eel 1 part of the in- volute of the base-eirele D,D’,, and on a plane rotating along with the wheel 2 part of the Fic. 1 6 involute of the _ base-circle { i a D,D’,; and the two eurves so traced will always touch each other in the required point of contact T, and will therefore fulfil the con- dition required by Principle I. of sect. 55.

Consequently, one of the forms suitable for the teeth of wheels is the involute of a eircle; and the obliquity of the aetion of sueh teeth is the angle whose eosine is the ratio of the radius of their base-eircle to that of the piteh-cirele of the wheel.

All involute teeth of the same pitch work smoothly together.

To find the length of the path of eontact on either side of the piteh-point I, it is to be observed that the distanee between the fronts of two successive teeth, as measured along P,IP,, is less than the piteh in the ratio of cos obliquity: 1; and consequently that, if distances equal to the piteh be marked off either way from I towards P, and P, respectively, as the extremities of the path of eontact, and if, aeeording to Prineiple IV. of seet. 55, the adden- dum-eircles be described through the points so found, there will always be at least two pairs of teeth in action at onee. In practice it is usual to make the path of eontaet somewhat longer, viz., about 2;;th times the piteh ; and with this length of path, and the obliquity already mentioned of 143°, the addendum is about ;3,ths of the piteh,

MECHANICS.

[APPLIED MECHANICS,

The teeth of a rack, to work 'eorrectly with wheels having iy teeth, should have plane surfaces unaudiadae to the ies sp nexion, and consequently making with the direction of motion of the rack angles equal to the complement of the obliquity of aetion. ;

57. Teeth for a given Path of Contact—Mr Sang's Method.—Ip, the preceding section the form of the teeth is found by assuming a figure for the path of contact, viz., the straight line. Any other eonvenient figure may be assumed for the path of eontaet, and the eorresponding forms of the teeth found by determining what curves a point T, moving along the assumed path of contaet, will trace on two disks rotating ronnd the eentres of the wheels with angular velocities bearing that relation to the eomponent velocity of T along TI, which is given by Principle II. of seet. 55, and by equation 25. This method of finding the forms of the teeth of wheels forms the — of an elaborate and most interesting treatise by Mr Edward

ang.

All wheels having teeth of the same pitch, traced from the same path of eontact, work correctly together, and are said to belong to the same set.

58. Teeth traced by Rolling Curves.—If any curve R (fig. 17) be rolled on the inside of the pitch-circle BB of a wheel, it appears, from sect. 37, that the instantaneous axis of the rolling curve at any instant will be at the point I, where it touches the pitch-eirele for the » moment, and that consequently the line AT, traeed by a_tracing- point T, fixed to the rolling curve upon the plane of the wheel, will be everywhere perpen- dicular to the straight line TI; so that the traeed curve AT will be

Fig. 17. suitable for the flank of a tooth, in which T is the point of contact

corresponding to the position I of the pitch-point. If the same rolling eurve R, with the same tracing-point T, be rolled on the outside of any other pitch-eirele, it will have the face of a tooth suitable to work with the flank AT.

In like manner, if either the same or any other rolling curve R' be rolled the opposite way, on the owtside of the piteh-cirele BB, so that the tracing point T' shall start from A, it will trace the face AT' of a tooth suitable to work with a flank traeed by rolling the same curve R' with the same tracing-point T' inside any other piteh- cirele.

The figure of the path of contact is that traced on a fixed plane by the tracing-point, when the rolling eurve is rotated in such a manner as always to touch a fixed straight line EIE (or ET'F', as the case may be) at a fixed point I (or I'). j

If the same rolling eurve and traeing point be used to trace both the faces and the flanks of the teeth of a number of wheels of different sizes but of the same piteh, all those wheels will work eorrectly together, and will form a set. The teeth of a rack, of the same set, are traeed by rolling the rolling eurve on both sides of a straight line.

The teeth of wheels of any figure, as well as of eircular wheels, may be traced by rolling eurves on their pitch-snrfaees; and all teeth of the same pitch, traced by the same rolling curve with the same tracing-point, will work together correctly if their pitch-sur- faees are in rolling contact. 7

59. Epicycloidal Teeth.—The most convenient rolling eurve 1s the eirele. The path of contact which it traces is identical with itself ; and the flanks of

the teeth are internal and their faces ex- ternal epieycloids for whieels, and both flanks and faces are eycloids for a rack.

For a pitch-eircle of twice the radius of the rolling or describing eirele (as it is called) the internal epicycloid is a straight line, being, in fact, a diameter of the pitch cirele, so that the flanks of the teeth for sueh a piteh-cirele are planes radiating from the axis. For a smaller piteh-cirele the flanks would be convex and incurved or under-cut, whieh would be ineonvenient ; therefore the smallest wheel of a set should ¢ have its pitch-cirele of twice ; the radius of the deseribing Fig. 18. eirele, so that the flanks may be either straight or concave. :

In fig. 18, let BB' be part of the piteh-eirele of a wheel with epl- eyeloidal teeth ; CIC' the line of centres ; I the pitch-point ; EJE

——

a straight tangent to the pitch-circle at that point; R the internal and R' the equal external describing cireles, so placed as to touch the pitch-cirele and each other at I. Let DID' be the path of con- tact, consisting of the are of approach DI and the arc of recess ID'. In order that there may always be at least two pairs of teeth in action, each of those arcs should be equal to the piteh.

The obliquity of the action in passing the line of centres is no-

thing; the maximum obliquity is the angle EID=E'ID; and the mean obliquity is one-half of that angle. + It appears from experience that the mean obliquity should not exeeed 15°; therefore the maximum obliquity should be about 30°; therefore the equal arcs DI and ID' should each be one-sixth of a cireumferenee ; therefore the cireumference of the describing cirele should be six times the piteh.

It follows that the smallest pinion of a set in which pinion the flanks are straight should have twelve teeth.

60. Nearly Epicycloidal Teeth—Wiilis's Method.—To facili- tate the drawing of epiecycloidal teeth in praetice, Willis has

ares,-—-one eoncave, for the flank, and the other convex, for the

MEGHANTDCS

|

799

63. Stepped and Helical Teeth.—Hooke invented the making of the fronts of tecth in a series of steps with a view to increase the smoothness of action. A wheel thus formed resembles in shape a series of equal and similar toothed disks plaeed side by side, with the teeth of each a little behind those of the preeeding disk. He also invented, with the same object, teeth whose fronts, instead of being parallel to the line of contact of the pitch-cireles, cross it obliquely, so as to be of a serew-like or helical form. In wheel- work of this kind the eontaet of eaeh pair of teeth commences at the foremost-end of the helical front, and terminates at the aftermost end; and the helix is of such a pitch that the eontaet of one pair of teeth shall not terminate until that of the next pair has com- meneed.

Stepped and helical teeth have the desired effect of increasing the smoothness of motion, but they require more difficult and ex- pensive workmanship than eommon teeth ; and helical teeth.are, besides, open to the objeetion that they exert a laterally oblique

: | pressure, which tends to increase resistance, and unduly strain shown how to approximate to their figure by means of two eireular |

face,—and each having for its radius the mean radius of curvature |

of the epicycloidal arc. lowing properties of epieycloids :—

Let R be the radius of the pitch-cirele ; r that of the describing eirele ; @ the angle made by the normal TI to the epieycloid at a given point T, with a tangent to the circle at I; that is, the obliquity of the action at T.

Then the radius of curvature of the epicycloid at T is—

For an internal epieycloid, p=4rsing Bot ‘ : P . ,R+r —_ oy For an external epicycloid, p’=4rsiné Rao

Also, to find the position of the centres of eurvature relatively to the | ave, denoting the chord of the deseribing circle |

piteh-circle, we TI by ¢, c=2rsiné@; and therefore R For th ~¢=2r sin 6,, —— or the flank, p~c=2rsin 9p op.

: R For the face, p’-c=2rsin oR op

(29).

For the A ioe approved of by Willis, sin@é=} nearly; | h

r= (the piteh) nearly ; c=}p nearly ; and, if N be the number of | teeth in tle wheel, = nearly ; therefore, approximately, p N p ~~¢=”~~. 2 N-1¢% f p N oe a hel ey

P85 NFB

Hence the following construction (fig. 19). Let BB be part of the |

piteh-eircle, and a the point where a tooth is to cross it. ab=ac=}p. Draw radii bd, ce; draw fb, eg, making angles of 754° with those radii. Make Of=p’-c, cgy=p-c. From jf, with the radius ja, draw the ecireular are ah; from g, with the radius ga, draw the eireular are ak. “ba ah is the face and ak the 7 ank of the tooth required. ySsS—>

*To facilitate the iroliestion pain of this rule, Willis published Fig. 19. tables of p~c and p’-c, and invented an instrument called the *‘odontograph.”*

61. Trundies and Pin-Wheels.—If a wheel or trundle have cylin- drieal pins or staves for teeth, the faces of the teeth of a wheel

Set off

suitable for driving it are described by first tracing external epi- |

eyeloids, by rolling the piteh-cirele of the pin-wheel or trundle on the piteh-cirele of the driving-wheel, with the centre of a stave for a traeing-point, and then drawing eurves parallel to, and within the epieycloids, at a distanee from them equal to the radius of a stave. Trundles having only six staves will work with large wheels, _ 82. Backs of Teeth and Spaces.—Toothed wheels being in general intended to rotate either way, the backs of the teeth are made similar to the fronts. The space between two teeth, measured on the piteh-eircle, is made about 4th part wider than the thickness of the tooth on the piteh-circle ; that is to say,

Thickness of tooth =; pitch ;

Width of space =, pitch.

The difference of », of the pitch is called the back-lash. The clearance allowed between the points of teeth and the bottoms of

bi a between the teeth of the other wheel is about th of the pitch.

Willis's formule: are founded on the fol- |

the maehinery.

64. Teeth of Bevel- Wheels.—The acting surfaees of the teeth of bevel-wheels are of the eonieal kind, generated by the motion of a line passing through the common apex of the piteh-eones, while its

| extremity is earried round the outlines of the cross seetion of the

| of the teeth, draw on a flat

teeth made by a sphere described about that apex.

The operations of deseribing the exact figures of the teeth of bevel-wheels, whether by involutes or by rolling eurves, are in every respect analogous to those for describing the figures of the

| teeth of spur-wheels, except that in the ease of bevel-whieels all those

operations are to be performed on the surface of a sphere deseribed about the apex instead of on a plane, substituting poles for centres, and great circles for straight lines.

In consideration of the practical diffieulty, especially in the ease of large wheels, of obtaining an accurate spherical surface, and of drawing upon it when obtained, the following approximate method, proposed originally by Tredgold, is generally used :-—

Let O (fig. 20) be the common apex of a pair of hevel-wheels; OB,I, OB,I their pitch eones ; OC,, OC, their axes ; OI their line of contact. Perpendicular to Ol draw A,IA,, eutting the axes in A,, A,; make the outer rims of the patterns and of the wheels portions of the cones A,B,I, A.B,I, of whieh the narrow zones oeeupied by the teeth will be sufficiently near to a spherical surface deseribed about O for praetical pur- poses. To find the figures

surfaee eireular ares ID,, ID,, with the radii Aj], A,I; those ares will be the developments of arcs of the

Fig. 20. _ piteh-eireles B,I, B,I, when the conical surfaces A,B,I, A.B. are

spread out flat. Deseribe the figures of teeth for the developed ares as for a pair of spur-wheels ; then wrap the developed arcs on the cones, so as to make them eoineide with the piteh-eircles, and traee the teeth on the eonieal surfaces.

65. Teeth of Skew-Bevel Wheels.—The crests of the teeth of a skew-bevel wheel are parallel to the generating straight line of the hyperboloidal piteh-surfaee ; and the transverse sections of the teeth at a given pitch-cirele are similar to those of the teeth of a bevel-wheel whose pitch-surface is a cone touching the hyperboloidal surface at the given eircle.

66. Cams.—A cain is a single tooth, either rotating continuously or oseillating, and driving a sliding or turning piece either eon- stantly or at intervals. All the prineiples whieh have been stated in seet. 55 as being

applicable to teeth are applicable to eams; but in designing cams it is not usual to determine or take into considera- tion the form of the ideal piteh-surface, which would give the same comparative motion by rolling contact that the cam gives by sliding contact.

67. Screws.—The figure of a serew is that of a convex or coneave cylinder, with one or more helical projections, ealled threads, winding round it. Convex and concave serews are distinguished technieally by the respective names of male and female ; a short concave screw is called a nut; and when a screw is spoken of with- out qualifieation a convex screw is usually understood.

The relation between the advance and the rotation, which compose the motion of a serew working in contact with a fixed screw or helical guide, has already been demonstrated in sect. 41; and the same relation exists between the magnitudes of the rotation of a screw about a fixed axis and the advance of a shifting nut in which it rotates. The advance of the nut takes place in the opposite direction to that of the advance of the screw in the case in which the nut is fixed. The pitch or axial pitch of a serew has the mean- ing assigned to it in that section, viz., the distance, measured

parallel to the axis, between the eorresponding points in two suc- cessive turns of the same thread. If, therefore, the screw has several equidistant threads, the true pitch is equal to the divided naial pitch, as measured between two adjacent threads, multiplied by the number of threads.

If a helix be described round the screw, crossing each turn of the thread at right angles, the distance between two corresponding points on two successive turns of the same thread, measured along this normal helix, may be called the normal pitch ; and when the serew has more than one thread the normal pitch from thread to thread may be ealled the normal divided pitch.

The distance from threa'l to thread. measured on a circle described about the axis of the screw, called the pitch-circle, may be called the circumferential pitch ; for a screw of one thread it is one circum- one circumference

n Let r denote the radius of the pitch circle ; n the number of threads ; @ the obliquity of the threads to the pitch circle, and of the normal helix to the axis ;

ee

ference; for a screw of 7 threads,

pitch, the axial

P, Eos

_.”*

P, the circumferential pitch ;

(divided piteh ;

{ pitch, the nermal [divided piteh ;

2Qur then Pc=Pa COtO=Pn COS O—= ——- | Pa=Pn sec 6=Pe tan = _2nr tan = (31). : Qerr, sin | Pn=Pe SM =DPa cos @= are

If a screw rotates, the number of threads whieh pass a fixed point in one revolution is the number of threads in the screw. A pair of convex screws, each rotating about its axis, are used as

an elementary eoinbination to transmit motion by the sliding con- |

tact of their threads. Such screws are eommonly called endless screws. At the point of contact of the screws their threads must be parallel; and their line of connexion is the common perpendi- cular to the acting surfaces of the threads at their point of contact. Hence the following principles :—

I. If the screws are both right-handed or both left-handed, the angle between the directions of their axes is the sum of their obli- quities ; if one is right-handed and the other left-handed, that angle is the difference of their obliqnities.

II. The normal pitch for a screw of one thread, and the normal divided pitch for d screw of more than one thread, must be the same in each screw.

ILI. The angular velocities of the screws are inversely as their numbers of threads.

ends of the two shafts. respectively; E,E, a bar sliding in a diaimetral groove in the face of D,; E,E, a bar sliding in a diametral groove in the faee of D,: those bars are fixed together at A, so as to form a rigid cross. The angular velocities of the two disks and of the cross are all eqnal at every instant ; the middle point of the cross, at A, revolves in the dotted circle described upon the line of centres C,C, asa diameter twice for each turn of the disks and cross; the instantaneons axis of rotation of the cross at any instant is at I, the point in the circle C,C, diametrically opposite to A.

Oldham's coupling may be nsed with advantage where the axes of the shafts are intended to be as nearly in the same straight line as is possible, but where there is some doubt as to the practicability or permanency of their exact continuity.

69. Wrapping Connectors—Belts, Cords, and Chains.—Flat belts

| of leather or of gutta percha, round cords of catgut, hemp, or other | material, and metal chains are used as wrapping connectors to

transmit rotatory motion between pairs of pulleys and drums. Belts (the most frequently used of all wrapping connectors) require

nearly cylindrical puileys. A belt tends to move towards that part

of a pulley whose radius is greatest ; pulleys for belts, therefore,

' are slightly swelled in the middle, in order that the belt may

remain on a pulley, unless forcibly shifted. A belt when in motion

| is shifted off a pulley, or from one pulley on to another of equal | size alongside of it, by pressing against that part of the belt which

is moving towards the pulley.

Cords require either cylindrical drums with ledges or grooved pulleys.

Chains require pulleys or drums, grooved, notched, and toothed, so as to fit the links of the chain.

Wrapping connectors for communicating continuous motion are endless.

Wrapping connectors for communicating reciprocating motion have usually their ends made fast to the pulleys or drums which they connect, and which in this case may be sectors.

The line of connexion of two pieces connected by a wrapping connector is the centre line of the belt, cord, or chain; and the comparative motions of the pieces are determined by the principles

of sect. 46 if both pieces turn, and of sect. 47 if one turns and

the other shifts, in which latter case the notion must be recipro- cating.

The pitch-line of a pulley or drum is a curve to which the line of connexion is always a tangeut ; that is to say, it is a curve parallel to the acting surface of the pulley or drum, and distant from it by

_ half the thickness of the wrapping connector.

are circular.

_ tive radii.

Hooke's wheels with oblique or helical teeth are in fact screws | of many threads, aud of large diameters as compared with their |

lengths.

The ordinary position of a pair of endless screws is with their axes at right angles to each other. When one is of eonsiderably greater diameter than the other, the larger is commonly called in practice a wheel, the name screw being applied to the smaller only ; but they are nevertheless both screws in fact.

To make the teeth of a pair of endless screws fit correctly and work smoothly, a hardened steel screw is made of the figure of the smaller screw, with its thread or threads notched so as to form a cutting tool ; the larger screw, or " wheel," is cast approximately of the required figure ; the larger screw and the steel screw are fitted up in their proper relative position, and made to rotate in contact

with each other by turning the steel screw, which cuts the threads ©

of the larger screw to their true figure. 68. Coupling of Parallel Axcs—Oldham's Coupling.—A coupling is a mode of connecting a pair of z. shafts so that they shall rotate in the same direction with the same mean angular velocity. If the axes of the shafts are in the same straight line, the coupling eonsists in so con- necting their contiguous ends that they shall rotate as one piece; but if the axes are not in the same straight line combinations of me- chanism are required. A coupling for parallel shafts which acts by sliding contact was invented by Oldham, and is represented in fig. 21. ©,, C, are the axes of the two

Fig. 21. parallel shafts; D,, D, two disks facing each other, fixed on the

| in which 7,

Pulleys and drums for communicating a constant velocity ratio The effective radins, or radius of the pitch-circle of a circular pulley or drum, is equal to the real radius added to half the thickness of the conneetor. The angular velocities of a pair of connected circular pulleys or drums are inversely as the effec-

A crossed belt, as in fig. 22, A, reverses the direction of the rota- tion communicated ; an wnerossed belt, as in fig. 22, B, preserves that direction.

The length L of an endless belt connecting a pair of pulleys whose effective radii are 71, 7%, With parallel axes whose distance apart is C, is given by the following Z ; formule, in each of which the first term, containing the radical, expresses the length of the straight parts of the belt, and the remainder of the formula the length of the curved parts.

For a crossed belt,—

—— tit L=2n/e? — (7 +72)? + (7% tng -2 sin”) (32, A); and for an uncrossed belt, —

. a L=2V {2 (r, r)?} +a(r, +17) + 2 – %) sin~! ie ee (32, B); is the greater radius, and 7, the less.

When the axes of a pair of pulleys are not parallel, the pulleys should be so placed that the part of the belt which 1s approaching each pulley shall be in the plane of the pulley.

70. Speed-Cones (see fig. 28).—A pair of speed-cones is a Com trivance for varying and adjusting the velocity ratio communicated between a pair of parallel shafts by means of a belt. The speed- cones are either continuous cones or conoids, as A, B, whose velocity ratio can be varied gradually while they are in motion by shifting the belt, or sets of pulleys whose radii vary by steps, as C, D, in which case the velocity ratio can be changed by shifting the belt from one pair of pulleys to another.

i .

APPLIED MECHANICS. |

In order that the belt may fit accurately in every possible position on a pair of speed-cones, the quantity L must be constant, in equations 32, A, or 32, B, according as the belt is erossed or uncrossed.

For a erossed belt, as in Aand C, fig. 23, L depends solely on ¢ and on 7,+7p. Now ¢ is constant because the axes are parallel ; there- fore the swm of the radit of the pitch-circles connected in every position of the belt is to be constant. That condition is fulfilled by a pair of continuous cones generated by the revolu- tion of two straight lines inclined opposite ways to their respective axes at equal angles.

For an uncrossed belt, the quantity L in equation 32, B is to be made constant. The exact fulfilment of this eondition requires the solution of a transcendental equation ; but it may be fulfilled with accuracy sufficient for practical purposes by using, instead of 32, B, the following approximate equation :—

L nearly =2¢+a(7, + 79) + (" = (88).

The following is the most convenient practical rule for the appli- cation of this equation :—

Let the speed-cones be equal and similar conoids, as in B, fig. 28, but with their large and small ends turned opposite ways. . Let r, be the radius of the large end of each, 7, that of the small end, r, that of the middle ; and let v be the sagitta, measured perpendi- cular to the axes, of the are by whose revolution each of the conoids is generated, or, in other words, the bulging of the conoids in the middle of their length. Then

7. 'ee (34).

2n=6'2832 ; but 6 may be used in most practical cases without |

sensible error.

h ii at the mi lL end bei] i wate eh ae Pius determined, make | Should K be inconveniently far off, draw any triangle with its sides

the generating curve an arc either of a circle or of a parabola.

71. Linkwork in General.—The pieces which are connected by linkwork, if they rotate or oscillate, are usually ealled eranks, beams, and levers.. The

link by which they are connected is a rigid rod or bar, which may be straight or of any other figure; the straight figure, being the most favourable to strength, is always used when there is no special reason to the contrary. The link is known by various names under various cireumstances, such as coupling-rod, connecting-rod, erank-rod, eecentrie-rod, ke. It is attached to the pieces which it connects by two pins, about which it is free to turn. The effect of the link is to maintain the distance between the axes of those pins invariable ; hence the common perpendicular of the axes of the pins is the line of eonnexion, and its extremities may be ealled the connected points. Ina turning piece, the perpendicular let fall from its connected point upon its axis of rotation is the arm or erank-arm.

The axes of rotation of a pair of turning pieces connected by a link are almost always parallel, and perpendicular to the line of connexion ; in which case the angular velocity ratio at any instant

MECHANICS

is the reciprocal of the ratio of the common perpendiculars let fall |

from the line of connexion upon the respective axes of rotation.

If at any instant the direction of one of the crank-arms coincides with the line of connexion, the common perpendicular of the linc of connexion and the axis of that crank-arm vanishes, and the directional relation of the motions becomes indeterminate.

The |

position of the connected point of the erank-arm in question at |

such an instant is called a dead-point. eonnected point at such an instant is null, unless it also reaches a dead-point at the same instant, so that the line of connexion is in the plane of the two axes of rotation, in which case the velocity ratio is indeterminate. Examples of dead-points, and of the means of preventing the inconvenience which they tend to occasion, will appear in the sequel.

72. Coupling of Parallel Axes.—Two or more parallel shafts (such as those of a locomotive engine, with two or more pairs of driving wheels) are made to rotate with constantly equal angular velocities by having equal cranks, which are maintained parallel by

a coupling-rod of such a length that the line of connexion is equal |

to the distance between the axes. The cranks pass their dead-points simultaneously. To obviate the unsteadiness of motion which this tends to cause, the shafts are provided with a second set of cranks at right angles to the first, connected by means of a similar coupling- rod, so that one set of cranks pass their dead points at the instant when the other set are farthest from theirs.

The velocity of the other |

|

◦

761

73. Comparative Motion of Connected Points.—As the link is a rigid body, it is obvious that its action in communicating motion may be determined by finding the comparative motion of the con- nected points, according to the principles laid down in §§ 71, 78, pp. 690, 692, and this is often the most convenicnt method of pro- ceeding.

If a connected point belongs to a turning piece, the direction of its motion at a given instant is perpendicular to the plane contain- ing the axis and crauk-arm of the piece. If a connected point belongs: to a shifting piece, the direction of its motion at any instant is given, and a plane can be drawn perpendieular to that direction.

The line of intersection of the planes perpendieular to the paths of the two connected points at a given instant is the instantaneous axis of the link at that instant; and the velocities of the connected points are directly as their distances from that axis.

In drawing ona plane surface, the two planes perpendicular to the paths of the conneeted points are represented by two lines (being their sections by a plane normal to them), and the instantaneous axis by a point (fig. 24); and, should the length of the two lines render it impracticable to pro- K duce them until they actually intersect, the velocity ratio of the connected points may be found by the principle that it is equal to the ratio of the segments which a line parallel to the line of connexion cunts off from any two lines drawn from a given point, perpen- dicular respectively to the paths of the connected points.

To illustrate this by one ex- ample. Let C, be the axis, and T, the connected point of the beam of a steam-enginc ; T,T,

Fig. 24.

the connecting or erank-rod; T, the other connected point, and the centre of the crank-pin ; C, the axis of the erank and its shaft. Let v, denote the velocity of T, at any given instant; », that of | T,. To find the ratio of these velocities, produce C,T,, C,T,, till they intersect in K ; K is the instantaneous axis of the connecting rod, and the velocity ratio is

0 1, ::KT, : KTy. (35).

respectively parallel to CT), C,T,, and T,T, ; the ratio of the two

sides first mentioned will be the velocity ratio required. For example, draw C,A parallel to C,T,, cutting T)T, in A; then Ce a. ey Lt ee (36).

74, Eecentrie.—An eccentric circular disk fixed on a shaft, and used to givea reciprocating motion to a rod, is in effect a crank-pin of sufficiently large diameter to surround the shaft, and so to avoid the weakening of the shaft which wonld arise from bending it so as to form an ordinary crank. The centre of the eccentric is its con- nected point ; and its eccentricity, or the distance from that centre to the axis of the shaft, is its crank-arm.

An eccentric may be made capable of having its eceentricity altered by means of an adjusting screw, so as to vary the extent of the reciprocating motion which it communicates.

75. Reciprocating Pieces — Stroke— Dead-Points.—The distance between the extremities of the path of the connected point in a reciprocating piece (such as the piston of a steam-engine) is called the stroke or length of stroke of that piece. When it is connected with a continnously turning piece (such as the crank of a steam- engine) the ends of the stroke of the reciprocating piece correspond to the dead-points of the path of the connected point of the turning piece, where the line of connexion is continuous with or coincides with the crank-arm. ;

Let S be the length of stroke of the reciprocating piece, L the length ofthe line of connexion, and R the crank-arm of the con- tinuously turning piece. Then, if the two ends of the stroke be in one straight line with the axis of the crank,

S=2h: (87) ; and if these ends be not in one straight line with that axis, then S, L« R, and L+R, are the three sides of a triangle, having the angle opposite S at that axis ; so that, if @ be the supplement of the arc between the dead-points,

S? = 2(L? + R?) — 2(L? — R?) cos 6 2L?7+2R?-S?

2(L? — R?)

76. Coupling of Interseeting Axes—Hooke's Universal Joint. —TInter- secting axes are coupled by a contrivance of Hooke's, known as the 'universal joint," which belongs to the class of linkwork (see fig. 25). Let O be the point of intersection of the axes OC,, OC,, and @ their angle of inclination to each other. The pair of shafts C,, C, terminate in a pair of forks F,, F,,in bearings at the extrem1-

XV. — 96

cosé= a8).

762

ties of which turn the gudgeons at the ends of the arms of a rec- tangular cross, having its centre at O. This cross is the link ; the connected points are

the centres of the bearings F,, F,. At each instant each of those points moves at right angles to the central plane of its shaft and fork ; therefore the line of intersection of the central planes of the two forks at any instant is the instan- taneous axis of the cross, aud the velocity ratio of the points F,, F, (which, as the forks are equal, is also the angular velocity ratio of the shafts) is equal to the ioe ratio of the distances of those Fig. 25.

points from that instantaneous axis. The mean value of that velocity ratio is that of equality, foreach successive quarter-turn ismade by both shafts in the same time; but its actual value fluctuates between the limits—

Gy i

a, cosé

when F; is the plane OC,0,

. (39).

and "2 = cos@ when F, is in that plane C |

Its value at intermediate instants is given by the following equa-

tions :—let 9), ¢, be the angles respectively made by the central |

planes of the forks and shafts with the plane OC,C, at a given Instant; then cos @=tan ¢, tan dy

MECHANICS

-

[APPLIED MECHANICS.

called ¢) and its double 2¢, then one pair of wheels will answer the any and B and C will themselves be the numbers required, hould B and C be inconveniently large, they are, if possible, to be resolved into factors, and those factors (or if they are too sma multiples of them) used for the number

of teeth. Should B or C, or both, be at once inconveniently large and prime, then, instead

of the exact ratio z , some ratio approximating to that ratio, and

capable of resolution into convenient factors, is to be found by the method of continued fractions.

B Should G@ be greater than 6, the best number of elementary combinatious m-—1 will lie between log B~logC

log B — log C log 6 ;

log 3

Then, if possible, B and C themselves are to be resolved each into m—1 factors (counting 1 as a factor), which factors, or multiples of them, shall be not less than ¢ nor greater than 6¢; or if B andC contain inconveniently-large prime factors, an approximate velocity ratio, found by the method of continued fractions, is to be substi- tuted for Fas before.

So far as the resultant velocity ratio is concerned, the order of the drivers N and of the followers » is immaterial ; but to secure equable wear of the teeth, as explained in sect. 54, the wheels ought to be so arranged that, for each elementary combination, the greatest common divisor of N and shall be either 1, or as small as possible.

80. Double Hooke's Coupling.—It has been shown in section 76 that the velocity ratio of a pair of shafts coupled by a universal

"2 . (40). joint fluctuates between the limits cosé@ and a Hence one or both of the shafts must have a vibratory aud unsteady motion, injurious to the mechanism aud framework. 'To obviate this evil a short in- termediate shaft is introduced, making equal angles with the first and last shaft, coupled with each of them by a Hooke's joint, and having its own two forksin the same plane. Let a, a», ag be the angular velocities of the first, intermediate, and last shaft in this

certain arc at each forward stroke and leaves at rest at each back- | ward stroke, is an example of intermittent linkwork. During the forward stroke the action of the click is governed by the principles

of linkwork ; during the backward stroke that action ceases. A eatch or pall, turning on a fixed axis, prevents the ratchet-wheel or rack. from reversing its motion.

Division 5. Trains of Mechanism.

78. General Principles. —A train of mechanism consists of a series of pieces each of which is follower to that which drives it and driver to that which follows it.

The comparative motion of the first driver and last follower is obtained by combining the proportions expressing by their terms the velocity ratios and by their signs the directional relations of the several elementary combinations of which the train consists.

79. Trains of Wheelwork.—Let A,, Ay, Ag, &¢., Am-1, Am denote a series of axes, and a, ay, a3, &C., Om-1, Om their angular velocities. Let the axis A, carry a wheel of N, teeth, driving a wheel of m, teeth on the axis A,, which carries also a wheel of N, teeth, driving a wheel of m3 teeth on the axis As, and so on; the

numbers of teeth in drivers being denoted by N's, and in followers | by ~'s, and the axes to which the wheels are fixed being denoted by |

5.

numbers. Then the resulting velocity ratio is denoted by

a wk oe SS ee

am _™.. Nyt Mee eo INS (41) ;

" ia ty yg . CEs ae

that is to say, the velocity ratio of the last and first axes is the ratio |

of the product of the numbers of teeth in the drivers to the product of the numbers of teeth in the followers.

Supposing all the wheels to be in outside gearing, then, as each elementary combination reverses the direction of rotation, and as the number of elementary combinations m—1 is one less than the number of axes m, it is evident that if m is odd the direction of rotation is preserved, and if even reversed.

It is often a question of importance to determine the number of

tecth in a train of wheels best suited for giving a determinate © It was shown by Young that, to do this |

velocity ratio to two axes. with the least total number of teeth, the velocity ratio of each ele-

mentary combination should approximate as nearly as possible to

3°59. This would in many cases give too many axes; and, as a

useful practical rule, it may be laid down that from 8 to 6 ought to |

be the limit of the velocity ratio of an elementary combination in wheelwork. The smallest number of teeth ina pinion for epicy- cloidal teeth ought to be twelve (see sect. 59),—but it is better, for smoothness of motion, not to go below fifteen; and for involute teeth the smallest number is about twenty-four.

Let & be the velocity ratio required, reduced to its least terms,

and let B be greater than ©. If Fe is not greater than 6, and C lies

between the prescribed minimum number of teeth (which may be

train of two Hooke's couplings. Then, from the principles of sect. 76 it is evident that at each instant @ =, and consequently that

a3=0,; so that the fluctuations of angular velocity ratio caused by the first coupling are exactly neutralized by the second, and the first and last shafts have equal angular velocities at each instant.

81. Converging and Diverging Trains of Mechanism.—Two or more trains of mechanism may converge into one,—as when the two pistons of a pair of steam-engines, cach through its own connecting- rod, act upon one crank-shaft. One train of meehanism may diverge into two or more,—as when a single shaft, driven by a prime mover, carries several pulleys, each of which drives a different machine. The principles of comparative motion in such converging and diverging trains are the same as in simple trains. .

Division 6. Aggregate Combinations.

82. General Principles.—Willis has designated as 'aggregate combinations"' those assemblages of pieces of mechanism in which

| the motion of one follower is the resultant of component motions

impressed on it by more than one driver. Two elasses of aggregate

| combinations may be distinguished which, though not different in

their actual nature, differ in the data which they present to the designer, aud in the method of solution to be followed in questions respecting them.

Class I. comprises those cases in which a piece A is not earried directly by the frame C, but by another piece B, relatively to which the motion of A is given,—the motion of the piece B relatively to the frame C being also given. Then the motion of A relatively to the frame C is the resultant of the motion of A relatively to B and of B relatively to C ; and that resultant is to be found by the prin- ciples already explained in division 3 of this chapter, sects. 34 to 41.

Class II. comprises those cases in which the motions of three points in one follower are determincd by their connexions with two or with three different drivers, so that the motion of the follower, as a whole, is to be determined by the principles of §§ 71, 78, pp. 690, 692. –

This classification is founded on the kinds of problems arising from the combinations. Willis adopts another classification, founded on the odjects of the combinations, which objects he divides into two classes, viz., (1) to produce aggregate velocity, or a velocity which is the resultant of two or more components in the same path, and (2) to produce an aggregate path, that is, to make a given point in a rigid body move in an assigned path by communicating certain motions to other points in that body.

It is seldom that one of these effects is produced without at the same time producing the other; but the classification of Willis

depends upon which of those two effects, even supposing them to occur together, is the practical object of the mechanism.

83. Reduplieation of Cords—Differential Windlass—Bloeks, Sheaves, and Tackle.—The axis C (fig. 26) carries a larger barrel AE and asmaller barrel DB, rotating as one piece with the angular velocity a, in the direction AE. The pulley or sheave FG has a weight W hung to its centre. A cord has one end' made fast to and wrapped round the barrel AE; it passes from A under the sheave FG, and has the other end wrapped round and made fast to the barrel BD. Required the relation between the velocity of trans- lation v, of W and the angular velocity a, of the differential barrel.

In this case v, is an aggregate velocity, pro- duced by the joint action of the two drivers AE and BD, transmitted by wrapping connectors to FG, and combined .by that sheave so ag to act on the follower W, whose motion is the same with that of the centre of FG. =

The velocity of the point F is a,.AC, upward Fig. 26. motion being considered positive. The velocity of the point G is ~—a,.CB, downward motion being negative. Hence (p. 690, §§ 71, 72) the instantaneons axis of the sheave FG is in the diameter FG, at the distance

E

FG AC-BC | AC+EC from the centre towards G ; the angular velocity of the sheave is AC+BC.

*Ag = a) * "=TG er F and, consequently, the velocity of its centre is ee FG AC-BC_ a (AC-BC) ase Fs or the mean between the velocities of the two vertical parts of the*

cord.

If the cord be fixed to the frame-work at the point B, instead of being wound on a barrel, the velocity of W is half that of AF. _

A case containing several sheaves is called a block. A fall-bloek is attached to a fixed point; a running-block is movable to and from a fall-block, with which it is connected by two or more plies ofarope. The whole combination constitutes a tackle or purchase.

The two plies of a rope at opposite sides of a sheave in the fall- block have equal and opposite velocities. _The'tiwo plies at opposite sides of a sheave in the running-block have velocities (as in the case of the sheave FG) differing equally in opposite directions from the velocity of the running-block.

One end of the rope is fastened either to the fall-block or the running-block. The other, or free end, is called the fall. Let v, be the velocity of the fall, v, that of the running-block ; and let it be required to find their ratio; and let velocities towards the fall- block be positive, and from it negative.

Cask 1. If the fastened end of the rope be attached to the fall- block its velocity is 0, and this also is the velocity of the first ply.

. (42),

The rope passes under a sheave in the running-block, so that the |

velocity of the second ply is 2v,. It then passes over a sheave in the fall-block ; the velocity of the third ply is—2v, ; then under a sheave in the

running-block ; the velocity of the fourth ply is 42%, ; — so on,—the general law being this :—let 2 be an even number, then

38 (n+1)® ply= — nv,

=0,, if the fall be the (n+1) ply

Cast 2. If the fastened end of the rope be attached to the run-

ning-block, the velocity of the first ply is v,; of the second, — v, ;

of the third, 3v,; of the fourth, —3v,; and, generally, if » be an odd number,

the velocity of the n® ply=nv,

(48).

velocity of the n® ply =nv, ie (n+1)® ply = — nv, (44). =#,, if the fall be the (n+1)™ ply Generally, — Ls ee V == (45),

— nis the number of plies of rope by which the running-bloek ngs.

The sheaves in a block are usually made all of the same diameter, and turn on a fixed pin, and they have, consequently, different angular velocities. But by making the diameter of each sheave proportional to the velocity, relatively to the block, of the ply of rope which it is to carry, the angular velocities of the sheaves in one block may be rendered equal, so that the sheaves may be made all in one piece, and may have journals turning in fixed bearings. _ This is called White's tackle, from the inventor.

For details and technical ternis see SHIPBUILDING.

MECHANICS

| reciprocating pieceeither exactly ,

84. Differential Serew.—On the same axis let there be two screws of the respective pitches p, and yy, made in one piece, and rotating with the angular velocity a. Let this piece be called B. Let the first screw turn in a fixed nut C, and the second in a sliding nat A. The velocity of advance of B relatively to C is (according to sect, 41) ap,, and of A relatively to B (according to sect. 67) — apy; hence the velocity of A relatively to C is .

a(P — Pe) (46), being the same with the velocity of advance of a screw of the pitch 1 -P>o This combination, called Hunter's or the differential serew, combines the strength of a large thread with the slowness of motion due to a small one. :

85. Epieyclie Trains.—The term epteyelie train is used by Willis to denote a train of wheels carried by an arm, and having certaiu rotations relatively to that arm, which itself rotates. The arm may either be driven by the wheels or assist in driving them. The comparative motions of the wheels and of the arm, and the aygregate paths traced by points in the wheels, are determined by the principles of the composition of rotations, and of the description of rolling curves, explained in sects. 37 to 40.

86. Link Motion.—Let S (fig. 27) be the shaft of a steam-engine, O its axis, Ey the forward eceentrie, suitably placed for moving the slide-valve when the shaft rotates forwards, F its centre, OF its crank-arm, Cy its rod, E, the backward eeeentrie, suitably placed for moving the slide-valve when the shaft rotates backwards, B its centre, OB its crank-arm, C,its rod. L isa long narrow box called the link, jointed at Ty and T, to the eccentric rods ; R is the valve- rod which works the slide-valve, jointed to P, a slider, which, by moving either IL or R, or both, can be adjusted to any required posi-

Fig, 27. When P is at Ty the valve is said to be in full When P is at Ts the valve is said to be in full baekward gearing, being acted upon

tion in the link. forward gearing, being acted upon by Ey alone.

by E, alone. When P is placed in an intermediate position, the valve has an aggregate motion due to the joint action of Ey and Ey. The most exact mode of determining that motion is to make a skeleton drawing of the apparatus in various positions; but an

| approximation to the motion of the valve may be obtained by join-

ing FB, and taking Q so that TP: T,P: : FQ: BQ;

| then the valve will move nearly as if it were worked by one

eccentric, having its centre at Q. eae 87. Parallel Motions (exaet).—A parallel motion is a combination of turning pieces in mechanism designed to guide the motion of a

or approximately in a straight line, so as to avoid the friction which arises from the nse of straight guides for that purpose.

Fig. 28 represents an exact parallel motion, first proposed, it is believed, by Mr Scott Russell.

!

i

1

The arm CD turns on the | Saher axis C, and is jointed at D to , we the middle of the bar ADB, | _—7 whose length is double of that q'-~ of CD, and one of whose ends ; B is jointed to a slider, sliding Fig. 28.

in straight guides along the line CB. Draw BE perpendicular to CB, cutting CD produced in E, then E is the instantaneous axis of the bar ADB; and the direction of motion of A is at every instant perpendicular to EA, that is, along the straight line ACa. While the stroke of A is ACa, extending to equal distances on either side of C, and equal to twice the chord of the are Dd, the stroke of B is only equal to twice the sagitta; and thus A is guided through a comparatively long stroke by the sliding of B through a comparatively short stroke, and by rotatory motions at the joints C, D, B. (For details, see SrEAM-ENGINE.) hs

88, Parallel Motion—Watt's Approximate (sec fig. 29),.—Let CT, ef be a pair of levers connected by a link Ti, and oscillating about the axes Ce between the positions marked 1 and 3. Let the middle positions of the levers

CT,, ef. be parallel to each other. It is required to find a point P in the link T¢ such that its middle

764

position P, aud its extreme positions P,, P, shall be in the same straight line SS, perpendicular to CT,, ct,, and so to place the axes C, con the lines CT,, ef, that the path of P between the positions P,, P., P; shall be as near as possible to a straight line.

5

1 TI

Fig. 29.

The axes C, ¢ are to be so placed that the middle M of the versed sine VT,, and the middle m of the versed sine vé,, of the respective ares whose equal chords T,T,, tt, represent the stroke, may each be in the line SS. Then 'I, and 'I', will be as far to one side of SS as 'I', is to the other, and ¢, and ¢, will be as far to the latter side of SS as ¢, is to the former ; consequently, the two extreme positions of the links T,4,, Ty, are parallel to each other, and inclined to

SS at the same angle in one direction that the middle position of |

the link T,¢, is inclined to that line in the other direction, and |

the three intersections P,, Py, P; areat the same point on the link. The position of the point P on the link is found by the following proportional equation :— te PI PE) 2: TV+ivo: TV: eae :: CM+em:cm :CM)

Suppose the axes C, ¢ to be given, the line of stroke SS, and the length of stroke L=T\T,=¢,t3, and that it is required to find the dimensions of the levers and link. Let fall CM and em perpen- dicular to SS ; then

by LV?

Y= sent} Ban CT=CM+4TV; ct=cm+ hv; Tt =/{ Mm? +3(TV +tv)"}

If C and c¢ are at the same side of SS, the smallcr of the two perpendiculars is to be treated as negative in the formule, and the difference of the versed sines used instead of their sum; and the point P will lie in the prolongation of the link beyond Tt to the side of the longer lever. on either side of their middle positions do not exceed 20°, the intermediate portions of the path of P between P,, P,, and: P; are near enough to a straight line for practical purposes; and that point may be used to guide a sliding piece, such as the piston-rod of a steam-engine, for which purpose this parallel motion was originally invented by Watt.

(47).

(48).

CHAPTER II. ON AppLIED DYNAMICS.

89. Laws of Motion.—The action of a machine in transmitting force and motion simultaneously, or performing work, is governed, in common with the phenomena of moving bodies in general, by two "laws of motion," for which see pp. 676 sq.

90. Comparison of Deviating Force with Gravity. —See pp. 698, 699, §§ 104-106.

91. Deviating Forces Classed—Deflecting Force —Accelerating and Retarding Forces.—See p. 701, $$ 114-119.

_ 92. Division of the Subject.—On this classification of the deviat- ing forces in machines is founded the following division of the subject of dynamics as applied to machines :—

Division 1.—Balanced forces in machines of uniform velocity.

Division 2.—Deflecting forces in such machines.

Division 3.—Working of machines of varying velocity.

Division 1. Balanced Forees in Machines of Uniform Velocity.

93. Application of Foree to Mechanism.—Forces are applied in units of weight; and the unit most commonly employed in Britain is the pound avoirdupois.' The action of a force applied to a body

When the arcs of oscillation of the levers |

is always in reality distributed over some definite space, either a volume of three dimensions or a surface of two. An example of a force distributed throughout a volume is the weight of the body itself, which acts on every particle, however small. The pressure exerted between two bodies at thcir surface of contact, or between the two parts of one body on either side of an ideal surface of separation, is an example of a force distributed over a surface. The mode of distribution of a force applied to a solid body requires to be considered when its stiffness and strength are treated of; but, in questions respecting the action of a force upon a rigid body con- sidered as a whole, the resultant of the distributed force, deter. mined according to the principles of statics, and considered as acting in a single line and applied at a single point, may, for the occasion, be substituted for the force as really distributed. Thus, the weight of each separate piece in a machine is treated as acting wholly at its centre of gravity, and each pressure applied to it as acting at a point called the centre of pressure of the surface to which the pressure is really applied.

94. Forces applied to Mechanism Classed.—lf @ be the obliquity of a force F applied to a piece of a machine,—that is, the angle made by the direction of the force with the direction of motion of its point of application, —then by the principles of Statics, F may be resolved into two rectangular components, viz. :—

Along the direction of motion, P=Fcos@)

*Across the direction of motion, Q=Fsin@ j} * (=e*

If the component along the dircction of motion acts with the motion, it is called an effort ; if against the motion, a resistance, The component across the direction of motion is a lateral pressure ; the unbalanced lateral pressure on any piece, or part of a piece, is deflecting force.. A lateral pressure may increase resistance by causing friction ; the friction so caused acts against the motion, and is a resistance, but the lateral pressure causing it is nota resist- ance. Resistances are distinguished into useful and prejudicial, according as they arise from the nseful effect produced by the machine or from other causes,

95. Work.— Work consists in moving against resistance. The work is said to be performed, and the resistance overcome. Work

_is measured by the product of the resistance into the distance | through which its point of application is moved.

The wnt of work commonly used in Britain is a resistance of one pound overcome

| through a distance of one foot, and is called a foot-pound.

Work is distinguished into. useful work and prejudicial or lost work, according as it is performed in producing the useful effect of the machine, or in overcoming prejudicial resistance.

96. Hnergy—Potential Energy.—Energy means capacity for performing work. The energy of an effort, or potential energy, is measured by the product of the effort into the distance through which its point of application is capable of being moved. The unit of energy is the same with the unit of work.

When the point of application of an effort has been moved through a given distance, energy is said to have been exerted to an amount expressed by the product of the effort into the distance through which its point of application has been moved.

97. Variable Effort and Resistance.—If an effort has different magnitudes during different portions of the motion of its point of application through a

given distance, let each different magnitude of the effort P be multiplied by the length As of the corresponding portion of the path of the point of application ; the sum

Z.PAS ... .'. « +) ee

is the whole energy exerted. If the effort varies by insensible gradations, the energy exerted is the integral or limit towards which that sum approaches continually as the divisions of the path are made smaller and more nunierons, and is expressed by

ft 2423. (51).

Similar processes are applicable to the finding of the work per- formed in overcoming a varying resistance. ;

98. Dynamometer or Indicator.—A dynamometer or indicator is an instrument which measures and records the energy exerted by an effort. It usually consists essentially, first, of a piece of paper moving with a velocity proportional to that of the point of application of the effort, and having a straight line marked on it parallel to its direction of motion, called the zero line; and, secondly, of a spring acted upon and bent by the effort, and carry- ing a pencil whose perpendicular distance from the zero line, as regulated by the bending of the spring, is proportional to the effort. The pencil traces on the piece of paper a line such that its ordinate perpendicular to the zero line at a given point represents the effort P for the corresponding point in the path of the point of effort, and the area between two ordinates represents the energy exerted, ; Pds, for the corresponding portion of the path of the point of effort.

99. Principle of the Equality of Energy and Work.—From the first law of motion it follows that in a machine whose pieces move with uniform velocities the efforts and resistances must balance each

d

other. Now from the laws of statics (see above) it is known that, in order that a systeni of forces applied to a system of connected points may be in equilibrium, it is necessary that the sum formed by putting together the products of the forces by the respective distances through which their points of application are capable of moving simultaneously, each along the direction of the force applied to it, shall be zero, —products being considered positive or negative according as the direction of the forces and the possible motions of their points of application are the same or opposite.

In other words, the sum of the negative products is equal to the sum of the positive products. This principle, applied to a machine whose parts move with uniform velocities, is eqnivalent to saying that in any given interval of time éhe energy exerted is equal to the work performed.

The symbolical expression of this law is as follows :—let efforts be applied to one or any number of points of a machine; let any one of these efforts be represented by P, and the distance traversed by

its point of application in a given interval of time by ds; lct –

resistances be overcome at one or any number of points of the same machine ; let any oue of these resistances be denoted by R, and the

distance traversed by its point of application in the given interval |

of time by ds'; then

Mss 5 5 « a « 602).

The lengths ds, ds' are proportional to the velocities of the |

points to whose paths they belong, and the proportions of those velocities to each other are deducible from the construction of the

Chapter I. 100. Eficieney.—The efficiency of a machine is the ratio of the

useful work to the total work, —that is, to the energy exerted, —and |

is represented by = Reds' _ ERuds = Rads! _ U eek 2 .Rees +e Reds = E.Vds = OE R,, being taken to represent useful and R, prejudicial resistances.

The more nearly the efficiency of a machine approaches to unity the better is the machine.

101. Power and Effeect.—The power of a machine is the energy exerted, and the effect the useful work performed, in some interval of time of definite length, such as a second, an hour, or a day.

The unit of power, called conventionally a horse-power, is 550

2 (ee

foot-pounds per second, or 33,000 foot-pounds per minute, or-

1,980,000 foot-pounds per hour.

102. Modulus of a Machine. —In the investigation of the properties of a machine, the useful resistances to be overcome and the useful work to be performed are usually given. The prejudicial resistances are generally functions of the useful resistances of the weights of the pieces of the mechanism, and of their form and arrangement ; and, having been determined, they serve for the eomputation of the lost work, which, being added to the uscful work, gives the expenditure of energy required. The result of this investigation, expressed in the form of an equation between this erfergy and the useful work, is called by Moseley the modulus of the machine. The general form of the modulus may be expressed thus—

PeUaigU,A)+y(A)... (54),

where A denotes some quantity or set of quantities depending on the form, arrangement, weight, and other properties of the mechanism. Moseley, however, has pointed out that in most cases this equation takes the much more simple form of

MaQeeOUEB, ... (55),

where A and B are constawts, depending on the form, arrangenient, and weight of the mechanism. The efliciency corresponding to the last equation is

U 1

a 56). E 1+A+B/U ° Be)

2 ° ° .

103. Trains of Mechanism.—In applying the preceding prin- ciples to a train of mechanism, it may either be treated as a whole, or it may be considered in sections consisting of single pieces, or of any convenient portion of the train,—each section being treated as a machine driven by the effort applied to it and energy exerted

upon it through its line of connexion with the preceding section, | performing useful work by driving the following section, and losing —

work by overcoming its own prejudicial resistances.

It is evident that the efficiency of the whole train is the product of

the efficicuctes of its sections.

104. Rotating Pieces—Couples of Forees. —It is often convenient to express the energy exerted upon and the work performed by a turning piece in a machine in terms of the moment of the couples oe acting on it, and of the angular velocity. See p. 728, § 219.

The ordinary British unit of moment is a foot-pownd ; but it is to be remembered that this is a foot-pound of a different sort from the unit of energy and work.

If a force be applied to a turning piece in a line not passing through its axis, the axis will press against its bearings with an equal and parallel force, and the equal and opposite reaction of the bearings will constitute, together with the first-nentioned force, a couple whose arm is the perpendicular distance from the axis to the line of action of the first force.

A couple is said to be right or left hauded with reference to the observer, according to the direction in which it tends to turn the body, and is a driving couple or a resisting couple according as its tendency is with or against that of the actual rotation.

Let dt be an interval of time, a the angular velocity of the piece; then ad¢ is the angle through which it turns in the interval dt, and ds=vdt=radt is the distance through which the point of application of the force moves. Let P represent an effort, so that Pr is a driving couple, then

Pds=Pvdt=Pradit=Madt … . (57)

is the energy exerted by the couple M iu the interval dé; and a similar equation gives the work performed in overcoming a resisting eouple. When several couples act on one piece, the resultant of their moments is to be multiplied by the common angular velocity of the whole piece.

105. Reduction of Forces toa given Point, and of Couples to the Axis of a given Piece.—In computations respecting machines it is often convenient to substitute for a force applied to a given point, or a couple applied to a given piece, the equivalent force or couple

. . . . . i a pli e i E i B 5 a is a ‘ f Tr machine by the principles of pure mechanism explaincd in | applied. ta;soine. ciagpapatat (or visieaay Umt ts Loe, Lhe: Toned,

couple, which, if applied to the other point or piece, would exert equal energy or employ equal work. The principles of this reduc- tion are that the ratio of the given to the equivalent force is the reciprocal of the ratio of the velocities of their points of applica- tion, aud the ratio of the given to the equivalent couple is the reciprocal of the ratio of the angular velocities of the pieces to which they are applied.

These velocity ratios are known by the construction of the mechanism, and are independent of the absolute speed.

106. Balanced Lateral Pressure of Guides and Bearings.—The most important part of the lateral pressure on a piece of mechanisia is the reaction of its guides, if it is a sliding piece, or of the bearings of its axis, if it is a turning piece; and the balanced portion of this reaction is equal and opposite to the

_ resultant of all the other forces applied to the piece, its own weight

included. There may be or may not be an unbalanced component in this pressure, due to the deviated motion. Its laws will be considered in the sequel.

107. Friction—Unguents. —The most important kind of resistance in machines is the friction or rubbing resistance of surfaces which slide over each other. The direction of the resistance of friction is opposite to that in which the sliding takes place. Its magnitude is the product of the wormal presswre or force which presses the rubbing surfaces together in a direction perpendicular to themselves into a specific constant already mentioned in Part I., sect. 13, as the coefficient of friction, which depends on the nature and condition of the surfaces of the unguent, if any, with which they are covered. The total pressure exerted between the rubbing surfaces is the resnltant of the normal pressure and of the friction, and its obliquity, or inclination to the common perpendicular of the surfaces, is the angle of repose formerly mentioned in sect. 13, whose tangent is the coefficient of frietion. Thus, let N be the normal pressure, R the friction, T the total pressure, f the co- efficient of friction, and @ the angle of repose ; then

f=tan@ .. . R=fN=Ntaug=Tsing

Experiments on friction have been made by Coulomb, Vince, Rennie, Wood, D. Rankine, and others. The inmost complete and elaborate experiments are those of Morin, published in his Nottous

(58).

| Fondamentales de Mécanique, and republished in Britain in the

works of Moseley and Gordon. The following is an exceedingly condensed abstract of the most important results, as regards machines, of these experiments :—

*Surfacecs. i * Wood ion woods diryse-s:---<-c---<--OciO HERD Costa CA eedncnotpoonecnosanansscan 0°33 Leather on oak, Wet OF UTY .....-secceesseesecnecrececesenccensenseres 0:27 to 6°35 Leather on metals, Ary …...cccccsscsece.ccsesseeceeesceeceeesenseanseres 0°56 Do., WEL. oc. ccesescscecccctes coccecoccsseceercccessecosoes 0°34 Dos, PVOASY. cccncecscccccccccccccecssnsccecccnsncsccsoeces 0°23 O25 He cageBenanascccesnecbocnocbuncagcuacounancoenasdad 0°15 Metals on metals, dry…....c-s:e-sssceetecocsereccnceeeneceeceeacsceeeses 0°15 to 0-2 eS Wibibiceiee. coccctecceseccccasceceseecmecccsstennmscce see can 0°30 Smooth surfaces with ungents, occasionally greased…..... 0°07 to 0°08 Do. do., well (prensed…....:~~.2c0sce~~ 8°05 Do. do., do., best results …. 0°08 to 0°086*

766

It is to be understood that the above-stated law of friction is only true for dry surfaces when the pressure is not sufficient to indent or abrade the surfaces, and for greased surfaces when the pressure is not sufficient to force out the unguent from between the surfaces. If the proper limit be exceeded, the friction increases more rapidly than in the simple ratio of the normal pressure.

The limit of pressure for unguents diminishes as the speed increases. The following are some of its approximate values as in- ferred from experience in railway locomotive and carriage axles :—

Velocity of rubbing in feet per second : 1 2h 5 “SE Wl acter ee

In pivots, the intensity of the pressure is usually fixed at about one ton per square inch.

Unguents should be comparatively thick for heavy pressures, that they may resist being forced out, and comparatively thin for light pressures, that their viscidity may not add to the resistance.

Unguents are of three classes, viz.:—

1. Fatty: consisting of animal or vegetable fixed oils, such as tallow, lard, lard-oil, seal-oil, whale-oil, olive-oil. Drying oils, which absorb oxygen and harden, are obviously unfit for unguents.

2. Soapy: composed of fatty oil, alkali, and water. The best grease of this class should not contain more than about 25 or 30 per cent. of water; bad kinds contain 40 or 50 per cent. The addi- tional water diminishes the cost, but spoils the unguent.

3. Bituminous : composed of solid and liquid mineral compounds

of hydrogen and carbon. 108. Work of Friction—Moment of Friction.—The work per-

formed in a unit of time in overcoming the friction of a pair of |

surfaces is the product of the friction by the velocity of sliding of the surfaces over each other, if that is the same throughout the whole extent of the rubbing surfaces. If that velocity is different for different portions of the rubbing surfaces, the velocity of each

portion is to be multiplied by the friction of that portion, and the |

results summed or integrated.

When the relative motion of the rubbing surfaces is one of rota- tion, the work of friction in a unit of time, for a portion of the rubbing surfaces at a given distance from the axis of rotation, may be found by multiplying together the friction of that portion, its distance from the axis, aud the angular velocity. The product of the force of friction by the distance at which it acts from the axis of rotation is ealled the moment of friction. The

total moment of friction of a pair of rotating rubbing surfaces is the sum or integral of the moments of friction of their several portions.

To express this symbolically, let dw represent the area of a portion of a pair of rubbing surfaces at a distance 7 from the axis of their relative rotation ; p the intensity of the normal pressure at du per unit of area; and f the coefficient of friction. Then the moment of friction of dw is

Sprdu ; the total moment of friction is –

Lf pr.du ; and the work performed inaunitoff * * * * + + time in overcoming friction, when the angular velocity is a, is*

af ve pr.du.

It is evident that the moment of friction, and the work lost by being performed in overcoming friction, are less in a rotating piece as the bearings are of smaller radius. But a limit is put to the diminution of the radii of journals and pivots by the conditions of durability and of proper lubrication stated in sect. 107, and also by conditions of strength and stiffness.

109. Total Pressure between Journal and Bearing.—A single piece rotating with an uniform velocity has four mutually balanced forces applied to it :— (1) the eflort exerted on it by the piece which drives it ; (2) the resistance of the pieee which follows it,— which may be considered for the purposes of the present question

as useful resistance ; (8) its weight; and (4) the reaction of its own –

cylindrical bearings. There are given the following data :—

The direction of the effort.

The direction of the useful resistance.

The weight of the piece and the direction in which it acts.

The magnitude of the useful resistance.

The radius of the bearing 7.

The angle of repose ¢, corresponding to the friction of the journal

onthe bearing. . And there are required the following:—

The direction of the reaction of the bearing.

The magnitude of that reaction.

The magnitude of the effort.

Let the useful resistance and the weight of the piece be com- pounded by the principles of statics into one force, and let this be called the given force.

The directions of the effort and of the given force are either

‘shallow cups of steel or hard bronze.

parallel or meet in a point. If they are parallel, the direction of the reaction of the bearing is also parallel to them ; if they meet in a point, the direction of the reaction traverses the same point,

Also, let AAA, fig. 30, be a section of the bearing, and € its axis; then the direction of the reaction, at the point where it intersects the circle AAA, must make the angle : ¢@ with-the radius of that circle ; that is to say, it must be a line such as PT touching the smaller circle BB, whose radius isr.sin @. The side on which it touches that circle is determined by the fact that the obliquity of the reaction is ,\ such as to oppose the rotation.

Thus is determined the direction of the reactiou of the bearing; and the magni- tude of that reaction and of the effort are ; then found by the principles of the equili- Fig, 30. brium of three forces already stated in Part I., sect. 7 (see also p- 702, § 124).

The work lost in overcoming the friction of the bearing is the same with that which would be performed in overconiing at the circumference of the small circle BB a resistance equal to the whole pressure between the journal and bearing,

In order to diminish that pressnre to the smallest possible amount, the effort, and the resultant of the useful resistance, and the weight of the picce (called above the 'given force") ought to be opposed to. each other as directly as is practicable consistently with the purposes of the machine.

110. Friction of Pivots and Collars.—When a shaft is acted upon by a force tending to shift it lengthways, that force must be balanced by the reaction of a bearing against a pivot at the end of the shaft ; or, if that he impossible, against one or more collars, or rings projecting from the body of the shaft. The bearing of the pivot is called a step or footstep. Pivots require great hardness, and are usually made of steel. The flat pivot is a cylinder of steel having a plane circular end asa rubbing surface. Let N be the total pressure sustained bya flat pivot of the radins 7'; if that pres- sure be uniformly distributed, which is the case when the rubbing surfaces of the pivot and its step are both true planes, the inten- sity of the pressure is

N

are °

A

e ° . (60); and, introducing this value into equation 59; the moment of friction of the flat pivot is found to be

gfNr (61), or two-thirds of that of a cylindrical journal of the same radius under the same normal pressure.

The friction of a conical pivot exceeds that of a flat pivot of the same radius, and under the same pressure, in the proportion of the side of the cone to the radius of its base.

The moment of friction of a collar is given by the formula—

_ p78 apn. – (62), where 7 is the external and 7” the internal radius.

In the cup and ball pivot the end of the shaft and the step present two recesses facing each other, into which are fitted two Between the concave spheri- cal surfaces of those cupsis placed a steel ball, being either a complete sphere ora lens having convex surfaces of a somewhat less radius than the concave surfaces of the cups. The moment of friction of this pivot is at first almost inappreciable from the extreme smallness of the radius of the circles of contact of the ball _ and cups, but, as they wear, that radius and the moment of friction increase.

It appears that the rapidity with which a rubbing surface wears away is proportional to the friction and to the velocity jointly, or nearly so. Hence the pivots already men- tioned wear unequally at different points, and tend to alter their figures. Schiele has invented a pivot which preserves its original figure by wearing equally at all points ina direction parallel to its axis. The following are the principles on which this equality of wear depends :—

The rapidity of wear of a surface measured. in an oblique direction is to the rapidity of wear measured normally as the secant of the obliquity is to unity. Let OX (fig. 31) be the axis of a pivot, and let RPC be a portion of a curve such that at any point P the secant of the obliquity to the normal of the curve of a line parallel to the axis is inversely

Fig 31. proportional to the ordinate PY, to which the velocity of P is

The rotation of that curve round OX will generate

roportional. sty Now let PT be a tangent to the

the form of pivot required.

———a me i —_

APPLIED MECHANICS. |

curve at P, cutting OX in T; PT=PY x secant obliquity, and this is to be a eonstaut quantity ; hence the eurve is that known as the tractory of the straight line OX, in whieh PT=OR=constant. This curve is described by having a fixed straight edge parallel to OX, along which slides a slider carrying a pin whose centre is T. On that pin turns an arm, carrying at a point P a tracing-point, peneil, or pen. ; of an ordinary drawing-pen, the plane of the jaws must pass through PT. Then, while T is slid along the axis from O towards

‘ X, P will be drawn after it from R towards C along the tractory. This curve, being an asymptote to its axis, is eapable of being in- |

(a lpg a ig: open J segs onaitipe enable a belt to transinit a given foree between two pulleys.

stop before the angle PTY becomes less than the angle of repose of the rubbing surfaces, otherwise the pivot will be liable to stiek in its bearing.

is ealled, is equal to that of a cylindrieal journal of the radius OR=PT the constant tangent, under the same pressure.

111. Friction of Teeth.—Let N be the normal pressure exerted between a pair of teeth of a pair of wheels; s the total distanee through which they slide upon eaeh other ; » the number of pairs of teeth which pass the plaue of axis in a unit of time; then

OE et ie ks ns

is the work lost in unity of time by the friction of the teeth. The sliding s is composed of two parts, which take plaee during the approaeh and reeess respectively. Let those be denoted by s, and 8, so that s=s,8,. Insect. 55 the velocity of sliding at any instant has been given, viz., w=c(a, a), Where w is that velocity, e the distanee TI at any instant from the point of contact of the teeth to’ the pitch-point, and a, a, the respeetive angular velocities of the wheels.

Let v be the eommon veloeity of the two pitch-circles, 7, 7, their radii ; then the above equation becomes

w=cv|i —+—]}. Ty 73

To apply this to involute teeth, let c, be the length of the approach, ¢, that of the recess, w, the mcan veloeity of sliding during the approach, w, that during the recess ; then

*peas i LS * ai Pe us 1,1 4" O\ rts? 2 2\n 1*

also, let @ be the obliquity of the aetion ; then the times occupied |

by the approaeh and recess are respeetively Ca eee: vcosé' vcosé " giving, finally, for the length of sliding betwecn each pair of teeth, "A _ ate (Lea 881 59 9 cose 1) T, (64), which, substituted in equation 638, gives the work lost in a unit of time by the friction of involute teeth. This result, which is exact

for involute teeth, is approximately true for tecth of any figure. For inside gearing, if 7, be the less radius and r, the greater,

s = – is to be substituted for bs + os : mF? Gi %,

"12." Friction of Cords and Belis,~~A flexible band, such as a eord, rope, belt, or strap, may be used either to exert an effort or a resistance upon a pulley round which it wraps. In either ease the tangential foree, whether effort or resistance, exerted between tlie hand and the pulley is their mutual friction, eaused by and propor~~ tional to the normal pressure between them.

Let' T, be the tension of the free part. of the band at that side towards which it tends to draw the pulley, or from whieh the pulley tends to draw it ; T, the tension of the free part at the other side ; T the tension of the band at any intermediate point of its arc of eon- taet with the pulley; the ratio of the length of that are to the radius of the pulley ; @ the ratio of an iudefinitely small element of that arc to the radius ; F =T, —T, the total frietion between the band and the pulley ; dF the elementary portion of that friction due to the elementary arc d@; f the eoefficient of frietion between the materials of the band and pulley.

Then, aceording to a well-known prineiple in statics, the normal pressure at the elementary are dé@ is Tdé, T being the mean tension

Should the pen have a nib of two jaws, like those |

MECHANICS

The moment of friction of "Schiele's anti-frietion pivot," as it | by being tightened round a pulley.

767

When a belt connecting a pair of pulleys has the tensions of its two sides originally equal, the pulleys being at rest, and when the pulleys are next set in motion, so that one of them drives the other by means of the belt, it is found that the advaneing side of the belt is exaetly as much tightened as the returning side is slaekened, so that the mean tension remains unchanged. [Its valuc is given by this formula—

T,+T, ce? +1

whieh is useful in determining the original tension required to

(66),

The equations 65 and 66 are applicable to a kind of brake called a friction-strap, used to stop or moderate the velocity of machines The strap is usually of iron, and the pulley of hard wood. Let a denote the arc of contact expressed in turns and fractions of a turn; then 6 =6°2832a 4 ef? — number whose common logarithm is 2°7288 fa (67).

113. Stiffness of Ropes.—Ropes offer a resistance to being bent, and, when bent, to being straightened again, whieh arises from the mutual friction of their fibres. It inereases with the seetional area of the rope, and is inversely proportional to the radius of the eurve into whieh it is bent.

The work lost in pulling a given length of rope over a pulley is found by multiplying the length of the rope in feet by its stiffness in pounds, that stiffness being the exeess of the tension at the leading side of the rope above

that at the following side, which is neeessary to bend it into a eurve fitting the pulley, and then to straighten it again. :

The following empirical formule for the stiffness of hempen ropes

| have been dedueed by Morin from the experiments of Coulomb :—

Let F be the stiffness in pounds avoirdupois ; d the diameter of the rope in inehes, »=48d? for white ropes and 35d? for tarred ropes ; 7 the effective radius of the pulley in inehes ; T the tension in pounds. Then

For white ropes, F =" (0°0012 + 0 001026n + 0-0012T)

3 (68).

For tarred ropes, F = = (0006 + 00013927 + 0:00168T)

.

114. Friction-Couplings. —Frietion is useful as a means of eom-munieating motion where sudden ehanges either of foree or velocity take plaee, beeause, being limited in amount, it may be so adjusted as to limit the forees which strain the pieces of the meehanisin within the bounds of safety. Amongst eontrivances for effeeting this object are friction-concs. A rotating shaft earries upon a cylindrieal portion of its figure a wheel or pulley turning loosely on

| it, and consequently eapable of remaining at rest when the shaft is

of the band at that elementary arc; consequently the friction on |

that are is dF=fTde. Now that friction is also the difference

between the tensions of the band at the two ends of the élementary | comparatively recent achievements of Joule.

are, ordT =dF =fTdé; which equation, being integrated throughout the entire arc of contact, gives the following formule :—

hyp. logy! = 78 « . 2 aa

(65).

at <) fs wh os 4S ee 8 &

F=T,$_{T,=T,(1-e}$) =T,(e” -1) J

|

| is 772 foot-pounds. _ equivalent,” is the principal experimental datum of the science of | thermodynamies.

in motion. This pulley has fixed to one side, and eoneentrie with it, a short frustum of a hollow eone. Ata small distanee from the pulley the shaft earries a short frustum of a solid cone aeeurately turned to fit the hollow cone. This frnstum is made always to turn along with the shaft by being fitted on a square portion of it, or by means of a rib and groove, or otherwise, but is eapable of a slight longitudinal motion, so as to be pressed into, or withdrawn from, the hollow eone by means of a lever. When the eones are pressed together or engaged, their friction causes the pulley to rotate along with the shaft; when they are disengaged, the pulley is free to stand still. The angle made by the sides of the cones with the axis should not be less than the angle of repose. In the friction- elutch, a pulley loose on a shaft has a hoop or gland made to embrace it more or less tightly by means of a screw; this hoop has short projecting arms or cars.

115. Heat of Friction—Unguents.—The work lost in friction is employed in producing heat. This fact is very obvious, and has been known from a remote period ; but the exact determination of the proportion of the work lost to the heat produeed, and the experimental proof that that proportion is the same under all eir- cumstances, and with all materials, solid, liquid, and gaseons, are The quantity of work which produces a British unit of heat (or so much heat as elevates the temperature of one pound of pure water, at or near ordinary atmospheric temperatures, by one degree of Fahrenheit) This constant, now designated as “Joule’s

The heat produced by frietion, when moderate in amount, is useful in softening and liquefying thick unguents ; but when excessive it

768

is prejudicial, by decomposing the unguents, aud sometimes ever by softening the metal of the bearings, and raising their temperature so high as to set fire to neighbouring combustible matters,

Excessive heating is prevented by a constant and copious supply of a good unguent. The elevation of temperature produced by the friction of a journal is sometimes used as an experimental test of the quality of unguents. When the velocity of rubbing is about 4 or 5 fect per second, the elevation of temperature has been found by some recent experiments to be, with good fatty and soapy unguents, 40° to 50° Fahr.; with good mineral unguents, about 30°,

*116. Rolling Resistance. —By the rolling of two surfaces over each other without sliding a resistance is caused which is called some- times "rolling frietion," but .more correctly rol/ing resistance. It is of the nature of a couple, resisting rotation. Its moment is found by multiplying the normal pressure between the rolling surfaces by an arm, whose length depends on the nature of the rolling surfaces, and the work lost in a unit of time in overcoming it is the product of its moment by the angular velocity of the rolling surfaces rela- tively to each other. The following are approximate values of the * arm in decimals of a foot :—*

Oak DpomiOgk 2.20.5 cccbenexseeieesdecadisesaectsseroeetss 0006 (COulamp): Digraiitih: Viligs 'Off. ODM 552 csxneeatiuawenegaceenessasweiseas 0004 3% Cast ION GN CONE ATOM: <.,...θ

117. Reciprocating Forees—Storcd and Restored Energy.—When a force acts on a nachine alternately as an effort and as a resistance, it may be called a reciprocating force. Of this kind is the weight of any piece inthe mechanism whose centre of gravity alternately rises and falls; for during the rise of the centre of gravity that weight acts as a resistance, and energy is employed in lifting it to an amount expressed by the product of the weight

into the vertical height of its rise ; and during the fall of the centre of gravity the weight acts as an effort, and exerts in assisting to perform the work

-of the machine an amount of energy exactly equal to that which had previously been employed in lifting it. Thus that amount of energy is not lost, but has its operation deferred ; and it is said to be stored when the weight is lifted, and restored when it falls.

In a machine of which each piece is to move with a uniform velocity, if the effort and the resistance be constant, the weight of each piece must be balanced on its axis, so that it may produce lateral pressure only, and not act asa reciprocating force. But if the effort and the resistance be alternately in excess, the uniformity of speed may still be preserved by so adjusting some moving weight in the mechanism that when the effort is in excess it may be lifted, and so balance and employ the excess of effort, and that when the resistanee is in excess it may fall, and so balance and overcome the excess of resistance, —thus storing the periodical excess of energy, and restoring that energy to perform the periodical exeess of work.

Other forces besides gravity may be used as reciprocating forces for storing and restoring energy,—for example, the elasticity of a spring or of a mass of air.

In most of the delusive machines commonly called ' perpetual*

motions," of which so many are patented in each year, and which | are expected by their inventors to perform work without receiving | | the position in which the bob will revolve

energy, the fundamental fallacy consists in an expectation that some reciprocating force shall restore more energy than it has been the means of storing.

Division 2, Deflecting Forces.

118. Deflecting Force for Translation in a Curved Path.—In machinery, deflecting force is supplied by the tenacity of some piece, such as a crank,

which guides the deflected body in its curved path, and is unbalanced, being employed in producing deflexion, and not in balancing another force.

119. Centrifugal Forec.—See p. 682, § 35, and p. 701, § 119.

120, Rectangular Resolution of Centrifugal Force.—See p. 701, §§ 117 and 119.

121. Centrifugal Force of a Rotating Body. — The centrifugal force exerted by a rotating body on its axis of rotation 13 the same in magnitude as if the mass of the body were concentrated at its centre of gravity, and acts in a plane passing through the axis of rotation and the centre of gravity of the body.

The particles of a rotating body exert centrifugal forces on each other, which strain the body, and tend to tear it asunder ; but these forces balance each other, and do not affect the resultant cen- trifugal force exerted on the axis of rotation.?

Tf the axis of rotation traverses the centre of gravity of the body, the centrifugal force cxerted on that axis ts nothing.

Hence, unless there be some reason to the contrary, each piece of a machine should be balanced on its axis of rotation; otherwise the centrifugal force will cause strains, vibration, and increased friction, and a tendency of the shafts to jump out of their bearings.

122. Centrifugal Couples of a Rotating Body.—Besides the tend- ency (if any) of the combined eentrifugal forces of the particles of

1 This is a particular case of a more general principle, that the motion of the centre of gravity of a body is not affected by the mutual actions of its parts, for the proof of whieh see p. 718, § 179.

| strneted with pairs of rods and bobs,

, foree and the weight of the bob is a force

[APPLIED MECHANICS,

a rotating body to shift the axis of rotation, they may also tend to turn it out of its original direction. The latter tendency is called a centrifugal couple, and vanishes for rotation about a principal axis (see p. 732, § 237).

It is essential to the steady motion of every rapidly rotating piece in a machine that its axis of rotation should not merely traverse its centre of gravity, but should be a permanent axis; for otherwise the centrifugal couples will increase friction, produce oscillation of the shaft, and tend to make it leave its bearings.

The principles of this and the preceding section are those which regulate the adjustment of the weight and position of the cownter. poises which are placed between the spokes of the driving-wheels of locomotive engines.

123. Revolving Pendulum—Governors.—In fig. 32 AO represents an npright axis or spindle; B a weight ealled a 606, suspended by rod OB from a horizontal axis at O, carried by the vertical axis. When the spindle is at rest the bob hangs close to it; when the spindle rotates, the bob, be- ing made to revolve round it, diverges until the resultant of the centrifugal

acting at O in the direction OB, and then it revolves steadily in a circle. This combination is called a revolving, centrifugal, or conical pendulum. Re- volving pendulums are usually eon-

as OB, Cd, hung at opposite sides of the spindle, that the centrifugal forces exerted at the point O may balance each other. Fie, 39 In finding the position in which the 2S, bob will revolve with a given angular velocity e, for most practical eases connected with machinery the mass of the rod may be con- sidered as insensible eompared with that of the bob. Let the bob be a sphere, and from the centre of that sphere draw BH=y perpendicular to

OA. Let OH=z; let W be the weight of the bob, F its eentrifugal force. Then the condition of its steady revolution

y

isW :F::2:y; that is to say, ; consequently

(69).

. a a . ns Or, if n= be the number of turns or fractions of a turn

Qe 62832

in a second, g __0°8165 foot _9°79771 inches) (70); “dn? n® n i ;*

z is called the altitude of the pendulum. If the rod of a revolving pendulum be jointed, as in fig. 33, not to a point in the vertical axis, but to the end of a projecting arm C,

will be the same as if the rod were jointed to the point O, where its prolongation cuts the vertical axis.

A revolving pendulum is an essential part of most of the contrivances called governors, for regulating the speed of prime movers.

The earlier kinds of governors act on the prime mover by the variations of their alti- tude. Thus in Watt’s steam-engine governor

Fig. 33.

the rods, through a combination of levers and linkwork ©, ¢, D,¢@ (fig. 32), act on a lever EF, which acts upon the throttle-valve for the admission of steam so as to enlarge or contractits opening when the speed becomes too small or too great.

In a more recent kind of governors invented by the Messrs

Siemens, which may be called differcntialgovernors, the regulation of the prime mover is effected by means of the difference between the velocity of a

wheel driven by it and that of a wheel regulated by a_re- volving pendulum. Fig. 34 illustrates this class of governors. A isa vertical dead-centre or fixed shaft, about which the after-men- tioned pieces turn; Cisa pulley driven by the prime mover, and fixed to a bevel-wheel, which is seen below it; E is a bevel-wheel

Za

LANs

*| [*

an ¢ | TN

Fig. 34. similar to the first, and having the same apex, To this wheel are hung the bobs B, of which there aré

—

APPLIED MECHANICS. |

usually four, although two only are shown.

MECHANICS

Those bobs form }

769

In order to produce a retardation from the greater vcloeity v, to

sectors of a ring, and are surrounded bya cylindrical casing F. | the less velocity 7,, it is necessary to apply to the body a resistance,

When the bobs revolve with their proper velocity, they are ad- justed so as nearly to touch this casing; should they exceed that veloeity, they fly outwards and touch the casing, and are retarded by the friction. For practical purposes their velocity of rotation about the vertical axis may be considered constant. G, G are hori- zontal arms projecting from a socket

which is capable of rotation about A, aud carrying vertieal bevel whcels which rest on K and support C, and transmit motion from C to K. There are usually four of the arms G, G with their wheels, though two only are shown. H is one of those arms which projects, and has a rod attached to its extremity to act on the throttlc-valve of a steam-engine, the slnice of a water-wheel, or the regulator of the prime mover, of whatever sort it may be.

When C rotates with an angular velocity equal and contrary to that of E with its revolving pendulums, the arms G, G remain at rest ; but should C deviate from that velocity, those arms rotate in one direction or the other, as the case may be, with an angular velocity equal to onc half of the difference between the angnlar velocity of Cand that of KE, and continue in motion until the regulator is adjusted so that the prime mover shall impart to C an angular velocity exactly equal to that of the revolving pendulums.

There are various modifications of the differential governor, but they all act on the same principle.

Division 3. Working of Machines of Varying Velocity.

124. General Prineiples.—In order that the velocity of evcry piece of a machine may be uniform, it is necessary that the forces acting on each piecc should be always exactly balanced. Also, in order that the forces acting on each piece of a machine may be always exactly balanced, it is necessary that the velocity of that piece should be uniform.

An excess of the effort exerted on any piece, above that which is necessary to balance the resistance, is accompanied with aecclera. tion; a deficiency of the effort, with retardation.

Whena machine is being started from a state of rest, and brought by degrees up to its proper speed, the effort must be in excess ; when it is being retarded for the purpose of stopping it, the resistance must be in excess.

An excess of effort above resistance involves an cxcess of cnergy exerted above work perfor.ned ; that excess of energy is cinployed in producing aeceleration.

An excess of resistance above effort involves an excess of work performed above energy expended; that excess of work is performed by means of the retardation of the machinery.

When a machine undergoes alternate acceleration and retarda- tion, so that at certain instants of time, occurring at the end of intervals called periods or eyeles, it returns to its original speel, then in each of those periods or cycles the alternate excesses of energy and of work neutralize each other; and at the cnd of cach cycle the principle of the cquality of energy and work stated in sect. 96, with all its consequences, is verified exactly as in the case of machines of uniform speed.

At intermediate instants, howcver, other principles have also to be taken into account, which are deduced from the second law of motion, sect. 89, as applied by the aid of the principles of sect. 90, to dircet deviation, or acceleration and retardation.

125. Energy of Acceleration and Work of Retardation for a Shifting Body.— Let w be the weight of a body which has a motion of trauslation in any path, and in the course of the interval of time At let its velocity be increased at a uniform rate of acceleration from v, to v. The rate of acceleration will be

Bin OF = constant = — 2 ixp 8

v de, and (p. 698, § 104) to produce this acccleration a uniform effort will be required, expressed by Bs Was (% – %) gat

(71).

(The product WP of the mass of a body by its velocity is called

its momentum ; so that the effort required is found by dividing the increase of momentum by the time in which it is produced.)

To find the energy which has to be exerted to produce the accel- eration from v, to V),it is to be observed that the distance through which the effort P acts during the acceleration is

As= “tal :

consequently, the encray of acceleration is

W(Vq— V4)(V_ +24) _ wry — 17) 29 2g

being proportional to the increase in the square of the velocity, and

independent of the trme.

AS (72),

connected with the retardation and the time by an equation identical in every respect with equation 71, except by the substitu- tion of a resistauce for an effort ; and in overcoming that resistance the body performs work to an amount determined by equation 72, putting Rds for Pads.

126. Energy Stored andl Restored by Deviations of Velocity.—Thus a body alternately accelerated and retarded, so as to be brought baek to its original speed, performs work during its retardation exaetly eqnal in amount to the energy exerted upon it during its acceleration ; so that that energy may be considered as stored during the acceleration, and restored during the retardation, in a manner analogous to the operation of a reciprocating force (seet. 117).

Let there be given the mean velocity V = 4(v, + v,) of a body whose weight is w, and let it be required to determine the fluctuation of velocity v,—v,, and the extreme velocities v,, v2, which that body must have, in order alternately to store and restore an amount of energy E. By equation 72 we have

pan 2 = Mi) 2g which, being divided by V=4(v,+%,), gives E_w(t-%) . g 3 and consequently a gk Vw The ratio of this fluctuation to the mean velocity, sometimes called the wnsteadiness of the motion of the body, is

(73).

%M%— Vy

(74).

127. Actual Energy of a Shifting Body.—The energy which must be exerted on a body of the weight w, to accelerate it from a state of rest up to a given velocity of translation v, and the equal amount of work which that body is capable of performing by over- eoming resistance while being retarded from the same velocity of translation v to a state of rest, is

we 2y

This is called the actual energy of the motion of the body, and is half the quantity which in some treatises is called vis viva.

The energy stored or restored, as the case may be, by the devia- tions of velocity of a body or a system of bodies, is the amount by which the actual energy is increased or diminished.

128. Principle of the Conservation of Energy in Machines. —The following principle, expressing the general law of the action of machines with a velocity uniform or varying. includes the law of the equality of energy and work stated in sect. 99 for machines of uniform speed.

In any given interval during the working of a machine, the energy exerted added to the energy restored is equal to the energy stored added to the work performed.

129. Actual Energy of Circular Translation— Moment of Inertia. —Let a body of the weight w undergo translation in acircular path of the radius p, with the angular velocity of deflexion a, so that the

SS ee . . . . .

common linear velocity of all its particles is v=ap. Then the actual cnergy of that body is 2 eae le a (76).

2y 29

By comparing this with the expression for the centrifugal force (wa2/pg), it appears that the actual energy of a revolving body is equal to the potential

cucrgy Fp/2 due to the action of the deflecting force along one-half of the radius of curvature of the path of the body.

The product wp?/g, by which the half-square of the angular velo- city is multiplied, is called the moment of inertia of the revolving body.

130. Actual Energy and Moment of Inertia of Rotation—Radius of Gyration. —See p. 732, §$ 234-237.

131. Exumples of Radii of Gyration.—See p. 733, § 238.

132. Fly-wheels.—A fly-wheel is a rotating piece in a machine, generally shaped like a wheel (that is to say, consisting of a rim with spokes), and suited to store and restore energy. by the periodical variations in its angular velocity. _ ,

The principles according to which variations of angular velocity store and restore energy are the same with those of sect. 126, ouly substituting moment of inertia for mass, and angular for linéar velocity. ; : ‘

Let W be the weight of a fly-wheel, R its radius of gyration, a, its maximum, a, its minimum, and A= 3(a,+ a) its mean angular

velocity. Let

XV. — 97

770

denote the wnsteadiness of the motion of the fly-wheel; the denom- inator S of this fraction is called the steadiness. Let ¢ denote the quantity by which the energy exerted in each cycle of the working of the machine alternately exceeds and falls short of the work per- formed, and which has consequently to be alternately stored by aeceleration and restored by retardation of the fly-wheel. The value of this periodical execss is— pa Was — a?)

29

frem which, dividing beth sides by A®, we obtain the following equations : — ‘ e RW A? gS R°WA? Se

37. 2

Phe latter of these equations may be thus expressed in words :— The actual energy due to the rotation of the fly, with ts mean angular velocity, ts equal to one-half of the periodieal excess of energy multiplied by the steadiness.

In ordinary machinery S=about 82; in machinery for fine purposes S=from 50 to 60.

The periodical excess ¢ may arise either from variations in the effort exerted by the prime mover, or from variations in the resistance of the work, or from both these causes combined. When but one fly-wheel is used, it should be placed in as direct eonnexion as possible with that part of the mechanism where the greatest amount of the periodical excess originates ; but when it originates at two or more points, it is best to have a fly-wheel in connexion with each of those points. For example, in a machine- work, the steam-engine, which is the prime mover of the various tools, has a fly-whcel on the crank-shaft to store and restore the periodical excess of energy arising from the variations in the effort exerted by the connecting-rod upon the crank ; and each of the slotting machines, punching machines, rivetting machines, and

cdcee veh

(78).

other tools has a fly-wheel of its own to store and restore energy, |

so as to enable the very different resistances opposed to those tools at different times to be overcome without too great unsteadiness of motion.

According to the computation of General Morin, the periodical excess ¢ in steam-engines with single cranks is from ¥5th to nearly

ith of the energy exerted during one revolution of the crank. |

For a pair of steam-engiues driving one shaft, with a pair of

eranks at right angles to each other, the value of ¢ is one-fourth of |

its value for a single cranked engine of the same kind, and of the same power with the two combined.

The ordinary radius of gyration of a stcam-engine fly-wheel is from three te five times the length of the crank-arm. (For further particulars on this subject, see SrEAM-ENG1NE.)

For tools performing nseful work at intervals, and having only their own friction to overcome during the intermediate intervals, ¢ should be assumed equal to the whole work performed at each separate operation.

133. Brakes.—A brake is an apparatus for stopping and diminish- ing the velocity of a machine by friction, such as the friction-strap already referred to in sect. 112. To find the distance s through which a brake, exerting the friction F, must rub in order to stop a machine having the total actual energy-E at the moment when the brake begins to act, reduce, by the prineiples of sect. 105, the various efforts and other resistances of the machine which act at the same time with the friction of the brake to the rubbing surface of the brake, and let R be their resultant,—positive if resistance,

negative if effort preponderates. Then E °=FLR ¢ % (79).

184. Energy distributed between two Bodies—Projection and Propulsion.—Hitherto the effort by which a machine is moved has been treated as a force exerted between a movable body and a fixed body, so that the whole energy exerted by it is employed upon the movable body, and none upon the fixed body. This conception is sensibly realized in practice when one of the two bodies between whrich the effort acts is either so heavy as compared with the other, or has so great a resistance opposed to its motion, that it may, without sensible error, be treated as fixed. But there

are cases in which the motions of both bodies are appreciable, and |

must be taken into account,—such as the projection of projectiles; where the velocity of the recoil or backward motion of the gun hears an appreciable proportion to the forward motion of the pro- jectile ; and snch asthe propulsion of vessels, where the velocity of the water thrown backward by the paddle, serew, or other pro- peller bears a very considerable proportion to the velocity of the water moved forwards and sideways by the ship. In eases of this kind the energy exerted by the effort is distributed between the two bodies between which the effort is exerted in shares propor- tional to the velocities of the two bodies during the action of the

effort ; and those velovities are to each other directly as the portions of the effort unbalanced by resistance on the respective bodies, and inversely as the weights of the bodies.

To express this symbolically, let W,, W, be the weights of the bodies; P the effort exerted between them; S the distance through which it acts; R,, Re the resistances opposed to the effort overcome by W,, W, respectively ; E,, E, the shares of the whela

energy E exerted upon W,, W, respectively. Then E a3 E, : Ky ., W(P-R,) + W,(P-R,) P~R, P-R, » + (86). W,W, WwW, ° Wy

If R,=R,, which is the case when the resistance, as well as the effort, arises from the mutual actions of the two bodies, the above

beeomes, EK : E, : BE, >: W + We: Wo: Wy

that is to say, the energy is exerted on the bodies in shares inversely proportional to their weights; and they receive accelerations in- versely proportional to their weights, according to the prineiple of dynamics,

already quoted in a note to sect. 121, that the mutual actions of a system of bodics do not affect the motion of their common centre of gravity.

For example, if the weight of a gun be 160 times that of its ball, 4189 of the energy exerted by the powder in exploding will be employed in propelling the ball, and 73; in producing the recoil of the gun, provided the gun up to the instant of the ball's quitting the muzzle meets with no resistance to its recoil except the friction of the ball.

135. Centre of Pereussion.—It is obviously desirable that the deviations or changes of motion of oscillating pieces in machinery should, as far as possible, be effected by forces applied at their centres of percussion.

If the deviation be a ¢ranslation,—that is, an equal change of motion of all the particles of the body,—the centre of percussion is obviously the centre of gravity itself; and, according to the second law of motion, if dv be the deviation of velocity to + produeed in the interval dé, and W the weight of the body, then

Re W dv

g | dt — is the unbalanced effort required.

If the deviation be a rotation about an axis traversing the centre of gravity, there is no centre of percussion; for such a deviation can only be produced by a couple of forces, and not by any single Let da be the deviation of angular velocity to be produced in the interval d¢, and I the moment of the inertia of the body; then 4]d(a?)=Iada is the variation of the body's actual energy. Let M be the moment of the nnbalaneed couple required to produce the deviation ; then, by equation 57, sect. 104, the energy exerted by this couple in the interval dt 1s Madt, which, being equated to tha variation of energy, gives

M=1

(81) ;

(82)

da RW da dt gg dt

Now (fig. 85), let the required deviation be a rotation of the body BB about an axis O, not traversing the centre of gravity G, do being, as before, the deviation of angular velocity to be produced in the interval dé. A rotation with the angular velocity a about an axis O may be considered as compounded of a rotation with the same angular velocity about an axis drawn through G parallel to O and a translation with the velocity a. OG, OG being tha perpendicular distance between the two axes. Hence the required deviation may be regarded as compounded of a deviation of translation dv=OG.da, to produce which there would be required, according to equation 82, a force applied at G per- pendicular to the plane OG—

W da

P i ar ee and a deviation da of rotation about an axis drawn through G parallel to O, to produce which there would be required a eouple of the moment M given by equa- tion 83. Accerding to the principles of ‘ statics, the resultant of the force P, ap- Pig. 89. f plied at G perpendicular to the plane OG, and the couple M isa force equal and parallel to P, but applied at a distance GC from G, in the prolongation of the perpendicular OG, whose value is

piM Re CC” #69 Thus is determined the position of the centre of pereussion C,

cerresponding to the axis of rotation O. It is ebvious fro this . equation that, for an axis of rotation parallel te © traversing ©; the

(83).

(84), B

(85).

APPLIED MECHANICS. |

eeutre of percussion is at the point where the perpendicular OG meets O.

136. Jmpact.—Impact or collision is a pressure of short duration exerted between two bodies. For the detailed investigation of its laws the reader is referred to MECHANICS, p. 719, § 180 sq.

The effects of impact are sometimes an alteration of the distribu- tion of aatual energy between the two bodies, and always a loss cf a portion of that energy, depending on the imperfection of the elasticity of the bodies, in permanently altering their figures, and producing heat. 'The determination of the distribution of the aetnal energy after collision and of the loss of energy is effected by means of the following principles :—

I, The motion of the common centre of gravity of the two bodies is unchanged by the collision.

Il. The loss of energy consists of a certain proportion of that part of the actual energy of the bodies which is due to their motion relatively to their common centre of gravity.

Unless there is some special reason for using impact in machines, it ought to be avoided, on account not only of the waste of energy which it causes, but from the damage which it occasions to the frame and mechanism.

CuaAPpTer II]. Purposrs AND EFFECTS OF MACHINES.

137. Observing Machines and Working Machines.—The present ehapter must necessarily be limited to some very general observa- tions on the principal classes into whieh machines may be divided, with reference to their purposes and effects, leaving details of par- tienlar examples for treatment under the respective special headings.

Machines inay be divided, in the first instance, into two great divisions, viz. :—

I. Observing Machines, in which either the modification of motion alone, or the balancing of forees alone, is the object in view,—the performance of

work being either null or incidental, and_ being limited to that: which arises from the resistance of the machine.

Il. Working machines, in whieh the performance of work is the |

main object.

138. Olasstfication of Observing Machines.—Observing machines might very properly have been classed as instruments, being de- signed to aid the human senses and memory in obtaining and recording information. They may be divided, in the first instance, into four classes, according as the subject of observation by thcir aid is number, measure, or weight, into—

A. Counting machines.

B. Measuring machines.

C. Copying and drawing machines.

D. Weighing machines. And to these may be added a fifth class, in which the functions of the first four are more or less combined, viz. :—

E. Recording machines.

139. (A.) Cownting Machines. —The most important as well as the most common of counting machines are time-kecpers, which count and indieate the numbers of oscillations of bolies which oscillate isoehronously (viz., pendulums for clocks, balance-wheels for watches and marine chronometers) so as to measnre time. In constructing such machines, the objects to be aimed at are the exact isochronism of the pendulum or balance, and the equable action of the motive power, so that it shall overcome the friction of the mechanism without affecting the rate.

Other counting machines count the oscillations of the beain of a steam-engine, or the revolutions of the cylinder of a gas-meter or of the wheel of a water-meter.

Others perform additions, subtractions, and multiplications, and of these the most elaborate kind (as, e.g., that of Babbage) compute tables of

funetions by the addition of differences.

140. (B.) Measuring Maehines.—Measuring machines are pieces of mechanism, by means of which the motion of some body of the nature of an index through some geometrical magnitude, such asa distance or an angle, is connected with some other motion, either equal or greater or smaller in some given ratio, and capable of being more readily compared with some standard of measure.

To this class belong all those astronomical and surveying instru- ments in which the motion of a line of sight (generally the line of eollimation of a telescope) through a given angle is connected with the notion of an index or vernier round a corresponding arc of a graduated circle ; also those micrometers in which the advance of the end of a screw of fine pitch is measured by observing the simul- taneous are of rotation of a graduated eircle attached to it.

Snch micrometers have attained increased importance by the discovery of Whitworth,—that the mechanical magnifying of small distanees by a train ot screws affords a more accurate means of measurement than optical magnifying by the microscope,—and by the perfection to which that engineer has brought that art of accu- rate workmanship which is necessary in order to render mechanical magnifying possible.

Amongst measuring machines are included the platometers or planimeters of Sang, Morin, and Clerk Maxwell, which measure

“gal

areas by means of mechanism. The amount of resistance in a measuring machine should be perfectly uniform, and sufficiently great to prevent accidental forces from disturbing the machine, without being so great as to render it inconveniently stiff. To combine these objects requires great accuracy of workmanship, together with strength and rigidity in the structure of the frame and mechanism.

141. (C.) Copying and Drawing Machincs.—In copying machinés for enlarging or reducing drawings there is usually a combination of levers and linkwork connecting a tracing-point, which is moved over the lines of the original figure, with a drawing-point, which draws the copy in such a manner that the velocity ratio of their motions is a given constant quantity, and that the directions of their motions make a constant angle.

Mechanism depending for its principle on the theory of the composition of rotations is used to draw ellipses, epicyeloids, epitrochoids, and other curves.

142. (D.) Weighing Machines.—In weighing machines the motion of the mechanisin is used only for the purpose that its cessation, or its becoming an oscillation about a certain position, may indicate the equilibrium of the forces applied to the machine. Those forces may either be weights, which are to be compared with each other, or forces of other kinds, to be compared directly or indirectly with weights.

The machine for eomparing weights which is capable of the most minute accuracy is also the simplest, being the balance, in which the equality of two weights is aseertained by their balancing each other at the ends ofa lever of equal arms. In the steclyard, consisting either of one lever or of a train of levers, the unknown weight has an unchangeable point of application, and is compared with a known weight by shifting the latter along the lever to which it is applied until the machine is balanced ; the ratio of the weights is then the reciprocal of the velocity ratio of their points of applica- tion. The steelyard is more convenient for weighing very heavy loads than the balance, but is not capable of such minute aecuracy.

It is essential to accuracy in balances and steelyards that the friction should be less than the smallest admissible amount of error.

| To diminish the friction as much as possible, the axes of motion are

all knife-edges, as they are termed, of steel or hardened ircn, resting on hard surfaces of hardened iron or steel for ordinary purposes, and of some hard mineral, such as agate, for scientific purposes.

The weight of a column of fluid is determined by balaneing jt against a column of fluid whose weight is known, as in tho barometer, where the weight of a column of the atmosphere is balanced against that of a column of mercury.

Weights are compared with each other indirectly, and other forces compared with weights, by means of their effects in bending a spring,—a convenient method, but not suseeptible of minute accuracy.

The elastic pressure exerted by a finid may be compared with weight, either by balancing the pressure against the weight of a column of a liquid, or by maintaining a piston in equilibrium against that pressure, by means of a weight pressing it directly, or of a weight acting through a steelyard, or of the elasticity of a spring which has been compared with weights.

143. (E.) Recording Machines.—Recording machines may be divided into two classes :—self-registering instruments, which, by the aid of clockwork, record measurements either of space or of force, together with the instants of time at which these measurements were nade; and dynamometers, already mentioned in Chap. Il. of this article, which register measurements of foree, together with the space through which it has acted, thus recording energy or work.

144. Working Machines Classed.—The object or purpose of work- ing machines is to perform uscful work ; and their classification relatively to their objects and purposes is founded on the kind of useful work which they perform. In this point of view they may be elassed as follows :-—

A. Machines for lifting or lowering solid weights. :

B. Machines for the horizontal transport of weights, either eem- bined or not with lifting or lowering.

Machines for projecting solids.

Machines for lifting fluids.

Machines for propelling or projecting fluids.

Machines for dividing bodies. :

Machines for shaping bodies by removing portiens ef them.

Machines for shaping bodies by pressure.

Machines for uniting bodies into fabrics.

. Machines for printing.

K. Machines for producing sound.

L. Miscellaneous machines.

It is not pretended that the above classification (taken fo a eon: siderable extent from the writings of Young and of Babbage) exhausts all kinds of maehines; it is brought forward merely fs an attempt to introduce method toa certain extent into a subject whieh would otherwise be exceedingly confused. |

145. (A.) Machines for Lifting and Lowering Solids. —The most eommon machines of this elass are capstans, cranes, and windlasses.

SRR OO

(72

They are usually worked by manual labour, but sometimes by

hydraulic cngines, or by steam-engines. The useful resistance, when a load is lifted, being the weight of that load, is in general

greater than the effort exerted by the prime mover, so that the |

mechanism has to be adapted to giving the working-piece a less velocity than the picce to which the effort is applied. In lowering solid loads the weight of the load acts as the etfort, and the energy exerted by it is expended in overcoming the friction of a brake in order that the speed of descent may not be excessive.

146. (B.) Transporting Machines.—The mechanism of transport- ing machines consists of two parts :—that by which the resistance is diminished, as the wheels and axles of vehicles; and that by which the resistance is overcome and the load propelled, eomprising all kinds of locomotive and propelling machinery. In the present work transporting machines are treated of in the articles relating specially to the lines of conveyance to which they are appied.

147. (C.) Machines for Projecting Solids. —This class comprehends all kinds of artillery.

148. (D.) Machines for Lifting Fluids.—See HypRoMECHANICS.

149. (E.) Machines for Propelling or Projecting Fluids,—See the same article.

150. (F.) Machines for Dividing Bodics.—This class comprelends all machines for separating solid masses into parts, whether by digging, cutting, sawing, grinding, tearing, crushing, pounding, pressing out fluids, or otherwise ; and whether applied to earth, stones, metals, timber, fruit, grain, fibres, or other materials.

151, (G.) Machines for Shaping Bodics by Removing Portions of them. — his class of machines toa eertain extent resembles the pre- ceding. It includes machines for cutting, grinding, and polishing blocks of stone into required figures, and for shaping pieces of wood, metal, or other material, whether by éwrning, to produce spherical,

cylindrical, and other enrved surfaces, —by boring, punching, slotting, | or gouging, to prodnee cylindrical, rectangular, or other orifices and |

grooves, —by scerew-cutting, hy planing, by grinding and polishing, to produce eurved or plane surfaces. The most difficnlt and import- ant of all these operations is to produce a surface truly plane ; and the perfecting of this operation by Whitworth is the most im- portant step recently made in Constructive Mechanies, or the art of making machines and instruments. Next in point of difficulty may be placed the art of forming the coneave

reflecting surfaces of great specula for telescopes, such as those of the Iferschels, of Lassell, and of Lord Rosse.

152. (H.) Maehines for Shaping Bodies by Pressure comprehend, amongst others, rolling-mills for iron, steam-hammers, wire- drawing machines, pinmaking and natlmaking machines, coining and other stamping machinery, brickmaking machines, presses for packing and compressing, &c.

153. (I.) Machines for Uniting Bodies into Fabrics eomprise spinning maehinery, whether applied to ropes, yarn, or thread,

weaving machinery of all kinds, papermaking machinery, felting —

machinery, and sewing machinery.

154. (J.) Machines for Printing are used to apply either colouring matters or matters for discharging colour to paper, cloth, and other materials.

155. (K.) Afachines for producing Sound.—See Acoustics and Music.

156. (L.) Miseellancous Machincs.—Therc are numerous machines which perform processes, especially in the preparation of textile fabrics br the market, which it would be almost impossible to class. Examples of such machines will be found by referring to the articles relating to the various branches of manufacture.

CuapTer IVY. AppLtieD ENERGETICS, on THEORY OF PRIME Movers.

157. Prime Movers in gencral— Their Efficiency.—Yrime movers, or receivers of power, are those pieces or eombinations of pieces of mechanism which receive moticn and foree directly from some natural source of energy. The point where the mechanism belong- ing to the prime mover ends and that belonging to the train for

modifying the foree and motion begins is somewhat arbitrary ; in |

general, however, the mechanism belonging to the prime mover may be held to include all pieces which regulate or assist in regulating the transmission

of energy from the source of energy. Thus, in the ordinary rotative steam-engine, the crank-shaft belongs to the prime mover, because it carries the eccentric which moves the valves and the fly-wheel which stores and restores the periodical excess of energy of the engine, and drives the governor (when there is one) which regnlates the admission of steam.

The aseful work of the prime mover is the energy exerted by it upon that piece which it directly drives ; and the 1atio which this

bears to the energy exerted by the source of energy is the efficiency |

of the prime mover. It is often convenient to divide the prime mover into sections,

and resolve its efficiency into factors, each factor being the efficiency |

of one of those sections. Thus the etliciency ofa steam-engine may be resolved into the following factors :—

| Lfficiency of the furnace and botler,—being the proportion of the total heat of combnstion of the fuel which takes effect in heating , and evaporating the water.

Efficiency of the steam in driving the piston,—being the proportion of the energy exerted by the steam on the piston (called the indi- cated energy or power, as being measured by an indicator) to the mechanical equivalent of the heat received by the water.

Epicieney of the mechanism from the piston to the erank-shaft inclu- sive,—being the proportion of the effective energy transmitted by the crank-shaft to the indicated energy.

The product of those three factors is the efficiency of the engine as a whole.

In all prime movers the loss of encrgy may be distinguished into | two parts, —one being the unavoidable eftect of the circumstances , under which the machine necessarily works in the case under con- sideration ; the other the effect of causes which are, or may be, eapable of indefinite diminution by practical improvements. Those | two parts may be distinguished as necessary loss and waste.

The efficiency which a prime iover would have under given circumstances if the wastc of energy were altogether prevented, and the loss reduced to necessary loss alone, is ealled the maximum. or the theoretical efficieney under the given circumstances,

For some prime movers there is a combination of circumstances which makes the theoretical efficiency greater than any other com- bination does. The theoretical efficiency under those circumstances is the absolute maximum efficiency.

The duty of a prime mover is its useful work in some given unit of time, as a second, a minute, an honr, a day. In some cases, snch as that of the work of animals, the duty can be ascertained, while the efficiency ean only be inferred indirectly or conjecturally from the want of precise data as to the whole energy expended.

158. Sources of Energy Classcd.—The sources of energy used in practice nay be classed as follows :—

A. Strength of men and animals. B. Weight of liquids.

C. Motion of fluids.

ID. Heat.

E. Electricity and magnetism.

159. (A.) Strength of Men and Animals.—The mechanteal daily duty of a man or of a beast is the product of three quantities—the effort, the velocity, and the number of units of time per day during which work iscontinued. Itis well known that for each individual nian or animal there is a certain set of

values of those three quantities which make their product, the daily duty, a maximum, and that any departure froin those values diminishes the daily duty. Attempts have been made to represent by a formnla the law of this diminution; but they have inet with imperfect snccess. That which agrees on the whole best with the facts is the formula of Maschek, which is as follows :—let P, be the effort, V, the velocity, and T, the time of working per day, which give the maximum daily dnty, and let P, V, T, be any other set of values of those quantities;

then ce ma ay

One consequence of this formula is, that the best time of working per day for men, and for all animals, is one-third part of a day, or eight hours,—a conclusion in accordance with experience.

The best effort P,, and the best velocity Vj, are much less certain,— | the difficulty of determining their true mean values for particular species being rendered very great by the differences, not only between individuals, but between races or varieties of the same species. The following table of values is proposed by Mascliek as approxi- mately true :—

ae S$ . . « » 2 eo

a :

= | Pie | Va 5600 si PV) PAViTL.

Animals, ———— Frnaa| ancl ae ae iS Feet per! Hours | Foot-Ib] ¢po4-

= Ib. | second. per day.. per sec. fou

| | Mui… sscsseeecee | 1501 | 30 | 25 g | 75 | 2,160,000

| | Horse (draught)..... 600 Ib | 120 4:0 8 480 13,824,000

OX Sec pee reece acess | GOUMD: | 120 2°5 8 500 8,640,000 NGS. ccverdrererscrssesss .| 360 tb veka 2°5 8 180 5,184,000? Stile eee cae 500 th | 100? | 35 8 340 | 10,080,000?

Of the numbers in this table those for the dranght horse are prob- ably the most accurate. For the thorouglibred horse it is certain that the value of V, is much greater, and that of P, much less, than | for the dranght horse,—the effect being probably that the maximum daily duty P,V,T, is nearly the same ; but experimental data are wanting to determine these quantities with precision.

The following table, chiefly extracted from the works of Poncelet and Morin, with the addition of some results of experiments by Lieutenant David Rankine and by the author of this article, shows the daily duty of men and horses nnder certain specified circunt- | stances :—

eine ; rl | r. | Ve | geo”) PV. | PVT. | | th Feet | Hours | Foot-Ib | Foot-tb | ‘ |P- sec. | p. day.! per see.| per day. i ee if SS a | = Man— | 1, Raising his own weight up % < Sec | stair or ladder.....-+ \ is 05 8 #2°5 | 2,038,000 | ee do, d0,..... 10 2,616,000 , 3. (Tread-wheel—sce 1)..... ! 4. Hauling up weig .t with rope 40 0°75 GO “4&0 648,000 | 5. Lifting weights by hand.... 44 0°55 6 | 24-2 522,720 | 6, Carrying weights up stairs. | 143 0-13 6 18°5 399,600 | 7. Shovelling up earth to a} | : ay height of 5 ft. 3 in.....) . = 10 vs 280,800 8. Whecling earth In barrow) up slope of 1 In 12; 4 S aus 7 4 horiz. veloc. 0-9 ft, per = ow | 356,400 sec, (returning empty).. 9, Pushing or pulling hori-) eae . — = H zontally (capstan or oar)) al 20 8 ne | 1,526,400 (12°5 50 ? 62°5) | 10, Turning a crank or winch < 138-0 2-5 8 45 > 1,296,000 ; q 20-0 |14‘4 | 2min.| 288 ile Working pump….....0c.00… 132 25 } GO 5: | 1,188,000 | Pee PUAMMIMENTING wcc-00..sececeseee.. | 15 2 db? ? 489,000 | Hlorse— 13, (Thoroughbred) cantering) min. 225 | and trotting, drawing a = jiu. 5 >) 146 4 447-5 6,444,000 | light railway carriage… } max. 50) | 14. Horse (draught) drawing r ’ . cart or boat, wang? = ‘s lt Ces cisnian aed 160. Horizontal Transport.—When men and animals carry

burdens, or draw or propel loads in eertain vehicles, it is difficult, and sometimes impossible, to determine the duty performed in foot- pounds of work, because of the uncertainty of the amount in pounds of the resistance overcome. In this case, for the purpose of coin- paring performances of the same kind with each other, a unit is employed called a foot-pound of horizontal transport, meaning the conveying of a load of 1 pound 1 foot

horizontally. The follow- ing table, compiled from the sources referred to in sect. 159, gives some examples of the daily duty of men and horses in units of horizontal transport, L denoting the load in fb, V the velocity in feet per second, and '[the number of seconds per day of working:—

1 Vv be

3 ; 3600"

*Ib con- Feet per | Honrs tb. _| veyed second. per day. icoe ; a |e a ee eee | Max— | 15, Walking unloaded, trans-) a l cae port of own weight…... iy sii * | ss 700) | 26,008,008 0. (ORB roeoeenee 140 6 |} 10 |} S40 30,240,000 16. Wheeling load L in tl | wheeled barrow, return- 224 16 10 | 373 | 13,428,000 ingempty;V=} velocity j 17. Do. one-wheeled barrow, do.| 135 1°6 10 295 8,100,000 18. Travelling with burden…... #0 29 7 4 *925 5,670,000 19, Conveying burden, return- : | ing tmloaded…e..cseseese ai i 1. —— 20, Carrying burden for 30 252 ge Siva ait aaa se. onds anal ~~ ht = | ae Horse— a, _ 21, Walki ri rt alw: JOadetnseecrncereeeg | 1500] $6 | 10 | 5400 194,400,000 22. Trotting do. do…..... 750| 72 45 | 5400 | 87,480,000 23, Walking with cart, going – } loaded, returning empty; > | 1500 20 10 | 3000 108,000,000 V=} mean velocity …...) | 972 24. Carrying burden, walking…| 270 3°6 10 | 34,992,000 25. Do. trotting…| 180) 7-2 7 1296 32,659,200*

161. (B.) Weight of Liquids.—(C.) Motion of Fluids.—In water- Wheels and other hydraulic engines the weight and motion of a liquid usually act together as sources of energy.

To determine the necessary loss of energy and the theoretical efficiency, we have the following formule :—

~The power or energy exerted per second is

2

o(H +3) ;

2g the necessary loss-—

ee Q : oy ; ! » ; ; g t a co te dt CO the theoretical effect or useful work per second— y2_ \r2 o(H+) ; 2g the theoretical efficiency— (n+ ¥2%2) (+ ¥2) | 29 , 2g J

where Q denotes the weight of liquid which acts on the wheel or other engine per second; H the vertical fall from the point where the liquid first begins to act directly or indirectly on the wheel or

| Heat employed in producing mechanical

other engine to the point where it eeases to act ; V, the velocity of the liquid when it begins to aet ; and V, the least velocity, when it ceases to act, which will properly discharge the liquid, and pre- vent its accumulating so as to impede the wheel or engine.

(For details as to the actual efficiency and duty and the construc-

| tion of hydraulic engines, see HypRoMECHANICS.)

In windmills, the air, being in notion, presses against and moves four or five radiating vanes or sails, whose surfaces are approximately helical, their axis of rotation being parallel, or slightly inclined in a vertical plane, to the direction of the wind. The best form and proportions for windmill sails, as determined experimentally by Smeaton, are as follows (sce fig. 36):—

Angle of each sail with the plane of rotation—at DE=18°;

Do. do. do. at BC= 7°; OD=} of whip OA; bar DE=}40A; bar BC=30A; AC=-DE.

162. (D.) Heat.—In sect. 157 the three factors into which the efficiency of an engine move:] by heat can be resolved have already been stated. he efficiency of the furnace A and boiler in steam-engines varies from 0°4 ’ to 0°85. It may be considered that the loss of heat to the extent of 0°15 by the chimney is necessary in order to produce a sufficient draught ; any loss

beyond this is waste. The theoretical efficiency of the steam, or other elastic fluid, which serves as the mechanism for converting heat into me- ehanical energy, is regulated by a law which will now be explained.

Heat acts on bodies in two ways—to elevate temperature and make the bodies hotter, and to produce mechanical changes.

B Cc

ee

D

0

Fig. 36.

changes disappears or becomes /atent, as it is termed, and can be reproduced by reversing those mechanical changes. When a cycle

| of mechanical ehanyes, ending by the restoration of the body to its

original eondition, produces mechanical energy, heat disappears to an amount equal to that which would be generated by employ- ing the mechanical energy in overcoming friction, —that is to say, a British unit of heat (or one degree Fahr. in one tb of liquid water) for every 772 foot-pounds of euergy (being the constant already mentioned in sect. 115 as Joule's equivalent), This is called the conversion of heat into mechanical energy.

The efficiency of the fluid in a heat-engine is the proportion which the heat converted into mechanical energy bears to the whole heat received by the water or cther fluid; and the theoretical or maximum value of that efficiency depends solely upon the respective tempera- tures at which the fluid receives heat and rejects the unconverted heat, according to the following law :—let ¢, represent the tempera- ture at which the fluid receives heat, and ¢, the temperature at which it rejects the unconverted heat, as measured from the absolute zero,—that is, from a point 493°°2 Fahr. or

274° C. below the temperature of nielting ice (temperatures so measured are called absolute temperatures) ; then the maximum theoretical efficiency of the water or other fluid in a steam-engine or other heat-engine ts

ht (88). aT

The necessary loss of heat by the fluid is ¢,/¢, of the whole heat

. . . .

| received by it; and any loss beyond this is waste.

The theoretical efficiency of the steam in ordinary steam-engiues seldom exceeds 3th ; the greatest actual efficiency is about $th ; the

efficiency in good ordinary engines is about 0°1 or 0°08, and in

bad and wasteful engines 0°04, or even less. (For details see

STEAM-ENGINE.) me

163. (E.) Electricity and Magnetism.—Electricity developed by chemical action in a galvanic battery has been to a small extent used to produce mechanical energy by alternately magnetizing and unmagnetizing soft-iron bars. . ‘

The data for determining the actual efficiency of such engines are deficient. Their theoretical efficiency depends on the following law demonstrated by Joule :— ; d

Let y, denote the strength of the electric current which would be developed in the conducting wire of the battery if there were no iron bar to be magnetized ;_ -y, the strength to which the current is reduced by the reaction of the iron bar, tending to induce a contrary current. ‘Then the theoretical efficiency of the engine is

aS

The proportion of the energy expended which is necessarily lost is 2/71) and is employed in producing heat in the conducting circuit.

This law is exactly analogous to that of the theoretical efficiency of heat-engines given in equation 88. ; :

There is-reason to believe that electromagnetic engines are cap- able of a higher efficiency than heat-engines ; but the greater cost of the materials consumed renders them much less economical com- mercially. (W. J. M. R.)

(89).

vis

MEC—MEG

MECHITHARISTS, a congregation of Armenian monks, } market still retains some vestiges of the splendid palace

in communion with the churcli of Rome, which has enjoyed papal recognition since 1712. Its founder Mechithar, or Mechitar da Pietro, a uative of Sebaste (Sivas) in Armenia, was born ou February 7, 1676; his original name was Manuk, which he exchanged for that by which he was subsequently known (“‘Comforter”) when he entered thie cloister of the Holy Cross in his native town. In the pursuit of knowledge hie visited various seats of learning in Armenia, and in the years 1691, 1696, and 1699 respectively he attaimed the office of deacon, priest, and vartabed or doctor in theology. Having removed to Constantinople, he founded there in 1701 a religious institute for the intellectual, moral, and spiritual elevation of his countrymen, and for the cultivation of their language and literature. In 1703 sectarian jealousy obliged him to retire to the Morea, where he ultimately found a settlement at Modon, and built a cloister and church (1706-8). The outbreak of hostilities between the Turks and Venetians in 1715 compelled him to take refuge in Venice, where in 1717 he received from the senate the island of San Lazzaro, which ever since has been the home of his order. Mechithar, who died on April 27, 1749, was the author of a Grammatica Armena, printed in 1770, of an Armenian Lexicon, printed in 1744, of an Armenian translation of the Bible, printed in 1734, and of

several commentaries on Biblical books. The order of Mechi- tharists, which, as already mentioned, received formal recognition (from Clement XI.) in 1712, uses the Armenian language and the Syrian rite; its rule resembles thie Benedictine, prominent among the duties of its members being tle proclamation of the gospel and the diffusion of good literature. They have accumulated at San Lazzaro a large library, specially rich in Armenian MSS. ; and their linguistic attaimments are considerable. Among their services to the cause of learning may be mentioned, in addition to the preparation of critical texts of the Armenian classics and of the Armenian version of the Bible, the publication in old translations of various works of Ephraem Syrus, Philo, and Eusebius, of which the originals have been lost. There are establishments belonging to the order elsewhere in Italy (Padua), as well as in Russia and Turkey, in Paris, in Austria-Hungary, and in Germany. Of these the most important is that of Vienna, which has existed since 1810, aud has become 'a sort of learned "academy," receiving honorary members even from beyond the pale of tlhe Roman Catholic Church.

MECHLIN, or Maines, a city of Belgium, in the pro- vince of Antwerp, on the river Dyle, about 14 miles north of Brussels. The general aspect of the town, belted by

' and other towns.

raised on the site by Charles V. in 1530, and on the chief market-place is a monument erected to Margaret of Austria, daughter of the emperor Maximilian. Mechlin js an archiepiscopal see, occupied by a cardinal, primate of Belgium, deriving his spiritual power from Rome, and quite independent of (at times even openly opposed tu) the civil Government. His palace is the headquarters of the Catholic party, and the seat of considerable moral and political influence extending over every parish in the land; the university of Louvain, the Catholic schools, more than four thousand in number, and the great seminary of Mechlin, tle nursery of the Belgian priesthood, are entirely under the direction of the archbishop. The industrial activity of the town, formerly very great, has constantly decreased in the present century, and is now almost extinct, The important corporation of weavers was scattered by the political troubles of the 15th and 16th

centuries ; and the lace trade has gradually been transferred to Brussels There still exist a few special manu- factures, those of carved oak furniture, straw chairs, and wool and linen tissues bemg among the foremost; some tanyards and breweries are also to be found, and the means of communication furnished by the Dyle supply a tolerably brisk market in corn, oils, flax, hemp, and hops. As a railway station Meclilin possesses peculiar importance, being a junction of the chief Belgian Government lines and the great central workshop for constructing and repairing the rolling-stock. The population of Mechlin in 1880 was

| 42,381.

Mechlin appears to have been about the 8th century a mere group of cabins surrounding a noted monastery where St Rombaut, now the patron saint of the town, suffered martyrdom on the 24th of June 775. After having belonged to the first Frankish monarchs, it was given by Pippin the Little to his relative Adon, and passed, at the commencement of the 10th century, under the dominion of the bishops of Liége, in whose name it was governed by the powerful house of Berthold until the year 1338. When this fainily became extinct, Mechlin and the surrounding district were divided in two portions and sold by the bishops to the duke of Brabant and the count of Flanders, the former of whom, ten years later, once more united the whole territory under his own sway. By the marriage of Margaret of Brabant with Philip the Bold, Mechlin was brought under the seeptre of the house of Burgundy, whose fate it shared from that time. Stormed by the French in 1572, by the prince of Orange in 1578, by the English in 1580, the town suffered much during the wars of the 17th and 18th centuries. Napoleon I. had its fortifications razed in 1804, and made it the

| capital of the French " Département des deux Néthes " until 1814, _ when it was comprised in the kingdom of the Netherlands, and it

i

| finally became part of Belgium in 1830. =

MECKLENBURG, a territory in North Germany, on the Baltic Sea, extending from 53° 4' to 54° 24' N. lat.,

/and from 10° 35’ to 18° 57’ E. long., corresponds with

a fine avenue of trees, with well-built houses, extensive |

gardens, and broad airy streets and squares of proverbial cleanliness, is pleasing to tle eye; there is, however, a lack of life and motion, a repose bordering on stagnation; and the area occupied by the town is much too extensive for the population. Mechlin was for many centuries, and is to this day, the religious metropolis of Flanders, and its monunients and curiosities are in general of a sacred deseription. Among the most remarkable is the cathedral church of St Rombold or Rombaut, mainly built in the latter half of the 14th century; the square massive tower, rising 300 feet high and bearing four dials, each 48 feet in diameter, is visible from all the country round. The interior proportions of the edifice are grand, and it contains some fine works of art—statues of the apostles, standing against the pillars of the nave, Vandyck’s picture of the Crucifixion, the Adoration of the Shepherds, by Erasmus Quellin, and others. The church of St John possesses a celebrated triptych of Rubens, and another by the same master is to be seen at Notre Dame. The “Halle” or

tolerable closeness to the old lower Saxon province of the same name, and is now unequally divided into the two grand- duchies of Mecklenburg-Schwerin and Mecklenburg-Strelitz. These are so closely related in history, political organiza- tion, natural features, and general development that it 1s convenient to treat them in a single article. ;

MECKLENBURG-SCHWERIN, the seventh state of the German empire in size and the eighth in population, 1s bounded on the N. by the Baltic Sea, on the W. by the principality of Ratzeburg and Lauenburg, on the 6. by Brandenburg and Hanover, and on the E. by Pomerama aud Mecklenburg-Strelitz. It embraces the duchies of Schwerin and Giistrow, the district of Rostock, the prim- cipality of Schwerin, and the barony of Wismar, besides several small “enclaves” in the adjacent territories. Its total area is about 5117 square miles.

MrcKLENBURG-STRELITZ, the eleventh state of the German empire in area and the nineteenth in population, consists of two detached parts, the

duchy of Strelitz on the east of Mecklenburg-Schwerin and the principality of

MECKLENBURG

Ratzeburg on the west. The first of these is bounded by Mecklenburg-Schwerin, Pomerania, and. Brandenburg, the second by Mecklenburg-Schwerin, Lauenburg, and the territory of the free town of Liibeck. Their joint area is 1126 square miles.

~ Mecklenburg lies wholly within the great North-European plain, and its flat surface is interrupted only by one range of low hills, intersecting the country from south-east to north-west, and forming the watershed between the Baltic Sea and the Elbe. Its highest point, the Helpter Berg, is 580 feet above the sea-level. The coast-line runs for 65 miles along the Baltic (without including indenta- tions), for the most part in flat sandy stretches covered with dunes. The chief inlets are the bays of Wismar, Grosse Wiek, Salzhaff, and Kroy, and the roads of Warne- minde. The rivers are numerous though small; most of them are affluents of the Elbe, which itself traverses a small portion of Mecklenburg. Several of the streams are navigable, and the facilities for inland water traffic are increased by a tolerably extensive system of canals. Lakes are very numerous; about four hundred of fair size, eovering an area of 500 square miles, are reckoned in the two duchies. 'The largest is Lake Miritz, 52 square miles in extent. The climate on the whole resembles that of

Great Britain, but the winters are generally more severe ; |

the mean annual temperature is 48° F., and the annual rainfall is about 28 inches. Although there are long stretches of marshy moorland along the coast, the soil is on the whole productive. returns of 1878, about 57 per cent. of the total area of Mecklenburg-Schwerin consisted of cultivated land, 17 per cent. of forest, and 13 per cent. of heath and pasture. In Mecklenburg-Strelitz the corresponding figuies were 48, 20, and 9 per cent. Agriculture is by far the most important industry in both duchies. The following table shows the areas and products of the chief crops in 1880 :—

Mecklenburg-Schwerin. | Mecklenburg-Strelitz. Crops. — ———$ Acres. Tons. Acres. Tons,

REE EN Ss fevenae cs 411,627 243,818 | 68,530 29,619 MSBoiscreskines sss 285,257 188,166 | 49,422 26,743 10°C 108,550 43,420 26,249 93,378 PBATYOY: «2522002000. 44,687 33, 487 10,722 7,244 Potatoes. ..... 92,942 345,233 16,440 70,537 Hay… 259,497 | 333,737 46,805 93,464 Totals…..... | 1,202,560 | 1,187,861 218,159 | 320,985

Besides these, smaller areas are devoted to maize, buck- | The |

wheat, pease, rape, hemp, flax, hops, and tobacco. extensive pastures support large herds of sheep and cattle, including a noteworthy breed of merino sheep. The horses of Mecklenburg are of a fine sturdy quality, and are highly esteemed in Germany. In 1878 the two duchies contained 100,651 horses, 315,712 cattle, and 1,321,916 sheep. Red

deer, wild swine, and various other kinds of game are found | The manufactures of Mecklenburg are of |

in the forests. little importance. Its industrial establishments include a few iron foundries, wool-spinning mills, carriage and machine factories, dye-works, tanneries, brick-fields, soap- works, breweries, distilleries, numerous limekilns and tar- boiling works, tobacco and cigar factories, and about eight hundred mills of various kinds. Mining is also insigni- ficant, though a fair variety of minerals is represented in the district. Amber is found on and near the Baltic coast. Trade, mainly confined to the larger duchy, is tolerably active. Rostock, Warnemiinde, and Wismar are the principal commercial centres. The chief exports are grain and other agricultural produce, live stock, spirits, woed, and wool; the chief imports are colonial produce,

According to the official |

| tive in each assembly.

wool markets of Mecklenburg are largely attended by buyers from various parts of Germany. Fishing is carried on extensively in the numerous inland lakes. Within the last decade the mercantile fleet of Mecklenburg-Schiwerin has doubled the number and quadrupled the tonnage of its ships, these consisting in 1881 of 370 sailing vessels and 11 steamers, with an aggregate burden of 112,388 tons. Mecklenburg-Strelitz has no seaboard. Mecklenburg-Schwerin and Mecklenburg-Strelitz are both limited monarchies under grand-dukes, who are hereditary in the male line. The reigning families are closely related, and possess mutnal rights of succession ; shonld both families become extinct, their possessions pass to Prussia. The constitution, which is common to both the duchies, exhibits few traces of the liberal tendency of modern politics. The temporary modifications brought about by the agitation of 1848 were quickly rescinded, and matters returned to the old semi-feudal arrangements, which deprive the bulk of the people of all share in the government. The constitution as it now exists is based upon an agreement made between the duke of Mecklenburg- Schwerin and his estates in 1755, and adopted in the same year by Mecklenburg-Strelitz. The Landes-Union, or common assembly of the two duchies, consists of repre- sentatives of the Ritterschaft, or landed proprietors, and of the Landschaft, which embraces forty-seven towns. The peasantry is unrepresented, and the principality of Ratze- burg, in Mecklenburg Strelitz, is governed directly by the grand-duke. 'The Landes-Union meets once annually, alternating between Sternberg. and Malchin, When not

| sitting it is represented by a committee of nine members.

Distinct from the Landes-Union are the convocation diet and the deputation dict, which are assemblies of the estates of one or other duchy for special business. In Mecklenburg- Schwerin the executive is placed in the hands of four ministers, holding the portfolios of foreign affairs, domestic affairs, finance, and justice (including education and religion). In Mecklenburg-Strelitz there is one minister, who is aided by a small council. In both duchies the military administration is in the hands of the crown. Mecklenburg-Schwerin has two votes in the federal council of the German empire, and sends six members to the imperial diet, while the smaller duchy has one representa- As no official budget is published in either duchy, it is

impossible to give accurate details of their financial position. In Mecklenburg-Schwerin it is usual to distinguish three branches of revenue, one under the control of the sovereign, one under the joint control of the sovereign and estates, and the third (of small amount) under the sole management of the estates. The income under the first heading is derived from the royal domains, the ordinary taxes, and special votes for special purposes, and famounts to about £600,000. With this sum are defrayed the ordinary expenses of government, inclnding

the annual contribution to the imperial treasnry. The revenue under the second head is about £100,000. The public debt in 1880 amounted to £1,100,000. The

revenues of Mecklenburg-Strelitz are unknown ; its debt is estimated at about £360,000. The private income of the duke, derived from the royal domains, ma‘es him one of the richest princes in Germany. The duchies of Mecklenburg contribute three regiments of infantry, a battalion of rifles, two regiments of dragoons, and four batteries of field artillery to the imperial army.

The educational institutions partake of the high character common to those of the Germanempire. The two duchies contain nine gymnasia, seven ‘ Realschulen,” three normal schools, and an adequate number of schools of a lower grade. There is a university at Rostock, which in

iron, coal, salt, wine, beer, and tobacco. The horse and | 1882 had a teaching staff of 36 professors and an attend-

(40

ance of about 250 students. cent. of the recruits iu Mecklenburg-Schwerin were unable to read and write their names, while all the recruits in Mecklenburg-Strelitz were able to do both. The pre- dominant confession in Meckleuburg is the Lutheran, which is professed by both the grand-dukes. The propor- tion of Roman Catholics, Jews, and members of the Re- formed Church is insignificant. ‘The ultimate spiritual authority is exercised by consistories at Schwerin and Strelitz, Mecklenburg also contains a fair

share of learned societies and benevolent institutions. ‘lhe supreme court of appeal for both duchies, in all criminal and civil cases, is at Rostock.

The population of Mecklenburg-Schiwerin in 1861 was £48,449; in 1871, 557,707 ; in 1875, 553,785; and in 1880, 577,055. The capital is Schwerin (30,146 inhabi- tants), but the most important town is Rostock (36,967 inhabitants). The population of Mecklenburg-Strelitz in 1861 was 99,069; in 1871, 96)982; in 1875, 95,673 ; in 1850, 100,269. The chief town is Neu-Strelitz. About 71 per cent. of the inhabitants are engaged in agricultural pursuits. The proportion of the rural to the urban popu- lation is as 3 to 1, or exactly the reverse ratio to that in the neighbouring Prussia. The peasantry of Mecklenburg still retain numerous traces of their Slavonic origin, especially in their speech, but their peculiarities have been much modified by amalgamation with the German colonists who settled within this district at various times. The townspeople and nobility are almost wholly of Saxon strain. The slow rate of increase in the population of Mecklenburg is chiefly accounted for by the constant stream of emigration. Between 1870 and 1880 the two ducliies contributed in the highest proportion to the emigration from Germany. Out of 595,151 German emigrants who sailel from Bremen, Hamburg, Stettin, and Antwerp within that period, 24,370 came from Mecklenburg- Schwerin anil 2481 from Mecklenburg-Strelitz, represent- ing respectively 4°38 and 2°52 per 1000 inhabitants as the yearly average. Probably another cause of the slow growth of population is to be sought for in the difficulties thrown in the way of the marriage of the peasants by the semi- feudal character of their tenure. It is a significant fact that in 1880 the proportion of illegitimate births in the two duchies amounted to 14 per cent. as compared with 9 per cent. in the entire German empire.

History. —The Vandals, who in the time of Tacitus occupied the

region now known as Mecklenbnrg, were succeeded in the 6th cen- tury by a Slavonie race. Though partly conquered by Charlemagne in 789, this people soon regained their independence, and long offered a successful resistance to all attempts on the part of the German emperors to overcome and Christianize them. At last, in 1160, Duke Henry of Saxony made himself master of the country. The native prince was, however, permitted to retain

his sovereignty, and has transmitted to his descendants ani successors of the present day the distinction of being the only ruling princes of Slavonic origin inGermany. Jn 1160 he was raised by the emperor Frederick I. to the dignity of a prince of the empire. From 1202 till 1227 Mecklenburg was 1nder Danish supremacy ; ad in 1229, two years after its restoration to Germany, there occurred the first of a long series of divisions of the territory, which, with snbsequent reunions, constitute so much of its contplicated history. In 1848 Charles IV. made Mecklenburg a duchy. In 1523 the trials and commotions springing from the rivalry and jealousy of two joint rulers incited the prelates, nobility, and burghers to form a union among them- selves, the eflects of which are visible to the present day,—most prominently in the existence of the common Landes-Union. The Reformation was welcomed by the inhabitants of Mecklenburg in 1524; and about 1555 nearly all the monasteries were suppressed. In 1621, when a new partition took place, the town of Rostock 'with its university and high court" was declared to be held in common. The diet also retained its joint charaeter, and hencefortl alternated between Sternberg and Malchin.

In the Thirty Years' War both Mecklenburg-Schwerin and Mecklenburg-Giistrow—as the parts were then called—incnrred the suspicion of the emperor, who secretly sold them to Wallenstein, aud expelled the dukes in his behalf. They were reinstated, how-

ME D—M EI D

In 1880-81 only 0:56 per | ever, by Gustavus Adolphus, and at the peave cf Prague in 1635

they both made their peace with the eimperor. At the peace of Westphalia Rostock and some other parts of Mecklenburg tent. tory were given in pledge to Sweden, and they were not redeemed till 1808. The sufferings of the Mecklenburg peasantry during the Thirty Years' War were exceeded in no other part of sorely-tried Germany. Most were reduced to serfdom through yoverty ; in some cases whole villages utterly vanished. In 1695 the Meeklenburg- Giistrow line became extinct ; and, after some contention between the brother and the nephew of the last duke of Mecklenburg. Sehwerin for the vacant succession, the " Hamburg Division "

(March 8, 1701) apportioned to each shares that are represented

by the present duchics. The affixes Sclrwerin and Strelitz are derived from the capital towns of the two dukes. Mecklenburg-Schwerin began its new independent existence bya series of constitutional struggles between its nobility and its rulers. The heavy debt incurred by Charles Leopold, who had joined Russia in a war against Sweden, brovght matters to such a piteh that in 1728 the emperor Charles VI. deposed the duke in favour of his brother Christian Louis. Under this prince, the " Rostock Con- tract," which is still the basis of the constitution, was framed in 1755. During the Seven Years' War Mecklenburg-Schwerin assumed a hostile attitude towards Frederick the Great, and was in conse- quence oecupied by Prussian troops. In 1806 it was overrun by the French, aud in 1808 it jommed the confederation of the Rhine; The duke, however, though he assisted Napoleon in 1812, was the first member of the confederation to renounce it, and in the following year his troops fought against France and Denmark. On joining the Germanic confederation he assumed the title of grand- duke, with the style of royal highness. In and after 1848 the duchy witnessed a considerable agitation in favour of a new and niore liberal constitution, but the subscquent reaction reseinded all the concessions that had been made, and reduced matters to their former feudal condition. In 1819 and 1820 serfdom aud personal bondage were abolished, and various slight ameliorations of the state of the peasantry have since been introduced. Mecklenburg-Strelitz adopted the constitution of the sister duchy by an " Agnitions-Act" in 1755. In 1806 it was spared the inflic- tion of a French occupation through the interest of the king of Bavaria; but in 1818 it was iulcted in the sum of two million thalers for the French army. In 1808 it entered the Rhenish con- federation, but repudiated it in 1813 and joined the alliance against Napoleon. In 1815 the duke assumed the title of grand-duke. Authorities Boll, Geschichte Mecklenburgs, 1855 ; Nizze, Volkswirthschaftliche Zustdnde in Mecklenburg, 1861; Boll, Abrtss der Meckleuburger Landeskunde ; Léger, Topographisches Handbuch f.d. Grossherzogthiimer Mecklenburg-Schwerin und Mecklenburg-Strelitz, Kicl, 1881; the official Staatskalender, published annually; the Bettrdage zur Statistik Mecklenburgs, published by the Statistical Office at Schwerin; Jahrbiicher des Veveins fin Mcck enbiirgische Geschi hte, 1836-1882. For

the recent constitutional struggles see the various worl s of M. Wiggers, the most prominent leader of the den.ocratic party. (J. F. MM.)

MEDALS. See NuMIsMATICs.

MEDEA, the daughter of Metes, king of the Colchians, who were believed to be of Egyptian descent (Herod., ii. 104), and are said to have found a settlement ou the east of the Euxine and to the south of the Caucasus. Medea was one of the "wise women" (witches or sorceresses) of antiquity, and perhaps, like Helen, was a human embodi- ment of some goddess connected with Eastern element- worship, possibly with Hera. For the story of her love for Jason the Argonaut, and of the revenge she took for his desertion of her for another bride, a Corinthian princess, Glance, daughter of Creon, see ARGoNAUTS and Jason, A imore interesting inquiry is the origin of the tale, and its connexion with solar myths.

The legend of the Argonantic expedition is a very ancient one. It is alluded to in the Odyssey (xii. 70), in inore than one passage of A®schylus,! and is given at some length in the fourth Pythian ode of Pindar, the close agreement of which with the Alexandrine compilation by Apollonius Rhodius, entitled Argonautiva, in tour books, shows that, according to the general law of mythology; the main features of the legend differed but little. The original story, it is probable, was contained in a still older epic poem called % Murvas woinors, the authorship of which was ascribed to Prodicus of Phocza.? .

The "Golden Fleece," in quest of which the adventurers

1 He alludes to Phineus and the Lemnia facinora (Eum. 50; Cho. 620), and there were plays composed by him on both these subjects.

2 Pausan., iv. 38, 7. He quotes from it two hexameter verses In 5h, Bs,

made a voyage from the home of Jason, Iolchns in the Thessalian Magnesia, is virtually identical with the fiery robe which Medea prepared for her rival Glauce, the new bride, with the Homeric "gis," and with the

garment smeared with phosphorus which was sent by Deianira to Hercules, and burst into a flame when brought near to a sacrificial fire.! Jason, as the story went, was not allowed by the guardian of the fleece, King Metes, to approach it till he had performed a certain task in putting to the yoke fire-breathing bulls, whicli lie effected by the aid of Medea.

The bull is a well-known symbol of the sun, and it occurs | in the ball-slaying group representing the Persian sun-god |

Mithras. Again, the slaying of a father by a son (the old sun killed by the new one) is seen alike in Gidipus having caused the death of his father Laius, in A4son, the father of Jason, having been restored to life by the magic arts of Medea, and in Pelias having been killed and boiled in a caldron by his own daughters at the instigation of the sorceress. Lastly, the legend tliat Medea was herself the egranddangliter of the Sun, and that she escaped in a car drawn by flying dragons, given to her for safety hy her erandsire,? equally tends to prove that the whole story is of solar origin, and can be explained on that theory alone.

This, indeed, has been well stated by Sir G. W. Cox.? The "dragon chariot is simply the chariot of Indra, Helios, and Achilles; and it is drawn by dragons because the word denoted simply beings of keen sight, and was naturally applied to the creatures which may be supposed to bear the sun across the heaven."

In all these legends about the sun the performance of certain imposed "toils" or labours is included, the idea expressed being the hard necessity of the sun going his daily course in the appointed time in spite of thickening storm-clouds and opposing powers of darkness, through which he has to fight his way, both visibly above and invisibly underneath the earth. Thus Hercules has his twelve labours (the number corresponding to the lunar months), while Jason is not ouly required by his uncle King Pelias to bring the golden fleece, but is commanded by Atetes to tame the bulls as a condition of obtaining it. The name Myjdea may possibly be referred to pydeorOa, "to care for," as Jason may contain the root iaoOa, 'to heal," which is the meaning that Pindar attaches to it, or to tov, the violet-coloured dawn, as in Iocaste, Iamos, and Tolaus.6 In his relation to the snake, which guarded the fleece, and to the dragons' teeth which he sowed*

on the ground ploughed by the fiery bulls, compared with the serpent entwining the staff of the healing god Asclepius, we see that almost invariable connexion that subsists between solar and phallic worship.6 This view is confirmed by the "ship Argo," one of the many sexual symbols of cip-shaped and boat-like form." It is the "ship" which was the Teutonic symbol of the goddess Isis.®

The existing literatnre on the love of Medea for Jason shows how popular was the story in antiquity for its pathos and its sentimen- tahty. Thns the Medea of Kuripides was rendered by Ennius ; Neophron of Sieyon and Melanthius® wrote plays of the same name ; we have the long and fine Pythian ode of Pindar, already referred to, the touching epistle " Medea Jasoni" in the Herotdes of Ovid, and the interesting, beautiful, and too little read Argonautica of

Apollonins. Of eourse, the similarity of the names Mfdo: and Madea led to

1 Soph., Zrach., 765. ?-Eur., Med., 1821; Hesiod, Theog., 958. 3 Mythology and Folklore, p. 264; see also Mythology of the Aryan Nations, pp. 240, 384, 388. Pyth., iv. 119. Cox, Aryan Mythology, pp. 244, 385. Cox, ibid., p. 363. Aryan Mythology, p. 104 and 354. Tae., Germ., 9

oe

anrtan

® Ar., Pac., 1012.

Ti etymological speculations on the identity of the nomenclature, and one Medns, a son of Medea, was believed to have been an eponym hero.?° The author of the compilation known as Hesiod's Theogony says that Medeus was a son of Medea by Jason,!! and was brought up, as Jason himself had been, by Chiron in the mountains. Euripides assigns but two ehildren to Medea and Jason,)? and Apollodorus }3 gives their names as Mermerus and Pheres.

MEDELLIN, a town of Colombia, South America, capital of the state of Antioquia, is situated at a height of 4845 feet above the sea, in the valley of

the Rio Porce, a right-hand tributary of the Rio Cauca, and, though 100 miles from the confluence, not more than 16 miles east from the valley of the larger stream. It is a clean and well-built place, but has no public buildings of note. Though the population is estimated at 14,000, there is no great activity except on the market days, twice a week, when the buyers and sellers flock in from the country. See Fr. von Schenck in Petermann's Mittheil., 1880.

MEDFORD, a town of the United States, in Middlesex county, Massachusetts, at the head of navigation on Mystic river, and 5 iniles north-west of Boston by a branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad. It is a busy place, with a considerable variety of imanufactures—woollens, carpets, buttons, bricks, leather, &c. Tufts College, situated near the town on Walnut Hill, was founded by the Universalists in 1853, and named in honour of Charles Tufts, the donor of the 70 acres occupied by the building and its grounds. The endowment amounts to more than $1,000,000. The population of Medford was 5717 in 1870 and 7537 in 1880.

MEDHURST, Water Henry (1796-1857), one of the most distinguished Protestant missionaries to the Chinese, was born in London in 1796. His education began at St Paul's Cathedral school. As he grew up, he learned the business of a printer; and, having become interested in missions to the heathen, he sailed in 1816 for the London Missionary Society's station at Malacca, which was likely to be a great printing-centre. His linguistic powers soon showed themselves. He became proficieut in Malay, in a knowledge of the written characters of Chinese, and in the colloquial use of more than one of its dialects. He was ordained at Malacca in 1819, and was in all missionary labours "more abundant,'—first at Penang, then at Ba-tavia, and finally at Shanghai. To give only the names of his various works, some in English, some in Chinese, would take a considerable space. A dictionary of one of the Fuh-Kien dialects is still valuable; and his Chinese-English and English-Chinese dictionaries (Batavia, 1842) are more coinplete and reliable than any earlier or later works of the saine kind. After the conclusion of the first English war with China he removed to Shanghai in 1848, and there he continued till 1856, laying the foundations, broad and deep, of a successful mission. His principal labour for several years, as one of a committee of delegates of whom he was facile princeps,

was in the revision of existing Chinese versions of the Sacred Scriptures. The result was what should be called a new version of the Bible, marvellously correct in idiom, and faithful to the meaning of the original. The university of New York conferred upon him in 1843 the degree of D.D. Medhurst left Shanghai in 1856, with several members of his family, to try the effect of a visit to England for his failing health. He died, however, two days after reaching London, on the 24th January next year. Strong, spriglitly, versatile, and genial, he was a man of extraordinary gifts and generous soul. No efforts (and many were made) could draw him from his devotion to the work of missions.

MEDIA. See Persia.

10 Pausan., ii. 3, 8. 12 Almtuxos youn, Vv. 1136. Odvre.

1 Theog., 1001. Henee in 969 the dual is used, eiceA- SABI VO Mo8s XV. — 98

178 MEDICAS

MEDICAL JURISPRUDENCE, or, as it is now more usually termed, Forensic Mepicryg, is that branch of state medicine which treats of the application of medical knowledge to the purposes of the law. The term medical jurisprudence, though sanctioned by long usage, is not an appropriate one; since the subject is, strictly speaking, a branch of medicine rather than of jurisprudence ; it does not properly include sanitation or HyGIENE (q.v.), both this and medical jurisprudence proper being distinct branches of state medicine. The connexion between medicine and the law was perceived long before medical jurisprudence was recognized, or had obtained a distinct appellation, It first took its rise in Germany, and sub- sequently, but more tardily, received recognition in Great Britain.

Forensic medicine, or medical jurisprudence proper as distinguished from hygiene, embraces all those questions which bring the medical man into contact with the law, and embraces (1) questions affecting the civil rights of individuals, and (2) injuries to the person.

I. Questions AFFECTING THE Civitor Socian RiGuTs oF INDIVIDUALS.

1. Development of the Human Frame.—The develop- ment of the physical and mental powers of the human being isa matter of the highest importance, and is a factor of great consequence in determining criminal responsibility, civil responsibility, or the power of giving validity to civil contracts, and in determining the personal identity of a living person or of a corpse. Human life is usually di- vided into the five periods of infancy, childhood, youth, manhood, and old age. Some writers increase the number of these, unnecessarily, to seven periods, without any prac- tical advantage.

Infancy is the period from birth till the first or milk set of teeth begin to be shed—usually about the seventh year. During this period the body increases in size and stature more, relatively, than at any other period of exist- ence; and the mental faculties undergo great develop- ment. The milk teeth, twenty in number, are evolved in a definite order, beginning with the central incisors at about six months, and ending with the second molars about the termination of the second year. Trom the size and stature of the body, the development of the teeth, and the more or less advanced state of ossification or solidification of the bony skeleton, conclusions may be drawn as to the probable age of the infant.

Childhood extends from the commencement of the shed- ding of the milk teeth to the age of puberty—usually from the seventh to the fourteenth or fifteenth year. During this period the body expands, as well as the bony structures, without any clearly marked difference in structure being observable between the sexes except as regards the genitals, so that it is impossible to distinguish absolutely between the male and the female skeleton during this period. The milk-teeth are shed, and are replaced by the second or per- manent set, thirty-two in number, though these do not usu- ally all make their appearance during childhood. Marked differences between thie proclivities of the sexes are notice- able even at an early period of childhood, and long before the characteristic functions begin to be developed.

Youth is marked at its commencement by the changes which occur at puberty—the development of the genitals in both sexes, the appearance of hair on the genitals, the appearance of a beard in the male, the

development of the breasts in the female, the appearance of the monthly flow in the female, and the ability to secrete semen in the male. Marked mental changes now occur, and the genera- tive functions are perfected. Youth terminates at the age

of legal majority, twenty-one years; or perhaps the period ought to be extended to twenty-five years of age, ds it is with some nations.

Manhood (or Womanhood) is the period of perfection of all the bodily and mental powers. It ceases in woman with the cessation of the monthly flow at about forty-five years of age; but in man it often extends to a much later period of life.

Old Age begins with the decay of the bodily and mental faculties, and is characterized by wrinkling of the skin, loss of the teeth, whitening of the hair, and feebleness of the limbs. In its later stages decay of the mental faculties, deafness, obscurity or loss of vision, and bowing of the spine are added.

2. Duration of Human Life.—The chances of human life form an important subject of inquiry, which lias been elucidated by the labours of Price, Milne, Farr, and others ; and on deductions from comparisons of birth and death rates is founded the system of annuities, insurance against loss in sickness, and the insurance of lives. Since the establishment of compulsory registration of deaths, our knowledge of the ordinary and extraordinary chances of human life has been much extended, and surer data are now available for calculations of probabilities of life, of survivorships, and of the payments whicli ought to be made in benefit clubs. See INsuRANcE and LonGeEvIrty.

3. Personal Identity.—It might be imagined that there is little danger, with the exercise of ordinary care, of mis- taking one person for another; but the remarkable case of the Tichborne claimant, and some other less-known but perhaps equally singular instances, have demonstrated that mistakes as to the identity of individuals are easily made, and are more frequent than is commonly supposed. Where the identity has to be established or disproved

after long absence, exposure to foreign climates and great hardships, wounds, &c., the problem is often one of extreme difficulty. The data for identifying a person are individual and family likeness, stature, the colour of the eyes, peculiarities of garb and manner, recollection of antecedent events, but more especially marks on the person either congenital or acquired. Such are eve or mother's marks, scars, and disunited or badly united fractures, known to have existed upon the missing person. An accurate solution of the question is, nevertheless, often a matter of the greatest difficulty.

4, Marriage.—Under this head the medical jurist has to deal principally with the nubile age, viewed in the light of nature and according to legislative enactments, and with such physical circumstances as affect the legality of mar- riages, or justify divorce.

In Great Britain the age at which the sexes are first capable of propagating the species is later than in more southern climes. Ordinarily it does not occur before fifteen years of age for the male and fourteen for the female; exceptionally, however, it occurs at the ages of thirteen and of twelve (or even less) respectively in the male and female. By legislative enactment, nevertheless, parents and guardians may, in England at all events, forbid the marriage of young people till the age of legal majonty. The only physical circumstances which in Great Britain form a bar to marriage are physical inability to consummate, and the insanity of one of the parties at the time of marriage. Both those circumstances have been pleaded and sustained in the law courts. In other countries mmor physical cireunistances, as disease, are held to invalidate marriage.

5. Impotence and Sterility.—These may arise from organic or from functional causes,— the former being alone irremediable, and as such taken cognizance of by the law courts. On this subject it is unnecessary to enlarge here.

MEDICAL

6. Prequancy.—This subject presents one of the widest fields for mcdico-legal evidence. The limits of age between which it is possible, the limits of

utero-gestation, and the signs of pregnancy may all in turn be the subjects of investigation.

The limits of age between which pregnancy is possible are usually fixed by the appearance and cessation of the monthly flow; and these ordinarily begin about fourteen and cease at forty-five years of age. Exceptionally they appear as early as the tenth year, and may not cease till the end of the fifth decade of life. Cases, however, have occurred where a woman has conceived before menstru- ating ; and a few doubtfnl cases of conception are recorded in women upwards of fifty, or eveu sixty, years of age. The general fact of pregnancy being limited by the age of puberty on the one hand and the cessation of the monthly flow—or fifty years as the extreme liniit of age— must be accepted as the safest guide in practice.

The limits of utero-gestation are not in England fixed by legislation. The French code fixes the extreme limit of three liundred days, The ordinary period is forty weeks and a half, or two hundred and eighty-three days from the cessation of the last monthly flux. The limit of three hundred days, as fixed by the French code, is perhaps uever exceeded, if ever reached. The uncertainty of females in fixing the exact date of conception lias given rise to the discrepant opinions of physiologists on the subject. It is well known, however, that among the higher animals the period is not a precise one ; and impregnation and conception are doubtless not necessarily coincident.

The signs of pregnancy are of the utmost importance to the medical jurist. He may be called upon to pronounce upon the virtue of a female, to sustain or rebut a plea for divorce, to determine whether a capital sentence shall be carried ont, or to determine whether it is probable that an heir will be born to an estate. Should he err in his judg- ment—and mistakes are very possible in the earlier months of utero-gestation—he may commit a grievous wrong. Medical jurists are in the habit of classifying the signs of pregnancy as uncertain or certain; it is the former which are most regarded by the public, but the latter are alone of probative value to the jurist. The usual and uncertain signs are the cessation of the monthly flow, nausea, sick- ness, a darkening of the areola and the formation of a secondary areola around the nipple, enlargement of the breasts, increased size of the abdomen, the formation of a tumour in the womb, quickening, and the

motions of the foetus. There are also other minor signs of less importance. The certain signs are the uterine souffle, whicli is a peculiar soft sound heard over the abdomen, and synchronous with the maternal pulse ; ballottement, or tle examination for a floating tumour in the abdomen between the fifth and eighth months of pregnancy; and the pulsations of the fostal heart, heard by means of the stethoscope. These pulsations are much quicker than, and not synchronous with, the maternal pulse. This is the only indubitable sign of pregnancy. It is inapplicable before the fourth month of gestation.

7. Parturition.—The imminence of the process of par- turition is of comparatively little interest to the medical jurist; but the signs of recent delivery are all-important. These signs are the bruised, swollen, and lacerated state of the external genitals, relaxation and dilatation of the vagina and womb, the existence of a peculiar vaginal dis- charge known as the lochia, a relaxed and fissured condition of the abdominal walls, a peculiar aspect of the countenance, and the distended state of the breasts due to the secretion of milk. The lochial discharge is the most characteristic sign. All the signs may disappear within ten days of delivery, though this is not usual.

JURISPRUDENCE

G18

Connected with parturition, the question of wabdity of the childis not unimportant. After the intra-uterine age of seven months is reached a child is certainly viable. The period at which the foetus becomes viable cannot be stated with certainty ; but five calendar months, or one hundred and fifty days, is perhaps the nearest approximation which can be made. 'The viability of a child is judged by its size and weight, its general state of development, the state of the skin, hair, and nails, its strength or feebleness, the ability to cry, and its power of taking maternal nourish- nent. The question of viability has important bearings upon the crime of infanticide, and the succession to property.

The subject of superfetation, or the possibility of two conceptions having occurred resulting in the birth of twins with a considerable intervening

intcrval, is a very obscure one, and has given rise to much controversy,—its existence being affirmed by some medical jurists, and denied by others. There is much, however (e.g., the existence of a double or bifid womb), to countenance the view that a doubie conception is possible.

In the curious case of a man marrying a woman having possession of an estate of inheritance, and by her having issue born alive and capable of inheriting her estate, the man on the death of his wife holds her lands for life as a tenant by the "'curtesy" of England. Here the meaning of "born alive" is different from the meaning of the same expression as used respecting infanticide. In questions of tenancy by the curtesy it has been decided that any kind of motion of the child, as a twitching and tremulous motion of the lips, is sufficient evidence of live-birth. As regards infanticide, proof of a conclusive separate existence of the child is demanded before live-birth is admitted.

8, Monsters and Hermaphrodites.—Yo destroy any living human birth, however unlike a human creature it may be, is to commit a crime. Blackstone states that a mon- ster which hath not the shape of mankind hath no inherit- able blood; but the law has not defined a monster, nor what constitutes a human form. The same author states that if, in spite of deformity, the product of birth has human shape, it may be an heir. Hermaphrodites are beings with malformations of the sexual organs, simulating a double sex. Physiologists do not admit, however, the existence of true hermaphrodites with double perfect organs, capable of performing tlre functions of both sexes.

9, Paternity and Affiliation.—These are often matters of great doubt. A considerable time may elapse between the absence or death of a father and the birth of his repnted child. As has already been said, three hundred days is the utmost limit to which physiologists would extend the period of utero-gestation. This subjéct in- volves questions respecting children born during a second marriage of the mother, posthumous children, bastardy, and alleged cases of posthumous children.

10. Presumption of Survivorship.—When two or more persons perish by a common accident, when a mother and her new-born child are found dead, and in a few analogons cases, important civil rights may depend upon the

question which lived the longest; and great ingenuity has been displayed in elucidating the disputes which have arisen in the law courts in such cases.

1l. Maladies Exempting from Discharge 6 if Public Duties frequently demand the attention of the medical man. He may be called upon to decide whether a man is able to undertake military or naval service, to act as a juryman without serious risk to life or health, or to attend asa witness at a trial. An endeavour to give a fearless and honest certificate should animaté the medical man in thé discharge of this delicate duty, .

12. Feigned and Simulated Discases often require much

skill and acuteness in order to detect the impeosture. Where there is reason to suppose that a disease is simu- lated, much caution as to procedure is also required.

13. Insanity or Mental Alienation.—This subject pre- sents an enormous field to the medical jurist. A medical man may be required to give evidence in any of the law courts, civil, criminal, or ecclesiastical, before commissions de lunatico inquirendo, or before a magistrate, as to the sanity or insanity of an individual; and he may have to sign certificates of unsoundness of mind with the view of providing for the safe custody and proper treatment of a lunatic. Hence he must be familiar with the chief forms of insanity (see InsaniTy), and be able to distinguish and treat each of these. He will also be reqnired to detect

feigned insanity, and to examine persons charged with |

crime with the view of preventing real lunatics from being treated as criminals.

The terms "unsoundness of mind," applied to the con- dition of the mind itself, and "no compos mentis" to the person whose mind is affected, are legal terms applied to insanity. Lawyers have dispnted as to whether imbecility should or should not be included under the head of insanity ; but medical men include under this category all disorders or defects of the mind

which disqualify a person for managing his affairs, and entering into a binding contract, or which render the individual morally irrespon- sible for his or her otherwise criminal actions. 'There is good legal authority for recognizing four forms of unsound- ness of inind—zdiocy, dementia, mania, and monomanta.

The chief questions respecting unsonndness of mind which present themselves to the medical jurist are—is the person of sound or unsound mind; if unsound, are there real lucid intervals; is he fit to manage his affairs, to contract a marriage, or to execute a will; is he dangerous to others?

As grounds for restraint, the law recognizes only these conditions—danger to himself, inability to manage his own affairs and property, and danger to the person of others. Before an individual can be placed under restraint in an asylunt the certificates of two medical men must be obtained, and the formal order ofa relation or friend. The certificates to be valid must be signed by legally qualified medical practitioners having no interest, direct or indirect, in the patient, or in the asylum to which he is to be sent. The inedical examiners must pay separate visits, each medical man examining the patient separately. The certificates, which remain valid for seven days only, must bear the exact address of the lunatic, his occupation, and the date of the examination; they must also set forth distinctly the grounds of the opinion they express, under the separate heads of facts observed by the examiner, and facts (to be specified) communicated by others. In the case of pauper lunatics one medical certificate only is required, which is supple- mented by an order from a justice of the peace. In urgent cases also one medical certificate suffices for incarceration in an asylum, provided that within three days of the patient's reception two other such certificates are signed by two other medical practitioners, not being connected with the asylum, upon a like examination. The superintendent or proprietor of the asylum must in all cases forward to the commissioners of lunacy a notice of admission within one clear day from the patient's admission. Any infringe- ment of the statutory regulations subjects the person who commits it to a heavy penalty.

Ik. INJURIES TO THE PERSON.

1. Defloration.—The signs of defloration are obscure and uncer- tain; and it is rather by the coexistence of several of the usual marks than the existence of any one sign, that any just conclusion can be arrived at.

2. Rape. —This crime consists in the carnal knowledge of a woman

| the same severity as the murder of an adult.

MEDICAL JIUVURISBP REVERT

forcibly and against her will. The resistance must be to the utinost, else the crime of rape has not been committed in the legal sense of the word. 'The proofs of rape, accordingly, apart from the consistency of the woman's story, mainly depend on the presence of the signs of defloration, and on marks of injury on the man.

38. Mutilation.—This may consist in the cutting or maiming of any member; castration is the most important, and perhaps but rarely effected as a crime. Self-mutilation, giving rise to false accusations, is occasionally resorted to.

4, Criminal Abortion.—The crime of abortion consists in unlaw- fully administering to a woman, or causing to be taken by her (whether she be with child or not), with intent to procure her mis- carriage, any poison or noxious thing, or using for the same purpose any instrument or other means whatsoever ; also in the use of the saine means, with the same intent, by any woman being with child.

5. Honicide.—The legal sense of the term homicide excludes such injuries as are the result of cithcr accident or of suicide. 1t embraces innrder or wilful homicide, manslaughter or culpable homicide, casual homicide, and justifiable homicide.

As a preliminary in all cases of homicide, it is the duty of the medical jurist in the first place to aseertain the fact of death, and to distinguish betwecn rcal and apparent death ; and then to deter- mine, if possible, the ae at which death took place.

Infanticide or child murder is by the British law treated with Indeed infanticide as a crime distinct from murder has no legal recognition. Practically this severity defeats itself, and offences which are really cases of child murder are often treated simply as cases of concealment of birth. The iniquity of the old law which threw the onus of proof of still-birth on the mother now no longer exists, and the law demands strict proof of live-birth at the hands of the prosecution. lience the subject involves very nice points of forensic medieine. The child must be proved to have arrived at the period when thero was a probability of its living (proof of viability) ; and as the estab- lishment of respiration is necessary to prove live-birth the evidences of this act must be carefully investigated. Thesize and position of the lungs, aud the state of the vessels concerned in fcetal circulation, inust be carefully noted. The fcetal lungs are dark, dense, and liver-like in appearance and consistence, and sink when immersed in water; whilst the fully respired lungs are rosy, marbled, and soft and crepitant when handled. Minor degrees of respiration are recognized by the appearance of little groups of dilated air-vesicles, and by the fact that, although the lungs as a whole may sink in water, certain portions of them, into which respired air has pene- trated, float in water even after subjection to firm pressure in the hand. Care must be taken, nevertheless, to exclude buoyancy of the lung due to putrefaction ; in this case the air may be expelled by gentle pressure, and the previously buoyant portion of lung now sinks in water. It is impossible, however, to distinguish eertainly between a lung naturally inflated and one artificially insufflated.

It must be borne in mind that, aithough live-birth cannot be affirmed in the absence of signs of respiration, the presence of theso signs is not proof of live-birth in the legal sense of the term. The law demands for live-birth a separate existence of the child after delivery ; and breathing may take place whilst the child is still either wholly or partially within the maternal passages, and in some special cases whilst still within the woinb itself.

When proofs of respiration—it may be to such an extent as to leave no doubt as to live-birth—have been found, the cause of death is then to be investigated. Wounds, and other forms of injury, must be sought for. There may be signs of strangulation, sufloca- tion, puncture of the fontanelles, and consequent injury to the brain, the administration of a poison, or other

means of procuring death. }t inust be borne in mind that some of these causes may be brought about by omission, or even by accident. Thus strangulation may arise from natural and unrelicved pressure of the navel string on the neck of the child ; suffocation from immersion of the face of the child in the maternal discharges, or by pressure of clothes on the mouth. Death may result from hemorrhage throngh neglect to tie the navel string, or the infant may perish fro exposure to cold.

In the case of exposed infants it is very important to ascertain the real mother. As such exposure usually takes place soon after birth, comparison of the age of the infant with the signs of recent delivery in the suspected mother is the best method of proving the relation.

Ordinary homicide may be accomplished by several modes that may sometimes be ascertained by examination of the body. Of one of the most important of these consideration is deferred to the article Poisons. ;

Death by asphyxia is a common mode of accomplishing homi- cide, as by suffocation, drowning, hanging, strangulation, or by exposure to mephitie air. Suicide and accidental death from these causes are still morecommon. (1) Drowning is thought to produce death occasionally by the suddenness of the shock causing suspen- sion of the functions of circulation and respiration—by shock without a struggle. The usual mode of death appears, however,

to be by the circulation of unoxygenated blood through the brain ; sistible propensity to sleep. The tendency to this forms an extreme

acting as a poison npon that organ ; and this is attended with all the phenomena of asphyxia, as in suffocation. The phenomena attending asphyxia are as follows. As soon as the oxygen in the arterial blood, through exclusion of air, sinks below the normal, the respiratory movements

grow deeper and at the sanie tie more fre- quent; both the inspiratory and expiratory phases are cxaggerated, the supplementary respiratory muscles are brought into play, and the breathing becomes hurried. As the blood becomes more and more venous, the respiratory movements continue to increase both in force and frequency. Very soon the expiratory movements beconie more marked than the inspiratory, and every muscle which can in any way assist in expiration is brought into play. The orderly expiratory movements culminate in expiratory convulsions ; these violent efforts speedily exhaust the nervous system, and the convul- sions suddenly cease and are followed bya period of calm. The calm is oue of exhaustion ; all expiratory active movements have ceased, and all the muscles of the body are flaccid and quiet. But at long intervals lengthened decp inspiratory movements take place ; then these movements become less frequent; the rhythin becomes irregular, so that each breath becomes a more and more prolonged gasp, which becomes at last a convulsive stretching of the whole body ; and with extendcd limbs and a straightened trunk, with the head thrown back, the mouth widely open, the face drawn, and the nostrils dilated, the last breath is taken, 'The above phenomena are not all observed except in cases of sudden and entire exclusion of air from the lungs. gradually diminished (¢.g., in drowning), the phenomena are funda- mentally the same, but with minor differences. The appearances of the body after death from drowning are various. There may be pallor of the countenance, or this may be livid and swollen. Thie air passages are filled with frothy mucus, and there may be water in the stomach. The ends of the fingers are often excoriated fron grasping at objects ; and weeds, &c., are sometimes found grasped in the hands. 'he distinction between murder and suicide by drowning can rarely be made out by examination of the body alone, and is usually 'decided from collateral circumstances or marks of a struggle. Attention must also be paid to the existence of wounds on the body, marks of strangulation on the neck, and the like. (2) Hanging may result in death from asphyxia, or, as is more particularly the case in judicial hanging, some injury is inflicted on the upper portion of the spinal cord, resulting in instant death. The ordinary appearances of death from asphyxia may be found: dark fluid blood, congestion of the brain, intensely congested lungs, the right cavities of the heart full, and the left comparatively empty of blood, and general engorgement of the viscera. Ecchymosis may be found beneath the site of the cord, or a mere parchmenty appear- ance. 'here may

even be no mark of thecord visible. The mark, when present, usually follows an oblique course, and is high np the neck. The fact that a body may be suspended after death, and that if this be done speedily whilst the body is still warm there may be a post-mortem mark undistingnishable from the mark observed in death from hanging, must not be forgotten. (3) Suffocation may occur from the impaction of any substance in the glottis, or by covering np the mouth and nose. It is frequently of accidental origin, as when substances become accidentally impacted in the throat, and when infants are overlaid. 'The pheno- mena are those of pure asphyxia, which have already been detailed. On post-mortem examination the surface of the lungs is found covered with minute extravasations of blood, known as punctated ecchymosis. (4) Strangulation may be accomplished by drawing a cord tightly round the neck, or by forcibly compressing the windpipe (throttling). Hence there may be either a circular mark round the neck, not so oblique as after hanging, or the marks of the fingers may be found about the region of the larynx. Thc cartilaginous structures of the larynx and windpipe may be broken. The mark of the ligature is often low down in the neck. The signs of asphyxia are present in a marked degree. (5) Mephitism.—Death from the-inhalation of irrespirable gases is a mode of assassination seldom employed, but is frequently resorted to on the Continent by suicides, charcoal fuines being commonly used for the pnrpose (see Posons).

6. Death from Starvation.—Cases occur in whieh it is importaut to distinguish this from other modes of death. In such cases the skiu becomes harsh and dry, and may acquire a peculiar odour ; the subcutaneous fat disappears ; the gums shrink away from the teeth ; the tongue and mouth become dark-colonred and dry ; the eyes are bloodshot ; the intestines become thin and their coats translucent ; the gall-bladder is distended. The period of total abstinence from food required to kill an adult is unknown, and greatly depends upon whether there be access to liquid. In some cases persons have been able to subsist on little or no nourishment for long periods, the body being ina state of quasi-hibernation.

7. Death from Extremes of Temperature.—(1) Death from cold is not often observed in the British Isles. A portion only of the body, as the extremity of a limb, may perish from extreme cold. After the first sensation of tingling

experienced on exposure to severe cold, loss of sensation supervenes, with languor and an irre-

In slow asphyxia, where the supply of air is,

‘ a large portion of the cutaneous structures.

| may cause instant death.

danger in such cases. (2) Death from extreme heat usually occurs in the form of burning and scalding, attended with destructiou of Here the cause of death is obvious. The human body is capable of exposure to very hot air —as is seen in Turkish batlhs—for a considerable period with impunity. Sun-stroke is a cerebral affection brought on by too great exposure to a hot atmosphere, especially whilst undergoing fatigue.

8. Death by Lightning.—Lightning or an artificial electric current No visible marks of the effects of the electric current may be left, or the body may be singed or dis- coloured, or the skin may be perforated at one or two spots.

9, Wounds.—The examination of wounds, whether fatal or not, often becomes an important branch of forensie medicine. Wounds are usually divided into contused, laccrated, incised, punctured, and gunshot wounds. For poisoned wounds see Poisons. Eaeh kind of wound requires to be minutely examined and described, as they are in approved works onsurgery. The degrce of danger from each should be familiar to the medical jurist ; and he should recollect that there is no wound which may not become incidentally fatal from improper treatment, pcenliarities of constitution, or accidental inoculation with septic material. Punctured wounds or stabs require minute attention ; for there have been instances in which death has been produced by an instrument so small as a pin thrust into a vital part. Wounds of the head are always dangcrous, especially if the blow has been severe. ‘he person so wounded may die without division of the skin, or fracture of the bones, as happens in what is known as coneussion of the brain. Contusions which do not divide the skin may fracture the skull; or the inner table of the skull may be fractured without the outer being broken or depressed. Even wounds of the scalp may prove fatal, from inflammation

extending towards the brain. Punctured wounds of the head are more danger- ous than cuts, as more likely to excite fatal inflammation. When the brain and its membranes are injured, all such wounds are gene- rally fatal. Wounds of the face or organs of sense are often danger- ous, always disfiguring, and productive of scrious inconvenience. Wounds of the neck ave always very serious wherever more than the skin is divided. The danger of opening large blood-vessels, or wounding important nerves, is imminent ; even the division of a large vein in the neck has proved immediately fatal, from the entrance of air into the vessel, and its speedy conveyance to the heart. A blow on the neck has instantly proved fatal, from injury to animportant nerve, generally the pneumogastric or the sympathietic. Dislocations and fractures of the bones of the neck prove instantly fatal. Wounds of the chest ave always serious when the cavity is penctrated, though persons may recover from wounds of the lungs, and have even survived for some time considerable wounds of the heart. his last is an important fact ; because we are not always to consider the spot where the body of a person killed by a wound of the heart, and apparently remaining where he fell, is found as that in which the fatal wound was inflicted. Instanccs have occurred of yersons surviving severe wounds of the heart for several days. ined ribs are never without danger; and the same may be said of severe contusions of the chest, from the chance of inflammation extending inwards. Wounds penetrating both sides of the chest are generally considered as fatal ; but possibly there may be recovery from such. Wounds of the abdomen, when they do not completely penetrate, may be considered as simple wounds, unless when inflicted With great force, so as to bruise the contents of the abdominal cavity ; in that case they may produce death without breach of surface, from rupture of some viscus, as sometimes happens from blows or kicks upon the belly. Wounds injuring the peritoneum are highly perilous, from the risk of severe inflammation. Wounds of the stomacli or intestines, or of the gall-bladder, generally prove mortal, from the effusion of their contents into the peritoneal cavity pro- ducing fatal inflammation. Wounds of the liver, spleen, or kidneys are generally soon mortal, from the great vascularity of those organs. Wounds of the extremities, when fatal, may generally be con- sidered so from excessive hemorrhage, from the consequences of inflammation and gangrene, or from the shock to the system when large portions of the limb

are forcibly removed, as in accidents from machinery, and in wounds from firearms.

10. Poisonous Food.—Uuder certain conditions, various articles of diet, especially butcher meat, eggs, milk, butter, cheese, and honey, may become possessed of poisonous properties, und this may arise from a variety of causes besides the introduction of known and specific poisons. Moreover, certain kinds of animal food—fish chiefly —may have definite toxic properties. Food may be more or less poisonous —(1) from nnsoundness, either from putridity or decom- position or disease ; (2) from the prescnce of parasites ; (3) from mouldiness, or presence of deleterious microscopic fungi ; and (4) where the flesh is that of animals which have fed on noxious plants, _-and under this head may also be classed poisonons honey, which bees have gathered from poisonous plants. (5) It may be of the nature of poisonous fish, using the term fish in the popular sense. (6) Certain fungi or mushrooms are poisonous. Parasitic diseases would, strictly speaking, come under the first head ; but the pre-

ventive measures to be adopted in the use of food infested with parasites will alone be treated of in this place.

(1) Poisonous Vegetables.—Unsound or even rotten vegetables and fruits may be consumed, and become fertile sources of varied forms of poisoning, especially in hot summers. The symptoms produced by the ingestion of large quantities of unsound fruit or vegetables are of a diarrheal character, not often of an alarming severity, except in the cascs of the young and feeble. They may, however, sometimes attain a fatal severity. The cause is nsually obvious, and the treatment is simple ; mild purgatives, as rhubarb or castor oil, with or followed by opiates, to remove peccant matters from the intestines; and stimulants, as ammonia or alcohol, if there be much collapse. Certain fungi or mushrooms are known to be specifically poisonons, such as the Amanita musearia, or fly-fungns, and others. Certain kinds of mushrooms, usually innocuous, are occasionally poisonous or deleterious ; and the cause of this is not always clear. Poisonous fungi produce narcotic and irritant symptoms.

(2) Poisonous, Zainted, or Putrid Mfeat.—The obvious char- acteristics of good sound ficsh meat are that its colour is red—neither pale pink nor deep purple ; that it is marbled in appearance ; firm and elastic to the tonch, scarcely moistening the fingers ; having a slight and not unpleasant odour; and that when exposed to the air fora day or two it should neither become dry on the surface nor wet and sodden. Sound meat is acid to litmus paper; unsound meat 'nay be neutral or alkaline. Meat may be tainted with physic administered to the animal. Itis a common practice, when a fat and valuable animal is unwell, to physic it, and if its recovery be not speedy to slaugliter it. The meat of such animals may often be met with in our markets, and may induce illness from the physic with which it is contaminated. The effects of simple putridity are most varied. habitnally eat putrid meat, and even prefer it to fresh ; and

the development of rottenncss in eggs for the epicure is an art |

in China. There is no doubt that habit has much to do with the tolerance by the stomach of putrid meat, whether cooked or un- cooked. But tainted game, and indeed all kinds of meat in which putrefaction has commenced, may indubitably produce disease. This is chiefly of a diarrhceal character, preceded by rigors, and attended with collapse and, it may be, convulsions and other signs of a profound affection of the nervous system. effects of such tainted meat are slight as compared with those which are produced by the sausage-poison, developed by a sort of modified putrefaction in certain German sausages. These sausages, when they become musty and soft in their interior, nauseous in odour and flavour, and strongly acid to test paper, acquire a highly poisonous eharacter, and are frequently fatal in their effects. The symptoms produced by the nse of poisonous flesh are gastric pain, vonnting, diarrhcea, depression, coldness of the limbs, and weak irregular action of the heart. Fatal cases end in convulsions and oppressed respiration, death ensuing from the third to the eiglith day. The nature of the sausage-poison, which is probably akin to that of putrid and indeed all non-specitically tainted meats, has been a matter of considcrable controversy. Some have held that the poisonous action is due to the development of rancid fatty acids ; others believe that a so-called catalytic body is produced, capable of setting up by contact a similar catalytic action. Others have regarded the sausage-poison as due to the formation of

pyrogeneous acids during the drying or smoking of the sausages. 'The recent discovery by Selmi of a class of poisonous alkaloids or amides, termed ptomaines, developed during putrefaction of animal matters, on the one hand, and the discovery by Ballard and Klein, still more recently, that the fatally poisonons properties of hams prepared according to the American method may be due to the presence of a parasitic bacillus, point to one or other of these two latter canses as that of the effects of sausage-poison. Others again have referred the effects to the presence of a microscopic fungus—Sarcina botulina. The poisonous nature of the flesh of animals which have fed on certain plants—for example, hares which have fed on certain species of rholodendron, pheasants on the kalmia shrub, &c. —has been abundantly demonstrated, and need only be referred to here. The

honey from bees which have garnered on poisonous plants, as the |

azalea, may likewise be deleterious ; and the fact is of classic interest. The milk even of goats which have browsed on poisonous herbs has also proved poisonous.

(8) Diseased Meat.—The poisonous effects of meat affected with certain pavasites—trichine, cystieerci, trematodes, &c., is an un- doubted fact. Great quantities of meat pass through our markets which is undoubtedly the flesh of animals affected with disease, such as foot-and-mouth disease, pleuro-pneumonia, pig typhoid, the so-called scarlatina of swine, sheep-pox, &c.; and the question is quite undecided as to whether such flesh produces any injurious effects. To stop the sale of such meat. would be to cut off large sources of our meat supplies. The evils attending the use of such diseased meat, when well cooked, have undonbtedly been exagger-ated ; but, on the other hand, there is enough evidence to show that the use of certain kinds of diseased meat may be followed by serious

_ arrived at on general principles. The |

_ and discusses feigned diseases. | laws of the Twelve Tables fix three hundred days as the extremé | duration of ntero-gestation. _ law authorized medical inspections of dead bodies. | of Justinian we find De Statu Hominum ; De Penis et Manumissis ;

| eonnexion between medicine and law.

| stttutio Criminalis Carolina in Germany.

JURISPRUDENUE

results. Thus it is generally admitted that the flesh of animals which have suffered from plenro-pneumonia and murrain will sivé rise to boils and carbuneles. Braxy mutton may also producé disease when eaten. "richine will produce trichinosis, flukes, thé tape-worm, &c. Hams are occasionally fatally poisonous; and this has been traced to the presence of certain low organisms known as bacillt.

(4) Poisonous Kish.—F¥ish is sometimes a poisonous article of food. Cases of poisoning by the so-called shell-fish of the British islands are not unfrequently met with. Generally it is the eating of crabs, lobsters, and mussels which produces such results. Thesé are nsually of a distressing rather than of a serious character, nettle-rash being a common symptom. Occasionally, however, fatal results have cnusued froin the use of mussels. In tropical seas poisonous fish are more plentiful—the golden sardine, the bladder fish, the grey snapper, &c.; and, these being eaten by larger fish, as the barracuda, perch, globe-tish, conger ecl, &c., the latter ray in turn become poisonous.

Good cookery, that is, exposure to a sufficiently high temperature for a sufficiently lengthened time, is undoubtedly the best méasure to adopt short of absolute destruction of unsonnd and diseased meat. So long as meat is high-priced, and the effects of diseased meat so little understood and so undefined, it will be impossible to induce medical officers of health and sanitary inspectors to seizé all the diseased and unsound meat which is daily offered for sale. Notwithstanding all that has been said to the contrary, experienced

observers are pretty well agreed that thorough exposure of the meat | thronghout to the temperature at which albumen is coagulated is | destruetive to the parasites of flesh. – Salting is more effective than smoking ; but there is some evidence | toshow that salting may merely hold the life of organisms in lt is well known that some nations

Smoking is less effective.

suspense without entirely destroying their vitality ; and thus in the conversion of salted pork into hains—a process of re-salting and subsequent drying—the specific germ (a bacillus) has been known to be again rendered harmful. 1t is not known whether efficient cooking entirely removes the deleterious effects of flesh affected

_ with other than parasitic disease, as for example pleuro-pnenmonia.

The curative measures for the results of eating poisonons food cannot be specifically described. They are those which must be Symptoms are to be treated, and the powers of the patient sustained until the deleterious matter is removed by the ordinary channels, or the trichine have becomé encysted.

Hisrory oF Forensic MEDICINE.

The true origin of medical jurisprudence is of comparatively recent date, although traces of its principles may be perceived in remote times. Among the ancient Greeks the principles of medical science appear only to have been applied to legislation in certain questions relating to legitimacy. In the writings of Galen we find, however, remarks on the differences between the feetal and the adult lungs; he also treats of the legitimacy of seven months' children, Turning to Rome, we find that thé

It is doubtful whether the Roman In the code

De Sicariis; De Inspiciendo Ventre Custodiendoque Partu; Dé Muliere que peperit undecimo mense ; De Impotentia; De Her- maphroditis,—titles which show obvious traces of a recoguized It was not, however, by the testimony of living medical witnesses that such qnestions were to be settled, but on the authority of Hippocrates.

Medical jurisprudence, as a science, dates only from the 16th cen- tury. In 1507 the bishop of Bamberg introduced a penal code in which the necessity of medical evidence in certain cases was Tre- cognized ; and in 1532 the emperor Charles V. persuaded the diet of Ratisbon to adopt an uniform code of German penal juris: prudence, in which the civil magistrate was

enjoined in all cases of doubt or difficulty to obtain the evidence of medical witnesses, —as in cases of personal injuries, infanticide, pretended pregnancy, simulated diseases, and poisoning, The true dawn of forensic medicine dates, however, from the publication in 1553 of the Con- A few years later Weiher, a physician, having nndertaken to prove that witches anid demoniacs are, in fact, persons subject to hypochondriasis and hysteria, and should not be punished, aroused popular indignation, and was with difficulty rescued from the flames by his patron, William duke of Cleves.

At the close of the 16th century Ambrose Paré wrote on monsters, on simulated diseases, and on the art of drawing up medico-legal reports; Pineau also published his treatise on virginity and defloration. Aboutthe same time as these stimuli to the study of forensic medicine were being made known in Paris, the first system: atic treatise on the science appeared in Sicily in the form of & treatise De Relationibus Medicorum by Fidelé. Paulo Zacchia, thé illustrions Roman medical jurist, moreover, published from 1621

–

to 1635 a work entitled Quexstiones Mecdico-Legales, which marks a new era in the history of the science,—a work which displays an ymmense amount of learning and sagacity in an age when chemistry was in its infancy, and physiology very imperfectly understood. The discovery of the circulation of the blood by Harvey soon followed, and gave a new impetus to the study of those branches of forensic medicine having direct relations to physiology; and to Harvey we owe the idea how to apply Galen's observations on the differences between the feetal aud the adult lungs to the elucidation of cases of supposed infanticide. About this time, too, Sebiz published two treatises, on the signs of virginity and on the exaniina- tion of wounds respectively. In the former he contended that the hymen was the real mark of virginity; but this was denied by Augenio and Gassendi. In 1663 Bartholin, a Danish physician, in- vestigated the period of human uterine gestation, a subject which had engaged the attention of Aristotle. He also proposed the

_ honours for medical graduates.

‘hydrostatic test” for the determination of live-birth—a test still |

in use, and applied by observing whether the lungs of an infant

the process in 1677; but it was not till 1682 that it was first practically applied by Jan Schreyer.

Germany, ever the leader in questions of forensic medicine, introduced the first public lectures on medical jurisprudence. Michaelis gave the first eourse about the middle of the 17th cen- tury in the university of Leipsie ; and these were followed by the lectures of Bohn, who also published De Renunciatione Vulnerwin ; cui accesserunt Dissertationes bine de partw enecato, ef an quis yivus mortuusve aquis submersus, strangulatus, aut viulneratus fuerit, and De Officiis Medici Duplicis, Clinict et Forensis, Welsch and Ammian wrote on the fatality of wounds, and Licetus on monsters.

From the time of Ambrose Paré the mode of conducting investi- gations in forensic medicine had attracted attention in France; and in 1608 Henry IV. authorized his physician to appoint persons skilled in medicine and surgery to make medico-legal inspections and reports in all cities and royal jurisdictions ; in 1692, diffi- culties having arisen, Louis XIV.

&e., are justly celebrated. Germany too has industriously pursued the subject, and Casper’s great work on forensic medicine will ever remain a classic in the science. In Russia Dragendortf has greatly contributed to our knowledge of poisons.

Though forensic medicine may be said to have been entirely neglected in England till the beginning of the present century, its progress has siuce been by no means slow or nnimportant ; and the subject now forms a recognized and obligatory portion of medical study. ‘he first lectures delivered in Great Britain were given in the university of Edinburgh in 1801 by the elder Dr Duncan; and the first professorship was held by his son in 1803. Dr Alfred

Swaine Taylor gave the first course of lectures delivered in England, at Guy's Hospital in 1881; and in 1868 the university of London made forensic medicine a separate subject for examination and In 1822 there was not in the English language any treatise of authority either on medical juris-prudence or on any important division of the subject; for it was not

id ay _ till the following year that the useful compendium of Paris and float or sink in water… Swammerdam explained the rationale of |

created hereditary royal |

physicians and surgeons for the performance of like duties. These, |

having become a corrupt and venal body, were suppressed in 1790. The only works on forensic medicine which appeared in France during the 17th century, however, were Gendry's Sur les Moyens de bien rapporter & Justice, and Blégny's Doetrine des Rapports en Chirurgie. Atthe beginning of the 18th century the latter was superseded as a text-book by Devaux's L'art de faire des rapports en Chirurgie. Valentini followed with two works, which were

finally incorporated in his Corpus Juris AMedico-Legale which |

appeared in 1722. This work is a vast storehouse of medico-legal information, and a summary of the knowledge of the time. Professorships for teaching the subject were fonnded in the Ger- man universities early in the 18th century, and numcrous treatises on forensic medicine were published. 'Teichmeyer's Jnstitutiones

Medicine Legalis long formed the text-book of the subject; and |

Alberti, professor of legal medicine at Halle, in his Systema gave to the world a most complete and laborious treatise on the science. precious mine of information. century the Germans were almost the only cultivators of legal medicine. But in France the celebrated case of Villeblanche attracted attention to the subject, and called forth Louis, who ina

memoir on utero-gestation attacked with powerful arguments the |

pretended instances of protracted pregnancy, aud paved the way for the adoption in the Code Napoléon of three hundred days as the limit of utero-gestation, a period in precise accordance with the ancient Roman law of the Twelve Tables. Louis also wrote on

death from hanging, and pointed out the mode by which we may |

distinguish murder from suicide under such cirenmstances. It is

he who is credited with having been the first in France to publicly |

teach the just application of medical knowledge to jurisprudence. Foderé's celebrated Zraité de Médecine Légale appeared in 1798, and marks a new era in the annals of legal medicine.

No British author wrote systematically on forensic medicine till 1788, when Dr Samuel Farr published a short treatise on the Elements of Medical Jurisprudence ; but this was mercly an abridg- ment of an carlier work of Fazelius. Previous writers, as Mead, Munro, Denman, Percival, and the two Hunters, liad, however, dealt with fragments of the subject ; nevertheless the science as a whole was little appreciated or recognized in this country during the last century.

In the present century France took the lead ; and the institution of three professorships of forensic medicine at the end of the 18th century produced excellent fruits.

which revolutionized this branch of medical jurisprudence, and first plaeed the knowledge of poisons upon a scientific basis. Since the time of Orfila, France has never eeased to have one or more living medical jurists, among the most recent of whom we must enumerate Tardieu, whose treatises on abortion, on poisons, on wounds,

In 1814 Orfila, a Spaniard by | birth, but naturalized in France, published his T'oxieologie, a work |

His industrious collection of facts renders his works a | Indeed towards the close of last

Fonblanque was published ; and even half a century ago medical jurisprudence may be said to have been almost in its infaney as compared with what it isnow. Since 1829 Great Britain has pro- duced an abundant crop of literature on forensie medicine. Sir tobert Christison's admirable treatise on TZ'oxieology, Dr A. S. Taylor's Prineiples and Practice of Medical Jurisprudence, the same author's Elements of Alcdieal Jurisprudence, Dr Guy's Forensic Medicine, and Ogston's Lectures on Medical Jurisprudence are well-known and widely eirculated works. The separate memoirs of Taylor, Christison, Guy, and others are also storehouses of facts and deductions in the science.

America, too, has not been behind hand in the race. Wharton and Stillé's AZanual aud Wormley's Toxicology are the best-known works of American authors. ro)

MEDICI. This family is renowned in Italian history for the extraordinary number of statesnien to whom it gave birth, and for its magnificent patronage of letters and art. It emerged from private life and rose to power by means of a very subtle policy that was persistently pursued from generation to generation. The origin of the family is buried in obscurity. Some court historians indeed declare it to have been founded by Perseus, and assert that Benvenuto Cellini's bronze Perscus holding on high the head of Medusa was executed and placed in the Loggia dei Lanzi to symbolize the victory of the Medici over the republic. But this only proves that the real origin of the family is unknown, and equally unknown is the precise signification of the Mcdicean arins—six red balls on a field of gold.

The name appcars in Florentine chronicles as early as the rarly

- close of the 12th century, although only casually mentioned bearers of The the name.

in connexion with various offices of the republic. first of the family to be a distinct figure in listory was

Salvestro dei Medici, who, in the year 1378, took an active Salvestro.

_ part in the revolt of the Ciompi—so-called because it was

‘ were the leading men of the greater guilds.

led by a wool-carder (ciompo), one Michele di Lando, and because the chief share in it was taken by the populace, who held the reins of government for some time, and sought to obtain extended political rights. But, although Michele di Lando was the nominal chief of the revolt, Salvestro dei Medici was its real leader. The latter, although a member of the greater guilds, had joined the lesser and songht to be at their head, in order to lay the foundation of his own power and that of his kindred by attacking the Albizzi, who The victory of the Ciompi, however, was brief, for the excesses of the lower classes brought about a reaction, in which they were crushed, and Michele di Lando sent into banishment. Nevertheless the lesser guilds had gained some ground by this riot, and Salvestro dei Medici the great popularity at which he had aimed. His policy during that period had traced the sole possible road to power in liberty-loving Florence. And this was the road henceforth pursued by the Medici.

On Salvestro’s death in 1388 the Albizzi repossessed themselves of the government, and conducted the wars of the republic. Vieri dei Medici, who seems to have been the next head of the family, understanding the temper of

Hovanni.

Coximo the Elder.

the timcs, abstained from becoming a popular leader, | that he turned it to much pecuniary advantage by means

and left it to his successors to prosecute the task under easier conditions. Then, in the person of Giovanni, son of Bicci dei Medici (1360-1429), another branch of the family arose, and becaine from that time forward its representative branch. Indeed this Giovanni may be con- sidered the actual founder of Medicean greatness. He took little part in politieal affairs, but

realized an immense fortune by trade,—establishing banks in Italy and abroad,

which in his saccessors' hands became the most efficient |

engines of political power. The council of Constance (141 4- 1418) enabled Giovanni dei Medici to realize enormous profits. constant supporter of the lesser guilds in Florence. His- torians record his frequent resistance to the Albizzi when they sought to oppress tlie people with heavier taxation,

and his cndeavours to cause the chief weight to fall npon | _ well aware of the great number of his adherents,

tlie richer classes. For this reason he was in favour of the so-called law of catasto, which, by assessing the property

Besides, like his ancestor Salvestro, he was a |

of loans to the Government and other banking operations, When, however, military affairs went badly, Cusiimo joined the discontented populace in invectives against the war and those who had conducted it. This won him an enormous increase of popularity, but the hatred of the Albizzi and their friends augmented in equa) degree, and a conflict becaine inevitable. The Albizzi, who were far nore impetuous and impatient than Cosimo, were now bent upon revenge. In 1433 one of their own friends, Bernardo Guadagni, was elected gonfalonier, and thereupon Cosimo dei Medici was called to the palace and summarily imprisoned inthe tower. A general assembly of the people was convoked and a "balia" chosen, which changed the Government and sent Cosimo into exile. Undoubtedly

| the Albizzi party would have preferred a heavier sentence,

but they did not dare to attempt their enemy's life, being Cosimo

had some apprehension that he night be poisoned in prison,

of every citizen, prevented those in power from arbitrarily |

imposing taxes that unjustly burdened the people. this way, and by liberal loans of money to all whe were in need of it, he gained a reputation that was practically the foundation-stone of the grand family edifice. Giovanni dei Medici died in 1429 leaving two sons, Cosimo (1389- 1464) and Lorenzo (1395-1440). ceeded the branch that held absolute sway for many genera- tious over the nominal republic of Florence. and gave to Italy popes like Leo X. and Clement VII. On the extine- tion of this elder line in the 16th century, the younger

branch derived from Lorenzo, Cosimo's brother, seemed to |

acquire new life, and for two centuries supplied grand-dukes to Tuscany. Cosimo, surnamed Cosimo the Elder, to dis- tinguish him from the inany others bearing the same name, and honoured after his death by the title of Puter patriz, first succeeded in solving the strange problem of becoming absolute ruler of a republic that was keenly jealous of its liberty, without holding any fixed office, without suppress- ing any previous forin of government, and always preserving the appearance and demeanour of a private citizen. Born in 1389, he had already reached the age of forty at the time of his father's death. He had a certain amount of literary culture, aud throughout his life showed much taste and an earnest love both for letters and art. But his father had mainly trained him to commerce, for which he had a special liking and aptitude. In fact he was devoted to business to the day of his death, and like his forefathers derived pecuniiry advantage from his friendly relations with the papal court. He accompanied Pope John XXIII. to the council of Constance, transacted a vast amount of business in that city, and made very large gains. He then travelled in Germany, and after his return to Florence discharged several ambassadorial missions. At tlie death of his father lhe was possessed of a vast fortune and an extended experi- ence, and inherited the leadership of the opposition to the then dominant party of the greater guilds headed by Rinaldo degli Albizzi, Palla Strozzi, and Niccolé da Uzzano. Of gentle and kindly manners, generous in lending and even in giving money whenever he could gain popularity by that means, at critical moments he frequently came to the succour of the Government itself. He was very dexterous in turning his private liberalities to account for the increase of his political prestige, and showed no less acumen and still

fewer scruples in making use of his political prestige for | Indeed, whenever his own in- | poe ‘ further increased by the friendship of Baldaccio d’Anghiart,

purposes of pecuniary profit. terests were at stake, he showed himself capable of positive villainy, although tlis was always tempered by calculation.

Cosimo proved his skill in these knavish arts during the |

war between Florence and Lucca. He had joined the

From the former pro- |

Tn |

_ his fears, voluntarily shared his meals.

but Federigo dei Malavolti, captain of the palace guard, showed him the utmost kindness, and, in order to soothe On the 3d October the prisoner was sent to Padua, his allotted place of exile.

The Albizzi speedily saw that they had done either too much or too little. While seeking to keep the government entirely in their own hands, they beheld the continual growth of the Medici party. When it was necessary to laake a campaign in Romagna against the mercenary captains commanding the forces of the duke of Milan, it was plainly seen that in banishing Cosimo the republic had lost the only citizen banker in a position to assist it with considerable loans. The Floreitines were defeated by Pic- cinino in 1434, and this event greatly increased the public exasperation against the Albizzi. Meanwhile Cosimo, who had gone to Padua as a private individual, was entertained there like a prince. Then, being permitted to transfer his residence to Venice, he entered on a course of lavish expenditure. He was overwhelmed with letters and appeals from Florence. Finally, on the Ist of September 1434, a signory was elected composed of his friends, and his recall was decreed. Rinaldo degli Albizzi determined to oppose it by force, and rushed to the Piazza with a band of armed inen; but his attempt failed, and he left the country to return no more. The Medici were now reinstated

in all their former dignities and honours, and Cosimo, on the evening of Septeinber 6th, rode past the deserted mansions of the Albizzi and re-entered his own dwelling after an exile of a year. For tliree centuries, dating from that moment, the whole history of Florence was connected with that of the house of Medici.

Cosimo's first thought was to secure himself against all future risk of removal from Florence, and accordingly he drove the most powerful citizens into exile to all parts of Italy. Nor did he spare even his former political adversary, Palla Strozzi, although the latter had been favourable to him during the recent changes. His rigour in this parti- cular case was universally censured, but Cosimo would tolerate no rivals in the city, and was resolved to abase the great families and establish his power by the support of the lower classes. He was accustomed to say that states could not be ruled by paternosters. Still, when cruelty seemed requisite, he always contrived that the chief odinm of it should fall upon others. When Neri Capponi, the valiant soldier and able diplomatist, gained great public favour by his military prowess, and his influence was

captain of the infantry, Cosimo resolved to weaken his position by indirect means. Accordingly, when in 1441 a partisan of the Medici was elected gonfalonier, Baldaccio

Albizzi in urging on this war, and many writers assert | was instantly summoned to the palace, imprisoned,

MEDICI

murdered, and his body hurled from the window. No oue could actually fix this crime upon Cosimo, but the majority believed that he had thus contrived to rid himself of one enemy and cripple another without showing his hand. It was impossible for Cosimo openly to assume the position of tyrant of Florence, nor was it worth his while to become gonfalonier, since the term of office only lasted two months. It was necessary to discover some other way without resorting to violence ; he accordingly employed what were then designated "civil methods." He managed to attain his object by means of the "balie." These nagistracies, which were generally renewed every five years, placed in the ballot bags the names of the candidates from

whom the signory and other chief magistrates were to be chosen. As soon as a "balia" favourable to Cosimo was formed, he was assured for five years of having the government in the hands of men devoted to his interests. He had comprehended that the art of politics depended rather upon individuals. than institutions, and that he who ruled men could also dictate laws. His foreign policy was no less astute. His great wealth enabled him to supply money not only to private indi- viduals, but even to foreign potentates. Philippe de Comines tells us that Cosimo frequently furnished Edward IV. of England with sums amounting to many hundred thousand florins. When Tommaso Parentucelli was still a cardinal, and in needy circumstances, Cosimo made him considerable loans without demanding guarantees of payment. On the cardinal's accession to the tiara as

Nicholas V. he was naturally very well disposed towards |

Cosimo, and employed the Medici bank in Rome in all the affairs of the curia, which brought immense profits to the house. At the time when Francesco Sforza was striving for the lordship of Milan, Cosimo foresaw his approaching triumph, showed him great friendship, and aided him with large sums of money. Accordingly, when Sforza became lord of Milan, Cosimo's power was doubled. Without the title of prince, this merchant showed royal generosity in his expenditure for the promotion of letters and the fine arts. Numerous edifices were raised and public works accom- plished with his purse. Besides his palace in the city, he constructed noble villas at Careggi, Fiesole, and other places. He built the basilica of Fiesole, and that of St Lorenzo in Florence, and enlarged the church and monastery of St Mark. Even in distant Jerusalem he endowed a hospice for the use of pilgrims. The artists of the day comprised men like Donatello, Brunelleschi, Ghiberti, Luca della Robbia, and many others, and Cosimo's magnificent commissions not only developed their powers but stimulated other men of wealth to the patronage of art. Without being a scholar, Cosimo had a genuine taste for letters, and gave them much and efficient patronage. He purchased many Greek and Latin manuscripts ; he opened the first public library at St Mark's at his own expense, and founded another in the abbey of Fiesole. The Greek refugees from Constantinople found a constant welcome in his palace. During the council of Florence (1439-1442), Gemisthus Pletho spoke to him with enthusiasm of the Platonic philosophy.

Cosimo was so deeply attracted by the thenie that he decided to have the young Marsilio Ficino trained in philosophy and Greek learning in order to make a Latin translation of the complete works of Plato. And thus a version was pro- duced that is still considered one of the best extant, and that Platonic academy was founded which led to such important results in the history of Italian philosophy and letters. On the lst of August 1464 Cosimo breathed his last, at the age of seventy-five, while engaged in listening to one of Plato's dialogues.

The concluding years of his life had been years of little

the government to the management of his friends, among whom Luca Pitti was one of the more powerful, and they had ruled with disorder, corruption, and cruelty. The lordship of Florence accordingly did not pass without some difficulty and danger into the hands of Piero, surnamed the Gouty, Cosimo's only surviving legitimate son. Afflicted by gout, and so terribly crippled that he was often only able to use his tongue, the new ruler soon discovered that a plot was on foot to overthrow his power. However, showing far more courage than he was supposed to possess, he had himself borne on a litter from his villa to Florence, defeated his enemies' designs, and firmly re-established his authority. But his success may be mainly attributed to the enormous prestige bequeathed by Cosimo to his posterity. Piero died at the end of five years' reign, on the 3d December 1469, leaving two sons, Lorenzo (1449-92) and Giuliano (1453-78). The younger, the gentler and less ambitious of the pair, was, as we shall presently see, quickly removed from the world. Lorenzo, on the con- trary, at once seized the reins of state with a firm grasp, and was, chronologically, the second of the great men bestowed upon Italy by the house of Medici. In literary talent he was immensely superior to Cosimo, but greatly his inferior in the conduct of the commercial affairs of the house, for which he had neither aptitude nor inclination. In politics he had nobler conceptions and higher ambitions, but he was more easily carried away by his passions, less prudent in his revenge, and more disposed to tyranny. He had studied letters from his earlicst years under the guidance of Ficino and other leading literati of the day, who were constant habitués of the Medici palace. At the age of

cighteen he visited the different courts of Italy in order to gain experience of the world and mankind. At his father's death he was only twenty-one years old, but instantly showed his determination to govern Florence with greater despotism than his father or grandfather. He speedily resorted to the system of the "'balie," and was very dexterous in causing the first to be chosen to suit his purpose. He then proceeded to humiliate the great familics and exalt those of little account, and this was the policy he constantly pursued. His younger brother Giuliano, being of a mild and yielding disposition, had only a nominal share in the government.

Lorenzo's policy was not exempt from danger, but, although prosecuted with less caution, it was still the old astute and fortunate policy initiated by Cosimo. But the grandson bestowed no care upon his commercial interests, although squandering his fortune with far greater lavish-

'ness. Accordingly he was sometimes driven to help himself from the public purse without ever being able to assist it

as Cosimo had done. All this excited blame and enmity against him, while his greed in the matter of the alum mines of Volterra, and the subsequent sack of that unhappy city, were crimes for which there was no excuse. Among his worst enemies were the Pazzi, and, as they formed a very powerful clan, he sought their ruin by competing with them even in business transactions. They were just on the point of inheriting the large property of Giovanni Borromeo when, in order to prevent this, Lorenzo hurriedly caused a law to be passed that altered the right of succession. 'The hatred of the Pazzi was thereby exas- perated to fury. And in addition to these things there ensued a desperate quarrel with Pope Sixtus IV., a man of very impetuous temper, who, on endeavouring to crect a state on the frontiers of the Florentine republic for the benefit of his nephews, found a determined and successful opponent in Lorenzo. Consequently the Pazzi and Arch-bishop Salviati, another enemy of Lorenzo, aided by the nephews of the pontiff, who was himself acquainted with

happiness for Florence. Being old and infirm, he had left | the whole matter, determined to put an end to the family.

Piero the Gouty.

Lorenzo the Mag- nificent.

786

On the 26th April 1478, while Giuliano and Lorenzo were attending high mass in the cathedral of Florence, the former was mortally stabbed by conspirators,.but the latter was able to beat back his assailants and escape into the sacristy. His life saved; and, no longer having to share the government with a brother, Lorenzo profited by the oppor- tunity to wreak cruel vengeance upon his foes. Several of the Pazzi and their followers were hanged from the palace windows; others were hacked to pieces, dragged through the streets, and cast into tlie Arno, while a great many more were condemned to death or sent into exile. Lorenzo seemed willing and able to become a tyrant. But he stopped short of this point. He knew the temper of the city, and had also to look to fresh dangers threatening him from with- out. The pope had excommunicated him, put Florence under an interdict, and, being seconded by the Neapolitan king, made furious war against the republic. These hostilities speedily assumed alarming proportions, and the Florentines began to tire of submitting to so many hard- ships in order to support the yoke of a fellow-citizen. Lorenzo's hold over Florence seemed endangered. But he did not lose heart, and, on the contrary, rose superior to the difficulties by which he was encompassed. He boldly journeyed to Naples, to the court of King Ferdinand of Aragon, who was reputed to be as treaclierous as he was cruel, and succeeded in obtaining from him an honourable peace, that soon led to a reconciliation with Sixtus. Thus at last Lorenzo found himself complete master of Florence, and was in a position to turn lis power to account. But, as the "'balie" changed every five years, it was always re- quisite, in order to retain his supremacy, that he should be prepared to renew the usual manceuvre at the close of that term and have another elected equally favourable to his aims. This was often a difficult achievement, and Lorenzo showed much dexterity in overcoming all obstacles. In 1480 he compassed the institution of a new council of seventy, which was practically a permanent " balia" with extended powers, inasmuch as it not only elected the chief magis- trates, but had also the administration of numerous state affairs. But, this permanent council of his

own devoted adherents once formed, his security was firmly established. By this means, the clironiclers tell us, "liberty was buried," but the chief affairs of the state were always conducted by intelligent and experienced men, who promoted the public

prosperity. Florence was still called a republic ; the old institutions were still preserved, if onlyin name. Lorenzo was absolute lord of all, and virtually a tyrant. His im-

morality was scandalous; he kept an army of spies, and frequently meddled in the citizens' most private affairs, and exalted men of the lowest condition to important offices of the state. Yet, as Guicciardini remarks, "if Florence was to have a tyrant, she could never have found a better or more pleasant one." In fact all industry, com- merée, and public works made enormous progress. The civil equality of modern states, which was quite unknown to the Middle Ages, was more developed in Florence than in any other city of the world. Even the condition of the peasantry was far more prosperous than elsewhere. And Lorenzo's authority was not confined to Tuscany, but was also very great throughout the whole of Italy. He was on the friendliest terms with Pope Innocent VIII., from whom he obtained the exaltation of his son Giovanni to the cardinalate at the age of fourteen. This boy cardinal was afterwards Pope Leo X. From the moment of the decease of Sixtus IV., the union of Florence and Rome became the basis of Lorenzo's foreign policy. By its means he was able to prevent the hatreds and jealousies of the Sforzas of Milan and the Aragonese of Naples from bursting into the open conflict that long threatened, and after his death actually caused, the beginning of new and irreparable

calamities. Hence Lorenzo was styled the needle of the Italian compass.

But the events we have narrated cannot suffice for the full comprehension of this complex character, unless we add the record of his deeds as a patron of letters and his achievements as a writer. His palace was the school and resort of illustrious men. Within its walls were trained the two young Medici afterwards kuown to the world as Leo X. and Clement VII. Ficino, Poliziano, Pico della Mirandola, and all members of the Platonic academy were its constant habitués. It was here that Pulci gave readings of his Aforgante, and Michelangelo essayed the first strokes of his chisel. Lorenzo's intellectual powers were of exceptional strength and versatility. He could speak with equal fluency on painting, sculpture, music, philosophy, and poetry. But his crowning superiority over every other Mecenas known to history lay in his active participation in the intellectual labours that he promoted, Indeed at certain moments he was positively the leading spirit among the literati of his time. He was an elegant prose writer,

and was likewise a poet of real originality. At that period Italians were forsaking erudition in order to forward the revival of the national literature by recur- ring to the primitive sources of the spoken tongue and popular verse. It is Lorenzo's lasting glory to have been the initiator of this movement. Without being—as some have maintained—a poet of genius, he was certainly a writer of much finish and eloquence, and one of the first to raise popular poetry to the dignity of art. In his Amora, his Caccia del Falcone, and his Nencia da Barberino, he gives descriptions of nature and of the rural life that he loved, with the graphic power of an acute and tasteful observer, joined to an ease of style that occasionally sins by excess of homeliness. Both in his art and in his politics he leant upon the people. The more oppressive his government, the more did he seek in his verses to incite the public to festivities and lull it to slumber by sensual enjoyments. In his Ballate, or songs for dancing, and more especially in his carnival songs, a kind of verse invented by himself, Lorenzo displayed all the best qualities and worst defects of his muse. Marvellously and spontaneously elegant, very truthful and fresh in style, fertile in fancy and rich in colour, they are often of a most revolting indecency. And these compositions of one filling a princely station in the city were often sung by their author in the public streets, in the midst of the populace.

Lorenzo left three sons,—Pietro (1471-1503), Giovanni (1475-1521), and Giuliano (1479-1516). He was suc-

ceeded by Pietro, whose rule lasted but for two years. Pietro.

During this brief term he performed no good deeds, and only displayed inordinate vanity and frivolity. His con- duct greatly helped to foment the hatred between Lodovico Sforza and Ferdinand of Naples, which hastened the coming of the French under Charles VIIL., and the renewal of foreign invasions. No sooner did the French approach the frontiers of Tuscany than Pietro, crazed with fear, hastened ¢o meet them, and, basely yielding to every demand, accepted terms equally humiliating to himself and the state. But, returning to Florence, he found that the enraged citizens had already decreed his deposi- tion, in order to reconstitute the republic, and was there- fore compelled to escape to Venice. His various plots to reiustate himself in Florence were all unsuccessful. At last he went to the south of

Italy with the French, was drowned at the passage of the Garigliano in 1503, and was buried in the cloister of Monte Cassino.

The ensuing period was adverse to the Medici, for a republican government was maintained in Florence from 1494 to 1512, and the city remained faithful to its alliance with the French, who were all-powerful in Italy. Cardinal

Sg

*Cardinal year (1513) Cardinal Giovanni was elected pope, and Cardinal Giulio, who had laboured successfully for the Cardinal Giovanni assumed the name of Leo X. He accordingly removed to | reinstatement of his family in Florence in 1512, had been Giulio eg Rome, leaving his brother Giuliano with his nephew | long attached to the person of Leo X. as his trusted (Clement i. Lorenzo in Florence, and accompanied by his cousin | factotum andcompanion. He had been generally regarded *”*

ME Pict

Giovanni, the head of the family, resided in Rome, playing the patron to a circle of literati, artists, and friends, seeking to increase his popularity, and calmly waiting for better days. The battle of Ravenna wrought the downfall of the fortunes of France in Italy, and led to the rise of those of Spain, whose troops entered Florence to destroy the republic and reinstate the Medici. Pietro had now been dead for some time, leaving a young son, Lorenzo (1492- 1519), who was afterwards duke of Urbino. The following

Giulio, who was a natural son of the Giuliano murdered in the conspiracy of the Pazzi, and was soon destined to be a cardinal and ultimately a pope. Meanwhile his kinsmen in Florence continued to govern that city by means of a “ balia,” although preserving an empty show of republican institutions. And thus, being masters of the whole of central Italy, the Medici enjoyed great authority throughout the country, and their ambition plumed itself for still higher flights. This was the moment when Niccold Machiavelli, in his treatise Zhe Prince,

|

counselled them to accomplish the unity of Italy by arming»

the whole country, and expelling its foregin invaders. Leo X., who is only indirectly connected with the history of Florence, gave his name to the age in which he

lived in consequence of his magnificent patronage of art | | fulfilled, long served to keep men's minds in a pleasant

and letters in Rome. But he was merely a clever amateur, and had not the literary gifts of his father Lorenzo. He surrounded himself with versifiers and inferior writers,

who enlivened his board and accompanied him wherever he |

went. of theatrical performances, satires, and other intellectual diversions. His patronage of the fine arts, his genuine affection for Raphael, and the numerous works he caused to be executed by him and other artists, have served to confer an exaggerated glory on his name. He failed to comprehend the significance of the great religious movement already stirring in Germany, and had not the remotest idea of the grave importance of the Reformation, which indeed he unconsciously promoted by his reckless and shameless sale of indulgences. The whole policy of Pope Leo X. consisted in oscillating between France and Spain, in always playing fast and loose, and deceiving both powers in turn. Yet the evil results of this contemptible policy never seemed to disturb his mind. He finally joined the side of the emperor Charles V., and in 1521, at the time of the defeat of the French by the Spanish troops on the river Adda, he ceased to breathe at his favourite villa of Magliana. Giuliano dei Medici had died during Leo's reign, in 1516, without having ever done anything worthy of record. He was the husband of Philiberta of Savoy, was duke of Nemours, and left a natural son, Ippolito dei Medici (1511-1535), who afterwards became a cardinal. Lorenzo, being of more ambitious temper, was by no means content to remain atthe head of the Florence Government hampered by many restrictions imposed by republican institutions, and subject to the incessant control of the pope. In his eagerness to aggrandize his kinsmen, the latter had further decided to give Lorenzo the duchy of Urbino, and formally invested him in its rights, after expelling on false pretences its legitimate

lord, Francesco Maria della Rovere. This prince, however, soon returned to Urbino, where he was joyously welcomed by his subjects, and Lorenzo regained possession only by a war of several months, in which he was wounded. In 1519 he also died, worn out by disease and excess. By his marriage with Madeleine de la Tour d'Auvergne, he had one daughter, Caterina del

He liked to lead a gay and untroubled life, was fond |

Orleans, afterwards king of France. She played a long and sinister part in the history of that country. Lorenzo also left a natural son named Alessandro, inheriting the frizzled hair and projecting lips of the negro or mulatto slave who had given him birth. His miserable death will be presently related. Thus the only three surviving representatives of the chief branch of the Medici, Cardinal Giulio, Ippolito, and Alessandro were all of illegitimate birth, and left no legitimate heirs.

as the mentor of the pope, who had no liking for hard work. But in fact, his frivolity notwithstanding, Leo X. always followed his own inclinations. He had much aptitude for cominand, aud pursued his shuffling policy without any meutal anxiety. Giulio, on the contrary, shrank from all responsibility, inuddled his brains in weighing the reasons for and against every possible decision, and was therefore a better tool of government in others' hands than he was fit to govern on his own account. When Giuliano and Lorenzo died, the pope appointed the cardinal to the government of Florence. In that post, restricted within the limits imposed by republican institutions, and acting under the continual direction of Rome, he performed his duties fairly well. He caressed the citizens with hopes of extended liberties, which, although never destined to be

flutter of expectation ; and when the more impatient spirits attempted to raise a rebellion he speedily quenched it in blood. When, after the death of Leo X. and the very brief pontificate of Adrian VI., he was elected pope (1523) under the name of Clement VII., he entrusted the govern-

ment of Florence to Cardinal Silvio Passerini conjointly.

with Alessandro and Ippolito, who were still too young to do much on their own account.

The pontificate of Leo X. had been a time of felicity to himself if of disaster to Italy andthe church. The reign of Clement, on the contrary, was fatal to himself as well, a result chiefly due to his hesitating temper and continual uncertainty of mind. MHis policy, like that of Leo X., consisted in perpetual oscillation between France and Spain. By lis endeavours to trick all the world, he frequently ended in being tricked himself. In 1525 he was the ally of the French, who then suffered a terrible defeat at Pavia, where their king Francis I. was taken prisoner. The armies of Charles V. triumphantly advanced, without Clement being able to oppose any effectual resistance. Both Rome and Florence were threatened with a fearful catastrophe.

Thus far we have had no occasion to speak of. the Giovanni

younger branch of the Medici, descended from Lorenzo, delle

brother to Cosimo the Elder. Always in obscurity, an always held in check by the elder line, it now seemed to acquire new life, and first entered the arena of history when the other was on the point of extinction. In fact the most valiant captain of the papal forces was Giovanni dei Medici, afterwards known by the name of Giovanni delle Bande Nere. His father was Giovanni, son of Pier Francesco, who was the son of Lorenzo, the brother of Cosimo dei Medici. History has little to tell of the elder Giovanni; but his wife Caterina Sforza, of whom he was the third husband, was a woman of more than masculine vigour. Giovanni dei Medici married her in 1497, but died in 1498, leaving her with one son who was christened Lodovico, but afterwards took his father's name of Giovanni (1498-1526). Trained to arms from his earliest years, this youth inherited all the energy of his. mother,

Medici (1519-89), married in 1533 to Henry, duke of whose Sforza blood seemed to infuse new life into the

d ande ere

Duke Aless- andro.

younger branch of the Medici. Notwithstanding his extreme youth, he had already achieved the title of the best captain in Italy. He always fought with immense dash and daring, and was devotedly loved and obeyed by his soldiery. He was the only leader who opposed a determined resistauce to the imperial forces. He was seriously wounded at Pavia when fighting on the French side. On his recovery he joined the army of the League, and was much enraged by finding that the duke of Urbino, commander of the Venetian and papal forces, would never decide on attacking. When the imperial

troops were struggling through the marshes of Mantua, |

surrounded on every side, and without stores or ammuni- tion, Giovanni could not resign himself to inactivity like his colleagues in command. He was ignorant that the

imperialists had just received supplies and artillery from the |

duke of Ferrara, and therefore daringly attacked them with

a small body of men without taking any precautions for | citizens who were resolved to achieve the overthrow of They found a leader in Cardinal Ippolito Cardinal

dei Medici, who was then in Rome, embittered by the Ippolito. |

defence. One of the first shots fired by the enemy injured him so fatally that he died a few days after. He was married to Maria Salviati, by whom he had one son, Cosimo (1519-1574), born, as we shall see, to lofty fortunes, for he became the first grand-duke of Tuscany, and indeed. the founder of the grand-duchy and the new dynasty.

Meanwhile the imperial army pursued its march upon Rome, captured the Eternal City after a few hours' combat, and cruelly sacked it during many days (1527). Thanks to his perpetual shuffling and excessive avarice, the pope found himself utterly forsaken, and, being unable to defend the city,

was obliged to seek refuge in the castle of St Angelo, whence he only effected his escape after some months. He thensigned atreaty of alliance with theemperor (1529), who sent an army to besiege Florence and restore the Medici, whom the people had expelled in 1527 on the re-establishment of the republic. After an heroic defence, the city was forced to surrender (1530) ; and, although it was expressly stipulated that the ancient liberties of Florence should be respected, every one foresaw that the conditions would be violated. In fact, pope and emperor immediately began to dispute as to which should be the new lord of the city. Clement VII. had inherited the traditional family dislike for the younger branch of his kin, and so the choice lay between the two bastards Ippolito and Alessandro. The former being a cardinal, the latter was chosen. Alessandro, who already bore the title of duke of Citta' di Penna, came to Florence in 1531, and by imperial patent was nominated head of the republic. According to the terms of this patent, the former liberty enjoyed under the Medicean rule was to remain intact. But no previous ruler of the city had enjoyed hereditary power confirmed by imperial patent, and such power was incom- patible. with the existence of a republic. Moreover, Clement VII. showed dissatisfaction with the uncertainty of the power conferred upon his kinsman, and finally succeeded in obtaining additional privileges. On the 4th of April 1532 a parliament was convoked for the last time in Florence, and, as usual, approved every measure pro- posed for acceptance. Accordingly a new council was formed of two hundred citizens elected for life, forty-eight of which number were to constitute a senate. Alessandro, as duke of the republic, filled the post of gonfalonier, and carried on the government with the assistance of three senators, changed every three months, who took the place of the suppressed signory.

The duke's chief advisers, and the contrivers of all these arrangements, were Baccio Valori, Francesco Vettori, and above all Francesco Guicciardini,—men, especially the two latter, of lofty political gifts and extensive influence. The mind and character of Duke Alessandro were as yet comparatively unknown. At first he seemed very anxious

to win the favour of the people, and disposed to rule with justice and prudence. But soon encountering difficulties that he was unable to overcome, he began to neglect the business of the state, treated his new office as affording the means for increased indulgence in pleasure and vice, and acted as if the sole function of government consisted in lulling the people by festivities and corrupting it by the dissolute life of which he set the example. The question of the moment was the transformation of the old re- publican régime into a princedom; as an unavoidable result of this change it followed that Florence was no longer to be the ruling city to whose inhabitants alone belonged the monopoly of political office. When the leading Florentine families realized, not only that the re- public was destroyed, but that they were reduced to equality with those whom they had hitherto regarded as their inferiors and subjects, their rage was indescribable, and hardly a day passed without the departure of influential

their new ruler.

preference given to Alessandro, and anxious to become his successor with the least possible delay. Under the pressure of terror the duke at once became a tyrant. He garrisoned the different cities, and began the erection in Florence of the Fortezza da Basse, built chiefly at the ex- pense of Filippo Strozzi, who afterwards met his death within its walls.

In 1534 Clement VII. died, and the election fell on Panl I[I., from whom Cardinal Ippolito hoped to obtain assistance for his designs. Accordingly the principal Florentine exiles were despatched on a mission to the emperor Charles V. with complaints of Alessandro's tyranny and lis shameless violation of the terms upon which the city had surrendered. Cardinal Ippolito also represented his own willingness to carry on the government of Florence ina more equitable manner, and promised the eniperor a large sum of money. Reply being delayed by the emperor's

absence, he became so impatient that he set out, accom

panied by several exiles, to meet Charles in 'l'unis, but on the 10th of August 1535 died suddenly by the way, at Itri, poisoned by order of Alessandro. Such at least was the general belief, and it was confirmed by the same fate be- falling other enemies of the duke about the same time. On

the emperor's return from Africa, the exiles presented themselves to him in Naples, and the venerable patriot Jacopo Nardi pleaded their cause. Duke Alessandro, being cited to appear, came to Naples accompanied by Francesco Guicciardini, who by speaking in his defence rendered himself odious to all friends of liberty, and irretrievably tarnished his illustrious name. The cardinal being dead, it was hard to find a successor to Alessandro. On this account, and perhaps to some extent through the emperor's personal liking for the duke, the latter rose higher than before in the imperial favour, married Margaret of Austria, the natural daughter of Charles, and returned to Florence with increased power. And now Alessandro indulged unchecked in the lowest excesses of tyranny, aud although so recently a bridegroom gave way to increased libertinism. His whole time was passed in vicious haunts and in scandalous adventures. In order to conceal the obscurity of his birth, he left his mother to starve, and it was even asserted that he finally got rid of her by poison.

His constant associate in this disgraceful routine was La ro} 2ino ¢

his distant kinsman Lorenzo, generally known as Lorenzin dei Medici. Of the younger branch of the Medici, the latter was second cousin of the Cosimo already mentioned as the son of Giovanni delle Bande Nere. He had much culture and literary talent, but led an irregular life, sometimes acting like a madman and sometimes like a

———

MED

villain. He was a writer of considerable elegance, the author of several plays, one of which, the Arzdosio, was held to be among the best of the age, and he was a worshipper of antiquity. Notwithstanding these tastes, when in Rome he knocked off the heads of some of the finest statues of the age of Adrian, an act by which Clement VII. was so incensed that he threatened to have him hanged. There- upon Lorenzino fled to Florence, where he became the friend of Duke Alessandro and his partner in the most licentious excesses. They went together to houses of ill-fame, and violated private dwellings and convents. They often showed themselves in public mounted

on the same horse. All Florence eyed them with disgust, but no one foresaw the tragedy that was soon to take place.

On the evening of January 5th, 1537, after a day

nation of passed in the usual excesses, Lorenzino led the duke to

his own lodging, and left him there, promising shortly to return with the wife of Leonardo Ginori, Alessandro, worn out by the exertions of the day, fell asleep on the couch while awaiting Lorenzino's return. Before long the latter came accompanied by a desperado known as the Scoronconcolo, who aided him in falling on the sleeper. Roused by their first thrusts, the duke fought for his life, and was only despatched after a violent struggle. The murderers then lifted the body into bed, hid it beneath the clothes, and, Lorenzino having attached a paper to it bearing the words, vincit amor patriz, laudumque immensa cupido, they both fled to Venice. In that city Lorenzino was assassinated some ten years later, in 1548, at the age of thirty-two, by order of Alessandro's successor. Thus he was only abont twenty-two at the time he committed the murder. He wrote an Apologia, in which le defended himself with great skill and eloquence, saying that he had been urged to the deed solely by love of liberty. For this reason alone he had followed the example of Brutus and played the part of friend and courtier. The tone of this Apologia is so straightforward, sometimes even so eloquent aud lofty, that we should be tempted to give it credence were it possible to believe the assertions of one who not only by his crime but by the infamy of his previous and subsequent career completely gave the lie to his vaunted nobilityof purpose. By Alessandro's death the elder branch of the Medici became extinct, and thus the appearance of the younger line was heralded by a bloody crime.

When the duke's absence from his own palace was dis- covered on the morning of January 6th, he was at first supposed to have spent the night with one of his mistresses ; but soon, some alarm being felt, search was made, and Cardinal Cybo was the first to discover the murder. Enjoining the strictest secrecy, he kept the corpse concealed for three days, and then had it interred in the sacristy of San Lorenzo. Meanwhile he had hastily summoned Alessandro Vitelli and the other captains, so that, by the time Alessandro's death was made public, the city was already filled with troops.

The cardinal then convoked the council of forty-eight to decide upon a successor. Alessandro's only issue was a natural son named Giulio, aged five. The cardinal favoured his election, in the hope of keeping the real sovereignty in his own hands, But he speedily saw the impossibility of carrying out a design that was ridiculed by all. On the other hand, Guicciardini, Vettori, and others of the leading citizens favoured the choice of Cosimo, the son of Giovanni delle Bande Nere. He was already in Florence, was aged seventeen, was keen-witted and aspiring, strong and handsome in person, heir to the enormous wealth of the Medici, and, by the terms of the imperial patent, was Alessandro's lawful successor. Charles V. approved the nomination of Cosimo, who without delay seized the reins of government with a firm grasp. Like Alessandro, he was named head of the

a

ICI 789

republic; and Guicciardini and others who had worked hardest in his cause hoped to direct him and keep him under their control. But Cosimo soon undeceived them by proving that, his youth notwithstanding, he had a will of his own, and was resolved to rule unshackled by republican forms and unhampered by advisers disposed ta act as mentors. The Florentines had now an absolute prince who was likewise a statesman of eminent ability.

On learning the death of Alessandro and the election of Cosimo, the exiles appreciated the necessity for prompt action, as all delay would be fatal to the overthrow of the Medicean rule. They had received money and promises from France; they were strengthened by the adhesion of Filippo Strozzi and Baccio Valori, who had both become hostile to the Medici through the infamous conduct and mad tyranny of Alessandro ; and Strozzi brought them the lielp of his enormous fortune and the prowess of that very distinguished captain, his son Piero. The exiles accordingly met, and assembled their forces at Mirandola. They had about four thousand infantry and three hundred horse ; among them were members of all the principal Florentine families; and their leaders were Bernardo Salviati and Piero Strozzi. They marched rapidly, and entered Tuscany towards the end of July 1537. Cosimo on this occasion displayed signal capacity and presence of mind. Fully informed of the exiles' movements by means of his spies, he no

sooner learned their approach than he ordered Alessandro Vitelli to collect the best German, Spanish, and Italian infantry at his disposal, and advance against the enemy without delay. On the evening of July 31 Vitelli marched towards Prato with seven hundred picked infantry and a band of one hundred horse, and on the way fell in with other Spanish foot soldiers who joined the expedition. At early dawn the following morning he made a sudden attack on the exiles' advanced guard close to Montemurlo, an old fortress converted into a villa belonging to the Nerli. Having utterly routed them, he proceeded to storin Montemurlo, where Filippo Strozzi and a few of his young comrades had taken refugeand barricaded the gates. Knowing that they must either conquer or die, they made a desperate resistance for some hours, and then, overwhelmed by superior numbers, were obliged to yield themselves prisoners. The main body of the army was still at some distance, having been detained in the mountains by heavy rains and difficult passes, and, on learning the defeat at Montemurlo, its leader refused to advance, and turned back by the way he had come. Alessandro Vitelli then re- entered Florence with his victorious army and his fettered captives. Cosimo had achieved his first triumph.

All the prisoners, who were members of great families, were brought before Cosimo, and were received by him with courteous coldness. Soon, however, a scaffold was erected in the Piazza, and on four mornings in succession four of the prisoners were beheaded. Then the duke saw fit to stay the executions. Baccio Valori, however, and his sou and nephew were beheaded on the 20th of August in the courtyard of the Bargello. Filippo Strozzi still survived, confined in the Fortezza da Basso, that had been built at his expense. His family was illustrious, he had numerous adherents, aud he enjoyed the protection of the French king. Nevertheless Cosimo only awaited some plausible pretext to rid himself of this dreaded enemy. He brought him to trial and had him put to the question. But this cruelty led to nothing, for Strozzi denied every accusation and bore the torture with much fortitude. On December 18th he was found dead in his prison, with a blood-stained sword by his side, and a slip of paper bearing these words : exoriare aliquis nostris ex ossibus ultor. It was believed that, having renounced all hope of his life being spared, Strozzi had preferred suicide to death at the hands of the

executioner, Some, however, thought that Cosimo had caused him to be murdered, and adopted this mode of cou- cealing the crime. The young prince's cold-blooded massacre of his captives cast an enduring shadow upon his reign and dynasty. But it was henceforward plain to all that he was a man of stern resolve, who went straight to his end without scruples or half measures. Before long he was regarded by many as the incarnation of Machiavelli's Prince, "inasmuch as he joined daring to talent and

prudence, was capable of great cruelty, and yet could | Guicciardini, who still pre- |

practise mercy in due season." tended to act as mentor, and wlio on account of his many services had a certain influence over him, was obliged to withdraw fron public life and busy himself with writing his /Z¢story at his villa of Arcetri. Hedied in this retreat in 1540, and it was immediately rumoured that tlie duke had caused him to be poisoned. ' This shows the estimation in which Cosimo was now held. It was true that he punished with death all who dared to resist his will. By 1540 sentence of death had beeu pronounced against four

hundred and thirty contumacious fugitives, and during his |

reign one hundred and forty men and six women actually ascended the scaffold, without counting those who perished in foreign lands by the daggers of his assassins. He reduced the old republican institutions to empty forms, by making the magistrates mere creatures of his will. He issued the sternest edicts against the rebels, particu-

larly by the law known as the ' Polverina," from the | This law decreed |

name of its proposer Jacopo Polverini. not only the confiscation of the property of exiles, but likewise that of their heirs, even if personally acquired by the latter. Cosimo ruled like the independent sovereign of a great state, and always showed thie capacity, firmness, and courage demanded by that station. Only, his state being small and weak, he was forced to rely chiefly upon his personal talent and wealth. It was necessary

for him to make heavy loans to the different European sovereigns, especially to Charles V., the most rapacious of them all, and to give enormous bribes to their ambassadors. Besides, he had to carry on wars for the extension of his dominions, and neither his inherited wealth nor the large sums gained by confiscating the estates of rebellious subjects sufficed for all this outlay. He was accordingly compelled to burden the people with taxes, aud thus begin at once to diminish its strength. (

Cosimo bore a special grudge against the neighbouring republics of Siena and Lucca. Although the latter was small and weak, and the former garrisoned by Spaniards, yet the spectacle of free institutions at the frontiers of his own state served as a continual incitenieut to subjects dis-affected to the new régime. In fact Francesco Burlamacchi, a zealous Lucchese patriot, had conceived the design of re-establishing republican government in all the cities of Tuscany. Cosimo, with the emperor's help, succeeded in having him put to death. Lucca, however, was an insig-nificant state making no pretence of rivalry, whereas Siena was an old and formidable foe to Florence, and had always given protection to the Florentine exiles. It was now very reluctantly submitting to the presence of a Spanish garrison, and, being stimulated by promises of prompt and efficacious assistance from France, rose in rebellion and expelled the Spaniards in 1552. Cosimo instantly seized the opportunity, wrote to the emperor in terms that appealed to his pride, asked leave to attack Siena, and begged for troops to ensure the success of his enterprise. As no immediate answer arrived, he feigned to begin negotiations with Henry II. of France, and, by thus arous- ing the imperial jealousy, obtained a contingent of German and Spanish infantry. Thencame a long and bloody war.

MEDICL

aided by the valour of Piero Strozzi, who fought under the French flag, made a most heroic resistance, even women and children helping on the walls. But fortune was against them. Piero Strozzi sustained several defeats, and finally the Sienese, having exhausted their ammunition and being decimated by famine and the sword, were obliged to capitulate on honourable terms that were shamelessly violated. By the varied disasters of

the siege and the num- ber of fugitives the population was reduced from forty to eight thousand inhabitants. The republicans, still eager to resist, withdrew to Montalcino. Cosimo now ruled the city and territory of Siena in the name of Charles V., who always refused him its absolute possession. After the emperor's abdication, and the succession of Philip IT. to the Spanish throne, Cosimo at last obtained Siena and Ponto- ferra by giving up his claim to a sum of 200,000 ducats that he was to have received from Charles V. In 1559 he also captured Montalcino, and thus formed the grand- duchy of Tuscany, but he continued to govern the new state —.e., Siena and its territories—separately from the old. His rule was intelligent, skilful, and despotic; but his enormous expenses drove him to raise large sums of money by special contrivances unsuited to the country and the people. Hence, notwithstanding the genius of its founder,

_ the grand-duchy held from the first the elements of its future

decay. Cosimo preferred to confer office upon men of humble origin in order to have pliable tools, but he also liked to be surrounded by a courtier aristocracy on the Spanish and French pattern. As no Tuscan aristocracy any longer existed, he created new nobles, and tempted foreign ones to come by the concession of various feudal privileges ; and, in order to turn this artificial aristocracy to someaccount, he founded the knightly order of St Stephen, charged with the defence of the coast against pirates, which in course of time won much honour by its prowess. He also estab- lished a sinall standing army for the protection of his fron- tiers ; but, as we have seen, he generally employed German aud Spanish troops for his wars, and always had a foreign bodyguard. Atthe commencement of his reign he opposed tle popes in order to maintain the independence of his own state; but later, to obtain help, he truckled to then in many ways, even to the extent of giving up to the Inquisition his own confidant, Piero Carnesecchi, who, being accused of heresy, was beheaded and burnt in 1567. In reward for these acts of submission, the popes showed

him friendship, and Pius V. granted him the title of grand- Title of duke, conferring the patent and crown upon him in Rome, grand-

although the emperor had always withheld his consent. 4 Finally, however, the latter confirmed the title to Cosimo's successor. The measure most

injurious to Tuscany was the fiscal system of taxes, of which the sole aim was to extort the greatest possible amount of money. 'The con- sequent damage to industry, commerce, and agriculture was immense, and, added to the devastations caused by the Sienese war, led to their utter ruin. Otherwise Cosimo did not neglect useful measures for the interior prosperity of his state. He was no Mecenas, but nevertheless restored the Pisan university, enlarged that of Siena, had the public records classified, and also executed public works like the Santa Trinit' bridge. During the great inunda- tions of 1557 he turned his whole energy to the relief of the sufferers.

In 1539 he had espoused Eleonora of Toledo, daughter of the viceroy of Naples, by whom he had several children. Two died in 1562, and their mother soon followed them to the grave. It was said that one of these boys, Don Garcia, had murdered the other, and then been killed by the enraged father. Indeed Cosimo was further accused of having put his own wife to death; but neither rumour had

Siena was besieged for fifteen months, and its inhabitants, | any foundation. He now showed signs ef illness and failure

Francesco lt

UM Peo

ofstrength. He was not old, but worn by the cares of state and self-indulgence. Accordingly in 1564 he resigned the government to his eldest son, who was to act as his lieutenant, since he wished to remain the virtual head of the state and have power to resume the sceptre on any emergency. In 1570, by the advice of Pius V., he married Camilla Martelli, a young lady of whom he had been long enamoured. In 1574 he died, at the age of fifty-four years and ten months, after a reign of thirty-seven years, leaving three sons and one daughter besides natural children. These sons were Francesco, his successor, who was already at the head of the government, Cardinal Ferdinand, and Piero.

Francesco L, born in 1541, began to govern as his father's lieutenant in 1564, and was married in 1565 to the arch- duchess Giovanna of Austria.

On beginning to reign on his own account in 1574, he speedily manifested his real character. His training in the hands of a Spanish mother had made him suspicious, false, and despotic. Holding everyone aloof, he carried on the government with the assistance of a few devoted ministers. He compelled his stepmother to retire to a convent, and kept his brothers at a distance from Florence. He loved the privileges of power without its burdens. Cosimo had known how to maintain his independence, but Francesco cast himself like a vassal at Austria's feet. He reaped his reward by obtaining from Maximilian II. the title of grand-duke, for which Cosimo had never been able to win the imperial sanc- tion, but he forfeited all independence. Towards Philip IT. he showed even greater submissiveness, supplying him with large sums of money wrung from his over-taxed people. He held entirely aloof from France, in order not to awake the suspicions of his protectors. In short, under his rule the history of Tuscany was reduced to a mere record of local and municipal events. To increase his funds, he traded on his own account, thus creating a monopoly that was ruinous to the country at large, and led to an enor- mous number of failures. He raised the tax upon corn to so high a rate that few continued to find any profit in grow- ing it, and thus the Maremme, already partly devastated during the war with Siena, were converted into a desert. Even industry declined under this system of government ; and, although Francesco founded porcelain manufactories and pietra dura works, they did not rise to any prosperity until after his death. His love of science and letters was the only Medicean virtue that he possessed. He had au absolute passion for chemistry, and passed much of his time in his laboratory. Sometimes indeed he gave audience to his secretaries of state standing before a furnace, bellows in hand. He took some useful measures to promote the risé of a new city at Leghorn, which at that time had only a natural and ill-sheltered harbour. The improvement of Leghorn had been first projected by Cosimo I., and was carried on by all the succeeding Medici. Francesco was a slave to his passions, and was led by them to scandalous excesses and deeds of bloodshed. His example and neglect of the affairs of the state soon caused a vast increase of crime even among the people, and, during the first eighteen months of his reign, there occurred no less than one hundred and sixty-eight murders.

In default of public events, the historians of this period enlarge upon private incidents, generally of a scandalous or sanguinary kind. In 1575 Orazio Pucci, wishing to avenge his father, whom Cosimo had hanged, determined to get up a conspiracy, but, soon recognizing how firmly the Medicean rule had taken root in the country, desisted from the attempt. But the grand-duke, on hear- ing of the already abandoned plot, immediately caused Pucci to be hanged from the same window of the Palazzo Vecchio, and even from the same iron stanchion, from which his father before him had hung. His companions, who

val

had fied to France and England, were pursued and murdered by the ducal emissaries. Their possessions were con- fiscated, and the " Polverina" law applied so that the con- spirators' heirs were reduced to penury, and the grand-duke gained more than 300,000 ducats.

Next year Isabella dei Medici, Francesco's sister, was strangled in her nuptial bed by her husband, Paolo Giordano Orsini, whom she had betrayed. Piero dei Medici, Francesco's brother, murdered his wife Eleonora of Toledo from the same motive. Still louder scandal was caused by the duke's own conduct. He was already a married man, when, passing one day through the Piazza of St Mark in Florence, he saw an exceedingly beautiful woman at the window of a mean dwelling, and at once conceived a passion for her. She was the famous Bianca Cappello, a Venetian of noble birth, who had eloped with a young Florentine named Pietro Buonaventuri, to whom she was married at the time that she attracted the duke's gaze. He made her acquaintance, and, in order to see her frequently, nominated her husband to a post at court. Upon this, Buonaventuri behaved with so much insolence, even to the nobility, that one evening he was found murdered iu the street. Thus the grand-duke, who was thought to have sanctioned the crime, was able to indulge his passion unchecked. On the death of the grand-duchess in 1578 he was privately united to Bianca, and afterwards married her publicly. But she had no children, and this served to poison her happiness, since the next in succession was her bitter enemy, the cardinal Ferdinand. 'The latter came to Florence in 1587, and was ostentatiously welcomed by Bianca, who was most anxious to conciliate him. On October

18th of the same year, the grand-duke died at his villa of Poggio a Caiano, of a fever caught on a shooting excursion in the Maremme, and the next day Bianca also expired, having ruiued her health by drugs taken to cure her sterility. But rumour asserted that she had prepared a poisoned tart for the cardinal, and that, when he suspiciously insisted on the grand-duke tasting it first, Bianca desperately swallowed a slice and followed her husband to the tomb.

Such was the life of Francesco dei Medici, and all that can be said in his praise is that he gave liberal encourage- ment to a few artists, including Giovanni Bologna, who executed for him the group of the Rape of the Sabines. He was the founder of the Uffizi gallery, of the Medici theatre, and the villa of Pratolino; and during his reign the Della Cruscan academy was instituted.

Ferdinand I. was thirty-eight years of age when, in 1587, Ferdinand

he succeeded his brother on the throne. A cardinal from the |. age of fourteen, he had never taken holy orders. He showed much tact and experience in the management of ecclesi- astical affairs. He was the founder of the Villa Medici at Rome, and the purchaser of many priceless works of art, such as the Niobe group and many other statues afterwards transported by him to Florence. After his accession he retained the cardinal's purple until the time of his marriage. He was in all respects his brother's opposite. Affable in his manners and generous with his purse, he chose a crest typical of the proposed mildness of his rule,—a swarm of bees with the motto Majestate tantum. He instantly pardoned all who had opposed him, and left his kinsmen at liberty to choose their own place of residence. Occa- sionally, for political reasons, he committed. acts unworthy of his character; but he re-established the adiministration of justice, and sedulously attended to the business of the state and the welfare of his subjects. Accordingly Tuscany revived under his rule and regained the independ- ence aud political dignity that his brother had sacrificed to love of ease and personal indulgence. He favoured commerce, and effectually ensured the prosperity of Leghorn, by an edict enjoining toleration towards Jews and

Cosimo WG

heretics, which led to the settlement of many foreigners in that city. He also improved the harbour and facilitated communication with Pisa by means of the Naviglio, a canal into which a portion of the water of the Arno was turned, He nevertheless retained the reprehensible custom of trad- ing on his own account, keeping banks in many cities of Europe. He successfully accomplished the draining of the Val di Chiana, cultivated the plains of Pisa, Fucecchio, aud Val di Nievole, and executed other works of public utility at Siena and Pisa.

But his best energies were |

devoted to the foreign policy by which he sought to >

emancipate himself from subjection to Spain. On the assassination (1589) of Henry III. of France, Ferdinand supported the claims of the king of Navarre, undeterred

by the opposition of Spain and the Catholic League, who |

were dismayed by the prospect of a Huguenot succeeding to the throne of France. He lent money to Henry IV., and strongly urged his conversion to Catholicism; he helped to persuade the pope to accept Henry's abjuration, and pursued this policy with marvellous persistence until his efforts were crowned with success. Subsequently, however, Henry IV. showed faint gratitude for the benefits conferred upon lim, and paid no attention to the expostulations of the grand duke, who then began to slacken his relations with France, and showed that he could guard his independ- ence by other alliances. He gave liberal assistance to Philip II. for the campaign of the latter in Algiers, and to the emperor for the war with the Turks. Hence he was compelled to burden his subjects with enormous taxes, forgetting that while guaranteeing the mdependence of Tuscany by his loans to foreign powers he was increasingly sapping the strength of future generations. He at last succeeded in obtaining the formal investiture of Siena, which: Spain had always considered a fief of her own.

During this grand-duke's reign the Tuscan navy was notably increased, and did itself much honour on the Mediterranean. The war-galleys of the knights of St Stcpheu were despatched to the coast of Barbary to attack Bona, the headquarters of the corsairs, and they captured the town with much dash and bravery. And in the following year (1608) thesame galleys achieved their most brilliant victory in the archipelago over the stronger fleet of the Turks, by taking nine of their vessels, seven hundred prisoners, and a store of jewels of the value of 2,000,000 ducats.

Ferdinand I. died in 1609, leaving four sons, of whom the eldest, Cosimo II., succeeded to the throne at the age of nineteen. He was at first assisted inthe government by his mother and a council of regency. He had a good disposition, and the fortune to reign during a period when Europe was at peace and Tuscany blessed with abundant harvests. Of his rule there is little to relate. His chief care was given to the galleys of St Stephen, and he sent them to assist the Druses against the Porte. On one occasion le was involved in a quarrel with France. Concino Concini, the Marshal d'Ancre, being assassinated in 1617, Louis XIII. claimed the right of transferring the property of the murdered man to De Luynes. Cosimo opposed the decision, and, refusing to recognize the confiscation decreed

_ years of a quiet reign marked by no great event.

MEDicgT

He was fond of luxury, spent freely on public festivities, and detested trouble. Tuscany was apparently tranquil and prosperous ; but the decay of which the seeds were sown under Cosimo I. and Ferdinand I. was rapidly spreading, and became before long patent to all and beyond all hope of remedy. The best deed done by Cosimo II, was the protection accorded by him to Galileo Galilei, who

had removed to Padua, and there made some of his grandest

discoveries. The grand-duke recalled him to Florence in 1610, and nominated him court mathematician and philosopher. Cosimo died in February 1621, after twelve Feeling his end draw near, when he was only aged thirty and all his sons were still in their childhood, he hastened to

arrange his family affairs. His mother, Cristina of Lorraine, and his wife, Maddalena of Austria, were nominated

| regents and guardians to his eldest son Ferdinand IL,

a boy of ten, and a council of four appointed, whose functions were regulated by law. Accordingly, after Cosimo's death, the young Ferdinand was sent to Rome and Vienna to complete his education, and the government of Tuscany remained in the hands of two jealous and quarrel-some women. Thus the administration of justice and finance speedily went to ruin. Out of submissiveness to the pope, the regents did not dare to maintain their legitimate right to inherit the duchy of Urbino, and in 1623 sanc- tioned the transfer of that right to the holy see. They conferred exaggerated privileges on the new Tuscan nobility, which became increasingly insolent and worthless. They resumed the practice of trading on their own account, and, without reaping much benefit thereby, did the utmost damage to private enterprise.

In 1627 Ferdinand II., then aged seventeen, returned to Ferdinané

Italy and assumed the reins of government; but, being of a 1. very gentle disposition, he decided on sharing his power with the regents and his brothers, and arranged matters in such wise that each was almost independent of the other. He gained the love of his subjects by his great goodness; and, when Florence and Tuscany were cruelly ravaged by the plague in 1630, he showed admirable courage, and carried out many useful measures. But he was totally incapable of energy as a statesman. When the pope made bitter complaints because the board of health had dared to subject certain monks and priests to the necessary qnarantine, the grand-duke insisted on his officers asking pardon on their knees for having done their duty. On the death in 1631 of the last duke of Urbino, the pope was allowed to seize the duchy without the slightest opposition on the part of Tuscany. As a natural consequence the pretensions of the Roman curia became increasingly exorbitant ; ecclesiastics usurped the functions of the state ; and the ancient laws of the republic, together with the regulations decreed by Cosimo I. as a check upon similar abuses, were allowed to become obsolete. On the extinction of the line of the Gonzagas at Mantua in 1627, war broke out between France on the one

_ side and Spain, Germany, and Savoy on theother. The grand-

by the French tribunals, demanded that Concini's son should |

be allowed to inherit. Hence followed much ill-feeling and mutual reprisals between the two countries, finally brought to an end by the intervention of the duke of Lorraine. Like his predecessors, Cosimo II. studied to promote the prosperity of Leghorn, and he deserves honour for abandon- ing all commerce on his own account. But it was no praise- worthy act to pass a law depriving women of almost all rights of inheritance. By this means many daughters of the nobility were driven into convents against their will. He gave scanty attention to the general affairs of the state.

duke, uncertain of his policy, trimmed his sails according

to events, Fortunately peace was re-established in 1631.

Mantua and Monferrato fell to the duke of Nevers, as France had always desired. But Europe was again in arms for the Thirty Years' War, and Italy was not at peace. Urban VIII. wished to aggrandize his nephews, the Barberini, by wresting Castro and Ronciglione from Odoardo Farnese, duke of Parma and brother-in-law to Ferdinand. Farnese determined to maintain his rights, and marched his army through Tuscany into the territories of the pope, who is greatly alarmed by the attack. Naturally the grand-duke was drawn into the war to defend his own state and his kinsman. His military operations, however, were of the feeblest and often the most laughable character. At

—_> = OO

i

last, by means of the French intervention, peace was made in 1644. But, although the pope was forced to yield, he resigned none of his ecclesiastical pretensions in Tuscany. It was during Ferdinand's reign that the septuagenarian Galileo was obliged to appear before the Inquisition in Rome, which treated him with infamous cruelty. On thie death of this great and unfortunate man, the grand-duke wished to erect a monument to him,

but was withheld by fear of the opposition of the clergy. The dynasty as well as the country now seemed on the brink of decay. Two of the grand-duke's brothers had already died childless, and Ippolito, the sole survivor, was a cardinal. Accordingly the only remaining heir was Cosimo III., married to a wife who held him in detestation, and did her best to have her marriage annulled or at least obtain a separation.

Like nearly all his 'predecessors, Ferdinand II. gave

the throne. His eldest son Ferdinand died childless in 1713. The pleasure-loving Giovan Gastone was married to Anna Maria of Saxe-Lauenburg, widow of a German prince, a wealthy coarse woman wholly immersed in domestic occupations, and who seemed little likely to give birth to any children. After living with her for some time in a Bohemian village, Giovan Gastone yielded to his dislike to his wife and her country, withdrew to France, and ruined his health by hisexcesses., After a brief return to Bohemia he finally separated from his wife, by whom he had no family. Thus the dynasty was doomed to extinction. _ Cosimo had a passing idea of reconstituting the Florentine _ republic, but, this design being discountenanced by the Euro-

pean powers, he determined to transfer the succession, after

_ the death of Giovan Gastone, to his sister Anna Maria Louisa,

liberal patronage to science and letters, greatly aided |

therein by his brother Leopold, who had been trained by Galileo Galilei, and who joined with men of learning in founding the celebrated academy Del Cimento, of which he was named president. 'This academy took for its motto

who in fact survived him. For this purpose he proposed to annul the patent of Charles V., but the powers objected to

_ this arrangement also, and by the treaty of 1718 the quad- -ruple alliance of Germany, France, England, and Holland

“Spanish Infante Don Carlos.

the words Provando e riprovando, and followed the experi-

imental method of Galileo. Formed in 1657, it was dissolved in 1667 in consequence of the jealousies and dissensions

of its members, but during its brief existence won renown |

by the number and importance of its works.

Cosimo IIT. succeeded his father in 1670. He was weak, vain, bigoted, and hypocritical. In 1661 he had espoused Louise d’Orléans, niece of Louis XIV., who, being enamoured of Duke Charles of Lorraine, was very reluctant to come to Italy, and speedily detested both her husband and his country, of which she refused to learn the language. She had two sons and one daughter, but after the birth of her third child, Giovan Gastone, her hatred for her husband increased almost to madness. She first withdrew to Poggio a Caiano, and then, being unable to get her marriage annulled, returned to France, where, although supposed to live in conventual seclusion, she passed the greater part of lier time as a welcome visitor at court. Even her testamentary dispositions attested the violence of her dislike to her husband.

Cosimo’s hypocritical zeal for religion compelled his subjects to multiply services and processions, that greatly infringed upon their working hours. He wasted enormous sums in pensioning converts—even those from other countries—and in giving rich endowments to sanctuaries. Meanwhile funds often failed for the payment of Govern- ment clerks and soldiers. His court was composed of bigots and parasites; he ransacked the world for dainties for his table, adorned his palace with costly foreign hangings, had foreign servants, and filled his gardens with exotic plants. He purchased from the emperor the title of “ Highness” in order to be the equal of the duke of Savoy. He remained neutral during the Franco-Spanish war, and submitted to every humiliation and requisition exacted by theemperor. He had vague

notions of promoting agricul- ture, but accomplished no results. At one time he caused

decided that Parma and Tuscany should descend to the The grand-duke made energetic but fruitless protests.

Cosimo III. had passed his eightieth year at the time of his decease in October 1723, and was succeeded by his son Giovan Gastone, then aged fifty-three. The new sovereign was in bad health, worn out by dissipation, and had neither ambition nor aptitude for rule. His throne

_ was already at the disposal of foreign powers, and his only

thought on ascending it was to regain strength enough to pass the remainder of his days in enjoyment. He dismissed the spies, parasites, and bigots that had formed his father's court, abolished the pensions given to converts, suppressed several taxes, and prohibited the organized espionage estab- lished in the family circle. He wished to live and let live, and liked the people to be amused. Everything in fact

_bore a freer and gayer aspect under his reign, and the _ Tuscans seemed to feel renewed attachment for the dynasty

as the moment of its extinction drew near. But the grand- duke was too feeble and incapable to accomplish any real improvement. Surrounded by gay and dissipated young men, he entrusted all the cares of government to a certain Giuliano Dami, who drove a profitable trade by the sale of offices and privileges. In this way all things were in the hands of corrupt individuals ; while the grand-duke, com- pelled to pass the greater part of his time in bed, vainly sought diversion in the company of buffoons, and was only tormented by perceiving that all the world disposed of his throne without even asking his advice. And when, after prolonged opposition, he had resigned himself to accept Don Carlos as his successor, the latter led a Spanish

army to the conquest of Naples, an event afterwards lead-

eight hundred families to be brought over from the Morea |

for the cultivation of the Maremme, where all of them died of fever. But when, after the revocation of the edict of Nantes, French Huguenots offered to apply their labour and capital to the same purpose, the grand-duke's religious scruples refused them refuge. So ruin fell upon Tuscany. Crime and misery increased, and the poor, who only asked for work, were given alms and sent oftener to church. This period witnessed the rise of many charitable institutions of a religious character under the patronage of the grand duke, as for instance the congregation of San Giovanni Battista. But these could not remedy the general decay. Cosimo's dominant anxiety regarded the succession to

ing to the peace of 1735, by which the Tuscan succession

' was transferred to Francesco IT., duke of Lorraine, and _husband of Maria Theresa. Giovan Gastone was finally | obliged to submit even to this. Spain withdrew her garrisons from Tuscany, and Austrian soldiers took their _ place and swore fealty to the grand-duke on the 5th of February 1737. He expired on the 9th July of the same year. Such was the end of the younger branch of the Medici, which had found Tuscany a prosperous country, where art, letters, commerce, industry, and agriculture flourished, and left her poor and decayed in all ways, drained by taxation, and oppressed by laws contrary to every principle of sound economy, downtrodden by thie clergy, and burdened by a weak and vicious aristocracy.

Capponi, Storia della Repubbliea di Firenze, Florence, 1875; Rostoe, Life of Lorenzo dei Medici, and Life of Leo X.; Alfred von Reaumont, Lorenzo dei Medici, il Magnifieo, Leipsic, 1874 ; Galluzzi, Storia del Grandueato di Toseana sotto il governo di Casa Medici, 5 vols., Florenee, 1787; A. von Reaumont, Gesehichte Toscanas seit | d. Ende d. florent. Freistaates, 2 vols., Gotha, 1876. (Ee)

ny. 105

Giovan Gastone.

ME D—MED

GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE MEDICT.

Giovanni d'Averardo, known as Giovanni di Bicci, 1360-1429 =Piccarda Bueri.

Lorenzo, 1395-1440 =Ginevra Cavaleanti.

Cosimo the Elder, 1389-1464=Contessina de' Bardi.

| Giovanni, 1424-1463 =Ginevra degli Alessandri.

'| Piero, 1416-1469 =Lucrezia Tornabuoni, f 1482.

| Maria (nat.)

| Pier Francesco, + 1467 =Laudomia Acciainoli.

Lorenzo il Giuliano, Bianea Nannina | Magnifico, 1453-1478. =Guglielmo =Bernardo =Lionetto Giovanni, 1467-1498 Lorenzo, 1449-1492 dei Pazzi, Rueellai. de' Rossi. =Caterina Sforza Riario, _ eae =Clarice Orsini, Giulio (Clement t ie = Semiramide Appiani.

1488. 711.), 1478- ,

t | Val) 7S Giovanni delle Bande Nere, Pier Francesco, ¢ 1525 ies Be 1498-1526 — =Maria Soderini. Pietro. Giovanni Giuliano, Luerezia Maddaiena Contessina wie ty — 1471-1503 (Leo X.), duke of =Giacomo =Franeeschetto —Piero ' —— 1475-1521, A ened Salviati. Cybo. ve Bo be ots Laudomia Maddalena Giuliano, # 1520. =Philiberta Niceold ee ee ee MM of Savoy. Ridolf, 2. Camilla Martelli, t8 Strozzi. Strozzi, Beziers, | . | | eardinal. ge Lorenzo, Clarice, Ippolito | PO duke of t 1528 {nat.), : Urbino. =Filippo . ardinal, | i. | l 1492-1519 Strozzi. 1511-1535, FRANCESCO, 22 © FERDINAND I., Pietro, Isabella, © Virginia, =Madcleine Fig BE a = oo 1541-1587 BS = 1549-1609 1554-1604 1542-1576 3 =Cesare de la Tour j =1.Joanna-"2 = =Cristinaof =Eleonora =Paolo =8 d'Este, d'Auvergne, Giovanni Maria Elena of Austria, +5 7, Lorraine, of Toledo, Giordano &B duke of f 1519. Salviati, =Giovanni =Jacopo Y. $i5e> BSN + 1637. t 1576. Orsini. ™ Modena. cardinal. delle Bande Appiani, 2,Biancea 2 & 2 Nere.

Cappello, © 7 L | t 1587. [| | | Alessandro Caterina. al ib, Cosmo II.. A e Caterina= Claudia, (nat.), 1519-1589 Innocenzo Cybo lLorenzoCybo Caterina Cybo, Maria, 1590-1621. __= = i Ferdinand =1. Federigo ¢ 1537. =Henry li.. Cardinal, =Ricciarda duchess of +1642 _ =Maria oS. 28 = 5 Gonzaga, — della Rovere, king of Malaspina, Camerino. =Henry{V., Maddalena 2S =—=9 5 duke of hereditary France. princess of king of of Austria, -6 $2 #5 Mantua. prince of Massa, France. + 1631. ~ . $e Urbino; = 2. Leopold ef ¥ = | | 'yro FERDINAND II., Franeeseo, Mattia, ey ae Te i, es era ™ | 1610-1670 + 1634, + 1667. cardinal, Carlo, =Ferdinand =Odoardo Vittoria =Vittoria della + 1675. cardinal, of Austrian Farnese, della Rovere, Rovere, f 1694. t 1663. Tyrol. duke of I Parma.

| Francesco Maria, 1660-1711 (cardinal until 1709) =Eleonora Gonzaga.

| CostMo III., 1642-1723 Marguerite Louise of Orleans, ¢ 1721.

| _ Ferdinand, 1663-1713 =YViolante of Bavaria, + 1731.

| Anna Maria Luisa, 1667-1743 =Joln William of the Palatinate.

GIOVAN GASTONE, 1671-1737 = Anna Maria of Saxe-Laucnburg, ¢ 1741.

MEDICINE PART L—SYNOPTICAL VIEW OF MEDICINE.

EDICINE, the subject-matter of one of the learned

professions, includes, as it now stands, a wide range | of scientific knowledge and practical skill, The history of | its growth from small beginnings in Greece is traced in | the second section of the present article; it remains here to give a synoptical view of medicine, including its scientific or philosophical position, its subdivisions or ramifications as an art aud discipline, and its relations to the body politic.

Setentyfie Position of Medicine.—The science of medicine is the theory of diseases and of remedies. While the notion of disease is necessarily or inevitably correlated with the notion of health, there is no necessary and invari- able relation, but, on the other hand, a merely conventional | association, between a disease and a remedy. 'That part of | the science of

medicine which corresponds to the theory of | remedies is not therefore in a position scientifically inferior to the theory of diseases; for each article of the materia medica—apart from a few inert substances—has a certain effect on the organism in health and in disease, which is ascertainable with scientific precision. Those properties and actions of drugs are the subject of pharmacology and toxicology; the circumstances under which the several articles of the materia medica become remedial are the

subject of therapeutics, and therapeutics is dependent for its scientific position upon the completeness of the theory of diseases, or pathology.

Disease is the correlative of health, and the word is not capable of a more penetrating definition. From the time of Galen, however, it has been usual to speak of the life of the body either as proceeding in accordance with nature («ara dvoww, secundum naturam) or as overstepping the bounds of nature (rapa picw, preter naturam). Taking disease to be a deflexion from the line of health, the first requisite of medicine is an extensive and intimate acquaintance with the norm of the body. The normal condition of the body is capable of being determined without ambiguity ; it 15 the absence from its structures and functions of every disease hitherto known. The structure and functions of the body form the subject of anatomy and physiology.

Physiology is, strictly speaking, the science of that which is xara pvow, or secundum naturam, and it 1s usual to say that the theory of diseases is based upon physiology. – But, although all that was implied in the Hippocratic term dicts (natura) may be claimed as the subject-matter of physiology, yet, in the ordinary connotation of the term, physiology divides the empire with anatomy. To physio- logy the functiors of the body are usually assigned, and to

anatomy its form and structure. But, as a matter of fact, the structures and functions of the organism are not separable ; structure is correlated to function, whether active, dormant, or extinguished, and in like manner function is the twin notion of structure. In the ultimate analysis peither term means anything without the other, and both together mean life. It is owing mostly to its name that physiology is supposed to have a preponderant

interest for the theory of disease; the word anatomy is not well adapted to carry its own half of the structure- and-function dualism. Both in the historical development and in the logical connotation, anatomy is as much

associated with the living and moving body as physiology |

itself; but its etymology has always been against it, and it has become more and more difticult to retain for anatomy anything beyond the technicalities of the dissecting-room. The subject of general anatomy has for the most part dis-

appeared from modern text-books, its place being taken |

by histology, which deals with the minute structure of

the simple tissues, and, in a wider acceptation, with the |

finer anatomy of all the organs aud parts of the body. Histology, like anatomy, has had a somewhat technical or descriptive réle assigned to it; and it is now mainly under physiology that the processes, activities, or living mechanisms of the body fall to be considered. The deve-

the plague, sweating sickness, cholera, yellow fever, typhus fever, relapsing fever, typhoid fever, diphtheria, small-pox, measles, scarlet fever, influenza, dengue. Such also are the cancers, consuinptions, leprosies, and other loathsome infections. This enormous residue is more than the half of disease, and the definition of disease or the scheme of pathology is brought to a test in finding room within its scientific categories for snch maladies as those. The popular imagination in all countries has per- sonified them; medicine in its metaphysical period has regarded them as entities or things in themselves; and it remains to be seen in what way or to what extent medicine in its scientific period will bring them within the category' of perturbations of the physiological life.

In considering, for a moment, where to place cancer in the pathological scheme, we shall arrive at a point of view from which the relation of the acute and chronic infections (or contagions) to diseases of the physiological order may be contemplated at least provisionally. Taking cancers, in a generic sense, to mean tumours that have acquired or are possessed of malignancy, we find that such tumours have many points in common with simple tumours,—that they have grown out of the tissues of particular organs or parts under particular (functional) circumstances, and that

_ they may, in general terms, be traced back to that point at

lopment of the body as a whole, and of its several tissues | and organs, forms the subject of embryology; many of

the physiological types of diseased processes, especially the cellular, are discoverable in the embryological period. For the period of development, no arbitrary separation has been attempted hitherto between structure and function, and embryology is, in theory at least, as much physiolo- gical as anatomical. The development of function is a legitimate and even desirable subdject of scientific study, and a more distinctive place is probably awaiting it in the future; but so indissoluble does the union of structure and function present itself in the period of genesis and growth that the function has hardly as yet come to be abstracted fron the structure, or the structure from the function,

The theory of disease rests, therefore, upon physiology, with its more or less technical adjuncts. Pathology is all

(=)

that physiology is, with the engrossing and difficult element

of perturbation, deflexion, or shortcoming added. By | | biological phenomena altogether analogous to the semi-

virtue of this element of deviation from the line of health, pathology is a discipline apart, with an abundant literature

of its own, and with separate academical institutes and |

chairs. But pathology is also a discipline apart by virtue of concepts proper to itself.

perturbations or failings of function, which may be intri- cate or difficult to analyse, but are still well within sight

of the line of health. Such are the common diseases of |

the orgaus and systems—the inflammations, catarrhs,

degenerations, hypertrophies, and functional derangements | | ens reale subsistens in corpore, appears to satisfy the require-

Without lesion of the respiratory, circulatory, nervous, genito-urinary, locomotor, and cutaneous systems, Con- stitutional or general diseases belong also to the province of perturbations from the physiological course, —such diseases as chlorosis, leukemia, diabetes, gout, rheumatism, scurvy, rickets, Addison's disease, exophthalmic goitre, and the febrile state. Again, congenital deficiencies or malformations, non-cancerous tumours, and the repairing of injuries exemplify no other laws than those of develop- nent and growth.

But with those examples the catalogue of physiological diseases is exhausted. We are left with a vast residue of diseases, which have always bulked largely in the popular mind, and have carried the most terrible associations with them. Such are the pestilences or diseases of peoples :—

A great part of the theory | of disease deals with changes or defects of structure and |

which they left the line of health (see ParHotocy). The tracing back of tumours along the physiological track is often difficult and laborious; but there is no tumour of the

| body whose origins are not at length discoverable within

the limits of physiological action. That which makes any tumour a cancer is something over and beyond; it is a- remarkable acquired property of reproducing its structure in manifold copies, or of infecting the organism of which it is itself a part. The tumour thus becomes a semi-independent power within the body; it may be said, in a political figure, to have acquired autonomy, or to have become imperium tn imperio. A due consideration of such a phenomenon as the infectiveness or cancerousness of some tumours will satisfy one that there are concepts in pathology which carry the investigator entirely beyond physiological bounds or out of sight of the line of health, which bring him face to face with the notion of a disease as a thing in itself, and which thus constitute a peculiar subject-matter. 'There is nothing that we know among

independence which an integral part of the body, or con- dition of the body, manifests towards the organism as a whole, and that, too, strictly in respect of its acquired devious or rebellious habit. The familiar definition of disease, morbus est vita preter naturam, which embodies the notion of divergence from the line of health, makes no provision for an acquired autonomy of a morbid state ; and that definition has to be supplemented by another, which will recognize the possibility of a disease becoming a thing in itself. The old definition of Van Helmont, morbus est

ment; but that definition, although it grew out of the phenomena of disease as observed in fevers, was made tou general, and has now associations that are too exclusively ontological and metaphysical. The supplementary definition should be as far as possible in the terms of the principal definition ; and we shall provide best in the pathological scheme for such a disease as cancer if, in addition to the formula morbus est vita preter naturam, we construct a secondary formula, morbus est wvwm in vivo.

The notion of autonomy acquired by,a morbid state implies, naturally, a pre-autonomous stage of the disease, which had been a mere perturbation of the norm of the body, capable of being measured by the physiological standard. The autonomous stage and the pre-autonomous

stage, which may be demonstrated, in individual cases, for cancers, are a philosophical necessity for all other in- fective diseases that are marked by morphological features,

or by structural characters rooted in and growing out of |

the proper textures of the body. Thus the peculiar skin eruption of small-pox, which is communicable from person to person, along with a distinctive course of fever, must have had pre-autonomous antecedents (not altogether his- torically vague) in certain casual conditions of the skin and associated constitutional disturbance, which had re- curred and become inveterate, and had so attained to a degree of individuality or a point of autonomy at which they began to be propagated as an organic unit. Again, a second group of infections, exemplified by glanders, bovine tubercle, and syphilis, are rooted in deeper textural pro- cesses, which must have been at one time (and may still be) set up by the casual operation of ordinary causes, and at length became the occasion of infective mimicry. It is not so easy to picture (and it is not difficult, with a modern dominant school, to ignore) the casual morbid conditions or ordinary physiological perturbations out of which powerful infections like cholera, typhoid fever, or yellow fever may have arisen; but if the rise and consoli-

dation of their autonomy be a subtle or even untraceable | _ logy or toxicology.

history, yet there are diseases, such as dysentery and

erysipelas, which are apt to occur both as casual or |

spontaneous conditions and as specific infections side by side. Ophthalmia is an example of a purulent catarrh

which is constantly arising de novo in Egypt from local | | general sense the investigation of the physiological action

causes in a non-infective manner, and yet has become, on at least one memorable occasion, a powerful and wide- spread infection for British troops returning from that country and for the home garrisons for many

years subse- quently. Infective pneumonia in cattle, and more rarely in man, is an analogous case. In such an episode we observe the actual rise of the disease-autonomy. Again, all the in- fective diseases have degrees of intensity, at one extreme of which there must occur the vanishing point of their in- fective property ; and those gradations of infectiveness are

nowhere more noticeable than in the relation of cholera |

to choleraic diarrhoea. Further, the remarkable group of climatic fevers are not communicable from person to person (see MALARIA); in that respect, and for the reason that the liability of the patient is anything but exhausted by one attack, they are examples of fevers without autonomy. There is not one of the infections that may not be profit- ably studied from the point of view of its autonomy, and of its more or less obscure pre-autonomous stage. That is a point of view from which even the pestilences and other specific diseases may be regarded as coming within the physiological categories. The large residue of diseases, which are more than perturbations of the physiological life, may still be joined by natural descent to the class of simple perturbations, if we can show for them how their autonomy was acquired, or what was their origin as disease- species.

There is an established place in the history of medicine, and there ought therefore to be room in the definition of disease, for epidemic outbreaks of purely psychical diseased states, such as the dancing madness (Z'anzwuth), and the boys' crusades; the epidemic diffusion of such morbid states is best approached from the point of view of an acquired autonomy (fixed idea) and an infective mimicry.

The physiological definition of disease, morbus est vita preter naturam, affords no place for parasitic diseases. However, the supplementary formula that has been pro- posed to meet the case of diseases existing autonomously in the body, morbus est vivum in vivo, will meet the case of parasitic diseases also. According to many patho- logists of the present generation, the whole class of pesti-

MEDICINE

[SYNOPTICAL VIEW,

lences, fevers, and specific infectious generally are caused by certain species of minute parasites invading the body ; according to one form of that hypothesis the distinctive characters or specific marks (morphological and other) vf those diseases are neither more nor less than the appropriate effects wrought upon the textures and fluids of the body by the respective species of parasites. In this way the great group of infective diseases, which are apt to be the stumbling-block of a scientific definition and logical scheme of disease, are easily disposed of by placing them beside the otherwise insignificant group of parasitic diseases. Whether all or any of those diseases

are due in a sense to the invasion of parasites, or wholl | caused by parasites, are questions that naturally fall to be

settled by a careful sifting of a mass of evidence which

_has already proved to be peculiarly rich in opportunities | for mistake.

It may be expected that the facts of infective parasitism and the facts of acquired disease-autonomy will in the end find their place in a common theory of specific diseases, which might be expressed in terms of the physio-logical formula morbus est vita preter naturam with the rider morbus est vivum in vivo.

The theory of remedies, which forms the second division of the science of medicine, is chiefly based upon pharmaco- If pharmacology be considered as not co-extensive with toxicology, it will be taken to be in great part pharmacographia, or the systematic description of articles of the materia medica—their source, preparation, physical properties, and the like. Toxicology is in its

of drugs, a science which is largely dependent upon experi- ments on the lower animals; in a more technical sense toxicology relates to the effects of poisons and the art of detecting them (see Poisons). The physiological action of drugs is the key to their therapeutical action. Thera- peutics has been defined as "the discovery of the means by which a system of forces competent to eliminate any given perturbation may be introduced into the economy." The adaptation of remedies to diseases is, however, greatly

wanting in precision, and continues to be in large part empirical and traditional. It may be objected to the above definition that all diseases are nut reducible to the category of "perturbations," and that there is a certain scientific justification for the doctrine of specifics. Besides the articles of the materia medica proper, agencies such

_as electricity, baths, sea-voyages, and changes of climate

generally, enter into the consideration of therapeutics, and two of those form the subject of special departments, viz., electro-therapeutics and hydropathy. Regimen and diet are also important factors in the treatment of disease ; according to a contention of Hippocrates, it was in the dietetic needs of mankind that the medical art had its origin.

Subdivisions of Medicine as an Art and Discipline.~~—The medical art (avs medendi) breaks away at once from the unity of the theory of disease. While there is but one body of pathological doctrine for either sex, for every period of life, and for every regiun and part of the organism, the practical art divides itself into departments and sub~~ . departments. The most fundamental division is into internal and external medicine, or into medicine proper and surgery. 'The treatment of wounds, injuries, and deformities, with operative interference in general, is the special department of surgical practice (the corresponding parts of pathology, including inflammation, repair, and removable tumours, are sometimes grouped together as surgical pathology) ; and where the work of the profession is highly subdivided, surgery becomes the exclusive pro- vince of the surgeon, while internal medicine remains to the physician. A third great department of practice 1s

formed by obstetric medicine or midwifery, and with obstetrics there is usually associated gynecology, or the diseases peculiar to women. Diseases of children are the subject of a voluminous separate literature. Dermatology (diseases of the skin) is an important province of practice which, like the diseases of women and children, pertains as much to medicine as to surgery. The greatest of the so- called special departments of practice is ophthalmology (diseases and injuries of the eye). Laryngology is a

department that owes its existence mainly to the invention of the laryngoscope, its special province being the treatment of the inflammations (ordinary and specific), tumours, and the like, to which the larynx is liable in common with other parts. Diseases of the ear (otology) form even a more restricted department of practice, owing to the comparative inaccessibility of the chief part of the organ of hearing. The congenital condition of deaf-mutism may or may not be taken as falling within the province of the last-mentioned subdivision. Dentistry or odontology is extremely limited in the range of its subject-matter; but it affords great opportunities for refinements of technical skill, and it is given up to a distinct branch of the profession.

The care of the weak-minded and the insane (psycho- logical medicine) is an integral part of medical practice, inasmuch as it is concerned with diseases of the nervous system and with numerous correlated states of other organs ; but it occupies a unique place by reason of the engrossing interest of the subjective phenomena. Habitual drunkenness is also a subject of special treatment.

A state of war, actual or contingent, gives occasion to special developments of medical and surgical practice (military hygiene and military surgery). Wounds caused by projectiles, sabres, &e., are the special subject of naval and military surgery; while under the head of

military hygiene we may include the general subject of |

ambulances, the sanitary arrangements of camps, and the various forms of epidemic camp sickness.

The administration of the civil and criminal law involves frequent relations with medicine, and the professional subjects most likely to arise in that connexion, together with a summary of causes célébres, are formed into the department of medical jurisprudence. It is the practice in Great Britain to call independent medical evidence on both sides of a cause, whether the proceedings be civil or criminal.

The system of life assurance is based upon the c0-opera- tion of the medical profession. Heredity, constitution, and

diathesis are here the chief subjects of general cousidera- |

tion, while prognosis is the skilled faculty specially called into play.

Relations of Medicine to the Body Politic.—The statutes of the United Kingdom which have direct relation to medicine are (1) those relating to the public health ; (2) those relating to lunacy (and habitual drunkenness) ; (3) those relating to the status of the medical profession, to dentists, aud to pharmaceutical chemists ; (4) those relating to restrictions on the " practice" of anatomy and physiology. There are, besides, several statutes in which medicine is concerned indirectly,—such as the Poor Laws, the Prisons Acts, the Shipping Acts, the Registration of Births and Deaths Act, the Sale of Food and Drugs Act, the Sale of Poisons Act, the Factory and Workshops Act, the Artisans' Dwellings (Metropolitan) Act, the Rivers Pollution Pre- vention Act, the Contagious Diseases (Animals) Act (1878), and the Public Health (Water) Act.

1. Most of the statutes relating to the public health in England and Wales were consolidated by an Act of 1875, the Acts relating to the metropolis being excepted; there are separate statutes of about the same period for Ireland and Scotland. The system of administration is by local

sanitary authorities, in correspondence with the local govert- ment boards in London and Dublin and the board of supervision in Edinburgh. The board in London has a medical department, consisting of a chief medical officer, assistant medical officer, and inspectors, while the Dublin and Edinburgh boards are professionally advised on a some- what different system. The sanitary authorities throughout the United Kingdom are divided into rural, urban, port, and metropolitan (sanitary and nuisance); they are formed out of pre-existing bodies, either the corporations of cities and towns, the improvement commissioners, or the local authorities. A medical officer of health is attached to most of the several sanitary authorities, or to the combined sanitary authorities of a large district ; his duties include making reports on the death-rate and the causes of mortality, the

denunciation of nuisances and unwholesome dwellings, workshops, &c., inquiries into the local causes or favouring circumstances of epidemic outbreaks of disease, measures to prevent the spread of contagion (by disinfec- tion, isolation, and otherwise), and other more occasional duties arising under a variety of statutes. Each sanitary authority is required by law to appoint an inspector of nuisances, who practically carries out the instructions of the medical officer when there is one.

The Vaccination Acts (consolidated 1871) arean import- ant part of the public health law of the kingdom; they are administered by the local government board, for the most part through the agency of the medical profession at large, but in some populous parislies also by means of public vaccination stations. Prosecutions under the Acts are insti- tuted by the parochial authorities. The practice formerly (and not unsuccessfully) resorted to of inoculating with the small-pox has been made a criminal offence ; but there is still much uncertainty as to the theory of vaccination, and, in particular, as to the relation of vaccinia to variola.

Other statutes which were not consolidated in the Public Health Act of 1875 are the Burials Act, the Contagious Diseases Act, and the Quarantine Act. The first of these is administered by a department of the home office, with a medical inspector. The second (1866 and 1869) relates, under a too general title, to the regulation of prostitution in certain garrison towns, the surgeons under the act being appointed by the board of admiralty or the secretary of state for war, and the administration otherwise carried out by the police.

The quarantine laws stand in the somewhat anomalous

| position of statutes which it is not thought desirable to

repeal, while yet they are stripped bare of all their executive machinery. The Quarantine Act can be set in motion, as occasion arises, by an order of council ; not only, however, is there no official medical advice at the disposal of the privy

council, upon which action under the act might be taken,

but there is not even the framework remaining (except the

_ ghost of a quarantine station on the Motherbank between

Portsmouth and the Isle of Wight) of the once considerable quarantine establishment, by which the provisions of the Act might be enforced. On the other hand,' port sanitary authorities enjoy certain limited powers under the Public Health Acts of isolating vessels arriving with contagious

sickness on board. A quarantine at British ports has not

been put in force for many years, opinions being divided

_as to the abstract efficacy and suitableness of quarantine

measures to prevent the importation and diffusion of plague, cholera, or yellow fever (see QUARANTINE). Numerous instances having occurred of the extensive diffusion of scarlet fever, typhoid fever, and diphtheria by means of milk, the privy council has issued an order, under the Contagious Diseases (Animals) Act of 1878, called the Dairies, Milkshops, and Cowsheds Order, with the object of enforcing extreme cleanliness in the premises and appur-

798

tenances of the milk trade, and particularly of guarding against the well-known liability of milk to take up effluvia existing or arising near it. The order of council having remained inoperative, it is proposed to deal with the inatter by a new Act of Parliament, to be administered by the local government board. While cows' milk has thus

MEDICiIinNGA

[SYNOPTICAL VIEW,

*Internat. Medical Congress, London, 1880, vol. iv., sect. ** Public*

- *Health."*

Public Health Law of other Cowntries.—In France there ig al

_ council of health for each district, composed of medical prae- _ titioners, pharmacists, engineers, and other experts, its function

been recognized by the sanitary law as a carrier of certain | of the human contagia, the milk of diseased cows, and | inore especially of tuberculous cows, continues to be sold |

with impunity, the alleged communication of tubercular

disease from the cow to man beiug difficult to prove to |

the satisfaction of the legislature. supervision of the slaughter-houses is thought by many to be a serious defect in the sanitary law of the country ; and there is no doubt that much flesh of diseased animals (especially the tuberculous) is sold merely as inferior meat.

Public Health Law of the United States.—Questions of public health in the United States come under the common law and the statute law. In the larger part of the Union they are subject to the common law only ; in a certain number of the States there is statute law; and there has been since 1879 a national board of health and a quarantine lawestablished by Act of Congress. Generally speaking, the public health procedure of the United States suffers from the want oforganization. Decisionsat common lawrelate chiefly to nuisances, and to the recovery of damages for loss caused by the same. The first attempt at statute law was an Act of 1866 creating a metro-politan sanitary district and board of health for the city of New York ; in 1869 a board of health was created by the State legislature for Massachusetts ; the District of Columbia obtained its board of health in 1870; and other States have followed at intervals, so that there are now at least nineteen State boards of health, New York State and Penusylvania having health boards only for their respec- tive capitals and other individual towns. Besides the municipal boards in those States, there are very few others for towns in the Union,‘and still fewer for counties. The powers and activity of the boards of health are very various; the Massachusetts board has powers amounting to that of a court, while the function of several of the State boards is hardly more than advisory. The sanitary statutcs made by the State legislatures are in some cascs very 1umerous. Wherever questions of quarantine for yellow fever have arisen,

as in Louisiana (New Orleans), Georgia, and Alabama, the State board of health has acquired vigour and has enlisted popular support, in the capitals at least; but in most of the States laissez faire is the ordinary feeling towards the board and its operations. The medical profession in each State is the most powerful force, and the State medical society is not unfrequently in a semi-official connexion with the sanitary board ; on the other hand, it is alleged that the unfortunate sectarian differences in medicine (represented chiefly by homeopathy) have on several occasions prevented the formation of a State board of health, or have tended to paralyse the action of a board already existing. It is a charge also against boards of health, or at least against those in the great political centres, that their efficiency is apt to be impaired by the introduction of irrelevant political considerations in such matters as the making of appointments. The first step towards a national public health law was gained by the Act (approved 3d March 1879) "to prevent the introduction of infectious or con- tagious diseases into the United States, and to cstablish a national

board of health." The board consists of seven members appointed |

by the president and of four officials detached from the public departments of State. Its duties are "to obtain information upon all matters affecting the public health, to advise the several depart- ments of the government, the executives of the scveral States, and

The want of constant |

being purely advisory with respect to nuisances, unwholesome dwellings, schools, food, drugs, epidemics, and the like. The executive power rests with the prefect (to be carried out by the police), and is often not put in motion even when advice ig tendered. In Paris there are two heads of executive, the prefect of the Seine and the prefect of police. The minister of agriculture and commerce is responsible to the chambers. In Prussia there ig a certain amount of bureaucratic care of the public health under the ministry for ecclesiastical, educational, and medical affairs, The minister is advised by a scientific commission (/V issenschaftliche Deputation fiir das Medieinalwesen); and there is a subordinate board for each province, and a medical officer for each district or town (Kreisphysikus, or Stadtphysikus). Numerous offences against the public health are defined in the code, and

penalties fixed (see Eulenberg's work, taken from official sources, Das Medieinal- wesen in Preussen, Berlin, 1874).

2, The lunacy laws have been fully treated of in a special section of the article Insanrry (¢.v.). By an Act of 1879 habitual drunkards have been placed in a position somewhat analogous to that of lunatics, and there are now existing certain licensed asylums for their detention.

3. The Acts relating to the status of the medical profes- sion are known as the Medical Acts. The principal measure, passed in 1858, created a body of twenty-four, called the general council of medical education and registration ; by a subsequent Act the council received a charter of incor- poration, so that it might draw up, and become the publisher and proprietor of, a list and description of ofticinal drugs, which should be called the British Pharmacopeeia, and should supersede previous pharmacopeeias. The principal duty of the medical council is to keep a register of qualified medical practitioners. The preamble of the Act by which the medical register was created asserts the desirability of those in want of medical aid being able to distinguish qualified from unqualified practitioners; and those whose names are on the register are alone presumably qualified. To be aregistered medical practitioner confers a certain positive legal status (right to sue for fees, hold appointments, give certificates, &c.); but there is nothing in the English law to prevent any person whomsoever from practising medicine and taking fees, provided he does not assume misleading titles. Those who are etitled (on pay- ment of five pounds) to have their names inserted in the medical register are graduates in medicine or surgery of the universities of the United Kingdom, licentiates, members, or fellows of the Royal Colleges of Physicians or Surgeons in London, Dublin, and Edinburgh, licentiates or

fellows of the Faculty of Physicians and Surgeons of

the commissioners of the District of Columbia, on all questions sub- | mitted to them, or whenever, in the opinion of the board, such advice |

may tend to the preservation and improvement of the public health."

Quarantine was to be a special object of the board's attention, |

especially the cstablishment, if possible, of a federal quarantine

system which would preserve the legitimate commercial interests of |

the several States and their seaports. A quarantine law passed in

1879 provides that all vessels coming from any foreign port where |

contagious or infectious diseases exist shall obtain a bill of health from the consular officer of the United States at the port of sailing. One of the principal functions of the national board of health hitherto has been to instituto scientific inquiries into the nature and causation of diseases of national importance, such as malarial fever. Among the acknowledged desiderata in the national sanitary law of the United States are a uniform carrying out of the practice of vaccina- tion—there is no vaccination law in certain States, and in others it is imperfectly applied—and a uniform system of registration of births and deaths. Sce Bowditch, Public Hygiene in America, together with a Digest of American Sanitary Law (by Pickering), Boston, 1877; Billings, introduction to Hygienc and Public Health, edited by Buck (Eng. ed., London), and in the Transactions of the

Glasgow, and licentiates of the Apothecaries' Halls of London and Dublin. The council consists of the repre- sentatives of those bodies, of six crown nominees, and the president. The medical council possesses certain judicial and executive powers over tle names on its register ; if, after due inquiry, a registered practitioner

be judged by the medical council to have been guilty of

infamous conduct in any professional respect, the medical council may, if they see fit, direct their registrar to erase the practitioner's name from the register. The medical council keeps also a register (unpublished) of medical students ; whoever has passed a recognized examination 1n arts, and las forwarded a certificate signed by a teacher of medicine that he has bona jide begun the study of niedicine, is entitled to have his name entered in the register of students of medicine, with the date of his com- mencement. The object of the students' register is merely to provide a common and

convenient record of the date of commencement of medical study, and, by implication, of the fact that the examination in arts has been passed.

The medical council owes its title of a "council of educa-

tion" to certain powers possessed by it of visiting the examinations of the universities and corporations, and certain ill-defined powers of visiting the medical schools. The council may, if they see fit, report to the privy council any deficiencies that they may have discovered in the teaching or examining, and the privy council may proceed to further steps. But, beyond publishing the reports of ineir visitations, the medical council do not appear to have had occasion to put the machinery in foree. The state has not otherwise interfered to prescribe the subject- matter or the minimum standard of medical education, although there has been at least one unsuccessful attempt by the Government of the day to establish a uniform minimum. By an Act of 1876 parliament has interposed to affirm the principle that women are entitled to become registered practitioners of medicine.

Under the Dentists' Act of 1878 the profession of dentistry acquired a legal status corresponding to that of the medical profession, the general inedical council having charge of its register also.

Pharmaceutical chemists are now licensed under an Act passed in 1876; since that date licences are granted only to those who pass either the minor or the major examina- tion of the Pharmaceutical Society of Great Britain, a Pharmacy Act for Ireland (1876) having corresponding provisions.

The Medicat Profession in other Countries.—In the United

States there are usually no restrictions upon the practice of

medicine, and in only a few of the States has the medical profession any legal standing. The ordinary medical title is that of doctor of medicinc, and that degree is conferred by a large number of institn- tions after a curriculum of study that varies much in length, and after examinations that

are equally various as tests of proficiency. In France the medical profession is divided into two grades: those in the higher gradc are all doctors of medicine of the faculties of Paris, Lille, Nancy, Bordeaux, Lyons, or Montpellier; those in the

lower grade are ofieiers de santé. In Germany the right to practise is conferred by a state licence granted on passing the staats-examen: the examination, which is almost entirely oral and practical, may be passed in stages at any one of the universities in the empire, the pro- fessors of anatomy, physiology, and pathological anatomy being practically ex ofieto examiners, while the other examiners are very frequently also professors in the medical faculty. The staats-examen is usually passed before the candidate seeks the degree of doctor of | medicine; that degree is almost always taken by those who pass the examination for the state licence, and it is usually conferred after a more or less formal examination of the candidate before the medical faculty, and on the approval of his thesis. In Austria, the right to practise is carried by the degree of doctor of medicine; there is no separate state licence, and no examination except that of the medical faculty of the universities (see Billroth's Lehren and Lernen der medicinisehen Wissenschaften, Berlin, 1876). In most Continental countrics there are penalties directed in effect against practising medicine without the state licence, or the university degree equiva- lent thereto, and in France the law now extends to resident foreign practitioners who have qualified only in their own country, The regulations for the practice of pharmacy in Germany and other Con- tinental countries have long been of a very stringent kind. The training and licensing of midwives is also under state control.

4, Lastly, the state has interposed to restrict the practice" of anatomy and physiology. By the Anatomy Act of 1832 (amended in 1871) licences are required for schools of anatomy, as well as licences for teachers, 'to practise anatomy." Licensed teachers of anatomy are empowered to receive subjects for dissection under certain conditions. 'The Act is administered by the home office, with a staff of four inspectors of anatomy, one for the

| metropolis, one for provincial medical schools in England, and one each for Ireland and Scotland. The Act restricting the practice of physiology is the Vivisection Act of 1876; it is intended for the protection of vertebrate animals liable to be employed alive in physiological experiments, and it resorts to a controlling machinery of licence and inspection similar to that of the Anatomy Act, and under the same

Government department. (@ ¢,)

PART ITI.—HISTORY.

The history of medicine falls naturally under two heads, or might be conceivably written from two different points of view. It might be a history of the medical profession or a history of medical doctrine,—in other words, the history of medicine in its relation to society or in its relation to science. We shall here deal chiefly with the history of medical knowledge, remembering also that the histories of anatomy, of physiology, and of surgery are dealt with in the articles referring to those subjects. But a still more trenchant limitation is necessary to preserve the unity of the subject. Attention can be given to so much only of the history as is directly antecedent to and leads up to the medical science of modern Europe. For this purpose, the history of medicine must start with the earlier period of Greek civilization.

Medicine as Portrayed in the Homeric Poems.—In the |

state of society pictured by Homer it is clear that medicine has already had a history. We find a distinct and organized profession ; we find a system of treatment, especially in regard to injuries, which it must have been the work of long experience to frame; we meet with a nomenclature of parts of the body substantially the same (according to Daremberg) as that employed long afterwards in the writings of Hippocrates ; in short, we find a science and an organization which, however imperfect as compared With those of later times, are yet very far from being in their beginning. The Homeric heroes themselves are represented a3 having considerable skill in surgery, and as able to attend to ordinary wounds and injuries, but there is also a professional class, represented by Machaon and Podalirius, the two sons of

Asclepius, who are treated with great re- spect. It wonld appear, too, from the thiopis of Archinus

(quoted by Welcker and Haeser) that the duties of these two were not precisely the same. Machaon's task was more especially to heal injuries, while Podalirius had received from his father the gift of " recognizing what was not visible to the eye, and tending what could not be healed." In other words, a rough indication is seen of the separation of medicine and surgery. Asclepius appears in Honier as a Thessalian king, not as a god, though in later times divine honours were paid to him. There is no sign in the Homeric poems of the subordination of medicine to religion which is seen in ancient Egypt and India, nor are priests charged, as they were in those countries, with medical functions,—all cir- cumstances which throw grave doubts on the commonly received opinion that medicine derived its origin in all countries from religious observances.

Although the actual organization of medicine among | the Homeric Greeks was thus quite distinct from religion, the worship of Asclepius (or Aisculapius) as the god of 'healing demands some notice. This cult spread very | widely among the Greeks ; it had great civil importance, 'and lasted even into Christian times; but there is no reason to attribute to it any special connexion with the dévelopment of the science or profession of medicine. Sick persons repaired, or were conveyed, to the temples of _ Asclepius in order to be healed, just as in modern times

relief is sought by a devotional pilgrimage or from the _ waters of some sacred spring, and then as now the healing influence was sometimes sought by deputy. The sick "person, or his representative, after ablution, prayer, and | sacrifice, was made to sleep on the hide of the sacrificed animal, or at the feet of the statue of the god, while sacred rites were performed. In his sleep (incubatio, éyxoé-

pois) the appropriate remedy was indicated by a dream.

drugs. The record of the cure was inscribed on the columns or walls of the temple; and it has been thought that in this way was introduced the custom

of " recording cases," and that the physicians of the Hippocratic school thus learnt to accumulate clinical experience. But the priests of Asclepius were not physicians. Although the latter were often called Asclepiads, this was in the first place to indicate their real or supposed descent from Asclepius, and in the second place as a complimentary title. No medical writing of antiquity speaks of the worship of Asclepius in such a way as to imply any connexion with the ordinary art of healing. The two systems appear to have existed side by side, but to have been distinct, and if

they were ever united it must have been before the times |

of which we have any record. The theory of a develop- ment of Greek medicine from the rites of Asclepius, though defended by eminent names, must accordingly be rejected.

Development of Medicine in Greece.—It is only from non- medical writers that anything is known of the development of medicine in Greece before the age of Hippocrates. The elaborate collections made by Daremberg of medical notices in the poets and historians illustrate the relations of the profession to society, but do little to prepare us for the Hippocratic period. Nor is much importance to be attached to the influence of the philosophical sects on

medicine except as regards the school of Pythagoras. That |

philosopher and several of his successors were physicians, but we do not know in what relation they stood to later medical schools. We must therefore hasten onward to the age of Pericles, in which Hippocrates, already called "the Great," was in medicine as complete a representative of the highest efforts of the Greek intellect as were his contemporaries the great philosophers, orators, and trage- dians. The medical art as we now practise it, the character of the physician as we now understand it, both date for us from Hippocrates. The justification of this statement is found in the literary collection of writings known by his name. Of these certainly many are falsely ascribed to the historical Hippocrates of Cos; others are almost as certainly rightly so ascribed ; others again are clearly works of his school, whether from his hand or not. But which are to be regarded as the " genuine works" is still uncertain, and authorities are conflicting.

There are clearly two schools represented in the collection,—that of Cnidus in a small proportion, and that of Cos in far the larger number of the works. The latter was that to which Hippocrates belonged, and where he gave instruction; and accordingly it may be taken that works of this school, when not obviously of a different date, are Hippocratic in doctrine if not in actual authorship.

Lippocratic Medicine.—The first grand characteristic of Hippocratic medicine is the high conception of the duties and status of the physician, shown in the celebrated "Oath of Hippocrates" and elsewhere,—equally free from the mysticism of a priesthood and the vulgar pretensions of a mercenary craft. So matured a professional sentiment may perhaps have been more the growth of time and organization than the work of an individual genius, but certainly corresponds with the character universally attri- buted to Hippocrates himself. The second great quality is the singular artistic skill and balance with which the Hippocratic physician used such materials and tools as he possessed. Here we recognize the true Greek cwdpocivn. But this artistic completeness was closely connected with the third cardinal virtue of Hippocratic medicine,—the clear recognition of disease as being equally with life a process

| spontaneous and normal direction of recovery, by following Moral or dietetic remedies were more often prescribed than |

which alone could the physician succeed. In the fourth place, these views of the "natural history of disease" (in modern language) led to habits of minute observation and accurate interpretation of symptoms, in which the Hippocratic school was unrivalled in antiquity, and has been the model for all succeeding ages, so that even in these days, with our enormous advances in knowledge, the true method of clinical medicine may be said to be the method of Hippocrates.

The actual science of the Hippocratic school was of course very limited. In anatomy and physiology little ad- vance had been made, and so of pathology in the sense of an explanation of morbid processes or knowledge of diseased structures there could be very little. The most valuable intellectual possession was a large mass of recorded observa- tions in individual cases and epidemics of disease. Whether these observations were

systematic or individual, and how they were recorded, are points of which we are quite ignorant, as the theory that the votive tablets in the temples supplied such materials must be abandoned.

Though the Hippocratic medicine was so largely founded on observation, it would be an error to suppose that dogma or theory had no place. The dominating theory of disease was the humoral, which has never since ceased to influence medical thought and practice. According to this celebrated theory, the body contains four humours,—blood, phlegin, yellow bile, and black bile, a right proportion and mixture of which constitute health ; improper proportions or. irre- gular distribution, disease. It is doubtful whether the treatise in which this theory is fully expounded (zrepl dvovcs

_ dv@purov) is as old as Hippocrates himself; but it was re-

garded as a Hippocratic doctrine, and, when taken up and

_ expanded by Galen, its terms not only became the common

property of the profession, but passed into general literature and common language. Another Hippocratic doctrine, the influence of whicli is not even yet exhausted, is that of the healing power of nature. Not that Hippocrates taught, as he was afterwards reproached with teaching, that nature is sufficient for the cure of diseases; for he held strongly the efficacy of art. But he recognized, at least in acute diseases, a natural process which the humours went through,—being first of all crude, then passing through coction or digestion, and finally being expelled by resolu- tion or cris?s through one of the natural channels of the body. The duty of the physician was to foresee these changes, "to assist or not to hinder them," so that "the sick man miglit conquer the disease with the help of the physician." The times at which crises were to be expected were naturally looked for with anxiety ; and it was a cardinal point m the Hippocratic system to foretell them with precision. Hippocrates, influenced as is thought by the Pythagorean doctrines of number, taught that they were to be expected on days fixed by certain numerical rules, in some cases on odd, in others on even numbers,—the celebrated doctrine of "critical days." This false precision can have had no practical value, but may have enforced habits of

minute observation. It follows from what has been said that prognosis, or the art of foretelling the course and event of the disease, was a strong point with the Hip- pocratic physicians. In this they have perhaps never been

excelled. Diagnosis, or recognition of the disease, must /have been necessarily imperfect, when no scientific

nosology, or system of disease, existed, and the knowledge of anatomy was quite inadequate to allow of a precise determination of the seat of disease ; but symptoms were no doubt observed and interpreted skilfully. The pulse is not spoken of in any of the works now attributed

governed by what we should now call natural laws, which | to Hippocrates himself, though it is mentioned in other

could be known by observation, and which indicated the

works of the collection.

LISTORY. |

In the treatment of disease, the Hippocratic school attached great importance to diet, the variations necessary in different diseases being minutely defined. Medicines

were regarded as of secondary importance, but not neglected, |

two hundred and sixty-five drugs being mentioned at different places in the Hippocratic works. Blood-letting was known, but not greatly practised. The highest

importance was attached to applying all remedies at the |

right momeut, and the general principle enforced of making all influences—internal and external—co-operate for the relief of the patient. just mentioned apply more especially to the cure of acute diseases ; but they are the most salient characteristics of the Hippocratic school. In chronic cases diet, exercise, and natural methods were chiefly relied upon.

The school of Cnidus, as distinguished from that of Cos, of which Hippocrates is the representative, appears to have differed in attaching more importance to the differences of special diseases, and to have made more use of drugs. A treatise on the diseases of women, contained in the Hippocratic collection, and of remarkable practical value, is attributed to this school.

The above sketch of Hippocratic medicine will make it less necessary to dwell upon the details relating to sub- sequent medical schools or sects in ancient times. The general conception of the physician's aim and task remained the same, though, as knowledge increased, there was much divergence both in theory and practice,— even Opposing schools were found to be developing some part of the Hippocratic system. Direct opponents or repudiators of the authority of Hippocrates were rare, all generally appealing to his authority. But, insensibly, the least valuable part of the Hippocratic work, the theory, was made permanent ; the most valuable, the practical, neglected.

Post-Hppocratic Medicine.—After Hippocrates the pro- gress of medicine in Greece does not call for any special remark in such a sketch as this, but mention must be made of one great name. Though none of Aristotle's writings are strictly medical, he has by his researches in anatomy and physiology contributed greatly to the progress of medicine.

education which was traditional in such families, and also himself is said to have practised medicine as an amateur. Moreover, his works on natural history doubtless furthered the progress among the Greeks of sciences tributary to medicine, though the only specimens of such works which have come down to us from the Peripatetic school are those of Theophrastus, who may be considered the founder of the scientific study of botany. Among his encyclopedic writings were some on medical subjects, of which fragments only have been preserved. The Peripatetic school may have been more favourable to the development of medicine, as of other departments of natural knowledge, than any other; but there is no evidence that any of the

philosophical schools had important influence on the pro- |

gress of medicine. The fruit of Aristotle's teaching and

example was seen later on in the schools of Alexandria. The century after the death of Hippocrates is a time

almost blank in medical aunals.

decline of Greece after the Macedonian supremacy; but the works of physicians of the period are almost entirely lost, and were so even in the time of Galen. Galen classes them all as of the dogmatic school; but, whatever may have been their characteristics, they are of no import- ance in the history of the science.

Alexandrian School of Medicine—The dispersion of Greek science and intellectual activity through the world by the conquests of Alexander and his successors led to

The principles of treatment |

It should also be remembered that he was | ofan Asclepiad family, and received that partly medical |

It is probable that the | science, like others, shared in the general intellectual |

MEDICINE

| 1t would be useless to repeat them.

801

the formation of more than one learned centre. in which medicine among other sciences was represented. Perga- mum was early distinguished for its medical school; but in this as in other respects its reputation was ultimately effaced by the more brilliant fame of Alexandria. It is here that the real continuation and development of Hippo- cratic medicine can be traced.

In one department the Alexandrian school rapidly sur- passed its Greek original, namely, in the study of anatomy. The dissection of the human body, of which some doubtful traces or hints only are found in Greek times, was assiduously carried out, being favoured or even suggested perhaps by the

Egyptian custom of disembowelling and embalming the bodies of the dead. There is no doubt that the organs were also examined by opéning the bodies of living persons,—criminals condemned to death being given over to the anatomists for this purpose.

Two eminent names stand in the first rank as leaders of the two earliest schools of medicine which arose in Alexandria, Herophilus and Erasistratus.

Herephilus was a Greek of Chalcedon, a pupil of the schools both of Cos and of Cnidus. He was especially noted for his profound researches in anatomy (see vol. i. p. 802), and in the knowledge and practice of medicine he appears to have been equally renowned. He professed himself a close adherent of Hippocrates, and adopted his theory of the humours. He also made extensive use of drugs, and of bleeding. The reputation of Herophilus is attested by the fact that four considerable physicians wrote works about him and his writings, and he is further spoken of with the highest respect by Galen and Celsus. By the general voice of the medical world of antiquity he was placed only second to Hippocrates.

Erasistratus was the contemporary and rival of Herophilus. Little is known of his life, except that he spent some time at the court of Seleucus Nicator at Antioch before coming to Alexandria, and that he culti- vated anatomy late in life, after he had taken up his abode in the latter city. His numerous works are also almost entirely lost, fragments only being preserved by Galen and others. Erasistratus, instead of following Hippocrates as Herophilus did, depreciated him, and seems to have been rather aggressive and independent in his views. He appears to have leaned to mechanical explanations of the symptoms of disease, as was especially the case with inflammation, of which he gave the first rational, though necessarily inadequate, theory.

The two schools composed of the followers of Herophilus and Erasistratus respectively long divided between them the medical world of Alexandria, The names of many prominent menibers of both sects have been preserved, but The Herophilists still reverenced the memory of Hippocrates, and wrote numerous commentaries on his works. They produced many eminent anatomists, but in the end seem to have become lost in theoretical

subtleties, and to have maintained too high a standard of literary cultivation. The school of Erasistratus was less distinguished in anatomy than that of Herophilus, but paid more attention to the special symptoms of diseases, and employed a great variety of drugs. It was longer-lived than that of Herophilus, for it still numbered many adherents in the 2d century after Christ, a century after the latter had become extinct.

The Erasistrateans paved the way for what was in some respects the most important school which Alexandria pro- duced, that known as the empiric, which, though it recog- nized no master by name, may be considered to have been founded by Philinus of Cos (280 Bo.), a pupil of Herophilus ; but Serapion, a great name in antiquity, and Glaucias of Tarentum, who traced the empirical doctrine

back to the writings of Hippocrates, are also named among its founders. The most striking peculiarity of the empirics was that they rejected anatomy, regarding it as useless to inquire into the causes of things, and. thus, as they con- tended, being the more minute in their observation of the actual phenomena of disease. They professed that their whole practice was based upon experience, to which word they gave a special meaning. 'Three sources, and three only, could experience draw from :—observation, history (i.e, recorded observation), and judgment by analogy. These three bases of knowledge were known as the "tripod" of the empirics. It should not, however, be forgotten that the empirics read and industriously com- mented on the works of Hippocrates. successful in practical matters, especially in surgery and in the use of drugs, and a large part of the routine know- ledge of diseases and remedies which became traditional

They were extremely |

in the times of the Roman empire is believed to have

been derived from them. In the 2d century the school

became closely connected with the philosophical sect of the

Sceptics, whose leader, Sextus, was an empirical physician. It lived and flourished far beyond this time, when trans- planted to Rome, not less than in its native Alexandria, and appears to be recognizable even up to the beginning of the Middle Ages.

If we look at the work of the Alexandrian schools in medicine as a wholc, we must admit that the progress made was great and permanent. rendered to medicine was undoubtedly the systematic study of anatomy.

why the important sect of the empirics were able entirely to dispense with anatomical knowledge. The doctrines of Hippocrates, though lightly thought of by the Erasistra- teans, still were no doubt very widely accepted, but the practice of the Hippocratic school had been greatly improved in almost every department,—surgery and obstetrics being probably those in which the Alexandrian practitioners could compare most favourably with those of modern times. body of medical doctrine and practice when transplanted to Rome, and ultimately to the whole Roman world.

The greatest service | It is clear that the knowledge of function |

(physiology) did not by any means keep pace with the | knowledge of structure, and this was probably the reason |

We have now to trace the fortunes of this |

Roman Medicine. —The Romans cannot be said to have |

at any time originated or possessed an independent school of medicine. They had from early times a very compli- cated system of superstitious medicine, or religion, related to disease and the cnre of disease, borrowed, as is thought, from the Etruscans ; and, though the saying of Pliny that the Roman people got on for six hundred years without doctors was doubtless an exaggeration, and not, literally speaking, exact, it must be accepted for the broad truth which it contains. When a medical profession appears,

it is, so far as we are able to trace it, as an importation |

from Greece.

The first Greek physician whose name is preserved as having migrated to Rome was Archagathus, who came over from the Peloponnesus in 218 Be. ; but there were probably others before him. When Greece was made a Roman province, the number of such physicians who sought their fortunes in Rome must have been very large. The bitter words of M. Porcius Cato, who disliked them as

[WIsToRy,

practical side it conformed pretty closely to the Stoic rule of life, thus adapting itself to the leanings of the better stamp of Romans in the later times of the republic. According to Asclepiades all diseases depended upon alterations in the size, number, arrangement, or movement of the "atoms," of which, according to the doctrine of Epicurus, the body consisted. These atoms were united into passages (adpor) through which the juices of the body were conveyed. 'This doctrine, of which the developments need not further be followed, was important chiefly in so far that it was perfectly distinct from, and opposed to, the humoral pathology of Hippocrates. In the treatment of disease Asclepiades attached most importance to diet, exercise, passive movements or frictions, and the external use of cold water,—in short, to a modified athletic training, He rejected the vis medicatrix nature, pointing out that nature in many cases not only did not help but marred the cure. His knowledge of disease and surgical skill were,

as appears from the accounts given by Celsus and Ceelius

Aurelianus, very considerable. Asclepiades had many pupils, who adhered more or less closely to his doctrines,

| but it was especially one of them, Themison, who gave _ permanence to the teachings of his master by framing out

of them, with some modifications, a new system of medical

| doctrine, and founding on this basis a school which lasted”

for some centuries in successful rivalry with the Hippocratic tradition, which, as we have seen, was up to that time the prevailing influence in medicine.

This system was known as methodism, its adherents as the methodici or methodists. Its main principles were that it was useless to consider the causes of a disease, or even the organ affected by the disease, and that it was suffi- cient to know what was common to all diseases, viz., their common qualities (communitates, xowdryres). Of these there were three possible forms—(1) relaxation, (2) con- traction of the minute passages or wépo., and (3) a mixed state, partly lax, partly constricted. The signs of these morbid states were to be found in the general constitution of the body, especially in the excretions. Besides this it was important only to consider whether the disease was acute or chronic, whether it was increasing, declining, or stationary. Treatment of disease was directed not to any special organ, nor to producing the crises and critical dis- charges of the Hippocratic school, but to correcting the mor- bid common condition or “community,” relaxing the body

if it was constricted, causing contraction if it was too lax,

and in the “mixed state” acting according to the pre- dominant condition. This simple rule of treatment was the system or “method” from which the school took its name. The methodists agreed with the empirics in one point, in their contempt for anatomy ; but, strictly speaking, they were dogmatists, though with a dogma different from that of the Hippocratic school. Besides Themison, its systematic

founder, the school boasted many physicians eminent in

he did other representatives of Greek culture, are evidence |

of this. The most eminent of these earlier Greek physicians at Rome was Asclepiades, the friend of Cicero (born 124 B.c. at Prusa in Bithynia). Hecameto Rome as a young man, and soon became distinguished both for his medical skill and his oratorical power. He introduced a system which, so

far as we know, was his own, though fonnded upon the Epicurean philosophical creed ; on the

their day, among whoni Thessalus of Tralles, a half-educated and boastful pretender, was one of the most popular. — He reversed the Hippocratic maxim "art is long," promising his scholars to teach them the whole of medicine in six months, and had inscribed upon his tomb iarpovexys, as being snperior to all living and bygone physicians.

In the 2d century a mnch greater name appears among the methodists, that of Soranus of Ephesus, @ physician mentioned with praise even by Tertullian and Augustine, who practised at Rome in the reigns of Trajan and Hadrian. Soranus is known by a work, still extant in the Greek original, on the diseases of women, and also by the Latin work of Ccelius Aurelianus, three centuries later, on acute and chronic diseases, which is based upon, if not, as some think, an actual translation of, the chief

work of Soranus, and which is the principal source of our knowledge of the methodic school. The work on diseases of women is the only complete work on that subject which has come down to us from antiquity, and shows remarkable fulness of practical knowledge in relation to its subject. [t is notable that an iniportant instrument of research, the speculum, which has been reinvented in modern times, was used by Soranus; and specimens of still earlier date, showing great mechanical perfection, have been found among the ruins of Pompeii. The work on acute and chronic diseases is also full of practical knowledge, but penetrated with the theories of the methodists.

The methodic school lasted certainly for some centuries, and influenced the revival of medical science in the Middle Ages, though overshadowed by the greater reputation of Galen. It was the first definite product of Greek medicine on Roman soil, but was destined to be followed by others, which kept up a more or less successful rivalry with it, and with the Hippocratic tradition.

The so-called pneumatic school was founded by Athenzus, in the Ist century after Christ. According to its doctrines the normal as well as diseased actions of the body were to be referred to the operation of the pneuma or universal soul. This doctrine, crudely transferred from philosophical speculation, was intended t» reconcile the hunoral (or Hippocratic) and solidist (or methodic) schools; but the methodists seem to have claimed Athenzus as one of themselves.

The conflicts of the opposing schools, and the obvious deficiencies of each, led many physicians to try and combine the valuable parts of each system, and to call themselves eclectics. Among these were found many of the most eminent physicians of Greeco-Roman times. It may be sufficient to name Rufus of Ephesus, and Archigenes, who is mentioned by Juvenal.

Although no system or important doctrine of medicine was originated by the Roman intellect, and though the practice of the profession was probably almost entirely in the hands of the Greeks, the most complete picture which we have of medical thought and activity in Roman times is due toa Latin pen, and to one who was, in all prob- ability, not a physician. A. Cornelius Celsus, a Roman patrician, who lived probably in the first century, appears to have studied medicine as a branch of general know- ledge. Whether he was a practising physician or not has been a matter of controversy. The conclusion Supported by most evidence seems to be that he practised on his friends and dependants, but not as a remunerative profession. His well-known work, De Medicina, was one of a series of treatises intended to embrace all knowledge proper for a man of the world. It was not meant for the physicians, and was certainly little tread by them, as Celsus is quoted by no medical writer, and when referred to by Pliny is spoken of as an author, not a physician. There is no doubt that his work is chiefly a compilation ; and Daremberg, with other scholars, has traced a large number of passages of the Latin text to the Greek originals from which they were translated. description of surgical operations the vagueness of the Janguage seems sometimes to show that the author had not performed such himself; but in other parts, and especially in his historical introduction, he speaks with more confidence; and everywhere le compares and criticizes with learning and judgment. The whole body of medical literature belonging to the Hippocratic and Alexandrian ties is ably summarized, and a knowledge of

the state of medical science up to and during the times of the author is thus conveyed to us which can be obtained from no other source, The work of Celsus is thus for us only second in importance to the Hippocratic writings and the works of

| medical authors which are of the highest value.

Galen ; but it is valuable rather as a part of the history of medicine than as the subject of that history. It forms no link in the general chain of medical tradition, for the simple reason that the influence of Celsus (putting aside a few scanty allusions in medieval times) commenced in the 15th century, when his works were first discovered in manu- script or committed to the press. Since then, however, he has been almost up to our own times the most popular and widely-read of all medical classics, partly for the qualities already indicated, partly because he was one of the few of those classics accessible to readers of Latin, and partly also because of the purity and classical perfection of his language.

Of Pliny, another encyclopedic writer, a few words must be said, though he was not a physician. In his Natural History we find as complete a summary of the popular medicine of his time as Celsus gives of the scientific medicine. Pliny disliked doctors, and lost no opportunity of depreciating regular medicine ; nevertheless

_ he has left many quotations from, and many details about,

In thie |

He is useful to us for what he wrote about the history of medi-

cine, not for what he contributed. Like Celsus, he had

little influence on succeeding medical literature or practice.

We now come to the writer who, above all others, gathered up into himself the divergent and scattered threads of ancient medicine, and out of whom again the greater part of modern European medicine has flowed. Galen (see vol. i. 803 and x. 23) wasa man furnished with all the anatomical, medical, and philosophical knowledge of his time; he had studied all kinds of natural curiosities, and had stood in near relation to important political events ; he possessed enormous industry, great practical sagacity, and unbounded literary fluency. He had, in fact, every quality necessary for an encyclopedic writer, or even for a literary and professional autocrat. He found the medical profes- sion of his time split up into a number of sects, medical science confounded under a multitude of dogmatic systems, the social status and moral integrity of physicians degraded. He appears to have made it his object to reform these evils, to reconcile scientific acquirements and practical skill, to bring back the unity of medicine as it had been understood by Hippocrates, and at the same time to raise the dignity of medical practitioners.

Galen was as devoted to anatomical and, so far as then understood, physiological research as tu practical medicine. He worked enthusiastically at dissection, though, the liberty of the Alexandrian schools no longer existing, he could dissect only animals, not the human body. In his anatomical studies Galen had a twofold object,—a philosophical, to show the wisdom of the Creator in making everything fit to serve its purpose, and a practical, to aid the diagnosis, or recognition, of disease. The first led him into a teleological system so minute and overstrained as to defeat its own end ; the second was successfully attained by giving greater precision and certainty to medical and surgical practice in difficult cases. His general physiology was essentially founded upon the Hippocratic theory of the four elements, with which he combined the notion of spirit

| (pneuma) penetrating all parts, and mingled with the

humours in different proportions. It was on this field that he most vehemently attacked the prevailing atomistic and materialistic views of the methodic school, and his conception of the pueuma became in some respects half metaphysical. His own researches in special branches of physiology were important, but do not strictly belong to our present subject.

The application of physiology to the explanation of diseases, and thus to practice, was chiefly by the theory of

‘the temperaments or mixtures which Galen founded upon

the Hippocratic doctrine of humours, but developed with marvellous and fatal ingenuity. The normal condition or temperament of the body depended upon a proper mixture or proportion of the four elements—hot, cold, wet, and dry. From faulty proportions of the same arose the intemperies (“distempers”), which, though not diseases, were the occasions of disease. Equal importance attached to faulty mixtures or dyscrasiz of the blood. By a combin- ation of these morbid predispositions with the action of deleterious influences from without all diseases were pro- dnced. Galen showed extreme ingenuity in explaining all symptoins and all diseases on his system. No phenomenon was without a name, no problem without a solution. And, though it was precisely in his fine-spun subtlety that he departed farthest from scientific method and practical utility, it was this very quality which seems in the end to have secured his popularity and established his pre-eminence in the medical world.

Galen’s use of drugs was influenced largely by the same theories. In drugs were to be recognized the same elementary qualities—hot, cold, moist, dry, &c.—as in the human body; and, on the principle of curing by contraries, the use of one or other was indicated. The writings of Galen contain less of simple objective observation thaa those of several other ancient physicians, all being swept into the current of dogmatic exposition. But there is enough to show the thoroughness and extent of his practical knowledge. Unfortunately it was neither this nor his zeal for research that chiefly won him followers, but the com- pleteness of his theoretical explanations, which fell in with the mental habits of succeeding centuries, and were such as have flattered the intellectual indolence of all ages. But the reputation of Galen grew slowly; he does not appear to have enjoyed auy pre-eminence over other physicians of his time, to most of whom he was strongly opposed in opinion. In the next generation he began to be esteemed only as a philosopher; gradually his system was implicitly accepted, and it enjoyed a great though not exclusive predominance till the fall of Roman civilization.

When the Arabs possessed themselves of the scattered remains of Greek culture, the works of Galen were more highly esteemed than any others except those of Aristotle. Through the Arabs the Galenical system found its way back again to Western Europe. Even when Arabian medi- cine gave way before the direct teaching of the Greek authors rescued from neglect, the authority of Galen was increased instead of being diminished ; and he assumed a position of autocracy in medical science which was only slowly under- mined by the growth of modern science in the 17th and 18th centuries.

But the history of medicine in Roman times is by no means the same thing as the history of the fate of the works of Galen. For some centuries the methodic school was popular at Rome, and produced one physician, Ccelius Aurelianns, who must be pronounced, next to Celsus, the most considerable of the Latin medical writers. His date was in all probability the end of the 4th or beginning of the 5th century, The works bearing his name are, as has been said, entirely based upon the Greek of Soranus, but are important both because their Greek originals are lost, and because they are evidence of the state of medical practice in his own time. The popularity of Ccelius is evidenced by the fact that in the 6th century an abridg- ment of his larger work was recommended by Cassiodorus to the Benedictine monks for the study of medicine.

Before quitting this period the name of Aretaus of Cappadocia must be mentioned. So little is known about him that even his date cannot be fixed more closely than as being between the second half of the lst century and the beginning of the 3d. His works have been much

admired fer the purity of the Greek style, and his accurate descriptions of disease; but, as he quotes no medical author, and is quoted by none before Alexander of Aphrodisias at the beginning of the 3d century, it is clear that he belonged to no school and founded none, and thus his position in the chain of medical tradition is quite uncertain. Alexander of Aphrodisias, who lived and wrote at Athens in the time of Septimius Severus, is best known by

his commentaries on Aristotle, but also wrote a treatise on fevers, still extant.

Ancient Medicine after Galen.—The Byzantine school of medicine, which closely corresponds to the Byzantine literary and historical schools, followed closely in Galen's footsteps, and its writers were chiefly compilers and ency- clopedists. The earliest is Oribasius (3826-403), whose date and position are fixed by his being the friend and court physician of Julian the Apostate. He was a Greek of Pergamum, educated in Alexandria, and long resident in Byzantium. His great work Swaywyai iarpixai, of which only about onethird has been preserved, was a medical encyclopedia founded on extracts from Hippo. crates, Galen, Dioscorides, and certain Greek writers who are otherwise very imperfectly known. The work is thus one of great historical value but of no originality. The next name which requires to be mentioned is that of Aetius (550 a.p.), a compiler who closely followed Oribasius, but with inferior powers, and whose work also has an historical but no original value.

In the West the period after Galen affords little evidence of anything but a gradual though unvarying decline 1 Roman medicine. Ccelius Aurelianus, already referred to

'as the follower of Soranus, must be mentioned as showing

the persistence of the methodic school. An abridgment of one of his writings, with the title of Aurelius, became the most popular of all Latin medical works. As a writer he

HISTORY. |

was worthy of a better period of medical literature. Little else was produced in these times but compilations, of the most meagre kind, chiefly of the nature of herbals, or domestic receipt-books; among the authors of which it may be sufficient to name Serenus Sammonicus (3d century), Gargilius Martialis (3d century), and Marcellus Empiricus (5th century). Certain compilations still extant bear the falsely-assumed names of eminent writers, such as Pliny and Hippocrates. A writer with the (perhaps assumed) name of Apuleius Platonicus produced a herbal which held its ground till the 15th

century at least, and wasin the 9th translated into Anglo-Saxon. These poor compilations, together with Latin translations of certain works of Galen and Hippocrates, formed a medical literature, meagre and unprogressive indeed, but of which a great part survived through the Middle Ages till the discovery of printing and revival of learning. Itis important to remember that this obscure stream of tradition flowed on, only partially affected by the influx of Arabian, or even the early revival of purer classical learning.

Arabian Medicine.—The rise of the Mohammedan empire, which influenced Europe so deeply both politically and intellectually, made its mark also in the history of medicine. As in the parallel case of the Roman conquest of Greece, the superior culture of the conquered race asserted its supre- macy over their Arab conquerors. After tlhe Mohammedan conquests became consolidated, and learning began to flourish, schools of medicine, often connected with hospitals aud schools of pharmacy, arose in all the chief seats of Moslem power. At Damascus Greek medicine was zealously cultivated with the aid of Jewish and Chris- tian teachers. In Baghdad, under the rule of Harin el Rashid and his successors, a still more flourishing school arose, where numerous translations of Greek medical works were made. The names of Mesua, or YahyAibn Masawaih (ob. 243 a.u., 857-8 a.D.), celebrated for his knowledge of drugs, and Honein ibn Ishak el "Ibddi (0b. 873) or Joannitius, the translator and commentator of Hippocrates and Galen, belong to this period. Certain writings of Joan- nitius, translated into Latin, were popular in the Middle Ages in Europe, and were printed in the 16th century. At the same time the Arabs became acquainted with Indian medicine, and Indian physicians lived at the court of Baghdad. The Islamite rulers in Spain were not long behind those of the East in encouraging learning and medical science, and developed culture to a still higher degree of perfection. In that country much was due to the Jews, who had already established schools in places which were afterwards the seats of Moslem dominion. From the 10th to the 13th century was the brilliant period of Arabian medicine in Spain.}

The classical period of Arabian medicine begins with Rhazes (Abi Bakr Mohammed ibn Zakarlya el-Razi, 313

A.H., 925-26 a.p.), a native of Ray in the province of |

Dailam (Persia), who practised with distinction at Baghdad; he followed the doctrines of Galen, but learnt much from Hippocrates. He was the first of the Arabs to treat medicine in a comprehensive and ency- clopsedic manner, surpassing probably in voluminousness Galen himself, though but a small proportion of his works are extant. Rhazes is deservedly remembered as having first described small-pox and measles in an accurate manner. Haly, z.e., 'Alf ibn el-'Abbds (0b. 994), a Persian, wrote a medical text-book, known as the " Royal Book," which was the standard authority among the Arabs up to the time of Avicenna, and was more than once translated into Latin and printed. Other writers of this century need not be mentioned here ; but the next, the 11th century, is givenas

1 See Dozy, Cat. Cod. Or. Lug. Bat., ii, 296.

the probable though uncertain date of a writer who had a great influence on European medicine, Mesua the younger of Damascus, whose personality is obscure, and of whose very existence some historians have doubted, thinking that the name was assumed by some medizval Latin writer. The work De Simplicibus, which bears his name, was for centuries a standard authority on what would now be called materia medica, was printed in tweuty-six editions in the 15th century and later, and was used in the formation of the first London pharmacopeeia, issued. by the College of Physicians in the reign of James I. Either to the 10th or the 11th century must be referred the uame of another Arabian physician who has also attained the position of a classic, Abu'l Kasim, or Abulcasis, of EI- Zahra, near Cordova in Spain, Ilis great work, Altasvif, a medical encyclopzedia, is chiefly valued for its surgical portion (already mentioned), which was translated into Latin in the 12th century, and was for some centuries a staudard if not the standard authority on surgery in Europe. Among his own countrymen the fame and posi- tion of Abulcasis were soon eclipsed by the greater name of Avicenna (Ibn Sina).

Avicenna (see vol. iti. p. 152 sq.) has always been re- garded as the cluef representative of Arabian medicine. He wrote on philosoplty also, and in

both subjects acquired the highest reputation through the whole of Eastern Islam. In Mohammedan Spain he was less regarded, but in Europe his works even eclipsed and superseded those of Hippocrates and Galen. His style and expository power are highly praised, but the subject-matter shows little originality. The work by which he is chiefly known, the celebrated ‘“‘canon,” is an encyclopedia of medical and surgical knowledge, founded upon Galen, Aristotle, the later Greek physicians, and the earlier Arabian writers, singularly complete and systematic, but is thought not to show the practical experience of its author. As in the case of Galen, the formal and encyclopedic character of Avicenua’s works was the chief cause of his popularity and ascendency, though in modern times these very qualities in a scientific or medical writer would rather cause him to become more speedily antiquated.

In the long list of Arabian medical writers none can here be mentioned except the great names of the Hispano- Moorish school, a school both philosophically and medi- cally antagonistic to that of Avicenna. Of these the earliest is Avenzoar, or Abumeron, that is, Abi’ Merwdn “Abd el-Malik Ibn Zohr (1113-62), a member of a family which gave several distinguished members to the medical profession. His chief work, Al-Teysir (facilitatio), is thought to show more practical experience than the writings of Avicenna, and to be less based upon dialectical subtleties. It was translated into Latin, and more than once printed, as were some of his lesser works, which thus formed a part of the contribution made by the Arabians to European medicine. His friend and pupil Averrogs of Cordova (q.v.), so well known for his philesophical writings, was also an author in medical subjects, and as such widely read in Latin. The famous Rabbi MarimonipEs (q.v.) closes for us the roll of medical writers of the Arabian school. His works exist chiefly in the original Arabic or in Hebrew translations; only some smaller treatises have been translated into Latin, so that no definite opinion can be formed as to their medical value. But, so far as is known, the independent and rationalistic spirit which the two last-named writers showed in philosophy did not lead them to take any original point of view in medicine.

The works of the Arabian medical writers who have now been mentioned form a very small fraction of the existing literature. Three hundred medical writers in

Arabic are enumerated by Wiistenfeld, and other historians have enlarged the list (Haeser), but only three have been printed in the original ; a certain number more are known through old Latin translatjons, and the great majority still exist in manuscript. It is thus evident that the cireum- stance of having been translated (which may have been in some cases almost an accident) is what has chiefly de- termined the influence of particular writers on Western medicine. But it is improbable that further research will alter the general estimate of the value of Arabian medicine. There can be no doubt that it was in the main Greek medicine, modified to suit other climates, habits, and national tastes, aud with some important additions from Oriental sources. The greater part is taken from Hippo- crates, Galen, Dioscorides, and later Greek writers. The Latin medical writers were necessarily unknown to the Arabs ; and this was partly the cause that even in Europe Galenic medicine assumed such a preponderance, the methodic school and Celsus being forgotten or neglected. In anatomy and physiology the Arabians distinctly went back; in surgery they showed no advance upon the Greeks ; in practical medicine nothing new can be traced, except the description of certain diseases (e.g., small-pox and ineasles) unknown or imperfectly known to the Creeks ;

the only real advance was in pharmacy and the therapeutical |

use of drugs. By their relations with the furtler East, the Arabs became acquainted with valuable new remedies which have held their ground till modern times ; and their skill in chemistry enabled them to prepare new chemical remedies, and form many combinations of those already in use. They produced the first pharmacopeeia, and estab- lished the first apothecaries' shops. Many of the names and many forms of medicines now used, and in fact the general outline of modern pharmacy, except so far as modi- fied by modern chemistry, started with the Arabs. Thus does Arabian medicine appear as judged from a modern

standpoint; but to medieval Europe, when little but a |

tradition remained of the great ancient schools, it was

invested with a far higher degree of originality and im-

portance. It is now necessary to consider what was the state of

medicine in Europe after the fall of the Western empire |

and before tlie influence of Arabian science and literature began to be felt. Salernitan period.

Medicine in the Early Middle Ages: School of Salerno. —In medical as in civil history there is no real break. A continuous thread of learning and practice must have con- nected the last period of Roman medicine already mentioned with the dawn of science in the Middle Ages. But the intellectual thread is naturally traced with greater difficulty than that which is the theme of civil history ; and in periods such as that from the 5th to the 10th century in Europe it is almost lost. The chief homes of medical as of other learning in these disturbed times were the mouasteries. Though the science was certainly not advanced by their labours, it was saved from total oblivion, and many ancient medical works were preserved either in Latin or vernacular versions. The " Anglo-Saxon Jeechdoms" of the 11th century, published in the Master of the Rolls series of medieval chronicles and memorials, admirably illustrate the mixture of magic and superstition with the relics of ancient science which constituted mouastic medicine. Simi- lar works, in Latin or other languages, exist in manuscript in all the great European libraries. It was among tlie Benedictines that the monastic study of medicine first re- ceived a new direction, and aimed at a higher standard. The study of Hippocrates, Galen, and other classics was recommended by Cassiodorus (6th century), and in the original mother-abbey of Monte Cassino medicine was

This we may call the pre-Arabian or |

in Latin hexameters on medical subjects.

studied ; but there was not there what could be called a medical school; nor had this foundation any connexion (as has been supposed) with the famous scliool of Salerno.

The origin of this, the most important source of medica] knowledge in Europe in the early Middle Ages, is involved in obscurity. It is known that Salerno, a Koman colony, in a situation noted in ancient times for its salubrity, was in the 6th century at least the seat of a bishopric, and at the end of the 7th century of a Benedictine monastery, and that some of the prelates and higher clergy were dis- tinguished for learning, and even for medical acquirements. But it has by recent researches been clearly established that the celebrated Schola Salernitana was a purely secular institution. All that can with certainty be said is that a school or collection of schools gradually grew up in which especially medicine, but also, in a subordinate degree, law and philosophy were taught. In the 9th century Salernitan physicians were already spoken of, and the city was known as Civitas Hippocratica. A little later we find great and royal personages resorting to Salerno for the restoration of their health, among whom was William of Normandy, afterwards the Conqueror. The number of students of medicine must at one time have been considerable, and in a corresponding degree the number of teachers. Among the latter many were married, and their wives and daughters appear also in the lists of professors. 'The most noted female professor was the celebrated Trotula in the 11th century. The Jewish element appears to have been im- portant among the students, and possibly among the professors. The reputation of the school was great till the 12th or 13th century, when tlie introduction of the Arab medicine was gradually fatal to it. The foundation of the university of Naples, and the rise of Montpellier, also contributed to its decline.

The teachings of the Salernitan doctors are pretty well known through existing works, some of which have only recently been discovered and published. 'The best-known is the anonymous rhyming Latin poem on health, Regimen Sanitatis Salerni, professedly written for the use of the "king of England," supposed to mean Robert, son of William the Conqueror; it had an immense reputation in the Middle Ages, and was afterwards many times printed, and translated into most European languages. This was a popular work intended for the laity ; but there are

others strictly professional. Among the writers it may be sufficient to mention here Gariopontus ; Copho, who wrote the Anatome Porci, a well-known medieval book ; Joannes Platearius, first of a family of physicians bearing the same name, whose Practica, or medical compendium, was after- wards several times printed; and Trotula, believed to be the wife of the last-named. All of these fall into the first period before the advent of Arabian medicine. In the transitional period, when the Arabian school began to influ- ence European medicine, but before the Salernitans were superseded, comes Nicolaus Prepositus, who wrote the Antidotarium, a collection of formule for compound medi- cines, which became the standard work on the subject, and the foundation of many later compilations. An equally popular writer was Gilles de Corbeil (A5gidius Corboliensis), at one timea teacher at Salerno, afterwards court physician to Philip Augustus of France, who composed several poems Two of them, on the urine and the pulse respectively, attained the position of medical classics.

None of these Salernitan works rise much above the rank of compilations, being founded on Hippocrates, Galen, and later Greek writers, with an unmistakable mixture of the doctrines of the methodists. But they often show much practical experience, and exhibit the naturalistic method of the Hippocratic school. The general plan of

HISTORY. |

treatment is dietetic rather than pharmaceutical, though the art of preparing drugs had reached a high degree of complexity at Salerno. Anatomy was as little regarded as it was in the later ancient schools, the empiric and methodic, but demonstrations of the parts of the body were given on swine. Although it cannot be said that the science of medicine was advanced at Salerno, still its decline was arrested at a time when every other branch of learning was rapidly falling into decay; and there can be no doubt that the observation of patients in hospitals, and

PH wicingsg

probably clinical instruction, were made use of in learning |

and teaching.

The school of Salerno thus forms a bridge —

between the ancient and the modern medicine, more direct |

though less conspicuous than that circuitous route, through Byzantium, Baghdad, and Cordova, by which Hippocrates and Galen, in Arabian dress, again entered the European world. school actually existed till it was finally dissolved by an edict of the emperor Napoleon I. in the year 1811. Introduction of Arabian Medicine: The Period. — About the middle of the 11th century the Arabian medical writers began to be known by Latin translations in the Western world. Constantinus Africanus,

a monk, was the author of the earliest of such versions |

(1050 a.p.) ; his labours were directed ehiefly to the less

duced till later. For some time the Salernitan medicine held its ground, and it was not till the conquest of Toledo by Alphonso of Castile that any large number of Western scholars came in contact with the learning of the Spanish

philosophical and medical works. Jewish scholars, often under the patronage of Christian bishops, were especially active in the work. In Sicily also the Oriental tendencies of Frederick Barbarossa and Frederick II. worked in the same direction. Gerard of Cremona, a physician of Toledo (1114-87), made translations, it is said by command of Barbarossa, from Avicenna and others. to point out the influence of the crusades in making Eastern ideas known in the Western world. The in-

807

medical studies,—the former preserving more of the Galenical tradition, the latter being more progressive and Averroist. The northern universities eontributed little, — the reputation even of Paris being of later growth.

The supremacy of Arabian medicine lasted till the revival of learning, when the study of the medical classics in their original language worked another

revolution, The medical writers of this period, who chiefly drew from Arabian

| sources, have been called Arabists (though it is difficult to

give any clear meaning to this term), and were afterwards known as the neoterics.

The medical literature of this period is extremely voluminous, but essentially second-hand, consisting mainly of commentaries on Hippocrates, Galen, Avicenna, and

_ others, or of compilations and compendia still less original

Though the glory of Salerno had departed, the

than commentaries. Among these may be mentioned the Conciliator of Peter of Abano (1250-1315), the Aggregator of Jacob de Dondi (1298-1359), both of the school of

Padua, and the Pandectey Medicine of the Salernitan

Scholastic

Mattlweus Sylvaticus (0b. 1542), a sort of medical glossary

and dictionary. But for us the most interesting fact is

the first appearance of Englishmen as authors of medical works having a European reputation, distinguished, accord- ing to the testimony of Haeser, by a practical tendency

_ characteristic of the British race, and fostered in the school important and less bulky Arabian authors, of whom Haly — was the most noted; the real classics were not intro- —

of Montpellier.

The first of these works is the Compendium Medicine, also called Laurea or Rosa Anglicana, of Gilbert (Gilbertus Anglicus, about 1290), said to contain good observations on leprosy. A more important work, the Practica seu

Lilium Medicine, of Bernard Gordon, a Scottish professor Moors, and systematic efforts were made to translate their |

_ printed in several editions.

at Montpellier (written in the year 1307), was more widely spread, being translated into French and Hebrew, and Of these two physicians the first probably, the latter certainly, was educated and practised abroad, but John Gaddesden, the author of Z?osa Anglica seu Practica Medicine (between 1305 and 1317),

_ Was a graduate in medicine of Merton College, Oxford, and

It is needless ©

fluence of Arabian medicine soon began to be felt even

in the Hippocratic city of Salerno, and in the 13th century is said to have held an even balance with the older medicine. predominated ; and by the time that the Aristotelian dialectic, in the introduction of which the Arabs had so large a share, prevailed in the schools of Europe, the Arabian version of Greek medicine reigned supreme in the medical world. That this movement coincided with the establishment of some of the older European mniver- sities is well known. The history of medicine in the period now opening is closely combined with the history of scholastic philosophy. Both were infected with the same dialectical subtlety, which was, from the nature of the subject, especially injurious to medicine.

At the same time, through the rise of the universities, medical learning was much more widely diffused, and the first definite forward movement was seen in the school of Montpellier, where a medical faculty existed early in the 12th century, afterwards united with faculties of law and philosophy. The medical school owed its foundation

After this time the foreign influence |

court physician. His compendium is entirely wanting in originality, and perhaps unusually destitute of common sense, but it became so popular as to be reprinted up to the end of the 16th century. Works of this kind became still more abundant in the 14th and in the first half of the 15th century, till the wider distribution of the medical classics in the original put them out of fashion.

In surgery this period was far more productive than in niedicine, especially in Italy and France, but the limits of

—onr subject only permit us to mention Gulielmus de

largely to Jewish teachers, themselves educated in the :

Moorish schools of Spain, and imbued with the intellectual independence of the Averroists.

Its rising prosperity coin-

cided with the decline of the school of Salerno. Montpellier |

became distinguished for the practical and empirical spirit of its medicine, as contrasted with the dogmatic and scholastie teaching of Paris and other universities.

In | Italy, Bologna and Padua were carliest distinguished for , its corresponding

Saliceto of Piacenza (about 1275), Lanfranchi of Milan (died about 1506), the French surgeon, Guy de Chauliac (about 1350), and the Englishman, John Ardern (about 1350). In anatomy also the beginning of a new epoch was made by Mondino de Liucci, or Mundinus (1275~ 1326), aud his followers. Some advance was made in chemistry by the celebrated Arnold de Villanova (1235- 1312), whose medical writings (if the Breviartum Practice be rightly ascribed to him) rise above the rank of compila- tions. Finally, in the 13th and especially the 14th century, we find, under the name

of consz/ia, the first medizeval reports of medical eases which are preserved in such a form as to be intelligible. Collections of consilia were publiched, among others, by Gentilis Fulgineus before 13848, by Bartolomeo Montaguana (died in 1470), and by Baverius de Baveriis of Imola (about 1450). The last-named, we can say from experience, contains much that is interesting and readable.

Period of the Revival of Learning.—The impulse which all departments of intellectual activity received from the revival of Greek literature in Europe was felt by medicine among the rest. Not that the spirit of the science, or of practice, was at once changed. The

basis of medicine through the Middle Ages had been literary and dogmatic, and it was literary and dogmatic still; but the medical literature now brought to light, including as it did the more important works of Hip- pocrates and Galen, many of them hitherto unknown, and in addition the forgotten element of Latin medicine, especially the work of Celsus, was in itself far superior to the second-hand compilations and incorrect versions which had formerly been accepted as standards. The classical works, though still regarded with unreasoning reverence, were found to have a germinative and vivifying power that carried the mind out of the region of dogma, and prepared the way for the scientific movement which has been growing in strength up to our own day.

Two of the most important results of the revival of learning were indeed such as are excluded from the scope of this brief sketch, namely, the reawakening of anatomy, which to a large extent grew out of the study of the works of Galen, and the investigation of medicinal plants, to which a fresh impulse was given by the revival of Dioscorides and other ancient naturalists. The former brought with it necessarily a more accurate conception of physiology, and thus led up to the great discovery of Harvey, which was the turning-point in modern medicine. The latter gave rise, on the one hand, to the modern science of botany, on the other to a more rational knowledge of drugs and their uses. At the same time, the discovery of America, and increased intercourse with the East, by intro- ducing a

variety of new plants, greatly accelerated the progress both of botany and pharmacology.

But it was not in these directions that improvement was first looked for. It was at first very naturally imagined that the simple revival of classical and especially of Greek literature would at once produce the same brilliant results in medicine as in literature and philosophy. The move- ment of reform started, of necessity, with scholars rather than practising physicians, —more precisely with a group

of learned men, whom we may be permitted, for the sake |

of a name, to call the medical humanists, equally enthusi- astic in the cause of letters and of medicine. fields they hoped to expel the evils which were summed up in the word barbarism. Nearly all medieval medical literature was condemned under this name; and for it the humanists proposed to substitute the originals of Hippocrates and Galen, thus leading back medicine tv its fountain-head. Since a knowledge of Greek was still confined to a small body of scholars, and a still smaller proportion of physicians, the first task was to translate the Greek classics into Latin. physicians, chiefly Italians, applied themselves with great ardour. Among the earliest were Nicolaus Leonicenus of Vicenza (1428-1524), Giovanni de Monte or Montanus (1498-1552), and many others in Italy. In northern Europe should be mentioned Gulielmus Copus (1471-

From both |

RE Diciag

[HISTORY,

the Arabians. The great Aldine press made an important contribution to the work, by editiones principes of Hippo- crates and Galen in the original. Thus was the campaign opened against the medizval and Arabian writers, till finally Greek medicine assumed a predominant position, and Galen took the place of Avicenna. ‘The result was recorded in a formal manner by the Florentine Academy, sometime shortly before 1535: ‘“‘quea, excusso Arabica et barbara servitutis medic jugo, ex professo se Galenicam appel-

lavit et profligato barbarorum exercitu unum totum et solum Galenuin, ut optimum artis medic authorem, in omnibus se sequuturam pollicita est." Janus Cornarius, from whom this is quoted, laments, however, that the Arabians still reigned in most of the schools of medicine, and that the Italian and French authors of works called Practica were still in high repute. The triumph of Galenism was therefore not complete by the middle of the 16th century. It was probably most so, and earliest, in the schools of Italy and in those of England, where the London College of Physicians might be regarded as an off- shoot of the Italian schools. Paris was the stronghold of conservatism, and Germany was stirred by the teachings of one who must be considered apart from all schools—Para- celsus. The nature of the struggle between the rival systems may be well illustrated by a formidable contro- versy about the rules for bleeding in acute diseases. This operation, according to the Arabian practice, was always performed on a vein at a distance from the organ affected. The Hippocratic and also Galenic rule, to let blood from, or near to, the diseased organ, was revived by Brissot (1470- 1522), a professor in the university of Paris. His attempt at reform, which was taken to be, as in effect it was, a revolt against the authority of the Arabian masters, led to his expulsion from Paris, and the formal prohibition by the parliament of his method. Upon this apparently tnfling question arose a controversy which lasted many years,

| occupied several universities, and led to the interposition

| arrogance. To this work several learned | _all traditional and authoritative teachings.

1532) and Giinther of Andernach (1487-1584) better |

known as Guinterius Andernacensis, both for a time pro- fessors at Paris; and, among the greatest, Thomas Linacre (about 1460-1524; see Linacre). A little later Janus Cornarius or Hagenbut (1500-58) and Leonard Fuchs (1501-66) in Germany, and John Kaye or Caius (1510- 72) in England, carried on the work. pier (Champerius or Campegius) of Lyons (1472-1539), a contemporary of Rabelais, and the patron of Ser- vetus, wrote with fantastic enthusiasm on the superiority of the Greek to the Arabian physicians, and possibly did something to enlist in the same cause the two far greater men just mentioned. Rabelais not only lectured on Galen and

Hippocrates, but edited some works of the latter; and Servetus, in a little tract Syruporum universa ratio, defended the practice of Galen as compared with that of

Symphorien Cham- |

of personages no less important than the pope and the emperor, but which is thought to have largely contributed to the final downfall of the Arabian medicine.

Paracelsus and Chemical Medicine.—Contemporary with the school of medical humanists, but little influenced by thei, lived in Germany a man of strange genius, of whose character apd importance the most opposite opinions have been expressed. The first noticeable quality in Para- celsus (c. 1490-1541) is his revolutionary independence of thought, which was supported by his immense personal Himself well trained in the learning and medical science of the day, he despised and trampled upon He began lis lectures at Basel by burning the books of Avicenna and others ; he afterwards boasted of having read no books for ten years; he protested that his shoe buckles were more learned than Galen and Avicenna. On the other hand, he spoke with respect of Hippocrates, and wrote a commentary on his Aphorisms. In this we see a spirit very different from the enthusiasm of the humanists for a purer and nobler philosophy than the scholastic and Arabian versions of Greek thought. There is no record of Paracelsus's knowledge of Greek, and as, at lcast in his student days, the most important works of Greek medicine were very

imperfectly known, it is probable he had little first-hand

acquaintance with Galen or Hippocrates, while his breach with the humanists is the more conspicuous from his lee- turing and writing chiefly in his native German.

Having thus made a clean sweep of nearly the whole of the dogmatic medicine, what did Paracelsus put in its place# Certainly not pure empiricism, or habits of objective observation. He had a dogma of his own, —one founded, according to his German expositors, on the views of the

Neo-Platonists, of which a few disjointed specimens must here suffice. The human body was a "microcosm" which corresponded to the "macrocosm," and contained in itself all parts of visible nature,—sun, moon, stars, and the poles of heaven. 'To know the nature of man and how to deal with it, the physician should study, not anatomy, which Paracelsus utterly rejected, but all parts of external nature. Life was a perpetual germinative process controlled by the indwelling spirit or Archeus ; and diseases, according to the mystical conception of Paracelsus, were not natural, but spiritual. Nature was sufficient for the cure of most diseases ; art had only to interfere when the internal physician, the man himself, was tired or incapable. Then some remedy had to be introduced which should be antago- nistic, not to the disease in a physical sense, but to the spiritual seed of the disease. These remedies were arcana, —a word corresponding partly to what we now call specific remedies, but implying a mysterious connexion between the remedy and the "essence " of the disease. Arcana were often shown to be such by their physical properties, not only by such as heat, cold, &c., but by fortuitous resemblances to certain parts of the body; thus arose the famous doctrine of "signatures," or signs indicating the virtues and uses of natural objects, which was afterwards developed into great complexity. Great importance was also attached to chemically prepared remedies as containing the essence or spiritual quality of the material from which they were derived. The actual therapeutical resources of Paracelsus included a large number of metallic preparations, in the introduction of some of which he did good service, and, among vegetable preparations, the tincture of opium, still known by the name he gave it, laudanum. In this doubtless he derived much advantage from his knowledge of chemistry, though the science was as yet not disen- tangled from the secret traditions of alchemy, and was often mixed up with imposture.

German historians of medicine attach great importance to the revolt of Paracelsus against the prevailing systems, and trace in his writings anticipations of many scientific truths of later times. That his personality was influential, and his intrepid originality of great value as an example in his own country, is undeniable. As a national reformer he has been not inaptly compared to Luther. But his importance in the universal history of

medicine we cannot estimate so highly. The chief immediate result we can trace is the introduction of certain mineral remedies, especially antimony, the use of which became a kind of badge of the disciples of Paracelsus. The use of these remedies was not, however, necessarily connected with a belief in his system, which seems to have spread little beyond his own country. Of the followers of Paracelsus some became mere mystical quacks and impostors. Others, of more learning and better repute, were distinguished from the regular physicians chiefly by their use of chemical remedies. In France the introduction of antimony gave Yise to a bitter controversy which lasted into the 17th century, and led to the expulsion of some men of mark from the Paris faculty. In England "chemical medicine" is first heard of in the reign of Elizabeth, and was in like manner contemned and assailed by the College of Physicians and the Society of Apothecaries. But it should be remembered that all the chemical physicians did not call Paracelsus master. The most notorious of that school in England, a certain Anthony, never quotes Paracelsus, but telies upon Arnold de Villanova and Raymund Lully. From this time, however, it is always possible to trace a school of chemical practitioners, who, though condemned by the orthodox Galenists, held their ground, till in the 17th century a successor of Paracelsus arose in the celebrated Van Helmont.

Consequences of the Revival of Ancient Medicine.—The revival of Galenic and Hippocratic medicine, though ulti- mately it conferred the greatest benefits on medical science, did not immediately produce any important or salutary reform in practical medicine. The standard of excellence in the ancient writers was indeed far above the level of the 16th century; but the fatal habit of taking at second hand what should have been acquired by direct observation retarded progress more than the possession of better models assisted it, so that the fundamental faults of medieval science remained uncorrected.

Nevertheless some progress has to be recorded, even if not due directly to the study of ancient medicine. In the first place the 15th and 16th centuries were notable for the outbreak of certain epidemic diseases, which were

unknown to the old physicians. Of these the chief was the "sweating sickness" or "English sweat," especially pre- valent in, though not confined to, the country whence it is named. Among many descriptions of this disease, that by John Kaye or Caius, already referred to, was one of the best, and of great importance as showing that the works of Galen did uot comprise all that could be known in medicine. The spread of syphilis, a disease equally unknown to the ancients, and the failure of Galen's remedies to cure it, had a similar effect.

In another direction the foundations of modern medicine were being laid during the 16th century, namely, by the introduction of clinical instruction in hospitals. In this Italy, and especially the renowned school of Padua, took the first step, where De Monte (Montanus), already mentioned as a humanist, gave clinical lectures on the patients in the hospital of St Francis, which may still be read with interest. Pupils flocked to him from all European countries ; Germans are especially mentioned ; a Polish student reported and published some of his lectures ; and the Englishman Kaye was a zealous disciple, who does not, however, seem to have done anything towards trans- planting this method of instruction to his own country. Inspections of the dead, to ascertain the nature of the disease, were made, though not without difficulty, and thus the modern period of the science of morbid anatomy was ushered in.

Medicine in the 17th century.—The medicine of the early part of the 17th presents no features to distinguish it from that of the preceding century. The practice and theory of medicine were mainly founded upon Hippocrates and Galen, with ever-increasing additions from the chemical school. But the development of mathematical and physical science soon introduced a fundamental change in the habits of thought with respect to medical doctrine.

These discoveries not only weakened or destroyed the respect for authority in matters of science, but brought about a marked tendency to mechanical explanations of life and disease. When Harvey by his discovery of the circulation furnished an explanation of many vital pro- cesses which was reconcileable with the ordinary laws of mechanics, the efforts of medical theorists were naturally directed to bringing all the departments of

medicine under similar laws. It is often assumed that the writings and influence of Bacon did much towards introducing a more scientific method into medicine and physiology. But, without discussing the general philosophical position or historical importance of Bacon, it may safely be said that his direct influence can be little traced in medical writings of the first half of the 17th century. Harvey, as is well known, spoke slightingly of the great chancellor, and it is not till the rapid development of physical science in England and Holland in the latter part of the century, that we find Baconian principles explicitly recognized.

The dominant factors in the 17th century medicine were

|

the discovery of the circulation by Harvey (published in 1628), the mechanical philosophy of Descartes and the contemporary progress of physics, the teaching of Van

Helmont and the introduction of chemical explanations of |

morbid processes, aud finally, combined of all these, and inspiring them, the rise of the spirit of inquiry and innova- tion, which may be called the scientificmovement. Before speaking in detail of these, we may note that by other

influences, quite independent of theories, important addi- |

tions were made to practical medicine. The method of clinical instruction in hospitals, commenced by the

Italians, was introduced into Holland, where it was greatly |

developed, especially at Leyden, in the hands of the celebrated Sylvius. Itis noteworthy that concurrently with the rise of clinical study the works of

Hippocrates were more and more valued, while Galen began to sink into the background.

At the same time the discovery of new diseases, unknown to the ancients, and the keener attention which the great epidemics of plague caused to be paid to those already known, led to more minute study of the natural history of disease. The most important disease hitherto undescribed was rickets, first made known by Arnold de Boot, a Frisian who practised in Ireland, in 1649, and afterwards more fully in the celebrated work of Glisson in 1651. The plague was carefully studied by Diemerbroek (De Peste, 1646) and others. Hodges, of London, in 1665 seems to have

Discovery of the Circulation of the Blood.—The influence of Harvey's discovery began to be felt before the middle of the century. Its merits were recognized by Descartes, among the first, nine years after its publication. For the history of the discovery, and its consequences in anatomy and physiology, we must refer to the article Harvey. In respect of practical medicine, much less effect was at first noticeable. But this example, combined with the Cartesian principles, set many active and ingenious spirits to work to reconstruct the whole of medicine on a physiological or even a mechanical basis,—to endeavour to form what we should now call physiological or scientific medicine, The result of this was not to eliminate dogma from medicine, though it weakened the authority of the old dogma. The movement led rather to the formation of schools or systems of thought, which under various

names lasted on into the 18th century, while the belief in

| the utility or necessity of schools and systems lasted much longer. The most important of these were the so-called

iatro-physical or mechanical and the iatro-chemical schools,

Latro-Physical School.—The iatro-physical school of medicine grew out of physiological theories. Its founder is held to have been Borelli of Naples (1608-79), whose treatise De motu animalium, published in 1680, is regarded

as marking an epoch in physiology. The tendency of the

school was to explain the actions and functions of the body

been the first who had the courage to make a post-mortem |

inspection of a plague patient. Bennet wrote an important work on consumption in 1654. During the same period many new remedies were introduced, the most important being cinchona bark, brouglit to Spain in the year 1640. The progress of pharmacy was shown by the publication of Dispensatories or Pharmacopoix, such as that of the Royal College of Physicians of London in 1618. This, like the earlier German works of the same kind (on which it was partly founded), contains both the traditional (Galenical) and the modern or chemical remedies.

Van Helmont.—The medicine of the 17th century was especially distinguished by the rise of systems; and we must first speak of an eccentric genius who endeavoured to construct a system for himself, as original and opposed to tradition as that of Paracelsus. Van Helmont (1578- 1644) was a man of noble family in Brussels, who, after mastering all other branches of learning as then under- stood, devoted himself with enthusiasm to medicine and chemistry. By education and position a little out of the regular lines of the profession, he took up in medicine an independent attitude. Well acquainted with the doctrines of Galen, he rejected them as thoroughly as Paracelsus did, and borrowed from the latter some definite ideas as well as his revolutionary spirit. The archeus of Paracelsus appears again, but with still further complications,—the whole body being controlled by the archeus influus, and the organ of the soul and its various parts by the archer insvtt, which are

on physical and especially on mechanical principles. The movements of bones and muscles were referred to the theory of levers; the process of digestion was regarded as essentially a process of trituration ; nutrition and secretion were shown to be dependent upon the tension of the vessels, and so forth. The developments of tlus school belong rather to the history of physiology, where they appear, seen in the light of modern science, as excellent though

premature endeavours in a scientific direction. But the

subject to the central archeus. Many of the symptoms >

of diseases were caused by the passions and perturbations of the archeus, and medicines acted by modifying the zdeas of the same arclieus. These and other notions cannot be here stated at sufficient length to be intelligible. It is

influence of these theories on practical medicine was not great. The more judicious of the mechanical or physical school refrained, as a judicious modern physiologist does, from too immediate an application of their principles to daily practice. Mechanical theories were introduced into pathology, in explanation of the processes of fever and the like, but had little or no influence on therapeutics. The niost important men in this school after Borelli were Steno

| (1638-86), Baglivi (1673-1707), and Bellini (1643-1704).

An English physician, Cole (1660-1700), is also usually ranked with them. One of the most elaborate develop- ments of the system was that of Pitcairn, a Scottish physician who became professor at Leyden (1652-1718), to be spoken of hereafter.

Iatro-Chemical School. —The so-called iatro-chemical

school stood in a much closer relation to practical medicine

than the iatro-physical. The principle which mainly distin- guished it was not merely the use of chemical medicines in addition to the traditional, or, as they were called in dis- tinction, "Galenical" remedies, but a theory of pathology or causation of disease entirely different from the prevailing "humoral" pathology. Its chief aim was to reconcile the new views in physiology and chemistry with practical medicine. In some theoretical views, and in the use of

certain remedies, the school owed something to Van

enough to say that on this fantastic basis Helmont con- | structed a medical system which had some practical merits,

that his therapeutical methods were mild and in many respects happy, and that he did service by applying newer

chemical methods to the preparation of drugs. He thus |

had some share, though a share not generally recognized, in the foundation of the iatro-chemical school, now to be spoken of. But his avowed followers formed a small and discredited sect, which, in England at least, can be clearly traced in the latter part of the century.

Helmont and Paracelsus, but took in the main an independ- ent position. The founder of the iatro-chemical school was

Francis de le Bod, called Sylvius (1614-72), belonging

to a French family settled in Holland. Sylvius was for fourteen years professor of medicine at Leyden, where he

attracted' students from all quarters of Europe. He made a resolute attempt to reconstruct medicine on the two pases of the doctrine of the circulation of the blood and

the new views of chemistry. Fermentation, which was supposed to take place in the stomach, played an important

part in the vital processes. Chemical disturbances of these processes, called acridities, &c., were the cause of fevers and other diseases. Sometimes acid sometimes alkaline properties predominated in the juices and secretions of the body, and produced corresponding disturbances. In nervous diseases disturbances of the vital "spirits" were most important. Stillin some parts of his system Sylvius shows an anxiety to base his pathology on anatomical changes. The remedies he employed were partly Galenical, partly chemical. He was very moderate in the use of bleeding.

The doctrines of Sylvius became widely spread in Holland and Germany ; less so in France and Italy. In England they were not generally accepted, till adopted with some modifications by Thomas Willis the great anatomist (1622-75), who is the chief English representa- tive of the chemical school. Willis was as thorough-going a chemist as Sylvius. He regarded all bodies, organic and inorganic, as composed of the three elements—spirit, sulphur, and salt, the first being only found abundantly in animal bodies. The "intestine movement of particles" in every body, or fermentation, was the explanation of many of the processes of life and disease. The sensible properties and physical alterations of animal fluids and solids depended upon different proportions, movements, and com- binations of these particles. The elaborate work Pharma- ceutice Rationalis, based on these materials, had much influence in its time, though it was soon forgotten. But some parts of Willis's works, such as his descriptions of uervous diseases, and his account (the earliest) of diabetes, are classical contributions to scientific medicine. In the application of chemistry to the examination of secretions Willis made some important steps. The chemical school met with violent opposition, partly from the adherents of the ancient medicine, partly from the iatro-mechanical school. Towards the end of the 17th century appeared an English medical reformer who sided with none of these schools, but may be said in some respects to have sur- passed and dispensed with them.

Sydenham and Locke-—Thomas Sydenham (1624-89) was educated at Oxford aud at Montpellier. He was well acquainted with the works of the ancient physicians, and probably fairly so with chemistry. Of his knowledge of anatomy nothing definite can be said, as he seldom refers to it. His main avowed principle was to do without hypothesis, and study the actual diseases in an unbiassed manner. As his model in medical methods, Sydenham repeatedly and pointedly refers to Hippocrates, and he has not unfairly been called the English Hippocrates. He resembled his Greek master in the high value he set on the study of the "natural history of disease"; in the importance he attached to "epidemic constitution," that is, to the influence of weather and other natural causes in

modifying disease; aud further in his conception of the |

healing power of nature in disease, a doctrine which he even expanded beyond the teaching of Hippocrates. According to Sydenham, a disease is nothing more than an effort of nature to restore the health of the patient by the elimination of the morbific matter. The extent to which his practice was influenced by this and other a priori conceptions prevents us from classing Sydenham as a pure empiric, but he had the rare merit of never permitting himself to be enslaved even by his own theories, Still less was his mind warped by either of the two great systems, the classical and the chemical, which then divided the medical world. Sydenham's influence on European medicine was very great. His principles were welcomed as a return to nature by those who were weary of theoretical disputes. He introduced a milder and better way of treating fevers,

especially small-pox, and gave strong support to the use | successful physicians of modern times.

811

an advocate of bleeding, and often carried it to excess. Another important point in Sydenham's doctrine is his clear recognition of many diseases as being what would be now called specific, and not due merely to an alteration in the primary qualities or humours of the older schools. From this springs his high appreciation of specific inedicines.

One name should always be mentioned along with Sydenham—that of his friend John Locke. The great sensational philosopher was a thoroughly trained physi- cian, and practised privately. He shared and defended mauy of Sydenham's principles, and in the few medical observations he has left shows himself to be even more thorough-going than the "English Hippocrates." It is deeply to be regretted in the interests of medicine that he did not write more. It is, however, reasonable to suppose that lis commanding intellect often makes itself felt in the words of Sydenham. One sentence of Locke's in a letter to W. Molyneux sums up the practical side of Sydenham's teaching,

*“*You cannot imagine how far a little observation carefully made by a man not tied wp to the four humours [Galen], or sal, sulphur, and mercury, [Paracelsus], or to acid and aleali [Sylvius and Willis] which has of late prevailed, will carry a man in the curing of diseases though very stubborn and dangerous ; and that with very little and common things, and almost no medicine at all.”*

We thus see that, while the great anatomists, physicists, and chemists, men of the type of Willis, Borelli, and Boyle, were laying foundations which were later on built up into the fabric of scientific medicine, little good was done by the premature application of their half-understood prin- ciples to practice. The reform of practical medicine was effected by men who aimed at, and partly succeeded in, rejecting all hypothesis and returning to the unbiassed study of natural processes, as shown in health and disease.

Sydenham showed that these processes might be profit- ably studied and dealt with without explaining them ; and, by turning men’s minds away from explanations and fixing them on facts, he enriched medicine with a method more fruitful than any discoveries in detail. From this time forth the reign of canonical authority in medicine was at an end, though the dogmatic spirit long survived.

The 18th century.—The medicine of the 18th century is notable, like that of the latter part of the 17th, for the striving after complete theoretical systems. The influence of the iatro-physical school was by no means exhausted ; and in England, especially through the indirect influence of Newton’s great astronomical generalizations, it took on a mathematical aspect, and is sometimes known as iatro- mathematical. This phase is most clearly developed in Pit- cairn (1652-1713), who, though a determined opponent of metaphysical explanations, and of the chemical doctrines, gave to his own rude mechanical explanations of life and disease almost the dogmatic completeness of a theological system. His countryman and pupil, George Cheyne, who lived some years at Bath, published a new theory of fevers

_on the mechanical system, which had a great reputation.

Their English contemporaries and successors, Freind, Cole, and Mead, leaned also to mechanical explanations, but with a distrust of systematic theoretical completeness, which was perhaps partly a national characteristic, partly the result of the teaching of Sydenham and Locke. Freind (1675- 1728) in his Hmmenologia gave a mechanical explanation of the phenomena of menstruation. He is also one of the most distinguished writers on the history of medicine. Cole (see above) published mechanical hypotheses concern- ing the causation of fevers which closely agree with those of the Italian iatro-mechanical school. More distinguished in his own day than any of these was Richard Mead (1673-1754), one of the most accomplished and socially Mead was the

of specific medicines, especially Peruvian bark. He was | pupil of the equally popular and successful John Radcliffo

(1650-1714), who had acquired from Sydenham a contempt for book learning, and belonged to no school in medicine but the school of common sense. Radcliffe left, however, no work requiring mention in a history of medicine. Mead, a man of great learning and intellectual activity, was an ardent advocate of the mathematical doctrines. "It is very evident," he says, " that all other means of improv- ing medicine have been found ineffectual, by the stand it was at for two thousand years, and that, since mathe-

maticians have set themselves to the study of it, men |

already begin to talk so intelligibly and comprehensibly, even about abstruse matters, that it is to be hoped that mathematical learning will be the distinguishing mark of a physician and a quack." His Mechanical Account of Poisons, in the first edition (1702), gave an explanation of the effects of poisons, as acting only on the blood. Afterwards he modified his hypothesis, and referred the disturbances produced to the "nervous liquor," which he supposed to be a quantity of the 'universal elastic matter" diffused through the universe, by which Newton explained the phenomena of light, z.¢., what was afterwards called the luminiferous ether. Mead's treatise on Zhe Power of the Sun and Moon over Human Bodies (1704), equally inspired by Newton's discoveries, was a premature attempt to assign

the influence of atmospheric pressure and other cosmical causes in producing disease. His works contain, however, many original experiments, and excellent practical observations. James Keill (1673-1719) applied Newtonian and mechanical principles to the explanation of bodily functions with still greater accuracy and completeness; but his researches have more importance for physiology than for practical medicine.

Boerhaave.—None of these men founded a school,—a re- sult due in part to their intellectual character, in part to the absence in England of medical schools equivalent in posi- tion and importance to the universities of the Continent. An important academical position was, on the other hand, onc of the reasons why a physician not very different in his way of thinking from the English physicians of the age of Queen Anne was able to take a far more predominant position in the medical world. Hermann Boerhaave (1668-1738) was emphatically a great teacher. He was for many years professor of medicine at Leyden, where he lec- tured five hours a day, and excelled in influence and reputa- tion, not only his greatest forerunners, Montanus of Padua and Sylvius of Leyden, but probably every subsequent teacher. The hospital of Leyden, though with only twelve beds available fur teaching, became the centre of medical influence in Europe. Many of the leading English physicians of the 18th century studied there; Van Swieten, a pupil of Boerhaave, transplanted the latter's method of teaching to Vienna, and founded the noted Vienna school of medicine. As the organizer, and almost the constructor, of the modern method of clinical instruction, the services of Boerhaave to the progress of medicine were immense, and can hardly be overrated. In his teaching, as in his practice, he avowedly followed the method of Hippocrates and Sydenham, both of whom he enthusiastically admired. In his medical doctrines he must be pronounced an eclectic, though taking his stand mainly on the iatro- mechanical school. The best known parts of Boerhaave's system are his doctrines of inflammation, obstruction, and "plethora." By the last-named especially he was long remembered, His object was to make all the anatomical and physiological acquisitions of his age, even microscop- ical anatomy, which he diligently studied, available for use in the practice of medicine. He thus differed from Sydenham, who took almost as little account of modern science as of ancient dogma. Boerhaave may be in some respects compared to Galen, but again differed from him in

~_

CINE

| that he always abstained from attempting to reduce hig

knowledge to a uniform and coherent system. Boerhaave | attached great importance to the study of the medical classics, but rather treated them historically than quoted them as canonical authorities. It almost follows from the nature of the case that the great task of Boerhaave's life, a synthesis of ancient aud modern medicine, and the work in which this is chietly contained, his celebrated Jnstitutions, could not have any great permanent value. Nearly the same thing is true even of the Aphorisms, in which, follow. ing the example of Hippocrates, he endeavoured to sum up the results of his long experience.

Hoffmann and Stahl.We have now to speak of two writers in wliom the systematic tendency of the 18th century showed itself most completely.

Friedrich Hoffmann (1660-1742), like Boerhaave, owed his influence, and perhaps partly his intellectual charac- teristics, to his academical position. He was in 1693 appointed the first professor of medicine in the university of Halle, then just founded by the elector Frederick IIL. Here he became, as did his contemporary and rival Stahl, a popular and influential teacher, though their university had not the European importance of Leyden. Hoffmann's "system " was apparently intended to reconcile the oppos- ing "spiritual" and " materialistic" views of nature, and is thought to have becn much influenced by the philosophy of Leibnitz. His medical theories rest upon a complete theory of the universe. Life depended upon a universally diffused ether, which animals breathe in from the atmo- sphere, and which is contained in all parts of the body. It accumulates in the brain, and there generates the " nervous fluid" or pnewma,—a theory closely resembling that of Mead on the "nervous liquor," unless indeed Mead bor- rowed it from Hoffmann. On this system: are explained all the phenomena of life and disease. Health depends on the maintenance of a proper "'tone" in the body,—some diseases being produced by excess of tone, or "spasm" ; others by "atony," or want of tone. But it is impossible here to follow its further developments. Independently of his system, which has long ceased

to exert any influence, Hoff- mann made some contributions to practical medicine ; and his great knowledge of chemistry enabled him to investi- gate the subject of mineral waters. He was equally skilful in pharmacy, but lowered his position by the practice, which would be unpardonable in a modern physieian, of trafficking in secret remedies. Some of these are even to this day sold for the benefit of the orphanage at Halle.

George Ernest Stahl (1660-1734) was for more than twenty years professor of medicine at Halle, and thus a colleague of Hoffmann, whom he resembled in construct- ing a complete theoretical system, though their systems had little or nothing in common. Stahl's chief aint was to oppose materialism. For mechanical conceptions he sub- stituted the theory of "animism,"—attributing to the soul the functions of ordinary animal life in man, while the life of other creatures was left to mechanical laws. The symptoms of disease were explained as efforts of the soul to rid itself from morbid influences, the soul acting reasonably with respect to the end of self-preservation. The anima thus corresponds partly to the "nature" of Sydenham, while in other respects it resembles the archeus of Van Helmont. Animism in its completeness met with little acceptance during the lifetime of its author, but influ- enced some of the iatro-physical school. Stahl was the author of the theory of "phlogiston " in chemistry, which in its day had great importance. ;

Haller and Morgagni.—From the subtleties of rival systems it is a satisfaction to turn to two movements 10 the medicine of the 18th century which, though they did es , extinguish the spirit of system-making, opened up paths o

[HISTORY,

HISTORY. |

investigation by which the systems were ultimately super- seded. -These are physiology in the modern sense, as dating from Haller, and pathological anatomy, as dating from Morgagni.

Albrecht von Haller (1708-77) was a man of even more

encyclopaedic attainments than Boerhaave. He advanced chemistry, botany, anatomy, as well as physiology, and was incessantly occupied in endeavouring to apply his scientific studies to practical medicine, thus continuing the work of his great teacher Boerhaave. Besides all this he was probably more profoundly acquainted with the litera- ture and bibliography of medicine than any one before or since. Haller occupied in the new university of Géttingen (founded 1737) a position corresponding to that of Boerhaave at Leyden, and in like manner influenced a very large circle of pupils. The appreciation of his work in physiology belongs to the history of that science; we are only concerned here with its influence on medicine. Haller's definition of irritability as a property of muscular tissue, and its distinction from sensibility as a property of nerves, struck at the root of the prevailing hypothesis respect- ing aninial activity.

MEDICINE

|

It was no longer necessary to suppose |

that a half conscious "auima" was directing every move- |

ment. Moreover, Haller's views did not rest on @ priori speculation, but on numerous experiments. the first to investigate the action of medicines on healthy persons. aries learnt was not the iniportance of experiment, but only the need of contriving other "systems" less open to objec- tion; and thus the influence of Haller led directly to the theoretical subtleties of Cullen and John Brown, and only

indirectly and later on to the general anatomy of Bichat. |

He was among |

Unfortunately the lesson which his contempor- |

The great name of Haller does not therefore occupy a very —

prominent place in the history of practical medicine.

had and still preserves a permanent importance beyond that of all the contemporary theorists. In a seriesof letters De sedibus et causis morborum per anatomen indagatis, pub- lished when he was in his eightieth year, he describes the appearances met with at the post-mortem examination as well as the symptoms during life in a number of cases of various diseases, It was not the first work of the kind. Bonet had published his Sepulcretum in 1679; and obser- vations of post-mortem appearances had been made by Montanus, Tulp, Vieussens, Valsalva, Lancisi, Haller, and others. But never before was so large a collection of cases brought together, described with such accuracy, or illustrated with equal anatomical and niedical knowledge. Morgagni's work at once made an epoch in the science. Morbid anatomy now became a recognized branch of medical research, and the movement was started which has lasted till our own day.

The contribution of Morgagni to medical science must be regarded as in some respects the counterpart of Syden- ham's. The latter had, in neglecting anatomy, neglected the most solid basis for studying the natural history of disease ; though perhaps it was less from choice than be- cause his practice, as he was not attached to a hospital, gave him no opportunities. But it is on the combination of the two methods, that of Sydenham and of Morgagni, that modern medicine rests; and it is through these that it has been able to make steady progress in its own field, inde- pendently of the advance of physiology or other sciences.

The method of Morgagni found many imitators, both in his own country and in others. In England the first important name in this field is at the same time that of the first writer of a systematic work in any language on morbid anatomy, Matthew Baillie (1761-1823), who published his treatise in 1793.

Cullen and Brown.—It remains to speak of two system-

_ or feeding treatment .of fevers.

atic writers on medicine in the 18th century, whose great reputation prevents them from being passed over, though their real contribution to the progress of medicine was not great—Cullen and Brown.

William Cullen (1712-90) was a most eminent and popular professor of medicine at Edinburgh. The same academical influences as surrounded the Dutch and German founders of systems were doubtless partly concerned in leading him to form the plan of a comprehensive system of medicine. Cullen's system was largely based on the new physiological doctrine of irritability, but is especially noticeable for the importance attached to nervous action. Thus even gout was regarded as a "neurosis." These pathological principles of Cullen are contained in his First Lines of the Practice of Physic, an extremely popular book, often reprinted and translated. More importance is to be attached to his Nosology or Classification of Diseases, The attempt to classify diseases on a natural-history plan was not new, having been commenced by Sauvages and others, and is perhaps not a task of the highest importance. Cullen drew out a classification of great and needless com- plexity, the chief part of which is now forgotten, but several of his main divisions are still preserved.

It is difficult to form a clear estimate of the importance of the last systematizer of medicine, John Brown (1735- 88), for, though in England he has been but little regarded, the wide thongh short-lived popularity of his system on the Continent shows that it must have contained some elements of brilliancy, if not originality. His theory of medicine professed to explain the processes of life and disease, and the methods of cure, upon one simple principle, —that of the property of '" excitability," in virtue of which the "exciting powers," defined as being (1) external forces and (2) the functions of the system itself, call forth the vital phenomena "sense, motion, mental function, and passion." All exciting powers are stimulant, the apparent debilitating or sedative effect of some being due to a deficiency in the

, degree of stimulus; so that the final conclusion is that " the

whole phenomena of life, health as well as disease, consist in stimulus and nothing else." Brown recognized some diseases as sthenic, others as asthenic, the latter requiring stimulating treatment, the former the reverse ;

but his prac- tical conclusion was that 97 per cent. of all diseases required a "stimulating" treatment. In this he claimed to have made the most salutary reform because all physicians from Hippocrates had treated diseases by depletion and debili- tating measures with the object of curing by elimination. It would be unprofitable to attempt a complete analysis of the Brunonian system ; and it is difficult now to understand why it attracted so much attention in its day. To us at the present time it seems merely a dialectical construction, having its begiuning and end in definitions, the words power, stimulus, &c., being used in such a way as not to correspond to any precise physical conceptions, still less to definite material objects or forces. One recommendation of the system was that it favoured a milder system of treatment than was at that time in vogue; Brown may be said to have been the first advocate of the modern stimulant He advocated the use of '"'animal soups" or beef tea. Further he had the discern- ment to see that certain symptoms, such as convulsions and delirium, which were then commonly held always to indi- cate inflammation, were often really signs of weakness. The fortunes of Brown's system (called, from having been originally written in Latin, the Brunonian) form one of the strangest chapters in the history of medicine. In Scotland, Brown so far won the sympathy of the students that riotous conflicts took place between his partisans and opponents, In England his system took little root. In Italy, on the other hand, it received enthusiastic support, and, naturally,

a corresponding degree of opposition. The most important adherent to Brown's system was Rasori (1763-1837), who taught it as professor at Pavia, but afterwards substituted his own system of contra-stimulus. The theoretical differ- ences between this and the "stimulus" theory need not be expounded. The practical difference in the corresponding treatment was very great, as Rasori advocated a copious use of bleeding and of depressing remedies, such as antimony. Joseph Frank, a German, professor at Pavia, afterwards of Vienna, the author of an encyclopedic work on medicine now forgotten, embraced the Brunonian system, though he afterwards introduced some modifications, aud trans- planted it to Vienna. Many names are quoted as partisans or opponents of the Brunonian system in Italy, but scarcely one of them has any other claim to be remembered.

enthusiasm and controversial heat. to spread the new ideas(though giving them out as his own), but Weikard was the first avowed advocate of the system.

Roschlaub (1768-1835) modified Brown's system into the |

theory of excitement (Lrregungstheorie), which for a time was extreniely popular in Germany. The enthusiasm of the younger Brunonians in Germany was as great as in Edinburgh or in Italy, and led to serious riots in the university of Gottingen. In America the system was

enthusiastically adopted by a noted physician, Benjamin | Rush, of Philadelphia, who was followed by a considerable | France was not more influenced by the new school | In both countries the tendency towards | positive science and progress by objective investigation | was too marked for any theoretical system to have more. In France, however, the | influence of Brown's theories is very clearly seen in the | writings of Broussais, who, though not rightly classed with |

school. than England.

than a passing influence,

the system-makers, since his conclusions were partly based

upon anatomical investigation, resembled them in his at- |

tempt to unite theory and practice in one comprehensive synthesis. The explanation of the meteoric splendonr of the Brunonian system in other countries seems to be as follows. In Italy the period of intellectual decadence had set in,

and no serious scientific ardour remained to withstand the | novelties of abstract theory. In Germany the case was |

somewhat different. Intellectual activity was not wanting, but the great achievements of the 18th century in philo- sophy and the moral sciences had fostered a love of

In | Germany the new system called forth, a little later, no less | Girtanuer first began |

if

MEDICINE

[HISTORY.

these views were published in one of his later works.) In treatment of disease Hahnemann rejected entirely the notion of a ws medicatrix nature, and was guided by his well-known principle "similia similibus curantur," which he explained as depending on the law that in order to get rid of a disease some remedy must be given which should substitute for the disease an action dynamically similar, but weaker. The original malady being thus got rid of, the vital force would easily be able to cope with and extinguish the slighter disturbance caused by the remedy,

Something very similar was held by Brown, who taught

that "indirect debility " was to be cured by a lesser degree of the same stimulus as had caused the original disturbance. Generally, however, Hahnemann's views contradict those of Brown, though moving somewhat in the same plane. In order to select remedies which should fulfil the indica- tion of producing symptoms like those of the disease, Hahnemann made many observations of the action of drugs on healthy persons. He did not originate this line of research, for it had been pursued if not originated by Haller, and cultivated systematically by Tommasini, an Italian "contra- stimulist ;" but he carried it out with much elaboration. His results, nevertheless, were vitiated by being obtained in the interest of a theory, and by singular want of discrimination. Hahnemaunn's doctrines met with much opposition on the part of the medical pro- fession, and he was hence led to state his case to the "lay" public as a sort of court of appeal; and thus matters of science were made the theme of much popular controversy. This expedient, in which Hahnemann had been in a small degree anticipated by Brown, contributed largely to the success of his system. The appeal flattered a prevalent belief in the right of private judgement, even in technical and learned subjects. Hahnemann was thus able to take up the position (and not

without justification) of a victim of professional prejudice. The anomalous position into which professional scorn and extra-professional popularity brought him produced a distinct deterioration in the character of his work. In his second period he developed

_ the extraordinary theory of "potentiality" or dynamiza-

abstract speculation; and some sort of cosmical or.

general system was thought indispensable in every depart- ment of special science. Hence another generation had to pass away before Germany found herself on the level, in scientific investigation, of France and England.

Before the theoretic tendency of the 18th century was quite exhausted, it displayed itself in a system which, though in some respects isolated in the history of medicine, stands nearest to that of Brown,—that, namely, of Halme-

mann (see Hommopatny). Hahnemann (1753-1844) was | _accepts nor finds it worth while to controvert.

in conception as revolutionary a reformer of medicine as Paracelsus.

causes of symptoms as useless. While thus rejecting all the lessons of morbid anatomy and pathology, he put for- ward views respecting the causes of disease which hardly bear to be seriously stated. All chronic maladies result either from three diseases—psora (the itch), syphilis, or sycosis (a skin disease), or else are maladies produced by medicines. Seven-eighths of all chronic diseases are pro- duced by itch driven inwards! (It is fair to say that ee ee a

The itch is really an affection produced by the presence in the

skin of a species of mite (Acarus scabiez), and when this is destroyed or removed the disease is at an end.

He professed to base medicine entirely on a | knowledge of symptoms, regarding all investigation of the |

tion,—namely, that medicines gained in strength by being diluted, if the dilution was accompanied by shaking or pounding, which was supposed to " potentialize" or in- crease the potency of the medicive. On this extraordinary principle Hahnemann ordered his original tinctures to be reduced in strength to one-fiftieth ; these first dilu- tions again to one-fiftieth ; and so on, even till the thirtieth dilution, which he himself used by preference, and to which he ascribed the highest " potentiality." Itis hardly

_ hecessary to point out that even the lower dilutions involve

quantities which no analysis can weigh, measure, or even recognize. The still greater eccentricities of Hahnemann's later works need not be recounted. From a theoretical point of view Hahnemann's is one of the abstract systems, pretending to universality, which modern medicine neither In the treatment of disease his practical innovations came at a fortunate time, when the excesses of the depletory system had only partially been superseded by the equally injurious opposite extreme of Brown's stimulant treatment. Hahnemann's use of mild and often quite inert remedies contrasted favourably with both of these. Further he did good by insisting upon simplicity in prescribing, when it was the custom to give a number of drugs, often hetero- geneous and inconsistent, in the same prescription. But these indirect benefits were quite independent of the truth or falsity of his theoretical system.

Positive Progress in the 18th Century.—In looking back on the repeated attempts in the 18th century to construct a universal system of medicine, it is impossible not to

MEDI

regret the waste of brilliant gifts and profound acquire- ments which they involved. It was fortunate, however, that the accumulation of positive knowledge in medicine did not cease. While Germany and Scotland, as the chief homes of abstract speculation, gave birth to most of the | theories, progress in objective science was most marked in | other countries, —in Italy first, and afterwards in England and France. We must retrace our steps a little to enumerate several distinguished names which, from the nature of the case, hardly admit of classification.

In Italy the tradition of the great anatomists and . physiologists of the 17th century produced a series of accurate observers and practitioners. Among the first of these were Antonio Maria Valsalva (1666-1723), still better known as an anatomist; Giovanni Maria Lancisi (1654-1720), also an anatomist, the author of a classical work on tlie diseases of the heart and aneurisms; and Ip- | polito Francisco Albertini (1662-1738), whose researches on the same class of diseases were no less important.

In France Jean Baptiste Sénac (1693-1770) wrote also an important work on the affections of the heart. Sauvages, otherwise F. B. de Lacroix (1706-67), gave under the title Nosologia Methodica a natural-history | classification of diseases ; Jean Astruc (1684-1766) con- tributed to the knowledge. of general diseases. But the state of medicine in that country till the end of the 18th century was unsatisfactory as compared with some other parts of Europe.

In England the brilliancy of the early part of the century in practical medicine was hardly maintained to the end, and presented indeed a certain contrast with the remarkable and unflagging progress of surgery in the same period, The roll of the College of Physicians does not furnish many distinguished names. Among these should be mentioned John Fothergill (1712-80), who investi-_ gated the "putrid sore throat" now called diphtheria, and the form of neuralgia popularly known as tic douloureux. | A physician of Plymouth, John Huxham (1694-1768), | made researches on epidemic fevers, in the spirit of Sydenham and Hippocrates, which are of the highest importance. William Heberden (1710-1801), a London physician, called by Samuel Johnson wltimus Romanorum, "the last of our learned physicians," left a rich legacy of practical observations in the Commentaries published after his death. More important in their results than any of these works were the discoveries of Epwarp JENNER (7.v.), respecting the prevention of small-pox by vaccina- | tion, in which he superseded the partially useful but dangerous practice of inoculation, which had been intro- duced into England in 1721. The history of this dis- covery need not be told here, but it may be pointed out that, apart from its practical importance, it has had great influence on the scientific study of infectious diseases. The name of John Pringle (1707-82) should also be mentioned as one of the first to study epidemics of fevers — occurring in prisons and

camps. His work entitled Odser- | vations on the Diseases of an Army was translated into many European languages, and became the standard authority on the subject. —

In Germany the only important school of practical medicine was that of Vienna, as revived by Van Swieten (1700-72), a pupil of Boerhaave, under the patronage of Maria Theresa. Van Swieten's commentaries on the aphorisms of Boerhaave are thought more valuable than the original text. Other eminent names of the same school are Anton de Haen (1704-76), Anton Stérck (1731-1803), Maximilian Stoll (1742-88), and John Peter Frank (1745-1821), father of Joseph Frank before- mentioned as an adherent of the Brownian system, and | like his son carried away for a time by the new doctrines. |

HISTORY. |

CINE 815

This, the old " Vieuna School," was not distinguished: for any notable discoveries, but for success in clinical teaching, and for its sound method of studying the actual facts of disease during life and after death, which largely contri- buted to the establishment of the " positive medicine" of the 19th century.

One novelty, however, of the first importance is due to

_a Vienna physician of the period, Leopold Avenbrugger

(1722-1809), the inventor of the method of recognizing diseases of the chest by percussion. Avenbrugger's inethod was that of direct percussion with the tips of the fingers, not that which is now used, of mediate percussion with the intervention of a finger or plessimeter; but the results of his method. were the same, and its value nearly as great. Avenbrugger's great work, the Inventum Novum, was published in 1761. 'The new practice was received at first with contempt and even ridicule, and afterwards by Stoll and Peter Frank with only grudging approval. It did not receive due recognition till 1808, when Corvisart translated the Jnventum Novum into French, and Aven- brugger's method rapidly attained a European reputation. Surpassed,

but not eclipsed, by. the still inore important art of auscultation introduced by Laennec, it is hardly too much to say that this simple aud purely mechanical invention has had more influence on the development of modern medicine than all the "systems" evolved by the most brilliant intellects of the 18th century.

Karly Part of the 19th Century.—It is not possible to carry the history of medicine, in a sketch such as this, beyond the early years of the 19th century, both because the mass of details becomes so large as to require more minute treatment, and because it is difficult as we approach our own times to preserve the necessary historical per- spective. It was, however, in this period that what we regard as the modern school of medicine was formed, and

took the shape which it has preserved to our own days.

The characteristic of the modern school is the adoption in medicine of the methods of research of physical science, and the gradually declining importance attached to theory and abstract reasoning,—hypotheses, though not neglected, being used as means of research rather than as ultimate conclu- sions. Its method may therefore be called the positive method, or that of rational empiricism. The growth of the new school was first seen in two. European countries, in France and England, and must be separately followed in the two. Germany entered the field later.

Ftise of the Positive School in France.—The reform of medicine in France must be dated from the great intel- lectual awakening caused by the Revolution, but more definitely starts with the researches in anatomy and physiology of Marie Francois Xavier Bichat (1771-1802), The importance in science of Bichat's classical works, especially of the Anatomie générale, cannot be estimated here ; we can only point out their value as supplying a new basis for pathology or the science of disease. Among the most ardent of his followers was Frangois

_ Joseph Victor Broussais (1772-1838), whose theoretical

views, partly founded on those of Brown and partly on the so-called vitalist school of Bordeu and Barthez, differed from 'these essentially in being

avowedly based on ana- tomical observations. Broussais's chief aim was to find an anatomical basis for all diseases, but he is especially known for his attempt to explain all fevers as a consequence

_ of irritation or inflammation of the intestinal canal (gastro-

entérite). A number of other maladies, especially general diseases and those commonly regarded as nervous, were attributed to the same cause. It would be impossible now to trace the steps which led to this wild and long since exploded theory. It led, among other consequences, to an enormous misuse of bleeding. Leeches were his favourite

instruments, and so much so that he is said to have used | (1793-1867), and Trousseau (1801-1866), the eloquent

100,000 in his own hospital wards during one year. He was equalled if not surpassed in this excess by his follower Bouillaud, known for his important work on heart diseases. Broussais's system, to which he gave the name of " Médecine Physiologique" did much indirect good, in fixing attention upon morbid changes in the organs, aud thus led to the rise of the strongly opposed anatomical and pathological school of Corvisart, Laennec, and Bayle. Jean Nicolas Corvisart (1755-1821) has already been mentioned as the translator and introducer into France of Avenbrugger's work on percussion. He introduced some improvements in the method, but the only real advance was the introduction of mediate percussion by Piorry in 1828. The discovery had, however, yet to be completed by that of auscultation, or listening to sounds produced in the chest by breathing, the movements of the heart, é&c. The combination of these methods constitutes what is now known as physical diagnosis. Laennec (1781-1826) was the inventor of this most important perhaps of all methods of medical research. Except for some trifling notices of sounds heard in certain diseases, this method was entirely

new. It was definitely expounded in au almost complete form in his work De Vauscultation médiate, published in 1819. Laennec

attached undue importance to the use of the stethoscope, | Hunter (1728-1793), was also a teacher of anatomy, and

aud laid too much weight on specific signs of specific diseases ; otherwise his method in its main features has remained unchanged. The result of his discovery was an entire revolution in the knowledge of diseases of the chest ; but it would be a mistake to forget that an essential factor in this revolution was the simultaneous study of the con- dition of the diseased organs as seen after death. Without the latter, it is difficult to see how the information con- veyed by sounds could ever have been verified. This increase of knowledge is therefore due, not to auscultation alone, but to auscultation combined with morbid anatomy. In the case of Laennec himself this qualification takes nothing from his fame, for he studied so minutely the relations of post-mortem appearances to symptoms during life that, had he not discovered auscultation, his researches in morbid anatomy would have made him famous. The pathologico-anatomical metliod was also followed with great zeal and success by Gaspard Laurent Bayle (1774- 1816), whose researches on tubercle, and the changes of 'the lungs and other organs in consumption, are the founda- tion of most that has been done since his time. It was of course antecedent to the discovery of auscultation. Start- ing from these men arose a school of physicians who endeavoured to give to the study of symptoms the same precision as belonged to anatomical observations, and by the combination of both methods made a new era in clinical medicine. Among these were Chomel (1788- 1858), Louis (1787-1872), Cruveilhier (1791-1874), and Andral (1797-1876). Louis, by his researches on pul- monary consumption and typhoid fever, had the chief merit of refuting the doctrines of Broussais, In another respect also he aided in establishing an exact science of medicine by the introduction of the numerical or statistical method. By this method only can the fallacies which are attendant on drawing conclusions from isolated cases be avoided ; and thus the chief objection which has been made to regarding medicine as an inductive science has been removed. lLouis's method was improved and systematized by Gavarret ; and its utility is now universally recognized. Space does not permit us to trace further the history of this brilliant period

of French medicine, during which the superiority of the school of Paris could hardly be contested. We can only mention the names of Bretonneau (1771-— 1862), Rostan (1790-1866), D'Alibert (1766-1837), Rayer

René Théophile Hyacinthe |

and popular teacher.

Linglish Medicine from 1800 to 1840.—The progress of medicine in England during this period displays the same characteristics as at other times, viz., a gradual and unin- terrupted development, without startling changes such as are caused by the sudden rise or fall of a new school, Hardly auy theoretical system is of English birth ; Erasmus Darwin (1731-1802), the grandfather of the great Charles Darwin, alone makes an exception. In his Zoonomia (1794) he expounded a theory of life and disease which had somie resemblance to that of Brown, though arrived at (he says) by a different chain of reasoning.

Darwin's work shows, however, the tendency to connect medicine with physical science, which was an immediate consequence of the scientific discoveries of the end of the 18th century, when Priestley and Cavendish in England exercised the same influence as Lavoisier in France. The English school of medicine was also profoundly stirred by the teachings of the two brothers William and John Hunter, especially the latter.—who must therefore be briefly mentioned, though their own researches were chiefly concerned with subjects lying a little outside the limits of this sketch. William Hunter (1718-1783) was known in London as a brilliant teacher of anatomy and successful obstetric physician ; his younger brother and pupil, John

practised as a surgeon. His immense contributions to anatomy and pathology cannot be estimated here, but his services in stimulating research and training investi- gators belong to the history of general medicine. They are sufficiently evidenced by the fact that Jenner and Baillie were his pupils.

The same scientific bent is seen in the greater attention paid to morbid anatomy (which dates from Baillie), and the more scientific method of

studying diseases. An instance of the latter is the work of Robert Willan (1757-1812) on diseases of the skin,—a department of medicine in which abstract and hypothetical views had been especially injurious. Willan, by following the natural- history method of Sydenham, at once put the study on a sound basis; and his work has been the starting point of the most important modern researches. About the same time William Charles Wells (1757-1817), a scientific investigator of remarkable power, and the author of a cele- brated essay on dew, published observations on alterations in the urine, which, though little noticed at the time, were of great value as assisting in the important discovery made some years afterwards by Bright.

These observers, and others who cannot be mentioned here, belong to the period when English medicine was still little influenced by the French school. Shortly after 1815, however, when the Continent was again open to English travellers, many English doctors studied in Paris, and the discoveries of their great French contemporaries began to be known. The method of auscultation was soon 1ntro- duced into this country by pupils of Laennec. Jolin Forbes in 1824, and William Stokes of Dublin in 1825, published treatises on the use of the stethoscope. Forbes also translated the works of Laennec and Avenbrugger, aud an entire revolution was soon effected in the knowledge of diseases of the chest. James Hope and Peter Mere Latham further developed this subject, and the former was also ~ known for lis researches in morbid anatomy. The com- bination of clinical and anatomical research led, as in the hands of the great French physicians, to important dis- coveries by English investigators. The discovery by Richard Bright (1789-1858) of the disease of the kidueys known by his name, has proved to be one of the most momentous of this century. It was published in Reports of

Medical Cases, 1827-31. Thomas Addison takes, some- what later, a scarcely infcrior place. ‘he remarkable physiological discoveries of Bell and Marshall Hall for the first time rendered possible the discrimination of diseases of the spinal cord. Several of these physicians were also eminent for their clinical teaching—an art in which Englishmen had up till then been greatly deficient. Although many names of scarcely less note might be

mentioned among the London physicians of the early part of the century, we must pass them over to consider the progress of medicine in Scotland and Ireland. Edinburgh the admirable teaching of Cullen had raised the medical faculty to a height of prosperity of which his successor, James Gregory (1758-1821), was not unworthy. His nephew, William Pulteney Alison (1790-1859), was even more widely known. These great teachers niaintained in the northern university a continuous tradition of suc-

cessful teaching, which the difference in academical and |

other circumstances rendered hardly possible in London. Nor was the northern school wanting in special investi-

ators, such as John Abercrombie, known for his work on | P > }

diseases of the brain and spinal cord published in 1828, and many others. that the Dublin school in this period produced two physiciaus of the highest distinction. Robert James Graves (c. 1800-1853) was a most eiineut clinical teacher and observer, whose lectures are regarded as the model of clinical tcaching, and indeed served as snch to the most popular teacher of the Paris school in the middle of this century, Trousseau. William Stokes (1804-1878) was especially known for lis works on diseases of the chest and of the heart, and for his clinical teaching.

German Medicine from 1800 to 1840.—Of the other countries of Europe, it is now only necessary to mention Germany. Here the chief home of positive medicine was still for a long time Vienna, where the "new Vienna school" continued and surpassed the glory of the old. Joseph Skoda (born 1805) extended, and in some respects corrected, the art of auscultation as left by Laennec. Karl Rokitansky (1804-1878), by his colossal labours, placed the science of morbid anatomy on a permanent basis, and enriched it by numerous discoveries of detail. Most of the ardent cultivators of this science in Germany in the next generation were his pupils. though some great names might be found, as Romberg (1795-1873), the founder of the modern era in the study

of nervous diseases, the general spirit was scholastic and | | Roll of the Royal College of Physicians of London, 2d ed., 1878,

the result barren, till the teaching of one man, whom the modern German physicians generally regard as the regenerator of scicntific medicine in their country, made itself felt. Johann Lucas Schénlein (1793-1864) was first professor at Wiirzburg, afterwards at Zurich, and for

MEDINA, or rather Ex-Mepina (the city), or Mepinat

Rasti ALAg (the city of the apostle of God), a town |

of the Hij4z in Arabia, in 25° N. lat., 40 E. long.,! the refuge of Mohammed on his flight from Mecca, and a renowned place of Moslem pilgrimage, consecrated by the possession of his tomb. The name El-Medina goes back to the Koran (sur. xxxiii. 60); the old name was Yathrib, the Lathrippa of Ptolemy and Jathrippa of Stephanus Byzantius,

er —— en

1 This can only be viewed as a very rough estimate. The road from Yanbu' on the Red Sea, which runs somewhat north of east, is by Burton's estimate 132 miles. Fron: Medina to Mecca by the inland or high road he makes 248 miles. The usual road near the coast by Rabigh and Kholeys and thence to W. Fatima cannot be very differ- ent in length. Caravans traverse it in about ten or eleven days.

Turning to Ireland, it should be said ,

In the other Gernian schools, |

MED—MED.

In |

817

twenty years at Berlin (from 1839-1859). Schénlein's positive contributions to medical science were not large ; but he made in 1839 one discovery, apparently small, but in reality most suggestive, namely, that the contagious disease of the head called favus is produced by the growth in the hair of a parasitic fungus. In this may be found the germ of the startling modern

discoveries in parasitic diseases. His systematic doctrines founded the so-called 'natural history school;" but his real merit was that of the founder or introducer of a method. In the words of Haeser, "Schénlein has the incontestable

merit of having been the first to establish in Germany the

|

- 1821-28, 5 vols.; also in Freneh, Paris, 1815).

exact method of the French and the English, and to impregnate this method with the vivifying spirit of German research." The name of Schénlein thus brings us to the threshold of the modern German school of medicine,— the most scientific and exact in Europe, and in its spirit strikingly in contrast with the theoretical subtlety of German systematists in the last century.

Literature.—The earliest work of authority on the history of medicine is that of Daniel le Clerc (Histoire de la Médecine, Geneva, 1696; Amsterdam, 1704, 1723, &e.), which ends with Galen. Freind's Listory of Physiek (London, 1725-26, 2 vols.) carries on the subject from Galen to the beginning of the 16th century. The first com- plete history is that of Kurt Sprengel (Versuch einer pragmatischen Gesehiehte der Arzneitkunde, Halle, 1792; 38d edition, Halle, Beside these may be mentioned Hecker, Gesehiehte der Heilkunde, Berlin, 1822, and

| Geseh. der neucren Heilkundce, Berlin, 1839; Ch. Daremberg,

Histoire des sciences médieales, Paris, 1870, 2 vols.; Edward Meryon, History of Medicine, London, 1861 (left unfinished, vol. i. only having appeared). The most recent and complete text-book is Hacser's Lehrbuch der Gesehiehte der Mediein und der Epidemisehen Krankheiten (3d edition, Jena, 1875-79, 3 vols., in course of com- pletion), to which the preceding sketch is very largely indcbted. In special departments of the subject the authorities are the following :—For classical medicine: Celsus, De Mcdieina ; Littré, Gurres @ Hippoerate, Paris, 1839-61, 10 vols. (especially vol. i.) ; Francis Adams, Genwine Works of Hippocrates translated, with a Pre- liminary Discourse, London (Syd. Soe.), 1849, and

Paulus digineta, translated, with a Commentary, London (Syd. Soc.), 1844 ; Darem- berg, La Médecine dans Homérc, Paris, 1865, and La Médecine entre Homeére et Hippocrate, Paris, 1869; and W. A. Grecnhill's articles "Galen," " Hippocrates," &c., in Smith's Classical Dictionary, 1844. For Arabian medicine : Wiistenfeld, Geschichte der Arabischen Aerzte und Naturforscher, Gottingen, 1840 ; and Lucicn Leelere, Histoire de la Médecine Arabe, Paris, 1876, 2 vols. For Salcrnitan medicine: Collectio Salernitana, edited by De Renzi, Daremberg, &c., Naples, 1852, 5 vols.; Regimen Sanitatis, with introduction by Sir A. Croke, Oxford, 1830; and Daremberg, L'Ecole de Salerne, Paris, 1861. For medicine in England: John Aikin, Biographieal Memoirs of Medicine in Great Britain, to the time of Harvey, London, 1780; Lives of British Physicians, Loudon, 1830 (chiefly by Dr Macmichael, partly by Dr Bisset Hawkins and Dr H. H. Southey) ; and Munk,

8 vols. For the modern seliools: Hirschel, Geschichte des Brown'- schen Systems und der Erregungs Theorie, Leipsic, 1846; Bouchut, Histoire de la Médecine ct des Doetrines Médieales, 2 vols., Paris, 1873 (comparison of ancient and modern schools); Buckle, History of Civilization in England, 1858-61. (J. F. P.)

Medina stands in a sort of basin at the northern extremity of an elevated plain, on the western skirt of the mountain range which divides the Red Sea coast-lands from the central plateau of Arabia. At an hour's distance to the north it is dominated by Mount Ohod, an outlying spur of the great mouatains, which is now visited by the pious as the scene of the well-known battle (see

| MoHAMMED), and the site of the tomb and mosque of the

*Prophet's uncle Hamza. To the east the plain is bounded by a long line of hills eight or ten hours distant, over which the Nejd road runs. A number of torrent courses (of which W. Kanat to the north, at the foot of Mount Ohod, and W.*Akik, some miles to the south, are the most important) descend from the mountains, forming consider- able streams and pools after rain, and converge in the XV. — 103*

neighbourhood of the town to unite farther west at a place called Zaghdba, whence they descend to the sea through the 'mountains of the Tihama"—the rough country between Medina and its port of Yanbu—under the name of W. Idam. Southwards from Medina the plain extends unbroken, but with a slight rise, as far as the eye can reach. The convergence of torrent courses in the neigh- bourhood of Medina makes this one of the best-watered spots in northern Arabia. The city lies close to one of the great volcanic centres of the peninsula, which was in violent eruption as late as 1266 a.p., when the lava stream approached within an hour's distance of the walls, and dammed up W. Kanat. The result of this and older pre- historic eruptions lias been to confine the underground water, so important in Arabian tillage, which can be reached at any point of the oasis by sinking deep wells. Many of the wells are brackish, and the natural fertility of the volcanic soil is in many places impaired by the salt with which it is impregnated; but the date palm grows well everywhere, and the groves, interspersed with gardens and corn-fields, which surround the city on all sides except the west, have been famous from the time of the Prophet. Thus situated, Medina was originally a city of agriculturists, not like Mecca a city of merchants; nor, apart from the indispensable trade in provisions, has it ever acquired commercial importance like that which Mecca owes to the pilgrimage. Landowners and cultivators are still a chief element in the population of the city and suburbs. The latter, who are called Nawadkhila, and more or less openly profess the Shia opinions, form a sort of separate caste, marrying only among themselves. The townsinen proper, on the other hand, are a very motley race? The mechanical arts, which the true Arab despises, are chiefly practised by foreigners. New settlers remain beliind with each pilgrimage ; and the many offices of profit connected with the mosque, the stipends paid by the sultan to every inhabitant, and the gains to be derived by pilgrim-ciccrones (Muzawwirs) or by those who make it a business to say prayers at the Prophet's mosque for persons who send a fee from a distance, as well as the alms which the citizens are accustomed to collect when they go abroad, especially in Turkey, keep up an idle population greatly in excess of that which the district would naturally support in the present defective state of agriculture. The population of the city and suburbs may be from 16,000 to 20,000 souls.

The city proper is surrounded by a solid stone wall,? with towers and four massive gateways of good architecture, forming an irregular oval running to a kind of angle at the north-west, where stands the castle, held by a Turkish garrison. The houses are good stone buildings similar in style to those of Mecca; the streets are narrow but clean, and in part paved. There isa copious supply of water conducted from a tepid source at the village of Kuba, 2 miles south, and distributed in underground cisterns in each quarter.° The glory of Medina, and the only im-

1 The pilgrimage to Medina, though highly meritorious, is not obli- gatory, and it is not tied to a single season, so that there is no great concourse at one time, and no fair like that of Mecca.

2 A small number of families in Mecca still claim to represent the ancient Ansar, the "defenders" of Mohammed. But in fact the old population emigrated en masse after the sack of Medina by Muslim in 683, and passed into Spain in the armies of Mus4. In the 13th century one old man of the Khazraj and one old woman of the Aus tribe were all that remained of the old stock in Medina (Makkari, i. 187; Dozy, Mus, @' Espagne, i. 111). The aristocratic family of the Beni Hoseyn, who claim descent from the martyr of Kerbela, and so from the Prophet, have apparently a better established pedigree.

3 According to Ibn Khallikan (Slane's 'transl., iii. 927) the walls are of the 12th century, the work of Jamal el-Din el-Ispahani.

4 The Balt or great paved street of Medina, a very unusual feature in an Eastern town, dates from the Ist ceutury of Islam, See Wiisten- feld's abstract of Samhudi, p. 115.

5 Kubé is famous as the place where the prophet lived before he

portant building, is the mosque of the Prophet, in the eastern part of the city, a spacious enclosed court between 400 and 500 feet in length froin north to south, and two- thirds as much in breadth. The minarets and the lofty dome above tlie sacred graves are imposing features, but the circuit is

hemmed in by houses or narrow lanes, and ig not remarkable except for the principal gate (Bab el-Salam) at the southern end of the west front, facing the sacred graves, which is richly inlaid with marbles and fine tiles, and adorned with golden inscriptions. This gate leads into a deep portico, with ten rows of pillars, running along the southern wall. Near the further end of the portico, but not adjoining the walls, is a sort of doorless house or chamber hung with rich curtains, which is supposed to contain the graves of Mohammed, Abubekr, and 'Omar. To the north of this is a sinaller chamber of the same kind, draped in black, which is said to represent the house or tomb of Fatima. Both are enclosed within an iron railing, so closely interwoven with brass wire-work that a glimpse of the so-called tombs can only be got through certain apertures where intercessory prayer is addressed to the prophet, and pious salutations are paid to the other saints. The portico in front of the railing is not ineffective, at least by night light. It is paved with marble, and in the eastern part with mosaic, laid with rich carpets; the southern wall is clothed with marble pierced with windows of good stained glass, and the great railing has a striking aspect ; but an air of tawdriness is imparted by the vulgar painting of the columns, especially in the space between the tomb and the pulpit, which has received, in accordance with a tradition of the Prophet, the name of the Garden (rauda), and is decorated with barbaric attempts to carry out this idea in colour.' The throng of visitors passing along the south wall froin the Bab el-Saldm to salute the tombs is separated from the Garden by a wooden partition about 8 feet high, painted in arabesques. 'The other three sides of the interior court have porticos of less depth and mean aspect, with three or four rows of pillars. Within the court are the well of the Propliet and some palm trees said to have been planted by Fatima.

The original mosque was a low building of brick roofed with palm branches, and much smaller than the present structure. The wooden pulpit from which Mohammed preached appears to have stood on the same place with the present pulpit in the middle of the south portico. The dwelling of the Prophet and the huts of his women adjoined the mosque. Mohammed died in the hut of 'Aisha, and was buried where he died; Abubekr and 'Omar were afterwards buried beside him. Now in 711 A.D. the mosque, which had previously been enlarged by 'Omar and 'Othman, was entirely reconstructed on a grander scale and in Byzantine style by Greek and

Coptic artificers at the command of the caliph Walid and under the direction of ‘Omar ibn ‘Abd el‘ Aziz. The enlarged plan included the huts above named, which were pulled down. Thus the place of the Prophet’s burial was brought within the mosque; but the recorded discontent of the city at this step shows that the feeling which regards the tomb as the great glory of the mosque, and the pilgrimage to It as the most meritorious that can be undertaken except that to Mecca, was still quite unknown. It is not even certaim entered Medina, and the site of the first mosque in which he prayed. It lies amidst orchards in the richest part of the oasis

6 The space between the railing and the tomb is seldom entered except by the servants of the mosque. It contains the treasures of the mosque in jewels and plate, which were once very considerable but have been repeatedly plundered, last of all by the Wahhabis in the beginning of the present century.

7 The word vauda also means a mausoleum, and is applied by Ibn Jubair to the tomb itself. Thus the tradition that the space between

the pulpit and tomb was called by the Prophet one of the gardens of Paradise probably arose from a mistake.

ME D—

what was done at this time to mark off the graves. Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih, in the beginning of the 10th century (‘Ikd, Cairo ed., iii. 366), describes the enclosure as a hexagonal wall, rising within three cubits of the ceiling of the portico, clothed in marble for more than a man’s height, and above that height daubed with the unguent called khalik. This

may be supplemented from Istakhri, who calls it a lofty | That there are no gravestones or >

house without a door. visible tombs within is certain from what is recorded of occasions when the place was opened up for repairs. Ibn Jubair (p. 193 sz.) and Samhud{ speak of a small casket adorned with silver, fixed in the eastern wall, which was supposed to be opposite the head of the Prophet, while a silver nail in the south wall indicated the point to which the .corpse

faced, and from which the salutation of worshippers was to be addressed (Burton misquotes). The European fable of the coffin suspended by magnets is totally unknown to Moslem tradition. The smaller chamber of Fatima is pretty modern. In the time of Ibn Jubair and of Ibn Batwta (unless the latter, as is so often the case, is merely copying his predecessor) there was only a small marble trough north of the rauda (or grave) which "is said to be the house of Fatima or her grave, but God only knows." It is more probable that Fatima was buried in the Baki, where her tomb was also shown in the 12th century (Ibn Jubair, p. 198 sg.).

The mosque was again extended by El-Mahdi (781 A.D.), and was burned down in 1256. Of its appearance before the fire we have two authentic accounts by Ibn 'Abd Rabbil early in the 10th century, and by Ibn Jubair, who visited it in 1184. The old mosque had a much finer and more regular appearance than the present one; the interior walls were richly adorned with marble and mosaic

arabesques of trees and the like, and the outer walls with |

stone marquetry; the pillars of the south portico (seven- teen in each row) were in white plaster with gilt capitals, the other pillars were of marble. Ibn "Abd Rabbih speaks of eighteen gates, of which in Ibn Jubair's time, as at present, all but four were walled up. There were then three minarets. After the fire which took place just at the time of the fall of the caliphate, the mosque long lay in a miserable condition. Its repair was chiefly due to

the Egyptian sultans, especially to Kait Bey, whose |

restoration after a second fire in 1481 amounted almost to a complete reconstruction. seems to have remained but some of the columns and part of the walls; and, as the minarets have also been rebuilt and two new ones added, the architectural character is now essentially Egyptian. The great dome above the tomb, the railing round it, and the pulpit, all date from Kait Bey's restoration.

The suburbs, which occupy as much space as the city proper, and are partly walled in, lie south-west of the town, from which they are separated by an open space, the halting-place of caravans. Through the suburbs runs the

watercourse called W. Buthdn, a tributary of W. Kanat, which the Yanbu road crosses by a stone bridge. The suburbs are the quarter of the peasants. Thirty or forty families with their cattle occupy a single courtyard (hésh), and form a kind of community often at feud with its neighbours. The several clans of Medina nist have lived in much the same way at the time of the Prophet. The famous cemetery called Bakf el-Gharkad, the resting- place of a multitude of the "companions" of the Prophet, lies immediately to the west of the city. It once con- tained many monuments, the chief of which are described by Ibn Jubair. Burckhardt in 1815 found it a mere waste, but some of the mosques have since been rebuilt.

History.—The story of the Amalekites in Yathrib and of their conquest by the Hebrews in the time of Moses is purely fabulous,

Of the old building nothing ,

MED 819

see Noldeke, Ueber die Amalekiter, 1864, p- 86. The oasis, when it first comes into the light of history, was held by Jews, among whom emigrants from Yemen afterwards settled. From the time of the flight of Mohammed (622 a.p.) till the Omayyads removed the seat of empire from Medina to Damascus, the town springs into historic prominence as the capital of the new power that so rapidly changed | the fate ofthe East. Its fallwas not less rapid and complete, and since the battle of Harra and the sack of the city in 683 it has never re- gained political importance. The history of Medina in this period will be told in the articles MonamMED and MoHAMMEDAN EMPIRE. Mohammed invested the country round Medina with an inviolable character like that of the Haram round Mecca ; but this provision has never been observed with strictness. After the fall of the caliphs, who maintained a governor in Medina, the native emirs | enjoyed a fluctuating measure of independence, interrupted by the | aggressions of the sherifs of Mecca, or controlled by an intermittent Egyptian protectorate. The Turks after the conquest of Egypt held Medina for a time with a firmer hand ; but their rule grew weak, _ and was almost nominal long before the Wahhabis took the city in 1804. A Turko-Egyptian force retook it in 1812, and the Turks still maintain a pasha with a military establishment, while the cadi and chief agha of the mosque (a eunuch) are sent from Constanti- nople. But the

internal government is largely in Arab hands, and is said to be much better than that of Mecca.

Sources.—Medina has been described from personal observation by Burckhardt, who visited it in 1815, and Burton, who made the pilgrimage in 1853. Sadlier on his journey from Kafif to Yanbu‘ (1819) was not allowed to enter the holy city. Burckhardt was prevented by ill health from examining the city and country with his usual thoroughness. Little is added to our information by the report of ‘Abd el-Razzdk, who performed the pilgrimage in 1878, on a medical commission from the English Government. The chicf Arabic authority besides lbn ‘Abd Rabbih and lbn Jubair is Samhtidf, of whose history Wiistenfeld published an abstract in the Gottingen Abhandlungen, vol. ix., 1861. 1t goes down to the end of the 15th century. The topography of the country about Medina is interesting both his- torically and geographically ; Bekrf, Ydkuit, and other Arabic geographers supply much material on this topic, but completer European accounts are wanting to per- Init of its full utilization. Medina now offers a more promising, but also a more perilous, field for an explorer than Mecca. (W. B.S.)

MEDINA SIDONIA, a town of Spain, in the province of Cadiz, and about 21 miles by road westward from that city, stands at a height of 600 feet above the sea-level, on | an isolated hill surrounded by a cultivated plain. Apart from its picturesque airy situation it has nothing to interest the traveller ; the streets are narrow, steep, and dirty, and _ its buildings and ruins are unimportant. The occupations of the inhabitants are connected chiefly with the agriculture and cattle-breeding carried on in the surrounding district ; bricks and pottery are also made to some extent. The population in 1877 was 12,234.

Medina Sidonia has been idcntificd by some with the Astao of Pliny, but it is uncertain whether Jerez is not more probably the locality referred to by that name. Under the Visigoths the place was erected into a bishopric (Assidonia), and attained some im- portance ; in the beginning of the 8th century it was taken by Tarik. In the time of Edrisi the province of Shaduna or Shidona included, among other towns, Scville and Carmona; later Arab

geographers place Shaduna in the province of Seville. The town gives its title to the ducal house of Guzman el Bueno, the hero of Tarifa (1292),

MEDITERRANEAN SEA. The southern shores of | Europe are separated from the northern shores of Africa by the Mediterranean Sea. It extends in a generally east and west direction from longitude 5° 21’ W. to 36° 10’ E. Its length from Gibraltar to its eastern extremity in Syria is about 2100 miles. Its breadth is very various, being 400 miles from the mouth of the Rhone to the Algerian coast, 500 miles from the Gulf of Sidra to the entrance to the Adriatic, and 250 miles from the mouth of the Nile to the south coast of Asia Minor. From the very indented nature of its coasts, the general mass of the water is much cut up into separate seas, which have long borne distinctive names, as the Adriatic, the A®gean, the Sea of Marmora, the Black Sea, &c. » The area of the whole system, including the Sea of Azoff, is given by Admiral Smythe as 1,149,287 square miles. If we deduct that of the Black Sea and Sea of Azoff, 172,506 square miles, we have for the area of the Mediterranean proper 976,781, or, roughly speaking, a million of square miles.

The Mediterranean is sharply divided into two great principal basins, the western and the eastern or Levant

basin. The western possesses a comparatively smooth and unindented coast-line. It is bounded on the south by the coast of Africa and the north coast of Sicily, and it is further enclosed by the coasts of Spain, France, and Italy, which form a roughly arc-shaped coast-line. There are comparatively few small islands in this basin, though some of the more important large ones occur in it. The eastern basin is by far the larger of the two, and extends from Cape Bon to the Syrian coast, including as important branches the Adriatic and the Aigean. ‘The latter is con- uected directly, through the Hellespont, the Sea of Marmora, and the Bosphorus, with the Black Sea. The entrance to the western basin and to the sea generally from the ocean is through the Straits of Gibraltar in 36° N. lat. If this parallel be drawn out through the sea it will be found that the western basin lies almost wholly to the northward, and the main body of the eastern one to the southward of it, the mean latitude of the western basin being about 39° 30’,

and that of the eastern basin 35°. They communicate with each other by the channels separ- ating Sicily from Italy and from Africa. The former is known as the Strait of Messina, and is of insignificant size, the latter is a wide channel apparently without any distinc- tive name, and generally shallow. The greatest depth on the shallowest ridge reaching from the African to the Sicilian coast is under 200 fathoms, and agrees very closely with the corresponding depth at the entrance to the Straits of Gibraltar. ;

Depth.—So far as is at present known, the maximum depth is pretty nearly alike in the two basins, being 2040 fathoms in the western and 2150 fathoms in the eastern. Many lines of soundings have been run in the Mediterranean for telegraph purposes, and they afford a very good idea of the general configuration of the bottom. Between Marseilles and Algiers the depth ranges generally from 1200 to 1600 fathoms; between Naples and Sardinia from 1500 to 2000; between Alexandria and Rhodes from 1200 to 1600; and between Alexandria and Cyprus from 900 to 1100. The basin of the Mediterranean really begins about 50 miles to the westward of Gibraltar. It is here that the shallowest ridge stretches across from Africa to Spain ; the maximuni depth on it is probably not more than 180, and certainly less than 200 fathonis. From this ridge the bottom slopes quickly westward into the depths of the Atlantic, and gently eastward into the Mediterranean. The depth nowhere reaches 1000 fathoms until beyond Alboran Island, 120 miles east of Gibraltar. This is a small low island separated from the mainland on all sides by water of more than 400 fathoms; it must therefore be considered an oceanic as distinguished from a continental island.1_ Further to the north, and off the coast of Valencia, we have the Balearic Islands,—namely, Majorca, Minorca, Iviza, and Formentera. These also must be considered oceanic islands, and indeed two groups of oceanic islands. Iviza and Formentera are isolated both from the Spanish coast and from the other two islands by water of over 300 fathoms depth ; Majorca and Minorca are connected by a bank with no more than 50 fathoms of water on it. Thirty miles east of Minorca there are more than 1400 fathoms; beyond that there are no soundings between the Baleares and the large and important group of Corsica and Sardinia. These islands are continental, being connected with the Italian main- land by the bank on which Elba occurs, and which is covered by little over 50 fathoms of water. The Straits of Bonifacio, which separate Corsica from Sardinia, are also

quite shallow, so that Corsica and Sardinia may be looked on as a secondary peninsula attached to the Tuscan

Continental islands are those separated from the mainland by comparatively shallow seas, generally under 100 fathoms.

MEDITE@ERE AD HAN

shore of Italy by a shallow bank not more than 15 or 20 niles broad, the deep water coming close up all round it. Almost the saine may be said of Sicily, including the Malta group, but excluding the Lipari group, which is purely volcanic. From Cape Passaro, in the south-east end of Sicily, a line can be drawn connecting it with the town of Tripoli, and without passing over water of more than 300 fathoins.. As has already been said, the west end of Sicily is connected with the coast of Tunis by a ridge in no part covered by more than 200 fathoms of water. Between these two ridges lies a small but comparatively deep basin of 600 to 700 fathoms. At the western extremity of it lies the mountainous island of Pantellaria. The bank on which Malta is situated stretches for nearly 100 miles in a southerly direction from Cape Passaro in Sicily. Opposite, on the African shore, is a similar bank of much larger dimensions, on which are the small islands Lampion and Lampedusa belonging to Italy. In the deep channel between them and Malta is the small but lofty island Limosa. It is entirely volcanic, with an extinct crater on its north-eastern side, and three smaller ones to the south- ward. It resembles the Lipari group off the north coast of Sicily, which rise abruptly out of deep water, being connected by no bank either with the African or the Sicilian coasts. Some of the Lipari group are still active, Stromboli _ and Vulcano being of the number. Off the south coast of Sicily, and between it and the island of Pantellaria, occurs the famous Graham's shoal, the remains of what was for a few weeks an island."

The deepest water of the Mediterranean is found in its widest part between Malta and Crete, and the deep water comes close up to the Italian and Greek coasts, while on the African shore the water shoals more gradually. In the Strait of Messina, close to Reggio, there are depths of over 500 fathoms, and similar depths are found inside gulfs such as those of Taranto (nearly 1000 fathoms), of Corinth, Kalaniata, and others. Also all through the fégean in its many bights and channels very deep water is met with ; in

the Sea of Marmora we have 500 fathoms, and in the Black Sea over 1000 fathoms. All along the south coast of Asia Minor the water is very deep, and the large islands of Cyprus and Crete are both separated by very deep water from the'mainland. If we take the eastern basin, and run along its western and southern coasts from the mouth of the Po along the shore of Italy, Sicily, and Africa to the mouth of the Nile, and even further along the Syrian shore, we do not find a single off-lying island of any importance except the Malta group, while all along the eastern and northern coasts from 'Trieste to Asia Minor the coast is deeply indented, and the water broken up by many large and important islands. These islands are grouped along the west coast of Turkey and Greece, and irregularly throughout the AXgean. The east coast of the Adriatic is studded with islands and inlets, and resembles in this respect the AZgean; the west coast, on the other hand, is low, and the water off it shallow, and there are few harbours. The Adriatic stretchcs in a north-westerly direction for about 460 miles from its entrance between

- *With regard to its appearance and disappearance Admiral Smythe (Mediterranean, p. 111) says :—" It seems that, as early as the 28th of June 1831, Captain Swinburne, in passing nearly over the spot, felt. several shocks of a sea-quake, proving that the cause was then in operation; but on the 19th of the following July the crater had accumulated to a few feet above the level of the sea, and was great activity, emitting vast volumes of steam, ashes, and score. Froni that time it gradually increased in all its dimensions till towards the end of August its circumference was about 3240 feet and its height 107 ; then from October various changes took place, and it entirely dis- appeared in December." Since that time it has changed considerably. In 1868 the least water on it was 15 feet. It has two heads close to- gether, and at the distance of about 20 yards all round there are from 7 to 9 fathoms of water.*

wi DITE RR AN Eb AN

821

Cape Sta Maria di Leuca and the island of Corfu to the | level of the Mediterranean would sink until its surface

Venetian shore in the Gulf of Trieste. is about 100 miles. A ridge with little over 400 fathoms appears to run across its entrance. Inside this the water reaches a depth of 765 fathoms, but shoals again rapidly

Its average width |

towards Pelagosa Island, from which to the northward, © \ ‘ would be reduced to two “Dead Seas,” one between

including quite two-thirds of the sea, the depth is under 100 fathoms ; indeed no part of the sea within 150 miles of its northern extremity is over 50 fathoms deep. There is authentic historical evidence of the encroachment of the

[taliau shores on the Adriatic, causing thereby a diminution |

of its area. As a consequence many towns which were

once thriving seaports are now many miles inland; thus |

Adria, which was a station of the Roman fleet, is now 15 mules inland, and there are many similar examples. The large rivers Po and Adige, which bring the drainage of the southern slopes of the Alps to the sea, deliver large quantities of sediment in the course of the year. The dis- tribution of this mud is affected, not only by its own weight tending to make it sink to the bottom, but also by the set

_ “Shearwater ” in the year 1871.!

of the currents, which, running up the eastern coast, turn | to the westward and southward at the upper end of the >

sea, and so tend to distribute the river mud along the bottom in the neighbourhood of the Italian coasts. The fact that towns which were formerly seaports are now

inland does not therefore necessitate the assumption of a | general rise of the land, it is merely a reclamation by © natural agencies of land from the

sea at the expense of | the inland mountainous country. Precisely similar pheno- | mena are observed in the neighbourhood of the mouths of |

the Rhone and of the Nile.

Specific Gravity, Currents, &c.—On the specific gravity |

Dr Carpenter reports many and interesting observations, In round numbers, that of the surface-water of the Atlantic off the Straits of Gibraltar is 1:0260 to 1:0270, that of the western basin of the Mediterranean 1°:0280 to 1:0290, and that of the eastern basin 10290 to 1:0300, while that of the Black Sea is 1:0120 to 10140. It will thns be seen that

the water of the Mediterranean proper is very much salter |

than either the Atlantic on the west or the Black Sea on the east, and this great density of the water affords a use- ful means of recognizing it when investigating the inter- change of waters which takes place at the two extremities of the sea. Both the temperature and the specific gravity of the water are evidences of the local climate. The great concentration of the water shows how dry the atmosphere at the surface must be, and how insignificant the contribu- tions of fresh water. With regard to the balance existing between the two factors, evaporation and precipitation, it would be impossible to give figures with any claim to accuracy, but a rough estimate may be formed by taking such data as Fischer has given. He puts the rainfall over the whole Mediterranean drainage area at 759-4 milli- metres, or almost exactly 30 inches. If we remember that the average rainfall of the eastern slopes of Great Britain is less than 30 inches, and that therefore this may be taken as the maximum yearly supply to the North Sea, we may be

sure that the Mediterranean does not receive more than 30 |

inches of fresh water in the year. With regard to the rate of evaporation over the area of the Mediterranean there is but very meagre information, but wherever it has been observed it has been found to exceed the rainfall, even as much as three times. more than four times the rainfall, at Rome 105 inches, and at Cairo 92 inches. [t may therefore without exaggeration be assumed that the evaporation is at least twice as great as the precipitation.

Putting the latter at 30 inches, we should have 60 inches for the yearly evaporation, and a balance of 30 inches evaporation over precipitation. Were there no provision for making good this deficiency, the

a

was so far contracted as to lose no more by evaporation than would be supplied by rain. This condition would probably not be fulfilled before all the AZgean and Adriatic and the whole of the western basin west of the island of Sardinia were laid dry, and what is now the Mediterranean

Sardinia and Naples and the other between Africa and the mouth of the Adriatic. That the level and the salinity of the Mediterranean remain constant is due to the supply of water which enters at the Straits of Gibraltar. The currents in this passage have frequently engaged attention both from their scientific and their nautical interest. The most detailed investigation was that carried out by Captain Nares and Dr Carpenter in H.M.S. From these investiga- tions it appears that there are usually two currents in the Straits at the same time, one superposed on the other. Both are affected by tidal influence, but, after allowing for it, there is still a balance of inflow in the upper and of outflow in the under current, The waters of the two currents are sharply distinguished from each other by their salinity. Further, the upper current appears to affect by preference the iniddle of the channel and the African coast, while the under current appears to crop out at the surface on the Spanish coast. This distribution, however, is much modified by the state of the tide, and it must be remembered that in such places the surface separating the upper and under currents is rarely, if ever, a horizontal plane. That there is a balance of outflow over inflow at the bottom was well shown by the result of soundings as much as 200 miles north-west of the entrance of the Straits, where, in a depth of 1560 fathoms, water of decided Mediterranean origin was got from the bottom. There can be no doubt that this outflow of warm and dense Mediter-

_ ranean water is largely instrumental in causing the com-

paratively very high bottom temperature in the eastern basin of the North Atlantic.

We lave assumed that the balance of water removed by evaporation is 30 inches, or 2°5 feet. If we take the area of the Mediterranean to be 1,000,000 square miles, we have the volnme of water removed-—

v=2°5 × 36 × 10”%=90 × 10” cubic feet.

This quantity of water has to be supplied from the Atlantic without raising the total quantity of salt in the sea. We have seen that the only provision for the removal of the surplus salt is the outward under current in the Straits. Hence the inward upper current must be sufficient to replace the water lost both by evaporation and by the outflow of the under current. We may take the Atlantic water to contain 3°6 per cent. and the Mediterranean to contain 3°9 per cent. of salt. In order that the under current may remove exactly as much salt as is brought in by the upper one, their volumes must be in the inverse ratio of their saline contents, or the volume of the upper current must be to that of the under one in

the ratio 39:36 or 1000: 923; so that only 7-7 per cent.

Thus at Madrid it is 65 inches, or |

of the inflow goes to replace the water removed by evapora- tion, while the remaining 92°3 per cent. replaces the water of the under current. We have then for the total volume of the inward current per annum

100

Vv v=1170 × 10" eubic feet.

la

The width of the Straits from Tarifa to Point Cires is 8

miles, or 48,000 feet, and the average depth of the stream

area is in round numbers 29,000,000 square feet.

may fairly be taken as 100 fathoms; hence the sectional

1 Proc. Roy: Soc. (1872), xx. 97, 414.

Dividing the volume by the area we have for the mean annual flow 1170 × 10

=—99×108~ = 40 × 105 feet.

Reducing this to miles per day, we find that if the above data are correct the inflowing current at the Straits of Gibraltar onght to be equivalent toa current 8 miles wide, 100 fathoms deep, and running with the uniform velocity of 18:3 miles in twenty-four hours. As the currents are reversed with the tides this is the balance of inflow over outflow in the upper current. It is worthy of remark that the flood tide runs to the westward at the surface and the ebb to the eastward. The following table of tides at places inside and outside the Straits will show that the mere differences of level due to the different tidal ranges at adjacent localities are sufficient to cause strong local currents.

i High Water. cris ane oa Rise. Rise. Range ; HM Ft. in. ¥t. in. Ft. in. CUO A .0.3.ncstssvceses 1 30 12 5 8 0 3 6 DENG Lament Acc nessa ness 1 24 1 76 S50 3 16 (WX, oxacdcs octet « ees 12; 39 8 2 Fas (Gomi peste Snr ee 118 12 0 A 8 ies @anegilatareee eso… 1 45 8 0 5 3 2 6 TRE URI: pone ne Oe seee 1 46 6 0 3 6 ie 3 BANC ESIRAS) tase ates cns << 1 49 38 6 Lo GUDTRIMBAT. . CTT iene tamer e coe mere Of oe tf wy 8 PRERURAIIG caiscccecccce ters 22s 26 LEG 0 6 MIPAIBOV ET… cs: se cece eseeuen'- 1 42 8 ie il 2 0 eebchttecssce nactseseeeress 1 46 11 0 fe il oF Mage OP …0… s anne 1 18 12 4 8 0 3 6 a | ae | a | ee

A similar phenomenon is witnessed at the other end of the sea. Here the fresher waters of the Black Sea rush in through the narrow channel of the Dardanelles, causing a surface inflow of comparatively fresh water, while there is an outflow below of denser Mediterranean water. The dimensions of the Straits are too small to make the pheno- menon of any importance for the supply of the Mediter- ranean. The conditions both in the Dardanelles and in the Bosphorus were examined very carefully in the year 1872 by Captain Wharton, R.N., of H.M.S. 'Shear-

water," and his results are published in an interesting report.

to the admiralty, of that date. It is remarkable that the comparatively fresh water of the Black Sea persists without sensible mixture through the Sea of Marmora and into the Dardanelles, while there is constantly a current of Mediterranean water running underneath, and the depth in the two channels is only from 30 to 50 fathoms, There can be little doubt that the saltness of the Black Sea is due wholly to the return current of Mediterranean water enter- ing through the Bosphorus. Were the exit of the Black Sea a channel with sufficient fall to bring the surface of the Sea of Marmora below the level of the highest part of its bottom, so that no return current could take place, the waters of the Black Sea would be fresh.

In the body of the sea the rise and fall are much less than at any of the places in the above table. At Algiers a self-recording tide gauge was set np by Aimé, and from its records he deduced a rise and fall of 88 millim. (say 33 in.) at springs and half that amount at neaps, a fluctuation which would escape ordinary observation, as it would be masked by the effects of atmospheric disturbances. At Venice and in the upper reaches of the Adriatic, the true lunisolar tide seems to be more accentuated than in other parts ; but here also its effects are subordinate to those of the wind. Insummer the Mediterranean is within the northern limit of the north-east trade wind ; consequently, through- out a great part of the year, the winds are tolerably constant

in direction ; and, blowing as they do over large areas of water, they are instrumental in moving large masses of it from one point to another, and so producing streams and currents.

The effect of wind on a surface of water is twofold: it produces the rhythmic motion of waves and the motion of translation of currents. Besides the motion produced by the direct action of the wind on the surface-water, there are currents due in the first instance to the accumulation of water produced by a wind which has been' blowing constantly in one direction. The phenomenon of an abnormally high tidal rise with a gale of wind blowing on shore is one with which inhabitants of the British Islands are familiar. It

is also a matter of frequent observation that, for instance, a south-west gale which exaggerates the height of high water on the western coasts of Britain reduces it on the east coasts. It blows the water on the west coast and off the east coast, so that the difference in the high-water levels on the two coasts is very pronounced. Supposing free communication were quickly made between the two coasts, a current would be the result, and its violence would be much greater than would be due to the local action of the wind on its surface. In the Mediterranean the winds blow during a great portion of the year very constantly from one direction or another, and generally from north and east. The extent of the sea is so great that the slope produced by the transference of the surface water constantly in one direction might have a sine or arc capable of being measured in feet and inches when the radins is as much as 200 miles long. Thus at Port Mahon, in the island of Minorca, according to the Admiralty Sailing Directions, the water rises and falls according to the direction of the wind. With wind from south-east or south-west the water rises, but from north- west or north-east it falls. When northerly or north- westerly winds prevail, and this is the case for two-thirds of the year, a strong current sets to the south-west off Ayre Island, which is reversed in seasons when. south-westerly winds prevail, This current is due to the water escaping round the end of Minorca having been driven southward so as to raise a head on the north coasts of the island. Similarly in the Faro or Strait of Messina the currents, of which the famous Scylla and Charybdis are swirls or eddies, are the evidence of a tendency towards equalizing the levels of the eastern extremity of the western basin and of the western extremity of the eastern basin. In addition to this peculiarity of position with reference to the two basins, it has been found that there is a very strong purely tidal influence at work which alone produces an alteration in — the direction of the currents, and thus adds to the confusion of the waters. At Capo di Faro the rise is scarcely per-ceptible, at Messina it may attain a maximum of 10 to 13 inches. In the Straits of Bonifacio, between Corsica and Sardinia, the currents follow entirely the direction of the prevailing winds, and are at times very rapid. In the channel between Sicily and the African coast the currents also follow the winds. In long periods of calm weather a steady easterly set is observed, no doubt a prolongation or reproduction of the Gibraltar current.

Temperature. —Nothing whatever was known of the temperature of the deep water of the Mediterranean until Saussnre extended to it his classical investigation into that of the Swiss lakes. In October 1780 he sank his thermometer to a depth of 160 fathoms off Genoa and of 320 fathoms off Nice, and at both depths he found the temperature of the water to be 55°°8 F. These observa- tions have a special value, for, owing to Saussure's method of ex- perimenting, his results were not affected by the pressure obtaining at great depths in the sea. Fifty years elapsed before any similar experiments were made, when D'Urville, in the "¢ Astrolabe, made a few observations at the beginning and the end of his famous

expedition. There is some uncertainty about his observations in 1826 and 1829, and also about the later ones of Bérard in 1831, as

we are not informed whether the self-registering instruments used were protceted from pressure or not. Mr Prestwich,! however, who has collected and critically discussed all the older dcep-sea tempera- ture observations, eoncludes, from a eoniparison of their results with those obtained by Aimé with protected instruments, that they were so protected, and adinits their results-into his tables without correction. In the deep water to the northward of the Balearie Islands D'Urville found in April 1826 54°°5 F. in 270 fathoms, and in March 1829 54°-7 at the same depth, and the same temperature (54°°7) in 5380 fathoms. Berard, experimenting in the sea between the Balearic Islands and Algeria, found the temperature of the deep water nearly a degree higher, namely 55°-4 F., in depths of 500 to 1000 fathoms. Aimé? relates his own eareful experiments on the temperature of both surface and deeper water in the neighbourhood of Algiers, and discusses them in connexion with those of other observers with very great ability. He concludes from his own observations and those of Bérard that the nniforin teniperature at great depths is 54°-86 F. From a consideration of the general climate of the Mediterranean, he eomes to the conclusion that the temperature in the deeper layers of the sea ought to be lower than the annual mean of the surface, and that it ought to be not very different from the mean surface temperature in the winter months, Fron: observations at Toulon and Algicrs, he finds that at neither place does the

surface temperature fall below 50° F., and that the mean surface temperatures in the months December, January, February, Mareh, and April is at Toulon 53°:06 F. and at Algicrs 56°°84 F. The mean of these two temperatures is 54°°9 F., which is almost exactly what he finds to be the mean annual temperature of the deepest water of the western basin. During the forty years which have elapsed since Aimé made his experiments and speeulations, further observations have only tended to confirm his theory. It is true that the temperatures observed in the many soundings which have been made of late years have not shown absolute identity of temperature, and it is probable that the greater the refinement in the instruments used the more decided will the local differences appear. Especially it will be apparent that the bottom temperature varies with the climate of the preceding winter, and the distribution of temperature varies much with the prevalence of the winds. At the few stations where the temperature of the sea-water and that of the air are regularly examined, it appcars that the water is generally for the greater part of the year warmer thau the air, and in winter considerably so. The existing observations, however, are too few to justify any very definite statement on the subject. At Palermo the sea is warmer than the air throughout the whole year with the exception of the months May and June. In Algiers Aimé found but little difference ; in autumn and winter the water was slightly warmer, in spring and summer slightly eolder, than the air, In the eastern basin we have first Admiral Spratt's ob- servations in July 1845 in Aigina Gulf. In all his experiments made previous to the year 1860 he determined the temperature of the bottom water by taking that of the mud brought up in the dredge. This is a very excellent method; in fact it is probably the best of all methods if a sufficient quantity of mud be obtaincd. From 1860 he used self-registering unprotected thermometers, which gave results necessarily too high, and it is impossible to apply any reliable correction to them without experimentally determining it on each thermometer whieh was used. By the first method Admiral Spratt found 55°°5 F. at depths between 100 and 200 fathoms.

From these observations it seemed reasonable to eonclude, as Aimé had done, that all over the Mediterranean a practically uni- form temperature is found at all depths greater than 100 or 200 fathoms, and that this temperature is 54° to 56° F. In order thoroughly to investigate this matter, as well as the biological eon- ditions of the deep water of the

Mediterranean, H.MLS. “ Porcupine,” Captain Calver, with Messrs Carpenter and Gwyn Jeffreys, visited the western basin of the Mediterranean in the autumn of 1870. A large number of temperature observations were made in the western basin near its southern evasts, and one sounding with temperature observation in the eastern basin a short distance from the Sicilian eoast, the result of which was to confirm the conelusion arrived at from earlier observations, that, however high the temperature of the surface may be (and it may reach 90° F.), the water becomes rapidly cooler as we go below the surface until we reach a depth of about 100 fathoms, where a tempcrature of 54° to 56° F. is found, and persists without sensible variation to the greatest depths. The average of all the bottom temperatures in the western basin was 54°88 F. Three soundings were made in the intermediate basin to the eastward of Pantellaria in depths of 266, 390, and 445 fathoms, and in each ease the bottom temperature was found to be 56°°5 Peg or about a degree and a half warmer than in the deeper western basin. This is precisely what night have been expected from what we know of inland seas divided into several basins. In summer the shallower basin has usually a higher temperature at the bottom nr ee om

1 Phil. Trans., 1875, part ii. p. 601. 2 Ann, Chem. et Phys., 1845, xv. p. 5.

than is found at the same depth in the deeper one. Only one observation was made in the eastern basin, namely off Cape Passaro, in 1743 fathoms, with a bottom temperature of 56°°0 F. That the temperature in this basin should be lower than in the Pantellaria basin is due to its greater depth, and that it should be higher than is found in the western basin is due to its lower latitude. These researches were further prosecuted in the autumn of 1871 in the ‘ Shearwater,” Captain Nares, accompanied by Dr Carpenter. At two stations in the eastern basin “serial temperatures” were taken. At the first, 35° 54’ N, lat., 16° 23’ E. long., depth 1650 fathoms, the bottom temperature was 56°, or the samme as had been observed the year before in 1743 fathoms ; at the second, 82° 173’ N. lat., 26° 44’ E. long., depth 1970 fathoms, the bottom temperature was 56°°7, and the temperature at all intermediate depths was much higher than at the first station. ‘I’he niean temperature of the water from the surface to a depth of 200 fathoms was, at the first station, 68°°75 F., and + the second 66°78 F., or three degrees*

higher. At the first station all the temperatures down to 100 fathoms are higher than were observed in 1870 in the western basin, but it must be remembered that temperature observations made in different years cannot with justice be elosely compared, as the elimates of the two years are sure to differ considerably, and in the present case the difference in climate between the summers of 1870 and 1871 appears to have been very considerable.

In the autumn of 1881 a very interesting series of observations were made by Captain Magnaghi, hydrographer of the Italian navy, and Professor Gigholi, on board the Italian surveying ship "Washington," in that part of the western basin which is enclosed between the islands Corsica and Sardinia on the one side and the Italian coasts on the other. It is here that the deepest water of the western basin was found; and, apart from the great interest attaching to the physical results obtained, the collections made with the dredge in the comparatively lifeless waters were of the very highest importance, showing, as they did, a practical identity in the abyssal fauna with that of the open oeean. This is the more remarkable as we have hitherto been accustomed to consider the similarity in the fauna of portions of the ocean remotely distant from each other as being due to the likeness of their temperatures. In the Mediterranean, however, the bottom temperature is quite 20° F. higher than is found in great depths anywhere in the open ocean.

For determining the temperature of the dcep water Captain Magnaghi used the half-turn reversing thermometer of Negretti aud Zaimbra, which in itself is a very beautiful instrument. The mechanieal arrangement, however, for reversing, even as improved by Magnaghi, was notso satisfactory, and from eertain irregularities in the temperature observations reported the writer is inclined to think that some of the remarkable results obtained, for instance on the 11th August, are due to this instrumental imperfeetion. On that day the water at 70 metres was found to have a temperature of 25°°1 C., while that at 50 metres was 20°°1C., and that at 90 metres was 16°°7 C. The results obtained in the deep water are no doubt quite reliable, for the temperature is so uniform that a few fathoms more or less in the depth at which it turned would make no difference in the temperature registered. In the more northern parts of this portion of the western basin, off the coast of

Corsica, we find a practically uniform temperature from 250 metres down to the bottom in 2800 metres, the mean bottom temperature being 55°°96 F. Further to the south the temperature of the abyssal water appears to be distinctly higher. Thus between the sonth end of Sardinia and the Bay of Naples, in the deepest water, the praetical uniformity of temperature is not reached until a depth of 1000 metres has been passed, and it is there 56°°7 F. It is un- fortunate that we do not know what the bottom temperature in other parts of the Mediterranean was. In this summer of 1881 it was quite one degree higher than that observed by Dr Carpenter in 1870.

The great value of such a volume of water as an equalizer of tem- perature on its shores must be apparent, though in this respect it is inferior to the Atlantic Ocean in its immediate neighbourhood. Places on the west coast of Spain and Portugal have a much higher winter temperature aud lower summer temperature than places in the same latitude in Italy. The reason of this is simple: on the Atlantic coast the principal winds in winter are from the south-west, and havea warming effect, while insummer the souree of the north- east trade wind is pushed back into the Bay of Biscay, causing in this season constant northerly winds along the eoast of Portugal. The winds of the Mediterranean lave no seas of remote latitudes to draw on either for heating or eooling purposes, though the sandy deserts of Africa which bound its southern coasts have at certain seasons a very decided influence on the elimate. The tempering action of the sea does not extend very far inland, as is evident froin the elimate of inland towns in Italy. As the Mediterranean shores have so much importance as health-resorts, the data pre- sented in the following table are of interest. They are taken ehiefly from Theobald Fischer's Studien tiber das Klima der Mittelmee;- léinder,

Table af mean January temperature (J.), of mean temperature of three winter months, December, January, and February (W.), also Rainfall (R.) in the same three months, for places on the Mediterranean, with those for some others for comparison.

| Place. J. Wo |) Te 4h Place. | J. Wie, {| 3: |

Sets | 8S | Joie cab See eins ui Oepppeecto: 464 | 48:1 [14-2 || Ajaccio… | 50°45 | 52-2 | 8-0 Oportosace-....49:5 |$50:549) 23/1) Ii iniestes…..22-----.../ 39:90) 41e3) | E78 [WIS TG NsSepgcceccoe | 50°54 | 50°9) | 113 |] Corfu …....0eeece0¢/ SOLS | 51°28 | 22° TRABIEA,. wcccns sss | 52-88 | 53°6 9e6 WEA HenSiecs sc scceeten ses 47°57 | 49°2 57 Gibraltar …....| 540 | 545 | 12-4 || Constantinople…... 40°28 | 41°6 | 10-1 Malaga,.....-:..| £0 |57°38 | Jerusalem …....] 48°74 | 49-1 | 12-7 Valencia…..... 50°72 | 52°52 | 4°3 | Port Said….....) 57°38 | 57-2 Mahon…...:<+25 ' §1°62 | 52°52 CAINO ...ssceuvcessccienssls 56°84 | 58-1 Barcelona..... 48°02 49°64} 4:1 |} Alexandria..... 60°0 | 60°71 | 56 Montpellier... :|'12;03"| 43°16 | (9:5 || Suezi.....cse0ceees 56°3 | 56°58 Marseilles..... j43252)|46:04; 35:0 || "Vomisi.....<--..0.0. 53°06 | 55°76 ice, ... sae aes | 46-94 | 48°92] 8°5 |] Algiers .....s0000) 59°18 | 59°65 | 14°4 Mentone..... 48°2 | 48-2 (OE Weerconnesccoccences| SI || 523] EHD San Remo..... 47°48 | 48°38 | 8-0 Genoa .....00- 46-4 | 47°66 | 13-0 ||S. Cruz (Teneriffe).! 63°84 | 64°65 Turin .....006, 32°0 | 35°06 | 4°6 || Funchal (Madeira)..! 60°40 | 61°60 | Milan |32°9 | 35°42] 8-0 | Wemeernt:.-2 36°86 | 39-4 | | Valentia (Ireland)..| 45°00 44°60 | 18°3 Florence ..... 41-54 | 43°16 | 12-0 || Sellly .....008.2.| 44°90 | 45°76 | 12-1 Rome wees, (45-7 |466 | 99 || Jersey.....00. 41°70 | 42-97 | 101 Na@ple@s: ..5.....0 48-2 |} 49°3 ; 10° || Ventnor.....| 41°80 | 42°60 Catania .....5.5661 51°62 527 | 7-5 || Pembroke..... ...| 41°10 | 41-97 | 12-2 Palermo..... 51°62 | 52°7 | 88 | Monach (Hebrides).| 42°90 | 43-27 | 15:9 GUN «se enecesee [dado 1 56:0) "liso (St Wilda. 2o.-....2-.- 44°70 | 44°50 |

i i u

Nature of the Bottom.—In the western basin the bottom consists chiefly of clay of a grey to brownish colour. Without doubt, when freshly collected, the surface layer is reddish-brown and the lower ones dark grey. There is always some carbonate of lime, chiefly due to Foraminifera. The mud very much resembles that obtained from similar depths in those parts of the open ocean whose bottom waters are shut off from free communication by ridges which may not approach within 2000 or 1500 fathoms of the surface, and with the exception of the Foraminifera it much resembles the mnd from enclosed and comparatively shallow basins off the west coast of Scotland.

In the following table the analyses are given of a few sainples on the line of the submarine cable connecting Marscilles with Algiers.

Locality. Composition per Cent.

‘{nsolnble in HCI. | Soluble in T1C1

| | Latltnde | Longitude | a 3 , ‘ | Si0> in

E. ‘Fathoms. Residne. Résitne |CaCO,! FeO;

| : FeO | Al,O;

37° 30°

‘

3° 23° | 1,343 66°15 63°98 | 19°79 | 3°09 | 0°39 | 3-46 eo ae ee 1,469 39°16 79°98 | 38°25 | 2:44 | 0°25 |10°98 | 39° 26° 4° 36’ 782 28°13 78°98 | 47°50 | 2-21 | 0°20 | 2°54 | 42° 47° 5° 11 ee) 43°63 GO1G | 51°52 | 2°09 | 0-33 | 4°26 | Ca a) ee 265 48-04 78°60 40 | 0°36

4°58

| 30°80 2 H |

To the student of the physical conditions of the sea the Mediter- ranean possesses a very high interest ; its size is such as to entitle it to rank among oceans, while it is so completely cut off from the remaining world of water that it presents us with a type which is purely local, and one might almost say provincial. dis Wo 1B)

MEDLAR, Afespilus Germanica, L., of the tribe Pomex of the order Hosacex, regarded by Bentham and Hooker as a subgenus of Pyrus (Gen. Pl., i. 6263; see also DC., Prod., u. G33; Trams. Lim. Soc., xi. 99), is a native of European woods, &c., fron: Holland southwards, and of western Asia (London, Ard., ii. 877). It occurs in hedges, &c., in middle and south England, as a small much-branched spinous tree, but is not indigenous to Great Britain (Hooker’s Stud. Fl. of Br. Isles, 132; Baxter’s Brit. Gen. of Pl.,

493, and Mag. Nat. LYist., vol. ix. 86). The medlar was well known to the ancients. Pickering (Chron. Mist. of Pl., 201) identifies it with a tree mentioned in a Siao-ya ode (She-Aing, ii. 1, 2), 827 Bc. It is the peotiAn of Theophrastus and AMespilus of Pliny. Loudon (.c.) gives three varieties, diffusa, stricta, and sylvestris,— the last being spiny, but losing its spines under cultivation, —as wellas four varieties of fruit. He also mentions several instances of large specimens throughout England. The well-known fruit is globular, but depressed above, with leafy persistent sepals, and contains stones of a hemispherical shape. It is uot fit to eat until it begins to decay. (Hor culture of the medlar see HorticuLtuRE.) The Japanese medlar is Hriobotrya japonica, L, a genus of the same tribe of Mosacez.

| Delft in 1632.

—

MED—MEE

MEDOC is the name given to the district in France adjoining the left bank of the Gironde from Ambés, the point where the Garonne and Dordogne unite, to Lespane, where the marshes and polders which border on the mouth of the river begin ; its length varies froin 35 to 40 miles, its breadth from 12 to 5, and the area is about 386 square miles. It is formed by a number of low hills, which

| separate the Landes from the Gironde, and is traversed

only by small streams; the Gironde itself is muddy, and often enveloped in fog, and the region as a whole is very

far from being picturesque; but a fifth part of its soil is

occupied by vineyards, the products of which form the finest growths of Bordeaux. Of these the most esteemed are Chateau-Margaux, Chateau-Laffitte, and Clateau-Latour, Prior to the ravages of the Phylloxera, the annual product of the Médoc district was 40,000 tuns, of which 9000 were of fine quality.

MEDUSA. See Gorcon, vol. x. p. 785. Hyprozoa, vol. xii. p. 547 sy.

MEDYN, a district town of Russia, situated in the government of Kaluga, 39 miles north-west of the capital of the province, on the highway from Moscow to Warsaw. It was formerly known under the naine of Mezetsk, and in the 14th century formed part of the Sinolensk principality. The soil of the surrounding country being rather infertile, the population is engaged to some extent in manufactures of linen, cotton, and paper, and the merchants of Medyn carry on a brisk trade in this produce, as well as in rye, oats, and hemp seed. The population is 8000.

MEER, Jan VAN DER (1632-1675), of Delft,—not to be confounded with the elder or younger Van der Meer of Haarlem or with Van der Meer of Utreclit,—is one of the excellent painters of Holland about whom the Duteh biographers give us little information.1. Van der Meer, or Vermeer, by which naine he is also known, was born in There is a tradition, handed down by the Dutch writers, that he was a pupil of Carel Fabritins, but, in the strict sense of the word, this is almost impossible, for Fabritius was but eight years older than Van der Meer, aud entered the guild of St Luke only one year before our painter. From his early death the works by Fabritius are few, but his contemporaries speak of him as a man of re- markable power, and the paintings now ascertained to be from his hand, and till recently ascribed to Rembrandt,

See also

prove him to have been deeply imbued with the spirit , and manner of that master.

Whether Van der Meer had ever any closer relation to Rembrandt than through com-

_paniouship with Fabritius remains as yet uncertain. In

1653 he married Catherine Bolenes, and in the same year he entered the guild of St Luke of Delft, becoming one of the heads of the guild in 1662, and again in 1670. He died at Delft in 1675, leiving a widow and eight children. His circumstances cannot have been flourishing, for at lus death

he left twenty-six pictures undisposed of, and his widow had to apply to the court of insolvency to be placed under a curator, who, it is interesting to know, was Leeuwenhoek, the naturalist. ,

It is his works, however, that claim our attention. For more than two centuries he has been almost completely forgotten, aud his pictures have been sold under the names EEE Ee

1 'This undeserved neglect seems to have fallen on him at an early period, for Houbraken (Groote Schouburgh, 1718), writing little more than forty years after his death, does not even mention him. The only definite information we have from a contemporary 1s given by Bleyswijck (Beschrijving der Stad Delft. 1687), who tells us that he was born in 1632, and that he worked along with Carl Fabritius, all able disciple of Rembrandt, who lost his life by an explosion of a powder magazine in Delft in 1654, It is to the patient researches of W. Biirger (Th. Dore), Havard, Obreen, Soutendam, and others that we owe our knowledge of the main facts of his life, discovered in the archives of his native town.

and forged signatures of the more popular De Hooch, Metzu, Terborch, and even of Rembrandt. The honour of first recalling the attention of the art-world to this most original painter belongs undoubtedly to Thoré, an exiled Frenchman, who described his then known works in his Musées de la Hollande (1858-60), published under the assumed uame of W. Birger. The result of his researches, continued in his Gulerte Suermondt and Galerie d'Aren-

berg, was alterwards given by him in a charming, though |

incomplete, mouograph (Gazette des Beaux-Arts, 1866, pp. 297, 458, 542). The task has since been prosecuted with success by Havard (Les Artistes I]ollanduis), and by Obreen (.Vederlandsche Kunstgeschiedenis, Dl. iv.), and we are now in a positiou to refer to Van der Meer's works. His pictures are rarely dated, but, luckily for us, one of the most important bears the date 1656, and thus gives us akey to lis styles. The picture referred to is the only one that has figures of life size. It is the Woman and Soldier, with other

two figures, of the Dresden gallery, and is painted with remarkable power and_ boldness, great command over the resources of colour, aud with wonderful expression of life. For strength and colour it more than holds its own beside the neighbouring Renibrandts. To this early period of his career belong, from internal evidence, the Reading Girl of the same gallery, the luminous and masterly view of Delft in the museum of the Hague, La Laitiére and the small street view, both in the collection of M. Six van Hillegom at Amsterdam, Le Soldat et la Fillette qui Rit of M. Double, the Country House in the gallery at Berlin, and others. In all these we find the same brilliant style and vigorous work, a solid impasto and a crisp sparkling touch. His first manner seems to have been influenced by the pleiad of painters circling round Rembrandt, a school which we know lost favour in Holland in the last quarter of the century. During the last ten or twelve years of his life Vau der Meer adopted a second manner. We now find his painting smooth and thin, and his colours paler and softer. Instead of masculine vigour we have refined delicacy and subtlety, but in both styles beauty of tone and perfect harmony are conspicuous. Through all his work may be traced his love of lemon-yellow and of blue of all shades. Of his second style typical examples are to be seen in La Coquette of the Brunswick gallery, in the Woman Reading in the Van der Hoop collection at the Hague, in the Lady at a Casement belonging to Lord Powerscourt (exhibited at Burlington House, 1878), and in the Music Master and Pupil belonging. to the Queen (exhibited at Burlington House, 1876).

Van der Mecr's works are cxtremely rare. There is but one in the Louvre, the Lace Maker; Dresden has the two above-nien- tioned, while Berlin has three, all acquired in the Suermondt collec- tion, and the Czernin gallery of Vienna is fortunate in possessing a fine picture, believed to represent the artist in his studio. In the Arenberg gallery at Brussels there is a remarkable head of a girl, half the size of life, which seems to be intermediate between his two styles. Several of his paintings are to be found in private foreign collections. In all his work there is a singular completeness and eharm. In rendering momentary expression he is a inaster, and his pictures attract by the perfect delineation of character as well as by the technical skill of the painter. with pearly shadows, and the lighting of his interiors is equal and natural. In all cases his figures seem to move in light and air, and in this respect he resembles greatly his fellow-worker De Hooeh, who entered the

guild of St Luke only two years later than Van der Meer. It is curious to read that, at one of the auctions in Amster- dam about the middle of last century, a De Hooch is praised as being " nearly equal to the famous Van der Meer of Delft." So nearly are they allied that the best judges are divided in opinion whether the Dutch Family (" La Promenade") of the academy of Vicnna should be attributed to our painter or to De Hooch.

Doubtless many of Van der Meer's works have yet to be restored to their proper author; but, as he is now in vogue, mucli care will

| In like manuer it ig called in French écume de mer.

have to be used in judging. lus is specially truc in regard to the landscapes and 'still life" subjects which are attributed to him. The task is made more difficult by the diversity of style of this '¢ Protean painter,"' as he is called by Dr Waagen, or, as Birger names him, "the Sphinx of Delft."

MEERANE, a rapidly increasing industrial town in south-eastern Saxony, lies in the district of Zwickau, about 37 miles to the south of Leipsic. It contains an old church, a " Realschule," and a technical school fur weavers. The leading industry is the weaving of woollen and half- woollen cloth, employing 3000 power-looms and 15,000 hand-looms, and producing goods of the annual value of upwards of £200,000. A large proportion of the cloth is exported to America and Japan. Meerane also possesses several important dye-works, besides smaller industrial establishinents of various kinds. The population in 1880 was 22,293.

MEERSCHAUM. 'This German name is applied tu a certain mineral, in consequence of its lightness, softness, and white colour, which suggest a resemblance to "sea foani." By the German mineralogist Glocker it was termed sepvolite, in allusion to its resemblance to the so-called bone of the sepia or cuttle-fish. Possibly the fact that pieces of meerschaum, washed out of their matrix, are occasionally found floating on the Black Sea, may have led to the association of the mineral with marine products. Meer- schaum is an opaque earthy mineral, of white, greyish, or yellowish colour, compact in texture, and breaking with a conchoidal or fine earthy fracture ; it

adheres to the tongue, and is so soft as to be scratched by the nail, its degree of hardness being about 2 or 2°5. Its specific gravity varies from 0°988 to 1:279; hence it floats in sea-water until saturated. Meerschaui is a hydrated silicate of mag- nesium, represented by the formula Mg,Si,O,+2H,O. The value of n, according to some analyses, is 2. Most of our meerschaum comes from Asia Minor, especially from the plains of Eski-shehr, where it occurs in nodular masses, of variable size and irregular shape, distributed through the alluvial deposits of the plain, which are systematically worked for its extraction by means of pits and galleries. The mineral is associated with magnesite, or carbonate of magnesium, and has probably been derived from the neigh- bouring mountains, where a similar carbonate is found in conuexion with serpentine. Meerschaum is found also, though less abundantly, in Greece and in some of the Grecian islands ; at Hrubschitz in Moravia, where it occurs in a serpentinous matrix ; and iu Morocco, where it is used,

| when soft and fresh, as a substitute for soap; while a

coarse variety is found at Vallecas near Madrid, and is employed as a building stone. Meerschaum also occurs in South Carolina.

By far the greatest quantity of meerschaum is used in the manu- facture of tobacco-pipes, a purpose for which it is well fitted:by its porosity. The nodular masses ure first roughly scraped in order to remove the red earthy matrix ; they are then dried, scraped again, and finally polished with wax. In this state the rudely-shaped nodular pieces are sent from the East principally to Vienna and to various parts of Germany. The pipe-bowls, after having been turned and earved, are rubbed with glass-paper and Dutch rushes ; they are next boiled in wax, spermaceti, or stearine, and afterwards sub-

His tone is usually silvery | jected to careful polishing with bone-ash, chalk, &c.

An imitation of meerschaum for common pipes is made of hard- ened plaster of Paris, treated with paraffin, and coloured by gam- boge and dragon's blood. A peculiar preparation, into which potato largely enters, is

said to have been successfully employed in France as a substitute for meerschaum.

MEERUT, or Miratu, a district in the division! of 1 The division lies between 27° 38’ and 30° 57’ N. lat., and between 77° 7' and 78° 42’ E. long., and eomprises the six districts of Dehra

Dun, Saharanpur, Muzaffarnagar, Meerut, Bulandshahr, and Aligarh. The area in 1878 was 11,138 square miles, and the population in 1872

4,977,173.

Meerut and the lieutenant-governorship of the North- Western Provinces, India, lying between 28° 28’ and 29° 18’ N. lat., and 77° 10’ and 78° 14’F. long., is bounded ou the N. by Muzaffarnagar district, on the E. by the Ganges, on the 8. by Bulandshahr district, and on the W. by the Jumna. The area in 1881 was given as 2361 square miles. Meerut forms a portion of the long and narrow plain lying between the Ganges and the Jumna, with a very gentle slope from north to south. Though well wooded in places and abundantly supplied with

Inango groves, it has but few patches of jungle or waste |

land to break the general expause of cultivated soil. Sandy ridges run along the low watersheds which separate the minor channels, but with this exception the whole district is one continuous expanse of careful and prosperous tillage. Its fertility is largely due to the system of irriga- tion canals, which intersect it in every direction. The eastern Jumna canal runs through the whole length of the district, and supplies the rich tract between the Jumna and the Hindan with a network of distributary streams. The main branch of the Ganges canal passes across the centre of the plateau in a sweeping curve, and waters the midland tract. The Antpshahr branch supplies irrigation to the Ganges slope. Besides these natural and artificial channels, the country is everywhere cut up by small water-courses, The

Burh Ganga, or ancient bed of the Ganges, lies at some distance from the modern stream; and on its bank stood the abandoned city of Hastinapur, the legendary capital of the Pandavas at the period of the Mahdbhdrata, said to have been deserted many centuries before the Christian era, owing to the encroachments of the river.

The census of 1872 returned the population of the district at 1,276,104, the Hindus numbering 991,226. Among the higher castes Brahmans muster strong (109,804). The Rajputs (both Hindus and Mohaminedans) number 55,083, and enjoy great social distinction as landholders ; the Banids, or traders (66,942), also now hold considerable landed property. The great cultivating castes are the Chamars (197,273) and Jats (145,514). The Gujars (60,350) are a pastoral tribe, with an ancient character for plunder and cattle-lifting, which is now passing away. The Mohaminedans (281,857) are for the most part the descendants of converted Hindus. The Christian population consists of 2149 Europeans, 142 Eurasians, and 730 natives. Fifteen towns in the district con- tain a population excceding 5000 ; namely, Meerut, 81,386 ; Hapur, 14,544; Sardhana, 12,466 ; Garhmukhtesar, 7962; Bagpat, 7367 2 Ghaziabad, 7365 ; Shahdara, 7257; Baro, 7056; Mawana, 6864 ; Pilkhua, 6239; Khekara, 6045; Tikri, 5698; Kirthal, 5651; Dasna, 5605 ; Chaprauli, 5594.

Meerut is one of the most flourishing and best tilled districts of the Doab. Out of a total area of 1,505,824 acres, as many as 1,048,221 were under cultivation in 1881, 281,095 acres being irrigated by Governinent works, and 303,526 by private individuals. The grazing lands comprehended 242,091 acres, and the waste 185,400. The condition both of agricultural labourers and of artisans and workmen in the towns has considerably improved of late years. About one-half the soil is cultivated by the proprietors themselves, the remainder being about equally divided between tenants with occupancy rights and tenants-at-will. Rents are paid in money, and range from 18s. 10d. per acre for the best canal- watered lands down to 2s. 53d. per acre for "dry" unirrigated soils. The chief exports of the district are grain, cotton, and indigo ; and the principal imports are Manchester goods, English hardware, tobacco, drugs, and spices. The chief commercial centres are Meerut, Ghaziabad, and Bagpat. Besides the great waterways of the Jumna and Ganges, and the navigable canals,

cormmunication is afforded by the East Indian and the Punjab and Delhi Railways ; also by 1505 miles of made roads. In 1876 the district was in the administrative charge of four covenanted civilians, and contained seventeen magisterial and fifteen civil courts. The gross revenue in 1881 was £248,754, of which #208,977 was derived from the land-tax; the cost of officials and police was £27,520. In 1881 there were 214 schools, attended by 6677 pupils. The comparatively high latitude and elevated posi- tion of Meerut make it one of the healthiest districts in the plains of India, The average temperature varics from 57° Fahr. in Janu- ary to 87° in June. The rainfall is small, less than 30 inches annually. The only endemic disease in the district is malarial fever ; but small-pox and cholera occasionally visit it as epidemics.

The authentic history of the district commences with the

Until the llth century it is probable that

Moslem invasions. Meerut was mainly in the hands of predatory native tribes,

such as the Jats and Dors. The first undoubted Mohammedan invasion was that of Kutab-ud-din in 1191, when Meerut town was taken, and all the Hindu temples turned into mosyues. In 1398 Tintar swooped down upon the district, captured the fort of Loni after a desperate resistance, and put all his Hindu prisoners to death. He then proceeded to Delhi, and after his memorable sack of that city, returned to Meerut, captured the town, razed all the fortificatious and houses of the Hindus, and put the male inhabi- tants to the sword. The firm establishment of the great Mughal dynasty in the 16th century, under Babar and his successors, gave Meerut a period of internal tranquillity and royal favour. Afterthe death of Aurangzeb, however, it was exposed to alternate Sikh and Mahratta invasions. From 1707 till 1775 the country was the scene of one perpetual strife, and was only rescued from anarchy by the exertions of the military adventurer Walter Reinhardt, afterwards the husband of the celebrated Begam Samru, who established himself at Sardhana in the north, and ruled a large estate. The southern tract, however, remained in its anarchic condition under

Mahratta exactions until the fall of Delhi in 1808, when the whole of the country between the Jumna and the Ganges was ccded by Sindhia to the British. It was formed into a separate district in 1818. In the British period it has become memorable as being the place where the first outbreak of the great mutiny of 1857 took place.

MEERUT, a city;and cantonment in the above district, is situated about half way between the Ganges and the Jumna, in 29° 0' 41" N. lat. and 77° 45' 3" E. long. The city proper lies south of the cantonments, and although a very ancient town, dating as far back as the days of the Buddhist emperor Asoka (circ. 250 3.c.), Meerut owes its modern importance to its selection by the British Govern- ment as the site of a great military station. In 1805 it is mentioned as "a ruined depopulated town." The canton- ment was established in 1806, and the population rose rapidly to 29,014 in 1847, and 82,035 in 1853. In 1872 the census returned the population (exclusive of the military) at 81,386, viz., Hindus, 47,606 ; Mohammedans, 33,532 ; Christians, 248. The slight decline of populatiou between 1853 and 1872 may probably be attributed to the mutiny of 1857. Most of the streets have a poor appearance, owing to the hasty manner in which they were erected. 'The cantonment, a little to the north of the city, forms the headquarters of a military division. The prin- cipal building is the Meerut church with its handsome tall spire. There are also a Roman Catholic church, mission vhapel, asylum for the relief of Europeans and Christians, andaclub. The Mall is one of the finest drives in India.

MEGALOPOLIS, a city of southem Arcadia, situated in a plain about 20 miles south-west of Tegea, on both banks of the Helisson, about 2} miles above its junction with the Alpheus. Like Messene, it owed its origin to Epamin- ondas, and was founded in 370 3.c, the year after the battle of Leuctra, as a bulwark for the southern Arcadians against Sparta, and as the seat of the Arcadian federal diet, which consisted of ten thousand men. 'The builders of the city were protected by a Theban force, and directed by ten native cecists, who likewise attended to the peopling of the new city, which apparently drew inhabitants from all parts of Arcadia, but more especially from the neighbouring districts of Meenalia and Parrhasia. Forty townships are mentioned by Pausanias (viii. 27, 3-5) as having been incorporated in it. It was fifty stadia in circumference, and was surrounded with strong

walls. Its territory was the largest in Arcadia, extending northward 24 miles. The city was built on a magnificent scale, and adorned with many handsome buildings, both public and private. Its temples contained many ancient statues brought from the towns incorporated in it. On the north side of the Helisson, which divided it into two nearly equal parts, was the agora with four porticos, the gymna- sium, a sacred grove, temples to the Lycean Zeus, Pan Oinoeis, Rhea, Tyche, the great goddesses (Demeter and Core), Zeus Philios (with a statue by Polycletus), Aphro-

dite, Core, Athena Polias, and Hera Teleia. Among the numerous statues which stood in the open air the finest was that of Apollo Epicurius, 12 feet high, brought from the beautiful temple of Basse, which was built by Ictinus, and is still in great part standing. On the south side of the river were the theatre, the largest in Greece, the Thersilion or hall for the assembly of the Arcadian diet, a house built for Alexander the Great, with a statue of Zeus Ammon, the stadium, temples to the Muses, Apollo, and Hermes, to Aphrodite, to Ares, to Dionysus, to Hercules and Hermes, to Artemis Agrotera, to Asclepius and Hygiea, to the son of Asclepius, and to Apollo. Of all these buildings, with the exception of the theatre, hardly a trace remains above ground. The ruins of Megalopolis are near Sinanou.

The foundations of Megalopolis were hardly laid when Agesilaus undertook an expedition in the hope of breaking up the union of which it was the visible sign and capital. He accomplished nothing, and had hardly reached home when the Thebans and their allies under Epaminondas and Pelopidas entered the Pelopon- nesus and marched through Laconia almost unopposed. After the departure of Epaminondas, Lycomedes of Mantinea succeeded in drawing the Arcadian federation away from its alliance with Thebes, in consequence of which it had to make common cause with Athens. An attempt on the part of the federation to use the treasures of the temple of Zeus at Olympia led to internal disgensions, so that in the battle of Mantinea (362) one half of the Arcadians fought on the side of the Spartans, the other on that of the Thebans. After this battle many of the inhabitants of Megalopolis sought te return to their former homes, and it was only by the assistance of threc thousand Thebans under Pammenes that the authorities

were able to prevent them from doing so. In the year 352, when Thebes had her hands full with the so-called Sacred War, the Spartans made an attempt to reduce Megalopolis; but the Thebans promptly sent assistance, and the city was rescued. Not sure of this assistance, the Megalopolitans had appealed to Athens, an appeal which gave occasion to Demosthenes's oration Mep) Meyadorodrtav. The Spartans were now obliged to conclude peace with Megalopolis and acknowledge her autonomy. Nevertheless their feeling of hostility did not cease, and Megalopolis consequently entered into friendly relations with Philip of Macedon. Twenty years later, when the Spartans and their allies rebelled against the power of Macedon, Megalopolis remained firm in its allegiance, and was subjected to a siege of considerable duration. After the death of Alexander, Megalopolis was governed by native tyrants. In the war betwcen Cassander and Polysperchion it took part with the former, and was, in consequence, besieged by the latter. On this occasion it was able to send into the field an army of fifteen thousand. In 234 R.c. Lydiades, the last tyrant of Megalopolis, voluntarily resigned his power, and the city joined the Achean league, In consequence of this it was once morc exposed to the bitter hatred of Sparta. In 222 Cleomenes took and plundered it, and killed or dispersed its inhabitants, but in the year following it was restored and its inhabitants reinstated by Philopcemen, a native of the city. At this time the circuit of its walls always too great, seems to have been contracted. At all events it never again attained political importance, and gradually sank into insignificance. The only great men whom it produced were Philopcemen and Polybius the his- torian. Lycortas, the father of the latter, may be accounted a third. In the time of Pausanias the city was mostly in ruins,

MEGALOSAURUS. See REprizs.

MEGAPODE, the name given generally to a small but remarkable Family of birds, highly characteristic of some parts of the Australian Region, to which it is almost peculiar. The Aegapodiide with the Cracide form that division of the Order Gallinz named by Professor Huxley Peristeropodes (Proc. Zool. Society, 1868, p. 296), aud morphologically seem to be the lowest of the Order, with which apparent fact may perhaps be correlated their singular habit of leaving their eggs to be hatched without incuba- tion, burying them in the ground (as many Reptiles do) or heaping over them a

mound of earth, leaves, and rotten wood. This habit attracted attention more than three hundred years ago,! but the accounts given of it by various

- *Antonio Pigafetta, one of the survivors of Magellan's glorious but disastrous voyage, records in his journal, under date of April 1521, among the peculiarities of the Philippine Islands, then first discovered by Europeans, the existence of a bird there, about the size of a Fowl,*

}

827

travellers were generally discredited by naturalists," and as examples of the birds, probably from their unattractive plumage, appear not to have been brought to Europe, no one of them was seen by any ornithologist or scientifically described until near the end of the first quarter of the present century. The first member of the Family to receive authoritative recognition was one of the largest, inhabiting the continent of Australia, where it is known as the Brush-Turkey, and was originally described by Latham in 1821 under the uame of the New-Holland Vulture, a misleading designation which he subsequently tried to correct on perceiving its, Galline character. It is the Talegallus lathami of modern ornithologists, and is nearly the size of a hen Turkey. Six smaller species of the same genus have since been described, all from New Guinea or the neighbouring islands, but two of them, 7. pyrrhopygius and T, bruyni, have been separated to form 2 group "Apypodius. 'The Australian bird is of a sooty- brown colour, relieved beneath by the lighter edging of some of the feathers, but the head and neck are nearly bare, beset with fine bristles, the skin being of a deep pinkish-red, passing above the breast into a large wattle of bright yellow. The tail is commouly carried upright and partly folded, something like that of a domestic Fowl.

The next form of which we may speak is another inhabitant of Australia, commonly known in England as the Mallee-bird, but to the colonists as the ' Native Pheasant "'—the Lipoa ocellata, described by Gould in the zoological Proceedings for 1840 (p. 126), which has much shorter tarsi and toes, the head entirely clothed, and the tail expanded. Its plumage presents

a pleasing combina- tion of greys and browns of various tints, interspersed with black, white, and buff, the wing-coverts and feathers

which laid its eggs, as big as a Duck's, in the sand, and left them to be hatched by the heat of the sun (Premier Voyage autour du Monde, ed. Amoretti, Paris, A.R. ix. p. 88). More than a hundred years later the Jesuit Nieremberg, in his Historia Naturw, published at Antwerp in 1635, described (p. 207) a bird called " Daie," and by the natives named ' Tapun," not larger than a Dove, which, with its

| tail (!) and feet, excavated a nest in sandy places and laid therein

eggs bigger than those of a Goose. The publication at Rome in 1651 of Hernandez's Hist. Avium Nove Hispanie shews that his papers must have been accessible to Nieremberg, who took from them the passage just mentioned, but, as not unusual with him, misprinted the names which stand in Hernandez's work (p. 56, cap. 220) ' Daic" and "Tapum " respectively, and omitted his predecessor's important addition "Viuit in Philippicis." Not long after, the Dominican Navarrete, a missionary to China, made a considerable stay in the Philippines, and returning to Europe in 1673 wrote an account of the Chinese empire, of which Churchill (Collection of Voyages and Travels, vol. i.) gave an English translation in 1704. It is therein stated (p. 45) that in many of the islands of the Malay Archipelago " there is a very singular bird call'd Zabon," and that " What I and many more admire is, that it being no bigger in Body than an ordinary Chicken, tho' long legg'd, yet it lays an Egg larger than a Gooses, so that the Egg is bigger than the bird itself. . . . In order to lay its Eggs, it digs in the Sand above a yard in depth; after laying, it fills up the hole and makes it even with the rest; there the Eggs hatcli with the heat of the Sun and Sand." He adds further information which need not be quoted here. Gemelli Careri, who travelled from 1663 to 1699, and in the latter year published an account of his voyage ronnd the world, gives similar evidence respecting this remark- able bird, which he calls '* Tavon," in the Philippine Islands (Voy. du tour du Monde, ed, Paris, 1727, v. pp. 157, 158). The Megapode of Luzon is fairly described by Camel or Camelli in his observations on the Birds of the Philippines communicated by Petiver to the Royal Society in 1703 (Phil. Trans., xxiii. p. 1398). In 1726 Valentyn published his elaborate*

work on the East Indies, wherein (deel iii. bk. v. p. 320) he very correctly describes the Megapode of Amboina under the name of " Malleloe," and also a larger kind found in Celebes, so as to shew he had in the course of his long residence in the Dutch settlements become personally acquainted with both.

- *Thus Willughby (Ornithologia, p. 297), or Ray for him, who had, however, only Nieremberg's evidence to cite, and they can scarcely be blamed for their hesitation, considering the number of other marvels narrated by the same worthy father. Buffon also (Oiseaux, ix. p. 436) was just as sceptical in regard to the relation of Careri,*

of the back bearing each near the tip an oval or subcircular patch, whence the trivial scientific name of the bird is given, while a stripe of black feathers with a median line of white extends down the front of the throat, from the chin to the breast. There is but one species of this genus known, as is also the case with the next to be mentioned, which is a singular bird long known to inhabit Celebes, but not fully described until 1846,! when it received from Salomon Miiller (Arch. f. Vaturgeschichte, xii. pt. 1, p. 116) the name of Afacrocephalon maleo, but, being shortly afterwards figured by Gray and Mitchell (Gen. Birds, iii. pl. 123) under the generic term of Megacephalon, has since commonly borne the latter appellation. This is a very remarkable form, bearing a helmet-like protuberance on the back of its head, all of which as well as the neck is bare and of a bright red colour; the plumage of the body is glossy black above, and beneath roseate-white.

Of the Megapodes proper, constituting the genus Megapodius, many species have been described, but authori- ties are greatly at variance as to the validity of several, and here it would be impossible to name all that have been supposed to exist. Some are only known from very young examples—mere chickens; and some have even been described from their eggs alone. In 1870 Mr G. R. Gray enumerated twenty species, of which sixteen were repre- sented in the British Mussum, and several have been described since; but ten years later Professor Schlegel recognized only seventeen species, of which examples of twelve were contained in the Leyden Museum (Jfus. des Pays- Bas, viti., Monogr. 41, pp. 56-86), while M. Oustalet, in his elaborate

monograph of the Family (Anz. Sc. Nat., Zoologie, ser. 6, vols. x. and xi.), admits nineteen species. The birds of this genus range from the Samoa Islands in the east, through the Tonga group, to the New He- brides, the northern part of Australia, New Guinea and its neighbouring islands, Celebes, the Pelew Islands, and the Ladrones, and have also outliers in detached portions of the Indian Region, as the Philippines (where indeed they were first discovered by Europeans), Labuan, and even the Nicobars—though none are known from the intervening islands of Borneo, Java, or Sumatra. Within what may be deemed their proper area they are found, says Mr Wallace (Geogr. Distr. Animals, ii. p. 341) "on the smallest islands and sand-banks, and can evidently pass over a few miles of sea with ease." Indced proof of their roaming disposition.is afforded by the fact that the bird described by Lesson (Voy. Coquille: Zoologie, p. 703) as Alecthelia urvillti, but now considered to be the young of Megapodius freycinett, flew on board his ship when more than 2 miles from the nearest land (Guebé), in an exhausted state, it is true, but that may be attributed to its extreme youth. The species of Mfegapodius are about the size of small Fowls, the head generally crested, the tail very short, the feet enormously large, and, with the exception of Jf. wallacit (Proc. Zool. Society, 1860, Aves, pl. 171), from the Moluccas, all have a sombre plumage.

The extraordinary habit possessed by the Megapodes generally of relieving themselves of the duty of incuba- tion, as before mentioned,—a habit which originally attracted the attention of travellers, whose stories were on that very account discredited,—as well as the highly developed condition of the young at birth, has been so fully described by Gould (//andb. B. Australia, ii. pp. 152- 175), G. R. Gray (Proc. Zool. Society, 1861, pp. 292-296), and Mr Wallace (dfalay Archipelago, i. pp. 415-419 ; ii. pp. 147-149), and so often repeated by other writers, as to

? As we have seen, it was mentioned in 1726 by Valentyn, and a young example was in 1830 described and figured by Quoy and Gaim- ard (Voy. de l'Astrolabe: Oiseaux, p. 239, pl. 25) as the Mega- podius rubripes of Temminck, a wholly different bird.

be very commonly known, and here there seems no necessity to enter into further details concerning it. (A. N.)

MEGARA was the name of two Greck towns, one in Sicily, which has been already described under Hysta, the other on the road from Attica to Corinth. The country which belonged to the city was called Meyapis or Meyapixy ; it occupied the broader part of the isthmus between Attica, Boeotia, Corinth, and the two gulfs, and its whole area is estimated by Clinton at 143 square miles, The range of Mount Geraneia extends across the country from east to west, forming a barrier between continental Greece and the Peloponnesus. The shortest road across this range passes along the eastern side of the mountains, and the most difficult part is the celebrated Scironian rocks, the mythic home of the robber Scirou. The only plain in the rugged little country was the White Plain, in which was situated the only important town, Megara. The town was one of the most important commercial and colonizing centres of Greece in early times, and there is no doubt that its trade, like that of Corinth, owed its origin to the Phcenicians, who found its situation on the isthmus convenient. It became a Dorian city when that tribe conquered tle Peloponnesus. Like many other cities of Greece, Megara was formed out of five villages, which were united on one political foundation ; and this event must have taken place not later than the middle of the Sth century. From this time for two centuries Megara was among the most powerful cities of Greece. Though it had a harbour called Pege on the Corinthian Gulf, and founded a Sicilian colony, Megara Hyblea, in 728 no, yet it did not long compete with Corinth and Coreyra for the western trade. Niszea on the Saronic Gulf was a better harbour, and gave tle Megarians a stronger footing on the eastern seas. In order to keep their hold on the Black Sea traffic, they founded numerous trading stations along- side of their chief rivals, the people of Miletus: Chalcedon and Byzantium on the Bosphorus, and Astacus and Heraclea in Bithynia were colonies of Megara. Wealth and cultnre increased in the city; the country festivals were celebrated in a more elaborate and orderly manner, and Snsarion of Tripodiscus first gave literary form to Grecian comedy, which was soon transferred to Attica.

The situation of Megaris on the isthmus gave it great political power, inasmuch as it commanded all the roads from the Peloponnesus into

continental Greece; and so long as the people continued united under an orderly government they maintained their ligh position. But the development of education prompted the lower classes to demand from the nobles an equal share in the govern- ment, and Megara did not, like Athens and Sparta, produce a constitution which could reconcile the contending parties. A tyrant Theagenes raised himself to supreme power as the leader of the popular party; he made an aqueduct for the city, and appears to have maintained its power and splendour. But he was expelled by the nobles about 600 B.c, and for many years Megara was the scene of continual struggles. The poor, who were indebted to the rich, refused to pay what they counted exorbitant interest, and plundered the houses of the nobles. A vivid picture of the state of the city in the 6th century B.c. is preserved in the writings of the poet Theognis, who belonged to the aristocratic party. Meanwhile Athens was rising to power, and maintained a long war with Megara for the island of Salamis. The Megarians gradually lost strength, and finally Solon wrested the island from them for ever. They sent three thousand troops to fight at Platea. In the wars between Athens and Sparta they were impelled by jealousy of their neighbours of Corinth to join the Athenian alliance, 455-45; but they soon | found that they were only the subjects of Athens, and finally

enrolled themselves among the allies of Sparta.

suffered terribly during the Peloponnesian War: Athenian | ships blockaded their harbours and Athenian armies ravaged |

their land once or twice every year. The long famine in the city is referred to by Aristophanes in the Acharnians. The city maintained a flourishing existence throughout the Greek and Roman periods, but played a very subordinate

They | of Desmarest, and are all from the newest or post-Tertiary y

geological formations of the Argentine Republic and Paraguay, or the lands forming the basin of the Rio de la Plata. Dr Leidy has described, from similar formations in Georgia and South Carolina, bones of a closely allied

species, about one-fourth smaller, which he has named J/.

|

part in history. In the unsettled time when the Roman |

empire had decayed, it was often plundered by pirates.

As regards literature, Megara's chief distinction, besides | the poems of Theognis and the comedy of Susarion, was | the school of philosophy founded there by Euclid, a.

disciple of Socrates. fused and difficult subject ; no very early coins can be with certainty attributed to it. The usual types are Apolline. The topography is described by Pausanias, bk. i. Megara is about fonr hours' carriage-drive from Athens. MEGATHERIUM is the name given by Cuvier to a large extinct animal belonging to the order Hdentata (see Mamata, p. 384). A nearly complete skeleton, found on the banks of the river Luxan, near Buenos Ayres, and

The coinage of the city is a very con- |

mirabile. A third species, Jf laurillardi of Lund, is founded upon remains found in Brazil.

The following description will apply especially to the best-known South American form, Mfegatherium amert- canum. In size it exceeded any existing land animal except the elephant, to which it was inferior only in con- sequence of the comparative shortness of its limbs, for in length and bulk of body it was its equal, if not superior.

| The full length of a mounted skeleton from the fore part

of the head to the end of the tail is 18 feet, of which the tail occupies 5 feet. The head, which is small for the size of the animal, presents a general

resemblance to that of the Sloth; the anterior part of the mouth is, however, more elongated, and the malar bone, though branched posteriorly in the same way as that of the Sloth, meets the zygomatic

sent in 1789 to the Royal Museum at Madrid, long | process of the squamosal, completing the arch. The lower

Skeleton of the Megatherinm, from the specimen in the Museum of the Royal College of Surgeons

of England. xy.

remained the principal if not the only source of infor- mation with regard to tlie species to which it belonged, and furnished the materials for many descriptions, notably that of Cuvier, who determined its affinities with the Sloths.!. In 1832 an important collection of bones of the Megatherium were discovered near the Rio Salado, and were secured for the museum of the College of Surgeons of England, and these, with another collection found at Luxan in 1837, and now in the British Museum, supplied the materials for the complete description of the skeleton published by Professor Owen in 1861. Other skeletons have subsequently been received by several of .the Conti-

nental museums, as Milan and Paris, and, consequently, |

our knowledge of the organization of the Megatherium, so far as it can be deduced from the bones and teeth, is as complete as that of any other animal, recent or extinct. The remains hitherto spoken of are all referred to one species, Megatherium americanum of Blumenbach, MM. cuviert

1 An excellent figure of this skeleton, which unfortunately was incorrectly articulated, and wanted the greater part of the tail, was published by Pander and D'Alton in 1821, and has been frequently reproduced in subsequent works.

jaw has the middle part of its horizontal ramus curiously deepened, so as to admit of implantation of the very long- rooted teeth. In number tlie teeth exactly resemble those of the Sloths, being five above and four below on

each side, and they are limited to the lateral parts of the mouth, front teeth being entirely wanting. They resemble those of the Sloths also in their persistent growth, and in their composition of three tissues — vaso-dentine, true dentine, and cement; but they are of prismatic or quadrate form, and the con- stituent materials of different densities are so arranged that, as they wear, two trans- verse ridges of lard dentine remain ata greater elevation tlian the rest of the tooth, producing a very efficient triturating apparatus (see figs. 35 and 36, article Mam- MaLra, p. 385). '[he vertebral column consists of seven cervical, sixteen dorsal, three lumbar, five sacral, and eighteen caudal vertebra. The spinous processes are much better developed than in the Sloths, and are all directed backwards, there being no reversing of the in- clination near the posterior end of the dorsal series, as in most active-bodied mammals. In the lumbar region, the accessory zygapophyses, rudimentary in Sloths, are fully developed, as in the Anteaters.

The tail is large, and its basal vertebrae have strong

| lateral and spinous processes and chevron bones, indicating

great muscular development. The scapnla resembles that of the Sloths in the union of the acromion with the cora- coid, and in the bridging over of the supra-scapular notch. The clavicle is complete and very large much resembling that of man on a large scale. The fore limbs are longer than the hind limbs. The radius and ulna are both well- developed, and have a considerable amount of freedom of movement. The hand is singularly modified. The first digit is represented only by a rudimentary metacarpal, but

| the next three are large, and terminate in phalanges

830

adapted for the support of immense claws, the middle one being especially large. The outer or fifth digit has no claw, and it may be considered as certain that the weight of the foot was, in standing and walking, chiefly thrown upon this, and that it was protected by a callous pad below as in the

existing great Anteater, while the other toes were curved | inwards towards the palm, only coming in contact with | The mechanical |

the ground by their outer surfaces. arrangements by which the weight of the body was thrown entirely upon the outer side of the foot are very curious, and are fully described in Professor Owen's memoir. The

pelvis is remarkably wide, even more so than that of the |

Elephant, but it is formed on the samme principle as in the Sloths. The femur is extremely broad and flattened ; the tibia and fibula are short and strong, and united together at each end. The hind foot, contrary to the usual rule in the Hdentata, is even more singularly modified than the hand. The ankle-joint is formed upon a peculiar plan, quite un- like that of the Sloths, or of any other mammal, except the Megatherium's nearest allies. nearly as far backwards as the fore part of the foot does forwards. There is no trace of great toe or hallux, or of its corresponding cuneiform bone. The second toe is rudimentary. Tlie third has an enormous ungual phalanx, which, like those of the hand, is remarkable for the immense

development of the bony sheath which is reflected from |

its proximal end around the base of the claw. The two outer toes have large and very peculiarly-shaped meta- tarsals, but only small phalanges, and no claws. The creature probably walked upon the outer edge of the sole, so that the great falcate claw of the third toe did not come into contact with the ground, and so was kept in a state of sharpness ready for use. The foot was therefore formed upon quite a different principle from that of the Anteaters or Sloths, thongh somewhat like the latter in having two of the toes aborted.

Taking all the various points of its structure together, they clearly indicate affinities both with the existing Sloths and with the Anteaters, the skull and teeth more resembling those of the former, and the vertebral column and limbs the latter. It is also not difficult to infer the food and habits of this enormous creature. That it was a leaf-eater there can be little doubt, but the greater size and more complex structure of its teeth might have enabled it to crush the smaller branches as well as the leaves and succulent shoots which form the food of the existing Sloths. It is, however, very improbable that it

climbed into the branches of the trees like its diminutive congeners, but it is far more likely that it obtained its subsistence by tearing them down with the great hook-like claws of its powerful prehensile fore limbs, being easily enabled to reach them by raising itself up upon the massive tripod formed by the two hind feet, firmly fixed to the ground by the one huge falcate claw, and the stout, muscular tail. The whole conformation of the hinder part of the animal is strongly suggestive of such an action. There can also be little doubt but that all its movements were as slow and deliberate as those of its modern representatives.

An idea at one time prevailed that the Megatherium was covered externally with a coat of bony armour like that of the Armadillos, but this originated in dermal plates belonging to the Glyptodon, a totaily distinct animal, having been accidentally associated with bones of the Megatherium. Similar plates, on a smaller scale, have indeed been found in connexion with the skeleton of both Mylodon and Scelidotherium, animals of the same

family, but never yet with the Megatherium, which we.

may therefore imagine with a covering of coarse hair like that of its nearest living allies, the Sloths and Anteaters,

The calcaneum projects |

MEG—MEH

Bibliography.—J. Garriga and J. B. Bry, Deseripeion del esque. leto de un euadrupedo muy eorpulento y raro, que se conserva én el Real Gabinete de Historia Natural de Madrid, eon 5 laminas, fol. 1796 ; G. Cuvier, in Annales du Muséum, vol. v. p. sfc; 1804 : Pander and D' Alton, Das Riesenfaulthier abgebildet und beschrieben, 1821; R. Owen, "On the Megatherium," in Philosophical Trans. aetions for 1851, 1855, 1856, and 1858, republished as a separate work in 1861; J. Leidy, " Memoir on the Extinet Sloth Tribe of North America," Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge, vol. vii. 1855; H. Burmeister, Deseription physique de la République Argentine, t. iii. pt. 1, " Mammiféres vivants et éteints," 1879, p. 285. – (W. H. FE)

MEGHNA, a river of India, forming, in the lower part of its course, the great estuary of the Bengal delta, which conveys to the sea the main body of the waters of the Ganges and the Brahmaputra, which unite at Goaldnda in Faridpur district. The united waters thence roll south— a mighty river of great depth and turbidness, sometimes split up into half a dozen channels by sand-banks of its own formation, sometimes spreading out into a widespread sheet of water which the eye cannot see across. The river enters the sea by four principal mouths, enclosing the three large islands of Dakshin Shahbazpur, Hatia, and Sandwip.

_ [t is navigable by native boats of the largest burden, and

also by river steamers, all the year through; but the navigation is difficult, and sometimes dangerous, on account of shifting sand-banks and "snags," and boisterous weather when the monsoon is blowing. The most favourable season for navigation is between November and February. Alluvion and diluvion are constantly taking place, especially along the seaboard, and in Nodakhali district the land is said to have advanced seawards 4 miles in twenty-three years ; while the islands fringing the mouth are annually being cut away and redeposited in fresh shapes.

The tidal phenomena of the Meghnd surpass those of any other Indian river. The regular rise of the tide is from 10 to 18 feet, and at springs the sea rnshes up in a single wave, known as the "bore,"—on the Meghna a justly dreaded danger to boatmen. It is greatest at the time of the biennial equinoxes, when navigation is sometimes impeded for days together. The tidal wave is suddenly belield advancing like a wall topped with foam of the height of nearly 20 feet, and at the rate of 15 miles an hour; in a few minutes all is over, and the river has changed from ebb to flood tide. A still greater danger is the "storm wave," which occasionally sweeps up the Meghné in the shape of cyclones. The latest and most destructive of these disasters were those of May 1867 and October 1876, when the whole islands and sea-face of the mainland were entirely submerged. In the latter calamity it has been officially estimated that about 19 per cent. of the popula- tion in the mainland portion of Nodkhali, and in the islands of Sandwip and Hatia, were drowned, and that a like proportion subsequently died of cholera and other diseases caused by the results of the storm.

MEHADIA, a market-town in the county of Szdrény, Hungary, is situated on the Bella-Reka, or Bereka, 134 miles north of Orsova, in 44° 55' N. lat., 22° 29' E. jong. The town is small but thriving, and contains Greek Orthodox and Roman Catholic churches, the ruins of a castle, and some interesting Roman antiquities. Melddia is, however, chiefly of importance as the station for the Hercules Baths, distant about 3 miles east from the town, and situated in a narrow pass in the romantic valley of the Cserna. Of the twenty-two hot springs of Mehddia, nine are now in use, the most powerful one being the Hercules, which yields about 5000 cubic feet of water per hour. The springs are all strongly impregnated with salts of sulphur, iodine, bromine, and chlorine, and their average temperature is 70° to 145° Fahr. They are much used for chronic rheumatism, gout, and cutaneous eruptions, and, during the season, which usnally lasts from the middle of

May to the end of September, are resorted to by over |

a thousand visitors. The town of Mehadia has about 2200 inhabitants, principally Roumanians and Germans.

Already in the times of the Romans famous for their healing efficacy, the Thermx Herculis (Fontes Herculis, Aque Herculis) were the resort of emperors, generals, and senators, whose sojourn there is attested by various inscriptions aud relics. The town is the site of the ancient Roman colony of Ad Mediam, near which

the Roman road from the Danube to Dacia passed in its course |

through the valley of the Cserna. Subsequent to the destruction of the Roman empire the baths fell into disuse until 1735; great improvemeuts have been effected in them during the present cen- tury, and receutly a spacious kursaal has been built at the expense of the Hungarian Government. The fortress of Mehadia was often stormed during the wars with the Turks, and notably in 1716, 1738, and 1789.

MEHEMET ALI, or MofamMep 'Ati. vol. vii. p. 760 sq.

See Ecypt,

MEHUL, Evmenne Heyer (1763-1817), one of the

most remarkable composers of France, was born at Givet, in Ardennes, on the 24th of June 1763. too poor to give him a regular musical education, his first ideas of art were derived from a poor blind organist of Givet ; yet such was his aptitude that, when ten years old, he was appointed organist of the convent of the Récollets. 1775 an able German musician and organist, Wilhelm Hauser, was engaged for the monastery of Lavaldieu, a few miles from Givet, and Méhul became his occasional pupil. In his sixteenth year he was taken to Paris by a military officer, and placed himself under Edelmann, a good musician and harpsichord player. His first attempts at

therefore turned his attention to sacred and dramatic |

music. The great composer Gluck received him kindly, and gave him advice in his studies. After various delays

and disappointmeuts during his efforts for six years to |

obtain, at the Grand Opera, a representation of his Cora et Alonzo, he offered to the Opéra Comique his /uphrosine et Coradin, which, being accepted aud performed in 1790, at once fixed his reputation. The critics acknowledged in

it great energy of dramatic expression, and much brilliant |

instrumentation, but objected to a general want of graceful inelody,—a strange complaint, since his style is far more refined than that of either Héroldor Auber. His opera of Stratonice had great success. After several other operas which did not succeed, his Adrien appeared, aud added much to his fame, which was still further increased by his three best works, Le jeune Henrt, Uthal, and Joseph, the finest of the series. He had been appointed one of the four inspectors of tle Paris Conservatory, but that office

made him feel continually the insufficiency of his early |

studies, a want which he endeavoured to remedy by incessant application. Z%moléon, Ariodant, and Biron followed Stratonice, with various success. Uthal can scarcely be expected to live, since, by desire of Napoleon Bonaparte, it was written for an orchestra without violins. Epicure was composed by Méhul and Cherubini jointly ; but the superiority of the latter was evident. Méhul's next opera, Z'rato, failed. After writing forty-two operas, besides a number of songs for the festivals of the republic, cantatas, and orchestral pieces of various kinds, his health gave way, from an affection of the chest, which terminated his life on the 18th of October 1817.

MEIBOM, Hetnatcu (1555-1625), was born at Lemgo on December 4, 1555, and died on September 20, 1625, at Helmstiidt, where he had held the chair of history and poetry from 1583. He was a writer of Latin verses (Parodiarum Horatianarum Libri III. et Sylvarum Labri ITI., 1588), and his talents in this direction were recognized by the emperor Rudolph IL, who ennobled him and made

history of Germany. His Opuscula Historica ad res Germanicas spectantia were edited and published in 1660 by his grandson, Heinrich Meibom (1638-1700), who also was professor of history and poetry at Helinstadt, and incorporated the grandfather's work with his own Aerum Germanicarum Scriptores (1688).

MEININGEN, the capital of the little duchy of Saxe- Meiningen, in central Germany, and the seat of the pro- vincial courts for Saxe-Meiuingen, Saxe-Coburg, aud the Prussian districts of Schmalkalden and Schleusingen, is

situated on the right bauk of the Werra, about 40 miles | to the south of Eisenach.

It consists of an old town and several handsome suburbs, but much of the former has been rebuilt in a modern style since a destructive fire in 1874. The chief buildings are the Elisabethenburg, or

old ducal palace, dating chiefly from 1682, and containing

several collections; the new palace; the new town-house ;

_ the post-office; the barracks; aud the old town church,

His father being |

| drilled actors aud unexcelled sceuic effects.

Tn |

with its two towers, erected in 1003. The theatre has lately attained a European reputation for its admirably The English Garden, a beautiful public park, contains the ducal mortuary chapel and several monuments. The industries,

consisting of brewing and the weaving of woollen and

. town.

cotton cloth, are insignificant. was 11,227.

Meiningcn, which was subject to the bishops of Wiirzburg for up- wards of 500 years (1000-1542), came into the possession of the dukes of Saxony in 1583. At the partition of 1660 it fell to the

The population in 1880

: emma J 4 | share of Saxe-Altenburg, and in 1680 it became the capital of instrumental composition in 1781 did not succeed, and he |

Saxe-Meiningen. MEISSEN, an ancient and important industrial town

| of Saxony is situated on the left bank of the Elbe, between

the streams Meisse and Triebisch, in the district and about 9 miles to the north-west of the town of Dresden. Its

irregular hilly site and numerous fine old buildings give

it a quaint and picturesque appearance, and most of the streets are narrow aud uneven. 'The cathedral, one of the finest Early Gothic edifices in Germany, is con- spicuously situated ou the Schlossberg, 160 feet above the It is said to have been originally founded by the

emperor Otho I, but the present building was begun in

| lofty tower dates from the 15th century.

{

the 13th century, and completed soon after 1400. The Within the cathedral are the tombs of several Saxon princes of the 15th and 16th centuries, including those of Albert aud Ernest, the founders of the present reigning lines. Ad-

| joining the cathedral stands the castle, dating originally

from 1473-81, but restored and named Albrechtsburg in 1676. Another thorough restoration was uudertaken in 1863, when a series of historical frescos by celebrated modern artists was begun upon its walls. An old stone

bridge of the 13th century connects the Schlossberg with

St Afra.

the Afraberg, which owes its name to the old convent of The couvent was suppressed by Duke Maurice

in 1543, and 'converted into the "Fiirstenschule," one of

'and Gellert among its former pupils.

the most renowned schools in Germany, counting Lessing The other chief buildings are the town-house, built in 1479, and restored in 1875; the fine old town church, also called the Frauen- kirche or Marienkirche ; and the churches of St Francis, St Nicholas (coeval with the town), and St Afra. Since 1710, immediately after Bottcher's great: discovery, Meissen has been the seat of the manufacture of the so- called Dresden china. Till 1863 the

porcelain factory was in the Albrechtsburg, but in that year it was transferred to a large new building in the Triebisch- thal, close to the town, where about six hundred and seventy hands are now employed. Meissen also

him poet laureate in 1590 ; but his claim to be remembered | contains iron foundries, manufactories of earthenware rests entirely on his services in elucidating the medizval | stoves and pottery, a jute-mill, sugar-refineries, breweries,

832

tanneries, &c. A considerable trade the wine produced in the surrounding vineyards. population in 1880 was 14,166.

Meissen, one of the oldest and most interesting towns in Saxony, was founded by the emperor Henry I. in 928 as an outpost against the Wends, and beeaine the capital of a margraviate, which was after- wards merged in the duehy of Saxony. Its margraves were among

is carried on in The

direct aneestors of the present royal house of Saxony. From 965 till 1581 Meissen was also the seat of an important line of bishops, who ranked as prinees of the empire. The town suffered greatly from the Hussites in the 15th century, and it was captured by the

in the Thirty Years' War. In 1687 it was severely handled by the Swedes, and in 1745 it fell into the hands of the Prussians.

Weguweiser durch die Stadt Meissen, 1878.

MEKONG, Mexuone, or Makone, less frequently Nam-Kone, the Da-Kio of the Tibetans, the Lantsang- Kiang or Lankiang of the Chinese, and the Son-Kong of the Anamese, sometimes also called the Cambodia or Camboja, is one of the largest and most remarkable rivers of southern Asia. As it rises in Tibet, probably about

| They are covered when the river is in full flood.

=

ME K—MEL

number of wells from 12 to 24 feet deep were sunk down among the granite pebbles which form the bed of the river, just above mean-water mark; and they all yielded water with a greater or less degree of saltness and warmth. The river

_ basin in all the upper section is extremely narrow, being

34° N. lat. and 94° E. long., and reaches the China Sea |

about 10° N. lat., after a somewhat devious course through

Yunnan, Burmah, Siam, Cambodia, and Cochin-China, its

total course may be safely stated at 2000 miles. In spite, regarded as little more than a mountain torrent on an unusually large scale. It certainly forms a very extensive delta (see Cocnin-Cutna, vol. vi. pp. 93, 94), and is navigable for steamboats as far up as Cratieh (about 280

: : : : : . | any afiluents of considerable size. imperial troops in the war of the Smalkaldian League, and again | y e of considerable size

| or Se-Kong on the left. See Die Stadt Meissen und ihre Umgegend, 1855; and 01. Herbst's Praktischer

the most powerful medieval prinees in Germany, and were the | separated by long lines of high mountains from the valley

of the Salwin on the west and from that of the Chin-sha- kiang or River of Golden Sands on the east. Not till the comparatively low country of Siam is reached are there The most important are the Se-nmin and the Udong on the right, and the Attopeu The Se-mun or Ubon river was explored as far as Korat by the Lagrée expedition, and its tributary the Se-dém has been followed by Dr Harmand (Bull. Soc. Géoy., 1877). Both streams have a

rapid and interrupted course. Like the Nile, the Mekong is subject to a great aunual inundation, described as early as the 16th century by Camoens, who calls the river Mecom. At some places the diflerence between floud-mark and ordinary level is from 35 to 40 feet (see Cocuin-Cuina). The first Europeans to make true acquaintance with the river course

_ were the Dutchman Wusthoff and his fellow ambassadors,

who in 1641 ascended as far as Winkyan, i.e., Vienchang ;

_ their narrative is given by Valentijn, and might have been however, of this great length, the Mekong must be |

miles froin the river mouth), but navigation soon becomes | difficult, not through want of water, but from the great |

irregularity of the bed. At Stung-Streng the river measures about 2 leagues from bank to bank, and its current is strong even to violence; it "twists into the sharpest eddies, and drives against the banks with fury." A little higher up are the great cataracts of Kong, Beyond these the channel again becomes navigable as far as Bassac, when it is still about 6500 feet in width; bnt before long the banks close in and the river, narrowed to about 900 feet, pours along a current of extraordinary depth. Above Khemarat the rapids again begin. At Paklay, Mouhot describes the Mekong as larger than the Menam at Bangkok, forcing its way between the lofty mountains with a noise like the roaring of the sea. About 130 miles farther up, at Luang-Prabang, it has again an unob- structed channel about 3000 feet wide; above Sien-kong the river winds through a magnificent plain; but soon

afterwards, in spite of its volume of water, it becomes less |

navigable than before. The great French expedition of 1866-67 touched its course only at one place higher up, Sien-hong ; but other travellers have crossed it at various points in Yunnan. Mr Grosvenor found it, near Yung-feng- chang, at a height of 4700 feet above the sea, a streain of from 60 to 80 yards wide, flowing smoothly and steadily in the floor of a deep gorge (see Coleborne Baker, "Trav. and Res. in Western China," Roy. Geog. Soc. Suppl. Papers, 1882). It is there crossed by an iron suspension bridge, of

Chinese workmanship, consisting of twelve chains with links about 1 foot long (see Gill, River of Golden Sand, vol. ii. p. 330). Higher up, near Tse-ku mission-station, lies the ter- rifie defile to which Cooper (7'rav. of a Pioneer of Commerce, 1871) gave the name of Hogg's Gorge. The head waters of the Mekong have never been traced to their source ; but Huc and Gabet saw the confluence of the two main branches at Tsiamdo (32° N. lat.), and the abbé Desgodins has followed the stream from that point down to Ye-tche in 27° 20'N. lat. (see La Mission du Thibet, Paris, 1872, and the abbé's papers in Bull. Soc. Géog., 1871, 1875, 1876, and 1877). At Yerkalo he observed a curious phenonienon : a

enough to suggest that the Mekong could not form a trade route to the interior. For the French exploration which finally settled the question, see Garnier's Lxpédition, &c., 1873, and the notice of Garnier in vol. x. p. 82.

MELA, Pomponius, a Roman writer on geography. His little work, though a mere compendium, is the only systematic treatise on the subject preserved to us in the Latin language, with the exception of that which forms part of the encyclopedic work of the elder Pliny, and from this circunistance it derivesa value to which it would be little entitled from its intrinsic merits. Nothing is known of the author except his name, and that he was born, as he himself informs us, at a small town called Tingentera in the south of Spain. But the date of his work may be fixed with little doubt from an allusion in the preface to a proposed expedition of the reigning emperor to Britain, which can hardly be referred to any other event than the visit to that island of the emperor Claudius in 43 a.p. This conclusion is accepted by all the recent editors ; the view of some earlier scholars, who understood this passage as referring to the expedition of Julius Cesar, is clearly disproved by the mention of

| several facts which were not anterior to the reign of

Augustus. 'The little treatise is not only a mere abridg- ment, occupying less than one hundred pages of ordinary print, but is so deficient in method and systematic character that we should have supposed it to be little more than a mere schoolbook, were it not that we find the name of the author figuring in a prominent manner among the authori- ties cited by Pliny for the geographical books of his vast compilation.

His general views of the geography of the earth do not differ materially from those which were current among Greek writers from the time of Eratosthenes to that of Strabo, and are well known to us from the great work of the latter author, which was, however, in all probability unknown to Mela, as it certainly was to Pliny. Butin one of his views he stands alone among ancient writers on geography, that after describing the division of the earth into five zones, of which two only were inhabitable, he states as an undoubted fact the existence of antechthones, who inhabited the southern temperate zone, but were inaccessible and consequently unknown to the inhabitants of the corresponding zone in the north, on account of the excessive heat of the intervening torrid zonc. His views

of the division and boundaries of the three continents of Europe, Asia, and Africa coincide with those of Erato- sthenes; and, in common with all ancient geographers from the time of Alexander to that of Ptolemy, he regarded the Caspian Sea as an inlet from the Northern Ocean, corre- spouding to the Persian Gulf on the south. His ideas concerning India are extremely confused and imperfect,— altogether inferior to those possessed by Greek writers long before ; he follows Eratosthenes in supposing that country to occupy the south-eastern angle of Asia, whence the coast trended northwards to Scythia, and then swept round to the westward to the opening of the Caspian Sea. As usual he places the Rhipwan Mountains and the Hyper- boreans near the Scythian Ocean, which he of course con- nects with that supposed to exist.to the north of Europe.

With regard to the west of Europe, on the other hand, his knowledge was somewhat in advance of the Greek geographers, as might be expected from the extension of the Roman dominion and civilization in that quarter, and from a writer who was himself a native of Spain. Accord- ingly we find him possessing a more accurate idea than either Eratosthenes or Strabo of the western coast-line of Spain and Gaul, and its deep indentation by a gulf (the Bay of Biscay) between the projecting headlands of the two countries. Of Britain, on the contrary, he has little to tell us, beyond what we find in Cesar or Strabo, though he appears to have had a clearer ideaof the position of the British Islands than the Greek geographer. He is also the

first ancient writer who mentions the name of the Oreades or Orkneys, which he correctly describes as a large group of islands to the north of Britain. Of 'the north of Europe his knowledge was still utterly imperfect ; but he had a vague notion of the existence to the north of Germany of a large bay, which he calls Codanus Sinus, containing many islands, large and small, among which was one much larger than the rest, which he calls Codanovia,— evidently the same name that reappears in Pliny under the form Scandinavia, which has been attached by modern writers to the great northern peninsula of Europe.

The method followed by Mela in describing the three continents is peculiar and inconvenient. Instead of treat- ing each continent separately, aud describing the countries included in it, he begins at the Strait of the Columns (the Straits of Gibraltar), which was close to his own birthplace, and describes the countries adjoining the south coast of the Mediterranean from Mauretania to Egypt, and afterwards those around the east coast of the same sea with its tributary the Euxine, and then back along the north of the Mediterranean from Scythia to Gaul and Spain. He then begins again with the countries bordering the western and northern ocean from Spain and Gaul round to India, and from thence by Persia and Arabia to the Ethiopians, and thence again round Africa to the straits from which he began. In common with most ancient geographers, he considered Africa as surrounded by the sea, but had a very inadequate idea of its extent towards the south.

The first edition of Pomponius Mela was published in 1471, and it was very often reprinted in the 15th and 16th centuries. The edition of Voss in 1658, with a valuable commentary, became the foundation of all the subsequent editions, of which those by Gron- ovius (in 1685 and 1742) are aniong the best-known and most use- ful. The edition by Tzschucke, in 6 vols. 8vo (1806), contains an overwhelming mass of notes and commentaries, but by far the best text is that of the recent edition by G. Parthey (Berlin, 1867), who has in many instances restored the original readings, which had been displaced by the conjectures of Voss and others. (E. H. B.)

MELANCHTHON, Puitie (1497-1560), was born at Bretten, a town of the lower Palatinate, on February 16, 1497. His father, George Schwartzerd,

was a kinsman of the famous Reuchlin, and by profession an armourer or commissary of artillery under the Palatinate princes. His mother, Barbara Reuter, was a thrifty housewife and

affectionate parent, whose pious character is evidenced by a well-known German rhyme, of which she is the reputed author, beginning Almosen geben armet nicht. His mother's father, John Reuter, who was for many years mayor of Bretten, charged himself with the education of Philip. Taught first by John Hungarus, then by George Simler at the academy of Pfortzheim, where he lived in the house of Reuchlin's sister, young Schwartzerd exhibited remark- able precocity, and speedily won the regard of Reuchlin, who dubbed him Melanchthon (the Greek form of Schwartz-erd), according to the fashion of that age. He lived two years at Heidelberg, and the next three at Reuchlin's university of Tiibingen, where he studied law, medicine, and theology, taking his doctor's degree in 1514. He began soon after to give public lectures on rhetoric, and to comment on Virgil aud Terence, and ere long it be- came known among European scholars that anew brilliant star of learning had risen on the horizon, Erasmus pro-phesying that he would himself be speedily eclipsed. In 1518, on Reuchlin's recommendation, Melanchthon was appointed by the elector of Saxony professor of Greek in the university of Wittenberg. This appointment marked an epoch in German university education; Wittenberg became the school of the nation ; the scholastic methods of instruction were summarily set aside, and in a Discourse on Reforming the Studies of Youth Melanchthon gave proof, not only that he had thoroughly caught the Renaissance spirit, but that he was fitted to become one of its foremost leaders. He began to lecture on Homer and the Epistle to Titus, and in connexion with the former he announced that, like Solomon, he sought Tyrian brass and gems for the adornment of God's temple. Luther himself received a fresh impulse towards the study of Greek, and his transla- tion of the Scriptures, begun as early as 1517, now made rapid progress, Melanchthon helping to collate the Greek versions aud revising Luther's translation. Melanchthon on his part felt the spell of Luther's large personality and spiritual depth, and he seems to have been prepared on his first arrival at Wittenberg to accept the new theology, which indeed as yet existed mainly in subjective form, and as a living

spiritual force, in the person of Luther. To reduce it to an objective system, to exhibit it dialectically, the calmer mind of Melanchthon, with its architectural faculty and delicate moral tact, was requisite. Theologi- cally it is impossible to separate Melanchthon from Luther ; 'the miner's son drew forth the metal, the armourer's son fashioned it." Luther, in whom courage and energy were too much akin to violence and zealous decision to narrow intolerance, and Melanchthon, whose calm deliberation was apt to degenerate into vacillation and whose conciliatory temperament was too much allied to timidity, were eaclt the fit complement of the other. ©

Melanchthon was first drawn into the arena of the Reformation controversy through the Leipsic discussion, of which he was an eager spectator. He had been sharply reproved by Dr Eck for giving aid to Carlstadt (" Tace tu, Philippe, ac tua studia cura nec me perturba"), and he was shortly afterwards himself attacked by the blustering Ingolstadt doctor. Melanchthon replied in a brief treatise —a model of Christian moderation —setting forth Luther's first principle of the supreme authority of Scripture in opposition to the patristic writings on which Eck so boast- fully relied. His marriage in 1520 to Catherine Krapp of Wittenberg increased his own happiness, and gave a domestic centre to the Reformation. In 1521, during Luther's confinement in the Wartburg, Melanchthon occupied the important position of leader of the Reformation cause at the university. He defended the action of the Augus- tinian monks when they substituted for the celebration of the mass the sacrament of the supper partaken of by

XV. — 105

B34

the people under both kinds; but, on the advent of the Anabaptist enthusiasts of Zwickau, he had a still more difficult part to play. Melanchthon was irresolute. In their attacks upon infant baptism they seemed to him to have hit upon a "weak point"; and in regard to their claim to personal inspiration his position was summed up in his own words, " Luther alone can decide; on the one hand let us beware of quenching the Spirit of God, and on the other of being led astray by the spirit of Satan." In the same year he published his Loct Communes Rerum Theologicarum.

After the first diet of Spires (1526), where a precarious peace was patched up for the Reformed faith, Melanchthon was deputed as one of twenty-eight commissioners to visit the Reformed states and regulate the constitution of churches, he having just published a famous treatise called the Libellus Visitatorius, a directory for the use of the commissioners. At the Marburg conference (1529) between the German and Swiss Reformers, Luther was pitted against (Ecolampadius and Melanchthon against Zwingli in the discussion regarding the real presence in the sacrament. How far the candid conciliatory spirit of Melanchthon was biassed by Luther's intolerance is evident from the exagger- ated and inaccurate accounts of the conference written by the former to the elector of Saxony. At the diet of Augsburg (1530) Melanchthon was the leading representa- tive of the Reformation. With anxiety and tears he drew up for that diet the seventeen articles of the evangelical faith, which are known as the " Augsburg Confession." He held conferences with Romish divines appointed to adjust differences, and afterwards wrote an Apology for the Augsburg Confession. After the Augsburg conference further attempts were made to settle the Reformation controversy by a compromise, and Melanchthon, from his conciliatory spirit and facility of access, appeared to the Romanists the fittest of the Reformers to deal with. His historical instinct led him ever to revert to the original unity of the church, and to regard subse- quent Romish errors as excrescences rather than proofs of an essentially anti-Christian system. He was weary of the rabies theologorum, and fondly dreamed that the evangelical leaven, if simply tolerated, would at length purify the church's life and doctrine In 1537, when the Protestant divines signed the Lutheran Articles of Smalkald, Melanchthon appended to his signature the reservation that he would admit of a pope provided he allowed the gospel and did not claim to rule by divine right.

The year after Luther's death, when the battle of Miihlberg (1547) had given a seemingly crushing blow to the Protestant cause, an attempt was made to weld together the iron and clay.of the evangelical and the papal doctrines, which resnlted in the compilation by Pflug, Sidonius, and Agricola of the Augsburg "Interim." This was proposed to the two parties in Germany as a provisional ground of agreement till the decision of the council of Trent. Melanchthon, on being referred to, declared equivocally that, though the Interim was inadmissible, yet so far as matters of

indifference (adzaphora) were concerned it might be received. Hence arose that " adiaphoristic " controversy in connexion with which he has been misrepresented as holding among matters of indifference such cardinal doctrines as justification by faith, the number of the sacraments, as well as the dominion of the pope, feast-days, and soon. The fact is that, in these tentative negotiations, Melanchthon sought, not really to minimize differences, but to veil them under an intentional obscurity of expression. Thus he allowed the necessity of good works to salva- tion, but not in the Romish sense, proposed to allow the seven sacraments, but only as rites which had no inherent efficacy to salvation, and so on, He afterwards retracted

his compliauce with the adiaphora, and never really swerved from the views set forth in the Loci Communes – but he regarded the surrender of more perfect for i perfect forms of truth or of expression as a painful sacrifice rendered to tlie weakness of erring brethren. Luther though he had uttered certain expressions of dissatisfaction with Melanchthon, and had more keenly defended in his last years what was distinctively his own, yet maintained hearty and unbroken friendship with him; but after Luther's death certain smaller meu arose in name of Luther who formed a party emphasizing the extremest points of the doctrine of the latter. Hence the later years of Melanch- thon were much occupied with acrid controversies within the evangelical church; an account of these, however, would be out of place here. His last years were spent in fruitless couferences with his Romanist adversaries, and amid various controversies among the Reformed, but the flame of his piety burnt brightly till the close. He died in his sixty-third year, on the 19th April 1560, and his body was laid beside that of Martin Luther.

Mclanchthon's ever ready pen, clear thought, and elegant style made him the scribe of the Reformation, most publie documents on that side being drawn up by him. He never attained entire in- dependence of Luther, though he gradually modified some of his positions from those of the pure Lutherism with whieh he set out, His development is ehiefly noteworthy in regard to these two lead- ing points—the relation of the evangelium or

doctrine of free grace (1) to free will and moral ability, and (2) to the law and penitentia or the good works eonneeted with repentanee. At first Luther's cardinal doctrine of grace appeared to Melanchthon inconsistent with any view of free will; and, following Luther, he renounced Aristotle and philosophy in general, since " philosophers attribute everything to human power, while the saered writings represent all moral power as lost by the fall." In the first edition of the Loci (1521) he held, to the length of fatalism, the Augustinian doctrine of irresistible grace, working according to God's immutable deerees, and denied freedom of will in matters eivil and religious alike. In the Augsburg Confession (1530), which was largely due to him, freedom is elaimed for the will in non-religious matters, and in the Loci of 1533 he ealls the denial of freedom Stoicism, and holds that in justifieation there is a certain causality, though not worthiness, in the reeipient subordinate to the Divine eausality. In 1535, combating Laurentius Valla, he did not deny the spiritual incapacity of the will per sc, but held that this is strengthened by the word of God, to whieh it can eleave. The will co-operates with the word and the Holy Spirit. Finally, in 1548, he says that the cause of the difference of final destiny among men lies in the different method of treating grace whieh is possible to believers as to others. Man may pray for help and reject graec. This he ealls free will, as the power of laying hold of graee. Melanehthon's doetrine of the three coneurrent causes in conversion, viz., the Holy Spirit, the word, and the human will, suggested the semi- Pelagian position ealled Synergism, which was held by some of his immediate followers.

In regard to the relation of grace to repentance and good works, Luther was disposed to make faith itself the prineiple of sanetifi- cation. Melanehthon, however, for whom ethies possessed a speeial interest, laid more stress on the law. He began to do this in 1527 in the Libcllus Visitatorius, which urged pastors to instruet their people in the necessity of repentance, and to bring the threatemings of the law to bear upon men in order to faith. This brought down upon him the opposition of the Antinomian John Agricola. In the Loci of 15385 Melanehthon sought to put the fact of the co-existenec of justification and good works in the believer on a seeure basis by declaring the latter necessary to eternal life, though the believer's destiny thereto is already fully guaranteed in his justifieation. In the Loci of 1548 he did not retain the doetrine of the necessity of good works in order to salvation, and

*to this he added, in the Leipsic Interim, "that this in no way countenances the error that eternal life is merited by the worthiness of our own works." Melanebthon was led gradually to lay more and more stress upon the law and moral ideas; but the basis of the relation of faith and good works was never clearly brought out by him, and he at length fell back on his original position that we have justification and inheritance of bliss in and by Christ alone, and that good works are neeessary by reason of immutable Divine eommand. en ; *s li i amerarius. See also Matthes, 1". eee ae Charakteristtk Melanchthons als Theologen, Halle, 1845; Rothe's Geddchinissrede auf Melanchthon, 1860 Q Nitzsch, Melanchthon, 1860; Schmidt, Melanchthons Leben, 1864. There is a biography in English by F. A. Cox, 2d ed., London, 1817, The works of Melanchthon, {including his correspondence, are contained in the voluminous Corpus Reforma*

_ torum, edited by Bretschneider and Bindseil. (J. WL)

MEL—MEL

MELANESIA. This term comprises that long belt of island groups which, beginning in the Indian archipelago at the east limits of the region there occupied by the Malay race, aud, as it were, a prolongation of that great island region, runs south-east for a distance of some 3500 English miles, 2.¢., from New Guinea at the equator, in 130° E. long., to New Caledonia just within the Tropic, 167° E. long., and eastwards to Fiji, in 180°. This chain of gronps has a certain geographical as well as ethnical unity. Its curve follows roughly the outline of the Australian coast, and large islands occur, with a number of small ones, along the whole length, with mountains of considerable height, coinciding pretty closely with a line of volcanic action. Melanesia is usually held to begin with New Guinea, this great island being then viewed as the headquarters of that dark Papuan race which, widely and variously modified in all the other groups, occupies the whole region, as the name Melanesia implies; but the race really extends farther west, for the large islands Flores and Timor, with several smaller ones, are also essentially Papuan.

New Guinea, 1490 miles long, and containing about 303,000 square miles, the largest island in the world after Australia, is clothed with almost impenetrable forests, through which mountain ranges rise to a height of

13,000 feet. Parallel to its longer axis, 150 miles to the north, are the Admiralty Islands, all small, with one exception, in which the hills rise to 1600 feet, and which is probably of volcanic origin, as the natives use spearheads and imple- ments of obsidian. A Polynesian element seems to be present, and customs peculiar to both races have been observed. Mr H. N. Moseley, of the " Challenger," found them shrewd but honest traders, with much artistic skill in their carvings and designs. They have nunierals up to 10, with an idiom for 8 and 9, viz., 10-2 and 10-1, which is found also at Yap in the Carolines, and in the Marshall Islands.

Next follow, east, the two large islands of New Britain, about 340 by 23 English miles, with active volcanoes up to 4000 feet, and New Ireland, about 240 by 22 miles. Next comes the Solomon group, 600 English miles in length, with seven large islands from 135 to 90 miles long, all running nortli-west and south-east, with volcanic peaks up to 8000 feet. The forms more characteristic of the New Guinea fauna do not extend beyond this group. Its forest vegetation is especially luxuriant. Then comes Santa Cruz, a small group partly volcanic, but with numerous coral reef islands. Then the Banks and New Hebrides group, over 500 English miles in length, all volcanic except the Torres reef islands in the north. Several spots in this group are occupied by people of purely Polynesian race, immigrants apparently from the eastward. Two hundred miles south- west from the New Hebrides lies the island of New Cale- donia, about 240 by 25 English miles. mountainous, rising to 5380 feet, the rocks being sedi- mentary and plutonic, but there are no volcanoes. It lies half way between Australia and Fiji, 700 miles from each. Being outside the equatorial belt, itis much drier and more barren than the other groups, and its fauna and flora have many Australian and Polynesian affinities. The small Loyalty chain lies 70 miles east of New Caledonia, and parallel to it. Fiji is detached from the other Melanesian groups, and differs from them in various particulars. It consists of two large and about 300 small islands, the total area being about 7400 square miles.

Of the two great Pacific races—the brown Polynesian, and the dark Melanesian—the former, considering the vast region it occupies, is singularly homogeneous both in appearance and language, whereas in

Melanesia even neighbouring tribes differ widely from each other in both respects, Still, all the Melanesians have certain common

It is in parts very

835

| characteristics which distinguish them sharply from the other race. They stand at a lower level of civilization, as is well seen at certain spots in Melanesia where isolated Polynesian settlements exist, due probably to involuntary migration, and where the two races, though they have some peculiar customs in common, live in bitter mutual hostility. The Melanesians are mostly "negroid" in appearance, nearly black, with crisp curly hair elaborately dressed; the women hold a much lower position than among the Poly- nesians; their institutions, social, political, and religious, are simpler, their manners ruder and often indecent; they have few or no traditions ; cannibalism, in different degrees, is almost universal; but their artistic skill and taste, as

. with some of the lower African negroes, are remarkable, and they are amenable to discipline and fair treatment. Their languages, amid considerable differences, which, as between the Melanesian proper and the Papuan, are very wide, have features which mark them off clearly from the Polynesian, notwithstanding certain fundamental relations with the latter.

The various Melanesian groups will be found described in detail under separate headings.

MELBOURNE, the capital of the colony of Victoria, and the most populous city in Australia, is situated at the head of the large bay of Port Phillip, on its northern bend known as Hobson's Bay, about 500 miles 8.W. of

| Sydney by land and 770 by sea, the position of the

observatory being 37° 49' 53" S. lat. and 144° 58' 42" E. long. Along the shores of the bay the suburbs

} PORT PHitL PP ison

Ping cht ce sone,

es ae as of 3 . we Pad ‘ “ ye ¥

2a

Scale of Statuts Miles ns –

40

| 20 Port Phillip and Environs of Melbourne.

extend for a distance of over 10 miles, but the part distinctively known as the “ city” occupies a site about 3 miles inland on the north bank of the Yarra river.

The appearance of Melbonrne from the sea is by no means picturesque. The shipping suburbs of Sandridge and Williamstown occupy the alluvial land at the mouth

836

of the Yarra, and, as the district is low and flat, and covered with factories, the prospect is not inviting. But the city itself has a very different aspect: its situation is relieved by numerous gentle hills, which show off to great advantage its fine public buildings; its streets are wide and well kept; and the universal appearance of prosperity, activity, and comfort under its usually clear blue sky impresses the visitor favourably.

That part specially known as the “city” had a popula- tion in 1881 of 65,800. It occupies the two hills of East Melbourne and West Melbourne; the valley that separates them, once occupied by a densely wooded little stream, is now partly filled in, and forms the busy thoroughfare of Elizabeth Street ; parallel to this runs Swanston Street,

g

et WY

a

9 <

igeg NK 7

SON

x

NS

Wg

MELBOURNE

and at right angles to these, and parallel to the river, are Bourke Street, Collins Street, and Flinders Street,—the first being the busiest in Melbourne, the second. containin the most fashionable shops, and the third, which faces the river, being given over to maritime pursuits. These streets are the eighth of a mile apart; between them are narrower streets occupied by warehouses and business premises.

Round the "city" lies a circle of populous suburbs. North-east is Fitzroy with 23,000 inhabitants ; farther east, Collingwood, 24,000 ; east of Melbourne, Richmond, 23,400; south-east, Prahran, 21,000; south, Emerald Hill, 25,300; south-west, Sandridge, 8700; north-west, Hotham, 17,800. These all lie within three miles of the general

Oy

IR, Paddock

PULL

"4,

Ys

= | aie

Plan of Melbourne.

5. St Patrick's College.

9. Academy of Music. 6. Scotch Church.

10, Theatre Royal. 3. Government Offices. 7. Scotch College. 11, Princes Theatre. 4, St'Patrick's Cathedral. | 8. Opera House. 12. Post-Office.

post-office in Elizabeth Street ; but outside of them, and within a radius of 5 miles, there is a circle of less populous suburbs: to the north, Brunswick,

6200; east, Kew, 4200, and Hawthorn, 6000 ; south-east, St Kilda, 11,600, and Brighton, 4700 ; south-west, Williamstown, 9000, and Footscray, 6000 ; north-west, Essenden and Flemington, 5000. Numerous smaller suburbs fill up the spaces be- tween these,—the principal being Northcote, Preston, Camberwell, Toorak, Caulfield, Elsternwick, and Coburg, with a united population of 19,000.

Fifteen of these suburbs rank as independent muni- cipalities, and many of them have streets which for importance rival the main streets of the city.

The following table shows the growth of the population since 1851 :—

1. Houses of Parliament. 2. Treasury.

13, Town-Hall. 17, University. 21, Anglican Cathedral. 14, Hospital. 18, Mint, 22, Governor's House. 15. Public Library, &c. 19. Law Courts. 23, Observatory.

16, Jail. 20. Custom House.

Total. |

Male.

Melbourne…..... 34,526 | 31,333 | 65,859 SuburbS…....0ceeeeeeee—| 118,785 | 103,263 | 217,048

282,907

Female.

54.993 151,787

206,780 | 191,254

eae .| 148,311 | 134,596

The land on which the city now stands was sold in allotments of half an acre, the prices realized being in June 1837 about £34 each, in November

1837 about £42, and in September 1838 about £120 each. These allotments are now (1882) sold at prices ranging from £20,000 to £40,000. But, though land has thus increased in value, Melbourne is by no means a crowded city;

| the streets are all 99 feet wide, and the parks, squares,

MELBOURNE

and gardens are so numerous that with only one-thirteenth of the population of London it occupies very nearly half as great an area.

The pnblic buildings are generally situated on positions from which they are seen to advantage. The Parliament Houses form a great pile of brickwork with four fronts in freestone, of which the main front is not yet com- pleted ; the interior decorations are highly elaborate. The 'Treasury is a well-proportioned building in free stone; behind it stands a vast building known as the Government offices. On the hill of West Melbourne there is a large structure, newly erected, for the law courts; it has four very handsome fronts, each about 300 feet in length, and the whole is surmounted by a lofty cupola, in the manner of the Capitol at Washington. The public library in Swanston Street forms one of four fronts of a building which was projected on a grand scale, but has never been completed. Much of the interior has been erected, but of the fronts only the main one is yet in existence, its cost having been £111,000. 'The lower story is devoted to sculpture ; on one side there are casts of all the most famous statues; on the other there is a small collection of original works by modern sculptors, together with a gallery containing 8000 engravings and photographs ; to the rear is the picture gallery, a very handsome hall, with oil paintings, chosen from the works of living artists. Another of the interior portions of the building is occupied by the technological museuin, in which are arranged about 30,000 specimens illustrative of the industrial arts. The upper story of the front is devoted to the library, which occupies a chamber 240 feet long; 22 recesses contain each its own special branch of literature, the total number of volumes being 112,000. The book shelves rise to a height of 20 feet, but they are divided by a narrow gallery which runs all round the room, and gives access to the upper tiers. The library is open to the public ; and every visitor ranges at will, being bound by the two conditions only that he is to replace each book

where he found it, and that he is to preserve strict silence. During 1881 there were 261,886 visits made to the room.

The Melbourne University is a picturesque, but by no means imposing mass of buildings, buried among the trees of extensive and well-kept grounds about a mile from the heart of the city. In front of it stands the " Wilson Hall," erected at a cost of £40,000. Behind is the National Museum, containing collections of specimens of natural history. The museum, like all public places in Melbourne, is freely open to the people. About 98,000 visitors entered it in 1881. The university has a staff of 10 professors and 12 lecturers, with about 400 students. There are four courses open to students: arts, law, medi- cine, and civil engineering. Affiliated to the Melbourne University are the two denominational colleges, Trinity and Ormond, in which about 80 students reside, and where provision is made for instruction in theology.

The Exhibition bnilding consists of a nave 500 feet long and 160 feet broad, surmounted by a dome, with two annexes each 460 feet long. Theseare built in brick with cement facings. The mint is a very handsome quadrangle, erected in 1872. In the year 1881 there were three millions of sovereigns coined in it, making a total of sixteen millions since its erection. The governor's residence is a large building on a hill overlooking the Yarra. The general post-office forms only half of a magnificent pile of buildings which will, when completed, include the central telegraph office.

The town-hall, at the corner of Swanston Street and Collins Street, contains, besides the usual apartments for municipal offices, a hall seated for nearly 3000 persons,

| nearly 100 patients.

837

and fitted with a colossal organ, on which the city organist performs two afternoons a week, the public being admitted at a nominal charge. Hotham, Richmond, Emerald Hill, Prahran, and Fitzroy have their own town-halls, all costly and somewhat pretentious buildings.

The markets, erected at a cost of £80,000, stand in Bonrke Street. They are handsome in external appear- ance, and ingeniously contrived for convenience within. The observatory is a humble-lookinug building on the St Kilda Road ; it contains an equatorial telescope, which had

| for some years the distinction of being the largest in the

world.

There are two railway stations, one being the terminus of all the country lines, and the other devoted to sub- urban traffic. The suburbs of Williamstown, Sandridge, Footscray, St Kilda, Emerald Hill, Brighton, Elsternwick, Hawthorn, Richmond, and Essendon are connected by rail with the city.

The Melbourne Hospital is in the form of an extensive series of brick buildings, situated close to the public library. There are beds for about 300 patients. The Alfred Hospital, on the St Kilda Road, was built in com- memoration of the visit of Prince Alfred; it has beds for The lying-in hospital can accom- modate 62 persons. The blind asylum has over 100 inmates ; and there are a deaf and dumb asylum, an im- migrants' home, and other charitable institutions.

Melbourne contains many churclies, but few of them will compare with the public buildings in appearance. The Roman Catholic cathedral of St Patrick, when com- pleted, will, however, be a conspicnous ornament to the city. The Anglican cathedral, now (1882) in the course of erection, is to cost about £100,000. The most striking ecclesiastical building is the Scotch church in Collins Street, which divides with Ormond College and the Wilson Hall the honour of being the finest specimen of architecture in the city.

There are in Melbourne, among its numerous state schools, about thirty whose size and proportions entitle them to rank with the architectural ornaments of the city. They have each accommodation for from 600 to 2000 scholars. Abundant provision has been made for secondary in- struction by the denominations and by private enterprise. The Scotch College and the Presbyterian Ladies' College, the Wesiey College and the Wesleyan Ladies' College, the Church of England Grammar School, St Patrick's College and

St Francis Xavier's College, are all connected with the churches; and there are besides between twenty and thirty good private grammar schools.

Melbourne contains the offices of numerous banks, sav- ings banks, and building societies.

The parks and public gardens of Melbourne are exten- sive and handsome. Within the city proper there are four gardens, which have been decorated with a lavish expenditure. The Fitzroy Gardens are one dense network of avenues of oak, elm, and plane, witha 'fern-tree gully " in the middle. Casts of famous statnes abound; and ponds, fountains, rustic houses, and small buildings after the design of Greek temples give a variety to the scene. The Treasury, Flagstaff, and Carlton Gardens are of the same class, but less costly in their decorations. Around the central city there lie five great parks. The Royal Park, of about 600 acres, is lightly timbered with the original gum trees; some portions'of open land are used for recreation. About 30 acres in the centre are beauti- fully laid out to accommodate a very superior zoological collection. The Yarra Park, of about 300 acres, contains the leading cricket grounds; of these the " Melbourne" is the chief, distinguished by its very large stand and the excellence of its pitch. The Botanic Gardens occupy

about 200 acres of land, sloping down to the banks of the river, and laid out with great taste and skill. Albert Park, about 500 acres in extent, is not so elaborately laid out, but contains a small lake, which is much used for boating purposes, as the bay is storiny and exposed. Studley Park, a favourite place for picnics, is a romantic corner on a bend of the upper Yarra, of about 200 acres extent, left entirely in a state of nature.

Besides these parks each suburb has its own "gardens " of moderate extent. At Flemington a large reserve is devoted to racing purposes, where in November the race for the Melbourne Cup is held, the great racing carnival of Australia, attended by about 100,000 persons.

The shipping of Melbourne is very considerable. In 1880 about 1500 vessels entered and cleared again, their tonnage being 960,000. Nearly all

the intercolonial and a small proportion of the foreign vessels ascend the Yarra and unload in the heart of the city. The river was originally navigable for vessels of only 9 feet dranght ; but of late years the channel has been deepened so much that vessels drawing 16 feet can ascend with safety. Great works are nuw in operation by which the course is to be straightened and further deepened ; and the quays which line the river banks will be made accessible to the large vessels which now have to lie in the bay off the Sandridge and Williamstown piers.

Shipbuilding is a comparatively unimportant industry, but a great deal of repairing is done; the graving dock at

Williamstown is able to hold the largest vessels which |

enter the port.

The total values of the imports of Melbourne for 1879 |

and 1880 were respectively £15,035,000 and £14,557,000, and of the exports £12,454,000 and £15,954,000.

In 1881 Melbourne contained 2469 factories, employ- ing 38,141 hands, and converting £8,012,745 worth of raw material into £13,384,836 worth of finished articles. The leading products are leather, flour, clothing, furniture, boots, carriages, preserved meats, ales, soap, candles, cigars, ironwork, jewellery, jams, confectionery, biscuits, and woollens.

The city is abundantly supplied with newspapers, includ- ing three morning and three evening dailies. are published.

The climate of Melbourne is exceptionally fine, the only drawback being the occasional hot winds which blow from

the north for two or three days at a time, and raise the |

temperature to an uncomfortable extent. But the propor- tion of days when the sky is clear and the air dry and mild is large. The mean annual temperature is 57°, which would make the climate of Melbourne analogous

to that of Madrid, Marseilles, or Verona, but without the extremes experienced in those places. Snow falls every year in Italy, while it is unknown in Melbourne; and the highest temperature reached there in summer is below that of the cities mentioned.

As a field for emigration from European countries, Mel- bourne offers many advantages to the industrious mechanic or labourer.

The cost of living is about the same as in London. Rents are higher, and furniture and utensils dearer; but butcher meat, bread, and clothes are cheaper.

There is no city where more has been done for the working-classes or where they have made so good a use of their advantages. Many of their efforts at government (for they have all the power in their hands) have been ill-advised, but individually they have exhibited a prudence of which the community reaps the fruits. It is one of the peculiar features of Melbourne that about three out of every four mechanics who have reached middle life own the neat cottages they occupy.

Two reviews |

MELBOURNE

History.—The city of Melbourne is without exception the most striking instance of the aptitude of the Anglo-Saxon race for colonization. It was not till the opening years of the' present century that the first European sailed through the narrow entrance to Port Phillip, and it was only in 1835 that the white man made his habitation there. In that year John Fawkner sailed up the Yarra in his little vessel the '" Enterprise," laden with materials for a settlement; he was stopped by a slight waterfall in a valley where dense groves of wattle trees all in bloom loaded the air with perfume, and where flocks of white cockatoos whirled aloft when the first stroke of the axe resounded in the forest. This spot is now the centre of a great city 10 miles in length, 6 in breadth, covering an area of 45,000 acres, and peopled by 283,000 persons. So rapid and solid a growth, at a distance from the mother country of the whole extent of the earth, is an example of colonizing enter- prise altogether without parallel.

The settlement was at first called by the native name " Dootigala," but a desire for distinguished patronage caused the portion on the sea-shore, which was then esteemed the more important, to be called " Williamstown," after King William live while the little collection of huts some 3 or 4 miles inland was named " Melbourne," in honour of the prime minister Lord Melbourne.*

For two years a constant stream of squatters with their sheep flowed in from Tasmania; then numerous " overlanders" drove their flocks from the Sydney side across the Murray and settled near Port Phillip. Captain Lonsdale was sent by the Sydney Government to act as police magistrate, but in 18388 Mr Latrobe was placed in charge with the title of superintendent. As the squatters prospered Melbourne increased in size, so that in 1841 it contained 11,000 inhabitants. A period of depression occurred in 1843, followed by several years of the greatest prosperity, till, in 1851, gold was discovered in New South Wales. The district of Port Phillip became infected by the excitement ; many parties scoured that part of the country in search of the precious metal, and six wecks after the first discovery of it there the great riches of Ballarat were made known. 'Within a year from that time a hun- dred thousand men had landed in the colony in order to proceed to the diggings; for several years after the samc number landed every twelve months; and Melbourne increased in population from 30,000 to 100,000 in the course of two or three years.

During the year of the gold discoveries, the Port Phillip district was separated from New South Wales, and formed into a separate colony with the name Victoria. In 1855 the British Government granted to it a complete autonomy ; Melbourne became the capital of the new colony. (A. SU.)

MELBOURNE, Witt1am Lams, sEconD VIscountT (1779-1848), second son of the first Viscount Melbourne,

was born 15th March 1779. After completing his course

_at Trinity College, Cambridge, he studied law at the

university of Glasgow, entered Lincoln's Inn in 1797, and was called to the bar in 1804. In 1805 he married Lady Caroline Ponsonby, daughter of the

earl of Bess- borough, who after her separation from him acquired some fame as a novelist, and was also a friend of Lord Byron. On entering parliament the same year Lamb joined the opposition under Fox, of whom he was an ardent admirer; but his Liberal tendencies were never of a very decided character, and he not unfrequently gave his support to Lord Liverpool during that statesman's long tenure of office. During the short ministry of Canning in 1827 he was chief secretary for Ireland, but he afterwards for a time adhered to the small remnant of the party who supported the duke of Wellington. The influence of Melbourne as a politician dates from his elevation to the peeragein 1828. Disagreeing with the duke of Wellington on the question of parliamentary reform, he in 1830 entered the ministry of Grey as home secretary. For the discharge of the difficult and multifarious duties of this office at such a critical time he was decidedly deficient both in insight and in energy, but his political success was totally independent of his official capacity ; and, when the ministry of Grey was wrecked on the Irish question, Melbourne was chosen to succeed him. Almost immedi- ately he had to give place to a Conservative ministry under Peel, but, the verdict of the country being in his favour, he resumed office in 1835. The period of his ministry was wholly uneventful, and for a considerable time before he resigned in 1841 he had lost the confidence of the

country. From the time of his retirement from office he | as Néldeke, regard the whole as unhistorical and comparatively late

took little interest in politics. He died at Melbourne House, Derbyshire, 24th November 1848.

Lord Melbourne was without even the elementary qualification of diligent attention to details, which in the absence of higher endow- ments sometimes confers on a statesman the greater part of his success. Nor can it be said that in public he ever displayed any of those specious aud brilliant talents which are often found an acceptable substitute for more solid acquirewents. Though he pos- sessed a fine and flexible voice, his manneras a speaker

was inetfec- tive, and his speeches were generally ill-arranged and destitute of oratorical point, notwithstanding his occasional indulgence in in- elegant flights of rhetoric. Indeed his political advancement was wholly due to his personal popularity. He had a thorough know- ledge of the private and indirect motives which influence politicians, and his genial attractive manner, easy temper, and vivacious, if occasionally coarse, wit helped to confer on him a social distinction which for a time led many to take for granted his eminence as a statesman. The most notable and estimable feature of his political conduct is his relation to Queen Victoria, whom he initiated into the duties of sovereign with the most delicate tact and the most friendly and conscientious care.

MELCHIADES, or Mittrapzs (other forms of the name being Meltiades, Melciades, Milciades, and Miltides), was

appears to have been an African by birth, but of his personal history nothing is known. The toleration edicts of Galerius and of Constantine aud Licinius were published during his pontificate, which was also marked by the hold- ing of the Lateran synod in Rome (313), at which Cecilianus was acquitted of the charges brought against him, and Donatus condemned. Melchiades was preceded and followed by Eusebius and Sylvester I. respectively.

MELCHITES. The name of Melchites (Syriac, Malkdyé ; Arabic, .Walakiya, or in the vulgar pronunciation Milkiya) means etymologically the royal party, and so is currently applied in the East to Syrian and Egyptian Christians of the Orthodox Greek Church, adherents of the creed supported by the authority of the king, that is, of the Byzantine emperor. The Melchites therefore are those who accept the decrees of Ephesus and Chalcedon as distinguished from the: Nestorians and Jacobites, and the name reflects in an interesting manner the way in which the doctrinal controversies that agitated the Eastern empire associated themselves with national feelings of antagonism to the imperial rule.

MELCHIZEDEK (PIY220, “king of righteousness ”), king of Salem and priest of “supreme El” (7 ‘elyén), brought forth bread and wine to Abram, on his return from the expedition against Chedorlaomer, and blessed him in the name of the supreme God, possessor (or maker) of heaven and earth.

And Abram gave him tithes of all his booty (Gen. xiv. 18-20). The Bible history tells us no- thing more about Melchizedek (comp. Hebrews vii. 3); but the majestic figure of the king-priest, prior to the priesthood of the law, to whom even the father of all Israel paid tithes, suggested a figurative or typical application, first in Psalm ex. to the vicegerent of Jehovah, seated on the throne of Zion, the king of Israel who is also priest after the order of Melchizedek, and then, after the gospel had confirmed the Messianic interpretation of the Psalm (Matt. xxii. 42 sqg.), to the kingly priesthood of Jesus, as that idea is worked out at length in the Epistle to the Hebrews.

The theological interest which attaches to the idea of the pre- Aaronic king-priest in these typical applications is practically in- dependent of the historical questions suggested by the narrative of Gen. xiv. It is generally recognized that this chapter holds quite an isolated place in the Pentateuchal history ; it isthe only passage which presents Abraham in the character of a warrior, and connects him with historical names and political movements, and there are no clear marks by which it can be assigned to any one of the docu- ments of which Genesis is made up. Thus, while one school of interpreters finds in the chapter the earliest fragment of the politi-

cal history of western Asia, some even holding with Ewald that the narrative is probably based on old Canaanite records, other critics,

in origin. On the latter view, which finds its main support in the intrinsic difficulties of the narrative, it is scarcely possible to avoid the conclusion that the chapter is one of the latest additions to the Pentateuch (Wellhausen). The historical arguments pro and coi may be seen at length in recent commentaries, but especially in Tuch's essay (Z. D. Af. G., i. 161 sq., reprinted in the second edition of his Genesis), which was long viewed as decisive in favour of the narrative, and in Noldeke's Untersuchungen, 1869, p. 156 sq., with which compare Wellhausen in Jahrb. f. D. Th., 1876, p. 414 sq. The Assyrian monuments offer no decisive evidence, but are held to confirm the historical possibility of the proper names (Schrader, KiI.und AT., p. 46 sq.; Delitzsch, Paradies, p. 224). Here we can only speak of the episode of Melchizedek, which, though connected with the main narrative by the epithets given to Jehovah in verse 22, secms to break the natural

connexion of verses 17 and 21, and may perhaps have come originally from a separate source. As the narrative now stands Salem must be sought in the vicinity of " the king's dale,"' which from1Sam. xviii. 18 probably but not necessarily lay near Jerusalem. ThatSalem is Jerusalem, as in Psalm Ixxvi. 2,

| is the ancient and common view, and is necessarily followed by

those who view Melchizedek as a late creation.' Those who hold the opposite view now lean to the identification with the Sarciu of John iii. 23, 8 miles south of Bethshean, which Jerome (Zp. lxxiii. ad Evangelium) confirms by a worthless tradition. In a genuine

_ record of extreme antiquity the union of king and priest in one

pope from July 2, 310, to January 10 or 11, 314. He |

person, the worship of Elas the supreme deity bya Canaanite,! and the widespread practice of the consecration of a tithe of booty can present no difficulty; but, if the historical character of the narrative is denied, the origin of the conception must be placed as late as the rise of the temporal authority of the high priests after the exile. An ancient legend identifies Melchizedek with Shem (Palestinian Targum, Jerome on Isa. xlii, Ephraem Syrus zn loco).

MELCOMBE REGIS. See Weymourn.

MELENDEZ VALDES, Juan (1754-1817), minor poet of Spain, was born at Ribera del Fresno, Badajoz, on March 11, 1754. He was destined by his parents, who were in good circumstances, for an official career ; and accordingly, after having completed his preliminary education at Madrid and Segovia, he went to Salamanca, and duly graduated in laws. At an early age he had begun to write verses in imitation of the then much admired though now justly forgotten Eugenio Lobo; but at Salamanca he came under the influence of the purer literary taste of the elder Moratin, while to the friendship of the cultivated and well-read Cadahalso he owed his introduction to the writings of recent English poets. At the age of twenty-six Melendez obtained the prize of the Spanish Academy for the best

eclogue, one of the unsuccessful competitors being the well-known Iriarte; the poein (Batilo: egloga en alabanza de lu vida del campo, 1780) continues to be highly spoken of by native critics, who echo in various forms the remark of one of the adjudicators, that it was 'redolent of the wild thyme." In 1781 Melendez went to Madrid, where Jovellanos became his friend, and obtained for him in 1783 the appointment of professor of the humanities at Salamanca. In 1784, in competition for a prize offered

| by the city of Madrid, he produced his longest poem, a

"dramatic eclogue" entitled Las Bodas de Camacho ("Camacho's Wedding"), which secured the vote of the

judges, but did not add to his reputation, and soon fell

into neglect. His genius does not seem to have been at all dramatic ; at any rate he was unfortunate in his choice of a subject so little capable of dramatic treatment as the well-known episode in Dor Quixote. In the following year, at the age of thirty-one, he published a little volume of lyrics and pastorals which gave him the first place he still holds among Spanish poets of the 18th century. Several editions were exhausted in a single year. With poetical fame came professional advancement, and in 1789 the "Restorer of Parnassus" (Restaurador del Parnaso), as Melendez is sometimes pedantically called by his countrymen, received a judicial appointment at Saragossa, which in 1791 he exchanged for a chancery

1 On the other hand it is not correct to appeal to the Penulus of Plautus for the epithet 'elyén.

auditorship at Valladolid. In 1797 the publication of a new and greatly enlarged edition of his works, dedicated to the prince of the peace, was followed by his removal to Madrid to a high post in connexion with the treasury. The new poems included somewhat heavy philosophical epistles written after the manner of Youug, and an uumistakably dull epic canto entitled Caida de Luzbel ("The Fall of Lucifer "), suggested by Milton, as well as an Ode to Winter, which showed how well the author had made

himself acquainted with Thomson. On the fall of his friend Jovellanos in 1798 Melendez was ordered away from Madrid, first to Medina del Campo and afterwards to Zamora, and it was not till 1802 that he was permitted to settle in Salamanca. or the next six years his literary activity was but slight, being limited to the production of a short poem on " Creation" and the preparation of an unfinished translation of the Hneid. After the revolution of Aranjuez (1808) Melendez accepted from King Joseph

the post of councillor of state and afterwards that of |

minister of public instruction, a failure of patriotism which involved him in many indignities and even dangers ; in 1813 he was of course compelled to quit his country, and, after sojourning successively at Alais, N imes, and Toulouse, he died in considerable poverty and neglect at Montpellier, on May 24, 1817. During his exile he employed himself in the preparation of a complete edition of his works, with numerous additions and corrections; this was afterwards published, along with a life of the author by Quintana, at the expense of the Government (4 vols. 8vo, Madrid, 1820; reprinted at Paris, 1832, and at Barcelona, 1838).

MELFI, a city of Italy, in the province of Potenza, 30 miles N. of Potenza, on the road and railway between that city and Foggia, is built on a small hill on the lower slopes of Monte Volture. The castle was originally erected by Robert Guiscard, but as it now stands it is mainly the work of the Doria family, who have possessed it since the time of Charles V.; and the noble cathedral which was founded in 1155 by Robert's son and successor, Roger, has had to be subjected to a modern restoration in consequence of the earthquake of 1851. inhabitants ; the commune had 9863 in 1861 and 12,657 in 1881.

Melfi is of doubtful origin, but appears to have existed at least as early as the 4th century. of Apulia in 1041, and provided with fortifications. The council held by Nicholas I. in 1059, that of Urban II. in 1090, the rebellion against Roger in 1133 and the subsequent punishment, the plunder of the town by Barbarossa in 1167, the attack by Richard, count of Acerra in 1190, and the parliament of 1223, in which Frederick II. established the constitution of the kingdom of Naples, form the principal points of interest in the annals of Melfi during the more eventful period of its history. In 1348

Joanna I. of N aples bestowed the city on Niccolo Acciajuoli ; but it was shortly after- wards captured, after a six months' siege, by the king of Hungary, who transferred it to Conrad the Wolf. In 1392 Goffredo Marzano was made count of Melfi; but Joanna II. granted the lordship to the Caracciolo family, and they retained it for one hundred and seven years till the time of Charles V. An obstinate resistance was offered by the city to Lautree de Foix in 1528; and his entrance within its walls was followed by the massacre, it is said, of 18,000 of its citizens. As a bishopric Melfi is directly dependent on the Holy See.

MELIT'A (MeXiry), the classical name for Matra (¢.2.), was also the name borne by the modern Jfeleda, one of the Dalmatian islands, situated immediately to the south of Sabbioncello and to the north of Ragusa. It is about 24 miles in length, averaging about 14 in breadth, and has a good harbour. At one time it was supposed by some authors to have been the scene of the shipwreck of St Paul, but this point has now for some time been conclu- sively settled in favour of Malta. See Smith, Voyage and Shipwreck of St Paul, 1848.

MELITO, bishop of Sardes, a Christian writer of the 2d century, is mentioned by Eusebius (H. Z., iv. 21)

In 1871 the city had 10,945 | be expected to take place.

| Seebeck's discovery of thermo-electricity) in the construction of the

By the Normans it was made the capital | : : : Bee cee Ce na _ tried screens of glass, sulphate of lime, mica, and ice, also of water,

MEL—MEL

along with Hegesippus, Dionysius of Corinth, Apollinaris of Hierapolis, Irenzeus, and others, his contemporaries, as a champion of orthodoxy and upholder of apostolic tradition, Of his personal history nothing is known, and of his numerous works (which are enumerated by Eusebius) only a few fragments are now extant. They included an Apologia addressed to Aurelius some time between 169 and 180 4.D., two books relating to the paschal controversy, and a work entitled "ExAoyaé (selections from the Old

Testament), which contained the well-known catalogue of "the books of the Old Covenant." The fragments have been edited with valuable notes by Routh (Reliquizx Sacre, vol. i, 1814). It seems more than doubtful whether the Apologia of Melito "the Philosopher," discovered in a Syriac translation by Tattam, and subsequently edited by Cureton and Renan, ought to be attributed to this writer

| and not rather to another of the same name.

MELLONI, Maceponio (1798-1854), a distinguished physicist, was born at Parma on April 11, 1798. From 1824 to 1831 he was professor at Parma, but in the latter year he was compelled to escape to Frauce, having taken part in the revolution. In 1839 he went to Naples as director of the conservatory of arts and handicrafts. He was likewise director of the Vesuvius observatory, a post which he held until 1848. Melloni received the Rumford medal of the Royal Society in 1834. In 1835 he was elected correspondent of the Paris Academy, and in 1839 a foreign member of the Royal Society. He died from an attack of cholera on August 11, 1854.

From the Royal Society catalogue of papers we find that Melloni produced eighty-six memoirs by himself, as well as three in connexion with other physicists. These embrace a wide range of subjects, but the reputation of Melloni as a physicist rests more especially upon his discoveries in radiant heat. Men of science were, in the early part of this century, very much in the dark with regard to the nature of the invisible heat rays. Leslic and others had indeed advanced the subject by means of the differential thermometer, but such an instrument was at the best a very poor substitute for the human eye. It was necessary to invent an instrument more nearly capable of doing for the dark rays what the eye does for those of light before any great increase in our knowledge of this subject could This step was taken (shortly after

thermo-multiplier or combination of thermopile and galvanometer whieh formed the subject of a joint memoir by Nobili and Melloni in 1831. In this memoir, after describing their instrument, these physicists confirmed the experiments of Leslie and others. They

oil, alcohol, and nitric acid enclosed in glass, and found an instau- taneous effect produced in the index of their instrument except for ice and water, the source of heat being an iron ball below redness.

| After finding that most substances when used as screens stopped

a much larger proportion of dark heat than they did of light,

| Melloni set himself to discover some body that might be transparent

for dark heat. In this search he was rewarded with complete success. Rock-salt was found to possess this property ; and he immediately proceeded to construct prisms and lenses of rock-salt with which he proved the refraction of dark heat, that is to say, of the heat proceeding from bodies below incandescence. _

Melloni was likewise very successful in studying the action upon dark heat of screens of various substances. His experimentsin this and other directions are described by Baden Powell in his report to the British Association ou Radiant Heat (1840). The rays ot the lamp were thrown upon screens of various materials in such a manner that the effect transmitted from all the screens was of a certain uniform amount. This constant radiation was then inter- cepted bya plate of alum,.and it was found that very pe quantities of heat were transmitted through the alum in the di "i cases. Melloni concludes that the calorific rays issuing from t f various diaphanous screens are, therefore, of different qu – possess what may be termed the diathermancy peculiar to each of t : substances through which they have passed. One of his screen was made of green glass, and he found that a piece of alum haat mitted only 1 per cent. of the heat which had passed through ! te screen. Green glass and alum form, therefore, an antagonisu combination.

These expcriments suggest naturally a new analogy boomy fear heat and light which could not fail to strike Melloni, and accor ney we soon find him describing an experiment with the solar el transmitted through green glass and then intercepted by ©

media, They pass copiously through rock-salt, he tells us, but feebly through alum, and hence Melloni concludes that there are amongst the solar rays some which resemble those of terrestrial heat, and in general that the differences observed between solar and terrestrial heat in the transmission of rays are to be attributed merely to the mixture in different proportions of these several species of rays. An instrument like the thermo-multiplier could not of course remain a monopoly, and shortly after its completion we tind Professor James Forbes making usc of it to prove the polarization of heat as well as to extend our knowledge of refraction. The brilliant researches of this experimentalist were, like those of Melloni, crowned with the Rumford medal of the Royal Society. On September 2, 1839, Arago communicated to the academy of sciences a letter by Melloni, who had found that rock-salt acquires by being smoked the power of transmitting most easily heat of low temperature, or dark heat. Forbes had discovered a similar property in mica split by heat, and he now showed that rock-salt roughened and mica scratched possess similar properties to blackened rock-salt. Melloni on his part took up the subject of polarization, and decided in favour of the cqnal polarizability of heat from different sources, a conclusion that did not then appear to Forbes to be in conformity with his experiments. It is very instructive to notice the loyalty which held both thiese experimentalists to the results of their observations. While Melloni differs from Forbes with regard to polarization, he will not allow the truth of a generalization proposed by Ampére, who had endeavoured to explain on the theory of undulations the identity of light and heat,—the difference of effect being dependent solely on the different wave-lengths, those producing heat being larger than those giving rise to light. plained by this hypothesis, but he mentions some experiments in which he thinks that this theory will not hold. The brilliant generalizer from without has of course a different point of view from the laborious experimentalist within. scientific honour—for it is by the seeming conflict, but in reality the united efforts of workers such as these that the essential element of stability in the structure of scientific knowledge is finally secured.

MELON (Cucumis Melo, 1), a most polymorphic

species of the order Cucurbitacee, the varieties of which | : yen Oates ae | Sporades of the A%gean Sea, situated at the south-west

are grouped by Naudin under ten tribes, while several other plants of less known characters probably belong to it! The melon is an annual herb with palimately-lobed leaves, and bears tendrils. It is moncecious, having male and female flowers on the same plant. The flowers have deeply five-lobed campanulate corollas and three stainens. Naudin observed that in some varieties (e.g., of Cantaloups) fertile stamens sometimes occur in the female flowers. It is a native of south Asia "from the foot of the Himalayas to Cape Comorin," where it grows spontaneonsly, but is*

Melloni admits that many phenomena may be ex- |

| ancient as that

841

other hand, the serpent-melon was made to bear ovoid and reticulated fruit.® .

With reference to the early cultivation of the melon, Naudin thinks it is probable that the culture in Asia is as of all other alimentary vegetables. The Egyptians grew it, or at least inferior races of melon, which were either indigenous or introduced from Asia. The Romans and doubtless the Greeks were familiar with

it, though some forms may have been described as

aud habit, but much more so in the fruit, which in some |

varieties is no larger than an olive, while in others it rivals the ponderous fruits of the gourd (Cucurbita maxima, L.). The fruit may be globular, ovoid, spindle-

shaped, or serpent-like, netted or smooth-skinned, ribbed or |

furrowed, variously coloured externally, with white, green, or orange flesh when ripe, scented or scentless, sweet or insipid, bitter or even nauseous, &c. Like the gourd, the melon undergoes strange metamorphoses by crossing its varieties, thongh the latter preserve their characters when

alone. The offspring, however, of all crossings are fertile. As remarkable cases of sudden changes produced by artificially crossing races, M. Naudin records that in 1859

Figari (C. maculatus?) bore quite different fruits from their parents, the former being ten to twelve times their size, ovoid, white-skinned, more or less scented, and with reddish flesh; though another individual bore fruits no larger than a nut. The offspring of m. de Figari after being crossed bore fruits of the serpent-melon. On the

1 For generic characters see Benth. et Hook., Gen. Pl., i. 826; and

for a full account of the species of Cucumis and of the tribes of melon,

by M. Naudin, see Ann. des Sci. Nat., 4 sér., tom. xi. p. 34.

2 Naudin, l.c., pp. 39, 76; see also Gard. Chron., 1857, p. 153, es

and 1858, p. 180.

cucuinbers. Columella seems to refer to the serpent- melon in the phrase wt coluber . . . ventre cubat jlexo. Pliny describes them as pepones (xix. 23 to xx. 6) and Columella as melones (xi. 2. 53); see Pickering, Chron. Hist., of Pl., 229. The melon began to be extensively cultivated in France in 1629, according to Olivier de Serres. Gerard (//erball, 771) figured and described in 1597 several kinds of melons or pompions, but he has apparently included gourds under the same name. Picker- ing observes that the melon was carried by Columbus to America, and by the Portuguese to the Malayan Archi-

| pelago.

The origin of some of the chief modern races, such as "'Cantaloups," '" Dudaim," and probably the netted sorts, is due to Persia and the neighbouring Caucasian regions. The first of these was brought to Rome from Armenia in

the 16th century, and supplies the chief sorts grown for

ye tall sort | ie Branch markets; but many others are doubtless

artificial productions of West Europe.

For cultivation of the melon, see art. HorTICULTURE, and also Gard, Chron., May 6, 1882, p. 596; and for references to French literature on the same see Naudin, wt supra, p. 82.

MELOS (Att. Gr., M7Aos), the modern Milo, one of the

corner of the archipelago, in 36° 45’ N. lat. and 24° 26’ E. long., 75 miles due east from the coast of Laconia. From east to west it measures about 14 miles, from north to south 8 miles, aud its area is estimated at 52 square miles. The greater portion is rugged and hilly, and the culminating point, Mount Elias in the west, reaches a height of 2538 feet. Like the rest of the cluster to which it belongs, the island as a whole is of volcanic origin, with tuff, trachyte, and obsidian among its ordinary rocks. The great

cultivated in the temperate and warm regions of the whole | natural harbour, which, with a depth me HY world. Itis excessively variable both in diversity of foliage — inn avn et fo us to’cut

the island into two fairly equal portions, with an isthmus

‘ not more than 11 miles broad, is evidently the hollow of

the principal crater. In one of the caves on the south coast the heat is still so great that one cannot remain within more than a few minutes, and on the eastern shore of the harbour there is a remarkable cluster of hot sulphurous springs. Sulpliur is found in abundance on the top of Mount Kalamo and elsewhere. In ancient times the alum of Milo was reckoned next to that of Egypt (Pliny, xxxv. 15 [52]), and millstones, salt (from a marsh at the east end of the harbour), and gypsum are still exported. The Melian earth (yj MydAras), employed as a

| pigment by ancient artists, was probably native white-lead.

. . , ‘ Orange, olive, cypress, and arbutus trees grow throughout the offspring of the wild melons m. sauvage de VInde | — Bes 2 ? (C. a as) and m. s. d’Afrique, le petit m. de | the island, which, Pree 00 Qa oan aye ote:

ies 4 : fusion of vegetation.

The vine, the cotton plant, and barley are the main objects of cultivation. Including the neighbouring islands of Antimilos (4 square miles), Cimolos (16 square miles), and Polinos (53 square miles), the total population of Melos was only 5538 in 1879. Antimilo, 53 miles north-west of Milo, is a mere uninhabited mass of trachyte, and is often called Erio- milo or Desert Melos. Cimolos, or Argentiera, less than 1 mile to the north-east, was famous in antiquity for its

y

3 See also Naudin, in Youv. rech. sur l. hyb. dans les veg., p. 118,

figs and fuller’s earth (KywdA‘a yy), and contained a considerable city, the remains of which still cover the cliff of St Andrews. Polinos, Polybos or Polivo, and Kaiment, or “ Burned Island,” the //e Brulée or Jsola Bruciata of the French and Italians, lies rather more than a mile south-east of Cimolos. It was in antiquity the subject of dispute between the Melians and Cimolians. It has long been almost uninhabited.

In ancient times the city of Melos, built terrace fashion round a hill in the north-east of the main island, was a place of considerable size; “the western wall, of Cyclopean masonry, is traceable all the way down from the summit to the sea,” and among the ruins are a temple in the Corinthian style and a beautiful little theatre cleared in 1836 by order of the king of Bavaria. Painted vases (the ancient Melians were great makers of this kind of ware), bronzes, gold ornaments, and similar specimens of art workmanship have been recovered froin the debris ; and in 1820 the “ Venus of Milo,” now in the Louvre, the noblest extant representation of

Aphrodite, was found in the neighbourhood of the theatre. The top of the hill is now occupied by Castro, the principal village in the island. Atsome distance to the south-east, at the place called Tripiti (¢.c., rpurnrh, "the perforated "'), lies a remarkable cluster of catacombs containing frescos, &c., of evidently Christian origin. DPalea Chora, about 5 miles farther south-east, is now an almost deserted village, but down to the beginning of the last century it had about 5000 inhabit- ants, and if continued for a time to be considered the capital of the island.

The first occupants of Melos were probably Pheenicians, but the island was Hellenized at au early date by Minyaus and Dorians from Laconia. Though its inhabitants sent a contingent to the

Greek fleet at Salamis, they held aloof from the Attic league, aud |

sought to remain neutral during the Peloponnesian War. But in 416 B.c. the Athenians, having attacked the island and compelled

the Melians to snrrender at discretion, slew all the men capable of |

bearing arms, made slaves of the women and children, and introduced a body of five hundred Athenian colonists. Lysander restored the island to its old Dorian possessors, but it never recovered its former prosperity. There were many Jewish settlers in Melos in tlic beginning of the Christian era, and Christianity was early introduced. During the " Frankish " period the island formed part of the duchy of Naxos, except for the few years (1841-83) when it was a separate lordship under Mareo Sanudo and his daughter.

See Leyeester, ° The Voleanie Group of Milo, Anti-Milo, &c.," in Jour. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1852; Tournefort, Voyage; Leake, Yorthern Greece, vol. iii.;: Prokesch von Osten, Denkwiirdigkeiten, &c.; and Bursian, Geog. von Griechenland, vol, ii.

MELROSE, a village of Roxburghshire, Scotland, on the south bank of the Tweed, 37 miles by rail south- south-east of Edinburgh. Its population has steadily advanced from 966 in 1851 to 1550 in 1881. Though a burgh of barony since 1609, it is a purely agricultural village, and would be of little interest but for the ruins of its abbey, now the property of the duke of

Buccleuch. It was formerly called Little Fordell, and its present name even dates from the foundation of the monastery by David IT. in 11386.

There had been a Columbite monastery of Melrose at the place now known as Old Melrose, about a mile and a half to the east of the village, but this establishinent, probably never of much architectural magnificence, had, according to the Chronicle of the Picts and Scots, been destroyed by Kenneth M'Alpin in 839, and may never have recovered from the disaster. King David's abbey, which he entrusted to a body of Cistercian monks from Rievaulx (Riuall) in Yorkshire, was dedicated on Sunday 28th July 1146 ; it was laid inruins by Edward II. of England in 1322; Bruce caused the work of restoration to be vigorously prosecuted, but the edifice was again burned by Richard IT. in 1885. The abbey church as it now stands consequently belongs in the main to the latter half of the 14th century and the first half of the 15th, with a good many portions of a considerably later date.

Architecturally the abbey may be described as a splendid example of the Middle Pointed style, strongly affected on the one hand by Flamboyant and Perpendicular tendencies, and on the other by the individuality of some of the builders. Cruciform in plan, it measured 214% feet from east to west, the width of the nave being 69 feet, and across the transepts 115§. The noble edifice was damaged by

the English in 1545 ; and since the Reformation it has been altered to suit the necessities of Presbyterian worship (1618-1810), and

{

plundered by builders to supply ornaments for houses. The whole building is now in ruins. The west end and a good part of the north side have disappeared ; but the elevation of the south side is nearly entire, both the transepts and the east end are externally in very fair preservation, part of the central tower is standing and the sculptured roof still covers the east end of the chancel, Of the individual features of the building, the great eastern window has been generally most admired since Sir Walter Scott celebrated the moonlit aspect of its "slender shafts of shapely stone." It has

five lights ; the height is 37 feet and the width 16 ; and the upper portion is filled in with delicate tracery of a geometri- cal design. Very beautiful too is the whole gable of the south transept. In the interior, on the north side of the nave, there still stand four of the original square piers, and one of them shows a Norman ‘“‘cap.” The choir, the west end of which is shut off by a massive rood-screen, has been largely “ spoiled by rough 17th cen- tury work”; but enough remains of the decorative detail to provoke the admiration and despair of the modern artist in stone, The facile and at the same time elaborate rendering of vegetable forms, such as the Scotch “ kail,” is particularly striking. It was in the abbey-church of Melrose, where Alexander II. had long before been buried near the high altar, that the heart of Bruce found its final resting-place; and among the many tombs which afterwards gathered under the same roof were those of his faithfnl knight James Lord Douglas, Sir William the dark knight of Liddesdale, and the lero of Chevy Chase.

The ancient muniments of the abbacy have been preserved in the archives of the earl of Morton; they were published by the Bannatyne Club (2 vois., 1837, Liber Sancte Marie de Melros), under the editorship of Cosmo Innes. Among the many interesting docu- ments is one of the very earliest specimens of the Scotch tongue. The Chronica de Mailros, preserved among the Cotton MSS., has been twice printed, —at Oxford (1684) by Fulman, and by the Banna- tyne Club (1835), edited by John Stevenson. From about 1140 till its close in 1265 the chronicle may be considered original ; it was put largely under contribution by later compilers.

See Waleott, The Ancient Church of Scotland; W. Hutehinson, A View of Northumberland, &c., Neweastle, 1778; Adam Milne, Description of the Parish of Melrose, Kelso, 1782; J. Bower, Description of the Abbeys of Melrose and Old Melrose, Kelso, 1813; J. A. Wade, ZWistory of St Mary’s Abbey, Melrose, Edin- burgh, 1861; Fred. Pinehes, The Abbey Church of Melrose (a series of architectural drawings), London, 1879.

MELTON MOWBRAY, a market-town of England, county of Leicester, is pleasantly situated in a fertile vale, at the confluence of the Wreake and Eye, 15 miles north- east of Leicester and 104 north of London byrail. The Eye is spanned by a bridge of four arches. The town consists principally of

two main streets, and is substan- tially built of brick. The church of St Mary, a hand- some cruciform structure partly in the Early English style, and adored by a lofty and richly ornamented tower, was heightened and otherwise enlarged in the reign of Elizabeth, and has also undergone modern improvements. There are largely endowed almshouses and several other charities. Melton is the seatof a celebrated hunting district, in connexion with which there are stables in the town capable of accommodating about eight hundred horses. It is also well known for its pork pies, and has a very large trade in Stilton cheese. There are breweries and tan- neries, as well as an important cattle market. Iron- works have lately been erected. The town possesses great railway facilities. The population of the urban sanitary district in 1871 was 5033, and in 1881] it was 5766.

The old name of Melton was Medeltone, and the place is of con- siderable autiquity. During the Civil War it was in February 1644 the"scene of the defeat, with great slaughter, of the parliamentary forces by the royalists. It is the birthplace of John Henley the orator.

MELUN, capital of the department of Seine-et-Marne, France, 28 miles south-east of Paris by railway, occupies a hill on the right bank of the Seine and the level ground at its foot. It owes its rank as "chef-lieu" to its central position merely; for there are two other towns in the department, Meaux and Fontainebleau, which have a larger population. Melun is near one of the most beautiful parts of the forest of Fontainebleau. Among the rich estates its neighbourhood the most remarkable is the magnificent chateau of Vaux-Praslin, which belonged to Fouquet, superintendant of finances under Louis XIV. The church

of Notre Dame formerly belonged to a nunnery, now occupied by a central house of detention for twelve hundred prisoners. On the apse of the church of St Aspais may be seen a modern medallion in bronze, the work of the sculptor Chapu, representing Joan of Arc as the liberator of Melun. The population in 1881 was 12,145.

Melun is a very aneient town, and has played an important part in history. As early as the time of Cesar's Gallie wars 1t was taken possession of by his lieutenant Labienns, in order to attack Lutetia with greater ease by the right bank of the Seine. It was pillaged by the Normans, and afterwards became the favourite residence of the first kings of the race of Capet ; Robert and Philip I. both died there, During the Hundred Years' War Mclun was given up by Jeanne of Navarre to her brother, Charles the Bad, but was retaken by the dauphin Charles and Dugueselin. In 1420 it made an heroic defence against Henry V. of England and his ally the duke of Bur- gundy. 'Ten years later the people of Melun, with the help of Joan of Are, drove out the English. It was oecupied by the League in 1589, and retaken by Henry IV. in the following year. Jacques Amyot was born there in 1504.

MELVILLE, Henry Dunpas, Viscount (1741-1811), younger son of the Right Honourable Robert Dundas, lord president of the Scottish court of session, was born at Edinburgh in 1741, and was educated at the high school and university there. Becoming member of the faculty of advocates in 1763, he soon acquired a leading position at the bar. After his appointment as lord advocate in 1775, he gradually relinquished his legal practice to devote his attention more exclusively to public business. On entering parliament in 1774, he had joined the party of Lord North, and, notwithstanding his provincial dialect and ungraceful mauner, he soon distinguished himself in the debates by his clear and argumentative speeches. After holding sub-ordinate offices under the marquis of Lansdowne and Pitt, he in 1791 entered the cabinet as home secretary. From 1794 to 1801 he was secretary at war under Pitt, who conceived for hima special friendship. In 1802 he was elevated to the peerage as Viscount Melville and Baron Dunira. Under Pitt in 1804 he again entered office as first lord of the admiralty, when he introduced numerous improvements in the details of the department. His im-peachment in 1806, for the appropriation of balances of public money remaining in his hands, resulted in his ac- quittal, but he never again held office. He died May 27,

1311.

MELVILLE, Anprew (1545-1622), a distinguished Scottish scholar, theologian, and religious reformer, was the younges§ son of Richard

Melville, proprietor of Baldovy, near Montrose, at which place Andrew was born in 1545. His father fell at the battle of Pinkie, fighting in the van of the Scottish army, two years after the birth of his son ; and, his wife having soon after. followed him to the grave, the young orphan, then a gentle and delicate child, was tenderly cared for by his eldest brother Richard and his amiable and pious wife, whose memory the great. scholar ever afterwards cherished with the warmest gratitude aud affection. Ata very early age Melville began to show a strong taste for learning, and his brothcr did every thing in his power to give him the best education the country could then afford. The rudiments of Latin he obtained at the grammar school of Montrose, after leaving which he prosecuted the study of Greek for two years under Pierre de Marsilliers, a Frenchman whom John Erskine of Dun had induced to settle at Montrose; and such was the proficiency Melville made that on going to the university of St Andrews he excited the astonishment of both students and professors by using the Greek text of Aristotle, which no one else there understood, the Latin translation being that which was alone employed in the teaching of logic. On completing his course of study, Melville left St Andrews with the character of " the best poet, philosopher, and Grecian of any young master in the land." He then,

in 1564, being nineteen years of age, set out for France to perfect his education at the university of Paris. He there applied himseif especially to the study of the Oriental languages, but he had also the advantage of attending the last conrse of lectures delivered by Turnebus in the Greek chair, as well as those of the celebrated Ramus, whose niode of philosophizing and plan of teaching he afterwards introduced into the universities of Scotland. From Paris he proceeded to Poitiers for the purpose of studying civil law, and though only twenty-one years of age he was apparently at once made a regent in the college of St Marceon. After a residence of three years, however, the political troubles of the country compelled him to leave France, and he then went on to Geneva, where he was warmly welcomed by Theodore Beza, at whose instigation he was appointed to fill the chair of humanity in the academy of Geneva, which then happened to be vacant. In addition to his teaching, however, he also applied himself to the further prosecution of his studies in Oriental litera-

ture, and in particular acquired from Cornelius Bertram, one of his brother professors, a knowledge of Syriac. While he resided at Geneva the massacre of St Bartholomew in 1572 drove an immense number of Protestant refugees to that city, including several of the most distinguished French men of letters of the time, with whom Melville had now the opportunity of intimate intercourse. Among these were several men deeply learned in civil law and political science, and their society no doubt tended greatly both to increase Melville's knowledge of the world and to enlarge his ideas of civil and ecclesiastical liberty— acquisitions which he must have found of essential service when at a later pcriod as a leader of the General Assembly he had to struggle against the attempts of James VI. to crush the liberties of the church of the Scottish Reforma- tion. In 1574 Melville returned to Scotland, and almost immediately afterwards received the appointment of prin- cipal of Glasgow University, which at the time had fallen into an almost rninous state, the college having in fact been shut up and the students dispersed. Melville, however, with the knowledge of academic methods of training which he had obtained abroad, immediately set himself with immense energy to establish a good educa- tional system, and in a short time his fame spread through the kingdom, and students flocked in from all quarters, till the class-rooms lately empty could not con- tain those who came for admission. After labouring for six years in Glasgow, and having brought the seminary into a state of the most thorough efficiency, it was thought desirable that he should undertake the same duties at St Andrews. He accordingly proceeded there in 1580, and was installed as principal of the new theological college. His duties there comprehended the teaching, not only of theology, but of the Hebrew, Chaldee; Syriac, and Rabbinical languages, and the great ability of his lectures was ulliversally acknowlcdged, and excited quite a new interest in the university. The sweeping reforms, however, which his new modes of teaching necessarily involved, and even some of the new doctrines which he began to intro- duce, such as the non-infallibility of Aristotle, soon brought him into collision with some of the other teachers in the university ; and this, along with the troubles which arose from the attempts of the court to force a bastard system of Episcopacy upon the Church of Scotland, forced him to flee into England in order to escape the consequences of an absurd charge of treason which was made against him, and which seemed to threaten a prolonged imprisonment. and not improbably even his life. After an absence

of. twenty months he returned to Scotland in November 1585,. and in March 1586 resumed his lectures in St Andrews, where he continued to fulfil the duties of his office for

twenty ore years. During the whole of that time, however, his more prominent work was that of contending with unwearied energy and indomitable courage against the encroachments of an unscrupulous and tyrannical Govern- ment upon the liberties of the Scottish Church. Into the details of these it is of course impossible to enter here. But that in the main he and his coadjutors were fighting for the constitutionally guaranteed rights of the church is now admitted by all candid inquirers. (See in particular The History of England from 1603 to 1616, by Samuel Rawson Gardiner, vol. i. chap. ix.). 'The chief charge

against Melville is that his fervour often led him to forget |

the reverence due to an "anointed monarch." Of this, however, it is not very easy now to judge. Manners at that time were rougher than at present. Any thing niore

undignified could scarcely expect to be treated with dignity. Besides, what title had one who was acting in a purely arbitrary and illegal manner to receive other than the plainest dealing,—such as being reminded that though he was king over men he was only "(God's silly vassal?" Melville's rudeness (if it is to be called so) was simply the outburst of just indignation from a brave, true, and

upright man, zealous only for the purity of religion and regardless of consequences to himself, and it contrasts |

nobly with the grovelling sycophancy of most of the English bishops towards James. The close of Melville's career in Scotland was at length brought about by James in characteristic fashion. In 1606 he and seven other clergymen of the Church of Scotland were summoned to London in order "that his majesty might treat with them of such things as would tend to settle the peace of the church." The contention of the whole of these

faithful men was that the only way to accomplish that pnrpose was a free Assembly. Melville delivered his opinion to that effect with his accustomed freedom and boldness, and, having shortly afterwards written a sarcastic Latin epigram on some of the snperstitious practices he had observed in the chapel of Hampton Court, and some eavesdropper having conveyed the lines to the king, he was committed to the Tower, and detained there for the space of four years. On regaining his liberty, and being refused permission to return to his own country, he was invited to fill a professor's chair in the university of Sedan, and there he spent the last eleven years of his brave, active, noble, and useful life. [He died at Sedan in L622. at the age of seventy-seven.

MELVILLE, Grorce Joun Wuyrte (1821-1878), has a right to be regarded as the founder of a school of fashionable novels,—the fashionable sporting novel. He was lamented on his death as the Tyrtaus of the hunting field, the laureate of fox-hunting ; all his most popular and distinctive heroes and heroines, Digby Grand, Tilbury Nogo, the Honourable Crasher, Mr Sawyer, Kate Coventry, Mrs Lascelles, are or would be mighty hunters. The eldest son of Major Whyte Melville, of Mount Melville, Fifeshire, he received his school education, like so many of his heroes, at Eton, entered the army in 1839, became captain in the Coldstream Guards in 1846, and retired in 1849. His first appearance in literature was made soon after, with a translation of Horace into fluent and graceful verse, published in 1850. His first novel was Digby Grand, published in 1853. Although this first effort has a good deal more in it of Lytton's early high-flying style than Whyte Melville's later works, the unflagging verve and intimate knowledge with which he described sporting scenes and sporting characters at once drew attention to him as a novelist with a new vein. His power of sustain- ing interest in hunting and the things connected with

hunting appeared more markedly in his next novel, Tilbury ogo, contributed to the Sporting Magazine in 1853. He showed in the adventures of Mr N ogo, what became more apparent in his later works, that he had a surer hand iy humorous narrative than in pathetic description ; there are many pathetic scenes in his novels, but the pathos js sometimes rather forced, intended to point a moral—rather the pathos of the preacher than the poet. The hero of General Bounce, his next novel in order of publication

(Fraser's Magazine, 1854), little as one would expect it from the title, ends in a painful manner, somewhat out of keeping with the lively middle and beginning. When the Crimean War broke out, Whyte Melville took part in it as a volnnteer in the Turkish contingent; but this was

| the only break in his literary career from the time that he rude, insolent, and brutal than James's own occasional | explosions it would be difficult to match, and a king so |

began to write novels till his 'death in 1878. By a strange accident, he lost his life in the hunting-field, the hero of many a stiff ride meeting his fate in galloping quietly over an ordinary ploughed field.

Twenty-one novels appeared from his pen after his return from the Crimea: —Kate Coventry, 1856; The Interpreter, 1858; Holmby House, 1860; Good jor Nothing, 1861; Market Harborough, 1861; The Gladi- ators, 1863; Brookes of Bridlemere, 1864; The Queen's Maries, 1864; Cerise, 1865; Bones and I, 1868; The White Rose, 1868; Wf or N, 1869; Contraband, 1870; Sarchedon, 1871; Satanella, 1872; Uncle John, 1874 ; Sister Lowise, 1875; Katerfelto, 1875; Rosine, 1876; Roy's Wife, 1878; Black but Comely, 1878. Several of these novels are historical, the G/adiators being perhaps the most famous of them. As an historical novelist Whyte Melville cannot be put on a level with Harrison Ainsworth for painstaking accuracy and minuteness of detail; he makes his characters live and move with great vividness, but he obviously did not know at first hand the history of the periods chosen by him. It is on his portraiture of contemporary sporting society that his reputation as a novelist must rest ; and, though now and then a character reappears, such as the supercilions stud- groom, the dark and wary steeple-chaser, or the fascinating sporting widow, his variety in the invention of incidents is amazing. Whyte Melville was not merely the annalist of sporting society for his generation, bat may also be fairly described as the principal moralist of that society ; he exerted a considerable and a wholesome influence on the manners and morals of the gilded youth of his time. His Songs and Verses and his metrical Legend of the True Cross, though respectable in point of versification, are hardly worth mentioning on their own merits.

MELVILL VAN CARNBEE, Pieter, Baron, an eminent Dutch geographer, was born at the Hague 20th May 1816, and dicd October 24, 1856. He traced his descent from an old Scotch family, originally it is said of Hungarian extraction. Destined for the navy, in which his grandfather had won distinction, Melvill imbibed a taste for hydrography and cartography as a student under Pilaar in the college of Medemblik, and he showed his capacity as a surveyor on his very first voyage to the Dutch Indies (1835). In 1839 he was again in the East, and was now attached to the hydrographical bureau at Batavia. With the assistance of the long-neglected documents collected by the old company, he completed in wonderfully short time his first great hydrographical work—a map of Java in five sheets, accompanied by sailing directions (Amsterdam, 1842; 2d revised edition, 1849),— which was received with great applause. Melvill remained in India till 1845 collecting materials for his second great hydro- graphical work, the chart of the waters between Sumatra and Borneo (two sheets, 1845 and 1846, revised edition of first sheet 1847; compare the descriptive memoir in Tindal and

Swart's Journal, 1846). On his return to Holland Melvill was attached to the naval department with the special charge of studying the history of the hydrography of the Dutch Indies. He also undertook, in connexion with Von Siebold, the publication of the Moniteur des Indes, a valuable series of scientific papers, mainly from his own pen, on the foreign possessions of Holland, which was continued for three years. In 1850 Melvill returned to India as tieu- tenant of the first class and adjutant to Vice-Admiral Van den Bosch ; and after the premature death of this com- mander he was again appointed keeper of the charts at Batavia. He was one of the founders and for a time the president of the new society for natural scjence (185V). In 1853 he obtained exemption from active naval service that he might devote himself to a general atlas of the Dutch Indies ; and under the most unfavonrable circumstances he prosecuted the task with incredible energy. But he was not to see its completion. Just after he had lost his young wife and new-born soa he was called in 1856 to be director of the marine establishment of Onrust; and there he soon fell a victim to climate, dying after much suffering in the hospital of Weltevreden, only forty years of age.

In spite of delays caused by the engraving of the maps in Holland, no fewer than twenty-five sheets were already finished, but it was not till 1862 that the whole plan, embracing sixty sheets, was ably brought to a close by Lientenant-Colonel W. F. Versteeg. The premature loss of Melvill was severely felt not only in Holland but in foreign countries, where, as shown by his connexion with the geographical societies of Paris, London, Berlin, and Bergen, his labours were highly esteemed. His industry and energy were equalled only by the benevolence and warmth of his heart. of the Netherlands Lion, in 1849 that of the Legion of Honour.

MEMEL, the most northerly town in Germany, and the principal seat of the Baltic timber trade, is situated in the district of Kénigsberg, Prussia, at the mouth of the Dange, and on the bank of a sound connecting the Kurische Haff with the Baltic Sea. On the side next the sea the town is defended by a citadel and other forti- fications, and the entrance to the large and fine harbour is protected by a lighthouse. Largely rebuilt since a destructive fire in 1854, Memel contuins several churches, a gymnasium, a school of navigation, an exchange, and various judicial and official establishments. It also possesses large iron-foundries, shipbuilding yards, breweries, distilleries, and manufactories of chemicals, soap, and amber wares. By far the most important interest of the town, however, is its trade, the chief items in which are timber and the grain and other agricultural products of Lithuania. he timber is brought by river from the forests of Russia, and is prepared for exportation by about thirty saw-mills. The annual value of timber exported is about £600,000, In 1880 the port of Memel was entered by 898 ships with an aggregate burden of 164,374 tons, and cleared by 932 vessels with a burden of 164,441 tons. 'The population of Memel in 1880 was 19,660.

Memel was founded in 1252 by Poppo von Osterna, grand master of the Teutonic order, and was at first called New Dortmund and afterwards Memmelburg. It soon acquired a considerable trade, and joined the Hanseatic League. During the 18th, 14th, and 15th centuries it was repeatedly burned down by its hostile neighbours, the Lithuanians and Poles, and in the 17th century it remained for some time in the possession of Sweden. In 1757, and again in 1813, it was occupied by Russian troops. After the battle of Jena, King Frederick William III. retired to Memel; and

there, in 1807, a treaty was concluded between England and Prussia. The poet Simon Dach and the astronomer Argelander were natives of Memel.

MEMLING, Hans, a painter of the 15th century, whose art gave a passing lustre to Bruges in the period of its political and commercial decline. Though much

In 1843 he received the decoration |

845

has been written respecting the rise and fall of the school which made this city famous, it still remains a moot question whether that school ever truly existed. Like Rome or Naples, Bruges absorbed the talents which were formed and developed in humbler centres. John Van Eyck first gained repute at Ghent and the Hague before he acquired a domicile elsewhere, and Memling, we have reason to think, was a skilled artist before he settled at Bruges. Yet if the question should be asked where the manner of Memling was shaped, and where he acquired the skill which he displayed at Bruges, we shall be greatly ata loss to reply. The annals of the city are silent as to the birth and education of a painter whose name was iiaccu- rately spelt by different authors, and whose identity was lost under the various appellations of Hans and Hausse, or Hemling and Memling. But no other city of the Nether- lands has vindicated the right which Bruges had no means of proving. Travellers who came to Bruges were only told that Memling's masterpieces were preserved in the hospital of St John. In one of these pictures it was said a portrait of the artist might be discovered; on the sculptured orna- ments of a porch enframing one of its subjects an incident of the master's life might be traced,—his danger as he lay senseless in the street, his rescue as charitable people carried his body to the hospital. 'The legend grew too, It came to be told how the great artist began life as a soldier who went to the wars under Charles the Bold, and came back riddled with wounds from the field of Nancy. Wandering homeward in a disabled state in 1477, he fainted in the streets of Bruges, and was cured by the Hospitallers. Unknown to them, and a stranger to Bruges, he gave tangible proofs of his skill to the brethren of St John, and showed his gratitude by refnsing payment for a picture he had painted. Unhappily the legend refutes itself. The portrait of Memling is a myth ; the carvings of the

capitals of the porch represent the ordinary incidents attending the reception of patients atan hospital. Memling did indeed paint for the Hospitallers, but he painted not one but many pictures, and he did so in 1479 and 1480, being probably known to his patrons of St John by many masterpieces even before the battle of Nancy.

Memling is only connected with military operations in a mediate and distant sense. His name appears on a list of subscribers to the loan which was raised by Maximilian of Austria to push hostilities against France in the year 1480. When he signed this list his position was that of a resident at Bruges who had probably lived there long enough to acquire a large practice and its advantages in the form of lands and tenements. In 1477, when he is said to have fallen, and when Charles the Bold was killed, he was under contract to furnish an altarpiece for the guild chapel of the booksellers of Bruges; and this altarpiece, now preserved, under the name of the Seven Griefs of Mary, in the gallery of Turin, is one of the fine creations of his riper age, and not inferior in any way to those of 1479 in the hospital of St John, which for their part are hardly less interesting as illustrative of the master's power than the Last Judgment in tlie cathedral of Dantzic. Critical opinion has been unanimous in assigning the altarpiece of Dantzic to Memling, and by this it affirms that Memling was a resident and a skilled artist at Bruges in 1473; for there is no doubt that the Last Judgment was painted and sold to a merchant at Bruges, who shipped it there on board of a vessel bound to the Mediterranean, which was captured by a Dantzic privateer iu that very year. But, in order that Memling's repute shonld be so fair as to make his pictures purchasable, as this had been, by an agent of the Medici at Bruges, it is incumbent on us to acknowledge that he had furnished sufficient proofs before that time of the skill which excited the wonder of such highly cultivated

the possible truth of a report made by a chronicler of the 16th ccntury that Memling had sittings from Isabella, consort of Philip the Good of Burgundy, in the year 1450.

It is characteristic that the very oldest allusions to pictures connected with Memling's name are those which point to relations with the Burgundian

court. The inven- tories of Margaret of Austria, drawn up in 1524, allude to a triptych of the God of Pity by Roger van der Weyden, of which the wings containing angels were by " Master Hans." mony in favour of the preservation of Memling's work than as showing his connexion with an older Flemish craftsman. For ages Roger van der Weyden was acknowledged as an artist of the school of Bruges, until records of undispuicd authenticity demonstrated that he was bred at Tournai and settled at Brussels, Nothing seems more natural than the conjunction of his name with that of Memling as the author of an altarpiece, since, though Memling's youth remains obscure, it is clear from the style of his manhood that he was tauglit in the painting-room of Van der Weyden. Nor is it beyond the limits of probability that it was Van der Weyden who received commissions at a distance from Brussels, and first took his pupil to Bruges, where he after- wards dwelt. The clearest evidence of the connexion of the two masters is that afforded by pictures, and parti-

But this entry is less important as affording testi- |

"patrons ; and thus we come to admit without much difficulty | unreasonable to think that his success as a portrait painter,

t 0 to tl which is manifested in isolated busts as well as in altarpieces, was of a kind to react with effect on the Venetian sehool, which undoubtedly

| was affected by the partiality of Antonello da Messina for trang-

Alpine types studied in Flanders in Memling's time. The portraits of Sir John Donne and his wife and children in the Chiswick altar- piece are not less remarkable as models of drawing and finish than as refined presentations of persons of distinction; nor is any differ- ence in this respect to be found in the splendid groups of father mother, and children which fill the noble altarpiece of the Louvre. As single portraits, the busts of Burgomaster Morcel and his wife in the museum of Brussels, and their daughter the Sibyl Zamn- betha in the hospital of Bruges, are the finest and most interesting of specimens. The Seven Griefs of Mary in the gallery of Turin, to which we may add the Seven Joys of Mary in the Pinakothek of

Munich, are illustrations of the habit which clung to the art of Flanders, of representing a cyele of subjects on the different planes of a single picture, where a wide expanse of ground is covered with incidents from the Passion in the form common to the action of sacred plays, The time came, no doubt, when the players took their

; eue from the painters, as in the Ghent procession, which was

formed on the model of Van Eyck's Adoration of the Lamb. But in Memling's days there werc still some original ' players," and the public was not averse to seeing illustrations of their work. In the

lirst period of the development of Belgian art too, when the Flemings

_ assigned more importance to earved work than to painting, and yet

refused to aceept sculpture without colour, it was natural that the sculptor should multiply incidents on bas-reliefs which were coated with tinting in the semblance of nature. Memling's pictures imitate reliets so far as they abound in variety of episodes, and are marked by absence of contrast in light and shade or want of toning

_ by gradations of atmosphere. Yet with all these peculiarities his

cularly an altarpiece, which has alternately been assigned |

to each of them, and which may possibly be due to the joint labours of both. In this altarpiece, which is a triptych ordered for a patron of the house of Sforza, we find the style of Van der Weyden in the central panel of the Crucifixion, aud that of Memling in the episodes on the wings. in the Zambeccari collection at Bologna, whilst it was attributed to the latter at the Middleton sale in London in 1872. At first, we may think, a closer resemblance might be traced between the two artists than that disclosed in later works of Memling, but the delicate organization of the younger painter, perhaps also a milder appreciation of

the duties of a Christian artist, may have led } femling to observe that his practice has become larger than he can compass

realize a sweet and perfect ideal, without losing, on that account, the feeling of his master. He certainly exchanged the asceticism of Van der Weyden for a senti- ment of less energetic concentration. He softened his teacher's asperities and bitter hardness of expression.

In the very oldest form in which Memling's style is displayed, or

rather in that example which represents the Baptist in the gallery of Munich, we are sapposed to contemplate an effort of the year 1470.

| acquainted with the scenery of the Rhine.

|: 1486.

works are very pleasant to the cye, because they are always graceful and quict. ;

The masterpiece of Memling's later years, a shrine containing relics of St Ursula in the hospital of Bruges, is fairly supposed to have been ordered and finished in 1480 after the painter ia become This shrine is one of the most interesting monuments of medieval art in Flanders, not

: ; : _ ouly because it is beautifully executed, but because it reveals some Yet the whole piece was assigned to the former |

part of the life of the painter who produced 'it, and illustrates the picturesque legend of Ursula and her comrades. The delicacy of finish in its miniature figures, the variety of its landscapes and cos- tume, the marvellous patience with which its details are given, are all matters of enjoyment to the spectator. There is later work of the master in the St Christopher and Saints of 1484 in the academy, or the Newenhoven Madonna in the hospital of Bruges, or a large Crucifixion with scenes from the Passion, of 1491, in the cathedral of Liibeck. But as we near the close of Memling's career we

alone ; and, as usual in such cases, the labour of disciples is substi- tuted for his own. The registers of the painters' corporation at Bruges give the names of two apprentices who served their timé with Memling and paid

dues on admission to the guild in 1480 and These subordinates remained obscure.

It would be easy to form a long list of pictures by Meniling in the gallerics of Berlin, Florenee, London, Madrid, Paris, Rome, and

_ Vienna, and pieces equally remarkable in many private collections

_ of England and the Continent.

The finish of this piece is scarcely, surpassed, though the subject |

is more important, by that of the Last Judgment of Dantzic. But the latter is more interesting than the former because it tells how Memling, long after Roger's death and his own settlement at Bruges, preserved the traditions of sacred art which had been applied in the first part of the century by Roger van der Weyden to the Last Judgment of Beaune. All that Memling did was to purge his mas- ter's manner of excessive stringency, and add to his other qualities a velvet softness of pigment, a delicate trausparence of colours and yielding grace of slender forms. That such a beautiful work ag the Last Judgment of Dantzic should have been bought for the Italian market is not surprising when we recollect that pieture-fanciers in that country were famihar with the beauties of Memling's eomposi- tious as shown in the preferenec given to them by such purchasers as Cardinal Grimari and Cardinal Bembo at Venice, and the heads of the house of Medici at Florence. But Memling's reputation was not confined to Italy or Flanders. The Madonna and Saints which so lately passed out of the Duchatel collection into the gallery of

These have all been described, and are widely known. . The present notice must be closed with the adnnission that pictures tell morc of Memling's life than records. The date of the master's death is not better certified than that of his birth. This much, however, is certain. The trustees of Memling's will appeared before the court of wards at Bruges on the 10th of

| Deeember 1495, and we gather from records of that date and place that Memling died a short time before, leaving behind several

children and a considerable property. (J. A. C.)

MEMMI. Sec Martini, Simone.

MEMMINGEN, a town of Bavaria, in the district of Schwaben and Neuburg, is situated about 35 miles to the south-west of Augsburg, near the river Iller. It is a well- built town, still partly surrounded with walls, and contains

a Roman Catholic and three Protestant churches, a town-

the Louvre, the Virgin and Child of Sir Jolin Donne at Chiswick, |

and other noblespecimens in English and Continental private houses show that his work was as widely known and appreciated as it could be in the state of civilization of the 16th century. It was per- haps not their sole attraction that they gave the most tender and

house of 1580, and several schools and charitable institu- tions, Its industrial products are yarn, calico, woollen goods, and thread. A considerable trade is carried on in

hops, which are extensively cultivated in the neighbour-

delicate possible impersonations of the " Mother of Christ" that |

could suit the taste of that age in any European country. But the portraits of the donors with which they were mostly combined were more characteristic, and probably more remarkable as likenesses than any that Memling's contemporaries could produce. Nor is it

hood, and in wool, leather, and grain. The population in

1880 was 8050.

Memmingen, first mentioned in a document of 1010, belonged originally to the Guelph family. In 1286 it became a free city of the empire, a position which it maintained down to 1802, when it was allotted to Bavaria, In 1529 Memmingen was one of the " pro-

eet

testing"' towns represented at the diet of Spires. During the Thirty Years' War it was alternately occupied by Swedes and Imperialists. In 1800 the French under Moreau gained a victory over the Austrians near Memmingen. Compare Dobel, Afemmingen im Reformationszeitalter, 1877-78.

MEMNON. In the Homeric mythology (or rather the inythology of the Trotca in the much fuller form in which it existed in the times of Pindar and the tragic poets) this hero was called the son of Tithonus (the half-brother of Priam) and Eos (Aurora). Tradition represented him as

an Ethiopian prince who came toassist the Trojans against | the Greeks, and performed prodigies of valour, but was |

at length killed by Achilles, after having himself slain Antilochus, the son of Nestor, an event alluded to in Pindar, Pyth., vi. 32-39,

His story must have been very famous, |

for more than one Greek play was composed bearing the –

title.

The chief source from which our knowledge about Mem-

non as a chief is derived is the second book of the Post- Homeriea, by Quintus Smyrnzus, where his exploits and death are described at length. That Memnon was slain

meaning brave." It las been thought that Méurwr and pyyjpov, "mindful," are but forms of the same word, and that the prophetic power attributed to the head of the Egyptian Memnon, which was said to utter sounds at sunrise, is connected'with this idea. It was said that the sound resembled

the moaning noise or the sharp twang of a harp-string, and it may even be surmised that the syllables mem-non imitated the resonance. The Egyptian head is said to be a bust of King Amenophis;? but if the Greeks fancied it uttered the word memnon, they would have called it by that name. The tendency, however, to give a Greek shape and inflexion to words which sounded bar- barous will sufficiently account for the misnaming of the Statue.

Strabo, lib. xvii. p. 816, declares that he himsclf heard

it in company with Alius Gallus and several of his friends,

and Pausanias (i. 42, 2) says "one would compare the sound most nearly to the broken chord of a harp or a

lute." See also Juv., Sat., xv. 5; Tac, Ann. ii. 61. O 3 ef 3 b]

by Achilles is more than once affirmed by Pindar (Vem.,

vi, 52; Isthm., iv. 41, vii. 54). the Odyssey (xi. 522), with especial praise for personal beauty ; but the allusion to him is quite casual, and is one

He is mentioned also in |

of many proofs that the compilation of that and the sister |

epic presupposes in the reader or hearer a full knowledge of the whole tale of Troy.

Modern philology associates Mem- |

non——like Achilles, whom lie so closely resembles in many | particulars, and like Sarpedon, who seems the representa- |

tive of Memnon in the Iliad—with solar phenomena. He was the son of the dawn; and, though he might vanish from sight for a time, le could not be destroyed, and there-

fore it was said that Zeus, moved by the tears of his.

mother, granted him immortality. In this respect, as also

in wearing bright armour made by Heph:estus, he is tlie | counterpart of Achilles, who symbolizes the mid-day sun | in his glory ; and that Mcmnon is said to have come fron

the far east, ze, from the region of sunrise, is in itself significant. Ovid, in a beautiful elegy on the death of Tibullus, Amor., lib. ili. 9, 3, thus associates the fates of Memnon and Achilles :— Memnona si mater, mater ploravit Achillem, Et tangunt magnas tristia fata deas, Flebilis indignos, Elegeia, solve capillos ; Ah nimis ex vero nunc tibi nomen erit. Like the body of the dead hero Sarpedon (J/., xvi. 681), so that of Memnon was borne tlirough the air, a legend represented on Greek vases of a rather early. date. appears to mean that the sun, the offspring of the dawn, careers through the sky to the place of his departure in the west. Auother account represents Zeus as having sent

forth birds from the funeral-pile of Memnon, which | straightway fought with each other, and many fell back as |

victims to the soul of the hero. The mere fact that a Jfemnonium, or temple in honour

Thebes, both of which places were centres of sun-worship, is a strong confirmation of the probability, derived from his mythical pedigree, that he was really a sun-god. Sir G. W. Cox remarks,! "of Memnon's head the story was told that it retained the prophetic power of the living Helios or of Surya. The story is found in the myth of the Teutonic Wismir, and it might lave been related of Kephalos, the head of the sun ;" and again (p. 267), " Eos, the mother of Memnon, is so transparently the morning that her child must rise again as surely as the sun reappears to run his daily course across the heaven."

With respect to the meaning of the name, it may pos- sibly be the same as Agamemnon, which has a prefix

Y Mythology and Folklore, p. 134.

_ they were described by ‘Abd el-Latif.

This |

_ Orleans.

Memnon, as an Ethiopian, was of course represented as a black; hence Virgil (2, i. 493) speaks of “ nigri Memuonis arma.” ‘The fignre itself was cut ont of black basalt, but that. is a material not uncommon in Egypt. Speaking quite generally, it seems reasonable to conclude that the Memnon from Ethiopia (which the early Greeks placed in the far east rather than in the south) typifies the eastern sun summoned to oppose the enemies of darkness from the west.

MEMPHIS, the capital of the old Egyptian empire, founded by Menes, the first historical king; see vol. vii: pp. 731, 770. In the time of Strabo (xvii. p. 807) it was the second city of Egypt, inferior only to Alexandria, and with a mixed population like the latter. Memphis was still an importaut though declining place at the time of the Moslem conquest. Its final fall was due to the rise of the Arabic city of Fostat on the right bank of the Nile almost opposite the northern end of the old capital; and its ruins, so far as they still lay above ground, gradually disappeared, being used as a quarry for the new city. – The remains of “ Menf” were still imposing late in the 12th century, when In the Old Testa- ment Memphis is mentioned under the names of Moph (Hos, ix. 6) and Noph (Isa. xix. 13; Jer. ii, 16; Ezek. xxag, 13, 16).

MEMPHIS, a city of the United States, and port of entry, capital of Shelby connty, Tennessee, is situated on tlhe east bank of the Mississippi river just below the mouth of Wolf river, in about 35° 8’ N. lat. and 90° 5’ W. long, 450 miles below St Louis and 826 miles above New The bluff on which the city stands has an average elevation of 474 feet above high-water mark, with a further fall of 36 feet to extreme low water. Memphis is methodically and tastefully planned, and is adorned

| with many elegant private residences and public build-

ve. | ings, conspicuous among the latter being the United of the hero, was erected both at Susa and at Egyptian |

States custom house, located upon the esplanade between Front Street and the river, and built of the best quality of marble, the product of Tennessee quarries. A small park in the centre of the city contains a bnst of Andrew Jackson, The streets are mostly well-paved, and are supplied with water from the Wolf river by the Holly system. The bayou Gayoso, with several branches, inter- sects the city, and prior to 1880 received most of its drainage. Since that date over 40 miles of sewers and more than that length of subsoil drain-tiles have been constructed on the Waring system, providing the city with a superior system of drainage. 2 Sir G. W. Cox, Mythology of the Aryans, p. 268, ed. 2.

3 dauévwh, as the Thebans themselves said, according to Pausanias, cited below.

. 848

Memphis is the largest city uf the Stute, and the niost , important commercial city on the Mississippi between St | Louis and New Orleans. The largest sea-going vessels ascend the river to this point, and navigation is open at all seasons of the year. The city also possesses abundant facilities for transportation by railway in every direction. Memphis ranks as the largest interior cotton-inarket in the United States. The receipts for the season ending Sep- tember 1, 1881, were 470,267 bales, with a value of $23,090,109. 'Theaggregate receipts from the mercantile and manufacturing interests for the year ending September 1, 1882, amounted to about $60,000,000, of which the | trade in groceries and western products contributed nearly | $40,000,000; dry goods, clothing, boots and shoes, and

general merchandise $15,000,000; and various home | manufactures about $5,000,000. There are oil-mills and refineries, whose annual product of about 30,000 barrels of cotton-seed oil, togetlier with otl-cake and re-ginned cotton, amounts to over $1,000,000. numerous foundries, machine shops, flouring-mills, and manufactories of carriages, furniture, and tobacco.

The city contains, besides the usual religious, educational and commercial institutions, a public library of 9000 volumes, three daily and ten weekly newspapers, a chamber of commerce, and a cotton exchange.

Memphis was laid out as a village in 1820, and incor- porated as a city in 1831. Its population at each census

There are also |

since has been as follows :—3360 in 1840, 8841 in 1850, 22,623 in 1860, 40,226 in 1870, and 33,592 in 1880.

END OF

| couneil.”

MEMPHIS

According to a census taken on October 1, 1882, the population within the city limits was 47,976 (29,130 white and 18,846 coloured).

During the eivil war Memphis was early occupied by the Union forces (June 6, 1862) after a naval engagement in which Com. modore Davis with a fleet of nine gunboats and rams defeated a similar Confederate fleet of eight vessels, and captured or destroyed all of them but one. ‘The eity was held by Federal troops to the close of the war, with the exeeption of a brief oecupation, in August 1864, by General Forrest, who eaptured several hundred ele but immediately withdrew. The decrease of popnlation

etween 1870 and 1880 was due to the ravages of yellow fever in 1878, 1878, and 1879. ‘The epidemie of 1873 resulted in- over two thousand deaths: In 1878, aeeording to the report of the Howard Relief Assoeiation, the number of those attaeked with the fever was 15,000, and the number of deaths reaehed the total of 5150, of whom 4250 were whites and 900 coloured. At the return of the fever in 1879 better eare and striet quarantine arrangements prevailed, but there were 1595 eases, with 497 deaths. During the epidemics of 1878 and 1879 fully two-thirds of the population fled from the eity, many of whom died of the fever at other places, and a still

larger number did not return. For three months during each year business was wholly suspended, and all ingress or egress exeept for the most necessary purposes was forbidden. The pro- stration of the business of the place left the city almost hopelessly bankrupt, and as a means of relief the legislature of the State in January 1879 repealed the eity's eharter, and, assuming exelusive

‘ eontrol of its taxation and finanees, eonstituted it simply a “‘taxing

district,” placing its government in the hands of a “legislative This anomalous proceeding has been declared consti- tutional by the supreme eourt of Tennessee. Under it Memphis is at least regaining its prosperity, and by thoroughly eleansing, repaving, and sewering its streets, and supervising the eonstruction of buildings, is likely to become one of the healthiest cities on the Mississippi river.

VOLUME FIFTEENTH.

NEIL. AND COMPANY, PRINTERS, EDINBURGH.

LOUISIANA

Longitude “West : q

JACKSO

i A ~ a ES logt ng .

Puates, Vou. XV.—Directions TO BInper.

When insertion throughout the text ds desired, the Plates to be placed opposite the Jollowing pages :-—

Plate I. page 20 . Plate VI. page 320 oe! ee 2 SS 7 » sah. . 186 wo VAHL. , 602 » LV. 4 168 » tc , 611 ra » SOF

Seale of Miles | a 50

County Towns @ Railroads_____..

Longitude West ‘Washington

ENCYCLOPADIA ‘BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

. 848

Memphis is the largest city uf the Stute, and the miost , important commercial city on the Mississippi. between St Louis and New Orleans. The. largest sea-going vessels ascend the river to this point, and navigation is open at all seasons of the year. The city also possesses abundant facilities. for transportation by railway in every direction. Memphis ranks as the largest interior cotton-inarket in the United States.” The receipts for the season ending Sep- tember 1, 1881, were 470,267 bales, with a value of $23,090,109. ‘The aggregate receipts from the mercantile and manufacturing interests for the year ending September 1, 1882, amounted to about $60,000,000, of which the | trade in groceries and western products contributed nearly |

$40,000,000 ; dry goods, clothing, boots and shoes, and | general merchandise $15,000,000; and various home | manufactures about $5,000,000. There are oil-mills and refineries, whose annual product of about 30,000 barrels of cottou-seed oil, together with oil-cake and re-ginned cotton, amounts to over $1,000,000. There are also numerous

c

‘ prevailed, but there were 1595 cases, with 497 deaths.

|

MEMPHIS

According to a census taken on October 1, 1882, the population within the city limits was 47,976 (29,130 white and 18,846 coloured).

During the civil war Memphis was early occupied by the Union forces (June 6,.1862) after a naval engagement in which Com- modore Davis with a fleet of nine gunboats and rams defeated a similar Confederate fleet of

eight vessels, and captured or destroyed all of them but one. ‘The city was held by Federal troops to the close of the war, with the exception of a brief occupation, in August 1864, by General Forrest, who captured several hundred sey but immediately withdrew. The decrease of population

etween 1870 and 1880 was due to the ravages of yellow fever in 1878, 1878, and 1879. ‘lhe epidemic of 1873 resulted in- over two thousand deaths: In 1878, according to the report of the Howard Relief Association, the number of those attacked with the fever was 15,000, and the number of deaths reached the total of 5150, of whom 4250 were whites and 900 coloured. At the return of the fever in 1879 better care and strict quarantine arrangements During the epidemics of 1878 and 1879 fully two-thirds of the population fled from the city, many of whom died of the fever at other places, and a still larger number did not return. For three months during each year business was wholly suspended, and all ingress or egres

foundries, machine shops, flouring-mills, and | except for the most necessary purposes was forbidden…..Th

END OF VOLUME FIFTEENTH.

NEITT. AND COMPANY, PRINTERS, EDINBURGH.

VOL. XV.

Ki 0 is 4

vit Fa

ets ec iy

j =H

Scale of Miles a 05 10 20 So 40 WO

County Towns © Kailroads___..

LOUISIANA

from Greenwich

=,

Bayou de Lary” ° Caillou Ba YN eo

Raccoon Pt Naame /DERNIE

Longitude West from § Washington

ek an,

My

er PLw

ENCYCLOPADIA ‘BRITANNICA, NINTH ED!TION,.

PLATE 1.

aN

29

-

°

. ~ ;

’ *i*

;

i

: ‘

‘

-4

NOMW!0F HININ VOINNVLINS VIO¥dOT9AING “ysanquUIpy ucisuyor yy x M

FZ weg opnySuo’y

4

se. eeeEEEeeeee

oor oF 08 SonK Wsysng

ost ow (OF on oR 09 Or Oz Sel uemoy

4 DOPZOL’S 7, r ‘2 ampou jO DOWBOLS nt UP 0} saTTUL (Q’aTEIS

HONIW VISV

W LL TL ‘om “VIGAT ‘VIOA’T ‘VINOVOAT AX“TOA

VOL .XV

MACEDONIA, &c.

PLATE fl

ANNI

Y),

Cane

Asay SN ii | ‘I SL Asi i

‘ HAS nis y

Sith

oul Hi

ZS ZEN SNS 1d % Hit

MALTESE ISLANDS

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

W&AK Johnston , Edinburgh,

-

zg fi 7 _ ; a ° 4

~ , : .

*a Wo: , era yf 5 = ts = os os . = ~ ‘ – oe — ~ ts a : Arlo . – + . ‘5 ’ , Un = i aaa . . – ii? – eee ¥ . + #, wit! ‘ doa ’ ‘ : : – o™ – . — ‘ – ‘ > 4 ‘ – , | ? “ – . t ‘ «a ; . = i ie . i fos ~ ae -: y ‘ – - ‘ : y ‘ * P ‘ * : ° . » ‘ . jas .*

. –

: 4 ; ‘ | | | 2 » Py

2

” % ‘ .

- 4 :

7 ‘

.

: ‘

7

n

*7 **

‘ z ¢ . 4 f. :

= . –

*i Pp “ » : 5 \ * i, = : ‘ i] . a ae be => a : é . i ? | { : ! | | ae se ‘ ; Z . , 4 7. : . eS wn 4 8 – - ; x – ‘ ‘*

‘

1 . es – – ‘

- .

/ ¥ : H . P| ‘ $

; = :

’ – j rn »~ heX ‘ ~ a 3 s

:

*«i i ioe ‘ ; ie ’ f y . ‘ * ‘*

: . .

| | | 1 >

.

*a . e’ * ‘ oe ay 5 As Lew \ . > oo*

- ‘

. we r ‘ 3 : s Z 7 “a

‘

*a = . ar P . = -_ * ae ge or reese Rb cern OP NG eS NRE, Fre ome Hy aE ae aga TW ; ‘ : v © ¢ ‘*

.

. ad

PLATE IV.

Tambohorinog, « ys

mosis : q

whad dace a Micsiog

plored

z co >

Unex

.

iat at 4A \

Py

a

Jas Sibree, Jr Delt

42

MADAGASCAR

By JAS.SIBREE, SR. FR.G.S. The Forest belt ts shewn by Green tinting. The approximate eatent of upper Granitic region is shewn by pale Red colour. Extinct Volcanoes shewn by Vermilion Dots; Lava Streams and Volcanic disturbance by vermilion Lines. Tia Nama in sloping Capitals are those of Tribes,as BETSILEO; the upright capitals shew Districts, as MENABE.

ENCYCLOPADIA

50 52

BRITANNICA NINTH EDITION

W &A.K. Johnston, Edinburgh,

s 4

:

pppoe peal es =. “es I

‘) – 7 < – –

Sp pwc agers: pre een cores

7” § _ a ; a = 7 ” ae — fi – wy _ , o a . +5 W he i St

- *. 1*

‘ . . – ~ ’

- *‘*

p f » i

-

a

*: * ‘ _ *’*

= af ‘ pat , }

.

- *‘ A f-*

,

; é

. –

. – rs ‘

-

*i **

~ . +

i

‘ 3 +

rf 4 e

-

ne é oY > A, ‘

*. * 1 – .*

‘ — » ‘ ae

•

t ‘ a ‘

-

*» * a) a = “5) atau is*

SR ren ie ER ERIM hee em MOP SO

Ne —

PLALEV

ICRAN- HERRY IS

&, ma BURNTCOATI.

&

**wrogsent ROCK*

mand He Rial wii Sep MERIAL ob ng? VG, t's ta, ee af ae ert Pe warinjous PMapingeus 3 c Se" fag ey? vO re Bracceni. he Fase) '? @jSouthport Ao hae By WP cdaegetown sp fa "MATINICUS ROCK Q

I

MONHEGAN!.

T

w

Scale of Miles o 10 20 30 40 50 County Towns © Railroads ——

W&£A.K Johnston, Edinburgh,

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

"

i. a we = — >

~ : :

- =

=

,

; –

y The ‘ ‘ ‘ ed

| VOL. XV | MALAY PENINSULA. |) PLATEVI.

101 102

| |

British Territory States under British protection States feudatory to Sicam Independent States

- *wr treaty with Englarad …*

Yap Dertinean 1 s b Gr Redang

*Cape Gunong (@)...Mountain | Pulo (P) Toland FOR Island | Sungei (s.).River Ewala (Ew) M*of River | Tanjong (T9)PorCape Ulu..Source of River*

20 40 eo

99

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EQITION. Meh holt ARR AAPOR

VOL.XV. | | a I

PTOLEMY’S! OMseil compared with ge @ After pki

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANSA

AP PLATE VU.

FOF THE WORED., Pe actnal positions. Kiepert.

Semanghious M. PUL AEeLeR LUELLA ‘hit CUTTTIT LuAALL

ure

e°

Explanation

Ptolemy’s construction in Red

True outlines and positions in Black The dotted lines show the displacements according to Hieperts identifications.

Too

WEAK Johnston. Edinburgh. YA NINTH EDITIDN

SE a NOIIG] HININ WOINNWLING WIG¥d019AING

nowSuryse A, m0. sey apnrrSuoy

———

**

7" >+-------sTemEg Tn SPROTTBY Osanoy Kpan0 5 oz or 9

ser Fo arog

\ at 6 a oud i oo a2" Mol SHivOMm sScoola

Bei ©, K RA apc0os,

BERT ay ee a ranict .

NG re Ol

1

% SS Tayooy i:

#] a as SS

peer) uLoay ZL

1say, ap ay suy

WIA EAVIS ~~. | D =e es Wiiacwt. ae AX “TOA

r

NOVLIG9 HININ “VOINNVLINE VIG¥dOIIAING

HOWUIYSe\ WoIy pSV SpuyIsU0]

sown /

“ONV7 S,NYW ond

aNnvisi ” GUVAINIASVYHLUYW_~ IT,

oF STP UR?

|AONONOW 4 % AAO J

5 e –

fatten ht Minox 2 poyrdoy

MVE Fe s2qasnyovs svi e ”

eb

otter THOTT 7894 ident : . = : zs ! | } SLLESQHOVSSVW =|

ad ¢-

———T eS Tebia st eee

speeencasioasanecets seshanaeese teerttetees® fs =F Pet Mena eetttar eto

wen om om SS

sciae einsate arte

hehe ee ee Omer eee Sree Tai

Vol 16 (MEN-MOS)

Britannica 9th

se: = 3 ssoty i we . sxeae jpop timate eh ASF

=

-

See : + > seas =S ris: =e: 3 Sist eeSsasemenrste se: LE oe. > =3; Ctroo + ps ene-s pero peririsrr ttt

= 5253

oratens; : Fac

=

ciasates > retetsce!)— SS steteses: “ SS aiarsseseeasis : Soe

- -*:

Renee oes *. oie Seif 2 isch ——. =

.

SaietaPatersen tress: rae; –

sere

So SS

eather tat oe ees soartevetececsrtezs

SS =e

Hee +5.

Sezte-scaceze-e

Se 2

=

ae

a Bit tt

ss =

a

——-: a — = – = S

SES

|

niattat ae iH a ae aa it st ae a ae ee He Hea ERA a . – . Cee aE Si Ke a oo | L . a . | : i a a ah i seu Hint ; f : i a. Coun i E a Hi oe i sie i Wan a : A ae a 3 . _ i . ‘

/ .

a a Aa ee a a) es i ey RS San a By Wh i : i aah a i CaS A i i aS

:

i

eS en a eee ek

oo

promeecre nese nn peer ans

.

‘ | |

Sritstieatent ae i i a i : ie ea ett – } BiH Ai Ants i i te rite | | _ / a | . ” | a co oo a a inact ii Hi a is i : i i: : Hi i Hi init iH i et i . i : . e i . . a

a 1

! {He it b 4 miei a th . . – a ti aa iareatta i HATA afitstant a i ; : iP ao ara : | ue : ce Hitt

ili a i a Tit He nai | L Aes –

. .

a

See BEES oo

wt itt at

i ‘) Hii Hath

tt Hatt

i} f i

|

th Ki i uit Hh ay a

a a a

So

“2 8

SHEESICNISS SS es i tee eee poe aera SoS

i wt _ _ | i i | a ‘ Hi it ite tet ne 7 tit . – . _ ty ik if ite PSN RG GAT a stat

_ . .

i Le o i i i : ; vit : i uy a a a

a ae Me

|

Ge i . | a : | . a | ae

| .

a i i a Heat

au ee

aOR a

ae it Retstet tt

oo

ae ut Rett ae Hie RRC GR

National Library of Scotland

AOU UOMO 00 M0

il **B000578758**

ER 17

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

; ~ .

THE

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

A

DICTIONARY

OF

ARTS, SCLENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XVI

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXIII

[All Rights reserved.]

a

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA.

MEN—MEN

ENA, JUAN bk, one of the Italianizing Spanish poets

of the 15th century, was born at Cordova about

1411. We are informed by Romero, to whom we are indebted for almost all we know about his life, that he had attained the age of twenty-three before he began to give hinself to “the sweet labour of good learning,” pursuing a regular course of study at Salamanca and afterwards at Rome. It was at the latter city that he first became acquainted with the writings of Dante and Petrarch, which afterwards so powerfully influenced his own style. Having returned to Spain, he became a “ veinticuatro,” or magis- trate, of his native town, and was received as a poet with great favour at the court of John II., being made Latin secre- tary to the king and historiographer of Castile. He died suddenly, in consequence of a fall from his mule, in 1456, at Torrelaguna, where the marquis of Santillana, his friend and patron, erected

his monument and wrote his epitaph. De Mena's principal work, El Laberinto (" The Labyrinth "), sometimes called Las J'rescientas ("The Three Hundred ") from the original number of its stanzas, is a didactic allegory on the duties and destinics of man, obviously con- structed on the lines of the Divina Commedia of Dante. The poet, while wandcring in a wood and exposed to the attacks of various beasts of prey, is met by Providence in the guise of a beautiful woman, who offers to guide him safely through the dangers which surround him, and at the same time to explain—'"'as far as they may be grasped by human understanding "—-the dark mysteries of life that weigh upon his spirit. He is then led to the spherical centre of the five zones, where he sees the three wheels of destiny, the past, the future, and the present, and the men belonging to each, arranged in the seven circles of planetary influence. Opportunity is thus afforded for a vast quan- tity of mythological and historical portraiture ; the best sketches are those of the poet's own contemporaries, but the work in general is much disfigured with all sorts of pedantry, and hardly ever attains to mediocrity as a poem. The Laberinto was first printed at Seville in 1496; Nunez and Sanchez accompanied it with commentaries in 1499 and 1582 respectively ; and it is still regarded with a good deal of reverence by the Spaniards as the "magnum opus " of their "Ennius." De Mena was the author of a number of minor poems or "vers de société," written merely for

court circles, and having neither general interest nor per- manent value; most of them are to be found in the Cancionero General. He also wrote a pocm entitled La Coronacion, the subject being the "crowning" of the marquis of Santillana by the Muses and the Virtues on Mount Parnassus. Finally, his Stete Pecados Mortales ("Seven Deadly Sins") is a dull allegory on the antagonism between reason and the will of man. Complete editions of the poems of De Mena appeared in 1528, 1804, and

1840.

MENAGE, Grttes (1613-1692), described by Bayle as "one of the most learned men of his timc, and the Varro of the 17th century," was the son of Guillaume Ménage, king's advocate at Angers, and was born in that city on August 15, 1613. A tenacious memory and an early developed enthusiasm for learning carried him _ speedily through his literary and professional

studies, and we read of him practising at the bar at Angers as early as 1632. In the same ycar he pleaded several causes before the parlement of Paris, and soon aftcrwards he attended the “Grand Tours” at Poitiers, but after having been laid aside by a severe illness he abandoned the legal profession and declared his intention of entering the church. He succeeded in obtaining some sinecure benefices, and lived for some years in the household of Cardinal De Retz (then only coadjutor to the archbishop of Paris), where he had ample leisure for his favourite literary pursuits. Soe time after 1648 he withdrew to a house of his own in the cloister of Notre Dame, where his remarkable conversational powers enabled him to gather round him on Wednesday evenings those much frequented literary assemblies which he called ‘“Mercuriales.” His learning procured for him admission to the Della Cruscan Academy of Florence, but his irrepressible tendency to caustic sarcasm led to his remorseless exclusion from the French Academy. He died at Paris on July 23, 1692. Of the voluminous works of Ménage (fully enumerated in the Dictionnaire of Chauffepié) the following may be mentioned :—Origunes de la Langue Francoise (1650 ; greatly enlarged in 1694) ; Diogenes Laertius Greece et Latine, cum Commentario (1663 and again much improved in 1692); Poemata Latina, Gallica, Greca, et Italica (1656 ; 8th ed., 1687); Origine della Lingua Italiana (1669); and Anti-Baillet (1690).

After his death a volume of Menagiana was publislied ; it was afterwards expanded into two, and, with great addi- tions, into four in the Paris edition of 1715.

MENANDER, the most famous Greek poet of the New Comedy, which prevailed from about the death of Alexander the Great (323 B.c.) to 250, He was born at Athens in 342, and died, it was said, by drowning in the harbour of that city (Pireus) in 291. His social tastes induced him to write plays rather for the upper classes, and to raise comedy to a gentility which it had hardly possessed in the hands of the preceding comic poets. He was the associate, if not the pupil, of Theophrastus, who himself had been a disciple of Plato and Aristotle, and he was the intimate friend and admirer of

Epicurus ; but he algo enjoyed the more distinguished patronage of Demetrius Phalereus (who was likewise a pupil of Theophrastus), and of Ptolemy the son of Lagus.1_ His principal rival in the art was Philemon, who appears to have been more popular with the multitude, and for that reason probably more successful. Tt is said that out of a hundred comedies Menander gained the prize with but eight. All the extant plays of Terence, with the exception of the Phormio, are avowedly taken from Menander; but some of them appear to have been adaptations and combinations of more than one plot, although Terence himself says in the prologue to the Adelphi (11) that he copied the Greek model closely, “verbum de verbo expressum extulit.” Julius Cesar called Terence dimidiatus Menander, as if two halves of different plays had been fitted into one.?

The Attic New Comedy, says Dr Wagner,? “may be designated as essentially doniestic,” t.¢., as opposed to that free discussion of the politics of the day which gave to the Old Comedy the place which is held by the “leading articles” of a modern newspaper. ‘The stock characters were such as the stern or weak father, the son whose follies are seconded by a slave or a hungry parasite, the pettifogger, active in stirring up law suits, and the gascon- ading soldier of fortune.” These and cognate subjects, which formed the stock-in-trade of Menander’s plays, are summed up in two well-known lines of Ovid—

‘‘Dum fallax servus, durus pater, improba lena Vivet, dum meretrix blanda, Menandros erit.” Tt isa good remark of Dr Wagner’s ® that the last-mentioned of these, the meretrix blanda (which probably refers especially to the Thais), “holds the most important and conspicuous part in the New Attic Comedy, while married ladies are continually represented as the plague and bore of their husbands’ lives.” Intrigues with these, generally through the medium of a clever confidential slave, are for the most part the very point or pivot on which the plot turns,

The nore literary Romans greatly admired Menander as a poet. Pliny (WY. H., xxx. 1, § 7) speaks of him as “Menander litterarum subtilitati sine smulo genitus.” Propertius, contemplating a visit to Athens,® anticipates the pleasure of reading Menander in his native city—

‘* Persequar aut studium lingue, Dcmosthenis arma, Libaboque tuos, scite Menandre, sales.”

1 In allusion to this Pliny writes (VV. Z/., vii. 80, § 111), ‘‘ Magnum et Menandro in comico socco testimonium regum Algypti et Mace- doniz contigit classe et per legatos petito; majus ex ipso, regia fortune prelata litteraram conscientia.” This seems to say that Menander had been invited to the courts of Alexander and Ptolemy, as Euripides had been to that of Archelaus, king of Macedonia, but had preferred to write comedies for the Attic stage.

2Thus the Andria, Heautontimorumenos, and Hecyra are described severally in the ¢ctulc prefixed as Greeca or tota Greca Menandru. The Lunuch and Timorumenos are each based on two plays of Menander, and the Adelphi was compiled partly from Menander and partly from Diphilus.

3 Introduction to Terence, p. 6 (Bell, 1869).

4 Professor Jebb, Primer of Greek Literature, p. 101.

DG Giiaes Th Te Y 8thon iis PL Bie

He elsewhere speaks of him as “mundus Menander,” neat, terse, and urbane; and his skill in depicting the character of a fascinating Thais is alluded to here and in i. 6, 3 :— ‘‘Turba Menandree fuerat nec Thaidos olim Tanta, in qua populus lusit Erichthonius,”’

Of this comedy, the Thats, Professor Mahaffy remarks” that perhaps it was the most brilliant of Menander’s plays, “the manners and characters of the personage being painted with thorough experience as well as genius.” Nevertheless, only five verses of this play have been preserved to us, one of which is that quoted by St Paul (1 Cor. xv. 33), “ Evil communications corrupt good manners.” The same critic, in praising Menander’s style as the purest model of the New Attic, observes that a remarkable fcature of the New Comedy was “its uttcr avoidance of rhetoric” (p. 489). The influence which this art had on Euripides is well known. Sophocles was not wholly exempt from a kind of rhetorical pedantry, and the speechcs in Thucydides are so many exercises of the author in that art. But, as rhetoric pertained

essentially to public life, it was likely to have a much less scope in scenes borrowed almost solely from social and domestic experiences.

Menander, however, did not neglect the other branch of a liberal Attic education,—philosophy.

On the whole, our estimate of the spirit and object of Menandcr must be formed rather from his imitator and copyist Terence than from the fragments which remain, about 2400 verses in all, as col- lected by Meineke in his Fragmenta Comicorum Grecorum. For, as Professor Mahaffy well observes,!? the extracts made by Atheneus, our principal authority, have reference chiefly to ‘‘ the archeology of cooks and cookery,” while Stobaus was a collector of yva@mat or wise maxims,—‘‘a most unfortunate and worthless kind of citation.” It follows that no sound conclusions as to dramatic genius, or of the knowledge of human nature, can be drawn from detached verses preserved without the least reference to these par- ticular points. The extraordinary popularity of Menandcr must have been due to literary merit, if not to great originality. Mr Mahaffy observes on this! that ‘‘ there is so much of a calm gentle- manly morality about his fragments, he is so excellent a teacher of the ordinary world-wisdom—resignation, good temper, modera- tion, friendliness—that we can well understand this popularity. Copies of his plays continued long in existence, and were certainly known to Suidas and Eustathius as late as the 11th and 12th cen- turies, if they did not survive to a yet later period.”

In respect of language, Menander occupies the same position in poetry which his contemporary Demosthenes does in prose. In both the New Attie is elaborated with great finish, and with much greatcr grammatical precision than we find in writers of the Old Attic, such as Sophocles and Thucydides. A considerable addition to the vocabulary of every-day life had now been made, as was indeed inevitable from the versatile character of the language and the genius of the people who used it. Many new verb-forms, especially the perfect active,!? now occur, and indeed form a characteristic innovation of the style of Plato. The earlier prose was in its general vocabulary to a considerable extcnt poctical, and such a concurrence of short syllables as in the Platonic dmodedoximaxdres

7 Iist. Class. Gr. Lit., i. p. 488.

8 Pliny calls Menander ‘‘ diligentissimus luxurie interpres,” V. JL, KOK oe

9 Hist. Class. Gr. Lit., i. p. 480. 10 Jhid., p. 480.

Beith, WW. Ele 12 Toid., p. 490.

13 A curious example is dmertaykac:, the transitive perfect of aroxrelvery. Similarly we have the nnusual forms xéxpyxa (frag. 559), ewépnna (727), cvyrexuna (810).

(a. rodoximd er) is ill-suited even to choral metre. The Old Comedy was worked by men of real genius, who ‘ were indeed giants, while the men of Menander’s day only showed how strong and thorough was the culture which in art and literature outlived the decadence of the nation.”?

In all, we have, as collected by Meineke, 1045 fragments of Menander, of which 515 can be referred to known plays, the titles of those quoted from amounting to niuety, and including the Terentian Andria, Adelphi, Hunuchus, Heautontimorwumenos. These fragments contain about 1650 verses or parts of verses, not including a considerable number of words quoted expressly as from Menander by the old lexieographers. Besides all these there are not fewer than 758 monostich verses separately preserved in MSS., though some of these are met with in the other and longer frag- ments. Many of the fragments are obscure, some corrupt ; and they have been a fertile field for critical acumen from the time of Bentley. Not unfrequently we come upon the shrewd or original remark of an observer. Thus (frag. 7) ‘‘A poor man has no relations, for no one acknowledges him, lest he should beg.” Frag. 145, ‘ Every- thing that takes place is brought about by law, necessity, or fashion.” 237, ‘‘The gods do not save men through any human means (prayer or sacrifices); if they did, the human would have more power than the divine.” 275, ‘‘ Poverty is the most easily cured of all evils; any friend can do it by merely putting his hand in his pocket.” 397, ‘‘A poor man who lives ina large town makes himself more wretched than he need ; for he cannot help comparing with his own the luxurious lives of the rich.” 485, “No man realizes the extent of a sin when he commits it; it is afterwards that he sees it.” 460, ‘‘A man is convinced

not so much by what is said as by the manner of saying it.” 474, ‘There is one thing only that hides vulgarity, villainy, and every other fault, —wealth. Everything but that is carped at and criticized.” 517, ‘‘ People who have no merit of their own gencrally boast of their birth and their ancestors. But every living man has ancestors, or he would not bea living man.” 578, ‘‘ Wealth acts on a nan as wind docs on a ship, —it often forces him out of his proper course.” 663, “ Many a young lady says a great deal in her own favour by saying nothing at all.” 688, ‘A man who abuses his own father is practising blasphemy against the gods.” In fact, Menander is echaracteristically a sententious writer, like Euripides, with whom in the general style of his writings, though not, of course, in his somewhat loose and irregular versification, he is sometimes compared. (F. A. P.)

MENCIUS, the Latinized form of Mang-tsze, “Mr Ming,” or “‘ Ming the philosopher,” a name in China only second as a moral teacher to that of Confucius. His statue or spirit-tablet (as the case may be) has occupied, in the temples of the sage, since our 11th century, a place among “the four assessors”; and since 1530 a.p. his title has been “the philosopher Ming, sage of the second degree.”

The Mangs or M&ng-suns had been in the time of Con- fucius one of the three great clans of La (all descended from the marquis Hwan, 711-694 B.c.), which he had en- deavoured to curb, Their power had subsequently been broken, and the branch to which Mencius belonged had settled in Tsiu, a small adjacent principality, the name of which still remains in Tsu hsien, a district of Yenchau Shan-tung. A magnificent temple to Mencius is the chief attraction of the district city. The present writer visited it in 1873, and was struck by a large marble statue of him in the courtyard in front. It shows much artistic skill, and gives the impression of a man strong in body and mind, thoughtful and fearless. His lineal representative lives in the city, and thousands of Mangs are to be found in the neighbourhood.

The dates of some of the principal events in Mencius’s life are fixed by a combination of evidence, and his death is referred by common consent to the year 289 B.c. He had lived to a great age,—some say to his eighty-fourth year, placing his birth in 372 B.c., and others to his ninety- seventh, placing it in 385, All that we are told of his father is that he died in the third

year of the child, who was thus left to the care of his mother. She was a lady of superior character, and well discharged her trust. Her virtues and dealings with her son were celebrated by a great writer in the first century before our era, and for two thousand years she has been the model mother of China.

1 Mahaffy, Ibid., p. 490.

We have no accounts of Mencius for many years after his boyhood, and he is more than forty years old when he comes before us as a public character. He must have spent much time in study, investigating the questions which were rife as to the fundamental principles of morals and society, and brooding over the condition of the country. The his- tory, the poetry, the institutions, and the great men of the past had received his careful attention. He intimates that he had been in communication with men who had been disciples of Confucius. That sage had become to him the chief of mortal men, the object of his untiring admiration ; and in the doctrines which he had taught Mencius recog- nized the truth for want of an appreciation of which the bonds of order all round him were being relaxed, and the kingdom hastening to a general anarcliy.

When he first comes forth from Tsfu, he is accompanied by several eminent disciples. He had probably imitated Confucius in becoming the master of a school, and en- couraging the resort to it of inquiring minds that he might resolve their doubts and unfold to them the right methods of government. One of his sayings is that it would be a greater delight to the superior man to get the youth of brightest promise around him and to teach and train them than to enjoy the revenues of the kingdom. His intercourse with his followers was not so intimate as that of Confucius had been with the members of his selected circle ; and, while he maintained his dignity among them, he was not able to secure from them the same homage and reverent admiration.

More than a century had elapsed since the death of Confucius, and during that period the feudal kingdom of Chiu had been showing more and more of the signs of dissolution, and portentous errors that threatened to upset all social order were widely disseminated. The sentiment of loyalty to the dynasty had disappeared. Several of the marquises and other feudal princes of earlier times had usurped the title of king. The smaller fiefs had been

absorbed by the larger ones, or reduced to a state of helpless dependence on them. Tin, after greatly extend- ing its territory, had broken up into three powerful king- doms, each about as large as England. Mencius found the nation nominally one, and with the traditions of two thousand years affirming its essential unity, but actually divided into seven monarchies, each seeking to subdue the others under itself. The consequences were constant war- fare and chronic misery.

In Confucius's time we meet with recluses who had withdrawn in disgust from the world and its turmoil; but these had now given place to a class of men who came forth from their retirements provided with arts of war or schemes of policy which they recommended to the contend- ing chiefs, ever ready to change their allegiance as they were moved by whim or interest. Mencius was once asked about two of them, "Are they not really great men? Let them be angry, and all the princes are afraid. Let them live quietly, and the flames of trouble are everywhere ex- tinguished." He looked on them as little men, and delighted to proclaim his idea of the great man in such language as the following :—

"To dwell in love, the wide house of the world, to stand in propriety, the correct seat of the world, and to walk invighteousness, the great path of the world ; when he obtains his desire for office, to praetise his principles for the good of the people, and when that desire is disappointed, to practise them alone; to be above the power of riches and honours to make dissipated, of poverty and mean condition to make swerve from the right, and of power and force to make bend,—these characteristics constitute the great man.

Most vivid are the pictures which Mencius gives of the condition of the people in consequence of the wars of the states. 'The royal ordinances were violated; the multi-

tudes were oppressed; the supplies of food and drink |

flowed away like water." It is not wonderful that, when the foundations of government were thus overthrown, speculations should have arisen that

threatened to over- throw what he considered to be the foundations of truth and all social order. ‘A shrill-tongued barbarian from the south,” as Mencius called him, proclaimed the dissolu- tion of ranks, and advocated a return to the primitive simplicity, ‘‘When Adam delved and Eve span.”

He and his followers maintained that learning was quackery, and statesmanship craft and oppression, that prince and peasant should be on the same level, and every man do everything for himself. Another, called Yang-cha, denied the difference between virtue and vice, glory and shame. The tyrants of the past, he said, were now but so many rotten bones, and the heroes and sages were no more. It was the same with all at death ; after that there was but so much putridity and rottenness. The conclusion of the whole matter therefore was—‘ Let us eat and drink ; let us gratify the ears and eyes, get servants and maidens, beauty, music, wine ; when the day is insufficient, carry it on through the night. Each one for himself.” Against a third heresiarch, of a very different stamp, Mencius felt no less indignation. This was Mo Ti, who found the source of all the evils of the time and of all time in the want of mutual love. He taught, therefore, that men should love others as themselves; princes, the states of other princes as much as their own; children, the parents of others as much as their own. Mo, in his gropings, had got hold of a noble principle, but he did not apprehend it distinctly nor set it forth with discrimination. To our philosopher the doctrine appeared contrary to the Confucian orthodoxy about the five relations of society ; and he attacked it without mercy and with an equal confusion of thought. ‘‘Yang’s principle,” he said, ‘“is ‘each one for himself,’ which does not acknowledge the claims of the sovereign. Mo’s is ‘to love all equally,’ which does not acknowledge the peculiar affection due to a father. But to acknowledge neither king nor father is to be in the state of a beast. The way of benevolence and righteousness is stopped up.”

On this seething ocean of lawlessness, wickedness, heresies, and misery Mencius looked out from the quiet of his school, and his spirit was stirred within him to attempt the rescue of the people from the misrule and error. It might be that he would prove the instrument for this pur- pose. “If Heaven,” he said, “wishes that the kingdom should enjoy tranquillity and good order, who is there besides me to bring it about?” He formed his plan, and proceeded to put it in execution. He would go about among the different

kings till he should find one among them who would follow his counsels and commit to him the entire administration of his government. That obtained, he did not doubt that in afew years there would be a kingdom so strong and so good that all rulers would acknowledge its superiority, and the people hasten from all quarters to crown its sovereign as monarch of the whole of China. This plan was much the same as that of Confucius had been ; but, with the bolder character that belonged to him, Mencius took in one respect a position from which "'the master" would have shrunk. The former was always loyal to Chau, and thought he could save the country by a reformation; the latter saw the day of Chau was past, and the time was come for a revolution. Mencius's view was the more correct, but he was not wiser than the sage in forecasting for the future. They could think only of a reformed dynasty or of a changed dynasty, ruling according to the model principles of a feudal con- stitution, which they described in glowing language. They

desired a repetition of the golden age in the remote past ; but soon after Mencius disappeared from the stage of life there came the sovereign of Ch'in, and solved the question with fire and sword, introducing the despotic empire which has since prevailed.

An inquiry here occurs—" How, in the execution of his plan, was Mencius, a scholar, without wealth or station, to find admission to the courts of lawless and unprincipled kings, and acquire the influence over them which he expected?" It can only be met by our bearing in mind the position accorded from the earliest times in China to men of virtue and ability. The same written character denotes both scholars and officers. They are at the top of the social scale,—the first of the four classes into which the population has always been divided. This appreciation of learning or culture has exercised a most powerful influence over the government under both conditions of its exist- ence ; and out of it grew the system, which was organized and consolidated more than a thousand years ago, of making literary merit the passport to official employnient. The ancient doctrine was that the scholar's privilege was from Heaven as much as the sovereign's right; the modern system is a device of the despotic rule to put itself in Heaven's place, and have the making of the scholar in its own hands. The feeling and conviction out of which the system grew prevailed in the time

of Mencius. The dynasties that had successively ruled over the kingdom had owed their establishment not more to the military genius of their founders than to the wisdom and organizing ability of the learned men, the statesmen, who were their bosom friends and trusted counsellors. Why should not he become to one of the princes of his day what f Yin had been to Thang, and Thai-kung Wang to King Wan, and the duke of Chau to Wtiand Ch'ang? But, though Mencius might be the equal of any of those worthies, he knew of no prince like Thang and the others, of noble aim and soul, who would welcome and adopt his lessons. In his eager- ness he overlooked this condition of success for his enter- prise. He might meet with such a ruler as he looked for, or he might reforma bad one, and make him the coadjutor that he required. On the strength of these peradventures, and attended by several of his disciples, Mencius went for more than twenty years from one court to another, always baffled, and always-ready to try again. He was received with great respect by kings and princes. He would not enter into the service of any of them, but he occa- sionally accepted honorary offices of distinction ; and he did not scruple to receive large gifts which enabled him to live and move about as a man of wealth. In delivering his message he was as fearless and outspoken as John Knox. He lectured great men, and ridiculed them. He unfolded the ways of the old sage kings, and pointed out the path to universal sway ; but it was all in vain. He could not stir any one to honourable action. He confronted heresy with strong arguments and exposed it with withering sarcasm ; but he could work no deliverance in the earth. The last court at which we find him was that of Ld, probably in 310 B.c. The marquis of that state had given office to Yo-ching, one of Mencius's disciples, and he hoped that this might be the means of a favourable hearing for himself. So it had nearly happened. On the suggestion of Yo-ching the marquis had ordered his carriage to be

| yoked, and was about to step into it, and proceed to bring

Mencius to his palace, when an unworthy favourite stepped in and diverted him from his purpose. The disciple told his master what had occurred, reproaching the favourite for his ill-timed intervention; Mencius, however, said to him, "A man's advancement or the arresting of it may seem to be effected by others, but is really beyond their power. My not finding in the marquis of Lf a ruler who would confide

me

in me and put my lessons in practice is from Heaven.” He accepted this incident as a final intimation to him of the will of Heaven. He had striven long against adverse cir- cumstances, but now he bowed in submission. We lose sight of him. He withdrew from courts and the public arena, We have to think of him, according to tradition, passing the last twenty years of his life in the congenial society of his disciples, discoursing to them, and giving the finishing touches to the record of his conversations and opinions, which were afterwards edited by them, and con- stitute his works. Living, he may have been a failure ; dead, yet speaking in them, he has been a great power among the ever-multiplying millions of his countrymen. Nor will any thinker of the West refer to them without interest and benefit. Mencius was not so oracular, nor so self-contained, as Confucius ; but his teachings have a vivacity and sparkle of which we never weary, and which is all their own.

We will now attempt to indicate briefly the more important principles which our philosopher thought would have been effectual to regenerate his country, and make an end of misery and heresy within its borders.

And first as to his views on government, and the work to be done by rulers for their subjects. Mencius held with Confucius— aud it was a doctrine which had descended to them both from the remotest antiquity—that royal government is an institution of God. An ancient sovereign had said that “‘ Hcaven, having produced the people, appointed for them rulers, and appointed for then teachers, who should be assisting to God.” Our philosopher, adopting this doctrine, was led by the manifest incompetency of all the rulers of his time to ask how it could be known on what individual the appointment of Heaven had fallen or ought to fall, and he concluded that this could be ascertained only from his personal character and his conduct of affairs. The people must find out the will of Heaven as to who should be their ruler for themselves. There was another old saying which delighted Mencius, —“ Heaven sees as the people see; Heaven hears as the people hear.” He taught accordingly that, while government is from God, the governors are from the people ;—vow popult vox Det.

o claim then of a ‘‘divineright” should be allowed toa sovereign if he were not exercising a rule for the good of the people. “The people are the most important element in a nation ; the altars to the spirits of the land and grain are the second ; the sovereign is the lightest.” Mencius was not afraid to follow this utterance to its consequences. The monarch whose rule is injurious to the people, and who is deaf to remonstrance and counsel, should be dethroned. In such a case ‘killing is no murder.”

But who is to remove the sovereign that thus ought to be removed? Mencius had three answers to this difficult question. First, he would have the menibers of the royal house perform the task. Let them disown their unworthy head, and appoint some better in- dividual of their number in his room. If they could not or would not do this, he thought, secondly, that any high minister, though not allied to the royal house, might take summary measures with the sovereign, assuming that he acted purely with a view to the public weal. His third and grand device was what he called ‘‘ the minister of Heaven.” When the sovereign had become a pest instead of a blessing, he believed that Heaven would raise up some one for the help of the people, some one who should so conduct himself in his original subordinate position as to draw all eyes and hearts to himself. Let him then raise the standard not of rebel- lion but of righteousness, and he could not help attaining to the highest dignity. Mencius hoped to find one among the rulers of his day who might be made into such a minister, and ho counselled one and another to adopt measures with that object. It was in fact counselling rebellion, but he held that the house of Chau had forfeited its title to the throne.

What now were the attributes which Mencius cousidered necessary to constitute a good government according to his ideal of it ? It must be animated by a spirit of benevolence, and ever pursue a policy of righteousness. Its aims must be, first, to make the people well off, and next, to educate them. No one was fit to occupy the throne who could be happy while any of the people were iniserable, who delighted in war, who could indulge in palaces and parks which the poorest did not in a measure share with him, Game laws received his emphatic condemnation. Taxes should be light, and all the regulations for agriculture and cominerce of a character to promote and encourage them. The rules which he suggested to secure those

objects had reference to the existing condition of his country, but they are susceptible of wide application. They carry in them schemes of drainage and irrigation for laud, and of free trade for commerce. But it must be, he contended, that a sufficient

and certain livelihood be secured for all the people. Without this their minds would be unsettled, and they would proeeed to every form of wild licence. ‘They would break the laws, and the ruler would punish them,—punish those whom his neglect of his own duties had plunged into poverty, of which crime was the consequence. He would be, not their ruler, but their “trapper.”

Supposing the people to be made well off, Mencius taught that education should be provided for them all. He gave the marquis of Thang a programme of four kinds of educational institutions, which he wished him to establish in his state—in the villages and the towns, for the poor as well as the rich, so that none might be ignorant of their duties in the various relations of society. But after all, unless the people could get food and clothing by their labour, he had not much faith in the power of education to make them virtuous. Give him, however, a government fulfilling the conditions that he laid down, and he was confident there would soon be a people, all contented, all virtuous. And he saw nothing to prevent the realization of such a government. Any ruler might become, if he would, ‘the minister of Heaven,” who was his ideal, and the influence of his example and administration would be all- powerful. The people would flock to him as their parent, and help him to do justice on the foes of truth and happiness. Pulse and grain would be abundant as water and fire, and the multitudes, well clothed, and well principled, would sit under the shade of their mulberry trees, and hail the ruler ‘‘king by the grace of Heaven.”

Secondly, as to Mencius’s views about human nature. His con- viction of the goodness of that encouraged him to hope for such grand results from good governmeut, and his discussion of this subject gives his priucipal title to a place among philosophical thinkers.

Opinions were much divided about it among his contemporaries. Some held that the nature of man is neither good nor bad ; he may be made to do good and also to do evil. Others held that the nature of some men is good, and

that of others bad ; thus it is that the best of men sometimes have bad sons, and the worst of men good sons. It was also maintained that the nature of man is evil, and whatever good appears in it is the result of cultivation. In opposition to all these views Mencius contended that the nature of man is good. ‘‘ Water,” he said, ‘will flow indifferently to the east or west; but will it flow indifferently up or down? The tendency of man’s nature to goodness is like the tendency of water to flow downwards. By striking water you may make it leap over your forehead ; and by damming and leading it you may make it goupa hill. But such movements are not according to the nature of water; it is the force applied which causes them. When men do what is not good, their nature has been dealt with in this way.”

aticinte had no stronger langnage than this, —as indeed it would be difficult to find any stronger, —to declare his belief of the goodness of human nature. With various, but equally felicitous, illustration he replied to his different opponents. Sometimes he may seen to express himself too strongly, but an attentive study of his writings shows that he is speaking of our nature in its ideal, and not as it actually is, as we may ascertain, by an analysis of it, that it was intended to be, and not as it has been made to become. In fact, his doctrine of human nature is hardly to be distinguished from that of Bishop Butler, while the Christian prelate is left far behind so far as charm of style is concerned.

Our author insists on the constituents of human nature, dwelling especially on the principles of benevolence, righteousness, propricty, and wisdom or knowledge, the last including the judgment of conscience. “These,” said he, ‘“‘are not infused into us from without, Men have these four principles just as they have their four limbs.” But man has also instincts and appetites which seek their own gratification without reference to righteousness or any other control. He met this difficulty by contending that human nature is a constitution, in whieh the higher principles are designed to rule the lower. ‘Some constituents of it are noble and sone ignoble, some great and some small. The great must not be injured for the small, nor the noble for the ignoble.”

One of his most vigorous vindications of his doctrine is the following :—-‘‘ For the mouth to desire flavours, the eye colours, the ear sounds, and the

four limbs ease and rest belong to man's nature. An individual's lot may restrict him from the gratification of them; and in snch a case the superior man will not say, 'My nature demands that pleasure, and I will get it.' On the other hand, there are love between father and son, righteousness between ruler and minister, the rules of ceremony between host and guest, and knowledge seen in recognizing the able aud virtuous, and in the sage's fulfilling the heavenly eonrse ;—these are appointed (by Heaven). But they also belong to our nature, and the superior mau will not say, 'The circumstances of my lot relieve me from them.'" In his preliminary dissertation to the 7th edition of this encyclopedia, Sir James Mackintosh has said that in his sermons' on human nature Butler "taught truths more worthy of the name of discovery than any in the same department of inquiry with

which we are acquainted ; if we ought not to exccpt the first steps of the Grecian philosophers towards a theory of morals." Mencius was senior to Zeno, the onc of those philosophers to whom Butler has most affinity, and it does not appear that he had left anything for either of them to discover.

When he proceeded from his ideal of human nature to account for the phenomena of conduct so different from what they ought to be aceording to that ideal, he was necessarily less successful. They puzzled him and they made him indignantand angry. " There is nothing good," he said, "that a man caunot do; he only does not do it." But why does he not doit? Against the stubborn fact Mencius beats his wings and shatters his weapons,—all in vain. He mentions a few ancient worthies who, he coneeived, had always been, or who had become, perfectly virtuous. Above them all he extols Confucins, taking no notice of that sage's confession that he had not attained to conformity to his own rule of doing to others as he would have them do to him. No such acknowledgment about himself ever came from Mencius. Therein he was inferior to his predecessor: he had a subtler faculty of thought, and a mueh more vivid imagination; but he did not know himself nor his special subject of human nature so well.

Our Hmits will not allow us to go into a detail of his views on other special subjects. A few passages illustrative of his style and general teachings will

complete all that can be said of him here. His thoughts, indeed, were seldom condensed like those of ‘‘ the master” into aphorisms, and should be read in their connexion ; but we have from him many words of wisdom that have been as goads to millions for more than two thousand years. For in-stanee :— :

‘‘Though a man may be wicked, yct, if he adjust his thoughts, fast, and bathe, he may sacrifice to God.”

‘‘When Heaven is about to confer a great office on any man, it first exercises his mind with suffering, and his sinews and bones with toil. It exposes his body to hunger, subjects him to extreme poverty, and confounds his undertakings. In all these ways it stimulates his mind, strengthens his nature, and supplies his in- competencics.”’

‘“The great man is he who does not lose his child-heart.”

‘*The sense of shame is to a man of great importanee. When one is ashamed of having been without shame, he will afterwards not have occasion for shame,” :

‘‘To nourish the heart there is nothing better than to keep the desires few. Here isa man whose desires are few; in some things he may not be able to keep his heart, but they will be few. Here is a man whose desires are many; in some things he may be able to keep his heart, but they will be few.”

‘Benevolence is the distinguishing characteristic of man. embodied in his conduct, it may be ealled the path of duty.”

‘* There is an ordination for everything ; and a man should receive submissively what may be correetly ascribed thereto. He who has the correet idea of what Heaven’s ordination is will not stand beneath a tottering wall. Death sustained in the discharge of one’s duties may be eorrectly ascribed to Heaven. Death under handcuffs and fetters eannot be correctly so ascribed.”

‘‘When one by force subdues men, they do not submit to him in heart. When he subdues them by virtue, in their hearts’ core they are pleased, and

sincerely submit.”’

Two translations of the works of Mencius are within the reach of European readers :—that by the late Stanislaus Julien, in Latin, Paris, 1824-29; and that forming the second volume of Legge’s Chinese Classics, Hong Kong, 1862. The latter has been published at London (1875) without the Chinese text. See also E. Faber, The Mind of Mencius, or Political Economy founded on Moral Philosophy, translated from the German by A. B, Hutchinson (London, 1882). (J. LE.)

MENDELSSOHN, Ferrx (1809-1847). Jakob Ludwig Felix Mendelssohn-Bartholdy, one of the greatest com- posers of this century, was the grandson of Moses Men- delssohn noticed below, and was born in Hamburg on February 3, 1809.

In consequence of the troubles caused by the French occupation of Hamburg, Abraham Mendelssohn, his father, migrated in 1811 to Berlin, where his grandmother, Fromet, then in the twenty-fifth year of her widowhood, received the whole family into her house, No. 7 Neue Promenade. Here the little Felix and his sister Fanny received their first instruction in music from their mother, under whose care they progressed so rapidly that the altogether exceptional character of their talent soon became unmistakably apparent. Their next teacher was Madame Bigot, who, during the temporary residence of the family in Paris in 1816, gave them some valuable instruc- tion, On their return to Berlin they took lessons in thoroughbass and composition from Zelter, in pianoforte- playing from Ludwig Berger, and in violin-playing from

As

Tenning,—the care of their general education being en- trusted to the father of the novelist Paul Heyse.

Felix first played in public on the 24th of October 1818, taking the pianoforte part in a trio by Woelfl. On April 11, 1819, he entered the Berlin Singakademie as an alto, and in the following year began to compose with extraordinary rapidity. His earliest dated work isa cantata, In rithrend fecerlichen Ténen, completed on January 13, 1820. During that year alone

he produced nearly sixty movements, including songs, pianoforte sonatas, a trio for pianoforte, violin, and violoncello, a sonata for violin and pianoforte, pieces for the organ, and even a little dramatic piece in three scenes. In 1821 he wrote five symphonies for stringed instruments, each in three move- ments; motetts for four voices; an opera, in one act, called Soldatenliebschaft ; another, called Die beiden. Piida- gogen ; part of a third, called Die wandernde Comédianten ; and an immense quantity of other niusic of different kinds, some of which, thought worthy of publication by the editors of his posthumous works, now stands before the world in evidence of the precocity of his genius. The original autograph copies of these early productions are now preserved in the Berlin Library, where they form part of a collection which fills forty-four large volumes, all written with infinite neatness, and for the most part carefully dated—a sufficient proof that the methodical habits which distinguished his later life were formed in early childhood. .

In 1821 Mendelssohn paid his first visit to Goethe, with whom he spent sixteen days at Weimar, in company with Zelter. From this year also dates his first acquaintance with Weber, who was then in Berlin superintending the production of Der Lreischtitz; and from the summer of 1822 his introduction, at Cassel, to another of the greatest of his contemporaries, Ludwig Spohr. During this year his pen was even more prolific than before, producing, among other works, an opera, in three acts, entitled Die beiden Neffen, oder Der Onkel aus Boston, and a pianoforte concerto, which he played in public at a concert given by Frau Anna Milder.

It had long been a custom with the Mendelssohn family to give musical performances on alternate Sunday mornings in their dining-room, with a small orchestra, which Felix always conducted, even when he was not tall enough to be seen without standing upon a stool. For each of these occasions he produced some new work,—playing the piano- forte pieces himself, or entrusting them to Fanny, while his sister Rebecka sang, and his brother Paul played the violoncello. In this way Dive leiden Neffen was first privately performed, on the fifteenth anniversary of his birthday, February 3, 1824. Between the 3d and the 31st of March, in this year, he composed his fine symphony in C minor, now known as Op. 10, and soon afterwards the quartett in B minor, Op. 3, and the (posthumous) piano- forte

sestett, Op. 110. In this year also began his lifelong friendship with Moscheles, wlio, when asked to receive him as a pupil, said, “If he wishes to take a hint from me, as to anything new to him, he can easily do so; but he stands in no need of lessons.”

In 1825 Abraham Mendelssohn took Felix to Paris, where among other musicians then resident in the French capital he met the two most popular dramatic composers of the age, Rossini and Meyerbeer, and lived on terms of intimacy with Hummel, Kalkbrenner, Rode, Baillot, Herz, and many other artists of European celebrity. On this occasion, also, he made his first acquaintance with Cherubini, who, though he rarely praised any one, expressed a very high opinion of his talent, and recommended him to write a Kyrie, for five voices, with full orchestral accompaniments, which he himself described as “ exceeding

in thickness” anything he had attempted. From letters written at this period we learn that Felix’s estimate of the French school of music was very far from a flattering one; but he formed some friendships in Paris, which were pleasantly renewed on later occasions. He returned to Berlin with his father in May 1825, taking leave of his Parisian friends on the 19th of the month, and interrupting his journey at Weimar for the purpose of paying a second visit to Goethe, to whom he dedicated his quartett in B minor. On reaching home he must have fallen to work with greater zeal than ever; for on the 23d of July in this same year he completed his pianoforte capriccio in F sharp minor (Op. 5), and on the 10th of August an opera, in two acts, called Die Hochzeit des Camacho, a work of considerable importance, concerning which we shall presently have to speak more particularly. No ordinary boy could have escaped uninjured from the snares attendant upon such a life as that which Mendelssohn now lived. Notwithstanding his overwhelm- ing passion for music, his general education had been so well cared for that he was able to hold his own, in the society of his seniors, with the easy grace of an accomplished man of the world. He was already recognized as a lead- ing spirit by the artists with whom he associated, and these artists were men of acknowledged talent and position. The temptations to egoism by which he was surrounded would have rendered most clever students intolerable.

But the natural amiability of his disposition, and the healthy influence of his happy home-life, counteracted all tendencies towards inordinate self-assertion ; and he is described by all who knew him at this period as the most charming boy imaginable. Even Zelter, though by nature no less repressive than Cherubini, was not ashamed to show that he was proud of him; and Moscheles, whose name was already famous, met him from the first on equal terms. Soon after his return from Paris, Abraham Mendelssohn removed from his mother's residence to No. 3 Leipziger Strasse, a roomy, old-fashioned house, containing an excellent music-room, and in the grounds adjoining a "'Gartenhaus" capable of accommodating several hundred persons at the Sunday performances.' In the autumn of the following year this "garden-house" witnessed a memorable private performance of the work by means of which the greatness of Mendelssohn's genius was first revealed to the outer world—the overture to Shakespeare's Midsummer Nights Dream. The finished score of this famous composition is dated "Berlin, August 6, 1826,"— that is to say, three days after its author had attained the age of seventeen years and a half. Yet we may safely assert that in no later work does he exhibit more originality of thought, more freshness of conception, or more perfect mastery over the details of technical construction, than in this delightful inspiration, which, though now nearly sixty years old, still holds its place at the head of the most brilliant achievements of our modern schools, The over- ture was first publicly performed at Stettin, in February 1827, under the direction of the young composer, who with this bright patent of artistic nobility to support his claim, was at once accepted as the leader of a new and highly characteristic manifestation of the spirit of modern progress. Henceforth therefore we must speak of him, not as a student, but as a mature and experienced artist. Meanwhile Camacho's Wedding had been submitted to Herr General-Musik-Director Spontini, with a view to its production at the opera. The libretto, founded upon an episode in the history of Don Quixote, was written by Klingemann, and Mendelssohn threw himself into the spirit

1 After Mendelssohn's death this house was sold to the Prussian Government ; and the " Herrenhaus" now stands on the site of the garden-house. ,

of the romance with a keen perception of its peculiar humour. The work was put into rehearsal soon after the composer's return from Stettin, produced on April 29, 1827, and received with great apparent enthusiasm ; but, for some reason which it is now impossible to ascertain, a cabal was formed against it, and it never reached a second performance. The critics abused it mercilessly ; yet it exhibits merits of a very high order. 'The solemn passage for the trombones, which heralds the first appearance of the knight of La Mancha, is conceived in a spirit of reverent appreciation of the idea of Cervantes, which would have done honour to a composer of lifelong experience. Even the critics suborned to condemn the work could not refrain from expressing their admiration of this; but it had been decreed that the opera should not live—and it did not.

Mendelssohn was excessively annoyed at this injustice, and some time elapsed before his mind recovered its usual bright tone; but he continued to work diligently for the cause of art. Among other serious undertakings, he formed a choir for the study of the great choral works of Sebastian Bach, then entirely unknown to the public; and, in spite of Zelter's determined opposition, he suc- ceeded, in 1829, in inducing the Berlin Singakademie to give a public performance of the Passion according to St Matthew, under his direction, with a chorus of between three and four hundred voices. The scheme succeeded beyond his warmest hopes, and proved the means of restoring to the world great compositions with which we are all now familiar, but which, at that time, had never been heard since the death of Bach. But the obstructive party were grievously offended ; and at this period Mendelssolin was far from popular among the musicians of Berlin.

In April 1829 Mendelssohn paid his first visit to London. His reception was most enthusiastic. He made his first appearance before an English audience at one of the Philharmonic Society's concerts—then held in the Argyll Rooms—on the 25th of May, conducting his symphony in © minor from the pianoforte, to which he was led by John Cramer. On the 30th he played Weber's Concertstiick, from memory, a proceeding at that time extremely unusual. Ata concert given by Drouet, on the 24th of June, he played Beethoven's pianoforte concerto in E flat, which had never before been heard in the country ; and the overture to A Midsummer Night's Dream was also, for the first time, presented to a London audience. On

-returning home from the concert, Mr Attwood, then

organist of St Paul's Cathedral, left the score of the overture in a hackney coach, whereupon Mendelssohn wrote out another, from memory, without an error. At another concert he played, with Moscheles, his still un-published concerto in E, for two pianofortes and orchestra. After the close of the London season he started with Klingemann on a tour through Scotland, where he was inspired with the first idea of his overture to The Isles of Fingal, returning to Berlin at the end of November. Except for an accident to his knee, which lamed him for some considerable time, his visit was a highly successful one, and laid the foundation of many firm friendships and many prosperous negotiations in the time to come.

The visit to England formed in reality the first division only of a great scheme of travel which his father wished him to extend to all the most important art centres in Europe. After refusing the offer of a professorship at Berlin, he started again, in May 1830, for Italy, pausing on his way at Weimar, where he spent a memorable fort- night with Goethe, and reaching Rome, after many pleasant interruptions, on November 1. No possible form of excitement ever prevented him from devoting a certain time every day to composition ; but he lost no opportunity

of studying either the countless treasures which form the chief glory of the great city or the manners and customs of modern Romans. He attended, with insatiable curiosity, the services in the Sistine Chapel; and his keen power of observation enabled him to throw much interesting light upon them. His letters on this subject, however, lose much of their value through his incapacity to comprehend the close relation existing between the music of Palestrina and his contemporaries and the ritual of the Roman Church. His Lutheran education kept him in ignorance even of the first principles of ordinary chanting ; and it is amusing to find him describing as enormities peculiar to the papal choir customs familiar to every village singer in England, and as closely connected with the structure of the "Anglican chant" as with that of " Gregorian music." Still, though he could not agree, in all points, with Baini, the greatest ecclesiastical musician then living, he fully shared his admiration for the Jmproperta, the Miserere, and the cantus

planus of the Lamentationes and the Hxultet, the musical beauty of which he could understand, apart from their ritual significance.

In passing through Munich on his return in October 1831, he composed and played his pianoforte concerto in G minor, and accepted a commission (never fulfilled) to compose an opera for the Munich theatre. Pausing for a time at Stuttgart, Frankfort, and Diisseldorf, ‘he arrived in Paris in December, and passed four pleasant months in the renewal of acquaintances formed in 1825, and in close intercourse with Liszt and Chopin. On February 19, 1832, the overture to A Midsummer Night’s Dream was played at the conservatoire, and many of his other com- positions were brought before the public; but he did not altogether escape disappointments with regard to some of them, especially the Reformation symphony, and the visit was brought to a premature close in March by an attack of cholera, from which, however, he rapidly recovered.

On the 23d of April 1832 he was again in London, where le twice played his G minor concerto at the Philharmonic concerts, gave a performance on the organ at St Paul’s, and published his first book of Lzeder ohne Worte. He returned to Berlin in July, and during the winter he gave public performances of his Reformation symphony, his concerto in G minor, and his Walpur- gisnacht. In the following spring he paid a third visit to London for the purpose of conducting his Italian symphony, which was played for the first time, by the Philharmonic Society, on the 13th of May 1833. On the 26th of the same month he conducted the performances at the Lower Rhine festival at Diisseldorf, with such brilliant effect that he was at once invited to accept the appointment of general-music-director to the town, an office which included the management of the music in the principal churches, at the theatre, and at the rooms of two musical associations. This post he willingly accepted, and it formed a stepping-stone to a far more important one.

Before entering upon his new duties, Mendelssohn paid a fourth visit to London, with his father, returning to Diisseldorf on the 27th of September 1833. His influence produced an excellent effect upon the church music and in the concert-room ; but his relations with the management of the theatre were not altogether pleasant; and it was probably this circumstance which

first led him to forsake the cultivation of the opera for that of sacred music. At Diisseldorf he first designed his famous oratorio S¢ Pav, in response to an application from the Cacilien-Verein at Frankfort, composed his overture to Die schéne Melusine, and planned some other works of importance. He liked his appointment, and would probably have retained it much longer had he not been invited to undertake the permanent direction of the Gewandhaus concerts at Leipsic, and thus

raised to the highest position attainable in the German musical world. ‘To this new sphere of labour he removed in August 1835, opening the first concert at the Gewand- haus, on the 4th of October, with his overture Dve Meeresstille, a work possessing great attractions, though by no means on a level with the Midsummer Night’s Dream, The Isles of Fingal, or Melusine.

Mendelssohn’s reception in Leipsic was most enthusiastic ;

and under their new director the Gewandhaus concerts prospered exceedingly. Meanwhile S¢ Paul steadily pro-

gressed, and was first produced, with triumphant success, at the Lower Rhine festival at Diisseldorf, on May 22, 1836. On October 3 it was first sung in English, at Liverpool, under the direction of Sir George Smart; and on March 16, 1837, Mendelssohn again directed it at Leipsic.

The next great event in Mendelssohin’s life was his happy marriage, on March 28, 1837, to Cecile Charlotte Sophie Jeanrenaud, whose amiable disposition, surpassing beauty, and indescribable charm of manner endeared her to all who knew her. The honeymoon was scarcely over before he was again summoned to England to conduct St Paul, at the Birmingham festival, on September 20th. During this visit he played on the organ at St Paul’s and at Christ Church, Newgate Street, with an effect which exercised a lasting influence upon English organists. It was here also that he first contemplated the production of his second oratorio, Elijah.

Passing over the composition of the Lobgesang in 1840, a sixth visit to England in the same year, the scheme for the erection of a monument to Sebastian Bach, and other events on which space does not permit us to enlarge, we find Mendelssohn in 1841 recalled to Berlin by the king of

Prussia, with the title of Kapellmeister. Though this appointment resulted in the production of Antigone, Aidipus Coloneus, Athalie, the incidental music to the Jfcdswnmer Night's Dream, and other great works, it proved an endless source of vexation, and certainly helped to shorten the composer's life. In 1842 he came to England for the seventh time, accompanied by his wife, conducted his Scotch symphony at the Philharmonic, again played the organ at St Peter's, Cornhill, and Christ Church, Newgate Street, and was received with all possible honour by the queen and the prince consort. He did not, however, permit his new engagements to interfere with the direction of the Gewand- haus concerts; and in 1843 he founded in Leipsic the great conservatoire which soon became the best musical college in Europe, opening it on April 3, in the buildings of the Gewandhaus. In 1844 he conducted six of the Philhar- monic concerts in London, producing his new J/cdsummer Night's Dream music, and playing Beethoven's pianoforte concerto in G with extraordinary effect. He returned to his duties at Berlin in September, but happily succeeded in persuading the king to free him from his most onerous engagements, and his delight at this relief was un- bounded.

After a brief residence in Frankfort, Mendelssohn returned to Leipsic in September 1845, resuming his old duties at the Gewandhaus, and teaching regularly in the conservatoire. Here he remained, with little in- terruption, during the winter,—introducing his friend Jenny Lind, then at the height of her popularity, to the critical frequenters of the Gewandhaus, and steadily working at Elijah, the first performance of which he con- ducted at the Birmingham festival, on August 26, 1846. The enthusiastic reception of this great work is well known. Unhappily, the excitement attendant upon its production, added to the irritating effect of the worries at Berlin, made a serious inroad upon the composer's health. On his return to Leipsic he worked on as usual, but it was

clear that his health was seriously impaired. In 1847 he visited England for the tenth and last time, to conduct four performances of Hlvjah at Exeter Hall, on the 16th, 23d, 28th, and 30th of April, one at Manchester on the 20th, and one at Birmingham on the 27th. Again the queen and prince

consort received him with marked respect,— one might almost venture to say, affection,—and all seemed prosperous and happy. But the necessary exertion was far beyond his strength. He witnessed Jenny Lind's first appearance at Her Majesty's Theatre, on the 4th of May, and left England on the 9th, little anticipating the trial that awaited him in the tidings of the sudden death of his sister Fanny, which reached him only a few days after his arrival in Frankfort. The loss of his mother in 1842 had shaken him much, but the suddenness with which this last sad intelligence was communicated broke him down com- pletely. He fell to the ground insensible, and never fully recovered. In June he was so far himself again that he was able to travel, with his family, by short stages, to Interlaken, where he stayed for some time, illustrating the journey by a series of water-colour drawings, but making no attempt at composition for many weeks. He returned to Leipsic in September, bringing with him fragments of Christus, Loreley, and some other unfinished works, taking no part in the concerts, and living in the

strictest privacy. On the 9th of October he called on |

Madame Frege, and asked her to sing his latest set of songs. She left the room for lights, and on her return found him in violent pain, and almost insensible. It was the begin- ning of the end. He lingered on, now better now worse, through four weary weeks, and on the 4th of November he passed away, in the presence of his wife, his brother, and his three dear friends, Moscheles, Schleinitz, and Ferdinand David. A cross now marks the site of his grave, in the Alte Dreifaltigkeits Kirchhof, at Berlin.

Mendelssohn's title to a place among the greatest composers of the century is incontestable. His style, though differing but little in technical arrangement from that of his classical predecessors, is characterized by a vein of melody peculiarly his own, and easily distinguishable by those who have studied his works, not only from the genuine effusions of contemporary writers, but from the most successful of the servile imitations with which, even during his lifetime, the music-shops were deluged. In less judicious hands the rigid symmetry of his phrasing might, perhaps, have palled upon the ear; but under his skilful management it serves only to impart an additional charm to thoughts which derive their chief beauty from

the evident spontaneity of their conception. In this, as in all other matters of a purely technical character, he regarded the accepted laws of art as the medium by which he might most certainly attain the ends dictated by the inspiration of his genius. Though caring nothing for rules, except as means for producing a good effect, he scarcely ever violated them, and was never weary of impressing their value upon the minds of his pupils. His method of counterpoint was modelled in close-accordance with that practised by Sebastian Bach. This he used in combination with an elastic development of the sonata-form, similar to that engrafted by Beethoven upon the lines laid down by Haydn. The principles involved in this arrangement were strictly conservative; yet they cnabled him, at the very outset of his career, to invent a new style no less original than that of Schubert or Weber, and no less re- markable as the embodiment of canons already consecrated by classical authority than as a special manifestation of individual genius. Itis thus that Mendelssohn stands before us as at the same time a champion of conservatism and an apostle of progress ; and it is chiefly by virtue of these two apparently: incongruous though really perfectly compatible phases of his artistic character that his influence and example have, for so many years, held in check the violence of reactionary opinion which a little injudicions en- couragement might easily have fanned into revolutionary fury. Happily, this wholesome influence is still at work among us; and in his oratorios, his symphonies, his overtures, his concertos, and his smaller pianoforte pieces Mendelssohn sets before us an ex- ample the value of which is universally recognized, and not likely to be soon forgotten.

Concerning Mendelssohn’s private character there have never been two opinions. Asa man of the world, he was more than ordi- narily accomplished, —brilliant in conversation, and in his lighter moments overtlowing with sparkling humour and ready pleasantry,

| loyal and unselfish in the more serious business of life, and never

weary of working for the general good. As a friend he was un- varyingly kind, sympathetic, and as true as steel. His earnestness as a Christian needs no stronger testimony than that afforded by his own delineation of the character of St Paul ; but it is not too much to say that his heart and life were pure as those of a little child. ;

A complete list of Mendelssohn’s published compositions—one hundred and nine- teen in number, besides some five and twenty unnumbered works of considerable importance—will be found in the thematic catalogue published by Messrs Breit- kopf and Hirtel at Leipsic, and also In Grove’s Dictionary of Music and Musicians, vol. ii. pp. 308, 809. Among his miscellancous writings, we may men- tion a translation of the Andria of Terence, in Gerinan verse, and an immense collection of Ictters, posthumously printed. and caleulated to give the reader a far closer acquaintance with his life and character than any biographcr can hope to convey. CW. 8S. BR.)

MENDELSSOHN, Moszs (1729-1786), philosopher and scholar, well known as Lessing’s friend and the proto- type of his “ Nathan,” was born on September 6, 1729, at Dessau on the Elbe, where his Jewish father made a scanty livelihood by teaching a small school and transcribing copies of the “law.” The leading events of Mendelssohn’s career have been indicated elsewhere (see Juws, vol. xiii. p. 680). His numerous writings include Ueber Evidenz in metaphysischen Wissenschaften (1763), which gained the prize in a competition in which Immanuel Kant took part; Briefe tiber die Empfindungen (1764) ; Phedon, oder tiber die Unsterblichkeit der Seele (1767), an argument for immortality, founded on the nature of the soul as exempt- ing it from the ordinary laws of change, which has been severely criticized by Kant; Jerusalem, oder die religwse Macht und Judenthum (1783), a specially important con- tribution to the question of Jewish emancipation; a number of contributions to his friend Nicolai’s Literatur-briefen and Bibliothek der schinen Wéssenschaften ; one or two tracts in Hebrew; and some new German translations from the Old Testament. The controversy which led to the publication of his Morgenstunden (1785-86), a reply to Jacobi’s Briefe tiber die Lehre Spinoza’s, is said to have been more or less directly the cause of his death, which took place on January 4, 1786 (see Jacont, vol. xiii. p. 537). Of Mendelssohn’s three sons, the second, Abraham, settled as a banker in Hamburg and married a Jewess, Lea Salomon Bartholdy, who bore him four children ; these, by advice of their mother’s brother, himself a conscientious convert from Judaism, were educated as Christians, and thenceforth joined their mother’s second surname to their own. The second of them, Felix, is the subject of the preceding notice. In later life Abraham Mendelssohn was accustomed to

say,—“ When I was young I was the son of my father ; now I am the father of my son.” See The Mendelssohn Family, 1882.

MENDOZA, a city of the Argentine Republic, the only town of the province of Mendoza, lies 700 miles west- north-west of Buenos Ayres, at the foot of the Cordilleras, 2510 feet above the sea-level, in 32° 53’S. lat. and 68° 45’ W. long. It was formerly a frequent stopping-place on the route across the Andes by the Uspallata Pass, and used to rank as one of the best-built towns in the country, but in 1861 it was almost completely destroyed by an appalling earthquake, in which the people, for the most part collected in the churches, perished to the number of about 12,000. Bravard, a French geologist who had often predicted the catastrophe, was one of those who perished. Extensive ruins still mark the site of the old town; the new town, which has been built at a little distance, has grown rapidly. Situated in a richly cultivated district, Mendoza depends mainly on agriculture and fruit-growing.

The city was founded in 1559 by Garcia de Mendoza; and in 1776 it was made the administrative centre of the vice-royalty of La Plata. Sce Mulhall, Handbook of the La Plata States, 1875 ; and Mrs Mulhall, Between the Amazon and the Andes, 1882.

MENDOZA, Disco Hourtapo pbx (c. 1503-1575), novelist, poet, diplomatist, and historian, was a younger son of the member of the illustrious Mendoza family to whom

the government of Granada was entrusted not long after its surrender, and was born in that city about the year 1503. The marquis of Santillana, so prominent a figure at the court of John IL. of Castile, was his great-grandfather. At an early age Mendoza, who had been destined for the church, was sent to Salamanca, where he studied with success, and also, some time between the years 1520 and 1525, produced his Lazarillo de Tormes, the work upon which his literary celebrity largely rests. Having persuaded his father to allow him to enter the army, he served with the

Spanish troops of Charles V. in Italy, and also availed himself of opportunities as they arose to hear the lectures of famous professors at Bologna, Padua, and Rome. In 1538 he was taken into the diplomatic service of the emperor and sent as ambassador to Venice ; there he cultivated friendly relations with the Aldi, and energetically set about collecting a library, not only procuring copies of many old MSS. in the public library of the city, but also sending to Thessaly and Mount Athos for new ones ; it was from his collection that the complete text of Josephus was first printed. For gome time he held the post of military governor of Siena ; and, after having been present in an official capacity in Trent at the beginning of the cecumenical council, he was in 1547 sent as special plenipotentiary to Rome, where he continued to act for some years. In 1554, shortly before the abdication of Charles, he was recalled to Spain, and his official career came to an end. He was never a favourite with Philip IL ; and in consequence of a quarrel with a courtier, in which he had lost his temper badly, he was finally banished from court in 1568. The remaining years of his life, which were spent at Granada, he devoted partly to the study of Arabic, partly to poetical composition, and partly to the preparation of his history of the Moorish ‘nsurrection of 1568-70 (Guerra de G’ranada). He died at Madrid (which he had obtained leave to visit on some business errand) in April 1575.

Mendoza’s Lazarillo de Tormes, though written during his college days, was not published until 1553, when it was printed anonymously at Antwerp. Next year it was reprinted at Burgos, but ultimately it was taken exeeption to by the Inquisition, and the Spanish editions of 1573 and subsequent years are accordingly con- siderably abridged. It is a comparatively short fragment, written in vigorous and bright Castilian, and was the first example in modern literature of the ‘novela picaresca” of whieh Le Sage’s Gil Blas now ranks as the most perfeet specimen. The continuations, first by an anonymous author (1555) and afterwards by H. de Luna (1620), are of very inferior interest. Of Mendoza as a poet all that need be said here is that he followed the modern Italian models quite as far as was compatible with a due regard to his Castilian individu- ality. His history, though of no great bulk, is, like his novel, a work of remarkable literary execution. It relates indeed only toa comparatively brief episode in a chapter of events for which it is

almost impossible to claim much general attention, and it is often needlessly erudite and sometimes provokingly obscure. But as a whole itis singularly well-informed, dignified, and picturesque ; “ the style is bold and abrupt, but true to the idiom of the language, and the current of thought is deep and strong, easily carrying the reader onward with its flood. Nothing in the old chronicling style of the catlicr period is to be compared to it, and little in any subscquent

period is equal to it for manliness, vigour, and truth” (Ticknor). : : tac The first edition of the Guerra de Granada did not appear until the yeeloin. Sete part of the littoral waters between Maine

1610, but was even then incomplete ; the first perfect edition was and Florida, the northern shoals retiring into deeper water that of 1730. The work has frequently been reprinted since. or to more southern latitudes with the approach of cold MENDOZA, ISico Loprz pz, See SANTILLANA. weather. The average size of the menhaden is about 12

MENELAUS, king of Sparta, was the brother of | inches. Although it was long known as a palatable table- AGAMEMNON (q.v.) and the husband of HELENA (9.0.). He | fish, and largely used, when salted, for export to the West was one of the heroes of the Trojan horse, and recovered | Indies, and as bait for cod and mackerel, the menhaden his wife at the sack of the city. On the voyage home- fishery has been developed to its present importance only wards his fleet was scattered off Malea by a storm which within the last twenty years. A large fleet of steamers drove him to Crete; after seven years’ further wandering and sailing vessels is engaged init; anda great number of to Cyprus, Pheenicia, Egypt, Ethiopia, Libya, and the | large factories have sprung into existence to extract the oil, country of the Erembi, he at last had an interview with | which is used for tanning and currying, and for adulterat- Proteus and obtained a favourable wind which brought him | ing other more expensive oils, and to manufacture the refuse home on the very day on which Orestes was holding the | into a very valuable guano. In the year 1877 2,426,589 funeral feast over Adgisthus and Clytsmnestra. After a | gallons of oil and 55,444 tons of guano were produced.

long and happy life in Lacedsemon, Menelaus, as the son- in-law of Zeus, did not die but was translated to Elysium.

MENGS, Antony RAPHAEL (1728-1779), was the most celebrated representative of the eclectic school of painting in the 18th century, and played a great part in the early days of the classic revival. He was born in 1728 at Aussig in Bohemia, but his father, a Danish painter, established himself finally at Dresden, whence in 1741 he conducted his son to Rome. Mengs early showed that active intelligence and large capacity for laborious study which secured him the extraordinary distinction which he en} oyed through life. His appointment in 1749 as first painter to the elector of Saxony did not prevent his spending much time in Rome, where he had married in 1748, and abjured the Protestant faith, and where he became in 1754 director of the Vatican school of painting, nor did this hinder him on two occasions from obeying the call of Charles III. of Spain to Madrid. There Mengs produced some of his best work, and specially the ceiling of the banqueting hall, the subject of which was the Triumph of Trajan and the Temple of Glory. After the completion of this work in 1777, Mengs again returned to Rome, and there he died, two years later, in poor circumstances, leaving twenty children, seven of whom were pensioned by the king of Spain. Besides numerous paintings in the Madrid gallery, the Ascension at Dresden, Perseus and Andromeda at St Petersburg, and the ceiling of the Villa Albani must be mentioned among his chief works. In England, the duke of Northumberland pos- sesses a Holy Family, and the colleges of All Souls and Magdalen, at Oxford, have altar-pieces by his hand. In his writings, in Spanish, Italian, and German, Mengs has put forth his eclectic theory of art, which treats of per- fection as attainable by a well-schemed combination of diverse excellences,—Greek design, with the expression of Raphael, the chiaroscuro of Correggio, and the colour of Titian. His close intimacy with Winkelmann—who constantly wrote at his dictation—has greatly enhanced his historical importance, for he formed no scholars, and the critic must now concur in Goethe’s judgment of Mengs 1 Winkelmann und seine Jahrhundert; he must deplore that so much learning should have been allied to a total want of initiative and utter poverty of invention, and embodied with a strained and artificial mannerism.

Sec Opere di Antonio Raffaello Mengs, Parma, 1780; DMengs' Werke, iibersetat v. G. F. Prange, 1786 ; Zeitschrift fiir bildende Kunst, 1880; Bianconi, Hlogio Storico di Mengs, Milan, 1780; Nagler's Kiinstlerlexikon.

MENHADEN, economically one of the most important fishes of the United States, known by a great number of local names, ‘“‘menhaden” and “mossbunker ” being those most generally in use. In systematic works it appears under the names of Clupea menhaden and Brevoor- tia tyrannus. It is allied to the European species of shad and pilchard, and, like the latter, approaches the coast in its wanderings in immense shoals, which are found throughout

An extensive business is also carried on in converting menhaden of a suitable size into “‘ American sardines.”

A very complete aceount of this fishery is given by G. Brown Goode in ‘‘The Natural and Economic History of the American Menhaden,” United States Commission of Fish and Fisheries, part v., Washington, 1879.

MENIN, a small Belgian town, in the province of West Flanders ; it is traversed by the river Lys, which there forms the boundary between France and Belgium. The population in 1880 was 10,200. Commercially and industrially Menin ranks high for its size, possessing, as it does, important manufactures of linen, oil, soap, é&c., as well as sugar refineries, breweries, and tanneries, and a good corn and cattle market. Tobacco is extensively grown in the neighbourhood, and forms one of the main items of lawful trade, a good deal of illicit traffic also being carried on across the French frontier.

Menin does not appear to have been in any way worthy of note until the 14th century. Philip II. caused it to be fortified in 1578. It was taken by Turenne in 1658. Vauban subsequently sur- rounded it with elaborate works, and made it one of the strongest citadels in France; but all its fortifications were razed in 1744. It belonged to the Netherlands in 1815, and became part of Belgium in 1830.

MENINGITIS (from pijyé, a membrane), a term in medicine applied to inflammation affecting the membranes of the brain (cerebral meningitis) or spinal cord (spinal meningitis) or both.

Of cerebral meningitis there are two varieties :—(1) that due to the presence of tubercle in the membranes of the brain, which gives rise to the disease known as tubercular meningitis, or acute hydrocephalus; and (2) simple or acute meningitis, which may arise from various causes, Among the more common are injuries of the head, exten- sion of disease from contiguous parts, such as erysipelas of the scalp or caries of the bones of the ear, exposure to cold or to extreme heat, the presence of tumours in the substance of the brain. It may likewise occur in the course of fevers, rheumatism, and inflammatory affections, and also as a result of mental overwork, sleeplessness, and alcoholic excess. This latter variety of meningitis is less common than the former, but it is on the whole more amenable to treatment. The symptoms present such a general resemblance to those already described in tubercular meningitis that it is unnecessary to refer to them in detail (see HYDROCEPHALUS), and the treatment is essentially the same for both.

Spinal meningitis, or inflammation of the membranes investing the spinal cord, generally results from causes of a similar kind to those producing cerebral meningitis, — injuries, exposure to cold or sudden changes of tempera- ture, diseases affecting adjacent parts such as the vertebral column or the spinal cord itself, or extension downwards of inflammation of the membranes of the brain. It is said to be most common in males. As in the case of the brain, the membranes become extremely congested ; exudation of lymph and effusion of serum follow; and the spinal cord and roots of the nerves become more or less involved in the morbid process.

The chief symptoms are fever, with severe pain in the back or loins shooting downwards into the limbs (which are the seat of frequent painful involuntary startings), accompanied with a feeling of tightness round the body. The local symptoms bear reference to the portion of the cord the membranes of which are involved. Thus when the inflammation is located in the cervical portion the muscles of the arms and chest are spasmodically contracted, and there may be difficulty of swallowing or breathing, or

embarrassed heart’s action, while when the disease is seated in the lower portion, the lower limbs and the bladder and rectum are the parts affected in this way. At first there

ish

is excited sensibility (hyperesthesia) in the parts of the surface of the body in relation with the portion of cord affected. As the disease advances these symptoms give place to those of partial loss of power in the affected muscles, and also partial anaesthesia. These various phenomena may entirely pass away, and the patient after some weeks or months recover ; or, on the other hand, they may increase, and end in permanent paralysis.

The treatment is directed to allaying the pain and inflammatory action by opiates. Ergot of rye is strongly recommended by many physicians. The patient should have perfect rest in the recumbent, or better still in the prone, position. Cold applications to the spine may be of use, while scrupulous attention to the functions of the bladder and bowels, and to the condition of the skin with the view of preventing bed-sores, is all-important.

‘ Epidemic Cerebro-spinal Meningitis. —This name, as well as cerebro-spinal fever, is applicd to a disease defined in the Nomencla- ture of Diseases as “a malignant epidemic fever, attended by painful contractions of the muscles of the neck and retraction of the head. In certain epidemics it is frequently accompanied by a profuse pur- puric eruption, and occasionally by secondary effusions into certain joints. Lesions of the brain and spinal cord are found on dissection.” This disease appears to have been first distinctly recognized in the year 1837, when it prevailed as an epidemic in the south-west of France, chiefly among troops in garrison. For several years subse- quently it existed in various other localities in F rance, and mostly among soldicrs, At the same time in other countries in western and central Europe the disease was observed in epidemic outbreaks, both among civil and military populations. In 1846 it first showed itself in Ireland, chiefly among the inmates of workhouses in Belfast and Dublin. Numerous outbreaks occurred also about the same period in many parts of the United States. In more recent times the disease has repeatedly appeared both in Europe and America, but it has seldom prevailed extensively in any

one tract of country, the outbreaks affecting for the most ee limited communities, such as garrisons or camps, schools, workhouses, and prisons.

Little is known regarding the causation of this disease. All ages seem liable to suffer, and, as regards sex, males are affected more commonly than females. Occupation and condition of life appear to exercise no influence. It has been observed to oceur most frequently in cold seasons. The question of the contagiousness of cerebro-spinal fever remains still unsettled, but the weight of authority appears to be in favour of the theory of the communica-bility of the disease. It cannot, however, be regarded as contagious in the same degree as some other specific fevers, such as typhus fever, small-pox, or scarlatina.

The following are the more prominent symptoms." After a few days of general discomfort the attack comes on sharply with rigors, intense headache, giddiness, and vomiting. Neuralgic pains in the abdomen, and pain with spasmodic contractions in the muscles of the extremities, occur at an early stage. The headache continues with great severity, and restlessness and delirium supervene, accom- panied with periods of somnolence. The pains and spasms rapidly inerease, the muscles of the neck, spinc, and limbs being specially affeeted. The patient's head is drawn backwards and rigidly fixed, the spine arched, and the arms and legs powerfully flexed, the whole condition bearing a considerable resemblauce to tetanus. For a time there is greatly increased sensibility of the skin, pain being excited by the slightest contact. There is more or less fever present. About the fourth day of the disease an eruption on the skin both of the face and body frequently appears, in the form either of purpuric spots or small clear vesicles. Death may take place in from a few hours to eight or ten days. Should the patient survive the immediate shock of the attack, scrious complications are apt to appear in the form of destructive inflammation of the cyes or ears, inflammation with effusion into certain joints, and paralysis of limbs ; or, again, recovery may take place after a pro- longed convalescence. The mortality appears to vary in different epidemies, in some being as high as 80 per ceut., in others only about 20 per cent. Certain forms of the disease are of malignant character from the first, and very rapidly fatal.

The changes found after death in ccrebro-spinal fever are intense inflammation of the membrane of the brain and spinal cord, with effusion of serum or pus into the ventricular and arachnoid spaces.

The treatment is similar to that of other febrile conditions, but for the special symptoms of pain, spasm, &c., opium seems to have been found of eminent service, while quinine and ergot of rye are also recommended.

MENNONITES is a name borne by certain Christian communities in Europe and America, denoting their adherence to a type of doctrine of which Menno Simons

was, not indeed the originator, but the chief exponent at the time when the anti-psdo-baptism of the congregations vn which he laboured took permanent form in opposition to ordinary Protestantism on the one hand and to the theocratic ideas of the Miinster type of anabaptism on the other. The original home of the views afterwards called Mennonite was in Ziirich, where, as early as 1525, Grebel and Manz founded a community having for its most dis- tinctive mark baptism upon confession of faith. The chief doctrines of these Ziirich Baptists have been already stated in the article Baprists, vol. lii. p. 353. The main interest of the sect lay not in dogma but in discipline. Within the communities evangelical life was reduced to a law of separation from the world, and this separation—enforced by astringent use of excommunication and the prohibition of marriage beyond

(the state being held to be un-Christian)—refusal to take

an oath or use the sword, In their revolt against the cor-

ruptions of the medizeval church the Reformers neither

denied the continuity of the church as an organization nor

impugned the Christian character of the state. The new

sect did both; and their position thus appeared so radically subversive of the foundations of society that it is not sur-

prising, under the imperfect views of toleration then current, that they Protestants as well as from Catholics.

theocracy in opposition to the anti-Christian state. sought only to withdraw from what their conscience con-

demned, content to live as strangers upon earth, and devot- the purity of their own

ing all their energy to preserve communities. The medizval conception of separation from the world as the true path of Christian leavened all middle-class society in Europe, and prepared many to accept separatist views of the church as soon as they were reached by the impulse of revolt against Roman Catholicism ; the pursuit of holiness in a society protected by a strict discipline is an idea which experience has shown to have a great attraction for one class of earnest minds ; hence, in spite of persecutions incomparably fiercer than any of the larger Protestant bodies ever underwent, the new doctrine and praxis rapidly spread from Switzerland to Germany, Holland, and even to France. Each com- munity was quite independent, united to the rest only bya

bond of love. There was no sort of hierarchy, but only

‘“exhorters” chosen by the congregation, of whom the most prominent were also “elders” entrusted with the administration of the sacraments—an organization so easily kept alive or reproduced that the movement could hardly be checked by any persecution short of the total annihila- tion which at length was actually the fate of many of the Swiss communities. The remnants of the Swiss Mennonites broke in 1620 imto two parties, the stricter of which, the Ammanites or Upland Mennonites, were distinguished from the Lowland Mennonites by holding that excommunication of one party dissolved marriage, and by their rejection of buttons and the use of the razor. Their persecution lasted till 1710; a few congregations still remain and keep themselves quite distinct from Baptist bodies of more modern origin. In Germany the Mennonites are some- what more numerous; more

important are the German Mennonite colonies in southern Russia, brought thither in 1783 by the empress Catherine, which in turn have recently sent many emigrants to America. America indeed, and especially Pennsylvania, early became a refuge for the Mennonites of Switzerland, the Palatinate, and Holland, and is now the chief home of the body (175,000 in the United States and 25,000 in Canada). The oldest con- gregation is that of Germantown (since 1683); the most

the brotherhood—involved not only abstinence from worldly vanities but refusal of civic duties

became the objects of bitter persecution from But the Grebelians had no desire, like the fanatics of Munster, to found a new They

perfection had

MEN—MEN

numerous of several divisions are the Old Mennonites, cor- responding to the less strict of the Swiss sections.

All these communities in Europe and America are dis- tinguished by an antique simplicity combined with antique prejudices, by indifference to the interests of the greater world, while at the same time their industry and self-con- centration have made them generally well-to-do. Their religious type has varied very little in the course of centuries, as indeed is not surprising, their theology being ascetic rather than dogmatic or speculative. The Mennonites of Holland, on the other hand, have passed through an interesting and progressive history.

It was in Holland and the adjoining parts of Low Germany that the personal influence of Menno Simons (1492-1559) was mainly felt. He was originally a priest, and was pastor at his native place Witmarsum in Friesland from 1531 to 1536, when convictions long ripening in his mind compelled him to resign his cure. At this time the anti-pado-baptist societies in the Low Countries were much agitated. The views which had just before received their political deathblow at Miinster (see ANABAPTISTS) were not extinct, and even those who did not share them were by no means at one.

Menno attached himself to the Obbenites, who held that on earth true Christians had no prospect but to suffer persecution, refused to use the sword, and looked for no millennium on earth. Menno became one of their elders, and by his wanderings among the scattered and oppressed communities, and especially by the natural eloquence and religious power of his numerous writings, did much to sustain the faith of his associates, to confirm the type of their religious life, and to prevent startling aberrations in doctrine or diseipline. He was not an original thinker; but the love which all felt for the man, and which was kept alive for generations by his writings, gave him the place which the name of Mennonites expresses.

It may be ascribed to the influence of Menno's writings that the Dutch Mennonites, though for a time (since 1554) they broke into fractions on questions of discipline, and especially on the effect of excommunication upon marriage, never fell so far apart as regards the type of their religious life as to preclude the possibility of re- union. The Waterlanders in North Holland, who held the least strict doctrine of excommunication, soon moved farther in the direction of liberality, and exchanged the name Mennonites for that of Doopsgezinden (Baptist persuasion). In 1579 they refused to condemn any one for opinions, even on the incarnation, which the word of Scripture did not pronounce necessary to salvation. They aided William the Silent with money, and from 1581 to 1618 even accepted civil office. Meantime the stricter party had undergone various divisions, which, however, in 1627-32 were reunited on the basis of confessions essentially cimbodying Menno's teachings. They too had learned moderation, at least in their views of excom- munication, and their antithesis to the state was softened since the cessation of persecution in 1581, but especially since in 1672 they were recognized as citizens. On the other hand, the adoption of a confession had deepened the separation between them aud the liberal Doopsgeziuden; but doctrine was never the fundamental principle of the Mennonite communities, confessionalism took no firm root, and the two sections gradually approached, and through a series of partial fusions became at length finally united when the Amsterdam congregations came together in 1801. The persuasion declined much in numbers in the 18th century; since then it has increased, and has now 127 congregations with nearly 50,000 members. The objection to hold eivil office disappeared in 1795; that to carry arms in the war of freedom against Napoleon, Baptism

on profession of faith and the refusal of the oath, tolerance in matters of doctrine without religious indifference, are the chief inarks of the body, which in point of theological culture and general enlightenment, philanthropic zeal and social importance, has long stood very high.

Authorities —The best life of Menno Simons is Cramer's, 1887. De Hoop Scheffer's article in Herzog-Plitt, R. E., is excellent; only one point of conse- quence in his account seems to call for modification,—the book against John of Leyden, said to have been published before Menno joined the Obbenites, is almost certainly spurious. See Sepp, Geschiedkundige Nasporingen, i, (1872) p. 128 sq. The completest edition of Menno's works is that in folio, 1686. Many of them are known only in bad Dutch versions; Menno himself wrote in the " Qostersch" or East Sca Dialect of Low German. For the literature on the Mennonites in general, see De Hoop Scheffer, on whom the foregoing sketch is mainly dependent.

MENSHIKOFF, ALEXANDER Danttovicn (1 672-1729), born at Moscow on the 17th of November (0.s.) 1672, was the son of a poor man, who employed him to sell cakes about the streets of that city. In this humble occupation he attracted the attention of Lefort, one of Peter the Great's most active co-operators, who was pleased with his spright- liness, and took him into his service. Peter, soon afterwards

seeing the youth at Lefort's, was also delighted with him, and took him to be his page. Menshikoff soon became indispensable to the czar, assisting him in his workshop, and displaying signal bravery in the company of his master at the siege of Azoff. He formed one of the suite of Peter during his travels, and worked with him at Saardam and Deptford. Throughout his wars with the Swedes, Men- shikoff was the companion of the czar, and greatly distin- guished himself. For his gallantry at the battle of the Neva, on the 7th of May (o.s.) 1703, he received the order of St Andrew. In 1704 he was made general, and at the request of the czar created a prince of the Holy Roman Enipire. His house on the Vasilii-Ostroff was magnificent ; there ambassadors were received, and banquets were given gorgeous with gold and silver plate. Unfortunately there is a dark side to the picture, and the favourite was guilty of extortion to such an extent as to bring him under

his master’s censure. On the death of Peter the position of Menshikoff became very perilous ; his successes had raised about him a host of enemies eager for his downfall. The Golitzins, Dolgoroukis, and all those who formed what may be called the Old Russian party, wished to proclaim the son of Alexisemperor. Those, however, whose aggrandize- ment was bound up with Peter’s reforms—Menshikof, Apraksin, Bontourlin, Goloffkin, and others—were in favour of giving the crown to Peter’s widow, who accordingly ascended the throne as Catherine I. During her reign the influence of Menshikoff was unbounded, and he virtually governed the country; but the empress died in 1727, after a reign of two years. She had made a will, no doubt at the instigation of the favourite, to the effect that Peter, her grandson, was to be czar under the guardian- ship of Menshikoff, whose daughter Mary was to be married to the youthful sovereign. Under pretence of taking care of the young czar, Menshikoff caused him to be removed to his house and surrounded him with his creatures. He was now at the height of his power; foreign ambassadors remarked that even the great Peter himself was never feared so much. The young czar, however, showed no affection for Mary Menshikoff, and the girl was equally apathetic towards her betrothed, being in love with a member of the family of Sapieha at the time her father had forced her into the engagement. The Dolgoroukis used the aversion of the young prince to his fiancée as a

means of creating dislike to the father. A chain of events was gradually leading to the downfall of the favourite. He was soon refused admittance to the summer palace, whither the young czar had retired. Next he was arrested, and so overpowered was he at his disgrace that he had an apoplectic stroke. In vain did he address letters both to the emperor and his sister. Shortly after, by order of the czar, the fallen magnate departed from St Petersburg, but more like a nobleman retiring to his estate than a culprit going into exile. The people regarded him with dislike, and most of them rejoiced over his fall. On his way a courier arrived with orders to take the ezar’s ring of betrothal from his daughter Mary and give her back her own, which had been worn by Peter II. Menshikoff was not permitted to pass through Moscow, but was conducted to Oranienburg, in the government of Riazan, and there placed under strict surveillance. Soon afterwards the

whole family was banished to Siberia, and arrived at Berezoff towards the end of 1727. Menshikoff's wife died on the journey, and was buried near Kazan. On the arrival of the prisoners they were lodged in a wooden house, consisting of four rooms, But Menshikoff did not long endure the horrors of exile in this inclement region. According to Mannstein, he died (November 12, o.8., 1729) of an apoplectic stroke, because there was no one at Berezoff, as he himself remarked, who understood how to open a vein. The young czar ordered the release from exile of the two remaining children of Menshikoff,—his daughter Mary had died at Berezoff in the same year as her father,—and restored some of their property to them.

MENSHIKOFF, Atex ANDER SERGEIEVICH (1787-1869), great-grandson of Peter's favourite, born in 1787, entered the Russian service as attaché to the embassy at Vienna. He accompanied the emperor Alexander throughout his cam- paigns against Napoleon, and attained the rank of general, but retired from active service in 1823. He then devoted himself to naval matters, and put the Russian marine, which had fallen into decay during the reign of Alexander, on an efficient footing. On the outbreak of the Crimean War he was appointed commander-in-chief, and suffered a severe defeat at the Alma. On the death of the emperox Nicholas in 1855 he was recalled, ostensibly on account of failing health. He died in 1869.

MENSURATION

ENSURATION, or the art of measuring, involves

the construction of measures, the methods of using

them, and the investigation of rules by which magnitudes

which it may be difficult or impossible to measure directly

are calculated from the ascertained value of some associated

magnitude. It is usual, however, to employ the term

mensuration in the last of these senses; and we may

therefore define it to be that department of mathematical

science by which the various dimensions of bodies are calculated from the simplest possible measurements.

The determination of the lengths and directions of straight lines, including what are familiarly known as problems in heights and distances, generally depends on the solution of triangles, and will be discussed in the articles TRIGONOMETRY and Surveyinc. The remaining portions of the subject are the determinations of the lengths of curves, the areas of plane or other figures, and the volumes and surfaces of solids; and it is of mensura- tion as thus restricted that the present article will discuss some of the more important problems.

§ 1. Umits of Length, Area, and Volume,—In measuring any magnitude we select some standard or “unit” to mea-

sure by. Thus in measuring length we take for unit an inch, a foot, or a yard. From the unit of length we derive the units of area and volume. Thus we define the unit of area to be the area of the square described upon the unit of length, and the unit of volume to be the volume of the cube whose edge is the unit of length or whose side is the unit of area. For example, if an inch be taken as the unit of length, the square whose side is 1 inch is the unit of area, and the cube whose edge is 1 inch is the unit of volume. The length of a line, the area of a surface, and the volume of a solid are then expressed by the numbers, whole or fractional, of units of length, area, and volume which they respectively contain. Hence, if 7 denote the linear unit, the length of a line which contains a units is a, or simply a since / is unity; similarly the area of a surface which contains 6 units of area is bm, or simply b, where m is the unit of area.

§ 2. Commensurable and Incommensurable Magnitudes.— When two magnitudes have a common measure, that is, when another magnitude can be found which is contained in each an exact number of times, they are said to be ‘“‘commensurable.” Thus a line 44 and another 3} inches

long are commensurable ; for, if } inch be taken as unit of length, the former contains the unit nine times and the latter seven times. If no common measure can be found, the two magnitudes are said to be "'incommensurable." For instance, 1 and J? have no common measure; for J/%=1:4142…an interminable decimal, and hence no unit, however small, can be found which will be contained in each an exact number of times. If, however, we take J2=1°4, the error will be less than yy; if /2=1°414, the error will be less than zggq, &e. Hence, by taking a sufficient number of figures, we can find a fraction which will differ from /2 by less than any assignable quantity, and therefore we can always find two commensurable magnitudes that will represent two incommensurable ones to any degree of accuracy we please. In what follows we need therefore only consider commensurable lines.

§ 3. Area of a Rectangle.—Let the side AB (fig. 1) con- tain a units and the side BC 6 units of length. If we divide AB into a equal parts, 4 B each equal to the unit of length, and similarly BC into 6 equal parts, and if through the points of division we draw lines parallel to the sides of the rectangle, these lines will di- vide the rectangle into a series of rectangles, each of which is 5 the unit of area, since each is a square whose sides are of unit length. As we have a rows of these rectangles, and b in each row, the whole number of rectangles will be ab. Therefore

Cc Fig, i.

area of ABCD =ad units of area =ab.

PART I.—PLANE FIGURES. Srcrion I.—PLANE FIGURES CONTAINED BY SrraicHt LINES.

A. The Rectangle.

g 4, Let ABCD (fig. 2) be a rectangle, and let AB=CD=a, BC=DA=b, AC=c, and the angle A B BAC=a; it is required to find its area. Sinee a rectangle is completely de- termined when two independent data, one of whieh at least is a length, are given conneeting its parts, we ean de- termine its area in the following eases.

(a) When its length a and its breadth b are given. —It has already been proved 4 (§ 8) that Fig. 2. area of ABCD =ab ;

or the area of a rectangle is equal to its length multiplied by its breadth. Example.—let a=12 feet 6 inches and b=9 inelies, then

area of ABCD =12°5 x ‘75=9°375 square feet. If we make use of logarithms in the above ealeulation we have

log area=loga + logb. loga=log12‘5 =1-0969100

logb=log *75=1°8750613 therefore logarea= °9719713 ; henee area=9°375.

(B) When a side a and the diagonal e are given. —By Euclid i. 47 we have b2 =? —a?, or b=NVo?~~a*, therefore area of ABCD =ab= aN — a; or. log area=loga + $log(c+ a) + $1og(e~~ a). Example.—Let a= 238 and ¢= 456, then loga= log238= 2°3765770 Zlog(c+ a) = $log 694 = 1°4206797 4 log (e – a)=4log218= 1°1692282 log area = 4°9664849 ; area=92573‘1.

therefore hence

MENSURATION

(y) When a side a and a tts inclination to the diagonal are given. — Since

Satana, b=atana,

and therefore area of ABCD =ab= a? tana ; or log area=2loga+Ltana—10. Example. —Let a=36 and a=32° 25’ 15”, then Qloga—2log 36—= 3°1126050 Ltana= Ltan 32° 25’ 15” = 9°8028622 therefore log area = 12°9154672 — 10= 2‘9154672 ; henee area = 823°127.

(3) When the diagonal ¢ and a its inclination to either of the sides ‘are given.—We have

a=ceosa, and b=esina, therefore area of ABCD =a) =c? sin aoosa= $e7sin 2a; or Qarea=c?sin2a, and henee log 2area =2loge + Lsin2a—10.

§ 5. A square being a reetangle whose sides are equal, we can at onee determine its area. When one datum, whieh must be a length, is given the square is completely determined, and hence we have only two eases to eonsider.

(a) When the side is given.—From § 4, a, we have at once

area of square=ab=a xa=a. (8) When the diagonal e is given.—From § 4, B, we have a+at=c%, or at=4e”; area of square=a?= 4c”, or 2area= (ak log 2area = 2 loge.

hence and therefore

B. Right-angled Triangles.

§ 6. The diagonal of every rectangle divides it inte two equiva- lent right-angled triangles (Euel. i. 34), and henee the area of the right-angled triangle ABC (fig. 2) is equal to half the area of the corresponding rectangle ABCD.

0. Triangles Generally.

§ 7. In every triangle there are six elements to be considered, namely, the three sides and the three angles. If any three of A these six be given, provided one is a length, the triangle is eom- pletely determined, and henee its area ean be found. § 8. Length of Perpendiculars of a Triangle.—In the ik ABC (fig. 3) let BC=a, CA=d, AB=c AD the perpendicular . – / CG from A on BC=h, BD=z, Fig. 3. and CD=y. Since BDA and CDA are right angles, we have

=a +h?, and P=y?+h*, ° and therefore B-ay? — a2 =(y+a)(y —2) = aly — 2%) 5

2_ 2

whenee y- RE ; a But y+V=a, and, by solving these equations, we obtain 4 Paar y= oa j Again 2 2 2\ 2 ab)? pe 3 a9 rant yrade- (A) _ (2b)? = (eat of 4a (atb+ob+e-aeta~ bla+b— 9), 7 4a? ’

neice ha Lard+olore-ayeta-latb=¢).

Now let at+d+c=2s, then b+e-a=2(s— a), e+a—b=2(s-)), and a+b-c=2s—¢)-

Therefore, on substituting and redueing, we obtain EON —a)(s—-b)(s—e) » Similarly the porpendieulars from B and C on the opposite sides

are respectively ee 2 4 A/s(s— a)(s— b)(s—¢) » and = Nas —a)(s— b)(s—¢).

9. We now proceed to investigate formule for the area of a

triangle in the following important cases. : : (a) When the base a and the altitude h are given.—Since a

triangle is equel to half a rectangle of the same base and altitude,

we have at onee area ABC =4ah.

Example.—Let a=40 chains and h=14‘52 ehains, then

area=4 × 40 × 14°52=290‘4 square chains.

(B) When two sides a and ¢ and the ineluded angle Bare given. — From fig. 3 4 sinB , and therefore A=csinB ; . henee area=4ah=tacsinB ; or log 2area=loga + loge+Lsin B- 16.

Example.—Let a=40, c=30, and B=380°, then

area =}acsin B=} x 40 × 30 x $= 300. (y) When the three sides a, b, ¢ are given.—From § 8

ae — /s(s — a\(s —b)(S —¢) ,

and therefore

area=4ah=4a x 4 V/s(s— a)(s — b)(s—¢c)= /s(s — a)(s — b)(s —e) ; or logarea = 4 {logs +log(s — a) +log(s—b)+log(s—c)t. Since 2s=a+b+¢, we

have –

area of triangle = }V2(a?b? + b%e? + ca) — (a? + bt +c). Example 1.—Let a=18, b=14, and c=15, then

s—4(134+14415)=21, s-a—21-13=8, s—b=21-14=7, ands—c=21-15=6;

therefore area=/21×8×7×6=84. Eeample 2.—Let a=255, 6=238, and c=221, then logs=log357= 2°5526682 log(s—a)=1log102—= 2-0086002 log(s—b)=log119= 2°0755470 log(s—¢c)=1log136= 2°1335389 therefore log area = 4(8°7703543) =4°3851771 ; henee area = 24276.

(3) When any two angles B and © and the adjacent side a are given. — Since

Se gate *® emt' ~ sink ' and therefore (by 8) , Ae ' PaaBenC 5.» ight. area = faesin B=—— 7 — , where A=180°- (B+C),

or log2area=2loga + Lsin B + LsinC + LeosecA – 30.

Sinee all the angles of a triangle are given when any two are given, we ean find the area of a triangle when any two angles and any one side are given. Thus, when A, B, and care given, we know C also, and the problem reduees to a case of the preceding,

(e) When the three medians a, B, y arc given.—If a, b, c be the three sides of a triangle, and a, B, y the three medians, i.¢., the lines drawn from the 'angles to the middle points of the opposite sides, then by well-known geometrical propositions we have

4(a? + B+?) =3(a? +0? +e), 16 (028? + Bry? + ya") = 9(a?0?-+ Be? + ca?) , and 16(a4+ 64+ y4)=9(a4 + b4 + ct), Now (§ 9, +) area of triangle

therefore

=4V2(00? + Pe + 8a?) — (a4 4 OF e), = §NV2 — (at + B44 74).

D. Paraitlelograms.

§ 10. The opposite sides and angles of a parallelogram being equal, three independent data, one of which at least A D is alength, are necessary and ‘sufficient to determine it completely.

In the parallelogram ABCD

(fig. 4) let BC=DA=a,

AB=CD=2, AC=c, AE=h, B E C the angle ABC=a and Wie. 4 AOD=8. Rs

Since the diagonal AC divides the parallelogram into two equi- valent triangles, we obtain (a) area of ABCD =2 area of triangle ABC =2x$axh ($9, a)=ah; (8) area of ABCD=2 area ABC=2 x Jadsina (§ 9, 8)=absina;

o1 logarea=loga + log} +Lsina—10 ; (y) area of ABCD =2 area ABC=2(ABO + CBO) =2{4BO, AOsin AOB + $BO.COsin COB} =2{ 4BO, ACsing } =4$BD.ACsinB=iedsing, or – log2area=loge+logd+Lsing-10.

15

§ 11. If the parallelogram be equiangular (a rectangle), c=d, and area =$c? sing. If it be egwélateral (a rhombus), B=90°, and area =}ed. If it be both equiangular and equilateral (a square), c=d and B=90°, and area = 4c? as before (§ 5, B).

KE. Trapeziums. § 12. To determine a trapezium completely four data are neces- sary and sufficient,

In the trapezium ABCD (fig. 5) let BO=a, CD =b, DA=c, AB=d, A D

B EF Cc Fig. 5. and AK perpendicular to BC=A, and draw AF parallel to CD, then (a) area ABCD =area ABC +arca ADC

= tah + ch

=2(a+e)h; or the area is equal to half the sum of the parallel sides multiplied

by the perpendicular between them. Again, area of ABF =4BF x AE (§ 9, a)=3(a-c)h,

also area of ABF =Vs(s— AB)(s— BF)(s— FA), where 2s=AB+BF+FA; hence h= Vals — AB)(s— BF)(s— FA), therefore

(8) area of ABCD =4(a-+0)h—-*“n/s(5— AB) — BFY6— FA)

= 3°” !./(—aabterdatb—c-d\atb—epdlasb=04d),

a-¢ AB=d, BF=a-c, and FA=CD=).

since Thus we ean find the area of a trapezium in terms of its sides. § 13. Ifc=0, ABCD becomes a triangle, and its area

=4V(-a+b+d)\(a+b-d)\(a+b+d\a—b+d). Again, if c=a, then also b=d, and ABCD becomes a parallelo-

gram, and its area takes the indeterminate form a as it should do,

since four sides do not completely determine a parallelogram,

F. Quadrilaterals Generally.

§ 14. A quadrilateral is completely determined when five inde-

pendent data are given. We consider the following cases.

(a) When any diagonal and the perpendiculars on it from the

opposite vertices are given.

The quadrilateral ABCD (fig. 6) =ABD+BCD =4BD.AE+4BD.CF =4$BD(AE+ CF) ;

or the area is equal to half the product of the diagonal and the sum of the perpendiculars. x If the diagonal BD fall B without the figure, as in the coneave quadrilateral ABCD (fig. 7), then it is elear that

area ABCD =4BD(AE – CF). D

(B) When the diagonals and C their “ineluded angle are J given.—In the quadrilateral Fig. 6. ABCD (fig. 8, p. 16) let BD=h, AC=h, and angle DEA=a, then

ABCD =ABD+ BCD =43BD.AEsina+4BD.CEsina (§ 10, y)

=4$h(AE+CE)sina

=thksina; . or the area is equal to the product of the diagonals and the sine of their contained angle. A

The same result holds when one of the dia- gonals falls without the quadrilateral, as in fig. 7, as the reader ean easily verify.

(y) When the four sides and the angle be- tween the diagonals areB i mH. – D given.—lf a, b, ce, d be Fig. 7 the sides and a the angle Pil between the diagonals it can easily be shown that

area of quadrilateral =4(a? — 62+ c?- d’)tana.

16

(5) When the four sides are given and the opposite angles are supplementary.—In fig. 8 let AB=a-. BC=)b, CD=c, DA=d, AC=h, angle ABC=a, angle A CDA=,, and let a+B=180°, then areaof ABCD =ABC+ ADC

=fabsina+4edsinp. But B D sin B=sin (180° — a)=sina, therefore area of ABCD =4(ab+cd)sina. This gives us the area of the Fig. 8. quadrilateral in terms of the four sides and one angle. Again we have

a? +b? — 2abcosa—h? =? +d? — 2cd cos =c? + d? + 2cd cosa.,

a? +b? — d? therefore C0Sa= oh ted)” and hence _(at+b+e-d\a+b—-c+d) 1+cosa= Dab + ed) , and © _ _(c+d+a-—b)(e+d—-a+d) 1-cosa= Qiab + ed) ;

From this we obtain sin? = (1+cosa)(1 —- cosa) (b+ce+d-alo+d+a—b\ (d+a+b—e)atbt+e-d) f 4(ab + cd)? ;

Now let at+b+c+d=2s, then 4(ab + cd) sina =V/(s — a)(s — b)(s — ¢)(s — d) 5 therefore area of ABCD —V(s —a)(s—b)(s—c)(s-) ,

or log area =4{log(s— a) + log (s — b) +log(s- c) + log (s— d)}. If d=0, the quadrilatcral becomes a triangle, and its area is

V/(s—a)(s – b)(s — ¢)s as before. In extracting the square root of sin a we take the positive sigu, since the angle a is less than two

right angles.

G. Regular Polygons.

§ 15. Since a regular polygon is both equilateral and equiangular, a circle can be inscribed within it and also described about it, and thus the » straight lines drawn from the common centre of the two circles to the vertices of the polygon divide it into » triangles equal in every respect. Therefore the arca of the polygon is equal to times the area of any one of these triangles. § 16. Radius of Inscribed and Cirewmscribed Circles.—Let AB (fig.

9)=a be a side of a regular polygon B of nm sides; let C be the centre of

the inscribed and cireumscribed

circles, CD=r the radius of tho E

former, and CE=R the radius of the Fig. 9.

latier. The angle ACB is evidently equal to the mth part of four right angles, that is)

ACB = 280 st AD ~~sacB=" Now AD =3~~ CDtan ACD = rtan 8 ; and AD =.= ACsin ACD=Rsin therefore r=aXx peot Se ‘ and 180° ;

R=a x }cosec n

§ 17. Perimeter of Polygon.—The perimeter of the polygon of

180 Or Rasen. ; n

n sides is na, t.€., 2nrtan

From this it follows that the perimeters of the inscribed and circum- scribed regular polygons of n sides of a circle of radius 7 are

2nrsin and nr tan respectively.

818. Area of Polygon. (a) In terms of r.—The area of polygon

=nACB=nAD.CD=nx tan

MENSURATION

(g) In terms of R.—The triangle ACB j =}AC. CBsinACB=4R’sin =,

aud therefore area of polygon =nR?sin 5 ,

(y) In terms of a.—The triangle ACB

a a 1BO- ar, Vas0F =4AB. CD=— Mom a 4acot ee es ‘ nm -2, 180? and therefore arca of polygon =a? x = ee f – 180° or log 4area=logn + Leot —— +2loga—10. n

From aand £ it follows that the areas of the inscribed and circum- scribed regular polygons of 2 sides of a circle of radius 7 are

dnr?sin _ and nrtan 8° respectively. n

§ 19. In the formula ($ 18, y) for the area of a polygon, the factor ® cot has a definite value for every value of », and hence, if we find its value ouce for all for a large number of values of 2, and tabulate the results, we can find the area of a regular polygon of sides by multiplying the square of its side by the appropriate tabular value.

Again, if a=1 we have

180°

180° Ae — 4co

and R =4cosec-—; n

and thus we obtain in a similar manner the radius of the inscribed and circumscribed circles by multiplying the side by the appro-

priate tabular valuc of } cot as — and 4cosec se respectively. § 20. The following table contains the values of cot t and

80°

their logarithms, and the values of hoot and beosee=®” for all

values of » from 8 to 12.

n ” cot ~ Logarithms. cot 180” 4 cosec 180” 4 n n n 8 0°4330127 1°6365006 028867 57735 4 1-0000000 0-0000000 0°50000 70710 5 1:7204774 0°2356490 C‘68819 85065 6 2°5980762 0°4146519 0°86602 1°0000 a 3°6339124 0°5603745 1:0383 11528 8 4:8284271 0°6380568 12071 1:3065 9 6°1818242 0°7911166 1:3737 1:4619 10 76942088 0°8861640 1°5388 1:6180 11 9°3656407 0:9715375 1:7028 17747 ah) 111961524 1:0490688 1:86u0 1.9318

Let A denote the area of a polygon of sides and A’ the cor-

responding tabular value of 7 cot se » then A=a’A’, or log A=2loga+tlog A’.

H.—Length of the Radius of the Inscribed, Escribed, and : Circumscribed Otreles of a Triangle. § 21. (a) Radius of Inscribed Circle. —Let O A (fig. 10) be the centre of the circle inscribed in the triangle ABC and F touching the sides in D, EK, and F. Join OA, OB, and OC. The E angles at D, HE, F are right angles (Eucl. iii.

18), Let BO=a, CA

=), AB=c, and OD

—OE=O0F=r. 22 D C Now ABC=BO

+ COA +A0B Fig. 10.

=hor+hbr+her=hatbt+or=rs ; pares of ABC _ \/s(s — a)(s — b)(s —¢) Ss Ss (8) Radius of Escribed Circles. —Let OD =OE=OF =ra, then ABC=ACO + ABO — BOC =hbrat $cra- hara=hb te – a)ra=Trals —)., area of ABC _ A/s(s – a)(s - b)(s– 6) _ fe –b)(s–c) s-a@ Similarly

C= 8—-a@ ae = Is(s —a)(s—b a er — amd re = = a

whence

and 7%=

MENSURATION

(y) Radius of Circumscribed Circle.—Let AD (fig. 12)=p the | perpendicular from A on the side BC, and AE=2K the diameter

A

E Fig. 11. Fig. 12. of the circle, then (Eucl. vi. C) we have 2Rxp=bxe, therefore 2R x ap=abe, Now ap=2A, where A denotes the area of ABC; fteieas R abe abe

~ 4a 4n/s(5=a)(s—B)(s—c) Example.—Let a=18, b=14, and c=15; then r will be found to be 4, ra 104, 7» 12, 7, 14, and R 8}.

Section I].—PLANE FIGURES CONTAINED BY CURVED Lines.

A. The Cirele.

§ 22. Circumference of a Circle.—If we inscribe in any circle a regular polygon of x sides, and also circumscribe a regular polygon of the same number of sides, it is clear that the perimeter of the circle is intermediate between the perimeters of the inscribed and circumscribed polygons, and that the difference between the peri- meters of the inscribed and circumscribed polygons can be made as small as we please by sufficiently

increasing ». A similar state- meut holds with reference to the areas of the circle and the in- scribed and circumscribed polygons. With the above assumptions it is easily proved that. the circumference of acircle bears a constant ratio to its diameter. Hence we have

: Circumference = C= constant x radius =coustant x 7. It is usual to denote this constant by 2m, and therefore C=2n1=ad, where d is the diameter of the circle.

§ 23. Numerical Value of x.—The constant mw being, as can be easily proved, an interminable decimal, we can only approximate to its value, but this we can do to any degree of accuracy we please.

If s and o denote respectively a side of the inscribed and cireum- scribed polygons of sides, and s’ and o’ a side of the inscribed and circumscribed polygons of 2n sides, it can easily be shown that

= (8) #7 = 2r r—Nr2— (452 j

Ss (a) o/h hay?

where r is the radius of the circle,

If we take r=} we find, by means of these formule, and by assuming the value of s when n=6, that the perimeter of inscribed polygon of 96 sides=3‘140 . . . . , and the perimeter of circum- scribed polygon of 96 sides=3‘142. .. .

From this we learn that the circumference of the circle, in this case m, is greater than 3°140… . and less than3°142…., and therefore as far as the second place of decimals

w=3‘14, By taking greater and greater values of nm we obtain closer and closer approximations to 7.

The preceding method for approximating to the value of m is the simplest afforded by elementary geometry, and is also the oldest ; but better and more rapid methods are furnished by the higher mathematics. The

calculation of has been carried to 707 places of decimals, the following being the first 20 figures in the result: —

3°1415926535897 9323846 .

For all practical purposes it is sufficient to take

355

§ 24. The following table contains the functions of w that are of most frequent occurreuce in mensuration :—

-call a “radian.”

17

| Number. | Logarithm. Number. Logarithm. 7 3‘1415927 | 04971499 ed 9°8696044 | 0-9942997 Qa 6-2831853 | 0°7981799 1 4x | 125663706 | 1-0992099 a 0°0168869 | 2-2275490 di 1:5707968 | 0°1961199 6m dar 1:0471976 | 0-0200286 ft 17724539 | 0°2485750 dor 0‘7853982 | 1-8950899 4x | 0-5235988 | I-7189986 | 3/, | 1-4645919 | o-1657166 ie 0°3926991 | 15940599 1 py 0-2617994 | 1°4179686 = 0°5641896 | 1°7514251 dr 41887902 | 0°6220886 Vo T 2 ? 1 : il = 0°3183099 | 1‘5028501 || ~=—- | 0°28920948 | 1-4503951 : 2/ ar .

6

= 12782395 | 0-1049101 | 3/— 12407010 | 0:0936671

1 3

in 0°0795775 | 2-9007901 $/5— 0°6203505 | 1-7926371 7 4a

180 3

—, | 57°2957795 | 1:7581226 || logem | 1°1447299 | 0-0587030

§ 25. Units of Angular Measwrement.—In measuring lines we select some line of constant length as the standard or unit ; simi- larly in measuring

angles we require to take some angle of constant magnitude as unit angle. The right angle is by its mature the simplest unit Dic angle, but, for convenience, we take the B voth part of a right angle for unit, and call it a degree, which is subdivided into sixty equal parts called minutes,

_and these again into sixty equal parts A

called seconds. For theoretical purposes we define the unit angle to be the angle subtended at the centre of a circle by an are equal to the radius. This angle we In many treatises the radian measure of an angle is called Fie, 13 the circular measure. oars

§ 26. The radian is a constant angle,—Let OA (fig. 18)=are AB =r, then AOB=radian, and let AOD =90°; then

are AD=4X 2rr= har;

aud, since angles at the centre of a circle are proportional to the arcs on which they stand (Eucl. vi. 33), number of degrees in radian AOB_ AB_ or nuinber of degrees in AOD AD ar therefore number of degrees in radian =90°x 2 = 57°° 2957795 =constant.

§ 27. Number of Radians in any Angle.—Let AOC (fig. 18) be any angle, AOB the radian, and AC=s ; then

number of radiansin AOC_ ACs, . one radian AB r

_ 2 . -=;

therefore number of radians in AOC =— ‘

If AOC=90°, then s=4z7, and number of radians= 47 ; there are thus m radians in two and 27 in four right angles.

When r=1 we have number of radians=s, and hence in some treatises for the number of radians in an angle we find the length of the arc given.

§ 28. To transfer from degrecs to radians and conversely.—Let x denote the number of degrees in an angle, and @ the number of

radians in the same, then, since — ee f 180° + wae o _ LBO (a) O=T0° (B) x ae 6.

§ 29. The following table contains the values of @ for values of x up to 180°, and also for minutes and seconds.

: $ g g & | Radi-

a Radian, a Radian. E Radian. || 2 | Radian. § an.

a a a S| 0 || 8 | -000 1 °0174533 |; 61 | 1°0641508 || 121 | 2°1118484 1 | 002909 1 | 0048 2. *0349066 || 62 | 1°0821041 || 122 | 2°1293017 2 | 005818 2 | 0097 3 *0523599 || 63 | 1:0995574 || 123 | 2°1467550 8 | 008727 3 | 0145 4 *0698132 || 64 | 1:1170107 || 124 | 2°1642083 4) 011636 4 | 0194 5 *0872665 || 65 | 1°1844640 || 125 | 2°1816616 5 | 014544 5 | 0242 6 *1047198 || 66 | 1°1519173 || 126; 2:1991149 6 | 017453 6 | 0291 7 *1221730 || 67 | 1°1693706 || 127 | 2°2165682 7 | 020362 7 0339 8 *1396268 || 68 | 1:1868239 || 128 | 2°2340214 8 | 023271 || 8 | 0388 9 *1570796 || 69 | 1°2042772 || 129! 2°2514747 9 | 026180 9 0436

10 “1745329 || 70 | 1°2217305 || 130 | 2°2689280 |! 10 | 029089 i

20) °3490659 |! 80 | 1:3962034 || 140 | 2°4434610 || 20 | 058178

30 *5235988 || 90 | 1°5707963 || 150 | 2-6179939 |, 30 | 087266

40 *6981317 ||100 | 1°7453293 || 160 | 2-7925268 || 40 | 116355

50 *8726646 ||110 | 1°9198622 | 170| 2-9670597 || 50 | 145444

1°0471976 |/120 | 2°0948951 || 180} 3°1415997 || 60 | 174533 |

tude of any one of the m equal triangles of which this polygon is made up. Now in the limit, when 2 is indefinitely increased, P becomes the are AB=s, a result which we symbolize thus— L = P=are AB=s.

eC

As an example of the use of this table we proceed to find the value of 6 when =68° 45’ 17”°8. When 2=68° 9=1‘1868239 , w=40′ O= ‘0116355, w= B’ O= ‘0014544, w=10″ 6= ‘0000485, z= 7″ 6= °0000389, and when x=0““8 d= ‘0000039, therefore when «= 68° 45’ 178 86=1°2000001.

§ 30. Combining the results of §§ 27 and 28 we obtain

Similarly L._,, p=tadius=”.

a= Again, the area of the sector is equal to the area of the polygon when the broken line AB becomes the are AB, that is,

sector= 1) ,, *4=-L*,.. $pxP ~tle_? x me –

(a) ga, whewe Mee =$7rs.

4 180 id ¥ § 34. Let S denote the area of.a sector of a cirele, then, by means ee, of the above result and § 27, we have

er * (a) S=dsr

(B) S=4rd. r=4r°0.

§ 35. We proceed to find the area of a sector of a cirele in the fol- lowing additional cases :—

(a) When the chord of the sector and the radius of the circle are given. —In fig. 14 let AB=2c, and let AC=7, then we have ACR aD. @,

2: ° ac whence ACB and therefore @ is known, and S ean be found by § 34.

ACB has two values, the smaller one giving the area of the minor, and the larger that of the major conjugate sector.

(B) When the chord and height of the chord are given.—Let DE (fig. 14) =h and AB=2c, then

(y) s=rO=— 2. Te

§ 81. Length of Arcs of Cireles. —The following are the more im- portant cases:— : :

(a) In terms of the chord of the arc and the radius of the eircle.— Let AB (fig. 14)=2c, AC=7, and AEB=s, then

AD=}AB=c=rsin$C, whenee C is known, and therefore the are s is found (§ 80, +).

(8) In terms of the height of the arc and the radius of the circle.—

Let DE=Ah=height of arc, then

CD=CE-DE=r-Ah,

gin

and ; cos 4C = cD atih ; AC?=72=AD2+ DC?=c?+(r—h)?, whence

7 ; 2

wanes © le Bomady ell Metre : pee ans , and therefore by previous case the area can be found. e (y) When the chord and angle subtended at the centre are given.

—Let AB (fig. 14) =2c and ACB=8@, then

E sin —— or 7 7 ms sin 46’

therefore area of sector =4r?0=4 (= r x0 sin 40

§ 36. Area of a Circle. —The circle being a sector whose arc is the

whole circumference we obtain at once area of circle=4r x s=}r x 2nr=r*.

An independent proof of this proposition might be given by means of the inscribed and circumscribed polygons, and from the area of a circle the area of a sector can be deduced. The infini- tesimal calculus affords a simple and elegant proof (see § 44).

§ 37. If A denote the area, r the radius, @=27 the diameter, and C the circumference of a circle, we have

E E Fig. 14. Fig. 15. § 82. Huygens’s Approximation to the Length of a Circular Arc.—

Lot AB (fig 15) —p be the chord of the are AEB, and AE~EB~g ms ee eee that of half the arc, then the are AEB=4 (8q – p) approximately. – ae ns i os hal For, let 7 denote the radius, s the arc AEB, and 20 the angle (y) == 8 : r al vw wv = B=p=2AD=2 6=2rsin — ; 2 ACB, then 0—s-. Again, AB=p (ine Pees oe sae –

seed a .. 4 : Cad RE SM vie Ss Whence we see that the area of a circle is obtained by multiplying

d ; ” (a) the square of its radius by r=3‘14159 Now sind = 6 —~ [3 + [5 &e. 5 (g) the radius by half the eircumferenee,

2 1

the square of the circumference by —— = ‘07957

therefore p=2r ea eC) – &e. oY . p ” oe

2r (8\ ar) *|5\2r (8) the square of the diameter by 4r= ‘78539 .

3 3 § 88. Again, from the above formule we deduce

“-7-3 7 Pree (a) pote A= “5641896 x A, Similarly 8q=16r } = ij e Varo ae ce q dr [B\ a +5\ Gr Pe (B) ee — a T

¥ e=2\/ eA =8‘5449077 x A,

thus obtaining radius, diameter, and eircumference from area.

§ 39. Area of a Cireular Ring. —Let r and 7, denote the radii of

the outer and inner circles respect-

ively (fig. 17), then the area of the

space between them

=n —arian(rtry)(r- rl

The circles need not be concentric,

and the reader should note that the

area of the ring is equal to the area

of an ellipse whose major and minor

axes are 7-+7, and r— 7, (see § 51).

g 40. Arca of the Sector of an

Annulus.—Let angle ACB=6@ in fig.

17, then the area of ABED_ .

=sector ACB —sector DCE Fig. 17.

= $770 as $ri 6, = 40(r+ryr— 7) –

2 oe a ee wle- oe ee

Hence, neglecting powers of = hee r

yond the fourth, we obtain

89—P ge cas ‘2th (: ‘Feson)

approximately.

In practice it is sometimes more eonvenient to use the equivalent form

=29 +3(2q-p). s=29 + §(29—p) | _> $33. Arca of Sector of a Circle. — Cc
LE Let the sector be OAB (fig: 16). P Divide the arc AB into x equal parts,

Fig. 16. and draw the chords of these. Let P denote the perimeter of the broken line AB, A the area of the polygou AOB, and p the alti-

Again, let AB=/, DE=1,, and CA-CD=r-r,=A, then

r= “3 and 7,;= – ; therefore

ren=a (+h) and

area of sector=4$0(7+7,)(r -—7,)=40 (A) =th(1+1,).

§ 41. Arca of a Segment of aCirele.—(a) When theradius and the angle subtended at the centre are given.—In fig. 14, let AEB be a segment of a circle, then its arca

=sector ACB — triangle ACB.

= 470 – 477 sin 6 (S$ 9, 34)

=4$r°?(–sin). If the segment be greater than a semicircle sing is negative and the formula becomes

47°(0 +sin6@),

as is also geometrically evident: We might in a similar manner find the area of a segment of a circle

(8) when the chord and radius are given, ‘(y) when the chord and its height are given,

(5) when the radius and height of the chord are given,

(e) when the chord and angle subtended by the chord are given.

In all these cases the method of proceeding is obvious, a segment being the difference between a sector and a triangle.

§ 42. Area of a Lune.—Let ADB and ACB (fig. 18) be two seg- ments of circles, then the area of the lune ADBC D

= segment ADB — segment ACB.

Hence if we so choose our data that we can determine the areas of the two segments we have only to take their difference to find the area of the lune. A B

§ 43, Area of a Circular Zone. ~— ‘ Let AB and CD (fig. 19) be two Fig. 18. parallel chords, then the area of the zone ABCD

=circle — segment AHB – segment DFC; or =segment AED + trapezium ABCD + segment BGC =2 segment AED + trapezium ABCD.

§ 44. The INFINITESIMAL CALCULUs (g.v.) furnishes a simple and elegant proof of the formule for the areas of a circle and a sector. If y=¢(x) be the equation to a plane curve referred to rectangular

H

F Fig. 19.

Fig. 20.

axes, then the area between the curve, the axis of x, and two ordinates corresponding to the abscisse a and 6 is represented by

the integral Pa “ple)dee. a

Let 2 and y be the coordinates of P (fig. 20), then if OP=r the equation to the circle is y2=7r? —z?, and therefore

. Ss area of quadrant AOB=/” VP? — da

0

‘Te. she #2 Poe le = & eo, dr i ia Ay: sin + ? | z *

and therefore area of whole circle = 27°.

§ 45. If the equation to a plane curve be given in polar coordi- nates, the area bounded by two radii and the curve is equal to

6

A * 20 ‘

01

where 6, and , are the values of corresponding to the limiting radii.

19

For example, let AOP (fig. 20) be @, then arca of circle

Qarr? sia ar? as before.

The area of a sector can be found in a similar manner.

B. The Parabola.

§ 46. Length of an Are of any Plane Curve.—If a plane curve be referred to rectangular axes, then the length of any arc of the

wma | 14 (BY Pan {14 (2)

taken between proper limits, .¢., the extremities of the arc. See INFINITESIMAL CALCULUS. § 47. Are of a Parabola.—Let the axes of coordinates be the axis

Fig. 21.

of x and the tangent at the vertex A (fig. 21), then, the equation to the parabola being y?=2mx, where m=2a=4 latus rectum, we

lave da

i. 2 , and hence

y ae Ap-/ 4 14+ Et ay 0 m

yy? + me m 4 ty? +m ; ae ee a therefore whole arc PAP’= DSi +m? + mlog, (aie m Since y?=2mzx,, the formula may be written

are PAP’ =\/4z? +9? 4. Yi log. (key , 2a, Yy § 48. Arca of a Parabola.—Taking the equation to the parabola in the form y*= 4px, we get

fo area of segment PAP” (fig. a1)=2/ 2 nuda

ay8 —ipha,t=$2,9- 33

From these formule we see that the area of a parabolic segment varies directly as the cube of the square root of the abscissa, and directly as the eube of the ordinate, and that it is equal to 3 rectangle PQQ’P”, or 3 triangle PTP”.

A similar relation holds for the segment cut off by any chord, and thus the area of any parabolic segment can be determined in terms of any data that are sufficient to de- termine the segment.

§ 49. Area of a Parabolic Zone.—Let PM (fig. 22) =y,, QN=y, AM=a2,, AN=a,, and let the ordinates be inclined to the axis at an angle a.

Area of zone PQQ’P’=segment PAP’ — segment QAQ’

3 3

é. — Sane. Fig. 22.

2

Now y} = 4px, and y; =4pa,, therefore p4- p, and hence on Ly — 2.

substituting for p we have area of zone :

ye – “) : By =o :

=$(x, — 2% (Bau sina=¥$ = (y? + Yo+y?2)sina.

1-2) ag BF yg Ott Miva t Ys) C. The Ellipse.

§ 50. Cirewmference of an Ellipse.—The eqnation to the ellipse

2 2

ae ao : being — + 5 =1, whereaand bare the semiaxes, we have @

20

dy ba Sa, a ae OO

and therefore (fig. 23)

2 22) L a? — ey a —F (3 da, where e=—;— at — a § ;

This integral may be shown to be equal to the series

ra @ 41.384 1. 3. be ™ a” 2 F.0 7,6.” —)” a rapidly converging series when ¢ is a small fraction. By taking more and more terms of the above series we can B dag as nearly aS we please to the circumference of an ellipse. For example, we have quadrant AB KX

7 e Ta eN\s

a } (2a)? + (26) ! 3 nearly. Fig. 23

arc of quadrant AB= ‘ .

/

2

§ 51. Area of an Ellipse. —We have at once

a a : area = of yaad = e Va? ada. 0 aly

a But A /a? — x*de: is the area of the quadrant of a circle of radius a. Thus

2

area of ellipse = 4-7 7 (§ 44)

=7ab.

The following proof is worth the reader’s attention. By a well- known theorem in conic scctions the orthogonal projection of a circle on a given plane is an ellipse. Now, if A denote the area of any plane figure, A’ the area of the projected figure, and @ the angle between the planes it can easily be shown, by dividing the two areas by planes indefinitely near to each other and perpendicular to the common section of the planes, that é

Acosé=A’. In the case of the circle and ellipse A=a? and cosa ;

: b hence area of ellipse= ma? x —-= ab.

8 52. Area of an Ellipse in terms of a Pair of Conjugate Diame- ters.—Let a’ and 0’ denote the semiconjugate diameters, and a the angle between them, then by an elementary property of the ellipse

ab=a’b’sina; hence area of ellipse =7a’b’sina. D. The Hyperbola.

§ 53. Arca of a Segment of an Hyperbola.—The equation of an

2

hyperbola being a – x =

» we have Oa y= No -a*; hence (fig. 24) Lin area of the segment PAP’ = 2 zd Vx? = ada a ae == ablog. pas a a

=241- aloge(2 + Hs) ;

§ 54. Areca of a Sector of an Hyperbola.—The sector PAPC is equal to triangle PCP’ — segment PAP’ 21 y ot a > b)

=ablog.(“1.4.3) . a

5. Area of a Zone of an Hyperbola.—In fig. 24 the zone

= XY — MY, — abloge(

=segment QAQ’ – segment PAP’

= Belg — ablog,(a tn) — ayy, + ab log,(EP i) bl aY> aR bar, = LoYo — XY) — WO LOG. ay, + bx, ’ where iL i

%, y, and a, Y_ are the coordinates of P and Q respectively.

MENSURATION

If the axes of coordinates be inclined at an angle a, we multiply the above results by sina to obtain the correct areas.

Q

Q Fig. 24.

§ 56. Area bounded by an Hyperbola and its Asymptotes.—The equation of an hyperbola referred to its asym ptotes is of the form ey =C. Let CM’ (fig. 25)=2,, CM=2., Q’M’=y,,Q M=y,, then, if a be the angle between the asymptotes,

area of quara’= / *ysinade x2

‘ x1 “dar ‘ x , Ys =csinaf —=c’sin alog,(21) esinalog. 4a |, tg bo x 1 C

Fig. 25.

2

. c2 since 2, =— and 2,=—. 41 Yo a? +b? ; Qab Now C= 4 and sina= se and therefore (a) area Sablog.(== sabog ¥*-) : Xq al Again, let MM’=2,~~2, =p, then CH= XY, =UYg= PYY2 | therefore Yo“ mq’ — 2% Jog (2) sina— 222 Jo (22) sina. a) a Q Yo. \ : Yo~~“N . yy

Again, since day, sina= he? sina=ho,y,sina , triangle QCM =Q’CM’, and hence the sector QCQ’=QMM’‘Q’.

The corresponding results for a rectangular hyperbola are ob- tained by substituting in the above formule $a? for c? and 1 for sin a.

we have

Srorion II].—PuLANE IRREGULAR, RECTILINEAL, AND CURVI-LINEAL FIGURES.

A. Irregular Rectilineal Figures.

§ 57.. The area of any irregular polygon can be found by dividing it into triangles, trapeziums, &c., in the most convenient manner, and adding together all the areas. For example,

ABCDEF (fig. 26)=CKB + BKHA+ AHF + FGE+ EGID + DIC.

iN B

A C G F HB 4 FCG D re

Fig. 26. “Fig. 27.

It may sometimes happen that some of the component figures have to be subtracted instead of added; for example,

ABCDE (fig. 27)—AFHE+ BCG – AFGB – EDH.

§ 58. Again, the irregular rectilineal figure P\P,. . . PsPy (fig. 28) can be broken up into a series of triangles and trapeziunis as shown in the figure, and hence its area can be found.

§ 59. A figure made up of straight lines may be measured by cutting it up into triangles by lines drawn from some one vertex to the others. For example (fig. 29),

ABCDEF=ABC + ACD + ADE+ AEF.

If the polygon be concave some of the triangles will have to be subtracted.

F

it P. P, By

Fig. 28. Fig. 29. § 60. Area of a Polygon in terms of the Coordinates of tts Angular

Points.—Let the coordi- nates of P, Q, R (fig. 30) be

(a, 1); (oy Yo), and (Xs, Ys) respectively, and let the axes be inclined at an angle a Draw PL, QM, and RN parallel to OY, then

LM =OM- OL =2,-2%,

MN=ON – OM=a, – %,, and

NL =ON-OL =%,—- 2.

D

Fig. 30.

Now PQR=PLMQ+QMNR- PLNR.

But PLMQ=PLM+QMP=PLM+QLM =$PL‘LMsina+4QM °‘LMsin(180° —- a) (§ 9, 8) = 4(@_ — %)(Y, + Yo) Sin a.

Similarly QMNR=}3(a, – %)(Yo +3) Sina,

and PLNR =4(2,3 — 2,)(y3+ y;) sin a; hence

area of PQR=$sina{y,(a», — 25) + Yo(23— 21) + Y5(% — Xe) } ; or in the notation of determinants =hksinag |1 1 1

%y %y Xs

Yi Yo Ys When thie axes are rectangular sina=sin90°=1, and the formula for the area becomes a {yy (aq — %3) + ales = y) + Y(— ay) }

1 1

< %y Wy By

Yi Yo Ys

§ 61. The area of any rectilineal figure of ” sides can be found by taking any point within the figure and joining it to the n vertices of the figure, thus dividing it into nm triangles the area of each of which can be obtained as in the preceding case.

We may, however, find the area of the figure directly.

For example, in fig. 31

PQRST = PP’T’T +TT’S’S + SS’R’R — RR’‘Q’Q – QQ’P’P,

and in fig. 82 . PQRSTU =PP’U’‘U + RR’Q’Q + TT’S’S — PP’Q’Q – RR’S’S – TT’U’U.

Fig. 31.

Fig. 32.

B. Irregular Curvilineal Figures.

§ 62. Length of any Curve.—If we divide the given arc into an even number of intervals and re- B gard these as approximately circu- lar, we can find an approximation D EB to the length of the arc by means of Huygens's formula, § 32. For example, if we divide ABC (fig. 33) into four parts in D, B, and EH, and draw the chords AD, AB, DB, BE, Fic. 33 BO, and EC, then A Oo C are AC=AD+DB+BE+EC+3(AD+DB+ BE+ EC – AB – BC)

approximately.

21

For other methods of approximation, see Rankine's Rules and Tables. :

§ 68. Area of an Irregular Curvilineal Figure.—For rough ap- oe the following, called the trapezoidal method, may be used :—

Divide A,A, (fig. 34) into m equal parts, and through the points

Ane Ana

Fig. 34.

of division draw the ordinates, called by surveyors offsets, A,P,, A,P,, &c.

Let A,P,=s,, AgP,=s,, &c., AnPa=Sn, and

dpa ddim. 2 Re hyeel,

Join P,P,, P,P;, &c., then the area of the polygon AyAnP»P,Py =A A,PLP s+ MoM PLPL a . . 5 , "dn utpPaPact =$a(s, +3) +$0(8,53) . » +40(82-1+8n) (§ 18, a) =a{4(51+5n)+5g+53+ . . . .+Sn-r1}-

If we take uw sufficiently great the difference between the area of the polygon and the curvilineal figure can be made as small as we please, in other words, the smaller we make a the more accurately will the above formula represent the area of the curvilineal figure.

The curve may either be wholly convex or wholly concave to the line A,An, or partly con- vex and partly concave.

§ 64. Simpson's Rule.—Let A,An (fig. 34) be divided into an even number of equal parts, and as before through the points of division draw the ordinates A,P,, AgPs, &e.

a part of 1 gaye bi = = ae vided; join P,P3, and throug ton BS Fic. 36. P, draw BC parallel to P,P; to i & 8

meet A,P, in B and A3P; in. Conceive a parabola to be drawn through P,P,P, having its axis parallel to the ordinates, then

A,P,P,P3;A,= trapezium A,P,DP,A,+parabolic segment P\P,P, =a(s, + 83) 4a {sy~(s, +53) } =ha(s, + 439 +55) « Now when the points P,,P.,P, are near cach other the parabolie curve will coincide very nearly with the given curve; hence

A,P,P.P3A3= 4a(s, + 48,+53) very nearly.

P. p D i"

As A, A, Ay

Similarly AgPaP,A5= $a(8,+ 484+8,), &¢. ; hence whole area of figure = ha {5,+5n +2(83 +55 +2… +Sn-2) F4(Q rst… + $n-1)} 3

whence the rule:—add together the two extreme ordinates, twice the sum of the intermediate odd ordinates, and four times the sum of the even ones, and multiply this result by one-third of the common distance between the ordinates; the result is the area,—aceurately if _ the curved boundary be the arc of a parabola, in other cases ap- proximately.

The curve may either be wholly convex or wholly concave to the line A,An, or partly convex and partly concave, provided in the latter case the points of contrary flexure occur only at the odd ordinates, for otherwise the intermediate arcs could not be even approximately parabolic. When points of contrary flexure occur ordinates may be drawn at these points, and the intermediate arcs being found separately may be added to obtain the whole area.

§ 65. In the two preceding sections we investigated two formule for approximating to the areas of curvilinear figures. We now proceed to consider the subject more generally.

Ppx Ep Pret

Ai Ap Ap» Anti Fig. 37.

Let the equation to the curve P,P,Pn+1 (fig. 37) agree with the

equation y= A+Ba+Ca?+ .... +Ka”for n+1 points between P, and P,»41, then the area of the curvilinear figure bounded by the straight lines AyP,, A,Anti, and AnsiPn4i and the curve PyPn41 will agree very nearly with the curvilinear figure bounded by the same straight lines and the curve whose equation is y=A+Ba+ C22?+.... +Ka, and the greater the number of common points the closer will be the agreement.

Let A,Anii be divided into x equal parts, each equal to h, then AjAnp=nh. Now

whenz=0, y=y,=—A; when 2=h, y=Yy.=A+Bh+Ch?+ .... +Kh”;

when 7=2h, y=yg=A+B(2h)+C(2h)?+ .. . . +K(2h)”; when = % yoo pean hse BOph) + OL ph)* > ae . : + K(ph)*; wheu — yntilamts hem ROCKS nae . ; + K(nk)*. From these »+1 equations the »+1 quantities A, B,....K

can be determined as funetions of y,, Ya, . . + + Yn4i1, and h. Next let A,Anji be divided into m equal parts each equal to h.

Thus mh=nh and hence hah Now the area of the rectangle ApApyiP,R=ApAp4i X ApPp. But A,Pp=yp=A+B(ph)+C(ph)+ .... +K(ph)

2

=A+BRm mn o(2”) ” +K(2mt) m m m since i ; and ApApy aha ; therefore area of A,R nh \ & p pe « nh > ty Buh gt Cnr 3 +... +Kn”h meri §° Hence the area of the whole figure 7 Pee. foe , 2B anol” nee ie , ore Bigs nh mm + Buh gt Cath st .. + Kain So SH 9 as – Sn L,,-..™ A ed Bnh-s + Cn*h; Pa ha siete eet Kanth” i where S,=1% +2743″ + a Now if we take the limit of each of the terms 8 8, 8 S., m? mi? m3? °° °° mnt? we obtain area of curvilincar figure B C K) mh. Bete nthe —_ nh n +p nht anh Be a ahs +e ‘‘

From this general result we can deduce ‘‘ Simpson’s Rule” and also another rule called ‘* Weddle’s Rule.”

Thus let n=2; that is, assume that the curve under consideration has-three points in common with the curve whose equation is y=A+Bau+Cx*, t.¢e., with a parabola, then

YW=A, Yg=A+Bh +Ch?, Y3=A+2Bh+ 4Ch?.

Now the area is approximately

=2h{ A +4B2h +40 2°72}

= §h{6A+6Bh + 8Ch?}

=$h{y+ 4. +y3}, Simpson’s Rule. If we now put x=6, we have area of curvilinear figure

=6h {A + 4B6h+ 4CO7A? + 4D6%R3 + LEGS + AFORE + TC6SA5 } Now y= A, Yo=A+Bh+Ch?+ .... +GA8,

Y7=A+ B(6h)+C(6h)?+ 2… G(6h)8,

From this system of equations we can determine A, B, ©,... G, and substituting the values so obtained in the above expression we obtain the following remarkable formula for the approximate area:

area = yh { (1 +Y3+Y5t+Yz) + Yat 5(Yo+Y4tYo)} .

This formula, called Weddle's Rule, gives the closest approximation to the curvilinear area that can be obtained by any simple rule.

We are now in a position to find the approximate area of any irregular plane figure. For the given figure can be divided into plane rectilinear and curvilinear figures, the areas of which can be separately determined by the rules already given. For example, APQRS (fig. 38)

=ABC+APD+BRC- DQB- ASC.

R Fig. 38. PART II. SOLIDS. Section I. Sontps CONTAINED BY PLANES.

A. Prisms, Pyramids, and Prismatoids.

§ 66. Volume of a Right Prism.—First let the prism be a rect- angular parallelepiped (fig. 39), and let the side AB contain a units of length, BC 0 units of length, and CD c units of length. If we divide AB into a equal parts, BC into 6 equal parts, and CD into ¢ equal parts, and if, through the points of division we draw planes parallel to the sides of the parallelepiped, these planes will divide it into a series of parallelepipeds, whose edges are each equal to the unit of length. Each horizontal layer contains ad of these cubes, and sinee there are ¢ Fj layers the whole number of cubes ig. 39. will be abc. But each of these is the unit of volume, and therefore

volume of ABCD =abe=ab x c=area of base ABC x altitude c,

In the above demonstration we have assumed the edges to be commensurable, but from § 2 it follows that the proof will hold also when the edges are incommensurable. If the parallelepiped be cut by a plane BGE it will be divided into two equal triangular right prisms, and hence volume of righttriangular prism = 4ad x c=areaof its base x altitude. Since every prism can be divided into triangular prisms as in fig. 40, we have at once volume of right prism A'ABCDE=A'ABC + A'ACD + A'ADE = ABC x BB'+ ACD x CC'+ ADE x DD' =(ABC+ ACD + ADE) x altitude (since BB'=CC' = DD' =altitude) =area of base ABCDE x altitude.

Fig. 40. Fig. 41.

§ 67. Volume of an Oblique Prism.—Draw the right section A” B”C”D”E” (fig. 41), and let A’ denote its area and A the area of the base A’B’C’D’H’. Let 7 denote the length of the prism, h its altitude, and a the angle between the planes A’B’/C’D’R’ and A“ BCD” EK”,

Conceive the part above the right section placed at the other extremity of the prism. Then we have a right prism, whose volume= A’ x1 (§ 66); but A’=Acos a, since A’ is the projection of A (§ 51),

and b= h ; hence cosa

volume= A’ x/=Acosa x hss i rans COS a

or the volume of any prism is equal to the area of its base multi- plied by its altitude.

tg EE

| | | |

MENSURATION

§ 68. Surface of a Prism.—Since the lines A”B”, B’C”, &c. (fig. 41), which make up the perimeter of the right section are all in one plane perpendicular to the parallel edges A’A’”’, B’B”, &c., they are perpendicular to these edges and are therefore the altitudes of the parallelograms A’B’B’” A”, B’C’C’’B”, &c., respectively. The lateral surface of the prism is equal to the sum of these parallelo- grams, and therefore =A’A” x A”B” + B’B” x BYC” + = A’AM(A”B’ + BiG za A’A” =B/B” =&c. ; or the lateral surface of any prism is equal to the perimeter or its right section multiplied by the length of the prism.

If the prism be right, that is, if the faces be perpendicular to the base, then its lateral surface is equal to the perimeter of its base inultiplied by its length.

The whole surface of any prism is obtained by adding to the lateral surface the areas of its bases.

§ 69. If the prism be regular, that is, if the bases be regular polygons, then

since

180° n of sides each of length a, and therefore

yolume=a?x — cot 18 ×1, : 4 v0)

area of base =a? x 7 cot (§ 18, +), where » is the number

where h is the altitude of the prism. Again, if the prism be right and regular, then

its lateral surface = nah + 2a? x 7 cot 180″ : nu

$70. Volume of a Pyramid. —Let VABC (fig. 42) be for sim- plicity a triangular pyramid. Divide VA into » equal portions, and through the points of section draw planes parallel to the base ABC, and Vv through BC and through the inter- sections of these planes with VBC draw planes parallel to VA. Let h denote the altitude of the pyramid, then the distance of the base of the 7» prism from the vertex V

aa kNL

and, if A denote the area of ABC, we A have

base of 78 prism 77h?_ 1 7? B

< ar er te De since, by a well-known theorem in solid geometry, the areas of sections of a pyramid made by planes parallel to the base are proportional to the squares of their altitudes.

Thus we have

2

base of 7*® prism = A, and therefore n

2

its volume=—— A x x ($ 67) nN vi)

hA

=o 2 . ne” Therefore volume of whole pyramid ROP sk EPH bAL,

=hAL,

or the volume of any pyramid is equal to onc-third of the area of its base multiplied by its height.

From this we see that pyramids on equal bases are to one another as their altitudes.

If the pyramid be regular, that is, if its base be a regular polygon the perpendicular through whose centre passes through the vertex,

its volume = } x a? x Sve xh.

2

un + 1)(20 + a) Aw x4; 6 ?

‘ N= 3

§ 71. Surface of a Regular Pyramid.—The lateral surface of the regular pyramid VABCDEF (fig. 48) is equal to the sum of the areas of the m congruent triangles which make up the lateral surface of the pyramid.

Now area of triangle VAB=3AB x VG; hence whole lateral surface=4nAB‘VG=4nal, where / is the slant height and a the length of the side of the base.

Again, if VO=h=altitude of pyramid, we have

2 3

1=VG=/V0?+0G?= fare cot? ~°

cS ? VT

23

therefore whole surface = base + lateral surface

180° 2 ° ih ee ete f+ = cot? = 4 a 4

n

Fig, 43.

§ 72. The Prismatoid.—If we have a polyhedron whose bases are two polygons in parallel planes, the number of sides in each being the same or different, and if we so join the vertices of these bases that each line in order forms atriangle B with the preceding line and one side of either base, the figure so formed is called a ‘‘prismatoid,” and holds in stereometry a position similar to that of the trapezium in planimetry. To make the investiga- tion of the volume of the prisinatoid as simple as possible, we take the case where the lower base is a polygon of four and the upper one or three sides.

Let ABCDEFG (fig. 44) be the pris- matoid, of which ABC or A, is the upper and DEFG or Ag; the lower base, , and let HLM be the Fig. 44. section equidistant from the bascs. Take any point P in this section and join it to the corners of the prismatoid. We thus divide the polyhedron into two pyramids PABC and PDEFG, and a series of polyhedra of which CPDE may be taken as a specimen.

Let & be the altitude of the prismatoid, then 4h is the altitude of each of the pyramids PABC, PDEFG, and hence ‘

volume of PABC =hA,, and volume of PDEFG=3hA3.

Again join PH, PL, and LD, then volume of CPDE=2 volume of CPDL, since DE=2HL, and volume of CPDL=2 volume of CPHL, hence volume of CPDE=4 volume of CPHL.

Now volume of CPHL=3h x area of HLP, and therefore volume of CPDE=4h x area of HLP.

Similarly the volume of every such polyhedron is $f x the area of its own portion of the middle section. Hence if A, denote the area of the middle section we have

volume of prismatoid = §1A,$hAy hAg = $h(A,4A, Ay). § 73. Volume of the Frustwm of a Pyramid.—Let A’A”’B’B’’C’C” (fig. 45) be a frustum of the pyramid VA’B’C’, and let A, and Ag

denote the areas of the ends A’B/C’, A/”B”C” respectively. Let VP=x=altitude of pyramid VA”B”C”, and let PQ==altitude of

frustum. m _% \P_As ___ An/As Now (=e) a whence e-J s ay

24

Again frustum = V.A’B/C’ – VA”’B’O” =3{ Ay(a+h) – Age}

=1{ a,(hr/Ay) Af ha/Ag)\ “VA ~V/ Ag] 8\N/ AV Aa = §h(Ay+V/A,A,+A,) ; a formula which applies to the frusta of all pyramids regular and irregular. The above result may be otherwise expressed. For, let A’B’ =a,

and A”’B’” =a, then, if A”B’C” be a section equidistant from the ends of the frustum, A”B” =a_=4(a, + ag).

Now A,=paj and A3=pa? (see § 70); hence A,=area of A”B’C” =pa? = (a5) which gives

4A,=pat + 2payay + pa? =A, 2\/A\A, Ag; therefore volume of frustum

= §h(2A,+2VA,A,+2A,)=3h(A, +4A,4A,) 5 or the volume of the frustum of a pyramid is obtained by adding the areas of the ends to four times the area of the middle section, and multiplying the sum by one-sixth of the alti- tude.

The above result can be ob- tained at once from § 72, since A’B’C’A”’B””“C” is a prismatoid with similar bases.

§ 74. Surface of the Frustum of a Regular Pyramid.—In fig. 45 let the perimeter of A;=p,, that of A,=p,, and that of A3=Dz, and let VD’=i,, VD” =1,, and therefore D’D’” = VD’- VD” =1,-2,=1. The lateral surface of the frustum is

Fig. 45. equal to the difference between the lateral surfaces of the pyramids

VA’B’C’ and Varn’ O”, = 47,1 — dps. ag 0b. we have 1) = 3 Nag ps Pi- Ps therefore lateral surface of frustum

2 2 + 3

AC me

or the lateral surface of the frustum of a regular pyramid is equal to the product of the slant height and the perimeter of the section equidistant from the ends.

Otherwise.—The top and base being regular polygons, the inclined faces are congruent trapeziums. Let Z be the height of each trapezium, and let there be n of them, then

area of each face 7 (Pt +f) , 2X

But, since Dil iy

and

and therefore the area of lateral surface = (1 +03) =lp,.

§ 75. If h the altitude of the frustum be given, we deduce the slant height and then proceed as before. Thus let VP=hz,,

ae and using the same notation as in §$ 72, 73, and 74 we lave

i… ee.” , which gives, 2047 4s)_ yh hy-hy a- Gs E By Ge | Ch =e Again = 22h? +42 cot? 180 ang 1-(= 4) hi; n ay

whence 7 is known since 7, is known in terms of h.

When the pyramid is irregu- lar the lateral planes are non- congruent trapeziums, the areas of which can be found separately by § 12, and hence the whole surface.

§ 76. Volume of the Frustum of a Triangular Prism.—Let A denote the area of ABC (fig. 46), and let hy, ha, hg be the altitudes of A’, B’, C’ respectively with reference to the plane ABC. Divide the frustum into three pyramids B’A’AC, B’ABC, and B’A’CC’ by the planes B/AC and B’A’C. These three pyramids are respectively equal to BA’AC, B’ABC, and ABCC’; hence volume of frustum = 3h, A + gh. A + 4h, A

=gA(h, +h, +hs).

Fig. 46.

MENSURATION

§ 77. If the prism be right or oblique, the volume of a frustum is equal to one-third of the area of its right section multiplied by the sum of the parallel edges. For divide the frustum AA’B/C’ (fig. 47) into two frusta by a plane A”B’C” of area A at right angles to the edges, then

AA’B’C’= AA”B’O” + A” A’B’C’ _ PA(AA” of BB” + CC”) +4A (A’AY + B’B” +C’C”) = tA(AA” + BB’ +CC” + AA” + B/B’ + CrC”y = 5A (AA’+ BB’+CC’),

Again, since every prism can be divided into triangular prisms, we can find by repeated applications of the above proposition the volume of the frustum of any prism whatever. For example, if

B

rN

Fig. 47. Fig. 48,

the base of the frustum of a right prism AA’B’C’D’ (fig. 48) be a rectangle 12 feet by 6 fect, and the parallel edges in order 6, 4, 10, and 12 feet, then A=area of base=12 × 6=72 square feet. Frustum = ABCA’B’C’ + ADCA’D’U’ = 4x $A(AA’+ BB’+CC’) +4 x $A(AA’ + CC’ + DD’) =¢A(2AA’+20C’+ BB’ + DD’) =576.

§ 78. Volume of a Wedge.—The wedge (fig. 49) being merely the frustumn of a triangular prism, we have at once

volume=}A(FE +AD+BC), where A is the area of its right section ; otherwise, the wedge may be con- B Cc sidered a prismatoid Fig. 49 : g. 49. whose upper base is a straight line, and hence its volume= 3h(4A,+ As), since A,=0.

B. Regular Polyhedra.

§ 79. The regular polyhedra are five in number, namely, the tetrahedron, cube, octahedron, dodeeahedron, and icosahedron, whose solid angles are formed respectively by three equilateral triangles, three squares, four equilateral triangles, three pentagons, and five equilateral triangles.

Since a regular polyhedron admits of having a sphere inscribed within it and described about it, it can easily be shown that the volume of the polyhedron

Tv o T cos— cot?— =a° x a os — – 5; 24 (v =) (mn at) } +’ — cos{ —+ — }eos{ — —- — mm 2 m aud from § 18, y, it follows that the surface of the polyhedron ants in i = q cots where ¢=the number of faces, m =the number of faces in each solid angle, n=the number of edges in each face, and a=the length of each side.

The following table contains the surfaces and volumes for the five regular polyhedra whose edge is 1.

Polyhedron.

Surface. Volume.

1°7320508

6-0000000

3°4641016 20°6457788 8°6602540

071178511 10000000

0°4714043

76631189

2°1816950

MENSURATION

The surface and volume of a regular polyhedron whose edge is a is obtained by multiplying the surface and volume of a similar polyhedron whose edge is 1 by a* and a® respectively.

Srction 1]. SOLIDS CONTAINED BY SURFACES WHICH ARE NOT ALL PLANES.

A. The Cylinder.

§ 80. Volume of a Cylinder (fig. 50).—Inscribe in the cylinder a olygonal prism of which the number of sides may be increased indefinitely. Then in the limit the base of.the prism becomes the pase of the cylinder, and the volume of the prism the volume of the cylinder. Now by § 67 we have voluine of prism =area of base x altitude; hence volume of cylinder =area of base x altitude.

§ 81. Surface of a Right Cylinder.—As above, in the limit the base of the prism becomes the base of the cylinder, and the surface of the prism the surface of the cylinder. Now the lateral surface of prism

=perimeter of right section x length

=perimeter of base x length, in the case of a right prism (§ 68); hence lateral surface of right cylinder=circumference of base x length.

Vv

A

Fig. 50. Fig. 51.

B. The Cone. § 82. Volume of a Cone (fig. 51).—Inscribe within the cone a pyramid of which the number of sides may be indefinitely in-

creased, then in the limit the base of the pyramid becomes the base of the cone and the volume of the pyramid the volume of the cone.

By § 70 volume of pyramid = § base x altitude, ani hence volume of cone=4 base x altitude. § 83. Volume of the Frustum of a Cone.—From § 78 we find that the volume of the frustum of a pyramid = §h(A, + VAjAg + As) 3 hence, since in the limit the frustum of the pyramid becomes the frustum of the cone, we have

volume of conical frustum = $h(A,‘VA,A, Az),

where A, and A, are the areas of the terminating planes of the frustum. ,

Let the terminating planes be circles of radii r, and rs, then volume of frustum

=4h(mr? + aryrs + 72) = bah(rit+7yrgt75) Again, by the same section we have volume of frustum of pyramid =4/(A, + 4A,+A3),

therefore volume of conical frustum=$2h(ri+4r3+73), where r, is the radius of the circular section parallel to the ter- ninating planes and equidistant from them.

§ 84. Surface of a Right Cone.—The lateral surface of a regular pyramid is by § 71

=4perimeter of base x slant height ;

hence, since in the limit the surface of the pyramid becomes the sur- face of the cone, the lateral surface of a right cone is equal to half the circumference of its base multiplied by the slant height.

Thus the lateral surface of a right cone of slant height 7 and the radius of whose base is 7 is equal to

BxXQrrxXl=arl,

and whole surface=lateral surface + area of base =amrl+nrr? = ar(l + r) 3 Again, if h, the altitude of the cone, be given, we have l=N +P,

and therefore whole surface=ar(Vi2+77 +7).

§ 85. Surface of the Frustum of a Right Cone.—The lateral surface of the frustum of a regular pyramid is equal to the product of thie slant height and the perimeter of its middle section (§ 74); hence

25

in the limit we find that the lateral surface of the frustum of a right cone is equal to the product of its slant height and the cir- cumference of the section equidistant from its parallel faces.

Let r; and rg denote the radii of the ends of the frustum, and 7 the length of the slant height, then ; 7,=4(71 +73) =radius of middle section,

and therefore lateral surface =2mr, x 7= 2m x (7, +73) X2=al(r, +75) 5 and whole surface = wr? + w1(r, +73) + 772. If h, the altitude of the frustum, be given, we have

t=Vh24 (7-73).

C. The Sphere.

§ 86. Surface of a Spherical Zone.—Let AB (fig. 52) be a small] arc of the sphere, and Iet AA’, BB’ be perpendicular to the axis XX’, to find the surface of the zone generated by the are AB. Join AB, and draw OP perpendicular to AB, .. BD parallel to XX’, and PP’ “ parallel to AA’ or

BB’. The chord AB generates the frustum of a cone, whose lateral surface =2nPP’ x AB.

But, since the triangles ABD and OPP’ are similar,

Ab. OR i jes Bb PP’) Fig. v2. therefore area of conical frustum =27.0P. BD =27.O0P. A’B’.

Similarly the area of the frustum generated by BO=22.0Q.B’C’.

But in the limit when the chords AB, BO, &c., are indefinitely diminished, the perpendiculars OP, OQ, &c., become each = 7, and hence by summing all the areas we get in the limit

area of zone=2rxr x (projection of arc on axis of revolution). Hence the convex surface of a segment of a sphere is equal to the circumference of a great circle multiplied by the height of the seg- ment or zone.

§ 87. Surface of a Sphere.—The whole sphere being a zone whose height is 27, we obtain at once

surface of sphere=2ar x 2r=4m7″ or the surface of a sphere is equal to four great circles.

The total surface of the cylinder circumscribing the sphere of radius 7 is 6rr?, hence the surface of the sphere = 3 surface of cir- cumscribing cylinder.

§ 88. Surface of w Lune, a Spherical Triangle, and a Spherical Polygon. — It is shown in spherical trigonometry that

(a) the area of a lune included between two great circles of a sphere of radius r, and whose inclination is @ radians, is

26rs (g) the area of a spherical triangle whose angles are A, B, C is {(A+B+C-=-7)r°; (y) the area of a spherical polygon of r sides is {P- (r -2)r}r®, where P is the sum of its angles.

§ 89. Measurement of Solid Angles.—A convenient unit for the measurement of plane angles is the ‘‘radian.” If we assume that each unit of surface of a sphere subtends the saime solid angle at the ceutre, we can deduce a very convenient unit for the measurement of solid angles. This unit, which has received the name ‘‘stera- dian,” we define to be the solid angle subtended at the centre of a sphere by a portion of the surface whose area is 7°.

§ 90. Number of Steradians in an Angle.—Let A be the angle at the centre of a sphere, and let S be the portion of the surface of the sphere which it intercepts, then

number of steradians in A_ S

1 fi

For example, if A be a plane solid angle, S=a hemisphere =2rr?; hence the number of steradians B D

: : S D4 in a plane solid angle Ao Ss and therefore the nnmber of steradians in _, the solid angle at apoiut=4x. Thissolid angle is sometimes called a steregon.

Hence, if we can find the surface sub- tended by any solid angle, we can always find its magnitude in terms of the unit solid angle. — C

§ a1. Ppisane of a Sphere.—Let ABC A Fig. 58.

(fig. 58) be the quadrant of a circle, draw DB and DC tangents to it, then, if AD be joined and the whole ot be conceived as AVi, — 4

= Tv,

26

rotating round AB, ABD, ABC, and ABDC will generate a conc, a heniisphere, and a cylinder respectively.

Now draw two parallel planes EFGH and E’F’G’H’ very near each other and perpendicular to AB, and draw FF’ and GQ’ parallel to AB, then, by § 80,

volume generated by EHH’E’=7EH?x EF’, EGQ’E’ =rKG? x EF’, » of EFF’E’ =cEF? x EEX’. Thus volume generated by EFF’E’ + volume generated by EGG’H’ = n(EF? + EG?) x EE’ =2(HA?+ EG?) x EE’ =7(AG?) x EE’ =7EH? x ER’ =volume generated by EHH’L’. Therefore in the limit, when the number of slices is indefinitely in- creased, and their thickness indefinitely diminished, we have volume of cone generated by AF + volume of spherical zone generated by CG =volume of cylinder generated by CH. Let r=radius of sphere, = AE=height of zone ACGE, then volume of cone= $ah? x h= §rh’, and volume of cylinder=a7? xh, volume of spherical zone = 1°h — 4xh3 = 4rh(8r2 -h?).

he) 39

therefore

The height of a hemisphere is 7, therefore volume of hemisphere = 4r (37? — 7?) =3ar3 , and volume of whole sphere=§zr° , a result readily obtainable by the infinitesimal calculus, or by inscribing within the sphere a series of triangular pyramids whose vertices all meet at the centre of the sphere, and the angles of whose bases all rest on the surface. In the limit the altitude of each pyramid becomes the radius of the sphere, and the sum of the bases of the pyramids the surface of the sphere ; hence

volume= 4S x r=} x 4ar? x r= 4nr3,

The volume of the circumscribing cylinder =r? x 2r=2zr’, therefore volume of sphere=% volume of circumscribing cylinder.

§ 92. Let S denote the surface of a sphere and V its volume, then from §§ 87 and 91 we have

ww 8 ON (B) S=n/a(6V)?5

1 =

(y) V=—_=v/(S)8; 6 5 oe formule which give the radius in terms of the surface or volume, the surface in terms of the volume, and the volume in terms of the surface. § 93. Volume of a Spherical Shell, —Let r and r, denote the radii of the two spheres, then

volume of shell= V =$ar? — 4ar°

er (a) r= yer

=$x(r3 =) =$r(r-—r)(ritnyrtr).

Now let 7; —r=h, then

Oe ue

V=4arih € ch suet ’

ry ‘Y If h be small compared with 7,, then 7/7, is very nearly equal to 1, and we have approximately

V=$arjh(it+1+1)=4ar2h, Again, if h be nearly equal to 7,, ris very small, and 7/7, is also very small, so that we have approximately V=$rr7h. § 94. Volume of a Spherieal Segment.—Let CRC’ (fig. 54) be a

section of a spherical segment whose

altitude RQ is p, then, if OQ=A, R ‘ volume of segment CROC’ =volume of C—O hemisphere — volume of zone AA’C’C

= §ar? – deh {3r?-h2}, § 91. B B’

= §nr — 4n(r—p) {812- (r-p)} =$mp?(3r —p).

If we put p=2r, we obtain as before

volume of sphere= 4rr° .

Again if CQ=a, we have

CQ?= a? =RQ.R’Q = p(2r-p), R’

2 2

whence r= 1” ; Fig. 54,

volume of segment =4ap (8a} +p). § 95. Volume of a Spherical Frustwm.—When one of the termi-

therefore

MENSURATION

nating planes passes through the centre we have already found that the volume = irh(r?— h?), where A is its altitude. Now suppose that neither of the terminating planes passes through the centre; for example, to find the volume of the frustum BB’C’U. Let RQ=p and RP=q, then BB’C’C=segment RBB’ – segment RCC’ = ¢mgq (3a; +9”) — dap (3a,+p*), where @ and a, are the radii of the ends CU’ and BB’, : Let g-p=h=height of frustum, and, since, from the geometry of the figure, ap ab tg p q we have volume= grh{3(a? +02) + h?}, a result which may also be obtained by considering BB/C’C as the difference of the two zones AA’C’C and AA’B’B.

D. Spheroid.

§ 96. Surface of a Prolate Spheroid.—The prolate spheroid is the solid generated by the revolution of an ellipse about its major axis, If S be the surface generated by an are of the curve, then

aaa *S=2a/y ft + (32) dx, taken between proper limits.

ae

Qo,

In the case before us ab. S=2rb? + 2ar—sin-1e, é where ¢ is the eccentricity (INFINITESIMAL CALCULUS, art. 179).

§ 97. Surface of an Oblate Spheroid.—The oblate spheroid is the solid generated by the revolution of an ellipse about its minor axis

(fig. 55).

2

Here surface = 2a? + ne log, Bar

MEAG art. 179). § 98. Volume of a Spheroid.—We have volume of prolate spheroid

+ ‘ : ar € ” ae = ane f“(4 – va) =4rab?. a 0 ve

Similarly volume of oblate spheroid=$2a7O.

(INFINITESIMAL CALCULUS,

i)

Thus, volume of prolate spheroid §mab?_ 0 . (a) volume of oblate spheroid $na*b a ’ sphere described on major axis §ma>_ a? (8) prolate spheroid ~ pea Be’ tay sphere described on minor axis $rb3 0?

oblate spheroid — ~ $marb a § 99. Volume of a Segment af a Spheroid. (a) The prolate spheroid.—This segment is generated by the

revolution of AMP (fig. 23, p. 20) about AM, and hence its volume = 7 Pd = “ “ieee -2\de= = x ew -h) 0 ao 0 3 a? Y

where A is the origin and AM=h. (B) The oblate spheroid.—The segment in this case is generated by the revolution of BMP (fig. 55) about BC, and hence

h 2 ie 27,2 its volume= 7 Yde= aes i “(Qber —2x)\da= z x oF (3) ~h),

0

where B is the origin and BM=A. § 100. Volume of the Frustum of a A Spheroid when one of the Terminating 24

Planes passes through the Centre.

(a) The prolate spheroid.—The frustum in this case is generated by the revolution of BCMP about CM (fig. 28).

Now volume generated by BOMP B’ B

=volume generated by BCA — volume generated by PMA

Q

272

= }nai? ~ 2 x = (8a -h)

op Pp =— Xx Bk a2 -#*) , where A’

3° i k=OM=height of frustum=a-h. mae ai (B) Lhe oblate spheroid.—_We can show in a similar manner that the volume generated in this case

The above formule may be put into another form. Thus, in the case of the prolate spheroid, since the point P lies on the ellipse b°x? + a?y? = a7b?, we have

b°k? + a*b} =a°b?,, where 6,= PM, which gives

iy 6? — b*) ik? BaP ie :

MENS URATION

whence, by substitution, the volume of prolate frustum = 4k(20? + d?).

Similarly we can show that the volume of the oblate frustum = Ink(2a? +.a?), where a,=PM.

These formule play an important part in the gauging of casks.

E. Paraboloid.

§ 101. Surface of a Paraboloid.—Let the equation to the para- bola be y°=4az, and let the coordinates of P (fig. 21, p. 19) be a, y,, then the surface of the paraboloid geuerated by the revolution of AM about AP

Ly dy \? fe a= xta =$aVa { (a, +a) -a’} :

§ 102. Volume of a Paraboloid.—With the same notation we have

vy vy volume~a/. y’da=4ra cde = ha x dav, xa, =hry? Xx; : OT at 0

or the volume of a paraboloid generated by the revolution of a part of a parabola between the vertex and any point is equal to half the volume of the circumseribing cylinder. § 103. If the coordinates of Q be 2, y,, then the volume of the frustum PP’Q’Q = har { ype, — yin, } = Leah — ah) = bays tyi)h , where h=MN ; henec the volume of the frustum of a paraboloid is equal to half the sum of the areas of its ends multiplicd by its height. EF. Eilipsoid. § 104. Volume of an Ellipsoid.—The equation to the ellipsoid being ee ae ee’ ae’ the equation to the elliptic section at the distance z from the origin is

Now if we draw an indefinite number of parallel planes per- pendicular to the axis of z, each slice will be an infinitely thin cylindrical plate, and accordingly the whole volume of the ellipsoid

=/Adz, where A is the area of the elliptic section.

2

But Amnad(1 3 =) ,§ 51,

volume=at /“(1 = = dem Smabe . ae .

The sphere being an ellipsoid whose axes are all equal, we obtain as before

therefore

volume of sphere = $ra? = $27.

G. Hyperboloid.

$105. Volume of an Hyperboloid.—The hy perboloid is generated by the revolution of the hyperbolic segment ANP about AN (fig.

24, p. 20). If the coordinates of P be x, y%, then z }? volume of hyperboloid=a/ ‘yd araf “e -a)da Pie 2a? ab?h? Saas Oty jo Ot

where h= AN=a,-a. Agaiu, since x,, y, is on the curve, we have

9 2

a*y? —~ B(a+h)?= — a®b?, which gives oe a rok whence : hy? 3at+h 1 f hy wn volume of hyperboloid a? Soay

H. Solids to which the “‘ Prismoidal Formula” applies. § 106. It was shown in § 72 that the volume of any polyhedron bounded by two parallel planes and by plane rectilinear figures = $h(A,4A, As),

where A,, A, and A, denote respectively the areas of the two ends and of the middle seetion.

We now procecd to show that the same formula determines the ‘

volumes of all solids bounded by two parallel planes, provided the area of any section parallel to these planes can be expressed as a rational integral algebraie function of the third degree in «, where x is the distance of the section from cither plane.

|

revolution.

| awash tohtQshtert …. ths) t4gteit..-.

27

Let ¢(z)=A+Ba+Ox?Dz3 .... +Ka” denote the area of the section in question.

Now the solid between the sections (0) and (4) is equal to the solid between the sections (0) and ¢(2) plus the solid between the sections ¢(2) and $(4). Hence if the prismoidal formula is to hold in this case, we have

dh {o(0) + 46(2) + $(4)} = gh {p(0) + 49(1) + o(2)} + eh { o(2) + 49(3) + 9(4)} ,

where h is the distanee between the sections $(0) and $/4). Hence we have

$(0) — 4p(1) + 6f(2) — 49(3) + G(4)=0.

Now 9(0)=A =s@live =44 -08 oe 6 =4D-4E- 5… ~ 4k +6$(2)=6A412B+240+48D+96E+ .... +6°2°K

- 49(3)= – 4A – 12B – 36C – 108D – 324K-— .... -4:3”K

+ $(4)=A+4B416C+64D+256E+ .... +4°K.

Therefore O=0+04+0+0+24E4+PF+ .... 4+7TK.

Hence E=F=....K=O, and therefore ¢(”) must be a func- a of the third degree in order that the prismoidal formula may apply.

§ 107. If we take ¢(=A+ Ba + Ca? + Da’, there will be as many possible varieties as there are combinations of four things, one, two, three, and four together, ¢.e., 24-1=15 varieties. Corresponding to each of these there will be at least one solid thie area of a seetion of which at a distance 2 from one of the parallel planes is o(=A+Ba+Cux?+Da3, and at Icast one solid of revolution generated by the curve whose equation is of the form

my? = (x2) =A+ Bu+Ca? + Da}. As space prevents us discussing al] the cases that may arise, we content onrselves by giving three examples as illustrations.

(a) Volume of an ellipsoid.—Here $(x) = Ba + Ca.

Let 2a, 2b, and 2e be the axes of which 2a is the greatest, then h=2a, A,=0,, Ag=0, and Ay=-be ; therefore volume = $h(A, + 4A, + Ag) = 3a(4mbe) =$rabe, which agrees with the result in § 104.

(8) Volume of a sphere. —Here ry? = (x) = Ba + Ca’.

Let 7 be the radius of the sphere, then A=2r, A;=0, A,=0,

and A,g=r*, hence, as before (§ 91), ;

volume of sphere = }A(A, 4A, Az) = (nr) = ar,

(y) Volume of a right circular cone.—Here ry? = (x) =Ca*.

Let r=radius of base and h the altitude, then A,;=0, A,;=-77°, and A,=(4r)? ; hence

volume of cone=gh{A,+4A, + Ag} =dh{ar?+ ar} = dar’.

In a similar manner we can determine the volumes of a cylinder, a prolate spheroid, an oblate spheroid, &c.

$ 108. In general, if in any solid we have

¢(2) =A + Ba + Cx? + Da,

where A, B, ©, and D are known constants, then, if 4 be the length

of the solid, A,=9(0)=A, A,=$(bh)=A + BRR) + C(4A)? + D(RK) Asg=¢ (h)=A+ BA+ Ch? + DA}, and therefore volume of solid =§h(A, 4A_ As) = Ah+4Bh?+4Ch?+4Dh‘.

I. Solids of Revolution in General.

$109. Volume of any Solid of Revolution.—Let P,P, ... Pn (fig. 34) be the generating curve, and A,... . An the axis of Divide the curve into portions in the points P,, P,, &c., and draw the chords and tangents of the small arcs P,Pe, P,P,, &c., then it is evident that the solid generated by the curve is greater than the sum of the conical frusta traced out by the chords and less than the sum of the conical frusta traced out by the tangents. Hence, by increasing the number of chords, namely, by increasing the points of division of the curve, we can make the difference between these sums as

small as we please, and therefore by this method we can approximate as closely as we please to the volume of the solid generated.

Assuming that the points P,, P,, P; are so near eaeh other that the solid generated differs little from the frustum of a eone, and using the same notation as in § 63, we have volume generated by

P,P,Pg=§rAjAg(s? + 482 +52) = de2A,A.(si + 495 +85) = bra(s? +452 +83) similarly the volume generated by P,P4Ps=4ma(s? + 487 + 83) ; whence the volume generated by the whole eurve P,P)... – le + 82-1)}3

28

: 5 ee 7G: or (since ws? = —1. , ms} =—?., &c.) 4a

2

4a mie [oh + oh 4 ch +5 + tees Pg) FMA +h + oo a5 beR=1)}s

a formula more convenient in practice, as it is sometimes more easy to measure equidistant cireumferences than equidistant radii.

J. Theorems of Pappus.

§ 110. The following general propositions concerning surfaces and solids of revolution, usually called Guldin’s theorems, are worth the reader’s attention. ;

If any plane curve revolve about any external axis situated in its plane, then

(a) the surface of the solid which is thereby generated is equal to the product of the perimeter of the revolving curve and the length of the path described by the centre of gravity of that peri- meter ;

(B) the volume of the solid is equal to the product of the area of the revolving curve and the length of the path described by the centre of gravity of the revolving area.

We content ourselves with an example or two of the application of these theorems, referring to the article INFINITESIMAL CALCULUS for the proofs.

Example 1.—To find the surface and volume of a circular ring. — Let w be the distance of the centre of the generating curve, in this case a circle, from, the axis of rotation, and 7 the radius of the circle, then

perimeter of generating curve=2rr, area of generating curve=n7”, and

path described by the centre of gravity either of the perimeter or area=27a ; hence

surface of ring =29r x 2ra=4n°ra, and volume of ring= mr? x 2na=29° “a,

Example 2.—To find the volume swept out by an ellipse whose axes are 2a and 2b, revolving about an axis in its own plane whose distance from the centre of the ellipse is c.

Here area of generating curve = ab, and path described by centre of gravity of area =2nc ; hence

volume generated = rab x 2mc=2nabe.

Example 3.—A circle of r inches radius, with an inscribed regular hexagon, revolves about an axis @ inches distant from its centre, and parallel to a side of the hexagon ; to find the difference in area of the generated surfaces and volumes.

Here perimeter of cirele=2zr,

and perimeter of hexagon =12 x rsin30° (§ 17)

=r

also area of circle= 77”, and area of hexagon =8r?sin 60° (§ 18, 8)

=3\/3r ; hence difference of surfaces generated =47°ra —12rar=4rar(r – 38);

and difference of volumes generated = 2r*ra — Bar72V/ 3a =rr’a(2r — 38V3).

PART III. GAUGING.

§ 111. By gauging is meant the art of measuring the volume of a cask, or any portion of it. The subject is one of great interest and practical importance, but space will only permit us to discuss it very briefly. If the cask whose capacity we wish to determine be a solid of revolution, then its volume can at once be computed, either exactly or approximately, by the methods already described.

MEN—MEN

It is usual to divide casks into the following four classes according to the nature of the revolving curve :—

(a) the middle frustum of a spheroid ;

(8) the middle frustum of a parabolic spindle ;

(y) two equal frusta of a paraboloid, united at their bases ;

(3) two equal frusta of a cone, united at their bases. ,

Casks of the second, third, and fourth variety are rarely met with in practice, and we shall accordingly confine our attention to the first kind, which is considered the true or model form of cask.

Let ABCD (fig. 56) be a section of the cask, and assume it to be the middle frustum of a prolate spheroid, then

its volume = 471(207+0?)k , where b=OY, b,=AX, and k=XX’ (§ 99).

YY’ is called the bung diameter, and AB or CD the head diameter.

An imperial gallon contains 277°274 cubic inehes, and therefore the number of gallons in the above cask

_ a2 +0i)k ot mage

3x O77 2747 Bal Ban + Ph 2d? + d? z =n Se @

~~(shh \e where d=2b, d,—9, ; whence we have the rule:—to the square of the head diameter add twice the square of the bung diameter, multiply the sum by the length and divide the result by 1059°1, and the answer is the con~~ tent in imperial gallons.

Casks as ordinarily met with are not true spheroidal frusta, but it is better to consider them as such, calculate their capacity on this assumption, and then make allowance for the departure from the spheroidal form. The de- termination of the properallowance to be made in each case is a matter depending on the skill and ex- perience of the gauger, and pro- ficiency in the art can only be attained by considerable practice.

§ 112. If the cask be very little curved, we obtain an approxima-

Fig. 56. tion to its capacity by considering it as made up of two equal frusta

of a cone, united at their bases. Hence from § 83 we have volume of cask = 4rh(r? + ryrg+73) nearly. Here we neglect the small volumes generated by APY, YSD, BQY’, and Y’RC; and therefore the volume is too small. If we put 7,73=77 we obtain volume= $rh(2r? +73) , which isa little too large, and therefore the true volume lics between these two limits, and a very close approximation to it is said to be given by the formula Ah {Qr? +72 – (ir? -12)}.

§ 118. Ullage of a Cask.—The quantity of liquor contained in a cask partially tilled and the capacity of the portion which is empty are termed respectively the wet and dry ullage.

(a) Ullage of a standing cask.—By means of the method applied in § 105, the following rule is deduced :—

Add the square of the diameter at the surface, the square of the diameter at the nearest end, and the square of double the diameter half-way between ;

multiply the sum by the length between the surface and the nearest end, and by °000472.

The product will be the wet or dry ullage according as the lesser portion of the cask is filled or empty.

(8) Ullage of a lying cask.—The ullage in this case is found approximately on the assumption that it is proportional to the seg- ment of the bung circle cut off by the surface of the liquor. The rule adopted in practice is

ullage=% content x segmental area. (W. T.*)

MENTAL DISEASES. See Insanrry.

MENTON (Ital., Afentone), a cantonal capital in the department of Alpes-Maritimes, France, situated 15 miles north-east of Nice, on the shores of the Mediterranean. The town, which has a population of about 8000, rises like an amphitheatre on a promontory by which its semi- circular bay (5 miles wide at its entrance, and bounded on the W. by Cape Martin and on the E. by the cliffs of La Murtola) is divided. It is composed of two very distinct portions : below, along the sea-shore, is the town of hotels

and of foreigners, which alone is accessible to wheeled vehicles; above is that of the native Mentonese, with steep, narrow, and dark streets, spread over and clinging to the mountain, around the strong castle which was once its protection against the attacks of pirates. Facing the south-east, and sheltered on the north and west by high mountains, the Bay of Menton enjoys a delicious climate, and is on this account much frequented by invalids re- quiring a mild and equable temperature. The mean for the year is 61° Fahr., exceeding that of Rome or of

Pisa, and equalling that of Naples. Frost occurs on the average only once in ten years ; in one particular year the thermometer did not fall below 46° Fahr. In summer the heat is never very great, the temperature rarely exceeding 86° Fahr. Winter and summer are the most agreeable seasons; in autumn the rain storms are accompanied by sudden changes of temperature,

and in spring the sea breezes are apt to be violent. Besides the charms of its climate, Menton offers those of an almost tropical vegetation. Lemon-trees, olive-trees, and pines, rising above each other in successive stages, adorn the sur- rounding slopes. The district produces forty millions of lemons yearly, and this is the principal source of its natural wealth. The olive-trees are remarkable for the great size they have attained in the course of the centuries during which they have continued to bear. Of their wood a multitude of fancy objects are made for sale to strangers. The origin of Menton is unknown. During the Middle Ages it

was suecessively ocenpied by the Saraeens, the Genoese, and the princes of Anjou. In the middle of the 14th eentury it was pur-

chased as a single domain by the Grimaldis, lords of Monaeo. During the times of the republic and the first empire it belonged to Franee; but in 1815 it again beeame the property of the

prinees of Monaeo, who subjected it to such exaetions that in 1848

its inhabitants, weary of finding their reasonable demands put off

with empty promises, proclaimed their town free and independent, under the proteetion of Sardinia. Menton, with the neighbouring commune of Roquebrune, was united to France in 1860, at the same time as Nice and Savoy.

MENTZ. See Marnz. .

MENZEL, Wotreane (1798-1873), poet, critic, and historian, was born June 21, 1798, at Waldenburg in Silesia, studied at Breslau, Jena, and Bonn, and after living for some time in Aarau and Heidelberg finally settled in Stuttgart, where, from 1830 to 1838, he had a seat in the Wiirtemberg “landtag.” His first work, a clever and original volume of poems, entitled Streckverse (Heidelberg, 1823), was followed in 1824-25 by a popular Geschichte der Deutschen in three volumes, and in 1829 and 1830 by Riibezahl and Narcissus, the ballads upon which his reputation as a poet chiefly rests. In 1851 he published the romance of Jurore, a lively picture of the period of the Thirty Years’ War ; his other very numerous writings

include Greschichte Huropa's, 1789-1815 (1853), and histories of the German war of 1866 and of the Franco-German war of 1870-71. From 1825 to 1848 Menzel edited a "Literaturblatt" in connexion with the Morgenblatt ; in the latter year he transferred his allegiance from the Liberal to the Conservative party, and in 1852 his "Literaturblatt" was again revived in that interest. In 1866 his political sympathies again changed, and all his energies were employed to oppose the " particularism" of the Prussian "junkers" and the antiunionism of South Germany. He died on April 23,1873. His large private library of 18,000 volumes was afterwards acquired for the university of Strasburg.

MEPHISTOPHELES, the name of one of the personi- fications of the principle of evil. In old popular books and puppet-plays the word appears in 'various forms,— as Mephistopheles, Mephistophiles, Mephistophilis, and Mephostophilis. In the Tragical History of Doctor Faustus, Marlowe writes '" Mephistophilis"; in the Merry Wives of Windsor we find " Mephistophilus." The etymo- logy of the word is uncertain. According to one theory, it may be taken to represent pypworodiAns ; in which case the meaning would be "one who loves not light." Another theory is that the word is a combination of the Latin "mephitis" and the Greek #iAos, signifying "one who loves noxious exhalations." Probably it is of Hebrew

origin, —from 729, a destroyer, and b8p, taken to mean a liar. This view is supported by the fact that almost all

the names of devils in the magic-books of the 16th century spring from the Hebrew. In the old Faust legends the character of Mephistopheles is simply that of a powerful and wicked being who fulfils Faust's commands in order to obtain possession of his soul. Marlowe attributes to him a certain dignity and sadness, and there can be little doubt that the Mephistophilis of the Tragical History suggested some important traits of Milton's Satan. The name has been made famous chiefly by Goethe, whose conception of the character varied at different periods of lus career. In the fragment of Maust published in 1790, but written many years before, 'Mephistopheles has a clearly marked individuality ; he is cynical and materialistic, but has a man's delight in activity and adventure, and his magical feats alone remind

us that he is preternatural. In revising and extending this fragment, which forms the chief portion of the first part of /‘aust, Goethe treated Mephistopheles as the representative of the evil tendencies of nature, especially of the tendency to denial for its own sake, rather than as a living person. This character Mephistopheles maintains in the second part, where, indeed, the name often stands for a pure abstraction.

See Julius Mosen, Fuwust; Diintzer, Enlduterungen zw Goethe’s Werken: Faust ; Vischer, Gocthe’s Faust.

MEQUINEZ (the Spanish form of the Arabic Aftkndsa), a town of Morocco, the ordinary residence of the emperor, is situated in a fine hilly country about 70 miles from the west coast and 35 west-south-west of Fez on the road to Sallee, in 34° N. lat. and 5° 35’ W. long. The town-wall, with its four-cornered towers, is kept in good condition ; and a lower wall of wider circuit protects the luxuriant gardens with which the outskirts are embellished. In the general regularity of its streets, and in the fairly substantial character of its houses, Mequinez ranks higher than. any other town in Morocco; but it possesses few buildings of any note, except the palace, and the mosque of Mulei Ismael, which serves as the royal burying-place. At one time the palace (founded in 1634) was an imposing structure, but the finest part has been allowed to go to ruin. In 1721 Windhus described it as “about 4 miles in circumference, the whole building exceeding massy, and the walls in every part very thick ; the outward one about a mile long and 25 feet thick.” The best part consisted of oblongs enclosing large open courts or gardens. Mortar or concrete was the principal material used for the walls, but the pillars were in many cases marble blocks of great beauty and costliness (A Journey to Mequinez, London, 1725). Most of the inhabitants of Mequinez are connected more or less directly with the court. Their number has been very variously estimated by different travellers. Graberg de Hemsé gives 56,000 in 1834, Rohlfs in 1861 from 40,000 to 50,000, and Conring in 1880 about 30,000. The town was formerly called Tdékarart. drisi refers the present name to a Berber chief Meknas. .

MERAN, a favourite health resort, and the capital of a district in South Tyrol, Austria, is picturesquely situated at the foot of the vine-clad

Ktichelberg, on the right bank of the Passer, about. half a mile above its junction with the Adige, and 45 miles to the south of Innsbruck. Meran proper consists mainly of one long narrow street, called the Laubengasse, flanked by covered arcades. Ina wider sense, the name is often used to include the adjacent villages of Untermais, Obermais, and Gratsch. The most noteworthy buildings are the Gothic church of St Nicholas, with its lofty tower, dating from the 14th and 15th centuries ; the Spitalkirche, built in the 15th century, and restored in 1880; and the quaint old Fiirstenhaus, or residence of the counts of Tyrol. The town contains a gymnasium, a nunnery and school for girls, an institution for sick priests, and several other charitable establishments.

Meran owes its high reputation as a resort for consumptive and nervous invalids to the purity of its air and its com- parative immunity from wind and rain in winter. It stands in 46° 41’ N. lat., at a height of 1050 feet above the sea, and has a mean annual temperature of about 54° Fahr. Meran enjoys three seasons, being also visited in spring for the whey-cure and in autumn for the grape-cure. The arrangements for the comfort of the visitors are very com- plete ; and the environs afford opportunity for numerous pleasant walks and excursions. The favourite promenade of the inhabitants is on a massive dyke, built to protect the town against the encroachments of the Passer. Nearly twenty old castles and chateaus are visible from the bridge over the Passer, the most interesting being Schloss Tyrol, an ancient edifice which has given its name to the entire country. Meran is now frequented by about 6500 patients and 8000 to 9000 passing travellers annually. In 1880 its population, including Obermais and Untermais, amounted to 5334 souls.

Meran is probably the representative of the Roman Urbs Majensis, afterwards Doan as. Mairania. It became a town in 1290, and down to 1490 was the capital of the counts and dukes of Tyrol. The town suffered somewhat during the Peasants’ War in the 16th century, and subsequently from destructive Hoods. As a liealth- resort it has been known for about forty years. The whole region in which it lics is singularly rich in historic interest.

Authorities —Beda Weber, Meran; Diiringsfeld, Aus Meran, 1868; Noé, Der Frithling von Meran; Stampfer, Chronik von Meran, 1867, and Geschichte der Stadt Meran, 1872; Pircher, Meran als Klimatischer Kurort, 1870; Plant, Pihrer durch Meran, 2d ed., 1879; Knoblauch, Jferan, 5th ed., 1881,

MERCATOR, Gerarpus (Latinized form of Gerhard Kramer) (1512-1594), mathematician and geographer, was born at Rupelmonde in Flanders, May 5, 1512. Havy- ing completed his studies at Louvain, he devoted him- self to geography, and, after being for some time attached to the household of Charles V., he was appointed cosmo- grapher to the duke of Juliers and Cleves in 1559, taking up his residence at Duisburg, where he died December 2, 1594. One of his earliest cartographical works was a terrestrial globe (1541), followed in 1551 by a celestial globe. In 1552 he published a treatise De usu annuli astronomict (Louvain), and at Cologne in 1569 his Chrono- logia, hoc est temporum demonstratia… ab initio mundi usque ad Annum Domini 1568, ex eclipsibus et observa- teonibus astronomicis, sacris quoque Bibliis, &c. In the same year was published the first map on Mercator's well-known projection, with the parallels and meridians at right angles, for use in navigation. At Cologne, in 1578, appeared his Tabule geographicx.ad mentem Ptolemei restitute et emend- atx. The work by which he is chiefly known is his atlas, published in 1594 at Duisburg, in folio, under the title of Atlas, sive Cosmographice meditationes de fabrica mundi. It contains, besides the maps, cosmographical and other dissertations, some of the theological views in which were condemned as heretical ; it was completed by Hondius in 1607. Several of the maps had been previously published separately, the atlas being delayed to allow Ortelius to complete his. Mercator also published in 1592 a Har- moma Hvangeliorum.

MERCURIAL AIR-PUMP. This name is given to two distinct instruments, one of which is founded on statical, the other on hydrodynamical principles.

1. The Statical Pump.—The famous spiritualist Sweden- borg was the first to conceive an air-pump in which a mass of mercury, by being made to rise and fall alternately within a vertical vessel, should do the work which in the ordinary instrument is assigned to the piston. He pub- lished a description

of his pump in 1722; but it is questionable whether his design was ever realized. Of numerous subsequent inventions the only one which, in fact, has survived is the admirably simple and yet efficient instrument first described in 1858, but constructed some

time before, by H. Geisler of Bonn, which at once, and justly, met with universal acceptance.

The general scheme of Geisler's pump is shown in fig. 1. A and B are pear-shaped glass vessels connected by a long narrow india-rubber tube, which must be sufficiently strong in the body (or strengthened by a linen coating) to stand an outward pressure of 1 to 14 atmospheres. A terminates below in a harrow vertical tube c, which is a few inches longer than the height of the barometer, and to the lower end of this tube the india-rubber tube is attached which connects A with B. To the upper end of A is soldered a glass two- way stop-cock, by turning which the vessel A can either be made to com- municate through s and a hole in the hollow cock with the vessel to be ex- hausted (I., fig. 2), or through g with the atmosphere (IL, fig. 2), or can be shut off from both when the cock holds an intermediate position. The apparatus, after having been carefully cleaned and dried, is charged with pure and dry mer- cury, which must next be worked back- wards and forwards between A and B to remove all the air-bells. The air is then driven out of A by lifting B toa sufficient level, turning the cock into position IL, and letting the mercury flow into A until it gets to the other side of the stop-cock, which is then placed in the intermediate pesi- tion. Supposing the vessel to be exhausted to have already been securely connected with b, we now lower the reservoir B so as to re- duce the pressure in A sufficiently below the tension in the gas to be sucked in, and, by turning the cock into position I., cause the gas to expand into and al- most fill A. The cock is now shut against both a and 6, the reservoir lifted, the gas contents of A discharged through a, and so on, until, when after an exhaustion mer- cury is let into A, the metal strikes against the top without interposition of a gas-bell. In a well-made apparatus the pressure in the exhausted vessel is now reduced to 5); or 5 of a milli- metre, or even less. An absolute vacuum

cannot be pro- duced on account of the unavoidable air-film between the mercury and the walls of the apparatus.

Fria. 1.—Geisler’s Mercurial Air-Pump.

Fig, 2.—Arrangements of Stop-Cock in Air-Pump.

The great advantage of the mercurial over the ordinary air-pump is that it evacuates far more completely than the latter, that it affords direct and unmistakable evidence of the exhaustiveness of its work, and—last not least—that it enables one to transfer the gas sucked out to another vessel withont loss or contamination, so that it can be measured and analysed. On account of this latter feature more especially, the instrument is highly valued as an auxiliary in gasometric researches. Without it the researches on which rests our present knowledge of the gases of the blood could not have been carned out. The actnal instrument, as constructed for various kinds of work, has of course various complexities of detail omitted in the above description. For these the reader must refer to hand- books of practical physiology.

As it takes a height of about 30 inches of mereury to balance the pressure of the atmosphere, a Geisler pump necessarily is a somewhat long-legged and unwieldy instrument. It can be eon- siderably shortened, the two vessels A and B brought more closely together, and the somewhat objectionable india-rubber tube be dis- pensed with, if we connect the air-space in B with an ordinary air- pump, and by means of it do the greater part of the sucking and the whole of the lifting work. An instrument thus modified was eonstructed by Poggendorff (see his Annalen, vol. exxv. p. 151, 1865), and another, on somewhat different principles, by Prof. Dittmar (see the ‘‘ Challenger” Reports).

Even a Geisler’s stop-eoek requires to be lubricated to be abso- lutely gas-tight, and this occasionally proves a nuisance. Hence a number of attempts have been made to do without stop-cocks alto- gether. In Topler’s pump! this is attained by using both for the inlet and the outlet vertical eapillary glass tubes, soldered, the former to somewhere near the bottom, the latter to the top of the vessel. These tubes, being more than 30 inches high,

obviously act as efficient inercury-traps ; but the already considerable height of the pump is thus multiplied by two, This consideration has led Alexander Mitscherlich (Pogg. Ann., cl. 420, 1873), and quite lately F. Neisen (2. f Instrumentenkunde, 1882, p. 285) to intro- duce glass valves in lieu of stop-eocks. As glass floats on mercury, such valves do not necessarily detract from the exhaustive power of the pump.

2. The Dynamic Pump.—This was invented in 1865 by H. Sprengel. The instrument, in its original (simplest) form (fig. 3), consists of a vertical – capillary glass tube a of about 1 mm. bore, provided with a lateral branch 6 near its upper end, which latter, by an india- rubber joint governable by a screw- clamp, communicates with a funnel. The lower end is bent into the shape of a hook, and dips into a pneumatic trough. The vessel to be exhausted is attached to 0, and, in order to extract its gas contents, a properly regulated stream of mer- cury is allowed to fall through the vertical tube. Every drop of mer- cury, as it enters from the funnel, entirely closes the narrow tube like a piston, and in going past the place where the side tube enters entraps a portion of air and carries it down to the trough, where it can be collected. If the vertical tube, measuring from the point where the branch comes in, is a few inches greater than the height of the barometer, and the glass and mer- cury are perfectly clean, the apparatus slowly but surely produces an almost absolute vacuum.

The great advantages of Sprengel’s pump lie in the simplicity of its construction and in the readiness with which it adapts itself to the collecting of the gas. It did excellent service in the hands of Graham for the extraction of gases occluded in metals, and since then has become very popular in gas-laboratories, especially in Britain. Many improvements upon the original construction have been proposed. One of these which deserves mention is to pass the mercury, before it enters the “falling” tube, through a bulb in which a good vacuum is maintained, by means of an ordinary air- pump or a second “ Sprengel.” (W. D.)

MERCURY was the Roman god who presided over barter, trade, and all commercial dealings. His nature is probably more intelligible and simple than that of any other Roman deity. His very name, which is connected with merzx, mercator, &c., shows that he is the god of merchandise and the

patron of merchants. In the native Italian states no merchants and no trade existed till the influence of. the Greek colonies on the coast introduced Greek customs into the cities of the land. All the usages

Fic. 3.—Sprengel's Air-Pump.

1 See Dingler's Polytechn. Journal, 1862 ; an improved form by Bessel-Hagen is described in Wiedemann's Annalen, xii, 425, 1881.

dl

and terminology of trade, and all the religious ceremonies connected with it, were borrowed by the Romans from the Greeks. It was no doubt under the rule of the Tarquins, when the prosperity of the state and its intercourse with the outer world were so much increased, that merchants began to ply their trade in Rome. Doubtless the merchants practised their religious ceremonies from the first, but their god Mercurius was not officially recognized by the state till the year 495 B.c. Rome frequently suffered from scarcity of corn during the unsettled times that followed the expulsion of the Tarquins. Various religious innovations were made to propitiate the gods; in 496 the Greek worship of Demeter, Dionysus, and Persephone was established in the city (see LipER), and in 495 the Greek god Hermes (¢.v.) was introduced into Rome under the Italian name of Mercurius (Livy, ii. 21, 27). Preller thinks that at the same time the trade in corn was regu- lated by law, and a regular college of merchants was instituted. This collegiwm was under the protection of the god; their annual festival was on the Ides of May, on which day the temple of the god had been dedicated at the southern end of the circus maximus, near the Aventine ; and the members were called mercuriales as well as mercatores. 'The Ides of May was chosen as the feast of Mercury, obviously because Maia was the mother of Hermes, 7.¢., of Mercury (see Maia); and she was wor- shipped along with her son by the mercuriales on this day. According to Preller, this religious foundation had a political object ; it established on a legitimate and sure basis the trade between Rome and the Greek colonies of the coast, whereas formerly this trade had been exposed to the capricious interference of the Government officials for the year. Like all borrowed religions in Rome, it must have retained the rites and the terminology of its Greek original (Festus, p. 257). Mercury became the god, not only of the mercatores and of the corn trade,

but of buying and selling in general; and it appears that, at least in the streets where shops were common, little chapels and images of the god were erected. There was a spring dedicated to Mercury between his temple and the Porta Capena; every shopman drew water from this spring on the Ides of May, and sprinkled it with a laurel twig over his head and over his goods, at the same time entreating Mercury to remove from his head and his goods the guilt of all his deceits (Ovid, Fastt, v. 673 sg.). The art of the Roman tradesman was evidently like that of an Oriental tradesman in modern times, and the word mercurialis was popularly used as equivalent to "cheat." In the Latin poets Mercury is often gifted with some of the manifold characters of the Greek Hermes, but this finer conception seems to have had no real existence in Roman religion.

Roman statucttes of bronze, in which Mercnry is represented, like the Greek Hermes, standing holding the cadueeus in the one hand and a purse in the other, are exeeedingly eommon. The eaduceus must have been introduced as a symbol of Mercury at a very early time, for it is found on Italian coins as early as the 4th eentury before Christ, and we learn that several were kept as sacred objects in the adytum of the sanctuary at Lavinium (Dion. Hal., i. 67). But its foreign origin is shown by the fact that, although it was a sign of peace, it was never borne by the fetiales, the old Italian heralds. The very name is derived from the Greek xnpdxecov. Preller's view (Rom. Myth.) that mercuriales and mercatores are the same guild is a tempting one, but its truth is very doubtful. Mommsen thinks that mercuriales were a purely local guild, viz., the pagani of the Circus valley.

MERCURY, in chemistry, is a metal (symbol Hg) which is easily distinguished from all others by its being liquid at even the lowest temperatures naturally occurring in moderate climates. To this exceptional property it owes the synonyms of quicksilver in English (with the Germans quecksilber is the only recognized name) and of hydrar- gyrum (from t8wp, water, and épyupos, silver) in Greeco-Latin.

o2

This metal does not appear to have been known to the ancient Jews, nor is it mentioned by the earlier Greek writers. Theophrastus (about 300 B.c.) mentions it as a derivative of cinnabar. With the alchemists it was a

substance of great consequence. Being ignorant of its susceptibility of freezing into a compact solid, they did not recognize it as a true metal, and yet, on the authority of Geber, they held that mercury (meaning the predominating element in this metal) enters into the composition of all metals, and is the very cause of their metallicity. When, about the beginning of the 16th century, chemistry and scientific medicine came to merge into one, this same mysterious element of “mercury ” played a great part in the theories of pathology ; and the metal, in the free as in certain combined states, came to be looked upon as a powerful medicinal agent, which position, on purely em- pirical grounds, it continues to hold to the present day.

Mercury occurs in nature chiefly in the form of a red sulphide, Hg, called cinnabar, which, as a rule, is accom- panied by more or less of the reguline metal,—the latter being probably derived from the former by some secondary reaction, The most important mercury mines in Europe are those of Almaden in Spain and of Idria in Mlyria ; these until lately furnished the bulk of the mercury of commerce, but they are now almost eclipsed by the rich deposits of New Almaden in California. Considerable quantities of mercury are said to be produced in China and in Japan ; minor deposits are being worked in the Bavarian Palatinate, in Hungary, Transylvania, Bohemia, and Peru. At Almaden the ore forms mighty veins traversing micaceous schists of the older transition period; in Illyria it is dis- seminated in beds of bituminous schists or compact lime- stone of more recent date.

Chemically speaking, the extraction of mercury from its ores is a simple matter. Metallic mercury is easily vola- tilized, and separated from the gangue, at temperatures far below redness, and cinnabar ata red heat is readily reduced to the metallic state by the action of iron or lime or atmospheric oxygen, the sulphur being eliminated, in the first case as sulphide of iron, in the second as sulphide and sulphate of calcium, in the third as sulphurous acid gas. To the chemical mind a close iron retort would suggest itself as the proper kind of apparatus for carrying out these operations, but this idea is acted wpon only in a few small establishments, —for instance, in that of Zwei- briicken in the Palatinate, where lime is used as a decom- posing agent. In all the large works the decomposition of

the cinnabar is effected by the direct exposure of the ore to the oxidizing flame of a furnace, and the mercury vapour, which of course gets diffused through an immense mass of combustion gases, is sought to be recovered in more or less imperfect condensers.

At Almaden this roasting distillation is effected in prismatic furnaces, which, by a second upper (brick) grating are divided into two flats, the lower one serving for the generation of a wood fire, while the upper accommodates the ore, which is introduced through an opening in the dome-shaped roof. To avoid an excessive dilu- tion of the mercury vapour with combustion gases, part of these are led out laterally into a chimney and the rest allowed to strike up through the heap of ore. The large mass of metalliferous vapour produced passes out through a system of pipes inserted laterally into the dome and so arranged that they follow first a descending and then an ascending plane, to lead ultimately into a condensation chamber which communicates in its turn with a chimney. The pipes are formed each of a large number of elongated pear-shaped carthenware adapters (called aludels), which are telescoped into one another as in the case of the iodine-distillation apparatus, the joints being luted with clay. The lowest row of aludels, which Tie in the line of intersection of the two inclined planes, are pierced with holes below, so that what arrives as liquid mercury there runs out into a gutter leading to a reservoir. What of mercury vapour remains uncondensed in the aludels passes into the chamber, the intention being to have it condensed there ; in reality a large proportion of the mercury passcs out through the chimney (and

through the numerous leaks in the aludels) into the atmosphere to poison the surrounding vegetation and the workmen. Similar furnaces to the Almaden ones are used in Idria and at New Almaden; only the condensation apparatus are a little less im- perfect. But in all three places the loss of metal is very consider- able; at New Almaden it is said to amount to close upon 40 per cent.

The mercury obtained is purified mechanically by straining it through dense linen bags, and then sent out into commerce in leather bags, or in wrought-

iron bottles provided with screw plugs, each holding about 75 tb avoirdupois.

According to Balling's Metallurgische Chemie (Bonn, 1882), the production of mercury in the years named was as follows :—

Austria, exclusive of Hungary (1880).....0.0008 369 tons. IBhmNgUIy (TEI) cgnoaennanihdooabanaranonnantonEppndenno0eds si) bp Ma irons. « RUS» vont cidseetne vase Ses 02 OMS oe ds GD, JORDIN. (USS) scpocoonese: eaonon003 cape sap aoc0dbeHononaaGabo 929 =~, UWiniitedSs tatest (USO ica cts siccureidanacatemenss «05% 2054) 5

Assuming the amount to be the same from year to year, this gives a total of 3587 tons.

The price of the metal is subject to immense fluctuations ; it generally ranges from 2s. to 7s. 6d. a pound avoirdupois.

Commercial mercury, as a rule, is very pure chemically, so that it needs only to be forced through chamois leather to become fit for all ordinary applications ; but the metal, having the power of dissolving most ordinary other metals, is very liable to get contaminated with these in the labora- tory or workshop, and requires then to be purified. For this purpose a great many chemical methods have been proposed, which, however, all come to this, that the base admixtures are sought to be removed by treatment with nitric acid, oil of vitriol, or other agents which act preferably on the impurities. The best of these methods is that of Briithl, who shakes the metal with a solution of 5 grammes of bichromate of potash and a few cubic centi- metres of sulphuric acid in one litre of water, until the red chromate of mercury, first produced, has disappeared, and its place been taken by green chromic sulphates. The supernatant liquor and chromic scum are washed away by a powerful jet of water, and the clean metal is dried and filtered through a perforated paper filter. 'The only really exhaustive method is redistillation out of a glass apparatus. Unfortunately the operation is difficult of execution, as mercury "bumps" badly on boiling; but this can be avoided by distilling the metal in a perfect vacuum. An ingenious apparatus for this purpose, in which the distilled metal itself is made to keep up the vacuum, was con- structed lately by Leonhard Weber. A U-tube, the limbs

of which are longer than the height of the barometer, is filled with pure mercury, and inverted, the one linb being made to dip into a vessel with pure, the other into another containing the impure, mercury. This second limb is inflated above so that the meniscus is about the middle of the bulb. This bulb is heated, and the conse- quence is that the metal there distils over into the first limb to add to the supply of pure metal, the impure rising up in the second by itself to maintain a constant level. Dewar has modified the apparatus so that there is no need of a supply of pure metal to start with. Absolutely pure mercury does not at all adhere to any surface which does not consist of a metal soluble in mercury. Hence the least quantity of it, when placed on a sheet of paper, forms a neatly rounded-off globule, which retains its form on being rolled about, and, when subdivided, breaks up into anumber of equally perfect globules. The presence in it of the minutest trace of lead or tin causes it to “draw tails.” A very impure metal may adhere even to glass, and ina glass vessel, instead of the normal convex, form an irregular flat meniscus.

Properties.—The pure metal is silver-white, and retains its strong lustre even on long exposure to ordinary air. At – 3878 C., ae, — 37°°9 F. (Balfour Stewart), it freezes,

MERC

with considerable contraction, into a compact mass of regular octahedra, which can be cut with a knife and be flattened under the hammer. The specific gravity of the frozen metal is 14°39; that of the liquid metal at 0° C. is 13595 (water of 4° C.=1). Under 760 mm. pressure it boils at 357°°3 C. (675°‘1 Fahr.) (Regnault). At very low temperatures it seems to be absolutely devoid of volatility (Faraday); but from — 13° C. upwards (Regnault) it exhibits an appreciable vapour tension.

The following table gives the tensions ‘“‘»,” in millimetres of mercury of 0° C., for a series of centigrade temperatures “¢” according to Regnault :—

t= 0° 10° 20° HO, ~1CO> 150° 200° p= 02 08 04 ‘11 “75 4°27 19°90 tape” 300° 350° 400° 450° 500° p=715°75 242°1 663°2 1588 3384 6520

According to the same authority, its average coefficient of expansion / per degree C. is as follows : —

0-100° C. 0-200° C. 0-300° C. k= 0001815 *0001841 0001866 or 1/5510 1/5482 1/5359

Its specific heat in the liquid state is ‘03332; that of the frozen metal (between —78° and – 40° C.) is 0319 (Regnault). Its electric conductivity is ;’, of that of pure silver (Matthiesen). Its conductive power for heat is greater than that of water, and is proved (by Herwig) to be perfectly constant from 40° to 160°C. Its vapour density (air of the same temperature and pressure = 1) is 6-976 (Dumas), or 100:93 for hydrogen=1. Hence its molecular weight (H,=2) is 201:86. The atomic weight, by chemical methods, was found= 200-0 (Erdmann and Marchand) ; hence mercury-vapour molecules consist of single atoms. Mercury does not appreciably absorb any chemically inert gas.

Mercury is in constant requisition in the laboratory. It is used for the collecting and measuring of gases, in the construction of thermometers, barometers, and manometers, for the determination of the capacity of vessels, and many other purposes. In medicine it serves for the preparation of mercurial ointment and of “hydrargyrum cum creta” (the chief component of “blue ‘pills”); both are obtained by diligently triturating the metal with certain proportions of grease and chalk respectively until it is “ deadened,” 2.e., subdivided into invisibly small globules (see below).

Alloys.—Mercury readily unites directly with all metals (except iron and platinum) into what are called amalgams. In some cases the union takes place with considerable evolution of heat and large modification of the mean pro- perties of the components. Thus, for instance, sodium when rubbed up with mercury unites with it with deflagra- tion and formation of an alloy which, if it contains more than 2 per cent. of sodium, is hard and brittle, although sodium is as soft as wax and mercury a liquid. Liquid amalgams of gold and silver are employed for gilding and silvering objects of copper, bronze, or other base metal. The amalgam is spread out on the surface of the object by means of a brush, and the mercury then driven off by the application of heat, when a polishable, firmly adhering film of the noble metal remains. Copper amalgam containing from 25 to 33 per cent. of

the solid metal, when worked in a mortar at 100° C., becomes highly plastic, but on standing in the cold for ten or twelve hours becomes hard and crystalline. Hence it is used for the stuffing of teeth. A certain amalgam of cadmium is similarly employed.

Oxides.—There are two oxides of mercury, namely, an oxide, Hg,0, called mercurous, and another, HgO, called mercuric oxide. The latter can be produced directly by kecping the metal for a long tine in air at a temperature somewhat below its boiling point,

when the oxide is gradually formed as a red powdery solid. This solid has long been known as “red precipitate,” or as mercwrius

Uh ¥ 33

precipitatus per se. Priestley made the important discovery that the “precipitate” when heated to dull redness is reduced to metal, with evolution of what has since been known as oxygen gas; but it was reserved for Lavoisier to correctly interpret this experiment, and thus to establish our present views on the constitution of atmospheric air. The oxide is easily prepared by heating any nitrate of the mctal as long as nitrous fumes are seen to go olf (when it remains as a scaly mass, black when hot, red after cooling), or clse by precipitating the solution of a mercuric salt with excess of caustic potash or soda, when it comes down as an amorphous yellow precipitate, which is free of combined water. Mercurous oxide, a black solid, can be obtained only indirectly, by the decom- position of mercurous salts with fixed causticalkalies. Both oxides are insoluble in water, but dissolve in certain, and combine with all, aqueous acids with formation of mercury salts and elimination of water. Thus, for iustance, Hg,0 + 2HNO;=H,0 + Hg,(NO,)., Mercurous nitrate HgO + 2HNO;=H,0 + Hg(N O,),. Mercuric nitrate.

The Nitrates.—When metallic mercury is set aside with its own weight of nitric acid of 1:2 specific gravity, at ordinary tempera- tures, the normal mercurons salt Hg,(NOs), is gradually produced, and after a day or two is found to have separated out in colourless crystals. These are soluble (somewhat sparingly) in water acidu- lated with nitric acid, but are decomposed by the action of pure water, with formation of difficnltly

soluble basic salts. When this salt (or the metal itself) is treated with excess of nitric acid it is oxidized into mercuric nitrate Hg(NOg)o, a white crystalline salt, readily soluble in water without decomposition.

The Sulphates.—Cold aqueous sulphuric acid does not act upon mercury, but the hot ee roctmatel acid converts it first into mercnrous and then into mercuric sulphate, with evolution of sulphurous acid.

Hg, + 2H,SO,=2H,0 + SO, + Hg,S0,, Hg,SO, + 2H,SO,=2H,0+S0,+2HgS0,.

Both salts form white erystalline magmas. The mercurous salt is difficultly soluble in water, and consequently producible by precipitation of the nitrate with sulphuric acid. The mercuric salt, when treated with water, is decomposed with formation of a ycllow insoluble basic salt, which has long been known as turpethum mine- rale. Its composition is SO,. 3HgO when produced by excess of hot water. Mercuric sulphate is of importance chiefly as forming the basis for the manufacture of the two chlorides.

The Chlorides. —These are both extensively used medicinal agents. The mercuric salt, HgCl,, known in medicine as corrosive sub- liniate, is prepared by mixing the sulphate intimately with common salt, and subjecting the mixture to sublimation, a little binoxide of manganese being added to oxidize the mercurous salt, which is generally present as an impurity. The process is conducted in a glass flask buried in a hot sand-bath. When the decomposition is accomplished, the sand is removed from the upper half of the flask and the temperature raised so that the chloride HgCl, produced sublimes up and condenses in the upper part as a "'sublimate." The salt, as thus produced, forms compact crystalline crusts, which, when heated, melt into a limpid liquid before volatilizing. It is soluble in water, 100 parts of which at 10°, 20°, 100° dissolve 6°57, 7°39, 54 parts of salt. Corrosive sublimate dissolves in 3 parts of alcohol and in 4 parts of ether. This salt, on account of its solubility in water, is a deadly poison. Mercurous chloride, Hg,Cl., better known as ''calomel" (from «adds, fair, and péaas, black, because it becomes dead-black when treated with ammonia, nicr- curic chloride yielding a white product), is prepared by mixing corrosive sublimate with the proper proportion of metallic mercury (HgCl, : Hg) or mercuric sulphate with salt and mercury in the proportions of HgSO, : Hg : 2NaCl, and subjecting the mixture to sublimation in glass

flasks. The salt Hg,Cl, is thus obtained in the form of white, opaque, crystalline crusts, which, when heated, volatilize, without previously melting, into a mixture of HgCl, and Hg vapour, which, on cooling, recombine into calomel. Tor medicinal purposes the sublimate is reduced to an impalpable powder, washed with water to remove any corrosive sublimate that may be present, and dricd. Being insoluble in water, it acts far less violently on the organism than mercuric chloride does. Its action, no doubt, is due to its very gradual conversion in the stomach into mercury and corrosive sublimate. Finely divided calomel can be produced, without trouble, by the precipitation of a solution of mercurous nitrate with hydrochloric acid or common salt; but this preparation is liable to be contaminated with mercurous nitrate, and, even when pure, has been found to act far more violently than ordinary calomel does. Hence its use is not tolerated by the pharmacopmias. According to Wohler a mercurous chloride, more nearly equivalent to the sublimed article, is produc- ible by heating corrosive sublimate solution with sulphurous acid—

2HeCl, + H,S0,+ H,O=H,S0, + 2HCl+ Hg,Clo. RV = 5

o4

The writer is unable to say whether Wohler’s calomel has ever found its way anywhere into medicinal practice.

The Iodides.—The mercuric salt Hgl, is produced in two ways, viz., first by mixing the two clementary components intimately and subjecting the mixture to sublimation, and secondly by pre- cipitating corrosive sublimate solution with its exact equivalent of iodide of potassium. In the first case the salt is obtained in yellow erystals, which, on the slightest touch with a solid body, assume and then permanently retain a rich scarlet colour. The precipita- tion process at once yields the scarlet salt. The salt is insoluble in watcr, but soluble in alcohol and in iodide of potassium solution. The mercurous salt Hg,I, is obtained by precipitating mercurous nitrate with iodide of potassium as a dirty-green powder insoluble in water. Both iodides are used medicinally.

The Sulphides.—Mercurous sulphide, Hg,S, does not scem to exist. ‘he mercuric salt, HgS, exists in two modifications, of which one is amorphous

and has a black colour, while the other is erystalline and red. The black one is obtained by precipitation of solutions of mercuric salts with excess of sulphurctted hydrogen, or by direct synthesis. The right proportions of mercury and flowers of sulphur are rubbed together in a mortar until the whole is converted into a jet-black uniform powder. This preparation (the wthiops mineralis of the pharmaceutist), however, is apt to be contaminated with uncombined sulphur and mercury. Application of a gentle heat causes exhanstive combination. The red sulphide, HIg8S, occurs in nature as cinnabar, and can be produeed artificially from the black. The artificial preparation, known as vermilion, is highly valued as the most brilliant, stable, and innocuous of all mineral red pigments. Vermilion can be produced from the black sulphide in two ways, viz., first by sublimation, and secondly by treatment of it with fixed alkaline sulphide solution. According to Brunner, 100 parts of mercury are mixed intimately with 38 parts of flowers of sulphur, and the «thiops is digested, with constant agitation, in a solution of 25 parts of potash in 150 parts of water at 45°C. (the water lost by evaporation being constantly replaced), until the preparation has come up to its maximuin of fire and brilliancy, which takes a good many hours. Purely sublimed vermilion has a comparatively dull colour, aud must be manipulated with alkaline sulphide solution to give it the necessary fire. The action of the alkaline sulphide consists probably in this, that it dissolves succes- sive instalments of the amorphous preparation and redeposits them in the crystalline form.

Mereuric Derivatives of Anvmonia.—(1) Recently precipitated oxide HgO is digested, cold, in carbonic-acid-frce ammonia, and the mixture allowed to stand for a few days. The liquor is then decanted off, and the precipitate washed with alcohol and then with ether, and dried over sulphuric acid. The product is a yellow solid base (“ Millon’s base”) of the composition

IN al + 4HgO + H,O — N.Hg,0 . 2H,O + 2H,O .

It is insoluble in alcohol and in ether, and requires 18,000 parts of cold water for its solution. It readily unites with all acids, forming salts, which, as a rule, are insoluble in water. Hence all ordinary salt solutions, when shaken with the base, are decomposed with eliniination of the base of the

salt. Thus, for instance, even such salts as alkaline nitrates, chlorides, or sulphates are decom- posed with formation of solutions of caustic alkali,

(2) A body N,He,I,+2H,0, @.¢., of the composition of the iodide corresponding to the oxide in (1), is produced as a brown precipitate when ammonia oran ammonia salt is added to a solution of mercuric iodide in iodide of potassium mixed with large excess of caustic potash or soda (“ Nessler’s reagent”). In very dilute solutions of ammonia Nessler’s reagent produces only a brown or yellow color- ation, which, however, is so intense that soypogoth of ammonia in about 50 cubic centimetres of liquid becomes clearly visible.

(3) The chloride NH,Hg. Cl of the “‘ammonium” NH,Hg is produced as au insoluble white precipitate when ammonia is added to a solution of corrosive sublimate. This substance is known in medicine as infusible white precipitate, in contradistinction to (4).

(4) The fusible white precipitate was at one time supposed to be identical with (3), and is obtained by boiling it with sal-ammoniac solution. Its composition is NH,HgC1+NH,Cl=N,H,. Hg. Cl,.

Analysis.—Any ordinary solid mercury compound, when heated in a sublimation tube with carbonate of soda, yields a sublimate of metallic mercury, which, if necessary, needs only to be scraped together with a wooden spill to unite into visible globules. From any mercury-salt solution the inetal is precipitated by digestion with a piece of bright copper-foil. The precipitated mercury forms a coat- ing on the copper, which becomes silvery on being rubbed with blotting paper. When the quicksilvered copper is heated in a sub- limation tube, it reassumes its red colour with formation of a sub- limate of mercury.

Solutions of mercurous salts with hydrochloric acid give a white precipitate of calomel, which, after filtration, is easily identified by its becoming jet-black on treatment with ammonia. From mercuric solutions hydrochloric acid precipitates nothing; but stannous chloride, in its twofold capacity as a chloride and a reducing agent,

yields a precipitate of calomel. On addition of an excess of reagent the precipitate becomes grey through conversion into finely divided quicksilver. Sulphuretted hydrogen, when adied very gradually to an acid mercuric solution, gives at first an almost white precipi- tate, which, on addition of more and more reagent, assuines suc- cessively a yellow, orange, and at last jet-black colour. ‘The black | precipitate is HgS, which is identificd by its great heaviness, and by its being insoluble in boiling nitric and in boiling hydro- chlorie acid. A mixture of the two (aqua regia) dissolves it as chloride. (W. D.)

Therapeutics of Mercury.

The use of mercury as a therapeutic agent is of com- paratively recent date. To the Greeks and Romans its value was unknown, and the Arabian physicians only used it for skin affections. It was not till the middle of the 16th century that the special properties of mercury were fully appreciated, but since that time the metal has con- tinued to hold a high though fluctuating value as a medicine. At first the metal in a finely divided state or in vapour was used ; but very soon its various compounds were found to be endowed with powers even greater than those of the metal itself, and with the discovery of new compounds the number of mercurial medicines has largely increased. .

The preparations now in use may be thus classified. (1) Of the preparations containing metallic mercury the chief members are blue pill (pilula hydrargyri), grey powder (hydrargyrum cum creta), and blue ointment (unguentum hydrargyri). The first consists of mercury, liquorice root, and confection of roses, the second of mercury and chalk, the third of mercury, suet, and lard. The power of the three preparations seems to depend on the fine state of subdivision of the mercury they contain; mercury in its ordinary liquid state seems devoid of medicinal properties. It is thought by some that the fine subdivision of the metal leads to the formation of a little oxide, and that the efficacy of the preparations in part depends on this. (2) Three oxides of mercury are employed in medicine,—the red, from which is made red precipitate ointment (unguen- tum hydrargyri oxydi rubri), the yellow, an allotropic form of the red, and the black oxide. The yellow and black oxides suspended in lime water form respectively yellow and black

wash (lotio flava and lotio nigra). (3) The chlorides of mercury form a very important group: calomel (hydrargyri subchloridum) is a white heavy powder ; corrosive sublimate (hydrargyri perchloridum) is a heavy crystalline substance. (4) Two iodides are used

medicinally ; they are known from their colour as the

green and red iodides. (5) Nitrate of mercury enters into the composition of a powerful caustic known as the acid nitrate of mercury. It is also the active principle of citrine ointinent (unguentum hydrargyri nitratis). (6) In this class only ammoniated mercury and its ointment commonly known as white precipitate ointment, are contained. Of the many compounds not included in the above classifica- tion the oleate and albuminate are the most important.

Mercurial preparations are largely employed as external appli- cations. Several of them are potent agents for the destruction of the lower forms of animal life, and hence are employed to destroy parasites having their habitat in skin, hair, and clothing. ‘I’he white and red precipitate ointments are specially effective in the destruction of pediculi, and blue ointment is occasionally used for the same purpose. Corrosive sublimate is, however, the most energetic of the mercurial parasiticides, and recent obscrvations seem to show that it is superior to almost all other substances as a germ destroyer. It is sometimes used to get rid of ringworm. It should be remembered that corrosive sublimate is a powerful irritant to the skin, and also an active poison.

Acid nitrate of mercury is a caustic, and by it warts and small growths are sometimes removed ; it is also one of the caustics occa- sionally applied to prevent the spread of lupus.

In skin diseases snercurial preparations are largely used, especially in some forms of eczema. A few grains of the red oxide or of ammoniated mercury in an ounce of zinc ointment are often found of great service in this ailment; citrine ointment is also useful.

Calomel ointment is not irritating, but rather tends to soothe. It is therefore sometimes applied to irritable rashes ; in pruritus ani it is of special value. Mereurial preparations are not usually found of benefit in sealy eruptions. In acne a weak solution of corrosive sublimate is often most effeetive.

Preparations of mercury are often used to heal ulcers, especially those of syphilitie origin. Black wash is one of the commonest applications for this purpose. The red oxide ointment is at times employed to stimulate indolent ulcers, and it. is capable of remov- ing exuberant granulations (proud flesh), which sometimes retard the healing of wounds.

Mereury is largely used externally to promote the absorption of

inflammatory products, especially in the neighbourhood of joints. The blue ointment is frequently employed for this purpose, more rarely a plaster containing mercury or a mercurial liniment. Yor effecting the absorption of goitre (Derbyshire neck) the ointment of the red iodide is often relied on, especially in India, where it is eustomary to expose the patient's neck to the sun after rubbing it with the ointment. In enlargements of the liver and spleen the applieation of mercurial ointment sometimes secms to promotc re- duction in size.

Taken internally in coutinucd doses, mereury produces a peculiar effect known as salivation. First a metallic taste is experienced ; this is followed by soreness of the gums, an undue flow of saliva, and feetor of the breath. Further administration of the drug may increase greatly the salivary flow, and also lead to swelling of the tongue, ulceration of the mouth, and even disease of the jaw-bone. At the same time the blood becomes impoverished, and feverishness with loss of flesh occurs. A single large dose—rarely too a single small dose—may produce some of the above symptoms. They may also follow the inhalation of the metal or its compounds, or their absorption through the skin. The long-continued inhalation of the vapour of mercury acts likewise on the nervous system, caus- ing a peculiar kind of trembling. Mercurial tremor 1s sometimes seen in looking-glass makers, often in those who work in quick- silver mines.

Internally mercury is eliefly given for two purposes—(1) to check inflammation and cause the absorption of the products it gives rise to, and

(2) to antagonize the syphilitie virus and remove the evils it eauses. Some years ago the belicf in the power of mercury to control inflammation was almost universal, and it was largely administered in almost all inflammatory affeetions, but of late it has been much less used, both because it seems doubtful whether it has really the power it was once supposed to have and because of the possibility of evil results froin its continued use. In peritonitis and iritis it is still often employed, small doses of ealomnel being given. Not unfrequently too it is administered in pericarditis and hepatitis, but in pneumonia, pleurisy, and most other inflammatory affections its use is now disearded by many physicians. As an antidote to the syphilitic poison it is still held in high esteem, though opinions vary mueh as to the extent of its power. There can be little doubt that, given in an early stage of the disorder, it minimizes the secondary symptoms; but it eannot be relied on to prevent their oceurrenec. It aids in removing the secondary symptoms, and tends to the avoidance of tertiary manifestations, which nevertheless sometimes occur even when inercury has been freely given. The eustom of giving mercury till profuse salivation is established has long been abandoned ; the aiin now is so to give it as to prevent salivation occurring ; for this purpose blue pill, calomel, and corrosive sublimate are given in very small doscs, but if the gums become tender the dose is decreased or the administration stopped.

Mercurial treatment is sometimes earricd out by rubbing the blue ointment into the skin, sometimes by exposing the patient to the fumes of calomel ; syphilitie eruptions are often treated by such fumigation. More rarely mercury is introduced by injceting the albuminate or some other preparation under the skin or by means of suppositories. In children grey powder is generally used when mer- curial treatment is required. Children bear mercury well.

Blue pill, calomel, and grey powder are often used as purgatives, and a power of promoting the secretion of bile is attributed to them. Experimentally it has not been proved that they stimu- late the liver functions, but there is good reason for believing that they promote the expulsion of bile from the body. Grey powder is especially valued as a mild and efficient aperient for ehildren, and is often given in the early stage of diarrhoea to expcl the irritating contents of the bowel.

The use of ealomel in tropical dysentery, once very prevalent, has within the last few years been abandoned. (10), diy Ike)

MERGANSER, a word originating with Gesner (Z/ist. Animalium, iii. p. 129) in 1555, and for a long while used in English as the general name for a group of fish-eating Ducks possessing great diving powers, and forming the genus Mergus of Linnxus, now regarded by ornithologists as a Subfamily, Mergine, of the Family Anatede. The

Mergansers have a long, narrow bill, with a small but evident hook at the tip, and the edges of both man- dibles beset by numerous horny denticulations, whence in English the name of “Saw-bill” is frequently applied to them. Otherwise their structure does not much depart from the Anatine or Fuliguline type. All the species bear a more or less developed crest or tuft on the head. Three of them, Jfergus merganser or castor, M. serrator, and I. albellus, are found over the northern parts of the Old World, and of these the first two also inhabit North America, which has besides a fourth species, Jf. cucullatus, said to have occasionally visited Britain. J/. merganser, commonly known as the Goosander, is the largest species, being nearly as big as the smaller Geese, and the adult male in breeding-attire isa very beautiful bird, conspicuous with his dark glossy-green head, rich salmon-coloured breast, and the upper part of the body and wings black and white. This full plumage is not assumed till the second year, and in the meantime, as well as in the post- nuptial dress, the male much resembles the female, having, like her, a reddish-brown head, the upper parts greyish-brown, and the lower dull white. In this condition the bird is often known as the “Dun Diver.” This spccies breeds abundantly in many parts of Scandinavia, Russia, Siberia, and North America, and of late years has been found to do so in Scotland, usually making its nest in the stump of a hollow tree or under a slab of rock. Jf. serrator, com- monly called the Red-breasted Merganser, is a somewhat smaller bird; and, while the fully-dressed male wants the delicate hue of the lower parts, he has a gorget of rufous mottled with black, below which is a patch of white feathers, broadly edged with black. The male at other times and the female always much resemble the preceding. It is more numerous than the Goosander, with a somewhat more

southern range, and is not so particular in selecting a sheltered site for its nest. Both these species have the bill and feet of a bright reddish-orange, while JY. albellus, known as the Smew, has these parts of a lead colour, and the breeding plumage of the adult male is white, with quaint crescentic markings of black, and the flanks most beauti- fully vermiculated—the female and male in undress having a general resemblance to the other two already described —but the Smew is very much smaller in size, and, so far as is known, it invariably makes its nest in a hollow tree, as ascertained first by Wolley (Zbis, 1859, pp. 69 et seq.). This last habit is shared by Jf. cucullatus, the Hooded Merganser of North America, in size intermediate between M. albellus and M. serrator, the male of which is easily recognizable by his broad semicircular crest, bearing a fan- shaped patch of white, and his elongated subscapulars of white edged with black. The conformation of the trachea in the male of M. merganser, M. serrator, and M. cucullatus is very like that of the Ducks of the genus Clangula, but M. albellus has a less exaggerated development more resembling that of the ordinary Fuligula.1 From the southern hemisphere two species of MJergus have been described, Jf, octosetaceus or brasilianus, Vieillot (NW. Dees. @Hist. Naturelle, ed. 2, xiv. p. 222; Gal. des Otseaux,

eS

1 Hybrids between, as is presumed, Jf. albellus and Clangula glaucion, the common Golden-eye, have been described and figured (Eimbeck, /sis, 1831, 300, tab. iii. ; Brehm, Naturgesch. aller Vég. Deutschlands, p. 980; Naumann, Véq. Deutschlands, xii. p. 194, frontispiece ; Kjerbdlling, Jour. fiir Ornithologie, 1853, Extraheft, p. 29, Naumannia, 1853, p. 327, Ornithol. Danica, tab. lv., suppl. tab. 29) under the naines of Mergus anatarius, Clangula angustirostris, and Anas (Clangula) mergotdes, as though they were a distinct species ; but the remarks of M. de Selys-Longchamps (Bull. Ac. Se. Bruselles, 1845, pt. ii, p. 854, and 1856, pt. ii. p. 21) leave little room for doubt as to their origin, which, when the eryptogamic habit and common range of their putative parents, the former unknown to the author last- named, is considered, will seem to be still more likely.

tom. il, p. 209, pl. 283), inhabiting South America, of which but few specimens have been obtained, having some general resemblance to JZ. serrator, but much more darkly coloured, and Jf, australis, Hombron and Jacquemont (Ann. Sc. Nat. Zoologie, ser. 2, xvi. p. 320; Voy. au Pol Sud, Oiseaux, pl. 31, fig. 2), as yet known only by the unique example in the Paris Museum procured by the French Antarctic expedition in the Auckland Islands. This last species may perhaps be found to visit New Zealand, and should certainly be looked for there.

Often associated with the Mergansers is the genus Merganetta, the so-called Torrent-Ducks of South America, of which three species are said to exist; but they possess spiny tails and have their wings armed with a spur. Whether they should be referred to the Mergine or the Erismaturine—the Spiny-tailed Ducks proper—is a ques- tion that further investigation must decide. (A. N.)

MERGUT, a district of British Burmah, between 9° 58’ and 13° 24’ N. lat. It forms the southernmost district of the Tenasserim division, and is bounded on the N, by Tavoy, KE. and S. by Siam, and W. by the Bay of Bengal, with an area of 7810 square miles. Two principal ranges cross Mergui from north to south, running almost parallel to each other for aconsiderable distance, with the Tenasserim river winding between them till it turns south and flows through a narrow rocky gorge in the westernmost range to the sea, Amongst these mountain ranges and their subsidiary spurs are several fertile plains, densely clothed with luxuriant vegetation. the water’s edge to the loftiest mountain on the eastern boundary, may be regarded as almost unbroken forest, only 73 square miles being under cultivation. The timber trees found towards the interior, and on the higher elevations, are of great size and beauty, the most valuable being teak, then-gan (Hopea odorata), ka-ynyeng (Dipterocarpus tuber- culutus), &c. The coast-line of the district, studded with an archipelago of two hundred and seven islands, is much broken, and for several miles inland is very little raised above sea-level, and is drained by numerous muddy tidal creeks, Southwards of Mergui town it consists chiefly of low mangrove swamps alternating with small fertile rice plains. After passing the mangrove limits, the ground to the east gradually rises till it becomes mountainous, even to the banks of the rivers, and finally culminates in the grand natural barrier

dividing British Burmah from Assam, The four principal rivers are the Tenasserim, Le-gnya, Pakchan, and Palouk, the first three being navigable for a considerable distance of their course. Coal is found in the district on the banks of the Tenasserim and its tributaries. Gold, copper, iron, and manganese are also found in various parts of the district.

From the notices of early travellers it appears that Mergui, when under Siamese rule, before it passed to the Burmese, was a rich and densely peopled country. On its occupation by the British in 1824-25 it was found to be almost depopulated—the result of border warfare and of the cruelties exercised by the Burmese con- querors. At that time the entire inhabitants only nuinbered 10,000 ; in 1876 they had increased to 51,846 (26,767 males and 25,079 females). Classified according to religion, there were—Buddhists, 48,750 ; Mohammedans, 2533 ; Hindus, 3538 ; Christians and others, 210. The district contains only one town (Mergui) with more than 5000 inhabitants. Only 73 square miles of the district area were under cultivation in 1876, but this area is steadily though slowly increasing. The principal manufactures are sugar-boiling and tin- smelting. Mergui carries on a flourishing trade with Rangoon, Bassein, and the Straits Settlements. The chief exports consist of rice, rattans, torches, dried fish, areca-nuts, sesamum seeds, molasses, sea-slugs, edible birds' nests, and tin. The staple imports are piece goods, tobacco, cotton, earthenware, tea,and sugar. The imperial revenue in 1876 amounted to £18,208. The climate is remarkably healthy, the heat due to its tropical situation being moderated by land and sea breezes. The rainfall in 1876 amounted to 1654 inches. The prevalent diseases are simple and remittent fevers, bronchitis, rheumatism, and small-pox,

Indeed, the whole district, from

MER—MER

Merrcut, chief town of the above district, is situated on an island at the mouth of the Tenasserim river. The population (10,731 in 1876-77) consists of many races— Talaings, Burmese, Malays, Bengalis, Madrasis, Siamese, and Chinese. Considerable trade is carried on with other Burmese ports and the Straits Settlements. The harbour admits vessels drawing 18 feet of water.

MERIDA, a city of 7390 inhabitants (1877), in the province of Badajoz, Spain, lies about 36 miles by rail eastward from Badajoz, on the Madrid and Badajoz line, on a small eminence on the right bank of the Guadiana. It is connected by a branch line of rail with Llerena on the south-east. The population is mostly agricultural. The city owes its interest entirely to its Roman remains, which are numerous and extensive. Of these one of the most important is the bridge of 81 arches of granite, erected by Trajan ; it is 2575 feet long, 26 feet broad, and 33 feet above the bed of the river; it was unfortunately seriously injured during the siege of Badajoz in 1812. Of the colossal wall that formerly surrounded the town all that remains is a fine fragment, built of dressed stone, on the spot formerly occupied by the castellum, and where the provisor of the order of Santiago afterwards had _ his residence (E] Conventual). In the town are some relics of temples of Diana, Mars, Fortuna, Jupiter, and others ; and the Arco de Santiago, 44 feet high, also dates from Trajan's time; it has unfortunately been stripped of its marble casing. Of the aqueduct from the laguna of Albuera thirty-seven enormous piers are still standing, with ten arches in three tiers built of brick and granite. To the east of the city is the circus, measuring some 1356 by 335 feet ; the eight rows of seats still remain. Further east- ward is the almost perfect theatre, and near it are the remains of the amphitheatre, or, as some prefer to call it, naumachia (Baiio de los Romanos).

Augusta Emerita was built in 25 B.c. by the emeriti of the fifth and tenth legions who had served in the Cantabrian war under Augustus. It rose to great splendour and importance as the eapital of Lusitania. During the Gothic period it beeame an episcopal see,

and several provincial councils known to history were held there. It was taken by Musa in 711, and reconquered by Alphonso in 1228.

MERIDA, the capital of the Mexican state of Yucatan, stands in a great plain in the north of the peninsula, on a surface of limestone rock, about 25 miles from the port of Progreso on the Gulf of Mexico, with which it is connected by a railway opened in 1880. It is a well-built city, with broad streets and squares ; and the flat-roofed stone houses, after the style introduced by the Spaniards, give a Moorish colour to the general view. Besides the cathedral, an im- posing edifice of the 16th century, the

bishop’s palace, and the Government house (all of which are situated in the prin- cipal square), the most notable building is the Franciscan monastery (1547-1600), which once harboured within its high and turreted walls no fewer than two thousand friars, but has been allowed to fall into complete decay since their expulsion in 1820. For a long time Merida has had the reputation of being one of the principal seats of culture in Mexico; and it possesses, besides the ecclesiastical seminary, schools of law, medicine, and pharmacy, a literary institute, a public library, a theatre, and a considerable number of periodical publications. Commercially it has shared in the prosperity which Yucatan in recent years owes to the development of the Sisal hemp trade ; and its manu- factures embrace cotton goods, cigars, sugar, andrum. The population, estimated about 1840 as 25,000, was found in 1871 to number 33,025. The Mayas still form numeri- cally the strongest element. Previous to the Spanish conquest the site of Merida was occupied by the Maya town of Tehoo, which contained so great a number of artificial stone-mounds that the new-comers had abundant material for all their buildings. The foundation of the

city dates from 1542, and it was made a bishopric in 1561. Compare Stephen’s Yucatan.

MERIDEN, a city of the United States, in New Haven county, Connecticut, 18 miles from New Haven by rail. It is a busy manufacturing town; the population has ‘nereased from 3559 in 1850 to 7426, 10,495, and 18,340 in 1860, 1870, and 1880. The Britannia Company alone employs upwards of 1000 hands, and sends out every year nearly $3,000,000 worth of Britannia metal and electro- plated goods ; and tin-ware, cutlery, brass-work, flint glass, guns, and woollen goods are also manufactured in the town. The State reform school had 307 inmates in 1880. A fortified tavern erected by Belcher in 1660 on the road between Boston and New Haven was the nucleus of Meriden; but the place was not incorporated as a town till 1866, and became a city in 1867.

MERIMEE, Prosprr (1803-1870), novelist, archseo- logist, essayist, and in all these capacities one of the greatest masters of French style during the century, was born at Paris on September 28, 1803, and died at Cannes on

the 23d of the same month sixty-seven years later, having lived just long enough to know that ruin was threatening France. Not many details have been published in reference to his family, but his father seems to have been a man of position and competence. Mérimée had English blood in his veins on the mother's side, and was always considered, at least in France, to look and behave more like an Englishman than a Frenchman. He was educated for the bar, but entered the public service instead. A young man at the time of the romantic movement, he felt its influence strongly, though his peculiar tempera- ment prevented him from joining any of the céteries of the period. This temperament was indeed exhibited by the very form and nature of the works in which he showed the influence of romanticism. Nothing was more prominent among the romantics than the fancy, as Mérimée himself puts it, for "local colour," the more unfamiliar the better. Mérimée exhibited this in an unusual way. In 1825 he published what purported to be the dramatic works of a Spanish lady, Clara Gazul, with a preface stating circumstan- tially how the supposed translator, one Joseph L'Estrange, had met the gifted poetess at Gibraltar. This was followed by a still more audacious and still more successful supercherie. In 1827 appeared a small book entitled La Guala (the anagram of Gazul), and giving itself out as translated from the Illyrian of a certain Hyacinthe Maglanovich. This book, which has greater formal merit than Clara Gazul, is said to have taken in Sir John Bow- ring, a competent Slav scholar, the Russian poet Poushkin, and some German authorities, although not only had it no original, but, as Mérimée declares, a few words of Illyrian and a book or two of travels and topography were the author's only materials. In the next year appeared a short dramatic romance, La Jacquerie, in which all Mérimée's characteristics are visible—his extraordinary faculty of local and historical colour, his command of language, his grim irony, and a certain predilection for tragic and terrible subjects which was one of his numerous points of contact with the men of the Renaissance. This in its turn was followed by a still better piece, the Chronique de Charles IX., which stands towards the 16th century much as the Jacquerie does towards the Middle Ages. All these works were to a certain extent second-hand, being either directly imitated or prompted by a course of reading on a particular subject. But they exhibited all the future literary qualities of the author save the two chiefest, his wonderfully severe and almost classical style, and his equally classical solidity and statuesqueness of construction. For the latter there was not much

opportunity in their subjects, and the former required a certain maturity and self-discipline which

o7

Mérimée had not yet given to himself. These were however, displayed fully in the famous Corsican story of Colomba, published in the momentous year 1830. This all things considered, is perhaps Mérimée's best tale.

He had already obtained a considerable position in the civil service, and after the revolution of July he was chef de cabinet to two different ministers. He was then appointed to the more congenial post of inspector of historical monuments. Mérimée was a born archeologist, combining linguistic faculty of a very unusual kind with the accurate scholarship which does not always accompany it, with remarkable historical appreciation, and with a sincere love for the arts of design and construction, in the former of which he had some practical skill. In his official capacity he published numerous reports, some of which, with other similar pieces, have been republished in his works. He also devoted himself to history proper during the latter years of the July monarchy, and published numerous essays and works of no great length, chiefly on Spanish, Russian, and ancient Roman history. He did not, however, neglect novel writing during this period, and numerous short tales, almost without exception master- pieces, appeared, chiefly in the Revue de Paris. He travelled a good deal, both for his own amusement and on official errands; and in one of his journeys to Spain, about the middle of Louis Philippe's reign, he made an acquaintance destined to influence his future life not a little—that of Madame de Montijo, mother of the future empress Eugenie. Mérimée, though in manner and language the most cynical of men, was a devoted friend, and shortly before the accession of Napoleon III. he had occasion to show this. His friend Libri was accused of having stolen valuable manuscripts and books from French librarics, and Mérimée took his part so warmly that he was actually sentenced to and underwent fine and imprisonment. He had been elected of the Academy in 1844, and also of the Academy of Inscriptions, of which he was a prominent member. Between 1840 and 1850 he wrote more tales, the chief of which were Arséne Guillot and Carmen.

The empire made a considerable difference in Mérimée's life. He was not a very ardent politician, but all his sympathies were against democracy, and he had therefore no reason to object to the Bonapartist rule, especially as his habitual cynicism and his irreligious prejudices made legitimism distasteful to him. But the marriage of Napoleon III. with the daughter of Madame de Montijo at once enlisted what was always the strongest of Mérimée's sympathies—the sympathy of personal friend- ship—on the emperor's side. He was made a senator, and continued to exercise his archeological functions ; but his most important réle was that of a constant and valued private friend of both the "master and mistress of the house," as he calls the emperor and empress in his letters. He was occasionally charged with a kind of irregular diplomacy, and once, in the matter of the emperor's Cesar, he had to pay the penalty frequently exacted from great men of letters by their political or social superiors who are ambitious of literary reputation. But for the most part he was strictly the "ami de la maison." At the Tuileries, at Compiégne, at Biarritz, he was a con- stant though not always a very willing guest, and his influence over the empress was very considerable and was fearlessly exerted, though he uscd to call himself, in imita- tion of Scarron, "le bouffon de sa majesté." His oceupar tions during the last twenty years of his life were numerous and important, though rather nondescript. He found, however, time for not a few more talcs, of which more will be said presently, and for two correspondences, which arc not the least of his literary achievements, while they have an extraordinary interest of matter. One of these consists

of the letters which have been published as Lettres & une Inconnue, the other of the letters addressed to Sir Antonio Panizzi, the late librarian of the British Museum. Various, though idle and rather impertinent, conjectures have been made as to the identity of the inconnue just mentioned. It is sufficient to say that the acquaintance extended over many years, that it partook at one time of the character of love, at another of that of simple friendship, and that Mérimée is exhibited under the most surprisingly diverse lights, most of them more or less amiable, and all interest- ing. The correspondence with Panizzi has somewhat less personal interest. Mérimée made the acquaintance origin- ally by a suggestion that his correspondent

should buy for the Museum some MSS. which were in the possession of Stendhal's sister, and for some years it was chiefly confined to correspondence. But Mérimée often visited England, where he had many friends (among whom the late Mr Ellice of Glengarry was the chief), and certain similarities of taste drew him closer to Panizzi personally, while during part of the empire the two served as the channel for a kind of unofficial diplomacy between the emperor and certain English statesmen. These letters are full of shrewd apergus on the state of Europe at different times. Both series abound in gossip, in amusing anecdotes, in sharp literary criticism, while both contain evidences of a cynical and Rabelaisian or Swiftian humour which was very strong in Mérimée. This characteristic is said to be so prominent in a correspondence with another friend, which now lies in the library at Avignon, that there is but little chance of its ever being printed. A fourth collection of letters, of much inferior extent and interest, has been printed by M. Blaze de Bury under the title of Lettres & une autre Inconnue. In the latter years of his life Mérimée suffered very much from ill health. It was necessary for him to pass all his winters at Cannes, where his constant companions were two aged English ladies, friends of his mother. The terrible year found him completely broken in health, and anticipating the worst for France. He lived long enough to see his fears realized, and to express his grief in some last letters, and he died on September 23, 1870.

Mérimée's character (which has been unwarrantably slandered by those to whom political differences or his sarcastic intolerance of "pose" in literature made him obnoxious) was a peculiar and in some respects an unfortunate one, but by no means unintelligible, and perhaps in a minor degree not uncommon. Partly by tempera- ment, partly it is said owing to some childish experience, when he discovered that he had been duped and determined never to be so again, not least owing to the example of Beyle, who was a friend of his family, and of whom he saw mnuch, Mérimée appears at a comparatively carly age to have imposed upon himself as a duty the maintenance of an attitude of sceptical indifference and sarcastic criticism. He certainly succeeded. Although, as has been said, a man of singularly warm and affectionate feelings, he obtained the credit of being a cold-hearted cynic; and, although he was both independent and disinterested, he was abused as a hanger-on and toad-eater of the imperial court. Both imputations were wholly undeserved, and indeed were

prompted to a great extent by the resentment felt by his literary equals on the other side at the cool ridicule with which he met them. But he deserved in some of the bad as well as many of the good senses of the term the phrase which we have applied to him of a man of the Renaissance. He had the warm partisanship and amiability towards friends and the scorpion- like sting for his foes, he had the ardent delight in learning and especially in matters of art and belles lettres, he had the scepticism, the voluptuousness, the curious delight in the contemplation of the horrible, which marked the men of letters of the hnmanist period. Like thein he was a man of the world, and a man who without any baseness liked a king's palace bettcr than a philosopher's hovel. Like thein he had an acute judgment in matters of business, and like

them a singular consciousness of the nothingness of things. Even his'

literary work has this Renaissance character. It is tolerably ex- tensive, amounting to some seventeen or eightecn volumes, but its bulk is not great for a life which was not short, and which was occupied at least nominally in little clse. About a third of it con- sists of the letters already mentioned, which will always be to those who delight in personal literature the most attractive part, and which, though in a fragmentary fashion, are really important

as throwing side lights on history. Rather more than another third consists of the ofticial work which has been already allnded to— reports, cssays, short historical sketches, the chief of which latter is a history of Pedro the Cruel, and another of the curious pretender known in Russian story as the false Demetrius. Some of the literary essays, such as those on Beyle, on Turguenief, &c., where a personal element enters, are excellent. Against others and against the larger historical sketches—admirable as they are—M. ''aine's criticism that they want life has some force. They are, however, all marked by Mérimée's admirable style, by his sound and accurate scholarship, his strong intellectual grasp of whatever he handled, his cool unprejudiced views, his marvellous faculty of designing and proportioning the treatment of his work. It is, however, in the remaining third of his work, consisting entirely of tales either in narrative or in dramatic form, and

especially in the former, that his full power is perceived. He translated a certain number of things (chiefly from the Russian); but his fame does not rest on these, on his already-mentioned youthful supercheries, or on his later semi- dramatic works. There remain about a score of tales extending in point of composition over exactly forty years, and in length from that of Colomba, the longest, which fills about one hundred and fifty pages, to that of L'Enlevement de la Redoute, which fills just half adozen. They are unquestionably the best things of their kind written during the century, the only nouvelles that can challenge comparison with them being the very best of Gautier, and one or two of Balzac. The motives arc sufficiently different. In Colomba and Mateo Falcone, the Corsican point of honour is drawn on; in Carmen (written apparently after reading Borrow's Spanish books), the gipsy eharacter ; in La Vénus d'llle and Lokis (two of the finest of all), certain grisly superstitions, in the former case that known in a milder form as the ring given to Venus, in the latter a variety of the were-wolf fancy. Arsene Gwillot is a singular satire full of sarcastic pathos on popular morality and religion ; La Chambre Bleue, an 18th-century conte, worthy of Crébillon for grace and wit, and superior to him in delicacy ; The Capture of the Licdoubt just mentioned is a perfect piece of description ; L' Abbé Aubain is again satirical ; La Double AMéprise (the authorship of which was objected to Mérimée when he was elected of the Academy) is an exercise in analysis strongly impregnated with the spirit of Stendhal, but better written than anything of that writer's. These stories, with his letters, assure Mérimée's place in literature at the very head of the French prose writers of the century. He had undertaken an edition of Brantéme for the Bibliothéque Elzévirienne, but it was never completed.

Mérimée's works have only been gradually published since his death. The latest, The Letters to Panizei, which have also ap- peared in English, bears date 1881. There is as yet no uniform or handsome edition, but almost everything is obtainable in the collections of MM. Charpentier and Calmann Lévy. (G. SA.)

MERINO. See SHeep and Woot.

MERIONETH (Welsh Meirionydd), a maritime county of North Wales, is bounded N. by Carnarvon and Denbigh, S.E. by Denbigh and Montgomery,

and W. by Cardigan Bay. It is triangular in shape, its greatest length north-east to south-west being 45 miles, and its greatest breadth north-west to south-east about 30miles. The area is 385,291 acres, or about 600 square miles. Next to Carnarvon, Meri- oneth is the most mountainous county in Wales. If the scenery is less bold and striking than that of Carnarvon, it excels it in richness, variety, and picturesque beauty. Its lofty mountains are interpenetrated by dark deep dells or smiling vales. The outlines of its rugged crags are softened and adorned by rich foliage. The sea views are frequently fine, and rivers, lakes, and waterfalls add a romantic charm to the valleys. The highest summits in the county are the picturesque Cader Idris (which divides into three peaks,—one, Pen-y-Gadair, having an altitude of 2914 feet), Aran Fawddwy (2955), Arenig-fawr (2818), Moel-wyn (2566), Rhobell-fawr (2360). The finest valleys are those of Dyfi, Dysyni, Talyllyn, Mawddach, and Festi- niog. The river Dyfrdwy or Dee rises 10 miles north-west of Bala, and, after passing through Bala Lake, flows north- east by Corwen to Denbighshire. The Dyfi risesin a small lake near Aran Fawddwy, and expands into an estuary of Cardigan Bay. The Mawddach or Maw, from the north of Aran Fawddwy, has a course of 12 miles south- west, during which it is joined by several other streams. The Dwyryd and other streams unite in forming the estuary of Traeth Bach. The finest waterfalls are the,

Rhaiadr-y-Glyn near Corwen, Rhaiadr Du, and Pistyll Cain, the latter 150 feet high. The lakes are very numerous, but small, the largest being Bala Lake, or Pim- plemere (in Welsh, Llyn Tegid, fair lake), 4 miles long by 1 broad, and Llyn Mwyngil (lake in a sweet nook) in the vale of Talyllyn. Both are much frequented by anglers. On account of frequent indentations the coast-line is about 100 miles long. Sandy beaches intervene between the rocky shores. Frequent shoals and sandbanks render navigation very dangerous. There are only two harbours of importance, Barmouth and Aberdovey.

A mountain tract of the county 15 miles from north to south by 10 from east to west, stretching from the coast inland, is of the Cambrian age, composed of grits, quartzose, and slates, and comprising the Merionethshire anticlinal. This tract is enclosed on the north, east, and south by the Menevian,

Lingula, Tremadoc, and Arenig beds, which are pierced by numerous dykes and intrusive masses, mostly greenstone. Rhobell-fawr is one of the greatest igneous masses in the whole area of the Lingula beds. The Arenig beds are interstratified with and overlaid by accumulations of volcanic ashes, felspathic traps, or lava flows, which form the rugged heights of Cader Idris, the Arans, the Arenigs, Manod, and Moel-wyn; and these are in turn overlaid by the Llandeilo and Bala beds, the latter includ- ing the Bala limestone. Extensive slate quarries are worked near Festiniog, mostly underground, in strata of the Llandeilo age, giving employment to about 4000 men. Gold, lead, copper, and manganese have been obtained in various places.

Climate and Agriculture.—The climate varies much with the elevation, in some places being bleak and cold, and in others re- markably equable and genial. At Aberdovcy it is proverbially mild, and the myrtle grows in the open air. Al] attempts to intro- duce fruits have proved abortive in most parts of the county. The soil is generally thin and poor, with fertile tracts in the valleys. A great portion of the moss has been reclaimed within late years.

According to the agricultural returns for 1882, there were 154,406 aeres, or considerably less than half the total area, under cultiva- tion, Of this as much as 119,188 acres were permanent pasture, and 13,755 under rotation grasses. Of the 17,312 acres under corn crops, 11,282 were under oats and 4807 under barley. Potatoes oeeupied 2392 aeres, and turnips only 1496 acres. The area under woods extended to 15,049 acres,

The total number of horses in 1882 was 6088. A breed of ponies is peculiar to this county and Montgomeryshire. The rearing of horned cattle and dairy farming are largely carried on, but the number of cattle (37,648) is considerably under the average of Wales generally. On the other hand the number of shcep in 1882 was 400,553, a larger number than in any other county of Wales, and mueh beyond the general average in the principality. They are a small hardy breed, which grow heavy fleeces. Goats frequent the loftier crags.

Aecording to the latest return the number of proprietors was 1695, possessing 308,374 acres, with a gross annual value of £188,253. Of the

owners 1044, or 62 per cent., possessed less than 1 aere, the average extent of the properties being 189 acres, and the average value per acre a little over 12s. There were ten proprictors who possessed over 5000 acres, viz., Sir W. W. Wynn, 20,295; R. J. L. Price, 17,718; T. P. Lloyd, 16,975; Mrs Kirkby, 18,410; Hon. C. H. Wynn, 10,504; A. J. G. Corbet, 9847; Sir E. Buckley, 87388; W. E. Oakeley, 6018; W. O. Gore, 5497; and R. M. Rickards, 5701.

Manufacturcs.—Woollen goods are manufactured in_ various places, especially at Dolgelly. They are principally coarse druggets, kerseymeres, and flannels. The knitting of stockings was a great industry at the close of last eentury, the value of the sales at Bala being estimated at from £17,000 to £19,000 annually.

Railways.—The Cambrian Railway skirts the coast from Port- madoc to Aberdovey. At Barmouth Junction a braneh of the same crosses to Dolgelly, where it is joined by a branch of the Great Western Railway. Anothcr braneh of the Great Western unites Bala and Festiniog, and the latter place has railway connexion both with Llandudno Junction and with Portwadoc.

Administration and Population.—Merioncthshire comprises five hundreds and thirty-three civil parishes. It has one court of quarter sessions, and the number of petty sessional divisions is six. Mcclesi- astically it is partly in the dioeese of Bangor, partly in that of St Asaph, The county returns one member to parliament. There is

no municipal or parliamentary borough. The towns returned in 1881 as urban sanitary distriets are Bala (1653), Barmouth (1512), Dolgelly (2457), Festiniog (11,272), and Towyn (8368). Sinee 1801 the population has nearly doubled. From 29,506 in that year it had increased in 1851 to 88,963, in 1871 to 46,598, and in 1881 to 54,798, of whom 27,576 were males, and 27,217 females.

History and Antiquities. —Originally Merioneth belonged to the territory of the Ordoviees, and under the Romans it was ineluded in Britannia Secunda. There are many Celtic, Roman, and medi- eval remains. Caer Drewyn on the Dee, near Corwen, was a British cainp. There are numerous croimlechs

in various parts of the county. especially near the sea-coast. The Via Occidentalis of the Romans passed through Merioneth from south to north, and at Tomen- y-Mur was joined by a branch of the South Watling Street, the Castell Tomen-y-Mur being supposed to be identical with the Roman station of Heriri Mons. The immense ruin of Castel-y- Bere was originally onc of the largest castles in Wales, but has not been oecupied since the time of Edward 1. During the Wars of tlie Roses the castle of Harlech, still a fine ruin, was held by the Lancastrians, and was the last in Wales to surrender. Of ecelesi- astical remains the most important is Cymmer Abbey, founded by the Cistereians in 1198, a very fine ruin eontaining architecture of various periods from Norman to Perpendicular. There are numer- ous interesting old churches.

MERLIN. See Fatcon.

MERMAIDS anp MERMEN, in the popular mythology of England and Scotland, are a class of beings more or less completely akin to man, who have their dwelling in the sea, but are capable of living on land and of entering into social relations with men and women.! Thiey are easily identified, at least in some of their most important aspects, with the Old German Meriminni or Meerfrau, the Icelandic Hafgufa, Margygr, and Marmennill (mod. Marbendill), the Danisli Hafmand or Maremind, the Irish Merrow or Merruach, the Marie-Morgan of Brittany and the Morforwyn of Wales ;? and they have various points of resemblance to the vodyany or water-sprite and the rusalka or stream-fairy of Russian mythology. The typical mermaid (who is much more frequently described than the merman) has the head and body of a woman, usually of exceeding loveliness, but below the waist is fashioned like a fish with scales and fins. Her hair is long and beautiful, and she is often represented, like the Russian rusalka, as combing it with one hand while in the other she holds a looking-glass. At other times, like the rusalka, she is seen engaged in the more prosaic occupation of washing or beating clothes ; but this, as, for example, in Hugh Miller’s terrible Loch Slin legend, is a sign of some impending calamity. For a time at least a mermaid may become to all appearance an ordi- nary human being; and from a very striking Irish legend (“The Overflowing of Lough Neagh and Liban the Mer- maid,” in Joyce’s Old

Celtic Romances) it is evident that a human being may also for a time be transformed into a mermaid.

The-mermaid legends, both English and other, may be grouped as follows. A. A mermaid or mermaids either voluntarily or under compulsion reveal things that are about to happen. Thus the two mermaids (merewip) Hadebure and Sigelint, in the Mibelungenlied, disclose his future course to the hero Hagen, who, having got possession of their garments, which they had left on the shore, compels them to pay ransom in this way. According to Resenius, a mermaid appeared to a peasant of Samsée, foretold the birth of a prince, and moralized on the evils of intem-

1 The name mermaid is eompounded of the A.-S. mere, a lake, aud megd, amaid; but, though mere wif oceurs in Beowulf, mere-maid does not appear till the Middle English period (Chaucer, Romauwnt of the Rose, &c.). In Cornwall the fishermen say merry-maids and merry- men. The connexion with the sea rather than with inland waters appears to be of later origin. ‘The Mermaid of Martin Meer” (Roby’s Traditions of Lancashire, vol. ii.) is an example of the older force of the word; and such ‘‘meer-women” are known to the country-folk in various parts of England (¢.g., at Newport in Shrop- shire, where the town is some day to be drowned by the woman’s agency).

2 See Rhys, ‘ Welsh Fairy Tales,” in Y Cymmrodor, 1881, 1882.

perance, &e. (Kong Frederichs den andens Krinike, Copenhagen, 1680, p. 302). B. A Mermaid imparts supernatural powers to a human being. Thus in the beautiful story of “The Old Man of Cury” (in Hunt’s Popular Romances of the West of England, 1871) the old man, instead of silver and gold, obtains the power of doing good to his neighbours by breaking the spells of witchcraft, chasing away diseases, and discovering thieves. John Reid, the Cromarty shipmaster, was more selfish,—his “wishes three” being that neither he nor any of his friends should perish by the sea, that he should be unin- terruptedly successful in everything he undertook, and that the lady who scorned his love should scorn it no more. C. A mermaid has some one under her protection, and for wrong done to her ward exacts a terrible

penalty. One of the best and most detailed examples of this class is the story of the ‘‘Mermaid’s Vengeance” in Mr Hunt’s book already quoted. D. A mermaid fulls in love with a human being, lives with him as his lawful wife for a time, and then, some compact being unwittingly or intentionally broken by him, departs to her true home in the sea. Here, if its mermaid form be accepted, the typical legend is undoubtedly that of Melusima, which, being made the subject of a full-fledged romance by Jean d’Arras, became one of the most popular folk-books of Europe, appearing in Spanish, German, Dutch, and Bohemian versions. Melusina, whose name may be a far-off echo of the Mylitta (Venus) of the Pheenicians, was married to Raymond of Lusignan, and was long afterwards proudly recognized as one of their ancestors by the Luxembourg, Rohan, and Sassenaye families, and even by the emperor Henry VII. Her story will be found in Baring Gould’s Myths of the Middle Ages. K. A mermaid falls in love with a man, and entices him to go and live with her below the sea; or a merman wins the affection or captures the person of an earthborn maiden. This form of legend is very common, and has naturally been a favourite with poets. Macphail of Colonsay successfully rejects the allurements of the mermaid of Corrievrekin, and comes back after long years of trial to the maid of Colonsay.!_ The Danish ballads are especially full of the theme ; as “Agnete and the Merman,” an ante- cedent of Matthew Arnold’s “Forsaken Merman”; the “Deceitful Merman, or Marstig’s Daughter”; and the finely detailed story of Rosmer Hafmand (No. 49 in Grimm). .

In relation to man the mermaid is usually of evil issue if not of evil intent. She has generally to be bribed or compelled to utter her prophecy or bestow her gifts, and whether as wife or paramour she brings disaster in her train. In itself her sea-life is often represented as one of endless delights, but at other times a mournful mystery and sadness broods over it. The fish-tail, which in popular fancy forms the characteristic feature of the mermaid, is really of secondary importance; for the true Teutonic mermaid—probably a remnant of the great cult of the Vanir—had no fish-tail;? and this symbolic appendage occurs in such remote mythological regions as to give no clue to historical connexion. The Tritons, and, in the later representations, the Sirens of classical antiquity, the Pheenician Dagon, and the Chaldean Oannes are all well- known examples ; the Ottawas and other American Indians have their man-fish and woman-fish (Jones, Traditions of the North

American Indians, 1830); and the Chinese tell stories not unlike our own about the sea-women of their southern seas (Dennis, Folklore of China, 1875).

Quasi-historical instances of the appearance or capture of

1 See Leyden's ''The Mermaid," in Sir Walter Scott's Border Minstrelsy.

2 Karl Blind, '* New Finds in Shetlandic and Welsh Folk-Lore," in Gentleman's Magazine, 1882.

mermaids are common enough,' and serve, with the frequent use of the figure on signboards and coats of arms, to show how thoroughly the myth had taken hold of the popular imagination. A mermaid captured at Bangor, on the shore of Belfast Lough, in the 6th century, was not only baptized, but admitted into some of the old calendars as a saint under the name of Murgen (Notes and Queries, Oct. 21, 1882); and Stowe (Annales, under date 1187) relates how a man-fish was kept for six months and more in the castle of Orforde in Suffolk. As showing how legendary material may gather round a simple fact, the oft-told story of the sea-woman of Edam is particu- larly interesting. The oldest authority, Joh. Gerbrandus a Leydis, a Carmelite monk (0b. 1504), tells (Annales, &e., Frankfort, 1620) how in 1403 a wild woman came through a breach in the dike into Purmerlake, and, being found by some Edam milkmaids, was ultimately taken to Haarlem and lived there many years. Nobody could understand her, but she learned to spin, and was wont to adore the cross. Ocka Scharlensis (Chronijk van Lriesland, Leeuw., 1597) reasons that she was not a fish because she could spin, and she was not a woman because she could live in the sea; and thus in due course she got fairly established as a genuine mermaid. Vosmaer, who has carefully investigated the matter, enumerates forty writers who have repeated the story, and shows that the older ones speak only of a woman (see " Beschr. van de zoogen. Meermin der stad Haarlem," in Verh. van de Moll. Maatsch. van K. en Wet., part 23, No. 1786). As for the stuffed mermaids which have figured from the days of Bar- tholomew Fair downwards, it is enough to mention that exhibited in

the Turf Coffee-house, London, in 1822, and carefully drawn by Cruikshank (compare Chambers, Book of Days).

The best account of the mermaid-miyth is in Baring Gould's Myths of the Middle Ages. See also, besides works already men- tioned, Pontoppidan, who in his logically credulous way collects much matter to prove the existence of mermaids; Maillet, Zed/i- amed, Hague, 1755; Grimm, Deutsche Mythologie, i. 404, and Alidién. Heldentlieder, 1811; Waldron's Description and Train's Hist. and Stat. Acc. of the Isle of Man ; Folklore Society's Record, vol. ii; Napier, Hist. and Trad. Tales connected with the South of Seotland ; Sébillot, Traditions de la Haute Bretagne, 1882, aud Contes des Marins, 1882. (H. A. W.)

MEROE, in classical geography (Strabo, xvii. 2,2; Pliny, ii. 73, v.10; Ptol., p. 201), was the metropolis of ASthiopia, situated on an island of the same name between the Nile and the Astaboras (Atbara). The "island" is only an inaccurate name for the fertile plain between the two rivers. This Meroe, first mentioned by Herodotus (ii. 29 sq.), succeeded an older Ethiopian kingdom of Napata lower down the Nile, originally subject to and civilized from Egypt, but which afterwards became independent and even sent forth an Ethiopian dynasty to reign in Egypt, to which the So and Tirhaka of the Bible belonged (see Erutopra), The name of Meroe in the form Merawi is now given to Napata. The later Meroe retained its independence when Egypt fell under foreign sovereigns. Diodorus (iii. 6) describes it as entirely controlled by the priesthood till a native prince Ergamenes destroyed the sacerdotal caste in the time of Ptolemy II. Queen Candace (Acts viii. 27) was probably sovereign of Meroe; see Lepsius's Letters, Eng. tr., pp. 196, 206; and comp. Strabo, xvii. 1, 54 for

3 Compare the strange account of the quasi-human creatures found in the Nile given by Theophylactus, fistoriz, viii. 16, pp. 299-302 of Bekker's ed.

- See the paper in Jour. Brit. Arch. Ass., xxxviii., 1882, by H. S. Cuming, who points out that mermaids or mermen occur in the arms of Earls Caledon, Howth, and Sandwich, Viscounts Boyne and Hood, Lord Lyttleton, and Scott of Abbotsford, as well as in those of the Ellis, Byron, Phené, Skeffington, and other families. The English

heralds represent the creatures with a single tail, the French and German heralds frequently with a double one.

a Queen Candace in Augustus's time when the Romans under Petronius advanced to Napata. Meroe was visited by Greek merchants ; and the astronomical expedition of Eratosthenes determined its latitude with great accuracy. An exploring party in the reign of Nero found that the country below Meroe, formerly the site of many towns, had become almost wholly waste (Pliny, vi. 29). From the 6th to the 14th century of our era the Christian (Jacobite) realm of Dongola occupied the place of the older kingdom. The ruins of Meroe and Napata were fully explored by Lepsius in 1844, and the monuments are pictured in his Denkmdler.

MERSEBURG, the chief town of a district of the same name in the Prussian province of Saxony, is situated on the river Saale, 10 miles to the south of Halle and 17 to the west of Leipsic. It consists of a quaint and irregularly built old town, with two extensive suburbs, and contains six churches and several schools and charitable institutions. The cathedral is an interesting old pile, with a Romanesque choir of the 11th, a transept of the 13th, and a Late Gothic nave of the 16th century. Among its numerous monuments is that of Rudolph of Swabia, who fell in 1080 in an encounter with his rival Henry IV. It contains two paintings by Lucas Cranach. Contiguous to the cathedral is the Gothic chateau, formerly the residence of the Saxon princes and the bishops of Merseburg. The town-house, the post-office, and the "'standehaus " for the meetings of the provincial estates are also noteworthy buildings. The industries of Merseburg consist of the manufacture of card- board and coloured paper, dyeing, glue-boiling, machine- making, calico-printing, tanning, and brewing. Its popu- lation in 1880 was 15,205.

Merseburg (i.¢., ''mareh-town") is one of the oldest towns in Germany. From the 9th eentury down to 1007 it was the eapital of a countship of its own name, and from 968 to 1543 it was the seat ofa bishop. In the 10th, 11th, and 12th eenturies it was a favourite residenee of the German emperors, and at this time its fairs enjoyed the importanee afterwards inherited by those of Leipsic. The town was repeatedly visited by

destructive conflagrations in the 14th to 17th centuries, and also sutfered severely during the Thirty Years' War. From 1656 to 1738 it was the residence of the dukes of Saxe- Merseburg. The great vietory gained by the emperor Henry I. over the Huns in 933 is believed to have been fought on the Keuseh- berg near Merseburg.

MERTHYR TYDFIL, or Mertuyr Typvit, a parlia- mentary borough and market-town of Glamorganshire, South Wales, is situated in a bleak and hilly region on the river Taff, and on several railway lines, 25 miles north-north-west of Cardiff and 30 east-north-east of Swansea. The town, which consists principally of the houses of work- men, is for the most part meanly and irregularly built, and at one time, on account of its defective sanitary arrange- ments, was frequently subject to epidemics of great severity. Within recent years great improvements have taken place, and the town now possesses both a plentiful supply of pure water and an excellent system of sewage. There are also some good streets with handsome shops, while in the suburbs there are a number of private residences and villas inhabited by the wealthier classes. Apart from its extensive iron and steel works, the town possesses no feature of interest. It is situated in the centre of the South Wales coal basin, and the rich coal-mines in the vicinity supply great facilities for the iron industries. At Merthyr Tydfil, which is said to have received its name from the martyr- dom of a British saint Tydfil, there were smelting-works i. : very early period, but none of any importance until

5.

ture of bar iron developed with great rapidity, but since then the production of steel has largely taken its place. The borough returns two members to parliament. The population of the urban sanitary district in 1871 was 51,949, and in 1881 it was 48,857; the population of the

From about forty years ago until 1875 the manufac- |

4]

parliamentary borough, which includes the parish of Aber- dare and parts of the parishes of Llanwonno and Merthyr Tydfil and of Vainor (Brecon), and has an area of 29,954 acres, was in the same years 97,020 and 91,347.

MERV, Merv, or Maovr,! a district of Central Asia, situated on the borderland of Iran and Turan.

The oasis of Merv lies in the midst of a desert, in about 37° 30’ N. lat. and 62° E. long. It is about 250 miles from Herat, 170 from Charjui on the Oxus, 360 from Khiva, and 175 from Gawars, the nearest point in the newly acquired (1881) Russian territory of Akhal.

The great chain of mountains which, under the name of Paropamisus and Hindu-Kush, extends across the Asiatic continent from the Caspian to China, and forms the line of ethnic demarcation between the Turanian and Indo- Germanic races, is interrupted at a single point ; that point is on the same longitude with Merv. Through or near the

f i NH NN i yi rf a HN —

Scale of English Miles ‘0 190

!

ee \

Neighbourhood of Merv,

trouée or gap which nature has created flow northward in parallel courses the rivers Heri-rud (Tejend) and Murghab, until they lose themselves in the desert of Kara-kum—that large expanse of waste, known also as Turcomania, which spreads at the northern foot of the mountains, and stretches from the lower Oxus to the Caspian.

Whether as a satrapy of Darius and subsequently as a province of Alexander, whether as the home of the Parthian race, whether as a bulwark against the destructive waves of Mongol invasion, or later as the glacis of Persian Khorasan, the valleys of those rivers—the district of Merv

1 Merv is the modern Persian name. The river Margus, now the Murghab, on which was built the ancient city, is derived from Margu, the name of the province as reeorded in the Behistan inscriptions of Darius. Spiegel

connects the name Margy with old Bactrian meregho, bird, in allusion to the numerous swarms of birds that gather there. So, too, the river name Murghab means bird-water. The district ap- pears to have been known iu the 5th eentury as Marv-i-rud, so that the river was then the Marv. The name Merdm for the district occurs in the Armenian geography ascribed to Moses of Khorene, written probably in the 7th century (ed. Patkanoff). Maour is the Uzbek name, and of eomparatively recent date.

—have ever been important outposts on the borders of Iran. In bye-gone epochs their banks have, under powerful rulers, been studded with populous and flourishing cities, which bore the name of “ Sovereign of the Universe” (Merv Shah-«rjehan), and vied for fame with “ Balkh, the Mother of cities”; of late times, with weakness or absence of govern- ment, those same banks have become choked with fallen battlements and ruins, the home of the snake and the jackal.

Merv has soared to prosperity or fallen to decay accord- ing to her political status at the moment, and history, which repeats itself, may yet have to sing her praises in the future as it has done in the past. All that human life in the desert requires is there,—water in abundance, and a soil unsurpassed for fertility. Good government is alone wanting to turn those natural gifts to full account.

The present inhabitants of the district are Turcomans of the Tekke tribe, who, like the other tribes inhabiting Turcomania, enjoyed until the approach of the Russians virtual independence, and acknowledged allegiance to no one,—a pastoral people who eked out a miserable existence by the trade of passing caravans, and in bad times pillaged the neighbouring and equally barbarous states, to whose reprisals they were in turn subjected.

From the year 1869, the date of the establishment of the Russian military settlement at Krasnovodsk on the east shore of the Caspian, the wave of Russian conquest has gradually swept eastwards along the northern frontier of Persia until it has for the moment stopped at the outer- most border of the

Akhal Turcoman country, which was incorporated in 1881 by Russia as the result of the defeat of that tribe at Geok Tepe. Among the districts still farther east, to which the Russians give the name of Eastern Turcomania, is that of the Merv Tekke Turcomans, kinsmen of the Akhal Tekkes, the most recent of Russia's subjects. The district of the Merv Tekkes may be taken to be that included between the lower Murghab below Yulutan, where the river enters the plain, and the Persian frontier from Sarakhs to Gawars.

A reference to the map will show the strategical import- ance of this district, situated at the point of meeting of two lines, of which one is the strategic line of Russian advance on Herat from Krasnovodsk to Sarakhs, and the other the strategic line of advance on the same place from Tashkend through Bokhara. The capital of the district is, moreover, the crossing-point of the Herat-Khiva and Meshed-Bokhara trade routes.

Consequently this district, a solitary oasis in a vast desert, guarantees to its possessor the command of an important avenuc betwecn north and south, and, in the

event of its falling into Russian hands, will give that power |

in addition a valuable link in the chain of connexion between her recent acquisitions on the Persian frontier and those in Turkestan, the forging of which has been persistently advocated by Russian writers for years past. One of these, Colonel Veniukoff, frankly admits that it is the political results—" the consolidation of friendly relations with the Turcomans"—and not commercial interests merely, that are primarily looked to, and openly states that the forward movement in Central Asia "cannot end otherwise than by the annexation to Russia of the whole of Turan."

Whether by design or by the force of circumstances, the recommendations of those writers have been translated into facts, and Russia with her advanced post at Askabad is now within 400 miles of Herat, which Sir Henry Rawlinson designates as the key of India. The occupation of the Merv Tekke country would bring Russia to within 250 miles of Herat. From Askabad she is in connexion with the Caspian by a good line of communication, part of which from the sea to Kizil Arvat) is by rail ; and hence facilities

are offered for bringing up not only the resources of the Caucasus but of the whole of European Russia. While Russian troops are within 400 miles of Herat, the British troops at Quetta are more than 500 miles from Herat.! These remarks serve to explain the very natural suspicion with which Great Britain has regarded the occupation one after another of important strategical points along that route by which alone Russia can strike at India, —the same line by which Napoleon meditated a Russo-French invasion in the early part of this century.

In the matter of Merv and the neighbouring Turcoman districts diplomacy has not been idle. As early as 1869, when an inter- change of opinions was taking place between the Russian and British Governments with respect to the demarcation of a neutral zone between the two empires, Great Britain objected to the Russian proposal that this zone should be Afghanistan, ‘‘ because of the near approach to India that would be thereby afforded to

Settlements and Inhabited Centres.—Of towns or even villages, fixed centres of habitation, there are none, ac- cording to Mr O’Donovan, the latest European traveller to Merv. The present political and military capital of Merv is Koushid Khan Kala, a fort which serves rather as a place of refuge against sudden attacks than as a habita- tion. It is situated on the east bank of the most westerly branch of the Murghab, about 25 miles bclow the dam at Porsa Kala. In form it is oblong, measuring 1? miles long by # mile broad, is constructed entirely of earth, revetted on the exterior slope with sun-dried brick; the ramparts are 40 feet high, and are 60 feet at the base. The fort is built in a loop of the river, which protects it on two sides ; between it and the river is an “obali,” or nomad village of huts and tents, some thousand in number, disposed in rows, but there is no town or settlement.

Twenty-five miles east of Koushid Khan Kala lie the ruins of the Greek city of Antiochia Margiana, showing traces of a high civilization. According to Strabo (xi. 2) the Merv oasis at this period was surrounded with a wall measuring 1500 stadia (185 miles). Mr O’Donovan found the trace of the fort of Iskander to have been quadrangular, with a length of side of 900

yards. This was probably the fort built by Alexander, about 328 B.c., on his return from

1 Concurrently with the consolidation of her position in Turcomania, Russia has of late been showing less military activity on the side of her Turkestan district. It is probable that her recent explorations at the sources of the Oxus have demonstrated the impracticability of directing any offensive movement against India from that side. Hence the line of strategical advance has been shifted from Tashkend to Tiflis.

Sogdiana after the capture of Bessus. The city was destroyed in 666 A.D. by the Arabs, who built a new one, afterwards known as Sultan Sanjar, about 1000 yards away, and occupying an area, according to Mr O'Donovan, of about 600 yards square. The towers are still extant, and inside can be seen the ruins of a most elaborate tomb, in which the supposed bones of Sultan Sanjar are enshrined. It has always been a place of pilgrimage for the faithful. Not far to the south-west lies the site of the last city of Merv, that which existed up to a hundred years ago, when it was laid waste by the Bokharians. It bears the name of its gallant defender Bairam Ali.

These three ruins are all that remain of that which flourished of yore as "sovereign of the universe."

At the time of the visit of Burnes, Abbott, Shakespear, and Taylour Thomson, about the fourth decade of the century, Merv was under the jurisdiction of Khiva, and the administrative centre was at Porsa Kala, where the dam is situated. This place is now also a waste of mud ruins, uninhabited.

Rivers.—The Heri-rud (or Tejend, as the river is

named below Sarakhs) runs a course of some 280 miles,

within Afghan borders. On reaching the Persian fron- tier it turns north and forces a channel through the mountain chain near Sarakhs. Beyond Sarakhs

the river is Turcoman on both banks, runs close to the Khelat mountains, and in the latitude of Askabad loses itself in – the marshes formed by the spring floods. It is probably the Ochus of ancient geography, which watered Nissa, once the capital of Parthia, and joined the Oxus just before the latter river disembogued into the Caspian (Rennell's Herodotus). The Tejend is fordable at all points below Sarakhs except in the early spring after the melting of the snows. On the road from Meneh to Merv the river is sluggish, 50 yards wide and 4 feet deep in February. The river-bed is sunk 12 to 15 feet below the level of the surrounding country, and has immense quantities of drift wood on its banks; trees and luxuriant herbage clothe the immediate borders. At midsummer the river runs nearly dry, and does not reach Sarakhs. The Kashaf-rud, which flows near Meshed, is one of its chief affluents. The Murghab takes its rise in the northern slopes of the Paropamisus, and runs parallel to the Heri-rud at a distance of 70 miles from it. On this river lies the plain or oasis of Merv, irrigated by means of an elaborate system of dams and canals cut from the main river. Beyond the limits of the oasis the Murghab "hides its streams in the sand," like the Tejend. The river at Porsa Kala (near the principal dam) is 80 yards wide, at Koushid Khan Kala 30 to 40 yards wide. In summer it is much swollen by the melting of the snows, and its stream is then barely fordable. The water is yellow in colour from suspended matter. Formerly a great deal of the country, now a waste, between the two rivers was also cultivated by the agency of water derived from canals cut from the Tejend. These canals extended to Kucha Kum in the desert, rendering the journey between the two rivers much easier than in the present day. From the Murghab was also cut, among others, the Kara-i-ab canal, which ran for a distance of 40 miles towards the Tejend. Recent explorers affirm that there is no reason why these canals should not be again filled from those rivers, wien the intervening country, "an argil- laceous expanse" (O'Donovan), would become culturable.

Communication. —Merv is surrounded on all sides by desert. On the north, west, and east this desert is sandy and arid; water is exceedingly scarce, the wells being sometimes 60 or 70 miles apart, and easily choked. To the south of Merv, between the rivers Murghab and Tejend, there are traces of past cultivation, of irrigating canals, and of considerable settlements. Between

the Tejend and Askabad the road lies through a populous well-cultivated country (Persian territory) by way of Kahka and Lutfabad.

43

‘There are no roads in Merv,—nothing but mere tracks. Many wide and deep irriyating canals have to be crossed ; bridges are few

and bad. The inhabitants cross by inflated skins.

The following tracks lead to the Persian frontier from Merv :—(1)

via Mahmur or Chungul to Lutfabad—eight days on camels; (2) via

Shahidli to Mehna—120 mmiles ; (3) via Shahidli to Fort Cherkeshli and Meshed,—for 85 miles between the Murghab and Tejend there

is scarcely any water; (4) via Sarakhs to Meshed, 9 or 10 marches

for camels, and, according to Petrusevitch, without water between Merv and Sarakhs—120 miles.

To the Afghan frontier lead (1) the track vé@ Sarakhs and up the Heri-rud to Herat—fit for a coach, according to Sir Charles Mac- Gregor and Mr Lessar ; and (2) a practicable track, used by Abbott and Shakespear, up the Murghab and Kushk rivers.

To the Oxus in Bokharian territory lead several tracks, the chief of which is that to Charjui—nine marches for camels. Water is scarce.

To Khiva by the direct track is 360 miles. Water is scarce.

Population.—The Turcomans, according to Sir Henry Rawlinson and others, are descendants of the Ghuz or Komani, a race of Turks who inigrated westward from their homes in_the Altai before the Christian era, and penetrated even to the Danube. From sub- sequent intermixture with Persian and Caucasian eoples, they exhibit variations from the true Tartar type. According to Baron de Bode the Turcoman closely resembles both in

appearance and in speech the Nogai Tartar and the Tartar of Kasan on the Volga.

They are an independent race, as wild and free as their native desert, brave and very impatient of control—‘‘ Wild warriors in stormy freedom bred” (Moore). They have a very evil reputation for brigandage and murder, so much so that the Bokharians and Khivans have a proverb—‘‘If you meet a viper and a Mervi, com- mence by killing the Mervi ind then despatch the viper.” Of late years a change for the better has taken place, and recent travellers among them state that the Mervis show an inclination to lead a more settled life and to establish an elementary form of government (Medjliss), and that it is no longer accounted an honour among them to kill their neighbours. Opium smoking and arrack drink- ing are apparently widespread vices (O’Donovan); at the saine time they are described as clever and intelligent.

The Merv Tekkes (like the Akhal Tekkes) are classed in two great divisions —the Toktamish and the Otamish. Each of these divisions consists of two clans, and each clan is subdivided into families. The two claus of the Toktamish are called Beg and Wakil; those of the Otamish, Suchmuz and Bukshi. The clans of Beg and Wakil are the most powerful, and occupy that part of the oasis which lies on the right or east bank of the Murghab. The Suchmuz and Bukshi have their tents on the left or west bank.

There is no machinery of governinent, and no taxes are levied. Whatever government there be is of a patriarchal nature. Each family has a ketkhoda (patriarch), who represents the family in matters of policy, but can only act in accordance with the wishes of the clan. Theaksakals, or grey beards, are also useful in settling intertribal disputes, but they are tolerated only so long as they do not act in opposition to the tribesmen. For external affairs and in time of war the ketkhodas exercise a certain amount of power. The authority of ketkhodas and aksakals is, however, overriden by the laws of custom or usage (deb) and the less respected laws of religion. The injunctions of deb are paramount. It sanctions the alaman, or plundering raid, and in general regulates the ‘Turcoman’s daily life ; its prescriptions are more Pee than those of the Koran.

The Tekkes marry young. The father purchases for his twelve- year-old son a child-wife for 500 to 2000 krans (£20 to £80). A young widow of twenty-five is much more valuable, but a woman over forty is not worth the price of a camel. On the conclusion of the bargain, the priest reads a prayer from the Koran, and the marriage becomes valid.

The dress of the men consists of a long tunic of coarse crimson silk reaching below the knees, with a white sash through which is stuck a dagger ; an outer robe of brown eamel-hair cloth, a huge sheepskin hat, trousers and slippers or amber-coloured knee-boots, complete the costume. Thewomen are exceedingly fond of trinkets, rings, and amulets, which accompany their movements with a sound as it were of bells. Their dress consists of the same red silk robe as the men wear, witha sash round the waist, and high-heeled boots, red or yellow.

The religion is Suni Mohammedan ; Oriental Turk.

The numbers of Merv Tekkes on the Murghab and Tejend are variously estimated, but may be stated approximately at 40,000 tents, including 5000 tents of the Salor tribe. These 40,000 tents represent a population of 200,000 to 250, 000 souls. The Salors and Sariks at Yulutan and Panjdeh, higher up the Murghab, are given at 11,000 tents, or some 60,000 souls.

Products, Arts, and Manufactures. —The country in all times has been renowned throughout the East for its fertility. Strabo tells us “that it was not uncommon to meet with a vine whose stock could hardly be clasped by two men with outstretched arms, while

their language Jagatai or

A

clusters of grapes might be gathered two cubits in length.” The Arab traveller Ibn Haukal, writing in the 10th century, remarks that ‘the fruits of Merv are finer than those of any other place, and one cannot sec in any other city such palaces with groves and streams and gardens.” A local proverb says, ‘‘Sow a grain to veap a hundred.” All cereals and inany fruits grow in great abund- ance.

The Turcomans possess a famous breed of horses,—not prepos- sessing in appearance, being somewhat leggy and long in the back and neck, but capable of accomplishing long distances—50 or 60 miles—for several days in succession, and with very little food. Their great peculiarity appears to be their hairlessness ; the coat is very fine, the mane and tail very scanty. This breed of horses, as well as the wealth of the Merv Tekkes in camels and flocks, is fast disappearing.

The Turcomans are noted as excellent workers in silver and as armourers, ani their carpets are superior to Persian. They also make felts and a rough cloth of shcep's wool.

One of the chief occupations of the male sex is the repair of the dains and the clearing of the canals, upon the efficiency of which their existence is dependent. The services of a large number of workmen are always held in readiness for the purpose. In 1878 the unusual mass of water in the Murghab carried away the dam, and the drying up of some of the canals nearly led to a failure of the crops.

Climate.—The position of Merv, in the midst of sandy deserts in the heart of Asia, makes the climate in the heat of summer most oppressive. The least wind raises clouds of fine sand and dust, which fill the air, render it so opaque as to obscure the noonday sun, and make respiration difficult. In winter the climate is very fine. Snow falls rarely, and melts at once.

fistory.—The name Merv, or some similar form, occurs at a very early period in the history of the Aryan race. Under Mouru we find it mentioned with Bakhdi (Batkh) in the geography of the Zend Avesta (Vendidad, fargand i., ed. Spiegel), which dates prob- ably from a period anterior to the conquest of Bactria by the Assyrians, and thercfore at least one thousand two hundred years before the Christian era. Under the name of Margu it occurs in the cuneiform inscriptions of Darius Hystaspis, where it is referred to as forming part of one of the satrapies of the ancient Persian empire (Inscriptiones Behistant, ed. Kossowicz). It afterwards becaine a pro- vince (Mapy:avy) of the Greco-Syrian, Parthian, and Persian king- doms. On the Margus—the Epardus of Arrian and now the Murghab — stood the capital of the district, Antiochia Margiana, so called after Antiochus Soter, who rebuilt the city founded by Alexander the Great.

About the 5th century, during the dynasty of the Sasa- nids, Merv was the seat of a Christian archbishopric of the Nestorian Church. In the middle of the 7th century the flood of Arab conquest swept over the mountains of Persia to the deserts of Central Asia. Merv was occupied 666 a.p. by the lieutenants of the caliph Othman, and was constituted the capital of Khorasan. From this city as their base the Arabs, under Kuteibe bin Mustim, early in the 8th century brought undcr subjection Balkh, Bokhara, Ferghana, and Kashgaria, and penetrated into China as far as the province of Kan-su. In the latter part of the 8th century Merv became obnoxious to Islam as the centre of heretical propaganda preached by Mokannah (Haschem ben Hakem), the ‘veiled prophet of Khorasan,” who claimed to be the incarnation of the Deity. In 874 Arab rule in Central Asia came to an end. Dur- ing their dominion Merv, like Samarkand and Bokhara, became one of the great schools of science, and the celebrated historian Yakut studied in its libraries. About 1037 the Seljukian Turks crossed the Oxus from the north and vaised Toghrul Beg, grandson of Seljuk, to the throne of Persia, founding the Seljukian dynasty, with its capital at Nishapur. A younger brother of Toghrul, Daoud, took possession of Merv and Herat. Toghrul was succeeded by the renowned Alp Arslan (the great lion), whose sway was so vast that, according to tradition, no fewer than twelve hundred kings, princes, and sons of kings and princes did homage before his throne. Alp Arslan was buried at Merv. It was about this time that Merv reached the zenith of her glory. During the reign of Sultan Sanjar of the same house, towards the middle of the 11th century, Merv was overrun by the Turcomans of Ghiz, and the country was reduccd to a state of miscry and desolation. These Turcomans, the ancestors of the present tribes of Turcomania, were probably introduced into the country by the Seljukian Turks as military colonists. They formed the van of their armies, and rendered efficient service so long as the dynasty lasted, and after- wards took part in the wars of Tamerlane.

In 1221 Merv opened its gates to Toulai, son of Jenghiz, khan of the Mongols, on which occasion the inhabitants, to the nuinber of 700,000, are said to have been butchered. From this time forward Merv, which had been the chief city of Khorasan, and was popularly supposed to contain a million inhabitants, com- menced to Janguish in obscurity. In the carly part of the

14th century Merv was again the seat of a Christian archbishopric of the Eastern Church. On the death of the grandson of Jenghiz Khan

Merv became included in the possessions of Toghluk Timur Khan (Tamerlane), in 1380. In 1505 the decayed city was occupied by the Uzbeks, who five years later were expetled' by Ismail Khan, the founder of the Suffavean dynasty of Persia. Merv thencefor- ward remained in the hands of Persia until 1787, when it was attacked and captured by the emir of Bokhara. Seven years later the Bokharians razed the city to the ground, broke down thie dains, and converted the district into a waste. About 1790 the Sarik Turcomans pitched their tents there. When Sir Alexander Burnes traversed the country in 1832, the Khivans were the rulers of Merv, the nomad population being subject to them. About this time the Tekke Turcomans, then living at Orazkala on the Heri-rud, were forced to migrate northward in consequence of the pressure from behind of the Persians. The Khivans contested the advance of the Tekkes, but ultimately, about the year 1856, the latter be- came the sovereign power in the country, and have ever since resisted all attempts at reconquest.

Authorities.—Besides the standard travels of Wolff, Ferrier, Vambery, Burnes, Abbott, Mouravieff, and others, the following works and papers of more recent date may be consulted with advantage :—Sir H. Rawlinson's England and Russia in the East; O'Donovan's correspondence with the Dazly News, 1880-81; O'Donovan's "Merv," Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc.; Col. Stewart's 'Country of the Tekke Turcomans," Proc. Roy. Geog, Soc., with excellent map; "The New Russo- Persian Frontier, 1881,' Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc.; Girard de Rialle, Mémoire sur VAsie Centrale; Sir H. Rawlinson, ' Road to Merv," Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc.: Col. Baker's Clouds in the East; Captain Napier's " Reports," Jour, Roy. Geog. Soc.; Hutton's Central Asia; Marvin's Merv; Col. Potto's Steppe Campaigns ; Sir Charles MaeGregor's Journey through Khorassan; Boulger's England and Russia in Central Asia; Captain Butler's Communications to the Public Press ; Lessar's " Journeys,' Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc.; O'Donovan's Merv Oasis; Papers on the Turcomans, &¢e., by Col. Petrusevitch, Proc. Imp. Kuss. Geog. Soc,, Caucasus section; Col. Grodekoff's Journey from Tashkend to Persia, 1880;

Captain Kuropatkin’s Turcomania, 1880; Col. Veniukoff’s Progress of Russia in Central Asia, 1877, and other papers by the same author; Col. Kostenko’s “ Turkestan,” Jour, R, U.S. Instn.; Schuyler’s Turkistan ; eo.respondence on Central Asia pre- sented to parliament, &c. (F.C. 1. C.)

MERYON, Cwarums (1821-1868). The name of Méryon is associated with that spirited revival of etching in France which took place in the middle of the 19th century,—say from 1850 to 1865,—but it is rather by the individuality of his own achievements, and the strength of his artistic nature, than by the influence he exercised that Méryon best deserves fame. ‘No doubt his work encouraged others to employ the same medium of expression, and so great was his own perfection of technique that he may well have been made a model; but, after all, the medium he selected, and in which he excelled, was but the accident of his art; he was driven to it in part by stress of circum- stances—by colour blindness ; and, even with colour blind- ness, his extraordinary certainty of hand and his delicate perception of light, aided by his potent imagination, would have made him a great draughtsman not alone upon the copper.

Charles Méryon was born in Paris in 1821. His father was an English physician, his mother a French dancer. It was to his mother’s care that Méryon’s childhood was confided. She was supplied with money, and she gave the boy passionate affection, if not a wise training. But she died when he was still very young, amd Méryon in due time entered the French navy, and in the corvette “Le Rhin” made the voyage round the world. He was already a draughtsman, for on the coast of New Zealand he made pencil drawings which he was able to employ, years after- wards, as studies for etchings of the landscape of those regions. The artistic instinct developed, and, while he was yet a lieutenant, Méryon left the navy. Finding that he was colour-blind, Méryon determined to devote himself to etching. He entered the work-room of one Bléry, from whom he learnt something of technical matters, and to whom he always remained grateful. Méryon was by this time poor. It is said that he might have had assistance from his kindred, but he was too proud to ask it. And thus he was reduced to the need of executing for the sake of daily bread much work that was wholly mechanical and irksome. Resolutely, though unwillingly, he became the hack of his art, doing frequently, from the day when he was first a master of

it to the day when insanity disabled him, many dull commissions which paid ill, but paid better than his original works. Among learner's work, done for his own advantage, are to be counted some studies after the

Dutch etchers such as Zeeman and Adrian van de Velde. Having proved himself a surprising copyist, he proceeded to labour of his own, and began that series of etchings which are the greatest embodiments of his greatest con- ceptions—the geries called " Eaux-fortes sur Paris." These plates, executed from 1850 to 1854, are never to be met with as a set; they were never expressly published as a set. But they none the less constituted in Méryon's mind an harmonious series. For him their likenesses and their contrasts were alike studied ; they had a beginning and an end; and their differences were lost in their unity.

Besides the twenty-two etchings "sur Paris" character- ized below, Méryon did seventy-two etchings of one sort and another,—ninety-four in all being catalogued in Wedmore's Méryon and Méryon's Paris ; but these include the works of his apprenticeship and of his decline, adroit copies in which his best success was in the sinking of his own individuality, and dull and worthless portraits chiefly of forgotten celebrities. Yet among the seventy-two prints outside his professed series there are at least a dozen that will aid his fame. 'Three or four beautiful etchings of Paris do not belong to the series at all. Two or three etchings, again, are devoted to the illustration of Bourges, a city in which the old wooden houses were as attractive to him for their own sakes as were the stone- built monuments of Paris. But generally it was when Paris engaged him that he succeeded the most. Hc would have done more work, however,—though he could hardly have done better work,—if the material difficulties of his life had not pressed upon him and shortened his days. He was a bachelor, unhappy in love, and yet, it is related, almost as constantly occupied with love as with work. The depth of his imagination and the surprising mastery which he achieved almost from the beginning in the technicalitics of his craft were appreciated only by a few artists, critics, and connoisseurs, and he could not sell his etchings, or could sell them only for about 10d. a piece. The fact that his own original work was of incaleulably greater value than his best copies of his most

celebrated forerunners had not yet impressed itself upon anybody. Disappointment told upon him, and, frugal as was his way of life, poverty must have told on him. He became subject to hallucinations. Enemies, he said, waited for him at the corners of the streets ; his few friends robbed him or owed him that which they would never pay. A very few years after the completion of his Paris series, he was lodged in the madhouse of Charenton. Its order and care restored him for a while to health, and he came out and did a little more work, but at bottom he was exhausted. In 1867 he returned to his asylum, and died therein 1868. In the middle years of his life, just before he was placed under con- finement, he was much associated with Bracquemond and with Flameng,—skilled practitioners of etching, while he was himself an undeniable genius,—and the best of the portraits we have of him is that one by Bracquemond under which the sitter wrote that it represented “the sombre Méryon with the grotesque visage.” And it did.

There are twenty-two picces in the Eaux-fortes sur Paris. Some of them are insignificant. That is because ten out of the twenty- two were destined as headpiece, tailpiece, or runniug commeutary on some more important plate. But each has its value, and certain of the smaller pieces throw great light on the aim of tlie entire set. Thus, one little plate—not a picture at all—is devoted to the record of verses made by Méryon, the purposc of which is to lament the life of Paris. The ntisery and poverty of the town Méryon had to illus- trate, as well as its splendour. The art of Méryon is completely misconceived when his etchingsare spoken of as views of Paris, They are often ‘‘ views,” but they are so just so far as is compatible with their being likewise the visions of a poet and the compositions of an

artist. It was an epic of Paris that Méryon determined to inake, coloured strongly by his personal sentiment, and affected here and

there by the occurrences of the moment,—in more than one casc, for instance, he hurried with particular affcction to etch his impression

judged.

of some old-world building which was on the point of destruction. Nearly every etching in the series is an instance of technical skill, but even the technical skill is exercised most happily in those etch- ings which have the advantage of impressive subjects, and which the collector willingly cherishes for their mysterious suggestiveness or for their pure beauty. Of thesc, the Abside de Notre Dame is the general favourite ; it is commonly held to be Méryon's master- piece. Light and shade play wonderfully over the great fabric of the church, seen over the spaces of the river. As a draughtsman of architecture, Méryon was complete ; his sympathy with its various styles was broad, aud his work on its various styles unbiassed and of equal perfection—a point in which it is curious to contrast him with Turner, who, in drawing Gothic, often drew it with want of appreciation. It is cvident that architecture must enter largely into any representation of a city, however much such representation may be a vision, and however little a chronicle. Besides, the archi- tectural portion even of Méryon's labour is but indirectly imagina- tive ; to the imagination he has given freer play in his dealings with the figure, whether the people of the street or of the river or the people who, when he is most frankly or even wildly symbolical, crowd the sky. Generally speaking, his figures are, as regards draughtsmanship, ''landscape-painter's figures." They are drawn more with an eye to grace than to correctness. But they are not '"landscape-painter's figures" at all when what we are concerned with is not the method of their representation but the purpose of their introduction. They are scen then to be in exceptional accord with the sentiment of the scene. Sometimes, as in the case of La Morguc, it is they who tell the story of the picture. Sometimes, as in the case of La Rue des Mauvais Gargons,—with the two passing women bent together in secret converse,—they at least suggest it. And sometimes, as in L'Arche du Pont Notre Dame, it is their expressive gesture and eager action that give vitality and animation to the scene. Dealing perfectly with architecture, and perfectly, as far as concerned his peculiar purpose, with humanity in his art, Méryon was little called upon by the character of his subjects to deal with Nature. He drew trees but badly, never representing foliage happily, either in detail or in mass. But to render the char-

'acteristics of the city, it was necessary that he should know how to

pourtray a certain kind of water—river-water, mostly sluggish—and a certain kind of sky—the grey obscured and lower sky that broods over a world of roof and chimney. This water and this sky Méryon is thoroughly master of ; he notes with observant affection their changes in all lights.

Méryon's excellent draughtmanship, and his keeu appreciation of light, shade, and tone, were, of course, helps to his becoming a great etcher. But a living authority, himself an eminent etcher, and

admiring Méryon thoroughly, has called Méryon by preference a

great original engraver, —so little of Méryon's work accords with Mr Haden's view of etching. Méryon was anything but a brilliant sketcher; and, if an artist's succcss in etching is to be gauged chiefly by the rapidity with which he records an impression, Méryon's suc- cess was not great. There can be no doubt that his work was laborious and deliberate, instead of swift and impulsive, and that of some other virtues of the etcher—‘‘ sclection” and ‘‘abstraction ” as Mr Hamerton has defined them—he shows small trace. But a genius like Méryon is a law unto himself, or rather in his practice of his art he makes the laws by which that art and he are to be He was a great etcher, and by his most claborate labour he seemed somehow to ensure the more completely for his picture that virtue of unity of impression which, it may well be admitted, oftener belongs to rapid than to deliberate work. In Méryon's etchings the hand-work never seems to be in arrear of the thought. As long as the hand-work must continue, the thought and passion are retained. Méryon knows the secrets of his craft as well as did the older masters of it; but he turns them to his own purposes. He is unexcelled in strength and in precision, nor is he often rivalled in delicacy, These qualities, and others more distinctly technical, which it would take too long to insist on here, students find in his etchings. But the incommunicable charm of Meéeryon's prints and their lasting fascination are due to the fact that, behind all technical qualities, and as their very source and spring, there lies the potent imagination of the artist, poetical and vivid, direct- ing him what to see in his subject, and how to see it. (F. WE.)

MESCHERYAKS, or Mzscuers, a people inhabiting eastern Russia. Nestor regarded them as Finns, and even now part of the Mordvinians (of Finnish

origin) call themselves Meschers. Klaproth, on the other hand, supposed they were a mixture of Finns and Turks, and the Hungarian traveller Reguli discovered that the Tartarized Meschers of the Obi closely resembled Hungarians. They formerly occupied the basin of the Oka (where the town Meschersk, now Meschovsk, has maintained their name) and of the Sura, extending north-east to the Volga. After the conquest of the Kazan empire by Russia, part of

e

46

them migrated north-eastwards to the basins of the Kama and Byelaya, and thus the Meschers divided into two branches. The western branch became Russified, so that the Mescheryaks of the governments of Penza, Saratoff, Ryazan, and Vladimir have adopted the customs, language, and religion of the conquering race; but their ethnogra- phical characteristics can be easily distinguished in the Russian population of the governments of Penza and Tamboff. The eastern branch has taken on the customs, language, and religion of Bashkirs, with whom their fusion is still more complete. They can be distinguished from their neighbours only by their more peaceful character. This Bashkir-Mescheryak branch was estimated by Rittich in 1875 to number 138,000. They make 6 per cent. of the population of the government of Upa, and 22 per

cent. in the district of Birsk. The number of the western |

Mescheryaks is unknown, and could hardly be estimated on account of their mixture with Russians. It is only in the governmentof Penza thatthey have maintained their national features ; there they make 3 per cent. of the population. MESCHOVSK, a district town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Kaluga, 45 miles to the south-west of the capital of the province. It is an old town supposed to date from the 13th century, and it is often mentioned in Russian annals under the names of Mezetsk, Mezechevsk, or Meschorsk. About the end of the 14th century it was embraced in Lithuania, and it was ceded to the Moscow “ oreat principality” in 1494, It wasoften pillaged by Tar- tars in the 16th century, and during the great disturbances

of 1610 all its inhabitants were killed by the Zaporoghi | Cossacks, and the fort was taken by Poles, who returned it |

to Russia only after the treaty of Deulin. The country

round Meschovsk is not fertile; but, from its position on |

old established routes to the south, the town has become a centre of considerable trade. takes place on the grounds of the very old Petrovsk monastery, is important to the surrounding districts for the export sale of horses, grain, hemp, hempseed oil, and

coarse linen, and for the import trade in cottons, woollens, |

and earthen and glass wares, the whole turn-over reaching about £100,000. Population, 7400.

MESHED (properly Mesh-hed, z¢., “place of martyr- dom,” ‘‘shrine”), a city of northern Persia, capital of Khoras4n, 472 miles east of Tehran, 201 miles north-west of Herat, 36° 17’ 40” N., 52° 35’ 29” E., lies on a plain watered by the Keshaf-rud, a tributary of the Heri-rud, and is surrounded by mud walls 4 miles in circumference, with a dry ditch 40 feet deep at some points, which could be

flooded from the neighbouring reservoir and watercourses. | Within this enclosure is a strong citadel, with good walls 25 | feet high, residence of the prince governor of Khordsan. |

There are five gates, from one of which, the Bala Khiaban, the Khiaban main street runs right through the city, form-

ing a fine boulevard planted with plane and mulberry trees, | and with a stream of dirty water running down its whole |

length. In the centre is an open parallelogram 160 yards by 75, encircled by double-storied cloisters, and pierced on the long side by a high arched porch leading directly to the great mosque, whose gilded dome rises above the shrine of the famous Im4m Riza.!_ The marble tomb of the saint,

1“Ali Riza (or el-Rida), the eighth imam of the Shi‘a, is the ‘AH ibn Musa from whom the party of Alides had such hopes under the caliphate of Mamim (see MonamMepaNnisM). He died at Tus, 818 a.D., and was buried by Mamun’s orders in the vicinity of that town beside the grave of Harin el-Rashid. To the Alides he was a martyr, being believed to have been poisoned by the caliph. Ibn Batita, who describes both shrines (iii. 77 sq.), tells how the pious visitors to the shrine of ‘Ali ibn Musd used to spurn with their feet the tomb of Rashid. In his time a considerable town had been formed around the shrine under the name of Meshhed el-Rida and ultimately the new town eclipsed the older city of Tus.

Its annual fair, which |

which is the most venerated spot in the whole of Persia, and yearly visited by from 80,000 to 100,000 pilgrims, is surrounded by a silver railing, and approached by a flight of inlaid marble steps. Eastwick, the only European before O’Donovan who penetrated as far as the parallelograni, describes the mosque as large enough to contain three thousand people. It is flanked by two gilded minarets, one of which, 120 feet high, is extremely beautiful, with an exquisitely carved capital, built by Shah Abbds. The fagade is entirely covered with blue and white enamelled tiles. To the mosque are attached as many as two thousand attendants and retainers of all sorts, including no less than five hundred mollahs. Beyond the dome is Gauhar Shah’s handsome mosque, surmounted by an immense blue dome, and also flanked by two minarets. In the main street is a public kitchen supported by the enormous revenues of the shrine, where eight hundred devotees are daily supplied with food gratuitously. The only other notable buildings in the place are some colleges and twenty- two caravanserais, one of which is of great size. Meshed does a considerable local and transit trade to the yearly value of about 600,000 tomans, and its bazaars are always well stocked with silks, velvets, felts, cottons, shawls, carpets, lacquer work, lambskins, hardware, glass, chira, and other goods from South Persia, India, Turkestan, and Russia. The European trade is now entirely controlled by Russia, and European manufactured articles are mostly all from that country. Thechief manufactures are silk, satin, velvet, and checked-cotton

fabrics, carpets, shawls, noted sword blades, shagreen, and turquois jewellery. Within the enclosures are extensive cemeteries far exceeding the local requirements, large numbers of the faithful being brought from all parts of the Shi‘a world to be buried in the vicinity of Rizdé’s shrine under the belief that their eternal salvation is thereby ensured. .

Some 10 miles west of Mcshed is a powder factory, formerly under Colonel Dolmage, where powder of excellent quality is pro- duced. The district, although irtile, does not produce sufficient for the inhabitants, so that much grain has to be imported from Kurdistan and Nishapur. The climate is very severe in winter, with much snow; in summer it is less sultry than might be expected, the temperature ranging from 76° F. to 90° or 92° F., and in excep- tional years 94° to 98° F. The population is variously estimated at from 45,000 (Connolly) and 60,600 (Ferrier) to 80,000 and 100,000 (Kastwick), The settled residents, exclusive of pilgrims and foreign traders, are estimated by O’ Donovan at 50,000.

The main caravan routes from Khiva, Bokhara, Samarkand, and Herat converge at Meshcd, whence lines of traffic radiate to Kichan for the Atrek valley and the Caspian, to Nishapur and Bostam for Tehran, to Tabas for Isfahan, to Khaf for Sistan and Kirman. It thus occupies a position in north-eastern Persia analogous to that of Tabriz in the north-west.

MESHED-ALI, «.e., the shrine of the “martyr” Ali, is ‘a town of Asiatic Turkey, province of Baghdad, 50 miles south of Kerbela, close to the ruins of Kufa, and 2 miles west of the Hindiye branch of the Euphrates, the reputed burial-place of the caliph Ali? It stands on the east scarp of the Syrian desert, and is enclosed by nearly square brick walls flanked by massive round towers dating from the time of the caliphs. Under the gilded dome of the great mosque, which occupies the centre of the town, is the shrine of Ali, which is held by the Shia as at least as holy as the Kaaba itself. Any Moslem buried within sight of the dome being certain of salvation, large numbers of bodies are yearly sent from all parts for interment here. Besides the mosque with its richly decorated facade, the only noteworthy building is a good bazaar supplied from Baghdad and Basra. The town itself, which Lady Anne

2 Whether the place really contains the grave of Ali was long disputed, and the story given in defence of its claims is doubtless apocryphal. The dome was built under the Abbasids, and the resting- place of the caliph unknown ‘or concealed under the Omayyads (Ibn Haukal, p. 163).

Blunt describes as “an ideal Eastern city, standing in an absolute desert, and bare of all surroundings but its tombs,” consists of narrow gloomy streets lined by houses closcly packed together. The locality is properly named Najaf, and gives its name to the neighbouring lake, a large depression filled by an eruption of the river, and ranging from 6 to 20 fect in depth. The accumulated treasures of the shrine were carried off by the Wahhabites when they capturcd this place early in the present century. The population ig estimated at 7000, including several Indian Mohammedans under the protection of the British resident at Baghdad.

The aspect of the shrine in the 14th century is described by Ibn Batita, i 414 sg. A plan of the town and description of its splendour before the Wahhabites pillaged it is given by Niebuhr. See also Ibn Jubair, p. 214; P. Teixeira, Itin., eap. iv. MESHED HOSEIN, properly MesHuEep Hoser. Kereta, vol. xiv. p. 48.

MESMER, MESMERISM. Sce vol. xv. p. 277. MESOPOTAMIA, the “‘ country between the rivers,” is a purely geographical expression, the countries which it com- prehends never having formed a self-contained political unity! It was first introduced by the Greeks at or after the time of Alexander, but probably had its origin in the earlier Aramexan name béth nahrin (the country between the rivers), to which again corresponds the Biblical Aram Vaha- rayim.2 As early as 700 B.c. “the country of two rivers ” is mentioned on the Egyptian monuments under the name Naharina, but no such designation appears in the cunei- form inscriptions (though the territory formed part of the Assyrian as it afterwards did of the Persian empire). The most settled period in the history of Mesopotamia was probably under Persian-Greek rule. Xenophon applies the name Syria to the extremely fertile district which he traversed after having crossed the Euphrates at Thapsacus, The country beyond the Araxes (Chaboras 1) he calls Arabia, —a desert region in which his army had to suffer great hardships until it reached the “gates of Arabia.” Even in later times

Mesopotamia was included under the name Assyria, or was reckoned part of Babylonia.

These statements of Xenophon already indicate a demarcation of the territory afterwards called Mesopotamia, as well as its division into two sections, The fertile portion, inhabited by agricultural Aramzans, stretched. from the Euphrates to the Chaboras; the desert portion, thc home of wandering tribes, extended to the Tigris. It would be rash, however, to conclude from this that Mesopotamia designated the whole territory between the Euphrates and Tigris; indeed it is possible that Aram Naharayim, the Aram of the country of the two rivers, originally meant only the main portion of the fertile country inhabited by Syrians. In this case the two boundary rivers must have been, not the Euphrates and the Tigris, but the Euphrates and the Chaboras. After the final occupation of the country by the Romans (156 a.D.), the political province of Mesopotamia was practically confined to this more limited district. Though in ordinary usage the Euphrates and Tigris are considered as the two rivers which bound Mesopotamia, the one bank of the river cannot be geographically separated from the other, and consequently narrow strips of country on the right bank of the Euphrates and on the left bank of the Tigris must be reckoned to the country “between” the rivers. On the other hand, the country between the sources of the Euphrates and the Tigris has from early times been

ee eee

See

1 Mecowotapia, more exactly 4 méon TOY ToTapGr, scil. xapa or Zupla.

2 In the more recent parts of Genesis Padan Aram takes the place of Aram Naharayim. But this perhaps is the name of a smaller district in the neighbourhood of Harran.

reckoned not to Mesopotamia but to Armenia. In this direction the Masius range forms the proper boundary, and it is only on rare occasions that theoretical geographers extend the name Mesopotamia over the more northern districts, Sophene, &c. Purely theoretical too, and not to be approved, is the extension of the definition so as to include the land of Babylonia (‘Irak ‘Arabi), that is, the country as far south as the confluence of the Euphrates and Tigris, or even as far as their embouchure in the Persian Gulf.

From what has been said it appears that Mesopotamia reaches itsnorthern limitsat the points wherethe EUPHRATES (q.v.) and the Tigris break through the mountain range and enter the lowlands. In the case of the Euphrates this takes place at Sumeisdt (Samosata), in that of the Tigris near Jeziret ibn ‘Omar (Bezabd&) and Mosul (Nineveh). Consequently the irregular northern boundaries are marked by the lowland limits of those spurs of the Taurus mountains known in antiquity as Mons Masius and now as Karaje Dagh and Tur ‘Abdin. Towards the south the ancient boundary was the so-called Median Wall, which, near Pirux Shapur, not much to the south of Hit (the ancient Is), crossed from the Euphrates in the direction of Kadisiya (Opis) to the Tigris. There the two rivers approach each other, to diverge again lowcr down. At the same place begins the network of canals connecting the two rivers which rendered the country of Babylonia one of the richest in the world; there too, in a geological sense, the higher portion of the plain, consisting of strata of gypsum and marl, comes to an end; there at one time ran the line of the sea-coast; and there begin those alluvial formations with which the mighty rivers in the course of long ages have filled up this depressed area. Mesopotamia thus forms a triangle lying in the north-west and south-east direction, with its long sides towards the north and south- west. It extends from 37° 30’ to about 33° N. lat. and from 38° to 46° E. long., and has an area of some 55,200 square miles. The points at which the rivers issue from among the mountains have an absolute altitude of between 1000 and 1150 feet, and the plain sinks rapidly towards the southern extremity of Mesopotamia, where it is not more than about 165 fect above the sea. As a whole tlie entire country consists of a single open stretch, save that in the north there are some branches of the Taurus—the Nimrtd Dagh near Orfd, the long limestone range of ‘Abd-el ‘Aziz, running north-north-west, and farther to the east the Sinjar range, also of limestone,

7 miles broad and 50 miles long, running north-north-east. Between these two ranges—near the isolated basaltic hill of Tell Kékab (Hill of Stars)—runs the defile by which the waters of the Chaboras, swollcn by the Jaghjagha and other affluents from the Masius, find their way into the heart of Mesopotamia. The Khaébur proper, the ancient Chaboras, which rises in the three- hundred copious fountains of Ras-ain (the ancient Rheszena), and ultimately falls into the Euphrates near Karkisiya (Circesium), forms the boundary between the two, or more correctly the three, great divisions of Mesopotamia. These divisions are (1) the northern country to the west of the Khabur, (2) the northern country to the cast, and (3): the steppeland. In the country to the north-west of the Khabur we must probably, as already mentioned, recognize the true ancient Aram Naharayim. Under the dominion of the Seleucids it bore the name of Osrhocne, or better Orrhoene, and was for a time the seat of a special dynasty which at a later date at any rate was Arabian (Abgar). The capital of this kingdom was Orfa (Roha), the Edessa of the Greeks and Romans, the Orrhoi of the Syrians ; it was ata later date a Roman colony, and bore also the name of Justinopolis. This once flourishing city lies on the small river Daisan (the ancient Scirtus). South of Edessa lie

the ruins of HARRAN (see vol. xi. p. 454). In the Mongolian period Harran fell into decay, and at present it is a mere heap of ruins. A third town of this region is Serug (Gen. xi. 20); in the Greek period it was called Batne, but the Syrians retained the name Serug, which is still in use (Sertj). The town lies between Harran and the Euphrates, in a plain to which it gives its name. On the left bank of the Euphrates lay Apamea (the modern Birejik), connected with Zeugma on the other side by a bridge, and farther south, at the mouth of the Bilechas (modern Belik), was the trading town and fortress Nicephorium, founded by command of Alexander, and completed by Seleucus Nicator, in memory of whose victory it was nanied. From the emperor Leo it received the designation Leonto- polis. The spot is now known as Rakka (see below). Farther up the fruitful valley of the Belik lay the town of Ichnze (Chne). Farther south lay Circesium (Chaboras of Ptolemy, Phaleg of Isidor), not to be identified, as is usually assumed, with Carchemish ; from the time of Diocletian it was strongly fortified. The site

is at present occupied by a wretched place of the name Karkisiyé. Carchemish probably lay near the bridge of Membij, the present Kalat el-Nejm.

In ancient times a highly flourishing district must have stretched along the river Chaboras (Khabur) to its principal source at Ras-ain (‘“ Fountain-head,” Syr. Risk aina, the Rheszena of Ptolemy), a town which was for some time called Theodosiopolis, because after 380 a.D. it was extended and embellished by Theodosius. Justinian fortified it. The strip of completely desert country which now stretches along the lower course of the Khabur was called in antiquity Gauzanitis, and corresponds to the Gozan of 2 Kings xviii. 6 (Guzana or Guzanu in the cuneiform inscriptions).

The country to the east of the upper Khabur is in many respects similar to that which has just been described. As the watershed of the Tigris is not far distant, the Masius range sends down into Mesopotamia only insignificant streams, the. most important being the Hermas, the Mygdonius of the Greeks. On its banks was situated Nisibis, the chief city of the district, which commanded the great road at the foot of the mountains leading through the steppe, which here from the scarcity of water comes close up to the edge of the hills. In the old Assyrian empire Nasibina was the seat of one of the four great administrative officials. In the time of the Seleucids the site was occupied by the flourishing Greek colony of Antiochia Mygdonia ; but the new designation, transferred to the river and the vicinity of Nisibis from the Mace- donian district of Mygdonia, afterwards passed out of use. Nisibis was an important trading city, and played a great part in the wars of the Romans against the Persians. Captured by Lucullus, surrendered by Tigranes, recovered by Trajan, again abandoned by Hadrian, once more occu- pied under Lucius Verus, and strongly fortified by Severus, it was at length raised to be the capital of the province, and remained the frontier fortress of the Romans till in the time of Jovian it was ceded to the Persians. After the loss of Nisibis the emperor Anastasius in 507 founded to the north-west the fortress of Dare or Daras (the modern Dara), also called Anastasiopolis, which from the reign of Justinian, who increased its strength, remained for a time the residence of the dua Mesopotamiz, Besides these strongholds, many fortified posts were

established by the Byzantine empire in this district. Antoninopolis must be mentioned as an important town; this was refortified by Constantine under the name of Constantia, and. has left its ruins near Tela between Harran and Nisibis. Mardin too was a fortress of a similar kind, and the town of Singara, at the southern foot of the mountain of the same name, was an advanced post of the Roman power.

VES OP OW Aa A

The south or steppe portion of Mesopotamia was from early times the roaming-ground of Arabic tribes; for Xenophon gives the name of Arabia to the district on the left bank of the Euphrates to the west of the Khabur ; and elsewhere it is frequently stated that the interior at a distance from the rivers was a steppe inhabited by Arabes Scenitz (Tent Arabs). Along the bank of the two great rivers ran a belt of cultivated country, and the rocky islands of the Euphrates were also occupied by a settled population. On the Euphrates, beginning towards the north, we must mention first Zaitah or Zautha, south-east of Circesium; next Corsothe, at the mouth of the Mascash ; then Anatho or Anathan, the modern Ana; and finally Is (Hit). On the Tigris the point of most importance is Carnz (Kawai of the Anabasis), south from the mouth of the Great Zab near the present Kal‘at Sherkat; and not far distant towards the interior was Atrz or Hatrze, also called Hatra, the chief town of the Arab tribe of the Atreni. It was besieged without success by Trajan and Severus ; by the 4th century it was already destroyed; but the interesting ruins, which can scarcely be visited owing to the plundering habits of the Bedouins, still bear the name of El-Hadhr. They le in the heart of the steppe, and were formerly well supplied with water.

All these districts came in 640 a.D., or perhaps a little earlier, into the power of the Arabs, who named them Jezira (island) or Jezfret Akur,! and divided them according to tribes into three portions, the land of Bekr, of Rebi‘a, and of Modhar. The district of Modhar ran along the side of the Euphrates, and its chief towns were Orfa and Rakka; the district of Rebf‘a comprised the plain of Mosul as far as the country on the Khaébur (chief towns Mosul and Nisibis), and the district of Bekr (Diyér Bekr) the more mountainous country to the west of the upper Tigris (chief town Amid or Diarbekr). In general the Arabs consider a part of the mountain territories

which lie between the two rivers to belong to Jezfra, as is best seen from the following notice given by Abulfeda:—

‘*El-Jezira is the land between the Tigris and the Euphrates, yet many places on the other side of the Kuphrates, which properly belong to Syria, are also included, as well as places and even dis- tricts on the east side of the Tigris. The exact boundary line thus runs from Malatia by Sumcisat, Kal‘at er-Rim (Rum-Kala of the maps), and Bire (Birejik) to the point opposite Membij, and then by Balis, Er-Rakka, Karkisiya, Er-Rahaba (on right bank), and Hit to Anbar. Here the Euphrates ceases to form the boundary, which runs across to the Tigris in the direction of Tekrit, and ascends the Tigris as far as Es-Sinu (Senna) to El-Haditha and Mosul, thence to Jeziret ibn ‘Omar, then to Diarbekr, and so back to Malatia.”

From the Arabic geographers and travellers we gain the impression that a great part of Mesopotamia, with the ex- ception of the southern steppe of course, must at that time have been ina very flourishing condition ; the neighbourhood of Nisibis especially is celebrated as a very paradise. In fact it is only since the Turkish conquest of the country under Sultan Selim in 1515 that it has turned into a desert and gradually lost its fertility. As the nomadic Arabs have continually extended their encroachments, agriculture has been forced to withdraw into the mountains; and this is especially true of the western portions of Mesopotamia, the district of Ras-ain, and the plain of Harran and Serdj, where huge mounds give evidence that the whole country was once covered with towns and villages. Under the Turks El-Jezira does not form a political unity, but be- longs to different pashaliks.

From this brief survey it appears that Mesopotamia, like Syria, constitutes an intermediate territory between the great eastern and western monarchies, —Syria inclining

1 Philostratus (c. 200 a.p.) already reports that the Arabs called Mesopotamia vices.

more to the west, and Mesopotamia to the east. virtue of its position it frequently formed both the object and the scene of contest between the

armies of those mighty monarchies, and it is wonderful how a country so often devastated alinost always recovered. The roads, it is true, which traversed the territory were not mere military highways, but the main routes of traffic for Central Asia, Western Asia, and Europe. It is only in modern times, and since these lines of commercial intercourse have ceased to be followed, that the general condition of things has been so entirely altered.

The number of roads which in ancient times traversed —

the country was very considerable ; the Euphrates formed not a barrier but a bond between the nations on either side; at many places there were at least boat-bridges (zeugma) across. One of the most important of the ancient crossing-places must be sought, where in fact it still exists, at Birejik, the ancient Apamea-Zeugma. From this point a great road led across to dessa (Orfa); there it divided into two branches, the northern going by Amid (Diarbekr) and the other by Mardin and Nisibis to Mosul (Nineveh). In quite recent times, in order to avoid the direct route across the desert and through the midst of the Bedouins, the post-road makes a great circuit from Nisibis by Jezfret ibn“Omar to Mosul. A second route crossed the Euphrates somewhat more to the south, and joined the other wa Harran and Rhessena. The principal crossing of the earlier times (Xenophon) was at Thapsacus, almost opposite Rakka; and it will be remembered also how important a part Thapsacus (Tiphsah) plays in the Old Testament. Sometimes a route along the Euphrates to Babylonia was followed, as is still frequently done by caravans at the present day; but even in ancient times this course was attended by more or less difficulty, tlie country being occupied by the chiefs of independent Arab tribes, with whom the travellers had to come to terms.

The ancient condition of things must consequently be considered as essentially analogous to that of the present day ; the central districts away from the rivers were occu- pied at certain seasons, according as they yielded pasture, by nomadic cattle-grazing tribes, the physical character of the country being then and now the same on the whole as that of the Syrian desert, which belongs not to Syria but properly to Arabia. On the banks of the rivers were settled half-nomadic Arab tribes,—tribes, that is, which were more or less on the way to the agricultural stage, or which, having

become altogether agricultural, had never- theless, owing to frequent intercourse with the Bedouins, lost little of their original character, and even maintained their independence. The same movement takes place over and over again: Arab tribes migrating from Arabia, that officina gentium, gradually settle down wherever circun- stances prove favourable, and by this very change in their mode of life make their first step towards civilization. In this way a continual stream of Arabs has flowed into the civilized countries of Mesopotamia. On the Assyrian monuments are figures of Arabs riding on camels ; evidently the Assyrians had carried on war against the Bedouins settled in their territory. At an early period the Tai Arabs were the neighbours of the Arameeans, and consequently all Arabs bear in Syriac the name of Taydyé. The district between Mosul and Nisibis received the name Béth ‘Arbayé from its being occupied by Arabs. These Tai Arabs, whose original home was Central Arabia, are still settled partly near Nisibis and partly east of Mosul; but they have to some extent lost their old noble Bedouin manners. The wandering Arab tribe which at the present time is dominant in Mesopotamia is the Shammar; they have driven back the Aneze, the most powerful tribe of the

Syrian desert. It is only two cr three generations ago that the Shammar came from Nejd ; but they have already broken up into two great parties. The head of the one division is Ferh4u, who has more or less completely sub- mitted to the Turks, and has consequently obtained the title of pasha ; to him adhere the Shammar tribes between Mosul and Baglidad, and those also to the east of the Tigris. The head of the tribes who roam over the greater part of Mesopotamia—pasturing their camels and sheep to the east of tlie Chaboras in the colder season and to the north in the hotter—is the chivalrous Faris. These western tribes are totally independent of the Turkish Government, and have offered determined opposition to the attempts of the authorities at Dér to force them to a settled way of life; they still lay the peasants of Mesopotamia under contribution by exacting Khuwwe, “ brotler-money,” or a portion of grain. The Shammar live in almost perpetual feud with their relations to the east, and especially with the Aneze on the Syrian bank of the Euphrates, the so-called Shamtye. Many other Bedouin tribes might here be mentioned ; but it may be enough to name the Delém

on the Euphrates as an example of a tribe just in process of becoming agricultural. In the northern parts of Mesopo- tamia there are a number of tribes of mingled Kurds and Arabs which have toa greater or less degree abandoned their tents for fixed habitations and the tillage of the ground; such are the Beraziye near Orfa, the Milliye between Orfa and Mardin, and the Kikiye nearer Mardin and also in the neighbourhood of Mosul. It is extremely hard to obtain trustworthy statistical information about the number of the Bedouins; the Shammar may have a total strength of some 3500 tents. In the difficult contests which it has to carry on with those independence-loving tribes, the Turkish Government acts in general on thie principle divide et impera.

The Kurdish element only appears sporadically in the true Mesopotamian plain; but the Yezidis, who form the population of the Sinjar range, may be referred to this stock. He who encounters the uncanny figure of one of these people will hardly be able to restrain a slight shudder, especially if he remembers the graphic descriptions of the Yezidi robbers in Morier's Ayesha. Of the old Aramean peasantry there are no longer any important remains in the plain, the Aramezans having withdrawn farther into the Kurdish highlands, where, in spite of their wild Kurdish neighbours, they are more secure from exactions of every kind. The plain of the northern country of the two rivers was at one time richly cultivated, and owed its prosperity to this industrious people, who formerly played so distin- guished a part as a connecting link between the Persians and the Roman empire and afterwards between the Western and the Arabian world, and whose highest culture was developed in this very region. Quite otherwise is it now. In the plain there are almost no remains of the common Aramean tongue. Apart from the scattered areas in whicli Kurdish prevails, the ordinary language is a vulgar Arabic dialect ; but both Kurdish and Aramean (Syriac) have exercised an influence on the speech of the Arab peasant. Finally it must be mentioned that certain Turcoman hordes roam about the Mesopotamian territory.

In climate and in the character of its soil, as well as in its ethno- graphic history, Mesopotamia holds an intermediate position. In this aspect also we must maintain the division into two quite distinct zoues. The southern half consists mainly of grey, dreary flats covered with selenite ; and gypsum

everywhere makes its appearance a little below the surfacc ; bitumen is not unfrequent, and here and there it rises in petroleum wells. In the solid strata of gypsum and marl the rivers have carved out valleys, from a quarter to half a mile broad and froin 40 to 50 or even 100 feet deep, which with their arable soil contrast with the barren surface of the more elevated desert (chél). Lspecially below Balis there are marl-hills capped with gypsum, and alluvial plains (so-called Adwis) of considerable extent

XVI. — 7

NES OP OFT Dae

; Morocco, make up the list of the indigenous kinds. In the wide belt of swamp which lines the Shatt el-“Arab in the low country of ‘Irak ‘Arabi there are boundless reaches of gigantic sedge inhabited by a rich fauna, especially of birds such as pelicans and flamingoes. From the south, or in other words from the true desert and oasis

oO

have been formed. The banks of the rivers arc there lined with a luxuriant growth of tamarisks. Occasional swamps and small lagoons occur ; and the marl shows a more or less marked efflores- cence of salt. In this part of the country frost is rare even in

winter; in summer the heat is of extraordinary intensity, and dwring the whole season from May to the close of October it is but slightly modified by the night-dews. During the sand storms which frequently blow from the West Arabian desert, the tempera- ture may rise to 50° C. (122° Fahr.), and this same excess of heat will then prevail through seven degrees of latitude in the whole valley of the Euphrates and Tigris from the Persian Gulf to the foot of the mountains. For, considering the strong radiation which takes place over what is now the uniform surface of the Mesopotamian soil with its almost complete absence of evaporation, there is nothing to hinder this warm zone extending in summer to the upper half of the country. In winter, on the other hand, this latter region has quite a different climate. From the mild coasts of the Mediterranean the cold increases from west to east. In the spurs of the Taurus, consequently, the winter cold extends far to the south,

and the influence of the snow-covered ridges spreads far into the Mesopotamian plain. Snow and ice are thus not unfrequent in the higher part of the plain, and the temperature may fall as low as —10° C. (14° Fahr.), especially if the cold north winds are blowing. That inland region too is cut off from the influence of the mild air of the Mediterranean by the coast ranges. For this reason the vegetation is of a less southern character than that of the Mediter- ranean countries in the same latitude. In the spring the green is soon parched out of existence. In this way the northern district of Mesopotainia combines strong contrasts, and is a connecting link between the mountain region of western Asia and the desert of Arabia. On the other hand the country to the south of Mesopotamia, or ‘Irak, has a warm elimate, and towards the Persian Gulf indeed the heat reaches the greatest extremes.

In Upper Mesopotamia, strictly so called, agriculture has suffered an extraordinary decline; in spite of excellent soil, very little of the land is turned to account. In the western district the fertile red- brown humus of the Orfa plain, derived from the lime of Nimrid Dagh, extends to about 12 miles south of Harran, With a greater vainfall, and an artificial distribution of the water such as existed in olden times, agriculture would flourish. If spring rains are only moderately abundant, wheat and barley grow to a great height, and yield from thirty to forty fold. Rice is also grown in the richly watered hill-encircled district of Serj and on the banks of the Khabir. Next, millet and sesamnm are the chief crops,—the latter being grown for the sake of its oil, as the olive docs not sueceed in this region. The abundance of wheat may be estimated from the fact that during Layard’s residence in Mosul a eamel-load of 480 tb was worth four shillings. Durra (Holcus Sorghum and H. bicolor), lentils, pease, beans, and vetches are also grown, as well as cotton, safflower, hemp, and tobacco. Afcdicago sativa furnishes fodder for horses. Among the fruits the most noteworthy arc the cucumbers, melons, and water-melons planted in great abundance on the hanks of the smaller streams. The figs of the Sinjar mountains are celebrated for their exceptional sweetness. Timber trees are few; plane trees and white poplars are planted along the streams, and a kind of willow and a sumach flourish on the banks of the Euphrates. The palm-trees which appear on’ the banks of both the rivers farther south do not come so far north. On account of the hot dry summer the orange does not succeed. Of the great forest which

existed (?) near Nisibis in the time of Trajan no trace remains; but the slopes both of the Masius mountains and of the Jebel ‘Abd-el ‘Aziz, as well as, more especi- ally, those of the Sinjar range, are still covered with wood.

The wide treeless tracts of the low country of Mesopotamia are covered with the same steppe vegetation which prevails from Central Asia to Algeria, but there is an absence of a great many of the arborescent plants that grow in the rockier and_more Uregular plateaus of western Asia and especially of Persia. This comparative poverty and monotony of the flora is partly due to the surface being mainly composed of detritus, and partly to the eultivation of the country in remote antiquity having ousted the original vegetation and left behind it what is really only fallow ground untouched for thousands of years. Endless masses of tall weeds, belonging to a few species, cover the face of the country,—large Crucifere, Cynarex, and Umbellifere disputing the possession of the soil in company with extraordinary quantities of liquorice (Glycyrrhiza glabra and echinata) as well as Lagonychium and the white cars of the Jmperata. In autumn the withered wecds are torn up by the wind and driven immense distanees. Among the aromatic plants, which even Xenophon mentions in Mesopotamia, the first place belongs to the species of wormwood (Artemisia), which cover wide areas, and the second to Labiatx, such as species of thyme and Salvia, which, how- ever, become rarer in the low country. With few exceptions there are none but cultivated trees, and these are confined to the irrigated districts on the Enphrates and the Shatt ; a few willows, a Pyrus, tamarisks, a Rhus, a Rubus, on the banks of the rivers, and the willow-like Populus euphratica, which grows from Dzungaria to

country of Arabia, the date-palm spreads up the valley to some little distance above Baghdad ; and especially along the Shatt it yields rich crops of fruit, which are exported to India. With the

exception of a few truffles, capers, liquorice, and such like, there are

few wild food-plants. ‘The cycle of vegetation begins in November.

The first winter rains clothe the plain with verdnre, and by the beginning of the year a number of bulbons plants are in bloom— Amaryllide, Liliacee,

and Colchicum. The full summer develop- ment is reached in June; and by the end of August cverything is burnt up.

The lion is said to roam as far as the Khabur; but in any case it is at least much less frequent than in the time of the Assyrians, when the lion-hunt was a recognized form of sport. The wild ass too is very rare ; but on the other hand wild swine, hyenas, jackals, eheetahs, and foxes are extremely abundant. Wolves are said to exist in the plain, and among others a variety of black wolf (Canis lycaon). Particularly numerous in the steppe are the antelope species ; and herds of gazelles are frequently met with. Beavers are said to have been observed on the Euphrates. Jerboas, moles, por- eupines, and especially the common European rat, abound in the desert ; bats are numerous ; and the long-haired desert hare is also found. Among the domestic animals in this steppe country the camel holds the first place; and next come goats and sheep; but the Bedouin sheep is not the ordinary fat-tailed variety. The common buffalo is often kept by the Arabs and Turcomans on the Euphrates and the Tigris; and on the Euphrates we also find the Indian zebu, which is still more frequent in the districts farther to the sonth. Bird-life is very rare in the sonthern parts of the plain; though on the Euphrates there are vultures, owls, ravens, &c., as well as falcons (? Tinnunculus alaudarius) which are trained to hunt. Among game-birds are some kinds of doves, francolins, part- ridges, wild ducks and geese, and in the steppe bustards. The ostrich seems almost to have disappeared. Large tortoises are numerous.

In conclusion it is necessary in supplement to the article Irak to say something of the district of Babylonia, often (thongh wrongly) included under the naine Mesopotamia. Here we have to do with a fundamentally different region, for it consists in the main of alluvial formations, a few scattered reaches of sand only now and then appearing in the level depression not filled up by the alluvium. The mass of solid matter which the rivers bring down and deposit is very considerable ; it has been ascertained that the maximum proportion for the Euphrates in the month of January is 5, and at other times zig; for the Tigris the maximum is yoy. As regards the physical character of the alluvia, in the most northerly portion the soil is pebbly, the pebbles consisting almost solely of variously coloured flints and occasional small fragments of gypsum. This is succeeded by a continnous

formation of clayey soil, in part argillaceous and argillo-calcareous, but eovered with mould and sand, or the more tenacious clay of frequent inundations.

In general, the northern plains of the interior have a slight but well-defined southerly inclination with local depressions. The territory undulates in the central districts, and then sinks away into mere marshes and lakes. The clay, of a deep blue colour, abounds with marine shells, and shows a strong efflorescence of natron and sca-salt, the latter derived from the decomposition of vegetable matter. When the soil is parched up the appearance of the mirage (serdb) is very common. As extensive inundations in spring are caused by both the rivers, especially the Tigris, great alterations mnst have taken place in this part of the country in the course of thousands of years. It has been asserted that in former times the alluvial area at the mouth of the river increased one mile in the space of thirty years; and from this it has been assumed that about the 6th century B.c. the Persian Gulf imust have stretched from 45 to 55 miles farther inland than at present. The actual rate of increase at the present time is about 72 feet per annum. For this reason we cannot decide much in regard to the former physical configuration of southern Babylonia, but it is at least certain that the Euphrates and the Tigris reached the sea as inde- pendent rivers. Ritter estimates that in the time of Alexander the Great the embouchnres were still separated by a good day’s journey ; and, though they cannot now be traced, great alterations have probably taken place in the upper portions of the rivers as well as in the country near the mouths. Assyriologists tell us that more than thirty-five canals are known by name from the Babylonian period ; but it is extremely difficult, or rather it has proved hitherto impossible, to identify them either with those actually existing or with those mentioned in classical authors, in the Babylonian Talmud, or in Arabian writers. ‘To the west of the Euphrates was to be found the Pallacopas channel, and we still have the Hindiye channel in the same quarter. The country between the rivers more

particularly was traversed by such secondary branches. Beginning

Mere Poros MI A

from the Euphrates we must mention the Saklawiye channel (Nahr ‘Isd), the Nahr Melik, the Nahr Zembcraniye, and especially the Nahr-en-Nil, constructed by the famous Omayyad governor Hajjaj. Eastwards from the Tigris strikes the great Nahrawan channel; and right through the country of the two rivers runs the Shatt-el Hai from Kut-el—Amara, almost due south to the Euphrates, parallel with the Shatt-el-Kehr. Many of these have been silted up; from those, however, which are still maintained there is derived a considerable revenue, and by the restoration of many of the old channels, traces of which are met with at every step, the country might be again raised to that condition of high civilization which it enjoyed not only in antiquity but partly even in the time of the latcr caliphs. The classical writers are unanimous in their admiration of this country; and it is at least certain that nowhere else in the whole world was the principle of the application of canals to the exigencies of agriculture worked out so successfully. The most luxuriant vegetation was diffused over the whole eountry ; and three crops were obtainable in the year, It is this alone which makes it intelligible how this region in the most remote antiquity attained a high civilization, and for centuries played, it may be said, one of the principal parts in the history of the world. In the matter of civilization, indeed, no country of the ancient world was its equal; a multitude of great cities once flourished within its borders. Even the Arabic writers are unanimous in regard to the extremely favonrable influence which the charactcr of the country exercised on the intellectual activity, spirit, and capacity of its inhabitants. We need not here discuss the question recently started as to whetlier the Biblical garden of Eden is to be sought in this locality, two eanals of the Euphrates and Tigris being identificd with the Gihon and Pison of Gen. ii.; but it is certain at least that this lower country of the two rivers might well pass in antiquity for the xe plus ultra of civilization, and exercised the most powerful political and intel- lectual influence on the surrounding regions. The question often raised as to whether the Semites were derived from this district may also be left untouched. From the Bible we know that an ancient name of the district was Shinar, though this has not hitherto been discovered in the cuneiform inscriptions, The name Kush is applied in the Bible to its oldest non-Semitic inhabitants. The northern half of the country was called Akkad, the southern Sumer, But it must not be forgotten that the rivers never formed ethnographie and political boundaries ; and thus Sumer extended to the coast of the Persian Gulf and Akkad as far as the Lower

Zab, the eastern affluent of the Tigris. As a less ancient designation of the whole country may be reckoned mat Kalda, the country of the Chaldeans (Hebr., erets Kasdim) ; originally Kalda is said to have designated central Babylonia. Of still later date is the naine derived froin the capital, the eountry of Babel (erets Babel), as an equivalent of which md Babila appears in the cuneiform inscriptions (in the Darius lists Babirw). From this was developed the Greek designation Babylonia, BaBvAwvia (as early as Xenophon). That the country was densely peopled may be gathered from the fact that about 704 B.C. eighty-nine fortified towns and eight hundred and twenty smaller places in the Chaldean country were captured during one military expedition. Of separate districts of the country we may mention Karduniash, the district in the vicinity and especially to the north of Babylon ; and southward by the sea-coast the important country of Bit Yakin, governed by kings of itsown. Ata later date we find on the coast and at the mouth of the Pallacopas canal the maritime town of Teredon, which is also mentioned by the classical writers. Besides Babylon and Borsippa, the larger cities were the double city of Sippar (Sefarvayim, 2 Kings xvii. 24, 31) and Akkad on the left bank of the Euphrates on the present Nahr ‘Isa ; Erech, i.¢., Warka, on the left bank of the Euphrates; Ur on the Palla- eopas, not far from the place where the Shatt-el-Hai falls into the Tigris ; Nippur, 7.e., Tell Niffer; Kutha (2 Kings xvii. 24), Kalne (Gen. x. 10), in the north, Opis at the junction of the Adhem (Physcus) with the Tigris. Huge mounds give evidence of the extent of these cities. A number of the canals were navigable, and at the same time, when the bridges were destroyed, they formed defensive moats against the incursion of enemies from the north. And the same purpose was served by the great wall (after- wards the Median Wall of the Greeks) which ran across the country from river to river between the points of their nearest approach. During the period of Greek domination a Greek city, Selcucia, which afterwards attained great prosperity, was founded by Scleucus I. in an extremely favourable situation on the right bank of the Tigris. In the south of the country, too, there was a Greck seaport town first called Alexandria on the Tigris and afterwards Antiochia. After the conquest of Babylonia by the Parthians (130 B.c.) a small Arabian kingdom grew up in those parts called Characene or Mesene, after the town of Chare or Maisan. It was under Parthian and for a time under Roman supremacy. The city of Vologesia, founded by Vologeses to the south-west of Babylon, near Ullais, in the ncighbourhood of the later

Kifa, was one of the capitals of the Parthian power. In the time of the Sasanids, too, as well as in that of the Parthians, the country of the lower

ol

Euphrates and Tigris played a leading part ; it formed in fact the main centre of the Persian kingdom. The city of Ctesiphon founded by the Greeks on the east side of the Tigris opposite Seleucia, was the winter residence of the Parthian kings, and the imperial capital of the Sasanids. Under the naine of Madain (The Cities) it continued to flourish till the rise of Baghdad in the 9th century. The neighbourhood of Ctesiphon was called in the time of the Sasanids Suristan, a translation of the Aramean desig- nation Béth-Aramayé, ‘country of the Syrians,” for the land was inainly occupicd by Arameeans. By a notable substitution the Avabs afterwards gave the name Nabat, z.c., Nabateans, to these Aramean peasantry, who, it nay be added, were already found in these parts at the time of the Babylonian empire.

On the west side of the Tigris the Arab kingdom of Titra formed the bulwark of the Sasanid power. As the result mainly of the battle of Kadisiya (east of Hira) in 635 a.p., the whole of this wealthy country fell into the hands of the Moslems, and it soon con- stituted the eentre of their power, especially when the Abbasids, with true political insight, transferred thither the capital of the empire and founded Baghdad. The chief cities of the older Arabic period were Kufa (in the neighbourhood of the earlier Hira to the south of ancient Babylon) and Basra (or Bussoray, g.v.) in the neighbourhood of the earlier Maisan. After these two cities the country was divided into the Sawad, ‘‘rich arable district,” of Basra and that of Kifa. Sawad was also employed as a name for the whole country ; and more or less identical with this designa- tion is the name ‘Irak still in use. Sometimes also the term Sawad- el-‘Irak is employed ; but at a later date the country is distinguished as ‘Trak “Arabi (Arabian ‘Trak) from the Persian ‘Irak ‘Ajemi to the east, the ancient Media. The Arabian geographer Yakut makes the distinction that the country called Sawad reaches farther to the north (viz., to the district of the Upper Zab).

Abulfeda gives the boundaries of ‘Irak as follows:—‘‘In the west of the country lie El-Jezira and the desert, in the south the desert, the Persian Gulf, and Khuzistan, in the east the inountain country as far as Holwan (near the

principal pass through the Zagrus range). Thence the boundary runs again towards Mesopotainia. Thus the greatest breadth of ‘Irak is in the north, and its narrow extremity is formed by the island ‘Abbddan in the Shatt-el-‘Arab (the united Euphrates and Tigris) to the south of Basra.” From what has been said it appears that ‘Irak extended far beyond the country between Euphrates and Tigris. Abulfeda says clearly that ‘Irak lies on the Tigris as Egypt on the Nile ; for according to this view the Tigris flows through the middle of the country. ‘Irak consequeiutly lies between 30° and 34° 30’ N, lat. and between 44° and 48° 30’ EK. long.; of its area it isimpossible to form an estimate under such varying conditions. For some details see BAGHDAD.

From the union of the rivers upwards, in the case of the Euphrates as far as 26° N. lat. (above Rakka), in that of the Tigris to 35° N. lat., the valleys are known as ez-26r, the depression, in opposition to the more elevated desert-plateau. It has been surmised that in this name is to be recognized the Dura of the Old Testament (Daniel iit. 1).

Very little of the ancient condition of the eountry has been pre- served ; and there are now but few remains of ancient buildings, scarcity of stone having all along led to the use of bricks. ‘Irak has played its part. It is only by the expenditure of immense sums, far beyond the financial capacity of the Turkish Govern- ment, that the ancient canals could be restored and the swamps formed by them drained. The whole land falls into two unequal portions,—an extensive dry steppe with at any rate a healthy desert climate, and an unhealthy region of swamps. There is a good deal more agriculture along the Euphrates than along the Tigris ; but swamps, with almost impenetrable reed thickets, com- posed of a kind of Agrostis, are at the same time much more exten- sive. The slightly more elevated districts are the special habitat of the date palm, which by itself forms dense groves bordering the banks particularly on the lower Euphrates, for a distance of several days’ journey. This part of the country consequently has a some-what monotonous but in its own way imposing aspect.

ministrative and diplomatic skill of the Turkish officials to the test. The Turkish influence has here made at one time great advance and at another

lost all the ground it had gained,—the rich and powerful sheikhs of the Muntefitch sometimes becoming for a season rulers over the whole of Southern ‘Irak and even over the town of Basra. The present writer once visited the great sheikh Nasir in his camp near Stk-esh-Shiyukh ; and he received the impression of having to do with a very remarkable and astute personage.

The old Syrian population of ‘Irak has almost entirely dis- appeared; the few remnants left are distingnished by a special religion, in regard to which see the article MaNpmans. Ethno- graphically the country is subject to a double influence. On the one hand the connexion with Nejd, the central plateau of Arabia, continues uninterrupted; the emigration from that region being mainly directed towards ‘Irak and Jezira. In Baghdad even, the ‘Aoél-Bedouins from Central Arabia have a quarter of their own. With the earnings obtained in these rich districts the emigrants return to their homes. But quite as strong at least is the infln- ence of Persia. Persian customs are in fashion; in Baghdad there is an important Persian quarter ; and Kerbela and Meshed ‘Ali to the west of the Euphrates may be considered regular Persian ‘‘enclaves.” In these places are buried the son-in-law of Mohammed, the caliph Ali, and his son Hosein (in Kerbela), the chief saints of the Shiite sect ; and their tombs are not only shrines of pilgrimage to the living, but the dead are brought by countless caravans from Persia to be buried in ground which they have made holy. The neighbourhood of Kerbela reeks with the odour of corpses; and from the midst of them pestilence has often begun its march. Throughout the whole of ‘Irak the Shiites have many ad- hereuts,—for example, the Khazael already mentioned. Persian influence prevails on the Arab population of ‘Irak, and the inter- mingling of the races can still be very clearly traced ; in this dis-tant corner of the Turkish empire a more international tone prevails than in any other district. And, however small when compared with former times the commercial and intellectual intercourse of various nations in these regions may be at the present day, the atteutive observer must notice that such intercourse does still exist, though within restricted limits. No trace, indeed, is to be found of that rich intellectual development which was produced in the time of the caliphs through the reciprocal action of Persian and Arabic elements. Still the quickwittedness of the inhabitants of ‘Irak makes a decided impression on the traveller passing through Asiatic Turkey

; and one might venture to prophesy that the country might to some extent recover its former position in the world, especially if English influence from India were more widely extended, and should lead to the construction of a railway. The trade which passes through ‘Irak is even now not unimportant ; horses, for example, are exported in considerable numbers from southern ‘Irak to India. But it might be very much improved, as the country, it is said, could support five hundred times as many inhabitants as it actually contains. There is also a considerable export of dates, a fruit which forms the chief sustenance of a great number of the inhabitants; and the breeding of cattle (especially buffaloes) is extensively carried on. Only a few steamboats as yet navigate the majestic rivers. Communication by water is carried on by means of the most primitive craft. Goods ave transported in the so-called ‘“ terrades,” moderately big high-built vessels, which also venture out into the Persian Gulf as far as Kuweét. Passengers are conveyed, especially on the Euphrates, in the meshhtf, a very long and narrow boat, mostly pushed along the river bank with poles. The Mesopotainian ‘‘ kelleks ’—rafts laid on goatskin bladders—come down as far as Baghdad, where round boats made of plaited reeds pitched with asphalt are in use. At Basra, on the other hand, we see the ‘‘belem,” boats of a large size, having the appearance of being hollowed out of tree trunks, and partly in fact so constructed. Throughout ‘Irak in general Indian influence is partially at work ; in the hot summer months, for instance, when the natives live in underground apartments (serdab), the Indian punkah is used in the houses of the rich. As regards language, the local Arabic dialect has evidently been affected on the one hand by Persian, on the other by the Bedouin forms of specch.

See Ritter, Die Erdkunde von Asien, 2d ed. vol. vii., 10th and 11th parts, Berlin, 1843, 1844; Chesney, Expedition for the Survey of the Rivers Euphrates and Tigris, 2 vols., London, 1850; W. Ainsworth, Researches tn Assyria, Gabylonia, and

Chaldwa, London, 1838; Fr. Delitzsch. Wo lag das Paradies? Leipsic, 1881. Map: Kiepert, Die Euphrat- und Tigrislander, Berlin, 1854. (A. SO.)

MESSENE, the chief city of Messenia, founded, under the auspices of Epaminondas, as a bulwark against the Spartans. After the battle of Leuctra

that general sent to all the exiled Messenians,—in Africa, Sicily, or Italy,—and invited them to return to the land of their fathers. Many came with eagerness, and in 369 B.c. the city was built by the combined army of Thebans under Epaminondas and Argives under Epiteles, assisted by the Messenians

themselves. The site was chosen in conformity with a vision which appeared to Epaminondas, and the walls were raised to the sound of flutes playing the airs of Sacadas and Pronomus. The citadel was erected on the summit of Mount Ithome, and the city on its southern slope and in the adjoining valley. City and citadel were enclosed by a wall 47 stadia in length. Near the centre of the city was the agora, with a famous spring called Arsinoe, and various temples and statues, among the latter an iron statue of Epaminondas. The Hierothysion con-

‘tained many statues of gods and heroes, among them a

bronze statue of Epaminondas. In the gymnasium were statues of Hermes, Hercules, and Theseus by Egyptian artists. In the stadium was a bronze statue of the great hero Aristomenes, who had a sepulchral monument elsewhere in the city. On the summit of the citadel was a famous spring called Clepsydra, and near it a temple of Zeus Ithomatas, with a statue by the famous Argive artist Ageladas, executed originally for the Messenian Helots who settled in Naupactus (see Mxssenia). It was in honour of this statue that the festival of the Ithomea was performed.

The situation of Messene is one of the finest and most romantic in the world. The view of Mount Ithome, with its level summit and its ancient and medizval ruins, as one issues from the Langadha Pass in the Taygetus mountains, is beautiful beyond description. And the view from the summit of the mountain itself, which rises, steep and rugged, to the height of 2631 feet, and is crowned by the ruins of fortifications of Cyclopean workmanship, is enchanting, hardly equalled by any other in Greece. Near the middle of the ruins of the lower city stands a wretched village named Mavrommati (Black Eye), so called from the Turkish name of the spring Arsinoe, which still flows as plentifully as in the old days. These ruins are

the most imposing in Greece, and furnish the finest existing specimen of Hellenic military architecture. Almost the entire circuit of the ancient walls can be traced, and in some places they are standing to their full height. They are built of large hewn stones laid in beautifully regular layers without mortar, and are surmounted by towers, of which there seem to have been originally over thirty. Seven of these are still in a good state of preser- vation, and bear testimony to the thoroughness of the great, enterprise undertaken by Epaminondas. Two gates can still be distinguished, one on the slope of Mount Ithome, the other (the northern or Megalopolis gate) on the north side. The latter is a dipylon or double gate, opening into a circular enclosure 62 feet in diameter. The walls of this enclosure are built with extreme care, and the soffit stone of the inner portal, which has been partly moved from its place, reminds one of the lintel of the so-called treasury of Atreus at Mycene. Itis 18 ft. 8 in. x 4 ft. 2 in. x2 ft. 10 in. Within the town several ancient sites can still be distinguished—the stadium, the theatre, and several temples.

MESSENTIA (in Homer Messene), a state of Greece, and the most westerly of the three peninsulas of the Pelopon- nesus. Its area is a little over 1160 square miles. It is separated from Elis and Arcadia on the north by the river Neda and the Nomian mountains, and from Laconia on the east by the lofty range of Taygetus. The other sides are washed by the sea, which indents its shores with four gulfs or bays,—Messenia, Phcenicus, Pylus, and Cyparissus. On its south-west corner are the Cinussz Islands, and oppo- site the bay of Pylus (Navarino) the famous Sphacteria. The interior is divided by mountain chains into fertile plains, watered by rivers, the chief of which is the Pamisus (with its tributaries Leucasia, Charadrus, Amphitus, and Aris), falling into the Messenian Gulf. The great valley

of this river is divided, near Mount Ithome, into two distinct parts, the plain or basin of Stenyclarus on the north, and the plain of Macaria, so called from its extreme fertility, on the south. The climate is delightful.

The earliest inhabitants of Messenia were Leleges, whose capital was at Andania. After these came AXtolians, whose chief centre was at Pylus. After the Dorian conquest the country was divided by Cresphontes into five

parts, whose chief cities were respectively Stenyclarus, Pylus, Rhion, Hyamia, and Mesola. The towns of Messenia were not numerous. Homer mentions Pylus (the seat of the Thessalian Neleids), Amphigeneia (possibly the same as Ampheia), Dorion, AZpeia (possibly Methone), Cichalia, Phare, Antheia (probably the later Thuria), Pedasus, and Tra (the later Abia). Other important towns were Asine, Corone, Limnez, Carnasium, Cyparissia, and, finally, Messene.

Of the history of. Messenia before the Dorian invasion little is known except a few fables related by Pausanias. ‘Two generations after the Trojan war, the country was invaded by the Dorians, who expelled the Neleids and conferred the sovereignty upon Cresphontes, who seems to have been a popular king. Perhaps for this reason he was put to death by the chiefs along with all his sons exeept Apytus. Apytus was restored to the throne by the Arcadians, took vengeance for his father’s death, and beeame very popular. His linc lasted through several generations. We know little of the subsequent history of Messenia until the date of the Messenian wars, waged against Sparta. The ostensible and immediate causes of these wars are variously assigned ; but the true cause was the cupidity of Sparta. Our chief trustworthy authority for the history of them is the old elegiac poet Tyrtzus ; but so little is known about them that it is a matter of doubt in which of them the great hero Aristomenes won his fame. The date of the first was from 743 to 724, of the second from 685 to 668 or, aecording to others, from 648 to 631 B.c. Ithome was the eentre of action in the first, Hira in the seeond. The result of these wars was the complete subjuga- tion of Messenia to Sparta. Its territory was parcelled out among Spartans, and its towns handed over to Periceci and Helots. Many of the inhabitants took refuge in Areadia, but still more in Italy and Sieily. A very large number settled in Rhegium, whose chiefs for many generations were of Messenian stoek. About 200,000 remained behind in bondage. After the second war a large number of Messenians settled on the Sicilian coast at Zanele, to which they subsequently gave the name Messana (see Messina). In 464 B.c. the Messenian Helots, taking advantage of an earthquake at Sparta, revolted, and, though they were finally eompelled to surrender in 455, they did so only on condition of being allowed to retire to Naupactus on the Corinthian Gulf. Thiscity had bcen offered them as a residence by the Athenians, ever glad to favour the foes of Sparta. Here the Messenians remained for sixty

years, until the loss of the battle of Agospotami deprived them of the protection of the Athenians. They were then driven out, and had to find homes in Cephallenia and Zaeynthus, or among their kinsmen in Rhegiuin and Messana. Some even went to Africa, and took up their abode at Euesperide or Hesperide, afterwards called Berenice. Things remained in this condition until 369 B.c., when Epaininondas, having broken the power of Sparta, rent from her Messenia, and, colleeting from all quarters the deseendants of the exiled inhabit- ants, helped them to found the city of Messrnr (q.v.). Sparta never gave up her claim to Messenia, and made many attempts to reconquer it, but without success. The Messenians maintained their independence until 146 B.c., when, with the Acheans, they were redueed under the power of Rome. From that time they fall into the baekground of history. In the Middle Ages the country, like the rest of the Peloponnesus, was largely overrun by Slavic tribes, as is shown by the numerous Slavic local names occurring in it. At the establishment of Greece as a kingdom, Messenia was constituted into a provinee, with a governor or nomarch residing at Kalamata (officially Kalamai), the ancient Phare. The country, though beautiful and fertile, is still in a deplorably baekward con- dition, and the population is sparsc and semi-barbarous. Agricul- ture languishes, and the roads and bridges are few and bad. More deeds of violence occur in Messenia than in any other part of Greece. With the exeeption of Kalamata, it contains no town of importance. Navarino, on the Gulf of Pylus, was the scene of the destruction of the Turkish ficet in 1827.

MESSIAH (Dan. x. 25, 26), Messtas (John i. 41; iv. 25), are transcriptions (the first form modified by reference to the etymology) of the Greek Meooias (Meotas, Meceéas), which in turn represents the Aramaic XID (méshthd), answering to the Hebrew myn, “the

anointed.”! The Hebrew word with the article prefixed occurs in the Old Testament only in the phrase “the anointed priest” (Lev. iv. 3, 5, 16; vi. 22 [15]), but “‘ Jehovah’s anointed” is a common title of the king of Israel, applied in the historical books to Saul and David, in Lam. iv. 20 to Zedekiah, and in Isa. xlv. 1 extended to Cyrus. In the Psalms corresponding plirases (My, Thy, His anointed)? occur nine times, to which may be added

the lyrical passages 1 Sam. ii. 10, Hab. iii, 13. In the intention of the writers of these hymns there can generally be no doubt that it refers to the king then on the throne, or, in hymns of more general and timeless character, to the Davidic king as such (without personal reference to one king);° but in the Psalms the ideal aspect of the kingship, its religious importance as the expression and organ of Jchovah's sovereignty, is prominent. When the Psalter became a liturgical book the historical kingship had gone by, and the idea alone remained, no longer as the interpretation of a present political fact, but as part of Tsrael's religious inheritance. It was impossible, however, to think that a true idea had become obsolete merely because it found no expression on earth for the time being ; Israel looked again for an anointed king to whom the words of the sacred hymns should apply with a force never realized in the imperfect kingship of the past. Thus the psalms, especially such psalms as the second, were neces- sarily viewed as prophetic; and mcantime, in accordance with the common Hebrew representation of ideal things as existing in heaven, the true king remains hidden with God. The steps by which this result was reached must, however, be considered in detail.

The hope of the advent of an ideal king was only one feature of that larger hope of the salvation of Israel from all evils, the realization of perfect reconciliation with Jehovah, and the felicity of the righteous in Him, in a new order of things free from the assaults' of hostile nations and the troubling of the wicked within the Hebrew community, which was constantly held forth by all the prophets, from the time when the great seers of the 8th century B.c. first proclaimed that the true conception of Jehoval's relation to His people was altogether different from what was realized, or even aimcd at, by the recognized civil and religious leaders of the two Hebrew kingdoms, and that it could become a practical reality only through a great deliverance following a sifting judgment of the most terrible kind. The idea of a judgment so severe as to render possible an entire breach with the guilty past, and of a subsequent complete realization of Jchovah's kingship in a regenerate nation, is common to all the prophets, but is expressed in a great variety of forms and images, con- ditioned by the present situation and needs of Israel at the time when each prophet spoke. As a rule the prophets | directly connect the final restoration with the removal of the sins of their own age, and with the accomplishment of such a

work of judgment as lies within their own horizon; to Isaiah the last troubles are those of Assyrian invasion, to Jeremiah the restoration follows on the exile to Babylon; Daniel connects the future glory with the overthrow of the Greek monarchy. The details of the prophetic pictures show a corresponding variation; but all agree in giving the central place to the realization of a real effective kingship of Jehovah ; in fact the conception of the religious subject

1 The transcription is as in Terootp, Peootp for WW}, Onomastica, ed. Lag., pp. 247. 281, Bac. B ii. 8. For the termination as for Nm, see Lagarde, Psali. Memph., p. vn. .

2 The plural is found in Psalm cv. 15, of the patriarehs as conse- erated persons. :

3 In Ps. Ixxxiv. 9 [10] it is disputed whether the anointed one 1s the king, the priest, or the nation as a whole, The second view 1S perhaps the best.

as the nation of Israel, with a national organization under Jehovah as king, is common to the whole Old Testament, and forms the bond that connects prophecy proper with the so-called Messianic psalms and similar passages which theologians call typical, ¢.¢., with such passages as speak of the religious relations of the Hebrew commonwealth, the religious meaning of national institutions, and so necessarily contain ideal elements reaching beyond the empirical present. All such passages are frequently called Messianic; but the term is more properly reserved as the specific designation of one particular branch of the Hebrew hope of salvation, which, becoming prominent in post-canonical Judaism, used the name of the Messiah as a technical term (which it never is in the Old Testament), and exercised a great influence on New Testament thought, —the term “the Christ” (6 xpirrds) being itself nothing more than the translation of “the Messiah.”

In the period of the Hebrew monarchy the thought that Jehovah is the divine king of Israel was associated with the conception that the human king reigns by right only if he reigns by commission or “unction” from Him.

Such was the theory of the kingship in Ephraim as well as in Judah (Deut. xxxiii.; 2 Kings ix. 6), till in the decadence of the northern state Amos (ix. 11) foretold the redintegration of the Davidic kingdom, and Hosea (iii. 5; viii. 4) expressly associated a similar prediction with the condemnation of the kingship of Ephraim as illegitimate. So the great Judean prophets of the 8th century connect the salvation of Israel with the rise of a Davidic king, full of Jehovah's Spirit, in whom all the energies of Jehovah's transcendental kingship are as it were incarnate (Isa. ix. 6 sq.; xi. 1 sg.; Micah v.). This conception, however, is not one of the constant elements of prophecy ; indeed the later prophecies of Isaiah take a different shape, looking for the decisive interposition of Jehovah in the crisis of history without the instru- mentality of a kingly deliverer. Jeremiah again speaks of the future David or righteous sprout of David's stem (xxili. 5 sg. ; xxx. 9); and Ezekiel uses similar language (xxxiv., xxxvil.); but that such passages do not necessarily mean more than that the Davidic dynasty shall be con- tinued in the time of restoration under a series of worthy princes seems clear from the way in which Ezekiel speaks of the prince in chaps, xlv., xlvi. As yet we have no fixed doctrine of a personal Messiah, but only material from which such a doctrine might by and by be drawn. The religious view of the kingship is still essentially the same as in 2 Sam. vil., where the endless duration of the Davidic dynasty is set forth as part of Jehovah's plan of grace to His nation.

There are other parts of the Old Testament—notably 1 Sam. vin., xii.—in which the very existence of a human kingship is represented as a departure from the ideal of a perfect theocracy. And so, in and after the exile, when the monarchy had come to an end, we find pictures of the latter days in which its restoration has no place. Such is the great prophecy of Isa. xl.—lxvi., in which Cyrus is the anointed of Jehovah, and the grace promised to David is transferred to ideal Israel ("the servant of Jehovah") as a whole (Isa. lv. 3). So too there is no allusion to a human kingship in Joel or in Malachi; the old forms of the Hebrew state were broken, and religious hopes expressed themselves in other shapes.t In the book of Daniel it is collective Israel that appears under the symbol of a "son of man," and receives the kingdom (vii. 13, 18, 22, 27).

Meantime, however, the decay and ultimate silence of the living prophetic word concurred with the prolonged political servitude of the nation to produce a most

important change in the type of the Hebrew religion. The prophets had never sought to add to the religious unity of their teaching unity in the pictorial form in which from time to time they depicted the final judgment and future glory. For this there was a religious reason, To thei the kingship of Jehovah was not a mere ideal, but an actual reality. Its full manifestation indeed, to the eye of sense and to the unbelieving world, lay in the future; but true faith found a present stay in the sovereignty of Jehovah, daily exhibited in providence and interpreted to each generation by the voice of the prophets. And, while Jehoval’s kingship was a living and present fact, it refused to be formulated in fixed invariable shape. But when the prophets ceased and their place was taken by the scribes, the interpreters of the written word, when at the same time the yoke of foreign oppressors rested continually on the land, Israel no longer felt itself a living nation, and Jehovah’s kingship, which presupposed a living nation, found not even the most inadequate expression in daily political life. Jehovah was still the lawgiver of Israel, but His law was written in a book, and He was not present to administer it. He was still the hope of Israel, but the hope was all dissevered from the present ; it too was to be read in books, and these were interpreted of a future which was no longer, as it had been to the prophets, the ideal development of forces already at work in Israel, but wholly new and supernatural, The present was a blank, in which religious duty was summed up in patient obedience to the law and penitent submission to the Divine chastisements ; the living realities of divine grace were but memories of the past, or visions of “the world to come.” The scribes, who in this period took the place of the prophets as the leaders of religious thought, were mainly busied with the law; but no religion can subsist on mere law; and the systematization of the prophetic hopes, and of those more ideal parts of the other sacred literature which, because ideal and dissevered from the present, were now set on one line with the prophecies, went on side by side with the systematization of the law, by means of a harmonistic exegesis, which sought to gather up every prophetic image in one grand

panorama of the issues of Israel's and the world's history. The beginnings of this process can probably be traced within the canon itself, in the book of Joel and the last chapters of Zechariah ;? and, if this be so, we see from Zech. ix. that the picture of the ideal king early claimed a place in such constructions. The full development of the method belongs, however, to the post-canonical literature, and was naturally much less regular and rapid than the growth of the legal traditions of the scribes. The attempt to form a schematic escha- tology left so much room for the play of individual fancy that its results could not quickly take fixed dogmatic shape ; and it did not appeal to all minds alike or equally atalltimes. It was in crises of national anguish that men turned most eagerly to the prophecies, and sought to con- strue their teachings as a promise of speedy deliverance in such elaborate schemes of the incoming of the future glory as fill the Apocatypric LITERATURE (q.v.). But these books, however influential, had no public authority, and when the yoke of oppression was lightened but a little their enthusiasm lost much of its contagious power. It is not therefore safe to measure the general growth of eschatological doctrine by the apocalyptic books, of which Daniel alone attained a canonical position. In the Apocrypha eschatology has a very small place; but there is enough to show that the hope of Israel was never forgotten, and that the imagery of the prophets had

1 The hopes which Haggai and Zechariah connect with the name of Zerubbabel, a descendant of David, hardly form an exception to this statement,

2 See J OFL, vol. xifi, p. 706, and Stade's articles ''Deuterozacharja," Z. f. ATliche Wiss., 1881-82. Compare Dan. ix. 2 for the usc of the older prophecies in the solution of new problems of faith.

Mh Sead A

moulded that hope into certain fixed forms which were taken with a literalness not contemplated by the prophets themselves. It was, however, only very gradually that the figure and name of the Messiah acquired the pro- minence which they have in later Jewish doctrine of the last things and in the official exegesis of the Targums. In the very developed eschatology of Daniel they are, as we have seen, altogether wanting, and in the

Apocrypha, both before and after the Maccabee revival, the everlasting throne of David's house is a mere historical reminiscence (Sirach xlvii. 11; 1 Mac. ii. 57). So long as the wars of independence worthily occupied the energies of the Pales- tinian Jews, and the Hasmonzan sovereignty promised a measure of independence and felicity under the law, in which the people were ready to acquiesce, at least, till the rise of a new prophet (1 Mac. xiv. 41), the hope that con- nected itself with the house of David was not likely to rise to fresh life, especially as a considerable proportion of the not very numerous passages of Scripture which speak of the ideal king might with a little straining be applied to the rising star of the new dynasty (comp. the language of 1 Mac. xiv. 4-15). It is only in Alexandria, where the Jews were still subject to the yoke of the Gentile, that at this time (c. 140 B.c.) we find the oldest Sibylline verses (iii, 652 sg.) proclaiming the approach of the righteous king whom God shall raise up from the East (Isa. xli. 2) to establish peace on earth and inaugurate the sovereignty of the prophets in a regenerate world. The name Messiah is still lacking, and the central point of the prophecy is not the reign of the deliverer but the subjec- tion of all nations to the law and the temple.!

With the growing weakness and corruption of the Hasmoneean princes, and the alienation of a large part of the nation from their cause, the hope of a better kingship begins to appear in Judea also; at first darkly shadowed forth in the Book of Enoch (chap. xc.), where the white steer, the future leader of God's herd after the deliverance from the heathen, stands in a certain contrast to the in- adequate sovereignty of the actual dynasty (the horned lambs) ; and then much more clearly, and for the first time with use of the name Messiah, in the Psalter of Solomon, the chief document of the protest of Pharisaism against its enemies the later Hasmonzans. 'The struggle between the Pharisees and Sadducees, between the party of the scribes and the party of the Hasmonzan aristocracy, has been described in Israry (vol. xiii, p. 423 sy.) It was a struggle for mastery between a secularized hierarchy on the one hand, to whom the theocracy was only a name, and whose whole interests were those of their own selfish politics, and on the other hand a party to which God and the law were all in all, and whose influence depended on tlie main- tenance of the doctrine that the exact fulfilling of the law according to the precepts of the scribes was the absorbing vocation of Israel. This doctrine had grown up in the political

nullity of Judea under Persian and Grecian rule, and no government that possessed or aimed at political independence could possibly show constant deference to the punctilios of theschoolmen. The Pharisees themselves could not but see that their principles were politically impotent ; the most scrupulous observance of the Sabbath, for example—and this was the culminating point of legality —could not thrust back the arms of the heathen. Thus the party of the scribes, when they came into conflict with an active political power, which at the same time claimed to represent the theocratic interests of Israel, were compelled to lay fresh stress on the doctrine that the true deliverance of Israel must come from God and not from man. We haveseen indeed that the legalism which accepted

1In Sibyll., iti. 775, vndv must undoubtedly be read for vidv.

sT8) Jehovah as legislator, while admitting that his executive sovereignty as judge and captain of Israel was for the time dormant, would from the first have been a self-destructive position without the complementary hope of a future vindication of divine justice and mercy, when the God of Israel should return to reign over his people for ever. Before the Maccabee revival the spirit of nationality was so dead that this hope lay in the background ; the ethical and devotional aspects of religion under the law held the first place, and the monotony of political servitude gave little occasion for the observation that a true national life requires a personal leader as well as a written law. But now the Jews were a nation once more, and national ideas came to the front. In the Hasmonzan sovereignty these ideas took a political form, and the result was the secular- ization of the kingdom of God for the sake of a harsh and rapacious aristocracy. The nation threw itself on the side of the Pharisees; but it did so in no mere spirit of punctilious legalism, but with the ardour of a national enthusiasm deceived in its dearest hopes, and turning for help from the delusive kingship of the Hasmonzans to the true kingship of Jehovah, and to His vicegerent the king of David’s house. It is in this connexion that the doctrine and name of the Messiah appear in the Psalter of Solomon. ‘The eternal kingship of the house of David, so long forgotten, is seized on as the proof that the Hasmonzeans have no divine right.

‘¢Thou, Lord, art our king for ever and ever. . . . Thou didst choose David as king over Israel, and swarest unto him concerning his seed for ever that his kingship should never fail before Thee. And for our sins sinners (the Hasmonzans) have risen up over us, taking with force the kingdom which Thou didst not promise to them, profaning the throne of David in their pride. But Thou, O Lord, will cast them down and root out their seed from the land, when a man not of our race (Pompey) rises up against them… . Behold, O Lord, and raise up their king the Son of David at the time that Thou hast appointed, to reign over Israel Thy servant; and gird him with strength to crush unjust rulers; to cleanse Jerusalem from the heathen that tread it under foot, to cast out sinners from Thy inheritance; to break the pride of sinners and all their strength as potter’s vessels with a rod of iron (Ps. ii. 9); to destroy the law- less nations with the word of his mouth (Isa. xi. 4); to gather a holy nation and lead them in righteousness. . . . He shall divide them by tribes in the land, and no stranger and foreigner shall dwell with them; he shall judge the nations in wisdom and righteousness. The heathen nations shall serve under his yoke; he shall glonfy the Lord before all the earth, and cleanse Jerusalem in holiness as in the beginning. From the ends of the earth all nations shall come to see his glory and bring the weary sons of Zion as gifts (Isa. 1x. 3 sq.); to see the glory of the Lord with which God hath crowned him, for he is over them a righteous king taught of God. In his days there shall be no unrighteousness in their midst; for they are all holy, and their king the anointed of the Lord (xpiorbs xupios, mis-translation of M71) Mw). He shall not trust on horses and riders and bowmen, nor heap up gold and silver for war, nor put his confi- dence in a multitude for the day of war. ‘The Lord is king,’ that is his hope. . . . He is pure from sin to rule a great people, to rebuke governors and destroy sinners by his mighty word. In all his days he is free from offence against his God, for He hath made him strong by the Holy Spirit. . . . His hope is in the Lord; who can do aught against him? Strong in deeds and mighty in the fear of the Lord, he feedeth the flock of the Lord in truth and righteous-ness, and suffereth not one of them to stumble in the pasture… . So it beseemeth the king of Israel whom God hath chosen to lead the house of Israel… . God hasten His mercy on_ Israel to deliver them from the uncleanness of profane foes. The Lord is our king for ever and ever.” — Psalt. Sol. xvii.

This conception is traced in lines too firm to be those ofa first essay; it had doubtless grown upas an integral part of the religious protest against the Hasmonxans. And while the polemical motive is obvious, and the argument from prophecy against the legitimacy of a non-Davidic dynasty is quite in the manner of the scribes, the spirit of theocratic fervour which inspires the picture of the Messiah is broader and deeper than their narrow legalism. In a word, the Jewish doctrine of the Messiah marks the fusion of Pharisaism with the national religious feeling of the

Maccabee revival. It is this national feeling that, claim- ing a leader against the Romans as well as deliverance from the Sadducee aristocracy, again sets the idea of the kingship rather than that of resurrection and individual retribution in the central place which it had lost since the captivity. Henceforward the doctrine of the Messiah is at once the centre of popular hope and the object of theological culture. The New Testament is the best evidence of its influence on the masses (see especially Matt. xxi. 9); and the exegesis of the Targums, which in its beginnings doubtless reaches back before the time of Christ, shows how it was fostered by the Rabbins and preached in the synagogues.: Its diffusion far beyond Palestine, and in circles least accessible to such ideas, is proved by the fact that Philo himself (De Pram. et Pen., § 16) gives a Messianic interpretation of Num. xxiv. 27 (LXX.). It must not indeed be supposed that the doctrine was as yet the undisputed part of Hebrew faith which it became when the fall of the state and the antithesis to Christianity threw all Jewish thought into the lines of the Pharisees. It has, for example, no place in the Asswmptio Mosis or the Book of Jubilees, But, as the fatal struggle with Rome became more and more imminent, the eschiato- logical hopes which increasingly absorbed the Hebrew mind all group themselves round the person of the Messiah. In the later parts of the Book of Enoch (the “symbols” of chaps. xlv. sq.) the judgment day of the Messiah (identified with Daniel’s “Son of Man”) stands in the forefront of the eschatological picture. Josephus (B. J. vi. 5, § 4) testifies that the belief in the immediate appearance of the Messianic king gave the chief impulse to the war that ended in the destruction of the Jewish state; after the fall of the temple the last apocalypses (Baruch, 4

Hzra) still loudly proclaim the near victory of the God-sent king; and Bar Cochebas, the leader of the revolt against Hadrian, was actually greeted as the Messiah by Rabbi Akiba (comp. Luke xxi. 8). These hopes were again quenched in blood ; the political idea of the Messiah, the restorer of the Jewish state, still finds utterance in the daily prayer of every Jew (the Sh'médné Hsré), and is en- shrined in the system of Rabbinical theology ; but its his- torical significance was buried in the ruins of Jerusalem." But the proof written in fire and blood on the fair face of Palestine that the true kingdom of God could not be realized in the forms of an earthly state, and under the limitations of national particularism, was not the final refutation of the hope of the Old Tcstament. Amidst the last convulsions of political Judaism a new and spiritual conception of the kingdom of God, of salvation, and of the Saviour of God's anointing, lad shaped itself through the preaching, the death, and the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth. As applied to Jesus the name of Messiah lost all its political and national significance, for His victory over the world, whereby He approved hiniself the true captain of salvation, was consummated, not amidst the flash of earthly swords or the lurid glare of the lightnings of Elias,

1 The Targumic passages that speak of the Messiah are registered by Buxtorf, Lex. Chald., s.v.

2 False Messiahs have continued from time to time to appear among the Jews. Such was Serenis of Syria (eirca 720 a.D.). Soon after, Messianic hopes were active at the time of the fall of the Omay- yads, and led to a serious rising under Abu 'Isa of Ispahan, who called himself forerunner of the Messiah. The false Messiah David Alrui (Alroy) appeared among the warlike Jews in Azerbijan in the middle of the 12th century. The Messianic claims of Abraham Abu- lafia of Saragossa (born 1240) had a cabalistic basis, and the same studies encouraged the wildest hopes atalater time. Thus Abarbanel calculated the coming of the Messiah for 1503 a.p.; the year 1500 was in many places observed as a preparatory season of penance ; and throughout the 16th century the Jews were much stirred and more than one false Messiah appeared. For the false Messiah Sabbathai, see vol, xiii. p. 681.

but in the atoning death through which He entered into the heavenly glory. Between the Messiah of the Jews and the Son of Man who canie not to be ministered to but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many, there was on the surface little resemblance; and from their standpoint the Pharisees reasoned not amiss that the marks of the Messiah were conspicuously absent from this Christ. But when we look at the deeper side of the Messianic conception in the Psalter of Solomon, at the heartfelt longing for a leader in the way of righteousness and acceptance with God which underlies the aspira- tions after political deliverance, we see that it was in no mere spirit of accommodation to prevailing language that Jesus did not disdain the name in which all the hopes of the Old Testament were gathered up. The kingdom of God is the centre of all spiritual faith, and the perception that that kingdom can never be realized without a personal centre, a representative of God with man and man with God, was the thought, reaching far beyond the narrow range of Pharisaic legalism, which was the last lesson of the vicissitudes of the Old Testament dispensation, the spiritual truth that lay beneath that last movement of Judaism which concentrated the hope of Israel in the person of the anointed of Jehovah.

It would carry us too far to consider in this place the details of the Jewish conception of the Messiah and the Messianic times as they appear in the later apocalypses or in Rabbinical theology. See for the former the excellent summary of Schiirer, NTZliche Zeit- geschichte, $§ 28, 29 (Leipsic, 1874), and for the latter, besides the older books catalogued by Schiirer (of which Schoettgen, Hora, 1742, and Bertholdt, Christologia Judworum, 1811, may be specially named), Weber, Alisynagogale Theologic (Leipsic, 1880). For the whole subject see also Drummond, 7’he Jewish Messiah (London, 1877), and Kuenen, Religion of Israel, chap. xii. For the Messianic hopes of the Pharisees and the Psalter of Solomon see especially Wellhausen, Phariséer wnd Sadducter (Griefswald, 1874). In its ultimate form the Messianic hope of the Jews is the centre of the whole eschatology, embracing the doctrine of the last troubles of Israel (called by the Rabbins the “ birth pangs of the Messiah”’), the appearing of the anointed king, the annihilation of the hostile enemy, the return of the dispersed of Israel, the glory and world- sovereignty of the elect, the new world, the resurrection of the dead, aud the last judgment. But even the final form of Jewish theology shows much vacillation as to these details, especially as regards their

sequence and mutual relation, thus betraying the inadequacy of the harmonistic method by which they were derived from the Old Testament and the storiny excitement in which the Messianic idea was developed. It is, for example, an open question among the Rabbins whether the days of the Messiah belong to the old or to the new world (A34 pbiya or 8320 pdiyn), whether the resurrec- tion embraces all men or only the righteous, whether it precedes or follows the Messianic age. Compare MILLENNIUM.

We must also pass over the very important questions that arise as to the gradual extrication of the New Testament idea of the Christ from the elements of Jewish political doctrine which had so strong a hold of many of the first disciples—the relation, for ex- ample, of the New Testament Apocalypse to contemporary Jewish thought. A word, however, is necessary as to the Rabbinical doc- trine of the Messiah who sutfers and dies for Israel, the Messiah son of Joseph or son of Ephraim, who in Jewish theology is distinguished from and subordinate to the victorious son of David. The devel- oped form of this idea is almost certainly a product of the polemic with Christianity, in which the Rabbins were hard pressed by argu- ments from passages (especially Isa. liii.) which their own exegesis admitted to be Messianic, though it did not accept the Christian inferences as to the atoning death of the Messianic king. That the Jews in the time of Christ believed in a suffering and atoning Messiah is, to say the least, unproved and highly improbable. See, besides the books above cited, De Wette, Opwscula; Wiinsche, Die Leiden des Messias, 1870. The opposite argument of King, Zhe Yalkut on Zechariah (Cambridge, 1882), App. A, does not really prove more than that the doctrine of the Messiah Ben Joseph found points of attachment in older thought. (W. RB. 8.)

MESSINA, a city and seaport at the north-east corner of Sicily, capital of the province of the same name,? is

3 The province occupies the north-east corner of the island, and is 60 miles iu length by 30 in breadth. It is chiefly occupied with moun- tain ranges and valleys ; there are few plains. The largest river is the

situated on the Straits of Messina (at this point about 4 miles wide), 8 miles north-west of Reggio and 130 miles east by north of Palermo, in 38° 15’ N. lat., 15° 30’ E. long. The town is built between the sea and a range of sharp and rugged hills, called the Dinnamare, 3707 feet at their highest point. It runs in a semicircle round the harbour, and presents a picturesque appearance from the sea, as the houses rise in tiers upon the slope of a hill, and behind are the wooded mountains.

Messina is the second town of Sicily in importance and in size. Its population was 97,074 in 1850, 111,854 in 1871, and 126,497 in 1881. Itis an archiepiscopal see, and has a university, founded by the Jesuits in 1548, with a public library of 56,000 volumes.

The excellence of its harbour makes Messina an import- ant trading town. The harbour is formed by a tongue of low land which runs out from the shore in the form of a sickle, and encloses a round basin, open to the north only, where the entrance channel is about 500 yards wide. This basin is 11 miles in circumference, and is of such depth that the largest vessels are able to use it. It is estimated that 1300 steamers, with a total of 1,000,000 tons burthen, and 9000 sailing ships, with a total of 500,000 tons bur- then, enter the port yearly. The exports of Messina consist chiefly of oranges, lemons, raisins, wine, oil, liquorice, and hides. Thereis no prominent manufacture; but silk stuffs are made in considerable quantities. Many of the inhabit- ants are engaged in fishing, chiefly for tunny. Sword-fish also are captured with the harpoon in the Straits during July and August. Coral fishery is a trade of the people. The hills behind Messina produce a strong dark wine, inferior to that which is made in other parts of the island.

Messina has few buildings of importance or antiquity. The sieges and earthquakes from which the town has suffered destroyed most of its monuments. After the great earthquake in 1783 the city was almost entirely rebuilt. The cathedral, the principal building, isa church of the Norman period. It was begun in 1098 by Count Roger I, and finished by his son Roger IJ. The church is in the

form of a Latin cross, 305 feet long and 145 feet wide in.

the transepts. The lower half of the facade is encrusted with slabs of red and white marble. It has three Gothic portals, with pointed arches and rich ornamentation, belonging to the period of the Anjou dynasty. The nave contains twenty-six columns of Egyptian granite, said to have been brought from an ancient temple of Poseidon which stood near the Faro. The mosaics of the apses date from the year 1330. In the choir are the sarcophagi of the emperor Conrad IV. (d. 1254), of Alphonso the Generous (d. 1458), and of Antonia, widow of Frederick IIT. of Aragon. In 1254 the cathedral was seriously damaged by fire; in 1559 the campanile was burned down; in 1783 the earthquake overthrew the campanile and the transept. The building therefore offers a mixture of styles,—first Norman, then Gothic, then Early Renaissance, finally Barocco and Modern Gothic.

The history of Messina begins very early. It is said to have been founded, on the site of a more ancient Sicilian town, by pirates from Cume, in 732 B.c. It took its earlier name of Zancle (a sickle) from the shape of its harbour. The number of its inhabit- ants was increased by an influx of Chalcidians under Crateemenes : and in 649 B.c. the town was sufficiently prosperous and populous to establish a colony at Himera. The Samians occupied Zancle for a short time after Miletus had been captured by the Persians in 494 B.c. In the following year the city felL-into the hands of Anaxilas, tyrant of Rhegium, who introduced a population of

Messenians, from Messenia in the Peloponnesus ; and they changed the name of the place to Messana, in the Doric pronunciation, to

Alcantara. The chief towns are Messina, Castroreale, Mistretta, Patti, and Milazzo. The population in 1854 was 380,279, in 1871 420,649, and in 1881 467,233.

oY

remind them of their fatherland. The sons of Anaxilas were ex- pelled from the government of Messina in 466 B.c., and a republic established ; and this government was continued until Messina fell into the hands of the Carthaginians during their wars with Dionysius the elder of Syracuse (396 B.c.). The Carthaginians destroyed the city; but Dionysius recaptured and rebuilt it, During the next fifty years Messina changed masters several

times, till Timoleon finally expelled the Carthaginians in 343 B.c. In the wars between Agathocles of Syracuse and Carthage, Messina took the side of the Carthaginians. Agathocles's mercenaries, the Mamertines, treacherously seized the town in 288 B.c. and held it. They came to war with Hiero II. of Syracnse, after Agathocles's death ; and Hiero's allics, the Carthaginians, helped him to reduce Messina. The Mamertines appealed for help to Rome, which was granted, and this led to a collision between Rome and Carthage, which ended in the First Punic War. At the close of that war, in 241 B.c., Messina became a possession of the Romans. During the civil wars which followed the death of Julius Casar, Messina held with Sextus Pompeius; and in 35 B.c. it was sacked by Octavian's troops. After Octavian's proclamation as emperor he founded a colony here; and Messina continued to flourish as a trading port. In the division of the Roman empire it belonged to the emperors of the East; and in 547 a.p. Belisarius collected his fleet here before erossing into Calabria. The Saracens took the eity in 831 A.p.; and in 1061 it was the first permanent conquest made in Sicily by the Normans under Roger d'Hauteville. In 1190 Richard Ceeur de Lion with his crusaders passed six months in Messina. He fell out with Tancred, the last of the Hauteville dynasty, and sacked the town. In 1194 the city, with the rest of Sicily, passed to the house of Hohenstaufen under the emperor Henry VI., who died there in 1197. At the time of the Sicilian Vespers (1282), which drove the French out of Sicily, Messina bravely defended itself against Charles of Anjou, and repulsed his attack. Peter I. of Aragon, through his commander Ruggiero di Loria, defeated the French off the Faro; and from 1282 to 1718 Messina remained a possession of the Spanish royal house. In 1571 the ficet fitted out by the Holy League against the Turk assembled at Messina, and in the same year its eommander, Don John of Austria, eelebrated a triumph in the city for his victory at Lepanto. Don John's statue stands in the Piazza dell' Annuziata. For one hundred years, thanks to the favours and the concessions of Charles V., Messina enjoyed great prosperity. But the internal quarrels between the Merli, or aristocratic Pekar and the Malvezzi, or democratic faction, fomented as they were by the Spaniards, helped to ruin the city (1671-78). The Messinians suspected the Spanish court of a desire to destroy the ancient senatorial consti- tution of the city, and sent to France to ask the aid of Louis XIV. in their resistance. Louis despatched a fleet into Sicilian waters, and the French occupied the city. The Spaniards replicd by appealing to Holland,

who sent a fleet under Ruyter into the Mediterranean. The French admiral, Duquesne, defeated the combined fleet of Spain and Holland, but, notwithstanding this victory, the French suddenly abandoned Messina in 1678, and the Spanish occupied the town once more. The senate was suppressed, and Messina lost its privileges. This was fatal to the importance of the city, and it never recovered. In 1743 the plague carried off 40,000 inhabitants. The city was partially destroyed by earth- quake in 1783. During the revolution of 1848 against the Bourbons of Naples, Messina was bombarded for three consecutive days. In 1854 the deaths from cholera numbered about 15,000. Garibaldi landed in Sicily in 1860, and Messina was the last city in the island taken from the Bourbons and made a part of united Italy under Victor Emmannel.

Messina was the birthplace of the following celebrated men: Dicearchus, the historian (cir, 322 B.c.); Aristocles, the Peri- vatetic; Euhemerus, the rationalist (cir. 316 3B.o.); Stefano rotonotario, Mazzeo di Ricco, and Tommaso di Sasso, poets of the eourt of Frederick II. (1250 A.p.) ; and Antonello da Messina, the painter (1447-99), five of whose works are preserved in the university gallery. During the 15th eentury the grammarian Constantine Lascaris taught in Messina; and Bessarion was for a time archimandrite there.

METALLURGY, a branch of applied science whose object is to describe and scientifically criticize the methods used industrially for the extraction of metals from their ores. Of the large number of metals enumerated in the handbooks of chemistry, the vast majority, of course, lie outside its range; but it is perhaps as well for us to point out that in metallurgic discussions even the term “metallic,” as applied to compounds, has a restricted meaning, being exclusive of all the light metals, although one of these, namely aluminium, is being manufactured industrially. The following table enumerates in the order

of their importance the metals which our subject at present XVI. — 8

is understood to include; the second column in each case gives the chemical characters of the native compounds utilized, italics indicating ores of

subordinate importance. The term “oxide” must be understood to include carbon- ate, hydrate, and occasionally (when marked in the table with *) silicate.

Metal. Character of Ores.

lavalcle Peete ons cenanercene haere Oxides, sulphide.

Cowper Complex sulphides, also oxides, IE ses: fet carve Be metal : – : Sulphide and reguline metal,

ules akan eeciscer datos vom unter } iors on

(Chat Borah notes OBER RCE aE cer qeeaaoeeee Reguline metal.

fans Sulphide and basic-carbonate, sw- BG sisiaicas:s Frater Re eer cao onic vist, ke,

WANING sige dos tons seas tee aes jee Sulphide, oxide.*

Mitta, aetaorciec ates tientelgele: ee nes SeaeOe See Oxide.

Ry ie ec cara So catean ye ci Sulphide, reguline metal.

BATIGLOTNY splay saan: oe ota a cetren stem irene Sulphide.

BUSTERS oop vegies nest sebastien eaten Reguline metal.

Nickel and cobalt…….0.c.0006 Arsenides.

Platinum and platinum metals… Reguline.

Al IMMUN |; Sete gure rotasronh varetsraetis Oxide,* sodio-fiuoride.

We have separated the last two from the rest because the methods used for their preparation are more of the character of laboratory operations, and because we do not mean to include these in our general exposition of metal- lurgic principles. The history of metallurgy, up to the most recent times, is obscure. It is only since about the beginning of this century that the art has

come to be at all scientifically criticized; and in the case of the most important processes all that science has been able to do has been merely to put her stamp upon what experience has long found to be right. Great and brilliantly successful scientific efforts in the synthetic line are not wanting, but they all belong to recent times. Science, by its very nature, aims at publicity ; empiricism at all times has done the reverse; hence a history of the development of the art of metallurgy does not and cannot exist. A few historical notes on the discovery of certain of the useful metals are given in the introduction to Mzrats (g.v.).

General Sequence of Operations.—Occasionally metallic ores present themselves in the shape of practically pure compact masses, from which the accompanying matrix or ‘“‘gangue” can be detached by hand and hammer. But this is a rare exception. In most cases the “ore,” as it comes out of the mine, is simply a mixture of ore proper and gangue, in which the latter not unfrequently predomi- nates so much that it is not the gangue but the ore that really occupies the position of what the chemist would call the impurity. Hence, in general, it is necessary, or at least expedient, to purify the ore as such before the libera- tion of the metal is attempted. Most metallic ores are specifically heavier than the impurities accompanying them, and their purification may be (and generally is) effected by reducing the crude ore to a fine enough powder to detach the metallic from the earthy part, and then washing away the latter by a current of water, as far as possible. In the case of a “reguline” ore, such as auriferous quartz, for instance, the ore thus concentrated may consist substan- tially of the metal itself, and require only to be melted down and cast into ingots to be ready for the market. This, however, is a rare case, the vast majority of ores being chemical compounds, which for the extraction of their metals demand chemical treatment. The chemical operations involved may be classified as follows :—

1. Fiery Operations.—The ore, along in general with some kind of “flux,” is exposed to the direct action of a powerful fire. The fire in most cases has a chemical, in addition to its obvious physical function. It is intended either to burn away certain components of the ore—in which case it must be so regulated as to contain a sufficient

excess of unburned oxygen; or it is meant to deoxidize (“reduce”) the ore, when the draught must be restricted so as to keep the ore constantly wrapped up in combustible flame gases (carbonic oxide, hydrogen, marsh-gas, &c.). The vast majority of the chemical operations of metallurgy fall into this category, and in these processes other metal- reducing agents than those naturally contained in the fire (or wind) are only exceptionally employed.

2. Amalgamation.—The ore by itself (if it happens to be a reguline one), or the ore plus certain reagents (if it does not), is worked up with mercury so that the metal is obtained ultimately as an amalgam, which can be separated mechanically from the dross. The purified amalgam is subjected to distillation, when the mercury is recovered as a distillate while the metal remains.

3. Wet Processes.—Strictly speaking, certain amalgama- tion methods fall under this head; but, in its ordinary acceptance, the term refers to processes in which the metal is extracted either from the natural ore, or from the ore as it is after roasting or some other preliminary treatment, by means of an aqueous acid or salt solution, and from this solution precipitated—generally in the reguline form—by some suitable reagent.

Few methods of metal extraction at once yield a pure product. What as a rule is obtained is a more or less impure metal, which requires to be “refined” to become fit for the market. We now pass to the individual con- sideration of the several steps referred to.

Comminution of Ores. —Assuming the ore to be given in the shape of large lumps, these must first be broken up into small stones (of about the size of those used for macadamizing a road) before they can go to the grinding-mill. This formerly used to be done by hand- work; nowadays it is preferably effected by means of an American invention called the stone-breaker (fig. 1). This consists essentially of two substantial verticaliron plates; one is fixed, the other is connected withan excentric worked by an engine so as to alternately dash against and recede from the former. The

lumps of ore, in passing through this jaw-like contrivance, are broken up into smaller fragments fit for

Fic. 1.—American Stone-Breaker.

the mill. For the production of a coarse powder revolving cylinders are often employed. Two cylinders of equal diameter and length, made of iron, steel, or stone, are suspended by parallel axes in close proximity to each other. The width of the slit between them can be made to vary according to the requirements of the case. The cylinders are made to revolve in opposite directions, so that the stones when run into the groove formed by their upper halves are drawn between them and are crushed into bits of a size dependin,

on the least distance between the two surfaces. Exceptionally haste stones might bring the machine to a standstill or cause breakages ; hence only one of the two axes of rotation is absolutely fixed ; the cushions of the other are only held in relatively fixed positions, each between a couple of guiding rails, by means of powerful springs at their backs. The springs are made of alternate disks of india- rubber and sheet-iron, and yield appreciably only to very strong pressures. Whenan exceptionally hard stone comes on, they yield

and allow it to pass through uncrushed. Sometimes two sets of cylinders are arranged one above the other, so that the grit from the upper falls into the jaws of the lower set to receive further eom- minution. The diameter of the cylinders is from a foot to a yard, their length from 9 inches to a yard, the velocity of a point on the periphery a foot to a yard per second. The quantity of ore reduced

er hour per horse-power is about 5 cubic feet for quartz or other tee minerals, and about 14 eubic feet for minerals of moderate hardness.

For the production of a relatively fine powder the pounding-mill is Reval used, which, in its action, is analogous to a mortar and pestle. The mortar is a rectangular trough, while the pestle is replaced by a parallel set of heavy

metal or metal-shod beams, which (by means of a revolving cylinder with cogs eatching oa jections on the beams) are lifted up in succession and then let fall by their own weight so as to pound up the ore in the trough. The ore is supplied from a prismatic reservoir with a sloping bottom leading into a canal through which the stones slide into the trough. A current of water, which constantly flows into the trough from below, lifts up the finer particles and carries them away over the edge of the trough into a settling tank.

The object pursued in powdering an ore is to et aoe it for being purified by washing. But the velocity with which a solid particle falls through water depends on its size as well as on its specific gravity—an increase in either accelerating the fall; henee, where the difference in specifie gravity between the things to be separated is small, the washing must be preceded by a separation of the ore- powder into portions of approximately equal fineness. This is often effected by passing the ore through a system of sieves of different width of mesh superposed over one another, the coarser sieve always occupying the higher position. Sometimes the sieves are made to ‘go dry,” sometimes they are aided in their action by a eurrent of water which, more effectually than mere shaking, pre- vents adherence of dust to coarser parts. ;

Another contrivance is the ‘‘ Drum” (fig. 2). A long perforated circular cylinder made of sheet-iron, open at both ends, is suspended, in a sloping position, by a revolving shaft passing through its axis. The size of the perforations is generally made to increase in passing from the upper to the lower belts of the cylinder. While the drum

Fic. 2.—Drum.

is revolving, the ore, suspended in water, flows in at the upper end, and in travelling down it casts off first its finest and then its coarser parts, the coarsest only reaching the exit at the lewer end. The several grades of powder produced fall each into a separate division of the collecting tank.

The drum, of course, is subject to endless modifications, A very ingenious combination is H. E. Taylor’s ‘‘ Drum Dressin Machine” (fig. 3). It consists

of three truncated eone-shape drums D, fixed co-axially to the same horizontal revolving shaft,

fy

am. | copie CS J MMW M00 Vi

Fig. 3.—Taylor’s Drum Dressing Machine. so that the narrow end of No. 1 projects into the wider end of No. 2,

MIM:

and No. 2 similarly into No. 8. The drums are not perforated, but are armed inside with screw-threads formed of strips of sheet metal

59

fixed edgeways to the drum, The ore grit to be dressed is placed in a hopper A, and from it, by a worm B fixed to the revolving shaft, is being screwed forward into a short fixed truncated cone C projecting into the revolving drum No. 1, into which it flows in a eonstant current. The rotary motion of the drum tends to convey the ore along the spiral path prescribed by the screw-thread towards the other end, and from it into drum No. 2, and so on. But the ore in each drum meets with a jet of water E impelling it the opposite way, and the effect is that, in each drum, the lighter parts follow the water, and with it run off over the entrance edge to be collected in a special tank, while the coarser parts roll down the spiral path toward the next drum to undergo further parting. The tank or pit for drum 1 receives the finest and lightest parts, that of drum 2 a heavier, that of drum 3 a still heavier portion, while only the very heaviest matter finds its way out of the exit end of No. 3 into a fourth receptacle.

Of the large number of other ore-dressers, only two need be men- tioned here.

The ‘‘Clausthal Turn-Table” consists of a circular table, the sur- face of which rises from the periphery towards the centre so as to form a very flat cone of about 170°, which is fixed co-axially to a ver- tical rotary shaft. At

the apex of the table, surrounding the shaft, but independent of its motion, there isa cireular trough of sheet zinc, divided into two compartments; one receives a stream of water carrying the ore, the other a supply of pure water. A large annu- lar trough of sheet zinc is placed below the periphery of the table, so as to receive whatever may fal] over the edge. It also is divided into compartments, as shall be explained further on. Supposing the table to be at rest, a sector of about 60° of it would be constantly run over by the ore-mud out of the first compartment of the upper trough. This mud current would suffer partial separation into heavier and lighter parts,—rich ore resting in the higher and poorer in the lower latitudes, and a still poorer ore falling over the periphery into the lower trough. The same happens with the moving table; only each sector of such partially analysed ore under- goes further purification by passing through about 90° of water- shower. After passing this, it meets with a perforated fixed water- pipe going up radially to about half the radius of the table. This pipe also carries sweeping brushes, so that the belt of ore from the lower latitudes of the table is swept off into the corresponding section of the receiving trough. What of ore remains on the higher latitudes subsequently meets with a similar arrangement which sweeps it off into its compartment. If the table turns from the left to the right, and we follow the process, beginning at the left edge of the ore-mud compartment, it will be seen that a first sector of the receiving trough gathers the light dross, a suceeeding one an intermediate product, a third the most highly purified ore. The “intermediate” is generally run into the ore-mud trough of a seeond table to be further analysed.

In the “‘ Continuous Wash-Pumps” (Continuirliche Setzpnmype) of the Harz, three funnel-shaped vessels (one of which is shown in fig. 4) are set in a frame beside one another, but at different levels, so that any overflow from No.1 runs into No. 2 and thence into No. 3. Each funnel communicates below with its own compart- ment of a common cistern. Into each funnel a riddle with narrow meshes is in- serted somewhere near the upper end, while, beside the riddle, there is a pump of short range, which, by means of an excentrie, is worked so that the piston alternately goes rapidly down and slowly up. The mode of working is best explained by an example. At Breinigerberg in Rhenish Prussia the apparatus serves to separate a complex ore into the following four parts, which we enumerate in

the order of their specific gravities—(1) galena (the heaviest), (2) pyrites, (3)

blende, (4) dross, Sieve No. 1 is charged with granules of galena, just

large enough not to slip through the meshes, No, 2 similarly with granules of : pyrites, No, 3 with those of blende. The crude ore-mud goes into sieve 1; the jerking action of the pump alternately tosses the particles up into the water and allows them to fall; the heaviest naturally come down first, but what is most striking is that nothing will pass through the bed of galena but what is at least as heavy as galena itself. In a similar manner No, 2 aud No. 8

Fia, 4.—Continuous Wash-Pump.

funnels sift out the pyrites and the blende respectively, so that almost nothing but dross runs off ultimately. The apparatus is said to do its work with a wonderful degree of precision, and of eourse is susceptible of wider application, but it eeases to work when the raw material is a slime so fine that the particles fall too slowly.

Modes of Producing High Temperatures.—Most of what is to be said on this topic has already been anticipated in the articles Fur., Furnaces, and Bettows; but a few notes may be added on specially metallurgic points.

Furnace Materials.—In a metallurgic furnace the working parts at least must be made of special materials capable of withstanding the very high temperatures to which they are exposed and the action of the fluxes which may be used. No practically available material fully meets both requirements, but there is no lack of inerely fire-proof substances.

Of native stones, a pure quartzose sandstone, free from marl, may be named as being well adapted for the generality of structures; but such sandstone, or indeed any kind of fire-proof stone, is not always at hand. What is more readily procured, and eonsequently more widely used, is refractory brick, made from ‘‘ fire-clay.” The characteristic chemical feature of fire-clays is

that in them the elay proper (always some kind of hydrated silicate of alumina) is associated with only small proportions of lime, magnesia, ferrous oxide, or other protoxides. If the percentage of these goes beyond eertain limits, the bricks, when strongly heated, melt down into a slag. The presence of free silica, on the other hand, adds to their refrac- toriness. In fact the best fire-bricks in existence are the so-called Dinas bricks, which eonsist substantially of silica, contaminated only with just enough of bases to cause it to frit together on being baked. Dinas bricks, however, on account of their high price, are reserved for special cases involving exceptionally high temperatures. Amongst ordinary fire-bricks those from Stourbridge enjoy the highest reputation. It follows from what has just been said that, in a metallurgic furnace, lime-mortar eannot be used as a cement, but must be replaced by fire-clay paste.

In the construction of cupels, reverberatory furnaces, &¢., only the general groundwork is, as a rnle, made of built bricks, and this groundwork is coated over with some kind of special fire-proof and flux-proof material, such as bone-ash, a mixture of baked fire-clay and cokes or graphite, or of quartz and very highly silicated slags, &c. These beddings are put on in a loose powdery ferm, and then stamped fast. They offer the advantage that, when worn ont, they are easily removed and renewed. The powerful draught which a metallurgic fire needs can be produced by a chimney, where the fuel forms a relatively shallow howe spread over a large grating; but, when closely-packed deep inasses of fuel or fuel and ore have to be kept ablaze, a blast becomes indispensable.

Chimneys. —The efficiency of a chimney is measured by the velocity V with which the air ascends through it, multiplied by its section ; and the former is in roughly approximate accordance with the formula

Veaby2ii(T=T,)T,,

where h stands for the height of the chimney, g for the acceleration of gravity (32°2 feet per second), and T and T, for the absolute temperatures (meaning the temperatures counted from ~ 278° C.) of the air within and the air without the ehimney respectively, while & is a factor meant to account for the resistances which the air, in its progress through the furnace, &c., has to overcome. In practice T is taken as the mean temperature of the

chimney gases, which theoretically is not nnobjectionable ; but the weakest point in the formula is the smallness and utter inconstancy of the factor k, which, according to Péclet, generally assumes some value of the power 4, +, &c. Yet the formula is of some use as enabling one to see the way in which V depends on hf and (T-T,)/T, con- jointly, —to see, for instance, how deficient chimney height may be compensated for by an increase of temperature in the chimney gases, and vtee versa.

Blowing-Machines.—Of the several kinds of blowers described under BELLOWs (9.¥.), the ‘‘ fans” are the best means for producing large volumes of wind of relatively small but steady pressure ; ‘‘bellows” are indicated in the case of work on a relatively small scale requiring moderate wind pressure; while the “cylinder blast” comes in where large masses of high-pressure wind are required. Two highly interesting blowing-machines, however, are omitted in that article, which may be shortly described here.

The ‘‘ Water Blast” (Wassertrommelgeblise) is interesting historically, having been used metallurgically in Hungary for many eenturies. A mass of water, stored up ina reservoir, is made to fall down continuously through a high narrow vertical shaft having air-holes at its upper end. The vertical column of water sucks in air through these holes and carries it down with it into a kind of inverted tub standing in a reservoir kept at a eonstant level. Air and water there separate, the former flowing away through a pipe into a wind-box, from which it is led to its destina- tion.

METALLURGY

The ‘‘Cagniardelle” (figs. 5, 6), so called fromits inventor Cagniard Latour, also utilizes water to earry air, but in quite another way. By means of a round shaft passing through its axis, a cylindrical drum of sheet-metal is suspended slantingly in a mass of water, so that the lower end is fully immersed, while of the upper end the segment above the upper side of the shaft is uncovered. The space between shaft and drum is eonverted into a very wide screw-shaped eanal by a band of sheet-metal hermetically fixed edgeways to the two. Both the top and the bottom end of the drum are partially closed by flat

SSS ZEEE EEN SSSA ‘ XS Ss RSS SS ANS

bottoms soldcred or riveted to the respective edges; the lower one leaves a ring-shaped opening between its edge and the shaft, which serves for the introduction of a fixed air-pipe bent so as to reach up to near the top of the drum's air-space ; in the upper bottom three quadrants are closed, the fourth is open. Supposing the screw-canal, traced from below, to go from the left to the right, the drum is made to revolve in the same sense, and the effect is that, in each revolution, the screw-canal at its top end swallows a eertain volume of air which, by the succeeding entrance of the water—whieh, of course, moves relatively to the screw —is pushed towards and ultimately into the air-space at the bottomend. The Cagniardelle yields a perfectly continu- ous blast, and, as it is not encumbered with any dead resistances except the friction of the shaft against its bearings (which ean be reduced to very little) and the very slight friction of the water against the screw-canal, it utilizes a very large percentage of the energy spent on it. This percentage, accord- ing to experiments by Schwamkrug, amounts to from 75 to 84°5; in the ease of the cylinder-blast it is 60 to 65 per cent. ; with bellows, about 40 per eent.; with the ‘‘ Wassertrommelgeblise” 10 to 15 per cent. Hence the ‘‘ Wassertrommelgeblase”’ stands last in relative efficiency ; but we must not forget that it alone directly utilizes native energy, while, in the eylinder blast, for example, 100 units of work done by the steam-engine involve a vastly greater energy spent on the engine as heat.

To maintain a desired temperature in a given furnace eharged in a certain manner, the introduction of a certain volume of air per unit of time is necessary. But this quantity, in a given blowing- machine, is determined by the over-pressure of the wind, as measured by a manometer, the velocity of the wind being approxi-

mately proportional to »/M/(B+M), where M stands for the height of the mercury-manometer, and B for that of the barometer. Hence the practical metallurgist, in adjnsting his blast, has nothing to do but to see that the manometer shows the reading which, by previous trials, has been proved to yield an adequate supply of wind.

Fuel.—In some isolated eases the ore itself, by its combustion, supplies the necessary heat for the operation to be performed upon it. Thus, for instance,

the roasting of blackband iron-stone is effected by simply piling up the ore and setting fire to it, so that the ore is at the same time its own furnace and fuel; in the Bessemer process of steel-making, the burning carbon of the pig- iron supplies the heat necessary for its own combustion; and a similar process has been tried experimentally, and not without suceess, for the working up of certain kinds of pyrites. But, asa tule, the high temperatures required for the working of ores are pro- duced by the combustion of extraneous fuel, such as wood, wood- charcoal, coal, coke. Of these four, wood-charcoal is of the widest applieability, but not much used in Britain on account of its high price. High-class coke or pure anthracite, volume for volume,

Fig. 6.

ee Terehei.n Uh GY

gives the highest temperature. Wood or coal is indicated when a voluminous flame is one of the requisites. Obviously fuel of the same kind and quality gives a higher calorific intensity when, before use, it is deprived by drying of its moisture, or wlien it is used in conjunction with a hot instead of a cold blast. This latter prin- ciple, as every one knows, is largely discounted in the manufacture of pig-iron, where nowadays coal, with the help of the hot blast, is made to do what formerly could only be effected with charcoal or coke. For further information see Furr and JRon.

Chemical Operations. —In regard to processes of amalgamation and to wet-way processes, we have nothing to add to what was given in a previous paragraph ;1 we therefore here confine ourselves, in the main, to pyro-chemical operations.

The method to be adapted for the extraction of a metal from its ore is determined chiefly, though not entirely, by the nature of the non-metallic component with which the metal iscombined. The simplest case is that of the reguline ores where there is no non- inetallic element. The important cases are those of GoLD, BisMUTH, and MERCURY (@.¥.).

Oxides, Hydrates, Carbonates, and Silicates.—All iron and tin ores proper fall under this heading, which, besides, comprises certain ores of copper, of

lead, and of zine. In any case the first step consists in subjecting the crude ore to a roasting pee the object of which is to remove the water and carbonic acid, and burn away, to sonie extent at least, what there may be of sulphur, arsenic, or organic matter. The residue consists of an impure (perhaps a very impure) oxide of the respective metal, which in all cases is reduced by treat: ment with fuel at a high temperature. Should the metal be present in the silicate form, lime must be added in the smelting to remove the silica and liberate the oxide.

In the case of zinc the temperature required fur the reduction lies above the boiling point of the metal ; hence the mixture of ore and reducing agent (charcoal is generally used) must be heated in a retort combined with the necessary condensing apparatus. In all the other cases the reduction is effected in the fire itself, a tower- shaped blast furnace being preferably used. The furnace is charged with alternate layers of fuel and ore (or rather ore and flux, see be- low), and the whole kindled from below. The metallic oxide, partly by the direct action of the carbon with which it is in contact, but principally by that of the carbonic oxide produced in the lower strata from the oxygen of the blast and the hot carbon there, is re- duced to the metallic state ; the metal fuses and runs down, with the slag, to the bottom of the furnace, whence both are withdrawn by the periodic opening of plug-holes provided for the purpose.

Sulphides.—Iron, copper, lead, zinc, mercury, silver, and anti- mony very frequently present themselves in this state of combin- ation, as components of a very numerous family of ores which may be divided into two sections: (1) such as substantially consist of simple sulphides, as iron pyrites (FeS,), galena (PbS), zine blende (ZnS), cinnabar (HgS); and (2) complex sulphides, such as the various kinds of sulphureous copper ores (all substantially com- pounds or mixtures of sulphides of copper and iron) ; bournonite, a complex sulphide of lead, antimony, and copper ; rothgiltigerz, sulphide of silver, antimony, and arsenic ; falilerz, sulphides of arsenic and antimony, combined with sulphides of copper, silver, iron, zinc, mercury, silver; and mixtures of these and other sul- phides with one another.

In the treatment of a sulphureous ore, the first step as a rule is to subject it to oxidation by roasting it in a reverberatory or other furnace, which, in the first instance, leads to the burning away of at least part of the arsenic and part of the sulphur. The effect on the several individual metallic sulphides (supposing only one of these to be present) is as follows :—

1. Those of silver (Ag,S) and mercury (HgS) yield sulphurous acid gas and metal; in the case of silver, sulphate is formed as an intermediate product, at low temperatures. Metallic mercury, in the circumstances, goes off as a vapour, which is collected and con- densed ; silver remains as a regulus, but pure sulphide of silver is hardly ever worked.

2. Sulphides of iron and zine yield the oxides Fe,03 and ZnO as

final products, some basic sulphate being formed at the earlier stages, more especially in the case of zinc. The oxides can be reduced by carbon.

3. The sulphides of lead and copper yield, the former a mixture of oxide and normal sulphate, the latter one of oxide and basic sulphate. Sulphate of lead is stable at a red heat ; sulphate of copper breaks up into oxide, sulphurous acid, and oxygen. In practice, neither oxidation process is ever pushed to the end; it is stopped as soon as the mixture of roasting-product and unchanged sulphide contains oxygen and sulphur in the ratio of 0.:S. The access of air is then stopped and the whole heated to a higher temperature, when the potential SO, actually goes off as sulphurous- acid gas and the whole of the metal is eliminated as such. This method is largely utilized in the smelting of lead (from galena) and of copper from copper pyrites. In the latter case, however, the

1 Examples are given in GoLp and Corrrr. See also SILVER.

sulphide Cu, has first to be produced from the ore, which is done substantially as follows. The ore is roasted with silica until a certain proportion of the sulphur is burned away as SOQ,, while a corresponding proportion of oxygen has gone to the metal part of the ore. Now it so happens that copper lias a far greater affinity for sulphur than iron has;

hence any locally produced oxide of copper as long as sufficient sulphide of iron is left, is sure to be reconverteil into sulphide, and the final result is that, while a large quautity of oxidized iron passes into the slag, all the copper and part of the iron separate out asa mixed regulus of Cu,S and FeS (‘‘mat”). This regulus, by being fused up repeatedly with oxidized copper ores or rich copper slags (virtually with CuO and silica), gradually yiclds up the whole of its iron, so that ultimately a regulus of pure subsul- phide of copper, Cu,S (‘‘fine mat”), is obtained, which is worked up for metal as above explained.

4, Sulphide of antimony, when roasted in air, is converted into a kind of alloy of sulphide and oxide; the same holds for iron, only its oxysulphide is quite readily converted into the pure oxide Fe,O, by further roasting. Oxysulphide of antimony, by suitable processes, can be reduced to metal, but these processes are rarely used, because the same end is far more easily obtained by ‘‘precipitation,” 7@.¢., withdrawing the sulphur by fusion with metallic iron, forming metallic antimony and sulphide of iron. Both products fuse, but readily part, because fused antimony is far heavier than fused sulphide of iron is. A precisely similar method is used occasionally for the reduction of lead from galena. Sulphide of lead when fused together with metallic iron in the proportion of 2Fe:1PbS yields a regulus (=1Pb) and a “mat” Fe,8, which, however, on cooling, decomposes into FeS parts of ordinary sulphide and Fe parts of finely divided iron. What we have just been explaining are only two special cases of a more general metallurgic proposition. According to Fournct, any onc of the metals copper, iron, tin, zinc, lead, silver, antimony, arsenic, in general, is capable of desulphurizing or precipitating (at least partially) any of the others that follows it in the serics just given, and it does so the more readily aud completely the greater the number of intervening terms. Hence, supposing a complete mix- ture of these metals to be melted down under circumstances adinit- ting of only a partial sulphuration of the whole, the copper has the best chance of passing into the ‘‘mat,” while the arsenic is the ae to be eliminated as such, or, in the presence of oxidants, as oxide.

Arsenides.—Although arsenides are amongst the commonest impurities of ores generally, ores consisting essentially of arsenides are comparatively rare. The most important of them are certain double arsenides of cobalt and

nickel, which in practice, however, are always contaminated with the arsenides or other compounds of foreign metals, such as iron, manganese, &c. The general mode of working these ores is as follows. The ore is first roasted by itself, when a part of the arsenic goes off as such and as oxide (both volatile), while a complex of lower arsenides remaius. This residue is now subjected to careful oxidizing fusion in the presence of glass or some other fusible solvent for metallic bases. The effect is that the several metals are oxidized away and pass into the slag (as silicates) in the following order, —first the manganese, secondly the iron, thirdly the cobalt, lastly (and very slowly) the nickel ; and at any stage the as yet unoxidized residue of arsenide assumes the form of a fused regulus, which sinks down through the slag as a ‘‘sneis.”” (This term, as will readily be understood, has the same meaning in reference to arsenidesas “mat” has in regard to sulphides.) By stopping the process at the right moment, we can produce a speis which contains only cobalt and nickel, and if at this stage also the flux is renewed we can further produce a speis which con- tains only nickel and a slag which substantially is one of cobalt only. The composition of the speises generally varies from AsMcz,. to AsMe,, where ‘‘ Me” means one atomic weight of mctal in toto, so that in general IMe=xFe+yCo+zNi, where e+y+tz=1. The siliceous cobalt is utilized as a blue pigment called ‘‘smalte”; the nickel-speis is worked up for metal, preferably by wet processes.

Minor Reagents. —Besides the oxidizing and reducing agents natu- rally present in the fire, and the ‘‘ fluxes” added for the production of slags, there are various minor reagents, of which the more im- portant may be noticed here. One—namely, metallic iron as a desulphurizer-—has already been referred to.

Oxide of lead, PbO (litharge), is largely used as an oxidizing agent. At a red heat, when it melts, it readily attacks all metals, except silver and gold, the general result being the formation of a mixed oxide and of a mixed regulus, a distribution, in other words, of both the lead and the metal acted on between slag and regulus. More important and more largely utilized is its action ou metallic sulphides, which, in general, results in the formation of three things besides sulphurous acid gas, viz., a mixed oxide slag includ- ing the excess of litharge, a regulus of lead (which may include bismuth and

other more readily reducible metals), and, if the litharge is not sufficient for a complete oxidation, a “mat” comprising the more readily sulphurizable metals. Oxide of lead, being a most powerful solvent for metallic oxides generally, is also

largely used for the separation of silver or gold from base metallic oxides.

Metallic lead is to metals generally what oxide of lead is to metallic oxides. 1t accordingly is available as a solvent for so to say licking up small particles of metal diffused throughout a mass of slag or other dross, and uniting them into one regulus. This naturally leads us to consider the process of ‘‘ cupellation,” which discounts the solvent powers of both metallic lead and its oxide. This process serves for the extraction of gold and silver from their alloys with base metals such as copper, antimony, &c. The first stcp is to fuse up the alloy with a certain proportion of lead, which is determined by the weight of base metal to be eliminated, and is always sufficient to produce a lead-alloy of lowfusing point. This alloy is heated on a shallow dish-shaped bed of bone earth to red- ness, and at this temperature subjected to the action of air. The base metals (copper, &c.) are oxidized away, the first portions as an infusible scum containing little oxide of lead, the latter in the form of a solution in molten litharge. Lead is, in general, less oxidiz- able than the other base metals; hence the last instalment of liquid litharge which runs off is pure, and the ultimately remaining regu- lus consists of silver and gold only. These latter may be separated by nitric acid or boiling oil of vitriol, which converts the silver into soluble salts and leaves the gold.

Oxide of iron, and also binoxide of manganese, are used for the decarburation of pig-iron. The oxygen of the reagent burns the carbon of the pig into carbonic acid, while the metal of the reagent becomes iron and FeO or MnO respectively, the oxides uniting with the silica added as such, or formed by the oxidation of the silicon of the pig, into a fusible slag,

Iron pyrites, FeS,, is employed for the preliminary concentration of traces of gold diffused throughout slags or base ores. The reagent, through the action of the heat, gives up one-half of its sulphur, which reduces part of the

metallic oxides present. The gold and silver unite with what is left of protosulphide of iron (FeS) into a inat, which is then worked up for the noble metals.

Fluxes. —Practically speaking, all ores are contaminated with more or less of gangne, which in general consists of infusible matter, and consequently, if left unheeded in the reduction of the metallic part of the ore, would retain more or less of the metal disseminated through it, or at best foul the furnace. To avoid this, the ore as it goes into the furnace is mixed with ‘‘ fluxes” so selected as to convert the gangue into a fusible ‘‘slag,” which readily runs down through the fuel with the regulus and separates from the latter. The quality and proportion of flux should, if pos- sible, be so chosen that the formation of the slag sets in only after the metal has been reduced and molten ; or else part of the basic oxide of the metal to be extracted may be dissolved by the slag and its reduction thus be prevented or retarded. Slags are not, as one might be inclined to think, a necessary evil; if an ore were free from gangue we should add gangue and flux from without to producea slag, because one of its functions is to form a layer on the regulus which protects it against the further action of the blast or furnace gases. Fluxes may be arranged under the threc heads of (1) fluor-spar (which is swi generis), (2) basic fluxes, and (8) acid fluxes.

Fluor-spar owes its name to the facility with which it fuses up at a red heat with silica, sulphates of lime and barium, and a few other infusible substances into homogeneous masses. It shows little tendency to dissolve basic oxides, such as lime, &c. One part of flnor-spar liqnefies about half a part of silica, four parts of sulphate of lime, and one and a half parts of sulphate of baryta. Upon these facts its wide application in metallurgy is founded.

Carbonate of soda (or potash) may be said to be the most power- ful of basic fluxes. It dissolves silica and all silicates into fusible glasses. On the other hand, borax may be taken as a type for the acid fluxes. Ata red heat, when it forms a viscid fluid, it readily dissolves up all basic oxides into fusible complex borates. Now the gangue of an ore in gencral consists either of some basic material such as carbonate of lime (or magnesia), ferric oxide, alumina, &c., or of silica (quartz) or some more or less acid silicate,

or else of a mixture of the two classes of bodies. So any kind of gangue might be liquefied by means of borax or by means of alkaline carbonate ; but neither of the two is used otherwise than for assay- ing; what the practical metal-smelter does is to add to a basie gangue the proportion of silica, and to an acid ore the proportion of lime, or, indirectly, of ferrous or perhaps manganous oxide, which it may need for the formation of a slag of the proper qualities. The slag must possess the proper degree of saturation. In other words, taking SiO, +MeO (where MeO means an equivalent of base) as a formula for the potential slag, » must have the proper value. If is too small, z.e., if the slag is too acid, it may dissolve up part of the metal tobe brought out as a silicate ; if x is too great, z.¢., the slag too basic, it may refuse to dissolve, for instance, the ferrous oxide which is meant to go into it, and this oxide will then be reduced, and its metal (iron in our example) contaminate the regulus. In reference to the problem under discussion, it is worth noting that oxides of lead and copper are more readily reduced to metals than oxide of iron Fe,0, is to FeO, the latter more readily to FcO than

FeO itself to metal, and FeO more readily to metal than manganons oxide is. Oxide of calcium (lime) is not reducible at all. The order of basicity in the oxides (thcir readiness to go into the slag) is precisely the reverse.

Most slags being, as we have scen, complex silicates, it is a most important problem of scientific metallurgy to determine the relations in this class of bodies between chemical composition on the one hand and fusibility and solvent power for certain oxides (CaO, FeO, SiO, &c.) on the other. Now the composition of a silicate can be stated in an infinite number of ways; but there must be one mode of formulation which reduces the law to its simplest terms. The mode adapted by metallurgists is something like the following. lf we start with the quantity H,Cl, of muriatic acid or the quantity H,S0, of sulphuric acid, it is clear that to convert eithcr into a normal salt we require such a quantity of base as will convert the Hi, of the acid eompletely into water; but the quantity of base that does so is that containing one atomic weight of oxygen. Hence it is reasonable to define the quantities K,O of potash,! Na.O of soda,} CaO of lime, MgO of magnesia, FeO of ferrous oxide, }.A1,0.(=alO) of alumina, 4Fe,0,(=feO) of ferrie oxide, as representing each ‘‘ one equivalent ” of base also in

reference to silica, although silica has a characteristically indefinite basicity. Most slags are alloys or com- pounds of silicates of Al,O, or Fe,Og, and of silicates of protoxides (CaO, &c.), hence their general composition is

n(RO + a#SiO,) + m[(fe or al)O+ xSi0,] «

This introduction will enable the reader to understand the

following mode of classifying and naming composition in silicates,

Nanie. Formula. Oxygen Ratio, z

Base. Acid. J, Singulo-silicates…..0….:...ss+re» 48i02+1M0 ihe Be i Pa TD. ABIESINGHEESY... ...020e005) 1M0 1 2 1 DED, TricSilicdtests.:.s.. s sesccverse eterna §Si0,+1M0 1 3 3

The names are the metallurgic ones ; scientific chemists designate Class J. as orthosilicates, Class 11. as metasilicates, Class III. as sesqui- silicates. In the formule M stands for K,, Ca, Fe, &c., or for al= Al, fe=2Fe, &c.; or, shortly, MO for one equivalent of base as above defined. It should be possible to represent each quality of a

silicate as a function of a, ~, and of the nature of the individual bases

that make up the RO and (fe or al) O respectively. Our actual knowledge falls far short of this possibility. The problem, in fact, is a very tough one, the more so as it is complicated by the existence of aluininates, compounds such as Al,03.38CaO, in whicli the alumina plays the part of acid, and the occasional existence of compounds of fluorides and silicates in certain slags. ‘The following notes on the fusibility of simple silicates are taken from Plattner’s researches,

Of the lime silicates, the tri-silicate melts at 2100° C., the bi- silicate at 2150°.

Magnesia silicates are most refractory. The bi-silicate and tri- silicate melt in the oxyhydrogen flame at 2250°.

Of manganous silicates, the easily fusible bi-silicate is yellow or red; the tri-silicate is more refractory.

Of cuprous (Cu,O) silicates, the bi-silicate is violet, and melts pretty easily; the singulo-silicate is red, dense, and rather refractory.

Cupric silicates, as slags, hardly exist,—the CuO being always reduced to at least Cu,O.

Lead silicates all melt readily into yellowish transparent glasses. But they have no standing as slags.

As regards the ferrous silicates, the singulo-silicate (orthosilicate) fuses at 1790° (this is about the composition of iron-puddling slag) ; the bi-silicate is less readily fusible.

Ferric silicates (unmixed) do not exist as slags,—the FeO, being reduced in the fire to 1FeO, although Fe,O, occasionally replaces part of the Al,O, in complex silicates.

Alumina silicates are all infusible in even the hottest furnace fires. They begin to soften in the oxyhydrogen flame at abont 2400°. But certain aluminates, for instance the salt 3 Ca0.1A1,0, according to Sefstro6m, melt at furnace heats.

The fusing points of mixtures of two simple silicates cannot be calculated from those of the components. In many cases it is lower than either of the latter two. ‘Thus for instance most magnesia- lime silicates fuse,—tho bi-silicate combination (Mg, Ca)OSiO, most readily.

Alumina silicates become fusible by addition of a sufficient pro- portion of silicate of lime at about 1918°. The singulo-silicate and bi-silicate combinations melt into grey glasses. Magnesia acts like lime, and so, in a more limited sense, do ferrous and manganous oxides ; but their double compounds with Al,O, and silica are more viscid when fused.

Plattner’s work is a bold attempt to deal synthetically with the problem here presented, but it does not go the length of even an approximate solution. No

one seems to have done much to con- tinue it; hence in the meautime the metallurgist has, for his

1 Few slags contain more than traees of alkalies,

-_

nt ea

guidance, to rely on the very numerous analyses which have been made of slags actually produced (by the rule of thumb) in successful metallurgical operations. For some of such slags also Plattner has determined the fusing points. He found for (1) Freiberg lead slag, 9RO, BalO, 8Si0,; oxygen-ratio, 3:4; melting-point at 1317° C. ; (2) Freiberg crude slag, 15RO, 3al0, 18S8i0,; oxygen-ratio, 1:1; melting-point at 1331° C. ; (8) Freiberg black-copper slag, 24FeO, Al,Oz 15Si0,; oxygen-ratio, 9 :10 ; melting-point at 1838° C.; (4) High-furnace slag, 6CaO, 3al0, 9Si0,; oxygen-ratio, 1:1; inelting-point at 1431° C.?

Metallurgic Assaying.—To assay an ore originally meant to execute a set of tentative experiments on a small scale in order to find out the proper mode of working it practically. But nowadays the term is always used in the sense of an analysis carried out to determine the money-value of an ore. For this purpose, in many cases it is sufficient to determine the percentages of the metals for which the ore is meant to be worked. But sometimes nothing short of a complete analysis will do. This holds more especially of ores ofiron. As this metal is cheap, the value of an ore containing it depends as much on the nature and relative quantities of the im- purities as on the percentage of metal. The proved absenceof sulphur and phosphorus may be worth more than an additional 5 per cent. of iron, which latter again would perhaps not compensate for the proved presence ofa large percentage of uncombined silica.

An assay to be of any value must start with a fair ee of the object of sale. The fulfilment of this condition in all cases is difficult. ‘The general method is, from say a given ship load of ore, to take out (say) half a ton of ore from

a large number of different places and to crush this large sample into small fragments of uniform size, which are well shovelled up together. From different parts of this ore-heap a sample of the second order—amounting to, say, 20 ib—is then drawn, and rendered more homogeneous by finer powder- ing and mixing. From this sample of the second (or perhaps froin one of the third) order quantities of 1 or 2 tb are bottled up for assaying. At the same time the moisture of the ore is determined, ona large scale, by some conventional method, such as the drying of 1 or 2 tb in an open basin at 100° C., and weighing of the residue as dry ore. This is done at the sampling place by the firms concerned. The assayer further pounds up and mixes his sample, and then pro- ceeds to determine the percentages of moisture and metal in his own way. He has always the choice between two methods, the dry and the wet. For the majority of gold or silver ores, and for cobalt and nickel ores almost as a rule, certain dry-process tests are preferred as the most exact analytically. In almost all other cases it may be said that the wet method is susceptible of the higher degree of pre- cision, yet even in some of these cases the old dry-process tests are preferred to the present day. For instance, all copper ores in the British Isles are sold by the result of the Swansea assay, a kind of imitation of the process of sulphureous copper-ore smelting; and this, singularly, is adhered to even in the case of such cuprifcrous materials as are worked by the wet way, although the Swansea assay is well known to lose about 1 per cent. of the copper present. A copper-smelter thercfore had better buy 5 per cent. than 10 per cent. copper-pyrites cinders, because in the first case he pays only for four-fifths, while in the laiter he must pay for nine-tenths of the copper present. ‘To compensate for this anomaly, empirical methods have been contrived for calculating prices. (W. D.)

METALS. The earliest evidence of a knowledge and use of metals is found in the prehistoric implements of the so-called Bronze and Iron ages. In the earliest periods of written history, however, we meet with a number of metals in addition to these two, The Old Testament mentions six metals—gold, silver, copper, iron, tin, and lead. The Greeks, in addition to these and to bronze, came also to know mercury; and the same set of metals, without additions, forms the list of the Arabian chemists of the 8th and of the Western chemists of the 13th cen- tury. During the 15th century Basilius Valentinus dis- covered antimony; he also speaks of zinc and bismuth, but

their individuality was established only at a later period. About 1730-40 the Swede Brand discovered arsenic and cobalt (the former is not reckoned a metal by modern chemists), while the Englishman Ward recognized the individuality of platinum. Nickel was discovered in 1774 by Cronstedt, manganese in 1774 by Scheele. The brothers D'Elhujart, in 1783, prepared tungsten ; Hjelm, in 1782, isolated molybdenum from molybdic oxide, where

1¥or further information on slags, see Berthier, Traité des essais par la vote séehe; Winkler, Exfahrunyssitze iber die Bildung der Sehlaeken, Freiberg, 1827; Plattner, Vorlesungen tiber allgemeine Hiittenkunde, i, 28 sq.; Percy, Aletallurgy.

its existence had been conjecturally asserted by Bergmann in 1781. Uranium, as a new element, was discovered by Klaproth in 1789 ; but his metallic " uranium," after having been accepted as a metal by all chemists until 1841, was then recognized as an oxide by Péligot, who subsequently isolated the true metal. Tellurium was discovered by Miiller von Reichenbach in 1782 (again by Klaproth in 1798) ; titanium, by Klaproth in 1795; chromium, by Vauquelin in 1797; tantalum, by Hatchett in 1801, and by Ekeberg in 1802. Palladium, rhodium, iridium, and osmium (which four metals always accompany platinum in its ores) were discovered, the first two by Wollaston in 1803, the other two by a number of chemists; but their peculiarity was established chiefly by Smithson Tennant.

After Davy, in 1807 and 1808, had recognized the alkalies and alkaline earths as metallic oxides, the existence of metals in all basic earths became a foregone conclusion, which was verified sooner or later in all cases. But the discovery of aluminium by Wohler in 1828, and that of magnesium by Bussy in 1829, claim special mention. Cadmium, a by no means rare heavy metal, was discovered only in 1818, by Stromeyer.

Of the large number of discoveries of rare metals which have been made in more recent times only a few can be mentioned, as marking new departures in research or offer- ing other special points of interest. In 1861 Bunsen and Kirchhoff, by means of the method of spectrum analysis, which they had

worked out shortly. before, discovered two new alkali-metals which they called cesium and rubidium. By means of the same method Crookes, in 1861, discovered thallium ; Reich and Richter, in 1863, indium ; and Lecoq de Boisbaudran, in 1875, gallium. The existence of the last-named metal had been maintained, theoretically, by Mendelejeff, as early as 1871. The existence of vanadium was proved in 1830 by Sefstrém; but what he, and sub- sequently Berzelius, looked upon as the element was, in 1867, proved to be really an oxide by Roscoe, who also succeeded in isolating the true metal.

The development of earlier notions on the constitution of metals and their genetic relation to one another forms the most interesting chapter in the history of chemistry (see AtcuEMy). What modern science has to say on the matter is easily stated: all metals properly so called (i. all metals not alloys) are elementary substances ; hence, chemically speaking, they are not “constituted ” at all, and no two can be related to each other genetically in any way whatever. Our scientific instinct shrinks from embracing this proposition as final; but in the meantime it must be accepted as correctly formulating our ignorance on the subject. All metallic elements agree in this that they form each at least one basic oxide, or, what comes to the same thing, one chloride, stable in opposition to liquid water. This at once suggests an obvious definition of metals as a class of substances, but the definition would be highly artificial and objectionable on principle, because when we speak of metals we think, not of their accidental chemical relations, but of a certain sum of mechanical and physical properties which unites them all into one natural family. What these properties are we shall now endeavour to explain.

All metals, when exposed in an inert atmosphere to a sufficient temperature, assume the form of liquids, which all present the following characteristic properties. They are (at least practically) non-transparent ; they reflect light in a peculiar manner, producing what is called “metallic lustre.” When kept in non-metallic vessels they take the shape of a convex meniscus. These liquids, when exposed to higher temperatures, some sooner others later, pass into vapours. What these vapours are like is not known in many cases, since, as a rule, they can be produced only at

very high temperatures, precluding the use of transparent vessels, Silver vapour is blue, potassium vapour is green, many others (mercury vapour, for instance) are colourless. The liquid metals, when cooled down sufficiently, some at lower others at higher temperatures, freeze into compact solids, endowed with the (relative) non-transparency and the lustre of their liquids. These frozen metals in general form compact masses consisting of aggregates of crystals belonging to the regular or rhombic or (more rarely) the quadratic system. But in many cases the crystals are so closely packed as to produce an apparent absence of all structure. Compared with non-metallic solids, they in general are good conductors of heat and of electricity. But their most characteristic, though not perhaps their most general, property is that they combine in themselves the apparently incompatible properties of elasticity and rigidity on the one hand and plasticity on the other. To this remarkable combination of properties more than to anything else the ordinary metals owe their wide applica- tion in the mechanical arts. In former times a high specific gravity used to be quoted as one of the characters of the genus; but this no longer holds, since we have come to know of a whole series of metals which float on water. Let us now proceed to see to what degree the mechanical and physical properties of the genus are developed in the several individual metals.

Non-Transparency.—This, in the case of even the solid metals, is perhaps only a very low degree of transparency. In regard to gold this has been proved to be so; gold leaf, or thin films of gold produced chemically on glass plates, transmit light with a green colour. On the other hand, those infinitely thin films of silver which can be produced chemically on glass surfaces are absolutely opaque. Very thin films of liquid mercury, according to Melsens, transniit light with a violet-blue colour; also thin films of copper are said to be translucent. Other metals, so far as we know, have not been more exactly investigated in this direction.

Colour.—Gold is yellow ; copper is red; silver, tin, and some others are pure white; the majority exhibit some modification or other of grey.

feflexion of Inght.—Polished metallic surfaces, like those of other solids, divide any incident ray into two parts, of which one is refracted while the

other is reflected, — with this difference, however, that the former is completely absorbed, and that the latter, in regard to polarization, is quite differently affected! The degree of absorption is different for different metals. According to Jamin, the remaining intensity, after one and ten successive perpen- dicular reflexions respectively from the metal-mirrors named, is as follows (original intensity = 1) :—

Silver. Steel,

Speculum Metal.

IL Je, |] 10) Uk.

Th Uk |] LO Ue. IL 18s, || aly 1k

IREW mete oserciesscceeee 929 | “478 | *692 | °035 | 609 | -007
WWCWOW ic. Sees ress. ‘905 | °839 | *682 | -010 | °599 | -006 ho codon
caRasneond 867 | °242 | *599 | -006 | ‘599 | -006

This shows the great superiority of silver as a reflecting medium, especially in the case of repeated reflexion.

Crystalline Form.—Most (perhaps all) metals are capable of crystallization, and in most cases isolated crystals can be produced by judiciously managed partial freezing. The crystals belong to the following systems :—regular system —silver, gold, palladium, mercury, copper, iron, lead; quadratic system—tin, potassium; rhombic system—anti- mony, bismuth, tellurium, zinc, magnesium.

Structure.—Perhaps all metals, in the shape which they assume in freezing, are crystalline, only the degree of

1 This may be the cause of the peculiarity of metallic lustre.

ALS

visibility of the crystalline arrangement is very different in different metals, and even in the same metal varies according to the slowness of solidification and other circumstances.

Of the ordinary metals, antimony, bismuth, and zine may be mentioned as exhibiting a very distinct crystalline structure: a bar-shaped ingot readily breaks, and the erystal faces are distinctly visible on the fracture. Tin also is crystalline: a thin bar, when bent, ‘creaks” audibly from the sliding of the crystal faces over one another ; but the bar is not easily broken, and exhibits an apparently non-crystalline fracture.—Class I.

Gold, silver, copper, lead, aluminium, cadmium, iron (pure), nickel, and cobalt are practically amorphous, the crystals (where they exist) being so closely packed as to produce a virtually homogeneous mass.—Class IT.

The great contrast in apparent structure between cooled ingots of Class I. and of Class IJ. appears, however, to be owing chiefly tothe fact that, while the latter crystallize in the regular system, metals of Class J. form rhombic or quadratic crystals. Regular crystals expand equally in all directions; rhombic and quadratic ores expand differently in different directions. Hence, supposing the crystals immediately after their formation to be in absolute contact with one another all round, then, in the case of Class IJ., such con- tact will be maintained on cooling, while in the case of Class I. the contraction along a given straight line will in general have different values in any two neighbouring crystals, and the crystals consequently become, however slightly, detached from one another. The crystalline structure which exists on both sides becomes visible only in the metals of the first class, and only there manifests itself as brittleness,

Closely related to the structure of metals is their degree of plasticity” (susceptibility of being constrained into new forms without breach of continuity). This term of course includes as special cases the qualities of ‘ malle- ability” (capability of being flattened out under the hammer) and “ductility” (capability of being drawn into wire) ; but it is well at once to point out that these two special qualities do not always go parallel to each other, for this reason amongst others that ductility in a higher degree than malleability is determined by the tenacity of a metal. Hence tin and lead, though very malleable, are little ductile. The quality of plasticity is developed to very different degrees in different metals, and even in the same species it depends on temperature, and may be modified by mechanical or physical operations. A bar of zinc, for instance, as obtained

by casting, is very brittle; but when heated to 100° or 150° C. it becomes sufficiently plastic to be rolled into the thinnest sheet or to be drawn into wire. Such sheet or wire then remains flexible after cooling, the originally only loosely cohering crystals having got intertwisted and forced into absolute contact with one another,—an explanation supported by the fact that rolled zinc has a somewhat higher specific gravity (7‘2) than the original ingot (6°9). The same metal, when heated to 205° C., becomes so brittle that it can be powdered in a mortar. Pure iron, copper, silver, and other metals are easily drawn into wire, or rolled into sheet, or flattened under the hammer. But all these operations render the metals harder, and detract from their plasticity. Their original softness can be restored to them by “annealing,” z.e., by heating them to redness and then quenching them in cold water. In the case of iron, however, this applies only if the metal is perfectly pure. If it contains a few parts of carbon per thousand, the annealing process, instead of softening the metal, gives it a “temper,” meaning a higher degree of hardness and elasticity (see below).

What we have called plasticity must not be mixed up

with the notion of softness, which means the degree of facility with which the plasticity of a metal can be dis- counted. ‘Thus lead is far softer than silver, and yet the latter is by far the more plastic of the two. The now famous experiments of Tresca (Comptes Rendus, lix. 754) show that the plasticity of certain metals at least goes considerably farther than had before been supposed. He operated with lead, copper, silver, iron, and some other metals. Round disks made of these substances were placed in a closely fitting cylindrical cavity drilled in a block of steel, the cavity having a circular aperture of two or four centimetres below. By means of an hydraulic press, applied to a superimposed piston, a pressure of 100,000 kilos was made to act upon the disks, when the metal was seen to “flow” out of the hole like a viscid liquid. In spite of the immense rearrangement of parts there was no breach of continuity. What came out below was a compact cylinder with a rounded bottom, consisting of so many layers superimposed upon one another. Parallel experiments with layers of dough or sand plus some connecting material proved that the particles in all cases

moved along the same tracks as would be followed by a flowing cylinder of liquid. Of the better known metals potassium and sodium are the softest; they can be kneaded between the fingers like wax. After these follow first thallium and then lead, the latter being the softest of the metals used in the arts. Among these the softness decreases in about the following order :— lead, pure silver, pure gold, tin, copper, aluminium, platinum, pure iron. As liquidity might be looked upon as the ne plus ultra of softness, this is the right place for stating that, while most metals, when heated up to their melting points, pass pretty abruptly from the solid to the liquid state, platinum and iron first assume, and throughout a long range of temperatures retain, a condition of viscous semi-solidity which enables two pieces of them to be “welded” together by pressure into one continuous mass. Potassium and sodium might probably be welded if their surfaces could be kept clear of oxide.

According to Prechtl, the ordinary metals, in regard to the degree of facility or perfection with which they can be hammered flat on the anvil, rolled out into sheet, or drawn into wire, form the following descending series :—

Hammering. Rolling into Sheet. Drawing into Wire. Lead. Gold. Platinum. Tin. Silver Silver Gold Copper. Iron.

Zine Tin. Copper Silver Lead Gold. Copper. Zine Zinc Platinum. Platinum. Tin. Tron, Tron. Lead.

To give an idea of what can be done in this way, it may be stated that gold can be beaten out to leaf of the thick- ness of zg5, mm.; and that platinum, by judicious work, can be drawn into wire ggjo5 mm. thick.

By the hardness of a metal we mean the resistance which it offers to the file or to the engraver’s tool. Taking it in this sense, it does not necessarily measure, e.g., the resistance of a metal to abrasion by friction. Thus, for instance, 10 per cent. aluminium bronze is scratched by an edge-tool made of ordinary steel as used for knife-blades. And yet it has been found that the sets of needles used for perforating postage stamps last longer if made of aluminium bronze than they do if made of steel.

Elasticity.—Al\ metals are elastic to this extent that a change of form, brought about by stresses not exceeding certain limit values, will disappear on the stress being removed. Strains exceeding the “limit of elasticity” result in permanent deformation or (if suffi- ciently great) in rupture. Where this limit lies is in no case pre- cisely known. According to Wertheim! (who has done more for our knowledge of the subject than any one else) and Hodgkinson,

1 Annales de Chimie et de Physique [iii.], vol. xii.

the real law seems to be pretty much as indicated by the two curves on the accompanying diagram, where, in reference to a metallie wire, stretched by an appended weight, the abscissa always means the numerical value P of the weight, the ordinate of the upper eurve the total elonga- tion caused by P, the ordinate of the lower curve that part of the elong- ation which re- mains when P is removed, so that the piece of the ordinate between the two eurves gives the tempor- ary (‘‘elastic’”’) ex- pansion. From P=0 a to a somewhat indefi- 6~

nite point (a or A) ° = – x both curves are nearly straight lines, the lower almost coinciding in its beginning with the axis of abscisse ; from that point onwards these two curves approach each other, and at a short distance from the point of rupture they rapidly converge towards intersection. For any value of P which lies fairly on the safe side of A, we have ap- proximately

=—€ ’

where A means the clastic (or substantially the total) expansion, J the length, and g the square section of the wire or cylindrical bar operated upon. The reciprocal of e(viz. E=1/e) is called the “modulus of elasticity.”

Wertheim has determined this constant for a large number of metals and alloys. Heused three methods: one was to ineasure the elongations produced, in a wire of given dimensions, by a succession of charges; the other two consisted in causing a measured bar to give off a musical note by (a) longitudinal and (6) transversal vibra- tion, and counting the vibrations

per second. The following table gives some of his results. Column 2 gives the constant E for millimetre and kilogramme. Hence 1000/E is the elongation in millimetres per metre length per kilo, Column 8 shows the charge causing a permanent elongation of 0°05 mm. per metre,—which, for practical purposes, he takes as giving the limit of elasticity ; column 4 gives the breaking strain. Values of E in square brackets [5 are derived from vibration experiments; the rest from direct measurements of elongations. Numbers in round brackets ( ) do not necessarily refer to the same specimen as the other data.

For Wire of 1 Square mm. Seetion, Weight (in Kilos) eausing

Name E. Permanent Elongation | Breakage. of yobs: Lead, (raw …...:.0cssssscesessssssesssseteseees 1,803 0°25 21 ao (AMMB AIO saat sisaansnngeetnaeiere 1,727 0-20 8 Tin, UTAWN vsccccccserssecsesersceressessereeree| [3,928] 0°45 (2°45) go ATTICA] cisccecscccrscnsesersecssncessaans [4,060] 0:20 Cadmium, Craw …..scccscerssrserserscceece [5,757] 2°24 an BNMEAIC ....02.c0.00000 000 [4,777] Gold, Graw…....c.00 ,132 13°5 27 », annealed 5,585 3°0 10 Silver, drawn….. 7,358 11°38 29 », annealed…..... 7,141 2°6 16 Zine, pure, east in mould. 9,021 Zine, OTCINALY, ATAWN.....0.-seeseerereeenes 8,735 0°75 13 m is MiNGA|d ss s6..ccsisceaaeees [9,467] 1:00 Pelladita) GEAWRsaccsiesseassesscocscenees| LE 75D 18 ; ANNEAL... .....00-ceseersevecee 9,789 under 6 27 COPPED), GAWD ecie.s0. escenevase’ voseanvaeses 12,449 12 40 nm ANNCALE .....ceserseeersereeeseeerore 10,519 under 3 30 Platinum wire, medium thickness,) GAAS, ra wsiniatsoisaxoenacatsvnensvcenes tees f aps ie) a jy. BRNCAIED verses seceacaerss sane 15,518 (14) Platinum wire, thick, drawn.. 15,987 34 – ¥ 15,622 93 Iron,? drawn….. 20,869 82 a 61 5, 2 annealed.. 20,794 under 5 47 Niekel,? drawn… §x6l1 CODES” 4 exeseewnteencesseennnvsncenieata 2×61 PAT TRAE ei grwanssansexenssiaeneevcsuabaveaties 7,040 Aluminium bronze 4…..00ccccecseessecees 10,700 FESTUS aie cies etinsianine’s sostios sethsion Saas yeKon 8,543 German SUVEr G)esnssersess sweeter cores) LOSS

The above numbers may be assumed to hold for temperatures from 15° to 20°C. Wertheim executed determinations also at other tem- peratures; but, as his numbers do not appear to reveal the true

2 From Du Brery. 3 ‘Approximate, by H. St Clair Deville. 4 From deflexion of hammered bar of 5 min. thiekness, charged in the middle ; determined by W. Dittmar.

5 Composition, ZnCug (Wertheim). 6 Composition, ZnyCu,3Ni; (Wertheim). XVI

oe

relations between E and temperature, we quote the results of Kohlrausch and Loomis, who found the following relations between the modulus E, for 0° C. and the value E; for +2° C.:—

fron: Ez=E(1—* 000483 ¢—-0000001222).

Copper: E¢=Eo(1 —* 000572 ¢—-0000002822).

Brass: Ez =Eo(1—* 000485 ¢—-0000013622). Thus, for these three metals at least, the value of E diminishes, when temperature increases, at pretty much the same rate per degree of temperature.

Specific Gravity.—This varies in metals from °594 (lithium) to 22°48 (osmium), and in one and the same species is a function of temperature and of previous physical and mechanical treat- ment. It has in general one value for the powdery metal as obtained by reduction of the oxide in hydrogen below the melting point of the metal, anothcr for the metal in the state which it assumes spontaneously on freezing, and this latter value again, in general, is modified by hammering, rolling, or wire-drawing, &c. These mechanical operations do not necessarily add to the density ; stamping, it is true, does so necessarily, but rolling or drawing occasionally causes a diminution of the density. Thus, for instance, chemically pure iron in the ingot has the specific gravity 7°844; when it is rolled out into thin sheet, the

value falls to 7°6; when drawn into thin wire, to 7‘75 (Berzelius). The follow- ing table gives the specific gravities of all metals (except a few very rare ones) according to the most trustworthy modern de- terininations. Where special statements are not made, the numbers may be assumed to hold for the ordinary temperature (15° to 17° or 20°C.), referred to water of the same temperature (specific gravity =1) asa standard, aud to hold for the natural frozen metal.

Name of Metal. Speclfie Gravity. Authority WAGLIMIIPS, :.ccarceenes eeccseeotsesessieens SOL Bunsen. EGRASSIGIN srvscsecscsvacesvecsesscadssatene 875 Baumhauer, OCU besscaiscessscsest coscssserscsenncees “9735 5 RULDUGMU Neeser terdtverceener re eesecnse 1°52 Bunsen. Calcium …... 1°578 Bunsen and Matthiesen. Magnesium.. | 1°743 Bunsen, (ORIRHTITS << .sc.ssvcosseesces 168 Setterberg. BEL IMUMA,;s:cavtecessssetecsesseanstseesd 2°1 Debray. Strontium…..... pasonoonO paneersecieu arses MNCLO Aluminium, pure, ingot…....., 2°583 at 4° Mallet, 1880. Aluminium, ordinary, hammered] 2°67 Bartum,....sseecesee Bebosthocioncrnacce ..| over 4° Clarke. ZAvcOniUIM:.....+5. 4°15 Troost. Vanadium, powder 55 Roscoe. Gal… 6.655006 vee| OL Lecog de Boisbaudran. Lanthanum…..... Ria sivasswecececereed 6°163 on DIG ae HAIN. .cscnssss.scescesessoisess sees 6°544 Hillebrandt and Norton, OHIUIN, sceversssesccrcerearcstars Secucce 6°728 ay A PATHCIMROMY,. .)7.cc25.cecce-nssecr nocerens «| 6°715 at 16° Marchand and Scheerer, ; COV oye Webi aasercaansonnninn.,cocpacrcncn | 6°81 Wohler. ZANG MINTZ Obes. scssetecseceteceresnsen ces | 67915 Karsten, 39, ONECUOUUN, senceammsclessscecceesse|| MLCe Manganese…....000 7:14 to 7:2 Brunner, Tin, See neRali ts ale cimas | 7°29 to 7299 Various authorities. » crystallized by galvanic cur: cae eee rent from solutions…..... Gude Weds Mailer. ANGUUN over ccsesersesincssercsseerssesssce 7°42 Richter. Iron, chemically pure, ingot…. 7T°844 Berzelius. jy) UNINNSHEGiie… «estteeas ese os 76 an » Wrought, high quality…..... 78 to 7°9 INDCIG] te Otis oscccssscrecsssesvouseeses 8°279 Riehter. » forged…... 8°666 ” Cadmium, ingot…... 8°546 Schroder. ” hammercd 8°667 op COR cccassceesssnesteonedencccasanes 85 to 87 Molybdenum, containing 4 to 5 : per cent. Of CAarboll…..c.ece } oe a

CoppelnuatlGrescarsascentnerssieneees 8°94 te NCHBibe castuecuenscecee sac steeeene 8°92 Marchand and Schcerer. » wire or thin sheet… 8°94 to 8°95 ” ” » @lectrotype, pure…. 8°945 Hampe, [iH CATE cs paecoognesnonoopacuapauoinscatcoan 9°823 at 12° Holzmann, Silver, cast…..... 10°4 to 10°5 ” 1, Stamped 10°57 G. Rose. Lead, very slowly frozen…..... 11°254 Deville. » quickly frozen in cold water} 11°363 “p Paladin rersssesscoressecee-esoerstiets|ldetuntiecccs Deville and Debray. Shacibbleseeneisoncnac ..| 11°86 Crookes, Rhodium…..... Sod | PL Bunsen. . Ruthenium…..... —| 12°26 at 0° Deville and Debray. Mercury, liquid. we] 13°595 at 0° H. Kopp. 5 SOIC)... «000 Ssoreesucwecsssoeus 14°39 below-—-40° Tungsten, compact, by H, from 16°54 Chloride Vapour…....0.ceeeee ‘ 2 Wohler, 1855. as reduced by hydro- : gen, DON GISG pentoonoanacsoonsncce ; fe a LOR EST HEE ce nacononneooaonsqonpnooGodDoNDoNG 18°33 Péligot, 1868. Gold, ingot… «| 19-265 at 13° Matthiesen. 49) SUAINIPE.., 00… .eccccesccsersvers 19°31 to 19°34 G. Rose. owder, precipitated by , ae » ferrous sulphate…..... i 19°55 to 1972 ” Platinum, pure 21°46 }Ulab ia) SeAcnesopaso 60nd «| 22°40 (O)S 2018 00 ga ogncconnncqnesobanoadacaEnnsonacde 22°477 Deville and Debray,1876.

Thermite Properties.—The specific heats of most metals have been determined very carefully by Regnault. The general result is that, conformably with Dulong and Petit’s law, the ‘‘atomic heats” all come to very neatly the same value (of about 6°4); 7.2, atomic weight by specific heat=6°4. Thus we have for silver by theory 6°4/108 = °0593, and by experiment 0570 for 10° to 100° C.

A L®

The expansion by heat varies greatly. The following table gives the linear expansions from 0° to 100°C. according to Fizeau (Comptes Rendus, \xviii. 1125), the length at 0° being taken as unity.

Name of Metal. ie epi

Platinum, cast “000 907 Gold, cast… “001 451 Silver, cast,..... “001 936 Copper, native, “001 708 CoOpperntantilCial occ… ceveveccetencseernaceersccssmacveceswesnerasceovles seeresie “001 869

Tron; soft Washieed TormeleCtrOM AGNES, cccccccnrecsesssesnrescaseusensen “001 228 » reduced by hydrogen and Conipressed…….....csssesseeeseee “001 208 Custisteel) Emplish annewlediccsessscsrersascr:scceasssesecscesvecassscccesces “001 110 Bismuth, in the direction of the @xi8…....:—0.0,-scccserescsecesecocsens “OOL 642 ay AL TASES LUOTARU Stee. senses aseessstirscsccatncesscsiscesisay sss ‘001 239

of mean expansion, calculated,.....cscccccseccesesses 001 374 Tin, of Malacca, compressed powder… “002 269 TGA, GOSH cscs: cescseessssseeeseseeeeesds 002 948 Zinc, distilled, compressed pOwder,.....0c2eseeeeeerere ‘002 905 Cadmium, distilleu, compressed powder…....0….5 003 102 ATUNMNTUINICABE.. nscssccacrsencepcescsssssssesseeiancseerectirer 002 336 Brass (71°5 per cent. copper, 28°5 per CeMt. ZINC)....-..sececceeeceeees “001 879 Bronze (86°3 per cent. copper, 9°7 per cent. tin, 4°0 per cent. zine).| °001 802

The coefficient of expansion is constant for such metals only as crystallize in the regular system ; the others expand differcntly in the directions of the different axes. To eliminate this source of uncertainty these metals were cmployed as compressed powders. The cubical expansion of mercury from 0° to 100° C. is °018153 =rsler (Regnault).

Fusibility and Volatility. —The fusibility in different metals is very different, as shown by the following table, which, besides including all the fusing points (in degrees C.) of metals which have been determined nunierically, indicates those of a selection of other metals by the positions assigned to them in the table. Of the temperatures given, those above (say) 500°C. must be looked upon as rough approximations. ~

Fusing Point.

Name of Metal. Authority. IMGNCUI\ieetescsidcteeswecsterteasnesccnenerectmers pC —58°8 B. Stewart. Cesium… +26 to 27 Setterberg. (CGI biG Nogmapeopoooonoce racoctoncmnacuodgarEccodsndan 30°1 L. de Boisbaudran. RaDidium,.....-..0…s52-2+0s° 38°5 Bunsen. POtASSIUM

….00….cceoserersenecceeeecrscnansaneees 62°5 9 Sodium…. 95°5 3 Lithium.. 180°0 ?

i Fay bSO09 Baasgoonncnnonnosonn6edo 176 Richter (?) J Ro pracbobpepmeqoadsnbpdedoeqcOOcHERncoobnespaCIOSs0n 228 Rudberg. V8} 150010 bsosecsncgndascor ace ede) Oop papb gos UOC00NCG 264 i Hielllum’.....0.+6. 290 Lamy. GHATITUs ccecscrecceresteserssscntcesesaderesrnas 320 Rudberg. Lead… 825 ” Antimony 425 ZANC..... 415 Person. Be Cope auacc COceee Reevtrecesasrernene 412 Daniell. Incipient Red Heat…....0.s0…000 525 Pouillet. MOG GIVGS ILE enssnssrecraasnentssssneeses PAUMEAVUT Weve cccrscerssccceses serscrisiasesessiesne.s ONE RYRIRED THGQE ct-cccsccrevastsnese 700 Pouillet. SUVers.cccecsccs A ietaeacitacgs tee toeeesecetentareets 1,040 Becquerel. (El els arasennarccnocngcniboneradbondaabdcoascanonsonnd 1,100 Yellow Heat.. ea 1,100 Pouillet. (OU) NSP ocoenasnocncoon ae 1,200 Tron, WYOMBHt…....0ecceceee pombdGeC Meceeereses 1,300 to 1,400 pp ecelhannc.01 Ne] URES yeaceooeee oneacponoancoan higher (070) l Reereooentatdocdocoaccnoeransnoacoococaocousoec. 1,400 Nickel….. einiaee 1,600 Uranium ? Dazzling Wht Heat, ...ccsecssoes 1,500 to 1,600 | Pouillet.

Palladium is barely fusible at the highest wind-furnace heat. The following melt only in the oxyhydrogen flame:—

DET GUTAUMEI oe ence eles slociseclunsislensienisiecaiucleveises esis 2,000 TOO COIES aermeppoandonesedoud Cococoogoconssorsonne%0 Rhodium. as UUIMOTIUTM es ancctec seine scosaeens celts esanes = scscne Max. Temp. of Oxyhydrogen Flame…. 2,870 Bunsen.!

Osmium does not melt at 2,870”, «.¢., is as yet infusible.

Of the volatility of metals we have little precise knowledge ; only the following boiling points are known numerically :—

Name of Metal. Boiling Point. Authority. MGR CUGVareaiasernssceraneces rececscdesessssreuntaes 357°3 Regnault. GAG sc5- sic cesseecoscccasaccsesesescsseunrane 860 Deville and Troost.

ZiNC®....5.. 1,040 7 7 Potassium below 1,040 | Dewar and Dittmar. SOCUUL araeniencaesntscteraMettnscerredusstsiees above 1,040 0) ays

For practical purposes the volatility of metals may be stated as follows:—

1. Distillable below redness: mercury.

2. Distillable at red heats: cadmium, alkali metals, zinc, mag- nesium.

3. Volatilized more or less readily when heated beyond their fusing points in open crucibles: antimony (very readily), lead, bismuth, tin, silver.

1 Bunsen, Jahresb. f. Chem, 1867, p. 41; Phil. Mag., xxiv. 489.

MERALS

4. Barely so: gold, (copper). ;

5, Practically non-volatile : (copper), iron, nickel, cobalt, alu- minium; also lithium, barium, strontium, and calcium.

In the oxyhydrogen flaine silver boils, forming a blue vapour, while platinum volatilizes slowly, and osmium, though infusible, very readily.

Latent Heats of Liquefaction—Of these we know little. The fol- lowing numbers are due to Person—ice, it may be stated, being 80.

Latent

Metal. ee

NPOMCIY cocsecsessevevserceeeeeeeeeo| 2-82 || Cadmium ae. 5°37 || Silver.. 12°4 ZNQOl sss

Metal.

TBSg 7 1h annon enoocepapeeeaeenmenscoca

Of the latent heats of vaporization only that of mercury has been determined,—by Marignac, who found it to be 103 to 106 units.

Conductivity.—Conductivity, whether thermic or electric, is very differently developed in different metals; and, as an exact know- ledge of these conductivities is of great scientific and practical importance, much attention has been given to their numerical determination. The following are the modes in which the two conductivities have been defined as quantities.

1. Thermic.—Imagine one side (1) of a metallic plate, D units thick, to be kept at the constant temperature ¢,, the other (II) at t, After a sufficient time each point between I and II will be at a constant intermediate temperature, and in every unit of time a constant quantity Q of heat will pass from any circumscribed area S on I to the opposite area S on II, according to the equation

—, Sti = #2) eI.

1 is called the (internal) conductivity of the metal the plate is made of. It is, strictly speaking, a function of ¢, and ¢,; but within a given small interval of temperatures it may be taken as a constant. ;

2. Electric. —When a given constant battery is closed successively by different wires of the same sort, then, according to expericuce, the strength I of the current (as measured for instance by the heat- equivalent of the electricity flowing through the circuit in unit of time) is in accordance with the equation

A/I=1+rl/s ,

where 7 is the length and s the square section of the wire, while A is a constant which, for our purpose, need not be defined in regard to its physical meaning; r measures the specific resistance of the particular metal. Supposing a certain silver wire on the one hand ani a certain copper wire on the other, when substituted for each other, to produce currents of the same strength, we have

11)/8\=Pale /325 whence

1) [72=8y19/(s 9h) =k where & is the computed value of the ratio on the right-hand side. Hence, taking 7, the resistance of copper, as unity, we have 7,=k, 1.¢., k gives us the specific resistance of silver, that of copper being taken=1. In this relative manner resistances are usually measured, silver generally being taken as the standard of compari- son. Supposing the relative resistance of a metal to be R, the re- ciprocal TR is called its ‘‘ electric conductivity.” For the same metal R varies with the temperature, the higher temperature cor- responding to the higher resistance. The following table gives the electric conductivities of a number of metals as determined by Matthiesen, and the relative internal thermic conductivities of (nominally) the same mctals as determined by Wiedemann and Franz, with rods about 5 mm. thick, of which one end was kept, at 100° C., the rest of the rod in a ‘‘ vacuum” (of 5 mm, tension) at 12°C. Matthiesen’s results, except in the two cases noted, are from his memoir in Pogg. Ann., 1858, ciii. 428.

Relative Conductivities.

Metais, Electric. Thermic, Copper, commercial, No. 3 18-8° 5 i INO MO Meee. 22°6 » chemically pure, hard drawn °C 2830 Gon mnocncacg cD EEO EERE EE eee “748 Gold, pure 21°8 “548 » absolutely pur 19°0 ESTAS SMe sec sssecessiccacees “25 Tin, pure 21°0 154 Pianoforte wire 20°4 PRDIRE Glneanste ten sect cce sv cocécsesveucoressscaverwesasavace 101 Baa meee ees cc scccesvensvcsooovesaeunivnsees “108 Lead, pure c Wes 079 Platinum 105 ,, 20°% “094 German silver 0767 ,, 18:7 073 Bismuth os 0119 ,, 13°8 Aluminium “196 ,, 19:6 Mereury, “cOOTaO SAAC SAREE 0163 ,, 22°8 PUI MGI MPNLICMMO Geet c ror cevetesessssezsevseseececes.a.coacvasaoses 1-000 0 1:000

1 Published in 1860, aud declared by Matthiesen to be more exact than the old numbers.

Going by Matthiesen’s old numbers, we find them to agree fairly with Wiedemann and Frauz’s thermic conductivities, which supports an obvious

and pretty generally received proposition. Matthie- sen’s new numbers for gold and copper, however, destroy the har- mony.

Magnetie Properties.—Iron, nickel, and cobalt are the only metals which are attracted by the magnet and can beeome magnets themselves. But in regard to their power of retaining their mag- netism none of them comes at all up to the compound metal steel. See MAGNETISM.

Chemical Changes.

The chemical changes which metals are liable to may be classified according to the loss of metallicity involved in them. We will adopt this principle and begin with the action of metals on metals, which, as experience shows, always leads to the formation of truly metallic compounds.

Any two or more metals when mixed together in the liquid state unite chemically, or at least molecularly, in this sense that, although the mixture, on standing (hot), may separate into layers, each layer is a homogeneous solution or “alloy” of, in general, all the components in one another. With binary combinations the following two cases may present themselves :—(1) the two metals mix permanently in any proportion ; or (2) either of the two metals refuses to take up more than a certain limit-proportion of the other ; hence a random mixture of the two metals will, in general, part into two layers,—one a solution of A in B, the other a solution of B in A. The first case presents itself very frequently; it holds, for instance, for gold and silver, gold and copper, copper and silver, lead and tin, and any alloy of these two and bismuth. Many other cases might be quoted. A good example of the second case is lead and zinc, either of which dissolves only a very small percentage of the other. In the preparation of an alloy we need not start with the components in the liquid state; the several metals need only be heated together in the same crucible when, in general, the liquid of the more readily fusible part dissolves the more refractory compo- nents at temperatures far below their fusing points. Molten lead, for instance, as many a tyro in chemical analysis has come to learn to his cost, readily runs through a platinum crucible at little more than its own fusing point.

A homogeneous liquid alloy, when solidified suddenly, say by pouring it drop by drop into cold water, necessarily yields an equally homogeneous solid. But it may not be so when it is allowed to freeze gradually. If, in this case, we allow the process to go a certain way, and then pour off the still liquid portion, the frozen part generally presents itself in the shape of more or less distinct crystals; whether this happens or not, the rule is that its composition differs from that of the mother liquor, and consequently from that of the original alloy. This phenomenon of “liquation,” as it is called, is occasionally utilized in metallurgy for the approximate separation of metals from one another ;? but in the manipulation of alloys made to be used as such it may prove very inconvenient. It does so, for instance, in the case of the copper-silver alloy which our coins are made of ; in a large ingot of such sterling silver the core may contain as much as 0°3 per cent. of silver more than the outer shell.

The existence of crystallized alloys, as the phenomenon of liquation generally, strongly suggests the idea that alloys generally are mixtures, not of their elementary com- ponents, but of chemical compounds of these elements with one another, associated possibly with uncombined remnants of these. This notion is strongly supported by the fact that the formation of many alloys involves an obvious evolution of heat and a decided modification in what one would presume to be the properties of the corresponding

2 A good illustration is afforded by the process of Pattinson as used for concentrating the silver in argentiferous lead. See Leap.

mixture. The case of sodium amalgam may be quoted as a forcible illustration, What goes by this name in laboratories is an alloy of two to three parts of sodium with one hundred parts of mercury, which is easily produced by forcing the two components into contact with each other by means of a mortar and pestle, when they unite, with deflagration, into an alloy which after cooling assumes the form of a grey, hard, brittle solid, although mercury is a liquid, and sodium, though a solid, is softer than wax. Similar evidence of chemical action we have in the cases of brass (copper and zinc), bronze (copper and tin), aluminium bronze (copper and

aluminium), and in many others that might be quoted. ‘here are indeed a good many alloys the formation of which is not accompanied by any obvious evolution of heat or any very marked change in the mean properties of the components. But in the absence of all precise thermic researches on the subject we are not in a position to assert the absence of chemical action in any case. Indeed our knowledge of the proximate composition of alloys is in the highest degree indefinite—we do not even know of a single composite metal which has been really proved to be an unitary compound, and hence the important problem of the relation in alloys between properties and composition must be attacked on a purely empirical basis. What has been done in this direction is shortly summarized in the following paragraphs.

Colour.—Most metals are white or grey ; so are the alloys of these metals with one another. Gold alloys generally exhibit somc- thing like the shade of yellow which one would expect from their composition ; its amalgams, however, are all white, not yellow. Copper shows little tendency to impart its characteristic red colour to its alloys with white or grey metals. Thlius, for instance, the silver alloy np to about 30 per cent. of copper exhibits an almost pure white colour. The alloys of copper with zinc (brass) or tin (bronze) are reddish-yellow when the copper predominates largely. As the proportion of white metal increases, the colour passes succes- sively into dark yellow, pale yellow, and ultimately into white. Aluminium bronze, containing from 5 to 10 per cent. of aluminium, is golden-yellow.

Plasticity. —This quality is most highly developed in certain pure metals, notably in gold, platinum, silver, and copper. Of platinum alloys little is known. The other three, on uniting with one another, substantially retain their plasticities, but the addition of any inetal outside the group leads to deterioration. Thus, for instance, according to Karsten, copper, by being alloyed with as little as 0°6 per cent. of zinc, loses its capability of being forged at a red heat ; it cracks under the hammier. Antimony or arsenic to the extent of 0°15 per cent. renders it unfit for being rolled into thin sheet or drawn out into fine wire, and makes it brittle in the heat; 0°1 per cent. of lead prohibits its conversion into leaf.

Hardness, Elasticity, Tensile Strength.—In reference to these qualities, we shall confine ourselves to some very striking changes for the better which the metals (1) gold, (2) silver, (3) copper suffer when alloyed with moderate proportions (10 per cent. or so) of (1) cop- per, (2) copper, (3) tin, zinc, or alumininm respectively. Any of these five combinations leads to a considerable increase in the three qualities named, although these are by no means highly developed in the added metals; most strikingly it does so in the case of alumi- nium bronze (copper and aluminium), which is so hard as to be very difficult to file, and is said to be equal in tensile strength to wrought iron. To illustrate this we give in the following table, after Matthiésen, the breaking strains of double wires, No. 23 gauge, in Ib avoirdupois, for certain alloys on the one hand and their components on the other.

4 Separate Metals. Alloys.

cea se sa ‘Gun metal, 12 per cent. of tin…..... 80-90 Ce ma \ Standard (22tcanat)/ coldeerssyese 10-70 Pee as } anioy, nee SEN y OU eren eens

Speeifie Gravity.—This subject has been extensively investigated by Matthiesen, Calvert and Johnson, Kuppfer, and others. In discussing the results it is convenient to compare the values (S) found with the values (S)) calculated on the assumption that the volume of the alloy is equal to the sum of the volumes of the com- ponents. Let p,, po, pg…stand for the relative weights of the com- ponents, P for their joint weight, §,,S,,8,...for their specific gravities, and we have

METALS

where the expression on the right hand obviously means the con- joint volume V, of the components ; but the actual volume of the alloy formed by their union is, in general, V=V,(1+e), where ¢ means the expansion (or, when negative, the contraction) of unit- volume of mixture. Hence the real value

S=S)/(1-+-e) 5) whence

e=(S9—S)/S.

Matthiesen’s investigation (Pogg. Annalen for 1860, vol. cx. p. 21) extends over a large number of binary alloys derived from the metals named in the following table. He naturally began by procuring pure specimens of these metals and determining their specific

gravities. The results (each the mean of a number of determina- tions) were as follows :— Specific Adopted Name. Gravity S t Atomic at °C. Weight. ZSOLT TO) AR poe nocnon bot icaanoncacoodaopsnonkeecosnoddan 6°713 14°3° 1223 Tin 77294 PIF} 118 Cadmium 8°655 10°5 112 Bismuth 9°823 12°3 208 Silver 10°468 13°2 108 Lead 11°376 13°5 207°4 Mercury.. 13°573 14°5 200 Gold 19°265 12°8 197

In thesc, as in all the subsequent determinations for the alloys, the weighings were reduced to the vacuum, and the valnes for S referred to water at 4° C. as unity. From eight metals twenty-eight different kinds of binary alloys can be produced; of these twenty- eight combinations eighteen were selected; in each case the two com- ponents were fused together in a variety of properly chosen atomic proportions, and the specific gravities of these alloys were determined. The net results are summarized in the following table, which, for each combination A, B, in the first two columns gives the con:- position in multiplies of the ‘‘atomic-wcights” given in the table just quoted, while column 8 gives the values of ¢ as calculated by the writer from Matthiesen’s numbers for Sy and 8. Hence, for example, in the accompanying entries the first line shows that the union into an alloy of twice 118 parts , of tin and once 197 parts of gold in- Tin and Gold.

volves an expansion from 1 volume into Sn nN ; 1°004 ; the second that the union of once

118 parts of tin with four times 197 parts 9 1 +004 of gold involves a contraction from 1 4 —*028

1 volume into 1 — °028.

; :

Antimony and Tin. | Antimony, Bismuth. Antimony, Lead.

Sb Bi e Sb Pb e

Sb Sn e 12 to 8 iL +002 2 |1tol2 0 2) il cal +7008 2 1 4-006 i 1 +“006 1 1to2 | +008 2 1 0 1 3 to 10 | +7005 3 1 +0067 1 —25| 1 0

20 to 100 0 5

Tin, Cadmium.

Tin, Silver.

sn Cd e Sn Bi é Sn

Ag e 6 1 +004 22 a 0 18 iL — 002 4 1 +005 4 1 — “002 9 1 — 006 2 1to8 0 3-1 1 —‘005 6 1 —‘008 2 12 —001 1 2 — 005 3 1 — 013 1 4 to 60 0 2 1 —019 a 1 — 024 1 2 — 047 i 4 — “038

Tin, Gold. Tin, Lead. Cadmium, Bismuth.

Sn Au e sn | Pb e ca | Bi | e

50 1 0 6 1 +:003 3 1—36 | 0 15—6 1 —°002 4 1 +°002

4-25 1 +7002 2 1 0 :

2 1 004 1 il +0015 Cadmium, Lead.

3 3) +008 1 2-4 | +-005

1 i +012 il 6 +7004 é

il 2 —015 -— —_ —

1 4 — +028 1-36 | 0 to 0025

Bismuth, Gold.

Au ée

Bismuth, Silver. Lead, Gold.

Lae] o> > fat a

ROR eee CN oe WEDD Ee ed et

METALS 69

To make these numbers trustworthy it would be necessary to de- termine their probable errors ; and this Matthiesen has not done. It would appear that any value of ¢ from 0 to (say) 002 counts for nothing, and anything up to ‘004 certainly must be taken as not proving much either way. If this is correct, then

(1) No contraction or expansion is proved in the cases Sb, Bi; Cd, Bi; Cd, Pb; Au, Ag;

(2) A contraction (from 0°5 to 4°7 per cent.) is proved for Sn, Ag; Bi, Ag; Bi, Au; Pb, hay, Pb, BY; Mesa; Hig; Fb; Sn, Bi(?); Au, Ag (7);

(3) An expansion (from ‘5 to 0°8 per cent.) is proved for Sb, Sn; Sb, Pb; Sn, Cd (2); Sn, Pb (?); certain cases of Sn, Au and Pb, Ag;

(4) In the two series Sn, Au and Pb, Ag, thereate cases both of expansion and of contraction.

Thermic and Electric Propertics.—The specific heat of an alloy, so far as we know, is always in approximate aecordance with Dulong and Petit’s law. Thus the specific heat of Cu,Al, is

(5+1) x 6-4 5×63°5+1X27’ with about the same degree of correctness as the ‘‘ constant” 6°4 can claim for itself.

Expansion.—Matthiesen, from numerous determinations made with alloys and their components, concludes that the expansion of an alloy (from 0° to 100° C.) is nearly equal to the sum of the ex- pansions of its componcuts. Supposing, for instance, one volume of gold to expand (from 0° to t) by a, and one volume of silver by 8; then an alloy of four volumes of gold and three volumes of silver expands by (4a+388)/7 per unit.

Fusibility.—In the case of an alloy the melting-point and the freezing-point are, in general, separated bya greater or less interval of temperature, and the latter in itself may have two values as shown by Rudberg, who found that when a fused alloy of tin and lead is allowed to freeze the thermometer becomes stationary at two suc- cessive points, as shown in the following table, where « means the number of atomic weights of tin united with y of lead in the given case, and the temperatures are in centigrade degrees.

Deersascocceroocestecevcesesececes 0 1 1 3 4 12 ro Utetpteaeaiadisess-+ss+es, ses ce 20> 8 1 1 1 1 0 First POiIt ….cccsceceasecnes (325°) 280° 240° 187° 187° 210° 228°) Seeond point …..... pooped (825°) 187° 187° 187° 187° 187° 228°)

We see that the first point varies with, while the second, within the range of the experiments, proved independent of, the proportion in which the two metals are united.

The melting-point of many alloys lies below that of even the most fusible component, as illustrated in the following tables, where the numbers mean parts by weight.

Tin and Lead (Rudberg).

Per cent. of Lead.

Per cent. of Tin.

100

Melting-point.

Melting- point.

Name

of Alloy. Tin. | Lead.

Bismuth. | Cadmium. PMI W MOINS! 0: o/-s’seecovavevaccerensn

All these alloys melt in boiling water.

The electric conductivity of alloys qua alloys has been investi- He confined himself to binary alloys derived The main results of his

gated by Matthiesen. from a certain set of elementary metals.

: ; researches are given in ELEcrriciry, vol. viii. p. 51. For the Bismuth, Lead. Lead, Silver. Gold, Silver. practical electrician it is important ae observe how very much the Bi Po | e Pp | Ag e Au | Ag : conductivity of copper is impaired by very minute admixtures even ida. – ___| | of metals that are good conductors, and also by non-metallic con- 0—20 1 0 1 4 — “005 1 6 —:004′ tamination, especially with *T6 1 | —*403 1 a yee: Siiel : =004 , especially with oxygen (present as Cu,Q). 12 1) | 1005 j) 1 1 0 i — 004 ‘ : 3 | | 007 || 2 1 | 4-003 || 1 1 |) eer Metallic Substances Produced by the Union of Metals with 4 Oe ae. hae ee fe ees Small Proportions of Non-Metallic Elements. =3 = 4 —-002. : ti 1 |e ea) | bugle — eee Hydrogen, as was shown by Graham, is capable of 1 2 031 SE se EE le y ? iy : 4 : = 7020 || Aerewry, Tin. Mercury, Lead. * uniting with (always very large proportions of) certain ‘ 4) a8 | | | metals, notably with palladium, into metal-like compounds. 1 1g | 00k || He wee |? ie : But those hydrogen alloys, being devoid of metallurgic 1 ae 1) te interest, fall better under the heading PALLADIUM. — 003 a 5 Tale ool £ | sete Oxygen.—Mercury and copper (perhaps also other

metals) are capable of dissolving their own oxides with formation of alloys. and unfit for its ordinary applications. pure to start with, suffers considerable deterioration in plasticity. But the presence of moderate proportions of cuprous oxide has been found to correct the evil influence of small contaminations by arsenic, antimony, lead, and other foreign metals. good qualities to this compensating influence.

Mercury, by doing so, becomes viscid. Copper, when

Most commercial coppers owe their

Arsenic combines readily with all metals into true

arsenides, which latter, in general, are soluble in the metal itself. of arsenide generally leads to considerable deterioration in mechanical qualities.

The presence in a metal of even small proportions

Phosphorus.—The remark just made might be said to

hold for phosphorus were it not for the existence of what is called “phosphorus-bronze,” an alloy of copper with phosphorus (z.¢., its own phosphide), which possesses valu- able properties. effect is produced by from 1 to 1} per cent. of phosphorus.

According to Abel, the most favourable

Such an alloy can be cast like ordinary bronze, but excels the latter in hardness, elasticity, toughness, and tensile strength. See PHospHoRUs.

Carbon.—Most metals when in a molten state are

capable of dissolving at least small proportions of carbon, which, in general, leads to a deterioration in metallicity,

except in the case of iron, which by the addition of small percentages of carbon gains in elasticityand tensile strength

with little loss of plasticity (see Iron).

Silicon, so far as we know, behaves to metals pretty much like carbon, but our knowledge of facts is limited. What is known as “cast iron” is essentially an alloy of iron proper with 2 to 6 per cent. of carbon and more or less of silicon (see Iron). Alloys of copper and silicon were prepared by Deville in 1863. The alloy with 12 per cent. of silicon is white, hard, and brittle. When diluted down to 4‘8 per cent., it assumes the colour and fusibility of bronze, but, unlike it, is tenacious and ductile like iron.

Action of the More Ordinary Chemical Agents on Simple Metals.

To avoid repetition, let us state beforehand that the metals to be referred to are always understood to be given in the compact (frozen) condition, and

that, wherever a series of metals are enumerated as being similarly attacked, the degree of readiness in the action is (so far as our knowledge goes) indicated by the order in which the several members are named,—the more readily changed metal always standing first.

Water, at ordinary or slightly elevated temperatures, is decomposed more or less readily, with evolution of hydrogen gas and formation of a basic hydrate, by (1) potassium (formation of KHO), sodium (NaHO), lithium (LiOH), barium, strontium, calcium (BaOzH,, dc.) 50(2) magnesium, zinc, manganese (MgO,H,, die.),

In the case of group 1 the action is more or less violent, and the hydroxides formed are soluble in water and very

strongly basylous; metals of group 2 are only slowly attacked, with formation of relatively feebly basylous and practically insoluble hydrates. Disregarding the rarer elements (as we propose to do in this section), the metals not named so far may be said to be proof against the action of pure water in the absence of free oxygen (air).

By the conjoint action of water and air, thallium, lead, bismuth are oxidized, with formation of more or less sparingly soluble hydrates (ThHO, PbO,H,, BiO,H,), which, in the presence of carbonic acid, pass into still less soluble basic carbonates. ;

Iron, as everybody knows, when exposed to moisture and air, “rusts,” that is, undergoes gradual conversion into a brown ferric hydrate, Fe,O,7H,O ; but this process never takes place in the absence of air, and it is questionable whether it ever sets in in the absence of carbonic acid. What is known is that iron never rusts in solutions of caustic alkalies or lime (which reagents preclude the pre- sence of free carbonic acid), while it does so readily in ordinary moist air containing CO, When once started the process proceeds with increasing rapidity, the ferric hydrate produced acting as a carrier of oxygen; it gives up part of its oxygen to the adjoining metal, being itself reduced to (perhaps) Fe,O,, which latter again absorbs oxygen from the air to become ferric hydrate and so on (Kuhlmann).

Copper, in the present connexion, is intermediate between iron and the following group of metals.

Mercury, if pure, and all the “ noble” metals (silver, gold, platinum, and platinum-metals), are absolutely proof against water even in the presence of oxygen and carbonic acid.

The metals grouped together above under 1 and 2 act on steam pretty much as they do on liquid water. Of the rest, the following are readily oxidized by steam at a red heat, with formation of hydrogen gas,—zinc, iron, cadmium, cobalt, nickel, tin. Bismuth is similarly attacked, but slowly, ata white heat. Aluminium is barely affected even at a white heat, if it is pure; the ordinary impure metal is liable to be very readily oxidized.

Aqueous Sulphuric or Hydrochloric Acid, of course, readily dissolves groups 1 and 2, with evolution of hydro- gen and formation of chlorides or sulphates. The same holds for the following group (A) :—[manganese, zinc, magnesium] iron, aluminium, cobalt, nickel, cadmium. Tin dissolves readily in strong hot hydrochloric acid as SnCl, ; aqueous vitriol does not act on it appreciably in the cold ; at 150° it attacks it more or less quickly, accord- ing to the strength of the acid, with evolution of sul- phuretted hydrogen or, when the acid is stronger, of sulphurous acid gas and deposition of sulphur (Calvert and Johnson). A group (B), comprising copper, are, substantially, attacked only in the presence of oxygen or air. Lead, in sufficiently dilute acid, or in stronger acid if not too hot, remains unchanged. A group © may be formed of mercury, silver, gold, and platinum, which are not touched by either aqueous acid in any circumstances,

Hot (concentrated) oil of vitriol does not attack gold, platinum, and platinum-metals generally ; all other metals (including even silver) are converted into sulphates, with evolution of sulphurous acid. In the case of iron, ferric sulphate, Fe,(SO,),, is produced ; tin yields a somewhat indefinite sulphate of its binoxide SnO,.

Nitric Acid (Aqueous).—Gold, platinum, iridium, and rhodium only are proof against the action of this powerful oxidizer. Tin and antimony (also arsenic) are converted by it (ultimately) into hydrates of their highest oxides

SnO,, Sb,O, (As,O;),—the oxides of tin and antimony being insoluble in water and in the acid itself. All other metals, including palladium, are dissolved as nitrates, the oxidiz- ing part of the reagent being generally reduced to nitric

oxide, NO, or sometimes to N,O, or N,O,. Iron, zine, cadmium, also tin under certain conditions, reduce the dilute acid, partially at least, to nitrous oxide, N,O, or nitrate of ammonia, NH,.NO, = N,O + 2H,0.

Aqua Regia, a mixture of nitric and hydrochloric acids, converts all metals (even gold, the "‘ king of metals," whence the name) into chlorides, except only rhodium, iridium, and ruthenium, which, when pure, are not attacked.

Caustic Alkalies.—Of metals not decomposing liquid pure water, only a few dissolve in aqueous caustic potash or soda, with evolution of hydrogen. The most important of these are aluminium and zinc, which are converted into aluminate, Al,O,3(K, or N a,)O, and zincate, ZnO.RHO, where R=K or Na respectively. But of the rest the majority, when treated with boiling sufficiently strong alkali, are attacked at least superficially; of ordinary metals only gold, platinum, and silver are perfectly proof against the reagents under consideration, and these accordingly are used preferably for the construc- tion of vessels intended for analytical operations involving the use of aqueous caustic alkalies. For preparative purposes iron is universally employed and works well ; but it is not available analytically, because a superficial oxida- tion of the empty part of the vessel (by the water and air) cannot be prevented. According to the writer’s experience basins made of pure malleable nickel are free from this drawback ; they work as well as platinum, and rather better than silver ones do. There is hardly a single metal which holds out against the alkalies themselves when in the state of fiery fusion ; even platinum is most violently attacked. In chemical laboratories fusions with caustic alkalies are always effected in vessels made of gold or silver, these metals holding out fairly well even in the presence of air. Gold is the better of the two. Iron, which stands so well against aqueous alkalies, is most violently attacked by the fused reagents. Yet tons of caustic soda are fused daily in chemical works in iron pots without thereby suffering contamination, which seems to show that (clean)

iron, like gold and silver, is attacked only by the conjoint action of fused alkali and air, the influence of the latter being of course minimized in large-scale operations.

Oxygen or Air.—The noble metals (from silver upwards) do not combine directly with oxygen given as oxygen gas (O,), although, like silver, they may absorb this gas largely when in the fused condition, and may not be proof against ozone, Os. Mercury, within a certain range of tempera- tures situated close to its boiling point, combines slowly with oxygen into the red oxide, which, however, breaks up again at higher temperatures. All other metals, when heated in oxygen or air, are converted, more or less readily, into stable oxides. Potassium, for example, yields peroxide, K,O, or K,O,; sodium gives Na,O,; the barium-group metals, as well as magnesium, cadmium, zinc, lead, copper, are converted into their monoxides MeO. Bismuth and antimony give (the latter very readily) sesquioxide (Bi,O, and Sb,O,, the latter being capable of passing into Sb,O,). Aluminium, when pure and kept out of contact with siliceous matter, is only oxidized at a white heat, and then very slowly, into alumina, Al,O,. Tin, at high temperatures, passes slowly into binoxide, SnO,,.

Sulphur.—Amongst the better known metals, gold and aluminium are the only ones which, when heated with sulphur or in sulphur vapour, remain unchanged. All the rest, under these circumstances, are converted into sulphides. The metals of the alkalies and alkaline earths, also magnesium, burn in sulphur-vapour as they do in oxygen. Of the heavy meals, copper is the one which exhibits by far the greatest avidity for sulphur, its subsulphide Cu,S being the stablest of all heavy metallic sulphides in opposition to dry reactions. See METALLURGY.

Chlorine.—All metals, when treated with chlorine gas at the proper temperatures, pass into chlorides. In some cases the chlorine is taken up in two instalments, a lower chloride being produced first, to pass ultimately into a higher chloride. Iron, for instance, is converted first into FeCl,, ultimately into Fe,Cl,, which practically means a mixture of the two chlorides, or pure Fe,Cl, as a final product. Of the several products, the chlorides of gold and platinum (AuCl, and PtCl,) are the only ones which

when heated beyond their temperature of formation dissociate into metal and chlorine. The ultimate chlorina- tion product of copper, CuCl,, when heated to redness, decomposes into the lower chloride, Cu,Cl,, and chlorine. All the rest, when heated by themselves, volatilize, some at lower, others at higher temperatures,

Of the several individual chlorides, the following are liquids or solids, volatile enough to be distilled from out of glass vessels :—AsCl,, SbCl,, SnCl,, BiCl,, HgCl,, the chlorides of arsenic, antimony, tin, bismuth, mercury re- spectively. The following are readily volatilized in a current of chlorine, at a red heat :—AI,Cl,, Cr,Cl,, Fe,Cl,, the chlorides of aluminium, chromium, iron. The follow- ing, though volatile at higher temperatures, are not vola- tilized at dull redness :—KCl, NaCl, LiCl, NiCl,, CoCl,, MnCl,, ZnCl, MgCl, PbCl,, AgCl, the chlorides of potassium, sodium, lithium, nickel, cobalt, manganese, zinc, magnesium, lead, silver. Somewhat less volatile than the last-named group are the chlorides (MCl,) of barium, strontium, and calcium.

Metallic chlorides, as a class, are readily soluble in water. The following are the most important exceptions: —chloride of silver, AgCl, and subchloride of mercury, Hg,Cl,, are absolutely insoluble; chloride of lead, PbCl,, and subchloride of copper, Cu,Cl,, are very sparingly soluble in water. The chlorides AsCl,, SbCl,, BiCl,, are at once decomposed by (liquid) water, with formation of oxide (As,O,) or oxychlorides (SbC1O, BiClO) and hydro- chloric acid. The chlorides MgCl, Al,Cl,, Cr,Cl,, Fe,Cl, suffer a similar decomposition when evaporated with water in the heat. The same holds in a limited sense for ZnCl, CoCl,, NiCl,, and even CaCl,. All chlorides, except those of silver and mercury (and, of course, those of gold and platinum), are oxidized by steam at high temperatures, with elimination of hydrochloric acid.

The above statements concerning the volatilities and solubilities of metallic chlorides form the basis of a number of important analytical methods for the separation of the respective metals.

For the characters of metals as chemical elements the reader is referred to the article CHEmMisTRY and to the special articles on the different metals. (Ww. D.)

METAL-WORK. Among the many stages in the de- velopment of primeval man, none can have been of greater moment in his struggle for existence than the discovery of the metals, and the means of working them. The names generally given to the three prehistoric periods of man's life on the earth—the Stone, the Bronze, and the Iron age—iniply the vast importance of the progressive steps from the flint knife to the bronze celt, and lastly to the keen-edged elastic iron weapon or tool. The length of time during which each of these ages lasted must of course have been different in every country and race in the world. The Digger Indians of South California have even now not progressed beyond the Stone Age; while some of the tribes of Central Africa are acquainted with the use of copper and bronze, though they are unable to smelt or work iron.

The metals chiefly used have been gold, silver, copper and tin (the last two generally mixed, forming an alloy called bronze), iron, and lead. The peculiarities of these

various metals have naturally marked out each of them for special uses and methods of treatment. The durability and the extraordinary ductility and pliancy of gold, its power of being subdivided, drawn out, or flattened into wire or leaf of almost infinite fineness, have led to its being used for works where great minuteness and delicacy of execution were required ; while its beauty and rarity have, for the most part, limited its use to objects of adornment and luxury, as distinct from those of utility. In a lesser degree most of the qualities of gold are shared by silver, and consequently the treatment of these two metals has always been very similar, though the greater abundance of the latter metal has allowed it to be used on a larger scale and for a greater variety of purposes.

Bronze is an alloy of copper and tin in varying propor- tions, the proportion of tin being from 8 to 20 per cent. The great fluidity of bronze when melted, the slightness of its contraction on solidifying, together with its density and hardness, make it especially suitable for casting, and allow of its taking the impress of the mould with extreme sharp- ness and delicacy. In the form of plate it can be tempered and annealed till its elasticity and toughness are much increased, and it can then be formed into almost any shape under the hammer and punch. By other methods of treatment, known to the ancient

Egyptians, Greeks, and others, but now forgotten, it could be hardened and formed into knife and razor edges of the utmost keenness. In many specimens of ancient bronze small quantities of silver, lead, and zinc have been found, but their presence is probably accidental.

In modern tines, after the discovery of zinc, an alloy of copper and zine called brass has been much used, chiefly for the sake of its cheapness as compared with bronze. In beauty, durability, and delicacy of surface it is very inferior to bronze, and, though of some commercial importance, has been of but little use in the production of works of art.

To some extent copper was used in an almost pure state during medizval times, especially from the 12th to the 15th century, mainly for objects of ecclesiastical use, such as pyxes, monstrances, reliquaries, and croziers, partly on account of its softness under the tool, and also because it was slightly easier to apply enamel and gilding to pure copper than to bronze (see fig. 1). In the medieval period it was used to some extent in the shape of thin sheeting for roofs, as at St Mark's, Venice ; while during the 16th and 17th centuries it was largely employed for ornamental domestic vessels of various sorts.

Tron.1—The abundance in which iron is found in so many places, its great strength, its remarkable ductility and malleability in a red-hot state, and the ease with which two heated surfaces of iron can be welded together under the hammer combine to make it specially suitable for works on a large scale where strength with lightness are required—things such as screens, window-grills, orna- mental hinges, and the like.

In its hot plastic state iron can be formed and modelled under the hammer to almost any degree of refinement, while its great strength allows it to be beaten out into leaves and ornaments of almost paper-like thinness and delicacy. With repeated hammering, drawing out, and annealing, it gains much in strength and toughness, and the addition of a very minute quantity of carbon converts

1 Some recent analyses of the iron of prehistoric weapons have brought to light the interesting fact that many of these earliest specimens of iron manufacture contain a considerable percentage of nickel. This special alloy

does not occur in any known iron ores, but is invariably found in meteoric iron. It thus appears that iron was manufactured from meteorolites which had fallen to the earth in an alinost pure metallic state, possibly long before prehistoric man had learnt how to dig for and smelt iron in any of the forms of ore which are found on this planet.

it into steel, less tough, but of the keenest hardness. The large employment of cast iron is comparatively modern, in England at least only dating from the 16th century ; it is not, however, incapable of artistic treatment if due regard be paid to the necessities of casting, and if no attempt is made to imitate the fine-drawn lightness to which wrought iron so readily lends itself. At the best, however, it is not generally suited for the finest work, as the great contrac- tion of iron in passing from the fluid to the solid state renders the cast somewhat blunt and spiritless.

Among the Assyrians, Egyptians, and Greeks the use of iron, either cast or wrought, was very limited, bronze being the favourite metal for i

almost all purposes. The difficulty of smelt- ing the ore was prob- ably one reason for this, as well as the now forgotten skill which enabled bronze to be tempered to a steel-likeedge. Ithad, however, its value, of which a proof occurs in Homer (J/. xxiii.), where a mass of iron is mentioned as being one of the prizes at the funeral games of Patroclus.

Methods of Manipu- lation in Metal- Work. —Gold, silver, and bronze may be treated in various ways, the chief of which are (1) casting in a mould, and (2) treatment by hammering and punch- ing (French, repoussé).

The first of these, casting, is chiefly adapted for bronze, or in the case of the more precious metals only if they are used on a very small scale. The reason of this is that a repoussé relief is of much thinner substance than if the same design were cast, even by the most skilful metal-worker, and so a large surface (G may be produced with a very small expendi- ture of valuable metal.

Casting is probably the most primitive method of metal-work.

Fia. 1.—Monstrance of Copper Gilt; Italian work of the 15th century. This has passed through three stages, the first being represented by solid castings, such as are most celts and other implements of the prehistoric time ; the mould was formed of clay, sand, or stone, and the fluid metal

was poured in till the hollow was full. The next stage was, in the case of bronze, to introduce an iron core, prob- ably to save needless expenditure of the more valuable metal. The British Museum possesses an interesting Etruscan or Archaic Italian example of this primitive

device. It is a bronze statuette from Sessa on the Volturno, about 2 feet high, of a female standing, robed in a close- fitting chiton. The presence of the iron core hag been made visible by the splitting of the figure, owing to the unequal contraction of the two metals. The forearms, which are extended, have been cast separately and soldered or brazed on to the elbows.

The third and last stage in the progress of the art of casting was the employment of a core, generally of clay, round which the metal was cast in a mere skin, only thick enough for strength, without waste of metal. The Greeks and Romans attained to the greatest possible skill in this process. Their exact method is not certainly known, but it appears probable that they were acquainted with the process now called @ cire perdue—the same as that employed by the great Italian artists in bronze, and still unimproved upon even at the present day. Cellini, the great Florentine artist of the 16th century, has described it fully in his 7rattato della Scultura. If a statue was to be cast, the figure was first roughly modelled in clay—only rather smaller in all its dimensions than the future bronze; all over this a skin of wax was laid, and worked by the sculptor with modelling tools to the required form and finish, A mixture of pounded brick, clay, and ashes was then ground finely in water to the consistence of cream, and successive coats of this mixture were then applied with a brush, till a second skin was formed all over the wax, fitting closely into every line and depression of the modelling. Soft clay was then carefully laid on to strengthen the mould, in considerable thickness, till the whole statue appeared like a shapeless mass

of clay, round which iron hoops were bound to hold it all together. The whole was then thoroughly dried, and placed in a hot oven, which baked the clay, both of the core and the outside mould, and melted the wax, which was allowed to run out from small holes made for the purpose. Thus a hollow was left, corresponding to the skin of wax between the core and the mould, the relative positions of which were pre- served by various small rods of bronze, which had pre- viously been driven through from the outer mould to the rough core. The mould was now ready, and melted bronze was poured in till the whole space between the core and the outer mould was full. After slowly cooling, the outer mould was broken away from outside the statue, and the inner core as much as possible broken up and raked out through a hole in the foot or some other part of the statue. The projecting rods of bronze were then cut away, and the whole finished by rubbing down and polishing over any roughnesses or defective places. The most skilful sculptors, however, had but little of this after-touching to do, the final modelling and even polish which they had put upon the wax being faithfully reproduced in the bronze casting.

The further enrichment of the object by enamels and inlay of other metals was practised at a very early period by Assyrian, Egyptian, and Greek metal-workers, as well as by the artists of Persia and medizval Europe.

The second chief process, that of hammered work (Greek, sphyrelata; French, repoussé), was probably adopted for bronze-work on a large scale, before the art of forming large castings was discovered. In the most primitive method thin plates of bronze were hammered over a wooden core, rudely cut into the required shape, the core serving the double purpose of giving shape to and strengthening the thin metal.

_ A further development in the art of hammered work consisted in laying the metal plate on a soft and elastic bed of cement made of pitch and pounded brick. The design was then beaten into relief from the back with hammers and punches, the pitch bed yielding to the protuberances which were thus formed, and serving to pre-

vent the punch from breaking the metal into holes. The pitch was then melted away from the front of the embossed relief, and applied in a similar way to the back, so that the modelling could be completed on the face of the relief, the final touches being given by the graver. This process was chiefly applied by medieval artists to the precious metals, but by the Assyrians, Greeks, and other early nations it was largely used for bronze.

The great gates of Shalmaneser II., 859-824 3.c., from Balawat, now in the British Museum, are a remarkable example of this sort of work on a large scale, though the treatment of the reliefs is minute and delicate. The “ Siris bronzes,” in the same museum, are a most astonishing example of the skill attained by Greek artists in this repoussé work (see Brénsted’s Bronzes of Siris, 1836). They are a pair of shoulder-pieces from a suit of bronze armour, and each has in very high relief a combat between a Greek warrior and an Amazon. No work of art in metal has probably ever surpassed these little figures for beauty, vigour, and expression, while the skill with which the artist has beaten these high reliefs out of a flat plate of metal appears almost miraculous. The heads of the figures are nearly detached from the ground, their sub- stance is little thicker than paper, and yet in no place has the metal been broken through by the punch. They are probably of the school of Praxiteles, and date from the 4th century B.c. (see fig. 2).

Fie. 2.—One of the Siris Bronzes.

Copper and tin have been but little used separately. Copper in its pure state may be worked by the same methods as bronze, but it is inferior to it in hardness, strength, and beauty of surface. Tin is too weak and

brittle a metal to be employed alone for any but small objects. Some considerable number of tin drinking-cups and bowls of the Celtic period have been found in Corn- wall in the neighbourhood of the celebrated tin and copper mines, which appear to have been worked from a very early period. The existence of these mines was known to the Phcenicians, who carried on a considerable trade in metals with the south-west corner of England and the Scilly Isles —probably the Cassiterides of Pliny and other classical writers.

The use of lead has been more extended. In sheets it forms the best of all coverings for roofs and even spires. In the Roman and medieval periods it was largely used for coffins, which were often richly ornamented with cast work in relief. Though fusible at a very low temperature, and very soft, it has great power of resisting decay from damp or exposure. Its most important use in an artistic form has been in the shape of baptismal fonts, chiefly between the 11th and the 14th centuries. The superior beauty of colour and durability of old specimens of lead is owing to the natural presence of a small proportion of silver. Modern smelters carefully extract this silver from the lead ore, thereby greatly impairing the durability and beauty of the metal.

As in almost all the arts, the ancient Egyptians excelled in their metal-work, especially in the use of bronze and the precious metals. These were worked by casting and hammering, and ornamented by inlay, gilding, and enamels with the greatest possible skill.

From Egypt perhaps was derived the early skill of the Hebrews. Further instruction in the art of metal-working came probably to the Jews from the neighbouring country of Tyre. The description of the great gold lions of Solomon’s throne, and the laver of cast bronze supported on figures of oxen, shows that the artificers of that time had overcome the difficulties of metal-working and founding on a large scale. The Assyrians were perhaps the most remarkable of all ancient nations for the colossal size and splendour of their works in metal ; whole circuit walls of great cities, such as Ecbatana, are said to have been covered with metal plates, gilt or silvered.

Herodotus, Athenzus, and other Greek and Roman writers have recorded the enormous number of colossal statues and other works of art for which Babylon and Nineveh were so famed. The numerous objects of bronze and other metals brought to light by the excavations of the last forty years in the Tigris and Euphrates valleys, though mostly on a small scale, bear witness to the great skill and artistic power of the people who produced them ; while the recent discovery of some bronze statuettes, shown by inscriptions on them to be not later than 2200 B.C., proves how early was the development of this branch of art among the people of Assyria.

The Metal-Woerk of Greece.—The poems of Homer are full of descriptions of elaborate works in bronze, iron, gold, and silver, which, even when full allowance is made for poetic fancy, show clearly enough a very advanced amount of skill in the working and ornamenting of these metals among the Greeks of his time. His description of the shield of Achilles, made of bronze, enriched with bands of figure reliefs in gold, silver, and tin, could hardly have been written by a man who had not some personal acquaintance with works in metal of a very elaborate kind. Again, the accuracy of his descriptions of brazen houses— such as that of Alcinous, Od. vii. 81—is borne witness to by Pausanias's mention of the bronze temple of Athena XaAxlouxos in Sparta, and the bronze chamber dedicated to Myron in 648 3.c., as well as by the discovery of the stains and bronze nails, which show that the whole interior of the so-called treasury of Atreus at Mycenze was once

covered with a lining of bronze plates. Of the two chief methods of working bronze, gold, and silver, it is probable that the hammer process was first practised, at least for statues, among the Greeks, who themselves attributed the invention of the art of hollow casting to Theodorus and Rheecus, both Samian sculptors, about the middle of the 6th century B.c. Pausanias specially mentions that one of the oldest statues he had ever seen was a large figure of Zeus in Sparta, made of hammered bronze plates riveted together. With increased skill in large castings, and the discovery of the use of cores, by which the fluid bronze was poured into a mere skin-like cavity, hammered or repoussé work (Greek, sphyrelata) was only used for small objects where lightness was desirable, or for the precious metals in order to avoid large expenditure of metal. The colossal statues of ivory and gold by Phidias were the most notable examples of this use of gold, especially his statue of Athena in the Parthenon, and the one of Zeus at Olympia. The nude parts, such as face and hands, were of ivory, while the armour and drapery were of beaten gold. The comparatively small weight of gold used by Phidias is very remarkable when the great size of the statues is considered.

A graphic representation of the workshop of a Greek sculptor in bronze is given on a fictile vase now in the Berlin Museum (see Gerhard's Z'rinkschalen, plates xii. xiii.), One man is raking out the fire in a high furnace, while another behind is blowing the bellows. Two others are smoothing the surface of a statue with scraping tools, formed like a strigil. A fourth is beating the arm of an unfinished figure, the head of which lies at the workman's feet. Perhaps the most important of early Greek works in cast bronze, both from its size and great historical interest, is the bronze pillar (now in the Hippodrome at Constanti- nople) which was erected to commemorate the victory of the allied Greek states over the Persians at Plateea in 479 B.C. (see Newton's Travels in the Levant). It is in the form of three serpents twisted together, and before the heads were broken off was at least 20 feet high. It is cast hollow, all in one piece, and has the names of the allied states engraved on the lower part of the coils. Its size and the beauty of its surface show great technical skill in the founder's art. On it once stood the gold tripod dedi- cated to Apollo as a tenth of the spoils. It is described both by Herodotus and Pausanias.

Marble was comparatively but little used by the earlier Greek sculptors, and even Myron, a rather older man than Phidias, seems to have executed nearly all his most im- portant statues in metal.

Additional richness was given to Greek bronze-work by gold or silver inlay on lips, eyes, and borders of the dress ; one remarkable statuette in the British Museum has eyes inlaid with diamonds, and fret-work inlay in silver on the border of the chiton.

The mirrors of the Greeks are among the most important specimens of their artistic metal-work. These are bronze disks, one side polished to serve as a reflector, and the back ornamented with engraved outline drawings, often of great beauty (see Gerhard, Htruskische Spiegel, 1843-67).

The Greek workman, in fact, was incapable of making an ugly thing. Whatever the metal or whatever the object formed, whether armour, personal ornaments, or domestic vessels, the form was always specially adapted to its use, the ornament natural and graceful, so that the commonest water-jar was a delight alike to him who made it and those who used it.

In metal-work, as in other arts, the Romans were pupils and imitators of the Greeks. Owing to the growth of that spirit of luxury which in time caused the extinction of the Roman empire, a considerable demand arose for magni-

ficent articles of gold and silver plate. The finest speci- mens of these that still exist are the very beautiful set of silver plate found buried near Hildesheim in 1869, now in the Berlin Museum. They consist of drinking vessels, bowls, vases, ladles, and other objects of silver, parcel-gilt, and exquisitely decorated with figures in relief, both cast and rcpoussé. There are electrotypes of these in the South Kensington Museum.

When the seat of the empire was changed from Rome to Byzantium, the latter city became the chief centre for the production of artistic metal-work. From Byzantium the special skill in this art was transmitted in the 9th and 10th centuries to the Rhenish provinces of Germany and to Italy, and thence to the whole of Western Europe ; in this way the 18th-century smith who wrought the Hamp- ton Court iron gates was the heir to the mechanical skill of the ancient metal-workers of Pheenicia and Greece.

In that period of extreme degradation into which all the higher arts fell after the destruction of the Roman empire, though true feeling for beauty and knowledge of the subtleties of the human form remained for centuries almost dormant, yet at Byzantium at least there still survived great technical skill and power in the production of all sorts of metal-work. In the age of Justinian (first half of the 6th century) the great church of St Sophia at

| Constantinople was adorned with an almost incredible

amount of wealth and splendour in the form of screens, altars, candlesticks, and other ecclesiastical furniture made of massive gold and silver.

Metal-Work in Italy.—It was therefore to Byzantium that Italy turned for metal-workers, and especially for gold- smiths, when, in the 6th to the 8th centuries, the basilica of St Peter’s in Rome was enriched with masses of gold and silver for decorations and fittings, the gifts of many donors from

Belisarius to Leo III., the mere catalogue of which reads like a tale from the Arabian Nights. The gorgeous Pala d'Oro, still in St Mark's at Venice, a gold retable covered with delicate reliefs and enriched with enamels and jewels, was the work of Byzantine artists during the 11th century. This work was in progress for more than a hundred years, and was set in its place in 1106 a.p., though still unfinished (see Bellomo, Pala d'Oro di S. Marco, 1847).

It was, however, especially for the production of bronze doors for churches, ornamented with panels of cast work in high relief, that Italy obtained the services of Byzantine workmen (see Garrucci, Arte Cristiana, 1872-82). One artist named Staurachios produced many works of this class, some of which still exist, such as the bronze doors of the cathedral at Amalfi, dated 1066 a.p. Probably by the same artist, though his name was spelled differently, were the bronze doors of San Paolo fuori le Mura, Rome, careful drawings of which exist, though the originals were destroyed in the fire of 1824. Other important examples exist at Ravello (1197), Salerno (1099), Amalfi (1062), Atrani (1087); and doors at Mon- reale in Sicily and at Trani, signed by an artist named Barisanos (end of the 12th century); the reliefs on these last are remarkable for expression and dignity, in spite of their early rudeness of modelling and ignorance of the human figure.

Most of these works in bronze were enriched with fine lines inlaid in silver, and in some cases with a kind of niello or enamel. The technical skill of these Byzantine metal-workers was soon acquired by native Italian artists, who produced many important works in bronze similar in style and execution to those of the Byzantine Greeks. Such, for example, are the bronze doors of San Zenone at Verona (unlike the others, of repoussé not cast work) ; those of the Duomo of Pisa, cast in 1180 by Bonannus, and of the

Duomo of Troia, the last made in the beginning of the 12th century by Oderisius of Benevento. Another artist named Roger of Amalfi worked in the same way; and in the year 1219 the brothers Hubertus and Petrus of Piacenza cast the bronze door for one of the side chapels in San Giovanni in Laterano. One of the most important early specimens of metal-work is the

gold and silver altar of Sant? Ambrogio in Milan. In character of work and design it resembles the Venice Pala d'Oro, but is still earlier in date, being a gift to the church from Arch- bishop Angilbert II. in 835 a.p. (see Du Sommerard, and D'Agincourt, Moyen Age). It is signed wovinivs MAGISTER PHABER ; nothing is known of the artist, but he probably belonged to the semi-Byzantine school of the Rhine provinces ; according to Dr Rock he was an Anglo- Saxon goldsmith. It is a very sumptuous work, the front of the altar being entirely of gold, with repoussé reliefs and cloisonnée enamels; the back and ends are of silver, with gold ornaments. On the front are figures of Christ and the twelves apostles; the ends and back have reliefs illustrating the life of St Ambrose.

The most important existing work of art in metal of the 13th century is the great candelabrum now in Milan cathedral. It is of gilt bronze, more than 14 feet high; it has seven branches for candles, and its upright stem is supported on four winged dragons. For delicate and spirited execution, together with refined gracefulness of design, itis unsurpassed by any similar work of art. Every one of the numerous little figures with which it is adorned is worthy of study for the beauty and expression of the face, and the dignified arrangement of the drapery (see fig. 3).

Fic. 3.—Boss from the Milanese Candelabrum.

The semi-conventional open scroll-work of branches and fruit which wind around and frame each figure or group is devised with the most perfect taste and richness of fancy, while each minute part of this great piece of metal-work is finished with all the care that could have been bestowed on the smallest article of gold jewellery. Though some- thing in the grotesque dragons of the base recalls the Byzantine school, yet the beauty of the figures and the keen feeling for graceful curves and folds in the drapery point to a native Italian as being the artist who produced this wonderful work of art. There is a cast in the South Kensington Museum.

During the 13th and 14th centuries in Italy the wide- spread influence of Niccolo Pisano and his school encouraged the sculptor to use marble rather than bronze for his work. At this period wrought iron came into general use in the form of screens for chapels and tombs, and grills for windows. These

are mostly of great beauty, and show remarkable skill in the use of the hammer, as well as power

15

in adapting the design to the requirements of the material. Among the finest examples of this sort of work are the screens round the tombs of the Scala family at Verona, 1350-75,—a sort of net-work of light cusped quatrefoils, each filled up with a small ladder (scala) in allusion to the name of the family. The most elaborate specimen of this wrought work is the screen to the Rinuccini chapel in Santa Croce, Florence, of 1371, in which moulded pillars and window-like tracery have been wrought and modelled by the hammer with extraordinary skill (see Wyatt, Metal- Work of Middle Ages). Of about the same date are the almost equally magnificent screens in Sta Trinita, Florence, and at Siena across the chapel in the Palazzo Pubblico. The main part of most of these screens is filled in with quatre-foils, and at the top is an open frieze formed of plate iron pierced, repoussé, and enriched with engraving.

In the 14th century great quantities of objects for ecclesiastical use were produced in Italy, some on a large scale, and mostly the works of the best artists of the time.

all

alles

Fic. 4.—Silver Repoussé Reliefs from the Pistoia Retable.

(| i \

5

)

1

The silver altar of the Florence baptistery is one of the chief of these; it was begun in the first half of the 14th century, and not completed till after 1477

(see Gaz. des Beaux Arts, Jan. 1883). A whole series of the greatest artists in metal laboured on it in succession, among whom were Orcagna, Ghiberti, Verrocchio, Ant. Pollajuolo, and many others. It has elaborate reliefs in repoussé work, cast canopies, and minute statuettes, with the further enrichment of translucent coloured enamels. The silver altar and retable of Pistoia cathedral (see fig. 4), and the great shrine at Orvieto, are works of the same class, and of equal importance.

Whole volumes might be devoted to the magnificent works in bronze produced by the Florentine artists of this century, works such as the baptistery gates by Ghiberti, and the statues of Verrocchio, Donatello,. and many others, but these come rather under the head of sculpture.

Some very magnificent bronze screens were produced at this time, especially that in Prato cathedral by Simone, brother of Donatello, in 1444-61, and the screen and bronze ornaments of the tomb of Piero and Giovanni dei Medici in San Lorenzo, Florence, by Verrocchio, in 1472.

At the latter part of the 15th century and the beginning of the 16th the Pollajuoli, Ricci, and other artists devoted much labour and artistic skill to the production of candle- sticks and smaller objects of bronze, such as door-knockers, many of which are works of the greatest beauty. The candlesticks in the Certosa near Pavia, and in the cathedrals of Venice and Padua, are the finest examples of these.

Niccold Grossi, who worked in wrought iron under the patronage of Lorenzo dei Medici, produced some wonderful specimens of metal-work, such as the candlesticks, lanterns, and rings fixed at intervals round the outside of the great palaces (see fig. 5). The Strozzi palace in Florence and

Fig. 5.—Wrought Iron Candle-Pricket ; late 15th-century, Florentine work.

the Palazzo del Magnifico at Siena have fine specimens of these,—the former of wrought iron, the latter in cast bronze. At Venice fine work in metal, such as salvers and vases, was being produced, of almost Oriental design, and in some cases the work of resident Arab artificers. In the 16th

century Benvenuto Cellini was supreme for skill in the production of enamelled jewellery, plate, and even larger works of sculpture (see Plon's Ben. Cellini, 1882), and John of Bologna in the latter part of the same century inherited to some extent the skill and artistic power of the great 15th-century artists. Since that time Italy, like other countries, has produced little metal-work of real value. Spain.—From a very early period the metal-workers of Spain have been distinguished for their skill, especially in the use of the precious metals. A very remarkable set of specimens of goldsmith's work of the 7th century are the eleven votive crowns, two crosses, and other objects found

in 1858 at Guarrazar, and now preserved at Madrid and in Paris in the Cluny Museum (see Du Sommerard, Musée de Cluny, 1852). Magnificent works in silver, such as shrines, altar crosses, and church vessels of all kinds, were pro- duced in Spain from the 14th to the 16th century,—especially a number of sumptuous tabernacles (custodia) for the host, magnificent examples of which still exist in the cathedrals of Toledo and Seville. The bronze and wrought iron screens—vrejas, mostly of the 15th and 16th centuries—to be found in almost every im- portant church in Spain are very fine examples of metal- work. They generally have moulded rails or ballusters, and rich friezes of pierced and repoussé work, the whole being often thickly plated with silver. The common use of metal for pulpits is a peculiarity of Spain; they are sometimes of bronze, as the pairs in Burgos and Toledo cathedrals, or in wrought iron, like those at Zamora and in the church of San Gil, Burgos. The great candelabrum or tenebrarium in Seville cathedral is the finest speci- men of 16th-century metal-work in Spain; it was mainly the work of Bart. Morel in 1562. It is of cast bronze enriched with delicate scroll-work foliage, and with num- bers of well-modelled statuettes, the general effect being very rich and graceful. Especially in the art of metal- work Spain was much influenced in the 15th and 16th centuries by both Italy and Germany, so that numberless Spanish objects produced at that time owe little or nothing to native designers. At an earlier period Arab and Moor- ish influence is no less apparent.

England.—In Saxon times the English metal-workers, especially of the precious metals, possessed great skill, and appear to have produced shrines, altar-frontals, retables, and other ecclesiastical furniture of considerable size and magnificence.

Dunstan, archbishop of Canterbury (925-988), . like Bernward, bishop of Hildesheim a few years later, and St Eloi of France three centuries earlier, was himself a skilful worker in all kinds of metal. The description of the gold and silver retable given to the high altar of Ely by Abbot Theodwin in the 11th century, shows it to have been a large and elaborate piece of work decorated with many reliefs and figures in the round. In 1241 Henry ITI. gave the order for the great gold shrine to contain the bones of Edward the Confessor (see W. Burges in Gleanings from Westminster). It was the work of members of the Otho family, among whom the goldsmith's and coiner's crafts appear to have been long: hereditary. Countless other important works in the precious metals adorned every abbey and cathedral church in the kingdom.

In the 13th century the English workers in wrought iron were especially skilful. The grill over the tomb of Queen Eleanor at Westminster, by Thomas de Leghton, made about 1294, isa remarkable example of skill in weld- ing and modelling with the hammer (see fig. 6).

The rich and graceful iron hinges, made often for small and out-of-the-way country churches, are a large and important class in the list of English wrought iron-work. Those on the refectory door of Merton College, Oxford, are a beautiful and well-preserved example dating from the 14th century.

More mechanical in execution, though still very rich in effect, is that sort of iron tracery work produced by cutting out patterns in plate, and superimposing one plate over the other, so as to give richness of effect by the shadows produced by these varying planes. The screen by Henry V.'s tomb at Westminster is a good early specimen of this kind of work. :

The screen to Bishop West's chapel at Ely, and that round Edward IV.'s tomb at Windsor, both made towards the end of the 15th century, are the most magnificent

METAL-WORK

English examples of wrought iron, in which every art and feat of skill known to the smith has been brought into play to give variety and richness to the work.

Much wrought-iron work of great beauty was produced at the beginning of the 18th century, especially under the superintendence of Sir Christopher Wren (see Ebbetts, Iron Work of 17th and 18th Centuries, 1880). Large flowing leaves of acanthus and other plants were beaten out with wonderful spirit and beauty of curve. The gates from Hampton Court are the finest examples of this class of work (see fig. 7).

From an early period bronze and latten (a variety of brass) were much used in England for the smaller objects both of ecclesiastical and domestic use, but except for tombs and lecterns were but little used on a large scale till the 16th century. The full-length recumbent effigies of Henry III. and Queen Eleanor at Westminster, cast in bronze by the "'cire perdue" process, and thickly gilt, are equal, if not superior, in artistic beauty to any sculptor's work of the same period (end of the 13th century) that was produced in Italy or elsewhere. These effigies are the work

We

"| f il yy

1

ij

Fia. 6.— Part of the " Eleanor Grill."

of an Englishman named William Torel (see Westminster Gleanings). The gates to Henry VIL's chapel, and the screen round his tomb at Westminster (see fig. 8), are very elaborate and beautiful examples of '"latten" work, show- ing the greatest technical skill in the founder's art. In latten also were produced the numerous monumental brasses of which about two thousand still exist in England. Though a few were made in the 13th century, yet it

was not till the 14th that they came into general use. They are made of cast plates of brass, with the design worked upon them with the chisel and graver. All those, how- ever, to be seen in English churches are not of native work—great quantities of them being Flemish imports (see Cotman, Waller, and Boutell on Monumental Brasses).

In addition to its chief use as a roof covering, lead was sometimes used in England for making fonts, generally tub-shaped, with figures cast in relief. Many examples exist : e.g., at Tidenham, Gloucestershire ; Warborough and Dorchester, Oxon ; Chirton, Wilts ; and other places.

77

Germany.—Unlike England, Germany in the 10th and 11th centuries produced large and elaborate works in cast bronze, especially doors for churches, much resembling the contemporary doors made in Italy under Byzantine influence. Bernward, bishop of Hildesheim, 992-1022, was especially skilled in this work, and was much influenced in design by a visit to Rome in the suite of Otho III. The bronze column with winding reliefs now at Hildesheim was the result of his study of Trajan’s column, and the bronze door which he made for his own cathedral shows classical influence, especially in the composition of the drapery of the figures in the panels,

a

y FE: aos ee ae Sat pa Bzaz Z ct aig Ses go): Y Walla Mh SLi il i : THA 7 Cex jy LP) (e \p COW y 5A. LT 4 WN Ci ~ . By. * (ae G \) Ke

Fic. 7.—Part of one of the Hampton Court Gates.

The bronze doors of Augsburg (1047-72) are similar in style. The bronze tomb of Rudolph of Swabia in Mersburg cathedral (1080) is another fine work of the same school. The production of works in gold and silver was also carried on vigorously in Germany. ‘The shrine of the three kings at Cologne is the finest surviving example.

At a later time Augsburg and Nuremberg were the chief centres for the production of artistic works in the various metals. Herman Vischer, in the

15th century, and his son and grandsons were very remarkable as bronze founders. The font at Wittenberg, decorated with reliefs of the apostles, was the work of the elder Vischer, while Peter and his son produced, among other important works, the shrine of St Sebald at Nuremberg, a work of great finish and of astonishing richness of fancy in its design (see Doebner, Christliches Kunstblatt, 1866, Nos. 10-12). The tomb of Maximilian I., and the statues round it, at Innsbruck, begun in 1521, are perhaps the most meritorious German work of this class in the 16th century, and show consider- able Italian influence.

78

In wrought iron the German smiths, especially during the 15th century, greatly excelled. Almost peculiar to Germany is the use of wrought iron for grave-crosses and sepulchral monuments, of which the Nuremberg and other cemeteries contain fine examples. Many elaborate well- canopies were made in wrought iron, and gave full play to

i | oO JRGTN al

Pit

1. | | at MMM au NA | I li | i Vit it

Fie. 8.—Part of Henry VII.’s Bronze Screen.

SS

the fancy and invention of the smith. The celebrated 15th-century example over the well at Antwerp, attributed to Quintin Massys, is the finest of these.

France.—From the time of the Romans the city of Limoges has been celebrated for all sorts of metal-work, and especially for brass enriched with enamel. In the 13th and 14th centuries many life-size sepulchral effigies were made of beaten copper or bronze, and ornamented by various-coloured “champlevé” enamels. The beauty of ‘ these effigies led to their being imported into England ;

most are now destroyed, but a fine specimen still exists at Westminster on the tomb of William de Valence (1296). In ornamental iron-work for doors the French smiths were pre-eminent for the richness of design and skilful treatment of their metal. No examples probably surpass those on the west doors of Notre Dame in Paris—now unhappily much falsified by restoration. The crockets and finials on the fléches of Amiens and Rheims are beautiful speci- mens of a highly ornamental treatment of cast lead, for which France was especially celebrated. In most respects, however, the development of the various kinds of metal- working went through much the same stages as in England.

Persia and Damascus.—The metal-workers of the East, especially in brass and steel, were renowned for their skill

Fria. 9.—Brass Vase, pierced and gilt ; 17th century Persian work.

even in the time of Theophilus, the monkish writer on the subject in the 13th century. But it was during the reign of Shah Abbas I. (d. 1628) that the greatest amount of skill both in design and execution was reached by the Persian workmen. Delicate pierced vessels of gilt brass, enriched by tooling and inlay of gold and silver, were among the chief specialties of the Persians (see fig. 9).

A process called by Europeans ‘“‘damascening” (from Damascus, the chief seat of the export) was used to produce very delicate and rich surface ornament. A pattern was incised with a graver in iron or steel, and then gold wire was beaten into the sunk lines, the whole surface being then smoothed and polished. In the time of Cellini this process was copied in Italy, and largely used, especially for the decoration of weapons and armour. The repoussé process both for brass and silver was much used by Oriental workers, and even now fine works of this class are pro- duced in the East, old designs still being adhered to.

ME T— Recent Metal-Work.—In modern Europe generally the |

arts of metal-working. both as regards design and tech- nical skill are not in a flourishing condition. The great bronze lions of the Nelson monument in London are a sad example of the present low state of the founder's art. Coarse sand-casting in England now takes the place of the delicate "'cire perdue" process. .

Some attempts have lately been made in Germany to revive the art of good wrought-iron work. The Prussian gates, bought at a high price for the South Kensington Museum, are large and pretentious, but unfortunately are only of value as a warning to show what wrought iron . ought not to be. Some English recent specimens of ham- mered work are more hopeful, and show that one or two

smiths are working in the right direction.

Literature. —Preutstoric: Worsaae, Nordiske Oldsager t Kjoben- havn, 1854; Perrin, Etude prehistorique—Age du bronze, 1870. ChassicaL: Layard, Nineveh and Babylon, 1858 ; Tane's and Wilkinson's works on Ancient Egypt; Pliny, Natural History, book xxxiv.; Broéndsted, Den Fikoroniske Cista, 1847 ; Daremberg, Dictionnaire des Antiquités, '*Ceelatura," in course of publication ; Gerhard, various monographs, 1843-67; Miller, Etrusker, &c., and other works; Ciampi, Del' Antica Toreutica, 1815. MEDImVAL; Digby Wyatt, Metal- Work of the Middle Ages, 1849; Shaw, Orna- mental Metal- Work, 1836 ; Drury Fortnum, S.K.M. Handbook of Bronzes, 1877 ; King, Orfévrerie et owvrages en metal du moyen dge, 1852-4; Hefner-Alteneck, Serrwrerie du moyen age, 1869; Viollet-le-duc, Diet. du mobilier, ''Serrurerie" and " Orfévrerie," 1858, &c.; Lacroix, Trésor de S. Denis, and L' Art du moyen dge (various dates); Karch, Die Réthselbilder an der Broneethiire zu Augsburg, 1869; Krug, Entwiirfe fir Gold-, Silber-, und Bronze- Arbeiter (no date); Linas, Orfévrerie Meérovingienne, 1864, and Orfévrerie du XIII™ Siéele, 1856; Bordeaux, Serrurerie du moyen age, 1858; Didron, Manuel des auvres de bronze et aor- féorerie du moyen age, 1859; Du Sommerard, Arts au moyen age, 1838-46, and Musée de Oluny, 1852; Durand, 7'résor de Véglise de Saint Mare & Venise, 1862; Albert Way, Gold Retable of Basle, 1848; Rico y Sinobas, Trabajos de metales, 1871; Blanchard, Portes du Baptistere de Florence, 1858; Bock, Die Goldsehmicdekunst des Mittelalters, 1855, and

Kleinodten des Heil.-Rénisehen Reiches ; Jouy, Les gemmes et les joyanx, 1865; Litbke, Works of Peter Visscher, 1877; Adelung, Die Thiiren zu S. Sophia in Novgorod, 1824; Wanderer, Adam Krafft and his Sehool, 1868; Nesbitt, “Bronze door of Gnesen Cathedral,” Areh. Jour., vol. ix.; Rossi, Tre porte di bronzo di Pisa; Digot, articlesin Bulletin Monumental,

METAP

|i term metaphysic, originally intended to mark the

place of a particular treatise in the collection of Aristotle’s works, has, mainly owing to a misunderstanding, survived several other titles,—such as “ First Philosophy,” “Ontology,” and “Theology,” which Aristotle himself used or suggested. Neo-Platonic mystics interpreted it as signifying that which is not merely “after” but “beyond” physics, and found in it a fit designation for a science which, as they held, could not be attained except by one who had turned his back upon the natural world. And writers of a different tendency in a later time gladly accepted it as a convenient nickname for theories which they regarded as having no basis in experience, in the same spirit in which the great German minister Stein used the analogous title of ‘‘ metapolitics ” for airy and unpractical schemes of social reform. A brief indication of the contents of Aristotle’s treatise may enable us to give a general definition of the science which was first distinctly constituted by it, and to determine in what sense the subjects which that science has to consider are beyond nature and experience. .

For Aristotle, metaphysic is the science which has to do with Being as such, Being in general, as distinguished from the special sciences which deal with special forms of being. There are certain questions which, in Aristotle’s view, we have a right to ask in regard to everything that

MET 79

vols, xii.~~xvi.; Catalogue of works of art in metal exhibited in 1861 at Ironmongers’ Hall; Texier, Diettonnatre @’ Orfévrerie, 1857 ; Virgil Solis, Designs for Gold~~ and Silver-Smiths, 1512 (facsimile reproduction, 1862). PracricAL TREATISES: Theophilus, Diver- sarum

METAMORPHOSIS. This term has been employed in several distinct senses in biology. During the early part of the century it was constantly used to include the current morphological conceptions, as, for instance, of the parts of a flower as modified or “metamorphosed ” leaves, or of the segments of a skull as modified vertebra. It is still frequently employed to denote that progressive change from the general to the special undergone by all developing tissues and organs (see BioLocy, EMBRYOLOGY), but in this sense is conveniently superseded by the term “differentiation.” In the process of animal development, two types are broadly distinguishable,—a fcetal type, in which development takes place wholly or in greater part either within the egg or within the body of the parent, and a larval type, in which the young are born in a condition more or less differing from that of the adult, while the adult stage again is reached in one of two ways, either by a process of gradual change, or by a succession of more or less rapid and striking transformations, to which the term metamorphosis is now usually restricted. Metamorphosis is generally regarded as having been brought about by the action of natural selection, partly in curtailing and reducing the phases of development (an obvious advantage in economy of both structural and functional change), and partly also in favouring the acquirement of such sccondary characters as are advan- tageous in the struggle for existence. Freshwater and terrestrial animals develop without metamorphosis much more frequently than marine members of the same group, a circumstance which has been variously explained. For details of metamorphoses see the articles on the various groups of animals; see also Balfour’s Comparative Hm- bryology, 1880-81.

HYSIC

presents itself as real. We may ask what is its ideal nature or definition, and what are the conditions of its realization ; we may ask by what or whom it was produced, and for what end; we may ask, in other words, for the formal and the material, for the efficient and the final causes of everything that is. These different questions point to different elements in our notion of Being, elements which may be considered in their general relations apart from any particular case of their union. These, therefore, the first philosophy must investigate. But, further, this science of being cannot be entirely separated from the science of knowing, but must determine at least its most general

principles. For the science that deals with what is most universal in being is, for that very reason, dealing with the objects which are most nearly akin to the intelligence. These, indeed, are not the objects which are first presented to our minds ; we begin with the particular, not the universal, with a zparov jyiv which is not tpérov gvoer; but science reaches its true form only when the order of thought is made one with the order of nature, and the particular is known through the universal. Yet this conversion or revolution of the intellectual point of view is not to be regarded as an absolute change from error to truth ; for Aristotle holds that nihil est in rntellectu quod non prius in sensu, in the meaning that in sense perception there is already the working of that discriminative intelli-

gence! which, beginning in sense perception, with the dis- tinction of particular from particular, can rest only when it has apprehended things in their universal forms or defini- tions. Looking at knowledge formally, the highest law of thought, the law of contradiction (or, as we might call it, to indicate Aristotle's meaning more exactly, the law of de- finition or distinction), is already implied in the first act of perception by which one thing is distinguished from another. Looking at it materially, the reason of man is to be con- ceived as potentially all that is knowable ; 2.¢., objects are so related to it that for it to know them in their essential definitions is only to know itself. The aim of science, in this view, is to break through the husk of matter, and to apprehend things in their forms, in which they are one with the mind that knows them. Hence also it follows that in rising to the most universal science, the science of Being in general, the mind is not leaving the region of immediate experience, in which it is at home, for a far-off region of abstractions. Rather it is returning to itself, apprehend- ing that which is most closely related to itself, and which therefore, though it is late in being made the direct object of investigation, is yet presupposed in all that is, and is known.?

Metaphysic, then, is the science which deals with the principles which are presupposed in all being and knowing, though they are brought to light only by philosophy. Another trait completes the Aristotelian account of it. It is theology, or the science of God. Now God is vénots voyoews, pure self-

consciousness, the absolute thought which is one with its object, and He is therefore the first cause of all existence. For, while the world of nature is a world of motion and change, in which form is realized in matter, this process of the finite can be explained only by referring it back to an unmoved mover, in whom there is no distince- tion of matter and form, and who is, therefore, in Aristotle's view, to be conceived as pure form, the purely ideal or theoretic activity of a consciousness whose object is itself. Such a conception, however, while it secures the independ- ence and absoluteness of the unmoved mover, by removing him from all relation to what is other than himself, seems to make his connexion with the world inexplicable. We can on this theory refer the world to God, but not God to the world. Hence Aristotle seems sometimes to say that God is the first mover only as He is the last end after which all creation strives, and this leads him to attribute to nature a desire or will which is directed towards the good as its object or end.

Aristotle then brings together in his metaphysic three elements which are often separated from each other, and the connexion of which is far from being at once obvious. It is to him the science of the first principles of being. It is also the science of the first principles of knowing. Lastly, it is the science of God, as the beginning and end of all things, the absolute unity of being and thought, in which all the differences of finite thought and existence are either excluded or overcome.

To some this description of the contents of Aristotle's treatise, and especially the last part of it, may seem to be a confirmation of all the worst charges brought against metaphysic. For at both extremes this supposed science seems to deal with that which is beyond experience, and which therefore cannot be verified by it. It takes us back to a beginning which is prior to the existence as well as to the consciousness of finite objects in time and space, and on to an end to which no scientific prophecy based upon our consciousness of such objects can reach. In the

1 Advauis xpitixyn, Anal. Post., ii. 99d.

2 What is said here as to the intelligence is partly taken from the De Anima. 'he necessary qualifications of the above general state- ment of Aristotle's views will be given subsequently.

former aspect of it, it has to do with notions so abstract and general that it seems as if they could not be fixed or tested by reference to any experience, but must necessarily be the playthings of dialectical sophistry. In the latter aspect of it, it entangles us in questions as to the final cause and ultimate meaning of things, questions involving so comprehensive a view of the infinite universe in which we are insignificant parts that it seems as if any attempt to answer them must be for us vain and presumptuous, On both sides, therefore, metaphysic appears to be an attempt to occupy regions which are beyond the habitable space of the intelligible world—to deal with ideas which are either so vague and abstract that they cannot be fastened to any definite meaning, or so complex and far- reaching that they can never by any possibility be verified. For beings like men, fixed within these narrow limits of space and time, the true course, it would seem, is to "cultivate their gardens," asking neither whence they come nor whither they go, or asking it only within the possible limits of history and scientific prophecy. To go back to the beginning or on to the end is beyond them, even in a temporal, still more in a metaphysical, sense. That which is tpérov dice: escapes us even more absolutely than the prehistorical and pregeological records of man and his world. That which is voraroy dice. escapes us even more absolutely than the far-off future type of civilization, which social science vainly endeavours to anticipate. Our state is. best pictured by that early Anglican philosopher who compared it to a bird flying through a lighted room ''between the night and the night." The true aim of philosophy is, therefore, it would seem, to direct our thoughts to the careful exam- ination and utilization of the narrow space allotted to us by an inscrutable power, and with scientific self-restraint to refrain from all speculation either on first or on final causes.

The main questions as to the possibility and the nature of metaphysic, according to Aristotle's conception of it, may be summed up under two heads. We may ask whether we can in any sense reach that which is beyond experience, and, if so, whether this "beyond" is a first or a last principle, a pre-condition or a final cause of nature and experience, or both. The former question branches out into two, according as we look at metaphysic from the objective or the subjective side, or, to express the matter more

accurately, according as we consider it in relation to those natural objects which are merely objects of knowledge, or in relation to those spiritual objects which are also subjects of knowledge. We shall therefore consider meta- physic, first, in relation to science in general, and, secondly, in relation to the special science of psychology. The latter question also has two aspects ; for, while the idea of a first cause or principle points to the connexion between metaphysic and logic, the idea of a last principle or final cause connects metaphysic with theology. We shall there- fore consider in the third place the relation of metaphysic to logic, and in the fourth place its relation to religion and the philosophy of religion.

1. The Relation of Metaphysic to Science.—The beginnings of science and metaphysic are identical, though there is a sense in which it may be admitted that the metaphysical comes before the scientific or positive era. The first efforts of philosophy grasp at once at the prize of absolute knowledge. No sooner did the Greeks become dissatisfied with the pictorial synthesis of mythology by which their thoughts were first lifted above the confusion of particular things, than they asked for one universal principle which should explain all things. The Ionic school sought to find some one phenomenon of nature which might be used as the key to all other phenomena. The Eleatics, seeing the

Mier AP BY S 1 €

futility of making one finite thing the explanation of all other finite things, tried to find that explanation in the very notion of unity or being itself. We need not underestimate the speculative value of such bold attempts to sum up all the variety of the world in one idea, but it is obvious that they rather give a name to the problem than solve it, or that they put the very consciousness of the problem in place of the solution of it. Science is possible only if we can rise from the particular to the universal, from a subjective view of things as they immediately present themselves to us in perception to an objective determination of them through laws and principles which have no special relation to any particular set of events or to any one individual subject. But this is only one aspect of the matter. To advance from a conception of the world in ordine ad individuum to one in ordine ad universum, and so to

discount and eliminate what is merely subjective and.

accidental in our first consciousness of the world, is the beginning of knowledge. But little is gained unless the universal, which we reach through the negation of the particulars, is more than their mere negation; unless it is a law or principle by means of which we can explain the particulars. Now the defect of early philosophy was that its universal was “the one beyond the many,” not the ‘‘one in the many,”—in other words, that it was not a law or principle by which the particulars subsumed under it could be explained, but simply the abstraction of an element common to them. But the process of knowledge is a process that involves both analysis and synthesis, negation and reaffirmation of the particulars with which we start. If we exaggerate the former aspect of it, we enter upon the wa negatiwa of the mystics, the way of pure abstraction and negation, which would open the mind to the ideal reality of things simply by shutting it to all the perceptions of sensible phenomena. And, if we follow out this method to its legitimate result, we must treat the highest abstraction, the abstraction of Being, as if it were the sum of all reality, and the Neo-Platonic ecstasy in which all distinction, even the distinction of subject and object, is lost as the only attitude of mind in which truth can be apprehended.

In the philosophy of the Socratic school we find the first attempt at a systematic as opposed to an abstract theory— the first attempt to bring together the one and the many, and so to determine the former that it should throw light upon the latter. Yet even in Plato the tendency to oppose the universal to the particular is stronger than the tendency to relate them to each other, and in some of his dialogues, as, ¢.g., in the Phxdo, we find a near approach to that identification of the process of knowledge with abstraction which is the characteristic of mysticism. Aristotle, therefore, had some ground for taking the Platonic principle that “the real is the universal” in a sense which excludes the reality of the individual. Yet, though he detected Plato’s error in opposing the universal to the particular, and though, at the same time, he did not entirely lose sight of the truth which Plato had exagger-

_ated, that the particular is intelligible only through the universal, Aristotle was not able to escape the influence of that dualism which had marred the

philosophy of his predecessor. Hence the effect of his protest against a philosophy of abstraction was partly neutralized by his separation between the divine Being as pure form and nature as the unity of form and matter, and again by his separation of the pure reason which apprehends the forms of things from the perceptions of sense which deal with forms realized in matter. And after Aristotle's time the tendency of philosophy was more and more to withdraw from contact with experience. The Neo-Platonic philosophy, and the Christian theology which was so strongly

influenced by it, contained, indeed, an idea of the recon- ciliation of God and nature, and hence of form and matter, which must ultimately be fatal to dualism, and therefore to the method of mere abstraction. But the explicit meaning of the philosophy of the Middle Ages was still dualistic, and the mode in which the Aristotelian formule were wrought into the substance of Christian doctrine by the scholastics tended more and more to conceal that idea of the unity of opposites which was involved in Christianity. Hence medieval realism presented, in its most one-sided form, the doctrine that " the real is the universal," meaning by the universal nothing more than the abstract. And, as a natural consequence, the modern insurrection of the scientific spirit against scholasticism took its start from an equally bald and one-sided assertion of the opposite principle, that "the real is the individual," meaning by that the individual of immediate perception. If Platonism had dwelt too exclusively on one aspect of the process of knowledge, viz., that it seeks to rise above the particular, the sensible, the subjective, to the universal, the intelligible, the objective, as if in the latter alone were reality to be found, modern men of science learnt from their first nominalistic teachers to regard the universal as nothing more than an abbreviated expression for the particulars, and science itself as a mere generalization of the facts of sensible perception. But this view of scientific knowledge, as a mere reaflirma- 'tion of what: is immediately given in sense, is as imperfect as the opposite theory, which reduces it to the mere negation of what is so given. An ideal world utterly and entirely divorced from the phenomenal, and an ideal world which is simply a repetition of the phenomenal, are equally meaningless. The processes of science have both a negative and a positive side; they involve a nega- tion of the particular as it

is immediately presented in sense, but only with a view to its being reaffirmed with a new determination through the universal. The fact as it is first presented to us is not the fact as it is; for, though it is from the fact as given that we rise to the knowledge of the law, it is the law that first enables us to understand what the fact really means. Our first consciousness of things is thus, not an immovable foundation upon which science may build, but rather a hypothetical and self-con- tradictory starting-point of investigation, which becomes changed and transformed as we advance.

The nominalism of scientific men in modern times is due to two special causes, one of which has alrcady been mentioned. It is partly due to the traditions of a time when medizval realism was the great enemy of science. The Baconian protest against the “anticipation of nature ” was a relative truth when it was urged against a class of writers who supposed that true theories could be attained without regard to facts ; the Baconian assertion of the necessity of attending to axvomata media was tlie necessary correction of the tendencies of mystics, who supposed that philosophy could attain its end by grasping at once at absolute unity, and contented themselves, therefore, with a unity which did nothing to explain the differences. But, when the former was turned into the dogmatic assertion that the mind is, or ought to be, passive in the process of knowledge, as having in itself no principle for the explanation of things, and when the latter was turned into the dogmatic assertion that science can only proceed from part to part and never from the whole to the parts, these relative truths became a source of error. And this error was confirmed and increased by the mistaken views of those who first tried to correct it. For these, admitting that scientific truth is entirely derived from external experience, only ventured to assert the existence of a priort knowledge alongside of, and in addition to, that which is a posterzore. In other words, they sought in inner experience a basis for XVI — 1!

those beliefs which outward experience seemed unable to support. But this basis was soon found to be treacherous. Introspection, observation of the inner life as opposed to and distinguished from the outer life, could be only an observation of the facts of the individual consciousness as such; and to

base religion and morality on such a founda- tion was to treat God and right as subjective phenomena, which do not necessarily correspond to any objective reality. Nor was this conclusion really evaded by the assertion of the self-evidencing necessity of such ideas and beliefs, or of the principles upon which they are founded. For this necessity, as a subjective phenomenon, might be accounted for otherwise than by the supposition of their objective validity. Such scepticism, further, was favoured by the progress of science, which, as it advanced from physics to biology and sociology, became more and more in- consistent with the idea of an absolute breach between inner and outer experience, and narrowed the sphere which had been hitherto reserved for the former. Man, it was urged, is but a part in a greater whole, not exempted from the law of action and reaction which connects all parts of that whole with each other. His individual life contains only a few links in a chain of causation that goes back to a beginning and onward to an end of which he knows nothing. And, as Spinoza says, vis gua unaqueque res in existendo perseverat a causis externis infinite superatur. Hence to treat ideas which are only states of the individual consciousness as the explanation of the world, instead of treating them as phenomena to be explained by its relation to that world, seemed to be an absurdity. The particular beliefs and tendencies of the mind were to be regarded, not as ultimate facts in reference to which everything is to be interpreted, but rather as facts which are themselves to be referred to more general causes and laws. It thus appeared that the attempt to divide truth into an a posteriori and an a priori part, the latter of which should find its evidence in an inner experience as the former in an outer experience, is an illusive pro- cess. If the a priort is reduced to the level of the a posteriori, it becomes impossible to base on the a priori any beliefs that go beyond the range of subjective experience. If the self and the not-self are taken simply as different finite things, which we can observe in turn, their relations must be brought under the general laws of the connexion of finite things with each other; and the phenomena of mind must be treated, like the phenomena of matter, as facts to be accounted for according to these laws.

But this of itself indicates a way of escape both from the introspective theory and from the empiricism to which

it is opposed. For it suggests the question——What is the)

source of those very laws which guide the procedure of science in accounting for facts, psychological facts among others?) When a scientific psychologist of the modern school attempts to show how by habituation of the individual and the race the necessity of thought expressed in the law of causation was produced in the minds of the present generation of men, it is obvious that his whole investigation and argument presuppose the law whose genesis he is accounting for. A glaring instance of such circular reasoning is found in the writings of the most prominent representative of the school in the present day. Mr Spencer begins by laying down as a first postulate of science that necessity of thought must be taken as a criterion of truth. It is by the continual aid of this postulate that he constructs his system of nature, and finally his psychological theory of the development of consciousness in man. Yet the main object of this psychological theory seems to be to account for the very necessities with which the author starts. Obviously sucha

M i AP ey Fe ae

philosophy contains elements of which the author is imperfectly conscious; for it involves that mind is not only the last product but the first presupposition of nature, or, in other words, that in mind nature returns upon its first principle. But to admit this is at once to lift the conscious being as such above the position which he would hold as merely a finite part of a finite world. It is to assert that nature has an essential relation to a con- sciousness which is developed in man, and that in the growth of this consciousness we have, not an evolution which is the result of the action of nature as a system of external causes upon him, but an evolution in which nature is really “coming to itself,” 7.¢, coming to self-conscious- ness, in him.

Now it was Kant who first—though with a certain limitation of aim—brought this idea of the relativity of thought and being to the consciousness of the modern world. In the Critique of Pure Reason, thought, indeed, is not set up as an absolute priws, in relation to which all existence must be conceived, but it is set up as the prius of experience, and so of all existences which are objects of our knowledge. Experience is for Kant essentially relative to the conscious self; it exists through the necessary subsumption of

the forms and matter of sense under the categories, as, on the other hand, the consciousness of self is recognized as essentially dependent on this process. On this view, the a priori and a posteriori factors of experience do not really exist apart as two separate portions of knowledge. If they are severed, each loses all its mean- ing. Perceptions in themselves are void; categories in themselves are empty. We do not look outwards for one kind of truth and inwards for another, nor do we even, by an external process, bring facts given as contingent under principles recognized as necessary ; but the a prior is the condition under which alone the a posteriori exists for us. Even if it is allowed that the facts of inner and outer experience contain a contingent element or matter, given under the conditions of time and space, yet neither time nor space nor the facts of experience conditioned by them exist for us except as elements of an experience which is organized according to the categories.

This is the essential truth which Kant had to express. It is marred in his statement of it by the persistent influence of the abstract division between contingent matter given from without and necessary principles supplied from within, a division essentially inconsistent with the attempt to show that the contingent matter is necessarily subsumed under these principles, and indeed exists for us only as it is so subsumed. But Kant himself puts into our hands the means of correcting his own inadequacy, when he reduces the inaccessible thing in itself, which he at first speaks of as affecting our sensibility and so giving rise to the contingent matter of experience, to a noumenon (voovpevov) which is projected by reason itself. The Dialectic exhibits the idea of thought as not only constituting finite experience but also reaching beyond it, though as yet only in a negative way. The mind is, on this view, so far unlimited that it knows its own limits ; it is conscious of the defects of its experience, of the con- tingency of its sensible matter, and the emptiness and finitude of its categories; and by reason of this conscious- ness it is always seeking in experience an ideal which it is impossible to realize there. Thought measures experience by its own nature, and finds it wanting. It demands a kind of unity or identity in its objects which it is unable to find in the actual objects of experience. It is this demand of reason which lifts man above a mere animal existence, and forces him by aid of the categories to determine the matter of sense as a

world of objects ; yet, as this finite world of experience can never satisfy the demand

=

MinPTAPAYSs IC

of reason, the consciousness of it is immediately com- bined with the consciousness of its limited and phenomenal character. The student of the Critique of Pure Reason cannot but recognize the strange balance between the real and the phenomenal in which it ends, allowing to man the consciousness of each so far as to enable him to see the defects of the other, —so that by aid of the pure identity of reason he can criticize and condemn the “blindness” or unresolved difference of experience, and by means of the concreteness and complexity of experience he can condemn the “‘empty” identity of reason.

In order, however, to understand the full bearing of Kant’s criticism of knowledge, and at the same time to find the meeting-point of the opposite currents of thought which alternately prevail in it, it will be necessary to consider the subject a little more closely. The lesson of the Critique may be gathered up into two points. In the first place, it is a refutation of the ordinary view of experience as something immediately given for thought and not con- stituted by it. In the second place, it is a demonstration of the merely phenomenal character of the objects of experience, 7.¢., the demonstration that the objects of experience, even as determined by science, are not things in themselves. Both these results require to be kept clearly in view if we would understand the movement of thought excited by Kant. On the one hand Kant had to teach that what is ordinarily regarded as real, the world of experience, is transcendently ideal, 7.¢., is determined as real by a priori forms of thought. On the other hand he had to teach that the world so determined is empirically and not transcendentally real, 7.¢., its reality is merely phenomenal. With the former lesson he met the man of science, and compelled him to renounce his materialistic explanation of the world as a thing which exists in independence of the mind that knows it. The world we know is a world which exists only as it exists for us, for the thinking subject; hence the thinking subject, the ego, cannot be taken as an object like other objects, an object the phenomena of which are to be

explained like other phenomena by their place in the connexion of experience. Having, however, thus repelled scientific materialism by the proof that the reality of experience is ideal, Kant refuses to proceed to the complete identification of reality with ideality, and meets the claims of the metaphysician with the assertion that the reality of experience is merely phenomenal. Hence he rejects any idealism that would involve the negation of things in themselves beyond phenomena, or the identification of the objects of experience with these things. The reality we know is a reality which exists only for us as conscious subjects, but this, though it is the only reality we can know, is not the absolute reality.

It is, however, to be observed that the nature of this opposition between phenomena and things in themselves seems to change as we advance from the Analytic, where the existence of such things is presupposed, to the Dialectic, where the grounds of that presupposition are examined. At first the opposition seems to be between what is present in consciousness and what is absolutely beyond conscious- ness. The matter of experience is regarded as given exter- nally in the affections of the sensible subject,—affections caused by an unknown thing in itself, of which, however, they can tell us nothing. On the other hand the form of experience, the categories and principles of judgment which turn these affections into objects of knowledge, are not pure expressions of the real nature, the pure identity, of the subject in itself, but only products of the identity of the self in relation to the sensibility and its forms of time and space. Hence, on both sides we must regard expe- rience as merely phenomenal, alike in relation to the

noumenal object and in relation to the noumenal subject, which lurk behind the veil and send forth into expe- rience on the one side affections which become objects through their determination by the unity of thought, and on the other side an identity of thought which becomes self-conscious in relation to the objects so determined by itself.

Kant, however, having thus answered the question of the possibility of experience by reference to two things in themselves which are out of experience, is obliged to ask himself how the consciousness of these two things in themselves, and the criticism of experience in relation to them, is

possible. And here, obviously, the opposition can no longer be conceived as an opposition between that which is and that which is not in consciousness. For the things in themselves must be present to consciousness in some fashion in order that they may be contrasted with the phenomena. If, therefore, phenomena are now regarded as unreal, it must be because we have an zdea of reality to which the reality of experience does not fully correspond. In the Analytic Kant had beenspeaking as if the real con- sisted in something which is not present to the conscious subject at all, though we, by analysis of his experience, can refer to it as the cause of that which is so present. Now in the Dialectic he has to account for the fact that the conscious subject himself is able to transcend his experience, and to contrast the objects of it as phenomenal with things in themselves.

Now it is obvious that such an opposition is possible only so far as the thought, which constitutes experience, is at the same time conscious of itself in opposition to the experience it constitutes. The reason why experience is condemned as phenomenal is, therefore, not because it is that which exists for thought as opposed to that which does not exist for thought, but because it imperfectly corresponds to the determination of thought in itself. In other words, it is condemned as unreal, not because it is ideal, but because it is cmperfectly ideal. And the absolute reality is represented, not as that which exists without relation to thought, but as that which is identical with the thought for which it is. In the Dvalectic, therefore, the noumenon is substituted for the thing in itself, and the noumenon is, as Kant tells us, the object as it exists for an intuitive or perceptive understanding, 7.¢., an under- standing which does not synthetically combine the given matter of sense into objects by means of categories, but whose thought is one with the existence of the objects it knows. It is the idea of such a pure identity of knowing and being, as suggested by thought itself, which leads us to regard our actual empirical knowledge as imperfect, and its objects as not, in an absolute sense, real objects. The noumena are not, therefore, the unknown causes by whose action and reaction conscious experience is produced ; they represent a unity of thought with itself to which it finds: experience inadequate. This higher unity of thought with itself is what Kant calls reason, and he identifies it with the faculty of syllogizing. Further, he finds in the three forms of syllogism a guiding thread which brings him to the recognition of

three forms in which the pure unity of reason presents itself to us in opposition to the merely synthetic unity of experience, a psychological, a cosmo- logical, and a theological form. In each of these cases the empirical process of knowledge is accompanied, guided, and stimulated by an idea which nevertheless it is unable to realize or verify. In psychology we have ever present to us an idea of the identity of the self, which is never realized in our actual self-consciousness, because the self of which we are conscious is manifold in its states and because it stands in relation to an external world. The idea of simple identity is, therefore, something we may set

before us as the goal of an ideal psychology, to which we may approximate in so far as we can trace unity of faculty through all the differences of mental phenomena, but to which we can never attain owing to the nature of the matter with which we deal. Again, in our scientific attempts to explain our external experience, the unity of reason takes the form of an idea of the world as a completed infinite whole, which contains all. the objects known to us and all other possible objects ; but this cannot be realized in an experience which is conditioned by space and time, and is, therefore, ever incomplete. The idea of totality is, therefore, an ideal, which guides and stimulates our scientific progress, without which such a thing as science could not exist, but which at the same time can never be realized by science. Lastly, the unity of reason takes a third form in which identity and totality are combined,— as the idea of a unity in which all differences, even the difference of subject and object, are transcended,—the idea of a unity of all things with each other and with the mind that knows them. This idea also is one which science can neither surrender nor realize. It cannot surrender it without giving up that striving after unity without which science would not exist; and it cannot realize it, for the difference between the world, as it is presented to us in actual experience, and the subjective determination of our thinking consciousness cannot be overcome. We can, indeed, use the idea that the world is an organic whole, determined in relation to an end which consciousness sets for itself, as an heuristic principle to guide us in following the connexion of things with each other ; but, as we cannot by means of any such idea anticipate what the facts of external experience will be, so we cannot prove that for a mind other than ours the unity of things

which we repre- sent in this way might not take a quite different aspect. Indeed we have reason to think it would; for, while we always think of a designing mind as using materials which have an existence and nature independent of the purposes to which they are put, the absolute mind must be conceived as creating the materials themselves by the same act whereby they are determined to an end. We must con- ceive it, in short, as an intuitive understanding for which end and means, objective and subjective, are one, or, in other words, as an intelligence whose consciousness of itself is or contains the existence of all that is object for it.

This new view of the things in themselves as nowmena or ideals of reason involves a new attitude of thought towards them different from that dogmatic attitude which is provisionally adopted in the Analytic. Accordingly, we now find Kant speaking of them, not as things which exist independently of their being conceived, but as " prob- lematical conceptions" of which we cannot even determine whether they correspond to any objects at all. They are "'limitative" notions which have a negative value, in so far as they keep open a vacant space beyond experience, but do not enable us to fill that space with any positive realities. They are like dark lanterns which cast light upon the empirical world, and show what are its boundaries, but leave their own nature in obscurity. All that we can say of the noumenal self or subject is that it corresponds to the unity implied in all knowledge, but whether there is such a self, independent of the process of empirical synthesis and the self-consciousness which accompanies that process, we cannot tell. All that we can say of the noumenal reality of the objective world is that it corresponds to the idea of the objects of experience as a completed whole in them- selves apart from the process whereby we know them, but whether there is any such real world independent of the process of experience it is impossible to say. Lastly, all that we can say of God is that He corresponds to the idea

of the unity of all things with the mind that knows them,— an ideal which is involved in all knowledge,—but whether the realization of this idea in an intuitive understanding is even possible we have no means of determining, how- ever we may suspect that understanding and sensibility are "branches

springing from the same unknown root." The Criticism of Pure Reason ends, therefore, in a kind of seesaw between two forms of consciousness—a thinking consciousness, which transcends experience and sets before us an idea of absolute reality, but which cannot attain to any knowledge or even certitude of any object corresponding to this idea, and an empirical conscious- ness, which gives us true knowledge of its objects, but whose objects are determined as merely phenomenal and not absolutely real.

The equipoise thus maintained between the empirical and the intelligible world is, however, in the Criteque of Practical Reason, overbalanced in favour of the latter. What the theoretical reason could not do "in that it was weak through the flesh," through its dependence on the very empirical consciousness which it sought to transcend, is possible to the practical reason, because it is primarily determined by itself. In our moral consciousness we find ourselves under a law which calls upon us to act as beings who are absolutely self-determined or free, and which, therefore, assures us that our intelligible self is our real self, and conclusively determines our empirical self in contrast with it as phenomenal. Thus the moral law gives reality to the intelligible world; or, as Kant expresses it, "the idea of an intelligible world is a point of view beyond the phenomenal which the reason sees itself compelled to take up, in order to think of itself as practical." In other words, the moral law presupposes freedom or determination in the rational being as such, and makes him regard him- self, not merely as a link in the chain of conditioned existences in time and space, but as the original source of his own life. The blank space beyond the phenomenal thus begins to be filled up by the idea of a free causality. which again postulates a world adequate and conform- able to itself. And the man who, as an empiric individu- ality, is obliged to regard himself merely as an individual being determined by other individual beings and things is authorized as a moral being to treat this apparent necessity as having its reality in freedom, and to look upon himself as the denizen of a spiritual world where nothing is determined for him from without which is not simply the expression of his own self-determination from within. "Thus we have found, what Aristotle could not find, a fixed point on which reason can set its lever, not in any present or future world, but in its own inner idea of freedom,—a point fixed for it by the immovable moral law, as a secure basis from which it can move the human will, even against the opposition

of all the powers of nature.”! Starting from this idea of freedom, therefore, Kant proceeds to reconstruct for faith the unseen world, which in the Critique of Pure Reason he had denied as an object of knowledge. Nor is he content to leave the two worlds in sharp antithesis to each other, but even in the Critique of Practical Reason, and still more in the Critique of Judgment, he brings them into relation to each other, and so gives to theoretical reason a kind of authority to use for the explanation of the phenomenal world those ideas which of itself it might be inclined to regard as illusive.

In all this, however, it is difficult to avoid seeing a partialretractation of Kant’s first viewas to the irreconcilable opposition of the phenomenal and the noumenal. For, in the first place, the moral imperative is addressed to a self

1 Kant, i, 638 (Rosenkranz’s edition).

mrt AP a YS 7 0

which is at one and the same time regarded in both characters, and which is called upon to subsume under the moral law acts which otherwise derive their character and

meaning from the relations of the phenomenal world. That |

the particular nature of men as phenomenal individuals can be the means of realizing the universal law of reason is

implied in all Kant’s statements of the latter, and particu- |

larly in his conception of men as constituting together a “kingdom of ends”; for it is difficult to conceive this kingdom otherwise than as an organic unity of society, in

which each individual, by reason of his special tendencies |

and capacities, has a definite office to fulfil in realizing ©

the universal principle that binds all the members of the kingdom to each other. The summum bonum, again, 1s said to consist in the union of

happiness with goodness, i.e. of the empirical conditions of man's individual life as a sensible subject with the pure self-determination of the intelligible self; and God is postulated as a Deus ex machina to bind together these two unrelated elements,— a conception which shows the difficulty into which Kant

85

experience without enabling us to transform it; they must show how ideas of the supersensible can so far be present to our thought as to make visible the boundaries of the prison of sense in which we are confined, without in any way enabling us to escape from it.

Is this possible? We may gather up the Kantian antithesis in the assertion that experience is the imperfect

| realization of an ideal of knowledge, derived from reason,

with materials, derived from sense and understanding, the nature of which is such that they can never be brought into correspondence with the ideal. But this ideal, in all its three forms, as we have seen, is simply the idea of a pure

unity or identity in which all differences are lost or

has brought himself by defining them as unrelated. Still |

more obvious is the effort of Kant to get beyond the

Judgment. For in that work he maintains that the con- sciousness of the beautiful and the sublime is or involves a harmony of the understanding or the reason with sense ; and, what is still more important, he points out that the

ciliation of freedom and necessity, of the intelligible and the phenomenal. our moral consciousness to apply to the whole course of the things in the phenomenal world, and so to regard it as a process to realize the moral ideal. No doubt he again partially retracts this view when he declares that

we must treat the idea of final causality as merely a subjective principle of judgment, which, even in the case of living beings, is to be regarded only as necessary for us as finite intelligences. But such saving clauses, in which Kant recurs to the dualism with which he started, cannot hide from us how near he has come to the renunciation of it. —

When we regard Kant in this way as asserting from one point of view an absolute limit which from another point of view he permits us to transcend, it becomes obvious that his philosophy is in an unstable equilibrium, which cannot but be disturbed by any one who attempts to develop or even to restate his ideas. Hence we need not wonder that those who take in earnest his denunciations of any attempt to transcend experience generally,—like Professor Huxley,—reject as worthless all Kant's later work; and that, on the other side, those who take in earnest his ideas of freedom, of organic unity, of an intuitive under, standing, and of a summum bonum in which freedom and. necessity meet together, are compelled to break through the arbitrary line which he drew between knowledge and belief. In favour of the former course it is easy in many places to appeal to the letter of Kant. In favour of the latter it need only be pointed out that, in Kant's view, all experience rests upon, or is in its development guided by, those ideas which yet he will not permit us to treat as sources of knowledge. Hence the principles of the Critique cannot legitimately be used against metaphysic, except by those who are prepared to admit the ideas of reason, up to the point to which he admits them, as ideas that limit and direct our experience, —while rejecting all use of them to cast light upon that which is beyond experience. In other words, they must maintain the possibility of a purely negative knowledge, of the knowledge of a limit by one who yet cannot go beyond it. They must show how we

can have an ideal of knowledge which enables us to criticize | itself the pattern.

This idea, he argues, we are authorized by |

dissolved—whether they be the differences of the inner or of the outer life, or finally the difference of inner and outer, subjective and objective, from each other. Kant's view therefore is, in effect, this, that thought carries with it the consciousness ofan identity or unity, to which our actual experience in

none of its forms fully corresponds. On the other hand, Kant does not hesitate equally to con- demn the identity of thought as “empty” and subjective,

because it does not contain in itself nor can evolve from dualism of his first view of things in the Critique of |

itself the complex matter of experience. But this alternate condemnation of experience as unreal from the point of view of the ideas, and of the ideas as unreal from

the point of view of experience, seems to show that both are | unreal, as being abstract elements, which have no value save idea of organic unity, without which we cannot explain the | phenomena of life, contains in it a possibility of the recon. |

in their relation to each other, and which lose all their mean- ing when separated from the unity to which they belong. According to this view, ideas and experience, noumena and phenomena, if they are opposed, are also necessarily related to each other. If our empirical consciousness of the world of objects in space and time, as determined by the categories, does not correspond to the unity or identity of thought which is our ideal of knowledge, yet that idea of unity or identity is set up by thought in relation to experience, and cannot, therefore, be essentially irrecon- cilable with it. The two terms may be opposed, but their opposition cannot be absolute, seeing that they are in essential relation to each other. It is a great logical error not to discern that a negative relation is still a relation, i.e., that it has a positive unity beyond it. This positive unity may not, indeed, be consciously present to us. in our immediate apprehension of the relation in question, but it is necessarily implied init. Now it is just because, in his separation of noumena and phenomena, Kant omits to note their essential relativity that he is forced to regard the former as a set of abstract identities of which nothing can be known, and the latter as the imperfect products of a synthesis which can never be completed or brought to a true unity. Yet the value of his whole treatment of the ideas of reason in relation to our intellectual and moral experience arises from the fact that in practice he does not hold to this abstract separation of the two elements. Ideas absolutely incommensurable with experience could neither stimulate nor

guide our empirical synthesis; they could not even be brought into any connexion with it. When, therefore, Kant brings them into this connexion, he necessarily alters their meaning. Hence the pure abstract identity which excludes all difference is changed, in its application, into the idea of an organic unity, of which the highest type is found in self-consciousness, with its trans- parent difference of the subjective and objective self. It would be absurd and meaningless to say that science seeks to reduce experience to an abstract identity, in which there is no difference, unless for this were tacitly substituted what is really an entirely different proposition, that science seeks to find in the infinitely diversified world of space and time that unity in difference of which self-consciousness has 1n It is in reference to the former kind

of identity—the abstract oneness of formal logic—that Kant proves that it is impossible for experience to be made adequate to ideas. But it is only of the latter kind of identity—the oneness of self-consciousness—that it can be said that it furnishes a guiding principle to scientific investigation or an ideal of knowledge. The same con- fusion is still more evident in Kant's account of our moral experience, in dealing with which he directly attempts to get synthetic propositions out of the pure identity of reason, in other words, to draw definite moral laws out of the logical principle of non-contradiction. Whatever success he attains is gained by substituting for the formal principle of self-consistency the positive idea of consistency with the self, and again by conceiving this self as a concrete individual, the member of a society, and so standing in essential relation to other selves. The pure abstraction from all the external results of action and from all motives of desire, which at the beginning of the Metaphysic of Ethics Kant declares to be essential to morality, is modified and indeed transformed, as we go on, by the admissions that other rational beings are not external to us in any sense that excludes their good from being an end of our endeavour, and that the desires are no¢ irrational and immoral except in so far as they are directed to the pleasures of the sensuous individual (which in a conscious being they never entirely are). Both in the speculative and in the practical sphere, therefore, the absolute opposi- tion of the ideal or noumenal to the empirical disappears, as soon as Kant attempts to apply it.

For in both the abstract identity of formal logic, which is really the meaning of the noumenon as absolutely opposed to and incommensurable with experience, gives way to the unity of self-consciousness,—a unity which is so far from being absolutely opposed to the difference of the empirical consciousness that it necessarily implies it. For self- consciousness presupposes the consciousness of objects ; though it is opposed to that consciousness, it is essentially correlated with it, and therefore its opposition cannot be regarded as absolute, or incapable of being transcended. These considerations may throw some light on the relation of the Analytic and Dialectic of Kant, and on the nature of the opposition of noumenon and phenomenon as it is presented in the latter. In the deduction of the categories, Kant pointed out the essential relation of the objective world of experience to what he called the "transcendental unity of apperception"; ze, he pointed out that the unity of consciousness is implied in all its objects. This unity, he further showed, must be conceived as "capable of self-consciousness "; but it actually becomes conscious of self only in relation, though also in opposi- tion, to the other objects determined by it. Now itis this consciousness of itself in opposition to other objects which is the source of Kant's "ideas of reason," of the dissatisfac- tion of the mind with its empirical knowledge, even in its scientific form, and of the demand for a higher kind of know- ledge to which experience is not adequate. That a standard is set up for experience by which it is condemned is simply a result of the further development of that unity which is implied in experience—a result of the progress of thought from consciousness to self-consciousness, and of the contrast between the former and the latter. The problem with which Kant's Dialectic attempts to deal, and which it treats as insoluble, is, therefore, simply the problem of raising con- scrousness to the form of self-consciousness ; in other words, of attaining to a knowledge of the world of experience as not merely a "synthetic," and therefore imperfect, unity of things external to each other, but as an organic unity of transparent differences, a self-differentiating, self-integrating unity, such as seems to be presented to us in pure self-consciousness, Nor can this problem be regarded as insoluble ; for the

ME ETAPH Y-S he

unity of self-consciousness is identical with the unity of consciousness ; it is only that unity become self-conscious, Hence the point of view at which consciousness and self- consciousness seem to be absolutely opposed to each other,— the highest point of view which Kant distinctly reaches,— can be regarded only as a stage of transition from the point at which their relative difference and opposition is not yet developed to the point at which they are seen to be the factors or elements of a still higher unity.

The later philosophy of Germany, from Kant to Hegel, is little more than the development of the idea just stated in its twofold aspect. In the first place, it is an attempt to show what is involved in the idea of thought or self- consciousness as in itself an organic whole, a many-in-one, a unity which expresses itself in difference, yet so that the difference remains transparent, and therefore is immediately recognized as expression of the unity. In the second place, it isan attempt to bridge over the difference between thought or self-consciousness and the external world of experience, and to show that this opposition also is subordinated toa higher unity. Or, to put it more directly, the idealistic philosophy of Germany seeks, on the one hand, to develop a logic or metaphysic which bases itself, not, like formal logic, on the idea of bare identity, but on the idea of self-consciousness; and, on the other hand, to show, in a philosophy of nature and spirit, how, by means of this logic, the opposition of thought to its object, or of the a priori to the a posteriort in knowledge, may be transcended. In the third and fourth sections of this article something more will be said of the manner in which this task was fulfilled. Here only a few words are necessary to sum up the results reached, and to give more distinctness to the new ideal of knowledge which those results suggest. We have seen that Kant’s critical attitude , involved two things,—on the one hand, the assertion that the existence we know is necessarily existence for thought, and, on the other hand, the denial that that which exists for our thought is absolute reality, a denial which again involves the presence to our thought of an ideal of know- ledge, by which our actual knowledge is condemned. This ideal, however, was falsely conceived by Kant as an identity without any difference, and, in this sense, he does not hesitate to apply it even to self-consciousness itself. For, in a remarkable passage,! he attempts to prove that the consciousness of self is not a knowledge of the self, by a simple reference to the duality of the self knowing and the self

known, arguing that the ego “stands in its own way,” just because it exists only for téself, 2.e., because in knowing itself it presupposes itself. Kant evidently thinks that to know the real self it would be necessary to apprehend it in simple identity as purely an object without reference to a subject, or purely a subject without reference to an object. Yet to this it seems sufficient to answer that such an object or subject would lose its character as object or subject and become equivalent to mere being in general, and that, as such being is a mere abstraction, to know it cannot be the ideal of knowledge. If therefore there be a unity or identity of thought which is not realized in ex- perience, and in reference to which we can regard experience as an imperfect form of knowledge, it cannot be found in this abstract identity of being. In truth, as we have seen, it is found in that very idea of self-consciousness which Kant is criticizing. Just because we are self-conscious, and there- fore oppose the unity of the conscious self to the manifold- ness of the world in space and time, do we seek in the world of space and time for a transparent unity which we cannot at first find there. But, when this is seen, we find in Kant himself the partial solution of the difticulty.

1 Kritik, p. 279 (Rosenkranz’s edition), ef. Hegel, v. p. 258.

Me TAPHYSIC

Gelf-consciousness presupposes consciousness ; for, while the apprehension of objects in consciousness 1s possible only ‘n relation to the unity of the self, yet it is only in relation to and distinction from these objects that we are conscious of that unity. Hence the two opposites, self and not-self, are bound together, and presuppose a unity which reveals itself in their opposition, and which, when made explicit, must reconcile them. If, therefore, self- consciousness, in its first opposition to consciousness, gives rise to an ideal of knowledge to which our empirical knowledge of objects is inadequate, this arises from the fact that not only empirical knowledge but also the ideal to which it is opposed is imperfect, or that they both point to a unity which is manifested in their difference, and which is capable of containing and resolving it. In other words, the opposition of science to its ideal, which Kant has stated in his Antinomies, is not an absolute opposition, but one the origin and end of which can be seen.

This opposition reaches its highest point in the con- trast between the transparent unity of self-consciousness, in which the difference of knower and known is evanescent, and the essential manifoldness and self-externality of the world in space, in which the differences seem to be insoluble. We must, indeed, think of self-consciousness as having life in itself and therefore as differentiating itself from itself; but this differentiation is held within the limit of its unity, it isa separation of movements which are separated only as they are united. On the other hand, the world in space presents itself as the sphere of external determination, in which things are primarily disunited and act only as they are acted on from without, and in which this external influence never goes so far as to destroy their reciprocal externality. In this sense it is that the opposition of mind and. matter was taken by Descartes, and it is a survival of the same mode of thought that leads many even now to draw absolute lines of division between a priort and a posteriort, between ideas and facts, between spiritual and natural. Kant and Fichte give a new aspect to the difficulty by showing that the difficulty is one of recon- ciling consciousness and self-consciousness, and that in consciousness there is already present the unity which is manifested in self-consciousness, as, on the other hand, it is only through consciousness and in opposition to it that self-consciousness is possible. And Fichte made a further step when he attempted to show that the categories and the forms of perception, time and space, which Kant had taken as inexplicable facts, are implied in this contrast of con- sciousness and self-consciousness. The error that clings to Fichte's speculations is, however, that he treats conscious- ness merely as a necessary illusion which exists simply with a view to self-consciousness, and hence is led to regard self-consciousness itself—because it is essentially related to this necessary illusion—as a schema or image of an unknowable absolute. In fact, in the end Fichte falls back upon the abstract identity in which Kant had found his noumenon, and so ends his philosophy with mysticism. Even Schelling, though he saw that the absolute unity must be one that transcends the difference of self and not- self, did not finally escape the tendency to merge all difference in absolute oneness. On the other hand, it was the endeavour of Hegel to proceed in the opposite way,— not to lose self-consciousness or subjectivity in a mere unity of substance, but rather to show that the absolute substance can be truly defined only as a self-conscious subject. And just because he did this he was prepared to take a further step, and to

regard the external world, not as Fichte regarded it, as merely the opposite of spirit, nor as Schelling regarded it, as merely the repetition and co-equal of spirit, but rather as its necessary manifestation

or as that in and through which alone it can realize itself. His doctrine therefore might be summed up in two proposi- tions,—first, that the absolute substance is spiritual or self- conscious, and, secondly, that the absolute subject or spirit can be conceived as realizing itself only through that very world of externality which at first appears as its opposite. Tn both respects Hegel's philosophy reverses the via nega- tiva of mysticism, and teaches that it is only through the exhaustion of difference that the unity of science, of which the mind contains in itself the certitude, is to be realized. For mind or spirit, viewed in itself, is conceived as a self- differentiating unity, a unity which exists only through opposition of itself to itself. And it is but a necessary result of such a conception that spirit can fully realize its unity only through a world which in the first instance must present itself as the extreme opposite of spirit. Hence the process of thought in itself, which is exhibited in the logic, ends in the opposition to thought of a world which is its negative counterpart. And the "absolute spirit" of Hegel is thus, not pure self-consciousness, but that more concrete unity of self-consciousness with itself which it attains through and by means of this world.

The effect of this view upon the relation of metaphysic to science, which we are at present considering, is noticeable. It does not, as is often supposed, supersede science by an a priori construction of the universe, nor does it leave the results of science unchanged and simply provide for it a deeper foundation. The latter was the point at which Kant and Fichte stopped; for, while they showed the relativity of experience to the principle of self-consciousness, they conceived that the function of metaphysic is completed in showing the phenomenal character of the objects of science, and in reserving a free space beyond the phe- nomenal world for "God, freedom, and immortality." Schelling, on the other hand, as he did not adopt this merely negative view of the relation of spirit to nature or of a priori to empirical truth, was obliged to reinterpret the latter by the former. As, however, he did not recog- nize any distinctions which were not merely

quantitative, he was led to apply the same easy key to every lock, and to think that he had explained all the different forms of existence, organic and inorganic, when he had merely pointed out a certain analogy between them. The meta- physic of Hegel, whatever may be said of the actual philosophy of nature produced by its author, contains no necessity for any such arbitrary procedure. In his Logie, indeed, he attempts to give us im abstracto the movement of thought in itself, from its simplest determination of being as qualitative or quantitative, through the reflective categories of substance and cause, up to its full conscious- ness of itself in its organic unity. And in so doing he of course gives us an account of the various categories which science uses in the interpretation of nature. He further attempts to show that the highest categories of science are in themselves imperfect and self-contradictory,—in other words, that they mark a stage of thought which falls short of that unity of being and knowing after which science is striving, and which is the presupposition as well as the goal of all intelligence. But, while he does this, he clearly acknowledges two things,—on the one hand that nature is essentially different from pure self-consciousness, and that therefore logic can never by direct evolution of its categories anticipate the investiga- tions of science, and, in the second place, that the final interpretation of nature through the highest categories presupposes its interpretation by the lower categories, and cannot be directly achieved without it. In other words, ee eee Ee

1 This subject—the progress of thought from lower to higher cate- gories and methods—will be more fully discussed in the third section.

science must first determine the laws of nature according to the principles of causality and reciprocity, ere philosophy can be in a position to discover the ultimate meaning of nature by the aid of higher principles. “The philosophy of nature,” says Hegel, “takes up the material which physical science by direct dealing with experience has prepared for it at the point to which science has brought it, and again transforms this formed material without going back to experience to verify it. Science must, therefore, work into the hands of philosophy, in order that philosophy in its turn may translate the lower universality of the understanding realized by science into

the higher universality of reason, and may show how in the light of this higher universality the intelligible world takes the aspect of a whole which has its necessity in itself. The philosophic way of looking at things is not a capricious attempt, once ina way for a change, to walk upon one's head after one has got tired of walking upon one's feet, or

to transform one's work-a-day face by painting it over; |

but, just because the scientific manner of knowing does not satisfy the whole demand of intelligence, philosophy must supplement it by another manner of knowing." !

The result then may be briefly expressed thus. Kant

and his successors showed the relativity of the object of |

knowledge to the knowing mind. He thus pointed out that the ordinary consciousness, and even science, are abstract and imperfect modes of knowing, in so far as in their determination of objects they take no account of a factor which is always present, to wit, the knowing subject. For their purposes, indeed, this abstraction is justifiable and necessary, for by it they are enabled within their pre- scribed limits to give a more complete view of these objects in their relation to each other than if the attempt had been made to regard them also in relation to the knowing

subject. At the same time the scientific result so arrived |

at is imperfect and incomplete, and it has to be recon- sidered in the light of a philosophy which retracts this provisional abstraction. or it must be remembered that the fact that science looks at things only in their relation to each other, and not to the knowing mind, narrows the points of view or categories under which it is able to regard them, or, in other words, limits the questions which the mind is able to put to nature. Just because science does not treat its objects as essentially related to the mind, it is unable to rise to what Hegel calls the point of view of reason, or of the "notion"; i.e. it is obliged to treat objects and their relations merely under a set of categories, the highest of which are those of causality and reciprocity, and it is incapable of attaining to the conception of their organic unity. In other

words, it is able to reach only a synthetic unity of given differences, and it cannot discover a principle of unity out of which the differences spring and to which they return. Now philosophy goes beyond science just because, along with the idea of the relativity of things to the mind, it brings in the conception of such a unity. Tts highest aim is, therefore, not merely, as Kant still held, to secure a place for the supersensible beyond the region of experience, but to reinterpret experience, in the light of a unity which is presupposed in it, but which cannot be made conscious or explicit until the relation of experience to the thinking self is seen,—the unity of all things with each other and with the mind that knows them.

2. Relation of Metaphysic to Psychology.—It has already been shown that the doctrine that the thinking subject is presupposed in all objects of knowledge—or, in other words, that existence means existence for a conscious self —1s not to be taken in a psychological sense. The idea that all science is based on psychology, and that, therefore,

1 Hegel, vii. p. 18.

metaphysic and psychology are identical, cannot be retained by any one who has entered into the full meaninggof the Kantian criticism. It is, however, so natural a mi8inter- | pretation of it, and it is so much favoured by the letter of | the very book in which it was first decisively refuted, that it will be useful to point out more directly the fallacy involved in it, especially as this will place us in a better position to determine the true relation of the two parts of philosophy thus confounded.

| The misunderstanding first took a definite form in the introduction to Locke's Hssay, in which he proposes to | provide against any undue application of the intellectual _ powers of man to problems which are too high for them, | by first examining and measuring the powers themselves. | Stated in this way, it is obvious that the proposal | involves an absurdity ; for we have nothing to measure with, except the very powers that are to be measured. To see round our knowledge and find its boundary, we must stand outside of it, and where is such a standing ground to be found? We cannot by knowing prescribe limits to _ knowledge, or, if we seem to be able to do so, it can only | be because we compare our actual knowledge with some idea of knowledge which we presuppose. In this way the ancient sceptics—and modern writers like Sir W. Hamilton and Mr Spencer who have followed them—turned the _ duality involved in the idea of knowledge against its unity, and argued that, because we cannot know the object except as different from and related to the subject, we cannot know it as it is in itself. Obviously in this _ argument it is involved that in true or absolute knowledge | the object must not be distinguished at all from the subject, | —to which the easy answer is that without such distine- tion knowledge would be impossible. The sceptic argu- _ment, therefore, lands us in the unhappy case pictured in the German proverb: "If water chokes us, what shall we drink?" The object cannot be known if it ds distinguished from the subject, and it cannot be known if it is not distinguished from the subject. Obviously the one objection is as good as the other, and both combined _ only show that the idea of knowledge involves distinction | as well as unity, and unity as well as distinction. The sceptic insists on one of these characteristics to the exclusion _ of the other, and condemns our actual knowledge because it contains both. In Kant there is undoubtedly some trace | of the same fallacy, in so far as the idea by contrast with which he condemns the objects of experience as pheno- 'menal is the idea of an abstract identity without any difference ; but we have seen that with him this abstract identity is on the point of passing into an altogether different idea—the idea of self-consciousness as the type of knowledge.

It appears, then, that the idea of measuring our powers before we employ them rests on a paralogism ; for what is really meant is that we abstract one of the elements of the idea of knowledge, and then condemn knowledge for

having other elements in it. It is possible to criticize and con- demn special conceptions as not conforming to our idea of knowledge ; but it is not possible to criticize the idea of knowledge itself ; all we can do is to explain it. It is possible to see the limited and hypothetical character of certain of our ideas or explanations of things, because we are conscious that in developing them we have left out of account certain elements necessary to the whole truth; | but this criticism itself implies, as the standard to which we appeal, a consciousness of truth and reality, a consciousness which we cannot further criticize. Here, therefore, we come upon what must seem to all who think it admissible to question the very possibility of knowledge an inevitable reasoning in a circle. We can answer objections only by means of the very idea which they dispute. But the

answer is nevertheless a good one; for the objector also stands within the very circle which he seeks to break, and has ne means of breaking it except itself. As soon as he speaks, he can be refuted by his own words ; for his doubts also presuppose that unity of the intelligence and the intelligible world which he pretends to deny.

The error, however, cannot be fully corrected until we consider what gives it plausibility. The confusion of the metaphysical with the psychological problem is due to the fact that the being who is the subject of knowledge, for whom all exists that does exist, appears to be one, and only one, of the many objects of knowledge. When we say that existence means only an existence for a thinking self, we seem to be identifying the whole world with the feelings and ideas of men, ¢.¢., with certain phenomena that belong to the life of a class of beings which only forms a part of that world, —phenomena, moreover, that are not exactly the same in any two of that class of beings. If we are to escape this difficulty it is obvious that we must be able to separate the conscious self or subject, as it is implied in all knowledge, from the nature of man as a being who “though formally self-conscious ” is yet “part of this par- tial world,” ¢.¢., one of the objects which we know along with and in distinction from other objects, and in whom “the self-consciousness which is in itself complete, and which in its completeness includes the world as its object,” is only progressively

realized! Metaphysic has to deal with con- ditions of the knowable, and hence with self-consciousness as that unity which is implied in all that is and is known. Psychology has to inquire how this self-consciousness is realized or developed in man, in whom the consciousness of self grows with the consciousness of a world in space and time, of which he individually is only a part, and to parts of which only he stands in immediate relation. In con- sidering the former question we are considering the sphere within which all knowledge and all objects of knowledge are contained. In considering the latter we are selecting one particular object or class of objects within this sphere,— although no doubt it must make a great difference in our treatment of this object that we have to consider it as existing not only for us but for itself. If nature " becomes self-conscious in man," it is impossible to treat man merely aS One among the other objects of nature. But it is not less true that he zs one of those objects, and, in this point of view, the department of sciencé and philosophy that deals with his life is as distinct from metaphysic— which deals with the conditions of all knowing and being —as is astronomy or physics. In both cases we have before us objects which we may consider in themselves apart from their relations to the conscious subject, and in both cases we must take cognizance of these relations if we would have a complete and final view of those objects. It is possible to have a purely objective anthropology or psychology—which abstracts from the relation of man to the mind that knows him—just as it is possible to have a purely objective science of nature. Such a natural science of man, however, will necessarily abstract at the same time from the fact that in man is manifested that universal principle in relation to which all things are and are known. Tn other words, it will omit that distinctive characteristic of man's being in virtue of which he is a subject of knowledge and a moral agent. Hence the abstraction in this case is more likely to lead to positive error, more likely to produce not only an imperfect but a distorted view of the object. Inorganic nature, if we take it in itself, is not untruly viewed, under the categories of causality and reciprocity, as a collection of objects externally determined by each other ; the error lies only in taking it as if it could exist

} Hume, vol. i. p. 181 (Green's edition).

in itself. Even organic beings do not suffer much injustice in being brought under such categories ; for, though, as living and still more as sensitive beings, they involve in themselves and in their relation to the world a kind of unity of differences to which the categories of external relation imperfectly correspond, yet they are not such unities for themselves, but only for us. In other words, the principle through which they are and are known is still external to them. Hence also they are determined by outward influences, though these influences act rather as stimuli to what we may call the self-determined movement of their own life than as mechanical or chemical forces which change it. But in man, in so far as he is self-con- sclous,—and it is self-consciousness that makes him man, —the unity through which all things are and are known is manifested; and therefore he is emancipated, or at least is continually emancipating himself, from the law of external influence. Nature and necessity exist for him as that from which his life starts, in relation to which he becomes conscious of himself, against which he has to assert himself, and in the complete overcoming of which lies the end of all his endeavour. Nature is the negative rather than the positive starting-point of his existence, the presupposition against which he reacts rather than that on which he proceeds ; and, therefore, to treat him simply as a natural being is even more inaccurate and misleading than to forget or deny his relation to nature altogether. A true psychology must, however, avoid both errors : it must conceive man as‘at once spiritual and natural ; it must find a reconciliation of freedom and necessity. It must face all the difficulties involved in the conception of the absolute principle of self-consciousness,—through which all things are and are known,—as manifesting itsclf in the life of a being like man, who ‘comes to himself” only by a long process of development out of the uncon- sciousness of a merely animal existence.

This problem first presented itself in a distinct form in the discussions of the Socratic school as to the nature of knowledge, discussions which turn mainly upon the relation of the conscious to the unconscious element in thought. Socrates, by his method more than by any direct state- ment, drew attention to the fact that all particular judg- ments in morals involve or presuppose a universal principle. At the same time he pointed out that, so far from this universal principle being known to those who are con- tinually making such judgments, they are not even conscious of its existence. They

constantly use general terms whose meaning they have never even thought of defining. The beginning of a rational life for them must therefore lie in their becoming conscious of their ignorance, a… conscious that they have been all along judging, and therefore acting, on untested and even unknown assump- tions. They must bring the unconscious universal to the light of day and define it, for until that is done it is impossible to live a moral, that is, a rational life. ‘‘ Virtue is knowledge,” 2.¢., it is acting, not according to opinions, or particular judgments,—whose universal is unknown, and which therefore may be regarded as expressing merely the impulses or habits of the individual,—but in view of a universal principle determined by reason.

The onesidedness of this view—which absolutely con- demns as vice all virtue that is not based on conscious principle—was partly corrected by another part of the doctrine of Socrates, who taught that knowledge is some- thing that must be evolved from within the mind, and not merely communicated to it from without. For this implies that the moral principle may be present in men’s minds, and may rule their thoughts and actions, long before they become directly conscious of it. They are rational although they have never thought about reason, and they.

do not wait for scientific ethics to judge and act morally, any more than they wait for logic to reason correctly. It is this line of thought which is universalized and mythically expressed by Plato in his doctrine of “ reminiscence.” According to this myth, we were conscious of ideas or universals in our pre-natal state; we forgot them in the shock of birth into this mortal life; but in feeling or sharing the rapture of the poet or the lover we recall them as identified or confused with individual objects which “are like them, or partake in them.” The same explana- tion is given of the practical skill of the general and the statesman, and even of the “ right opinion” which guides the ordinary good man. Such opinion is neither knowledge nor ignorance: not knowledge, for general principles or ideas are not in it present to the mind as ideas, and there- fore the particular cannot be distinctly subsumed under them ; yet not ignorance, for the ideas are after all present, though wrapped up in the particulars or confused with them.

Nay, in the Theetetus, Plato endeavours to show that the pure particular without the universal, sensations without ideas, cannot enter into our consciousness at all, and that therefore the lowest point to which a conscious being can descend is “opinion,” in which particular and universal, sensible and intelligible, are mingled together. In other words, no conscious being can apprehend the particular except through the universal, though that uni- versal may be present only wm consciousness and not to it. The task of philosophy is therefore only to make men “recollect themselves,” ze, to make self-conscious that universality of thought in which all rational beings “partake,” or which, in the language of later philosophy, constitutes reason. The imperfection of Plato’s view lay, however, in this, that, while he clearly recognized that the condition of all consciousness of the particular is the universal, he did not see with equal clearness that the universal has a meaning only in relation to the particular. And this tendency to separate universal from particular is naturally accompanied by a tendency to set the subjective against the objective, and to regard the world, not as the manifestation of reason, but as a dualistic world, in which reason is chained to a lower principle—a world which can at best only give a hint or suggestion to the mind to enable it to recollect itself and recover for itself its own treasures. Thus the false method of introspection, the “high priort road” of mysticism, was at least opened up by Plato, if he did not altogether forsake the narrower and harder way to the spiritual world through nature and experience.

The great step in advance taken by Aristotle was due to his seeing the danger of this tendency. Those, however, who have maintained that Aristotle is the great a posteriori philosopher,—as Plato is the great @ priori philosopher,— have entirely mistaken the bearing of Aristotle’s criticism of the Platonic theory. As strongly as Plato does Aristotle maintain that reason is Suvdme. mévra ra voyntd, and that, therefore, the apprehension of truth by the mind is not a mere external communication of it to the mind, but rather is the mind coming to a consciousness of itself, As firmly as Plato does he declare that truth in its highest form is self-evidencing, 7.e., that the principles of science, the laws of nature, when once they have been discovered, are seen to be true by their own light. His statements to this effect have been neglected or explained away, because they were supposed to be inconsistent with his still more frequently reiterated assertions that it

is only from experience and by induction that the truth of things can be discovered. Writers of a later day,—who came to Aristotle with an idea of a fixed opposition between a proort and a posteriori, and who held that the only possible alternatives were either to divide knowledge between the

mYy%2 ©

two or to explain away one of them,—could not comprehend that Aristotle might be in earnest both in asserting that knowledge is derived from experience and in asserting that it is an apprehension by reason of that which is identical with itself and needs no extraneous evidence. But Aristotle started with no such fixed opposition. On the contrary, any one who reads the last chapter of the Posterior Analytics will see that he had no difficulty in maintaining that knowledge begins in the apprehension of 76 Kal' éxaorov in sense perception, and that it proceeds from many perceptions to experience, and from many experiences to science ; while at the same time he declared that the principles of science have their evidence in them- selves. And the meaning of this declaration is shown in the De Anima, where we find him speaking of knowledge as the realization in the ' passive reason " of man of an "active reason " which is eternal and unchangeable, and which in the consciousness of itself includes the knowledge of all things. Of this realization, indeed, there is in man only the potentiality or capacity, but just because this is a pure or universal capacity, because, as Aristotle puts it, it has no quality or determination of its own to stand between it and its objects, it is a capacity in which the absolute reason can realize itself, a capacity of knowing all things. Here we have Plato's myth of reminiscence freed from the metaphor of memory, and reduced to scientific terms; for that myth simply meant that the evolution of knowledge is the development of the mind to the consciousness of itself, and of all that is potentially in it. Only, by the combination of this doctrine with the idea of the necessity of induction, Aristotle at the same time guards against the purely subjective interpretation to which in Plato it was liable. For the process by which the mind "comes to itself" is conceived as a process by which at the same time it rises from the particular to the universal, from the yropipa ypiv to the yrapysa drAGs, from the bare apprehension of the facts of experience to the knowledge of them through their principles or laws.

Yet Aristotle was as little able as Plato to work out fully a theory of the relation between the universal and the individual reason; and the cause of this failure was in both cases. substantially the same. In Plato's philosophy, the ideal tended to divorce itself from the phenomenal world in such wise that the latter was regarded only as suggesting or partaking in the former, but not as entirely explicable by it. It was not merely that, to the mind of the individual in its progress, the veil was only gradually lifted from the rationality of the world, but that in the world there. was an irrational element from which the mind could save itself only by flight inta the region of abstrac- tion. And, though Aristotle by his doctrine of the essential relation of ideas to experience, or of the development of the mind to the acquisition of knowledge of the world, seemed to be on the way to correct this error, yet he too shrinks from regarding the phenomenal world as in itself intelligible. To him also an irrational matter mingles with things, and is in them a source of contingency and imper- fection. Chance is not merely the reflexion upon the world of our imperfect knowledge, but a fact of experience, and there is therefore a region in which our best science cannot rise above generality to universality. In this way there remains for Aristotle an absolute a posteriori, a reality which cannot be understood, and which we can scarcely conceive as existing at all for the divine intelligence. At this point the Aristotelian philosophy appears to stand between two alternatives, either that, in the sense of pantheism, the finite world and its contingency is an illusion, or that it is con- tingent only for the growing intelligence of man, which fully understands neither itself nor the world which is its object. Aristotle, however, does not choose either horn of

my Awe Y SiC

the dilemma, and leaves us therefore with an unresolved dualism between thought and its object; and this again necessarily involves a dualism between the active reason, which, as he asserts, realizes itself in man, and the passive reason which constitutes his nature as a finite being.

In the Middle Ages the Platonic and Aristotelian idea that the apprehension of objective truth is one with the evolution of the mind to self-consciousness seemed to be entirely lost. Knowledge of the finite world was regarded as indifferent, and knowledge of the infinite was conceived to

be something given on authority, and in reference to which the mind was confined to an attitude of passive reception or implicit faith, No greater slavery of the spirit can be conceived than that in which even the truths of religion and morality—the truths that regard the inmost life of the spirit itself—were taken as a lesson to be learned by rote from the lips of a teacher. Yet the consciousness that such truth, if it was to be received by the mind, still more if it was to transform the mind, could not be entirely foreign to it, found a voice in the scholastic philosophy. And the compromise or truce between faith and reason expressed in the saying of Anselm credo ut intelligam,—according to which reason was to confine itself to the analysis and demonstration of the data received in implicit faith from the church,—prepared the way for the recognition that the two are not essentially at variance. The mind that proceeds from veneratio to delectatio, from awe and submission to the doctrine to enjoyment and appreciation of it, must already in its awe and submission have the beginnings of an intelligent appreciation. Anselm's saying might be understood simply as meaning that we must have spiritual experience ere we can understand the things of the spirit. And in this sense it was adopted by the Reformers to express an idea almost the opposite of that with which the scholastics had associated it,—the idea that the direct apprehension of spiritual truth as entering into the inner life of the subject, as identified with his very consciousness of self, is the basis of all knowledge of it. In the Protestant church of the period after the Reformation, we find a growing tendency to insist on the subjectivity of religion, in the same exclusive and one-sided way in which the medieval church had insisted on its objectivity. In some extreme representa- tives of Protestantism this went so far as to lead to a disregard, almost to a rejection, of all objective doctrine, and a reduction of theology to an account of the religious consciousness. On the other hand, while religion was thus made subjective, science claimed to be purely objective, and the followers of Bacon seemed to adopt towards nature the same attitude of passive receptivity which the medizval Christian was taught to hold towards the church. While man was to learn everything from himself in religion, he was to learn nothing from himself in science. His aim must be to exclude subjective idola, in other words, to accept the facts as they were given, and keep himself out of the way. The inevitable result of this difference of view as to the nature of knowledge in these two different regions was, however, on the one hand a withdrawal of religion from all

connexion with finite interests, and, especially from the attempt to connect religious principles with the knowledge of the finite world, and, on the other hand, an increasing tendency in those who represented finite science to regard religion as something merely subjective and even individual, as a feeling which could not be translated into thought or made the basis of any knowledge of the objective world.

The opposite principles of certitude which were thus set up for religious truth and truth of science need only to be brought together and contrasted to betray that they test upon opposite abstractions, neither of which expresses

the complete nature of truth or knowledge. On the one hand the truths of religion were maintained just because they were not, or were not merely, objective, but were capable of being tested by inner experience, and identified with the self-consciousness of the individual. On the other hand the truths of science were maintained because they were not, or were not merely, subjective, but were capable of being verified in objective experience. It was rightly seen on the one side that mere subjective feelings or opinions have no validity for any one but the subject of them, and on the other side that what is merely objective or externally given can have permanent value and interest for the intelligence only as it ceases to be mere isolated and unrelated fact—nay, that, even when science has discovered law and order in nature, it still wants the highest value and interest so long as that law and order are not seen as standing in essential relation to the intelligence itself. The idea of truth or knowledge as that which is at once objective and subjective, as the unity of things with the mind that knows them, enables us to understand the con- demnation which the religious mind passed upon a merely external dogma, and even its lack of interest in a science which presented itself as an account of merely objective or external facts. And it enables us also to understand the way in which scientific men insisted upon objective fact as the basis of all knowledge, and the disrespect which they felt for a religion which seemed to admit that it had no such support. What is wanted to clear up the confusion on both sides is the growth of the perception among scientific men that the objectivity which they are seeking cannot be mere objectivity (which would be unmeaning),

but an objectivity that stands in essential relation to the intelligence, and, on the other hand, the growth of the perception among religious men that the subjectivity of religion only means that God, who is the objective principle by whom things are, and are known, is spiritual, and can therefore be revealed to the spirit. When these two cor- rections have been made, it must become obvious that the religious consciousness is not the consciousness of another object than that which is present in finite experience and science, but simply a higher way of knowing the same object. And in this it is also involved that the two ideas of a priori and a posteriori, of that which is evolved from within and that which is given from without, are not essentially opposed to each other, but that the a posteriori is simply the first form of a consciousness which in its ultimate development must become a priori.

In that philosophy of compromise which was initiated by Descartes, one part of knowledge was regarded as innate, or developed from within, and another part as empirical, or imparted from without. In the second period of the history of modern philosophy this compromise was broken, and the names of Locke and Leibnitz—though with some hesitation on both sides—represent respectively the theories that all knowledge is a postertort and that all knowledge is a priort. The compromise seemed to be renewed with Kant, but the form in which it was renewed pointed, as has been already shown, to something more than a com- promise, for his doctrine was that the a postercor: element, the facts, exist for us only under a priori conditions, or, in other words, that what is usually called a posteriors is in part @ priort. The criticism of this view need not be repeated. It is sufficient here to say that if, as Kant shows, the elements are inseparable or organically united, it is impossible to allege that so much belongs to the one and so much tothe other. Furthermore, the consciousness of an essential difference in the elements of knowledge is possible only so far as that difference is transcended by the unity of knowledge. We can distinguish the a priori from the a posteriori only on condition that we can transcend

the distinction, and this means that the distinction itself is not absolute, but that there is a point of view from which the a posterior? may be regarded as

a priori, and that which is given from without to the spirit may be referred to its own self-determined development. — : Now it is just here that we come upon the turning-point of the philosophical controversy, in the form which it has taken in modern times. The problem may be expressed thus— In what sense can we apply the idea of development to the human spirit? Are we to treat that development as merely adetermination from without, or as an evolution from within, or as partly the one and partly the other? In a sense all writers of the present day would admit that this last is the case. For, on the one hand, even the Darwinian theory accounts for development by aid of what we may call the a priort tendency of the individual to maintain itself in the struggle for existence, though it supposes that the condition or medium in which the indi- vidual is placed determines the direction in which that development proceeds. And, on the other hand, no one now would adopt the Leibnitzian theory that the indi- vidual is a monad, whose self-development is entirely con- ditioned by itself in such a sense that all the relations which it has to other existences are merely apparent, and that the coincidence of its life with the life of the world is the result of a pre-established harmony. On both sides, therefore, the idea of self-determination would be admitted, though the tendency of the Darwinians would be to regard this self-determination as something merely formal; and on both sides it would also be admitted that the self-determination does not exclude a determination from with- out, though extreme opponents of Darwin might be inclined to reduce this determination to a mere stimulus or external condition of the development of the nature of the subject to which the stimulus is applied. The question, however, remains whether, after all, this opposition of without and within is an absolute one, or whether there is any point of view from which it may be transcended. To Aristotle it seemed possible to answer this question in the affirmative, because he conceived that the reason of man is a pure or universal dvvayis, the evolution of which to complete self- consciousness is one with the process whereby the objective world comes to be known. Yet, as Aristotle admitted the existence in the world of a material principle which was essentially different from the ideal principle of reason, he was obliged to limit his statement as to the possible unity of the subjective and the objective consciousness, and to say merely that “in things without matter the knower is identical with the known.” But this would immediately lead to the conclusion that the pure development of reason must be secured

by abstraction from all finite and material objects, rather than by a thorough comprehension of them. The freedom of the spirit, on this theory, must be a negative and not a positive freedom, a freedom won, not by over- coming the world, but by withdrawing ourselves from its influence. It remained, therefore, for modern philosophy to work out the Aristotelian idea that the rational being as such, in spite of its necessary relation to and depend- ence on an external world, is never in an absolute sense externally determined. And, as we have already seen, the Kantian philosophy brought this problem within the reach of solution, in so far as it showed, first, that objective existence can have no meaning except existence for a thinking self, and, secondly, that existence for a thinking self means existence the consciousness of which is " capable of being combined with the consciousness of self." Add further to these propositions what was shown by Kant's successors, that that only can be combined with the con- sciousness of self which is essentially related to it, and we arrive at an idealistic theory of the world, which enables

us at once to understand the relative value of the distinc- tion between self-determination and determination from without, and at the same time to see that its value is only relative. If it be true that nothing exists which is not a possible object of consciousness, and again that there is no possible object of consciousness which is not essentially related to self-consciousness, then the phenomena of the external world, which at first present themselves under the aspect of contingent facts, must be capable of being ulti- mately recognized as the manifestation of reason; and the history of the conscious being in his relations with that world is not a struggle between two independent and unrelated forces, but the evolution by antagonism of one spiritual principle. It is, on this view, the same life which within us is striving for developnient, and which without us conditions that development. And the reason why the two terms, the self and the not-self, thus appear to be independent of each other, or to be brought together only as they externally act or react upon each other, lies in this, that the object is imperfectly known, and the subject is imperfectly self-conscious. This, however, does not make it less true that in self-consciousness is to be found the prin- ciple in reference to which the whole process may be explained, and therefore that the self-conscious subject, as such, lives a life which

belongs to him, not merely as one object among others, but as having in himself the principle from which the life and being of all proceeds.

From this point of view, as has been already indicated, the relative value of a theory of human development, such as that which might be based on the ideas of Darwin, would not bedenied. The conscious being may be regarded simply as an externally determined object, and the incorrect- ness of this assumption will not entirely destroy the value of the results attained, especially if, as is often the case with those who seek to construct a natural science of man, the assumption itself is not very strictly adhered to, but corrected by the tacit admission of other conceptions some- what inconsistent with it. But, at the same time, it would require to be pointed out that such a science is necessarily abstract and imperfect, as it omits from its view the central fact in the life of the object of which it treats. It can do nothing to account for man's consciousness, or his capacity of becoming conscious, of the influences by which he is supposed to be determined; or, to put it from the other side, it takes for granted that the objects that influence man are intelligible objects, "capable of being combined with the consciousness of self," without seeing how much is involved in this assumption. Now it is evident that the consciousness of an influence cannot be explained by the influence itself, nor even by that taken together with the nature of the sensitive beings subjected to it. It is evident also that an influence mediated by consciousness is not, strictly speaking, an external influence, but that it is already transformed, and in process of being further transformed, by the development of the self to which it is present. For the dawn of consciousness, in which the external object first comes into existence for us as opposed to the self, is at the same time the beginning of the process by which its externality is negated or over- come. Self-consciousness is that which makes us indi- viduals in a sense in which individuality can be predicated of none but a self-conscious being. For, in determining himself as a self, the individual at the same time excludes from himself every other thing and being, and determines them as external objects. He emancipates himself from the world at the same time that he repels the world from himself. Yet this movement of thought, by which his individuality is constituted, is also that by which he is lifted above mere individuality, for, in becoming conscious of self and not-self in their opposition and relation, he ceases to

}

1

ME TAPAYSIC

be simply identified with the one to the exclusion of the other. His finite individuality is regarded by him from a universal point of view, in which it has no less and no more importance than any other individuality, or in which its greater or less importance is determined only by its place in the whole. On this universality of consciousness rests the possibility of science and of morality. For all science is just a contemplation of the world 7 ordine ad universum and not in ordine ad indinduum ; and all morality is just action with a view to an interest which belongs to the agent, not as this individual, but as a member of a greater whole, and ultimately of the absolute whole in which all men and all things are included.

In this nature of the conscious subject lies ‘also the possibility of metaphysic in the sense of Aristotle, as that science which goes back to a zparov dice, a beginning which is prior to the existence in consciousness of the individual self, and onward to an end in which the divisions of the finite consciousness are transcended,—as including, in short, ontology, or metaphysic in the narrower sense, on the one side, and theology, or the philosophy of religion, on the other. In truth, these two extremes of science are necessarily bound together: we can only go back to the beginning if we can go on to the end; we can only recover the first unity if we can anticipate the last. Or, to free the subject more definitely from the associations of. time, we cannot apprehend the unity which is involved or pre- supposed in all the differences of our conscious life except in so far as we can look at our individual existence from the point of view of the whole to which it belongs. This will become evident if we consider the nature of the limits which have to be transcended by such a science. The individual conscious subject, as he finds himself at first, is but one being in a world that stretches out, apparently without limits, on every side of him. Of the things by which he is immediately surrounded he sees but a small part, and the influences which he receives from them are, as he knows, like the wave that breaks upon a shore from an unknown ocean, only the last partial expression of impulses that come from regions beyond his ken. Again, he finds himself as

one in a changing series of beings, of which he knows only the last preceding terms, and he is aware that in a few years he, as one of this series, will cease to be. He is thus to himself a definitely limited being, and though his knowledge of himself and his world may be gradually widened so as to reach some little way back into the past, and anticipate a little of the future, or may go outwards in space to embrace a widening circle of existences around him, yet he always stops at a limit, of which he is conscious that it is no absolute limit, but simply an arbitrary halting-place where vision grows indistinct and imperfect. When he reflects upon himself from this point of view, he is forced to regard himself as but a fragment, and a fragment of an unknown whole, by which his whole being is determined to be what it is. His highest knowledge seems to be but a consciousness of his ignorance, his highest freedom a determination by motives the ultimate meaning of which is hid from him.

So far there seems to be no room for any metaphysical knowledge, any knowledge of ourselves and our world which is other than relative and in ordine ad individuum. But further reflexion shows that in this very consciousness of limit there is implied a consciousness of that which is beyond limit. While we proceed from part to part, beginning with ourselves and our immediate surroundings, and follow- ing out lines of connexion that lose themselves in the dis- tance, we are guided by a consciousness of the whole as a unity through which the parts are determined. Nay, it is Just the presence of this consciousness that makes us capable of what seems the piecework of our knowledge, in which,

by the aid of the principle of causality, we connect parti- cular with particular, and so gradually extend the sphere of light into the encompassing darkness. For that principle simply means that the limited external object does not sufficiently explain to us its own existence, and that therefore we are forced to explain it by a reference to something beyond it. It means, in other words, that we cannot rest in that which is not a _ self-bounded, self-determined whole. The application of the category of external determination has therefore an essential reference to the higher category of self-determination. The mere endlessness of space and time has no meaning

except in opposition, yet in relation, to the true infinity of which we find the type in self-conscious thought. Or, to put it in the Kantian form in which it is already familiar to us, the consciousness of the objective world in space and time stands in essential relation to the unity of self-conscious- ness. And if when we regard the former exclusively we are forced to view ourselves as insignificant and short- sighted finite beings in an infinite universe, gvhen we regard the latter we are enabled to see that 4 all this universe there is revealed only that spiritual principle which we find also in ourselves. In this way a new light is thrown on our first consciousness of ignorance. The strivings of our reason after knowledge can no longer be regarded as strivings after an unknown goal, but rather after a goal which it has prescribed for itself. The narrow limits of our individual life are not removed, but they cease to be for us the limits of a narrow circle of definition within a formless infinite. They become the limits of a sphere within a sphere, a sphere which is defined by the idea of knowledge or self-consciousness itself, and in which therefore, however we may wander, we are everywhere at home. In religious language, the sphere is not a mere universe, but God, who is without us only as He is within us, so that “by the God within we can understand the God without.”

Again, as this consciousness takes man beyond his immediate existence, and enables him to determine it in relation to an absolute unity of all things in God, so it enables him to go back to a unity which is behind or prior to that existence. For, if the individual can look at himself as he looks at others, and at others as he looks at himself, 2.¢., from a point of view which is unaffected by his individuality, and in which that individuality is for him only what it is for impartial reason, he can have nothing in him which binds his consciousness to his individuality as mere individuality ; as therefore he can go beyond himself to apprehend the whole in which his individuality has a place, there is nothing to prevent him from going back upon himself, and upon the conditions which are prior to his own individual being. Heis not tied to his immediate life, and can go below it just as he can rise above it.

“O God, I think Thy thoughts after Thee,” said Kepler. In reading the “thoughts” written in the planetary system, Kepler was discovering the meaning of that which is simpler and more elementary than the existence of

man, as a cycle of mechanical relations are simpler and more elementary than self-consciousness. Yet it was a true feeling that led him to connect this descent into the mechanical world with God. For it is only in virtue of the same faculty which enables us to rise to the absolute life which includes and subordinates our own that we can so free us from the image of our own conscious life as to apprehend and fix in thought the simpler relations of purely physical existence. But the same faculty of going back upon ourselves has a still deeper manifestation. Not only can we abstract from ourselves so as to under- stand the inorganic world, we can also abstract from our- selves so as to understand the conditions which are prior

to the thought, and therefore to the existence, of any objective external world at all, the universal conditions of the knowable and therefore also of reality. In doing so, to use Hegel's metaphor, which is but an extension of Kepler's, we are "thinking what God thought and was before the creation of the world," @.e., we are thinking the spiritual unity presupposed in all knowledge, and therefore in all objects of knowledge—the consciousness in relation to which everything is, and is known.

3. The Relation of Logic to Metaphysic.—The ordinary view of logic is based on two presuppositions which tend to separate it almost entirely from metaphysic : itis based on the presupposition of an opposition, or at least a merely , external relation, between thought and its object, and again of an opposition, or merely external relation, between the form or method and the content or matter of thought. The intelligence is regarded as dealing with an object which is given to it externally, and to which, therefore, it can be true only if it leaves it unchanged and introduces into it nothing of its own. Truth, to use a well-known definition, is the agreement of our conceptions with their objects, and in bringing about this agreement all the concessions must be on the side of thought. Conformably to this view, the processes of thought must be purely analytic; 7.e., thought may break up the given idea of the object into its con- stituent elements, and again out of these elements it may recompose the idea in its unity, but it can add nothing and take nothing away. It is like an instrument which alternately dissects a solid mass into smaller parts and again mechanically presses them together, but which

never penetrates and dissolves the hard matter, still less fuses it into a new form by bringing it into contact with new chemical elements.

This conception, like much of the philosophy of which it is a specimen, is a kind of exaggerated caricature of one aspect of the philosophy of Aristotle. Aristotle is the great analytic philosopher. He first laid down boundaries in that continuous domain of science which Plato had first | surveyed. Not that he ever completely lost sight of the unity or continuity of the different sciences which he thus distinguished. His unrivalled speculative genius is shown nowhere more clearly than in those not unfrequent utterances of speculative insight into the unity of things different, by which, as at a stroke, he makes his own landmarks and all landmarks to disappear. Yet such utterances generally stand by themselves, and do not alter the general analytic spirit of his philosophy. They are not so developed as to show distinctly the merely relative character of the divisions and distinctions which are set up, or the limits of the sphere within which they hold good. Hence it was easy for minds which possessed something of Aristotle's keenness of understanding without his speculative depth to neglect such expressions, or to explain them away. And this process of degradation was the more rapid as the philosophy of Aristotle soon ceased to be studied in his own writings, and became a traditionary possession of the schools. In this way we may partly explain how logic came to be regarded by medieval philosophy as a form of thought which could be altogether separated from the matter, and by the application of which that matter could be in no way affected or changed. But for such a view, indeed, it is difficult to conceive how the schoolmen could have ventured to apply any logical processes at all to the sacred matter of dogma. The idea of externally adding anything to the faith once delivered to the saints was excluded by the principle of authority ; and the idea of developing out of that faith anything that was not immediately contained in it had not yet presented itself to any one. Hence the business of thought seemed to be purely formal and analytic, and it was only on the plea of its being such that

Ea ee OC

its activity could be tolerated at all. Nor was this view of logic at once changed by the revolt against scholasticism. The first philosophical

exponents of the modern scientific movement, while they rejected the matter of dogma as fictitious, or at least as transcending the sphere of positive knowledge, and while they substituted in its place, as the object of investigation, the facts of experience, did not realize any more than the schoolmen that the form and method of knowledge could be other than analytic of given matter. Bacon, their protagonist, was above all solicitous to guard against any subjective anticipatio nature; nor did he see that the questions which, in his theory of forms, he proposed that science should ask of nature themselves involved any preconceived theory regarding it. Conscious, as every true scientific man must be, that the study of nature involves a constant self-abnegation, a patient self- distrustful course of experiment and observation, he and his followers did not realize the presuppositions that make the inquiry possible, and by which it must be guided. Still less did they recognize that the separation between the mind and its object which they took for granted can only be a relative division, 7.¢, a division on the basis of a unity, and that therefore the self-abnegation of the mind in its investigation of facts cannot be an absolute self-abnegation, but is only the first step on the way to the discovery that the facts are intelligible, and so essentially related to the intelligence. Hence to them logic still seemed a mere analytic process, the end and aim of which was understood to be that a world, existing in itself out of relation to thought, should be reproduced in a more or less imperfect image am thought. And, when it came to be suspected by a less naive philosophy of experience that, after all, certain presuppositions, not given in experience itself, were involved in the scientific interpretation of it, various expedients were devised to reduce these presupposi- tions in an indirect way to empirical truths,—expedients of which Mill’s attempt to base the law of causality upon an inductio per enumerationem simplicem may be taken as the type.

When we go back to Aristotle,—who was the “ founder of logic” in the sense that he was the first who treated logical method as a separate branch of science,—we find that his division of logic from metaphysic is by no means so definite and complete as it was made by some of his successors. The verification of the highest principle of thought, the law of contradiction, is treated by him as the business of metaphysic. And, though he separates the idea of truth from the idea of reality, and regards the former

as involving a relation of thought to a reality which is determined in itself independent of that relation, yet he does not regard this independence as by any means absolute. Truth is defined by him as a connexion or distinction of ideas which corresponds to a union or separation of things, but does not necessarily so correspond. This definition, however, holds good only in so far as things are not scientifically known, or in so far as things not essentially related are brought together xara ovpP_eByxds. Where necessity comes in, and is apprehended by reason, the case is different. For in that case we have not merely an external synthesis, but an essential identity, 7.e., a unity of elements which can neither be, nor be known, apart from each other. In relation to the principles of science, therefore, Aristotle holds that error, ¢.e., a corinexion of ideas not corresponding to a connexion of things, is impos- sible, and that the only alternatives are knowledge and ig- norance. Either we possess the idea or we do not possess it; as Aristotle otherwise expresses it, in thought we are either in contact with the things or not in contact with them; there is no third possibility. The meaning of Aristotle becomes clearer when we remember that, according to his

view, the intelligence, in apprehending the indivisible unity of elements in the object, is at the same time apprehending the unity of the object with itself. The mind cannot be deceived in regard to that which forms a part of its con- sciousness of itself. In freeing the essential conception of the object from the contingency of matter, science has freed the object from that which made it foreign to intelligence, and the relation of thought to things ceases to be one of correspondence, and becomes one of identity.

The legitimate inference from this view of the relation of the intelligence to the intelligible world would seem to be that the partial separation of thought from its object and its imperfect correspondence with it is characteristic of our first empirical consciousness of things, and of the progress from that consciousness to science, but that in completed science the division ceases. The esse of things is not their percipi, but their entelligi. But, if this be taken as the truth, then it can no longer be supposed that the process by which scientific knowledge is attained con- sists simply in an analysis of the object as it is given in immediate perception. On the contrary, it must be

held that, if our thought has to submit itself to the object, and to be brought into conformity with it, by a process of induction, it is equally true that in this process the object also must be changed, that it may be brought into con- formity with the principle of thought. The genesis of science, according to this view, is not merely an analysis of given facts, but a process of vital transformation by which consciousness on the one side and the object on the other are brought into unity with each other. The idea, indeed, of an empty process, a process in which the activity of the mind is merely formal, is one which will not stand the slightest examination. A mind without categories, if such a thing were conceivable, would have no questions to ask in relation to the object presented to it, and could therefore get no answers. Those who make a pretence of approaching a subject in an absolutely receptive attitude, and without any presuppositions, only show that they are unconscious of the categories by which their thought is ruled; and they will be most slavishly guided by these categories just because they are unconscious of them. The schoolmen, when they applied their logical principles to the matter of Christian dogma, did not recognize that they were doing more than analysing and bringing out clearly the meaning of that dogma. But the effect of their work was to turn the system of divinity into a collection of insoluble puzzles; for the doctrine was a doctrine of reconciliation between divine and human, infinite and finite, universal and particular, and the principle of their method was to treat all these oppositions as absolute. In like manner it might be shown that the analysis of social phenomena which was made in the last century was inadequate and superficial, Just because of the latent assumption of individualism on which it proceeded, and that the greater success of writers like Comte and Spencer does not arise merely or mainly from their being more careful observers of the phenomena of social life, but in great part from the fact that, rather by the unconscious movement of opinion than by any distinct metaphysic, their minds have become possessed by more adequate categories.

The idea that the process of thought is merely formal, or analytic of given matter, is, however, an error that has a truth underlying it. This is the truth expressed by Aristotle in his much misunderstood comparison of the Intelligence of man to a tabula rasa, upon which nothing at first is written, and again in his assertion—already quoted—that the mind is a pure

Svvauis, without any distinguishing quality of its own which could prevent it from apprehending the real nature of other things. In

other words, self-conscious reason is not a special thing in the world, but the principle through which all things are, and are understood ; and hence, as regards the distinction of things from each other, it is in the first instance undeter- mined and indifferent, and therefore open to be determined in one way or another, according to the object to which it is directed. But this simply means that the conscious subject, as such, is not bound to his own individuality, but can regard things, nay, in a sense, must regard them, from a point of view which is independent of it. This is what makes possible the self-restraint and self-abnegation pre- scribed to the scientific man, whose whole duty, as it is often said, is to keep himself out of the way and let the objects speak, to lay aside all subjective zdola and prejudices that stand between him and the reality of things. This at first sight may seem to be equivalent to the assertion that the mind ought to be in a state of simple passivity or receptivity towards objects. What is really meant, how- ever, is not that the intelligence should go out of itself, or cease to be itself, that it may know its object, but simply that it should show itself in its universality, or freedom from the limits of the individual nature. The self-abnega- tion of science is an endeavour, so to speak, to see the object with its own eyes, but this it can do only in so far as the consciousness for which the object is is that con- sciousness in relation to which alone all objects are, and are understood. Or, to put it in another form, the con- scious self in its scientific self-abnegation does not give itself up to another, and become purely passive ; it only gives up all activity which is not the activity of that universal thought for which and through which all things are. Hence, when it has so abnegated itself, its most intense constructive activity is just beginning, though, just so far as the self-abnegation has been real, that constructive activity has become one with the self-revelation of the object. As, however, it is only through the constructive activity of thought that there exists for us any object at all, so it is only through its continued activity that the conception of the object is changed, till it is completely revealed and known. And this activity involves a con- tinuous synthesis, by which an ever wider range of facts is brought together in an ever more

definite unity, until the mind has, if we may use the expression, exhausted its store of categories upon the world, and until the world has completely revealed itself in its unity with itself and with the mind. \

To combine these two ideas—on the one hand that science begins in a self-abnegation by which the mind renounces all subjective prejudices, and thereby attains a purely objective attitude, and on the other hand that this purely objective attitude is not a mere attitude of reception, but one in which the mind is continually transforming the object by its own categories, —to see that the universality of the mind in knowing is not mere emptiness, and that its activity is synthetic just when it is most free from all pre-suppositions extraneous to the nature of its object,—is one of the greatest difficulties of the student of metaphysic. Universality at first looks so like emptiness, and a universal activity so like a merely formal activity, that it is no wonder that the one should be mistaken for the other. But if we make such a confusion, we may soon be forced to choose between a sensationalism that makes knowledge impossible and a mysticism which makes it empty. The pure identity of thought with itself which is involved in the process of analysis is put on the one side, and the manifold matter of experience which is the object of thought on the other, and between these opposites no mediation is possible. If we take our stand upon the latter, we are forced to reject all mental synthesis as invalid, because it involves a subjective addition to the

facts; if we take our stand on the former, we are com- pelled to regard all objective experience as irrational, because it does not correspond to the pure identity of thought. J In Aristotle's view of logic it cannot be said that this difficulty is clearly solved, though he seems to have seen the error of both extremes. On the one land he often recognizes the synthetic character of the process of induc- tion, as when he speaks of the universal idea or law as a central principle, in which we must find the key to all the difficulties suggested by different aspects of a given subject. Yet in other places we trace the influence of a merely ana- lytic conception of that process as a process in which the

universal is to be reached by abstracting from the peculi-'

arities of individuals. And this conception of it is favoured by Aristotle's metaphysical theory, according to which the forms of things in the finite world are manifested in a resisting matter, a matter which prevents them from being perfectly or universally realized. Tor, in so far as this is the case, the facts will not be entirely explained by the knowledge of the form, and the knowledge of the form must be obtained, not by combining all the facts, but rather by abstracting from them. Again, in Aristotle's account of the process of thought in the Prior Analytics, he regards it as a formal deductive process; and, though in the Posterior Analytics he attempts to give a synthetic meaning to the syllogism by treating it as the method in which the properties of a thing may be proved of it, or combined with it, through its essential definition, yet this adventitious meaning bestowed upon the syllogistic process does not alter its essential nature. The ultimate source of this inadequate view of the process of thought seems to lie in Aristotle's imperfect conception of the unity or identity which is for him the type of knowledge. For, though, both in the Metaphysic and the De Anima, he defines that identity as self-consciousness or as a consciousness of objects which is identical with self-consciousness, yet he does not seem

clearly to distinguish between a unity in which there is no |

difference and a unity in which difference is transcended and reconciled. This seems to be shown by his description of the principles which reason appreliends as individua or indi- visible unities, rather than unities which imply, while they transcend, difference. Yet, in this definition of the unity of knowledge as self-consciousness, Aristotle has implicitly admitted that there is a duality or difference in the unity itself, and this might have been expected to modify his conception of the relation of consciousness to its objects. For, as self-consciousness is not simple like a chemical element, but only in the sense that it is an indissoluble unity of opposites, it might have been anticipated that one who had realized self-consciousness as the principle of knowledge would be able to regard the opposition between the consciousness of self and the consciousness of the world as itself also capable of being conceived as a unity.

This misconception of Aristotle may be shown in another way. In the Metaphysic we find him laying down what is called the logical law of

contradiction as the ultimate principle of knowledge. The meaning of this principle, however, as Aristotle states it, is simply that thought in its essence is definition or distinction. If, as Heraclitus says, everything at once is and is not, if we cannot attach any definite predicates to things by which they may be distinguished from each other, then, as Aristotle argues, thought is chaos, and knowledge is impossible. If determination be not negation, if the assertion of A be not the negation of not-A, then there is no meaning in words. The criticism to be made on this view is obviously, not that it is a false statement of the law of thought, but that it is an imperfect statement of it,

PETA rayYeS Te

Thought is undoubtedly distinction ;. and, if all distinction be confounded, no meaning can be apprehended or ex- pressed. But thought is also relation and connexion of the things distinguished, and this aspect of it is equally important with the other.» Aristotle shows his one-sided- ness—a one-sidedness which throws him into opposition to Plato, but which enables him to correct Plato only by falling into the opposite error—when he exclusively fixes his attention on the “ differentiating” aspect of knowledge, and takes no notice of the “integrating” aspect of it. It is easy to see that this exclusive attention to one side of the truth may lead in many ways to a distorted view both of the world and of the intelligence that apprehends it. If Heraclitus be interpreted as simply denying the right of thought to introduce its definiteness into the flux of sense, nothing but absolute scepticism can come out of his philosophy ; and Aristotle was right in maintaining that it is only as the flux is brought to a stand, and the universal is fixed as a permanent and definite object of thought,! that knowledge becomes possible. But, on the other hand, if distinction be taken as absolute, if the definite assertion of a thing be taken as a negation of all relation to what it is not, if the fixity of thought be taken as an abstract self- identity which excludes all the movement of finite things wherein they show their finitude and pass beyond them- selves into other things, then knowledge will be equally impossible. Our consciousness, on such a theory, would be disintegrated into parts which would own no connexion with each other; nor would it be possible for us to think of things as, in spite of their differences, bound together into the unity of one world. The law of contradiction or

distinction, therefore, is likely to lead to serious miscon- ceptions, unless it be complemented by a law of relation— a law expressing the truth that there is a unity which transcends all distinction. For all intelligible distinction

| —all distinction of things in the intelligible world—must

be subordinate to their unity as belonging to that world, and therefore essentially connected with each other and with the intelligence. In such a world, in other words, there can be no absolute distinctions or differences (not even between being and not-being); for distinction without relation is impossible, and a conception held in absolute isolation from all correlated conceptions ceases to have any meaning. This does not, of course, imply a negation of the law of contradiction within its own sphere, but it does imply that that sphere is limited, and that there is no absolute contradiction. All opposition is within a pre- supposed unity, and therefore points to a higher reconcilia- tion, a reconciliation which is reached when we show that the opposition is one of correlative elements.

The great step in logical theory which was taken by the idealistic philosophy of the post-Kantian period was simply to dissipate the confusion which had prevailed so long between that bare or formal identity, which is but the beginning of thought and knowledge, and that concrete unity of difference, which is its highest idea and end. It was, in other words, to correct and complete the concep- tions of thought as analytical, and as externally syntheti- cal, by the conception of it as self-determining, to show that it is a unity which manifests itself in difference and opposition, yet in all this, even when it seems to be dealing with an object which is altogether external to it, is really developing and revealing itself. This new movement of thought might, in one point of view, be described as the addition of another logic to the logic of analysis and the logic of inductive synthesis which were already in existence. But it was really more than this ; for the new logic was not merely an external addition

1 Apewhoavros Tob KabdAou év rH WuxH, An. Post., ii, 19.

wrt’ APH Y SiC

to the old logics, it also put a new meaning into these logics by bringing to light the principles that were involved in them. At the same time it broke down the division that had been supposed to exist between logic and meta-physic, between the form or method of thought and its matter. It showed that thought itself contains a matter from which it cannot be separated, and that it is only by reason of this matter that it is able to ask intelligent questions of nature, and to get from nature intelligible answers. A short space must be devoted to explain this relation of the three logics to each other.

The analytic logic fairly represents our first scientific.

attitude to the world, in which we concentrate our attention upon the facts as they are given in experience, with no thought of any mental synthesis through which they are given. ‘To ourselves we seem to have to do with an object

which is altogether independent of our thought, and what |

we need in order to know it is to keep ourselves in a purely receptive attitude. All we can do is to analyse what is given, without adding anything of our own to it. It has, however, already been pointed out that this apparent self- abnegation is possible only because, in abnegating our indi- vidual point of view, we do not abnegate the point of view that belongs to us as universal or thinking subjects. In other words, the objectivity of knowledge thus.attained is not the ceasing of the activity of our thought, but rather of all that interferes with that activity. We seem to abstract from ourselves, but what we do abstract from is only the individuality that stands between us and the world. The scientific observer who has thus denied himself, however, is not necessarily conscious of the meaning of what he has done. The immediate expression of his consciousness is not “JT think the object,” but “it, the object, is”; and the more intensely active he is the more his activity is lost for him in the object of it. His whole work is, for himself, only the analysis of given facts, and for the rest he seems to have nothing to do but to take the world as he finds it. The voice of nature to which he listens is for him not his own voice but the voice of a stranger, and it does not occur to him to reflect that n&ture could not speak to any one buta conscious self. His business is to determine

things as they present themselves, to enumerate their

qualities, to measure their quantities ; and his logic accord- ingly is a logic governed by the idea of the relative com- prehension and extension of the things which he thus names and classifies. Such an analytic logic seems to be all that is necessary, because the only predicates by which things are as yet determined are those which are involved in their presence to us in perception, and as perceived they seem to be at once given in all their reality to the mind that apprehends them.

A step is taken beyond this first naive consciousness of things, whenever a distinction is made between appearance and reality, or whenever it is seen that the things perceived are essentially related to each other, and that therefore they cannot be known by their immediate presence to sense, but only by a mind which relates that which is, to that which 1s not, immediately perceived. If "' the shows of things are least themselves," we must go beyond the shows in order to know them; we must seek out the permanent for that which is given as transient, the law for the plenomenon, the cause for the effect. The process of thought in know- ledge therefore is no longer lost in its immediate object, but is, partly at least, distinguished from it. For just in proportion as the reality is separated from the appearance does the knower become conscious of an activity of his own thought in determining things. From this point of view nature is no longer an object which spontaneously reveals itself to us, but rather one which hides its meaning from us, and out of which we must wring its secret by persistent

questioning. And, as this questioning process obviously has not its direction determined purely by the object itself, it becomes manifest that the mind must bring with it the categories by which it seeks to make nature intelligible. To ask for the causes of things, or the laws of things, pre- supposes that the immediate appearance of them does not correspond to an idea of reality which the mind brings with it, and by which it judges the appearance. Nature is supposed to be given to or perceived by us as a multi- tude of objects in space passing through successive changes in time ; and what science seeks is to discover a necessity of connexion running through

all this apparently contingent coexistence and succession and binding it into a system. Science, therefore, seems to question nature by means of an idea of the necessary interdependence and connexion of all things, as parts of one systematic whole governed by general laws—an idea which it does not get from nature, but which it brings to nature. Hence the logic in which this process of investigation expresses its consciousness of itself will be a synthetic logic, a logic built on certain prin- ciples which are conceived to be independent of experience, and by the aid of which we may so transform that experi- ence, so penetrate into it or get beyond it, as to find for it

| a better explanation than that which it immediately gives of

itself. The Posterior Analytic, in which Aristotle brings in the idea of cause to vivify the syllogistic process, or supply a real meaning to it, may already be regarded as a first essay in this direction. And the theory of inductive logic, as explained by Bacon and his successors down to Mill, is a continuous attempt to determine what are the principles and methods on which experience must be questioned, in order to extract from it a knowledge which is not given in im- mediate perception.

It was, however, Hume who first brought into a clear light the subjectivity of the principles postulated in this logic, and especially of the principle of causality, which is the most important of them. In thus contrasting the sub- jectivity of the principles of science with the objectivity of the facts to which they are applicd, it was his intention to cast doubt on the science which is based on the applica- tion of the former to the latter. The principles, he main- tains, are not legitimately derived from the facts, therefore they cannot legitimately be used to interpret them. They are due to the influence of habit, which by an illegitimate process raises frequency of occurrence into the universality and necessity of law, and so changes a mere subjective association of ideas into an assured belief and expectation of objective facts. The answer given by Kant to this sceptical criticism of science involved a rejection of that very opposition of subjective and objective upon which it was based. Without necessary and universal principles, the experience of things as qualitatively and quantitatively dctermined objects, coexisting in space and passing through changes in time (or even the determination of the successive states of the subject as

successive), would itself have been impossible. Hence necessity of thought cannot be derived from a frequent experience of such objects. It is true that the determination of things as permanent sub- stances reciprocally acting on each other, according to uni- versal laws, goes beyond the determination of them as qualified and quantified phenomena in space and time. But both determinations are possible only through the same a priori principle, and we cannot admit the former determination without implicitly admitting the latter. As, therefore, it is through the necessity and universality of thought that objects exist for us, even before the application to them of the principles of scientific induction, and as the application of those principles is only a further step in that a priori synthesis which is already involved in the perception of these objects, we have no reason for treating

the former kind of synthesis as objectively valid which does not equally apply to the latter.

This vindication of the principles of induction has, how- ever, a further consequence, which was not clearly seen by Kant. It is fatal to the antithesis of the “given” and the “known,” of what is perceived and what is conceived, of natura materialiter spectata and natura formalier spectata, which he still admitted. For that antithesis really rested on the idea that there is no universal and necessary principle of determination of things involved in the apprehension of them as qualified and quantified phenomena in space and time. So soon, therefore, as it 1s seen that there is such a principle, and that the first deter- mination of things as objects of perception is duc to the same a priort synthesis which determines them in the second place as objects of experience, the ground for that contrast between reality and appearance on which the theory of induction rested is taken away. Kant, indeed, finds a new meaning for that contrast by interpreting it as referring, not to the opposition between things as they are given and things as they are known, but to a supposed opposition between things as they are given and known in experience and things as they are in themselves out of experience. however, only means that the former antithesis has broken down, and that therefore the ideal of knowledge based

upon it has yielded to a new ideal. The so-called things in themselves are noumena, the objects of an intuitive or perceptive understanding, 7.¢., objects in which the contrast of perception and conception, of given and known, is tran- scended. We can make Kant's theory consistent only by supposing him to mean that the conception of the world as a system of substances determining each other according to universal laws does not yet satisfy the idea of know- ledge which reason brings with it. In other words, just as science from the point of view of necessary law found something wanting in the conception of the world as a mere complex of quantified and qualified phenomena in space and time, so philosophy, in view of a still higher ideal of knowledge, may condemn the conception of the world as a system of objects determined by necessary laws of relation as itself inadequate and imperfect. And we have seen that this higher ideal is that which is involved in the unity of self-consciousness. Unfortunately Kant was unable, as Aristotle had been unable,.to distinguish this idea from the idea of an abstract identity in which there is no room for even a relative difference of perception and conception, and therefore the perceptive understanding was named by him only to be rejected.

If, however, we correct this inadequacy of Kant's state- ment, as his later works enable us partly to correct it, we see that it involves a new idea of knowledge and a new logic,—a logic governed by the idea of organic unity and development, just as the analytic logic had been governed by the idea of identity, and as the inductive logic had been governed by the idea of necessary law. For, if the unity of self-consciousness be our type of knowledge, truth must mean to us, not the apprehension of objects as self-identical things, distinguished from each other in quantity and quality, nor even the determination of such things as standing in necessary relations to each other. It must mean the determination of the world (and of whatever in it is in any sense an independent reality, so far as it is so independent) as a unity which realizes itself in and through difference, a unity which is indeed determined, but deter- mined by itself. In a view of the world which is governed by this category, correlation must be reinterpreted as organic unity, and causation as development. Its logical method must be neither analytical nor synthetical, or rather it must be both at once, z.e., it must endeavour to

This new antithesis of reality and appearance, .

exhibit the process of things as the evolution of a unity which is at once self-differentiating and self-integrating, which manifests itself in difference, that through difference it may return upon itself. Further, as this logic arises simply out of a deeper consciousness of that which was contained in the two previous logics, so it first enables us to explain them. In other words, the advance from the analytic to the inductive logic, and again from the inductive to what may be called the genetic logic, may itself be shown to be a self-determined development of thought, in which the first two steps are the imperfect manifestation of a principle fully revealed only in the last step. The consciousness of self-identical objects, independent of each other and of thought, is thus only the beginning of a pro- cess of knowledge which reaches its second stage in the determination of these objects as essentially related to each other, and which finds its ultimate end in the knowledge of the correlated objects as essentially related to the mind that knows them. Or if, in this last point of view, things are still conceived as having a certain relative independence of the mind, it can only be in so far as they are in the Leibnitzian sense monads, or microcosms,—.e., in so far as they are self-determined, and so have, in the narrower circle of their individual life, something analogous to the self-

completed nature of the world, when it is contemplated in

its unity with its spiritual principle.

Such a genetic logic is inconsistent with any absolute distinction between the a priori and a posteriori element in knowledge. For here the a priori is not simply a law of necessary connexion to beapplied to an external matter, but a principle of organic development, a principle which, from the very nature of it, cannot be applied to a foreign matter. To treat the world as organic is to apply to it a category which is inconsistent with its being something merely given or externally presented to thought. The relation of things to thought must itself be brought under the same category of organic unity which is applied to the relation of things to each other in the world, otherwise the externality of the world to the thought for which it is will contradict the conception of the world as itself organic. Hence the distinction of @ priori and a posteriori, so far as it is maintained at all, must

shrink to something secondary and relative. It can be maintained only as a distinction of thought from its object, which presupposes their ultimate unity. From this point of view logic may be said to deal with the a priori, in so far as it treats the general conditions and methods of knowledge without reference to any parti- cular object. Logic must exhibit abstractly the process by which the intelligence establishes its unity with the intelli- gible world; or, to put it in another way, it must demon- strate that the being of things can be truly conceived only as their being for thought. It is limited to the a priori, in the sense that it ends with the idea that the esse of things is their zntelligi, and does not consider how this real intelligence or intelligible reality manifests itself in the concrete world of nature and spirit.

In this sense logic cannot be separated from metaphysic if metaphysic be confined to ontology. They are simply two aspects of one science, which we may regard either as determining the idea of being or the idea of knowing. The process of knowing is never really a formal process; it always involves the application of certain categories, and these categories are simply successive definitions of being or reality. We cannot separate the category from the movement of thought by which it is evolved and applied, nor the transition from lower to higher categories from changes of logical method. Hence a logic divorced from metaphysic inevitably becomes empty and unreal, and a metaphysic divorced from logic reduces itself to a kind of dictionary of abstract terms, which are put in no living

me rare YS iC

relation to each other. For such a logic and such a meta-

physic must rest on the assumption of an absolute division between being and thought, the very two terms the unity of which it must be the utmost object of both logic and metaphysic to prove and. to produce.

4. The Relation of Metaphysic to Philosophy of Religion. —The possibility of a “first philosophy,” as we have already seen, is essentially bound up with the possibility of what we may calla last philosophy. It is only in so far as we can rise above the point of view of the individual and the dualism of the ordinary consciousness—in so far, in other words, as wecan have at least an anticipative consciousness of that last unity in which all the

differences of things from each other and from the mind that knows them are explained and transcended—that we are able to go back to that first unity which all these differences pre- suppose. The life of man begins with a divided conscious- ness, with a consciousness of self which is opposed to the consciousness of what is not-self, with a consciousness of a multiplicity of particulars which do not seem to be bound together by any one universal principle. Such division and apparent independence of what are really parts of one whole is characteristic of nature, and in spirit it is at first only so far transcended that it has become conscious of itself. A conscious difference, however, as it is a difference in consciousness, is no longer an unmediated difference, It is a difference through which the unity has begun to show itself, and which therefore the unity is on the way to subordinate. And all the development of consciousness and self-consciousness is just the process through which this subordination is carried out, up to the point at which the difference is seen to be nothing but the manifestation of the unity. Just so far, therefore, as this end is present to us,—so far as we are able to look forward to the solution or reconciliation of all the divisions and oppositions of which we are conscious and to see that there is an all- embracing unity which they cannot destroy,—is it possible that we should look back to the beginning or first unity, and recognize that these divisions and oppositions are but the manifestations of it. Thus the extremes of abstractness and of concreteness of thought are bound up together. The freedom of intelligence by which we get rid of thecomplexity of our actual life, and direct our thoughts to the simplest and most elementary conditions of being and knowing, is possible only to those who are not limited to that life, but can regard it and all its finite concerns from the point of view of the infinite and the universal. In this sense it is true that religion and metaphysic spring from the same source, and that it is possible to vindicate the rationality of religion only on metaphysical principles. The philosophy of religion is, in fact, only the last application or final expression of metaphysic; and, conversely, a metaphysic which is not capable of furnishing an explanation of religion contradicts itself.

This last remark affords us a kind of criterion of a true metaphysic. Can it or can it not explain religion? If it cannot, it must be equally unable to explain its own possi- bility, and therefore implicitly it condemns itself. Thus a pantheistic system, which loses the subject in the absolute substance, cannot

explain how that subject should appre- hend the substance of which itis but a transitory mode, nor, on the other hand, can it explain why the substance should manifest itself in and toa subject. And the same criticism. may be madeonall theoriesin which thefirst or metaphysical unity is abstractly opposed to the manifoldness and con- tingency of things. Not only of Spinoza, but also of Kant, of Fichte, and even of Schelling, it might with some truth

«be said that their absolute is like the lion’s den, towards which all the tracks are directed, while none come from it. It is essential that the first unity should be such as to

explain the possibility of difference and division, for, if it is not, then the return to unity out of difference is made as accidental as the difference itself. When Aristotle repre- sented the Divine Being as pure self-consciousness, pure form without matter, he found himself unable to account for the existence of any world in which form was realized in matter. When therefore he speaks of the process of the finite world by which it returns to God, and attributes to nature a will, which is directed to the good as its final cause, his theory seems to be little more than a metaphor in which the analogy of consciousness is applied to the unconscious. For, if the Divine Being is not manifested in the world, any tendency of the world to realize the good becomes an inexplicable fact. A similar difficulty is, as we saw, involved in Kant’s confusion of the bare identity of understanding with the absolute unity of knowledge. Reducing the unity of self-consciousness to such a bare identity, Kant could not be expected to see, what Aristotle had not seen, that pure self-consciousness is essentially related to anything but itself. Hence the various attempts which he made in his ethical works and in his Criticism of Judgment to find a link of connexion between the noumenal and the empirical were necessarily condemned even by him- self as the expressions of a merely regulative and subjective principle of knowledge. Even Fichte, who found in the thought, which is for him the prius of all existence, a principle of differentiation and integration which explained how self-consciousness in us should be necessarily correlative with the consciousness of a world, was unable to

free him- self from the Kantian opposition of a noumenal identity in which there is no difference to a phenomenal unity which is realized in difference. Hence by him also the return out of difference is regarded as an impossibility, or as a processus in infinitum, and the absolute unity as that which is beyond all knowledge and only apprehended by faith.

If we look to completely elaborated theories, and dis- regard all tentative and imperfect sketches, it may fairly be said that all that has as yet been done in the region of pure metaphysic is contained in two works, in the Jfeta- physic of Aristotle and the Logic of Hegel, And up toa certain point the lesson which they teach is one and the same, viz., that the ultimate unity which is presupposed in all differences is the unity of thought with itself, the unity of self-consciousness, and that in this unity is con- tained the type of all science, and the form of all existence ; in other words, I=I is the forniula of the universe. The difference between these two works has, however, already been indicated. With Aristotle, because he neglects the essential relation of self-consciousness to consciousness, or of the conscious self to the world of objects in space and time, the unity of self-consciousness tends to pass, as it did pass with the Neo-Platonists, into a pure identity without difference. In the Hegelian logic, on the other hand, self- consciousness is interpreted as a unity which realizes itself through difference and the reconciliation of difference—as, in fact, an organic unity of elements, which exist only as they pass into each other. In other words, it is shown that the differentiating movement by which the subjective — and the objective self are opposed and the integrating movement by which they are reunited are both essential. Hence we cannot think of the conscious self as a simple resting identity, but only as an active self-determining principle ; nor can we think of its self-determination as a pure affirmation of itself, without any negation, but only as an affirmation which involves a double negation—an opposition of two elements which yet are essentially united. Each factor in this unity, in fact, is necessarily conceived as passing beyond itself into the other; the subject is subject only as it relates itself to the object, the object is

object only as it relates itself to the subject. It is this tension against each other of elements which yet are corre- lated and indissolubly united, this self-surrender to each other of elements which yet are maintained in their distinc- tion, which constitutes the organic unity of thought in itself, and separates it from the mere abstract unity of mysticism. When, however, the concrete or self-differen- tiating character of the unity of self-consciousness is appre- hended in this way,—so that it is impossible to confuse its indivisible unity with the simplicity of that which is one merely because it has no differences in it,—the problem of the relation of pure self-consciousness to the world in space and time ceases to be insoluble. Thought, as it 1s seen to have difference in itself, is no longer irreconcilable with the world of difference; nor is it necessary to introduce a foreign ty to make their connexion intelligible. or, as thought is a principle of difference as well as of unity, of analysis as well as of synthesis, and as it cannot realize itself in its unity except through the utmost development of difference, abstract self-consciousness, with its transparent or merely ideal difference, cannot be its ultimate form. On the contrary, the consciousness of self is possible only in distinction from, and in relation to, a world of objects. In other words, the unity of the thinking subject pre- supposes, not merely the opposition of the subjective and the objective self, but also the opposition of the self in its pure self-identity to a world of externality and difference. The pure intelligence, which is the prius of all things, must not, therefore, be regarded—as Aristotle regarded it—as merely theoretical, but also as practical. It must be con- ecived as a living principle, a principle which only in self- manifestation can be conscious of itself, and to the very nature of which, therefore, self-manifestation is essential. In this way Hegel—just because he grasped the concrete character of the unity of thought in itself—was enabled to understand the necessary unity of thought or self-conscious- ness with the world, and to heal the division of physics from metaphysic, which Aristotle had admitted.

Schelling and others who have raised objections to the Hegelian method have specially directed. their criticisms against this transition from logic to the philosophy of nature, from pure self-consciousness to the external world in space and time. In doing so, they have practically fallen back upon the Aristotelian theory, with its opposition of God, as pure form, to the finite world. But this in effect is to deny that “the real is the rational” or

intelligible, and to introduce into the world, as the ground of its distinction from reason, a purely irrational or contingent element. A modern follower of Schelling's later positive philosophy only draws the necessary consequence from this view when he teaches the pessimist creed that the highest good is the negation or extinction of the finite. Nor can we wonder that the same writer who denies that the absolute self-consciousness is essentially related to or manifested in the world should proceed to reduce this self-consciousness to a mystic identity which comes out of itsclf and becomes self-conscious only by an inscrutable act of will. The fact, indeed, that those who deny the possibility of a rational transition from self-consciousness to the world are forced by the logic of their position to reduce self-consciousness to an abstract identity may be regarded as a kind of indirect proof that the principle of self-consciousness, truly conceived, does involve that transi- tion. Another step in the same direction may be made if we consider how the Cartesian philosophy treated the same opposition, which it also regarded as absolute. By Descartes mind and matter, thought and extension, are defined as abstract opposites, every quality of each finding its contradictory counterpart in a quality of the other.

fb Va TO

itself and knows itself as it is, which has no discretion of parts or capacity of division or determination from without. Matter is essentially discrete or infinitely divided ; it is a pure passivity ; and all its determination comes to it from' without. The world is therefore, as it were, 'cut in two with a hatchet," divided into two unrelated existences, which are held together only by the will of God. | Spinoza cuts the knot, and avoids the arbitrariness of this solution, by treating extension and thought as two attributes separated only in respect of our intelligence, but each expressing fully the absolute substance. And something like the same view has been revived in recent times, by writers like Lewes and Mr Spencer, who speak of feelings and motions as two opposite "aspects" of the same fact. When we ask, however, for whom these attributes or aspects are a unity, it becomes clear that the intelligence which is regarded as standing on one side of the dualism must also be taken as transcending it, and relating the two sides to each other. Moreover, the correspondence of the two attributes upon which Spinoza insists and their contra- riety upon which Descartes insists, when

taken together, give us the idea of a correlative opposition, 7.¢., of an opposi- tion of elements which yet are necessary to each other. Tf, therefore, they cannot be simply identified as Spinoza identifies them, yet they need no external bond such as Descartes introduces to combine them ; for they cannot exist apart from each other. Their opposition is held within the limits of their unity, and is no absolute con- tradiction, but rather an opposition which exists only as it is transcended. In other words, it is an abstract opposi- tion, 7.¢., it is an opposition of elements which seem to be irreconcilable till it is observed that they are correlative, that each exists or has a meaning only as it relates itself to, or passes out of itself into, the other, and that each, held in its abstraction and separation from the other, loses all the meaning that it seemed to have. For, as in an organic body each member or organ lives only in tension against the others, yet only as continually relating itself to the others, so the utmost opposition of mind to matter, of the intelligence to the intelligible world, presupposes their unity, and is only the realization of it.

There is here, however, something more than an ordinary case of correlation, for in this unity of opposites mind appears twice, once as one of the opposites, and again as the unity which transcends the opposition. This ambiguity becomes most obvious in theories like that of Mr Spencer, who speaks of “ two consciousnesses,” which cannot be resolved into each other, but yet which strangely form inseparable parts of one and the same consciousness. What, however, is really involved in such a statement is that the external world, which in the first instance presents itself as absolutely opposed in nature to the subject whose object it is, is yet one with that subject, and that therefore the antagonism of mind to its object is only the last differentia- tion through which it realizes its unity with itself. In Hegel’s language, that which presents itself as other than mind is its other—‘an other which is not another,” whose difference and opposition to itself it overreaches and over- comes. We must, therefore, regard the independence and externality of nature, its indifference, and even, as it seems, opposition, to the development of the moral and intellectual life of man, as merely apparent. For man, in this point of view, is not merely one natural being among others, but the being in whom nature is at once completed and transcended. If, therefore, at first he appears to stand in merely accidental and external relations to the other existences among which he finds himself,

yet the whole process of his life—the process by which he comes to know the external world, and by which, reacting upon it, he

Mind is a pure self-determined unity, which is as it knows | makes it the means to the realization of an individual and

eel 46P TY 8 1 ©

social life of his own—is the negation of this contingency and externality. In all this process he is showing himself to be a being who can only know himself as he knows the objective world, arid who can only realize himself as he makes himself the agent of a Divine purpose, to which all things are contributing.

Such an idea of man's relation to the world is necessarily involved in any theory that goes beyond that subjective idealism or sensationalism which denies to him every

object of knowledge except his own states of feeling, and

every end of action except his own pleasures and pains. Recent speculation, indeed, has suggested a compromise by which this dilemma is supposed to be evaded, and mankind are represented as forming an organic unity in themsclves, though they are still conceived as standing in an external and accidental relation to nature, the forces of which by their knowledge and skill they have subdued and are more and more subduing to their service. Such a compromise we find in the philosophy of Comte, the first writer who, starting from an apparently empirical basis, was able to break through the individualistic prejudices of the school of Locke. In the latter volumes of his Positive Philosophy, still more in his Posztive Politics, Comte so far transcends individualism as to deny the externality of men to each other, and to declare that "the individual, as such, is an abstraction," and that in reality he cannot be separated from the social organism, which is thus not merely an extraneous condition of his development, but essential to his very existence as man. Thus individual men exist only through the universal—through the spirit of the family, of the nation, of humanity, which manifests itself in them as a principle of life and development. Yet this organic unity, according to Comte, is in contact with a world which in relation to it is

external and contingent. Nature has not its final cause in man, but on the contrary is, at first, rather his enemy ; and itis to humanity itself that the praise is due if to a certain extent the enemy has been turned into a servant. The unity of life which manifests itself in humanity cannot therefore be considered as a universal principle, as the principle of the whole universe, but simply as the principle of the limited existence of man,

which is hemmed in on every side by external and, in the –

main, unknown conditions. If humanity therefore is an organism, it is an organism existing in a medium which in reference to it is inorganic, 7.e., in a medium which has no essential relation to the life which animates man.

It is obvious, however, that this theory is an illogical attempt to find a standing ground between two opposite philosophies,—between the philosophy which treats man merelyas a naturalindividual, placed among other individual beings and things, and which therefore regards his relation to them as something accidental and external, and the philo- sophy which treats him as a spiritual subject, a conscious and self-conscious being, and regards him therefore as having no merely external relations either to other men or to nature. Comte shrinks from regarding the world without us as the manifestation of that spiritual principle which is also within us, which constitutes our very nature as individual men, and therefore connects us with the world at the same time that it separates us from it. Yet he recognizes the existence in us of a principle which is so far universal that it constitutes a community between all men. He thinks that the individual can transcend himself, so far as to see all things, not indeed from a Divine point of view, sub specie xternitatis, but from the point of view of universal humanity, and that in conformity with this theoretical consciousness, he can live a practical life of altruism, 7.¢., a life in which he identifies his own good with the good of humanity. But the philosophy that has gone so far must logically go further. Itis impossible to treat humanity as

|

an organism without extending the organic idea to the con- ditions under which the social life of humanity is developed. The medium by aid of which, or in reacting against which, the organized being maintains itsclf is an essential part of its life; it remains organic only in so far as it can mould itself to its conditions, and its conditions to itself. This is true even of the animal organism in relation to its small circle of conditions, which, however, is part of a larger circle to which the animal has no relation. Buta conscious being is a wniversal centre of relations; there is nothing which it, as conscious, cannot make part of its own life. Hence the application of the organic idea to it in- volves its application to the whole world. And, if the recognition of a universal principle manifested in humanity naturally led Comte to the idea of the worship of humanity, the recognition of a universal principle manifested in man and nature alike must lead to the idea of the worship of God.

The rationality of religion, then, rests on the possibility of an ultimate synthesis in which man and nature are regarded as the manifestation of one spiritual principle. For religion involves a faith that, in our efforts to realize the good of humanity, we are not merely straining after an ideal beyond us, which may or may not be realized, but are animated by a principle which within us and without us is necessarily realizing itself, because it is the ultimate principle by which all things are, and are known. This absolute certitude that we work effectually because all the universe is working with us, or, in other words, because God is working in us, can find its explanation and defence only in a philosophy for which “the real] is the rational, and the rational is the real.” And such a philosophy, beginning with the Kantian doctrine that existence means existence for a spiritual or thinking subject, must go on to prove that that only can exist for such a subject which is the manifestation of thought or spirit ; and, conversely, that spirit or intelligence is essentially self-manifesting, or, in other words, that it cannot be conceived except as standing in essential relation to an external and material world. Finally, if nature be thus regarded as a necessary manifestation of spirit, it can be opposed to spirit only in so far as spirit in its realization becomes opposed to itself. In other words, nature must be regarded as, from a higher point of view, included in spirit. Nature exists that it may show itself to be spiritual in and to man, who transcends it yet

implies it, who finds in it the necessary basis of his thought and action, but only that he may build upon it a higher spiritual life.

Nature is made better by no mean

But nature makes that mean: so over the art

Which, you say, adds to nature is an art

Which nature makes." Only the order of precedence suggested by these words must be inverted. For, as nature only is for spirit, so the spiritual energy which reacts upon nature is that which manifests for the first time what nature in reality is. It is the consciousness of this—z.e., of the identity of that which is realizing itself within and without us,—the consciousness that the necessity which is the precondition of our freedom is the manifestation of the same spirit which makes us free—which turns morality into religion. For it is this alone which enables us to regard the realization of the highest ends of human life as no mere happy accident, or as a conquest to be won by the cunning of man from an unfriendly or indifferent destiny, but as the result towards which all things are working.

In this philosophy, which finds its most adequate expression in the works of Hegel, there are two things which may be distinguished—the general idealistic view of the world, and the dialectical movement of thought in

which Hegel develops and expresses it. And there are perhaps many at the present. time who are prepared to accept the former, but who yet suspect, or even reject, the latter. And no doubt there is much in Hegel's Logic and Philosophy of Spirit, and still more in his Philosophy of Nature, which there is reason to regard with distrust. In clever hands that are not checked by a sufficient con- sciousness of the whole, the Hegelian dialectic may be made into the means of producing a seeming proof of any- thing. Nor is it always easy to determine how far Hegel himself was tempted by an impatient consciousness of the

universality of his method to employ it in cases where the |

others; he is preventing their interests from becoming his ; all things are his, and his only, who has died to himself, But if this be the truth of morality, it is something more, for “ morality is the nature of things.” We cannot separate the law of the life of man from the law of the world in which he lives. And, if it is the nature of things, as it is the nature of spirit, that he who loseth his life shall save it, the world must be referred to a spiritual principle, and the Christian doctrine of the nature of God is only the converse of the Christian law of ethics. To Hegel, starting

from this point, a new light was thrown on the Fichtcan

treatment of the idea of self, and the Fichtean proof that the

conditions of its successful application were wanting. | consciousness of self implies a relation to an object which Sometimes he seems to forget, what he himself teaches, that | is opposed to the self, and which yet from another point science must first have generalized experience and deter- | of view—since an object exists only for a subject—cannot

mined it by its finite categories, ere it is possible for philosophy to give its final interpretation. Yet, when we

be anything but an element of its own life. It was seen

| that this movement of thought is no mere fluctuation

realize the nature of that interpretation, and of the trans- | between contradictory positions, to be terminated finally by formation of science which philosophy by means of it | an ipse dixit of faith, but that the unity of the opposite

proposes to effect, it becomes clear that the dialectic of Hegel is no extraneous addition to his idealism, but is part and parcel of the same movement of thought. For this dialectic rests on the idea that thought or self-conscious- ness finds in its own organic unity the ultimate key to all difficulties in regard to the objects of thought and their relations to each

other and tothe mind. Self-consciousness, as has been already shown, is implicitly the whole web of categories which it throws over the world, and by aid of which it makes the world intelligible. All these it contains in itself; and, as it proceeds to determine the meaning of things, it simply produces its store, and exhausts itself on the object. Now, if it be idealism, in the strict sense of the word, to make thought or self-conscious- ness the principle and ultimate explanation of all that exists, it is obvious that we cannot separate idealism from such a dialectic as this, which is nothing more than the mind's consciousness of its own movement or process of sclf-affirmation. If to find thought in things be more than an empty word, then the movement or process which thought is must explain at once the transition from thought to what in opposition to it we call " things," and must give us the means of reconciling that opposition. In other words, the same movement by which thought deter- mines itself as self-conscious, 7.¢., as a unity realized through 'difference, must also be conceived as the explanation of the difference between pure thought and the world, and as the solution of that difference in the idea of absolute spirit. Such idealism has a close relation to Christianity ; it may be even said to be but Christianity theorized. It has often been asserted that Hegel's philosophy of religion is but an artificial accommodation to Christian doctrine of a philo- sophy which has no inherent relation to Christianity. If, however, we regard the actual development of that philo- sophy it would be truer to say that it was the study of Christian ideas which first produced it. What delivered Hegel from the mysticism in which the later philosophies of Fichte and Schelling tended to lose themselves, and led him, in his own language, to regard the absolute "not merely as substance but as subject,"'—what made him recognize with Fichte that the absolute principle is spiritual, and yet enabled him with Schelling to see in nature, as the opposite of spirit, the very means of its realization,— was his thorough appreciation of the ethical and religious meaning of Christianity. In the great Christian aphorism that "he who loseth his life alone can save it" he found a key to the difficulties of ethics, a reconciliation of hedonism and asceticism. For what this saying implies is that a spiritual or self-conscious being is one who is in

contradiction with himself when he makes his individual:

self his end. In opposing his own interest to that of

elements is apprehensible by the intelligence, and that indeed it is tts presence to the intelligence which makes the consciousness of opposition possible. It was in this sense that Hegel could say that that unity of opposites which had been called unintelligible by previous writers was just the very nature of the intelligence, and that only a view of the world guided by this idea could be properly intelligible, while every other view must contain in it an unsolved contradiction, an element that remains permanently impervious to thought.

The-great objection to a metaphysic like this, at least an objection which weighs much in the minds of many, is that which springs from the contrast between the claim of absolute knowledge which it seems to involve and the actual limitations which our intelligence encounters in every direction. If the theory were true, it is felt we ought to be nearer the solution of the problems of our life, practical and speculative, than we are; the riddle of the painful earth ought to vex us less; we ought to find our way more easily through the entanglement of facts, and to be able to deal with practical difficulties in a less tentative manner. Yet there is really no antagonism between such a doctrine and a consciousness of the limita- tion of our faculties; nay rather, it is only on such a theory that a rational distrust of ourselves can be based. When Aristotle meets the warning that we should think finite and human things since we are finite and human with the answer that we ought rather, so far as in us lies, to rise to what is immortal and divine, he is not denying the limits of man's knowledge and power ; on the contrary, he is rather pointing to the very principle which makes us conscious of those limits; for it is just because there is in man a principle of infinity that he knows his finitude, and, conversely, it is just in the consciousness of this finitude that he rises above it. one who has in himself the measure of his own weakness, and who, if he "trembles like a guilty thing surprised," is yet conscious that he is trembling before himself. This truth is often expressed by Kant with special relation to the moral consciousness, as where he contrasts the limitation of man, as a sensible being, occupying an infinitesimal space in the boundless world of sense, with his freedom from all limitation as a personal self, a member of the truly infinite world of intelligence. But it is not necessary to adopt Kant's abstract division of the sensible from the intelligible world to see that the consciousness of the greatness of the problem which has to be solved in

human life and thought is deepened and widened by that very idea of philosophy which yet gives us the assurance that the problem is not insoluble, and even that, in principle, it is already solved (E. ©.)

A rational humility is possible only to °

MET—MET

METAPONTUM, or Merapontivm (the first form is that generally found in Latin writers, but Thucydides, Strabo, and other Greek authors employ the latter form), was a city of Magna Greecia situated on the Gulf of Tarentum, near the mouth of the river Bradanus, and distant about 24 miles from Tarentum and 14 from Heraclea. It was founded by an Achean colony about 700 3.c., though various traditions existed which assigned it an earlier origin. But according to the only historical account it was a joint foundation from Sybaris and Crotona, to which, as usual in similar cases, was Joined a body of fresh settlers from the mother country, under the command of a leader named Leucippus. The object of its establishment was without doubt to strengthen the Achzan element in Magna Greecia, as opposed to the increasing power of the Tarentines, but at the same time to occupy a territory which was remarkable for its fertility. It was to this cause that Metapontum owed the great prosperity to which it attained at an early period, and appears to have continued to enjoy for several centuries, though it never assumed a prominent place in history. It was, however, one of the cities that played a conspicuous part in the political troubles arising from the introduction of the Pythagorean principles into the cities of Magna Greecia, and it was there that the philosopher himself ended his days. His tomb was still shown there in the time of Cicero.

At the time of the Athenian expedition to Sicily (415 B.c.) Metapontum appears to have been an opulent and powerful city, whose alliance was courted by the Athenians; but they contented themselves with a very trifling support. In 332 B.c., at the time of the expedition of Alexander, king of Epirus, into Italy, it was one of the first cities to espouse his cause, and enter into an alliance with him ; and they appear to have in like manner lent an active support to Pyrrhus at a later period. Down to this time, therefore, Metapontum seems to have retained its position as one of the principal cities of Magna Grecia, and there is no evidence of its having suffered

materially from the establishment of the Lucanians in its immediate neighbourhood. Nor have we any account of the precise period at which it passed under the dominion of Rome, or the conditions under which it became subject to the great republic. But it was the Second Punic War which gave the fatal blow to its prosperity. After the battle of Cann in 216 B.c. it was among the first cities in the south of Italy to declare in favour of Hannibal, and after the fall of Tarentum in 212 z.c. it not only received a Carthaginian garrison, but became for some years the headquarters of Hannibal. Hence, when the defeat of Hasdrubal at the Metaurus (207 B.c.) compelled him to abandon this part of Italy, and withdraw into the fastnesses of Bruttium, the whole mass of the inhabitants of Metapontum abandoned their city, and followed him in his retreat.

From this time Metapontum sunk into a poor and incon- siderable town; though it was still existing as such in the days of Cicero, it soon fell into complete decay, and Pausanias tells us that in his time nothing remained of it but a theatre and the circuit of the walls. All remains of these have since disappeared, but the site is still marked by the ruins of a temple, which occupy a slight elevation on the right bank of the river Bradanus, about 2 miles from its mouth. The surrounding plain, so celebrated in ancient times for its fertility, is now desolated by malaria, and almost uninhabited ; and the remains of the city itself, between the site of the temple and the sea, are in great part buried in the alluvial deposits of the neighbouring rivers.

Some excavations were carried on upon the spot by the Duc de Luynes in 1828, and the results of his researches were published by him in a special work (Métaponte, fol., Paris, 1833).

103

METASTASIO (1698-1782). Pietro Trapassi, the Italian poet who is better known by his assumed name of Metastasio, was born in Rome, January 6, 1698. THis father, Felice Trapassi, a native of Assisi, came to Rome and took service in what was termed the Corsican regiment of the papal forces. He subsequently married a Bolognese woinan, called Francesca Galasti, and established himself in business as a sort of grocer in the Via dei Cappellari. Two sons and two daughters were the fruit of this marriage. The eldest son, Leopoldo, must be mentioned, since he played a part of some importance in

the poet’s life. Pietro, while quite a child, showed an extraordinary talent for improvisation, and often held a crowd attentive in the streets while he recited impromptu verses on a given subject. It so happened that, while he was thus engaged one evening in the year 1709, two men of high distinction in Roman society passed by and stopped to listen to his declamation. These were Gian Vincenzo Gravina, famous for legal and literary erudition, famous no less for his dictatorship of the Arcadian Academy, and Lorenzini, a critic of some note. Gravina was at once attracted by the boy’s poetical talent and by his charm of person; for little Pietro was gifted with agreeable manners and considerable beauty. The great man interested himself in the genius he had accident- ally discovered, made Pietro his protegé, and in the course of afew weeks adopted him. Felice Trapassi was glad enough to give his son the chance of a good education and introduction into the world under auspices so favourable. Gravina, following a fashion for which we may find: pre- cedents so illustrious as that of Melanchthon, Hellenized the boy’s name Trapassi into Metastasio; and this name remained with him for life. Gravina intended his adopted son to be a jurist like himself. He therefore made the boy learn Latin and begin the study of law. At the same time he cultivated his literary gifts, and displayed the youthful prodigy both at his own house and in the Roman coteries. Metastasio soon found himself competing with the most celebrated improvisatori of his time in Italy. Days spent in severe studies, evenings devoted to the task of improvis- ing eighty stanzas at a single session, were fast ruining Pietro’s health and overstraining his poetic faculty. At this juncture Gravina had to journey into Calabria on business. He took Metastasio with him, exhibited him in the literary circles of Naples, and then placed him under the care of his kinsman Gregorio Caroprese at a little place called Scaléa. In country air and the quiet of the southern sea-shore Metastasio’s health revived. It was decreed by the excellent Gravina that he should never improvise a line again. His great facility should be reserved for nobler efforts, when, having completed his education, he might enter into competition with poets who had _be- queathed masterpieces to the world.

Metastasio responded with the docility of a pliant nature to his patron’s wishes. At the age of twelve, while attend- ing to classical and legal studies, he translated the J/iad into octave stanzas; and two years later he composed

a tragedy in the manner of Seneca upon a subject chosen from Trissino's Italia Liberata—Gravina's favourite epic. It was called Giustino, Gravina had it printed in 1713; but the play is lifeless ; and forty-two years afterwards we find Metastasio writing to his publisher, Calsabigi, that he would willingly suppress it. Caroprese died in 1714, leaving Gravina his heir ; and in 1718 Gravina also died. Metastasio inherited from the good old man a property, consisting of house, plate, furniture, and money, which amounted to 15,000 scudi, or about £4000. At a meeting of the Arcadian Academy, amid the tears and plaudits of that learned audience, he recited an elegy on the patron who had been to him so true a foster-father, and then settled down, not it seems without real sorrow for his loss, to enjoy what was no inconsiderable

fortune at that period. Metastasio was now twenty. During the last four years he had worn the costume of | abbé, having taken the minor orders without which it was | then useless to expect advancement in Rome. His romantic history, personal beauty, charming manners, and distin- guished talents made him fashionable. That before two years were out he had spent his money and increased his reputation for wit will surprise no one. He now very sensibly determined to quit a mode of life for which he was not born, and to apply himself seriously to the work of his profession. Accordingly he went to Naples, and entered the office of an eminent lawyer named Castagnola. | It would appear that he articled himself as clerk, for | Castagnola, who was a stern master, averse to literary trifling, exercised severe control over his time and energies. While slaving at the law, Metastasio did not wholly neglect the Muses. In 1721 he composed an epithalamium, and | probably also his first musical serenade, Hndimione, on the occasion of the marriage of his patroness the Princess Pinelli di Sangro to the Marchese Belmonte Pignatelli. But the event which fixed his destiny was the following. In 1722 the birthday of the empress had to be celebrated with more than ordinary honours, and the viceroy applied | to Metastasio to compose a serenata for the occasion. He | accepted this invitation with mingled delight and trepida- tion ; for Castagnola looked with no favour on his clerk's poetical distractions. It was arranged that his authorship should be kept a profound secret. Under these conditions Metastasio produced Gli

Ortc Esperidi. Set to music by Porpora, it won the most extraordinary applause. The great Roman prima donna, Marianna Bulgarelli, called La Romanina from her birthplace, who had played the part | of Venus in this drama, was so enraptured with the beautics of the libretto that she spared no pains until she had dis- covered its author. Asked point-blank whether he had not written the words of the successful play, Metastasio was obliged to answer, Yes! La Romanina forthwith took possession of him, induced him to quit his lawyer's office, and promised to secure for him fame and independence, if | he would devote his talents to the musical drama. It was | thus that the opera, already partially developed by the Cesarean poet, Apostolo Zeno, attained perfection. The right man had been found for maturing this form of art which the genius of the age demanded, but which was still but incomplete. In La Romanina's house Metastasio became acquainted with the greatest composers of the day,— with Porpora, from whom he took lessons in music ; with Hasse, Pergolese, Scarlatti, Vinci, Leo, Durante, Marcello, all of whom were destined in the future to set his plays to melody. Here too he studied the art of singing, and learned to appreciate the style of such men as Farinelli. His singularly pliant genius discerned the conditions which the drama must obey in order to adapt itself to music in the stage it then had reached. Gifted himself with extra-ordinary facility in composition, and with a true poetic | feeling, he found no difficulty in producing plays which, while beautiful in themselves, judged merely as works of literary art, became masterpieces as soon as their words were set to music, and rendered by the singers of the greatest school of vocal art the world has ever seen. Read- ing Metastasio in the study, it is impossible to do him justice. Our only chance of rendering him a portion of his due is to approach these lyrical scenes—so passionate in their emotion, so cunningly devised for musical effect— with the phrases of Pergolese or Paesiello ringing in our ears, and to imagine how a Farinelli or a Caffariello voiced those stanzas which demand for their artistic realization the "linkéd sweetness long drawn out" of melodies as the Italian school developed them. In short, Metastasio is a poet whose poetry leapt to its real life in the environment |

TASIO

of music. The conventionality of all his plots, the absurdities of many of his situations, the violence he does to history in the persons of some leading characters, his

i “damnable iteration” of the theme of love in all its

phases, are explained and justified by music. He can stil] be studied with pleasure and profit. But our only chance of understanding the cosmopolitan popularity he enjoyed

| is by remembering that at least one half of the effect he

aimed at has been irrecoverably lost.

Metastasio resided with La Romanina and her husband in Rome. The generous woman, moved by an affection half maternal half romantic, and by a true artist’s admiration for so rare a talent, adopted him more passionately even than Gravina had done. She took the whole Trapassi family—tfather, mother, brother, sisters—into her own house, She fostered the poet’s genius and pampered his caprices.

Under her influence he wrote in rapid succession the

Didone Abbandonata, Catone in Utica, Ezio, Alessandro nel? Indie, Semiramide Riconosciuta, Siroe, and Artaserse, These dramas were set to music by the chief composers of the day, and performed in the chief towns of Italy. Every month added to Metastasio’s renown. But meanwhile La Romanina was growing older; she had ceased to sing in public ; and the poet felt himself more and more dependent in an irksome sense upon her kindness. He gained 300 scudi (about £60) for each opera; this pay, though good, was precarious, and he longed for some fixed engagement. Abandoning himself gradually to despondent whims and fancies, it became clear that some change in his condition was desirable. And the opportunity for a great change soon presented itself. In September 1729 he received the offer of the post of court poet to the theatre at Vienna, with a stipend of 3000 florins. This he at once accepted. La Romanina unselfishly sped him on his way to glory. She took the charge of his family in Rome, and he set off for Austria.

In the early summer of 1730 Metastasio settled at Vienna in the house of a Spanish Neapolitan, Niccold Martinez, where he resided until his death. This date marks a new period in his artistic activity. Between the years 1730 and 1740 his finest dramas, Adriano, Demetrio, Issipile, Demofoonte, Olimpiade, Clemenza di Tito, Achille in Seiro, Temistocle, and Attilio Regolo, were produced for the imperial theatre. Some of them had to be composed for special occasions, with almost incredible rapidity—the Achille in eighteen days, the Jpermnestra in nine. Poet, composer, musical copyist, and singer did their work together in frantic haste. The impress of the peculiar circumstances under which they were created is still left upon them, not only in negligence of style, but also in an undefinable quality which marks them out as products of collaboration. But what must always surprise us is that they should be as good as they are. Metastasio understood the technique of his peculiar art in its minutest details. The experience gained at Naples and Rome, quickened by the excitement of his new career at Vienna, enabled him almost instinctively, and as it were by inspiration, to hit the exact mark aimed at in the opera.

At Vienna Metastasio met with no marked social success. His plebeian birth excluded him from aristocratic circles, parative failure, he enjoyed the intimacy of a great lady, the Countess Althann, sister-in-law of his old patroness the Princess Belmonte Pignatelli. She had lost her husband, and had some while occupied the post of chief favourite to the emperor. Metastasio’s liaison with her became so close that it was even believed they had been privately married. From his letters to his friend La Romanina, and to the great singer Farinelli, who reigned supreme at the court of Madrid, we learn the little details of the poet’s life in

But, to make up in some measure for this com-—

its wearisome monotony, and come to comprehend his character, at once generous and timid, selfish and ainiable, prudent almost to excess of caution, and personally cold in contradiction with the fervour of his sentimental muse. The even tenor of this dull existence was broken in the year 1734 by the one dark and tragic incident of his biography. Jt appears

that La Romanina had at last got tired of his absence. Little satisfied with his friendly but

somewhat reticent communications, impatient to see him |

once again, inquisitive perhaps about the terms on which he lived with his new mistress, she resolved to journey to Vienna. Could not Metastasio get her an engagement at the court theatre? The poet at this juncture revealed his own essential feebleness of character. To La Romanina he owed almost everything as a man and as an artist. But he was ashamed of her and tired of her. He vowed she

should not come to Vienna, and wrote dissuading her from |

the projected visit. The tone of his letters alarmed and irritated her. It is probable that she set out from Rome,

but died suddenly upon the road. Nothing can be said for |

certain about her end, or about the part which Metastasio may have played in hastening the catastrophe. All we know is that she left him her fortune after her husband's life interest in it had expired, and that Metastasio, overwhelmed with grief and remorse, immediately renounced the legacy. This disinterested act plunged the Bulgarelli- Metastasio household at Rome into confusion. La Romanina's widower married again. Leopoldo Trapassi, and his father and sister, were thrown upon their own resources. The poet in Vienna had to bear their angry expostulations upon his ill-timed generosity, and to augment the allowances he made them.

As time advanced the life which Metastasio led at Vienna, together with the climate, told upon his health and spirits. From about the year 1745 onward he writes complainingly of a mysterious nervous illness, which plunged him into the abyss of melancholy, interfered with

his creative energy, and constantly distressed him with the | He wrote but

apprehension of a general breakdown. little now, though the cantatas which belong to this period, and the canzonet Ecco quel fiero istante, which he

sent to his friend Farinelli, rank among the most popular of his productions. It was clear, as his latest and most genial biographer, Vernon Lee, has phrased it, that “what ailed him was mental and moral ennui.” In 1755 the Countess Althann died, and Metastasio was more than ever reduced to the society which gathered round him in the bourgeois house of the Martinez. He sank rapidly into the habits of old age ; and, though his life was prolonged till the year 1782, very little can be said about it. On the 12th of April he died, bequeathing his whole fortune

of some 130,000 florins to the five children of his friend —

Martinez. He had survived all his Italian relatives.

During the long period of forty years in which Metastasio may be almost said to have overlived his originality and creative powers his fame went on increasing. In his library he counted as many as forty editions of his own works. They had been translated into Freneh, English, German, Spanish, even into Modern Greek. They had been set to music over and over again by every composer of distinetion, each opera receiving this honour in turn from several

of the most illustrious men of Europe. They had been sung by the |

best virtuosi in every capital, from Madrid to St Petersburg, from London to Constantinople. The critics of all nations vied in raising Metastasio’s eredit to the skies. There was not a literary academy of note which had not conferred on him the honour of membership. Strangers of distinction passing through Vienna made a point of in the Kohlmarkt Gasse. Letters of congratulation, adulation, sympathy, respect, condolence, poured in upon him. And yet, during the whole of this long period, he was gradually outliving the artistic conditions upon which that fame was really founded. It has been already pointed out that Metastasio cannot rank as a poet in the unqualified sense of that word, but as a poet eollaborating with the musical composer and performer.

paying their respects to the old poet at his lodgings |

more, was intended for a certain style of music—for the musie of omnipotent vocalists, of thaumaturgieal soprani. With the changes effected in the musieal drama by Gluck and Mozart, with the development of orehestration and the rapid growth of the German manner, a new type of libretto came into request. Metastasio's plays fell into undeserved neglect, together with the musie to which he had linked them. Farinelli, whom he styled "¢twin-brother,"' was the true exponent of his poetry ; and, with the abolition of the class of singers to which Farinelli belonged, Metastasio's music suffered eclipse. It was indeed a just symbolic instinct which made the poet dub this unique soprano his twin-brother.

The musical drama for which Metastasio composed, and in work- ing for which his genius found its proper sphere, has so wholly passed away that it is now difficult to assign his true place to the poet in Italian literary history. Compared with Shakespeare, or even with Racine, he hardly merits the title of a dramatist. His inspira- tion was essentially emotional and lyrical. Instead of creating characters, he created situations for the display of very varied fecl- ings, for all the feelings in fact to which melody allies itsclf. But in doing this he showed a capable playwright's faculty. His per- sonages act and react upon each other. Their characters, though not in harmony with history or fact, are clearly traced and cleverly sus- tained. Eaeh of the dramatis persone is an emotion incarnate and consistent, admirably fitted for musical effect and contrast. The clash and combat of passions are vividly presented, with the smallest possible expenditure of rhetoric, in' the dialogues intended for recitative. The climax of emotion is cadenced in appropriate stanzas, with simple but effective imagery, at the close of each important scene. The chief dramatic situations are expressed by lyrics for two or three voices, embodying the several contending passions of the agents brought into conflict by the circumstances of the plot. The total result is not pure literature, but literature supremely fit for musieal effect. Language in Metastasio's hands is exquisitely pure and limpid. Of the Italian pocts, he professed a special adiniration for Tasso and for Marini. But.he avoided the eou- ecits of the latter, and was no master over the refined richness of the former's diction. His own style reveals the improvisatore's facility. Or the Latin poets he studied Ovid with the greatest pleasure, and from this predilection some of his own literary qualities may be de- rived. The pedantic rules of Aristotclian poctics never touched an

artist who felt his real vocation to be the interpretation of music. For historical propriety, for the psychology of character, for unity of plot, for probability of ineident, he had a supreme disregard. It was indeed his merit to have disearded all these considerations. His poetry was the twin-sister of Italian melody, and he was right in trusting entirely to music and action on the stage to render his con- ceptions vital. What, therefore, he gained during his own lifetime, while the musical system to which he subordinated his genius was yet living, he has since lost when, as now, he must be studied by

| readers who have only a faint aud dim conception of that perished art. For sweetness of versification, for limpidity of diction, for

delicacy of sentiment, for romantic situations exquisitely rendered in the siinplest style, and for a certain delicate beauty of imagery sometimes soaring to ideal sublimity, he deserves to be appreciated so long as the Italian language lasts.

There are numerous cditions of Metastasio's works. That by Calsabigi, Paris, 1755, 9 vols. 8vo, published under his own superintendence, was the poet's favourite. Another of Turin, 1757, and a third of Paris, 1780, deserve mention, The posthumous works were printed at Vienna, 1795. The c:llected editions of Genoa, 1802. und Padua, 1811, will probably be found most useful by the general student. Metastasio's life was written by Aluigi, Assisi, 1783; by Charles Bui ney, London, 1796 ; and by others; but by iar the most vivid sketch of his biography will be found in Vernon Lee's Studies of the 18th Century in Italy, London, 1880, a work which throws a flood of ight upon the development of Italian dramatic musie, and upon the place occupied by Metastasio in the artistie movement of the last century. (J. A. 8S.)

METCALFE, Cuar.es THEOPHILUS METCALFE, BARON (1785-1846), a distinguished administrator, was born

| at Calcutta on January 30, 1785; he was the second son

of Thomas Theophilus Metcalfe, then a major in the Bengal army, who afterwards became a director of the Kast India Company, and was created a baronet in 1802. Having been educated at Eton, where he read extensively,

he in 1800 sailed for India as a writer in the service of the Company. After studying Oriental languages with success at Lord Wellesley's college of Fort William, he, at the age of sixteen, received an appointment as assistant to Lord Cowley, then resident at the court of Sindhia; in 1802 he became assistant in the office of the chief secretary; in 1803 he was transferred to that of the governor-general, and in 1806 to that of the commander-in-chief. On August 15, 1806, he became first assistant to the resident at Delhi, and in 1808 he was selected by Lord Minto for the difficult

His poetry, further- | post of envoy to the court of Ranjit Sinh at Lahore; here,

on April 25, 1809, he successfully concluded the important treaty securing the independence of the Sikh states between the Sutlej and the Jumna. Four years afterwards he was made principal resident at Delhi, and in 1819 he received the appointments of secretary in the secret and political de- partment, and of private secretary to the governor-general (Lord Hastings). From 1820 to 1823 Sir Charles (who succeeded his brother in the baronetcy in 1822) was resident at the court of the nizam, but in the latter year he was com- pelled by the state of his health to retire from active service ; in 1825, however, he was so far restored as to undertake the residency of the Delhi territories. Two years after- wards he obtained a seat in the supreme council, and in February 1835, after he had for some time been governor of Agra, he, as senior member of council, provisionally succeeded Lord William Bentinck in the governor-general- ship. During his brief tenure of office (it lasted only till March 28, 1836) he originated or carried out several important measures, including that for the liberation of the press, which, while almost universally popular, complicated his relation with the directors at home to such an extent that he withdrew from the service of the Company in 1838. In the following year he was appointed by the Melbourne administration to the governorship of Jamaica, where the difficulties created by the recent passing of the Negro Emancipation Act had called for a high degree of tact and ability. Sir Charles Metcalfe's success in this delicate position was very marked (see vol. xiii. p. 551), but

unfor- tunately his health compelled his resignation and return to England in 1842. Six months afterwards he was appointed by the Peel ministry to the governor-generalship of Canada, and his success in carrying out the policy of the home Government was rewarded with a peerage shortly after his return in 1845. He died at Malshanger, near Basingstoke, September 5, 1846. See J. W. Kaye's Life and Corre- spondence of Charles Lord Metcalfe, London, 1854.

METELLUS, the name of the most important family of the Roman plebeian gens Cecilia. They rose to distinction during the Second Punic War, and Neevius satirized them.

Quintus Cacitrus MeETELLUus MAcEDoNIcUs, preetor 148 B.c. in Macedonia, defeated Andriscus in two battles, and forced him to surrender. He then superintended the conversion of Macedonia into a Roman province. He tried unsuccessfully to mediate between the Achzean league and Sparta, but, when the Achzans advanced, he defeated them easily near Scarpheia; Mummius soon after super- seded him, and returning to Italy he triumphed in 146. Consul in 143, he reduced northern Spain to obedience. In 181 censor with Q. Pompeius (the first two plebeian censors), he proposed that all citizens should be compelled to marry. He was a moderate reformer, and was con- sidered the model of a fortunate man; before his death in 115 three of his sons had been consuls, one censor, and the fourth was a candidate for the consulship.

Quintus Caciiius Mrrettus Numipicus, whose repu- tation for integrity was such that when he was accused of ex- tortion the jury refused to examine his accounts, was selected to command against Jugurtha in 109 B.c. He subjected the army to rigid discipline, and aimed solely at seizing Jugurtha himself; he defeated the king by the river Muthul, and next year, after a difficult march through the desert, took his stronghold Thala. Marius, however, accused Metellus of protracting the war, and received the consulate for 107. Metellus returned to Rome and triumphed. Saturninus, whom as censor he tried to remove from the senate, passed in 100 an agrarian law, inserting a provision that all senators should swear to it within five days. All complied but Metellus, who retired to Asia. After Saturninus was killed, he returned, but died shortly after under suspicion of poison.

Quintus Cactus Merettus Pius, so called from his efforts to restore his father Numidicus, commanded in the Social War, defeating Q. Pompedius (88 3.c.). Sulla on departing gave him proconsular command over South Italy. When Marius returned, the soldiers, who had no confidence in Octavius, wished Metellus to command, but he refused. Metellus retired to Africa and afterwards to Liguria, resuming his former command on Sulla's return, In 86 he gained a decisive victory over Norbanus at Faventia. In Sulla's proscriptions he pleaded in favour of moderation. Consul in 80 with Sulla, he went to Spain next year against Sertorius, who pressed him hard till the arrival of Pompeius in 76. Next year Metellus defeated Sertorius's lieutenant Hirtuleius at Italica and Segovia, and joining Pompeius rescued him from the consequences of a check at Sucro. From this time Sertorius grew weaker till his murder in 72. Metellus had previously set a price on his head. In 71 he returned to Rome and triumphed. He was an upright man, of moderate ability.

Quintus Cacitius Merrettus Pius Scipio, son of Scipio Nasica, was adopted by the preceding. He was accused of bribery in 60 B.c., and defended by Cicero. In August 52 Pompeius procured him the consulate. Scipio in return supported Pompeius, now his son-in-law. On war being resolved on, Scipio was sent to Syria. His extor- tions were excessive, and he was about to plunder the temple of Artemis at Ephesus when he was recalled by Pompeius. He commanded the centre at Pharsalus, and afterwards went to Africa, where by Cato's influence he received the command. In 46 he was defeated at Thapsus ; in his flight to Spain he was stopped by a cor- sair, and stabbed himelf. His connexion with two great families gave him importance; but he was selfish and licentious, and his violence drove many from his party.

Quintus CaciLius METELLUs CELER, preetor 63 B.c., was sent to cut off Catiline's retreat northward. Consul in 61, his personal influence prevented the holding of the Com- pitalia, which the senate had forbidden and the tribunes permitted. He opposed the agrarian law of the tribune L. Flavius, and stood firm even though imprisoned ; the law had to be given up. He

also tried, though fruitlessly, to obstruct Cesar's agrarian law in 59. He died that year under suspicion of poison given by his wife Clodia,

METEMPSYCHOSIS, the transmigration of the soul, as an immortal essence, into successive bodily forms, either human or animal. one of the characteristic doctrines of Pythagoras, appears to have originated in Egypt. This indeed is affirmed by Herodotus (ii. 123) :—"The Egyptians are, moreover, the first who propounded the theory that the human soul is immortal, and that when the body of any one perishes it enters into some other creature that may be born ready to reccive it, and that, when it has gone the round of all created forms on land, in water, and in air, then it once more enters a human body born for it; and this cycle of existence for the soul takes place in three thousand years."

Plato, in a well-known passage of the Phadrus, adapts, as was his wont, the Pythagorean doctrine to his myth or allegory about the soul of the philosopher. That soul, he says, though it may have suffered a fall in its attempt to contemplate celestial things, still is not condemned, in its first entrance into another form, to any bestial existence, but, according to its attainments, 7.c., to the progress which it has made in its aspiration for celestial verities, it passes, in nine distinct grades, into the body of some one destined to become a philosopher, a poet, a king, a general, a seer, &e. ; or, if very inferior, it will animate a sophist or an autocrat (ripavvos). Plato extends the cycle of existence to ten thousand years, which is subdivided into periods of a thousand years, after the lapse of which the souls undergo

This doctrine, famous in antiquity, and

judgment, and are admitted to everlasting happiness or condemned to punishment.! It is after the period of a thousand years, he adds, that the human soul comes into a beast, and: from a beast again into a man, if the soul originally was human.

Pythagoras, who was said to have travelled in Egypt,’ brought this fantastic doctrine into Magna Grecia, and made it a prominent part of his teaching. He declared that he had himself been Euphorbus, the son of Panthus, in the time of the Trojan War, and had successively inhabited other human bodies, the actions of all which he remembered.? Closely connected with his theory of metem- psychosis was his strict precept to abstain from animal food, even from eggs, from some kinds of fish, and (for some unknown, probably symbolical, reason) from beans.‘ There can be no doubt that the Egyptian custom of pre- serving the mummies of cats, crocodiles, and some other creatures had its origin in the notion that they had been inhabited by souls which might some day claim these bodies for their own. We cannot suppose that Plato or the later Greeks really believed in the transmigration of souls, though there are many allusions to it, generally of a somewhat playful character. Thus Menander, in the play called The Inspired Woman ® (@copopovpevn), supposes soine god to say to an old man, Crato, ‘When you die, you will have -a sccond existence; choose what creature you would like to be, dog, sheep, goat, horse, or man.” To which he replies, “‘ Make me anything rather than a man, for he is the only creature that prospers by injustice.”

Absurd and fantastic as such a doctrine as metem- psychosis appears at first sight to be, it was in reality a logical deduction from primitive ideas about the nature of the soul. It is necessary to explain these ideas (which have important bearings on other questions) in order to show that metempsychosis was almost a necessary corollary to the belief that the soul was the vital or animating prin- eiple,—that the one distinction between organic and inor- ganic was the existence in the former of a yy.

The difference between a dead body and a living body —or rather, one principal difference—was that the living animal breathed ; and it was observed that, as soon as the breath left the body, not only did warmth and motion cease, but the body began to decay. Life, therefore, was breath, an opinion tacitly expressed by the Greek and Roman vocabulary, animus, anima (dvepos), Wrxy, Tvedpa, spiritus. But breath is air, and air is eternal and imperish- able in its very nature. Therefore the “soul,” or portion of air which gave animation to the body, did not perish at the dissolution of the body, but it was returned to the element of which it was composed, and out-

of which it came. It followed that, from the countless millions of “souls” emancipated from bodies in all time, and still flitting about invisibly in space, the air must literally swarm with souls,—a doctrine taught by Pythagoras.® Hence, any creature, human or bestial, that first drew the breath of life, might, so to say, swallow a soul, ¢.e., take in with the act of respiration the very same particles of air which had animated some former body. For, although the soul was air, and returned to its kindred element, it was supposed to retain a peculiar character in intelligence

}P. 249 A. Comp. Rev. xx. 2,13; Virg., in. vi. 745, ‘Donec longa dies, perfecto temporis orbe, concretam exemit labem,” &e.

“ Diogen. Laert., viii. 1, 3; Lucian, Gallus, § 18 sg., where the doctrine of metempsychosis and the stories about the pre-existence of Pythagoras are wittily satirized.

- Lucian, Gallus, §§ 4, 5; Diodor. Sic., x. §§ 9, 10; Hor., Od. i. 28, 10, ‘‘habentque Tartara Panthoiden iterum Oreo demissum.” ~

- Gallus, 19,33. For fanciful reasons for the prohibition of beans, see Lucian, Vitarwm Auctio, § 5. 5 Frag. 222, Meineke.

4 ® Diogen. Laert., viii. 1, § 32, elva: wdyra tov hepa wuxav euMTAEwY.

(ppdvycis), remembrance of tle past, and knowledge and experience gained insome former existence. Any creature which first breathed might or might not inhale this or that soul, just as a net thrown into the water may catch this or that fish, or no fish at all. But if no “soul” was inhaled the creature was believed for that reason to die; and the different degrees of intelligence observed in different men and animals led to the notion that there must have been a difference in the souls that first animated them. Even the belief that the soul, especially near the time of dissolu- tion from the body, could foretell future events was based on the notion of intelligence and conscicusness resulting from experiences of the past.’

As all the science of modern times cannot say precisely what life is, nor how it first came upon this earth, it is not wonderful that so obvious, though wholly erroneous, an explanation should have presented itself to primitive man when first he began to inquire into the causes of things. The extension of life, by the same term yvx7, to plants and apparently non-breathing things, which, however, had birth, growth, and death, was a development of a philosophic age, and we are not surprised to find Aristotle recognizing one form of life as vegetable, purixov.8 The irrational confusion of “soul” with sentient bodily functions, the attribution to spirits (eiSwAa) of motion, speech, or other muscular and material action, though still common, while metempsychosis is derided or forgotten, is in reality, perhaps, a less excusable superstition.

The Romans inherited the doctrine of metempsychosis from Ennius, the poet of Calabria, who must have been familiar with the Greek teachings which had descended to his times from the cities of Magna Grecia. In his Annals, or Roman history in verse, Ennius told how he had seen Homer in a dream, who had assured him that the same soul which had animated both the poets had once belonged to a peacock, a story that might seem to indicate Indian traditions, The Pavo Pythagorcus and the Somnia Pythagorea are referred to by Persius and Horace, as well as by Lucretius.?

Theories suggesting element-worship naturally led to the notion that air and ether (upper air) were divine.!° Hence every soul, as being but a portion of it, was in itself divine, and therefore immortal. We thus see that the doctrine of the immortality of the soul, whether attained by a sound or a vicious course of reasoning, was an inevitable conclu- sion for early thinkers. Pantheism taught that all the universe was pervaded by a divine mind, and Virgil cites the opinion of some, that the intelligence of bees was due to a portion of this universal mind residing in them, a view closely allied to the doctrine of nietempsychosis.!!_ A divine thing might be polluted, but not destroyed; hence the notion of purifying souls by airing them or burning away a material defilement is enlarged upon by Virgil in the sixth book of the Aneid (724 sq.). (imc, Pe)

METEOR, METEORITE. The term meteor, in ac- cordance with its etymology (yeréwpos), meant originally something high in the air. It has

been applied to a large variety of phenomena, most of them of brief duration, which have place in the atmosphere. Disturbances in the air are aerial meteors, viz., winds, tornadoes, whirlwinds, typhoons, hurricanes, &c. The vapour of water in the atmosphere creates by its forms and precipitations the aqueous meteors, viz., clouds, fogs, mists, snow, rain, hail,

7 Diodor. Sic., xviii., § 1. 8 Kthics, lib. i. 13.

® Wers., Sa. vi. 9; thor., Pret. ii. 1, 52; Laeret., i. 124.

10 % Stos ai@hp,Prometheus exclaims, Ausch., Prom., 88. 1 Georg. iv. 219 — His quidam signis, atque lheec exempla secuti, Esse apibus partem diving meutis et haustus

AEtherios dixere ; deumt namque ire per omnes Terrasque tractusque maris calumque profundum.

&c. The effect of light upon the atmosphere and its con- tents causes certain luminous metcors, viz., rainbows, halos, parhelia, twilight, mirage, &c. Discussion of all these, and of like phenomena, belongs to METEOROLOGY (q.v.).

Another class of luminous meteors, known as shooting or falling stars, fireballs, bolides, &c., have their place in the upper parts of the atmosphere. But by reason of their origin from without they, and the aerolites or meteor- ites which sometimes come from them, belong properly to astronomy. The term meteor is often used in a restricted sense as meaning one of these latter phenomena. The present article will treat of them alone.

The most remarkable of the meteors (and the most instructive) are those which are followed by the falling of stones to the earth. These have since the beginning of the present century attracted so much attention, and the phenomena have been so frequently examined and described by scientific men, that they are very well understood. The circumstances accompanying the fall of stones are tolerably uniform. A ball of fire crosses the sky so

bright as to be visible, if it appears in the daytime, sometimes even at hundreds of miles from the meteor ; and if it appears in the night it is bright enough to light up the whole landscape. It traverses the sky, generally finishing its course in a few seconds. It suddenly gocs out, either with or without an apparent bursting in pieces, and after a short period a loud detonation is heard in all the region near the place where the meteor has disappeared. Sometimes only a single stone, sometimes several are found. For some falls they are numbered by thousands, About three thousand were obtained from the fall of L'Aigle in 1803, scattered over a region about 7 miles long and of less breadth. A like number was obtained from the fall of Knyahinya on June 9, 1866. At Pultusk a still larger number were collected, scattered over a larger space, by a fall in January 1868. From the Emmet county (Iowa) fall, May 10, 1879, a similarly large number have been secured.

These meteors leave behind them in the air a cloud or train that may disappear in a few seconds, or may remain an hour. They come at all times of day, at all seasons of the year, and in all regions of the earth. They come irrespective of the phases of the weather, except as clouds conceal them from view.

Let us describe one or two of these meteors more in detail, On the evening of the 2d of December 1876, persons in or near the State of Kansas saw, about eight o'clock in the evening, a bright fireball rising from near where the moon then was in the western sky. It increased in brilhancy as it proceeded, becoming so bright as to compel the attention of every one who was out of doors. To persons in the northern part of the State the meteor crossed the southern sky going to the east, to those in the southern part it crossed the northern heavens. 'To all it went down near to the horizon a little to the north of east, the whole flight as they saw it occupying not over a minute.

The same meteor was seen to pass in nearly the same way across the heavens from west-south-west to east-north- east by inhabitants of the States of Nebraska, Towa, Missouri, Wisconsin, Illinois, Michigan, Kentucky, Indiana, Ohio, Pennsylvania, and West Virginia. But besides this there were heard near the meteor's path, four or five minutes after its

passage, loud explosions like distant cannonading, or thunder, or like the rattling of empty waggons over stony roads. So loud were these that people and animals were frightened. East of the Mississippi river these explosions were heard everywhere within about 60 miles of the meteor's path ; and in Bloomington, Indiana, sounds were heard supposed to come from the meteor even at a distance of nearly 150 miles from it. Over central

Illinois it was seen to break into fragments like a rocket, and over Indiana and Ohio it formed a flock or cluster of meteors computed to be 40 miles long and 5 miles broad. The sky in New York State was wholly overcast. Persons in Ohio and Pennsylvamia, who from their situation could look over the cloud last, saw the meteor passing on eastward over New York. From many places in the State itself came accounts of rattling of houses, thundering noises, and other like phenomena, which at the time were attributed to an earthquake.

At one place in northern Indiana a farmer heard a heavy thud as of an object striking the ground near his house. The next morning he found on the snow a stone of very peculiar appearance weighing three-quarters of a pound, which from its character there is every reason to believe came from the meteor. By putting together the various accounts of observers, the meteor is shown to have become first visible when it was near the north-west corner of the Indian Territory, at an elevation of between 60 and 100 miles above the earth. From here it went nearly parallel to the earth's surface, and nearly in a right line, to a point over central New York. During the latter part of its course its height was 30 or 40 miles. It thus traversed the upper regions of the air through 25° of longitude and 5° of latitude in a period of time not easily determined, but probably about two minutes.

A somewhat similar meteor was seen in the evening of July 20, 1860, by persons in New York, Pennsylvania, New England, &c., which first appeared over Michigan, at a height of about 90 miles. The light was so brilliant as to call thousands from their houses. It passed east-south- east, and over New York State, at a height of about 50 miles, broke into three parts which chased each other across the sky. At New York city it was seen in the north, while at New Haven it was in the south. At both places the

apparent altitude was well observed, and its true height proved to be about 42 miles above the earth's surface between the two cities. It finally disappeared far out over the Atlantic Ocean. It is doubtful whether any one heard any sound of explosion that came from this meteor, and no part of it is known to have reached the ground. The velocity was at least 10 or 12 miles per second, or fifty times the velocity of sound. These two meteors were evidently of the same nature as those which have furnished so many stones for our museums, except that the one was so friable that it has given us but one known fragment, while the other was only seen to break in two, not even a sound of explosion being known to have come from the meteor.

Next to the stone-producing meteor is the fireball, or bolide, which gives generally a less brilliant light than the former, but in essential appearances is like it. The meteor of July 20, 1860, above described, though unusually brilliant, was one of this class, and represents thousands of bolides which have been seen to break in pieces. The bolides leave trains of light behind them just as the stone meteors do; they travel with similar velocities both apparent and actual, and in all respects exhibit only such differences of phenomena as would be fully explained by differences in size, cohesion, and chemical constitution of stones causing them.

Next to the bolide is a smaller meteor which appears as if one of the stars were to leave its place in the heavens, shoot across the sky, and disappear—all within the fraction of a second. Some meteors of this class are as bright as Venus or Jupiter. Some are so small that though you look directly at the meteor, you doubt whether you see one or

not. In the telescope still smaller ones are seen that are invisible to the naked eye. Meteors comparable in bright- ness to the planets and the fixed stars are usually called shooting stars.

These various kinds of meteors differ from all other luminous phenomena so as to stand in a group entirely alone. Though they have been sometimes regarded as separable among themselves into three or four different species, and for purposes of description may still be so divided, yet they all seem to have a like astronomical charactcr, and the differences are only those of

bigness, chemical constitution, velocity, &c. There appears to be no clear line of distinction between the stone-producing and the detonating meteors, nor between those heard to explode and those seen to break in pieces, nor between these and the simple fireballs, nor between the fireball and the faintest shooting star.

Altitudes of Meteors.—-The first important fact about the meteors is the region in which they become visible to us. In hundreds of instances observations have becn nade upon the luminous path of a meteor at two or more stations many miles apart. When such stations and the path are properly situated relatively to each other, observa- tions carefully made will show a parallax by which the height of the meteor above the earth, the length and di- rection of the path, and other like quantities may be con:- puted. ‘The general result from several hundred instances is that the region of meteor paths may be in general regarded as between 40 and 80 miles above the earth’s surface. Some first appear above 80 miles, and some descend below 40 miles. But an altitude greater than 100 miles, or one below 25, except in the case of a stone- furnishing meteor, must be regarded as very doubtful. Thus the meteor paths are far above the usual meteoro- logical phenomena, which (except auroras and twilight) have not one-tenth of the height of the meteors. But with reference to all other astronomical phenomena they are very close to us. The comets, for example, are well- nigh a millionfold, and even the moon is a thousandfold, more distant from us.

Velocitres of Meteors.—When the length of a luminous path is known, and the time of describing it has been observed, it is easy to compute the velocity in miles. Unfortunately the large meteors, describing long paths, come at rare intervals, and unexpectedly, and it is a happy accident when one is observed by a person accustomed to estimate correctly short intervals of time. On the other hand, the total time of visibility of the shooting stars, which come so frequently that they may be watched for, is usually less than a second. It is not easy to estimate correctly such an interval, where the beginning and ending are not marked by something like a sharp click. Hence all estimates and computations of velocities of meteors are to be received with due regard to their uncertainty. We may only say in general that the velocities computed from good observations are rarely if ever under

8 or 10 miles a second, or over 40 or 50 miles, and that some have far greater velocities than others, The average velocity seems to be nearly 30 miles.

What makes the Luminous Meteor.—The cause of a meteor is now universally admitted to be something that enters the earth's atmosphere from without, with a velocity relative to the earth that is comparable with the earth's velocity in its orbit, which is 19 miles per second. By the resistance it meets in penetrating the air the light and other phenomena of the luminous train are produced. Under favourable circumstances, portions of these bodies reach the earth's surface as meteorites.

Meteoroids.—A body which is travelling in space, and

which on coming into the air would under favourable |

circumstances become a meteor, may be called a mieteor- oid.

The meteoroids are all solid bodies. It would hardly be possible for a small quantity of gas out in space to retain such a density as would enable it on coming into the air to go 10 or 100 miles through even the rare upper atmosphere, and give us the clear line which a shooting star describes. Even if a liquid or gaseous mass can travel as such in space, it would be instantly scattered on striking the air, and would appear very unlike a shooting star or bolide.

Numbers of Meteors.—Of the larger meteors there are in the mean six or eight per annum which in the last fifty years have furnished stones for our collections. A much larger number have doubtless sent down stones which have never been found. Thus Daubrée estimates for the whole earth an annual number of six or seven hundred stone-falls.

But of the small meteors or shooting stars the number is very much larger. Any person who should in a clear moonless night watch carefully a portion of the heavens would, in the mean, see at least as many as eight or ten shooting stars per hour. A clear-sighted and practised observer will detect

somewhat more than this number. Dr Schmidt of Athens, from observations made during seventeen years, obtained fourteen as the mean hourly number on a clear moonless night for one observer during the hour from midnight tol a.m. A large group of observers, as has been shown by trial, would see at least six times as many as a single person, By a proper consideration of the distribution of meteor paths over the sky, and in actual altitude in miles, so as to allow for mists near the horizon, it appears that the number over the whole globe is a little more than ten thousand times as many as can be seen in one place. This implies that there come into the air not less than twenty millions of bodies daily, each of which, under very favourable conditions of absence of sunlight, moon- light, clouds, and mists, would furnish a shooting star visible to the naked eye. Shooting stars invisible to the naked eye are often seen in the telescope. The numbers of meteors, if these are included, would be increased at least twentyfold.

How densely Space is filled with Meteoroids.—By assuming that the absolute velocity of the meteors in space is equal to that of comets moving in parabolic orbits (we have good reason to believe that this is nearly their true velocity), we may prove from the above numbers that the average number of meteoroids in the space that the earth traverses is, in each volume equal to that of the earth, about thirty thousand. In other words, there is in the average to every portion of space equal to a cube whose edge is about 210 miles one meteoroid large enough to make a shooting star bright enough to be visible to the naked eye. Such meteoroids would, upon an equable distribution, be each in round numbers 250 miles from its near neighbours. All these num- bers rest upon Dr Schmidt's horary number fourteen, and for a less practised observer and a less clear sky they would be correspondingly changed. How much they would need to be altered to represent other parts of space than those near the earth's orbit is a subject of inference rather than of observation.

Motion in Space.—The meteoroids, whatever be their size, must by the law of gravitation have motions about the sun in the same way as the planets and comets, that is, in conic sections of which the sun is always at one focus. The apparent motions of the meteors across the sky imply that these motions of the meteoroids relative to the sun cannot as a rule be in or near the plane of the ecliptic. For if they were there, since the motion of the earth

is also in the ecliptic, the motion of the meteoroids relative to the earth would be in the same plane. This would involve

that all the meteor paths as seen on the sky would if pro- duced backward cross the ecliptic above the horizon. In fact there is no tendency of this kind. Hence the meteor- oids do not move in orbits that are near the ecliptic as the planets do, but like the comets they may and usually do have orbits of considerable inclinations.

Numbers through the Night.—There are more meteors scen in the morning hours than in the evening. If the meteors had no motion of their own in space, the earth would by its motion receive the meteors only on the hemi- sphere that was in front. There would be no meteors secn in the other hemisphere. On the other hand, if the meteors had such large velocities of their own as that the earth's velocity might be neglected in comparison, and if the directions of the meteors' motions were towards all points indiscriminately, then as many would be seen in one part of the night as another. In fact there are about three times as many seen in the morning hours as in the evening. The law of change from evening to morning gives a means of proving that the mean velocity of meteors is so great that they must in general be moving in long orbits about the sun. In this respect also the meteoroids resemble comets, and are unlike planets, in their motions. Of the stone-furnishing metcors more are seen in the day than in the night, and more in the earlier hours of the night than in the later. This is probably due to the fact that more persons are in a position to see the stonc-falls at the periods of greater abundance.

Star Showers.—While the avcrage number of shooting stars for a single observer at midnight may be regarded as tolerably constant, there have been special epochs when many more have been seen. In certain instances the sky has been filled with the luminous trains, just as it is filled by descending snowflakes in a snowstorm, making a veritable shower of fire. One of the best-observed, though by no means the most brilliant, of these showers occurred on the evening of the 27th of November 1872. Some of the observers of that shower, counting singly, saw at the ratc of eight or ten thousand shooting stars in the course of two hours. The distances of the

meteoroids in the middle of the swarm which the earth then passed through, cach from its nearer neighbours, would be 30 or 40 miles.

The following quotations show the impression made by star showers in times past :—

‘In the year 2386 fof the Hegira] there happened in Egypt an earthquake on Wednesday the 7th of Dhu-]-Ka‘dah, lasting from the middle of the night until morning ; and so-called flaming stars struck one against another violently while being borne eastward and westward, northward and southward, and no one could bear to look toward the heavens on account of this phenomenon.”

“Tn the year 599 [of the Hegira], on the night of Saturday, on the last day of Muharram, stars shot hither and thither in the heavens, eastward and westward, and flew against one another like a scattering swarm of locusts, to the right and left ; people were

thrown into consternation, and cried to God the Most High with confused clamour.”

‘These meteors [November 12, 1799] might be compared to the blazing sheaves shot out from a firework.” *

‘“The phenomenon was grand and awful; the whole heavens appeared as if illuminated with sky rockets.”

November 18, 1833. ‘‘Thiek with streams of rolling fire; scarecly a space in the firmament that was not filled at every instant.”

‘« Almost infinite number of meteors; they fell like flakes of snow.

November Meteors or Leonids.—These quotations all refer (except possibly the first) to a shower which has appeared in October and November of many different years since its first known occurrence on the 13th of October 902 a.p. Dates of these showers are given in the following table :—

Oct. 18, 902. Oct. 17, 1101. Oct. 28, 1602, Nov. 13, 1883. Oct. 15, 981. Oct. 19, 1202, Nov. 9, 1698. Nov. 14, 1866, Oct. 14, 984. Oct. 23, 1866. Nov. 12, 1799. Nov. 14, 1867. Oct. 15, 1002. Oct. 25, 1538. Nov. 13, 1832. Nov. 14, 1868.

EOR

On several years after 1833, and before and after 1866-68, there were unusual numbers of those metcors seen on the mornings of November 13, 14, and 15, though per- haps they would have been unnoticed had there not been special watching for them. It will be scen that all these showers are at intervals of a third of a century, that they are at a fixed day of the year, and that the day has moved steadily and uniformly along the calendar at the rate of about a month ina thousand years. The change of twelve days in the 17th century is due to the change from old to new style.

The only explanation of this periodical display that is now seriously urged, and the one which is universally accepted by astronomers, is that there is a long thin stream of metcoroids, each of which is travelling about the sun in a conic section. These conic sections are all nearly parallel, and have nearly the same major axis, cxtending out about as far as to the orbit of Uranus, and each requir- ing the common period of thirty-three and a quarter years. The length of the stream is such that the most advanced members are six or eight years ahcad of the hindermost, and they all cross the earth's orbit with a velocity of about 26 miles a second. Since the earth plunges through the group nearly in the opposite direction, the velocity with which they enter the air is 44 milesa second. One of the facts which have greatly aided us in arriving at this explanation is that these meteors in all the years and through all hours of the night cross the sky

as we look at them in lines which diverge from a point |

near the centre of the sickle in the constellation Leo ; hence the paths in the air are parallel. This implies that their velocities relative to the sun are all parallel and equal to each other. The radiation from Leo has given to them the name Leomds.

Orbit of the Leonids.—This orbit, common to all the Leonid meteors, is inclined to the ecliptic at an angle of 17° (or rather 163°, since the motion is retrograde), has a major axis of 10°34, a periodic time of 33°27 years, and a peri- helion distance a little less than unity.

The above orbit, and that alonc, explains the several appearances of the November meteors, the annual and the thirty-three year periods, the radiation from Lco, and the change of day of the month in the course of the centuries. This it does so completely that the result has never been questioned by astronomers. Shortly aftcr the publication by Professor Adams in 1867 of the last link in the chain of the proof of this orbit, there was also published the definitive orbit of the comet 1866 I. That the comet was running almost exactly in the orbit of the metcors was at once recognized. In fact the comet is itself, in a sense, a meteoroid, and the principal member, so far as we know, of the group. Leonids had been seen in 1863, two years and two months in advance of the comet, while those of 1866 were ten months behind it. Those of later years (a few Leonids were seen even in 1870) were extended along the line of the comet's path behind it. The leaders of this long file of meteoroids had passed up beyond the orbit of Jupiter long before those which brought up the rear had crossed that planet's orbit going down toward the sun, The thickness of the stream is less than the ten-thousandth part of its length. In the densest part that we have recently passed through—namely, that traversed in 1833— the density of the stream may be expressed by saying that each meteoroid must in the mean have been 10 or 20 miles from its nearest neighbours.

What makes this Comet and these Meteors describe the same Orbit about the Sun?—Its path might have been inclined to the ecliptic at any angle instead of 163°. Or,

with this inclination, its plane might have cut the earth's ©

orbit at any other place than where the carth is on the 14th

mG

of November. Or, happening to have these two elements in common, it might have passed the earth's orbit nearer the sun or farther away from it

than the earth is. Or, having these three things in common, it might, by a slight difference in velocity, have had a periodic time much more or much less than thirty-three years. Or, with all these in common, it might have crossed the earth's orbit at a far different angle than the meteors. These several independ- ent elements for the comet and the meteors are substantially identical, and this identity proves almost beyond doubt that between the two either there is now an actual or else there has been in the past a causal connexion. That there is now any physical connexion is thoroughly disproved by the immense magnitude of the stream, and by the isolation and distances from each other of the individual components. It seems difficult to find any cause that should bring into such a strangely shaped group bodies that had originally orbits distributed at random. Hence we are apparently forced to conclude that these meteoroids have something common in their past history. In fact they seem to have been once parts of a single body, and these common elements are essentially those of the parent mass. By some process not yet entirely explained they have become separated from the comet, thrown out of the control of its attractive power, and so left to travel each one in its own orbit. If the cause of separation was not too violent, each new orbit would necessarily be but slightly different from that of the comet. Very small variations in velocity, and hence in periodic time, would in the course of ages scatter the several individuals along the orbit even to the length of many hundreds of millions of miles.

The Meteor Group is not the Comet's Tail._—These meteoroids must be carefully distinguished from the comet's tails. The former follow or precede the comet exactly in the comet's path; the particles that compose the latter are driven off by the sun's repulsion directly away from the comet's path. The meteoroids and the comet have orbits with nearly common elements; the orbits of the particles of the tail have elements that are unlike each other, and unlke those of the comet. The

meteoroids are undoubtedly solid masses; the tails are.

pulverulent or gaseous.

Twin Comets of 1366.—The comet 1866 I. is probably not the only one that has been connected with the November meteors. In 1366, a few days after the earth went through the meteor streani, a comet appeared in the northern

heavens, and, passing directly in the line of the stream so close to the earth as to describe an arc of 90° in a single day, disappeared in the constellation Aquarius. Immedi- ately upon its disappearance a second comet was seen in the north, which foHowed nearly in the same path. The Chinese accounts are not sufficiently exact to furnish independent orbits for them, but both comets were undoubtedly members of the Leonid stream. The comet 1866 I. may be identical with one of them.

The Andromeds and Biela's Comet.—Mention has been made of the star shower of November 27, 1872. The periodical comet known as Biela's, which makes three revolutions in twenty years, passes very near the carth's orbit at a longitude corresponding to November 27, but by reason of its direct motion the node has had considerable motion in longitude as the result of perturbations. Meteors having the same orbits as Biela's comet would have a radiant in the constellation Andromeda, that is, would eross the sky in lines diverging from a point in that constellation. They might, however, be at dates after or even before November 27.

Unusual numbers of meteors were seen December 7, 1798, by Brandes. A like abundance was seen December 7, 1888 ; and, as they had been expeeted, and radiation was now looked for, they were found to diverge from a point in Andromeda. Hence they have been called Andromeds. Sinee 1852 Biela's comet itself has been entirely lost. The star shower of November 27, 1872, previously referred to, had a radiant in Andromeda, and in every

way appeared as though its meteors had once been parts of Biela's comet.

The Perseids and the Comet 1862 II].—There is a third epoch when meteors appear in unusual numbers, viz., the 9th to 11th of August. This ‘‘sprinkle,” as it may be called, has been seen con- stantly at the time named for nearly fifty years, and there are on reeord accounts of similar appearances in the earlier years before its annual character had been discovered. Some observers have thought that there were evidences of a variation having a long period, but the proof seems as yet unsatisfactory, and the display may be regarded as tolerably constant from year to year. On every 10th of

August we may confidently expect a display of meteors that shall be at least four or five times as numcrous as those of ordinary nights. The radiant is in the constellation Perscus, and hence the name Perseids.

The comet 1862 III., which has a period of more than a hundred years, passes close to the earth's orbit, nearly cutting it at the place of this shower, and has a velocity and direction corresponding to this radiant. Hence a connexion of the Perseid meteors with this eomet is presumed, like that which the Leonids and Andromeds have with the eomet 1866 I. and Biela. The meteors are distri- buted along this orbit more regularly than along either of the other two, and at the same time the breadth of this group is a hundred times greater than that of the Leonids. We must for the present regard it rather as a mctcor ring, the meteoroids being scattered along the entire conic section which the comet describes. This ring has an inclination of 118° with the ecliptic.

Meteors of April 20-21—Lyraids.—About the 20th of April there have been several quite brilliant star showers, the earliest on record having been in the year 687 B.c. On that day meteors have been observed whieh radiated from Lyra, and to these the name Lyraids has been givén. The comet 1861 I. passes near the earth's orbit in that longitude, and any metcors having such a connexion with it as is proved for the Leonids with comet 1866 I. would also radiate from Lyra.

Again, at several other periods of the year, meteors have been seen in unusual numbers which seem to be connected with eertain comets.

Meteor Radiants.—We have thus definite proof that the earth at certain epochs plunges through nieteor streams, and that these streams travel along the same track as cer- tain comets. The question is at once asked—Do not the sporadic meteors, those which are seen on any and all nights of the year, belong to similar streams? An immense amount of labour has been spent in observing the paths of meteors, and classifying them, so as to detect and prove the existence of radiant points. As many as a thousand such radiants have been suggested by the different investigators. Some of these are duplicates, some will prove to be acci- dental coincidences ; but a goodly number may reasonably be expected to endure the test of future observations. Such will show the existence of meteor streams, and per- haps

will be connected with comets that are now known, or that may hereafter be discovered.

The radiants have been spoken of as if they were points in the heavens. This is so nearly true as to justify all the conclusions that have been deduced above. JBut in fact a radiant, even in the star showers in which it is most sharply defined, must be regarded as a small area. The apparent meteor paths when produced backward do not exactly meet in a point. If they be treated as proceeding from a small area, it does not appear that this is a long narrow one. Hence it may be shown that the paths of the meteors in the air are not exactly parallel either to a line or toa plane. This can hardly be due to a want of parallelism of the paths before the meteoroids meet the

earth, but is rather due to their glancing as they strike the

air. These facts add nota little to the difficulties to be overcome by the energetic observers and investigators who are trying to deduce order out of an apparent chaos.

Meteorites.—The fragments which fall immediately after the disappearance of large meteors have been carefully collected and preserved in mineralogical museums, and have been studied with special interest. The largest collections in Europe are in Vienna, Paris, London, and Berlin, some of these representing over three hundred localities. In the United States there are large collections at New Haven, Amherst, and Louisville. ;

In several respects these fragments differ at first sight from terrestrial rocks. ;

They are when found almost always covered in part or entirely with a very thin black crust, generally less than =i; of an inch in thickness. This crust may have a bright lustrous surface, or it may be of a lustreless black. It has evidently been melted, yet so rapidly as not to change in the least the parts of the stone immediately adjacent. Streaks showing the flow of the melted matter are often seen on the surface. Upon some surfaces are what appear to be deposits of the melted matter that has flowed off from the others. Some

surfaces are only browned, showing an apparently recent fracture, and some cracks are found in stones which are not yet completely broken in two.

The surfaces very often have small cup-like cavities, sometimes several inches in diameter, sometimes like deep imprints in a plastic mass made by the ends of the fingers, and sometimes still smaller. These "'cupules" have not only various sizes in different stones, but even in the same stone differ considerably from one surface to another. They appear in meteorites that are almost exclusively iron, as well as in those mainly destitute of that metal, and they may be regarded as a characteristic of meteorites.

The meteorites have usually metallic iron as one of their component parts. Native iron is very rare indeed among terrestrial minerals, and its presence in the meteorites is therefore characteristic. Sometimes the iron forms the principal part of the body, giving it the appearance of a mass of that metal. Sometimes it forms only a connected framework which is filled in with mineral matter. Sonie- times particles of iron are scattered through a stony mass ; and a few meteorites are said to be destitute of metallic iron altogether. The metallic iron is always accompanied with nickel.

The stony meteors when broken or cut through have usually a greyish interior, and often exhibit a peculiar globular structure. From the small rounded grains that give it this appearance, the name chondrite (from ydvdpos, a ball) has been applied to this kind of meteorite. Some- times the irregular fragments are compacted into a kind of breccia.

The pieces as we find them are always apparent frag- ments of some larger mass, and there is no structural appearance which would indicate that the mass might not be a fragment of a still larger one. In some of the falls fragments picked up at a distance of miles from each other fit together in their simply browned surfaces, showing that they were true fragments recently separated. In some cases surfaces of the stones are partially polished. In some a cross section of the stone exhibits thin black lines as though the melted matter of the surface had been forced into the crevices of the partially broken stone.

The stones when seen to fall, if at once picked up, are usually too warm to be taken in the hand. But cases are on record in which the stones were

excessively cold. They sometimes, on striking the ground, penetrate into it from] to 3 feet. In extreme cases large ones have struck much deeper into soft earth. Sometimes they are broken to pieces by the impact with the hard earth.

The stones are usually not very large. Although the light of the meteor is such as sometimes to be seen over a region 1000 miles in diameter, and the detonation gives phenomena suggestive of an earthquake over many counties, yet a stone exceeding 100 tb is quite exceptional in our col- lections. The total weight secured at any fall has rarely if ever amounted toa thousand pounds. Theaverage weight of nine hundred and fifty perfect specimens of the Pultusk fall in the Paris museum is 67 grammes, or less than 2} oz. One of the Hessle meteorites in the Stockholm museum weighs less than 1 grain. Many of the Emmet county mete- orites (May 10, 1879) are not much larger, though the largest specimen of that fall weighs nearly 500 ib.

Meteors traversing the Atmosphere.—We can now get a very good idea of the history of that part of a meteorite's life between its entrance into the air and its arrival at the earth. It is entirely invisible until it has reached that height at which the density of the air is enough to create con- siderable resistance. Up to that time it moves almost exclusively in obedience to the sun's attraction. The earth's attraction may be neglected, especially during the passage through the air. Since the velocity is a hundred times that of sound, the elasticity of the air is impotent to remove it from in front of the meteorite, or to prevent a high degree of condensation, Perhaps the air is liquefied immediately in front of the stone. Heat is developed in it enormously, and the stone being pressed closely against the hot air is melted, with an intense light. The condensed air charged with the melted matter is pushed aside, and left behind nearly in the wake of the meteor to form the train. The brightness of the train rapidly diminishes behind the meteor, so that the light of the meteor and the train, modi- fied by irradiation, make the whole appear to a distant eye of the shape of a pear or candle-flame. The stone being a poor conductor of heat, and itself rigid, is not heated in the interior either by condensation or conduction, and may reach the ground with its surface only heated, while the interior is as cold as it had been out in space.

If the stone is a small one it will soon be used up by this intense fire. Until its front surface is rounded by the flame, the irregular resistances may cause

such a stone to glance. But if the stone is larger it will lose velocity less rapidly. As it comes down into the region where the air is more dense, it willin spite of loss of velocity meet greater resistance. The air pressed hard against it burns it un- equally, forming cupules over its surface. The pressure of the air cracks the stone,—perhaps scaling off small frag- ments, perhaps breaking it into pieces of more uniform size. In the latter case the condensed air in front of the meteor being suddenly relieved will expand, giving the terrific explosion which accompanies such breaking up. In either case a fragment may have still velocity enough to burn on for an instant in its new path and then come invisibly to the earth, covered with a coating, the greater part obtained after the principal explosion. In the latter part of the course the original velocity has almost all dis- appeared, so that the sound travels faster than the meteor. The air's resistance exceeds the earth's attraction, and the stones strike the ground only with the force of a spent cannon ball. It is no doubt in violent disruption that some of the fractures are made in such a way as to give the rubbed and polished surfaces.

Trains of Meteors.—The smaller meteors generally have no perceptible train. Only in exceptional cases do the trains of ordinary shooting stars remain visible longer than a fraction of a second. An unusual number of the Leonids have a bluish train. But the brighter shooting stars and the larger meteors sometimes have trains that endure for minutes, and in extreme cases for an hour. Such trains are at first long narrow lines of light, though much shorter

iene T ET © Fk

than the track of the meteor. They begin at once to broaden in the middle and to fade away at one .or both

ends. or three convolutions. The white cloud floats slowly away

among the stars, coiling up more and more, and finally fades out of sight. The cause of all this seems to be as follows. The heated air charged with the debris of the meteor is by the meteor's impact driven off horizontally, causing the narrow train to spread into a cloud. The currents of air differing in direction at different altitudes twist the cloud into its varied fantastic forms. Attempts to obtain the spectrum of the trains have been made, and

sodium and magnesium lines have been thought to be detected in them. The observation, however, is one that is not easy to make or confirm. The trains have often colours other than white, and in the case of the brighter meteors different colours are seen in the different parts of the train.

Magmtude.—Some computations have been made of the size of the shooting star meteoroids from the mechanical equivalent of the light developed by their disintegration. If all the energy of the meteor is changed into light, then these computations would be conclusive. But a part is spent in disintegrating and burning the stone, a part in heating the air, and a part in giving dircct motion to portions of air. A computation based on the light developed gives only a lower limit to the size.

It seems probable that the larger meteors might be safely regarded as weighing on entering the air only a few hundreds or at most a few thousands of pounds. The smallest visible shooting stars may be equal in size to coarse grains of sand, and still be large enough to furnish all the light exhibited by them. The largest shooting stars furnish matter enough to fill with thin trains cubic miles of space, but this need not require a very large mass.

Mcteoric Irons.—There have been found at various times on the surface of the earth masses of metallic iron combined with nickel.

These have been so like the irons which have been known to fall, both in their structure and in composition, that they have been without hesitation classed among the metcoric irons. A mass of this charactcr weighing 1635 tb, found in Texas, is in the Yale College Museum. The Chareas (Mexico) iron in the Paris museum is about the saine size. A ring-shaped mass. somewhat smaller, fron Tuczon, is in the United States National Muscum in Washington. A still larger mass is in the British Museum, and many other large masses are in public collections or private possession.

Widmannstitten Figures.—Ifin any of the meteoric irons, whether seen to fall or found on the earth, a section is cut and polished and then etched with acids, a series of peculiar lines are developed which are known as Widmannstitten figures. he lines of iron unattacked by the acid consist of an irregular grouping of parallel rulings often lying along the faces of a regular

octahedron. The exhibition of these figures and the combination of iron with nickel have been usually considered conclusive evidence of the meteoric origin of any iron mass.

Nickel Iron of Ovifak.—In1870 Baron Nordenskiéld, in his voyage to Greenland, found on the shore of the island of Disco fifteen iron masses, the largest of which weighed 20 tons, all in an area of half an acre. In the basaltic rocks not far distant other iron masses were found embedded in the basalt. The presence of nickel with the iron, and the development of lines like the Widmannstitten figures, were at once accepted as proof of their meteoric origin, in Spite of the combination with basalt. A more complete examina- tion has, however, established the terrestrial origin of these irons, and given reasons to hope for new discoveries of relations existing between the earth and the meteors. The additional discovery of small particles of metallic iron in certain other igneous rocks ee that the union of the Ovifak irons with basalt is not excep- tional.

Chemical Constitution of the Metcorites.—No new element has been found in the meteorites. Three elements most widely distri- buted and most important ainong the meteorites—iron, silicon, and oxygen—are also most abundant in our earth. Daubrée gives the following lists of elements, arranged somewhat in the degree of

their importance, in meteorites (Maskelyne adds lithiuin and antimony) :—

Presently tleey become curved, sometimes with two |

Tron. Titanium. Arsenic. Magnesium. Tin. Phosphorus. Silicon. Copper. Nitrogen. Oxygen. Aluininium. Sulphur. Nickel. Potassiuin. Chlorine. Cobalt. Sodium. Carbon. Chromium. Calcium. Hydrogen. Manganese.

Minerals in Meteorites.—Among the minerals in the meteorites there are several which occur in the rocks on the earth. Among these are cited by Daubrée peridote, pyroxene, enstatite, triclinic felspar, chromite, magnetic pyrites, iron oxide, graphite, and probably water. Several minerals, however, are found which, so fur as now known, are peculiar to the

meteorites :—metallic nickel- iron, phosphide of iron and nickel (schreibersite), sesquisulphide of chromium and iron (daubréelite), sulphide of calcium (oldhamite), and chloride of iron (lawrencite).

Meteorites of different falls are in general unlike ; but there are many instances in which the stones of two falls arc so similarly constituted that it is not easy to distinguish them.

In four falls (Alais, Cold Bokkeweld, Kaba, and Orgeuil) the stones contain little or no iron. In these carbon appears not as graphite but in union with hydrogen and oxygen, and also with soluble and even deliquescent saline matters. The combinations are such as to suggest the existence of humus and organic remains. But after careful search nothing of this kind has been detected in them. In general the meteorites show no resemblance in their mechanical or mineralogical structure to the granitic and surface rocks on the earth. One condition was certainly necessary in their formation, viz., the absence of free oxygen and of cnough water to oxidize the iron and other elements. Perhaps it is to this fact that are due the resemblances between these minerals and those of the deep-seated rocks of the earth in the formation of which free oxygen and water were also not present.

Gases in Meteorites.—The meteoric stones and irons when reduced to fine particles and placed in the vacuum of a Sprengel air- pump give offsmall quantities of gases which may be reasonably pre- sumed to have been occluded by the irons at some time in their earlier history. Professor Graham found hydrogen in meteoric irons. Professor Wright has shown that a moderate heat drives off from the stony meteorites carbonic acid and carbonic oxide with a small amount of hydrogen. As the heat increases the proportion of hydrogen (and even some nitrogen) increases till at a full red heat tho hydrogen given off is by far the largest portion. From the irons similar gases are given off, but the carbon compounds are not so large a component as hydrogen. The spectra seen in the tails of comets are not strikingly like those of any of these gases, But it is impossiblo to reproduce in the laboratory the conditions under which the matter of comet’s tails is giving off its light. We cannot therefore say that these gases may not be the important parts of the cometic coma and tails.

Metcoroid as Part of a Comet.—Assuming that the metcorite and meteoroid once formed an integral part of a comet, not a little information is given us of the nature of this mysterious body. There is room also for speculation.

First, the comet may be a single hard body which comes from the cold of space into the heat of the sun, and there has frag- ments broken off, just as a stone is shattered in a hot fire. The nucleus of some of the comets must be very small because invisible in the telescope, and an impulse that would raise a stone on the earth only a few inches would send it permanently away from such a comet. The exposure of new surfaces to the heat of the sun might give occasion for the development of gas to form the comet's tail.

Or, secondly, the comet may bea tolerably compact aggregation of small bodies not in contact, each one being of the size of a meteoroid, and kept near to the rest, not by cohesion, but by their combined attraction. The total mass being small, some members of the group near the comet's perihelion passage can be by the sun's perturbing action thrown out into orbits quite independent of the comet itself, and yct such as relative to the sun shall resemble that of the main group. Perturbations resembling tidal waves might be preparing other members to be cast off at the next perihelion passage of the comet.

In either case, if we suppose, as seems probable, that the eomet came from outside the solar system, and that a disturbance by a large planet changed the original hyperbolic orbit into an ellipse, the eomet must have passed that planet as a very compact group, if not in a single mass, else the disturbance that changed the orbit would have scattered the group beyond the power of a future recog- nition of the common origin of the fragments.

Meteorotds as Fuel of the Sun.—The idea has been held by distinguished physicists that the meteoroids in falling into the sun furnish by their eoneus3ion a supply for the heat which the sun is constantly sending off into space, —that they are in fact the fuel of the sun. Such a view, however, receives but little support from facts which we know about meteors. The metcoroids of the August and two November periods are evidently permanent

uiembers of the solar system moving in closed orbits. The sainc is by inference highly probable for most of the other meteoroids, and inay be true of all of them. Permanent members of the solar system, however, if they ever fall into the sun, do so only after a long period of perturbation. If any meteoroids come from stellar spaces and have any uniform or random distribution of velocities or direc- tions, only a very small portion of these would hit the sun's surface. The far greater portion would go on in hyperbolic orbits. But the earth receives the impact of its portion of these foreign meteoroids, both in their inward and outward course, and in addition encounters a full share of the permanent members of the solar system, of which the sun receives very few or none. It is not hard to show that a supply of meteoroids to the sun sufficient to make good its daily loss of heat would require that the twenty million meteoroids which the earth daily encounters, even if all were from stellar space, should have an average weight of hundreds of tons. The facts do not warrant the admission of any such magni- tude even for the large meteors, much less for the ordinary and small shooting stars. Whatever be the souree of the sun's heat, all the meteoroids of which we know anything are totally inade- quate to supply the waste.

The literature of meteors and metcoroids is very much scattered. It is mainly contained in the scientific journals and in transac- tions of learned societies. The series of valuable Reports of the Luniinous Meteor Committee of the British Association contains not only the record of an immense amount of original observations, but also year by year a digest of most of the important memoirs.

Meteoric science is a structure built stone by stonc by many builders. In this article no attempt has been made to assign to each builder the credit for his contribution. (H. A. N.)

METEORA, a remarkable group of rock-built monas- terics in Thessaly, in the northern side of the valley of the Peneus, not quite 20 miles north-east of Triccala, and in the immediate vicinity of the village of Kalabaka, Stagus, or Stagoi (the ancicnt Aiginium). From the Cambunian chain two

vast masses of rock are thrust southward into the plain, surmounted by a number of huge isolated columns

from 85 to 300 feet high, “some like gigantic tusks, some like sugar-loaves, and some like vast stalagmites,” but all consisting of iron-grey or reddish-brown conglomerate of gneiss, mica-slate, syenite, and grecnstone. On the summit of these rocky pinnacles—accessible only by aid of rope and basket let down from the top, er in some cases by a series of almost perpendicular ladders climbing the cliff to the mouth of a tunnel—stand the monasteries of Metcora (ri Meréwpa).’ At one time they were twenty-four in number; but Holland (1812) and Hughes (1814) found them reduced to ten; at Curzon’s visit (1834) there were only seven; and in 1853 not more than four of these were inhabited by more than two or three monks. Meteora par excellence is the largest and perhaps the most ancient. The present building was erected, according to Leake’s reading of the local inscription, in 1388 (Bjérnstahl, the Swedish traveller, had given 1371), and the church is one of the largest and handsomest in Greece. St Barlaam’s and St Stephen’s (the latter founded by the emperor John Cantacuzene) are next in importance. The decorations of the churches contain a large amount of material for the history of Byzantine art, not much inferior in value to the similar treasures at Athos.

Unless the identification with the Ithome of Homer be a sound one, there is no direct mention of the rocks of Meteora in ancient literature, and Professor Kriegk suggests that this may simply be due to the faet that they had not then taken on their present re- imarkable form, Aginium, however, is deseribed by Livy as a strong place, and is frequently mentioned during the Roman wars; and Stagus appears from time to time in Byzantine writers.

See Holland, Travels in the Jonian Isles, &c., 1815; Mughes, Travels in Greece and Albania, 1830; Curzon, Visit to Monasteries in the Levant, 1819; Leake, Nor-

thern Greece ; Professor Kriegk in Zeitschr. f. allg. Erdk., Berlin, 1853; Tozer, Researches in the Iighlands of Turkey, 1869.

METEOROLOGY

ETEOROLOGY, in its original and etymological sense, included within its scope all appearances of the sky, astronomical as well as atmospherical, but the term

is now restricted to the description and explanation of the |

phenomena of the atmosphere which may be conveniently grouped under weather and climate. Thcse phenomena rclate to the action of the forces on which the variations of pressure, temperature, humidity, and electricity of the atmosphere depend, but in an especial sense to the aerial inovements which necessarily result from these variations.

In the more exact development of metcorology, the scientific investigation of climate long preceded that of weather. Humboldt's work on Jsothermal Lines, published in 1817, must be regarded as the first grcat contribution to metcorological science. The importance of this inquiry into the distribution of terrestrial tempcrature it is scarcely possible to overestimate, for, though the isothcrmals were necessarily to a considerable extent hypothetical, there cannot be a doubt that they presented a first sketch of the principal climates of the globe. Dove continued and extended the investigation, and in his great work On the Distribution of Heat on the Surface of the Globe, published in 1852, gave charts showing the mean temperature of the world for each month and for the year, together with charts of abnormal temperature. To this, more than to any other work, belongs the merit of having popularized the science of meteorology in the best sense, by enlisting in its service troops of observers in all parts of the civilized world.

In 1868 another scries of important charts were pub- lished representing by isobaric lincs the distribution of the mass of the earth's atmosphere, and by arrows the prevail- ing winds over the globe for the months and the year. By these charts the movements of the atmosplierc and the

immediate causes of these movements were for the first time approximately stated, and some knowledge was thereby attained of some of the more difficult problems of metcorology. It was shown that the prevailing winds are the simple result of the relative distribution of the mass of the earth's

atmosphere, in other words, of the relative distribution of its pressure, the direction and force of the prevailing winds being simply the flow of the air from a region of higher towards a region of lower pressure, or from where there is a surplus to where there is a deficiency of air. It ison this broad and vital principle that meteorology | rests, which is found to be of universal application throughout the science, in explanation, not only of prevail- ing winds, but of all winds, and of weather and weather changes generally. One of the more important uses of the principle is in its furnishing the key to the climates of the different: regions of the earth; for climate is practically determined by the temperature and moisture of the air, and these in their turn are dependent on the prevailing winds, which are charged with the temperature and moisture of the regions they have traversed. The isobaric charts show further that the distribution of the mass of the earth's atmosphere depends on the geographical distri- bution of land and water in their relations to the sun's heat and to radiation towards the regions of space m different seasons. . .

In 1882 Loomis published a map showing the mean rainfall of the globe. This map and others that have been constructed for separate countries show conclusively that the rainfall of any region is determined by the prevailing winds considered in relation to regions from which they have come, and the physical configuration and temperature of the part of the earth's surface over which they blow.

'The maximum rainfall is precipitated by winds which,

having traversed a large breadth of ocean, come up against and blow over a mountainous ridge lying across their path, and the amount deposited is still further increased if the winds pass at the same time through regions the temper- ature of which constantly becomes colder. On the other hand, the rainfall is unusually small, or nz/, when the pre- vailing winds have not previously traversed some extent _ of ocean, but have crossed a mountain ridge and advance at the same time into lower latitudes, or regions the temperature of which is markedly higher.

While the observational data for the determination of the geographical distribution of the prime elements of climate, viz., the pressure, temperature, moisture, and movements of the atmosphere and the rainfall were being slowly but surely collected, the great importance of the study of weather came gradually to be recognized. Additional impetus was given to this branch of study from its intimate bearings on the eminently practical question of storm warnings. Synchronous weather maps, showing the weather over a considerable portion of the earth's surface, were constructed, and some advance was made in tracing the progress of storms from day to day. Unques- tionably one of the first problems of meteorology is to ascertain the course storms usually follow and the causes by which that course is determined, so as to deduce from the meteorological phenomena observed, not only the certain approach of a storm, but also the particular course that storm will take. The method of practically conduct- ing this large inquiry in the most effective manner was devised by the genius of Leverrier, and begun to be carried out in 1858 by the daily publication of the Bulletin Inter- national, to which a weather map was added in September 1863. This map showed graphically for the morning of the day of publication the atmospheric pressure, and

_the direction and force of the wind, together with tables of temperature, rainfall, cloud, and sea disturbance from a large number of places in all parts of Europe. From such weather maps forecasts of storms are framed and suitable warnings issued ; but above all a body of information in a very handy form is being collected, the careful study and discussion of which is slowly but gradually leading to the issue of more exact and satisfactory forecasts of weather, and to a juster knowledge of these great atmospheric move- ments which form the groundwork of the science.

The most cursory glance is sufficient to show that the ever-changing physical phenomena with which it is the business of meteorology to deal are all referable to the action of the sun, it being evident that if the sun were blotted out from the sky a cold lifeless uniformity would rapidly take possession of the whole surface of the globe. Meteorological phenomena naturally group themselves into two great classes,—those dependent on the revolution of the earth on its axis, and those dependent om its revolution round the sun taken in connexion with the inclination of its axis to the plane

of its orbit. “The science thus divides itself into two great divisions, the first comprising diurnal phenomena and the second annual phenome “«.-

DrurNAL Marcu of PHENOMENA. _ Temperature.—Of the daily changes which take place in the atmosphere, the first place must be assigned to those which relate to temperature, seeing that on these all other changes are either directly or indirectly dependent. Obser- vations of the temperature of the air are therefore of the first importance in meteorology. A perfectly accurate observation of the temperature of the air is unquestionably among the most difficult to make of all physical observations, the difficulty being to eliminate the effects of radiation of surrounding objects. The nearest approach yet made to the solution of this important problem of physical inquiry

was made by Dr Joule in a communication to the Philosophical Society of Manchester (November 26, 1867, Proe., vol. vii. p. 35). But the manipulative skill and time demanded by the method there detailed render it quite unsuitable for general adoption anywhere in collecting the observational data required in the determination of this important element of climate. It is therefore necessary to fall on some method which, while it gives results that can only be regarded as approximate, secures the essential element of uniformity among the observations.

Fig. 1 represents Stevenson’s louvre-boarded box for the ther- momieters, whieh is now very widely used for temperature observa- tions. The box is made of wood, and louvred all round so as to protect the thermometers inside from radiation, and at the same time seeure as free a circulation of air as is consistent with a satisfactory proteetion from radiation. The box is painted white, both inside and outside, and screwed to four stout wooden posts, also painted white, firmly fixed in the ground. The posts are of such a length that when the thermometers are hung in position the bulbs of the niinimum thermometer and hygrometer are exaetly at the same height of 4 feet above the ground, the maximum thermometer being

JH Fia, 1.—Thermometer Box.

hung immediately above the minimum thermometer. This ther- mometer box is placed over a plot of grass, and in a free open space to which the sun’s rays have free access during as much of the day as surrounding conditions admit of. It will be observed that the thermometers are suspended on cross-laths in the centre of the box and face the door, which should always open to the north. It is not possible to overestimate the importanee of seeing that uniformity of height above ground and method of protecting the thermometers is secured, sinee in no other way is it possible to obtain results from different places which shall be comparable with each other and thus supply satisfactory materials for the investigation and development of comparative climatology.

A desired uniformity is yet far from being attained among the meteorological systems of different countries. Thus in Russia the box for the protection of the thermo-

‘meters is made of zinc, on the supposition that such a box

follows more closely the changes of temperature of the air than a box of wood. Owing to these international diversi- ties of observation, it is extremely desirable that steps were taken to ascertain, by Joule’s method of observing, the approximate errors peculiar to each sort of thermometer box, in order that the temperatures of different countries may be compared together in a more satisfactory manner than has yet been possible.

Interchanges of temperature among bodies take place by conduction, convection, and radiation. In meteorology the most important illustrations of conduction are the pro- pagation downwards through the earth’s strata of the changes of the temperature of the surface as it is heated during the day and cooled during the night, and the pro- pagation of the same changes of temperature through the lowest stratum of the air which rests on the surface. Since sand and light loose soils are much worse conductors of heat than clay and dense soils, it follows that loose soils

and tracts of sand are subject during the day to higher temperature and during the night to lower temperature near the surface than dense soils, and that frosts and extreme temperatures do not penetrate so far into loose as into dense soils. It is on these differences that some of the more striking features of climates depend. As snow is one

of the worst conductors of heat, owing to the quantity of air’

filling the interstices among the ice crystals, it protects the soil it covers by setting a limit to the depth to which the severe frosts of the surface penetrate, and by arresting the escape of the heat of the soil upwards to the air.

The communication of heat from one part of the earth to another by convection is seen on a grand scale in the winds and in the currents of the ocean. It is seen also in the ascending and descending currents of the atmosphere everywhere, which have their origin in the daily and unequal changes of temperature to which the surface of the earth is subject. he direct and beneficial effect which results from atmospheric and oceanic circulation is a more equable distribution of temperature over the globe, thus moderating the rigours of the polar regions and the heat of the tropics. ;

An interchange of heat is constantly going on among bodies exposed to each other, whatever be their tempera- ture. This mode by which heat is communicated from one body to another is called. radiation. Radiant heat proceeds in straight lines, diverging in all directions from the source, is only in a limited degree influenced by the air through which it passes, and is not diverted from the straight course by the wind. The intensity is proportional to the temperature of the source, and is greater according to the degree of inclination of the surface on which the rays fall.

If then a body be placed in the presence of other bodies, some colder and some warmer than itself, it will from this mutual interchange of temperature receive more heat from the warmer bodies than it radiates to them, and conse- quently becomes warmer ; but it will receive less heat from the colder bodies than it radiates to them, and its temperature consequently falls. This is precisely the condition in which the earth is placed in space, When a part of the surface is turned towards the sun, that part of the surface

receives more heat than is radiated from it; and the temperature consequently rises most in that region which for the time is perpendicular to the sun's rays, and least round the annulus where the inclination of the surface is greatest. On the other hand, since the hemisphere turned from the sun radiates more heat than it receives from the cold regions of space, the temperature there falls. Owing to the essentially distinct conditions under which the earth is placed with respect to radiation, the subject falls naturally to be divided into two heads, solar radiation and terrestrial radiation.

Solar Radvation.—Of the sun's rays which arrive at the earth's surface, those which fall on the land and solid bodies generally are wholly absorbed by the thin surface layer exposed to the heating rays, the temperature of which consequently rises. Whilst the temperature of the surface increases, a wave of heat is propagated downwards through the soil. The intensity of the daily wave of temperature rapidly lessens with the depth at a rate depending on the conductivity of the soil, until at about 4 feet below the surface it ceases to be measurable. Part of the heat of the surface layer is conveyed upwards through the air by the convection currents which have their origin in the heating of the lowermost stratum of air in direct contact with the heated surface of the land.

Altogether different is the influence of the sun's rays on water. In this case the sun's heat is not all, indeed very far from all, arrested at the surface, but penetrates to a

considerable depth. The depth to which the influence of the sun is felt has been shown-by the observations made during the cruise of the ‘‘Challenger” to be, roughly speaking, about 500 feet below the surface of the sea, The rate at which, in perfectly clear water, this heat is distributed at different depths is a problem that has not yet been worked out. Since water is a bad conductor, the heat thus distributed does not, as takes place with respect to land, penetrate to still lower depths by conduction, but only by different densities prevailing at the same depths, whether these different densities be due to different temperatures or different degrees of salinity. Thus one of

the more important distinctions between land and water surfaces in their bearings on climate is that nearly all the sun’s heat falling on land is arrested on the surface, whereas on water it is at once diffused downwards to a

great depth. In examining temperatures of the sea taken –

at different depths, it is surprising to note the rapidity with which changes of temperature are felt at considerable depths, especially in cases when the temperature of the air rises rapidly, accompanied with strong sunshine.

In shallow water the sun’s heat raises the temperature much higher than that of deep water, this being obvious from the consideration that nearly the whole of the sun’s heat which falls on the surface is utilized in raising the temperature of the shallow layer of water; in other words, it is, so to speak, concentrated through a small depth of water instead of being diffused through a great depth.

Surface Temperature of the Sea.—The importance of a knowledge of this datum of meteorology will be at once recognized when it is kept in view that three-fourths of the earth’s surface is water, that the temperature of the air resting on this surface is in close relation to the temperature of the surface, and that the latter has, through the intervention of the winds, direct and. important bearings on the temperature of the air over large portions of the land surfaces of the globe. During the years 1859-63 Captain Thomas, while engaged on the survey of the islands on the north-west of Scotland, made observa- tions of the temperature of the surface of the sea every hour of the day at all seasons, and with sufficient frequency for the determination of the diurnal range of the temperature of the surface. The daily minimum, 0°-17 below the mean, occurred near 6 A.m.; the mean was reached about 1] a.m., the maximum, 0°‘13 above the mean, between 3 and 4 p.m., and the mean again shortly before 2. A.m. Thus the daily oscillation of the temperature

of the surface of the sea amounted on the north-west of — In lower latitudes the amount of —

Scotland only to 0°°3. the daily fluctuation is somewhat larger, but everywhere it is comparatively small, if care be taken to make the observations properly, or at a distance from land, where the influence of the heated or cooled land is not allowed to vitiate the results.

During the voyage of the “Challenger” a complete system of meteorological observations, including the tem-

perature of the surface of the sea, was made every two

hours as part of the scientific work of the cruise. These are now being discussed, and the writer of this article is, by permission of the Lords Commissioners of H.M. Treasury, allowed to use such of the results as have been already arrived at.

The diurnal march of the temperature of the surface of the North Atlantic has been determined from observations made on one hundred and twenty-six days from March to August 1873 and in April and May 1876, the mean latitude of all the points of observation being nearly 30 N., and the longitude 42° W. The following variations from the mean show the phases of this diurnal oscillation :—

TEMPERATURE. |

2 A.M. – 0°24 10 A.M. 0°06 6p.M. 0°26 4 ,, —0°33 Noon 0°24 Chess 0:02 6, —0°29 2P.M. 0°47 10 ” —0°19 8 ,, .—0°12 Me , Ona7 Miduight -—0°35

Thus in mid Atlantic, about 30° N. lat., where the sun’s heat is strong, and at the time of the year when the sun is north of the equator, the diurnal fluctuation of the tempera- ture of the surface is only 0°°80. It is highly probable that nowhere over the ocean does the mean daily fluctuation of the temperature of the surface quite amount to a degree. This small daily fluctuation is a prime factor in meteorology, particularly in discussions relating to atmospheric pressure and winds.

Temperature of Air over the Open Sea.—The following shows the daily march of the temperature of the air over the North Atlantic on a mean of the

same one hundred and twenty-six days for which the temperature of the sea has been given:—

arom. – 1°13 10 A.M. 0°78 Gwe WPs} 4 ,, -1:40 Noon 1°45 8 ,, -—0°30 Gm;, — L741 2p.mM. 1°80 10 ,, ~-0°80 omy) — Or2l 4 ,, 1°56 Midnight — 1-02

The amplitude of the daily fluctuation of the air is thus 3°21, or nearly four times greater than that of the sea over which it lies. During the same months the “Challenger” was lying near Jand on seventy-six days. The observations made on these days show a greater daily range of temperature of the air than occurred out in the open sea. The minimum, — 2°:05, occurred at 4 A.M., and the maximum, 2°33, at noon, thus giving a daily range of 4°38. The occurrence of the maximum so early as noon is doubtless occasioned by the greater strength of the sea breeze after this hour, this maintaining a lower tempera- ture. Part of the increased range of the temperature of the air as compared with that of the sea was no doubt due to the higher temperature during the day and the lower during the night on the deck of the “Challenger” as compared with that of the air. But, after making allow- ance for this disturbing influence, it is certain that the temperature of the air has a considerably larger daily range than that of the sea on which it rests, The point is one of no small interest in atmospheric physics from the im- portant bearings of the subject on the relations of the air and its aqueous vapour to solar and terrestrial radiation. The hourly deviations from the mean daily temperature of the air at two places, one near the equator and the other in the north temperate zone, and both near the sea, viz., Batavia (6° 8’ S. lat., 106° 48’ E. long., mean temperature 78°7) and Rothesay (55° 50’ N, lat., 5° 4’ W. long., mean temperature 47°:3), are these :—

Batavia, Rothesay. — Batavia. | Rothesay, LaM.-32 | 1PM. +57 +2°4 2, -3°6 ia) 2 ,, +56 +27 3 ,, —4°0 —2:1 3 4, +5°2 +2°8

4 ,, -4:3 —2°2 4 ,, +4: +2°6

5, -47 aan 1 5 4, +3°3 cecil | 6 ,, -4°9 —2°0 Oy ced +175

1 7, —48 = 15) | 7 45 FO +0°9 8 ,, -22 -—0°9 8 ,, —0‘4 +0°2 9 ,, -0°5 — 0°2 Dis, = 142 -~04 | LOD 2°83 +0°5 105, -fs | -Os | ll ,, +4°4 fea wy Tt |

— 28 “-12 =| Noon +5°4 +19 | Midnight – 2°8 -155

The times of the four phases of the daily temperature at Batavia are—minimum about 5.50 a.m., mean 8.45 A.M., maximum 1.20 p.m., and mean 7.40 p.m.; while for Rothesay the same times are 4.30 a.m, 9.15 A.M., 3 P.M., and 8.20 p.m. At Batavia, where the days and nights are nearly equal during the year, there is little variation in

PETER OROLOG Y

LR?

these times through the months; but at Rothesay, where the days are much longer in summer than in winter, there is considerable variation in the times of occurrence of these phases. The following table shows the times of the phases for a number of selected places in the northern hemisphere for the two extreme months, January and July :—

January. July.

Min. | Mean. | Max. | Mean.| Min. | Mean.|} Max. | Mean.

A.M. A.M. PM. rM. AM. A.M. Pou. P.M. UTS) ta 6.6 9.40 | 1.30 | 6.35 | 3.40 | 7.40 | 0.50 | 7.30 MGronta.. os. 6.20} 10.0 | 1.50 | 9.40 | 3.50 | 8.15 | 3.45 | 8.10 Phitadelphia..| 6.50 | 10.0 | 2.40 | 8.45 | 5.0 | 8.40 | 3.10 | 8.0 JE IRA peerapage Archangel,....| 6.0 | 10.40] 1.30] 9.0 | 2.40 | 8.36 | 2.50 | 8.50 Rothesay…....| 5.30 | 10.10 | 2.80] 8.0 | 3.380]9.0 | 3.15 | 8.50 Oxfords fc. .. <00 (220 | LORTO 1 F2I0 720 32401 S74 55 S10″ Shah Madrid 6.50 | 10.5 | 2.40 | 8.35 | 4.40 | 8.50 | 2.50 | 8.35 Geneva ….. ...}6.0 {10.0 | 2.0 {8.0 | 38.15 | 8.15 | 2.50 | 8.10 St Bernard….| 4.80] 8.25 | 0.55 | 6.45/3.0 | 8.10] 1.20 | 7.50 Bogostovsk….] 5.30 | 9.25 | 1.30] 8.15 | 3.40] 7.35] 2.5 | 8.4 ry aes . ye Me amg 6.50] 9.50 | 2.35 | 7.45 | 4.30 | 8.20 | 2.40 | 8.25 MUNG io 33 cccee’s os F107) S985 08) 25251 /°7,50 1 550. 1985 |) Salonesal5 Catewtta…..... 6.30 | 9.35 | 2.30 | 8.20 | 5.30 | 8.45 | 0,40 | 7.30 Bombay…...../6.0 | 9.10 | 2.10]8.5 | 5.301) 9.0 | 1.30 | 6.30 | Madras Meee edi: 5.40} 8.0 | 0.40] 6.45 15.0 | 8.45] 1.25 | 6.50

During the night in summer the temperature falls con- tinuously from the effects of terrestrial radiation till the earliest dawn, when the daily rise in the temperature sets in owing to the heat reflected from the upper strata of the atmosphere, which have begun to be heated and lighted up by the rays of the morning sun. It will be observed that the time of the daily minimum temperature occurs earliest in high latitudes and latest in low latitudes. During winter, on the other hand, the minimum tempera- ture takes place in several regions some time before dawn. At this season the two chicf causes on which changes of temperature depend are the sun and the passage of cyclones and anticyclones ; and it is probable that those cases where the minimum occurs markedly before the dawn are, whcre not occasioned by purely local disturbing causes, due to the mean diurnal times of occurrence of the changes of temperature which accompany the great atmospheric dis- turbances of cyclones and anticyclones.

In July the daily maximum tempcrature occurs generally from 2 to 4. p.m. At places, however, near the sea, which are within the immediate influence of the sea breeze, and in places at some distance from the sea, such as Calcutta, where the wind, being cssentially a sea wind, attains its greatest daily velocity and the sky at the same time is much clouded, the maximum occurs nearly two hours earlier. In high situations, such as the St Bernard hospice, the highest daily temperature also occurs nearly two hours sooner than on the plains below. In the winter months the maximum is about an hour earlier than in the summer.

In investigating the daily curves of temperature, Sir David Brewster drew several interesting conclusions from them. By dividing the daily curve of temperature, deduced from the mean of the year, into four portions, at the points

| representing the two daily means and the two extremes,

he showed that the four portions approximate to parabolas, in which the temperatures are the abscisss and the hours the ordinates. The correspondence between the observed and calculated results is so close that the difference did not in any case exceed a quarter of a degree Fahrenheit. This interesting result is true for places at which the horizon is open all

round, so that no shadows of hills, trees, or buildings fall on the places where the thermo- meters are kept during the day. If a hill rises to the

north of the plaee, by which the sun’s rays are never obstrueted, it exereises little, if any, influenee on the observations ; but if one or more hills obstruet the rays of the sun after it has risen above the horizon, such obstruc- tion affects the temperature while, and for some time after, the position in whieh the thermometer is plaeed is shaded from the sun.

Brewster further made the important remark that the mean of observations made at any pair of hours of the same name, such as 8 A.M. and 8 P.M., 9 A.M. and 9 P.M., &c., does not differ much from the mean temperature of the day. The pairs of hours whieh approximate closest to the true daily mean are 9 a.m. and 9 p.m., 10 a.m. and 10 P.M, 3AM. and 3 p.M., and 4a.mM.and4p.m. The inean of four hours at equal intervals from eaeh other gives a result still closer to the true mean temperature.

In organizing any system of meteorological observation, by which it is intended to develop the climatology of the country, the de- termination of the hours of observation is a question of the first importance. If only two observations be made daily the best hours are 9 A.M. and 9 p.M., or 10 A.M. and 10 p.M.; and if there be four observations the best hours are 3 and 9 A.M. and 3 and 9 P.M., or 4 and 10 A.M. and 4 and 10 p.m. If there be three observa- tions the best hours are 9 A.M. and 8 and 9 p.m., or 10 A.M. and 4 and 10 p.m.; but in these cases it is essential that the observations of a minimum thermometer be added to the tempera- ture observations. Theso hours are further strongly recommended hy the consideration that they are approximately coincident with the diurnal phases of atmospheric pressure, an exact knowledge of which lies at the root of nearly all climatological inquiries. The three equidistant hours which have been adopted in several countries, viz., 6 A.M, and 2 and 10 p.m., are only good as regards the temperature, not as regards atmospheric pressure. With re- spect to two daily observations, the hours 8 A.M. and 1 p.M., which have been adopted in some countries, are singularly unsuitable

‘for the furnishing of the observational data required in the de- velopment of the climatologies of these countries; and, what is still more serious in a science where international co-operation is so imperatively demanded, these observations cannot be used with any satisfaction in such deeply important inquiries as the cam- parative climatologies of Europe.

The times of oeeurrenee of the highest, lowest, and mean daily temperatures, and the amount of the daily range of temperature, are in a great degree influeneed by the covering or want of covering of the earth’s surface on which the air rests. When the ground is eovered with vegetation, the whole of the solar heat falls on the vegetable covering ; and, as none falls immediately on the soil, its temperature does not rise so high as happens where there is no vegetable covering to shade the surface from the sun. The temperature of plants exposed to the sun is not so high as that of exposed soil in the vieinity. As regards forests, the four diurnal phases of temperature occur later than in the open eountry, and the maximum and minimum are less deeided; and, since the maximum temperature of the air in forests falls short of the maximum in the open toa eonsiderably greater extent than the minimum under trees is above the minimum in the open, it follows that the mean temperature of the air in forests is less than that of the open country adjoining. The reason of the differenee is that the chilling effects of nocturnal radiation penetrate lower down among the trees than do the heating effeets of solar radiation ; and as the soil is not heated direetly by the sun its temperature is lower, and consequently that of the air over it is also lower. A cleared space in a forest, sheltered by the sur- rounding trees, but open to the sun, has a warmer and moister atmosphere in spring and summer and very much moister in autumn than prevails in the open eountry adjoining, and has also the diurnal differences of range peeuliar to a warmer and moister atmosphere.

One of the most important elements of climate is dis- closed by the differenee between the hour of lowest and the hour of highest mean temperature respeetively, or, as

Men T°. ON -OFL O76, x

‘of mean temperature.

[TEMPERATURE,

it is usually expressed, by the daily range of temperature. We have seen that as regards the sea in the north-west of Scotland the difference is only 0°°3 and in the Atlantic about 30°N. lat. 0°°8, and that probably the diurnal range of temperature of the surface of the sea nowhere amounts to adegree. In the same part of the Atlantic the daily range of the temperature of the air resting on the ocean is 3°°2, and on the sea near land 4°°4, On advaneing on the land, the daily range of temperature rapidly increases, and the rate of increase is greatly augmented when an inland position is arrived at to which any sea breezes that may prevail do not extend.

The true daily range of temperature is stated by obser- vations made with.maximum and minimum thermometers, Generally speaking, the amount of the range increases as the latitude is diminished, and as the distance from the sea is inereased, but above all it inereases in proportion to the dryness of the climate.

The differences of this vital element of climate are strikingly shown in the meteorology of India. In the Report for 1880 the following are the mean daily ranges of March of that year at a few places: at Goa 5°‘4, Bombay 11°-2, Kurrachee 23°°5, Jacobabad 37°°4, and Pachbudra (lat. 25° 55’ N., long. 72°18’ E.) 41°°3. ‘In the last case, undoubtedly one of the greatest mean daily ranges of tem- perature meteorology has yet recorded, the mean of the days was 103°°4 and of the nights 62°-1. As March is altogether witlrin the season of the north-east monsoon, the general drift of the wind over western India, where these are situated, is from the interior towards the sea, subject as regards Bombay and Goa to the influences of the land and the sea breeze. On the other hand, in June, when the south-west monsoon has fairly set in, the following are the mean daily ranges of temperature at the same places: at Goa 5°°6, Bombay 8°:2, Kurrachee 10°, Jacobabad 27° °6, and Pachbudra 24°*1. These show in a striking manner the powerful influence of the moister atmosphere spread over India by the south-west monsoon, under which the daily range of tempera- ture falls at Kurraohee from 28°°5 to 10°, and in the excessively arid climate of Pachbudra from 41°38 to 24°1. In these dry climates of the basin of the Indus, whilst the rainfall both in March and in June is practically nil, yet the relative

humidity of the atmosphere is widely different. Thus the humidities for March and June respectively at 4 p.m., when the temperature is nearly the maximum for the day, are 48 aud 77 for Kurrachee, 18 and 30 fer Jacobabad, and 11 and 86 for Pachbudra. It is not so much the amount of cloud that determines the degree of fierceness of the sun's heat in these climates as the relative humidity, or the dryness of the air, as pointed out by Strachey in 1866, Thus at Jacobabad less than half the amount of cloud appears in the sky in June as compared with March, but the relative humidities are 30 and 18, and the daily range of temperature 27°‘6 and 87° °4. If we except the dry arid wastes of Persia and Arabia, there is perhaps no other region of the globe where the daily range of temperature approaches that of the valley of the Indus. Thus in the dry climates of such places as Sacramento (California) in summer it amounts only to about 30°, at Madrid to 27°, and Jerusalem 24°. In central districts in the south of England it is about 20°; farther north it falls to 15°; and in the islands in the north, whose climate is strictly insular in its character, the summer daily range is only 10°. In Arctic regious, such

as Spitzbergen and Boothia Felix, the range in winter varies

from 0°°0 to 1°70; in May, when the sun has reappeared and continues to rise and set, it rises to 14°; but in July, when the sun does not set, the range sinks to 10°.

But maximum and minimum thermometers not only show the mean daily range of temperature, they are also of great utility in giving observations for the determination The mean temperature may be accepted as the mean of the twenty-four hourly observa- tions of the day. If with such a system of observation daily readings of the maximum and minimum thermometer be eompared, the value of the latter observations in questions of mean temperature may be arrived at. Double series of observations of this deseription have been made at many plaees. The following shows a eomparison of the mean of maximum and minimum daily temperatures with means from observations made twenty-four times daily,

the former exceeding the latter means in nearly all eases :—

|

HUMIDITY. |

Spring. |Summer. | Autumn.| Winter.| Ycar. TSE aegeeeeepeoeey aaceees —-03 |-02 |-0°2 |-0°2 |-0°2 GS Mlouititiauee.... cesses sees 1:0 0-7 Ogfeen |) 059 0°8 eee 0°6 0°6 0°6 0°7 0°6 IMGMECHITISK;. «. cc: cec-ssee. 01 0°3 0°6 IO” |) Wes RV GUTIM eee rs cass cscce woe 0°5 0°5 Osa 0°8 0°6 iemberin DURE .....0… 0° Ore 07 06 | 06 UI GR ier i aatie RVI STMUT ANG ro rct ease ce onesies 074 0°5 Ol |-0O-1 0°2 (Ghepan cll eeeeeeeeeeeeeeene 07 0°8 0°6 0°0 0-4 NPOUNESAN Ac ieceec. cos. sv eee 0°4 0°3 0°3 0°3 0°3

These results show remarkable uniformity, and it may be inferred from them that mean temperatures deduced from maximum and minimum observations are about half a degree above the true mean temperature. In general climatological inquiries, observations with these thermo- meters have the strong recommendation of supplying from observations taken once a day the data for the determina- tion of the mean temperature and mean daily range of localities ; to which falls to be added the further advantage of giving results more uniformly comparable for different places than could be afforded by observations made with a common thermometer at any single hour or pair of hours daily.

Daily Variation of the Humidity of the Atr.—The gaseous envelope surrounding the earth is composed of two atmospheres, quite distinct from each other,—an atmosphere of dry air and an atmosphere of aqueous vapour. The dry air, which consists of oxygen and nitrogen, is always a gas, and its quantity remains constant ; but the aqueous vapour does not continue permanently in the gaseous state, and the quantity present in the air is, by the ceaseless processes of evaporation and condensation, constantly changing. If the aqueous vapour remained permanently and unchanged in the atmosphere, or were not liable to be condensed into cloud or rain, the mixture would become as complete as that of the oxygen and nitrogen of the air. The equilibrium of the vapour atmo- sphere, however, is being constantly disturbed by every change of temperature, by every instance of condensation, and by the unceasing process of evaporation. Since dry air further materially obstructs the free diffusion of the aqueous vapour, it follows that the law of the independent pressure of the vapour and

of the dry air of the atmosphere holds good only approximately. The aqueous vapour, however, constantly tends to approach this state. Since, then, the independent and equal diffusion of the dry air and the aqueous vapour is, owing to these disturbing causes, never reached, the important conclusion follows that the hygrometer can never indicate more than the local humidity of the place where it is observed. Hygrometric observa- tions can therefore be regarded only as approximations to a true indication of the quantity of aqueous vapour in the atmosphere over the place of observation. It is, however, to be added that, while in certain cases the amount of vapour indicated is far from the truth, yet in averages, particularly

| long averages, a close approximation to the real amount is

reached if the hygrometer be at all tolerably well exposed and carefully observed.

Aqueous vapour is constantly being added to the air from the surfaces of water, snow, and ice, from moist surfaces, and from plants. The rate of evaporation increases with an increase of temperature, because the capacity of the air for vapour is thereby increased. The atmosphere can contain only a certain definite amount of vapour, according to the temperature ; when therefore the air has its full complement of vapour,’ or when, in other words, it is saturated, evaporation ceases. Thus the rate

of evaporation is greatest when the air is driest or freest |

wen eT Ono LOG Y

Wall

from vapour, and least when the air is nearest the point of saturation. Since currents of air remove the moister and substitute drier air over the evaporating surfaces, evapora- tion is much more rapid during wind than in calm weather. As air expands under a diminished pressure, its temperature consequently falls, and it continues to approach nearer to the point of saturation, or become moister; and, as it contracts under an increased pressure, its temperature rises and it recedes from the point of saturation or becomes drier. Hence ascending currents of air become moister with every

addition to the ascent, and descending currents drier as they continue to descend. Thus as winds ascend the slopes of hills they become moister, but when they have crossed the summit and flow down the other side they become drier in proportion to the descent, and all the changes may be experienced from extreme dryness to saturation in the same mass of air, which all the time has practically had its amount of aqueous vapour neither added to nor diminished.

In an atmosphere of air and aqueous vapour perfectly mixed, the elastic force of each at the surface of the earth is the pressure of each. In this case the elastic force of aqueous vapour would be the pressure of the whole vapour in the atmosphere over the place of observation. This pressure is expressed in inches of mercury of the barometer. If we suppose the total barometric pressure to be 30-000 inches, and the elastic force of vapour to be 0°745 inch, the pressure or weight of the dry air, or air proper, would be 29°255 inches, and of the aqueous vapour 0°745 inch. From this it follows that the elastic force of vapour may be regarded as indicating the quantity of aqueous vapour in the air at the place of observation, or it may be designated the absolute humidity of the air.

The diurnal variation in the elastic force of vapour in the air is seen in its simplest form on the open sea. Grouping together all the hygrometric observations made on board the “Challenger” on the North Atlantic at a distance from land, from March to July 1873 (eighty-four days), we have for that time a mean elastic force of 0°659 inch, and the following diurnal variation :—

Inch. Inch. Inch.

2 A.M. — °015 | 10 A. M.+ ‘004 6 p.M. + °007

4 ,, – ‘020 Noon +:017 8 ,, +002

6 ,, -— 016 2 P.M. + °020 10 ,, — 005

8 ,, -:007 4 ,, °017 Midnight 008 Hence the minimum (020 inch) occurs at the hour

when the temperature of the surface of the sea and air resting over it falls to the daily minimum; it then rises to the mean a little after 9 a.m., and to the daily maximum (+°020 inch) at 2 p.m, when the sea and air are also near the daily maximum, and falls to the mean shortly before 9 P.M.

Treating the observations made near land by the “Challenger” during the same months, the following is the diurnal variation disclosed :—

Inch. Inch. Inch. 2 A.M. — ‘008 10 A.M. + °014 6P.M. ‘000 44, — 009 Noon +-011 g ., — 004 6 ,, – 010 2P.M.+°007_ . 10 ,, — ‘005 8 ,, ~70e8 4 4, +°015 ‘Midnight — +007

The disturbance induced by proximity to land in the distribution of the aqueous vapour in the lower strata of the atmosphere is very striking. The maximum and

.minimum no longer follow the corresponding phases of the

temperature of the surface of the sea and of the air. The disturbing agents are the sea and land breezes and their effects. Under the influence of the land breeze the time of the minimum humidity is delayed till about 6 A.m.; and under the influence of the sea breeze and its effects the amount of the aqueous vapour shows a secondary minimum from noon to2 p.m. It is to be here noted that this midday

minimum occurs at the hours of the day when the surface of the land is most highly heated, the ascending current of heated air rising from it therefore strongest, and the resulting breeze from the sea towards the land also strongest. Now it does not admit of a doubt that the diminution in the amount of the aqueous vapour noted on board the “Challenger” near the shore points to an intermixture with the air forming the sea breeze of descending thin air-filaments or currents to supply the place of the masses of air removed by the ascending currents which rise from the heated surface of the land. At Batavia, on the north coast of Java, and at Bombay, the aqueous vapour is also subject to a secondary minimum during the warmest hours of the day. ee ;

During the summer months this secondary minimum is best marked at inland places such as Peking, Nertchinsk, Barnaul, Tiflis, and Ekaterinburg, but the time of its occurrence is about two hours later than it is over the North Atlantic. Over all these places at this season the ascending current from the heated land in the interior of Asia is very strong. On the other hand the lowering of the amount of aqueous vapour scarcely if at all appears as a feature in the summer climate of St Petersburg, and not at all in that of Sitka, where the sea breeze is equally not a constant feature of the climate of the district.

In the excessively dry, rainless, and hot climate of Allahabad, in April the diurnal minimum of the aqueous vapour occnrs from 11 a.M. to6 p.M., the time of absolute minimum being 2 and

3 P.M. During all other hours of the day the amonnt of the |

vapour is above the mean, a secondary minimum occurring from 1 to 4 aM. At Allahabad, at this time, the absolute maxi- mum vapour pressure oceurs at 8 A.M. Quite similar to this is the diurnal distribution of the aqneous vapour in July at Lisbon and Coimbra, the ninimum occurring from 10 A.M. to 8 p.m. At this time of the year the climate of this part of the peninsula is hot and dry and the rainfall insignificant in amount. As this region lies between the high atmospheric pressure so characteristie a feature of the meteorology of the Atlantic in summer and the comparatively low pressure over the continents southward and eastward, the winds are almost wholly north-westerly. In this connexion it is instruetive to note that the time of maximum vapour pressure is from 4 to 7 A.M., when the velocity of the wind is near the minimum, and the chicf minimum vapour pressure from noon to 4 P.M., when the velocity of the wind and ascend- ing currents reach the daily maximnin. These results show that the diminution in the vapour pressure during the hours when temperature is highest, which characterizes the climates of large tracts of the globe, is due to descending air-filaments or currents, which necessarily accompany the ascending currents that rise from the heated land.

At Geneva during the summer mionths the vapour curve exhibits two daily minima very strongly marked, the one shortly before sunrise and the other from 2 to4 p.M., and two maxima, one from 8 to 11 a.m. and the other from

6 to 10 P.M.; and with these the diurnal variations of cloud are in accordance. The peculiarly marked features of the vapour eurve at Geneva arc probably due to the size of the lake, which is large enongh to give rise to a decided breeze during the day from the lake all round its shores and during the night to a breeze from the land all round upon the lake. On the setting in of the breeze, the mass of air composing it, having been for some time resting on the lake, is rather moist, and thus one of the daily maxima is brought about from 8 to 11 a.m. As the breeze continues.the air supplying it is necessarily drawn from the higher strata of the atmosphere more copiously than in different situations; and, having thus acquired increased dryness in the descent, and having blown over the lake for too short a distance to materially influence its moisture, the air becomes constantly drier, till the minimum from 2 to 4 p.M. is reached. ‘he lake breeze thereafter begins to diminish in force, and the air consequently becomes moister till the maximum vapour pressure of the day occurs when the lake breeze dies away and the land breeze has not yet sprung up. In the wintcr months, when these breezes do not prevail, the curve of diurnal vapour pressure shows only one maximum and minimum,

The relative humidity of the atmosphere must not be confounded with its vapour pressure or absolute humidity. The relative humidity, or, as it is more frequently called, the humidity, of the air is the degree of its approach to saturation. Complete saturation is represented by 100

We ORO OG Y

[pEw.

and air absolutely free of vapour by 0, the latter state of things never occurring in the atmosphere, a humidity of 10 being of rare occurrence even in such arid regions as those of Arabia. The great significance of this element of climate is in its relations to the diathermancy of the air, and consequently to solar and terrestrial radiation. It is supposed that perfectly dry air would allow rays of heat to pass through it with at most only a very slight

increase to its temperature therefrom. Let, however, a

little aqueous vapour be added to it, a partial obstruction to the passage of radiant heat is offered, and the tempera- ture of the mixture, or common air, is sensibly ‘raised. Hence, other things being equal, the less the amount of vapour the more are the effects of radiation felt, or the greater the heat of the days and the cold of the nights. The mere amount of vapour in the air does not determine the degree of radiation, but it is the amount of vapour together with a certain temperature—in other words, the absolute and relative humidity of the air taken together— that determines the heating power of the sun and the degree of cold produced by terrestrial radiation.

The diurnal variation of the relative humidity is very different from that of the vapour pressure, and presents features of the simplest character. The following are the diurnal variations from the mean humidity 80 over the North Atlantic, from the “Challenger” observations in 1873 :—

2AM. +2 10 A.M. -1 6 P.M. -1 4 ,, +2 Noon -2 : Cleans 0 6 Srl 2PM. —3 LOM teal ‘Sues 0 4, -2 Midnight +2

Thus the maximum humidity occurs from midnight to

4 a.M., or when the daily temperature is at the minimum, and the minimum humidity at 2 p.m., when the tempera- ture is at the maximum, the curve of humidity being thus inverse to that of the temperature. With two slight modifications this is the diurnal humidity curve for all climates and seasons. In the calm which intervenes in the morning between the land and the sea: breeze the humidity continues high, or even increases, though at the time the diurnal increase of temperature has already set in. The other modification is seen in the humidity curves for Nertchinsk and Barnaul during winter, these curves being not inverse but coincident with the daily curves of temperature. In the climates of Central Asia in winter, the amount of vapour is very small, and the increase to the relative humidity during the day is probably occasioned by the more active evaporation from the snow during the day and the stillness of the air favouring the accumulation of aqueous vapour near the surface of the earth.

Next to the winds, the aqueous vapour of the atmo- sphere, in the diverse ways in which in different localities it is distributed through the hours of the day, plays the most important part in giving to the different parts of the globe its infinitely diversified climates.

Dew.—Dew is deposited over the earth's surface on comparatively clear and calm nights. As the cooling by terrestrial radiation continues, the temperature of objects on the surface is gradually lowered to the dew-point, and when this point is reached the aqueous vapour begins to be condensed into dew on their surfaces. The quantity deposited is in proportion to the degree of cold produced and the quantity of vapour in the air. Dew is not deposited in cloudy weather, because clouds obstruct the escape of heat by radiation, nor in windy weather, because wind continually renews the air in contact with the surface, thus preventing the temperature from falling sufficiently low. When the temperature is below 32°, dew freezes as it is deposited, and hoar-frost is produced. The dew-point practically determines the minimum temperature

of the night,—because if the temperature falls a little below the dew-point the liberation of heat as the vapour is condensed into dew speedily raises it, and if it rises higher the loss of heat by radiation speedily lowers it. This consideration suggests an important practical use of the hygrometer, it being evident that by ascertaining the dew-point the approach of frost or low temperature likely to injure vegetation may be foreseen and provided against.

Diurnal Oscillations of the Barometer.—The general character of the daily oscillations of atmospheric pressure is shown by the two curves of fig. 2. The solid line gives the mean oscillation for Bombay and the

10 A.M. 4 P.M.

—

4AM

ii Ht] hin

AME

aH Fia. 2.—Daily Oscillations of Atmospheric Pressure.

dotted line that for Vienna, these two curves being to a large extent typical of diurnal barometric oscillations in tropical and temperate regions as regards the two maxima and minima and the time of their occurrence.

A series of twelve maps of the globe were prepared for June, showing, for all stations whence observations have been obtained, the deviations at noon, 2 p.m., 4 P.M, &c., Greenwich mean time, from the mean daily pressure ; and four lines were drawn indicating the positions of the two daily maxima and minima at these hours. For fully 30° north and south of the equator the lines of maxima and minima run north and south, but in higher latitudes these directions are changed, and the changes are chiefly conspicuous as regards the A.M. maximum and the p.m. minimum. Thus, for example, at 6 p.m. (G. M. T.) the line of P.M. minimum is for the latitude of London near 16° W. long. ; in 30° N. lat. it is in 35° W. long., in which the line runs south as far as 30° §. lat.; its course thence turns south-westwards to near the Falkland Islands, 60° W. long. Hence in June the p.m. minimum occurs about three hours earlier in the Falkland Islands than to the south-west of Ireland, thus showing in a striking manner the influence of season on this phenomenon. In the middle and higher latitudes in summer, proximity to the sea delays the time of occurrence of the A.M. maximum and the P.M. minimum; whilst in continental situations the A.M, Maximum occurs much earlier than in lower latitudes, and the P.M. minimum nearly as late as at places near the sea. In cases where the lines of maxima and minima cross @ region such as southern and western Europe, whose surface is diversified by large tracts of land and sheets of water, the deflexions are of a remarkable character.

The retardation of the time of occurrence of the A.M. maximum is greatest in situations which, while eminently insular in character, are at the same time not far from an extensive tract of land. Of this Holland presents the best example in Europe ; and there the a.m. maximum, which at Paris occurs at 8 a.m., does not occur at Utrecht till 9.30 a.m., at Amsterdam till

12.30 P.M., andat Helder till 2PM. There is thus as regards the same diurnal pheno- menon in June a difference of six hours between Paris and Helder. Sicily and the south of Italy on the one hand and Madrid on the other present also the most striking contrasts. Again at Sitka (56° 50’ N. lat., 135° W. long.), which has one of the most truly insular climates in the world, the A.M. maximum is delayed to 2.30 p.m. ; whereas

at Astoria, ten degrees to southward, it occurs at 9.30 A.M., and at Fort Churchill, in California, as early as 7 aM. There is thus as regards the same phenomenon a difference of 75 30™ between Sitka and Fort Churchill.

From hourly observations made in this month at the base, the top, and two intermediate points on Mount Washington (N. H.) it was found that the time of occur- rence of the A.M. maximum at the base of the mountain, which is 2898 feet above the sea, was 8 a.M.; at 4059 feet, 10 a.M.; at 5533 feet, 11 a.m.; and at the top, 6285 feet, noon. Hence, as regards the time of occur- rence, the influence of an isolated mountain like Mount Washington brings about a result similar to what is observed in insular situations. But the analogy is even closer. In insular climates the minimum in the early morning is very greatly in excess of that in the afternoon ; and the same relation is observed on the top of Mount Washington, where the former is —0°020 inch and the latter —0-004 inch. Again in continental climates the minimum in the early morning is much the smaller of the two, and the same relation was observed at the base of the mountain, where the observed minima were respectively 0°006 inch and 0°020 inch. The differences presented by the daily curve of pressure at the top as compared with that at the base of the mountain have their explanation in the effects which follow the diurnal range of temperature. As the temperature is at the minimum at the time of least pressure in the morning, the atmosphere is more condensed in the stratum between the base and the top, and conse- quently the barometer at the top reads relatively lower. As the temperature continues to rise during the day, the stratum of air above the base of the mountain expands, thus placing more air above the barometer at the top, so that, while at the base pressure begins to fall at 8 a.m., at the top it continues to rise till

noon, simply from the mechanical upheaval of the air owing to the higher tempera- ture. In the afternoon, when the minimum at the base falls to — 0°020 inch, itis only — 0-004 inch at the top, this relatively higher pressure at the top being due to expansion from temperature. The peculiar feature of the pressure curve at the top is essentially a temperature effect.

The diurnal oscillations of the barometer occur alike over the open sea and over the land surfaces of the globe. The atmosphere over the open sea, as already shown, rests on a floor or surface subject to a diurnal range of temperature so small as to render that temperature practically a constant both day and night. This considera- tion leads to the vital and all-important conclusion that the diurnal oscillations of the barometer are not caused by the heating and cooling of the earth's surface by solar and terrestrial radiation and by the effects which follow these diurnal changes in the temperature of the surface, but that they are primarily caused by the direct and immediate heating by solar radiation, and cooling by nocturnal radia- tion to the cold regions of space, of the molecules of the air, and of its aqueous vapour. 'These changes of tem- perature are instantly communicated through the whole atmosphere from its lowermost stratum resting on the earth's surface to the extreme limit of the atmosphere, which the flight of meteors proves to be not less than 500 miles. There are important modifications affecting the amplitude and times of occurrence of. the four prominent phases of the phenomena observed over land surfaces, the temperature of which is being superheated during the day and cooled during the night; but it is particularly to be noted that the barometric oscillations themselves are inde- pendent of any changes of temperature of the floor on which the atmosphere rests.

Let us first look at the phenomena in the simplest form as found in the Pacific, or in the midst of the largest water

surface of the globe. tions of pressure from observations made on board the "Challenger," September 1 to 12, 1875, in mean latitude 1° 8' S. and long. 150° 40' W., the mean being 29°928 inches :—

Inch. Inch. Inch. 2 AM. —-0°012 10 a.m. 0°0382 6 P.M. — 0°028 4 ,, -0°022 Noon 0°006 SB) sy 0°004 (DAA 0°0038 2p.mM. —0°043 10 ” 0°013 BP ,; 0°028 4 ,, —0°055 Midnight 0°012

The most striking feature in these oscillations is the amplitude of the range from the A.M. maximum to the P.M. minimum, amounting to 0°087 inch, and the rapidity of the fall from 10 a.m. to 2 p.m. The same feature appears in all means deduced from observations made at least 12° on each side of the equator.

From October 12 to 22, 1875, in mean lat. 35° 1’8., long. 134° 35’ W., the mean atmospheric pressure was 30°298 inches, and the difference between the A.M. maximum and the p.m. minimum was only 0°036 inch ; and from July 12 to 19, 1875, in mean lat. 36° 16’ N. and long. 156° 11’ W., the mean pressure was 30°328 inches, and the difference between the A.M. maximum and P.M, minimum was only 0°025 inch, Thus, with a mean pressure in the Pacific about lat. 35°-36° N. and S. much greater than

near the equator, the oscillation is much less, being in the.

North Pacific less than a third of what occurs near the equator. Similarly, this oscillation is small (or even smaller) in the high-pressure areas in the North and South Atlantic as compared with the same oscillation near the equator.

It is well known that aqueous vapour absorbs the heat rays of the sun considerably more than does the dry air of the atmosphere ; how much more physicists have not yet accurately determined. Consequently air heavily charged with aqueous vapour will be heated directly by the sun’s rays as they pass through it in a greater degrce than comparatively dry air is. Now it is shown further on that the prevailing surface winds outflow in every direction from the areas of high mcan pressure in the Atlantic and Pacific about lat. 36° N. and 8. Since, notwithstanding, the pressure continues high, it necessarily follows that the high pressure is maintained by an inflow of upper currents, and as the slow descending movement of the air connects the inflowing upper currents with the outflowing prevailing winds of the surface, it follows that the air over high- pressure areas is very dry, and that it is driest where pressure is highest and the high-pressure area best defined.

Hence over the best-defined anticyclonic regions the air will be least raised in temperature through all its height by the heat rays of the sun.

On the other hand, between these high-pressure areas of the great oceans therc is a belt of comparatively low pressure towards which the north and south trades pour their vapour unceasingly. The atmosphere of this belt of low pressure is thns highly saturated with aqueous vapour which riscs in a vast ascending stream of moist air to the higher regions of the atmosphere. These equatorial regions thus present to the sun a highly saturated atmosphere reaching to a very great height. It is in these regions therefore that the atmosphere will be most highly heated by the sun's heat rays as they pass through it. the most striking facts of meteorology is the suddenness with which this barometric oscillation increases in amplitude on entering on these parts of intertropical regions; and the rapidity with which its amplitude diminishes on advancing on the high-pressure regions of the horse -latitudes is equally striking. The following are the mean oscillations in the middle regions of the four great oceans about lat. 36° from the A.M. maximum to the P.M. minimum about the time of the year in each case when the sun

The following are the mean varia- |

One of |.

North Pacific, 0°025 inch; South Atlantic, 0°024 inch; and North Atlantic, 0°014 inch. These amplitudes diminish as the ocean becomes more land-locked with continents, or as the anticyclonic region becomes better defined and currents of air are poured down more steadily from the higher regions of the atmosphere.

If the temperature of the whole of the earth's atmosphere were raised, atmospheric pressure would be diminished, for the simple reason that the mass of the atmosphere would thereby be removed to a greater distance from the earth's centre of gravity. Quite different results, however, would

follow if the temperature of only a section of the earth's atmosphere were simultaneously raised, such as the section comprised between long. 20° and 60° W. The immediate effect would be an increase of barometric pressure, owing to expansion from the higher temperature ; and a subsequent effect would be the setting in of an ascending current more or less powerful, according to the differences between the temperature of the heated section and that of the air on each side. These are essentially the conditions under which the morning maximum and aftcrnoon minimum of atmospheric pressure take place.

The earth makes a complete revolution round its axis in twenty-four hours, and in the same brief interval the double-crested and double-troughed atmospheric diurnal tide makes a complete circuit of the globe. The whole of the diurnal phenomenon of the atmospheric tides is there- fore rapidly propagated over the surface of the earth from east to west, the movement being most rapid in equatorial regions, and there the amplitude of the oscillations is greater than in higher latitudes under similar atmospheric, astronomical, and geographical conditions. Owing to the rapidity of the diurnal heating of the atmosphere by the sun through its whole height, some time elapses bcfore the higher expansive force called into play by the increase of temperature can counteract the vertical and lateral resist- ance it meets from the inertia and viscosity of the air. Till this resistance is overcome, the barometer continues to rise, not because the mass of atmosphere overhead is increased, but because a higher temperature has increased the tension or pressure. When the resistance has been overcome, an ascending current of the warm air sets in, the tension begins to be reduced, and the barometer falls and continues to fall till the afternoon minimum is reached. Thus the forenoon maximum and afternoon minimum are simply a temperature effect, the amplitude of the oscillation being determined by latitude, the quantity of aqueous vapour overhead, and the sun's place in the sky.

All observations show that over the ocean, latitude for latitude, the amplitude of the oscillations is greater in an atmosphere highly charged with aqueous vapour and less in a dry atmosphere. It is also to be noted that in very elevated situations, particularly in tropical regions, the amplitude is greater proportionally to the whole pressure than at lower levels, This is

what is to be expected from the law of radiant heat by which more of the heat rays of the sun is absorbed by the air, and particularly by its aqueous vapour, mass for mass, in the higher than in the lower strata.

When the daily maximum temperature is past, and the temperature has begun to fall, the air becomes more condensed in the lower strata, and pressure consequently at great hcights is lowered. Owing to this lower pressure in the upper regions of the air, the ascending current which rises from the longitudes where at the time the afternoon pressure is low flows back to eastward, thus increasing the pressure over those longitudes where the temperature is now falling. This atmospheric quasi-tidal movement occasions the P.M. increase of pressure, which

is highest in the heavens :—South Pacific, 0-036 inch ; | reaches the maximum from 9 P.M. to midnight, according

.

OSCILLATIONS. |

to latitude and geographical position. This maximum is therefore caused by accessions to the mass of the atmosphere overhead, contributed by the ascending currents from the longitudes of the afternoon low pressure immediately to westward.

As midnight and the early hours of morning advance, these contributions become less and less and at length cease altogether, and pressure continues steadily to fall. But between the time when the increase of pressure from the overflow through the upper regions of the atmospliere ceases and the time when pressure increases from the heat

rays, direct or indirect, of the returning sun, or during the |

hours of the night when the effects of nocturnal radia- tion are the maximum, pressure is still further reduced from another cause. Radiation towards the cold regions of space takes place, not only from the surface of the globe, but also directly from the molecules of the air and its aqueous vapour. The effect of this simultaneous cool- ing of the atmosphere through

its whole height is neces- sarily a diminution of its tension. Since this takes place at a more rapid rate than can be compensated for by any mechanical or tidal movement of the atmosphere from the regions adjoining, owing to the inertia and viscosity of the air, pressure continues to fall to the morning minimum. This minimum is thus due, not to the removal of any of the mass of air overhead, as happens in the case of tlie afternoon minimum, but to a reduction of the tension or pressure of the air consequent upon a reduction in the temperature through radiation from the aerial molecules towards the cold regions of space. morning minimum is largest in the equatorial regions, and it diminishes with latitude; but the rate of diminution with latitude through anticyclonic and other regions is generally less and more uniform than in the case of the afternoon minimum.

The amplitude and times of occurrence of the phases of the diurnal barometric tides are subject to great modifica- tions over the land. The amplitude of the oscillation from the morning maximum to the afternoon minimum is greatest where the atmosphere is driest and the sky

clearest, and least-where the atmosphere is highly saturated —

and the sky more frequently and densely covered with

clouds, being thus generally the reverse of what is observed ©

to take place over the open sea. The meteorology of India affords the most striking illustrations of this remark. At Bombay in April during the dry atmosphere and clear skies of the north-east monsoon, the oscillation is 0°118 inch; but in July during the humid atmosphere and clouded skies of the south-west monsoon it falls to 0°067 inch. In the Punjab, where the air is drier, it is much greater, rising in exceptional years, suchas 1852, to 0°187 inch. The much greater amplitude of this oscillation on land as compared with the open sea is entirely due to the heating of the earth. By this heating of the surface the lower strata of the air become also highly heated and the tension is increased ; and, since the air does not expand freely, vertically and laterally, from its inertia and viscosity, the barometer rises. When, however, the resistance is overcome, the ascending current which sets in is stronger owing to its higher temperature. Since this higher temperature which has its origin in the superheated surface is in addition to

the direct heating of the air by the heat rays of the sun as they pass through it, the morning maximum and the afternoon minimum over land are both more extreme than over the open sea. It follows that this oscillation is much larger over land, and largest in climates where insolation is strongest.

In places already referred to where the morning maxi- mum is greatly retarded, such as Helder, Sitka, Valentia, and Falmouth, the afternoon minimum in the summer

In the open ocean the |

“EPR OROLOG ¥ 123

months is singularly small,—so small indeed that it does not fall so low as the mean pressure of the day. This peculiarity in the diurnal barometric tide is in all prob- ability due to their insular position to the westward of a more or less extensive tract of land, by which a tidal overflow is propagated through the upper regions from the continental towards the insular situations. This tidal overflow receives its impulse from the ascending current from the land, which rises sooner and stronger from inland than from insular situations. On the other hand, on the open sea, and away from land in regions where the morn- ing maximum and afternoon minimum are both small, the minimum always falls below the mean of the day, and the time of occurrence of the maximum is not retarded as is the case in insular situations. A map of deviations froin the daily mean pressure of the morning minimum in summer shows, as regards the middle and higher latitudes, that it is greatest near the sea, and least in inland con- tinental situations. Indeed in the interior of the Old-World continent the dip in the curve in the early morning is so small that the minimum does not fall below the daily mean pressure, but at most places remains considerably above it. The same relations are seen in north-western Europe, where the morning minimum is—0°020 inch at Valentia and Falmouth, —-0°018 inch at Helder, and—0°012 inch at Amsterdam, whilst at Kew it is only -0°002 inch. From its compact form aud relations to the surrounding ocean, the Spanish Peninsula well illustrates the peculiarities of this phase of the pressure. The deviations from the daily mean pressure of the morning minimum are at Lisbon — 0:022 inch and Coimbra —0°011 inch, but at

Madrid in the interior + 0°009 inch,—pressure in the last case, just as happens in the interior of Asia, not falling so low as the daily mean.

The larger minimum near the sea arises from the higher temperature there during the night as compared with more inland situations, from which results a tidal overflow through the upper regions from the sea towards the land, as the temperature of the latter falls lower than the sea during the night. The effect of this overflow is to reduce the pressure over those regions whence it proceeds and to increase it in those regions over which it advances. The shallowing of the morning minimum is greatest in the higher latitudes of continental climates and most complete at great elevations, where in some cases the minimuin vanishes,—in other words, where the amount of aqueous vapour is small and the time is short during which no part of the atmosphere overliead is touched by the sun's rays. Since the peculiarity is observable in the curves over nearly the whole continent, appearing even in the low latitudes of Calcutta and Madras, it might be suggested whether we have not evidence here of a vast tidal movement propagated through the higher regions towards that trough-like section of the atmosphere as it moves westwards over the continent where the temperature of the lower strata of the air is about the minimum of the day and pressure also about the minimum.

Reference has been made under ATMOSPHERE to tlie smallness of the range from the a.m, maximum to the P.M. minimum in the North Atlantic during summer. Tlus phase in the diurnal distribution of pressure is represented in fig. 3, which shows for June the mean amount of the oscillation by lines of 10, 20, 40, 60, 80, and 100 thousandths of an inch, or 0°010 inch, 0°020 inch, é&e. This abnormality begins in March, attains the maximum in June, and terminates in October. It is thus confined to the warmer months of the year, and, unlike most meteorological phenomena, is not cumulative, but follows the sun, so that its maximum occurs in June, and not in.

| July as that of the temperature of the air, or in August as

the temperature of the sea. The smallness of this range over the North Atlantic, which is less than occurs in any other ocean in the same latitudes, is to a large extent caused by the small dip in the diurnal curve of the after-noon minimum.

ss

If the map of the distribution of pressure over the globe for July be examined (fig. 17) it is seen that this part of the Atlantic is occupied by a well-defined area of high mean pressure,—higher indeed than occurs at any season over any ocean; and it is shown below that out of this area the surface winds blow in all directions. But, since air is constantly being drained out of this region by the wind without diminishing the pressure, it follows of necessity that the high pressure must be maintained by accessions of air received from above through the upper currents. Now the regions whence such accessions can come are the upper currents which have their origin in the ascending currents that rise from the heated plains of Africa, Europe, the belt of calms, and the two Americas sur- rounding the North Atlantic. It is evident that the major portion of each day's overflow of air from the continents through the upper regions of the air upon the Atlantic, whether this overflow takes place by convection currents or from a tidal movement similar to what has been already described, will take place during mid afternoon. In other words, the overflow will occur about the time of the after- noon minimum of the Atlantic, thus diminishing the dip of this minimum, and so producing the abnormally small range now under examination. It is in favour of this view that the abnormality follows the sun's course and is not cumula- tive, and is felt also on both sides of the Atlantic, even although the weather on the east side is dry and all but rainless, and on the west moderately moist and characterized by a rather copious rainfall. It is also full of significance that the peculiarity is most strikingly seen in that part of the ocean of the globe which is closcly hemmed in by large masses of land.

Influence of the Moon on Atmospheric Pressure.—Fifteen years' hourly observations have been made at Batavia and discussed by the late Dr Bergsma in their relation to the lunar day, which was assumed in the calculations to com- mence with the time of the upper transit of the moon.

The result of the inquiry is that atmospheric pressure at Batavia has a lunar tide quite as distinctly marked as the ordinary diurnal barometric tide, except that its amplitude is much less. The four phases are these :—

1st max. + 0°0022 inch at lunar hour 1 Ist min. — 0°0021 7

2d max. +0°0025 2d min. —0°‘0024

2? 39 9

3? 29 23 13

33 2? 23 19

The lunar tide has the important difference that its phases follow the moon’s apparent course much more closely than the ordinary diurnal fluctuations of the barometer follow that of the sun. The two maxima occur about the lst and 13th, and the two minima about the 7th and 19th, whereas these four daily phases of the diurnal barometric fluctua- tion occur with respect to the sun’s apparent course from

one to six hours later. It is interesting to note that in the higher latitudes in inland situations during winter, or at times and in situations where the disturbing influences of temperature and humidity tend towards a minimum, the times of occurrence of the four phases of the daily oscilla- tion of the barometer approximate to those of the daily lunar atmospheric tide.

Since a distinct lunar tide is traced to the attractive influence of the moon, it follows that the attractive influence of the sun will enter as one of the several causes which determine the phases and amplitude of the diurnal barometric curve. It also follows from the much legs attractive influence of the sun than that of the moon on the earth’s atmosphere that the effects of the sun’s attrac- tion on the pressure will be wholly concealed by the much larger effects of the other forces concerned in determining the diurnal oscillation, except in the case or cases where the variation in the fluctuation

is small at 1 and 7 a.m. and 1 and 7 p.m. Now at places north of lat. 45° N. the variation at 1 a.m. is small during the winter, and it is a singular fact that some years ago Rykatchew of St Petersburg drew the attention of meteorologists to the existence at these northern stations of a faintly marked third maximum ; and it is further of importance to remark that, at many places where on the mean of years the third maximum is scarcely or not at all marked, it appears in the mean of some of the separate years. Thus, though it does not appear in the mean of the twenty years ending 1873 at Greenwich for January, it appears in nine of the individual years. It is highly probable that this maxi- mum, which may be named Rykatchew's maximum from its discoverer, is due to the attractive influence of the sun, its amplitude and time of occurrence being in accordance with such a supposition.

Diurnal Variation of the Force of the Wind.—During the three and a half years' cruise of the "Challenger," ending with May 1876, observations of the force and direction of the wind were made on 1202 days, at least

i ra 3 > FEA ee o

2

B ca

Py OG ak as 9 Palette i

i Be

eee

RBSRe ey

Be

BS Gi Fei

fie RE A RB

Seme:

BHURESST STORM SEITE ew

OLLI Co ed oe

Fic. 4.—Diurnal Force of Wind at Sea and near Land.

twelve times each day,—650 of the days being on the open sea and 552 near land. The observations of force were made on Beaufort's scale 0-12, being the scale of wind- force observed at sea. The mean diurnal force of the wind on the open, sea and near land respectively is shown

[BAROMETRIC OSCILLATIONS, —

WIND FORCE. |

in fig. 4, where the figures on the left are Beaufort's scale, and those on the right the equivalents in miles per hour. The solid line shows at the different hours of the day the mean force on the open sea, and the dotted line the mean force near: land.

As regards the open sea it is seen that the diurnal variation is exceedingly small, there being two apparent slight maxima, about midday and midnight respectively. On examining, however, the separate means for the North and South Atlantic, North and South Pacific, and the Southern Ocean, there is no uniform agreement observable among their curves, the slight variations which are met with being different in each case. It follows therefore that the force of the winds on the open sea is subject to no distinct and uniform diurnal variation. The difference between the hour of least and greatest mean force is less than a mile per hour.

Quite different is it, however, with the winds encountered by the "Challenger" near land, the force of the wind there giving a curve as pronouncedly marked as the ordinary diurnal curve of temperature.

ne rnPokonLoGg Y

The minimum |

12s

maximum, with a sky half covered the velocity is three-fourths greater, and with a sky wholly covered the velocity is only a half more. On the other hand at the strietly inland situation of Vienna, with a elear sky the velocity is double, and with a sky half covered it is two-thirds greater, but with a covered sky the diurnal varia- tion in the wind's velocity becomes irregular and faintly marked. Hann has also examined the winds at Vienna, and found that winds of a velocity not exeeeding 30 kilometres an hour show a mean diurnal inerease from 11 kilometres at 6 A.M. to 16°8at1p.M., but that winds of velocity exeeeding 30 kilometres an hour exhibit only a faintly marked and irregular increase of velocity during the day.

In offering an explanation of this remarkable fact regard- ing the diurnal variation in the velocity of the wind in all climates, it is to be remarked that the minimum velocity occurs when terrestrial radiation and its effects are greatest, but the increase of the velocity closely follows the sun, and the maximum is reached nearer the time the sun crosses the meridian than perhaps any of the other maxima or minima of meteorology which are dependent on the sun's diurnal course. It is also to be noted that the winds over the open sea are practically uninfluenced by solar and terrestrial radiation, for there the diurnal curve of variation in the force of the wind is all but a straight line.

occurs at 2 to 4 a.m. and the maximum from noon to 4 | On nearing land, however, the wind's force exhibits a P.M, the absolute highest being at 2 p.m. The curves | diurnal curve of variation as distinctly marked as, and

constructed for each of the five oceans from the observa- tions near land give one and the same result, or a curve closely accordant with the curve of diurnal temperature. The differences between the hours of least and greatest force are as follows :—Southern Ocean 64 miles, South Pacific 43 miles, South Atlantic 34 miles, and North Atlantic and North Pacific 3 miles per hour.

_ In the case of each ocean the velocity of the wind on the open sea is considerably in excess of that near land, but in no case does the maximum velocity near land, attained about midday, reach the velocity of the wind on the open sea. The 650 daily observations on the open sea give a mean hourly velocity of 174 miles, whereas the 552 near land give a velocity of

only 12} miles per hour. The difference is greatest at 4 A.M., when it amounts to upwards of 6 miles an hour, but is diminished by the rising temperature till at 2 p.m. it is less than 3 miles an hour.

At Mauritius, which is situated within the south-east trades, the minimum velocity of the wind is 9°7 miles per hour, occurring from 2to 3 A.M., from which it rises to the maximum 18°5 miles from 1to2 p.M., the influence of the sun being thus to double the wind's velocity. At Batavia, situated in a region where the mean baro- metric gradient is much smaller, the differences are still more de- eided. From 1 to 6 a.m. 85 per cent. of the whole of the obser- vations are calms, whereas from noon to 2 P.M. only 1 per cent. are calms. In all months, the minimum velocity occurs in the early morning, when the temperature is lowest, and the maximum from 1 to 3 p.M., when the temperature is highest, the mean minimum aud maximum velocities being to each other as 1 to 21. At Coimbra the mean maximum hourly velocity is five times greater than the minimum hourly velocity in summer, whercas in Winter it is only about a half more. At Valentia, in the south- west of Ireland, one of the windiest situations in western Europe, the three summer months of 1878 gave a mean hourly velocity of 13°3 miles per hour, the minimum oscillating from 10 to 11 miles an hour from 9 p.M. to 6 A.M., and the maximum exceeding 16 miles an hour from 11 A.M. to5 p.M. The absolute lowest hourly mean was 10 miles at 11 p.m., and the highest 18 miles at 1 P.M., the velocity about midday being thus nearly double that of the night. Many observations might be added to these, including those published by Hann, Koppen, Hamberg, and others, which go to establish the fact that the curves of the diurnal variation of the velocity of the wind generally conform to the diurnal curves of temperature. The curves are most strongly marked during the hottest months ; and the maximum velocity occurs at 1 P.M. or shortly thereafter, being thus before the time of occurrence of the maximum temperature of the day, and the minimum in the early morning, or about the time when the temperature falls to the lowest. The rule also holds good with all winds, whatever be their direction. The exceptions to this rule are so few and of such a kind that they are probably to be attributed to causes more or less of a local character.

Hann has shown, for a number of places in northern Europe, that with a clear sky the velocity is doubled from the minimum to the

bearing a close resemblance to, the analogous curve of temperature; while on the land itself these features become still more decidedly pronounced. Lastly, the amount of the diurnal variation of the temperature of the surface of the sea is less than a degree, wliereas over all land surfaces the diurnal variation of the temperature is large, even where the ground is covered by vegetation, and enormously large over sandy wastes.

From this it follows that, so far as concerns any direct influence on the air itself, solar and terrestrial radiation exercise no influence on the diurnal increase of the velocity of the air with the increase of its temperature,—or, if any influence at all, such influence must be altogether insig- nificant, as is conclusively shown by the wind observations of the “Challenger” over each of the five great oceans of the globe. The same observations show that on nearing land the wind is everywhere greatly reduced in force. The retardation is greatest during the hours when the daily temperature is at the minimum; and it is particularly to be noted that, though the temperature rises considerably, no marked increase in the velocity sets in till about 9 a.M., when the temperature has begun to rise above the daily mean. From this time the increase is repid (see fig. 4) ;

. the maximum is reached shortly after the period of strongest

insolation ; and the velocity falls a little (but only a little) during the next three to five hours, according to season, latitude, and position, and falls again to near the minimum shortly after the hour when the temperature is at the mean. Even at the maximum, the velocity near land falls considerably short of the velocity which is steadily maintained over the open sea by night as well as by day. The period of the day when the wind’s velocity is in- creased is practically limited to the hours when the tempera- ture is above the daily mean, and the influence of this

higher temperature is to counteract to some extent the re-

tardation of the wind’s velocity resulting from friction and from the viscosity of the air. The increase in the diurnal velocity of the wind is in all probability due to the super- heating of the surface of the ground and to the consequent ascensional movement of the air, tending to counteract the effect of friction and of viscosity between the lowermost stratum of the air

and the ground. It is of importance in this connexion to keep in view the fact that in cloudy weather a temperature much higher than might have been supposed is often radiated from the clouds down upon the earth's surface,! which accounts for the phenonienon of the

1 Journal of Scottish Meteorological Society, vol. ii. p. 280.

diurnal variation in the wind's velocity occurring frequently also in cloudy weather. On the other hand, during the night, when terrestrial radiation is proceeding, the tempera- ture of the surface falls greatly, and instead of an ascensional movement in the lower stratum of the air there is rather a tendency towards a descensional movement (if the wind be light there is an actual movement) of the lowest air stratum down the slopes of the country; and since the friction between the wind and the surface of the earth is thereby increased the diurnal velocity of the wind falls to the minimum during these hours (see also p. 196).

Among the most marked exceptions to the general rule of the diurnal distribution of wind force may be cited the bitterly cold furious blasts of wind encountered in narrow valleys in such mountainous regions as the Alps during clear and comparatively calm nights. These are simply the out- rush of the cold air poured into the upper basins of the valleys by the descensional currents from the slopes which the chilling effects of terrestrial radiation set in motion. On the other hand, the air of the valleys becomes heated and expands during the day, thus giving rise to a warm wind blowing up the valleys, which, on account of the vapour it carries with it from the lower levels, fre-

quently covers the higher slopes and tops of the mountains |

with cloud and drizzling rain. Diurnal Variation in the Direction of the Wind.—In all climates near seas and other large sheets of water, where

the distribution of atmospheric pressure is tolerably equable, | tion is to generate, through the cooling of the land and the air

or the barometric gradient small, and the sun heat moderately strong, land and sea breezes are of daily occurrence. In such places a breeze from the sea gradually sets in in the morning, which gradually rises to a stiff breeze during the heat of the day and again towards evening sinks toa calm. Soon after this a breeze sets in from the land, blows strongly seaward during the night, and dies away in the morning, giving place to the sea breeze as before. These breezes are occasioned by the surface of the land being heated in a much higher degree

than that of the sea during the day; the air over the land |

being thereby made lighter ascends, and its place is supplied by the cooler air of the sea breeze drawn land- ward, and partly also by. descending currents, as shown by the humidity observations of the “Challenger,” which indicate increasing dryness when the sea breeze is strongest. Again during the night the temperature of the land and of the air over it falls below that of the sea, and the air of the land thus becoming heavier and denser flows over the sea as a land breeze. As the best-marked and most fre- quently occurring cases of the sea breeze begin some distance out at sea and gradually approach the land, it is very probable that, as suggested by Blanford, the ascend-

ing heated air flows seaward as an upper current, and that | the increased barometric gradient thus caused largely |

accounts for these breezes.

Sea and land breezes are thus determined by the relative posi- tions of the land and its coasts, subject to a further modification arising from the rotation of the earth. Thus on the coast of the Gulf of Lyons the sea breeze from the south veers to south-west and dics away as a west wind, while the land breeze from the north gradually veers to north-east and dies away as an east wind. On the coast of Algeria, on the other hand, the sea breeze veers from north to north-east and dies away in the east, whereas the south land breeze veers to south-west and dies away in the west. Sea breezes also occur in such unsettled climates as that of Seotland, when the weather conditions are favourable. These conditions are presented when an anticyclone overspreads the eountry, with its accompanying fine settled

weather, small variation in the distri- bution of atmospheric pressure, clear skies, and consequently strong sunshine. Under these conditions the following are the veerings of the wind off the coast of Berwickshire. In the morning the wind is north-west till about 10 a.m., when it veers to north, falling all the

time till finally itsinks toa calm. A little before noon it springs up |

METBHORODWAT

[WIND DIRECTION,

from north-cast or cast, veers to south-east from 2 to 3 P.M., where it eontinues till 7 p.M., about which timeit vecrs to south and then south-west, diminishing in force and finallysinking toacalm. About sunset it springs up from west, veering to north-west. during the night, where it continues till the following morning. The wind thus virtually makes the round of the compass, is strongest from north- west and south-east and weakest at north-east and south-west, being thus strongest when its course is perpendicular to the line of coast.

The observations made by the ‘‘ Challenger ” in the region of the north-east trades in 1873 show a small diurnal variation in the direetion of the wind, the variation being from E. 47° 5’ N. at 2 to 6 A.M. to E. 56° N. at 10 A.M. to 2 p.., the variation being thus 8° 55’ towards north during the hottest hours of the day. At Mauritius observatory, which is several miles from the sea, the daily period in the direction of the wind is from E. 22° 15’ §, at 4 a.M., being the most southerly point, to E. 7°S. at 1 p.m., and thence back to E. 22° 15’ S. at 4 a.m. The diurnal varia. tion is 15° 15’, and thus the influence of the sun impresses on the wind at this observatory a more truly easterly character.

At the Austrian naval station at Pola, near the head of the Adriatic, the daily variation in the direction of the wind is well- marked. Starting from a point cast of south at 5 a.M., it gradually veers round to westward, the most westerly point, almost due west, being reached at 5to 6 p.M., after which it gradually shifts back to its starting point inthe morning. Here we have evidently a diurnal wind-system different from that of the land and the sea

breeze, Pola is situated near the south-western extremity of the peninsula of Istria, and the direction in the early morning of east by south is

| the direction the wind would take if a small anticyclone overspread

the peninsula ; and the direction from the west in mid afternoon is the direction the wind would have at Pola if the peninsula were occupied by a small cyclone with the lowest pressure in the centre. Now the influence of solar radiation is to form, through the ascending current from the heated land, a diminution of pressure over the land,—in other words, what is essentially a cyclone. On the other hand, during the night the influence of terrestrial radia-

resting above it, a relatively higher atmospheric pressure in the interior of the peninsula with its characteristic system of out- blowing winds.

At Coimbra, in July 1878, the diurnal variation of the wind's direc. tion was from W. 49° 37' N. at 2 to 6 A.M. to W. 338° 15' N. at 4 to 6 p.M., theamount of the variation being thus 16° 22' in the direction of west. At Valeutia, in the south-west of Ireland, during the summer months of 1878 the diurnal variation of the wind's direction was from W. by S. at 7 to 9 am. to S.W. by W. at 5 to 7 p.M. The variation was thus froma point nearly south to a point nearly south-west, or through nearly 45° in the direction of west. On the other hand, at Aberdeen during the same mouths of 1878, the diurnal variation of the wind's direction was from S.W. at 6 to 7 a.m. to S. by E. at 12 to 4 p.M., the variation being thus 56° from south-west in the direction of east through south. Attention is here drawn to the exactly opposite ways in which the diurnal veering or shifting of the wind takes places at Valentia and Aberdeen, but partieularly to the important circumstance that in cach case the diurnal changes in the wind's direction which actually occur are precisely those that would take place on the supposition that during the hottest hours of the day an ascensional movement of the air sets in from the heated lands of the British Islands, and that an in-draught takes place all round, which with the descending currents makes good the loss caused by the up-draught. Thus then both the diurnal increase in the wind's velocity and the change in its direction which observation shows to take place during the hottest hours of the day are traced to the same cause, viz., the heating of the surface by the sun, the

heating of the lowest stratum of air resting on the surface, and the ascensional movements which are the neces- sary result.

It is instructive to note that at Nukuss, at some distance to the south of the Sea of Aral, where the summer direction of the wind is northerly, the north component is at the daily maximum at4 P.M., having shifted into this direction from north-east, where it is at 94.M. Much or nearly everything remains to be done in working out this problem in its praetical details as one of the important elements of climatology, with the view of arriving at some definite knowledge of the influence of physical eonfiguration aud different vegetable coverings of the surface on radiatiou and on the velocity and direction of the wind.

Diurnal Variation in the Amount of Cloud.—Mists and fogs are visible vapours floating in the air near the surface of the earth, and clouds are visible vapours at a consider- able height. These forms of visible vapour are all produced by whatever lowers the temperature of the air below the dew point,—such as radiation from the molecules of the atmosphere towards the cold regions of space, the simple

expansion of the air of ascending currents, the mixing of | sheet of cirro-stratus cloud is extended, under which

cold air with air that is warm and moist, and the cooling of the air in contact with the surface of the earth when its temperature has been lowered by nocturnal radiation.

The forms of clouds are endless. Since clouds are subject to certain distinct modifications from the same causes which produce other atmospheric phenomena, the face of the sky may be regarded as indicating the operation of these causes, just as the face of man indicates his mental and physical states. Hence the importance of the study of clouds, and hence the necessity

of a nomenclature of clouds as the basis of accurate and comparable observations. An adequate nomenclature of clouds is still a desideratum. Luke Howard's classification, which continues to hold its ground as a provisional nomenclature, was proposed by him in 1803, and by it clouds are considered as divided into seven kinds. Of these, three are simple forms, the cirrus, the cumulus, and the stratus ; and four intermediate or compound, the cirro-cwmulus, the ctrro-stratus, the cumulo-stratus, aud the cumulo-cirro-stratus, nimbus, or rain cloud.

The cirrus cloud consists of wavy, parallel, or divergent filaments, which may increase in any or all directions. It is the cloud of the least density, the greatest elevation, and the greatest variety of figure. It is probable that the particles composing it are minute crystals of ice or snow- flakes. The cirrus is intimately connected with the great movements of the atmosphere ; and it is solely from the movements of the cirrus that we have any direct know- ledge of the upper currents of the atmosphere. In recent years much has been done, particularly by Professor Hildebrandsson of Upsala and Clement Ley, in investi- gating the relations of this cloud to storms and other changes of weather.

The cumulus is the name applied to those convex or conical heaps of clouds which increase upwards from a horizontal base. They are generally of a very dense structure, are formed in the lower regions of the atmo- sphere, and are carried along by the aerial current next the earth. They form the tops of the ascending currents which rise from the heated ground, and have a diurnal period so well marked that they are often named the "cloud of the day." The form of stratus comprehends those mists and fogs which in the calm evening of a warm summer day make their appearance in the bottom of valleys and over low-lying grounds, and sometimes spread upwards over the surrounding country like an inundation; they have an equally well marked daily period, and are frequently called the "cloud of night." The cirro- cumulus is made up of small roundish masses, lying near each other, and quite separated by intervals of sky. It may be considered as formed from the cirrus by the fibres of that cloud breaking, as it were, and collapsing into roundish masses, thus destroying the texture but retaining the arrangement of that cloud. This singularly beautiful cloud is commonly known as a mackerel sky, and is of most frequent occurrence during dry

warm summer weather. The cirro-stratus consists of horizontal masses thinned towards the circumference, bent downwards or undulat- ing, and either separate or in groups. Since this cloud has great extent and continuity of substance, but little perpendicular depth or thickness, it is the cloud which most frequently fulfils the conditions for the phenomena of coronx, solar and lunar halos, parhelia or mock suns, and paraselenee or mock moons. ‘The cumulo-stratus is formed by the cirro-stratus blending with the cumulus, or spreading underneath it as a horizontal layer of vapour. The cumulo-cirro-stratus, or nimbus, is the well-known rain-cloud, which consists of a cloud or system of clouds from which rain is falling. At a considerable height a

cumulus clouds drift from windward ; these rapidly in- creasing unite and appear to form one continuous grey mass from which the rain falls. The breaking up of the lower grey mass indicates that the rain will soon cease. When a rain-cloud is seen at a distance, cirri appear to shoot out from its top in all directions; and it is observed that the more copious the rainfall the greater is the dis- play of cirri. The cirrus, cirro-cumulus, cirro-stratus, cumulo-stratus, and nimbus are connected more or less closely with the great atmospheric movements of the cyclone and anticyclone. In what follows here only the amount of sky covered will be taken into account, and not the species of cloud covering.

The diurnal variation in the amount of cloud in the sky on the open sea is very small. The following are the means of two hundred and seventy-seven days’ observations on board the “Challenger,” stated in percentages of sky covered :—

2 A.M. 59 10 A.M. 58 6PM. 57 4 ,, 59 Noon 56 Sis so Gr &. g62 2P.M. 58 MO BY/ 8 ,, 62 4 ,, 59 Midnight 57

Two maxima are here indicated, the one about or shortly after sunrise and the other in the early part of the afternoon ; and two minima, the one at noon and the other from sunset to midnight. The difference between the extremes is only 6 per cent. of the sky.

At Batavia the daily maximum is from 6 to 11 p.M., and the minimum from 8 to 11 AM., the extremes being 52 per cent. at 9 A.M. and 69 per cent. at 7

P.M.,—a difference of 17 percent. Of four daily observations at Mauritius, the maximum is 50 per eent. at 1P.m. and the minimum 38 per cent. at6 A.M. At ee observations of clouds have been made five times daily, and six years' results give the maximum 63 per cent. at 9 p.m. and the minimum 52 per eent. at 9 A.M. At this place, during July and August, the greatest amount of cloud occurs at 6 P.M., and in these months the rainfall at Coimbra is very small. The minimum is more pronounced at 9 A.M. than at any other period; in winter this phase oeeurs about four hours later. At the continental situation of Vienna, during the warm months of the year the maxi- mum is at 2 p.M., with a secondary maximum about 6 A.M., and the minimum from 10 P.M. to 2 a.M.; but during the cold months the maximum is at 6 A.M. and the minimum during the evening and night. In the Rocky Mountains, the chief maximum, 57 per eent., is at 3 P.M., with a secondary one 30 per cent. at 5 A.M.; and the chief minimum 20 at 3 A.M. and a secondary one 29 at 11 P.M. At Helsingfors the maximum of cloud occurs from 10 A.M. to 2 P.M., and the minimum from 10 p.m. to 2 A.M.

Much yet remains to be done with regard to the determination of the diurnal variation of cloud, but from the above one or two deductions of a general character may be drawn. A maximum occurs in the morning and continues till shortly after the sun has risen, and this maximum is more decidedly pronounced over the open sea than over land. Its appearance is without a doubt due to the general cooling of the atmosphere through its whole height by terrestrial radiation, and its disappearance to the heating of the air, which commences about sunrise. Then follows one of the diurnal minima, which continues till midday, or a little later; in other words, it continues till, owing to the diurnal heating of the air by the sun, the ascending current has fairly set in. The period of this ascending current marks the second maximum, which during the warmer months is larger than the morning maximum over land. The cumulus is the characteristic cloud of this maximum. These clouds are merely the summits of the ascending currents which rise from the heated land, where the aqueous vapour is condensed in cloud by the expansion which takes place with increase of height.

These cumulus clouds throw a not unimportant light on the behaviour of the ascending currents which rise from the surface when heated by the sun,—inasmuch as they

point to the fact that the current ascending from the surface is broken up and thereafter grouped into separate well-defined ascending currents, which are marked out and overtopped by these cumuli; and further it is probable, from their well-defined position, that the air composing the ascending currents is not only warmer but also more humid than the air in the clear interspaces at the same heights. It may also be regarded as highly probable that it is down through these clear interspaces that the descend- ing air-filaments shape their course in their way to take the place of the air-molecules that ascend from the heated surface of the earth. ;

The secondary minimum occurs from about sunset onwards during the time of the P.M. maximum of atmo- spheric pressure. In a highly saturated atmosphere, which is so characteristic a feature of many tropical climates at certain seasons, this time of the day is remarkable for the amount of cloud; and it is during those seasons and hours that heat-lightning, or lightning without thunder, attains its annual and diurnal maximum period, which is from six to eight hours later than that of thunderstorms. The morning maximum, shortly before and after sunrise, has two quite distinct and characteristic clouds accompanying it. One of these is the cumulo-stratus, which is a con- sequence of the cooling of the atmosphere through all its height by nocturnal radiation. As the colouring of the cloudlets is often singularly fine, it has been a favourite theme with poets of all ages andclimes. The other, which results from the cooling of the surface of the earth by terrestrial radiation and thence of the lower stratum of the atmosphere, is quite different, being a low creeping mist, appearing first in low-lying situations, and gradually extending upwards as the temperature falls. Fog is a well-known form of this cloud, having its diurnal maximum in the morning and early part of the day.

Diurnal Variation in the Amount of the Rainfall.— From the sixteen years during which hourly observations of the rainfall were made at Batavia Dr Bergsma has given a table showing the diurnal variation, of which the follow- ing shows how much per cent. of the total daily amount fell every two hours :—

Midt. to2 A.m. 8°7 | 8 A.M.to10 A.M. 5°5 4 P.M. to6 P.M. 13°5

2am,,,4 5, 64510 ,,, Noon 68 | 64, ,,8 4, 10s CR ee me: as | | Noon .,22.@. 0:5 | 8 ,, ,, l0be ee Curae Fre aati CS ng I NI) gy Wb, 7

The diurnal curve of rainfall is thus very distinctly marked at Batavia. The minimum is from 6 to 10 a.m. and the maximum from 2 to 6 p.m.,—10°7 per cent. falling during the four hours ending 10 a.m., but 25-7 per cent. in the four hours ending 6 P.M.

The observations were arranged and averaged by Dr Bergsma with the view of seeing how far the phases of the moon influence the rainfall. The results for the eight phases of the moon, beginning with new moon, showing the mean amount of rain in twenty-four hours during the seventeen years cnding 1880, are these :-—0‘243, 0-236, 0-198, 0-181, 0:212, 0-183, 0°189, and 0‘208, and daily mean 0°205 inch. The influence of the moon’s phases on the rainfall at Batavia is thus quite decided from these seventeen years ; for, while the mean daily rainfall is 0°205 inch, it riscs at full moon to 0°248 inch, from which time it gradually falls to 0°181 inch at the third octant, rises to 0°212 inch at the fourth oetant, falls again to 0°188 inch at the fifth octant, and finally rises to the maximum at the time of new moon.

At Coimbra, where the rainfall has been obsorved every two hours for the six years ending 1881, the mcans show a minimum of 3°08 inehes from midnight to 2 a.M., a maximum of 4:03 inches from 2 to 4 A.M., a second minimum of 3‘20 inches from 10 A.M. to noon, and a seeond maximum from 2 to 4 p.m. These four phases of the rainfall are pretty nearly accordant with the four phases of the barometric pressure, the maximum periods being near the times of minimum pressure, and the minimum periods near the times of maximum pressure. The rainfall at Philadelphia shows a decided maximum at 6 P.M. and minimum at3 A.M. At Vicnna during the summer half of the year there are three maxima and three minima in the curve of the daily rainfall, the chief

METEOR OLYWGY

[DIURNAL RAINFALL,

maximum, whieh is nearly double of each of the other two, occurring from 2 to 4 P.M., and the chief minimum from 3 to 6 A.M. At this place the

number of hours of rain has been recorded, showing two maximum periods, the first from 2 to 8 A.M. and the second from 4 to 7 P.M. Since: the time of maximum amount indieates a number of hours for the fall under the mean of the day, it follows that the showers from 2 to 4 P.M. are often very heavy. At Prague the chief maximum is from 2 to 6 P.M. and the minimum from 1 to 6 A.M. At Zechen the maximum is from 2 to 7 Poe with a secondary maximum from 5 to 8 A.M., and the minimum from midnight to4.4.M. At Bern the maximum fall is from 7 p.m, to midnight. Twenty-one years' observations at Calcutta show the maximum occurrence of rainfall during the rainy season from June to October to be from 11 A.M. to 6 P.M., the absolute maximum

being from 2 to 8 P.M. and the minimum from 9 P.M. to 1 A.M.;-

and during the hot dry season from March to May the maximum is from 5 to 9 p.M., and the minimum from midnight to 9 a.m.

The data already collected show the general occurrence of a diurnal maximum from about 11 a.m. to 6 P.m., and this feature of the curve is particularly well seen in the rainfall of continental climates during the summer half of the year. A marked diminution of the rainfall is very generally observed from about sunset to midnight, when the diurnal amount of cloud in many climates falls to the

minimum, and the evening maximum of atmospheric —

pressure takes place. The time of the morning minimum pressure from about 2 to 6 A.M. is, curiously, strongly marked in some places with an increase, while in others it is as strongly marked with a diminution, in the rainfall. The " Challenger" observations show that the occurrence of rain on the open sea is inversely as the temperature, 684 days' observations giving 96 cases from 9 to 4 P.M, and 135 from midnight to 2 a.M., these being the minimum and maximum periods.

Diurnal Variation of Thunderstorms.—It has just been remarked that a prominent feature of the diurnal rainfall in continental climates during the summer months is the increased rainfall from about 11 a.m. to 6 P.M., and the Vienna observations point to unusually heavy falls occur- ring at these

hours. This is caused by the rains which accompany the thunderstorms of these regions. The following table gives for the hours of the day the times of occurrence of thunderstorms at Ekaterinburg in the Ural

Mountains during the fourteen years ending 1872 :-— .|May.| June./ July. | Aug. | Sept.| Year,

Midnight to 1 A.M…... 1 A.M.

© CONTO Or GO DO a OR ORDREN WNHHHH HN

eS OF, OSLO

aa or Or

2 4 8 0 6 5 6 7 5 6 3 1

i

HOO OND OP WD

tt et

144 | 15 | 856

Hence the thunderstorms at this place have a diurnal period as strongly marked as any other meteorological phenomena, and in this respect Ekatermburg is fairly representative of extratropical continental climates during summer. For the fourteen years no thunder occurred

7 :

THUNDERSTORMS. |

during the six months from October to March. The mean of the six hottest months shows the maximum to take place from 3 to 4 p.M. aud the minimum from 4 to 5 a.M., these being the times of occurrence of the two minima of pressure. At this season, however, the morning minimum pressure is but faintly marked in such climates as those of Siberia. During

the twelve hours from 9 a.m. to 9 P.M., when the temperature is above the daily mean, 717 of the whole number occurred, thus leaving only 139 for the twelve hours when the temperature is below the daily mean. The great majority of the thunderstorms occur during the part of the day when the ascensional movement of the air from the heated ground takes place, and they attain the maximum when the temperature and this upward movement are also at the maximum. Owing to

the westerly winds from the Atlantic which prevail over

Europe and western Siberia during summer, the maximum rainfall of the year occurs over this extensive region in this season ; and the importance and significance of the inquiry into this element of climate lie in the fact that the greater portion of the summer rains is discharged over these regions by the thunderstorm. The “Challenger” observations on the open sea show the maximum occurrence of thunder- storms to be from 10 p.m. to 8 a.M., 22 being observed during these ten hours and 10 during the other fourtecn hours of the day,—a result which suggests that over the ocean terrestrial radiation is more powerful than solar radiation in causing vertical disturbances in the equilibrium of the atmosphere.

Atmospheric vapour and ascending currents thus play an important part in the history of these thunderstorms. Where the climate is dry and rainless, like that of Jerusalem in summer, thunder is altogether unknown. On the other hand, where during a particular season an anticyclone with its vast descending cuirent in the centre remains over a region, as happens over the centre of the old continent during the winter, over that region thunder is equally unknown during that season. Further, in such places as Lisbon and Coimbra, where the summer rainfall is small and its occurrence infrequent, thunderstorms become less frequent, and the hours of their occurrence are later in the day than they are before and after the dry season.

The thunderstorms at Mauritius call for special notice. There are two maxima in the diurnal curve, the larger from noon to 4 P.M. and the smaller from 8 to 6 A.M., which are near the times of the barometric minima ; and two minima, from 9 P.M. to 1 A.M. and from 8 to 10 A.m., these being near the times of the barometric maxima. But the important point as regards the thunderstorms of Mauritius is that for twelve years none were recorded in

June and July, one only in August, one in September, and three in October. The annual period of the thunderstorms of this island extends from near the end of October to the middle of May, or during the time of the greatest rainfall, practically none occurring during the rest of the year. But rain continues to fall during the four months of no thunder, the mean monthly rainfall being then about 2 inches, falling, however, in September to 1°37 inches. During these four months, therefore, there is in the air the aqueous vapour, and, these being dry months, there is the condition of ascending currents. There appears, however, to be then ,wanting another element which scems essential to the electrical manifestations of the thunderstorm, viz., the con- ditions which give masses of descending cold air along with the ascending current of warm moist air, During the months when thunder is of no unusual occurrence the high pressure of Asia repeatedly advances, as Dr Meldrum has pointed out, elose on Mauritius ; and so frequently is this the case that he considers the belt of calms between the two trade winds to stretch in a slanting direction from Madagascar to Ceylon. As long as this state of things occurs with more or less frequency, the conditions of a descending cold current of large volume are provided, and thunder- storms occur. But during June, July, August, and September, when atmospheric pressure is low in Central Asia, and there is an unbroken crease of pressure from Asia southwards to Mauritius, and while Mauritius remains in the heart of the south-east trades, the conditions of deseending cold currents of any considerable

volume are not present, and thunder is there unknown at that season.

METEOROLOGY

¥29

Now in situations which afford the three conditions of aqueous vapour, ascending eurrents, and deseending cold currents, whilst the diurnal and annual periods are quite distinctly marked, the phenomena are more uniformly distributed through the hours of the day and months of the year than elsewhere. Pola and Fiume, at the head of the Adriatic, being shut in and encompassed by lofty Alps, are illustrations. At Fiume the greater maximum oecurs from 11 A.M. to 4 p.m. and the smaller from 2 to 4 A.M., and the minima from 10 P.M. to1 A.M. and 5 to9A.mM. While during the

twelve hours the temperature is above the mean of the day from May to September the number of the thunderstorms here was 245 for the nine years ending 1879, the number during the twelve hours the temperature is under the mean was 185. The compara- tively large number during the colder hours of the night is no doubt due to the warm moist atmosphere of this confined sea and the close proximity of the Alps.

There is still another set of conditions favouring the develop- ment of thunderstorms in certain elimates which the observations made at Stykkisholm in the north-west of Iceland illustrate. During the fourteen years ending 1879 there occurred here twenty- three thunderstorms, but there was only one in the six warm months from April to September; in other words, the thunder- storms of this climate are essentially winter phenomena. Further, of the twenty-three hours in which they occurred, only three were at a time of the day when the sun was above the horizon, viz., twice in Mareh and once in September; in other words, the thunder- storms of Stykkisholm are nocturnal phenomena. _ It is instructive to observe that in the north and north-west of Scotland thunder occurs inost frequently during the night and in winter, whereas in central, southern, and eastern districts it occurs most frequently during the day and in summer,—the thunderstorms in the former case approximating in type to those of Iceland and in the latter to those of Ekaterinburg. A little reflexion shows that in north- western Europe it is during winter and during night that warm moist ascending and cold dry deseending currents are most fre- quently brought into close proximity during the great Atlantic storms of the season; and it is at the changes of wind, humidity, and temperature accompanying the passage of the centres of the cyclones that the thunder peals are heard. On the other hand, in the east and south of Scotland it is during the hot months of the year that these ascending columns of warm moist air and descending columns of cold dry air are most frequently brought together, and there, accordingly, thunder with the heavy rains which accompany it is of most frequent occurrence from 11 A.M. to 5 p.M. from May toSeptember ‘These essentially different types of thunderstorms have been classed by Mohn as heat thunderstorms and cyclonic thunderstorms.

Given an initial difference of clectric potential, it is easy to understand from the effects which follow the sudden extraordinary condensations of the

aqueous vapour that take place how the most violent thunderstorms are pro- duced. The difficulty is to account for the production of the initial difference of electric potential,—how, for example, in the same great aerial current of the south-west monsoon, this difference of potential is produced in the

molecules of aqueous vapour at Calcutta but not in the

aqueous vapour at Mauritius. It is to the physicist that meteorologists still look for the explanation.

Diurnal Period in the Occurrence of the Whirlwind, Waterspout, Dust Storm, and Tornado.—Whirlwinds, waterspouts, dust storms, and tornadoes are essentially the same, differing from each other only in their dimensions, their intensity, or the degree in which the moisture is con- densed into visible vapour, while the hailstorm and the rainstorm are simply the manner and degree of the pre- cipitation accompanying them. In several important respects they differ widely and radically from cyclones (see ATMOSPHERE, vol. iii. p. 33). The largest tornadoes are of so decidedly smaller dimensions when compared with the smallest cyclones as to admit of no shading of the one into the other. Cyclones occur at all hours of the day and night, whereas whirlwinds and tornadoes show a diurnal period as distinctly marked as any in meteorology. Finally, cyclones take place under conditions which involve unequal atmospheric pressures or densities at the same heights of the atmosphere, due to inequalities in the geographical distribution of temperature and humidity; but whirlwinds occur where for the time the air is unusually warm or moist, and where consequently temperature and

humidity diminish with hcight at an abnormally rapid rate. Cyclones are thus phenomena resulting from a disturbance of the equilibrium of the atmosphere considered horizon- tally, but whirlwinds and tornadoes have their origin in a vertical disturbance of atmospheric equilibrium.

Among the most remarkable of the tornado-swept regions of the globe are certain portions of the United States ; and to the examina- tion of these the

meteorological service of the States has given special attention by a systematic, careful, and minute observation of the attendant phenomena.and the destructive effects. The tornadoes of the last eighty-seven years, numbering about six hundred, have been classed under the different States where they are reported to have occurred, and fig. 5 shows this relative distribu-

tion over the States. The areas of greatest frequency are at long distances from each other. That part of the great basin lying west of the Mississippi, including the States of Iowa, Missouri, Kansas, and Nebraska, is the region in which tornadoes are most frequent. Tornadoes occur at all seasons, being most frequent, however, from April to September, and least frequent in December and January.

The hour of occurrence of one hundred and sixty-two of the tornadoes is given in the official report as follows :—

Midt. to 2 A.M. 2 8Aa.M.to10 a.m. 1 4p.M.to 6 P.M. 52 DAUM. 55)4, Gs 5D 110 4; « Boom 7% 6 55-4, 8 , ee Bes On 155 3 Noort ;; 2806, 16 8 es 210 « Sie 6 4, os 8 ” 4 2P.M.,, 4 ” 47 10 99,009 Midt. 4

Thus the diurnal period of tornadoes is analogous

to the period

)

NAS

a UH

ti; it Ni

NY \ RN

—

for temperature, wind velocity, and thunderstorms. The atmo- spheric conditions which appear invariably to precede the formation of the tornado are violent contrasts of temperature and humidity immediately to the north and south of the path to be traversed by the storm. It is highly interesting to observe from fig. 5 that the region of most frequent occurrence of tornadoes is the region where a large number of the cyclones of the United States appear to originate (aud the same region Loomis has shown to be remark- able for violent contrasts of temperature occurring within limited spaces and times), and that, as appears in the regions of the Alleghanies, they decrease in frequency with height.

Fig. 6 shows the waterspout in different aspects. A black cloud covers the sky, from which a projection is let down in the form of an inverted cone, as at A, which continues to increase and extend downwards. The sea immediately beneath is soon thrown into violent agitation, showing that the whirling movement which began in the clouds has extended to the sea, and is doubtless continuous throughout, though the portion of the column from A downwards is not yet made apparent by the condensation

_of its contained vapour into cloud. As the whirling move- ment of the column becomes more intensely developed, the increased rapidity of the gyrations brings about increased rarefaction of the air within, with the inevitable result of increased condensation of the vapour into cloud downward. The protrusion of the cloud and its extension downwards are thus not due to the descent of vapour from the clouds, but to the visible condensation of the vapour of the spirally ascending air-currents arising from an increasing rarefac- tion due solely to the accelerated rate of the gyrations, the

BAIS » 25 ES 25 +35 GR 35 0 65

Fic. 5.—Distribu- tion of Tornadoes in the United States.

condensation being analogous to that of the cloud seen in exhausting an air-pump.

Under each of the columns of fig. 6 the surface of the sea is seen to be more or less heaped up, as well as in violent agitation, showing that atmospheric pressure immediately under the gyrating columns is less than it is all round. On land, when the tornado passes directly over a dwelling house or other closed building, it often happens that the whole building, walls and roof, is thrown outward with great violence, the wreckage presenting the appearance of a sudden explosion, proving that atmospheric pressure outside the building was instantaneously and largely reduced, and the building shattered to fragments by the expansion of the air within. It is in this way that the tornado does some of its most dreadful work.

The wind of the tornado reaches a velocity probably. never equalled in cyclones. During the Ohio tornado of February 4, 1842, large buildings were lifted entire from their foundations, carried several rods through the air, and then dashed to pieces, some of the fragments being carried distances of 7 and 8 miles ; and large oaks nearly 7 fect in girth were snapped across like reeds. This tornado swept — on its course at the rate of 34 miles an hour, and at one

cy |

“the mean time being nearly six minutes and a half.

TORNADOES. |

place did its fearful work in the brief space of a minute.

The tornado which passed over Mount Carmel (Illinois),

June 4, 1877, swept off the spire, vane, and gilded ball of the Methodist church, and carried it bodily 15 miles to north-eastward. The velocity of the ascending currents which kept this heavy object suspended in the air for 15 or 20 miles must have been very great.

Of the tornadoes the progressive courses of which were recorded, 310 advanced towards N.E., 38 towards S.E., 16 towards E.N.E., 14 towards E., 7 towards N.N.E., 5 towards E.S.E., and 3 towards $.S.E. The course is thus always

of the strong air-currents which blow along the surface of the ground and converge vorticosely round the base of the column. A form commoniy seen is shown in fig. 7, which represents several dust columns grouped together, each whirling independently round its own axis with incurving air-currents at the base, while the whole group of columns is borne bodily forward, and presents striking aspects as the forms and relative positions of the columns are changed. The importance of the observations made on dust storms as leading to a correct understanding of the whirlwind consists in this that it affords conclusive evidence that

there is a strong inflow of the

Fig. 6.—Forms of Waterspouts,

towards some easterly direction, the great majority being towards the north-east. The velocity of their onward movement varied from 12 to 60 miles an hour, the average being 30 miles an hour. The time occupied in passing a particular spot varied from 10 seconds to half an hour, The width of the path of destruction marked with debris and other relics of the violence of the tornado varied from 40 to 10,000 feet, the average being 362 yards. The direction of the whirling movement of the tornado was invariably from right to left, or the opposite of the movement of the hands of a watch, resembling in this respect the vorticose move- ment of cyclones in the northern hemisphere. The passage of the tornado cloud is often described as accompanied with remarkable noises, which observers variously charac- terize as terrible, deafening, a terrific crash, the roar of a thousand trains of cars, or the uproarious din of innumer- able pieces of machinery.

The usual position of the gyrating columns of cloud is vertical ; but occasionally a curving form or slanting direction is assumed. It is probable that to these latter forms many stationary or slowly moving dangerous squalls are to be referred, which spring up with unexpected suddenness in lakes and arms of the sea in mountainous regions.

The dust storm of India, Arabia, and Africa is a well- marked type of the whirlwind. Previous to the outbreak of a dust storm the air is unusually calm and sultry, just as happens in the case of the tornado. The simplest form of the dust storm is that of a tall acrial column of sand moving onwards, and drawing into itself, as it whirls round In its course, dust and other light bodics within the sweep

air along the surface of the ground all round vorticosely towards the base of the whirl- wind, and that these same in- flowing air-currents afterwards ascend through the air along the central axis of the whirl- wind, carrying with them the evidence of their ascent in the visible solid particles of dust, sand, and other light objects they whirl up with them in their ascending course.

Owing to the extreme dryness of the air-currents involved in the dust storm, the rarefaction generated by the rapidity of the = gyrations is insufficient to pro- = duce condensation of the aqueous _ vapour in the interior of the column. Quite different, how- ever, is it with waterspouts and tornadoes, where, in the great majority of cases, the air near the surface before being drawn into the ascending vortex is of a high temperature and near the point of saturation. From the extreme rarefaction to which these air-currents are subjected, owing to their sudden ascent in a rapidly gyrating column, excessive coudensation follows, with an aqucous precipitation at times so astonishing that it can only be fittingly described as an aerial torrent of solid water, or an acrial avalanche of hail and ice.

Certain tracts of the ocean in- cluded —_— within what. may be called permaneut anticyclones, or where atmo- spheric pressure is higher than all round, are char- acterized by an absence or com- parative absence of rain. These regions are also remarkable for clear skies and strong sun heat. _ Similarly small anticyclonic areas occur- ring between or in the vicinity of cyclones are characterized by dry air and clear skies, and it is under these conditions that the strongest sun heat is felt. When, as repeatedly

Fia 7.—Dust Storm.

happens in the warmer months of the year, anticycloncs remain practically stationary for some time, the lowermost strata of the air become abnormally heated,—thus bringing about a vertical disturbance of the equilibrium of the atmo- sphere out of which whirlwinds originate. It is under these conditions that white squalls or fair-weather whirlwinds occur, the originating cause of this special form being the great dryness of the air due to its place in the anticyclonc, and the abnormally rapid diminution of temperature and humidity with height owing to the strong insolation through the clear dry atmosphere. The clouds accompanying the white squalls are at a great height, but the commotion and boiling of the sea under them and following them as they drift onwards show that the squalls are true whirlwinds, the vapour column of the waterspout not being formed solely on account of the extreme dryness of the air which ascends the columns. The white squall accompanies fine weather, and its appearance is sudden, its duration bricf, and its destructive power at times so dreadful that it has been known to strip a ship of every sail and mast in a few seconds, and leave it rolling a helpless log amidst the tremendous sea which follows it. In sailing through such regions a close lookout should be made, particularly when the weather looks singularly fine, the skics beautifully clear, the air calm or nearly so, and the temperature and moisture of the air on board the vessel noticeably high. Diurnal Period of Hail.—The hail here referred to is round, hard, and compact, and in the form of clear or granular ice, the hailstones sometimes being found when broken across to be composed of alternate layers of these two states of ice. The following figures show the number of times it has occurred during the different hours of the day at Coimbra during the last six years :— Midt. to 2a.mM. 0 | 84a.m.tol0 A.M. 38 N55 4 5, TL 710y 4. 4, Noon 20 An in tee Be

3

Hl Es ny Noon ,, 2 p.m. 15 ore pn 9 Oo Oe aa dete) Are al 2PLMa;, 405; 18 110 ,, 5, Mid “CO

A diurnal period is thus well-marked at Coimbra, where forty-eight out of the fifty-nine cases have occurred from 10 a.m. to 4 p.m. This period is essentially the same as those calculated for a large number of places in representa- tive climates, care having been taken to limit the inquiry to the

particular hail described above. The important point to be noticed in the diurnal period of hail is that the time of maximum is about two hours earlier than the maximum period of thunderstorms. The maximum period for the thunderstorm is when the ascending current from the heated land is at its greatest force for the day ; but the maximum period for hail is some time before the ascending current has fully established itself, or at that time of the day when the vertical disturbance of the atmosphere is greatest,—in other words, when atmospheric temperature and vapour fall with height at a much greater rate than the normal. In the higher latitudes hail falls almost exclusively during the warmer months of the year. In regions where the summer climate is practically rainless no hail falls ; and where the rainfall is small and at distant intervals few cases of hail occur. Thus at Coimbra, where little rain falls in summer, hail was recorded as having fallen only once in the six years during the four dry hot months from June to September.

All hail is probably connected immediately with whirl- winds, more or less developed ; and it is when the hail- storm is one of the phenomena attendant on the tornado or on @ great thunderstorm that it assumes its most destructive form. The theory of the formation of hail las been stated by Ferrel in his Meteorological Researches for the Use of the Coast Pilot, part ii. p. 85. The vapour carried aloft by the gyrations of the tornado is below a certain height condensed into cloud and rain, but above that height into

4p.M. to 6 P.M.

Mn TE OR COLO Gt =

[iar

snow. Let the raindrops formed below be carried up into the snow region by the powerful ascending currents of the tornado and be kept suspended there a little while, and they become frozen into hail. If now these be thrown quite outside the gyrations of the tornado, they fall to the carth as a shower of compact homogeneous hailstones of clear ice of ordinary size. If, however, they are caught in the descent and carried in toward the vortex by the inflowing currents on all sides, they are again rapidly carricd aloft into the freezing region. A number of such revolutions of ascent and descent

may be made before they fall to the earth. While high up in the snow region, the hailstones reccive a coating of snow; but, while traversing the region lower down where rain yet unfrozen is carried up, they receive a coating of solid ice. Thus alternate coatings of snow and ice are received, and the number of each sort indicates the number of revolutions described before the hailstones fell to the ground. When the nucleus is com- posed of compact snow, as is generally the case, the hailstone had its origin high up in the snow region asa small ball of snow, or soft hail (Graupel in German and grésil in French); but when it is composed of clear ice throughout it was formed in the rain region, carried up into the snow region and there frozen, and immediately afterwards fell to the ground.

MonrTHLY, ANNUAL, AND IrrEGULARLY REcURRING PHENOMENA.

The Temperature of the Sea.—Figs. 8 and 9, represent- ing the distribution of the temperature of the surface water of the ocean for the two extreme months February and August, are reproduced chiefly from The Wind and Current Charts for Pacific, Atlantic, and Indian Oceans, published by the British Admiralty in 1872.

In February (fig. 8) the temperature of the surface of the sea falls to the annual minimum over the northern hemisphere, and rises to the maximum in the southern hemisphere. The course of the isothermals more closely follows the latitudes in the Pacific, Indian, and South Atlantie Oeeans; but the divergence from the latitudes is great and striking over the North Atlantie. The wider and more open the ocean the more does the distribution of the temperature approach the normal; and the more confined the oeean the greater is the divergence from the normal. The key to the anomalous distribution of the temperature of the ocean is furnished by the charts of the distribution of atmospheric pressure and the prevailing winds of the globe. So far as observation has gone it would appear that the surface currents are practically altogether caused by the prevailing winds over the respective oceans, subject to such deflexions in their courses as are oceasioned by the land.

In the southern hemisphere the currents on the west side of the Indian Occan flow southwards along the east coast of Africa, and, since the

currents here pass from lower to higher latitudes, the temperature along the whole extent of this coast is raised consider- ably above the normal. On the other hand, since the eurrents on the west coast of Africa flow from south to north—in other words, from higher to lower latitudes—the ocean currents whieh impinge on this coast have a temperature much under the normal. The winds and currents on the coasts of South America are precisely analogous to those of Africa, and the distribution of the temperature of the sea is also similar. The temperature of the occan on the east coast of that continent is for the same latitudes everywhere higher than on the west coast. Even in the smaller continent of Australia the same law holds good.

In the northern hemisphere a different distribution of the tem- perature of the sea is seen at this season. Inthe Atlantic the tem- perature is very mueh higher on the west of Europe than'on the east of Ameriea. On the east of Amcrica from Wilmington to Boston occur the most rapid transitions in the mean temperature of the ocean anywhere on the globe, the temperature falling in that short distance from 70° to 30°, whereas on the castern side of the Atlantic these isothermals pass Cape Verd Islands and Spitzbergen respectively. In the winter months the prevailing winds of the east side of North America are north-westerly, whilst in the central and eastern portion of the Atlantic they are south-westerly, thus pouring along the east coast of America the iey currents of the Aretic regions, but over the central Atlantic and along the western shores of Europe the warm waters of southern climates. The

easterly and south-easterly winds of Scandinavia in winter lower the isothermals along these coasts. A striking feature of the winter isothermals of the Atlantic is the singularly high temperature along the centre stretehing from Spitzbergen towards the south-west and extending ina modified degree as far south as the West Indies. In the Pacific this feature of the mid-ocean temperature is much less

•

wei

=

ia

:

rh UA

ait

ee . i a ee —_

|

=

(i aaml

a al

=

if re) <

:

‘

pronounced, and the excess of temperature on the west of America over what oceurs in the same latitudes of eastern Asia is not so great as the difference observable between the two sides of the Atlantic.

The highest mean temperature in February (85°) oceurs in the Indian Ocean to the south-west of Sumatra, and there is a patch the

SRP

ARR:

So

Va

re CRIN L Carers

CSA ae

Fia. 8.—Isothermals of the Surface of the Sea for February.

temperature of which is 84° to the north of Madagascar. highest means in the Atlantic are 82° in the north-east angle of the Gulf of Guinea, and 81° off the north-east coast of Brazil. In the Pacifie the highest are 83° to the north of the Fiji Islands and 81° near the Marshall Islands.

The

In Angust (fig. 9) the southern half of the Red Sea shows a mean temperature of 90°, being the highest mean recorded for the ocean anywhere at any season. Patches showing a summer mean of 85° occur in the Chinese Sea to the east of Tonquin, in the Bay of Bengal to the east of southern India, about Socotra, and to the

de WW) a.

; ; =, /

S = = >

Cte

2 AST i. a } of

: : ;

Ve

is a

4

).

Ne

5

©

tel \ig

Hr

/

DY § |)

aan we Ps) P| en

==

Re

g ‘ES

is)

Fic, 9.—Isothermals of the Surface of the Sea for August.

west of Central America. But the most extensive regions of high temperature are in the west of the Paeific between long. 165° E. and the Philippines northward nearly to Japan and south- ward to New Guinea, and

the Gulf of Mexieo and the adjoining part of the Atlantic as far cast as long. 57° W. A patch of remarkably low temperature oecurs in the Pacific a little to the

west of Galapagos, where the mean is only 70°, being 10° lower than what occurs anywhere else near the equator at this season.

The influence of currents is strongly expressed in the temperature of all the oeeans. In the south of Asia the monsoons are 8. W., S., and S.E. Under the impulse of these monsoonal winds an extensive surface drift of the waters of the equatorial regions is

carried northwards towards scuthern Asia, and consequently very high temperatures characterize these seas in summer. It is instruc- tive to note the effect on the temperature of the sea resulting from the region of high atmospheric pressure in the North Atlantic at this season. Out of this anticyclonic region the winds blow in all directions, giving rise to surface currents tlowing in the same direc- tions. Thus to the west of Africa the winds and currents are from north to south ; and hence the temperature of this part of the ocean is abnormally reduced. On the other hand, on the west side of this high pressure area, the prevailing winds and currents are from south to north, and it will be seen that the temperature of the whole of the region swept by the southerly winds is abnormally raised. On the north side of the area, the winds and currents are westerly as far as about long. 35° W., and over that space the isothermals follow the parallels of latitude. Farther to eastward and northward the prevailing winds become south-westerly, thus propelling north- wards along the western shores of Europe, by oceanic surface drifts, the warmer waters of southern latitudes. Meanwhile the currents of cold water and ice drifts from the Aretic regions keep the tempera- ture off America to the north of Newfoundland at a figure con- siderably lower than is observed in any other region in the same latitudes. In August similar relations exist as in January between the east and west coasts respeetively of South Africa, South America, and Australia, all of which are readily explained by the charts of mean atinospheric pressure and the resulting prevalent winds.

One of the most striking facts of ocean temperature is that the temperature of the Southern Ocean from about 50° to 60° S. lat. is practically the same in January and August, a circumstance due ehiefly to the magnificent icebergs of that ocean.

The Temperature of the Land.—In regions where the rainfall is distributed through all the months of the year, and where snow covers the ground for only a small part of the year, the mean temperature of the soil nearly equals that of the air. But when the year is divided into wet and dry seasons, and when snow lies during a considerable portion of the year, the mean annual temperature of the soil may be above or below that of the air. The greatest difference between the temperature of the soil and that of the air occurs where the surface of the ground is covered during several months with snow. Snow is a bad con- ductor of heat, and thus obstructs the free propagation of the cold produced by radiation downwards into the soil, and the escape of heat from the soil into the air. In this way, over a considerable portion of the Russian empire, the temperature of the soil is considerably in excess of that of the air. Thus at a place 120 miles south of Archangel the temperature of the soil is 10° higher than that of the air; and at Semipalatinsk it is 9° higher.

The daily changes of temperature only affect the soil to depths of about 4 feet. The precise depth varies with the degree of the sun-heat and with the nature of the soil. Similarly the heat of summer and the cold of winter give rise toa larger annual wave of heat propagated downwards, the amplitude of which diminishes with the depth till it ceases to be perceptible. Principal Forbes showed from observations on the Calton Hill, Edinburgh, that the annual variation is not appreciable lower than 40 feet below the surface, and that under 25 feet the change of temperature through the year is small. The depth at which the annual variation ceases, or where the temperature remains constant, is a variable depending on the conductivity and specific heat of the soil or rock, but particularly on the difference between the summer and winter temperatures. ‘The rate at which the annual wave of temperature is propagated downwards is so slow that at Edinburgh, at a depth of 24 feet, the highest annual temperature does not occur till January 4, and the lowest till about July 13, thus revers- ing the seasons at this

depth. At Greenwich, at a depth of 25} feet, these phases of the annual temperature occur on November 30 and June 1.

Professor Everett in the Report of the British Association for 1879 has summarized the results of the observations of underground tem- perature, The temperature of the surface of the ground is not

sensibly influenced by the flow of heat from below upwards, but is determined by atmospheric and astronomical conditions, The tem-

perature gradient is defined as the rate of inercase of the temperature downwards, and it may be taken as averaging one degree Fahrenheit for every 50 or 60 feet, the exact ratc in particular eases being very variable. Thus the temperature gradient of the soil is about five times steeper than the temperature gradient of the air. The temperature gradient is steepest beneath gorges and least steep beneath ridges ; and hence the underground annual isothermals are flatter than the uneven surfaces above them. This is the ease even with the uppermost isothermal of the soil, and the flattening inereases as we pass downwards until at a considerable depth they become horizontal. Where the surface of the ground and the iso- thermal surfaces beneath it are horizontal, the flow of leat is verti- cal, and the saine quantity of heat flows across all sections which lie in the same vertical. In this case the flow across a horizontal area of unit size is equal to the product of the temperature gradient by the conductivity, if the latter term be used in an extended sense, so that it includes convection by the percolation of water, as well as conduction proper; and hence, in comparing different strata in the same vertical, the gradient varies in the inverse ratio of the conductivity.

Since the effects of the cold generated by nocturnal radiation mostly accumulate on the surface of the earth, but the effeets of solar radiation are spread to some height by ascending eurrents from the heated ground, it might be expected that the annual tempera- ture of the surface layer of the soil would be lower than that of the air resting over them. Observations prove that such is the ease. Springs which have their sources at greater

depths than that to which the annual variation penetrates have a constant temperature throughout the year, and if they do come from a depth considerably greater than this they may be regarded as giving a very close approximation to the mean annual temperature of the place. The temperature of cellars is also very near the mean annual temperature of the locality; at any rate this temperature may be secured for cellars anywhere.

Distribution of Temperature in the Atmosphere.—Of the larger problems of meteorology, the distribution of tempera- ture in the atmosphere over the land surfaces of the globe was the first that received an approximate solution (by Humboldt). But as regards the ocean, which comprises three-fourths of the earth's surface, the question of the monthly and annual distribution of temperature in the atmosphere over it can scarcely yet be said to have been seriously looked at. The isothermals of the temperature of the atmosphere which cross the oceans continue still to be drawn essentially from observations made on the islands and along the coasts of these oceans. The first step towards the solution of this vital problem in climatology and other branches of meteorology is the construction of charts of mean monthly temperature of the surface water of the sea over all parts of the ocean from which observa- tions for the purpose are available. In prosecuting this line of inquiry, excellent work has been done by the Meteorological Office as regards parts of the Atlantic between the tropics and the ocean to the south of Africa, and also by the Dutch, French, and German meteorologists. With such charts it would not be difficult, by a careful comparison during the same intervals of time between the temperature of the surface of the sea and that of the air resting over it, to construct monthly charts of the tempera- ture of the atmosphere over the oceans of the globe.

In this connexion the whole of the observations of the tempera- tures of the air and sea made on board the ‘‘ Challenger” have been examined, and sorted into one hundred and seventy-fonr groups aceording to geographical position, and the differences entered on a ehart of the ronte of the expedition. Inthe Southern Ocean between latitudes 45° and 60° the temperature of the sea was lower than that of the air, the mean difference being i°°4. The temperature of the air is here higher owing to the prevailing W.N.W. winds, and that of the sea lower owing to the numerous icebergs.

To south of lat. 60° S. the sea was nearly 2°°0 warmer than the air, the result in this ease being due to the open sea, which keeps up a higher surface temperature, and to an increased prevalence in these higher latitudes of southerly winds, thus lowering the temperature of the air.

The period during which the temperature of the sea exceeded that of the air was from June 1874 to March 1875, or during that part of the cruise from Sydney to New Zealand, and through the East India Islands to Hong Kong and thence to the Admiralty Islands. During the whole of this time, except when passing the north of Australia, the sea was much warmer than the air, the

general excess being from 2° to 3°, rising even near Tongatabu to | is raised. Sinrilarly in the North Pacific from lat. 40° to 30° the

upwards of 4°. The climate of the southern part of this extensive region at the seasons visited has a large rainfall, mueh cloud, and consequently a comparatively small evaporation and sunshine. In June, when the “Challenger” passed the north of Australia, the elimate was very dry, the sunshine strong, and the evaporation large, and there the sea was slightly colder than the air. In the Atlantic between lat. 20° N. and 20°S. the sea was everywhere warmer, the mean excess being about a degree; and in the Pacific between lat. 30° N. and 30° S. the sea was also warmer, the mean exeess being a degree and a half.

On the other hand, in the Atlantic from lat. 40° to 20° N. the sea was, on the mean, half a degree colder than the air. This region is remarkable for the high pressure which overspreads it, for the winds and currents whieh flow out in all directions, for its clear skies, strong sunshine, and consequently large evaporation, by which the temperature of the surface of the sea is lowered, and that of the air resting on it, being open to the heating influence of the sun,

temperature of the surface of the sea was half a degree lower than that of the air.

These remarks apply only to the observations made strictly on the open sea, Near land very great differences were observed which varied with season. Thus at Hong Kong during the latter half of November 1874 the sea was 3° °7 warmer than the air, the low temperature of the air at this season being caused by the lower temperature of the land and the northerly winds whieh then prevail; on the other hand, at Valparaiso in November and December of the following year the sea was 5°°8 colder than the air during the three weeks the ‘‘Challenger”’ was there, the difference being due to the cold oceanic current which sweeps northwards past that coast, and the rapid increase in the temperature of the air at that time of the year. These results will help us in gaining some knowledge of the temperature of the air over the oceans of the globe in February and August, taken in connexion with a careful examination of the sea temperature of these months represented in figs. 8 and 9.

Fie. 10.—January Isothermals of the Surfaee of the Globe.

The distribution of temperature over the surface of the globe is shown by figs. 10 and 11, which represent the temperature of the two extreme months January and July for the eleven years 1870 to 1880. The region of highest temperature, which may be regarded as comprised between the north and south isothermals of 80°, forms an irregularly shaped zone, lying in tropical and partly in subtropical countries. On each side of this warm zone the tempera- ture diminishes towards the poles, and the lines showing successively the gradual lowering of the temperature are, roughly speaking, arranged parallel to the equator, thus showing in an unmistakable manner the predominating influence of the sun as the source of terrestrial heat. While this decrease of temperature corresponds in a general way to what may be called the solar climate, there are great deviations brought about by disturbing causes.

Among these disturbing causes the unequal distribution of land and water holds a prominent place. In January the earth presents to the perpendicular rays of the sun the most uniform surface, or the largest water surface, and in July.the most diversified surface, or the greatest extent of land. Hence the

zone of the earth’s surface comprised between the isothermals of 80° is less irregular, and also Spreads over an area more restricted, in January than in July. In July the areas enclosed by the isothermals of 80° and 90° are much larger in the Old World than

in the New, it being the former which presents the larger |

land surface to the perpendicular rays of the sun; and in January, the summer of the southern hemisphere, the most extensive area of high temperature occurs in Africa and the least in Australia, the high-temperature area of South America being intermediate. In contrast to this the belt of temperature exceeding 80° is of least breadth where it crosses the Pacific and Atlantic Oceans, the absolute minimum breadth being in July in the Pacific, the largest ocean, where the disturbing influence of the land is least. During the cold months of the year, when the sun’s heat is least and the effects of terrestrial radiation attain the maximum, the greatest cold is over the largest land surfaces which slant most to the sun. Thus the lowest mean temperature that occurs anywhere or at any season on the globe is ~55°°8 at Werchojansk (lat. 67° 34’ N., long. 133° 51’ E.) in north-eastern Siberia. In Arctic America the lowest isothermal is ~~—40°°0. During the winter the ocean everywhere maintains a higher tem~~ perature in all regions open to its influence, as is seen, not only in the higher latitudes to which the isothermals push their way as they cross the Atlantic and Pacific, but also in their irregular courses over and near the Mediterranean, Black, Caspian, and Baltic Seas, Hudson’s Bay, the mouth of the St Lawrence, the American lakes, and all other large sheets of salt and fresh water. The disturbing influence of sheets of water on the temperature in all seasons is very strikingly shown when the isothermals are drawn for every

degree, these marking out the prominent features of local | 12 and 13 represent eharts of temperature of this deserip- climates, a knowledge of which is of so great importance to | tion for the British Islands for 1870-1880 from the the agrieulturist, the horticulturist, and the invalid. Figs. Jour. of Scot. Meteor. Soc., vol. vi. In the winter of the

Beg 4am

ea a:

“4

i

HA Th | TAL

i

UB, 0.0 TSN

Fia. 11.—July Isothermals of the Surface of the Globe.

southern hemisphere the depressing influenee of the land | east of Australia and in the’basin of the La Plata, a lower on the temperature is but slightly felt, owing to the small | temperature prevails in the interior. Another prominent disturbing eause operating on the —

I ¢ 5 (-) 52°

54°

Ss ; 43° |: Bc eee ‘Fia. 13.—Mean Temperature of the British Islands in July. Fic, 12.—Mean Temperature of the British Islands in January. .

mean temperature is to be found in the seasonal areas of extent of the land surfaees and the eomparatively low | low and high mean pressure in their connexion with the pre-

latitudes to whieh they extend southwards. In the south- | vailing winds. Of these the most marked is the system of

quMPFRATURE. |

low pressure about Iceland during the winter months (see fig. 14). Since this region of low pressure gives to western Europe its prevailing south-west and south winds, and to North America its north-west winds in winter, it is plain that the temperature of western Europe is thereby abnormally

raised by the simple fact of its prevailing winds coming from the ocean and from lower latitudes, and that the temperature of North America is abnormally lowered by its prevailing winds coming from the Arctic regions and from land. The opposite action of these two winds, which are part and parcel of the same atmospheric disturbance about Iccland; is shown from the fact that, while the mean temperature of the south coast of Hudson's Bay in January is — 20°, in the same latitude in the Atlantic to the west of Scotland it is as high as 44°, or 64° higher. A similar though less striking result accom- panies the low-pressure area in the north of the Pacific in winter.

Another area of low mean pressure which powerfully affects the temperature is the low barometer which over- spreads the interior of Asia during the summer months (see fig. 17). Since from this disposition of the pressure the prevailing winds of Europe and western Asia are north- west and west, and over eastern Asia south-east and east, it follows that the temperature is abnormally raised on the eastern side and depressed on the western side of the con- tinent by the direction from which they severally receive their prevailing winds. This is well shown by the course of the summer isothermals of 80°, 70°, 60°, and 50° across the Old Continent.

Since the strongest insolation occurs where the air is driest, the hottest summer climates are met with in those tropical and subtropical regions where no rain falls. The most extensive of the rainless regions during the summer months is perhaps that which extends from the Punjab westwards through Persia, Arabia, and North Africa, to Spain. This is the region where the hottest climates of the globe are to be encountered. Similarly no rain falls at this time of the year in lower California and the States adjoining, and this feature of the climate, taken in con- nexion with the relatively low temperature of the coast due to the winds and ocean currents from the north which sweep past it, results in sharp contrasts of temperature within short distances such as have no parallel in any other climate.

Of the areas of seasonal high mean pressure, the high barometer of Central Asia in winter stands out in character- istic prominence (see fig. 14). Now, since the prevailing winds which necessarily form a part of this feature are south and south-west over Russia and western Siberia, the tempera- ture of

these inland regions is considerably higher than would otherwise be the case. prevailing winds are north-west in eastern Asia, the tempera- ture of these regions is thereby abnormally depressed. It is this consideration chiefly which explains how it is that, while the mean January temperature in latitude 60° and longitude 120° E. is — 30°, in the same latitude but in longitude 43° E. the mean temperature is 10°, or 40° higher, even though both regions are equally continental in their character.

The high mean pressure in the summer in the Atlantic between Africa and the United States has with its system of winds the most decided influence in bringing about the abnormal distribution of the temperature of that and adjoining regions. Since on its west side the prevailing winds are necessarily southerly, the temperature ofthat region is abnormally raised, and, on the other hand, since on its east side the winds are northerly, the temperature of the region is abnormally depressed. The result of these two opposite winds is seen in the slanting direction of the

On the other hand, since the.

isothermal of 80° across the Atlantic, which slanting direction is continued far into the interior of North America for the reasons already stated.

These important bearings of cyclonic and anticyclonic areas on temperature and climate may be thus summarized. The tempcrature is abnormally raised on the east sides of cyclonic areas, and abnormally depressed on the west sides; but, on the other hand, temperature is abnormally raised on the west sides of anticyclonic areas and depressed on their east sides. In the southern hemisphere these direc- tions are reversed. .

Another set of influences, powerfully affecting the tem- perature, come into play where the surface of the land rises above the sea into elevated plateaus, lofty peaks, or mountain ranges. Thus it has been observed on Ben Nevis and other mountains that the wind during the day in summer exhibits an ascensional tendency due to the circumstance that the temperature of the

surface of the mountain is heated in a much greater degree than the air strata at the same levels all around it. An ascensional current consequently rises from the mountain, which is maintained at a steadily stronger rate than at lower levels, because the drain from the updraught is easily supplied from the free surrounding atmosphere. It is the strong insolation at high elevations in the summer months whicli explains the excessively high day-temperatures encountered in the Rocky Mountains; and from the same conditions, viz., the rarity and purity of the atmosphere, by which terrestrial radiation is but little checked, come the low temperatures of the nights of these climates in , the same season. From this cause it follows that the elevated lands in the interior of continents tend to reduce mean atmo-spheric pressure in summer to a greater extent than would otherwise be the case. In winter, on the other hand, the temperature of elevated regions in the interior of continents is very much colder than that of the surrounding atmosphere at the same heights, because in such regions the air is exceedingly dry and rare, and consequently radiation to the cold regions of space but little checked. Hence down the slopes of these high lands there are poured in all directions descending currents of very cold air, which intensify the rigours of the winters experienced on the low lands round their base, where accordingly the lowest mean winter temperatures occur. These elevated lands thus materially add to the high atmospheric pressure of the interior of continents during the cold months of the year.

But it is ocean streams and ocean currents which produce the greatest abnormalities in the distribution of the tempera- ture of the air, and a glance at figs. 10 and 11 will show that it isin the North Atlantic where this cause is most strikingly seen. The increase thus accruing to the winter temperature is greatest about the north of Norway. It is

.also very great in the British Islands; thus, if no more

heat were received than is due to their position on the globe in respect of latitude, the mean winter temperature. of Shetland would be 3° and that of Londou 17°. But mainly owing to the heat given out by the Gulf Stream and other warm currents of the Atlantic their mean winter temperatures are respectively about 39°°5 and 39°, Shetland being thus benefited 36°°5 and London 22°. The chart of the winter temperature of the British Islands well

illustrates the influence of the surrounding ocean in maintaining a higher temperature. It will be seen that the south-west of Ireland is 7° warmer than the east coast of England in the same latitudes. The strong drift current from near Behring's Strait southward along the coast of America has a powerful influence, particularly in lowering the summer temperature of that coast,— thus bringing about, im con- junction with the dry rainless climate of the interior, what are perhaps the most violently contrasted climates, within

narrow limits, as regards their temperature. The deflexions of the isothermals near the Baltic, Mediterranean, Black, and Caspian Seas and the freshwater lakes of America all point to the disturbing influence of these sheets of water on the temperature. Neh-

The height and direction of mountain ranges 1s an important element in determiriing climate. If the ranges are perpendicular to the prevailing winds and of a con- siderable height, they drain the winds of much of their moisture, thus causing to places to leeward colder winters and hotter summers, by partially removing their protecting screen of vapour, and exposing them more completely to solar and terrestrial radiation. Of this Norway and Sweden and the British Islands form excellent illustrations. It is this that makes the most important distinctions among climates in regions near each other, as respects both animal and vegetable life. With regard to the decrease of temperature with height, very much yet remains to be done before an approximation to the law of decrease can be stated. During the five months observations were made on Ben Nevis in the summer of 1881 the dificrence between the mean temperature at sea-level adjoining and at the top of the Ben, 4406 feet above the sea, was Tore, which shows a mean decrease of 1° Fahr. for every 280 feet of elevation. 'The actual differences from day to day varied from 1°-4 to 23°°2. As Ben Nevis forms a peak, and is in the very middle of the strong winds from the Atlantic, it is highly probable that this rate of decrease is a close approximation to the true decrease of the tempera- ture of the air during the summer months in that part of the British Islands. When observations are made on elevated plateaus of some extent, the rate of decrease deduced from the observations

will be less than the true rate in the free atmosphere in summer and greater in winter. The rate is thus a variable quantity, varying with latitude, situation, dampness or dryness of the air, calm or windy weather, and particularly with the season of the year. One degree Fahrenheit for every 300 is the rate of decrease generally assumed.

Amount of Aqueous Vapour.—It is scarcely possible to overestimate the importance of a knowledge of the hori- zontal and vertical distribution in the atmosphere of its aqueous vapour, for it may be truly said that it forms one of the prime factors in all the larger problems of atmo- spheric physics.

Still less is known of the vertical distribution of aqueous vapour. It decreases, like temperature, with the height, and if the statement generally made be at all correct, that half of the whole vapour of the atmosphere is contained in the lowest. 6000 feet, and that at 20,000 feet high there is only about a tenth of what is at the earth's surface, the rate of decrease with height proceeds at a greatly more rapid rate than is consistent with the supposition that it forms an independent vapour atmosphere existing under its own pressure. The establishment of an increased number of high-level stations, and a more systematic inquiry than has yet been attempted into the upper currents of the atmo-

sphere, are much necded in the further development of this branch of meteorology. In carrying out the inquiry, invaluable assistance will be obtained from observations of the diurnal range of the barometer and from well-devised methods of observing the cffects of solar radiation at the earth's surface.

Amount of Cloud.—In Scotland, which lies completely within the region swept by the south-westerly winds from the Atlantic, and presents a well-defined mountain. range lying across the track of these winds, the clouds have a distinct annual period. In the west, at places quite open to these westerly breezes, the amounts of cloud in spring, summer, autumn, and winter are respectively 67, 69, 71, and 74, and the annual mean 70.! In the

east, in such districts as East and Mid Lothian, which have extensive ranges of hills between them and the Atlantic, the propor- tions are 59, 63, 62, and 60, and the annual mean 61. Thus about a tenth more of the sky is covered with cloud at the western as compared with the eastern situations, and the distribution of cloud differs materially in western and eastern climates. In the west winter is the cloudiest season, but in the east it is summer, and these are respec- tively the months.when niost rain falls in the several climates. Everywhere spring is the season when the sky is clearest. In England, owing to tlie protection afforded by Ireland and Wales to the west and the comparative absence of ranges of hills, the amount of cloud is less than in Scotland, and it is more equally distributed over the country. The minimum amount occurs in spring, and the maximum in winter and autumn.

Some of the best illustrations of the seasonal variation in the distribution of cloud are afforded by the Old Continent. These variations are the simple consequence of the systems of wind caused by the high winter and low summer pressures of that conti- nent. In eastern Siberia the prevailing winds in winter are N.W. or continental, and in summer S.E. or oceanic; and accordingly at Ajau, Nertchinsk, and Blagoweshtchensk the mean amounts of cloud in these two seasons are 18 and 44. On the other hand, in western Siberia and eastern Europe the prevailing winds im winter are S.W., or from lower to higher latitudes, and im summer N.W., or from higher to lower latitudes. – Kazan may be taken as fairly representing this extensive region, and there the amounts pf cloud for the four seasons beginning with winter are 71, 48, 44, and 62, As the N.W. winds of summer rise over the Ural mountains in their course, condensation of the aqueous vapour is inereased, and hence over this region the cloud in winter and suminer is nearly the same, the mean amounts at Bogoslovsk, Ekaterinburg, and Zlatoust being respectively 53 and 52. At Tiflis and Kutais, situated on the high ground which lies between the Black Sea and the south of the Caspian Sea, the means for winter and summer are 53 and 55. On the eastern coast of the Black Sea the westerly winds of summer are accompanied with the annual maximum eloud, the winter and summcr amounts at Redut-Kale being 59 and 69. In Central Siberia, to which the S.W. winds of winter do not extend, and to the north of latitude 55°, the amount of cloud is much diminished, and the cloudiness of summer is nearly the same as that of winter.

In India, in all regions which lie open to the summer monsoon, the minimum amount of cloud occurs during the winter and the maximum in summer,—the mean amounts being 19 and 74 at Calcutta, 16 and 86 at Bombay, 48 and 71 at Colombo, and 25 and 90 at Rangoon. At Trincomalee, on the east coast of Ceylon, and thus exposed to the rains of the N.E. monsoon of winter, and largely protected from the rains of the S.We monsoon of summer, the amounts of cloud in these seasons are 52 and 59. At Darjiling (6912 feet) and Chakrata (7022 feet high), both on the Himalayas, whither the summer monsoon penetrates, the mean amounts are respectively 53 and 86, and 43 and 73, At Leh, in Kashmir, the amounts are 59 and 51, the excess being thus in winter. In the Punjab and to westwards, or those regions I southern Asia to which the summer monsoon does not extend, the eloud in winter is everywhere greater than in summer. Thus the amounts are 24 and 18 at Mooltan, 38 and 25 at Peshawar, 27 and 19 at Jacobabad, and at Quetta, in Baluclristan, 5500 feet high, 42 and 14, Similar relations as to cloud obtain in Australia and the other continents where high pressures rule in the interior dnring

1 Jn this section the amount of cloud is stated in percentages of the sky eovered with cloud.

~ year.

ATMOSPHERIC PRESSURE. |

the cold inonths and low pressures during the warm months of the The maximum cloud occurs with winds froin the sea and winds advancing into the colder regions of higher latitudes, and the minimum with winds which have traversed an extensive track of Jand and .winds advancing into the warmer regions of lower lati- tudes. As the subject, however, is essentially one with rainfall, it

is not necessary to prosecute it further.

The other atmospheric movements on which the amount of cloud depends are the ascending and descending currents of the atmosphere,—the ascending currents with clouded skies occurring in the belt of calms and over cyclonic areas and regions, and the descending currents with compara-

tively clear skies over anticyclonic regions. The region of maximum vapour and densest cloud-screen on the globe is the equatorial belt of calms between the trades, which has an annual movement northward and southward with the sun as already explained. To ascensional movements is to be ascribed part of the cloudiness of the southern and eastern sides of the winter cyclonic regions of the North Atlantic and North Pacific, and of the cyclonic regions of low summer pressure in the interior of Asia and other continents. On the other hand the comparatively small

amount of cloud in the anticyclonic regions of the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, and in the high-pressure regions of the interior of Asia and other continents during the cold months of the year, is due to the vast down-currents which occupy the centres of the anticyclones, and which become relatively drier as they descend owing to the increasing pressure to which the air is subjected.

Distribution of Atmospheric Pressure.—The importance of a knowledge of the distribution of atmospheric pres- sure, or of the mass of the atmosphere, over the globe in its varying amounts from month to month is self- evident. Observations teach us that winds are simply the movements of the atmosphere that set in from where there is a surplus towards where there is a deficiency of air; and observations also teach that isobaric maps (¢.e., maps showing the relative distribution of mean pressure) and maps showing the prevailing winds are in accordance with each other. Since prevailing winds to a large extent determine the temperature and rainfall of the regions they traverse, isobaric maps may be considered as furnish- ing the key to the more important questions of meteoro-

Fic. 14.—January Isobars of the Globe and Prevailing Winds.

logical inquiry. At the time of the first publication of isobaric maps of the globe in 1868, it was impossible to do more than present the subject in its

broad general features, owing to the scantiness and quality of the materials then existing. ‘But since then meteorological stations have been largely multiplied in all parts of the civilized world, and the general adoption of the issue of storm warnings has necessitated the use of more accurate

barometers and uniform methods of observing. Since.

there is thus now the means of a more exact representation of. this fundamental datum of meteorology, we have prepared a new set of isobaric maps, showing the distribu- tion of the earth’s atmosphere and the prevailing winds for January (fig. 14), July (fig. 17), and the year. They have been constructed from mean values calculated for the same eleven years (1870-80 inclusive) as the isothermal maps figs. 10 to 13, pressure of 30-0 inches and upwards being represented by solid lines, and of 29-9 inches and under by dotted lines, while the arrows show the directions of the prevailing winds at the localities indicated by the respective arrow-points.

Mean Atmospheric Pressure in January (fig. 14).—In this month, when the influence of the sun on the northern hemisphere falls to the minimum, the greatest pressures are massed over the continents of that hemisphere, and the least pressures over the northern parts of the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, over the Antarctic Ocean and southern hemisphere generally. In the southern hemisphere there are three patches where pressure rises to 30 inches, viz., in the Atlantic between South America and Africa, south of the Indian Ocean, and in the Pacific between Australia and South America.

In the northern hemisphere, on the other hand, pressure rises in Central Asia to upwards of 30°5 inches, the mean pressure for January being at least 30°4 inches at Peking, etnigslatical, and Yenisei, and fully 30°5 inches at Irkutsk and Nertchinsk, in the upper basin of the Amur. This is the region where the normal atmospheric pressure attains to a maximum which is much higher than is reached in any other region or at any other time of the year. It will be observed that this region of highest pressure occupies a position near the centre of the largest continent. The area of high barometer is continued westward through Europe, through the horse latitudes of the Atlantic to Carolina, and thence through the United States to California, whence it crosses the Pacific to Asia. This belt of high pressure thus

completely encircles the globe, broadening as it passes the land and contracting as it crosses the ocean. Its greatest breadth is over Asia and its least over the Pacific, or where land and ocean attain respectively their maximum dimensions.

Pressures greatly under the average cover the northern portions of the Pacific and Atlantic and also the greater part of the Arctic regions. In the north of the Pacific the normal pressure falls to about 29°6 inches between Kamchatka and Alaska. In the north of the Atlantic, however, a still lower mean pressure obtains over a narrow belt stretching from Iceland to the south of Green- land, the normal at Stykkisholm in the north-west of Iceland being 29°385 inches, and at Ivigtut in Greenland 29-361 inches. This low average for Ivigtut is the lowest normal known, to occur any-where and at any season in the northern hemisphere, and it is significant that the place is immediately to the north of that part of the Atlantic where a considerable number of the storms which sweep over Europe have their origin, and where not a few of the storms which cross the Atlantic from America develop intensity.

It has been secn that the highest mean pressure occurs near the centre of the largest extent of land; but as regards the two oceans the lowest pressure is met with in the northern division of the Atlantic, which is the lesser ocean. An inspection of fig. 14 shows, however, that the low-pressure area of the Atlantic is bounded to southward by systems of much higher pressures than are to be found in the Pacific. The result of this arrangement is that much stronger winds blow northward over the Atlantic and round upon Iceland; and, as these more quickly advance into colder latitudes, there is thus a greater and more frequent concentration of vapour

and lowering of the barometer in the north of the Atlantic. The:

heavy rainfall of north-western Europe may be referred to as con- firming this view. ;

A belt of low pressure passes through the equatorial regions quite round the globe. This marks the well-known region of calms towards which on either

hand the trade winds blow. In the Atlantic it lics quite north of the equator even in January, when the sun's course is farthest to southward, and it lies nearly parallel with the equator. On the other hand, in the Indian Ocean the position of the line of lowest pressure is to the south of the equator and not parallel with it, but taking a slanting course from near the north of Madagascar towards Sumatra, thence towards the low pres- sure which prevails at this season in Australia ; its course is then a little to northwards, and crosses the Pacific to the central regions of South America. Its path is thus a devious one, being north of the equator only in the eastern part of the Pacific and in the Atlantic, but elsewhere to the south of it, being drawn farthest southward when under the inflnence of the regions of low pressure which now occupy central Australia, central and southern Africa, and central South America. In this trough of barometric depression nearly all the tropical storms of the Indian Ocean have their origin.

There are several important modifications of the isobaric lines as originally published. In 1868 the region of lowest pressure in the northern hemisphere in winter was represented as extending from Iceland to north-eastward ; now the area of lowest pressure is seen to extend from Iccland soutli-westward to Greenland. In connexion with this point Captain Hoffmeyer discussed the weather of the North Atlantic during several winter months, and published the results in 1878, which conclusively showed that the meteorology of Greenland and Iceland exerts on the distribution of atmospheric pressure a powerful influence not before properly recog- nized, resulting in the mean minimum of pressure being localized distinctly to the south-west of Iceland, and that in addition to this minimum there are two subordinate minima, one in Davis Straits and the other in the Arctic Ocean midway between Jan Mayen and the Lofoten Isles. The investigation further established the fact that, when any particular one of these three minima plays an important part, the other two either do not appear at all or occupy quite a subordinate place, and that according as one or other of these minima of pressure predominates so is the character of the weather, as regards mildness or severity, of the winter of north- western Hurope and regions surrounding the North Atlantic. As regards the British Islands, the displacement of the minima to west- ward of the position shown in fig. 14 means milder winter weather, whereas a position more in the direction of the north of Norway means severer winter weather.

‘Another change implying important consequences is seen in the United States, where, instead of one, two distinct centres of maximum pressure occur, or rather the high pressure of the western and central States is separated from that of the south- eastern States by a region of lower pressure occupying the region of the Mississippi States. Professor Loomis first drew attention to this peculiarity in 1879 in an inquiry into the’ distribution. of pressure over the United States, and established the fact that there are two distinct areas of high pressure, the larger having its centre in Utah, and the less overspreading the greater portion of the south- eastern and southern States, and that these two areas of high pres- sure are clearly separated from each other by a broad extensive region of lower pressure stretching in a south-western direction from the region of the great lakes to western Texas. The reason assigned by Professor Loomis is undouhtedly correct, that the relatively low normal pressure of the Mississippi States is due to the fact that the path usually taken by the barometric minima of

American storms in the earlier part of their course is from Texas to the lakes. Since, on the other hand, the centres of comparatively few storms, with their low barometer readings, cross the southern and south-eastern States, the normal winter pressure is higher there than it is along the Mississippi. ’

Another important modification occurs in India, where the isobar. of 30 inches is deflected to the south-east toward Madras and thence towards the north-east to near Akyab in Arakan. This remarkable defiexion well shows the important influence exerted on the course of the isobar by large well-defined sheets of water and” extensive tracts of land. The distribution of pressure here indicated, by which south of lat. 22° the normal pressure is considerably higher in the east than in the west of India, has, through the agency of the winds resulting from it, the most intimate and vital bearings on the distribution of the winter rains and temperature over con- — siderable portions of India ; and the same relations hold, but in a degrec still more striking, in the meteorology of Ceylon.

The remarkable effect in interrupting or changing the course of — the isobars is particularly well illustrated by the lines in the region of the Aral, Caspian, and Black Seas. As the point is of no small importance in meteorology, and is best illustrated by the Mediter-

G 0 zo

Fia. 15,—Isobars of Europe for January.

ranean and the countries to the north of it, we subjoin a map of this part of Europe (fig. 15), showing the normal pressure with greater distinctness and fulness than could be shown on fig. 14, the isobars being drawn for every half-tenth of an inch.

Here we see two distinct areas of. high pressure, the one in Hungary and the other in the Peninsula, where the normal pressure exceeds 30°20 inches. The latter is the larger of the two, and may be regarded as the prolongation of the region of high pressure which characterizes the Atlantic immediately to the south-west at this” season. The high-pressure area included within the isobar 30°15 inches is of peculiar interest. In the Peninsula it covers a pret broad areca, but to the north-east it contracts to a narrow neck between the Bay of Biscay and the Gulf of Lyons, and again expands to north-eastward covering the distance from Carlsruhe to Modena, its prolongation eastward being there somewhat suddenly inter- rupted. At some distance to the eastward the second region of high pressure is met with, which is properly a part of the high pressure that overspreads the interior of the Old Continent in the winter, months, its western limit being the isobar of 80°15 inches, which passes round by Pinsk, Cracow, Vienna, Laibach and the upper southern slopes of the basin of the Danube, Sebastopol, and thence southward in the direction of Cyprus.

The position of the latter of these regions of high pressure is approximately midway between the south coasts of Asia Minor and the Baltic. In other words, its position occupies the interior of this part of the Old Continent ; ma it is instructive to note that the position of the Black Sea and the Greek archipelago in the south portion of this region pushes the isobar of 80°15

inches a good deal to northward. The position of the region of high pressure in the Peninsula, France, and Switzerland is also decidedly inland. It does not, however, exactly occupy the middle space of the land lying between the Mediterranean and the North Sea, owing n0 doubt to the circumstance that the very steep barometric gradient from France to Iceland greatly lowers the pressure over the whole of the northern half of France. It follows that the abnormally high pressure which so remarkably characterizes the interior of the Old Continent during the cold months of winter is represented, though in a greatly reduced form, westwards through the central districts of that continent. ;

These two regions of high pressure are separated from each other

by a large area of comparatively low pressure overspreading the | of Great Britain from the Isle of Wight to Cape Wrath. This

greater portion of the Mediterranean Sea, —marked off in fig. 15 by | shows on a comparatively small seale the influence of the land in

| the isobar of 30°10 inches, within which ag id is everywhere less

than 30°10 inches. This region includes an area of still lower

ressure within the isobar of 30°05 inches, bounded by Sicily,

Corfu, Athens, and Crete. Hence the singularly low pressure which

characterizes the northern part of the Atlantic at this season has its

analogue in the south of Europe, which is ‘unquestionably due to

the higher temperature and larger humidity of the climates of southern Europe which they owe to the Mediterranean.

It is deserving of special notice that, while the increase of the | normal pressure of January from Genoa to Geneva is 0°081 inch, | it is only 0°021

inch from Trieste to Riva, and that to the north of the Adriatic as far as latitude 50° pressure is considerably lower

than obtains to the west and east of that region. An examination of the daily weather maps of Europe shows that not unfrequently the storms of north-western Europe on advancing as far to east- ward as Denmark seem to connect themselves in some degree with Mediterranean storms prevailing at the time through a north and sonth prolongation ofa os of low pressures. The comparative frequency with which this occurs is probably occasioned by the general drift to eastward of the atmosphere of Europe, considered as a whole, taken in connexion with the high mountainous ridge which bounds the Adriatic on its eastern side, from which it follows that the air overspreading the deep basin of the Adriatic is often

‘highly saturated with vapour, and this highly saturated air is drawn northwards through central Europe when north-western storms of Europe with low barometric depression centres pass across Denmark and the Baltic. Thus the low normal pressure to the north of the Adriatic, separating the two regions of high pressure to the east and west of it,,is in some respects analogous to the low normal pressure of the Mississippi valley, which separates the higher normal pressures of the Rocky Mountains and of the south- eastern of the United States.

The influence of land and water respectively in the cold season of the year is well shown in fig. 16, which represents for every 0°020 inch the normal pressure over the. British Islands in January, drawn from means calculated for two hundred and ninety-five stations.

It is in the winter months that the isobars of the British Islands

erowd most closely together, and in accordance therewith strong

j winds are then most prevalent. The crowding of the isobars ; reaches the maximum in January, forming what is probably the i steepest mean monthly barometric gradient that occurs at any . season anywhere on the globe. The point, however, to which attention is here drawn is the remarkable influence of St George’s

| Channel and the Irish Sea in diminishing the pressures as they Fic. 16 — Isobars of the British Islands for January.

‘ cross these seas, and of the land in increasing the pressure, which

is seen in the curves occupying approximately the central districts | raising the normal pressure, and of the sea in lowering it, during the f

/

> (ae: eax: °° ie

| ae

. : = a8 tow |g

| ae si oe he

ere A ere

Rt ey aay

NA ae

Y,

\

FALL ER OR

mul] | 71

ALN |

qe ERRTINY

3)

ee PET f

af

BO GO _ & 60 Gis) 100 120 Fra. 17.—July Isobars of the Globe and Prevailing Winds, othe months of the year, just as is seen on the grand scale in central Mean Atmospheric Pressure in July (fig. 17).—In this month the theria and the north of the Atlantic. physical conditions are the reverse of what obtains in January, the

lg ee ee effects of the influence of the sun on the temperature and humidity ee Journal of Scot. Meteorological Society, vol. vi. pp. 4-21. of the atmosphere rising to the maximum in the northern and fall-

ing to the minimum in the southern hemisphere. With the solar conditions reversed, a comparison of figs. 14 and 17 shows that the distribution of atmospheric pressure in July is, considered in a broad sense, the reversc of what takes place in January. j

In the sduthern hemisphere atmospheric pressure during the winter season is above the general average of 30 inches between lat. 10° and 40° 8. This belt of high pressure encircles the globe, and embraces four regions where pressure rises considerably above this general high average. These regions are 10 South Africa, about lat. 20°, where it rises to a little above 30°20 inches; in Australia, where it rises on the Murray river very nearly to 30°20 inches ; in South America, where in the basin of the La Plata, about lat. 30°, it rises to 30°13 inches; and in the ocean to westwards, where it reaches 30°02 inches. The point to be noted with respect to the position of these centres of high pressure at this season is that they occur over surfaces between latitudes 20° and 36°. As compared with January, pressure in July over nearly the whole of this broad belt of the southern hemisphere is about two-tenths of an inch higher, which is the simple result of season. A comparison of January and July shows that this large aecession to the pressure of the southern hemisphere is accompanied by an extraordinary dimi- nution of pressure over the continents of the northern hemisphere.

Now, just as the greatest excess of pressure during the winter of the northern hemisphere occurs in the continent of Asia, so the greatest

diminution of pressure in the summer months takes place in thesame continent. ‘The position, however, of these two extremes is far from being in the same region or even near each other. In the Old Continent the maximum occurs in the valley of the upper Amur, where, at Nertchinsk, the normal pressure in January is about 30°500 inches ; whercas the lowest normal pressure in July is 29°412 inches, and occurs, so far as observation enables us to locate it, at Jacobabad on the west side of the basin of the Indus. The difference of these two normals is 1‘188 inch ; and over no inconsider- able portion of central Asia the normal pressure of July is an inch less than that of January. In other words, the influence of the sun in summer as exerted on the temperature and aqueous vapour of the atmosphere and atmospheric movements resulting therefrom is so powerful as to remove a thirtieth part of the whole mass of the air from this extensive region.

The large extension in recent years of good meteorological stations over the Russian and Indian empires enables us to lay down with much greater precision than formerly the lines of pressure. Of the changes indicated by the new isobars, the most important perhaps is the position of the region of minimum pressure in Asia, which is now scen to occupy the basin of the Indus, and thence stretches over a somewhat broad region to westward ncarly as far as the head of the Persian Gulf. The point is of no small importance in atmo- spheric physics, inasmuch as it places the region of least normal pressure in July as closc geographically to the region where at the time terrestrial temperature is highest as the region of highest normal pressure in January is situated with respect to the region where in that month terrestrial temperature is lowest in Asia.

The July isobars of India are of singular interest, and imply con- sequences of the utmost practical advantage to the empire. From Cutch southward the normal pressure is everywhere higher, and considerably so, along the whole of the west than it isin the east in the same latitudes, the difference being approximately half a tenth of aninch. This is represented on the map by the slanting of the isobars from north-west to south-east as they cross this part of India ; and it is to be noted that the east and west coasts of Ceylon show the same manner of distribution of the pressure. The consc- quence of this peculiarity in the distribution of the pressure is that the summer monsoon

blows more directly from the ocean over western and southern India than would have been the case if the isobars had lain due east and west, and thus probably precipitates in its course a more abundant rainfall over this part of the empire. But a more important consequence follows from the geographical distribution of the pressure over the valley of the Ganges. If the normal pressure there had diminished in the manner it does over India to the south of the Gangetic valley, the winds would have been south-westerly and the summer climate practically rainless. This, however, is not the case,~~but the normal pressure diminishes westwards along the valley of the Ganges, as the following mean July pressures will show :—Calcutta, 29°576 inches ; Patna, 29°535 inches ; Lucknow, 29°522 inches ; Roorkee, 29°505 inches ; and in crossing westward into the Punjab pressure falls still lower—to 29°439 inches at Mooltan and 29°412 inches at Jacobabad. Indeed pressure in July is 0°220 inches lower at Jacobabad than at Sibsagar on the Brahmaputra, nearly in the same latitude. It necessarily follows from this distribution of the pressure that the summer mon~~ soon, which blows northward over the Bay of Bengal, is deflected into an E.S.E. wind which fills the whole valley of the Ganges distributing on its way a most generous rainfall over that magnifi- ecnt region. :

The influence of the land in lowering the pressure in summer is well illustrated by the course of the isobars over western Siberia

and Russia, where pressure is seen to fall relatively lowest along |

the middle line of the Old Continent. In this connexion it is interesting to note the course of the isobar of 29°90 inches over that part of Europe where the breadth of the land is considerably increased—between the Baltic and Constantinople. In contradis- tinction to this the influence of the Aral, Caspian, and Black Seas in maintaining a higher pressure appears in the remarkable pro- longation eastward of the isobars of higher pressure over the region of these seas, being in striking contrast to the lower pressures which prevail to the north and south.

The lowering of the normal pressure is very decided in the inland regions of Spain, North Italy, and Scandinavia. The cffect is most strongly seen in Spain, the largest and compactest of these regions, Thus, while the normal pressure diminishes between Lisbon and Barcelona from 30°086 to 30°048 inches, the sea-level pressure at Madrid falls nearly to 30°000, and the pressure at Saragossa and Valladolid is nearly as low. This lowering of the pressure over the interior influences materially its summer climate. As remarkable an illustration of the principle as can be pointed to anywhere is seen in the north of Italy; for, while the normal pressure at Moncalieri is 29°941 inches, at Genoa on the coast the relatively high normal of 29°992 inches is maintained, the distance of the two places being about 40 miles. To the east pressure rises to 29°970 inches at Venice, and to westward to 30°023 inchesat Geneva. Over Scandi- navia, along the west coast from the Arctic circle southward, the normal pressure equals or exceeds 29°80 inches, the variation being comparatively small ; and along the coast from the head of the Gulf of Bothnia to the south-east of Sweden pressure also exceeds 29°80 inches, and the increase from north to south proceeds at a slow rate. In, however, the strictly inland districts to the north-east of Christiania, which lie immediately to the east of the Scandinavian mountains, and sheltered by that lofty range from the winds of the Atlantic, pressure is considerably lower than it isalong the east and west coasts of the peninsula. Owing to this peculiar distribution of the pressure, the winds which necessarily result from it give a much finer summer climate to the south-east of Norway and to the strictly inland part of Sweden than would otherwise be the case.

The remarkable curving northward of the isobar of 29°80 inches so as to include Lapland within it points probably to the influence of the White Sea and the wonderful ie system of Lapland in maintaining a higher summer pressure over that country, by which the northerly winds that blow towards the low-pressure region of Central Asia, to the serious deterioration of the summer climate of northern Sibcria, do not extend so far to westward as Lapland.

The distribution of the normal pressure over North America is quite analogous to what prevails over Asia, but, the continent being less, the diminution of pressure in the interior is also correspond- ingly less. The

highest normal pressure, 30°077 inches, is found in the south-east in Florida, and the lowest, 29°780 inches, in Utah, the difference being thus 0°297 inch. Another region of relatively high pressure is in the north-western States and British Columbia to the north; the maximum, near the mouth of the Columbia river, reaches 80°062 inches, being thus nearly as high as what oecurs in Florida. These two regions are merely extensions of important high-pressure areas which at this season are highly characteristic features of the meteorology of the North Pacific and North Atlantic respectively.

Of these two regions of high pressure the one overspreading the Atlantic between the United States and Africa is the more striking, being not only the region where pressure is highest anywhere on the globe during the months of June, July, and August, but where the normal pressure reaches the highest point attained at any season over the ocean. The highest point reached by the normal pressure over the land at any season occurs, as has been pointed out, near the centre of Asia, or approximately in the middle region of the largest continuous land surface on the globe during the coldest months of the year. On the other hand, the highest pressure over the ocean occurs during the warmest months of the year, and not over the largest water surface, but in the middle regions of the North Atlantie, where the breadth is only about half that of the water surface of the North Pacific.

From the essential differences between these two sets of pheno- mena it may be inferred that the extraordinarily high pressure which is so marked a feature of the meteorology of Central Asia during the cold months of the year is a direct consequence of the lowering of the temperature of the land of Asia and of the atmo- sphere resting on it during the time of the year when the effects of solar radiation are at the annual minimum, and of terrestrial radia- tion at the annual maximum. But the determination of the place and time of highest pressure over the ocean must be regarded as indirectly brought about. The physical conditions under which it occurs are these :—it happens (1) at the time of the year when the earth presents the largest surface of land to the sun, and (2) over that part of the occan which is most completely surrounded by these highly heated land surfaces. This high summer pressure of the Atlantic has its origin in the upper currents of the atmosphere.

Mean Atmospheric Pressure for the Year.—The distribution of the annual atmospheric pressure may be considered as representing

the sums of the influences directly and indirectly at work throughout the year in inereasing or diminishing the pressure of the atmosphere. There are two regions of high pressure, the one north aud the other south of the equator, which pass completely round the globe as broad belts of high pressure. ‘The belt of high pressure in the southern hemisphere lies nearly parallel to the equator, and is of nearly uniform breadth throughout; but the belt north of the equator has a very irregular outline, and shows great differences in its breadth and its inclination to the equator. ‘These irregularities wholly depend on the peculiar distribution of land and water which obtains in the northern hemisphere.

These two zones of high pressure enclose between them the com-

paratively low pressure of the tropies, through the centre of which runsa narrower belt of still lower pressure, towards which the trade- winds on either hand blow. Considered in a broad sense, there are only three regions of low pressurc, the equatorial one just referred to, and one round cach pole bounded by or contained within the zones of high pressure just described. The most remarkable of these, so far as it is known, is the region of low pressure about the south pole, which remains low throughout the year, playing the principal réle in the wind systems of the Antarctic zone, in its heavy snowfall and rainfall, and in the enormous ice- bergs which form so striking a feature of the water of the Southern Ocean. * The depression around the north pole contains within its area two distinet eentres of still lower pressure, the one filling the northern part of the Atlantic and the other that of the Pacific. Of these two the low-pressure area round Iceland is the deeper, and is probably oceasioned by the steeper barometrie gradients and stronger winds which prevail over the North Atlantic. The broad equatorial zone of low pressure also contains two distinct regions characterized by still lower pressures. The larger of the two stretches agross southern Asia from Assam to the head of the Persian Gulf, and is entirely due to the very low pressures which form so marked a feature in the summer meteorology of that part of Asia. The regions of the middle Indus and upper Ganges occupy

the centre of this low- pressure area, where normal pressure falls short of 29°80 inches. The second area of lowest equatorial pressure is in the centre of Afriea.

It may be here pointed out that the whole of these areas of low mean annual pressure possess the common characteristic of an excessive amount of moisture in the atmosphere. The Arctic and Antarctic zones of low pressure, and the equatorial Loma reauze zone generally, may be regarded as all but wholly occasioned by the com- paratively large amount of vapour in their atmosphere. As regards the region of low pressure of southern Asia in summer, it is remarkable that, whilc the eastern half which overspreads the valley of the Ganges is characterized by a moist atmosphere and large rainfall, the western half of it is singularly dry and practically rain- less, and that the central portion of this remarkable depression oeeupies a region where at the time the climate is one of the driest and hottest anywhere to be found on the globe. Hence, while the vapour is the more important of the disturbing influences at work in the atmosphere, the temperature also plays no incouspicuous part direetly in destroying atmospheric equilibrium, from which result winds, storms, and many other atmospheric changes.

The Prevailing Winds of the Globe.—If atmospheric pressure were equal in all parts of the earth we should have the physical conditions of a stagnant atmosphere. Such, however, is not the case. Let there be produced a concentration of aqueous vapour over a particular region, or let one region show a higher temperature than what prevails around it, then from the different densities, and consequently different pressures thereby produced, the equilibrium of the atmosphere is destroyed, and, as might be expected from the laws of aerial fluids, move- ments of the air, or winds, set in to restore the equili- brium. Now every one of the isobaric maps we have given, as well as every isobaric map which has been made from recorded observations, indicates very considerable disturbance of the equilibrium at the surface of the earth. All observation shows that the prevailing winds of any region at any season of the year are simply the expression of the atmospheric movements which result from the dis- turbance of the equilibrium of the atmosphere indicated by the isobaric maps for that season and region.

All winds may be regardedas caused directly by differences of atmospheric pressure, just as the flow of rivers is caused by differences of level, the motion of the air and the motion of the water being both referable to gravitation. The wind

blows from a region of higher towards a region of lower

to the south of it §.E. winds.

pressure,—in other words from where there is a surplus to where there is a deficiency of air; and this takes place whether the differences of pressure be measurable by the barometer, as is generally the case, or not readily measur- able, as in the case of sea breezes, squalls, and sudden gusts of wind which are of short duration.

So far as is known, differences of atmospheric pressure, and consequently all winds, originate in changes occurring either in the temperature or the humidity of the air over restricted regions. Thus, if two regions contiguous to each other come to be of unequal temperature, the air of the

‘warmer. region, being specifically lighter, will ascend, and

the heavier air of the colder region will flow in below to take its place. Of this class of winds the sca and land breezes are the best examples. Again, if the air of one region comes to be more highly charged with aqueous vapour than the air of surrounding regions, the air of the more humid region being lighter will ascend, while the heavier air of the drier regions will flow in below and take its place. Since part of the vapour will be condensed into cloud or rain as it ascends, heat is thereby disengaged, and the equilibrium still further disturbed. In this way originate gales, storms, tempests, hurricanes, and all the more violent commotions of the atmosphere, except some of the forms of the whirlwind, such as dust storms, in the production of which very great differences of temperature are more immediately and exclusively concerned.

The Trade-Winds.—From fig. 14, giving the isobarics for January, it is seen that atmospheric pressure in the Atlantic is lower near the equator than it is to north and south of it; and the arrows indicate that to the north of the tract of lowest pressure N.E. winds prevail and These are the well- known N.E. and S8.E. trade-winds, which thus blow from regions of high pressure towards the tract of lower pressure situated midway between them. The trade-winds do not blow directly to where the lowest pressure is, but ina slant- ing direction at an angle of about halfa degree. The devia- tion from the direct course is due to the influence of the rotation of the earth on its axis from west to east,—an influence to which all winds and all currents of the ocean are subject.

In virtue of this rotation, objects on the earth's surface at the equator are carried round towards the east at the rate of about 17 miles a minute. On receding from the equator, however, this rate of velocity is being continually diminished, so that at 60° N. lat. it is only about 84 miles a minute, and at the poles nothing. From this it follows that a wind blowing along the earth's surface in the direc- tion of the equator is constantly arriving at places which have a greater eastward velocity than itself. As the wind thus lags behind, these places come up, as it were, against it, the result being an east wind. Since, therefore, the wind north of the equator is under the influence of two forces—one, the low pressure near the equator, drawing it southwards, and the other, the rotation of the earth, deflecting it eastwards—it will, by the law of the composi- tion of forces, take an intermediate direction, and blow from north-east. For the same reason, south of the equator the south is deflected into a south-east wind.

In the Atlantic the north trades prevail between latitudes 7° and 30° N., and the south trades between lati- tudes 3° N. and 25° S. These limits are not stationary, but follow the sun, being farthest to the south in February and to the north in August. The tract of low pressure between these wind systems is named the region of calms, owing to the calm weather which often prevails there, and it is also characterized by the frequent occurrencé of heavy rains. This region of calms varies its position with that of the sun, reaching its most northern limit, lat. 11° N.,

in August, and its most southern, lat. 1° N., in February. Its breadth varies from 3° to 8°, and it lies generally parallel to the equator. It is to be noted that, in the Atlantic, the region of calms is at all seasons north of the equator.

North and south trades also prevail in the Pacific Ocean, separated by a region of calms, which would appear, how-

ever, to be of less breadth and to be less clearly defined |

than is the region of calms in the Atlantic. In the eastern portion of the Pacific the region of calms lies at all seasons to the north of the equator, but in the western division it is considerably south of the equator during the summer months of the southern hemisphere, this southerly position being in all likelihood occasioned by the extraordinarily high pressure in Asia in its relations to the low pressure in the interior of Australia at this season. During the summer months of the northern hemisphere the region of calms

wholly disappears from the Indian Ocean and from the.

western part of the Pacific Ocean, there being then an unbroken diminishing pressure from the latitude of Mauritius and Central. Australia northwards as far as the low pressure of Central Asia.

the higher limits of the north and south trades. Except in the Pacific, where, owing to the greater breadth of that ocean, they spread over a considerable extent, these regions appear but in circumscribed patches, such as characterize the meteorology of the North and South Atlantic about latitudes 26° to 36°. Of these regions of calms the most important is that marked off by the high pressure in the North Atlantic, between the United States and Africa. This is the region of the Sargasso Sea, where the weather is characterized by calms and variable winds, and the ocean by its comparatively still waters. These are known to seamen as the “horse latitudes,” and. are essentially different from the equatorial region of calms. The latter, as has been stated, is the region of low pressure at the meeting of the north and south trades, where the climate is distinguished for its general sunlessness and heavy rainfall. On the other hand, the calm regions in the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans about the tropics have an atmospheric pressure

abnormally high, clear skies, and the weather generally sunny and bright, with occasional squalls.

Numerous observations made in all parts of the globe establish the fact that, while the surface winds within the tropics are directed towards the equatorial region of calms

in such a manner that the general intertropical movements.

of the atmosphere or prevailing winds are easterly, the prevailing winds of the north and south temperate zones are westerly. The westing of these great aerial currents is due to the same cause that gives easting to the trade-winds, viz., the rotation of the earth round its axis. For, as an aerial current advances into higher latitudes, it is constantly arriving at regions having a less rotatory velocity than itself ; it thus outstrips them and leaves them behind ; in other words, it blows over these places as a westerly wind. . While, however, the general prevalence of westerly winds has been established over the extratropical regions of Europe, Asia, Africa, America, and Australia, the direc- tions which in different seasons and at different places are actually found to prevail often differ very widely from west. An examination of the winds at one hundred and fifteen places pretty well distributed over the northern hemisphere reveals the instructive fact that almost every place shows two maximum directions from which winds blow more frequently than from the other directions, and that one of these two directions shows a considerable excess over the other. Thus, for example, the following are, on a

Vr Tho Rh On ee &

[PREVAILING WINDs,

twenty years' average, the numbcr of days at Greenwich each wind prevails during the year:—N., 41; N.E., 49; E,, 23; 8.E., 21; S., 34; 8.W., 103; W., 38; N.W., 2450 calms, 32. Hence 8.W. and N.E. winds are there more prevalent than winds from any other direction, and of these two winds the greater maximum direction is 8.W. If the two maximum directions be sorted into groups, then the greater maximum direction occurs as follows :—

from 8.8.W. to W. at 47 places » WW, Soe . Benes 7 aie | ee Oe » ee. See and the other maximum direction is from 8.8.W. to W. at 20 places » aN. 3, ee » NaN. ,, 2G, 22 ” . Sein + ee.

This result of observation, so different from what was long accepted as being in accordance with the gencrally received

‘ theory of the movements of the atmosphere, teaches the

important lesson that the region towards which the extra- tropical winds of the northern hemisphere are directed is

| not the region of the north pole. Regions of light and variable winds and calms occur at |

Prevailing Winds in January.—On examining fig. 14,

‘ which shows the distribution of atmospheric pressure in

January, it is seen that pressure is abnormally low over the northern portion of the Atlantic—the lowest occurring between Iceland and South Greenland —from which it rises as we proceed in a 8.W. direction towards America, in a S. direction over the Atlantic, and in a 8.E. and E, direction over Europe and Asia. Now what influence has this remarkable atmospheric depression on the prevailing winds over this large and important part of the earth’s surface? The arrows in the figure, which indicate the prevailing winds, and which have been laid down from observations, answer this question.

At stations on the east side of North America the arrows show a decided predominance of north-west winds; at the more northern places the general direction is more northerly, whereas farther south it is more westerly. In the Atlantic between America and Great Britain, in the south of England, in France and Belgium, the direction is nearly 8.W. In Ireland and Scotland it is W.S.W.; in Denmark and the north-west of Russia 8.8. W. ; from St Petersburg to Tobolsk §.W.; on the west of Norway generally 8.S.E.; and in Greenland, the north of Iceland, and about Spitzbergen N.E. Hence all the prevailing winds in January over this extensive portion of the globe may be regarded as the simple expression of the difference of atmospheric pressure

which prevails over the different parts of the region. In truth the whole appears to flow vorticosely, or in an in-moving spiral course, towards the region of low pressure lying to the south-west of Iceland, and extending eastward over the Arctic Sea north of Russia. The only marked changes in these directions of the wind thus broadly sketched out are the deflexions caused by the various mountain systems which lie, so to speak, embedded in these vast aerial currents; of these the winds in the south of Norway afford excellent illustra- tions.

The influence which this peculiar distribution of the pressure over the north of the Atlantic exercises im . absolutely determining the winter climates of the respective countries is most instructive. It is to this low pressure, which draws over the British Islands W.S.W. winds from the warm waters of the Atlantic, that the open, mild, and, it must be added, rainy winters of these islands are due. The same region of low pressure gives Russia and Western Siberia their severe winters; and it is the same consideration that fully explains the enormous deflexion of the isothermal lines from Norway eastwards and gouth-

eastwards over the Old Continent. J’inally, the same low pressure draws over British America and the United States, by the N.W. winds which it induces, the intensely dry cold air-current of the Arctic regions. At Portland, Maine,

which is swept by these cold north-westerly winds, the — normal temperature in January is 23°°6, whereas at,

Corunna, on the coast of Spain, in nearly the same latitude, where south-westerly winds from the Atlantic prevail, the mean temperature of the month is 49°-1, or 25°°5 higher.

The region of low atmospheric pressure in the north of the Pacific is accompanied by prevailing winds over the region embraced by it and by climatic effects in all respects similar to the above. In Vancouver Island the prevailing winds in January are §.W., at Sitka E.S.E., on Great Bear Lake E.N.E., in Alaska N.E., in Kamchatka N.N.E., and in Japan N.W. the wintcr

climate of Vancouver and adjoining regions is mild and humid, and that of the north-east of Asia dry and intensely cold.

On the other hand, abnormally high pressure rules over the continent of Asia at this season, and as regards this region of high pressure the arrows represent the winds as blowing outwards from it in all directions. Over the interior of Asia, where the highest normal pressures are, observations show a marked prevalence of calms and light winds, but around this central region the prevailing winds in January are—at Calcutta N., at Hong-Kong E.N.E., at Peking N.W., on the Amur W.N.W., S.E. at Nijni- kolynisk and S.S.W. at Ustjansk (in the north of Siberia), and at Bogoslovsk S.W. Hence from this extensive region, where pressure is abnormally high, or where at this season there is a large surplus of air, the prevailing winds flow outwards in all directions towards the lower pressure which surrounds it. Owing to the excessive dry- ness of the air of Central Asia, terrestrial radiation is less obstrueted there than anywhere else on the globe, and consequently the temperature falls very low, the mean of January at Werchojansk being — 55°°8, which is the lowest mean monthly temperature known to occur on the earth's surface. And, since the winds blow outwards from the dry cold climates of the interior, temperatures are low, even on the coasts. Of this China affords good illustrations. Thus the mean January temperature of Pcking is 22°°7 and of Zi-ka-Wei, near Shanghai, 35°-4, whereas at Corfu and Alexandria the normal temperatures for January are respectively 50°°9 and 58°°0, or 28°:2 and 22°°6 higher than in corresponding latitudes on the coast of China.

The winds of the United States in winter, taken in connexion with the peculiar distribution of pressure already described, are very interesting. There are two regions of high pressure, one in the south-eastern States and the other and larger one in the States around Utah; and between these there is interposed a trough of lower pressure extend- ing from Chicago to the south-west of Texas. On the western side of this depression the winds are north- westerly, but to the east of it they become W., W.S.W., and in some places §.W., and again on nearing the Atlantic seaboard they become north-westerly. In connexion with

In accordance with these winds |

the region of higher pressure in the west, the prevailing |

winds are seen to flow outward from it. pressure diminishes everywhere to southward of a line drawn from the Canaries to Bermuda, thence westward in

The normal |

nearly the same latitude to Texas, and then to west-north- |

west to San Francisco. The tract of lowest pressure Stretches from the basin of the Amazon in the direction of

the isthmus of Panama in about latitude 8° N., and thence |

1s continued westward for a considerable distance into the Pacific in nearly the same latitude. It follows from this distribution of the pressure that the north trades in a more or less modified form prevail over South America to the

north of the Amazon, and in the Pacific to the north of lat. 8° N., probably as far to westward as long. 150° W.

The low-pressure systems which prevail during the summer months in South America and South Africa have each its corresponding system of winds all round. It is, however, in Australia, as being the most compact and isolated continent, that the influence of the summer sun in lowering the pressure is best illustrated. In that continent the lowest pressure occurs in the region situated about midway between the north coast and the tropic of Capricorn, over which the normal pressure does not exceed 29°80 inches. Further, everywhere in Australia pressure diminishes from the coast on advancing upon the inland districts. It follows from this disposition of the pressure that all round the island the prevailing winds in summer blow from the sea towards the interior ; and accordingly it is in these months that the

greater part of the rain falls. From the low pressure of the interior southwards to Bass's Straits pressure rises continuously, the increase in the normal over this space being about 0°200 inch. To north- ward it also rises continuously to beyond the north of China, the increase on this side being about ? of an inch. In this case the greater part of the increase occurs over the continent, the rate of increase from the north of Australia to the Philippine Islands being only about the rate of increase which obtains southward towards Bass's Straits. It will be shown when the subject of the rainfall is examined that it is the relative excess of these high pressures, the one in the south of Australia and the other in the south-east of Asia, that determines the position of the area of low pressure in Australia in particular years, and with that position the degree and extent to which the whole of the northern portion of Australia is watered by the rainfall. Thus, when pressure is more than usually high in the south-east of Asia, and either low or not ex- cessive in the south of Australia, then the low-pressure region is pushed farther southward into the interior, and with it the rainfall spreads inland over a wider area and to a greater depth.

Prevailing Winds mn July.—In the winter of the southern hemisphere, the geographical distribution of pressure is exactly the reverse in Australia of what obtains during the summer months. Everywhere all round it increases on advancing from the coast into inland districts. The lowest pressure, about 30°00 inches, occurs on the north coast, and the highest over the basin of the Murray river and its affluents, where it rises generally to 30°18 inches. On the south coast it is generally about 30°12 inches, falling, however, at Gabo Island, in the extreme south-east, to 30°050 inches, and to 29°836 in the south of New Zealand. From the Murray river the diminution of pressure is continuous to the north, even to the low pressure of Central Asia. From this arrangement of the pressure, the prevailing winds blow from the interior towards the surrounding ocean all round Australia, with the single exception of the extreme south-west of the continent, where the prevailing winds are south-westerly, being here essenti- ally an outflow of the high pressure which overspreads the Indian Ocean to the westward. As these §.W. winds are from the ocean, the rainfall at Perth in July is fully 6 inches, and it is high over south-western districts of West Australia. The prevailing winds round Australia are S. I. on the north coast, 8.W. at Brisbane, W.N.W. at Sydney, N. at Melbourne, N.E. at Adelaide. These all

represent an outflow from the high-pressure regions of the interior modified by the influence of the. earth's rotation, and, in correspondence with the reversal of the distribution of the pressure, are directions the reverse of the prevailing winds of January.

In July the central and southern parts of Asia are

highly heated by the summer sun, and, besides, the rainfall over southern parts is excessive. Consequently atmospherie pressure is very low, being fully 0:40 inch lower in the Punjab than it is in the south of Ceylon. From the interior pressure rises continuously on advancing to the eastward, southward, westward, and northward, and from all these directions the prevailing winds of summer flow inwards upon the interior, and these bring rain or parching drought according to the vapour they bring from the occan they have traversed, and according as they advance into warmer or colder regions. The prevailing summer winds of Asia, being an inflow inwards upon the interior, have, gencrally speaking, exactly the reverse direction of that prevailing in winter.

The winds of Europe are mainly determined by the extraordinarily high pressure of the Atlantic in its relations to the low-pressure systems of Central Asia and Central Africa at this time. The winds in the Spanish Peninsula are north-west ; in the north of Africa they are northerly, and again north-westerly in Syria. The winds of the British Islands and western Europe have less southing and more northing than the prevailing winds of winter, and to the east of long. 40° E. they become decidedly north-west. It is to the Atlantic origin of these winds that the summer climates of these large and important regions owe the con- paratively large rainfall of this season, it being at this time that the rainfall reaches the annual maximum. The bear- ing of the low-pressure areas and mountain systems of the north of Italy and Scandinavia on the climates of these countries will be afterwards refcrred to.

The centre of lowest pressure in North America is over the central States about Utah, from which it rises all round, least to northward and most in south-easterly and north-westerly directions. In California N.W: winds necessarily blow in- wardsupon thiscentral low-pressure area; and, as these winds pass successively over regions the temperature of which con- stantly increases, the summer climate is rainless. On the other hand, southerly and south-easterly winds from the Gulf of Mexico blow up the western side of the basin of the Missis- sippi inwards upon the low-pressure area of the centre, de- positing in their course, in a rainfall more or less abundant, the moisture they have brought from the Gulf. To the north of lat 50°, and to westward of Hudson's Bay, the prevail- ing winds become easterly and north-easterly, distributing over Manitoba, Saskatchewan, and neighbouring regions, as they continue their westerly course towards the low- pressure area, the rainfall they have transported thither from the wide expanse of Hudson's Bay. An attentive examination of the arrows of fig. 17 shows that the prevail- ing winds over all the States to the east of the Mississippi river arc rather to be regarded as an outflow from the region of very high pressure over the Atlantic to south- eastward. Thus in Florida the winds are S.E., in the southern States §., and in the lake region, in the New Eng- land States, and on the Atlantic seaboard S.W. Since the origin of these winds is thus essentially oceanic, and since in their course northwards no mountain range erosses their path, the whole of this extensive region enjoys a large but by no means excessive rainfall, which, taken in connexion with the temperature, renders the summer climate of these States one of the best to be met with anywhere on the globe for the successful prosecution of agricultural industries.

The remarkable protrusion of high pressures from the southern hemisphere, where they are massed at this time of the year, northwards into the Atlantic is, as has already been referrcd to, one of the outstanding features of the metcorology of the summer months of the northern hemi- sphere. In the central area of this large region the climate is remarkable for its prevailing calms, light winds, occasional

METEBEORQLOGY

_ gravitation.

squalls, and elear skies. From this comparatively calm_ space the wind blows outwards in all directions towards and in upon the surrounding regions of low pressure. These winds, owing to the high temperature, clear skies, and strong sunshine of the region from which they issue, earry with them a great amount of vapour near the surface, by which to a large extent the north of South America, the east of North America, the greater part of Europe, and a large por- tion of Africa are watered. The prevailing winds over this region are further interesting, not merely from the striking illustration they give of the intimate relation of the winds to the distribution of the pressure, but as being of no small importance in determining the best routes to be taken over this great highway of commerce, and the more so inasmuch as the currents of the ocean are coincident with these pre- vailing winds. .

In the Antarctic regions, or rather to the south of lat. 45° §., the normal atmospheric pressure is low at all seasons, there being a gradual diminution of pressure to 29°20 inches about lat. 60° S. Pressure is probably even still lower nearer to the south pole, as seems to be indi- cated by the observations made by Sir James C. Ross, and in the “Challenger” and other expeditions. Over this zone the prevailing winds are W.N.W. and N.W. This is the region of the “‘ brave west winds,” the “ roaring fortics ” of sailors, which play such an important part in navigation, and which determine that the outward voyage to Australia be round the Cape of Good Hope and thence eastward, and the homeward voyage eastward round Cape Horn, tlic globe being thus circumnavigated by the double voyage. That the general drift of these winds is inwards upon the south pole is strongly attested by the existence of the enormously thick wall of ice which engirdles these regions, from which are constantly breaking away the innumerable icebergs that cover the Southern Ocean, none of which is ever seen of a calculated thickness less than 1400 feet. The snow and rainfall which must take placc in the south polar regions for the formation of icebergs. of such a thickness must be peculiarly licavy, but not heavicr than might be expected from the strength and degree of satura- tion of the “roaring forties” which unceasingly precipitate their moisture over these regions.

To sum up:—so far as the prevailing winds are con- cerned, it has been shown that where pressure is high, that is to say, where there exists a surplus of air, out of such a region winds blow in all directions; and, on the other hand, where pressure is low, or where there is a deficiency of air, towards such a region winds blow from all directions in an in-moving spiral course. This outflow of air-currents from a region of high pressure upon a region of low pres- sure is reducible to a single principle, viz., the principle of Given as observed facts the differences of pressure, it is easy to state with a close approximation to accuracy what are the prevailing winds, before calculating the averages from the wind observations. Indeed so pre-dominating is the influence of gravitation where differences of pressure, however produced, exist that it may practically be regarded as the sole force immediately concerned in causing the movements of the atmosphere. If there he any other force or forces that set the winds in motion independently of the force called into play by differences of mass or pressure, their influence must be altogether insig- nificant as compared with gravitation.

It has been abundantly proved that the wind does not blow directly from the region of high towards that of low pressure, but that, in the northern hemisphere, the region of lowest pressure is to the left of the direction towards which the wind blows, and in the southern hemisphere to the right of it. This direction of the prevailing wind with reference to the pressure is in strict accordance with Buys

PREVAILING WINDS. |

Ballot's Law of the Winds, which may be thus expressed :~~— the wind neither blows round the centre of lowest pressure in circles, or as tangents to the concentric isobaric curves of storms or cyclones, nor does it blow directly towards the centre ; but it takes a direction intermediate, approaching, however, more nearly to the direction and course of the circular curves than of the radii to the centre. The angle formed by a line drawn to the centre of lowest pressure from the observer's position and a line drawn in the diree~~ tion of the wind is not a right angle, but an angle of from 60° to 80°.

From its importance in practical meteorology Buys Ballot's law may be stated in these two convenient forms. (1) Stand with your back to the wind,

and the centre of the depression or the place where the barometer is lowest will be to your left in the northern hemisphere, and to your right in the southern hemisphere. This is the rule for sailors by which they are guided to steer with refer- ence to storms. (2) Stand with the high barometer to your right and the low barometer to your left, and the wind will blow on your back, these positions in the southern hemisphere being reversed. It is in this form that the prevailing winds of any part of the globe may be worked out from the isobaric charts (figs. 14 and 17).

From the all-important consequences which flow from the geographical distribution of the pressure it is evident that the regions of low and of high normal pressure must be regarded as the true poles of the prevailing winds on the

earth's surface, towards which and from which the great.

movements of the atmosphere proceed. From the unequal distribution of land and water, and their diffcrent relations to solar and terrestrial radiation, it follows that the poles of pressure and of atmospheric movements are, just as happens with respect to the poles of temperature, very far from being coincident with the north pole. Thus during the winter months the regions to which the origin of the great prevailing winds of the northern hemisphere are to be referred are Central Asia, the region of the Rocky Mountains, and the horse latitudes of the Atlantic, and the regions towards and in upon which they flow are the low-pressure systems in the north of the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, and the tract of low pressure within the tropics towards which the trade-winds blow. In the summer inonths the reversed conditions of pressure-distri- bution then observed are attended with corresponding changes in the prevailing winds; and, generally speaking, if the south polar region be excepted, the poles of highest and lowest pressure and atmospheric movemeuts are at no time coincident with the north pole. It is this considera- tion which affords the true explanation why prevailing winds at so large a proportion of stations in the northern hemisphere do not blow in the dircctions in which true equatorial and polar winds should blow.

The causes which bring about an unequal distribution of the mass of the earth's atmosphere are mainly these two— the temperature and the moisture of the atinosphere con- sidered with respect to the geographical distribution

of land and water. Owing to the very different relations of land and water to temperature, as already stated, the summer temperature of continents greatly exceeds that of the ocean in the same latitudes. Hence the abnormally high temperature which prevails in the interior of Asia, Africa, America, and Australia during their respective summers, in consequence of which the air, becoming speci- fically lighter, ascends in enormous columns thousauds of miles in diameter. On arriving at the higher regions of the atmosphere it flows over neighbouring regions where

_ the surface temperature is lower, and thus the atmospheric pressure of the highly heated regions is diminished.

Surface winds set in all round to take the place of the

air removed from the continents by these ascending currents, and since these necessarily are chiefly winds from the ocean. they are highly charged with aqueous vapour, by the presence of which, and by the condensation of the vapour into cloud and rain, the pressure over continents at this season is still further and very largely diminished. Air charged with vapour is specifically lighter than when without the vapour; in other words, the more vaponr any given quantity of atmospheric air has in it the less is its specific gravity; and, further, the condensation of vapour in ascending air is the chief cause of the cooling effect being so much less than that which would be experienced by dry air. From these two principles, which were established by Dalton, Joule, and Sir William Thomson, it follows that the pressure of vapour in the air, and its condensation, exercise a powerful influence in diminishing the pressure. The great disturbing influences at work in the atmosphere are the forces called into play by its aqueous vapour ; and it is to these, co-operating with the forces called into play by the differences of temperature directly, that the low normal pressure of the continents during the summer is to be ascribed. The degree to which the lowering of the pressure takes place is, as was to havo been expected, greatest in Asia, the largest continent, and least in Australia, the smallest continent, while in America it is intermediate.

The influence of the aqueous vapour in diminishing the pressure is well seen in the belt of calms in the tropics between the north and the south trade-winds. Since these winds import into the belt of calms the vapour they have taken up from the sea on their way thither, the climate is characterized by a highly saturated atmosphere and heavy rains. Again the air in regions near the Atlantic contains much more vapour and is of a higher temperature during winter than is observed at places in the interior of con- tinents in the same latitudes. It-follows thus that the air over the north of the Atlantic and the regions adjoining is specifically lighter than in the regions which surround them. We have here therefore the physical conditions of an ascending current ; and it is plain that the strength of this current will not merely be kept up but increased by the condensations of the vapour into cloud and rain which take place within it, by which a higher temperature and a greater specific lightness are maintained at the surface of the earth and at various heights in the atmosphere than exist over surrounding regions at the same _ heights. Accordingly it is seen from the winter isobars that an enormous diminution of pressure occurs over these regions, and also over the north of the Pacific and the Antarctic, as compared with the continents.

Since, on the other hand, dry and cold air is specifically heavy, the winter isobars show that where temperature is low and the air very dry pressure is high. Of this Asia and North America are striking examples during December, January, and February, and Australia, South Africa, and South America during June, July, and August.

Since vast volumes of airare thus poured into the region where pressure is low without increasing that pressure, and vast volumes flow out of the region where pressure is high without diminishing that pressure, it necessarily follows that the volumes of air poured into the region of low normal pressure do not accumulate over that region, but must somehow escape away into other regions, and that the volumes of air which flow out from the region of high normal pressure must have their place supplied by fresh accessions of air poured in from above. That the same law of relation observed between sca-level pressures and surface winds obtains between pressures at different heights and winds at the same heights is simply a necessary inference. We are therefore justified in expecting that

ascending eurrents will continue their ascent till a height is attained at which the pressure of the air composing the currents equals or just falls short of the pressure over the surrounding regions at that high level. On reaching this height the air, no longer buoyed up by a greater specific levity than that of the surrounding air, will cease to ascend, and expanding horizontally will thenceforth flow over as an upper current towards those regions which offer the least resistance to its course; that is to say, it will flow over upon those regions where, at that height, pressure happens at the time to be least. Now from the known densities of air of different temperatures and humidities It is evident that the overflow of the upper current will take place towards and over that region or regions the air of which in the lower strata of the atmosphere happens to be colder and drier than that of the other surrounding regions,—because, being denser, a greater mass of air is condensed or gathered together in the lower strata of the atmosphere, thus leaving a less mass of air, or a diminished pressure, in the higher region of the upper current.

If this be so, then the extraordinarily high pressure of Central Asia during winter is to be ascribed to these two causes :—(1) the low temperature and excessive dryness of the air of this extensive region; and (2) its relative proximity to the low pressure of the Atlantic to the north- west, the low pressure of the Pacific to the north-east, and the low pressure of the belt of calms to the south. Similarly, since in summer the temperature of air resting over the Atlantic between Africa and the United States is much lower than that of the land, the ascending currents which arise from the heated lands of Africa, Europe, and North and South America, as well as from the region of calms immediately to the south, all of which are remark- able for a low normal pressure, will on reaching the upper regions of the atmosphere flow towards this part of the Atlantic, because there, the temperature being lower and the density of the air composing the lower strata being greater, pressure in the upper regions is less, And, since the surface winds are constantly flowing outwards from this region of abnormally high pressure, thus draining away the air pourcd down upon it by the upper currents which converge upon it, extreme. saturation does not take place, and the air consequently is relatively dry and cool. That this view generally represents

the movements of the upper currents has been strongly confirmed within the last few years by Professor Hildebrandsson and Clement Ley in their researches into the upper currents of the atmosphere based on observations of the cirrus cloud.

From these considerations it may be concluded that the winds which prevail near the earth's surface are known from the isobaric lines, the direction of the wind. being from regions where pressure is high towards regions where it is low, in accordance with Buys Ballot's law; and that the upper currents may be inferred from the isobaric lines taken reversely, together with the isothermal lines taken directly. In other words, the regions of lowest pressure, with their ascending currents and relatively higher pressure at great heights as compared with surrounding regions, point out the sources or fountains from which the upper currents flow; and the isothermals, by showing where on account of the relatively low temperatures the greater mass of the air is condensed in the lower strata of the atmosphere and sea-level pressure consequently is high,

thus diminishing the pressure of the upper regions, point |

out the regions towards and upon which these upper currents of the atmosphere flow. The facts of the diurnal oscillations of the barometer in the different regions already diseussed afford the strongest corroboration of these views.

The term "monsoon" has long been applied to the pre-

| and, besides, by the rainfall they bring they spread fertility

vailing winds in southern Asia which blow approximately from §.W. from April to October, and from N.E. from November to April. The term is now, however, generally applied to those winds connected with continents which

are of seasonal occurrence, or which occur regularly with the periodical return of the season. Since they are caused immediately by the different temperatures and pressures which form marked features of the climates of continents in winter and summer respectively, they are most fully developed round the coast of Asia, owing to the great extent of that continent. The monsoons of different parts of the coasts of Asia differ widely in diréction from each other. Thus in winter and summer respeetively they are W.N.W. and E.N.E. at the mouth of the Amur, N. and S.S.E. at Shanghai, N.E. and S.W. at Rangoon, N. and W.S.W. at Bombay, N.W. and S.W. at Jerusalem, and S.S.W. and N.N.E. at Archangel. The Indian winter monsoon generally begins to break up in March, but it is not till about the middle of May, when the normal pres- sure has been decidedly diminished over the heated interior, that the summer monsoon acquires its full strength and the heavy monsoonal rains fairly set in. In October, when the temperature has fallen considerably and with the falling temperature the pressure of the interior has risen, the summer monsoon begius to break up, and this season is marked by variable winds, calms, and destructive hurricanes. As the temperature continues to fall and pressure to rise, the winter monsoon again resumes its sway. Monsoons, equally with the trade-winds, play a most important part in the economy of the globe. The relatively great force and steadiness in the direction in which they blow, and the periodical change in thcir direc- tion, give facility of intercourse between different countries ;

over extensive regions which otherwise would be barren wastes.

The winds of Australia are also strictly monsoonal, but owing to the small extent of that continent, and conse- quently the smaller differences there are between the normal pressure of the interior and that of the surrounding coasts in summer and winter respectively, they are less strongly marked than are the monsoons of southern Asia ; and particularly they neither blow with the same force nor so steadily from the same point of the compass. For the same reason the Australian climates are characterized by the occurrence of more frequent droughts than are the climates of southern Asia, and the same remark applies to the climates of southern Africa.

Since the Malay archipelago lies during the summer of the northern hemisphere between the high pressure of central Australia and the low

pressure of Asia, and during the winter between the high pressure of Asia and the low pressure of central Australia, it follows that the winds of these islands are eminently monsoonal in their character, being in summer southerly and in winter northerly. The result of this peculiar wind system of the archipelago is to give to these islands a singular diversity of climates, which will be more particularly referred to under rainfall.

At Zanzibar the prevailing wind in July is S.E., but in January, when the low pressure of the interior is situated much farther to southward, it is N.E.; and the same influence is felt, though in a greatly modified degree, as far as Mauritius, where the S.E. trade changes nearly into E. during the summer. On the other side of Africa the S.E. trade of the South Atlantic is changed into a S.W. monsoon on the coast of the Gulf of Guinea.

In the southern, central, western, and northern regions of North America the prevailing winds have a well-marked monsoonal character. The prevailing winds of winter and summer respectively are N.E. and §.S.E. at New Orleans,

N.W. and S.W. in Utah, N. and 8S. at Fort Yuma (California), E.S.E. and N.W. at Portland (Oregon), and S and E.N.E. at Fort York, Hudson Bay. These winds are readily accounted for by the distribution of pressure over the continent in winter and summer. On the Atlantic seaboard of the United States the prevailing winds of winter vary from N.W. in the New England States to W. in South Carolina ; whereas in summer they vary generally from §.8.W. in South Carolina to 8.W. in the New Eng- land States. Hence over the eastern States the summer winds are not directed towards the low-pressure region of the interior of the continent, but are determined by the relations of their pressure to the high pressure of thie Atlantic to the eastward, and to the lower pressure over- spreading the Atlantic to the N.E. This influence of the Atlantic may be considered as felt westward through the States as far as the Mississippi.

Though not so decidedly marked, the winds of Europe, except the extreme south, are also monsoonal. In winter they flow from the land towards the region of low pressure in the north of the Atlantic; but in summer the

arrows, representing the prevailing winds, show that all but the ex- treme south of Europe is swept by westerly winds, which flow in a vast continuous stream from the Atlantic towards the central regions of the Old Continent, and which deposit in their course the rains they have brought from the ocean.

Similarly, monsoons prevail on the coasts of Brazil, Peru, North Africa, and many otlier regions which happen to lie between other regions whose temperatures, and therefore pressures, differ markedly from each other at different times of the year.

These are the chief prevailing winds of the globe when

the differences of the normal atmospheric pressure are such as to cause a decided and steady movement of the atmo- sphere over a large portion of the earth's surface, resulting in well-marked prevailing winds. But there are other winds which are greatly influenced by local causes, such as the nature of the ground, whether covered with vegetation or bare; the physical configuration of tlie surface, whether level or mountainous ; and the vicinity of extensive sheets of fresh or salt water. An important characteristic of winds in their practical relations to climate is their quality, —they being warm or cold, dry or moist, according to their direction and the nature of the earth's surface over which they have just passed. Thus in the northern hemisphere southerly winds are warm and moist, while northerly winds are cold and dry. In Europe south- westerly winds are moist and easterly winds dry, while in the New England States and Canada north-easterly winds are cold and raw and north-westerly winds cold and dry.

In particular regions certain meteorological conditions occur at stated seasons intensifying these cffects, resulting in excessive drought, heavy rains, intense or great heat, thus giving rise to the following among other well-known winds. The east winds of the British Islands occur chiefly in spring, but also in a less degrce in November, being in the latter case often accompanied with fog. The winds here referred to are dry and parching, and their deleterious influence on the health is seen, not merely in the discomfort and uneasiness they impart to the less robust of the popu- lation, but also in the largely increased mortality which they cause from consumption and all other diseases more or less connected with the nervous

system. In the countrics bordering on the north of the Atlantic, atmo- spherie pressure reaches the annual maximum in May, and it is above the average during the other two spring months. ~ In these months the normal pressure approaches nearer to

what obtains farther south, and an examination of daily weather maps shows that this is due to the repeated _ occurrence in spring of very high pressures in the north of

Europe while pressures much lower prevail to southward. Now these east winds are simply the outflow from these regions of high pressure to northward. Northerly and even westerly winds which are truly outflows from what may be styled Arctic anticyclonic areas bring with them qualities as noxious as those of tlie east wind itself, and prove as injuri- ous to healtli and vegetation. The cold dry wind of April 29, 1868, which blasted and shrivelled up vegetation in Scot- land, particularly in the western counties, as effectually as if a scorching fire had passed across them, was a west wind.

In the south of Europe, during the winter and early spring, peculiarly dry, cold, and violent northerly winds are of occasional occurrence. Of these winds the ‘‘mistral” is one of the most notorious, which is a steady, violent, and cold north-west wind blowing from central. and eastern France down on the Gulf of Lyons. It is particularly trying while it lasts to invalids who are spending the winter at the various popular sanataria which are scattered along this part of the Mediterranean coast. The great. cold that took place in the north of Italy and south of France in the beginning of 1868 was a good example of the mistral. The meteorological conditions under which it occurred were unusually low pressure over the Mediterranean to southward (29°450 inches), whilst at the same time pressure rose steadily and rapidly on _pro- ceeding northward to 30°905 inches in the north of Russia. From this geographical distribution of the pressure, northerly winds swept southwards over Europe, carrying with them the low temperatures of the higher latitudes, and became still colder and dricr on crossing the Alps

before they made the descent on the shores of the Mediter- ranean, The cold tempestuous winds which descend from the Julian Alps and sweep over the Adriatic, and the dreaded ‘‘gregale” of Malta, which is a dry cold north-east wind, are in their character and origin quite analogous to the mistral.

The ‘‘northers,” or *‘ nortes,” are peculiarly dry cold strong winds which repeatedly occur from September to March in the States bordering on the Gulf of Mexico, and are perfectly analogous to the mistral. The conditions under which ‘lie occur are a pressure lower than usual to the south or south-east over the Gulf of Mexico, together with a pressure even higher than the high normal which is so marked a feature of the meteorology of the Rocky Mountains during the colder months. When, as most frequently happens, they occur in the wake of a storm, their disagreeable qualities of extreme dryness, cold, and violence are all intensified. From.a temperature of upwards of 80° experienced as the storm comes up the thermometer rapidly falls to 18° or even lower ; and, as the low temperature often occurs with a wind blowing with great violence, the northers prove most deleterious. A violent wind with a tem- perature of 18° is altogether unknown in the British Islands.

The ‘‘ pampero” isa strong, dry, cold wind which blows across the a of the River Plate of South America, occurring at all seasons,

ut most frequently during the spring and summer from October to January. They are preceded by casterly winds, a falling pressure, a rising temperature, and increased moisture. A pampero is de- scribed by Dr D. Christison, and its appearance figured, in the Journal of the Scottish Meteorological Society, vol. v. p. 342, as seen advancing on the morning of November 28, 1867, in central Uruguay. In the early morning the wind blew rather strongly from north-east, and by and by clouds were seen moving very slowly from the west, throwing out long streamers eastwards. As they advanced, two dense and perfectly regular cloud-masses appeared in front, one behind the other, in close contact yet not intermingling,—the one being of a uniform leaden grey, while the other was as black as the smoke of asteamer. On arriving over- head, the front, though slightly wavy in appearance, was seen to be quite straight in its general direction, and the bands were of uniform breadth. They rushed forward at great speed under

the other clouds without uniting with them, preserving their forms unbroken, being borne onward by an apparently irresistible force, as if coni- posed of some solid material rather than vapour. They extended probably 50 miles in length, but as they took only a few minutes to pass their breadth was not great, and they appeared to diminish to mere linesin the distant horizon. At the instant the first cloud- band arrived overhead, the wind'chopped round from north-east to north and then to south-west; a strong cold blast at the same time seemed to fall from the leaden cloud, and continued to blow till both bands had passed. No rain or thunder occurred at this time, but in the confused rabble of clouds which followed low thunder continued to roll, and in a quarter of au hour rain fell, and for some hours thereafter wind, rain, and thunder continued, but only to a moderate degree. The low temperature and rising barometer and change of wind are the constant and most striking characteristics of the pampero. On one occasion.the temperature fell 44° in four- teen hours, and on another occasion the fall was only 4°. Rain is a usual accompaniment, but on rare occasions the pampero passcs off and no rain falls.

Rainfall.—Whatever tends to lower the temperature of the air below the dew-point isa cause of rain. It is there- fore to the winds we must chiefly look for an explanation of the rainfall, and the broad principles of the connexion may be stated to be these five :—(1) when the winds have previously traversed a considerable extent of ocean, the rainfall is moderately large; (2) if the winds advance at tle same time into colder regions, the rainfall is largely increased, because the temperature is sooner reduced below the point of saturation ; (3) if the winds, though arriving from the ocean, have not traversed a considerable extent of it, the rainfall is not large; (4) if the winds, even though having traversed a large extent of occan, yet on arriving at tle land proceed into lower latitudes or regions markedly warmer, the rainfall is small or nil; (5) if a range of mountains lics across the onward path of the winds, the rainfall is largely increased on the side facing the winds, and reduced over the regions on the other side of the range. The reason here is that, the air on the windward side of the ridge being suddenly raised to a greater height in crossing the range, the temperature is further reduced by mere expansion, and a more copious

precipita- tion is the result ; whereas on the leeward side as the air descends to lower levels it becomes gradually drier, and accordingly the rainfall rapidly diminishes with the descent.

We have drawn attention to the diminished velocity of the wind over land as compared with the open sea (p. 125). From this it follows that an envelope of stiller air or air of less velocity than that of the prevailing wind broods over the Jand, and hy its presence forces the prevailing wind toa greater height, thus tending to increase the rainfall. If the foreshore rises within a few uuiles to a height of 200 or 300 fect, the result is very striking when the wind from the sea blows straight upon it. Thus at Spittal, near Lerwick, on September 1877, a N.E. wind blew straight ashore at an estimated velocity of 25 miles an hour. To eastward the sky was singularly clear down to the horizon, but to westward all the country beyond a mile from the shore was enveloped in what appeared a dense mist or fog. About 15° to castward of the zenith of an observer on the shore, the thinnest rack of cloudlets was seen emerging withont intermission from the deep stainless blue of the sky, which as they drifted landward increased so rapidly in volume and density that the zenith was three-fourths covered with clouds. A similar phenomenon was seen in September 1879 on board the Orkney steainer at the magnificent cliff of Hoy Island, Orkney. A heavy storm had just cleared away, and a strong W.N.W. wind was blowing right against the cliff. The sky was absolutely cloud- less all ronud, except the upper 800 fect of Hoy Hill, 1570 feet high, which was enveloped in a thick mist that stretclied away to wind- ward, some distance to westward of the stcamer’s course, which was about 2 miles from land. The western termination of the cloud was the thinnest rack of cloud, which emerged unceasingly from the blue sky ata distance not less than 4 miles to wind- ward of the cliff. The constituent parts of the cloud itself were in rapid motion eastward, but, owing to the fresh accessions it was constantly receiving, the cloud itsclf appeared stationary. Thus the wind was forced upward into the atmosphere for some consider- able distauce to windward of the ridge lying across its path.

It is this dragging effeet of the land on the wind, and the con- sequences which result from it, that explain how it is that during storms of wind and rain from the north-east the rainfall over the foreshores of the Firth of Forth,

the Moray Firth, and the Pentland Virth looking to the north-east is so much in excess as compared with the rest of Scotland. The same principle explains the heavy rainfall in plains at sonic distance from the range of hills lying across the wind's path and on the side of the rain-bringing winds.

For short intervals of time-the heaviest rainfalls occur with tornadoes, waterspouts, and some other forms of the whirlwind, the reason being that not only is there rapid expansion due to the rapid ascent of the air, but also great rarefaction is produced by the extreme velocity of the aerial gyrations round the axis of the tornado. On August 1, 1846, 3°12 inches of rain fell at Camberwell, London, in two hours and seventeen minutes. Of heavy falls may be mentioned 4°60 inches in London, April 13, 1878 ; 6:00 inches at Tongue, September 7, 1870; 5-36 inches in Monmouthshire, July 14, 1875; 6°62 inches at

- deposits.

fulfilled during the summer

Seathwaite, Cumberland, November 27, 1848; and 7:12 inches at Drishaig, Argyllshire, December 7 to 8, 1863. But it is in lower latitudes that the heaviest single showers have been recorded. 'The following are among the most remarkable :—at Joyeuse, France, 31:17 inches in twenty- two hours; at Genoa, 30-00 inches in twenty-four hours; at Gibraltar, 33-00 inches in twenty-six hours; onthe hills above Bombay, 24°00 inches in one night; and on the Khasi Hills, India, 30-00 inches on each of five successive days.

As regards the ocean, there are no available data from which an estimate could be formed as to the amount of the rainfall, since the rainfall statistics of the ocean must be regarded as giving hardly anything more than the comparative frequency of the. fall. It is, however, certain that the equatorial belt of calms in the Atlantic and Pacific between the trades is the region where the ocean rainfall reaches the maximum, and the parts of these oceans are the rainiest which are the longest within the belt of calms as it

shifts its position northward and south- ward with season. While the cloud-screen is undoubtedly dense, and the rainfall frequent and heavy, the careful observations of the ‘ Challenger” and ‘“ Novara” show that the statements generally made as to these points are greatly exaggerated. .

In the regions of the trades the rainfall is everywhere small over the open sea, seeing that the trade-winds are essentially an outflow from anticyclonic regions, and their original dryness is to a large extent maintained because their course is directed into regions which become con- stantly warmer. Thus at Ascension, lat. 8° 45’ S., which is throughout the whole year within the 8.E. trades, the mean rainfall for the two years 1854-55 was only 88 inches. At St Helena, which lies constantly within the same trades, five years give a mean rainfall of 5°36 inches on the coast ; but in the same island at a height of 1763 feet the annual amount rises to 23°98 inches. Malden Island and some other islands in the Pacific, about long. 150° W., and for some distance on each side of the equator, have been pointed to by Scott as practically almost rain- less, as is shown by their containing extensive guano These islands are situated somewhat similarly to Ascension with respect to the zone of calms. In Mauritius the annual rainfall on a mean of four years was 30 inches at Gros Cailloux, but at Cluny, only 16 niles distant, for the same four years it was 146 inches; in regard to which Meldrum remarks that at Cluny, which is in the vicinity of mountains and forests, in the south- east of the island, and thus directly exposed to the trade wind as it arrives from the sea, the rainfall in almost any month is from four to six times greater than at Gros Cailloux on the north-west coast, where neither mountam nor forest exists, and where the §.E. trade arrives con- siderably drained of its moisture.

From what has been said it is evident that the heaviest rains will be brought by the winds which have traversed the greatest extent of ocean within the tropics, and which accordingly of all ocean winds have the highest temperature and humidity. These conditions are most completely months of the northern hemisphere by the winds which, commencing from near lat. 30° S., blow home on southern Asia as the well-known S.W. monsoon of these regions. Accordingly it is by the winds of this monsoon that a larger rainfall is distributed over a larger portion of the earth’s surface than occurs anywhere else in any season; and this large rainfall is in many regions still

farther greatly increased by the mountain ranges which lie across the path of the rain- bringing winds. é

It is on these winds that the rainfall of India chiefly depends. Along the whole of the west coast from thie

Gulf of Cambay southward, and on the Western Ghats, the rainfall is excessive. .The following are some of the more interesting annual means in inches beginning with Bombay and proceeding southwards :—Bombay, 74; Matheram, 247; Mahabaleshwar, 252; Ratnagiri, 104; Baura, 255; Goa, 102; Karwar, 115; Honawar, 139; Mangalore, 134; Cannanore, 132; Calicut, 116; and Cochin, 114. In the west of Ceylon the rainfall is also heavy, being at Colombo 87, at Galle 91, and at Ratnapura, at some distance inland among the hills, 149. Since the S.W. monsoon is drained of much of its moisture in crossing these mountains, a greatly diminished rainfall is distributed over the interior and east side of India, and on the eastern slopes of Ceylon.

If now we cross to the eastern shores of the Bay of

Bengal, we again encounter an excessive rainfall along these °

coasts and up the slopes of the mountains looking down on them. Thus from south northward the following are among the more characteristic rainfalls in inches :— Nancowry, 102; Port Blair, 116; Mergui, 152; Tavoy, 196; Maulmain, 189; Rangoon, 100; Bassein, 98 ; Sandoway, 212 ; Akyab, 198; and Chittagong 104. On the other hand, at Thyetmio, inland on the Irawadi, the annual rainfall is only 48 inches.

We have shown how, in accordance with the peculiar distribution of pressure in India in summer, the monsoon is diverted up the valley of the Ganges as an E.S.E. wind, distributing on its way, even to the head of the valley, in a generous rainfall the moisture it has brought from the Indian Ocean and the Bay of Bengal. The rainfall does not extend farther westward than the basin of the Ganges, and the precipitation is most copious along the lower Himalayas, the largest falls being recorded at heights about 4000 feet,

—being, as pointed out by Hill, near the level at which the summer monsoon is cooled just below its dew-point. The following are some of the larger rain- falls in inches, beginning with the more western :—Mus-sooree, 95; Naini Tal, 92; Khatmandu, 57; Dazrjiling, 121; Kurseong, 154; Buxa, 219; Kuch Behar, 131.

The rainfall is very large in the north-east angle of the Bay of Bengal and thence northwards towards Bhutan, or at the angle where the summer monsoon from the bay curves round to a westerly course on its way up the Ganges. Thus at Noakhally, on the coast, it amounts in inches to 109 ; at Tura, on the Brahmaputra, immediately to west of the Garo Hills, 129; at Silchar and Sylhet to eastward, 117° and 155; whilst at Cherrapunji, on the Khasi Hills, it rises to 493°19 inches on a mean of twenty- four years. This last rainfall is the largest known on the globe, the causes of which are the highly saturated state of the monsoon on its arrival at the lower Ganges, the high mountain range of Burmah to eastward of Bengal, which turns the monsoon to the north, and the protrusion westwards of the Khasi and Garo Hills so as to lie in the line of that branch of the monsoon which passes from the lower Ganges into the basin of the Brahmaputra above Goalpara. The consequence is that the highly saturated air of the monsoon in its passage across the Khasi IIills is suddenly raised to a height of about 6000 feet, and being thereby reduced far below the point of saturation the superabundant moisture is precipitated in unequalled deluges of rain, The amount of the annual rainfall at all these places is determined, essentially if not altogether, by the rains of the summer monsoon, the relative intensity of which over India may be taken to be fairly represented by the rainfall of July.

The rains which accompany the N.E. monsoon of the winter months may be represented by the rainfall for January. These are heaviest in Ceylon, especially on its

east slopes, and in southern India, or where the N.E. |

monsoon arrives after having traversed a large extent of ocean. The fall for the month exceeds 6 inches over a large portion of the east coast, whilst at Colombo in the west the rainfall is only half that amount, and farther north at Pattalum the January rainfall is only 1°82 inches. In southern India the amount varies from about 1 to 2 inches. Blanford pointed out in 1873 (Phil. Trans., vol. clxiv. p.

618) that, while the surface winds of northern India in win-

ter are northerly, on the Himalayas, especially the north- west portion, southerly winds prevail during the cold months. It is these upper southerly winds which bring the winter rains to the Punjab, Upper India, and the highlands of Assam. It is further to be noted that winter rains also occur in Central India, where the prevailing surface winds are from cast and north-east. The mean rainfall of January at Mussoorce is 2°00 inches and at Naini Tal 2°86 inches, and in Assam, at Sibsagar, 1°13 inch. Over a large tract of the east side of southern India from Nellore southward, including Ceylon, the maximum rainfall for the year occurs in the months of October and November.

Rainfall of the Malay Archipelago and Australia.—Under the direction of the late Dr Bergsma, systematic observations of the rainfall of the Malay archipelago were begun in 1879, the number of stations being 150. The results of the first three years show that the mean annual rainfall over the archipelago varies from about 60 inches in Timor to upwards of 200 inches at some spots among the western slopes of Sumatra. But the most important feature in the rainfall in its relations to climate is not the absolute amount' that falls annually, but rather the manner of its distribution through the months of the year. Over the greater number of the islands rain falls copiously every month; but as regards some of the islands the year is divided into dry and wet seasons as marked as are scen in the climates of India. The kcy to this essential difference among the climates is the distribution of atmospheric pressure during the months of the year from south-eastern Asia to Australia, with the resulting prevailing winds. During the winter months atmospherie pressure is high in south-eastern Asia and low in the interior of Australia, the difference being about threc-quarters of an inch. Since between these two regions the fall in the mean pressure is

practically uninterrupted, the Malay archipelago lying between them is swept by northerly winds (fig. 14). As these winds have traversed a great breadth of ocean in their course, they arrive in a highly saturated state, and consequently deposit a copious rainfall, particularly on the northern slopes of the higher islands. Henee in these months the rainfall over the islands without exeeption is large, the mean monthly amount being in many eases more than 80 inehes. These winds continue their course to southward towards the low-pressure region in the interior of Australia, and deposit along the north coasts of that continent a monthly rainfall rising generally to from 14 to 20 inehes. On advancing into the interior, the mean amount gradually diminishes at the successive telegraphic stations to 3°50 inches at Alice Springs near the tropic of Capricorn. The amount of the rainfall for any particular year, and the distance from the coast to whieh the rains penetrate inland, depend essentially on the height of the winter pressure of south-eastern Asia as compared with the low mean pressure of central Australia, by which the strength of the northerly monsoon is regulated.

On the other hand, during the summcr of the northern hemisphere pressure is high in the interior of Australia and low in China, the mean difference being about half an inch. Between the two regions the fall in the mean pressure is continuous and uninterrupted, and asa consequence southerly winds prevail over the intervening archi- pelago. These winds, as they advance from tlic continent into lower latitudes, are absolutely rainless inthe north of Australia, aud over Timor and the other Malay islands which are separated from Australia only by a comparatively narrow belt of sea. During the three years no rain whatever fell in Timor in July and August, and the fall in June, September, and October was small. As, however, the winds pursue their course to northward, they eagerly liek up moisture from the sea, so that by the time they arrive at Amboyna they have become so saturated that the monthly rainfall there rises to nearly 80 inelies. Again at some distance to the west of Timor rain falls more or less regularly every month, the amount increas- ing in proportion to the extent of ocean traversed by the S.E. winds, which advanee towards these islands from the direetion of Australia. These marked differenees among the climates of the Malay archipelago, whieh, since they really depend on the geo- graphical distribution of land and sea of this part of the globe, must be regarded as permanent differences, have played no inconspicuons part in the singular

distribution of animal and vegetable life which characterizes the archipelago.

152

In July the prevailing wind in West Australia is N.W., and the rainfall reaches the maximum for the year, whereas in January the wind is §.E., and the rainfall is the minimum. Similarly in January since the winds of the southern half of South Australia and Victoria are from the south, and thus blow towards warmer regions, the rainfall is either at the annual minimum, or it is small. But ou rounding the coast and proceeding northward, the wind becomes E., then N.E., and ultimately N. in the north of Queensland. With this prevalence of oceanic and equatorial winds, the rainfall at this time of the year rapidly rises over the whole of the eastern slopes, till at Cape York it is about 20 inches. In the basins of the Murray and Darling rivers, which are shut off from the east by the mountain ranges of New South Wales, the rainfall is only about an inch and a half. On the other hand, to south of the latitude of Sydney, including Tasmania, the maximum rainfall occurs in winter over those regions which slope south towards the sea, On crossing the mountain range of Victoria into the basin of the Murray river, the rainfall rapidly diminishes. In the north of New Zealand the winter rainfall is the heaviest ; but farther south, where westerly winds prevail with some steadiness through the year, the rainfall is more equally distributed through the months ; and, as the prevailing winds are westerly, the heaviest rainfall is in the west of the islands. Thus at Hokitika in the west near sea-level, and not far from a lofty range of mountains to the east, the annual amount reaches 120 inches, and at Bealey inland at a height of 2104 feet it 1s 106 inches. At Wellington the annual rainfall is 52 inches, at Southland 46, at Dunedin 34, and at Christchurch 25, thus showing, in the rainfall of the two sides of the island, extremes nearly as great as in Scotland.

Rainfall of Europe.—As regards rainfall, Europe may be conveniently divided into two distinct regions, —western and northern Europe, extending in a modified degree through the interior of the continent into Siberia, and the countries bordering on the Mediterranean. hand, a great continent on the other, and a predominance of westerly winds are the determining circumstances in the distribution of the rainfall over western Europe. Hence

the rainiest regions are to be found in the west, where mountain ranges stretch north and south. The annual rainfall exceeds 80 inches over a considerable district, including the greater part of Skye and portions of the counties of Inverness and Argyll to the south-east, in the lake district of England, and in the more mountainous parts of North Wales,—these three districts being the wettest in Europe. As Ireland presents no continuous range of mountains opposing the westerly winds of the Atlantic, no Irish rain-gauge shows a mean rainfall of 80 inches. A point of some interest is suggested by the rain- fall of the counties of Kirkcudbright and Dumfries in Scotland. These counties offer to the westerly winds a series of valleys sloping south to the Solway Firth, which show successively a diminished rainfall on advancing east- ward till at several places in Nithsdale and Annandale it does not exceed 40 inches. Butin Eskdale, farther to the east, the rainfall instead of falling increases to about 60 inches. The reason is that the westerly winds are obstructed in their onward course by the range of hills by which Eskdale is bounded on the east, in surmounting which the winds are much reduced in temperature, and their superabundant moisture falls in copious rains immediately to westward of the ridge. The cause of the larger rainfall of Eskdale is thus analogous to that of the large rainfall of the coast in the north-east of the Bay of Bengal immediately under the Assam range of mountains. In England the largest annual rainfall is 146 inches at Sea- thwaite in the Lake district, in Scotland 128 inches at Glencroe in Argyll, whilst in Ireland the largest is only 76 inches. The driest part of the British Islands is an extensive district to south-south-west of the Wash, with a rainfall of about 21 inches.

METEOROLOGY

A vast ocean on the one

[RAINFALL.

In the west of Norway the rainfall in inches is 72 at Bergen, 51 at Aalesund, 46 at the Naze and in the Lofoten Isles, falling to 10 at the North Cape. At Christiania, Upsala, and a large part of the east of Scandinavia the rainfall is about 21 inches, falling to 16 inches on the north coast of the Gulf of Bothnia. In Russia and Siberia it rises only at a few places to 20 inches, several districts of this extensive region having an annual rainfall of 10, 5,

3, or even 2 inches. The rainfall of Spain presents great extremes—from 68 inches at Santiago to 13 inches at Saragossa. In France and the plains of Germany the average varies from 35 to 20 inches, but in mountainous regions these figures are greatly exceeded, rising through all gradations to upwards of 100 inches at some points in the Alps.

An important distinction between the manner of distri- bution of the rainfall in the west of Europe and at more inland ‘places is that the greater part of the annual quantity of the west falls in winter, whilst in the interior the amount in summer is greater than in winter. The rainfall of January and July shows this in a very forcible manner. The summer climates of the extreme south of Europe and North Africa are rainless, and over exten- sive regions in the south of Europe adjoining the July rainfall does not amount to an inch. Over these dry regions the prevailing winds of summer are northerly, and hence the drought which characterizes them. On the other hand, the rainfall in the interior of the continent is large. In January the maximum rainfall occurs on the mountains and high grounds overlooking the Atlantic, and the minimum on the plains of Russia.

Owing to the way in which Europe is broken up by the seas which diversify its surface, the time of the year when the rain attains the maximum differs greatly in different regions. This phase of the rainfall occurs, indeed, accord- ing to locality, in all months except February, March, and — April. The month of occurrence of the annual maximum

rainfall over Europe is shown by fig. 18. A similar map

Fria. 18.—Showing Month of Maximum Rainfall in Europe.

representing the month of least rainfall shows still greater uniformity in a regular succession of the months in passing from region to region. Thus the month of least rainfall is January on the lower Volga, February in western Russia and the greater part of central Europe, March in the north of France and south of Great Britain, April farther to the north,

a

“RAINFALL. |

May in Scotland north of the Grampians, June in Orkney, Shetland, Iceland, the west of Ireland, and the north-west of France, and July over the whole of the south of Europe. The driest month occurs nowhere in Europe in any of the five months from August to December.

Rainfall of North America.—West of the Rocky Mountains the rainfall is very unequally distributed, the annual amounts varying from 86 inches at Astoria, near the mouth of the Columbia river, to 8 inches at Sau Diego on the coast, and 3 inches at the head of the Gulf of California. Over the whole of the region between the Cascade and Rocky Mountaius the rainfall at all seasons is extremely small, this being indeed that feature in the climate to which the formation of the cations of that region is chiefly to be referred. On the other hand, in the United States and Canada to east of long. 100° W. the distinguishing feature of the rainfall is the comparative equablencss of its distribution, an annual rainfall exceeding 50 inches occurring only over restricted districts, and a rainfall as low as 20 inches being scarcely met with anywhere. The regions where the rainfall excecds 50 inches are Florida, the lower basin of the Mississippi, aud the Atlantic seaboards of Nova Scotia and New- foundland.

In January the annual maximum rainfall occurs over the whole of the west coast from Sitka to lower California; but in the interior between long. 120° and 95° W. the amount is everywhere small, and over a considerable part in the south-west of this region no vain falls. The region of largest rainfall extends from Louisiana to West Virginia, where the mean varies from 4 to 6 inches, Over nearly the whole of the Dominion of Canada, by much the greater

art of the winter precipitation is in the form of snow, which has on carefully measured and recorded by the Metcorological Ser- vice. The average snowfall for January exceeds 30 inches at St John’s, Newfoundland, in Anticosti, Prince Edward Island, and in many other regions. \

In July the rainfall is everywhere small in the west, a large part of this extensive region being absolutely rainless. The remarkable dryness of the climate at this season is due to the N. W.

winds that set in towards the low pressure of the interior, which

thus blow towards warmer regions. The rainfall to the east of tte Roeky Mountains is distributed by the winds which are connected with the low-pressure region of the interior and with the high- pressure region of the Atlantic. The result is two regions of larger rainfall, the one in the south-east of the States and the other to the west of the lakes. The summer winds of the south-eastern coasts are southerly, and as they are anticyclonic in their origin and have in their course traversed some extent of ocean, they arrive well- but not super-saturated, and pour down a rainfall in July of 6 inches and upwards glong the coasts and for some distance inland from Louisi- ana to Chesapeake Bay. Further, since in July these winds attain their maximum force and persistency, the rainfall at the same time reaches the maximum along the whole coast from Boston to some distance west of New Orleans. Since the summer winds blow in the line of the Alleghany mountains and not across them, the ramfall diminishes in ascending their slopes. The comparative equableness of the rainfall over the eastern States is the necessary result of the winds' passing into higher latitudes, and, therefore, cooler regions. A broad region where the rainfall is less than on each side of it, extends from Michigan to the south-west as far as Canadian River. To the west of the lakes the rainfall rises above 4 inehes, and, since over this region the winds become somewhat easterly as they flow towards the low-pressure area, it is probable that the larger rainfall of this prairie region has its origin in no small degree in the evaporation of the lakes. On ascending the higher reaches of the Mississippi, the amount diminishes, but scarcely falls lower than 2 ates being thus analogous to the summer rains of the Upper Ganges. On crossing the water-parting into the basin which drains into Hudson Bay, we encounter E. and N.E. winds laden with vapour licked up in their passage over Hud- son's Bay, which they distribute in a generons rainfall of probably 3 to 5 inches over the rising colonies of Manitoba and Saskat- chewan. An important point in the climate of the States is that over neatly the whole of the extensive region stretching between Alleghanies and Rocky Monntains, except the south coast already referred to, the annual maximum rainfall does not occur in summer but in spring, the month of largest rainfall in the great majority of cases being May. In the basin of Hudson's Bay July is the month of largest rainfall. _ Rainfall of Central and South America.—The following are, in inches, the larger and more interesting annual rainfalls round the coasts:—Vera Cruz, 182; Belize, 75; Maracaibo, 163; Cardeas, 155; Georgetown, 95;

Paramaribo, 142; Cayenne, 140; Para, 71; Pernambuco, 109; Buenos Ayres, 34; Bahia Blanea, 19; Puerto Montt, 102; Valdivia, 109; Valparaiso, 100; Serena, 93; Lima, 9; and a large part of Peru, nil. A remarkable feature of the rainfall of South Ameriea is the large amounts that fall in the basins of the Orinoco and Amazon; the fall is 91 inches in the

‘Vera Cruz, 5°10 and 35°90.

upper basin of the Madeira, and 112 inches at Yquitos (lat. 3° 40’ S., long. 72° 57’ W.). The reason is that this immense region, where pressure appears to be almost constantly low, is open to the highly saturated winds that blow from the equatorial Atlantic. Quite different is the distribution of the rainfall over the La Plata basin. The annual falls, in inches, are 92 at Joinville, 58 at Corrientes, 44 at Monte Vidco, 36 at Parana, 24 at Santiago, 22 at San Luis, and only 6 at Mendoza. The fall rapidly rises in ascending the eastern slopes of the Brazil mountains facing the South Atlantic; thus, while the amount at Rio Janeiro is 45 inches, on the lulls to northward it is 116 inches.

In January northerly winds prevail on the south coasts of the Gulf of Mexico and the Caribbean Sca, and as they have their origin in the high pressure of the American continent, and in crossing the sea pass into lower latitudes, the January rainfall of these coasts is comparatively small. In July, however, the prevail- ing winds are easterly, and as they have traversed a large extent of the equatorial waters of the Atlantic they are highly saturated, and consequently the July rainfall of these coasts is everywhere very large. The following are, in inches, the January and July rainfalls :—Caracas, 1°00 and 14°04; Guatemala, 0°28 and 10°79; The seasonal distribution of the rainfall in the basin of the Amazon is the reverse of this. In January the position of the belt of calms is about lat. 3° N., and as pressure is relatively low over the basin of the Amazon, especially its southern slopes, the trades and the west portion of the region of calms unitedly spread their highly saturated air over the whole region as far as the Andes, resulting in one of the most widespread heavy rainfalls anywhere to

be met with. On the other hand, since in July the belt of calms is about lat. 10° N., the saturated atmosphere of the tropical regions no longer flows up the Amazon, but is carried westward into the Caribbean Seaand Gulf of Mexico. Hence at this season the rainfall of the Amazon vallcy is small. The following are, in inches, the January and July falls :—Para, 6°51 and 3‘26; Manaos, 7°33 and 1°82; upper Madeira, 15°90 and 0°30; and Yquitos, 10°24 and 4°26. On the La Plata in January pressure is low, and as winds consequently blow from the ocean in upon the region of low pressure the rainfall is large ; but as pressure is high in the interior in July the rainfall in that month is small. The following are, in inches, the January and July rainfalls :—Buenos Ayres, 2°37 and 1°70; Parana, 4°63 and 1°32; Corrientes, 5°24 and 2°67; Joinville, 14°26 and 3°55; and San Luis, 2°63 and 0:00.

Rainfall of Africa.—As regards the rainfall, Africa presents the greatest diversity in its climates. The following are the annual amounts in inches at various points on or near the coast :—Port Said, 2; Alexandria, 8; Tunis, 12; Algiers 31; Oran, 17; Mogador, 50; mouth of the Senegal, 17; Goree, 21; Sierra Leone, 126; Christiansborg, 23; St Thomas, 40; Gaboon, 106; Loanda, 11; Cape Town, 23; Mossel Bay, 12; Port Elizabeth, 24; Durban, 43; Zanzibar, 58; and mouth of the Zambezi, 61. In the north of the continent, the rainfall rapidly diminishes inland, and over the great desert of Sahara practically none falls. In the interior of Algiers it diminishes, the amount at Laghouat being 17 inches, and at Biskra 9. In Egypt the rainfall is limited to a narrow strip along the coast; at Cairo the annual fall scarcely amounts to an inch. The January and July rainfalls are, in inches, as follows :—Port Said, 0°46 and 0°00; Alexandria, 1°95 and 0°20; Algiers, 4°43 and 0-04; Biskra, 0°56 and 0°08; St Louis (Senegal), 0°28 and 3:00; Goree, 0°00 and 4:06; Sicrra Leone, 0°69 and 24°20; Christiansborg, 0°50 and 2°00; Katunga, 0°11 and 4°76; Gaboon, 9°35 and 0°48; Cape Town, 0°28 and 3°83; Durban, 5:00 and 1°70; Pretoria, 6°07 and 0°71; and Zanzibar, 2°02 and 2°35. At Zanzibar the heaviest rains oceur about the equinoxes, the mean for April being 14°55 inches, and for October 6°80 inches.

In the case of this, as the other continents, the explanation of the different amounts is to be had in the seasonal changes of wind. In the north the winter rains are to a very large extent the aecom- paniment of the

Mediterranean storms of that season, but in summer pressure is diminished in the interior and increased in the Atlantic to the north-west, resulting in strong steady northerly winds, which as they advance into hotter regions are unaccompanied with rain. The heavy summer rains from Senegambia to the Gold Coast are due to the strong monsoonal winds which set in towards the interior, thus drawing over these coasts the highly saturated air of the belt of calms and of the trades immediately to the north and south of it. Since in winter the belt of calms is reinoved 8° of latitude farther to the south, and the temperature of the interior is greatly reduced, it follows that the winds blowing on these coasts from the sea are drier and less strong, and consequently the rainfall is small. At Sierre Leone the absolutely driest month is February, 0°31 inch, and the wettest September, 29°15 inches. On the other hand, at Gaboon (lat. 0°25’ N.) the dry season is from June to August, when the belt of calms is farthest to the north ; and the absolutely rainiest about the equinoxcs, the mean of March being 14°70 inches and October 19°52 inehes. At Loanda (lat. 8° 49’ S.) the annual amount is only a tenth of what falls at Gaboon, and it

falls wholly during the summer months of the southern hemisphere. In South Africa pressure in January is lowest in the interior, towards which prevailing winds from the ocean blow, and as these advance into regions becoming rapidly hotter the rainfall all round the coast and for some distance inland falls to the annual minimum. But in more strictly inland districts which are at a considerable elevation the rainfall reaches the maximum at the samc season. Thus the amounts in inches for January and July are—tor Pretoria, 6:07 and 0°71; Maritzburg, 4°23 and 0°21; Graham’s Town, 2°89 and 1°51; Lower Nel’s Poort, 1°33 and 0°49; and Aliwal North, 1°55 and 0:00. In the winter months pressure in the interior is high, and the rainfall consequently small. Though on the coast winds from the arid interior frequently prevail, yet the storms that sweep eastward past South Afriea precipitate over large portions of the southern slopes of this part of the globe what must in the main be regarded as a generous rainfall. It follows that ‘the climates of these important colonies range themselves into

two perfectly dis- tinct classes,—the climates of the inland regions and the Natal coast, where the rains oceur during the hottest months, and the climates of the other regions, where the annual rains occur during the coldest months. Little is accurately known regarding the rain- fall of the interior of Africa. It is certain, however, that it is small, or nil, over the extensive region of the Sahara, and that it is large from about 15° N. lat. to some distance south of the equator. Probably the rainicst part of Africa is the region extend- ing from the Victoria Nyanza northwards to and including the gathering grounds of the two great tributaries of the Nile.

Snow.—Snow takes the place of rain when the tempera- ture is sufficiently low to freeze the condensed moisture in the atmosphere. Snow is composed of crystals, either six- pointed stars or hexagonal plates, which exhibit' the greatest variety of beautiful forms, one thousand dif- ferent kinds having been observed. These numerous forms Scoresby reduced to five principal varieties :—(1) thin plates, comprising several hundred forms of the most ex- quisite beauty ; (2) a nucleus or plane figure, studded with needle-shaped crystals ; (3) six-sided, more rarely three-sided, crystals ; (4) pyramids of six sides; (5) prismatic crystals, having at the ends and middle thin plates perpendicular to their length. In the same snowfall the forms of the crystals are generally similar. The flakes vary from 0°07 inch to an inch in diameter, the smallest occurring with low temperatures and the largest when the temperature approaches 32°, If the temperature is alittle higher, the snow-flakes are partially thawed in falling through it, and fall as sleet. The white colour of snow is caused by the combination of the different prismatic colours of the minute snow-crystals. The density of snow is far from uniform ; it is generally from ten to twelve times lighter than an equal bulk of water, but varies from eight to sixteen times lighter than water.

The limit of the fall of snow near sea-level coincides roughly with the winter isothermal of 52°, since in places where the mean winter temperature is no higher than 52° that of the air falls occasionally to 32° or lower during the winter months. As regards Europe, the southern limit is about Gibraltar; in North America it is Savannah, New Orleans, the mouth of the Rio Grande, the head of the Gulf of California, and San Francisco. In Europe, north of lat. 60°, snow falls generally on an average of from 80 to 110 days in the year. At Upsala the number of days is 61, at Warsaw 45, Aberdeen

42, Oxford 18, Ostend 15, Brus- sels 27, Tarum (in the south-west of Jutland) 12, Copen- hagen 23, Vienna 33, Odessa 19, Sebastopol 12, Milan 11, Trieste 6, Saragossa 5, Madrid 3, and Lisbon 1. In Greenland the number of days exceeds 80, and this figure is nearly reached in Newfoundland and the north- east seaboard of Nova Scotia. At Quebec the mean days of snow are 66, Halifax 64, Winnipeg 54, Detroit 34, Cape Henry 13, St Louis 11, mouth of the Columbia River 7, and Charleston 2. In Russia the time of the year when snow falls most frequently is December and January, exceptin the south of the empire, where February is the month of the most frequent occurrence of snow. But to the north of a line drawn from the entrance of the

Gulf of Finland through Warsaw, Cracow, Salzburg, and

Santiago March is the month of maximum occurrence in

the great majority of instances ; while to the south of this line it is January and in several cases December.

The largest falls of snow occur in the Antarctic regions, as is well attested by the magnificent icebergs of solidified snow which break off all round from the lofty walls of ice that engirdle the Southern Ocean. Excepting perhaps in the Dominion of Canada, no data have been anywhere collected from which even a rough estimate could be formed as to the mean annual amount of snow that falls in different parts of the globe. »

Snow-Line.—The snow-line marks the height below which all the snow that falls annually melts during summer. No general rule can be stated for this height in different climates owing to the many causes determining it. These are the exposure of mountain slope to the sun (and hence, other things being the same, it is higher on the south than on the north sides of mountains), exposure to the rain- bringing winds, the steepness of the mountains, and the degree of dryness of the air. Hence the position of the snow-line can be known by observation only. It falls only little on either

side of the equator to lat. 20°; from lat. 20° to 70° it falls equably, but from lat. 70° to 78° much more rapidly. To this general rule there are many excep- tions. It is 4000 feet higher on the north than the south side of the Himalayas, owing to the larger snowfall on the south, and the greater dryness of the climate of the north side, and therefore the greater evaporation from the snow there. It is higher in the interior of continents than near the coasts, because the precipitation is less and summer heat greater. In the Caucasus it is 11,063 feet high, but only 8950 in the Pyrenees. In South America it rises from the equator to lat. 18°, and more on the west than on the east slopes of the Cordilleras, owing to the large precipitation on the east and'small precipitation and arid climate of the west side of that chain of mountains. It is as high in lat. 33° 8. as in 19° N., but south of that latitude it rapidly sinks owing to the heavy rains brought by the moist N.W. winds of these regions. In the south of Chili it is 3000 feet lower than in the same latitudes in Europe, and 6000 feet lower than in the extremely arid climates of the Rocky Mountains.

Storms.—If weather charts representing a large part of the northern hemisphere be examined, two distinct systems of pressure are seen which change their forms and positions on the earth's surface from day to day. The one set are systems of low pressure marked off by concentric isobars enclosing pressures successively lower till the centre is approached; and the other systems of high pressure marked off by concentric isobars enclosing pressures becom- ing successively higher towards the centre. The former of these arc called cyclones, and the latter anticyclones. These areas of low pressure are the distinguishing characteristics of the hurricanes and typhoons of tropical regions, and of the ordinary storms of higher latitudes, and they may all be conveniently grouped under the general name of cyclones. Fig. 19 shows a storm which was passing across north- western Europe on the morning of November 2, 1863, and it may be taken as fairly representing the general features of cyclones. In the figure the arrows fly with the wind, and the force of the wind is indicated by the number of feathers on the arrows.

It will be seen that the winds indicate, not a circular movement round the centre of lowest pressure, but a vorticose motion inwards upon that centre, the motion being opposite to that of watch-hands. In other words, the wind

follows Buys Ballot's law, already explained. The winds are strongest where the isobars are closest together ; or they are generally proportioned to the " baro-

metric gradient,"—a term introduced by Stevenson in 1867. Cyclones have diameters seldom less than 600, and ° they occasionally exceed 3000 miles; the cyclone of fig. 19 'had a diameter of about 1200 miles. The cyclones of the Mediterranean are usually of smaller dimen- sions than those of north-western Europe and America. 'The rates at which cyclones advance over the earth's: surface vary greatly, the average in America being 24 miles an hour, in the Atlantic 20 miles, and jn Europe 26 miles. A 'rate as high as 70 miles au hour has occurred in the British Islands; sometimes they remain stationary, and more. rarely their course is for a time retrograde. 'The temperature and humidity increase at those places towards and over which the front part of the storm is advancing, and fall at those places over which the front part of the storm has already passed. In other words, the temperature and humidity rise as pressure falls and fall as pressure rises. This is the important climatic significance of cyclones. Thus a succession of low pressures passing eastwards in courses lying to northward of the British Islands are the essential conditions of open winters ; whereas, if the cyclones follow courses lying to southward, the winters 7 severe. Ina cyclone the broadest feature of weather is an.area of rain about or rather somewhat in front of the centre, sur- rounded by a ring of cloud, outside which the sky is clear. The precise form and position of these areas have been shown by Abercrombie to vary with the type of pres- sure distribution, with the intensity of the cyclone, and with the rate of its progress, and they are also influenced by local, diurnal, and seasonal variations.

The chief point of difference between American and European storms is essentially the result of the mean winter pressures to the west and north-west of their respec- tive storm-tracks. Owing to the high winter pressure in the interior of America, the barometer rises in the wake of the storms of the United States more rapidly, the wind veers round more quickly and more uniformly to N.W., N.N.W., and N. and keeps longer in these directions, and the temperature and humidity fall to a greater degree, than happens in

Europe. In the New England States and Canada the easterly winds of the storms, coming as they do from the Atlantic, are disagreeably cold, damp, and misty in a degree and with a frequency much greater than occurs with the same winds in the British Islands.

The chief points of difference between the hurricanes and typhoons of the tropics and the cyclones of higher latitudes are these :—tropical cyclones are of smaller dimensions, show steeper barometric gradients and therefore stronger winds, and advance at a slower rate over the earth's surface. Another point of difference is that a large number of the hurricanes of the West Indies and the typhoons of eastern Asia first pursue a westerly course, which gradually becomes north-westerly, and on arriving at about lat. 30° they recurve and thereafter pursue a course to north-east- wards. The tropical cyclones of the Indian Ocean south

_ Fig. 19.

of the equator also first pursue a westerly course, which | Hebrides.

lat. 30° recurve to the south-east. Many of the cyclones of India have their origin to westwards of the Nicobar Islands, pursue a course to north-westward, and die out in the valley of the Ganges ; and, similarly, a considerable number of the cyclones of the West Indies pursue a westerly course through the Gulf of Mexico, and several die out in the States.

The most dreadful attendant on tropical cyclones is the storm-wave, caused by the in-blowing winds and the low pressure of the centre of the storm. When this wave is unusually high and is hurled forward on a low-lying coast at high water it becomes one of the most destructive agents known. The Bakarganj cyclone of October 31, 1876, was accompanied by a wave which flooded the low grounds to the east of the delta of the Ganges to heights varying from 10 to 45 feet, by which more than 100,000 human beings perished.

Tracks of Cyclones of North America, Atlantic, and Europe.—tIn the Physical Atlas of the Atlantic Ocean, issued under the direction of Dr. Neumayer of the Deutsche Seewarte, plate 28 shows by shadings the mean positions of the centres of cyclones and by lines their mean tracks. The following are the regions where the lowest barometer of storms has been most frequently found:—the region to west-south-west of the lakes of the United States; the Gulf of St Lawrence ; mid-Atlantic about lat. 35° long. 52°; to the south-west of Greenland ; to the south-west of Iceland, which is by far the most important of the whole; to the south-west of the Lofoten Isles; the region embracing Denmark, the south of Scandinavia, and Finland ; and, as secondary centres of frequency, the south of the British Islands, Corsica and part of Italy adjoining, and the north- east of the Adriatic. The great importance of these centres, where the lowest barometers are most frequently found, consists in the indication they give of the precise regions either where many storms originate or where they are either retarded or arrested in their course. As regards the origin of storms, the centre west of the Mississippi is the region where most of the United States storms originate, the centre in the Gulf of St Lawrence is where many of the great Atlantic storms have their origin, and the centres in mid-Atlantic and to the south-west of Iceland are the regions where the storms of north-western Europe chiefly originate, The centres on the south-west of Greenland, the Lofoten Isles, Denmark, and the south of the British Islands, all appear to suggest that storms are retarded in their onward courses on coming up against large masses of land,—which may, in part at least, be occasioned by the heavy rainfalls that mark these parts of their courses.

Of all storm tracks the most frequently taken is that by the storms of the United States, which pursue an easterly course through the lakes to the Gulf of St Lawrence. A considerable number of storms follow a course from Nova Scotia to Davis Straits; but the larger number take a north-easterly course through the Atlantic towards Iceland and thence past the north of Norway. Among the less frequent but important tracks are these :—from near New Orleans along the east coast of the States towards Nova Scotia; from mid-Atlantic to south of Ireland and thence through France to the north of the Mediterranean; and from the Atlantic about lat. 42° long. 40° in a north- easterly course quite outside but at no great distance from the British Islands, and thence towards the North Cape. Of the tracks more

immediately affecting British weather are one from Iceland in a south-easterly direction through the North Sea and Germany, and four tracks which start from near Scilly:—(1) to the south-east as already described ; (2) eastward through the north of Germany ; (3) north-east to Christiania; and (4) north through Ircland and the These are the storm tracks which chiefly give

gradually changes to south-west, and often on arriving about | the United Kingdom its easterly and northerly winds.

156

The Inclination of Winds to the Isobars.—The vorticose motion of the winds in a cyclone towards and in upon the centre has been already pointed out. One of the more important practical problems of meteorology is the deter- mination of the angle of inclination of the winds to the isobars in the different segments of the cyclone, not only. from the application of the results of the inquiry to the theory of storms but also to practical navigation. The first real contribution to the subject, based on accurate measure- ments, was made by Clement Ley in 1873.1 From the observations made at fifteen places in north-west Europe examined by him he showed that the winds incline from districts of higher towards those of lower pressure at a mean angle of 20° 51’; that the inclination is much greater at inland than at well-exposed stations on the coast, the respective angles being 28° 53’ and 12° 49’; and that the greatest inclinations are with S.E. winds. Then follow S.W., N.E., and N.W. winds, the last showing the least inclination. | Whipple has recently compared the winds at Kew with the barometric gradients for the five years ending 1879, with the result that the greatest inclination is 63° with S.E. winds, the least 35° with N.E. winds, and the mean for all winds 52°.

As regards the open sea, Captain Toynbee has shown, from a careful investigation of the great Atlantic storm of August 24, 1873, that the mean angle of inclination calculated from one hundred and eight observations was 29°, the mean at the three selected epochs examined varying from 25° to 31°.

Barometric Gradient and Velocity of the Wind.—In inquiring into the relation of the velocity of the wind to the barometric gradient, it is necessary to have some definite information as to the increase of the velocity with height above the ground. Stevenson recently made observations on this point on winds varying from 2 to 44 miles an hour from the surface up to a height of 50 feet, from which he has drawn the following conclusions :—(1) the spaces passed over in the same time by the wind increase with height above the ground; (2) the curves traced out by these variations of velocity from 15 to 50 feet high coincide most nearly with parabolas (fig. 20)

Fig. 20. having their vertices in a horizontal line 72 feet below the surface ; (3) between 15 feet and the ground there is great disturbance of the currents, so that the symmetry of the curves is destroyed ; (4) the parameters of these parabolas increase directly in the ratio of the squares of the velocities

of the different gales. If x be the velocity of the wind

1 Journal Scottish Meteorological Society, vol. iv. p. 66.

METEOROLOGY

[WIND VELocITy, _

at height H above the ground, the parameter of the corresponding parabola is x?/(H +72); and as « varies the parameter will vary as x? or as the square of the velocity of the gale. It follows that, to render wind observations _ comparable, it is necessary that anemometers be placed at one uniform height above the ground, and that standard height not lower than 15 feet above the surface. It is very desirable that the inquiry were prosecuted up toa height of 100 feet ; and it is of the utmost importance that the variation in the diurnal velocity be at the same time determined at different heights from 15 feet upwards. Stevenson also made wind observations on the Calton Hill, Arthur’s Seat, and the Pentland Hills, in the vicinity — of Edinburgh, up to a height of 1600 feet above sea-level. It is from observations made at stations on knolls and peaks at different heights above the sea, and at different heights above the surfaces of their summits, that the

problem of the variation of the wind's velocity at different heights with the same barometric gradient can be ascer- tained. In carrying the inquiry to considerable heights,

the results cease to be comparable with those obtained

at lower levels, unless in those cases where neighbouring heights are available for data from which the barometric gradient at the observed height can be calculated. The results of observations as to the velocity of atmospheric currents at very great elevations in the atmosphere deduced from the apparent movements of the higher clouds are altogether incomparable with the winds near the surface of the earth, for these among other reasons :—the heights of the clouds can be at best but imperfectly ascertained; the motion of the clouds, particularly the higher clouds, may be only apparent, it being sometimes difficult to distinguish between the formation and dissolution of clouds and their motion ; and above all, since the higher clouds are usually

'the accompaniments of the greater weather changes, their

movements are the result of barometric gradients towards a knowledge of which we are absolutely powerless to take a single step. , As regards surface winds, Clement Ley in 1881, and Whipple more recently and with greater fulness, have calculated the mean wind velocities for twelve gradients,— the gradients being derived from the daily weather charts of the Meteorological Office for the five years 1875 to 1879 at 8 a.m., and the corresponding wind data being obtained from the hourly readings of the Kew anemograph. The barometric gradient is for 15 nautical miles, and the following are the velocities for the twelve gradients on the mean of the year :— Velocity.

Gradient. ° Velocity. Gradient. inch. miles. inch. miles. 0°002 5'0 0°017 150 0°005 70 0°020 16°5 0°007 75 0°022 19°1 0010 9:2 0°025 22°0 0°012 11°6 0°027 22°0 0-015 12°6 0:030 25°5

The influence of season is very strongly marked. The velocities for the same gradients in order are—October to December, 12°5 miles; July to September, 12°6 miles; January to March, 14°8 miles; and April to June,

17-2 miles. From those observations of Whipple it follows that during the six months when the temperature is falling the velocity for the same gradients is least, while the velocity is greatest during the six months when the temperature is rising, and absolutely greatest during the three months ending June, when the greater part of the annual increase of temperature occurs. It is evident that the observed increase in the velocity of the wind for the same gradients is to be referred to the same cause that brings about the diurnal inerease in the wind's velocity, viz. the wind blowing over a warmer surface than itself.

WEATHER MAPS. |

Whipple has also sorted the winds according to the eight points of the compass, with results of the greatest interest. If N.W., N., N.E., and E. winds be grouped together as polar, and S.E., 8, S.W., and W. winds as equatorial winds, the mean hourly velocity of the polar winds, for the same gradients, is 11 miles in excess of the equatorial winds. Now, since polar winds pass into lower latitudes, the surface of the earth over which they blow is warmer, whereas the surface is colder than the equa- torial winds which blow over it. It follows that the increased velocity of polar winds is referable to the same conditions which result in the diurnal increase in the wind's velocity and the greater velocity for the same gradients of winds when the annual temperature is rising, since in all these cases the winds blow over a surface of a higher temperature than their own.

It is evident from these considerations that for the development of the law of the relation of the wind's velocity to the barometric gradient with an exactness sufficient to warrant us in expressing that relation in a general mathematical formula much yet remains to be done. In truth, as regards the various formule submitted by Ferrel, Mohn, Hann, Everett, and others, we have no choice but to allow the justness of Strachan's criticism (Modern Meteorology, p. 98) that the theoretical values furnished by the formule do not accord with the actual values, and that therefore a satisfactory formula is yet to be found. Ere such a formula need be looked for, the conditions must be fulfilled for the preliminary work of sup- plying the observational data required. The "Challenger" observations prove that, with gradients substantially the same, the velocity of the wind is greater on the open sea

than near land ; and we have seen that the velocity varies with the hour of the day, and generally is increased as the temperature of the surface rises above that of the air blow- ing over it, and diminished as the temperature of the surface falls below that of theair. It is evident that observations on the open sea will afford data for the simplest solution of the problem ; but on land the diurnal, seasonal, and non- periodic changes of temperature greatly complicate the problem, and render necessary for its solution observations specially designed for the purpose. It is not easy to see how these can be obtained but by carrying out the plan pro- posed in 1875 by Stevenson of establishing strings of well- equipped meteorological stations planted sufficiently close that the barometric gradients may be determined within the limits of accuracy required. Observations made twelve times daily for a year, at stations so arranged, would supply the observational data for the solution of this funda- mental problem in meteorology. ‘Till some such proposal be carried out, the problem remains unsolved, for barometric gradients based on the widely separated existing stations are too uncertain and rough and the wind observations are wanting in that comparability which alone can satisfy the inquiry.

Weather and Weather Maps.—Weather is the state of the air at any time as respects heat, moisture, wind, rain, cloud, and electricity; and a change of weather implies a change in one or more of these conditions. Of these changes the most important as regards human interests are those which refer to temperature, wind, and rain; and, as these are intimately bound up with the distribution of

atmospheric pressure, the latter truly furnishes the key to weather changes.

These relations are well shown by the International Monthly Weather Maps issued by the United States Signal Service. Of these that for December 1878 is a striking example. This month was characterized over the globe by unusually abnormal weather. A line drawn from Texas to N ewfoundland, across the Atlantic, the north of France, and Germany, thence round to south-east, through the Black Sea, the Caucasus, India, the East India Islands, and

mere okronoG Y

Australia to the South Island of New Zealand, passes through a broad and extended region where pressure was throughout con- siderably below the mean of December, and this low pressure was still further deepened in various regions along the line. An- other line passing from Australia, through the Philippine Islands, Japan, Manehuria, Behring's Strait, and Alaska, also marks out an extensive region where pressure was uninterruptedly below the mean.

On the other hand, pressure was above the average, and generally largely so, over the United States to west of longitude 90°, over Greenland, Iceland, the Faroes, Shetland, and a large portion of the Old Continent bounded by a line drawn from Lapland round by Lake Balkhash, Canton, Peking, to the upper reaches of the Lena. Another area of high pressure extended from Syria, through Egypt and East Africa, to the Cape; and part of a third area of high pressure appeared in the North Island of New Zealand. As regards North Ameriea, the greatest excess of pressure, 0°196 inch above the mean, occurred in the Columbia Valley, from which it gradually fell on proceeding eastward to a defect from the average of 0°146 inch near Lake Champlain and to northward, rising again to near the mean on the north of Nova Scotia. To the north and north-east exceedingly high pressures for these regions and the season prevailed, being 0°635 inch above the mean in Iceland, 0°500 in the south of Greenland, and at the three stations in West Greenland, proceeding northward, 0°445, 0°402, and 0°346 inch.

West Greenland being thus on the west side of the region of high pressure which occupied the northern part of the Atlantic, and on the north-east side of the area of low pressure in the States and Canada, strong south winds set in over that coast, and the tempcrature at the four Greenland stations, proceeding from south to north, rose to 1°71, 8°°8, 12°71, and 14°-4 above the means. As the centre of lowest pressure was in the valley of the St Lawrence about Montreal, strong northerly and westerly winds predominated to westward and southward, where consequently temperature was below the average, the deficiency at Chicago and St Louis being 9°-5; and, winds being easterly and uortherly in California, the tem-

erature there was also under the mean. On the other hand, in the

ew England States, the greater part of the Dominion of Canada, and West Greenland temperature was above the average. Pressure was much higher at St Michael's, Alaska, than to south-westward at St Paul's, Behring's Strait, and hence, while temperature at St Paul's was 2°°9 below the normal, it was 12°°0 above it at St Michael's, where strongly southerly winds ruled. With thesc strong contrasts of pressure, America presented contrasts at least as striking in the distribution of the temperature. Along the south of Lake Michigan the November temperature was 13°°7 above the normal, whilst the December tempcrature was 9°°5 below it, the difference there between the two consecutive months being thus 23°°2.

As regards Europe, Iceland was on the east side of the patch of high pressure which overspread the north of the Atlantic, and hence northerly winds prevailed there and temperature fell 7°'2 below the mean, presenting thus a marked contrast to the high temperature of West Greenland at the time. In Europe, the area of lowest pressure occupied the southern shores of the North Sea, extending thence, though in a less pronounced form, to south-eastward. Hence over the whole of western Europe winds were N.E., N., and in the south-west of Europe W.; and hence everywhere from the North Cape to the north of Italy temperature was below the normal, in some places greatly so, the deficiency being 10°°4 in the south of Norway and 12°:2 in the south of Scotland. On the other hand, on the cast side of this area of low pressure winds were southerly and temperature consequently high. In some localities in Russia the excess above the mean was 15°°0, and over a large proportion of European Russia the excess was not less than 9°:0. This region of high temperature extended eastward into Siberia as far as the Irtish, being coterminous with the western half of the anticyclonic region of high pressure which overspread central Siberia, But over the castern portion of the anticyclone northerly winds prevailed, with the inevitable accompaniment of low ten.- peratures over the whole of Eastern Asia, the deficiency at Ner- tchinsk on the upper Amur being 6°°8. Here again, just as in America, Grecnland, and Iceland, places with atmospheric pressure equally high presented the strongest contrasts of temperature. Thus at Bogoslovsk, on the Ural Mountains, pressure was 0°211 inch and at Nertchinsk 0°154 inch above the normals, but Bogoslovsk on the west side of the high pressure area had a temperature 15°°0 above, whilst at Nertchinsk it was 6°°8 below the average.

At this time of the year the mean pressure falls to the minimum in Australia, but during December 1878 the usually low pressure was still further diminished. Pressure at this season also falls to the annual minimum in the North Pacific and North Atlantic, and it has been seen that the low pressure of these regions was likewise still further diminished. But in the ease of the Atlantic it was attended with a most important differenee. The centre of lowest pressure, usually located to the south-west of Iecland, was removed some hundreds of miles to the south-east, and an unwonted development of extraordinarily high pressure appeared to the north-

ward, overspreading the extensive region of Baffin's Bay, Greenland, Iceland, Faroes, and Shetland. It was to this region of high pres- sure, particularly in its relations to the low-pressure region to the south-east of it, that the extreme severity of the weather in the British Islands at the time was due. Now this high-pressure region was intimately connected with, and doubtless occasioned directly by, upper atmospheric currents from the widely extended region of low pressure to southward, with its large centres of still lower pressure in the North Sea, mid-Atlantic, and United States, wherc pressures were respectively 0°307, 0°322, and 0°146 inch under the normals. 'Thus, with the single exception of the high-pressure area about Greenland, the ineteorological peculiarities which render December 1878 so memorable over nearly the whole globe arose out of a distribution of the earth's atmosphere essentially the same that obtains at that time of the year, but the usual irregularities in the distribution of the pressure appeared in more pronounced characters.

Taking the all-important bearings of these areas of high and low pressure on weather and climate into consideration, along with the abnormal concentration of aqueous vapour over extensive regions which they imply, it is evident that, when the meteorologist will be in a position to forecast, on scientific grounds, the weather of the coming season for the British Islands, it is to the Atlantic he will require to look for the data on which thé forecast is based.

These questions, which the International Weather Maps of the United States enable us to discuss, are of the first importance in meteorology, whether we

consider the ampli- tude of the atmospheric changes they disclose (these being often so vast as to embrace four continents at one time, besides being profoundly interesting from their direct bearings on the food supplies and commercial intercourse of nations) or regard the larger problems they present, with hints towards their solution, which underlie physical geography, climatology, and other branches of atmospheric physics. The discussion presents the great atmospheric changes as influenced by oceans and continents, including the subordinate but important parts played by mountain ranges, extensive plateaus, and physically well-defined river basins in determining the development, course, and termination of these changes.

Weather Forecasts and Storm Warnings.—It is in tropical and subtropical countries that an isolated observer may, with a close approximation to certainty, predict the approach of gales and hurricanes. In these regions atmo- spheric pressure and the other meteorological conditions are so constant from day to day that any deviation, even a slight one, from the average of the hour and season in respect of pressure, the direction and strength of the wind, and the direction and amount of cloud, implies the presence of a storm at no great distance. Dr Meldrum has practically worked out this problem at Mauritius with great success. At the Royal Alfred Observatory there the mean pressure at sea-level in January at 9 a.m. is 29°966 inches, from which it falls to 29°904 inches at 4 p.M., then rises to 29-980 inches at 10 p.m., and again falls to 29°927 at 4 A.M. The mean direction of the wind and the diurnal varia- tion, both as regards direction and force, have been stated (p. 125). Suppose then that the barometer is observed to fall after 9 A.M. more rapidly than is due to the usual daily barometric tide, that in the afternoon it does not indicate the second maximum or that it continues to fall instead of rising,—or suppose, in short, any deviation from the mean daily march,—then it is certain that there is somewhere an atmospherical disturbance near enough to Mauritius to influence the pressure. The direction in which the disturbance is from Mauritius is readily known from the wind, and the distance of the storm closely approximated to by noting the rate and amount of the fall of the barometer, in connexion with the changes of the wind and the clouds,—the rate and progressive motion of the storm being known chiefly from the veerings of the wind. For a good many years past notifications have

HET HOR OLOE®

-fact that the British Islands are immediately bounded by

winds are northerly and easterly and temperature low, and —

[WEATHER FORECASTS,

been sent to the daily newspapers when observations show — that a storm is not far from the island, stating its position and probable course from day to day. The scheme of storm warnings at Mauritius has been entirely successful, and the result is of great value, since it shows what may be done at an isolated station in the ocean, or what may be done in ships at sea. In this connexion it is not possible to overestimate the importance to seamen of a knowledge of the hourly variations of the barometer and its mean monthly heights over the ocean tracks of commerce.

In passing from Mauritius to the British Islands we pass from a region where the forecasting of storms and weather is simplest and easiest to the region where it is most complex and difficult, particularly for the western districts of these islands. The great difficulty lies in the

the Atlantic to westwards; and, since practically every storm and nearly all weather changes come from that direction, no telegraphic communication of their approach can be received. ‘The Meteorological Office in London has therefore no choice but to base the forecasts on such of the observations telegraphed to the office as experience has shown to be the precursors of storms and other weather changes. The more important of these observations are the falling and rising of the barometer taken in connexion with changes in the direction and force of the wind. Since on the north side of the track of the centre of the storm

on the south side winds are southerly and westerly and temperature high, one of the most important points to be ascertained is the probable path the centre of the coming storm will take. Though a good deal remains to be accomplished in the development of this phase of storms, yet much has recently been done in this direction by close examination of the changes of pressure in the region of the anticyclone contiguous to the advancing storm

and by the changing positions of the rain area near the centre of the cyclone.
:

As regards Europe, the facility of forecasting storms increases as distance from the west coasts is increased. Thus to the middle and eastern districts of the British Islands, were a day and night watch established in the west, forecasts ~~of almost every storm could be issued, the exceptions being those small cyclones or satellite cyclones, as they are called, originating within the British Islands themselves, which are frequently characterized at once by their severity and by the rapidity of their onward course. In the United States, the system of weather forecasting 1s perhaps the best in temperate regions,—a result due to the admirable system organized and developed under the direction of the late General Myer, and adequately sub~~ sidized by the Government, but above all to the facilities to detect and track the storms in the region where nearly all of them have their origin, to west of the Mississippi, before they advance upon the more thickly peopled States.

Meteorology sustained a heavy loss by the death in 1877 of Leverrier, who was not only the keenest-sighted of physicists but also the prince of organizers of systems of meteorological observation. His last great service to the science was the establishment of a system of observation, by which the propagation of rain, hail, and other weather phenomena could be followed and recorded from commune to commune over France. ‘This scheme for the investiga- tion of the vitally important bearing on the meteorology of a country of a comprehensive observation of its rainfall, hail, and thunderstorms, through numerous observers possessing sound local information, is not only eminently just in science, but is calculated to be attended with the greatest benefits to agricultural and other public interests. The practical advantages of the scheme, it need scarcely

be added, can only be reaped after a very large expendi- ture of labour and money in organizing a comprehensive parochial scheme of observation, systematically and per- sistently carried through and discussed.

Further details regarding meteorological phenomena will be found in the articles ATMOSPHERE, BAROMETER, CuimaTE, Hycrometry Ozonz,

RaincaucE, SEA, and T0ERMOMETER. (A. B.)

TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM.

1. In the preceding portion of thisarticle some account has been given of the influence which the sun and moon exert upon the air, the earth, and the ocean, their strictly tidal effects being left to be ‘separately dealt with. The discussion of the influence of these bodies on what may be termed the movables of the earth will not be complete, however, without embracing an account of the changes wliich they produce in the eartl’s magnetism. An account of the earlier magnetic observations has already been given under the heading MaGNneTIsM, and our task will now be to give in the first place a description of the best and most recent instruments by which the magnetic state of the earth is determined, embracing therein observatory instruments, those adapted for travellers whether by land or by sea, and differential magnetometers. We shall next give a short account of the magnetic system of the earth and of its secular variation; and we shall then investigate the changes con- nected with terrestrial magnetism depending on the sun and moou. In performing this task we shall be led to conclude that the sun’s power is variable, and we shall therefore examine whether this con- clusion is likewise borne out by strictly meteorological observations. Finally, we shall venture on remarks embodying a provisional working hypothesis, and our object will be gained if this should be found to suggest certain lines of thought to those interested in the subject which may lead them to examine and discuss the very great mass of observations at present existing.

INSTRUMENTS FOR DETERMINING THE MAGNETIC STATE OF THE EARTH.

(a) Observatory Instruments.

2. Declinometer.—It is that end of the needle which points to the north magnetic pole of the earth of which the position is invari- ably noted even when the observation is made in the southern hemisphere. The difference of this position from true geographical north denotes what is called the variation or declination (east or west) of the needle. East is often reckoned negative and west positive. The instrument by which this information is

obtained. is ealled the declinometer. The unifilar magnetometer, which is the form of declinometer now used, is described and figured in MAGNETISM, vol. xv. p. 238.

3. Dip Circle.—The instrument by which the magnetic dip or inclination is observed contains a thin needle about 3 inchies long, the centre of gravity of which coincides as accurately as possible with the axis of motion of the needle. The needle has two axles consisting of two very fine cylinders of hard steel standing at right angles to the plane of the needle, and great attention must be paid to keep these axles in a state of perfect polish and dryness. By means of these the needle can oscillate freely on two horizontal agate rounded edges, the one axle lying on the one edge and the other axle on the other. If the centre of gravity coincides exactly with the axis of motion, and if there be no adhesion or friction between the axles and the agate edges, the ueedle must settle into such a position that its magnetic axis lies in the true line of dip.

The position of the ends of the needle is read by means of two microscopes which move round on a cross piece carrying verniers. To view the position of the lower end of the needle we move round the lower microscope until the cross wire in its field of view (extend- ing in the line between the two microscopes) symmetrically cuts the extremity of the needle. The lower vernicr isthen read. The same process is repeated for the upper vernier, and the mean of the two readings is taken. This mean will accurately denote the position of the needle if the circle is properly set.

The sources of error in a dip observation are—(1) a want of symmetry in_mass, the centre of gravity of the necdle not being coincident with the axis of motion; (2) the vertical circle being erroneously set ; (3) a want of symmetry in magnetism, the mag- netic axis not being coincident with the axis of figure; (4) excen- tricity, the axis of rotation of the ncedle not passing through the centre of the circle ; (5) friction and adhesion of the axles as they test on their agate supports. This last source of error is guarded against by taking great carc of the axles, and by inserting them gently into a piece of cork before each observation ; the agate supports ought also to be rubbed with cork. Then, again, when the needle has assumed its position, before reading it is geutly raised by means of a lifter, the handle for turning

which is shown in the figure towards the right. It is then gently lowered, and this pro-

cess is repeated until no apparent change of position is produced by the operation.

4, We shall now describe a complete dip observation. The first point is to make the needle to swing in the plane of the magnetic meridian. In order to accomplish this, after levelling the instru- ment, the verniers are set for 90°, that is, for a vertical position of the needle. The whole instrument is now turned round its hori- zontal circle until the extremities of the needle are bisected by the wires of the two microscopes, and the position of the vernier of the horizontal circle is then read. ‘The needle is next reversed so that the microscope shall view its other flat side; it is made vertical as before, and the position of the horizontal circle read once more. Next the face of the instrument is turned round 180°, and the same two operations repeated. We have thus four readings of the hori- zontal circle, and if we take the mean of these we shall have ascer- tained with sufficient accuracy the position of that plane for which the needle is vertical. Now this plane must be removed 90° from the magnetic meridian, for in such a planc the horizontal magnetic force of the earth would have no resolved portion acting in the plane of the needle’s motion, so that the needle would practically be under the sole influence of the vertical magnetic force, aud would therefore point in a vertical direction. By this means therefore we obtain the magnetic meridian, and thus know the plane in which we ought to swing the needle. The needle must now be read in the following positions:—(a) face of instrument east—face of needle to face of instrument ; (8) face of instrument west—face of needle to face of instrument ; (vy) face of instrument west—back of needle to face of instrument ; (5) face of instrument ecast—back of needle to face of instrument. Finally, the poles of the needle must be reversed, by rubbing them with powerful bar magnets in a direction opposite to that in which they were previously rubbed, and four observations taken corresponding tothe above. ‘The mean of the eight observations so obtained will give us the true dip.

The turning round of the face of the instrument from east to west is made to counteract any error due to erroneous setting of the vertical circle. The reversal of the face of the needle is made to counteract any error due to the centre of gravity of the needle not being quite coincident in the direction of the needle's breadth with its axis of motion, and likewise any error due to want of symmetry of the magnetic axis. The correction for excentricity is made by reading both ends of the needle. Finally, the reversing of the poles of the needle is intended to counteract any error due to tle ceutre of gravity of the needle uot being coincident in the direction of the needle's length with its axis of notion.

Dr Joule! has suggested a modification of the dip circle in which the needle is hung on fine threads on which it rolls instead of rest- ing on agate supports.

5. Horizontal Force Magnctomcter.—The theory of the instrument for determining the horizontal component of the earth's magnetie force has already becn given in the article Magnetism, vol. xv. pp. 238 sg., and the instrument is shown in two forms, '¢did., figs. 28 and 29. The corrections necessary for accurate results are explained in a paper by G. M. Whipple (Proc. Roy, Soc., 1877).

(8B) Instruments adapted for Travellers by Land.

6. Declinometer.—For travellers by land the unifilar instrument (§ 2), mounted on a tripod stand and duly levelled, is perhaps the most accurate kind of declinometer.

For this purpose it is furnished with a transit mirror by means of which an image of the sun may be thrown into the field of view of the telescope, and —the geographical position of the station as well as the apparent time of the observation being known—an azimuth thus determined. In order that such an observation may: succeed, the following points must receive attention.

In the first place the axis of the mirror must be horizontal; the adjustment for this is made by means of a riding level. Secondly, the normal to the plane of the mirror must be perpendicular to the axis. The adjustment for this is made by a screw attached to the baek of the mirror. Take some object

sufficiently elevated and reflect it into the telescope, getting the object bisected by the wire of the telescope. Then reverse the mirror in its bearings. If the object remains still bisected by the wire no correction requires to be made, but if not the screw at the back of the mirror must be moved until the object is in precisely the same position in both observations. Thirdly, the line of collimation of the tclesecope must be perpendicular to the plane of the mirror. In order to obtain this there is a collimating eye-piece attached to the telescope by which the sun's light may be made to illuminate the cross wires. Now turn the transit mirror until the reflexion of the illuminated cross wires coincides with the wires themselves, in which case the line of collimation of the telescope must be perpendicular to the plane of the mirror. When this correction has been once made, note the circle reading of a small verniecr which moves with the mirror and always set the mirror so as to give this reading.

1 Proc, Lit. and Phil. Society, Manchester, vol. viii. p. 171.

By these means an accurate reading of the sun's bearing may be made ; and, the position of the place and the time of observation being known, there are tables which enable the azimuth to be at once determined.

7. Lloyd's Method of Determining the Total Foree.—While the dip circle and the horizontal force magnetometer may be used by travellers in addition to their use as observatory instruments, the Rev. Dr Lloyd has devised a new method of determining the total force. Tht ordinary method of obtaining this is first to find the

dip and the horizontal force, from which the total force can be at.

once determined by the equation, —total foree=horizontal force x secant dip. This method is, however, open to objection in high magnetic latitudes where the horizontal foree is very small and the dip approaches 90°. Now in Lloyd's method this objection is over- come. Another circumstance which renders his method pecuharly convenient for high magnetic latitudes, where a traveller's equip- ment must be kept as light as possible, is the fact that it only requires the addition of two needles to an ordinary dip circle in order

to give the required determination. These needles must be carefully kept from contact with other magnets, and their poles never reversed.

Here as before we have two unknown quantities to determine, the one being the magnetic moment of the magnet and the other the total force of the earth. We must, therefore, obtain two results, the one embodying the product of the earth's total foree into the magnetic moment of the needle, while the other gives the ratio between these two quantities.

8. In order to determine the former of these, let the needle have a grooved wheel of radius r attached to its axle as in fig. 21, and over this wheel let an accurately known weight W be

\\\ f

/

penny

sa —— Fe

6=

Fig. 21.—Dip Cirele.

suspended by means of a very fine silk thread. The best way of doing this is to have a thread with two hooks of preeisely equal weight at each end and then attach the preponderating weight W to one of these hooks. When this is done a new position of 'equili- brium will be taken by the needle. If we suppose that m denotes the magnetic moment of the needle, that 7 is the angle of dip at the

place, and that 7 denotes the angle which the needle in its deflected |

position makes with the horizon, the weighting being so made that 7» shall be less than 7, then it is clear that the needle has been defleeted out of its position of equilibrium through an angle 7-7. If we call this angle w and designate by R the total force at the place, we obtain the following equation of equilibrium :— mRsinu=Wr . 2s te ars (2);

on the supposition (which is very nearly but not strictly correct) that W denotes a constant force at all latitudes.

9. Next, in order to determine the ratio between this needle's force and that of the earth, let it be removed and employed to deflect another substituted in its place.

METEOROLOGY

_observed by means of an azimuth compass

[TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM,

When using it thus as a deflector it should be laid in a frame in an invariable position as in fig. 21. This frame is at right angles to the line between the two microscopes, and as both pieces move together the best plan is to turn the whole round until the deflected needle is visible in the centre of the field of the microscopes, in which position it is of course perpendicular to the deflecting needle. By always keeping to this arrangement we secure an invariable distance between the poles of the two needles. Suppose therefore that we have employed the needle as a deflector in the above manner, and that the deflected needle has thus been made to assume a position denoting an angle 7' with the horizon. It has therefore been deflected from its position of equilibrium by an angle ¢— 7! (4 denoting the dip as before); calling this angle of deflexion w', we obtain — the following equation of equilibrium :—

Rsinw =mU

(2),

U being a function depending upon the distance of the needles and on the distribution of free magnetism in them.

10. If we multiply together equations (1) and (2), we obtain

R'sin wsin wu' =UWr (3), in which wu, w' are determined by observation, while W and r may be regarded as constants. U is, as we have said, a

function de- pending upon the distance of the two needles and upon the distri- bution of free magnetism in them.

The magnetic moment of these needles is of course liable to altera- tion, but if they are carefully guarded from contact with magnets we may imagine that while their intensity alters, becoming weaker for instance, this nevertheless does not sensibly affect the distribu- tion of the free magnetism within them, in which case the funetion U may be regarded as constant quantity. The results obtained by this method of Lloyd's fully confirm this hypothesis regarding U;; but it is essential that the two additional needles, the deflector and the deflected needle, should have their poles at no time either reversed: or disturbed.

Assuming therefore the constancy of the quantity U, its value may be easily determined at any base station where the total force has been determined independently by the ordinary method. a

11. Having thus determined the value of U, or at once of UWr (which we 'may call c), let us carry our instrument to a different station and make the requisite observations. We thus obtain

c B™ AS Saul ho ata (4).

As this method is specially adapted for high latitudes, the dip circle employed (fig. 21) ought to be one for which the agate supports are horizontal, so as to adinit of the needle being visible when the dip is nearly equal to 90°. It will also be noticed that, if the deflecting — needle have the same temperature when it is used in equation (1) which it has when used in equation (2), then m in the one case is strictly equal to m in the other, and thus no temperature correction is rendered necessary.

12. A slight modification of the method now described is some- times adopted. Instead of employing separate weights, which may be easily lost, two small holes are bored in the deflecting needle near each end. The one of these is filled with a suitably heavy brass peg when the observations are to be made in the higher magnetic latitudes of the northern hemisphere, and the other is filled in a similar manner when the observations are to be made near the southern pole. In this case therefore we must readjust the

instrument as we pass from the one hemisphere to the other. A slight change must be made in the formula when this method is adopted, for it is clear that the weight will not now aet always at the same constant leverage. If the weight be called W and its leverage when the needle is horizontal 7, we shall have to modify equation (1) as follows:—

mRsinu=Wrceosy (a

Equation (2) will, however, remain unaltered, and hence equation (8) will become ;

R’sinusinw’ =UWreosy . . . + » (6). If the quantity UWr be determined at the base station and called c’, we shall have R= if he de 2 + «ie a en (7). sin wsin wv :

(y) Instruments adapted for Travellers by Sea. 13. Azimuth Compass.—At sea the declination is generally invented by Kater This is exhibited in fig. 22, It consists of a magnet with a graduated compass card attached to it. At the side of the instru- ment opposite the eye there is a frame which projects upwards

| from the plane of the instrument in a nearly vertical direction, and

this frame contains a wide rectangular slit cut into two parts Dy a wire extending lengthwise. The eye-piece is opposite this frame, and the observer is supposed to point the instrument in such a

_the eye is to be so placed that pre-

TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM. |

manner that the wire above mentioned shall bisect the sun’s visible disk. There is a totally reflecting glass prism which throws into the eye-piece an image of the scale of the graduated card, so that the observer, having first bisected the sun’s disk by the wire, must next read the division of the scale which is in the middle of the field of view. He thus obtains a reading of the sun’s position ; let uscall this 100°. From this, knowing the geographical posi- tion of his station and the time of the observation, he may de- duce an

azimuth ; let us imagine that this is 70° W. Thus a reading of 100° corresponds to aposition 70° W. Suppose next that the instrument is so ad- justed that when the magnetic & axis of the magnet is between Mi Tm = the eye-piece and the wire the a reading is 0°. It is thus clear cn that the magnetic meridian is 100° removed from the position 70° W. Let us imagine that the instrument is so graduated that this denotes a position 30° E. We have thus obtained the ar netic declination. If the vessel be at rest the plan generally adopted is to take the reading of the sun when rising and also when setting; a mean between the two will give that which cor- responds to a geographical meridian.

14. Fox's Dip Cirele.—This instrument, contrived by Robert Were Fox, is more especially useful for observations at sea. In this case it must be placed on a gimball stand and duly levelled before commencing the observation. The following are the peculi- arities of this instrument :—(1) the needles have two fine pivots or axles which are inserted into jewelled sockets ; (2) in order to avoid parallax there are two graduated circles, the one farther from the eye than the other, and when reading the needle

' Fig. 22,—Azimuth Compass.

ciscly the same reading shall be given by both circles,—the true position of the needle being thus obtained; (3) there is a rubber made of bone or ivory and roughened, the object of which is to rub a prolongation of the socket on the back of the instrument,—the fric- tion which this rubbing causes enabling the needle to find its true position; (4) to avoid as much as possible all effects due to friction and adhesion, the entire socket arrangement may be turned round. The axles of the needle are thus compelled to be in contact with a different set of particles. An- other way of varying the suspension is to use a magnetic deflecting arrange-

17. Early in the history of such instruments it was found that hourly observations were exceedingly laborious, and attempts were made to construct a set of self-recording magnetometers. 'he first set of such

instruments which were brought into systematic opera- tion were those devised and constructed by the late Charles Brooke, which have been at continuous work in the Greenwich Observatory since 1848. In 1857 John Welsh devised a fresh set of self-record- ing instruments, and introduced them into the Kew Observatory. These, with certain slight modifications, have formed the type of ° instruments supplied to a large number of magnetie observatories all over the globe.

18. As we cannot conveniently record changes of dip by a differential instrument, changes of vertical force are measured instead by a balance or vertical force magnetometer. We have thus in a differential system, whether adapted to eye observation or to continuous photographic registration, three instruments, namely, the declination, the horizontal force, and the vertical force mag- netometers or magnetographs as the case may be. The most recently constructed instruments are adapted both for photographie registration and for eye observation through a telescope. The advantage of eye observations is that we see what is taking place at the very moment of its occurrence, whereas we only obtain the phologeapiite record some time after the changes to which it relates have actually happened.

Weshall therefore describe—(a) the three instruments of the Kew pattern as adapted to eye observations ; (8) these instruments as adapted to continuous registration by photography ; (y) the method of determining their cf coefficients ; (5) the method of determin- ing the temperature coefficients of the force instruments.

19. Kew Instruments—LEye Observations.—Fig. 23 shows us these instruments arranged in the relative positions recommended by Lloyd so as magnetically to interfere with one another as little as

oS _ Sar

py

P

Okay. a Fah] , nt a

ment attached to the back of the

apparatus. Suppose that a reading

of the position of the needle so de-

flected is now taken. Next reverse

the position of the deflecting arrangement, which is done by turn- ing a movable circle attached to this arrangement 180° round; let the position of the needle be again read. On the hypothesis that the needle is equally deflected on opposite sides of its true position in these two observations, the mean reading will give the true

dip. The principle of the method of observing with this circle is |

precisely the same as that already described for observations on shore with an ordinary inclinometer.

_ 15. Fox's Intensity Arrangement is merely a modification of that introduced by Lloyd, and already described in § 7.2

(3) Differential Magnetometers and Self-Recording Magnetographs. 16. In addition to determinations at fixed intervals of time, it is a point of much interest and importance to keep a continuous record of all the magnetic changes which take place at a few selected stations. This is accomplished by means of differential magneto- meters. It is, however, necessary to continue to use absolute

instruments side by side with differential magnetometers, because

the latter (with the exception of the declination instrument) are badly fitted for recording changes of long period, such as the secular changes of the horizontal and the vertical force. The reason of this will presently be seen.

1A great deal of detailed information regarding instruments for absolute deter- mination and the methods of observing with them isto be found in the Admiralty Manual of Scientific Inquiry in an artiele on 'Terrestrial

Magnetism," by Sabine and Welsh. A treatise on Terrestrial and Cosmical Magnetism, by E. Walker, may likewise be consulted with much advantage.

Fig. 23.—Kew Instruments.

ossible. We are supposed to be viewing the whole from the south.

o. 1 to the right is the declination instrument, No. 2 that for the horizontal force, and No. 3 in the distance behind the central pillar (No. 4) the vertical force magnetometer. Figs. 24, 25, 26 give us the details of these three instruments in the same order as above. Connected with each instrument there is a circular mirror, or rather two semicircular mirrors, made of perfectly plane glass. One semicircular half of each mirror is attached to the magnet and moves with it, while the other half is firmly attached to the

'marble slab. Each magnet is enclosed in a gun-metal case with

windows of perfectly plane glass ; eacli gun-metal case is covered with a glass shade; and the whole is air-tight, and capable of exhaustion. Each magnet too is provided with a copper damper with the view of checking its oseileations, In fig. 23 will be seen two pillars of smaller size. The right-hand pillar carries a tele- scope, with a scale attached, to record the position of the declination magnet. The scale is reflected from the semicircular mirror moving with the magnet, and the position of this reflected scale as viewed in the telescope indicates the position of the magnet. The optical arrangement for the other instruments is similar, except that the vertical force mirror has a horizontal and not a vertical axis. The telescopes for viewing the force instruments are attached to the left-hand pillar of smaller size. .

20. The Declinometer ? (fig. 24) consists of a magnet about 5 inches long suspended by a silk thread freed from torsion as completely as

2 For a detailed account cf the Kew magnetographs, sce British Association

Reports, 1859. XVI. — 21

possible. To keep the state of the thread constant the glass shade should be rendered air-tight, and should contain some substance for absorbing moisture, such as chloride of calcium. It is clear that if the state of the thread remains =

the same, and if the position of the magnetic axis of the magnet docs not change, this instrument -should record faithfully the various changes of declination.

The Horizontal Force Magneto- meter is exhibited in fig. 25. Here the magnet! has been twisted round into a position at right angles to the magnetic meridian. It is sus- pended by means of two very fine steel wires some little distance apart, and thus the instrument is often called the bifilar magneto- meter. These wires have the plane passing through their lower ex- tremities differing very consider- ably from that of their upper. If tho magnet should suddenly lose its magnetism the whole arrange- ment would be twisted round until the two planes coincided. This differenee of plane gives rise to a couple tending to twist the magnet round in one direction while the horizontal magnetic force of the earth constitutes an equal and opposite couple, the two couples keeping the magnet in equilibrium. The couple depending upon the bi- filar arrangement may — for the present be re- – =

arded as eonstant, that : § epending on the hori- Fia. 24.— Deelinometer. zontal force of the earth as variable. If the latter increase or diminish, the magnet will be slightly twisted round in one direction or the other.

In the Vertical Foree Magnetometer (fig. 26), the magnet is balanced by means of a knife-edge resting on an agate plane. B means of two screws working hori- zontally and vertieally the centre of gravity may be thrown to either side of the point of suspension, or it may be raised or lowered and the sensibility of the magnet when balanced thereby inereased or diminished. These screws are so arranged that there is a preponder- ance of weight towards the south side of the magnet. This is neutralized partly by the magnetic foree tending to pull the north end down and. partly by a slip of brass standing out horizontally towards the north side. Let us suppose the system to be in equilibrium at a eertain temperature ; if the tem- perature rise (since brass expands more than steel), the leverage of the weight at the

north side will increase more than that of the weight at the south. There will thus be a slight preponderance towards the north, and _ = this may be arranged & so as to neutralize to a great extent the de- crease in the magnetie & moment which an in- & crease of temperature : : produces. =

21. Magnetographs. Fic. 25.—Horizontal Foree Magnetometer. —The arrangement by means of which these instruments are con- verted into self-recording magnetographs is very simple. In fig. 23 we see a gas flame burning behind a vertical slit and placed end- wise in order to render its light more intense. The light from this illuminated slit passes through a lens, and being reflected from the mirror of the declination magnet throws an image of the

= = ==

1 All the magnets are of the same size.

slit upon some sensitized paper in the central box. To speak more properly, two images are thrown, one reflected from the upper and movable half and the other from the fixed half of the mirror, The sensitive paper is wrapped round a horizontal cylinder (fig. 27), and the two images are therefore thrown upon different parts of

Fig. 26.—Vertieal Foree Magnetométer.

this cylinder. But before reaching the cylinder these two images are by means of a hemicylindrical lens (shown in fig. 27) crushed into two dots of light. The cylinder moves round regularly by clock-work once in twenty-four hours, and hence the eourse on the moving paper of the dot of light which comes from the fixed half- mirror will be a straight line, while that of the dot from the moving half-mirror will be a curved line depending on the motions < a magnet. When the paper is devcloped theso lines appear ack,

The arrangement for the horizontal force instrument is precisely similar to that for the deelinometer ; for the vertical force it is somewhat differcnt, the illuminated slit being horizontal and not vertical, while the mirror oscillates on a horizontal axis and not on a vertieal one ; the hemieylindrical lens too and the cylinder are vertical and not horizontal. It was found necessary to put the plane of motion of the vertical force magnet 15° out of the magnetic meridian for the following reason. The axes of the telescopes are respectively 30° inclined to the tubes which go from the magneto-

—

Ny

| pi ¢

eM

x sl

Fic, 27.Magnetograph.

meters to the central box, and hence had the vertical force magnet swung in the magnetic meridian it would have becn necessary to place the mirror inclined at the angle of 15° to the axis of motion of the magnet. This was tried, but it was found that in this posi- tion of the mirror the correction for temperature was so excessive that the instrument became a thermometer and not a magnetometer. The mirror was therefore put in a plane passing through the axis of motion of the needle, the needle being made to move in a plane inclined 15° to the magnetic meridian.

22. Scale Coefficients of Differential Instruments.—It is necessary to know the value of one division of the scale in the magnetometer or of one inch difference in the ordinate of the curve impressed on the photographic paper in the magnetograph. In the declination instrument it is only necessary to obtain the angular deviation cor responding to one division, and this may be done at once by a series of measurements. In the horizontal and vertical force instruments we wish to obtain the value of one division in parts of force. There is more than one method by which this can be accomplished,

but that of John Allan Broun is probably the simplest, and it is, we believe, the one adopted at most of the various observatories pos- sessing self-recording instruments. It is given in the British Association Reports, 1859.

23. Temperature Coefficients of Differential Force Instruments.— Broun has devoted a great deal of attention to the subject of these coefficients, and has come to the eonclusion that the best and most unobjectionable method of determining them 18 to

compare the instrumental readings on days when the tempera- ture is high with the readings on days when the temperature is

.. By differential instruments the components of a force affeet- ing the maguet are determined in three directions at right angles to each other. It does not, however, follow that this force is entirely due to changes in the magnetism of the earth, We know that certain forees connected with the sun affect the earth's mag- netism, and on certain occasions at least these forces manifest them- selves as currents in the upper regions of the atmosphere and in the crust of the earth. Nowsuch currents will have a direct effect upon the needle as well as an indirect effect through the changes whieh they may produce in the magnetism of the earth. The total influence on the needle will therefore be made up of these two ele- ments, the one denoting the direct influence on the needle of the disturbing foree, and the other the indirect influence through the change produced in the earth's magnetism. No attempt has yet been made to separate the action of these two elements.

25. Self-reeording instruments after the Kew pattern have beeu supplied to observatories at the following places :—

Batavia. Mauritius,

Coimbra (Portugal). Kolaba (Bombay). Lisbon. Vienna.

St Petersburg. Zi Ka Wei (China). Florence. San Fernando (Spain). Stonyhurst. Potsdain.

Utrecht (declination only). Brussels,

Melbourne. Nice.

There are also self-recording magnetographs of other patterns at Toronto, Montsouris (Paris), Greenwich, Wilhelmshaven (?), Cape Horn, and Havana (?).

We understand that Professor W. G. Adams is at present engaged in making a comparison of simultaneous curves from vari- ous stations of these lists.

MAGNETIC PoLES oF THE EARTH—SECULAR VARIATION.

26. Magnetic Poles of the Earth.—In the article MAGNETISM it has been shown that Dr Gilbert of Colchester had at a very early period grasped the important truth that the earth is a magnet, a truth which was afterwards mathematically demonstrated by Gauss. It was reserved for Halley, the contemporary of Newton, to show that the earth must be regarded as having two poles in the northern and two poles also in the southern hemisphere, so that, unlike ordinary magnets, its magnetic system has four poles altogether. Before proceeding further it will be desirable to state what it was that Halley actually did and what are the conclusions to be derived from his investigations. It has been remarked by Professor Stokes that, while in an ordinary bar magnet we may practically regard the pole as having a physical reality and as being the cause of well- known attractions and repulsions, we are not entitled a priori to assume that a point of maximum force in a large spherical magnet like the earth must necessarily be the scat of attractions and repul- sions after the same manner as the pole of an ordinary bar magnet. It is to be determined by observation to what extent the earth actually preserves an analogy to an ordinary magnet. Now Halley's conclusions were derived from the pointing of the declination needle, since in his day there were no observations possible on total magnetic force. He argued that there are two points or poles in the northern hemisphere to which the needle appears to be attracted, one in the upper region of America and one above Siberia. So far this conclusion is hardly anything more than a formal one derived from the grouping together of observations, He asserted that these would be as they are known to be if we imagine two such poles or foci of force each exercising a causal influence

on the magnetic needle, And the justification of Halley's way of regarding the earth is found in the fact that when force observations came to be made two such foei of force were actually found to exist. We do not,

however, mean to imply that these foci have causal properties exactly similar to the poles of a bar magnet, for this is not the case.

In order to exhibit the process of reasoning which led Halley to his conclusion, let us first imagine that the earth has only a single pole or force-focus in the northern hemisphere, and that this is coincident with its geographical pole; then, assuming that this pole has a causative influence on the needle's declination, we should – tig all needles to point everywhere due north. If, however, this pole be not coincident with the north pole of the earth, let us draw a meridian cirele passing through the magnetic pole and complete

_ itround the earth so as to divide the earth into two halves. At all Shy a We are indebted to Mr Gordon—and to his publishers Messrs Sampson Low &

-» Who have obtained them for us—for the sketches of the instruments for absolute determinations, with the exception of that of Kater's eompass, for which we are indebted to Mr J. J. Hicks. For the sketch of the self-reeording mag-

Me etphs together and in detail we are indebted to the Kew eomnmittce and to 1G. M. Whipple, direetor of the Kew Observatory.

METEOROLOGY

163

points in this meridian circle the needle might be expected to point due north, while in the one half of the earth so divided it should point to the east and in the other half to the west of true north. — In the next place let us imagine that the earth has two north mag- netic poles or foci of equal strength, both being at the same latitude, while their difference in longitude is 180°, and let us draw a com- plete circle of meridian passing through these poles (fig. 28). Let us start from a point in this circle under one of

these poles and pursue our journey eastwards along a circle of latitude. At first the needle will point due north. As we move east- wards the needle will point west- wards to the pole we are leaving until we come to a region half-way between the two poles, where it will be equally solicited by each, and will therefore again point due north. Let us call the space we have travel-led over since we set out A. As we proceed the needle will now be under the predominant influence of the second pole to our right, and will therefore point to the east until we arrive at the meridian under the second pole. This second space which we have travelled over let us eall B. As we proceed we pass through a space C where the needlo again points to the west until being once more equally influenced by the two poles it will point due north. After this we pass through a space D of easterly variation until we arrive once more at the point from which we started.

Thus there are now four spaces instead of two, and these are shown in fig. 28, where the centre of the circlo represents tho north geographical pole of the earth, and its circumference the equator. If polo 2 be inferior in power to pole 1 the spaces B and © will be smaller in size than A and D.

27. This last is an arrangement of things that agrees very well with the results of observation, if we add that the two poles are not precisely 180° removed from one another in longitude. Fig. 302 represents lines of equal magnetic variation in 1882. There are two lines extending throughout both hemispheres at all points of which there is no variation, and also an oval-shaped district in the northern hemisphere throughout all points in the circumference of which we have no variation. These facts are inconsistent with the hypothesis of a single pole, but they are quite consistent with that of two poles or foci of force, one in northern America and the other in northern Asia, the former being stronger than the latter. In order to see this let us take our stand at the great line of no varia- tion which passes through North America and travel eastwards. We are just south of the American Lg or focus, while the Asiatic pole or focus is nearly 180° off, and hence the needle points due north. As we proceed eastwards we leave the American or strongest pole to the westward of us, and hence we have a region of west variation which we have agreed to call A. As we begin to approach the eastern side of Europe we get nearer the Asiatic pole or focus, and at length the line of no variation is reached, tho tendency of the American pole to

pull the needle to the west being balanced by the tendency of the Asiatic pole to pull it to the east. After this, easterly variation predominates throughout a region B until at length we come to a point in the western boundary of the oval where’ we may imagine ourselves to be direetly south of the Asiatic pole, while the American pole is nearly 180° distant; once more the needle points due north. As we still travel eastwards we leave the Asiatic pole, which is now the predominant one, to our left, and hence we have here a region C of westerly declination. At length we come to the eastern boundary of the oval, where the tendency of the Asiatic pole to pull the needle to the west is balanced by the tendency of the American or stronger pole (acting now towards the right) to pull it to the east, so that we have once more a point of no variation. After this the American pole predominates, and we have a large region D of easterly variation until we travel round once more to the point from which we started.

28. This train of argument receives, as we have already men- tioned, corroboration from the fact that in the map of total foree we perceive two foci of maximum force, one in northern America aud the other in northern Asia, that in America being the strongest. This evidence was not, however, in existence at the time of Halley, and his hypothesis of two poles does the greater credit to his sagacity, inasmuch as he had to deduce it from a comparatively smal] number of observations of declination and dip, those of forco being altogether wanting.

29. We have hitherto spoken of two poles or, more properly, Soci of maximum force, the positions of whieh are of course best pointed out in fig. 29; but we have seen that the existence of such

Fig. 28,

2 We are indebted for the admirable eharts given in figs. 29-32 to the kindness of the hydrographer, Captain Sir Frederick Evans, who, in order to save time, allowed us to make use of the information he had embodied even before it was officially published, and who likewise plaeed his plates at our disposal.

foci was first conjectured from the behaviour of the lines of variation or declination. Now it will be noticed by looking at the variation map (fig. 30) that all the lines of equal magnetic variation appear to converge toa point in the extreme north of the American continent. This point is not, however, coincident with the chief focus of force, which lies decidedly to its south ; but it is no doubt coincident with the point denoting a dip of 90°, the locality of

a

bi) SH eS. ed, e VID more Ss ae CGD

METEOROLOGY

M E Magnetic Equator ar line of no dep

[TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM. —

which may be inferred from the map of magnetic dip (fig. 31), and it is likewise no doubt coincident with the position of a zero of — horizontal foree which may be inferred from the map of horizontal force (fig. 32). Thus we have a point to the extreme north of ; America which has the following properties :—(1) the various lines of declination converge to it ; (2) the needle points vertically down- wards at it; and (3) the horizontal force vanishes at it. At this

Frc. 29. —The Earth's Magnetism as shown by the Distribution of Lines of Equal Total Force, in Absolute Measure (British miles), with the Position of the Magnetic Poles and Equator, —approximately for 1875.

balanced ncedle, having no hori- zontal force acting upon it, will point in any direction.

This point is, strictly speaking, the pole of verticity, but, inas- niuch as there is only one such point in each hemisphere, these may for convenience sake be termed the magnetic poles, so that we speak of two centres or foci of maximum force and one pole in each hemi- sphere.

point therefore the ere

East Vamathon

or 2 ay” <0″ $0° so 70 60° to 0 ; x po ong

. . : 00

he

pe oo

4

Lies }

gee

=

ise

In the northern hemisphere Sir Frederick Evans! assumes the stronger or American focus to be in 52° N. and 90° W., and the weaker or Siberian focus in 70° N. and 115° E. In. the southern hemisphere he assumes the position of the stronger focus to be 65° S. and 140° E., and of the weaker focus probably 50° S. and 130°E., these being thus not far separated from each other or from the magnetic pole. The nearness together of the southern foci is prob

West Vanaton

ao 806300 «620°

my NS i

SS

os

i

Nil Wy YZ

—— —— a ee ee ee

Fic. 30.—Lines of Equal Magnetic Variation, 1882.

ably the reason why the total force is greater at the southcrn than it is at the northern foci.

The magnetic pole (of verticity) in the northern hemisphere was reached by Sir James Ross in 1831. The position of vertical dip was observed by him to be 70° 5’ N. and 96° 43’ W. The magnetic pole (of verticity) in the southern hemisphere was nearly attained

by the same navigator in a voyage made in 1839-48. is probably 734° S. and 1474° E. : . The line of no dip is called the magnetic or dip equator—its position is given in figs. 29 and 31. The line connecting all the

Its position

1 Elementary Manual for the Deviation of the Compass in Iron Ships.

TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM. | METEOROLOGY 165

points where the magnetic intensity is least is called the dynamic | evidence to show that either the pole of verticity or the centre of

equator, It coincides very nearly with the dip equator. force to the north of America has perceptibly changed its place,

i 80. Secular Variation.—The earth then as a magnet must be | there is, on the other hand, very strong evidence to show that we

supposed to have two sets of centres of force. We shall next | have a change of place on the part of the Siberian focus and also on attempt to show that these centres cannot be regarded as constant | the part of its analogue in the southern hemisphere.

both in position and intensity. ’ Table I. (p. 166), given by Gilpin (Phil. Trans., 1806),! exhibits

It should be premised that, while there is no well-established | the change in the position of the needle in Great Britain from

—

-567

Fia. 31.—Lines of Equal Magnetie Dip, 1882.

| the earliest observations up to the beginning of the present | for instance, the line of no variation depending on a balance between ! century. it and the American focus—should be drawn in towards it, or they 31, Between the dates recorded in this table the ncedle has been | should travel westwards; but if the latter supposition is true, or pointing more and more to the west, which implies eitherarelative | this focus has been moving eastwards while retaining its force, the increase in the power of the American as compared to the Siberian | lines to the east of it should be found moving eastwards also. There focus, or a motion of the Siberian focus from west to east. On the | is strong evidence that the latter is the case, and that in the first supposition the lincs to the eastward of the Siberian foeus— | northern hemisphere there has been a long-continued progression

)

Wk a

Me

= SS

i}

!

(]

\ f i

\

re

i =

+]

Se ee “ae =:

/

/

NY) rie

hi Hl [$3 l

L} [| |

Fia, 32.—Lines of Equal Horizontal Foree, 1882.

to the eastwards of the system of magnetic lines on both sides of | at Bushey Heath (Herts) during 1817-20, and at Kew from 1858

the Siberian focus. In the southern hemisphere also we have proof | to 1882.

that the analogous focus has been travelling, not from west to east, It would appear from Table II. that the maximum westerly

but from east to west. declination was reached in 1818, and that the needle has since that 82. There is some reason to believe that the eastward motion of | date been travelling eastwards. A similar change has taken place

the Siberian foeus has been recently reversed, and that it is now

going from east to west. Table II. shows the declination observed 1 Taken from Walker’s Magnetism.

a

166 METEOROLOGY [TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM.

at other stations; and, although these ehanges are not strietly | change has probably taken place in the movement of one set of the simultaneous at the various stations, they have yet beensuffieiently | magnetie foei of forec. ,

general and near together in point of time to indieate that some 33. Halley sought to explain the four-pole theory and to aecount Tan.E Il.—Changes of Declination in England,—at Bushey Heath

TABLE I.—Sccular Change of Variation in Great Britain. Yor 1817-20, and at Kew from 1868.

| Observer. Date. | Declination. a Declination West. Declination West. Change. -———— i s = = 7 lated 1817 24 386 4 26 CL) ne a cere 1580 | 11 15H 75 1818 24 38 25 20 18 62 (CET eee oe rR 1622; 6 OK. 95 1819 24 36 14 90 10 31 GML BARR osccsisin 5. coietsieg nok aceiee inne 16384 4 6K. 10°6 1820 24 34 30 20 © til NGI ie ene reine neta me siinsiece Sestene . 1657 0 OF 10°2 1858 a1 64 8 19 57 44 Grolila rad) ecccescnavs saree ecu cars 1665 1 22W. 9°7 51 Halley Sha TR T EID or: 1672 2 80 W, 10°5 HELE @panbede dace ononndasenay tooo 1692 | 6 OW 16-0 7 Craigs. ch. co sswmamatewnaasat ee el 1728 | 14 17 W 81 rt GaN SHD c.g doancungw (oPsasmeesiees 1748 | 17 40W 8°4 Ti aherd On rccinucsevearawcemeaacmeg 1773 | 21 9W 93 IPN yr isigerasvorngavetonontanee’ 1787 | 28 19W 47 a eee eee 1795 | 28 57 W 12 eee ote cose 1802 | 24 6W. 0-7 (Gall yi Rep taceenotede choco coogtnee 1805 | 24 8W.

Taste III.—Evhibiting certain Years’ Values of Declination at Various Places. se a ee ee ee

Toronto Makerstoun. Trevandrum. Cape of Good Hope. Hobart Town.

Declination. – Declination. Detiination. Declination. Declination. 1841 1 14°3 W. 1841 25 33°7 W. 1854 0 25°896 EK. 1605 0 30°0 E. 1843 9 53:32 E 1842 1 19°1 W. 1842 25 28°4 W. 1855 0 26°026 E. 1609 0 12°0 W 1844 9 54°93 E. 1845 1 29°1 W. 1843 25 22°9 W. 1856 0 26°400 E 1622 2 00 W 1845 9 56°47 E. 1846 1 30°8 W. 1844 25 17°1 W. 1857 0 27°278 K 1675 8 14:0 W 1846 9 58°42 Kh 1847 1 33:2 W. 1845 25 11°3 W. 1858 0 28°769 E 1691 11 00 W. 1847 9 59°28 EK. 1848 1 35°4 W. 1846 25 6°0 W. 1859 0 30°406 E 1751 19 1570 W. 1848 9 60°61 E. 1849 1 36°9 W. 1847 24 59°6 W. 1860 0 32°034 E 1775 21 14:0 W. 1850 1 38°6 W. 1848 24 51°8 W. 1861 0 34‘318 E 1788 24 4:0 W. 1851 1 40°9 W. 1849 24 45°2 W. 1862 0 36°654 E 1792 24 31°0 W. 1856 1 56:3 W. 1850 24 39:0 W. 1863 0 39°123 E 1818 26 81:0 W. 3 1857 2 0°5 W. 1851 24 31°3 W. 1864 0 41°603 E 1836 28 30°0 W. 1858 2 25 Ww. 1852 24 25:2 W. 1865 0 44:007 E 1839 29 9:0 W. 1859 2 et Ws 1853 24 18°7 W. 1866 0 46°310 E 1841 29° 6:2 W. 1860 2 10°6 W. 1854 24 11°8 W. 1867 0 47°590 E 1842 29 5:9 W. 5 1861 2 14°4 W. 1855 24 5°3 W. 1868 0 48°687 E 1843 29 6:0 W. ‘ 1862 LOT Wi 1869 0 49°7385 E 1844 29 6:2 W. 1863 2 19°1 W. 1845 29 7:4 W. 1864 2 21-0) W. 1846 29 87 W. 1865 2 24°38 W, 1847 29 12°4 W. 1866 2 27°6 W. 1848 29 14:0 W. 1867 2 29°38 W. 1849 | 29 162 W. . q 1868 2 33°2 W. 1850 29 18°38 W 1869 2 87°1 W. | 1870 2 41:9 W. | 1871 2 47-9 W. | .

Taste 1V.—Exhibiting certain Years’ Values of Dip and Horizontal Force at Various Places. The years in this Table are from April to April ; thus 1845 means the year from 1st April 1845 to 31st March 1846.

London.or Kew. Toronto. Hobart Town. Cape of Good Hope.

Dip. Hor. Force. “Dip. Hor. Force. Dip. | Hor. Force.

1857 | 68 24°87} 1857 3°7899 | 1845 | 75 15°50| 1845 3°5476 | 1842 | 70 42°2| 1846 4°5054 | 1841 |53 91 1858 | 68 22°56] 1858 3°7950 | 1846 | 75 14°58| 1846 3°5419 | 1843 | 70 38°2 | 1847 4°5001 | 1842 | 53 15°3 1859 | 68 21°41] 1859 3°8007 | 1847 | 75 15°30| 1847 3°5384 | 1844 | 70 33°3 | 1848 4°4991 | 1843 | 53 20°2 1860 | 68 19°29] 1860 3°8063 | 1848 | 75 18°32} 1848 3°5339 | 1845 | 70 32°0 | 1849 4°4997 | 1844 | 53 20°4] 1861 | 68 17°42} 1861 3°8121 | 1849 | 75 18°94] 1849 3°5367 | 1846 | 70 33°0 | 1850 44998 | 1845 | 53 293) 1862 | 68 14°89 | 1862 3°8165 | 1850 | 75 19°98 | 1850 3°5322 | 1847 | 70 34°5 18638 | 68 11°71] 1863 3°8216 | 1851

| 75 20°42) 1851 3°5299 | 1848 | 70 35°7 1864 | 68 9°31] 1864 3°8284 | 1852 | 75 20°52| 1852 3°5154

1865 | 68 8°50} 1865 3°8306

1866 | 68 5°44) 1866 3°8391

1867 |68 2°62] 1867 3°8467

1868 | 68 2°13] 1868 3°8493

1869 | 68 0°41} 1869 3°8551

1870 | 67 57°98| 1870 3°8585

1871 | 67 56°12} 1871 3°8640

1872 | 67 53°60} 1872 3°8712

1873 | 67 51°19} 1873 3°8777

1874 | 67 49°64] 1874 3°8828

TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM, |

for the secular change by imagining a solid globe or ¢erella,} con- centric with the earth but rotating independently of the external shell and having a slightly different period of rotation,—the shell having two poles and the terella two others. While eontinuing to admire Halley's sagacity, we shall not now be disposed to allow sueh a constitution of the interior of the earth, but will rather be led to look to some external influence as the cause ofthe secular variation.

'While we have strong evidence that the Siberian focus has ehanged its position, we caimot assert that the American focus has bcen absolutcly stationary, or that. neither focus has experienced any changes of force. On these points we must be content to be guided by observation alone.

34. It has been supposed by some magneticians that it is possible to compute with something like eertainty the particulars of the motions of the magnetic foci. Hansteen more espeeially (1811-19) computed both the geographical positions and probable periods of revolution of this dual system of foci of force round the terrestrial

ole. Sir Frederick Evans has discussed in connexion with the sub- ject all the most recent observations," and points out two objections to any such theory as that of Hansteen, viz., (1) that, while a mag- netic turning point has been reached in certain regions, there are large portions of the earth in which this ehange has not yet been accomplished, and (2) that in eertain districts of the earth very great changes in force have taken plaee. ''If we turn," he says, ''to the continent of South America and its adjacent seas, we shall find a diminution of the intensity of the earth's foree now going on in a remarkable degree. An examination of the recent observations made by the 'Challenger' officers at Valparaiso and Monte Video, compared with those made by preceding observers, shows that within half a.century the whole force has respectively diminished one-sixth and one-seventh,—at the Falkland Islands one-niuth." On the whole, while there is strong evidence that the Siberian focus has until recently been travelling eastwards, and its analogue west- wards, and evidenec less conclusive that recently a turning point in this motion has been reached, we are disposed to think with Sir Frederick Evans that a formal theory like that of Hansteen does not agree with recent observations. We shall revert to this subject.

35. In Tables III. and IV. certain yearly values of declination, dip, and horizontal force are given for various stations.

INEQUALITIES IN OR CONNECTED WITH TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM DEPENDING ON THE Sun.

36, As there is a marked likeness between the ways in which the sun dominates over the two great divisions of terrestrial phenomena, meteorology and magnetism, let us endeavour to dosstiie the sun's effect upon the latter by referring to its influence on the former, the chief peculiarities of which are well known to all. We find that the temperature of the air at a given station is subject to a diurnal fluctuation Se its minimum value shortly before sun- rise and its maximum early in the afternoon. We

find likewise that the mean temperature for the day, as well as the amplitude of this diurnal oscillation, depends upon the season of the year, both being greatest about midsummer and least about midwinter. Now, if this were the only manifestation of sdlar influenee upon this fs eg element, it would be possible to predict the temperature or any hour of any day once the mean temperature, the diurnal variation of temperature, and the modification of these for different seasons of the year had been well ascertained, But this amount of tegularity is very far from taking place,—the march of temperature being frequently interrupted, cloaked, perhaps even reversed, by the advent of peculiar weather. Thus we may have very cold weather in midsummer and very warm weather in midwinter, or we may have a very cold afternoon and a very warm early morning, by which means the ordinary conditions of temperature will be completely reversed. In like manner weather interferes even to a greater extent with the diurnal oscillation of the atmospheric pressure, so that, in British latitudes at least, it is only possible to obtain this correctly by means of a long series of observations,

eather, however, does not eonsist of a perfectly lawless inter- ference with periodical phenomena, but is subject to laws of its own, some of which we are beginning to discover. Sometimes weather may exalt or depress the diurnal fluctuation of temperature without otherwise affecting its charaeter; but sometimes too the turning- points and the general appearance of this fluctuation are greatly influenced by peculiar weather.

37. Now it is believed that we have something of this kind in those fluctuations depending on the sun to which the elements of terrestrial Magnetism are subject. Let us take the declination as the most easily studied of the three magnetic elements, and oo we are engaged in eonsidering the traces denoting the

uctuations of declination as derived from a set of self-recording magnetographs in Great Britain. Here we shall at once be able to recognize in an unmistakable manner the diurnal variation depend- mg upon the position of the sun, in virtue of which a freely-

1 eye? ae ° . a > ° ie 8 Terrestrial and Cosmical Magnetism, where the subjeet is well

? In his lecture to the Royal Geographical Society, March 11, 1878,

suspended magnetic needle reaches the easterly extreme of its range about eight in the morning, and the westerly about two in the afternoon. We shall likewise perceive that the range of this diurnal fluetuation is greatest at midsummer and least at mid- winter. In fine, the characteristics of this fluctuation, depending as they do upon the hour of the day and the season of the year, are not very different from those exhibited in the diurnal fluctua- tion of atmospherie temperature. But, however thoroughly we may have ascertained the mean declination and its diurnal oscilla- tion, as well as the modifications of these depending on the season of the year, we shall nevertheless find it impossible to predict the exact position of a frecly-suspended magnet at any moment of a particular day. Here then too we have something which may be ealled magnetic weather, and which interferes with the regular progress of the systematic fluctuations of the magnet. Magnetic weather has, like its meteorological analogue, a set of laws of its own, some of which we are beginning to find out. Sometimes magnetic weather may exalt or depress the diurnal fluctuation of declination without affecting its eharacter, but it is imagined that at other times the turning points and general appearance of this fluctuation may be greatly influenced by peeuliar magnetic weather.

38. There is, however, a kind of magnetic change which, so far as we know at present, is not analogous to anything in meteorology, and introduces an additional element of complexity in any attempt to analyse the fluctuations of terrestrial magnetism. We mcan the well-known magnetie disturbances or storms whieh oceur simul- taneously in places very widely apart. Under these eireumstances it beeomes a question how we can best deal ina practical manner with this complieated system of things.

We do not think that with our present knowledge any better system can be adopted than that first introduced by Sir Edward Sabine in his discussion of the results of the colonial magnetic observatories. Suppose that we have hourly magnetie observations at a station, then first of all we should arrange

these into monthly groups—each hour by itsclf. We should then reject as disturbed observations all those which differ by more than a certain amount from their respective normals of the same month and hour,—the normals being the liourly means in each month after the exclusion of all the disturbed observations, This method enables us, by its exclusion of disturbances, to ascertain with much accuracy the true form of the solar-diurnal variation of the magnetic elements at a given place corresponding to every month of every year, provided only that the observations are sufficiently numerous. On the other hand it will probably fail in accurately giving us the variations from day to day of the ranges of these diurnal fluctuations eaused by the advent of peculiar magnetic weathcr,—inasmueh as the reeords of the extreme effects of such weather will probably be cut off from the undisturbed observations and reckoned among the disturbances.

For instance, it is known that the solar influence on terrestrial magnetism varies from year to year, and it is suspected that there are also short-period fluctuations of solar influence. It would not, however, be a safe proceeding to attempt to estimate numerically this last-mentioned element of fluctuation by taking the suecessive diurnal ranges of those observations at any station, reckoned as undisturbed, by the above proccss, and plotting them as suceessive ordinates of a eurve, and then supposing that this curve would give us.a true graphical representation of solar ehanges. It would rather probably represent such changes with the tops and bottonis of the larger fluctuations cut off. But if the undisturbed observa- tions fail in this respect we can hardly be wrong in supposing that there has been eliminated from them, as far as possible, all influcnee due to magnetic storms, and hence that they will afford us a much better means of estimating small fluctuations, sueh, for instance, as those due to the moon, than we eould have had without their aid.

Finally, with regard to that portion of the observations selected as disturbed, we are probably not certain that every such observa- tion represents a true disturbance, or that the absolute times of occurrence of the various observations selected as disturbed at one station will be the same as those at another. Nevertheless Sir Edward Sabine has shown that at the Kew Observatory eertain laws of disturbance deduced from the whole body of

observations sclected as disturbed are elosely reproduced when this selection is made on a narrower basis—ninety-live days of prominent disturbance being alone taken. With these prefatory remarks we shall now proceed to discuss the diurnal inequality of terrestrial magnetism.

39. Total Diurnal Inequality Defined.—It will be seen further on that disturbed as well as undisturbed observations arc subject to a diurnal variation, but these two variations are different, and the name diurnal inequality is generally given to the compound varia- tion which is the joint resultant of the two. Solar-diwrnal vartation is that portion of the eompound inequality which refers to undisturbed observations, while that whieh refers to disturb- ances has received the name of disturbanee-diurnal variation. It would appear that in the United Kingdom, and perhaps throngh- out Europe, the total diurnal inequality is not very greatly different either in character or range from its most. important component the solar-diurnal variation, at least so far as the

declination is concerned. When the diurnal oscillation of a frecly-suspended magnet was first observed, the subject of magnetic disturbances was not understood, and the early individual deter- minations which have been handed down to us are not such as to justify the expenditure of any very great labour upon them for the purpose of separating the disturbed from the undisturbed obser- vations. Inasmuch, however, as the total diurnal inequality of declination (which is in reality the element given by these early observations) does not greatly differ from the solar-diurnal varia- tion, we may with much justice and little risk of error give the history of these early observations in connexion with that of the solar-diurnal variation of declination, whieh is by far the best known, and perhaps the most important, of all the various magnetic changes produced by solar influence. ’

40. Solar-Diurnal Variation of Declination. —Graham, an instru- ment maker of London, discovered in 1722 that a freely-suspended magnetie needle is subject to a diurnal oscillation of definite char- acter.) The next observer was Canton, who in 1756 began a series of nearly four thousand observations, which he communicated to the Royal Society on December

18, 1759, and from which he coneludes that the range of the diurnal variation is greater In summer than in winter. Macdonald's observations at Fort Marlborough in Sumatra in 1795 (Phil. Trans., 1796), and Duperrey's in the tropics in 1825, were perhaps the first that might lead us to conclude that the amplitude of the diurnal oscillations of the needle is less in the tropics than in middle latitudes, and that the motion of the needle in the southern hemisphere is in the opposite direction to that in which it moves in the northern hemisphere at the same hour.

41. Semiannual Inequality.2-—The existence of these early observations had led some magneticians prematurely to conjecture that there must be a line somewhere near the equator at which there is no horary variation in declination. In 1847 Sabine com- municated to the Royal Society the results of five years' observations at St Helena, showing that at that station for the half of the year beginning at the vernal and ending at the autumnal equinox the motion of the needle corresponds nearly to that in the northern hemisphere, whilst for the other half it corresponds nearly to that in the southernhemisphere. Sabineafterwardsconfirmed and extended his conclusions regarding the semiannual inequality by discussing the results obtained at the various colonial magnetic observatories. More recently, as the result of twelye years' observations at Trevandrum, at an observatory established by the rajah of Travancore, John Allan Broun gave in a very complete form the laws of change of the solar-diurnal variation of magnetic declination near the equator, showing the extinction of the mean movement near the equinox.

42. Perhaps the best way of exhibiting what really takes place is the following, which is that adopted by Sabine.

The mean annual value of the solar-diurnal variation is of what may be called the northerly type in places of middle latitude in the northern hemisphere, aud of what may be called the southerly type in places of middle latitude in the southern hemisphere. Now it us take a northern station, and consider the mean form of its solar- diurnal variation for the six months beginning with the vernal equinox. Here we shall have an oscillation of the northerly type with a range greater than the annual range. For these six months, therefore, we may imagine that the annual range has

been supple- mented by the superposition on it of a variation with a type similar to its own. At the same station, during the other six months, the solar-diurnal variation is less than the mean of the year, as if the annual variation had been depressed by the superposition on it of a variation with a type the opposite of its own, that is to say, with a southerly type. At a station in the southern hemisphere, again, the mean annual form of the solar-diurnal oscillation is of the southerly type, reduced during the six months beginning with the vernal equinox by the superposition on it of a variation of northerly type, and increased during the other six months as if by the super- position of a variation of southerly type. Thus when the sun is north of the equator we may superpose a variation of the northerly type upon both hemispheres, with the effect of increasing the range in the northern hemisphere and diminishing it in the southern ; and while the sun is south of the equator we may superpose a varia- tion of the southern type upon both hemispheres, with the effect of diminishing the range in the northern and increasing it in the southern hemisphere.

Near the equator, as at Trevandrum, where Broun made his observations, we find the mean annual value of the solar-diurnal variation to be extremely small, if not altogether evanescent. During the six months beginning with the vernal equinox the type is entirely northerly, while for the remaining six months of the year it is entirely southerly in character. In fine, at this station the solar-diurnal variation changes its character at the equinoxes, at which time we have, as already observed, an extinction of the mean movement,—not indeed an absence of all variation, but rather a

1 See Walker, Terrestrial and Cosmical Magnetism.

2 This is the name used by Sabine, but its appropriateness may perhaps be questioned.

variation having an undecided character, which for a few days may be of one type and then of the very opposite. There is movement, but no mean movement. f

43. In the following table (V.) the solar-diurnal variation ig given for Kew, Trevandrum, and Hobart Town. Of these

laces the first denotes a station in middle latitude (northern Daniaiewe the second an equatorial station, and the third 9 station in middle latitude (southern hemisphere).

3 Kew. Trevandrum. Hobart Town.

Eg

Syl SSS

eS ‘ ; ?

Bg | April | Oct. | whote || APP | Oct | whote|| Apr | Och | whote

za Sept. | March. Year. Sept. | March. Tear. Sept. | March. Year, 0 | —6°15 | —4-12 | —5-13 || —1-30 +0°07 | —0°61 || +0°35 | +2°35 | 41°35 1 | —7°42 | —4:96 | —6°19 || —1°25 | +0°35 | —0°45 || +2°15) +4°85 | +3°50 2 | —6:94 | —4°67 | —5°81 || —0°85 | +0°56 | —0°15 || +3°15 | +5°95 | +4555 3 | —5:21 | —3°35_| —4°28 || —0°85 | +0°61 | +0°13 || +3°30) +5°50 | +4-40 4 | —8°25 | —1°95 | —2°60 || +0°03 | +0°53 | +0°28 || +2°40 | +4°30 | +3-35 5 | —1°47 | —1°05) —1°26 |} +0°15 | 0°33 | 4-0°24 |) +1°30 | +2°70 | +2-00 6 | —0°32 | —0°46 | —0°39 |) +0°05 | +0°22 | +0713 || +0°75 | +1°55 | +115 7 | +0°22 | 40°21 | +0°22 || —0°15 | +0°23 | +0-04 || +0°20 | +080 | +-0:50 8 | +0°44 | +0-92 | +0°68 || —0°30 | +0°19 | —0-05 || —0°30 | +.0°30 | +0°00 9 | +0°52 | +1°45 | +0°99 || —0°28 | +0°13 | —0°08 |} —0°85 | —0°25 | —0°55 10 | +0:70 | +1°77 | 41°24 |; —0°20 | +0°09 | —0-06 || —1°10 | —0°70 | —0°90 11 | +0°90 | +1°84 | +1°37-|| —0°07 | +0°10 | +0°01 || —1°15 | —0°85 | —1°00 12 | +1°19 | +1°67 | +1°48 || +0°07 | +0°11 | +0:09 || —1°10 | —0°80 | —0-95 13 | +1°23 | +1°84 | +1:29 || +0°18 | +0°08 | +0:13 || —0°75 | —0°75 | —0°75 14 | 41°56 | 41°22 | +19 || +0°27 | +0-02 | +0°15 || —0°40 | —0°70 | —0°55 15 | 41°93 | +1:09 | +1°51 || +0°29 | —0°11 | +0°09 || —0°15 | —0°65 | —0-40 16 | +2°58 | +1°17 | +1°88 || +0°31 | —0°28 | +002 || —0°-02 | —0°78 | —0-40 17 | +3°60 | +1°43 | +2°51 || +0°48 | —0°45 | +0°01 || —0°10 | —1:40 | —0-75 18 | +4°59 | +1°54 | +3-07 || +1°02 | —0°66 | +0°18 || —0°28 | —2-37 | —1°30 19 |

+5°31 | +1°85 | +3°58 || +1°48 | —0°84 | +0°32 || —0°50 | —3°80 | —2:15 20 | +5-20| +2°40 | +3:°80 || +1°20 | —0°72 | +0°24 |] —1°25 |) —5°25 | —3 25 21 | +3:57 | +2°32 | +2°95 || +0°47 | —0°36 | +0-06 || —2°10 | —5:30 | —3:70 22 | 40°38} +0-54 | +0°46 || —0°32 | —0°13 | —0°22 || —2°20 | —8‘80 | —3:00 23 | —3-18 | —2-18 | —2°68 || —0°93 | —0°07 | —0°50 || —1°40) —0°80 | —1°15

In this table deflexions towards magnetic east are reckoned positive, deflexions towards magnetic west negative. The scale is in minutes of are.

Also in fig. 38 we have a graphical representation of the solar- diurnal variation for the whole year at these three stations, from which it will be seen that the range at Trevandrum is extremely small, and that the curve for Hobart Town is opposite in appearance _ to that at Kew.

Fig. 33.

Finally, in fig. 34 we have a graphical representation of the semi- annual inequality or difference from the whole year’s mean of the two

half-yearly means of Table V., the one half-year (that with thiek lines) commencing at the vernal and the other at the autumnal equinox. It will be seen from this figure that the semiannua inequality is of the same character in both hemispheres, the likeness extending even to its minor peculiarities.

44, Change from Month to Month.—Charles Chambers, director of the Kolaba Observatory, Bombay, remarks (Zrans. Roy. 800-5 December 10, 1868) that ‘‘the regular progression from month to month in the diurnal variation is so distinctly shown in the Bombay observations as to lead, on a first inspection, to the supposition that the law of variation is identical throughout the year, the extent only (ineluding a reversal of direction) varying from mouth to mouth. But in this respect a different exposition © the character of the variation in different months shows that the first thought would be inaccurate.” He then proceeds to discuss

at length the monthly values of the solar-diurnal variation at Bombay. Broun has likewise (Trevandrum observations) discussed at length the solar-diurnal variation at the Trevandrum Observa- tory. It would hardly be of service to reproduce here the results of these discussions; but when such analyses become sufficiently

HOBARTOWN hae Va

ig. 34,

extensive they may be expected to throw light upon the cause of the solar-diurnal variation.

In the following table we have mean monthly values of the declin- ation range at the Kew Observatory corresponding to forty-eight points in the year—derived from sixteen years' observations :—

=

TaBLE VI.—Containing Monthly Means (unit =22':04) for Forty- eight Points in the Year of the Kew Solar-Diurnal Declination Ranges. Thus Janwary (0) gives the monthly mean of which the middle date is the very commencement of the year, January (1) that for one week after the commencement, and so on.

Mean Value. Mean Value. Mean Value.

312 May (0) "599 Sept. (0) 594

328 (1) 581 (1) "577

340 (2 "573 (2 554

362 6) "586 6) "532 Oct.

It will be seen from this table that, while we have a maximum about the summer and a minimum about the winter solstice, we have unmistakable indications of maxima at or about the equinoxes. This does not take place at a tropical station such as Trevandrum.

45. Behaviour near the Magnetic Pole.—Figs. 83 and 34 exhibit the most prominent features of the ser aiuaell eeintias of declina- tion in the extra-tropical regions of the northern hemisphere. If an observer stand over the centre of the needle and look towards the marked end, or that which points to the north, he will perceive a deflexion towards his right hand which will reach its extreme about 8 A.M. and a deflexion towards his left hand which will reach its extreme about 2 p.m. But are these deflexions to the right and left hand of geographical or of magnetical north? This question has been answered by Sabine in his discussion of the results of hourly observations of the magnetic declination at Port Kennedy (Phil. Trans., 1868, p. 660). ‘This station is 72° 0’ 49” N. lat. and 94° 19’ W. long., and here the marked end of the needle, while it points towards the magnetic pole, points in reality about 35° to the west of south. Now the marked end of the needie when viewed at 8 A.M. 1s seen at Port Kennedy to have moved to the geographical west but to the magnetical east. It would thus seem that throughout the extra-tropical regions of the northern hemisphere the 8 a.M deflexion of the needle is always towards the magnetic east but not always towards the geographical east, while the deflexion at 2 P.M. will always tend towards the magnetical west but not always towards the geographical west. In fine the oscillations have

reference to the north magnetic pole of the earth and not to the north geographical pole. No observations of this nature have been made in the southern hemisphere.

46. Long-Period Inequalities of Declination Range.—It was first observed by Lamont that the yearly values of the diurnal range of magnetic declination at Munich presented signs of a long-period variation. In 1852 Sabine (Phil. Trans., 1852, p. 103) showed that this inequality corresponded in its progress with that of the frequency of black spots on the surface of the sun.

The existence of black spots on the disk of the sun was long ago known to the Chinese. In Europe they were first scientifically observed after the invention of the telescope, and it was deduced from their behaviour that the sun revolves about his axis in about twenty-six days. Hofrath Schwabe of Dessau, from a long series of forty years' observations of the sun, was the first to show that the state of the sun's surface as regards spots was not uniform, but that their frequency was subject to an inequality the average period of which was about eleven years. Other inequalities both of longer and shorter periods have been supposed to exist, but the eleven- yearly period is the most prominent and is best assured. Although the sun-spot catalogue of Schwabe is the first with pretensions to completeness, yet Professor Rudolf Wolf has endeavoured to render observations of sun-spots made at different times and by different observers comparable with each other, and has formed a list exhibit- ing approximately the relative number of sun-spots for each year. This list extends back into the 17th century, and is of great valuc in confirming past all doubt the existence of the eleven-yearly period. It will appear below that the sun is probably to be regarded as giving out most light and heat at those times when sun-spots are most frequent. The most accurate and now universally adopted method of estimating sun-spots is to take the spotted area expressed in millionths of the sun's visible hemisphere.

To return from this digression, —the correspondence between sun- spots and declination ranges detected by Sabine was of such a nature that years of large declination range agreed with those of many sun- spots, and vice versa. In the same year with Sabine (1852) Dr Rudolf Wolf and M. Gautier

independently remarked the same coin- cidence. Subsequent discussions have entirely confirmed the fact of this connexion, and in May 1879 William Ellis (Phil. Trans., 1880, p. 541) showed that the observations made at the Greenwich Observatory during the years 1841-77 indicated a relation of this nature between the diurnal ranges of horizontal force as well as those of magnetic declination on the one hand and the amount of sun-spot frequency on the other. The general character of this coincidenco between sun-spot frequency and declination range is exhibited graphically in fig. 39 below.

47. Ratios of Ranges in Years of Maximum and Years of Mini- mum Sun-Spot Frequency.—Broun (Trans. Roy. Soc. of Edin., vol. xxvii.) has shown that the ratios of the diurnal ranges of declination in years of maximum to those in years of minimum sun-spot frequency for places widely apart on the surface of the earth are very neatly alike. This will be seen from the following table :—

Taste VII.—Ratios of Declination Ranges in Years of Maximum and of Minimum Sun-Spot Frequency.

Ratio \ min. Observer,

Mean (oe

7

1°74

Cassini and Arago.

Gauss.

Lamont.

Lloyd.

Kay.

Younghusband and Lefroy. Broun.

1°66 1°52 1°57 1°51 1°56

Hobart Town TOrOutOss saccccdiaiees ses Trevandrum

48. Closeness of Correspondence—Lagging behind of Ranges.— Stewart has shown from a discussion of the declination ranges at Kew, Trevandrum, and Prague (Proc. Ruy. Soc., March 22, 1877, February 8, 1878, May 16, 1878) that this correspondence between the state of the sun's surface and the diurnal range of declination extends to inequalities of short period as well as to that of which the period is sk ramen eleven years, but that a particular state of the sun's surface precedes in point of time that of the declination range to which it corresponds, —in fine, that the solar cause precedes the terrestrial effect, which latter lags behind to an extent that is sometimes considerable. These conclusions have been confirmed by Ellis (ut supra), and have likewise been extended by him to the horizontal force. The close nature of this correspondence, as well as the lagging behind of the terrestrial magnetic effect, will be seen from fig. 35. ;

There are indications that this lagging behind of the magnetic effect is greater for sun-spot inequalities of long than for those of short period, a method of behaviour quite similar to what we find in meteorological phenomena.

49. Analysis of Long-Period Inequalities. ~~ no sun-spot

.— 22

170

data sufficiently accurate for a discussion, in a complete manner, of questions relating to solar periodicity before the time when Sehwabe had finally matured his system of solar observations, which was not until the year 1832. We have, however, a much longer series of the diurnal ranges of magnetic declination, which we have secn to

BER SekS

Fig. 35.

follow very closely all the variations of sun-spot frequency, so it is conceivable that they may give usa better estimate of true solar activity than that which can be derived from the direct measure- ment of spotted areas.

These considerations have induced Messrs Stewart and Dodgson to attempt an analysis of the diurnal ranges of magnetic declination, their method being that which has been pursued by Baxendell and probably other astronomers with observations of variable stars.1 The observations at their disposal for this research were those which had been used by Professor Elias Loomis in his comparison of the mean daily: range of the magnetic declination with the extent of the black spots on the sun (American Journal of Science and Arts, vol. 1. No. cxlix.). These observations are recorded as monthly means of diurnal declination range, and it was found neeessary to multiply each by a certain factor, first on account of the change of declination range from one month to another, and secondly to bring them all to the standard of the Prague observa- tions, —Prague being the place where the longest series of such obser- vations has been made. For this latter purpose preeisely the saine correetions were applicd as those made by Professor Loomis.

The resnlt of this analysis has been to indicate the existence of three inequalities,—two dominant ones with periods of about ten and a half and twelve years, and a subsidiary one with a period of about sixteen and a quarter years. By these means the observed annual values of declination range have been reproduced with an average error of 39’. The amount of agreement between the observed and ealculated values will be seen from the following diagram (fig. 36).

50. Notwithstanding the considerable amount of agreement

pe eee na IAB

ee tener Ey Tat

PA TT CON a fal AN

a TSA ALP Pa AW Seale esha

aw = eS eo

| |) CALCULATED rancel | (\ eee Pete Le bal toler NITE El NE TANIA AT A TAZ TA zo 1790 | repo | repo | 1820 | res0 | re40 | 1860 | reso | revo

Fig. 36.

‘ARES es 1s

O

a 7s |e |e Js | | I

1880

between the results of observation and caleulation which appears in the diagram, it would seem that the series of observed values at present obtainable is too short to render the analysis a very accurate one. It will certainly not bear carrying back forty or fifty ycars beyond its starting point, which was in 1784, and it would be very hazardous to earry it forward any consider-

1 Proc. Lit. and Phil. Society of Manchester, March 8, 1881,

METEOROLOGY

[TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM.

able length into the future. It will be secn that calculation indicates a maximum of declination range about 1884, but not so pronouneed a maximum as that of 1871. Here then we have a prevision which observation will either fulfil or contradiet, giving us a practical test of the value of this analysis.

51. The remarks now made would seem at first sight to imply that we are not yet furnished with sufficient yearly records either of declination ranges or of aecurate sun-spot observations to enable us to analyse the long-period solar inequality with such completeness as to carry our calculations more than a very short distance into the future with any chance of success, and

that we may have to wait for another hundred years' observations before we are able to do so. On reflection, however, it would seem that long-period inequalities may be caused by the superposition of those of short period, and thus that an analysis of the latter may lead to that of the former. It would relieve us if this were found to be the case; for the observations at our disposal may be sufficient to enable us completely to analyse short-period inequalities, assuming that we have in such the elements of a true periodicity.

A remark made by the authors of the above analysis would seem to indicate that a connexion of this nature between long and short periods does in all probability exist. It isa well-known fact that the so-called eleven-yearly oscillations of declination range are at certain times large and at other times small. Thus, for instance they have been large for the last forty ycars, but they were small about the earlier part of the present century. Now it is clear from an inspection of the observations (see fig. 36) that a series of large oscillations is accompanied with an exaltation of the base line, or line denoting average efficiency, while a series of small oscillations is accompanied with a depression of the same. The result is a long-period curve of the base line, the beat period, so to speak, of the eleven-ycarly inequality.

Now a phenomenon precisely similar occurs in connexion with shorter periods. If we take inequalities having a period of three or four months, we find that such are alternately well-developed or of large range and badly-developed or of small range, and that a large range of such is accompanied with an exaltation of the base line or line of average efficiency, while a small range is accompanied with a depression of the same. The result is a curve of the base line of which the period is roughly speaking eleven years. May we not therefore imagine that the so-called eleven-yearly period, or, to speak more correctly, the ten and a half and twelve-yearly periods into which the eleven-yearly period may perhaps be analysed, may be in reality beat periods for shorter disturbances? Is it not there- fore possible that a study of these shorter periods may give us information regarding the nature of the eleven-yearly period, whether for sun-spots or declination ranges, which the small series of actual observations is incompetent to afford?

52. Declination-Range Wcather.—Allusion has already been made to magnetical weather as perhaps having laws similar in some respects to those which regulate meteorological weather. Now the diurnal ranges of magnetic declination and those of atmospheric temperature present us with elements of the two weathers that can easily be diseussed. Again there is strong evidence for supposing that an element of meteorological weather, such, for instance, as temperature-range, travels as a rule from west to east, so thata

eculiar style of temperature-range might be expected to appear frst in America and some days afterwards in Great Britain. It becomes therefore a question for inquiry whether this travelling from west to east applies also to magnetical weather as evidenced by the diurnal declination-range. Stewart is of opinion that this law of travelling applies to both, but that magnetical weather travels faster than meteorological (see Proc. Roy. Soc., January 10, October 23,1879, and June 9, 1881). From the preliminary discussion made by him it would appear that Kew lags behind Toronto as regards phase of magnetical weather by 1°6 days, that Prague lags behind Kew 0°7 days, and that Trevandrum lags behind Kew by 9°7 days. This conclusion cannot, however, be regarded as established until it is confirmed by a more complete discussion of observations.

58. Disturbance-Diurnal Variation of Declination.—Magnetic storms (§ 38) were so named by Baron Humboldt, one of the first observers of such phenomena. From observations at Paris, Berlin, aud Freiburg he found that very frequently, though not universally, these three stations were simultaneously affected by such storms. The observation of magnetic disturbances was afterwards pursued ina systematic manner by Gauss and Weber of Gottingen. Term days were instituted for this purpose by these observers, —that is to say, periods each of twenty-four hours length during which observa- tions were simultaneously made at intervals of five minutes at Gottingen and about twenty other stations distributed generally over the continent of Europe. Finally, the establishment by the British Government of the colonial magnetic observatories, and the energy and sagaeity of their director, Sir E. Sabine, have very greatly increased our knowledge of these remarkable phenomena.

Sabine has not merely separated the disturbed from the undis- turbed observations as explained in § 38, but he has divided the former into two categories—(1) those tending to increase westerly

declination and either element of force, and (2) those tending to diminish the same. He finds that these two categories obey different laws, from which he argues that there are at least two scts of disturbing forces. In fact, if we have to give up the idea ofa single force of constant type, it is natural to ask if the phenomena of dis- turbance can be approximately represented as due to the unitcd action of two independent types of force. It was probably some such idea that led Sabine to separate disturbances into these two categories above mentioned. Herc there is no attempt to assert that these two types represent an ultimate and complete analysis of the forces concerned. We merely use the separation as the most convenient method at our disposal in the present state of our know- ledge for ascertaining whether there be indications of a dual system.

M4. ‘Results in the Northern Hemisphere.—Sabine’s method of viewing the phenomena has enabled him to obtain the disturbance- diurnal variation for the following stations :-

MRE eie ere aatie.s.- sce seccoctvcrerse. OL OO N. lab, 0° 8’ W. long. RNR cereessissececcoscesecereres BO OL Nw 55 DG) GH) 1 4; RIOT DGS, +. .sccucsescs.ckctisveescssesee 51 19 N. ,, Ase Qe. 5, or Le 43 40 N. ,, Tn 0 We 4, PRU CHINICUY «0.0 dePEMEIAITOW vo cencssenseseeseds-cnpeccces wa 2M. a 156 15 W. ,,

The above stations have been so chosen that Kew may be regarded as on one side and Peking and Nertchinsk as probably on the other side of the Asiatic pole, while Toronto may be regarded as on one side and Port Kennedy and Point Barrow as on the other side of the American pole (§ 29). The qnestion as to what influence, if any, these poles have upon the disturbance-diurnal variation of declination is thus one which may be answered by examining the results obtained at these various stations. For this purpose, instead of recording the aggregate disturbances at the various hours, the result is expressed in ratios,—the mean hourly ratio for the day

being taken as unity, or in other words the whole body of disturbances for the twenty-four hours being reckoned as twenty-four. The results of this method are graphically represented in fig. 37, where in the left-hand curves Kew time is used, and in the right-hand curves local time, cach starting at 04.!

Se Tr

aes SSS i a a

ae Pk

¥,

55. At all the various stations one curve exhibits unmistakably a single progression, while the other exhibits more or less dis- tinctly a double progression. At Kew, Toronto, Port Kennedy,

1If we refer to a paper b – y C. Chambers, direetor of Bombay Observatory (Phil. Trans., 1868), it will be seen that westerly disturbances at Bombay pre- on the same characteristics as westerly at Peking or Nertehinsk, the maximum ing about twenty-two or twenty-three hours Bombay astronomical time.

and Point Barrow it is the easterly disturbances which exhibit this single progression; while, on the other hand, at Peking and Nertchinsk, stations which are oppositely related to the Asiatie magnetic centre, it is the westerly disturbances which do so. It is imagined by Sabine and others that this peculiar reversal is due to the fact that Kew and its associated stations may be regarded as on one side and Peking and Nertchinsk as on the other side of the movable magnetic system.

Sabine has likewise remarked that the single-progression curves, whether denoting easterly or westerly disturbances, exhibit maxima which take

place not far from the same absolute time. We have therefore plotted all the left-hand curves according to Kew time, that the eye may readily see the amount of simultaneity which their corresponding phases exhibit. It will be noticed that there is a very striking.simultaneity between the maxima of Kew, Toronto, Peking, and Nertchinsk, but that the maxima for Port Keunedy and Point Barrow, while both occurring about the same time, fall at a time decidedly if not very greatly different from that of the other maxima. Indeed the time of maximum for Port Kennedy and Point Barrow is not far from the time of minimum for the other stations. Now it has been noticed by Sabine that Port Kennedy and Point Barrow may be regarded as on one side of the American magnetic centre of intensity, while Toronto and the other asso- ciated stations are on the other side. Itseems therefore possible to connect this last fact with the change in the time of maximum. Sabine has likewise remarked that the aggregate amount of dis- turbances is much greater at Point Barrow than at any other station. Now Point Barrow is likewise that spot where auroras are most frequent. Thus in the phenomena we are now discussing there is first of all a marked reference to the Asiatic pole ; secondly, a reference not so marked, perhaps, to the American pole; and thirdly, a reference to the centre of auroral activity. Sabine, whose experi- ence of such matters is very great, appears to think most of the reference of these phenomena to the Asiatic pole. He thinks that ‘‘of the two magnetic systems which are distinctly recog- nizable in the magnetism of the globe one has a terrestrial and the other a cosmical source,” and that it is ‘‘the latter of these two systems which, by its progressive translation, gives rise to the phenomena of secular change and to those magnetic cycles which owe their origin to the operation of the secular change,” con- curring with the conclusion of Walker that ‘‘the magnetic influence at any point of the globe is the result of two distinct magnetic systems, the principal of which is the magnetism proper of the globe, having its (northern) point of greatest attraction in the north of the American continent, whilst the weaker system is that which results from the magnetism induced in the earth by cosmical action, and of which the northern point of greatest attraction is at present in the north of the Asiatic continent. Thus the direction of the magnet at any point results from the supcr- position of these two systems, the nearest pole being always pre- dominant over the more remote” (Phil. Trans,, 1868). While dis- posed to think that something of this nature should be accepted as a working

hypothesis, we would, however, point out that the Asiatic pole cannot be regarded as accounting for all the pheno- mena of disturbances, but that the focus of disturbance is probably nearer the focus of auroras than it is to cither of the foci of magnetic intensity.

The right-hand curves representing these disturbance-diurnal variations which have two maxima are, except for Port Kennedy and Point Barrow, decidedly irregular. Sabine remarks also that, instead of having a reference to absolute time like those with one progression, their reference is rather to local time. We have therefore plotted all these curves according to local time; nevertheless this reference does not come out with very great distinctness ; but it must be remembered that our analysis of disturbances into easterly and westerly, although, in the hands of Sabine, it has given us much new information, has no claim to be regarded as final and complete.

56. Results in the Southern Hemisphere.—Table VII}. shows the disturbance-diurnal variation of declination exhibited for St Helena, 15° 56’°7 S. lat., 5° 40’°5 W. long.; Cape of Good Hope, 33° 56’ S. lat., 18° 28’°75 W. long.; Hobart Town, 42° 525 S. lat., 147° 27‘5 E. long.

At St Helena and the Cape the easterly disturbances present the appearance of a single progression, while the same remark slightly modified applies to the easterly disturbances at Hobart Town. Again the times of easterly maxima for St Helena and the Cape are very nearly simultancous, while Hobart Town, which we may regard as situated on the opposite side of the chief southern magnetic centre from St Helena and the Cape, has its maximum nearly coincident in absolute time with the minimum of the other two stations. It would thus seem that the chief magnetic centre of the south is similar in its action as regards these phenomena to the chief mag- netic centre of the north. Again the absolute time of single max1- mum for the south as determined by St Helena and the Cape is about twelve hours different from the corresponding time for the north as determined by Kew, Toronto, Peking, and Nertchinsk. All this is in favour of the working hypothesis already mentioned.

Tas.e VIII. Local St Helena. Cape of Good Hope. Hobart Town. Astro- so ie Easterly | Westerly | Easterly | Westerly Easterly | Westerly

ours. | Ratios. | Ratios. | Ratios. | Ratios. | Ratios. | Ratios.

0 3°24 2°46 2-1 1°6 114

1 3°17 2°39 au 1:2 1:26

2 Gr 1°88 16 1:0 1:32

3 2:00 1°44 1E6) 0°8 1°40

4 0°89 29) 0°8 07 1°39

5 0°34 0°76 0°4 06 1°32

6 0°14 0°45 0-4 0°8 1:16

7 0°05 0°50 Ou 1:2 0°62

8 0°03 0°44 O71 Ais 0°40

@) 0°03 0:37 0°2 12 0°32 10 0:07 0°43 0-1 ed 0°28

11 0:00 0°42 0°2 0°8 0°74

12 0-00 0°31 0-3 07 0°62 ‘ 13 0:00 0°32 0-4 0°6 0°55 0

14 0:01 0°24 02 0°6 0°63 a 15 0:00 0°29 0-4 0°5 0°85 < 16 0:00 0-28 O-4 0°4 1:07 0°84 17 0°08 0°24 0°5 0°4 0°87 0°47 18 0°39 0°42 1:0 0°8 1:02 0°44 iy 0°87 0°89 18 1:2 1°53 0°53 20 1°52 1°52 2°3 1°4 1°58 0:70 21 2°51 1°72 2°3 iy 1:41 0°55 22 3°08 210A 2°5 1°8 1°27 0°55 23 2°78 2°60 2°7 ily 1°24 0°62 ;

cr

Finally, the westerly disturbances at the three southern stations bear greater marks of a double progression and of irregularity just as they did in the

northern hemisphere, and moreover like their northern analogues they are regulated by local rather than by absolute time.

57. Distribution of Declination Disturbance over the Various Months of the Year.—Broun was probably the first to remark in redueing the Makerstoun observations that the disturbances were greatest at the equinoxes and lcast at the solstiees. His method was to find for each month the mean diurnal inequality, and then to consider the difference of each individual observation from the mouthly mean for that hour as a disturbance, the summation of all such differences for the month denoting the monthly disturbance value. The following table embodies the results at various stations—those at Toronto, Hobart Town, and the Cape being given by Sabine, and that at Bombay by C. Chambers, who has pursued Sabine's method of separating disturbances :—

TABLE IX.—Monthly Distribution of Declination Disturbances,

Cape of

Good Hope. Hobart Town,

Easterly. Westerly. Easterly. Westerly. Easterly Westerly. Easterly Westerly.

NH ORS

September… October Novembcr.. December..

SSR EEOC Ss DARANAMNINSHEADS BSERSRDAUSESSE SORrERronrEooSS Mk WONNDNHSNDA®W BSRe2Ssvssaasy eo S&S Solo Sete wy vokawwocad gia BEE OSSOORHHH WOSSAADKROBHOM Legh ag SY te ES WAN NAUWDANYEEG DWNDRHONAHAN HOH OSCOnHHH Vdswarmawdareesa SREssSarkse x

58. A careful inspection of this table, without attempting a more complete analysis, will, it is thought, lead to the following con- clusions :—

(1) Although for any station the distribution of the easterly dis- turbances over the various hours of the day is generally different from that of the westerly, yet the same law of distribution over the various months of the year is followed by the easterly and by the westerly disturbances at any station—the law at one station being. however, different from that at another. ,

(2) In all stations there is first an annual inequality exhibiting a maximum generally a short time after the summer solstice witha corresponding minimum for the winter solstice, and secondly a semi- annual inequality exhibiting a maximum generally a little after each equinox.

(3) The equinox maximum is very conspicuons at Toronto; but the summer maximum is most conspicuous at the other stations.

59. In § 38 it was observed that the observations selected as dis- turbed at any station may nevertheless be a mixture of what may be termed true disturbances and of the more prominent specimens of magnetic weather. The truth of this statement would appear to be borne out by the laws now given. In one of these we find that dis- turbances, at all stations, havea maximum about the time of the summer solstice and a corresponding minimum about the time of the winter solstice. But the absolute time of the summer solstice for

stations north of the equator corresponds with that of the winter solstice for stations south of the line. It would therefore appear that in so far as this law is concerned such disturbances lack the element of simultaneity. On the other hand, a law of this nature would naturally hold for magnetic weather. For at any station the diurnal range of declination is greatest at the summer solstice, and henee any considerable proportional variation of this would, if repre- sented by a fixed scale, present the appearance of being greatest likewise at this time. The question thus arises whether this law does not rather apply to magnetic weather than to real disturbance,

Again the semiannual inequality of disturbance exhibits through- out the globe a maximum at the equinoxes, and thus presents the element of simultaneity which was wanting in the annual. This law may therefore refer to true disturbance, and this view is sup- ported by the fact that the aurora— which may be regarded as the universal accompaniment of great and simultaneous disturbances— obeys, as we shall afterwards see, in those stations where it has been well observed, this very same law, that is to say, it has like- wise maxima at the equinoxes.

60. Distribution of Declination Disturbances over Various Years, —In 1852 Sabine discovered (Phil. Trans., 1852, p. 103) that dis- turbances have a long-period inequality allied to that of sun-spots in such a way that a maximum and a minimum of disturbance coincide with a maximum and a minimum of sun-spot frequency.

This will be seen from the following table (X.), in which we have the relative values of declination disturbance at Toronto and Hobart Town compared with the number of groups of spots observed on the sun's disk :—

Values of Declination Disturbance.

Groups of Sun-Spots, Toronto. Hobart Town.

1843 0°55 0°48 34 1844 0°73 0°82 52 1845 0°62 0°67 114 1846 1°26 1°03 157, 1847 1°40 1°44 257 1848 1°43 1°60 330

61. The following table (XI.) exhibits the same thing for Bombay. The first column of this table is derived from the magnetic results of C. Chambers, while the sun-spot areas are those of Messrs De la Rue, Stewart, and Loewy.

Aggregate Values (in Minutes) of Declination Disturbances.

1532°1

Sun-Spot Areas,

1852 1313 1297 1211

1421°6 951°8 1240°5 691°1

We may conclude from these tables that declination disturbanees march with sun-spots, but that the alliance between these two phenomena is probably not so intimate as that between declina- tion ranges and sun-spots.

62. Distribution of Declination Disturbances over the Surface of the Globe. —It is well known that disturbances are comparatively small near the equator, while they are great near the magnetie poles, and greatest of all perhaps near the position of maximunl auroras. If we adopt Sabine's system of separating disturbed from undisturbed observations, it is thus clear that the same separating value cannot be adopted at all stations. At first sight this would scem to introduce an element of uncertainty in the estimation of disturbances, but it was soon found by Sabine that no very great nicety is required in this matter. Not only do the laws which regu: late disturbances at a given station remain comparatively unaffected by the magnitude of the separating value, but it is likewise easy to tell whether the aggregate disturbance value at one station is de- cidedly greater or less than at another. Probably at present it would be impossible to obtain more definite information than this.

63. The following table (XII.) exhibits the proportion between the aggregate amount of easterly and that of westerly disturbanees of the declination at various stations in both hemispheres :—

Name of Station. Easterly. Westerly. Monon borssccusesss suet) pe

Point Barrow 1°63 il Port Kennedy 1°85 1 Carlton Fort . 1°74 1 Kiewit. oscs s-mes-s somaumesemaeecescen est aemas 1:19 1 PEKING Miisscectsccesscenecesecce ecees ieee ileal BOMPAV sc avessceerscesesseeceeonetisess eeeeee 1°6 1 SU HieIBnAy ce. csscoscee cece teense cree 1°30 Cape of Good Hope …....ssccesseeeeee 1 1°51 Mobart "lowill (2.~~eccssesccoessersssscessene 1 1°40 Falkland Isles……..~~.— 0008 1°66 1

64. Annual Variation of Declination.—The declination fluctua-

tions of short period hitherto discussed are not necessarily accom-

nied by a permanent change of mean position of the needle. We have now to inquire whether there be any fluctuations of long period (besides the secular change discussed in §$ 80-33) tending to alter perceptibly the position of the magnetic needle. This leads us at once to the annual variation, for our knowledge of which we must look to the later-made and more accurate observations, in which all possible sources of error have been carefully eliminated. Broun has made an exhaustive experimental inquiry into the various sources of error whieh could possibly influence his declination needle at Trevandrum. His conclusion was that the variations of torsion of a well-made thread are not sufficient to produce a sensible effect upon the position of a powerful magnet. In fact Grubb's magnet, weighing 6000 grains, and Adie's, weighing 1100 grains, give almost identical results. 'We may extend these con- clusions to other observatories where well-devised instruments have been established, and look with much confidence to such instru- ments registering correctly the secular as well as the annual change of declination that may be taking place at each locality.

65. The following table (XIII.), borrowed, with the exception of the Trevandrum and Bombay results, from E. Walker's Terrestrial Maynetism, shows the annual variation at seven stations :—

Observation Years,

Mean Annual

>

3

1858-62 1844-48 1841-49 1841-46 1845-51 1854-69 1859-65

WOH ROONEY oo er ho orto co RPaANS9I0 6

Tanne XIV.—Showing the Mean Annual Variation for each Month of the Year at Seven Stations.

7 e

Rs i = | ‘Trevandrum. : – | 2 |\we| 3 > oie |i | s 2 2 & 2 SS 2 «| Grubb.| Adie. | 3 — P non “ u “ u “

— 2°4 | +64°2 | —22°2/ + 1:2} + 6:3} 4+11:0

— 1:2} —10°8 | —28‘7 | + 3°4/ + 8-7} +16°3

—13°8 | —62°4 | —24:1| + 5°6| 4+ 8:7 | 4+ 9°8!

+ 8:4 | —58°2 } —20°6 | + 1°6) + 2:2} 4+ 1:7

— 3°6 | —61°8 | —12°2/ — 2°8; — 8:2) 4+ 1°6

—19°8 | —48°2 | — 4°5| — 87} —10°5| 4+ 0-4 |

+ 18) — 4:8) +13°6| — 8:0} —11°1} — 8°9

+ 7:2 | +25:2 | +27°6 | + 1:2} — 3:0} 4+ 1:2

+ 7:2 | +42°6 | 38°5} 4 3°3] — 1°3 | —18°2

— 3°0 | +29°4 | +42°9| + 7:1] + 3:2 | —10°9

+18°0 |} +43°2| + 7:9) 4+ 23/4 26/4 3:1

+10°2 | +49°8 | +16°7| — 4:99} — 1:2) — 7°0

Here + indicates that the marked pole of the needle is to the west and — that it is to the east of its mean position for the year.

66. Tocancel the irregularities of this table let us take the means from April to September and from October to March, the former embracing the months around the June solstice and the latter those around the December solstice (Table XV.):—

Means from October to March.

Mcans from April to September.

“ “ RTOS Te vas tsicoss0csssecoscusescress —23°7 +31°8 Eee ssh isaciecssss.sssecisceces — 45 +17°1 Meteecsccntss 0. — 54 + 69 Cape of Good Hope —28’°7 +30°9 Hobart Town …. —18°7 +17°3

Trevandrum…

It will be seen from the above that the means for Trevandrum and Bombay present opposite signs to those for the other stations. The whole amount for Trevandrum is no doubt very small, and Chambers does not regard the evidence for Bombay as conclusive ; but on the whole it would appear that two observatories near one another present evidence of a similar behaviour in declination, and we are therefore disposed to regard it as a reality.

67. Semiannual Variation of Declination.—If we look at the numbers of Table XIV., we shall see that there are traces of turning points at the equinoxes. Let us, in order to exhibit this, compare together the sums for the six months grouped around the two equinoxes with those for the six months grouped around the two solstices—that is to say, eompare the sums for February, Mareh, April, August, September, October, with those for November, December, J anuary, May, June, July—and we thus obtain the following table (XVI.):—

wETROROLOGY

173

Sums around Sums around Equinoctial Mouths. | Solstitial Months.

sewn penta cclerinesc’ceiscciceesaneessiseiascncos +104°2 —85’°7 PHOMOMUOs.c.c>—cscccecessscccevcoseets tocane + 96°4 —21°0 STHPEM@IGIARN. «205s-c-cnc rc: vcens-ensnoscesae- + 42 + 4°8 (CHIE. Cs tin acopagganiconsadtoncascAgconecndosceBEe + 47°4 —34°2 GAG NOW) senass-cesescceccvsaccenasesse — O7 +425°6

— 19°0 H

+ 02

68. Solar-Diurnal Variations of the Horizontal and Vertieal Com- ponents of Magnetie Force.—Although self-recording magnetographs have been established in many observatories throughout the globe, yet, owing to the peculiar difficulties of the task, and the labour of the process of reduction, very little has been done towards determin- ing the solar-diurnal variation of the horizontal and vertieal compon- ents of the earth's magnetic force. Senhor Capello of the Lisbon Observatory has, however, made progress with his reductions, and has already published valuable information regarding the solar- diurnal fluctuation of the two force elements at his observatory.

In his attempts to climinate the disturbances of horizontal and vertical force by the method of Sir E. Sabine, Senhor Capello has experienced considerable difficulty, more particularly with the records of the vertical force magnetograph. This instrument and the bifilar have very often been found by him to change their position of equilibrium after strong perturbations. Again there is generally, for any hour, a variation at the beginning and end of the month from the monthly normal value for that hour owing to change of temperature, and this cannot be completely corrected inasmuch as the coefficient of temperature is not exactly known. These two causes combined tend to falsify the results when the plan adopted is the method of comparison between the individual values of any hour and the normal monthly average of that hour. Senhor Capello has found it necessary to seleet and extract the disturbances, not directly from the hourly values, but by comparing the variation of an individual day with the average diurnal variation derived from the month.

To illustrate this method by means of an example, let us imagine that the sum of the twenty-four hourly values for a particular day is 24,000, and that the average monthly diurnal variation would indicate that a particular hour of this day should have a value 990, then, if the value for this hour should prove to be greater or less than 990 by more than a certain amount, it would be set aside as a disturbed observation. Senhor Capello rather thinks it will be desirable somewhat to modify this method, and he eoncludes his remarks

by observing that for this and other similar questions it is most necessary that directors of establishments possessing magnetographs should agree together to employ the same method in their reductions in order that their results may be compar- able with each other. With the view of adding weight to these remarks, we may quote the observation of Sir William Thomson, that our ability to analyse mathematically that influenee which produces the diurnal variation will depend upon our knowing at a certain number of stations the exact nature of this diur- nal variation for each of the three magnetic elements. A complete theory of this diurnal influence must therefore wait upon the concerted action of the directors of the various establishments possessing magnetographs.

69. Change in Horizontal Foree Range from Month to Month.— Although we do not possess finally accurate determinations of the solar-diurnal variations of either element of the force, yet we are in possession of information regarding the ehange in the diurnal range of the horizontal force from month to month at the Greenwich Observatory. William Ellis has given us the following table (Phil. Trans., 1880) representing the monthly mean diurnal range of horizontal force at that observatory expressed in ten-thousandths of the whole horizontal force. In the formation of these means, days of great magnetic disturbance were rejected, and also certain other days on which there prevailed a smaller but considerable amount of disturbance estimated according to a general standard formed in the examination of many thousands of photographs.

TABLE XVII.—Aonthly Mean Diurnal Range of Horizontal Force at Royal Observatory, Greenwieh.

July. Aug. Sept. 272″ W20°2 “Der2

Oct. 19°8

Nov. Dec. 14:3 11°6

Jan, Feb. Mar. 13° 14:8 201

April. 27°4

May. June. 26°9 273

Thus, like the declination range (§ 43), the horizontal force range has a maximwin in summer and a minimum in winter, and exhibits a tendency towards maxima at the equinoxes.

70. Long-Period Inequalities of Horizontal Force Range.— Lagging Behind.1—Ellis has compared the diurnal range of the horizontal force as well as that of the declination at Greenwich with the period of sun-spot frequency, his comparisons extending fron 1841 to 1877, and he has deduced the following conelusions:—

1 Secchi (Wolf's Astronomische Mittheilungen, No. 21) seems to have been the first to indicate a relation between the state of the sun's surfacc and the diurnal variation in the horizontal forec.

174

(1) The diurnal ranges of the magnetic elements of declination and horizontal force are subject to a periodical variation, the duration of which is equal to that of the known eleven-ycar sun- spot period.

(2) The epochs of minimum and maximum of magnetic and sun- spot effect are nearly coincident, the magnetic epochs on the whole occurring somewhat later than the corresponding sun-spot epochs. The variations of duration in different periods appear to be similar for both phenomena. ;

(3) The occasional more sudden outbursts of magnetic and sun- spot energy, extending sometimes over periods of several months, appear to occur nearly simultaneously, and progress collaterally.

71. Disturbanee-Diurnal Variation of Foree Components.—We may derive the following conclusions from the results obtained by Sabine for the observatories of Toronto, Kew, and St Helena. For cach element there are two categories, namely, those disturbances which tend to increase and those which tend to diminish the clement in question.

(1) At Toronto the disturbances increasing both elements of force well represent single progressions with maxima occurring for both about 4 or 5 hours local time. Again the disturbances decreasing both elements represent fairly well single progressions with maxima occurring for both at about 14 or 15 hours local time.

(2) At Kew the disturbances increasing both elements represent well single progressions with maxima occurring for both about 5 hours local time. On the other hand, the disturbances decreasing the horizontal force represent signs of a double progression and those decreasing the vertical force signs of a single progression, the maximum for the latter falling between the two maxima for the former, and occurring at 14 hours local time.

(3) There is not the same close correspondence betweéh the progress of the disturbances which tend to increase both elements nor between the progress of those which tend to decrease both clements at St Helena as there is for the other stations, nor is there the same likeness between the numbers for St Helena and those of Toronto or Kew as there is between the numbers of Toronto and those of Kew.

72. The fact that the disturbance-diurnal variations of the two force elements at Kew are very like each other while neither of them is very like the corresponding declination variation (§ 54) receives confirmation from a visual inspection of the Kew curves. In the Philosophical Transaetions for 1862 Stewart thus describes the result of an inspection of the disturbances of these curves for the years 1858, 1859, 1860 (disturbance years) :—

‘There are twenty-two cases in which the declination is raised or lowered along with the horizontal force, and only seven cases of an opposite deseription. Also there are twenty-two eases in which the declination is raised or lowcred along with the vertical force, and only eleven eases of an opposite description. Finally, there are thirty-one cases in which both forees are raised or lowered together, and only two eases of an opposite description. There is therefore a decided tendency in the eurvcs of all the elements to be raised or lowered simul- taneously, but this tendency is stronger between the horizontal and vertical foree curves than between either of these and the declination. It may at the same time be affirmed that with the exception of the disturbance of August to Septem-

ber 1859 there is no very prominent ease in which the three elements do not rise or fall together.”

73. Peaks and Hollows.—These are certain small but abrupt mag- netic changes which from the fact that they generally fall within the separating value are not usually regarded as disturbances. These changes can only be brought to tight where there is a continuous record of magnetic phenomena such as that derived from self- recording magnetographs. They were first studied at the Kew Observatory by Stewart (Phil. Trans., 1862). We have seen that more than one type of force must be concerned in producing magnetic disturbances. This is confirmed by the appearance of the Kew records, from which it may be seen that no disturbance of any magnitude is due to the action of a single force varying merely in amount but not in direction. For if there were only one type of force the distance at any moment of a point in the curve of onc of the elements from its normal position should bear throughout a disturbance an invariable proportion to the distance of a correspond- ing point in the curve of another of the elements from its normal ; but this is by no means the case.

But even if several independent forces are at work it may be thought unlikely that at the same moment a sudden change should take place in all; there is thus a probability that sudden changes of force, as exhibited in peaks and hollows, are changes in one of the elementary forces concerned. Even if the change is not a very abrupt one, provided that we confine ourselves to such peaks and hollows as present a similar appearance for all the curves, we may suppose that we are observing changes in one only of the elementary disturbing forces ; for it is unlikely that two or more independent forces, changing independently, should produce similar appearances in all of the three curves.

Assuming it as probable that similarity of appearance in the curve variations of the three elements denotes a simplicity in the disturbing force, Stewart has discussed all such peaks and hollows at Kew extending over the first two years of their production, and has obtained a result which is embodied in the following table:—

VMiPDpHOROL OG Y

TABLE XVIII.—Hourly Ratios and Frequeney of the Kew Peaks and Hollows, the Vertieal Foree Disturbanee being taken as Unity.

Number of . | Observations.

Decli- nation.

Number of Observations,

2°14

1:97

1°86 1°81 1°38

157

1°82 1°60

1:33 1:30

We OHNO RIH IY

74, It will be seen from this table that the ratio between simul- taneous peaks and hollows of the two components of the force is very nearly constant, the horizontal force disturbance being about double that of the vertical force, so far as size on the curve is concerned, It will also be seen that there is a very marked diurnal range in the ratio which the declination peak or hollow bears to that of the vertical force, this ratio being greatest about 7 A.M. About this hour we have also most peaks and hollows, while in the evening and early morning hours there is so great an absence of these phenomena that the ratios are doubtful.

75. A preliminary comparison between the peaks and hollows at Lisbon and at Kew has been made by Capello and Stewart (Proe. Roy. Soc., January 28, 1864) with the following conclusions,

(1) The Kew peaks and hollows are simultaneously produced at Lisbon in all the elements, but to a smaller extent than at Kew.

(2) The direction is the same at both stations for the declination and horizontal force peaks and hollows, but it is reversed in the case of the vertical force, so that a sudden small increase of vertical force at Kew corresponds to a diminution of the same at Lisbon.

It would be manifestly impossible to discuss with any advantage the nature and origin of these peculiar changes until more exten- sive observations of them have been made. As the peak and hollow force is probably of a simple nature, a further knowledge of its character may be of much importance to the theory of terrestrial magnetism.

It is interesting to remark that we have in peaks and hollows the same close relation between the variations of the two force elements that we find in the larger disturbances.

It is believed too that during violent disturbances a certain change of type is produced in the peak and hollow force, and more especially is this remarkable in the great disturbance in August and September 1859, where the declination would scem to march in the opposite direction from the two components of the force. We have seen that the same peculiarity characterized on this occasion the larger and more apparent magnetic changes. We shall afterwards refer to a circumstance which may perhaps throw light upon this peculiarity (§ 93), meanwhile we conclude by again remarking that during comparative magnetic calms the peak and hollow force shows signs of remaining constant in type, and that it is therefore of great importance that the directors of observatories possessing self-recording magnetographs should take united action to observe this force.

76. Other Inequalities of the Disturbanee-Diurnal Variation of the Foree Components.—Sabine has shown that disturbances of the force components present a distribution over the various months of the year very similar on the whole to that which is exhibited by dis- turbances of declination. He has likewise shown that disturbances of the force components present a distribution over various years similar to that exhibited by disturbances of declination. Finally, we may probably conclude that disturbances of the

force components are smallest at those portions of the earth’s surface where disturb- ances of the declination are smallest, and largest at those portions where such disturbances are largest.

77, Annual and Semiannual Variation of Horizontal Foree and Dip.—Broun (Trans. Roy. Soe. Edin. for 1861) has discussed the results obtained by Sabine at his magnetical stations, and has shown that differential and absolute obscrvations agree in telling us that the horizontal force is smallest at the equinoxes and greatest at the solstices. Whipple has recently obtained the same result from the Kew observations.

We have deduced the following table (XIX.) from the various absolute determinations that have been made at sundry places. In it the annual and semiannual variations of declination, horizontal force, and dip are exhibited, ‘‘increase” denoting a push to the west, and ‘‘ decrease” a push tothe east. The method of obtaining these has already been indicated in $$ 66, 67.

ee ee

1 We ought to mention that, with the execption of the one occasion already alluded to, a peak of one element always corresponds to a peak of another ele- ment, and a hollow of one element to a hollow of another.

TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM. |

Effect on Declination.

At June Solstice compared to

At Equinoxes compared to Solstices.

Station.

Ra @NSEOTIM OT IC W..,..-c0.-0e0ccnsececscssceres Increase. Decrease. TERROR eros corr vccoccncscccreeceneneccssssseses Increase, Decrease, Cape of Good Hope.. Increase. Decrease. Hobart Town. Decrease. Decrease. Trevandrum Decrease, Increase. Bombay …. Unédccided.

Increase. BPAY get trates cecsccs :cccveccecessteseicaesneces Undecided. Decrease.

78. In discussing the results of this table we shall assume that the sun acts, and in all probability acts indirectly, upon the

magnetic system of the earth. This point will afterwards be further examined. Meanwhile, assuming this indirect action of the sun, and assuming, to fix our thoughts, that it is in close alliance with the convection system of the earth's atmosphere, we can readily imagine that such solar action would act most strongly on the earth's magnetic poles at the solstices, and that in the June solstice the pole or poles in the northern hemisphere and in the December solstice those in the southern hemisphere would be most afiected. Now a strong action of this kind upon either magnetic pole may well be presumed to increase the general magnetism of the earth, or at least that portion of it which is most readily affected by external action, that is to say, the induction system. Again, if the solar magnetie influence is connected with the convcetion currents of the earth, we can readily imagine that the influence in the northern hemisphere where there is much land should exceed that in the southern hemisphere where there is much water.

If these views be reasonable we might expect two things to follow:—(1) the earth's induction system should be strouger at the solstices than at the equinoxcs, and (2) it should be more especially strong at the June solstice, when the sun acts in the northern hemi- sphere. We must bear in mind, however, that so vast is the earth that a stimulus applied to its particles most susceptible of magnetism may not be instantaneously propagated throughout its mass, but that time may enter as an element of the question, in which ease, inasmuch as the action of the sun at the June solstice is in the northern hemisphcre, a station near the south pole may not fully partake of the magnetic effects of this action.

79. An hypothesis of this nature would appear to be consistent with the results of Table XIX.

In the first placc, if the earth should become stronger as a magnet in one or in both of its magnetie systems this would show itself by an increase of

horizontal force at least in all such stations as those at whieh absolute observations are made. An influence which increases the horizontal force at these various stations is therefore naturally regarded, and was regarded by Broun, as one increasing the strength of one or both of the magnetic systems of the earth— whether of one or of both will presently appear. We may therefore assume from our observations that one or both of the earth's mag- netic systems are strongest at the solstices.

In the next place we may imagine that the changes of declination and dip which the table exhibits as occurring at the solstices are the very changes which would be wrought in these elements by an Increase of power in the earth. For we see very well that an Increase of horizontal force at the various stations may be regarded as denoting an increase of the earth's magnetic power. We cannot, however, sec with equal facility what changes would be produced in the declination and dip by an increase in power of one or both of the magnetic systems; but we may well imagine that such changes of these elements as are found to accompany an increase of horizon- tal force are those that denote an increase of the earth's power.

We have thus ascertained the probable nature of those changes of the three elements which denote an increase of power. Now it will be noticed from the table that the effect at the June as compared with that at the December solstice is of the opposite nature to the effect at the equinoxes as compared with the solstices, —that is to say, the earth is more powerfully affected in June than in December, the only well-established exception to this being Hobart Town in the far south. _ But, assuming that time is an element in the develop- ment of this preponderating influence acting in the north, it is easy to see why Hobart Town should not exhibit its full effect.

It remains to determine from the observations themselves which of the magnetic systems it is that exhibits these oscillations. Analogy would of course point to the induction system, but it is desirable to determine this from the observations themselves.

In § 54, when discussing the disturbance-diurnal variation of declination, it was found that Toronto and Kew may be regarded as on one side of the Siberian pole, while Peking, Nertchinsk, and Bombay are on the other. Now, if it be this pole that is influenced by the oscillations under discussion,

we might expect that the influ- ence on declination at Toronto and Kew should be the opposite of that at Trevandrum and Bombay. We find by the table that this is the case, and we are thus inelined to attribute these changes to the Siberian instead of the American pole. It would thus appear

PETEOROL OG Y

December Solstice.

rs

Effect on Dip.

Effect on Horizontal Force.

At June Solstice compared to

At Equinoxes compared to

At Equinoxes compared to

At June Solstice compared to

Solstices. December Solstice. Solstices. December Solstice. Decrease. Inappreciable. Increase. Decrease. Decrease. Increase. Inappreciable. Decrease, Decrease. Increasc.

Decrease. Decrease. Decrease. Decrease.

that the observations of Table XIX. bear out the provisional working hypothesis which we have ventured to introduce. It is quite pos- sible that these remarks may not stand the test of more completc inquiry, but they are here introduced rather as denoting a method of looking at the subject which ought we think to be pursued than as embodying conclusions of a final nature.

80. Lifect of the State of the Sun’s Surface upon the Absolute Magnetism of the Earth.— We have now to consider whether the state of the sun’s surface permancntly influences the magnetism of the earth. It will at once be seen

that any such action will appar- ently manifest itself as an oscillation in the secularchange. We must, however, carefully guard ourselves against prematurely concluding that it implies a variation in the amount of true secular change. There may be two distinct things—true secular change due to one cause, and action depending on sun-spots due to another. These, from the nature of the case, are necessarily mixed up together in the yearly changes which we examine; it does not, however, follow that there is any real identity between them. We shall now give onc example of the method to be pursued in the attempt to detect a solar influence of this nature. Let us turn to Table III., and take the decli- nation yearly values at Toronto from 1856 to1871. Subtracting the value for 1856 from that for 1871, we find that the westerly declina- tion had increased in fifteen years 51’°6, that is to say, at the mean rate of 3’°44 per annum. Again, the average deelination for the sixteen years 1856-71 is 2° 20’°8 corresponding to the epoeh at the commencement of the year 1864. Taking the average value and epoch, andalso the average yearly increase above given, we are able to construct the following table (XX.), in whieh caleulated and observed values at Toronto are compared together :—

Observed. Calculated. Difference,

° f oe 4

1 56°30 1 +1°30 2 0°50 1 +2°06 2 4°50 2 +2°62 2 7:40 Z -+2°08 2 10°60 2 1‘84 2 14°40 2 – -2°20

2 15:70 2 +0-06

2 19°10 2 -+-0°02 2 21°90 2 —0°62 2 24°80 2 —1°16 2 27°60 Dez —1°80 2 29°80 2 —3°04 2 33°20 z —3°08 2 37°10 2 3f —2°62 2 41:90 2 4: —1°26

2 47:90 2 +1:30

It may be gathered from this table that the years which corrc- spond to minimum sun-spots have in the last column a greater negative or lower positive sign than those which correspond to maximum sun-spots, and

hence we may conelude that at Toronto the tendency of many sun-spots is to increase the westerly declination.

81. Performing a similar operation for all those cases in which we have a sufficiently extensive series of observations to work upon, we obtain the following table :—

TABLE XXI.—Hfeet of Numerous Sun-Spots on the Values of Magnetic Elements.

Station. Declination. Tforizontal Force. Dip.

deteacetiecnsccescsaseeoscans Increase. Inappreciable. Increase. Merssacesdscascccsensea2 Increase. Increase. Increase. Badescssseeess Increase (2). Uncertain. Increase.

Cape of Good Hope…..... Decrease.

MRC VANGCUM:.....—05 Increase.

82. We have good grounds for supposing that the sun is most powerful when there are numerous spots on his surface, and therefore the above table represents a state of things which we may imagine to be caused in one way or another by increased solar power. Now the most natural hypothesis is to imagine that an increase of spots acts in producing an increase of disturbances, and that for those stations at which the disturbances tend on the whole to affect the elements in a definite direction there will be left behind a permanent effeet in this direction. A comparison of Table XXI. with Table XII. will, however, show that this explanation is not valid. For instance, at Toronto and Kew disturbances tend rather to diminish

than to increase the westerly declination, while the effect of numer- ous sun-spots is to increase it. Again, at the Cape the tendency of disturbances is to increase the westerly declination, while that of numerous sun-spots is to decrease it. At Trevandrum again (if we judge of it by Bombay) the effect of disturbances will be to increase the easterly declination, while that of

sun-spots is to decrease it. Again, it is believed that at Kew and Toronto the supposed disturb- ance effect on the dip agrees in character with the sun-spot effect. On the whole, therefore, there is no definite relation between the two effects. ;

Now if we take Hobart Town, the Cape, and Trevandrum in the above table, we find from Table XIX. that these stations seem to indicate that the magnetic state of the earth is most powerful at times of maximum sun-spots. Kew and Toronto, however, so far as declination and dip are concerned, appear to go the other way. If, however, we suppose that during the several years of maximum sun-spots the American pole as well as the Siberian is affected, and that on such occasions of long continuance the former has more influence than the latter, we shall be able to reconcile our results with the hypothesis of increased solar action. We can understand too that time must be an important element in any influence communicated to the American pole, and that, although such influence might be apparent at Toronto and Kew, which are comparatively near the pole, it would not be apparent at the other stations of Table XXI. We shall recur to this subject when dis- cussing secular change.

VARIOUS PHENOMENA CONNECTED WITH THE SUN AND’ WITH TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM.

83. Closeness in Time between Solar Changes and™Magnetic Disturbanees.—Loomis (American Journal of Seience, vol. 1.) has registered the extent of sun-spots for the six days preceding and following each of the great magnetic disturbances at Green- wich, and has compared these values with that for the very day of the disturbance. In this manner he has treated all the days of great magnetic disturbance at Greenwich for a period of twenty- three years, with the exception of those cases in which very few observations of sun-spots were made. The cases of disturbance thus treated amount to one hundred and thirty-five, and the following result has been obtained :—

TABLE XXII.—Lxtent of Spotted Solar Surface.

Days before Storm. Storm. Days after Storm. – F Cw « A? Be oP tb! 2 @ 2 oS 46 ean 0 – c c . < : “ . : ci F 2 IBS Days, ¢47°9 50° 54’S 53° 52°3 48-9

57°9 49-0 45°1 49°3 45°6 45°2 45°3

From this result Loomis draws the following eonclusions:— (1) great disturbances of the earth's magnetism are accompanied by unusual disturbances of the sun's surface on the very day of the magnetic storm ; (2) the great disturbance of the sun's surface which accompanies a terrestrial magnetic storm is generally heralded by a smaller disturbance three or four days previous, succeeded by a comparative calm which immediately precedes the magnetic storm.

84. There is one instance on record of a sudden solar change which was practically simultaneous with a magnetic disturbance.! On September 1, 1859, a little before noon, R. C. Carrington was observing by means of a telescope a large sun-spot, when, to quote his own words—

" Within the area of the great north group (the size of which had previously excited general remark) two patches of intensely bright and white light broke out. . . . I noted down the time by the chronometer, and, seeing the outburst to be very rapidly on the increase, and being somewhat flurried by the surprise, I hastily ran to call some one to witness the exhibition with me, and on returning within sixty seconds was mortified to find that it was already much changed and enfeebled. Very shortly afterwards the last trace was gone; and, although I maintained a strict watch for nearly an hour, no recurrence took place. . .. The instant of the first outburst was not fifteen seconds different from 115 18m Green- wich mean time, and 114 23m was taken for the time of disappearance. In this lapse of five minutes, the two patches of light traversed a space of about 35,000 miles. . . . It was impossible, on first witnessing an appearance so similar to a sudden conflagration, not to expect a considerable result in the way of alteration of the details of the group in which it occurred; and I was certainly surprised on referring to the sketch which I had carefully and satisfactorily finished before

the occurrence, at finding myself unable to recognize any change whatever as |

having taken place. The impression left upon me is that the phenomenon took place at an elevation considerably above the general surface of the sun,

and —o altogether above and over the great group in which it was seen pro- jected.

“‘It has been very gratifying to me to learn that Mr Hodgson chanced to be observing the sun at his house at Holloway on the same day, and to hear that he was a witness of what he also considered a very remarkable phenomenon.”

At the very moment when Carrington observed this pheno- menon the three magnetic elements at Kew were simultaneously disturbed. This disturbance occurred as nearly as possible at 115 15m a.M., affecting all the elements simultaneously, and commencing quite abruptly. The first or most abrupt portion of the disturbance lasted only about three minutes for all the elements ; but after that there was a more gradual change in the

1 Phil. Trans., November 21, 1861.

|

METEOROLOGY

[TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM,

same direction before the curve turned. This more gradual eon. tinuation of the first sudden movement lasted about seven minnteg for all the elements, This magnetic disturbance was, however. in reality a small one, and was followed by a very great disturbanea which took place not many hours afterwards.

85. Simultaneity of Changes of Horizontal Foree at Various Parts of the Earth:—We have already (§ 79) alluded to the superiori

| of the horizontal force in indicating by its changes what is taking

place in the magnetic system of the earth. If this system be strengthened as a whole we shall no doubt find the horizontal force increased in value at our various stations, while if the earth’s power be weakened asa whole we shall find the horizontal force diminished, Broun has discussed this subject at.

great length in a memoir already mentioned, and has embodied his observations in numerical — results from which the following table has been extracted :—

TABLE XXIII.—Daily Means of Horizontal Force at Makerstoun, (M.), Trevandrum (T.), Singapore (S.), and Hobart Town (H.).

1844, M. | T. March 17

18

ced ” ” ”

21°30 20°11 21°73 22°00 23°15 22°47 22°30 23°71 25°22 22°24 22°16 5°97

17-06

11°54 07°62 08°55 07°83

09-06

08°14 09°58 10°09 09°48 10°81 07°52 03°50 02°27

This table shows a considerable likeness between the daily changes — of the horizontal force at the four stations. For instance, we haye a minimum which occurs on March 5 at Makerstoun and Mareh 6 at the other stations ; we have likewise a well-defined maximum occurring at all stations on March 14, and another occurring at Trevandrum on March 25, and at the other stations on March 26, Finally we have a well-defined minimum occurring at Trevandrum on March 81, and at the other stations a day earlier. 3

Broun has extended a similar treatment to daily means for every hour, and fig. 88 conveys a good idea of the amount of simul- taneity which obtains in the changes of such values of horizontal force at stations far apart.

86. Recurrence of Disturbances at Intervals of about Twenty-sia Days.— Broun? and likewise Hornstein’ have observed that there is a tendency in

large magnetic changes to recur at intervals of about twenty-six days. At first it was natural to suppose that we have here a magnetical indication of the true time of the sun's synodical rotation, the interval between two disturbances denoting that which elapses between two presentations to the earth of a peculiarly powerful solar meridian. It seems unlikely, however, that there is a really permanent one-sidedness of this kind in our luminary; but the result of observation seems to show that for a limited period, say two or three years, certain meridians of the sun appear to be peculiarly powerful. The cause of this we shall not here diseuss, but simply treat the phenomenon as a fact derived from observation. Broun in his paper above quoted (Phil. T'rans., 1876) makes the following remarks :—

"We have seen that when one side of the sun is presented to the earth the magnetic force of the latter is greater than when the other side is turned towards us; we may even say that the intensity is greatest for a given solar meridian ; this, however, may be simply an integral effect resulting from the actions due to all the meridians. But can we suppose when a great and sudden increase or diminution of the earth's magnetic force occurs that this is produced by some change occurring on a particular solar meridian? This does not seem at all improbable.

"Tn order to examine the facts, all the cases were noted during the years 1844 and 1845 in which the daily mean horizontal force diminished one-thousandth of its whole value within an interval of three days; they were found to be twenty- eight in number. If we call the solar meridian presented to us on the 1st January 1844 the zero meridian (0), and consider the time of rotation to be twenty-six days, and that there are twenty-six meridians, we find that the solar meridians presented to us when these great movements occurred may be arranged in a few groups, as in the following table" (Table XXIV., p. 177].

" An examination," continues Broun, "of this table will show that nearly half of the great changes began when the eighth meridian after the zero had while five began near the twelfth after, and five near the zero itself. . . . ; any doubt existed as to the possibility of these being mere accidental coincidences, it would be removed, I think, by a consideration of the marked succession occur ring between July 31 (No. 18) and December 11,

1845 (No. 28)... If we neglect the two cases of July 31 and August 26, which commence at +6 and +5 respectively, we have five cases of successive solar rotations in which the diminu- tions of intensity began on the +8 day. This exact recurrence at the end twenty-six days of a marked diminution of force proves, it seems to me, that the 7 are all due to the sun, whose time of rotation must be nearly twenty-six

ays.

“ An examination will show that the sudden diminutions of terrestrial magnetic force are in nearly every case preceded by a sudden increase.”

In the above extract we have given the author’s exact words, but, while thinking with him that these actions are due to the sun, it does not appear to us to follow that the time of the sun’s rotation

2 Phil. Mag., August 1858; Phil. Trans., 1876. 3 Vienna Acad. S., June 16, 1871.

‘ 8cems also to indicate that

must be nearly twenty-six days. This assumes that the meridian of peculiar power is fixed on the solar surface. It does not, however, seem impossible to imagine that such a meridian may have a proper motion of its own, and indeed the planetary hypothesis of the origin of sun-spots would rather lead to this conclusion. But if this be the case we shall be unable to deduce from recwrent magnetic dis- turbances the true value of the period of solar rotation. j

87. Repetitions of Magnetic Changes.—J. B. Capello, director of

the Lisbon observatory (Proc. Roy. Soc., October 1868), has remarked \ ee

that at periods of dis- turbance there are nearly § synehronous movements of the de- clination needle during corresponding hours for two, three, or more days. He thus describes these phenomena :—

“In some cases the re-

tition is only in two or three parallel movements; jn others there are truc periods of repetition of some hours in duration. The repeated periods are: not entirely similar, their phases being so modified that in some cases their identity ean only be recognized by a very minute investigation. The same periods, when re- peated, have not always the same total duration ; nor do they recommence at the same precise hour, but sometimes earlier and sometimes luter, the differences varying from a few minutes to two or three hours. We also see that the greatest number of repetitions be- long to the night hours, that is to say, those hours when the movements of the needle are easterly. In the morning hours there do not appear to be any well-marked repetitions. There are twenty-four examples now given, fifteen of which show repetition on two days, eight on three davs, and only one where the ewe appears repeated for four days. It appears that all the facts exhibited in these examples agree with the .cosmical theory; the cause (existing in the sun or in space) appears to con- tinue sometimes during two, three, or several days with- ont undergoing remarkable trausformations, The re-petition, being sometimes earlier sometimes later,

GOOD HOPE

\TREVANDRUM

the eause possesses a proper movement; the cause per- sists, but only comes again into operation when the earth by its diurnal rota- tion is placed in a similar position or conjunction to that of the preceding days.”

Stewart, having coin- pared Capello’s curves with the corresponding traces of the declina- tion at Kew, found that the’ Lisbon disturb- anees are almost in- variably reproduced at Kew at the same time, only to a greater ex- tent, and also that the Same amount of simi- larity which the various Lisbon curves exhibit is exhibited in the corresponding Kew curves. The strongest point in favour of the h pothesis is, he thinks, ‘‘ not So much the repetition of a single disturbance as the repetition of a complicated disturbance in most if not all of its sinuosities.” Several examples of this occur in the diagrams. It would seem that Something of the above nature was suspected by Humboldt, the earliest investigator of disturbances. Humboldt was

astonished to discover the frequency with which nocturnal perturbations oeeurred, sometimes recurring at the same hour on several successive

a bul

Fig. 38.

METEOROLOGY

iv

TABLE XXIV.—Cases in which the Earth’s Magnetic Force dimin- ished One-thousandth of its Value or more in 1844-45 (§ 86).

Change of Force in Hun- dred- thou- sandths.

Solar Meridians.

Date (Jan. 1,

1844=0).

No. of Case.

—3to +1 and others.

5 to 10. 1 to 14,

+8 to +10

87 to 89

1 —360 2 {110t0116| —104 +11 to +12 3 |141 to 143| —107 +11 to +12 4 |189to 190} —116 7to 8 5 |213 to 214} —175 5to 6 6 |221t0222| —135 +13 to +14 7 |267to 270} —115 +7 to +10 8 [278 to‘274| —104 +13 to +14 9 |292 to 294) —268 6to 8 10 | 823 to 325} —130 +13 to +14 11 [361 to 364); —165 12 1/378 to 375| —210 +9 to +11 13 | 383.to 385| —163 14 |416 to 417; —118 15 |467 to 469! —350 16 | 526 to 528} —110 6to 8 17. |570 to’ 571| —154 18 |577 to580| —102 6to 9 19 |603 to 604] —101 5to 6

20 |606 to 607; —159 8 to 2 21 |682 to 633) —153 8 to 9 22 —126 (=4 to =?) 23 ~—118 +8 to + 9 24 |668 to 670} —100 (—8 to —6) 25 |684 to 687| —100 +8 to +10 26 |696 to 698} —110 (—6 to —4) 27 +|702 to 708} —291 —0to +1 28 |710to 712} —122 +8 to +10

nights (Walker's Magnetism, p. 80). gestions before dismissing this subject.

(1) If we imagine that these changes are caused by the solar influence acting vertically on some susceptible region of the earth, then, inasmuch as they occur at the evening or early night hours, this region must lie considerably to the west.

(2) The region must also have a proper motion of its own (sce Capello's remark). Is it possible that this proper motion is on the whole from west to east,—a motion which we know is pursued by meteorological weather, and in which it is imagined (§ 52) that magnetical weather as defined by us likewise participates ?

88. Comparison of Declination Changes at Stations near each other.—Messrs Sidgreaves and Stewart (Pro. Roy. Soc., October 1868) have compared together certain curves of the Kew and. Stonyhurst declination magnetographs. These magnetographs are of the same pattern, and it was found that on ordinary occasions the declination traces at both stations were precisely alike. This was confirmed by placing the curves the one over the other, when they were found to coincide even in their most minute features. In times of dis- turbance, however, it was found that the motions exhibited by the Stonyhurst curves were greater than those at Kew, and this excess of Stonyhurst over Kew depended not so much on the absolute size of the disturbance as on its abruptness.

This feature of the comparison is exhibited in the following table (XXYV.), in which the excess of Stonyhurst over Kew in scale divisions is compared with the abruptness of the disturbance, this element being measured by the changes oceurring in unit of time:—

We would make two sug-

Group II. Group IV.

Group [. Group III.

Execss Excess Excess Abrupt- Abrupt- Abrupt- (under 5). ness. — ness. (under 2 387 6 4:2 i) 2 6°4 6 2°6 0 -3 4:0 8 6°3 7 0 31 5 3°3 0

0 31 8 8:7 8

4 2°9 5 3°d 15 6-4 1 1°8 = 6:3 11 4°9 4 3°3 9 4-7 13 74 3 5°2 5 471 a) 3°7 6°6 49 11 6°5 22 79

Means 1

It is very desirable that further comparisons of this nature should be made.

89. Auroral Displays.—These are very frequent if not continuous near the magnetic poles, while in middle latitudes they are the in- variable accompaniments of all considerable magnetic storms. Near the equator they hardly ever occur.

There is a considerable variety in the forms assumed by these displays, and it is possible that this may denote a corresponding variety in the cause or causes which give rise to this phenomenon.

Loomis (Smithsonian Report for 1865) specifies five such varieties : (1) a horizontal light like the morning aurora or break of day; (2) an arch of light which frequently extends entirely across the heavens from east to west and cuts the magnetic meridian

RV = 23

178

nearly at right angles,—in the polar regions five such arches have been seen at once; (3) slender luminous beams or columns well- defined and often of a bright light; (4) the corona, the centre of which is invariably near the magnetic zenith, but not always exactly coincident with it; and (5) waves or flashes of light.

90. Auroras exhibit the same annual variation as magnetic dis- turbances, and are most frequent about the equinoxes—a fact first observed by Maizan. Kaemtz in his Meteorology gives the follow- ing table, which is applicable to European auroras.

Taste XXVI.—Monthly Frequency of European Auroras.

Jan, Feb. Mar. April Muay. June. July. Oct. Nov.

229 307 440 312 184 65 87 497 285

Loomis again in the memoir already quoted gives the distribu- tion of American auroras over the various months derived from one hundred and thirteen years' observations at New Haven and Boston, twenty-five years' observations at New York, and two years' obser- vations in Canada. His results are represented in the following table :—

Dee.

225

Aug.

217

Sept.

405

Taste XXVII.—Monthly Frequency of American Auroras.

| Bis ep New York. | Canada. | Sum. |

OWEMATY. ...02. cet… seettreecesenerne 81 76 16 February.

It appears from this table that American like European auroras exhibit a maximum of frequency about the equinoxes.

91. Since auroras and magnetic disturbances go together, it is natural to imagine that we should have great auroral displays in years of maximum sun-spots. This is found to be the case, and in the following table (KX VIII.) Wolf’s proportional numbers denot- ing sun-spot frequency are compared with the number of auroras witnessed in Europe and America as compiled by Loomis. It will be seen from this table that years of maximum auroras coincide very well with years of maximuni sun-spots.

Sun-Spot | Auroral Sun-Spot Auroral | | Sun-Spot! Auroral Number. Number. Number. | Number. || Number. | Number.

a ——J eS | ——_—$ —<—-—| | ___ ——_}|_—. 1750 83°1 31 | 1794 38°0 14 || 1837} 136°9 42 1751} = 52°1 30 ||1795} 23'8 7 |) 1888] 1041 60 1752} 45-9 17 ||1796| 15°6 8 |1839| 83:4 65 1753| 28-9 15 1797 65 5 || 1840 61°8 80 1754) 18°5 11 || 1798 4°6 6 1841} 38°5 67 1755 9°3 10 1799 71 4 1942 23-0 53 1756 12°2 9 |;}1800| 15:6 6 18438 13-1 37 1757| 31°9 7 | {1801} 33:9 6 1844 19°3 39 1758, 47°1 14. 1802) 54:7 6 1845 $8°3 48 1759| 54:6 16 1803| 70-7 6 1846] 59°6 54 1760| 64:7 23 «(|| 1804| 71:4 14 || 1847 97°4 76 1761} 80°2 22 1805| 48:0 14 =} 1848] 124-9 72 1762} 60°0 19 1806| 28-4 13 || 1849] 95-4 69 1763| 48-4 16 1807} 11°1 4 ||1850| 69:8 49 1764| 36°7 al 1808 72 2 1851| 63-2 65 1765| 92-4 8 1809 Bal 1 11852} 52:7 67 1766 14:1 5 1810 0°0 1 | 1853 38°5 63 1767| 35-9 9 || 1811 16 0 1854] 21°0 35 1768! 66:8 30 1812 4°9 1 || 1855 TT 20 1769| 10374 40 1813} 126 4 || 1856 51 11 1770} = 98°5 41 1814) 16:2 5 1857} 22-9 21 1771} 86°6 24 1815| 35:2 5 1858| 56:2 37 1772| 65-7 26 1816} 46:9 5 111859} 90°38 50 1773| 39-7 33 1817| 39:9 7 ~~ ||1860] 94:8 48 1774| 9 aT-4 33 1818| 29:7 11 1861} 77:7 36 1775 8°8 22 1819} 23-5 10 1862/ 61:0 28 1776| = 21-7 26 1820 16:2 8 /1868} 45:4 29 1777| 92-0 38 1821 671 4 1864| 45-2 33 1778| 151-7 69 1822 3°9 2 |/1865) 31:4 34 1779| 123-4 70 1823 2°6 1 1866| 14:7 31 1780} 89-2 67 1824 81 1 |! 1867 8:8 22 1781; 66°5 57 1825| 16-2 4 1868} 36°8 33 1782| 38:7 57 1826} 35:0 12 1869} 78-6

1783} 29°5 47 1827} 51:2 17 ‘{/1870| 131-8

1784} 10:3 39 1828} 62-1 21 1871| 113-8

1785| 26-7 56 1829} 67°2 25 1872 92:7

1786) 81-2 84 1830| 67:0 25 1873 677

1787| 128-2 108 1831! 50-4 20 1874} 43°17

1788| 133-3 105 1832; 263 13 1875 18°9

1789! 116-9 84 1833| 9-4 11 | 1876 11:7

1790; 90-6 68 1834} 13:3 19 dasa 111

1791| 67°6 46 1835 59-0 15 || 1878 3°38

1792! 59-9 37 1836| 119°3 82 |} 1879 Ti |1793| 47-3 23

In fig. 39 a graphical representation is given of the likeness which subsists between the progress of auroral frequency, spot frequency, and declination ranges.

METEOROLOGY

[TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM,

92. While the results now given leave little doubt as to the fact of a connexion of some sort subsisting between sun-spots on the one hand and mag- netic disturbances and auroras on the other, yet it is desirable to obtain evidence as to the closeness of the connexion betwecn auroras and sun-spots similar to that which was exhibited in § 82, and which showed thecloseconnexion in point of time . between sun-spots 570 and gain. Loomis has wit , this view treated Fig. 39. auroras in precisely the same way in which he treated disturbances, and has obtained the following table : —

Mean daily range of magnetic

JN

TABLE XXIX.—2Zxtent of Spotted Solar Surface.

Days before Aurora, Aurora, “Days after Aurora. és 1s Ba 1 2 3 4 3

Mean of 503 52-7 510 51-2 531537 605 54-8 525 533 51-4 53-3 507

251 Days.

From which he concludes that ‘‘auroral observations in the middle latitudes of America are generally accompanied by a maximum disturbance of the sun’s surface on the very day of the aurora.”

98. Earth Currents.—These are electrical currents which take place in the moist crust of the earth, and were first detected by W. H. Barlow (Phil. Trans., 1849). At a later period they were systematically observed and studied by C. V. Walker (Phil. Trans., 1862). They are now continuously recorded by photography at the Royal Observatory, Greenwich. arth currents are particu- larly strong during magnetic disturbances. Sir George Airy has graphically compared together certain magnetic disturbances as recorded by the Greenwich self-recording magnetographs and the simultaneous earth currents recorded by appropriate galvanometers (Phil. Trans., 1868), and finds it almost impossible to avoid the con- clusion that the magnetic disturbances are produced by terrestrial galvanic currents below the magnets. The likeness between the two systems of graphical representations is unquestionably very strike ing. But, while there is no doubt an intimate connexion between earth currents and magnetic disturbances, there is one cireum- stance which should make us pause before assigning the former as the complete and efficient cause of the latter. It is thus indicated by Lloyd :1—

“‘ When we examine the eurves in whieh Mr Barlow has represerted the eourse of the galvanometrie deflexions eaused by the earth eurrents, we observe that the regularity of that eourse is continually interrupted by rapid reciprocating moye- ments in whieh the needle oscillates from one side to the other of the zero alternately. These movements are similar to those of the magnetometers with whieh we are familiar; but they are mueh more rapid, and bear a larger propor- tion to the regular ehanges. . ..I have seleeted for ealeulation the obser- vations made during tlie six hours eommeneing at 3 a.m. on May 29, 1848, that being a period of comparative disturbanee. The sum of the changes of the galvanometer needle during that period, on the Derby and Rugby line, was equivalent to 571 divisions of the instrument—the mean duily range for the entire week being 11°4 divisions

and the ratio=50. ... The sum of the changes of the Greenwich declinometer during the same period was only 67 minutes, the mean daily range being 12°4 ininutes, In like manner the sum of the ehanges of the horizontal foree was ‘0158 and the mean daily range ‘0034. The ratio is aceordingly the same for the two magnetie elements, and its amount is 4°6, or less than one-tenth of the eorresponding ratio in the ease of the galvano- metrieal ehanges. We learn therefore that the rapid ehanges of the earth eurrents are mueh greater in proportion to the regular daily changes than the eorresponding movements of the magnetometers.”

We shall return to this subject in a subsequent part of this article.

94. Inequalities in Terrestrial Magnetism caused by the Moon.— Kreil in 1841 was the first to point out that the moon has a small influence on the position of the declination needle, and shortly afterwards the same fact was independently discovered by John Allan Broun. The more recent observations of Sabine and of Broun, but especially those of the latter, have thrown much light upon the nature of this action. As the lunar influence is not generally large, it is necessary to free the observations from the results of other inequalities, and this has beendone by the two observers above mentioned. The results given in Table XXX. have been obtained by Sabine (see Walker’s Afagnetism). ,

_ 95. Thus (1) the mean effect of the moon upon the declina- tion needle is to cause in each lunar day a double oscillation, and Sabine has shown that the lunar influence upon the other magnetic elements is of a similar type. (2) The turning points for both hemispheres are in all cases not far removed from the lunar hours = oe

1 Trans. Roy. Irish Acad., xxiv. 115.

TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM. |

~TasbeE XXX.—Mcan Lunar-Diurnal Variation in Declination.

ee Kew. Toronto. | Peking. | StHelena.| Cape. Hobart “” ut au” ” ut u” 0 — 62 | ~~189 | — 42 496 | +89 | +59 7 — 96 — 16°5 — 3‘3 +0°3 + 6°4 +8°3 2 — 84 — 95 — 1‘5 — 2‘2 + 21 +8°5 3 = e0~~|+— on | “yor —42 |-— 96 | +64 4

— 0°6 + 9°2 +2°6 —d’l — 65 +27 5 +40 | 4159 | 43-7 Se el Reet eee 6 + 9:0 +181 +3°9 —2°9 — 79 —5‘3 7 +11°3 +15°3 +3°0 —0°3 — 49 —73 8 + 9°6 + 82 +1°3 +2°6 — 03 —7°2 9 + 47 — 04 —0°6 +4°9 +47 —49 10 — 01 —10°7 —2°2 +61. + 86 —1°0 il — 55 —17°3 —3‘1 +59 +10°6 +3°4 12 — 96 —19°4 —2:9 – bet + 9°9 +7°2 B —113 | —163 | —1-7 419 | +67 | 494 14 — 95 — 89 +0:2 —0‘8 +15 +8‘8 1b —54 | +10 | 42:3 =81. | —35 | +63 16 — 06 +10°8 +40 —4‘4 — 79 +21 17 + 51 +17°8 +50 —t4 —10°3 —2:7 18 ° + 85 +20°2 +48 —31 —10‘1 —6‘7 19 + 98 +1774 +3°5 —1°0 — 73 —91 20 + 88 +10°2 +15 +15 — 27 —91 21 + 74 + Or —0°8 +3°5 + 2-4 —68 22 + 2-4 — 93 —2°9 +44 + 67 —2°8 23 — 16 —15°9 — 4‘1 +41 + 9:2 +1°8

Tn this table + indicat«s that the north end of the magnet is to the east and — that it is to the west of its mean pesition.

0, 6, 12,18. (3) In the northern stations we have a maximum westerly deflexion about the hours 0 and 12 and a maximum easterly deflexion about the hours 6 and 18, while in the southern stations the aetion is the reverse of this. (4) The oscillations would appear to be most decided at those stations, such as Toronto and Hobart Town, that are far removed from the equator.

96. Annual Variation of Lunar Lffect.—Broun has recently studied with much success the peculiarities of the lunar influence at Trevandrum, and has obtained some very unexpected results. His first result was that the nature of the lunar influence upon the de- elination needle at Trevandrum depends upon the time of the year, and that the southern type of lunar action predominates at Trevan- drum during the winter and the northern type during the summer months. If we take the mean of the whole year, then probably the southern type will be found to predominate.

97. Mean Lunar-Diwrnal Variation during the Day and during the Night.—Broun has shown that the action of the moon on the declination needle at Trevandrum is greater in every month of the year during the day than during the night. The following table (XXX1.) gives the day and night ranges for the various months and their ratios :—

It would appear from Broun’s observations that there is a difference of type as well as a difference of range.

98. Lunar-Diurnal Variation with Reference to the Moon’s Distance. —Both Sabine and Broun have shown that this variation

is greater for perigee than for apogee. Broun has found that the mean ratio of the apogee effect to the perigee effect is as 1 to 1°24 nearly. He remarks that “the ratio of the moon’s mean distance from the earth in the half orbit about apogee is to that in the half orbit about perigee nearly as 1:07 is to 1; as the cube of 1:07 is 1°28 nearly, we see that the mean ranges of the curves for the two distances are in the approximate ratios of the inverse cubes of the moon’s distanee‘from the earth, as in the theory of the tides.”

99, Lunar-Diurnal Variation with Reference to the State of the Sun’s Suwrface.—Kreil in a memoir presented to the Imperial Academy of Science in 1852 considers that the observations at Prague and Milan tend to show the existence of a solar period in the lunar variations. Sabine (Phil. Trans., 1856) has diseussed the Toronto observations and also (Phil. Trans., 1857) the Hobart Town observations with the view of deciding this important point, and has come to the conclusion that there is no systematic difference in the lunar-variation corresponding to the decennial period of the solar- diurnal variation, but merely such casual fluctuations as might be Teasonably expected, considering the shortness of the periods which they represent.

We have made a preliminary discussion of Broun’s Trevandrum observations with the view of throwing a little more light on this subjeet. For this purpose we have taken the ranges of the lunar- diurnal variations recorded by him for each month of each year. We have in the first place grouped these ranges together into threes, representing quarterly results, and have then compared together these quarterly results for years of small and for years of

great sun-spot frequency,—assuming the years 1854-56 and 1863-64 to represent the former, and the years 1857-62 to represent the latter. We have thus obtained the following result :—

TABLE XXXII.—Relation between Lunar-Diurnal-Ranges of Declination at Trevandrum and Sun-Spot Frequency.

| Great Sun-Spot | Small Snn-Spot

Frequency. Frequeney. February, March, ne a ee 0°501 0-493 Miatge ACY DI) Aeesssc ec tesntvsnc Mar sceascsnsed “464 *380 August, September, October…….....sescssesseees 504 °419

November, December, January…….....ccesseeee

It would appear from this table that sueh ranges are greater at years of maximum than at years of minimum sun-spot frequency. Nevertheless the proof is not conelusive, inasmuch as associated with such lunar ranges we may have remnants of solar disturbance, the tendency of which might possibly be to increase the apparent

range. Now such disturbances are more frequent at times of maximum sun-spots, and it might therefore be conjectured that this tendency would be to increase the apparent lunar range at such times above the range corresponding to years of minimum sun-spots. On the whole we are not disposed to think that the evidence already adduced is sufficient to deeide this question as a inatter of fact either in the one direction or in the other.

100. Variation in the Diurnal Range of Declination depend- ing upon the Age of the Moon.—Capello (Annals of Lisbon Observa- tory, 1876) and Stewart (Proc. Roy. Soc., 1877) have separately found that the range of declination is greatest about the times of new and full moon, a result recently confirmed by C. Chambers of Bombay. The following are the results recorded by Stewart derived from 197 lunations at the Kew Observatory :—

TABLE XXXIIIL.—Variation of Diwrnal Range of Declination with Moon’s Age, (0) denoting New and (4) Full Moon.

Phase of lunation…..... (0) (1) (2) (8) (4) (5) (6) (7) Value of range…..... 619 512 499 499 507 508 499 503

101. Larth Currents cansed by Lunar Inflnence.—Mr Alexander J. S. Adams (Nature, March 3, 1881) has made use of a telegraph wire the ends of which were connected with the earth, the one at Cardiff and the other at London. He observed the currents on this wire every quarter of an hour from March 28 to April 26, 1879. He believes that such are earth currents, and that they have a lunar-diurnal variation. There are during the lunar day, according to this observer, four electrical maxima, two positive and. two nega- tive, each maximum being divided from the next by a zero or point of no current. His results likewise exhibit a regular retarda- tion or lagging of the earth-current variations behind the corre- sponding phase of the moon to the extent of nearly three honrs, but.these require confirmation from further observations.

THE EFFECT OF SOLAR VARIABILITY ON THE METEOROLOGY OF THE EARTH.

102. We may learn from the preceding paragraphs that the sun exercises a more powerful influence npon the magnetism of the earth at times of maximum than at times of minimum sun- spots. It remains now to find whether a similar variability obtains in the phenomena of terrestrial meteorology. For this purpose we may divide the meteorological elements into the four divisions of pressure, rainfall, wind, and temperature, inquiring in what manner these are affected by solar inequalities.

108. Pressure.—In 1871 Baxendell (Memoirs of the Lit. and Phil. Society of Manchester, 1871-72), from an analysis of eleven years of the Radcliffe observations, Oxford, came to the conclusion that in years of maximum sun-spots the maximum barometric pressure occurred under north-east winds and the minimum under south- west, while in years of minimum sun-spots the maximum and minimum pressures took place respectively under north and south- east winds. He came likewise to the conclusion that, besides this difference in distribution of the convection currents of the earth, the forces which give rise to the movements of the atmosphere appear to be more energetic in years of maximum than in ycars of ininimum sun-spots.

104. A study of the isobaric lines would appear to be the best method of obtaining information upon this important point. It is well known that during summer the interiors of large continents have a peculiarly low and

the surrounding oceans a peculiarly high atmospheric pressure; while a disposition exactly the reverse obtains during the winter months. All this is no doubt due to solar action, and we might therefore imagine that when the sun is peculiarly powerful these peculiarities of distribution will be found to be increased in prominence, while they will be diminished at times of comparatively weak solar influence.

The distribution of pressure has been studied with much suceess by the Indian meteorologists, including Messrs Archibald, Blanford,

Broun, Charles and Frederick Chambers, Eliot, and Hill, and the following conelusion is the result of their labours. We may assume that the Indo-Malayan region has for the mean of the year a barometrie pressure probably below the general average of the earth, We might therefore imagine thatduring years of powerful solar influence this peculiarity would be increased. Now these observers have found that in this Indo-Malayan region the barometer is abnormally low during times of maximum sun- spots. Again, western Siberia is a district which in the winter season has a pressure decidedly above the average, and we should therefore imagine that during years of powerful solar influence this winter pressure should be peculiarly high. But this is what Blanford has found in his diseussion of the Russian stations to correspond with years of maximum sun-spots.? d

Again, Frederick Chambers has enunciated the following laws as resulting from his discussion of various meteorological reeords:—

(1) Variations of the sun-spot area are succeeded some months afterwards in the Indo-Malayan region by corresponding abnormal barometric variations, a high barometer corresponding to a mini- mum of sun-spots.?

(2) This lagging behind is greater for easterly than for westerly stations. In other words, this, like other meteorological phenomena, appears to travel from west to east.

We may therefore conclude that the barometric evidence as far as it goes is in favour of the hypothesis that the sun is most powerful at times of

maximum sun-spots.

105. Rainfall—Heights of Rivers and Lakes.—In 1872 Mel- drum of the Mauritius Observatory brought forward evidence showing that the rainfalls at Mauritius, Adelaide, and Brisbane were on the whole greater in years of maximuminau in years of minimum sun-spots Shortly afterwards it was shown by Lockyer (Nature, December 12, 1872) that the same law was observable in the rainfalls at the Cape of Good Hope and Madras.

Meldrum has since found that the law holds for a great num- ber of stations, including eighteen out of twenty-two European observatories, with an average of thirty years' observations for each. The results are exhibited in the following table (XXXIV.) :-—

c . . Number of Years; Exeess (+) or defeet (—) in

Name of Observatory. of Observation, | maximum Sun-Spot years, Inches. Sb AGLCYSUDI Per acevcs=-vesesessiaces 41 +13°08 25 CHMSHAMIA. 25. 2e5.0cccsecssecse sees 31 +19°65 SPE OUMDULGHitscessccccnsreeesias 51 +66°85 4 MRCOMIESDULL ssssssccccnes sess sey 19 —22°79 GMISCEM secuecccotessccarisescstececers 11 +10°95 6. Utrecht. .....+00. eee 11 + 0°44 1 MUUNStEY 2. ...5.0.0. one 19 +22°02 8. Greenwich …..... 52 +11°73 OUMRUGSIA I esyerests sce veneers 53 +49°90 LO, SBONNE: «..00.60085 BOOCB HOR DCCAGACEEDGG iki + 8:90 MY BBDUSSEIS)csecessccsnesae 41 +13°84 TO SPER GUC Sees: scsssess ecorescese 89 +23°57 WS: DRAWS cic. HAS Witoniiaieesscse-REM OV 2) 25s secre cacysisessclsesisesiesesee 41 — 6°16 VS. eMGlan s,s <2.0.5< Bd 39 – 11°81 19. Rome….. 18 +18°30 20. Lisbon 11 + 5:05 21. Palermo 41 + 4°55 22. Athens… ll +10°86

It would, however, appear from the observations of Governor Rawson that the rainfall in Barbados forms an exception to this rule, being greatest about the times of minimum sun-spots,

106. Gustav Wex in 18733 showed that the recorded depth of water in the rivers Elbe, Rhine, Oder, Danube, and Vistula for the six sun-spot periods from 1800 to 1867 was greater at times of maximum than at times of

minimum sun-spot frequency. These conclusions have since been confirmed by Professor Fritz.*

Quite recently Stewart (Proc. Lit. and Phil. Soe. of Manchester, 1882) has treated the evidence given by Fritz as regards the Elbe and Seine in the following manner. He divides eaeh sun period, without regard to its exact length, into twelve portions, and puts together the recorded river heights corresponding in time to similar portions of consecutive sun periods. He finds by this means residual differences from the average representing the same law whether we take the whole or either half of all the recorded observations, and whether we take the Elbe or the Seine. ‘The law is that there is a maximum of river height about the time of maximum suu-spots and another subsidiary maximum about the time of minimum sun-spots. There is some reason too to think that the Nile and Thames agree with those rivers in exhibiting a maximum about the time of maximum sun-spots and a subsidiary maximum about the time of minimum sun-spots, only their subsidiary maximum is greater than it is for the Elbe and Seine.

1 Nature, November 25 and December 2, 1880.

2 Nature, Mareh 18, 1880.

3 Ingenieur Zeitschrift, 1873.

4 Ueber die Beziehungen der Sonnenflecken Periode zu den Magnetischen und Meteorologischen Erscheinungen der Erde, Haarlem, 1878.

METEOROLOGY

[TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM,

107. In 1874 G. M. Dawson came to the conclusion that the levels of the great American lakes were highest about times of maximum sun-spots. In this investigation the value of the evidence derived from rivers and lakes is no doubt greater than that derived from any single rainfall station, inasmuch as in the former ease the rainfall of a large district is integrated and irregularities due to local influence thus greatly avoided.

108. Dy Hunter, director-general of statisties in India, has recently shown (Nineteenth Century, November 1877) that therecorded famines have been most frequent at Madras about the years of minimum sun-spots—years likewise associated with a diminished rainfall.

109. Winds and Storms.—Meldrum of the Mauritius Obser- vatory found in 1872, as the result of about thirty years' obserya- tions, that there are more cyclones in the Indian Ocean during years of maximum than during years of minimum sun-spots.® The connexion between the two is exhibited in the following table:—

TABLE XXXV.—Comparison of the Yearly Number of Cyelones occurring in the Indian Ocean with the Yearly Number of Spots on the Sun. i!

Char- acter as regards Sun- Spots.

1847

Max. 1848

1849

1850

1851

1852

1853

|; 1854

1855 1856 1857 1858

| 1859

1860

| 1861

1862 1863 1864

is

‘Number

total |, of | Number of Cyclones

in Max, | Cyclones. and Min}

Periods.

| |

Number | Number of Whole | of Strong Gales, Gales.

Number of Hurti- eanes.

Number of Storms.

| |

23

Se

Min, 13

DLO PDOANDWDOM

~~ —~

Max. 39

ta

1866 1867 1868 1869 1870 1871 1872 1873*

Min,

31

SS Sn nD

=

Max.

KON kK PRNNNNN PNK HON BRON DION O We OM WNN NWR HEN NNAWEN BD CUW SHOOT SCR WWNCOHCOHNNORNOMFOCOOFOCOCONOS

NWHRONAONAOCH WH

} He S> GD bO C9 C9 SO RNS ND Or Or 1 69 CO NS OO Cg et Ct RCO OD Or a

- Up to May 31,

In 1873 M. Poéy* found a similar connexion between the hurmi- canes of the West Indies and the years of maximum sun-spots. He enumerated three hundred and fifty-seven hurricanes between 1750 and 1878, and stated that out of twelve maxima ten agreed.

110. In 1877 Mr Henry Jeula, of Lloyd’s, and Dr Hunter found that the casualties on the registered vessels of the United Kingdom were 174 per cent. greater during the two years about maximum than during the two years about minimum in the solar cyele.

111. Zemperature.—Baxendell, in a memoir already quoted, was the first to conclude that the distribution of temperature under different winds, like that of barometric pressure, is sensibly in- fluenced by the changes which take place in solar activity. In 1870 Piazzi Smyth published the results of an important series of observations made from 1837 to 1869 with thermometers sunk in the rock at the Royal Observatory, Edinburgh. He con- cluded from these that a heat wave oceurs about every eleven years, its maximum being not far from the minimum of the sun-spot eycle. Sir G. B. Airy has obtained similar results from the Greenwieh ob- servations, In

1871 E. J. Stone examined the temperature obser vations recorded during thirty years at the Cape of Good Hope, and came to the conclusion that the same cause which leads to an exeess of mean annual temperature at the Cape leads equally to dissipation of sun-spots. Dr W. Képpen in 1873 diseussed at great length the connexion between sun-spots and terrestrial temperature, and found that in the tropics the maximum temperature occurs fully a year before the minimum of sun-spots, while in the zones beyond the tropics it oceurs two years after the minimum. The regularity and magnitude of the temperature wave are most strongly marked in the tropics.

112. The evidence now given appears at first sight to be antago nistic to that derived from the other elements both of magnetism and meteorology, and to lead us to conclude that the sun heats us most when there are fewest spots on its surface. This conclusion will not, however, be strengthened if we examine the subject wit greater minuteness.

5 Br, Assoc. Reports, 1872. 6 A. Poty, Sur les Rapports entre les Taches Solaires et les Ouragans des Antilles, de V' Atlantique-Nord, et de ' Ocean Indien Sud.

TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM. |

Seientifically we may regard the carth as an engine, of which the sun is the furnace, the equatorial regions the boiler, and the polar regions the condenser. Now this engine may be supposed to work iu the following manner. Hot air and vapour are carried along the upper regions of the atmosphere from the equator to the poles by means of the anti-trade winds, while in return the cold polar air is carried along the surface of the earth from the poles to the equator, forming what is known as the trade-winds. When- ever the sun's heat is most powerful both trades and anti-trades should be most powerful likewise. But we live in the trades rather than in the anti-trades—in the surface currents, and not in the upper currents of the earth's atmosphere. When, therefore, the sun is most powerful is it not possible that we might have a parti- eularly strong and cold polar current blowing about us? Thesame thing would happen in the case of a furnace-fire ; the stronger the fire the more powerful the hot draught up the chimncy, the more powerful also the cold draught from without along the floor of the room. It might thus follow that a man standing in the furnace-

room near the door might be chilled rather than heated when the furnace itself was roaring loudest. In fact temperature is a pheno- nienon due to many causes. Thus a low temperature may be due (1) to a deficiency in solar power, (2) to a clouded sky, (3) to cold rain, (4) to cold winds, (5) to cold water and ice, (6) to cold pro- duced by evaporation, (7) to cold produced by radiation into space.

Blanford has recently shown that at certain Indian stations alow mean temperature occurs when there is an unusually large rainfall and a great amount of clouds, a result in accordance with the conclusions previously enunciated by Professor Piazzi Smyth. Records of maximum aud minimum temperature must not there- fore be too closely associated with a maximum and minimum of solar power, ;

118. Considerations of this nature have induced Stewart to imagine (Vatwrc, June 16, 1881) that the true connexion between sun-spots and terrestrial temperature is more likely to be discovered by a study of short-period inequalities of sun-spots than by that of the eleven-year period in which there is time enough to change the hygrometric state of the atmosphere and the whole convection system of the earth. He has accordingly discussed at some length two prominent sun-spot Sa ie of short period (about twenty-four days), and endeavoured to see in what way they affect terres- trial temperature. From this it appears that a rapid increase of sun-spots is followed in a day or two by an increase of the diurnal temperature range at Toronto. Now an increase of diurnal tempera- ture range most probably denotes an increase of solar energy, and we are thus led to associate an increase of solar heat with a large development of spots. This, however, is a point which requires further investigation.

114. General Conclusion.—On the whole we may conclude that the meteorological motions and processes of the earth are probably most active at times of maximum suu-spots, and that they agree with maguetical phenomena in representing-the sun as most power- ful on such occasions, although the evidence derived from mieteor- ology is not so conclusive as that derived from magnetism.

HYPpoTuETICAL VIEWS REGARDING TUE CONNEXI1ON BETWEEN THE STATE OF THE SUN AND TERRESTRIAL

MAGNETISM.

115. Principles of Discussion.—In the following discussion we claim only to advance a working hypothesis, with the view of sug- gesting further inquiries into the subject of terrestrial magnetism. It seems therefore desirable that we should limit ourselves to such yrobable or possible causes as are known to exist and to operate on the earth. These various agents or causes will be described, and we shall endeavour to show that converging lines of evidence point im several cases to certain of these as being most likely to produce that particular type of effect which is exhibited in terrestrial magnetism. This course will in our view most readily suggest further inquiries with the view of confirming or disproving the various points of this working hypothesis. Believing that the introduction of any unknown cause can only be justified when known causes have been found insufficient to account for the pheno- nena in question, we have not advocated any direct magnetic action of the sun upon the earth. We have refrained from this for two reasons, —first, because from what we now know of the sun it appears to us unlikely that it should exercise an influence of this nature upon the earth, since a body at a high temperature possess- Ing very strong magnetic properties is unknown to us; and, secondly, we shall see further on that such an influence will not explain the best- understood magnetic changes, nor is there in our opinion any magnetic phenomenon for the explanation of which it appears absolutely necessary to resort to this hypothesis. In fine, without presuming to deny the possibility of unknown influences of this nature, it does not appear to us that the time has yet arrived when we are called upon to resort to such as necessary aids to the discovery of further truth.

_ 116. Nature of Solar Variations.—It is quite certain that there 1s a variability in the visible appearance of the sun’s disk, which exhibits sometimes a comparatively large amount of spotted area

while on other occasions it is entirely free from spots. Now it has been remarked by Thomson that were the sun an incandescent solid its surface

would become cool in a few minutes. The astonishing property whicli our luminary possesses of pouring out continuously a vast amouut of radiant energy must unquestionably depend upon machinery of great power by means of which fresh hot particles are rapidly brought from the interior to the surface, while those particles which have given ont their light and heat are rapidly hurried downwards to be recruited from the great storehouse of heat in the sun's centre. In fine, a gigantic system of convection currents of this nature forms the essential condition without which the sun would not be able to continue shining as it does.

The mottled appearance of the sun's disk as scen through a tele- scope denotes no doubt the existence of a vast system of ascending aud deszending currents, the hot matter rising from beneath being denoted by the brighter portions and the cold matter descending from above by the darker portions of the structure. On certain occasions and in certain regions of the sun the scale of these pheno- mena is greatly increased, and we have a huge up-rush of bright and a corresponding down-rush of black matter—in fine, the well- known sun-spot with its bright faculous appendages. Whenever sun-spots arc very frequent we should therefore expect the convection system of the sun to be particularly powerful, and the great velocity and size of the red flames or the higher portions of the convection system observed around the sun's limb on such occasions confirm us in this supposition. And if the convection system of the sun be particularly powerful when there are most spots on its surface, it would seem to follow that the radiation from our luminary should on such occasions be particularly powerful also. The spectroscope leads us to the same conclusion. It would appear from the obscr- vations of Lockyer and others that at times of maximum sun-spots certain definite regions of the sun when examined spectroscopically present all the appearances of a very high temperature.

We are unable to contirm these conclusions by direct observations of the sun's heating power. Actinometrical determinations have not yet been made with sufficient accuracy and persistence to decido this point experimentally. We have, however, evidence of an in- direct nature derived from terrestrial magnetism and meteorology all tending to make us think that the sun is most powerful during times of maximum sun-spots. We have seen that on

such occasions the solar influence upon the magnetism of the earth is peculiarly tte in more than one way, and that its influence on meteoro-

ogy is then peculiarly powerful also, although we are hot so certain of this latter fact as of the former.

We may therefore take it to be most probable that the sun is most powerful at times of maximum sun-spots, and proceed from this basis to propound the two following questions:—in the first place, what is the nature of the solar influence upon terrestrial magnetism ? and, secondly, why is this influence so much more easily perceived than certain forms of solar influence upon meteorology ?

117. Diurnal Magnetic Variations—Hypotheses regarding them.— The various speculators on the cause of these phenomena havo ranged over the whole field of likely explanations. (1) It has been supposed that the sun acts directly as a magnet upon the magnetism of the earth. (2) It has been imagined that convection currents established by the sun's heating influence in the upper regions of the atmosphere are to be regarded as conductors moving across lines of magnetic force, and are thus the vehicle of electric currents which act upon the magnet. (3) Faraday, reasoning from his discovery that oxygen is patamagnetic, and becomes weaker in its power when heated, and stronger when cooled, supposed that tho_ sun by heating certain portions of the atmosphere renders them less magnetic while others, not subjected to any heating influence are rendered more magnetic. The action is equivalent to a dis- placement by means of the sun of the magnetic matter of the earth, and involves a displacement of the lines of force. Here too the solar action is associated with the great mass of the atmosphere. . (4) It has been supposed by Christie and by De la Rive that the heat of the sun produces in the atmosphere and in the earth thermo- electric eurrents which produce the daily magnetic variations. It is not easy to perceive how we could have thermo-electrie currents in the upper regions of the atmosphere, but there is no obvious objection to the generation of such currents in the crust of the carth. Thus the first hypothesis has no reference to the atmosphere what- ever; the second deals with the upper atmospheric regions, the third with the great body of the atmosphere, while the fourth, as we have ventured to modify it, has reference-to the crust of the earth.

118. Discussion of these Hypotheses.—Dr Lloyd and Mr C. Chambers! have both shown that direct solar magnetic action will not account for the peculiarities of the diurnal magnetic variation.

‘Again (§ 48) we have strong evidence that changes in the range of

the daily magnetic variation lag behind corresponding solar changes in point of time. Now this kind of behaviour is ineonsistent with direct magnetic action, and points rather to an indirect magnetic effect caused by the radiaut cnergy of the sun.

1 Proc. Royal Irish Academy, February 22,1858; Phil. Trans., 1863.

119. Let us therefore dismiss the hypothesis of direct action and consider that of Faraday. We know both from observations of the declination and horizontal force (Proc. Roy. Soe., March 22, 1877, and Phil. Trans., 1880, p. 541) that the action of the sun in pro- ducing diurnal variations of these elements is one and a half times as powerful at epochs of maximum as it is at epochs of minimum sun-spot frequency. It is hardly credible that there should be such a great difference on these occasions in the sun’s heating effect upon the great bulk of the atmosphere. Metcorologists have never observed such a difference, nor is there any marked corresponding inequality of diurnal temperature range. Meteorological evidence is thus against the diurnal magnetie changes being due to the heating up by the sun of the great mass of oxygen which constitutes the magnetic portion of the earth’s atmosphere. Again,.as there is a preponderance of hot oxygen in the northern hemisphere during the June and in the southern hemisphere during the December solstice, there ought according to this theory to be a well-marked annual variation of the magnetism of the earth, the northern hemi-sphere being at the same time differently affected from the southern.

. But there are no traces of such a phenomenon, the annual and semi- annual variations which we have already described (§$ 64-67) being of quite a different nature, and none of them very large.

120. Precisely the same objections apply with even greatcr force to the fourth hypothesis. It seems impossible to allow that any heating effect of the crust of the earth caused by the sun can be one and a half times as great at epochs of maximum as it is at epochs of minimum sun-spot frequency.

121. We are thus driven by the method of exhaustions to look to the upper regions of the earth's atmosphere as the most probable seat of the solar influence in producing diurnal magnetic changes, and it need hardly be said that the only conceivable magnetic cause capable of operating in such regions must be an electric current. Now we know from our study of the aurora that there are such currents in these regions—continuous near the pole and occasional in lower latitudes. A good deal has been said about the difficulty of imagining a daily set of currents to be generated in regions of such imperfect conductivity, but we shall see by and hy (§ 134) that there seems ground for imagining that their conductivity may be much greater than has hitherto been supposed.

122. Analogies between the Meteorological and Magnetical Systems of the Earth.—We have in the first place a zone of maximum ter- restrial temperature, the middle line of which is nearly coincident not only with the geographical but likewise with the magnetical equator. Again, there are possibly in the northern hemisphere two poles of greatest cold, which possibly do not greatly differ in position from those spots which we have called magnetic poles or foci. About the southern hemisphere we have no information.

Furthermore we believe that the hot air is carried from the zone of greatest heat to the place or places of greatest cold by means, no doubt, of the return trades which blow in the upper atmospheric regions. The hot air divides at this zone, one part blowing north- wards in the northern and another southwards in the southern hemisphere. Now this zone, from which the anti-trades divide, has an annual motion of its own, being found farthest north at the June solstice and farthest south at that of December. Probably too the northern system is strongest in June and the southern system in December. If we now turn to the solar-diurnal variation of magnetic declination, we find here also a northern and a southern system (§ 41), the

type of the one being antagonistic to that of the other. We find also that the northern system is strongest in June and the southern system in December.

Again, it seems probable from what we have now said that the anti-trades, strictly speaking, have reference not to the geographical equator and poles but to the zone of maximum and the poles of minimum temperature. Now, turning once more to the diurnal oscillations of the declination needle, it seems probable that the directions east and west must be interpreted as having a reference not to the geographical but to the magnetical pole (§ 45).

These analogies must be taken for what they are worth. Our object in introducing them has reference to the previous discussion, from which we concluded that the magnetic influence of the sun is probably due to currents in the upper region of the atmosphere— the cause of which we were content to leave in abeyance. Now these analogies would lead us to suggest that this cause, whatever it is, may perhaps be found to be related to the convection system 5 Aig earth on the one hand and to the magnetic system on the other.

123. Analogies between Meteorological and Magnetieal Weather. — These remarks are borne out by the further analogy which appears to subsist betwixt what we have termed meteorological and imag- netical weather. Let us take the solar-diurnal variation of declina- tion. Not only is this variation similar in form to the diurnal variation of atmospheric temperature (§ 37), but the ranges of the two have a similar annual variation. And, as the element of meteorological weather affects the orderly march of the temperature range, just so the element of magnetical weather affects the orderly march of the declination rauge.

Furthermore, just as temperature-range weather progresses from west to east ($ 52), so declination-range weather would seem to pro- gress in the same direction as the other (§ 52) although at a greater rate. It will doubtless require a more extended investigation to

make us quite sure of this latter point; nevertheless we do not.

perceive the validity of the objection that is sometimes made to the hypothesis of progress in magnetic weather on the ground that magnetic influences are kuown to affect all portions of the globe simultaneously. It will, we think, be perceived that in the above statement no supposition whatever is made with respect to the rate of propagation of a magnetic influence through the earth; this may be instantaneous or it may not. It is supposed that we have here a travelling cause of excitement, say a travelling cause of currents in the upper regions of the atmosphere which progresses from west to east and always produces its most marked effect above those regions where it passes—just as the sun itself in passing from east to west produces a magnetic effect the various phases of which travel from east to west with the sun which causesthem. We think too that this hypothesis of travelling causes of magnetic change is strengthened by the facts observed by Capello and described in § 97.

124. If, however, the objection made to this hypothesis refers to the fact disclosed by Broun ($ 85) that changes of horizontal force appear to take place simultaneously at distant parts of the earth's surface, then we think that analogy should lead us not to deny the possibility of a travelling magnetic excitement, but rather to suggest the possibility of there being some meteorological influence which, like the magnetical one above mentioned, may be found to take place simultaneously at different parts of the earth's surface. Now Broun (Proc. Roy. Soe., May 11, 1876) has given us preliminary evidence for supposing that there are simultaneous barometric vania- tions. For instance, there was a barometric maximum at Hobart Town, Peking, the Cape, St Helena, Makerstoun, Singapore, Madras, Simla, Ekaterinburg, and Bogoslovsk about the end of March or first day of April 1845. There appears to have been a simultaneous increase of the horizontal force of the earth at various stations much about the same time, and there also appears to have been a short-period maximum of spots on the solar surface. Broun has likewise registered simultancous barometric variations at Singa- pore, Madras, and Simla, for the first three months of 1845. From these it would seem that simultaneous barometric maxima are possibly coincident with rapidly increasing sun-spot areas.

Again is it not absolutely certain that if there is a sudden increase of solar power this must mean an increase of heat communicated to the earth,

although it may be difficult or cven impossible to obtain experimental evidence of such a fact? All these are sub- jects which require further investigation.

125. Further Remarks on the Solar-Diurnal Variation of Declination.—In § 24 we have asked how far the action of the solar- diurnal force upon a freely-suspended magnet is due to currents acting directly upon the magnet and how far to a change produced in the magnetism of the earth. Some light appears to be thrown on this point by the behaviour of the needle at places near the magnetic pole where the dipping needle is nearly vertical. On opposite sides of this locality the declination needle points in oppo- site directions. Now suppose that we have a set of sucli needles placed all round this region. It seems a legitimate generalization trom the observations described by Sabine (§ 45) to conclude that if we place ourselves above the centre of any of these needles at 8 A.M., and look towards its marked pole, we shall find it in every case deflected towards the right, while if we look towards the same pole at 2 p.m. we shall find it deflected to the left. Now if we imagine that at 8 A.M. there are above these magnets (in the upper atmospheric regions) electrical currents of which the horizontal components form a set of positive currents flowing from the pole on all sides, then. by the known laws of such currents the marked pole of all these needles will be deflected towards the right. And if at 2 p.m. the resolved portions of such currents should be flowing towards the pole, then the marked poles of all these needles will be deflected towards the left. It thus appears that this peculiar magnetic behaviour might easily be explained by a hy pothetical distribution of currents. And in fact in such regions we have im- dubitable evidence of the existeuce of currents in the upper regions of the atmosphere. On the other hand this behaviour could not easily be explained by the hypothesis of some definite temporary magnetic system set up by the solar influence in the earth, for m such a case we should imagine that similar poles of all the needles ought to be deflected towards the pole of this temporary system, which is not the case. =

126, Another point for consideration is the possible complexity of the solar-diurnal variation. For we may imagine (1) that the sun acts in such a manner as to produce a diurnal variation ; (2) 1t may also act like the moon (§ 94) and produce a semidiurnal varia- tion ; (3) these possible actions may be

accompanied by induced currents in the upper regions of the atmosphere and in the crust of the carth ; (4) it is possible that the sun’s rays may affect these variations or some of them in the way in which Broun found that the Junar variation at Trevandrum was affected by the sun. It

was found by him that the lunar action was considerably increased when the sun was above the horizon of the place.

127. We have pointed out (§ 119) that, while there is a marked

likeness in many respects between the diurnal variation of dcclina- tion and that of atmospheric temperature, we have yet no long- period fluctuation of the diurnal range of temperature at all com- parable in magnitude to the magnetic fluctuations. It does not, however, seem difficult to account for this difference if-we imagine that the magnetic fluctuations take their origin in the upper atmo- spheric regions, while the temperature fluctuations are due to the lower regions of the earth’s atmosphere. For, as the sun increases in power from times of minimum to times of maximum sun-spot frequency, we may immagine that a continuously increasing amount of aqueous vapour will be taken into the earth’s atmosphere. _ Now the experiments of Tyndall and others induce us to think that the air would under such circumstances become more and more opaque for certain rays of the sun, and thus a continuously decreas- ing proportion of the sun’s heat would be able to penetrate into the lower atmospheric regions. This latter influence would there- fore opcrate to cloak, perhaps to a considerable extent, the effect of the sun’s increasing power ; and this may very well be the reason why the temperature range at the earth’s surface does not exhibit the same eleven-yearly inequality as the declination range,

128. There seems, however, reason to believe that if we go from long to short period inequalities there is a much greater similarity in the range of the magnetical and the meteorological changes (§113). The explanation seems tobe that in the short-period changes the sun has not time to alter sensibly the constitution of the atmo- sphere, and hence the proportional increase of effect experienced in ibe upper atmospheric regions is more nearly the same as that experienced near the surface of the earth.

129. Magnetie Disturbanees.—There is strong evidence that the most important disturbances break out very nearly simultaneously at widely different parts of the earth, and that they even affect both hemispheres at the same time. Very little, however, is known about the modus operandi of the forces concerned in producing such disturbances. For instance, it is not known whether a disturbance permanently affects the magnetic state of the earth, ¢.g., whether one of the magnetic elements before a disturbance begins is sensibly different in value from what it is after the disturbance has ceased to exist. On the other hand we know (1) that disturbances break out on the very day when there are rapid changes taking place on the sun's surface (§ 83); (2) that they generally begin by momentarily increasing the horizontal force, but that the type quickly changes, so that during most disturbanccs the horizontal force is diminished (§ 86); (3) that large disturbances take place more particularly about the equinoxes, when, we have reagon to believe, the horizontal force of the earth is at a minimum (§ 77). May we not possibly conclude from these habits of action that at times of disturbance the earth is magnetically in a delicate state of equilibrium, perhaps having more magnetism than its surroundings would strictly warrant, and being therefore inclined to part with some, and that a sudden increase of solar activity, tending, as such ehanges probably do, at first to exalt the magnetism of the earth, nevertheless destroys its magnetic balance and gives it ultimately the opportunity of parting with some of its magnetism? This can only be regarded as a speculation, inasmuch as we do not know whether or not a disturbance produces any permanent influence upon the magnetism of the earth.

130. Auroras and Earth Currents. —There is no doubt that these phenomena denote electric currents in the upper regions of the atmosphere and in the moist conducting crust of the earth. The point in dispute is with respect to the origin of such currents. Soine are inclined to regard auroras as peculiar manifestations of atmosphierical electricity in high latitudes, while others imagine that such a peys are rather of the nature of induced currents generated by small but abrupt changes taking place in the magnetism of the earth. The advocates of the first view do not deny that currents taking place somehowin the upper at mospheric regions will have their conditions modified, to some extent at least, by the inducing influence of magnetic changes. Nor will the advocates of the induction hypo- thesis be disposed to

deny the possibility or even the certainty that displays due to atmospherical electricity and not dissimilar to some kind of aurora take place in some region of the atmosphere. But the first party regard auroras rather as the cause than as the effect of mag- neticchanges, whereas the advocatesof induction regard such displays rather as the effect than as the cause of changes somehow produced in the magnctisin of the earth. And here it is desirable to remark that the advocates of the induction hypothesis take for granted the magnetism of the earth and the changes thereof as phenomena for which they do not profess to account, whereas unless we go to some absolutely unknown cause (and this is against our present pro- gramme) we must look to atmospherical electricity as likely to throw light upon the origin of terrestrial magnetism. We cannot therefore dispense with regarding atmospherical electricity as an agent which may have played an important part in the development of the present magnetical condition of the earth, but we are yet of opinion

that, under the present state of things, the theory which holds by atmospheric electricity must largely be supplemented by the induc- tion hypothesis if it is to explain the peculiarities in type or form of the phenomena which observation brings before us.

131. Professor Tait in his essay on thunderstorms attributes one kind of aurora to atmospherical eleetricity. Such an aurora is, he believes, the manifestation of almost continuous discharges, like those given by a Holtz machine in a vacuum tube. The cause is condensation of vapour going on very slowly in very large spaces of air. The electricity is due to previous contact of particles of air and vapour. ‘The result is that the air-particles in the mixture in time acquire a definite difference of potential from those of vapour, — so that, when the latter aggregate, a misty region well charged is the result, and this discharges to the oppositely electrified air all round.

132. Again, Professor Stokes, without attempting to account for the origin of atmospherical electricity, has produced an hypothesis with the view of ‘explaining the intimate connexion subsisting between auroral displays,

earth currents, and magnetic changes on the one hand and outbursts of sun-spot activity on the other. His idea is that two somewhat distant atmospheric regions A and B are charged, let us say, with positive and negative electricity respec- tively ; A induces in the ground below it a charge of negative, Ba charge of positive electricity. At first things are held in this state: A cannot discharge either through the upper atmospheric regions to B or through the lower regions to the ground bencath it, while B is in a position precisely similar. Presently, however, an increase of the radiative power of the sun is produced. Such an increase would probably imply not merely an increase in general radiation but a particular increase in such actinic rays as are absorbed in the upper regions of the carth's atmosphere. The layer of atmosphere between A and B will therefore greedily absorb such rays, its tem- perature will rise, and, as is known to be the case for gases, the electrical conductivity of the stratum will be increased.

133. This hypothesis certainly affords a good explanation of the promptness with which disturbances follow increased solar activity (§ 83). Unless we are to resort to some unknown cause it is diffi- cult to think of any other possible explanation of this fact. Such an explanation appears too to receive corroboration from the fact (§ 97) that the lunar influence on the earth's magnetism as observed at Trevandrum is greater during the day than during the night, — greater possibly too at times of maximum than at times of minimum sun-spots. We are therefore disposed to accept this explanation of the way in which increased solar activity produces magnetic dis- turbance as the best that has been brought forward.

134, This does not, however, decide the disputed point how far these clevated currents are due to athioaphinial decntety and how far to induction. The argument against the possibility of induced currents in these regions is derived from experiments with vacuuin tubes, such as those recorded by Messrs De la Rue and Miiller, which would seem to indicate that enormous differences of potential would be required to produce electrical currents in elevated regions, where the atmosphere is very rare.

Indeed, on account of these experiments, the measurements of the old observers, who sometimes assigned a height of 'more than 100 miles to the aurora, have been called in question, and it has been supposed against direct

observation that these phenomena must always occur in regions much less elevated. It would appear too that such reasons were influential in determining Professor Stokes to regard the aurora as produccd by atmospherical electricity which, as we know from ordinary lightning, presents us with enormous differences of potential ; but it is to be remarked that he has care- fully guarded himself against the possibility of laboratory experi- ments with vacuum tubes not being strictly analogous to that which takes place in the upper atmosphericregions. Now it would appear that recent experiments by Hittorf throw some doubt upon the strictness of this analogy. The high difference of potential required to force the current through vacuum tubes is, according to this observer, due in great part if not entirely to the passage of the fluid from the terminal to the residual air of the tube, so that the poten- tial requisite to pass a current through a tube of double length is not sensibly greater than that required for a tube of single length. The whole subject is one which demands further investigation; meanwhile we are not disposed to assert the impossibility of induc- tion currents taking place in the upper atmospheric regions.

135. Let us now consider whether the form or type of the earth currents observed during disturbances favours the presence of induc- tion to any sensible extent. The remarks of Dr Lloyd already quoted (§ 93), which are confirmed by the Greenwich observations, seem to be decisive in this respect. These may be interpreted in

the following manncr. In a magnetic disturbance we have fre- quently a general displacement of the various elements—the hori- zontal force, for instance ; now on the curve which represents this slow but considerable displacement a large number of comparatively small but very abrupt changes are superimposed. These latter appearances are invariably accompanied by quick and strong alter- nations from positive to negative of the earth enrrents, while the former slow motion, although it may be of large range, hardly appears to have any galvanic equivalent at all. This would appear to favour the induction hypothesis, according to which small but abrupt magnetic changes should give rise to strong earth currents

alternately positive and negative without reference to the position of the magnet above or below its normal at the time. :

136. Another fact bearing upon this hypothesis is that mentioned in § 88. From this it would appear that on ordinary occasions the curves recording the progress of the declination needle at Kew and Stonyhurst are as nearly as possible identical, but on occasions of disturbance the range at Stonyhurst is greater than that at Kew by an amount not apparently depending so much on the magnitude of the disturbance as on its abruptness. The introduction of the element of abruptness would appear to be in favour of the mix- ing up to some extent of induced currents with the phenomena in question.

137. Sir George Airy has not been able to detect any resemblance in form between the regular diurnal progress of the magnet and that of the earth cnrrents. 1t seems, however, possible that the peaks and hollows alluded to in § 73 may form an important and integral part of the daily magnetic movement, and there even appears to be some evidence that the diurnal progress of the earth currents bears a nearer resemblance to that of the peaks and hollows than it does to the progress of the smoother curve which is nsually held to represent the diurnal variation. But this is a question which can only be decided by more prolonged investigations.

138. To conclude, there can be no doubt that at times of great magnetic disturbance we have currents in the upper atmospheric regions and in the crust of the earth which, so far as we can see, must either be due to atmospherical electricity or to induction, or to a mixture of both. The proportions of this mixture can only be decided by further inquiry and by the multiplication of stations where atmospherical electricity and earth currents may be observed. It ought to be mentioned that the experience of the Kew observers, as far as this extends, scems unfavourable to the hypothesis of a connexion between auroras and atmospheric electricity.

139. Lunar-Semidiurnal Variation.—From the fact observed by Broun (§ 98) that the moon’s magnetic influence is as nearly as possible inversely proportional to the cube of the moon’s distance from the earth, it is impossible to refrain from associating it either directly or indirectly with something having the type of tidal action, but in what way this influence

operates we cannot tell. Is it possible that the earth currents observed by A, Adams (§ 101) are induction enrrents generated in the conducting crust of the earth by the magnetic change caused by the moon,—inasmuch as these currents were found by him to be strongest in one direction abont the lunar hours 3 and 15, when the lunar-diurnal magnetic effect is changing most rapidly in one direction (§ 95), while they were found to be strongest in an opposite direction about the lunar hours 9 and 21, when the lunar-diurnal magnetic effect is changing most rapidly in an opposite direction ?

140. We might perhaps expect from the analogy of the tides that the sun should possess a semidiurnal magnetic effect similar in type to that of the moon. Now Sir George Airy in his analysis of the earth currents observed at Greenwich (Phil. Trans., 1870) during days of tranquil magnetism has detected in such currents a semi- diurnal inequality having maxima in one direction at solar hours 3 and 15, while it has maxima in the opposite direction at solar hours Sand 21. The reference to solar hours in this inequality is thus precisely similar to that which the inequality observed by Adams bears to lunar hours. :

141. If there are induced currents of this nature in the crust of the earth, we might naturally suppose that there will be correspond- ing currents in the upper regions of the earth's atmosphere, and in accordance with the suggestion made by Professor Stokes (§ 132) we might perhaps suppose that these currents will be strongest when the upper atmospheric regions are heated by the sun and thereby rendered better conductors. Isit not possible to suppose that the influence of daylight upon the lunar magnetic effect discovered by Broun (§ 97) may be due to this cause, and may it not also induce us to recognize the possibility of a maximum lunar influence (§ 99) at times of maximum sun-spots, when there is reason to believe that solar radiation is most powerful ?

142. Seewlar Variation.—Sabine and Walker are agreed in regarding this variation as cosmical in its origin, and they are apparently of opinion that it is caused by some change in the con- dition of the sun. It seems difficult if not impossible to attribute it to anything else, since the terella of Halley cannot be now regarded as having a physical existence. Again it is more than possible—it is probabie—that there are solar variations of much

METEHOROLOGY

“such a systein.

[TERRESTRIAL MAGNETISM,

longer period than eleven years. On the other hand the evidence given in § 81, tending toshow that an access of sun-spots produces a change in the magnetic state of the earth consistent with the hypo- thesis that the magnetizing power of the sun has then been augmented, requires to be confirmed by more observations; and even then it is certain that this magnetic change produced by a considerable change in spotted area is extremely small. We cannot therefore regard the very large secular magnetic change as due to a non-cumulative magnetic influence of some long-continued solar variation ; nor does it scem possible to attribute the change to solar influence at all unless we regard this influence as producing results of a cumulative nature.

It is possible, however, to regard solar influence as producing a cumulative effect in one of two ways, or by a combination of both. For (1) time is necessarily an element in any influence acting upon the hard-iron system of the earth—presuming the earth to possess There are in fact indications in the results of § 82 that a system of this kind is perhaps connected with the American pole ; yet, even allowing the influence of time, it seems difficult to account for the peculiarities of the secular variation by an hypo- thesis of this nature. But (2) any long-continued variation of solar power would no doubt act cumulatively in producing an increase or diminution of the large ice-fields round the poles of the earth. In the course of time this cumulative change in the extent and dis- position of these might perceptibly alter the distribution of the convection currents of the earth—and these, according to the views herein indicated, might in their turn perceptibly alter the earth’s magnetie systeni.

143. Concluding Remarks. —If we agree to look for an explanation of terrestrial magnetism and its changes to strictly terrestrial pro- cesses, we may derive some assistance in onr search from such con- siderations connected with symmetry as enable us, for example, at once to perceive that when two perfectly similar things are rubbed together we cannot have

electrical separation, because there is no reason why the one should be positively and the other negatively electrified. Suppose then that an observer stands at the equator and looks towards the north, and then turns his back upon the north and looks towards the south. In the first position let him regard the northern system of meteorological processes and motions, and in the second the southern. Now if syminetry obtained abso- lutely in these systems—that is to say, if the observer, whether he regarded the northern or the southern system of things, had in either case precisely similar phenomena at his right hand and at his left—then we should see no reason why the earth should be a magnet, or why one hemisphere should be the seat of magnetism of the one kind rather than of the other. If then we regard meteoro- logica] processes and motions as being in some way the cause of terrestrial magnetism, we must direct our attention to that peculiar element which causes a want of perfect symmetry such as we have described in metcorological phenomena. This element can hardly be anything else than the rotation of the earth, which is from left to right to an observer facing the north, but from right to left to an observer facing the south.

144. Now if we look upon the terrestrial meteorological system modified by the earth's rotation as having produced somehow in the past the magnetic state of the earth, it seems most natural to regard the system which formerly produced this magnctic state as being likewise that which at present maintains it in its efficiency, and which also accounts for the various magnétic changes which take place. It would seem therefore that terrestrial meteorology and terrestrial magnetism are probably cognate subjects, and that they ought to be studied together in the well-founded hope that the phenomena of the one will help us to explain those of the other.

Furthermore, if these meteorological processes—deriving their one-sided character from the earth's rotation—are to be regarded as accounting not only for the origin but for the maintenance of the earth's magnetic system, we can hardly fail to imagine that these processes must derive part of the energy which they exhibit from that of the earth's rotation. Tidal energy we knowis derived from this source ; but we must likewise regard part of the energy displayed in convection currents whether in the air or in the oceamt as derived no doubt from the same source. And we may perhaps allow that

in the phenomena of tidal action, as well as in those of convection currents of the air and ocean, there may be, not merely a transmutation of actual energy directly through friction into heat, but likewise a transmutation of it, ultimately perhaps into heat, but first throngh the iutermediate agency of electrical currents which serve to maintain the magneiic state of the earth and to produce magnetic changes.

Now if this be the case, if there be a large and complicated system of tidal and convection currents all tending to change the rotative energy of the earth ultimately into heat, whether directly through friction or indirectly through the medium of electricity, it is surely impossible with the present state of our knowledge to calculate with the smallest pretensions to accuracy at what rate this transmutation is taking place, and hence at what rate the velocity of the earth's rotation is being slowly diminished. (B.S.

METHODISM

I. WESLEYAN METHODISM.

HE history of Wesleyan Methodism embraces—(1) the Methodism of Oxford, which was strictly Anglican and rigidty rubrical, though it was also more than rubrical ; (2) the evangelical Methodism of the Wesleys after their conversion (in 1738), of which the Wesleyan doctrines of conversion and sanctification were the manifesto and inspiration, while preaching and the class-meeting were the great motive and organizing forces,—a movement which before Wesley's death had developed into a form containing, at least in embryo, all the elements of a distinct church organization, although in its general designation and deliberate claims it purported to be only an unattached spiritual society ; and (3) Wesleyan Methodism since the death of Wesley, which, by steps at first rapid and after- wards, though leisurely, distinct and consecutive, assumed an independent position, and has grown into complete development as a church.

1. Oxford Methodism.—This began in November 1729, when John Wesley, returning to Oxford from Lincolnshire, where he had been serving his father as curate, found that his brother Charles, then at Christ Church, had induced

a few other students to join him in observing weekly com- munion. John Wesley's accession lent weight and character to the infant association. Their first bond of association, . besides the weekly communion, was the common study of the Greek Testament, with which they joined regular fasting, the observance of stated hours for private devotion, the visitation of the sick, of the poor, and of prisoners, and the instruction of neglected children. They never themselves adopted any common designation, but of the variety of derisive names they received from outsiders that of "Methodists" prevailed, —a sobriquet the fitness of which, indeed, as descriptive of one unchanging and insepar- able feature of Wesley's character (which he impressed also on his followers), was undeniable.

This first Oxford Methodism was very churchly. Between 1733 and 1735, however, a new phase was devel- oped. Its adherents became increasingly patristic in their sympathies and tendencies, and Wesley came much under the influence of William Law. In regard to this period of his history, Wesley himself says that he

"Bent the bow too far, by making antiquity a coordinate, rather than a subordinate, rule with Scripture, by admitting several doubtful writings, by extending antiquity too far, by believing more practices to have been universal in the ancient atch than ever were so, by not considering that the decrees of a provincial synod could bind only that province, and the decrees of a general apped only those provinces, whose representatives met therein, that most of those decrees were adapted to particular times and Occasions, and, consequently, when those occasions ceased, must cease to bind even those provinces."

It was in 1736, during his residence in Georgia, whither he had gone as a missionary of the Propagation Society, that he learnt those lessons. Notwithstanding his ascetic severity and his rubrical punctilios, the foundations of his High-Churchmanship were gradually giving way. When he returned to England he had already accepted the – doctrine of "salvation by faith," although he had not as yet learned that view of the nature of faith which he was afterwards to teach for half a century. He had, however, a$ in the journal of his homeward voyage he tells us, learned, "in the ends of the

earth," that he "who went to America to convert .others was never himself converted to God." In this result his Oxford Methodism came to an end.

The original Methodism of Oxford never at any one time seems to have numbered as many as thirty adherents.

There was a set called '" Methodists," but there was no organization, no common bond of special doctrine or of discipline ; there were habits and usages mutually agreed upon, but there was no official authority, only personal influence. The general features of the fraternity, if frater- nity it may be called, seem to suggest closer analogies with the "Tractarian" school in its earlier stages than with anything else in modern history, and the personal ascendency of John Wesley may remind us in some measure of the influence exercised a century later by J. H. Newman. There was no more any germ of permanent organization in the Oxford Methodism of 1735 than in the patristic and "Tractarian" school of Oxford of 1833.4

2. Methodism after Wesley's Conversion.—John Wesley landed at Deal, on his return from Georgia, on February 1, 1738. His journals on the homeward voyage, says Miss Wedgwood,? "chronicle for us that deep dissatisfac- tion which is felt whenever an earnest nature wakes up to the incompleteness of a traditional religion; and his after life, compared with his two years in Georgia, makes it evident that he passed at this time into a new spiritual region." .... . "By Peter Bohler,' in the hands of the. great God," he writes in his journal, 'I was, on March 5, fully convinced of the want of that faith whereby we are saved." This "conviction" was followed on March 24 of the same year (1738) by his " conversion."

Like most good men of that age in England, Wesley, before he came under the influence of his Moravian teacher, had regarded faith as a union of intellectual belief and of voluntary self-submission—the belief of the creeds and submission to the laws of Christ and to the rules and services of the church, acted out day by day and hour by hour, in all the prescribed means and services of the church and in the general duties of life. From this conception of faith the element of the supernatural was wanting, and equally that of personal trust for salvation on the atone- ment of Christ. The work of Bohler was to convince Wesley that such faith as this, even though there might be more or less of divine influence unconsciously mingling

with its attainment and exercise, was essentially nothing else than an intellectual and moral act or habit, a natural operation and result altogether different from the true spiritual faith of a Christian. ‘This conviction led him a few days afterwards to stand up at the house of the Rev. Mr Hutton, College Street, Westminster, and declare that five days before he had not been a Christian. When warned not thus to despise the benefits of sacramental grace, he rejoined, ‘‘When we renounce everything but faith and get into Christ, then, and not till then, have we reason to believe that we are Christians.” It is true that for several years after this he remained High-Church in

1 One evidence of this is to be found in the early and wide diverg- ence of the various members of the Oxford Methodist company, after their brief association at the university came to an end. We know which way the Wesleys went ; we know also the separate path that their-friend Whitefield made for himself. John Clayton, the Jacobite churchman, settled at Manchester, renounced the Wesleys after they began their evangelical movement, and remained an unbending High- Churchman to the end. Benjamin Ingham became a great evangelist in Yorkshire, founded societies, and, with his societies or churches, took the decisive step of leaving the Church of England and embracing the position of avowed Dissent. The saintly Gambold, a poet as well as a theologian and preacher, became a Moravian bishop. James Hervey was in after life a famous evangelical clergyman, holding ‘‘Low” and Calvinistic views. These were the chief of the Method- ists of Oxford.

2 John Wesley and the Evangelical Reaction of the 18th Century.

8 A disciple of Zinzendorf, who had settled in London,

some of his principles and opinions, but nevertheless his ritualism was dead at its roots.

This experience also made Wesley an evangelist. He had a forgotten gospel to preach,—the gospel by which men were to be converted, as he had been, and to be made “new creatures.” And this result, this new birth, was not dependent on any churchly form or ordinance, on any priestly prerogative or service, or on any sacramental grace or influence. ‘To raise up, accordingly, by his preaching and personal influence, a body of converted men, who should themselves become witnesses of the same truth by which he had been saved, was henceforth to be Wesley’s life-;work. This was the inspiration under which he became a great preacher; this also made him an organizer of his living witnesses into classes and societies. In the pulpit was the preaching power ; in the class-room was the private and personal influence. The vital link between the pulpit and the class meeting was the doctrine and experience of “conversion.” Thus Wesleyan Methodism is derived, not from Wesley the ritualist, but from Wesley the evangelist.

Wesley’s doctrines offended the clergy. His popularity as a preacher alarmed them. The churches were soon shut against him. He attended the religious meetings— on a Church of England basis—which had existed in London and elsewhere for fifty years, so far as these were still open to him, the Moravian meetings, and meetings in the rooms of private friends, but these were quite insufficient for the zeal and energy of himself and his brother, who had been “converted” a few days before himself. Accordingly, in 1739, he followed the example set by Whitefield, and preached in the open air to immense crowds. In the same year also he yielded to the urgency of his followers and to the pressure of circumstances, and, becoming possessed of an old building called ‘‘the Foundery,” in Moorfields, transformed it into a meeting- house. Here large congregations came together to hear the brothers. About the same time, in Bristol and the neighbouring colliery district of Kingswood, he found him- self obliged, not a little against his will, to become the owner of premises for the purpose of public preaching and religious meetings. Here was the beginning of that vast growth of preaching-houses and meeting-rooms, all of them for nearly fifty years settled on Wesley himself, which, never having in any way belonged to the Church of England, became, through Wesley, the possession of the Methodist Connexion.

The religious societies through which the Wesleys, after their conversion, exercised at first their spiritual influence were in part, as has been intimated, Moravian,—that in Fetter Lane, of which the rules were drawn up by Wesley himself in 1738 (May 1), being the chief of these,—and in part societies in connexion with the Church of England, the successors of those which sprang up in the last years of the Stuarts, as if to compensate for the decay of Puritanism within the church. In 1739, however, a strong leaven of antinomian quictism gained entrance among the Moravians of England (Béhler himself having left for America in the spring of 1738); and Wesley, after vainly contending for a time against this corruption, found it necessary formally to separate from them, and to establish a society of his own, for which a place of meeting was already provided at the Foundery. This was the first society under the direct control of Wesley, and herein was the actual and vital beginning of the Wesleyan Methodist Society, that is, of Wesleyan Methodism. Hence the Wesleyans celebrated their centenary in 1839. It was not, however, till 1743 that Wesley published the Rules of his Society. By that time not a few other local societies had been added to that at the Foundery, the three chief centres

being London, Bristol, and Newcastle. Hence Wesley called his Society, when he published the ‘‘ Rules” in 1748, the “ United Societies.” His brother’s name was joined with his own at the foot of these Rules, in their second

edition, dated May 1, 1743, and so remained in all later

editions while Charles Wesley lived. Those Rules are still the rules of Wesleyan Methodism. Since Wesley’s death they have not been altered. During his life only one change was made of any importance. In 1743 the offerings given weekly in the classes were for the poor, there being at that time no Conference and no itinerant preachers except the two brothers; after a few years the rules pre- scribed that the weekly contributions were to go “ towards the support of the gospel.” The Society is described as “a company of men having the form, and seeking the power, of godliness, united in order to pray together, to receive the word of exhortation, and to watch over one another in love, that they may help each other to work out their

salvation.” ‘The only condition previously required of those who desire admission into these societies” is ‘a desire to flee from the wrath to come, and to be saved from their sins.” The customary contribution was a minimum of a penny a week or a shilling a quarter.

In 1739 these societies were not divided into “classes.” But in 1742 this further step in organization was taken, and the change is recognized in the rules of 1743. Leaders were appointed to these classes, and became an order of spiritual helpers and subpastors, not ordained like lay elders in the Presbyterian churches, but, like them, filling up the interval between the pastors that “labour in the word and doctrine” and the members generally, and furnishing the main elements of a council which, im after years, grew up to be the disciplinary authority in every “society.” In every society there was from the beginning a ‘‘steward ” to take and give account of moneys received and expended. After a few years there were two distinct stewards, one being specially appointed to take care of the poor and the “‘poor’s money,” the other being, in general, the “society steward.” And, finally,—though hardly, perhaps, during Wesley’s lifetime,—in the larger societies there came to be two stewards of each description. The leaders and stewards together constituted “ the leaders’ meeting,” of which, however, the complete circle of func tions grew into use and into recognition only by degrees.

ne Rules of the Society, which are strict and searching, relate to worship, to conduct, and to the religious life, but do not once mention or refer to the Church of England, the parish church, or the parish clergy. The only authority at first was the personal authority of the two brothers, exercised either directly or by their official delegates. After years had passed away the leaders’ meeting came to have an important jurisdiction and authority, but its rights and powers were neither defined nor recognized until after Wesley’s death. From first to last there is no trace or colour of any Anglican character in the organization. Moravians or Dissenters might have entered the fellow- ship, and before long many did enter it who had either been Dissenters or, at any rate, had seldom or never entered a church. What would to-day be called the “unsectarian ” character of his society was, indeed, i Wesley’s view, one of its chief glories. All the time, however, this “unsectarian” society was only another “sect” in process of formation.

Wesley for many years before his death had seen that, unless the rulers of the church should come to adopt in regard to his society 4 policy of liberal recognition, this might be the outcome of his life-work. And it would seem as if in his private confidences with himself he had come in the end at times to acquiesce in this result.

Still more decisive, however, was the third step in the

METH ODTS M

development of Wesley's "Society." The clergy not only excluded the Wesleys from their pulpits, but often repelled them and their converts from the Lord's Supper. This

was first done on a large scale, and with a systematic'|

harshness and persistency, at Bristol in 17 40e- "Under these circumstances the brothers took the decisive step of administering the sacrament to their societies themselves, in their own meeting-rooms, both at Bristol and at Kings- wood. This practice having thus been established at Bristol, it was not likely that the original society at the Foundery would rest content without the like privilege, especially as some of the clergy in London acted in the same manner as those at Bristol. There were therefore at the Foundery also separate administrations. Here then, in 1740, were two—if we include Kingswood, three—separate local churches, formed, it is true, and both served and governed by ordained clergymen of the Church of England, but not belonging to that church or in any respect within its government. As thereafter during Wesley's life one of the brothers, or some cooperative or friendly clergyman, was almost always present in London and in Bristol for the administration of the sacraments, these communions, when once begun, were afterwards steadily maintained, the Lord's Supper being, as a rule, administered weekly. Both on Sundays and on week days full provision was made for all the spiritual wants of these "societies," apart altogether from the services of the Church of England. The only link by which the societies were connected with that church—and this was a link of sentiment, not an organic one—was that the ministers who served them were numbered among its "' priests."

In 1741 Wesley entered upon his course of calling out lay preachers, who itinerated under his directions. To the societies founded and sustained with the aid of these preachers, who were entirely and absolutely under Wesley's personal control, the two brothers, in their extensive journeys, administered the sacraments as they were able. The helpers only ranked as laymen, many.ofthem, indeed, being men of humble attainments and“6f unpolished ways. For the ordinary reception of the sacraments the societies in general were dependent on the parish clergy, who, how- ever, not seldom repelled them from the Lord's table. So also for the ordinary opportunities of public worship they often had no resource but the parish church. The simple service in their preaching-room was, as Wesley himself insisted, defective, as a service of public worship, in some important particulars; besides which, the visits of the itinerants were usually, at least at first, few and far between. Wesley accordingly was urgent in his advices and injunctions that his societies generally should keep to their parish churches ; but long before his death, especially as the itinerant preachers improved in quality and increased in number, there was a growing desire among the societies to have their own full Sunday services, and to have the sacraments administered by their\own preachers. The development of thése preachers into ministers, and of the societies into fully organized churches, was, if not the Inevitable, at any rate the natural, result of the steps which Wesley took in order to carry on the work*that was continually opening up befgre him.

In 1744 Wesley held his first Conference. The early Conferences were chiefly useful for the settlement of points of doctrine and discipline and for the examination and accrediting of fellow- labourers. They met yearly. Conferences were a necessity for Wesley, and became increasingly so as his work continued to grow upon him. It was inevitable also that the powers of the Conference, although for many years the Conference itself only existed as it were on sufferance, and only exercised any authority by the per- mission of its creator and head, should continually increase. The result was that in 1784 Weslcy could no longer delay the legal

constitution of the Conference, and that he was compelled, if he would provide for the perpctuation of his work, to take measures

SF

fer vesting in trustees, for the use of ‘‘the people called Mcthod- ists,” under the jurisdiction of the Conference as to the appoint- inent of ministers and preachers, all the preaching places and trust property of the Connexion. The legal Conference was defined as consisting of one hundred itinerant preachers named by Wesley, and power was given to the ‘‘ legal hundred ” continually from the first to fill up the vacancies in their own number, to admit and expel preachers, and to station them from year to year, no preacher being allowed to remain more than three years in one station.

By this measure Wesley’s work was consolidated into a distinct religious organization, having a legally corporate character and large property rights. And yet Wesley-would not allow this great organization to be styled a ‘“‘church.” It was only a “‘society ” —the ‘‘ United Society ””—the Society of ‘‘the people called Method- ists’”—the ‘‘ Methodist Society.” And of its members all who were not professed Dissenters were by him reckoned as belonging to the Church of England, although a large and iwereasing pro-

| portion of them seldom or never attended the services of that

church. The explanation of this apparent inconsistency is that Wesley admitted none to be Dissenters except such as were so in the eye of the law —those who, ‘‘for conscience sake, refused to join in the services of the church or partake of the sacraments administered therein”—and that he interpreted ‘‘the Church of England” to mean, as he wrote to his brother Charles, ‘‘ all the belicvers in England, except Papists and Dissenters, who have the word of God and the sacraments adininistered among them.”

But Wesley was to carry his Society to a yet higher piteh of development, and one which made it still more difficult to dis- tinguish its character from that of a distinct and separate church. In 1738 Wesley had been theoretically a High-Churchman. For some time even after he had entered npon his course of irregular and independent evangelism he continued to hold, in the abstract, High-Church views. But in 1746 he abandoned once for all his ecclesiastical High-Churchmanship, although he never becaine either a political or a latitudinarian Low-Churchman after the standard and manner of the 18th century. He relates in his journal under date January 20, 1746, how his views were revoln- tionized by reading Lord (Chancellor) King’s

account of the primitive church. From this time forward he consistently main- tained that the ‘uninterrupted succession was a fable which no man ever did or could prove.” One of the things taught him by Lord King’s book was that the office of bishop was originally one and the saine with that of presbyter; and the practicab inference which Wesley drew was that he himself was a ‘‘ Scriptural Episco- pos,” and that he had as much right as any primitive or missionary bishop to ordain ministers, as his representatives and helpers, who should administer the sacraments, instcad of himself, to thie societies which had placed themselves under his spiritual charge. This right, as he conceived it to be, he held in abeyance for nearly forty years, but at length he was constrained to exercise it, and, by so doing, in effect led the way towards making his Society a distinet and independent church.

In 1784, the American colonies having won their independence, it became necessary to organize a separate Methodisin for America, where Methodist societies had existed for many years. Wesley gave formal ordination and letters of ordination to Dr Coke, already a presbyter of the Church of England, as superintendent (or bishop) for America, where Coke ordained Francis Asbury as presbyter and superintendent (or bishop), and Coke and Asbury together ordained the American preachers as presbytcrs. From that ordination dates the ecclesiastical commencement of American Episcopal Methodism—in which the bishops are only chief among the presbyters whom they superintend, superior in office but of the same order. The Episcopal Methodism of America represents to- day the largest aggregate of Protestant communicants and worship- pers of the same ecclesiastical name to be found in any one nation in the world.

The following year (1785) Wesley ordained ministers for Scot- land. There his societies were quite outside of the established Presbyterianism of the day, with its lukewarm “ moderatism ”’, while the fervid sects which had seceded from the state church would hold no terms with Arminians like Wesley and his followers. Hence Wesley was compelled to make special provision for the administration of the sacraments in Scotland. He therefore ordained some of his ablest and most dignified preachers, was eareful to give them formally in his correspondence the style and title of ‘‘ Reverend,” and appointed them to administcr the sacra- ments north of the Tweed.

At length, in 1788, Weslcy ordained a number of preachers (Mr Tyerman says seven) to assist him in administering the sacraments to the societies in England; and of these he ordained one (Alexan- der Mather) to be superintendent (or bishop), his brother Charles being now dead, and Dr Coke sometimes absent for long periods in America. The number of societies which demanded to have the sacraments administered to them in their own places of worship continually increased, and their claims were often too strong to be resisted, especially when the parish priest was cither a public

opponent of the Mcthodists or a man of disreputable conduct. Before Wesley's death (in 1791) it would seem that there were more than a dozen of his preachers who had at different times, in Scot- land or in England, been ordained to administer the sacraments.

The foregoing view of the development of Methodism as an organization, during the lifetime of its founder, will have conveyed a general idea of its structure and polity. There is one cardinal, though variable, element in its organization, however, of which there has as yet been no occasion to speak. The societies of Methodism—each of these consisting of one or more ‘‘ classes ”— were themselves grouped into circuits, each of which was placed under the care of one or more of Wesley's Conference preachers, who were called his ‘‘ assistants” or ‘‘helpers,” the assistant being the chief preacher of a circuit, and the helper being a colleague and subordinate. The ‘‘assistants” were directly responsible to Wesley, who had absolute power over them, and exercised it between the Conferences. The same power he equally possessed in the Conference, at the yearly meetings, but he made it a rule, during his later life, to take counsel with the Conference as to all inatters of importance affecting the permanent status of the preachers personally, or relating to the societies and their govern- ment. He thus prepared the Connexion, both preachers and people, to accept the government and the legislative control of the Conference after his death.

At the time of Wesley's death there were in Great Britain, the Isle of Man, and the Channel Islands, 19 circuits, 227 preachers, and 57,562 members. In Ireland there were 29 circuits, 67 preachers, and 14,006 members. There were also 11 mission circuits in the West Indies and British America, 19 preachers, and 5300 members. The uumbcr of members in the United States was returned as

43,265.

It has already been explaincd that in connexion with each society there was a leaders' meeting, of which society stewards and poor stewards as well as leaders were members. It must here be added that each cireuit had its quarterly meeting, of which, at first, only the society stewards and the general steward (or treasurer) for the circuit, in conjunction with the itinerant preachers, were necessary menibers. Leaders, however, in soine

circuits were very early, if not from the first, associated with the stewards in the quarterly meeting, or at Icast had liberty to attend. The quarterly meeting was not defined in Wesleyan Methodism until the year 1852. The leaders' meeting had no defined authority until some years after Wesley's death. Discipline, including the admission and expulsion of members, lay absolutely with the ''assistant," subject only to appeal to Mr Wesley. Many years, however, before Wesley's death it had become the usage for the ''assistant," or, in his absence, the ''helper," his colleague, to consult the leaders' meeting as to important questions either of appointment to office or of discipline. As the consolidated '' society" approached towards the character of a **church," the leaders' meeting began to acquire the character and functions of a church court, aud private members to be treated, in regard to matters of discipline, as having a status and rights which might be pleaded before such a ''court." The rights, indeed, which, soon aftcr Wesley's death, were guaranteed to leaders' meetings and meinbers of society had, there can be no doubt, so far grown up, before his death, as to be generally recognized as undeniable.

'' Bands"? were a marked feature in early Methodism, but in later years were allowed, at least in their original form, to fall out of use. Thereis no reference to them in the '' Minutes of Conference" after 1768, although till after Wesley's death they held a place in the oldest and largest societies. Originally there were usually in each considerable society four bands, the members of which were collected from the various society classes—one band composed of married and another of unmarried men, one of married and another of un- married women. All the members of society, however, were not of necessity meinbers of bands. Some maturity of experience was expected, and it was the responsibility of the "'assistant " to admit intv band orto exclude from band. After Mr Wesley's death, where ''bands"' so called were kept up, they lost their private character, and became weekly fellowship meetings for the society.

The ''love-feast"" was a meeting the idea of which was borrowed from the Moravians, but which was also regarded as reviving the primitive institute of the agape. In the love-feast the members of different societies come together for a collective fellowship meeting. One feature of the meeting—a

memory of the primitive agape—is that all present eat a small portion of bread or cake and drink of water in common.

It may be supposed that in such asystem as Methodism a large number of preachers and exhorters, from all the social gradés included within the societies, conld not but be continually raised up. These, during Wesley's life, acted entirely under the directiouis of the assistant, and were by him admitted or excluded, subject to an appeal to Wesley, Once a quarter—often in conjunction with the circuit quarterly meeting—a meeting of these local lay helpers, called ‘‘local preachers,” was held for mutual consultation and arrangement, and to examine and accredit candidates for the office.

METHOD Iisa

3. Wesleyan Methodism after Wesley's Death (1791). —When Wesley died the Conference remained as the bond of union and fountain of authority for the Connexion, But between the meetings of Conference Wesley had acted as patriarch and visitor with summary and supreme jurisdiction. The first need to be supplied after his death was an authority for the discharge of this particular func tion. In America Wesley had organized a system of bishops (presbyter-bishops), presbyters or elders, and deacons or ministers on probation. Among some of those preachers who had been most intimate with Wesley there was a conviction that his own judgment would have approved such a plan for England. No document, how- ever, remains to show that such was his desire. The only request he left behind him for the Conference to respect was one which rather looked in another direction—the well-known letter produced before the Conference on its first meeting after his death by his friend and personal attendant, Mr Bradford, in which he begged the members of the legal hundred to assume no advantage over the other preachers in any respect. The preachers, accordingly, in their first Conference after Wesley's death, instead of appointing bishops, each with his diocese or province, divided the country into districts, and appointed district committees to have all power of discipline and direction within the districts, subject only to an appeal to the Conference, all the preachers exercising equal rights also in the Conference, the “legal hundred” merely confirming and validating pro forma the resolutions and decisions of the whole assembly.

At first the preachers stationed in the districts were instructed to elect their own chairmen, one for each district. But the plan was speedily changed, and the chairmen were elected each year by the whole Conference; and this method has been maintained ever since. The “ district meetings”—as they are generally called—are still “com- mittees” of the Conference, and have ad interim its power and responsibilities as to discipline and administration. Originally they were composed exclusively of preachers, but before many years had passed circuit stewards and district lay officers came to be associated with the preachers during the transaction of all the business except such as was regarded as properly pastoral.

The relation of the Conference to the government of the Connexion having thus been determined, the question which next arose, and which occupied and indeed convulsed the Connexion for several years (1792-95), was that of the administration of the sacraments, especially of the Lord’s Supper, to the societies. The societies generally insisted on their right to have the sacraments from their own preachers. Many of the wealthier members, however, and in particular a large number of the trustees of chapels, opposed these demands. At length, between 1794 and 1795, after more than one attempt at compromise had been made by the Conference, the feeling of the societies as against the trustees became too strong to be longer resisted, and accordingly at the Conference of 1795 the “plan of pacification” was adopted, the leading provision being that, wherever the majority of the trustees of any chapel, on the one hand, and the majority of the stewards and leaders, on the other, consented to the administration of the sacraments, they should be administered, but not 10 opposition to either the one or the other of these authorities. In England the Lord’s Supper was always to be adminis- tered after the Episcopal form ; in Scotland it might still, if necessary, be administered, as it had commonly been before, after the Presbyterian form. In any case, however, “full liberty was to be left to give out hymns and to use exhortation and extemporary prayer.” The result was that within a generation the administration of the sacraments

to the societies came to be the universal rule. By this legislation the preachers assumed the powers of pastors, in accordance, however, only and

always with the desire and choice of their flocks. No formal service or act of ordination was brought into use till forty years after- wards. All preachers on probation for the ministry, after the completion of their probation, were ‘‘ received into full connexion ” with the Conference, this reception im- plying investment with all pastoral prerogatives. Modern Methodism has developed more fully and conspicuously the pastoral idea.

No sooner was the sacramental controversy settled than the further question as to the position and rights of the laity came to the front in great force. A comparatively small party, led by Alexander Kilham, imported into the discussion ideas of a republican complexion, and demanded that the members in their individual capacity should be recognized as the direct basis of all power, that they should freely elect the leaders and stewards, that all distinction in Conference between ministers and laymen should be done away (elected laymen being sent as delegates from the circuits in equal number with the ministers), that the ministry should possess no official authority or pastoral prerogative, but should merely carry into effect the decisions of majorities in the different mectings. course of a very violent controversy which ensued, pamphlets and broadsheets, chiefly anonymous, from Kilham’s pen, advocating his views and containing gross imputations on the ministers generally, and in particular on some not named but distinctly indicated, were disscminated through the societies. The writer was tried at the Conference of 1796, condemned for the publication of injurious and unjustifiable charges against his brethren, and by a unani- mous vote expelled from the Conference. In the follow- ing year he founded the ‘‘ New Connexion,” the earliest of the organized secessions from Wesleyan Methodism.

Views much more moderate than Kilham’s prevailed in the Connexion at large. At the Leeds Conference of 1797 the basis was laid of that system of balance between the prerogatives of the ministers and the rights of the laity which has been maintained in its principles ever since, and which, in reality, has governed the recent provisions (1877-78) for the admission of lay- representatives into the Conference not less than the former developments of Wesleyan Methodism. The admission of members into the society had, up to 1797, been entirely in the hands of the itinerant preachers,—that is, the “assistant,” hence- forth to be styled the “ superintendent,” and his

“helpers.” The new regulations, without interfering with the power of the ministers to admit members on trial, declared that “the leaders’ meeting shall have a right to declare any person on trial improper to be received into society, and after such declaration the superintendent shall not admit such person into society” ; also that ‘“‘no person shall be expelled from the society for immorality till such immorality be proved at a leaders’ meeting.” For the appointment of church officers (leaders and stewards) the following regulations were made, the second based on recognized usage, the first on general but not invariable practice :—

: In this regulation it was assumed that the old rule of society by which a member disqualifies and vritually expels himself by con- tinued absence from class, without reason for such absence, still held good. The case provides only for expulsions for ‘‘ immorality.” Subsequent legislation has introduced a provision which ensures to any meniber before he ceases to be recognized on account of non- attendance the right of having his case brought before a leaders’ meeting if he desires it. This rule of 1797 has always been under- Stood by the Conference as constituting the leaders’ meeting in effect

a jury, leaving the superintendent with his colleagne or colleagues |

as advisers to act as judge. Appeal has always Jain from the leaders’ meeting to the district meeting, and, finally, to the Conference.

In the

“1. No person shall be appointed a leader or steward, or be removed from his oflice, but in conjunction with the leaders’ mcet- ing, the nontination to be in the superintendent, and the approba- tion or disapprobation in the leaders’ meeting.

**2. The former rule concerning local preachers is confirmed, — viz., that no man shall receive a plan as a local preacher, without the approbation of a local preachers’ meeting.”

The Conference at the same time made several provisions for carrying out the process, which had been going on for some years, of denuding itself of direct responsibility in regard to the disbursement of the Connexional funds. The principle was established that such matters were to be administered by the district committees acting in corre- spondence with the quarterly meetings of the circuits. It was also provided that circuits were not to be divided without the consent of the respective quarterly meetings ; and, finally, it was resolved that, in the case of any new rule made by the Conference for the Connexion, its action within a circuit might be suspended for a year by the quarterly meeting, if it disapproved of the rule. If, how- evcr, the Conference, after twelve months' interval, still adhered to the new rule, it was to be binding on the whole Connexion.

The powers of district committees, as defincd by former Conferences, were in 1797 confirmed and enhanced, special powers being given to special meetings of these committecs convened when necessary to settle the affairs of a distracted circuit. In the same Conference all the principal rules of Methodism, in regard both to the ministers and the laity, were collected and (in a sense) codificd, including the new regulations adopted that same ycar; and tlie whole, under the title '"' Large Minutes," was accepted as binding by the Conference, each minister being required to sign his acceptance individually. This compendium, itself based on one which had been prepared by Wesley, is still accepted by every Wesleyan minister on his ordina- tion as containing the rules and principles to which he subscribes. During the sitting of this critical Conference at Leeds an assembly of delegates from bodies of trustees throughout the kingdom was simultaneously held. The form of the regulations enacted by the Conference was, to a considerable extent, determined by the nature and form of the requests made by this body of trustees. There was one request, however, which the Conference distinctly declined to grant—namely, that for lay delegation to the Conference. The Conference replicd that they could not admit any but regular travelling preachers into their body, and preserve the system of Methodism entire, particularly the "itinerant plan." It was not until many years after- wards that anything was heard again as to this matter.

By the settlement now described the outlines of Methodism as an organized church were fairly completed. Many details have since been filled in, and many changes have been made in secondary arrangements, but the principles of development have remained unchanged. The Connexion after 1797 had a long unbroken period of peaceful progress. The effect of the ‘“ Kilhamite ” separa- tion, indeed, was after 1797 not greatly felt by the parent body. The number of Methodists in the United Kingdom in 1796, the year of Kilham’s expulsion, was 95,226; in 1797 it was 99,519; in 1798 the New Connexion held its first Conference, and reported 5037 members, the number of the parent body being 101,682. Nor was it till 1806 that the New Connexion reached 6000.

During the period of quiet growth and development which followed 1797 the influence of one superior mind (Dr Jabez Bunting, 1779-1858) was to prevail with increasing sway. This was to be the period of the gradual development of lay co-opcration in the administration of the various departments of Connexional extension and enterprise—a development which prepared the way for the important legislation of 1852 and following years, and for the ultimate settlement of the respective provinces and powers

of the ministers and laity which was made in 1877-78. It was also to be the period of the gradual completion of the pastoral idea, in its practical application to the ministers of the body. This period may be defined as extending from the revolutionary epoch of 1791-97 to the epoch of political and municipal reform agitation, 1828-35, which eoincides with a second period of politico- ecclesiastical agitation in Wesleyan Methodism.

In 1797 the Conference, as alrcady mentioned, had refused to allow elected laymen—or Jay delegates—any place either in the Conference or in district committees. Within a few years after 1800, however, the practice grew up for the circuit stewards to attend the district committees during the transaction of financial business, and in 1815 this usage was recognized in the Minutes of Conference as an established ‘‘rule,” and it was enacted that no general increase of the ineome of the ministers should be sanctioned by the Conference until approved by a majority of the district committees

during the attendance of the cirenit stewards. Since the adoption of this rule the lay element in the district committees has steadily increased and developed. Another characteristic and important feature in the organization of Wesleyan Methodism, which grew into distinct form and prominence during the period now under review, was that of the administration of all the Con- nexional departments, except such as were regarded as properly pastoral, by means of mixed departmental committees, appointed at eachi successive Couference. These committees made recommenda- tions to the Conference in regard to such new legislation as they thought desirable and to the appointment of the members of com- mittee; and, for each department, a large committee of review, of which the members of the ordinary committee of management formed the nucleus, eame to be held each year immediately before the Conference. In these committees the numbers of ministers and of laymen were equal. On this principle, between 181] and 1835, provision had been made for the management of all the funds of the Connexion and their corresponding departments of administra- tion. The first mixed ecomniittee appointed by the Conference was the conmiittee of privileges in 1803.

The development of the pastoral position aud character of the ministers of the body after 1797 could not but advance on a line parallel to the development of the position and elaims of the laity. In 1818 the usage of the Conference was conformed to what had long been the ordinary unofficial custom, and the preachers began to be styled in the Wesleyan Methodist Magazine and in other official publications ‘‘ Reverend,” a fact which may seem trivial, but which in reality was of important significance.

In 1884, after the idea had been long entertained and the project had been repeatedly discussed, it was determined to establish a theological institution for the training of ministerial candidates. There are now four eolleges, with two hundred and fifty students. In 1886 the practice of ordination by imposition of hands was adopted.

Such advances, however, as these in the general organization and development of the Connexion, and especially in the status and professional training of the ministers, could not be made in such a body without offence being given to some, whose tendencies were to disallow any official

distinction between the ministry and the laity, and who also objected to the use of the organ. This levelling element was strong in the West Riding of Yorkshire, and in 1828, on the placing of an organ in Brunswick Chapel, Leeds, by the trustees, with the consent of the Conference, a violent agitation broke out. The consequence was a disruption, the first since 1798, under the title ‘‘ Protestant Methodists.” But this was absorbed, some years later, in a more considerable secession. In fact, the Connexion was in 1828 entering on a period of agita- tion. The current of political affairs was approaching the rapids of which the Reform Act marked the centre and the point of maximum movement.

Win tT HO D Tor

}

new secession was known first as the ‘‘ Wesleyan Methodist Associa- tion”; but for a number of years past it has been merged in a stil] larger body of seceders designated ‘‘ The Methodist Free Churches,” Its leader at the first was the Rev. Dr Warren, who left it, however, not many months after it was formed, and took orders in the Church of England.

The controversies of 1835-36 left their mark on the legislation and official documents of the Connexion. The principles of 1797 remained intact, some farther guards only being added to prevent any danger of hasty or irresponsible action on the part of super- intendents, and at the same time ‘‘minor district meetings” being organized in order to facilitate appeals. One error was, however, committed by the Conference. In 1797 no provision had been made for bringing the circuit, through its quarterly meeting, into direct relations with the Conference. In 1836 a right of direct memorial to the Conference was given to the circuit quarterly meeting ; but it was so fenced round with eonditions and limitations as to make it practically inoperative, and at the same time provocative of sus- picion and irritation.

The effect of the secession of 1836 on the general progress of the Connexion was not great. The number of members reported in 1835 in Great Britain and Ireland was 371,251 (there being a decrease in England of 951), in 1836 381,369, in 1887 384,728. For the next ten years the advance of the Connexion in numbers and in general prosperity was apparently

unprecedented. The Centenary Fund of 1839-40 amounted to £221,000. In the midst, however, of all the outward prosperity of Methodism—partly perhaps in con- sequenee of it—very perilous elements were at work. The revolu- tionary ideas of the Chartist period (1840-48) and of Continental politics (1848-49) reacted on Wesleyan Methodism as the political ideas of 1791 aud of 1831 had done at those epochs. The embers of old controversies—eeclesiastical, quasi-political, and personal— still smouldered, and at length burst into fresh flame. From 1844 a strong spirit of opposition to the leaders of the Connexion, and especially to Dr Bunting, was fanned by the circulation of anony- mous ‘‘fly leaves” of a very scurrilous character. At the same time the policy of the Conference and of the ministers in their cir- cuits had proceeded more than was wise on the old lines. The general administration relied too much on the footing of implicit confidence on the part of the people and on the power of official prerogative in the hands of the minister. The memorial law of 1836 was indicative of the too exclusive spirit of pastoral govern- ment which had prevailed. The wisdom of Dr Bunting had for five and twenty years led the way in gradually liberalizing both the polity and the policy of Methodism, and adapting them to the changing conditions of the times. But this wisdom secms to, have found its limits before 1849, when the internal dissensions reached their climax. In that year James Everett, the chief author of the fly sheets, and two other ministers, Samuel Dunn and William Griffith, who had identified themselves with him, were expelled. A disastrous agitation followed. No distinct secession took place till after the Conference of 1850. The union of the ‘‘ Methodist Free Churches,” in which was incorporated the ‘‘ Wesleyan Association” (of 1836), was formed by the seceders. The ‘‘ New Connexion” also received some thousands of the sceeders into its ranks, But by far the greatest part of those who left went with neither of these bodies.

Between 1850 and 1855 the Connexion in Great Britain and Treland lost 100,000 members, and not till 1856 did it begin to recover. In that year the numbers were returned as 282,787, showing a small increase over the preceding year. Since then peace and unity have prevailed unbroken.

The convulsion of 1849-52 tanght the Connexion, and in par- ticular the Conference, lessons of the highest importance. In 1852 the quarterly

meeting was so defined as to make it the great repre- sentative meeting of the circuit, including stewards, leaders, local preachers, and trustees. The right of memorial to the Conference was given to it in the widest and freest sense. These powerful bodies invite ministers to the eircuits, or decline so to do, deter mine and pay their ‘‘allowances,” as salaries to ministers are still ealled in the Connexion, and review all the interests of the circuits, spiritual or financial. They had also conferred upon thei in 1852 the right to appoint a cireuit jury of appeal from the verdict and findings of a leaders’ meeting in certain eases of discipline. Since 1852 Conference legislation has still proceeded in the direction of recognizing and enlarging the functions and rights of the laity. The comniittee of review system, already spoken of, had been con- siderably developed between 1835 and 1849, and included every department of ordinary administration. In 1861, however, whilst a representation of the departmental executive committees formed still the leading element in each committee of review, a great m- provement was made in their constitution by giving to each of the districts of British Methodism the right to send a lay representative ee ee ee

1 This ‘‘Warrenite” secession, as at first It was cominonly called, gave rise to & lawsuit which led to the judicial recognition by the Court of Chancery of the Conference Deed Poll of 1784, and the “Large Minutes” of 1797, as documents haying the forec of public law in the administration of Wesleyan Methodism.

to attend these preparatory Conference committces. In 1877 and 1878 the final and natural consummation of the whole course of advance sinee 1791 was effected in the constitution of the united Conference of ministers and lay representatives. The ministers mcet by themselves to discharge the functions whieh belong to them as the common pastorate of the Connexion. As to all the points involved in their speeific character and common responsibility, as the mutually exchanging and itinerating pastors in common of a vast eommon floek, they take mutual counsel ina separate assembly. The Conference, in its ministerial-and-lay or representative session, meets after the pastoral business is completed, and oecupies a full week between Sundays in discussing and settling the business of all the

fnnds and the general administrative departments of the body. The Conference in its pastoral session assembles on the last Tuesday in July, that session closing on the Friday or Saturday week following ; the representative session occupies the following week. It is legally neeessary that tle decisions of the Conference in both its sessions should be confirmed and validated by the vote of the "'legal hundred." This confirmation is, however, given as a matter of course.

The Conference in its pastoral session is not formally representa- tive. To each district is assigned by the preceding Conference a certain amount of representation, there being at present thirty-five districts. 'The numbers allocated to the distriets vary according to eircumstances. The total number of ministers and laymen com- posing the Conference in its representative session is 480, or 240 ministers and 240 laymen. The basis of the lay representation in the Conference is the constituency of lay officials in the district committees. The Connexion at large is represented by the lay officials of the general Connexional departments. The business transacted in the Conference during its representative scssion re- lates to all the Connexional departments of general administration, yiz., the eommittce of privileges, foreign missions, the maintenance and education fund (and the schools) for ministers' children, chapel affairs (general, metropolitan, and provincial), the home mission and contingent fund, district sustentation funds, army and navy evangelization, lay mission work, the worn-out ministers' and ministers' widows' fund, the theological institution with its four colleges, Sunday and day schools and the children's home and orphauage, higher education, the extension fund of Methodism, alterations and divisions of circuits and districts, and the Lord's Day observance and temperance questions.

The president of the Conference is chosen by the ministers by ballot on the opening of the pastoral session. After the eleetion of president follows that of secretary. 'These elections, however, cannot take place until the vacancies in the hundred have been filled up. Such vacancies are caused by death, by absence for two years together without a dispensation, by expulsion, or by super- annuation, which takes place ordinarily after two years' retirement from the full work of the ministry.

The principal statistics of the denomination at the last Conference (1882) were as follows :—

Retired

‘ On : . On | orSuper- | Sunday Members. Trial. Ministers. Trial. | numerary | Seholars. Ministers. Great Britain…..... 393,754 | 40,653 1,549 81 829,666 Treland.,.,.....| 24,475 776 200 18 Foreign missions.1| 89,369 | 12,934 848 198

Of the Sunday scholars in Great Britain, 177,965 were over fifteen years of age, and 93,127 were members of society or on trial as members.

Wesleyan Methodism in Ireland has always becn part and parcel of British Methodism, but since 1782 it has had a eal Confer- ence of its own. The aets of this Conference are, in accordance with a provision in the Conferenee Deed Poll, made valid by the concurrence with them of a delegate from the British Conference, who is to the Irish Conference what the legal Conference is to the British Conference. Ten ministers of the Irish Conference are members of the ‘‘legal hundred” of the British Conference. The

‘plan of pacification ” of 1795 was not carried out at the time by the

Irish Conference. In the year 1816, however, it was adopted in Treland. The result was a seeession which assumed the designation “Primitive Wesleyans,” a very different body from the Primitive Methodists of England. In 1878 the Primitive Wesleyans were reunited to the parent Counexion. The nnmber of members in Ireland has, owing to emigration, not increased of late years. The last return showed 24,475 members,

Affiliated Conferences.—For more than twenty years there were several ‘affiliated Conferences” of British Methodism. But there are now only two —the French Methodist Conference, and that of South Africa,—the latter constituted quite recently (1882). Since 1852 Freneh Methodism has been under an aftiliated Conference. The dimensions of the French Connexion, however, are very small, and it is dependent to a eonsiderable extent on pecuniary aid fur-

! Chiefly in the West-Indies, Africa, India, and China.

nished by the Wesleyan Missionary Soeiety. The last statistical return showed 1769 members, 126 members on trial, 27 :ninisters, 1 minister on trial, and 3 supernumerary or retired ministers. The British Conference has a right of veto as to certain points of legis- lation in the ease of affiliated Conferences.

Australasian Methodism was for more than twenty years under an affiliated Conference, dating from 1854. Since 1876, however, the Australasian Conference has been independent. The General Conference meets once in three ycars, having under it our annual Conferences—one for New South Wales and Queensland, another for Victoria and Tasmania, a third for South Australia, and a fourth for New Zealand. These Confercnces—the general and the annual— are all mixed and representative after the same general pattern as the British Conference. They have also under their charge, and as part of their Connexion, the Wesleyan missions in Tonga and Fiji, which were begun by the parent body before the original affiliated yearly Conference for Australasia was organized. The numbers in 1881 were for the Methodism of Australia 28,310 members with 362 ministers, and for the South Sea missions 33,411 members with 16 missionarics of European blood and a very large number of native ministers and assistant ministers.

Canadian Methodism was also affiliated till 1873, when it became an independent Connexion. It includes six provincial annual Con- ferences and one General Conference which meets every three years. The General Conference is mixed and representative; the annual Conferences are purely ministerial. Canadian Methodism occupies a powerful position in the Dominion. It numbers as nearly as can be ascertained about 116,000 members, and is strongest in Upper Canada. It possesses a uuiversity—the Victoria University in Upper Canada.

The Doctrines of Methodism.—In doctrine all branches of Methodism are substantially identical. | Wesley’s doctrines are contained in fifty-three sermons known as the “four volumes” and in his Votes on the New Testament. The Conference has, however, published two catechisms, one for younger the other for older children, of which a new and carefully revised edition has lately been completed.? In general, Wesleyan theology is

to be described as a system of evangelical Arminianism. In _ particular, Wesleyan divines insist on the doctrines of original sin, general redemption, repentance, justification by faith, the witness of the Spirit, and Christian perfection,—or, as it has been customary for Methodists to say, the doctrines of a “present, free, and full salvation.” By the witness of the Spirit is meant a consciousness of the Divine favour through the atonement of Jesus Christ. Wesleyans have often been represented as holding the Calvinistic doctrine of “assurance.” The word, however, is not a Wesleyan phrase, and assurance, so far as it may be said to be taught by Methodists, signifies, not any certainty of final salvation, but merely a “sense of sin forgiven,” ?

II. AmMERIcAN Eptscopat METHopDIsM.

The beginnings of American Methodism are traceable to the year 1766, when a few pious emigrants from Ireland introduced Methodism into New York. On receiving an appeal in 1768 from the New York Methodists, who were engaged in building a preaching-house, Wesley laid the case of America before the Conference at Leeds in 1769, and two preachers, Boardman and Pilmoor, volunteered to go to the colonies. Boardman went to New York, Pilmoor to Philadelphia. In 1771 two other Methodist itinerants, Francis Asbury—the most famous name in American Methodism—and Richard Wright, went out to America. In 1773 Thomas Rankin, a preacher of experience sent out

2 Besides Wesley’s Sermons and Notes, his Appeals and his treatise on Original Sin, in reply to Dr Taylor of Norwieh, should be read in order to appreciate his theological views. After these may be partieularly noted Joseph Benson’s Commentary, Watson’s Institutes (3 vols.), Dr Pope’s Compendium of Theology (3 vols.), the series of Fernley Lectures, especially that by the Rev. B. Gregory on “The Holy Catholie Chureh,” and Dr Rigg’s Discourses and Addresses,

3 For the history and constitution of Wesleyan Methodism the following works may be consulted ;—Wesley’s Works, espeeially his Journals; Southey’s Wesley; Tyerman’s Wesley; Rigg’s Living Wesley, and Churchmanship of John Wesley ; Jackson’s Life of Charles Wesley; Minutes of Conference, vol. i., 1744-98; Dr George Smith, History of

Wesleyan Methodism, 3 vols.; Dr Abel Stevens, MZistory of Methodism, 3 vols. ; Pierce, Polity of Methodism; Dr Williams, Constitution and Polity of Wesleyan Methodism; Rigg, Connexional Economy, and the Minutes, 1877 to 18S1.

by Wesley, held the first Conference in Philadelphia, when there were 10 itinerant preachers and 1160 members. After the breaking out of the War of Independence the English Methodist preachers were unpopular, and all but Francis Asbury went back to England. At the end of the war, however, in 1784, Wesley sent out Dr Coke, and American Methodism was organized as an independent church, with Dr Coke and Francis Asbury as its presbyter-bishops. The history of American Methodism since that period is too vast and complicated for any attempt to be inade to summarize it here. Methodism is more properly national in its character as an American church than any church in the States. In Massachusetts and some other of the New England States it is less powerful than Con- gregationalism, which still retains there much of its ancient predominance ; in the city of New York it is less powerful than Presbyterianism, and, indeed, occupies a position less generally influential than might have been expected. But in Philadelphia it is very powerful; so also in Baltimore aud in Cincinnati; if not strong in New York city, it is very strong in the State; and generally throughout the western and mid-western States it is the prevalent form of faith and-worship. In the south, also, it 1s more powerful than any other church.

American Methodism is Episcopal. Butits Episcopacy is neither prelatical nor diocesan. The bishops are superintcnding presbyters, and they visit the whole territory of Methodism in rotation, hold- ing (presiding over) the annual Conferences. These Conferences are purely ministerial. But the General Conference, which meets once in four years, and which is the Conference of legislation and final appeal, is mixed and representative. The first General Conference was held in 1792, the first delegated or representative Conference in 1812, the first mixed or ministerial-and-lay Gencral Conference in 1872. There were till lately no district assemblies in the Episcopal Methodism of America, and now there are but few. The bishops maintain the unity of the Connexion in the interval between the

General Conferences, by their visitation and by their conjoint council, A sub-episcopal class of ministers also, called presiding elders, supplement the action and superintendency of the bishops. These preside over districts, holding all the circuit quarterly meet- ings, and holding the district mectings, if any such meetings have been organized.

American Episcopal Methodism is distributed into five distinct sections or churches, which, however, differ from each other in no points of any importance as respects organization or discipline, still less doctrine. ‘The American Methodist Episcopal Church South beeame a separate organization in 1847 by reason of the slavery controversy. The coloured churches, of which there are three, sprang up distinctly from local causes. The following are the latest available statisties:—

Itinerant | Local Lay Ministers. | Preachers. Members. Methodist Episcopal Churcli…….....ssccsceses 12,323 | 1,717,567 es : >> South, – 5,868 837,831 African “ ne é 9,760 891 ,044 Methodist Episcopal Zion Church 3,750 300,000 Coloured Methodist Episcopal Church…..... 63 683 112,000 20,266 32,384 | 3,858,442

In the Methodist Episcopal Church alone there are one hundred annual Conferences, visited by twelve bishops. This ehurch has more than twenty universities, of which some are distinguished schools of learning. Boston University is one of the most recent and one of the chief. The principal foreign missions are in India, China, and Japan. The Methodist Church South also has some influential universities, particularly that at Nashville, and has missions, in particular in Japan and China.

Besides these Methodist Episcopal churches, with their total of 8,358,000 church members, there are two other ehurehes whieh do not assume the name at all, but are yet essentially Methodist in doctrine and discipline, not varying in any important particulars from the Episcopal Methodism of America. Of these one is called the United Brethren, with 157,000 members, the other the Evan- gelieal Association, with 113,000 members.!

Non- Episcopal American Methodism.—The bodies included under this head are chiefly secessions from the original stock of American Methodism,

founded on principles of demoeratic church government, analogous to those of the English Methodist secessions. The only

1The best authority as to American Methodism is Dr Abcl Stevens's Hisforys in 6 vols. The statistics are given in the Methodist_Year Book, New York, 1852.

considerable body, however, is the Methodist Protestant Chureh, with 125,000 members. The minor bodies, four in number, count altogether less than 60,000 members, the principal being the American Wesleyan Church, with 25,000 members,

Ill. OrHeR MeEtHopIst Bopies In Britain.

The bodies still to be noticed, while differing as to points of church government, agree as to doctrine and in general as to the means of grace and as to inner spiritual fellowship with the parent "Connexion." They all maintain class-meetings and love-feasts, have leaders' meetings and quarterly meetings, and largely employ local preachers.

The Methodist New Connexion was founded in 1797-98 by Alexander Kilham, who died in 1798. Its general principles are indicated above. Its statistics for 1881 were as follows:—183 ministers and 27,770 members (including those on mission stations, besides 3882 on trial), and 74,744 Sunday scholars.?

United Methodist Free Churches. —This organization in its original form must be identified with the Wesleyan Methodist Association of 1836. That body first absorbed into itself, in great part, the '*Protestant Methodists" of 1828. It was afterwards greatly in- creased, and its organization in some points modified, when a large number of the seceders from the parent Connexion in 1850-52 joined itsranks. The main body of its Conference does not consist, like that of the New Connexion, of an equal number of circuit ministers and elected circuit lay delegates, but of circuit delegates, whether ministerial or lay, elected without any respect to office, ministerial or other. Its circuits also are independent of the control of the Conference.

The Comnexional bond, accordingly, in this denomina- tion is weak, and the itinerancy is not universal or uniform in its rules or its operation. The amalgamation between the Wesleyan Methodist Association and the ‘‘ Wesleyan Methodist Reformers” of 1850 took place in 1857. At that time the combined churehes numbered 41,000. At present (1881-82) they number 72,839, in- cluding 7772 members on the mission stations, besides 7824 on trial, The number of ministers is 392, with 40 retired or ‘‘ supernumerary” ministers. The number of Sunday scholars is 190,957.%

Primitive Methodism.—In this earnest and hard-working denomi- nation the ministers, of whom some are women, are very literally ‘‘the servants of all.” The Conference is composed, in addition to twelve permanent members, of four members appointed by the pre- ceding Conference, and of delegates from district meetings. The principle of proportion is that there should be two laymen to one minister or ‘‘ travelling preacher,” and the ‘‘ travelling preachers” have no pastoral prerogative whatever. The Conference is supreme, and the Connexional bond is strong. This body was founded by Hugh Bourne and William Clowes, local preachers who were separated from the Wesleyan Connexion, the former in 1808, the latter in 1810, because of their violation of Conference regulations as to camp meetings and other questions of order. The Conference had, in 1807, pronounced its Judgment against camp meetings, which had been introduced into the country from America, whereas Bourne and Clowes were determined to hold such meetings. Founded thus by zealous and ‘‘ irregular” lay preachers, ‘‘ Primi- tive’? Methodism, as the resulting new body called itself, bearsstill in its organization, its spirit, and its customs strong traees of its origin. It has been a very successful body, aiming simply at doing evangelistic work, and is now numerous and powerful, numbering among its ministers, not only many useful preachers, but some of marked originality and power and also of superior cultivation. There has for many years past, if not from the beginning, been 4 very friendly feeling between the old Wesleyan Connexion and the Primitive Methodists. Its latest statistics (1881-2) show 1149 travelling preachers, 185,312 members, and 383,350 Sunday scholars.*

Bible Christians. —The Primitive Methodists sprang up in the midland counties, the Bible Christians in Cornwall. These elosely resemble the ‘‘

Primitives” in their character and spirit. Their founder was a Cornish local preacher called O’Bryan. Henee the Connexion is often known as the Bryanites, and Cornish emigrants have propagated this denomination widely in the colonics. The Conference is composed of ten superintendents of distriets, the president and secretary of the preceding Conference, lay delegates, one from each district meeting, and as many of the travelling preachers as are allowed by their respective district meetings attend. In general it may be said that the ministerial and lay members of the Conference are about equal in number. The returns for 1881-82 showed in England (chiefly the west and south of Eng- Se eee eS eee

2 See Jubilee Volume of the New Connexion; also the General Rules and the Minutes of Conference, 1881, published nt the New Connexion Book-Room.

3 See Foundution Deed of the United Methodist Free Churches; also Minutes of Conference, 1881, 119 Salisbury Square. F

4 See John Pette, History of the Primitive Methodist Connexion; also Minutes of Conference, 1881, 6 Sutton Strect, London, E.

land) and in the Channel Islands 136 itincrant preachers, 21,209 members (besides 690 on trial), and 36,335 Sunday scholars. In Canada the number of membcrs was 6652, and in Australia and New Zealand 3671.1

The Wesleyan Reform Union. is an aggregate of local Mcthodist secession churches, loosely held together by a Conference, and is one of the results of the great Methodist disruption of 1851-52. The returns for 1881-82 showed 18 ministers and 7728 members.

eumenieal Methodist Conference.—This Conference was held in City Road Chapel, London, in September 1881. Representatives were present from all the Methodist bodies throughout the world, and it was estimated that these represented not less than 5,000,000 of members and 20,000,000 of population. Whilst in church organization thcse bodies differed, as has been shown above, in doctrine and in respect of their purely spiritual discipline

and means of grace, they were all agreed in principal mattcrs. The Conference was entirely practical in character. The object was to promote zeal and union among the constituent bodies as to all practical points of Christian sympathy and activity, at home and abroad, and especially as to home mission work, general philan- thropy, Christian education, and a Christian use of the press. There were 400 represcntatives present from the Methodist bodies in all

arts of the world.”

Welsh Calvinistie Methodists. —Between the Methodisin of Wales and that of England there was never any other than incidental connexion. Indeed, although the name of the Welsh movement was borrowed from the English, not only was Welsh Methodism quite independent in its origin, but in reality its beginning, as an evangelical movement, was earlier than that of English Methodism. From Wesleyan Methodism, furthermore, Welsh Methodism was throughout distinguished by the fact that it was Calvinistic in its doctrine. For some years Whitcticld’s name was placed by the leaders of Welsh Methodism at the head of their movement, but the connexion was not at any time much more than nominal, Whitefield being, indeed, too often and too long together in America to excrcise any real presidency over the Methodisin of the Principality.

Distinction, however, must be made between Welsh Mcthodism as an evangelistic movement and as an organization. In its later and distinctly organized form, its main elements date from 1811, while the actual unity and the final consolidation of the organization date from so recent a period as 1864. At that date we find the Calvinistic Methodism of North and of South Wales for the first time united in a common organization and government, and brought under the supreme control of one ‘‘ General Assembly.”

The spiritual awakening from which Welsh Calvinistic Method- ism derived its earliest inspiration and impulse began in 1735 and 1736, almost contemporaneously and quite independently, in three different counties of South Wales. owell Harris, a gentleman of some position, born and bred at Trevecca in the parish of Talgarth, county of Brecon, is the most prominent name connected with early Welsh Methodism. His first strong religious

convictions and im- pulses date from 1735. He was sent to Oxford in the autumn of that year to “cure him of his fanaticism,” but remained only one term. On his return to Wales he began to exhort and preach in private houses and in such buildings as he could obtain the use of, being then and throughout his life a simple layman. Of learning or theology he had but little; but he was an extemporary preacher of prodigious vehemence, and often of overwhelming power and pathos. While Harris was thus preaching in the county of Brecon, Daniel Row- lands had been spiritually awakened at Llangeitho in Cardiganshire, the two men knowing nothing whatever of each other. Rowlands was an ordained clergyman, of some learning and of great eloquence. He was a pulpit orator, and carefully prepared his powerful discourses. In Pembrokeshire, again, in that same ycar 1735-86, Howell Davies began to preach the same doctrine in the same spirit as the other two preachers, and with cffects scarcely, if at all, less remarkable. The work thus begun in three distinct centres within the space of one year was in strict connexion with the Established Church, and so continued to be throughout the last eentury. These single-minded preachers pursued their work im Wales knowing nothing of the parallel work which Whitefield had just begun in England. In 1738, however, Whitefield, in the west of England, heard of Howell Harris, and in that year the two revivalists met in Cardiff. In 1739 Howell Harris had begun to extend his preaching tours far and wide, visiting not only South but North Walcs, and, whcrever he went, founding religious societies in connexion with the Church of England, of a character resembling those called Dr Woodward’s societies, which had long been in existence throughout England, the chief difference being that the Welsh societies were ‘evangelical,’ Calvinistic, and revivalist. It was in the same year that Wesley founded his society in England. In 1742 the clergymen connected with eee

1 See Bible Christian Memorial Volume, 1866 ; Mfinut Book-Room, 26 Paternoster Row. j a een NS,

See Proceedings of Fir ; ist Zi i f. Room, City ene fF First Methodist Ecumenical Conference, Wesleyan Book-

the Welsh movement were ten in number, and there were labour- ing in concert with these forty lay ‘‘exhorters,” as they were called. In that year the first ‘‘association” of Welsh Calvinistic Methodists was held at Waterford or Watford, in Glamorganshire. Whitefield consented to preside, and joined his preaching to that of the Welsh evangelists. The first Calvinistic Methodist Conference was held at Waterford, under Whiteficld’s presidency, on January 5, 1743, cightcen montlis carlier than Wesley’s first Conference. For a short time the Calvinistic Methodism of Wales was linked to that of England. After.1748, however, Whitefield ceased to act as in any sense the official head of the Calvinistic Methodists of England, and their organization, always loose, was gradually dissolved.

There was no Wesley in Welsh Mcthodism, and accordingly there was no organic unity among the societics of carlier Welsh Mcthod- ism. Each local society was under the care of an ‘‘exhorter,” an unpaid layman. A number of these local societies were grouped together into a district, over which an ‘‘ overseer” had charge. He also was usually an unpaid layman, although exercising many of the functions of a spiritual pastor. Sometimes, however, as in the case of Rowlands, he was a parish clergyman. The societies attended their parish churches and there reecived the sacrainents. The meeting- or preaching-houses for the societies were vaguely called ‘‘ houses for religious purposes.”

In 1751 Howell Harris ceased to itinerate and retired to Trevecca. From this time his leadership in the Methodist movement secms to have come to an end, and the movement languished for many years after. Not till 1762 is any ‘‘ revival” chronicled. In 1763 Row- lands was obliged to quit his curacy at Llangeitho and leave the Established Church. His people built hima chapel. He thus, after 1763, became a Dissenting minister ; and, retaining his fame and much of his power to the end of his course, he died in 1790,

Fifty years had now passed since the first societies of Welsh Mcthodism had been established by Howell Harris, and the niove- ment, instead of having grown to strength and maturity, appeared to have spent its force, almost in all dircctions, at least so far as any outward signs could show. But the Rev. Thomas Charles of Bala was to be one of the chief means of reviving it. He, like the earlier Methodists, was a churchman; he had taken his degree at

Oxford and served a curacy in Somersetshire. The doors of the Established Church having been closed against him because of his style of preaching, he joined the Welsh Methodists in 1785, and his first sphere of marked influence was in North Wales. In 1791 he took a leading part in a great revival of which Bala was the centre. From this period may be dated the second spring of Welsh Calvinistic Methodism, from which its later successes were to grow. Charles zealously and successfully promoted the establishment of ‘circulating schools” and of Sabbath schools. He was, in fact, the soul of the great Christian cducating movement in Wales which began in the last decade of the 18th century; and it was through his earnest zeal in sceking to provide Bibles for his Welsh schools, especially the Sunday schools, that the British and Foreign Bible Society was established. Though Methodism came then to be effectually rooted in the soil of the Principality, it was not till 1811 that the Welsh Calvinists took that step in the direction of ecclesiastical independence which the English Wesleyans had taken sixteen years before by calling their preachers to the official position of pastors and ordaining them to administer the sacraments.

From 1790 till almost the present time the work of gradually moulding the constitution of Welsh Calvinistic Methodism has proceeded. The ‘‘rules regarding the proper mode of conducting the quarterly association” were drawn up by Charles and agreed upon in 1790. In 1801 the Order and Form of Chureh Government and Rules of Diseipline were published. In 181], as has been shown, niinistcrial ordination was initiated. In 1828 the Con-Session of Faith was promulgated. And in 1864, as has been already inentioned, the first ‘‘General Assembly ” was held, and the two associations of North and South Wales respectively were united into one body. The constitution is now a modified Pres- byterianism, each church managing its own aflairs subject to successive appeal to the monthly meeting of the county and the quarterly association of the province, while the latter body may refer the decision to the annual General Assembly.

The Welsh Mcthodists (or Welsh Presbyterians, as they are now often called) have two theological colleges, one at Bala and the other at Trevecca. They havealso a foreign missionary society, with missions in Brittany, among their congeners of the Celtic race, and in Bengal.

In recent years this church has made great progress. In 1850 the number of members was 58,678, in 1870 it was 92,735, and in 1880 the returns showed 1174 churches, 118,979 communicants, 185,635 Sunday scholars. The number of ministers is not officially given, but is estimated at 600. The North and South Wales associations are now also known as synods. (J. H. RI.)

8 See W. Williams, Welsh Calvinistic Methodism, a Historical Sketch; The Life and Times of Howell Harris ; Tyerman, Life of the Kev. George Whitefield; The Diary of the Calvinistic Methodisis, 1882.

METHODIUS, the apostle of the Slavs, was a native of Thessalonica, and was born about the year 825. His nationality is unknown, but most probably he was a Grecized Slav; the family of which he was a member appears to have been one of considerable social distinction, and he himself had already attained high official rank in the government of Macedonia before he determined to abandon his secular career and embrace the monastic life. His younger brother Constantine (better known as Cyril, the name he adopted at Rome shortly before his death) had also distinguished himself as a secular " philosopher a in Constantinople before he withdrew to the cloister and to solitude. Constantine about 860 had been sent by. the emperor Michael III. to the Khazars; in response to their request for a Christian teacher, but had not remained long among them ; after his return to within the limits of the empire, his brother and he laboured for the instruction of the Slavonic or Slavonicized population, especially by means of translations of the Scripture lessons and the liturgical books used in Christian worship. About the year 863, at the invitation of Rastislav, king of " Great Moravia," who desired the Christianization of his subjects, but at the same time that they should be independent of the Germans, the two brothers went to his capital (its site is unknown), and, besides establishing a seminary for the education of priests, successfully occupied themselves in preaching in the vernacular and in diffusing their religious literature. After four years they seem to have received and accepted an invitation to Rome from Pope Nicholas IL, who had just been engaged in his 'still extant corre- spondence with the newly

converted Bulgarian king ; his death occurred before their arrival, but they were kindly received by his successor Hadrian IJ. Constantine died in Rome, but Methodius, after satisfying the pope of his orthodoxy and obedience, went back to his labours in “Moravia” as archbishop of Pannonia. His province appears to have been, roughly speaking, co-extensive with the basins of the Raab, Drave, and Save, and thus to have included parts of what had previously belonged to the pro- vinces of Salzburg and Passau. account were made at Rome, nominally on behalf of the archbishop of Salzburg, but really in the interests of the German king and his Germanizing ally Swatopluk, Rastislav’s successor ; they were not, however, immediately successful. In 879, however, Methodius was again suni- moned to Rome by Pope John VIIL., after having declined to give up the practice of celebrating mass in the Slavonic tongue ; but, owing to the peculiar delicacy of the relations of Rome with Constantinople, and with the young church of Bulgaria, the pope, contrary to all expectation, ulti- mately decided in favour of a Slavonic liturgy, and sent Methodius (880) back to his diocese with a suffragan bishop, and with a letter of recommendation to Swatopluk. This suffragan, a German named Wiching, unfortunately proved quite the reverse of helpful to his metropolitan, and through his agency, especially after the death of John VIII. in 882, the closing years of the life of Methodius were embittered by continual ecclesiastical disputes, in the course of which he is said to have laid Swatopluk and his supporters under the ban, and the realm under interdict. The date of the death of Methodius is variously given ; the most trustworthy tradition says that it tock place on April 6, 885. He was buried at Welehrad (probably Stuhlweissenberg). The Greek Church commemorates St Cyril on February 14 and St Methodius on May 11; in the Roman Church both are commemorated.on March 9.

See Schafarik’s Slawische Alterthiimer, where the original authorities are fully referred to. The subject of the present notice is most probably not to be identified with the Methodius, a painter

and monk, who, according to a well-known legend, converted Boris of Bulgaria by means of a picture of Christ’s second coming.

In 871 complaints on this.

METHYL, a chemical term which until lately was used in two radically different senses, namely, as designating either the atom-group CH,, which in numberless chemical formule figures as a “radical” (compare CHEMISTRY, vol, v. p. 552), or a gaseous substance of the same composition, which, however, nowadays is generally called “ dimethyl,” to distinguish it from the radical. A gas of the composi- tion and the specific gravity (C,H, + H, = 15) corresponding to C,H, can be produced in two principal ways,—first, by the decomposition of zinc-ethyl by water (Frankland)—

Zn(CyH,)o+ 20H . H=Zn(OH),-+CjHgH ; and, secondly, by the electrolysis of acetate of potash solution (Kolbe), we have virtually)

2CH, . COOH =(CHy), +200, | +H. + pole.

—pole.

These two gases used to be distinguished as two different substances,—Frankland’s being looked upon as hydride of ethyl, C,H,.H, Kolbe’s as “real methyl” (CH,)(CH,), until Schorlemmer proved their identity by showing that both, when treated with chlorine, yield the same identical chloride of ethyl, C,H,.Cl. This confirmed the now generally adopted notion that the radical ethyl itself is nothing but methylo-methyl, H,C—CH,**, so that the filling up of the gap** by an H must necessarily produce “hydride of ethyl” and “dimethyl” in one. The “true methyl” which chemists used to dream of, and which, when treated with chlorine, would yield two CH,Cl’s analogous to HH + CIC] = HCl + HCl, does not, and according to our present knowledge cannot, exist. A quasi apology for it is “marsh gas,” CH,, the principal component of the gas mixture which bubbles up from any marshy pond when its mud is stirred up with a stick. It is always produced when vegetable matter decays in the presence of water, and in the relative or absolute absence of air. What everybody knows as “‘fire-damp” is nothing but a (neces- sarily explosive) mixture of air with impure marsh gas, produced in the constantly progressing metamorphosis of the coal deposits ; in certain districts streams of marsh gas are issuing forth from cracks in the earth ; the “holy fire” of Baku is such a marsh-gas spring, which, having

once caught fire by accident, continues burning to this day. Perfectly pure marsh gas can only be obtained from zine- methyl, Zn(CH,),, by its decomposition with water (vide supra) ; a nearly pure preparation is procurable by heating a mixture of acetate of potash or soda and caustic alkali to dull redness :—

CH, . COONa + NaOll =NasCO,+CH,H. Acetate. Carbonate.

Marsh gas can be prepared synthetically by the action of bisulphide of carbon vapour and sulphuretted hydrogen (both producible from their elements) on red-hot copper, CS, + 2H,8 + 8Cu = 4Cu,S + CH, (Berthelot). A mixture of marsh gas and chlorine, when exposed to direct sunlight, explodes with formation of hydrochloric acid and char- coal. In diffuse daylight only part of the hydrogen 1s eliminated and “replaced” by its equivalent in chlorine, which in general leads to the formation of four bodies : CH,Cl=CH,+Cl,~~HCl, chloride of methyl; CH,Cl chloride of methylene; CHCl,, chloroform ; CCl, tetra~~ chloride of carbon. Of these several chloromethanes, as they are called, the first here interests us more than any of the rest, because from it any other methyl compound can be produced by the substitution of the proper kind of radical for the Cl of the CH,Cl. Thus, for instance, We can convert it into methyl-alcohol by treating the chloride with aqueous caustic potash at 100° C. (Berthelot). This is a most important synthesis, because it is this methyl alcohol that, in practice, always serves as the starting — point in the preparation of other methyl compounds. _

Methyl-Alcohol.—This substance, in ordinary pracket,

Mer 2 iY

is never made synthetically, but simply extracted from wood-spirit, a commercial substance which is produced industrially in the dry distillation of wood. The wood- spirit is contained in the aqueous portion of the tar pro- duced in this operation, along with aceticacid. To recover both, the tar-water is neutralized with lime and distilled, when the acetate remains, while the spirit distils over, along with a deal of water, which, however, is easily removed, as far as necessary, by redistillation and rejection of the less volatile parts. The “crude” wood-spirit, as thus obtained, is not unlike in its

general properties to ordinary spirit of wine, from which, however, it is easily distinguished by its abominable smell. The ordinary commercial article, besides a variable percentage of water, contains from 35 to 80 per cent. of methyl-alcohol ; the rest consists chiefly of acetone, but besides includes dimethyl-acetal, C,H,(OCHs),, acetate of methyl, and numerous other minor components. In Great Britain large quantities of wood-spirit are used for the making of methylated spirit, a mixture of ordinary spirit of wine with one-ninth of its volume of wood-spirit, which is allowed to be sold duty free for the preparation of varnishes, and for other industrial purposes. In former times, here as elsewhere, wood-spirit itself used to be employed as a cheap substitute for spiritus vini; but this is no longer so, since the aniline-colour industry has created a large demand for pure methyl-alcohol. Hence in some Continental works the wood-spirit, instead of being sent out as such, is being worked up for its components, by the following sequence of operations :—(1) dehydration by lime; (2) heating, under an inverted condenser, with caustic soda, to convert the acetate into hydrate of methy] ; (3) destruction of the bad smells by mild oxidation ; (4) distillation in a kind of Coffey's still, whereby it is split up into approximately pure alcohol, acetone, and " tails."

The new industry led to the invention of the following technical methods for the determination, in a given spirit, of the percentages of real methyl-alcohol and of acetone.

The alcohol is determined by saturating 5 c.c. of the spirit with hydriodic acid (volatilization of alcohol and iodide of methyl being avoided by means of a cold-water bath and an inverted condenser), and the product poured into water. Iodide of methyl separates out as a heavy oil, which is measured as it is. According to direct trials 5 c.c. of pure methyl-alcohol yields 7°45 c.c. of crude iodide (Krell, Kriémer and Grodzky).

For the determination of the acetone the following reagents are required (Krimer) :—(1) a solution of iodine, prepared by dissolv- ing I,=254 grammes of iodine, by means of (say) 500 grammes of iodide of potassium, in water, and diluting to 1 litre; (2) a solution of caustic soda containing twice (NaOH) grammes per litre ; (3) aleohol-free ether. Ten c.c. of the soda are placed in a gra- duated cylinder and mixed intimately, first with 1 c.c. of

the spirit, then with 5 ¢.c. of the iodine solution. Jodoform separates out (if acetone is present) in minute yellow crystal plates ; this product is “shaken out” by means of 10 c.c. of ether, and determined by evaporating an aliquot part of the cthereal layer in a tared watch-

glass to dryness and weighing the residue. C,H,O yields CHI; hence 1 part of iodoform indicates 0°28 parts of acetone.

The formula of methyl-alcohol and its true chemical character were correctly ascertained by Dumas and Péligot as early as 1834; yet pure methyl-alcohol may be said to have been an unknown substance until 1852, when Wohler _ taught us to prepare it, by first extracting the CH, of the CH,OH in the wood-spirit as oxalate of methyl, and then decomposing the (purified) oxalate with water.

The most convenient raw material to use nowadays is the rommercial “pure” alcohol; if wood-spirit is employed it had better first be purified by distillation over caustic soda (vide supra). The formation of the oxalate then is best effected (according to Alexander Watt) as follows :—500 grammes of oxalic acid crystals are mixed with 200 c.c. of oil of vitriol ; then 500 e.c. of the spirit are added, the whole kept for a time at 80° C. , and then allowed to stand cold for twenty-four hours.

i one large crop of oxalate erystals—partly (CH;).0,0,, partly 3- Hl. C,0,—1s separated from the liquor by pressure and subse-

195

angut drying over vitriol, and then decomposed by distillation with water.

The aqueous alcohol thus obtained is dehydrated by the well- known methods used in the preparation of ordinary absolute alcohol.

According to Krimer, a purer preparation than Wohler’s is obtained by extracting the methyl as formiate instead of as oxalate, which is easily effected by digesting the wood-spirit with a formic acid of 1°22 specific gravity, and purifying the formic ether by fractional distillation. This cther boils at 32°, the oxalate at 161° C., hence a proper combination of the two

methods should be infinitely supcrior to either. What now follows must, in gencral, be understood to refer to Wohler’s preparation.

Pure methyl-alcohol is a colourless liquid similar in its general properties, in its behaviour to other chemically inert liquids, and in its action as a solvent to ordinary absolute alcohol, from which, however, it differs by the entire absence from it of all spirituous odour. A pre- paration which smells of wood-spirit may be condemned at once as impure. According to H. Kopp, its specific gravity is 0°8142 at 0° ©. and 0°7997 at 16°-4. If the volume at ¢° be V, then (from 0° to 61°)

V=1+ 0001134¢+1°364 × 10-8? + 8-741 × 10-97,

The boiling point is 64°°6 to 65°-2. The tension-curve was determined by Regnault and by Landolt; but the results of the two observers do not agree except (approximately) at P=760 mm. Methyl-alcohol has quite a characteristic tendency to “bump ” badly on distillation, which, however, can be prevented by addition of a small fragment of tin- sodium, which produces a feeble but sufficient current of hydrogen. Its specific heat is 6713 ; latent heat of vapour, 26°4 ; combustion heat, 5307 per unit weight (Favre and Silbermann). The refractive index for the D (sodium) ray is 1:3379 + 0013 for 10° = 5° C. (Dale and Gladstone). Methyl-alcohol mixes with water in all proportions with contraction. Since Wohler’s discovery a table for the specific gravities of aqueous methyl-alcohols has been constructed experimentally by A. Dupré ; but unfortunately his alcohol boiled at 58°:7, and ‘con-

sequently must have becu something different from what generally goes by this name.

In its chemical reactions methyl-alcohol, CH,.OH, is very similar to ordinary (ethyl) alcohol, C,H,.OH, and consequently, in the same sense as the latter, analogous to water, H.OH. Thus, for instance, metallic sodium and potassium dissolve in either alcohol with evolution of hydrogen and formation of etlrylates or methylates of the alkali metals. Example—

CH,OH + Na=CH,. ONa+3H,.

The two methylates crystallize from the solution with crystal-alcohol, which can be driven off in an atmosphere of hydrogen by heat, without decomposition of the salts themselves. Water at once decomposes them into caustic alkali and alcohol, CH;.ONa+H.OH = NaOH + CH,OH. Yet the reverse reaction takes place when the alcohol is treated with a large excess of caustic soda.

The action of acids on methyl-alcohol is in gencral quite analogous to that on, for instance, caustic soda, with this important difference, however, that what in the case of NaHO goes on so readily in aqueous solutions with CH,.OH succeeds only under circumstances precluding the accumulation of water. In these circumstances we have, for instance,

_(1) CIH+0H. CH,=H,0+C1. CH, ; (2) (C,H,0,)H+ OH. CH,=H,0+0,H,0,. CH, ; Acctic acid. Acetic ether and so on with all monobasic acids. A dibasic acid XHIL may act as (X)H, or as (XH).H; thus, for instance, (8) (C,0,H)H+0H. CH,=H,0+0,0,. HCH, ;

Oxalic acid. Methyl] oxalic acid.

(4) (C,0,)H, +200 . CH, =2T1,0 + 0,0, . (CH), ; Methyl] oxalate.

196

A tribasic ‘acid forms two methyl acids and one neutral ether; we have, for instance,

(5) (From PO,H,); PO,(CH,)Hy; PO,(CH,).H ; PO,(CHg)s-

It would, however, be a great mistake to suppose that whether, for instance (Ex. 3 and 4), the monomethyl or the dimethyl compound is formed depends on the quantity of methyl-alcohol employed per unit of acid. This depends far more largely on other conditions, as will be illustrated in next paragraph. The methyl-salts of oxygen acids are called esters, in opposition to the chloride, bromide, iodide, sulphide, and oxide, which are set apart asethers. Broadly speaking, ethers are not, while esters are, readily decomposed by water into their cogeners ; but the nitrate CH, . NO, behaves in this respect like an ether.

Action with Sulphuric Acid.—Methyl-alcohol mixes with oil of vitriol with considerable evolution of heat and (always only partial) conversion of the two ingredients into methyl- sulphuric acid. Equal volumes of acid and alcohol give a good yield. To prepare pure methyl sulphates, dilute the mixture largely with water, avoiding elevation of temperature (which would regenerate the ingredients), and saturate with carbonate of baryta. Filter off the sulphate of baryta to obtain a solution of the pure methyl sulphate SO,.CH,. ba (where ba=3Ba=1 eg.), from which this salt is easily obtained in crystals. From the baryta salt any other methyl sulphate is readily obtained by double decomposition with a solution of the respective sulphate ; the acid itself, for instance, by means of sulphuric acid. At higher temperatures the reaction between vitriol and methyl-alcohol results in the formation of methyl-ether, (CH,),O, or of normal sulphate of methyl, (CH,)s50,,. The ether is a gas condensable into a liquid which, under pressure of one atmosphere, boils at — 21° C.

The gas dissolves in about one thirty-seventh of its volume of

water ; far more largely in alcohol and in ether; most abundantly |

in oil of vitriol, which dissolves about six hundred times its volume of methyl-ether gas, thus affording a very handy means for storing up the gas for use. The solution needs only be diluted with its own volume of water to be broken up into its components (Erlenmeyer).

Liquefied oxide of methyl is now being produced on the manufacturing scale, and sold as a powerful refrigerating agent. One part of sulphuric acid is mixed with a little over one part of dehydrated wood-spirit, and the mixture heated to 125° to 128° C. (180° being carefully avoided), when methyl-ether goes off. When the mixture is exhausted, more wood-spirit is added to the residue so as to re-establish the original specific gravity (of 1°29), and the heating resumed, which again furnishes a supply of the gas, and so on. This proves that the process is not, as used to be supposed, one of mere dehydration, but a cycle

etherification, as shown by the equations :— (1) SO,H,+ CH,OH=SO,, HCH3+H,0. (2) SO,.H.CH,+ H. 0. CH;=SO,HH+CH,.0.CH3. The ester, SO, (CH,), though obtainable by distillation of the

alcohol with 10 parts of vitriol, is more conveniently prepared from | ; i ; ype “was never seen outside a chemical museum, is now being

pure methyl-sulphuric acid by distillation in vacuum at 1380°-140° C; thus : —2S0,CH,. H=S0,H,+S0,(CHs).. liquid, smelling like peppermint, specific gravity 1°327 at 18°; it boils at 187° to 188° C.

Chloride of methyl, CH,Cl, readily produced by the action of hydrochloric acid gas and hot methyl-alcohol (preferably

It is a colourless |

in the presence of chloride of zinc as an auxiliary dehy- | drator), is a gas which, under ordinary pressure, condenses |

into a liquid at – 23°C. The gas, at ordinary temperatures

absorbed by water, which, however, at 6° unites with it into a solid hydrate. Condensed methyl chloride has become an article of commerce, being largely produced from trimethylamine (vide izfra) and used as a powerful

_ methyl-alcohol, and trimethylamine. (though very readily soluble in alcohol), is only sparingly —

we SP er

frigorific agent, as well as for the extraction of perfuntes from flowers. Regarding nitrite of methyl, NO—-O—CH,, its interesting isomeride nitromethane, O,N—CH,, and nitrate of methyl, NO,CH,, we must refer to the hand- books of organic chemistry.

Todide of methyl, CHg, is obtained by distilling methyl- alcohol with hydriodic acid, which latter is best produced off-hand by addition to the alcohol of iodine and amorphous phosphorus. It is a colourless liquid of 2°269 specific gravity, boiling at 42°°5 C., insoluble in water.

Organic Methyl-Esters—The more volatile ones are in general easily obtained by distillation of the respective acid with methyl-alcohol, or with methyl-alcohol and oil of vitriol (virtually SO,.H.CH,);-the less volatile

ones more conveniently by passing hydrochloric acid gas into a methyl-alcoholic solution of the acid. We have no space for the individual substances; but the salicylate C,H,O,.CH, may just be named as being the principal component of the essential oil of Gaultheria procumbens (wintergreen oil).

Methylamines.—The general result of the action of ammonia on an ester is the formation of alcohol and acid amide. Example—

(0,H,0)— OCH, + HNH,=CH,. O11 +C,H,0. NH.» Acetate of methyl. Acetamide.

With iodide of methyl this reaction is an obvious im- possibility ; what really takes place (as A. W. Hofmann has shown for this and all analogous cases) is that the iodide unites with the ammonia into the HI compound HI.NH,CH, of a base NH,CH,, which can be separated from the acid by distillation with caustic potash, and when thus liberated presents itself as a gas surprisingly similar (almost to identity) to ammonia. The analogy extends to the action on iodide of methyl, which, in the case of methyl. amine, NH,CH,, leads to the formation of dimethylamine, NH.(CH,),; and from the latter again trimethylamine, N(CH,),, can be prepared by a simple repetition of the operation. These three amines are closely analogous in their chemical character to ammonia, the points of differ- ence becoming the more marked the greater the number of (CH,)’s in the molecule. ‘Trimethylamine, having lost all its ammonia-hydrogen, cannot possibly act upon iodide of methyl like its analogues. What it really does is to unite with the iodide into “iodide of tetramethyl-ammonium,” I. N(CH,), analogous to iodide of ammonium, INH, we should say, if it were not the reverse, because the organic iodide (unlike its prototype, which is an ammonium compound only in theory), when treated with moist oxide of silver (virtually with AgOH), really does yield a solution of a true analogue of caustic potash in the shape of

of reactions analogous to those in the ordinary process of | hydroxide of tetramethylammonium, N(CHs),. OH.

In regard to the actual preparation of these several bodies, which is not so simple as might appear from our exposition of their mutual relations, we

must refer to the handbooks of organic chemistry. But we must not omit to state that trimethylamine, which only the other day

manufactured on a large scale, and promises to play an important part in industrial chemistry. The waste liquors obtained in the distillation of alcohol from fermented beet: root molasses serve as a raw material for its preparation. These liquors, when evaporated to dryness and subjected to dry distillation, yield, besides tar and gases, an aqueous liquid containing large quantities of ammonia, acetonitrile, This liquor is neutral- ized with sulphuric acid, and distilled, when the nitrile and the methyl-alcohol distil over, to be recovered by proper methods. From the mixed solution of the sulphates of ammonia and trimethylamine the former 1s separate

out as far as possible by crystallization ; the mother-liquor

Dh) Do De 5 i BF

is distilled with lime; the volatile bases are absorbed in hydrochloric acid ; the hydrochloric solution is evaporated ; and the sal-ammoniac which comes out at first is, as far as possible, fished out. The last mother-liquor is evaporated to dryness, and in this form represents commercial trimethylamine hydrochlorate. It is this product which serves for the preparation of methyl chloride (vide supra), the process being founded upon the fact that a concentrated solution of the salt, when heated, breaks up 3HCl . N(CH,), into 2N(CH,), of free trimethylamine + NH,. CH,HCl of hydrochlorate of monomethylamine and 2CH,Cl of methyl chloride.

These processes are being carried out industrially by Vincent in France. But this base trimethylamine seems destined to do more than provide us with a new refrigerat- ing agent. The attempt has been made—it would appear, with success—to utilize it for the preparation of pure carbonate of potash from native chloride of potassium, just as ordinary ammonia, in the famous ammonia-soda process, serves for the conversion of common salt into soda-ash.

Methyl Cyanides.—There are two distinct bodies which, by com- position and by synthesis, are both CH;+NC; they are named “acetonitrile”?

(formerly called simply cyanide of methyl) and isocyanide of methyl or methylcarbamine respectively.

Acetonitrile was discovered by Dumas in 1847. It may be pre- pared by the distillation of a mixture of methylsulphate and of cyanide of potassium; but is obtained more easily and in a purer state by distilling acetamide with phosphoric anhydride. Acetate of ammonia may be used instead of the amide, but it does not work so well.

CH,. CO. O(NH,) CH,;.CO.(NH,) CH,. CN Acctate of NH, Acetamide Nitrile =A (say). =A-H,0. =A-2H,0.

It is a colourless liquid of a pungent aromatic odour, with specific gravity *805 at 0°, and boils at 82°C. When heated with aqueous potash (at the wrong end of a condenser) it breaks up with for- ation of ammonia and acetate of potash. Whence we conclude that the methyl is combined more directly with the carbon of the cyanogen, thus :

N{C—CH,} +2H,0 =NH,+CH,. COOH. Acctie acid.

This conclusion is supported by the action on the nitrile of nascent

hydrogen, which leads to the formation of ethylamine, thus (Men-

dius) :— NC—CH,+4H=H,N—CH,CHs3. Etliylamine. In either case we pass from a monocarbon to a dicarbon body, Virtually from methyl to ethyl alcohol.

The isocyanide is prepared by heating iodide of methyl with cyanide of silver (CH3I ; 2NCAg) and ether in a sealed-up tube to 130° to 140°, to produce the crystalline body AgNC + NCCH, (and Agl). The double cyanide, when distilled with some water and cyanide of potassium, breaks up into its components,—the NCAg forming (NC),AgK ; and the cyanide of methyl distils over. Itis a colourless liquid, characterized by quite an unbearably irritating and sickening smell. The specific gravity is °756 at 14°, the boiling point 59° C. It combines with hydrochloric acid into a crystalline salt which is readily decomposed by water into methylamine and

formic acid. Whence we conclude that in this case the cyanogen is tied to the methyl by its nitrogen ; thus :—

C{N—CH,} +2H,O=H. COOH +NH,. CH,. Formic acid. Methylamine.

The methyl here remains methyl, being separated by an N from the cyanogen-carbon, which latter passes into formic acid.

We inust not close this section without at least referring to the methylphosphines, as being a set of bodies related to PH 6 (phosphine) as the methylamines are to NH, (ammonia), and similar to these in their chemical character, in so far as they are bases. The points of difference betwecn the two series are of pretty much the same sense as those between the two prototypes. Thus, for stance, while trimethylamine N(CH,), is a strong base, but inert to oxygen gas, trimethylphosphine is a relatively feeble base, but in contact with air greedily absorbs oxygen with formation of an oxide P(CH;),0, the like of which in the nitrogen series has no existence.

Sulphur Compounds of Methyl.—Substances analogous to methyl- alcohol and methyl-ether respectively can be obtained by the dis- tillation of methyl sulphate of potassium with strong solutions of

the potassium sulphides KHS and K,§ respectively. The body CH,.SH is knowm as methyl-mercaptane, the other (CH,),8 as sulphide of methyl. Both are very volatile stinking liquids. Sulphide of methyl claims a special interest as being the starting point for the preparation of an important class of bodies called trymethyl sulphine compounds. ‘The sulphide (CH3),8 readily unites with the iodide CH,] into crystals of iodide of trimethyl sulphine, (CH)3S. I, a substance which is closely analogous in its chemical character to the iodide of tetramethyl-ammonium. Moist oxide of silver, for instance, converts it into a strongly basic hydrate, S(CH,),. OH, which in its avidity for acids almost beats its analogon in the nitrogen family. An investigation of its salts was Scie by Crum Brown and Blaikie.

Methyl Arsenides.—Arseniferous bases constituted like mono- or di-methylamine (bodies such as ASH,CHsg, analogous to NH,.CHzs) do not seem to exist. What we do know of are—(1) a trimethyl- arsine and the iodide and the hydroxide of tetramethylarsonium, —As(CH3)3, As(CH),J, and As(CH3),0H,—bodies discovered by Cahours and Riche; (2) a whole series of monomethylic bodies, As(CH,)X, (where X=Cl, Br, or X,=O,S), discovered by Baeyer in 1857 ; (3) the kakodyle compounds, a series of bodies, As(CH3).. X or As(CH3).. Xg, which were discovered and investigated by R. Bunsen in 1842. This great investigation marks an epocli in the history of organic chemistry, and our article would not be complete without at least a short summary of its results. Bunsen started in his investiga- tion with a liquid which had been obtained by Cadet as early as 1760, by the dry distillation of equal parts of white arscnic and anhydrous acetate of potash, and which nobody cared to investigate because it emits fumes which have an indescribably sickening smell and an intensity of poisonous action, compared with which that of white arsenic itself appears insignificant. It was reserved for Bunsen to attack this awful substance and force it to give an account of itself. According to Bunsen, Cadet's liqnid is substantially an oxide, (AsC,H,).0, which has strongly basic properties, readily exchang- ing its O for Cl,, &c. To obtain the pure substance, the liquor is distilled with corrosive sublimate and hydrochloric acid, which in the first instarice yields the pure muriate of the base As(CH,),Cl, in the form of a liquid volatile above 100° into vapours which take fire spontaneously in air. From this chloride of kakodyle the pure oxide is obtained by distillation with caustic potash. The pure oxide emits no fumes; its specific gravity is 1:462; it boils near 150°. A mixture of its vapour with air detonates at 50° C. From the chloride again, Bunsen obtained tlic free radical kakodyle, (AsC, Hg), by treatment with metallic zine in a special apparatus, so constructed that all the several operations involved could be eairied out without bringing the contents in contact with air, — a necessary precaution, because kakodyle is a liquid which takes fire in air spontaneously even at ordinary temperatures. Pure kakodyle is a heavy colourless liquid boiling at about 170° C., and freezing at — 6°. When exqitel to oxygen or chlorine it sufters destructive combustion ; but on slow access of air it is oxidized into its oxide, (AsC,H,).0, and kakodylic acid; with chlorine water it unites into the chloride which it came from ; it also unites directly with sulphur and other elements; in short, it is exactly to

kako- dyle compounds what potassium is to potash and potash salts, ‘*a true organic element,” as Bunsen himself put it. This dis- covery of Bunsen’s was greeted with an enthusiasm which it is difficult in these days to realize. With us now, a radical is intrinsically a fiction ; it was dilferent in 1842. By the isolation of kakodyle the ‘‘ radical” notion suddenly rose from an unproved hypothesis to the rank of a theory based on experiment. Still, however much our theorctical notions nay shift, Bunsen’s research will stand as a piece of monumental scientific work.

Kakodylic acid, As. O.(CH3)..OH, is most conveniently pre- pared from the oxide by addition of water and oxide of mercury, — H,O+2Hg0O supplying the H,+ O03 required for 1(AsC,H,),0. This is a crystalline monobasic acid, soluble in water. Unlike the kakodylides of the As. Xg type, it has no smell, and is no very violent poison. It takes six grains of it to kill a rabbit. –

Metallic Methides.—Examples of thesc are—Sb(CHg), ; Sb(CHs); ; Mg(CH;), ; Zn(CHg), ; Pb(CHg),; Al(CH3)3; Sn(CH,),. To give an idea of the chemical character of this interesting class of bodies we choose zinc-methyl as a representative example, and state briefly the chief points of its chemical history. This body was discovered by Frankland in 1849. It is prepared by boiling iodide of methyl] over granulated zinc in a flask connected with an inverted condenser, and so contrived otherwise that the contents are protected against access of moisture and oxygen. Under these circumstances the two in- gredients gradually unite into a non-volatile and solid compound IZn.(CH;). When this body is heated with more of iodide of methyl, it undergoes decomposition, with formation of iodide of zinc and of dimethyl gas, I—Zn—CH,CH3] =ZnI,(CHs)., which reaction to some extent takes place unavoidably in the pre- paration of the zinc salt, however great an excess of metal may be taken. Whatsurvives needs only to be subjected to dry distillation (in the absence of air) to yield a distillate of zinc-methyl :—

21—Zn—CH,= Zul, + Zn(CHsg),.

Zine-methy] is a colourless liquid of 1°386 specific gravity at 10°5, which boils at 46° C. ; in contact with air it takes fire. Water decomposes it at once

into hydrate of oxide of zinc and marsh gas, Zn(CH)o= Zn(OH),+2CH,H. Of other reactions the following may be named. (1) When digested with sodium, it yields a preeipi- tate of metallic zinc, and a double compound of itself and sodium- methyl. This latter unites readily with carbonic acid into aeetate of soda, NaCH,+CO,=CH,—CO—ONa (Wanklyn). (2) With chloride of acetyl it forms acetone, Zn(CH3).+2CH3. CO. Cl= ZnCl, +2CO(CH,).(Freund) (3) Under somewhat different condi- tions, including the presence of an excess of Zn(CHg)., a compound is produced which with water, yields tertiary butyl-alcohol (Boutle-

row): CO(CH,).+ Zn(CH).= C(CH)3. O- Zn@H.— A: A+2H.OH =Zn(OH),CH, C(CHy)3 — OH.

Tertiary alcohol.

(W. D.)

METRONOME, an instrumeut for denoting the speed at which a musical composition is to be performed. Its invention is generally, but falsely, ascribed to Johann Nepomuk Maelzel, a native of Ratisbon (177 2-1838). It consists of a pendulum swung on a pivot ; below the pivot is a fixed weight, and above it is a sliding weight that regulates the velocity of the oscillations by the greater or less distance from the pivot to which it isadjusted. The silent metronome is impelled by the touch, and ceases to beat when this impulse dies; it has a scale of numbers marked on the pendulum, and the upper part of the sliding weight is placed under that number which is to indicate the quickness of a stated note, as M.M. (Maelzel’s Mctronome) a 60, or $= 72, or ‘= 108, or the like. The number 60

implies a second of time for each single oscillation of the pendulum,— numbers lower than this denoting slower, and higher numbers quicker beats. The scale at first ex- tended from 50 to 160, but now ranges from 40 to 208. A more complicated metronome is impelled by clock-work, makes a ticking sound at each beat, and continues its action till the works run down; a still more intricate machine has also a bell which is struck at the first of any number of beats willed by the person who regulates it, and so signifies the accent as well as the time.

The earliest instrument of the kind, a weighted pendulum of variable length, is described in a paper by Etienne Loulié (Paris, 1696; Amsterdam, 1698). Attempts were also made by Enbrayg (1732) and Gabory (1771). Harrison, who gained the prize awarded by the English Government for his chronometer, published a description of an instru- ment for the purpose in 1775. Davaux (1784), Pelletier, Abel Burja (1790), and Weiske (also 1790) described their various experiments for measuring musical time. In 1813 Gottfried Weber, the composer, theorist, and essayist, proposed a weighted ribbon graduated by inches or smaller divisions, which might be held or otherwise fixed at any desired length, and would infallibly oscillate at the same speed so long as the impulse lasted; this, the simplest, is also the surest, the most enduring, the most portable, and the cheapest invention that has come before the world, and one can but wonder that it has not been universally accepted. Stdckel and Zmeskall produced each an instru- ment; and Maelzel made some slight modification of that by the former, about the end of 1812, which he announced as a new invention of his own, and exhibited from city to city on the Continent. It was, as nearly as can be ascertained, in 1812 that Winkel, a mechanician of Amsterdam, devised a plan for reducing the inconvenient length of all existing instruments, on the principle of the double pendulum, rock- ing on both sides of a centre and balanced by a fixed and a variable weight. He spent three years in completing it, and it is described and commended in the Report of the Netherlands Academy of Sciences, August 14,1815. Maelzel thereupon went to Amsterdam, saw Winkel and inspected his invention, and, recognizing its great superiority to what he called his own, offered to buy all right and title to it.

Winkel refused, and so Maelzel constructed a copy of the instrument, to which he added nothing but the scale of numbers, took this copy to Paris, obtained a patent for it, and in 1816 established there, in his own name, a manu- factory for metronomes. When the impostor revisited Amsterdam, the inventor instituted proceedings against him for his piracy, and the Academy of Sciences decided in Winkel’s favour, declaring that the graduated scale was the only point in which the instrument of Maelzel differed from his. Maelzel’s scale was needlessly and arbitrarily

complicated, proceeding by twos from 40 to 60, by threes from 60 to 72, by fours from 72 to 120, by sixes from 120 to 144, and by eights from 144 to 208. Dr Crotch con- structed a time-measurer, and Henry Smart (the violinist, and father of the composer of the same name) made another in 1821, both before that received as Maelzel's was known in England. In 1882 James Mitchell, a Scotsman, made an ingenious amplification of the Maelzel clock-work, reducing to mechanical demonstration what formerly rested wholly on the feeling of the performer. Although ""Maelzel's metronome " has universal acceptance, the silent metronome and still more Weber's graduated ribbon are greatly to be preferred, for the clock-work of the other is liable to be out of order, and needs a nicety of regulation which is almost impossible ; for instance, when Sir George Smart had to mark the traditional times of the several pieces in the Dettingen Te Deum, he tested them by twelve metronomes, no two of which beat together. The value of the machine is exaggerated, for no living performer could execute a picce in unvaried time throughout, and no student could practise under the tyranny of its beat ; and conductors of music, nay, composers themselves, will give the same piece slightly slower or quicker on different occasions, according to the circumstances of performance. METSU, Gasriet, a Dutch painter of celebrity (born in 1630, died after 1667), is one of the few artists of renown in Holland whose life has remained obscure. Houbraken, who eagerly collected anecdotes of painters in the 18th century, was unable to gather more from the gossip of his contemporaries than that, as early as 1658, Metsu, at the age of forty-three, submitted to a dangerous surgical operation. The inference drawn by superficial readers from this statement has been that death immediately ensued. A more careful perusal would have shown that Houbraken knew that Metsu had given lessons to De Musscher in 1665. Local records now reveal that Gabriel was the son of Jacques Metsu, who lived most of his days at Leyden, where he was three times married. The last of these marriages was celebrated in 1625, and Jacomma Garnijers, herself the widow of a painter, gave birth to Gabriel in 1630. Connected by both his parents with art, Metsu was probably taught first by his father and then by Gerard Dow. He probably finished his training under Rembrandt. So far back as 1648, but a few days earlier than Jan Steen, who is said to have painted his portrait, Metsu was registered in the painters' corporation at Leyden; and the books of the guild also tell us that he remained a member in 1649. In 1650 he ceased to subscribe, and works

bearing his name and the date of 1653 give countenance to the belief that he had then settled at Amsterdam, where he continued his studies under Rembrandt. His companions at the time would naturally be De Hooch and Van. der Meer, whose example he soon followed when it came to his turn to select the class of subjects for which his genius fitted him. Under the influence of Rembrandt he pro- duced the Woman Taken in Adultery, a large picture with the date of 1653, in the Louvre, in which no one would suspect the painter of high life or taverns were it not that his name is written at full length on the canvas. The artist who thus repeated the gospel subjects familiar t0

Flinck and Eeckhout was also acquainted with the Oriental wardrobe of Rembrandt, and ready to use it, like all his contemporaries. But he probably observed that sacred art was ill suited to his temper, or he found the field too strongly occupied, and happily for himself, as well as for his admirers, he turned to other subjects for which he was better fitted. We may doubt whether he triéd the style of allegory as illustrated in a picture of Justice Protecting Virtue and Chastising Vice in the gallery of the Hague. ‘There is every reason to think that this rough and frosty composition was wrought by quite another master. What Metsu undertook and carried out from the first with surprising success was the low life of the market and tavern, contrasted with wonderful versa- tility by incidents of high life and the drawing-room. In each of these spheres he combined humour with expres- sion, a keen appreciation of nature with feeling, and breadth with delicacy of touch, unsurpassed by any of his contem- poraries. In no single instance do the artistic lessons of Rembrandt appear to have been lost upon him. The same principles of light and shade which had marked his school- work in the Woman Taken in Adultery were applied to subjects of quite a different kind. A group in a drawing- room, a series of groups in the market-place, a single figure in the gloom of a tavern or parlour, was treated with the utmost felicity by fit concentration and gradation of light; a warm flush of tone pervaded every part, and, with that, the study of texture in stuffs was carried as far as it had been by Terburg or Dow, if not with the finish or the brio of De Hooch. Metsu’s pictures are all in such admirable keeping, and so warm and harmonious in his middle or so cool’ and harmonious in his closing

time, that they always make a pleasing impression. They are more subtle in modulation than Dow's, more spirited and forcible in touch than Terburg's; and, if Terburg may of right claim to have first painted the true satin robe, he never painted it more softly or with more judgment as to colour than Metsu. .

That Metsu married and became a citizen of Amsterdam in 1659 would only prove that his residence in the com- mercial capital of the Netherlands was later than historians have generally assumed. But there is no reason to think that Metsu claimed his citizenship at once. The privileges of a burgess were given in exchange for a payment of dues, and these painters had various ways of avoiding unless they married. One of the best pictures of Metsu's manhood is the Market-place of Amsterdam, at the Louvre, respecting which it is difficult to distribute praise in fair proportions, so excellent are the various parts, the characteristic move- ment and action of the dramatis persone, the selection of faces, the expression and the gesture, and the texture of the things depicted. A tin can in the arm of a cook is a marvel of imitation, but the cook's face is also a marvel of expression. Equally fine, though earlier, are the Sportsman (dated 1661) and the Tavern (also 1661) at the Hague and Dresden Museums, and the Game-Dealer's Shop, also at Dresden, with the painter's signature and 1662.

Metsu is one of the painters of whose skill Holland still pre- serves examples, yet whose best pictures are either in England or in France or in the galleries of Germany. The value of his works is large, and at the Pommersfelden sale in 1867 the Jealous Husband Dictating his Wife's Letters, though but one of several replicas, was bought by Lord Hertford for little short of £2000, while for the Ride of the Prince of Orange, in the Gsell collection at Vienna, £3000 was paid by Baron Rothschild in 1873. (J. A. C.)

METTERNICH, Cremens Wenzesiavs, PRINcE (1773- 1859), first minister of Austria from 1809 to 1848, was the son of a Rhenish nobleman employed in high office by the Austrian court. He was born at Coblentz in 1773. At the age of fifteen he entered the university of Strasburg. The French Revolution was then beginning. Everywhere

the spirit of hope gave to men's language an exaltation and a confidence hardly known at any other epoch. But the darker reality soon came into view. Metternich was a witness of the riot in which the town-hall of Strasburg was pillaged by a drunken mob ; his tutor subsequently became a member of the revolutionary tribunal in Alsace. If we are to trust to Metternich's own account of the formation of his opinions, the hatred of innovation, which was the ruling principle of his later life, arose from his experience of the terrible results which followed at this time from the victory of so-called liberal ideas. But in reality Metternich was an aristocrat and a conservative by birth and nature. His sentiment in things political was that of a member of a refined and exclusive society which trusts to no intelli- gence but its own, and hardly sympathizes with larger interests. The aggressions and violence of the Revolution from 1789 to 1799 gave Metternich an historical basis for his political theories, but the instinctive preferences of his own mind were the same from first to last. He began life as a young man of fashion and gallantry. His marriage in 1795 with the Princess Kaunitz, a granddaughter of the famous minister, fixed him in the highest circle of Austrian nobility. His first contact with the great political world was at the congress of Rastadt in 1798, where, under the auspices of the victorious French republic, arrangements were made for compensating the German princes and nobles whose possessions on the left bank of the Rhine had been ceded to France by the peace of Campo Formio. Metternich was the accredited agent of a group of Westphalian nobles; his private letters give a vivid picture of the rough and ° uncourtly diplomatists who had succeeded to the polished servants of the old French monarchy. In 1801 Metternich was appointed Austrian ambassador at Dresden, and in 1803 he was promoted to Berlin; but he had hardly become as yet a prominent man in Europe. His stay at Berlin was the turning-point of his life. The war of the third coalition was impending. Austria united with England and Russia against Napoleon, and the task of the youthful ambassador was to win over the court of Berlin to the cause of the allies. Metternich seems to have done all that it was possible for him to do; but Prussia persisted in its neutrality. The earnestness with which Metternich had worked against France did not prevent him from remaining on the friendliest terms with M. Laforest, the French ambassador at Berlin ; and so agreeable an account of him was transmitted to Paris by his rival that, at the close of the conflict, Napoleon himself requested that Metternich might henceforward represent Austria at

the Tuileries. Metternich was accordingly sent to Paris in 1806. This was the beginning of the period when Austria, humbled but not exhausted by the blow of Austerlitz and by the losses accompanying the peace of Pressburg, deter- mined, under the leadership of Count Stadion, to prepare for another war on a greater scale. But the sudden over- throw of Prussia, and the alliance between France and Russia which was made at Tilsit in 1807, added immeasur- ably to the difficulties of the court of Vienna. It became clear that Napoleon was intending to. dismember Turkey, and to gain for himself some part of the spoils of the Otto- man empire. Metternich's advice was that Austria should endeavour to detach the czar from the French alliance, and by this means frustrate the plan of partition; but, should Russia hold fast to Napoleon, that Austria itself should unite with the two aggressors, and secure its share of Turkey. Oriental affairs, however, fell into the background, and in the summer of 1808 Metternich was convinced that Napoleon was intending to attack Austria, though not im- mediately. He warmly supported Count Stadion's policy in raising the forces of Austria to the highest strength ; and, although he did not share the minister's hopes in a

general rising throughout Germany, he expressed in his despatches no distrust of the power of Austria to cope with Napoleon, This is the more singular because, after the disastrous issue of the campaign of 1809, Metternich seems to have taken credit for having opposed the policy of war. Napoleon again captured Vienna; the battle of Wagram was lost ; and after a long negotiation Austria had to purchase peace by the cession of part of Austrian Poland and of its Illyrian provinces. Metternich, who had virtually taken Count Stadion's place immediately after the battle of Wagram, was now installed as minister of foreign affairs. The first striking event that took place under his administration was the marriage of Marie Louise, daughter of the emperor Francis, to his conqueror Napoleon. To do justice to Metternich's policy it must be remembered that the alliance of Tilsit between France and Russia was still in existence, and that Austria was quite as much threatened by the ezar's designs upon Turkey as by Napoleon's own aggressions. Metternich himself seems, in spite of his denials, to have been the real author of the family union between the houses of Hapsburg

and Bonaparte,—a most politic, if not a high-spirited measure, which guaranteed Austria against danger from the east, at the same time that it gave it at least some prospect of security from attack by Napoleon, and enabled Metternich to mature his plans for the contingency of an ultimate breach between France and Russia. In 1812 this event occurred. Metternich, in nominal alliance with Napo- leon, sent a small army into southern Russia, allowing it to be understood by the ezar that the attack was not serious. Then followed the annihilation of the French invaders. While Prussia, led by its patriots, declared war against Napoleon, Metternich, with rare and provoking coolness, held his hand, merely stating that Austria would no longer regard itself as a subordinate ally, but would act with all its force on one side or the other. The result of this reserve was that Metternich could impose what terms he pleased on Russia and Prussia as the price of his support. The armies of these two powers, advancing into central Germany, proved no match for the forces with which Napoleon took the field in the spring of 1813 ; and the hard-fought battles of Liitzen and Bautzen resulted in the retreat of the allics. After the combatants had made an armistice, Met- ternich tendered Austria's armed mediation, requiring Prussia to content itself with the restoration of its territory east of the Elbe, and leaving Napoleon's ascendency in Germany almost untouched. Napoleon, after a celebrated interview with Metternich, madly rejected terms so favour- able that every Prussian writer has denounced Metternich's proposal of them as an act of bitter enmity to Prussia. On the night of the 10th of August the congress of Prague, at which Austria, as armed mediator, laid down conditions of peace, was dissolved. Metternich himself gave orders for the lighting of the watch-fires which signalled to the armies in Silesia that Austria had declared war against Napoleon. The battle of Leipsic and the campaign of 1814 in France followed, Metternich steadily pursuing the policy of offering the most favourable terms possible to Napoleon, and retarding the advance of the allied armies upon the French capital. Metternich had nothing of that personal hatred towards the great conqueror which was dominant both in Prussia and in England ; on the contrary, though he saw with perfect clearness that, until Napoleon's resources were much diminished, no one could be safe in Europe, he held it possible to keep him in check without destroying him, and looked for the security of Austria in the establishment of a balance of power in which neither Russia nor France should preponderate, while Prussia should be

strictly confined within its own limits in northern Germany. The assistance of the Austrian army, which

Mer I -heN aie

was no doubt necessary to the allies, had, so far as related to Prussia, been dearly purchased. When, at the beginning of 1813, Prussia struck for the freedom of Germany, its leading statesmen and patriots had hoped that the result of the war of liberation would be the establishment of German unity, and that the minor German princes, who had been Napoleon's vassals since 1806, would be foreed to surrender part of their rights as sovereigns,~~and submit to a central authority. This dream, however, vanished ag soon as Austria entered the field as an ally. It was no part of Metternich's policy to allow anything so revolu~~ . tionary as German unity to be established, least of all under the influence of Prussian innovators. He made treaties with the king of Bavaria and Napoleon's other German vassals, guaranteeing them, in return for their support against France, separate independence and sove- reignty when Germany should be reconstructed. Accord- ingly, though the war resulted, through Napoleon's obstinate refusal of the terms successively offered to him, in the limitation of France to its earlier boundaries and ina large extension of Prussia's territory, the settlement of Germany outside Prussia proceeded upon the lines laid down by Metternich, and the hopes of unity raised in 1813 were disappointed. A German confederation was formed, in which the minor sovereigns retained supreme power within their own states, while the central authority, the federal diet, represented, not the German nation, but the host of governments under which the nation was divided. Metternich even advised the emperor Franais of Austria to decline the old title of German emperor, dis- liking any open embodiment of the idea of German unity, and preferring to maintain the ascendency of Austria by a gentle pressure at the minor courts rather than by the avowed exercise of imperial rights. In this unprogressive German policy Metternich was completely successful. His great opponent, Stein, the champion of German unity and of constitutional systems, abandoned his work m despair, and refused the useless post of president of the diet, which Metternich, with a kind of gentle irony, offered to him.

The second branch of Metternich's policy in 1813-14 was that which related to Italy. Following the old maxims of Austrian statesmanship, Metternich aimed not only at securing a large territory beyond the Alps but at making the influence of Austria predominant throughout the Italian peninsula. The promises of national independence which had been made to the Italians when they were called upon to rise against Napoleon were disregarded. In the secret clauses of the first treaty of Paris the annexation of both Lombardy and Venetia was guaranteed to Austria, and the rest of Italy was divided into small states as of old. Napoleon's return from Elba led to the downfall of Murat, who had been allowed to retain the kingdom of Naples, and to the reunion of this country with Sicily, under the Bourbon Ferdinand. After the second overthrow of Napoleon, Metternich endeavoured to make every Italian sovereign enter into a league under Austria's presidency. Ferdinand of Naples accepted the position of vassal, but the pope and the king of Sardinia successfully maintained their inde- pendence. With the construction of the German federation, and the partial construction of an Italian federation, both under

ma Pepa ih NIC H

of Prussian writers, because he did not work for German unity, is to ignore the existence of such a thing as state- policy. Judged by the ordinary standards of practical statesmanship, not by the philosophy of history, Metternich's action in 1813 and 1814 was that of a very superior man; and the qualities of calmness and dexterity which he displayed would have given an infinitely greater effectiveness to the life of his great rival Stein, who in patriotic and moral enthusiasm was so far above him.

The second part of Metternich's career, which extends from 1815 to 1848, is that of a leader of European conser- vatism. It is difficult to describe his attitude towards almost all the great questions which were now arising as any but one of absolute blindness and infatuation. He acknowledged that exceptional circumstances in the past had made it possible for England to exist under a constitution; he knew that France would not surrender the Charta given to it by King Louis XVIII.; but in all other great states he maintained that there were no alter- natives but absolute monarchical government and moral anarchy. His denunciations of liberals and reformers

everywhere and at all times are perfectly childish ; and in many instances his hatred of change led him into errors of judgment not surpassed in the annals of political folly. When Napoleon fell, there was a prospect of the introduction of constitutional government throughout a great part of Europe. King Frederick William, stimulat- ing the efforts of the Prussian people against France by the hopes of liberty, had definitely promised them a constitu- tion and a general assembly. The czar had determined to introduce parliamentary life into the kingdom of Poland, and even hoped to extend it, after some interval, to Russia. The Federal Act drawn up for Germany at the congress of Vienna declared that in every state within the German league a constitution should be established. Against this liberal movement of the age Metternich resolutely set his face. Though wide general causes were at work, the personal influence of the Austrian statesman had no small share in prolonging the existence of autocratic government, and in developing that antagonism between the peoples and their rulers which culminated in the revolutions of 1848. The nature of the Austrian state, composed of so many heterogeneous provinces and nationalities, no doubt made it natural for its representative to defend and exalt the principle of personal sovereignty, on which alone the unity of Austria was based ; the relation of Austria to Italy rendered the growth of the sentiment of nationality a real source of danger to the house of Hapsburg ; but Metternich's abhorrence of constitutional and popular ideas was more than the outcome of a calculating policy. He was not a man of much faith, but one belief he held with all the force of religious conviction, —namely, the belief that his own task and mission in the world was to uphold established authority. All efforts to alter the form or to broaden the basis of government he classed under the same head, as works of the spirit of revolution; and in one of his most earnest writings he places side by side, as instances of evil sought for its own sake, the action of the secret societies in Germany, the Carbonaria of Italy, and the attempts of the English to carry the Reform Bill. Working on prin- ciples like these, and without the shadow of a doubt in his own wisdom, Metternich naturally proved a great power at a time when the sovereigns who had inclined to constitu- tional ideas began to feel the difficulties in the way of putting them into practice. Metternich's advice, tendered with every grace of manner and with the most winning and persuasive art, was indeed not hard for rulers to accept, for he simply recommended them to give up nothing that they had got. It was at the

congress of Aix-la-Chapelle (1818) that the retrograde tendency, which was now suc-

PAW

j ceeding to the hopes of 1815, first gained expression. An agitation among the students at the German universities had caused some scandal in the previous year, and secret societics had just been discovered in Russia. Metternich plied the king of Prussia with arguments for withholding the national representation which he had promised to his people, and stimulated the misgivings which were arising in the mind of the czar, hitherto the champion of European liberalism. A few months later the murder of Alexander's German agent, Kotzebue, by a fanatical student gave Metternich an excellent pretext for organizing a crusade against German liberty. A conference of ministers was held at Carlsbad. The king of Prussia allowed his representative to follow Metternich's lead. The resistance of the constitutional minor states proved of no avail; and a series of resolutions was passed which made an end of the freedom of the press throughout Germany, and subjected the teaching and the discipline of the universities to officers of state. A commis- sion was established at Mainz to investigate the conspiracies which Metternich alleged to have been formed for the over-throw of all existing governments, and for the creation of 4 German republic, one and indivisible. In the following year new articles were added by Metternich's direction to the original Federal Act, the most important being one that forbade the creation in any German state of an assembly representing the community at large, and enforced the system of representation by separate estates or orders, each possessed of certain limited definite rights, and all alike subordinate to the supremacy of the crown. Metternich would gladly have made an end of the parliamentary con- stitutions which had already come into being in Bavaria and the southern states; but he was unable to attack them openly, and had to confine himself to the advocacy of strict monarchical principles through his representatives at these courts. With regard to Prussia, however, he was completely successful. The king of Prussia broke his promise of establishing a national representation, and satisfied his conscience by creating certain powerless pro- vincial diets, exactly as Metternich had recommended him. Throughout Germany at large a system of repression

was carried out against the advocates of constitutional right. The press was silenced ; societies were dissolved ; prosecu- tions became more and more common. While Metternich imagined himself to be stifling the spirit of discontent, he was in fact driving it into more secret and more violent courses, and convincing eager men that the regeneration of Germany must be sought not in the reform but in the overthrow of governments.

Meanwhile revolution broke out in Spain and Italy. Ferdinand of Spain, who had restored despotism, was com- pelled, in March 1820, to accept the constitution of 1812 which he had subverted. The same constitution was accepted a few months later by Ferdinand of Naples. Spain was outside Metternich's range, but his hand fell heavily upon Naples. A congress of the great powers was held at Troppau in October 1820. Metternich, who was president, as he had been at Vienna, and continued to be in later congresses, completely won over the czar to his own views. Resolutions in favour of an intervention, if neces- sary by force of arms, against the Neapolitan liberal Govern- ment were adopted by Austria, Russia, and Prussia, though England and France held aloof. The congress was then adjourned to Laibach in Carniola, whither Ferdinand of Naples was summoned, in order that he might mediate between the powers and his people, and induce the latter to give up a constitution which offended the three northern courts. Ferdinand's journey and mediation were an impos- ture as regarded the Neapolitans; he pretended that he went to negotiate on behalf of his people, when in fact his

intention was exactly the same as Metternich's, namely, to

have absolute monarchy restored. The proceedings of the congress at Laibach were a farce. A letter was concocted by Metternich for King Ferdinand to send to his subjects, informing them that the powers would not permit the constitution to exist, and that, in default of their submission, the allied courts would employ force. The British Government, while protesting against the joint action of the three powers as an assumption of international sovereignty, was perfectly willing that Austria, as a state endangered by the Neapolitan revolution, should act on its own account. Metternich, however, continued to treat the Neapolitan question as the affair of Europe, and

maintained his concert with Russia and Prussia. Early in 1821 an Austrian force, acting in the name of the allies, entered central Italy. The armies opposed to it col- lapsed, and the Austrians entered Naples on March 24. But in the meantime a revolution broke out in Pied- mont, which threatened to cut off the Austrians from their supports, and to raise all Italy against them. For a moment the bold action of Metternich seemed to have resulted in immense danger both to his own conservative policy and to the peace of Europe ; for it was believed that the Piedmontese revolution would be answered, not only by a general Italian movement, but by a rising against the Bourbons in France. The cloud, however, passed away. Order was quickly restored in Piedmont ; Lombardy was safcly held by Austrian garrisons; and the conclusion of the Italian difficulties, in which Metternich had played a very difficult part with great resolution and dexterity, was his complete and brilliant personal triumph. No statesman in Europe at this moment held a position that could com- pare with his own.

At the congress of Verona, held in 1822, the affairs of Spain were considered by the powers. In the end, the Spanish constitution was overthrown by a French invading army ; but, thongh the arm employed was that of France, the principle of absolutism which animated the crusade was that which Metternich had made his own. A severe check, however, now met him in another quarter. Greece had risen against Turkish rule in 1821. The movement was essentially a national and a religious one, but Metternich treated it as a Jacobinical revolt against lawful authority, — confusing, or affecting to confuse, the struggle for national independence with the shallow and abortive efforts of politi- cal liberalism in Italy and Spain. towards the Greeks was for some time one of unqualified hostility. If, under the pressure of the Tilsit alliance, he had once been willing that Austria should join Russia in dismembering Turkey, he had now reverted to the principle of maintaining Turkey at all costs against a Russian advance southwards; and he attributed the Greek move- ment to the efforts of Russian agitators unauthorized by the czar. His desire was that the sultan should deprive Russia of all possible cause for complaint as regarded its own separate interests, and so gain freedom to deal sum- marily with the Greeks. Metternich’s hopes failed, partly through the obstinacy of the Turks, partly through the wavering conduct of Alexander, and partly through the death of Castlereagh and the accession of Canning to power. It

was in great part owing to Canning's moral support that Greece ultimately became an independent state; and the extraordinary violence of Metternich's language whenever he mentions this English statesman marks only too well the opposite character of his aims. No politician has left a more damning record against himself than Metternich in his bigoted abuse of Canning. The Greek question, however, was only the first on which the judgment of events was now beginning to declare itself against Metternich and all his principles. The French revolution of 1830 shattered the moral fabric which he

revolution of that year ended his political career.

Metternich's attitude'

had so proudly inaugurated, and in great part himself raised, in 1815. England and France now made any revival of the kind of presidency that he had once held in Europe impossible. ing troops into the papal territory when revolutionary movements broke out there in 1831 and 1832, though war with France seemed likely to result from this step. was as unsparing as he had been in 1819 in suppressing the agitation which after 1830 spread from France to Germany; and the union of the three eastern courts was once more exhibited in the meeting of the monarchs which took place at Miinchengriitz in 1833, and in a declaration delivered at Paris, insisting on their right of intervention against revolution in other countries. czar of Russia, Nicholas, who was now the real head of European conservatism ; and the stubborn character, the narrow, unimaginative mind,

The accord that grew up _ between

He was indeed bold and rapid in throw-

He

It was, however, the new

of this prince made it impossible for Mctternich to shape his purposes by that

delicate touch which had been so effective with his pre- decessor. without a rival. whom he had worked for

But in Austria itself Metternich continued In 1835 the emperor Francis, with nearly thirty years, died. Metternich, himself falling into the mental habits of old age, remained at the head of the state till 1848. The He resigned office with the dignity of demeanour which had never failed him ; his life was scarcely safe in Vienna, and the old man came for a while to England, which he had not visited since 1794. Living on till June 1859, he saw every great figure of his earlier life, and many that had ap- peared on the horizon since his own prime, pass away; and a few more months of life would have enabled him to see the end of that political order which it had been his life- work to uphold ; for the army of Napoleon III. was crossing the Sardinian frontier at the moment when he died, and before a second summer had gone Victor Emmanuel had been proclaimed king of Italy.

Metternich was a diplomatist rather than a statesman. His influence was that of an expert manager of individuals, not of a man of great ideas. All his greatest work was' done before fifty ; and at an age when most statesmen are in the maturity of their powers he had become tedious and pedantic. His private character was very lovable. He was an affectionate if not a faithful husband, a delightful friend, and a most tender father. The ex- cessive egotism which runs through his writings gives perhaps an impression of weakness which did not really belong to his nature. Drawn by a firmer pen, the scene in which he describes himself labouring in the German conferences of 1820, while his favourite daughter was dying in an adjoining room, would have been one of the most affecting things in political biography. The man who could so have worked and felt together must have possessed no ordinary strength of character, no common force of self-control.

The collection of Metternich's writings published by his family under the title of Denkwiirdigkeiten, along with French and English editions, contains letters and despatches of great value. The autobiography is not always trustworthy, and must be read with caution. Gentz's correspondence is of

first-rate importance for the years 1813-30. Original papers are also contained in various German works upon particular events or movements, as lM Oncken for the negotiations of 1813 ; Welcker, Aegidi, Nauwerck

for German affairs in 1819 and following years ; Prokesch von Osten for Eastern affairs. (C. A. ae

METZ, the capital of German Lorraine, and one of the strongest fortresses in Europe, is situated at the confluence of the Moselle and the Seille, 80 miles to the north-west of Strasburg, and 190 miles to the east of Paris. It is the seat of a military governor, the judicial and administra tive authorities of Lorraine, a Roman Catholic bishop,

ME

Protestant and Jewish consistories, and a chamber of com- merce. The general appearance of the town is quaint and irregular, but there are also many handsome modern streets. The Moselle flows through it in several arms, crossed by fourteen or fifteen bridges. In the south-west corner of the town is the esplanade, an extensive open space com- manding a fine view of the fertile “Pays Messin” around Metz. ‘The most interesting of the ten city gates is the Porte d’Allemagne or Deutsches Thor, a castellated structure erected in 1445, and still bearing traces of the siege of Charles V. Metz contains seven Roman Catholic churches,

FORT wanrennenc IP

English Miles Oo

%

T Z 203

two Protestant churches, and a synagogue. The cathedral, with huge pointed windows, slender columns, and numerous flying buttresses, was begun in the 13th century, and finished in 1546, and belongs to the decadence of the Gothic style. The Gothic churches of St Vincent and St Eucharius, and the handsome garrison-church, completed in 1881, also deserve mention.

Among secular buildings the most important are the large covered market, the town-hall, the palace of justice, the theatre, the governor's house, and the various buildings for military purposes. The public library contains 35,000 volumes, including an

Metz and Neighbourhood.

1. Palace of Justice. 2. Prefecture.

extensive collection of works relating to the history of Lorraine. In the same building is the museum, which contains a picture gallery, a numismatic cabinet, and a collection of specimens of natural history. Metz also possesses several learned societies and charitable institu- tions, a gymnasium, three seminaries, and a military academy. The cemetery of Chambitre contains the graves of 8400 French soldiers who died here in 1870.

The commerce and industry of Metz have not yet entirely recovered from the blow inflicted by the with- drawal of French capital in 1871. The principal articles of manufacture are leather, coarse cloth and canvas, gun-

3. Cathedral.

4. Town-Hall and Governor's House.

powder, arms, needles, billiard tables, hats, and artificial flowers. There are several large iron-works in the neigh- bourhood. The trade of Metz is chiefly carried on in leather, timber, wine, brandy, liqueurs, beer, preserved fruits, and hardwares. A large annual fair is held here. The civil population of Metz, which in 1869 amounted to 48,066, sank in 1872 to 33,134. Since then it has steadily increased, and in 1881 was 43,275, about half of whom were Germans. The garrison of Metz consists of 10,000 men, or including the surrounding forts nearly 16,000. The total of 58,813 includes 17,000 Pro-

| testants and 1600 Jews.

History.—Metz, the Gallic Divodurum, was the chief town of the Mediomatrici, and was also called by the Romans Mediomatrica, a name from which the present form has been derived by contraction. Cesar describes it as one of the oldest and most important towns in Gaul. The Romans, recognizing its strategieal importance, fortified it and supplied it with water by an imposing aqueduct, the remains of which still exist. Under the Roman emperors Metz was connected by military roads with Toul, Langres, Lyons, Stras- burg, Verdun, Rheims, and Treves. Christianity was introduced in the 3d century of our era. In the middle of the 5th century the town was phindered by the Huns under Attila ; subsequently it eame into the possession of the Franks ; and in 512 it was made the capital of Austrasia. On the partition of the Carolingian realms in 843 Metz fell to the share of the western kingdom as the eapital of Lorraine. Its bishops, whose creation reaches back to the 4th century, now began to be very powerful. Metz acquired the privileges of a free imperial town in the 12th century, and attained great commercial prosperity. In 1552 it fell into the hands of the French through treachery, and was heroically and successfully defended against Charles V. by the young duke of Guise. It now sank to the level of a French provincial town, and its population dwindled from 60,000 to 22,000 (1698). At the peace of Westphalia Metz, with Toul and Verdun, was formally ceded to France, in whose possession it remained for upwards of two centuries. In August 1870 the successes of the German troops compelled Marshal Bazaine and the French army of the Rhine to seck shelter behind the fortifications of Metz, which was forth- with subjected by the Germans to a rigorous blockade. After an investment of ten weeks, during which not a single shot was fired at the town, Bazaine capitulated, surrendering to the victors an army of nearly 180,000 men, several hundred cannon, and an iminense quantity of military stores of all kinds. By the peace of Frankfort in 1871 Metz was again united to the German empire. Marshal Fabert and Generals Custine and Kellermann were natives of Metz.

As a fortress Metz has always been of the highest importance, and it now ranks with Strasburg as one of the two great bulwarks of the west frontier of Germany. The original town-walls were replaced by ramparts in 1550, and the citadel was built in 1566. In 1674 the works were reconstructed by the celebrated military engineer Vauban. Under Napoleon I11. the fortress was strength- ened to meet the demands of modern warfare, and since 1871 the

Germans have spared neither time nor money in completing and supplementing his plans. The present fortifications of Metz con- sist of two lines—an inner circle of bastions and ramparts enclosing the city itself, and an outer circle of large detached forts on the surrounding hills. The inner line is strengthened by two citadels, one of which is advanced as a téte-de-pont on the lett bank of the Moselle. The outer circle consists of nine or ten large forts, con- nected with each other by smaller fortifications and commanding all the approaches to the city. They form a large fortified camp with a circumference of 15 miles, within which are twelve villages and numerous country-houses and farms. The most distant of the outlying forts is about 34 miles from the cathedral. Their names and positions may be seen on the annexed plan. Previous

to 1870 the fortress of Metz had never succumbed to an enemy.

Sources of Information.—Westphal, Geschichte der Stadt Metz, 1875-78 ,; Georg Lang, Metz und seine Umgebungen, 1888, and Statistisch-topographisches Hand- buch fiir Lothringen. The official German account of the blockade, of Metz'in 1870 will be found in the history of the Franco-German war issued by the general staff at Berlin, 1872 sg. A succinct account is given by Gcorg Lang, Die Kriegs- operattonen um Metz im Jahr 1870, 2d ed., Mctz, 1880.

MEULEN, Antony FRANCIS VAN DER (1634-1690), was called to Paris about 1666 by Colbert, at the instance of Le Brun, to fill the post of battle painter to Louis XIV. Born in 1634 at Brussels, he had at an early age eclipsed his master Peter Snayers, and the works executed by him for the king of France during the campaigns of Flanders (1667) so delighted Louis that from that date Van der Meulen was ordered to accompany him in all his expedi- tions. In 1673 he was received into the French Academy, and attained the grade of councillor in 1681. Lodged in the Gobelins, richly pensioned, and loaded with honours, he died at Paris in 1690. Detached works from his hand are to be seen in various collections, but he is best repre- sented by the series of twenty-three paintings, mostly executed for Louis XIV., now in the Louvre. They show that he always retained his Flemish predilections in point of colour, although in other respects his style was modified by that of the French school.

See Mém. inédit. Acad. de Peintwre, 1854 ; Descamps, Vies des Peintres Flamands.

MEURTHE-ET-MOSELLE, a department in the north- east of France, formed in 1871 out of those parts of the

old departments of Meurthe and Moselle which continued French, and deriving its name from the two principal rivers: which water it. Prior to 1790 it belonged to ancient Lorraine, or to one or other of the bishoprics of Toul, Metz, and Verdun. It lies between 5° 25’ and 7° 5’ E. tong, and 48° 25’ and 49° 5’ N. lat., and is bounded on the E. by Alsace-Lorraine, on the N. by Belgium and the grand- duchy of Luxemburg, on the W. by the department of Meuse, and on the S. by that of Vosges. The superficial area is 2020 square miles. Geologically Meurtheet Moselle has five well-marked regions following each other in regular succession from east to north-west. On the frontier of Alsace are the Vosges mountains, of Trias sandstone (grés Vosgiens), with a maximum elevation of 3000 feet. A narrow band of variegated sandstone divides the Vosges from the second region, formed of shelly limestone, which extends as far as the Meurthe on the north and the Moselle on the west. The third region is formed by the variegated marls which cover the rich saline strata of the neighbour- hood of Nancy. The Jura limestones of the Lias and Oolite, to the north-west and west of the department, form the last two regions. Here there is a maximum elevation of 1400 feet, and the plateau of Briey stretches out towards that of the Ardennes. Between the Vosges and the Ardennes the valley of the Moselle runs from south to north, forming the main artery of the department; the lowest level (570 feet) occurs where the river leaves it.

Only a small part of the drainage of Meurthe-et-Moselle

flows into the Meuse. The Moselle runs north-west from its entrance into the department as far as Toul ; north-east

from Toul to Frouard, where it receives its principal affluent, the Meurthe, and becomes navigable ; north from

Frouard to Pagny-sur-Moselle, passing to Pont & Mousson, The principal affluents of the Moselle are the Madon and the Orne on the left, and on the right, besides the Meurthe, the Seille, which in one part of its course forms the boundary of Alsace-Lorraine. The Meurthe, which flows to the north-west from Raon l'Etape to Frouard, passes on to Baccarat, Lunéville, St Nicholas, and Nancy, and is swelled on the right by the Vezouse and the Sanon, and on the left by the Mortagne. The principal tributary of the Meuse within the department is the Chiers, which takes its course by Longwy and Longuyon. Climatologically Meurthe-et-Moselle belongs to the Vosgian region. Its mean annual temperature is 52° Fahr., being 2° Fahr lower than that of Paris (which has the same latitude). The thermometer in severe winters falls to 13° Fahr., while in summer it reaches 100° Fahr. This is to be accounted for by the general elevation of the department, the proximity of the mountains, the arrangement of the valleys (which lie open towards the north), and the distance from the sea.

More than half of the department consists of culturable land, one- fourth of forests, and one-tenth of meadow land. In 1878 there were 54,346 horses, more than 100,000 sheep, 85,000 pigs, 74,000 cattle, 15,000 goats, 21,000 dogs, and 17,000 hives of bees. The crops for the same year amounted to 454,192 quarters of wheat, 37,500 quarters of barley, 35,078 quarters of rye, 570, 884 quarters of oats, 9,079,125 bushels of potatoes, and 76,868 tons of beet-root. Hops, tobacco, colza, hemp, and flax also occupy a considerable area. The annual yield of the vineyards (56 square miles in extent) exceeds £900,000; the wines of Toul are the best. The most common fruit trees are the pear, the apple, the walnut, the elierry, and the plum. Of forest trees the oak and the wych-elm are most frequent in the west of the department, the beech and the fir in the Vosges. The Freneh school of forestry has its seat at Nancy. The metallurgic industry is highly developed, and has made vely rapid progress within the last few years. Even in 1872 there was a consumption of 350,000 tons of coal, four-fifths of which came from Saarbruck, and the remaining fifth from Belgium. 1” 1877 the iron ore obtained amounted to 1,000,000 tons, of which two-thirds came from the beds near Nancy, the remainder from the neighbourhood of Longwy. In 1880 the department produced a third of the pig-iron made in France (inore than 500,000 tons).

MEU-MEU

In 1877 the yield was 43,000 tons. Besides blast-furnaces, forges, and rolling-mills, there are manufactories of files and boring tools, agricultural implements, and furniture. In the production of salt the department holds the first rank in France; the salt-bearing traets cover more than 150 square miles, the beds having a mean thicknessof 65 feet. The principal salt-working eentres (St Nicolas, Varangeville, and Rosiéres-aux-Salines) lie between Nancy and Lunéville ; the annual value of rock-salt and refined salt produced exceeds £500,000; subsidiary to this production is an important manufacture of soda salts. The other chemical products are prussiate of potash, bone-black, wax-candles, soap, and matches. Stone quarrying and the manufacture of plaster and linte are also important branches of industry. The fiint-glass manufactory of Baccarat, which employs nearly 1500 workmen, is well known; that of plate-glass at Cirey (with 1000 workmen) produces plates of great size. The faience

manufactories of Lunéville, Toul, and Longwy are important. Mention may also be made of the manufacture of window-glass, watch-glasses, and drinking-glasses, The tobaeco manufacture at Nancy employs 1000 workmen; tan- ning, glove-making, hat-making in felt and straw, wool-spinning, and the manufacture of army clothing are also carried on. Naney is renowned for its embroidery, which is, however, diminishing in importance. It also possesses factories for cotton spinning and cotton stuffs, and for hosiery. The starch manufactories and the breweries, especially that of Tantonville, the largest in France, are highly productive. Nancy also carries on distilleries, grain- mills, paper-mills, manufactories of pasteboard objects, and a large printing establishment. The commerce of the department is effee- tively served by 300 miles of railway (the principal line being that from Paris to Strasburg through Nancy), by a number of good roads, and by several navigable rivers and canals. The main waterway is formed by the canal between the Marne and the Rhine, which runs by Toul and Nancy, and traverses the department from west toeast. This canal communicates with the Moselle, which is navig- able from Frouard downwards, and with the new eastern canal, which reascends the Moselle as far as Epinal, and which is intended to unite the Meuse and the Moselle with the Saéne and the Rhone. The population of Meurthe-et-Moselle in 1881 was 419,317 in- habitants. It constitutes the diocese of Nancy, has its eourt of appeal at Nancy, and forms a part of the district of the 6th army corps (Chalons-sur-Marne). There are 4 arrondissements (Nancy, Bricy, Lunéville, and Toul), 29 cantons, and 597 communes. The eapital is Nancy, and the other principal towns are Pont & Mousson, formerly the seat of a university ; Longwy (5064), a fortified place ; and Baccarat (6013), celebrated for its glass-works.

MEUSE, Maezsz, or Maas, a river of France, Belgium, and Holland, discharging into the North Sea or German Ocean, has a course (variously measured) of some 500 or 00 miles, about 300 miles lying within France. Rising in the department of Haute-Marne (1342 feet), at a point where the plateau of Langres borders on the Monts Faucilles, it follows a winding course, first from south to north, then to north-west, and afterwards to north, across the depart- ments of Vosges, Meuse, and Ardennes, passing by Neufchateau, Vaucouleurs, Commercy, St Mihiel, Verdun, Sedan, Méziéres, and Givet. Naturally navigable below Verdun, it has been made so from

Troussey, where it meets the canal which unites the Marne to the Rhine, and from this point to Liége it admits vessels of from 6 to 7 feet draught. After traversing a wide valley covered by green meadows, the Meuse, below Méziéres, flows through narrow gorges confined between rocky walls 200 or 300 feet high, formed by the plateau of the Ardennes. The hills of the Argonne, by which it is hemmed in on its upper course, prevent its receiving any important affluent before the Chiers and the Semoy, which both fall into it on the right in the Ardennes. At the point where it leaves France its ordinary volume is about 1000 cubic feet. In Belgium it runs picturesquely between the districts of Famenne and Condroz on the right, and those of Les Fagnes and Hesbaye on the left. Above Dinant it receives the Lesse, whose valley is celebrated for its wonderful grottoes, and at the foot of the citadel of Namur it is joined on the left by its principal affiuent, the Sambre, whose north-easterly direction it takes. It then takes its course through the busy valley in which Huy, Seraing, and Liége are situated, receiving the Ourthe on its right. Resuming a northerly direction, then taking one to the north-west, and finally one to the

west, the Meuse passes in front of the Dutch citadel of Maestricht to Roermonde, so called from its confluence there with the Roer, and to Venlo, where the canal between the Meuse and the Scheldt begins. Flowing thence through an absolutely unbroken plain, it finally joins the Rhine, to which it gives its own name, although the volume of its waters is twenty times less than that of the German river. It is at Gorcum that the Waal, the first separate arm of the Rhine, brings to the Meuse two-thirds of the waters of that river. The Meuse soon after divides into two

-branches. While the Merwede flows due west, the southern

arm falls into the Biesbosch, an estuary of the sea, formed four hundred and fifty years ago by an irruption of the sea over a country then cultivated and thickly peopled, and now the subject of attempts at reclamation. On reaching Dordrecht, where the river navigation and sea navigation meet, and where the rafts which come down from the Black Forest are broken up, the Meuse again divides into two arms. The Old Meuse flows due west, while the northern arm joins the Lek, a second branch of the Rhine, and

continues its course to Rotterdam. This is the most important branch of the estuary of the Meuse, and efforts are being made to regulate and deepen its channel by con- structing one of those grand canals in which the Dutch are so skilful. Schiedam and Vlardingen, both on the right, are the last places of importance on the banks of the river.

MEUSE, a department in the north-east of France, formed out of a part of Lorraine and portions of the Three Bishoprics, the Clermontais, and Champagne, derives its name from the river by which it is traversed from south to north. It lies between 4° 52’ and 5° 50’ E. long., and between 48° 25’ and 49° 38’ N. lat., and is bounded on the N. by Belgium and the department of Ardennes, on the E. by that of Meurthe-et-Moselle, on the S. by those of Vosges and Haute-Marne, and on the W. by those of Marne and Ardennes. Of its superficial area (2405 square miles), about one-half belongs to the basin of the Meuse, which is enclosed to the east and west by the eastern and western Argonnes. On the north-east it is watered by the Orne, a tributary of the Moselle, and the Chiers, which runs by Montmédy, and joins the Meuse a little beyond the northern limit of the department. The other half sends its waters to the Seine through the Aire, a tributary of the Aisne, both of which take their rise here, and by the Ornain, an affluent of the Saux, these two last being tributary to the Marne. The Meuse receives no important river in its course through this department. The highest elevation (1388 feet) occurs to the south-west, on the line of the ridge which separates the basin of the Meuse from that of the Seine. The heights gradually sink from south to north, but seldom fall below 1000 feet. The hills of the western Argonne similarly sink rapidly down to the valley of the Saux, where the lowest level of the department (377 feet) is reached. The climate of Meuse is transitional between the region of the Seine and that of the Vosges ; its winters are less severe than those of the latter, but it is not so temperate as the former. The mean annual temperature is 52° Fahr. As at Paris, the maximum cold is 9° Fahr.; the greatest heat rarely exceeds 95° Fahr.

More than half the surface of the department consists of cultur- able lands, one-fourth of forest, one-tenth of meadow land. The proportion of horses is larger than in any other French depart- ment, exeept La Manche. There are 53,800 horses, 90,000 -cattle, 145,000 sheep, 125,000 pigs, and nearly

30,000 bechives. Cereals, potatoes, and beet-root are the chief crops (in 1877 465,966 quarters of wheat, 104,660 quarters of barley, 585,355 quarters of oats, 7,677,374 bushels of potatoes, besides pulse, hemp, and colza). The vineyards produced more than 6,600,000 gallons of wine of good quality. The forests, whieh are principally of oak, are rieh in game, as are the rivers in fish. The mineral wealth of the depart-

ment includes iron ore, good freestone, and fossil phosphates of lime. There are blast-furnaces, iron, copper, and bell foundries, wire- works, and manufactories of files, hardware, and edge tools. The cotton-spinning factorics employ 15,000 spindles and 32,000 frames ; the woollen manufacture employs 5000 spindles, and some hundreds of persons are employed in the spinning and weaving of hemp, flax, and jute. The glass-works (particularly the manufactory of painted window-glass, transferred after the war of 1870 from Metz to Bar- le-Duc), paper-mills, saw-mills, and flour-mills, as well as the manufactures of lime, tiles, and fire-bricks, are worthy of mention. Hosiery and embroidery also give occupation to a great number of workshops, and the department is celebrated for its confectionery. Meuse contains more than 300 miles of railway,—the principal lines being that from Paris to Strasburg through Bar-le-Duc and Com-

MEXICO

I. ANCIENT MEXICO.

HE name Mexico is connected with the name of the group of American tribes calling themselves Mexica

(sing. Memicatl), or Azteca. The word is related to or derived from the name of the Mexican national war-god Mexitl, better known as Huitzilopochtli. The Aztecs from the 12th century appear to have migrated from place to place over the mountain-walled plateau of Anahuac, the country “ by the water,” so called from its salt lagoons, and which is now known as the valley of Mexico. About 1325 they founded on the lake of Tezcuco the permanent settle- ment of Mexico Tenochtitlan, which is still represented by the capital city Mexico. The name Mexico was given by the Spanish conquerors to the group of countries over which the Aztec power more or less prevailed at the time of the European invasion. Clavigero (Storia Antica del Messico, vol. i.) gives a map of the so-called “Mexican empire,” which may be roughly described as reaching from the present Zacatecas to beyond Guatemala; it is notice- able that both these names are of Mexican origin, derived respectively from words for “straw” and “wood.” Eventu- ally Mexico and New Mexico came to designate the still

vaster region of Spanish North America, which (till cut down by changes which have limited the modern republic of Mexico) reached as far as the Isthmus of Panama on the south and took in California and Texas on the north. Mexico in this wide sense is of high interest to the anthropologist, from the several native American civiliza- tions which appear within its limits, and which con-

veniently if loosely group themselves round two centres,

the Mexican proper and the Central American.

When early in the 16th century the Spaniards found their way from the West India Islands to this part of the mainland of America, they came in view of nations cultured high above the level they had hitherto met with in the New World. Here were not rude and simple tribes like the islanders of the Antilles, but nations with organized armies, official administrators, courts of justice, high agriculture and mechanical arts, and, what struck the white men especially, stone buildings whose architecture and sculpture were often of dimensions and elaborateness to astonish the builders and sculptors of Europe. How a population of millions could inhabit a world whose very existence had been till then unknown to geographers and historians, and how its nations could have reached so high a grade of barbaric industry and grandeur, was a problem which naturally excited the liveliest curiosity of scholars, and gave rise to a whole literature. Hernandez and Acosta shared the opinion of their time that the great fossil bones found in Mexico were remains of giants, and it was argued that, as before the deluge there were giants on the earth, there- fore Mexico was peopled from the Old World in ante- diluvian times. On the other hand the multitude of native American languages suggested that the migration to America took place after the building of the tower of

mercy, that from Paris to Mctz through Verdun, and the branch line to the Meuse. The chief waterways are the canal connecting the Marne with the Rhine, and the canal of the Meuse; the two together have a length of 146 miles. The population of the depart- ment in 1881 was 289,861,—a small number in proportion to its extent, and with a tendency to decrease.

LEcclesiastically it forms the diocese of Verdun ; it has its court of appeal at Nancy, and constitutes part of the district of the army corps of Chalons- sur-Marne. There are 4 arrondissements, —Bar-le-Duc, Commerey, Montmédy, and Verdun,—28 cantons, and 586 communes. Bar- le-Duc (population in 1881, 17,485) is the capital; Commercy has 5260 inhabitants and Montmédy 3000; St Mihiel (5915), on the Meuse, has good churches and some remarkable rocks, and is the seat of the departmental assize court.

| Babel, and Siguenza arrived at the curiously definite result that the Mexicans were descended from Naphtuhim, son of Mizraim and grandson of Noah, who left Egypt for Mexico shortly after the confusion of tongues. Although such speculations have fallen out of date, it is to be remembered in their favour that they were stepping-stones to more valid argument ; especially they induced the collection of native traditions and invaluable records of races, languages, and customs, which otherwise would have been lost for ever. Even in the present century Lord Kingsborough was led to spend a fortune in printing a magnificent compilation of Mexican picture-writings and documents in his Antiquities of Mexico by his zeal to prove the theory advocated by | Garcia a century earlier, that the Mexicans were the lost tribes of Israel.

Real information as to the nations of Mexico before Spanish times is very imperfect, but not altogether want- ing. Itis derived partly from inspection of the natives themselves, their. languages and customs, which may be now briefly considered, before going on to the recollections _ handed down in the native picture-writings and oral tradi- tions. The remarks made by the accurate and experienced observer Alexander von Humboldt, who had seen more American tribes than almost any traveller, are still entitled to the greatest weight. He considered the native Americans of both continents to be substantially similar in race-characters. Such a generalization will become sounder if, as is now generally done by anthropolo- gists, the Eskimo with their pyramidal skulls, dull complexion, and flat noses are removed into a division by themselves. Apart from these polar nomads, the American indigenes group roughly into a single race or division of mankind, of course with local variations. If our attention is turned to the natives of Mexico especi- ally, the unity of type will be found particularly close. The native population of the plateau of Mexico, mainly Aztecs, may

still be seen by thousands without any trace of mixture of European blood ; and the following description may give a fair idea of their appearance. Their stature 1s somewhat low, estimated about 5 feet 3 inches, but they are of muscular and sturdy build. Measurements of their skulls show them mesocephalic (index about 78), or inter- mediate between the dolichocephalic and brachycephalic (narrow and wide skulled) types of mankind. The face 1s oval, with low forehead, high cheek-bones, long eyes sloping outward towards the temples, fleshy lips, nose wide and in some cases flattish but in others aquiline, coarsely moulded features, with a somewhat stolid and gloomy expression. Thickness of skin, masking the muscles, has been thought the cause of a peculiar heaviness in the out- lines of body and face ; the complexion varies from yellow- brown to chocolate (about 40 to 43 in the anthropological

1 References may be found in Bancroft, Native Races of the Pacific States, vol. i. pp. 24, 573, 618, 646.

scale); eyes black; straight coarse glossy black hair ; beard and moustache scanty. Among variations from this type may be mentioned higher stature in some districts, and lighter complexion in Tehuantepec and elsewhere. If now the native Americans be compared with the races of the regions across the oceans to their east and west, it will be seen that their unlikeness is extreme to the races east- ward of them, whether white Europeans or black Africans. On the other hand they are considerably like the Mongoloid peoples of North and East Asia (less so to the Polynesians) ; so that the tendency among anthropologists is now generally to admit a common origin, however remote, between the tribes of Tartary and of America. This original connexion, if it may be accepted, would seem to belong to a long-past period, to judge from the failure of all attempts to discover an affinity between the languages of America and Asia. At whatever date the Americans began to people America, they must have had time to import or develop the numerous families of languages actually found there, in none of which has community of origin been satisfactorily proved with any other language-group, at home or abroad. In Mexico itself the languages of the Nahua nations, of which the Aztec is the best-known dialect, show no

connexion of origin with the language of the Otomi tribes, nor either of these with the languages of the regions of the ruined cities of Central America, the Quiché of Guatemala and the Maya of Yucatan. Indeed, within the Mexican limits, there are various other languages which, so far as philological research can at present decide, are independent of one another. The remarkable phenomenon of nations so similar in bodily make but so distinct in language can hardly be met except by supposing a long period to have elapsed since the country was first inhabited by the ancestors of peoples whose language has since passed into so different forms. The original peopling of America may well date from the time when there was continuous land between it and Asia.

It would not follow, however, that between these remote ages and the time of the discovery of the New World by Columbus no fresh immigrants can have reached America.

We may put out of the question the Scandinavian sea- |

rovers who sailed to Greenland about the 10th century, and appear afterwards to have coasted New England (see America, vol. i. p. 706), but do not seem to have found their way far enough southward for their visit to have any effect on Mexico. Butat all times communication has been open from East Asia and even the South Sea islands to the west coast of America. The importance of this is evident when we consider that Japanese junks now drift over by the ocean current to California at the rate of about one a year, often with some of the crew still alive (see C. W. Brooks in Bancroft, vol. v. p. 51; Overland Monthly, San Francisco, 1872, p. 353), Further north, the Aleutian islands offer a line of easy sea passage, while in north-east Asia, near Behring's Strait, live Chukchi tribes who carry on inter-course with the American side; the presence of Eskimo in this partof Asia (see Nordenskidld, Voy. of Vega,vol. ii. pp. 13, 81) is so plainly due to local migration that it is neglected in comparing the languages of the two continents. Asiatics such as Japanese or Kurile Islanders, if they found their way in small numbers to America and merged into native tribes, might hardly leave descendants distinguishable from the rest of the population even in the first genera- tion, nor introduce their own language. Such assertions as that the Guatusos of Costa Rica are a tribe with fair skin and

flaxen hair, and that Japanese words may be detected among the Indians of British Columbia, are examples of evidence which may be worth further sifting; but in an account like the present no proofs can be admitted unless far better authenticated than these.

| gestive of importation from Asia.

interest to the question of Asiatic influence in America, is that, though neither the evidence of features nor of language has substantiated it, there are details of Mexican civilization which are most easily accounted for on the supposition that they were borrowed from Asia. They do not seem ancient enough to have to do with a remote Asiatic origin of the nations of America, but rather to be results of comparatively modern intercourse between Asia and America, probably since the Christian era. Humboldt (Vues des Cordilléres, pl. xxiii.) compared the Mexican calendar with that in use in eastern Asia. The Mongols, Tibetans, Chinese, and other neighbouring nations have a cycle or series of twelve animals, viz., rat, bull, tiger, hare, dragon, serpent, horse, goat, ape, cock, dog, pig, which may possibly be an imita- tion of the ordinary Babylonian-Greek zodiac familiar to ourselves. The Mongolian peoples not only count their lunar months by these signs, but they reckon the successive days by them, rat-day, bull-day, tiger-day, &c., and also, by combining the twelve signs in rotation with the ele- ments, they obtain a means of marking each year in the sixty-year cycle, as the wood-rat year, the fire-tiger year, &c. This method is highly artificial, consisting, not in mere numbering, but in combining series of different terms so that the same combination does not recur till the end of the period. Thus the reappearance of its principle in the Mexican and Central-American calendar (see p, 212) is sug- Humboldt also discussed the Mexican doctrine, represented in the native pictures, of four ages of the world belonging to water, earth, air, and fire, and ending respectively by deluge, earthquake, tempest, and conflagration. The resemblance of this to some versions of the Hindu doctrine of the four ages or yuga is of so remarkable a closeness as hardly to be accounted for except on the hypothesis that the Mexican theology con- tains ideas learnt from Asiatics. Among Asiatic points of resemblance to which attention has since been

called is the Mexican belief in the nine stages of heaven and hell, an idea which nothing in nature would suggest directly to a barbaric people, but which corresponds to the idea of successive heavens and hells among Brahmans and Buddhists, who apparently learnt it (in common with our own ancestors) from the Babylonian-Greek astronomical theory of successive stages or concentric planetary spheres belonging to the planets, &c. The Spanish chronicles also give accounts of a Mexican game called patolli, played at the time of the conquest with coloured stones moved on the squares of a cross-shaped figure, according to the throws of beans marked on one side; the descriptions of this rather complicated game correspond closely with the Hindu backgammon called pachist (see Tylor in Jour. Anthrop. Inst., vol. viii. p. 116).

The native history of Mexico and Central America is entitled to more respect than the mere recollections of savage tribes, inasmuch as here memory was aided by something like written record. The Mexican pictures so far approached writing proper as to set down legibly the names of persons and places and the dates of events, while the rude drawings which accompanied these at least helped the professional historians to remember the tradi- tions repeated orally from generation to generation. Thus actual documents of native Aztec history, or copies of

1 The appendix to Prescott's Conquest af Mexico contains an interesting summary of analogies between the civilization of Mexico and that of the Old World, but some of the arguments are very incon- clusive. One which has been often cited turns on the likeness alleged by Naxera between the Chinese language and that of the Otomi nation of Mexico (whose name survives in that of their town Otompan, now Otumba). The examination of an Otomi grammar (such as Lléments de la Grammaire Othomi, Paris, 1863) will, however, convince the philological reader that the resemblance is hardly of an amount to

What gives a more solid | found a theory of a Chinese connexion upon.

them, are still open to the study of scholars, while after the conquest interpretations of these were drawn up in writing by Spanish-educated

Mexicans, and histories founded on them with the aid of traditional memory were written by Ixtlilxochitl and Tezozomoc; the most important of these picture-writings, interpretations, and histories may be found in Kingsborough's Antiquities of Mexico. In Central America the rows of complex hieroglyphs to be seen sculptured on the ruined temples probably served a similar purpose up to the time of the Spanish invasion. The documents purporting to be histories, written down by natives in later times, thus more or less represent real records of the past, but the task of separating the preponder- ant mythical part from what is real history is of the utmost difficulty. Among the most curious documents of early America is the Popol-Vuh or national book of the Quiché kingdom of Guatemala, a compilation of traditions written down by native scribes, found and translated by Father Ximenez about 1700, and published by Scherzer (Vienna, 1857) and Brasseur de Bourbourg (Paris, 1861). This book, composed in a picturesque barbaric style, begins with the time when there was only the heaven with its boundaries towards the four winds, but as yet there was no body, nothing that clung to anything else, nothing that balanced itself or rubbed together or made a sound ; there

was nought below but the calm sea alone in the silent | Alone were the Creator, the Former, the Ruler, |

darkness. the Feathered Serpent, they who give being and whose name is Gucumatz. Then follows the creation, when the creators said "Earth," and the earth was formed like a cloud or a fog, and the mountains appeared like lobsters from the water, cypress and pine covered the hills and valleys, and their forests were peopled with beasts and birds, but these could not speak the name of their creators, but could only chatter and croak. So man was made first of clay, but he was strengthless and senseless and melted in the water; then they made a race of wooden mannikins, but these were useless creatures without heart or mind, and they were destroyed by a great flood, and pitch poured down on them from heaven, those who were left of them being turned into the apes still to be seen in the woods. After this comes the creation of the four men and their wives who

are the ancestors of the Quichés, and the tradition records |

the migrations of the nation to Tulan, otherwise called the Seven Caves, and thence across the sea, whose waters were divided for their passage. It is worth while to mention these few early incidents of the national legend of Guatemala, because their Biblical incidents show how native tradition incorporated matter learnt from the white men. Moreover, this Central-American document, mythical as it is, has an historical importance from its bringing in names belonging also to the traditions of Mexico proper.

Thus Gucumatz, “ Feathered Serpent,” corresponds in name |

to the Mexican deity Quetzalcoatl ; Tulan and the Seven Caves are familiar words in the Aztec migration-traditions, and there is even mention of a chief of Toltecat, a name plainly referring to the famed Toltecs, of whom further account will be given in their place in Mexican history. Thus the legends of the Popol-Vuh confirm what is learnt from comparing the culture of Central America and Mexico proper, that, though the nations of these districts were not connected by language, the intercourse and mixture between them had been sufficient to implant in them much common civilization, and to justify the anthropologist in including both districts in one region. Historical value of the ordinary kind may be found in the latter part of the Popol-Vuh, which gives names of chiefs down to the time when they began to bear Spanish names, and the great city of Quiché became the deserted ruin of Santa Cruz. The Maya district of Yucatan has also some vestiges of native

MEXICO

‘ traditions in the manuscript translated by D. Pio Perez (in Stephens, Incidents of Travel in Yucatan) and in the remarkable 16th century Lelacion de las Cosas de Yucatan by Diego de Landa, published by Brasseur de Bourbourg (Paris, 1864). As in the Guatemala traditions, we hear of ancient migration from the Mexican legendary region of Tula; and here the leaders are four famous chiefs or ancestors who bear the Aztec name of the Tutul-Xiu, which interpreted means “Bird-Tree.” Unfortunately for the historical standing of these four ancestors, there are in the Aztec picture-writings representations of four trees each with a bird perched on it, and placed facing the four quarters, which make it probable that the four Tutul-Xiu of tradition, in spite of the circumstantial detail of their wars and migrations,

may be only mythic personifications of the four cardinal points (see Schultz-Sellack in Zeitsch. f. Ethn,, 1879, p. 209). Nevertheless, part of the later Maya records may be genuine,—for instance, when they relate the war about three centuries before the Spanish conquest, when the king of Chichen-Itza destroyed the great city of Mayapan. Though the names and dates of Central-American native kings have too little interest to general readers for traditions of them to be dwelt on here, they bring into view one im- portant historical point, that the wondrous ruined cities of this region are not to be thought monuments of a perished race in a forgotten past, but that at least some of them belong to history, having been inhabited up to the conquest, apparently by the very nations who built them.

Turning now to the native chronicles of the Mexican nations, these are found to be substantial dated records going back to the 12th or 13th century, with some vague but not worthless recollections of national events from times some centuries earlier. These last-mentioned traditions, in some measure borne out by linguistic evidence of names of places, tribes, and persons, point to the immigration of detachments or branches of a widespread race speaking a common language, which is represented to us by the Aztec, still a spoken language in Mexico. This language was called nahuatl, and one who spoke it as his native tongue was called nahuatlacatl, so that modern anthro- _ pologists are following native precedent when they use the term Nahwa for the whole series of peoples now under consideration.!_ Earliest of the Nahua nations, the Toltecs are traditionally related to have left their northern home of Huehuetlapallan in the 6th century ; and, though this remote date cannot be treated as belonging to genuine history, there is other evidence of the real existence of the nation. Their name ‘oltecatl signifies an inhabitant of Tollan, “land of reeds,” a place which, as has been already pointed out, appears elsewhere in the national traditions of this region, and has a definite geographical site in the _ present Tulan or Tula, north of the valley of Anahuac, where a Toltec kingdom of some extent seems to have had its centre. To this nation is ascribed not only the oldest but the highest culture of the Nahua nations; to them was due the introduction of maize and cotton into Mexico, the skilful workmanship in gold and silver, the art of build: ing on a scale of vastness still witnessed to by the mound of Cholula, said to be Toltec work ; the Mexican hieroglyphic writing and calendar are also declared to have been

of Toltec origin. With the Toltecs is associated the mysterious tradition of Quetzalcoatl, a name which presents itself in Mexican religion as that of a great deity, god of the aur, and in legend as that of a saintly ruler and civilizer. His brown and beardless worshippers describe him as of another race, a white man with noble features, long black hair and full beard, dressed in flowing robes. He came from Tullan

1 Tt should be noticed that this word is not etymologically con-

nected with the somewhat similar word Anahuac, of whieh the mean- ing is given at page 206,

or from Yucatan (for the stories differ widely), and dwelt twenty years among them, teaching men to follow his austere and virtuous life, to hate all violence and war, to sacrifice no men or beasts on the altars, but to give mild offerings of bread and flowers and perfumes, and to do penance by the votaries drawing blood with thorns from their own bodies. Legend tells stories of his teaching men picture-writing and the calendar, and.also the artistic work of the silversmith, for which Cholula was long famed ; but at last he departed, some say towards the unknown land of Tlapallan, but others to Coatzacualco on the Atlantic coast on the confines of Central America, where native tradition still keeps up the divine names of Gucumatz among the Quichés (see p. 208) and Cukulcan among the Mayas, these names having the same meaning as Quetzalcoatl in Aztec, viz., “Feathered Serpent.” Native tradition held that when Quetzalcoatl reached the Atlantic he sent back his companions to tell the Cholulans that in a future age his brethren, white men and bearded like himself, should land there from the sea where the sun rises, and come to rule

the country. That there is a basis of reality in the Toltec |

traditions is shown by the word toltecatl having become among the later Aztecs a substantive signifying an artist or skilled craftsman. It is further related by the Mexican historians that the Toltec nation all but perished in the 11th century by years of drought, famine, and pestilence, a few only of the survivors remaining in the land, while the rest migrated into Yucatan

and Guatemala, where, as has been already pointed out, their name is commemorated in local records. After the Tolfecs came the Chichimecs, whose name, derived from chichi, “dog,” is applied to many rude tribes; the Chichimecs here in question are said to have come from Amaquemecan under a king named Xolotl, names which being Aztec imply that the nation was Nahua; at any rate they appear afterwards as fusing with more cultured Nahua nations in the neighbourhood of Tezcuco. Lastly is recorded the Mexican immigration of the seven nations, Xochimilca, Chalca, Tepaneca, Acolhua, Tlahuica, Tlascalteca, Azteca. This classification of the Nahuatlac tribes has a meaning and value. It is true that Aztlan, the land whence the Aztecs traced their name and source, cannot be identified by geographers, while the story of the separation of the seven nations at the place called Chicomoztoc or Seven Caves looks like national legend rather than real history. But the later stages of the long Aztec migration seem historical, and the map of Mexico still shows the names of several settlements recorded in the curious migration-map published by Gemelli Careri (Giro del Mondo, Venice, 1728) and commented on by Humboldt; – among these local names are Tzompanco, “ place of skulls,” now Zumpango in the north of the Mexican valley, and Chapultepec, “grasshopper hill,” now a suburb of the city of Mexico itself, where the Aztecs are recorded to have celebrated in 1195 the festival of tying up the “ bundle of years” and beginning a new cycle. The- Aztecs moving from place to place in Anahuac found little welcome from the Nahua peoples already settled there, whose own history was indeed one of incessant jealousy and quarrel. One of the first clear events of the Aztec arrival is their being Made tributary by the Tépanecs, in whose service or alliance they began to manifest their warlike prowess in the fight near Tepeyacac, where now stands the famous shrine of Our Lady of Guadalupe. Thus they overcame in arms the Acolhuas, their superiors in civilization, who had made Tezcuco a centre of prosperity and improvement. By the 13th century the Aztecs by their ferocity had banded their neighbours together against them; some were driven to take refuge on the reedy lake shore at Acoculco, while others were taken as captives into Culhuacan. The king of this district was Coxcoxtli,

ry

whose name has gained an undeserved reputation even in Europe as ‘‘Coxcox, the Mexican Noah,” from a scene in the native picture-writing where his name appears together with the figure of a man floating in a dug-out tree, which has been mistaken even by Humboldt for a rcpresen- tation of the Mexican deluge-myth. Coxcoxtli used the help of the Aztecs against the Xochimilco people, but his own nation, horrified at their bloodthirsty sac- rifice of prisoners, drove them out to live for years in want and misery on the islands and swamps of the great salt lagoon, where they are said to have taken to making their chinampas or floating gardens of mud heaped on rafts of reeds and brush, which in later times were so remarkable a feature of Mexico. As one of the Aztec chiefs at the time of the founding of their city was called Tenoch, z.e., ‘“Stone-cactus,” it is likely that from him was derived the name Tenochtitlan or “ Stone-cactus place.” Written as this name is in pictures or rebus, it probably suggested the invention of the well-known legend of a prophecy that the war-god’s temple should be built where a prickly pear was found growing on a rock, and perched on it an eagle holding a serpent; this legend is still commemorated on the coins of Mexico. Mexico- Tenochtitlan, founded about 1325, for many years after-wards probably remained a cluster of huts, and the higher civilization of the country was still to be found among the other nations, especially among the Acolhuas in Tezcuco. The wars of this nation with the Tepanecs, which went on into the 15th century, were merely destructive, but larger effects arose from the expeditions under the Culhua king Acamapichtli, where the Aztec warriors were promincnt, and which extended far outside the valley of Anahuac. Especially a foray southward to Quauhnahuac, now Cuer-navaca, on the watershed between the Atlantic and Pacific, caused the bringing of goldsmiths and other craftsmen home to Tenochtitlan, which now began to rise in arts, the Aztecs laying aside their rude garments of aloe-fibre for more costly clothing, and going out as traders for foreign merchandise. In the 14th century the last great national struggle took place. The Acolhuas had at first the advantage, but Ixtlilxochitl did not follow up the beaten Aztecs but allowed them to make peace, whereupon, under professions of submission, they fell upon and sacked the city of Tezcuco. The next king of Tezcuco, Nezahualcoyotl, turned the course of war, when Azcapuzalco, the Tepanec stronghold, was taken and the inhabitants sold as slaves by the conquering Acolhuas and Aztecs; the place thus de- graded became afterwards the great slave-market of Mexico. In this war we first

meet with the Aztec name Moteuczoma, afterwards so famous in its Spanish form Montezuma. About 1430 took place the triple alliance of the Acolhua, Aztec, and Tepanec kings, whose capitals were Tezcuco, Mexico, and Tlacopan, the latter standing much below the other two. In fact the Aztecs now became so predominant that the rest of native history may be fairly called the Aztec period, notwithstanding the picturesque magnificence and intellectual culture which made Tezcuco celebrated under Nezahualcoyotl and his son Nezahualpilli. When the first Moteuczoma was crowned king of the Aztecs, the Mexican sway extended far beyond the valley plateau of its origin, and the gods of conquered nations around had their shrines set up in Tenochtitlan in manifest inferiority to the temple of Huitzilopochtli, the war-god of the Aztec conquerors. The rich region of Quauhnahuac becaine tributary ; the Miztec country was invaded southward to the Pacific, and the Xicalanca region to what is now Vera Cruz. It was not merely for conquest and tribute that the fierce Mexicans ravaged the neighbour-lands, but they had a stronger motive than either in the desire to obtain

multitudes of prisoners whose hearts were to be torn out XVI. — 27

‘ Tehuantepec,

by the sacrificing priests to propitiate a pantheon of gods who well personified their bloodthirsty worshippers. The desire for war-captives as acceptable victims is related to have brought about an almost incredible agreement among nations of the Mexican alliance, that they should from time to time fight battles among themselves in order to provide prisoners for the altars. Thus there was something of the character of a religious war in the expedition made in 1469 under Axayacatl as. far down the isthmus as whence the Mexican army came back with loads of rich plunder and thousands of captives, and the later ravaging of the Totonac region as far as the Atlantic, when the inhabitants were taken for sacrifice and their land recolonized by Aztecs. Ahuitzotl left the Aztec empire (as it is often somewhat ambitiously called) at the height of apparent power, but the cruel oppression of the subject regions had made their life almost unbearable, and the second Moteuczoma, coming to a rule already liable to break up from

within, weakened it still more by upholding the class of chiefs or nobles against the common people who as warriors and traders had in great measure made the ptosperity of the allied nations. The Mexicans had long tried to subjugate the stubborn little nation of Tlax- callan (Tlascala), which had obstinately held out, though so hemmed in that for years the people lived without salt, this being no longer to be had from the sea-coast. Moteuczoma made a last effort to crush them, but in vain, and when the Spaniards came they were there as ready-made allies planted on the high road to Mexico. From the date when

the festival of the new cycle was first celebrated in

Govern- ment.

Palaces, &e.

Chapultepec six 52-year periods had passed when in 1507 the new fire symbolizing the beginning of a new cycle was kindled for the last time on the breast of a human victim. Rumours of the coming of the Europeans may have before this date spread from Cuba, but in 1517 Cordova touched in Yucatan, and in 1518 Grijalva was on the east coast of Mexico, and the Aztecs first met the white men, in whom they saw, partly with hope and partly with fear, the fulfilment of the prophecy that Quetzalcoatl should one day return. With the Spanish conquest under Hernando Cortes (see Cortxs) the native history of Mexico comes to an end.

CIVILIZATION. While the prairie tribes of America lived under the loose sway of chiefs and councils of old men, the scttled nations of

Mexico had attained to a somewhat highly organized government. This may be seen by the elaborate balance of power maintained in the federation of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan, where each king was absolute in his own country, but in war or other public interests they acted jointly, with powers in something like the proportion in which they divided conquered lands and spoil, which was two-fifths each to Mexico and Tezcuco and one-fifth to Tlacopan. The suc-

cessor of the Aztec king was customarily a chosen brother or nephew, —

the eldest having the first claim unless set aside as incompetent, and having to be atried warrior ; this mode of succession, which has been looked on as an elaborate practical device for securing practical advantages, seems rather to have arisen out of the law of choice

‘among the descendants of the female ‘line, found in American tribes

of much lower culture. Something like this appears in the succes-

sion of kiugs of Tezeuco and Tlacopan, which went to sons by the“

principal wife, who was usually of the Aztec royal family. The Mexican chronicles, however, show instances of the king’s son suc- ceeding, or of powerful chiefs being elected to the kingship. The term republic is sometimes used to describe the little state of Tlascala, but this was in fact a federation of four chiefs, with an assembly of nobles. In the Zapotec district the Wiyatao or high- priest of Zopaa was a divine ruler before whom all prostrated them- selves with faces to the ground; he was even too sacred to allow his foot to touch the earth, and was only seen carried in a litter. The accounts given by the Spanish and native Mexican writers of the courts and palaces of the native kings must be taken with some reserve, from the tendency to use descriptive terms not actually untrue, but which convey erroneous ideas taken from European architecture ; thus what are called columns of porphyry and jasper supporting marble balconies might perhaps be better described as piers carrying slabs, while the apartments and terraces must have

been more remarkable for number and extent than architectural grandeur, being but low one-storied buildings. The principal palace of Mexico consisted of hundreds of rooms and halls ranged round three open squares, with women’s apartments, granaries, storehouses, menageries, aviaries, of such extent that one of the companions of Cortes records having four times wandered about till he was tired, without seeing the whole. Not less remark- able was the palace of Tezcuco, surrounded with its groves and pleasure- gardens ; and, though now hardly anything remains of the buildings above ground, the neighbouring hill of Tezcotzinco still has its stone steps and

terraces ; and the immense embankment carrying the aqueduct-channel of hewn stone which supplied water to basins cut in the solid rock still remains to prove that the chron- iclers' descriptions, if highly-coloured, were at any rate genuine. Till the last century the gigantic figures of Axayacat] and his son Monte- zuma were to be seen carved in the porphyry hill of Chapultepec, but these as well as the hanging gardens have been destroyed, and only the groves of ahwehuete (cypress) remain of the ancient beanties of the place. That in the palace gardens flowers from the tierra caliente were transplanted, and water-fowl bred near fresh and salt pools fit for each kind, that all kinds of birds and beasts were kept in well-appointed zoological gardens where there were homes even for alligators and snakes,—all this testifies, not merely to barbaric ostentation, but to a cultivation of natural history which was really beyond the European level of the time. From the palaces and re- tinues of thousands of servants attached to the royal service may be inferred at once the despotic power of the Mexican rulers and the heavy taxation of the people ; in fact some of the most remarkable of the picture-writings are tribute-rolls enumerating by hundreds and thousands the mantles, ocelot-skins, bags of gold-dust, bronze hatchets, loads of chocolate, &c., furnished periodically by the towns. Below the king was a numerous and powerful class of nobles, the highest of whom (élatoant) were great vassals owing little more than homage and tribute to their feudal lord, while the natural result of the unruliness of the noble class was that the king to keep them in check increased their numbers, brought them to the capital as councillors, and balanced their influence by military and household officers, and by a rich and powerful merchant class. The nobles not only had privileges of rank and dignity, but substantial power over the plebeian or peasant class (macehualli), who submitted to much the same oppression and extortion at their hands as was customary in the Old World. The tenures of land in Mexico were those generally appearing in barbaric countries where invasion and inilitary despotism have encroached on but not totally superseded the carlier tribal laws. The greatest estates belonged to the king, or had been granted to military chiefs whose sons succeeded then, or were the endowments of temples, but the calpullt or village community still survived, and each freeman of the tribe held and tilled his portion of the common lands. Below the freenien were

the. slaves, who were war-captives, persons enslaved for punishment,

or children sold by their parents. Prisoners of war were mostly doomed to sacrifice, but other classes of slaves were mildly treated, retaining civil rights, and their children were born free. The superior courts of law formed part of the palace, were tribunals in the principal cities, gver each of which presided a supreme judge or cihudcoatl, who was irremovable, and whose criminal decisions not even the king might reverse ; he appointed the lower judges and heard appeals from them ; it is doubtful whether he judged in civil cases, but both kinds of suits were heard in the court below, by the tlacatecatl and his two associates, below whom were the ward-magistrates. Lands were set apart for the maintenance of the judges, and indeed nothing gives a higher idea of the elaborate civilization of Mexico than this judicial system, which culminated in a general court and council of state presided over by the king. The laws and records of suits were set down in picture-writings, of which some are still to be seen ; sentence of death was recorded by drawing a line with an arrow across the portrait of the condemned, and the chroniclers describe the barbaric solemnity with which the king passed sentence sitting on a golden and jewelled throne in the divine tribunal, with one hand on all ornamented skull and the golden arrow in the other. Among the resemblances to Old-World law was the use of a judicial oath, the witness touching the ground with his finger and putting it to his lips, thus swearing by Mother Earth. The criminal laws were of extreme severity, even petty theft being punished by the thief being enslaved to tle person he had robbed, while to steal a tobacco pouch or twenty ears of corn was death; he who pilfered in the market was then and there beaten to death, and he who insulted Xipe, the god of the gold- andsilver-smiths, by stealing his precious meta was skinned alive and sacrificed to the offended deity. Though aloe-beer or ‘‘pulque” was allowed for feasts and to invalids in moderation, and old people over seventy seem to be represented in one of the picture-writings as having liberty of drunkenness, young men found drunk were clubbed to death and young women stoned. Such a Draconian standard prevailing, it is hardly needful to enumerate the special penalties of such offences as witchcraft, fraud, removing landmarks, adultery, &., which differed as to

and there Justica |

MEX

whether the criminal had his heart cut out on the altar, his head crushed between two stones, &c. ; while even lesser punishments were harsh, such as that of slanderers, whose hair was singed with a pine-torch to the scalp. :

Based on conquest as the Aztec kingdom was, and with the craving for warlike glory fostered by the most bloodthirsty religion the world ever saw, it follows that the natiou was above all other pursuits organized as a fighting community. To bea tried soldier was the road to honour and office, and the king could not be en- throned till he had with his own hand taken captives to be butchered on the war-god's altar at his coronation. The common soldiers were promoted for acts of daring, and the children of chiefs were regularly trained to war, and initiated by being sent into battle with veterans, with whose aid the youth took his first prisoner, but his future rise depended on how many captives he took un- aided in fight with warlike enemies ; by such feats he gained the dignity of wearing coloured blankets, tassels, and lip-jewels, and reached such'military titles as that of '' guiding eagle." The Mexican military costumes are to be seen in the picture-writings, where the military orders of princes, eagles, and tigers are known by their braided hair, eagles' beaks, and spotted armour. The common soldiers went into battle brilliant in savage war-paint, but those of higher rank had helmets like birds and beasts of prey, armour of gold and silver, wooden greaves, and especially the ichcapilli, the quilted cotton tunic two fingers thick, so serviceable asa protection from arrows that the Spanish invaders were glad to adopt it. Thearchers shot well and with strong bows, though their arrows were generally tipped only with stone or bone ; their shields or targets, mostly round, were of ordinary barbaric forms; the spears or javelins had heads of obsidian or bronze, and were some- times hurled with a spear-thrower or aédat/, of which pictures and specimens still exist, showing it to be similar in principle to those used by the Australians and Eskimo, The most characteristic weapon of the Mexicans was the maquahuitl or '' hand-wood," a club set with two rows of large sharp obsidian flakes, a well- directed blow with which would cut down man or horse. These two last-mentioned weapons have the look of highly-developed savage forms, while on the other hand the military organization was in some respects equal to that of an Asiatic nation, with its regular companies commanded each by its captain and provided with its standard. Thearmies were very large, an expedition often consisting of

several divisions each numbering eight thousand men, but the tactics of the commanders were quite rudimentary, consist- ing merely of attack by arrows and javelins at a distance, gradu- ally closing into a hand-to-hand fight with clubs and spears, with an occasional feigned retreat to draw the enemy intoan ambuscade. Fortification was well understood, as may still be seen in the remains of walled and esearped strongholds on hills and in steep ravines, while lagoou-citics like Mexico had the water approaches

defended by fleets of boats, and the causeways protected by towers and ditches; even after the town was entered, the pyramid- temples with their surrounding walls were forts capable of stubborn resistance. It was held unrighteous to invade another nation with- out a solemn embassy to warn their chiefs of the miseries to which they exposed themselves by refusing the submission demanded, and this again was followed by*a declaration of war, but in Mexico as in other more eultured countries this act of national morality degene- rated into a ceremonial farce, where tribute was claimed from some neighbouring nation, or an Aztec god was offered to be worshipped in their temples, in order to pick a quarrel as a pretext for an invasion already planned to satisfy the soldiers with lands and plunder, and to mcet the priests' incessant demands for more human sacrifices.

Among thie accounts of the Mexican religion are some passages referring to the belief in a supreme deity. The word ¢eot?, god, has been thought in some cases to bear this signification, but its meaning is that of deity in general, and it is applied not only to the sun- god but to very inferior gods. It is related that Nezahualeoyotl, the poet-king of Tezcuco, built a nine-storied temple with a starry roof above, in honour of the invisible deity called Tloquenahuaque,

'he who is all in himself," or Ipalnemoan, ' he by whom we live," who had no image, and was propitiated, not by bloody sacrifices, but by incense and flowers. Those who adopt the opinion of Asiatic admixture in Mexican culture will use it to account for this remark- able religious phenomenon, less easily accounted for by native development, while also the appearance of a rival deity of evil, bearing the name of Tlacatecolotl, or '' man-owl," is mysterious. These divinities, however, seem to have had little or no place in the popular faith, which was occupied by polytheistie gods of more

ordinary barbaric type. Tezcatlipoea was held to be the highest of these, and at the festival of all the gods his footsteps were expected to appear in the flour strewn to receive this sign of their coming. He was plainly an aneient deity of the race, for attributes of many

Inds are crowded together in him, and he was prayed to in inter- minable formulas for help in war and for health and fortune, to deliver the nation froma wicked king, or to give pardon and strength to the penitent who had confessed his sins and been purified by wash-

eliton.

se © 211

ing. Between him and Quetzalcoatl, the ancient deity of Cholula, there had been old rivalry, as is related in legends of Quetzalcoatl coming into the land to teach men to till the soil, to work metals, and to rule a well-ordered state; the two gods played their famous match at the ball-game, and Tezcatlipoca, in the guise of a hoary-headed sorcerer, persuaded the sick and weary Quetzalcoatl] to drink the magic pulque that sent him roaming to the distant ocean, where he embarked in his boat and disappeared from among men. These deities are not easily analysed, but on the other hand Tonatiuh and Metztli, the sun and moon, stand out in the distinctest personality as nature gods, and the traveller still sees in the huge adobe pyramids of Teotihuacan, with their sides oriented to the four quarters, an evidence of the importance of their worship. The war-god Huitzilo- pochtli, of whom one legend relates a supernatural conception in the ancient Tullan, while another story declares lim to have been (like the Chinese war-god) a deified warrior-chief, was the rea] head of the Aztec pantheon ; hisidol remains in Mexico, a huge block of basalt on whieli is sculptured on the one side his hideous personage, adorned with the humming-bird feathers on the left hand which signify his name, while the not less frightful war-goddess Teoyao- miqui, or ‘‘divine-war-death,” occupies the other side. Centeotl, the goddess of the all-nourishing maize, was patroness of the earth and mother of the gods, while Mictlanteuctli, lord of dead-land, ruled over the departed in the dim under-world. Numbers of lesser deities presided over elasses of society, events, and occnpations of life, such as Tlazolteotl, goddess of pleasure, worshipped by eourtesans, Tezcatzoncatl, god of strong drink,

whose garment in griin irony clothed the drunkard’s corpse, and Xipe, patron of the gold- smiths, Below these were the usual crowd of nature-spirits of hills and groves, whose shrines were built by the roadside to receive offer- ings from passers-by. The temples were called teocalli or ‘‘ god’s house,” and the teocallis of the greater deities rivalled in size as they resembled in form the temples of ancient Babylon. They were pyramids on a square or oblong base, rising in successive terraces to a small summit-platform. The great teocalli of Huitzilopochtli in the city of Mexico stood in an immense square, whence radiated the four principal thoroughfares, its eourtyard being enclosed by a square, of which the stone wall, called the coatepantii or serpent-wall from its sculptured serpents, measured nearly a quarter of a mile on each side. In ‘the centre, the oblong pyramid of rubble cased with hewn stone and eemented, 375 × 300 feet at the base, and rising steeply in five terraces to the height of 86 feet, showed conspicuously to the city the long proeessions of priests and victims winding along the terraces and up the corner flights of steps. On the paved platform were three-story tower temples in whose ground-floor stood the stone images and altars, and before that of the war-god the green stone of sacrifice, humped so as to bend upward the body of the victim that the priest might more easily slash open the breast with his obsidian knife, tear ont the leart and hold it up before the god, while the captor and his friends were waiting below for the earease to be tumbled down the steps for them to earry home to be cooked for the feast of vietory. Before the shrines reeking with the stench of slaughter, the eternal fires were kept burning, and on the platform stood the huge drum covered with snakes’ skin, whose fearful sound was heard for miles. From the terrace could be seen seventy or more other teniples within the enelosnre, with their images and blazing fires, and the tzompantli or ‘‘skull-place,” where the skulls of victims by tens of thousands were skewered on cross-sticks or built into towers. There also might be seen the flat circular temalacatl or ‘‘spindle-stone,” where captives armed with wooden weapons were allowed the mockery of a gladiatorial fight against well-armed champions. The great pyramid of Cholula with its hemispherical temple of Quetzalcoatl at the top, now an almost shapeless hill surmounted by a church, was about thrice as long and twice as high as the teocalli of Mexico. A large fraction of the Mexican population were set apart as priests or attendants to the services of the gods. The rites performed were such as are found elsewhere, prayer, sacrifice, processions, dances,

chants, fasting and other austerities, but there are some peculiari- ties of detail. Prayers and other formulas have been copied down by Sahagun and other chroniclers; of endless prolixity, but not without occasional touches of pathos. The following are a few sentences from a prayer to Tezcatlipoca, interceding for the poor: “*O our lord, protector most strong and compassionate, invisiblo and impalpable, thou art the giver of life ; lord of all, and lord of battles, I present mysclf here before thee to s1y some few words concerning the need of the poor people, the people of none estate or intelligence… . Know, O Lord, that thy subjects and servants suffer a sore poverty, that eannot be told of more than that | it isa sore poverty and desolateness. The men have no garments nor the women to eover themselves with, but only rags rent in every part that let the wind and eold in… . If they be mer- chants, they now sell only cakes of salt and broken pepper ; the people that have something despise their wares, so that they go out to sell from door to door and from house to house ; and when they sell | nothing they sit down sadly by some fence. or wall, or in some corner,

Pieture- writing.

licking their lips and gnawing their nails for the hunger that is in them, they look on one side and the other at the mouths of those who pass by, hoping peradventure that one may speak some word to them. O compassionate God, the bed on which they lie is not a thing to rest upon, but to endure torment in; they draw a rag over, them at night and so sleep. . O our Lord, in whose power it 1s to give allcontent, consolation, sweetness, softness, prosperity, and riches, for thou alone art lord of all good, have merey upon them, for they are thy servants. . . . I supplicate thee that thou wilt lift up their heads with thy favour and aid, that thou wilt see good that they enjoy some days of prosperity and tranquillity, so that they may sleep and know repose, having prosperous and peaceable days of life. . . . Should this nation, for whom I pray and entreat thee to do them good, not understand what thou hast given, thou canst take away the good and pour out cursing, so that all evil may come upon them, and they become poor, In need, maimed, lame, blind, and deaf; then indeed they shall waken and know the good that they had and have not, and they shall call upon. thee and lean

toward thee; but thou will not listen, for in the day of abundance they would not understand thy goodness towards them.” These prayers seem essentially genuine ; indeed there was no European motel from which they eould have been imitated ; but at the same time it must be remembered that they come down in Spanish writ- ing, and not untouched by Spanish influence, as in one passage where there is a mention of sheep, an animal of course unknown to the native Mexicans, As to sacrifice, maize and other vegetables were offered, and occasionally rabbits, quails, &c.; but, in the absenee of cattle, human sacrifice was the chief rite, and cannibalism prevailed at the feasts. Incense was constantly used, especially the copalli (copal) well known to us for varnish; little terra-cotta censers are among the commonest of Mexican antiquities. Long and severe religious fasts were customary at special seasons, and drawing blood from the arms, legs, and body, by thrusting in aloe-thorns, and passing sharp sticks through the tongue, was an habitual act of devotion recalling the similar practices of devotees in India. The calendar of religious festivals for the whole conrse of the Mexican year has been preserved. Each 20-day period had one or more such celebrations. In the month of the ‘diminishing of waters ” the rain-gods or Tlalocs were propitiated by a procession of priests with music of flutes and trumpets carrying on plumed litters infants with painted faces, in gay clothing with coloured paper wings, to be sacrifieed on the mountains or in a whirlpool in the lake. It is said that the people wept as they passed by; but if so this may have been a CY formality, for the religion of these nations must have quenched all human sympathy. In the next month the god Xipe-totec, already mentioned, had his festival called the ‘‘flaying of men” from the human victims being flayed, after their hearts were torn out, for young men to dress in their skins and perform danccs and sham fights. The succeeding festival of Camaxtli was marked by a severe fast of the priests, after which stone knives were pre- pared with whieh a hole was cut through the tongue of each, and numbers of stieks passed through. For the great festival of Tez- catlipoga, the handsomest and noblest of the captives of the year had been chosen as the incarnate representative of the god, and paraded the streets for public adoration dressed in an embroidered mantle with feathers and garlands on his head and a retinue like a king; for the last month they married him to four girls representing four goddesses ; on the last day wives and pages escorted him to the little temple of Tlacochcalco, where he mounted the stairs, breaking an earthenware flute against each

step; this was a symbolic fare- well to the joys of the world, for as he reached the top he was seized by the priests, his heart torn out and held up to the sun, his head spitted on the tzompantli, and his body eaten as sacred food, the people drawing from his fate the moral lesson that riches and pleasure may turn into poverty and sorrow. The manner of the victim's death in these festivals afforded scope for variety; they dressed them and made them dance in character, threw them into the fire for the fire-god, or crushed them between two balanced stones at the harvest-festival. The ordinary pleasures of festivals were mingled with all this, such as dances in beast-masks, sham fights, and children's games, but the type of a religious function was a sickening butchery followed by a cannibal feast.

The Mexican priesthood, being the educated class, were much concerned with the art of picture-writing, which they had developed to a stage quite above the rude figures of the American hunting- tribes, and used systematically as a means of recording religious festivals and legends, as well as keeping calendars of years and recording the historical events which occurred inthem. Facsimiles of several of these interesting documents, with their translations, may be seen in Kingsborough. On inspecting these it will be seen that their main principle is pictorial. Gods are represented with their appropriate attributes,—the fire-god hurling his spear, the moon- goddess with a shell, &c.; the scenes of human life are pictures of warriors fighting with club and spear, men paddling in canoes, women spinning and weaving, Xe. An important step towards phonetic writingappears, however, in the picturc-names of places and persons. The simplest forms of these depict the objects signified by the name,

Ico

as where Chapultepec or ''grasshopper-hill" is represented by a grass-hopper on a hill, or a stone with a cactns on it stands for Tenoch or "'stone-cactus," the founder of Tenochtitlan. The system had, however, risen a stage beyond this when objects were drawn to represent, not themselves, but the syllables forming their names, as where a trap, an eagle, a pricker, and a hand are put to- gether not to represent these objects, but in order that the syllables of their names mo-quawh-zo-ma should spell the word Moquauh-zoma (sce Aubin's introduction to Brasscur, Hist. dw Memique, vol. i. p.

Ixviii.). The analogy of this to the manner in which the Egyptian hieroglyphs passed into phonetic signs is remarkable, and writing might have been invented anew in Mexico had it not been for the Spanish conquest. The Aztec numerals, which were vigesimal or reckoned by scores, were depicted by dots or circles up to 20, whigh was represented by a flag, 400 (a score of scores) by a feather, and 8000 (a score of scores of scores) by a purse; but for convenience these symbols might be halved and quartered, so that 534 might be shown by one feather, one quarter of a feather, one flag, one-half of a flag, and four dots. The Mexican calendar depended on the combination of numbers with pictnre-signs, of which the four principal were the rabbit, reed, flint, house— tochtli, acatl, tecpatl, calli. The cycle of 52 years was reckoned by combining these signs in rotation with numbers up to 13, thus:— 1 rabbit, 2 reed, 8 flint, 4 house, 5 rabbit, 6 reed, &c. By accident this calendar may be cxactly illustrated with a modern pack of cards laid out in rotation of the four suits, as, ace of hearts, 2 of spades, 8 of diamonds, 4 of clubs, 5 of hearts, 6 of spades, &c. In the Mexican ritual calendar of the days of the year, the same method is carried further, the series of twenty day-signs being combined in rotation with numbers up to 13; as this cycle of days only reaches 260, a series of nine other signs are affixed in addition, to make up the 365-day year. It is plain that this rotation of signs served no useful purpose whatever, being less convenient than ordinary counting such as the Mexicans employed in their other calendar already mentioned, where the 20-day periods had eaeh a name like our months, and their days had signs in regular order. Its historical interest depends on its resemblance to the calendar-system of central and eastern Asia, where among Mongols, Tibetans, Chinese, &c., series of signs are thus combined to reckon years, months, and days; for instance, the Mongol cycle of 60 years is recorded by the zodiac or series of 12 signs—mouse, bull, tiger, &c., combined in rotation with the five male and female elements—fire, earth, iron, water, wood; as ‘‘male-fire-bull” year, &c. This comparison is worked out in Humboldt’s Vues des Cordilleres, as evidence of Mexican civilization being borrowed from Asia. Naturally the Mexican calendar-system lent itself to magic in the same way as the similar zodiac-signs of the Old World, each person’s fate being affected by the qualities of the signs he was born under, and the astrologer-priests being called in to advise on every event of life. Of all Mexican festivals the most solemn was that of the xiuhmolpilli, or ‘‘ year-binding,”

when the 52- year cycle or bundle of years came to an end. It was believed that the destruction of the world, whieh after the Hindu manner the Mexicans held to have already taken place three or four times, would happen again at the end of a cycle. As the time drew near, the anxious population cleansed their houses and put out all fire, and on the last day after sunset the priests, dressed in the garb of gods, set out in procession for the hill of Huixachtla, there to watch for the approach of the Pleiades to the zenith, which gave the anspicious signal for the lighting of the new fire. The finest of the captives was thrown down and fire kindled on his breast by the wooden drill of the priest ; then the victim's heart was torn ont, and his body flung on the pile kindled with the new flame. The people watching from their flat housetops all the country round saw with joy the flame on the sacred hill, and hailed it witha thank-offering of drops of blood drawn from their ears with sharp stonc-flakes. Swift runners carried burning brands to rekindle the fires of the land, the sacred fire on the teocalli of the war-god blazed up again, and the people began with feasting and rejoicing the new cycle.

Mexican education, at any rate that of the upper class, was a Educa- systematic discipline much under the control of religion, which tion.

here presents itself under a more favourable light. After the birth of a child, the tonalpowhqui or ''sun-calculator" drew its horoscope from the signs it was born under, and fixed the time for its solemn lustration or baptism, performed by the nurse with appropriate prayers to the gods, when a toy shield and bow were provided if it was a boy, or a toy spindle and distaff if it was a girl, and the child received its name. An interesting picture-writing, to be seen in Kingsborough, shows the details of the boy's and girl's education, from the early time when three small circles over the | child show it to be. three years old, and a drawing of half a tortilla or corn-eake shows its allowance for each meal; as they grow older the lads are seen beginning to carry burdens, paddle the canoe, and fish, while the girls learn to spin and weave, grind maize, and cook,——good conduct being enforced by punishments of increasing severity, up to pricking their bodies with aloe-thorns and holding

Mar- riages,

Funerals.

Agricul- ture and food.

Clothing and orna- ments,

Metal- work, |

mi xX FCO

their faces over burning chillis. The schools were extensive build- ings attached to the temples, where from an early age boys and girls were taught by the priests to sweep the sanctuaries and keep up the sacred fires, to fast at proper seasons and draw blood for penance, and where they received moral teaching in long aud verbose formulas. Those fit for a soldier's life were trained to the use of weapons and sent early to learn the hardships of war; ehildren of craftsmen were usually taught by their fathers to follow their trade; and for the children of nobles there was elaborate instruction in history, picture-writing, astrology, religious doctrines, and laws. Marriages depended much, as they do still in the East, on comparison of the horoscopes of the pair to ascertain if their birth-signs were com- patible. Old women were employed as go-betweens, and the marriage ceremony was condueted by a priest who after moral exhortations united the young couple by tying their garments together in a knot, after which they walked scven times round the fire, casting incense into it ; after the performance of the marriage ceremony the pair entered together on a four days' fast and penance before the marriage was completed. The funeral rites of the Mexicans are best seen in the ceremonies at the death of a king. The corpse laid out in state was provided by the priest with a jug of water for his journey, and with bunches of cut papers to pass him safely through each danger of the road—the place where the two mountains strike together, the road guarded by the great snake and the great alligator, the eight deserts and the eight hills; they gave him garments to protect him from the cutting wind, and buried a little dog hy his side to carry him across the nine waters. Then the royal body was invested in the mantles of his patron-gods, especially that of the war-god, for Mcxican kings were wairiors ; on his face was placed a mask of turquoise mosaic, and a green chalchihuite-stone as a heart between his aa In older times the dead king was buried on a throne

with his property and dead attendants round him. But after cremation came in a mourning procession of servants and chiefs carried the body to the funeral pyre to be burnt by the demon-dressed priests, after which the crowd of wives and slaves were exhorted to serve their lord faithfully in the next world, were sacrificed and their bodies burnt. Conimou people would not thus be provided with a ghostly retinue, but their simpler funcral ceremonies were as far as they went similar to those of their monarch.

The staple food of the Mexicans before the conquest has continued with comparatively little change among the native race, and has even been adopted by those of European blood. Maize or Indian corn was cultivated on patches of ground where, as in the Hindu jém, the trees and bushes were burut and the seed planted in the soil manured by the ashes. A sharp-pointed planting stick, a wooden shovel, and a bronze-bladed hoe called a coatl were the simple implements. The Mexicans understood digging channels for irrigation, especially for the cultivation of the cacahuati, from which they taught the Europeans to prepare the beverage chocollatl ; these native names passed into English as the words cacao, or cocoa, and chocolate. Other vegetables adopted from Mexico are the tomata (tomatl) and the chill7, used as flavouring to native dishes. The maize was ground with a stone roller on the grinding stone or metlatl, still known over Spanish America as the metate, and the meal baked into thin oval cakes called by Aztecs tlaxcalli, and by Spaniards tortilla, which resemble the chapati of India and the oat-cake of Scotland. The Mexicans were also skilful makers of earthen pots, in which were cooked the native beans called by the Spanish frijoles, and the various savoury stews still in vogue. The juice extracted by tapping the great aloe before flowering was fermented into an intoxicating drink about the strength of beer, octli, by the Spaniards called pulgwe. Tobacco, smoked in leaves or eanc-pipes or taken as snuff, was in use, especially at feasts. It is related that in old times Mexican clothing was of skins or woven aloe and palm

fibre, but at the time of the conquest cotton was largely cultivated

in the hot lands, spun with a spindle, and woven in a rudimentary loom without a shuttle into the mantles and breech-cloths of the men and the chemises and skirts of the women, garments often of fine texture and

embroidered in colours. Ornaments of gold and silver, and jewels of polished quartz and green chalehihuite were worn,—not only the ears and nose but the lips being pierced for ornaments. The artificers in gold and silver melted the metals by means of a reed-blowpipe and cast them solid or hollow, and were also skilled in hammered work and chasing, as some fine specimens remain to show, though the famous animals modelled with gold and silver fur, feathers, and scales have disappeared. Iron was not known, but copper and tin ores were mined, and the metals com- bined into bronze of much the same alloy as in the Old World, of which hatchet blades and other instruments were made, though their use had not superseded that of obsidian and other sharp stone flakes for cutting, shaving, &c. Metals had passed into a currency for trading purposes, especially quills of gold-dust and T-shaped pieces of eopper, while cocoa-beans furnished small change. The vast size of the market-squares with their surrounding porticos, and the importance of the caravans of merchants who traded with other nations, show that mercantile had risen into some proportion to

nilitary interests.

The stone sculptures such as that remaining of Xochicalco, which is

figured by Humboldt, as well as the ornamented woodwork, feather-

mats, and vases, are not without artistic merit. The often-cited poems attributed to Nezahualcoyotl may not be quite genuine, but at any rate poetry had risen above the barbaric level, while the mention of ballads among the people, court odes, and the chants of temple choirs would indicate a vocal cultivation above that of the instrumental music of drums and horns, pipes and whistles, the latter often of pottery. Solemn and gay dances were frequent, and a sport called the bird-dance excited the admiration of foreigners for the skill and daring with which groups of performers dressed as birds let themselves down by ropes wound round the top of a high mast, so as to fly whirled in circles far above the ground. The ball-game of the Mexicans, ealled ¢dachtli, was, like tennis, the pas- time of princes and nobles ; special courts were built for it, and the ball of india-rubber (perhaps the first object in which Europeans became acquainted with

this valnable material) might not be touched by the hands, but was driven against the walls by blows of the kuee or elbow, shoulder or buttock. The favourite game of patolli has been already mentioned for its similarity to the pachisi of modern India.

_ The accounts given by Spanish writers of the Central Americans Central- in their state after the Spanish conquest are' very scanty in coin- American They bring culture.

parison with the voluminous descriptions of Aztec life. out perfectly, however, the fact of close connexion between the two civilizations. Some Central-American peoples were actually Mexican in their language and culture, especially the Pipils of Guatemala and a large part of the population of Nicaragua, but these were descend- ants of Aztecs or allied peoples who in the comparatively modern times of Aztec power invaded and colonized these distant countries (see Buschmann, Aztek. Ortsnamen, viii., ix.). With regard to the Central-American nations proper, especially the Mayas of Yucatan and the Quichés of Guatemala, who dwelt in the cities and wor- shipped in the temples of Chichen-Itza and Uxmal, Palenque and Copan, the problem of Aztec connexion is deeper and obscurer. How closely related these nations were in institutions to the Mexicans appears, not only in their using the same peculiar weapons, such as the spear-thrower and the toothed club or maquahuitl, but in the similarity of their religious rites, such as drawing blood from their bodies as an act of penance, and sacrificing human victims by cutting open the breast and tearing out the heart; the connexion 'is evideut in such special points as the ceremony of marriage by tying together the garments of the couple, or in holding an offender's face over burning chillis as a punishment; the native legends of Central America make mention of the royal ball-play, which was the same as the Mexican game of tlachtli already mentioned. At the same time many of the Central-Amcrican eustoms differed from the Mexican; thus in Yucatan we find the custom of the youths sleeping in a great bachelor's house, an arrangement common in various parts of the world, but not in Mexico ; the same remark applics to the Maya exogamous law of a man not taking a wife of his own family name (see Diego de Landa, Relacion de Yucatan, ed. Brasseur de Bourbourg, p. 140), which does not correspond with Mexican custom. We have the means of comparing the personal appearance of the Mexicans and

Central Americans by their por- traits on early sculptures, vases, &c. ; and, though there does not appear any clear distinction of race-type, the extraordinary back- sloping foreheads of such figures as those of the bas-reliefs of Palenque prove that the custom of flattening the skull in infancy prevailed in Central Ameriea to an extent quite beyond any such habit in Mexico. It is from the ruined cities now buried in the Central- American forests that we gain the best information as to the nations who built them. The notion sometimes propounded that these famous Cities were of great antiquity and the work of extinct nations has no solid evidence ; some of them may have been already aban- doned before the conquest, but others were inhabited, and by the ancestors of the Indians who now build their mean huts and till their patches of maize round the relics of the grander life of their ancestors. In comparing these ruins through the districts of Yucatan, Chiapas, Guatemala, and Honduras, it is evident that, though they are not the work of a single nation, but of two or more highly distinct in language, yet these nations had the great bond of a common system of pictorial or written characters. One speci- men of a Central-American inscription may give a general idea of them all, whether it be from the sculptured fagade of a temple sketched by Catherwood, or from the painted deerskin called the Dresden Codex (reproduced in Kingsborough), or from the ehapter of Diego de Landa where he professes to explain and translate the eharacters themselves. These consist of combinations of faces, circles, lines, &c., arranged in compartments in so eomplex a manner that hardly two are found alike. How they conveyed their meaning, how far they pictorially represented ideas or spelt words in the different languages of the country, is a question not yet answered in a eomplete way; Landa’s description (p. 320) gives a table of a number of their elements as phonetically representing letters or syllables, but, though there may bea partial truth in his rules, they

i s. Nor was the wealth and luxury of Mexico and Art and surrounding regions without a corresponding development of art. pastime.

a

are too insufficient or too erroneous to serve for any general decipher- ment. Most of what has becn written on this enticing subject is worthless, but a

promising attempt has been made by E. 8. Holden, who has analysed the combined figures into their elementary lines (First Annual Report of Bureau of Ethnology, Smithsonian Insti- tution, Washington, 1881; see also Charencey, Mélanges de Philologve ct de Palévgraphie Américaines, Paris, 1883). One point as to the Central-American characters is clear, that part of them are calendar- signs recording dates. From the accounts given by Landa and other writers it is plain that the Central-American calendar, reckoning the year in twenty-eight periods of thirteen days, was the same 1n its principle of combining signs as that of Mexico here mentioned at page 212. The four leading Maya signs called kan, m uluc, 1%, cawac corresponded in their position to the four Aztec signs rabbit, reed, flint, house, but the meanings of the Maya signs are, unlike the Aztec, very obscure. A remarkable feature of the Central-American ruins is the frequency of truncated pyramids built of hewn stone, with flights of steps up to the temple built on the platform at top. The resemblance of these structures to the old descriptions and pic- tures of the Mexican teocallis is so striking that this name is habitu- ally given to them. The teocallis built by the Nahua or Mexican nations have been mostly destroyed, but two remain at Huatusco and Tusapan (figured in Bancroft, vol. iv. pp. 448, 458), which bear a strong resemblance to those of Palenque. On the whole it is not too much to say that, in spite of differences in style, the best means of judging what the temples and palaces of Mexico were like is to be gained from the actual ruins in Central America. On the other hand, there are features in Central-American . architecture which scarcely appear in Mexican. Thus at Uxmal there stands on a terraced mound the long narrow building known as the governot’s house (Casa del Gobernador), 322 feet long, 39 feet wide, 26 feet high, built of rubble stone and mortar faced with square blocks of stone, the interior of the ehambers rising into a sloping roof formed by courses of stonework gradually overlapping in a “‘ false arch.” The same construction is seen in the buildings forming the sides of a quadrangle and bearing the equally imaginary name of the nunnery (Casa de Monjas); the resemblance of the interior of one of its apartments to an Etruscan tomb has often been nuticed (see Fergusson, History of Architecture, vol. i. ; Viollet-le-Duc, in Charnay). Attempts to trace the architecture of Central America to direct derivation from Old-World types have not been successful, while on the other hand its decoration shows proof of original inven- tion, especially in the imitations of ne | which, as the above-

|

MEXICO

British Honduras, where the boundary lines are still partly undetermined, W. by the Pacific Ocean. Lying between 33° and 15° N. lat. and 87° and 117° W. long., Mexico stretches about 1950 miles north-north-west and south- south-east, with a mean breadth of 400 miles, varying from about 1000 in 26° N. to 130 at the narrowest part of the Tehuantepec isthmus. It has a coast-line of nearly 6000 miles,—about 4200 on the Pacific and 1600 on the Atlantic. The seaboard is little varied either by deep inlets, bold headlands, broad estuaries, or large islands. On the west side are the vast Gulf of California, in outline somewhat resembling the Red Sea, and so named by some of the early navigators, and the open Bay of Tehuantepec, besides the smaller inlets of Acapulco and San Blas, forming two of the finest harbours in the world, and almost the only safe ones in the republic. On the east side the coast is mostly. beset by lagoons and sand- banks, with no good havens, Campéche, Vera Cruz, Tampico, and Matamoras being all little better than open roadsteads exposed to the fierce "'nortes," or north-easterly gales, that sweep the Gulf of Mexico for a great part of the year. Of headlands the most prominent are Capes 8S. Lucas and Palmas at the south extremity of Lower California, Cor- rientes south from San Blas, and Catoche in the north- east of Yucatan. Besides this peninsula, which projects north-north-east, the only other is that of Lower California, which projects south-south-east parallel to the mainland. The islands are few in number, and all of insignificant size, . the most noteworthy being Tiburon and Angel de la Guarda in the Gulf of California, the uninhabited Revillagigedo group in the Pacific, and Cozumel off the Yucatan coast. Mexico comprises altogether twenty-seven confederate states, one territory, and the Federal District, with areas, populations, and chief towns as under :?—

mentioned architects have pointed out, passed into sculptured Area in | Popula- Popula- ornament when the material of construction became stone instead States pm (1880) Capital. (87780 of wood. Thus the architectural remains, though they failactually | | a. to solve the historical problem of the high culture of the nations Gi (SOnOra.cas.0.:0---ssee0es0-) 81,022 |

189,140} Ures …..cssecs-e.| 9,700 round the Gulf of Mexico, throw much light on it when their g penal 18 ehnoahue seteeeeneess 12 evidence is added to that of religion and customs. Whether Mexican & ee holt piers 14’363 i caiae Sl aa a a ee civilization was a barbaric copy of that which flourished in the now a (Tamar pas eee 28,659 | 144,747 | Ciudad Victoria ….| 7,800 deserted Central-American cities, or whether the nations who built & | Vera Cruz. cesses 27,433 | 504,970 | Jalapa ….....| 12,400 these cities themselves raised toa higher level a civilization derived EB ewe a Eo ie nee al ae spentity % iin from Mexico, two things seem probable, —first, that the civilizations | | Z | Yucatan… “] 323658 | 285,384 Me 32,000 of Mexico and Central America were pervaded by a common influence Sinaloa .. ...| 25,927 | 167,093 | Culiacan….. 7,878 in religion, art, and eustom ; second, that this common element | | , plore teen pee ye ae So a ats0 Hh shows traccs of the importation of Asiatic ideas into America. = Meme us 217809 | 648.857 Nordin BUT aang kes ee secccecsecee ’ st MOVCIIA pcccesssevoes eee ’

Among works of reference on the ancient history and civilization of Mexico Sy | CERES Ohepecouncesocnccon: ‘ 308,716 | Bravos….. 3,800 and Central America may be mentioned H. H. Bancroft, Zhe Native Races of the OAJACH).....20:cse2:-ccress 718,194 | Oajaca,..... ...| 26,228 Pacific States of North America, London, 1875-6 (contains the most complete CDIAWAS...ccsescs-0 5 ,769 | 219,735 | San Cristobal …..... 8,500 summary, with references to original authorities); Brasseur de Bourbourg, Durango….0…0+ 2,643 | 190,846 | Durango ….....). 27,119 Histoire des Nations Civilisées du Merique et de l Amérique- Centrale, Paris, Zacatecas….:.....c0006| 26,585] 413,603 | Zacatecas …..... «| 32,000 1857-59 (a valuable collection of materials, but the author’s own views are mostly Aguas Calientes…..... «| 2,216 | 140,430} Aguas Calientcs…..} 31,872 fanciful); Prescott, History of the Conquest of Merico: Clavigero. Storia Antica « || San Tes POtOSi/ccc-.... 28,889 | 506,799 | San Luis Potosi.,..| 34,300 del Messico, Cescna, 1780 (contains the substance of earlicr writers, such as @ | Guanajuato…..... 11,130} 788,202] Guanajuato …....; 56,112 Gomara, Torquemada, Acosta, Boturini, &c.). For special topics:—Lord Kings- | | 3 4 Querétaro.. 3,429 | 179,915 | Querétaro . 27,560 borough, Antiquities of Mexico, London, 1831-48(contains facsimiles and inter- | | 2 | Hidalgo…..... . 8,480 | 434,096 | Pachuca… 12,500 pretations of

picture-writings, the native chronicles of Ixtlilxochit] and Tezozo- Ol Me wilde cs arcctstces 9,598 | 696,038 | Toluca ….....0.. +00 12,700 moc, a reprint of Sahagun, &c.); A. von Humboldt, Vues des Cordilleres, et MONCIOS)....60s6 1,898 | 154,946 | Cuernavaca …..... ..| 16,320 Monumens des Peuples Indigenes de T Amérique, Paris, 1816 (Mexican civilization Puebla…..... 11,761 | 704,372| Puebla….....06| 64,588 picture-writing, calendar, &¢.). Travels and descriptions of antiquities, &c.: — Tlaxcala …....e0.- v-| 1,498 | 183,498 | Thaxcala…..sessesce 4,300 Dnpaix (in Kingsborough); C. Nebel, Viaje Pintoresco y Arqueologico sobre la Federal Distuict-.. 1 “85 | 354,340 | Mexico….e.~.00.| 241,110 Republica Mejicana. Paris, 1839; F. de Waldeck, Voyage Pittoresque et Archéo- Lower California ; logigque dans la Province d Yucatan, Paris, 1838, and Palenqué et Autres Ruines, (Territory) ..... } 59,033 23,195 | La Paz. soe. «sser0ee 2 ae a ae pate eg Ruines Américaines, av cc texte par Viollet-le-Duc Sas | as

aris, 1563; J. L. Stephens, /ncidents o7 Travel in Central Ameri ; id 9 5 York, 1841; Incidents of Travel in Yucatan, New York. 1858: Bray fe. Tew 763,804 (9,577,279

: $ l Brantz Mayer Mexico, New York, 1854; Tylor, Anahuac, or Mexico and the Mexicans, Borcca,

1861, &e.

Since the appearance of A. von Humboldt’s classic Physical work on New Spain, as Mexico was called in the colonial features. times, this region has continued to be regarded as forming Plateaus

(E. B. T.)

Plate I. II, THE REPUBLIC OF MEXICO.

and

Mexico, Aztec Meritli1 (Estados Unidos de Mexico), is a federal republic in North America, bounded N. by the United States (California, Arizona, and New Mexico), E. by Texas and the Gulf of Mexico, S. by Guatemala and

1 In this, as in allother Aztec names, the (or 7) represents the English sound sh; hence Mexttli and Mexico should be properly pronounced Meshitli, Meshico, But they do not appear to have ever been so pro- nounced by the Spaniards, who naturally gave to the x its ordinary Spanish sound of the German ch.

a main link in the vast: chain supposed to stretch across the entire length of the American continent from Cape

? These figures, in the absence of scientific surveys and a trust-. worthy census, are necessarily more or less approximate. The areas are those of Ripley and Dana, based on A. Garcia Cuba's Carta geo- grafica (Mexico, 1874); the populations of the states and capitals are the estimates of Emiliano Busto in his Estadistica de la Republica Mexicana (Mexico, 1880). A writer in the Times of December ds

eee estimates the whole population at 12,000,000, much too high a ignre.

—

Horn to Behring's Strait. But more recent research, and especially the surveys made by the French staff during the military operations between 1861-—67,! have shown that this grand generalization must be abandoned. In remote geological epochs a marine channel seems to have flowed between the northern and southern sections of the New World at the isthmus of Panama, while Mexico itself appears to be mainly a distinct geographical region of relatively recent upheaval. Here there nowhere exists a continuous mountain range, to which might propcrly be applied the designation 'Cordillera of the Andes," an expression which in any case is not current north of the isthmus of Tehuantepec. Mexico forms, on the contrary, a vast table-land, somewhat in the shape of a cornucopia, with its narrow end tapering to the south-south-east, its convex and concave sides facing the Pacific and Atlantic respectively, and with a general inclination northwards. Most of the so-called Cordilleras are merely the "cumbres " or escarpments of this plateau, which falls abruptly towards the Atlantic, and through.a series of well-marked terraces (formerly lacustrine basins) towards the

Pacific. Thus the carriage road from the capital runs in tolerably easy stages successively through the Tetla (8000 feet), Mescala (5500), Papagallo (1800), and Peregrino (1600) valleys down to Tepes within 40 miles of the seaport of San Blas. But the southern central plateau of Anahuac maintains its mean elevation of 7000 to 8000 feet almost everywhere to within 35 or 40 miles of the Atlantic. Hence the railway opened in 1872 between Vera Cruz and the capital has had to be carried by tremendously steep gradients to a height of nearly 8000 feet within a total distance of 263 miles.? The general but gradual northerly tilt of the table-land is shown by the altitudes of the capital, Durango, Chihuahua, and Paso del Norte on the United States frontier, which are respectively 7600, 6630, 4600, and 3800 feet.

At the same time the scarps rise in many places con- siderably above the mean level of the plateau, which is itself intersected and broken into a number of secondary valleys by several short cross ridges, generally following the normal direction from north-north-west to south-south- east. The most continuous range is the Sierra Madre of the Pacific, which may be traced at a mean elevation of over 10,000 feet from Oajaca to Arizona, and which from Guadalajara to the northern frontier is crossed by no carriage route. Parallel to this is the Lower Californian range (Sierra de la Giganta, 3000 feet), which, however, falls abruptly eastwards, like the Atlantic escarpments. The Californian peninsula seems to have been detached from the mainland when the general upheaval took place which produced the vast chasm now flooded. by the Gulf of California. Corresponding with the Sierra Madre of the Pacific on the west are the more interrupted eastern scarps of the central plateau, which sweep round the Gulf of Mexico as the Sierras Madres of Nuevo-Leon and Tamaulipas at an elevation of about 6000 feet. These are crossed by the carriage routes from Tula to Tampico (highest pass 4820 feet), from Saltillo to Monterey (3400), and at several other points.

Of the-central cross ridges the most important orogra- phically and historically is the Cordillera de Anahuac,?

1 The results of these surveys are embodied in the Carte du Mexique, scale 1: 3,000,000, published at Paris in 1873.

2 In the steepest parts the mean is 2°51 in 100, or 1334 feet to the mile. The exact elevation of the capital above the sea at Vera Cruz appears to be 7550 feet, or 80 more than Humboldt's estimate.

3 The term Anahuac, meaning in Aztec ‘‘ near the water,” seems to have been originally restricted to the central lacustrine basin of Tenochtitlan. But when the Aztecs reached both oceans they extended it to the Pacific coast between Tututepec and Guatemala (Anahuac- Ayotlan), and to the Atlantic coast between the Alvarado and Tabasco rivers (Anahuac-Xicalanco). The original use of the word is

which surrounds the Mexican (Tenochtitlan) and Puebla valleys, and which is supposed to culminate with Popo-

| catepetl (17,853 feet) and Ixtaccihuatl (15,705).4 But

these giants belong to a different or rather a more recent system of igneous upheaval, running from sea to sea between 18° 59’ and 19° 12’ N. in almost a straight line east and west, consequently nearly at right angles to the main axis of the central plateau. The line is clearly marked by several extinct cones and by five active or quiescent volcanoes, of which the highest is Popocatepetl, lying south of the capital nearly midway between the Pacific and Atlantic. East of this central point of the system are Citlaltepetl, better known as the Peak of Orizaba (17,176 feet), 70 miles inland, and San Martin or Tuxtla (9708 feet) on the coast south of Vera Cruz, to which correspond on the west the recently upheaved Jorullo (4000 feet) in Michoacan, Colima (12,800) near the coast in Jalisco, and the volcanic Revillagigedo group in the Pacific. South of this line, and nearly parallel, are the Sierras of Guerrero, and south of the Tehuantepec isthmus those of Oajaca and Soconusco towards the Guatemala frontier. In the same direction run the islands of Cuba and Hayti, which probably belong to the same Central- American system.

Mexico is thus physically connected through its older plateau formations with the North-American table-lands, and through its more recent volcanic upheavals with the Central-American igneous region. But as it advances northwards this region loses in underground energy ; hence, notwithstanding the remarkable upheaval of Jorullo in 1759, the Mexican

cones show little signs of activity,® and the land is now scarcely ever wasted by violent eartli- quakes. Such phenomena are most frequent in the Puebla valley ; but, although often accompanied by the peculiar underground rumblings known as bramidos, they are seldom of a destructive character. The natives speak of them rather as temblores, or “tremblings,” than true terremotos.®

In a region where lofty ranges and plateau forma- Hydro- tions with steep escarpments approach almost everywhere graphy.

to within a few miles of the coast, little space is left for the development of large river basins. Most of the streams are little more than mountain torrents rushing impetuously from terrace to terrace seawards. Many also

\ still current amongst the natives as practically synonymous with Central Mexico. As a strictly geographical expression it is vaguely and often incorrectly used by modern writers.

4 This elevation is based on the calculations of Humboldt, Glennie, and Gerolt ; but in 1857 Sonntag assigned an extreme height of over 17,000 feet to the highest peak of Ixtaccihuatl. Popocatepetl is usually supposed to be the highest point of North America; but the recent United States surveys have transferred this honour to Mount Elias on the Alaska coast, which appears to be certainly over 19,000 feet high.

° Popocatepetl emits smoke, whence its name, meaning in Aztec **¢Smoking Mountain,” from popoca “to smoke,” and tepetl ‘** moun- tain.” Since the conquest three eruptions have been reported (1519, 1539, 1540); but the geological evidence seems to indicate that there has been no volcanic action for thousands of years. Orizaba, whose native name means ‘‘Star Mountain,” has been quiescent since 1566. Colima still frequently ejects ashes and smoke; but both Jorullo and Tuxtla are quiescent, the last having been silent since the violent eruption of March 2, 1793. Even the .Mal-pays, or hot dis- trict round Jorullo, has cooled down, and is now again clothed with vegetation.

§ It is noteworthy that the seismic waves flow normally along the indicated line from east to west, thereby confirming Huniboldt’s view that under

about 19° N. there is a deep rent in the earth's crust, through which at different periods the underground fires have broken at various points between thé Gulf of Mexico and the Revilla- vigedo group. ‘‘ Only on the supposition that these volcanoes, which are on the surface connected by a skeleton of volcanic rocks, are also united under the surface by a chain of volcanic elements in continual activity, may we account for the earthquakes which in the direction mentioned cause the American continent, from the Gulf of Mexico to the Pacific Ocean, to oscillate atthe same time”’ (Egloffstein, p. 37).

flow through the profound rocky gorges or barrancas, as they are here called, which form a characteristic feature of the Mexican table-lands.1 On the east side some of these barrancas, here running mostly west and east, attain depths of 800 to 1000 feet in the unfossiliferous limestones of that region ; and even on the west coast the De Beltran caiion is flanked by sheer rocky walls over 500 feet high. Hence the rivers are almost useless for irrigation purposes, and available as means of communication only for short distances in their lower reaches, where they flow through the narrow alluvial strips of level coast-lands to the sea. Even the Rio Grande del Norte, which is by far the largest, and which forms the frontier line between Mexico and Texas, is navigable by large vessels only for a few miles above its port of Matamoras. The Rio Grande de Santiago, the largest on the Pacific side, is almost every- where obstructed by falls and rapids. On this coast the next in importance is the Mercala, or Rio de las Balsas, which, like the Panuco, Alvaredo, Coatzacoalas, Grijalva, and Usumacinta flowing to the Gulf of Mexico, is subject to sudden freshets during the rains.

At this season the waters which find no seaward outlet are collected in the depressions of the plateaus, where extensive tracts remain flooded for several months at a time. But these lacustrine basins of the Anahuac and Chihuahua table-lands, standing at elevations of from 4000 to 7000 feet, are, by evaporation under semi-tropical suns, rapidly reduced to their normal level. The diminished size of the Anahuac lakes shows that since the conquest a steady process of desiccation has been going on, due prob-

‘ably to the reckless destruction of the upland forests by

the European settlers. None of these lakes are of great size except Lake Chapala, which is traversed by the Rio ‘trande de Santiago, and has a reputed area of about 1300 square miles. Amongst those of the plateau especially noteworthy for their magnificent scenery are Tezcuco and Chalco, in whose sparkling waters are reflected the sur- rounding volcanic peaks and extinct craters of the Anahuac table-land, with a background formed by the Cordilleras, whose snowy summits rise here and there high above the dark pine forests of the lower slopes.

In the higher ranges the prevailing formations are granites, which seem also to form the foundation of the plateaus, above which rise the traps, basalts, mineral- bearing porphyries, and more recent lavas. Hence Lyell’s theory that Mexico consisted originally of granitic ranges with intervening valleys subsequently filled up to the level of the plateaus by subterranean eruptions. Igneous rocks of every geologic epoch certainly to a large extent form the superstructure of the central plateau. But the Mexican table-land seems to consist mainly of metamorphic forma- tions, which have been partly upheaved, partly inter- penetrated and overlaid by igneous masses of all epochs, and which are chiefly represented by shales, greywacke, greenstones, silicious schists, and especially unfossiliferous limestone. All these formations are alike remarkable for the abundance and variety of their metalliferous ores, such as silver, silver-glance, copper, and gold. Gneiss and micaceous schists prevail in Oajaca and on all the southern slopes facing both oceans. But the highest ranges are formed mainly of plutonic and volcanic rocks, such as granites, syenites, diorites, mineral-bearing trachytes, basalts, porphyries, obsidian, pearlstone, sulphur, pumice, lavas, tufa, and other recent volcanic discharges. Obsidian (itztlc) was the chief material formerly used by the natives

1‘ Near the mountain ranges, from which the water after heavy rains rushes down in innumerable forest streams, these ravines are filled with incredible rapidity as high as 80 feet, —the torrent importing (sic) trees and bearing away rocks with a thundering noise and irresistible power ” (Egloffstein, p. 22).

ik OPO

in the manufacture of their cutting implements, as shown by the quarries of the Cerro de las Navajas (“‘ Knife Cliff ”) near Zimapan. Vast deposits of pumice and the purest sulphur are found at Huichapa and in many of the craters. But immeasurably the most valuable rocks are the argentiferous porphyries and schists of the central plateau and in Sinaloa, unless they are destined to be rivalled by the auriferous deposits of Sonora.? Horizontal and stratified rocks, of extremely limited extent in the south, are largely developed in the northern states, and chalk becomes very prevalent towards. the Rio Grande and Rio Gila valleys. To this chalk and to the sandstones are probably to be referred the sandy plains which cover vast tracts in North Mexico, stretching thence far into New Mexico and Texas. Here the Bolson de Mapimi, a vast rocky wilderness inhabited only by wild tribes, occupies a space of perliaps 50,000 square miles in Coahuila and parts of the surround- ing states.

None of the horizontal layers seem to be very rich in ores, which are found mainly in the metamorphic, palzeozoic, and hypogene rocks of Durango, Chihuahua, and the south. Apart from Sinaloa and Sonora, which are now known to contain vast stores of the precious metals, nearly all the historical mines lie on the south central plateau at eleva- tions of from 5500 to 9500 feet. A line drawn from the capital to Guanajuato, and thence northwards to the mining town of Guadalupe y Calvo in Chihuahua, and southwards to Oajaca, thus cutting the main axis of upheaval at an angle of 45°, will intersect probably the richest known argentiferous region in the whole world. The central group of mines in the three mineral districts of Guanajuato, Zacatecas, and Catorze (San Luis Potosi), which have yielded more than half of all the silver hitherto found in Mexico, lie between 21° and 24° 30’ N., within an area of about 13,000 square miles. Here the Veta Madre – lode of Guanajuato alone produced £504,000 between 1556 and 1803, besides £10,000 of gold. This metal, however, occurs chiefly, not on the plateau in association with silver, but on the slopes facing the Pacific, and apparently in greatest abundance in Sonora, near the. auriferous region of New California. In recent times over half of the silver produced in the whole world has been supplied by Mexico, and the total yield of the precious metals between 1537 and 1880 was as under :8—

Gold. Silver. Total.

15387 to 1821…... 1821 to 1880…...

£14,000,000 | £418,000, 000 10,000,000 | 180,000,000

£482, 000,000

190,000, 000

£24,000,000 | £598,000,000 | £622,000,000

Of other minerals the most important are copper, found ina pure state near the city of Guanajuato, and associ- ated with gold in Chihuahua, Sonora, Guerrero, Jalisco,

2 On the general character and distribution of the igneous formations Von Egloffstein remarks: ‘‘Intimate relations exist between the metalliferous and non-metalliferous porphyries. The metalliferous por- phyry is less frequent, but constitutes the most important formation, bearing the precious metals, . . . embracing the rich lodes of Real-del- Monte, Pachuea, Chico, Capula, and Santa Rosa, all of great richness and magnitude. They further form the mineral districts of Augan- gueo, Oro, Huautla, &c., and part of the mountains of Zimapan and Istapa-del-Oro. The lodes found in this porphyry are charactcrized by their magnitude and the consistency of the ores they contain. . . The richest ores of native silver and sulphuret, chloride, and oxide of silver are found in the lodes of Real-del-Monte, Pachuca, and Santa Rosa. . . . The gold seems to exist in small particles in the meta- morphic porphyry mountains, whence it is carried by the rains to the valleys as the rocks become disintegrated” (pp. 6-8).

3 Times correspondent, December 7, 1882. Guanajuato seems to be still the greatest producer, yielding from £1,500,000 to £1,750,000 yearly, although the great Valenciana mine is flooded, and of the hun- dred opened only fifty-two are now worked (Geiger).

Cliniate and. vegeta- tion.

Michoacan, and elsewhere; iron in immense masses in Michoacan and Jalisco, and in Durango, where the Cerro del Mercado is a solid mountain of magnetic iron ore ; lead associated with silver, especially in Oajaca; tin in Michoacan and Jalisco; sulphur in many craters ; platinum recently found in Tlaxcala and Hidalgo; cinnabar also recently in Morelos and Guerrero; “steppe salt” in the sandy districts of the north; “bitter salt” at Tepeyac; coal in limited quantities at various points; bismuth in many parts; marble, alabaster, gypsum, and rock-salt in great abundance throughout the plateau and the sierras. In 1882 there were open altogether 569 mines :—541 silver, 14 gold, 4 copper, 4 lead, 3 salt, 2 coal, and 1 mercury. Intersected about midway by the Tropic of Cancer, and stretching across seventeen parallels of latitude, Mexico, from its position alone, necessarily enjoys a great diversity of climate. But from its peculiar configuration this feature is affected far more by the relief of the land than by its distance from pole or equator. This is especi- ally true of the more fertile and populous section lying within the torrid zone, where three distinct climatic regions are distinguished, not according to their horizontal, but according to their vertical position. The temperature falling steadily with the elevation of the land, which here rises rapidly from sea-level to nearly 18,000 feet above the surrounding waters, the low-lying coast-lands, up to about 3000 feet on the scarps and terraces of the central plateau, are comprised within the first zone of terras calientes, or “hot lands.” Within this zone are included all the sandy and marshy tracts fringing the Gulf of Mexico, the lower slopes facing eastwards and exposed to the hot and moist winds from the Caribbean Sea, and most of Yucatan and the Tehuantepec isthmus, besides the narrow strip between the uplands and the Pacific which broadens northwards along the east side of the Gulf of California. Here the mean temperature varies from 77° to 82° Fahr., seldom falling below 60°, but often rising to 105°, and in the sultry districts of Vera Cruz and Acapulco to 110°. The extreme north-western parts of this region come almost within the rainless zone, and the Californian peninsula itself is subject to excessive droughts, rendering it almost uninhabitable. But farther south the climate on both seaboards may be described as humid, hot, and extremely unhealthy, especially for Europeans. Yellow fever and black vomit are here endemic. But these scourges are at least compensated by a magnificent tropical

vegetation and extensive virgin forests abounding in valuable timbers, dyewoods, and medicinal and other useful plants. Of the 114 species of trees and cabinet woods, 17 of oil-bearing plants, and over 60 of medicinal plants and dyewoods indigenous to Mexico, and often differing specifically from kindred varieties in Central and South America, by far the larger part are repre- sented in the tierras calientes. Amongst the most im- portant of these forest plants are mahogany, rosewood,

? Lorenzo Castro, Mexico in 1882. According to this authority the total yield of the Mexican mines between 1537 and 1880 was £776,276,000, while another estimate based on a report of the Mexican mint gives it at £930,786,000. Of this a large amount has been coined in Mexico, where there were eleven mints at work in 1876, with a total annual yield of about £5,000,000. The total coinage since the conquest has been estimated as high as £600,000,000, not more than 5 percent. of this being gold. With regard tocoal, the ex- istence of which in Mexico has been recently denied by Mr Bigelow in Harper's Magazine, official returns for 1882 give a list of over twenty places where it has been found, though nowhere as yet in large quan- tities. Petroleum also appears to be very abundant in several localities. Amongst other natural products mention should be made of amber, found on the Yucatan coast. Mineral springs are very numerous everywhere on the plateaus and terrace-lands. The most famous are El Pefion and N, Sefiora de Guadelupe near the capital, and Aguas Calientes farther north.

copal, caucho (india-rubber), jalap, sarsaparilla, and vanilla. Here also maize, supplying the staple food of the people, yields prodigious returns, multiplying from two hundred to four hundred fold, and affording two, three, and even four successive crops within the year. Rice, indigo, cotton, tobacco, and coffee all thrive well, while sugar, cocoa, the banana, and several varieties of beans are largely cultivated. The tobacco of Vera Cruz and Tabasco, the coffee of Colima, and the cocoa of Oajaca and Chiapas are of unrivalled excellence.

To the "hot lands" succeed in vertical position the tuerras templadas, or "temperate lands," which comprise all the higher terraces and the central

plateaus themselves between about 3000 and 8000 feet. With a mean tempera- ture of from 62° to 70° Fahr., and oscillating between such moderate extremes as 50° and 86°, this region enjoys one of the very finest climates on the globe. The Puebla and Anahuac table-lands are described by enthusiastic travellers as “terrestrial Edens,” with a perennial spring symbolized by the evergreen oak, cedars, and many analogous plants, which here attain their greatest perfec- tion. The transition from the lower zone is often very gradual; and, while endemic fevers cease altogether at altitudes of 2700 and 2800 feet, the tropical flora invades many parts of the terrace lands, and even of the plateaus to heights of 4000 and 5000 feet.2 A certain uniformity is thus imparted to the Mexican landscape by the wide range of the maize, wheat, tobacco, vine, coffee, and other plantations, as well as by the palms, evergreens, mango, olive, orange, lemon, yucca, and an endless variety of the cactus family, one species of which forms hedges 20 feet high on the Anahuac uplands. The central zone is on the whole drier than the southern lowlands, although the scarps facing seawards are often wrapped in the fogs and mists of the intercepted moisture-charged atmospheric currents. The heaviest recorded rainfall (90 to 100 inches) occurs in the healthy Huatusco district of Vera Cruz, at an altitude of 4380 feet.

In the highest zone of tierras frias, or “cold lands,” embracing all the highlands from about 8000 feet upwards, the rainfall is five times less than on the tierras templadas. Hence snow rests throughout the year only on the four most elevated peaks of Popocatepetl, Orizaba, Nevada de Toluca (15,000 feet), and Ixtaccihuatl. Characteristic both of the tierras frias and templadas~is the maguey (Agave mexicana), whose fruit is edible, and whiose fermented juice has from time immemorial supplied the famous pulgue, or national beverage of the Mexicans. From the fibre of the heniquen, an allied species, is pro- duced the “Sisal hemp” of commerce, which has in recent years become the staple export of Yucatan.

Speaking generally, the four seasons are clearly marked north of 28° N. lat. only. South of that parallel they merge in the estacion de las aguas, or rainy season, from May to October, and the estacvon seca, or dry season, which prevails for the rest of the year. The rains generally begin on the east coast,

gradually moving westwards. In the Pacific the moist atmospheric currents are deflected northwards, whence the striking contrast between the

2 On the Amilpas plateau, which stretches south of Popocatepetl at amean height of 5000 to 5400 feet, “coffee, sugar, and indigo are culti- vated, and most of the tropical fruits grow luxuriantly ” (Egloffstein, p. 17). The saine authority gives the limits of vegetation in this region at 12,614 feet, and the snow-line at 14,960 feet. He observes that ‘‘ nothing is more surprising to the traveller than the varieties of climate under this zone, which vary according to the different elevations above the sea. In a few hours we descended from the cold regions of the fir and the oak, on the heights of Ozumba, to a hot climate, tierra caliente, where we found the most luxuriant vegetation, passing in that short time through successive changes of the most diversified species of trees, plants, birds, insects” (p. 22).

Fauna.

Agricul- ture.

Indus- tries,

Trade.

wooded slopes of British Columbia and the treeless crests of the arid Lower Californian peninsula.

In its fauna no less than in its flora Mexico forms a land of transition between North and Central America. In common with the north it has several varieties of the bear, the wolf, coyote, skunk, bison, squirrel, _ beaver, marten, otter, rattlesnake, heloderm,! mocking-bird, and many wild fowl; while its monkeys (five species), puma, jaguar, ocelot, sloth, tapir, alligators (two species), iguana, boa, scorpions, tarantulas, and numerous brilliantly coloured parrots, trogons, and humming-birds connect it with the southern regions. Peculiar to Mexico, and distinguishing it from most

tropical and subtropical lands, are its song- sters, of which, besides the mocking-bird (zeuzontl), as many as twenty species have been enumerated. The coasts are well supplied with fish and turtles, while the pearl fisheries of the Gulf of California continue to be a source of wealth to that otherwise unproductive territory, yielding in 1875 pearls to the value of £16,000, and £28,000 worth of shells. All the European domestic animals thrive well, and vast herds of cattle, horses, and sheep are found on the well-stocked ranchos of the northern states. Here some of the more prosperous breeders own from twenty to thirty thousand head of oxen, and next to the precious metals hides and cattle are among the chief articles of export.

But in the south stock-breeding yields everywhere to agriculture as the chief occupation of the people. Being largely volcanic, the soil is here extremely fertile wherever water can be had in sufficient quantities for irrigation purposes. Next to maize, which with beans and chilli forms the almost exclusive food of the Indians, the most important crop is probably sugar, of which over 60 million pounds are annually produced in the state of Morelos alone. Coffee is extensively cultivated on the lower slopes, and now exported in considerable quantities, especially to the United States. The tobacco and cotton crops are yearly increasing in importance, while from the maguey is extracted, besides pulque, a spirit called mezcal to the annual value of about £750,000. The aborigines are partly employed as free labourers on the plantations, and partly hold small plots liable to a light Government tax. The food crops thus raised were valued in 1873 at £14,500,000, the agricultural produce at £30,000,000, and the landed property at £85,000,000, but the last item was estimated by the minister of finance at fully three times that sum. The value of arable freehold land was stated in 1882 to be from £1 to £3 per acre, accord- ing to its proximity to or remoteness from rivers.

Of the industries strictly so called, those directly connected with agricultural interests have alone acquired any considerable develop- ment. Such are sugar refining, carried on on a vast scale, especi- allyin Morelos ; brewing and distilling, chiefly from maguey; paper- making from various pulps and fibres ; grist-mills and saw-mills, especially in Puebla, Querétaro, Guadalajara, and Saltillo. A few iron foundrics have been at work for some years, and stout hand- woven cotton and woollen fabrics are produced in

many of the large towns. The rebozos (shawls) of Leon and Salvatierra have a wide repute, while Texcoco and Puebla are noted for their porcelain and glass-ware. Among the petty industries are clay and rag figures, artificial flowers, wooden toys, and gold filigree work, in the produc- tion of which the natives often display remarkable taste and skill.

But all these manufactured wares are solely intended to supply the local wants, so that the exports have hitherto been restricted almost exclusively to the produce of the land and of the mines. Of the former the chief items are coflee, Sisal hemp, tobacco hides, lumber, cochineal, indigo, and other dyes, sarsaparilla, vanilla, orchil, india-rubber. But the precious metals still continue to constitute fully two-thirds of all the exports, which in 1882 had a total estimated value of about £6,000,000. In the same year an

1A specimen of this curious creature, the only known venomous lizard (Heloderma suspectum), reached the London Zoological Gardens in 1882; its habitat is the north of Mexico, and New Mexico, Arizona, and Texas,

CO

equal suni represented the imports, the leading items of which were cotton, linen, silk, and woollen goods, metals, hardware, machinery, and provisions. Although diplomatic and consular relations with Great Britain have been suspended since 1867, that country still continues to enjoy by far the largest share of the foreign trade, taking about £2,000,000 of the exports, and sending in return about two-thirds of all the imports, for 1882. Next in importance, in descending order, is the trade with the United States, France, Germany, Spain, and Columbia.

Probably four-fifths of the exchanges now pass through Vera Cruz, which, since the opening of the railway to the Anahuac plateau, has become the natural out-port of the capital and all the central states. It is connected by several lines of ocean steamers with Liverpool, Southampton, St Nazaire, and the Atlantic States of North America. On the Pacific seaboard, where the trade is largely in German hands, Acapulco and the other ports also enjoy regular steam communication with San Francisco and Panama. No accurate returns are available of the shipping; but the yearly arrivals in all

the Mexican ports are stated to average about five thousand,—not more than one-fifth under the national flag.

Till recently the means of internal locomotion were mainly

Com-

limited to the wretched bridle-paths from the central plateau over munica-
the sierras and terrace-lands down to a few points on both coasts, tion.

and to twenty-four regular lines of diligences under one manage- inent. But since the completion of the line from Vera Cruz to the capital, with a branch to Puebla, the Mexican railway system has acquired a considerable development. The Inter-Oceanic line across the Tehuantepee isthmus is in progress ; the Great Central Trunk line running northwards through Chihuahua will ere long effect a junction with the North-American net- work; and at the end of 1882 there had been opened to traffic altogether 2219 miles. For that year the number of passengers carried was 8,250,000, and of mer- chandise 273 miillion tons, with net earnings £940,000, or £800 per mile. Still more developed is the telegraph system, which is now extended to all the state capitals, and through the Mexico-Mata- moras line to the United States and the rest of the world. The 8150 miles open in 1882 forwarded 750,000 messages, or in the proportion of 8 per 100 inhabitants.

For the same year the estimated revenue was £6,140,000, and expenditure £6,300,000. The foreign debt is stated to be £19,600,000, and the internal about £10,000,000, or altogether at the rate of £3 per head of the population. Most of the foreign debt is owned in England, but the British claims had long been practically repudiated by the Mexican Government. At the end of 1882, however, a semi-official suggestion was made that a settle- ment might be effected by Mexico paying 1 per cent. on the capital for the first ten years, 2 for the second, and 3 there- after, the whole suin, amounting to £16,000,000, to be liquidated in fifty years.2 The revenue is chiefly derived from the customs, and about £1,750,000 of the expenditure is absorbed by the army, the peace footing of which is 22,500 men of all arms. Beyond a few coastguard steamers maintained mainly for revenue purposes, there is no navy. An indication of financial improvement is afforded by the establishment in 1882 of the Mexican National Bank by a

French company with a capital of £4,000,000. ‘This bank is privileged to issue paper money up to £12,000,000, in return allow- ing the supreme executive to overdraw their account up to £2,000,000. A further symptom of revival is presented by the increasing business of the general post-office, which in 1880 forwarded 4,406,000 letters and packages through 873 offices.

Education also has made marked progress since the final separation of church and state in 1857. In that year the old university of Mexico, a purely ccclesiastical institution after the model of Salamanca and the Sorbonne, was abolished, or rather was re- placed by special schools of law, medicine, letters, agriculture, mines, sciences, fine arts, and commerce, and a military college. These, as well as numerous lower schools, including two hundred in the capital alone, are all maintained by the state, while national schools are supported by public grants in all the large towns, and higher institutions in the capitals of the several states. There are in all nearly five thousand public schools, besides establishments for the deaf and dumb, the blind, and juvenile delinquents, and numerous charitable foundations maiutained by voluntary contri- butions.

Roman Catholicism, which under the Spanisli rule was alone tolerated, continued after the separation to be the state religion till 1857. none are Officially recognized. The great majority of the Indios Jideles, mestizoes, and creoles still adhere at least outwardly to the Roman Church, which is administered by a hierarchy of three arch- bishops (Mexico, Morelia, and Guadalajara) and twelve bishops. But by the organic laws of 1856 and 1859 all ecclesiastical estates, at one time comprising over one-third of the soil, were nationalized,

Z This advance towards a settlement was put forward in the Two Republics of December 5, 1882, a Mexican journal which reflects the views of the Government on all matters of foreign policy.

Finance.

Educa- tion.

Religion.

Since then, while all churches enjoy equal protection,

Admiuis- tration.

History. Colonial period.

ME XTC O

the regular clergy suppressed, and their monasteries, together with | with a people of superior culture

all other superfluous ecclesiastical strnctures, appropriated by the state. During the last few years American Protestant missions have claimed some partial success, and the so-called '* Church of Jesus," an undenominational body of a somewhat original type, has found a number of adherents, especially on the Anahnac table- land. But the Jndios bravos, or uncivilized aborigines, everywhere follow the old spirit worship, while the Christianity of the Fideles is little more than a cloak for the continuous practice of the furmer Aztec heathenism. The pomp of the Roman ritual is supplemented by the feasts of the national worship, and the Pagan deities of the old cult are still represented by the saints of the Roman calendar}

Mexico constitutes at present a confederation of states modelled on that of the North-American Union, and administered according to the constitution of 1857 as amended in 1873-74. By popular suffrage are chosen the president, the upper house (fifty-two members), and the supreme judiciary for four years, and the lower house (two hundred and twenty-seven members) for two years. The senate, abolished in 1853, was restored in 1874, and the chief justice is ex officio vice-president. The federal states, which are divided into a number of administrative districts, enjoy full autonomy in all local matters. The several constitutions are modelled on that of the central government, and like it comprise three departments—legislative, executive, and judicial. Each state is repre- sented in the federal congress in the proportion of one member for every 80,000 inhabitants, and in the federal senate by two members elected by suffrage in the local congress, All external affairs and questions of general interest are reserved for the central government. The constitution as now established thus represents in theory the complete overthrow of medizvalism, and the

absolute triumph of the new ideas which in the Old World are still in so many places struggling for the ascendency.

It is this struggle between privilege and popular rights that lends its human interest to the otherwise monotonous record of unresisted oppression and apparently aimless revolutions which characterize the early and the later periods of Mexican history, from the overthrow of the native rule down to the present day. The early or colonial period covers exactly three hundred years,—from the death in 1521 of Guatemozin, last of the Aztec emperors, to the withdrawal of the last Spanish viceroy, Don Juan O'Donoju, in 1821. During these three centuries the attitude of the masses was one rather of sullen submission than of active resistance to grinding oppression. By the Spanish Govern- ment Mexico was looked on merely as a vast metalliferous region, to be jealously guarded against foreign intrusion and worked exclusively for the benefit of the crown. The natives were evangelized chiefly for the purpose of being employed as slaves above and below ground, and thus was introduced from the West Indies the system of reparti- muentos, or distribution of the aborigines on the plantations and in the mines. But, while this system proved fatal to the natives of Cuba and Hayti, where it had to be replaced by negro labour, the hardier populations of the Anahuac plateau successfully resisted its blighting influences. It proved in fact more disastrous to the oppressor than to the oppressed. In those days Spain was commonly compared to a sieve, never the richer for all the boundless wealth drawn from the New World. But the aborigines derived at least some advantage from contact and partial fusion

1 On the general state of religion in Mexico Bates well remarks:— "The educated classes conform to the outward ceremonies and ordi- nances of the church, while inwardly believing little or nothing of its dogmas. The lower grades of society are, on the other hand, steeped in the most grovelling superstition, intensified by many traditional Indian reminiscences. This section of the community yields a blind obedience to the clergy, notwithstanding the severe laws with which the Government has endeavoured to counteract the influence of the priests. Even so recently as 1874 a genuine case of witch-burning occurred in Mexico."'—Central America, p. 34.

ane

This fusion, which may be regarded as the chief outcome of the colonial admini-

stration, has contributed to the formation of the present exceedingly complex Mexican nationality, in which the Indian continues to be the predominating element. Taking the whole population at less than ten millions, its ethnical distribution appears to be at present as under :—

i, MBP bleed: Vrtevs.o—.. 35.2. «. canecss-coccece.neesees see 5,000,000 2. Mestizoes (half-caste Indians and whites) ..... 3,000,000 3. Creoles (whites of Spanish descent) .....ccccceseceee 1,500,000 4. Gachupines ? (Spaniards by birth).....00..c00000. 50,000 5. Other Europeans and Americans ….....00ceeccc0eeee 100,000 6. Walled meer gee 6… occ cocscccesceseceses secsccees 10,000 7. Zambos or ‘*Chinos” (Indo-Africans) .....0000.c00cc008 45,000 8. Mulattoes (Burafricams).....cccccccccccssecsseceses oe 5,000

Under the Spanish administration, which was marked on the surface by few stirring events, such as warlike expedi- tions, civil strife, or serious intcrnal troubles, Mexico, or New Spain, formed a viceroyalty at one time stretching from the isthmus of Panama to Vancouver’s Island. Antonio de Mendoza, appointed in 1535 after government by audzencias had proved a signal failure, was the first of sixty-four viceroys who ruled with almost autocratic power, but scarcely any of whom has left a name in history. Don Juan de Acufia (1722-34) is mentioned as having been the only native American among them, and Don Juan V. G. Pacheco (1789-94) had at least the merit of betraying some regard for the social welfare of his subjects. Under him a regular police, the lighting and draining of towns, and other municipal improvements were introduced.

But down to the early years of the present century all emoluments in church and state, most of the large planta- tions, of the mines, and of the commerce of the country, continued to be monopolized by the privileged gachupines, whom the creoles and mestizoes had already begun to regard as aliens. Hence the first reactionary movements, stimulated by Napoleon’s deposition of King Ferdinand and arrest of the viceroy Hurrigaray in 1808,

were aimed rather against odious class distinctions and the intolerable oppression of these aliens than against the abstract rights of the Spanish crown. The long smouldering spirit of discontent at last broke into open revolt in 1810 at Guanajuato, under the leadership of Don Miguel Hidalgo. After his defeat and execution in 1811, the struggle was continued by Morelos, who, like Hidalgo, was a priest, and shared his fate in 1815. But he had already called a national assembly at Chilpanzinco, and by this body Mexican independence was for the first time proclaimed in 1813. A guerilla warfare kept the national spirit alive till a fresh stimulus was given to it by the Spanish revolution of 1820. Under the leadership of the ‘ Liberator” Iturbide, Mexican inde- pendence was again proclaimed on February 24, 1821, and the same year the capital was surrendered by O’Donoju, the last of the viceroys. But even after the revolt had thus been crowned with success a change of personnel rather than of system was contemplated ; nor was Iturbide proclaimed emperor until the Mexican crown had been’ declined by a royal prince of Spain.

Almost simultaneously with this event the republican Period of

standard had been raised by Santa Anna at Vera Cruz ee d .

(December 1822). Thus the nation had no sooner got ri of foreign rule than it became torn by internal dissension. But henceforth the struggle is not so much against the privileged classes as between Conservative and Liberal principles,—the former represented chiefly by the church and the superstitious populace, the latter by the more enlightened but not less unscrupulous sections of the com- munity. From both the Indios Bravos, that is, about a third of the whole population, hold entirely aloof, and take advantage of the public disorders to continue their aggres-

2 From the Aztec Gatzopin, centaur; also known as Chapetones.

sive warfare against all alike! Events now follow in quick succession, and as many as three hundred successful or abortive revolutions are recorded during the brief but stormy life of Mexican national independence.2 But amid the confusion of empires, republics, dictatorships, and military

usurpations, succeeding each other with bewilder- ing rapidity, the thoughtful student will still detect a steady progress towards the ultimate triumph of those Liberal ideas which lie at the base of true national freedom. A brief tabulated summary of the more salient incidents in

this eventful struggle must here suffice :—

1821-23, Mexican independence acknowledged by Spain ; regency under Iturbide, who (1822) is elected hereditary constitn- tional emperor; in December Santa Anna proclaims the republic in Vera Cruz.

1823-24. Provisional Government; Iturbide abdicates ; withdraws to London, but returning is shot (1824).

1824. First Liberal constitution, —“ Acta Constitutiva de la Federa- cion Mexicana,” then comprising nineteen states and five territories; first president D. Felix Victoria, known as ‘‘Guadalupe Victoria.”

1828-30. Contested presidencies of Pedraza, Guerrero, and Busta- mente.

1835. Reaction of the church party; constitution of 1824 abolished ; the confederate states fused in a consolidated republic under Santa Anna as president, but practically dictator.

1836. Tcxas refusing to submit seccdes, defeats and captures Santa Anna.

1837. Santa Anna returning resunies office.

1839. Bravo’s brief presidency followed by much anarchy.

1841-44. Santa Anna’s first dictatorship with two others.

1844, Constitution restored with Santa Anna president ; banished same year, he is succeeded by Canalizo.

1845. Herrera president ; disastrous war with United States to recover Texas.

1846. Santa Anna again president.

1848. Treaty of Guadalupe ; California and New Mexico ceded to United States.

1853. Santa Anna’s second dictatorship; treaty of Mesilla (negotiated by Gadsden) ceding extensive territory to United States and reducing Mexico to its present limits; great financial embar- rassment; ‘‘Plan of Ayutla’; flight of Santa Anna followed by universal chaos.

1855. Provisional Government under President Comonfort.

1856. Constitutional convention ; radical reforms; rupture with Spain.

1857. Liberal constitution of March 11; suspended December 1; Comonfort dictator ; the reaction supported by the church, large part of the army, and all Conservatives; opposed at Vera Cruz by Vice-president Benito Juarez at the head of the “Puros,” or advanced Liberals; the “War of Reform” begius, and lasts till 1860.

1858-59. In the capital Comonfort is deposed by Zuloaga, who abdicates in favour of Miramon, general of the Conservative forces; but, declining the presidency, Miramon_ restores Zuloaga; British legation violated; in Vera Cruz the United States envoy MacLean acknowledges Juarez, who introduces further Liberal measures.

1860. Capitulation of Guadalajara; flight of Miramon from the capital ; triuinph of the Liberals.

1861. Triumphal entry of Juarez into the capital ; further radical reforms ; marriage declared a civil coutract ; celibacy and ecclesiastical tribunals suppressed ; confiscation of church property valued at £75,000,000 and over a third of the soil ; final separation of church and state; Spain, France, and England urge claims for losses of their subjects resident in Mexico; convention of London ; intervention of the allies, who occupy Vera Cruz in December.

1862. England and Spain withdraw, their claims having been settled by negotiation ; war continued by France.

1868-64. The capital occupied by the French; Louis Napoleon dreams of a universal fusion of the Latin races ; offers the Mexican imperial crown to the Austrian archduke Ferdinand Maximilian, who accepts, and arrives in June 1864.

1867. After diverse issues the French withdraw; Maximilian,

abandoned to his fate, is captured and shot at Querétaro (June 19).

1 In December 1882 a party of seventy-five Mexicans and Americans were massacred in the state of Chihuahua by a band of Bravos.

2 Between 1821 and 1868 the form of government was changed ten times; over fifty persons succeeded each other as presidents, dictators, or emperors; both emperors were shot, Iturbide in 1824, Maximilian in 1867, and according to some calculations there occurred at least three hundred pronunciamientos.

exiled,

Ico

1867-69. Various pronunciamientos by Santa Anna and others. 1871-72. Juarez president; he dies in office July 1872 ; succecded by his secretary Lerdo de Tejada.

| 1873-74. The Liberal constitution of 1857, which had been twice

suspended (1858—60 and 1863-67), is now largely amended, and continues to be henceforth the organic law of Mexico. 1876. Tejada succeeded by Porfirio Diaz. 1880. Manuel Gonzalez, reigning president

Since 1869 the Liberal party has succeeded in preserving peace at home and abroad, while establishing democratic institutions on a firm basis. A. v. Humboldt’s gloomy anticipations® have not been realized, and for the first time in its chequered history Mexico may look forward with some confidence to a bright future. The plague spot is the uncivilized Indian element. But with boundless natural resources at its disposal, a wise

administration may hope to over- come that difficulty, and gradually effect a complete fusion of the antagonistic racial elements.

Literature.—J. Frost, History of Mexico and its Wars, with addenda by A. JJawkins, New Orleans, 1852; T. U. Brocklehurst, Mexico To-day, London, 1882 ; Lorenzo Castro, Mexico in 1882, New York, 1882; Aubertin, A Flight to Mexico, 1882; E. Busto, Estadistica de la Republica Mexicana, Mcxieo, 1880; Don Lucas Alaman, Historia de Mexico, Mexieo, 1849-52; J. M. L. Mora, Mexico y sus Revoluciones, Paris, 1836; E. K. H. von Riehthofen, Die politischen Zustinde der Republik Mexico, Berlin, 1854-59; W. H. Prescott, Mistory of the Conquest of Mexico, New York, 1847; E. Miihlenpfordt, Schilderung der Rep. Mexico, besonders in Beziehung auf Geographic, Ethnographie, und Statistik, Nanover, 1844; A. R. Thiimmel, Mexico und die Mexicaner in physischer, socialer, und politischer Bezie-hung, Erlangen, 1848; Brantz Mayer, Mexico as it was and as itt is, New York, 1844, and Mexico, Aztec, Spanish, and Republican, Hartford, 1853; F. W. von Egloffstein, Contributions to the Geology and the Physical Geography of Mexico, New York, 1864; J. C. Beltrami, Ze Mexique, Paris, 1830; Madame C. [Calderon] de la B. [Barca], Life in Mexico, &e., with prefaee by W. H. Prescott, London, 1843; A.M. Gilliam, 7ravels over the Table-lands and Cordilleras of Mexico, Phil- adelphia, 1846; A. von Humboldt, Vues des Cordiliéres et monuments des peuples indiyénes de U Amérique, Paris, 1810, and Versuch iiber den politischen Zustand dvs Kénigreichs Neu-Spanien, Tiibingen, 1809-13 (French ed., Paris, 1811); Miguel Lerdo de Tejada, Comercio exterior de Mexico desde la Conguista hasta hoy, Mexico, 1853; John Macgregor, States of Mexico (commercial tariffs, &c.), London, 1846; Anales del Ministerio de fomento, colonizacion, industria, y comercio de la Republica Mexicana y repertorto de noticias sobre ciencias, artes, y estadistica nacional y estranjera, Mexico, 1851-55; Memoria sobre el estado de la agricultura y industria de la Republica, que la direccion general de estos ramos presenta al Gobierno Supremo, &c., Mexico, 1843-46; Don Mariano Galvez, Jndustria Nacional, Mexieo, 1845, and Estat uto organico de la Republica Mexicana, Mexico, 1857; H. W. Bates, Central America, &e., with ethnologieal appendix by A. H. Keane, London, 1878; Surveys of the French Corps Expéditionnaire embodicd in the Carte du Mexique, with accompanying monograph by M. Niox, Paris, 1873. Other large and more or Jess trustworthy maps are—A.

G. Cuba, Carta Geografica, Mexico, 1874; The Library Map of Mexico, Chicago, 1882; Humboldt, Atlas Géographique et physique du Royaume de la Nouvelle Espagne, Paris, 1811 ; Mapa de los Estados Unidos de Mexico, &c., published by J. Disturnell, New York, 1847; Brué, Carte générale des Etats-Unis Mexicains, Paris, 1825; H. Kicpert, Mexico, Texas, und

Californien, Weimar, 1847; F. de Gerolt y C. de Berghes, Carta geognostica de los

principales distritos minerales del Estado de Mexico formada sobre observaciones astron., barometr., y mineral., Mexico, 1827; the large physical and geological maps accompanying Von Egloffstein's above-quoted work ; and a good relicf map in F, Ratzel's Aus Mexico, Breslau, 1878. (A. H. K.)

III. THE CITY OF MEXICO.

Mexico, the capital formerly of the Aztec empire and of the Spanish colony of New Spain, and now of the republic, state, and federal district of Mexico, stands on the Anahuac plateau, 7524 feet above sea-level, 2} miles from the south- west side of Lake Tezcuco (Texcoco), the lowest and largest of six basins filling the deepest depression inthe hill-encircled Mexican valley. Situated in 19° 25' 45" N. lat. and 99° 7' W. long., it is 173 miles by rail from Vera Cruz on the Atlantic, 290 from Acapulco on the Pacific, 285 from Oajaca, 863 from Matamoros on the United States frontier. Mexico is the largest and finest city in Spanish America, forming a square nearly 3 miles both ways, and laid out with perfect regularity, all its six hundred streets and lanes running at right angles north to south and east to west, and covering within the walls an area of about 10 square miles, with a population (in 1880) of 230,000. Most of the inhabitants are pure-blood Indians or mestizoes ; but the foreigners, chiefly French, English, Germans, Americans, and Spaniards, monopolize nearly all the trade, and as capitalists, bankers, merchants, and dealers enjoy an influence out of all proportion to their numbers. A large portion of the natives are mendicants or vagrants, and the distinctly criminal element (26,470 in 1878) is kept in order by a police force of 1320 men; yet in that year there were as many as 5370 knife-attacks and 3250 robberies. The

3 Consulted shortly before his death as to the future prospects of Mexico, with which his name was so intimately associated, Humboldt

ventured to prophesy that ‘‘ die Vereinigten Staaten werden es an sich reissen und dann selbst. zerfallen.”

MEX

broad, well-paved, and gas-lit streets present a picturesque appearance with their quaint two- and three-storied stone houses gaily painted in white, red, yellow, or green, and terminating everywhere with a background of rugged sierras or snowy peaks which, owing to the bright atmo- sphere at this elevation, seem quite close, although really 30 or 40 miles distant. All the main thoroughfares con- verge on the central Plaza de Armas (Plaza Mayor, or Main Square), which covers 14 acres, and is tastefully laid out with shady trees, garden plots, marble fountains, and seats. Here also are grouped most of the public buildings, towering above whicli is the cathedral, the largest and most sumptuous church in America, which faces the north side of the plaza on the site of the great pyramidal teocalli or temple of Huitzilopochtli, titular god of the Aztecs. This edifice, which was founded in 1573 and finished in 1657, at a cost of £400,000 for the walls alone, forms a Greek cross 426 feet long and 203 wide, with two great naves and three aisles, twenty side chapels, and a magnifi- cent high altar supported by marble columns, and_ sur- rounded by a tumbago balustrade with sixty-two statues of the same rich gold, silver, and copper alloy serving as candelabra. The elaborately carved choir is also enclosed by tumbago railings made in Macao, weighing 26 tons, and valued at about £300,000. In the interior the Doric style prevails, Renaissance in the exterior, which is adorned by a fine dome and two open towers 218 feet high. At the foot of the left tower is placed the famous calendar stone, the most interesting relic of Aztec culture. The east side of the plaza is occupied by the old viceregal residence, now the National Palace, with 675 feet frontage, containing. most of the Government offices (ministerial, cabinet, treasury), military headquarters, archives, meteorological department with observatory, and the spacious hall of ambassadors with some remarkable paintings by Miranda and native artists. North of the National Palace, and apparently forming portions of it, are the post-office and the national museum of natural history

and antiquities, with a priceless collection of Mexican remains. Close to the cathedral stands the Monte de Piedad, or national pawnshop, a useful institu- tion, endowed in 1744 by Terreros with £75,000, and now possessing nearly £2,000,000 of accumulated funds. Facing the cathedral is the Palacio Municipal (city hall), 252 feet by 122, rebuilt in 1792 at a cost of £30,000, and containing the city and district offices, the corporation jail, and the lonja, or merchants' exchange. Around the Plaza San Domingo are grouped the convent of that name, said to contain vast treasures buried within its walls, the old inquisition, now the school of medicine, and the custom-house. In the same neighbourhood are the church of the Jesuits and the school of arts, ''an immense work- shop, including iron and brass foundries, carriage and cart mending, building and masonry, various branches of joinery and upholstery work, and silk and cotton hand-weaving " (Brocklehurst). Other noteworthy buildings are the national picture gallery of San Carlos, the finest in America, in which the Florentine and Flemish schools are well represented, and which contains the famous Las Casas by Felix Parra; the national library of St Augustine, with over 100,000 volumes, numerous MSS., and many rare old Spanish books; the mint, which since 1690 has issued coinage, chiefly silver, to the amount of nearly £400,000,000 ; the Iturbide hotel, formerly the residence of the emperor Iturbide; the Mineria, or school of mines, with lecture-rooms, laboratories, rich mineralogical and geological specimens, and a fossil horse 3 feet high of the Pleistocene period. Owing to the spongy nature of the soil, the Mineria and many other structures have settled out of the perpendicular, thus often presenting irregular lines and a rickety appearance. Among the twenty

scientific institutes mention should be made of the Geogra- phical and Statistical Society, whose meteorological depart- ment issues charts and maps of unsurpassed excellence,

Besides the chief market south of the National Palace there are three others, all well stocked with meat, fish, and especially vegetables, fruits, and flowers grown mainly on the chinampas, or floating gardens of Lakes Chalco and Xochimileo. These gardens, which were far more numerous in

the Aztec times, are formed by placing layers of turf on the matted aquatic vegetable growths to a height of 2 or 3 feet above the water, and securing them by long willow poles driven through them to the bottom, where they take root. They form plots 100 to 200 feet long by 20 to 100 broad, and are firm enough to support the huts of the cultivators. From the still extant illuminated tribute-rolls it appears that the Aztec rulers derived a large share of the taxes from these gardens, which at that time also covered the brackish waters of Lake Tezcuco.

Before 1860 half of the city consisted of churches, convents, and other ecclesiastical structures, most of which have been sequestrated and converted into libraries, stores, warehouses, and cven stables, or pulled down for civic improvements. Nevertheless there still remain fourteen parish and thirty other churches, some of large size with towers and domes, and their number has now been increased by six Protestant churches including the Anglican cathedral in San Francisco Street. This is the leading thoroughfare, and is rivalled in splendour only by the new Cinco de Mayo Street running from the National Theatre to the cathedral.

The city is supplied by two monumental aqueducts, from Chapul- tepec and the south-west, with good water at the rate of 44 gallons per day per inhabitant.

Its industries are varied but unimportant, consisting chiefly of gold and silver work, coarse glazed and unglazcd pottery of peculiar form and ornamentation, paper, feather-work remarkable for its taste and beautiful designs, toys, rosaries, crucifixes, religious pictures, lace, and some weaving.

Mexico enjoys an equable climate, witha temperature varying from 70° to 50° F., but rendered unhealthy by the exhalations from the lakes and the bad drainage. The death-rate in 1876 was 59 per 1000, and 45 in 1878, pneumonia being most fatal (12 per cent. of the total). Standing at the lowest level of a lacustrine valley, 1400 square miles in extent, and completely encircled by hills with no natural outlet, the city has always been subject to floodings from the overflow of the neighbouring freshwater Lakes Zumpango and Xaltocan on the north and Xochimileo and Chalco on the south, which, in the 17th century, laid the whole district under water in

1607, and again for five years from 1629 to 1634. To remedy the evil the engineer Martinez began in 1607 the great cutting 13 miles long through the Nochistongo hill in order to draw off the discharge of Lake Zumpango, the highest in the valley, to the river Tula, a tributary of the Panuco, flowing to the Atlantic. This work, which cost the lives of 70,000 natives, was completed in 1789; but the result was not satisfactory, and the city is still often flooded.

The chief public promenades are the Alameda, planted with stately beeches; the Vega, skirted by the Vega Canal, and adorned with tle colossal bust of Guatemozin, the last of the Aztec em- perors; the Paseo de la Riforma, a fine avenue 3 miles long running south to the famous castle of Chapultepec, a place intimately asso- ciated with the names both of Montezuma and Maximilian. The present castle, erected in 1785 by the viceroy Galvez on the site of Montezuma's palace, commands a superb view of the city and sur- rounding district, and is approached by avenues of gigantic cypresses (Cupressus disticha) dating from Aztec times, growing to a height of 120 feet, and measuring from 30 to 40 feet round the stem. Other good roads with horse or steam trams lead to Tacubaya and the '*' Noche Triste" tree, where Cortes is traditionally supposed to have rested after the disastrous retreat from Mexico on the night of June 30, 1520, to the pleasant suminer suburb of Tacubaya, and to the renowned shrine of Our Lady of Guadalupe, 3 miles to the east on thie border of Lake Tezcuco. Here stands the most famous church in Mexico, erected to commemorate the legendary apparitions of the Madonna to the Indian Juan Diego in December 1531, and still visited by thousands of pilgrims or sightseers.

Mexico dates either from the year 1325 or 1327, when the Aztees after long wanderings over the plateau were directed by the oracle to settle at this spot. For here had been witnessed the auspicious omen of an eagle perched on a nopal (cactus) and devouring a snake. Hence the original name of the city, Tenochtitlan (nopal on a stone), changed afterwards to Mexico in honour of the war god Mexitli. With the progress of Aztec culture the place rapidly im- proved, and about 1450 the old mud and rush houses were replaced by solid stone structures erected partly on piles amid the islets of Lake Tezcuco, and grouped round the central enclosure of the great teocalli. The city had reached its highest splendour on the arrival of the Spaniards in

1519, when it comprised from 50,000 to 60,000 houses, with perhaps 500,000 inhabitants, and seemed to Cortes ‘like a thing of fairy creation rather than the work of inortal hands” (Prescott). It was at that time about 12 miles in circum-

ao0

fcrence, every where intersected by cauals, and connected with the mainland by six long and solidly constructed causeways, as 1s clearly shown by the plan given in the edition of Cortes’s letters published at Nuremberg in 1524 (reproduced in vol. iv. of H. H. Bancroft’s History of the Pacific States, Sau Francisco, 1833, p. 280). After its almost total destruction in November 1521, Cortes employed some 400,000 natives in rebuilding it on the same site ; but since then the lake seems to have considerably subsided, for although still 50 square miles in extent it is very shallow, and has retired 24

Mn Y—MEY

miles from the city. During the Spanish rule the chief event wag the revolt of 1692, when the municipal buildings were destroyed, Since then Mexico has becn the scene of many revolutions, and after the battle of Chapultepec (September 18, 1847) the city was held by the United States troops till the treaty of Guadalupe, May 1848. But since the disorders ending with the death of Maximilian it has turned to peaceful ways, and has become a great centre of civilizing influences for the surrounding semi-barbarous peoples. (A. HH. He)

MEYERBEER, Giacomo (1791-1863), first known in Germany as Jakob Meyer Beer, was born at Berlin on September 5, 1791,1 of a wealthy and talented Jewish family. His father, Herz Beer, was a banker ; his mother, Amalie (née Wulf), was a woman of high intellectual culture ; and two of his brothers distinguished themselves in astronomy and literature. He studied the pianoforte, first under Lauska, and afterwards under Lauska’s master, Clementi. When seven years old he played Mozart’s Con- certo in D Minor in public, and at nine he was pronounced the best pianist in Berlin. For composition he was placed under Zelter, whose lessons were soon exchanged for those of Bernard Weber, then director of the Berlin opera, by

whom he was introduced to the Abbé Vogler. Struck by his brilliant talent, Vogler invited him to Darmstadt, and in 1810 received him into his house, where he formed an intimate friendship with Karl Maria von Weber, who, though his senior by eight years, shared the daily lessons he received from the abbé in counterpoint, fugue, and extempore organ-playing. At the end of two years the grand-duke appointed Meyerbeer composer to the court. His early works, however, were far from successful,—his first opera, Jephtha's Geliibde, failing lamentably at Darmstadt in 1811, and his second, Wirth und Gast (Alimelek), at Vienna in 1814. These checks discouraged him so cruelly that he feared he had mistaken his vocation.

Nevertheless, by advice of Salieri, he determined to study |

vocalization in Italy, and then to form a new style. But at Venice he was so captivated by the style of Rossini that, renouncing all thought of originality, he produced a suc- cession of seven Italian operas—Tomilda e Costanza, Semiramide riconosciuta, Edouardo e Cristina, Emma di Rosburgo, Margherita @ Anjou, L'Esule di Granata, and II Crociato in Egitto—which all achieved a success as brilliant as it was unexpected. Against this act of treason to Ger-

man art Weber protested most earnestly ; and before long —

Meyerbeer himself grew tired of his defection, though the success of JJ Crociato was so great that he was crowned upon the stage. to review his position fairly and dispassionately, and he could not conceal from himself the fact that he was wast- ing in imitation powers which, rightly used, might make his name immortal. For several years after this he pro- duced nothing in public; but, in concert with Scribe, he planned the work which first made known the reality of his transcendent genius—his first French opera, Robert le Diable. Opéra in 1831, and received with acclamation. It was the first of its race, a grand romantic opera, abounding with scenes of startling interest, with situations more powerfully dramatic than any that had been attempted either by Cherubini or Rossini, with mysterious horrors and chivalric pomp, and with ballet music such as had never yet been heard, even in Paris. Its popularity exceeded all previous expectation ; yet for five years after this signal triumph Meyerbeer appeared before the public no more. We cannot

doubt that his motive for this retirement was the determination to produce something greater still ; and

1 Or, according to some accounts, 1794.

An invitation to Paris in 1826 led him |

This gorgeous drama was produced at the Grand |

in some respects his next opera, Les [Tuguenots, really was greater, though it fell short of the deep romance which ren- dered Robert le Diable so incomparably captivating.

The first performance of Les [Zuguenots took place in 1836. In gorgeous colouring, in depth of passion, in con- sistency of dramatic treatment, and in careful delineation of individual character, it is at least the equal of Robert le Diable. In two points only did its interest fall short of that inspired by the earlier work. Meyerbeer had shown himself so great a master in his treatment of the super- natural that one regretted the unavoidable omission of that powerful element in his second grand opera; and, more important still, the fifth act of Les Huguenots was so arranged by the librettist as to render effective musical treatment impossible. The substitution of a noisy fusillade for a legitimate dramatic situation was fatal to the antici- pated climax. The music which accompanies this division of the work is necessarily inferior to all that precedes it. The true interest of the drama culminates at the close of the fourth act, when Raoul, leaping from the window, leaves Valentine fainting upon the ground. The spectator needs not to be told that the former will be shot down the moment hé arrives in the street, or that the latter will mourn for him to the end of her days. Neither musically nor dramatically does anything more remain to be said ; and therefore it is that those who quit the theatre when the curtain falls for the fourth time carry away with them a far more perfect ideal than those who remain to the end.

After the production of Les Huguenots Meyerbeer again retired from public view, and spent many years in the pre-

_ paration of two of his greatest works—the greatest of all

except the two we have already mentioncd—L’A fricaine and Le Prophéte. The libretti of both these operas were furnished by Scribe ; and both were subjected to countless changes of detail before they satisfied the composer’s fastidious taste; in fact, the story of L’Africaine was more than once entirely rewritten.

Meanwhile Meyerbeer accepted the appointment of kapellmeister to the king of Prussia, and spent some years at Berlin, where he produced Hin Feldlager in Schlesien, a German opera, in which the matchless cantatrice Jenny Lind made her first appearance in Prussia, with unprecedented success. Here also he com- posed, in 1846, the overture to his brother Michael’s drama, Struensee. But his chief care at this period was bestowed upon the worthy presentation of the works of others. He began by producing his dead friend Weber’s EHuryanthe, with scrupulous attention to the composer’s original idea. With equal unselfishness he procured the acceptance of Rienzi and Der Iliegende Holldnder, the first two operas of Richard Wagner, who, then languishing in poverty and exile, would, but for him, have found it impossible to obtain a hearing in Berlin. With Jenny Lind as prima donna and Meyerbeer as conductor, the opera flourished brilliantly in the Prussian capital; but the anxieties of ie thankless period materially shortened the composer’s ife,

Meyerbeer produced Ze Prophéte at Paris in 1849; and, if it did not at first create so great a sensation as Les ITuguenots, this was simply because it needed to be better

known. In 1854 he brought out L’Etoile du Nord at the Opéra Comique, and in 1859 Le Pardon de Ploermel (Dinorah). His last great work, L’Africaine, was in active preparation at the Académie when, on the 23d of April 1863, he was seized with a sudden illness, of which he died on the 2d of May. L’Africaine was produced with pious attention to the composer’s minutest Wishes, on April 28, 1865, and fully justified the expectation which had been raised by his long and painstaking consideration of its details. Upon this, in conjunction with Robert le Diable, Les Huguenots, and Le Prophéte, his fame now almost entirely rests.

Meyerbeer’s genius has been criticized with widely different re- sults. Mendelssohn thought his style exaggerated ; Fétis thought

him one of the most original geniuses of the age; Wagner calls |

him ‘‘a miserable music-maker,” and ‘‘a Jewish banker to whom it occurred to compose operas.” But the reality of his talent has been recognized throughout all Europe ; and, in spite of the acknowledged crudity of his system of phrasing, and the inequality of merit too plainly observable even in his greatest works, his name will live so long as intensity of passion and power of dramatic treatment are regarded as indispensable characteristics of dramatic music. (W. S. R.)

MEZIERES, a fortress of the first class, and the capital of the department of Ardennes, France, is 161 miles to the north-east of Paris by railway, on a peninsula of the Meuse, which almost entirely surrounds the town, and separates it from its more important suburb, Charleville. The fortifications, which, as well as the citadel, are the work of Vauban, are pierced by four gates, giving access to the town, the streets of which are narrow and winding. The parish church, erected in the 16th century, contains two inscriptions in commemoration respectively of the raising of the siege of Méziéres in 1521 and the marriage of Charles IX. with the daughter of the emperor Maximilian II., which was celebrated at Méziéres in 1570. The north and south portals, the glass of the windows, and the lofty vaultings of the church are worthy of remark. The hdtel de ville contains several interesting pictures relating to the history of the town. The iron industry, the only one of any importance, is being gradually transferred to Charle- ville. The population in 1881 was 6120.

Founded in the 9th century, Méziéres was at first only a strong- |

hold belonging to the bishops of Rheims, which afterwards became the property of the counts of Rethel. The town was increased by successive immigrations of the people of Liége, flying first from the emperor Otho, and afterwards from Charles the Bold ; and also by concessions from the connts of Rethcl. Its walls were built in the 13th century, and in 1521 it was successfully defended by Bayard against the imperialists. The anniversary of the deliverance of the town is still observed yearly on the 27th of

September. The school of military engineering, since transferred successively to Mctz and Fontainebleau, was originally founded at Méziéres.

MEZO-TUR,} a corporate town in the Cis-Tisian county,

of Jasz-Nagy-Kun-Szolnok, Hungary, situated on the right bank of the Berettyd, and on the railway from Arad to Szolnok, in 47° 1’ N. lat., 20° 39’ E. long. It has Roman Catholic and Calvinist churches and schools, a judicial court for the circuit, and the usual Government offices, but can boast of few buildings of special interest. Horses, oxen, and sheep are reared in great numbers on the wide- spreading communal lands, which are productive also of cereals, and especially wheat, rape-seed, and maize. On the 31st December 1880 the population amounted to 20,649 (10,265 males, 10,384 females), mostly Magyars by nationality.

MEZZOFANTI, Gruszprx (1774-1849), cardinal, whose colloquial linguistic acquirements have become proverbial, was born, September 17, 1774, at Bologna, where his father followed the occupation of a carpenter. Educated first at one of the “scuole pie,” and afterwards at the

1 Mezo is a Magyar word, signifying Field, prefixed to many agri- cultural localities in Hungary.

episcopal seminary of his native city, he was ordained to the priesthood in 1797, and in the same year became pro- fessor of Arabic in the university, but shortly afterwards was deprived on account of his refusal to take the oath of allegiance to the Government of the Cisalpine Republic. In 1803, however, he. was appointed assistant librarian of the institute of Bologna, and soon afterwards was reinstated as professor of Oriental languages and of Greek. The chair was suppressed by the viceroy in 1808, but again rehabilitated on the restoration of Pius VII. in 1814, and continued to be held by Mezzofanti until his removal from Bologna to Rome in 1831, when he received certain ecclesi- astical appointments and the rank of monsignore. Mean- | while his progress in the acquirement of languages had been rapid and untiring, and in 1833 he was appointed to succeed Mai as

chief keeper of the Vatican Library. His promotion to the cardinalate, and the duties of director of studies in the Congregation of the Propaganda, followed in 1838. He died at Rome, during the absence of the pontifical court at Gaeta, on March 15, 1849.

Mezzofanti's peculiar talent, comparable in many respects to that of the numerous '"calenlating boys" who have been the wonder of their contemporaries, was not combined with any exceptional measure of intellectual power, and accordingly prodnced nothing that has not perished with him. It seems to be well established, however, that he spoke with considerable fluency, and in some cases even with attention to dialectic peculiarities, some fifty or sixty languages of the most widely separated fainilies, besides having a less perfect acquaintance with many others. See Manavit, Zsquisse historique sur le Cardinal Mezzofanti, Paris, 1854: and Russell, Life of the Cardinal Mezzofanti, London, 1857.

MEZZOTINT. See Eneravine.

MIAUTSE. The Miautse or Meaou-tsze of southern China are one of the aboriginal tribes of the country. At one time they occupied a considerable portion of the rich and fertile lands which now form the central province of the empire, but as the Chinese advanced southwards they were driven, like the Ainos in Japan and the Welsh in Britain, into the more inaccessible districts until they were compelled to seck refuge from the invaders in the mountain ranges, in the provinces of Yunnan, Kwei-chow, Kwang-se, and Kwang-tung, where they are found at the present day. This line of mountains extends for about 400 miles, and, being in many parts high, steep, and rugged, it forms a convenient shelter for them. As early as. the reign of king Seuen (about 800 B.c.) we read of an expedi- tion having been sent to drive them out of Hoo-nan, and since that time they have been periodically attacked either to punish them for misdeeds or to make them yield up vineyards coveted by Chinese Ahabs. The last important campaign against them was undertaken by the emperor K'een-lung, who, having completely subjugated the Eleuths, was desirous of bringing under his yoke these mountain tribesmen. But the same success which had attended his arms in the north did not follow them to the south. The first expedition was utterly defeated, and the general in command paid the penalty of discomfiture with his head. The leader of a second expedition, having learned wisdom by the fate of his predecessor, purchased the submission of the Miautse by a large bribe. As soon as the unsuspecting savages had been thus lulled into security a third army was set in motion against them. This time, being unpre- pared, they suffered a crushing defeat, and were compelled to purchase peace by swearing allegiance to their conquerors. But, though the Chinese thus gained sovereignty over them, they have since deemed it wise to content themselves with but the shadow of authority. No real jurisdiction is ever exercised over these hardy mountaineers. They are allowed to govern themselves on their own patriarchal system. The old men of each tribe manage the affairs of their juniors, and command an obedience which would be utterly refused | to the mandate of any mandarin. In figure the Miautse,

both men and women, are shorter and darker complexioned than the Chinese, their faces also are rounder and their features sharper. In disposition, too, they are very unlike their civilized neighbours. They are brave, passionate, suspicious, revengeful, and indifferent to cold and hunger ; they are free and easy in their manners, and are as noisily joyous as the Chinese are grave and sedate. They are divided into between forty and fifty clans, each of which is distinguished by a name which is generally derived either froin some physical characteristic, or from some custom, or from the habitat of the clan, as, for example, “The Black Miau, the narrow-headed Miau,” so named from their manner of dressing their hair, “the six-valley Miau,” &c. Among these clans there exist wide differences of culture, some being im no way removed from savages, while others who have been brought under the influence of Chinese civilization show themselves apt and ready learners. Very few of them, so far as is known, possess any written records. The Yaou-jin, or Goblin clan, are said to have books, which, though they are now unable to read, they still regard with reverent awe. “

clans the ‘‘couvade” is an established custom. Their funeral rites |

vary according to the districts, those living within reach of the influ- ence of the Chinese having adopted their customs, while those more remote still hang their dead in baskets from trees, or lay them in the ground and disintcr them yearly to wash their bones. In dress they are fond of bright colours, and commonly wear loose but short jackets, sometimes with and sometimes without trousers. The men wear turbans wound round their hair, which is raised above the head in the shape of a spiral shell, and the women either don a kind of cap, or dress their hair in the shape of a rain’s horn. For inany years the relations of the Miautse with the Chinese Govern- iment have been generally of a peaceable nature, and in the Peking

Gazette of April’ 1881 there was published a new system of |

government by which it is hoped that the incorporation of the mountaineers into the empire may become more real and complete.

See Sketches of the Miau-tsze, translated by £.C. Bridgman ; J. Edkins, The Miau- tsi Tribes, their History; and ‘Quaint customs in Kwei-chow,”

Cornhill Magazine, January 1872.

MICAH (3%) is the short form of a name which in various modifications—Micaiaha, Micaiéhu, Micciah—is common in the Old Testament, expressing as it does a fundamental point of Hebrew faith : Who is like Jehovah ? The name was borne among others by the Danite whose history is given in Judg. xvii. sy., by the prophet who opposed Ahab's expedition to Ramoth-Gilead (1 Kings xxli.), and by the subject of the present article, the con- temporary and fellow-worker of Isaiah, whose name is prefixed to the sixth in order of the books of the minor prophets.!

It is at once apparent that the book of Micah divides itself into at least two distinct discourses, chap. vi. 1 forming a new commencement; and from what we know in general of the compilation of the prophetic collection we cannot at once determine whether the second discourse, which has no title, is to be ascribed to the author of the immediately preceding prophecy, or is to be regarded as an independent and anonymous piece. To decide this question, if it can be decided, we must begin by a separate study of the earlier chapters to which the title in Micah i. 1 directly belongs. These again fall into two parts. Chaps. i.—iil. (with the exception of two verses, ii. 12, 13) are a predic-

1 A confusion between the two prophets of the name has led to the insertion in the Massoretic text of 1 Kings xxii. 28 of a citation from Micah i. 2, rightly absent from the LXX.

| tion of judgment on the sins of Judah and Ephraim. In

a majestic exordium Jehovah Himself is represented as coming forth in the thunderstorm (comp. Amos i. 2) from His heavenly palace, and descending on the mountains of Palestine, at once as witness against His people, and the executer of judgment on their sins. Samaria is sentenced to destruction for idolatry ; and the blow extends to Judah also, which participates in the same guilt (chap. i.). But, while Samaria is summarily dismissed, the sin of Judah is analysed at length in chaps. ii. and ii1., in which the prophet no longer deals with idolatry, but with the corruption of society, and

particularly of its leaders—the grasping aristocracy whose whole energies are concentrated on devouring the poor and depriving them of their little holdings, the unjust judges and priests who for gain wrest the law in favour of the rich, the hireling and gluttonous prophets who make war against every one “that putteth not into their mouth,” but are ever ready with assurances of Jehovah’s favour to their patrons, the wealthy and noble sinners that fatten on the flesh of the poor. The prophet speaks with the strongest personal sympathy of the sufferings of the peasantry at the hands of their lords, and contemplates with stern satisfaction the approach of the destroyer who shall carry into exile “the luxurious sons” of this race of petty tyrants (i. 16), and leave them none to stretch the measuring line on a field in the congregation of Jehovah (ii. 5). The centre of corrup- tion is the capital, the city of Zion, grown great on the blood and wrongs of the provincials, the seat of the cruel princes, the corrupt judges and diviners. For their sake, he concludes, Zion shall be plowed as a field, Jerusalem shall lie in ruins, and the temple hill return to jungle. iui, 12),

: The situation thus sketched receives its elucidation from the data supplied by the title (i. 1) and confirmed and rendered more precise by a remarkable passage in Jeremiah. According to the title Micah flourished in the reigns of Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah; according to Jeremiah (xxvi. 18 sq.) the prophecy of the destruction of Jerusalem just cited was spoken under Hezekiah, and bore fruit in the repentance of king and people, by which the judgment was averted. The allusion beyond doubt is to Hezekiah’s work of religious reformation (2 Kings xviii. 4 sg.). It is hardly possible to separate this reformation from the influ- ence of Isaiah, which did not become practical in the conduct of the state till the crisis of Sennacherib’s invasion ; and the conclusion that Hezekiah was not from the first a reforming king, which is forced on us by many passages of Isaiah, is confirmed by the prophecy of Micah, which, after Hezekiah’s accession, still represents wickedness as seated in the high places of the kingdom. The internal disorders of the realm depicted by Micah are also prominent in Isaiah’s prophecies ; they were closely connected, not only with the foreign complications due to the approach of the Assyrians, but with the break-up of the old agrarian system within Israel, and with the rapid and uncompen- sated aggrandisement of the nobles during those pro- sperous years when the conquest of Edom by Amaziah and the occupation of the port of Elath

by his son (2 Kings xiv. 7, 22) placed the lucrative trade between the Mediterranean and the Red Sea in the hands of the rulers of Judah. On the other hand the democratic tone which distinguishes Micah from Isaiah, and his announcement of the impending fall of the capital (the deliverance of which from the Assyrian appears to Isaiah as the necessary condition for the preservation of the seed of a new and better kingdom), are explained by the fact that, while Isaiah lived in the centre of affairs, Micah was a Morasthite or inhabitant of Moresheth Gath, a place near

| the Philistine frontier so unimportant as to be mentioned

Mi ¢ AW

only in Micah i. 14.1. The provincial prophet sees the capital and the aristocracy entirely from the side of a man of the oppressed people, and foretells the utter ruin of both. But this ruin does not present itself to him as involving the captivity or ruin of the nation as a whole; the congregation of Jehovah remains in Judea when the oppressors are cast out (il. 5); Jehovah's words are still good to them that walk uprightly ; the glory of Israel is driven to take refuge in Adullam, as in the days when David's band of broken men was the true hope of the nation, but there is no hint that it is banished from the land. Thus upon the prophecy of judgment we naturally expect to follow a prophecy of the redintegration of Jehovah's kingship in a better Isracl, and this we find in i. 12, 13 and in chaps. iv., v. Both passages, however, present difficulties. The former seems to break the pointed contrast between ii. 11 and iii. 1, and is therefore regarded by Ewald as an example of the false prophecies on which the wicked rulers trusted. The thought, however, is one proper to all true prophecy (comp. Hos. i. 11 [ii. 2], Isa. xi. 11 sy., Zeph. ii. 14, Jer. xxxi. 8), and precisely in accordance with chaps. iv., v., even in the details of expres- sion and imagery." It is indeed possible that these verses are a separate oracle of Micah, which did not originally stand in its present connexion. The sequence of thought in chaps iv., v., on the other hand, is really difficult, and has given rise to much complicated discussion. There isa growing feeling among scholars that iv. 11-13 stands in direct contradiction to iv. 9, 10, and indeed to iii. 12. The last two passages agree in speaking of the capture of Jerusalem, the first declares Zion inviolable, and its capture an impossible profanation. Such a

thought can hardly be Micah’s, even if we resort to the violent harmonistic process of imagining that two quite distinct sieges, separated by a renewal of the theocracy, are spoken of in consecutive verses. An interpolation, however, in the spirit of such

passages as Ezek. xxxviii., xxxix., Joel iii. [iv.], Zech. xiv., |

is very conceivable in post-exilic times, and in connexion

with the growing impulse to seek a literal harmony of all |

prophecy on lines very different from the pre-exilic view in Jer. xxvi., that predictions of evil may be averted by repentance. Another difficulty lies in the words “and thou shalt come even to Babylon” in iv. 10. Micah unquestionably looked for the destruction of Jerusalem as

‘ That Micah lived in the Shephela or Judean lowland near the Philistine country is clear from the local colouring of i. 10 sq., where a number of places in this quarter are mentioned together, and their names played npon in a way that could hardly have suggested itself to any but a man of the distriet. The paronomasia makes the verses difficult, and in i. 14 none of the ancient versions recognizes More- sheth Gath as a proper name, The word Morasthite (Afé6rashti) was therefore obscure to them; but this only gives greater weight to the traditional pronunciation with 6 in the first syllable, which is as old as the LXX., and goes against the view, taken by the Targum both on Micah and on Jeremiah, and followed by some moderns (including Roorda), that Micah came from Mareshah. When Eusebius places MwpacGci near Eleutheropolis it is not likely that he is thinking of Mareshah (Maresa), for he speaks of the former as a village and of the latter as a ruin 2 miles from Eleutheropolis. Jerome too in the pit. Paule (Ep. eviii.), speaking as an eye-witness, distinguishes Morasthim, with the chureh of Micah’s sepulchre, from Maresa. This indeed was after the pretended miraculous diseovery of the relies of Micah in 385 a.D.; but the name of the village which then existed (Pref. in Mich.) can hardly have been part of a pious fraud.

- The figure of the shepherd gathcring a scattered flock certainly does not presuppose a total captivity,-as Stade (Z. f. AT. He lee Lil Sq.)

argues.

3 See, besides the commentaries, Ndldeke in the Bibel-lex., iv. 214; a paper by Oort and two by Kuenen in TZhcol. Tijdsch., 1872; Well- hausen-Bleek, Hinleitung, p. 426; Stade, 7.c., and zbid., iii. 1 sg. Stade goes so far as to make the whole of Micah iv., V. presuppose thie exile, and to find still later additions in iv. 5-1 Ob, We Gy Ole 4B SE Giescbrecht, Theol. LZ., 1881, col. 443 sq., rejects chap. iv. only. The arguments cannot be here cited at length, but they are tacitly kept in view in what follows.

well as of Samaria in the near future and by the Assyrians (i. 9), and this was the judgment which Hezekiah's repent- ance averted. If-these words, therefore, belong to the original context, they mark it.as not from Micah's hand ; but it is easy to see that they are really a later gloss. The prophetic thought is that the daughter (population) of Zion shall not be saved by her present rulers or defensive strength ; she must come down from her. bulwarks and dwell in the open field; there, and not within her proud ramparts, Jchovah will grant deliverance from her enemies. This thought is in precise harmony with chaps. i—iii., and equally characteristic is what follows in chap. v. Micah's opposition to present tyranny expresses itself in recurrence to the old popular ideal of the first simple Davidic kingdom (iv. 8) to which he had already alluded ini. 15. These old days shall return once more. Again gucrilla bands (ayIx"nN3) gather to meet the foe as they did in the time of Philistine oppression. A new David, like him whose exploits in the district of Micah's home were still in the mouths of the common people, goes forth from Bethlehem to feed the flock in the strength of Jehovah, The kindred Hebrew nations are once more united to their brethren of Israel (comp. Amos ix. 12, Isa. xvi. 1 sq.). The remnant of Jacob springs up in fresh vigour, inspiring terror among the surrounding peoples, and there is no lack of chosen captains to lead them to victory against the Assyrian foe. In the rejuvenescence of the nation the old stays of that oppressive kingship which began with Solomon, the strong- holds, the fortified cities, the chariots and horses so foreign to the life of ancient Israel, are no more known; they disappear together with the divinations, the soothsayers, the

idols, the maggebas and asheras of the high places. Jehovah is king on Mount Zion, and no inventions of man come between Him and His people.

The elements of this picture, drawn so largely from the most cherished memories of the Judseans, could not fail to produce a wide impression, especially when the invasion of Sennacherib, although it spared Jerusalem, fulfilled in the most striking way a great part of Micah's predictions of judgment. Of this we have evidence, not only in Jer. xxvi., but in the political and religious ideas of the book of Deuteronomy. The picture of the right king (Deut. xvii. 14 sq.) and the condemnation of the high-places alike follow the doctrine of Micah.

A difficulty still. remains in the opening verses of chap. iv. Micah iv. 1-8 and Isa. ii. 2-4 are but slightly modified recensions of the same text, and as Isa. ii. is older than the prophecy of Micah, while on the other hand Micah iv. 4 seems the natural completion of the passage, it iscommon to suppose that both copy an older prophct. But the words have little connexion with the context in {saiah, and may be the quotation of a copyist suggested by ver. 5. On the other hand it has been urged that the passage belongs to a later stage of prophetic thought than the 8th century B.c. There is, however, no real difficulty in the idea that foreign nations shall seek law and arbitrament at the throne of the king of Zion (comp. the old prophecy Isa. xvi.); and the mention of the temple as the seat of Jehovah's sovereignty may be illustrated by Isa. vi., where the heavenly palace (Micah i. 3) is at least pictured in the likeness of the temple on Zion. At the same time the Jerusalem of Micah iv. 8 is the Jerusalem of David not of Solomon, the ideas of iv. 1-4 do not reappear in chap. v., and the whole prophecy would perhaps be more consceutive and homogeneous if iv. 6 (where the dispersed and the suffering are, according to chap. ii., the victims of domestic not of forcign oppression) followed directly on iii. 12. ;

The sixth chapter of Micah presents a very different situation from chaps. iv. Jehovah appears to plead with his people for their sins, but the sinners are no longer a careless and oppressive aristo- cracy buoyed up by deceptive assurances of Jehovah's help, by pro- pheecies of wine and strong drink; they are bowed down by a religion of terror, wearied with attempts to propitiate an angry God by countless offerings, and even by the sacrifice of

the first-born. Meantime the substance of true religion—justiee, charity, and a humble walk with God—is forgotten, frand and deceit reign in all classes, the works of the house of Ahab are observed (worship of foreign gods), Jehovah's judgments are multiplicd against the land, and the issuc can be nothing clse than its total desolation. All

these marks fit exactly the evil times of Manassch as described in 2 Kings xxi, Chap. vii. 1-6, in which the public and private cor- ruption of a hopeless age is bitterly bewailed, obviously belongs to the same context (comp. vol. xiii. p. 415). Micah may very well have lived into Manasseh's reign, but the title in i. 1 does not cover a prophecy which certainly falls after Hezekiah's death, and the style has nothing in common with the earlier part_of the book. It is therefore prudent to regard the prophecy, with Ewald, as anony- mous. Ewald ascribes the whole of chaps. vi., vii. to one author. Wellhausen, however, remarks with justice that the thread is abruptly broken at vii. 6, and that verses 7-20 represent Zion as already fallen before the heathen and her inhabitants as pining 1n the darkness of captivity. The hope of Zion is in future restora- tion after she has patiently borne the chastiscmeut of her sins. Then Jehovah shall arise mindful of His oath to the fathers, Israel shall be forgiven and restored, and the heathen humbled. The faith and hope which breathe in this passage have the closest affinities with the book of Lamentations and Isa. x].-1xvi.

We have seen that the text of Micah has suffered from redactors ; it is also not frec from verbal corruptions which make some places very obscure. The LXX. had many readings different from the present Hebrew, but their text too was far from sound. Of commentaries on Micah, that which deals most fully with the question of the text is Roorda's Latin work, Leyden, 1869. The most elaborate book on Micah is Caspari's (Ueber Micha den Morasthiten und seine prophetische Schrift, Christiania, 1851-52). In English Pocock's Commentary (2d ed., 1692) and Cheyne's Micah (1882) are to be noted. See also the literature on the minor prophets in general cited under Hossa, and W. R. Smith's Prophets of Israel (1882). (W. R. S.) MICHAEL OND, "who is like God ?") appears in the Old Testament as a

man’s name, synonymous with Micaiah or Micah. In the book of Daniel the same name is given to one of the chief “princes” of the heavenly host, the guardian angel or “prince” of Israel (Dan. x. 13, 21; xii. 1), and as such he naturally appears in Jewish theosophy as the greatest of all angels, the first of the four who surround the throne of God (see GasriEL). It is as guardian angel of Israel, or of the church, the true Israel, that Michael appears in Jude 9 and Rey. xfi. 7. In the Western Church the festival of St Michael and All Angels (Michaelmas) is celebrated on September 29th ; it appears to have grown out of a local celebration of the dedication of a church of St Michael either at Mount Garganus in Apulia or at Rome, and was a great day by the beginning of the 9th century. The Greek Church dedicates November 8 to St Michael, St Gabriel, and All Angels.

MICHAEL, the name of several Byzantine emperors.

MicnarL I. (Rhangabé) was an obscure nobleman who had married Procopia, the daughter of Nicephorus I, and been made master of the palace; his elevation to the throne was due to a revolutionary movement against his brother-in-law Stauracius, who reigned only two months after the death of Nicephorus on the battlefield (812). Elected as the tool of the bigoted orthodox party in the church, Michael diligently persecuted the Iconoclasts on the northern and eastern frontiers of the-empire, but meanwhile allowed the Bulgarians to ravage a great part of Macedonia and Thrace; having at last taken the field in the spring of 813, he was defeated near Bersinikia, and Leo the Armenian was saluted emperor in his stead in the following summer. Michael, after having been compelled to become a monk, was permitted thenceforward to live unmolested in the island of Prote, where he died in 845. _ Micuazn II. (The Stammerer), a native of Amorium in Phrygia, was of humble origin, and began life as a private soldier, but rose by his talents and assiduity to the rank of general. He was one of those who had favoured the election to the throne of his old companion in arms Leo the Armenian in 813, but, detected in a conspiracy against the government of that emperor, had been sentenced to death in December 820 ; his partisans, however, suc- ceeded in assassinating Leo on the morning of Christmas Day, and called Michael from the prison to the throne. The principal features of his reign (820-829) were a pro- tracted struggle (of nearly three years) against his brother general, Thomas, who

aimed at the throne, the conquest of Crete by the Saracens in 823, and the beginning of their

in his policy towards the image worshippers (his own sympathies were iconoclastic), he incurred the wrath of the monks by entering into a second marriage with Euphrosyne, daughter of Constantine VL., who had previously taken the veil. He died in October 829, and was succeeded by Theophilus his son.

MicwarL III. (The Drunkard) was the grandson of Michael the Stammerer, and succeeded his father Theophilus when only three years of age (842). Until his majority at the age of eighteen the affairs of the empire were managed by the empress-regent his mother Theodora ; his education was shamefully neglected, and it was during this period that Michael formed the disgraceful personal habits which are indicated by his surname. In 861 Michael, together with his uncle Bardas, undertook an expedition against the Bulgarians, which resulted in the conversion of

the Bulgarian king, who thenceforth bore the Christian

name of Michael. The emperor had been less successful in the campaign which he led in person against Omar of Melitene in 860, but in 863 his uncle Petronas gained an important victory over the Saracens in Asia Minor. The year 865 was marked by the first appearance of the Russians in the Bosphorus. Michael was assassinated in his palace in 867 by Basilius the Macedonian, whom he had associated with himself in the empire in the previous year.

MicnarL IV. (The Paphlagonian) owed his eleva- tion to Zoe, daughter of Constantine IX., the last of the Macedonian dynasty; this princess was married to Romanus III., but becoming enamoured of Michael, her chamberlain, she poisoned her husband and married her attendant (1034). Michael, however, being of a weak character and subject to epileptic fits, possessed the supreme power only in name, and was a mere instrument in the hands of his brother, John the Eunuch, who had been first minister both of Constantine and Romanus. John’s diplomacy was successful in keeping

the Arabs in the archipelago and Egypt quiet for some time, and he was at last able to secure a victory for the imperial arms at Edessa in 1037. The attempt to recover Sicily in the following year with the help of the Normans was less pro- sperous, and in 1040 the island wholly ceased to. be a Byzantine province. About the same time, the Bulgarians having overrun Macedonia and Thrace, and threatening Constantinople, the indolent and infirm emperor, to the surprise alike of friends and foes, put himself at the head of the army, and not only drove the enemy beyond the frontier, but followed them into their own territory. He died, shortly after his triumph, on December 10, 1041.

MicuarL V. (Calaphates or The Caulker), nephew and successor of the preceding, derived his surname from his father Stephen, who had originally followed the occu- pation of a caulker of ships. He owed his elevation (December 1041) to his uncle John, whom along with Zoe he almost immediately banished; this led to a popular tumult and his' dethronement after. a brief reign of four months (April 1042). He lived for many years afterwards in the quiet obscurity of a monastery.

MicHaet VI. (The Warlike) was already an old man when chosen by the empress Theodora as her successor shortly before her death in 1056. His government was feeble in the extreme, and he was at last compelled to abdicate by Isaac Comnenus, who had defeated his army in Phrygia (August 1057). He also spent the rest of his life in @ monastery.

MicuarEL VII. (Ducas or Parapinaces) was the eldest son of Constantine XI. Ducas, by whom along with his brothers Andronicus [. and Constantine XII. he was invested with the title of Augustus; this joint succession took place in 1067, but in 1071 it suited the policy of the

attacks upon Sicily (827). Conciliatory on the whole | uncle Joannes Cesar to make Michael sole emperor. For

this position Michael, whose "character was degraded, rather than ennobled, by the virtues of a monk and the learning of a sophist," was by no means fitted, and at length two generals of the name of Nicephorus,

surnamed Bryennius and Botaniates, simultaneously rebelled against him in 1078; with hardly a struggle he resigned the purple and retired into a monastery, where he afterwards received the title of archbishop of Ephesus.

‘Micuazt VIII. (Paleologus), born in 1234, was the son of Andronicus Paleologus Comnenus and _ Trene Angela the granddaughter of Alexius Angelus, emperor of Constantinople. At an early age he rose to distine- tion, and ultimately became commander of the French mercenaries in the employment of the emperors of Nicea.

there accept the ‘‘filioque” and papal supremacy. The union thus brought about between the two churches was, however, extremely distasteful to the Greeks, and the persecution of his “schismatic” subjects to which the emperor was compelled to resort weakened his power so much that Martin IV. was tempted to enter into alliance with Charles of Anjou and the Venetians for the purpose of reconquering Constantinople. The invasion, however, failed, and Michael so far had his revenge in the “ Sicilian Vespers,” which he helped to bring about. He died in Thrace in December 1282, and was succeeded by his son Andronicus IT.

Micuart IX. (Paleologus) was the son of Andronicus II., and was associated with him on the throne from 1295, but predeceased him (1320).

MICHAELIS, Joann Davin (1717-1791), one of the most influential scholars and teachers of last century, belonged to a family which had the chief part in main- taining that solid discipline in Hebrew and the cognate languages which distinguished the university of Halle in the period of Pietism. Johann Heinrich Michaelis (1668-

1738) was the chief director of Francke’s Collegium |

Orventale Theologicum, a practical school of Biblical and Oriental philology then quite unique, and the author of an annotated Hebrew Bible and various exegetical works of reputation, especially the Adnotationes uberiores in Hagio- graphos, 1720. had as fellow-worker his sister’s son Christian Benedict Michaelis (1680-1764), the father of Johann David, who

In his chief publications J. H. Michaelis |

was likewise influential as professor at Halle, and a very sound scholar, especially in Syriac. J. D. Michaelis was trained for academical life under his father's eye. Halle was not then the best of universities ; a. narrow theological spirit cramped all intellectual activity, and the eager viva- cious youth, already distinguished by a love for realities and a distaste for small pedantries, found much of the teaching wearisome enough. He acquired, however, a good know- ledge of the Latin classics,—Greek, he tells us, was hardly taught at all, and his knowledge of Greek literature was gained by his own reading in later years,—learned all that his father could teach, and was influenced, especially in philosophy, by Baumgarten, the link between the old Pietism and Semler, while he cultivated his strong taste for history under Ludwig. In the winter-semester 1739-40 he qualified as university lecturer. One of his disserta- tions was.a defence of the antiquity and divine authority of the vowel points in Hebrew. His scholarship still moved in the old traditional lines in which no further pro- gress was possible, and he was also much exercised by religious scruples, the conflict of an independent mind with that submission to authority at the expense of reason encouraged by the type of Lutheranism in which he had been trained. A long visit to England in 1741-42 lifted him out of the narrow groove of his earlier education. In passing through Holland he made the acquaintance of the great Schultens, whose influence on his philological views was not immediate, but became all-powerful a few years later. England offered to him no such commanding per- sonal influence, and he was not yet able to turn to profit the stores of the great libraries, but his personality was strengthened by contact with a larger life, and his theo- logical views were turned aside from the pietistic channel. Michaelis never ceased to regard himself as essentially orthodox, though he did not feel able fully to subscribe the Lutheran articles, and more than once declined on this account to be professor of theology. But his views acquired a distinctly rationalistic complexion, and the orthodoxy of his Géttingen lectures and publications on

| dogmatic (delivered from a philosophical chair) is of a very Eastern church to attend the council of Lyons (1274) and |

washed-out kind. His really useful work, however, lay in other directions ; the change of his theological views was important because it relieved him from trammels that hampered the free course of his development as a scholar. From England Michaelis went back to Halle ; but he felt himself out of place, and in 1745 gladly accepted an invitation to G6ttingen as privat-docent. In 1746 he became extraordinary, in 1750 ordinary, professor, and in Gottingen he remained till his death in 1791. In the first years of his new position Michaelis passed through a second education. In the young and intellectually vigorous Georgia Augusta he came under the powerful personal influence of such men as Gesner and Haller. His intellect was active in many directions ; universal learning indeed was perhaps one of his foibles. Literature—modern as well as ancient—occupied his attention; one of his works was a translation of four parts of Clarissa; and transla- tions of some of the then current English paraplrases on Biblical books manifested his sympathy with a school which, if not very learned, attracted him by its freer air. His Oriental studies were reshaped by diligent perusal of the works of Schultens ; for the Halle school, with all its learning, had no conception of the principles on which a fruitful connexion between Biblical and Oriental learning can be established. His linguistic work indeed was always hampered by the lack of MS. material which is felt in his philological writings, e.g., in his valuable Supplementa to the Hebrew lexicons (1784—92).1 He could not become

1 By a strange fortune of war it was the occupation of Gottingen by the French in the Seven Years' War, and the friendly relations he

such an Arabist as Reiske; and, though for many years the most famous teacher of Semitic languages in Europe, he had little of the higher philological faculty, and neither his grammatical nor his critical work, highly praised as it then was, has left a permanent mark, with the exception perhaps of his text-critical studies on the Peshito.! His tastes were all for realia—history, antiquities, especially geography and natural science; in his autobiography he half regrcts that he did not choose the medical profession. Here he found a field hardly touched since Bochart, in whose foot- steps he followed in the Spicdlegium geographiz Hebreorum exteree post

Bochartum (1769-80). To his impulse we owe the famous Eastern expedition of Von Haven, Forskal, and Nicbuhr. He prepared the instructions for their journey, and drew up a series of questions and elucidations to guide their researches, which place in strong relief his compre- hensive grasp of all that was then known of the East, and the keen delight in the knowledge of tangible and natural things, paired with a sober and patient judgment, which was his chief intellectual characteristic. this knowledge was turned to the profit of Biblical study ; in his exegetical writings, for example, one of the main features is what was then the novelty of illustrations from Eastern travel. In spite of his doctrinal writings—which at the time made no little noise, so that his Compendium of Dogmatic (1760) was confiscated in Sweden, and the knighthood of the North Star was afterwards given him in reparation—it was the natural side of the Bible that really attracted him, and no man did more to introduce the modern method of studying Hebrew antiquity as an integral part of ancient Eastern life. The permanent

influence of his works indeed has not been great, and many | of them are now hardly readable ; for, with all his historic |

tastes and learning, he had no large historic conceptions, and, what is closcly akin to this defect, was singularly deficient in imagination and poetic sympathy. But the vivacity of his mind, his manysidedness, his singularly attractive though discursive method of lecturing, and above all his power of fecling and inspiring interest in

every kind of fact, was a potent stimulus much needed in |

the Germany of that age, and did not soon die. Different

The best part of |

as the three men are, there is a true historic nexus between |

the threc great Gottingen Orientalists, Michaelis, Eichhorn, and Ewald.

The personal character of Michaelis can be read between the lines of his autobiography with the aid of the other materials collected 7 the editor

Hasseneamp (J. D. Michactlis Lebensbeschreibung, &e.,

98). i not enough to read his books, now for the most part dull enough to us ; we inust see the upright vivacious laborious man, with a good deal of worldly prudenee and a good deal of temper, mueh absorbed in his manifold academie activities in the university and

Royal Society of Gottingen, yet ever full of interest in the larger world, and of shrewd judgments aud lively talk, with a strong sense of his rights and dignity, yet with a good and warm heart; shining espeeially in the leeture-room, where he dealt forth knowledge with discursive hand from a full store, displaying the methods as well as the results of his all-sided research, not without a touch of the vanity of tle polyhistor, and loving to leave the chair under a storm of applause at a parting bou-mot which he acknowledged at the door in a backward glance of triumph. i full list of his works. Besides those already mentioned it is suffi- eient to refer to his New Testament Jntroduction (the first edition, 1750, preceded the full development of his powers, and is a very different book from. the later editions), his reprint of Lowth's Prelectiones with important additions (1758-62), his German translation of the Bible with notes (1773-92), his Orientalische und Exegetische Bibliothek (1775-85), and Neue O. and E. Bib. (1786-91), his Aosaisehes Recht (1770-71), and his edition of Castle's Lexicon Syriacum (1787-88). His Litterarischer Brief- weehsel (1794-96) contains much that is interesting for the history of learning in his time. (W. RB. 8.)

formed with the offieers, that procured him the Paris M8. from which he edited Abulfeda's deseription of Egypt. 1 Cure in Actus Apostolorum Syriacos, 1755.

To understand the secret of his enor i iis, OS) : 4 : : : is one a along with Poujoulat also edited and in part wrote Vouvelle

The same volume contains a'

MICHAUD, Josepu (1767-1839), French historian and publicist, was born of an old family on June 19, 1767, at Albens, Savoy, was educated at Bourg-en-Bresse, and afterwards engaged in literary work at Lyons, where the events of 1789 first called into activity the dislike to revolutionary principles which manifested itself throughout the rest of his life. In 1791 he went to Paris, where, not without danger, he took part in editing several royalist journals. In 1794 he started La Quotidienne, for his con- nexion with which he was arrested after the 13th of Vendémiaire; he succceded in escaping his captors, but was sentenced to death par contwmace by the military council. Having resumed the editorship of his newspaper on the establishment of the Directory, he was again proscribed on the 18th of Fructidor, but at the close of two years returned to Paris when the consulate had superseded the Directory. His Bourbon sympathies led to a_ brief imprisonment in 1800, and on his release he for the time abandoned journalism, and began to write or edit books. Along with his brother and two colleagues he published in 1806 a Biographie moderne, ou dictionnaire des hommes gui se sont fait un nom en Europe depuis 1789, the earliest work of its kind; in 1808 the first volume of his fistovre des Croisades appeared, and in 1811 he originated the Biographie Universelle. In 1814 he resumed the editor- ship of the Quotedienne, and in the same year was elected Academician. In 1815 his brochure entitled Histowre des quinze Semaines ou le dernier régne de Bonaparte met with extraordinary success, passing through twenty-seven editions within a very short time. His political services were now rewarded with the cross of an officer in the Legion of Honour and the modest post of king’s reader, of which last he was deprived in 1827 for having opposed Peyronnet’s “Toi d’Amour” against the freedom of the press. In 1830-31 he travelled in Syria and Egypt for the purpose of collecting additional materials for the J/istowre des Croisades; his correspondence with a fellow explorer, Poujoulat, consisting practically of discussions and eluci- dations of various important points in that” work, was afterwards published (Correspondance d’Orient, 7 vols., 1832-35). The Bibliothéque des Crotsades, in four volumes more, contained the “ pitces justificatives ” of the Ilistotre. Michaud died on September 30, 1839, at Passy, where his home had been since 1832. His L/tstowre des Croisades was published in its final form in six volumes in 1841 under the editorship of his friend Poujoulat (9th ed., with appendix, by Huillard-Brcholles, 1856). Michand

Collection des Mémoires pour servir & VHistoire de France, 32 vols., 1836-44. See Sainte-Beuve, Causeries du LIundi, vol. vii.

MICHAUX, Anpri (1746-1802), a French botanist, best known for his works on the flora of North America and as a botanical traveller. In 1779 he spent some time botanizing in England, and in 1780 he explored Auvergne, the Pyrenees, and the north of Spain. In 1782 he was sent by the French Government on a botanical mission to Persia. His journey began unfavourably, as he was robbed by Arabs of all his equipments execpt his books ; but he gained influential support in Persia, having curcd the shah of a dangerous illness. After two ycars he returned to France with a fine herbarium, and also intro- duccd numerous Eastern .plants into the botanic gardens of France. In 1785 he was sent by the French Govern- ment to North America, and travelled through Canada, Nova Scotia, and the United States as far west as the Mississippi. The outbreak of the French Revolution deprived him of means to continue his work in America, and in 1796 he returned to France. He was shipwrecked, and lost most of his collections on the voyage. In 1800

he went to Madagascar to investigate the flora of that island, and died there in 1802. His work as a botanist was chiefly done in the field, and he added largely to what was previously known of the botany of the East and of America. He also introduced many plants into Euro- pean botanic gardens. He wrote two valuable works on North-American plants,—the Histoire des chénes de lV Amérique Septentrionale (1801), with 36 plates, and the Flora Boreali-Americana (1803), 2 vols., with 51 plates.

MICHAUX, Francois AnpRE (1770-1855), son of the preceding, was, like his father, employed by the French Government to explore the forests of North America with a view to the introduction into France of trees valuable for their wood or other products. He was very success- ful in carrying out this object. He published in 1810-13 a Histowre des Arbres forestréres de ? Amérique Septentrionale, in 3 vols., with 156 plates, a work full of information on the characters, uses, distribution, and other points of interest in the various species. In 1817-19 a translation of it appeared under the title

Morth American Sylva. He also wrote a Voyage a Uouest des Monts Alléghanys, 1804, besides articles in scientific magazines.

MICHELANGELO (1475-1564). Michelangelo Buon- arroti, best known simply as Michelangelo, the last and most famous of the great artists of Florence, was the son of Ludovico Buonarroti, a poor gentleman of that city, and of his wife Francesca di Neri. Ludovico was barely able to live on the income of his estate, but made it his boast that he had never stooped to add to it by mercantile or mechani- cal pursuits. The favour of the Medici procured him em- ployment in some minor offices of state, and in the autumn of 1474 he was appointed resident magistrate of Caprese, in the Casentino, for a period of six months. Thither he accordingly repaired with his family, and there, on March 6, 1475, his second son Michelagniolo or Michelangelo was born. Immediately afterwards the family returned to Florence, and the child was put to nurse with a marble- worker's wife of Settignano. His mother's health had already, it would seem, begun to fail; at all events in about two years from this time, after she had borne her husband two more sons, she died. While still a young boy, Michelangelo determined in spite of his father's opposition to be an artist. He had sucked in the passion, as he himself used to say, with his foster-mother's milk. After a sharp struggle, his stubborn will overcame his father's pride of gentility, and at thirteen he got himself articled as a paid assistant in the workshop of the brothers Ghirlandaio. Domenico Ghirlandaio, bred a jeweller, had become by this time the foremost painter of Florence. In his service the young Michelangelo laid the foundations of that skill in fresco with which twenty years afterwards he confounded his detractors at Rome. He studied also, like all the Florentine artists of that age, in the Brancacci chapel, where the frescos of Masaccio, painted some sixty years before, still victoriously held their own; and here, in a quarrel with an ill-conditioned fellow-student, Torrigiani, he received the blow of which his face bore the marks to his dying day.

Though Michelangelo's earliest studies were directed towards painting, he was by nature and predilection much more inclined to sculpture. In that art he presently received encouragement and training under the eye of an illustrious patron, Lorenzo dei Medici. . On the recommendation, it is said, of Ghirlandaio, he was trans- ferred, before the term of his apprenticeship

as a painter had expired, to the school of sculpture established by Lorenzo in the Medici gardens. Here he could learn to match himself against his great predecessor, Donatello, one of whose pupils was the director of the school, and to com- pare the works of that master and his Tuscan contemporaries

with the antiques collected for the instruction of the scholars. Here, too, he could listen to discourses on Platonism, and steep himself in the doctrines of an enthusiastic philosophy which sought to reconcile with Christian faith the lore and the doctrines of the Academy. Michelangelo remained a Christian Platonist to the end of his days; he was also from his youth up a devoted student of Dante. His powers of mind and hand soon attracted attention, and secured him the regard and favour of his patrons in spite of his rugged, unsociable exterior, and of a temper which at best was but a half-smothered volcano.

Michelangelo had been attached to the school and house- hold of the Medici for barely three years when, in 1492, his great patron Lorenzo died. lLorenzo’s son Piero dei Medici inherited the position, but not the qualities, of his father ; Florence soon chafed under his authority; and towards the autumn of 1494 it became apparent that disaster was impending over him and _ his adherents. Michelangelo was constitutionally subject to dark and sudden presentiments: one such seized him now, and, without awaiting the popular outbreak which soon followed, he took horse with two companions and fled to Bologna. There, being now in his twentieth year, he was received with kindness by a member of the Aldovrandi family, and on his commission executed two figures of ‘saints, and one of an angel, for the shrine of St Dominic in the church of St Petronius. After about a year, work at Bologna failing, and his name having been included in his absence on the list of artists appointed to provide a new hall of assembly for the Great Council of Florence, Michelangelo returned home. The strange theocracy established by Savonarola was now in force, and the whole character of civic life at Florence was for the time being changed. But Michelangelo was not left without employment. He found a friend in another Lorenzo, the son of Pierfrancesco dei Medici, for whom he at this time executed a statue of

the boy St John. Having also carved a recumbent Cupid in imitation of the antique, it was suggested to him by the same patron that it should be so tinted and treated as to look like a real antique, and sold accordingly. Without increasing the price he put upon the work, Michelangelo for anwuse- ment lent himself to the counterfeit, and the piece was then actually sold for a large sum to a Roman collector, the cardinal San Giorgio, as a genuine work of antiquity,—the dealer appropriating the profits. When presently the cardinal discovered the fraud, he caused the dealer to refund ; but as to Michelangelo himself, it was represented to the young sculptor that if he went to Rome, the amateur who had just involuntarily paid so high a tribute ‘to his skill would certainly befriend him. He set forth accord- ingly, and arrived at Rome for the first time at the end of June 1496. Such hopes as he may have entertained of countenance from the cardinal San Giorgio were quickly dispelled. Neither did the banished Piero dei Medici, who also was now living at Rome, do anything to help him. On the other hand Michelangelo won the favour of a Roman nobleman, Jacopo Galli, and through him of the French cardinal Jean de Villiers de la Grolaie, abbot of St Denis. From the former he received a commission for a Cupid and a Bacchus, from the latter for a Dieta, or Mary lamenting over the body of Christ,—works of which probably all three, the last two certainly, are preserved.

Michelangelo’s stay in Rome at this time lasted five years, from the summer of 1496 till that of 1501. ie interval had been one of extreme political distraction at Florence. The excitement of the French invasion, the mystic and ascetic regimen of Savonarola, the reaction which led to his overthrow, and finally the external wars and internal dissidences which preceded a new scttlement, had all created an atmosphere most unfavourable to art.

Nevertheless Ludovico Buonarroti, who in the troubles of 1494 had lost a small permanent appointment he held in the customs, and had come to regard his son Michelangelo as the mainstay of his house, had been repeatedly urging him to come home.

A spirit of family duty and family pride was the ruling principle in all Michelangelo’s conduct. During the best years of his life he submitted

himself sternly and without

a murmur to pinching hardship and almost superhuman —

labour for the sake of his father and brothers, who were ever selfishly ready to be fed and helped by him. Having now, after an illness, come home in 1501, Michelangelo received the request from the cardinal Francesco Piccolomini to adorn with a number of sculptured figures a shrine already begun in the cathedral of Siena in honour of the most distinguished member of his house, Pope Pius IL Four only of these figures were ever executed, and those not apparently, or only in small part, by the master's hand. A work of greater interest in Florence itself had diverted him from his engagement to his Sienese patron. This was the execution of the famous colossal statue of David, popularly known as the Giant. It was carved out of a huge block of marble on which another sculptor, Agostino d'Antonio, had begun unsuccessfully to work forty years before, and which had been lying idle ever since. Michelangelo had here a difficult problem before him. Without much regard to tradition or the historical character of his hero, he carved out of the vast but cramped mass of material a youthful, frowning colossus, which amazed every beholder by its freedom and science of execu- tion, and its victorious energy of expression. All the best artists of Florence were called in council to determine on what site it should be set up, and after much debate the terrace of the Palace of the Signory was chosen, in preference to the neighbouring Loggia dei Lanzi. Here accord- ingly the colossal David of Michelangelo took, in the month of May 1504, the place which it continued to hold ever after- wards, until ten years ago, in 1873, it was removed for the sake of protection to a hall in the Academy of Fine Arts. Other works of sculpture by the same indomitable hand also belong to this period: among these another David, in bronze, and on a, smaller scale; a great rough- hewn St Matthew begun but never completed for the cathedral of Florence; a Madonna and Child executed on the commission of a merchant of Bruges; and two un- finished bas-reliefs of the same subject.

Neither was Michelangelo idle at the same time as a painter. Leaving disputed works for the moment out of sight, he in these days at any rate painted for his and Raphael's common patron, Angelo Doni, the Holy Family now in the Uffizi at Florence. And in the autumn of 1504, the year

of the completion of the David, he received from the Florentine state a commission for a work of monumental painting on an heroic scale. Leonardo da Vinci had been for some months engaged on his great cartoon of the Battle of Anghiari, to be painted on the wall of the great hall-of the municipal council. The gonfaloniere Soderini now procured for Michelangelo the commission to design a companion work. Michelangelo chose an incident of the Pisan war, when the Florentine soldiery had been surprised by the enemy in the act of bathing: he dashed at the task with his accustomed fiery energy, and had carried a great part of the cartoon to completion when, in the early spring of 1505, he broke off the work in order to obey a call to Rome which reached him from Pope Julius IJ. His unfinished cartoon showed how greatly Michelangelo had profited by the example of his elder rival, Leonardo, little as, personally, he yielded to his charm or could bring himself to respond to his courtesy. The work of Michielangelo's youth is for the

most part comparatively tranquil in character. His early sculpture, showing a degree of science and perfection un- equalled since the antique, has also something of the antique serenity. It bears strongly the stamp of intel- lectual research, but not by any means that of storm or strain. In the cartoon of the Bathers, he on the other hand appropriated and carried further the mastery, which Leonardo had first asserted, over every variety of violent action and every extreme of energetic movement. In it the qualities afterwards proverbially associated with Michelangelo—his furza, his terribilita, the tempest and hurricane of the spirit which accompanied his unequalled technical mastery and knowledge—first found expression.

With Michelangelo's departure to Rome early in 1505 the first part of his artistie career may be said to end. It will be convenient here to recapitulate its principal results in sculpture and painting, both those preserved, and those recorded but lost.

ScuLPTURE.—Florence, 1489-94. Head of a Fawn, National Museuin, Florence (?). Condivi describes Michelangelo's first essay in sculpture as a head of an aged faun with a front tooth knocked out, this latter point having been an afterthought suggested by Lorenzo dei Medici. The head is

commonly identified with one in the National Museum at Florence, which, however, bears no marks of Michelangelo's style, and is in all probability spurious. I/adonna Seated on a Step, Casa Buonarroti, Florence. This bas-relief is a genuine example of Michelangelo's carly work in the Medicean school under Bertoldo. It is executed in low relief in imitation of the technical style of Donatello; but the attitudes and characters of the figures, and the long-drawn, somewhat tormented folds of drapery, recall rather the manner of Jacopo della Quercia. Cen- tawromachia, Casa Buonarroti. A fine and unquestionably genuine work in full relicf, of probably somewhat later date than the last- mentioned ; Michelangelo has followed the antique in his con- ception and treatment of the nude, but not at all in the arrange-ment of the subject, which occurs frequently in works of ancient art.'

Bologna, 1494-95. Kneeling Angel, supporting the shrine of St Dominic. This is the figure, with crisp hair, short resolute features, and drapery clinging to show the limbs, on the right- hand side of the spectator as he fronts the altar. The prettier and more engaging figure at the opposite end was long taken to be Michelangelo's work, but is really that of Niccold dell Arca. Michelangelo also finished the figure of St Petronius on the cornice of the same altar, begun by the same Niccold, and exccuted one of St Proculus which has perished.

Florence, 1495-96. St John in the Wilderness, Berlin Museum. During the year between Michclangelo's return from Bologna and his first departure to Rome he executcd, as has been narrated above, a statue of S. Giovannino for Lorenzo di Pierfrancesco dei Medici. This had for centuries been supposed lost, when in 1874 it was declared to have been found in the possession of Count Gualandi- Rossalmini at Pisa. Vehement and prolonged discussions arose as to the authenticity of the work, and at last it was bought for the Berlin Muscum, where its genuineness is with apparently good reason maintained. The stripling saint stands naked but for a skin about his loins, holding a honeycomb in his left hand and lifting to his mouth a goat's horn full of honey with his right. Restoration of an antique group of Baechus and Ampelus, Uffizi Gallery, Florence. This interesting restoration of an antique torso, by the addition of a head, the lower part of the legs, and the accessory figure of an attendant genius, a plinth, and mask, is not one of the works traditionally ascribed to Michelangelo; but has lately, and as it

seems rightly, becn claimed for him on internal evidence. Recumbent Cupid, bought by the cardinal San Giorgio as an antique. This work, which played an important part in Michel- angelo’s history, is unfortunately lost.

Rome, 1495-1501. Kneeling Cupid, South Kensington Mnseum, London. This beautiful statue of an athlctie youth kneeling on the right knee, looking over his right sboulder, with the right hand lowered and the left raised, and having a quiver on the ground beside him, is acknowledged on internal grounds as an early work of Michclangelo. There is some ambiguity about the. character and action of the personage; but the work is usually identified with the Cupid which Michelangelo is recorded to have executed at this time for Jacopo Galli. Baechus and Young Faun, National Museum, Florence. This is unquestionably the ‘‘ Bacchus” eommissioned by the same patron. The finely-framed but soft- limbed youthful god, his weight supported somewhat staggeringly on the left leg, holds up a wine cup m his right hand, and with his loosely-hanging left hand holds a cluster of grapes, at which a child-faun standing a little behind him grasps and nibbles. The surface highly finished and polished, as in the Berlin St Jobn. Virgin Lamenting the Dead Christ, St Peter’s, Rome. This group, executed for the French abbot of St Denis, is.the finest of all

———

mt 4 ft

Miehelangelo’s early senlptnres, and one of the finest of his life: |

It still reealls the ideals of some of the earlier Tuscan masters, especially Jacopo da Quereia ; but the execution is of a mastery and nobility unprecedented in Italian art. The Virgin, in drapery of magnificent design, with her left knee somewhat raised and her right hand slightly extended, sits holding on her lap the dead Christ,—a figure of splendid frame and modelling as well as of admirable pathos and dignity in expression.

Florence, 1501-6. Four Saints decorating the Shrine of Pius JUG. in the cathedral of Siena. These figures represent the only part which Michelangelo ever completed of his contract with the car- dinal Piccolomini and his heirs. They are evidently carried out by the hand of pupils only.

Virgin and Child, Liebfrauenkirche, Bruges. This pleasing group has been since the days of Albert Diirer attributed to Michelangelo, and bears the manifest stamp of his design, though its execution may be partly by inferior hands. It is placed elose to the tombstone of a member of the Moscheroni (or Moskeron) family. We know that Michelangelo executed at this time, for one of this very family, a work which the aucient biographers describe as having been in bronze,—a imedal- lion in that metal, says explicitly Vasari; but it is probably really the marble groupin question. Virgin and Child, Royal Academy, London. This beautiful unfinished circular relief is identified with one recorded to have been executed by the master for Taddeo Gaddi. Virgin and Child, National Museum, Florenee,—a similar relief, also unfinished, originally ordered by Bartolommeo Pitti. Youthful David, Academy of Arts, Florence. Of this colossal work, whieh in spite of its scale and subject has still, in grace of pose and style, a considerable artistic affinity with the earlier Bacchus and St John, enough has been said, Figure of David, a small statue in bronze. Several extant works have been pointed out as probably identical with this lost statue ; but the claims of none have been generally acknowledged.

PAINTING. —Holy Family, Uffizi, Florence. This circular picture, painted for Angelo Doni, and mentioned by the earliest biographers, is the dnly perfectly well-attested panel-painting of Michelangelo which exists. His love of restless and somewhat strained actions is illustrated by the action of the Madonna, who kneels on the ground holding up the child on her right shoulder ; his love of the nude by the introduction (wherein he follows Tuca Signorelli) of some otherwise purposeless undraped figures in the background. Virgin and Child with Four Angels, National Gallery, London. This unfinished painting, marked by great grace as well as severity of feeling and design, was formerly attributed to Domenico Ghirlandaio, but is now commonly held to be the earliest extant picture by Michel- angelo. Ofhis manner, especially in the design and treatment of the drapery, it bears evident marks; but the execution seems like that of some weaker pupil or companion, perhaps Ridolfo Ghirlandaio or Granacci. Kntombinent of Christ, National Gallery, London. This ae also unfinished, has in like manner been mucli con- tested. Its composition is unfortunate ; weaker hands have dis- figured some portions of the work ; but the extraordinary excellence of other portions, and the grandeur of some of the actions, render

it probable that the work is one begun and afterwards abandoned by Michelangelo himself. Cartoon of the Battle of Anghiari. Of this famous lost work (begun, though apparently not completed, in the period now engaging us) the only anthentie record is contained in two early engravings, one by Marcantonio and the other by Agostino Veneziano. An elaborate drawing of many figures at Holkham Hall, well known and often engraved, seems to be a later cento destitute of real authority.

Michelangelo had not been long in Rome before Pope Julius devised fit employment for him. That capacious and headstrong spirit, on fire with great enterprises, had conceived the idea of a sepulchral monument to commemorate his glory when he should be dead, and to be executed according to his own plans while he was still living. He entrusted this congenial task to Michelangelo. The design being approved, the artist spent the winter of 1505-6 at the quarries of Carrara, superintending the excavation and shipment of the necessary marbles. In the spring he returned to Rome, and when the marbles arrived fell to with all his energy at the preparations for the work. For a while the pope followed their progress eagerly, and was all kindness to the young sculptor. But presently his disposition changed. In Michelangelo's absence an artist who was no friend of his, Bramante of Urbino, had been selected by Julius to carry out a new architectural scheme, commensurate with the usual vastness of his con- ceptions, namely the rebuilding of St Peter's church. To

the influence and the malice of Bramante Michelangelo |

attributed the unwelcome invitation he now received to interrupt the great work of sculpture which he had just begun, in order to decorate the Sixtine chapel with frescos. Soon, however, schemes of war and conquest interposed to divert the thoughts of Julius, not from the progress of his Own monument merely, but from artistic enterprises altogether. One day Michelangelo heard him say at table to his jeweller that he meant to spend no more money on pebbles either small or great. To add to the artist's discomfiture, when he went to apply in person for payments due, he was first put off from day to day, and at last actually with scant courtesy dismissed. At this his dark mood got the mastery of him. Convinced that not his

employment only but his life was threatened, he suddenly took horse and left Rome, and before the messengers of the pope could overtake him was safe on Florentine territory. Michelangelo's flight took place in April 1506. Once among his own people, he turned a deaf ear to all overtures made from Rome for his return, and stayed throughout the summer at Florence, how occupied we are not distinctly informed, but apparently, among other things, on the continuation of his great battle cartoon. During the same summer Julius planned and executed the victorious military campaign which ended in his unopposed entry at the head of his army into Bologna. Thither, under strict safe-conduct and promises of renewed favour, Michelangelo was at last prevailed on to betake himself. Julius received the truant artist kindly, as indeed between these two volcanic natures there existed a natural affinity, and ordered of him his own colossal likeness in bronze, to be set up, as a symbol of his conquering authority, over the principal entrance of the church of St Petronius. For the next fifteen months Michelangelo devoted his whole strength to this new task. The price at which he undertook it left him, as it turned out, hardly any margin to subsist on. Moreover, in the technical art of metal casting he was inexperienced, and an assistant whom he had summoned from Florence proved insubordinate and had to be dismissed. Nevertheless his genius

| prevailed over every hardship and difficulty, and on the

21st of February 1508 the majestic bronze colossus of the seated pope, robed and mitred, with one hand grasping the keys and the other extended in a gesture of benedic- tion and command, was duly raised to its station over the church porch. Three years later it was destroyed in a revolution. The people of Bologna rose against the authority of Julius; his delegates and partisans were cast out, and his effigy hurled from its place. The work of Michelangelo, after being trailed in derision through the streets, was broken up and its fragments cast into the furnace.

Meanwhile the artist himself, as soon as his work was done, had followed lis reconciled master back to Rome. The task that here awaited him, however, was after all not the resumption of the papal monument, but the execution of the series of paintings in the Sixtine chapel which had been mooted before his departure. Painting, he always averred, was not his

business; and he entered with misgiving and reluctance upon his new undertaking. Destiny, however, so ruled that the work thus thrust upon him remains his chief title to glory. His history is one of

indomitable will and almost superhuman energy, yet of will

that hardly ever had its way, and of energy continually at war with circumstance. The only work which in all his life he was able to complete as he had conceived it was this of the decoration of the Sixtine ceiling. The pope had at first proposed a scheme including figures of the twelve apostles only. Michelangelo would be content with nought so meagre, and furnished instead a design of many hundred figures, embodying all the history of creation and

of the first patriarchs, with accessory personages of prophets and sibyls dreaming on the new dispensation to come, and, in addition, those of the forefathers of Christ. The whole was to be enclosed and divided by an elaborate framework of painted architecture, with a multitude of nameless human shapes supporting its several members or reposing among them,—shapes mediating, as it were, between the features of the inanimate framework and those of the great dramatic and prophetic scenes themselves. Michelangelo’s plan was accepted by the pope, and by May 1508 his preparations for its execution were made. Later in the same year he summoned a number of assistant painters from Florence. Trained in the traditions of the earlier Florentine school, they were unable, it seems, to interpret Michelangelo’s designs in fresco either with sufficient freedom or sufficient uniformity of style to satisfy him. At any rate he soon dismissed them, and carried out the remainder of his colossal task alone, except for the necessary amount of purely mechanical and subordinate help. ‘The physical conditions of prolonged work, face upwards, upon this vast expanse of ceiling were adverse and trying in the extreme. But after four and a half years of toil the task was accomplished. Michelangelo had during its progress been harassed alike by delays of payment and by hostile intrigue. The absolute need of, funds for the furtherance of the undertaking had even constrained him at one moment to break off work, and pursue his inconsiderate master as far as Bologna. His ill-wishers at the same time kept

casting doubts on his capacity, and vaunting the superior powers of Raphael. That gentle spirit would by nature have been no man's enemy, but unluckily Michelangelo's moody, self- concentrated temper prevented the two artists being on terms of amity such as might have stopped the mouths of mischief-makers. Once during the progress of his task Michelangelo was compelled to remove a portion of the scaffolding and exhibit what had been so far done, when the effect alike upon friends and detractors was overwhelm- ing. Still more complete was his triumph when, late in the autumn of 1512, the whole of his vast achievement was disclosed to view.

The main field of the Sixtine cciling is divided into four larger alternating with five smaller fields. The following is the order of the subjects depicted in them:—(1) the dividing of the light from the darkness; (2) the creation of sun, moon, and stars, and of the herbage ; (3) the creation of the waters; (4) the creation of man; (5) the creation of woman; (6) the temptation and expulsion ; (7) an enigmatical scene, said to represent the saerifiec of Cain and Abel, but rather resembling the sacrifice of Noah ; (8) the deluge ; (9) the drunkenness of Noah. The figures in the last three of these scenes are on a smaller seale than those in the first six. In numbers 1, 3, 5, 7, and 9 the field of the picture is reduced by the encroach- mente of the architectural framework and supporters. These sub- jects are flanked at each end by the figure of a seated prophet or sibyl alternately; two other prophets are introduced at each ex- tremity of the series, making seven prophets and five sibyls in all. In the angles to right and left of the prophcts at the two extremitics are tlie Death of Goliath, the Death of Judith, the Brazen Ser- pent, and the Punishment of Hainan. In the twelve lunettes above the windows, and the similar number of triangular vaulted spaccs over them, are mysterious groups, or pairs of groups, of figures, whieli from Michelangelo's own time have usually been known as Aucestors of Christ. The army of nameless architectural and subordinate figures is too numerous to be here spoken of. The work represents all the powers of Michelangelo at their best. Disdaining all the aceessory allurements of the painter's art, he has coucentrated himself upon the exclusive delineation of the human form and face at their highest power. His imagination has eonceived, and his knowledge and certainty of hand have enabled him to realize, attitudes and combinations of unmatched variety and grandeur, and countenances of unmatched expressiveness and power. But.he has not trusted, as he came

later to trust, to science and acquired knowledge merely, neither do his personages, so far

as they did afterwards, transeend human possibility or leave the |

facts of actual life bchind them. In a word, his sublimity, often in exeess of the oeeasion, is here no more than equal to it ; more- over it is combined with the noblest elements of grace and even of tenderness.

As for the intellectual meanings of his vast design, |

ANGELO

over and above those which reveal themselves at a first glance or by a bare degeription,—they are from the nature of the ease in- exhaustible, and can never be perfectly defincd. Whatever the soul of this great Floreutine, the spiritual heir of Dante, with the Christianity of the Middle Age not shaken in his mind, but expanded and transcendentalized, by the knowledge and love of Plato,—whatever the soul of such a man, full of suppressed tender- ness and righteous indignation, and of anxious questionings of coming fate, could coneeive, that Michelangelo has expressed or shadowed forth in this great and significant scheme of paintings. The details it must remain for every fresh student to interpret in his own manner.

The Sixtine chapel was no sooner completed than Michelangelo resumed work upon the marbles for the monument of Julius. But four months only had passed when Julius died. His heirs immediately entered (in the summer of 1513) into a new contract with Michelangelo for the execution of the monument on a reduced scale. What the precise nature and extent of the original design had been we do not know, but the new one was extensive and magnificent enough. It was to consist of a great quadrilateral structure, two courses high, projecting from the church wall, and decorated on its three unattached sides with statues. On the upper course was to be placed the colossal recumbent figure of the pope under a canopy, and beside it mourning angels, with prophetic and allegoric personages at the angles,— sixteen figures in all. The lower course was to be enriched with twenty- four figures in niches and on projecting pedestals :—in the niches, Victories trampling on conquered Provinces ; in the pedestals, Arts and Sciences in

bondage. The entire work was to be completed in nine years' time. During the next three years, it would seem, Michelangelo brought to completion three at least of the promised figures, and they are among the most famous of all exist- ing works of the sculptor's art,—namely, the Moses now in the church of 8. Pietro in Vincoli at Rome and the two "Slaves" at the Louvre.

The Moses, originally intended for one of the angles of the Lee course, is now placed at the level of the eye, in the centre of the principal face of the monument as it was at last finished, on a deplorably reduced and altered scale, by Michelangelo and his assistants in his old age. The prophet, heavily bearded and draped, with only his right arm bare, sits with his left foot drawn back, his head raised and turned to the left with an expression of in- dignation and menace, his left hand laid on his lap and his right grasping the tables of the law. The work, except in one or two places, is of the utmost finish, and the statue looks like one of the prophets of the Sixtine eciling done in marble. The ''Slaves" at the Louvre are youthful male figures of equally perfect execution, nude but for the band which passes over the breast of one and the right leg of the other. One, with his left hand raised to his head aud his right pressed to his bosom, and his eyes almost closed, seems succumbing to the agonics of death; the other, with his arms bound behind his back, looks upward still hopelessly struggling. There is reason to believe that all three of these figures were finished between 1513 and 1516. The beginnings of other figures or groups intended for the same monument are to be found at Florence, where they were no doubt made and then abandoned some years later, — viz., four rudely blocked figures of slaves or prisoners, in a grotto of the Boboli gardens, and the so-called Vietory in the National Museum, an unfinished group of a combatant kneeling on and crushing to death a fallen enemy; with these may be associated a wax model. known as Hercules and Cacus in the South Ken- sington Museum, and the figure of a crouching man at St Peters- burg.

By this time (1516) Michelangelo's evil star was again in the ascendant. Julius H. had been succeeded on the papal throne by a Medici under the title of Leo A, be Medici, too, had about the same time by force and fraud re-established their sway in Florence, overthrowing the free institutions that had prevailed there since the days of Savonarola. Now on the one hand this family were the hereditary friends and patrons of Michelangelo; on the

other hand he was a patriotic son of republican Florence ; so that henceforward his personal allegiance and_ his political sympathies were destined to be at conflict. Over

much of his art, as has been thought, the pain and per- plexity of this conflict have cast their shadow. For the present the consequence to him of the rise to power of the Medici was a fresh interruption of his cherished work on the tomb of Julius. Leo X. and his kinsmen insisted that Michelangelo, regardless of all other engagements, must design and carry out a great new scheme for the enrich- ment of their own family church of San Lorenzo in Florence. The heirs of Julius on their part showed an accommodating temper, and at the request of Leo allowed their three-years'-old contract to be cancelled in favour of another, whereby the scale and sculptured decorations of the Julian monument were again to be reduced by nearly a half. Unwillingly Michelangelo accepted the new com- mission thus thrust upon him for the church facade at Florence; but, having once accepted it, he produced a design of combined sculpture and architecture as splendid and ambitious in its way as had been that for the monu- ment of Julius. In the summer of 1516 he left Rome for Carrara to superintend the excavation of the marbles. Michelangelo was now in his forty-second year. Though more than half his life was yet to come, yet its best days had, as it proved, been spent. All the hindrances which he had encountered hitherto were as nothing to those which began to beset him now. For the supply of materials for the facade of San Lorenzo he had set a firm of masons to work, and had himself, it seems, entered into a kind of partnership with them, at Carrara, where he knew the quarries well, and where the industry was hereditary and well understood. When all was well in progress there under his own eye, reasons of state induced the Medici and the Florentine magistracy to bid him resort instead to certain new quarries at Pietrasanta, near Serravalle in the territory of Florence. Hither, to the disgust of his old clients at Carrara and to his own, Michelangelo accordingly had to transfer the scene of his labours. Presently he found himself so impeded and enraged bythe mechanical difficulties of raising and transporting the niarbles, and by the disloyalty and incompetence of those with whom he had to deal, that he was fain to throw up the commission

altogether. The contracts for the fagade of San Lorenzo were rescinded in March 1518, and the whole magnificent scheme came to nothing. Michelangelo then returned to Florence, where proposals of work poured in on him from many quarters. The king of France desired something from his hand to place beside the two pictures he possessed by Raphael. The authorities of Bologna wanted him to design a facade for their church of St Petronius ; those of Genoa to cast a statue in bronze of their great commander, Andrea Doria. Cardinal Grimani begged hard for any picture or statue he might have to spare; other amateurs importuned him for so much as a pencil drawing or sketch. Lastly his friend and partisan Sebastian del Piombo at Rome, ever eager to keep up the feud between the followers of Michelangelo and those of Raphael, besought him on Raphael's death to return at once to Rome, and take out of the hands of the dead master's pupils the works of painting still remaining to be done in the Vatican chambers. Michelangelo complied with none of these requests. All that we know of his doing at this time was the finishing a commission received and first put in hand four years previously, for a full-sized statue of a nude Christ grasping the Cross. This statue, completed and sent to Rome in 1521 (with some last touches added by subordinate hands in Rome itself), stands now in the church of Sta Maria sopra Minerva; there is little in it of the Christian spirit as commonly understood, although, in those parts which Michelangelo himself finished, there is extreme accomplishment of design and workmanship. The next twelve years of Michelangelo's life (1522-34) were spent at Florence, and again employed principally in

the service of his capricious and uncongenial patrons, the Medici. The plan of a great group of monuments to deceased members of this family,~~to be set up in their mortuary chapel in San Lorenzo, seems to have been formed, and preparations to have been made by Michelangelo for its execution, as earlyas 1519. It was not, however, until 1524, after Leo X. had died, and his successor Adrian VI. had been in his turn succeeded by another Medicean pope, Clement VII., that any practical impulse was given to the work. Even then the impulse was a wavering one. First Clement proposed to associate another artist, Sansavino, with Michelangelo in his task. This proposal being on Michelangelo's peremptory demand abandoned, Clement next~~

~~distracted the artist with an order for a new archi~~ tectural design,—that, namely, for the proposed Medicean or “Laurentian” library. When at last the plans for the sepulchral monuments took shape, they did not include, as had been at first intended, memorials to the founders of the house’s greatness, Cosimo and Lorenzo the Magnificent, or even to Pope Leo X. himself, but only to two younger members of the house lately deceased, Giuliano, duke of Nemours, and Lorenzo, duke of Urbino. Michelangelo brooded long over his designs for this work, and was still engaged on its execution—his time being partly also taken up by the building plans for the Medicean library—when political revolutions interposed to divert his industry. In 1527 came to pass the sack of Rome by the Austrians, and the apparently irretrievable ruin of Pope Clement. The Florentines seized the occasion to expel the Medici from their city, and set up a free republican government once more. Naturally no more funds for the work in San Lorenzo were forthcoming, and Michelangelo, on the invitation of the new signory, occupied himself for a while with designs for a colossal group of Samson and the Philistines, to be wrought out of a block of marble – which had been rough-hewn already for another purpose by Baccio Bandinelli. Soon, however, he was called to help in defending the city itself from danger. Clement and his enemy Charles V. having become reconciled, both alike were now bent on bringing Florence again under the rule of the Medici. In view of the approaching siege, Michelangelo was appointed engineer-in-chief of the fortifications. He spent the early summer of 1529 in strengthening the defences of San Miniato; from July to September he was absent on a diplomatic mission to Ferrara and Venice. Returning in the middle of the latter month, he found the cause of Florence hopeless from internal treachery and from the overwhelming strength of her enemies. Onc of his dark seizures overcame him, and he departed again suddenly for Venice. Not cowardice, but despair of his city’s liberties, and still more of his own professional pro- spects amid the turmoil of Italian affairs, was the motive of his departure. For a while he remained in Venice, negotiating for a future residence in France. Then, while the siege was still in progress, he returned once more to Florence ; but in the final death-struggle of her liberties he bore no part. When in 1530 the city submitted to her conquerors, no mercy was shown to most of those who had taken part in her defence. Michelangelo believed himself in danger with the rest, but on the intervention of Baccio Valori he was presently taken back into favour and

employment by Pope Clement. For three years more he still remained at Florence, engaged principally on the com- pletion of the Medici monuments, and on the continuance of the Medicean library, but partly also on a picture of Leda for the duke of Ferrara.

The statues of the Medici monument take rank beside the Moses and the Slaves as the finest work of Michelangelo's central time in sculpture ; moreover, though some of the figures are unfinished, they constitute as actually executed a complete scheme. They

consist of a Madonna and Child (left imperfect because the marble was shortin bulk), and of the two famous monumental groups, each consisting of an armcd and seated portrait-statue in a niche, with two emblematic figures reclining on each side of a sarcophagus below. The portraits are treated not realistically but typically. In that, of Lorenzo seems to be typified the mood of brooding and concentrated inward thought preparatory to warlike action ; in that of Giuliano, the type of alert and confident practical survey immediately preceding the moment of action. To this contrast of the meditative and active characters corresponds to some extent a contrast in the emblematic groups accompanying the portraits. At the feet of the Duke Giuliano recline the shapes of Night and Day,— the former a female, the latter a male personification,—the former sunk in an attitude of deep but uneasy slumber, the latter (whose head and face are merely blocked out of the marble) lifting himself in one of wrathful and disturbed awakening. But for Michelangelo's unfailing grandeur of style, and for the sense which his works con- vey of a compulsive heat and tempest of thought and feeling in the goul that thus conceived them, both these attitudes might be charged with extravagance. As grand, but far less violent, are those of the two companion figures that recline between sleep and waking on the sarcophagus of the pensive Lorenzo. Of these, the male figure is known as Evening, and the female as Morning (Crepuseolo and Aurora). In Michelangelo's original idea, figures of Earth and Heaven were to be associated with those of Night and Day on the monument of Giuliano, and others of a corresponding nature, no doubt, with those of the Morning and

Evening Twilight on that of Lorenzo; these figures afterwards fell out of the scheme. Michel- angelo's obvious and fundainental idea was, as some words of his own record, to exhibit the elements, and the powers of earth and heaven, lamenting the death of the princes; it is a question of much interest, but not to be discussed here, what other ideas of a more personal and deeper kind may have conflicted or come into association with thesc, and found expression in these majestic works of art, whereof no one who looks upon them can escape the spell.

Michelangelo had never ceased to be troubled by the heirs and executors of Julius, as well as by luis own artistic con- science and ambition, concerning the long-postponed comple- tion of the Julian monument. Agreement after agreement had been made, and then from the force of circumstances broken. In 1532, on the completion of the Medicean monu- ments at Florence, he entered into a new and what he firmly

meant to be a binding contract to complete the work, on a

scale once more very greatly reduced, and to set it up in the .

church of 8. Pietro in Vincoli in Rome. But once more the demands of the pope diverted his purpose. Clement insisted that Michelangelo must complete his decorations of the Sixtine chapel by painting anew the great end wall above the altar, adorned until then by frescos of Perugino. The subject chosen was the Last Judgment, and Michelangelo began to prepare sketches. For the next two years he lived between Rome and Florence, and in the autumn of 1534, in his sixtieth year, settled finally and for the remainder of his life at Rome. Immediately afterwards Pope Clement died, and was succeeded by a Farnese under the title of Paul III. Even more than his predecessor, Paul insisted on claiming the main services of Michelangelo for himself, and forced him to let all other engagements drift. For the first seven years after the artist's return to Rome, his time was principally taken up with the painting of the colossal and multitudinous Last Judgment. This being completed in 1541, he was next compelled to undertake two more great frescos, one of the Conversion of Paul and another of the Martyrdom of Peter, in a new chapel which the pope had caused to be built in the Vatican, and named after himself Capella Paolina.

The fresco of the Last Judgment in the Sixtine chapel is probably the most famous single picture in the world. In it Michelangelo shows more than ever the omnipotence of his artistic science, and the fiery daring of his conceptions. The work exhibits the athletic unclothed human form in every variety and extremity of hitherto unattempted action and predicament. But of moderation, as well as of beauty and tenderness, it is almost entirely devoid. Whether from the complexion of his own thoughts, and the sxva indignatio that was native to his breast, or from the influ- ence of the passionate and embittered theological temper of the time, Michelangelo has here neglected the consolatory aspects of Christianity, and insisted on its terrific aspeets almost exclusively.

Neither in the qualities of colour and execution is the work, so far as the condition of either adinits comparison, comparable for charm to the earlier and far more nobly-inspired frescos of the ceiling. It is to these, and not to the Last Judgment, that the student must turn if he would realize what is best and greatest in the art of Michelangelo.

The frescos of the Pauline Chapcl are on their part in part so injured as to be hardly susceptible of uscful study or criticism. In their ruined state they bear evidence of the same tendencics that made the art of Michelangelo in its latest phase so dangerous an example to weaker men,—the tendency, that is, to seek for energy and violence of action both in place and out, for ‘‘ terrible- ness” quand méme, and to design actions not by help of direct study from nature, but by scientific deduction from the abstract laws of structure and movement. At best these frescos can never have been happy examples of Michelangelo’s art.

During the fifteen years (1534-49) when Michelangelo was mainly engaged on these paintings, he had also at last been enabled to acquit himself, although in a manner that can have been satisfactory to none concerned, of his engagements to the heirs of Julius. Once more the influence of the pope had prevailed on them to accept a compromise altogether to their disadvantage. It was agreed that the Moses executed thirty years before should be the central figure of the new scheme ; assistants were employed to carve two smaller flanking figures of female personifications ; and the

three were in 1545 set up in 8. Pietro in Vincoli in. combination with an architectural structure of rich but incongruous design. During the saine years the long-pent human elements of fervour and tenderness in Michelangelo's nature had found vent and utterance such as they had never found before. He had occasionally practised poetry in youth, and there are signs of some transient love-passage during his life at Bologna. But it was not until towards his sixtieth year that the springs of feeling were fairly opened in the heart of this solitary, this masterful and stern, life-wearied and labour- hardened man. Towards that age we find him beginning to address impassioned sonnets, of which the sentiment is curiously comparable to that expressed in some of Shake- speare's, toa beautiful and gifted youth, Tommaso Cavalieri. Soon afterwards he made the acquaintance of the pious, accomplished, and high-souled lady, Vittoria Colonna, widow of the Marquis Pescara. For twelve years until her death, which happened in 1547, her friendship was the great solace of Michelangelo's life. On her, in all loyalty and reverence, he poured out all the treasures of his mind, and all his im- prisoned powers of tenderness and devotion. He painted for her a crucifixion of extraordinary beauty, of which many imitations but not the original have come down to us. She was the chief inspirer of his poetry,—in which, along with her praises, the main themes are the Christian religion, the joys of Platonic love, and the power and mysteries of art. Michelangelo's poetical style is strenuous and concentrated like the man. He wrote with labour and much self-correc- tion ; we seem to feel him flinging himself on the material of language with the same overwhelming energy and vehemence,—the same impetuosity of temperament, com- bined with the same fierce desire of perfection,—with which contemporaries describe him as flinging himself on the material of marble.

'And so the mighty sculptor, painter, and poet reached old age. An infirmity which settled on him in 1544, and the death of Vittoria Colonna in 1547, left him broken in health and heart. But his strength held on for many a year longer yet. His father and brothers were dead, and his family sentiment concentrated itself on a nephew, Leonardo, to whom he showed unremitting practical kind- ness, coupled with his usual suspiciousness and fitfulness of temper. In almost all his relations the old man con- tinued to the end to manifest the same loyal and righteous heart, accompanied by the same masterful, moody, and estranging teniper, as in youth. Among the artists of

the younger generation he held a position of absolute | send him to the famous Collége or Lycée Charlemagne,

ascendency and authority; nor was his example, as we have said, by any means altogether salutary for them. During the last years of his life he made but few more essays in sculpture, and those not successful, but was much employed in the fourth art in which he ex- celled, that of architecture. IIT. he built the palace called after the name of the pope's family the Farnese. On the death of Antonio da San Gallo he succeeded to the onerous and coveted office of chief architect of St Peter's Church, for which he remodelled all the designs, living to see some of the main features, including the supports and lower portion of the great central dome, carried out in spite of all obstacles according to his plans. Other great architectural tasks on which he was engaged were the conversion of a portion of the Baths of Diocletian into the church of Sta Maria degli Angeli, and the embellishment and rearrangement of the great group of buildings on the Roman Capitol. At length, in the midst of these vast schemes and responsibilities, the heroic old man's last remains of strength gave way. He died on the threshold of his ninetieth year, on the 18th of February 1564.

For the bibliography of Michelangelo, which is extensive, see the useful though very imperfect compilation of Passerini, Bibliografia di Michelangelo Buonarroti, &c., Florence, 1875. The most import- ant works, taken in chronological order, are the following :—P. Giovio, supplement to the fragmentary Dialogus de viris litteris allustribus, written soon after 1527, first published by Tiraboschi, Storia ~~della Letteratwra italiana, Modena, 1871; G. Vasari, in Vite degli piu cccellenti architettori, pittori, e seultori, &c., Florence, 1550; A. Condivi, Vita di Michelangelo Buonarroti, 1553; this account, for which the author, a pupil and friend of the master's, had long been collecting materials, was much fuller than that of Vasari, who made use of it in rewriting his own life of Michelangelo for his second edition, which appeared after the master's death (1568). The best edition of Vasari is that by Mila~~ nesi, Florence, 1878-83; of Condivi, that by Gori and Mariette, Pisa, 1746. The first additions of importance were published by Bottari,

. Raccolta di leticre sulla pittura, &c., Rome, 1754 (2d ed., by

Ticozzi, Milan, 1822); the next by Gaye, Carteggio inedito, 1840. Portions of the correspondence preserved in the Buonarroti archives were published by Guasti in his notes to the Rime di Michelangelo Buonarroti, 1863, and by Daclli in Carte Michelangelesche inedite, Milan, 1865. Complete biographies of Michelangelo had been meanwhile attempted by J. Harford, London, 1857, and with more power by Hermann Grimm, Leben Michelangelo's, Hanover (5th ed., 1879). A great increment of biographical material was at length obtained by the publication, in the four hundredth year after Michelangelo's birth, of the whole body of his letters preserved in the Buonarroti archives,—JZettere di Michelangelo Luonarroti, ed..G. Milanesi, Florence, 1875. This material was first employed ina connected narrative by A. Gotti, Vita di Michel- angclo, Florence, 1875. Next followed C. Heath Wilson, Life and Works of Michelangelo Buonarroti, F lorence, 1876, the technical remarks in which, especially as concerns the fresco-paintings, are valuable. Lastly, the combined lives of Michelangelo and Raphael by Professor A. Springer in Dohme's scrics of Kunst u. Kiinstler, Leipsic, 1878, contain the best biography of the master which has yet appeared. Of the poems of Michelangelo the best edition is that already referred to,—G. Guasti, Rime di Michelangelo Buonar- rott, 1863; in earlier additions the text had been recklessly tampered with, and the rugged individuality of the master's style smoothed down. An' edition with German translations was published by Hasenclever, Leipsic, 1875; for the English student the translations by Mr J. A. Symonds, in Sonnets of Michelangelo and Cam- panella, London, 1878, are invaluable. (S. C.)

MICHELET, Jures (1798-1874), one of the most voluminous and remarkable writers of France, and one who only lacked a keener power of self-criticism to make him one of the greatest, was born at Paris, August 21, 1798. He: belonged to a family which had Huguenot traditions, and which was latterly occupied in the art of printing. His father was a master printer, but seems not to have been very prosperous, and the son at an early age assisted him in the actual work of the press. A place was offered him in the imperial printing office, but his father was able to

where he distinguished himself. He passed the university examination in 1821, and was shortly after appointed to a professorship or rather mastership of history in the Collége Rollin. Soon after this, in 1824, he married. The period of the Restoration and the July monarchy was one of the most favourable to rising men of letters of a somewhat scholastic cast that has ever been known in France, and Michelet had powerful patrons in Villemain, Cousin, and others. But, though he was an ardent politician (having from his childhood embraced republicanism and a peculiar variety of romantic free-thought), he was first of all a man of letters and an inquirer into the history of the past. His earliest works were school books, and they were not written at a very early age. Between 1825 and 1827 he produced divers sketches, chronological tables, &c., of modern history. His Précis of the subject, published in the last-mentioned year, is a sound and careful book, far better than anything that had appeared before it, and written in a sober yet interesting style. In the same year he was appointed maitre de conférences at the Ecole Normale. Four years later, in 1831, the Introduction & P Histoire Universelle showed a very different style, exhibit- ing no doubt the idiosyncrasy and literary power of the writer to greater advantage, but also displaying the peculiar visionary qualities which make Michelet the most stimulat- ing but the most untrustworthy (not in facts, which he never consciously falsifies, but in suggestion) of all historians. The events of 1830 had unmuzzled him, and had at the same time improved his prospects, and put him in a better position for study by obtaining for him a place in the Record Office, and a deputy-professorship under Guizot in the literary faculty of the university. Very soon afterwards he began his chief and monumental work, the Histoire de France, which occupied him for about forty years, and of which we shall speak presently. But he accompanied this with numerous other works, chiefly of erudition, such as the @uvres Choisies de Vico, the Mémoires de Luther écrits par lui-méme, the Origines du Droit Lrancais, and somewhat later the Procés des Templiers. 1838 was a year of great importance in Michelet’s life. He was in the fulness of bis powers, his studies had fed his natural aversion to the principles of authority and ecclesiasticism, and at a moment when the revived activity of the Jesuits caused some real and more pretended alarm he was appointed to the chair of history at the Collége de France. Assisted by his friend Quinet, he began a violent polemic against the unpopular order and the principles which it represented, a polemic which made their

lectures, and especially Michelet's, one of the most popular resorts of the day. He published, in 1839, a History of the Roman Republic, but this was in his graver and earlier manner. . The results of his lectures appeared in the volumes Le Prétre, la Femme, et la Famille and Le Peuple. These books do not display the apocalyptic style which, borrowed to a certain though no very great extent from Lamennais, characterizes Michelet's later works, but they contain in miniature almost the whole of his curious ethico- politico-theological creed—a mixture of sentimentalism, communism, and anti-sacerdotalism, supported by the most eccentric arguments, but urged with a great deal of eloquence. The principles of the outbreak of 1848 were in the air, and Michelet was not the least important of those who condensed and propagated them: indeed his original lectures were of so incendiary a kind that the course had to be interdicted. But when the actual revolu- tion broke out Michelet, unlike many other men of letters, did not attempt to enter on active political life, and merely devoted himself more strenuously to his literary work. Besides continuing the great history, he undertook and

carried out, during the years between the downfall of Louis Philippe and the final establishment of Napoleon IIL, an enthusiastic Histoire de la Révolution Francaise. Despite or because of its enthusiasm, this is by no means Michelet's best book. The events were too near and too well known, and hardly admitted the picturesque sallies into the blue distance which make the charm and the danger of his larger work. In actual picturesqueness as well as in general veracity of picture, the book cannot approach Carlyle's ; while as a mere chronicle of the events it is inferior to half a dozen prosaic histories older and younger than itself. The coup d'état lost Michelet his place in the Record Office, as, though not in any way identified with the republic administratively, he refused to take the oaths to the empire. But the new régime only kindled afresh his republican zeal, and his second marriage (with Mademoiselle Adéle Malairet, a lady of some literary capacity, and of republican belongings) seems to have further stimulated his powers. While the history steadily held its way, a crowd of extraordinary little books accompanied and diversified it. Sometimes they were expanded versions of its episodes, sometimes what may be called commentaries or companion volumes. In some of the best of them natural science, a new

subject with Michelet, to which his wife is believed to have introduced him, supplies the text. The first of these (by no means the best) was Les Femmes de la Révolution (1854), in which Michelet's natural and inimitable faculty of dithyrambic too often gives way to tedious and not very conclusive argument and preaching. In the next, Z'Oiseaw (1856), a new and most successful vein was struck. The subject of natural history was treated, not from the point of view of mere science, nor from that of sentiment, nor of anecdote, nor of gossip, but from that of the author's fervent democratic pantheism, and the result, though, as was to be expected, unequal, was often excellent. L'Jnsecte, in the same key, but duller, followed. It was succeeded by L'Amour (1859), one of the author's most popular books, and not unworthy of its popularity, but perhaps hardly his best. These remarkable works, half pamphlets half moral treatises, succeeded each other as a rule at the twelve months' interval, and the succession was almost unbroken for five or six years. L' Amour was followed by La Femme (1860), a book on which a whole critique of French literature and French character might be founded. Then came Za Mer (1861), a return to the natural history class, which, considering the powers of the writer and the attraction of the subject, is perhaps a little disappointing. The next year (1862) the most striking of all Michelet's minor works, La Sorciére, made its appearance. Developed out of an episode of the history, it has all its author's peculiarities in the strongest degree. It isa nightmare and nothing more, but a nightmare of the most extraordinary verisimilitude and poetical power. This remarkable series, every volume of which was at once a work of imagination and of research, was not even yet finished, but the later volumes exhibit a certain fall- ing off. The ambitious Bible de [Humanité (1864), an historical sketch of religions, has but little merit. In Za Montagne (1868), the last of the natural history series, the tricks of staccato style are pushed even farther than by Victor Hugo in his less inspired moments, though—as is inevitable in the hands of such a master of language as Michelet—the effect is frequently grandiose if not grand. Nos Fils (1869), the last of the string of smaller books published during the author's life, is a tractate on educa- tion, written with ample knowledge of the facts and with all Michelet's usual sweep and range of view, but with visibly declining powers of expression. But in a book published posthumously, Le Banquet, these powers reappear at their fullest.

famishing populations of the Riviera is (whether true to fact or not) one of the best things that Michelet has done. To complete the list of his miscellaneous works, two collec- tions of pieces, written and partly published at different times, may be mentioned. These are Les Soldats de la Révolution and Légendes Démocratiques du Nord. :

The publication of this series of books, and the comple- tion of his history, occupied Michelet during both decades of the empire. He lived partly in France, partly in Italy, and was accustomed to spend the winter on the Riviera, chiefly at Hyéres. At last, in 1867, the great work of his life was finished. As it is now published it fills nineteen volumes. The first of these deals with the early history up to the death of Charlemagne, the second with the flourishing time of feudal France, the third with the 13th century, the fourth, fifth, and sixth with the Hundred Years' War, the seventh and eighth with the establishment of the royal power under Charles VII. and Louis XI. The 16th and 17th centuries have four volumes apiece, much of which is very distantly connected with French history proper, especially in the two volumes entitled Renaissance and Réforme. 'The last three volumes carry on the history of the 18th century to the outbreak of the Revolution. The characteristics which this remarkable history shares with Michelet's other works will be noted presently. At present it may be remarked that, as the mere division of subjects and space would imply, it is planned on very original principles. Michelet was perhaps the first historian to devote himself to anything like a picturesque history of the Middle Ages, and his account is still the most vivid though far from the most trustworthy that exists. His inquiry into manuscript and printed authorities was most laborious, but his lively imagination, and his strong religious and political prejudices, made him regard all things from a singularly personal point of view. Circumstances which strike his fancy, or furnish convenient texts for his polemic, are handled at inordinate length, while others are rapidly dismissed or passed over altogether. Yet the book is undoubtedly the only history of France which bears the imprint of genius, and in this respect it is not soon likely to meet a rival.

Uncompromisingly hostile as Michelet was to the empire, its downfall and the accompanying disasters of the country once more stimulated him to activity. Not only did he write letters and pamphlets during the struggle, but when it was over he set himself to complete the vast task which his two great histories had almost covered by a History of the Nineteenth Century. He did not, however, live to carry it further than Waterloo, and the best criticism of it is perhaps contained in the opening words of the introduction to the last volume—‘“‘l’Age me presse.” The new republic was not altogether a restoration for Michelet, and his professorship at the Collége de France, of which he con- tended that he had never been properly deprived, was not given back to him. He died at Hyéres on the 9th of February 1874, and an unseemly legal strife between his representatives took place as to his funeral.

The literary characteristics of Michelet are among the most clearly marked and also among the most peculiar in French litera- ture. A certain resemblance to Lamennais has been already noted, and to this may be added an occasional reminiscence of the manner of Bossuet. But in the main Michelet, even in the minor details of style, is quite original and individual. His sentences and paragraphs are as different as possible in construction and rhythm from the orderly architecture of French classical prose. A very frequent device of his (somewhat abused latterly) is the omission of the verb, which gives the sentence the air of a continued interjection. Elsewhere he breaks his phrase, not finishing the regular clause atall. In these points and many others the resemblance to his contemporary Carlyle is very striking; and, different as were their points of view, their manners of seeing were by no means unlike. History to Michelet is always picturesque; it is a series

The picture of the industrious and | of tableaux. Allusion has becn already made to the singular per-

——

spective in which these tableaux are drawn, a perspective so strange that a reader unacquainted with the actual size and relation of the objects

represented is certain to be deceived. Nothing indeed is further from Michelet's purpose than deceit. Although a strong republican, an ardent anti-sacerdotalist, and a patriot of fanatical enthusiasm, he is always scrupulously fair as far as he understands what he is doing. For instance, his hatred for England and Englishmen is one of the most comically intense passions in litera- ture. He is never tired of exclaiming against their diabolical pride, their odious jealousy of France, their calculating covetousness, and so forth. In his excited imagination the long drama of European history is a kind of conflict of Ormuzd and Ahriman, in which Frauce, it is needless to say, plays the first part and England the second. Yet he is never unfair to English fortitude and coolness, never (after the childish fashion of some of his countrymen) slurs over English victories, and often expresses genuine 'admiration (mixed, it is true, with a shudder or two of aversion) for the master- ful ways and constantly advancing prosperity of the English people. So, with all his dislike to the priesthood, he never is chary of praise to pope or mouk whenever it can fairly be given, and, with all his republicanism, he is never weary of worshipping the heroism of a great king. But his poetical fashion of dealing with events, his exaggeration of trivial incidents into great facts of history, his fixed ideas, especially in reference to the intellectual and social condition of medieval times, the evils of which he enormously exaggcrates, and his abiding prejudices of a general kind combine to distort his accounts in the strangest fashion. A laborious person might pick out of contemporary authors a notable collection of erroneous views of which Michelet is not so much the author as the suggester, for it is wlien his brilliant cxaggerations are torn from their context and set down in some quite other context as sober gospel that they are most utisleading to those who do not know the facts, and most grotesque to those who do. This is especially the case in regard to literature. Michelet began his great work too early to enjoy the benefit of the resurrection of old French literature which has since taken place; and though his view of that literature partakes of the amorous enthusiasm which colours his view of everything French, it is astoundingly incorrect in detail. The most reinarkable passage of all perhaps is the passage in his Renaissance relating to Rabelais, Ronsard, and Du Bellay, a passage so widely inconsistent not only with sound criticism but with historic fact that the author(a very rare thing with him) makes a kind of half apology for it elsewhere. Of the work of the age of chivalry proper, the chansons de

gestes, the Arthurian romances, the early lyrics and dramas, he evidently knew but little, aud chose to subordinate what he did kuow to his general theories of the time. Even much later his praise and blame, though trausparently honest, are quite haphazard. Unless, therefore, the reader be gifted with a very rare faculty of applying the ‘‘ grain of salt” to what he reads, or unless lie be well acquainted with the actual facts before coming to Michelet’s version of them, he will almost certainly be misled. But despite this grave drawback (which attends all picturesque history) the value of Michelet merely as an historian is immense. Not only are his separate tableaux, the wonderful geographical sketch of France in the beginning of the book, the sections devoted to the Templars, to Joan of Arc, to the Renaissance, to the Cainisards, almost unequalled, but the in-spiriting and stimulating effect of his work is not to be surpassed. If his reconstruction is often hazardous and conjectural, sometimes definitely aud demonstrably mistaken, and nearly always difficult to adjust entirely to the ascertained facts, it is always possible in itself, always instinct with genius, and alwayslife-like. There are no dead bones in Michelet ; they are if anything only too stirring and lively. These criticisms apply equally to the minor books, though these are necessarily fuller of the author’s somewhat weari- some propaganda, and less full of brilliantly painted facts. The great fault of Michelet as of not a few other modern authors is the comparatively improvised and ephemeral character of too much of lis work. His immense volume is, much of it, mere brilliant pamphleteering, much more mere description equally brilliant but equally liable to pass. Nevertheless he is (especially in French, the language par excellence of measured and academic perfection) so characteristic and singular a figure in his turbid eloquence and fitful flashing insight that he is never likely to lose a place, and a notable one, in literary history.

Almost all Michelet’s works, the exceptions being his translations, compilations, &c., are published in uniform size and in about fifty volumes, partly by Marpon and Flammarion, partly by Calmann Lévy. (G. SA.)

MICHELL, Jonny, an eminent English man of science of the 18th century. He received his university education at Queen’s College, Cambridge. His name appears fourth in the Tripos list for 1748-49 ; and in 1755 he was moderator in that examination. He was a fellow of his college, and became

successively Woodwardian professor of geology (in 1762) and rector of Thornhill in Yorkshire.

He was elected a member of the Royal Society in the same year as Henry Cavendish (1760). He died in 1793. In 1750 he published at Cambridge a small work of some eighty pages, entitled A Treatise of Artificial Magnets, in which 1s shown an easy and expeditious method of making them superior to the best natural ones. Besides the descrip- tion of the method of magnetization which still bears his name, this work contains a variety of acute and accurate magnetic observations, and is particularly distinguished by a lucid exposition of the nature of magnetic induction. He is now best known as the original inventor of the torsion balance, which afterwards became so famous in the hands of its second inventor Coulomb. Michell described it in his proposal of a method for obtaining the mean density of the earth. He did not live to put his method into practice ; but this was done by Henry Cavendish, who made, by means of Michell's apparatus, the celebrated determination that now goes by the name of Cavendish's experiment (Phil. T'rans., 1798).

Michell's other contributions to science are—‘‘ Conjectures con- cerning the Cause and Observatious upon the Phenomena of Earth- quakes," Phil. Trans., 1760; ‘‘Observations on the Comct of January 1760 at Cambridge," J6., 1760 ; ‘* A Recommendation of Hadley's Quadrant for Surveying," Jb., 1765; ‘* Proposal of a Method for measuring Degrees of Longitude upon Parallels of the Equator," 7b., 1766 ; ‘‘ An Inquiry into the Probable Parallax aud Magnitude of the Fixed Stars," Jb., 1767; ‘‘On the Twinkling of

the Fixed Stars," Jb., 1767 ; ‘‘On the Means of Discovering the Distance, Magnitude, &c., of the Fixed Stars," Zb., 1784.

MICHELOZZI, MicuEtozzo (1391-14721), was a Florentine by birth, the son of a tailor, and in early life a pupil of Donatello. He was a sculptor of some ability in marble, bronze, and silver. The statue of the young St John over the door of the Duomo at Florence, opposite the Baptistery, is by him ; and he also made the beautiful silver statuette of the Baptist on the altar-frontal of San Giovanni. Michelozzi's great friend and patron was Cosimo I. dei Medici, whom he accompanied to Venice in 1433 during his short exile.

While at Venice, Michelozzi built the library of San Giorgio Maggiore, and designed other buildings there. The magnificent Palazzo dei Medici at Florence, built by Cosimo, was designed by him ; it is one of the noblest specimens of Italian 15th-century arclitec- ture, in which the great taste and skill of the architect has combined the delicate lightness of the earlier Italian Gothic with the massive stateliness of the Classical style. With great engineering skill Michelozzi shored up, and partly rebuilt, the Palazzo Vecchio, then in a ruinous condition, and added to it many important rooms and staircases. When, in 1437, through Cosimo's liberality, the monastery of San Marco at Florence was handed over to the Dominicans of Fiesole, Michelozzi was employed to rebuild the domestic part and remodel the church. For Cosimo I. he designed numerous other buildings, mostly of great beauty and importance. Among these werea guest-house at Jerusalem, for the use of Florentine pilgrims, Cosimo's summer villa at Careggi, and the strongly fortified palace of Cafagiuolo in Mugello. For Giovanni dei Medici, Cosimo's son, he built a very large and magnificent palace at Fiesole. In spite of Vasari's statement that he died at the age of sixty-eight, he appears to have lived till 1472. He is buried in the monastery of San Marco, Florence. Though skilled both as a sculptor and engineer, lis fame chiefly rests on his architectural works, which claim for him a position of very high honour even among the greatest names of the great 15th-century Florentines.

MICHIGAN, one of the States of the American Union, Plate II.

situated in the region of the great lakes. It lies between 41° 49 and 47° 32' N. lat., and 82° 24' and 90° 31' W. long., the centre of the State being 670 miles north of west from New York, the nearest point on the seaboard. The area is 58,915 square miles. The State consists of two

natural divisions, known as the Upper and the Lower Peninsula. The Upper or Northern Peninsula is bounded on the N., E., and §. by Lakes Superior, Huron, and Michigan, and on the W. by the river St Mary and the State of Wisconsin. The Lower Peninsula is bounded on the W., N., and E. by Lakes Michigan, Huron, St Clair, and Erie, and the St Clair and Detroit rivers, and on the S. by the States of Ohio and Indiana. The general contour of the

Lower Peninsula approaches that of a horse-shoe, with an average width of about 200 miles from east to west and a length of about 300 miles from north to south. Its surface gradually rises in gentle undulations from the surrounding lakes to an elevation of about 400 feet above Lake Huron, no point reaching an altitude of more than 600 feet. The Upper Peninsula is much more rugged in contour and surface, at some points reaching an elevation of about 1100 feet. The territory was originally covered with forests, with only here and there asmall open prairie. It abounds in fine inland lakes, with areas varying from a few acres to several miles. The rivers are not large enough to be navigable, but they afford ample water-power, and are particularly valuable for floating down the logs of the lumbering districts. less than about 1600 miles in length ; and along the whole of this distance vessels of 2000 tons may pass without losing sight of land.

Geological Formation.—The Lower Peninsula occupies the central part of a great basin, the borders of which extend to the east as far as London, Ontario, and to the west as far as Madison, Wisconsin. Within these limits the traveller starting in any direction from the centre of the State encounters successively the outcropping edges of older and older strata. The whole series has been likened to a nest of wooden dishes; it embraces not only the Laurentian and Huronian systems but also the numerous groups that go to make up the Silurian, the Devonian, the Carboniferous, and the Quaternary systems. These several formations are covered almost universally with a drift of finely comminuted and triturated rock, borne thither by moving glaciers and floating icebergs, or washed to its present position by currents of water, while the surface was still submerged. This loose material varies in thickness, sometimes extending to a depth of 200 or 300 feet. While the lower formations contain almost inexhaustible deposits of copper, iron, gypsum, and salt, the surface soil is pre-eminently fertile, uniting all the mineral constituents necessary for the most luxuriant growth of plants. There are limited areas of light and somewhat sterile drift soil; but even these have shown themselves under proper treatment to be capable of yielding a rich vegetation. For the most part the drift soil is composed of a mixture of clay with sand and gravel. It is easily cultivated, is retentive of moisture, and is sufficiently porous to prevent the injury of crops by excessive rains.

Climate and Natural Products.—The mean temperature of Lansing, the capital of the State, as determined by observations extending through eighteen years, is 46°°71 Fahr., or about the same as that of Berlin. During the summer months the mean temperature is nearly the same as that of Vienna ; in the winter it is nearly that of Stockholm, The annual rainfall during the eighteen years previous to 1882 was about 3linches. This is very evenly distributed throughout the year, though a little more than half the amount falls in the five months from May to October. The average snowfall in the centre of the State is about 4 feet, though it is seldom that more than 12 inches lie on the ground at any one time. The winter temperature is much modified by the open water of the adjacent lakes. The severe winds are commonly from the west and north-west ;

The coast-line of the State is not |

IGAN

but in sweeping across the open waters of Lake Michigan they are so far softened as to make the climate much milder than that found in the same latitude on the western side of the lake. This peculiarity is specially favourable to the growth of fruits. Peaches are grown successfully along the 45th parallel, and figs thrive in the open air in lat. 423°. The modifying influence of the lake winds also gives great variety to the flora. The predominant woods are oak, maple, beech, elm, ash, cherry, hickory, walnut, basswood, and pine. All these grow luxuriantly in the vast forests of the State, and afford. an abundant supply of the best timber. There are 165 species of trees and shrubs indigenous to Michigan; and the entire flora of the State makes a list of 1634 species.

Cereals and Fruits.—The most important crop of Michigan is wheat, and the average yield per acre, as shown by the latest census, is greater than that of any other State in the Union. The acres sown in 1879 were reported as 1,822,749, and the amount produced as 35,532,543 bushels. These figures show that Michigan is fourth in rank of the wheat- producing States, the number of bushels grown being exceeded by the crops of Illinois, Ohio, and Indiana. In 1879 the yield in bushels of the other principal cereals is

shown by the following figures :—Indian corn, 32,461,452 ; oats, 18,190,793; barley, 1,204,316; rye, 294,918; buck-

wheat, 413,062; clover seed, 313,063; pease, 538,332. The crop of potatoes in the same year was 8,025,475 bushels, and the hay amounted to 1,051,115 tons. Of

_ the fruits grown in the State apples are the most important, _and these are believed to be unsurpassed in excellence in

any country in the world. The sales in 1880 were 4,834,936 bushels, a considerable quantity going to the markets of Europe. Next in importance is the peach crop, annually gathered from more than fifty of the counties of the State. In 1880 the peach orchards were reported as covering 12,908 acres, and the fruit sold as amounting to 413,418 bushels. The long coast-line of Lake Michigan affords easy access to market even for the most perishable fruits. Besides the facilities thus afforded, the railroads that now thread the State, with an aggregate length in March 1882 of 4332 miles, afford abundant means of rapid transportation. As the fruit belt extends from north to south more than 200 miles, the danger of disastrous competition in the markets is obviated by prolongation of the season of ripening. At the meeting of the State Horticultural Society held in 1881 it was reported that the average value of the peach crop per acre was above $125. The ten volumes of the Zransactions of the. State Horticultural Society published since its organization in 1870 show that the development of fruit culture within the last decade has been much more rapid than in any other State.

Lumber.—The timber produce in Michigan is of superior quality, and the amount is so great that about two-thirds of the best lumber sold in New York, Philadelphia, and Boston go out from its mills. The logs are borne along the lakes, rivers, and small watercourses to the booms of mills situated at convenient points, where the lumber is sawed and shipped for the different markets of the world. Of these manufacturing districts those known as the Saginaw, the Grand River, and the Muskegon valleys are the most important. The Saginaw receives the waters of the Tittabawasse, the Cass, the Flint, the Shiawasse, the Bad, the Pine, the Chippewa, the Tobacco, and their numerous tributaries, draining a vast region that still

yields an undiminished supply of pine. The forests of the western parts of the State are easily accessible by the Grand River and its tributaries, while those still farther north find a natural outlet through the numerous streams that flow into Lake Michigan. On the banks of these watercourses are

weoci rG AN

some of the largest and finest mills of the world. In 1854, when the first effort was made to collect statistics of this industry, it was found that there were only sixty-one mills in operation, and that the entire annual product was only 108,000,000 feet. Highteen years later, in 1872, it was estimated that the annual product was not less than 2,560,000 feet of oak, 12,700,000 of staves, 300,000,000 lath, 400,000,000 shingles, and 2,500,000,000 of sawed pine. The number of saw-mills had already reached about 1500, the number of persons employed 20,000, and the capital represented $25,000,000. In 1881 the manufacture of pine lumber amounted to 3,919,500,000 feet, the value of which exceeded $60,000,000. The aggregate value of the forest products of the State was estimated in 188] to have reached more than $1,000,000,000. Forestry Bulletin, No. 6, issued December 1, 1881, estimated the amount of standing white pine of merchantable quality at 35,000,000,000 feet, and the amount of standing hard wood at 700,000,000 cords. Besides these amounts, the same authority estimates the amount of hemlock at 7,000,000,000 feet, with 7,000,000 cords of bark, and an aggregate of 70,000,000 of cedar and tamarack. It is probable that before many years the hard wood produced by the State will approach in value the figures representing the value of the pine now sent to the markets of the world. It is probable that Michigan for many years to come will maintain its precedence as a lumber-producing State.

Mineral Resources.—Of the mineral products of Michigan the most important is iron, As early as 1842 the report of the first State geologist, Dr Douglas Houghton, called attention to the presence of hematite ore, though for a considerable time after this it was not found in such quantities as to make it certain that mining could be made profitable. Before 1860, however, it became known that iron in the Upper Peninsula not only existed in vast quantities, but also that it was of superior quality. From that time iron-mines were rapidly developed, until in 1881 they had come to exceed

in value, though not in amount, even the products of Pennsylvania. In 1880 the product was 1,834,712 tons, with a value at the mines of $6,034,648, as against the yield in Pennsylvania of 2,185,675 tons, with a value of $5,517,079. The product of Michigan in 1882 was 2,948,307 tons of ore, with a market value of about $25,000,000. minerals are of extraordinary richness,—62°9 per cent. being the average of the first-class ores, while the furnace books often show a much higher yield.

Next in importance to the iron-mines are those of copper. These are also situated in the Northern Peninsula, in the mountain range of trappean rocks which crown the point of land extending northwards into Lake Superior. This secondary peninsula or cape, known as Keweenaw Point, rises to an average height of about 600 feet above the lake, the highest pinnacles reaching nearly double that altitude. This point contains what are- believed to be the richest copper-mines ever discovered ; the metal is not found as an ore, but as virgin copper almost chemically pure. It has only to be separated from its rocky matrix, when it is ready for the market. The largest of the copper-mines, that at Calumet, has built up an industry which employs 2000 men, and its total product of refined copper in 1882 was no less than 50,770,719 tb, or one-eighth of. the annual production of copper in the world. In quality the copper of the Lake Superior district is such that it commands the highest price at home and abroad. Its tenacity is remarkable, and therefore it is eagerly sought after for cartridges by all the great military powers. In 1882 the copper-mines paid dividends amounting to $2,900,000, — making an aggregate of $28,248,000 since they were opened.

The Michigan |

| dust, while the staves for barrels are made from

239

Within a few years the salt-works of Michigan have also come to exceed those of any other State in the Union. The first well was sunk in 1859-60, but in 1882 the pro- duction was found to have exceeded that of the famous works in New York, and to have amounted in that year to no less than 3,204,921 barrels. The extraordinary development of this industry is due to several causes. A careful system-of inspection by State authority has kept

its salt unsurpassed in purity. The salt basin is not only accessible by navigable waters, so as to have the advantage of cheap transportation, but the wells are situated in the great lumber-producing districts, and the manufacture is thus carried on at very small expense, in connexion with the saw-mills. The power is furnished by the same engines, the exhausted steam is used for the evaporation of brine during the day, and during the night evapora- tion is still carried on by means of refuse wood and saw- rejected timber. By this system the best quality of salt is obtained at a minimum expense. The chief reservoir of salt is the series of sandstones and shales constituting the Waverly group. This salt-producing rock covers no less than about 8000 square miles, and it is safe to presume that the supply is inexhaustible. The average depth of the wells is about 800 feet, but in some localities wells sunk to nearly 2000 feet have been remunerative. Important salt-works have recently been developed in the western part of the State.

There are also certain other minerals of considerable importance. Deposits of gypsum, easily accessible, prac- tically inexhaustible in quantity, and superior in quality, are found in several localities both in the eastern and in the western parts of the Lower Peninsula. In the outskirts of Grand Rapids the deposit crops out at the surface, and at an average depth of from 40 to 70 feet extends over an area of 10 or 12 square miles. The rock is easily quarried,

_ and is either ground for use as a fertilizer or calcined into

| plaster of Paris.

The deposits of coal are supposed to

cover about 8000 square miles, but as yet the product

_at any one point has not been very considerable.

In quality the coal is highly bituminous, and is not sufficiently pure to be useful for smelting or for the manufacture of gas. For these reasons the stock of coal in the State is practically untouched. If future explorations and experi- ments should make these deposits available, a new era in the manufacture of iron will be the result. At present the coal for smelting the

Lake Superior ores is brought chiefly from Ohio and Pennsylvania. Quarries of lime- stone and of sandstone have been opened in various parts of the State. The brown stone of the Upper Peninsula is of excellent quality, and is capable of receiving a high finish. The supply is inexhaustible, and the accessibility of the quarries by water gives promise of a thriving industry. The grindstones taken from the Huron county quarries are of superior quality, and the slates found in unlimited quantities on the shores of the Huron Bay are unsurpassed in point of durability and colour. Clays and sands of commercial value are found in great abundance. Though the manufacture of glass is yet in its infancy, sands in large quantities have been discovered in Monroe county suitable for the manufacture of plate glass of excel- lent quality. Brick and tile clays are found in all parts of the State. Though native silver has been found in small

| quantities in the Upper Peninsula, the systematic mining

of this metal has not yet been carried on with successful results. The Report of the commissioner of mineral statistics for 1882 shows that, except as to coal, Michigan is the foremost of all the States in mineral wealth. Fisheries. —The geographical position of Michigan explains the

fact that its fresh-water fisheries arc the most produetive in the United States. The most important varieties of fish are lake-trout,

sturgeon, bass, pickerel, herring, brook-trout, grayling, and white- fish. General laws for the protection of fish have been passed ; and a fish commission has been maintained for some ycars for the purpose of propagating the best varieties and planting them in waters adapted to their natural development. Up to the close of 1880 the commissioners had planted about 80,000,000 young white- fish, 1,000,000 silver eels, 1,000,000 lake-trout, 2,000,000 salon, and 500,000 brook-trout, besides smaller nuinbers of shad, grayling, pike, and bass. Excellent results have followed, especially in the multiplication of white-fish, salinon, and eels. In 1879 the total ‘take ® was 24,013,100 Ib, of which 12,902,250 Ib were white-fish, the most valuable lake-fish known to epicures and to commerce.

During winter large quantities preserved by freezing are. taken to Eastern markets, where they are readily sold at a high price.

Educational Institutions.—As early as 1785 the law of congress which provided for the sale of lands north of the Ohio river reserved for the support of public schools ‘¢section 16” of each township. This fundamental law devoted to educational purposes one-thirty- sixth of all the lands of that vast domain known as the north- western territory. The ‘‘ordinance of 1787,” by which this territory was organized, further provided that ‘‘schools and the means of education shall for ever be encouraged.” In 1826 this congressional action was supplemented by a grant to Michigan of two townships of land for the founding and support of a university. When Michigan became a State in 1837, its educational policy took definite form. The constitution provided, not only that the grant of “section 16” should be devoted exclusively to the support of schools of the primary grade, but also that the State and not each township should be the custodian of the lands so appropriated. The constitution expressly provided that the proceeds from the sale of ‘school lands” should be held by the State as a perpetual fund, the interest of which should be annually applied to the sup- port of primary schools. The lands devoted to school purposes 1 Michigan under these provisious amounted to 1,077,209 acres, of which, in September 1881, 675,000 acres had been sold. On the sum realized by these sales, $3,095,679, the State pays interest at 7 per cent., and the resulting income, amounting to $216,645, is annually distributed to the schools. This source is supplemented from local taxes, so that in 1881 the totalsum realized from all sources for the primary schools was $3,644,778.

The schools organized under State law are known as graded and ungraded. In the small districts where the schools are under the charge of but one or two teachers, grading is impracticable. Of ungraded districts there were in 1881 6120, attended by 219,570 children, while the graded schools were 404 in number, with an attendance of 152,043. The school census includes all children between the ages of five and twenty, amounting in 1881 to 518,317, of whom there was an average attendance of 391,401. To all children of school age the public schools are frec, though a fee may be re- quired for advanced studies in the high schools. The immediate administration of the schools is entrusted to school officers clected annually

by the tax-payers of the individual districts. The State constitution requires that a free scliool shall be in session at least three months of every year in each district. In districts of more than 30 and less than 800 children, the law requires at least five months of school; while in districts of more than 800 children, the session must be not less than nine months in length. In the graded schools the division is into primary schools, grammar schools, and high schools, each of these divisions retaining the scholar ordinarily four years. At the end of the course the student is ready for the university, to which, under certain restrictions provided by the university itself, he is admitted on diploma from the high school. The university of Michigan, situated at Ann Arbor, was first opened for instruction in 1841. It now (1883) consists of the department of literature, science, and the arts, the department of medicine, the department of law, the college of homeopathic medicine, the school of pharmacy, the college of dental surgery, -and the school of political science. Connected with the medical departments are the State hospitals. In 1881-82 there were 86 officers of instruction and 1534 students. The total income for the year 1879-80 froin Federal grant, State grants, and fees was $231,339. The general control of the university is placed in the hands of eight regents elected by popular suffrage at the biennial spring elections, two regents being chosen at each election. The normal school, situated at Ypsilanti, and generously supported by the State, may be said to complete the school system.

Charitable and Reformatory Institutions.—A school for the deaf, dumb, and blind, instituted underan Act passed in 1848, is situated at Flint, about 60 miles north-west of Detroit ; in February 1882 it had 249 pupils. In 1879 a distinct school for the training of the blind was established at Lansing. ‘The ‘‘State public school for dependent and neglected children” is devoted to the systematic education of such children as otherwise would have to be maintained in the county poorliouses. The pupils are divided into ‘‘familics” of about thirty each, and are cared for in separate cottages, each cottage being under the charge of a ‘‘cottage manager.” The school receives dependent children of sound health, and free from

contagious disease ; and it is made the duty of the officers having charge of the poor to send all such children between the ages of three and twelve to it. This institution, the pioneer of its kind, and one of the most useful of charitable schools, is situated at Cold- water, 132 miles south-west of Detroit. In February 1882 there were 320 children and 21 officers and teachers. The ‘‘ Reform School” at Lansing is designed to reclaim juvenile offenders who have been convicted of some offence. A farm of 224 acres connected with the school is, in considerable part, tilled by the boys. The number of inmates in February of 1882 was 325. A similar school at Adrian has recently been instituted for girls. There are State asylums for the insane at Kalamazoo (715 patients) and Pontiac (499 patients). The legislature of 1881 provided for the establish- ment of an additional asylum in one of the northern counties of the Lower Peninsula.

Population.—In 1837 the State had 174,647 inhabitants. The numbers according to the different census returns from 1840 are given in the following table :—

Density per Census, Total Males. _ Females. Square Mile. 1840 212,267 113,788 98,479 3°77 1850 397,654 209,897 187,757 7°07 1860 749,113 394,694 854,419 iP 1870 1,184,059 617,745 566,314 20°01 1880 1,636,937 862,678 774,259 27°80

At the last census 388, 508 of the inhabitants were of foreign birth, 97,346 being natives of the United Kingdom, 89,085 Germans, aud 16,445 Scandinavians. In point of population the State, which was twenty-third in 1840, now stands ninth in the Union.

The following are the principal cities in the State, with popu- lation at the census of 1880:—Detroit, 116,340 ; Grand Rapids City, 32,016 ; Bay City, 20,693; East Saginaw City, 19,016; Jackson City, 16,105; Muskegon City, 11,262 ; Saginaw City, 10,525 ; Port Huron, 8883; Flint City, 8410; Lansing (the State capital), 8319 ; Ann Arbor, 8061; Adrian City, 7849 ; Battle Creek, 7063 ; Manistee, 6930; West Bay City, 6397; Alpena City, 6153; Ishpeming, 6039.

History and Government.—The State of Michigan is part of the territory that was first settled by the French, and until the fall of Canada into the

hands of the British after the middle of the 18th century was under the government of New France. The territory was explored by Jesuit missionaries in the 17th century ; but, although it was known at an early period that the lands were of exceptional excellence, very little progress was made in develop- ing the resources of the territory until after the completion of the first half-century of the American Union. The surveyors eniployed by the general government to inspect the lands and report as to their fitness for settlement by the soldiers of the war of 1812 appear to have derived their impressions almost exclusively from the low lands in the south-eastern corner of the territory. The report, accordingly, was not favourable ; and consequently the tide of immigration that had already begun to set in flowed steadily past Michigan into the territories farther west. It was largely for this reason that the early development of Indiana, Illinois, Iowa, and Wisconsin was somewhat more rapid than that of Michigan. But gradually the false impressions concerning the soil and climate were dispelled ; and within the past few years the increase of the population and the growth of wealth have been very rapid. In 1851 the valuation of the State for purposes of taxation (which excludes much valuable property) was $30,976,270; in 1861, $172,055,808 ; in 1871, $630,000,000; at 1881, $810,000,000. The State constitution, adopted in 1837 at the time of admission to the Union, has been modified in some minor particulars ; but in most respects it remains unchanged. The governor is elected for two years, with no restriction as to re-election. The legislature meets biennially in the first week of January, and usually continues in session till May. The supreme court consists of.four judges chosen by popular vote for terms of eight years, one being elected every second year. Judges have been so frequently re-elected that the office may be said to be practically a permanent one, with a provision for termination in case of need. The State is divided into twenty-two judicial districts, in each of which a circuit court sits for the trial of causes of original jurisdiction, and of causes appealed from the justice courts. The judges of the circuit courts are also elected by popular suffrage. On political questions voting is open to all naturalized citizens of the male sex more than twenty-one years of age unless prevented by some natural disqualification. At school meetings the right of suffrage is extended so as to include tax-payers of either sex.

Authorities.—Frederick Morley, Michigan and its Resources, compiled under authority of the State, 2d ed., Detroit, 1882; Walling's Atias of Michigan, with an. Account of the Topography, Climate, and Geology of the State, by Alex.

Winchell, LL.D.; James V. Campbell, Outlines of the Political History of Michigan; Reports of the Secretary of the State Pomological Society of Michigan

| from 1871 to 1880 ; Report of the Commissioner of Education for 1880; Forty fifth

MIC—MIC

Annual Report of the Superintendent of Public Instruction of the State of Michigan Jor the year 1881; Reports of the Geological Survey of the State of Michigan, 4869-80, 4 vols. ; Special Report of Commissioner of Mineral Statistics, March 1883 ; Forestry Bulletins for 1881. (C. K. A.)

MICHIGAN, Lake. See Sr LAwReEnce.

MICHIGAN CITY, a town of the United States, in Laporte county, Indiana, on the south-east shore of Lake Michigan, 40 miles east-south-east of Chicago. As a lake-port and a junction for several railroads, it is a place of considerable prosperity. It is the largest lumber- market in the State, and one of the largest in the west, and has numerous manufacturing establishments, The northern State prison (with 577 convicts at the close of 1880) is one of the principal buildings. The population increased from 3985 in 1870 to over 10,000 in 1883,

MICHMASH (W130, DID2'2), the scene of one of the most striking episodes in Old Testament history (1 Sam. xlv., comp. vol. xii. p.. 403), was a place in Benjamin, about 9 Roman miles north of Jerusalem (Onom., ed. Lag., p. 280). Though it did not rank as a city (Josh. xviii, 21 sg.), Michmash was recolonized after the exile (Neh. xi. 31), and, favoured by the possession of excellent wheat- land (Mishna, Men. viii. 1), was still a very large village (Maxyds) in the time of Eusebius. The modern Makhmas is quite a small place.

The historical interest of Michmash is connected with the strategical importance of the position, commanding the north side of the Pass of Michmash, which madc it the headquarters of the Philistines and the centre of their forays in their attempt to quell the first rising under Saul, as it was also at a later date the head- see of Jonathan the Hasmonzan (1 Mac. ix. 73). From

erusalem to Mount Ephraim there are two main routes. The pre- sent caravan road keeps the high ground to the west near the water- shed, and avoids the Pass of Michmash altogether. But another route, the importance of which in antiquity may be judged of from Isa, x. 28 sq., led southwards from Ai over an undulating plateau to Michmash. Thus far the road is easy, but at Michmash it descends into a very steep and rough valley, whieh has to be crossed before reascending to Geba.! At the bottom of the valley is the Pass of Michmash, a noble gorge with precipitous craggy sides. On the north the crag is crowned by a sort of plateau sloping backwards into a round-topped hill. This little plateau, about a mile east of the present village of Makhmds, seems to have been the post of the Philistines, lying close to the centre of the insurrection, yet possessing unusually good communieation with their establishments on Mount Ephraim by way of Ai and Bethel, and at the same time

eommanding the routes leading down to the Jordan from Ai and from Michmash itself.

MICKIEWICZ, Apam (17 98-1855), Polish poet, was born in 1798, near Nowogrodek, in the present government of Minsk, where his father, who belonged to the schlachta or lesser nobility, had a small property. The poet was educated at the university of Vilna; but, becoming involved in some political troubles there, he was forced to terminate his studies abruptly, and was ordered to live for a time in Russia. He had already published two small volumes of miscellaneous poetry at Vilna, which had been favourably received by the Slavonic public, and on his arrival at St Petersburg he found himself admitted to the leading literary circles, where he was a great favourite both from his agreeable manners and his extraordinary talent of improvisation. In 1825 he visited the Crimea, which inspired a collection of sonnets in which we may admire both the elegance of the rhythm and the

rich Oriental colouring. The most beautiful are The Storm, Bakchi- serat, and Grave of the Countess Potocka,

In 1828 appeared his Konrad Wallenrod, a narrative poem describing the battles of knights of the Teutonic order with the heathen Lithuanians. Here, under a thin

veil, Mickiewicz represented the sanguinary passages of

arms and burning hatred which had characterized the long feuds of the Russians and Poles, The objects of the poem, although evident to many, escaped the Russian censors,

- So Isa. x. 28 deseribes the invader as leaving his heavy baggage at Michmash before pushing on through the pass.

poet exhibited all the signs of premature old age ;

241

and it was suffered to appear, although the very motto, taken from Machiavelli, was significant : “ Dovete adunque Sapere. come sono duo generazioni da combattere ; bisogna essere volpe e leone.” After a five years’ exile in Russia the poet obtained leave to travel ; he had secretly made up his mind never to return to that country or Poland so long as it remained under the government of the Muscovites. Wending his way to Weimar, he there made the acquaintance of Goethe, who received him cordially, and, pursuing his journey through Germany, he entered Italy by the Spliigen, visited Milan, Venice, and F lorence, and finally took up his abode at Rome. There he wrote the third part of his poem Daady, the subject of which is the religious commemoration of their ancestors practised among Slavonic nations, and Pan Tadeusz, his longest poem, by many considered his masterpiece. A graphic picture is drawn of Lithuania on the eve of Napoleon’s expedition to Russia in 1812, In 1839 Mickiewicz left Rome for Paris, where his life was for some time spent in poverty and unhappiness. He had married a Polish lady, Selina Szymanowska, who became insane. In 1840 he was appointed to the newly founded chair of Slavonic languages and literature in the Collége de France, a post which he

was especially qualified to fill, as he was now the chief representative of Slavonic literature, Poushkin having died in 1837, He was, however, only destined to hold it for a little more than three years, his last lecture having been given on the 28th of May 1844. His mind had become more and more disordered under the influence of religious mysticism. His lectures became a medley of religion and politics, and thus brought him under the censure of the Government. A selection of them has been published in four volumes. They contain some good sound criticism, but the philological part is very defective, for Mickiewicz was no scholar, and he is obviously only well acquainted with two of the literatures, viz., Polish and Russian, the latter only till the year 1830, A very sad picture of the declining days of Mickiewicz is given in the niemoirs of Herzen. At a comparatively early period the unfortunate poverty, despair, and domestic affliction had wrought their work upon him. In 1849 he founded a French newspaper, La Tribune des Peuples, but it only existed a year. The restoration of the French empire seemed to kindle his hopes afresh ; his last composition is said to have been a Latin ode in honour of Napoleon III. On the outbreak of the Crimean War he was sent to Constantinople to assist in raising a regiment of Poles to take service against the Russians. He died suddenly there in 1855, and his body was removed to France and buried at Montmorency.

Mickiewicz is held to have been the greatest Slavonic poet, with the exception of Poushkin. Unfortunately in other parts of Europe he is but little known; he writes in a very difficult language, and one which it is not the fashion to learn. There were both pathos and irony in the expression used by a Polish lady to a foreigner, '* Nous avons notre Mickiewicz & nous." He is one of the best pro- ducts of the so-called romantic school. The Poles had long groaned under the yoke of the classicists, and the country was full of legends and picturesque stories which only awaited the coming poet to put them into shape. Hence the great popularity among his countrymen of his ballads, each of them being eonnected with some national tradition. Besides Konrad Wallenrod and Pan Tadeusz, attention may be called to the poem Grazyna, which describes the adventures of a Lithuanian chieftainess against the Teutonic knights. It is said by Ostrowski to have inspired the brave Emilia Plater, who was the heroine of the rebellion of 1830, and after having fought in the ranks of the insurgents, found a grave in the forests of Lithuania, A fine vigorous Oriental piece is Farys. Very good too are the

odes to Youth and to the his- torian Lelewel ; the former did much to stimulate the efforts of the Poles to shake off their Russian conquerors. It is enough to say of Mickiewicz that he has obtained the proud position of the repre- sentative poet of his country ; her customs, her superstitions, her history, her struggles are reflected in his works.

XVI. — 31

242

MICKLE, Wittiam Junius (1734-1788), son of the minister of Langholm, Dumfriesshire, holds a respectable place among the imitative minor poets of the 18th century. He wrote a poem on Knowledge—carefully versified, pointing a moral on the vanity of intellectual pride— at the age of eighteen, entered into business as a brewer at his father's request and against his own inclinations, soon became bankrupt, went to London on outlook for work as a man of letters, solicited patronage In vain, earned a living hardly by writing for Magazines, made some impression in 1765 by "a poem in the manner of Spenser" called the Concubine (afterwards Syr Martyn), was appointed corrector to the Clarendon Press, and finally took a place among the leading poets of that very barren time by a translation of the Lusiad of Camoens into heroic couplets (specimen published 1771, whole work 1775). So great was the repute of the work that when Mickle— appointed secretary to Commodore Johnstone—visited Lisbon in 1779 the king of Portugal gave him a public reception. As a translator of Camoens Mickle has been superseded, but he aimed, not at close rendering of the original, but at making a poem which should be worthy of a permanent place in English literature. This ambition he was not capable of fulfilling, though he had great fluency and vigour. It may be doubted whether the fashionable forms which he imitated were the best suited to his natural gifts. He shows delight in lively action, a sense of dramatic effect, and, in the Concubine, the sub- stance of which might have been conceived by Crabbe, considerable fulness of detail in coarse realistic painting. Certainly, if the Scottish poem There 's nae luck aboot the hoose was Mickle's, he mistook his medium. Scott read and admired Mickle's poems in his youth, and, besides founding Kenilworth on the ballad of Cumnor Hall, was a good deal influenced by him in style. Mickle's prose is lively and vigorous.

MICROMETER, an instrument generally applied to telescopes and microscopes for measuring small angular distances with the former or the dimensions of small objects with the latter.

Before the invention of the telescope the accuracy of astronomical observations was necessarily limited by the angle that could be distinguished by the naked eye. The angle between two objects, such as stars or the opposite limbs of the sun, was measured by directing an arm furnished with fine ‘‘sights” (in the sense of the “sights ” of a rifle) first upon one of the objects and then upon the other, or by employing an instrument having two arms each furnished with a pair of sights, and directing one pair of sights upon one object and the second pair upon the other. The angle through which the arm was moved, or, in the latter case, the angle between the two arms, was read off upon a finely graduated arc. With such means no very high accuracy was possible. Archimedes concluded from his measurements that the sun’s diameter was greater than 27’ and less than 32’; and even Tycho Brahe was so misled by his measures of the apparent diameters of the sun and moon as to conclude that a total eclipse of the sun was impossible. Maestlin in 1579 determined the relative positions of eleven stars in the Pleiades (Historia Ccelestis Lucit Baretti, Augsburg, 1666), and Winnecke has shown (Monthly Notices R. A. S., vol. xxxix. p. 146) that the ae error of these measures amounted to about ar he

1 Grant, History of Physical Astronomy, p. 449.

- This is an astonishing accuracy when the difficulty of the objects is considered. Few persons can see with the naked eye—much less measure—more than six stars of the Pleiades, although all the stars measured by Maestlin have been seen with the naked eye by a few individuals of exceptional powers of eye-sight.

The invention of the tclescope at once extended the possibilities of accuracy in astronomical measurements. The planets were shown to have visible disks, and to be attended by satellites whose distance and position angle

relative to the planet it was desirable to measure. It became, in fact, essential to invent a “micrometer” for measuring the small angles which were thus for the first time rendered’ sensible. There is now no doubt that William Gascoigne, a young gentleman of Yorkshire, was the first inventor of the micrometer. Crabtree, a friend of his, taking a journey to Yorkshire in 1639 to see Gascoigne, writes thus to his friend Horrocks. “The first thing Mr Gascoigne showed me was a large telescope amplified and adorned with inventions of his own, whereby he can take the diameters of the sun and moon, or any small angle in the heavens or upon the earth, most exactly through the glass, to a second.” ‘The micrometer so mentioned fell into the possession of Mr Richard Townley of Lancashire, who exhibited it at the meeting of the Royal Society held on the 25th July 1667.

The principle of Gascoigne’s micrometer is that two pointers, having parallel: edges at right angles to the measuring screw, are moved in opposite directions sym- metrically with and at right angles to the axis of the telescope. The micrometer is at zero when the two edges are brought exactly together. The edges are then separated till they are tangent to the opposite limbs of the disk of the planet to be measured, or till they respectively bisect two stars, the angle between which is to be determined. The symmetrical separation of the edges is produced and measured by a single screw; the fractions of a revolution of the screw are obtained by an index attached to one end of the screw, reading on a dial divided into 100 equal parts. The whole arrangement is elegant and ingenious, A steel cylinder (about the thickness of a goose-quill), which forms the micrometer screw, has two threads cut upon it, one-half being cut with a thread double the pitch of the other. This screw is mounted on an oblong box which carries one of the measuring edges; the other edge is moved by the coarser part of the screw relatively to the edge attached to the box, whilst the box itself is moved relatively to the axis of the telescope by the finer screw. This produces an opening and closing of the edges symmetrically with respect to the telescope axis. Flam- steed, in the first volume of the Historia Coclestis, has

Gas- coigne’s micro- meter,

inserted a series of measurements made by Gascoigne ~

extending from 1638 to 1643. These include the mutual distances of some of the stars in the Pleiades, a few observa- tions of the apparent diameter of the sun, others of the distance of the moon from neighbouring stars, and a great number of measurements of the diameter of the moon. Dr Bevis (Phil. Trans., 1773, p. 190) also gives results of measurements by Gascoigne of the diameters of the moon, Jupiter, Mars, and Venus with his micrometer.

Delambre gives? the following comparison between the re- sults of Gascoigne's measurements of the sun's semi-diameter and the computed results from modern determinations :—

Gascoigne. Conn. d. Temps. October 25(008:). acer Ge oralOd 16' 100 An Ol a5) eeeeacecteee ie Wale' 1G) 4 December) 2) eee ee Ge 16' 168

Gascoigne, from his observations, deduces the greatest variation of the apparent diameter of the sun to be 35"; according to the Connaissance des Temps it amounts to 323.3 These results prove the enormous advance attained im accuracy by Gascoigne, and his indisputable title to the credit of inventing the micrometer.

Huygens, in his Systema Saturnium (1659), describes a micrometer with which he determined the apparent

® Delambre, Hist. Ast. Moderne, vol. ii. p. 590.

diameters of the principal planets. He inserted a slip of metal, of variable breadth, at the focus of the tele- scope, and observed at what part it exactly covered the object under examination ; knowing the focal length of the telescope and the width of the slip at the point observed, he thence deduced the apparent angular breadth of the object. The Marquis Malvasia in his Bphemerides (Bologna, 1662) describes a micrometer of his own invention. At the focus of his telescope he placed fine silver wires at right angles to each other, which, by their intersection, formed a network of small squares. The mutual distances of the intersecting wires he determined by counting, with the aid of a pendulum clock, the number of seconds required by an equatorial star to pass from web to web, while the telescope was adjusted so

that the star ran parallel to the wires at right angles to those under investigation.! In the Phil. Trans., 1667, No. 2], p. 373, Auzout gives the results of some measures of the diameter of the sun and moon made by himself, and this communication led to the letters of Mr Townley and Dr Bevis above referred to. The micrometer of Auzout and Picard was provided with silk fibres or silver wires instead of the edges of Gascoigne, but one of the silk fibres remained fixed while the other was moved by a screw. It is beyond doubt that Huygens independently discovered that an object placed in the common focus of the two lenses of a Kepler telescope appears as distinct and well-defined as the image of a distant body; and the micrometers of Malvasia, Auzout, and Picard are the natural developments of this discovery. Gascoigne was killed at the battle of Marston Moor on the 2d July 1644, in the twenty-fourth year of his age, and his untimely death was doubtless the cause that delayed the publication of a discovery which anticipated, by twenty years, the combined work of Huygens, Malvaison, Auzout, and Picard in the same direction. .

As the powers of the telescope were gradually developed, it was found that the finest hairs or filaments of silk, or the thinnest silver wires that could be drawn, were much too thick for the refined purposes of the astronomer, as they entirely obliterated the image of a star in the more

Pearson, Bessel, Struve, Dawes, &c., or the successive productions of the great artists Ramsden, Troughton, Fraunhofer, Ertel, Simms, Cooke, Grubb, Clarke, and Repsold. It will be sufficient to describe those forms with which the most important work has been done, or which

have survived the tests of time and experience.

Before astronomical telescopes were mounted parallactically, the Position Indeed, angles.

measurement of position angles was seldom attempted. in those days, the difficulties attached to such measures, and to the lleasurement of distances with the filar micrometer, were exceed- ingly great, and must have taxed to the utmost the skill and patience of the observer. For, on account of the

diurnal motion, the direc- tion of the axis of the telescope when directed toa star is always changing, so that, to follow a star with an altazimuth mounting, the observer requires to move continuously the two handles which give slow motion in altitude and azimuth.

Sir William Herschel was the first astronomer who measured Herschel's position angles; the instrument he employed is described in Phil. instru- It was used by him in his earliest ment.

Trans., 1781, vol. 1xxi. p. 500. observations of double stars (1779-83); but, even in his matchless hands, the measurements were comparatively crude, because of the difficulties he had to encounter from the want of a parallactic mount- ing. In the case of close double stars he estimated the distance in terms of the disk of the components. For the measurement of wider stars he invented his lamp-micrometer, in which the components of a double star observed with the right eye were made to coincide with two lucid points placed 10 feet from the left eye. The distance of the lucid points was the tangent of the magnified angles sub- tended by the stars to a radins of 10 feet. This angle, therefore, divided by the magnifying power of the telescope gives the real angular distance of the centres of a double star. With a power of 460 the scale was a quarter of an inch for every second.

The Modern Filar Micrometer.

When equatorial mountings for telescopes became more general, no filar micrometer was considered complete which was not fitted with a position circle.6 The use of the spider line or filar micrometer becaine universal; the methods of illumination were improved ; and micrometers with screws of previously unheard-of fineness and accuracy were produced. These facilities, coupled with the wide and fascinating field of research opened up by Sir William Herschel's discovery of the binary character of double stars, gave an impulse to micrometric research which has continued unabated to the present time. A still further facility was given to the use of the filar micrometer by the introduction of clock- work, which caused the telescope automatically to follow the diurnal motion of a star, and left the observer's hands entirely at liberty."

The modern filar micrometer has now assumed forms of five types. Classifica-

Type A.—Micrometers in which there are two webs, each iov- tion of able bya fine screw with a divided head, This is the usual English micro- form of filar micrometer. meters,

powerful telescopes. To obviate this difficulty Professor Felice Fontana of Florence (Saggio del real gabinetto di Jistca

e di storia naturale, 1755) first proposed the use of spider webs in micrometers,? but it was not till the attention of Troughton had been directed to the subject by Rittenhouse that the idea was carried into practice.2 In 1813 Wollaston proposed fine platinum wires, prepared by surrounding a

platinum wire with a cylinder of silver, and drawing out |

the cylinder with its platinum axis into a fine wire.t The surrounding silver was then dissolved by nitric acid, and a platinum wire of extreme fineness remained. But experience soon proved the superiority of the spider web ; its perfection of shape, its lightness and elasticity, have led to its universal adoption.

Beyond the introduction of the spider line it is unneces- sary to mention the various steps by which the Gascoigne micrometer assumed the modern forms now in use, or to describe in detail the suggestions of Hooke,5 Wren,

Type B.—Micrometers in which one web is movable by means of a fine screw with a divided head, and the other by a screw without a divided head. The Jatter screw, in ordinary use, is only employed to change the coincidence-reading of the two webs, for eliminating the errors of the micrometer screw. This is the ordi- nary German form of micrometer as originally made by Fraunhofer and since by Merz, and employed by the Struves and other principal Continental astronomers down to the present day.

Type C.—A similar form of micrometer to B, except that the coincidence-point cannot be changed,—there being no second screw to alter the position of the fixed web. .

Type D.—A micrometer somewhat similar in general construction to form B, except that, in addition to means of changing the zero point, there is a screw head by which a fine movement can be given to the whole micrometer box, in the direction of the axis of the micrometer screw. This is the modern form of micrometer as cou- structed by Repsold. } ;

Type E.—Micrometers fitted with two eye-pieces for measuring angles larger than the field of view of au ordinary eye-piece.

The micrometer of type A is due to Troughton ; it is represented Trough- in figs. 1, 2, 3. Fig. 1 is a horizoutal section in the direction of ton's filar the axis of the telescope. The eye-piece ab consists of two plano- micro-

Smeaton, Cassini, Bradley, Maskelyne, Herschel, Arago,

1 Mém. Acad. des Sciences, 1717, p. 78 sq. 2 In 1782 (Phil. Trans., vol. 1xxii. p. 163) Sir W. Herschel

writes :—"I have in vain attempted to find lines sufficiently thin to extend them across the centres of the stars, so that their thickness might be neglected." It is a matter of regret that Fontana's sugges- tion was unknown to him.

3 Quekett in his Treatise on the Microscope ascribes to Ramsden the practical introduction of the spider web in micrometers. The evidence appears to be in favour of Troughton.

4 Phil. Trans., 1818, pp. 114-118.

> Dr Hooke made the important improvement on Gascoigne's micrometer of substituting parallel Aairs for the parallel edges of its original construction (Hooke's Posthumous Works, p. 497).

convex lenses a, b, of nearly the same focal length, and with the two meter.

6 Herschel and South (Phil. Trans., 1824, part ili. p. 10) claim that the micrometer by Troughton, fitted to their 5-feet equatorial telescope, is the first position micrometer constructed capable of measuring position angles to 1’ of arc. . ;

7 So far as we can ascertain, the first telescope of large size driven by clockwork was the 9-inch equatorial made for Struve at Dorpat by Fraunhofer; it was completed in 1825. ‘The original idea appears to be due to Passement (Afém. Acad., Paris, 1746). In 1757 he pre- sented a telescope to the king, so accurately driven by clockwork that it would follow a star all night long.

convex sides facing each other. They are placed at a distance apart less than the focal length of a, so that the wires of the micrometer, which must be distinctly seen, are beyond 6.1 The eye-piece slides into the tube cd, which screws into the brass ring ¢/f, through two openings in which the oblong frame, containing the micrometer slides, passes. These slides are shown in fig. 2, and consist of brass forks & and J, into which the ends of the screws o and p are rigidly fitted. The slides are accurately fitted so as to have no

sensible lateral shake, but yet so as to move easily in the direction ©

of the greatest.length of the micrometer box. Motion is communi- cated to the forks by female screws tapped in the heads m and

Peed

Wwsseser

Fig. 1.

Fig. 2,

‘acting on the screws o and p respectively. Two pins q, 7, with spiral springs coiled round them, pass loosely through holes in the forks k, 1, and keep the bearings of the heads m and m firmly pressed against the ends of the

micrometer box. Thus the smallest rotation of either head communicates to the corresponding slide mo- tion, which, if the serews are accurate, is proportional to the amount through which the head is turned. Each heal is graduated into 100 equal parts on the drums w and », so that, by estimation, the reading can easily be carried to zjy5th of a revolution. The total number of revolutions is read off by a scale attached to the side of the box, but not seen in the figure.

Two spider webs are stretched across the forks, one (é) being adouead in a fine groove cut in the inner fork &, the other (s) in a similar groove cut in the outer fork 7. These grooves are simultane- ously cut im sitw by the maker, with the aid of an engine capable of ruling fine straight lines, so that the webs when aceurately laid in the grooves are perfectly parallel. A wire st is stretched across the centre of the field, perpendicular to the parallel wires. Each movable web must pass the other without coming in contact with it or the fixed wire, and without rubbing on any part of the brass-work. Should either fault occur (technically called ‘fiddling ”) it is fatal to accurate measurement. One of the most essential points in a good micrometer is that all the webs shall be so nearly in the same plane as to be well in focus together under the highest powers used, and at the same time absolutely free from “fiddling.” For measuring position angles a brass circle gh (fig. 3), fixed to the tele- scope by the serew 7, has rack teeth on its circumference that receive the teeth of an endless serew w, which, being fixed by the arms xx to the oblong box mn, gives the latter a motion of rotation round the axis of the telescope; an index upon this box points out on the graduated circle gh the angular rotation of the instrument.

The English micrometer stil] retains the essential features of Troughton’s original construc- tion above described. The later English artists have somewhat changed the mode of conimuniecating motion to the slides, by attaching the screws permanently to the micrometer head and tapping each micrometer screw into its slide. Instead of making the shoulder of the screw a flat bearing surface, they have

Fig. 3.

AS GEL

Fig, 4, given the screw a spherical bearing resting in a hollow cone (fig.

4) attached to the end of the box. The French artists still retain Troughton's form. Simms (Troughton's successor) and Cooke (of York), for symmetry and more effectual elimination of "' the loss of time" (called by the Germans ''todter Gang," and sometimes in English "back-lash"'), have provided two pins with spiral springs,

' This is known as Ramsden's eye-pieee; it was made originally by him.

MICROMETER

| 6). The pressure of this

[TYPES OF FILAR

like g and r (fig. 2), one on each side of the screw which moves each slide.

Grubb of Dublin, with the intention of avoiding the variation of pressure exerted by the spiral springs when the slide is at different distances from the head of the serew, lias adopted the following plan. Whiere the screw enters the slide he has a nut » attached toa strong spring pp (fig. 5), the pres- sure of which exerts a con- stant tension in the axis of the serew, tending to bring the threads into close econ- tact, in opposite directions, with their bearings in the nut 2 and the slide g. The pressure of this spring is regulated by the screws s, s, tapped into the thickened ends of the springs. For maintaining the spherical shoulder of the serew in close and constant pressure on its conical bearing he has attached a conical bear- ing to the spring p’p’ (fig.

on the upper part of the spherical shoulder is regu- lated by the screws s’, s’, passing through elongated holes in the spring pp’, and et into the end of the OX,

Fig, 6.

The screws of micrometers are generally made with 50 or 100 threads to the inch. Troughton’s method of reading the number of whole revolutions by a silver scale is inconvenient, because :}5th or even 5th of an inch is too small a quantity to read easily with the naked eye, especially with the faint illumination that it is

desirable to use when measuring faint objects. Different methods, including the ‘‘ comb” (see below) and various kinds of ‘‘ counters,” have been introduced with more or less success ; but recently the Repsolds of Hamburg have SN AS contrived a plan at ae so AQ Qk (CCX 9 simple and so efficient that Fig. 7. it will be unnecessary to describe those methods which this plan is certain to super- sede (see below, type D). Grubb has introduced a. Fic. 8 s modification in the form of gBt Ds the slides with a view to avoid the friction of one slide against the other. On the inner side of

the brass plate which forms the bottom of the box (#.e,, the side opposite to the eye-piece) four V-shaped furrows are placed (fig, 7); and at each end of the slides are pro- jections (fig. 8, end view) which fit into these furrows. The slides are kept down in their places by springs attached to them, which press upon the inner side of the lid ofthe box, ; Troughton's mode of giving rotation to the position circle is now abandoned. A much quicker motion in position angle than can be obtained without slow motion is often desirable, since, in observing very close double stars, the uncertainty of each point- ing may amount to several degrees in the most accurate measure- ments. The plan of a pinion working in a toothed wheel is often employed, but that also is too slow. Most modern micro- meters are now fitted with a clamp and slow motion screw (see fig. 9, type B). This permits observation of position angles of very close objects by simple rotation of the box with the hand; while the slow motion, after clamping, permits the more delicate movements that are required in measuring the position angle of objects farther apart.

"The Cookes and Grubb have for years almost invariably trans- ferred the position circle from the micrometer to the telescope tube. The whole eye-cnd with its focussing arrangements rotates, and its rotation can be measured by a circle attached to the butt end of the tube. here is considerable convenience in this arrangement. One position circle only is required for all the micrometers that may be employed with the instrument; and the orientation of reticulated diaphragms, or the adjustment of the direction of the slit of a spectroscope, may also be accomplished by the same means. But, after a very extended experience of all'the various types of existing mouutings, the present writer does not hesitate to eXpress a decided preference for a position circle attached to the micrometerand a rigidattachment of the eye-end to the telescopetube, —having never seen an eye-end attached to a position circle on the butt end of the

| telescope-tube in which, after the wear and tear of a few years,

some looseness or shake could not be detected. This isa fatal fault, especially in those delicate observations of difference of declina- tion which have latterly formed so prominent a feature in refined micrometrie research,

On the other hand, in some good old micro- meters at the Royal Observatory, Cape of Good Hope, that are fitted with attached position cireles, there is no trace of shake or wear after fifty years of work.

MICROMETER.] 245 astronomy have been executed. In this micrometer the screw s is mounted on its own slide and has a divided head precisely like the screw S (fig. 9). The plate pp is elongated towards s, and the corresponding bush B is attaehed to this elongation. The serew s/ is shifted to another part of the eye-picce slide, so that it does not interfere with the increased diameter of the screw s. Fraunhofer’s micrometer in this form belongs to type A, but is quoted under

Fraun- The micrometer of type B represented in fig. 91 is the original | type B for convenience of description. hofer’s Merz micrometer of the Cape Observatory, made on Fraunhofer’s It is not necessary to give a figure representing type C. Such filar model. § is the head of the micrometer screw proper, s that of tho | micrometers have been generally constructed on Troughton’s type micro- screw moving the slide to whieh the so-called “ fixed web” is (figs. 1, 2, 8) with the omission of one of the serews, and with meter attached, s’ that of a screw which moves the eye-piece E. C is the | one or more of the modifications described in detail under type MAY tal spose de: se gp See one he wonder at the poor adaptation of means to ends or the marvellous ined Pee bs . rong en eadered sizictly parelle patience and skill whieh, with such means, led to such results.2. It The micrometer screw is mounted on the slide which carries the ees oat Sorat rp ete ae all irony e inovable web. Fig. 10 shows a plan of this slide; the Siviged | ive heads of his micrometer (Mem. R. A. S., vol. xxxv. p. 189). dren a bie wecow,, (2: aided for wake of gn aim a His slipping piece gave motion to the micrometer by two slides, screw S has shoulder at a carefully fijed ank a> one in right ascension the other in declination, so that “either of bearing 90.09.16 work. ancotly te 0 hols. in the War Pebe epee the webs can be placed upon either of the components of a double oo; the other extremity of the screw is formed into a pivot, which star with ease and certainty.” fits a hole in the brass piece 88. The end of this pivot—hardened, All micrometers nsed, in conjunction with a microscope, for read- polished, and sigitly Pounde@—rests on the flat surface of an agete ing

the divisions of transit circles, heliometer seales, &c., are of the haa wig tayamees in thaws of the slide, iad. kept firmly in its type C. The reading micrometer is shown in fig. 11. C is the place by the brass piece 68. By careful adjustment of the screws | bYPe ©: ” dhieclivs, 1D tar laeothdiew tox. W the grad- 0, @ sufficient pressure may be left upon « to slightly bend the strong tin i hedd of tha Serew. Gi the aulled head spring _ thus ae all end-shake anal preventing easy by which the serew cc 4s tarne d, A an eye- aetion of the screw. ne screw passes at the : ei ee : 0 ai same time through the bush 5 ishéwn in piece sliding in a tube B, aa (fig. 12) the slide, ‘plan and.elevation, fig. 10) attached to pp (fig. 9); and there is a fine saw cut, which can be narrowed by the small screw 7, to close the bush upon the micrometer screw with a view of preventing “‘loss of time.” The spider web w is cemented on the further side of the thin plate wv, the varnish being applied in the countersunk holes shown by the dotted eircles u,u. The slide is counter- sunk to about half its thickness within the area indicated by oovo, in order to allow the adapter of the eye-piece to come sufficiently : Fig. 12. close to the webs. _The oaks was origin- and 6, 6 the spiral springs. The focal length of the objective ally moved by a pinion Working in a rack z and the distance between the optical centre of the lens and the (fig. 9); but the screw s’ applied by Simms webs are so arranged that images of the divisions are formed in was found by Maclear to be more convenient Fie. 10. the plane of the webs, and the piteh of the screw is such that one for the purpose. Beyond this, and the grad- 3 .:. _ | division of the scale corresponds with some whole number of re- uation of the edge of the circle with more strongly cut divisions volutions of the screw, than those originally engraved on the face of the circle, the instru- There is what is technically called a ‘‘comb” inserted in the ment remains and is figured in its original form. Pistor and | sicrometer box at d (fig. 12),—its upper surface being nearly in the Martius (Berlin) have also made excellent instruments of the plane of the wires. This comb does not move with reference to the above type. There is a celebrated micrometer of their make, with box, and serves to indicate the whole revolution of which a fraction Dunsink which, in the hands of Brunnow at Dunsink (Dublin), some of | i, read on the head. In fig. 12 a division is represented bisected by miero- the most perfect and refined investigations ever made in practical | cross webs, and five revolutions of the screw eorrespond with one meter, 1 When it is

remembered that the measurements of the Strnves, Dembowski, | division of the scale. In all modern reading micrometers the eross

Seeeli, the Bonds, Maclear, and of most modern Continental astronomers have been made with Fraunhofer or Merz micrometers, it is not too much to say that fig. 9 represents the instrument with which three-fourths of the astronomical measurements of the last fifty years have been made.

webs of fig. 12 are replaeed by parallel webs embracing the division

2 The late Professor Watson used to say, quaintly aud with truth, “ After all, the best part of the micrometer is the man at the small end! ”

(fig. 13). The means for changing the length of the tube and the distance of C from the scale are omitted in the figure. These appli- ances are required if the ‘‘run” has to be accurately adjusted. By ‘‘run” is meant the difference between the intended whole number of screw-revolutions and the actual measure of the space between two adjacent di- visions of the scale in turns of the screw divided by the number of intended revolutions. In delicate researches Fic. 13 two divisions of the scale should always be read, not *’8 “° merely for inereased accuracy but to obtain the corrections for ‘“‘run” from the observations themselves.

Repsold’s _ Fig. 14 represents an important type of reading micrometer by the reading Repsolds. Here the web-frame is mouuted on the serew itself. The micro- limiting plane of motion is at py, where the end of the micrometer meter, serew bears upon the hardened, flattened end of the screw s, and is kept in bearing against this plane by the spiral spring g. Rotation q

:

Fig. 14. of the wire-frame is prevented by the small stud m which passes through the web-frame and projects slightly on both sides of it, just barely touching the inner surfaces of the top and bottom of the inicrometer box. The web-frame thus rests solely on the screw and on the point m, and

therefore follows it absolutely and accurately. Micro-” The comparative merits of the various micrometers are discussed meter by Lord Lindsay and Mr Gill (Dunecht Publications, vol, ii. pp. errors, 53-55, 1877). lf the screw of the Repsold micrometer is bent, so

that, for example, the end of the frame next the screw-head is raised

and that next the end p lowered, a twist will be given to the web-

frame, and the centre of the wire will be moved nearer to the micro-:

meter head than it should be, while the reverse effect will follow when

the head has been turned through 180°. The effect of a similar

error on the other micrometers described would be of a much less

amount. They are, however, liable to errors of another character.

If, as in Troughton’s original micrometer, the shoulder is square,

the hole in the end of the box may be left sufficiently wide to allow

for a small error in the parallelism of the screw-matrix with the

motion of the slide, but the smallest bend in the screw causes the

shoulder no longer to bear flat, but to ride on its edge, thus intro-

ducing an extremely uncertain form of error. If the shoulder is

spherical, fitting into a hollow cone on the end of the box, as in the

micrometers of Simms, Cooke, and Grubb, an alinost inconceivable

aceuracy of construction is implied in drilling the matrix of the

screw in the slide so that its axis and that of the cone shall be in

the same straight line, and both parallel to the motion of a point in the slide. Any departure from perfect accuracy in this respect has the effeet of bringing different portions of the spherical shoulder to bear on different parts of the cone for different revolutions, and introduces errors of a character by no means easy to deal with. In addition to these objections there always is the greater objection of employing as a delicate contact-measuring surface one that is exposed where oil is used. Dust and oil will arrange themselves in layers of variable and uncertain thickness and defeat all attempts to seeure absolutely consistent results. In Repsold's micrometer the point @appui is a small hardened and polished bearing, requiring little lubrication, and perfectly protected from dust; the errors of the serew (some of them exaggerated, certainly) are faithfully reproduced, and consequently determinable, and beyond this the work to be done by the screw is reduced to a minimum,—no slide-friction having to be overcome. If we are to regard as the most perfect instrument, ''not that which has absolutely the smallest errors, but that which reproduces its errors with the most perfect consistency," undoubtedly Repsold's form of micrometer is best. In order to avoid the exaggeration of the screw-errors produced by the non-symmetrical position of the serew in Repsold's micro-

meter, Stone, in December 1879, exhibited at the Royal Astronomical Society, and described (Monthly Notices, p. 270), a modification of Repsold's instrument. But, both in his statement of the compara- tive merits of the Troughton and Repsold micrometers and in the new form which he figures, Stone overlooks a strong point in the Rep- Lindsay- sold form, and in that proposed by Lord Lindsay mf Gill three years

Gill mi- previously,"—namely, the avoidance of all friction of the slide, and erometer, the elimination of all error or strain that may occur from a want of parallclism in the axis of the matrix and the motion of the slide.

The Lindsay-Gill micrometer will be better understood from the following description. In fig. 15 Ss is the micrometer screw ; its

1 Dunecht Publications, vol. ii., footnote p. 55, Dunecht, 1877.

METER:

cylindrical axis is nicely ground to fit a hole.in the side of the box at @;* the same axis, but ground toa somewhat smaller cylinder, fits neatly but smoothly a hole in the web-frame at b. A screw, cut on the same axis, is tapped into the web- frame ats, and the axis terminates in a pivot which fits a hole ina brass plate cc. The end of the pivot—hardened and slightly rounded —rests on a flat agate? bearing a, which is imbedded in the plate B, and securely held in sitw by pressure of the platé cc. The plate B is firmly attached to the bottom of the box. 4, g are spiral springs mounted on pins. Both springs and pin pass freely through the web-frame at p, , and the pins (but not the springs) pass freely through the frame at n, 2.4 The parallel webs for observing the division (fig. 13) are mounted on the forked end of the frame at ww.

The web-frame is narrower and thinner than the breadth and height of the interior of the box, and is only prevented from rotat- ing by the delicate touch of the projecting ends of the pin m on the inner surfaces of the top and bottom of the box. It appears that a frame so mounted fulfils all theoretical con- ditions of accuracy. It is perfectly free to follow the motion of the screw and accurately to reproduce its errors, notwithstanding any reasonable faults of workmanship; and no permissible shake or fouling of the bearing

[TYPES OF FILAR

Fig. 15. at @ can produce sensible error in the distance between the bearing

surface of the agate plane and the spider webs. The motion is pro- duced with the minimum of friction; and the “feel” of the screw is therefore as delicate and perfect as it is possible to make it.

The micrometer of type D shown in fig. 16 has recently Repsold’s been made by the Repsolds for the Cape Observatory. As this micro- instrument combines eter, all their most recent s modifications, we de- scribe it in detail. Fig. 17 represents the same micrometer with the upper side of the box removed. The letters in the descrip- tion refer to both figures.

S is the head of the micrometer screw, s that of the screw by which the micrometer box is moved relative to the plate / (fig. 16), s that of the screw which moves the eye- piece slide. K is the elamp in __ position angle, P the slow mo- tion screw in position angle ; pp is the posi- tion circle, R, R its two readers. The lat- ter are in fact little microseopes carrying a vernier etched on glass, in lieu of a filar micrometer.

Fig. 16.

These verniers can be read to 1’, and estimated to 0’:2. D is the drum-head which gives the frae- tion of a revolution, d that which gives the whole number of revo- lutions, I is the index or pointer at which both drums are read. This index is shown in fig. 17, but only its mode of attachment (X,

fig. 17) in fig. 16. The teeth of the pinion z, fig. 17, are cut on the axis of the micrometer screw. The drumd and its attached tooth wheel are ground to turn smoothly on the axis of the serew. The pinion z and the toothed wheel d are connected by an intermediate wheel and pinion Y; the numbers of teeth in the wheels and pinions are so proportioned that twenty-four revolutions of the micrometer screw produce one revolution of the drum and wheel d. (This is the description of Repsold's counter referred to under type A.) The divisions of both drums are conveniently read, simultaneously, by

2 There would be some advantage in allowing the screw's axis to pass witha little shake through the hole in the end of the box at a, and then, extending the length of the larger eylinder, transfer the bearing from a to a well-fitting hole in a pieee fixed like B to the bottom of the box. This form would also give some facilities of construetion, and all the oiled surfaces would be perfeetly protected.

3 Sapphire is better; the agate bearing of such a serew has been found very sensibly worn.

4 If it is desired to prevent possible eontact of these pins with the frame, the ends of the pins may be made to enter guiding holes in ce,

the lens ¢; at night the lamp which illuminates the webs and the position circle also illuminates the drum-heads (see on illumination below). aaaais the web-frame (fig. 17), Byis a single rod consisting of two eylinders accurately fitting in the ends of the micrometer box, the larger cylinder being at 8. There is a hole in the web- frame which smoothly fits the larger cylinder at 6', and another which similarly fits the smaller cylinder at 7. A spiral spring, coiled round the cylinder -, resting one endon the shoulder formed by the difference of the diameters of the cylinders 6 and y and the other on the inside of the web-frame, presses the latter continuously towards y. Contact of the web-frame of the micrometer with the side of the box at y would therefore take place, were it not for the micrometer screw. This screw fits neatly in the end of the box at e, passes looscly through the web-frame at ¢', is tapped into the frame at ¢', and its end rests on a flat

hardened surface at ¢. Rota- tion of the web-frame about By is prevented by the heads of the screws at m; the head of the screw on the lower side of the frame reposes on the plane vy, that on the upper side (fig. 17) touches lightly on the inner surface of the lid of the box. Such rotation can obviously be controlled within limits that need not be further considered. But freedom of rotation in the plane of the paper

of the screws. The position of the box relative to the plate f, in the direction of measurement, depends therefore on the distance between the end of the screw s and the fixed stud. A screwing in of s thus causes the box to move to the left, and vice versa. Rotation of the box round CC is prevented by downward pressure of the spring Z on a projection attached to the side of the box. The amount of this pressure is regulated by the screw 2'.

The short screw whose divided milled head is « shifts the zero of the micrometer by pushing, without turning, the short sliding rod whose flat end forms the point @appui of the micrometer screw at ¢. The pitch of the screw ois the same as that of the measuring screw (50 threads to the inch), and its motion can be limited by a stop to half a revolution.

The five fixed webs are attached to the table 77, Which is secured to the bottom of the box by the screws p. The three movable webs are attached to the projections AA on the frame aa. The plane surfaces rr and AA are composed of a bronze of very close texture, whieh appears capable of receiving a finish having almost the truth and polish of an optical surface. It seems also to take a very clean V cut, as the webs can be laid in their furrows with an astonishing ease and precision. These furrows have apparently been cut én situ . with a very accurate engine; for not the slightest departure from parallelism can be detected in any of the movable webs relative to the fixed webs. Extraordinary care has evidently been bestowed in adjusting the parallelism and distance of the planes 7 and A, so that the movable. wires shall almost, but not quite, touch the sur- face +. The varnish to fix the webs is applied, not on the surface 7 asis usual, but on a bevel for the yurpose,! the position of the webs depending on their tension to oat them in their furrows. The result is that no trace of ** fiddling" exists, and the mov- able and fixed webs come sharply together in focus with the highest powers. Under such powers the webs can be brought

into apparent contact with such preeision and delicacy that the uncertainty of measurement seems to lie as much in the estimation of the frac- tion of the division of the head as in the accuracy of the contact. It is a convenient feature in Repsold's micrometer that the webs are very near the inner surface of the top of the box, so that the eye is not brought inconveniently close to the plate when high powers are used.

Micromcters of the type E have been invented by Alvan Clark and Clark's Grubb. Clark's micrometer was exhibited at the June meeting of micro- the Royal Astronomical Society in 1859 (Monthly Notices R.A. S., meter for vol. xix.). It is capable of measuring angles up to about one degree. large It is "furnished with two eye-pieces, composed of small single angles. lenses, mounted in separate frames, which slide in a groove and can be separated to the required distance. A frame carrying two parallel spider lines, each mounted separately with its own micro-

-meter screw, slides in a dovetailed groove in front of the eye-pieces ; and by a free motion in this frame each web can be brought opposite its own eye-lens. In using this micrometer, the first step is to set the position-vernier to the approximate position of the objects to be measured. Then the eye-lenses are separated till each is opposite its own object. The frame containing the webs and their micrometer screws is then slid into its place; and the webs, having been separated nearly to their proper distance by their free motion in the frame, are plaeed precisely on the objects by their fine screws, the observer's eye being carried rapidly from one eye-lens to the other a few times, till he is satisfied of the bisection of each of the objects by its own web. The frame is then removed for reading off the measure by means of an achromatic microscope, on the stage of which it is placed." The advantages which Clark claims are these :—

'1, Distances can be observed with great accuracy up to about one degree, and the angles of position also.

'**2. The webs, being in the same plane, are perfectly free from parallax, and are both equally distinct, however high the magnify- ing power may be.

'*3. The webs are also free from distortion and from colour.

‘4, A different magnifying power may be used on each of the objects;—which may be advantageous in comparing a faint comet: with a star.” ; he

It appears to us that the method of removing a slide in order to measure the interval between the webs is liable to objection, not only because of the risk to the webs, but because the taking of measurements of such a different character with a different instrument is inconvenient and troublesome. It is true that the intervals between the webs could be measured by an assistant, and two or more different slides be employed to save time ; but astronomers will probably generally prefer the method introduced by Grubb described below. It is understood that Clark has since improved this instrument by an ingenious arrangement of prisms, which permits both webs, even though separated one degree in a large telescope, to be seen in the same eye-piece. The arrangement is not described, and is said to be, as yet, somewhat troublesome to arrange previous to measurement, though when arranged it gives very good results. ‘ , r

Grubb (Scientific Procecdings of Royal Dublin Society) thus describes

Fig. 17.

(fig. 17) is only prevented by good fitting of the holes £’, y’; and, since the weight of the slide is on one side of the screw, misfit here will have the effect of changing the reading for coincidence of the movable with the fixed web in reverse positions of the micrometer. With the Cape micrometer a systematic difference has been found in the coincidence point for head above and head below amounting to 0°14, This corresponds, in the Cape instrument, with an excess of the diameters of the holes over those of the cylinders of aboutzsigath of an inch,—a quantity so small as to imply good workmanship, though it involves a systematic error which is very much larger than the probable error of a single determination of the coincidence point. The obvious remedy is to make all measures on opposite sides of the fixed web before reversing in position angle,—a precau- tion, however, which no careful observer would neglect. In measur- ing differences of declination, where the stars are rought up by the diurnal motion, this precaution cannot be adopted, because it is necessary always to bisect the preeeding star with the fixed web. But in Ad measures index error can always be eliminated by bisecting both stars with the same web (or different

webs of known interval fixed on the same frame), and not employing the fixed web at all. Had the spring ¢ been placed as in fig. 14, and the cylinders B and y been made to bear like the pivots of a transit on seg- mental bearings in the frame at g’ and +’, it is probable that the difference in coincidence points would not have existed. Such a modification appears advisable, unless this construction, by leaving the end m less free, should make the “ feel’? of the serew less sweet and perfect. The discordance in zero when known to exist is really of no consequence, because the observations can be so arranged as to eliminate it.

The box is mounted on a strong hollow steel cylinder CC (fig. 17) by holes y, @in the ends of the box, which fit the cylinder closely and smoothly. The cylinder is rigidly fixed in the studs C, C, and these are attached to the foundation plate f. The cylinder contains towards 7 a sliding rod, and towards 6 a compressed spiral spring. There is thus a thrust outwards of the spring upon the hollow cap W (attached outside the box), and a thrust of the rod upon the end

1 The marks of varnish so applied will be seen in fig. 17.

Grubb’s duplex micro- meter,

what he calls his ‘‘duplex micrometer,” shown in perspective in fig. 18 :—“ A plate of glass about 24 inches square is ruled with twenty- one lines in one direction ~yth inch apart, and two lines in the other direction 2 inches apart. The extreme lines of the set therefore form a perfect square of 2 inches. These lines are ruled with execeding accuracy and care, but provision is left for ascertaining any errors that remain either as to distance or want of perfect squareness. Along one side of the square is mounted a micro- meter frame in the ordinary way, actu- ated by a screw of one hundred threads to the inch. This micrometer frame earries eleven lines corresponding exact- ly to each alternate line in the glass reticule, sothatwhen & the first spider line is made coincident with the first dia- : mond line on the Tic 18 glass the last spider ee As line will be eoincident with the last line on the glass, and each of the spider lines will be coincident with all the odd numbers of diamond lines, 1, 3, 5, 7, 9,11, 18,15, 17,19, 21.

Over this glass plate is placed a brass cap in whieh two eye-pieces are mounted, one sliding in a groove at right angles to the other,—so that, while one has its journey baekwards and forwards on the horizontal line, the other has its journey on the vertieal line, according to how the eap is placed, for this cap is capable of rotation to meet various circumstances.

‘* How to Use the Instrument.—1. The two stars are brought on the horizontal line, and the distance measured from centre to centre along that line, This distance is measured by eounting the number of spaces on the glass, adding the residue as measured by the micrometer screw. Thus the screw is never used for larger measures than ;yth inch, and therefore errors of screw and temperature errors are much reduced. In bisecting, one star is bronght into the field of one eye-picce, and a bisection is made with one of the diamond lines by moving the micrometer by one or other of its slipping piece screws. Then the other eye-piece is moved till the second star is seen, and a bisection is made with the nearest spider line by moving the micrometer head. Then the eye can be moved back to the first eye-piece, and the bisection checked, and again back to the other eyepiece. When it is seen that both are satisfactory the measure ean be read off. 2. The micrometer is turned round till the horizontal line becomes parallel to the path of apparent motion of the star. This is easily found by stopping the clock and allowing the star to run along the horizontal wire. Now the other star will be found to cross the vertical line somewhere, while the first star is on the horizontal line. This second star is then bisected on the vertical line, while the first star is bisected by one of the spider lines ; thus the difference in right ascension is found. We then have two sides of a right-angled triangle and of course all the elements are known.

““ To Ascertain the Errors (if any) of the Distance of the Lines. — Of course, the usual plan of taking transits ean be adopted, and to ascertain if the lines be perfectly at right angles a special additional eye-picce is provided, so that transits ean be taken aeross each diagonal of the square.”

This instrument has great advantage over Clark’s in ease of adjustment and use, and has done good work at the University Observatory, Oxford (Mem. R. A. S., vol. xlvii. pp. 5-12). Professor Pritchard claims too much when he estimates its work as equal in accuracy with that of the heliometer—at least

the published results do not confirm such a view. But it is a very valuable instrument for measuring objects too faint for the limited aperture of most heliometers, and which at the same time are farther apart than the field of view of an ordinary eye-piece,

The accuracy of the duplex micrometer would be very greatly increased if Clark's idea (above mentioned) of viewing both widely

separated webs in one eye-piece of high power eould be reduced to a convenient practical form.

Method of Webbing the Filar Micrometer.

The webbing of a micrometer is a process that should be familiar to all practical astronomers. English opticians usually proceed as follows. A spider (the variety is marked by a cross on the back, and is found in English gardens about deeayed wood) is canght, and placed on a wire.fork. The insect immediately attaches a web to the wire and begins to lower itself by a web to the ground. This web is wound upon the fork till ten or twelve turns, separated by a convenient space, have been secured. A brush with varnish is

then pagsed along the prongs ; the webs are thus secnrely fixed to the fork. The parallel prongs of the fork must be sufficiently far apart to allow the web-frame of the micrometer to pass between them. The frame to be webbed is placed on a flat dull black surface between the prongs of the fork, the latter being earefully arranged 'so that one of the webs lies nearly in the furrow ruled in the frame for its reception. As the web-frame is generally thicker than the fork, the web will now be stretched across the former, with a certain amount of tension, and is brought into the furrow with a finely pointed piece of soft wood. If the surface of the frame is well polished, and the furrows sharply eut, without ' burr," the web should leap sharply and decidedly into its place. Each end of the web is then secured by a drop of shellac varnish, which should be allowed to harden thoroughly before the frame is touched. 'The webs can be very readily so handled against a black

back- ground, with the aid of a hand lens of 2 or 3 inches focus. In experienced hands this method gives good results, but the following, which is generally followed on the Continent, is prefevable.

A web, about 2 inches longer than the width of the frame, is unwound from a cocoon,! and small pieces of lead are attached to its extremities by beeswax. One end of the web, with its attached lead, is laid on a piece of eork floating in a tumbler of water ; the other end is allowed to hang down in the water, where it becomes thoroughly saturated and untwisted. It is then laid across the fork, and dropped into its furrows in the manner above described, the little lead weights exerting a definite tension. Varnish ? is immediately applied to secure the webs, and the frame is not touched till it is dry.

The bevel-edge of the web-frame introduced by Repsold (type D) offers great facilities for aceurate webbing, and should be cmn- ployed in all future micrometers.

Illumination of Micrometers.

When micrometer observations are made by night it is necessary to have some mode of rendering the webs visible, —either by rays of light at right angles to the axis illuminating the webs, or by rays nearly eoincident with the axis of the telescope. In the former case we get bright webs in a dark field, in the latter dark webs on a bright field.

In the older telescopes bright web illumination is produced by small lamps with nozzles that enter the tubes L, L (fy 5. 9). The illumination is regulated in colour and intensity by wedges of coloured or darkened glass passing through slides in the nozzles. But it is inconvenient to have lamps so near the observer’s eye, and it is at least very difficnlt to obtain a perfectly dark field when the wires are illuininated in this way. :

The Clarks, in their micrometer of the great Washington tele- seope, have made the end of box T (fig. 15) transparent, and light is thrown on the webs from a lamp held by an assistant. Holden has very recently applied a lamp ingeniously hung so as to preserve its vertieality and the constant direction of its light in a similar way, adding a plain silvered mirror inside the box

and opposite the lamp, so as to illuminate the webs symmetrically. In the Clarks' and Holden's methods it is only the webs at right angles to the screw that are illuminated.

For illumination of the field, in very old telescopes, light was thrown on a small ivory refleetor fixed outside the object-glass in the axis of the telescope by an arm fitting on the cell of the lens. This involved the aid of an assistant to direet lamplight on the ivory reflector, or the very frequent change of a lamp support. _After- wards the light from an attached lamp was intro- duced through a hole in the teleseope-tube and thrown upon an ellipti- eal plane (generally dull- gilt) having its eentre part eut away sufficiently to avoid interruption of the cone of rays from the object-glass. "Many in- genious modes of sus- pending the lamp have been invented for the pur- pose of securing a eon- stant direction of its light

Fig. 19. coupled with verticality of the lamp. One of the best of these, dne

to Cooke, is shown in fig. 19. Lis the lamp, P a prism to reflect

1 It ts asserted that webs from cocoons are more elastie, better shaped, and more durable than those obtained during an effort of the inseet to eseape. The best webs we have seen were from a cocoon obtained in Holland, but we have been unable to ascertain the name of the variety of spider.

2 Argelander used to apply two drops of varnish at each end of his webs, He first fixed each extremity by a drop of shellac varnish, and after that had dried he applied a drop of eopal varnish nearer the eentre of the frame; the latter took a long time to harden, but gaye ultimately a mueh stronger attachment.

MICRO

its light into the tube, D a'disk to regulate the quantity of light, Ba disk with glasses to regulate the eolour of the light, S a spring to clamp the disks, C the counterpoise of the lamp, G a poise to preserve the horizontality of the axis CL. But astronomers owe to the genius of Grubb the introduction of a more efficient and convenient system, viz., the performance of all necessary illu- mination of an astronomieal telescope by a single lamp, and tle perfect

control of the illumination of the field or webs, and the regulation of these as to intensity or colour by simple motions from the eye-end. It is impossible to speak too highly of Grubb's efforts in this direction ; he has broken the ground in this department of astronomical engineering, and rendered the working of so huge an instrument as the Vienna telescope of 27 inehes aperture not only convenient, but easier for a siugle observer than that of a very small telescope of the older constructions.

But in the illumination of the field wires and scales of a micro- meter Grubb's original method has recently been surpassed by one which is due to the Repsolds. We shall therefore describe the latter.

Fig. 20 represents the eye-end of a telescope. The reader will recognize the micrometer (figs. 16 and 17) previously described. L is a paraffin lamp fitting by a bayonet joint into a copper cover ce. This effectually defends its glass chimney against accident, and protects the lamp from wind. The simple means by whieli this lamp is made to preserve its ver- tieality in all positions of the telescope is evident from the figure. By this lamp alone the bright wire or bright field illumi- nation is given at pleasure, and with any desired intensity, simply by movement of the small pin p.

The position circle and the head of the micrometer are also illu- minated, as well as the deelina- tion circle, by the same lamp. AB is a eylindrical box, ending in a truneated cone towards A. It is shown, mid-section, inaplane _ passing through the teleseope axis, © in fig. 21, where all details un- necessary to the explanation of the illumination art omitted, and pro- portion of parts is sacrificed to elearness. P is a prism (fig. 21) that rotates with the lamp and reflects its light into AB. The flame of the lamp is in the focus of the lens i, so that the rays hbeeome parallel after passing J through it. There is a sliding Fig. 20. motion to perfect this adjustment. There is a well-polished flat annular reflector of speculum metal rr (fig. 21), which reflects light upon the double mirror M (fig. 20), whence it is diverted to the two opposite points on the declination circle that are read by micrometer microscopes from the eye-end (the latter are omitted for sake of clear- ness),

The little handle at p' and the dotted lines p'z represent an iris-diaphragm, very ingeniously constructed, mount- ed on a plate of transparent glass.

There is a flat ring of brass, carrying

ILLUMINATION. |

four pins, which is turned by the handle p’, in a plane at right angles to Pn,

These pins work in spiral slots cnt in four slides. Thus

Fig. 21,

rotation of the ring causes the four slides to approach or recede from a centre. When the handle y’ is in the rials of its range, the slides together form a disk as large as the hole in the diaphragm dd, and thus prevent all light from entering the telescope tube. When

p’ is pushed to one side of its range the slides niove outwards leaving ” a square opening in the centre so that the light falls on the prism 7,

METER 249

whence it is diverted to a silvered reflector eemented on the middle of the inner surfaee of the objeet-glass, and is then reflected back along the axis of the telescope to illuminate the field at w. When p’ is pushed to the other side of its range the slides approaeh and overlap at the centre, excluding light from n and allowing it to fall upon the reflector s instead. From s the light is thrown upon the. webs w, w by reflexion from a white papier maché surface laid on the inside of a thin hollow brass truncated cone zz. The edge of this cone forms the circle seen within rr in fig. 17. All stray light is preveuted by the light-guard tube mm, whieh is attached to and moves with the rotating part of the micrometer. The result is to produce a symmetrical illumination of the whole system of webs in a perfectly dark field. It is also obvions that by placing p’ at an intermediate position between the centre and the extremes of its range any desired modification of bright wire or bright field iHu- mination can be obtained at pleasure. a sl

The light falling on the papier maché hollow cone is intercepted at three points by prisms, one of which « is shown in section, These prisms are inserted in the cylinder which carries the foundation plate of the micrometer

box and rotate with it, Two of them divert light upon the reflectors (seen from different points of view in figs. 16, 17, 20). The third prism after two reflexions (figs. 16, 20) illuminates the micrometer head. The whole arrangement is in the highest degree elegant, and we have found it most simple and convenient in practiee. The screen C (figs. 20 and 21)—made of thin copper and attached to AB—effectu- ally protects the observer's eye from stray light from the lamp.

It has been found essential, in bright field illumination, when the highest accuracy is desired, to have the illuminating rays parallel with the telescope axis.

In the best telescopes of the future some plan like that of Rep- sold's, above described, will doubtless be adopted. It is probable also that with the introduction of condensers, in conjunction with the incandescent carbon light in vacuum, electricity will ultimately supersede the oil or paraffin lamp in illuminating astronomieal instruments, A small ''Swan lamp" can be plaeed anywhere, is unaffected by wind, and gives off comparatively little heat. These are most valuable qualities for the purpose in.question.

The astronomer-royal (Mr Christie) has reeently used luminous paint to render the measuring pointer of the Greenwich speetroscope visible at night. This paint, after exposure during the day to sun- light, shines at night with a dull phosphorescence sufficient to make the micrometer pointer, to which it is applied, faintly visible, and, it is stated, with very satisfactory results.

On the use of the filar micrometer consult Struve, Mensura Micrometrice, St Petersburg, 1837; Brunnow, Practical and Spherical Astronomy; Chauvenel, Practical and Spherical Astronomy; Brunnow, Astronomical Observations and Researches made at Dunsink, Dublin, 1870, 1873, 1879; Ball, ibid.; Kaiser, Leiden Observations; and the papers of Dembowski in the Astronomische Nachrichten.

Double-Image Micrometers. The discovery of the method of making measures by double

images is stated to have been first suggested by Roemer abont 1678. Roemer.

Bnt no sueh suggestion occurs in the Basis Astronomiw of Horre- bow (Copenhagen, 1735), which contains the only works of Roemer that remain to us. It would appear that to Savary is due the first invention of a micrometer for measurement by double image. His heliometer (describ- ed in a paper com- munieated to the Royal Society in 1748, and printed, along with a letter from Short, in Phil. Trans., 1758, p. 156) was constructed by cutting from a com- plete lens abcd the equal portions aghc and acfe (fig. 22). Fie. 22 The segments gbh & AS . and ¢fd so formed were them attached to the end of a tube having an internal diameter represented by the dotted circle (fig. 28). The width of eaeh of the portions aghc and acfe cut away from

the lens was made slightly greater than the foeal : <

length of lens x tangent of sun’s greatest dia- Fig. 24.

Co

Fig. 23.

meter. Thus at the focus two images of the sun were formed nearly in contact as in fig. 24. The small interval between the adjacent limbs was then measured with a wire micrometer.

Savary also deseribes another form of heliometer, on the same Savary.

principle, in which the segments aghe and acfe are utilized by cementing their edges gh and ef together (fig. 25), and eovering all exeept the portion indieated by the unshaded eircle. Savary ex- presses preference for this seeond plan, and makes the pertinent remark that in both these models ‘‘the rays of red light in the two solar images will. be next to eaeh other, which will render the sun’s disk more easy to be observed than the violet ones.” This

he mentions ‘‘ because the glasses in these two sorts are somewhat | prismatical, but mostly those of. the first model, which could | therefore bear no great charge” (magnifying power).

A third model proposed by Savary consists of two complete lenses of equal focal length, mounted in cylinders side by side, and attached to a strong brass plate (fig. 26). Here, in order to fulfil the purposes of the pre- vious models, the distance of the centres of the lenses fron each other should only slightly exceed the tan- gent of sun’s diameter x focal length of lenses. Savary dwells on the difficulty both of procuring lenses sufficiently equal in focus and of accurately adjusting and centring them.

In the Jfém. Acad. de Paris, 1748, Bouguer de- scribes an instrument which he calls a heliometer. Lalande in his Astronomic (vol. ii. p. 639) mentions such a heliometer which had been in his possession ? from the year 1753, and of which he gives a representation on Plate XXVIII., fig. 186, of the same volume. Bouguer’s helio-

meter was in fact similar to that of Savary’s

a r

third model, with the important difference that, instead of both object-glasses being fixed, one of them is movable by a screw provided with a divided head. No auxili- ary filar micrometer was required, as in Savary’s heliometer, to measure the interval between the limbs of two adjacent images of the sun, it being only necessary to turn

with the attached semi-lenses, move in slides fixed to the plate CC, — simultaneous motion, in contrary directions, being communicated to them

by turning the handle E, which drives a concealed pinion that works in the two racks seen in the highest part of the figure. The amount of separation of the semi-lenses is measured by a scale 5 inches long, subdivided to #;th of an inch, and read by a vernier on the plate F to jth ofan inch. In practical use this micrometer has never given satisfactory results (see Mosotti in the Efemeride of Milan for 1821). It must be remembered, however, that when Dollond gave preference to this type he had not invented the achromatic object-glass ; his preference was fully justified under these circumstances. So far as we kuow no heliometer with a divided achromatic object-glass was ever made by the elder Dollond on the principle of his first type. His son, however, made what he ealled an object-glass micrometer, which was a great improvement on the elder Dollond's second type.

In the older construction the brass mountings of the semi-lenses obstructed the light entering the telescope in proportion to their separation, and the images were so coloured as to prevent the use of any but very low powers. In the later construction the movable segments are formed from a negative achromatic lens of much larger aperture than the object-glass of the telescope with which the micrometer is employed ; and, for convenience in monnting, the segments gbh and edf (fig. 22) are removed. In the fine example of this instrument at the Royal Observatory, Cape of Good Hope, the movable lenses consist of segments of the shape gach and eacf (fig. 22) cut from a complete negative achromatic combination of 8} inches aperture and about 41 feet focal length, composed of

the screw with the divided head to change Fig. 26. a double concave flint lens and a double convex crown. This is the distance between the object-glasses till applied to an excellent achromatic telescope of 34 inches aperture the two images of the sun are in contact as and 42 inches focal length. The instrument is represented in in fig. 27. The differences of the readings fig. 30; the same letters indicate the analogous parts of fig. 29. of the screw, when converted into are, afford The frame CC, moved by the means of measuring the variations of teeth on its outer edge, the sun's apparent diameter. Fic. 2 carries one of the halves

Dollond. On the 4th April 1754 Dollond com- ig. 27. G of the lens, and a simi-

municated a paper to the Royal Society of London (Phil. Trans., vol. xlviii. p. 551) in which he shows that a micrometer can be much more easily constructed by dividing a single object-glass through its axis than by the employment of two object-glasses. He points out—(1) that a telescope with an object- glass so divided still produces a single image of any object to which it may be directed, provided that the optical centres of the seginents are in coin- cidence (7.c., provided the segments retain the same relative positions to each other as before the glass was cut); (2) that if the segments are separated in any direction two images of the object viewed will be produced ; (3) that the most convenient , direction of separation for micrometric purposes is Fig. 28. to slide these straight edges one along the other as the figure on the margin (fig. 28) represents them: ‘‘ for thus they may be moved without suffering any false light to come in between them ; and by this way of removing them the distance between their centres may be very conveniently measured, viz., by having a vernier’s division fixed to the brass work that holds one segment, so as to slide along a scale on the plate to which the other part of the glass is fitted.”

Dollond then points out three dif- ferent types in which a glass so divided and mounted may be used as a micrometer :—

“‘1, It may be fixed at theendof 4 a tube, of a suitable length to its #7 focal distance, as an object-glass, — the other end of the tube having an eye-glass fitted as usual in astronomi- cal telescopes. –

“2. It may be applied to the end of a tube much shorter than its focal distance, by having another convex glass within the tube, to shorten the focal distance of that which is cut in two.

‘*3. It may be applied to the open end of a reflecting telescope, either of the Newtonian or the Cassegrain construction.”

lar frame with teeth car- ries the other half F. A scale 84inches long is fastened like an edge-bar to the frame of the seg- ment G, and each inch is subdivided into twenty parts, which are read off

Fig. 30.

by a vernier to z¢5yth of an inch, and, by estimation, this can easily be carried to gg/ggth or spgath of an inch. The two movable frames are imbedded in a fixed plate HH, screwed to the adapter B, having a eircular hole in its middle equal to the diameter of the

object-glass. The slide of the segment G is moved by turning the milled head to the right of A, and the other segment F by means of a rack and pinion on the opposite side, the latter being turned from the eye-end by a handle not seen in, the figure. A screw is provided for clamping the slide of the segment G, as it is intended that only the segment F shall be moved in making the final bisection. There is an index attached to the slide of G, reading on a rough scale engraved on the plate H, which is obviously intended for setting the optical centre of the segment G approxi- mately as far from the optical axis of the telescope on one side as the optical centre of the segment F will be on the other side during the intended measurement. This arrangement not only permits the measurement of angles twice as great as would be possible if one segment were fixed, but is also important in increasing the symmetry of the measures, The vernier is placed at one end of the scale when the optical centres of the segments are in coincidence, and is provided with screws at I, which are intended for adjusting the zero of the scale. The younger Dollond has in this model retro- graded, in some respects, from the admirable example of his father, who, as shown in fig. 29, not only gave the lenses automatic opposite motion symmetrically with respect to the axis of the telescope, but seems also to have provided for entire elimination of index error by making it possible to observe all angles on opposite sides of zero—a precaution possible in the later form only when very small angles are measured. Rotation of the micrometer in position angle is provided for as in the earlier form, but the in- strument is not furnished with a position circle.

With one of these instruments of somewhat smaller dimensions Tries- (telescope 24 inches aperture and 34 fcet focus) Triesnecker made a necker’s series of measurements at the observatory of Vienna which has measure- been recently reduced by Dr Schur of Strasburg (Nova Acta der ments. Ksl. Leop.-Carol. Deutschen Akademie der Natursforseher, xv.

No. 3). The angle between the stars ¢ and g Urse maj. (708”°55) was ineasured on four nights; the probable error of a measure on one night was + 0”°44. Jupiter was measured on eleven nights in the months of June and July 1794 ; from these measures Schur derives the values 35’°39 and 37”-94 for the polar and equatorial diameter respectively, at mean dis’ ance, corresponding with a compression 1/14°44, These agree satisfactorily with the corresponding values

Dollond adds his opinion that the third type is ‘*much the best and most convenient of the three” ; yet it is the first type that has survived the test of time and experience, and which is in fact the modern heliometer

Fig. 29 illustrates Dollond’s divided object-glass heliometer of the third type. A is the end of the

Pig. 29) reflecting telescope, upon which the adapter B is fitted. B carries a wheel (not seen in the figure) formed of a ring racked at the outer edge, and fixed to the brass plate CC, so that a pinion moved by the handle D may turn it into any position. Two plates F, G, |

? ht angle between the components of the double star 61 Cygni and | | a. An equiconvex lens…..... arbitrary=p ibeas observed the great comet of 1811. He also observed the eclipse of | | ® 5 * the sun on May 4, 1818. In the discussion of these observations i kal ee 7, Abth. 5, p. ») he found that the index error of the scale changed systematically in different position angles | phe Jens b is divided. and CH of tipasienenisni by Dees ic wee ing peneen of the direction of gravity | micrometer screw. The magnifying power is mo a. ie isa as : iy Bee dee ae een, but which | the Jens @ for another in which p hasa different value. The magni- epended solely on the direction. of the measured position angle | fring power of the eye-piece is that of a single lens of focus=4p. relative to a fixed radius of the object-glass. Bessel attributed this | “1’ig50 Valz pointed out that the other optical conditions could ue eames aed ee hel Oe bg ie with great | be equally satisfied if the divided lens were made concave instead of care the necessary corrections. But he was so delighted with the | convex, with the advantage of giving a larger field of view (IJonthly general performance of the instrument, with the sharpness of the Noises Vol. x 160) sd images, and the possibilities which a kindred construction offered ‘ie IS din Eatin GReCRSeNeNEs

enttonedta His for the measurement of considerable angles with micrometric Report of the R. A. §. council, February 1865. It consists in the accuracy, that he resolved, when he should have the choice of | introduction by Simms of a fifth lens, but no satisfactory descrip- heliom telescope for the observatory, to secure some form of | tion has ever appeared. There is only one practical published 4 oe, difficul otal as want é investigation of Airy's micrometer that is worthy of mention, Nor te it duitcult to imagine the probable course of reasoning viz., that of Kaiser (Annalen der Sternwarte in Leiden, iii. pp. which led Bessel to select the model of his new heliometer. Why, 111-274). The reader is referred to that paper for an exhaus- he might ask, should he not select the simple form of Dollond's | tive history and discussion of the instrument.> It is somewhat first ty pr ; Given the achromatic object-glass, why should not it be surprising that, after Kaiser's investigations, observers should con- divided? This construction would give all the advantage of the | tinue, as many have done, to discuss their observations with this younger Dollond's object-glass micrometer and more than its sharp- | instrument as if the screw-value were constant for all angles. ness of definition, without liability to the systematic errors which Steinheil (Jowrnal Savant de Munich, 28th February 1843) describes Stein- may be due to want of homogeneity of the object-glass ; for the lenses | 4 «+ holiométre-oculaire" which he made for the great Pulkowa re- heil's will not be turned with respect to each other, but, in measurement, fractor, the result of consultations betwecn himself and the elder ocular will always have the same relation in position angle to the line | Struve. It is essentially the same in principle as Amici's micro- micro- joining the objects under observation. It is true that the scale will meter, except that the divided lens is an achromatic positive instead meter, require to be capable of being read with much greater accuracy than | o¢ g negative lens. Struve (Deseription de [' Observatoire Central de roooth ofan inch—for that, even in a telescope of 10 feet focus, would | pyzzora pp. 196, 197) adds a few remarks to Steinheil's descrip- correspond with 2" of are. But, after all, this is no practical diffi- tion, in Which he states that the images have not all desirable eulty,—for screws can be used to separate the lenses, and, by these precision,—a fault perhaps inevitable in all micrometers with screws, as in a Gascoigne micrometer, the separation of the lenses | givided lenses, aud which is probably in this case aggravated by can be measured ; or we can have scales for this purpose, read by | the fact that the rays falling upon

the divided lens have considcr- microscopes, like the Troughton? circles.of Piazzi or Pond, or those | apje convergence. He, however, successfully employed the instru- of the Carey circle, with almost any required accuracy. ; ment in measuring double stars, so close as 1” or 2”, and using a Fraun- Whether Bessel communicated such a course of reasoning, to power of 300 diameters, with results that agreed satisfactorily hofer, Fraunhofer, or whether that great artist arrived independently at amongst themselves and with those obtained with the filar micro-

35°21, 37”°60, 1/15°69 afterwards obtained by Bessel (Kénigsberger

Beobachtungen, xix. 102). From a series of measures of the angle

between Jupiter’s satellites and the planet, made in June and Jnly

1794 and in August and September 1795, Schur finds the mass

1

of Jupiter = , a result which accords perfectly with

1048 °55-1°45 the received value of the mass derived from modern researches. The probable errors for the measures of one night are +0”-577, +0”°889, +0542, -+17-096, for Satellites I., II., III., and IV. respectively. It is probable that Triesnecker deduced the index error from his measures of the diameter of Jupiter, as, in 1794, the measures of diameter are made on the same nights with those of the measures of distance of the satellitcs, and it is possible that i of diameter may have been made in 1795 but not pub- ished.

Considering the accuracy of these measures (an accuracy far sur- passing that of any contemporary observations), it is somewhat sur- prising that this form of micrometer was never systematically used in any sustained or important astronomical researches, although a number of instruments of the kind were made by Dollond. Probably the last example of its employment is an observation of the transit of Mercury (November 4, 1868) by Mr Mann,

at thé Royal Observatory, Cape of Good Hope (Monthly Notices R. A. S., vol. xxix. p. 197-209). The most important part, however, which this type of instrument seems to have playcd in the history of astronomy ariscs from the fact that one of them was in the posses- sion of Bessel at Konigsberg during the time when his new obser- vatory there was being built. In 1812 Bessel measured with it the

like conclusions, we have been unable to ascertain with certainty. The fact remains that before 18202 Fraunhofer had completed one or more of the five heliomieters (3 inches aperture and 39 inches focus) which have since become historical instruments. In 1824 the great Kénigsberg heliometer was commenced, and it was com- pleted in 1829.

To sum up briefly the history of the heliometer. The first appli- cation of the divided object-glass and the employment of double images in astronomical measures is due to Savary in 1743. To Bouguer. in 1748 is due the true conception of measurement by double image without the auxiliary aid of a filar micrometer, viz., by changing the distance between two object-glasses of equal focus. To Dollond in 1754 we owe the combination of Savary's idea of the divided object-glass with Bouguer's method of measurement, and the construction of the first really practical heliometers. To Fraunhofer, some time not long previous to 1820, is due, so far as we can ascertain, the construction of the first hcliometer with an

1 The circles by Reichenbach, then almost exclusively used in Germany, were read by verniers only.

2 The diameter of Venus was measured with one of these heliometers at the observatory of Breslau by Brandes in 1820 (Berlin Jahrbuch, 1824, p. 164)

achromatic divided object-glass, 7.¢., the first heliometer of the modern type.

Double-Image Mierometers with Divided Lenses.

Various micrometers have been invented besides the heliometer for measuring by double image. Ramsden's dioptric micrometer consists of a divided lens placed in the conjugate focus of the inner- most lens of the erecting eye-tube of a terrestrial telescope. The inventor claimed that it would supersede the heliometer, but it has never done anything forastronomy. Dollond claims the independ- ent invention and first construction of asimilar instrument (Pearson's Praetieal Astronomy, vol. ii. p. 182). Of these and kindred instru- ments only two types have proved of practical value. Amici of Modena (Afem. Soe. Jtal., xvii. (1815) pp. 344-359) describes a micrometer in which a negative lens is introduced between the eye-piece and the object-glass. This lens is divided and mounted like a heliometer object-glass; the separation of the lenses produces the required double image, and is measured bya screw. Dawes has very successfully used this micrometer in conjunction with a filar micrometer, and finds that the precision of the measures is in this way greatly increased (Monthly Notices, vol. xviii. p. 58, and Mem. Rk. A. S., vol. xxxv. p. 147).

In the improved form 4 of Airy's divided eye-glass micrometer (Alem. K. A. S., vol. xv. pp. 199-209), the rays from the object- glass pass successively through lenses as follows.

Distance from F

Lens. next Lens.

ocal Length.

meter.

3 For description of the earliest form see Cambridge Phil. Trang., vol, ii., and Greenwich Observations, 1840.

4 We understand that a very thorough investigation of Airy's double-image micrometer used by Dr Copeland at Mauritius on Lord Lindsay's expedition has been made by him, and will soon be published. :

5 Dawes (Monthly Notices, January 1858, and Mem. R. A. S., vol. xxxv. p. 150) has suggested and used a valuable improvement for producing round

images, instead of the elongated images which are otherwise inevitable when the rays pass through a divided lens of which the optical centres are not in coincidence, yiz., ‘‘ the introduction of a diaphragm having two circular apertures touching each other in a polnt coinciding with the line of collimation of the telescope, and the diameter of each aperture exactly equal to the semidiameter of the cone of rays at the distance of the diaphragm from the focal point of the object-glass.”’ Practically the difficulty of making these diaphragms for the diffcrent powcrs of the exact required equality is insuperable; but, if the observer is content to lose a certain amount of light, we see no reason why they may not readily be mado slightly less. Dawes found the best method for the purpose in question was to limit the aperture of the objcct-glass by a diaphragm having a double circular aperture, placing the line joining the centres of the circles approximately in the position angle under measurement. Dawes successfully employed the double circular aperture also with Amici’s micrometer. The present writcr has success- fully used a similar plan in measuring position angles of a Centauri with the helio- meter, viz., by placing eireular diaphragms on the two segments of tlie object- glass.

If Struve had employed a properly proportioned double

Rochon’s miero- meter.

circular diaphragm, fixed symmetrically with the axis of the telescope in front of the divided lens and turning with the micrometer, it is probable that his report on the instrument would have been still more favourable. ‘This particular instrument has historical interest, having led Struve to some of those criticisms of the Pulkowa heliometer which ultimately bore such valuable fruit (see below).

Raven (Phil. Trans., vol. xix. p. 419) has suggested the division of the small speculum of a Cassegrain telescope and the production of double image by micrometrie rotation of the semi- specula in the plane passing through their axis. Brewster (Zney. Brit., 8th ed., vol. xiv. p. 749) proposes a plan on a like principle, by dividing the plane mirror of a Newtonian telescope. Again, in an ocular heliometer by Steinheil double image is similarly

produced by a divided prism of total reflexion placed in parallel rays. But practically these last three methods are failures. In the last the field is full of false light, and it is not possible to give sufficiently minute and steady separation to the images ; and there are of necessity a collimator, two prisms of total reflexion, and a small telescope through which the rays must pass; consequently there is great loss of light.

Micrometers Depending on Double Refraction.

To the Abbé Rochon (Jour. de Phys., liii., 1801, pp. 169-198) is due the happy idea of applying the two images formed by double refraction to the construction of a micrometer. He fell upon a most ingenious plan of doubling the amount of double refraction of a prism by using two prisms of rock-crystal, so cut out of the solid as to give each the same quantity of double refraction, and yet to double the quautity in the effect produced. The combination so formed is known as Rochon's prism. Such a prism he placed between the object-glass and eye-piece of a telescope. The separation of the images increases as the prism is approached to the object- glass, and diminishes as it is approached towards the eye-piece.

Arago (Comptes Rendus, xxiv., 1847, pp. 400-402) found that in Roehon's micrometer, when the prism was approached close to the eye-piece for the measurement of very small angles, the smallest imperfections in the crystal or its surfaces were incon- veniently magnified. He therefore selected for any particular measurement such a Rochon prism as when fixed between the eye and the eye-piece (7.¢., where a sunshade is usually placed) would, combined with the normal eye-piece employed, bring the images about to be measured nearly in contact. He then altered the magnifying power by sliding the field lens of the eye-piece (which was fitted with a slipping tube for the purpose) along the eye-tube, till the images were brought into contact. By a scale attached to the sliding tube the magnifying power of the eye-piece was deduced, and this eombined with the angle of the prism employed gave the angle measured. If p" is the refracting angle of the prism, and n the magnifying power of the eye-piecc, then p"/n will be the distance observed. Arago made many measures of the diameters of the planets with such a micrometer.

Dollond (Phil. Trans., 1821, pp. 101-103) describes a double- image micrometer of his own invention iu which a sphere of rock- erystal is substituted for the eye-lens of an ordinary eye-piece. In this instrument (figs. 31, 32) a is the sphere, placed in half-holes on

Fig. 31.

Fig. 32, * the axis bb, so that when its principal axis is parallel to the axis of

the telescope it gives only one image of the object. Ina direction perpendicular to that axis it must be so placed that when it is moved by rotation of the axis bd the separation of the images shall be parallel to that motion. The angle of rotation is measured on the graduated circle C. The angle between the objects measured is=r sin 20, where r is a constant to be determined for each mag- nifying power employed,! and @ the angle through which the sphere has been turned from zero (7.e., from coincidenee of its prin- cipal axis with that of the telescope). The maximum separation is consequently at 45° from zero. The measures can be made on both sides of zero for eliminating index error. There are eonsider- able difficulties of eonstruction, but these have been successfully

1 Dollond provides for ehanging the power by sliding the lens d nearer to or farther from a. ;

.divided

overcome by Dollond; and in the hands of Dawes (Jfem. R. A. 8., xxxv. p. 144 sg.) such instruments have done valuable serviee. They are liable to the objection that their employment is limited to the measurement of very small angles, viz., 13” or 14” when the magnifying power is 100, and varying inversely as the power. Yet the beautiful images which these micrometers give permit the ineasurement of very diffieult objects as a check on measures with the parallel-wire micrometer.

The Modern Heliometer. The Kénigsberg heliometer is represented in fig. 33.

every respect the usual Fraunhofer mounting. fixed on a telescope- tube, made of wood, in Fraunhofer’s usual fashion. To _ this adapter is attached a ™ 4; flat circular flange h. The slides earrying the segments of the object-glass mounted on a

Fig. 38. plate, which is fitted and ground to rotate smoothly on the flange

are

h. Rotation is communicated by a pinion, turned by the handle c (concealed in the figure), which works in teeth cut on the edge of the flange 2. The eounterpoise w balances the head about its axis of rotation. ‘The slides are moved by the screws a and 8, the divided heads of which serve to measure the separation of the segments. These screws are turned from the eye-end by bevelled wheels and pinions, the latter connected with the handles a’, ’. The reading micrometers e, f also serve to measure, independently, the separation of the segments, by scales attached to the slides; such measurements can be employed as a check on those made by the screws. The measurement of position angles is provided for by a graduated circle attached to the head. There is also a position circle, attached at mz to the eye-end, provided with a slide to move the eye-piece radially from the axis of the telescope, and with a micrometer to measure the distance of an object from that axis. The ring which carries the supports of the handles @’, U, ¢ is capable of a certain amount of rotation on the tube. The weight of the handles and their supports is balanced by the counterpoise 2. This ring is necessary in order to allow the rods to follow the micrometer leads when the position angle is changed. Complete rotation of the head is obviously impossible because of the inter- ference of the declination axis with the rods, and therefore, in some angles, objects cannot be measured in two positions of the circle. He object-glass has an aperture of 64 inches, and 102 inches focal ength. :

There are three methods in which this heliometer can be used.

First Method.—One of the segments is fixed in the axis of the telescope, and the eye-piece is also placed in the axis. Measures are made with the moving segment displaced alternately on opposite | sides of the fixed segment.

Second Method.—One segment is fixed, and the measures are made as in the first method, excepting that the eye-piece is placed symmetrically with respect to the images under measurement. For this purpose the position angle of the eye-piece micrometer is set to that of the head, and the eye-piece is displaced from the axis of the tube (in the direction of the movable segment) by an amount equal to half the angle under measurement.

Third Method.—The eye-piece is fixed in the axis, and the segments are symmetrically displaced from the axis each by an amount equal to half the angle measured.

Of these methods Bessel generally employed the first because of its simplicity, notwithstanding that it involved a resetting of the right ascension and declination of the axis of the tube with each reversal of the segments. The chief objections to the method are that, as one star is in the axis of the telescope and the other dis- placed from it, the images are not both in focus of the eye-piece,? and the rays from the two stars do not make the same angle with the optical axis of each segment. Thus the two images under

measurement are not defined with equal sharpness and symmetry.

The second method is free from the objection of non-coincidence in focus of the’ images, but is more troublesome in practice from the necessity for frequent readjustment of the position of the eye-piece. The third method is the most symmetrical of all, both in obser- vation and reduction; but it was not employed by Bessel, on the ground that it involved the determination of the errors of two screws instead of one. On the other hand it is not necessary to reset the telescope after each reversal of the segments.*

2 The distances of the optical eentres of the segments from the eye-pieee are in this method as 1: secant of the angle under measurement. In Bessel’s heliometer this would amount to a difference of ,4§,th of an inch when an angle of 1° is measured. For two degrees the difference would amount to

nearly j,th of an inch. Bessel confined his measures to distances considerably less than 1°.

3 In criticizing Bessel's choice of methods, and considering the loss of time involved in each, it must be remembered that Fraunhofer provided no means of

No part of Kénigs- the equatorial mounting is shown in the figure, as it resembles in berg An adapter / is helio-

Bonn helio- meter.

MICRO

When Bessel ordered the Kénigsberg heliometer, he was anxious

to have the segments made to move in cylindrical slides, of which .

the radius should be equal to the focal length of the objecet-glass. Fraunhofer, however, did not execute this wish, on the ground that the mechanical difficulties were too great.

Wichmann states (Kénigsb. Beobach., xxx. p. 4) that Bessel had indicated, by notes in his handbooks, the following points which should be kept in mind in the eonstruction of future heliometers:— (1) The segments should move in cylindrieal slides ;! (2) the serew should be protected from dust ;? (3) the zero of the position circle should not be so liable to change ; (4) the distance of the optical centres of the segments should not change in different position angles or otherwise;* (5) the points of the mierometer serews should rest on ivory plates ;° (6) there should be an apparatus for changing the sereen.® ;

The elder Struve, in deseribing the Pulkowa heliometer," made by Merz in 1839 on the model of Bessel's heliometer, submits the following suggestions for its improvement : §—(1) to give automatic- ally to the two segments simultaneous equal and opposite move- ment ;° and (2) tomake

the tube of brass instead of wood; to attach the heliometer head firmly to this tube; to place the eye-piece perma- nently in the axis of the teleseope; and to fix a strong eradle on the end of the deelination axis, in which the tube, with the attached head and eye-pieee, could rotate on its axis.

Both suggestions are important. The first is originally the idea of Dollond (fig. 29); its advantages were overlooked by his son (deseription of fig. 30), and it seems to have been quite forgotten till resuggested by Struve. But the method is not available if the separation is to be measured by screws; it is found, in that ease, that the direetion of the final motion of turning of the screw must always be sueh as to produee motion of the segment against gravity, otherwise the ‘‘loss of time” is apt to be variable. Thus the simple connexion of the two serews by cog-wheels to give them automatie opposite motion is not an available method unless the separation of the segments is independently measured by scales.

Struve’s seeond suggestion has been adopted in nearly all suceced- ing heliometers. It permits complete rotation of the tube and measurement of all angles in reversed positions of the eirele ; the handles that move the slides can be brought down to the eye-end, inside the tube, and consequently made to rotate with it; and the

‘ position eirele may be plaeed at the end of the cradle next the eye-

end where it is convenient of aeecss. Struve also points out that by attaehing a fine seale to the foeussing slide of the eye-piece, and knowing the evefficient of expansion of the brass tube, the means would be provided for determining the absolute change of the foeal length of the object-glass at any time by the simple proeess of focussing on a double star. This, with a knowledge of the tempera- ture of the serew or seale and its coefficient of expansion, would enable the change of serew value to be determined at any instant. Or, if we suppose the temperature of the instrament to be the same in all its parts, the changed seale value becomes simply a function of the reading of the foeal scale.

It is probable that the Bonn heliometer was in course of con- struction before these suggestions of Struve were published or dis- cussed, sinee its construction resembles that of the Kénigsberg and Pulkowa instruments. Its

dimensions are similar to those of the former instrument. Bessel, having been consulted by the cele- brated statesman Sir Robert Pecl, on behalf of the Radcliffe trus- tees, as to what instrument, added to the Radcliffe Observatory,

reading the screws or even the heads from the eye-end. Bessel's practice was to unclamp in declination, lower and read off the head, and then restore the telc- scope to its former declination reading, the clockwork meanwhile following the stars in right ascension. The setting of both lenses symmetrically would, under such circumstances, be very tedious. :

1 This most important improvement wonld permit any two stars under measure- ment each to be viewed in the optical axis of each segment. The optical centres of the segments would also remain at the same distance from the eye. piece at-all angles of separation. Thus, in measuring the largest as well as the smallest angles, the images of both stars would be equally symmetrical and equally well in focus. Modern heliometers made with cylindrical slides measure angles over two degrees, the images remaining as sharp and perfect as when the smallest angles are measured. :

2 Bessel found, in course of time, that the original corrections for the errors of his screw were no longer applicable. He considered that the changes were due to wear, which would be much lessened if the screws were protected from dust.

3 The tube, being of wood, was probably liable to warp and twist in a very uncertain way. .

4 We have been unable to find any published drawing showing how the seg- ments are fitted in their cells.

5 We have been unable to ascertain the reasons which led Bessel to choose tvory planes for the end-bearings of his screws. He actually introduced them in the Kénigsberg heliometer in 1840, and they were renewed in 1848 and 1850.

6 A screen of wire gauze, placed in front of the segment through which the fainter star is viewed, was employed by Bessel to equalize the brilliancy of

the images under observation, An arrangement, afterwards described, has becn fitted in modern heliometers for placing the screen in front of either segment by a handle at the eye-end.

7 This heliometer resembles Bessel's, except that its foot is a solid block of granite instead of the ill-conceived wooden structure that supported his instru- ment, The object-glass is of 7-4 inches aperture and 123 inches focus.

8 Description de l' Observatoire central de Pulkowa, p. 208.

® Steinheil applied such motion to a double-image micrometer made for Struve This instrument suggested to Struve the above-mentioned idea of employing a similar motion for the heliometer.

would probably most promote the advancement of astronomy.

strongly advised the selection of a heliometer. The order for the instrument was given to the Repsolds in 1840, but. ‘‘ various circum- stances, for which the makers are not responsible, eontributed to delay the completion of the instrument, which was not delivered before the winter of 1848.”1° The building to receive it was com- meneed in March 1849 and completed in the end of the same year. This splendid instrument has a superb objeet-glass of 74 inches apertnre and 126 inches foeal length. The makers availed them- selves of Bessel's suggestion to make the segments move in cylin- drieal slides, and of Struve's to have the head attached to a brass tube ; the eye-piece is set permanently in the axis, and the whole rotates in a eradle attached to the declination axis. They provided a splendid, rigidly mounted, equatorial stand, fitted with every luxury in the way of slow motion, and seales for measuring the displacement of the ségments were read by powerful micrometers from the eye-end.” It is somewhat eurious that, though Struve's seeond suggestion was adopted, his first was overlooked by the makers. But it is still more eurious that it was not afterwards earried out, for the communieation of automatic symmetrical motion to both segments only involves a simple alteration previously de- seribed. But, as it eame from the hands of the makers in 1849, the Oxford heliometer was

incomparably the most powerful and perfect instrument in the world for the highest order of mierometric research. It so remained, unrivalled in every respect, till 1873; it remains still, optieally, the most powerful heliometer in the world; and, with a few alterations, it might almost rival the most recent instruments in practical convenience and aceuracy. These altera- tions, all of which could be made without great difficulty, are the following :—

(a) Beyond the automatic symmetrical motion above-described, the instrument should be fitted with means for adjusting the screens from the eye-end (see footnote ® in last column).

(6) The arrangement of the scales should be changed. At present both seales are read separately by separate micrometers, each relative to a separate fiducial line. What the observer requires is the difference of the readings of the two seales, and this ean obvi- ously be most quiekly and accurately obtained if the edges of the two seales are brought together, and both are read, relatively to each other, by the same micrometer.

(c) The unsatisfactory motion in position angle should be replaced by the aetion of a pinion-(attached to the cradle) in the tecth of a wheel (attached to the tubc).!” ;

(d) The position cirele should be read by telescopes or microscopes attached to the cradle, and accessible from the eye-end.

(e) It would add greatly to the rapidity of work and the ease of the observer if a small declination cirele were attached to the eross- head, eapable of being read from the eye-end.

As the transit of Venus of 1874 approached, preparations were set on foot by the German Government in good time ; a commission of the most eelebrated astronomers was appointed, and it was re- solved that the heliometer should be the instrument chiefly relied on. The four long-negleeted small heliometers made by Fraunhofer were brought into requisition. Fundamental alterations were made upon them:—their wooden tubes were replaced by tnbes of inetal; means of measuring the foeal point were provided ; symmetrical motion was given to the slides ; seales on each slide were provided instead of serews for measuring the separation of the

segments, and both scales were read by the same micrometer mieroscope ; a metallie thermometer was added to determine the temperature of the seales. These small instruments have since done admirable work in the hands of Sehur, Hartwig, Kustner, and Elkiu.

The Russian Government ordered three new heliometers (each of Russian 4inehes aperture and 5 fect focal length) from the Repsolds, and the helio- design for their construction was superintended by Struve, Auwers, meters.

Fig. 34. and Winncecke, the last-named making the necessary experiments at

Carlsruhe. Fig. 34 represents the type of instrument which re-

10 Manuel Johnson, M.A., Radcliffe observer, Astronomical Observations made at the Radcliffe Observatory, Oxford, in the year 1850, Introduction, p. iii.

11 The illumination of these scales is interesting as being the first application of electricity to the illumination of astronomical instruments Thin platinum wire was rendered incandescent by a voltaic current; a small Swan light and condenser

ould probably now be found more satisfactory. . m2 This has pt recently carried out by Stone, the present Radcliffe observer, on Gill’s suggestion.

sulted from their labours. The brass tube, strengthened at the bearing points by strong truly-turned collars, rotates in the cast- iron cradle g attached to the declination axis. a@ is the eye-plece

quired by Gill in 1879, he changed the manner of imparting the motion in question. A square toothed racked wheel was applied to the tube at r (fig.

34). This wheel is acted on by a tangent screw whose bearings are attaehed to the cradle ; the screw is turned by

: : oer ding both scales. fixed in that axis, 6 the micrometer for reading bo c means ofp handle. snppewiad igs Seema

attached to the cradle, and coming within eonvenient reach of the observer's hand. The tube turns smoothly in the racked wheel, or can be clamped to it at the will of the observer. This alteration and the new cqua- torial mounting have been admirably made by Grubb; the result is completely success- ful. The instrument so altered has been in eonstant use at the Cape Observatory since March 1881 in determining the paral- lax of the more interesting southern stars.

Still more reeently the Repsolds have com- Yale pleted a new heliometer for Yale College, College New Haven, United States. The object-glass helio- is of 6 inches aperture and 98 inches focal meter,

Lord A similar heliometer was made by the Lind- Repsolds to the order of Lord Lindsay say's for his Mauritius expedition in 1874. It helio- differed only from the three Russian in- meter. struments in having a mounting by the

Fig. 35.

c, d are telescopes for reading the position circle p, e the handle for quick motion in position angle, f the slow niotion in position angle, g the handle for changing the separation of the segments by acting on the bevel-wheel 9/ (fig. 35). % is a milled head con- nected by a rod with #' (fig. 35), for the purpose of interposing at pleasure the prism 7 in the axis of the reading micro- ineter; this enables the observer to view the graduations on the face of the metallic thermometer 77 (composed of arod of brass and a rod of zinc). 7 is a milled head eonnected with the wheel 7'2' (fig. 35), and affords the means of placing the screen s (fig. 34), counterpoised by w over either half of the object-glass. & clamps the telescope in declination, » clamps it in right ascension, and the handles m and Z provide slow motion in declination and right ascension respectively.

The details of the interior mechanism of the ‘‘head”’ will be almost evident from fig. 35 without description. The screw, turned by the wheels at g’, acts in a toothed arc, whence, as shown in the figure, equal and opposite motion is eom- municate to the slides by the jointed rods v, v. The slides are kept firmly down to their bearings by the rollers r, 7, 7, r, attached to axes which are, in the middle, very strong springs. Side- shake is prevented by the screws and pieces k, k, k,k. The scales are at n,n; they are fastened only at the middle, and are kept down by-the brass pieces ¢, ¢.

Cookes in which the declination circle reads from the eye-end.!_ This instru- ment was afterwards most generously lent by Lord Lindsay to Gill for his ex- pedition to Ascension in 1877.2

These four Repsold heliometers proved to be excellent instruments, easy and convenient in use, and yielding results of very high accuracy in measuring dis- tances. Their slow motion in position angle, however, was not all that could be- desired. When small movements were communi- cated to the handle e¢ (fig. 34) by the tangent serew J, acting on a small toothed wheel clamped to the rod eonnected with the driv- ing pinion, there was apt to be a torsion of the rod rather than an immediate action. Thus the slow motion would take place by jerks instead of with the necessary smoothness and eertainty. When the heliometer part of Lord Lindsay’s heliometer was ae- ee eee

1 For a detailed description of this instrament see Dunecht Publications, vol, ti.

2 Mem. Royal Astronomical Society, vol. xlvi. pp. 1-172

length. The mounting, the tube, objective- cell, slides, &c., are all of steel. The in- strument is shown in fig. 36. The circles for position angle and declination are read by micrometer microscopes illuminated by the lamp L; the scales are illuminated by the lamp 7. T is part of the tube proper, and turns with the head. The tube V, on the contrary, is attached to the cradle, and merely forms a support for the finder Q, the handles at fand p, and the moving ring P. The latter gives quick motion in position angle; the handles at p clamp and give slow motion in position angle, those at f elamp

Fig. 36,

and give slow motion in right ascension and deelination. a is the eye-piece, b the handle for moving the segments, ¢ the micro- meter microscope for reading the scales and scale micrometer, d@ the micrometer readers of the position and declination circles, ¢ the handle for rotating the large wheel E which earries the screens. The hour circle is also read by microscopes, and the instrument ean be used in both positions (tube preceding and

3 The primary object was to have the object-glass mounted in steel cells, which more nearly correspond in expansion with glass. It became then desirable to make the head of stecl for sake of uniformity of material, and the advantages of steel in lightness and rigidity for the tube then became evident,

Revers- ing prism.

‘construction the lenses are much closer together and

fellowing) for the climination of the effect of flexure on the position angles.

There is very little left to criticize in this instrument. It embraces the results of all knowledge and experience on the subject to the present time. In one point, however, modern heliometers have a disadvantage compared with the- older forms. A great advance in accuracy was, no doubt, made when the screw was abandoned as a means both of moving and measuring the displace- ment of the slides.1_ But it is obviously much quicker to read and record the indication of one screw-head than to’bisect two or four scale-divisions and enter the corresponding readings. Auwers, in his researches on the parallax of 61 Cygni,? was able, with the K6nigsberg heliometer, to make forty pointings in about an hour; it is quick work to make sixteen pointings (reading two divisions on each scale at each pointing) with the modern heliometer in the same time, when attention is paid to the desirable reversals of the segments and of the position circle and the resettings in right ascension and declination. Now time during opportunities of good definition (or otherwise)? is too precious to be sacrificed, if it can be saved even by ten-fold labour afterwards. Carrington‘ has suggested the possible use of photography to record the readings of astro- nomical circles, and since his day ‘‘Swan lights” and ‘sensitive dry plates’’ seems to have brought his suggestion within the range of practice. A special microscope, fitted with an aplanatic photo- graphic objective and a well-contrived carrier, might be made automatically to expose a different part of a narrow dry plate, by mere pressure or turning of a button after each bisection. Each plate might easily record the sixteen bisections which constitute a complete measure of two pairs of stars (as in a parallax determina- tion). As it is only necessary to photograph two divisions of each scale, the photographic enlargement of these divisions need only be limited by the sensitiveness of the plates and the power of the illumination to produce a picture in a conveniently short space of time. The plates employed at night could be conveniently developed the following day and measured with a special apparatus at any convenient time and with almost any desired accuracy.

Were such a system reduced to practice it would at least double, perhaps treble, an observer's possible output of work.

Gill has introduced a powerful auxiliary to the accuracy of helio- meter measures in the shape of a reversing prism placed in front of the eye-piece, between the latter and the observer's eye. If measures are made by placing the image of a star in the centre of the disk of a planet, the observer may have a tendency to do so systematically in error from some acquired habit or from natural astigmatism of the eye. But by rotating the prism 90° the image is presented entirely reversed to the eye, so that in the mean of measures made in two such positions personal error is eliminated. Similarly the prism may be used for the study and elimination of personal errors depending on the angle made by a double star with the vertical. The best plan of mounting such a prism has been found to be the following. J', 2 (fig. 37) are the eye lens and field lens respectively of a Merz positive eye-picce. In this

— ——

the diaphragm for the eye is much farther from the lenses than in Ramsden's eye-piece. 'The prism p is fitted accurately into brass slides (care

l Fig. 37. as to be taken in the construction to place the prism so that an object in the centre of the field will so remain when the eye-piece is rotated in

its adapter). There isa collar, clamped by the screw at S, which is so adjusted that the eye-piece is in focus when pushed home, in its adapter, to this collar. The prism and eye-piece are then rotated together in the adapter.

On the theory of the heliometer and its use consult Bessei, Astronomtsche Untersuchungen, vol. i.; Hansen, Ausfiihrliche Methode mit dem Fraunhoferschen Heliometer anzustellen, Gotha, 1827; Chauvenct, Spherical and Practical Astro- nomy, vol. ii. pp. 403-436, Philadelphia and London, 1876; Seeliger, Theorie des Heliometers, Leipsic, 1877; Lindsay and Gill, Dunecht Publications, vol. ii., Dunecht (for private circulation),

1877; Gill, Memoirs of the Royal Astronomical Society, vol. xlvi. pp. 1-172.

Micrometers which Involve the Employment of the Diurnal Motion.

Advantage is often taken of the diurnal motion to measure the relative positions of stars. The varicties of reticules and scales that have been employed are far too numerous even for mention in detail. The following are the means and methods by which most work has been done, and they are typical of all the others, In the focus of his meridian telescope Lacaille had a brass diaphragm in

1 Screws, as Auwers's discussion of Besscl's observations (" Parallaxe von 61 Cygni," Abhandlungen der Kénigl. Akad. der Wissenschaften zu Berlin, 1868) has shown, are apt to wear and change their errors. It is, besides, undesirable to apply force and friction to a delicate standard of mcasure.

2 Astron. Nachrichten, No. 1416.

3 For example, in determining the diurnal parallax of a planct the most favourable conditions are limited on the one hand by the uncertainties of refrac- tion at large zenith distances, and on the other by the small parallax factors of small zenith distances. It would probably be best to secure all the observations between 50° and 60° ZD, and this would only be possible with special facilities for 'reading the scales.

4 Monthly Notices R. A, S., vol. xxx. p. 46.

which was cut a hole, having parallel, sharp, straight edges of the La- shape shown in fig. 38. The longer diagonal of the rhomboid caille's so formed was at right angles, and the shorter parallel, to the yhom- diurnal motion. The method of observation consisted in noting boid the instant of ingress and egress of each star which presented itself. : The mean of the times thus

noted for each star gave the time of its transit over the imaginary line a4, whilst the difference between

the instant of ingress and that of a

egress (converted into are by the known approximate declination) gave the length of the chord traversed by the star parallel to the imaginary line cd. Hence (the dimensions of the rhomboid being known) the differ- e— ence of the star's declination from the line cd became known (the ob- server was of course careful to note whether the star passed to north or south of cd). Thus every star that crossed the field was observed, all their right ascensions were referred ; to the clock-time of passing ab, and Pig. 38.

all their declinations to that of cd; hence their mutual differ-

ences of right ascension and declination were known. In this

way, in the short space of ten months, Lacaille observed nearly ten thousand stars at the Cape of Good Hope in the years 1751-52.5 Fraunhofer's ring micrometer consists of a ring of steel, very truly Ring mi- turned, mounted in a hole cut in a circular disk of glass. he ring is crometer placed in the focus of a telescope, and viewed by a positive eye-piece.

The observer notes the instants when the two objects enter and

emerge from each side of thering. The only data required for com-

puting the difference of right ascension and declination of the two

objects are the times above mentioned, the diameter of the ring,

and the approximate declination of one of the objects. The latter

is always known. The methods of determining the former and of reducing the observations are to be found in every work on practical astronomy. The ring micrometer has been largely used in observ-

ing comets,

Argelander, in making his famous survey of the northern heavens,® Arge-
employed a semicircle of glass, the straight edge of which (truly lander's
ground) crosses the centre of the field of view at right angles to the scale.
diurnal motion of the stars. Differences of right ascension were directly
observed at this edge, whilst differences of declination were noted by strong
dark lines drawn at right angles to the edge at each 10' ofare. A telescope of
3 inches aperture with a magnifying power of 10 diameters commanded a
field of 3° 20' in declination. One observer was placed at the telescope,
another at the clock. The

G

'telescope observer marked the instant when the star touched the

glass edge, by calling sharply the word ''eight" or "'nine,"' &c., which also
indicated the magnitude; the same observer also noted and recorded the
reading of the declination scale (whcre the star crossed it), without
removing his eye from the telescope. The clock observer wrote down the
magnitude called out by the tclescope observer, and the instant by the clock
when the word was given. The two records were then compared after the
observations of the night were over. In this way Schonfeld and Krueger
(Argelander's assistants) observed and catalogued about three hundred
thousand stars. The probable error of an observation is about +0°7 sec. in
right ascension and +0'*4 in declination. ie

Bond? employed a very similar arrangement, differing only from Bond's
Argelander's in having the scale cut on a sheet of transparent mica mica
tvsoth of an inch in thickness. Very oblique illumination was declino-
employed, and the divisions and figures were seen bright upon a meter. dak
background. The range of declination was limited to 10', the scale was
divided to 10", the right ascensions were observed by chronographic
registration, and the great refractor of the Cambridge U. S. Observatory
(with an aperture of 15 inches and power of 140) wasemployed. The
probable errors in right ascension and declina- tion were found to be +0°06
sec. in right ascension and +0"°6 in declination—results of marvellous
accuracy considering the amount of work accomplished in a short time aud
the faintness (eleven to twelve magnitudes) of the stars observed.

We were on the point of criticizing Bond’s programme as some- Peters’s what too ambitious for realization without cooperation (it would zones, take about twenty-six thousand hours of observing to carry out the scheme for the northern hemisphere alone) when we received from Peters of Clinton, U. S., the first twenty maps of a series which will include the whole of the sky between declination + 30° and—30° If we consider that all the stars in these maps of the eleventh magni- tude or brighter have been observed by a method similar to Bond’s, that the enormous additional labour of frequent revision has been undertaken, and all stars visible with a power of 80 in a telescope of 13 inches aperture (about fourteenth magnitude) have been filled in

5 Lacaille, Celum Australe Stelliferum, Paris, 1763, and A Catalogue of 9766 Stars, from the Observations of Lacaille, London, 1847. ;

6 Atlas des Nérdlichen Gestirnten Himmels, Bonn, 1863, Introduction. _

7 Annals of the Astronomical Observatory, Harvard College, vol. i. part ii.

Berlin deelino- graph.

Parallel glass micro- lneter,

Ghost niicro- meter.

by alignment, and that all this results from the unaided labour of a single observer, we find that our ideas of the possible have to be modi- fied, when such a man undertakes a work with persistent unity of purpose for more than twenty years (1860-83).

There is an ingenious mode of registering differences of declination that has heen in use at the Berlin Observatory sinee 1879, and is deseribed by Dr Knarre in the Zeitschrift fir Instrumentenkwnde for July 1881. The instrument is ealled a deelinograph. It has a web moved in deelination by a quick-aeting serew ; the same sae earries a travelling prieker or point. The observer having biseete a star by the wire has simply to eompress an india-

rubber ball eon- neeted by a flexible tube with a thin metal box made on the prin- ciple of the vacuum ehamber of an aneroid barometer. The ex- pansion of this box so produced. brings a sheet of paper in eontaet with two priekers, one the movable prieker before mentioned, the other a fixed prieker. The aetion of the vacuum box also automatically shifts the paper (a long roll) by a small quantity at each observation, so that sueeessive observations are reeorded in regular order. To obtain the observed differences of deelination it is then only necessary to measure with a glass seale (divided for the speeial teleseope to 10”) the distance of each reeord of the moving prieker from the fixed prieker. It is found, with this declinograph on the Berlin equatorial, that the observed deelina- tions have only a probable error of +0°°9. It is obvious that by using a chronograph in eonjunction with this instrument both right aseensions and deelinations could be recorded with great aecuraey and rapidity.

Miscellaneous Micrometers.

Clausen in 1841 (Ast. Nach., No. 414) proposed a form of micro- meter eonsisting of a divided plate of parallel glass placed within the eone of rays from the objeet-glass at right angles to the teleseope axis. One half of this plane remains fixed, the other half is movable. When the inelination of the movable half with respect to the axis of the telescope is ehanged by rotation about an axis at right angles to the plane of division, two images are pro- duced. ‘The amount of separation is very small, and depends on the thickness of the glass, the index of refraetion, and the focal length of the telescope. Sceehi (Comptes Rendus, xli., 1855, p.

906) gives an account of some experiments with a similar miero-

méter ; and Porro (Comptes Rendus, xli. p. 1058) elaims the original invention and eonstruetion of such a micrometer in 1842. Clausen, however, has undoubted priority. Helmholtz in his ‘‘ Ophthalmo- meter” has employed Clausen’s principle, but arranges the plates so that both move symmetrieally in opposite direetions with respeet to the teleseope axis. Should Clausen’s micrometer be employed as an astronomical instrument it would be well to adopt the im- provement of Helmholtz.

Burton and Grubb (Monthly Notices, vol. xli. p. 59), after calling attention to Lamont's paper (Jahrbuch der K. S. 6. Miinehen, p. 187) and Littrow's paper (Proc. of Vienna Acad. of Sciences, vol. xx. p- 253) on a like subject, proeeed to deseribe a most ingenious form of ‘‘ Ghost Micrometer,” in whieh the image of a fine line or lines ruled in (or rather cut through) a silver film deposited on glass is formed at the eommon foeus of an objeet-glass and eye-pieee of a teleseope.

For the use of micrometers in connexion with the mieroscope see p. 277 of the present volume. (Dy GI.) :

MICRONESIA. The term “Micronesia” embraces that region of the Pacific north of the great Melanesian islands, where, either perhaps from a greater or more rapid subsidence, or from the decreasing activity northwards of the coral builders, the islands become, generally speaking, smaller and fewer, and finally cease. Accordingly, except- ing the Marianas or Ladrones, which are of volcanic origin, and a few isolated instances of elevation in the Carolines, the Micronesian islands, though many of the groups cover a vast area, are almost without exception very small low coral (atoll) formations. Besides the LADRONE and CaRroLinE IsLanps (q.v.) Micronesia includes the Marshall and Gilbert groups, and some geographers include the Anson group, a number of small widely-

scattered islets to the west of Hawaii, the Magellan group farther west, and the Bonin Islands north of the Ladrones.!

North-easterly winds prevail during the winter months over the Marshalls, Ladrones, and Carolines, except in the extreme west, while between May and September the influence of the monsoon causes unsettled weather from the west, with heavy gales. In the Gilberts the south-east trade-wind brings fine weather at this season.

The ethnological features of Micronesia are much more definite than the geographical, for its populations form one great branch of the fair Polynesian race, distinguished from the other by well-marked differences in appearance, language, and institutions. Its ethnological relations are not

thoroughly understood. The proximity of Japan and the Philippines on the west and of the Papuan and South Polynesian islands on the south and south-east suggests, what in fact we.find, a combination of elements in different degrees of fusion. In some places the oblique Mongolian eye is noticed, and (along with certain Indo-Chinese customs) there is often a scantiness of beard and general “Malay” look which increases westwards, and seems to imply relations with the archipelago subsequent to the departure tlience of the pure Polynesians. In the Gilberts tle traces of Polynesian (Samoan) influences are evident, and are confirmed by tradition. Among the Carolines and the Marshalls darker and more savage communities are’ found, suggesting a Melanesian element, which is further traceable in the Ebon (Marshall) and other languages.

Each of the four groups, from long isolation, has devel- oped peculiarities of its own. The most advanced were the “Chamorros” of the Ladrones, owing to the greater natural resources of the islands, and perhaps more frequent contact with influences from the west; but as a separate people they no longer exist, having been nearly extermin- ated by the Spaniards in the 17th century. Next in advancement come the Carolines. The general type is a well-proportioned rather slightly built figure, with small and regular features; head high and well-proportioned, but forehead rather retreating, and narrow at the temples ; cheek bones and chin slightly prominent ; colour somewhat darker than tlie Polynesians, the Marshalls being darker and more vigorous than the Carolines, while the Gilbert type is still darker and coarser. The upper class greatly surpasses the common people in physique and intelligence.

There is a peculiar division of society into septs or clans, the membership of which constitutes the closest tie. Persons of the same sept must not intermarry, and when two islands or communities meet in war the members of one sept, however widely separated by distance of space or time, will not injure or fight with each other. Each community is usually composed (but there are local differ- ences) of—(1) an upper class of chiefs, from among whom the head (¢amol or ros) is chosen ; (2) a lower but still noble class; and (3) common people, mostly without rights of property. These last are only allowed one wife. Assemblies of the chiefs everywhere limit the kingly authority. In the Marshalls the sovereign has lost his control over

many of the atolls, and in the Gilberts the above distinctions have nearly disappeared; the headship has lapsed, and, especially in the southern islands, the man of largest substance is the most powerful, and sometimes establishes a local supremacy. Here and there are traces, as In Tonga, of a spiritual sovereign, the descendants probably of a conquered dynasty. Succession is through the female side, which assures to women a certain position,

} These islands, whieh contain a mixed immigrant population, are elaimed, and have been reeently surveyed, by Japan. But they were annexed to England by Captain Beeehey in 1827. (See Von Kittlitz, Denkwiirdigkeiten einer Reise nach… . Mikronesien, &e., vol, ii.)

oi C=*M 1,C

and leads besides to some curious. results (see paper by Kubary in Das Ausland, 1880, No. 27). The upper class are the keepers of traditions, boat-builders, leaders of expeditions ; tattooing is generally done by them, the amount increasing with a man's rank; the custom here still has definite religious associations. Both sexes are

tattooed. The people are singularly amiable and well.

disposed, but will repay ill usage with treachery. The women (although chastity is not expected before marriage) are somewhat more moral than the Polynesians, and are treated with respect, as are the aged. The natives are – polite and hospitable to strangers (except on the poorer and ruder islands), bright and intelligent, active traders, expert cultivators and fishermen. They have a hand-loom from which beautiful fabrics of banana, hibiscus, and other fibres are produced. The Marshall Islanders are the boldest and most skilful navigators in the Pacific. Their voyages of many montlis' duration, in great canoes sailing with outrigger to windward, well-provisioned, and depending on the skies for fresh water, help to show how the Pacific was colonized. They have a sort of chart, medo, of small sticks tied together, representing the positions of islands and the directions of the winds and currents. A two-edged weapon, of which the blade is of sharks' teeth, and a defensive armour of braided sennit, are also peculiar to the islands; a large

adze, made of the 7ridacna gigas, was formerly used in the Carolines, probably by the old builder race.

The languages of Micronesia, though grammatically alike, differ widely in their vocabularies. They have the chief characteristics of the Polynesian, with Malay affinities, and peculiarities such as the

usc of suffixes and inseparable pronouns and, as in Tagal, of the infix to denote changes in the verb; in the west groups there is a tend-

ency to close syllables and double consonants, and a use of the pala-

tals ch, j, sh, the dental th, and s (the last perhaps only in foreign ‘words), which is alien to the Polynesian. ‘These letters are wanting in the Gilbert language, which differs considerably from all the others, and has much greater affinities with the Polynesian.

The religious myths are generally identifiable with the Polynesian, but a belief in the gods proper is overshadowed by a general deification of ancestors, who are supposed from time to time to occupy certain bloeks ofstone, set up near the family dwelling, and surrounded by circles of smaller ones. These stones are anointed with oil, and worshipped with prayer and offerings, and are also used for purposes of divination, in which, and in various omens, there is a general belief. In the Marshalls, in place of these stones, certain palm trees are similarly enclosed. The spirits also sometimes inhabit certain birds or fishes, which are then ¢abw, as food, to the family ; but they will help to catch them for others. All this closely recalls the karwars or ancestral images of New Guinea. Temples are very rare, though these blocks of coral are sometimes surrounded by a roofless enclosure opening to the west. The bodies of the dead, and sometimes even of the sick, are despatched to sea westwards, with certain rites; those of the chiefs, however, are buried, for the order has something essentially divine about it; their bodies therefore are sacred, and their spirits naturally assumed the position above described. Such a belief greatly strengthens the king’s authority, for the spirits of his ancestors are necessarily nore powerful than any other spirits. Thus too it comes that the chiefs, and all belonging to them, are tabu as regards the common people. There are various other subjects and occasions of tabu, but the institution has not the

oppressive and all-pervading character which it has in Polynesia. Its action is often economical or eharitable, e.g., the ripening cocoa-nuts are tabu as long as the bread- fruit lasts, thus securing the former for future use ; or it is put on after a death, and the nuts thus saved are given to the family— a kindness to them, and a mark of respect for the dead.

The flora of the Gilbert and Marshall groups is of the. usual |

oceanic character, with close Indo-Malay affinities. It is much poorer than that of the Carolines,! with its Moluccan and Philip- pine elements, and this again is surpassed by that of the Ladrones. In the Gilberts the scattered woods of cocoa-palm and Pandanus have little undergrowth, while the south Marshalls, being within the belt of constant precipitation, have a dense growth of (mostly) low trees and shrubs, with here and there a tropieal luxuriance and variety unusual on atolls. The Pandanus grows wild profusely, and

is of exceptional importance, being the chief staple of food, so that |

1 About 180 species have been observed on Kusaie, one-fourth of all the plants being ferns.

the cocoa-nut, which, however, flourishes chiefly in the Gilberts, is used mainly to produce oil for exportation. The bread-fruit grows chiefly in the south Marshalls. The taro (Arum cordifolium and others) is cultivated laboriously, deep trenches being cut in the solid rock for its irrigation, but this and other plants of cultiva- tion, and indeed the vegetation generally, fall off in number and quality northwards, Various vegetables are grown on soil im- ported for the purpose. Marine plants are rare. Wilkes found on Makin Island, Gilbert group, a ‘ fruit resembling the gooseberry,” called “teiparu,” from which a preserve is made. This seems very like the tipari or Cape gooseberry of India (Physalis perwviana). And their £araka, a drink made from the sap of the flower-stalk of the cocoa-palm (unfermented before the arrival of Europeans), recalls the arrack of southern Asia.

The fauna, like the flora, becomes poorer eastwards, birds being mucli more numerous on the high islands than on the atolls, where the few are chiefly aquatic. On Bonabe (Puynipet) out of twenty- nine species eleven are sea birds, and of the remaining eighteen seven are peculiar to the island. From the Pelews fifty-six species are recorded (twelve peculiar), and from the neighbouring Mackenzie group (Ulithi) twenty (six peculiar). Yet curiously no species is recorded common to these two groups and peculiar to them. The comiuon sowl is found everywhere, wild or tame, and in some places is kept for its feathers only. The rat and a Pteropus are the only indigenous land mammals. The Indian erocodile is found as far east as the Pelews. There are five or six lizards, including a Geeko and Ablephorus. Insects are numerous, but of few kinds. Scorpions and centipedes are common, but are said to be harmless.

The houses in the Gilberts and Marshalls (much less elaborate than in the Carolines) consist merely of a thatched roof resting on posts or on blocks of coral about 3 feet high, with a floor at that level, which is reached from an opening in the centre. On this the prineipal people sleep, and it serves as a storehouse in- accessible to rats, which infest all the islands.

The Marshall arehipelago consists of two nearly parallel chains of atolls, from 100 to 300 miles apart, the west known as Ralik, the east as Ratak. They lie between 4° 30’ and 12° N., and between 165° 15’ and 172° 15’ E., and run about N.N.W. and S8.S.E. They were discovered in 1529 by Saavedra, who, observing the fine tattooing of the inhabitants (the first allusion to the practiee in the Pacific), called them Los Pintados. Among modern voyagers Wallis first visited them in 1767; Captains Marshall and Gil- bert reached them in 1788, and Kotzebue (1816) explored them more thoroughly. Each group contains fifteen or sixteen atolls, which range from 2 to 50 miles in circumference. An anomalous feature is reported on soine of them, viz., that the greater pro- portion of land, or at all events of soil, is not found as usual on the windward side of the lagoon, for the prevailing north-east wind sweeps, it is said, the materials of which the soil of such islands is composed across to the lee side. Jaluit Island is the commercial emporium of the whole region. There is a curious tradition on Ebon Island of the Darwinian fact that the atoll once formed the barrier reef of an island

now sunk beneath the lagoon. The popula- tion of Ratak is about 6000, of Ralik 4000; there is little intercourse between the two groups.

The Gilbert archipelago, discovered by Byron in 1765, is geographically a south continuation of the Marshalls, the ehannel separating them being 50 leagues wide. It lies between 2° 40’ 8. and 3° 20’ N., and between 172° 30’ and 177° 15’ E., and con- tains sixteen atolls, not including two hilly islands, Banaba and Nawodo, which lie 5° to 6° to the west. Several have good anchorages inside the lagoon, with entrances on the lee side. On some the lee or west reef is wanting, owing to the abrading foree of tle west storms. During these large trees are washed ashore, their roots containing pieces of fine basalt, of whieh implements are made. There is a far larger proportion of land to submerged reef and lagoon than in the Marshalls, the land sometimes rising 20 feet above the sea, whereas in the Marshalls the average level of the reef rock is less than a foot above the surface; but, though the supply of fresh water is exceptionally great, in faet enough for the luxury of a bath, the soil (especially in the south) is very much less productive. Yet the population, about 50,000, is exceptionally dense. The usual scattered houses are replaced by compaet rows of roofs which, shaded by coeoa-palin, and each with its boat-shed below, line the shore. Their numbers are unchecked either by the constant practice of abortion or. by fighting, to whieh they are much addieted, their weapons being more formidable than those of their neighbours. This exceptional vigour may be due to the decidedly hybrid chavacter of the racc. Hawaiian missionaries, under American superintendenee, have laboured here since 1857.

See also Findlay’s Suiling Directions for the North Pacific; Roper’s North Pacific Pilot and Nautical Magazine, vols. xxxi. and xxxy, Other authorities are Gerland in Waitz’s Anthropologie der Naturvélker, vol. y.; Meinicke, Die Inseln des Stillen Oceans; Hale’s Ethnography and Philology of Wilkes’s U.S. Exploring Expedition; Kotzebue and Chainisso, Entdeckungsretse in die Sudsee ; Proc, Zuol. Soc., 1872 and 1877. (C. T.)

MICROPHONE. See TELEPHONE. ~ XVI. — 33

HE microscope is an optical instrument for the ex-

amination of minute objects or parts of objects,

which enlarges the visual pictures formed upon the retina of the observer by the rays proceeding from them.

Microscopes are distinguished as simple or compound. In the former, the rays which enter the eye of the observer come from an object brought near to it after refraction through either a single lens or a combination of lenses acting as a single lens,—its action as a ‘‘magnifier ” depend- ing on its enabling the eye to form a distinct image of the object at a much shorter distance than would otherwise be possible. The latter consists of at least two lenses, so placed relatively to the object, to the eye, and to one another that an enlarged image of the object, formed by the lens placed nearest to it (the ‘ object-glass ”), is looked at through the lens nearest the eye (the “eye-glass”), which acts as a simple microscope in “magnifying” it; so that the com- ponnd microscope may be described as a simple microscope used to look at an enlarged image of the object, instead of at the object itself.

History of the Simple Microscope.—Any solid or liquid transparent medium of lenticular form, having either one convex and one flat surface or two convex surfaces whose axes are coincident, may serve as a ‘‘magnifier,”—what is

ing the rays which pass through it as to cause widely diverging rays to become either parallel or but slightly divergent. ‘Thus if a minute object be placed on a slip of glass, and a single drop of water be carefully placed upon it, the drop will act as a magnifier in virtue of the con- vexity of its upper surface; so that when the eye is brought sufficiently near it (the glass being of course held horizontally, so as not to distort the spherical curvature of the drop) the object will be seen much enlarged. And if a small hole be made in a thin plate of metal, and a minute drop of water be inserted in it, this drop, having two convex surfaces, will serve as a still more powerful magnifier. There is reason to believe that the magnify- ing power of transparent media with convex surfaces was very early known. . A convex lens of rock-crystal was found by Layard among the ruins of the palace of Nimrud. And it is pretty certain that, after the invention of glass, hollow

spheres blown of that material and filled with water were commonly used as magnifiers (comp. vol. xiv. p. 577). The perfection of gem-cutting shown in ancient gems, especially in those of very minute size, could not have been attained without the use of such aids to the visual power; and there can be little doubt that the artificers who could execute these wonderful works could also shape and polish the magnifiers best suited for their own or others' use. Though it is impossible to say when convex lenses of glass were first made by grinding, it is quite certain that they were first generally used to assist ordinary vision as "spectacles," the use of which can be traced back nearly six centuries; and not only were spectacle-makers the first to produce glass magnifiers (or simple microscopes), but by them also the telescope and the compound microscope were first invented. There seems no reason to believe, however, that lenses of very high magnifying power (or short focus) were produced until a demand for them had been created by the introduction of the compound microscope, in which.such lenses are reqnired as '"'object-glasses"; and the difficulty of working lenses of high curvature with the requisite accuracy led in the first instance to the employment of globules made by fusing the ends of threads of spun glass. It was in this

|

way that Robert Hooke shaped the minutest of the lenses with which he made many of the numerous discoveries recorded in his Micrographia; and the same method was employed by the Italian microscopist Father Di Torre. It seems to have been Leeuwenhoek that first succeeded in grinding and polishing lenses of such short focus and

| perfect figure as to render the simple microscope a better

instrument for most purposes than any compound micro- scope then constructed,—its inferiority in magnifying power being more than counterbalanced by the superior clearness of the retinal picture. And, in despair of any such modi- fication in the compound form as shonld remove the optical defects which seemed inherent in its plan of construction, scientific opticians and microscopic observers alike gave their chief attention for a considerable period to the improvement of the simple

microscope. In order that the nature of these improvements may be understood, the principle of its action must be first explained.

The normal human eye has a considerable power of self- adjustment, by which its focal length is so varied that it forms equally distinct pictures of objects brought within ordinary reading distance (say 10 inches) and of objects whose distance is many times that length,—the size of the

| visual picture of any object diminishing, however, with essential being that it shall have the power of so refract- |

the increase in the distance to which it is removed, and the amount of detail distinguishable in it following the same proportion. Thus a man who looks across the street at a placard posted on the opposite wall may very distinctly see its general form and the arrangement of its heading, and may be able to read what is set forth in its largest type, whilst unable to separate the lines, still more to read the words, of what is set forth below. But by crossing the street so as to bring his eye nearer the picture he finds himself able to read the smaller type as easily as he before read the larger,—the visual picture on his retina having been magnified, say 10 times in linear dimension, by the reduction of the distance of his eye from 40 feet to 4. Similarly, if he holds a page of excessively minute type at arm's length (say 40 inches) from his eye, he may be unable to read it, not because his eye does not form a distinct retinal' picture of the page at that distance, but because the details of that picture are too minute for him to distinguish them. But if he brings the page from 40 inches to 10 inches distance, he may be able to read it without difficulty,—the retinal picture being enlarged four

_times linear (or sixteen times superficial) by this approxi-

mation. Now the rays that enter the eye from each point of a remote object diverge so little as to be virtually parallel ; but the divergence increases with the approxima- tion of the object to the eye, and at 10 inches the angle of their divergence is as wide as permits the ordinary eye to bring them to a focus on the retina. When the object is approximated more closely, an automatic contraction of the pupil takes place, so that the most diverging rays of each pencil are cut off, and a distinct picture may be formed (though not without a feeling of strain) when the object is (say) from 5 to 8 inches

distant,—giving still greater minuteness of visual detail in conformity with the increase of size. A further magnifying power may be obtained without the interposition of any lens, by looking at an object, at 2 or 3 inches distance, through a pin-hole in a card; for by thus cutting off the more divergent rays of each pencil, so as to admit only those which can be made to converge to a focus on the retina at that distance, a distinct and detailed picture may be obtained, though at the expense of a great loss of light. Moreover,

MICRO

although an ordinary eye does not form a distinct picture of an object at less than from 10 to 6 inches distance, a ‘“‘myopic” or “short-sighted ” eye (whose greater refractive power enables it to bring rays of wider divergence to a focus on the retina) may form an‘ equally distinct picture of an object at from 5 to 3 inches distance ; and, as the linear dimensions of that picture will be double that of the preceding, the object will be “magnified” in that propor- tion, and its details more clearly seen.

The effect of the interposition of a convex lens between the eye and an object nearly approximated to it primarily consists in its reduction in the divergence of the rays of the pencils which issue from its several points, so that they enter the eye at the moderate divergence which they would have if the object were at the ordinary nearest limit of distinct vision. And, since the shorter the focus of the lens the more closely may the object be approximated to the eye, the retinal picture is enlarged, causing the object to appear magnified in the same proportion. Not only, however, are the component rays of each pencil brought from divergence into convergence, but the course of the pencils themselves is changed, so that they enter the eye under an angle corresponding’ to that under which they would have arrived from a larger object situated at a greater distance ; and thus, as the picture formed upon the retina by the small object ab, fig. 1, corresponds in all

Fie, 1,—Action of Simple Microscope.

respects with that which would have been made by the same object AB of several times its linear dimension viewed at the nearest ordinary limit of

distinct vision, the object is seen (by the formation of a “virtual image”) on a magnified scale,

It is obvious that the “magnifying power” of any convex lens so used is measured by the ratio between the dimensions of the retinal picture formed with its assistance and those of the picture formed by the unaided eye. Thus, if by the use of a convex lens having 1 inch focal length we can form a distinct retinal image of an object at only an inch distance, this image will have ten times the linear dimensions of that formed by the same object at a distance of 10 inches, but will be only eight times as large as the picture formed when the object can be seen by ordinary vision at 8 inches distance, and only four times as large as the picture of the same object formed by a myopic eye at a distance of 4 inches. It is usual to estimate the magnifying power of single lenses (or of com- binations that are used as such) by the number of times that their focal length is contained in 10 inches,—that of 1 inch focus being thus taken as ten times, that of !, inch as one hundred times, and so on. But the rule is obviously arbitrary, as the actual magnifying power varies in each individual with the nearest limit of distinct vision. Thus for the myopic who can see an object clearly at 4 inches distance, the magnifying powers of a 1 inch and ;!, inch lens will be only 4 and 40 respectively. The amplifying power of every single convex lens, however, is impaired (1) by that inability to bring to the same focus the rays which

fall upon the central and the marginal parts of its surface which is called “spherical aberration,” and (2) by that dispersion of the rays of different wavelengths, in virtue of their different refrangibilities, which produces coloured fringes around the points and lines of the visual picture, and is therefore called “chromatic aberration” (see Licut), These aberrations increase with the “ angle of aperture ” given to the lens, that is, with the proportion between the diameter of its actual “opening” and the focal distance of the object; and thus, when a single lens of very short focus is used in order to gain a high magnifying power, such a reduction of its aperture by a perforated diaphragm or “stop” becomes necessary (in order, by excluding the peripheral rays, to obtain tolerable “definition ” with

freedom from false colour) that the amount of light admitted to the eye is so small as only to allow the most transparent objects to be thus viewed, and these only very imperfectly. In order to remedy this draw- back, it was proposed by Sir D. Brewster to use instead of glass, in the construction of simple microscopes, such transparent minerals as have high refractive. with low dispersive power; in which case the same optical cffect could be obtained with lenses of much lower curvature, and the aperture might be proportionately enlarged. This combination of qualities is found in the diamond, whose index of refraction bears such a proportion to that of glass that a diamond lens having a radius of curvature of 8 would give the same magnifying power as a glass lens whose radius of curvature is 3, while the "longitudinal aberration " (or distance between the foci of central and of marginal rays) would be in a diamond lens only one-ninth of that of a glass lens having the same power and aperture. Put- ting aside, however, the costliness of the material and the difficulty of working it, a source of imperfection arises from a frequent want of homogeneousness in the diamond crystal, which has proved sufficient to make a lens worked from it give a double or even a triple image. Similar attempts made by Mr Pritchard with sapphire proved more successful ; and, as 'a sapphire lens having a radius of curvature of 5 has the same focus and gives the same magnifying power as a crown-glass lens having a radius of 3, it was found to bear a much larger aperture without serious impairment by either spherical or chromatic aberration. As the sapphire, however, possesses the property of double refrac- tion, the duplication of the markings of the object in their retinal image constitutes a very serious drawback to the utility of lenses constructed of this mineral; for, though the double refraction may be reduced almost to nothing by turning the convex side of the lens towards the object, yet, as this is the worst position in regard to spherical aberration, more is lost than is gained. Fortunately, however, for biological investigators working with simple microscopes, the imtroduction of the Wollaston doublet superseded the necessity of any further attempts at turning costly jewels to account as high-power magnifiers. Wollaston Doublet.—This consists of a combination of two plano-convex lenses, whose focal lengths (as directed by Dr Wollaston) should be as 3 to 1, with their plane sides turned towards the object,—the smaller lens being placed lowest, and the upper lens at a distance of one and a half times its focal length above it. This construction, how- ever, has been subsequently

improved—(1) by the introduc- tion of a perforated diaphragm between the lenses ; (2) by amore effective adjustment of the distance between the

‘two lenses, which seems to be inost satisfactory when it

equals the difference of their respective focal lengths, allowance being made for their thickness; and (3) by the division of the power of the lower lens (when a shorter focus than ;‘5 inch is required) into two, so as to form a “triplet.” When combinations of this kind are well

constructed, spherical aberration is almost wholly got rid |

of, and chromatic dispersion is so slight that the angle of aperture may be considerably enlarged without much sacrifice of distinctness. Such “doublets” and “triplets,” having been brought into use in England while the com- pound microscope still retained its original imperfections, proved very serviceable to such as were at that time prosecuting minute biological investigations : for example, the admirable researches of Dr Sharpey on ciliary action in animals (1830-35) and Mr Henry Slack’s beautiful dissections of the elementary tissues of plants, as well as his excellent observations on vegetable cyclosis (1831), were made by their means. No one, however, would now

use Wollaston “doublets” or “triplets ” of high power in place of a compound achromatic microscope ; and for the simple microscopes of low power that are useful either for dissecting or for picking out minute specimens

larger field and more light. As a hand-magnifier the | “Coddington” lens—which is a sphere of glass with a | deep groove ground out of its equatorial portion—has many advantages! By making this groove sufficiently deep, both spherical and chromatic aberrations can be rendered almost insensible ; and, as the rays falling on any part of the spherical surface can only pass to the eye either through or near the centre, the action of every part of that surface is the same, so that the image of the object will be equally distinct (when properly focussed) whether its parts lie nearer to the axis of the

sphere or more remote from it, or the axis be itself turned to one side or the other. Again, it was mathematically shown by Sir John Herschel in 1821 that by the combination of a meniscus with a double con- vex lens—the four surfaces of these lenses having certain proportionate curvatures—spherical aberration could be entirely extinguished for rays parallel to the axis, the combination being thus an “‘aplanatic” doublet, while another combination, which he termed a “ periscopic ” doublet, gives a remarkable range of oblique vision with low powers, and almost entirely extinguishes chromatic aberration, although at the expense of residual spherical aberration. These combinations have been mounted both as hand-magnifiers and as single microscopes, for both which purposes they are much superior to single lenses of the same magnifying power. But such combinations have been greatly improved by the introduction of concaves of flint glass, so as to render them achromatic as well as aplanatic ; and nothing, according to the writer’s experi-. ence, can now be used with greater advantage for all the purposes answered either by the simple microscope or the hand-magnifier than Browning’s “ platyscopic ” lenses or the “achromatic doublets” of Steinheil of Munich. Each of these combinations gives a large flat field, with plenty of light, admirable definition, and freedom from false colour.

At the period when ‘“‘ doublets” of very short focus were used in order to obtain high magnifying power, it was requisite to mount these on such a stand as would enable the focal adjustment to be made, and would admit the use of a special illuminating apparatus with great exaetness. But now that. eomparatively Tow powers only are employed the ordinary raek-and-pinion movement is quite sufficient for their focal adjustment, and nothing more is required

1 Tt is diffieult to understand how the name of Coddington came to be attaehed to the grooved sphere, seeing that he neither was nor claimed to be the inventor of it. Dr Wollaston’s first ‘‘ doublet” consisted of a pair of plano-convex lenses with their plane surfaces opposed to each other, and a diaphragm with central aperture placed |, between them. Sir D. Brewster showed that this construction is most advantageous when the two lenses are hemispheres, and the central / aperture between their two plane surfaces is filled up by a tratisparent eement having the same refraetive index as glass.

And from this the transition is obvions to the grooved sphere, which had been made for Sir D. Brewster long before the high commendation it reeeived from Mr Coddington brought it into general repute.

(such as | diatoms) other constructions are preferable, as giving a |

SCOPE

for the illumination of the object than a concave mirror beneath the stage when it is transparent, and a condensing lens above when it is opaque. The various patterns of simple microseope now made by different makers vary in their construetion, chiefly in regard to portability, the size of their stages, and the mode in whieh ‘‘ rests”’ or supports to the hands are provided. These, in Continental in- struments, are very commonly attached to the stage ; but, unless the stage itself and the pillar to which it is fixed are extremely massive, the resting of the hands on the supports is apt to depress the stage in a degree that affects the focal adjustment ; and where portability is not an object it scems better that the hand-supports should be independent of the stage. For a laboratory mieroscope, the pattern represented in fig. 2 has been found very eonvenient, — the framework being of mahogany or other hard wood, the stage

Fig. 2.—Laboratory Dissecting Mieroseope. being large enough to admit a dissection or carry a water-trough of considerable size, and the bent arm that earries the ‘‘ powers” being made capable of reversion, so as to permit the use of lenses of very long as well as of very short focus, As it is desirable that the stage should not be acted on chemically by sea-water, acids, or other reagents, it may be made either of a square of plate-glass or of a plate of ebonite with an aperture in the middle ; and either of these may be made to slide in grooves in the side supports, so that one may be substituted for the other. The arm may be easily made (if desired) to earry the body of a compound microscope, so as to apply it to the examination of objects dissected or otherwise prepared under the simple microscope, without transferring them to another instrument. A portable form of simple microscope is shown in fig. 30.

Compound Microscope.-—The placing of two convex lenses in such relative positions that one should magnify an enlarged image of’a small

near object formed by the other naturally soon followed the invention of the telescope, and seems to have first occurred to Hans Zansz or his son Zacharias Zansz, spectacle-makers at Middelburg in Hol- land, about 1590. One of their compound microscopes, which they presented to Prince Maurice, was in the year 1617 in the possession of Cornelius Drebell of Alkmaar, who then resided in London as mathematician to king James I. In order to make clear the successive stages by which the rude and imperfect microscope of that period has, after remaining for two centuries unimproved in any essential particular, been developed within the last half-century into one of the most important instruments of scientific research that the combination of theoretical acumen and manipulative skill has ever produced, it is necessary to explain the principle of its construction, and to show wherein lay the imperfection of its earlier form.

In its simplest construction, as already stated, the compound microscope consists of only two lenses,—the “object-glass” CD, fig. 3, which receives the light-rays direct

from the object AB placed near it, and forms an enlarged

but reversed image A’B’ at a greater distance on the other side, and the “eye-glass” LM, which receives the rays that diverge from. the several points of this image as if they proceeded from the points of an actual object occupying the position and enlarged to the dimensions A’B’, and brings these to the eye at E, so altering their course as to

MicokoscoP &

act as a simple microscope in magnifying that image to the observer. It was early found useful, however, to interpose another lens FF, fig. 4 (the “ field-glass”), between the object-glass and the image formed by it, for the purpose of giving such a slight convergence to the pencil of rays as shall reduce the dimensions of the image, and thus allow a larger part of it to come within the range of the eye-

Fic. 4.—Diagram of Complete Compound Microscope.

Fig. 3.—Diagram of Simplest Form of Compound Micro- scope.

glass, so that more of the object can be -seen at once.

And it was soon perceived that the eye-glass and the

field-glass might be advantageously combined into an

“eye-piece,” in which a perforated diaphragm might be

inserted at the focal plane of the image (¢.e., in the focus of

the eye-glass), so as, by cutting off the peripheral portion of the field of view, to linit it to what can be seen with tolerable distinctness.

It is obvious that the magnifying power of such an instrument would depend (1) on the proportion between the size of the image formed at BB and. that of the actual object, and (2) upon the magnifying power of the eye-glass. And further the proportion which the size of the image bears to that of the object depends upon two factors,—(1) the focal length of the object-glass, and (2) the distance between the object-glass and the plane BB occupied by the image it forms. If we diminish the focal length of the-object-glass, the object must be brought nearer to it, so that, while the distance of the image on the other side remains unchanged, that distance comes to bear a larger proportion to the distance of the object, and the size of the image is augmented in a cor- responding ratio. On the other hand, the object-glass remaining unchanged, the distance at which it forms the image of the object can be increased by a lengthening of the

of the distance between the object-glass and the object, the proportion which the former bears to the latter is augmented, and the image is correspondingly enlarged. Thus an

increase in the magnifying power of the compound micro-

scope may be gained in three modes, which may be used either separately or in double or triple combination,—viz., (1) shortening the focus of the object-glass, (2) lengthening the tube of the microscope, and (3) increasing

the magnify- ing power of the eye-glass by shortening its.focus. This, it may be remarked, also lengthens the distance of the image from the object-glass, by bringing the focal plane BB nearer the eye-glass. The second of these methods was not unfrequently used in the older microscopes, which were sometimes made to draw out like telescopes, so as to increase the amplifying power of their object-glasses. But, whilst very inconvenient to the observer, such a lengthen- ing of the one distance involved such a shortening of the other as greatly impaired the distinctness of the image by increasing the aberrations of the object-glass, so that this method came to be generally abandoned for one of the other two.

When lenses of from 1 to 4 inches focus were used as object-glasses, and their apertures were restricted by a stop to the central part of each, tolerably distinct images were given of the larger structural arrangements of such objects as sections of wood or the more transparent wings of insects,—which images would‘bear a further moderate enlargement by the eye-glass without any serious deterioration either by want of definition or the introduction: of colour-fringes. But when lenses of less than 1 inch focus were employed in order to obtain a higher magnifying power, the greater obliquity of the rays so greatly increased their aberrations

‘that defective definition and the introduction of false

colours went far to nullify any advantage obtainable from the higher amplification; while the limitation of the aperture required to keep these aberrations within even moderate limits occasioned such a loss of light as most seriously to detract from the value of the picture. On the other hand, the use of deeper eye-pieces to enlarge the images formed by the object-glasses not only brought out more strongly all the defects of those images, but introduced a new set of errors of their own, so that very little was gained by that mode of amplification. Hence many of the best of the older microscopists (notably LEEUWENHOEK, g.v.) made some of their most valuable discoveries by the use of the simple microscope ; and the amount of excellent work thus done surprises every one who studies the history of microscopic inquiry. This was still more the case, as already stated, when the use of single lenses of very short focus was superseded by the introduction of the Wollaston doublet. And the substitution of these

doublets for the single lenses of object-glasses, while the single lens of the eye-glass was replaced by a Herschel's aplanatic doublet, and the field-glass was a convex lens whose two curves had the proportion of 1:6 (the form of least spherical aberra- tion), constituted the greatest improvement of which the instrument seemed capable in pre-achromatic times.

It has been only within the last sixty years (1820-30) that the microscope has undergone the important improve- ment which had been worked out by Dollond in the refracting telescope more than sixty years previously,—namely, the correction of the chromatic aberration of its objectives by the combination of concave lenses of flint-

1 This combination was made in the first microscope of which the writer became possessed, about the year 1830 ; and he well recollects the great superiority to any compound microscope of the old construc- tion which was proved by its power of separating the lines on the Menelaus scale, and of bringing into view the details of the structure of animalcules, with a clearness that only an achromatized object-glass

tube of the microscope; and, as this involves a shortening | could surpass.

glass with convex lenses of crown, while their spherical } front of the previous one, increased the angle of the trans-

aberration is corrected by the combination (as in Herschel's aplanatic doublet) of convex and concave surfaces of different curvatures. The minute size and high curvature of the lenses required as microscopic objectives were long considered as altogether precluding the possibility of success in the production of such combinations, more especially as the conditions they would have to meet differ altogether from those under which telescopic object-glasses are employed. For the rays from distant objects fall upon the latter with virtual parallelism ; and the higher the power required the longer is the focus given to them, and the smaller is the deflexion of the rays. In the microscope, on the other hand, the object is so

closely approximated to the objective that the rays which proceed to it from the latter have always a very considerable divergence; and the deflexion to which they are subjected increases with that reduction of the focal length of the objective whicli is the necessary condition of the increase of its magnifying power. And thus, although the telescopic “triplet” worked out by Dollond (consisting of a double-concave of flint glass, interposed between two double-convex lenses of crown) can be so constructed as to be not only completely aplanatic (or free from spherical aberration) but almost completely achromatic (or free from chromatic aberration), this construction is only suitable for microscopic objectives of long focus and small angular aperture, the rays falling on which have but a very moderate divergence. And though, as will presently appear, some of the early attempts at the achromatization of the microscope were made in this direction, it was soon abandoned for other plans of construction, which were found to he alike theoretically and practically superior.

It seems to have been by. Professor Amici, then of

the achromatization of microscopic objectives; but, these attempts not proving successful, he turned his attention to the production of a reflecting microscope, which was a decided improvement upon the non-achromatized compound microscopes then in use. In the year 1820, however, the subject was taken up by Selligues and Chevalier of Paris, who adopted the plan of superposing three or four com- binations, each consisting of a double-convex of crown cemented to a plano-concave of flint. The back combina-tion (that nearest to the eye) was of somewhat lower power than those placed in front of it, but these last were all of the same focus, and no attempt was made by these opticians to vary the construction of the several pairs thus united, so as to make them correct each others’ aberrations. Hence, although a considerable magnifying power could be thus obtained, with an almost complete extinction of chromatic aberration, the aperture of these objectives could not be greatly widened without. the impairment of the distinctness of the image by a “coma” proceeding from uncorrected spherical aberration.

In ignorance, it would appear, of what was being done by the Paris opticians, and at the instigation of Dr Goring (a scientific amateur), Mr

Tulley—well known in London as an able constructor of telescopic objectives—began, about the year 1824, to work object-glasses for the micro- scope on the telescopic plan. After many trials}! he succeeded, in 1825, in producing a triplet of 75 inch focus, admitting a pencil of 18°, which was so well corrected as to perform very satisfactorily with an eye-piece giving a magnifying power of 120 diameters. He afterwards made a similar triplet of shorter focus, which, when placed in

1 Jt is due to Mr Joseph J. Lister to mention that Tulley's final success with this low power seems to have been attained by working on @ suggestion given him by that gentleman. See Monthly Micro- scopical Journal, vol. iii. (1870), p. 184.

i

mitted pencil to 38°, and bore an eye-piece giving a magnifying power of 300 diameters. These triplets are said by Mr Ross to have never been exceeded by any similar combinations for accurate correction throughout the field. Having come into possession, at the end of 1826, of an objective of Chevalier's construction, Mr J. J. Lister carefully examined its properties, and compared them with those of Tulley's triplets; and this comparison having led him to institute further experiments he obtained results which were at first so conflicting that they must have proved utterly bewildering toa less acute mind,? but which finally led him to the enunciation of the principle on which all the best microscopic objectives are now constructed. For he discovered that the performance of such com- posite objectives greatly depends upon the relative position of their component combinations,—the effect of the flint plano-concave upon the spherical aberration produced by the double-convex of crown varying remarkably according to the distance of the luminous point from the front of the objective. If the radiant is at a considerable distance, the rays proceeding from it have their spherical error under- corrected ; but, as the source of light is brought nearer to the glass, the flint lens produces greater proportionate effect, and the under-correction diminishes, until at length a point is reached where it disappears entirely, the rays being all brought to one point at the conjugate focus of the lens. This, then, is one aplanatic focus. If, however, the luminous point is brought still nearer to the glass, the

influence of the flint continues for a time to increase, and the opposite condition of over-correction shows itself. But, on still further approximation of the radiant, the flint comes to operate with less effect, the excess of correction

diminishes and at a point still nearer to the glass vanishes, Modena, about 1812, that the first attempts were made at

and a second aplanatic focus appears. From this point onwards under-correction takes the place of over-correction, and increases till the object touches the surface of the glass. As every such doublet, therefore, has two aplanatic foci for all points between which it is over-corrected, while for all points beyond it is under-corrected, the optician is enabled to combine two or more doublets with perfect security against spherical error. This will be entirely avoided if the rays be received by the front glass from its shorter aplanatic focus, and transmitted through the back glass in the direction of its longer aplanatic pencil. By the approximation of the two doublets over-correction will be reduced, while their separation will produce under-cor- rection ; and thus, by merely varying the distance between two such combinations, the correction of the spherical error may be either increased or diminished according to a definite rule. Slight defects in one glass may thus be remedied by simply altering its position in relation to the other,—an alteration which may be made with very little disturbance of the colour-correction. This important principle was developed and illustrated by Mr Lister in a memoir read to the Royal Society on January 21, 1830, On some Properties in Achromatic: Object-glasses, applicable to the Improvement of the Microscope ; and it was by work- ing on the lines there laid down that the three London opticians Ross,? Powell, and James Smith soon pro-

> Thus he found that, while each of Chevalier’s doublet combina- tions, when used singly, presented a ‘“‘bur” or “coma” outwards, this coma, instead of being exaggerated by the combination of two of these doublets, was much diminished. On the other hand, while two of Tulley’s triplets, cach of which performed admirably by itself, were used together, the images of all objects not in the centre presented a strong bur inwards with an under-correction of colour.

3 In 1837 Mr Lister gave Mr Ross a projection for an objective of s inch focus, in which a triple front was combined with two doublets. The great superiority of this lens, admirably executed by Mr Ross, caused him to adopt its plan as the standard one for high powers; and it is still in general usc,—the back lens also being sometimes made as a triplet.

duced microscopic objectives that surpassed any then con- structed on the Continent, while the subsequent adoption of the same principles by French and German opticians, as also by Professor Amici of Florence, soon raised their objectives to a corresponding level.

It has proved more advantageous in practice to make the several components of an achromatic objective correct each others' aberrations than to attempt to render each perfect in itself; and the mode in which this is accomplished will vary with the focus and angular aperture given to each combination. Thus, while a single '" telescopic triplet " answers very well for the lowest power usually made (4 inches focus), and the same plan may be used— though at the sacrifice of angular aperture—for objectives of 3 inches, 2 inches, and even | inch focus, the best per- formance of these powers requires the combination of two doublets. And, while this last system also serves for objectives of 2 inch and 4 inch of low angle, a third com- ponent is required for giving to these objectives the aperture that renders them most serviceable, as well as for all higher powers. Instead of combining three achromatic doublets, however, many makers prefer placing in front a plano-convex of crown, and adding a third lens of crown to the doublet at the back, still using a doublet in the middle,— the whole combination thus consisting of six lenses, four of crown and two of flint. Further, Mr Wenham has shown that the whole colour-correction may be effected in the middle by interposing a double concave of dense flint between two double-convex lenses of crown,—the back lens, as well as the front, being then a plano-convex of crown, making five lensesin all. This plan of construction, though suitable to objectives of moderate angular aperture, and advantageous in regard to comparative simplicity and economy of construction, does not seem so well adapted for objectives to which the largest attainable aperture is to be given,—these being usually

constructed with a triplet in front, a doublet in the middle, and a triplet at the back, so as to consist of eight separate lenses. And the first-class constructors of achromatic objectives in the United States usually place in front of these, in their highest powers, a single plano-convex of crown, by the addition of which a greater working distance can be obtained. But, as every such addition increases the liability' to error from imper- fections in the centring and grinding of the lenses (as well as loss of light by the partial reflexion of oblique rays from their surfaces), it is obvious that the most exact workmanship, involving a proportionate costliness, is required to bring out the full effect of such complex con- struction. And where angular aperture is regarded as the

quality of primary importance it will be usually found | 1 AHH | English inch as 11,529 to the inch Pa Whar i AM

preferable to have recourse to objectives constructed on either the "water" or the "oil" immersion system, to be presently described.

The great increase thus attained in the perfection of the corrections of microscopic objectives for both spherical and chromatic aberration of course rendered it possible to make a corresponding increase in their angular aperture. The minute scales of the wings of butterflies and other insects were naturally. among the objects much examined ; and it was soon perceived that certain lines and other markings became clearly discernible on these scales with objectives of what was then considered

large angle which were utterly. undistinguishable with |

non-achromatized microscopes (however high their magnify- ing power), and very imperfectly shown under achromatic objectives of small angle. Hence these scales came to be used as "' test-objects," for judging of the "definition" and "resolving power" of microscopic objectives,—the former property consisting in the clearness, sharpness, and freedom from false colour of the microscopic images of boundary

_ lines, and depending on the accuracy with which the aber- rations are corrected, while the latter term designates that | power of separating very closely approximated markings | which is now known to be a ant

“function” of aperture. The ji insect-scales formerly most valued (/jiiiii# for these purposes were those of //i¥ the Morpho menelaus (fig. 5) and |i] the similarly lined scales of the |} Polyommatus argus (azure-blue), {f the “‘battledoor” scales of the same butterfly (fig. 6), the ribbed scales of the Lepisma saccharina (sugar-louse), and the minute and pecuharly marked scales of the Lepidocyrtus curvicollis (fig. 7), commonly known as the Podura. The writer recollects the time when the satisfactory ‘“resolu- tion” of the first three of these tests was considered a sufficient proof of the goodness of even high-power objectives, and when the Podura-markings, if visible at all, could only be dis- tinguished as striz. The further opening-out of” the aperture, however, enabled these striz sere

to be resolved into rows of ‘“ exclama- tion marks”; and, while there is still f some uncertainty as to the precise } structure of which these markings are }}} the optical expression, practical op- Wis ticlans are generally agreed that the [i Podura-scale is very useful as a test for definition, with even the highest objectives, though it only serves as a test for a very moderate degree of re- solving power. For the latter purpose it has been completely superseded by the closely approximated markings of the silicified envelopes of certain pi ¢. — Battledoor diatoms (which, however, show them- Scale of Polyomma- selves in very different aspects accord- vs a7gus.

ing to the conditions under which they are viewed, figs. 8-11), and also by lines artificially rved on glass, as in Nobert’s “‘test-plate,” the number of lines in the nineteen bands of which is stated by M. Nobert to range from 1000 to 10,000 to a Paris line, while Dr Royston Pigott gives the numbers in an fil

Fig. 5.—Scale of Morpho menelaus.

Vy

in the first band, and 112,595 in the nineteenth. This last dimension (as will afterwards appear) approaches the minimum distance at which such

markings are theoretically separable by any magnifying power of the micro- scope.

The enlargement of the angle of aperture of microscopic ob- jectives and the greater complete- ness of their corrections, which were obtained in the first in- Fic. 7.—Test-Scales of Podura stance by the adoption of Mr (Zépidocyrius | cir gi Lister’s principles, and were de- gcale; B, small scale, more monstrated by the resolution of

faintly marked.

the test-objects then in use, soon rendered sensible an imperfection in their performance under certain circum stances, which had previously passed unnoticed ; and the

important discovery was made by Mr Andrew Ross that a very decided difference exists in the precision of the image according as the object is viewed with or without a covering of thin glass, as also according as this cover is thin or thick.1 As this difference increases in proportion to the widening of the aperture, it would obviously be a

ae 2

\ <4 i. am" ha oat t ah So ve vie

2

C wi

j BGs ee Uf ef es nis a Eres ol Wd As eh SS a es a (Www ww ie a TeTarata lara’ ae eae

ed od os oe de

=

oan

| constructive modification to meet the new condition.

Fig. 10. Fig. 11.

Portious of Siliceous Valve of Pleurosigma angulatum, from a Photo- graph taken by Central Illumination. Magnified 2000 diameters.

source of great error and embarrassment if a means could not be found for its rectification. Its optical source, how- ever, having been found by Mr Ross to lie in the “negative aberration” which is produced in the rays proceeding from the object to the front glass of the objec- tive by the interposition of the plane-glass cover, and which increases with its thickness, his practical ability | enabled him at the same time to indicate the remedy, which consists in under-correcting the front lens and over-correcting the two pos- terior combinations, and in making the distance between the former and the latter capable of adjustment by means of a screw-collar, as shown in fig. 12. For when the front pair is approxi- 5, mated most nearly to the next, and its distance from the object is in-creased, its excess of positive aberration is more strongly exerted upon the other two pairs than it is in the con- Fic. 12.—Section of Adjusting Achromatic trary conditions, and Object-Glass. A, uncovered ; B, covered. thus neutralizes the negative aberration produced by the interposition of the covering-glass. This correction is not needed for objectives of low or medium power and small angle of aperture ; but it should always be provided when the angle exceeds 50°,—unless (as is now generally done

1 Trans, Soc. of Arts, vol. li,

in the case of objectives constructed for students’ use) the maker adjusts them originally, not for uncovered . objects, but for objects covered with glass of a standard thickness, say 0°005 or 0:004 inch. A departure from that standard to the extent of one or. two thousandths of an inch in either direction, though extremely injurious to the performance of objectives whose aperture is 125° or more, scarcely makes itself perceptible in those of 90° or 100°. And the same may be said in regard to the

| immersion-objectives next to be described, which are _ peculiarly suitable to the purposes of minute histological

research.

Immersion System.—It was long since pointed out by Professor Amici that the introduction of a drop of water between the front surface of the objective and either the object itself or its covering-glass would diminish the loss of light resulting from the passage of the rays from the object or its covering-glass into air, and from air into the front glass of the objective. It was obvious to him, more- over, that when the rays enter the object-glass from water,

instead of from air, both its refractive and its dispersive

action will be so greatly changed as to need an important This modification seems never to have been successfully effected by Amici himself; but his idea was taken up by the two eminent Paris opticians, MM. Hartnack and Nachet, who showed that the application of what is now known as the "immersion system " to objectives of short focus and large

| angular aperture is attended, not merely with the advan- | tages expected by Professor Amici, but with others on which

he did not reckon. As the loss of light by the reflexion of a portion of the incident rays increases with the obliquity

_ of their incidence, and as the proportional loss is far smaller _when the oblique rays pass into glass from water than

'when they enter it from air, the advantage of increas-

ing the angular aperture is more fully experienced with "immersion" than with "dry" objectives,—just as Professor Amici anticipated. But, further, the immer-

_ sion system allows of a greater working distance between _ the objective and the object than can be attained with a dry or air objective having the

same angular aperture ;

and this increase affords not only a greater freedom of manipulation, but also a greater range of “ penetration ” or “focal depth.” Further, the observer is rendered so much less dependent upon the exactness of his cover-correction that it is found that water-immersion objectives of high power and considerable angular aperture, extremely well adapted for the ordinary purposes of scientific inves- tigation, can be constructed without it,—a small departure from the standard thickness of covering-glass to which such objectives are adjusted by the maker having scarcely any effect upon the distinctness of the image. It is now the practice of several makers to supply two fronts to objectives of ;‘5 or 3}; inch focus, one of them fitting the objective for use “dry” (that is, in air), whilst the substitution of the other converts it into a water-immersion objective. And in the objectives constructed on Mr Wenham’s system no change in the front glass is needed, all that is necessary for making them work as immersion-lenses being a yet closer approximation of the front lens to the second combination, which can be made by the screw-collar.

Within the last few years, however, the immersion system has- undergone a still further and most important development, by the adoption of a method originally suggested by Mr Wenham (though never carried out by him), and independently suggested by Mr Stephenson to Professor Abbe of Jena, under whose direction it was first worked out by Zeiss (the very able optician of Jena), who has been followed by Powell and Lealand of London, as

‘| well as by several other constructors of achromatic objec-

tives both in England and elsewhere, with complete success. This method consists in the replacement of the water previously interposed between the covering-glass and the front glass of the objective by a liquid having the same refractive and dispersive powers as crown-glass, so that the rays issuing at any angle from the upper plane surface of the covering-glass shall enter the plane front of the objec- tive, without any deflexion from their straight course, and without any sensible loss by reflexion,—even the most

oblique rays that proceed from the object keeping their direction unchanged until they meet the back or convex surface of the: front lens of the objective. It is obvious that all the advantages derivable from the system of water- immersion will be still more thoroughly attained by this system of “homogeneous” immersion, provided that a fluid can be obtained which meets its requirements. After a long course of experiments, Professor Abbe found that oil of cedar wood so nearly corresponds with crown-glass, alike in refractive and in dispersive power, as to serve the purpose extremely well, except whén it is desired to take special advantage of the most divergent or marginal rays, oil of fennel being then preferable. There are, however, strong objections to the use of these essential oils in the ordinary work of research ; and it seems not unlikely that a solution of some one or more saline substances will be found more suitable. In addition to the benefit conferred by the water-immersion system, and more completely attained with the homogeneous, it may be specially pointed out that, as no correction for the thickness of the covering- glass is here required, the microscopist can feel assured that he has such a view of his object as only the most per- fect correction of an air-objective can afford. This is a matter of no small importance, for while, in looking at a known object, the practised microscopist can so adjust his air-objective to the thickness of its covering-glass as to bring out its best performance, he cannot be sure, in regard to an unknown object, what appearances it ought to pre- sent, and may be led by imperfect cover-correction to an erroneous conception of its structure.

It has been recently argued that, as the slightest variation in the refractive index of either the immersion fluid or the covering-glass, a change of eye-pieces, or the least alteration in the length of the body—ina word, any circumstances differing in the slightest degree from those under which the objective was corrected—must afleet the performance of homogeneous-immersion objectives of the highest class, they should still be made adjustable. The truth of this contention can, no doubt, be proved, not only theoretically, but practically, the introduction of the adjustment enabling an experi- enced manipulator to attain the highest degree of perfection in the exhibition of many mounted objects, which cannot be so well shown with objectives in fixed settings. But it may well be questioned whether it is likely to do the same service in the hands of an ordi- nary working

histologist, and whether the scientific investigator will not find it preferable, when using these objectives, to accept what their maker has fixed as their point of best performance. The principal source of error in his employment of thei lies in the thickness of the optieal section of the object; for the rays proceeding from its deeper plane, having to pass through a medium intervening between that plane and the cover-glass, whose refractive and dispersive indices differ from those of the glass and' immersion-fluid, cannot be brought to so aecnrate a focus as those proceeding from the plane immediately beneath the cover-glass. The remedy for this, how- ever, seems to lie rather in making the preparation as thin as possible than in the introduetion of what is likely, im any but the most skilful and experienced hands, to prove a new source of error. Every one who has examined muscular fibre, for example, under a dry objective of very high power and large aperture, well knows

that so greatan alteration is produced in its aspect by the slightest

change in either the foeal adjustment or the cover-correction that it is impossible to say with certainty what are the appear- ances which give the most correct optical expression ofits structure. This being a matter of judgment on the part of each observer, it seems obvious that the nearest approach to a correet view will be probably given by the focal adjustment of the best homogeneous immersion-objectives, in fixed settings, to the plane of the prepara- tion immediately beneath the cover-glass (see Jour. Roy. Micros. Soc., 1882, pp. 407, 854, 906).

265

In every particular in which the water-immersion system is superior to the dry, it is itself surpassed by the oil or other homogeneous system, the anticipa- tions of those by whom it was suggested being thus fully realized. But the advantages already spoken of as deriv- able from the use of the ‘‘immersion system ” are altogether surpassed by that which the theoretical studies of Professor Abbe have led him to assign to it, and of which he has practically demonstrated its possession. Tor he has shown (as will be explained below) that the interposition of either water or oil so greatly increases the real “aperture” of the objective that immersion-objectives may

be constructed having a far greater virtua! aperture than even the theo-retical maximum (180°) of the angular aperture of an air-objective.

The same eminent physicist, working on the basis supplied by the mathematical investigations of Professor Helmholtz and himself on the undulatory theory of light, has further established an entirely new doctrine in regard to the production of highly magnified representations of closely approximated markings. All that has hitherto been said of the formation of images by the compound microscope relates to such as are produced, in accordance with the laws of refraction, by the alteration in direction which the light-rays undergo in their passage through the lenses interposed between the object and the eye. These dioptric images, when formed by lenses free from spherical and chromatic aberration, are geometrically correct pictures, truly representing the appearances which the objects them-selves would present were they enlarged to the same scale and viewed under similar illumination. And we seem justified, therefore, in drawing from such microscopic images the same conclusions in regard to the objects they picture as we should draw from the direct vision of actual objects having the same dimensions. The principal source of error in such interpretations arises out of the ‘interference ” to which the rays of light are subjected along the edges of the minute objects through which they pass, or along any such lines or margins in their inner part as are sufficiently opaque to throw a definite shadow. For every such shadow must be bordered, more or less obviously, by inter- ference- or diffraction-spectra; and thus the images of strongly-lined objects with very transparent intermediate spaces may be so troubled or confused by these “ diffraction- spectra” as to render it very doubtful what interpretation is to be put upon their appearances.

A good example of this kind is afforded by the scales of the gnat or mosquito, whieh are composed of a very delicate double membrane, strengthened by longitudinal ribs on both sides, those of the opposite sides uniting at the broad end of the scale, where they generally terminate as bristle-shaped appendages beyond the intermediate membrane. These are crossed by fine markings, which are probably ridge-like corrugations of the membrane, common to both sides of the scale. Between each pair of longitudinal ridges there may be seen, under certain adjustments of foens and illumi- nation, three uniform parallel rows of beads, whieh have been

supposed to represent a true strueture in the membrane. By Dr Woodward (colonel in the United States army), however, it has been shown that this beaded appearance is merely the result of the ‘‘inter- ferences” produced by the longitudinal and transverse lines of the scale. For the longitudinal diffraction-lines are clearly seen, alike in the microscopic image and in photographs (fig. 13), to extend into empty space beyond the contour of the scales, almost as far as the ends of the bristles in which the parallel ribs terminate; and they vary in number with the varying obliquity of illumination, so

that in the same scale two, three, four, or even five rows of beads ean be seen, and photographed at pleasure, in every intercostal

space.!

Every microscopist who has worked much with high powers is well aware of the difficulty of distinguishing between real and spectral mmarkings,—a difficulty which can only be overcome by training and experience. It seems,

1 Monthly Micros. Jour., vol. xv. (1876), p. 253. XVI. — 34

however, to have been now fully ascertained by Pro- fessor Abbe that it is only through such diffraction-spectra

that the microscope can make us acquainted with the

minutest structural features of objects, since, according to the calculations of Professor Helmholtz and himself

(based on the constants of the undulatory theory), no—

amount of magnifying power can separate dioptrically two lines, apertyires, or markings of any kind, not more than xsoo Of an inch apart. The visual differentiation or “resolution ” of lines or other markings whose distance lies

neh IO a TT aaa Seigie erties eres Sa “—, es i = ee tt _

Fia. 13.—Seale of G1

lat, showing Beaded Markin from a Photograph by Colonel Dr

Woodward. within that limit is entirely the result of "'interference,"— | the objective receiving and transmitting, not only dioptric rays, but the inflected rays whose course has been altered in their passage through the object by the peculiar disposi- tion of its particles, and combining these rays into a series of diffraction-spectra, the number and relative position of which bear a relation to the structural arrangement on which their production depends. If the objective be per- fectly corrected, and all the diffraction-spectra lie within its field, these will be recombined by the eye-piece so as to form a secondary or " diffraction " image, lying in the same plane with the dioptric image, and coinciding with it, while filling up its outlines by supplying intermediate details. But where the markings (of whatever nature) are so closely approximated as to produce a wide dispersion of the inter- ference-spectra, only a part of them may fall within the range of the objective ; and the recombination of these by the eye-piece may produce a' diffraction-image differing more or less completely (perhaps even totally) from the real structure ; while, if they should lie entirely outside the field of the objective, no secondary or diffraction image will be produced. And thus, while the general form of such an object as a diatom-valve may be correctly given in a dioptric image, its surface may appear quite unmarked under an objective of small aperture, however great its magnifying power, though covered with regularly disposed markings when seen through an objective of wider aperture with perhaps only half the magnifying power.

It is obvious, however, that, while the dioptric image represents the actual object, the diffraction-image thus formed by the reunion of a portion of the interference pencils is only an optical expression of the result of their | partial recombination, which may represent something entirely different from the real structure. For it has been proved experimentally, by placing finely-ruled gratings in | the position of objects, and by limiting the apertures of objectives by diaphragms with variously disposed perfora- tions, that the same arrangement of lines shall be presented to the eye by differently lined surfaces, and different arrangements by similarly lined surfaces, according to the | numbers and relative positions of the reunited

spectra. Hence it is clear that there must be an essential difference in character and trustworthiness between the images dioptrically formed of the general outlines and larger details of microscopic objects and those representations of |

gs produced by Diffraction ;

| emulation of surpassing what Pro

SCOPE

| their diffraction-spectra,! and that the confidence to be | placed in the latter class of representations will be greater in proportion to the completeness of the recombination of the separated interference-spectra, which, again, will be _ proportional (accurate correction of the aberrations being assumed) to the aperture of the objective.? | The combined ‘advance of scientific theory and of _ practical skill in the application of it have now brought up the compound achromatic microscope to an optical per-

| fection that renders it capable of actually doing almost

everything of which, in the present state of optical theory, it can be regarded as capable. The resolution of Nobert’s nineteenth band, having 112,595 lines ~ to an inch, which was long regarded as the crux of “=~ microscopists, is now found so easy as to leave little ~-4 room for doubt that, if a new test were obtainable g- having the minimum visibile of 118,000 lines to the inch, an oil-immersion objective would be found to resolve it. But the experience of the past makes it evident that, as no limit can be set to the advance of optical theory, results yet more remarkable may be still expected to arise, every such advance being turned to account by the practical skill which experience has — now enabled the best constructors of achromatic ob- Jectives to attain.3

The progressive improvements thus effected in the construction of microscopic objectives have been accompanied by other improve- ments, alike in the optical and in the mechanical arrangements by which the best performance of these objectives can be secured; and it will be desirable now to describe in succession the most approved forms of the eye-piece, the

objective, and the illuminating apparatus respectively, and then those of the instrument as a whole, point- ing out the special adaptiveness of each to the requirements of different classes of scientific investigators.

Eyer-Pirecrs.

It very early became obvious to those who were engaged in the achromatization of microscopic objectives that their best performance was obtained when the image given by them was further enlarged by the eye-piece known as the Huygenian, as having been devised by Huygens for his telescopes. ‘It consists of two plano-convex lenses (KE and FF, fig. 4), with their plane sides towards the eye ; these are placed at a distance equal to half the swn of their focal lengths,—or, to speak with more precision, at half the sum of the focal length of the eye-glass, and of the dis- tance from the field-glass at which an image of the object-glass would be formed by it. A ‘stop” or diaphragm BB must be placed between the two lenses, in the visual focus of the eye-glass, which is, of course, the position wherein the image of the object will be formed by the rays fips 2 into convergence by their passage throngh the field-glass. uygens devised this arrange- ment merely to diminish the spherical aberration ; but it was subse- quently shown by Boscovich that the chromatie dispersion was also in great part corrected by it. Since the introduction of achromatic object-glasses for compound microscopes, it has been further shown that nearly all error may be avoided by a slight over-correction of these, so that the blue and red rays may be caused to enter the eye ina parallel diréction (though not actually coincident), and thus to produce a colourless image. Thus let N, M, N (fig. 14) repre- sent the two extreme rays of three pencils, which without the field-glass would form a blue image convex to the eye-glass at BB, and a red one at RR; then, by the intervention of the field-glass,

_abhie image concave to the eye-glass is formed at B’B’, and a red

‘ Thus it is still a moot point whether the microscopic appear- ances seen in the siliceous valves of diatoms (figs. 8-11) are the optical representations of elevations, depressions, or perforations, or of internal molecular arrangements not involving any inequality of surface,

- This doctrine was first fully developed by Professor Abbe in the Archiv fiir Microsk. Anatomie, vol. ix. (1874), and is more fully ex- pounded in his subsequent contributions to Jour. Roy. Micros. Soc. See also the papers of Mr Stephenson and Mr Crisp in that journal, and in the preceding Monthly M: tcroscopical Journal.

3 Any good workman can now make by the dozen such small-angled 4 inch objectives as Mr A. Ross produeed with much pains and labour fifty years ago. It was not until 1844 that, with the honourable fessor Amici had then accomplished,

he produced a +p inch of 135°, which, by taking advantage of some

their finer details which are given by the recombination of

very heavy flint-glass he had, he afterwards increased to 170°,

MICROSCOPE

one at R’R’. As the focens of the eye-glass is shorter for blue rays than for red rays by just the difference in the place of these images, their rays, after refraction by it, enter the eye in a parallel direetion, and produee a picture free from false colour. If the object-glass had been rendered perfectly achromatie, the blue rays, after passing through the field-glass, would have been brought to a foeus at b, and the red at 7 ; so that an error would be produced, which would have been increased in- stead of being corrected by the eye-glass. Another advantage of a well-constructed Huy- genian eye-piece is that the image produeed by the meet- ing of the rays after passing through the field-glass is by it rendered concave towards the eye-glass instead of convex, so that every part of it may be in focus at the same time, and the field of view thereby rendered flat.? N

Two or more Huygenian eye- pieces, of different magnify- ing powers, known as A, B, C, &c., are usually supplied with a compound microscope. The utility of the higher powers will mainly depend upon the excellence of the objectives ; for, when an achromatie combination of small aperture which is sufficiently well corrected to perform very tolerably with a ‘“‘low” or ‘‘shallow” eye-piece is used with an eye-piece of higher magnifying

power (com- monly spoken of asa ‘‘ deeper” one), the image may lose more in brightness and in definition than is gained by its amplifieation, while the image given by an objective of large angular aperture and very perfect correction shall sustain so little loss of light or of definition by ‘‘deep eye-piecing” that the increase of magnifying power shall be almost clear gain. Hence the modes in which different objectives of the same power, whose performance .with shallow eye-pieceés is nearly the same, are respectively affected by deep eye-picces afford a good test of their respective merits, since any defeet in the correc- tions is sure to be brought out by the higher amplification of the image, while a deficiency of aperture is manifested by the want of light. The working microscopist will generally find the A eye-piece most suitable, B being occasionally employed when a greater power is required to separate details, whilst C and others still deeper are useful for the purpose of testing the goodness of objectives, or for special investigations requiring the highest, amplification with objectives of the finest quality. But he can commit no greater error than habitually to use deep eye-pieces for the purposes of scientific research, especially when (as in the study of living objects) long-continued and nnintermitted observation is necessary. For the visual strain thus occasioned is exactly like that resulting from the habitual use of magnifying spectacles in reading, requir-ing the book to be held within 2 or 3 inches of the eye. And all experienee shows that this feeling of strain eannot be dis- regarded, without the most injurions consequences to vision.

For viewing large flat objects, such as transverse sections of wood or of Hchinus spines, nnder low magnifying powers, the eye-piece known as Kellner’s may be employed with advantage. In this eonstruction the field-glass, which is a donble-convex lens, is placed in the focus of the eye-glass, without the interposition of a diaphragm ; and the eye-glass is an achromatic combination of a plano-concave of flint with a double-convex of crown, which is slightly under-corrected, so as to neutralize the over-correction given to the objectives for use with Huygenian eye-pieces. A flat well-illuminated field of as much as 14 inehes in diameter may thus be obtained with very little loss of light; but, on the other hand, there is a certain impairment of defining power, which renders the Kellner eye-piece unsuitable for objects presenting minute struetural details; and it is an additional objeetion that the smallest speck or smear upon the surface of the

field-glass is made so unpleasantly obvious that the most careful eleansing of that surface is required every time that this eye-pieee is used. Hence it is better fitted for the occasional display of objects of the eharaeter already specified than for the ordinary wants of the working microseopist.

Solid eye-pieces, consisting of cylinders of glass with convex ends, are sometimes used in place of the Huygenian, when high magni- fying power is required for testing the performanee of objectives. The lower surface, which has the lesser convexity, serves as a

4s

Fia. 14.—Seetion of Huygenian Eye- Pieee, adapted to Over-Correeted Mieroseopie Objeetives.

1 The reader may be referred to Mr Varley's investigation of the properties of the Huygenian eye-pieee in the fifty-first volume of the Transactions of the Society of Arts; and to-the article ''Microscope,"' by Mr Ross, in the Penny Cyclopedia, reprinted, with additions, in the English Cyclopedia.

|

field-glass, while the image formed by this is magnified by the highly convex 'upper surface to which the eye is applied, —the advantage derivable from this construction lying in the abolition of the plane surfaces of the two lenses of the ordinary eye-piece.?

A "positive" or Ramsden's eye-piece—in which the field-glass, whose convex side is turned upwards, is placed so much nearer the eye-glass that the image formed by the objective lies below instead of above it—was formerly used for the purpose of mierometry,-—a divided glass being fitted in the exact plane occupied by the image, so that its-seale and that image are both magnified together by the lenses interposed between them and the eye. The same end, how- ever, may be so readily attained with the Huygenian eye-piece that no essential advantage is gained by the use of that of Ramsden, the field of which is distinct only in its centre.

OBJECTIVES.

It has been seen that one of the principal points in the con-

struction of microscopic objectives to which the attention of their makers has been constantly directed has been the enlargement of their ‘‘aperture,”’—this term being understood to mean, not their absolute opening as expressed by linear measure, but their eapacity for receiving and bringing to a remote eonjugate focns the rays diverging from the several points of a near object. The aper- ture of an objective has been usually estimated by its ‘‘angle of aperture, ’’—that is, by the degree of divergence of the most extreme rays proceeding from the axial point of the object to the margin of the objective (fig. 15) which take part in the formation of the image. It is pointed out, however, . by Professor Abbe that, in the ease of single lenses used as objectives, their apertures are really propor- tional, not to their respective angles of aperture, but to the ratio between the actual diameter or clear opening of each to its focal distanee, a ratio which is simply expressed by the sine of its semiangle. And in the case of eombinations of lenses it ean be demonstrated mathematically that their respective apertures are de- terminable—other conditions being the same—by the ratio of the dia- meters of their back lenses, so far as Fic. 15.—Seetion of Achromatic these are really ntilized, to their Object-Glass, eomposed of respective focal lengths,—this ratio three pairs of (flint and being expressed, as before, by the sine eTown) lenses. abe is its angle of the semiangle of aperture (sin w). of aperture. The difference between these two modes of comparison ean be readily made obvious by reference to the theoretical maximum of 180°, whieh is attained by opening out the boundaries of the angle abe (fig. 15) until they eome into the same straight line, the sine of the semiangle (90°) then becoming unity. For, while an objective having an angle of 60° would count by comparison of angles as having only one-third of the theoretical maximum, its real aperture would be half that maximnm since the sine of its semiangle (30°)=}. And, as the sines of angles beyond 60° increase very slowly, an objective of 120° angle will have as much as 87 per cent. of the theoretical maximum of apertnre, although its angle is only two-thirds, or 66°6 per cent., of 180°. It henee becomes obvious that little is really gained in real aperture by the opening-out of the angle of microscopic objectives to its greatest practicable limit

(whieh may be taken as 170°), while such extension—even if unattended with any loss either of definition or of colour-correction —necessarily involves a great reduction alike in the working dis- tance and in the,focal depth or penetration of the combination, as will be presently explained.

Numerical Aperture.—It has now been demonstrated by Professor Abbe that, independently of the advantages already specified as derivable from the application of the immersion system to objectives of short focus and wide aperture, the real aperture: of an immer- sion objective is considerably.greater than that of a dry or air objective of the same angle,—the comparative apertures of objec- tives working through different media being in the compound ratio of two faetors, viz., the sines of their respective semiangles of aperture and the refractive indices of the ‘‘immersion” fluids. It is the produet of these (nsinw) that gives what is termed by Professor Abbe the ‘‘numerical aperture,’’—which serves, therefore, as the only true standard of comparison, not only between dry or air and water or oil immersion lenses, but also between immersion lenses adapted to work respectively with water, oil, or any other interposed fluid. That the angle of aperture expressed by the same number of degrees must correspond with very different work- ing apertures in dry, water immersion, and oil or homogeneons immersion objectives becomes evident when we consider what

2 These eye-pieces are much in vogue in the United States, where they are made of extremely short foci,—even to ,’, inch.

happens when divergent peucils of rays pass from one medium into another of higher refractive index. For such divergent pencils, proceeding from air into water or oil, will be closed together or eompressed ; so that the rays whieh, when au object is mounted in air, spread out over the whole hemisphere then form .comparatively narrow pencils, and ean thus be utilized by an immersion objective of smaller aperture than is required in a dry objective to admit the most diverging rays of air-pencils. It follows, therefore, that a given angle in a water or oil immersion objective represents a much larger aperture than does the same angle in an air-objective ; and thus it comes to pass that by opening out the angle of immersion objectives

they may be made to receive and utilize rays of much greater divergence than can possibly enter dry objectives of even maximum aperture.

The following table, abridged from that given by I rofessor Abbe for every 0°02 of numerical aperture from 0°50 up to the maximum of 1°52, brings this contrast into elear view :—

Numerical Aperture Table.

Theoretical |

| Angle of Aperture (=2u). or Resolving | Pene-

F —_ eee ae ee —— jtUMi-| a rin | trating Numerical Power, in

A pestigs | Dry Water- | Homogeneons- as. Lines to | Power

(nsinuw=a).| Objec- | Immersion| Immersion | (a2 anIneh | (*)

| | tives | Objectives | Objectives) | a=0-5269n; a)‘ (n=1). | (n=1°33). (n=1‘52), =line E).

° i’d oF , ‘4 1 aan 1°52 180 0 2°310 146,528 658 | 1°42 138 12 2°016 136,888 “T04 1°33 O L22 6: 1:770 128,212 ‘752 i268 4 ees 111 59 1-588 | 121,464 ‘794 1:18 oie 101 50 1°392 113,752 *847 2 siete 94 56 1:254 107,968 893 1°06 AGG 88 26 1°124 102,184 “943

1:00 180 0 82 17 1:000 96,400 1000

0°94 76 24 884 90,616 1064 0°86 68 54 ‘740 82,904 1:163 0°80 63 81 “640 77,120 1250

0-76 60 0 *578 73,264 1-316

0:70 54 50 “490 67,480 1-429 | 0°62 48 9 384 59,768 1:613 | 0°56 43 14 “314 53,984 1°786 | 0°50 38 4 1950) 48.200 | 2-000

Thus, taking as a standard of comparison a dry objective of the maximum theoretical angle of 180°, whose numerical aper- ture is the sine of 90°, or

1:00, we find this standard equalled by a water-immersion objective whose angle of aperture is no more than 973°, and by an oil or homogeneous immersion objective of only 82°,—the numerieal apertures of these, obtained by multi- plying the sines of their respective semiangles by the refractive index of water or of oil, being 1:00 in each ease. Each, there- fore, will have as great a power of reeeiving and utilizing divergent rays as any dry objective ean even theoretically possess.

But, as. the actual angle of either a water or an oil immersion objective can be opened out to the same extent as that of an air or dry objective, it follows that the aperture of the former ean be augmented far beyond even the theoretical maximum of the latter. Thus the numerical aperture of a water-immersion lens of the mlaximuin angle of 180° is 1°33, or one-third greater than that of an air-lens of the same angle; and this aperture would be given by an oil-immersion objective of only 122°. Again, the numerical aperture of an oil-immersion objective having the theo- retical maximum angle of 180° would be 1°52, or more than one- half greater than that of an air-lens of the same angle. And the numerical . apertures corresponding to angles of 170°, which have been actually attained in both eases, fall very little short of the proportions just given. a

So, again, an oil-immersion objective whose angle of aperture is only 60° has as high a numerical aperture (0°76) as a water- iminersion objective of 694°, oras a dry objective of 99°; and a dry objeetive of 140° has no greater a numerical aperture (0°94) than a water-immersion of 90° or an oil-immersion of 763°.

This important doetrine may be best made practically intelligible by a comparison of the relative diameters of the baek lenses of dry with those of water and oil immersion objectives of the. same power, from an ‘‘air-angle” of 60° to an ‘‘oil-angle” of 180°,—these diameters expressing, in each case, the opening between the extreme pencil-formiug rays at their issue from the posterior surface of the combination, to meet in its conjugate foeus for the formation of the image, the relation of which opening in each ease to the focal length of the combination is the real measure of its aperture (fig. 16). Thus the dry objective of 60° angle (5 in fig. 16) has its air-angle represented by sinw=4=0°50 numerical aperture. The dry objeetive of 97°

(4) has its air-angle represented by sinw= {=0°75 numerical aperture. And the dry objective having the’ (theoretical) angle of 180° (3) has its air-angle represented by sinw =1°00 numerical aperture,—this corresponding to 96° water- angle and 82° oil-angle. But the water-immersion lens having the (theoretical) angle of 180° (2) has its water-angle represented by nsinu=1°33 unmerical aperture. And the oil-immersion

SCOPE

lens having the (theoretical) angle of 180° (1) has its oil-angle represented by mnsinw=1°52 ‘numerieal aperture.”! These theoretical apertures for water and oil immersiou lenses having becn found as nearly attainable in practice as the theoretical maximum for dry objectives, such lenses ean utilize rays from objects mounted in balsam or other dense media, ; whieh are entirely lost for the image (since they do not exist physieally) when the same object is in air or is observed through a film of air. And this loss eannot be compensated by an increase of illumination; because the rays which are lost are different rays physi- cally from those obtained by any illnmi- nation, however intense, through an aeriform medium.

It is by inereasing the number of diffrae- tion-spectra that the additional rays thus received by objeetives of great numerical aperture impart to them an increased resoly- ing power for lined and dotted objects, — the truth of the image formed by the reeom- bination of these spectra being (as already shown) essentially dependent on the number of them that the objective may be eapable of reeeiving. ,

But whilst the resolving power of micro- seopie objectives imereases in the ratio of their respective numerical apertures, and whilst their illuminating power (dependent npon the quantity of light that passes through them) increases with the square of the numerical aperture, the case is reversed with another most important quality, —that of penetration or focal depth; for this diminishes as the aimitioal aperture in- creases, until nothing but what is precisely in the focal plane ean be even diseerned with objectives possessed of the highest resolving power, Thus, the penetrating power of an Fic. 16.—Relative Dia- objective of 60° air-angle being expressed meters of Back Lenses as 2000, an extension of that angle to 764° of Air, Water, and reduces it to 1°613, an extension to 89° Oil Immersion Objec- reduees it to

1‘429, and an extension to 99° tives. reduees it to 1°316; further extension to 118° reduces it to 1‘163, while an objective whose air-augle is 140° has a penetrating power of only 1:064. So, again, the oil-immersion objective which has the numerical aperture of 1:00 corresponding to the theoretical air- angle of 180° has a penetrating power of 1°000; this is brought down to 752 when its angle is so increased as to make its numerical aperture 1°33, equalling the theoretical maximum of a water- immersion objective, and is ‘658 at the theoretical maximum (1°52) of an oil-objeetive.

Heuee it is clear that, as some of the qualities to be sought in microscopie objectives are absolutely incompatible, a preference is to be aceorded to objectives of greatest resolving power but very little penetration, or to those of moderate resolving power and great eee aeeording to the uses to whieh they are to be applied; and some general principles will now be laid down in regard to this matter, based alike on science and experience,

In the first place, a marked distinction is to be drawn between those objectives of low or moderate power which are to be worked dioptrically and those of high power which are to be worked dif- fractively. The objects on which the former are to be for the most part used are either minute transparent bodies having solid forms which the observer should be able to take in as wholes (as in the ease of Polycystina, the larger diatoms, Infusoria, &e.); or trans- pareit seetious, dissections, or injections, whose parts lie in different planes, the general relations of which he desires to study, while reserving their details for more special serutiny ; or opaque objeets, whose strueture can only be apprehended from the examination of their surfaces, when ~~the inequalities of those sur~~ faces are seen in their relations to each other. In all these eases it is desirable that microscopic vision should resemble ordinary Vision as much as possible. If the eye were so constructed as to enable us to discern only those parts of an objeet that lie pre- eisely in the plane to which we focus it, our visual eoneeptions of the forms and relations of these parts, and eonsequently of the object as a whole, would in general be very inadequate, and often erroneous. It is because, while focussing our eye successively on the several planes of the object, we ean see the relation of each to what is nearer and more remote that we can readily aequire a visual econeeption of its shape as a whole, and that unmistakable pereeption of solid form which is given by the

combination of the two dissimilar perspectives of near objects in binocular vision

1 The dotted circles in the interior of 1 and 2, of the same diameter as 3, show the excess in the dinmeters of the back lenses of the water and vil objectives over that of the dry at their respective theoretical limits.

mYeor Ors C OP

(p. 278) could not possibly be formed if onr vision were strictly limited to the exact plane for which our eyes are focussed. Hence it is obvious that, in the case of objectives of low and

for the want of which no other excellence can compensate, — the opening-out of their apertures being only advantageons in so far as it does not seriously interfere with their penetrating power. It is, no donbt, quite possible to construct a 1 inch

objective with an aperture so large that, when the requisite ampli- |

fieation has been gained by deep eye-piccing, it shall resolve – the lined “tests” ordinarily nsed for a 4, or to construct an

objective of y ineh focus which shall in like manner do the | But, as such objectives are thereby spoiled |

ordinary work of a }. for their own proper work, the loss to the microscopist is but poorly compensated by his ability to resolve with them, under snch deep eye-pieces as cannot be habitually used without serions risk to the eye-sight, the lined and dotted tests which can be mnch better shown under objectives of shorter focus and wider aperture, with eye- pieces of low amplification. For, whilst deep eye-picces cannot he habitually employed for continuons obscrvation, without putting a strain upou the eyes resembling that which resnlts from the constant use of a magnifying glass, even the very highest objectives may be used continnonsly for long periods in combination with shallow eye-pieces, with scarcely any fatigne, and therefore (it is probable) without sensible injury.’

In estimating the goodness of a microscopic objective, five distinct qualities have to be separately considcred:—(1) its work- ing distance, or the actnal interval between its front lens and the objeet on which it is focussed; (2) its penetrating power, or focal depth; (8) the flatness of its field; (4) its definition, or power of giving a distinct image of all well-marked features of an object, and especially of their boundary lines; and (5) its resolving power, by which it separates closely approximated lines, dots, or striz.

1. The ‘‘ working distance” of an objective has no fixed relation to its focal length,—the latter being estimated by its equality in power with a single lens of given radius of curvature (such as 1 inch, + inch, 7 inch, &c.), while the former varies with the mode in whieh the combination is constructed and with the aperture given to it. For low and moderate powers, ranging up to ys inch focus, good working distance is especially important, alike because it is closely related to penetrating power, and also because it facilitates the use of side-illumination for opaqne objects. And in sueh objectives of high power as are to be used, not for the resolution of lined or dotted tests, but for the observation of living and moving objects of extreme minuteness, good working distance is no less important, on account of its relation to focal depth. In the case of those objectives, on the other hand, in which resolving power is made the first consideration, it is only needful that the working distance shall be such as to permit the interposition of a thin glass cover; and this, although necessarily diminished with the widening of the aperture, can be always obtained by the adoption of the immersion system.

2. The ‘penetrating power” or “focal depth” of an objective may be defined as consisting in the vertical range throngh which the parts of an object not precisely in the focal plane may be seen with sufficient distinctness to enable their relations with what lies exactly in that plane to be elearly traccd out, —just as would be done by ordinary vision if the object were itself enlarged to the dimen- sions of its microscopic image. The close relation between this quality and the preceding becomes obvious when it is considered that the longer the working distance of an objective the less will the distinctness of the image it forms be affected by any given alteration (say the zy}5q of an inch) in its focal adjustment. Con- sequently, of two objectives having the same magnifying power but different working

distances, that one will have the most focal depth whose working distance is the greater. On the other hand, as the penetrating. power of an objective is redueed in direct accordance with the increase of its numerical aperture, it mnst be sacrificed wherever the highest resolving power is to be attained. Hence, as already remarked, this attribute will be very differently valued by different observers, according to the work on which they are respectively engaged. For the general purposes of biological research, not only with low or moderate (for the reasons already stated), but also with high powers, a considerable amount of focal depth is essential. It is impossible, for example, to follow satisfactorily the movements of an Ameba, or to study the ‘‘eyelosis” in the cell of a Vallisneria, or to trace the distribution of a nerve-thread, with an objective in whieh focal depth is so completely sacrificed to aperture that nothing can be discerned save what is precisely in the focal plane, since, instead of passing gradationally from one focal plane to another, as the observer can do with an objective of good penetration, he ean only get a sucees- sion of ‘‘dissolving views,” with an interval of ‘‘chaos” between

1 Henee, for work of this kind, the shallower eye-picees and longer tubes of English mieroscopes are to be preferred to the deeper eye-picees and shorter tubes of the ordinary Continental model, the shallowes! eye-picces of the latter being usually equal in power to the ordinary b cye-pieces of the former.

each pair. When, on the other hand, it is desired to scrutinize with the greatest precision snch minute details as are presented in one

| and the same focal plane (as, for example, those of the thinne: moderate amplification, focal depth or penetration is a qnality : ‘ ae eee

possible film of tissue spread out between a glass slide and its cover- ing glass), the microscopist will prefer an objective in which focal depth is subordinated to aperture, for the sake of the resolving power which he can thns command. And it will often happen in biological research that it is advantageous thus to bring objcctives of the latter class to bear upon objects which conld not have becn detected in the first instance save by objectives of mueh inferior resolving power but greater focal depth.

3. The ‘‘flatness of the field” afforded by the objective is a condition of great importance to the advantageous use of the miero- scope, since the extent of the area clearly seen at one time practi- cally depends npon it. Many objectives are so constructed that, even when the object is perfectly flat, the foci of the central and peripheral parts of the field are so different that, when the adjust- ent is made for one, the other is more or less indistinct. Hence, when the central part of the area is in focus, no more information is gained respecting the periphcral than if the latter had been alto- gether stopped out. With a really good objective, not only shonld the image be distinct over the whole ficld at once, but the marginal portion should be as free from colour as the eentral. As imperfec- tion in this respect is often masked by the contraction of the aperture of the diaphragm in the eye-picee, the relative merits of two objectives, as regards flatness of field, should always be tested under an eye-piece giving a large aperture.

4, The ‘defining power” of an objective, which depends upon the completeness of its corrections for spherical and for chromatie aberration, and upon the accurate centring of its component lenses, is an attribute essential to its satisfactory performance, whatever may. be its other qualities,—its importance in scientific research being such that no superiority in resolving power ean compensate for the want of it; and,

thongh it is possible to obtain perfect correction for spherical aberration up to the highest practicable limit of angle, yet the difficulty of securing it increases rapidly with the augmentation of aperture, the want of it being made perceptible, especially when deep eye-pieces are put on, by the blurring of clearly-marked lines or edges, and by general ‘‘fog.” Perfect colonr-correction, on the other hand, is not possible for dry lenses of the widest angle, on aeconnt of the irrationality of the secondary spectrum ; but this may be neutralized by the use of the immersion system, As already stated, what has to be aimed at in the construction of microscopic objectives is not absolute colour-correction, but a slight degree of over-correction, which, by compensating the chromatic dispersion of the Hnygenian eye-piece, shall produce an image free from false colour. As this can be secured far more easily in the construction of objectives of moderate than in those of very wide aperture, the cost of the former is proportionally smiall,—an additional reason for the preference to be given to them on other grounds, in regard to all save very special kinds of microseopic work.

5. ‘Resolving power,” being that by which very minnte and closely approximated markings—whether lines, strie, dots, or apertures—can be separately discerned, is a fumetion which is only of primary importance in objectives whose amplifying power specially fits them for the stndy of objects of this class. It appears from the mathematical researches of Professor Abbe that the maximum resolving power (with a theoretical angle of 180°) would be capable of separating 146,528 lines to the inch ; but he considers the limit of visual resolution depending on the power of the eye to be about yrvstz of au inch; and this limit secms to have been nearly reached. To make such a separation distinctly perceptible, an amplification of at least 3000 linear would be requisite ; and this can only be obtained either by the use of an objective of very high power (such as 3’s inch focus) in combination with a low or medinm eye-piece or by putting a very deep eye-piece npon an objective of lower power (snch asa 4 ineh),—the former method, for the reasons already given, being decidedly preferable. For the resolution of less closely approximated markings objectives of sy, ao, iz, and A inch answer very well; and the resolving power which they reqnire may be obtained without any excessive widening of the aperture. For the loss of resolving power consequent upon the contraction of the angle of a watcr-immersion objective to 128}° is only one-tenth of the theoretical

maximmm 128,212 ; while a redue- tion to 1052° only lowers the number of separable lines to 102,184 to the inch,—thus diminishing the resolving power by little more than one-fifth, while the working distance and focal depth of the combination are greatly increascd, and perfect definition is more certainly attainable. The 4 inch is (aceording to the writers experience, which is confirmed by the theoretical deductions of Professor Abbe) the lowest objective in whieh resolving power should be made the primary qnalification,—the 3, %, a and 3%5 inch being specially suited to kinds of biological work in which this is far less important than focal depth and dioptric precision. This view is strengthened by the very important cousideration that the resolving power given by wide aperture cannot be utilized, except by a method of illumination that causes light to pass through

270 WL he Q the object at an obliquity corresponding to that at which the most divergent rays enter the objective. Now, although in the case of objects whose markings are only superficial such obliquity may not be productive of false appearances (though even this is scarecly con- ceivable), it must have that effeet when the object is thick enough to have an internal structure ; and the experience of all biological observers who have carried ont the most delicate and difhieult investigations is in accord, not only as to the advantage of direct illumination, but as to the deceptiveness of the appearances given by oblique, and the consequent danger of error in any inferences dyvawn from the latter. Thus, for example, the admirable researches of Strassburger, Fleming, Klein, and others npon the changes pinch take place mm cell-nuclei during their subdivision can only be followed and verified (as the writer can personally testify) by examination of these objects under axial illumination, with objec- tives of an angle so moderate as to possess focal depth enough to follow the wonderful differentiation of component parts brought out by staining processes through their whole thickness, — The most perfect objectives for the ordinary purposes of scientific research, therefore, will be obvionsly those which combine exact definition and flatness of field with the widest aperture that can be given without an inconvenient reduction of working distance and loss of the degree of focal depth suitable to the work on which they are respectively to beemployed. ‘These last attributes are especially needed in the study of living and moving objects ; and, in the case of these,

dry objectives are decidedly preferable to immersion, since the shitting of the slide which is reynisite to enable the moye- ment of the ohject to he followed is very apt to produce disarrange- nent of the interposed drop. And, owing to the solvent power which the essential oils employed for homogeneous Immersion have for the ordinary eements and varnishes, such care is necessary in the use of objectives constrneted to work with them as can ouly be given when the observer desires to make a very minnte and critical examination of a securely-mounted object. _ The following table expresses the magnifying powers of objectives constructed on the English scale of inches and parts of an inch, with the 10 inch body and the A and B eye-pieces usually supplied by English makers, and also specifies the angle of aperture which, in the writer's judgment, is most suitable for cach. He has the satistac- tion of finding that his opinions on this latter point, which are based on long experience in the microscopic study of a wider range of animal and vegetable objects than has fallen within the purview of most of his contemporaries, are in aceordance with the conclu- sions drawn by Professor Abbe from his profound investigations into the theory of microscopic vision,! which have been carried into practical accomplishment in the excellent productions of Mr Zeiss,

Magnifying | Magnifying | > u . ‘ ¥oeal Angular Power. __ || Foeal Angular | _ _ Power. ut Length. | Aperture. A Eye-| B Eye- Length. | Aperture. A Eye- | B Eye- picee. | picee. | piece. | picee. peas area | a: ae aes + inches 9 12 18 Linch. | 50-80 | 200 | 300 fe 1 | 1s 27 a; 95 250 | 875 24 I i 2a S0 Ui car 110 300 450 like 4 20 | 36 Ba Gee 5, 140 400 | 600 L oA 30 50 vi) {| py ” 150 500 | 750 © gs 40 75 112 | * , 160 600 | 900 a Gh 45 100 150 | sy 170 800 1200 els ” 70 125 187 | |

i

For ordinary biological work, the 3, 5, and 34 objectives, with angles of from 100° to 120°, will be found to answer extremely well if constructed on the water-immersion system.

Kach of these powers should be tested upon objects most snited to determine its capacity for the particular kind of work on which it is to be employed ; and, in such testing, the application of deeper eye- pieces than can be habitually employed with advantage will often serve to bring ont

marked differences between two objectives which seem to work almost eqnally well under those ordinarily used, — defects in definition or colour-eorrection, and want of light, which might otherwise have escaped notice, being thus made apparent. No single object is of such general utility for these purposes as a large well-marked Podura scale ; for the eye which has been trained to the use of a particular specimen of it will soon learn to recognize by its means the qualities of any objective between 1 inch and 3 inch focus ; and it may be safely asserted that the objective which most clearly and sharply exhibits its characteristic markings is the best for the ordinary work of the histologist.

For the special attribute of resolving power, on the other hand, tests of an entirely different order are required ; and these are fur- nished, as already stated, either by the more ‘diffienlt ” diatoms, or by the highest numbers of Nobert’s ruled test-plate. The diatom-valve at present most in use as a test for resolving power is the Amphipleura pellucida, the lines on which were long supposed to be more closely approximated than those of Nobert’s

1 See his paper ou ‘‘ The Relation of Aperture and Power inthe

Microseope,” in Jour, Roy. Micros. Soc., 1882, pp. 300, 460.

nineteenth band, being affirmed by Mr Sollitt to range from 126 to 130 in zs of an inch. But the admirable photographs of this valve obtained by Colonel Dr Woodward haye confirmed the conelusion long previonsly expressed by the writer, that this esti- mate was far too high, being based on the ‘‘spurious lineation” produced by diffraction, aud show that the strie on the largest

| valves do not exceed 91, while those on the smallest are never more

numerous than 100, in zy455 of an inel. The saine admirable manipulator has also obtained excellent photographs of another very difficult test-diatom, Surirclla gemma, from which it appears that its transverse strize count longitudinally at the rate of 72,000 to the inch, whilst the beaded appearances into which these may be resolved eount transversely at the rate

of 84,000 to the inch. Thus it appears that the complete resolution of these “vexatious” diatoms does not require by any means the maximum of aperture, but is probably dependent at least as much on the perfection of the corrections and the effeetiveness of the illumination.

It must be understood that there is no intention in these remarks to undeivalue the efforts which have been perseveringly made by the ablest constructors of microscopic objectives in the direction of enlargement of aperture. For these efforts, hesides increasing the resolving power of the instrument, have done the great service of producing a vast improvement in the quality of those objectives of moderate apertwre which are most valuable to the scientific biolo- gist ; and the mieroscopist who wishes his armamentum to be com- plete will provide himself with objectives of those different qualities, as well as different powers, which shall best suit his particular reqnirements.?

ILLUMINATING APPARATCS.

Every improvement in the optical performance of the compound achromatic microscope has called forth a corresponding improve- ment in the illumination of the objects viewed by it, since it soon eaine to be apparent that without such improvement the full ad- vantage of the increased defining and resolving powers of the objectives could not be obtained. For the illumination of trans- parent objects examined by light transmitted through them under low powers of moderate angle a converging pencil of rays reflected upon their under surface by a concave mirror is generally snflicient, — a ‘‘condenser ” being only needed when the imperfect transparcucy of the object requires the transmission of more light through it. And the microscopist engaged in ordinary biological studies, who works on very transparent objects with objectives of 4 or 4 inch focus, or #5 inch immersion, will find that the small concave mirror of short focus with which the Continental niodels are fur- nished (sce fig. 28) will generally prove sufticient for his needs. This mirror is usually hnng at snch a distance beneath the stage that parallel rays falling on it are brought to a focus in the object as it lies on a slip of glass resting on the stage; and thus, when the instrument is used by day, the light of a bright clond (which is pre- ferable to any other) gives a well-illuminated field, even with the powers last-

mentioned. But when lamplight is used its divergent rays are not brought toa focus in the object by a mirror that is fixed as just stated ; and the distance of the mirror beneath the stage should be made capable of increase (which is easily done by attaching it to a lengthening bar), so as to obtain the requisite focal convergence. Still the best effects of objectives of less than # inch foes cannot be secured without the aid of an achromatic condenser, interposed between the mirror and the object, so as to bring a larger body of rays to a more exact convergence,

When objectives of still higher power are employed, the employ: ment of such a eondenser becomes indispensable ; and when thie highest powers are being used by lamplight, it is desirable to dis- pense with the mirror altogether, and to place the flame exactly in the optic axis of the microscope. The condenser should be an achromatic eombination, corrected for the ordinary thickness of the glass slip on which the object lies, and capable of being so adjnsted as to focus the illuminating pencil in the object.

As it is often found desirable that an object should be illuminated by central rays alone, or that the quantity of light transmitted through it should be reduced (for bringing into view delicate details of strmeture which are invisible when the object is flooded with light), every microscope shonld be provided with some means of cutting off the outer rays of the illuminating cone. The ‘‘dia- phragm-plate ” ordinarily used for this purpose is a disk of. black metal, pivoted to the under side of the stage, and perforated with a graduated series of apertures of different diameters, any one of which can be brought, by the rotation of the disk, exactly into the optie axis of the microseope. But the required effeet can be much more advantageously obtained by the “iris-diaphragm,” in which a humber of converging plates of metal are made so to slide over each other by the motion of a lever or screw that the aper- ture is either enlarged or diminished, while always remaining prac- tically circular as well as central; and in this manner a continuous

_? See the remarks of Mr Dallinger,—whos highest powers to the study of the minutest that of any living obseryer,—in Jour. Roy,

¢ experienee in the application of the living objeets is probably greater than Micros, Soc., Deceinber 1882, p. 843.

MICRO

view of the object is obtained, with a gradational modification of the light. Another method, commonly adopted in German microscopes, is to place a draw-tube in the optic axis between the stage and the mirror, and to drop into the top of this tube one of a set of ‘‘stops” perforated with apertures of different sizes; this allows a gra- dational effect to be obtained by raising or lowering the tube, so as to place the stop nearer to or more remote from the object ; but it is not nearly so convenient as the iris-diaphrdgm; and the effect of the stop is not nearly so good when it is removed to some dis- tance beneath the object as when it is very near to the under sur- face of the glass object-slide. When an achromatic condenser is used, either a diaphragm-plate or an iris-diaphragin should be placed below its back lens, so as to cut off any required proportion of the outer rays that form its illuminating cone.

Such an arrangement, while suiting all the ordinary requirements of the microscopist who uses the highest powers of his instrnment for the purposes of biological investigation (as, for example, in the study of Bacteria or of the reproduction of the Monadina), does not serve to bring into effective use the special resolving power pos- sessed by objectives of large aperture. It has long been known that for the discernment of very closely approximated markings oblique ilInmination is advantageous,—an objective which exhibits such a diatom-valve as Plewrosigma angulatum with a smooth un- marked surface when illuminated by the central rays of the achro- matic condenser making its characteristic markings (figs. 8-11) distinctly visible when the central rays of the condenser are kept back by a stop, and the object is illuminated by its convergent mar- ginal rays only. And it has also been practically known for some time that the resolution of lined or dotted tests can be often effected by mirror illumination alone, if the mirror be so mounted as to be able to reflect rays through the object at such obliquity to the optic-axis of the microscope as to reach the margin of a wide- angled objective. Bnt it has only been since Professor Abbe’s researches have given the true theory of ‘‘ resolution” that the special advantage of obliqne

illumination has been fully compre- hended, and that the best means have been devised for using it effectively. Two different systems have now come into use, each of which has its special advantages.

One consists in the attachment of the illuminating apparatus (mirror and achromatic condenser) to a ‘‘ swinging tail-piece ”’ (see fig. 32), which, moving radially upon a pivot whose axis intersects the optie axis at right angles in the plane of the object, can trans- mit the illnminating pencil through it at any degree of obliquity that the construction of the stage allows. The direction of this pencil being of course limited to one azimuth, it is reqnisite, in order to bring out its full resolving effect, that the object should be made to rotate, by making the stage that carries it revolve round the optic axis, so that the oblique pencil may impinge upon the lines or other markings of the object in every direction successively. It will then be found that the appearances presented by the sane object often vary considerably,—one set of lines being shown when the object lies in one azimuth, and another when its azimuth has been changed by rotation through 60°, 90°, Various contrivances have also been devised for throwing very oblique illuminating pencils on the object by means of prisms placed beneath the stage.

Illumination of at least equal obliquity to that afforded by the swinging tail-piece may now, however, be obtained by the use of condensers specially constructed to give a divergence of 170° to the rays which they transmit when nsed immersionally, by bringing their flat tops into approximation to the under side of the glass slide on which the object is mounted, with the interposition of a film of water or (preferably) of glycerin. By using a central stop, marginal rays alone may be allowed to pass; and these will be transmitted through the object in every azimuth at the same time. But diaphragms with apertures limiting the transmitted rays to one part of the periphery may be so fixed in a tube beneath the condenser as to be easily made to rotate, thus sending its oblique pencils through the object in every azimuth in succession. And where this rotation of the diaphragm brings out two sets of lines at a certain angular interval a diaphragm with two marginal openings at a corresponding angular distance will enable both to be seen at once, Numerous arrangements of this kind have been devised by those who devote their special attention to the reso- lution of difficult diatom-tests ;

but they are of little or no use to those who use the microscope for biological research.

For the illumination of the surfaces of opaque objects which must be seen by reflected light the means employed will vary with the focal length of the objeetive employed. For large bright objects viewed nnder a low magnifying power good ordinary daylight is sufficient ; but if the surface of the object is dull, reflecting but little light, the aid of a bull’s-eye or large bi-convex lens must be employed in order to give it sufficient brilliance. This aid will always be required by lamplight ; and by a proper adjustment of the relative distanees of the lamp and the object the rays from the lamp may be made either to spread themselves over a wide area or to converge upon a small spot. The former is the method suitable

or some other angle. |

to large objects viewed wider a low magnifying power ; the latter to the illumination of small objects which arc to be examined under objectives of (say) 1 inch or 2 ineh focus. “Another method which may be conveniently had recourse to when the microscope is pro- vided with a swinging tail-piece is to turn this on its pivot until the concave mirror is brought above the stage, so that rays which it gathers cither from natural or artificial sonrees may be reflected downwards upon the surface of the object.

The illumination of an opaque object to be seen witha higher power than the $ or 4 inch objectives was formerly provided for by a concave speculnm (termed a Lieberkiihn after its Inventor), with a perforation in the centre for the passage of the rays to the objec- tive to which it is fitted, —the enrvatnre of the speculum being so adapted to the focus of the objective which carries it that, when the latter is dnly adjusted, the rays : reflected upwards aronnd the object from the mirror to the speculum shall converge strongly on the ob- ject. The various disadvantages of this mode of illumination, however, have caused it to be now generally superseded by other arrangements. For powers between 14 inch and ix inch, and even for a 4 or 4 inch of small angle and good working distance, nothing is so convenient as the parabolic speculum or side- illuminator (¥, fig. 17)

invented by the late Richard Beck. This is attached to a spring-clip that slides HIME on the tubes of low-power objec- = tives, so that its distance from the ——) : object and the direction of its re- FSS flected pencil are readily adjusted ; Fic. 17.—Beck's Parabolic Side- and for nse with higher powers it Illuminator, with Crouch's may be either monnted on a separ Adapter. ate arm attached to some part of the stand of the microscope, or may be hung in the manner shown in fig. 17 from an '"adapter " A interposed between the objective and the body. By rotating the collar B and making use of the joints C, C, the lengthening rod D, and the ball and socket E, any position may be given to the. speculum F that may best suit the objective with which it is used.

When, however, it is desired to illuminate objects to be seen under objectives of* high power and very short working distance, side illumination of any kind becomes difficult, though not absolutely impossible ;! and various modes have been devised for the illumina- tion of the object by means of light sent down upon it, through the objective, from above.. This is done in the vertical illuminator of Messrs Beck (fig. 18)—the original idea of which was first Cc

ETON

Fic. 18. —Beck's Vertical Hluminator.

given by the American Professor H. L. Smith—by a disk of thin glass B, b, attached to a milled head by which its angnlar position may be adjusted, and introduced by a slot A, é into the interior of an adapter that is interposed between the objective C, ¢ and the nose ¢ of the body. The light which enters at the lateral aperture A, a, falling upon the oblique surface of the disk C, 0, is reflected downwards, and is concentrated by the lenses of the objective upon the object beneath. The lateral aperture may be provided with a diaphragm, with openings of different sizes, for diminishing the false light to which this method is liable ; or a sereen with a small aperture may be placed between the lamp and the

1 Sce a method devised by Mr James Smith, in Jour. Roy. Micros, Soc., vol. iii, N.S., 1880, p. 398.

illuminator, at any distance that is found to produce the best effects. In using this illuminator, the lamp should be placed at a distance of about 8 inches from the aperture; and, when the proper adjust- ments have been made, the image of the flame should be seen upon the object. The illumination of the entire field, or the direction of the light more or less to either side of it, can easily be managed by the interposition of a small condensing lens placed at about the dis- tance of its own focus from the lamp. The objects viewed by this mode of illumination with dry-front objectives are best uncovered, since, if they are covered with thin glass, so large a proportion of the light sent down upon them is reflected from the cover (especially when objectives of large angle of aperture are employed) that very little is seen of the objects beneath, unless their reflective power is very high. With immersion objectives, however, covered objects may be used. Another method of vertical illumination long since

this effect.

devised by Mr Tolles has recently been brought into notice by Professor W. A. Rogers of Boston (U. S.). It consists in the in- troduction of a small rectangular prism at a short distance behind the front combination of the objective, so that parallel rays enter- ing its vertical surface pass on between its parallel horizontal sur- faces until they mect the inclined surface, by which they are reflected downwards. In passing through the front combination of the objective, they are deflected towards its axis; but, as their angle of convergence is less than the angle of divergence of the rays proceeding from the object, the reflected rays will not meet in the focal point of the lens, but will be so distributed as to illuminate a sufficient area. By altering the extent to which the prism is | pushed in, or by lifting or depressing its outer end by means of a | milled-head screw, the field of illumination can be regulated. The working of this prism with immersion-objectives is stated by Mr Tolles to be peculiarly satisfactory.

Black-Ground Illumination.—There are certain classes of objects which, though sufficiently transparent to be seen with light trans- mitted through them, are best viewed when illuminated by rays of such obliquity as not to pass directly into the objective,—such a proportion of these rays being

retained by the object as to render it self-Iuminons, when, all direct light being cut off, the general field is perfectly dark. This method is particularly effective in the case of such delicate mineral structures as the siliceous tests of Poly- cystina and the ‘‘frustules” of Diatomacew. And it is one ad- vantage: of this kind of illumination that it brings out with considerable effect the solid forms of objects suited to it, even when they are viewed monocularly. Two modes of providing this illumination are in use, each of which has its special advantages. One consists in placing a central stop either upon or immediately beneath a condenser of wide aperture, which shall cut off all rays save those that, after passing through the object (as in fig. 20), diverge at an angle greater than that of the objective used; so that, while the ground is darkened, the object is seen, brightly standing out upon it. But if the divergence of the rays is but moderate (say 60°), and the angle of the objective is large (say 90°), the most divergent rays of the condenser will enter the mar- ginal portion of the objective, and, the field not being darkened, the black-ground effect will not be produced. This method has the great convenience of allowing black-ground illumination to be substituted for the ordinary illumination under different powers, without any other change in the apparatus than the turning of a diaphragm-plate fitted with stops of different sizes suitable to the several apertures of the objectives; and the modern achro- matic condensers of wide aperture can be thus used with objectives of 120° angle.

An excellent black-ground illumination is also given by the para- bolic illuminator (fig. 19), originally worked out as a silvered speculum by Mr Wenham, but now made as a paraboloid of glass that reflects to its focns the rays which fall upon its internal surface. A diagrammatic section of this instrument, showing the course of the rays through it, is given in fig. 20, the shaded portion repre- senting the paraboloid. The parallel rays r, 7’, 7”, entering its lower surface perpendicularly, pass on until they meet its parabolic surface, on which they fall at such an angle as to be totally reflected by it, and are all directed towards its focus F. The top of the paraboloid being ground out into a spherical curve of which F is the centre, the rays in emerging from it undergo no refraction, since each falls perpendicularly upon the part of the surface through which it passes. A stop placed at S prevents any of the rays reflected upwards by the mirror from passing to the object, which, being placed at F, is illuminated by the rays

reflected into it from all sides of the paraboloid. Those rays which pass through it diverge again at various angles ; and if the least of these, GFH, be greater than the angle of aperture of the object-glass, none of them can enter it. The stop is attached to a stem of wire, which passes vertically through the paraboloid and terminates in a knob beneath, as shown in fig. 19; and by means of this it may be pushed upwards, so as to cut off the less divergent rays in their passage towards the object, thus giving a black-ground illumination with objectives of an angle of aperture much wider than GFH. In using the paraboloid for delicate objects, the rays which are made to enter

SCOPE

it should be parallel; consequently the plane mirror should always be employed ; and when, instead of the parallel rays of daylight, we are obliged to use the diverging rays of a lamp, these should be rendered as parallel as possible, previously to their reflexion from the mirror, by the g : Be I TTT interposition of the ‘‘bull’s-eye” so ad- justed as to produce There are many cases, however,

PE neon ‘

HFC TR ne a STATHAM Ty

=

watt

Fics. 19, 20.—Wenhamn’s Parabolie Iluminator.

in which the stronger light of the concave mirror is preferable. When it is desired that the light should fall on the object from one side only, the circular opening at the bottom of the wide tube that carries the paraboloid may be fitted with a diaphragm adapted to cover all but a certain portion of it; and, by giving rotation to this diaphragm, rays of great obliquity may be made to fall upon the object from every azimuth in succession.

In order to adapt this paraboloid to objectives of very wide angle of aperture, a special modification of it, originally devised by Mr Wenham, has been latterly reintroduced under the designation of ‘¢immersion-paraboloid,” with most excellent effect. This consists in making the top of the paraboloid flat instead of concave, and in interposing a film of glycerin between its surface and the under surface of the glass slide carrying the object. Only rays of such extreme obliquity are allowed to pass into the slide as would be totally reflected from its under surface if they fell upon it through air; and, as these illuminate the object without passing into the objective, it can be thus examined under even the highest powers,

BrnocuLtAR MICROSCOPES. .

Stercoscopic Binoculars. —The admirable invention of the stcreo- scope by Professor Wheatstone has led to a general apprecia~ tion of the value of the conjoint use of both eyes, in conveying to the mind a conception of the solid forms of objects such as the use of either eye singly does not generate with the like certainty or effectiveness (see STEREOSCOPE). This conception is the product of the mental combination of the dissimilar perspective projections which our right and left retin receive of any object that is suffi- ciently near the eyes for the formation of two images that are sen- sibly dissimilar. Now it is obvious that a similar difference must exist between the two perspective projections of any object in relief that are formed by the right and left halves of a microscopic ob- jective and that this diflerence must increase with the angular aperture of the objective. And the fact of this difference may be easily made apparent experimentally, by adapting a semicircular ‘“stop” to any objective of from 20° to 30° angle in such a manner that it can be turned so as to cover either its right or its left half ; for not only will the two images of any projecting object formed by the rays transmitted through the two uncovered halves be found sensibly different, but, if they be photographed or accurately drawn the ‘‘ pairing” of their pictures in the stereoscope will bring out the form of the object in vivid relief. What is needed, therefore, to give the true stereoscopic effect to a binocular microscope is a means of so bisecting the cone of rays transmitted by the objective that its two lateral halves shall be transmitted the one to the right and the other to the left eye, and that the two images shall be crossed (the image formed by the right half of the objective being

sent to the left eye, and that formed by the left half of the objective being sent to the right eye) in order to neutralize the reversing effect of the microscope itself. If this crossing does not take place, the effect . will be rendered ‘‘ psendoscopic,” not ‘‘orthoscopic,’—its projec- tions becoming depressions, and its depressions being brought out as prominences. It was from a want of due appreciation of this fact that the earlier attempts at constructing a stereoscopic binocular gave representatious of objects placed under it, not in their true orthoscopic, but in their pseudoscopic aspect. This was the case, for example, with the binocular microscope first devised by

Meownroseveor f

Professor Riddell of New Orleans in 1851, which separated the cone | to devisea construction by which it might be obtained without the

of rays by a pair of rectangular prisms so placed edge to edge above the objective that the rays passing through its right half were reflected horizontally to the right side, to be changed to the vertical

drawbacks inevitable in the working of Riddell’s and Nachet’s instru-

| ménts; and he soon succeeded in accomplishing this on a plan whieh

direction and sent to the right eye by a lateral rectangular prism, |

while the rays from the left half of the objective were sent to the left eye in a similar manner. Professor Riddcll describes the “‘conversion of relief” produced by this arrangement with the ordinary eye-piece as making a metal spherule appear ‘‘as a glass ball silvered on the under side, and :

a crystal of galena like an empty box.” And to render the images ‘normal and natural” he found himself obliged to use erecting eye- pieces, which should produce a second reversal of the images that had been reversed in their first formation.} Subsequently, however, Professor Riddell devised and perfected another arrangement giving a true orthoscopic effect, which, after being long disre- garded, has been latterly taken up and brought into

use by Mr Stephen- son. The cone of rays passing up- wards from the objective mects a ~~pair of prisms (A, A fig. 21) fixed immediately above its back lens, which divides it into two halves ; each of these is subjected to internal reflexion from the inner side of the prism through which it passes; and the slight separation of the two prisms at their upper end gives to the two pencils B,B, on their emergence from the upper surfaces of the prisms, a divergence which directs them through two obliquely~~ placed bodies to their respective eye-pieccs. By this internal reflexion a lateral reversal is produced, which neutralizes that of

Fie, 21,-—Riddell's Binocular Prisms.

the ordinary microscopic image, so that, while cach eye receives |

the image formed by its own half of the objective, the pairing of the two pictures produces a true orthoscopic efiect.?

About the sane date MM. Nachet of Paris succeeded in devising a binocular that should give a true orthoscopic image, by placing above the object-glass an equiangular prism (P. fig. 22) with one of its sur- faces parallel to its back lens, which, receiving the pencils ab forming the right half of the cone, internally reflects them obliquely upwards to the left, and in like manner reflects the pencils a'b' from the left half of the cone obliquely upwards to the right. These pencils, pass- ing out of the left and right oblique faces of the prism at right angles (so as not to undergo either refraction or dispersion), enter right and left lateral prisms, also at right angles, and, after being internally reflected by these, ae out vertically, at right angles to.their upper sur- faces, through two parallel bodies (fig. 23), whose eye-pieces bring them to a focus in the right and left eyes respectively. The distance between these bodies may be adjusted to the varying distances between the axes of individual pairs of eyes, by adjust- ing screws at their base, which vary the distance of the latera} prisms from the central. This instrument gives a theoretically perfect representation of a microscopic object in relief, as it would appear if enlarged to the size of its image, and brought to within about 10 inches of the eye; and its chief practical defect is that, as the two bodics are parallel, instead of being slightly converg- ent, it cannot be continuously used without an uncomfortable strain. But, as its performance depends upon the accuracy of the seven plane surfaces of the three prisms,

and on the correctness of their relations to each other, it is liable to considerable error from imperfections in its construction ; and, as the instrument can only be used for its own special purpose, the observer must be provided with an ordinary single-bodied microscope for the examination of objects unsuited to the powers of the binocular. This last objection applies also to Professor Riddell's model.

It was for these reasons that Mr Wenham, fully impressed with the advantages of stereoscopic vision to the microscopist, set himself

Fic. 22.—Nachet's Binocular Prisms.

1 See Silliman's Journal, vol. xv., 1853, p. 68; and Quart. Jour. of Micros. Sci., vol. i., 1853, p. 236. 2 Quart. Jour, of Micros. Sci., vol. ii,, 1854, p. 18,

| (a, fig. 24) is intercepted by

| two bodies (which, by varying _ the angles of the prism, may be made greater or less, so as

has proved not only convenient but practically satisfactory, notwith- standing its Fessrasica! im- : San te perfection. Only the right half of the cone of rays pro- ceeding upwards from the right half of the objective

a prism placed immediately over that half of its back lens, which, by two internal re- flexions (as shown in fig. 25), sends its pencils obliquely upwards into the left-hand or secondary body L, whilst the peucils of the left half-cone pass uninterruptedly into the right-hand body R, and form an image that suffers no other deterioration than that which results from the halving of the angular aperture and the con- sequent loss of light. The moderate convergence of the

to accord with the ordinary ; convergence of the optic axes in the individual observer) is much more generally suitable than the parallelism of MM. Nachet's earlier instrument; and the adjustment 'requisite for variation of distance between the eyes can be made by simply lengthening or shortening the bodies by drawing out or pushing in the diverging eye-pieces.

It may be fairly objected to Mr Wenham's method (1) that, as the rays which pass through the prism and are obliquely reflected into the secondary body traverse a longer distance than those which pass on uninter- ruptedly into the een body, the image formed by them will be somewhat larger than that which is formed by the other set, and (2) that the image formed by the rays which have been subjected to the action of the prism nust be inferior in distinctness to that formed by the uninterrupted half of the cone of rays. But these objections are found to have no practical weight. For it is well known to those who have experimented upon the phe- nomena of stereoscopic vision (1) that a slight difference in the size of the two pictures is no bar to their perfect combination, and (2) that, if one of the pictures be good, the full effect of relief is given to the image, even though the other picture be faint and imperfect, pro- vided that the outlines of the latter are suffi- ciently distinct to represent its perspective projection. Hence if, instead of the two equally half-good pictures which are obtain- able by MM. Nachet's original construction, we had in Mr Wenham's one good and one Fic. 24.— Wenham's indifferent picture, the latter would be de- Stereoscopic Bin- cidedly preferable. But, in point of fact, the ocular Microscope. deterioration of the second picture in Mr Wenham's arrangement is less considerable than that of both pictures in the original arrangement of MM. Nachet; so that the optical performance of the Wenham binocular is in every way superior. It has, in addi- tion, these further advantages over the preceding :—first, the greater comfort in using it (especially for some length of time together) which results from the convergence of the axes of the eyes at their usual angle for moderately near objects ; second, that this binocular arrangement does not necessitate a special instrument, but may be applied to any microscope which is capable of carry- ing the weight of the secondary body,—the prism being so fixed in a movable frame that it may in a moment be taken out of the tube or replaced therein, so that when it has been removed the principal body acts in every respect as an ordinary microscope, the entire cone of rays passing uninterruptedly into It ; and, third, that the simplicity of its construction renders its derangement almost impossible. Hence it is the one most enerally preferred by microscopists who use the long-bodied English model.

For short-bodied Continental microscopes, however, MM.

Fic. 23.—Nachet’s Binocular Microscope.

have devised an arrangement of two prisms, based on Mr Wenham’s fundamental idea of deflecting one half of the cone of rays into a secondary body, whilst the other half proceeds onwards without ehange of direction into the principal body. And it is an interest-

ing feature in this construction that, by a simple change in the

position of the dividing prism, the true ‘‘ orthoscopic” image may be made, by a ‘conversion of relief,” to become ‘‘ pseudoscopic. The effect of stereoscopic projection may be attained, however,

without a double body, by the insertion of a snitably constructed |

binocular eye-piece into the body of any ordinary monocular. micro- scope. A plan of this kind was first successfully worked out by Mr Tolles (the very able optician of Boston, United States), who interposed a system of prisms similar to that devised by MM. Nachet (fig. 22), but on a much larger scale, between an ‘‘erector” (resembling that used in the eye- piece of a day telescope) and a pair of ordinary Huygenian eye-pieces, the ecntral or dividing prism being placed at or near the plane of the sceondary image formed by the erector, while the two eye- pieces are placed immediately above the lateral prisms,—the ; ; combination thus making that division in the pencils forming the secondary (erected) image which it makes in the Nachet binocular in the pencils emerging from the objective. ;

A stereoscopie eye-piece of a very different construction has been recently devised by Professor Abbe, who, making use, for the division between the two eye-pieces of the rays going to form the first image, of an arrangement of prisms essentially similar to that devised by Mr Wenham for his non-stereoscopic binocular (fig. 27), obtains cither an orthoscopic or a

pseudoscopic effect by placing on each eye-piece a cap with a semicircular diaphragm, so as to extinguish half of each of the cones of rays that form the two retinal images. While in one position of the diaphragms trne stereoscopic or orthoscopic relief is given, it is sufficient to turn the diaphragms into the opposite position to obtain a pseudo- scopic conversion.? It appears, however, that this arrangement, though possessing points of great interest in relation to the theory of binocular vision, is not likely to supersede the ordinary Wenham

rism.

: It must be obvious to every one who studies with sufficient attention the conditious under which true stereoscopic reliefcan be given that no combination of two dissimilar retinal perspectives can be satisfactory unless the visual pictures represent with tolerable distinctness the features of the object that lie in different focal planes. This is provided for, in ordinary vision, by the power of accommo- dation possessed by the eye, which, while focussed exactly to any one plane, can also include in its visual picture (within certain limits) what is either nearer or more remote. Now it seems prob- able that, as Professor Abbe has urged, this power of accommoda- tion comes into play in microscopic stereoscopy, but there can be no question that the visual distinctness of the parts of an object lying within and beyond the focal plane, and therefore the com- pleteness of the stereoscopic image, mainly depends upon the ‘‘ focal depth ” of the objective employed, —which, as already explained, is a function of its angular aperture. When, however, objectives of long focus and small aperture are employed in binocular microscopy, although each of the two perspective projections may be fairly distinct throughout, the effect of solid relief will be very incon- siderable, because the pictures are not sufficiently dissimilar to one another,—the ease being exactly analogous to that of the stereo- scopie combination of two photographic portraits taken at an angle of no more than a few degrees from each other. Still, with an objective of 14 inches focus and an angular aperture of from 15° to 20°, a very distinct separation is made of the focal planes of trans- parent sections of structures having no great minutenéss of detail, ~—such, especially, as injected preparations,—the solid forms ot their capillary networks being presented to the mind’s eye with: a vividness that no’ monocular representation of

them can afford. When a 1 inch objective of 20° or 25° is used, the stereoscopic effect becomes much more satisfactory ; so that objects of moderate pro- jection (such as many of the siliceous Polycystina, Diatomacce, &c.) can be seen in nearly their natural projection, and, if the focal adjustment is made for a medium plane, with tolcrable distinctness both of their nearer and remoter parts. With a 2 inch of 30° or 35°, the stereoscopic relief becomes more pronounced ; but the diminution of the focal depth prevents the several planes of objects in strong relief from being as distinctly seen at the same time, A

Fic, 25.—Wenham's Binocular Prism.

1Sce Trans. of Roy. Micros. Soc., N.S., vol. xv., 1867, p. 105; and Monthly Micros. Jour., vol. i., 1869, p. 31. 2 See Jour. of Roy. Micros. Soc., 2d ser., Vol. i., 1881, p. 298.

_ as to produce a highly exaggerated stereoscopic effect.

MICROSC OP

4 inch objective of about 40° of aperture, however, affords the most satisfactory results with suitable objects,—full stereoscopic relief being gained without exaggeration, so as to present, ¢.g., the discoidal diatoms and the smaller Polycystina in their true forms, whilst their nearer and more remote parts are seen with sufficient distinctness to require only a very slight adjustment of the focus for their perfect definition. Still more minute objects may be well shown by #sths and 3th objectives whose angular aperture does not exceed 50°; but it can be shown both theoretically and practically? that the dissimilarity of the two perspective projections of objects in relief formed by objectives of any angle much exceed- ing 40° is such as to exaggerate the stereoscopic effect; besides which, every enlargement of angular aperture so greatly diminishes the focal depth of the objectives that only those parts of the objects which lie very near the focal plane can be seen with distinctness sufficient for the formation of a good stereoscopic image. Hence, for the purposes of minute histological research, the stereoscopic binocular is (in the present writer's opinion) almost valueless ; since, if any distinct perspective differentiation can be gained with

_ objectives of the short focus and enlarged angle that are most

suitable to such investigations, that differentiation will be so great If such objectives be used binocularly at all, they must be so mounted that

_ their back lenses are in very close proximity to the prism ; and the

_ the same shape and size as his ordinary

| (transparent) object must be illuminated by an achromatic condenser

of sufficient aperture ~~to send through it pencils of sufficient diver~~ gence to produce the secondary image. ‘ In regard to the advantage derived from the use of the stereo- scopic binocular, with the powers, and upon the objects, suitable to produce the true effect of solid form, the writer can unhesitat- ingly assert, as the result of a long and varied experience, that in no other way could he as certainly or as vividly image those forms to himself, and that in prolonged work upon such subjects he is conscious of a great saving of fatigue, which seems attributable not merely (perhaps not so much) to the conjoint use of both eyes as to the absence of the mental effort required for the interpretation of the microscopic picture, when the solid form of the object has to be ideally constructed from it (chiefly by means of the information obtainable through the focal adjustment), instead of being directly presented to the mind’s eye.4

Non-Stereoscopic Binoculars.—The great comfort which is experi- enced by the microscopist in the conjoint use of both eyes has led to the invention of more than one arrangement by which this can be secured when those high powers are required which cannot be employed with the ordinary stereoscopic binocular. This is accomplished by Messrs Powell and Lea- land by taking advantage of the fact that, when a pencil of rays falls obliquely upon the surface of a refracting medium, a part of it is reflected with- out entering that medium at all. In the place usnally occupied by the Wenham prism they interpose an inclined plate of glass with parallel sides, through which one portion of the rays ‘‘pro- ceeding upwards from the whole aperture of the objective passes into the principal body with very little change in its course, whilst another portion is reflected from its surface into a rectangular prism so placed as to direct it obliquely upwards into the

secondary body (fig. 26). Although there is a decided difference in brightness between the two images, that formed by the reflected rays being the fainter, yet there is marvellously little loss of definition in either, even when the =; inch Fie, 26 objective is used. The disk and prism are fixed 18. . in a short tube, which can be readily substituted in any ordinary binocular microscope for the one containing the Wenham prism.

Other arrangements were devised long ago by Mr Wenham," with a view to obtain a greater equality in the amount of light-rays form- ing the two pictures; and he has latterly carried one of these into practical effect, with the advantage that the compound prism of which it eonsists has so nearly

stereoscopic prism as to be capable of being mounted in precisely the same manner, so that the one may be readily exchanged for the other. The axial raya, proceeding upwards from the objective, enters the prism ABDEF (fig. 27) at right angles to its lower face, and passes on to ¢, where it meets the inclined face AB, at which this prism is nearly in contact with the oblique face of the right-angled

Fig. 27.

3 See The Microscope and its Revelations, 6th ed., pp. 42-44.

4A very elaborate investigation, by Professor Abbe, "On the Conditions of Orthoscopic and Pseudoscopic Effects in the Binocular Microscope," will be found in the Jour. of the Roy. Micros. Soc., 2d scr., vol. i., 1881, p. 203.

5 Transactions of the Micros. Soc., N.S,, vol. xiv., 1866, p. 105,

Mich oO

prism ABC, By internal reflexion from the former and cxternal reflexion from the latter about half the beam J is refleeted within the first prism in the direction cb, while the other half proceeds straight onwards through the second prism, in the direction ca', so as to pass into the principal body. 'The reflected half, meeting at d the oblique (silvered) surface DE of the first prism, is again reflected in the direction dd', and, passing out of that prism per- pendicularly to its surface AF, procecds towards the seeondary body.

The two prisms must not be in absolute contact along the plane AB, since, if they were, Newton’s rings would be formed ; and much nicety is required in their adjustment, so that the two reflexions may be combined without any blurring of the image in the secondary body.

For the prolonged observation, under high powers, of objects not requiring the extreme of perfection in definition, —such, for example, as the study of the cyclosis in plants,—great advantage is gained from the coujoint use of both eyes by onc of the above arrangements.

MECHANICAL CONSTRUCTION OF THE MICROSCOPE.

The optical arrangements on which the working of the compound achromatic microscope depends having now been explained, we have next to consider the mechanical provisions whereby they arc brought to bear upon the different purposes which the instrument is destined toserve. Every complete microscope must possess, in addition to the lens or combination of lenses which affords its magnifying power, a stage whereon the object may securely rest, a concave mirror for the illumination of transparent objects from beneath, and a condensing- lens for the illumination of opaque objects from above.

1. Now, in whatever mode these may be connected with each other, it is essential that the optical part and the stage should be so disposed as either to be altogether free from tendency to vibra- tion or to vibrate together ; since it is obvious that any movement of one, in which the other does not partake, will be augmented to the eye of the observer in proportion to the magnifying power employed. In a badly-constructed instrument, even though placed pee a steady table resting upon the firm floor of a well-built house, when high powers are used, the object is seen to oscillate so rapidly at the slightest tremor—such as that caused by a person walking across the room, or by a carriage rolling by in the street—as to be frequently almost indistinguishable ; whereas in a well-constructed instrument scarcely any perceptible effect will be produced by even greater disturbances. Hence, in the choice of a microscope, it should always be subjected to this test, and should be unhesitatingly rejected if the result be unfavourable. If the instrument should be found free from fault when thus tested with high powers, its steadiness with low powers may be assumed; but, on the other

hand, though a microscope may give an image free from perceptible tremor when the lower powers only are em jloyed, it may be quite unfit for use with the higher. The method still adopted by some makers, of supporting the body by its base alone, is the worst possible, especially for the long body of the large English model, since any vibration of its lower part is exaggerated at its ocular end. The firmer the support of the body along its length the less tremor will be seen ‘in the microscopic image.

2. The next requisite is a capability of accurate adjustment to every variety of focal distance, without movement of the object. It is a principle universally recognized in the construction of good microscopes that the stage whereon the object is placed should be a fixture, the movement by which the focus is to be adjusted being given to the optical portion. This movement should be such as to allow free range from a minute fraction of an inch to three or four inches, with equal power of obtaining a delicate adjustment at any part. It should also be so ateurate that the optic axis of the in- strument should not be in the least altered by any movement in a vertical direction, so that, if an object be brought into the centre of the field with a low power, and a higher power be then substituted, the object should be found in the centre of its field, notwithstand- ing the great alteration in the focus. In this way much time may often be saved by employing a low power as a ‘‘finder”’ for an object to be examined by a higher one; and when an object is being viewed by a succession of powers little or no readjustment of its place on the stage should be required. A rack-and-pinion adjustment, if it be made to work both tightly and smoothly, answers sufficiently well for the focal adjustment, when objectives of low power only are employed. But for any lenses whose focus is less than half an inch a “fine adjustment,” or ‘‘slow motion,” by means of a screw-move- inent operating either on the object-glass alone or on the entire body (preferably on the latter), is of great value ; and for the highest powers it is quite indispensable. It is essential that in this motion there should be no ‘‘lost time,” and that its working should not produce any ‘“‘twist” or displacement of the image. In some miero- scopes which are provided with a fine adjustment the rack-and- pinion movement is dispensed with, the ‘‘ coarse adjustment” being given by merely sliding the body up and down in the socket which grasps it; but this plan is only admissible where, for the

sake of extreme cheapness or portability, the instrument has to be reduced to the form of utmost simplicity, as in figs. 28, 29.

3. Scarcely less important than the preceding requisite, in the case of the compound microscope, especially with the long body of the ordinary English model, is the capability of being placed in either a vertical or a horizontal position, or at any angle with the horizon, without deranging the adjustment of its parts to each other, and withput placing the eye-piece in such a position as to be incon- venient to the observer. It is certainly a matter of surprise that some microscopists, especially on the Continent, should still forego the advantages of the inclined position, these being attainable by a very small addition to the cost of the instrument; but the incon- venience of the vertical arrangement is much less when the body of the microscope is short, as in the ordinary Continental model ; and there are many cases in which it is absolutely necessary that the stage should be horizontal. This position, however, can at any time be given to the stage of the inclining microscope, by bringing the optic axis of the instrument into the vertical direction, In ordinary cases, an inclination of the body at an angle of about 55° to the horizon will usually be found most convenient for uncon- strained observation; and the instrument should be so constructed as, when thus inclined, to give to the stage such an elevation above the table that, when the hands are employed at it, the arms may rest conveniently upon the table. In this manner a degree of support is attained whieh gives such free play to the muscles of the hands that movements of the greatest nicety may be executed by them, and the fatigue of long-continued observation is greatly diminished. When the ordinary camera lucida! is used for drawing or measuring, it is requisite that the microscope should be placed horizontally. It ought, therefore, to be made capable of every such variety of position ; and the stage must of course be provided with some means of holding the object, whenever it is itself placed in such a position that the object would slip down unless sustained.

4, The last principle on which we shall here dwell, as essential to the value of a microscope designed for ordinary work, is simpli- city in the construction and adjustment of every part. Many in- genious mechanical

devices have been invented and executed for the purpose of overcoming difficulties which are in themselves really trivial. A moderate amount of dexterity in the use of the hands is sufficient to render most of these superfluous ; and without such dexterity no one, even with the most complete mechanical facilities, will ever become a good microscopist. There is, of course, a limit to this simplification ; and no arrangement can be objected to ou this score which gives advantages in the examination of difficult objects, or in the determination of doubtful questions, such as no simpler means can afford. The meaning of this distinction will become apparent if it be applied to the cases of the mechanical stage and the achromatic condenser. For, although the mechanical stage may be considered a valuable aid in observation, as facilitating the finding of a minute object, or the examination of the entire surface of a large one, yet it adds nothing to the clearness of onr view of either ; and its place may in great degree be supplied by the fingers of a good manipulator. Ou the other hand, the use of the achromatic condenser not only contributes very materially, but is absolutely indispensable, to the formation of a perfect image, in the case of many objects of a difficult class ; the want of it cannot be compensated by the most dexterous use of the ordinary appliances ; and consequently, although it may fairly be considered superfluous as regards a large proportion of the purposes to which the micro- scope is directed, whether for investigation or for display, yet as regards the particular objects just alluded to it is ano less necessary part of the instrument than the achromatic objective itself.

Asa typical example of the simplest form of eompound micro- scope that is suitable for scientific research,—which, with various modifications of detail, is the one generally employed on the Con- tinent, —the Ificroscope de dissection et d’observation (fig. 28) of M. Nachet, especially as constructed for portability (figs. 29-31), seems particularly worthy of description. In its vertical form (fig. 28) the solid foot to which the mirror is pivoted gives support to the pillar F, to the top of which the stage P, having a diaphragm-plate beneath it, is firmly attached. On the top of this pillar the tubu- lar stem: A is fitted in such a manner that it may be removed by unscrewing the large milled head L,—though, when this is well screwed down, the stem stands quite firmly. This stem bears at its summit a short horizontal arm, which carries a strong vertical tube that firmly grasps the ‘‘

body” of the microscope, while per- mitting this to be easily slid upwards or downwards, so as to make a “coarse adjustinent” of the focus. The ‘‘fine adjustment’ is made by turning the milled head V, whieh either presses down the outer tube of the stem, or allows it to be raised by the upwari pres- sure of a strong spiral spring in its interior. By unscrewing the milled head L, the stem A with its arm and compound body can be detached from the pillar ; and, a small light arm H holding either single lenses or doublets being slid into this, a convenient dissecting microscope is thus provided. The only drawback in the construe- tion of this simple model is its not being provided with a joint for

a oe en

1 A camera lucida adapted for use with the vertical microscope has been de-

yised by M. Nachet.

the inclination of the body ; but this is introduced into the port- able form of the instrument shown in fig. 29, the basal portion of which (fig. 80) can be used, like that of the preceding model, asa simple microscope, and, by a most ingenious construction, can be so folded as to lie flat in a shallow case (fig. 81) that holds also the upper part with the objectives of both the simple arm and the com-

Fia. 28.—Nachet’s Combined Simple and Compound Microscope.

pease body. M. Nachet now connects his objectives with the ody of his microscopes, not by a screw, but by a cylindrical fitting held in place by the pressure of a spring-clip against a projecting shoulder. This method not only allows one objective to be re- moved and replaced by another much more readily than does the screw-fitting, but also renders the centring of different objectives more exactly con- formable. It may be safely affirmed that a very large proportion of the microscopic work of the ii half- century, which has given an entirely new aspect to bio- logical science, has been done by in- struments of this simple Continental type.

A larger model, however, was from the first adopted by English opti- cians; and, as a as example of the general plan of construction now most followed both in England and in the United States, the im- proved Jackson- ona oe + pa Fic. 29.—Nachet’s Portable Compound Microscope. Ross (fig. 32) may be appropriately selected. this instrument carries two pillars, between which is swung npon a horizontal axis (capable of being fixed in any position by a tighten- ing screw) a solid ‘‘ limb,” with which all the other parts of the instrument are connected, —a plan of construction originally devised by Mr George Jackson. The binocular body, having at its lower end (as in fig. 24) an opening into which either of the Wenham prisms can be inserted, and at its top a rack movement for adjusting the eye-

| scale and vernier at | its edge ; and it can | be fixed in any azi- | muth by a clamping- | serewbeneath. Rect- |; angular

The tripod base of

MICROSCOPE

pieces to the distance between the eyes of the observer, is attached to a racked slide, which is so acted on by the large double milled

Fic. 80.—Nachet’s Portable Lae tiaegs o Microscope; on the left as set up for use, on the right as having the stage P turned back upon the joint O, so as to lie flat on the bottom of the case.

head in the upper part of the limb as to give a ‘‘ quick” upward or downward motion to the body; while the “slow” motion, or fine

Fic. 81.—Nachet’s Portable Compound and Dissecting Microscope, as packed in case,

adjustment, is given by meaus of the vertical micrometer screw at the back of the limb, which raises or lowers a second slide behind the rack.1 The stage is .

supported upon a firm ring, which is immovably _ fixed,

not to the limb, but to a strong conical pivot which passes through the limb, to be clamped by a serew-nut at its back,—the purpose of this being to allow the whole stage to be inclined to one side or the other at any angle, so that a solid object may be viewed sideways or from below, as well as from above. Upon this ring the stage rotates horizontally, its angular move- ment being mea- sured by a gradnated

movement is given to the traversing platform which carries the ob- ject by two milled

Microscope.

heads on the’right of the stage, the whole construction of which is adapted to allow — of extreme obliqnity to be thrown upon the iv

object from beneat

On the strong pivot by which the stage is

1In the older form of construction still retained by some makers the fine adjustment acts directly on the objective, the fitting of which is made to slide up and down within the nose of the body ; but this plan is attended with many disadvantages.

MICRO

attached to the limb (the axis of which passes through the point at which the object-plane is intersected by the optie axis of the

body) is hung the swinging tail-piece invented by Mr Zentmayer of |

Philadelphia, whieh, carrying the whole illuminating apparatus, may be so set as to give to the axis of the illuminating pencil any required degree of obliquity. To the upper part of it 1s attached a rack-and-pinion movement carrying the ‘‘substage,” which is

provided with two milled-headed screws for centring it pre- |

cisely with the microscope-body. Into this may be fitted the

achromatic condenser, parabolic illuminator, polarizing prism, or |

any other kind of illuminating apparatus ; whilst at its lower end it carries the mirror, the position of which may be varicd by sliding its fitting up or down the ‘“‘tail-piece,” or by turning the arm which carries it to one side or the other ; while, if direct illumina- tion from a lainp should be preferred, it may be turned altogether aside. By swinging the tail-piece round above the stage, oblique light may be reflected from the mirror, through the condenser, upon the upper surfaces of objects. this instrument is of about 745 inch focus, with a large back lens ; behind which are placed an iris-diaphragm for reducing the light to the central rays, and a diaphragm-plate with apertures of the

various forms most suitcd for the resolution of lined objects by |

oblique rays.

No instrument, in the writer’s judgment, is better adapted than this for the highest purposes of microscopical research. It works admirably with every power from the lowest to the highest, and is capable of receiving any one of the numerous pieces of apparatus which have been devised for special rescarches of various kinds. The detailed description of these not being here admissible, it will be sufficient to indicate the polariscope and the spectroscope as the most important of these accessories.

MICROMETRY.

The microscopist has constant need of some means of taking exact measurements of the dimensions of the minute objects, or parts of objects, on the study of which he is engaged ; and the accuracy of the operation will of course be proportioned to the correctness of the standard used, and the care with which it is applied.

The instruments employed in microscopic micrometry arc of two kinds, the measurement being taken in one by the rotation of a fine screw with a divided milled head, whilst in the other a slip of glass ruled with lines at fixed distances gives a scale which forms a basis of computation. ach of these has its advantages and its disadvantages.

The stage-micrometer constructed by Frauenhofer was formerly much used by Continental microscopists, and has the advantage of indicating the actual dimensions of the objects to be measured ; but it has the two special disadvantages that a sufficiently small value cannot be conveniently given to its divisions, and that any error in its construction and working is augmented by the whole magnifying power employed. This instrument has now, however, almost entirely given place to one of those to be next described.

The screw-micrometer ordinarily used in astronomical measure- ments (see MicROMETER) cau be adapted to the eye-piece of the microscope in a manner essentially the same as that in which it is applied to the telescope, —its two parallel threads—of which one is fixed and the other made to approach towards or recede from this by the turning of the serew—being placed in the focus of the eye- glass, and being therefore seen as lines crossing its field of view. The object is so focussed that its image is formed in the same plane ; and, the latter being brought into such a position that one of its ends or margins lies in optical contact with the fixed line, the screw is turned so as to bring the movable line into the like coincidence with the other. But the distance between the lines, as given by the number of divisions of the micrometer, will here be the measure- ment, not of the object itself, but of its magnified image ; and the value of these divisions, therefore, will depend upon the amplifica- tion given by the particular objective used. Thus, suppose each division of the micrometer to have an actual value of y5}y5th of an inch, and the visual image to have one hundred times the linear dimensions of the object, the theoretical micrometric value of each division would be 74,th of z54y5th, or onc-millionth, of an inch,— a degree of minuteness, however, not practically attainable. It is necessary, moreover, to determine the micrometric value of the divisions of the micrometer, not only for every objective, but for variations in the conditions under which that objective may be employed, as regards the length of the tube or ‘‘body” of the microscope, which is varied not only by the draw-tube, but also, in many cases, in the working of the fine adjustment or slow motion, and also, in the case of the large-angled powers furnished with adjustment for thickness of the covering-glass, for the degree of separation of the front- from the back-glasses of the objective, which makes a very sensible difference in its magnifying power. This

determination is made by means of a divided glass stage- micrometer put in the place of the object, so that the lines ruled upon it at fixed intervals shall be projeeted upon the field of view. The stage-micrometer is usually ruled either to 1000ths of an inch or

eC OrP i 277

100ths of a millimetre; and it isconvenicnt that one of the divisions of its image should be made to coincide exactly with a certain number of divisious of the serew-micrometer. This may be done by lengthen- ing the draw-tube, so as to increase the amplification of the scale until coincidence has been reached; and the exact amount of this lengthening should be noted, —as should also the precise position of the milled head of the slow motion (if it acts on the objective, instcad of on the body as a whiole), and of the adjusting screw-collar of the objective itself. Thus, if two lines of the stagc-micrometer separated by 1000th of an inch be brought into coincidence with the two threads of the eye-piece micrometer, separated by forty divisions of the screw milled head, the value of each of those divi- sions is zg}yyth of an inch. If the above conditions be precisely recorded for each objective used in micrometry, the micrometric value of the divisions remains the same for that objective, whenever it is employed under the same conditions.

The condenser usually fitted to |

The errors to which micrometers are subject arise (1) from in- equalities in the ruling of the stage-micrometer, (2) from irregulari- ties in the screw of the eye-piece micrometer, (3) from “ lost time ” in its working, and (4) from the thickness of its threads. In order _ to eliminate the first and second, it is well to determine the rela- tion of the divisions of the two micromcters by the comparison of a considerable number of both; the third proceeds from an imper- fection of workmanship which, if it shows itself sensibly, entirely destroys the value of the instrument, while the fourth can be rectified by the exercise of skill and judgment on the part of the observer. For, if the micrometer is so constructed as to read zero when one thread lies exactly upon the other, its divisions indicate the distance between the axes of these threads when separated ; and the dimensions of any object (such as a blood-corpuscle) lying between their borders will obviously be too great

by half the thick- ness of the two threads, that is, by the entire thickness of one thread. When, on the other hand, the measurement is being made (as of the distances of the strie on diatoms) by the coincidence between certain lines on the object and the axes of the threads of the micrometer, the dimensions indicated by the divisions of the screw 1illed-head will be correct. :

The costliness of a well-constructed screw-micrometer being a formidable obstacle to its general use, a simpler method (devised by Mr George Jackson) is more commonly adopted, which consists in the insertion of a ruled-glass scale into the focus of an ordinary

Huygenian eye-piece, so that its lines are projected on the field of view. ‘his scale (ruled, like an ordinary measure, with every fifth line long, and every tenth line double the length of the fifth) is fixed in a brass inner frame, that has a slight motion in the direc- tion of its length within an outer frame; and this last, being intro- duced through a pair of slits into the eye-piece just above the diaphragm, and being made to occupy the centre of the field, is brought exactly into focus by unscrewing the eye-glass as far as may be requisite. When the image of the object to be measured is brought by the focal adjustment of the object-glass into the same plane, a small pushing-screw at the end of the micrometer (whose action is antagonized by a spring at the other end) is turned until one of the long divisions of the scale is brought into optical contact with one edge of the image of the object to be measured, and the number of divisions is then counted to its other edge,—the operation being exactly that of laying a rule across the real object if enlarged to the size of its image. The micromctric value of each division of this eye-piece scale must be carefully ascertained for each objective, as in the case of the screw-micrometer, the error arising from in- equality of its divisions being eliminated as far as possible by taking an average of several, The principal point of inferiority in this form of micrometer is that, as its divisions eannot be made of nearly so small a value as those of the screw-micrometer, an estimate of fractional parts of them often becomes necessary, whieh is objectionable as involving an additional source of error. To meet this objection, Hartuack has introduced the diagonal scale used in mathematical instruments before the invention of the vernier. Another mode of making micrometric measurements, which for some purposes has

considerable advantages, is to employ a stage- micrometer in combination with some form of camera lucida attached to the eye-piece of the microscope, so that the image of its divisions may be projected upon the same surface as that on which the image of the object is thrown. By first using the ruled stage-micrometer, and marking on the paper the avcrage distance of its lines as seen in the central part of the field, and then ruling the paper accordingly, the micrometric value of the divisions so projected may be exactly determined for the objective employed and the distance of the drawing-plane from the eye-piece, —so that, when the image of any object is projected under the same conditions, the dimensions of that image or of any parts of it can be cxactly measured upon the divided scale previously projected, and the true dimen- sions of the object: thus easily ascertained. If, for example, the lines of a stage-micrometer ruled to the thousandth of au inch should, when thus projected, fall at a distance of an inch apart, then the applieation of an ordinary scale of inches (divided into ; tenths) to the image of an object projected by the same objective

and on the same plane would give its real dimensions in thousandths of an inch, while the tenths of the inch scale would represent a real dimension of as many ten-thonsandths. _ It is often desirable to make such measurements from careful tracings of the outlines of objects, rather than from the visual images, —this plan being especially advantageous when the exact dimensions of many similar objects have to be compared, as in the case of blood-cor- puscles, precise measurements of which are not unfrequently required in judicial inquiries. It was by the use of this method that the late Mr Gulliver made his admirable scrics of measurements of the average and extreme dimensions of the blood-corpuscles of different animals, And more recently Mr Dallinger has shown,—by first

MIDAS, king of Phrygia, is one of those half-legendary |

heroes in whom religious legends have gathered round a real person. The name Midas the king, MIAAI FANAKTE], occurs ona very ancient tomb in the valley of the Sangarius, the legendary seat of the Phrygian kingdom (liad iii. 189), The Phrygian monarchy was destroyed by the Cimmerians about 670 B.c., and the last king Midas com- mitted suicide by drinking

bull’s blood. The name Midas became in Greek tradition the representative of this ancient dynasty, but all that is told of him is religious myth. He is a figure in the cycle of Cybele legends, the son of the goddess and her first priest. He is also closely connected with the cultus of Dionysus, like the two heroic personages Marsyas and Silenus. The Midas legend was known on Mount Bermius in Macedonia, and must at one time have existed in Greece; two cities Midea, in Argolis and in Beeotia, recall the Phrygian city Mideium.

See Herod. viii. 188; Xen., Anad., i. 2, 13; Paus. i. 45, &c.

MIDDELBURG, in Holland, the ancient capital of the province of Zealand, situated in the middle of the island of Walcheren, is mentioned as early as 1153, and receives the title “town” in a charter granted it in 1227. It has all the characteristics of an old and worn-out place. The population (25,000 in 1739) had sunk to 12,000 or 13,000 by the beginning of the 19th century, and has only begun recently to increase again, being 15,939 in 1882. The dwelling-houses, which in 1739 were about 3800, are riow but 3000, and of these about 600 are unoccupied. The vast warehouses and imposing mansions once belonging to wealthy families, which have either died out or left the place, call up the memory of that prosperity which Middel- burg enjoyed before its extensive trade, with the East and West Indies, with England and Flanders, was ruined by the war with England and the French occupation. By the opening of the railway (1872) and of the ship canal (1873) to Flushing Middelburg was lifted out of its isola- tion, and, with the assistance of the chamber of commerce, manufacturing industries (iron, machinery, furniture, oil, cigars, &c.) were established ; but the prosperity anticipated for Flushing, and consequently for Middelburg, remains unrealized. One of the chief sights of Middelburg is the splendid town-house, for the most part erected in 1512-13, with its front gable adorned with twenty-five statues of counts and countesses of Holland and Zealand ; it contains the archives, and a most valuable antiquarian and historical collection. The abbey, begun in 1150, has frequently been the residence of royal visitors (Maximilian, Philip the Fair, Charles V., and so on down to Napoleon I., and William L., IL., and IIT.) ; part of it is now an hotel, and part of it is occupied by the provincial authorities. The great hall of the building, in which the states of Zealand assemble, is adorned with beautiful

tapestries by Jan de Maccht, repre- senting the heroic feats of the men of Zealand in the contest with Spain. What was formerly the nave of the abbey church is now the New Church, and the ancient choir constitutes the Choir Church. The former contains a fine pulpit resting on an eagle, the monument of William, king

| with rapid strides.

making a very finc camera Incida tracing of Bacterium termo under an amplification of 2000 diameters, and measuring the breadth of its body in the mode above indicated (which gave it as gytqqth of an inch), and then by magnifying his tracing from five to ten diameters, and comparing, by meaus of the screw-micrometer, the breadth of the flagellum with that of the body (which last proved to be just ten times as great),—that, althongh the theorctical limit of resolving power for closely approximated lines is y4¢sqgth of an inch, a semitransparent filament whose breadth is not greater than sscsssth of an inch may be clearly discerned, and even measured with a close approximation to accuracy (Jour. of Royal Micros. Society, vol. i., 1879, p. 169). (W. B. C.)

of the Romans (d. 1256), and the tombs of Jan and Cornelis Evertsen, two naval heroes who fell in the war against England in 1666; the latter has the monuments of the learned Hadrian Junius and of Jan Pieterszoon. The provincial court, the corn exchange, the Hof St Joris and the Hof St Sebastian (formerly buildings belonging to the guilds of archers, and now places of amusement) deserve mention. The great museum of Zealand antiquities, col- lected by the Zealand Society of Arts and Sciences (founded at Flushing in 1769 and transferred to Middelburg in 1801), shows that the town is the intellectual centre of the province.

The principal facts in the history of Middelburg are the sieges by: the Flemings in 1288, 1296, and 13038 (the last resulting in the capture of the town by Guy of Dampierre); the recovery of the town from the Spaniards in 1574, after an investment of nearly two years; the frequent disturbances among the townsfolk in the 17th and 18th centuries; the surrender to the

English in 1809; and the arrival and departure of the French in 1809 and 1814.

MIDDLEBOROUGH, a town of the United States, in Plymouth county, Massachusetts, 34 miles south of Boston. Tt has a handsome town-hall and a public library, manufac- tures woollen goods, straw goods, shovels, shoes, carriages, &e., and in 1880 had 5237 inhabitants.

MIDDLESBOROUGH, situated near the mouth of the Tees, on its south bank, in the North Riding of Yorkshire, has now become the principal seat of the English iron trade. It is a municipal and parliamentary borough, locally governed by a mayor and corporation, and returns a member to parliament. The earlier history of the place is meagre. Where Middlesborough now stands (Graves's History of Cleveland) there were at one time a small chapel and priory founded by Robert de Brus of Skelton Castle. These were dedicated to St Hilda, and with some lands were given by De Brus to the abbey of St Hilda at Whitby in 1130. The priory fell into ruins at the time of the Reformation, and no trace now remains beyond some stones built into the wall of a brewery. The mayor's chair also is made from a fragment. In 1801 there were upon the site of- Middlesborough only four farm-houses. In 1829 a company styling itself the Middlesborough Owners bought 500 acres of land, and commenced building the town. In 1830 the Stockton and Darlington Railway was extended from Stockton to Middlesborough ; four years later the town was lighted with gas; and after six years more a public market was established. The census of 1831 showed the population to be 154; that of 1841 showed 5709. In 1842 the opening of the docks gave additional importance to the town. First containing an area of 9 acres, they

were extended in 1872 to 12 acres, with 1700 feet of

quays. Vessels of 3000 tons burden can be accommodated.

| From the year 1851, when J. Vaughan discovered the

presence of ironstone in the Eston Hills, the town advanced When the jubilee of the town was held in 1881 (a year late) the population had risen to 55,934, the area to 2731 acres, and the rateable value to £140,000,

_the population of the parliamentary borough (area 4715

acres) being 27,145. In the district there are upwards of

Plate ILI.

MID—

130 blast furnaces, besides large iron and steel works; and

the Thomas-Gilchrist process of making steel promises for |

Middlesborough importance in the future as a steel entre- pot. The make of pig-iron in 1880 was 1,991,032 tons. There are also shipbuilding, potteries, chemical works, and a salt trade. Middlesborough is well laid out, nearly all the streets lying at right angles to one another. Many of the churches and the exchange are handsome buildings, while the station of the North Eastern Railway is probably the finest in the north of England. A splendid park of 72 acres, the gift of the late H. F. W. Bolckow, adds greatly to the amenity of the town.

MIDDLESEX, an inland county in the south-east of England, lying between 51° 25’ and 51° 40’N. lat., and between 0° and 0° 36’ W. long. On the south it is divided from Surrey and Kent by the Thames, on the east from Essex by the Lea, on the west from Buckinghamshire by the Colne, and on the north from Hertfordshire by a partly artificial and very irregular line. Although with the ex- ception of Rutland it is the smallest county in England, its population is exceeded by that of Lancashire only. Its total area is 181,317 acres, of which 2592 acres are common or waste lands. The longest straight line that can be drawn in the county is one of nearly 28 miles from the north-eastern extremity near Waltham Abbey to the south-western at Staines. From north to south in the broadest part the distance is about 15 miles.

Surface and Geology.—The greater portion of the county is flat, although there are sufficient undulations to allow of a proper drainage of the land. A range of hills runs along the Hertfordshire border by Barnet, Elstree, Stanmore, and Pinner, averaging 400 feet in height ; another range occupies

the ground just north of London by Hornsey, Highgate, and Hampstead; Harrow occupies an isolated eminence between the two ranges.

The county lies entirely within the basin of the Thames, and the London Clay extends over a large portion of the surface. This formation stretches from the mouth of the estuary of the Thames to the neighbourhood of Mazrl- borough. It attains its greatest breadth (little short of 30 miles) in the neighbourhood of London, and extends north- ward until it is lost beneath the drift of Suffolk and Norfolk. The following is a table of the various beds of rock which occur at the surface, with their greatest thick- ness (in feet) in the district :—

Alluvium (recent river deposits).....cs.ceecseereeees 15 Post-Pliocene Tertiaries.

Post-glacial beds (brick-earth, gravel, &c.).....45 50 Glacial drift (boulder clay, gravel, &c.).....sseseeees 80 Hocene Tertiarics.

Lower Bagshot sands…..... ee ess es nioe ies sn bias 100 Monel oink Claipreseeccisssibionvce ccs esciccesvassesseserenccssceoeee 420 Woolwich and Reading beds…,.....:..scesssessecesere 90 Cretaccos.

(ClraliceU NBM IONUSH ee estesee eects. cc ssccccsetacancusercrereces 800

Chalk comes to the surface in so very few places that it is scarcely worth mention. It is seen near Harefield and on the north-west side of South Mimms. The depth from the surface to the chalk varies greatly in different parts of the county. This has been proved by the borings for wells; thus at Isleworth the depth is 400 feet and at Hampstead 378, while at Ruislip it is 76 feet and at Pinner only 60. The Reading beds (plastic clays) are brought to the sur- face at Windsor. They follow roughly the course of the river Colne from the north of Uxbridge along the flank of the hills north-eastward, but are sometimes cut back south- ward along small side valleys. An outlying mass is exposed at Pinner. The Bagshot sands, consisting of gravel and sand permeable to water, once stretched over the whole extent of the London Clay, but they are now to be found only on the high grounds at Hampstead, High-

gate, and Harrow. A corner of the main inass enters the south-west corner of the county near Littleton. Beds of brick-earth occur in the drift between West Drayton and Uxbridge.

Several deep borings in the London basin prove the existence beneath the chalk of beds which do not crop out in Middlesex. Three of these are in the county; and the most interesting is that at Meux's Brewery, Tottenham Court Road (about 1146 feet), which passes through the following formations :—gravel and clay, 21 feet; London Clay, 64 feet; Reading beds, 51 feet; Thanet sand, 21 feet; chalk, 655 feet; Upper Greensand, 28 feet; gault, 160 feet ; Lower Greensand, 64 feet ; Devonian, 80 feet.

ftivers and Canals.—The Thames is very tortuous in the 44 miles of its course from Staines to Blackwall, and makes a remarkable bend at the eastern limit of the county where it forms the so-called Isle of Dogs. The width at Staines is 200 feet, at Chiswick opposite Barnes 340 feet, at Hammersmith 525 feet, at Fulham 820 feet, at Westmin- ster Bridge 1100 feet, but at London Bridge it is less than 800 feet ; above the junction of the Lea at the Isle of Dogs the width is 1350 feet. The ordinary rise of the tide at London Bridge is 16 feet, and the tide-way ends at Ted- dington. The port of London begins below London Bridge, and the channel for from 2 to 3 miles is called the Pool.

The Colne from Hertfordshire enters Middlesex at the north-western corner of the county. It then runs south, joining the Thames at Staines, and in its course divides Middlesex from Buckinghamshire for 15 miles. After the river leaves Uxbridge it divides out into several small channels. The Lea from Hertfordshire enters Middlesex at the north-eastern corner of the county near Waltham Abbey.. It runs south, dividing Middlesex from Essex for 15 miles, and falls into the Thames at Bow Creek. Several branches flow off from the river during its course. The Brent from Hertfordshire enters Middlesex near Finchley. It takes a circuitous direction southward through the middle of the county by Hendon, Kingsbury, Twyford, Greenford, and Hanwell to the town of Brentford, where it unites with the Thames. Where the river crosses the Edge- ware Road (about 3 miles south of the town of Edgeware) it is expanded by artificial means into an

extensive reser- voir. The Cran (or Yedding Brook) rises in the district between Harrow and Pinner and flows under Cranford Bridge; it crosses Hounslow Heath, and bends round to Twickenham and Isleworth, where in a divided stream it falls into the Thames.

There were several other small streams in the neighbour- hood of London which have left their mark in the names of places, but which are now merely sewers, such as the Wallbrook, the Westbourn, the Tyburn, the Fleet river, &e. The last-mentioned, which runs into the Thames near Blackfriars Bridge, was formerly navigable as far as Holborn Bridge ; but, the Fleet Ditch, as it was then called, having become in the last century a dangerous nuisance, the lord mayor and citizens were empowered by Act of Parliament to arch it over. The work was commenced in 1734, and in 1737 Fleet market, cecupying the site of the space from Holborn Bridge to Fleet Bridge, was opened to the public. The New River, an artificial water-course con- structed by Sir Hugh Myddelton in the reign of James I. to supply London with water, runs through the county from north to south a little to the west of the river Lea, It derives its waters from the springs of Amwell and Chadwell, increased by a cut from the Lea, in the neighbourhood of Ware, and enters Middlesex from Hertfordshire about 2 miles north of Enfield. It passes Enfield, Tottenham, Hornsey, and Stoke Newington, and is received into the reservoir in Clerkenwell known as the New River Head.

The Grand Junction Canal Icaves the Thames at Brent-

ford, proceeds in a westerly direction by way of Hanwell and Cranford to West Drayton; thence in a northerly direction it follows the valley of the Colne. It passes Uxbridge, and after leaving the county takes its further course by Rickmansworth through Hertfordshire. The Paddington Canal leaves the Grand Junction Canal at Cranford, and passes Northolt, Apperton, Twyford (where it is carried over the Brent by an aqueduct), and Kensal Green. At Paddington it joins the Regent’s Canal, which passes the north of Regent’s Park, and after proceeding through the eastern portions of London joins the Thames at Limehouse. The Regent’s Canal is joined to the river Lea by means of Sir George Duckett’s Canal, and thus there is a through communication from the north-eastern corner of the county to the

south-eastern corner, thence from east to west, and northward to the north-west corner.

Climate, Soil, Agriculture, d&c.—The climate of the county is equable and good, and the shelter of the northern hills makes the air mild. Highgate, Hampstead, and some other parts are supposed to be specially healthy, and are recommended for invalids by the medical profession.

The heavy poor clay in the north and north-western por- tion of Middlesex is chiefly covered with permanent grass. In some parts it has been made fit for arable cultivation by the addition of chalk, lime, and ashes. The rich deposits from the Thames have formed a soil which when well manured is specially suitable for market gardens. From its nearness to London the district has long been famous for high farming, and the divisions devoted to different kinds of farming are well marked. The greater part of Gore and Ossulston hundreds, portions of Spel- thorne and Edmonton hundreds, and a strip down the western side of Elthorne hundred are devoted to meadow and pasture. The arable land is chiefly found on the western side, and between the Great Western Railway and the Thames. It is also to be seen in the north-western district. With the constant increase of London, houses have encroached upon the fields, and most of the market gardens which were situated in the neighbourhood of Islington and Hackney have disappeared. The strip of land by the Thames from Brentford to Chelsea was given up almost entirely to market gardens, but Fulham is fast being built over.

According to the returns for 1882, the area occupied by grain and green crops, grass, &c., was 116,470 acres. Of this amount, 16,887 acres were under corn crops (wheat, 6410; barley, 3083; oats, 3895; and beans and pease, 2636); 13,451 under green crops (ineluding potatoes, 3019; turnips, 1539; mangolds, 1692; cabbage, &c., 1188); 3025 under clover and grasses sown in rotation; and 82,782 under permanent pasture. Orchards occenpied 3419 acres; market gardens, 6900; nursery grounds, 447; and woods, 2382. In the same year the horses numbered 5939 (4188 used for agri- cultural purposes); cattle, 23,283 (cows, 15,390); sheep, 23,916; and pigs, 12,035.

The following were the landowners in the eounty (exclusive of London) at the time of the Domesday survey:—the king, the arch- bishop of

Canterbury, the bishop and eanons of London, the abbeys of Westminster and Holy Trinity at Caen, the nunnery of Barking, the Earls Roger and Morton, Geoffrey de Mannevele, Ernulf de Hesding, Walter Fitz Other, Walter de St Walery, Richard Fitz Gilbert, Robert Gernon, Robert Fafiton, Robert Fitz Roselin, Robert Blund, Roger de Raines, William Fitz Ansculf, Edmund de Salisbury, Aubrey de Vere, Ranulf Fitz Ilger, Derman, Countess Judith, and the king's almoners.

In 1873, according to the Return of Owners of Land, the total nuniber of owners in the county (also exclusive of London) was 11,881, of whom 9006 owned less than an acre. The extent of lands (including common or waste lands) is given as 145,605. The gross estimated rental was £1,611,655. Sixteen owners eaeh pos- sessed over 1000 acres. The crown owned 2882 acres (annual value £5503); the duchy of Lancaster, 2278 acres (£4492) ; Eeclesi- astical Commissioners, 1308 acres (£46,519) ; All Souls' College, Oxford, 1818 acres (£4724); Christ Church, Oxford, 1132 acres (£1635) ; and King's College, Cambridge, 1097 (£1084).

Many villages of Middlesex, especially those near to London, were formerly famous for their mineral springs,

Some places are still supplied with water from wells ; but the Barnet, the East Middlesex, the Grand Junction, the West Middlesex, and the New River Water Companies serve a large part of the county.

Manufactures and Trade.—There is little to remark with regard to the manufactures of the county outside of London. Brick-making and tile-making have always flourished, and malting, distilling, and soap-making are favourite industries. Gunpowder mills exist at Twickenham and Bedfont. The market-towns for corn are Uxbridge, Brentford, and Staines, for cattle and sheep Southall. A horse and cattle fair is held at South Mimms and Barnet.

Railways and Roads.—As London is the centre of the railway system of England, it is evident that many of the lines must run evel Middlesex. For similar reasons it is well provided with roads,

Population. —The total population of Middlesex was 2,539,765 in 1871 and 2,920,485 in 1881, or excluding the seven metropolitan boroughs lying within the county 276,028 in 1871 and 394,089 in 1881. Most of the towns and villages have largely increased during the period between 1871 and 1881 ; the populations of Acton and Tottenham have more than doubled, and Chiswick, Ealing, Edmonton, and Willesden have almost doubled. Of the larger places the least increase has been at Brentford, which numbered 10,271 in 1871, and reached 11,808 in 1881. At the time of the Domesday survey the population of Middlesex, exclusive of London, was 2302.

Government.—Unlike other counties, Middlescx has no high sheriff appointed by the sovereign. It is subject to the City of London, and one of the sheriffs appointed by the lord mayor is sheriff for Middlesex. When Henry I. came to the throne he gave the city an extensive charter, and one of the privileges either granted or confirmed by the king was the perpetual sheriffwick of Middlesex.

The whole of the county is included in the diocese of London, and is divided between the archdeaconries of London and Middlesex. When Henry VIII. created the bishopric of Westminster he allotted the whole county (the parish of Fulham alone excepted) for its diocese. Edward VI., a dissolved the bishopric in the fourth year of his reign.

The county is divided into six hundreds, which remain the same as they were at the time of the Domesday survey, except that the name of one has been changed: —Ossulston (Osulvestane D.), Edmon- ton (Delmetone D.), Gore (Gara D,), Elthorne (Heletorne or Helethorne D.), Spelthorne (Speletorne or Spelethorne D.), Isle- worth (Honeslaw D., 7.¢., Hounslow). The division into hundreds is now merely a name, and a record of a former system of local government.

There are thirty-two poor-law unions, but the unions beyond London are only eight in number, viz., Brentford, Edmonton, Fulham, Hackney, Hampstead, Hendon, Staines, Uxbridge.

The majority of hospitals are in London, but there is a training hospital at Tottenham, St John’s Hospital at Twickenham, and cottage hospitals at Enfield, Ealing, Hayes, Hillingdon, Sudbury, and Teddington. The Royal]

India Lunatic Asylum is at Ealing, and the two county asylums at Colney Hatch and Hanwell.

The county is within the jurisdiction of the central criminal court and alsoof the metropolitan police(with the exception of the City).

Parliamentary Representation. —There are nine constituencies in Middlesex, returning nineteen members, viz., two for the county, four for the City of London, two for each of the boroughs of West- minster, Finsbury, Marylebone, the Tower Hamlets, Chelsea,' and Hackney, with one for the university of London.

In the parliament of 1295 Middlesex was represented by two members ; in 1298 London sent two members as well as the county. For the parliament of 1820 and subsequent parliaments London eleeted four members, but it does not appear that all were allowed to sit. From the 15th century, however, the city has always sent four members to parliament. In 1547 Westminster first sent her two members, aud from that time until 1832 the only seats were those for the county and the two boroughs. In 1832 the boroughs of Finsbury, Marylebone, and Tower Hamlets were added, and in 1866 the boroughs of Chelsca and Hackney and the university of London.

History.—The district now included in Middlesex was largely occupied by forest up to a comparatively recent period, and its population must always have been very sparse. A few prehistoric remains have been discovered at various times,—bones of the

| elephant, hippopotamus, deer, &c., at Old Brentford, elk horns

near Chelsea Hospital, fossil teeth, fish, fruit, &c., at Highgate, and quite recently, in 1879, while the foundations were being dug out for Drummond's New Bank at Charing Cross, a large number of prehistoric animal remains. Flint instruments have also been found to cover a considerable area. During the British period the district is supposed to have been inhabited by the Trinobantes, but

ia DDeL Ts Ex

the late Dr Guest affirms that the valley of the Lea was the western boundary of that tribe. In answer to the question—What became of the district betwecn the Lea and the Brent? this great authority states that the district was merely a inarch of the ‘‘ Catuvellauni,” a eommon through which ran a wide trackway, but in which was neither town, village, nor inhabitcd house. Dr Guest also declares that the boundaries of the Catuvellaunian state, a central kingdom formed or much extended by Cassivellaunus, can be traced in part along the northern limit of Middlesex by following an earthwork valled Grimesditch ‘‘from Brockley Hill to the woodland of the Colne Valley and thence to the Brent, and down the Brent to the Thames.” ! Some earthworks and encampments still exist which are attributed to the Britons.

When the country was under Roman rule great improvements, due to the growing importance of Londinium, were made in this district. Several roads in connexion with the city must have been constructed, more especially the great northern and eastern roads. Dr Guest does not believe that the present Watling Street could have had any connexion with the Watling Street which came down the Edgeware Road, passed along by Park Lane, and erossed the Thames at Westminster. In the Antonine Itinerary mention is made of three stations, viz., Londinium, Sulloniace, and Pontes. Sulloniacee is now Brockley Hill ; Pontes is supposed by Stukeley to mean Staines, but Horsley held that it was intended for Old Windsor, and others supported the claims of Colnbrook and Long- ford. Ronian camps have been found in many parts of the county, and Dr Stukeley supposed that the Brill, near St Pancras, was the site of the battle between Boadicea and the Roman legions which has left a slight record in the name of Battle Bridge. The Roman remains found at different times are too numerous to mention here in detail. Coins, urns, and tiles were found at Enfield, a sepulchral um at Hampstead, and numerous gold coins and ornaments at Bentley Priory, Great Stanmore, in 1781.

Cowey Stakes, about a furlong west of Walton Bridge, is supposed to be the locality of the ford by which Julius Cesar crossed the Thames. Caesar makes special mention of the sharp stakes which he had to encounter, and Bede says that the remains of the stakes were to be seen in his day. Camden was the first to fix upon this us the spot where Cesar crossed, and he is

supported by Dr Guest, but the indentification is not undisputed. Although a ford existed here as late as 1807, and stakes were found up to the end of the 18th century, it has been affirmed that they were placed in their nosition with another object than to oppose an eneiny's progress. Ferien remains have been found at Shepperton near Halliford, at the Middlesex end of the ford. A vase was dug up in 1817, and the remains of a Roman cemetery have also been discovered.

As to the earliest Saxon occupation we are left very much to con- jecture, and the name itself is somewhat of a puzzle. It is evident that no tribe could have cbtained the name of Middle Saxons until after the settlement of the districts on each side of it by the Kast and the West Saxons. As Middlesex was for a period dependent upon the kingdom of Essex, it is probable that the name did not come into use until London had become a Saxon city, although there is reason to believe that previously Saxon settlements had been made on several places by the river and elsewhcre. Bede tells us that London was in the hands of King Seberct in 604, and was then the chief town of Essex. Just a century afterwards—that is, in 704 —the king of the East Saxons granted away land at Twickenham, showing that Middlesex was then dependent upon Essex. It is worthy of note that the two districts now forming the eounties in which London and Southwark are situated were separated from the kingdoms to which they originally belonged probably on account of the importance of the city of London and the borough of Southwark, Middlesex from the kingdom of Essex and Surrey or the South Ridge (A.-S. Su%-rige) from the kingdom of Kent.

Middlesex appears never to have been independent. The admini- strative shire was let to the men of London and their heirs to_be held in farm of the king and his heirs, and ‘‘ the subject shire has to submit to the authority of the sheriffs chosen by the ruling eity. 7

Middlesex is only once mentioned in the Saxon Chronicle, under date 1011, where it is noticed as one of the districts overrun by the Danes. One manuscript (A. Winchester) mentions the Middle Saxons as receiving the true faith under their alderman Peada in 653 ; but this is evidently a mistake of the scribe, for the fact is taken from Bede, and he writes Middle Angles, as do the other MSS. of the Chronicle.

1 “Teeture on the Origin of London,” Atheneum, 1866, No. 2022.

2 Freeman, Vorman Conquest, vol. v (1876) p. 468.

3 In the above passage from the Chroniele, where the districts overrun by the Danes in 1011 are enumerated, the shires, whieh took their names from their chief towns, are distinetly marked off from the distriets whieh took their names from the peoples who inhabited them. Of the latter there are, besides the Middle Saxons, the East Angles, the Kentings, and the South Saxons. Middlesex ls styled an administrative shire, beeause it was not historically a shire, but only one for the purposes of administrative organization. Of the present forty counties twenty-cight are and twelve are not shires, Wessex was divided into six shires, and Mercia into eighteen, with the subsequent addition of Rutland, takcn

_The Saxons appear to have settled over a large portion of the district, and for the purpose of settlement they must have made considerable clearings in the vast forest of Middlcsex. There seems to be good reason for beheving that previous to their coming the roads passed throngh waste lands. By the time of Edward the Confessor a large proportion of the present towns and villages were in existence. Mr Elton, in his Origins of English History,* mentions a curious fact with relation to the tenures which prevailed in some of these places. He alludes to a ring of manors encircling ancient London where the custom of Borough English or junior right was prevalent.5 He then goes on to point out that in this cluster of manors there are several varicties of the custom:—‘‘ Its benefit in Islington and Edmonton was confined to the youngest son; at Ealing, Acton, and Isleworth it extended to the brothers and male eollateral heirs ; and in a great number of instances the privilege was given to females as well as to males in every degree of rclation- ship. These variations are of no very great importance, the custom being modified in all parts of the country by the rule that special proof must be given of any extension of that strict form of Borough English for the benefit of the younger son of which alone the eourts have cognizance. But it is of the greater interest to observe that in several places near London ‘it is the custom for the land to descend to the youngest, if it is undcr a particular

value of five pounds, but if it is worth more, it is parted among all the sons' (First Real Property Commission Evidence, p. 254)."

The great forest of Middlesex continued long after the Norman Conquest, and even as late as the reign of Elizabeth portions of it still existed quite close to London. Fitz Stephen, the monk of Canterbury and secrctary of Thomas a Becket, mentions in his interesting description of London the immense forest with its densely wooded thickets, and its coverts of game, stags, fallow deer, boars, and wild bulls. A few years after Fitz Stephen's death, in the reign of Henry I1I. (1218), the forest was disafforested, and some of the wealthy eitizens took the opportunity of purchasing land and building uponit. Matthew Paris, in his life of the twelfth abbot of St Albans, describes the woods contiguous to the Watling Street between London and St Albans as almost impenetrable, and so much infested by outlaws and by beasts of prey that the numer- ous pilgrims who travelled along the Roman road to the shrine of Albanus were exposed to imminent danger,

There is little further history that can be told of Middlesex. There are many intcresting incidents connected with some of the places, but corporate life has been crushed out of the eounty by the greatness of London. Not a single place except London has grown into importance, and nowhere outside of London is there a building of first-rate interest. The villages on the Thames early began to increase in size on account of the convenience of locomotion supplied by the river. It is only sinee the cxtension of the railway system that the villages to the north and north-west of London have grown in size, and this growth has been mainly due to the building of houses for the use of the Londoners.

Ribliography.—John Norden, Spetulum Britanniz: the first parte, an historicall and chorographicall discription of Middlesex, 4to, London, 1593, reprinted in 1637 and 1723; John Bowack, The Antiquities of Middlesex, parts 1 and 2, folio, London, 1705-6; Ric. Newcourt, Repertoriun Ecclesiasticum Parochiale Lon- dinense, 2 vols. folio, London, 1708; Rev. Thomas Cox, Magna Britannia et Hibernia, antiqua et nova, 6 vols. 4to, London, 1720 (vol. iii. contains Middlesex); A Description of the County of Middlesex, &vo, London, 1775; Rey. Daniel Lysons, The Environs of London, 4 vols, 4to, London, 1792-96 (vols, ii., fii., and supplement, 1811,

contain Middlesex); John Middleton, General View of the Agriculture of Middlesex, 4to, London, 1793; Peter Foot, General View of the Agriculture of Middlesex, 4to, London, 1794; John Middleton, View of the Agrt- culture of Middlesex, 8vo, London, 1798, seeond edition, 1807; Rey. D. Lysons, An Historical Account of those Parishes in the County of Middlesex which are not described in The Environs of London, 4to, London, 1800; G. A. Cooke, Afodern British Traveller, 12mo, Loudon, 1802-10 (vol. xii. eontains Middlesex); E, W. Brayley, Rev. Joseph Nightingale, and J. Norris Brewer, "London and Middlesex," in Beauties of England and Wales, 5 vols. 8vo, London, 1810-16'; ey. William Bawdwen, A Translation of the Record called Domesday, so far as relates to the Counties of Middlesex, Ilertford, Buckingham, Oxford, and Gloucester, 4to, Doneaster, 1812; other publications eoncerning the Domesday of Middlesex are faesimile, folio, Sou:hampton, 1861; a literal extension of the Latin text, folio, London, 1862; Wm. Ryley and Hy. Dethick, The Visitation of Middlesex begun in 1663, folio, Salisbury, 1820; William Pinnoek, The History and Topo- graphy of Middlesex, 12mo, London, 1824 (vol. 3 of Pinnoek's County Histories); W. Smith, Delineations of the County of Middlesex, 8vo, London, 1834; Samuel Tymms, A Compendious Account of Midd'esex and London and Westminster (Cam- den's Britannia epitomized and continued, vol. vii.), London, 1843; J. MH. Sper- ling, Church Walks in Middlesex, being an Ecclestologtst's Guide to that County, 12mo, London, 1849; The Beauties of Middlesex, being a particular description of the principal scats of the nobility and gentry in the County of Middlesex, 8vo, Chelsea, 1850; The Counties of England (No. 1, Middlesex), Svo, 1.ondon, 1855 ; Transactions of the London and Middlesex Archeological Societu, 8vo, 1860-82; James E. Harting, The Birds of Middlesex, 8vo, London, 1866; llenry Trimen and W. T. Thiselton Dyer, Fiora of Middlesex, 8vo, London, 1869; William Iughes, Zhe Geography of Midd'esex for the use of schools, 1210, London, 1872; Wiidimn Lawson, Collins's County Geographies (Middlesex), 8vo, 1872; The Geography of the Counties of Eng'and and Wales (No. 10, Middlesex), 8vo, Man- chester, 1872; W. E. Baxter, The Domesday Book for the County of Middlesex, being that portion of a Return of Owners of Land in England and Wales in 1878 which refers to Middlesex, 4to, Lewes, 1877. (H. B. W.*)

(it is believed) from Northamptonshire. Yorkshire was taken from Northumbria, Laneashire from Cumbria, and, last of all, Monmouthshire fiom Wales, by an Act of Henry VIIL.'s reign.

4 Pp, 188-89, and note. ;

5 Mr Corner gives the number cf instances he has found at sixtcen.

MIDDLETON, a market and manufacturing town of Lancashire, is situated on the Irk, near the Rochdale Canal, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, about 5 miles north of Manchester and 4 west of Oldham. It includes the township of Tonge, an isolated portion of the parish of Prestwich. The church of St Leonards is an old structure of mixed architecture, with a low square tower. 'The oldest portion of the building dates from the 12th century, but the main portion from 1412, and the south aisle from 1524, It underwent extensive restoration in 1869. The Queen Elizabeth Grammar School, a build- ing in the Tudor style, was founded in 1572. There are public baths and a free library. The prosperity of the town dates from the introduction of manufactures at the close of last century. The staple trade is the spinning and weaving of cotton, and the other industries include silk weaving, calico printing, bleaching, dyeing, ironfounding, and the manufacture of soap and chemicals. There are several collieries in the neighbourhood. The town was at an early period in possession of the Bartons, from whom it passed by marriage in the 16th century to Sir Ralph de Assheton. The population of the urban sanitary district of Middleton and Tonge in 1881 was 18,952.

MIDDLETON, Conyers (1683-1750), the earliest and most eminent example of the spirit of theological rational- ism in the English Church of the 18th century, was the son of the rector of Hinderwell near Whitby, and was born at Richmond in Yorkshire, on December 27 (or, according to another account, on August 3), 1683. He graduated at Cambridge, took orders, and in 1706 obtained a fellowship, which he soon resigned upon contracting an advantageous marriage. In 1717 a dispute with Bentley, upon

an extortionate demand of the latter on occasion of Middleton's being created D.D., involved him in an acrimonious con- troversy, which called forth several pamphlets from his pen full of powerful invective, and among them his first considerable literary performances, the Remarks and Further Remarks on Bentley's Proposals for a New Edition of the Greek Testament (1721). "You have laid Bentley flat upon his back," wrote Colbatch. "I scorn to read what the rascal has written," wrote Bentley,—who, how- ever, only resorted to this affected disdain after a fruitless attempt to fix the authorship upon Colbatch, but who might justly have commented upon the impropriety of Middlcton's endeavour to visit his grievances upon the text of the New Testament. Private resentment and uncurbed personality were throughout his life too frequently the motive and the note of Middleton's controversial publica- tions. In 1723 he was involved in a lawsuit by person- alities against Bentley, which had found their way into his otherwise judicious tract on library administration, written on occasion of his appointment to the honourable office of university librarian. In 1726 he gave great offence to the medical profession by a dissertation contend- ing that the healing art among the ancicnts was only exercised by slaves or freedmen. Between the dates of these publications he visited Italy, and made those observa- tions on the pagan pedigree of Italian superstitions which he subsequently embodied in his Letter from Rome (1729). This cogent tract, while establishing the author's main proposition with abundant learning and wit, gave at the

'same time the first clear indication of the anti-supernatural-

istic bias of his intellect, and probably contributed to |

prepare the storm which broke out against him on his next publication (1731). In his remonstrance with Waterland on occasion of the latter's reply to Tindal's Christianity as Old as the Creation, Middleton takes a line which in his day, could hardly fail to expose him to the reproach of infidelity. He gives up the literal truth of the primeval Mosaic narratives; and, in professing to indicate a short

and easy method of confuting Tindal, lays principal stress on the indispensablencss of Christianity as a mainstay of social order. This was to resign nearly everything that divines of the Waterland stamp thought worth defending. Middleton was warmly assailed from many quarters, and retreated with some difficulty under cover of a sheaf of apologetic pamphlets, and a more regular attendance at church. A freethinker in the strict sense of the term he certainly was ; but how far freedom of thonght was carried by him it is not easy to ascertain. His adversaries—some of them men who gravely maintained that Egyptian civilization originated in the age of Solomon—were unable to fix any serious imputation upon him ; on the other hand it is clear that the natural attitude of his mind towards supernatural pretensions was one of suspicion, and that his temperament was by no means devout. That he was nevertheless not incapable of a disinterested hero-worship was evinced by his next important publication, the elegant but partial Life of Cicero (1741), a work which, if far below the standard of modern exactness, may yet compare in spirit and exccution with the best productions of the [talian Renaissance. It is, indeed, as remarked by Forsyth, “rather an historical composition, in which Cicero is the principal figure, than the portrait of the man himself”; and Dr Parr has pointed out Middleton’s unacknowledged obligations to the forgotten Bellendenus, which, however, with the ardour of a discoverer, he seems to have considerably overrated. The work was undertaken at the instance of Lord Hervey, in correspondence with whom also originated his disquisition on Zhe Roman Senate, published in 1747, The same year and the follow- ing produced the most important of all his writings, the Introductory Discourse and the Free Inquiry concerning the miraculous powers then commonly deemed to have subsisted in the church after the apostolic age. In com- bating this belief Middleton indirectly established two pro- positions of capital importance. He showed that ecclesi- astical miracles must be accepted or rejected in the mass ; and he distinguished between the authority due to the early fathers’ testimony to the belicfs and practices of their times and their very slender credibility as witnesses to matters of fact. Some individual grudge seems to have prompted him to expose, in 1750, Bishop Sherlock’s eccentric notions of antcdiluvian prophecy, which had then been before the world for a quartcr of a century. The same year he died of a decline at his scat at Hildesham in Cambridgeshire, leaving a widow, but no children.

Middleton’s most ambitious work is obsolete from no fault of his, but his controversial writings retain a permanent place in the history of opinion. In his more restrieted sphere he may not in- appropriately be compared to Lessing. Like Lessing’s, the character of his intellect was eaptious and iconoclastic, but redeemed from mere negation by a passion for abstract truth, too apt to slumber until called into activity by some merely personal stimulus. His diction is generally masculine and harmonious. Pope thought him and Hooke the only prose writers of the day who deserved to be cited as authorities on the language. Parr, while exposing his plagiarisms, heaps encomiums on his style. But his best qualities, his impatience of superstition and disdain of mere external authority, are rather moral than literary. As ascholar he is rather elegant than profound; as a controversialist he has more vigour than urbanity, and more wit than humour. He has been unjustly attacked both as author and as man by De Quincey, who strangely accuses his style of eolloquialism, and taxes him with eating the church’s bread while denying her doctrines. In fact Middleton’s private means were ample, his ecclesiastical emoluments trifling, and his candour obstrueted his path to much more considerable pre- ferment. The best general view of his intelleetual character and influenee is to be found in Leslie Stephen’s English Thought in the Eighteenth Century, ehap. vi. A handsome edition of lis works, containing several posthumous tracts, but not including the Life of Cicero, appeared in 1752.

MIDDLETON, Tuomas (c. 1570-1627), held a leading place among the dramatists of the reign of James I. His

popularity would seem to have first come to a height about 1607. ‘This is a fair inference from the fact that in this and the following year a whole swarm of comedies from his pen were licensed and published—A Z’rick to Catch the Old One, The Family of Love, The Phenix, Michaelmas Term, Your Live Callants, A Mad World My Masters. Only the first of these kept the stage after the author’s own generation, though in point of wit and constructive skill it is not superior to Zhe Phoenix (a serious comedy) or Your Five Gallants (a bustling and gaily humorous farcical comedy). The plot of the Z’rick bears a family likeness to that of Massinger’s Vew Way to

Pay Old Debts; the titles in fact might be interchanged. A ruined scapegrace outwits his creditors and a usurious uncle by coming to town with a courtesan and passing her off as a widow with a fortune, whom he treats with deferential friendship, but hardly dares to love, ruined and hopeless as he is. His uncle lends him money that he may woo in proper state ; his creditors also intrigue to have the honour of supplying him with all the needs of fashion; and the lady receives many costly presents from aspirants to her hand and fortune. Though Middleton was apparently not in high popularity till 1607, lhe had made his debut as a satirist ten years before ; and if Malone is right in his conjecture that the Mayor of Queensborough is identical with the Randall Earle of Chester mentioned by Henslowe in 1602, he had done dramatic work of a much higher kind. Like The Changeling, a later production, in which Middleton had the assistance of Rowley, the tragedy of the Mayor is named after a character in the insignificant comic underplot. Such a title scares away readers weary of half-intelligible Elizabethan fun and satire; but Simon the comic mayor is a very subordinate figure in the play, and the tragic portions alike in situation, characterization, and language rank among the very noblest productions of the Shake- spearian age. There are scenes in the Changeling also which Mr Swinburne, with a judgment that will not be disputed, assigns to Middleton, unsurpassed for intensity of passion and appalling surprises in the whole range of Elizabethan literature. The execution of these scenes is far beyond any power that Rowley showed in single-handed work, but well within the scope of the author of the Mayor of Queensborough and Women Beware Women. This last play, in which every one of the characters important enough to be honoured with a name perishes at the end in a slaughter so rapid as to be somewhat confus- ing, was apparently one of Middleton's later works, and the simple and measured development of the plot in the first acts seems to show traces of the influence of Massinger. Middleton's verse, when charged with the expression of impassioned love, contains many echoes of the verse of Romeo and Juliet, as if his ear had been fascinated by it in his youth. His language generally proclaims him an admiring disciple of Shakespeare's; and in daring and happy concentration of imagery, and a certain imperial confidence in the use of words, he of all the dramatists of that time is the disciple that comes nearest the master. The Witch, by which Middleton's name has of late been linked with Shakespeare's in groundless speculation as being part author of Macbeth, is

by no means one of Middleton's best plays. The plot is both intricate and feeble, as if the play had been written with a view to the half-comic spectacular exhibition of the witches, with their ribald revelry, their cauldrons, hideous spells, and weird incantations. Charles Lamb's comparison of Middleton's witches with Shakespeare's is one of the most exquisite morsels of criticism; but, when he says that Middleton's witches are "in a lesser degree fine creations," he ought perhaps to have added that' they are merely embodiments of the vulgar superstition, put on the stage to excite

laughter rather than fear among a half-believing audience, an audience ready to laugh at them in the light and ina crowded meeting, whatever each might do in the dark alone. That Middleton had any share in Macbeth is a conjecture resting solely on the fact that the opening words of the song of the witches about the cauldron in Shakespeare's Macbeth occur also in the incantations about a cauldron in the last act of Middleton's Witch, and that Middleton's song was inserted by Davenant in an '""amended " reproduction of Afacbeth. If either borrowed the words of this song from the other, that is no evidence of further co-operation ; besides all that is common to tle two was probably as much public property as a nursery rhyme. There is no evidence as to whether The Witch appeared before or after Macbeth. Middleton co-operated with Dekker in the Roaring Girl ; with Rowley in A Lar Quarrel, The Spanish Gipsy, and The Changeling; and with Jonson and Fletcher in The Widow (one of the few of Middleton's plays reproduced after the Restoration). Towards the close of his life Middleton got into difficulties with the privy council from writing a very clever political play apropos of Prince Charles's unsuccessful wooing of the Spanish infanta in 1623. The chief personages in Spanish politics and their manceuvres were represented with most ingenious skill in the pieces and movements of A Game at Chess. This play was stopped by royal authority, and the prosecution of the author was allowed quietly to drop. The few unimportant facts known in Middleton's private history are collected in Mr Dyce's admirable edition of his plays. He enjoyed the office of city chronologer, and was often employed to write pageants and masques, in one

case at least contracting for the whole exhibition, besides fur- nishing the words. He died in 1627, and was buried at Newington Butts.

MIDDLETOWN, a city and port of entry of the United States, and one of the shire towns of Middlesex county, Connecticut, lies on the right bank of the Con- necticut river, about 30 miles from its mouth, directly oppo- site the well-known Portland quarries, and 24 miles from New Haven by rail. Built on ground rising gently from the river, with its principal streets keeping the direction of the valley, and the cross streets climbing the slope, Middle- town is a place of considerable attractiveness, and the views from the higher points are particularly fine. Water Street, with the wharves and shipping, Main Street, with the commercial houses and hotels, and High Street, with its mansions and gardens and trees, are the leading lines of the city. On the high grounds behind stand the handsome buildings of the Wesleyan (Methodist Episcopal) University. The institution, mainly organized by Wilbur Fisk, D.D., was chartered in 1831. To the two buildings with which it started have been added Rich Hall, with the library of about 30,000 volumes, Judd Hall, with scientific collections of great value, the Memorial Chapel, erected in the centenary year of American Methodism, and the Observa- tory Hall. Since 1872 the courses of the university have been open to both sexes. In 1882 the number of pro- fessors was 20, and of students 191, including 14 females. The Berkeley Theological School (Main Street), founded by the Episcopal Church in 1854, had in 1882 7 pro- fessors and 41 students, with a library of 17,000 volumes. A hill 1} miles to the south-east of the city is occupied by the State General Hospital for the Insane, the principal building having a frontage of 768 feet, and the grounds extending to 230 acres; and on another hill to the south- west of the city stands the State industrial school for girls. As vessels drawing 10 feet of water can reach its wharves, Middletown carries on a considerable trade by the river. In 1882 1613 vessels, with a burden of 240,000 tons, entered the port, and 1613 vessels, with a burden of 350,000 tons,

cleared; and the Middletown district owned 83 sailing vessels and 22 steamers. Both the silver and the lead mines which were formerly worked in

the vicinity have been abandoned, but cast-iron, britannia, and silver-plated goods, sewing-machines, pumps, webbing, and tape are among the local manufactures. The population of the city increased from 5182 in 1860 to 6850 in 1880. First settled in 1636, Middletown was incorporated as a town in 1654, and as a city in 1784.

MIDDLETOWN, a manufacturing village of the United States, in Wallkill township, Orange county, New York, 55 miles N.N.W. of New York, at the junction of four railroads. It is a clean well-built place, in the midst of a fine dairy-farming and stock-raising district, manufactures saws, files, felt hats, blankets, agricultural implements, printers' materials, &c., and is the seat of the State Homeopathic Insane Asylum. The population was 6049 in 1870 and 8494 in 1880.

MIDHURST, an ancient parliamentary borough and market-town of Sussex, is picturesquely situated on a gentle eminence above the south bank of the West Rothcr, on three railway lines, 50 miles south-west of London and 12 north from Chichester. The church of St Denis (re- stored in 1881~83) is chiefly Perpendicular in style, but the lower part of the embattled tower is probably Norman. At the grammar school, founded in 1672, Richard Cobden and Sir Charles Lyell were educated. A new public hall was opened in 1882, The old castle of the De Bohuns stood on a mound above the river, now overgrown with trees. In ancient times a commandery of the Knights of St John of Jerusalem had jurisdiction over the district now forming the liberty of St John. The prosperity of the town depends chiefly on agriculture. A market is held weekly, and a fair three times a year. The population of the parlamentary borough, which has an area of 26,172 acres, was 6753 in 1871, and 7221 in 1881.

Midhurst is not mentioned in Domesday, being included under Easebourne, In the reign of Henry 1. it was held by the king as a minor barony. In the time of Edward 1. it passed into the possession of the De Bohuns. From the time of Edward II. till 1882 it returned two menibers to parliament, but since then only one.

MIDIAN was one of the peoples of North Arabia whom the Hebrews recognized as distant kinsmen, representing them as sons of Abraham's wife Keturah. The word Keturah means "incense"; thus the sons of Keturah

are the “incense-men,” not indeed inhabitants of the far south incense-land, but presumably the tribes whose caravans brought the incense to Palestine and the Mediterranean ports. So the Midianites appear in connexion with the gold and incense trade from Yemen (Isa. lx. 6), and with the trade between Egypt and Syria (Gen. xxxvii. 28, 36). At the time of the exodus the pastures of the Midianites, or of the branch of Midian to which Moses’s father-in-law (Jethro or Raguel, or Hobab) belonged, lay near Mount Horeb (Exod. iii. 1); and Num. x. 29 sq. implies that the tribe was at home in the desert of the wanderings. The Kenites, who, in spite of their connexion with Amalck (1 Sam. xv. 6), had friendly relations with Israel, and ulti- mately coalesced with the tribe of J udah, are represented in Judg. i. 16, iv. 11 as the kin of Moses’s father-in-law. The Kenites, however, can have been but one fraction of Midian which took a separate course from their early relations to Israel.1_ The main body appear in Judg. vi. as a powerful Bedouin confederation, invading Canaan from the castern desert, and ravaging the land as similar tribes have done in all ages when Palestine lacked a strong

1’The admixture of Midianite elements in Judah and the other border tribes of Israel is confirmed by a comparison of the names of the Midianite clans in Gen. xxv. 4 with the Hebrew genealogies (1 Chron. ii. 46, iv. 17, v. 24; Gen. xlvi, 9). i

government. With their defeat by Gideon and another defeat by the Edomites in the field of Moab, probably about the same time (Gen. xxxvi. 35), the recorded history of Midian closes.

A place Midian is mentioned 1 Kings xi. 18, and in later times the name lingered in the district east of the Gulf of ‘Akaba, where Kusebius knows a city Madian in the country of the Saracens and Ptolemy places Modiana. Still later Madyan was a station on the pilgrim route from Egypt to Mecca, the second beyond Aila (Elath). Here in the Middle Ages was shown the well from which Moses watered the flocks of Sho‘aib (Jethro), and the place is still known as ‘‘the caves of Shoaib.” It has considerable ruins, which have been described by Riippcll (Reisen, 1829) and Burton (Land of Midian, 1879).

MIDNAPUR, a district in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, India, between 21° 37’ and 22° 57’ N. lat., and between 86° 35’ 45” and 88° 14’ E. long., is bounded on the N. by Bankura and Bardwan, on the E. by Hooghly and Howrah, on the §. by the Bay of Bengal, and on the W. by Singbliun and Maénbhum, with an area of 5082 square miles. Its general appearance is that of a large open plain, of which the greater part is under cultivation. In the northern portion the soil is poor, and there is little wood. The country along the western boundary, known as the Jungle Mahals, is undulating and picturesque ; it is almost uninhabited. The eastern and south-eastern portions are swampy and richly cultivated. The chicf rivers of the district are the Hooghly and its three tribu- taries, the Rupnarayan, the Haldi, and the Rasulpur. The Midnapur high-level canal runs almost due east and west from the town of Midnapur to Ulubaria on the Hooghly 16 miles below Calcutta, and affords a continuous navigable channel 53 miles in length. There is also a tidal canal for navigation, 26 miles in length, extend- ing from the Rupnarayan river. The jungles in the west of the district yield lac, tasar silk, wax, resin, fire- wood, charcoal, &c., and give shelter to large and small game,

The census of 1872 returned the population of Midnapur at 2,540,963 (1,257,194 males and 1,283,769 females), including only 122 Europeans and 157,030 Mohammedans. The aboriginal tribes belong chiefly to the jungles and hills of Chutia Nagpur and Ban- kura ; the most numerous of them are Santals (96,921) and Bhumijs (35,344). Of high-caste Hindus the returns show 136,500; and the number of Kayasths is given as 101,668. Among the semi-Hindu- ized aborigines, the most numerous are the Bagdis, a tribe of culti- vators, fishermen, and day-labourers (76,825). Beclonging to agri- cultural castes there are 1,018,686. The four nmnicipalities are Midnapur (31,491), Chandrakona (21,311), Ghatal (15,492), and Tamluk (5849). Rice is the staple crop. Irrigation is effected chiefly from the high-level canal. Rent rates vary from 104d. an acre for the puorest quality of rice land to 18s. an acre for the best irrigable lands. The district suffers occasionally from drought ; floods are common, and very disastrous in their results. The prin- cipal exports are rice, silk, and sugar; and the chief imports con- sist of cotton cloth and twist. Salt, indigo, silk, mats, and brass and copper utensils are manufactured. Apart from the rivers, com- munication is afforded by 482 miles of road. The total revenue in 1870-71

was £262,578, and the expenditure £53,777. The pre- vailing diseases are fever, diarrhoea, dysentery, and cholera. The average mean temperature is 80° Fahr., and the average annual rainfall 66 inches.

The early history of Midnapur centres round the ancient town of Tamlik, which in the beginning of the 5th century was an import- ant Buddhist settlement and maritime harbour. The first con- nexion of the English with the district dates from 1760, when Mir Kashn ceded to the East India Company Midnapur, Chittagong, and Bardwan (then estimated to furnish one-third of the entire revenue of Bengal) as the price of his elevation to the throne of Bengal on the deposition of Mir Jafar.

Mipnapvr, chief town and headquarters station of the above district, is situated on the north bank of the Kaséi river, with a population in 1872 of 31,491. The town has a large bézdr, with commodious public offices. Itis healthy, dry, and well supplied with water. An American mission maintains an excellent training school, together with a printing press, and has founded several village schools in

the district. Its efforts have been particularly successful among the Santals, and some of the earliest and most valuable works on their language have issued from the Midnapur mission press. A brisk manufacture of brass and copper utensils takes place in the town ; it is also the centre of a large indigo and silk industry.

MIDRASH. Like all nouns of a similar form Midrash is the equivalent of the Niph‘al participle,’ and as such yields as many modified meanings as the root Darosh (Y77), to search, &c., itself has. The practical significa- tions, however, of Midrash, taken in historical order, are as follows:—(1) a book of records; (2) a recension of older, especially historical, materials; (3) search in and explanation of the Scriptures, notably the Pentateuch (in which case the plural is invariably Midrashoth) ; (4) theory as distinguished from practice ; (5) a college for study and teaching ; (6) an Agadic (that is, a free) explanation, in contradistinction to an //alakhic one ; (7) a collection of such free explanations (in which case the plural is Midrashim and occasionally also Midrashoth). Of these seven significations (1) and (2) are

to be found in the Bible,? (3) and (4) are mentioned for the first time in the Mish- nah, (5) is to be met with in the Midrash,* while (6) and (7) are to be found in early Rabbinic writings.®

The subject of this article will be—(1) the nature of Midrash in the sense of Agadah, to the exclusion of Halakhah (for which see MisHNAH), and (2) the develop- ment of this Midrash Agadah into books (Midrashim).

The thinking reader of the Scriptures cannot have failed to observe that by the side of their ceremonial element, be it negative or affirmative, permissive or jussive, there is also often to be met with (and sometimes so as to be insepar- able from it) a spiritual element. This spiritual element rests chiefly on feeling or emotion, and produces pious works only indirectly. Now the explanation or application of this element, either by the Scriptures themselves or by the rabbis, is traditionally called Midrash Haggadah (recitation, preaching) or Midrash Agadah ® (binding the soul to God and all that is godly).

This Haggadah or Agadah varies considerably both in nature and form. In its nature it sometimes humours, at other times threatens ; it alternately promises and admon- ishes, persuades and rebukes, encourages and deters. In the end it always consoles, and throughout it instructs and elevates. In form it is legendary, historical, exegetic, didactic, theosophic, epigrammatic ; but throughout it is ethical.

And varied as was and is the Midrash Agadah, so varied have been its fortunes. Whilst at times it stood very high in the estimation both of the teachers and the con- gregations in Israel,' it sank at other times very low indeed. Nay, at one and the same time, whilst some

1 Comp. Nehem. viii. 8, where NIP2 evidently stands for N7PI3. See also Kimhi on 2 Chron. xiii. 22, and Schiller-Szincssy, Exposition, &c., Cambridge, 1882, p. 11. 29 Chron. xiii. 22 and xxiv. 27.

3 See Nedarim, iv. 8, and Aboth, i. 17.

4 Bereshith Rabbah, c, xiii, (on Gen. xxv. 22): 95m xd xbny 2. TDYQ OW) Sys wotnd xdx. Midrash is used in the East to this day for Beth

Hammidrash. See MS. Oo. 6, 638 (of the University

Library, Cambridge), leaf 135a, lower margin Gwasps wisp on

-+ ew Dv).

5 Rashi (e.g., on Gen. iii, 8) and Tosaphoth, passim.

6 Those who identify this word as merely the Chaldaic form of the Hebrew Haggadah (and they have, certainly, some authority on their side) ought to write it Aggadah (7J4N), which, however, is not the traditional spelling of it (TIN). Singularly enough, the Latin religto is similarly derived by some from religare and by others from religere,

7 Siphere on Deut. § 49: ‘‘If thou wishest to know Him who but spake and the world came into being, learn Zaggadah; for by so doing thou wilt recognize the Holy One (blessed be He!) and cling to His ways !”

87, Y., Maseroth, iii. 4: ‘ And R. Ze’crah was teasing those rabbis of the Agadah.”:

rabbis exalted it to the skies,® other rabbis treated it with hatred,!° or, worse still, with contempt. There have actually been teachers whose treatment of it differed with the difference of the occasion.1? The fact is the Jews liked or disliked the Afidrash Agadah according to their

political condition on the one hand and their proximity

to Jewish professors of Christianity on the other. In the hour of prosperity the Jews preferred the Halakhah ;™ in that of adversity they ran to hear the consoling words of the Agadah.* When near Judzo-Christians, whose religious strength and argument chiefly rested on Agadah, the Jews disliked it; when among themselves, or when dwelling among Gentiles (heathen or Christian), they showed their wonted partiality for it.

But, whatever were the likings or dislikings of the Jews for the Midrashoth, it is certain that these traditions were early 16 committed to writing, and

formed into special volumes, known as “ Books of Agadah.” 7 Such were first some of the Zargumim and then the AMidrashim. Against writing down the traditional explanations of the Mosaic ceremonial there existed a distinct law,!’ which was observed down to near the end of the 6th century. At an earlier period isolated disciples only, in order to refresh their memory, wrote down short Halakhic notes, which, how- ever, they kept in secret..9 The Z’argumim and Midrashim, on the other hand, were composed very early and were numerous, while their extensive contents were circulated in public.

The Midrash, from whatever point of view it may be regarded, is of the highest value. It is of the lighes value, of course, to the Jew as Jew first, inasmuch as he finds there recorded the noblest ideas, sayings, and teach- ings of his venerable sages of early times. In the next place it has value to the Christian as Christian, since only by these ideas, teachings, reasonings, and descriptions can the beautiful sayings of the Founder of Christianity, the reasonings of the apostles, and the imagery of the sublime but enigmatic Apocalypse be rightly understood. But its importance appeals also to the general scholar, because of the inexhaustible mines of information of all kinds it con- tains. The philologist will find here numerous hints on lexi- cography and grammar, chiefly, of course, of the Semitic languages, but also of other tongues, notably Greek and Latin. The historian will gather here a rich harvest on geography, chorography, topography, chronology, nuiis- matics, &c. The philosopher will find here abundant and

9 Tbid.: ‘‘Then said to him R. Bo bar [son of] Kohano, Why dost thou tease them? Ask, and they will surely answer thee a

107, Y., Shabbath, xvi. 1: ‘‘ He who holds it forth becomes burned by it; he who listens to it gets no reward.”

11 bid. : ‘I never in my life looked into Agadic books.”

2 Jhid.: ‘Let the hand of him who wrote it be cut off”; and com- pare with this T. B., Bobo Bathro, 1230: ‘“goodly pearl.”

13 Beginning of Pesikotho Bahodesh Iasshelishi: ‘ First when the money was at hand one desired to hear the word of the Afishnah and the word of the Talinud….”

14 [bid.: ‘Now, however, when the money is not to be got, and, moreover, when we are sick in consequence of the (treatment by the) government, one pines for the word of the Bible and for the word of the Agadah.”

16 T. Y., Shabbath, xvi. 1, and T. B., Shadbath, 116a : gelia and other Christian writings.”

16 See Tosephto Shabbath, xiv.: ‘I remember that one brought before Rabban Gamliel the elder [St Paul’s teacher] the book of Job (in the) Chaldaic paraphrase”; and T. Y., Ailayim, ix. 4: ‘At that time I ran (my) eyes through the whole Book of the Psalms (in the form) of the Haggadah [Agadah of the Psalms].” R. Hiyya Rubboh belonged to the middle of the 2d Christian century.

WNNHTINI MAD. See T. B., Berakhoth, 23a, Temurah, 140, and the Talmudim, passim.

18 ‘T. B., Gittin, 600: ‘*In the college of R. Yishm‘ael it was taught, ‘These [see Exod. xxxiv. 27] thou oughtest to write down, but thou must not write down Halakhoth.’”

19 ‘T B., Shabbath, 6b: ‘

‘The Hvan-

valuable notices on logic, psychology, metaphysics, theo- logy, theosophy, esthetics, rhetoric, poetry, mathematics, geometry, astronomy, zoology, botany, biology, morphology, chemistry, medicine, physics, &c.

“from the ancients I gather understanding” (cxix. 100)— will find here valuable information on ancient ethnography in the full sense of the term— politics, political economy, law, military science, naval affairs, dc.

covery thought to belong to a recent age was well known

to these ancient doctors. ‘

The sources of the Agadah are five :—(1) the Targumim and especially those on the Prophets and Hagiographa ; (2) the non-canonical Mishnah (Mathnitho Boraitho ; sec MisunaH), which contains many valuable pieces, the age of which is often anterior, in essence if not in form, not only to those contained in the canonical Mishnah, but also to the sayings of the New Testament ; (3) the canonical (officially recognized) Jfishnah, which contains several entire treatises of an Agadic nature, as Aboth,! Middoth, &ec.,7 and numerous pieces scattered here and there among the Halakhah; (4) both Talmudim® (the Palestinian and Babylonian), which have thousands of Agadic notices interspersed in their Halakhoth; and (5) the Midrashim, kar eLoxyv. It is of the last alone, as represented by their principal collections, that we give an historical enumeration here :—

(1) Megillath Ta’anith is an historical Midrash consisting of twelve Perakim, and is called so on the principle of lwcus a non lucendo, seeing that in it are enumerated the days of the year on which a Jew must uot fast. The Aramaic part of it alone consti- tutes the real Jfegiliah, and belongs to the beginning of the 2d Christian century. The editio princeps came out at Mantua, 1513, 4to ; but cheap editions have been printed at Warsaw and elsewhere.*

(2) Sepher Yezirah is a philosophico-cabbalistic Adrash divided into six Perakim, which, in their turn, are subdivided into Mishniyyoth. It is variously ascribed to the patriarch Abraham and to R. 'Akibah, the illustrious teacher, who suffered martyrdom under Hadrian. To this rabbi the book, no doubt, belongs both in substance and form.® It has gone through numerous editions, the ed. prime, being of 1562 (Mantua, 4to), and has been translated into Latin, German, and English (New York, 1877).

(3) Othiyyoth de-Rabbi 'Akibah is a quasi-cabbalistie Midrash on the alphabet, belonging, ia essence if not in form, to the aforesaid teacher and martyr. #d. prine., Constantinople, 1520, 4to.

(4) Massekheth Hekhaloth is an astronomico-cabbalistie Adrash in seven Perakim. It is ascribed to R. Yishma'el the high priest.

+ A valuable edition of this treatise (in Hebrew and English) has been published by Dr C. Taylor, Cambridge, 1878.

? To these we may add, for the sake of convenience, although they do not, strictly speaking, belong to the canonical Mishnah, the Perek Rabb. Meir and the Agadis parts of the Massekhtoth Ketannoth.

- *Two collections of Talmudic Agadoth were made early in the 16th century:—(1) Haggadoth Hattalmud, Constantinople, 1511, folio, of which apparently only five copies are in existence, the finest of these being preserved in the University Library of Cambridge ; and (2) 'En Ya'akob (or 'En Yisrael), of which numerous and cheap editious exist, the ed. prince. being that of Salonika, 1516-22.*

4 Almost all that the latest critics have said concerning the age of the various Targumim and Midrashim will have to be unsaid. Not only are negative statements difficult of proof; in this case they are absolutely incorrect. We shall only give two examples. The state- ment ' Vayyikra Rabbah cannot be early, as Rashi did not know of it, since he nowhere mentions it," is doubly incorrect: Rashi does quote it (¢.g., on Haggai i. 1). Again the statemeut '" We must not omit to observe that no early Jewish commentator—Rashi, Ibn Ezra, &c.— mentions the Targum either to Proverbs or to Job and Psalms; Nathan ben Jechiel (12th century) is the

first who quotes it," contains a re- ductio ad absurdum in itself. For Nathan b. Yehiel was, as is well known, a somewhat older contemporary of Rashi (od. 1105), and lived full a hundred years before Ibn 'Ezra!

5 See T. B., Synhedrin, 65b and 67d. Inthe former place it distinctly speaks of the Sepher Yegirah (71S? DD), and, although in the latter place it speaks of the Milekhoth Yezirah (18) mi5n), there cannot be a doubt that Sepher (15D) and HHilekhoth (mada) are there identical. Moreover, Alishniyyoth and Halakhoth are, in a cer-

tain sense, convertible terms (see MisHNAH); and our book (as remarked above) consists of Afishniyyoth.

The statesman—parti- cularly if he be inclined to follow the Psalmist's advice—

The true scholar will find out by the study of the Agadah that many a dis-

MiDdDRASH

Judging from internal evidence on the one hand, and from what is

known of R. Yishma'el in the Zalmudim and Midrashim (Babli

Berakhoth, 7a and elsewhere) on the other hand, there seems to be

no valid reason for doubting that he is the author of this small but

sublime book. This Midrash is printed in the collection Areze

Lebanon (Venice, 1601, 4to) under the title of " Pireke Hekhaloth"

and " Massckheth Hekhaloth," and a MS. of it is preserved in the

University Library of Cambridge (Dd. 10. 11. 7. 2). The work,

however, called "'The Greater and the Lesser Zekhaloth," in thirty – Perakim, printed in this century, somewhere in Poland, contains,

besides the ancient literature, a good deal of matter which is of inch later date.

(5) Seder ‘Olam (the Greater and the Lesser) are two historical Midrashim, the former of which belongs to the 2d century, whilst the latter (which is a mere extract of the former) belongs to a late age indeed (the Gaonaic). They have been repeatedly printed, always together, the ed. prine. being Mantua, 1513, 4to,

(6) Haggadah shel Pesah is a liturgical Midrash of the middle of the 2d century, as far as its main portions go. It exists now in three principal and several minor recensions in accordance with the various rituals (see Mauzor), and is recited at the domestic service of the first two Passover evenings. The editions are too nunierous to be mentioned, the ed. prine. being Constantinople, 1505, folio.

(7) Megillath Antiokhos treats ostensibly, as its name indicates, of the sufferings of the Jews under Antiochus Epiphanes, and their deliverance from his tyranny, but in reality of their sufferings under Hadrian and their deliverance under Antoninus Pius. The Aramaic text, with the exception of a few interpolations, belongs to the middle ofthe 2dcentury. This little “roll” was for the first time published by Filipowsky (London, 1851, 32mo). A MS. copy of the Hebrew is preserved in the University Library of Cambridge (Dd. 8. 34).

(8) Zohar (Midrash Hazzohar, Midrasho shel Rabbi Shim’con b. Yohai, Midrash Yehi Or, &c.) is a cabbalistic Midrash on the Pen- tateuch, Canticles, Ruth, and part of Lamentations. It is variously ascribed to the famous R. Shim‘con (disciple of R. ‘Akibah, &c.) and to R. Mosheh b. Shemtob of Leon (a second-rate cabbalist of the time of Nahmanides and Ibn Addereth). The Zohar belongs, strictly speaking, to neither of these, whilst, in a certain sense, it belongs to both. The fact is—the nucleus of the book is of Mishnic times, and R. Shim’eon b. Yohai was the author of the Zohar in the same seuse that R. Yohanan was the author of the Palestinian Talmud, ¢.¢., he gave the first impulse to the composi- tion of the book. But R. Mosheh of Leon,®on the other hand, was the first not only to copy and disseminate the Zohar in Europe, but also to disfigure it by sundry explanatory interpolations. For nore details see Lumby, “ Introduction to

the Epistle of Jude," in the Speaker's Commentary, vol. iv. p. 888. The first two editions of the Zohar' on the Pentateuch came out simultaneously (Mantua, 1558-60, 4to, and Cremona, 1558, folio), and the ed. prine. on Canticles, Ruth, and part of Lamentations came out at Salonika (1597, 4to). The best, though by no means critical, edition on the Pentateuch is that of Brody, 1878, Svo. Of translations, such as they are, there exist those of Knorr v. Rosenroth, Kabbala denudata (vol. i., Sulzbach, 1677, aud vol. ii., Frankfort, 1684, 4to), and Tholuck, Wichtige Stellen, &c. (Berlin, 1824, 8vo), &c.8

(9) Pestkotho® (commonly, but by mistake, called Pestkta) derab Kohano is a homiletic Afidrash consisting of thirty-two Pesiktoth for the principal festivals and fasts, and the historically noted sabbaths aud other days. It is of the end of the 3d or the beginning of the 4th century. Having been but rarely quoted since the 12th century, so that most scholars knew of it only

8 R. Mosheh of Leon is a fair sample of the mediocrity of his time in cabbalistic lore, and combined, as is usual, with his mediocrity an illimitable vanity; see MS. Dd. 11. 22 (Cambridge University Library), leaf 2a: " And I adjure every one who should deeply study this book, or who should copy it, or read it, that he do not blot out my name from my property (inheritauce), for I have composed it…." This statement alone would suffice to prove that R. Mosheh of Leon could never have ascribed a book composed by hiinself to anybody else.

7 The Zohar, cleared of the main works by which it is surrounded, aud of the interpolations by which it has been disfigured both by its first European copyist and by others down even to our own days, was begun in Palestine late in the 2d or early iu the 3d century, and finished, at the latest, in the 6th or 7th century. It is impossible that it should have been composed after that time and before the Renaissance, as both language and contents clearly show.

8 Whilst the principal editions of the many textual extracts made from the Zohar (as the Fdderoth, &c.) need not be specified here, those of the following supplementary and kindred works ought to be men- tioned:—(1) Tikkune Hazzohar (ed. prine. Mantua, 1557, 4to), and (2) Zohar Hadash (ed. prine. Cracow, 1603). Nor should the Kontres missepher Hazzohar,

Hibburo Pinyono (by the otherwise very learned Yitshak b. Mosheh of Satanow) be passed over. It is a mere imitation of the Zohar,—an imposition of a kind which is a disgrace to literature.

**For the three Midrashin—Mekhilto, Siphro, and Siphere—sce under MIsHnau.*

aw hf AS A

indirectly, it was long considered lost, till, in 1868, Salomon Buber of Lemberg, a man cf learning, wealth, and love for the ancient literature of his nation, edited it from four MSS., one of which (formerly in possession of Carmoly) is now preserved in the Uni- versity Library of Cambridge (Add. 1497). The printed edition appeared at Lyck, 8vo.

(10) Pesikto Rabbathi, consisting in the latest edition of eighty- four Piskoth, is a Midrash of the same nature, and, in its main part, almost of the same date, as (9). Both drew from the same sources. This Afidrash has been edited five times,—the latest, best, and cheapest edition being that of Friedmann (Vienna, 1880, 8vo).

(11) Tanna debe Kiiyyahu consists of two parts, the Greater (Rabbo) and the Lesser (Zutto),—the former in thirty-one and the latter in twenty-five Perakim. It is an exegetical Afidrash, the name of which is alrealy known to the Bereshith Rabbah (ec. liv.) and the Babylonian Talmud (Kethuboth, 106a). It is only un- critical criticism that can declare it a Gaonaic work, although, like all other old books of the Jews, it is not without later additions, Ed. princ., Venice, 1598, 4to. There are modern and cheap Polish editions.

(12) Midrash Rabbah (N31) or Rabboth (N34) is chiefly an exegetical and homilctical Mfzdrash on the Pentateuch and the " Five Rolls" (Hamesh Megilloth, t.e., Canticles, Ruth, Lamenta- tions, Ecclesiastes, and Esther). It is called Rabbah either from the third (the first distinctive) word of its beginning ("YUIT 925 . ++ 4435) or from its being the most voluininous! Alidrash ; hence also Rabbo (N17). The Midrash on Canticles (and Ecclesiastes) is now and then also called Afidrash Hazitha (fromm the first distine- tive word of the beginning NM). These ten Aidrashim are, certainly,

of various styles and ages; yet none of them is, inter- polation excepted, later than the beginning of the 5th century.? It is remarkable that, although the Afegidloth themselves had been carly attached to the Pentateuch (since they were long before the 10th century, and still are, read through the synagogal year, even as was and still is the Pentateuch itself), the Rabloth had no common editio princeps'—that on the Pentateuch appearing for the first time

1The Rabbah on Genesis has 100 Parshiyyoth, that on Exodus 52, that on Leviticns 37, that on Numbers 28, and that on Deuteronomy 11. These five Midrushim are quoted according to their chapters. The Rabbah on Canticles accommodates itself to the sacred text, and Is quoted accordingly. Ruth has 8 Parshiyyoth, and is quoted according to these. Lamentations has 1 chapter consisting of 33 introductions (Pethihotho Dehakkime), accommodating itself, for the rest, to the sacred text. Ecclesiastes has 8 Sedarim, and Esther has 6 Parshiyyoth. At various times various modes of quoting these A/idrashim are current,—the most common and most expedient, however, being that of quoting them according to the verses of the Bible.

2 Here might with advantage be mentioned some pieces of literature which are kindred in nature, although some of them are of much earlier date, whilst others are much later, than the ten Afidrashimn just mentioned :—(1) Agadath Bereshith on Genesis, in eighty-three chapters, —edited for the first time by R. Menahem de Lonsano in his Shete Yadoth, Venice, 1618, 4to; (2) Midrash Vayyisa'u on Genesis xxxv. 5, in one chapter,—to be found in Jellinek's Bet ha-Midrasch, Leipsic, 1855, 8vo; (8) amplifications of chapter lxx. of our Afidrash Rabbah, on Genesis xxviii. 22, by the incorporation of the whole Apocryphon TYobit in Aramaic, &c. (see The Book of Tobit, &c., Oxford, 1878, 8vo); (4) Afidrash Vayyosha' on Exodus xiv. 30, xv. 1-18,—printed at Constantinople, 1519, 4to; a MS. of this Midrash is preserved in the University Library, Cambridge (Add. 854) ; (5) Midrash 'Asereth Maddibberoth on Exodus xx.,—priuted in Jellinck's Bet ha-Midraseh, Leipsic, 1858, 8vo ; (6) Alidrash Petirath Aharon on Numbers xx. 238-29; (7) Midrash Petirath Mosheh on Deuteronomy xxxiv.; (8) Midrash Abbo Gorion on Esther; the last three are to be found in the before-mentioned Bet ha-Midraseh ; (9) Midrash Shemuel, also called, from

its beginning, ‘th la‘asoth Ladonai, Constantinople, 1517, folio; (10) Midrash Yonah, Prague, 1595, 4to; (11) Midrash Tillim (Tehillim), 1512; (12) Midrash Mishele, 1517; the last two are printed at Constantinople, and in folio; (13) Sepher Hayyashar (iu which a good many old traditions are preserved, although it is, of course, not the one mentioned in various books of the Bible), Venice, 1625, 4to; (14) Dibere Hayyamim shel Mosheh, Constanti- nople, 1516, 4to; a fragment of this is to be found in MS. Add. 532. 4 in the University Library of Cambridge ; (15) Yosephon (or Josippon), various works of Flavius Josephus worked up rather freely, Mantua, 1480, folio,—translated into Latin (German and Spanish) several times ; (16) Zerubbahel, Constantinople, 1519, 8vo ; (17) Elleh Ezkerah on the “Ten Martyrs.” For several other smaller Midrashim see Jellinek’s Bet ha-Midrasch, i. and ii., 1858, iii., 1855, iv., 1857, all at Leipsic ; v., 1878, and vi., 1877, both at Vienna; and comp. also Horowitz, Sammlung Kleiner Midrasehim, i., ii., Frankfort, 1881-82. The Midrashim on Isaiah and on Job seem now irretriev- ably lost.

3 As if to compensate for this drawback, the well-known Cornelio Adelkind brought out at Venice, in 1545, two editions of the Rabboth ou the Pentateuch aud Afegilloth, the one at Bombergi’s house and the

287

in 1512 (Constautinople, folio), and that on the Afegilloth in 1519

(somewhere in Italy, medor 3A, alsoin folio).4 The latest and best edition is that of Vilna, 1880, folio. A translation in German is now coming out at Leipsie, by Dr A. Wiinsche.

(18) Pireke de-Rabbi Elvezer (also called Loraitho de-Rabbi Elvezer) is an astronomico-thcosophical Midrash consisting of fifty-four Perakim. It goes through the so-called “ eighteen bene- dictions,” the signs of the zodiac, &c., but is unfinished. It belongs, no doubt, to the 5th century. The fact that the name “ Fatima ” occurs in it is no proof whatever that the book is post-Mohanimedan, as that name must have becn already known to the idolatrous Arabs, Ed. prin., Constantinople, 1514, and with a Latin translation, Leyden, 1644, both editions being in 4to. There are also now to be found cheap editions (Lemberg, Warsaw).

(14) Tanhuma is an excgetical and homiletical Afdrash on the whole Pentateuch. It is quoted according to the Parshiyyoth of the week. Although originally of the end of the 5th or the beginning of the 6th century, it has now two principal additions, which form part of the book :—(1) several of the Shectloth of Rab Ahai Gaon (of the 8th century), and (2) several pieces of the Yesod of R. Mosheh Haddarshan, of Narbonne (of the 11th ccutury), On its relation to the "Yelammedenu" (often quoted in the 11th century, but supposed to be lost) light will soon be thrown by the before-mentioned Salomon Buber, who is now preparing a critical edition of it. The ed. prine. of the Tankuma is Constantinople, 1522, folio; and a very valuable MS. copy of it is in the Cam- bridge University Library (Add. 1212),

(15) Bahtr is a small cabbalistic Afidrash ascribed to the pre- Mishnic teacher, R. Nehunuyah b. Hakkanah,—no doubt from its beginning with the words.- AIPA JA ANN 137 WRK. Nahmanides (00. c. 1268) quotes this book often in his commentary on the Pentateucl, under the names of Sepher Habbahir, or of – Midrusho shel Rabbi Nehunyah b. Hakkanah. Some have pro- nounced this work a late fabrication, but others, who have thoroughly studied it, justly describe it as "old in substance if not inform." d. prine., Amsterdain, 1651, 4to. A cheap edition appeared at Lemberg (1865, 8vo), and a MS. of this work is pre- served in the University Library of Cambridge (Dd. 10. 11. 4).

(16) Valkut is the only existing systematic if not exhaustive collection of the Agadoth on the whole Bible. Its author drew not only from most of the Midrashim named in this article, but also from the Boraithoth (see Misunau), both Talmudim, and the Midrashic works now lost (as the Abkhir, Hasshekhem, or Hashkem, &c.).6 This fact constitutes one of the principal points ofits value. The author was R. Shim'eon, brother (and not son) of R. Helbo, and father of the distinguished grammazian, critic, and divine R. Yoseph Kara. He lived somewhere in the north of France in the 11th century. The ed. prine. of the Yalkut on Ezra, Nehemiah, and the books of Chronicles came out at Veuicc, 1517, folio (in the first Rabbinie Bible); that on the Prophets and Hagiographa in 1521, and that ou the Pentateuch in 1526-27, both at Salonika, and in folio. An English translation of the whole work has been undertaken by a band of Rabbinic scholars in Cambridge. The first instalment, "The Yalkut on Zechariah," by E. G. King, B.D.,

Hebrew lecturcr of Sidney Sussex College, appeared in 1882. This specimen, besides giving a correct trans- lation, contains many valuable notes.

*(17) Lekah Tob is a Midrash on the Pentateuch and the five Megilloth, by R. Tobiyyaliu b. Eh'ezer of Greece, who lived during the crusade of 1096. This work draws, certainly, upon the old and well-known Midrashim, and as such it would have thoroughly deserved the censure passed upon it by the witty but somewhat irreverent Abraham Ibn 'Ezra (in his preface to his commentary on the Pentateuch). But the Lckah Tob has also most valuable explanations both by the collector himself and by his father (R. Ehtezcr), a faet passed over by Ibn 'Ezra in silence. The Lekah Tob on Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy canie out for the first time at Venice, in 1546, folio, under the title of Pesiito Zuttarto (see Icaf 980 in the postscript by the editor, NNp*DHN NNW, which explains the somewhat vague title on the title- page MND IN KNW XNpP'D}). = In_ 1753-54 it was repul- lished at Venice, with a Latin translation, by Blasius Ugolinus in his Thesaurus Antiquitatum Sacrarum (xv.-xvi.) under the name of Pesictha. The Lekah Tob on Genesis and Exodus was*

other at Giustiniani's. These two editions differ in nothing but in the title-pages, &c., and the vignettes of the various books. The former edition is in possession of Dr W. Aldis Wright, aud the latter in that of DrC. Taylor. The fact of these editions having appeared, simultaneously is, apparently, unknown to the bibliographers.

4It is noteworthy that in this edition Ahashverosh, 1.¢., Esther, stands between Lamentations and Ecclesiastes, with which latter the Midrash on the Megilloth ends. > :

5 We may mention here the ed. prine. of three cabbalistic-Midrashic collections which go under the name of Valkut :—(1) Yalkut Hadash, Lublin, 1648, 4to; (2) Yalkut Reubeni Hakkatan, Prague, 1660, 4to; and (3) Yalkut Reubeni Haggadol. Wilhermsdorf, 1681, folio.

published, with a critical commentary, at Vilna, by Salomon Buber (1880, 8vo), where also simultancously a third edition of this Midrash on the last three books of Moses, with a short commentary on it, came out by Aharon Mosheh Padova, of Carlin. The Lekah Z'ob on the five Afegilloth is as yet unpublished ; there exist, how- ever, several good MSS. of it, both in public and private libraries, the finest copy in every respect being that preserved in the Uni- versity Library, Cambridge (Add. 378. 1). ;

(18) Menorath Hammaor is a scientific, though incomplete, collection of the principal Agadoth of the Talmudim and Midrashim, by R. Yizhak Abohab the elder(flourished 13th century). The editions, with and without translations, are very numerous, ~~— the ed. prince. being Constantinople, 1514, folio. 'There are trans~~ lations in Spanish, Judeo-German, and German, but not in English.

We append two specimens of Midrashim,—the first from

Pesikotho, leaf 1270, and the second from Midrash Shemoth Rabbah, cap. il.

First Specimen.—The loly One (blessed be Ife!) said to the Prophets,! Go ye and comfort ye Jerusalein !

Then went Hosea to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be He!) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said, What hast thou in thine hand to comfort me? The Prophet said (xiv. 6 [5]), "1 will be as the dew unto Israel!" But Jerusilem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest me (ix. 16), " Ephraim is sinitten, their root is dried up, they shall bear no fruit: yea, though they bring forth, yet will 1 slay even the beloved fruit of their womb!" and now thou speakest to ine thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the second prophecy ?

Then went JorkL to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be He!) sent me to thee to eomfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to eomfort me? The Prophet said (iv. 18), "And it shall come to pass in that day that the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, &¢c.!" But Jerusalein said to him, Only yesterday thou toldcst me (i. 5), " Awake, ye drunkards, and weep; and howl, all ye

drinkers of wine, becanse of the new wine; for it is cut off from your mouth!" and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the second prophecy?

Then went Amos to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be He!) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to comfort me? nacle of David that is fallen!" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest me (v. 2), 'The Virgin of Israel is fallen; she shall no more rise!" and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the second prophecy ?

Then went Micau? to comfort her and said, The Ffoly One (blessed be He!) sent me to thee to eomfort thee. She said to him, Whut hast thou in thine hand to comfort me? The Prophet said (vii. 18), " Who is a God like unto Thee, that pardoneth iniquity and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of His heritage?" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest me (i. 5), " For the transgression of Jacob is all this, and for the sins of the house of Isracl, &c.!"? and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or thie second prophecy ?

Then went NAuum to comfort her and said, The Ffoly One (blessed be Te!) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to eomfort me? The Prophet said (i. 1 [i. 15]), " For the wicked shall no more pass through thee!" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest ine (i. 11), " There is one come out of thee that imagineth evil against the Lord, a wicked counsellor!' and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the seeond prophecy ?

Then went Hasakkux to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be He!) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to comfort me? The Prophet said (iii. 13), " Thou wentest forth for the salvation of Thy people, even for the salvation: with Thine Anointed One!" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest ine (i. 2), " O Lord, how long shall I ery and Thou wilt not hear, even cry out unto Thee of violence and Thou wilt not save!" and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the second prophecy ?

Then went Zepuanian to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be Ie!) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to comfort me? The Prophet said (i. 12), ' And it shall come to pass af tliat time that 1 shall seareh Jerusalem with lights!" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest me (i, 15), '* A day of darkness and glocminess! " and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the second prophecy?*

Then went Ifaccat to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be He!) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to comfort me? The Prophet said (ii, 19), 'Is the seed yet in the barn! Yea, as yet the vine and the fig tree and the pomegranate and the olive tree hath not brought forth: from this day will 1 bless you!" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest me (i. 6), "" Ye have sown much and bring in little, &c.1" and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the second prophecy.

'Then went ZecHarian to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be He !) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to comfort me? The Prophet said (i. 15), "Aud F am very sore displeased with the heathen that are at ease: for 1 was but a little displeased and they helped forward the affliction!" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest me (i. 2), " The Lord hath been sore displeased with your fathers! " and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the last prophecy ?

Then went Maracni to comfort her and said, The Holy One (blessed be He!) sent me to thee to comfort thee. She said to him, What hast thou in thine hand to eomfort me? The Prophet said (iii. 12), "And all nations shal} eal] you blessed : for ye shall be a delightsome land!" But Jerusalem said to him, Only yesterday thou toldest me (i. 10), '1 have no delight in you!" and now thou speakest to me thus. Which shall we believe, the first or the last prophecy ?

Then went all the Prophets to the Moly Oue (blessed be He!) saying to lim Lord of the Universe, Jerusulem will not accept consolation at our hands. Then the Holy One (blessed be Het) said to them, '1 and you will together go to comfort her; and this is why it says (Isaiah xl. 1), Comfort ve,.comfort

ye MY PEOPLE, comfort her wird Mn.3 Comfort her, ye eelestial ones! comfort her, ye terrestrial ones! Comfort her, ye living ones! comfort her, ye dead ones! Comfort her in this world! comfort her in the world to come !

1 Comp, Pestkto Rabbathi, cd, Friedmann, leaf 138d,

2 See Pesikto Rubbatht (ed. Friedmann, leaf 1385), where it says (before the paragraph on Vahum), " "Obadyah prophesied for Edom, and Yonah for Nineveh," This, it is true, is a mere gloss; but it is the true reason why these two prophets are left out,

3 There is a play here upon the meaning of the Hebrew $)9}), whieh may be read either 'Ammd ("iny people") or "Jmmt (with me").*

The Prophet said (ix. 11), 'In that day will 1 raise up the taber- |

MIE—MIE

lg

Seconp SprcimeN.—And whom does He try? The righteous one; for it says s. xi. 5), " The Lord trieth the righteous." And by what does Ie try him? by the feeding of sheep. David Te tried by sheep and found him a good shepherd, for it says (Ps. Ixxviii. 70), " And He took him from the 'restraints' of sheep." What is the meaning of 'd/immikhieoth?' Theroot is the same as that of 'vayytk- kale [haggeshem] (Gen. viii. 2), " And the rain was restrained." David restrained the big shecn in favour of the small ones. He bronght out first the young ones, so that they should feed on the tender herbs; then he brouglit ont the old ones that they should feed on the less tender herbs; and, tinally, he brought out the strong sheep that they should feed on the coarser herbs. Upon this the Holy One (blessed be lle!) said, He who understandeth to feed sheep according to their strength, let him come and feed My people! And this it is what is written (Ps. lxxviii. 71), " From following the ewes great with young He brought him to fved Jacob His people!"" And the same wus the case as regards Moses, whom the Holy One (blessed be He!) tried by sheep. Our rabbis say, When Moses our teacher (peace be upon him!) was feeding the sheep of Jethro in the wilderness, a kid ran away from him, and Moses ran after it till they came*

to a mountuiu- hollow. When it had reached the monntain-hollow there was a pool of water, and the kid stood still in order to drink. When Moses reached the kid he said to it, 1 did not know that thou didst run away from me because thou wast thirsty and faint. Thereupon he put it on his shoulders and walked back with it to the flock. Then said the Holy One (blessed be He!), Thou art compassionate in the feeding of sheep belonging to mere flesh and blood (man); as thou livest, thou shalt feed My flock, even Israel! Behold, this it is that is written (Exod. iii. 1), '© And Moses was feeding the flock, &c." (S. M. S.-S.)

MIEDZYRZECZ PODLASKI (Russian, Mejiryechie), a district town of Russian Poland, in the government of Siedlce, 16 miles to the east of the government capital, on the railway between Warsaw and Brest-Litovskiy. It is first mentioned in the year 1390 as a feudal dominion of King Yaghello. After frequently changing hands it became the property of the Czartoryski, and afterwards of the Potocki family, whose palace is still to be scen in the town. Its 10,000 inhabitants—half of whom are Greek nonconformists, and half Jews and Poles—carry on some trade in bristles, and pursue minor industries.

MIERIS, the name of a family of artists who practised painting at Leyden for three generations in the 17th and 18th centuries.

I. Frans van Mirnis, the elder, son of Jan van Micris, a goldsmith and diamond setter, was born, according to Houbraken, at Leyden on the 16th of April 1635, and died there on the 12th of March 1681. His father wished to train him to his own business, but Frans preferred drawing to chasing, and took service with Abraham Tor- envliet, a glazier who kept a school of design. As often happens, the youth's style was influenced by his earliest surroundings. In his father's shop he became familiar with the ways and dress of people of distinction, Tis eye was fascinated in turn by the sheen of jewellery and stained glass; and, though he soon gave up the teaching of Torenvliet for that of Gerard Dow and Abraham van den Tempel, he acquired a manner which had more of the finish of the exquisites of the Dutch school than of the breadth of the disciples of Rembrandt. It should be borne in mind that he seldom chose panels of which the size exceeded 12 to 15 inches, and whenever his name is attached to a picture above that size

we may surcly assign it to his son Willem or to some other imitator. Unlike Gerard Dow when he first left Rembrandt, or Jan Stcen when he started on an independent career, he never ven- tured to design figures as large as life. Characteristic of his art in its minute proportions is a shiny brightness and metallic polish. The subjects which he treated best arc those in which he illustrated the habits or actions of the wealthier classes ; but he sometimes succceded in homely incidents and in portrait, and not unfrequently he ven- tured on allegory. He repeatedly painted the satin skirt which Terburg brought into fashion, and he often rivalled Terburg in the faithful rendering of rich and _highly- coloured woven tissues. But he remained below Terburg and Metzu, because he had not their delicate perception of harmony or their charming mellowness of touch and tint, and he fell behind Gerard Dow, because he was hard and had not his feeling for effect by concentrated light and shade. In the form of his composition, which sometimes represents the framework of a window enlivened with

4 Who, on reading this, does not think of such passages in the New Testament as Matt. xviii. 12, xxv. 21,and John x. 14?

greenery, and adorned with bas-reliefs within which figures are seen to the waist, his model is certainly Gerard Dow. It has been said that he possessed some of the humour of Jan Steen, who was his friend, but the only approach to humour in any of his works is the quaint attitude and look of a tinker ina picture at Dresden, who glances know- ingly at a worn copper kettle which a maid asks him to mend.

It is a question whether Houbraken has truly recorded this master's birthday. One of his best-known pieces, a party of ladies and gentlemen at an oyster luncheon in the hermitage at St Petersburg, bears the date of 1650. Celebrated alike for composition and finish, it would prove that Mieris had reached his prime at the age of fifteen. Another beautiful example, the Doctor Feeling a Lady's Pulse in the gallery of Vienna, is dated 1656 ; and Waagen, in one of his critical essays, justly observes that it is a remarkable production for a youth of twenty- one. In 1657 Mieris was married at Leyden in the pre- sence of Jan Potheuck, a painter, and this is the earliest written record of his existence on which we can implicitly rely.

Of the numerous panels known to the writer of these lines, twenty-nine at least are dated,—the latest being an allegory, long in the Ruhl collection at Cologne, illustrating the kindred vices of drinking, smoking, and dicing, in the year 1680.

Mieris had numerous and distinguished patrons. He received valuable commissions from Archduke Leopold, the elector-palatine, and Cosmo III, grand-duke of Tuscany. His practice was large and lucrative, but never engendered in him either carelessness or neglect. If there be a differ- ence between the painter's earlier and later work, it is that the former was clearer and more delicate in flesh, whilst the latter was often darker and more livid in the shadows. When he died his clients naturally went over to his son Willem, who in turn bequeathed his painting-room to his son Frans. But neither Willem nor Frans the younger equalled Frans the elder.

Il. Wintem van Mrmris (1662-1747), son of Frans. His works are extremely numerous, being partly imita- tions of the paternal subjects, or mythological episodes, which Frans habitually avoided. In no case did he come near the excellence of his sire.

III. Frans vAN Mreris the younger (1689-1763) also lived on the traditions of his grandfather's painting-room.

The pictures of all the generations of the Mieris family were suc- cessfully imitated by A. D. Snaphaan, who lived at Leipsic and was patronized by the court of Anhalt-Dessau. To those who would

study his deceptive form of art a visit to the collection of Worlitz near Dessau may afford instruction.

MIGNARD, Pierre (1610-1695), called—to distinguish him from his brother Nicholas—Le Romain, was the chief French portrait-painter of the 17th century. He was born at Troyes in 1610, and came of a family of painters. In 1630 he left the studio of Simon Vouet for Italy, where he spent twenty-two years, and made a reputation which brought him a summons to Paris. Successful with his portrait of the king, and in favour with the court, Mignard pitted himself against Le Brun, declined to enter the Academy of which he was the head, and made himself the centre of opposition to its

authority. The history of this struggle is most important, because it was identical, as long as it lasted, with that between the old guilds of France and the new body which Colbert, for political reasons, was determined to support. Shut out, in spite of the deserved success of his decorations of the cupola of Val de Grace (1664), from any great share in those public works the control of which was the attribute of the new Academy, Mignard was chiefly active in portraiture. Turenne, Bossuet, Maintenon (Louvre), La Valliére, Sévigné, Montespan, Descartes (Castle Howard), all the beauties

and celebrities of his day, sat to him. His readiness and skill, his happy instinct for grace of arrangement, atoned for want of originality and real power. With the death of Le Brun (1690) the situation changed; Mignard deserted his allies, and succeeded to all the posts held by his opponent. These late honours he did not long enjoy; in 1695 he died whilst about to commence work on the cupola of the Invalides. His best compositions have been en- graved by Audran, Edelinck, Masson, Poilly, and others.

MIGNONETTE, or MiGNoNNETTE (2.¢. "little dar- ling"), the name given to a popular garden flower, the Reseda odorata of botanists, a 'fragrant weed," as Cowper calls it, highly esteemed for its delicate but delicious perfume. The mignonette is generally regarded as being of annual duration, and is a plant of diffuse decumbent twiggy habit, scarcely reaching a foot in height, clothed with bluntish lanceolate entire or three-lobed leaves, and bearing longish spikes—technically racemes—of rather insignificant flowers at the ends of the numerous branches and branchlets. The plant thus naturally assumes the form of a low dense mass of soft green foliage studded over freely with the racemes of flowers, the latter unobtrusive and likely to be overlooked until their diffused fragrance compels attention. The native country of the original or typical mignonette has sometimes been considered doubtful, but according to the best and latest authorities it has been gathered wild on the North African coast near Algiers, in Egypt, and in Syria. As to its introduction, a MS. note in the library of Sir Joseph Banks records that it was sent to England from Paris in 1742; and ten years later it appears to have been sent from Leyden to Philip Miller at Chelsea. Though originally a slender and rather straggling plant, there are now

some improved garden varieties in which the growth is more compact and vigorous, and the inflorescence bolder, though the odour is perhaps less penetrating. The small six-petalled flowers are somewhat curious in structure: the two upper petals are larger, concave, and furnished at the back with a tuft of club-shaped filaments, which gives them the appearance of being deeply incised, while the two lowest petals are much smaller and undivided ; the most conspicuous part consists of the anthers, which are numerous and of a brownish red, giving the tone of colour to the inflorescence. In a new variety named Golden Queen the anthers have a decided tint of orange-yellow, which imparts a brighter golden hue to the plants when in blossom. A handsome proliferous or double-flowered variety has also been obtained, which is likely to be a very useful decorative plant, though only to be propagated by cuttings ; the double white flowers grow in large massive panicles (proliferous racemes), and are equally fragrant with those of the ordinary forms.

What is called tree mignonette in gardens is due to the skill of the cultivator. Though practically a British annual, as already noted, since it flowers abundantly the first season, and is utterly destroyed by the autumnal frosts, and though reeorded as being annual in its native habitat by Desfontaines in the Flora Atlantica, the mignonette, like many other plants treated in England as annuals, will continue to grow on if kept in a suitable temperature. Moreover, the life of certain plants of this semiannual character may be prolonged into a second season if their flowering and seeding are persistently prevented. In applying these facts to the pro- duction of tree mignonette, the gardener grows on the young plants under glass, and prevents their flowering by nipping off the blooming tips of the shoots, so that they continue their vegetative growth into the seeond season. The young plants are at first sup- ported in an ereet position, the laterals being removed so as to secure clean upright stems, and then at the height of one or two fect or more, as may be desired, a head of branches is encouraged to develop itself. In this way very large plants can be produced.

For ordinary purposes, however, other plans are adopted. In the open borders of the flower garden mignonette is usually sown in spring, and in great part takes care of itself ; but, being a favourite either for window or

baleony culture, and on account ofits fragranee a welcome inmate of town conservatories, it is also very exteusively

grown as a pot plant, and for market purposes with this object it is sown in pots in the autumn, and thinncd out to give the plants requisite space, since it does not transplant well, and it is thereafter

specially grown in pits protected from frosts, and marketed when just arriving at the blooming stage.

disposed of year by year. ; In classifying the odours given off by plants Rimmel ranks the mignonette in the class of which he makes the violet the type; and

Fée adopts the same view, referring it to his class of "iosmoids " along with the violet and wallflower.

The name is sometimes, but it would appear less correctly, written mignionette. estin, and useful species,—among them the Reseda Luteola, which is commonly called dyer's-weed and weld, and yiclds a valuable yellow dye.

MIGUEL, Maria Evarist (1802-1866), usually known as Don MiaveEt, whose name is chiefly associated with his pretensions to the throne of Portugal, was the third son of King John VI. of Portugal, and of Carlotta Joachima, one of the Spanish Bourbons; he was born at Lisbon on October 26, 1802. In 1807 he accompanied his parents in their flight to Brazil, where he was permitted to grow up a spoiled child and a worthless youth ; in 1821, on his return to Europe, it is said that he had not yet learned to read. In 1822 his father swore fidelity to the new Portuguese constitution which had been proclaimed in his absence; and this led Carlotta Joachima, who was an absolutist of the extremest Bourbon type, and otherwise hated her husband, to resolve to seek his dethronement in favour of Miguel her favourite son. The insurrections which ensued (see Portucat) resulted in her

relegation to the castle of Queluz and the exile of Miguel (1824), who spent a short time in Paris and afterwards lived in Vienna, where he came under the teaching of Metternich. On the sudden death of John VI. in May 1826, Pedro of Brazil, his eldest son, renounced the crown in favour of his daughter Maria da Gloria, on the understanding that she should become the wife of Miguel. The last-named accordingly swore allegiance to Pedro, to Maria, and to the constitution which Pedro had introduced, and on this footing was appointed regent in July 1827. He arrived in Lisbon in February 1828, and, regardless of his promises, dissolved the new Cortes in March; having called together the old Cortes, with the support of the reactionary party of which his mother was the ruling spirit, he got himself proclaimed sole legitimate king of Portugal in July. The power which he now enjoyed he wielded in the most tyrannical manner for: the repression of all liberalism, and his private life was characterized by the wildest excesses: The public opinion of Europe became more and more actively hostile to his reign, and after the occupation of Oporto by Don Pedro in 1832, the destruction of Miguel's fleet by Captain (afterwards Sir Charles) Napier off Cape St Vincent in 1833, and the victory of Saldanha at Santarem in 1834, Queen Christina of Spain recognized the legitimate sovereignty of Maria, and in this was followed by France and England. Don Miguel capitulated at Evora on May 29, 1834, renouncing all pretensions to the Portuguese throne, and solemnly promising never thenceforward to meddle in Peninsular affairs. He lived for some time at Rome, where he enjoyed papal recognition, but afterwards retired to Bronn- bach, in Baden, where he died on November 14, 1866.

MIGULINSKAYA, a Cossack village (stanitsa) of Russia, in the government of the Don Cossacks, and in the district of Ust-Medvyeditsa, 79 miles to the west of that town, on the left bank of the Don. It is one of the largest and wealthiest stanztsas of the government, and has 20,600 inhabitants, who are engaged in agriculture and stock- breeding, and in the export of agricultural produce.

MIKHAILOVSKAYA, a Cossack village (stanitsa) of Russia, in the government of the Don Cossacks, and in the

In this way hundreds of thousands, probably, of pots of blooming mignonette are raised and

The genus Reseda contains some other interesting

‘in 1881.

MIG—MIL

district of Khopersk, 14 miles to the north-west of Uryupino, on the low left bank of the Khoper, which is inundated when the river is full) It has an important fair, where Tartars from Astrakhan exchange furs and cottons for manufactured and grocery wares imported from central Russia; the inhabitants of the district also sell corn, cattle, and plain woollen stuffs. Population, 18,000.

MILAN (the Latin Mediolanum, Italian Milano, and German Marland), a city of Italy, situated near the middle of the Lombard plain, on the small river Olona, in 45° 27’ 35” N. lat. and 9° 5‘45” E. long. It is 390 feet above the sea-level, and lies 25 miles south of the Alps at Como, 30 miles north of the Apennines, 20 miles east of the Ticino, and 15 miles west of the Adda.

The plain around Milan is extremely fertile, owing at once to the richness of the alluvial soil deposited by the Po, Ticino, Olona, and Adda, and to the excellent system of irrigation. Seen from the top of the cathedral, the plain presents the appearance of a vast garden divided into square plots by rows of mulberry or poplar trees. To the east this plain stretches in an unbroken level, as far as the eye can follow it, towards Venice and the Adriatic ; on the southern side the line of the Apennines from Bologna to Genoa closes the view; to the west rise the Maritime, Cottian, and Graian Alps, with Monte Viso as their central point; while northward are the Pennine, Helvetic, and Rhetian Alps, of which Monte Rosa, the Saasgrat, and Monte Leone are the most conspicuous features. In the plain itself lie many small villages ; and here and there a larger town like Monza or Saronno, or a great building as the Certosa of Pavia, makes a white point upon the greenery.

The commune of Milan consists since 1873 of the city within the walls (area 1513 acres) and the so-called Corpi Santi! without the walls (area 15,415 acres). The popu- lation of the whole area increased from 134,528 in 1800 to 242,457 in 1861, 261,985 in 1871, and 321,839 in 1881,—the city within the walls contributing 110,884 in 1801, 196,109 in 1861, 199,009 in 1871, and 214,004 The climate is very variable ; there is a difference of 41° Fahr. between the extreme summer heat and winter cold. The average number of wet days is 72, and of snowy days 10 per annum.

Milan is built in a circle, the cathedral being the central point. The city is surrounded by a wall 7 miles in circumference, and immediately outside the wall a fine broad thoroughfare makes the circuit of the city. The streets inside are for the most part narrow and crooked ; the main streets are the Corso Vittorio Emanuele, the Strada S. Margherita, the Via Manzoni, the Corso Porta Ticinese, and the Corso Porta Romana. There are few piazzas of any size; the largest is the Piazza del Duomo, which has recently been extended, and the houses around it modernized. 'To the west of the city is the open space of the Foro Bonaparte and the Piazza d'Armi, with the square keep of the Visconti castle, flanked by two granite towers, between them. The castle was partly destroyed in 1447 by the Ambrosian republic, rebuilt by Francesco Sforza, enlarged by the Spanish governors, and taken by Napoleon in 1800, when the outer fortifications were razed to the ground, and the walls left as they now are. North of the Piazza d'Armi is the modern cemetery, with a special building and apparatus for cremation, erected in 1876.

Among the buildings of Milan the most important is the cathedral, begun under Gian Galeazzo Visconti, in 1386. It is built of brick cased in marble from the quarries which Visconti gave in perpetuity to the cathedral chapter. The

1 The name Corpi Santi (of doubtful origin) is also applied to the extra-mural portions of Cremona and Pavia,

name of the original architect is not known, but it is certain that many German master masons were called to Milan to assist the Italian builders.

After St Peter's at Rome and the cathedral of Seville the Duomo of Milan is the largest church in Europe. It is 477 feet in length and 183 in width; the nave is 155 feet high, the cupola 926 feet, and the tower 360 feet. The work was con- tinued through many centuries, and after the designs of many masters, notably of Amadeo, who carried out the octagon cupola, and of Tibaldi, who ornamented the doors and windows of the facade in the 16th century. The work was finished, under Napoleon, in 1805. The style

is Gothic, though its purity is destroyed by the introduc- tion of Romanesque windows and portals on the facade. The form of the church is that of a cross. are double aisles, and aisles in the transepts.

Inside there The roof is

Plan of Milan.

1. Diazza del Teatro. 9. Pal. Beccaria. (19, Marino. 2. Piazza dei Mercanti. 10. S. Fedele. 20. Hotel de la Ville. 8. S Angelo. 11. Teatro d. Cannobiana, | 21, Hotel Gran Bretagna. 4, Ospedale delle Fate-|12. Casa Uboldi. 22, Casa Origo. bene Sorelle. 13, Pal. della Ragione. 23. Galleria Vittorio 5. Ospedale dei Fate-bene | 14. Conserv. di Musica. Emanuele. Fratelli. 15. Teatro della Scala. 24. S. Eufemia. 6. Cusa Samovloff. 16. Casino dei Mercanti. | 25. Pal. Belgiojoso. 7. §. Maria de] Carmine. | 17. Hotel Reichmann. | 26, Museo Civico. 8. Pal. de Brera. 18. Grand Hotel Royal.. |27. Hotel de l'Europe.

supported by fifty-two columns, with canopied niches for statues instead of capitals. The windows of the tribune contain brilliant painted glass. To the right of the entrance is the tomb of Archbishop Heribert, the champion of Milanese liberty; next to that is the tomb of Otho Visconti, founder of that family as a reigning house, and in the right transept the monument of Giacomo dei Medici, the corsair of Como, brother of Pope Pius IV. and uncle to Saint Carlo Borromeo. Under the dome, in a crypt, lies the embalmed body of this cardinal saint (1538-84), canonized for his good deeds during the great famine and plague of 1576. The body is contained in a silver sarcophagus faced with rock-crystal. The roof of the cathedral is built of blocks of white marble; and the various levels are reached by

staircases carried up the buttresses ; it is ornamented with turrets, pinnacles, and two thousand statues.

There are four other churches of interest in Milan. 8. Ambrogio, the oldest, was founded by St Ambrose in the 4th century, on the ruins of a temple of Bacchus. It

is remarkable for its fine atrium, and inside for the mosaics in the tribune, dating from the 9th century, and for the "pala" or plating of the high altar, a curious and ancient specimen of goldsmith's work. S. Maria delle Grazie is a Dominican church of the 15th century. The cupola, with sixteen sides wrought in terra-cotta, is attri- buted to Bramante. §S. Gottardo is now built into the royal palace, and only the apse and the octagonal campanile remain. 'The latter, a beautiful example of early Lom- bard terra-cotta work, was built by Azzone Visconti in 1336, and was the scene of the murder of Giovanni Maria Visconti in 1412. The small church of San Satiro, founded in the 9th century, was rebuilt by Bramante in the 15th. ; the sacristy is one of that master's finest works.

The royal and archiepiscopal palaces are both worthy of note. The former stands on the site of Azzone Vis- conti's palace, and the present building was the viceregal lodge of the Austrian governors. It contains one fine hall with a gallery supported by caryatides. The Broletto, or town-hall, was built by Filippo Maria Visconti for his general Carmagnola, in 1415, who, however, never lived in it. The Great Hospital is a long building with a fine facade in terra-cotta from the designs of the Florentine Antonio Averlino; it dates from the reign of Francesco Sforza (1456), and can accommodate 2400 patients. Among the modern buildings the most remarkable are the Arco della Pace, which stands at the commencement of the Simplon road (begun in 1804 by Napoleon, finished in 1833 under the Austrians), and the great Galleria Vittorio Emanuele, connecting the Piazza del Duomo with the Piazza della Scala—a graceful glass-roofed structure 320 yards long, 16 yards wide, and 94 feet high, built in 1865-67 at a cost of 320,000 lire (£12,800). The Milanese are justly proud of this popular promenade, as the finest of its kind in Europe; and in the best of their four considerable theatres—the Scala, built in 177 8 on the site of a church raised by Beatrice

Scala, wife of Bernabd Visconti—they also possess the largest theatre in Europe, with the single exception of the S. Carlo at Naples.

Milan is rich in works of art. It has been the home of many excellent sculptors and architects, among others of Amadeo and of Agostino Busti, known as Bambaia,—whose work may be seen in the cathedrals of Como and Milan, in the Certosa of Pavia, and in the terra-cotta buildings of the Lombard towns. Later on, towards the close of the 15th century, the refined court of Lodovico Sforza attracted such celebrated artists as Bramante the architect, Gaffurio Franchino the founder of one of the earliest musical academies, and Leonardo da Vinci, from whose school came Luini, Boltraffio, Gaudenzio Ferrari, and Oggiono. Tn still more recent times Beccaria (1738-94) as a jurist, Monti (1754-1828) as a poet, and Manzoni (1785-1873) as a novelist, have won for the Milanese a high reputation in the field of letters.

The picture gallery of the Brera is one of the finest in Italy. It possesses Raphael's famous " Sposalizio," and contains many frescos by Luini, Gaudenzio Ferrari, and Bramantino. The Venetian school is particularly well represented by works of Paolo Veronese, Paris Bordone, Gentile Bellini, Crivelli, Cima da Conegliano, Bonifazio, Moroni, and Carpaccio. Luini may also be studied in the church of Monastero Maggiore, a large part of whose walls he painted in fresco. In the archeological museum, on the ground floor of the Brera, are preserved many interesting monuments, among others the tomb of Beatrice della Scala and the equestrian monument of her husband Bernabd Visconti, as well as the most exquisite sepulchral monument of Gaston de Foix, the work of Agostino Bust. The library of the Brera contains upwards of 200,000 volumes, including some important Venetian chronicles,

but it is not so rich in MSS. as the celebrated Ambrosian |. aud were soon masters of North Italy, and entered Milan the year

library, for which see Liprarizs, vol. xiv. p. 531.

Agriculture.—The district of Milan is renowned for its excellent agriculture. It may be divided into two regions, where different systems of farming are pursued and different crops produced. . The first region lies on the lower slopes of the Alps, where they sink into the plain. This is called the dry Milanese, for it is watered by torrents only, which have worn themselves too deep a bed to allow of irrigation, and the peasants are obliged to colleet the rain- water in large mud-lined tanks called " poppe." The soil is for the most part thin and light, and is frequently washed down the incline into the plain; in some parts it is only kept in its place by stone walls reared at great cost. The farms are smaller here than in the lower plain, and are let on a system which is a compromise between the mezzadria, which once obtained in the district, and regular leases. The tenant pays a money rent for the house; and for the land he either pays in kind or in a money equivalent, supplemented by labour given to the landlord. In cases where vines or fruit trecs are grown, the landlord supplies and maintains them till they come into fruit. The landlord carries out all improvements, and the tenant holds the farm at his pleasure. The rotation of cropping is for three years. The value of these farms varies greatly, ranging from 7 to 14 lire the pertica (1000 square yards). The district produces maize and wheat in abund- ance, a little flax and millet, apples, and wine. The second agricultural district is that which lies in the plain ; it is called the wet Milanese, from the elaborate system of irrigation which makes the ineadows yield a constant succession of crops. The plain is traversed by innumerable canals at various levels, crossing one another on bridges, or by siphons, so that the peasant can flood his fields at any moment. The system is as old as the 12th century; it was iinproved by Leonardo da Vinci, and is now the most perfect network of irrigation in Kurope. 'The farms vary in extent from 1500 to 4500 pertiche. They are let upon leases for nine, twelve, or fifteen years, at rents ranging from 8°50 to 12°50 lire the pertica, while those near a city may bring from 15 to 20 lire. The rotation of cropping is five-yearly. The meadows yield four crops of grass in the year ; the first three—the maggengo, the agostino, and the terzuolo—are cut, the fourth is grazed off. Where the ground is perfectly flat and water can stagnate, rice is grown ; this crop is continued for four years in succession, then the land is rested with cereals and grass. The other crops are inaize and wheat. But the chief oecupation is the supply of dairy

roduce. The cows are bonght in the Swiss cantons of Uri, Zug,

ucerne, and Schwyz, the last furnishing the best milkers. The cheese called Parrnesan comes from the Milanese; and the rich cheese, made of unskimmed milk, known as Stracchino, is made principally at the village of Gorgonzola, 12 miles east of Milan.

Industrics.—The industries of this district have increased very rapidly since the union of Italy, and the eity is now the chief commercial centre in North Italy. The principal industry of Milan and the Milanese is the production and manufacture of silk. For feeding the worms mulberry trees are largely cultivated on the plain; and the district counts upwards of 200 factories, where the silk thread is unwound from the cocoons, yielding 4,000,000 tb of raw silk in the year. Some of this is exported to France for manufacture, but the Milanese can now almost rival their neighbours in the production of silk stuffs, velvets, and brocades. Cotton is manufactured at Saronno and Legnano, fustian at Busto, linen at Cassano, combs at Burlando, and porcelain and carriages of very excellent workmanship in Milan itself.

History.—Bellovesus, king of the Celts, who crossed the Alps when Tarquinius Priscus was king in Rome, is the traditional founder of Milan. The city became the capital of the Insubrian Gauls, and was taken by the Romans in 222 B.c. As a Roman municipium it continued to increase in magnificence and import- ance ; and under Constantine it was the seat of the imperial vicar of the West. Under Theodosius, in the 4th eentury, Milan, to judge from Ausonius's deseription (Ordo Nob. Urbium, v.), must have been rich in temples and public buildings. Theodosius died at Milan after doing penance, at the bidding of St Ambrose, for his slaughter of the people of Thessalonica. Ambrose is still venerated in Milan as the founder of the Milanese chureh and the compiler of the Ambrosian rite, which is still in use throughout the diocese. After his death the period of invasions begins ; and Milan felt the power of the Huns under Attila (452), of the Heruli under Odoacer (476), and of the Goths under Theodoric (493). When Belisarius was sent by Justinian to recover Italy, Datius, the archbishop of Milan, joined him, and the Goths were expelled from the city. But Uraia, nephew of Vitigis the Gothic king, subsequently assaulted and retook the town, after a brave resistance. Uraia destroyed the whole of Milan in 589; and hence it is

that this city, once so important a centre of Roman civilization, possesses so few remains of antiquity. Narses, in his eampaigns against the Goths, had invited other barbarians, the Lombards, to his aid. They came in a body under Alboin, their king, in 568,

following. Alboin established his capital at Pavia, and Milan reniained the centre of Italian opposition to the foreign conquest.

The Lombards were Arians, and the archbishops of Milan from the days of Ambrose had been always orthodox. Though the struggle was unequal, their attitude of resolute opposition to the Lombards gained for them great weight among the people, who felt that their archbishop was a power around whom they might gather for the defence of their liberty and religion. All the innate hatred of the foreigner went to strengthen the hands of the archbishops, who slowly acquired, in addition to their spiritual authority, powers military, executive, and judicial. These powers they came to administer through their delegates, called viscounts. Wheu the Lombard kingdom fell before the Franks under Charles the Great in 774, the archbishops of Milan were still further strengthened by the close alliance between Charles and the church, which gave a sort of confirmation to their temporal authority, and also by Charles's policy of breaking up the great Lombard fiefs and dukedoms, for which he substituted the smaller counties. Under the confused government of Charles's immediate successors the archbishop was the only real power in Milan. But there were two classes of difficulties in the situation, ecclesiastical and political; and their presence had a marked effect on the development of the people and the growth of the commune, which was the next stage in the history of Milan, On the one hand the archbishop was obliged to contend against heretics or against fanatical reformers who found a following among the people; and on the other, since the archbishop was the real power in the city, the emperor, the nobles, and the people cach desired that he should be of their party ; and to whichever party he did belong he was certain to find himself violently opposed by the other two. From these causes it sometimes happened that there were two archbishops, and there- fore no central control, or no archbishop at all, or else an archbishop in exile. The chief result of these difficulties was that a spirit of independence and a capacity of judging and acting for themselves was developed in the people of Milan. The terror of

the Hunnish invasion, in 899, further assisted the people in their pro- gress towards freedom, for it compelled them to take arms and to fortify their city, rendering Milan more than ever independent of the feudal lords who lived in their castles in the country. The tyranny of these nobles drove the peasantry and smaller vassals to seek the protection for life and property, the equality of taxation and of justice, which could be found only inside the walled city and under the rule of the archbishop. Thus Milan grew populous, and learned to govern itself. Its inhabitants became for the first time Milanese, attached to the standard of St Ambrose,— no longer subjects of a foreign conqueror, but a distinet ee with a municipal life and prospects of their own. For the further growth of the commune, the action of the great archbishop Heri- bert, the establishment of the carroccio, the development of Milanese supremacy in Lombardy, the destruction of Lodi, Como, Pavia, and other neighbouring cities, the exhibition of free spirit and power in the Lombard league, and the battle of Legnano, see the article IrAty. See also LOMBARDs.

*After the battle of Legnano, in 1174, although the Lombard cities failed to reap the fruit of their united action, and fell to mutual jealousy once more, Milan internally began to grow in material prosperity. After the peace of Constance (1183) the city walls were extended ; the arts flourished, each in its own quartcr, under a syndic who watched the interests of the trade. The manufacture of armour was the most important industry. During the struggles with the emperor Barbarossa, when freedom seemed on the point of being destroyed, many Milanese vowed themselves, their goods, and their families to the Virgin should their city come safely out of her troubles. Hence arose the powerful fraternity of the **Umiliati," who established their headquarters at the Brera, and began to develop the wool trade, and subsequently gave the first impetus to the production of silk. From this period also date the irrigation works which render the Lombard plain a fertile garden. The government of the city consisted of (A) a parlamento or con- siglio grande, including all who possessed bread and wine of their own,—a council soon found to be unmanageable owing to its size, and reduced first to 2000, then to 1500, and finally to 800 mem- bers; (B) a credenza or committee of twelve members, elected in the grand council, for the despateh of urgent or secret business : (C) the consuls, the executive, elected for one year, and compelled to report to the great council at the*

term of their office. The way in whieh the burghers used their liberty and powers, secured by the peace of Constance, in attacking the fendal nobility ; how they compelled the nobles to eome into the city and to abandon their castles for a certain portion of the year ; how the war between the two classes was continued inside the city, resulting in the establish- ment of the podesta ; and the nature and limits of this office,—all this has been explained in the article Iraty.

This bitter and well-balanced rivalry between the nobles and the people, and the endless danger to which it exposed the city owing to the fuct that the nobles were always ready to claim the protec-

tion of their feudal chief, the emperor, brought to the front two noble families as protagonists of the contending factions, —the Torriani of Valsassina, and the Visconti, who derived their name from the office they had held under the archbishops. After the battle of Cortenova, in 1237, where Frederick II. defeated the Guclf army of the Milanese and captured their carroccio, Pagano della Torre rallied and saved the remnants of the Milancse. This act recom- mended hin to popular favour, and he was called to the government of the city,—but only for the distinct purpose of establishing the ‘“‘catasta,” a property tax which should fall with equal incidence on every citizen. This was a democratic measure which marked the party to which the Torriani belonged and rendered them hateful to the nobility. Pagano died in 1241. His nephew Martino fol- lowed as podest& in 1256, and in 1259 as signore of Milan,—the first time such a title was heard in Italy. The nobles, who had gathered round the Visconti, and who threatened to bring Ezzelino da Romano, the Ghibelline tyrant of Padua, into the city, were defeated by Martino, and nine huudred of their number were captured. Martino was followed by two other Torriani, Filippo his brother (1263-65) and Napoleone his cousin (1265-77), as lords of Milan. Napoleone obtained the title of imperial vicar from Rudolph of Hapsburg. But the nobles under the Visconti had been steadily gathering strength, and Napoleone was defeated at Desio in 1277. He ended his life in a wooden cage at Castel Baradeilo above Como.

Otho Visconti, archbishop of Milan (1262), the victor of Desio, became lord of Milan, and founded the house of Visconti, who ruled the city—except from 1302 to 1310—till 1447, giving twelve lords to Milan. Otho (1277-95), Matteo (1310-22), Galeazzo (1322-28), Azzo (1828-39), Lucchino (1389-49), and Giovanni (1349-54) fol- lowed in succession. Giovanni left the lordship to three nephews— Matteo, Galeazzo, and Bernabd. Matteo was killed (1355) by his brothers, who divided the Milanese, Bernabd reigning in Milan (1354-85) and Galeazzo in Pavia (1354-78). Galeazzo Sef a son, Gian Galeazzo, who became sole lord of Milan by seizing and im- prisoning his uncle Bernabd. For an account of this most powerful prince see Iraty. It was under him that the cathcdral of Milan and the Certosa of Pavia were begun. He was the first duke of Milan, having obtained that title from the emperor Wenceslaus. His sons Giovanni Maria, who reigned at Milan (1402-1412), and Filippo Maria, who reigned at Pavia (1402-1447), succeeded him. In 1412, on his brother's death, Filippo united the whole duchy under his sole rule, and attempted to carry out his father's policy of aggrandizement, but without success.

Filippo was the last male of the Visconti house. At his death a republic was proclaimed, which lasted only three years. In 1450 the general Francesco Sforza, who had married Filippo's only child Bianca Visconti, became duke of Milan by right of conquest if by any right. Under this duke the canal of the Martesana, which connects Milan with the Adda, and the Great Hospital were carried out. Francesco was followed by five of the Sforza family. His son Galeazzo Maria (1466-76) left a son, Gian Galeazzo, a minor, whose guardian and uncle Lodovico usurped the duchy (1479-1500). Lodo- vico was captured in 1500 by Louis XII]. of France, and Milan remained for twelve years under the French crown. In the partial settlement which followed the battle of Ravenna, Massimiliano Sforza, a protegé of the eniperor, was restored to the throne of Milan, and held it by the help of the Swiss till 1515, when Francis 1. of France reconquered the Milanese by the battle of Marignano, and Massimiliano resigned the sovereignty for a revenue from France. This arrangement did not continue. Charles V. succceded the emperor Maximilian, and at once disputed the possession of the Milanese with Francis. In 1522 the imperialists entered Milan and proclaimed Francesco Sforza (son of Lodovico). Francesco died in 1535, and with him ended the house of Sforza. From this date till the war of the

Spanish succession (1714) Milan was a dependency of the Spanish crown. At the close of that war it was handed over to Austria; and under Austria it remained till the Napoleonic cainpaign of 1796. For the results of that campaign, and for the history of Italian progress towards independence, in which Milan played a prominent part by opening the revolution of 1848, the reader is referred to the article Irauy. The Lombard campaign of 1859, with the battles of Solferino and Mageuta, finally made Milan a part of the kingdom of Italy.

Literature.—Pictro Verri, Storia di Milano; Corio, Storia di Milano; Cant,

Iliustrazione Grande del Lombardo Veneto; the Milancse chroniclers in Mura- tori's Rer. Ital. Scriptores; Sismondi, Italian Republics; Ferrari, Rivoluzione @'

Italia; Litta, Famiglie celebri, s.v.“ Torriani,” “Visconti,” “ Sforza,” and “Trivulzi;' |

Muratori, Annali d'Italia; Hallam, Mistory of the Middle Ages; and Mediolanum, 4 vols., 1881. Bonvicino da Riva gives a contemporary account of Milan in the 12th century. (H. F. B.)

MILAZZO, a city of Italy in the province of Messina in Sicily, 203 miles west of Messina, is built on the eastern shore of the Bay of Milazzo, partly on the isthmus of the promontory, Capo Milazzo, which divides it from the Bay of Olivieri. It consists of an old or uppertown protected by strong bastioned walls, and a lower or modern town

| as a prison.

293

The fine old castle is now used Besides a certain amount of foreign com- merce (37 vessels with a burden of 6707 tons entering in 1881, 93 with 13,496 in 1863), Milazzo carries on a good coasting trade (194,366 tons in 1881, 40,138 in 1861), and is one of the seats of the tunny-fishery. The com- munal population increased from 10,493 in 1861 to 13,565 in 1881, and that of the city was 7427 in 1871.

Milazzo is the ancient Myle, a seaport and fortress founded by the Zancleans (Messaniaus), which gives its name to the battle of the Mylewan plain in which the Mamertines were defeated by Hiero in 270 B.c. In 1528 it was the scene of an unsuccessful conspiracy to transfer Sicily to the French. Captured by the Germaus in 1718, it was besieged by the Spaniards, but relieved by a Neapolitan and English force. In July 1860 the defeat of the Neapolitans in the vicinity, and the seizure of the fortress, formed almost the crown- ing act of Garibaldi's victorious campaign. The Bay of Milazzo has been the scene of the defeat of the Carthaginian navy by Duilius (260 B.c.), of Pompeius by Octavian's general Agrippa (36 B.c.), and of the French and Messinian galleys by the Pisans (1268).

MILDEW (explained as "meal-dew" or, with more probability, as "honey-dew") is a popular name given to various minute fungi from their appearance, and from the sudden, dew-like manner of their occurrence. Like many other popular names of plants, it is used to denote different species which possess very small botanical affinity. The term is applied, not only to species be- longing to various systematic groups, but also to such as follow different modes of life. The corn-mildew, the hop-mildew, and the vine-mildew are, for example, parasitic upon living plants, and the mildews of damp linen and of paper are saprophytes, that is, they subsist on matter which is already dead. It is generally possible to draw a distinct line between parasitic and saprophytic fungi; a species which attacks the living body of its host does not grow on dead matter, and vice versa. This is true so far as is known of perhaps all the higher fungi except Saprolegnia ferax (Gruith.), a parasite of freshwater fishes (especially of the salmon), which also grows freely on their dead bodies and on those of flies, &c. As regards mildews in general, the conditions of life and growth are mainly suitable nutrition and dampness accompanied by a high temperature. The life-history of the same species of mildew frequently covers two or more generations, and these are often passed on hosts of different kinds. In some cases again the same generation confines its attack to the same kind of host, while in others the same genera- tion grows on various hosts. For information regarding fungi generally see Funcus, vol. ix. p. 827.

The following examples are of common occurrence.

The Corn-Mildew (Puccinia graminis, Pers., Order Uredinex).—This disease of our grain crops and of many other grass plants is very widely distributed, like its hosts, over the earth, and is by far the most important to man of all mildews. Its life-history is passed in three generations —two of them on the grass plants and one on the barberry. In early spring the first generation is found on the dead leaves and leaf-sheaths of grass plants (in which thie disease has hibernated), presenting to the naked eye the appearance of thin black streaks. When examined with a microscope these streaks are seen to consist of a great number of minute two-celled and thick-walled teleutospores (reproductive bodies), each situated at the end of a stalk (see A in fig. 2, vol. ix. p. 831). These have burst through the epidermis of the plant from their origin on threads among the tissues beneath. When they have been in contact with excessive moisture for a few hours, each of the spore-cells germinates by emitting a fine tube called a promycelium, on which there are borne small round thin- walled sporidia (reproductive bodies). The sporidia are easily detached and carried from place to place by tbe wind, and on alighting on the leaves of a barberry plant

outside of the enceinte.

294

soon germinate by pushing out a small tube which per- forates the epidermis and thus gains access to the interior of the leaf, where it branches copiously, and forms a mass of thread-like tissue called mycelium. The germ-tubes of sporidia are unable to enter the leaves, &c., of grass plants. In from six to ten days this mycelium gives rise to flask- shaped bodies called spermogonia (vol. ix. p. 831, fig. 2 B, sp), immediately under the surface of the leaf (usually the upper one), but breaking through it at the neck of the flask, out of which there protrudes a bunch of hairs. Within the flasks are formed at the end of stalks many exceedingly small oval bodies called spermatia, which escape through the neck. The function of these bodies has not yet been definitely made out, but that they bear a very strik- ing resemblance to the male sexual organs of other fungi there can beno doubt. In the same leaves and on the same mycelium there arise several days later numerous basin- shaped bodies containing erect stalks, bearing

at the apex a number of round ecidiospores (reproductive bodies) in vertical series (vol. ix. p. 831, fig. 2 B, a). These con- stitute the second generation. On their escape they germinate by emitting a tube which, if the host on which they fall be a grass plant, enters the leaf through one of the stomata in the epidermis, and there by branching forms a new mycelium. On this there soon appears, bursting through the epidermis, a new generation consisting of round or oval uredospores produced at the end of stalks (vol. ix. p. 831, fig. 2 C). The uredospores constantly reproduce this generation, and in such abundance that the grain crops are extensively ravaged by its attack. It is in this genera- tion that the term mildew is popularly given to the fungus. Later in autumn on the same mycelium the two-celled teleutospores appear, and these after hibernating renew in spring the life-history. This very remarkable cycle of generations was first traced by Professor de Bary.

The Hop-Mildew (Sphxrotheea Castagnei, Lev., Order LErysi- phex) isa parasitic disease of the hop, though it is often to be found on many other plants, such as Potentilla, Spirwa, Epilobium, balsams, cucumbers, dandelions, plantains, &c. 'The thread-like mycclium appears on the young shoots and leaves of the hop in white spots, which gradually extend and finally unite. This mycelium bears many miuute, round conceptacles (perithecia) which with their supporting threads are brown-coloured. Within each perithecium is found a somewhat oval body termed an ascus, con- taining eight ascospores (reproductive bodies).

The Vine-Mildew (Erysiphe Tuekeri, Berk., Order Erysiphex) is known only in one generation—called the oidium stage. Soon after the flowering of the vine the attack takes place on the young leaves, from which the thin white mycelium spreads rapidly to the older leaves and twigs, which it does not appear to affect so injuriously. The chief damage is done to the grapes while they are in a very immature condition. The mycelium which travels over the surface sends down at intervals into the tissues short irregular protuber- ances called haustoria, which perform for it the functions of roots. Above these rise from the mycelium short stalks bearing each a single oval spore at the apex. The disease spreads on the same plant not only by the extension of the mycelium but by the scattcring and gerinination of the spores. Here no perithecia are known.

The Paper-Mildew (Aseotricha chartarum, Berk., Order Erysiphex) grows on damp paper, and therefore is saprophytic in its mode of life. It consists at first of a branching filamentous mycelium on which minute globular spores occur. Finally a round brown peri- thecium is formed among the threads which appear as radiating from it. Within the peritliccium are numerous lincar asci contain- ing each a row of dark elliptic ascospores.

For the Lrysiphex generally see Funcus, vol. ix. p- 833.

MILETUS, an ancient city on the southern shore of the Latmic Gulf opposite the mouth of the Meander. Before the Ionic migration it was inhabited by the Carians (Thad ii. 876; Herod. i. 146); other authorities call the original people Leleges, who are always hard to distinguish from Carians. The Greek settlers from Pylus under Neleus massacred all the men in the city, and built for themselves a new city on the coast. It occupied a very favourable situation at the mouth of the rich valley of the Meander, and was the natural outlet for the trade

‘harbours, one of considerable size.

of southern Phrygia (Hipponax, /’r. 45); it had four Its power extended inland for some distance up the valley of the Meander, and along the coast to the south, where it founded the city of Iasus. The trade with the Black Sea, however, was the greatest source of wealth to the Ionian cities. Miletus like the rest turned its attention chiefly to the north, and after a time it succeeded in almost monopolizing the traffic. Along the Hellespont, the Propontis, and the Black Sea coasts it founded more than sixty cities—among them Abydus, Cyzicus, Sinope, Dioscurias, Panticapeeum, and Olbia. All these cities were founded before the middle of the 7th century ; and before 500 B.c. Miletus was decidedly the greatest Greek city. During the time when the enter- prise and energy of the seafaring population, the dewvadrar, raised Miletus to such power and wealth, nothing is known of its internal history. The analogy of all Greek cities, and some casual statements in later writers, suggest that the usual bloody struggles took place between the oligarchy and the democracy, and that tyrants sometimes raised themselves to supreme power in the city; but no details are known.

Miletus was equally distinguished at this early time as a seat of literature. The Ionian epic and lyric poetry indeed had its home farther north ; philosophy and history were more akin to the practical race of Miletus, and Thales, Anaximander, Anaximenes, Hecatzus, all belonged to this city. The three Ionian cities of Caria— Miletus, Myus, and Priene—spoke a peculiar dialect of Tonic.?

When the Mermnad kings raised Lydia to be a great military kingdom, Miletus was their strongest adversary. War was carried on for many years, till Alyattes concluded a peace with Thrasybulus, tyrant of Miletus ; the Milesians afterwards seem to have peaceably acknowledged the rule of Croesus. On the Persian conquest Miletus passed under a new master; it headed the revolt of 500 B.c., and was taken by storm after the battle of Lade. Darius treated it with peculiar severity, massacred most of the inhabitants, transported the rest to Ampe at the mouth of the Tigris, and gave up the city to the Carians. Henceforth the history of Miletus has no special interest ; it revived indeed when the Persians were expelled from the coast in 479 B.c., and was a town of commercial importance throughout the Graeco-Roman period, when it shared in the general fortunes of the Ionian cities under the rule of Athenians, Persians, Macedonians, Pergamenians, and Romans in succession. Its harbours, once protected by Lade and the other Tragusan islands, were gradually silted up by the Meander, and Lade is now a hill some miles from the coast. Ephesus took its place as the great Ionian harbour in the Hellenistic and Roman times. It was the seat of a Christian bishopric, but its decay was sure, and its site is now a marsh.

See Schroeder, Comment. de Reb. Miles.; Soldan, Rer. Miles. Comment. ; Rayet, Milet ect le Golfe Latmique; Head, 'Early Elec- truin Coins," in Numism. Chron., vol. xvi.

MILFORD, a seaport, market-town, and contributory parliamentary borough (one of the Pembroke district) of Pembrokeshire, South Wales, is finely situated on the north side of Milford Haven, about 8 miles west-north-west of Pembroke. The land-locked estuary of Milford Haven stretches about 10 miles inland, with a

1 The coinage of Miletus during this early period is an important subject on account of the wide commercial connexions of the city. The early electrum

eoinage belongs to the Pheenician or Graco-Asiatic standard, which was introduccd from Pheenicia and spread over many of the Ionian and Thracian cities through the influence of Milesiau trade. Very archaic coins of Miletus, Ephesus, Cyme, and Sardis are known of this standard, and at a somewhat later date of Chios, Samos, Clazomene, Lampsacus, Abydus, and Cyzicus. he lionis the regular Milesian type, often with a star beside or above him.

In most places it has a | abolish the military constitution of the frontier, but the

breadth of from 1 to 2 miles. depth of from 15 to 19 fathoms, and, as it is completely sheltered by hills, vessels can ride in it at anchor in all kinds of weather. The royal dockyard, founded at Milford in 1790, was removed in 1811, and from that time trade has been in a languishing condition. The town possesses irou-works. The shipping trade is confined chiefly to coasting vessels, but with the completion of new docks, capable of receiving vessels of the largest tonnage, it is supposed that a considerable trade may be carried on with America. The population of the urban sanitary dis- trict in 1871 was 3252, and in 1881 it was 3813.

MILFORD, a post-village of the United States, in Worcester county, Massachusetts, lies 34 miles south-west of Boston, at the junction of the Milford branch of the Boston and Albany Railroad with the Hopkinton, Milford, and Woonsocket Railroad. It is one of the principal seats of the boot manufacture in New England, and also pro- duces large quantities of straw goods. The population was 9310 in 1880.

MILICZ, or Mitrtscu, of Kremsier, Moravia, was the most influential among those preachers and writers in Moravia and Bohemia who during the 14th century paved the way for the reforming activity of Huss and through him for that of Luther. He was born about 1325, was already in holy orders in 1350, in 1360 was attached to

the court of the emperor Charles [V., whom he accompanied ,

into Germany in that year, and about the same time also held a canonry in the cathedral of Prague along with the dignity of archdeacon. About 1363 he resigned all his appointments that he might become a preacher pure and

simple ; he addressed scholars in Latin, and (an innovation) | the laity in their native Czech, or in German, which he | The success of his labours in | reclaiming the fallen made itself apparent in the reforma- |

acquired for the purpose.

tion of a whole quarter of the city of Prague. As he dwelt more and more on ecclesiastical abuses and the corruption of the clergy, and viewed them in the light of Scripture, the conviction grew in his mind that the "abomination of desolation" was now seen in the temple of God, and that antichrist had come, and in 1367 he went to Rome (where Urban V. was expected from Avignon) to expound these views. He affixed to the gate of St Peter's a placard announcing his sermon, but before he could deliver it was thrown into prison by the Inquisition. Urban, however, on his arrival ordered his release, whereupon he returned to Prague, and from 1369 to 1372 preached daily in the Teyn Church there. In the latter year the clergy of the diocese

complained of him to the papal court at Avignon, whither | he was summoned in Lent 1374, and where he died before |

his case was decided. He was the author of a Libellus de Antichristo, written in prison at Rome, a series of Postile and Lectiones Quadragesimales in Latin, and a similar series of Postls in Czech.

MILITARY FRONTIER (German, Militdrgrenze ; Slavonic, Granitza), a narrow strip of Austrian-Hungarian territory stretching along the borders of Turkey, which had for centuries a peculiar military organization, and from 1849 to 1873 constituted a crown-land. As a separate division of the monarchy it owed its existence to the necessity of maintaining during the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries a strong line of defence against the invasions of the Turks, and may be said to have had its origin with the establishment of the captaincy of Zengg by Matthias Corvinus and the introduction of Uskoks (fugitives from Turkey) into the Warasdin district by the emperor

three frontier " generalates "—Carlstadt, Warasdin, and Petrinia (the last also called the Banal). After the defeat of the Turkish power by Prince Eugene it was proposed to

change was successfully resisted by the inhabitants of the district ; on the other hand, a new Slavonian frontier dis- trict was established in 1702, and Maria Theresa extended the organization to the march-lands of Transylvania (the Szekler frontier in 1764, the Wallachian in 1766).}

As a reward for the service it rendered the Government in the suppression of the Hungarian insurrection in 1848, the Military Frontier was erected in 1849 into a crown-land, with a total area of 15,182 square miles, and a population of 1,220,503. In 1851 the Transylvanian portion (1177 square miles) was incorporated with the rest of Transyl- vania ; and in 1871 effect was given to the imperial decree of 1869 by which the districts of the Warasdin regiments (St George and the Cross) and the towns of Zengg, Belovar, Ivanit, &c., were " provincialized" or incorporated with the Croatian-Slavonian crown-land. In 1872 the Banat regiments followed suit; and in 1873 the old military organization was abolished in all the rest of the frontier. Not till 1881, however, were the Croatian-Slavonian march-lands completely merged in the kingdoms to which they naturally belonged.

The social aspect of the military frontier régime is intcresting. A communal system of land tenure natural to the old Slavonians was artificially kept in existence. The mark or plot of ground assigned to the original family of settlers remaincd the property of the family as such, and could not be portioned out among the several members. In this way the house-community, all under the rule of the same house-father and house-mother (who were not neces- sarily man and wife, nor the oldest members of the community), and all living within the same palisade, sometimes came to num- ber two or three hundred persons. The "family" dined in a com- mon hall, and after dinner discussed and settled matters affecting the common weal. Every man posscssing real property in the country, and capable of bearing arms, was liable to military service from his twentieth year. The house-communities are now begin- ning to avail themselves of the permissive partition laws, and strangers are free to come and acquire

property in land. Watch- towers with wooden clappers and the beacons which flashed the alarm along the whole frontier in a few hours are still features in the landscape.

MILITARY LAW consists of the statutes, rules of pro- cedure, royal warrants, and orders and regulations which prescribe and enforce the public obligations of the officers, soldiers, and others made subject to its provisions. Its essential purpose is the maintenance of discipline; but it also includes the administrative government of the military forces of the state, more especially in the matters of enlist- ment, service, and billeting. The term "martial law" sometimes applied to it is, as regards modern times at least, a misnomer. For martial law as it is now understood applies not only to military persons but to the civil com- munity, and may be described generally as the abrogation of ordinary law and the substitution for it of military force uncontrolled save by what, in the discretion of the commanding general, may be considered the necessity of the case,

The military law of England in early times existed, like the forces to which it applied, in a period of war only.

1 By 1848 the following had come to be the division of the Military Frontier :—(1) The Carlstadt (Carlowitz), Warasdin, and Banal Generalate: the Licca Regiment (headquarters at Gospich), the Otto- chaz Regiment (Ottochaz), the Ogulin (Ogulin), the Sluin (Carlstadt), the Cross (Belovar), the St George's (Belovar), the Ist Banal (Glina), the 2d Banal (Petrinia). (2) The Slavonian Generalate: the Gradiska Regiment (Neu Gradiska), the Brood Regiment (Vinkoveze), the Peter- wardein (Mitrovicz), the Tchaikist Battalion (Titel). (3) The Banat Generalate: the German Banat Regiment (Pancsova), the Wallachian Banat (Karansebes), the Illyrian Banat (Weisskirchen). (4) The Tran- sylvanian Generalate: The Szekler Regiment No. 14 (Csik Szereda),

| the Szekler Regiment No. 15 (Keszdi Vasarhely), the Wallachian No. Ferdinand I. By the close of the 17th century there were |

*| as * military communities," had communal constitutions not unlike*

16 (Orlath), the Wallachian No. 17 (Naszod). Twelve towns, known

those of the free towns of Hungary—Carlopago, Zengg, Petrinia, Kostainicza, Belovar, Ivanit, Brood, Peterwardein, Carlowitz, Semlin, Pancsova, and Weisskirchen.

296

Troops were raised for a particular service, and were dis- banded upon the cessation of hostilities. The crown, of its mere prerogative, made laws known as Articles of War, for the government and discipline of the troops while thus embodied and serving. Except for the punishment of desertion, which offence was made a felony by statute in the reign of Henry VI., these ordinances or Articles of War remained almost the sole authority for the enforce- ment of discipline until 1689, when the first Mutiny Act was passed and the military forces of the crown were brought under the direct control of parliament. Even the Parliamentary forces in the time of Charles I. and Cromwell were governed, not by an Act of the legislature, but by articles of war similar to those issued by the king and authorized by an ordinance of the Lords and Commons, exercising in that respect the sovereign prerogative. This power of law-making by prerogative was, however, held to be applicable during a state of actual war only, and attempts to exercise it in time of peace were ineffectual. Subject to this limitation it existed for considerably more than a century after the passing of the first Mutiny Act. From 1689 to 1803, although in peace time the Mutiny Act was occasionally suffered to expire, a statutory power was given to the crown to make Articles of War to operate in the colonies and elsewhere beyond the seas in the same manner as those made by prerogative operated in time of war. In 1715, in consequence of the rebellion, this power was created in respect of the forces in the kingdom. But these enactments were apart from and in no respect affected the principle acknowledged all this time that the crown of its mere prerogative could make laws for the government of the army in foreign countries in time of war. The Mutiny Act of 1803 effected a great constitutional change in this respect: the power of the crown to make any Articles of War became altogether statutory, and the pre- rogative merged in the Act of Parliament. So matters remained till the year 1879, when the last Mutiny Act was passed and the last Articles of War were promulgated. The Mutiny Act legislated for offences in respect of which death or penal servitude could be awarded, and the Articles of War, while

repeating those provisions of the Act, constituted the direct authority for dealing with offences for which imprisonment was the maximum punishment as well as with many matters relating to trial and procedure. The Act and the Articles were found not to harmonize in all respects. Their general arrangement was faulty, and their language sometimes obscure. In 1869 a royal commission recommended that both should be recast in a simple and intelligible shape. In 1878 a committee of the House of Commons endorsed this view and made certain recommendations as to the way in which the task should be performed. In 1879 the Government submitted to parliament and passed into law a measure consolidating in one Act both the Mutiny Act and the Articles of War, and amending their provisions in certain important respects. This measure was called the "Army Discipline and Regulation Act, 1879." After one or two years' experience of its working it also was found capable of improvement, and was in its turn superseded by the Army Act, 1881, which now forms the foundation and the main portion of the military law of England. It contains a Proviso saving the right of the crown to make Articles of War, but in such a manner as to render the power in effect a nullity ; for it enacts that no crime made punishable by the Act shall be otherwise punishable by such Articles, As the punishment of every conceivable offence is provided for by the Act, any Articles made thereunder can be no more than an empty formality having no practical effect, Thus the history of English military law up to 1879 may be divided into three periods, each having a distinct con-

|

M1 bg am Oy ws

stitutional aspect :—(1) that prior to 1689, when the army, being regarded as so many personal retainers of the sovereign rather than servants of the state, was mainly governed by the will of the sovereign; (2) that between 1689 and 1803, when the army, being recognized as a per- manent force, was governed within .the realm by statute and without it by the prerogative of the crown; and (3) that from 1803 to 1879, when it was governed either directly by statute or by the sovereign under an authority derived from and defined and limited by statute. Although in 1879 the power of making Articles of War became in effect altogether inoperative, the sovereign was

empowered to make rules of procedure, having the force of law, which regulate the administration of the Act in many matters formerly dealt with by the Articles of War. These rules, however, must not be inconsistent with the provisions of the Army Act itself, and must be laid before parliament immediately after they are made. Thus in 1879 the government and discipline of the army became for the first time completely subject either to the direct action or the close supervision of parliament.

A further notable change took place at the same time. The Mutiny Act had been brought into force on each occasion for one year only, in compliance with the con- stitutional theory that the maintenance of a standing army in time of peace, unless with the consent of parliament, is against law. Each session therefore the text of the Act had to be passed through both Houses clause by clause and line by line. The Army Act, on the other hand, is a fixed permanent code. But constitutional traditions are fully respected by the insertion in it of a section providing that it shall come into force only by virtue of an annual Act of Parliament. This annual Act recites the illegality of a standing army in time of peace unless with the consent of parliament, and the necessity nevertheless of maintaining a certain number of land forces (exclusive of those serving in India) and a body of royal marine forces on shore, and of keeping them in exact discipline, and it brings into force the Army Act for one year.

Military law is thus chiefly to be found in the Army Act and the rules of procedure made thereunder, the Militia Act, 1882, the Reserve Forces Act, 1882, and the Volunteer Act, 1863, together with certain Acts relating to the yeomanry, and various royal warrants and regulations. The Army Act itself is, however, the chief authority. Although the complaint has been sometimes made, and not without a certain amount of reason, that it does not accom- plish much that it might in point of brevity, simplicity, and clearness of expression, it is a very comprehensive piece of legislation, and shows some distinct improvements upon the old Mutiny Acts and Articles of War.

The persons subject to military law are the officers on the active list and the soldiers of the regular forces (includ- ing the royal marines), the permanent staff of the auxiliary (.e., the militia, volunteer, and yeomanry) forces, and the officers of the militia. The above persons are amenable to its provisions

at all times except while embarked on board a commissioned ship of the royal navy, when they become subject to the Naval Discipline Act and certain orders in council made under its authority. Those who are subject to military law in certain circumstances only are—officers and men while serving in a force raised out of the United Kingdom and commanded by an officer of the regular forces ; pensioners when employed in military service under the command of a regular officer; the non-commis- sioned officers and men of the militia, during training, when attached to the regulars or when permanently embodied ; the officers of the yeomanry and the volunteers when in command of or attached to a body of men subject to military law, or when their corps is on actual military

-—ibtrak Y LAW

Zon

service, or when ordered on duty witli their own consent; | martial, usually convened by the general of the district,

the men of the yeomanry when they or their corps are being trained, when they are attached to or acting with the regular forces, when their corps is on actual military service, or when serving in aid of the civil power; the men of the volunteers when they are being trained with or are attached to any body of troops, or when their corps is on actual military service; the men of the army reserve and the militia reserve when called out for trainmg or on duty in aid of the civil power; any person who in an official capacity equivalent to that of an officer accompanies a body of troops on active service beyond the seas; any person accompanying a force on active service holding a pass from the general entitling him to be treated on the footing of an officer. In this last category would of course be included newspaper correspondents, also sutlers and followers. In one or two cases persons are subjected to military law to a limited extent and in respect only of certain offences. Thus a militiaman even when not out for training or not embodied is liable to a military trial and punishment for fraudulent enlistment or making a false answer on attestation. In the same manner an army reserve man may be tried and punished by court martial for neglect to appear at the place where he is bound periodically to report himself, or for insubordination to his superiors on these occasions, or for any fraud in connexion with the receipt

of his pay. A man of the army reserve or the militia reserve has the legal status of and in fact becomes a regular soldier when called out on occasions of national danger or emergency under the sovereign's pro- clamation.

When a person subject to military law commits an offence he is taken into military custody, which means either arrest in his own quarters or confinement. He must without unnecessary delay be brought before his commanding officer, who upon investigating the case may dismiss the charge if in his discretion he thinks it ought not to be proceeded with, or may take steps to bring the offender before a court martial. Where the offender is not an officer he may dispose of the case summarily, the limit of his power in this respect being seven days' imprison- ment with hard labour, fines not exceeding 10s. for drunkenness, certain deductions from pay, confinement to barracks for twenty-eight days, this involving severe extra drills, deprivations, and other minor punishments. Where the offence is absence without leave for a period exceeding seven days, the commanding officer may award a day's imprisonment in respect of each day of such absence up to twenty-one. It is only in the case of the imprisonment exceeding seven days that the evidence before the com- manding officer is taken on oath, and then only in the event of the accused so desiring it. The commanding officer is enjoined by regulation not to punish summarily the more serious kind of offences, but his legal jurisdiction in this respect is without limit as regards any soldier brought before him, and when he has dealt summarily with a case the accused is free from any other liability in respect of the offence thus disposed of. In any instance where the commanding officer has summarily awarded imprisonment, fine, or deduction from pay, the accused may claim a district court martial instead of submitting to the award.

Ordinary courts martial are of three kinds, viz.:—(1) a regimental court martial, usually convened and confirmed by the commanding officer of the regiment or detachment, presided over by an officer not under the rank of captain, composed of at least three officers of the regiment or detachment with not less than one year's service, and having a maximum power of punishment of forty-two days' imprisonment with hard labour; (2) a district court

consisting in the United Kingdom, India, Malta, and Gibraltar of not less than five and elsewhere of not less than three officers, each with two years' service or more, and having a maximum power of punishment of two years' imprisonment with hard labour ; (3) a general court martial, the only tribunal having authority to try a commissioned officer, and with a power of punishment extending to death or penal servitude, for offences for which these penalties are authorized by statute; it consists of not less than nine officers in the United Kingdom, India, Malta, and Gibraltar and of five elsewhere, each of whom must have over three years' service, five being not under the rank of captain. There is another kind of tribunal incidental to service in the field, or where, in the case of an offence against the person or property of an inhabitant, an ordinary court martial cannot be held, namely, a field general court martial. This court may consist of three officers only, and it has the power of sentencing to death. Another kind of court, called a summary court martial, may be held where an offence has been committed upon active service and an ordinary court cannot be conveniently assembled. In the event of three officers not being available it may consist of two. When thus constituted it can award only a "summary punishment" or imprisonment; where it consists of three officers, however, it can sentence to death. In the case of a field general or a summary court martial many forms and precautions prescribed in the case of ordinary courts are not necessarily observed, the whole proceeding being from the necessity of the case a somewhat rough and ready means of dealing promptly with crime.

The Army Act prescribes the maximum punishment which may be inflicted in respect of each offence. That of death is incurred by various acts of treachery or cowardice before the enemy, or by when on active service interfering with or impeding authority, leav- ing without orders a guard or post, or when sentry sleeping or being drunk on a post, plundering or committing an offence against the person or property of an inhabitant, intentionally causing false alarms, or deserting. Whether upon active service or not, a soldier also becomes liable to the punishment of death who mutinies or in- cites to or joins in or econuives at a mutiny, who uses or offers violenee to or defiantly disobeys the lawful command of his superior officer when in the execution of his office. Penal servitude is the maximum punishment for various acts and irregularities upon active service not

distinctly of a treacherous or wilfully injurious character, for using or offering violence or insubordinate language to a superior, or disobeying a lawful command when upon active service. The same punishment is applicable when not upon active service to a second offence of desertion or fraudulent enlistment (7.¢., enlistment by one who already belongs to the service), certain embezzlements of public property, wilfully releasing without authority a prisoner or wilfully permitting a prisoner to escape, enlisting when previously discharged from the service with disgrace without disclosing the circumstances of such discharge, or any other offence which by the ordinary eriininal law of England is punishable with penal ser- vitude. Imprisonment with hard labour for two years is the maximum punishment for minor forms and degrees of those offences which if committed upon active scrvice would involve death or penal servitude, such as using or offering violence or insubordinate language to a superior or disobeying a lawful command, and for the following offences:—resisting an escort, breaking out of barracks, neglect of orders, a first offence of desertion or attempted desertion or aiding or conniving at desertion, or of fraudulent enlistment, absence without leave, failure to appear at parade, going beyond prescribed bounds, absence from school, malingering or produc- ing disease or infirmity, maiming with intent to render asoldier unfit for service, an act of a fraudulent nature, disgraceful con- duct of a cruel, indecent, or unnatural kind, drunkenness, releasing a prisoner without proper authority or allowing him to escape, being eoncerned in the unreasonable detention of a person awaiting trial, escaping or attempting to eseape from lawful custody, conniving at exorbitant exactions, making away with, losing by ncglect, or wilfully injuring military clothing or equipments, ill-treating a horse used in the service, making false or fraudulent representations in public documents, making a wilfully false accusation against an officer or soldier, making a false confession of desei tion or fraudulent enlist- ment, or a false statement in respect of the prolongation of furlough, misconduct as a witness before a eourt martial or contempt of such court, giving false evidence on oath, any offence specified in relation

to billeting or the impressment of carriages, making a false answer to a question put upon attestation, being concerned in unlawful enlistment, using traitorous or disloyal words regarding the sovereign, disclosing any circumstance relating to the numbers, position, movements, or other circumstances of any part of her majesty's forces so as to produce effects injurious to her majesty's service, fighting or being concerned in or conniving at a duel, attempting suicide, obstructing the civil authorities in the apprehen- sion of any officer or soldicr accused of an offence, any conduct, disorder, or neglect to the prejudice of good order and military dis- cipline, any offence which if committed in England would be punish- able by the law of England. There is another offence which can be comnnitted by officers only, namely, 'scandalous conduct unbecom- ing the character of an officer and a gentleman." It necessitates cashiering, a punishment which in the case of an officer may be awarded as an alternative to imprisonment in several other instances. There is also an offence peculiar to officers aud non-commissioned officers, that of striking or ill-treating a soldier or unlawfully detaining his pay. A sentence of cashiering as distinguished from that of dismissal in the case of an officer involves an incapacity to serve the crown again. An officer may be also sentenced to forfeiture of seniority of rank and to reprimand or severe reprimand, A non-commissioned officer may be sentenced to be reduced to a lower grade or to the ranks, and where sentenced to penal servitude or imprisoninent is deemed to be reduced to the ranks. The com- mander-in-chief at home or the commander-in-chief in India or in either of the presidencies may also cause a non-commissioned officer to be reduced to a lower grade or to the ranks. An acting nou- comnuissioned officer may be ordered by his commanding officer for an offence or for inefficiency or otherwise to revert to his per- manent grade, —in other words, to forfeit his acting rank.

Tt will have been observed that persons subject to military law are liable to be tried by court martial for offences which if com- mitted in England would be punishable by the ordinary law, and to suffer either the punishment prescribed by the ordinary criminal law or that authorized for soldiers who commit offences to the prejudice of good order and military discipline. The effect of the latter alternative is that for many minor offeuces for which a civilian is liable to a short term of imprisonment, or perhaps

only to a fine, a soldier may be awarded two years' imprisonment with hard labour. A court martial, however, cannot take cognizance of the crimes of treason, murder, manslaughter, treason-felony, or rape if committed in the United Kingdom. If one of these offences be committed in any place within her majesty's dominions other than the United Kingdom or Gibraltar, a court martial can deal with it only if it be committed on active service or in a place more than 100 miles from a civil court having jurisdiction to try the offence. With regard to all civil offences the military law, it is to be understood, is subor- dinate to the ordinary law, and a civilian aggrieved by a soldier in respect of a criminal offence against his property or person i dl forfeit his right to prosccute the soldier as if he were a civilian.

The crimes for which soldiers are most usually tried are desertion, absence without leave, loss of necessaries, violence or insubordina- tion to superiors, drunkenness, and various forms of conduct to the prejudice of discipline. The punishments are generally speaking gauged as much with regard to the character and antecedents of the prisoner as to the particular offence. For a first offence of an ordinary kind a district eourt martial would give as a rule fifty-six days' imprisonment with hard labour, for a second or graver crime eighty-four days. There are not many instances in which the period of imprisonment excecds six months. Corporal punishment, which had been practically limited to offences committed upon active service, and in 1879 to crimes punishable with death, was finally abolished in 1881, and a summary punishment substituted. This summary punishment includes the liability for a term of three months to be kept in iron-fetters and handcuffs, and while so kept to be attached to a fixed object so that the offender may remain in a fixed position for a period not exceeding two hours in the day for not more than three out of any four consecutive days and for not niore than twenty-one days in the aggregate. The offender may also be subjected to the like labour and restraint, and may be dealt with in the same manner as if sentenced to hard-labour imprison- ment. But these summary punishments are to be inflicted so as not to cause injury to health or leave a permanent mark on the offender, The first instances in which this kind of punishment was inflicted occurred during the campaign of 1882 in Egypt. Estimated by the results, the abolition of flogging does not appear to have injuriously affected discipline, the conduct of the troops in Egypt Laving been exceptionally good. The

practice of marking a soldier with the letters "D" (deserter) or "BC" (bad character), in order to prevent his re-enlistment, was abolished about a dozen years ago in deference to public opinion, which erroneously adopted the idea that the "marking" was effected by red-hot irons or in some other manner involving torture. Military men for the most part regret its abolition, and maintain that if the practice were stil] in force the army would not be tainted by the presence of many bad

MiLCiTAgswY GA Ww

characters wha find means of eluding the vigilance of the authorities and enlisting after previous discharge.

The course of procedure in military trials is as follows. When a soldier is remanded by his commanding officer for trial by a district or general court martial, a copy of the charge, together with the statements of the witnesses for the prosecution (called the sum- mary of evidence), is furnished to him, and he is given proper oppor- tunity of preparing his defence, of communicating with his witnesses or legal adviser, and of procnring the attendance of his witnesses. Further, if he desires it, a list of the officers appointed to form the court shall be given him. Any officer is disqualified to sit as a member who has convened the eourt, who is the prosecutor or a witness for the prosecution, who has made the preliminary inqury into the facts, who is the prisoner's commanding officer, or who has a personal interest in the case. The prisoncr may also object to any officer on the ground of bias or prejudice similarly as a civilian might challenge a juror. Except as regards the delay caused by the writing out of the evidence, the procedure at a court martial is'-very much the same as that at an ordinary criminal trial, —the examination and cross-examination of the witnesscs, addresses of the prosecutor and prisoner, and the rules governing the admission or rejection of evidence being nearly identical. At a general court martial, and sometimes at a district court, a judge advocate repre- senting the judge advocate general officiates, his functions being very much those of a legal assessor to the court. He advises upon all points of law, and sums up the evidence just as a judge charges a jury. When the prisoner pleads guilty the court finds a verdict accord- ingly, reads the summary of evidence, hears any statement in mitigation of punishment, and takes

evidence as to character before proceeding to pass sentence. The sentence is that of the majority of the court, except where death is awarded, when two-thirds of the members in the case of a general court martial and the whole iu that of a field general court martial must concur. When an acquittal upon all the charges takes place the verdict is announced in open court, and the prisoner is released without any further proceeding. When the finding is " guilty," evidence as to character is taken, and the court deliberates in private upon the sentence, but the result is not made known until the proceedings are confirmed and promulgated. No conviction or sentence has any effect until it is thus confirmed by the proper authority. The confirming authority in the case of a regimental court is the commanding officer, in that of a district court martial the general officer commanding the district, and in that of a general court, if held in the United Kingdom her majesty, and if abroad in most cases the general oflicer commanding. The confirming authority may order the reassembling of the court in order that any question or irregularity may be revised and corrected, but not for the purpose of increasing a sentence. He may, however, of his own discretion, and without further reference to the court, refuse confirmation to the whole or any portion of the finding or sentence, and he may mitigate, commute, or entirely remit the punishment. In the case of a general court martial the proceedings are sent to the judge advocate general, who submits to the queen his opinion as to the legality of the trial and sentence. If they are legal in all respects he sends the proceedings to the commander-in-chief, upon whom rests the duty of advising the queen regarding the exercise of clemency. In addition to confirmation, however, every general or district court martial held out of India has another ordeal to go through. Itis reviewed and examined in the office of the judge advocate general, and any illegality that may be disclosed is corrected and the prisoner is relieved of the con- sequences. To a certain extent a protection against illegality also exists in the case of regimental courts martial. A monthly return of those held in each regiinent is laid before the general command- ing the district or brigade, by whom any question that might appear to him doubtful would be referred to the adjutant general or the judge advocate general for decision. It is to be noted, however, that the judge advocate general, although fulfilling duties which are in their nature judicial, is only an adviser. He is not actually a judge in an executive sense, atid has no authority dircetly to interfere with or correct an illegal

conviction. In many cases the law thus pro- vides no remedy for an officer or soldier who may have been wronged by the finding or sentence of a court martial,—for instance, through a verdict not justified by the evidence or through a non- observance of the rules and practice prescribed for these tribunals. A person who has suffered injustice may appeal to the Queen's Bench division of the high court of justice. But, speaking generally, that tribunal would not interfere with a court martial exercising its jurisdiction within the law as regards the prisoner, the crime, and the sentence. In most cases, therefore, the virtual protector of an accused person against illegality is the judge advocate general, who personally advises the queen and the military authorities that the law shall be complied with. As a privy counciltor and member of the House of Commons that officer is responsible both to the queen and to parliameut for the right and due administration of military law; and, notwithstanding his want of direct executive authority, it is not to be contemplated that any military officer would hesitate to act upon advice given by him with reference to a

legal question connected with a court martial. The department of the judge advocate general consists of the judge advocate general, who is a lawyer, a privy councillor, and a member of parhament, of a permanent deputy judge advocate general who is alsoa lawyer, and of three military officers as deputy judge advocates having special experience in the working of military law.

The Army Act applies to European officers and soldiers serving in India in the same manner as to the rest of the army, but natives of India are governed by their own Articles of War, and in the case of civil offences they are dealt with according to the provisions of the Indian penal code. The department of the judge advocate general in India is distinct from and independent of that of the judge advocate general of the army, and courts martial held in that country are not subject to the supervision of a professional lawyer. Certain prominent irregularities led to the appointment of a barrister as judge advocate general in India in 1869, but after a few years that appointment again became filled by a milttary officer. The statf of the department is, however, far more numerous in India than clsewhere.

There are judge advocates general for each of the presidencies, and a deputy judge advocate at cach of the more important military centres.

Statistics of Crime in the Army.—Commissioned officers are rarely subjected to trial by court martial. Where an officer com- nits himself in a military sense, and his misconduct is too serious to be passed over merely with a mark of official displeasure, he is usually given and seldom fails to accept the alternative of resigning his commission. 1n some instances the crown is advised to exercise its prerogative and remove him from the army on the ground that her majesty has no further occasion for his services. In no circum- stances can an officer or soldier claim a court martial as a right. In the result, the annual number of trials of officers does not average more than four of late years. Among the non-commissioned officers and soldiers of the army, however, the trials and summary punish- ments by commanding officers are exceedingly numerous, as will presently be seen. In India this observation hardly holds good, for in that country desertion is physically almost impossible except at the two or three seaports where troops are stationed. Absence without leave is for a similar reason of rare occurrence, while the fact of the troops living in their own cantonments, and being free from many temptations of life existing in the large towns and garri- sons at home, places them outside the influence of certain prevalent causes of crime. For this reason mainly the proportion of courts martial held in 1881 was 107 per 1000 men at home as compared with 76 abroad. Similarly the proportion of minor punishments per 1000 was 1449 at home to 1042 abroad. It is also generally found that men engaged upon active service in the field commit less crime than those serving in ordinary circumstances. But the general criminal statistics of the army for 1881 show a formidable amount of crime and punishment. Upon an average strength of 181,186 non-commissioned officers and men there were 16,528 courts martial, of which 179 were general, 8549 district, and 7795 regi- mental courts. There were also 224,681 minor punishments by com- manding officers, including 44,108 fines for drunkenness. These figures generally show an increase of crime as compared with the two years immediately preceding, but these two exhibited a decrease upon previous years. Of the offences tried by court martial in 1881 the following were the principal:— mutiny 7, desertion 15$7, offences in relation to enlistment (fraudulently enlisting while already belonging to the service or making false answers

upon attestation) 1190, violence to and disobedience of superiors 1650, minor insubordination and neglect of orders 1472, quitting or sleep- ing on post 681, drunkenness on duty 2661, drunkenness (tried by court martial when the offence has been committed on a fifth occasion within twelve months) 2147, disgraceful conduct of various kinds 660, absence without leave not amounting to desertion 3298, making away with or losing by neglect equipment or necessarics 3768, and miscellaneous offences chiefly of an ordinary criminal character or to the prejudice of discipline 4181. Upon the 16,523 trials there were 349 findings of acquittal. Regarding the punish- ments awarded, it appears that no soldier was sentenced to death during the year, and the other awards were as follows :—penal servitude 104, imprisonment with or without hard labour (alinost invariably the former) 12,125, discharge with ignominy without other punishment 42, stoppages of pay without other punishment 65, flogging (before the abolition of that punishment by the Act of 1881) 15, and the new summary punishment (authorized as a sub- stitute for flogging) 3. Of the non-commissioned officcrs 3228 were punished by reduction to a lower grade or to the ranks, while 591 more suffered imprisonment in addition to loss of grade, the former number being in the proportion of about 12 and the latter of 2 pes cent. to strength. Of the men tried 305 were pardoned.

Military Law of other Countrics.—The administration of military law in other countries having large armies harmonizes in many important respects with that of England. In some indeed it is a question whether their systems are not superior and in advance. They have a considerable body.of " auditors" or military lawyers who expound the law and do much to secure a uniform and cxact

administration of justice. Thus in Austria there are about five hundred of these auditors, one being attached to each regiment. In the same country there are also courts of appeal from the courts of first instance, these latter consisting of eight persons including the auditor. Where the prisoner is a non-commissioned officer or a private, that rank is represented on the court. Here also the confirmation of superior authority is required. In the German army there are general and regimental courts. An auditor who is a

lawyer is attached to each division, and it is his duty to expound the law, collect the evidence, and read it to the court in the presence of the prisoner, who is asked if he has any thing to say. Thecourt consists of eleven inembers, of whom upon the trial of a private soldier or non-commissioned officer three are of the rank of the accused. The power of commanding officcrs in regard to disciplinary punishments is greater than in the British army, especially in relation to officers, who may be placed in arrest for fourteen days, The non-commissioned officers and privates are Hable to extra guards, drills, fatigues, and different degrees of arrest, some of a very severe character. Dismissal from the army, which is re- garded as a most severe punishment, involving civil disgrace, is often awarded. In Russia there are three kinds of military courts—- namely, the regimental court martial, the tribunals of military districts, and the supreme tribunal at St Petersburg. They are permanent courts, are attended by legal persons, and in certain instances have jurisdiction over the civil population as well as the army. There is a judge advocate general at St Petersburg, where the supreme tribunal consists of general officers and high war-office functionaries who have studied military law or possess a large experience of its working. In Italy there are permanent military tribunals for the trial of non-comunissioned officers and soldiers, while special tribunals are appointed to try officers. The court is the absolute judge of the facts, but regarding legal errors or irregularities an appeal lies to the supreme war tribunal, which con- sists of four civilian judges and three general officers. The French code corresponds in many respects with those of the other grcat Continental arinies, but it tends rather to give individual officers large powers of imprisonment graduated according to their rank. The chief distinctive feature of the French system is the institution of regiments of discipline for refractory characters. When the general officer's power of imprisonment (two months) is exhausted the offender may be sent before a court of discipline and by them drafted intoa compagnie de discipline; and cases of habitual miscon- duct are thus dealt with, the man being struck off the strength of his original corps and transferred to one in Algeria. The military law of the United States is founded upon and proceeds mnch upon the same lines as that of England. (J. C. O'D.)

MILITARY TACTICS. See War.

MILITIA. The militia of the United Kingdom consists of a number of officers and men maintained for the purpose of augmenting the military strength of the country in case of imminent national danger or great emergency. In such a contingency the whole or any part of the militia is liable, by proclamation of the sovereign, to be embodied,—that is to say, placed on active military service within the confines of the United Kingdom. The occasion for issuing the proclamation must be first com- municated by message to parliament if it be then in session ; if it be not sitting, parliament must be called together within ten days. For the purpose of keeping the force in a condition of military efficiency, the officers and men are subjected to one preliminary training for a period not exceeding six (usually about two) months, and further to an annual training not exceeding fifty-six (usually twenty- eight) days. The force is composed of corps of artillery, engineers, and infantry. Infantry militiamen are formed into battalions constituting part of the territorial regiment of the locality of which the regular forces are the senior battalions. The officers and men when called out are hable to duty with the regulars and in all respects as regular soldiers within the United Kingdom. Of late years the men have been raised exclusively by voluntary enlistment, but where a sufficient number for any county or place is not thus raised a ballot may be resorted to in order to complete the quota fixed by the queen in council for that county or place. Each man is enlisted as a militiaman for the county, to serve in the territorial regiment or corps of the district. The period of engagement is not to exceed six years, but during the last of these years a militiaman may be re- engaged for a further period also not exceeding six years.

Men who illegally absent themselves are liable, in addition to punishment for the offence, to make up for the time of their absence by a corresponding extension of their service. The officers are appointed and promoted by the crown, but first appointments are given to persons recommended by the lord Heutenant of the county who may be approved as fulfilling the prescribed conditions in respect of age, physical fitness, and educational qualifications. Since 1877 the officers have been permanently subject to military law. The general body of the non-commissioned officers and men

are so stibject only when called out for training or embodi- ment. At other periods they have simply the legal status of civilians, except as regards a liability to trial and punishment for offences in connexion with enlistment or for military offences committed while called out. Each militia regiment has a permanent staff, consisting of an adjutant and a small body of non-commissioned officers aud drummers, to conduct the recruiting drills and ordinary business of the corps; and the members of this permanent staff are always subject to military law. They mostly consist of non-commissioned officers who belong to or have served in the regular portion of the territorial regiment. Many of the militia corps have their head- quarters at the brigade depdt or local establishment of the territorial regiment, and all are under the general supervision of the (regular) colonel commanding the brigade depot. The area of service does not extend beyond the United Kingdom; but those who voluntarily offer to serve in the Channel Islands, the Isle of Man, Malta, or Gibraltar may be employed therein. The uniform of the officers and men of the militia is precisely the same as that of the regular corps with which they are associated, or rather of which they form part, except that in addition to the regimental distinguishing mark they bear the letter "M" upon their appointments, to denote that they belong to the militia portion of the corps.

As above stated, the ranks of the militia are usually filled by voluntary enlistment; but by a statute which, though temporarily suspended, can be put in force provi- sions are made for filling up any deficiency in the allotted quota in any county, city, or riding by ballot of the male inhabitants if within certain limits of age. The enactment provides as follows :—

The secretary of state is to declare the number of militiamen re- quired, whereupon the lord lieutenant is to cause meetings to be held of the lieutenancy for each subdivision. To these meetings the householders of each parish are to send in lists of all male persons between the ages of eightcen and thirty dwelling in their respective houses. Before the ballot, however, the parish may supply volun- teers to fill up the quota, every volunteer so provided and approved counting as if he were a balloted person. If a deficiency still exists, the persons on the lists shall be balloted for, and double the number of those required to supply the deficiency shall be drawn out. Any person whose name is so drawn may claim exemption or

object; and the deputy lieutenants scttle the question of his liability to serve. From the corrected list those who are of the requisite physique (the height is 5 feet 2) are enrolled in the order in which their names are numbered until the quota is completed. If the list

is not sufficient to fill the quota, another ballot in the same manner is to be taken. Any balloted man becoming liable to serve may,

however, provide a substitute who has the requisite physical qualifi- .

cations, and is not himself liable to serve.

Within the general body of the militia is contained another having an additional and important obligation in the matter of service. It is called the " militia reserve," and is formed of men who voluntarily undertake a liability to join the regular forces and serve in any place to which they may be ordered in case of the proclamation of a state of imminent national danger or great emergency. In this respect they are in fact upon the same footing as the army reserve, and on the occasion of the mobilization of 1878 more than 20,000 of these men became part of the regular army. The present strength of the militia reserve is a

MiP. f PIs

little under 29,000 men, and judging by past experience it

i may be computed that about 25,000 could be at once

added to the ranks of an army in the field in the event of national danger or emergency. It is to be observed, how- ever, that every man thus added to the regulars would be taken away from the effective strength of the militia.

There is no statutory provision for the number of men to be maintained, that number being what from time to time may be voted by parliament. The latest information available respecting the actual condition of the militia of Great Britain relates to the year 1881, and that of Ireland to 1880, the militia of the latter country for obvious political reasons not having been called out for training in 1881 or 1882. Taking the militia of the United

Kingdom in 1881, we find that the establishment provided for was 139,501, of whom 18,618 were artillery, 1317 engineers, and 119,566 infantry. Divided into ranks, this establish- ment was made up of 3534 sergeants and 1260 drummers of the permanent staff, and of the general body 3909 officers, 2520 sergeants, 5040 corporals, and 123,238 privates. The number actually enrolled was 127,868 of all ranks, leaving 11,633 wanting to complete. Of the number enrolled 84,864 belonged to English, 14,138 to Scotch, and 28,866 to Irish regiments, the numbers wanting to complete being for England 7420, for Scotland 162, and for Ireland 4051. As the Irish regiments were not called out, our information regarding the actual effective condition of the force as shown at the annual training does not include Ireland. With regard to the English regiments, 74,945 were present out of an enrolled strength of 84,864. Of the absentees 3144 were with and 6775 without leave. In the Scotch regiments, 12,401 appeared at the training, and of the absentees 616 were with leave and 1121 with- out. Of the total establishment (106,584) for Great Britain, 99,002 were enrolled, and of those enrolled 87,346 presented themselves and 3760 were absent with leave and 7896 actual defaulters. Of the English regiments five- sixths and of the Scotch regiments two-thirds were born in the county to which their regiments respectively belonged. Of 92,677 men (for Great Britain) whose occupations are disclosed, 17,665 were artisans, 22,221 mechanical labourers, 26,227 agricultural labourers, and 26,564 other trades. Speaking approximately, more than one-half of the men were between twenty and thirty years of age, about 4 per cent. between seventeen and eighteen, about 9 per cent. between eighteen and nineteen, and about 12 per cent. between nineteen and twenty, while some 20 per cent. were over thirty years of age. More than one-half ~ those inspected in 1881 were between 5 feet 5 inches and 5 feet 7 inches in height, about 20 per cent. were under 5 feet 5 inches, while only 585 out of a total of 92,677 were 6 feet and upwards. At the date of inspection there were 296 men in military confinement and 465 in the custody of the civil power. On the last occasion (1880) on which the Irish militia were called out, upon an establishment of 32,813 and an enrolled strength of 30,515 the number present at the training was 26,399, leaving 706 absent with and 2264 without leave. Regiments numbering in the aggregate 1146 men were not trained.

As distinguished from the regular forces or standing army, the militia has been described as the constitutional military force of the country ; and its history justifies the description, at least up to a recent period when it lost its distinctive character and became to a great extent merged in the regnlar army. It is the oldest force Britain possesses, and in fact represents the train bands of early English history. Its origin is to be found in the obligation of all freemen between certain ages to arm themselves for the preservation of the peace within their respective counties, and generally for the protection of the kingdom from invasion. This obligation, imposed in the first instance upon the individuals themselves, became shifted to the owners of land, who were compelled to keep up their propor- tion of horses and armour for the national defence. The forces were

placed under the lieutenant of the county, empowered in this respect by a commission from the crown. This prerogative of the sovereign, which had been in some instances a matter of controversy, was declared by statute shortly after the Restoration. By the same statute the militia of each county was placed under the lieutenant, who was vested with the appointment of officers, but with a reserva- tion to the crown in the way of commissioning and dismissal. The cost of the annual training—for fourteen days—fell upon the local authority. Offences against discipline were dealt with by the civil magistrates, but with a power to the officers of fining and of imprisoning in default. Upon this footing the militia of England remained for nearly a eentury, with the general approval of the cominunity. It was recognized as an instrument for defence and for the preservation of internal order, while it was especially popular from the circumstance that from its constitution and organization the crown could not use it as a means of violating the eonstitution or abridging the liberty of the subject. It was eon- trolled and regulated in the county ; it was officered by the land- owners‘an:] their relatives, its ranks were filled by men not depend- ing for their subsistence or advancement upon the favour of the crown; its numbers and maintenance were beyond tlie royal control; its government was by statute. While the supreme ecoinmand was distinctly vested in the crown, every practical security was thus taken against its use by the crown for any object not constitutional or legitimate. Itwas regarded as, and was, in fact, the

army of the state as distinguished from the standing army, which was very much the army of the king personally. The latter consisted of hired soldiers, and was more than once recruited by a conscription, con- fined, however, to persons of the vagrant class not having a lawful employment, while the former was mainly composed of those having a fixed abode and status. The militia thus enjoyed for many years as compared with the regular forces a social as well as a consti- tutional superiority. About the middle of the last century the militia was reconstituted, with certain modifications, not involving a sacrifice of the principle of its local government, but strengthening somewhat the supervising influence of the crown. Thus the king directly appointed the permanent staff, and was given a veto upon the appointment and promotion of the officers, who were to have a

property qualification. A quota was fixed for each county, to be raised by ballot of those between the ages of eighteen and forty-five, each parish having the option of supplying volunteers at its own cost, and each man balloted being permitted in lieu of serving to pay £10 to provide a substitute. When called out for service the pay was to be the same as that of the regulars, and while embodied or assembled for annual training the officers and men were placed under the Mutiny Act and Articles of War, with, however, a proviso that in time of training no punishment was to extend to "life or limb." The crown was given the power to call out the militia in case of apprehended invasion or of rebellion, and associate it with the regular army, but only upon the condition of previously in- forming parliament if then sitting, and if it were not sitting of calling parliament together for the purpose. A further and im- portant security was established to prevent an unconstitutional use of the militia by the crown: the estimate for its training was framed each year, not by an executive minister of the sovereign, but by the House of Commons itself. Upon the initiative of a committee of the House, an Act was passed providing for the pay and clothing of the militia for the year. Upon this footing substantially the

militia of England remained for many years, the Irish and Scotch militias beiug meantime brought under the same conditions by various enactments. The foree was embodied on several oceasions during the last and in the early years of the present century, and it contributed largely to the army engaged in the Peninsula. From 1803 to 1813 just 100,000 men, or two-

fifths of those raised for the army, came from the militia. In this way, however, it lost its distinctive character as a defensive force. During the peace which followed the final fall of Napoleon the militia was suffered to fall into decay; and up to 1852 it had only a nominal existence in the shape of an effete permanent staff with no duties to perform. In 1853 the militia was revived just in time to enable it to fulfil most valuable functions. In the war with Russia it was embodied aud did garrison duty not only in the United Kingdom but in the Mediterranean garrisons, thus enabling the authorities to send most of the available regular troops to the scene of hostilities. It further contributed many officers and some 30,000 men to the line. It still gives annually about 8000 recruits to the regulars. During the Indian mutiny it filled scarcely less useful functions when again called out. It has since then been regularly assembled for annual training; and when it is brigaded with the regular forees at Aldershot and other camps of instruction its military aptitude and proficiency have generally elicited the surprised admiration of pro- fessional soldiers. In 1871 an important constitutional change was made. It was part of the new army system inaugurated in that year that the control of the militia should be removed from the lord lieutenant of the county and vested wholly in the crown. It has now virtually ceased to exist as a distinct body, and isa part of the regular forces with a limitation as to the time aud area and |

d01 other conditions of service. There is no longer a regiment of militia. The body that would formerly be thus described is now a collection of militiamen of a regiment largely composed of regulars. The votes for the maintenance of the militia are now part of the army estimates. The officers of the militia and the line are eligible for duty with either force, and may sit upon courts martial indis- criminately. This practical amalgamation of the old constitutional force with the standing army may appear theoretically open to the objection that it is thereby placed under the direct control of the sovereign. But the day has passed when such an objection could have any value. The fact of the whole army being placed in all respects under the direct control of a minister responsible not only to the crown but to parliament is enough to dissipate any constitu- tional apprehensions under this head.

The only colonial militia that forms an effective force is that of Canada, which is organized as an efficient local army. 'The Goverument of the Dominion includes a minister of militia and defence. The foree is placed under the command of a general officer, assisted by an adjutant-general, belonging to the regular army and appointed by the queen. The training of the officers is a matter of special care, there being a military college at Kingston, several of the governing body and professors of which are officers of the Royal Artillery and Royal Engineers, as well as schools of gunnery and musketry. For military purposes the Dominion is mapped out in twelve districts. The militia is divided into the active and the reserve, and the male inhabitants between the ages of eighteen and sixty, with the usual exceptions, are liable to inilitary service, the extent of which varies with the age of each man, the larger amount of duty falling upon the younger. The active militia comprises 12 regiments of cavalry, 17 field and 31 garrison batteries of artillery besides a inountain battery, 4 com- panies of engineers, 2 mounted rifle corps, 97 battalions of from 5 to 10 companies each and 16 independent companies of infantry. The uniform is for the most part like that of the regular army, and the organization and general efficiency of the whole body have been very favourably reported upon. Although the obligations of the Canadiau militia are purely local, a large number on a late occasion offered themselves for general service; and, in the event of a war on a large scale, itis believed that the force would con- tribute a valuable addition to the fighting strength of the imperial army. (J. C. O'D.)

MILK is the fluid secreted by the mammary glands of the division of vertebrate animals called Mammalia. These glands are in a rudimentary form in the Monotremes. In

Ornithorhynchus there is no nipple, but the mouth and

| tongue are closely applied over the area on which the ducts

open, and the fluid is withdrawn by suction on the part of the young and compression of the gland by the mother. In Echidna the ducts of the gland open into a small pouch, foreshadowing the larger pouches of marsupials. In Marsupials the glands are more compact, and have a greater number of lobules. They are found behind the marsupial depressions or those of the

pouch; they are not fewer than | two on each side nor more than thirteen, six on eacli side and one midway. The ducts, long and slender during lactation, open on a nipple which is covered by a reflexion of the skin at the back of the pouch, thus forming a kind of hood or sheath. The nipple is protruded beyond the hood during lactation, and is much elongated. The number of these nipples bears a relation to the number of young at a birth; thus the kangaroo, with one at a birth, has four nipples (two, generally the anterior pair, being in use), whilst the Virginian opossum, which produces six or more at a birth, has thirteen nipples. Rodents show a corre- sponding provision for the nourishment of the young in the number of nipples. A seeming exception is the common guinea-pig, which frequently has eight, ten, or twelve young at intervals of two or three months, and yet the mother has only two teats to serve them, turn and turn about; the original stock of the domestic species breeds, however, only once annually, and has but one to two young, so the domestic variety is a curious anomaly due to the artificial circumstances of its life. In the porcupines there are two nipples, one midway between the fore and hind leg, and the other midway between this and the base of the fore leg. In the coypu, a creature often carrying its young on its back whilst it swims across rivers, the teats project from the flanks near the shoulders, and are of considerable length,

so that the young readily reach them. The Jnsectivora have, as a rule, more nipples than are found in any other order. Thus in the tenrec (Centetes) there are as many as twenty-two, and they are rarely fewer than fourteen, spread out in pairs from the pectoral to the inguinal regions. 'There are ten teats in the common hedgehog, six to eight in moles and shrews, two in sloths and armadillos. In Cetacea there are two long, narrow, flat glands lying between the dermal and abdominal muscles, with the sub- cutaneous blubber separating them from the skin. The peculiarity of the arrangement in these animals, where suckling is performed under water, is the large size of the central duct, which acts as a kind of reservoir, so that the young may obtain a considerable supply in a very short time. It would appear also that when suckling takes place the nose of the young is above the surface of the water. Among Ungulates, in the elephant the glands and teats are between the fore legs; in the rhinoceros they are inguinal ; in the mare and ass the

glands are two in number, and are found between the thighs, about 9 inches in front of the vulva; the tapir has two inguinal nipples, the peccary two ventral and two inguinal, the wild sow eight nipples, whilst in the domestic breeds there are at least ten, extend- ing from the pectoral to the inguinal regions, Ruminants have the glands aggregated into a round mass in the inguinal region, pendulous in full function, divisible into two glands, each of which has a large reservoir. When in use the teats, one pair or two pairs being the number, in connexion with the reservoirs become so large as to receive the special name of "udder." All the deer tribe, camels, the giraffe, and all kinds of cows have four teats; most antelopes and the gazelles have two teats, whilst a few antelopes have four. As to Carnivora, the felines have usually six nipples; the wolf, jackal, fox, dog have usually eight ; the seals and the walrus have four, the otters two, the weasels six, the bears six; and in the kinkajou (Cercoleptes) the number is reduced to two. Amongst Quadrumana, the aye-aye (Chiromys) has only one pair of nipples, about an inch and a half in front of the vulva; many lemurs have in addition to those a pectoral pair; in all the platyrhine and catarhine Quadrumana there is only one pair of glands, restricted to the pectoral region. Here the teats are between the fore legs, and the young clings to the mother's breast in human fashion, but there is no protru- sion of the breast as in the human being. (For further details see Owen's Anatomy of Vertebrates, vol. iii. p. 769.)

In the human race the glands are two in number, form- ing, along with the skin and fat, two rounded eminences, one on each side, on the front of the thorax. They extend from the third to the sixth or seventh rib, and from the side of the sternum to the axilla. In the centre projects a small conical body, the nipple. Around the nipple is a coloured circle, or areola, which is darker during pregnancy, and even in women who have borne children than in the virgin state. The surface of the nipple is wrinkled, and with a magnifying glass is seen to be covered with papille. It is perforated by numerous openings, the mouths of the milk ducts. The tissue of the nipple contains numerous minute blood-vessels, and it has at the base muscular fibres arranged in concentric circles and in radiating bands. It has much of the character of erectile tissue, as in the corpora cavernosa of the penis, becoming turgid, firm, and prominent from excitement. The base of the gland lies on the pectoral muscle, a thin layer of fascia intervening. The

surface is covered with fat, which gives it the smooth rounded outline. It is amply supplied with blood by the long thoracic artery, some other minute branches of the axillary artery, the internal intercostal artery, and the subjacent intercostals. The nerves come from the anterior and middle intercostal cutaneous branclies,

‘ globules.

LK

and the nipple is especially sensitive. The gland is com- posed of numerous lobes bound together by connective and adipose tissue, and each lobe is formed of smaller lobules. Each lobe has an excretory duct, and these ducts, from fifteen to twenty in number, converge towards the areola, beneath which they are dilated so as to form sinuses from 4th to }th of an inch in calibre. From these sinuses arise the ducts which open on the surface of the nipple. The

general structure will be understood by referring to the the description.

accompanying figures, along with

We

Fie, 1.—Half-diagrammatic view of a section through a lobule of the mammary gland, after Klein (At/as of Histology, plate xl. fig. 1), magnified 45 diameters. a, a duct dividing into two branches; 6, 6, 6, connective tissue surrounding and going between the ultimate pouches of the gland; c, c¢, ¢, the pouches or alvcolé of the gland, the dots representing the cells lining them.

Fre. 2.— A portion of the same gland, magnified about 400 diameters, showing one complete and two incomplete alveoli. , a, a, short, columnar, epithelial cells lining the alveolus, each having an oval or rounded nucleus: 0,6,6, epithelium cells, containing, next the interior of the alveolus, a milk globule; ¢, ¢,c,c, milk globules which have been set free from epithelial cells,

When a duct is traced into the gland, it is found to sub- divide into smaller ducts, and these into still smaller, until the smallest ductlet is reached, round the end of which are clustered several alveolt or pouches. ach alveolus has a wall, lined with epithelium cells. In the wall of the alveolus there are capillary blood-vessels which bring the blood near the cells. By this blood the cells are nourished. There is a minute cavity in the centre of each alveolus into which cells or their products can accumulate. There can be no doubt that the formation of the milk globule takes place in these cells. Whilst milk is not being formed the cells have a granular appearance, and the lumen or central cavity of the alveolus is small; but during secretion the cavity is enlarged and shows a few milk globules, whilst one or more milk globules can be seen in the interior of the cell. If the milk globule in the cell be very large, the nucleus of the cell is pressed outwards and the protoplasm of the cell is reduced to a thin covering, over the globule, at this stage presenting a striking resemblance to a fat cell containing an oil globule. Thus each milk globule is formed in the protoplasm of the epithelium cell, and even at an early stage each milk globule consists of a minute drop of fat or oil surrounded by a thin albuminous envelope. It has not been clearly ascertained whether epithelial cells, after having secreted milk globules, degenerate and fall off, or whether they have the power of ejecting the milk The fluid constituents of milk (water holding

salts in solution) may be separated from the blood by a kind of filtration under blood pressure, as is the case in other secretory processes. The origin of the sugar of milk and of the casein is unknown. (For a description of the minute structure of the milk gland, see Klein's Atlas of Histology, p. 300, and references.) At the beginning of lactation the milk is rich in largeirregularly- formed corpuscles (fig. 3, a, a, a) called colostrum corpuscles. These are a---- contractile bodies, slow- ly changing their form and squeezing out the oily particles, At first Fic. 3—A drop of milk magnified 300 diameters. they are the only bodies a, a, a, colostrum corpuscles. present, but they are soon replaced by the ordinary milk globules. Such globules have bright refractive edges, the surface is smooth, they vary in size from gp/y9th to

1_,th of an inch in diameter, and each consists of a drop of fatty matter surrounded by a layer of albumen (“Ascherson’s membrane ”). |

A secretion of milk takes place in newly-born children, from the fourth to the eighth day, and also in rare cases in men (Hermann’s Physiology, p. 158). During gestation in the human being the mammary glands increase in size ; immediately after the birth of the child active secretion commences; and usually it is on the stoppage of the secre- tion, ten months afterwards, that the process of menstrua- tion, which has been arrested by impregnation, again is re-established.

The secretion of milk is undoubtedly affected by the nervous system, as is shown by fear or mental distress arresting or injuring the quality of the secretion, and by the ‘“‘rush” or feeling of fulness in the breast experienced by the mother when the child’s mouth touches the nipple, or even when she sees her offspring. The nervous mechanism, however, is unknown, asit has been observed that secretion may continue even after section of all the nerves known to pass to the gland. The nature of the diet has a marked influence on the quality of the secretion. Thus the amount of casein and of fat is greater during an animal than during a vegetable diet. Fatty foods do not seem to increase the amount of fat or butter; an ample supply of carbo-hydrates (starches and sugars) increases the amount of sugar. These facts indicate that most if not all of the constituents of milk are formed from changes in the pro- toplasm of the epithelial cells. In some women the milk is deficient in fat and casein, and consequently is less nutritious. Prolonged lactation diminishes the amount of fat and sugar without materially affecting the amount of albuminous matter ; but the milk is less nutritious and is unfit for the child. The occurrence of menstruation during lactation also deteriorates the milk. (J. G. M.)

Milk as Food. The milk of various domesticated animals is more or less

used by man for food. The milk of the cow, which may .

be taken as typical of all others, and is indeed by far the most important and valuable of all, is, when newly drawn, an opaque white fluid, with a yellowish tinge, soft, bland, and sweetish to the taste, and possessed of a faintly animal odour. This odour, according to Schreiner, is due to the

presence of sulphuretted hydrogen, and disappears after a short exposure. The specific gravity of milk ordinarily ranges from 1°029 to 1:033, very seldom reaching 1:035 or falling so low as 1:027. Inchemical constitution it con-

| sists of an emulsion of fatty globules (cream) in a watery

alkaline solution of casein, and a variety of sugar, peculiar to milk, called lactose. The fat (which when separated we know as butter) and the lactose constitute the carbonaceous portion of the milk regarded as food. The casein, which forms the principal constituent of cheese, and a certain proportion of albumen which is present, form the nitro- genous, while the complex saline substances and water are the mineral constituents. These various substances are present in the proportions which render milk a perfect and typical food suitable to the wants of the young of the various animals for whom it is provided by nature. The milk of all animals, so far as is known, contains them, although they are present in somewhat different propor- tions. It is probable that the milk of ruminants possesses certain physical and physiological distinctions from that of non-ruminant animals, which will account for the virtues attributed to the milk of the ass and mare, The following table exhibits the chemical constitution of the kinds of milk most frequently used by man :—

Ewe.! | Mare.

Winter Blyth. Cameron. Cameron.

Water 86°87 ; : : 0°3 we. 3:50! 4:00| 6-11| 4°45| 1-055 Casein and ’ , P ; 4 nc 475} 410] 3-94] 516] 1-953 Sugar…..... 4-00! 4-28| 4:68) 5-73| 6-285 .. 0-70| 0°62| 0-79! 0-96| 0-369

In addition to these constituents milk contains small pro- portions of the gases carbonic acid, sulphuretted hydrogen, nitrogen, and oxygen, and minute quantities of other prin- ciples, the constant presence and essential conditions of which have not been determined. These consist of galactin and lactochrome, substances peculiar to milk, discovered by Winter Blyth,

with certain animal principles such as leucin, pepton, kreatin, tyrosin, &c. The salts in milk consist, according to the average of numerous analyses by Fleischmann, of the following constituents :—

Phosphoric acid…..... Ber): | PUMA cay oss sgapses cslepensyg 17°34 CHOTIMGL. 0.6. Secccrncceems OG 4 Mapnesie >... ci s.stc2 te dens 4°07 Bae Bt oh. khaatcewel 27°00\| Ferrie oxide cic s.28 oes 0°62 FSO GS ass arstemrensesienrcisnarel gaat 10°00

Milk thus is not to be regarded as a definite chemical compound nor even as a mixture of bodies in fixed and invariable proportions. Not only does the milk of different races and breeds of cows vary within comparatively wide limits ; the milk of the same animal is subject to extensive fluctuation. The principal causes of variation in the individual are age, period of lactation, nature and amount of food, state of health, and treatment, such as frequency of milking, &c. The following table indicates the range of normal variations :—

WY aihetas «durch See arreee ter «QR owed. 90°00 to 83°65 ae al 1 la a a Ae 2°80 ,, 4°50 CAseMP ATC APOUNMM) ctr. mis peaccnghre ace signa cece 3500) 4, 6:00 12 47. anh eoHenbutaNhd 1seoacie odes =aSacaeee anos Onnc 3°00 ,, 5°50 MST A. AT CIARA ALIAS Me 0:70 ,, 0°80

The average quantity of milk yielded by cows is also highly variable, both in individuals and breeds. As a rule the smaller breeds of cows yield a small amount of milk rich in cream (butter fat), while the yield of the larger breed is greater in quantity, but comparatively deficient in cream. A good milch cow should yield in a milk-giving period of from eight to nine months about

1 Bwe's milk is exceedingly variable, especially in its percentage of fat. The above analysis is one of nine by Dr Voelcker, in which the fat was found to range from about 2 to 12% per cent.

500 gallons of milk, from which nearly 500 tb of cheese or 200 tb of butter would be obtainable.

Dairy Treatment.—Cows are commonly milked by hand two or three timesa day. A milking machine of American origin, which was introduced about the year 1862, has been entirely abandoned. 'The milk should be drawn from the animals in as clean a condition as possible, but notwith- standing every precaution some amount of hair and epithelial and other animal débris invariably enters the milk-pail. It has therefore to be immediately strained through a sieve with fine wire-cloth or hair strainer. As milk is peculiarly susceptible of taint, and absorbs odours of all kinds with great avidity, it is of the utmost con- sequence that all vessels in which it is placed or kept should be so made as to be easily purified and that they should be kept scrupulously clean. In Switzerland inilk is strained with most beneficial effect through sprigs of washed fir tops, which inserted loosely and uprightly into the hole of a funnel arrest all hair, skin, clots, and slimy matter on the acicular leaves. The milk drains through in a clean condition with a fresh slightly aromatized flavour favourable to its keeping. A fresh sprig is used on each occasion of straining milk, so that there is freedom from the risk of taint which arises through the use of imperfectly cleaned wire gauze. The milk must be removed from the cow-house as quickly as possible ; and, if intended for use as new milk and for sale in the neighbourhood of the dairy, it may at once be put up for delivery. But if it has to travel a distance, or if it is to be kept for creaming or cheese-making, it should be rapidly cooled down, and kept in a cool airy milk-room if prac- ticable, surrounded with fresh cold water.

The ordinary method of separating cream either for direct use or for butter making is by allowing it to form on the surface and skimming it off with a broad flat spoon; but ingenious adaptations of centrifugal machines—of which Laval's separator is one of the best known—have been introduced for the purpose of effecting the rapid and complete separation of the cream. 'The centrifugal force of such machines throws the denser portions of the fluid towards the sides of a rapidly revolving cylinder, collecting the cream on an inner layer, which is carried off by one channel while the

impoverished milk escapes by another. The Laval separator gives very rich cream, as will be seen from the following analyses by Voelcker:—

{ f eit ;

Ordinary | Cream by ; Sele epee

ogee |e Seunettor, aa Wiatelet ca cscscaceses socal! 77 BO 66°12 90°82 89°25 IBS IEA ssn enoeansooone 15°45 27°69 0°31 IL, CASEIN sc ccccns Muara 3°40 2°69 3°31 3°69 IN GUD e RinEEMIE, coneappenoe 3°15 3°03 4°77 5°16 Mineral inatter…..... 0°70 0°47 0-79 0°78

After being kept some time, depending principally on the temperature at which it is maintained, milk begins to turn sour owing to the formation of lactic acid, by a process of fermentation, at the expense of the lactose or milk sugar. The acid so developed causes a coagulation of the casein, and the milk separates into a solid white curd, anda thin transparent yellow milk serum or whey. These changes can to a certain extent be artificially produced, hindered, and controlled. The following are the results of analyses by Fleischmann :—

Constituents of 100 Parts of Sweet Milk.

3°56 butter. A VROUMCHE AI tc ceric caitceie cvs vee oeeeeeeeans 16°30 buttermilk. 0:14 loss. 7°93 curd. 72-70 skimmedemilk…..... Benen 71°45 whey. 0°32 loss.

OsSOMlOSSmerrce so es acdc ereiec Hue oe 0°30 loss.

WMiLkK

Relative Composition of Milk and its Produets.

Milk

Water. Casein. | Albumin. Sugar.

Whole milk 87°60 4°30 Cream 77°30 Sls Skim-milk 90°34 4°63 Butter 14°89 0°28 Buttermilk 91:00 | 3°80 UT a. caie nena eee ee 59°30 5°01

Whey 94-00 4°55

The simplest and most advantageous form in which milk can be disposed of as a commercial product is by its sale as sweet or new milk, and it is in this manner that the greater proportion of the milk produced within the reach of large centres of population is disposed of. New milk, cream, and skimmed milk are the only primary forms in which milk is sent into the market. CHEESE and BurrEr have been dealt with in separate articles (q.v.). Whey, the yellow liquid remaining after the separation of the curd in cheese making, is a source of milk sugar, employed to a limited extent in pharmacy ; but it is prin- cipally used for feeding pigs. The buttermilk which re- mains after separating butter is a most wholesome and nutritious article of food.

Preservation of Milk.—The numerous methods which have been proposed for the preservation of milk in a condition fit for nse over a lengthened period resolve themselves into (1) chemical treatment with alkaline salts and antiseptic bodies, (2) physical treatment, such as cooling or icing, boiling, and aeration, and (3) condensation with or without the addition of a prescrvative agent. All systems of preservation, however, are subject to serious disadvantages either from their serving their purpose for too limited a time, or their interfering with the natural constitution and properties of the milk. Of all preservatives cold is the most efficient and least objectionable. It has been shown by Soxhlet (Dingler's Polytech. Journal, cexxili. 829) that milk cooled by ice-water remains sweet and unaltered for fourteen days, but after that time acquires a rancid taste. After twenty-eight days it coagulates on boiling owing to the presence of acids resulting from the oxidation of the cream, and in thirty-four days it coagulates even in the ice-water. It is also found that milk which has undergone aeration with atmospheric air has its keeping properties much improved. The acration is effected by allowing the milk to fall from sonie height in a state of fine division by passing it through the ineshes of a sieve. By another method air cooled by passing over ice is blown through the milk.

Milk keeps sweet for a longer time when boiled, but the smell, taste, and other properties are affected, partly owing to the escape of gases mixed with it when fresh. The unpleasant flavonr com- municated by boiling can be avoided if the action takes place in a closed vessel and the milk is

immediately cooled down in a refrigerator connected therewith. In the case of any suspicion of taint in milk either from disease in the cow, contamination from unhealthy persons, or the use of infected water in cleaning vessels, boiling is also strongly to be recommended, as it effectually destroys the germs of disease, in the carrying and spreading of which milk is a most active agent. It is with the utmost difficulty that boiled milk can be coagulated by means of rennet; but by treatment with acid it coagulates more rapidly and freely than if unboiled.

Of the various chemical compounds which have been suggested and more or less used for preserving inilk, the most successful hitherto has been salicylic acid, which has the advantage of being tasteless and inodorous. By briskly stirring in rather less than 2 grains to a pint of milk, it can be kept liquid and sweet in a tem- perature of from 65° to 68° Fahr. for twelve hours, and at 55° Fahr. fora whole day. If 4 grains be used to a pint, coagulation in the higher temperature is delayed from two or three days, and at the lower temperature the milk may be kept good from three to five days. Boracic acid and borax are also employed by dairymen, the former being known as glacialine salt. The presence of any chemical anti- septic in milk is, however, at best a matter of doubtful advantage.

Condensation. —Milk is now treated on a large scale by a process of concentration, the product of which comes into the market in two forms—as " plain condensed milk " and as " preserved milk." The credit of originating the industry is due to Mr Gail Borden of White Plains, New York, who began his experiments about 1849. In 1851 he introduced his plain condensed milk, which is simply milk from which between three-fourths and four-fifths of the water has been removed, and in 1861 he rendered important services to the army in the field by supplying preserved milk which was in

effect milk similarly concentrated, with a proportion of sugar added, and hermetically sealed in tin cans. The manufacture was transplanted to Switzerland in 1865, after which condensing factories were established in England, Ireland, Denmark, Bavaria, Norway, and elsewhere. With the introduction of the condensing trade there las also been associated the

factory system of dealing with dairy products, by which the milk of many dairies is carried to one centre and dealt with either for condensing or for cheese or butter making. The following epitome of the process of condensing milk is from a paper by Mr Willard of Uornell university, New York (Jour. Roy. Agric. Soc., 2d series, vol. viii., 1872). The milk when received at the factory is first passcd, he says, "through a strainer to the receiving vat; from this it is conducted off, going through another strainer into the heating cans, each holding about 20 gallons ; these cans are set in hot water, and the wilk is held in them till it reaches a temperature of 150° to 175° Fahr.; it then goes through another strainer into a large vat, at the bottom of which is a coil of copper pipe, through which steam is conducted, and here the milk is heated up to the boiling point. Then the best quality of white granulated sugar is added, in the proportion of 1} tb of sugar to the gallon of milk, when it is drawn into the vacuum-pan having a capacity of condensing 3000 quarts or more ata time. The milk remains in the vacuum-pan subjected to steam for about three hours, during which time about 75 per cent. of its bulk in water is removed, when it is drawn off into cans, holding 40 quarts each. The cans are only partially filled, and are then set in a large vat containing cold water, the water being of a height equal to that of the milk in the cans. Here it is stirred until the temperature of the condensed fluid is reduced to a little below 70°; it is then turned into large drawing-cans with faucets, in order to facilitate the filling of the small cans, ... holding 1 Ib each, which are immediately soldered to exclude the air.".

In the case of plain condensed milk the concentration is usually carried farther than is practised in preparing the preserved milk, it being evaporated down to between one-fourth and one-fifth of the original bulk. It is not put up in sealed tins, being intended for 'immediate use, and keeps sweet only for a few days, varying with the state of the weather, whereas the sugared milk in sealed cans keeps for years. The large amount, however, of cane sugar added to preserved milk seriously disturbs its balance of proportion as a perfect food, and renders it unfit to be used alone in a dilute state as a substitute for mother's milk by infants, a purpose for which it is largely employed. It should also be observed that the relative proportion of fat is small, the milk being partially skimmed before it is operated on, so that the statement that preserved milk diluted with a small proportion of water is equal to cream is not to be relied on. Preserved milk, rich in cream,

has always a more or less rancid oily taste, and cannot be obtained so sweet and even in flavour as that largely deprived of fat. According to a German patent of E. Klebs in Prague, plain condensed milk may be preserved by adding to every 100 litres of the original milk a solution of 50 grains of benzoate of magnesium in one litre of water.

Adulteration.—Practically the invariable mode of sophisticating milk for sale consists in the addition of water and in the subtrac- tion of cream,—in other words, passing off skimmed or partly skimmed as new milk. Now fied again there are found certain little refinements on these simple frauds, such as adding a quantity of sugar to correct the specific gravity, flour or starch to increase opacity, and a touch of colouring matter to cover the bluish tinge which would betray skimmed milk. In the United Kingdom no official standard of what constitutes pure milk has been promul- gated, but the so-called Somerset House standard has been generally recognized in law courts. According to this, new milk should contain as a minimum of solids not fat 8°6 per cent. and of fat 2°5 per cent., and of water a maximum of 88°9 per cent. The most satisfactory manner of discovering the probable genuineness of a sample of milk is by chemical analysis carried sufficiently far to determine the amount of fat and of other solids present. Numerous attempts have been made to place in the hands of dairy- men, dealers, and consumers of milk a trustworthy method of estimating the condition and value of the article by simple qnantitive tests for cream or fat—at once the most valuable con- stituent and one the presence of which in average proportion is indicative of the quality of the whole. The simplest but at the same time the least trustworthy and efficient method is by means of the so-called "creamometer," which consists merely of a graduated glass tube in which a measured amount of milk is placed and the amount of cream it throws up is read off by means of the scale. Specific gravity determinations have by themselves no significance, seeing milk deprived of its cream can by dilution with water be brought to correspond exactly with the original milk. But by a combination of two methods,—first taking the specific gravity, next observing the yield of cream by the " creamometer," and finally taking the specific gravity of the milk deprived of cream, regard being had to the temperature of the milk in these

observations, an approximately accurate idea of the value of a

sample may be obtained. Among so-called "lactoscopes," the operations of which are based on the fact that milk rich in cream is a much more opaque fluid than that from which cream has been taken or to which water is added, that invented by Professor Feser of Munich is one of the simplest and most useful. It con- sists of a glass tube open at the upper end and attenuated at its lower extremity. Into this narrower portion is fused a small cylindrical rod of opaque milk glass on which black lines are marked. These lines are invisible when the lower portion of the tube is filled with a measured quantity of milk, but on addition of water they become visible. When the black lines become by the gradual admixture of water perfectly distinct, the richness of the milk in cream globwes is indicated by the height to which the mixture of milk and water has risen in the wide portion of the tube, which has engraved on it a scale showing on one side the amount of water added and on the other the proportion of cream equivalent to the transparency resulting from such addition. Statistics.—In the year 1878 it was calculated by Mr J. C. Morton that the total yield of milk from the 2,250,000 cows and heifers in milk or in calf in England and Scotland amounted to about 1,000,000,000 gallons yearly. He assumed that about one-sixth of that quantity (167,000,000 gallons) went to feed calves, and that the daily consumption of the population was 1,000,000 gallons, being rather more than a quarter of a pint per head, which accounts for 365,000,000, still leaving 468,000,000 gallons to be used for butter and cheese making. Two-thirds of this quantity, or 312,000,000 gallons, Mr Morton assumes was used for cheese-making, yielding 2,800,000 ewts. of cheese (rather less than 1 fb per gallon of milk), and the remainder, 156,000,000 gallons, of milk devoted to butter-making would yield 530,000 Ib of butter, or 1 Tbh of butter for every 21 pints of milk. In these figures no account is taken of Ireland, whence at that period there were sent to England alone yearly 3,500,000 tb of salted butter. In June 1882 the number of cows and heifers in milk and in calf in Great Britain did not vary greatly from the number on which Mr Morton's estimate for 1878 was based, being 2,267,175, whilst in Ireland the number was 1,398,905, making the total for the United Kingdom 8,682,317. If we take approximately Mr Mortou's data as the basis of calcu- lation, the 8,682,317 milk cows and heifers in the United King- dom would yield, at 440 gallons per head, 1,620,219,480 gallons of milk. Further,

assuming that one-sixth of this is consumed by calves, one-third consumed by population, one-third used for cheese-making, and one-sixth used for butter-making, we have as the yield of cheese 4,846,600 cwts. and as the yield of butter 920,000 ewts. As Ireland is much more a butter-producing than a cheese-yielding country, the quantity of cheese made is probably overestimated in these figures, and the amount of butter made is correspondingly understated. 'To bring out the consumption of dairy products for the year the following imports must be added:—

| Cwts. Value. CE aie cares nsec Sees £4,742,368 Butter (including butterine).....s.seereceeeeeee 2,167,428 11,339,226

Thus we find the total supply of cheese to the United Kingdom in 1882 was 6,538,495 cwts., and of butter the supply was 3,087,428 ewts. Estimating the home produce of both articles at the same value as the imports, the cheese supply cost £18,320,000, and the butter £16,150,000. Adding to these the probable cost of the milk consumed as such (say 550,000,000 gallons at 1s. per gallon = £27,500,000), we have for the year 1882 in round numbers £62,000,000 expended on dairy produce within the United Kingdom.

The total number of milch cows at present (1888) in the United States is stated at 15,000,000, which, taking the 440 gallons basis, yield annually 6,600,000,000 gallons, or nearly 30,000,000 tons of inilk. In America the factory system of treating milk has attained much greater dimensions than in Europe, and that perfection of treatment, combined with the cheapness of raising and feeding stock, enables the American companies to enter the European markets with large quantities of cheese and other dairy products of uniformly good quality which find a ready and remunerative sale.

Koumiss.—Under this name is properly understood a fermented drink prepared from mare's milk by the Tartar tribes of the Russian empire and by all the nomad races of the northern parts of Asia. It is made by diluting mare's milk with about one-sixth part of its quantity of water, and adding as a ferment about one-eighth part of very sour milk or of old koumiss. This mixture is placed in a wooden vessel which is covered over with a thick cloth, and so left for about twenty-four hours in a moderately warm situation. During that time a thick 'coagulum rises to the surface, which is

thoroughly reincorporated by churning. After standing for another day, the whole mass is again thoroughly churned and mixed up, and in this state it forms new koumiss, having an agreeable subacid taste. The liquor is mostly stored and preserved by the Tartars in skin bottles, in which the fermentation continues developing its alcoholic qualities, and mellowing and improving its taste. Gcnuine Tartar koumiss has the following composition :—alcohol 3°21, lactic

acid 0°19, sugar 2°10, albuminoids 1:86, fat 1 78, salts 0°509, carbonic acid 0°177, and water 93°46. A distilled spirit is prepared from koumiss, which is drunk among the Tartars under the name of araca or arsa. Koumiss has of late years come into prominent notice as a remedial agent in cases of pulmonary cousumption, and generally as a nutritious form of food easily assimilated by delicate stomachs. It is probable that all its virtues reside in the original milk from which it is prepared, in which case the koumiss can only be regarded as valuable in so far that it is a convenient form under which the essential properties of the milk can be preserved for use. Under the name of koumiss a preparation of cow's milk is now very generally sold. It is made by adding to each quart of new milk about a tablespoonful of eommon sugar and brewcr's yeast, allowing the fermentation to proceed a sufficient length, then bottling and corking as in the ease of aerated waters. Such a preparation con- tains about the same proportion of alcohol as genuine koumiss, but a non-aleoholie variety can also be obtained, made by a process of natural fermentation, which continuing after bottling develops a large amount of carbonic acid and renders the liquor highly effervescent. (J. PA.)

MILL, James (1773-1836), historian and political and mental philosopher, was born 6th April 1773, in the little village called Northwater Bridge (Bridge of North Esk), in the parish of Logie-Pert, in the county of Forfar. His father, James Mill, was a shoemaker ; his mother, Isabel Fenton, belonged to a race of respectable farmers. The father was industrious, good-natured, and pious, but not known as specially intelligent. The mother was of a proud disposition, and resolved to educate James, her eldest son,

for a superior destiny. He began his education at the parish school, and went on to the Montrose Academy, where he remained till the unusual age of seventeen and a half, when he went to the college of Edinburgh (1790). According to the usage of the time and neighbourhood, he ought to have been sent about thirteen or fourteen to Marischal College, Aberdeen. His remaining so long at the Montrose Academy, and his going to Edinburgh for his university course, must be connected with his being taken up by Sir John and Lady Jane Stuart of Fettercairn, who engaged him to be tutor to their only daughter, known for having inspired the affection of Sir Walter Scott, and for being the mother of Principal James David Forbes. Sir John and Lady Jane Stuart contracted a warm attachment for Mill, which lasted throughout their hives. At Edinburgh University Mill was distinguished as a Greek scholar. But he received his greatest impulse from Dugald Stewart, for whom he always expressed unbounded admiration. In October 1798 he was licensed as a preacher, but seems to have preached very seldom. His years from 1790 to 1802, besides being occupied with incessant studies extending into history and moral and political philosophy, were devoted to various tutorships.

Failing to find a career to his mind in Scotland, in 1802 he went to London in company with Sir John Stuart, then member of parliament for Kincardineshire. He soon obtained literary occupation, to which he apphed himself with untiring energy. His first important venture was to start a periodical on a new plan, entitled The Literary Journal, which began to appear in January 1803, and continued under his editorship till the end of 1806. It was the most comprehensive in its aims of any periodical hitherto in existence, being a summary view of all the leading departments of human knowledge. Thomas Thomson, the chemist, took charge of science ; and many other men of 'ability co-operated. Mill himself wrote largely in biography, history, political philosophy, political economy, and also in theology, on which his views at the time were broad without being sceptical, The publisher of the journal was Baldwin, who was also the proprietor of the St James's Chronicle, a Conservative paper appear- ing three times a week. For two or three years, from 1805 onwards, Mill was editor, but at last gave it up, partly on conscientious grounds, although in conducting

it he never lent himself to the expression of any illiberal views, but often made it the vehicle of the opposite.

In 1804 the wrote a pamphlet on the Corn Trade, advocating the impolicy of a bounty on the exportation of grain. This was the beginning of his career as a political economist. In 1805 he published a translation of Villers's work on the Reformation, an unsparing exposure of the vices of the papal system. He added notes and quotations by way of confirmation of the author's views. On this subject also he continued to hold strong opinions all through life, and often recurred to it in his articles in the reviews. In 1805 he married Harriet Burrow, whose mother, a widow, kept an establishment for lunatics in Hoxton. He then took a house in Rodney Street, Pentonville, where his eldest son, John Stuart, was born in 1806. It was about the end of 1806 that he entered upon the composition of the History of India, which he expected to finish in three or four years. He was actually engaged upon it for twelve, giving, however, a considerable portion of his time to other writing for the support of his family. The strain upon his energies for those years was enormous.

He became acquainted with Jeremy Bentham in 1808, and was for many years Bentham's chief companion and ally. In 1810 Bentham, to have Mill nearer him, gave him Milton's house, which adjoined his own, and was his property. After a few months' trial Mill had to give up this house on account of his wife's health, and went to live in Newington Green; but in 1814 Bentham leased the house No. 1 Queen's Square, now 40 Queen Anne's Gate, close to his own garden, and gave it to Mill at a reduced rent; here he remained till 1831. The intimacy with Bentham was rendered still closer. For four years, from 1814 to 1817, Bentham was at Ford Abbey, near Chard, in Somersetshire, and there Mill and his family were domesticated with him nine or ten months each year,—in which retirement it is probable that Mill was able to accelerate the completion of his history.

In the twelve years between 1806 and 1818 he wrote a great many articles for various periodicals. Among these were the Anti-Jacobin Review, the British Review, and the Eclectic Review ; but there is no means of tracing his con- tributions. In 1808 he began to write for the Edinburgh feview, and contributed steadily till 1813, most of his articles being known. In the

Annual Review for 1808 two articles of his are traced—a "Review of Fox's History," and an article on "Benthain's Law Reforms," probably his first published notice of Bentham. The first known article in the Edinburgh was on "Money and Exchange " (October 1808). In 1809 (January and July) he wrote at great length on Spanish America and General Miranda, with whom he was on terms of intimate friendship. In the July number he also wrote on China. In 1810 (April) he made a severe attack on the East India Company. He also wrote on the liberty of the press and on the Church of England in connexion with the Lancasterian schools, He was an active member of the committee for promoting education on Lancaster's plan. In 1811 a periodical named the Philanthropist was started by William Allen, and published in quarterly numbers till 1817. Mill co-operated with Allen both in the writing and in the management, He contributed largely to every number,—his principal topics being education, freedoin of the press, and prison discipline (under which he expounded Bentham's " Panop- ticon"). He made powerful onslaughts on the church in connexion with the Bell and Lancaster controversy. In 1814 Macvey Napier engaged him to contribute to the supplement to the fifth edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica. Many of the articles became notable. The list included « Government," "J urisprudence," " Liberty of the Press," "Prisons and Prison Discipline," '" Colony,"

Li il rs IF

"Law of Nations," "Education," '" Beggar," ' Benefit Societies," "Banks for Savings." In "Jurisprudence" and "Prisons" he was largely indebted to Bentham; in most of the others he was either altogethcr or in great part original. The article on "Government" will occupy a permanent position in English history.

In 1818 was published the History of India, which had a great and speedy success. It was the means of changing the author's future position. The year following he was appointed an official in the India House, in the important department of the examiner of Indian correspondence. He gradually rose in rank till he was appointed, in 1830, head of the office. He introduced his eldest son into the same department in 1823.

In 1824 Bentham projected the Westminster Review, and Mill was a principal writer for three years. Some of his most vigorous writings are included among those contribu- tions. The first was an elaborate criticism of the Ldunburgh Review as a whole ; it was followed by an onslaught on the Quarterly. Other articles dealt with English history and with ecclesiastical establishments, which he severely im- pugned. To a periodical of short duration, The Par- liamentary History and Review, he contributed an elaborate political retrospect of the parliament of 1820-26. In 1829 appeared the Analysis of the Ifuman Mind. From 1831 to 1833 he was largely occupied in the defence of the East India Company during the controversy attending the renewal of its charter, he being in virtue of his office the spokesman of the court of directors. In 1834 Sir William Molesworth projected the London Review, and Mill con- tributed to it during the last two years of his life. His most notable article was one entitled 'The Church and its Reform," which was much too sceptical for the time, and injured the Review. His last published book was the Fragment on Mackintosh, which appeared in 1835. He died on the 23d June 1836.

A eonsiderable space would be required to do justice to Mill's eharacter—intellectual and moral—as shown both in his writings and in his intenscly active and influential career. He was an ex- cellent scholar, in the sense of knowing the Greek and Roman elassics. His other accomplishments included general history, the philosophy of politics in the most eomprehensive acceptation, logic, ethics, and mental philosophy. The type of his intellect was logi- cal in the highest degree; he was, above all things, clear and pre- cise, an enemy of every form of looseness of reasoning, and a crushcr of prevailing fallacies. This is the most notable feature in his writings throughout. His was also an original mind. Except in a few subjects, which had been so well elaborated by Bentham that

he was content to be little more than an expounder of Bentham's |

views, he gave a fresh turn to whatever topic he took up. Ata time when social subjects were subjected almost exclusively to an empirical handling, he insisted on bringing first principles to bear at every point; in this lay both his strength and his weakness.

His greatest literary monument is the History of India. The materials for narrating the acquisition by England of its Indian empire were put into shape for the first time; a vast body of political theory was brought to bear on the delineation of the Hindu civiliza- tion; and the conduct of the actors in the successive stages of the conquest and administration of India was subjected to a severe criticism. The work itself, and the author's official connexion with India for the last seventeen years of his life, effected a complete ehange in the whole system of governing that eountry.

Mill played a great part as a politician and political philosopher in English affairs as well. He was, more than any other man, the founder of what was ealled philosophical radicalism. His writings on government and his personal influence among the Liberal poli- ticians of his time determined the change of view from the French Revolution theories of the rights of man and the absolute equality of men to the claiming of securities for good government through a great extension of the electoral suffrage. Under this banner it was that the Reform Bill was fought and won.

His work on Political Economy was intended as a text-book of the subject, and shows all the author's precision and lucidity. It followed up the views of Ricardo, with whom Mill was in habitual intimacy. It urged strongly the modern application of the prin- ciple of population, and started the doctrine of taxing land for the unearned increment of value.

By his Analysis of the Mind and his Fragment on Mackintosh

Mill acquired a position in the history of psychology and ethics. Attached to the a posteriori school, ie Piatt aid i elaims with conspicuous ability. He took up the problems of mind very much after the fashion of the Scotch school, as then represented by Reid

Stewart, and Brown, but made a new start, due in part to Hartley, and still more to hisown independent thinking. He carried out the principle of association into the analysis of the complex emotional states, as the affections, the esthetic emotions, and the moral sentiment, all which he endeavoured to resolve into pleasurable and painful sensations. But the

salient merit of the Analysis is the constant endeavour after precise definition of terms and clear state- ment of doctrines. The Fragment on Mackintosh is a severe ex- posure of the flimsiness and misrepresentations of Mackintosh's famous dissertation on ethical philosophy. It discusses, in a very thorough way, the foundations of ethics from the author's point of view of utility.

Mill's influence on the young men of his time by his conversation has been especially eelebrated. Among those that came under this influence were some of the greatest naines in the generation that succeeded him. He had himself a very high ideal of public virtue, which he carried out, at the risk of sacrificing all his chances of worldly advancement, and he impressed this ideal on those that surrounded him,—most of all on his own son, who has since eclipsed his father in fame, if not in genius.

See J. S. Mill's Autobiography, Bain's Life of James Mill, G. 8. Bower's Hartley and James Mill. (AB?)

_ MILL, Jonn (c. 1645-1707), editor of an historically important critical edition of the New Testament, was born about 1645 at Shap in Westmoreland, entered Queen's College, Oxford, as a servitor in 1661, and took his master's degree in 1669. Soon afterwards he was chosen fellow and tutor of his college; in 1676 he became chaplain to the bishop of Oxford, and in 1681 he obtained the rectory of Blechingdon, Oxfordshire, and was made chaplain to Charles II. From 1685 till his death he held the appoint- ment of principal of St Edmund's Hall; and in 1704 he was nominated by Queen Anne to a prebendal stall in Canterbury. He died on June 23, 1707, just a fortnight after the publication of his Greek Testament.

Mill's Novum Testamentum Greeum, cum, lectionibus variantibus MSS. Exemplarium, Versionum, Editionum SS. Patrum et Serip- torum LEcelesiasticorum, ct in.casdem notis (Oxford, fol. 1707), was undertaken by the advice and encouragement of Teil, his predecessor in the field of New Testament criticism ; it represents the labour of thirty years, and is admitted to mark a great advance on all that had previously been achieved. The text indeed is that of R. Stephanus (1550), but the notes, besides embodying all previously existing collections of various readings, add a vast number derived from his own examination of many new MSS. and Oriental versions

(the latter unfortunately he used only in the Latin translations). He was the first to notice, though only incidentally, the value of the concurrence of the Latin evidence with the Codex Alexandrinus, the only representative of an ancient non-Western Greck text then sufficiently known; this hint was not lost on Bentley (see Westcott and Hort, Introduction to New Testament). Mill's various readings, numbering about thirty thousand, were attacked by Whitby in his Exanven as destroying the validity of the text ; Antony Collins also argued in the same sense though with a different object. The latter called forth a reply from Bentley (Phileleutherus Ltpsiensis). 1n1710 Kuster reprinted Mill's Testament at Amsterdain with the readings of twelve additional MSS.

MILL, Jonn Stuart (1806-1873), son of James MILL (q.v.), was born in London on the 20th May 1806. His education was from first to last undertaken by his father, and is likely long to remain a standing subject for wonder and discussion. Much of the wonder is no doubt due to his father's monstrous inversion of custom, the boy being set almost as soon as he could speak to work at our time- honoured subjects of secondary and higher education. He was taught the Greek alphabet at the age of three, and one of his earliest recollections, as he has recorded in his auto- biography, was learning lists of common Greek words with their English meanings, written for him by his father on cards. By his eighth year he had gone through in the original a great many Greek books. "Of grammar," he says, "until some years later, I learnt no more than the inflexions of the nouns and verbs, but after a course of vocables proceeded at once to translation ; and I faintly

remember going through sop's Fables, the first Greek |

book which I read. The Anabasis, which I remember better, was the second. I learnt no Latin until my eighth year. At that time I had read under my father's tuition a number of Greek prose authors, among whom I remember the whole of Herodotus and of Xenophon's Cyropexdia and Memorials of Socrates, some of the lives of the philosophers by Diogenes Laertius, part of Lucian, and Isocrates Ad Demonicum and Ad Nicoclem. I also read, in 1813, the first six dialogues (in the common arrangement) of Plato, from the Huthyphron to the Thextetus inclusive." Besides all these Greek books,

he had read a great deal of history in English—Robertson's histories, Hume, Gibbon, Watson's Philip IF. and III, Hooke's Roman History, Rollin's Ancient History, Langhorne's Plutarch, Burnet's History of My Own Times, thirty volumes of the Annual Register, Millar's Historical View of the English Government, Mosheim's cclesiastical History, M'Crie's Knox, and two histories of the Quakers.

That Mill "knew Greek" and "read Plato" before he was eight years old is often repeated, sometimes as an instance of amazing precocity, sometimes as an awful example of injudicious parental forcing. The astonishment that a child should have done so much at such an age is probably as little grounded in reason as was Mill's own opinion that any child might have done the same. It is forgotten that many thousands of persons have known Greek before the age of eight without a knowledge of the technicalities of Greek grammar. In presence of the fact that Mill was never distinguished for great memory of detail or richness of historical or literary allusion, it is a fair conclusion that the matter of his reading at this age was of as little service to him in after life as if he had read the trashiest of boy's own books. This is not to say that for educational purposes his early years were wasted as in his own and his father's opinion they generally are. But undoubtedly the main factor in Mill's education was not the literature put into his hands, but his constant inter- course with the active richly stored mind and strenuous character of his father. If any should be tempted to imitate the method, they should bear in mind that this was the cardinal element of it. The tutor was of more importance than the books. The reading of Plato's dialogues would have been only an exercise in rough translation if the boy had not had a Socrates with him in living communion. The child was a constant inmate of his father's study, and trotted by his side in his walks, giving from jottings on slips of paper as'good an account as he could of what he had read. He thus learnt at an unusually early age by example, precept, and practice the habit of strenuous application to difficult work. The fact that Mill was taught thus early to take his chief pleasure in overcoming intellectual difficulties, and to realize the meaning of general terms, accounts for the singular and altogether unparalleled ease which he acquired in the treatment of political and social generalizations, not in barren abstract vagueness, but in close relation with facts. This on the intellectual side; and on the moral side the child was almost from the dawn

of consciousness instructed to regard himself as consecrated to a life of labour for the public good; his ambition was kindled to follow in the footsteps of the great men of all ages, and at the same time the utmost care was taken to purify that ambition from unworthy motives.

A contemporary record of Mill's studies from eight to thirteen is published in Dr Bain's sketch of his life. It shows that the Autobiography rather understates than overstates the amount of work done. At the age of eight he began Latin, Euclid, and algebra, and was appointed schoolmaster to the younger children of the family—a

m1 a

post, he hints, more serviceable to his intellect than to his manners. His main reading was still history, but he went through all the Latin and Greek authors commonly read in the schools and universities, besides several that are not commonly read by undergraduates. He was not taught to compose either in Latin or in Greek, and he was never an exact scholar in the academic sense ; it was for the subject- matter that he was required to read, and by the age of ten he could read Plato and Demosthenes with ease. His father's History of India was published in 1818 ; immedi- ately thereafter, about the age of twelve, John, under his energetic direction, began a thorough study of the scholastic logic, at the same time reading Aristotle's logical treatises in the original. In the following year he was introduced to political economy. And there, when the pupil was nearly fourteen, this remarkable education terminated. From that time he worked less immediately under his father's eye. It was an inevitable incident of such an education that Mill should acquire many of his father's speculative opinions, and his father's way of defending them. But his mind did not receive the impress passively and mechanically. "One of the grand objects of educa- tion," according to the elder Mill, "should be to generate a constant and anxious concern about evidence"; and he laboured with all the energy of his strong will against allowing his son to become a parrot of his own opinions and arguments. The duty of collecting and weighing evidence for himself was at every turn impressed upon the boy ; he was taught to accept no opinion upon authority ; he was soundly rated if he could not give a reason for his beliefs. John Stuart Mill was deliberately

educated as an apostle, but it was as an apostle of reasoned truth in human affairs, not as an apostle of any system of dogmatic tenets. It was purposely to prevent any falling off from this high moral standard till it should become part of his being that his father kept the boy so closely with himself. Much pity has been expressed over the dreary cheerless existence that the child must have led, cut off from all boyish amusements and companionship, working day after day on his father's treadmill; but a childhood and boyhood spent in the daily enlargement of knowledge, with the continual satisfaction of difficulties conquered, buoyed up by day-dreams of emulating the greatest of human benefactors, need not have been an unhappy childhood, and Mill expressly says that his was not unhappy. It – seems unhappy only when we compare it with the desires of childhood left more to itself, and when we decline to imagine its peculiar enjoyments and aspirations. Mill complains that his father often required more than could reasonably be expected of him, but his tasks were not so severe as to prevent him from growing up a healthy, hardy, and high-spirited boy, though he was not constitutionally robust, and his tastes and pursuits were so different from those of other boys of the same age.

Most of Mill's fifteenth year was spent in France in the family of Sir Samuel Bentham. Away from his father, he maintained his laborious habits; the discipline held. Copious extracts from a diary kept by him at this time are given by Dr Bain, and show how methodically and incessantly he read and wrote, studied botany, tackled advanced mathematical problems, made notes on the scenery and the people and customs of the country. On his return in 1821 he continued his old studies with the addition of some new ones. One of the new studies was Roman law, which he read with John Austin, his father having half decided on the bar as the best profession open to him. Another was psychology. In 1823, when he had just completed his seventeenth year, the notion of the bar as a livelihood was abandoned, and he entered as a clerk in the examiner's office of the India House, "with the under-

standing that he should be employed from the beginning in preparing drafts of despatches, and be thus trained up as a sucecssor to those who 'then

filled the highest depart- ments of the office."

Mill's work at the India House, which was henceforth his livelihood, did not come beforc the public, and those who have scouted his political writings as the work of an abstract philosopher, entirely unacquainted with affairs, lave ignored the nature of his duties. From the first he was more than a clerk, and after a short apprenticeship he was promoted, in 1828, to the responsible position of assistant-examiner. 'The duty of the so-called examiners was to examine the letters of the agents of the Company in India, and to draft instructions in reply. The character of the Company's government was almost entirely depend- ent upon their abilities as statesmen. For twenty years, from 1836 to 1856, Mill had charge of the Company's relations with the native states. In the hundreds of despatches that he wrote in this capacity, much, no doubt, was done in accordance with established routine, but few statesmen of his generation had a wider experience of the responsible application of principles of government to actual emergencies. That he said so little about this work in the Autobiography was probably because his main con- cern there was to expound the influences that affected his moral and mental development. A man of different temperament might have found abundance of dramatic interest in watching the personal and political changes in so many distinct states. But Mill makes no reminiscences of this kind, nor does he give any clue to the results of his own initiative.

To return to his extra-official activity, which received an immense impulse about the time of his entering the India House from what must strike a man of the world asa strange source. The reading of Dumont's exposition of Bentham's doctrines in the Jraité de Législation was an epoch in Mill's life. It awoke in him an ambition as enthusiastic and impassioned as a young man's first love. The language that he uses about it in his autobiography reveals a warmth of inner life that few people would suspect from the record of his dry studies. When he laid down the last volume, he says, he had become a different being. It gave unity to the detached and fragmentary component parts of his knowledge and beliefs. "I now had opinions— a creed, a doctrine, a philosophy—in one among the best senses of the word, a religion, the inculcation and diffusion of which could be made the principal outward purpose of a life. And I had a grand conception laid

before me of changes to be effected in the condition of mankind through that doctrine." He had been carefully bred to contemplate work for human welfare as the ruling motive of his life ; that motive had now received definite direction.

Many a youth has entered the world with ambition equally high, but few have felt as Mill felt the first shock of despair, and fewer still have rallied from that despair with such indomitable resolution. The main secret of the great "crisis" of his youthful life is probably to be found in the lofty ardour of the aspirations then conceived and shaped. For four years he worked with faith and hope in his mission, and these were years of incessant propagandist activity. The enthusiast of seventeen, burning to reorganize human affairs so as to secure the greatest happiness of the greatest number, set siege to the public mind through several approaches. He constituted a few of his youthful friends, imbued with the principles of his new creed, into a society which he called the " Utilitarian " Society, taking the word, as he tells us, from one of Galt's novels. Two newspapers were open to him—the 7'raveller, edited by a friend of Bentham's, and the Chronicle, edited by his father's friend Black. One of his first efforts was a solid

argument for freedom of discussion, in a series of letters to the Chromcle apropos of the prosecution of Richard Carlile. But he watched all public incidents with a vigilant eye, and seized every passing opportunity of exposing departures from sound principle in parliament and courts of justice. Another outlet was opened up for him in 1824 by the starting of the Westminster Review, and still another in the following year in the Parliamentary History and Review. This year also he. found a congenial occupation in editing Bentham's Rationale of Judicial Evidence. Into this he threw himself with zeal. And all the time, his mind full of public questions, he discussed and argued eagerly with the many men of promise and distinction who came to his father's house. He engaged in set discussions at a reading society formed at Grote's house in 1825, and in set debates at a Speculative Society formed in the same year.

"A very disquisitive youth," was Peacock's description of young Mill at this period, and this was probably how the enthusiast struck most of his outside

acquaintances. But the glow of a great ambition as well as the energy of a piercing intellect might have been felt in his writings. His mission was none the less arduous that he proposed to convert the world by reason. Only the fulness of unbroken hope could have supported his powers, if he had had a frame of iron, under the strain of such incessant labour. All of a sudden, a misgiving which he compares to the Methodist's "first conviction of sin" madc a rift in the wholeness of his faith in his mission. "It was in the autumn of 1826. I was in a dull state of nerves, such as everybody is occasionally liable to; unsusceptible to enjoyment or pleasurable excitement ; one of those moods when what is pleasure at other times becomes insipid or indifferent. .... In this frame of mind it occurred to me to put the question directly to myself, 'Suppose that all your objects in life were realized, that all the changes in institutions and opinions which you are now looking forward to could be completely effected at this very instant, would this be a great joy and happiness to you?' And an irrepressible self-consciousness distinctly answered, 'No!' At this my heart sank within me; the whole foundation on which my life was constructed fell down. All my happiness was to have been found in the continual pursuit of this end. The end had ceased to charm, and how could there ever again be any interest in the means? I seemed to have nothing left to live for."

The passage in his autobiography in which Mill gives an account of this prostrating disenchantment and his gradual release from its benumbing spell is one of the most interesting chapters in personal history. The first break in the gloom came, he tells us, from his reading in Marmontel's Mémoires "the passage which relates his father's death, the distressed position of the family, and the sudden inspiration by which he, then a mere boy, felt and made them feel that he would be everything to them—would supply the place of all that they had lost." Mill was moved to tears by the narrative, and his burden grew lighter at the thought that all feeling was not dead within him, that he was not a mere intellectual machine. This incident, and the delight that he now began to take im Wordsworth's "Poems founded on the Affections," gives a clue to one of the secrets of Mill's despondency. It was an unsatisfied longing for personal affection, for love and friendship, of which his life hitherto had been barren. His father seems to have been reserved, undemonstrative even to the pitch of chilling sternness in his intercourse with his family ; and ameng young Mill's comrades con- tempt

of feeling was almost a watchword, because it 1s so often associated with mischievous prejudice and wrong conduct. Himself absorbed in abstract questions and pro-

jects of general philanthropy, he had been careless of winning or keeping personal attachment.. But it was not till despair first seized him, as he looked back at the poverty of the results of his work as an apostle, that Mill began to feel the void in his affections and the need of human sympathy. We must remember how little when his ambition was formed he knew of the living world around him. He knew in terms that political and social change must be slow; he could whisper patience to him- self, and say to himself that his life must be happy because the attainment of his great object must occupy the whole of it; but without experience he could not have been prepared for the actual slowness of the reformer's work, or armed against its terribly oppressive influence. Inevitably he underrated the stolidity and strength of the forces arrayed against him. Four years seems a long time at that

age. In 1826 Mill could look back to four years of eager toil. What were the results? He had become convinced

that his comrades in the Utilitarian Society, who never numbered more than ten, had not the stuff in them for a world-shaking propaganda ; the society itself was dissolved ; the Parliamentary Review was a failure; the Westminster did not pay its expenses ; Bentham's Judicial Evidence produced little effect on the reviewers. His own reception at the Speculative Debating Society, where he first measured his strength in public conflict, was calculated to produce

self-distrust. He found himself looked upon with curiosity:

as a precocious phenomenon, a "made man," an intellectual machine set to grind certain tunes. The most clear and cogent reasoning failed to sway his audience. Great things had been expected of this society as a means of bringing together for close discussion the leading young men then in public life or looking forward to it. Its first session proved a fiasco. The leaders

that had been expected stayed away. With these repulses to his hopes along the whole line of his activity, Mill must also have suffered from the nervous exhaustion that only the hope and heat of the fight had kept him from feeling before. No wonder that he was disheartened, began to feel defects in his father's training, to question and analyse his own faith, to yearn for the solace of personal affection, and to reconstitute his scheme of life.

That in spite of this rude shock the foundations laid by his early training remained stable appears from the facts that all through the period of his gloom he continued working as before, and that he considered himself bound, once convinced that his old plan of life was insufficient, to build up a thoroughly reasoned new plan wherewith to give new heart and hope to his work. The new system was much less different from the old than might be sup- posed from what he says of the struggle that it cost him to reach it. Regard for the public good was still his religion, the ruling motive that gave unity to his conduct. But he now recognized that this was too vague and insub- stantial an object to be sufficient of itself for the satisfac- tion of a man's affections. Itis a proof of the dominating force of his father's character that it cost the younger Mill such an effort to shake off his stern ereed about poetry and personal emotion, Like Plato, the elder Mill would have put poets under ban as ministers of prejudice and enemies of truth. And he often insisted on the wisdom of restricting as much as possible the private affections, while expanding as much as possible the public affections. Landor's maxim of "few acquaintances, fewer friends, no familiarities" had his cordial approval. These doctrines the younger Mill at first took up with boyish enthusiasm and pedantry, but it was against this part of his father's crecd that he now felt himself forced in reason to revolt, He stood too much in awe of his father to make him the confidant of his difficulties, He wrestled with them in

MI

the gloomy solitude of his own mind. He was victorious ; he reached firm ground at last; but the struggle left him in several respects changed. He carried out of the struggle as the fruits of victory a more catholic view of the elements of human happiness, a delight in the poetry of nature and the affections as well as the poetry of heroic unselfish character and action, a

disposition to study more sympa- thetically the point of view of opponents, a more courteous style of polemic, a hatred of sectarianism, an ambition no less noble and disinterested but moderated to practical possibilities, ,

In the course of the next few years Mill wrote compara- tively little, but he "carried on," as he says, "'a quantity of thinking respecting a host of subjects." It was a period of search, deliberation, germination, and striking root. Coincident if not causally connected witli the relief from his spiritual crisis came his first consciousness of power as "an original and independent thinker." In the dia- lectic conversations with a small band of students at Grote's house, he regained the self-confidence that had been shaken in the larger and rougher arena of the Speculative Debating Society. The beginning of his works on logic and political economy may be traced back to those discus- sions, and he learnt from them, he tells us, the habit of "never accepting half solutions of difficulties as complete ; never abandoning a puzzle, but again and again returning to it until it was cleared up; never allowing obscure corners of a subject to remain unexplored, because they did not appear important; never thinking that he perfectly understood any part of a subject until he understood the whole." He learnt also an important moral lesson from the Speculative Society, besides learning the strong points of other political and social creeds and the weak points of Benthamism from defending it point by point against all comers. With all his despondency, he did not abandon the meetings of the society after the fiasco of the first session. He stood by it firmly, and in a short time had the triumph of seeing its debates famous enough to attract nien with whom it was profitable for him to interchange opinions, among others Maurice and Sterling. He ceased to attend the society in 1829, but he carried away from it the strengthening memory of failure overcome by per- severing effort, and the important doctrinal conviction that a true system of political philosophy was "something much more complex and many-sided than he had previously had any idea of, and that its office was to supply, not a set of model institutions, but principles from which the insti- tutions suitable to any given circumstances might be deduced."

The first sketch of Mill's political philosophy appeared in a series of contributions to the Hxaminer in the autumn of 1830 on " Prospects in France." He was in Paris soon after the July Revolution, made the

acquaintance of the leading spirits among the younger men; and in his discus- sion of what they were doing and what they should do in making a new constitution we find the germs of many thoughts afterwards more fully developed in his Represen- tative Government.

The division of a man's life into periods must always be a rough partition, but we may conveniently and with tolerable accuracy take these letters as marking the close of his period of meditative search, of radication, and his return to hopeful aspiring activity. It was characteristic of the nature of the man that he should be stirred to such delight by the Revolution in France, and should labour so earnestly to make his countrymen understand with what gravity and sobriety it had been effected. Their own Reform Bill came soon after, and it is again characteristic of Mill—at once of his enthusiasm and of his steady deter- nunation to do for humanity the work that nobody else

seemed able or willing to do—that we find him in the heat of the struggle in 1831 writing to the Hxaminer a series of letters on "The Spirit of the Age" which drew from Carlyle the exclamation, "' Here is a new mystic!" We can easily see now what it was in these remarkable essays that fascinated Carlyle; it was the pervading opinion that in every natural state of society power must be in the hands of the wisest. This was the condition of stability; when power and wisdom ceased to coincide, there was a disturbance of the equilibrium till this coincidence was again effected. But whether Carlyle was right in the epithet "mystic" may be judged from the fact that Mill's inductive logic was the direct result of his aspirations after political stability as determined by the dominion of the wisest. " Why is it," he asked, "' that the multitude accept implicitly the decisions of the wisest, of the specially skilled, in physical science?" Because in physical science there isall but complete agreement in opinion. ' And why this agreement?" Because all accept the same methods of investigation, the same tests of truth. Is it possible then to obtain unanimity as to the methods of arriving at conclusions in social and political matters, so as to secure similar agreement of opinion among the specially skilled, and similar general respect for their authority? The same thought appears in a review of

Herschel's Natural Philosophy, written about the same titne. Mill remarks that the uncertainty hanging over the very elements of moral and social philosophy proves that the means of arriving at the truth in those sciences are not yet properly understood. "And whither," he adds, "can mankind so advantageously turn, in order to learn the proper means, and to form their minds to the proper habits, as to that branch of knowledge in which by universal acknowledg- ment the greatest number of truths have been ascertained, and the greatest possible degree of certainty arrived at?"

By 1831 Mill's enthusiasm for humanity had been thoroughly reawakened, and had taken the definite shape of an aspiration to supply an unimpeachable method of search for conclusions in moral and social science. From the platform on which Carlyle and Mill inet in 1831 they travelled different roads,—the one to preach the duty of obedience to the wisest, the other to search for a means by which wisdom might be acquired such as would command respect and win the assent of free conviction. No mystic ever worked with warmer zeal than Mill. But his zeal encountered a check which baffled him for several years, and which left its mark in various inconsistencies and incoherences in his completed system. He had been bred by his father in a great veneration for the syllogistic logic as an antidote against confused thinking. He attributed to his early discipline in this logic an impatience of vague language which in all likelihood was really fostered in him by his study of the Platonic dialogues and of Bentham, for he always had in himself more of Plato's fertile ingenuity in canvassing the meaning of vague terms than the school- man's rigid consistency in the use of them. Be this as it may, enthusiastic as he was for a new logic that might give certainty to moral and social conclusions, Mill was no less resolute that the new logic should stand in no antagonism to the old. In his Westminster review of Whately's Logic in 1828 (invaluable to all students of the genesis of Mill's logic) he appears, curiously enough, as an ardent and brilliant champion of the syllogistic logic against highfliers such as the Scotch philosophers who talk of "superseding" it by "a supposed system of inductive logic." His inductive logic must "supplement and not supersede." It must be concatenated with the syllogistic logic, the two to be incorporated in one system. But for several years he searched in vain for the means of con- catenation.

oll

Meantime, while recurring again and again, as was his custom, to this cardinal difficulty, Mill worked indefatigably in other directions where he saw his way clear, expatiating over a wide range of political, social, economical, and philosophical questions. The working of the new order in France, and the personalities of the leading men, had a pro- found interest for him; he wrote on the subject in the Examiner. He had ceased to write for the Westminster in 1828; but during the years 1832 and 1833 he con- tributed many essays to 7Z'art's Magazine, the Jurist, and the Monthly Repository. In 1835 the London Review was started, with Mill as editor; it was amalgamated with the Westminster in 1836, and Mill continued editor till 1840. Much of what he wrote then was subsequently incorporated in his systematic works ; some of his essays were reprinted in his first two volumes of Dissertations and Discussions (1859). The essays on Bentham and Coleridge constituted the first manifesto of the new spirit which Mill sought to breathe into English Radicalism. But the reprinted papers give no just idea of the immense range of Mill's energy at this time. His position in the India Office, where alone he did work enough for most men, cut him off from entering parliament; but he laboured hard though ineffectually to influence the legislature from without by combating the disposition to rest and be thankful. In his Autolwography he admits that the attempt to forma Radical party in parliament at that time was chimerical.

It was in 1837, on reading Whewell's Znductive Sciences and re-reading Herschel, that Mill at last saw his way clear both to formulating the methods of scientific investi- gation and joining on the new logic as a supplement to the old. Epoch-making as his logic undoubtedly was, from the multitude of new views opened up, from the addition of a new wing to the rambling old building, and from the inspiring force with which every dusty chamber was searched into and illuminated, Mill did not escape all the innumerable pitfalls of language that beset the pioneer in such a subject. It is evident from a study of his purposes and the books from which he started that his worst perplexities were due to his determination to exhibit scientific method as the complement of schiolastic logic. In his defence of the syllogism he confounds the syllogistic forms with deductive reasoning. Every deductive reason- ing may be thrown into the form of a

syllogism, but not every syllogism is deductive. The reasoning in several of the syllogistic forms is not deductive at all in the sense of involving a movement from general to particular. Although he knew Aristotle in the original, Mill did not recognize the fact that the syllogistic machinery was primarily constructed for the reasoning together of terms. As regards the word induction, Mill uses it in different connexions to cover three or four distinguishable meanings —induction viewed as the establishment of predications about a general term, induction viewed as inference from the known to the unknown, induction viewed as verifica- tion by experiment, and induction viewed as the proof of propositions of causation. The form of his system was really governed by the scholastic notion of induction as a means of establishing general propositions ; the inductive part of his system is introduced after the deductive under this character ; while the greater portion of the substance of what he treats of under the name of induction, and especially the so-called experimental methods, have nothing whatever to do with the establishment of general proposi- tions, in the technical sense of general propositions.

But the permanent value and influence of Mill's inductive logic is not to be measured by technical inaccuracies and inconsistencies, to which an academic mind may easily attach undue importance. In the technical history of the science, Mill's Logic may be viewed as an attempt to fuse

the practical tests of truth set forth in Herschel's Discourse on Natural Philosophy with the theoretic views of induc- tion propounded in Whately's Logic. But in the history of thought the great importance of the work is due not so much to its endeavour to formulate the methods of science and lay bare the first principles on which they rest as to its systematic application of scientific method to what he called the moral sciences. Mill has often been criticized as if he had pretended to teach men how to conduct their investigations and how to make discoveries in the physical sciences. His work was rather to educe from the practice of men of science the principles on which they proceed in testing and proving their speculations concerning cause and effect in the physical world, and see whether the same principles could not be applied in testing and proving speculations concerning cause

and effect in the moral world. What is the effect upon human character and human happiness of given social and physical conditions— climate, institutions, customs, laws? How can conclusions upon such points be proved? These were the questions in which Mill was interested, and the striking novelty of his work was its endeavour to show that propositions of cause and effect in human affairs must be proved, if they admit of proof at all, absolute or approximate, on the same principles with propositions of cause and effect in the material world.

The Logic was published in 1843, In 1844 appeared his Essays on Some Unsettled Questions in Political Economy. These essays were worked out and written many years before, and show Mill in his first stage as a political economist. Four out of the five essays are elaborate and powerful solutions of perplexing technical problems—the distribution of the gains of international commerce, the influence of consumption on production, the definition of productive and unproductive labour, the pre- cise relations between profits and wages. Though Mill appears here purely as the disciple of Ricardo, striving after more precise statement, and reaching forward to further consequences, we can well understand in reading these essays, searching, luminous, large and bold in outline, firmly wrought in detail, how about the time when he first sketched them he began to be conscious of power as an original and independent thinker.

- That originality and independence became more con- spicuous when he reached his second stage as a political economist, struggling forward towards the standpoint from which his systematic work was written. It would seem that in his fits of despondency one of the thoughts that sat upon him like a nightmare and marred his dreams of human improvement was the apparently inexorable character of economic laws, condemning thousands of labourers to a cramped and miserable existence, and thousands more to semi-starvation. From this oppressive feeling he found relief in the thought set forth in the opening of the second book of his Political Lconomy—that, while the conditions of production have the necessity of physical laws, the distribution of what is produced among the various classes of producers is a matter of human arrangement, dependent upon alterable customs and institutions, There can be little doubt that this thought, whether or not in the clear shape that it afterwards assumed, was the germ of all that is most

distinctive in his system of political economy. It was as far as possible from the rigidity of his method of exposition to fall into the confusion of supposing that it was for political economy to discuss the equity of different modes of distribution, or the value of other objects of human endeavour conflicting with the production of wealth; but he put economic inquiries clearly in their proper place as leading to conclusions that were not always final and bind-

ing on the practical statesman, but had to be taken with other considerations as governing rational human action. Besides thus putting political economy in its just correla- tion with other parts of social science and conduct, Mill widened the scope of economic inquiries by discussing the economic consequences of various ideal social arrangements, and more especially different modes of distributing produce between landlord, capitalist, and labourer. Mill certainly redeemed political economy from the reproach of being a dry science. Nobody with any interest in human improve- ment can read his work with indifference. And he did this without in any way disturbing the original conception of political economy as the science of cause and effect in the production of wealth. One of his most eminent successors, the late Professor Cairnes, thus admirably summed up his work as a political economist :—' As he himself used to put it, Ricardo supplied the backbone of the science ; but it is not less certain that the limbs, the joints, the muscular developments—all that renders political economy a complete and organized body of knowledge—have been the work of Mill."

While his great systematic works were in progress, Mill wrote very little on events or books of the day. He turned aside for a few months from his Political Economy during the winter of the Irish famine (1846-47) to advocate the creation of peasant-proprietorships as a remedy for distress and disorder in Ireland. He found time also to write elaborate articles on French history and Greek history in the Edinburgh Review apropos of Michelet, Guizot, and Grote, besides some less elaborate essays.

The Political Hconomy was published in 1848. Mill could now feel that the main work he had proposed for himself was accomplished; but, though he

wrote compara- tively little for some years afterwards, he remained as much as ever on the alert for opportunities of useful influence, and pressed on with hardly diminished enthusiasm in his search for useful truth. Among other things, he made a more thorough study of socialist. writers, with the result that, though he was not converted to any of their schemes as being immediately practicable, he began to look upon some more equal distribution of the produce of labour as a practicability of the remote future, and to dwell upon the prospect of such changes in human character as might render a stable society possible without the institution of private property. This he has called his third stage as a political economist, and he says that he was helped towards it by the lady, Mrs Taylor, who became his wife in 1851, and with whom he had lived in intimate friendship for more than twenty years before. It is generally supposed that he writes with a lover's extrava- gance about this lady's powers when he conipares her with Shelley and Carlyle. But a little reflexion will show that he wrote with his usual accuracy and sobriety when he described her influence on him. He expressly says that he owed none of his technical doctrine to her, that she influenced only his ideals of life for the individual and for society; and his language about her is really only a measure of the importance that he attached to such ideals above any systems of reasoned truth. There is very little propositional difference between Mill and his father; but it is obvious from what he says that his inner life became very different after he threw off his father's authority. This new inner life was strengthened and enlarged by Mrs Taylor. We must remember also that Mill in his early years had been so strictly secluded from commonplace sentiment that what the general world would consider commonplace must have come to him with all the freshness of a special revelation.

During the seven years of his married life Mill published less than in any other period of his career, but four of his —

MILL

most closely reasoned and characteristic works, the Laberty, the Utilitarianism, the Thoughts on Parliamentary Reform, and the Subjection of Women, besides his posthumously published essays on Vatwre and on the Utility of Religion, were thought out and partly written in collaboration

with his wife. In 1856 he became head of the examiner's office in the India House, and for two years, till the dissolution of the Company in 1858, his official work, never a light task, kept him fully occupied. It fell to him as head of the office to write the defence of the Company's government of India when the transfer of its powers was proposed. Mill was earnestly opposed to the transfer, and the documents in which he substantiated the proud boast for the Company that "few governments even under far more favourable circumstances have attempted so much for the good of their subjects or carried so many of their attempts to a beneficial issue," and exposed the defects of the proposed new government, are models of trenchant and dignified pleading. His prediction that the Indian Secretary's council would serve as a screen and not as a check was in the opinion of many amply verified a few years ago.

On the dissolution of the Company, Mill was offered a seat in the new council, but declined. His retirement from official work was followed almost immediately by his wife's death, and from this calamity he sought relief in active literary occupation. Politics, sociology, and psycho- logy divided as before the energies of his active mind. One of his first cares was to publish with a touching dedication to his wife the treatise on Liberty, which they had wrought out together, principle by principle and sentence by sentence. This pious duty discharged, he turned to current politics, and published, in view of the impending Reform Bill, a pamphlet on parliamentary reform. 'The chicf feature in this was an idea concerning which he and Mrs Mill often deliberated, the necessity of providing checks against uneducated democracy. His fanciful suggestion of a plurality of votes, proportioned to the elector's degree of education, was avowedly put forward only as an ideal; he admitted that no authentic test of education could for the present be found. An anonymous Conservative caught at the scheme in another pamphlet, proposing income as a test. Soon after, Mill supported in raser's, still with the same object, Mr Hare's scheme for the representation of minorities. In the autumn of the same year he turned to psychology, reviewing Mr Bain's works in the Hdinburgh Review.

In this way the indefatigable thinker worked on, throw- ing himself by turns into the various lines along which he saw prospects of fulfilling his mission as an apostle of pro- gress. In his Representative Government (1860) he

systema- tized opinions already put forward in many casual articles and essays. His Utilitarianism (published in Fraser's in 1861) was a closely reasoned systematic attempt to answer objections to his ethical theory and remove misconceptions of it. As the inventor of the term Utilitarianisin, he was entitled to define its meaning; and he was especially anxious to make it clear that hé included in utility the pleasures of the imagination and the gratification of the higher emotions, and to show how powerfully the good of mankind as a motive appealed to the imagination. His 'treatise on the Subjection of Women, in its ruling intention a protest against the abuse of power, was Mill's next work, though it was not published till 1869. His Hxamination of Hamilton's Philosophy, published in 1865, had engaged a large share of his time for three years before. When it first occurred to him that a criticism of the chief of our native intuitional psychologists would cause a wholesome stir and serve enlightenment, he thought only of an article such as he wrote about Austin's Jurisprudence or Grotc's

old Plato. But he soon found that the subject required a book, and a book appeared which certainly answered the purpose of rousing the sleepy realms of philosophy and theology.

While mainly occupied in those years with philosophical studies, Mill did not remit his interest in current politics. He made his voice heard on the contest in America in 1862, taking the side of the North—then very unpopular in London—and using all his strength to explain what has since been universally recognized as the issue really at stake in the struggle, the abolition of slavery. It was characteristic of the closeness with which he watched current events, and of his zeal in the cause of "lucidity," that, when the Reader, an organ of science and unpartisan opinion, fell into difficulties in 1865, Mill joined with some distinguished men of science and letters in an effort to keep it afloat. He supplied part of the money for carrying it on, contributed several articles, and assisted the editor, Mr Fraser Rae, with his advice. The effort was vain, though such men as Herbert Spencer, Huxley, Tyndall, Cairnes, Mark Pattison, F. Harrison, Sir Frederick Pollock, and Lockyer were among the contributors.

In 1865 a new channcl was opened to his influence. He was requested to stand for Westminster, and agreed on conditions strictly in accordance with

his principles of parliamentary election. He would not canvass, nor pay agents to canvass for him, nor would he engage to attend to the local business of the constituency. He was with difficulty persuaded even to address a meeting of the electors. The story of this remarkabie election has been told by Mr James Beal, one of the most active supporters of Mill's candidature. In parliament he adhered to his lifelong principle of doing only work that needed. to be done, and that nobody else seemed equally able or willing to do. It may have been a consciousness of this fact which prompted a remark made by the Speaker that Mill's presence in parliament elevated the tone of debate. The impression made by him in parliament is in some danger of being forgotten, because he was not instrumental in carrying any great measure that might serve as an abiding memorial. But, although in one of his first speeches against the suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act in Ireland he was very unfavourably received, Mill thoroughly succeeded in what is called "' gaining the ear of the House." The only speech made by him during his three years in parliament that was listened to with impaticnce was, curiously enough, his speech in favour of counteracting democracy by providing for the representation of minorities. Ifis attack on the conduct of General Eyre in Jamaica was listened to, but with repugnance by the majority, although his action in this matter in and out of parliament was far from being ineffectual. He took an active part in the debates on Mr Disraeli's Reform Bill, and helped to extort from the Government several useful modifications of the Bill for the Prevention of Corrupt Practices. 'The reform of land tenure in Ireland, the representation of women, the reduction of the national debt, the reform of London government, the abrogation of the declaration of Paris, were among the topics on which he spoke with marked effect. He took occasion more than once to enforce what he had often advocated in writing, England's duty to intervene in Continental politics in support of the cause of freedom. As a speaker Mill was somewhat hesitating, pausing occasionally as if to recover the thread of his argument, but he showed great readiness in extem-poraneous debate. Viewed as a candidate for ministerial office, he might be regarded as a failure in parliament, but there can be no doubt that his career there greatly extended his influence.

Mill's subscription to the election expenses of Mr Bradlaugh, and his attitude towards Governor Eyre, are XVI. — 40

generally regarded as the main causes of his defeat in the general election of 1868. But, as he suggests himself, his studied advocacy of unfamiliar projects of reform had made him unpopular with "moderate Liberals." When he was first elected on a sudden impulse of enthusiasm, extremely little was known about him by the bulk of the electorate; and his writing about checks against democracy had pre- pared many for a more conservative attitude on questions of practical politics. He retired with a sense of relief to his cottage and his literary life at Avignon. His parlia- mentary duties and the quantity of correspondence brought upon him by increased publicity had absorbed nearly the whole of his time. 'The scanty leisure of his first recess had been devoted to writing his St Andrews rectorial address on higher education and to answering attacks on his criticism of Hamilton ; of the second, to annotating, in conjunction with Mr Bain and Mr Findlater, his father's Analysis of the Mind. But now he could look forward to a literary life pure and simple, and his letters show how much he enjoyed the change. His little cottage was filled with books and newspapers; the beautiful country round it furnished him with a variety of walks; he read, wrote, discussed, waiked, botanized. His step-daughter, Miss Taylor, his constant companion after his wife's death, "architect and master-mason all in one," carried out various improvements in their quiet home for the philo- sopher's comfort. " Helen," he wrote to Mr Thornton, 'has carried out her long-cherished scheme (about which she tells me she consulted you) of a ' vibratory' for me, and has made a pleasant covered walk, some 3O feet long, where I can vibrate in cold or rainy weather. The terrace, you must know, as it goes round two sides of the house, has got itself dubbed the 'semi-circumgyratory.' In addition to this Helen has built me a herbarium, a little room fitted up with closets for my plants, shelves for my botanical books, and a great table whereon to manipulate them all. Thus, you see, with my herbarium, my vibratory, and my semi-circumgyratory, I am in clover ; and you may imagine with what scorn I think of the Ifouse of Commons, which, comfortable club as it is said to be, could offer me none of these comforts, or, more perfectly speaking, these necessaries of life." Mill was an enthusiastic botanist all his life long, and a frequent con- tributor of notes and short papers to the Phytologist. One of the things that he looked forward to during his last journey to Avignon was

seeing the spring flowers and completing a flora of the locality. His delight in scenery frequently appears in letters written to his friends during his summer and autumn tours.

No recluse ever had a more soothing retreat than Mill's Avignon cottage, but to the last he did not relax his laborious habits nor his ardent outlook on human affairs. The essays in the fourth volume of his Dissertattons—on endownients, on land, on labour, on metaphysical and psychological questions—were written for the Fortnightly Review at intervals after his short parliamentary career. One of his first tasks was to send his treatise on the Subjection of Women through the press. The essay on Theism was written soon after. The last public work in which he engaged was the starting of the Land Tenure Reform Association. The interception by the state of the unearned increment, and the promotion of co-operative agriculture, were the most striking features in his pro- gramme. He wrote in the Hxaminer and made a public speech in favour of the association a few months before his death. The secret of the ardour with which he took up this question probably was his conviction that a great struggle was impending in Europe between labour and capital. He regarded his project as a timely compromise.

Mill dicd at Avignon on the Sth of May 1873.

MIL—MIL

Within the limits of this article it is impossible to attempt a criticism of Mill's conclusions in so many fields of researcl1; one must be content with trying to indicate the purpose and the spirit of his work. Perhaps we still stand too near to judge without bias; some years hence men will be better able to say whether he made sciolism less reckless or brought mankind appreciably nearer that dominion of the wisest which was the remote goal of his endeavour. It will be long before humanity finds a nobler example of the searcher after the best means of social improvement. He sought after clear ideas with the ardour of a mystic, the patience and laborious industry of a man of science; he encountered opponents with a generosity and a courtesy worthy of any preux chevalier of medieval romance, while he was not inferior to that ideal in the vigour of his blows against injustice. As regards his influence, it has been well said that "no calculus can integrate

the innumerable pulses of knowledge and of thought that he has made to vibrate in the minds of lis generation." He quickened thought upon every problem that he touched. Any estimate of Mill's service to political or philosophical thought at this moment is liable to be injuri- ously affected by the temporary discredit into whicli some of his doc- trines have fallen. He wasnot infallible; he made no claim to dog- matic authority. Butin criticism of detail, according to our present light, we may easily blind ourselves to the greatness of the work that Mill accomplished in the development of opinion. (W. M.)

MILLAU, or Mriwav, capital of an arrondissement in the department of Aveyron, France, is situated on the left bank of the Tarn, half a mile below the point at which that river is joined by the Dourbie, and 48 miles to the south-east of Rodez, on the Rodez and Montpellier line, Itself 1210 feet above the level of the sea, it is overlooked by hills covered with vineyards and fruit trees or by bare and scarped rocks. The streets of Millau are narrow, and soine of the houses of great antiquity, but the town is surrounded by spacious boulevards. On two sides the Place d'Armes is adorned by stone columns supporting galleries of wood ; the only buildings of special interest are the Romanesque church of Notre Dame, and the belfry of the old hétel de ville. 'The principal industry is the manufacture of gloves, but various branches of the leather manufacture are also carried on. 'The chief articles of commerce are wool (both raw and prepared), Roquefort cheese, wine, almonds, and live stock. The population in 1881 was 16,628.

The viscounts of Millau are mentioned as early as the 10th century; in the 16th it became one of thie leading strongholds of the Reformed 'party in the south of France. Its industry suffered severely by the revocation of the edict of Nantes.

MILLENNIUM. In the history of Christianity three main forces are found to have acted as auxiliaries of the gospel. They have elicited the ardent enthusiasm of many whom the bare preaching of the gospel would never have made decided converts. These are (1) a belief in the speedy return of Christ and in His glorious reign on earth; (2) mystical contemplation, which regards heavenly bless- ings as a possible possession in the present

life; and (3) faith in a divine predestination of some to salvation and others to perdition. Each of these forces has at particular times proved too strong for church authority and burst the embankments with which the church had at once narrowed and protected Christian life and thought. They have produced ecclesiastical, social, and political convulsions, where the elemental force of religious conviction has destroyed all organization, whether of church or of state. They have released from its fetters the free spirit of Christianity, though often enough they have associated with it a fanaticism more damaging to the gospel than the temporiz- ing policy of the hierarchy.

First in point of time came the faith in the nearness of Christ's second advent and the establishing of His reign of glory on the earth. Indeed it appears so early that it might be questioned whether it ought not to be regarded as an essential part of the Christian religion. That question, however, will scarcely be answered in the affirma- tive. The ideas of the Sermon on the Mount, or the pregnant thoughts of the Pauline theology, are independent of the expectation that the kingdom of glory will shortly

be established. On the other hand, it must be admitted that this expectation was a prominent feature in the earliest proclamation of the gospel, and materially contributed to its success. If the primitive churches had been under the necessity of framing a "Confession of Faith," it would certainly have embraced those pictures by means of which the near future was distinctly realized. But then these pictures and dreams and hopes were just the things that made systematized doctrine impossible ; it is possible to formulate the mythological ideas, but not the shifting imagery of the imagination.

In the anticipations of the future prevalent amongst the carly Christians (¢. 50-150) it is necessary to distinguish a fixed and a fluctuating element. (1) the notion that a last terrible battle with the enemies of God was impending ; (2) the faith in the speedy return of Christ; (3) the conviction that Christ will judge all men, and (4) will set up a kingdom of glory on earth. To the latter belong views of the Antichrist, of the heathen world-power, of the place, extent, and duration of the earthly kingdom of Christ, &c. These remained in a state of solution; they were modified from day to day, partly

because of the changing circumstances of the present by which forecasts of the future were regulated, partly because the indications—real or supposed —of the ancient prophets always admitted of new combinations and constructions. But even here certain positions were agreed on in large sections of Christendom. Amongst these was the expecta- tion that the future kingdom of Christ on earth should have a fixed duration,—according to the most prevalent opinion, a duration of one thousand years. From this fact the whole ancient Christian eschatology was known in later times as "chiliasm,"—a name which is not strictly accurate, since the doctrine of the millennium was only one feature in its scheme of the future.

1. This idea that the Messianic kingdom of the future on earth should have a definite duration has—like the whole eschatology of the primitive church—its roots in the Jewish apocalyptic literature, where it appears at a com- paratively late period. At first it was assumed that the Messianic kingdom in Palestine would last for ever (so tho prophets ; ¢f. Jerem, xxiv. 6; Ezek. xxxvil. 25; Joel iv. 20; Daniel vi. 27; Sibyll. iii. 49 sq., 766; Psalt. Salom. xvii. 4; Enoch Ixii. 14), and this seems always to have been the most widely accepted view (John xii. 34). But from a comparison of prophetic passages of the Old Testa- ment, learned apocalyptic writers came to the conclusion that a distinction must be drawn between the earthly appearance of the Messiah and the appearance of God Himself amongst His people and in the Gentile world for the final judgment. Asa necessary consequence, a limited period had to be assigned to the Messianic kingdom. It is not altogether improbable that the mysterious references to tho sufferings of the Messiah had also an influence on some minds. This, however, is doubtful. It is certain at all events that the whole conception marks the beginning of the dissolution of realistic and sensuous views of the future. The age was too advanced to regard the earthly Messianic kingdom as the end. There was an effort to find a place among the hopes of the. future for those more spiritual and universal anticipations, according to which eternal and heavenly blessedness will be the portion of the faithful, this earth and heaven will pass away, and God will be all in all. As to the period to be assigned to this earthly kingdom, no agreement was ever reached in Judaism, any more than in the detailed descriptions of its joys and pleasures. According to the Apocalypse of Baruch (xl. 3) this kingdom will last_"donec finiatur mundus

corruptionis." In the Book of Enoch (xci. 12) "a week" is specified, in the Apocalypse of Ezra (vii. 28 sq.) four

hundred years. hundred years of Egyptian bondage, occurs also in the

the Talmud has no fixed doctrine on the point. view most frequently expressed there (see Von Otto in Hilgenfeld's Zeitschrift, 1877, p. 527 sq.) is that the

two thousand) years. world, on the seventh He rested. But a day of God is equal to a thousand years (Ps. xc. 4). Hence the world will last for six thousand years of toil and labour; then will come one thousand years of Sabbath rest for the people of God in the kingdom of the Messiah."

The former includes | have already been very common in the first century beforo

315

This figure, corresponding to the four Talmud (Sanhedrin 99a). But this is the only passage ; The

Messianic kingdom will last for one thousand (some said "In six days God created the

This idea must

Christ. The combination of Gen. i., Dan. ix., and Ps. xc. 4 was peculiarly fascinating.

2. Jesus Himself speaks of only one return of the Son of Man—His return to judgment. In speaking of it, and of the glorious kingdom He is to introduce, He makes uso of apocalyptic images (Matt. viii. 11, xxvi. 29; Luke xxii. 16; Matt. xix. 28); but nowhere in the discourses of Jesus is there a hint of a limited duration of the Messianic kingdom. The apostolic epistles are equally free from any trace of chiliasm (neither 1 Cor. xv. 23 sq. nor 1 Thess. iv. 16 sq. points in this direction). In the Apocalypse of John, however, it occurs in the following shape (chap. xx.). After Christ has

appeared from heaven in the guise of a warrior, and vanquished the antichristian world-power, the wisdom of the world, and the devil, those who havo remained steadfast in the time of the last catastrophe, and

have given up their lives for their faith, shall be raised up,

and shall reign with Christ on this earth as a royal priest- hood for one thousand years. At the end of this time Satan is to be let loose again for a short season ; he will prepare a new onslaught, but God will miraculously destroy him and his hosts. Then will follow the general resurrection of the dead, the last judgment, and the creation of new heavens and a new earth. That all believers will have a share in the first resurrection and in the Messianic kingdom is an idea of which John knows nothing. Tho earthly kingdom of Christ is reserved for those who have endured the most terrible tribulation, who have withstood the supreme effort of the world-power,—that is, for those who are actually members of the church of the last days. The Jewish expectation is thus considerably curtailed in the hands of John, as it is also shorn of its sensual attractions. 'Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection ; on such the second death hath no power ; but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years." More than this John does not say. But other ancient Christian authors wero not so cautious. Accepting the Jewish apocalypses as sacred books of venerable antiquity, they read them eagerly, and transferred their contents bodily to Christianity. Nay more, the Gentile Christians took possession of them, and just in proportion as they were neglected by tho Jews—who, after the war of Bar-Cochba, became indifferent to the Messianic hope and hardened themselves once more in devotion to the law—they were naturalized in the Christian communities. The result was that these books became "Christian " documents ; it is entirely to Christian, not to Jewish, tradition that we owe their preservation. The Jewish expectations are adopted, for example, by Papias, by the writer of the epistle of Barnabas, and by Justin. Papias actually confounds expressions of Jesus with verses from the Apocalypse of Baruch, referring to the amazing fertility of the days of the Messianic kingdom (Papias in Iren. v. 33). Barnabas (Ep., 15) gives us the Jewish theory (from Gen. i. and Ps. xc. 4) that the present condition of the world is to last six thousand years

from the ereation, that at the beginning of the Sabbath | (the seventh millennium) the Son of God appears, to put an end to the time of "the unjust one," to judge the ungodly and renew the earth. But he does not indulge, like Papias, in sensuous deseriptions of this seventh millennium; to Barnabas it is a time of rest, of sinlessness, and of a holy peace. It is not the end, however; it is followed by an eighth day of eternal duration,—"the beginning of another world." So that in the view of Barnabas the Messianic reign still belongs to ofros 6 aidv. Justin (Dial. 80) speaks of ehiliasm as a necessary part of complete orthodoxy, although he knows Christians who do not aecept it. He believes, with the Jews, in a restoration and extension of the city of Jerusalem; he assumes that this city will be the seat of the Messianie kingdom, and he takes it as a matter of eourse that there all believers (here he is at one with Barnabas) along with patriarchs and prophets will enjoy perfeet felicity for one thousand | years. In fact he reads this view into the Apocalypse of | John, which he understands to mean that before the general resurrection all believers are to rule for a time with Christ on earth. That a philosopher like Justin, with a bias towards an Hellenic eonstruetionof the Christian religion, should nevertheless have aeeepted its chiliastic elements is the strongest proof that these enthusiastic expectations were inseparably bound up with the Christian faith down to the middle of the 2d eentury. And another proof is found in the fact that even a speeulative Jewish Christian like Cerinthus not only did not renounee the chiliastic hope, but pictured the future kingdom of Christ as a kingdom of sensual pleasures, of eating and drinking and marriage festivities (Euseb., H. Z., ii. 28, vii. 25).

3. After the middle of the 2d eentury these ex- pectations were gradually thrust into the baekground. They would never have died out, however, had not cireumstanees altered, and a new mental attitude been taken up. The spirit of philosophical and theological – speculation and of ethical reflexion, whieh began to spread through the ehurches, did not know what to make of the old hopes of the future. To a new generation they seemed paltry, earthly, and fantastie, and far-seeing men had good reason to regard them as a source of political danger. But more than this, these wild dreams about the glorious king- dom of Christ began to disturb the organization

which the churehes had seen fit to introduce. In the interests of self-preservation against the world, the state, and the heretics, the Christian eommunities had formed themselves into compact societies with a definite ereed and eonstitu- tion, and they felt that their existence was threatened by the white heat of religious subjectivity. So early as the year 170, a church party in Asia Minor—the so-called Alogi—rejeeted the whole body of apocalyptic writings

| homologoumena of the eanon.

and denouneed the Apocalypse of John as a book of fables. All the more powerful was the reaetion. In the so-called Montanistie controversy (c. 160-220) one of the prineipal issues involved was the eontinuance of the chiliastie expeetations in the ehurches. The Montanists of Asia Minor defended them in their integrity, with one slight modifieation: they announeed that Pepuza, the eity of Montanus, would be the site of the New Jerusalem and the millennial kingdom. Modifications of this kind, which have often appeared in later times in connexion with the revival of millennarianism, area striking evidence of the tendency of every sect to regard its own little membership as the centre of the world and its fortunes as the kernel of universal history. After the Montanistic controversy, ehiliastic views were more and more diseredited in the Greek Church; they were, in fact, stigmatized as "Jewish" and consequently "heretical."

It was the Alexandrian theology that superseded them ; |

NNIUM

that is to say, Neo-Platonie mysticism triumphed over the early Christian hope of the future, first among the "cultured," and then, when the theology of the "cultured" had taken the faith of the "uneultured" under its protec-tion, amongst the latter also. About the year 260 an Egyptian bishop, Nepos, in a treatise ealled ¢Aeyxos é\AnyopiorSv, endeavoured to overthrow the Origenistie theology and vindieate chiliasm by exegetical methods. Several congregations took his part; but ultimately Dionysius, bishop of Alexandria, sueceeded in healing the schism and asserting the allegorieal interpretation of

the prophets as the only legitimate exegesis. During this —

eontroversy Dionysius beeame eonvineed that the vietory of mystieal theology over "Jewish" ehiliasm would never be seeure so long as the Apoealypse of John passed for an apostolie writing and kept its place among the He aeeordingly raised the question of the apostolie origin of the Apocalypse; and by reviving old difficulties, with ingenious arguments of his own, he earried his point. At the time of Eusebius the Greek Church was saturated with prejudiee against the book and with doubts as to its canonicity. In the eourse of the 4th eentury it was removed from the Greek eanon, and thus the troublesome foundation on whieh ehiliasm might have eontinued to build was got rid of. The attempts of Methodius of Tyre at the beginning of the 4th eentury and Apollinarius of Laodicea about 360 to defend chiliasm and assail the theology of Origen -had no result. For many centuries the Greek Church kept the Johannine Apoealypse out of its canon, and eonsequently ehiliasm remained in its grave. It was considered a sufficient safeguard against the spiritualizing eschatology of Origen and his school to have rescued the main doctrines of the creed and the regula jidei (the visible advent of Christ; eternal misery and hell-fire for the wieked). Anything beyond this was held to be Jewish. It was only the chronologists and historians of the ehureh who, following Julius Afrieanus, made use of apocalyptic numbers in their caleulations, while court theologians like Eusebius entertained the imperial table with discussions as to whether the dining-hall of the emperor—the seeond David and Solomon, the beloved of God—might not be the New Jerusalem of John's Apocalypse. Eusebius was not the first who dabbled in sueh speculations. Dionysius of Alexandria had already referred a Messianie prediction of the Old Testament to the emperor Gallienus. But mysticism and politieal servility between them gave the death-blow to ehiliasm in the Greek Chureh. It never again obtained a footing there; for, although, late in the Middle Ages, the Book of Revelation —by what means we cannot tell—did reeover its authority, the ehureh was by that time so hopelessly trammelled by a magical eultus as to be ineapable of fresh developments. In the Semitic churehes of the East (the Syrian, Arabian, and Aithiopian), and in that of Armenia, the apoealyptie literature was preserved mueh longer than in the Greek Church. They were very conservative of ancient traditions in general, and henee ehiliasm survived amongst them to a later date than in Alexandria or

Constantinople. It is to these ehurehes that we are mainly indebted for the extensive remains of the old apoealyptie literature whieh we now possess. From remote cloisters of the East Europe has reeovered within the last forty years many works of this kind whieh onee enjoyed the highest repute throughout Christendom.

4, But the Western Chureh was also more conservative than the Greek. Her theologians had, to begin with, little turn for mystical speeulation ; their tendency was rather to reduee the gospel to a system of morals. Now for the moralists ehiliasm had a special signifieance as the one distinguishing feature of the gospel, and the only thing

es .

MILLENNIUM

that gave a specifically Christian character to their system. This, however, holds good of the Western theologians only after the middle of the 3d century. The earlier fathers, Treneus, Hippolytus, Tertullian, believed in chiliasm simply because it was a part of the tradition of the church and because Marcion and the Gnostics would have nothing to dowithit. Irenzeus (v. 28, 29) has the same conception of the millennial kingdom as Barnabas and Papias, and appeals in support of it to the testimony of disciples of the apostles. Hippolytus, although an opponent of Montanism, was nevertheless a thorough-going millennarian (see his book De Antichristo). Tertullian (cf. especially Adv. Marcion., 3) aimed at a more spiritual conception of the millennial blessings than Papias had, but he still adhered, especially in his Montanistic period, to all the ancient anticipations. It is the same all through the 3d and 4th centuries with those Latin theologians who escaped the influence of Greek speculation. Commodian, Victorinus Pettavensis, Lactantius, and Sulpicius Severus were all pronounced millennarians, holding by the very details of the primitive Christian expectations. They still believe, as John did, in the return of Nero as the Antichrist ; they still expect that after the first resurrection Christ will reign with His saints "in the flesh" fora thousand years. Once, but only once (in the Gospel of Nicodemus), the time is reduced to five hundred years. Victorinus wrote a commentary on the Apocalypse of John; and all these theologians, especially Lactantius, were diligent students of the ancient Sibylline oracles

of Jewish and Christian origin, and treated them as divine revelations. As to the canonicity and apostolic authorship of the Johannine Apocalypse no doubts were ever entertained in the West ; indeed an Apocalypse of Peter was still retained in the canon in the 3d century. That of Ezra, in its Latin translation, must have been all but a canonical book,— the numbers of extant manuscripts of the so-called 4 Ezra being incredibly great, while several of them are found in copies of the Latin Bible at the beginning of the 16th century. The Apocalypse of Hermas was much read till far through the Middle Ages, and has also kept its place in some Bibles. The apocalyptic '"'Testamenta duodecim Patriarcharuni" was a favourite reading-book ; and Latin versions of ancient apocalypses are being continually brought to light from Western libraries (¢.g., the Assumptio Mosis, the Ascensio Jesaje, &c.). All these facts show how vigorously the early hopes of the future maintained themselves in the West. In the hands of moralistic theo- logians, like Lactantius, they certainly assume a somewhat grotesque form, but the fact that these men clung to them is the clcarest evidence that in the West millennarianism was still a point of "orthodoxy" in the 4th century.

This state of matters, however, gradually disappeared after the end of the 4th century. The change was brought about by two causes,—first, Greek theology, which reached the West chiefly through Jerome, Rufinus, and Ambrose, and, second, the new idea of the church wrought out by Augustine on the basis of the altered political situation of the church. Jerome, the pupil of the Greeks, fecls him- self already emancipated from "opiniones Judaice"; he ridicules the old anticipations ; and, though he does not venture to reject them, he and the other disciples of the Greeks did a great deal to rob them of their vitality. At the same time the influence of Greek theology was by no means so great in the West that this of itself could have suppressed chiliastic views. It was reserved for Augustine to give a direction to Western theology which carried it clear of millennarianism. He himself had at one timc belicved in it; he too had looked forward to the holy Sabbath which was to be celebrated by Christ and His people on carth. But the signs of the times pointed to a

O17 different prospect. Without any miraculous interposition of God, not only was Christianity victorious on earth, but the church had attained a position of supremacy. The old Roman empire was tottering to its fall; the

church stood fast, ready to step into its inheritance. It was not simply that the world-power, the enemy of Christ, had been vanquished; the fact was that it had gradually abdicated its political functions in favour of the church. Under these circuinstances Augustine was lcd, in his con- troversy with the Donatists and as an apologist, to idealize the political side of the catholic church,—to grasp and elaborate the idea that the church is the kingdom of Christ and the city of God. Others before him may have taken the same view, and he on the other hand never forgot that true blessedness belongs to the future ; but still he was the first who ventured to teach that the catholic church, in its empirical form, was the kingdom of Christ, that the millennial kingdom had commenced with the appcaring of Christ, and was therefore an accomplished fact. By this doctrine of Augustine's, the old millennarianism, though not completely extirpated, was at least banished from the realm of dogmatic. For the official theology of the church it very soon became a thing of the past; certain clements of it were even branded as heretical. It still lived on, how- ever, in the lower strata of Christian society; and in certain undercurrents of tradition it was transmitted from century to century. At various periods in the history of the Middle Ages we encountcr sudden outbreaks of millennarianism, sometimes as the tenet of a small sect, sometimes as a far-reaching movement. And, since it had been suppressed, not, as in the East, by mystical specula- tion, its mighticst antagonist, but by the political church of the hierarchy, we find that wherever chiliasm appears in the Middle Ages it makes common cause with all enemies of the secularized church. It strengthened the hands of church democracy ; it formed an alliance with the pure souls who held up to the church the ideal of apostolic poverty; it united itself for a time even with mysticism in a common opposition to the supremacy of the church ; nay, it lent the strength of its convictions to the support of states and princes in their efforts to break the political power of the church. It is sufficient to recall the well-known names of Joachim of Floris, of all the numerous Franciscan spiritualists, of the leading sectaries from the 13th to the 15th century who assailed the papacy and the sccularism of the church,—above all, the name of Occam. In these men the millennarianism of the ancient church came to life again; and in the revolutionary move- ments of the 15th and 16th centuries—especially in the Anabaptist movements—it appears with all its old uncom- promisirg energy. If the church, and not the state, was regarded as Babylon, and the pope declared to be the Antichrist, these

,were legitimate inferences from the ancient traditions and the actual position of the church. But, of course, the new chiliasm was not in every respect identical with the old. It could not hold its ground without admitting certain innovations. The "everlasting gospel" of Joachim of Floris was a different thing from the announcement of Christ's glorious return in the clouds of heaven; the "age of the spirit" which mystics and spiritualists expected contained traits which must be characterized as "modern"; and the "kingdom" of the Anabaptists in Miinster was a Satanic caricature of that kingdom in which the Christians of the 2d century looked for a peaceful Sabbath rest. Only we must not form our ideas of the great apocalyptic and chiliastic movement of the first decades of the 16th century from the rabble m Miinster. There were pure evangelical forces at work in it; and many Anabaptists need not shun comparison with the Christians of the apostolic and post-apostolic ages.

318

The German and Swiss Reformers also believed that the end of the world was near, but they had different aims in view from those of the Anabaptists. It was not from poverty and apocalypticism that they hoped for a reformation of the church. In contrast to the fanatics, after a brief hesitation they threw millennarianism overboard, and along with it all other "opiniones J udaice." They took up the same ground in this respect which the Roman Catholic Church had occupied since the time of Augustine. How millennarianism nevertheless found its way, with the help of apocalyptic mysticism and Anabaptist influences, into the churches of the Reformation, chiefly among the Reformed sccts, but afterwards also in the Lutheran Church, how it became incorporated with Pietism, how in recent times an exceedingly mild type of "academic" chiliasm has been developed from a belief in the verbal inspiration of the Bible, how finally new sects are still springing up here and there with apocalyptic and chiliastic expectations,—these are matters which cannot be fully entered upon here. But one remark ought to be made in conclusion. A genuine and living revival of chiliastic hopes is always a sign that the church at large has become secularized to such a degree that tender consciences can no longer feel sure of their faith within her. In this sense all chiliastic phenomena in the history of the church demand respectful attention. But when attempts are made to find room for

millennarianism in a dogmatic system, it must always assume a form in which it would be utterly unrecognizable to the millennarians of the ancient church, who, just because they were millennarians, despised dogmatic, in the sense of philo-

sophical theology. The claims of chiliasm are sufficiently,

met by the acknowledgment that in former times it was associated—to all appearance inseparably associated— with the gospel itself. Those who try to remodel it, so as to conserve its "elements of truth," put contempt on it while they destroy it; for it was in its day the most uncompromising enemy of all remodelling, and it can only exist along with the unsophisticated faith of the early Christians.

Cf. Schiirer, Lehrbuch der Neutestamentlichen Zeitgeschichte, 1874, §§ 28, 29; Corrodi, Kritische Geschichte des Chiliasmus, 1781. A thorough history of chiliasm has not yet appeared. (A. HA.)

MILLER, Hue (1802-1856), eminent in science and literature, and one of the most remarkable among self- taught men of genius, was born at Cromarty, on the north- east coast of Scotland, on the 10th of October 1802. His father, a sagacious and strong-willed seaman, who earned a livelihood by sailing his own sloop, perished at sea when Hugh was five years old. His mother looked much, in the upbringing of her son, to her two brothers, James and Alexander Wright, the one a saddler, the other a carpenter. Scrupulous integrity, sincere religion, unflagging industry, and resolute contentment were the lessons which these men, not so much by precept as by example, impressed upon the boy. But young Miller had inherited from his father a strong individuality and obstinate force of will, and began ata very early age to take a line of his own. The enchantment of open air and freedom—the irresistible charm of mother nature on the hill and by the sea—made him at thirteen an incorrigible truant; and his schoolmaster thought it likely that he would prove adunce. Neverthe- less the truant schoolboy was alrcady giving indications of the destination of the man. At an age too early to date he had found in his pen a divining rod that led him to waters of inexhaustible delight. His mother summed up, in the singular dialect of the district, the impression derived from her son's boyhood and youth in the words, "he was aye vritin." But the writing from

the first, and increasingly as time went on, could be discriminated from the ordinary

productions of boyhood. A continuity of idea, an inde- finable grace and freshness, marked his performances. They were never bombastic or verbose. At no period of his life did he suffer from a flux of words. But, boy and man, he had a felicitous knack of fitting words into their right places and avoiding jerkiness and inequality. In verse he lacked the passionate intensity required for true rhythmic movement, but he had a fine sense of cadence and modulation in prose.

Tt is a curious fact that what determined Hugh Miller to apprentice himself to a stone-mason was his delight in literary composition. Unemployed during the winter frosts, the mason, he perceived, could enjoy for some months every year the ecstacy of writing. One result of his decision was that he never learned any language but English. Another was that fifteen years of the quarry and the hewing-shed, with stern experiences of over-work and privation, sowed in his frame the seeds of incurable disease. Meanwhile the advantages of his decision were indisputable. Under the discipline of labour the refractory schoolboy became a thoughtful, sober-minded man. Miller always looked back to his years of hand-labour with a satisfaction that has something in it of solemnity and pathos. " Noble, upright, self-relying toil," he exclaims ; "who that knows thy solid worth and value would be ashamed of thy hard hands, and thy soiled vestments, and thy obscure tasks,— thy humble cottage, and hard couch, and homely fare!"

Tt cannot be added that his fifteen years of close and constant intercourse with fellow-workmen inspired him with much respect for their class. He was most unfortunate in his comrades during the two seasons, 1824 and 1825, when he worked at Niddrie in the neighbourhood of Edinburgh. Swinish in their enjoyments, meanly selfish in their class ambitions, and fatuously subject to talking charlatans, that Niddrie squad of reprobates which he de-scribes in My Schools and Schoolmasters stamped on the mind of Hugh Miller an indelible conviction of the inca- pacity and degradation of the hand-workers.

Returning to Cromarty, he worked in happy patience as a stone-cutter year after year, sedulously prosecuting at the same time the grand object of his ambition, to write good English. He found time to invigorate and enrich his mind by careful reading, and was habitually and keenly observant both of man and of nature. His reading was not extensive but well chosen, and embraced Locke and Hume; Goldsmith and Addison were, more than any others, his masters in style. It was to get time to write that he had become a stone-mason ; another of the surprises of his career is that it was in advertising himself as a mason that he came before the world as a literary man. A stone- mason, figuring as a poetical contributor to the Lnverness Courier, might, he thought, be asked by some of the readers to engrave inscriptions on tombs. He therefore forwarded some of his verses to the editor. These seem to have been consigned to the waste-paper basket, which had been the fate of an '"'Ode on Greece" offered to the Scotsman when he was at Edinburgh. Piqued by his second failure, he now resolved, at all hazards, to see him- self in print. In 1829 appeared the small volume contain- ing Poems Written in the Leisure Hours of a Journeyman Mason. It procured its author the valuable friendship of Mr Robert Carruthers, and was favourably noticed by the press. Miller looked at his poems in print, and concluded, at once and irreversibly, that he would not succeed as a poet. It was a characteristic and very manly decision, proving that there was no fretting vanity in his disposition. Doubtless also it was right. His field was prose. But, though his poems yielded nothing in the way of fortune, they were a beginning of fame. The simple natives of Cromarty began to think him a wonder. Some very elo-

quent letters on the herring fishery extended his reputation. Good judges in Edinburgh detected in his work the mint- mark of genius, and Miller's first prose volume, Scenes and Legends of Cromarty, was published there in 1835, In the interval he had become the accepted lover of Miss Lydia Fraser, a young lady of great personal attractions, rare in- tellectual gifts, and glowing sympathy with all that was good and brave and bright. Her affection naturally steadied him in his resolution to emerge from the hand-working class; the mallet and chisel gradually dropped from his grasp; and when his prose venture appeared he was being initiated, in Linlithgow, into

the duties of a bank clerk. On his return to Cromarty he found employ- ment in the local branch of the Commercial Bank.

He was a married man, and his tent seemed stably fixed at Cromarty, when tlie agitation that preceded the Disrup- tion of 1843 made the air of Scotland vibrate. Miller loved his church, and deliberately esteemed her the most valuable institution possessed by the Scottish people. Fervently as he had sympathized with those who procured political representation for Scotland by the Reform Bill, he still more fervently took part with those who claimed that Scottish congregations should have no pastors thrust upon them. In the summer of 1839 he wrote his famous pamphlet-letter to Lord Brougham; Dr Candlish read it with "nothing short of rapture"; and the first days of 1840 saw Miller installed in the editorial chair of the IVztness newspaper, published twice a week m Edinburgh to advo- cate the cause of non-intrusion and spiritual independence. He continued to edit the Wétness till his death, which took place in the night between the 23d and 24th of December 1856. Unremitting brain work had overtaxed a system permanently injured by the hardships of his early mason life; reason at length gave way, and Miller died by a pistol shot fired by his own hand. A post-mortem examination, attested by four medical men of the highest character, evinced the presence of "diseased appearances" in the brain; and he left a few words indicating the form taken by the insane delusion which had mastered him.

During the three years preceding the Disruption, cham- pionship of the church by Miller did more, probably, than any other single agency to win for it the suffrage of the Scottish people. Months before the day of separation, the name 'Free Church" was prospectively assigned to the party proposing to sever connexion with the state ; and, whether Hugh Miller suggested the name or did not, le was one of the chief architects of the institution. Nor has the sequel shown that his labour was vain.

But long ere now an enthusiasm parallel in intensity with that which he felt for his country and his church, and to which even his old literary enthusiasm had become subservient, had taken possession of him. From infancy he had been a keenly interested observer of all natural facts and objects, and during his career as apprentice and journeyman mason he had

accumulated a vast store of the particular information belonging to the geologist. But it was not until later that he expressly undertook the study of geology. We still find him, when twenty-seven, laying down charts of study and production without a word about science. When, however, he had convinced himself that his road to the stars was not by poetry, and when the limited success of his prose tales and literary essays in the volume on Cromarty suggested a profound misgiving as to the adequacy of his purely literary materials to produce an important result, he bethought him of his hoard of scientific knowledge, and addressed himself with the con- centrated energy of mature manhood to geological reading and geological researches. These, in fact, were not new to him, and he was much impressed by the interest excited among scientific readers by a geological chapter in the

Scenes and Legends. His chief master was Lyell, whom he reverenced henceforward as one of the greatest of living men. 'The principal scene of his own investigations was the Cromarty district, where he ransacked every wrinkle of the hill-side, and traced every stratum sawn through by the watercourse, and where, on the beach at ebb, in indurated clay of bluish tint and great tenacity, belonging to the Old Red Sandstone formation, he discovered and dug out nodules which, when laid open by a skilful blow of the hammer, displayed certain organisms that had never been seen by a human eye. He had entered upon correspondence with Murchison and Agassiz; and "'fellows of the Geological Society and professors of colleges" had been brought by his descriptions "to explore the rocks of Cromarty." Along with the patriotic and religious enthusiasm, therefore, that burned within him when he went to champion his church in Edinburgh, there glowed, in the depths of his heart, not indeed a stronger but a more gentle and perhaps a dearer enthusiasm for that science in which, he felt per- suaded, he had something of his own to say, something to which the world of culture would be glad to listen. So early as September 1840 there began to appear in the Witness a series of articles entitled "'The Old Red Sand- stone." They attracted immediate and eager attention ; and the month was not at an end when, at the meeting of the British Association, Murchison brought them under the notice of the geological section,

presided over by Lyell. Agassiz, already familiar from Millcr's correspondence with the organisms described, contributed information respecting them, and proposed that one of the most remarkable of the fossils should be called Pterichthys Millert. Buckland joined warmly in the encomiums of Murchison and Agassiz, vowing that "he would give his left hand to possess such powers of description as this man." The articles which met with so enthusiastic a reception from the most eminent geologists in Europe formed the nucleus of a book soon after published, and entitled Zhe Old Red Sandstone. It established Miller's reputation not only as an original geologist but as a practical thinker of great sagacity, and as a lucid and fascinating writer. He had at last fairly found his hand ; it is impossible to turn from the Scenes and Legends to the new volume without feeling that the spirit of the author has become more exultant, his touch at once stronger and more free.

During his seventeen years of residence in Edinburgh he published a variety of books, all of them more or less geological, but claiming attention not on account of their geology aloue. His First Impres- sions of England and its People, the fruit of eight weeks' wandering arranged in the leisure hours of a hard-worked editor, will be best appreciated when we contrast its grace and gentleness, the classic moderation of its tonc, the quict vivacity and freshness of its observation, the sense and sentiment and justice of its criticism, with the smartness of the ordinary newspaper correspondent, or the vulgarity and the impudent omniscience of the conventional book of travels. Apart from its masterly descriptions, partly geological partly scenic, and that prose poem on the ubiquity of the occan which, though brief, will compare not unfavourably with seleet pages from Wilson or from Ruskin, its two passages on Westminster Abbey and Stratford-on-Avon would alone suffice to prove that the Cromarty stone-mason was a man of extraordinary genius. Of his autobiographical volume, My Schools and Schoolmasters, no opinion but one has ever been expressed. It ranks among the finest masterpieces of its kind in the English language. __

As a geologist his reputation is securely based upon his aetual discovery of important fossil organisms, one of which bears his name, and on his contributions, thoroughly servieeable at the time they were made, to our knowledge of the formation in which those organisms occur. His cye-to-eye

acquaintance with nature is attested on every page; and, if his enthusiasm does not often rise into spray and surge of rapture, it is a deep ground-swell per- ceptible in all he wrote. His powers of observation were singularly strong and aecurate, and were aeeompanied with the most eareful reflexion and a fine rich glow of imaginative vision. His diseern- ment of the true position of the ventral plate of Plerichthys, when

020

the best ichthyologists unanimously insisted on its being dorsal, affords one of the nicest illustrations to be found of an obser- vational faeulty which reasons as wells as secs.

He was also, in his principal geological books, Whe Footsteps of the Creator and The Testimony of the Rocks, « polemical defender of theism and of revelation against some whom he regarded as_ their deadly assailants. It would have been safe and pleasant for Miller to waive all consideration of the religions question. He would thus have eseaped the dreaded sucer of the scientific expert. He would have escaped, also, the eold suspicion of many on his own side ; for the great mass of inedioere religionists like nothing so well as the simple ignoring of dilliculties and hushing up of objections. But he shrank instinctively from the moral cowardiee of reserve. The advance of seience has tended to compromise some of his controversial positions. When he occupied the chair of the Royal Pliysical Society of Edinburgh in 1852, he conld look the most eminent repre- sentatives of coutemporary geology in the face, and claim their assent to the possibility of drawing definite lines of demarcation between the Tertiary, Secondary, and Paleozoic strata. He could speak of 'the entire type of organic being" as altering between these periods. 'All on the one side of the gap," he could dare to affirm, 'belongs to one fashion, and all on the other to another and wholly different fashion." In the thirty intervening years every form of the cataclysmal scheme of geological progression has been discredited. It has become impossible to obtain anything like a consensus of opinion among scientific men as to the placing of those frontier lines between period and period which, however wide may be the margins of gradation assigned to "morning" and 'cvening," are indispensable to the maintenance of Miller's theory of the six-days' vision

of creation. “ Geographical provinces and zones,” says Professor Huxley, “may have been as distinctly marked in the Paleozoic epoch as at present, and those seemingly sudden appearances of new genera and speeies which we ascribe to new creation may be simple results of migration.” Such is now the received opinion of geologists, and we may be sure that Miller, who never shut his eyes to an established fact, would have accepted it. He has said in so many words that the Bible does not teach science.

In the long and memorable debate on the origin of species he strenuously engaged, maintaining, against the author of the Vestiges, the doctrine of specific creation. But when he did so he could feel that Buekland, Sedgwick, Murchison, and Lyell were on his side; nor is it a paradox to allege that he was an ally of Darwin himself. Ifthe author of the Vestiges was right, Darwin was wrong. In point of faet, the former was very nearly right ; but, precisely because Darwin supplies what is lacking in his argument, those who intelligently assent to the Origin of Speeies are bound not to assent to the Vestiges.

But it is ehicfly perhaps in eonnexion with the sweetness and classical animation of his style, and the lovely views he gives of nature’s facts, that we ought to praise Hugh Miller. In an age prodigal of genius, yet abounding also in extravagance, glarc, and bombast, the self-educated stone-mason wrote with the calmness and moderation of Addison. His powerful imagination was dis- ciplined to draw just those lines, and to lay on just those colours, whieh should reanimate the past. As his friend Carruthers, an admirable critic of style, observed, “the fossil remains seem, in his glowing pages, to live and flourish, to fly, swim, or gambol, or to shoot up in vegetative profusion and splendour, as in the primal dawn of ereation. Sueh power belongs to high genius.” Tens of thousands he has incited to the study of nature; tens of thousands he has taught to find in geology no mere catalogue of defunct organisms, no dreary sermon in fossi) stones, but a ‘science of landscape’ as well as an intelligent understanding of the rocky framework of the world.

In 1871 appeared The Life and Letters of Hugh Miller, by Peter Bayne (2vols., London). Miller’s works have cireulated on the European continent, and have been widely read in Ameriea. They have been issued in the United

States in an edition of twenty volumes, comprising the Life and Letters. (P. B.)

MILLER, Witi1am (1781-1849), the founder of an American religious sect holding peculiar millennarian views, was born at Pittsfield, Massachusetts,in 1781. He received a very imperfect education. In the war of 1812 he served as captain of volunteers on the Canadian frontier. While residing at Low Hampton, N.Y., he began in 1833 publicly to lecture on the subject of the millennium, asserting that the second coming of Christ would take place in about ten years. His doctrines awakened wide intercst among certain classes of the community. In 1840a semi-monthly journal, Zhe Signs of the Times, was started by one of his followers, and two years later the Advent Herald made its appearance. About 1843 the second coming of Christ was

Miller; and, although the disappointment of their hopes somewhat diminished their numbers, many continued their adherence to his tenets regarding the nature of the millen- nium. At present the number of Millerites or Adventists is estimated at from 15,000 to 20,000. Miller died at New Hampton, Washington county, N.Y., December 20, 1849.

MILLER, Witi1am (1796-1882), one of the greatest of modern line-engravers, was born in Edinburgh on the 28th of May 1796. After studying in London under George Cook, a pupil of Basire's, he returned to his native city, where he continued to practise his art during a long lifetime. He executed plates after Thomson of Duddingston, Macculloch, D. O. Hill, Sir George Harvey, and other Scottish landscapists, but his most admirable and most voluminous works were his transcripts from Turner. The first of these was the Clovelly (1824), of The Southern Coast, a publication undertaken by his master and his brother William B. Cook, to which Miller also con- tributed the Combe Martin and the Portsmouth. He was engaged on the illustrations of England and Wales, 1827-38 ; of The Rivers of France, 1833-35; of Roger's Poems, 1834; and very largely on those of Zhe Prose and Poetical Works of Sir Walter Scott, 1834. In The Pro- vincial Antiquities and Picturesque Scenery of Scotland, 1826, he executed a few excellent plates after Thomson and Turner. Among his larger engravings of

Turner's works may be mentioned The Grand Canal, Venice; The Rhine, Osterprey, and Feltzen ; The Bell Rock; The Tower of London; and The Shepherd. The art of William Miller was warmly appreciated by Turner himself, and Mr Ruskin has pronounced him to be on the whole the most successful translator into line of the paintings of the greatest English landscapist. His renderings of complex Turnerian sky- effects are especially delicate and masterly. Towards the end of his life Miller abandoned engraving and occupied his leisure in the production of water-colours, many of which were exhibited in the Royal Scottish Academy, of which he was an honorary member. He resumed his burin, however, to produce two final series of vignettes from drawings by Birket Foster illustrative of Hood's Poems, published by Moxon in 1871. Miller was a much respected member of the Society of Friends. He died while on a visit to Sheffield, on the 20th of January

1882.

MILLER'S THUMB (Cottus gobio), a well-known little fish, abundant in all rivers and lakes of northern and central Europe with clear water and gravelly bottom. The genus Cottus, to which the Miller's Thumb belongs, is easily recognized by its broad, flat head, rounded and scaleless body, large pectoral and narrow ventral fins, with two dorsal fins, the anterior shorter than the posterior ; the preoperculum is armed with a simple or branched spine. The species of the genus Cottus are rather numerous, and are confined to the north temperate zone of the globe, the majority being marine, and known by the name of "Bull- heads." The Miller's Thumb is confined to fresh water ; and only one other freshwater species is found in Europe, C. pecilopus, from rivers of Hungary, Galicia, and the Pyrenees ; some others occur in the fresh waters of northern Asia and North America. The Miller's Thumb is common in all suitable localities in Great Britain, but is extremely rare in Ireland; in the Alps it reaches to an altitude exceeding 7000 feet. Its usual length is from 3 to 5 inches. Generally hidden under a stone or in a hollow of the bank, it watches for its prey, which consists of small aquatic animals, and darts when disturbed with extra-ordinary rapidity to some other place of refuge. The female deposits her ova in a cavity under a stone, whilst the male watches and defends them until the young are

expected by as many as 50,000 believers in the doctrines of | hatched and able to shift for themselves.

MILLET

Italian, miglietto, diminutive | of Africa and Asia, particularly of India, is Sorghum vulgare

MILLET (French, mullet ; of miglio=Latin male, a thousand, in allusion to its fertility) is a name applied with little definiteness to a con- siderable number of often very variable species of cereals belonging to distinct genera and even subfamilies of Graminee. The true millet, however, is generally admitted to be Panicum (Setaria) miliaceum, L. (German Hirse, with which P. miliare, Lam., is reckoned by some botanists). It is indigenous to the East Indies and North Australia, but is mentioned by Hippocrates and Theo- phrastus as already cultivated in South Europe in their time. Some suppose it to be one of the earliest grains used in bread-making, and ascribe the origin of its name to panis, bread, rather than to the paniculate inflorescence. It is annual, requires rich but friable soil, grows to about 3 or 4 feet high, and is characterized by its bristly, much branched nodding panicles. One variety has black grains. It is largely cultivated in India, southern Europe, and northern Africa, and ripens as far north as southern Germany, in fact, wherever the climate admits of the production of wine. The grain, which is very nutritious, ig used in the form of groats, and makes excellent bread when mixed with wheaten flour. It is also largely used for feeding poultry and cage- birds, for which purpose mainly it is imported. P. ttalicum, L. (Setaria italica, Beauv.), is of similar origin and distribution, and is one of the ; most wholesome and palatable Indian § cereals. It is annual, grows 4 to 5 feet high, and requires dry light soil. German Millet (P. germanicum, Ger- man Kolbenhirse, Mohar) is probably merely a less valuable and dwarf variety of P. ctalicum, having an erect, compact, and shorter spike. The grains of both are very small, only one half as long as those of common millet, but are exceedingly prolific. Many stalks arise from a single root, and a single spike often yields 2 oz. of grain, the total yield being five times that of wheat. They are imported for poultry feeding like the former species, but are extensively used in soups, &c., on the Continent. Numerous other species belonging to this vast genus—the largest among

grasses, of which the following are among the most important—are also culti- vated in tropical or sub-tropical countries for their grain or as fodder grasses, or both, each variety of soil, from swamp to desert, having its characteristic forms. They are very readily acclimatized wherever the temperature is sufficient, e.g., in Australia, and seem destined to rise in agricultural importance.

Polish Millet is P. digitaria ; P. frumentaceum, Roxb., Shamalo, a Deccan grass, is probably a native of tropical Africa ; while the perennial P. sarmentosum, Roxb., also largely cultivated in tropical countries, is from Sumatra. P. decompositum is the Australian millet, its grains being made into cakes by the aborigines. iP maximum, Jacq., is the Guinea Grass ; it is perennial, grows 8 feet high, and yields abundance of highly nutritious grain. P. spec- tabile, Nees., is the Coapim of Angola, but has been acclimatized in Brazil and other tropical countries. Other gigantic species 6 or 7 fect high form the field crops on the banks of the Amazons. Of species

belonging to allied genera, Pennisetum thyphoideum, Rich. (Peni- cellaria spicata, Willd.), Bajree, sometimes also called Egyptian

Fic. 1.—Panicum italicum.

Millet, a Guinea corn, is largely cultivated in tropical Asia, Nubia,

and Egypt. P. distichwm grows south of the Sahara. Species of Paspalum, Eleusine, and Milium are also cultivated as millets.

But the most important dry grain of the tropical countries

Pers. (Holcus Sorghum, L., Andropogon Sorghum, Roxb. Durra, Great Millet, Indian Millet, Turkish Millet Guinea Corn (the French sorgho, German, Mohren- hirse or Kaffernkorn, 'Ta- mil Cholum, Bengalese Jowart). It ranges prob- ably as extensively as , wheat, being also largely

cultivated in southern Europe, the United States, and the West

Indies. In Asia Minor, Arabia, Italy, and Spain it may be said to replace oats and barley. It is annual, and may reach 12 feet in height; it is extremely prolific, even rivalling maize, of which it isa near congener. Its flour is very white, but does not easily make good bread ; it is largely used in cakes and puddings and for feeding cattle and poultry. The panicles are y used for brooms, and the iM roots for velvet-brushes. Fig. 2.—Sorghum vulgare.

S. bicolor, S. nigrum, S. rubrum, S. Kaffrorum (Kafire Corn), S. saccharatum, and other species or varieties are also of economic importance, the last-named (the " Chinese sugar-cane") being much cultivated in the United States as a source of molasses, the juice, which contains much glucose but comparatively little cane sugar, being simply expressed and concentrated by evaporation. S. vulgare is the grain referred to by Pliny as millet.

For systematic and economic purposes, see GRASSES ; Luerssen, Mced.~~Pharm. Botanik, Leipsic, 1880; Drury, Useful Plants of India, London, 1873; F. v. Miller, Select Plants for Naturaliza~~ tion in Victoria, Melbourne, 1876. For archeology, see Hehn's Kulturpflanzen, &c., Berlin, 1877. On Sorghwin cerunwm ("rice corn," &¢., of western Kansas) see Drummond's Report" in Parl. Papers, No. 2570 (1880).

MILLET, Jean Francors (1814-1875), was a painter of French peasant life, and it may be questioned whether France has produced in our day any greater or more original artist. He himself came of a peasant family, and was born on the 4th of October 1814 in the hamlet of Gruchy, near Gréville (La Manche), in the wild and picturesque district called La Hague. His boyhood was passed working in his father's fields, but the sight of the engravings in an old illustrated Bible set him drawing, and thenceforth, whilst the others slept, the daily hour of rest was spent by Millet in trying to render the familiar scenes around him. From the village priest the lad learnt to read the Bible and Virgil in Latin, and acquired an interest in one or two other works of a high class which accompanied him through life; he did not, however, attract attention so much by his acquirements as by the stamp of his mind. The whole family seems, indeed, to have worn a character of austerity and dignity, and when Millet's father finally decided to test the vocation of his son as an artist, it was with a gravity and

authority which recalls the patriarchal households of Calvinist France. 'Two drawings were pre- pared and placed before a painter at Cherbourg named Mouchel, who at once recognized the boy's gifts, and accepted him as a pupil; but shortly after (1835) Millet's father died, and the eldest son, with heroic devotion, took his place at home, nor did he return to his work until the

pressing calls from without were solemnly enforced by the

wishes of his own family. He accordingly went back to.

Cherbourg, but after a short time spent there with another master (Langlois) started with many misgivings for Paris. The council-general of the department had granted him a sum of 600 francs, and the town council promised an annual pension of 400, but in spite of friendly help and introductions Millet went through great difficulties. The system of the Ecole des Beaux Arts was hateful to him, and it was not until after much hesitation that he decided to enter an official studio—that of Delaroche. The master was certainly puzzled by his pupil; he saw his ability, and, when Millet in his poverty could not longer pay the monthly fees, arranged for his free admission to the studio, but he tried in vain to make him take the approved direc- tion, and lessons ended with " Eh, bien, allez & votre guise, vous étes si nouveau pour moi que je ne veux rien vous dire." At last, when the competition for the Grand Prix came on, Delaroche gave Millet to understand that he intended to secure the nomination of another, and there- upon Millet withdrew himself, and with his friend Marolle started in a little studio in the Rue de l'Est. He had renounced the beaten track, but he continued to study hard whilst he sought to procure bread by painting por- traits at 10 or 15 francs a piece and producing small "pastiches" of Watteau and Boucher. These works are classed as those of his "flowery manner," and Millet has been reproached—he whose whole life was an act of con- viction—with having sacrificed his convictions to curry favour with the public. It is true that he himself has recorded his aversion to both these masters. "In the Louvre," he said, "I received vivid impressions from

Mantegna, complete from Michelangelo ; after Michelangelo and Poussin I have remained faithful to the early masters." Boucher was for him an object of "repulsion," and in Watteau "I saw," he said, "a little theatrical world which oppressed me." Thus it was then that Millet naturally felt and saw, but the strongest genius knows moments of self-doubt. Later in life Millet was heard to say that were it not for the small group who believed in him he should have lost faith in himself. In earlier years, before he was certain of his own leading, he was naturally influ- enced by the advice of others whose arguments were enforced by the pressure of dire poverty. Even so from time to time the native vein showed strong. In 1840, as soon as he had despatched a portrait to the Salon, Millet went back to Gréville, where he painted Sailors Mending a Sail and a few other pictures—reminiscences of Cherbourg life. His first success was obtained in 1844 when his Milkwoman and Lesson in Riding (pastel) attracted notice at the Salon, and friendly artists presented themselves at his lodgings only to learn that his wife had just died, and that he him- self had disappeared. Millet was at Cherbourg; there he remarried, but having amassed a few hundred francs he went back to Paris and presented his St Jerome at the Salon of 1845. This picture was rejected and exists no longer, for Millet, short of canvas, painted over it Cédipus Unbound, a work which during the following year was the object of violent criticism. He was, however, no longer alone ; Diaz, Eugene Tourneux, Rousseau, and other men of note supported him by their confidence and friendship, and he had by his side the brave Catharine Lemaire, his second wife, a woman who bore poverty with dignity and gave courage to her husband through the cruel trials in which he penetrated by a terrible personal experience the bitter secrets of the very poor. To this date belong Millet's Golden Age, Bird Nesters, Young Girl and Lamb, and Bathers ; but to the Bathers (Louvre) succeeded The Mother Asking Alms, The Workman's Monday, and The Winnowcr. This last work, exhibited in 1848, obtained

conspicuous success, but did not sell till Ledru Rollin, informed of the painter's dire distress, gave him 500 francs for it, and accompanied the purchase with a conimission, the money for which enabled Millet to leave Paris for Barbizon, a village on the skirts of the forest of Fontaine- bleau.

There he settled in a three-roomed cottage for the rest of his life—twenty-seven years, in which he wrouglit out the perfect story of that peasant hfe of which he alone has given a "complete impression." Jules Breton has coloured the days of toil with sentiment; others, like Courbet, whose eccentric Funeral at Ornans attracted more notice at the Salon of 1850 than Millet's Sowers and Binders, have treated similar subjects as a vehicle for protest against social misery ; Millet alone, a peasant and a miserable one himself, saw true, neither softening nor exaggerating what he saw. Ina curious letter written to M. Sensier at this date (1850) Millet expressed his resolve to break once and for all with mythological and undraped subjects, and the names of the principal works painted subsequently will show how stedfastly this resolution was kept. In 1852 he produced Girls Sewing, Man Spreading Manure ; 1853, The Reapers; 1854, Church at Gréville (Luxembourg); 1855—the year of the International Exhibition, at which he received a medal of second class— Peasant Grafting a Tree; 1857, The Gleaners; 1859, The Angelus (Louvre, engraved Waltner), The Woodcutter and Death ; 1860, Sheep Shearing; 1861, Woman Shearing Sheep, Woman Feeding Child; 1862, Potato Planters, Winter and the Crows; 1863, Man with Hoe, Woman Carding ; 1864, Shepherds and Flock, Peasants Bringing Home a Calf Born in the Fields ; 1869, Knitting Lesson ; 1870, Buttermaking; 1871, November—recollection of Gruchy. Any one of these works will show how great an influence Millet's previous practice in the nude had upon his style. The dresses worn by his figures are not clothes, but drapery through which the forms and movements of the body are strongly felt, and their contour shows a grand breadth of line which strikes the eye at once. Something of the imposing unity of his work was also, no doubt, due to an extraordinary power of memory, which enabled Millet to paint (like Horace Vernet) without a model ; he could recall with precision the smallest details of attitudes or gestures which he proposed to represent. Thus he could count on presenting free from after thoughts the vivid impressions which he had first received, and Millet's nature was such that the impressions which he received were always of a serious and often of a noble order, to which the character of his execution responded so perfectly that even a Washerwoman at her Tub will show the grand action of a Medea. The drawing of this subject is repro- duced in Souvenirs de Barbizon, a pamphlet in which M. Piédagnel has recorded a visit paid to Millet in 1864. His circumstances were then less evil, after struggles as

severe as those endured in Paris. A contract by which he bound himself in 1860 to give up all his work for three years had placed him in possession of 1000 francs a month. His fame extended, and at the exhibition of 1867 he received a medal of the first class, and the ribbon of the Legion of Honour, but he was at the same moment deeply shaken by the death of his faithful friend Rousseau. Though he rallied for a time he never com- pletely recovered his health, and on the 20th January 1875 he died. He was buried by his friend's side in the churchyard of Chailly.

See A. Sensier, Vie e¢ fuvre de J. F. Millet, 1874 ; Piédagnel, Souvenirs de Barbizon, &c. (iE. ETS: Ba)

MILLVILLE, a city of the United States, in Cumberland county, New Jersey, at the head of navigation of Maurice river, 40 miles by rail from Philadelphia by the Cape May, Millville, and Vineland section of the West Jersey Railroad.

It is one of the chief seats of glass-making in the State, and also manufactures cotton, iron pipes for water and gas, turbines, &c. The population was 7660 in 1880. MILMAN, Henry Harr (1791-1868), dean of St Paul's, was born February 10, 1791, and was the third son of Sir Francis Milman, physician to George III. He was educated at Eton and at Brasenose College, Oxford ; his university career was brilliant, and among other dis- tinctions he gained the Newdigate prize with a poem on the Apollo Belvedere. In 1816 he was ordained, and was soon afterwards presented to the living of St Mary's, Reading. He had already made his appearance as a dramatic writer, his tragedy of Mazo, founded on a narra- tive in the Annual Register for 1795, having been brought on the stage without his knowledge under the title of The Italian Wofe. It was subsequently produced at Covent Garden, and obtained great success from the acting of Miss O'Neill as Bianca. The merit of the play consists chiefly in the powerful situation ; the diction is florid and ornate, The same criticism, by the author's own confes- sion, applies to his epic, Samor, the Lord of the Braght City (Gloucester), a poem written in early youth. The subject is taken from British legend, and Milman has failed to invest it with serious interest. He was more successful in his next attempts, where the

subjects were well adapted to an imagination easily kindled by the historical or the moral picturesque. The death struggle of an expiring nation in the Fall of Jerusalem (1820), the conflict of new truth and old order, of religious enthusiasm and earthly affection, in the Martyr of Antioch (1822), are depicted with great eloquence and real insight into human nature. Milman's characters, however, are personified tendencies rather than personages, and in poetical style he was unable to free himself from the influence of Byron. Belshazzar (1822) is in general a pale copy of Byron's Sardanapalus, but contains some fine lyrics. Milman's lyrics, indeed, especially his hymns, have frequently a fine. ring and sweep, though the thought is generally commonplace. His tragedy of Anne Boleyn (1826) is a poor performance. With the exception of admirable versions of the Sanskrit episode of Nala and Damayanti, and of the Ayamemnon and Bacche, this was Milman's last poetical work. He was elected professor of poetry at Oxford, and in 1827 delivered the Bampton lectures, selecting as his subject the conduct and character of the apostles as an evidence of Christianity. In 1830 his Hestory of the Jews appcared in the Family Library. The contracted limits of this series forbade any adequate treatment of the subject ; the work is nevertheless memorable as the first by an English clergyman which treated the Jews as an Oriental tribe, recognized sheikhs and emirs in the Old Testament, sifted and classified documentary evidence, and evaded or minimized the miraculous. Milman was violently attacked, especially by Dr Faussett and Bishop Mant, and the odium thus occasioned stopped the publication of the Family Library, and long impeded the preferment of the writer. In 1835, however, Sir Robert Peel made him rector of St Margaret's and canon of Westminster, and in 1849 he became dean of St Paul's. The unpopularity attaching to him had by this time nearly died away ; and now, generally revered and beloved, intimate with men of all pursuits, politics, and persuasions, counted among the chief ornaments of the most polished society of the metropolis, he occupied a singularly dignified and enviable position, which he constantly employed for the promotion of culture and enlightenment, and in particular for the relaxation of subscription to ecclesiastical formularies. His History of Christianity under the Empire had appeared in 1840, but had been as completely ignored as if, said Lord Melbourne, the clergy had taken a universal oath never to mention it

O23 to any one. Widely different was the reception of the continuation, his great History of Latin Christianity to the death of Pope Nicholas V., which appeared in 1855. He also edited Gibbon and Horace, and at his death in 1868 left behind him almost finished a delightful history of his own cathedral, which was completed and published by his son.

Milman possessed a large share of the imagination which cntcrs into and calls up the past, and of that which interprets actions and apprehends opinions by the power of sympathy. In creative imagination he was deficient, a defect which alone prevented him from attaining the first rank as an historian, His pages are crowded with splendid uames rather than with living personages ; the springs of action are disclosed with remarkable penetration, but the actor himself is rather heard than scen. There are, however, exceptions, such as his portrait of Sir Christopher Wren; and he possessed a peculiar power of investing mere intellectual tendencies with personality and life. His parallel of Latin and Teutonic Christianity, for example, is a piece of finished historical character painting. His power of sympathy rendered him in effect, as his natural equity and benignity made him in intcntion, a modcl of historical candour, only chargeable, perhaps, with toomuch gentleness. It will be long ere his great wok is superseded ; but he will perhaps be remembered even longer as an embodiment of all the qualities which the higher ecclesiastical preferment can be supposed capable of encouraging or rewarding among the clergy of a great historical church. (R. G.)

MILO, one of the most famous athletes of Greece, whose name became proverbial for personal strength. He lived about the end of the 6th century B.c., was six times crowned at the Olympic games and six times at the Pythian for wrestling, and was famous throughout the civilized world for his feats of strength, such as carrying an ox on his shoulders through the stadium at Olympia. In his native city of Crotona he was much honoured, and he commanded the army which defeatcd the people of Sybaris in 511 z.c, When Democedes, the physician of Darius, deserted the Persian service, he sent a boastful message to the king of Persia informing him of his marriage to the daughter of Milo. The traditional account of his death is often used to point a moral: le found a tree which some woodcutters had partially split with a wedge, and attempted to rend it asunder; but the

wedge fell out, and the tree closed on his hand, imprisoning hin till wolves came and devoured him.

MILO was the surname of T. Annius Papianus, one of the best-known of the partisan leaders and ruffians in the stormy times that preceded the dissolution of the Roman republic. His father was C. Papius Celsus, but he was adopted by his mother's father T. Annius Luscus. He joined the Pompeian party, and led the band of mercenaries and gladiators which was required to defend the cause and its chief supporters in the public streets. P. Clodius, the leader of the ruffians who professed the democratic cause, was his personal enemy, and their brawls in the streets and their mutual accusations in the law courts lasted for several years, beginning when Milo was tribune of the commons in 57 B.c. In 53 their quarrels came to a height when Milo was candidate for the consulship and Clodius for the pretorship ; and when the two leaders met by accident on the Appian Way at Bovills, Clodius was murdered (January 20, 52 B.c.). This act of violence strengthened the hands of Pompey, who was nominated sole consul, and proposed. several stringent laws to restore order in tlie city. Milo was impeached; his guilt was clear, and his enemies took every means of intimidating his supporters and his judges. Cicero was afraid to deliver the speech he had prepared Pro Milone, and the extant oration is an expanded form of the unspoken defence. Milo went into exile at Massilia, and his property was sold by auction. He joined the insurrection of M. Celius in 48 B.c., and was soon slain near Thurii in Lucania. His wife Fausta was daughter of the dictator Sulla.

MILTIADES. Sce Greece, vol. xi. p. 99.

MILTON, Joun (1608-1674), was born in Bread Street, Cheapside, London, on the 9th of December 1608. His father, known as Mr John Milton of Bread Street, scrivener, was himself an interesting man. He was a native of Oxfordshire, having been born there in or about 1563, the son of a Richard Milton, yeoman of Stanton-St-John's, of whom there are traces as one of the sturdiest adherents to the old Roman Catholic religion that had been left in his district. The son, however, had turned Protestant, and, having been cast off on that account, had come to London, apparently about the year 1586,

to push his fortune. Having received a good education, and having good abilities, especially in music, he may have lived for some time by musical teaching and practice. Not till 1595, at all events, when he was long past the usual age of apprenticeship, do we hear of his preparation for the profession of a scrivener ; and not till February 1599-1600, when he was about thirty- seven years of age, did he enter the profession as a qualified member of the Scriveners' Company. It was then that he set up his "house and shop" in Bread Street, and began, like other scriveners, his lawyerly business of drawing up wills, marriage-settlements, and the like, with such related business as that of receiving money from clients for invest- ment and lending it out to the best advantage. It was at the same time that he married. Till recently there has been the inost extraordinary uncertainty as to the maiden name of his wife, the mother of the poet. It has been now ascertained, however, that she was a Sarah Jeffrey, one of the two orphan daughters of a Paul Jeffrey, of St Swithin's, London, " citizen and merchant-taylor," originally from Essex, who had died before 1583. At the date of her marriage she was about twenty-eight years of age. Her widowed mother, Mrs Ellen Jeffrey, came to reside in the house in Bread Street, and died there in February 1610-11. Before this death of the maternal grandmother, three children had been born to the scrivener and his wife, of whom only two survived,—the future poet, and an elder sister, called Anne. Of three more children, born subse- quently, only one survived,—Christopher, the youngest of the family, born December 3, 1615.

The first sixteen years of Milton's life, coinciding exactly with the last sixteen of the reign of James I, associate themselves with the house in Bread Street, and with the surroundings of that housc in Old London. His father, while prospering in business, continued to be known as a man of "'ingeniose" tastes, and even acquired some dis- tinction in the London musical world of that time by his occasional contributions to important musical publications. Music was thus a part of the poet's domestic education from his infancy. Whatever else could be added was added without stint. Again and again Milton speaks with gratitude and affection of the ungrudging pains bestowed by his father on his early education. 'Both at the grammar school and also under other masters at home," is the statement in one passage, "he caused me to be instructed daily." This brings us to about the year 1619, when Milton was ten years of age. At that

time his domestic tutor was Thomas Young, a Scotsman from Perth- shire, and graduate of the university of St Andrews, after- wards a man of no small distinction among the English Puritan clergy, but then only curate or assistant to some parish clergyman in or near London, and eking out his livelihood by private teaching. Young's tutorship lasted till 1622, when he was drawn abroad by an offer of the pastorship or chaplaincy to the congregation of English merchants in Hamburg. Already, however, for a year or two, his tutorship had been only supplementary to the education which the boy was receiving by daily attendance at St Paul's public school, close to Bread Street. The hcadmaster of the school was Mr Alexander Gill, an elderly

TaO"N

| Oxford divine, of high reputation for scholarship and teaching ability. Under him, as usher or second master, was his son, Alexander Gill the younger, also an Oxford graduate of scholarly reputation, but of blustering character. Milton's acquaintanceship with this younger Gill, begun at St Paul's school, led to subscquent friendship and corre- spondence. Far more affectionate and intimate was the friendship formed by Milton at St Paul's with a certain young Charles Diodati, his schoolfellow there, the son of a naturalized Italian physician, Dr Theodore Diodati, who | had settled in London in good medical practice, and was much respected, both on his own account, and as being the brother of the famous Protestant divine, Jean or Giovanni Diodati of Geneva. Young Diodati, who was destined for his father's profession, left the school for Oxford University early in 1623; but Milton remained till the end of 1624. A family incident of that ycar was the marriage of his elder sister, Anne, with Edward Phillips, a clerk in the Government office called the Crown Office in Chancery. Milton had then all but completed his sixteenth year, and was as scholarly, as accomplished, and as handsome a youth as St Paul's school had sent forth. We learn from himsclf that his exercises "in English or other tongue, prosing or versing, but chiefly this latter," had begun to attract attention even in his boyhood. This implies that he must have had a stock of attempts in English and Latin by him of earlier date than 1624. Of these the only specimens that now remain are his Paraphrase_on Psalm CXIV. and his Paraphrase on Psalm CXXX VI.

On February 12, 1624-25, Milton, at the age of sixteen years and two months, was entered as a student of Christ's College, Cambridge, in the grade of a " Lesser Pensioner." His matriculation entry in the books of the university is two months later, April 9, 1625. Between these two dates James I. had died, and had been succeeded by Charles I.

Cambridge University was then in the full flush of its prosperity on that old system of university education which combined Latin and Greek studies with plentiful drill and disputation in the scholastic logic and philosophy, but with little of physical science, and next to no mathe- matics. There were sixteen colleges in all, dividing among them a total of about 2900 members of the university. Christ's College, to which Milton belonged, ranked about third in the university in respect of numbers, counting about 265 members on its books. The master was Dr Thomas Bainbrigge ; and among the thirteen fellows were Mr Joseph Meade, still remembered as a commentator on the Apocalypse, and Mr William Chappell, afterwards an Irish bishop. It was under Chappell's tutorship that Milton was placed when he first entered the college. At least three students who entered Christ's after Milton, but during his residence, deserve mention. One was Edward King, a youth of Irish birth and high Irish connexions, who entered in 1626, at the age of fourteen; another was John Cleveland, afterwards known as royalist and satirist, who entered in 1627; and the third was Henry More, sub- sequently famous as the Cambridge Platonist, who entered in 1631, just before Milton left. Milton's own brother, Christopher, joined him in the college in February 1630- 31, at the age of fifteen.

Milton's academic course lasted seven years and five months, or from February 1624-25 to July 1632, bringing him from his seventeenth year to his twenty-fourth. The first four years were his time of undergraduateship. It was in the second of these, the year 1626, that there occurred that quarrel between him and his tutor, Mr Chappell, which Dr Johnson, making the most of a lax tradition from Aubrey, magnified into the supposition that Milton may have been one of the last students in either of the English universities that suffered the indignity of

mei id, T OmN

corporal punishment. The legend deserves no credit ; but it is certain that Milton, on account of some disagreement with Chappell, leading to the interference of Dr Bainbrigge, left college for a time, and that, when he did return, it was under an arrangement which, while securing that he should not lose a term by his absence, transferred him from the tutorship of Chappell to that of Mr Nathaniel Tovey, another of the fellows of Christ's. From a reference to the matter in the first of the Latin elegies one infers that the cause of the quarrel was some outbreak of self-assertion on Milton's part. We learn indeed, from words of his own elsewhere, that it was not only Chappell and Bainbrigge that he had offended by his independent demeanour, but that, for the first two or three years of his undergraduate-ship, he was generally unpopular, for the same reason, among the younger men of his college. They had nick- named him "The Lady," a nickname which the students of the other colleges took up, converting it into "The Lady of Christ's College" ; and, though the allusion was chiefly to the peculiar grace of his personal appearance, it con- veyed also a sneer at what the rougher men thought his uriusual prudishness, the haughty fastidiousness of his tastes and morals. Quite as distinct as the information that he was for a while unpopular with the majority of his fellow-students are the proofs that they all came round him at last with respect and deference. The change had cer- tainly occurred before January 1628-29, when, at the age of twenty, he took his B.A. degree. By that time his intel-lectual pre-eminence in his college, and indeed among his coevals in the whole university, had come to be acknow- ledged. His reputation for scholarship and literary genius, extraordinary even then, was more than confirmed during the remaining three years and a half of his residence in Cambridge.

Of Milton's skill at Cambridge in what Wood calls "the collegiate and academical exercises" specimens remain in his Prolusiones Quedam Oratoriz. They consist of seven rhetorical Latin essays, generally in a whimsical vein, delivered by him, in his undergraduateship or during his subsequent bachelorship in arts, either in the hall of Christ's College or in the public University School. Relics of Milton's Cambridge period are also four of his Latin Familiar Epistles; but more important are the poetical remains. These include the greater number of his preserved Latin poems—to wit, (1) the seven pieces which

compose his Elegiarum Liber, two of the most interesting of them addressed to his medical friend, Charles Diodati, and one to his former tutor Young in his exile at Ham- burg, (2) the five short Gunpowder Plot epigrams, now appended to the Elegies, and (3) the first five pieces of the Sylvarum Liber, the most important of which are the hexa- meter poem "In Quintum Novembris" and the piece entitled "Naturam non pati senium." Of the English – poems of the Cambridge period the following is a dated list: —On the Death of a Fair Infant, 1625-26, the subject being the death in that inclement winter of his infant niece, the first-born child of his sister Mrs Phillips; A¢ a Vacation Exercise in the College, 1628; the magnificent Christmas ode On the Morning of Christ's Natinty, 1629 ; the fragment called The Passion and the Song on May Morning, both probably belonging to 1630; the lines On Shakespeare, certainly belonging to that year; the two facetious pieces On the University Carrier, 1630-31; the Epitaph on the Marchioness of Winchester, 1631; the sonnet Z'o the Nightingale, probably of the same year; the sonnet On arriving at the Age of twenty-three, dating itself certainly in December 1631.

Just before Milton quitted Cambridge, his father, then verging on his seventieth year, had practically retired from his Bread Street business, leaving the active manage- ment of it to a partner, named Thomas Bower, a former apprentice of his, and had gone to spend his declining years at Horton in Buckinghamshire, a sinall village near Colnbrook, and not far from Windsor. Here, accordingly, in a house close to Horton church, Milton mainly resided for the next six years,—from July 1632 to April 1638.

Although, when he had gone to Cambridge, it had been with the intention of becoming a clergyman, that intention had been abandoned. His reasons were that "tyranny had invaded the church," and that, finding he could not honestly subscribe the oaths and obligations required, he "thought it better to preserve a blameless silence before the sacred office of speaking begun with servitude and forswearing." In other words, he was disgusted with the system of high prelacy which Laud, who had been bishop of London and minister paramount in ecclesiastical matters since 1628, was establishing and maintaining in the Church of England. '"Church-outed by the

prelates," as he emphatically expresses it, he seems to have thought for a time of the law. From that too he recoiled; and, leav- ing the legal profession for his brother Christopher, he had decided that the only life possible for himself was one of leisurely independence, dedicated wholly to scholarship and literature. His compunctions on this subject, expressed already in his sonnet on arriving at his twenty-third year, are expressed more at length in an English letter sent by him, shortly after the date of that sonnet, and with a copy of the sonnet included, to some friend who had been remonstrating with him on his "belatedness" and his persistence in a life of mere dream and study. There were gentle remonstrances also from his excellent father. Between such a father and such a son, however, the con- clusion was easy. What it was may be learnt from Milton's fine Latin poem Ad Patrem. There, in the midst of an enthusiastic recitation of all that his father had done for him hitherto, it is intimated that the agreement between them on their one little matter of difference was already complete, and that, as the son was bent on a private life of literature and poetry, it had been decided that he should have his own way, and should in fact, so long as he chose, be the master of his father's means and the chief person m the Horton household. For the six years from 1632 this, accordingly, was Milton's position. In perfect leisure, and in a pleasant rural retirement, with Windsor at the distance of an easy walk, and London only about 17 miles off, he

went through, he tells us, a systematic course of reading | testimony to her character is that she was a "a most

in the Greek and Latin classics, varied by mathematics, music, and the kind of physical science we should now call cosmography.

It is an interesting fact that Milton's very first public appearance in the world of English authorship was in so honourable a place as the second folio edition of Shakespeare in 1632. His enthusiastic eulogy on Shakespeare, written in 1630, was one of three anonymous pieces prefixed to that second folio, along with reprints of the commendatory verses that had appeared in the first folio, one of them Ben Jonson's immortal tribute to Shakespeare's memory. Among the poems actually written by Milton at

Horton the first, in all probability, after the Latin hexameters Ad Patrem, were the exquisite companion pieces DT Allegro and Il Penseroso. There followed, in or about 1633, the fragment called Arcades. It was part of a pastoral masque got up by the young people of the noble family of Egerton in honour of their vencrable relative the countess-dowager of Derby, and performed before that lady at her mansion of Harefield, near Uxbridge, about 10 miles from Horton. That Milton contributed the words for the entertainment was, almost certainly, owing to his friendship with Henry Lawes, one of the chief court musicians of that time, whose known connexion with the Egerton family points him out as the probable manager of the Harefield masque. Next in order among the compositions at Horton may be mentioned the three short pieces, At a Solemn Music, On Time, and Upon the Circumcision; after which comes Comus, the largest and most important of all Milton's minor poems. The name by which that beautiful drama is now universally known was not given to it by Milton himself. He entitled it, more simply and vaguely, "A Masque presented at Ludlow Castle, 1634, before the Earl of Bridgewater, Lord President of Wales." The existence of this poem is certainly due to Milton's intimacy with Lawes. The earl of Bridgewater, the head of the Egerton family, had been appointed to the high office of the presidency or viceroyalty of Wales, the official seat of which was Ludlow in Shropshire ; it had been determined that among the festivities on his assumption of the office there should be a great masque in the hall of Ludlow Castle, with Lawes for the stage manager and one of the actors; Milton had been applied to by Lawes for the poetry ; and, actually, on Michaelmas night, September 29, 1634, the drama furnished by Milton was performed in Ludlow Castle before a great assemblage of the nobility and gentry of the Welsh principality, Lawes taking the part of " the attendant spirit," while the parts of " first brother," "second brother," and " the lady " were taken by the earl's three youngest children, Viscount Brackley, Mr Thomas Egerton, and Lady Alice Egerton.—From September 1634 to the beginning of 1637 is a comparative blank in our records. Straggling incidents in this blank are a Latin letter of date December 4, 1634, to Alexander Gill the younger, a Greek Translation of Psalm CXIV., a visit to Oxford in 1635 for the purpose of incorporation in the degree of M.A. in that university, and the beginning in

and infirm father.—The lawsuit, which was instituted by a certain Sir Thomas Cotton, baronet, nephew and executor of a deceased John Cotton, Esq., accused the elder Milton and his partner Bower, or both, of having, in their capacity as scriveners, misappropriated divers large sums of money that had been entrusted to them by the deceased Cotton to be let out at interest. The lawsuit was still in progress when, on the 3d of April 1637, Milton's mother died, at the age of about sixty-five. A flat blue stone, with a brief inscription, visible on the chancel-pavement of Horton church, still marks the place of her burial. Milton's

' through the neighbourhood."

| for his journey. May 1636 of a troublesome lawsuit against his now aged |

excellent mother and particularly known for her charities The year 1637 was other- wise eventful in his biography. It was in that year that his Comus, after lying in manuscript for more than two

| years, was published by itself, in the form of a small quarto

of thirty-five pages. The author's name was withheld, and the entire responsibility of the publication was assumed by Henry Lawes. Milton seems to have been in London when the little volume appeared. He wasa good deal in London, at all events, during the summer and autumn months immediately following his mother's death. The plague, which had been on one of its periodical visits of ravage through England since early in the preceding year, was then especially severe in the Horton neighbourhood, while London was comparatively free. It was probably in London that Milton heard of the death of young Edward King of Christ's College, whom he had left as one of the most popular of the fellows of the college, and one of the clerical hopes of the university. King had sailed from Chester for a vacation visit to his relatives in Ireland, when, on the 10th of August, the ship, in perfectly calm water, struck on a rock and went down, he and nearly all the other passengers going down with her. There is no mention of the sad accident in two otherwise very in- teresting Latin Familiar Epistles of Milton, of September 1637, both addressed to his medical friend Charles Diodati, and both dated from London ; but how deeply the death of King had affected him appears from his occupation shortly afterwards. In

November 1637, and probably at Horton, whence the plague had by that time vanished, he wrote his matchless pastoral monody of Lycidas. It was his con- tribution toa collection of obituary verses, Greek, Latin, and English, which King's numerous friends, at Cambridge and elsewhere, were getting up in lamentation for his sad fate. The collection did not appear till early in 1638, when it was published in two parts, with black-bordered title-pages, from the Cambridge University press, one consisting of twenty-three Latin and Greek pieces, the other of thirteen English pieces, the last of which was Milton's monody, signed only with his initials "J.M." It was therefore early in 1638, when Milton was in his thirtieth year, that copies of his Lycidas may have been in circulation among those who had already become acquainted with his Comus.

Milton was then on the wing for a foreign tour. He had long set his heart on a visit to Italy, and circum- stances now favoured his wish. The vexatious Cotton lawsuit, after hanging on for nearly two years, was at an end, as far as the elder Milton was concerned, with the most absolute and honourable vindication of his character for probity, though with some continuation of the case against his partner, Bower. Moreover, Milton's younger brother, Christopher, though but twenty-two years of age, and just about to be called to the bar of the Inner Temple, had married a wife; and the young couple had gone to reside at Horton to keep the old man company. There being nothing then to detain Milton, all was arranged Before the end of April 1638 he was on his way across the Channel, taking one English man-servant with him. At the time of his departure the last great news in England was that of the National Scottish Covenant, or solemn oath and band of all ranks

_and classes of the Scottish people to stand by each other

to the death in resisting the ecclesiastical innovations which Laud and Charles had been forcing upon Scotland. To Charles the news of this "damnable Covenant," as he called it, was enraging beyond measure; but to the mass of the English Puritans it was far from unwelcome, promising, as it seemed to do, for England herself, the subversion at last of that system of "Thorough," or despotic

eT ON

government by the king and his ministers without parlia- ments, under which the country had been groaning since the contemptuous dissolution of Charles's third parliament ten years before.

Through Paris, where Milton made but a short stay, receiving polite attention from the English ambassador, Lord Scudamore, and having the honour of an introduction to the famous Hugo Grotius, then ambassador for Sweden at the French court, he moved on rapidly to Italy, by way of Nice. After visiting Genoa, Leghorn, and Pisa, he arrived at Florence, August 1638. Enchanted by the city and its society, he remained there two months, frequenting the chief academies or literary clubs, and even taking part in their proceedings. Among the Florentines with whom he became intimate were Jacopo Gaddi, young Carlo Dati, Pietro Frescobaldi, Agostino Coltellini, the grammarian Benedetto Buommattei, Valerio Chimentelli, and Antonio Francini. It was in the neighbourhood of Florence also that he "found and visited" the great Galileo, then old and blind, and still nominally a prisoner to the Inquisition for his astrohomical heresy. From Florence, by Siena, Milton went to Rome. He reached the Eternal City some time in October, and spent about another two months there, not only going about among the ruins and antiquities and visiting the galleries, but mixing also, as he had done in Florence, with the learned society of the academies. Among those with whom he formed acquaintance in Rome were the German scholar, Lucas Holstenius, librarian of the Vatican, and three native Italian scholars, named Cherubini, Salzilli, and Selvaggi. There is record of his having dined once, in company with several other English- men, at the hospitable table of the English Jesuit College. The most picturesque incident, however, of his stay in Rome was his presence at a great musical entertainment in the palace of Cardinal Francesco Barberini. Here he had not only the honour of a specially kind reception by the cardinal himself, but also, it would appear, the supreme pleasure of listening to the marvellous Leonora Baroni, the most renowned singer of her age. Late in November he left Rome for Naples. Here also he was fortunate. The great man of the place was the now very aged Giovanni Battista Manso, marquis of Villa, the friend and biographer of the great Tasso, and subsequently the friend and patron of the sweet Marini. By a happy accident Milton obtained an introduction to Manso, and nothing could exceed the courtesy of the attentions paid by the aged marquis to the young English stranger. He had

*hardly been in Naples a month, however, when there came news from England which not only stopped an intention he had formed of extending his tour to Sicily and thence into Greece, but urged*his immediate return home. 'The sad news of civil war in England," he says, "called me back; for I considered it base that, while my fellow-countrymen were fighting at home for liberty, I should be travelling abroad for intellectual culture." In December 1638, therefore, he set his face northwards again. His return journey, however, probably because he learnt that the news he had first received was exaggerated or premature, was broken into stages. He spent a second two months in Rome, ascertained to have been January and February 1638-39 ; during which two months, as he tells us, he was in some danger from the papal police, because the English Jesuits in Rome had taken offence at lis habit of free speech, wherever he went, on the subject of religion. Though he did not alter his demeanour in the least in this particular, nothing happened ; and from Rome he got safely to Florence, welcomed. back heartily by his Florentine friends, and renewing his meetings with them privately and in their academies. His second visit to Florence, including an excursion to Lucca, extended. over*

O27

two months; and not till April 1639 did he take his

leave, and proceed, by Bologna and Ferrara, to Venice.

About a month was given to Venice; and thence, having

shipped for England the books he had collected in Italy,

he went on, by Verona and Milan, over the Alps, to

Geneva. In this Protestant city he spent a week or two

in June, forming interesting acquaintanceships there too,

and having daily conversations with the great Protestant theologian Dr Jean Diodati, the uncle of his friend

Charles Diodati. From Geneva he returned to Paris, and

so to England. He was home again in August 1639,

having been absent in all fifteen or sixteen months.

Milton's Continental tour, and especially the Italian portion of it, remained one of the chief pleasures of his memory through all his subsequent life. Nor was it quite without fruits of a literary kind. Besides two of his Latin Epistole Familiares, one to the Florentine grammarian Buommattei, and the other to Lucas Holstenius, there have to be assigned to Milton's sixteen months on the Continent his three Latin epigrams Ad Leonoram Rome Canentem, his Latin scazons Ad Salsillum Poetam Romanum Avgrotantem, lis fine and valuable poem in Latin hexameters entitled Jfansus, and his Five Italian Sonnets, with a Canzone, celebrating the charms of some Italian lady he had met in his travels.

One sad and marring memory did mingle itself with all that was otherwise so delightful in his Italian reminiscences. His bosom friend and companion from boyhood, the half- Italian Charles Diodati, who had been to him as Jonathan to David, and into whose ear he had hoped to pour the whole narrative of what he had seen and done abroad, had died during his absence. He had died, in Blackfriars, London, in August 1638, not four months after Milton had gone away on his tour. The intelligence had not reached Milton till some months afterwards, probably not till his second stay in Florence; and, though he must have learnt some of the particulars from the youth's uncle in Geneva, he did not know them fully till his return to England. How profoundly they affected him appears from his Epitaphium Damonis, then written in memory of his dead friend. The importance of this poem in Milton's biography cannot be overrated. It is perhaps the noblest of all his Latin poems; and, though in the form of a pastoral, and even of a pastoral of the most artificial sort, it is unmistakably an outburst of the most passionate personal grief. In this respect Lycidas, artistically perfect though that poem is, cannot be compared with it ; and it is only the fact that Lyctdas is in English, while the Lpitaphium Damonis is in Latin, that has led to the notion that Edward King of Christ's College was peculiarly and pre-eminently the friend of Milton in his youth and early manhood.

That Milton, now in his thirty-first year, had been gird- ing himself for some greater achievement in poetry than any he had yet attempted, Comus not excepted, we should have known otherwise. What we should not have known, but for an incidental passage in the Lpitaphium Damonss, is that, at the time of his return from Italy, he had chosen a subject for such a high literary effort of a new Miltonic sort. The passage is one in which, after referring to the hopes of Diodati's medical career as so suddenly cut short by his death, Milton speaks of himself as the survivor and of his own projects in fis profession of literature. In translation, it may run thus:—

'J have a theme of the Trojans cruising onr southern headlands Shaping to song, and the realm of Imogen, daughter of Pandras, Brennus and Arvirach, dukes, and Bren's bold brother, Belinus ; Then the Armorican settlers under the laws of the Britons,

Ay, and the womb of Igraine fatally pregnant with Arthur,

Uther's son, whom he got disguised in Gorlois' likeness, All by Merlin's craft. O then, if life shall be spared me,

Thon shalt be hung, my pipe, far off on some dying old pine-tree,

328

Much-forgotten of me; or else your Latian musie

Changed for the British war-sereech! What then ? do all things,

One to hope all things, fits not ! Prize sufficiently ample

Mine, and distinction great (unheard-of ever thereafter

Though I should be and inglorious all through the world of the stranger), ;

If but the yellow-haired Ouse shall read me, the drinker of Alan,

Humber, which whirls as it flows, and Trent's whole valley of orchards,

Thames, my own Thames, above all, and Tamar's western waters,

Tawny with ores, and where the white waves swinge the far Orkneys."

For one to

Interpreted prosaically, this means that Milton was meditating an epic of which King Arthur was to be the central figure, but which should include somehow the whole cycle of British and Arthurian legend, and that not only was this epic to be in English, but he had resolved that all his poetry for the future should be in the same tongue.

Not long after Milton's return the house at Horton ceased to be the family home. Christopher Milton and is wife went to reside at Reading, taking the old gentleman with them, while Milton himself preferred London. He had first taken lodgings in St Bride's Churchyard, at the foot of Fleet Street ; but, after a while, probably early in 1640, he removed to a "pretty garden house" of his own, at the end of an entry, in the part of Aldersgate Street which lies immediately on the city side of what is now Maidenhead Court. His sister, whose first husband had died in 1631, had married a Mr Thomas Agar, his successor in the Crown Office; and it was arranged that her two sons by her first husband should be educated by their uncle. John Phillips, the younger of them, only nine years old, had boarded with him in the St Bride's Churchyard lodgings ; and, after the removal to Aldersgate Street, the other brother, Edward Phillips, only a year older, became his boarder also. Gradually a few other boys, the sons of well-to-do personal friends, joined the two Phillipses, whether as boarders or for daily lessons, so that the house in Aldersgate Street became a small private school. The drudgery of teaching seems always to have been liked by Milton. What meanwhile of the great Arthurian epic? That project, we find, had been given up, and Milton's mind was roving among many other subjects, and balancing their capabilities. How he wavered between Biblical subjects and heroic subjects from British history, and how many of each kind suggested themselves to him, one learns from a list in his own handwriting among the Milton MSS. at Cambridge. It contains jottings of no fewer than fifty-three subjects from the Old Testament, eight from the Gospels, thirty-three from British and English history before the Conquest, and five from Scottish history. It is curious that all or most of them are headed or described as subjects for "tragedies," as if the epic form had now been abandoned for the dramatic.

It is more interesting still to observe which of the subjects fascinated Milton most. Though several of them are sketched pretty fully, not one is sketched at such length and so particularly as Paradise Lost. It is the first subject on the list, and there are four separate drafts of a possible tragedy under that title, two of them merely enumerating the dramatis persone, but the last two indicating the plot and the division into acts. Thus, in 1640, twenty-seven years before Paradise Lost was given to the world, he had put down the name on paper, and had committed himself to the theme.

To these poetic dreamings and schemings there was to be a long interruption. The Scottish National Covenant had led to extraordinary results. Not only were Charles

and Laud checkmated in their design of converting the | Edmund Calamy, Thomas Young,

nani TowW

'n Scotland into a high Laudian prelacy; but, in a General Assembly held at Glasgow in the end of 1638, Episcopacy had been utterly abolished in Scotland, and the old Presbyterian system of Knox and Melville revived. To avenge this, and restore the Scottish bishops, Charles had marched to the Border with an English army ; but, met there by the Covenanting army under General Alexander Leslie, he had not deemed it prudent to risk a battle, and had yielded to a negotiation conceding to the Scots all their demands. This "First Bishops' War," as it came to be called, was begun and concluded while Milton was abroad. About the time of his return, how-ever, Charles had again broken with the Scots. Milton

-had been watching the course of affairs since then with

close and eager interest. He had seen and partaken in the sympathetic stir in favour of the Scots which ran through the popular and Puritan mind of England. He had welcomed the practical proof of this sympathy given in that English parliament of April 1640, called " The Short Parliament," which Charles, in his straits for supplies against the Scots, had reluctantly summoned at last, but was obliged to dismiss as unmanageable. Charles had, never- theless, with money raised someliow, entered on the "Second

Bishops' War." This time the result was momentous indeed. The Scots, not waiting to be attacked in their own country, took the aggressive, and invaded England. In August 1640, after one small engagement with a portion of Charles's army, they were in possession of Newcastle and of all the northern English counties. The English then had their opportunity. A treaty with the Scots was begun, which the English Puritans, who regarded their presence in England as the very blessing they had been praying for, were in no haste to finish ; and, on the 3d of November 1640, there met that parliament which was to be famous in English history, and in the history of the world, as 'The Long Parliament."

Of the first proceedings of this parliament, including the trial and execution of Strafford, the impeachment and imprisonment of Laud and others, and the break-down of the system of Thorough by miscellaneous reforms and by guarantees for parliamentary liberty, Milton was only a spectator. It was when the church question emerged distinctly as the question paramount, and there had arisen divisions on that question among those who had been practically unanimous in matters of civil reform, that he plunged in as an active adviser. There were three parties on the church question. There was a high-church party, contending for Episcopacy by divine right, and for the maintenance of English Episcopacy very much as it was ; there was a middle party, defending Episcopacy on grounds of usage and expediency, but desiring to see the powers of bishops greatly curtailed, and a limited Episcopacy, with councils of presbyters round each bishop, substituted for the existing high Episcopacy ; and there was the root-and- branch party, as it called itself, desiring the entire abolition of Episcopacy and the reconstruction of the English Church on something like the Scottish Presbyterian model. Since the opening of the parliament there had been a storm of pamphlets crossing one another in the air from these three parties. The chief manifesto of the high-church party was a pamphlet by Joseph Hall, bishop of Exeter, entitled Humble Remonstrance to the High Court of Parliament. In answer to Hall, and in representation of the views of the root-and-branch party, there had stepped forth, in March 1640-41, five leading Puritan parish ministers, the initials of whose names, clubbed together on the title-page of their joint production, made the uncouth word "Smectymnuus." These were Stephen Marshall, Matthew Newcomen, —

mild Episcopal system which King James had established | and William Spurstow. The Thomas Young whose name

mel oY ON

comes in the middle was no other than the Scottish Thomas Young who had been Milton's domestic preceptor in Bread Strect. Having returned from Hamburg in 1628, he had been appointed to the vicarage of Stowmarket in Suffolk, in which living he had remained ever since, with the reputation of being one of the most solid and learned Puritans among the English parish clergy. The famous Smectymnuan pamphlet in reply to Hall was mainly Young's. What is more interesting is that his old pupil Milton was secretly in partnership with him and his brother-Smectymnuans, Milton's hand is discernible in a portion of the original Smectymnuan pamphlet; and he continued to aid the Smectymnuans in their subsequent rejoinders to Hall's defences of himself. It was more in Milton's way, however, to appear in print independently ; and in May 1641, while the controversy between Hall and the Smectymnuans was going on, he put forth a pamphlet of his own. It was entitled Of Reformation touching Church Discipline in England and the Causes that have hitherto hindered it, and consisted of a review of English ecclesiastical history, with an appeal to his countrymen to resume that course of reformation which he considered to have been prematurely stopped in the preceding century, and to sweep away the last relics of papacy and prelacy. Among all the root-and-branch pamphlets of the time it stood out, and stands out still, as the most thorough-going and tremendous. It was followed by four others in rapid succession,—to wit, Of Prelatical Episcopacy and whether it may be deduced from the Apostolical Times (June 1641), Animadversions upon the Remonstrant's Defence against Smectymnuus (July 1641), The Reason of Church Govern- ment urged against Prelaty (February 1641-42), Apology against a Pamphlet called a Modest Confutation of the Animadversions, &c. (March 1641-42). The first of these was directed chiefly against that middle party which advocated a limited Episcopacy, with especial reply to the arguments of Archbishop Ussher, as the chief exponent of the views of that party. Two of the others, as the titles imply, belong to the Smectymnuan series, and were castigations of Bishop Hall. The greatest of the four, and the most important of all Milton's anti-Episcopal pamphlets after the first, is that entitled The Reason of

Church Government. It is there that Milton takes his readers into his confidence, speaking at length of himself and his motives in becoming a controversialist. Poetry, he declares, was his real vocation; it was with reluctance that he had resolved to "leave a calm and pleasing solitariness, fed with cheerful and confident thoughts, to embark in a troubled sea of noises and hoarse disputes"; but duty had left him no option. The great poem or poems he had been meditat- ing could wait; and meanwhile, though in prose-polemics he had the use only of his "left hand," that hand should be used with all its might in the cause of his country and of liberty.

The parliament had advanced in the root-and-branch direction so far as to have passed a bill for the exclusion of bishops from the House of Lords, and compelled the king's assent to that bill, when, in August 1642, the further struggle between Charles and his subjects took the form of civil war. All England was then divided into the Royalists, supporting the king, and the Parliamentarians, adhering to that majority of the Commons, with a minority of the Lords, which sat on as the parliament. While the first battles of the civil war were being fought with varying success, this parliament, less impeded than when it had been full, moved on more and more rapidly in the root-and-branch direction, till, by midsummer 1643, the abolition of Episcopacy had been decreed, and the question of the future non-prelatic constitution of the Church of England referred to a synod of divines, to meet

at Westminster under parliamentary authority. Of Milton's life through those first months of the civil war little is known. He remained in his housc in Aldersgate Street, teaching his nephews and other pupils; and the only scrap that came from his pen was the semi-jocose sonnet bearing the title When the Assault was intended to the City. In the summer of 1643, however, there was a great change in the Aldersgate Street household. About the end of May, as his nephew Edward Phillips remembered, Milton went away ona country journey, without saying whither or for what purpose; and, when he returned, about a month afterwards, it was with a young wife, and with some of her sisters and other relatives in her company. He had, in fact, been in the very headquarters of the king and the Royalist army in and round Oxford; and the bride he

-brought back with him was a Mary Powell, the eldest

daughter of Richard Powell, Esq., of Forest Hill, near Oxford. She was the third of a family of eleven sons and daughters, of good standing, but in rather embarrassed circumstances, and was seventeen years and four months old, while Milton was in his thirty-fifth year. However the marriage came about, it was a most unfortunate event. The Powell family were strongly Royalist, and the girl herself seems to have been frivolous, unsuitable, and stupid. Hardly were the honeymoon festivities over in Aldersgate Street when, her sisters and other relatives having returned to Forest Hill and left her alone with her husband, she pined for home again and begged to be allowed to go back on a visit. Milton consented, on the understanding that the visit was to be a brief one. This seems to have been in July 1643. Soon, however, the intimation from Forest Hill was that he need not look ever to have his wife in his house again. The resolution seems to have been mainly the girl's own, abetted by her mother; but, as the king's cause was then prospering in the field, it is a fair conjecture that the whole of the Powell family had repented of their sudden connexion with so prominent a Parliamentarian and assailant of the Church of England as Milton, While his wife was away, his old father, who had been residing for three years with his younger and lawyer son at Reading, caine to take up his quarters in Aldersgate Street.

Milton's conduct under the insult of his wife's desertion was most characteristic. Always fearless and speculative, he converted his own case into a public protest against the existing law and theory of marriage. The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce Restored, to the good of both Seaes, was the title of a pamphlet put forth by him in August 1643, without his name, but with no effort at concealment, declar- ing the notion of a sacramental sanctity in the marriage relation to be a clerically invented superstition, and arguing that inherent incompatibility of character, or contrariety of mind, between two married persons, is a perfectly just reason for divorce. 'There was no reference to his own case, except by implication; but the boldness of the speculation roused attention and sent a shock through London. It was a time when the authors of heresies of this sort, or of any sort, ran considerable risks. The famous Westminster Assembly of Divines, called by the Long Parliament, had met on the appointed day, July 1, 1643;

the Scots, in consenting to send an army into England to assist the parliament in their war with the king, had proposed, as one of the conditions, their Solemn League and Covenant, binding the two nations to endeavour after a uniformity of religion and of ecclesiastical discipline, with the extirpation of all "heresy, schism, and profane- ness," as well as popery and prelacy; the Solemn League and Covenant had been enthusiastically accepted in England, and was being sworn to universally by the Parliamentarians ; and one immediate cffect was that four eminent Scottish

divines and two Scottish lay commissioners were added to the Westminster Assembly and became leaders there. Whether Milton's divorce tract was formally discussed in the Assembly during the first months of its sitting is unknown; but it is certain that the London clergy, including not a few members of the Assembly, were then talking about it privately with anger and execration. That there might be no obstacle to a more public prosecu- tion, Milton threw off the anonymous in a second and much enlarged edition of the tract, in February 1643-44, dedicated openly to the parliament and the Assembly. Then, for a month or two, during which the gossip about him and his monstrous doctrine was spreading more and more, he turned his attention to other subjects. Among the questions in agitation in the general ferment of opinion brought about by the civil war was that of a reform of the national system of education and especially of the universities. To this question Milton made a contribution in June 1644, ina small Zract on Education, in the form of a letter to Mr Samuel Hartlib, a German then resident in London and interesting himself busily in all philanthropic projects and schemes of social reform. In the very next month, however, July 1644, he returned to the divorce subject in a pamphlet addressed specially to the clergy and entitled The Judgment of Martin Bucer concerning Divorce. The outcry against him then reached its height. Te was attacked in pamphlets; he was denounced in pulpits all through London, and more than once in sermons before the two Houses of Parliament by prominent divines of the Westminster Assembly ; strenuous efforts were made to bring him within definite parliamentary ccnsure. In the cabal formed against him for this purpose a leading part was played, at the instigation of the clergy, by the Stationers' Company of London. That company, represent- ing the publishers and booksellers of London, had a plea of their own against him, on the ground that his doctrine was not only immoral, but had been put forth in an illegal manner. His first divorce treatise, though published imme- diately after the "Printing Ordinance" of the parliament of June 14, 1643, requiring all publications to be licensed for press by-one of the official censors, and to be registered in the books of the Stationers' Company, had been issued without licence and without registration. Complaint to this effect was made against Milton, with some

others hable to the same charge of contempt of the printing ordinance, in a petition of the Stationers to the House of Commons in August 1644; and the matter came before comnuittee both in that House and in the Lords. It is to this circumstance that the world owes the most popular and eloquent, if not the greatest, of all Milton's prose-writings, his famous Areopagitica, a Speech of Mr John Milton for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing to the Parliament of England. It appeared in the end of November 1644, deliberately unlicensed and unregistered, as was proper on such an occasion, and was a remonstrance addressed to the parliament, as if in an oration to them face to face, against their ordinance of June 1643 and the whole system of licensing and censorship of the press. Nobly eulogistic of the parliament in other respects, it denounced their printing ordinance as utterly unworthy of them, and of the new era of English liberties which they were initiating, and called for its repeal. Though that effect did not follow, the pamphlet virtually accomplished its purpose. The licensing system had received its death- blow; and, though the Stationers returned to the charge in another complaint to the House of Lords, Milton's offence against the press ordinance was condoned. He was still assailed in pamphlets, and found himself 'in a world of disesteem " ; but he lived on through the winter of 1644-45 undisturbed in lis house in Aldersgate Street.

To this |

MiL?Tow

period there belong, in the shape of verse, only his sonnets ix. and x., the first to some anonymous lady, and the second "to the Lady Margaret Ley," with perhaps the Greck lines entitled Philosophus ad Regem Quendam. His divorce speculation, however, still occupied him ; and in March 1644-45 he published simultaneously his Tetrachordon, or Expositions upon the four chief places of Scripture which treat of Marriage, and his Colasterion, a Reply to a nameless Answer against the Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce. In these he replied to his chief recent assailants, lay and clerical, with merciless severity. It was not merely Milton's intellectual eminence that had saved him from prosecution for his divorce heresy. A new tendency of national opinion on the church question had operated in his favour, and in favour of all forms of free speculation. There had occurred in the

Westminster Assembly itself, and more largely throughout the general community, that split of English Puritanism into the two opposed varieties of Presbyterianism on the one hand and Independency or Congregationalism on the other which explains the whole subsequent history of the Puritan revo- lution. Out of this theoretical discussion as to the con- stitution of the church there had grown the all-important practical question of toleration. The Presbyterians insisted that the whole population of England should necessarily belong to the one national Presbyterian Church, be coni- pelled to attend its worship, and be subject to its discipline, while the Independents demanded that, if a Presbyterian Church should be set up as the national and state-paid church, there should at least be liberty of dissent from it, and toleration for those that chose to form themselves into separate congregations. Vehement within the West- minster Assembly itself, the controversy had attained wider dimensions out of doors, and had inwrought itself 'na most remarkable manner with the conduct of the war. Orthodox Presbyterian Calvinists were still the majority of the Puritan body ; but, in the new atmosphere of liberty, there had sprung up, from secret and long-suppressed seeds in the English mind, a wonderful variety of sects and denominations, mingling other elements with their Calvinism, or hardly Calvinistic at all,—most of them, it is true, fervidly Biblical and Christian after their different sorts, but not a few professing the most coolly inquisitive and sceptical spirit, and pushing their speculations to strange extremes of free-thinking. These sects, growing more and more numerous in the large towns, had become especially powerful in the English Parliamentary army. That army had, in fact, become a marching academy of advanced opinionists and theological debaters. Now, as all the new Puritan sects, differimg however much among themselves, saw their existence and the perpetuity of their tenets threatened by that system of ecclesiastical uniformity which the Presbyterians proposed to establish, they had, one and all, abjured Presbyterianism, and adopted the opposite principle of Independency, with its appended principle of toleration. Hence an extraordinary conflict of policies aniong those who seemed to be all Parliamen- tarians, all united in fighting against the king. The auxiliary Scottish army, which had come into England in January 1643-44, and had helped the English generals to beat the king in the great battle of Marston Moor in July 1644, thought that he had then been almost sufficiently beaten, and that the object of the Solemn League and Covenant

would be best attained by bringing him to such terms as should secure an immediate Presbyterian settle- ment and the suppression of the Independents and sectaries. In this the chief English commanders, such as Essex and Manchester, agreed substantially with the Scots. Cromwell, on the other hand, who was now the recognized head of the army Independents, did not think that the king had

been sufficiently beaten, even for the general purposes of the war, and was resolved that the war should be pushed on to a point at which a Presbyterian settlement should be impossible without guarantees for liberty of conscience and a toleration of non-Presbyterian sects. Through the latter part of 1644, accordingly, Milton had been saved from the penalties which his Presbyterian opponents would have inflicted on him by this general championship of liberty of opinion by Cromwell and the army Independents. Before the middle of 1645 he, with others who were on the black books of the Presbyterians as heretics, was safer still, 'Though the parliament had voted, in January 1644-45, that the future national church of England should be on the Presbyterian system, Cromwell and the Inde- pendents had taken care to have the question of tolera- tion left open; and, within the next month or two, by Cromwell's exertions, a completely new face was put upon the war by the removal of all the chief officers that had been in command hitherto, and the equipment of the New Model army, with Fairfax as its commander-in-chief and Cromwell himself as lieutenant-general. The Scots and the stricter English Presbyterians looked on malignantly while this army took the field, calling it an " Army of Sectaries," and almost hoping it would be beaten. On June 14, 1645, however, there was fought the great battle of Naseby, utterly ruining the king at last, and leaving only relics of his forces here and there. Milton's position then may be easily understood. Though his first tendency on the church question had been to some form of a Presbyterian constitution for the church, he had parted utterly now from the Scots and Presbyterians, and become a partisan of Independency, having no dread of "sects and schisms," but regarding them rather as healthy signs in the English body-politic. He was, indeed, himself one of the most noted sectaries of the time, for in the lists of sects drawn out by contemporary Presbyterian writers

special mention is made of one small sect who were known as Miltonists or Dworcers.

So far as Milton was concerned personally, his interest in the divorce speculation came to an end in July or August 1645, when, by friendly interference, a reconcilia- tion was effected between him and his wife. The ruin of the king's cause at Naseby had suggested to the Powells that it might be as well for their daughter to go back to her husband after their two years of separation. It was not, however, in the house in Aldersgate Street that she rejoined him, but in a larger house, which he had taken in the adjacent street called Barbican, for the accommodation of an increasing number of pupils.

The house in Barbican was tenanted by Milton from about August 1645 to September or October 1647. Among his first occupations there must have been the revision of the proof sheets of the first edition of his collected poems. It appeared as a tiny volume, copies of which are now very rare, with the title Poems of Mr John Milton, both English and Latin, composed at several times. The title-page gives the date 1645, but January 1645-46 seenis to have been the exact month of the publication. The appearance of the volume indicates that Milton may have been a little tired by this time of his notoriety as a prose-polemic, and desirous of being recognized once more in his original character of literary man and poet, But, whether because his pedagogic duties now engrossed him or for other reasons, very few new pieces were added in the Barbican to those that the little volume had thus made public. In English, there were only the four sonnets now numbered xi.—xiv., the first two entitled "'On the Detraction which followed upon my writing certain Treatises," the third "To Mr Henry Lawes on his Airs," and the fourth "To the Religious Memory of Mrs Catherine Thomson," together with the

powerful anti-Presbyterian invective or "tailed sonnet" entitled "On the New Forcers of Conscience under the Long Parliament"; and in Latin there were only the ode Ad Joannem fousium, the trifle called Apologus de Rustico et Hero, and one interesting Familiar Epistle addressed to his Florentine friend Carlo Dati. Some family incidents of importance,

however, appertain to this time of residence in Barbican. Oxford having surrendered to Fairfax in June 1646, the whole of the Powell family had to seek refuge in London, and most of them found shelter in Milton's house. His first child, a daughter named Anne, was born there on the 29th of July that year; on the Ist of January 1646-47 his father-in-law Mr Powell died there, leaving his affairs in confusion ; and in the following March his own father died there, at the age of eighty-four, and was buried in the adjacent church of St Giles, Cripplegate. For the rest, the two yearsin Barbican are nearly blank in Milton's biography. The great Revolution was still running its course. For a time Charles's surrender of himself, in May 1646, to the auxiliary Scottish army rather than to Fairfax and Cromwell, and his residence with that Scottish army at Newcastle in negotiation with the Scots, had given the Presbyterians the advantage ; but, after the Scots had evacuated England in January 1646-47, leaving Charles a captive with his English subjects, and especially after the English army had seized him at Holmby in June 1647 and undertaken the further management of the treaty with him, the advantage was all the other way. It was a satisfaction to Milton, and perhaps still a protection for him, that the ' Army of Independents and Sectaries" had come to be really the masters of England,

From Barbican Milton removed, in September or October 1647, to a smaller house in that part of High Holborn which adjoins Lincoln's Inn Fields. His Powell relatives had now left him, and he had reduced the number of his pupils, or perhaps kept only his twe nephews. But, though thus more at leisure, he did not yet resume his projected poem, but occupied himself rather with three works of scholarly labour which he had already for some time had on hand. One was the com- pilation in English of a complete history of England, or rather of Great Britain, from the earliest times; another was the preparation in Latin of a complete system of divinity, drawn directly from the Bible ; and the third was the collection of materials for a new Latin dictionary. Milton had always a fondness for such labours of scholar- ship and compilation. Of a poetical kind there is nothing to record, during his residence in High Holborn, but an experiment in psalm-translation, in the shape of Psalms Ixxx.-Ixxxviil. done into service-metre in April 1648, and the Sonnet to Fairfax, written in September of the same year.—This last connects him again with the course of public affairs. The king, having escaped from the custody of the army chiefs, and taken refuge

in the Isle of Wight, had been committed to closer custody there ; all negotia- tion between him and parliament had been declared at an end; and the result would probably have been his deposi- tion, but for the Consequences of a secret treaty he had contrived to make with the Scots. By this treaty the Scots engaged to invade England in the king's behalf, rescue him from the English parliament and army, and restore him to his full royalty, while he engaged in return to ratify the Covenant, the Presbyterian system of church government, and all the other conclusions of the West- minster Assembly, throughout England, and to put down Independency and the sects. Thus, in May 1648, began what is called the Second Civil War, consisting first of new risings of the Royalists in various parts of England, and then of a conjunction of these with a great invasion

do2

of England by a Royalist Scottish army, under the command of the duke of Hamilton. It was all over in August 1648, when the crushing defeat of the Scottish army by Cromwell in the three days' battle of Preston, and the simultaneous suppression of the English Royalist insur- rection in the south-east counties by Fairfax's siege and capture of Colchester, left Charles at the mercy of the victors.—Milton's Sonnet to Fairfax was a congratulation to that general-in-chief of the parliament on his success at Colchester, and attested the exultation of the writer over the triumph of the Parlamentary cause. His exultation continued through what followed. After one more dying effort of the parliament at negotiation with Charles, the army took the whole business on itself. The king was prought from the Isle of Wight ; the parliament, manipu- lated by the army officers, and purged of all members likely to impede the army's purpose, was converted into an instrument for that purpose; a court of high justice was set up for the trial of Charles; and on January 30, 1648-49, he was brought to the scaffold in front of Whitehall. By that act England became a republic, governed, without King or House of Lords, by the persever- ing residue or "Rump" of the recent House of Commons, in conjunction with an executive council of state, composed of forty-one members appointed annually by that House.

The first Englishman of mark out of parliament to attach himself openly to the new republic was John Milton, This he did by the publication of his

pamphlet entitled Tenure of Kings and Magistrates, proving that ut 1s lawful, and hath been held so in all ages, for any who have the power, to call to account a Tyrant or wicked King, and, after due conviction, to depose and put him to death, vf the ordinary Magistrate have neglected to do it. It was out within a fortnight after the king's death, and was Milton's last performance in the house in High Holborn. The chiefs of the new republic could not but perceive the importance of securing the services of a man who had so opportunely and so powerfully spoken out in favour of their tremendous act, and who was otherwise so distinguished. In March 1648-49, accordingly, Milton was offered, and accepted, the secretaryship for foreign tongues to the council of state of the new Commonwealth. The salary was to be £288 a year, worth about £1000 a year now. To be near his new duties in attendance on the council, which held its daily sittings for the first few weeks in Derby House, close to Whitehall, but afterwards regularly in Whitehall itself, he removed at once to temporary lodgings at Charing Cross. In the very first meetings of council which Milton attended he must have made personal acquaintance with President Bradshaw, Fairfax, Cromwell himself, Sir Henry Vane, Whitlocke, Henry Marten, Hasilrig, Sir Gilbert Pickering, and the other chiefs of the council and the Commonwealth, if indeed he had not known some of them before. After a little while, for his greater convenience, official apartments were assigned him in Whitehall itself.

At the date of Milton's appointment to the secretaryship he was forty years of age. His special duty was the drafting of such letters as were sent by the council of state, or sometimes by the Rump Parliament, to foreign states and princes, with the examination and translation of letters in reply, and with personal conferences, when necessary, with the agents of foreign powers in London, and with envoys and ambassadors. As Latin was the language employed in the written diplomatic documents, his post came to be known indifferently as the secretaryship for foreign tongues or the Latin secrctaryship. In that post, however, his duties, more particularly at first, were very light in comparison with those of his official colleague, Mr Walter Frost, the general secretary. Foreign powers held aloof from the English republic as much as they could ;

Mir or

and, while Mr Frost had to be present in every meeting of the council, keeping the minutes, and conducting all the gencral correspondence, Milton's presence was required only when some piece of foreign business did turn up. Hence, from the first, his employment in very miscel- lancous work. Especially, the council looked to him for everything in the nature of literary vigilance and literary help in the interests of the struggling Commonwealth. He was employed in the examination of suspected papers, and in interviews with their authors and printers; and he executed several great literary commissions expressly entrusted to him by the council. The first of these was his pamphlet entitled Observations on Ormond's Articles of Peace with the Irish Rebels. It was published in May 1649, and was in defence of the republic against a complication of Royalist intrigues and dangers in Ireland. A passage of remarkable interest in it is one of eloquent eulogy on Cromwell. More important still was the Eikonoklastes (which may be translated " Image-Smasher "), published by Milton in October 1649, by way of counterblast. to the famous ikon Basilike ("Royal Image"), which had been in circulation in thousands of copies since the king's death, and had become a kind of Bible in all Royalist households, on the supposition that it had been written by the royal martyr himself. A third piece of work was of a more laborious nature. In the end of 1649 there appeared abroad, under the title of Defensio Regia pro Carolo I., a Latin vindication of the memory of Charles, with an attack on the English Com- monwealth, intended for circulation on the Continent. 'As it had been written, at the instance of the exiled royal family, by Salmasius, or Claude de Saumaise, of Leyden, then of enormous celebrity over Europe as the greatest scholar of his age, it was regarded as a serious blow to the infant Commonwealth. To answer it was thought a task worthy of Milton, and he threw his whole strength into the performance through the year 1650, interrupting himself only by a new and enlarged edition of his Likonoklastes. Not till April 1651 did the result appear ; but then the suc- cess was prodigious. Milton's Latin Pro Populo Anglicans Defensio, as it was called, ran at once over the British Islands and the Continent, rousing acclamation everywhere, and received by scholars as an annihilation of the great Salmasius. Through the rest of 1651 the observation was that the two agencies which had co-operated most visibly in raising the reputation of the Commonwealth abroad were Milton's books and Cromwell's battles.—These battles of Cromwell, in the service of the Commonwealth he had founded,

had kept him absent from the council of state, of which he was still a member, since shortly after the beginning of Milton's secretaryship. or nearly a year he had been in Ireland, as lord lieutenant, reconquering that country after its long rebellion; and then, for another year, he had been in Scotland, crushing the Royalist commotion there round Charles IJ., and annexing Scotland to the English republic. The annexation was complete on the 3d of September 1651, when Cromwell, chasing Charles II. and his army out of Scotland, came up with them at Worcester and gained his crowning victory. The Commonwealth then consisted of England, Ireland, and Scotland, and Cromwell was its supreme chief—Through the eventful year 1651, it has been recently ascertained, Milton had added to the other duties of his secretaryship that of Government journalist. Through the whole of that year, if not from an earlier period, he acted as licenser and superintending editor of the Mercwrius Politicus, a news- paper issued twice a week, of which Mr Marchamont Needham was the working editor and proprietor. Milton's hand is discernible in some of the leading articles.

About the end of 1651 Milton left his official rooms in

Whitehall for a house he had taken on the edge of St James's Park, in what was then called Petty France, Westnuinster, but is now York Street. The house existed till the other day, but has been pulled down. In Milton's time it was a villa-looking residence, with a garden, in a neighbourhood of villas and gardens, He had now more to do in the special work of his office, in consequence of the increase of correspondence with foreign powers. But he had for some time been in ailing health; and a dimness of eyesight which had been growing upon him gradually for ten years had been settling rapidly, since his Jabour over the answer to Salmasius, into total blindness. Actually, before or about May 1652, when he was but in his forty-fourth year, his blindness was total, and he could go about only with some one to lead him. Hence a re- arrangement of his secretarial duties. Such of these duties as he could perform at home, or by occasional visits to the Council Office near, he continued to perform ; but much of the routine work was done for him by assistants, one of them a well-known German named Weckherlin, under the superintendence of Mr John Thurloe, who had

succeeded Mr Walter Frost in the general secretaryship. Precisely to this time of a lull in Milton's secretaryship on account of his ill-health and blindness we have to refer his two great companion sonnets Zo the Lord General Cromwell and Zo Sir Henry Vane the Younger. To about the same time, or more precisely to the interval between May and September 1652, though the exact date is uncertain, we have to refer the death of his only son, who had been born in his official Whitehall apartments in the March of the preceding year, and the death also of his wife, just after she had given birth to his third daughter, Deborah. With the three children thus left him,—Anne, but six years old, Mary, not four, and the infant Deborah,—the blind widower lived on in his house in Petty France in such desolation as can be imagined. He had recovered suffici- ently to resume his secretarial duties; and the total num- ber of his dictated state letters for the single year 1652 is equal to that of all the state letters of his preceding term of secretaryship put together. To the same year there belong also three of his Latin Yamiliar Epistles. In December 1652 there was published Joannis Philippr Angli Responsio ad Apologiam Anonymt Cujusdam Tene- brionis, being a reply by Milton's younger nephew, John Phillips, but touched up by Milton himself, to one of several pamphlets that had appeared against Milton for his slaughter of Salmasius. The ablest and most scurrilous of these, which had just appeared anonymously at the Hague, with the title Regi Sanguinis Clamor ad Colum adversus Parricidas Anglicanos ("Cry of the Royal Blood to Heaven against the English Parricides"), Milton was reserving for his own attention at his leisure.

On the 20th of April 1653 there was Cromwell's great act of armed interference by which he turned out the small remnant of the Rump Parliament, dismissed their council of state, and assumed the government of England, Ireland, and Scotland into his own hands. For several months, indeed, he acted only as interim dictator, governing by a council of his officers, and waiting for the conclusions of that select body of advisers which he had called together from all parts of the country, and which the Royalists nicknamed "The Barebones Parliament." In December 1653, however, his formal sovereignty began under the name of the Protectorate, passing gradually into more than kingship. This change from government by the Rump and its council. to government by a single military Lord Protector and his council was regarded by many as treason to the

republican cause, and divided those who had hitherto been the united Commonwealth's men into the " Pure Re- publicans," represented by such men as Bradshaw and Vane,

and the " Oliverians," adhering to the Protector. Milton, whose boundless admiration of Cromwell had shown itself already in his Irish tract of 1649 and in his recent sonnet, was recognized as one of the Oliverians. He remained in Oliver's service and was his Latin secretary through the whole of the Protectorate. For a while, indeed, his Latin letters to foreign states in Cromwell's name were but few,— Mr Thurloe, as general secretary, officiating as Oliver's right-hand man in everything, with a Mr Philip Meadows under him, at a salary of £200 a year, as deputy for the blind Mr Milton in foreign correspondence and translations. The reason for this temporary exemption of Milton from routine duty may have been that he was then engaged on an answer, by commission from the late Government, to the already-mentioned pamphlet from the Hague entitled Regit Sanguinis Clamor. Salmasius was now dead, and the Commonwealth was too stable to suffer from such attacks ; but no Royalist pamphlet had appeared so able or so venomous as this in continuation of the Salmasian controversy. All the rather because it was in the main a libel on Milton himself did a reply from his pen seem necessary, It came out in May 1654, with the title Joannis Miltont Angli pro Populo Anglicano Defensio Secunda ("Second Defence of John Milton, Englishman, for the People of England"). It is one of the most inter- esting of all Milton's writings. The author of the libel to which it replied was Dr Peter du Moulin the younger, a naturalized French Presbyterian minister, then moving about in English society, close to Milton ; but, as that was a profound secret, and the work was universally attributed on the Continent to an Alexander Morus, a French minister of Scottish descent, then of much oratorical celebrity in Holland,—who had certainly managed the printing in consultation with the now deceased Salmasius, and had contributed some portion of the matter,—Milton had made this Morus the responsible person and the one object of his castigations. They were frightful enough. If Salmasius had been slaughtered in the former Defensio, Morus was murdered and gashed in this. His moral character was blasted by exposure of his antecedents, and he was blazoned abroad in Europe as a

detected clerical blackguard. The terrific castigation of Morus, however, is but part of the Defensio Secunda. It contains passages of singular autobiographical and historical value, and includes laudatory sketches of such eminent Common- wealth's men as Bradshaw, Fairfax, Fleetwood, Lambert, and Overton, together with a long panegyric on Cromwell himself and his career, which remains to this day unap- proached for elaboration and grandeur by any estimate of Cromwell from any later pen. From about the date of the publication of the Defensio Secunda to the beginning of 1655 the only specially literary relics of Milton's life are his translations of Psalms i.—viii. in different metres, done in August 1654, his translation of Horace's Ode i. 5, done probably about the same time, and two of his Latin Familiar Epistles. The most active time of his secretary- ship for Oliver was from April 1655 onwards. In that month, in the course of a general revision of official salaries under the Protectorate, Milton's salary of £288 a year hitherto was reduced to £200 a year, with a kind of re- definition of his office, recognizing it, we may say, as a Latin secretaryship extraordinary. Mr Philip Meadows was to continue to do all the ordinary Foreign Office work, under Thurloe's inspection; but Milton was to be called in on special occasions. Hardly was the arrangement made when a, signal occasion did occur. In May 1655 all England was horrified by the news of the massacre of the Vaudois Protestants by the troops of Emanuele IL., duke of Savoy and prince of Piedmont, in consequence of their disobedience to an edict requiring them either to leave

aot Min? OR

their native valleys or to conform to the Catholic religion. Cromwell and his council took the matter up with all their energy ; and the burst of indignant letters on the subject despatched in that month and the next to the duke of Savoy himself, Louis XIV. of France, Cardinal Mazarin, the Swiss cantons, the States-General of the United Provinces, and the kings of Sweden and Denmark, were all by Milton. His famous sonnet On the late Massacre in Piedmont was his more private expression of feeling on the same occasion. This sonnet was in circulation, and the case of the Vaudois Protestants was still occupying Cromwell, when, in August 1655, there appeared the last of Milton's great Latin pamphlets. It was his Pro Se Defensio, in answer to an elaborate self-defence which Morus had put forth on the Continent since

Milton's attack on his character, and it con- sisted mainly of a re-exposure of that unfortunate clergy- man. 'Thence, through the rest of Cromwell's Protectorate, Milton's life was of comparatively calm tenor. He was in much better health than usual, bearing his blindness with courage and cheerfulness ; he was steadily busy with such more important despatches to foreign powers as the Pro- tector, then in the height of his great foreign policy, and regarded with fear and deference by all European monarchs and states from Gibraltar to the Baltic, chose to confide to him ; and his house in Petty France seems to have been, more than at any previous time since the beginning of his blindness, a meeting-place for friends and visitors, and a scene of pleasant hospitalities. The four sonnets now numbered xix.—xxii., one of them to young Mr Lawrence, the son of the president of Cromwell's council, and two of the others to Cyriack Skinner, belong to this time of domestic

quiet, as do also no fewer than ten of his Latin Familiar |

Epistles. His second marriage belongs to the same years, and gleams even yet as the too brief consummation of this happiest time in the blind man's life. The name of his second wife was Katharine Woodcock. He married her on the 12th of November 1656; but, after only fifteen months, he was again a widower, by her death in childbirth in February 1657-58. The child dying with her, only the three daughters by the first marriage remained. The touching sonnet which closes the series of Milton's Sonnets is his sacred tribute to the memory on his second marriage and to the virtues of the wife he had so soon lost. Even after that loss we find him still busy for Cromwell. Mr Meadows having been sent off on diplomatic missions, Andrew Marvell had, in September 1657, been brought in, much to Milton's satisfaction, as his assistant or colleague in the Latin secretaryship; but this had by no means relieved him from duty. Some of his greatest despatches for Cromwell, including letters, of the highest importance, to Louis XIV., Mazarin, and Charles Gustavus of Sweden, belong to the year 1658.

One would like to know precisely in what personal relations Milton and Cromwell stood to each other. There is, unfortunately, no direct record to show what Cromwell thought of Milton; but there is ample record of what Milton thought of Cromwell. 'Our chief of men," he had called Cromwell in

his sonnet of May 1652; and the opinion remained unchanged. He thought Cromwell the greatest and best man of his generation, or of many generations ; and he regarded Cromwell's assumption of the supreme power, and his retention of that power with a sovereign title, as no real suppression of the republic, but as absolutely necessary for the preservation of the republic, and for the safeguard of the British Islands against a return of the Stuarts. Nevertheless, under this prodigious admiration of Cromwell, there were political doubts and reserves. Milton was so much of a modern radical of the extreme school in his own political views and sympathies that he cannot but have been vexed by the growing con-

servatism of Cromwell's policy through his Protectorate. To his grand panegyric on Oliver in the Defensio Secunda of 1654 he had ventured to append cautions against self-will, over-legislation, and over-policing ; and he cannot have thought that Oliver had been immaculate in these respects through the four subsequent years. The attempt to revive an aristocracy and a House of Lords, on which Cromwell was latterly bent, cannot have been to Milton's taste. Above all, Milton dissented in toto from Cromwell's church policy. It was Milton's fixed idea, almost his deepest idea, that there should be no such thing as an Established Church, or state-paid clergy, of any sort or denomination or mixture of denominations, in any nation, and that, as it had been the connexion between church and state, begun by Constantine, that had vitiated Christianity in the world, and kept it vitiated, so Christianity would never flourish as it ought till there had been universal disestablishment and disendowment of the clergy, and the propagation of the gospel were left to the zeal of voluntary pastors, self-sup- ported, or supported modestly by their flocks. He had at one time looked to Cromwell as the likeliest man to carry this great revolution in England. But Cromwell, after much meditation on the subject in 1652 and 1653, had come to the opposite conclusion. The conservation of the Established Church of England, in the form of a broad union of all evangelical denominations of Christians, whether Presbyterians, or Independents, or Baptists, or moderate Old Anglicans, that would accept state-pay with state- control, had been the fundamental notion of his Protec- torate, persevered in to the end. This must have been Milton's deepest disappointment with the Oliverian rule. Cromwell's death on the 3d of September 1658 left the Protectorship to his son Richard. Milton and Marvell continued in their

posts, and a number of the Foreign Office letters of the new Protectorate were of Milton's composition. Thinking the time fit, he also put forth, in October 1658, a new edition of his Defensio Prima, and, early in 1659, a new English pamphlet, entitled Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes, ventilating those notions of his as to the separation of church and state which he had been obliged of late to keep to himself. To Richard's Protectorate also belongs one of Milton's Latin Familiar Epistles. Meanwhile, though all had seemed quiet round Richard at first, the jealousies of the army officers left about him by Oliver, and the conflict of political elements let loose by Oliver's death, were preparing his downfall. In May 1659 Richard's Protectorate was at an end. The country had returned with pleasure to what was called "the good old cause" of pure republicanism ; and the government was in the hands of "the Restored Rump," consisting of the reassembled remains of that Rump Parlia- ment which Cromwell had dissolved in 1653. To this change, as inevitable in the circumstances, or even promis- ing, Milton adjusted himself. The last of his known official performances in his Latin secretaryship are two letters in the name of William Lenthall, as the speaker of the restored Rump, one to the king of Sweden and one to the king of Denmark, both dated May 15, 1659. Under the restored Rump, if ever, he seemed to have a chance for his notion of church-disestablishment ; and, accordingly, in August 1659, he put forth, with a prefatory address to that body, a large pamphlet entitled Considerations touching the likeliest means to remove Hirelings. out of the Church. The restored Rump had no time to attend to such matters. They were in struggle for their own existence with the army chiefs; and the British Islands were in that state of hopeless confusion and anarchy which, after passing through a brief phase of attempted military government (October to December 1659), and a second revival of the purely republican or Rump government (December 1659 to

February 1659-60), issued in Monk's march from Scotland, assumption of the dictatorship in London, and recall of all the survivors of the original Long Parliament to enlarge the Rump to due dimensions and assist him in

further delibera- tions. Through all this anarchy the Royalist elements had been mustering themselves, and the drift tothe restoration of the Stuart dynasty, as the only possible or feasible con- clusion, had become apparent. To prevent that issue, to argue against it and fight against it to the last, was the work to which Milton had then set himself. His dis- establishment notion and all his other notions had been thrown aside ; the preservation of the republic in any form, and by any compromise of differences within itself, had become his one thought, and the study of practical means to this end his most anxious occupation. In a Letter toa Friend concerning the Ruptures of the Commonwealth, written in October 1659, he had propounded a scheme of a kind of dual government for reconciling the army chiefs with the Rump ; through the following winter, marked only by two of his Latin Familiar Epistles, his anxiety over the signs of the growing enthusiasm throughout the country for the recall of Charles IJ. had risen to a kind of agony ; and early in March 1659-60 his agony found vent in a pamphlet of the most passionate vehemence entitled The Ready and Easy Way to Establish a Free Commonwealth, and the Excellence thereof compared with the Inconventences and Dangers of readmitting Kingship in this Nation. An abridgment of the practical substance of this pamphlet was addressed by him to General Monk in a letter entitled Zhe Present Means and Brief Delineation of a Free Common- wealth. Milton's proposal was that the central governing apparatus of the British Islands for the future should con- sist of one indissoluble Grand Council or parliament, which should include all the political chiefs, while there should bea large number of provincial councils or assemblies sitting in the great towns for the management of local and county affairs. The scheme, so far as the public attended to it at all, was received with laughter; the Royalist demonstrations were now fervid and tumultuous; and it remained only for the new and full parliament of two Houses which had been sum- moned under Monk's auspices, and which is now known as the Convention Parliament, to give effect to Monk's secret determination and the universal popular desire. Not even then would Milton be silent. In Brief Notes on a late Sermon, published in April 1660, in reply to a Royalist dis- course by a Dr Griffith, he made another protest against the recall of the Stuarts, even hinting that it would be better that Monk should become king himself; and in the same month he sent forth a second edition of his Ready and Easy Way, more frantically earnest than even the first, and containing additional

passages of the most violent denunciation of the royal family, and of prophecy of the degradation and disaster they would bring back with them. This was the dying effort. On the 25th of April the Con- vention Parliament met; on the Ist of May they resolved unanimously that the government by King, Lords, and Com- mons should be restored ; and on the 29th of May Charles IL made his triumphal entry into London. The chief republicans had by that time scattered themselves, and Milton was in hiding in an obscure part of the city.

How Milton escaped the scaffold at the Restoration is a mystery now, and was a mystery at the time. Actually, in the terrible course through the two Houses of the Con- vention Parliament of that Bill of Indemnity by which the fates of the surviving regicides and of so many others of the chief republican culprits were determined, Milton was named for special punishment. It was voted by the Commons that he should be taken into custody by the sergeant-at-arms, for prosecution by the attorney- general on account of his Zzkonoklastes and Defensio

Bist) Prima, and that all copies of those books should be called in and burnt by the hangman. There was, however, some powerful combination of friendly influences in his favour, with Monk probably abetting. At all events, on the 29th of August 1660, when the Indemnity Bill did come out complete, with the king's assent, granting full pardon to all for their past offences,. with the exception of about a hundred persons named in the bill itself for various degrees of punishment, thirty-four of them for death and twenty- six for the highest penalty short of death, Milton did not appear as one of the exceptions on any ground or in any of the grades. From that moment, therefore, he could emerge from his hiding, and go about as a free man. Not that he was yet absolutely safe. During the next two or three months London was in excitement over the trials of such of the excepted regicides and others as had not succeeded in escaping abroad, and the hangings and quarterings of ten of them; there were several public burnings by the hangman at the same time of Milton's condemned pamphlets; and the appearance of the blind man himself in the streets, though he was legally free, would have caused him to be mobbed and assaulted. Nay, notwithstanding the Indemnity Bill, he was in some legal danger to as late as December 1660. Though the special prosecution ordered against him by

the Commons had been quashed by the subsequent Indemnity Bill, the sergeant-at- arms had taken him into custody. Entries in the Com- mons journals of December 17 and 19 show that Milton complained of the sergeant-at-arms for demanding exorbi- tant fees for his release, and that the House arranged the matter.

Milton did not return to Petty France. For the first months after he was free he lived as closely as possible in a house near what is now Red Lion Square, Holborn. Thence he removed, apparently early in 1661, to a house in Jewin Street, in his old Aldersgate-Street and Barbican neighbourhood,

In Jewin Street Milton remained for two or three years, or from 1661 to 1664. They were the time of his deepest degradation, that time of which he speaks when he tells us how, by the Divine help, he had been able to persevere undauntedly—

*'*thouch fallen on evil days, On evil days though fallen, and evil tongues,*

In darkness, and with dangers compassed round, And solitude."

The "evil days" were those of the Restoration in its first or Clarendonian stage, with its revenges and reactions, its return to high Episcopacy and suppression of every form of dissent and sectarianism, its new and shamcless royal court, its open proclamation and practice of anti-Puritanism in morals and in literature no less than in politics. For the main part of this world of the Restora- tion Milton was now nothing more than an infamous outcast, the detestable blind republican and regicide who had, by too great clemency, been left unhanged. The friends that adhered to him still, and came to see him in Jewin Street, were few in number, and chiefly from the ranks of those nonconforming denominations, Independ- ents, Baptists, or Quakers, who were themselves undcr similar obloquy. Besides his two nephews, the faithful Andrew Marvell, Cyriack Skinner, and some others of his former admirers, English or foreign, we hear chiefly of a Dr Nathan Paget, who was a physician in the Jewin- Street neighbourhood, and of several young men who would drop in upon him by turns, partly to act as his amanuenscs, and partly for the benefit of lessons from him,—one of them an interesting Quaker youth, named Thomas Ellwood. With all this

genuine attachment to him of a select few, Milton could truly enough describe his condition after

the Restoration as one of "solitude." Nor was this the worst. His three daughters, on whom he ought now to have been able principally to depend, were his most serious domestic trouble. The poor motherless girls, the eldest in her seventeenth year in 1662, the second in her fifteenth, and the youngest in her eleventh, had grown up, in their father's blindness and too great self-absorption, ill-looked- after and but poorly educated; and the result now appeared, They "made nothing of neglecting him # s they rebelled against the drudgery of reading to him or other- wise attending on him; they "did combine together and

counsel his maid-servant to cheat him in her marketings" ;

they actually "had made away some of his books, and would have sold the rest." It was to remedy this horrible state of things that Milton consented to a third mar- riage. The wife found for him was Elizabeth Minshull, of a good Cheshire family, and a relative of Dr Paget's. They were married on the 24th of February 1662-63, the wife being then only in her twenty-fifth year, while Milton was in his fifty-fifth. She proved an excellent wife ; and the Jewin Street household, though the daughters remained in it, must have been under better management from the time of her entry into it. From that date Milton's circum- stances must have been more comfortable, and his thoughts about himself less abject, than they had been through the two preceding years, though his feeling in the main must have been still that of his own Samson :— " Now blind, disheartened, shamed, dishonoured, quelled,

To what can I be useful ? wherein serve

My nation, and the work from heaven imposed ?

But to sit idle on the houschold hearth,

A burdenous drone, to visitants a gaze,

Or pitied object." That might be the appearance, but it was not the reality. All the while of his seeming degradation he had found some solace in renewed industry of various kinds among his books and tasks of scholarship, and all the while, more particularly, he had been building up his Paradise Lost. He had begun the poem in earnest, we are told, in his house in Petty France, in the last year of Cromwell's Protectorate, and then not in the dramatic form contem- plated eighteen years before, but deliberately in the epic form. He had made but little way when there came the interruption of the anarchy preceding the Restoration and of the Restoration itself; but the work had been resumed in Jewin Street and prosecuted there steadily, by dictations of twenty or thirty lines at a time to whatever friendly or hired amanuensis chanced to be at hand. Considerable progress had been made in this way before his third marriage; and after that the work proceeded apace, his nephew Edward Phillips, who was then out in the world on his own account, looking in when he could to revise the growing manuscript.

It was not in the house in Jewin Street, however, that

Paradise Lost was finished. Not very long after the third marriage, probably in 1664, there was a removal to another house, with a garden, not far from Jewin Street, but in a more private portion of the same suburb. This, which was to be the last of all Milton's London residences, was in the part of the present Bunhill Row which faces the houses that conceal the London artillery-ground and was then known as " Artillery Walk, leading to Bunhill Fields." Here the poem was certainly finished before July 1665; for, when, in that month, Milton and his family, to avoid the Great Plague of London, then beginning its fearful ravages, went into temporary country-quarters in a cottage in Chalfont St Giles, Buckinghamshire, about 23 miles from London, the finished manuscript was taken with him, in probably more than one copy. This we learn from his young Quaker friend, Thomas Ellwood, who had taken the cottage for him, and who was shown one of the

manuscript copies, and allowed to take it away with him for perusal, during Milton's stay at Chalfont. Why the poem was not published immediately after his return to his Bunhill house in London, on the cessation of the Great Plague, does not distinctly appear, but may be explained partly by the

fact that the official licenser hesitated before granting the necessary imprimatur to a book by a man of such notorious republican antecedents, and partly by the paralysis of all business in London by the Great Fire of Sep- tember 1666, It was not till the 27th of April 1667 that Milton concluded an agreement with a publisher for the printing of his epic. By the agreement of that date, still extant, Milton sold to Samuel Simmons, printer, of Alders- gate Street, London, for £5 down, the promise of another £5 after the sale of a first edition of thirteen hundred copies, and the further promise of two additional sums of £5 each after the sale of two more editions of the same size respec- tively, all his copyright and commercial interest in Paradise Lost for ever. It was as if an author now were to part with all his rights in a volume for £17, 10s. down, and a contingency of £52, 10s. more in three equal instalments. The poem was duly entered by Simmons as ready for publication in the Stationers' Registers on the 20th of the following August; and shortly after that date it was out in London as a neatly printed small quarto, with the title Paradise Lost: A Poem written in Ten Books: By John Milton. The publishing price was 3s., equal to about 10s. 6d. now. It is worth noting as an historical coincidence that the poem appeared just at the time of the fall and disgrace of Clarendon.

The effect of the publication of Paradise Lost upon Milton's reputation can only be described adequately, as indeed it was consciously described by himself in metaphor, by his own words on Samson's feat of triumph over the Philistines :—

But he, though blind of sight,

Despised, and thought extinguished quite, With inward eyes illuminated,

His fiery virtue roused.

From under ashes into sudden flame,

And as an evening dragon came,

Assailant on the perched roosts

And nests in order ranged

Of tame villatie fowl, but as an eagle

His cloudless thunder bolted on their heads."

As the poem circulated and found readers, whether in the first copies sent forth by Simmons, or in subsequent copies issued between 1667 and 1669, with varied title- pages, and the latest of them with a prefixed prose " Argument," the astonishment broke out every wliere. "This man cuts us all out, and the ancients too" is the saying attributed to Dryden on the occasion ; and it is the more remarkable because the one objection to the poem which at first, we are told, "stumbled many" must have " stumbled" Dryden mist of all, Except in the drama, rhyme was then thought essential in anything professing to be a poem ; blank verse was hardly regarded as verse at all; Dryden especially had been and was the champion of rhyme, contending for it even in the drama ; and yet here was an epic net only written in blank verse, but declaring itself on that account to be "an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recovered to heroic poem from the troublesome and modern bondage of riming." That, notwithstanding this obvious blow struck by the poem at Dryden's pet literary theory, he should have welcomed the poem so enthusiastically and proclaimed its merits so emphatically, says much at once for his critical perception and for the generosity of his temper. An opinion pro- claimed by the very chief of the Restoration literature could not but prevail among the contemporary scholars ; and, though execration of the blind and unhanged regicide

anaes et

mel © T

had not ceased among the meaner critics, the general vote was that he had nobly redeemed himself. One conse- quence of his renewed celebrity was that visitors of all ranks again sought him out for the honour of his society and conversation. His obscure house in Artillery Walk, Bunhill, we are told, became an attraction now, 'much more than he did desire," for the learned notabilities of his time.

The year 1669, when the first edition of Paradise Lost had been completely sold out, and Milton had received his second £5 on account of it, may be taken as the time of the perfect recognition of his pre-eminence among the English poets of his generation. He was then sixty years of age; and it is to about that year that the accounts that have come down to us of his personal appearance and habits in his later life principally refer. They describe him as to be seen every other day led about in thie streets in the vicinity of his Bunhill residence, a slender figure, of middle stature or a little less, generally dressed in a grey cloak or overcoat, and wearing sometimes a small silver- hilted sword, evidently in feeble health, but still look- ing younger than he was, with his lightish hair, and his fair, rather than aged or pale, complexion. He would sit in his garden at the door of his house, in warm weatlier, in the same kind of grey overcoat, "and so, as well as in his room, received the visits of people of distinguished parts, as well as quality." Within doors he was usually dressed in neat black. He was a very early riser, and very regular in the distribution of his day, spending the first part, to his midday dinner, always in his own room, amid his books, with an amanuensis to read for him and write to his dictation. Music was always a chief part of his afternoon and evening relaxation, whether when he was by himself or when friends were with him. His manner with friends and visitors was extremely courteous and affable, with just a shade of stateliness. In free con- versation, either at the midday dinner, when a friend or two happened, by rare accident, to be present, or more habitually in the evening and at the light supper which concluded it, he was the life and soul of the company, from his "flow of subject" and his 'unaffected cheerful- ness and civility," though with a marked tendency to the satirical and sarcastic in his criticisms of men and things. This tendency to the sarcastic was connected by some of those who observed it with a peculiarity of his voice or pronunciation. 'He pronounced the letter r very hard," Aubrey tells us, adding Dryden's note on the subject: "Titera canina, the dog-letter, a certain sign of a satirical wit." He was extremely temperate in the use of wine or any strong liquors, at meals and at all other times; and when supper was over, about nine o'clock, "he smoked his pipe and drank a glass of water, and went to bed." He suffered much from gout, the effects of which had become apparent in a stiffening of his hands and finger-joints, and the recurring attacks of which in its acute form were very painful. His favourite poets among the Greeks were Homer and the Tragedians, especially

Euripides ; among the Latins, Virgil and Ovid; among the English, Spenser and Shakespeare. Among his English contemporaries, he thought most highly of Cowley. He had ceased to attend any church, belonged to no religious communion, and had no religious observances in his family. His reasons for this were a matter for curious surmise among his friends, because of the profoundly religious character of his own mind; but he does not seem ever to have furnished the explanation. The matter became of less interest perhaps after 1669, when his three daughters ceased to reside with him, having been sent out, at considerable expense, "to learn some curious and ingenious sorts of manufacture that are proper for women to learn, particularly embroideries

'in the preceding great epic.

Oot in gold or silver." After that the household in Bunhill consisted only of Milton, his wife, a single maid-servant, and the "man" or amanuensis who came in for the day.

The remaining years of Milton's life, extending through that part of the reign of Charles II. which figures in English history under the name of "The Cabal Administra- tion," were by no means unproductive. In 1669 he pub- lished, under the title of Accedence Commenced Grammar, a small English compendium of Latin grammar that had been lying among his papers. In 1670 there appeared, in a rather handsome form, and with a prefixed portrait of him by Faithorne, done from the life, and the best and most authentic that now exists, his //istory of Britain to the Norman Conquest, being all that he had been able to accomplish of his intended complete history of England. In 1671 there followed his Paradise Regained and Samson Agonistes, bound together in one small volume, and giving ample proof that his poetic genius had not exhausted itself His only publication in 1672 was a Latin digest of Ramist logic, entitled Artis Logice Plenior Institutio, of no great value, and doubtless from an old manuscript of his earlier days. In 1673, at a moment when the growing political discontent with the government of Charles II. and the conduct of his court had burst forth in the special form of a " No-Popery" agitation and outery, Milton ventured on the dangerous experiment of one more political pamphlet, in which, under the title Of True Religion, Heresy, Schism, Toleration, and

what best means may be used against the growth of Popery, he put forth, with a view to popular acceptance, as mild a version as possible of his former principles on the topics discussed. In the same year appeared the second edition of his Minor Poems. Thus we reach the year 1674, the last of Milton's life. One incident of that year was the publication of the second edition of Paradise Lost, with the poem rearranged as now into twelve books, instead of the original ten. Another was the publication of a small volume containing his Latin Epistole Familiares, together with the Prolusiones Oratorie of his student-days at Cambridge,—these last thrown in as a substitute for lis Latin state letters in his secretaryship for the Common- wealth and the Protectorate, the printing of which was stopped by order from the Foreign Office. A third publica- tion of the same year, and probably the very last thing dic- tated by Milton, was a translation of a Latin document from Poland relating to the recent election of the heroic John Sobieski to the throne of that kingdom, with the title A Declaration or Letters Patents of the Election of this present King of Poland, John the Third. It seems to have been out in London in August or September 1674. On the 8th of the following November, being a Sunday, Milton died, in his house in Bunhill, of " gout struck in," or gout-fever, at the age of sixty-five years and eleven months. He was buried, the next Thursday, in the church of St Giles, Cripplegate, beside his father, a considerable concourse attending the funeral. ,

Before the Restoration, Milton, what with his inheritance from his father, what with the official income of his Latin secretaryship, must have been a man of very good means indeed. Since then, however, various heavy losses, and the cessation of all official incomc, had greatly reduced his estate, so that he left hut £900 (worth about or over £2700 now), besides furniture and household goods. By a word-of-mouth will, made in presence of his brother Christopher, he had bequeathed the whole to his widow, on the ground that he had done enough already for his "' undutiful" daughters, and that there remained for them his interest in their mother's marriage portion of £1000, which had never been paid, but which their relatives, the Powells of Forest Hill, were legally bound for, and were now in circumstances to make good. The daughters, with the Powells probably abetting them, went to law with the widow to upset the will; and the decision of the court was that they should receive £100 each. With the £600

thus left, the widow, after some further stay in London, retired to Nantwich in her

XVI. — 43

338 MIL

native Cheshire. There," respected as a pious member of a local

Baptist congregation, she' lived till 1727, having survived her hus-

band fifty-three years. By that time all the three daughters were

also dead. The eldest, Ann Milton, who was somewhat deformed,

had died not long after her father, having married "a master-

builder," but left no issue; the second, Mary Milton, had died,

unmarried, before 1694; and only the third, Deborah, survived as long as her step-mother. Having gone to Ireland, as companion to a lady, shortly before her father's death, she had married an Abraham Clarke, a silk-weaver in Dublin, with wliom she returned to London abont 1684, when they settled in the silk-weaving business in Spitalficlds, rather sinking than rising in the world,

though latterly some public attention was paid to Deborah, by Addison and others, on her father's account. One of her sons, Caleb Clarke, had gone out to Madras in 1708, and had diced there as ' parish-clerk of Fort George in 1719, leaving children, of whom*

there are some faint traces to as late as 1727, the year of Deborah's

death. Except for the possibility of further and untraced descent

from this Indian grandson of Milton, the direct descent from him came to an end in his granddaughter, Elizabeth Clarke, another of Deborah's children. Having married a Thomas Foster, a Spitalfields weaver, but afterwards set up a small chandler's shop,

Grst in Holloway and then in Shoreditch, she died at Islington in 1754, not long after she and her husband had received the proceeds of a performance of Comus got up by Dr Johnson for her benefit.

Alt her children had predeceased her, leaving no issue. —Milton's brother Christopher, who had always been on the opposite side in politics, rose to the questionable honour of a judgeship and. knight-

hood in the latter part of the reign of James Il. He had then become a Roman Catholic,—which religion he professed till-his death in retirement at Ipswich in 1692. Descendants from him

are traceable a good way into the 18th century.—Milton's two nephews and pupils, Edward and J ohn Phillips, both of them known as busy and clever hack-authors before their uncle's death, continued the career of hack authorship, most industriously and variously,

though not very prosperously, through the rest of their lives, Edward _ in a more reputable manner than John, and with more of enduring allegiance to the memory of his uncle. Edward died about 1695 ; John was alive till 1706. Their half-sister, Ann Agar, the only daughter of Milton's sister by her second husband, had married,

in 1673, a David Moore, of Sayes House, Chertsey ; and it has so happened that the most flourishing of all the lines of descent from the poet's father is in this Agar-Moore branch of the Miltons.

Of inasses of manuscript that had been left by Milton, some portions saw the light posthumously. Prevented, in the last year of his life, as has béen mentioned, from publishing his Latin State Letters in the same volume with his Latin Fwmiliar Epistles, he had com- initted the charge of the State Letters, prepared for the press, together with the completed manuscript of his Latin T'reatise of Christian Doetrine, to a young Cambridge scholar, Daniel Skinuer, who had been among the last of his amanuenses, and had, in fact, been employed by him specially in copying out and arranging those two important MSS. Negotiations were on foot, after Milton's death, between this Daniel Skinner and the Amsterdam printer, Daniel Elzevir, for the publication of both MSS., when the English Govern- ment interfered,

and the MSS. were sent back by Elzevir, and thrown aside, as dangerous rubbish, in a cupboard in the State

Paper Office. Meanwhile, in 1676, a London bookseller, named Pitt, who had somehow got into his possession a less perfect, but still tolerably complete, copy of the State Letters, had brought out a surreptitious edition of them, under the title Litere Pseudo- Senatus Anglieani, neenon Cromwelli, nomine et jussu conseripte. No other posthumous publication of Milton's appeared till 1681, when another bookseller put forth a slight tract entitled d/r John Milton's Charaeter of the Long Parliament and Assembly of Divines, consisting of a page or two, of rather dubious authen- ticity, said to have been withheld from his History of Britain in the edition of 1670. In 1682 appeared A Brief History of Moseovia and of other less-known Countries lying eastward of Russia as far as Cathay, undoubtedly Milton's, and a specimen of those prose compilations with which he sometimes occupied his leisure. Of the fate of his collections for a new Latin Dictionary, which had swelled to three folio volumes of MS., all that is known is that after having been used by Edward Phillips for some of his pedagogic books, they came into the hands of a committee of Cambridge scholars, and were used for that Latin dictionary of 1693, called The Cambridge Dietionary, on which Ainsworth's Dietionary and all subsequent Latin dictionaries of English manufacture have been based. In 1698 there was published in three folio volumes, under the editorship of John Toland, the first collective edition of Milton's prose works, professing to have been printed at Amsterdam, though really printed in London. A very interesting folio volume, pub- lished in 1743 by '"'John Nickolls, junior," under the title of Original Letters and Papers of State addressed to Oliver Cromwell, consists of a number of intimate Cromwellian documents that had

somehow come into Milton's possession immediately after Cromwell's death, and were left by him confidentially to the Quaker Ellwood. |

TON

a chance search in the London State Paper Office in 1823 parcel containing the MSS. of Mil- ton's Latin State Letters and his Latin Treatise of Christian Doctrine, as these had been sent back from Amsterdam a hundred and fifty years before, the Treatise on Christian Doetrine was, by the command of

George IV., edited and published in 1825 by the Rev. C. B. Sumner, keeper of the Royal Library, and afterwards bishop of Winchester, under the title of Juannis Miltont Angli De Doetrina Christiana Libri Duo Posthumi. An English translation, by the editor, was published in the same year.

Information, rather than criticism, has seemed proper in such an article as the present. What little of closing remark is necessary will best connect itself with the obvious fact of the division of Milton's literary life into three almost mechanically distinct periods, viz.:—(1) the time of his youth and minor poems, (2) his middle twenty years of prose polemics, and (3) the time of his later Muse and greater poems.

Had Milton died in 1640, when he was in his thirty-second year, and had his literary remains been then collected, he would have been remembered as one of the best Latinists of his generation and one of the most exquisite of minor English pocts. In the latter character, more particularly, he would have taken his place as one of that interesting group or series of English poets, coming in the next forty years alter Spenser, who, because they all acknowledged a filial relationship to Spenser, may be called collectively The Spenserians. In this group or series, counting in it such other true poets of the reigns of James I. and Charles I. as Phineas and Giles Fletcher, William Browne, and Drummond of Hawthornden, Milton would have been entitled, by the small collection of pieces he had left, and which would have included his Ode on the Nativity, his DP Allegro and Il Penseroso, his Comus, and his Lyeidas, to recogni- tion as indubitably the very highest and finest. There was in him that peculiar Spenserian something which might be regarded as the poetic faculty in its essence, with a closeness and perfectiou of verbal finish not to be found in the other Spenserians, or even in the master himself. A very discerning critic might have gone deeper, as we can now. Few as the pieces were, and owning discipleship to Spenser as the author did, he was a Spenserian with a differ- ence belonging to his own constitution, which prophesied, and. indeed already exhibited, the passage of English poetry out of the Spenserian into a kind that might be called the Miltonic. This Miltonic something, distinguishing the new poet from other Spenserians, was more than mere perfection of literary finish. It con- sisted in an avowed consciousness already of the os magna sonitw- rum, 'the mouth formed for great utterances," that consciousness resting on a

peculiar substratum of personal character that had occasioned a new theory of literature. “ He who would not be frustrate of his hope to write well hereafter on laudable things ought himself to be a true poem ” was Milton’s own memorable expression afterwards of the principle that had taken possession of him from his earliest days; and this principle of moral manliness as the true foundation of high literary effort, of the inextricable identity of all literary productions in kind, and their coequality in worth, with the personality in which they have their origin, might have been detected, in more or less definite shape, in all or most of the minor poems. It is a specific form of that general Platonic doctrine of the invincibility of virtue which runs through his Conus, and which is summed up in the Miltonic motto of the closing lines:—

“¢ Mortals that would follow me, Love Virtue : she alone is free. She ean teacli ye how to climb Higher than the sphery chime; – Or, if Virtue feeble were,

Heaven itself would stoop to her.”

That a youth and carly manhood of such poetical promise should have been succeeded by twenty years of all but iucessant prose polemics has been a matter of regret with many. Why should the author of Comus and Lyeidas, instead of keeping to the poetic craft, have employed himself for twenty years in the drudgery and turmoil of prose pamphleteering on questions of church and state, with nothing in verse to glitter across the long morass but a slight chain of biographical and historical sonnets? Surely this is a inost shallow and most unmasculine judgment. Is nothing due to Milton’s own explanation of the reasons that drew him, at the beginning of the English Revolution, out of his literary projects and dreamings, into active partisanship with the cause which his reason favoured? Hear what he says would have been the reproach of his own conscience to him, evening and morning, if he had abstained from such partisanship aud persisted in his poetic privacy. ‘‘ Kase and leisure was given thee for thy retired thoughts out of the sweat of other men. ‘Thou hadst the diligence, the parts, the language of a man, if a vain subject were to be adorned or beautified; but, when the cause of God and His churcli was to be pleaded, for which purpose that tongue was given thee which thou hast, God listened if He*

could hear thy voice among His zealous servants, but thou wert dumb as a beast : from henceforward be that which thine own brutish silence hath made thee." Or, if this should bein too high a strain for the ordinary modern apprehension, may not one ask, more

Finally, having discovered the long-lost

wik T @ WN

simply, whether such controversial work as Milton did plunge into, and persevere in for twenty years, was unworthy, after all, of him or his powers? Do not hundreds of men, aecounted among the ablest in the world, spend their lives precisely in such work of controversy on contemporary qucstions; and are not some of the men of noblest reputation in the world's history remembered for nothing else? If Burke, whose whole public career consisted in a succession of speeches and pampliets, is looked back upon as one of the greatest men of his century on their account, why should there be such regret over the fact that Milton, after having been the author of Comus and Lycidas, became for a time the prose orator of his earlier and more tumultuous generation? The truth is that it is not his exchange of poetry for prose oratory that is objected to, so much as the nature of his prose oratory, the side he took, the opinions he advocated. English scholarship and English literary criticism have not yet sufficiently recovered from that inherited sycophancy to the Restoration which has covered with a cloud the preceding twenty ycars of the "Great Rebellion," voting that period of English history to be unrespectable, and all its phenomena of Presbyterianism, the Solemn League and Covenant, Independency, the sects, English republicanism, &c., to be matters of obsolete jargon, less worthy of attention than a Roman agrarian law or the names of Horace's mistresses. When this unscholarly state of temper has passed, there will be less disposition to distin- guish between Milton as the poet and Milton as the prose writer. While some may recognize, with the avidity of assent and partisan- ship, the fact that there are in Milton's prose writings notions of much value and consequence that have not yet been absorbed into the English political mind, there will be a general agreement at least as to the importauce of those pamphlets historically. It will be perceived that he was not only the greatest pamphleteer of his generation, head and shoulders

above the rest, but also that there is no life of that time, not even Cromwell's, in which the history of the great Revolution in its successive phases, so far as the deep underlying ideas and speculations were concerned, may be more intimately and instructively stndied than in Milton's. Then, on merely literary grounds, what an interest in those prose remains ! Not only of his Areopagitica, admired now so unreservedly because its main doctrine has become axiomatic, but of most of his other pamphlets, even those the doctrine of which is least popular, it may be said contidently that they answer to his own definition of "a good book," by containing somehow "the precious life-blood of a master-spirit." From the entire series there might be a collection of specimens, unequalled anywhere else, of the capabilities of that older, grander, and more elaborate English prose of which the Elizabethans and their immediate successors were not ashamed, though it has fallen into disrepnte now in comparison with the easier and nimbler prose which came in with Dryden. Nor will readers of Milton's pamphlets continue to accept the hackneycd observation that his genius was destitute of humonr. Though his prevailing mood was the severely carnest, there are pages in his prose writings, both English and Latin, of the most laughable irony, reaching sometimes to outrageous farce, and some of them as worthy of the name of humour as anything in Swift. Here, however, we touch on what is the worst feature in some of the prose pamphlets,—their measurcless ferocity, their boundless licence in personal seurrility. With all allowance for the old custom of those days, when controversy was far more of a life-and-death bnsiness than it is now, as well as for the intrinsic soundness of Milton's rule of always discerning the man behind the bvok, it is impossible for the most tolerant of modern readers to excuse Milton in this respect to the full extent of his delinquencies.

While it is wrong to regard Milton's middle twenty years of prose polemics as a degradation of his genius, and while the fairer contention might be that the youthful poet of Comus and Lycidas actually promoted himself, and became a inore powerful agency in the world and a more interesting object in it for ever, by consent- ing to lay aside his " singing robes" and spend a portion of his life in great prose oratory, who does not exult in the fact that such a life was rounded off so miraculously at the close by a final stage of compulsory calm, when the " singing robes" could be resumed, and Paradise Lost, Paradise Regained, and Samson Agonistes could issue in

succession from the blind man's chamber? Of these three le and what they reveal of Milton, no need here to spcak at

ength. Paradise Lost is one of the few monumental works of the world, with nothing in modern epic literature comparable to it except the great poem of Dante. This is best perceived by those who penetrate beneath the beauties of the merely terrestrial portion

of the story, and who recognize the coherence and the splendonr of | 2 i | immediately after death, but a miraculous revival of the whole man, –

that vast symbolic phantasmagory by which, through the wars in heaven and the subsequent revenge of the expelled archangel, it paints forth the connexion of the whole visible universe of human cognizance and history with the grander, pre-existing, and still environing world of the eternal and inconceivable. To this great epic Paradise Regained is a sequel, and it ought to be read as such. The legend that Milton preferred the shorter epic to the larger is quite incorrect. All that is anthentic on the subject is the state-

ment by Edward Phillips that, wnen it was reported to his uncle that the shorter epic was " generally censured to be much inferior to the other," he "'eould not hear with patience any such thing." The best critical judgment now confirms Milton's own, and pro- nounces Paradise Regained to ve not only, within the possibilities of its briefer theme, a worthy sequel to Paradise Lost, but also one of the most edifying and artistically perfect poems in any language, Finally, the poem in which Milton bade farewell to the Muse, and in which he reverted to the dramatic form, proves that to the very end his right hand had lost none of its power or cunning. Samson Agonistes is the most powerful drama in onr language after the severe Greek model, and it has the additional interest of being so contrived that, without strain at any one point, or in any one par- ticular, of the strictly objective incidents of the Biblical story which it enshrines, it is yet the poet's own epitaph and his con- densed autobiography. All in all, now that those three great poems of Milton's later life have drawn permanently into their company the beautiful and more simple performances of his youth and

early manhood, so that we have all his English poetry nnder view at once, the result has been that this man, who would have had to be remembered independently as the type of English magna- nimity and political courage, is laurelled also as the supreme poet of his nation, with the single exception of Shakespeare.

Much light is thrown upon Milton's mind in his later life, and even upon the poems of that period, by his posthumous Latin Treatise of Christian Doctrine. It differs from all his other prose writings of any importance in being cool, abstract, and didactic. Professing to be a system of divinity derived directly from the Bible, it is really an exposition of Milton's metaphysics and of his reasoned opinions on all questions of philosophy, ethics, and politics. The gencral effect is to show that, though he is rightly regarded as the very genius of English Puritanism, its representative poet and idealist, yet he was not a Puritan of what may be called the first wave, or that wave of Calvinistic orthodoxy which broke in upon the absolutism of Charles and Laud, and set the English Revolu- tion agoing. He belonged distinctly to that larger and more per- sistent wave of Pnritanism which, passing on throngh Inde- pendency, included at length an endless variety of sects, many of them rationalistic and free-thinking in the extreme, till, checked by the straits of the Restoration, it had to contract its volume for a while, and to reappear, so far as it could reappear at all, in the new and milder guise of what has ever since been known as English Liberalism. For example, the treatise shows that Milton in his later life was not an orthodox Trinitarian, but an anti-Trinitarian of that high Arian order, counting Sir Isaac Newton among its subsequent English adherents, which denied the coessentiality or coequality of Christ with absolute Deity, but regarded him as clothed with a certain derivative divinity of a high and unfathomable kind. It shows him also to have been Arminian, rather than Calvinistic, in his views of free will and predestination. It shows him to have been no Sabbatarian, like the Puritans of the first wave, but most strenuously anti-Sabbatarian. Indeed one of its doctrines is that the Decalogue is no longer tle standard of human morality, and that Christian liberty is not to be bounded by its prohibitious or by any sacerdotal code of ethics founded on these. Hence, in the treatise, not only a repetition of Milton's views on the iar- riage snbject and of other peculiar tenets of his that had been set forth in his pamphlets, but some curious and minute noveltics of opinion besides.

By far the most important revelation of the treatise, however, consists in the very definite statement it makes of Milton's metaphysical creed and of the connexion of that creed in his mind with the revealed theology of Christianity. Whilc, ontologically, he starts from a pure spiritualistic theism, or from the notion of one infinite and eternal Spirit as the self-subsisting God and author of all being, cosmologically his system is that of a pantheistic materialism, which conceives all the present uni- verse, all that we call creation, as consisting of diverse modifications, inanimate or animate, of one primal matter, which was originally nothing else than an efflux or emanation from the very substance of God. Angels and men, no less than the brute world and the things we call lifeless, are formations from this one original matter, only in higher degrees and endowed with soul and free will. Hence any radical distinction between matter and spirit, body and sonl, is, Milton holds, fallacious. The soul of man, he holds, is not something distinct from the body of man and capable of existing apart, but is actually bound up with the bodily organism. There- fore, when the body dies, the soul dies also, and the whole man ceases to exist. The immortality revealed in Scripture is, therefore, not a continued existence of the soul in an immaterial condition

soul and body together, at the resurrection, after an intermediate sleep. In such a resurrection, with a final jndgment, a reign of Christ, and a glorification of the saints in a new heaven and a new earth, Milton declares his absolute belief. But, indeed, throughout the treatise, with all its differences from the orthodox interpreta- tions of the Bible, nothing is more remarkable than the profound- ness of the reverence avowed for the Bible itself. The very initial

principle of the treatise is that, as God of things that man could not that the Bible says on any the plain sense of the words, and strange it may seem_to the natural human reason. those essentials of Christianity which consist : the fall of man, atonement by Christ, and restoration and sanctifica-

tion through Christ only, Milton is at one with the great body of Christians. Altogether, what the treatise makes clear is that, while Milton was a most fervid theist and a genuine Christian, believing In

all the other books in the the most intrepid of English

the Bible, and valuing the Bible over world, he was at the same time one of thinkers and theologians.

For further information reference may and History of his Time, Works (Cambridge edition in ; to Todd's variorum edition of the Poetical Works, Keightley's Life, Opinions, and Writings of Milton (1855),

6 vols. (1859-80),

prose and verse together, 1851); and St John's, in tion of the Treatise of Christian Doctrine, originally published in 1825. (D. MA.)

MILWAUKEE, the largest , city Wisconsin, United States, is situated on

York by rail, in 43° 3' W. of Washington). above the level of the sea.

N. lat., 87° 56'

The Milwaukee and Menomonee rivers unite in the centre of the business portion of the city, about half a mile from their entrance to Lake Michigan, where they are

joined by a third and smaller stream—the Kinnikinnic. A bay 6 miles from cape to cape, and 3 miles broad,

ey

AO | aac

ure a

nel is

Plan of Milwaukee.

stretches in front of the city, which commands a fine water view, the ground rising along the shore 80 feet above the level of the lake, then gradually

sloping westward to the Milwaukee river, and again rising on the west and north to a height of 125 feet. The ground also rises to a com- manding elevation south of the valley of the Menomonee. Few cities present so many natural attractions of site,

be made to Masson's Life of Miiton and to his editions of Milton's Poetical 3 vols., 1874, and smaller 3 vol. ed., 1882), as well as with Life (5th ed., 1852), to to Milton und Seine Zeit, by Alfred Stern (1877-79), and to Mr Mark Pattison's Milton in Mr Morley's series of " English Writers." Collective editions of the prose works since that of 1698 are—Symmons's (7 vols., 1806); Pickering's, with Life by Mitford (8 vols., Bohn's Standard Library (5 vols., 1848-53). This last includes a revised edition of Bishop Sumner's transla-

in the State of the west shore of Lake Michigan, 100 miles north of its southern end, 80 miles north of Chicago, and 1000 miles north-west of New W. long. (44 min. The shore of the lake is 600 feet

MIL—MIL

the Bible is a revelation from have found out for himself, all matter is to be accepted implicitly, in without sophistication, however Hence, in all in the doctrines of

as indeed its Indian name indicates ("the beautiful hollow or bay"); and art has added to nature. In the residence parts of the city there are miles of avenues from 70 to 100 feet wide, lined on both sides with elms and maples, be- hind which stand handsome houses with spacious lawns, fountains, and evergreens, giving the appearance of a con- tinuous park. The material used for building is largely the cream-coloured brick made in the vicinity, from which Milwaukee is sometimes called the "Cream City." The climate, tempered by the great lake, is remarkably pleasant and healthy. The mean temperature, as shown by the records of twenty years, is 46°°7 Fahr. The coldest month is January (average 22°°37), the hottest July (70°-4).! During the last nine years the average death- rate has been but 20 per 1000, showing it to be one of the healthiest of American cities. Besides a full complement of the usual religious and charitable institutions, there is adjoining the city the national home for disabled United States volunteer

soldiers, consisting of several buildings situated in grounds of 400 acres extent, which serve the purpose of a city park. There are numerous lodges be- longing to the freemasons and other guilds; and the Turners' societies, which embrace a large membership and own some valuable buildings, have done much to create and keep up the practice of athletic exercises among the citizens. Two excellent musical societies are also established here. Before the year 1835 Milwaukee was known only as an Indian trading-post occupied by a Frenchman named Solomon Juneau, who is generally spoken of as the founder of the city. The total inhabitants in 1838 numbered only 700; in 1840 there were 1712; but in 1846 the popula- tion amounted to 9666, in 1850 to 20,061, in 1855 to 30,118, in 1860 to 45,246, in 1870 to 71,440, and in 1880 to 115,578 (57,475 males, 58,103 females). In 1882 the population was estimated at 130,000,——-more than one half of them of foreign parentage, a very large majority being Germans. Notwithstanding the multitude of nation- alities represented in the population, there are few cities more orderly and law-abiding, the number of police employed being less than one for every 1500 inhabitants. Another feature worthy of mention is the large proportion of families who own their own houses, and this is true not only as to the mercantile and professional classes, but especially as to the labouring population. Although the grain trade, formerly very large here, has now greatly diminished, the growth and prosperity of the city have not materially suffered, owing to the development of manu- facturing industries, for which the low rents, healthy climate, and advantageous location make it well adapted. Abouta sixth of the population are engaged in the manufacture of clothing, cigars, cooperage, leather, bricks, sashes, doors, and blinds, machinery, and flour (of which one million of barrels are annually made), and in meat-packing. Milwaukee has become famous for its "lager beer," of which there are one million of barrels annually produced, valued at $8,000,000. The lake commerce is very large. The tonnage entered and cleared in 1880 was 5,322,373 tons, being about as large as that of Baltimore, Boston, or Philadelphia. The Wisconsin Central, the Milwaukee and Lake Shore, the Milwaukee and Northern, and the Chicago, Milwaukee, and St Paul Railways have their head offices here, and the last-named, owning 4000 miles of lines, has immense workshops in the Menomonee valley near the city. Milwaukee is governed by a mayor and a common council of thirty-nine aldermen. The streets and public buildings are under the charge of the board of public works,

a ee a

1 The monthly averages for twenty years are:—January, Do, Ot February, 25°13; March, 33°°35; April, 43°°94; May, ba Os June, 64°°39; July, 70°04; August, 67°°89; September, 61°°68; October, 48°48; November, 36° °27 ; December, 25°°53.

composed of three commissioners and the city engineer, all subject to the common council. A bountiful supply of water is obtained from the lake, and the streets are well supplied with sewers. The value of property as assessed for taxation was $62,000,000 in 1882,—the city debt being $2,500,000, mostly for the water-works, which are city property.

There is an efficient system of public schools under a superintendent and board of school commissioners, the value of the buildings with their sites being estimated at $700,000. For the higher education there are a high school, a normal school, and three commercial colleges, while the Roman Catholics and Lutherans have several excellent denominational seminaries and colleges. A public library belonging to the city contained 20,000 volumes in 1882. (i)

MIMICRY is the name given in biology to the advan- tageous resemblance (usually protective) which one species of animal or plant often shows to another. The word was first applied in this metaphorical sense by Mr W. H. Bates, and it has since been accurately defined and limited, in its biological application, by Mr A. R. Wallace. Briefly put, the essence of the phenomenon of mimicry consists in the following relation. A certain species of plant or animal possesses some special means of defence from its enemies, such as a sting, a powerful and disagreeable odour, a nauseous taste, or a hard integument. Some other species inhabiting the same district or a part of it, and not itself provided with the same special means of defence, closely resembles the first species in all external points of form and colour, though often very different in structure and unrelated in the biological order. For example, a South- American family of butterflies, the Heliconide, are distin- guished by their very varied and beautiful colours, and their slow and ~~*weakly flight; they might easily be captured by*~~

~~insectivorous birds, but their remains are never found on the ground amongst the rejected wings of other butterflies which cover the soil in many places. They also possess a strong pungent odour, which clings to the fingers for many days; and this fact led Mr Wallace to suspect that they have a disagreeable taste, and would not there~~ fore be eaten by birds after a single trial. Mr Belt has since experimentally proved the truth of that belief. But among the totally distinct family of the Preridx, most of which are white, there is a genus of small butterflies, known as Leptalis, edible by birds, some species of which are white like their allies, while the greater number exactly resemble one or other of the Heliconide in the peculiar shape and colouring of their wings. As regards structure, the two families are widely different ; yet the resemblance of a species of one family to a species of the other is often so close that Mr Bates and Mr Wallace, experienced entomologists, frequently mistook them for one another at the time of capture, and only discovered their mistake upon nearer examination. Mr Bates observed several species or varieties of Leptalis in the Amazons valley, each of which more or less exactly copied one of the Heliconidz in itsown district. Accordingly, they seem to be mistaken by birds for the uneatable insects they mimic, and so to be benefited by their resemblance. This, which may perhaps be regarded as the most typical instance of true mimicry, is also the first to which the word was applied.

In considering the phenomena under review, it may be well to give first the chief observed facts, which are quite independent of any particular explanation, and then the theory which has been started to account for them by Mr Bates and Mr Wallace. Before doing so, however, true mimicry should be carefully discriminated from one or two superficially similar modes of resemblance among organic beings, whose real implications are very different.

J4]

It must not be confused with mere accidental or adaptive resemblance, due either to simple chance or to similarity of external conditions. Asa case of the first sort, we may adduce the real or fancied resemblance between certain orchids and flies or spiders; as a case of the second sort, we may take certain African Huphorbiacex, which, growing in dry deserts, have

acquired a very close likeness to the cactuses that cover the equally dry deserts of Mexico; or again the sub-Antarctic gallinaceous bird, Chionis alba, which, living on the sea-shore, has acquired a coloration like that of the gulls, together with the legs of a wader. These resemblances, however, do not as such subserve any function. The species apparently mimicking and the species apparently mimicked either do not inhabit the same district or do not come into any definite relation with one another. The likeness is either accidental, or else it is due to similar adaptation to similar circumstances. In cases of true mimicry, on the other hand, the mimicking species derives a direct advantage from its likeness to the species mimicked ; the resemblance is deceptive ; and this is equally true whether we suppose the mimicry to be pro- duced by creative design or by natural selection. On either hypothesis, however it came by its likeness, the mimicking species escapes certain enemies or obtains certain sorts of food by virtue of its resemblance to some other kind.

It should also be added that the word mimicry, as applied to such cases, is used only in a metaphorical sense. It is not intended to imply any conscious or voluntary imitation by one species of the appearance or habits of another. All that is meant is the fact of an advantageous resemblance, a delusive similarity, which givesthe mimicking animal or plant some extra protection or some special means of acquiring food which it would not otherwise have pos- sessed but for its likeness to the creature mimicked.

Taking animals first, mimicry does not occur very frequently among the higher classes. In the vertebrates it is comparatively rare, and among mammals probably only one good case has yet been adduced. This is that of Cladobates, an insectivorous genus of the Malayan region, many species of which closely resemble squirrels in size, in colour, and in the bushiness and posture of the tail. It has been suggested by Mr Wallace (from whom most of the following examples have been borrowed) that Cladobates may thus be enabled to approach the insects and small birds which form its prey under the disguise of the harmless fruit-eating squirrel. In this case, as in some others, the resemblance is not protective, but is apparently useful to the animal in the quest for food.

Among birds, Mr Wallace has pointed out that the general likeness of the cuckoo, a weak and defenceless group, to the hawks and gallinaceous tribe makes some approach to real mimicry. But besides such vague resem- blances there are one or two very distinct cases of true mimicry in this class of vertebrates. In Australia and the Moluccas lives a genus of dull-hued honey-suckers, Tropidorhynchus, consisting of large, strong, active birds, with powerful claws and sharp beaks, They gather together in noisy flocks, and are very pugnacious, driving away crows and even hawks. In the same countries lives a group of orioles, forming the genus Mimeta; and these, which are much weaker birds, have not the usual brilliant colouring of their allies the golden orioles, but are usually olive-green or brown. In many cases species of Jimetu closely resemble the Tropidorhynchi inhabiting the same island. For example, on the island of Bouru are found the Tropidorhynchus bouruensis and Mimeta bouruensis, the latter of which mimics the former in the particu- lars thus noted by Mr Wallace :—" The upper and under surfaces of the two birds are exactly of the same tints of dark and light brown. The Tropidorhynchus has a large

bare black patch round the eyes; this is copied in the Mimeta by a patch of black feathers. The top of the head of the T'ropidorhynchus has a scaly appearance from the narrow scale-formed feathers, which are imitated by the broader feathers of the Mémeta having a dusky line down each. The Tropidorhynchus has a pale ruff formed of curious recurved feathers on the nape (which has given the whole genus the name of friar-birds) ; this is represented in the Mimeta by a pale band in the same position. Lastly, the bill of the Tropidorhynchus is raised into a protuberant keel at the base, and the Aimeta has the same character, although it is not a common one in the genus. The result is that on a superficial examination the birds are identical, although they have important structural differences, and cannot be placed near each other in any natural arrangement." Allied species of Tropidorhynchus in Ceram and Timor are similarly mimicked by the local Mimeta of each island. Mr Osbert Salvin has likewise noticed a case of mimicry among the birds of prey near Rio Janeiro. An insect-eating hawk, Harpagus diodon, is closely resembled by a bird-eating hawk, Accipiter pileatus. Here the advantage seems to be that the small birds have learned

not to fear the Harpagus, and the Accipiter is able to trade upon the resemblance by catching them unawares, both birds being reddish-brown when seen from beneath. But the Accépiter has the wider range of the two; and where the insect-eating species is not found it no longer resembles it, but varies in the under wing-coverts to white. Here again the resemblance, though advantage- ous, is not protective.

Among reptiles, Mr Wallace has instanced some curious cases where a venomous tropical American genus of snakes, Elaps, with brightly-banded colours, is closely mimicked by several genera of harmless snakes, having no affinity with it, but inhabiting the same region. Thus the poison- ous Elaps fulvus of Guatemala has black bands on a coral- red ground; the harmless Pliocerus xqualis of the same district is coloured and banded precisely like it. The likeness affords the unarmed snakes a great protection, because other animals probably will not touch them, mis- taking them for the venomous kinds.

It is among the invertebrates, however, and especially among insects, that cases of mimicry are most frequent and were first observed. In the order Lepidoptera, besides the classical instance of Leptalis and the Heliconide, a genus of another family, the Hrycinidz, also mimics the same group. The flocks of one species of Jthomia, an uneatable butterfly, often have flying with them a few individuals of three other widely different genera, quite indistinguishable from them when on the wing. In the tropics of the Old World, the Danaidz and Acrexidz possess a similar protec- tive odour, and are equally abundant in individuals ; they are closely mimicked by various species of Papilio and Diadema. Mr Trimen, in a paper on '" Mimetic Analogies among African Butterflies," gives a list of sixteen species or varieties of Diadema or its allies, and ten species of Papilio,

each of which mimics a Danais or Acrea of the same |

region in the minutest particulars of form and colour. The Danais tytia of India has semi-transparent bluish wings, and a border of reddish-brown ; this coloration is exactly reproduced in Papilio agestor and Diadema nama, all three insects frequently coming together in collections from Darjiling. In the Malay Archipelago the common and beautiful Huplea midamus is so exactly mimicked by two rare species of Papilio that Mr Wallace generally

mistook the latter at first for the ordinary insect. An immense number of other instances among the Lepidoptera have been quoted from other parts of the world. Occasionally species of Lepidoptera also imitate insects of other orders. Many of them take on the appearance of

Miagick #

bees or wasps, which are of course protected by their stings. Thus the Sestide and Ageriide, two families of diurnal moths, have species so like hymenopterous insects that they are known by such names as apiformis, vespiforme, ichneumoniforme, sphegiforme, and so forth. The British sesia bombiliformis closely resembles the humble bee; the Sphecia craboniformis is coloured like a hornet, and carries its wings in the same fashion. Some Indian Lepidoptera have the hind legs broad and densely hairy, so as exactly to imitate the brush-legged, bees of the same country. Mr Belt mentions a Nicaraguan moth, Pionia lycoides, which closely mimics a distasteful coleopterous genus, Calopteron ; and Professor Westwood pointed out that the resemblance to the beetle is still further increased in the moth by raised lines of scales running lengthwise down the thorax. Among the Coleoptera, or beetles, and other orders, similar disguises are not uncommon. Mr Belt noticed species of Hemiptera and Coleoptera, as well as spiders, in Nicaragua, which exactly resemble stinging ants, and thus no doubt escape the attacks of birds. The genus Calopteron is mimicked by other beetles, as well as by the moth Pionia. Inthe same country, one of the Hemiptera, Spiniger luteicornis, has every part coloured like the hornet, Priocnemis, which it mimics; "in its vibrating coloured wing-cases it departs greatly from the normal character of the Hemiptera, and assumes that of the hornets." Mr Wallace mentions the longicorn beetle, Cyclopeplus batesn1, which "differs totally in outward appearance from every one of its allies, having taken upon itself the exact shape and colouring of a globular Corynomalus, a little stinking beetle, with clubbed antenne." Erythroplatis corallifer, another longicorn, almost exactly resembles Cephalodonta spinipes, one of the common South-American Hispide, which possesses a disagreeable secretion; and Mr Bates also found a totally different longicorn, Streptolabis hispoides, which resembles the- same insect with equal minuteness. Some of the large tropical weevils have the elytra so hard that they cannot be pierced by a bird's beak ; and

these are mimicked by many other comparatively soft and eatable insects. In southern Brazil, Acanthotritus dorsalis closely resembles a Curculio of the hard genus Heiliplus ; and Mr Bates found Gymnocerus cratosomoides, a longicorn, on the same tree with the hard weevil, Cratosomus, which it mimics. Other beetles resemble bees, wasps, and shielded bugs. Hairy caterpillars are well known to be distasteful to birds, and comparatively free from attack; and Mr Belt found a_longicorn, Desmiphora fasciculata, covered with long brown and black hairs, and exactly mimicking some of the short, thick, woolly caterpillars common on the bushes around. Amongst other orders, one of the most interesting cases is that of certain Diptera or two-winged flies which mimic wasps and bees. Sometimes this likeness only serves to protect the insect from attack, by inspiring fear of a sting. But there are also a number of parasitic flies whose larve feed upon the larve of bees, as in the British genus Volucella ; and these exactly mimic the bees, so that they can enter the nests or hives to deposit their eggs without being detected even by the bees themselves. In every country where such flies occur they resemble the native bees of the district. Similarly, Mr Bates found a species of Mantis on the Amazons which exactly mimicked the white ants on which it fed. On the other hand, the defenceless species itself may mimic its persecutor, as in the case of several crickets, Scaphura, that exactly resemble various sand-wasps, and so escape the depredations of those cricket-killing enemies. Another cricket from the Philippine Islands, Condylodera tricondyloides, so closely copies a tiger-beetle, Zricondyla, that even Professor Westwood long retained it among that group in his cabinet,

We TICR ¥

and only slowly discovered his mistake. The cases here mentioned form but a small part of all those that have hitherto been observed and described in the insect world. They amount altogether to many hundreds.

Among plants, though included in the above definition for the sake of formal completeness, instances of true mimicry are rare or almost unknown. Perhaps the nearest approach to this phenomenon in the vegetal world is found in the resemblance borne by the dead-nettle, Lamium album, and a few other labiates, to the stinging nettle, Urtica dioica and U. urens. The

true nettles are strik- ingly protected from animal foes by their stinging hairs ; and the general appearance of the dead-nettle is sufficiently like them to prevent human beings from plucking it, and therefore probably to deter herbivorous mammals from eating it down. Mr Mansel Weale mentions another labiate, Ajuga ophrydis, of South Africa, which closely resembles an orchid, and may thus induce insects to fertilize its flowers. Mr Worthington Smith has found three rare British fungi, each accompanying common species which they closely resembled; and one of the common species possesses a bitter and nauseous taste; so that this would seem to be a case of true mimicry. Many diverse instances alleged by Mr A. W. Bennett, Dr Cooke, and others cannot be considered as genuine mimetic resem- blances in the sense here laid down. They are mere coincidences or similar adaptations to similar needs; and the word ought to be applied strictly to such likenesses alone as benefit the organism in which they occur by caus- ing it to be mistaken for another possessing some special advantage of its own.

The theoretical explanation of mimicry on evolutionary principles may best be considered in connexion with the general subject of protective coloration and variation in form, of which it is a very special case. There are two ways in which imitative colouring may benefit a species. It may help the members of the species to escape the notice of enemies, or it may help them to deceive prey. In the first case imitative hues enable the animal or plaut to avoid being itself devoured; in the second case they enable it to devour others more easily, and so to secure a larger amount of food than less deceptively coloured compeers. In the former instance we must suppose that such individuals as did not possess the deceptive colouring have been discovered and destroyed by enemies with highly developed sight, while those which possessed it have survived. In the latter instance we must suppose that the individuals which have no protective colouring have failed to secure sufficient prey, through too readily betraying their presence, and that only those which possessed such colouring have become the parents of future generations. It is difficult, however, to separate these two cases, and in many instances the same colouring may aid a species both in cscaping its peculiar enemies and in deceiving its peculiar prey. They may therefore most conveniently be considered together.

Colour is always liable to vary from individual to individual, as we see in the case of domesticated fowls, rabbits, dogs, and other animals, as well as in most cultivated flowers, wherever natural selection cannot act to keep the typieal speeific hues pure and true.

3ut in a wild state certain conspicuous colours are sure to prove disadvantageous by betraying the individual, and these will sooner or later get weeded out, under ccrtain circumstances, either through the action of enemies or by starvation resulting from the inability to escape the notice of prey. On the other hand, certain other

colours are sure to benefit the individual by harmonizing with the

tints of the environment and these will be spared by natural selection, so that the individuals possessing them will pair with one another, and will hand down their peculiarities to their dc- scendants. In this way many species will acquire and retain a eoloration that harmonizes with their environment as a whole or with some special part of it. The degree to which the protective coloration will be carried, however, niust depend upon the sharp- ness of the senses in those other organisms which it is desirable to deceive. Large dominant herbivorous or frugivorous mammals or birds, with relatively few enemies, would not be benefited by protective coloration, and so they seldom exhibit it. The grasses or fruits on which they feed cannot make any attempt to escape them. But carnivores generally require to deceive their prey, and therefore a large number of them exhibit marked deceptive colouring. Still more especially do small defenceless birds or mammals need to escape the notice of the carnivores, and they accordingly very generally possess dull colours, because any variation in the direction

of conspicuousness is certain to be promptly cut off. Above all among insects, which are so largely the prey of birds, of reptiles, and of other animals possessing highly developed vision, protective coloration in one form or other is almost universal, except whcre a nauseous taste, hairy skin, or hard external coverings afford a different kind of protection. In every case the weeding out of ill-protected forms must depend upou the relative keenness of visiou in the various enemies or of the prey, be they mammals,

birds, reptiles, insects, or spiders. Hence the existence of protective coloring and of mimicry incidentally affords us valuable hints as to the perceptive faculties of the various classes against which each organism is thus unconsciously guarded.

Where the general aspect of the environment is most uniform, and where little but a vague impression of colour without individual form ean be conveyed, the hues of animals are also usually uniform, to match their surroundings, and no special imitative adaptations of form occur. Thus, among the Arctic snows, a brown or black. animal would immediately be perceived, and if defenceless at once devoured, while if a carnivore it would seldom or never approach unperceived near enough to its prey to effect a capture. Hence all such variations are at once repressed, and almost all Arctic animals, like the American polar hare, are pure white. Elsewhere bears are black or brown ; in the polar region the native specics is nearly indistinguishable from the snow in which it lives. Where the environment undergoes a regular change from season to season the colour of the fauna varies with it. The Arctic fox, the ermine, the alpine hare, the ptarmigan and many other birds, are all more or less brown among the brown hill-sides of autumn, and snow-white among the winter snows. Almost eqnally general is the sandy colour of deserts, though this, instead of being uniform, is slightly varied from grain to grain; and nearly all the birds, reptiles, and insects of Sahara exactly copy the sandy grey line of the desert around them. Soles and other flat-fish (Plewronectidx) closely imitate the colour and speckled appearance of the sand on which they lie. 'The fishes and crustaceans which inhabit the sargasso weed arc colonred the same yellow as the masses of alge to whieh they cling. Aphides and many small leaf-eating caterpillars are bright green like the neighbouring foliage.

Where the environment is somewhat more diverse, the resemblance begins to show more specialized features. The lion, a large ground- cat of desert or rocky districts, is uniformly brown ; but the tiger and other jungle-cats have perpendicular stripes which harmonize with the bamboos and brown grass of their native haunts; while the leopards, jaguars, and other tree-cats have ocellated spots which conceal them among the mingled light and shade of the forests. Large marine animals have the back black, because the water looks dark when seen from above, but their bellies are white, so as to

harmonize with the colour of the surface when seen from below. Dr Weisniann has shown that most edible unprotected caterpillars imitate the stripes and shades of the leaves among which they feed. Those which live upon grasses arc longitudinally striped like the blades, those which live among small leaves are spotted and varied so as to resemble the distribution of light and shade in the bushes, and those which live upon large veined leaves with oblique ribs have oblique lines to harmonize with them. In some cases even the unripe berries are represented on the caterpillar by small reddish spots. A specialized form of this particular protcctive device is found in the chaineleon, the chameleon-shrimp, many flat-fish, and some amphibians, all of which can vary their coloration to suit that of the surface on which they rest. The action is reflex, and ceases if the animal is blinded.

Where the environment is very varied, as in tropical forests, we find the greatest variety of colouring as well as actual imitation of particular forms; and the protective resemblances become at once closer and more common. Birds, reptiles, spiders, monkeys, and other active predaceous creatures are constantly hunting for insects and similar small prey amongst the fallen sticks or leaves ; and among the most powerless classes of insects only those which very closely resemble specific objects in the environment can easily escape them. A gradual passage can be traced from the most general to the most special resemblances under sucl: circumstances. Many forestine birds have a ground-tone of green in their plumage, which occurs nowhere but in the tropics. Some tree-lizards are green like the leaves on which they sit, others are marbled to resemble the bark where they lie in wait for their prey. Arboreal snakes often hang like lianas or other ereepers. Insects which cling to the trunks of trees can seldom be distinguished from the bark. A Sumatran butterfly, Kallima paralecta, always settles on dry bushes among dead leaves, and cau then hardly be perceived ainong the brown foliage, which it imitates even in the apparent blotches and mildew with which its wings are covered. The family of Phasmidz, including the leaf and stick insects, carries such forms of imitation very far indeed. Most of them are large, soft, defenceless creatures; but some, like Phylliwm, closely resemble green leaves, so as to be almost indistinguishable while feeding ; and others exactly imitate short broken twigs of bamboo. Mr Wallace found one such insect, Ceroxylus laceratus, in Borneo,

apparently overgrown with a creeping moss or jungermannia ; and Mr Belt discovered a larval form in Nicaragna whose body was prolonged into thin green filaments, precisely like the moss In which it lurked. In other instances the insect probably uses its disguise rather to deceive its prey than to escape its enemies. Sir Joseph Hooker believes that an Indian Mantis deludes the little creatures which form its food by its singular likeness to a leaf ; while Sir Charles Dilke found one which had its head and fangs moulded into the deceptive appearance of an orchid, so that small flies were actually attracted in search of honey into its very Jaws. Outside the class of insects, similar phenomena sometimes occur. Thus, according to Mr Bates, many showy little tropical spiders double themselves up at the base of leaf stalks so as to resemble flower buds, and thus delude the flies on which they prey. Even among the vertebrates Mr Belt mentions a green Nicaraguan lizard looking like the herbage by which it is surrounded, and decked with leaf-like expansions, which hide its predaceous nature from passing beetles or butterflies.

These last instances are divided from true mimicry by a very narrow line. But they differ in the fact that some vague object only in the general environment is simulated, not a particular pro- tected species, as in genuiue mimetic resemblance. If we allow, however, that natural selection can produce the white colour of Arctic animals, and the sandy hue of the sole and the flounder, it is easy enough to extend the same principle to the leaf-insect and the stick-insect, or even to real mimicry, as in the case of the Leptalis and the Heliconidx. Certain Phasmide may at first have varied in the direction of green coloration, and these would naturally escape the eyes of birds more readily than their fellows. After the lapse of many generations, all the Phasmidz of that special group would have become green, and the birds which preyed upon them would have learned in many cases to penetrate the disguise ; for, as Mr Belt thas observed, each fresh deceptive resemblance in the prey is sure to be followed by increased keenness of discrimination in the enemies of the species. At this stage the ordinary green Phasmidex would often be killed, while only those which happened to approximate rudely in the venation of their wings to leaves would now escape the sharper and more experienced eyes of the birds.

‘Thus step by step the disguise would become more and more perfect, only the best-protected of each generation escaping on the average, while all the worse-protected would be dis- covered and devoured. Given the usual luxuriance of tropical life, it ig not difficult to understand how favourable variations might continu- ally occur, until at length we get such perfect deceptions as those of the leaf-insects, the stick-insects, and the moss-growu larve.

The phenomena of true mimicry may be explained by a parallel genesis. Suppose, to begin with, a group of large and brilliant butterflies like the South-American Heliconidx, protected by a nauseous taste and odour, and therefore never eaten by birds. To such insects slow flight and’ conspicuous hues are a positive protection, because they enable birds readily to discriminate them, and therefore prevent attacks, jnst as the banded body of the wasp and the hum of the bee prevent us from catching and killing them upon a window pane. Suppose, again, that in the same district there lives a widely different species of edible butterfly presenting some very slight and remote resemblance to the protected species. At first, no doubt, the resemblance will be merely an accidental one of general hue ; it may even be so slight as to deceive nobody except upon the most distant and casual glance. Now, suppose these edible butterflies to be devoured in large quantities by birds, then a few of them may happen to gain safety by associating with the flocks of inedible butterflies which the birds refuse. After a time, even if the habit of consortiug with the protected species becomes fixed in the race, the birds will begin to recognize the edible insects amongst the flocks, especially such as vary most in the opposite direction from the protected species. On the other hand, they will overlook such as vary most in the same direction as the inedible kind; and thus the least mimetic individuals will be destroyed, while the most mimetic will be left to pair with one another and to produce young, most of whom will present the like peculiarities. From generation to generation the birds will go on picking out every bad copy, and sparing all the best ones, till at last the two species become absolutely indistinguishable upon the wing. But the mimicry will never of course affect any but the most external and noticeable parts of the organism ; it will be to the last a mere matter of colour, shape of wing, visible appearance of legs or antenne, and so forth. The underlying

structural differences will remain as great as ever, though externally masked by the deceptive resemblance in form and hue.

In like manner we may explain the genesis of the mimetic resemblance borne by Volucella to the humble bee. Suppose an undisguised fly to enter the bees' nest, it would be at once attacked and killed. But if it presented some very slight resemblance to the bee it might manage to lay its eggs undisturbed, and its larve would then be able to feed quietly upon the larve of the bee. each new generation the more flimsy disguises would be more and nore readily detected, and only those flies which varied most in

With ©

the direction of resembling the bees would survive or lay their eggs in peace. On the other hand, those which actually succeeded would possess great advantages over their neighbours, because their larvee would thus obtain a safe and certain supply of food, and be guaranteed the protection of the bees' nest. Iu this way the flies would at last, by constant survival of the best-adapted, come exactly to imitate the bees amongst which they lived.

The theory of the origin of mimetic forms thus briefly sketched out is due to Mr Bates and Mr Wallace, and it explains all the facts more fully thau any other. It shows us, first, why the mimicking organism always imitates a specially protected species ; secondly, why the two always inhabit the same district ; thirdly, why the mimicking species is always much rarer than the species mimicked ; fourthly, why the phenomenon is confined to a few groups only ; and fifthly, why several different mimicking species often imitate the same protected form. It also accounts for the absence of mimicry amongst large or dominant animals, and its comparative commonness amongst small and defenceless kinds. And by affiliating the whole of the phenomena upon the general principles of protective colouring it reduces a seemingly strange and marvellous fact to a particular case of a well-known law.

Whatever theory be adopted, however, the facts and most of their implications remain the same. For, whether we suppose these imitative

resemblances to be due to direct creative design or to survival of favourable variations, it is at least clear that the disguise subserves a function—that it is purposive and not accidental. Hence we may draw from the phenomena of mimicry certarn important psychological implications. On the hypothesis of evolution, it is obvious that the mimicry can never go further than the seuses of the creatures against whom the disguise is advantageous would naturally carry it; and even on the hypothesis of special design it is not likely that the imitation would be made more accurate than would be necessary for practical purposes of deception. here ig much evidence in favour of this view. Mr B. T. Lowne, for example, who has carefully measured the curvature of the facets in the compound eyes of insects, upon which depends the minimui size of apprehensible objects, finds that the mimicry in the case of the flies parasitic upon bees' nests has proceeded just so far as the structure of the bee's eye would lead us to expect, and nofurther. In other words, so far as measurements of angular distance subtended can guide us, such a fly seems to be absolutely indistinguishable by a bee from one of his own species, within the limits of ordinary vision. The pictures cast upon the sensorium by the fly and by a brother bee are simply identical. In many other cases it can be shown that the mimicry seems specially intended to deceive the eyes of a particular class of animals; while there is no case of mimicry where the only enemies or prey consist of plants or eyeless animals. Naturally there can be no mimicry without a creature to deceive ; the very conception implies an external nervous system to be acted upon, and to be acted upon deceptively. Thus mimicry in plants must have reference to the eyes of animals, in animals themselves to the eyes of one another. We may conclude, accord- ingly, that if a leaf-insect is green with faint violet-brown veins to the wings, exactly like a certain leaf, in order to deceive sundry tropical birds, then those birds are capable of perceiving the forms and colonrs imitated to that particular degree. So the presence of inimicry in any group may guide us to a rough idea of the perceptive powers of those creatures whom the mimicry serves to deceive. The exact imitation of sand and coloured pebbles in the flat-fish is a fairly safe indication that the predaceous fish by whose selection they have been developed (through the weeding out of ill-protected variations) can pretty accurately distinguish form and colour. Tho long green pipe fish which cling around green sea-weed have probably acquired their existing hues to deceive the eyes of small sharks ; the Phyllopteryx cques, a

hippocampus which looks pre- cisely like a piece of tangled and waving fucus (see figure, vol. Xl p- 852), has doubtless in the same way taken on its delusive like- ness to the alge among which it lives. So the cricket which resembles its foe the sand-wasp must have gained its present shape and hue by deceiving its enemy, and therefore it sug- gests the probability of highly developed vision on the part of the wasps. There seems every reason to believe that in many instances insects, spiders, and even lizards have developed mimetic or other deceptive resemblances in order to delude the eyes of in- sects; while in other cases the disguise has been unconsciously adopted to deceive fish, amphibians, reptiles, birds, and mammals. Moreover, we have some grounds for believing that the sense of colour is exceptionally strong in birds and in one or two insect orders ; and the mimicry of colour seems to have proceeded to the greatest length amongst animals which are most exposed to the attacks of these classes, or which would find it advantageous to deceive them. It may be added that these same classes have been most effective in producing the bright hues of flowers and fruits, on Mr Darwin's hypothesis, or are at least in any case most intimately correlated with such vegetable structures as fertilizers of blossoms and dispersers of seed. Mimicry is thus to some extent a rough gauge of the perceptive faculties of the species deceived by it.

MIM—MIN

The vocal mimicry which occurs among certain birds, such as the mocking-bird, starling, parrot, and bullfinch, must of course be placed in a wholly different category from these biological cases. It is a direct volitional result, and it is mimicry in a literal not in a figurative sense. The faculty seems to be due to the play-instinct alone, and not to subserve any directly useful function. (G. A.)

MIMNERMUS, a Greek elegiac poet, born at Smyrna, lived about 600 B.c. His life fell in the troubled time when the old Greek city of Smyrna was struggling to maintain itself against the rising power of the Lydian kings. One of the extant fragments of his poems refers to the struggle and contrasts the present effeminacy of his

countrymen with the bravery of those who had once |

defeated the Lydian king Gyges. The poet mentions in another fragment that he belonged to the stock of the Colophonians who had seized the Holic Smyrna. But his most important poems were a set of elegies addressed to a flute-player named Nanno; they were collected in two books called after her name. Hermesianax mentions his love for Nanno, and implies that it was unfortunate. Only a few fragments of these poems have been preserved; and their soft melancholy tone and delicate language give some idea of the poet's character. His ideal is the sweet soft luxurious Ionian life, and he would enjoy it free from sorrow and die as soon as he could no longer enjoy it. Yet there is apparent some of the old stronger strain of character which in early time raised the Ionian cities to greatness, pride in the glories of his race and scorn for those that are unworthy of their fathers' renown. His experience of life was evidently sad; he felt that his country was gradually yielding to the enemy it had once defeated, and he knew that his own hopes were disap- pointed. The sun himself has endless toils from rising to setting and again from setting to rising. The life of man is as transitory as the leaves of spring, he says, referring to a passage in the popular epic poetry of Ionia (Ziad, vi. 146). He wishes to die in his sixtieth year, a wish to which Solon replied bidding him reconsider and rather long to die when he was eighty years old. Mimnermus was the first to make the elegiac verse, which had pre- viously had more of the epic character, the vehicle for love- poetry, and to impart to it the colour of his own mind. He found the elegy devoted to objective themes ; he made it subjective. He set his own poems to the music of the flute, and the poet Hipponax says that he used the melan- choly véuos Kpadias. He bears the epithet Avyvaorddys, by which Solon addresses him. It is doubtful whether this epithet is peculiar to himself or whether it marks him as belonging to a musical and poetic family or school ; it is evidently akin to the epithet A'yecar Motcau.

MIMOSA. The Afimosex (so named from their mimicry of animal movements) form one of the three suborders of Leguminosx, and are characterized by their (usually small) regular flowers and valvate corolla. Their 28 genera and 1100 species are arranged by Baillon in four series, of which the acacias (see Acacta) and the true mimosas are the most important. They are distributed throughout almost all tropical and subtropical regions, the acacias preponderating in Australia and the true mimosas in America. The former are of considerable importance as sources

of timber, gum, and tannin, but the latter are of much less economic value, though a few, like the talh (IZ. ferruginea) of Arabia and Central Africa, are important trees. Most are herbs or undershrubs, but some South- American species are tall woody climbers. They are often prickly. The roots of some Brazilian species are poisonous, and that of WM. pudica, L., has irritating properties. J. sensitiva has been used in America in the treatment of fistula, &c., probably as an astringent. The mimosas, however, owe their interest and their extensive culti- vation, partly to the beauty of their usually bipinnate

045

foliage, but still more to the remarkable development in some species of the sleep movements manifested to some extent by most of the pinnate Leguminose, as well as many other (especially seedling) plants. In the so-called "sensitive plants" these movements not only take place under the influence of light and darkness, but can be easily excited by mechanical and other stimuli. When stimu- lated, say at the axis of one of the secondary petioles, the leaflets move upwards on'each side until they meet, the movement being propagated centripetally. It may then be communicated to the leaflets of the other secondary petioles, which close (the petioles, too, converging), and thence to the main petiole, which sinks rapidly downwards towards the stem, the bending taking place at the pulvinus, or swollen base of the leafstalk. See Botany, vol. iv. p. 113, fig. 117. When shaken in any way, the leaves close and droop simultaneously, but if the agitation be continued, they reopen as if they had become accus- tomed to the shocks. The common sensitive plant of hot-houses is Af. pudica, L., a native of tropical America but now naturalized in corresponding latitudes of Asia and Africa ; but the hardly distinguishable J. sensitiva and others are also cultivated. The common wild sensitive plants of the United States are two species of the closely allied genus Schrankia.

MINDANAO, MINDORO. See Puitippine IsLanps,

MINDEN, the chief town of a district of the same name in Prussia, province of Westphalia, is situated about 22 miles to the west-south-west of Hanover, on the left bank of the Weser, which is spanned there by two bridges. The older parts of the town retain an old-fashioned appearance, with narrow

and crooked streets; the modern suburbs occupy the site of the former fortifications. The most interesting building is the Roman Catholic cathedral, the tower of which, dating from the 11th century, illustrates the first step in the growth of the Gothic spire in Germany. The nave was erected at the end of the 13th century, and the choir in 1377-79. Among the other chief edifices are the old church of St Martin; the town-house, with a Gothic facade ; the extensive court-house ; and the Govern- ment offices, constructed, like many of the other buildings, of a peculiar veined brown sandstone found in the district. Minden contains a gymnasium and several hospitals, besides other charitable institutions. Its industries include linen and cotton weaving, dyeing, calico printing, and the manufacture of tobacco, leather, lamps, chicory, and chemi- cals. There is also some activity in the building of small craft. In 1881 107 vessels of an aggregate burden of 12,569 tons entered and cleared the river-harbour of Minden. The population in 1880 was 17,869.

*Minden (Mindun, Mindo), apparently a trading place of some importance in the time of Charlemagne, was made the seat of a bishop by that monarch, and subsequently became a flonrishing member of the Hanseatic League. In the 18th century it was surrounded with a wall. Punished by military occupation and a fine for its reception of the Reformation in 1547, Minden underwent similar trials in the Thirty Years' War and the wars of the French occupa- tion. In 1648 the bishopric was converted into a secular principality under the elector of Brandenburg. From 1807 to 1814 Minden was included in the kingdom of Westphalia, and in the latter year it passed to Prussia. In 1816 the fortifications, which had been razed by Frederick the Great after the Seven Years' War, were restored and strengthened, and as a fortress of the second rank it remained the chief military place of Westphalia down to 1872, when the works were finally demolished. At Todtenhausen, 3 miles to the north of Minden, the allied English and German troops under the duke of Brunswick gained a decisive victory over the French in 1759. About 8 miles to the south of Minden is the so-called '*Porta Westfalica," a narrow and picturesque defile by which the Weser quits the mountains and reaches the plain.*

Minden is not to be confounded with the Hanoverian Miinden,

also sometimes written Minden (population 6355), at the confluence (Miindung) of the Werra and Fulda.

MINE. See Mininc. ey 1 ae

Definiti- tion of a mineral.

Amor- phous bodies.

Crystals.

ATURAL objects which are homogeneous in their mass, and in which no parts formed for special pur- poses can be distinguished, are termed " minerals"; and the branch of natural science which treats of these is termed mineralogy. Minerals differ from the structures treated of in botany and zoology in the three following par- ticulars. (1) They differ in the mode of their formation ; this has been accomplished, not by assimilation of matter, producing growth from within, but by augmentation of bulk through accretion of particles from without. (2) Minerals are not heterogeneous. While the objects treated of in the other departments of natural history consist of beings possessed of life, and having parts which, being mutually dependent, cannot be separated from one another without a more or less complete destruction of the individual, the objects treated of under the department of mineralogy have so uniformly consistent an individuality that they are not destroyed by any separation of parts,—each portion or fragment possessing the composition as the whole. And (3), while those beings which are possessed of life have their component elements grouped into complexes, for the most part capable of more or less freedom of motion and susceptible of change, minerals have a constitution resulting from chemical attrac- tions alone and an arrangement of their parts, under physical influences, which has resulted in rigidity and an absence of all tendency to change.

Form oF MINERALS—CRYSTALLOGRAPHY.

The most precise definition of a mineral would be—an inorganic body possessed of a definite chemical composition, and usually of a regular geometric form. Of these, the second is in one respect the direct outcome of the first ; while many of the most important physical properties pos- sessed by minerals are outcomes of the second.

"Both the geometric form and the composition of minerals are produced and modified under the influence of general laws.

Mineral bodies occur in the three physical conditions of solid, liquid, and gas. Those now found in the last two states are few in number, and are of altogether inferior interest to those which occur as solids; but there is reason to believe that the minerals we know as solids once existed in the liquid or gaseous state, and that their pre- sent structure was determined in the process of solidifica- tion. All bodies thus formed may be divided into two great classes :—

1. Amorphous bodies, or such as do not possess a de- finite and characteristic geometrical form. These (when transparent) refract light singly in every direction (except when under stress); they are equally easy or equally diffi- cult to break in all directions ; when broken they exhibit a conchoidal or an earthy fracture; they are equally hard throughout all their parts; they are equally elastic in all directions ; they conduct heat with equal rapidity and in equal amount in all directions.

2. Crystalline bodies, or such as occur in definite geo- metrical forms bounded by flat surfaces. These present greater facilities of separation of their particles, or " cleav- age," in certain directions lying in determinate planes than they do in others; most of them are neither equally hard nor equally elastic in all directions, conduct heat more rapidly in certain directions than they do in others, and, when transparent, refract light doubly except in certain directions.

and the same mineral body may occur in both the amorphous and the crystalline condition. This is seen in

has a sharply angular and a

same properties and the same | talline form.

over a yard in diameter to mere specks power have been obtained in America more than 4 feet in length by 24 crystals of apatite have rock crystal at Milan 3} feet long by 54 in circumference,

be ten or more times as great as the width

Mineral ‘bodies are found in both of the above classes ;

the piece of gold shown in fig. 1, where the upper portion

well-defined shape, while the lower presents curvilinear and rugged outlines, similar to one another in no part. Under favouring circumstances, it is possible that every substance whose composition is capable of being represented by a definite chemical formula— i.e, Which has an unvarying composition—may be capable of assuming a definite crys-

mig: ak

Size and Form of Crystals.—They are of every size from Size of requiring a high crystals. of the microscope to reveal their existence. Beryls Equally large

in thickness, weighing 24 tons. There is a

been found in Canada.

weighing 870 ib. The highest perfection of form, and hence of other properties, is only found, however, in crystals of moderate or of small size.

Variety of Form, and Constancy of Form.—The same Variety mineral may be found in different localities, or sometimes of form. in thé same locality, exhibiting an almost endless variety © of forms. Calc-spar occurs at a Scottish locality in acicu- lar pyramidal crystals of which the length ‘Ge

fig. 2); in flat plates as thin as paper, in which the length is not the hundredth part of the width ; also in prisms, pyramids, and rhombohedra, which at first sight (as in figs. 3, 4) seem

Fig. 4.

destitute of any relationship to each other. This substance has elsewhere been noted in several hundred forms. The minerals fluorite, pyrite, and baryte have each been observed in over a hundred diverse forms. Nevertheless, however great the number, all the forms, in the case of

Fig. 2. each mineral, may be reduced or referred to a single type, Relation by the simple process of examining its internal structure to parent

or the mode of arrangement of its molecules. This is form-

Invaria- bility of angles.

Proper- ties and parts of crystals.

Tnterfer- ences.

Axes,

MoPrNsE RA-LOG Y

accomplished in two ways—(1) by finding the weak joints in that arrangement, through splitting the crystal, and (2) by measuring the angular inclination of. the outside surfaces which bound the form and, from these measure- ments, by simple mathematical laws, arriving at what has been termed its "primitive" or simplest form.

As regards the mere recognition of a substance, such measurement in itself suffices,—the angular inclination, if the same surfaces be measured, being unvarying in each species. It can, moreover, be shown that the possible range of external variety of form is governed by fixed mathematical laws, which determine precisely what crys- talline forms are or may be produced for each species. Comparatively few of these actually occur in nature; but crystallographic laws can point out the range of those which can possibly occur, can delineate them even before they are found, and can in all cases show the relationship which subsists between them and the simple or fundamental form from which or out of which they all originate. It must be

observed that in crystalline bodies the internal structure—that is, the arrangement of the molecules— is as regular in an outwardly shapeless mass as in the modelled crystal which presents itself as a perfect whole.

Definitions of Crystals, and their Members or Parts. —A crystal is a symmetrical solid, either opaque or transparent, contained within surfaces which theoretically are flat, and of a perfect polish, but which are actually frequently curved, striated, or pitted. These surfaces are called "planes," or "faces." The external planes of a crystal are called its "natural planes"; the flat surfaces obtained by splitting a crystal are called its "cleavage planes." The intersections of the bounding planes are called '" edges," and planes are said to be similar when their corresponding edges are proportional and their corresponding angles equal. Crystals bounded by equal and similar faces are termed "simple forms." The cube, bounded by six equal squares, the octahedron, bounded by eight equilateral triangles, and the rhombohedron, bounded by six equal rhombs, are thus simple forms. Crystals of which the faces are not all equal and similar are termed compound forms, or "combinations," being regarded as produced by the union or combination of two or more simple forms. Edges are termed rectangular, obtuse, or acute, according as the angle at which the faces which form the edge meet is equal to, or greater or less than, aright angle. Edges are similar when the planes by the intersection of which they are formed are respectively equal and equally inclined to one another ; otherwise they are unlike or dissimilar.

When a figure is bounded by only one set of planes, it is said to be "developed." When an edge is cut off by a new plane, it is said to be "replaced"; when cut off by a plane which forms an equal angle with each of the original faces which formed the edge, it is said to be "truncated." When an edge is cut off by two new faces equally inclined to the two original faces respectively, it is said to be "bevelled." When a solid angle is cut off by a new face which forms equal angles with all the faces which went to form the solid angle, it is said to be truncated.

In classifying crystals and studying their properties, it is found convenient to introduce certain imaginary lines called "axes." Axes are imaginary lines connecting points in the crystal which are diametrically opposite,—

such as the centres of opposite faces, the apices of opposite solid angles, the centres of opposite edges. Different sets of axes may thus be drawn through the same crystal; but there is always one set, usually of three, but in one special class of crystals of four, axes, by reference to which the geometrical and physical properties of a crystal can be most simply explained. These axes intersect one another, either at right angles, producing " orthometric" forms, or

at oblique angles, producing "clinometric" forms. The axes may be all equal, or only two equal, or all unequal.

There is a definite conventional position in which for purposes of description a crystal is always supposed to be held. With reference to this position one of the axes,— that which is erect or most erect,—is termed the " verti- cal," and the others the "lateral." The planes in which any two of the axes lie are called the "axial" or "diametral planes,"—sometimes "sections." By these the space around the centre is divided into "sectants." If there are, as is generally the case, only two lateral axes, the space is divided into eight sectants, or octants ; but, if there are three lateral axes, it is divided into twelve sectants.

Primitive Forms of Crystals.—If we attempt to arrive, through a study of the internal structure of crystals, as evidenced by directions of weakness of cohesion, at the total number of primitive or parent forms which can exist, we find that there are thirteen such forms and no more.

Nine of these may be regarded as prisms standing upon a base, three as octahedra standing upon a solid angle ; and there is one twelve-sided figure, or dodecahedron.

Prisms. —Of the prisms eight have a four-sided base

If the base is square and the prism stands erect—that is, if its sides or lateral planes, as they are called, are perpendicular to the base—the form is termed.a "right square prism" (fig. 6). In this the four lateral planes are rectangular and equal; they may be either oblong or square; in the latter

case the form is the “ cube ” (fig. 5). When the base is a rectangle instead of a square, the form is a “‘right rectangular prism” (fig. 7). In each of the

Bigs 5. Fig. 7.

above three forms the edges are twelve in number. In the cube all the edges are equal. In the square prism the lateral edges are all equal, but are different from the four equal edges of the base. In the rectangular prism, two at each base differ in length from the other two, while both differ from the lateral; hence there are here three sets of edges, four in each. In each of the three forms, however, the solid angles are eight in number, all equal, and each enclosed by three right angles.

When the base isa rhombus, and the prism stands erect, the form is a “right rhombic prism” (fig. 8). Two of the angles in the base being here acute andtwo . obtuse, two of the solid angles corresponding each with each must differ from the others. So also must two of the lateral angles be acute and two obtuse. The four lateral faces are equal.

When the base is a

Fig. 8. rhomboid, and the prism stands erect, it is only the opposite

Fig. 9.

lateral faces that can be equal. rhomboidal prism” (fig. 9).

When the base is a rhombus, but the prism stands obliquely on its base, the form is called an “ oblique rhombic prism” (fig. 10). Here the basal edges of the lateral planes are all equal in length, but on account of the inclination of the prism the angles which these edges form with the lateral edges of the lateral planes are two acute and two obtuse.

The form is called a “right

Fig 10. Fig. 12. If all the edges of an oblique rhombic prism are equal in length to the breadth of the base, and if the lateral planes are rhombi

equal in all respects to the basal, the form is called a“rhombo-

Big ii:

hedron ” (fig. 11). This is included within six equal planes, like

- *Pesi= tioning ”’ of crys- tals.*

Primi- tive forms.

Prisms.

above primary or simple forms. Thus the mineral fluorite occurs with much the greatest frequency in the form of the cube, and it might very consistently be held that its frequent occurrence in this form was a clear natural ‘ndication that the cube was the primary or simplest form of fluorite; but it splits up into an octahedron. Galena crystallizes frequently in the form of the octahedron ; yet to cleavage galena yields a cubic primary form. It might be conceived that there had been, in each case, some special tendency to assume the cubic form and the octa- hedral form; but one and the same piece of rock may bear on its surface cubic erystals of fluor and octahedral crystals of galena,—each of the minerals having here assumed the primitive cleavage form of the other in pre- ference to its own. ‘The mineral blende crystallizes not unfrequently in octahedra, which yield the dodecahedron on cleavage. Fluor crystallizes in dodecahedra, yet yields the octahedron to cleavage. Argyrite crystallizes in cubes and in octahedra, but yields the dodecahedron on cleavage. Pyrite crystallizes in cubes, octahedra, and dodecahedra, and yields both the cube and the octahedron on cleavage.

These are most embarrassing results, but they clearly indicate so intimate a relationship to subsist between three of the above simple forms that it is obvious that one alone would serve as a type form for representing the others. The selection of that one should be based upon grounds of most eminent simplicity, and this again is to be arrived at by a consideration of the smallness of number of parts, i.e., of faces, edges, and solid angles. Tn such a considera- tion we find that the dodecahedron, with its higher number of each of these, at once gives place. The cube has six faces, the

octahedron eight ; simplicity here is in favour of the cube. The cube has twelve edges, the octahedron has twelve; in this respect they are equal. The cube has eight solid angles, the octahedron six; here the greater simplicity is on the side of the octahedron. So that this method of adjudicating by simplicity fails, and we. are thrown back upon the relationships which may be unfolded through a consideration of the other elements of crystals,— their axes.

Systems of Crystals and Laws of Crystallization.

This consideration led, first, to the remarkable discovery Relation that several of the above primary forms are mere modifica- of faces tions of each other, and ultimately showed that all crystals t° 2€- found in nature may be referred to six systems, based on certain relations of their axes, and that every face which could occur upon a crystal bears a definite and simple relation, in position and in angular inclination, to these axes, A*

As regards mere geometric measurement, there are several direc- Axes di- tions in which axes may with nearly equal advantage be projected. rections For example, in the eube of domi- (fig. 19) they may be drawn nant ac- from the centres of opposite cretion. faces, as lettered O; or from opposite solid angles, as lettered C; or from the centres of opposite edges, as lettered D. There is abundance of evidence that

the cube, but these planes have oblique angles. The rhombo- hedron thus bears the same relation to the oblique rhombic prism which the cube does to the right square prism. Of the eight solid angles of a rhombohedron only two are contained by three equal plane angles, and these two "apices," as they may be called, are opposite one another. According as the apices are acute or obtuse, we have an acute or obtuse rhombohedron. :

When the base of an oblique prism is a rhomboid, the prism becomes an " oblique rhomboidal prism" (fig. 12). In this form, only diagonally opposite edges are similar, as regards equality of length and the value of the included angle. Only opposite solid angles are equal, as are also the opposite and parallel faces. —

A right prism may have an equilateral six-sided base ; it is then called an "hexagonal prism." This form may be developed in two positions relatively to each other, —one in which the transverse axes pass from the centres of opposite faces (fig. 13), the other in which they pass from the centres of opposite edges of the planes (fig. 14). The faces of the one set mutually truncate the edges of the other. If a rhombo- hedron be positioned so as to rest upon one of its apices, the faces of one hexagonal prism would truncate the lateral ; ; edges of the rhombohedron, Fig. 18. Fig. 14. while the faces of the other hexagonal prism would truncate its lateral solid angles. Hexagonal prisms may be longer or shorter than the width of their bases. The interfacial lateral angles are 120°. The angle between the lateral and terminal faces is 90°.

Octa- Octahedra.—The planes of these eight-faced solids are triangular,

hedra. and they may be regarded as made up of two four-sided pyramids applied to each other, base to base. They are always positioned so that they stand upon a solid angle with the '"basal plane "—that is, the plane which is the common base of the two pyramids—hori- zontal. In the primitive forms now under consideration the ver- tices of the two pyramids will in this position be vertically above and below the centre of the base. The upper and lower solid angles are then termed the "vertical solid angles," and the four lateral solid angles are called the basal solid angles.

There are three octahedrons. In the "regular" octahedron (fig. 15) the base is a square, and the eight faces are equilateral triangles of equal size. There are twelve edges, which are all equal. The faces incline to cach other at an angle of 109° 28' 16", and have the plane angles all 60°. 'There are six equal solid angles. When the base of the octahedron is square, but the other edges, although

1A nes aT i

'

ii

' 1 .+-

Wi

Fig. 15, Fig. 16. Fig. 17. equal to one another, are either longer or shorter than the edges of the base, the form is a “right square octahedron ” (fig. 16). In this the faces are isosceles triangles, the equal angles being at the basal edge of the planes. These basal edges are equal and similar, but differ in length and in angles from the eight equal pyramidal edges. When the. base of an octahedron is a rhombus, it is called a ‘right rhombic octahedron” (fig. 17).

Dodeca- Dodecahedron.—This (fig. 18) has each of its

hedron. twelve faces a rhombus. It is, like the cube and the octahedron, a solid which is symmetrical. The interfacial angles are all 120°, the plane angles are 109° 28’ 16" and 70° 31’ 44”. The cdges : are twenty-four, and similar. There are fourteen Fig. 18. solid angles, of which six are formed each by the meeting of four acute plane angles, and eight by the meeting of three obtuse plane

angles. each of these directions : c ke must be regarded as li Deter- Tt has been said that the above simple forms were arrived | of Somme siaiitian ak

molecules.

But the accretion may be not only dominant but overwhelmingly so in one only of these directions in aaardeat ee Fic. 19.—Position of three sets of axes. in certain others. In a specimen of native silver from Alva in Scotland (fig. 20), along O this is so much the case that the con- creting molecules have done little more than delineate the form of an octahedron, and this they have only been able to do by

mination at through a study of the internal structure of crystals, igs chiefly as disclosed by cleavage. Inasmuch, however, as – there are some minerals which cleave in only one direction,

and many which cannot be cleaved in any direction, this method of investigation fails. Its employment, moreover, frequently led to conflicting or embarrassing results. A conflicting result is when a substance has more than one

set of cleavages,—that is, splits up in directions which

would result in the production of more than one of the

~mPNHERRALOG Y

aggregating themselves in lines of minute crystals of the very shape of which they were projecting the skeleton form. More- over, a polar aggregation at the terminal ends of these octahedral

349

found that they all here stand in a definite position one to the other; that definite position is the relation which they bear to one of the sets of axes, and this set may be assigned, not only to all

axes is here shown by the amount of concreting and crystallizing | the three crystals here combined, but also to all the crystals be-

longing to the same mineral, wherever occurring. This general applicability constitutes one of the respects in which one special set of axes is, in each of the systems, preferred to the others.

Fig. 24.

_ Another respect is the intensity with which the molecules cohere Coher- in the different parts of the crystal, as referred to these axes, and ence of

Fig. 25.

the resultant different hardness of certa It particles will be afterwards found that this obtains in a very limited not equal manner in the crystals which belong to the first of the follow- in all di- ing systems, on account of its regularity and sameness as a whole. rections.

in parts of crystals,

Fig. 20.

material being larger at the terminations of these axes than else- where. In the hollow-faced cube again (fig. 21), an aggregation of molecules in the direction of the lines D and C has filled the edges and solid angles, while none have been deposited along O.

Fig. 21.

Fig. 22.

This occurs in crystals of salt. In the hollow-faced octahedron, again (fig. 22), there has been no deposition of matter along the line C. Cuprite often shows this form; and it as frequently occurs in hollow-faced dodecahedra, wherein the vacuity is in the direc- tion of D.

In the specimen of pyrite from Elba (fig. 23), a deposition along D and C would ultimately have erected the scaffolding of a hollow cube, in twelve lines of minute combinations of the cube and

octahedron. Such directional LYITITYD) Pye arrangements may, moreover, (% re } LL] ne PT not ale be intermittent but NOXO\O\S\8\ 8 7

often alternate. The pyrite from Traversella (fig. 24) is an illustration of the first. A large pentagonal dodecahedron hav- ing been completed, a new ac- cession of material has been attached, not uniformly spread over the pre- existent crystal, to enlarge it, but locally ar- ranged, in equal amount, at : the poles of But here the Fig. 28.

special method of the arrangement has determined the formation of a number of small crystals of the same form as that originally projected.

Aun alternation, as it were, in plan is shown in such a crystal of calcite as that in fig. 25. Here a scalenohedron is seen in the centre of the figure; then a rhombohedron has been perched upon its summit, and lastly both have

been sheathed ina six-sided prism with trihedral summits. Different as these three forms are, it is

It may be laid down as a general rule that the edges of crystals are harder than the centres of their faces, and the solid angles harder than the edges. This is markedly the case in the diamond. But, apart from this, there is no distinctive hardness in ally one part, side, or end of the crystals of the first system. It is otherwise with the crystals which fall to be considered in all the other systems. So different is the hardness of the various portions of these, so diverse the appearance of their parts in lustre, colour, polish, &c., so varying the amount of the recoil of these when struck, so unequal their power of conducting heat, so dissimilar their power of re- sisting the agencies of decay, and so irreconcilable their action upon transmitted light, that we cannot but conclude that the molecules which build them up are packed with greater force, if not in greater number, in certain directions in preference to others. There thus remains no question that these nature-indicated sets of axes are those along which there has been a specially selective or '" polar" arrangement.

The six systems are founded upon the relationships of Systems of the axes in number, in length, and in angular inclination. crystals.

All crystals may be divided into "orthometric" or erect forms and "clinometric" or inclined forms; and in similar manner may the systems be, through a consideration of the relative lengths of their axes, divided into three classes. In the first, or most regular, of these the axes are all equal, that is, they are of one length ; in the second there is one axis which differs in length from the others, and therefore they are of two lengths; while in the third the axes are all unequal, and therefore they are of three lengths. Of the six systems one belongs to the first class, two to the second, and three to the third. Hence they are thus

classed :— Monometric. Dimetric. Trimetrie. Cubic. Tetragonal. Right Prismatic. Hexagonal. Oblique Prisnuatic.

Anorthic.

Though the grouping of the systems into three classes in virtue of axial dimensions is markedly borne out by optical and other properties, yet it is altogether insufficient for determining the relationships of the myriad forms in which bodies crystallize. Such knowledge is only attained by combining the consideration of axial length with axial inclination ; and it is through a due regard of both of these that the six systems are instituted.

The above table may be read in two different ways,— either across or consecutively up and down the page. The six systems may be treated of in either of these ways;

Unique axis made vertical.

300

and there are certain advantages in considering them at least first by the former method.

We consider first, as the more essential, the relative lengths of the axes, and, secondly, the angular inclination of these.

1. In the cubic system the axes are all equal, and all intersect at right angles. Here is the most perfect sim- plicity, and the most perfect regularity.

9. In the tetragonal system two only of the axes are equal ; but all still intersect at right angles. Here is a departure from simplicity as regards the length of one axis, but no departure as regards the angular inclination.

3. In the right prismatic system none of the axes are equal, but all still intersect at right angles. Here is total loss of regularity in the first particular, but still none in the second.

4, In the oblique prismatic system none of equal, and only two intersect at right angles. is again a total loss of simplicity in the first particular, a certain amount of departure from it in the second.

5. In the anorthic system none of the axes are equal, and none of them intersect at right angles,—so that here, as expressed by the name, there is a

total departure from regularity in both particulars.

6. The hexagonal system is anomalous in relation to this mode of consideration. It is regarded as having four axes, three of which lie in one plane, parallel to the base, and intersect each other at equal angles

——

(necessarily angles of 60°). The fourth axis intersects these at right angles, and may be longer, shorter, or equal to them. This system is generally considered after the tetragonal system, as having one axis which differs in length from the others, and only one which cuts the others at right angles. By some a rhombohedron is con- sidered as the primary of this system; it then comes to have three axes, all equal, but none intersecting at right angles.

In considering these sys- tems, or in describing the form of a crystal, the vertical or erect axis is named the principal axis of the figure, and that axis is chosen as the vertical which is the only one of its kind. In the cubic system there is no such axis, so that any one may be chosen as the vertical.

It will be convenient, before proceeding to the considera-

the axes are Here there and

Fig. 26.

Fig. 28.

Fig. 30.

of forms,—especially in view of the terminology that must be employed in illustrating those general aspects of the subject,—to give an outline of one of the six systems here. For this preliminary description the cubic system, as the simplest and most regular, naturally suggests itself as the most suitable.

L. The Cubic System.—Here the axes are all equal, and Cubic all intersect at right angles. The "cube" (fig. 26), "octa- system.

hedron" (fig. 30), and "rhombic dodecahedron" (fig. 33), which are here included, are alike in their perfect symmetry; the height, length, and breadth are equal; and their axes are equal, and are rectangular in their intersections.

In the cube (fig. 5) these axes connect the centres of opposite faces; in the octahedron (fig. 15) the apices of opposite solid angles; in the dodecahedron (fig. 18) the apices of opposite acute solid angles.

will be made manifest through a consideration of the transi- tion between the forms. If a cube be projected with the axes in the above position, or if a model of it in any sectile material be employed, and if the eight angles are sliced off evenly, keeping the planes thus formed equally inclined to the original faces, we first obtain the form in fig. 27, then that in fig. 28 and fig. 29, and finally a regular octahedron (fig. 30); and the last disappearing point of each face of the cube is the apex of each solid angle of the octahedron. Hence the axes of the former, being in no way displaced, necessarily connect the apices of the solid angles of the latter. By cutting off as evenly the twelve edges of another cube, the knife being equally inclined to the faces, we have the form in fig. 31, then fig. 32, and finally the rhombic dodecahedron (fig. 33), with the axes of the cube connecting the acute angles of the new form. These forms are thus mutually derivable. Moreover, they are often pre- sented by the same mineral species, as is exemplified in galena, pyrites, and the dia- mond.

The process may be re- versed, and the cube made from the octahedron, as will be readily understood from a comparison, in reverse order, of figs. 26 to 30. Or the cube may be similarly derived from the dodecahedron, as seen by inspecting figs. 33, 32, 31, 26. /

The octahedron also is ¢ changed to a rhombic dodeca- \ hedron by removing its twelve edges (figs. 34, 35), and con- tinuing the removal till the original faces are obliterated, thus producing the dodeca- hedron.

It will be observed that throughout all these changes the position of the axes, as determinants of dimensions, need not be altered,—that, in fact, one set of axes has served for all the forms. .

The relationships of the principal forms of this system being thus disclosed, the forms themselves have next to be

A

Fig. 33.

tion of the laws of crystallography and the combinations | considered.

The relation of these Relations — forms to each other, and the correspondence in their axes, of simple

orms.

Parts of the cube.

Octa- ; : sidered form. The edges are twelve longer, corresponding hedron. triangles, has twelve equal edges with planes meeting at | with those of the inscribed octahedron, and twenty-four 109° 28’ 16”, and six tetragonal angles. The principal | shorter, three and three over each of the faces, The angles axes join the opposite solid angles. Examples: magnetite, | are eight trigonal and six ditetragonal (formed by eight gold, cuprite. : faces), the latter angles joined two and two by the principal Dodeca- | The rhombic dodecahedron (fig. 33) is bounded by twelve | axes. Examples: galena, diamond. hedron. equal and similar rhombi, has twenty-four equal edges of The icositetrahedrons (fig. 40) are bounded by twenty- qcosi- 120°, and has six tetragonal and eight trigonal angles. | four deltoids. This form varies from the octahedron to tetra- Each of the principal axes joins two opposite tetragonal | the cube, sometimes approaching the former and sometimes bedron. angles. Examples: garnet, cuprite, blende. the latter in general aspect. A four-sided pyramid rests Tetrakis- The tetrakishexahedrons (figs. 36, 37, 38, varieties of | on the angles of the faces of the cube. When increased hexa- icositetrahedron) are bounded by twenty-four isosceles | accretion takes place along the cubic axes, an octahedron hedron. triangles,

placed so as to form four-sided pyramids on the | results, When it is along lines joining the solid angles faces of the cube, arranged in of the cube, that form itself results. The edges are twenty- six groups of four each. They four longer and twenty-four shorter. The solid angles are have twelve longer edges, which six tetragonal joined by the principal axes, eight trigonal, correspond to those of the pri- and twelve rhombic or tetragonal with unequal angles. mitive or inscribed cube, and Examples: analcime, garnet. twenty-four shorter edges placed The hexakisoctahedrons (fig. 41), bounded by forty-eight Hexakis- over each of its faces. The scalene triangles, vary much in general aspect, approaching octa- angles are eight hexagonal and more or less to all the preceding forms, into all of which bed? six tetragonal, the latter joined they may pass; but most frequently they have the faces two and two by the principal arranged either in six groups axes. Examples: fluorite, gold. of eight on the faces of the This form varies much in general cube, or eight of six on the aspect. The four-sided pyra- faces of the octahedron, or mid which rests on the edges twelve of four on the faces of of each face of the cube may be the dodecahedron. There are so low as almost to fall into it twenty-four long edges, often (fig. 36) ; or it may rise so high corresponding to those of the that each side forms a level rhombic dodecahedron or bi- surface with that which is ad- secting the long diagonal of jacent to it upon the nearest the trapezohedron, twenty-four cubic face (fig. 38). In the intermediate edges lying in Wie ii latter case the form has become pairs over each edge of the staid the rhombic dodecahedron ; so inscribed octahedron, and twenty-four short edges in pairs that the more or less acute over the edges of the inscribed cube. There are six dite- varieties of the form are but tragonal angles joined by the principal axes, eight hexa- stages of a passage of the cube gonal, and twelve rhombic angles. Examples: diamond, into the latter figure, through fluorite. an increasing accretion of matter General Laws of Crystallography.—The seven forms of Laws of in the lines of the axes of the crystals now described are related to each other in the crystallo- cube. This is termed a " tran- most intimate manner. This will appear more distinctly 8™@P»Y- sition by increment." from the account which is to follow of the mode of deriva- Triakis- | The triakisoctahedrons, fig. 39 tion of the forms, with which is conjoined an explana- 7. (variety of icositetrahedron, tion of the crystallographic signs or symbols by which

eo Non AE OEY

ool

The cube (fig. 26) is bounded by six equal squares, has | the octahedron on one side to the rhombic dodecahedron

twelve edges formed by faces meeting at 90°, and eight solid trigonal angles. The axes are taken as joining the centres of each two opposite faces. Examples are hallite, galena, and fluor.

Fig. 34.

The octahedron (fig. 30), bounded by eight equilateral

fig. 40), are bounded by twenty- four isosceles triangles, in eight

Fig. 38.

on the other; while the increased accretion here is in the direction of lines joining the centres of the faces of the octahedron or the solid angles of the cube. The passage of the forms is similar to that illustrated: in the last-con-

they are designated. These symbols were introduced by Naumann, in the belief that they not only mark the forms

groups of three, arranged as pyramids on the edges of | in a greatly abbreviated manner, but also exhibit the

the faces of the octahedron. Like the previous form

they vary in general aspect, the variation here being from | words could hardly accomplish.

relations of the forms and combinations in a way which In order to follow out this

oo2

derivation of forms, it is necessary to state briefly the following laws, which have been established in crystallo- graphy. It is to be remembered that these laws apply, not merely to the cubic system just described, but to all the systems. Invari- 1. The Law of the Invariability of the Angles of Crystals, ability of which was established by Romé de l'Isle, may be thus angles. stated :—the angles of inclination of the faces of a crystal are constant, however unequally the faces may be developed. The corresponding angles of different crystalline specimens of the same body do not, however, always absolutely agree, Differences have been found, amounting sometimes even to 10'.

9. The Law of Symmetry, discovered by Haiiy, may be thus expressed ;—(1) similar parts of erystals—faces, edges, angles, and consequently axes—are all modified in the same manner, and dissimilar parts are modified separately or differently; (2) the modifications produce the same effect on the faces or edges which form the modified part, when they are equal ; when they are not equal, they produce a different effect, That is, if an edge be truncated or bevelled, every similar edge will be similarly truncated or bevelled; if an angle be truncated or acuminated, every similar angle will be similarly truncated or acuminated ; and consequently every similar axis will be equally affected by the modifications. Thus the cube has eight similar angles and twelve similar edges. In the physical produc- tion of the cube, if one of the angles or edges be modified, all will be similarly modified. This, which is the most important law of crystallography, is, however, subject to an exception which was fully formulated by Weiss. The law was—all the similar parts of crystals, faces, edges, angles, and consequently axes, are modified at the same time and in the same manner; the forms resulting from this law are termed "holohedral." The exception is that half of them or one-fourth of them only may be similarly modified, When only half of the similar parts are modi- fied, we get the "hemihedral" forms ; when one-fourth only are modified, which occurs only rarely, we get "tetartohedral" forms.

Symme- try.

Parallele 3. The Law of the Parallelism of the Faces of a Crystal,

ism of discovered by Romé de l'Isle, may be expressed as

faces. follows :—every face of a crystal has a similar face parallel to it; or every figure is bounded by pairs of parallel faces (with the exception of certain hemihedral forms).

Zones. 4, The Law of Zones, first established by Weiss, may be thus enunciated :—the lines in which several faces of a crystal intersect each other (or would do so if they were produced until they met) frequently form a system of parallels, Such a series of faces is termed a " zone." Sometimes the zones are parallel to one of the symmetrical axes. Thus, in every prism, the faces of the prism con- stitute a zone which encircles the axis of the prism. Faces may be in a zone although they do not actually intersect on the form.

Ration. 5. The Law of the Rationality of the Parameters of the

oe a faces of crystalline series, first indicated by Malus, is that

—. – the position of planes may be assigned by numbers bearing

some simple ratio to the relative lengths of the axes of the crystal. This law was the outcome of investigations into the relationship of forms glanced at in commencing the consideration of the cubic system, and was arrived at through the study of the mode of derivation of forms. Deriva-

tion of forms.

The derivation of forms is that process by which, from one form chosen for the purpose, and considered as the type,—the funda- mental or primary form,—all the other forms of a system may be produced, according to fixed principles or general laws. In order to understand this process or method of derivation, it must be noted that the position of any plane is fixed when the position of any three points in it, not all in one straight line, is known. To deter- mine the position, therefore, of the face of a crystal, it is only

WINER ReEOCE

necessary to know the distance of three points in it from the centre of the crystal, which is the point in which the axes intersect each other. As the

planes of all crystals are referred to their axes, the points in which the face (or its supposed extension) meets the three axes of the crystal are chosen, and the portions of the axes between these points and the centre are named parameters of the face ; and Para- the position of the face is sufficiently known when the relative meters. length or proportion of these parameters is ascertained. When the position of one face of a simple form is thus fixed or described, all the other faces of the form are in like manner fixed in accordance with law 2, since they are all equal and similar, and have equal parameters—that is, intersect the axis in the same proportions. Hence the expression which marks or describes one face marks and describes the whole figure, with all its faces. The octahedron is adopted as the primary or fundamental form of the cubic system, and distinguished by the first letter of the name, O. Its faces cut the half-axes at equal distances from the centre; so that these semiaxes, the parameters of the faces, have to each other the proportion 1:1:1. In order to derive the other forms from the octahedron, the following construction is employed. Suppose a plane to be laid down perpendicular to one axis, and Propor- consequently parallel to the two other axes (or to cut them at an in- tion of finite distance, expressed by ©, the sign of infinity); then the para- hexahedron or cube is produced, designated by the crystallographic meters sign oOco,—expressing the proportion of the parameters of its expressed faces, or 0: 1:0. Ifa plane is supposed placed on each edge, by parallel to one axis, and cutting the two other axes at equal dis- symbols. tances, the resulting figure is the rhombic dodecahedron, designated Notation by the sign 0, the proportion of the parameters of its faces being of Nau- co:1:1. The triakisoctahedron arises when, on each edge of the mann. octahedron, planes are placed cutting the axis not belonging to that edge at a distance from the centre m, which is a rational number greater than 1. The proportion of its parameters is therefore m:1: 1, and its sign mO; the most common varieties are $0, 20, and 30, secn in diamond and fluorite. When, on the other hand, from a similar distance m in each two semiaxes prolonged a plane isdrawn to the other semiaxis, or to each angle, an jcositetrahedron is formed ; the parameters of its faces have consequently the pro- portion m:m:1, and its sign is mOm ; the most common varieties are 202 and 303,—the former very frequent in leucite, analcime, and garnet, the latter in gold and amalgam. When, again, planes are drawn from each angle, or the end of one semiaxis of the octa- hedron, parallel to a second axis, and cutting the

third at a distance n, greater than 1, then the tetrakishexahedron is formed; the para- moter of itsfacesis o: 2:1; its sign is On; and the most com- mon varieties in nature are 00%, 002, and «03. Finally, if in each semiaxis of the octahedron two distances and 7 be taken, each greater than 1, and m also greater than , and planes be drawn from each angle.to these points, so that the two planes lying over each edge cut the second semiaxis belonging to that edge at the smaller distance m, and the third axis at the greater distance m, then the hexakisoctahedron is produced; the parameters are m:n: 1, its sign mOn, and the most common varieties 803, 402, and 508, scen in diamond and fluorite. It must be observed that the numbers in the above signs refer to the parameters of the faces, —not to the axes of the crystal, which are always equal. One parameter also has always been, in the above, assumed —1, and then, either one only of the two other para- meters, marked by the number before O, or both of them, marked by the numbers before and after O, have been changed. In the above consideration of the mode of derivation of these forms actually found in nature, which belong to the cubic system, it will be observed (though the illustrations were limited) that the value of m and n in these indicated, by the precision of the propor- tions 3, 2, or 3, a definite numerical relationship. This at once led up to the extended observations which established the law above stated of proportionality in the modification of crystals, or the rationality of the parameters, which gives a mathematical basis to the science, adding to symmetry of arrangement a numerical rela- tion in the position of the planes. To illustrate this in a general form (and not merely with special reference to the mode of notation or expression of Naumann, which is that adopted in the subsequent descriptions), let AOA', BOB', COC' (fig. 42) be the. three axes of a crystal, drawn in perspective, and cutting one anotherin the centreO. The semiaxes OA, OB, OC are three parameters. Now in the line OA take Oa,=4304A, and Oa,=30A,—making as many points as may be necessary be- tween OA, rational fractions of OA. Subdivide OB and OC ina similar manner. Further produce OA, OB, OC to Ao, Bo, Co, in each direction to an infinite distance, or to a supposed infinite distance, as expressed by the arrow-head ; and suppose these ex- tended axes to be divided in a manner similar to the subdivisions of the parameters, by rational multiples of OA, OB, and OC. All the planes of a crystal will be parallel to one or other of the planes which pass through three of the points thus determined. First, in order to apprehend the relationship of faces to

these axes, or to the half axes, —the parameters of the faces, —let us suppose one

Other

modes of have been glanced at.

notation.

Symme- try of —

combina-

tion,

MINERALOGY

plane of a crystal to be so situated as to cut the three parameters OA, OB, OC at their extremities A, B, C, which it must be remem- bered are points equi- distant from the centre; or let it be supposed that a glass plate rests upon three intersect- ing wires at such points. It is evident that such a plane or plate will have a de- finite inclination or | slope. Suppose fur- ther a second plane or plate to exist, which cuts the three semiaxes in the points @e, ba, C, Which have been measured off (along with a, 2, ¢) as equidistant from O. Tt will be evident that such a plane, though sinaller, will be parallel to the first, seeing that, like it, it cuts the three parameters at equal distances from O.

A little consideration will show that, whatever the absolute dis- tances from the centre may be, so long as the supporting subdivi-

Fig. 42.

sions are equal, no new slope of the glass plates or planes is

possible ; planes so situated must be parallel and similar. Any sign which may be adopted to express the slope of one of such planes must be applicable to all. A plane, however, cutting the points M, 01, C, will have quite a different slope.

Let us now suppose a plane to cut a different set of the semiaxes, namely, OA', OB', OC', in the points -a,, ~~b,, —¢,. Such a plane would be parallel to one'cutting the points — da», — b,, — c,, and also to the set of planes first described, but on the opposite side of the centre of the crystal. If again, however, we had a plane cutting the semi~~ axes OA' and OB' in —q, —8,, but the semiaxis OC' in the point —€g, it is clear that the slope of this plane would be quite different from that of the planes just described, but it would be parallel to the plane cutting the points a, b,, ¢. This slope, like the other, evidently depends, not on the absolute lengths of the portions of OA', OB', OC' cut off, but upon their proportions or ratios; and such is the case with all the planes which are referred to the same axes.

As there are three axes, and each or all of them may be cut atany points and at any ratios, it is evident that the nuinber of planes which is possible is infinite ; and it must be also evident that the inclinations of all are fixed or determinate if we know the ratios. While, however, the possible number of planes is infinite, the actual number occurring among minerals is either small or moderate, in virtue of the fact that the ratios of subdivision of the axes are always simple, and not numerous.

Naumann's symbols for the notation or individualizing of planes A simpler method is that of employing as indices the denominators (if simple fractions) of the fractional parts of the axis cut. Thus 111 is used for any plane parallel to that cutting the axes in a, 64, c, ; 122 for those parallel to a, b,, ¢& 3 318 for ds, 0), c,; and so on.

When any of the points referred to have negative signs, the cor- responding indices have negative signs placed over them. Thus 122 is the index for a plane parallel to a',b,c,. 103 is the index of the plane a, bo, c's. oo here indicates infinity; that is, the plane never would cut the axis B however far it were extended; in other words, it is parallel toit. The necessity for elongating the axes is brought about by the occurrence of highly acuminating planes, which in many cases would not meet the axes at all unless these were prolonged.

If the axes are unequal, as in the trimetric forms, then the ratio is of the same character, except that the relative lengths of the axcs come into consideration ; but here, as in the regular system, irrational values cannot

occur, and in even the most complex crystals they seldom exceed seven, either as aliquot parts or multiples.

It will thus be seen that in crystals there is no haphazard scatter- ing of faces, but a complete subserviency to law, a law which may be said to be the linear equivalent to the law of multiple propor- tions by weight, and Gay Lussac's law of multiple proportions in combination by volume.

Tn abbreviation of all the systematic modes of notation, letters of the Latin and Greek alphabets are frequently employed in a more or less arbitrary manner, and with advantage in the case of highly complex forms.

6. The Law of Symmetry of Crystalline Combination is the consequence of the law of symmetry and the law of the rationality of the parameters, and has been partially

stated in enunciating these laws. It is thus expressed :— (1) a substance can only crystallize in forms, whether simple or compound, which have the same relative symmetry, that is, belong to the same crystalline system, and the parameters of the faces of which bear a simple relation to each other, thatis, belong to the same axis ; (2) a form cannot be modified by faces belonging to a different system, or a different series.

Certain exceptions to the first part of this law occur. Apparent

The element carbon occurs as the diamond, which is cubic, ¢xceP-

and as graphite, which is hexagonal. Sulphur occurs near voleanoes in needle crystals belonging to the oblique prismatic system, and also in caves (deposited apparently from solution) in crystals belonging to the right prismatic system. 'Titanic acid is tetragonal in rutile, and right prismatic in brookite. Carbonate of lime is hexagonal in calcite, and prismatic in aragonite. These are probably only apparent exceptions. The elementary substances

| which go to form them occur in different allotropic states,

with different amounts of specific heat; and it is probable that in these different states they go to form the above modifications, which are therefore, in every respect, except in their chemical composition, different mineral bodies. The physical differences between diamond and graphite may suffice as an illustration. The diamond is trans- parent, colourless, brittle, and extremely hard; graphite is opaque, black, tough, and so soft as to be utilized as a lubricant. ;

Spheres of Projection.—The foregoing scheme for the development of the relation which subsists between faces of crystals and their axes affords but slight aid in display- ing the position of the faces, or their mutual relationships. The delineation even of a considerable series of crystal forms does not indeed go far in effecting this,—on account, first, of very unequal development in the size of the faces of crystals, and, secondly, on account of the habit of development of these faces not only differing largely, but being special to certain localities,—as in the entire absence of some faces, and in the preponderance of others.

10ns.

Maps of the whole domain occupied by the forms of each Spheres mineral have been happily projected for such display. of pro-

The projection is laid down as on a globe, in accordance with stereographic projection, and admitting of calculation according to the laws of spherical trigonometry. These globe maps are called "spheres of projection." The centre O is the common centre of the crystal and of the sphere in which the axes intersect. The three axes will of course meet the circumference of the sphere in six points, called the "poles of the axes." From the centre radii are supposed to be drawn, meeting each plane perpendicularly. It is evident that such radii will have fixed inclinations to each other. the points in which when produced they meet the circum- ference of the sphere of projection are called the " poles" of the corresponding faces. A face and its pole thus call for only one symbol. The angle included by any two normals is the supplement of that included by the two corresponding faces.

It is thus easy to determine the angles of any two normals when that of the corresponding faces is known, or vice versa. Thus, if the angle between two

faces is 125°, that of the normals will be 55°. The spheres of projection are specially adapted to enable us to avail ourselves of the aid to calculation afforded by the forenoted fact that sets

They are called "normals" to the planes, and °

g jection.

of faces lie parallel to each other, forming zones ; for, when Zones.

projected on such a sphere, the normals of the parallel faces will all lie in one plane; and the poles, all cutting its surface in the direction of one line, may be connected, and so form a great circle on the sphere. This is called the "zone circle." A line drawn through the centre of the

ee 25

304 MINER

zone plane, cutting it at right angles, is the "zone axis"; it is parallel to all the faces, and intersections of the faces (if they are extended enough to intersect), of the zone. A face may be common to two or more zones, its normals will then coincide with the intersections of the several zone planes. In the absence of actual spheres upon which to detail the facts which go to form the "sphere of projection " of each substance, the hemisphere is represented on a plane surface. This has of necessity the disadvantage, except as regards the circumferential zone, of introducing spherical distance- distortion—foreshortening of all parts lying near the circumference ; but the eye soon gets accustomed to this. Fig. 43 presents the principal zones of the cubic system, and

Fig. 43.

shows the position of the poles of the faces of the cube, the octahedron, and the rhombic dodecahedron. 0), %% 9% d&c., are the poles of the octahedral faces; a}, 42, 43, &c., those of the faces of the cube; and d,, d,, dz, &e., those of the rhombic dodecahedron. It will be observed that the

faces of the cube fall into the zone circles of the octahedron and dodecahedron, while those of the octahedron fall into those

007

070 440 130 250 120 430320 210 520 310 410

Fic, 44.—Principal Poles of Cubic System in Octant of Sphere.

of the rhombic dodecahedron. Considering this as a delineation of a globe, these zone circles come to represent latitude and longitude; and, as almost all the faces in this system fall into some zone circle, it is clear that the latitude and longitude of all normals may be readily laid down, and their relations at once determined by spherical trigonometry. Fig. 44 shows the arrangement of the poles of all the forms belonging to the cubic system noticed

ALOGY

above, or referred to in the present article,—delineated on an octant of the sphere of projection. It displays the perfect regularity of the system.

second law (that of symmetry),

which go to form & holohedral crystal may be present. When but one-half of the faces present themselves, the form is termed hemi- hedral ; when only one-fourth, it is tetartohedral. These restrained developments have now to be considered. In hemihedral forms the development is restrained, but symmetry is not deranged ; half the similar parts are still alike, though unlike the other half.

There are two classes of hemihedral forms :—

*L Those forms in which half the similar angles or edges are modified indcpendently of the other half (‘*hemi-holohedral ”), producing—*

1. In the monometric and dimetric systems ‘tetrahedral ”. and ‘¢sphenoidal” forms, by the independent replacement of the alter- nate angles; their opposite faces are not parallel, and they are hence called

“inclined ” hemihedrons; as in chalcopyrite, boracite.! The replacement in the dimetric system of tivo opposite basal edges at one base and the other two at thc opposite base is of the same kind; as in edingtonite.

2. In the trimetric system ment of half the similar parts opposite of the other, unlike the

3. In the trimetric and hexagonal systems by independent replaccments at the opposite extremities crystal; as in topaz, calamine, tourmaline.

4. In the rhombohedral system, by the replacements of the alternate basal edges or angles of the rhombohedron, forms usually called ‘tetartohedral” or quarter forms, on the ground that mathematically the rhombohedron is a hemihedral form derived from the hexagonal prism, which is the type of the hexagonal system. Rock crystal is usually developed according to this law.

IL. Those forms in which all the similar angles or edges are modified, but by half the full or normal number of planes (‘ holo- hemihedral”), producing—*

1, In the monometric system “‘pyritohedral” forms, by a replace- ment of the edges or angles ; as in pyrites. Such forms have opposite faces parallel, and are often called parallel hemihedrons.

9. In the dimetric system “pyramidal” and “ scalenoidal” forms, by a replacement of the eight solid angles of the primary prism, according to two methods.

3. In the hexagonal’ system “pyramoidal » and ‘ gyroidal ” forms, by a replacement of prism, or of the six lateral angles of the rhombohedron, according to two methods; as in quartz and apatite.

*The above illustrations show that hemihedrism is not only divided into two classes, but is of various kinds, aud these have been systematized as follows:—“ holomorphic,” in which the occurring planes pertain equally to the upper and lower (or opposite) ranges of scctants, as in ordinary hemihedrons ; and (2) ** hemi- morphic,” in which each sct of planes pertains to either the upper or the lower range, but not to both. As to the*

relative position of the sectants which contain the planes, the forms may be vertically direct, as in baryte ; vertically alternate, as in the tetrahedron, the rhombohedron, and the plagihcdral faces of quartz ; and vertically oblique, as in many forms of chondrodite.

In hemimorphic forms symmetry is

“‘ monoclinic” forms, by the replace-

of one base and the diagonally other half; asin datholite, humite. “hemimorphic ” forms, of the

to distinct forms or modifications,—always, Rk 1 however, of the same system ; hence only the upper or the under half of each crystal can be regarded as complete, as regards the form there seen ; and so for each end it is half formed. Fig. 45 represents a crystal of tourmaline, which is bounded on the upper end by the planes of the rhombohedrons R(P) and ~~2R (0), and on the lower end by the basal pinacoid (k’). In fig. 46 of smith~~ sonite the upper extremity shows the base k, two brachydomes o and p,

~

Fig. 46.

Fig. 45. and two macrodomes m and J;

1 As the parts of either half are alternate, there still results a symme- trical solid. As either one or other half may be the one thus modified, there may result two such symmetric solids, which stand in an inverse position to one another. When the modifications affect the upper right- hand solid angle, the resulting form is called +; when the upper left- hand angle it is—.

Hemihedral and Tetartohedral Forms.—The exception to the Hemi- which was formulated by Weiss, hedral was to the effect that one-half or even one-fourth only of the faces forms.

the solid angles of the hexagonal

‘deranged ; the crystals are Hemi-

bounded at the opposite ends of their main axes by faces belonging nou orms.

3

Hemi- hedral forms.

MINER

whilst on the lower end it is bounded by the faces P of the primary alone.

It has been found that all hemimorphic crystals become electri- cally polar when heated, that is, exhibit opposite kinds of electricity at opposite ends of the crystal. The subject will be more fully con- sidered under the electricity of minerals.

The hemihedral forms of the cubic system are the following :—

1. The tetrahedron (fig. 47), hemihedral of the octahedron, is bounded by four equilateral triangles. It has six equal edges with faces meeting at 70° 32', and four trigonal angles. The principal axes join the middle points of each two opposite edges. Examples: fahlore, boracite, and helvine.

Fig. 47. Fig. 48.

2. The trigonal dodecahcdrons (fig. 48), hemihedral of the icosi-tetrahedron, are bounded by twelve isosceles triangles, and vary in general form from the tetrahedron to the cube. There arc six longer edges corresponding to those of the inscribed tetrahedron, and twelve shorter, placed three and three over each of its faces, and four hexagonal and four trigonal angles. Example : tctrahedrite.

3. The deltoid dodecahedrons (fig. 49), hemihedral of the triakis-octahedron, are bounded by twelve deltoids, and vary in general form from the tetrahedron on the one hand to the rhombic dodecahedron on the other. They have twelve longer edges lying in pairs over the edges of the inscribed tetrahedron, and twelve shorter edges, three and three over each of its faces. There are six tetragonal (rhombic), four acute trigonal, and four

obtuse trigonal angles. The principal axes join, two and two, opposite rhombic angles. Example : tetrahedrite.

Fig. 49. Fig. 50.

4. The hexakistetrahedrons (fig. 50), hemihedral of the hexakis- octahedron, are bounded by twenty-four scalene triangles, and most commonly have their faces grouped in four systems of six each. The edges are twelve shorter and twelve longer, lying in groups of three over each face of the inscribed tetrahedron, and twelve in-

termediate in pairs over its edges. The angles are six rhombic, joined in pairs by the principal axes, and four acuter and four obtuser hexagonal angles. Example: diamond.

In these forms, often named " tetrahedral," the faces are oblique toeach other. Their derivation and signs areas follows. The tetra- hedron arises when four alternate faces of the octahedron, two opposite above and two intermediate below, are enlarged so as to

obliterate the other four; and its sign is hence C. But, as either

four faces may be thus enlarged or obliterated, two tetrahedrons can be formed, similar in all respects except in position, and together making up the octahedron. These are distinguished by the signs + and —, added to the above syntbol, but only the latter in general

expressed, thus ~~*. In all hemihedric systems. two forms simi*~~

larly related occur, which may thus be named complementary

forms. The trigonal dodecahedron is derived from the icositetra-

hedron by the expansion of the alternate trigonal groups of faces. mom F :

a? the most common variety being ae ie The

deltoid dodecahedron is in like manner the result of the increase of

the alternate trigonal groups of faces of the triakisoctahedron, and

Its sign is

its sign is Lastly, the hexakistetrahedron arises in the development of alternate hexagonal groups of faces in the hexa- mOn

kisoctahedron, and its sign is

&uL.06¢ ¥ 300

Two semitesseral forms with parallel faces occur. (1) The pentagonal dodecahedrons (fig. 51), bounded by twelve symmetrical pentagons, vary in general aspect between the cube and the rhombic dodecahedron. They have six regular (and in general longer) edges, lying over the faces of the inscribed cube, and twenty-

Fig. 51. Fig. 52.

four, generally shorter (seldom longer), edges, usually lying in pairs over its edges. The solid angles are eight of three equal interfacial angles, and twelve of three interfacial angles, of which only two are cqual. Each principal axis unites two opposite regular

edges. This form is derived from the tetrakishexahedron, and its

. ° co sign is »

It is found frequently in iron pyrites and cobaltine.

(2) The dyakisdodecahedron (fig. 52), bounded by twenty-four trapezoids with two sides equal, has twelve short, twelve long, and twenty-four intermediate edges. The angles are six cquiangular rhombic, united in pairs by the principal axes, eight trigonal, and twenty-four irregular tetragonal angles. It is derived from the mOn

used to distinguish it from the hexakistetrahedron, also derived from the same primary form. It occurs in iron pyrites and cobaltine. The two other semitesseral forms, the pentagonal

hexakisoctahedron, and its sign is

, the brackets being

Fig. 53.

dodecahedron (fig. 53), and the pentagonal icositetrahedron (fig. 54), both bounded by irregular pentagons, have not yet been observed in nature.

Fig. 54.

Combinations.—The above-mentioned forms of the tes- Combina- seral system (and this is true also of the five other systems tions.

of crystallization) not only occur singly, but often two, three, or more occur united in the same crystal, forming what are named combinations.

In this case it is evident that no one of the individual forms can be complete, because the faces of one form must interfere with, by diminishing, the faces of other forms. A combination therefore implies that the faces of one form shall appear symmetrically disposed between the faces of other forms, and consequently take the place of certain of their edges and angles. These edges and angles are thus, as it were, cut off, and a greater number of new ones produced in their place, which properly belong neither to the one form nor the other, but are angles of combina- tion. These new faces are hence termed modifications, and the original or primary or simple form is said to be modified. Usually one form predominates more than the others, or has more influence on the general aspect of the crystal, and hence is distinguished as the predominant form, the others being considered subordinate.

The sign of the combination consists of those of its constituent forms, written in the order of their influence or importance 1n the combination, with a point between each pair. ;

It will be readily seen that such combinations may be exceedingly numerous, or rather infinite ; and only a few of the more common

mid formed by the (6×4) faces of the latter. The faces of the octahedron truncate the threc-faced solid angles of the rhombic dodecahedron. Fig. 35 shows the first stage of this truncation, while fig. 34 shows an advanced amount. The faces of the icosi-

can be noticed. Many others more complicated will oceur in the descriptive part of this article. Among holohedral combinations, the cube, octahedron, and rhombic dodecahedron are the predomin- ant forms. In fig. 27 the cube has its angles replaced by the faeces of the octahedron, which truncate the angles, and the sign of this combination is «00, O.. In fig. 28 this process may be regarded as having proceeded still farther, so that the faces of the octahedron nearly equal those of the cube, while in fig. 29 they now predom- inate; the sign, still of the same two elements, but in reverse order, is O, Occ. It will thus be seen that, through an increase in the amount of the abstraction of the faces of the cube, the figure gradually passes over into that of the octahedron. This may occur in all cases, and is termed the passage of the cube into the octa- hedron (or vice versa), or a " transition by decrement."

In fig. 31 the cube has its edges replaced by the faces of the rhombic dodecahedron, which truncate the edges, the sign being «O02, 00; while in fig. 32 there is the same combination, but with the faces of the cube subordinate, and hence the sign is «0, oO, The former figure, it will be seen, has more the general aspect of the cube, the latter of the dodecahedron. Here the solid angles of the latter are truncated by the faces of the cube, and we have the passage of the cube into the dodecahedron by decrement. The same transition, through truncation or decrement, could be shown in all cases of combinations, and in both directions, the last stage of the passage into oue or other form always consisting of the replacement of its solid or interfacial angles by faces of the de- parting figure, more or less minute. A few illustrations of this may be given, in the three most important forms.

he relationship of the tetrakishexahedron to the cube has above been stated to be, that its faces form six low quadrilateral pyramids, which rest upon or spring from the edges of the cube. (From this the form derives its trivial name of four-faced cube.) Hence these faces bevel the edges of the cube. The first stage of such bevelling (or the last stage of the truneation of the tetrakis- hexahedron by the faces of the cube—whichever way it may be regarded) is secn in fig. 55. As the cubic face is here dominant, the sign is 00, 008. Fig. 56 shows a somewhat similar stage

Fig. 60. Fig. 61.

tetrahedron truncate the edges of the rhombic dodecahedron, as in fig. 60 ; while those of the latter truncate the unequal-angled tetra- gonal (or rhombic) angles of the former (fig. 61). The faces of the hexakisoctahedron bevel the edges of the rhombic dodecahedron.

While such transitions may appear indefinite, yet certain minerals have either in themselves a habit, or have at ecrtain localities a habit, of crystallizing so markedly. in @ certain stage of these transitions as to be absolutely capable of recognition thereby.

Combinations of hemihedral or, as they have been called, semi- Combina- tesseral forms are of three classes:—those with holohedral forms, tions of those in which the faces fall obliquely on one another, and those hemi- with parallel faces. Fig. 62 shows the coinbination of a right- hedral forms.

Fig. 62. Fig. 63.

handed tetrahedron with the cube, which truncates its edges, the tetrahedron here being dominant. Fig. 68, again, shows a com- bination of the cubo-dodeeahedron with a right-handed tetrahedron, the first or holohedral form being in this case markedly dominant. Fig. 64 is an illustration of the second class, combinations of

es: | ee “4 hY saphena ane Saea

,

\

Fig. 55. Fig. 56.

in the modification produced through the combination of the icosi-tetrahedron with the cube. The trilateral pyramid which this form plaecs upon the faces of the cube rests upon its solid angles, instead of, asin the last case, upon its edges; hence it is these solid angles which, in the process of decrement, it replaces by faces which form a low three-sided pyramid. The triakisoctahedron,

—

Fig, 64. Fig. 65.

oblique-faced semitesseral forms with each other. In it a right- handed tetrahedron has its solid angles truncated by the faccs of

Si

va

a

1

i H a Ls

one which is left-handed ; and so its sign is > , — a . Fig. 65

shows a combination of a right-handed tetrahedron with a left-

Fig. 58.

again, modifies the solid angles of the cube, as shown in fig. 57, by a low three-sided pyramid, positioned at right angles to that considered in the last combination. As

the hexakisoctahedron is merely the <T-S

two-faced form of that last considered, the pyramid which modifies the solid angles is, in its combination with the cube, six-sided, as in fig. 58. /| AA» /\ As the faces of the rhombic dodeca- \ hedron truncate the edges of the octa- \ NY \/ hedron, fig. 34 represents the first stage such truncation or combination; while g. 85 may be taken as representing the last, the faces of the octahedron being Um there nearly totally removed. . Fic. 59 Fig. 59 shows the first stage of the oo passage of the octahedron into the icositetrahedron, in the trunca- tion of the solid angles of the former form by a four-sided pyra-

Fig. 66. Ge ea Orie

handed three-faced tetrahedron. Fig. 66 shows a combination of a right-handed hemihedron of the icositetrahedron with a right- handed tetrahedron.

Parallel-faced hemihedrons generally form combinations with holohedral forms ; and the amount of relative dominance is of all degrees. Fig. 67 shows a combination, in equal amount, of the cube

MINERALOGY oot

with a vertical-faced pentagonal dodecahedron; while fig. 68 shows j placed erect, and named the chief axis ; its ends are poles, Dimetric

an increase in the amount of truncation effected by the latter. Fig. . 60 chiowe-the combination of the oubo with the dyakidodecuhedron, | 20% 'He edges connected with them polar edges, The and other axes are named subordinate or lateral axes, and the ™™e™<

plane that passes through them is the base. A plane forms. ar

through the chief and a lateral axis is a normal chief section. In these systems also occur the three forms of "pyramids," "prisms," and "pinacoids." (1) The pyra- mids have their faces triangles. Pyramids in crystallo- graphy are each composed of 'two geometric pyramids placed base to base, and named "closed forms," as the crystals are shut in by definite faces on every side. (2) he] The prisms are bounded by plane faces

parallel to one axis. Fig. 68. They are thus of unlimited extent in the direction of that the former being dominant. In fig. 70 an octahedron, in dominance, axis, and therefore named "open forms," but in solid crystals is combined with the vertical-faced pentagonal dodecahedron; in | are shut in by faces of other forms. (3) The pinacoids, or tables, have two faces intersecting one axis and parallel to the others, and thus are also open forms, or unlimited in the direction of these axes. Forms (2) and (3), when con- joimed, mutually shut in each other, or produce closed forms. I. Pyramidal or Tetragonal System.—This system has Pyra- three axes at right angles, two of them equal, and the chief ™idal axis longer or shorter. The name tetragonal is derived 5¥S™-

from the form of the base, which is usually quadrangular. There are eight tetragonal forms, of which five are closed. (1) Tetragonal pyramids (figs. 78, 79) are enclosed by eight isosceles triangles, with four middle edges all : : in one plane, and eight polar edges. Fig. 70. Fig. 71. There are three kinds of this form, fig. 71 the faces of these forms are of nearly equal size, while in fig. 72 the octahedral faces are nearly removed. 'The solid angles of

ah Fig. 78. SF al distinguished by the position of the lateral axes. In the first these axes Fic. 79 Fig. 72. Fig. 73. unite the opposite angles ; in the second it

the octahedron are modified in fig. 73 by the faces of the dyakis- they intersect the middle edges equally; and in the third they

; lie in an intermediate position, or divide these edges unequally, — dodecahedron. In fig. 68 a vertical-faced pentagonal dodeca- the last being hemihedral forms. These pyramids are also dis-

tinguished as obtuse (fig. 78) or acute (fig. 79), according as the vertical angle is greater or less than in the regular octahedron. (2) Ditetragonal pyra- mids (fig. 80) are bounded by sixteen scalene triangles, whose base- lines are all in one

Fig. 74. Fig. 75.

hedron is the prevailing form in combination with the cube; while in fig. 74 the faces of the octahedron are superadded. In fig. 75 its octahedral angles are modified by the faces of the icositetrahedron,

Fig. 80. Fig. 81. plane. This form rarely occurs except in combinations. (3) Tetra- gonal sphenoids (fig. 81), bounded by four isosceles triangles, are the hemihedral forms of the first variety of tetragonal pyramids. (4) The tetragonal scalenohedron (fig. 82), bounded by eight scalene triangles, whose bases rise and fall in a zigzag line, is the hemi- hedral form of the ditetragonal pyramid. Nos. (3) and (4) are rare. (5) The tetragonal trapezohedron is not found in minerals as a simple form. The three open forms are—(1) tetragonal prisms, bounded

Fig. 76. Fig. 77. by four planes parallel to the principal axis, which may be either and in fig. 76 by those of the octahedron in addition. In fig. | longer (fig. 83) or shorter (fig. 84) than bea lateral aXes ; @) be 77 they are modified by the faces of the dyakisdodecahedron. tragonal prisms, bounded by eight similar planes; and (3) the basa

2 Bs 3 i i isti ly of two parallel faces bounding the prisms In each of the five systems which follow there is this Be ie cose ania alter “ ss

difference from the cubic system that one axis is always The various series of tetragonal crystals are distinguished from unequal to (longer or shorter than) the others. This is | each other only by their relative dimensions. To determine these,

Primi- tive pyramid,

308

one of the series must be chosen as the primary form, and for this purpose a tetragonal pyramid of the first variety, designated by P as its sign, is selected. The angle of one of its edges, especially the middle edge, found by measurement, determines its angular

_ dimensions, whilst the proportion of the principal axis @ to the

Derived.

pyra- mids.

Prism.

Pinaeoid.

Fig. 83.

| Fig. 84.

equal to 1, gives its linear dimensions. The of each faee of the fundamental form are

Fig. 82.

lateral axes, supposed parameters, therefore, Leda

Now if m be any (rational) number, either less or greater than unity, and if from any distance ma in the principal axis planes be drawn to the middle edge of P, then new tetragonal pyramids of the first order, but more or less acute or obtuse than P, are formed. The general sign of these pyramids is mP, and the most common varieties $P, 2P, and 3P,—with the ehief axis half, twice, or thrice that of P. If m becomes infinite, then the pyramid passes into a prism, indefinitely extended along the prineipal axis, and with the sign oP. If m=0, whieh is the case when the lateral axes are supposed infinite, then it becomes a pinacoid, consisting properly of two basal faces open towards the lateral axes, and designated by the sign OP. The ditetra- gonal pyramids are produced by taking in each lateral axis distances ” greater than 1, and drawing two lege = to these points from eaeh : ‘ of the intermediate sisi i tie polar edges. The parameters of these planes are therefore m : 1:2, and the general sign of the form mPn, the most eommon values of n being $, 2, 3, and oo. When n=, a tetragonal pyramid of the seeond order arises, designated generally by mPoo, the most eommon in the mineral kingdom being Po and2Po. The relation of these to pyramids of the first order is shown in fig. 85, where ABBBC is the first and ACCCX the second order of pyramid. In like manner, from the prism oP, the ditetragonal prisms oPn

Fig. 88.

Fig. 89.

are derived, and, finally, when n= the tetragonal prism of the second order, whose sign is o Poo.

The combinations of the tetragonal system are cither holohedral

or hemihedral; but the latter are rare. Prisms and pinacoids must always be terminated on the open sides by other forms. Thus in fig. 86 a square prism of the first order is terminated by the primary pyramid, and has its lateral angles again replaced by another more acute pyramid of the second order, so that its sign is cob, PB, 2P oo),

In fig. 87 a prism of the second order is first bounded by the fundamental pyramid, and then has its edges of combination replaced by a ditetragonal pyramid ; its sign is coPo, P, 3P3. In fig. 88 the polar edges of the pyramid are replaced by another pyramid, its sign being P, Po. In fig. 89a hemihedric form, very characteristie of chaleopyrite, is represented,—P and P' being the two sphenoids, @ the basal pinacoid, and 8, ¢ two ditetragonal pyramids. —

IIL The Hexagonal System.—The essential character of Hexas this system is that it has four axes,—three equal lateral gonal axes intersecting each other in one plane at 60°, and one lane principal axis at right angles to these. The plane through the lateral axes, or the base, from its hexagonal form, gives the name to the system. As in the last system, its forms are either closed or open. They are divided into holohedral, hemihedral, and tetartohedral,—the last, which are rare, having only a fourth part of the faces developed. Only a few of the more common forms require to be here described.

The hexagonal pyramids (figs. 90, 91) isosceles triangles, and are of three kinds, axes fall in the angles, in the middle of the lateral edges, or in another point of these edges, the last being hemihedral forms. They are also elassed as acute or obtuse, but with- out any precise limits. The trigonal

pyramid is bounded by six triangles, and may be viewed as the hemihedral form of the hexagonal. The dihexa- gonal pyramid is bounded by twenty-four scalene triangles, but has never been observed alone, and rarely even in combinations. The more common prisms are the hexagonal of six sides ; in these the vertical axis may be either longer than the lateral, as in fig. 92, or shorter, as in fig. 93. There are also dihexagonal, of twelve sides.

A particular pyramid P is chosen as the fundamental form of this system, and its dimensions deter- mined either from the proportion of the lateral to the principal axis (1: a) or from the measurement of its angles. From this form (mP) others are de- rived exactly as in the tetragonal system. Thus dihexagonal pyramids are produced with the general sign : mPn, the chief peculiarity being that, Fig. 91. whereas in the tetragonal system n might have any rational value from 1 to ©, in the hexagonal system it can only vary from 1 to 2, in consequence of the geometric character of the figure. When n=2, the dihexagonal changes into an hexagonal pyramid of the second order, whose signis mP2. When m=, various prisms arise from similar ehanges in the value of nm; and when m=0 the basal pinacoid is formed.

Few hexagonal min- eral species form per- fect holohedral eom- binations. Though quartz and.apatite ap- pear as sueh, yet pro- perly the former is a tetartohedral, the lat- ter a hemihedral spe- cies. In holohedral species the predomi- nant faces are usually ; those of the hexagonal Fig. 93. Fig. 94. prisms oP (fig. 92) and oP2, or of the pinacoid OP (fig. 93); whilst Prisms. the pyramids P and 2P2 are the most common subordinate forms. Fig. 94 represents the prism, bounded on the extremities by two pyramids,—one, P, forming the apex, the other, 2P2, the rliombic

are bounded by twelve Pyta- according as the lateral mids.

Fig. 90.

t i

‘ ‘ ‘ ! ‘

‘

‘ ‘ ‘

’

‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘

‘

faces on the angles, or oP, P, 2P2. Fig. 95 is a similar form, the upper part of the pyramid being replaced by the pinaeoid. In some erystals the lateral edges of the prism are replaced by the

Fig. 95. Fig. 96. Fig. 97.

second prism oP2 (fig. 96), producing an equiangular twelve-sided prism, which always represents the combination oP, wP2, and cannot occur asasimpleform. Figs. 97, 98 are combinations in this

Fig. 98. Fig. 99.

system seen in beryl. An example of a more complicated combina- tion is seen in fig. 99, of a crystal of apatite, whose sign with the corresponding letters is @P(Af), oP2(e), OP(P), $P®, P(x), 2P(z), P2(a), 2P2(s), 4P2(a).

359

scalenohedron is properly the hemihedral form of the dihexagonal pyramid, but is more easily understood as derived from the inscribed rhombohedron mR. _ If the halves of the principal axis of this be multiplied by a definite number ; Al nm, and then planes be drawn from the extremities of this enlarged axis to the lateral edges of the rhombo- hedron, as in fig. 105, the scaleno- hedron is constructed. It is now designated by mRn (the » on the right here referring to the chief axis), and the dihexagonal prism in this series by oR» (for-

merly mR” and oR”), The combina-

tions of rhombo- hedral forms are very numerous, several hundreds having been de- scribed in cale-spar aloue. Among the most common is the prism in com- bination with a rhombohedron, as seen in the twin crystal of calc-spar (fig. 106), with the _ sign

-

x

Fig. 105.

Fig. 104. oR, —4R, the lower half being the same form with the upper, but

turned round 180°. In fig. 107 the rhombohedron mR has its polar

f

Q

ee

Rhombo- hedral forms.

Hexagonal minerals frequently crystallize in those series of hemi- hedral forms that are named “ rhombohedral,” from the prevalence

in them of rhombohedrons.- These (figs. 100, 101) are bounded by

4

G f ‘ ¢ #e ¢ – ee Ss . ‘ Sy s

. ~

Fig. 100. Fig. 101. six rhombi, whose lateral edges do not lie in one plane, but rise and fall in a zigzag manner. The principal axis unites the two trigonal angles, formed by three equal plane angles; and in the most common variety the secondary axes join the middle points of two opposite edges. When the polar edges form an angle of more than 90°, the rhombohedrons are named obtuse; when of less than 90°, acute ; fig. 102 represents the first, fig. 103 the second. Hexagonal sealeno- hedrons (fig. 104) are bounded by twelve scalene triangles, whose lateral

ates

Fig. 102. Fig. 103.

edges do not lie in one plane. The principal axis joins the two hexagonal angles, and the secondary axis the middle points of two opposite lateral edges.

The rhombohedron is derived from the first order of hexagonal pyramid by the hemihedral development of its alternate faces. Its

general sign should therefore be oF but on several grounds it is

found better to designate it by R or mR, and its complementary figure by-— mR. When the prism or pinacoid arises as its limiting form, they are designated by oR and OR, though in no respect

changed from the limiting forms oP and OP of the pyramid. The.

1

‘ f

!

Le iC

fi

1 !

us

1

L

Y Fig. 106. Fig. 107.

edges replaced by another rhombohedron~4mR, and in fig. 108 its lateral edges bevelled by the scalenohedron mRn. A more complex combination of five forms is represented in the crystal of calc- spar fig. 109, its sign, with the letters on the faces, being R(y),*

Fig. 108. Rr), R(P), 4R(m), oR, Tetartohedral combinations are seen most distinctly in rock-crystal.

IV. Right Prismatic or Rhombie System.—This system is characterized by three unequal axes, all at right angles to each other. Any one of these may be assumed as the chief axis, when the others are named subordinate. The plane passing through the secondary axes, or the base, forms a rhombus, and from this one of its names is derived. As prismatic forms are most frequent (the prism standing vertically on the rhombic base), it is best defined as the right prismatic. This system comprises only a few varie- ties of forms that are essentially distinct, and its relations are consequently very simple.

Fig. 109.

Right prismatic system.

greater or less than 1, a series of pyramids arise, whose general sign Derived is mP, and their limits are the prism and pinacoid ; the whole series forms. being contained in thia- formula, OP « < «2 Ate tate heen mP… . oP,

—which is the fundamental series, the lateral axes always remaining unchanged. :

From each member a new series may, however, be developed in two directions, by increasing one or other of the lateral axes. When the macrodiagonal is thus multiplied by any number 7 greater than 1, and planes drawn from the distance ” to the polar edges, a new pyramid is produced, named a macropyramid,

Pyra- There are two closed forms. (1) The rhombic pyramids (figs. 110, mids, 111), bounded by eight scalene triangles, whose lateral edges lie in one

(<>

Fig. 110.

plane, and form a rhom- bus. They have eight polar edges (four acute and four more obtuse) and fonr lateral edges. The angles are six rhom- bic, the most acute = the extremities of the : :

longest axis. (2) The — i rhombic sphenoids (figs. 112, 113) are bounded by four scalene

Sphen- triangles, with their lateral edges not in one plane, and are hemi-

oids. hedral forms of the rhombic pyramid. They are of very infrequent occurrence.

Prisms. Theopen forms, again, arerhombic prisms bounded by four planes parallel to one of the axes, which is indefinitely ex- tended, and may be longer than the _ lateral, as in fig. 114, or shorter as in fig. 115. They are divided into upright (as in the above figs.) and horizontal

. prisms, according as either the principal or one or other of the lateral axes is supposed to become infinite. For the latter form the name doma or dome has

Domes. been used; and two kinds, the macro- Fic. 114 dome (fig. 116) and the brachydome (fig. oe i

; __ 117), have been distinguished.

Pinacoids. Rhombic pinacoids also arise when a one axis becomes =0 and the two others as pee are indefinitely extended; and so we : have macropinacoids (fig. 118) and Fig. 115. brachypinacoids (fig. 119),—the qualifying term thus designat- ing the axis to which the faces of the dome or pinacoid are parallel.

In deriving these forms from a primary, a particular rhombic pyra- mid P is chosen, and its dimensions determined either from the

with the sign mPn, the mark over the P point- ing out the axis en- larged, When =o, a macrodome results,

with the sign mPo. If the shorter axis is multiplied, then brachy- pyramids and brachy- domes are produced,

with the signs mPn and

mPo. So also from the prism oP, on the one side, originate numerous

macroprisms Pn, with the limiting macro-

pinacoid «Po ; on the other, numerous brachy-

prisms coPn, with the Fig. 121,

limit form Po, or the brachypinacoid. . In figs. 120, 121 the two domes are shown in their relation to the primitive pyramid.

SPY RES

Fig 122. Fig. 128. Fig. 124.

t

4

i i

! 1

*Ly *

1 1

f

‘

{

‘

t

1 ‘

i

1

{

‘

i

1

t a

;

i

:

I

: !

j

;

I ° i

: ! :

i]

.

i a

1

i

‘ 1 , !

H

=

perceecrecne

The pyramids seldom occur independent, or even as the pre- dominant forms in a combination; sulphur, however, is an excep- tion. Prisms or pinacoids usually give the general char- acter to the crystal, which then appears either in a columnar or tabular or even rectangular pyramidal form. The determination of the position of these crystals, as

Fig. 117. vertical or horizontal, de- Macro- angular measurement of two of its edges, or by the linear pro- pends on the choice of the and portion of its axes a:b: c, the greater lateral axis } being assumed chief axis of the fundamental

form. In the topaz crystal (fig. 122) the brachyprism and the pyramid are the predominant elements, asso-

brachy- equalto1. 'To the greater lateral axis the name macrodiagonal is diagonal. given, to the shorter that of

brachydiagonal; and the two principal sections are in like manner named macrodiagonal and brachydiagonal, according to the axis they intersect. The same terms are applied throughout all the derived forms. They conse- quently mark only the position of

the faces in respect to the axes – F

of the fundamental crystal, and — ig HG frequently of necessity without reference to the relative magnitude of the derived axes.

ciated with the prism, its sign and letters being P22), P(o), eP(dN). Fig. 123 of stilbite is another example, the macropinacoid

coPoo or M being combined with the pyramid P®, the

brachypinacoid oo Po (7),

Fig. 127.

and the basal pinacoid OP(P). Another instance is fig. 124 of a lievrite crystal, where the brachyprism and pyramid combine

By multiplying the principal axis by any rational number m,

Oblique prismatic system.

Hemi-

pyta- ‘midal character.

Prisms,

+and — pyramids.

MINERALOGY

with the macrodome, or oP2, P, Po. The above figures are very common forms of barytes,—figs. 125 and 126 being both composed of the pinacoid OP, a brachydome, anda macrodome, with sign

OP©, Poo (f), 4Po(d). The variation in aspect arises from the pre- dominance of different faces ; and fig. 127 consists of the macrodome 4Poo, the prism P(g), and the pinacoid OP.

V. The Oblique Prismatic System.—This system is char- acterized by three unequal axes, two of which intersect each other at an oblique angle, and are cut by the third at right angles. One of the oblique axes is chosen as the chief axis, and the other axes are then distinguished as the orthodiagonal (right-angled) and clinodiagonal (oblique- angled). The same terms are applied to the chief sections, and the name of the system refers to the fact that these two planes form with the base two right angles and one oblique angle C.

The forms of this system approach very near to those of the right prismatic serics, but the inclination of the axis, even when almost aright angle, gives them a peculiar character, by which they are always readily distinguished. Each pyrainid thus separates into two altogether independent forms or hemipyramids.

Three varieties of prism also occur—vertical, inclined, and nori- zontal—with faces parallel to the chief axis, the clinodiagonal, or the orthodiagonal. The horizontal prisms, like the pyramids, sepa- rate into two independent partial formsnamed hemiprismsor hemi- domes. The inclined prisms are often designated clinodomes, the term prism being restricted

to the vertical forms. Ortho- pinacoids and clinopinacoids are also distinguished, from

their position in relation to the axes. The monoclinic pyra- mids (fig. 128) are bounded by eight scalene triangles of two kinds, four and four only being similar. Their lateral edges lie all in one plane, and the similar /y triangles are placed in pairs on : the clinodiagonal polar Sigs ig, Ua:

The two pairs in the acute angle between the orthodiagonal and basal sections are designated the positive hemipyramid, whilst the two pairs in the obtuse angles of the same sections form together

‘the negative hemipyramid. But, as these hemipyramids are wholly

the rhombic series.

independent of each other, they are rarely observed combined. More frequently each occurs alone, and then forms a prism-like figure, with faces parallel to the polar edges, and open at the extremi- ties. Hence, like all prisms, they can only appear in combination with other forms. The vertical prisms are bounded by four equal faces parallel to the principal axis, and the cross section is a rhombus ; the clinodomes have a similar form and section; whilst the hori- zontal prisms or domes have unequal faces, and their section is a rhomboid.

The mode of derivation of these forms closely resembles that of A complete double pyramid is assumed as the fundamental form, and designated +P, in order to express the two portions of which it consists. Its dimensions are given when the

_ proportion of its axes @:b:c¢ and the angular inclination of the

oblique axes C, which is also the inclination of the orthodiagonal section to the base, are known.

The fundamental series of forms is OP ….+mP….2+P ....tmP…. oP, from each of whose members, by changing the dimensions of the other axes, new forms may be again derived. Thus from +mP, by multiplying the

*orthodiagonal by any number m, a series of orthopyramids +mP°n is produced, with the ortho. domes mP°o as limiting forms. The clinodiagonal produces a similar series of clinopyramids +mP‘n, with the limiting clinodome mP*co always completely formed, and therefore without the signs + attached. From oP arise orthoprisms »P°n and the ortho- pinacoid oP%o, and clinoprisms oP’ and the clinopinacoid coP’co. In these signs the o or c attached to the P indicates that the orthodiagonal (0) or clinodiagonal © axis has been multiplied. Formerly the latter forms were enclosed in brackets, thus (mPoo) == 9b 0).*

The combinations of this system may be easily understood from their resemblance to those of the right prismatic, the chicf difficulty being in the occurrence of partial forms, which, however, closely fesemble the hemihedral forms of the previous systems. A few examples only need tlierefore be given. ies

361

*Hig: 129 represents a very common form of gypsum crystals, co Peo »(P), oP(f), P(Z). The most common form of augite is repre- sented in fig. 180, with the sign oP(M), 0 P%c ®, @P*co (2) , P(s).*

‘ prceetrnn4 ‘

Fig. 181. Fig. 132.

*Fig. 181 is a crystal of common felspar or orthoclase, composed of the clinopinacoid oP*o(M), the prism P(T), the basal pinacoid OP(P), and the hemidomes 2P%0(y); to which, in fig. 182 of the*

*same mineral, the hemipyramid P(o) and the clinodomie 2P*o (7m) are added.*

VI. Anorthic or Triclinie System.—This is the least Anorthic regular system, and departs the most widely, indeed almost system.

absolutely, from symmetry of form. The axes are all unequal, and inclined at angles none of which are right angles,—so that, to determine any crystal, or

series of forms,

the proportion of the axes a: b : ¢, and also their angles,

or those of the inclination of the chief sections, must be known. As in the previous systems, one axis is chosen as the principal axis, and the two others distinguished as the macrodiagonal and brachydiagonal axes. In consequence of the oblique position of the principal sections, this system consists entirely of partial forms wholly independent of each other, and each composed only of two parallel faces. The complete pyramid is thus broken up into four distinct quarter-pyramids, and the prism into two hemiprisms. Each of these partial forms is thus nothing more than a pair of parallel planes, and the various forms consequently mere individual faces. This circumstance renders many triclinic crystals very unsymmetrical in appearance.

Triclinie pyramids (fig. 183) are bounded by eight triangles whose lateral edges lie in one plane. They are equal and parallel two and two to each other, each pair forming, as just stated, a tetartopyramid or open form, only limited by combination with other forms, or, as we may sup- pose, by the chief sections. The prisms are again either vertical or inclined ; the latter are named domes, and their scction is alwaysrhomboidal. In deriv- ing the forms, the fundamental pyramid is placed upright with its brachydiagonal axis to the spectator, and the partial forms designated, the two upper by 'P and P', the two lower by ,P and P,, as in the figure. The further derivation now follows as in the right prismatic system, tions already mentioned.

Some combinations of this system, as the series exhibited by most of the felspars, approach very near to the oblique prismatic system; whilst others, as cyanose and axinite, show great incom-

XVI. — 46

Fig. 133. with the modifica-

Gonio- meters.

is then measured on a graduated are.

pleteness and want of symmetry. In the latter case the determina- tion of the forms is often difficult. In the albite crystal (figs. 134, 185) P is the basal pinacoid OP; Mf the brachydiagonal

pinacoid oP; s the upper right pyramid P'; 7 the right hemi-

prism oP'; 7 the left hemiprism o'P; and # the hemidome "Po. Figs. 186 and 187 are crystals of axinite, the former from Dauphiné,

Fig. 135,

Fig. 136. Fig. 137.

the latter from Cornwall, of whose faces the following is the de-

velopment :—r the macropinacoid oP ; P the left hemiprism oo'P; wthe left upper quarter-pyramid 'P; / the left upper quarter- pyramid 2'P; s the left upper partial form 'of the macropyramid

3'P3; and x the hemidome 2'P'c.

The Measurement of the Angles of Crystals.

The permanence of the angular dimensions of crystals shows the importance of some accurate method of measur- ing their angles,—that is, the inclination of two faces to each other. Instruments for this purpose are called gonio- meters.

Two have been specially used for this purpose—the common or contact goniometer, invented by Caringeau, and the reflecting goniometer of Wollaston. The former is simply two brass rulers turning on a common centre, between which the crystal is so placed that its faces coincide with the edges of the rulers, and the angle This instrument is suflici- ently accurate for many purposes and for large crystals, but for precise determination is far inferior to the reflecting goniometer. This requires smooth and even faces, but these may be very small, even the hundredth of

an inch; and, as small crystals are generally the most perfect, far greater accuracy can be attained.

The reflecting goniometer is represented in fig. 138. It con- sists essentially of a graduated circle mm, divided on its edge into twice 180°, or more frequently into half-degrees, the minutes being read off by the vernier hk. This circle turns on an axis connected with ¢, so that by turning this the circle is moved round, but it is stopped at 180°, when moving in one direction, by aspring at. The other part of the instrument is intended to attach and adjust the crystal to be measured. The first axis of mm is hollow, and a second axis, aa, passes through it from ss, so that this and all the connected parts from } to f can be turned withont inoving the circle mm. The axis d passes through a hole in be, so that 1t can turn the arm de into any required position; 7 is a similar axis turning the arm og, and pg a fourth axis, in like manner movable in g, and with a small knob at gq, to which the crystal to be measured is attached.

When about to be used, the instrument should be placed ona table, with its base horizontal (which is readily done by the screws in it), and opposite to a window at about 12 or 15 feet distance, so that its axis shall be parallel to the horizontal bars of the window. One of the upper bars of the window, and also the lower bar, or, instead of the latter, a white line on the floor or table parallel to the window, should then be chosen, in order to adjust the crystal. The observer places himself behind the instrument with the side a at his right hand. The crystal is then attached to q by a piece of wax, with the two faces to be measured upwards, and the

edge of union of the faces, including the angle to be measured, as nearly as possible in the line of aa. The eye being brought near to the first face of the crystal, the axes aa and p are turned till the image of the window is seen reflected in the face with the horizon- tal and vertical bars in their position. The axis d is then turned through a considerable angle (say 60°), and the image of the window again sought and brought into its proper place by turning the axis f, without movingp. When this is done that face is brought into its true position, normal to d, so that no motion of d@ can dis- arrange it. Hence the image of the window may now be sought in the second face,

and | brought into its true position, with the horizontal bars seen horizontal, by moving the axes d and a. When this is done the crystal is properly "adjusted." The angle is measured in the following manner. First bring the zero of the circle and vernier to coincide, and then turn the inner axis @ or ss, and move the eye till the image of the upper bar of the window re- flected from the more distant face of the crystal coincides with the lower bar or hori- zontal line seen directly. Keeping the eye in its place, turn the other axis ¢¢ till the reflected image of the upper bar in the other face in like manner coincides with the

Fig. 138. lower line; the angle of the two faces is then read off on the

divided circle. As the angle measured is not.directly that of the faces but of the rays of light reflected from them, or the differ- ence between the angle wanted and 180°, the circle has the degrees numbered in the reverse direction, so as to give the angle without the trouble of subtracting the one from the other.

The apparatus figured is for adjusting the crystal, and is an im- provement suggested by Naumann. In the original instrument the axis fo was made to push in or out in a sheath, and had a small brass plate, bent at right angles, inserted in a cleft at 0, to which the crystal was attached. The crystal was adjusted as formerly by moving the plate, or the axis fo, and by slight motion of the arm de, which should be at right angles nearly to be when used. A very marked improvement is to have a small mirror fixed on the stand below the crystal, with its face parallel to the axis aa, and inclined at 45° to the window, when the lower line can be dispensed with, and the instrument used for various other purposes of angular measurement. Many more perfect instruments have been intro- duced for the purpose of insuring greater accuracy ; but the simple instrument is sufficient for all purposes of determinative mineralogy, and the error from the instrument will, in most cases, be less than the actual variations in the angles of the crystals.

Departure from Geometric Simplicity and Loss of Regularity in Crystals.

Such departures may be regulated by law, or may result from an undue operation of the force of aceretion in certain directions.

1. Regular Departures from Simplicity.—There are three varieties of this :— parallel groupings, twin forms, hemitrope forms.

Parallel Groupings.—A plurality of individuals are here Crystal arranged either so that a line which joins their centres 8TOUPS

becomes a prolongation of one or other of their crystallo- graphic axes, or so that their axes are parallel.

Fig. 20 shows the first, where cohesion sufficient for stability requires that the minute octahedra must mutually penetrate some- what into each other. Fig. 189 shows the same in baryte. If we suppose octahedra united, the upper left-hand face of the one with the lower right-hand face of the other, there would be parallelism of their axes. Re-entering angles would, in such cases, prove a plurality of individuals, but if a number of cubes were superimposed in similar position, no such angles would occur, an elongated square prism resulting; and such arrangements, if

Duplex crystals.

Varieties of twins.'

MINERALOGY

repeated, are linear, or, with diminishing size in the individual, acicular.

Fig. 139. Fig. 140.

Twins and Hemitropes.—Though closely related, formed under the operation of very similar laws, and to a certain extent passing into one another, these are not the same. In the first case a plurality of individuals must be present ; in the second this is not necessary. In fig. 140 two individuals evidently intersect one another ; in figs. 141, 142 one individual may be supposed to have been bisected in a certain direction, and the two halves reattached, but in a position differing in some definite manner from their relative position before the separation.

Fig. 141.

Fig. 142.

There are four varieties of true twins: those of apposition, of intersection, of partial or completed interpenetration, and of in- corporation.

The first is exemplified by spinel, as in fig. 143; the second by

Fig. 145.

Fig. 146.

staurolite, as in fig. 144; the third by calcite, as in fig. 146, and by blende, as in fig. 145, where the two individuals of fig. 143 may

be supposed: to have been forced vertically into one another; and the last by quartz, as in fig. 147.

The following are the laws of union of twins.

a plane which does occur in the mineral twinned, or which can occur in accordance with the fifth law of symmetry.

te,

Ih

Mis ER

hi

WH)

”

S=

Fig. 147.

Mi

Fig. 148.

union in twins is also a face of union in hemitropes of the samc 2. From the above it results that the axes of the united The

mineral. crystals are either parallel (fig. 148) or inclined (fig. 149). former generally occur among hemihedric forms; and the two erystals are combined in the exact tia in which they would be

erived from or would reproduce the primary holohedral form. The class with oblique axes occur both in holohedric and in hemihedric forms; and the two individuals are then placed in perfect symmetry, in accordance with law 1.

Twins are generally recognized by having re-entering angles (figs. 150, 151); but sometimes the crossed faces coincide in one plane, when the combination appears as a ; single individual (figs. 152, 153). Fic. 149 The line of union may then be im- at +i perceptible, or it may be disclosed by the intersection of two sets of strie (figs. 154,155), or by some physical diversity in the char- acters of the two faces.

The formation of twin crystals may be again, or many times, repeated,— forming groups of three, four, twenty-four, or more. When the faces of union are parallel to each other, the crystals form

Fig. 150. rows of indeterminate extent.

Fig. 151.

When they are not parallel, they may return into each other in circles, as in rutile; or form bouquet or rosette groups, as in chrysobery] (fig. 156) ; or stellate groups, as in calcite (fig. 157) and in cerussite (figs. 158, 159).

Fig, 152. Fig. 153.

When the crystals are of different size, greater complexity results; but a number of minute erystals are frequently arranged upon a larger at those

points where the angles of a single large crystal would protrude. Occasionally a simple form is twinned with a more complex one, as in chabasite (fig. 160).

; : 1. The face of Laws of union of twins, termed the ‘face of composition,” must be either twinning,

Hemi- tropes.

Laws of hemi- tropism.

Modes of

union.

364

Hemitrope crystals we may imagine as having been formed from a single crystal, which has been cut into two halves in a particular direction, and one half turned round 180°, or 90°, or 60" “The line about which the revolution is supposed to take place is called the ‘axis of revolution.” From the amount of turn usually being 180°, Haiiy gave the name hemitrope. The position of the two

Fig. 157. Fig. 156.

halves in this case resembles that of an object and its image in a

mirror, whose surface then would represent the plane of reunion. The following are the laws of hemitropes. The axis of revolution is always a possible crystallographic line,—either an axis, a line parallel to an axis, or a normal to a possible crystalline plane. The plane normal to the axis of revolution is called the twin plane; it is either an occurring or a possible plane, and usually one of the more frequently re- curring planes, Both the axis and the twin plane

Vy,

Fig. 158. Fig. 159.

bear the same relation to both halves of the crystal in their re- versed positions; consequently the parts of hemitrope crystals are symmetrical with reference to the twin plane (except in triclinic forms and some hemihedral crystals). The face of composition very frequently coincides ‘

with the twin plane; when not coinciding, the twin plane and the face of com- position are generally at right angles to each other, so that the composition face is parallel to the axis of re- volution. But in twins of incorporation the surfaces of £ composition have exercised a disturbing influence on one another, so that the surface of union is exceedingly ir- regular. Still in these cases the axis and the plane of twinning retain a definite

Fig. 160. position ; but the face of composition, being no longer defined, is useless as a determinant.

There are three modes in which the composition may take place

in hemitropes. These may be explained by dividing a crystal into halves, with the plane of division vertical, and then turning one of the halves round.

MINERALOGY

1. One of the halves may be inverted, as if by revolution through 180° on a horizontal axis at right angles to the plane of section, and the two faces again united by the surfaces which were separated. Here the surfaces of union are the original ones, but the base of one of the halves has taken the , place of its summit. Examples: selenite (fig. 161) and orthoclase.

2. One of the halves may be turned round through 180°, as if by revolution on a@ horizontal avis, parallel to the plane of seetion, and the face opposite and parallel to that of the plane of section—an originally external face—may then be applied to the other half. Here, not only has the base of one-half become a summit, but a lateral and external face of the original crystal has been thrust to its centre so as to become a face of

Fig. 161.

internal union. Example: labradorite (fig. 162).

“3. One of the halves may be turned round through 180°, as if by revolution on a vertical axts, parallel to the plane of section, the external face opposite and parallel to the plane of section becoming

Fig. 162.

a face of union. Here, however, both the original summits retain their position as summits. Example: orthoclase.

The first of these modes of composition may occur in each of the systems, but it is not always apparent until disclosed by optical properties. The second is rare, and the third still more so.

In hemitrope crystals (less frequently in true twins) the halves of the crystal are frequently reduced in thickness in the direction of the ordinary twin axis ; and when there is a parallel repetition of hemitropes, which frequently occurs, they are often

reduced to very thin plates, not the thickness of paper, giving to ~

the surface of the aggregate a striated structure and appearance. _ In the eubdic system the faces of composition, both of twinning and of hemitropic revolution, are those of the cube, the dodecahed- ron, and the octahedron. A

In the first case we have the axes of the two crystals necessarily in some cases parallel, or, more correctly, falling into one ; but, as in this system all the axes are alike, or all the cubic faces similar, composition may occur along or parallel to all alike, and double or triple twins occur. We have examples in twins of the pentagonal dodecahedron (fig. 163) made up by the interpenetration of a right

Vy?

IN Fig. 163.

and a left (+ and —), and of the tetrahedron, as seen in pyrite and fablerz respectively. In virtue of the position required by law 2, it will be scen that

the position of the solid: which is common to both intersecting crystals is in the twin of pyrite the four-faced cube, which is the holohedral form of the pentagonal dodecahedron, while in the case of the fahlerz twin (fig. 164), the common por- tion is an octahedron, the holohedral form of the tetrahedron.

2

{> q

/

Fig. 165.

Twinning on an octahedral face is seen in the apposition twin of spinel (fig. 143), the tetrahedral twin of blende (fig. 165), the inter- penetrative octahedral twin of blende seen in fig. 166, and the inter- secting cubes of fluor (fig. 167).

This is also the usual twin face for hemitropes of the cubic system.

Fig. 166.

Twins of cubie system.

MINERALOGY

It is seen in fig. 168 of blende, where the two parts of the rhombie dodceahedron are united by it. Magnetite, spinel, and diamond

Fig. 167. Fig, 168.

frequently oceur in oetahedral hemitropes of the same composition (fig. 169).

This is also the face of composition for tetartohedral hemitropes. Fig. 170 is that of the diamond. Here six of the faces of the six-

Fig. 169.

faced octahedron, with six faces diagonally opposite, form a low double six-sided pyramid (a portion of an oetahedral face truncating each) through an 180° revolution of one set of these. Garnet some- times shows both twins and hemitropes of the dodeeahedron, of dodeeahedral eomposition. In the tetragonal system, twin erystals are very uncommon, but hemitropes frequent. With parallel axes they very seldom oecur, ._ but are seen in ehaleopyrite. When the axes are inclined, the plane of union is usually one of the faces of the primary pyramid ; and, as these faees are all similar, composition may take place simultaneously parallel to all. Very eomplicated forms hence result, as geen in ehaleopyrite and in eassiterite (fig. 171)-

sw

Fig. 171 Fig. 172. In cassiterite the plane of union is frequently one of the faces of the pyramid Poo, sometimes one of those faees that replaee the polar edges of P (figs. 172 173). From the bend the latter form is termed genieulated.

Fig. 173.

Hausmannite occurs in hemitropes of the primary P; and on the

polar edges of this other twins are symmetrically repeated, a central individual appearing like a support to the others (figs. 174, 175).

Fig. 174,

In the hexagonal system twins are very eommon among the

369

twins are generally formed by the interpenetration of two rhombo- hedrons, a + anda —, the vertical axis being the axis of eomposi- tion; as in chabasite (fig. 176), cinnabar, levyne, ealcite, &e. Soine- tines six or more erystals, united parallel to the prismatie planes,

Fig. 175. Fig. 176. form rosettes; as in ehabasite from Giant's Causeway. The almost endless stellate forms of crystals of snow are built up in this manner. Many of the most beautiful eombinations to be seen among crystals result from this mode of arrangement.

Parallel gronpings of hexagonal prisms also oeeur, as in apatite (fig. 177).

Rock erystal, in eonsequence of the tetartohedral character of its erystallization, exhibits twins in whieh the double hexagonal pyramid P may be said to be separated into two rhombohedrons P and 7; these, though geometrieally similar, are physi-

Fig. 177. Fig. 178.

cally distinct. In fig. 178 the two individuals have not entirely in- terpenetrated, and might be regarded as simply grown together with parallel axes; but in fig. 147 there is so eomplete an inter- et that the eomposite eharaeter of the erystal is only evi-

eneed through a differenee in the eharaeter of the surfaces of the two halves, whieh are most irregularly disposed.

The hemitropes of this system often form regular erystals, when the two halves have been united by a plane parallel to the base, so as to appear like a simple erystal, as in fig. 179. Here each end shows the forms oR,—4R, but the terminal faees appear in parallel instead of alternate posi- tion. Something of the same is seen in fig. 180, a hemitrope sealenohedron from Derbyshire. Heniitropes with the face of the primitive rhombohedron as the faee of composition are also com- mon; and they are sometimes joined by a faee of —4R, the two axes forming an angle of 127° 34'. Oeeasionally a third individual is interposed in a lamellar form, as in fig. 181, where the faces of the two outer portions become parallel. This is found in some pieces of Iceland spar. When the erystals unite in a face of the primary rhombohedron, they form an angle of 89° 8'; hemitropes on this law are easily reeognized by their differing so little from a right angle in the re-entering bend (figs. 182, 183).

The faees whieh in this species act as faeces of eomposition are

i atn

‘ ‘

omen Canam

Fig. 181.

exceedingly numerous ; other examples are figs. 142, 146, 148, and

149, ,

In the right prismatic system twin erystals with parallel axes are Right

thombohedral (the hemihedral) and the tetartohedral forms; while hemitropes prevail among the hexagonal or holohedral forms. The

tare, but with oblique axes eommon, the faees of union being one of prismatic

the faces of the prism oP. Twins of this kind oecur frequently in twins.

Oblique prismatie twins,

Twins of hemi- tropes.

366

aragonite, cerussite, mispickel, and marcasite. In aragonite the crystals are partly interpenetrating, and partly merely in juxta- position, as in fig. 184, where the individuals are formed by the

- !

| | |

Fig. 182.

combination oP(Af), oP co (h), Poo(k). In fig. 185 several crystals of the same combination form a series with parallel planes of union, the inner members of which are often so shortened that they form

mere films, which appear as striz on the faces Poo and wPo of the twin.

In fig. 186 four crystals, each of the combination oP, 2P ao : having uuited in inclined planes, form a circular group, which returns into

Fig. 184. Cerussite occurs in similar groups, building up a composite

Fig. 185. itself. L hexagonal crystal. It also occurs in stellate twins of two or three individuals, as in figs. 158, 159. Similar stellate eombinations are also eomnion in chrysoberyl. In staurolite, individuals of the pris-

matic combination oP, oP, OP combine, either as in fig. 144 by a face of the brachydome, having their chief axes almost at right

angles, or as in fig. 140 by a face of the brachypyramid $P%, the chief axes and the braehypinacoids (0) of each A

of the crystals meeting at an angle of about

60°. This mineral, which is very frequently \ | twinned, also forms combinations with the axes

parallel (fig. 187).

In the oblique prismatic system, twins are by no means so frequent as hemitropes. Twins of interpenetration with parallel axes, but the one turned as regards the other round a vertical axis, are common iu orthoclase (figs. 188, 189). Such UN YY crystals are termed right-handed (fig. 188) and left-handed (fig. 189), according to the side of : the crystal whieh has been turned. In this Fig. 187. mineral hemitropes oecur around an axis normal to M, to P, and to n (fig. 529) ; double twins of the last two are common (fig. 530),

Harmotome and phil- ; lipsite form first hemi- tropes, and then twins of these, which are ar- ranged sometimes as crosses and sometimes. as double

crosses (fig. 190). In hemitropes of gypsum the two halves are united by a face ‘parallel to the ortho- diagonal seetion, as in fig. 161, where the two halves have united so regularly that the faces P’, P form only one : : plane. In a pees Fig. 188. Pig. 189.

manner the two halves of the augite crystal represented in fig.

mae ae

!

mr---4 ™.

ee

M

re

i

i

i

i

A

,

**s,*

!

f

| Dian saci et

130 are in fig. 191 united so perfectly and symmetrically that the line of junetion cannot be observed on the clinopinacoid. The two hemipyramids P(s) (like — P (7) in the gypsum erystal) form at one end of the crystal a re-entering, at the other a salient angle,

Fig. 190. Fig. 191. Hornblende (fig. 192) and wolfram exhibit a similar appearance. This results in the imparting a pseudo-hemimorphism to certain oblique prismatic twins, which is well seen in the twins of sphene . (figs. 193 and 589), and in exalting the charac- teristic appearance of true hemimorphs, as seen in the twin of acmite (fig. 194). In other cases the individuals partially penetrate each other in the direction of the orthodiagonal. This mode of union is not uncommon in gypsum, and is very frequent in orthoclase. Two crystals

Fig. 192. Fig. 193.

of the latter of the combination (Po), oP, 0P, 2Po, as in fig. 131, are often pushed into each other, as shown in fig. 195.

In the anorthic system some twin formations are of great import- Anorthic | ance, é.g., as a means of distinguishing the triclinic from the mono- twins,

clinic species of felspar. In one variety the twin axis is the normal to .the braehydiagonal chief section. But in the anorthic felspars this section is not perpendicular to the base, and conse- quently the two bases form on one side a re-entering, on the other a salient angle; whereas in the oblique prismatic felspars (where the brachydiagonal chief section corresponds to the clinodiagonal) no twin crystals can be produced in conformity to this law, and the two bases fall in one plane.

Fig. 194. Fig. 195.

Albite and oligoclase very often exhibit such twins as in figs. 196, 197, where the very obtuse angles formed by the faces of OP, or P

and P' (as wellas those of 'P'o, or x and 2'), area very characteristic appearance, marking out this mineral at once as a triclinic species. Usually the twin formation is repeated, three or more crystals being combined, when those in the centre are reduced to mere plates. When very numerous, the surfaces P and x are covered with fine striz, often only perceptible with a microscope. A second law ob- served in triclinic felspars, particularly in albite and labradorite,

Twin growth,

is that the twin axis corresponds with that normal of the brachy- diagonal which is situated in the plane of the base. In pericline, a variety of albite, these twins appear as in fig. 198, where the two crystals are united by a face of the basal pinacoid P, whilst the faces of the two brachypinacoids (Jf

Fig. 198.

and JM') form edges with very obtuse angles (173° 22'), re-entering on the one side and salient on the other. These edges, or the line of junction between Jf and M', are also parallel to the edges formed by these faces and the base, or those between Af and P. In this case also the twins are occasionally several times repeated, when the faces appear covered by fine strie.

Cause of the Formation of Twins and Hemitropes.—It has been shown above that the relative position of the molecules of crystals is determined by a polarity in the molecules themselves. This polarity must exist along three lines which intersect in the centre of the molecules ; and unlike poles must attract each other. It has been supposed that compound crystals result from a reversion of the original polarity of the molecules of a crystal, after it has at- tained a certain size. Heat and electricity, resulting from move- ments in strata, might occasion such reversion during the forma- tion of a crystal, aud this would suffice for the explanation of hemitropes, though not directly of geniculated crystals, and still

*less of intersecting twins. Twins have accordingly been divided into '*paragenetic" and '*metagenetic." The first term is applicd to the ordinarily occurring twins, in which the compound structure is supposed to have had its beginning in a nucleal compound molecule, or to have been compound in its very origin. In metagenetic twins the crystal was at first simple, but afterwards, through some change in the material furnished for its increase or possibly induced in itself, it received new layers, or an extension in a reversed josition.*

Fig. 201.

Fig. 208.

Rutile occurs in crystals like fig. 178, but with a bend at both extremities, instead of one only. Here the middle portion of the crystal is supposed to have attained a length of half an inch, and then it became geniculated simultaneously at. both extremities ; – indeed, in this mineral such geniculations are frequently repeated until the ends are bent into one another, and produce short hexa-

gonal prisms with central depressions or even vacuities. The re- peated twinning which produces striation, as in calcite and the

felspars, and the peculiar rippled structure of amethyst, are ascribed to a similar operation, acting in an oscillatory manner.

; Certain intersecting twins in the cubic system may be explained simply through excessive or undue accretion of molecules along cer- tain lines. At page 351 it was shown how the three-faced octahe- dron (fig. 39) was formed through an accretion of molecules upon the faces of the octahedron along axes joining the centres of its faces (those which connect the solid angles of the cube). It was also shown that when through this accretion two faces of the triakis- octahedron (fig. 199), adjacent along the edge of the octahedron, rose into one plane the rhombic dodecahedron resulted. If now accretion still goes on along the same axes, so that the trihedral pyramid

rises above the level of the dodecahedral planes, fig. 200 results. This is the twin of the three-faced tetrahedron (fig. 201).

Fig. 208.

If the accretion is still along the same axes until the lateral edges of the adjacent pyramids fall into: the same line, fig. 202 results; and this is the twin of the simple tetrahedron (fig. 203). Here accretion upon the faces of a complex holohedral form has produced a twin of a simple hemihedral form.

Again, starting from the six-faced octahedron (fig. 204), there is produced by the same process first fig. 205, the twin of the six- faced tetrahedron (fig. 206), and ultimately fig. 207, the twin of the three-faced tetrahedron (fig. 208).

2. Departure from Regularity on Account of Undue Accre-

tion in certain Directions.—Distortion of Crystals.—The pistor- laws of crystallization should produce crystal forms of tions.

perfect symmetry ; these laws, however, are subject, not only to the influence of other laws, but also frequently to

| disturbing influences which are subject to no law. Abso-

lute symmetry, therefore, is very uncommon, crystals being generally so distorted and disguised through interference during their formation that either familiarity on the one hand or skill on the other is necessary for their recognition. As the magnitude of the angles may vary somewhat, even this guide may sometimes perplex. Hence it is necessary to be familiar with such departures from symmetry ; and some of the more common are here noticed.

In the cubic system a cube (fig. 26), le i along one axis, becomes a right square prism (fig. 209), and if elongated in the direction of two axes is changed to a rectangular prism (fig. 7). Cubes of pyrites, galena, fluor-spar, &c., are generally thus distorted. It is very unusual to find a cubic crystal

that is a truc symmetrical cube. ‘ In some species the cube or octa- hedron (or other monometric form) is lengthened into a capillary

lengthened or shortened Of cube.

368 st MINERALOGY

‘ crystal or needle, as happens in red copper and _pyrites. Crystals | result in the obliteration of these summit faces, and in the produc- of acicular pyrites occur at the Newton-Stewart lcad-mine. tion of a perfect double octagonal pyramid (fig. 219). The first An octahedron flattened parallel to two of its faces is reduced to | of these distortions is exceedingly common in analcime and not a tabular crystal (fig. 210). If lengthened in the same direction, it takes the form in fig. 211; or if it is still further lengthened, to the obliteration of two opposite octa- hedral faces, it becomes an acute rhombohedron (same figure). Of octa- When an octa- hedron. hedron is extend- ed inthedirection of a line between two opposite edges, it has the gencral form of a rectangular oetahedron ; and still further ex- tended, as in fig. 212, it is changed to a rhombic prism with dihe- dral summits.

Fig. 220.

uncommon in garnet; the latter rarely occurs in analcime. Length- ened along an octahedral axis it becomes fig. 220; shortened along the same it becomes fig. 221. Both are seen in analcime.

The figure repre- ; Fig. PAW ‘ Fig. 212. ; sents this prism lying on its acute edge (spinel, fluor, magnetite). Of do- The dodecahedron when lengthened in the direction of the up- deca- right axis becomes a square prism with pyramidal summits (fig. hedron, 213); and when shortened along the same axis it 1s reduced to a fe square octahedron with truncated basal angles (fig. 214). Both Fig. 223. Fig, 222.

hedral axis it assumes the form of fig. 222 ; still further elongated, kishexa- with obliteration of one half of its planes, it becomes a scalene do- hedron, decahedron. resembling the “dog tooth” form of calcite (fig. 223). Fig. 224 isa hemihedron of this form, produced by shortening along an octahedral axis, with obliteration of all the

planes which do uot touch the poles of that axis. Ly In the case of modi-

fied crystals of this

: : : Fie. 215. system the distortions me si . ; aay, Ses d sis' are more complex. these forms are modifications of the square prism; the first mode | Fig, 225 represents a |: of distortion is common in garnet, rendering it liable to be' con- | crystal of cinnamon- ; sidered zircon; the sccond is seen in aplome, when it might be taken | stone from Aberdcen-

IN shire; it is a combina-

OS When the tetrakishcxahedron is lengthened along a single octa- Of tetra-

tion of the dodecahe-

dron and the trapezo-

hedron. Only four

dodecahedral faces re-

main (d), and those Fig. 224. Fig. 225.

of the trapezohedron (n) are of unequal size. It may be best

understood by regarding it as fig. 218 with the four vertical fuces | of fig. 213; so that it combines the distortions of both of these

figures.

Crystals of diamond are very frequently distorted, though gene- rally through curvatures of their faces. :

Fig. 216. Fig. 217. for stannite. When the first of these forms is flattened, as in fig. 215 Imperfections in the Surfaces of Crystals. it resembles a form.of stilbite. , : When a dodecahedron again is lengthened along a diagonal Of these the most important are strie, caverns, and

curvatures.

1. Striated Surfaces.—The parallel furrows on the surfaces of Imperfec- |} crystals are called strie, and such surfaces are said to be striated. tion of Each ridge on a striated surface is enclosed by two narrow planes. surfaces. These planes often correspond in position to a secondary or to the primary planes of the crystal, and we may suppose these ridges to have been formed by repeated oscillation in the operation of those causes which give rise, when acting uninterruptedly, to larger planes. By this means the surfaces of a crystal are marked in parallel lines with a succession of narrow planes, meeting at angles alternately re-entering and salient, and constituting the ridges

between the obtuse solid angles, it becomes a six-sided prism with trihedral summits, as in fig. 216; and when shortened in the same direction, it becomes a rhombohedron which has its six acute angles truncated (fig. 217). In the first case, a crystal of green garnet or uwarowite would resemble dioptase ; in the latter, colourless garnct would resemble

oe os ee Ty referred to. This combination of different planes in the formation Sani oe ake i ae a \ of a surface has been termed an oscillation of faces, é nD

Cubes of pyrites are generally striated in such a way that the Striatiou. strie on adjacent faces are at right angles to one another. These . ne a earn to ely ees ew of the primary faces with the ynen : : : planes of the pentagonal dodecahedron, which is the most common direction of the upright _Fig. 218. ‘ Fig. 219, ; form of pyrites ; and they have evidently resulted from an oscilla- axis it becomes a double eight-sided pyramid with four-sided | tion between the primary and this secondary form. summits (fig. 218); a further elongation along the same axis would The rhombic dodecahedron is often striated parallel either with the

hedron, distortions which fre- quently disguise it much. When elongated in the

edges, or with the longer or the shorter diagonal of its faces. In the first case, seen in garnet (fig. 226), there is a passage into the six- faced octahedron ; the second results from an oscillatory combination of the dodecahedron with the regular octahedron, as in magnetite ; and the last with the cube, as in aplome.

Rhombohedrons of chabasite are often striated parallel to the

in the left-handed and right-handed crystals, the twist is to the right or left according as the crystal is right- or left-handed.

The surfaces of crystals are frequently far from flat, on account of fracture, with dislocation of the several fragments, occasioned by motion in the enclosing rock, the material of which igs forced; or it may be transfused, into the rents. The tourmalines and beryls (fig. Dislo- 234) which occur in granitic dykes are very subject to this, the frag- cated ments being often bent as well as displaced. A more or less simul- crystals.

terminal edges (fig. 227), indicating an oscillatory combination be- tween the primary faces and a secondary plane which bevels these edges.

Striation of faces is more frequent in the rhombohedral system than in any of the others. Horizontal strie are of almost invariable occurrence in the prismatic faces of quartz, whatever be the form of the crystal. The oscil- lation here has taken place between the pyramidal and the prismatic faces (figs. 228, 229, 230). During its growth there scems to have been a con- tinued effort to complete the erystal by the assumption of the terminal planes,—which effort was intermittently over-

Fig. 228. come by a preponderating one to continue the deposition of matter

Fig. 229. Fig. 230.

along its main axis. Quartz crystals, from these alternate efforts, often taper to a point, without having any regular pyramidal face. The lateral planes of

prisms of tourmaline are very frequently

taneous effort in the crystallization of two substances may produce a structure with the external form of one, the interior of which exhibits imbedded crystals of the other, more or less perfect in their development. In pegmatite or graphic granite, rude crystals of felspar contain skeleton forms of quartz, of which generally only one side of the prism and two of the pyramid occur, forming a rude lettering. Similar hollow quartz forms occur imbedded in garnet, radiating from its ceutre (fig. 235), and roughening its surface from protrusion, without distorting its form. 'Totally imbedded micro- scopic crystals, "microliths," are, as in the latter cases, chemi-

Fig. 233.

convex, owing to oscillation between several lateral faces. In all such cases the interfacial angles cannot be determined, as they are lost in the rounding. " The striations on the lateral faces of foliated mincrals are merely the edges of laminz. Examples: mica and gypsum. Cavern- 2. Cavernous Crystals. —Crystals not unfrequently occur with a ous faces, deep pyramidal depression occupying the place of each plane, as is often observed in common salt, galena (fig. 21), and sulphur. In Fig. 234, Fig. 236. the solution of crystals through atmospheric exposure, an approach nia: ' te a ae : to the same form is sometimes obtained, owing to the fact that the | Cally non-assimilable. These cabin he o. Whe pas Ee centres of the faces yield sooner than the edges and angles. Crystals | the including crystal, as in augite an i ogt: eS ans of redruthite are often thus cavernous, Sometimes octahedrons | & cettain amount of chemical pre ih . mai tg alee s occur with a triangular cavity, in place of each face (fig. 22). The | "efiniteness in the arrangement; and if the enclosed subs hich igi deinek with in dther forms. crystallizes in a system differing from that of the mineral which Curved 3. Curved Surfaces.—Curved surfaces sometimes result from the | !cludes it, the angles of the latter are more or less aed ae surfaces. oscillatory combination already noticed. Others result from a | 18 the case in "microcline," where the intrusion of a plagioclastic

curvature in the lamine constituting the crystal. Crystals of diamond have convex faces, and are sometimes almost spheres. This mode of curvature, in

which all the faces are equally convex, is less common than that in which a convex surface is opposite and parallel to a corresponding concave surface. Rhombohedrons of spathic iron and pearl spar are usually thus curved, as is shown in fig. 231. The saddle-shaped crystals of the same mincral (fig.

Fig. 231. Fig. 232.

232) are remarkable instances of several reversed curvatures in the same face. A singular curvature is shown in fig. 233, of calcite. The conical crystals of brown zine blende, and the lenticular and conical crystals of gypsum, are other examples. Crystals of quartz are sometimes curved and twisted. When this takes place

felspar causes some departure from the rectangularity of orthoclase. Foreign amorphous matter caught up or attaching itself to the surfaces of a crystal, during the process of its growth, causes lines of feeble cohesion,—as in the case of capped crystals of quartz. Here an occasional selectiveness in the sets of faces to which the foreign matter adheres seems to indicate that it has been to some extent under the influence of a polarity in its adhesion. Something of the same kind seems to have influenced the arrangement of the quartz grains caught up during the formation of the crystal of garnet shown in fig. 236. The perfect modelling of rock crystals is, however, but little interfered with by the almost numberless substances which they contain.

Aggregation of Crystals.

Crystalline aggregates which pass into amorphous masses may, in their more marked or perfect form, be assigned to an imperfect twinning.

Crystals are often grouped in linear series, as in native Regular copper and silver, and thus constitute long threads or re- @ggre-

ticulations. In clustered crystals those adjoining each other are generally parallel in position, and are united by a plane parallel to one of the principal sections, or to planes. of common occurrence. Senarmont mentions a union in galena,

parallel to the octahedral faces, as common ; and he also describes an instance where the union was parallel to the plane 33.

The positions of crystals on the supporting rock seem at first to be withont any regularity. But by closer inspection we detect even here the same law of harmony that governs the formation of the simple and compound crystal. The various positions assumed correspond generally with the more common kinds of composition in twin crystals. This regularity is not always manifest on account of the unevenness of the surface on which they rest. In general, however, on glancing over a surface covered with crystals, a reflexion from one face will be aceompanied with reflexions from the corresponding face in each of the other erystals, showing that the crystals are similarly positioned thronghout. :

This tendency to parallelism in the positions of associated crystals is apparent even in crystalline aggregates. In granite, for example, which is composed of felspar, quartz, and mica, the felspar crystallizations have usually a common position; that 1s, the corresponding extremities lie in the same direction, or nearly so. On this account granite is cleavable in one direction niore easily than in others, and this direction is that of the perfect cleavage plane of the felspar; the second less perfect cleavage of the felspar permits of fracture of the rock nearly at right angles to the first; but, as there is no such third cleavage in the felspar, the workman, in fashioning the blocks of granite for paving stones, is compelled to chip or dress them off in the third direction.

The dominant action of polarity may, moreover, give a parallel position to the main axes of different minerals belonging to the same system, when crystallizing in association, and even to those which belong to diffcrent systems. Fig. 237 is an illustration of the first of such cases, where a crystal of zircon, is implanted into a crystal of xenotime, and has its main axis identically in the same line. As illustrations of the latter—a parallel position of the axes of crystals of different systems—there are records of such association in crystals of cyanite and staurolite, of muscovite and

haughtonite, of albite and orthoclase. The same has been observed between crystals of rntile and specular iron,—the crystals of rutile in this case having the vertical axis in the direction of a lateral axis of the specular iron.

Parallel- ism in crystal growth.

Fig. 237.

Haidinger has observed pyroxene and horn- pblende crystals associated in parallel positions.

A prism of calcite terminating in the planes g (fig. 106) has been observed, in which each plane was covered with small crystals of quartz all lying symmetrically, with their pyramids pointing towards

the summit of the calcite crystal. When one mineral is changed into another, a polarity of accretion is still often seen to have domi- nated in the arrangement. In a crystal of calcite which had been changed into a number of minute crystals of aragonite, the main axes of the latter all lay in the direction of the main axis of the original crystal of calcite.

Irregular Aggregation of Crystals.—Besides the regular unions now described, crystals are often aggregated in peculiar ways, to which no fixed laws can be assigned.

‘Thus some crystals, apparently simple, are composed of concen- tric crusts or shells, which may be removed one after the other, always leaving a smaller crystal like a kernel, with smooth distinct faces. Some specimens of quartz from Becralston in Devonshire consist apparently of hollow hexagonal pyramids placed one within another. Other minerals, as fluor-spar, apatite, idocrase, heavy spar, and cale-spar, disclose a similar structnre by bands of dif- ferent colours. A growth rendered intermittent through the deposition of a thin layer of foreign matter is thus developed.

Many large crystals, again, appear like an aggregate of numerous small crystals, partly of the same partly of different forms. Thus some octahedrons of fiuor-spar from Schlageenwald are made up of small dark violet-blue

cubes, whose projecting angles give a drnsy character to the faces of the larger form. Such polysynthetic crystals, as they may be called, are very common in cale-spar.

Varieties Forms of Crystalline Aggregates.—Crystals have often of strac- been produced under conditions preventing the free de- ture in velopment of their forms; and, according to the direction age. of: the axis in which the development has been checked, . Se' they may be divided into "columnar" and "lamellar" arrangements.

The columnar structure is made up of a more or less fibrous

arrangement; and this may be supposed to have accrued from the simultaneous growth of a multitude of crystals from a single or

Trregular aggre-

gates.

from closely adjacent centres of support, so that, while the crystals were free to elongate themselves in the direction of their main axis, their increase was restrained laterally, by their impact upon one another. When the surfaces of support are level, or consist of the opposing sides of a vein, the columns or fibres, frequently exceedingly delicate, are parallel, and not unfrequently they then have a silky lustre. In the latter of the above circumstances the fibres are disposed transversely to the vein. Examples: gypsum, chrysotile, satin-spar. When the surface of support is rough, or has angular projections, the fibres radiate from certain of these in all directions, producing, in a thin vein, a starlike form, whence the arrangement is called "stellular." Example: wavellite. When this takes place in an open cavity, producing brush-like forms, they are – termed "radiant." Examples: antimonite, needlestone. When the points of divergent growth are so positioned that the radiating gronps interlace with one another, the structure is said to be "reticulated," from its resemblance to a net. Example: tremolite. When individual members of such fibrous structure project above the general surface with acuminated extremities, they are said

to be “ acicular”; when the protruding columns are of uniform thickness they are termed “bacillary,” or rod-like. Such terms as straight, curved, twisted-columnar, diverging, or confused-fibrous explain themselves. Such fibrous arrangements as the above may occur imbedded centrally in a rock mass, which had been the magma out of which they were formed; or they may line the inner surface ‘of cavities, filled originally either with water or aqueous vapour. These modes of occurrence have been distinguished by Mohs as crystal groups and druses. The former includes all unions of im- bedded crystals round a central nucleus; the latter those of crystals of simultaneous or regularly successive growth on a common support. In the first case, there may be spheroidal, ellipsoidal, cocks- comb, or other forms, frequently seen in marcasite, pyrite, and gypsum. In the second, spheroidal forms are less rare, but are seen in the case of several of the fibrous zeolites. In such cases surfaces more or less rough are coated, and diminished in angularity, through the hemispherical forms produced by the radiation of a multitude of bres. Certain imitative outlines thus result from the successive deposition of layers of these erystals. These forms or uniting masses are termed “globular” when nearly spherical, “botry- oidal”” when like bunches of grapes, “ reniform” or kidney-shaped when the spheres are larger, more confluent, and less distinct, and “mammillated” when the masses are nearertohemispheres. Mesolite occurs in globular forms; prehnite in botryoidal; hematite and chalcedony in reniform; and siderite and calamine in mammillated. In all the above cases the transverse fracture of such structures dis- closes the fibrous arrangement of the parts ; but, if the growth has been intermittent, lines of deposit, concentric with the central nucleus of each sphere, are evidenced by layers of distinct colours. Fracture or separation frequently takes place, also, along such lines. In such drusy cavities—termed “geodes” when they are circular— after a certain number of such lines of deposit, grouped arrange- ments which have somewhat more of free crystalline development may assume other imitative forms in which there is a certain dependence on the crystallographic character of the mineral con- cerned. There are thus produced coralloidal or coral-like groups, fruticose or cauliflower-like groups, capillary or hair-like, and fili- form or thread-like or wire-like forms. Often these groups expand in several directions, and produce arborescent, dendritic, plumose, mossy, dentiform, or other forms. Such are common among the native metals; as gold, silver, and copper. Mesolite is very frequently plumose. A

‘“‘drusy crust” is the term applied to a thin rough layer of crystals, which invests either a large crystal or the surface of some other body lodged in the interior of cavities.

In the lamellar structure a development along the main axis would appear to have been checked, and. the erystallographic force to have expended itself laterally; though this is not the invariable habit of a species under all circumstances, as exemplified by baryte. This structure consists of flat crystals, plates, or leaves. It is termed “tabular” when the plates are of uniform thickness, ‘Jenticular ” when they are thinner on the edges, “ wedge-shaped ” when sharp on one edge, “scaly” when the plates are thin and small, ‘ foliaceous” when larger and easily separable; “‘ micaceous” is also used to describe this kind of structure. It may also be curved lamellar and straight lamellar. Wollastonite, when fiat lamellar, is called tabular spar; gypsum. is frequently lenticular, tale scaly. Lamellar minerals when radiating from a centre often form fan- shaped, wheel-like, almond-shaped, comb-like, and other groups. In the granular structure, the force of crystallization has been exerting itself along all the axes; but, from the multiplicity of crystallizing centres, there has been such mutual interference that no single individuals have been able to assume perfect or even characteristic forms. The particles in a granular structure differ much in size. When coarse, the mineral is described as coarsely granular; when fine, finely granular; if not distinguishable by the naked eye, the structure is termed impalpable. Examples of the first may be observed in granular carbonate of lime, of the

Pseudo- morphs classi- fied.

MINERALOGY

second in some varicties of specular iron, of the last in chalcedony, opal, and othier species.

The above terms are indefinite, but of necessity, as there is every degree of fineness of strncture in the mineral specics, from perfectly impalpable, through all possible shades, to the coarsest granular. The term phanero-crystalline has been used for varietics in whieh the grains are distinct, and crypto-crystalline for those in which they are not discernible without the aid

of a lens. Granular mincrals, when easily crumbled in the fingers, are said to be friable.

The minute or crypto-crystalline minerals form aggregates some- what similar to the above. When globular or oolitic, the minute crystals often appear to radiate from a centre, or form concentric crusts. These are often globular or nodular; asin dolomite. Some- what similar are the stalactites and stalagmites, in which the mineral (especially rock-salt, calc-spar, malachite, hsmatite, limonite) has been deposited from a fluid dropping slowly from some overhanging body, or some rent in the roof of a cave. In this case there is generally found a long pendent cylinder or cone, the principal axis of which, generally hollow, is vertical, whilst the marginal parts are arranged at right angles to it, except where they curve round the termination of the tube, when they become hemispherical.

By far the largest masses of the mineral kingdom have, however, been produced under conditions in which a free development of their forms was excluded, and are termed amorphous. This has been the case with the greater portion of the minerals composing rocks or filling veins and dykes. The structure of these masses on the large scale belongs to geology, but somie varicties of the textures, visible in hand specimens, may be noticed. The individual grains or masses have seldom any regular form, but appear round, long, or flat, according to circumstances, and as each has been more or less checked in the process of formation. Even then, however, a certain regularity in the position of the parts is often observable, as in graphic granite, where the axes of the skcleton crystals of quartz are parallel. ~~The rock is termed massive when the grains which form it are small, or granular when they are longer and more dis~~ tinct. Sometimes the rock becomes slaty, dividing into thin plates ; or concretionary, forming roundish masses ; at other times the interposition of some foreign substanee (gas or vapour) has rendered it porous, cellular, or vesicular, giving rise to drusy cavities. These cavities are often empty, but have occasionally been more or less filled by products of change in the rock. It is named amygdaloidal when the cavities so filled have the form of an almond.

Changes of Crystalline Structure.

“Pseudomorphs” are minerals which appear under a form of crystallization which does not belong to the species. They may be recognized either by their having no cleavage, which is most usual, or by their cleavage being altogether different in direction from that of the mineral imitated. Generally they have rounded angles, rough and dull surfaces, and when broken show-a granular structure. The faces of the crystal, moreover, are often covered with minute crystals of a form different from that of the mineral imitated, but which is that belonging to the substance now present. Occasionally the resemblance to real crystals is so perfect, from the perfect polish of the faces, that they are distinguished with difficulty. They may be frequently found still undergoing change.

Pseudomorphs have been classed under four heads :—

1. Pseudomorphs by Alteration.—Formed by a gradual cliange of composition in a species. Of these there are two varieties: they may be pseudomorphous by loss of an ingredient, or by addition of an ingredient ; change of augite to steatite is an example of the first, and of galena into anglesite is one of the second.

2. Pseudomorphs by Substitution. —Those formed by the replace- ment of a mineral which has been removed, or is gradnally under- going removal; e.g., galena takes the form of pyromorphite.

3. Pseudomorphs by Incrustation.—Those formed through the incrustation ofa crystal, which may be subsequently dissolved away. Often the cavity is afterwards filled by infiltration; ¢.g., change of fluor to quartz.

4, Pseudomorphs by Paramorphism.—Those formed when a mineral passes from one dimorphous state to another; ¢.g., change of aragonite to calcite.

These different kinds of change are not always distinguishable. In some cases a change may take place through alteration of the surface, and then, this process ceasing, the interior may be dis- solved out, leaving a pseudomorph like one of incrustation ; or a pseudomorph that appears to be a result of mere chemical altera- tion may be wholly due to substitution simply.

Again, changes of scapolite to a felspar, and of augite to uralite (hornblende), have been considered by Scheerer examples of paramorphism,—scapolite being considered dimorphous with some telspars, and augite with hornblende. But, while such paramorphic changes undoubtedly take place with aragonite, their occurrence in these silicates—which are common associates in the samc rock, and noe have been formed under like cireumstances—is hardly prob- able.

Where mineral bodics have taken the form of organisms, it is more a case of molecular replacement than of true pseudomorphism.

_ Pseudomorphism should be understood, however, to consist, not sunply in alteration of crystals, but in many instances of changes in beds of rock. Thus all serpentine, whether in mountain masses or in simple crystals, has been formed through a process of pseudo- morphism—or, in more general language, of metamorphism—of olivine and augite. The same is true of other magnesian rocks, as steatitic, taleose, and chlorite slates. The crystalline roeks often offer examples of a change similar innature. The graphite of these rocks is probably but a metamorph of some vegetable organism. Thus the subject of metamorphism, as it bears on all crystalline rocks, and that of pseudomorphism, are but branches of one system of phenomena; the chemistry of both is the same, and a knowledge of such changes is indispensable to a study of the older rock strata of the earth.

The common change of pyrites, forming the main ingredient of the upper part of metallic lodes, to earthy red or brown iron ore, thus producing the "'gossan" of miners, is one of many examples of these processes now in progress. Often the gossan contains dis- seminated silver or gold, derived from the decomposed ores. This is a case of pseudomorphism, as truly as when a simple crystal of pyrites becomes limonite; the mode of change and its laws are the same. Again, phosphates, vanadiates, and arseniates of lead, &c., as well as car- bonates and sulphates, are among the surface species, or those that occupy the upper patt of metallic lodes ; they are the results of altera- tion within those depths to which atmospheric agencies penetrate. :

Pseudomorphs are always records of past existences, in some cases they may be the only evidence we possess of such prior existence. Figs. 238, 239 are pseudomorphs of quartz or hornstone after datholite; the measured angles of these crystals show that the imitated crystal was datholite; but that mineral does not now occur in crystals of either of these forms.

The process of petrification of organic bodies is in reality a species of pseudomorphie formation, and has beeu pro- duced in all the above modes. External and internal casts of organic bodies are not uncom- mon. In other cases the original substance has been replaced by some mineral which has preserved, not merely the external form, but even the minutest detail of internal structure, —so that the different kinds of wood have been distinguished in their silici- fied trunks. The most common petrifying substances are silica and carbonate of lime. In encrinites, echinites, belemnites, and other fossils, the crystals of cale-spar often occur in very regular positions. In some varieties of petrified wood both the ligneous structure and the cleavage of the cale-spar are observable.

Different from the above are mineralized bodies, in which the original structure is still retained, but their chemical nature partially changed. In these a complete series may be often traced, as from wood or peat, through the varieties of brown coal, common coal, anthracite, and graphite.

Causes of Change—The causes of change are the Origin of

simplest and most universal operations about us :—(1) the process of gradual alteration to which some substances are liable on account of the presence of oxygen and carbonic acid in the atmosphere, and the reaction of substances thus formed on adjacent ingredients, aided or promoted by electrical currents or by heat; (2) the solvent power of ordinary waters, cold or hot, or of steam; (3) reactions, in accordance with chemical principles, of the ingredicnts

ot2

dissolved in these waters, or in mineral or sea waters, heated or at the ordinary temperature ; (4) the action of gases ex- haling from the earth ; (5) changes referable to volcanic action.

Ordinary waters hold in solution, as is well known, more or less of mineral matter. When water containing carbonic acid is passed through a large number of ordinarily occurring minerals, it gives evidence of the presence of an alkali, or lime, or magnesia ; and some of these minerals give the tests even with the first drops. Pure water gives with many of them a similar result, but more slowly. Limestone in forty-eight hours yields soluble ingredients to the extent of 0°4 to 1 per cent. of the whole mass. The lime, magnesia, and alkalies appear in the condition of carbonates ; and the iron passes from the state of carbonate to that of peroxide during evaporation, The silicates of magnesia, lime, and man- ganese are especially ready in yielding to this action. Silica, however, is more soluble in ordinary than in carbonated water.

These facts illustrate two important points :—(1) that ordinary waters lying upon and filtering through the earth's crust are constantly active in dissolving and decomposing minerals and rocks, and that even species reputed indestrnctible are thus acted npon ; and (2) that the waters are thus furnishing themselves with agents capable of effecting other chemical changes. These waters penetrate all rocks, as well as percolate through soils. Hence the action is a universal one, everywhere going on ; and the results are universal. Bones, shells, corals, and animal remains generally are also sources of carbonate of lime, phosphates, and fluorides ; and plants may contribute also potash and soda, and sometimes silica.

Carbonic acid is a constant ingredient of the atmosphere, and is dissolved by the rains as they descend ; hence this active de- composing agent is present in all ordinary waters; but it is also a result of different mineral changes. Sulphate of iron along with vegetable matters gives oxygen to the carbon of the vegetable matter, and thus produces carbonic -acid and pyrites or sulphuret of iron; and the large quantities of pyrites in coal-beds show on how grand a scale this process has taken place. Sulphate of zine in a similar manner produces carbonic acid and blende or sulphuret of zinc. Bischof observes that the carbonic acid which has thus becn eliminated must have been sufficient in quantity to make an atmosphere of carbonic acid equal in height to our present atmo- sphere. Again, decomposition of sulphurets produces sulphuretted hydrogen ; this by the oxidating action of the atmosphere forms sulphuric acid, and the sulphuric acid aeting on

limestone produces gypstm, and liberates carbonic acid. Sulphurous acid is also generated in the neighbourhood of volcanoes, and rapidly becomes sulphuric acid, with the same result. Moreover, silica in waters, if aided by heat, will decompose limestone and liberate carbonic acid. Hence it is that this gas is exceedingly common in exhalations from mincral springs ; indeed it occurs more or less in all waters.

The dissolving and decomposing action of carbonated waters is therefore general. The sea also partakes of this character, and, in virtue of the numerous salts which it holds dissolved, is a powerful agent in carrying on the changes to which the process leads. Such changes and the various pseudomorphs to which they give rise have to be regarded as types and evidences of vast metamorphic transfor- mations,—processes either of decay or of reformation which have modified widespread rock-masses, and which are at the present time altering the structure of the crust of the earth. It is through a study of pseudomorphs, and of the processes which have gone to form them, that mineralogy is to become the germ from which alone the petrological department of geology can have its true development, and become a living instead of a merely speculative science.

PHysicaL PROPERTIES OF MINERALS. Characters Depending on Laght.

There are few more interesting departments of science than the relations of mineral bodies to light, and the modi- fications which it undergoes either when passing through them or when reflected from their surface. In this place, however, we only notice these phenomena so far as they point out distinctions in the internal constitution of minerals, or furnish characters for distinguishing one species from another.

Lustre of Lustre.—Though the varieties of lustre admit of no precise minerals. pr mathematical determination, they are of considerable value in mineralogy. One highly important distinction founded on them is that between minerals of metallic and non-mnetallic aspect or character. Transparency and opacity nearly coincide with this division,—the metallic minerals

Mtnk hk A home

| oxides, or minute crystals (“ endomorphs ”’) of another mineral ; or

being almost constantly opaque, the non-metallic more or less transparent. Minerals which are perfectly opaque, and show the peculiar brilliancy and opacity of surface of polished metals, are named metallic ; those which possess these properties in an inferior degree are semi-metallic ; and those without these properties are non-metallic.

Lustre has reference to either the intensity or the quality of the reflected light, considered as distinct from colour. Several degrees in intensity have been named :—(1) splendent, when a mineral reflects light so perfectly as to be visible at a great distance, and lively and well-defined images are formed in its faces, as galena, specular iron, or cassiterite ; (2) shining, when the reflected light is weak, and only forms indistinct and cloudy images, as heavy spar or calcite ; (3) glistening, when the reflected light is so feeble as not to be observable at a greater distance than arm’s length, and no longer forms an image, as tale; (4) glimmering, when the mineral held near the eye in full clear daylight presents only a number of small shining points, as red heinatite and granular limestone. When, as in chalk or kaolin, the lustre is so feeble as to be indiscernible, the mineral is said to be dull.

In regard to the kind or quality of the lustre, the following varieties are distinguished :—(1) the metallic, seen in much per- fection in native metals and their compounds with sulphur, and imperfectly in glance coal ; (2) adamantine, found in beautiful per- fection in the diamond, and in some varieties of blende and cerussite ; a modification is metallic adamantine, as seen in wolfram and black cerussite ; (3) vitreous or glassy, scen in rock crystal, or common glass, or, inclining to adamantine, in flint glass; sub-vitreous is seen in broken calcite; (4) resinous, when the body appears as if smeared with oil, as in pitchstone, blende, and garnet ; (5) waxy, like beeswax, as seen in wax-opal and ozocerite ; (6) pearly, like mother-of-pearl, seen in gyrolite, tale, heulandite ; (7) silky, the glimmering lustre seen on fine fibrous aggregates like amianthus, tremolite, chrysotile, krokidolite.

These degrees and kinds of lustre are generally exhibited differ- ently by unlike faces of the same crystal, but always similarly by like faces. The

lateral faces of a right square prism may thus differ in lustre from that of a terminal face. Thus the lustre of the lateral faces of apophyllite is vitreous, while that of the terminal, at right angles thereto, is pearly ; chrysotile is silky when split along the fibres, dull when at right angles to them.

The surface of a cleavage plane, in foliated minerals, generally differs in lustre from the sides; and here again in some cases the latter are vitreous, while the former is pearly, as in heulandite.

As shown by Haidinger, only the vitreous, adamantine, and metallic lustres belong to faces perfectly smooth and pure. In the first, the index of refraction of the mineral is 1°3 to 1°8; in the second, 1°9 to 2°5; im the third, above 2°5. The pearly lustre is a result of reflexion from numberless lamelle, or cleavage planes, within a translucent mineral; and in hydrated minerals, as in the zeolites, itis the result of incipient change,—namely, a loss of water which ensues upon exposure to the atmosphere.

Colour.—This is a property which is of very inferior Colour. value. Minerals are so seldom, if ever, absolutely pure that very minute quantities of an intensely coloured impurity may impart colour to a substance inherently colourless, or overpower a feebler colour which may be its own.

Some few minerals have colour so strong, or have a constitution so little susceptible of intermixture, that they retain almost unim- paired the colour special to them. Such a substance is pyrite ; its brass-y ellow colour may be heightened to gold-yellow by intermixture with copper sulphide, or it may be slightly bleached by arsenic ; but the nature of its composition does not admit of the intrusion of ordi- nary colouring ingredients. The yellow of native gold, again, may be paled by impoverishment with the white of silver, down to the dull tint of electrum ; but no foreign colouring matter can intrude itsclf into a metallic mass. Such substances as these,—native metals, sulphides, and oxides,—have colours essential to them, dependent on their constitution, and to a great extent characteristic of the species.

A second class of minerals are colourless of themselves, and thus very subject to the influence of minute quantities of foreign tinc- torial impurity. These are absolutely transparent and devoid of colour when in crystals, but white and opaque when reduced to powder ; as ice and snow, calcite and

chalk, rock-crystal and sand. But such substances are generally coloured ; "muddied fil would be called in the first case, though it is equally so with the others. Such false colour may be imparted in several ways. It may be (1) from their holding dissolved some colouring matter ; (2) from mechanical mixture of colouring substances snch as metallic

Streak,

Wor hoa lL OG Y

(3) from ehemical replacement,—the substitution of a smaller or larger quantity of a coloured isomorphous ingredient.

As illustration of the first, silica, colourless in rock-crystal, has been found of almost every tint, duc frequently to volatile hydrocar- bons which are dissipated by heat. Fluorite also, found of almost every shade of every colour, may possibly be to a certain extent referred here.

Quartz, felspar, and caleite are often coloured accidentally by imbedded layers of foreign "inclusions," or by '"spangling endo- morphs." These are mechanically mixed, so far as regards their presence in a structure of different and non-assimilable chemical

composition, but erystallographically arranged. They cither mark | the lines of interrupted or intermittent growth; or, in the case of

endomorphs, the axial positions of the minute intruding foreign erystals lic in one plane, or in the same sets of planes.

As an instance of colours introduced through definite chemical replacement, calcite may be cited. Carbonate of lime is colourless ; if a portion of this be replaced by carbonate of magnesia there is a eertain amount of pearly opacity ; if by carbonate of manganese, of a pink tinge; if by carbonate of iron, of yellow, which may be increased through oxygen absorption and " weathering " to an ochre tint, and ultimately to a dark brown.

Sulphuret of zinc, chemieally white, and mineralogiecally trans- parent, may, through metallic substitution, be found of almost all tints of yellow, orange, brown, and black. Again, hornblende, augite, and garnet, — silieates, which in their purest states of tremo- lite, malacolite, and water garnet are colourless,—acquire green, brown, red, and black tints from the assimilation of other metallic silicates.

Henee it would appear that a very advanced practical know- ledge of the subject is necessary to enable us to avail ourselves of the information which is to be derived from this extcrnal feature.

The accidentally eoloured minerals sometimes present two or more colours or tints, even in a single erystal,—very remarkable exaniples occurring in fluor-spar, apatite, sapphire, amethyst, tour- maline, and cyanite. This is still more common in compound niinerals, on which the colours are variously arranged in points, streaks, clouds, veins, stripes, bands, or in brecciated and ruin-like forms. Some minerals again ehangce thcir colour from exposure to light, the air, or damp. Then either the surface alone is affected or "'tarnished," and appears eovered as with a thin film, producing in some minerals, as silver and arsenic, only one colour; in others, as chalcopyrite, haematite, bismuth, stibine, and anthracite, various or irideseent hues, when they are said to have a pavonine lustre. Or oecasionally the change pervades the whole mineral, the colour either becoming paler, or disappearing, as in chrysoprase and rosc-quartz, or becoming darker, as in brown spar, siderite, and rhodonite. In a few minerals a complete change of colour takes place, as in heterosite, and in the chlorophezite of the Western Isles of Scotland, whieh, on exposure for a few hours, passes from a transparent yellow-green to black. These mutations are generally connected with some chemical or physical change. The tarnished colours sometimes only appear on certain faces of a crystal belonging to a peculiar form. 'Thus a crystal of copper pyrites (like fig. 89) has one face P' free from tarnish ; the faces 5 and ¢, close to P', dark blue; the remainder of ¢, first violet, and then, close to P, gold-yellow.

Some crystalline minerals exhibit in certain directions a very lively play or change of colours from refleeted light. It is well seen in many various hues on the cleavage-planes of labradorite, and scems produced by a multitude

of very thin quadrangular pores, interposed in the mineral, like minute parallel lamin. On the cleavage-planes of hypersthene it appears copper-red, and is oceasioned by similar pores, or by numerous small brown or black lamine of some foreigu substance interposed in a parallel position between the planes of the hypersthene. The chatoyant or changing colours of the sun-stone arise from scales of hematite similarly inter- posed, and that of avanturine from scales of mica. The play of eolour in the noble opal seems to be produced very nearly in the same manner as that in the labradorite. A similar opalescence is secn in certain minerals when cut in particular forms. In the sapphire, cut hemispherically over the chief axis, it appears like a star with six rays; in garnet it shows four rays; in certain varieties of chryso- beryl and of adularia it has a bluish tint; and itis also very remark- able in the cat's-eye variety of quartz. Lridescence often arises from very fine fissures, produeing semicircular arches of prismatic tints, which, like the colours of thin plates in general, are referred to the interference of light.

Streak.—This name is applied to the appearance and the colour of the line or furrow produced in minerals by drawing the edge of a hard-tempered knife or file along their surface, or to the stain obtained by rubbing a soft mineral on such a substance as paper or porcelain. Taken along with the hardness, which may to a certain extent be

| it has no effect, as pyrite is harder than the knife.

determined by the same operation, it is one of the most valuable tests which we possess.

The furrow may be lustrous or it may be dull. Powder or splinters may lie along its course, or a still adherent ridge may have been merely rolled over. The furrow and the powder may each be possessed of colour, though such may not be distinguishable in the mincral, or may have a colour quite different from that of the mineral. Three illustrations of the usefulness of this test may suffice. Argentiferous gold, chaleopyritc, and pyrite, differing immensely in value, may readily be mistaken for each other. The knife, when drawn along the surface of the first, sticks in it, ruts up an adhering ridge,

and leaves a shining streak of the same colour as the specimen. When drawn along the second it ruts up

| a trench covered with a dusty powder, which when rubbed on paper

or in the hand -is greenish yellow. When drawn along the third Psilomelane, hematite, and limonite all oecur in black, glossy, stalactitic forms, and have all been termed "black hematite." "There is here also great difference in the value. The knife makes little impression on psilomelane, but leaves a blue lustrous line; it makes a blood-red line in hematite, and a rich ochre-yellow in limonite. Graphite and molybdenite both crystallize in hexagonal plates, both oecur in the same rocks, both have a grey-black colour and a brilliant metallic lustre, both stain the hands or paper; the streak of the

| first—best seen on paper—is black, tending to blue ; that of the last

is greenish. Rough porcelain is the best material for determining the streak of soft minerals.

Diaphaneity.—Minerals, and even different specimens of Trans- Some mission transmit so much light that small objects can be clearly of light.

the same species, vary much in this quality.

seen, or letters read, when placed behind them ; such are named transparent. They are semitransparent when the object is seen only dimly, as through a cloud, and translu- cent when the light that passes through is so broken that the form of the object can be no longer discerned ; some minerals are only thus translucent on the thinnest edges. Others transmit no light, and are named opaque.

Refraction.—It has already been mentioned that most Double erystals—all, in fact, except those of the cubical system— refrac-

exhibit the phenomena of double refraction. For a general explanation of these phenomena the reader is referred to Licut, vol. xv. p. 609 sq.

The direction in which there is no double refraction is named Optic the optic axis of the crystal, sometimes, less happily, the axis of axis.

double refraction. Now in certain mincrals it is found that there is only one direction with this property, whereas in others there are two such directions ; and they have in eonsequeuce been divided into uniaxal and binaxal. To the former belong all erystals of the tetragonal and hexagonal systems, to the latter all those of the other three systems. In the former the optic axis coincides with or is parallel to the crystallographic chief axis. In some uniaxal erystals the index of refraction for the extraordinary ray is greater than for the ordinary ray ; and in others it is smaller. According as it is greater or less they are said to have positive (attractive) or negative (repulsive) double refraction.

Quartz is an example of the former, the index of refraction, accord- ing to Malus, being for O=1°5484, for E=1°5582; cale-spar of tho latter, the index of O being =1°6543, that of E 1°4888. The index of E is in both cases taken at its maximum.

It should be observed that the optic axes are not single lines, but directions parallel to a line, passing through every part of the crystal. It is also important to remark that this property divides crystals into three precise groups :—the cubic, with single refrac- tion ; the tetragonal and hexagonal, with double refraction, and uniaxal; those of the other three systems, also double, but binaxal. These properties are therefore of the greatest use in determining the system to which a mineral belongs.

Polarization.—Intimately connected with this property Polariza- is that of the polarization of light, which affords an easier 402.

means of determining mineralogical characteristics than the direct study of double refraction. For the elements of this subject see Licut, vol. xv. p. 611 sq.

While a consideration of the optic axes enabled us

‘ merely to arrange the systems of crystallization in three

groups, the phenomena of polarization not only bear out a further subdivision of the whole into the above six systems, but disclose, in many cases, phenomena markedly special to individual species. The optical consideration of these phenomena enables us to fix three directions at

374

Axes of right angles to one another—called the axes of optical

optical elasti- city.

Colour pheno- mena.

elasticity—such that the effect of the crystal on the luminous vibrations of the elastic ether is a maximum in one of these directions, a minimum in a second, and a maximum-minimum in the third. The length of these axes is chosen in terms of this action. In certain cases the direction of the axes of optical elasticity is different

for light of different colours.

The position of these axes in relation to the crystallographic axes, and the ratios of their lengths, enable us to class all crystals as follows :—

1. Crystals of the cubic system, Here the three axes of elasticity are all equal. The refraction is simple.

9, Crystals of the tetragonal and of the rhombohedral systems. Two of the axes of optical elasticity are equal in these systems; the third is greater or less according as the crystals are negative or positive. The two equal axes lie in a plane perpendicular to the principal crystallographic axes ; the third axis coincides with the principal axis. ‘ ; f

3. Crystals of the right prismatic system. ‘The direction of the three axes of optical elasticity coincides with the crystallographic axes, taken parallel to the diagonals of the base of the rhombo- hedron, and to the vertical edge of the prism (the primitive parallel- epiped of Levy).

*4. Crystals of the oblique prismatic system. Only one of the axes of optical elasticity coincides necessarily with the crystallo- graphical horizontal axis, or the diagonally horizontal axis of the *hombic base, the direction of the two others not having any evident relation, a priori, with the inclined or diagonally inclined axis of the base, and with the vertical axis (or vertical edge of the primitive parallelepiped). ;*

5. Crystals of the anorthic system. The three axes of optical elasticity have no relation that can be assigned a priori to the crystallographic axes, whatever position may be assigned to these in relation to the primitive solid.

In crystals belonging to the last three systems the three axes of elasticity are unequal.

The axes of elasticity are in gencral such that a ray passing through the crystal in the direction of any one of them is divided into two, which follow that direction with different velocities depending on the lengths of the other two axes. To any other direction there will in general also correspond two different velocities; but their ratio will now depend in a more complex manner on all three axes. In two directions (and only in two, if the axes are all unequal) the ratio becomes unity, or the ray is not divided. These directions are the optic axes.

The displacement of the axes of elasticity for light of different colours, already mentioned, takes place for two axes in crystals of the oblique prismatic system and for all three axes in the anorthic (i.c., doubly oblique) system. In the other systems it does not occur.

In order to follow the distinctive features of the different systems farther, it is necessary to consider the colour phenomena which they ~~*display, when examined in a beam of polarized light. Vari*~~ *ous instruments have been devised for this purpose, as, ¢.9., the polarizing apparatus of Norrenberg, fitted with a condensing lens below and above the crystal slice, or with a low- power (3-inch) eye-piece. The polariscope of Hoff- man of Paris is more efficient, but the appa- ratus of Descloizeaux (fig. 240), who has made this mode of investiga- tion a special study, has the widest scope of use- fulness. In this appa- ratus a blackened mirror is employed for polariz- ing*

the light, taking the place of a tourmaline plate, a Nicol's prism, or a bundle of thin glass. The mirror is inferior to the other two in completeness of polarizing power, and in not admitting of rotation ; while it shares this defect with the last. It is, however, superior to all in extent of field, while it does not, like the first, affect white light. A Nicol's prism is used for examining or analysing the light which passes.

The description of the many beautiful phenomena that may be observed with polarizing apparatus when applied to sections of erystals belongs to the subject of Oprics (PHYSICAL), to which

MINERALOGY

heading also we must refer for the phenomena of circular polarization.

Double Refraction and Polarization of Composite Crystals.—In Optic all the crystallized bodies whose action upon light we have been proper- considering, the phenomena are identical in all parallel directions, ties of as the largest, composite In the mineral crystals,

the smallest fragment having the same property from whatever part of the crystal it is taken. world, however (and among the products of artificial crystaltiza- tion), there ocenr crystals which are composed of several individual crystals whose axes are not parallel. These crystals sometimes occur in such regular symmetrical forms that mincralogists have long regarded them as simple forms; and it is probable that they would have still been so viewed if they had not been exposed to the scrutiny of polarized light.

A composite structure has been ob- served in the case of Brazilian topaz, | sulphate of potash, and apophyllite. | Bipyramidal sulphate of potash, which Count Bournon supposed to be a simple] crystal, was found to be a tesselated MMH crystal, composed of three pairs of crystals Wf of the prismatic sulphate of potash com- bined so that cach pair had their principal axes parallel. When exposed to polarized light, cach pair gave the system of binaxal rings, and when held at a distance from the eye had the tcsselated appearance shown in fig. 241, each opposite pair of the triangles having the same tint.

The most remarkable of this class of minerals is the tesselated apophyllite. The examination of this body by polarized light is due to Brewster. For his results the reader is referred to his paper in the Edinburgh Transactions, vol. ix. p. 323.

Figs. 242, 248 are representations of the figure produced in polarized light by an internal slice of the barrel or cylindrical

Fig. 241.

D

Fig. 242. Fig. 243.

apophyllite from Kudlisaet, in Disco Island. The figures are from different specimens. The shaded part of them has only one axis of double refraction, while the four sectors have two axcs. The mechanical structure of the cleav- age planes resembles the optical figure even after the planes are ground.

The minerals stilbite, heulan- dite, chabasite, and many others, are similarly complex in struc- ture. R Crystals with Planes of Double Refraction.—Analcime, a mineral ranked among the cubical crys- tals, was found by Brewster to be singular in its action upon light, and to exhibit the extraordinary property of many planes of double refraction, or planes to which the double-refracting structure was related in the same manner as it is to one or two axes in other minerals. It crystallizes most com- monly in the form of the icositetrahedron. If we suppose a com- plete crystal of it to be exposed to polarized light, it will give the remarkable figure shown in fig. 244, where the dark shaded lines represent planes in which there is neither double refraction nor polarization,—the double refraction and the tints commencing at these planes, and reaching their maximum § in the centre of the space enclosed by three of the dark lines. When light is trans- mitted through any pair of the four planes which are adjacent to any of the three axes of the solid, it is doubly refracted, the least refracted image being the extraordinary one, and consequently the double refraction nega- tive in relation to the axes to which the doubly-refracted ray is perpendicular, If we suppose the crystal to have the form of a

Pleo- chroism.

Summits of the blue masses are tipped with purple, and

cube, the planes of double refraction will be, as in fig, 245, a plane passing through the two diagonals of each face of the cube.

The tints vary as the square of the distance from the nearest plane of double refraction.

Pleochroism.—Closely connected with double refraction is that property of transparent minerals named pleochroism (of many colours), in consequence of which they exhibit dis- tinct colours when viewed by transmitted light in different directions. Crystals of the cubic system do not show this property, whilst in those of the other systems it appears in more or. less perfection,—in tetragonal and hexagonal minerals as dichroism (two colours), in the rhombic. and clinic systems as trichroism (three colours). In most cases these changes of colour are not very decided, and appear rather as different tints or shades than as distinct colours. The most remarkable of dichromatic minerals are the magnesian mica from Vesuvius, the tour- maline, and ripidolite ; of trichromatic, iolite, andalusite from Brazil, diaspore from Schemnitz, and axinite.

In a specimen of yellow Iceland spar the extraordinary image is of an orange-yellow colour, while the ordinary image is yellowish white. Along the axis of double refraction the colour of the two pencils is exactly the same, and the difference of colour increases with the inclination of the refracted ray to the axis. This is the invariable law of the phenomena in uniaxal crystals. Sir John Herschel found several tourmalines to have a blood-red colour along the axis, and at right angles to it to be yellow-green. There can be little doubt that this property will be found in every erystal of sufficient refraction. Even if the crystal is colourless, a slight inequality in the intensity of the two images may be observed; and when it is distinctly coloured the difference of intensity is very easily seen, even when the two colours are not of a different kind.

The phenomena of dichroism are best seen in crystals with two axes of double refraction, and are well exemplified in iolite, a mineral which crystallizes in six- or twelve-sided prisms. These prisms are of a deep blue eolour when seen along the axis, and of a yellowish brown colour when viewed in a direction perpendicular to it.

If abed (fig. 246) is a section of the prism of iolite ina plane parallel to the axis of the prism, the transmitted light will be blue through the faces ab and de, and yellowish brown through ad, bc, and in every direction perpendieu- ¢ lar to the axis of the prism. If we grind down the angles a, ¢, b, d, so as to replace them with ™" faces mn, m'n' and op, o'p', inclined 31° 41' to ad, or to the axis of the prism, then, if the plane- | abed passes through the optic axes, we shall ° observe, by transmitting polarized light through Pr % the crystal in the directions ac, bd, and subse- quently analysing it, a system of rings round each of these axes. The system will exhibit the individual rings very plainly if the crystal is thin; but if it is thick, we shall observe, when the plane abcd is perpendicular to the plane of primitive polarization, some branches of blue and white light diverging in the form of across from the eentre of the system of rings, or the poles of no polarization, as shown at p and p' (fig. 247), where the shaded branches The

zz

r- I

1 1

y

[44

represent the blue ones.

are separated by whitish light in some specimens and yellow- ish light in others. The white light becomes more blue from p and p' to o, where it is quite blue, and more yellow from p and p' toc and d, where it is eompletely yellow. When the plane abcd is in the plane of primitive polarization, the

poles Dp, are marked by spots of white light, but everywhere else the light is a deep blue.

In the plane cadb (fig. 247) the mineral, when we look through it by common light, exhibits no other eolour but yellow, mixed with a small quantity of blue, polarized in an opposite plane. The ordinary image at cand dis yellowish brown, and the extraordinary image faint blue, the former receiving some blue rays and the latter some yellow ones from cand dto a and 6, where the difference of colour is still well-marked. The yellow image becomes fainter froma and 6 to p andy', tillit changes into blue, and the faint blue

Fig. 247.

image is strengthened by other blue rays, till the intensity of the two, blue images is nearly equal. As the incident ray advances from ¢

andd top and p', the faint blue image becomes more intense, and the

yellow one, receiving an accession of blue rays, becomes of a bluish

white eolour. The ordinary image is whitish from pand py' to 0,

and the extraordinary is deep blue; but the whiteness gradually

diminishes towards 0, when they are both almost equally blue.

The principal axis of double refraction in iolite is negative. The most refracted image is purplish blue, and the least refracted one yellowish brown.

Brewster found that the dichroism of several crystals is changed by heat, and that in some cases this property may be communi- eated to them. Babinet found that all negative crystals, such as calearеous spar, corundum (including ruby and sapphire), tour- maline, and emerald, absorb in a greater degree the ordinary ray, with the exception of beryl, apatite, and some apophyllites ; while positive crystals, such as zircon, smoky quartz,

sulphate of lime, and common apophyllite, absorb in a greater degree the extraordi- nary ray. Babinet found also that certain crystals, such as red tourmaline and ruby, transmit rays of their peculiar colour without being polarized, —in which eases the black eross of their system of rings 1s coloured, and this unpolarized light exists both in the ordinary and extraordinary ray.

Haidinger devised an instrument for showing and for testing the pleoehroism of minerals. In fig. 248, p is an oblong cleavage-thombohedron of Iceland spar which has two glass prisms w,w of

Fra, 248.—Section of Dichroiscope.

18° cemented to its ends with Canada balsam. This combination is placed in a metallic ease, which has a convex lens 7 at one end and a square hole o about the fifteenth of an inch in width at tho other. The lens is of a focal distanee which shows an object held about half an inch from the square hole.

On looking through the lens and prisms two images of the square hole are seen just touehing each other. The light of the one image is polarized in the plane which intersects the short diagonal of the prism ; that of the other is polarized in the plane of the longer diagonal. When a pleochroic crystal or fragment is held at focal distance and examined by transmitted light, then, on the turning of the instrument bringing the polarization of its planes into coincidence with those of the crystal, the two images of the square opening will show the colours of the oppositely polarized pencils of which the light transmitted by the crystal is composed; this constitutes its pleochroism. The dichroism is then seen by looking through the crystal in one direction only, and the contrast of the two colours is made more obvious.

Phosphorescence.—This is the property possessed by par- Phosphor- escence.

ticular minerals of emitting light in certain circumstances, without combustion or ignition.

Thus some minerals appear luminous when taken into the dark, after being for a time exposed to the sun's rays or even to the ordi- nary daylight. Many diamonds, and also calcined barytes, exhibit this property in a remarkable degree ; less so aragonite, cale-spar, and chalk. Many minerals, including the greater part of those thus rendered phosphorescent by the influence of the sun, also become so through heat. Thus some topazes, diamonds, and varie- ties of fluor-spar beeome luminous by the heat of the hand; other varieties of fluor-spar, and phosphorite, require a temperature near that of boiling water ; whilst calc-spar and many silicates are only phosphorescent at from 400° to 700° Fahr. : ;

Electricity produces phosphorescence in some minerals, as in green fluor-spar and calcined barytes. In others it is excited when they are struck, rubbed, split, or broken; as in many varieties of zine-blende and dolomite when scratched with a quill, pieces of quartz when rubbed on each other, and plates of mica or needles of pectolite when suddenly separated. ' ' . ;

The light emitted by phosphorescent minerals is of various tints. The variety of fluor called chlorophane emits, as its name expresses, a green light. The same particle may emit varying tints, as in the fluor from Aberdeenshire, which, as the heat falls, or the energy of the phosphorescence wanes, emits tints which pass from violet, through blue, green, and yellow, to dull purplish red. The yellow blende from the same place is vividly phosphorescent when heated. Fluor generally phosphoresces with a tint of its own colour.

Too high a heat destroys the phosphorescence, which may, how- ever, be restored by either exposure to sun's light or to electricity.

Fluor- escence.

Eleetric proper- ties of minerals.

Pyro- electri- city.

376

The mineral phosphoresces vividly when the discharge passes

‘through it; it generally phosphoresces with a different colour after

it has been thus recharged.

Fluorescence is the property whereby rays of light of a refrangibility higher than those ordinarily seen by the human eye are rendered visible. The substance when placed in the violet end of the spectrum, and carried be- yond it into the invisible rays, becomes luminous, through “degrading ” the rays of extreme refrangibility. This property is well marked in those varieties of fluorite which

are pale green by transmitted light, and deep purple by reflected light. Ozocerite and some petroleums also ex- hibit the property.

Electric, Magnetic, and Thermic Properties.

Electricity.— Friction, pressure, and heat may all excite electricity in minerals. To observe this property delicate electroscopes are required, formed of a light needle termin- ating at both ends in small balls, and suspended horizon- tally on a steel pivot by an agate cup. Such an instrument, can be electrified negatively by touching it with a stick of sealing-wax excited by rubbing, or positively by merely bringing the wax so near as to attract the needle. When

the instrument is in this state, the mineral, if also rendered electric by heat or friction, will attract or repel the necdle according as it has acquired electricity of an opposite or of a similar kind; but if the mineral is not electric it will attract the needle in both conditions alike.

Most precious stones become electric from friction, and are either positive or negative aceording as their surface is smooth or rough. ‘Ail gems become positive when polished ; the diamond even when unpolished is positive. Pressure between the fingers will excite distinct positive electricity in pieces of transparent double-refracting eale-spar. Topaz, aragonite, fluor-spar, carbonate of lead, quartz, and other minerals show this property, but in a mueh smaller degree. Some bodies remain excited much longer than others, topaz for a very long time. Heat or ehange of temperature excites electrieity in many crystals; asin tourmaline, calamine, topaz, calc-

spar, beryl, barytes, fluor-spar, diamond, garnet, and others ; these are hence said to be thermo- or pyro-electric. Some acquire polar pyro-electricity, or the two electricities appear in opposite parts of the erystal, which are named its electric poles. Each pole is alter- nately positive and negative, the one when the mineral is heating, the other when it is cooling. Hankel's investigations of these phenomena are specially noteworthy.

As already noticed, many polar electric minerals are also remark- able for their hemimorphic crystal forms. Tourmaline, calamine, and boracite are among the species thus affeeted. The polarity eontinues so long as the temperature is increasing, aud becomes reversed when it commences to decline; and when the heat is stationary it disappears.

Rose and Reiss name one of the poles the analogue electrie pole, and the other the antilogue eleetric pole. The former beeomes positive while the crystal is heating, and negative while cooling ; the latter negative while heating, and_positive while eooling.

Beequerel found that in tourmaline at 30° C. electrieal polarity

was sensible; it continued unchanged to 150°, as long as the temperature eontinued to rise; if the temperature remained

Fig. 249.

stationary an instant, the polarity disappeared, but shortly mani- fested itself reversed, when the temperature commenced to deeline. If but one end of the crystal was heated the crystal was unpolarized, and when two sides were unequally heated each acquired an eleetri-

Fig. 250.

cal state independent of the other. In tourmaline the extremities of the prism are dissimilarly modified, and that end which presents the greater number of planes is the antilogue pole; or, if the

| name, and the opposite pole

number of planes is the same, the secondary rhombohedrons of the antilogue pole have (one or more of them) louger vertical-axes than those of the analogue pole. Fig. 249 (tourmaline) is the antilogue pole (negative under increasing heat), and fig. 250 the analogue pole. The pyramid of the analogue end is niore flattened by its

facets than that of the antilogue end; thus c and di of the anti- logue end are more aeumi- nating than e! and d? of the analogue end. The same is the ease with the other two crystals (figs. 251, 252). Pyro-electricity has been observed in the following substances : — tourmaline, topaz, axinite, boracite, seolezite, prehnite, electric calamine, sphene, rhodizite, heavy spar, rock-crystal. Pyro-eleetricity is of two kinds,—either terminally polar or. centrally polar. In the former the extre- mities are opposite poles. In the latter two sides of a prism are of the same

to each is intermediate be- Fig. 252. tween the two.

The examples of the first kind are tourmaline, calamine, and scolezite, which are uniaxal; axinite, binaxal; boraeite and rhodizite, with four axes. Calamine, like tourmaline, has the sharper extremity the antilogue end, and the more flattened the analogue. | Compound crystals from Altenberg have both ends analogue, and the portion whieh lies between the twins antilogue electrie; the pyro-electrie axis corresponds with the vertical axis of the prism, as in tourmaline.)\—/\ Boracite, which crystallizes in cubie forms, with the opposite solid angles differently modified, has four pyro-electrie axes, corre- sponding to the four oetahedral axes. In fig. 253 of this species,

the plane whieh has its angles modified by

ee v is the antilogue pole, and that with the ¥ Anal. h Ant. 4

Fig. 254.

unmodified angles the analogue pole ; and, generally, the antilogue pole has either more numerous OF larger facets. Rhodizite re- sembles boracite in its pyro-electricity.

The species in which pyro-electricity of the second kind has been observed are prehuite and topaz. If fig. 254 represent a tabular crystal of prehnite, the poles Will be situated as marked, the analogue being central, and the antilogue at either extremity of the shorter diagonal of the rhombic pris. Topaz has in a similar manner a central analogue pole, and an antilogue at either ex- tremity of the shorter diagonal. In some instances there is a separate set of similar poles near one or the other angle, as in fig. 255; this must be due to the erystals being of a composite nature.

Magnetism.—This property is very characteristic of the Magnet few minerals in which it occurs,—chiefly ores of iron or 8m.

nickel. Some magnetic iron ores possess polar magnetism, or are natural magnets; while the common varieties of magnetite, meteoric iron, magnetic pyrites, precious garnet, and other minerals, are simply magnetic. Most minerals are only attracted by the magnet, but do not themselves attract iron.

Minerals, as other substances, have also been divided into magnetic and diamagnetic. See MAGNETISM.

The ordinary mode of testing whether a mineral is magnetic or not is to bring it near a pole of a delicately suspended magnetic

Mag- netic polarity.

Heat conduc- tivity.

Senar- mont's investi- gations.

MINERALOGY

needle, and observe whether it causes it to vibrate. Another mode is to apply a strong magnet to the mineralin powder. These are sufficient for the mineralogist. Delesse has experimented exten- sively upon the magnetic force of minerals, and has determined the relative amount for numerous species. Calling this force for Styrian steel 100, the following are some of his results :—

eats OMB MER ENED ce == oi, oc sacceacces sausdet fousccussessuck ahah ceccse 2°173 to 3:047

BR Fea POL a cre merce ava angce ness sSs CUSTS ELITE LENG aS cee eee cane Mee een arr aon ae

0°136 to 0°0€5 Spinel (pleonaste), from Monzoni, Tyrol…..... 0°078

Titanic iron (rhombohedral), often magnetipolar…. ..... 5°764 Specular iron, sometimes magnetipolar. 0-14 to 2°35

Graphite…...<:... ace teneeoten ee coeuteac saantat ses. — 0°015 to 07040 Spathie iron (spherosiderite, the highest). 0-092 to 0°287 EWG DM a. ne tae dnicc = nv sdanemase oovcccsocexes – 07039 to 0°057 AAD 2 ag ee rele eee … 0°027 to 0°075 Columbite of Bodenmais and Haddam…..... 3-0-5

Hip GeO MEM eed ctanaceecasecwiesdeeeits

~~*RIGS) MEO TMALNGING). «c.nncensivoveiennsccescvcenseceveessooane f*~~

~~*Felspar, sometimes feebly magnetic.*~~

~~*Labradorite of an antique green porphyry ….....00.- 0°077*~~

~~*PREG PED OO er cece cecrnac cus on! Seen sclore steemett ote caceucesaceudsse<*~~

~~*Crystallomagnetic Action—The magnetic polarity thus far alluded to belongs to the mass, and has no relation to crystalline form. There is also a kind of polarity directly related to the crystalline or optic axes of minerals. A crystal of cyanite, suspended horizontally, points to the north, by the magnetic power of the earth only, and is a true compass needle, from which even the declination may be obtained ; and the line of direction is the line of the optic axes. Other crystals, which are called negative, take a transverse or equatorial position. 'The latter are diamagnetic crystals.*~~

~~*Conductivity for Heat.—Senarmont found that the con- ducting power of colloids and of crystals of the cubic system is equal in all directions, but. that it varies in different directions in crystals belonging to all the other systems, exhibiting characters analogous to those deduced from their double refraction, conformable with the optic axes of the crystal, and referable, as in the latter case, to axes of elasticity, or unequal compression of the molecules.*~~

~~*The fundamental fact is easily shown by taking two slices of rock-crystal, one cut transverse to the axis and one parallel to it. Through the centre of each plate a small hole is drilled for the reception of a bent wire, which by insertion into the hole sustains the plate. The other end of the wire is to be heated, and the rate of the conduction of the heat is rendered visible by the amount of a thin coating of beeswax, with which the plate has been pre- viously coated, which is melted round the central hole. It will be seen that in the transverse slice the wax is melted ina circular form, while in the longitudinal slice the form is elliptical (fig. 256). The conduction is equal in all directions, as regards the transverse axes of the hexagonal prism, but more rapid in one direction in the longitudinal slice, and that direction is the line of its optic axis. In the case of quartz the two diameters of the ellipse are as 1000 to 1312.*~~

~~*If the regular disposition of the molecules of amorphous bodies be interfered with by unequal tension or compression, the regularity of their power of conducting heat is destroyed, and they also show elliptical forms of melted wax ; and: the shorter axis of the ellipse is in the line of pressure or undue packing of the molecules. The heat thus does not travel so fast in this direction,—partly because it is spent in the heating up of the greater number of molecules. Hence we might conclude that along the main axis of quartz a smaller number of molecules are packed in an equal space than along the transverse. The following are the more important of Senarmont"s results.*~~

~~*1. Crystals of the tetragonal and rhombohedral systems have one axis of conductivity which is either greater or smaller than the others, and this axis coincides with the main crystallographic axis. The isothermal surfaces are*~~

~~*ellipses which lie in the line of this axis, and these ellipses may be either elongated or flattened in the direction of this line.*~~

~~*2. In crystals of the right prismatic system the isothermal surfaces have three unequal axes, which coincide with crystallo- graphic axes drawn parallel to the edges of the rectangular prism.*~~

~~*3. In crystals of the oblique rhombic system the 'isothermal*~~

~~*" properties.*~~

~~*Old*~~

~~*surfaces have three unequal axes, one of which coincides with the horizontal diagonal of the base, while the other two have directions which are not referable to any law.*~~

~~*4. In crystals of the anorthic system the isothermal surfaces*~~

~~*' have three unequal axes, all with indeterminable positions.*~~

~~*In crystals of a single axis there appears to exist no constant relation between the axis of optic elasticity, whether maximum or minimum, and the axis of the greatest or of the least calorific conductibility. Thus, of the minerals examined by Senarmont, quartz (), calcite (—), cassiterite (), rutile (), and calomel () have all their greatest axis of conductibility parallel to the principal axis; idocrase, beryl, tourmaline, and corundum, all optically negative, have on the contrary their smallest axis of conductibility parallel to the axis.*~~

~~*In crystals belonging to the oblique rhombic system there is rarely coincidence between the thermic axes and the axes of optic elasticity. In gypsum and in felspar these lie apart to a marked extent.*~~

~~*Dilatation by Heat.—In crystals of those systems in which Dilata-*~~

~~*the molecules are arranged unequally as regards their axes, the amount of their dilatation when heated is unequal in the direction of their axes. Our knowledge of this subject is chiefly due to Mitscherlich.*~~

~~*In crystals of cubic symmetry the expansion is equal in all directions. The dimetric systems—the pyramidal and hexagonal— are brought together as regards this quality, inasmuch as the axes of volumetric change are in these the same; for, while these in the pyramidal correspond with the crystallographic axes, in the hexagonal the three axes are the vertical, one lateral axis, and an axis lying intermediate to the other two and at right angles to the first lateral axis. The expansion along the principal axis may be either greater or less than along the others; and in some minerals there is even contraction along one axis.*~~

~~*In the right prismatic system the axes of dilatation correspond to those of form. In the oblique prismatic one axis corresponds with the orthodiagonal, but the others make angles not only with the other crystallographic axes but, strange to say, with the axes both of thermic conductivity and of optic elasticity. We are as yet ignorant of the properties of anorthic crystals in this respect.*~~

~~*As a consequence of this unequal expansion along different axes, the angles of crystals, other than those of the cubic system, are altered under the influence of heat. The alteration is extreme in the case of calcite, where, through elongation along the vertical axis, with some concomitant contraction of the transverse, the angle of the rhombohedric faces is, when the crystal is heated from 32° to 212° F., diminished from 105° 5' to 104° 56' 23",— the form thus approaching that of a cube, as the temperature is raised.*~~

~~*Dolomite, in the same range of temperature, diminishes 4' 46". In some rhombohedrons, as of calc-spar, the vertical axis is lengthened (and the lateral shortened), while in others, like quartz, the reverse is true. The variation is such, either way, that the double refrac- tion is diminished with the increase of heat ; for calc-spar possesses negative double refraction, and quartz positive. According to Fresnel the same is true of gypsum. The dilatation for calc-spar, according to experiment, is 0°001961. ly 4*~~

~~*Kopp has shown that in the carbonates of lime, magnesia, iron, manganese, and zinc, which are nearly the same in the angle of their crystals, the vertical axis is shorter the greater the atomic volume. And since heat diminishes the density, and therefore necessarily increases the volume, the*~~

~~*axis a should be lengthened by an increase of temperature, as is actually the case. He has determined by cal- culation that the change of angle from 32° to 212° should be 7’ 37”.*~~

~~*Although in the greater number of cases the variations are so sinall as to be scarcely measurable, yet they may be sufficient for establishing a difference between substances which have identical geometric form while belonging to different systems of crystalliza- tion. The angle of arhombohedron might at a certain temperature be 90°, and so coincide with a cube; but that angle would in a rhombohedron change whenever the temperature altered, while the angle of a true monometric cube is constant at all temperatures. The increase in volume and diminution in density which generally result from heating are always accompanied by a change in optical In trimetric crystals, where the principal indices alter unequally, the change affects the amount of divergence of the optic axes. The amount of alteration in gypsum, when the divergence is diminished, is extreme. At the ordinary temperature the angle of the divergence of the optic axes which lie in the plane of symmetry is about 90° for red light; when heated to 177° it is diminished to 0°, and for the moment the crystal appears to be uniaxal, When more highly heated, the axes. again diverge, but in a plane at right angles to the original one, and in cooling these changes take place in reverse order. In barytes and celestine again, the alteration in the angle of the optic axes is a divergence when*~~

~~*heated. ay. —-“4*~~

~~*Hardness.*~~

~~*Tenacity.*~~

~~*378*~~

~~*Characters depending on Cohesion:*~~

~~*five kinds : —(1) hardness, (2) (5) fracture. All may*~~

~~*These characters are of tenacity, (3) elasticity, (4) cleavage,*~~

~~*be considered as related to the power of resisting attempts |*~~

~~*to separate one part from another.*~~

~~*1. Hardness.—A harder body is distinguished from a softer, either by attempting to scratch the one with the other, or by trying each with a file. Each of these methods is used by the mineralogist in determining the hardness of the species, though the latter is in most cases to be preferred. Both methods should be employed when practicable.*~~

~~*Certain varieties of some minerals give a low hardness under the file, owing either to impurities or imperfect aggregation of the particles, while they scratch another mineral upon which a file would have no effect, showing that the particles of the first are hard, though loosely aggregated. Chiastolite, spincl, and sapphire are common examples of this, When the mineral is too hard to be impressed by a file, the peculiarity of the grating sound will suffice for the prac- tised ear.*~~

~~*Mohs introduced a scale of hardness, consisting of ten miuerals, which gradually increase in hardness from 1 to 10… The intervals between 2 and 3 and 5 and 6 are larger than the others. Breithaupt has therefore introduced another degree of hardness between each of the above, and thus his scale consists of twelve minerals.*~~

~~*The scale is as follows :—*~~

~~*1. Talc, common laminated light green variety.*~~

~~*Gypsum, a crystallized variety.*~~

~~*. Mica (muscovite). Calcite, transparent variety. Fluor-spar, crystalline variety. Apatite, transparent variety. '5, Scapolite, crystalline variety. Felspar (orthoclase), white cleavable variety. Quartz, transparent. Topaz, transparent. Sapphire, cleavable varieties. 10. Diamond.*~~

~~*If the file abrades the mineral under trial with the same ease as No. 4, and produces an equal depth of abrasion with the same force, its hardness is said to be 4; if with more facility than 4 but less than 5, the hardness may be*~~

~~43 or 43, written in decimals 4°25, 4°5. Several successive trials should be made to obtain certain results.~~

~~The use of the file is acquired with very little experience ; usually a single trial is sufficient. Care must be taken to apply the file to edges of equal obtuseness. That part also of the specimen should be selected which has not been altered by exposure, and has the~~

~~i On~~

~~f OO NES? OT OT 09 bo SO on .~~

~~highest degree of transparency and compactness of structure. The pressure for determination should be rather heavy, and the file should be passed three or four times over the specimen.~~

~~Where the scale of hardness is wanting, or a first rough deter- mination is sought, the following experiments may serve :—~~

~~Every mineral that is scratched by the finger-nail has H. =2°5 or |~~

~~less. Minerals that scratch copper have H.=3 or more. Polished white iron has H.=4°5. Window-glass has H.=5 to 5:5. Steel point or file has H.=6 to 7; hence every mineral that will cut or scratch with a good penknife has H. less than 6. Flint has H. =7, and only about a dozen minerals, including the precious stones or gems, are harder.~~

~~Many specimens present different degrees of hardness on dis- similar faces; as an example of which we mentjon cyanite and mica, This is confined to the inequilateral primary forms, and like the similar difference of colour, lustre, &c., finds a ready explana- tion in the theory of their formation; unlike faces are the result of the action of a polar force acting along unlike axes.~~

~~This difference in faces parallel to unlike axes may be perceived in nearly all cases, when the methods of trial are sufficiently delicate. Huygens observed long ago that the cleavage face of a crystal of calc-spar differed in hardness from the other faces ; and even in a monometric crystal it has~~

been found that the faces of the cube and octahedron are not exactly alike in this respect.

9. Tenacity.—Solid minerals are said to be brittle, sectile, malleable, flexible, or elastic :—

1. Brittle, when parts of a mineral separate in powder or grains on attempting to cut it ; as baryte, cale-spar.

2, Sectile, when pieces may be cut off with a knife without fall- ing to powder, but still the mineral pulverizes under a hammer; as brucite, gypsum.

3, Malleable, when slices may be cut off, and these slices flatten out under a hammer ; as native gold, native copper.

4. Flexible, when the mineral will bend and remain bent after the bending force is removed ; as gypsum, graphite, tale.

MINE RALOG®

5. Elastic, when after being bent it will spring back to its

| original position ; as mica.

A liquid is said to be viscous when, on pouring it, the drops lengthen and appear ropy ; as petroleum. P

3. Elasticity Investigations on this property have not to any extent been entered upon. The unequal elasticity of unlike faces of crystals has been shown by Savart in his acoustic investigations, and he was able to distinguish the rhombohedral from the other faces in the pyramid of quartz crystals ; he also showed that the figures formed upon vibrating plates of crystals were directly connected with their optic axes. Milne, by measuring the amount of recoil of a sphere of calcite when struck at different points by another of rock-crystal, found, that the elasticity, as thus measured, was greatest along the line of the optic axis, and least in directions at right angles to it. He also found that points which lay intermediate between the

~~*main and the transverse axes were most indented by the blows. This goes to show that, although there may be fewest molecules arranged along the lines of the transverse axes, yet cohesion operates with greater intensity along these than in intermediate directions. P*~~

~~*When the tenacity of a mineral is overcome by an over- whelming amount of traction, or its elasticity by a sudden shock, its parts are separated, either in flat and continuous surfaces, or in surfaces which are irregular in the extreme. The first of these modes is termed cleavage, the second fracture. In those substances in which cleavage exists it is found that the planes or directions along which it takes place lie in certain strictly definite positions to one another and to the axes of the crystal. They show not the smallest tendency to a transition or gradual passage into the other directions of greater coherence.*~~

~~*4. Cleavage—The number of these parallel cleavage- planes is altogether indefinite, so that the only limit that can be assigned to the divisibility of some minerals, as gypsum and mica, arises from the coarseness of our instru- ments, 'These minima of coherence, or cleavage-planes, are always parallel to some face of the crystal; and similar equal minima occur parallel to every other face of the same form. Hence they are always equal in number to the faces of the form, and the figures produced by cleavage agree in every point with true crystals, except that they are artificial. They are thus most simply and conveniently described by the same terms and signs as the faces of crystals.*~~

~~*Some minerals cleave in several directions parallel to the faces of different forms, but the cleavage is generally more easily obtained and more perfect in one direction than in the others. This com- plex cleavage is well seen in calc-spar and fluor-spar, and very remarkably in zinc blende, where it takes place in no less than six directions. As in each of these the division may be indefinitely continued, it is clear that no lamellar structure in any proper sense can be assigned to the mineral. All that can be affirmed is that contiguous atoms have less coherence along a direction normal to these planes than in other directions. When cleavage takes place in three directions, it.of course produces a perfect crystal form, from which the*~~

~~system of crystallization and angular dimensions of the species may be determined; it is thus often of very great im portance.~~

~~The common cleavage in the different systems is as follows, those of most frequent occurrence being in italics :—(1) In the cubic system, Octahedral, O, along the faces of the octahedron ; Hexahedral, c0oo, along those of the cube ; and Dodecahedral, #0. (2) In the tetragonal system, Pyramidal, P, or 2P ; Prismatic, P, or Po ; or Basal, OP. (8) In the hexagonal system with holohedral forms, Pyramidal, P, or P2; Prismatic, oP, or co Poo ; or Basal,OP; with rhombohedral forms, Rhombohedral, R; Prismatic, oR; or Basal, OR. (4) In the right prismatic system, Pyramidal, P; Prismatic, oP; Macrodomatic or Brachydomatic, Poo or Poo ; Basal, 0P;~~

~~Macrodiagonal, Poo ; or Brachydiagonal, oP, (5) In the oblique prismatic system,Hemipyramidal,P, or — P ; Prismatic, oP; Clinodomatic, P*co ; Hemidomatic, P°so or —P®0*; Basal, OP; Orthodiagonal, «P% ; or Clinodiagonal, wP*o. (6) In the~~

~~Elasticity.~~

~~Cleavage.~~

~~Pe Neh A OG Y~~

~~anorthic system, Hemiprismatic, oP', or oP ; Hemidomatic either | along the macrodome or the brachydome; Basal, 0P ; Macrodiagonal,~~

~~379~~

~~CHEMICAL PROPERTIES OF MINERALS.~~

~~Influence of Chemical Composition on the External Relation of | Characters of Minerals.—That the characters of a com-composi-~~

~~pound must to a certain extent depend on those of its tien to physical~~

~~oP; or Brachydiagonal, Poo. In some minerals, as mica and gypsum, the cleavage is readily procured ; these may be held in the hand and~~

~~*Fracture.*~~

~~*Odour.*~~

~~*Touch.*~~

~~*divided by a knife. difficulty ; these must be placed on a firm support resting on lead, folded paper, or cloth, and a sharp blow struck on a chisel applied in a proper direction. This may often be ascertained by examining the specimen in a strong light. Sometimes it is necessary to subject them to extreme com- pression in a vice. Some of the hardest substances have not only a perfect but a facile cleavage,—as euclase, topaz, and diamond; many of the softest species have none. The planes produced also vary much in their degree of perfection, being highly perfect in some, as mica and calc-spar, and imperfect in others, as garnet and quartz. Ina very few erystalline minerals cleavage-planes can hardly be said to exist. Cleavage must be carefully distinguished from the planes of union in twin crystals, and the division-planes of laminar minerals.*~~

~~*5. Fracture.—This is the irregular manner in which substances may be broken. Even minerals possessed of cleavage may be fractured in other directions; but in amorphous bodies fracture alone occurs. The following varieties of fracture occur, and are highly characteristic:—*~~

~~*1. Conchoidal, almost typical of amorphous bodies, but occas- sionally seen in crystals,—rounded cavities, more or less deep. The name is taken from the resemblance to the successive lines of interrupted growth in a bivalve shell. Seen in flint, obsidian, asphalt. In calcite the direction of this fracture is intermediate to the planes of the mineral's cleavage.*~~

~~*2. HIven, when the surface of fracture is smooth and free from inequalities.*~~

~~*kinds adopted for reference are as follows :— 1. Astringent, the taste of blue vitriol.*~~

~~*. Sweetish astringent, taste of alum.*~~

~~*. Saline, taste of common salt.*~~

~~. Alkaline, taste of soda.~~

~~. Cooling, taste of saltpetre.~~

~~. Bitter, taste of épsom salts.~~

~~. Sour, taste of sulphuric acid.~~

~~. Pungent, taste of sal-ammoniac.~~

~~. Metallic, taste of zinc sulphate.~~

~~Odour.—Excepting a few gaseous and soluble species,~~

~~minerals in the dry unchanged state do not give off odour.~~

~~9 CONT Od Cr CO DD~~

~~By friction, moistening with the breath, and the elimina-—~~

~~tion of some volatile ingredient by heat or acids, odours are sometimes obtained which are thus designated :—~~

~~1, Altiaecous, the odour of garlic. Friction of arsenical iron elicits this odour; it may also be obtained from any of the arsenical ores or salts by means of heat.~~

~~2. HIorse-radish odour, the odour of decaying horse-radish. odour is strongly perceived when the ores of selenium are heated.~~

~~3. Sulphurous. Friction will elicit this odour from pyrites, and heat from many sulphurets.~~

~~4, Bitwminous, the odour of bitumen.~~

~~5. Fcetid, the odour of sulphuretted hydrogen or rotten eggs. It is elicited by friction from some varieties of quartz and limestone.~~

~~6. Argillaceous, the odour of moistened clay. It is obtained from serpentine and some allied minerals after moistening them with the breath ; others, as pyrargillite, afford it when heated.~~

~~7. Empyrewmatie or ozonic. Quartz, when two portions strike one another.~~

~~Touch.—Some minerals are distinguished by a greasy feeling, as tale; others feel smooth, as celedonite ; others meagre, like clay; others cold. This last character distin- guishes true gems from their imitations in glass. Some, in virtue of their hygroscopic nature, adhere to the tongue.~~

~~Others only cleave with more or less'~~

~~This | ! col | these perfect identity is seldom observed, but only very~~

~~| component elements seems, as a general proposition, to~~

~~admit of no doubt. Hence it might be supposed possible from a knowledge of the composition of a mineral to draw conclusions in reference to its form and its other properties ; but practically this has not yet been effected.~~

~~The distinction between the mineralizing and mineralizable or the forming and formed elements lies at the foundation of all such inquiries. Certain elements in a compound apparently exert more than an equal share of influence in determining its physical pro- perties. Thus the more important non-metallic elements, as oxygen, sulphur, chlorine, fluorine, are remarkable for the influence they exert on the character of the compound. The sulphurets, for example, have more similarity among themselves than the various compounds of one and the same metal with the non-metallic bodies. Still more generally it would appear that the electro-negative element in the compound is the most influential, or exerts the greatest degree of active forming power. After the non-metallic elements the brittle, easily fusible metals rank next in power; then the ductile ignoble metals ; then the noble metals ; then the brittle, difficultly fusible ; and, last of all, the metals of the earths and alkalies,~~

~~Generally each chemical substance crystallizes only in one form or series of forms. Some substances, however, show dimorphism, or crystallize in two~~

~~forms, and thus may compose two or more minerals. Thus sulphur, which in nature usually crystallizes in the right prismatic system, when melted forms oblique prismatic crystals. Carbon in one form is the diamond, in another graphite; carbonate of lime appears as cale-spar and as aragonite ; the bisulphuret of iron as pyrite and as marcasite. An example of trimorphism occurs in titanic acid, forming the three distinct species anatase, rutile, and brookite. It is remarkable that of dimorphic minerals one form is almost always right prismatic; thus:—~~

~~Rhombic Form.~~

~~G@yalti Tet ANOGUMICew.2sceessceece.—osess0-.-2sass0s Sillimanite, Andalusite.~~

~~3. Rough, when the surface of fracture is rugged, with numerous Galera, WER G OMAN cece .a nse sene sec eseeeeses Aragonite. small elevations and depressions. aoe nae GS; pecceoneeeosocqancoseseconsoacnes pie a 4, Splintery, when covered with small wedge-shaped splinters. gee \ pyramidal… sestessssseeseserssseeeeseeee Brookite, 5. Hackly, when the elevations are sharp, slightly bent, or Pyrolusite, right prismatic…….ssce-e:s000— Polianite, _ jagged, as broken iron. Cuprite, CUBIC. ....+. apeedne cone catADHOSHNCESOLIoEsON Geen (@) 6. Earthy, when it shows only fine dust. ie a ee phe ee . ee Ome, Dena. oe * koma) Taste. Taste belongs only to soluble minerals. The different Freieslebenite, oblique prismatic. .... Diaphorite. Sulphur, do. sdk . Sulphur.~~

~~Even the temperature at which a substance crystallizes influences its forms, and so far its composition, as seen in aragonite, Glauber salt, natron, and borax.~~

~~Isomorphism.—Still more important is the doctrine of Tsomor-isomorphism, designating the fact that two or more simple or phism.~~

~~compound substances crystallize in one and the same form, or often in forms which, though not identical, yet approximate very closely. This similarity of form is generally combined witha similarity in other physical and in chemical properties. Among minerals that crystallize in the tesseral system, isomorphism is of course common and perfect, there being no~~

~~diversity in the dimensions of the primary form; but for this very reason it is generally of less interest. It is of more importance among crystals of the other systems, the~~

~~| various series of which are separated from each other by~~

~~differences in the proportions of the primary form. In~~

~~great similarity.~~

~~The more important isomorphic substances are either simple sub- stances, as (1) fiuorine and chlorine; (2) sulphur and selenium; (3) arsenic, antimony ; (4) cobalt, iron, nickel; (5) copper, silver, mercury, gold (?); or combinations with oxygen, as (6) lime, magnesia, and the protoxides of iron, manganese, zinc; (7) sesqui- oxides, as of iron, manganese, chromium, and alumina; (8) phosphoric acid, vanadic acid, arsenic acid; (9) sulphuric, selenic, chromic acids; or combinations with sulphur, as (10) sulphuret of~~

~~, ironand of zinc; (11) sulphuret of antimony and of arsenic; (12) sul-~~

~~phuret of lead, of copper, and of silver. These substances are named vicatious from the singular property that in chemical compounds they can mutually replace each other in definite proportions, and very often without producing any important change in the form or other physical properties. But there are numerous instances among the silicates where the mutual replacement of the isomorphie~~

~~Bi-valent elements.~~

~~'iron oxide and chrome oxide,~~

~~bodies, especially when the oxides of the heavy metals come in the room of the earths and alkalies, exerts a most essential influence ou the external aspect of the species, particularly in regard to colour, specifie gravity, and transparency. The varieties of hornblende, augite, garnet, epidote, and~~

~~*many other minerals are remarkable proofs of this influence. This intermixture of isomorphic elements confers many valuable properties on minerals, and to it this depart- ment of nature owes much of its variety and beanty. Without the occasional presence of the colouring substances, especially the oxides of iron and manganese, the non-metallic combinations would have exhibited a very monotonous aspect. It is also remarkable that in some silicates the substitution of a certain portion of the metallic oxides for the earthy bases seems to be almost a regular occurrence; whilst in others, as the felspars and zeolites, this rarely happens. This fact is also of great economic interest, as drawing attention to important elements often combined with others of less value. Thus sulphuret of copper and sulphuret of silver, nickel and cobalt, may be looked for in connexion. The*~~

~~*ALOGY*~~

~~*general chemical formule for such compounds is formed by writing R (=radical or basis) for the whole isomorphic elements; and in special instances their signs are placed one below the' other, con- nected by a bracket, or, as is more convenient, are enclosed in brackets onc after the other separated by a comma. Thus the gene-*~~

~~*becomes (Cag, Fe,, Mgs, Mng) Sig + (Al, Fe, Gr)Si; and this mineral forms many Varieties as the one or other element preponderates.*~~

~~*Of the forms special to similar groups of atoms the more notable are—the cubic system, special to metals proper, and binary compounds as protoxides and haloid salts; the tetragonal to binoxides ; the rhombohedral to carbonates; the hexagonal to sesquioxides and phosphates and their isomorphs; the prismatic to sulphates and their isomorphs.*~~

~~*The isomorphism of minerals goes as a whole to show that form depends on the number of molecules present, and is comparatively little influenced by the nature of the molecules themselves.*~~

~~*DESCRIPTION OF MINERAL SPECIES.*~~

~~*The arrangement adopted in the following description of mineral species is chemical. Simple substances are considered first, in the order of their*~~

~~quantivalence, then binary compounds, and lastly those of more complex structure. Our limits permit of the briefest notice of the less important, in order that more space may be avail- able for the delineation of the characteristic and transition forms of such as go to constitute the more important rock masses.~~

~~The following abbreviations are used:—H., hardness ; G., specific gravity (distilled water at 60° Fahr. and barometer 30 inches=1); cl., cleavage; sol., soluble ; s. [h. or n.] acid, sulphuric [hydrochloric or nitric] acid ; B.B., before blowpipe ; ox., oxidizing ; red., reducing ; ¢.c., chemical composition ; com., combination. ;~~

~~In the chemical formule, barred letters express tw equivalents, and the dots over the symbols indicate the combination with them of as many equivalents of oxygen as there are dots.~~

~~In the symbolic notation the several faces of crystals are separated by semicolons, and the constituent members of combinations by commas. The lettering on the faces of the figures is for the most part that adopted by Miller. In the enumeration of crystal forms, that which is typical of the mineral is placed first.~~

~~SIMPLE SUBSTANCES. 1. SuLrHuR, S. (a) Right prismatic. P (p) polar edges 106° 38', 84° 58', middle edge 143° 17'; oP 101° 58'; OP (ec); 4P(s); Po (n). Crystals~~

~~pyramidal, single or in druses; also stalactitic, disseminated, and pulverulent. Cl. basaland oP. H.=1°5 to a 2°5; G.=1°9 to 2°1. Fracture conchoidal or [afr splintery ; brittle, sectile. Lustre resinous, streak and colour sulphur-yellow, passing into red, brown,~~

~~or green. Sublimes in the closed tube. Fuses a~~

~~little above the temperature of boiling water. : Takes fire at 518° F., and burns with a pale blue~~

~~flame with odour of sulphurous acid. C.c.: pure~~

~~*sulphur, occasionally mixed with traces of selenium, Se*~~

~~*and when amorphous with clay or bitumen. Found Fi*~~

~~*chiefly in Tertiary strata. Localities: Girgenti in ee Sicily, with celestine ; Conil in Spain ; Bex in Switzerland ; Cracow in Poland ; deposited from hot springs in Solfatara near Naples ; from hot springs in Iceland; from sulphur springs in New York ; and in eavities of decomposing galena, cinnabar, and pyrites at several localities.*~~

~~*. (6) Oblique prismatic. The crystals of volcanic sulphur are of this form ; they occur in the neighbourhood both of extinct and of recent volcanoes. They are slender, needle-shaped, and interlacing and have generally more or less of a red-brown tinge. Oxhaveer and Cape Reykjanes in Iceland, Sicily, and the volcanoes of the Pacific, the Chilian Andes, and California yield this variety.*~~

~~*2. SELENSULPHUR, 8.Se.*~~

~~*Like sulphur, but reddish brown to orange-yellow. B.B. burns with fumes of selenious acid mixed with the sulphurous. Found > the crater of Volcano in the Lipari Islands, and Kilauea in Lawaili.*~~

~~*3. SELENIUM, Se.*~~

~~*H.=2; G.=4°3. Brownish black to lead-grey ; thin splinters translucent and red. — From Culebras in Mexico.*~~

~~*4, TELLURIUM, Te.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R 86° 50'. In minute hexagonal prisms, with basal edges replaced ; usually massive and granular. Cl. lateral perfect, basal imperfect. H.=2to 25; G.=—6'1to6'3. Tin-white; sectile. C.c.: tellurium with a little gold and iron. Occurs at Facsebaya near Zalathna (Transylvania), and in several mines in*~~

~~*Boulder county, Colorado ; masses 25 Ib in weight have been obtained there.*~~

~~*5. ARSENIC, As.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral; R 85° 36' (fig. 258). investing masses composed of numberless layers. fine granular, rarely columnar. H. =3°5; G.=5°7 t05°93. Cl. basal. Colour black and dull, but when fresh broken very splendent and silver-white; fracture uneven.*~~

~~*When rubbed or heated gives out a garlic-like*~~

~~*odour. B.B. volatile, with formation of white fumes.*~~

~~*C.c.: arsenic, with some antimony, and traces of Fie, 258 iron, silver, and gold. Andreasberg in the Harz, or Annaberg, Schneeberg, Freiberg, Joachimsthal, Allemont (Dau- phiné), Kongsberg (Norway), the Altai, Chili, Pebble mine (Dum- friesshire), Tyndrum (Perthshire).*~~

~~*6. ANTIMONY, Sb.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R 87° 35'; but rarely crystallized, generally in foliated or granular masses. Cl. basal. H.=3 ; G.=6°6 to 6°8. Tin- white, with slight yellow tarnish. Brittle and sectile. B.B. easily fusible; volatilizes, and on charcoal leaves a white deposit, burning with a pale flame. Found at Andreasberg, Przibram (Bohemia), Sala (Sweden), Allemont, Southham in East Canada, and Borneo.*~~

~~*7. ALLEMONTITE, SbAss.*~~

~~*Hexagonal, spherical, reniform, and investing. H.=3°5 ;G.=6'1 to 6°2. Lustre, when fresh, metallic. Tin-white to lead-grey, but with a blue or brown tarnish. B.B. strong odour of garlic, with residuum of oxide of antimony. C.c.: antimony 37°85, arsenic 62°15. Almost always in curved foliated lamine. Occurs at Allemont, Przibram, Schladming in Styria, Andreasberg.*~~

~~*8. BismMuTH, Bi.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R 87° 40'. Crystals, R,OR, generally distorted ; also reticulated, spear-head twins, or arborescent ; also disseminated and*~~

~~granular. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=2°5; G.~·=9°6 to 9°8. Brittle and sectile. Reddish white, often tarnished grey, brown, or blue. B.B. easily fusible, even in candle flame. Volatilizes on charcoal, leaving a citron-yellow crust. Sol. in n. acid; solution pre- cipitated when thrown into water. Occurs in gneiss and clay slate in veins and disseminated, along with ores of cobalt, silver, lead, and zinc. Alva in Stirlingshire, Cumberland, Devonshire and Cornwall, Schneeberg, Marienberg, Joachimsthal, Bieber, Modum (Norway), Falun (Sweden), Bolivia.~~

~~9. TELLURIC BismuUTH, Bi,Te,.~~

~~Bismuth 52, tellarium 48, Virginia, Dahlonega in Georgia, Mon- tana.~~

~~10. TETRADYMITE, Bi,Te,S.~~

~~Rhombohedral ; 3R 68° 10', Almost always twins of 3R and OR, with the faces of OR at 93°. Cl. basal, perfect. Sectile, and thin lamin flexible. H.=1 to 2; G.=7°2to7°5. Steel-grey. B.B. fuses, yielding a grain of metal which ultimately volatilizes. Sol.~~

~~in n. acid. C.c.: 59°6 bismuth, 35°9 tellurium, and 4°5 sulphur. Schemnitz.~~

~~Usually in botryoidal Tri-valent}—> The structure is elements. |~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~11. WEIHRLITE, Bi(Te,S).~~

~~Hexagonal. Cl. basal. H.=1t02; G.=8-°44. High lustre. Steel- grey. C.c/: bismuth 61°15, tellurium 29°74, sulphur 2°38, silver 2°07. Deutsch-Pilsen in Hungary.~~

~~12. JosEITE, Bi,sTe,(SSe),.~~

~~Hexagonal. Cl. basal. G.=7-93. Colour grey-black to steel- grey. Brittle. C.c.: tellurium 15°93, sulphur 3°15, selenium 1°48, bismuth 79°15. San José (Brazil). A Cumberland variety yielded tellurium 6°73, sulphur 6°43, bismuth 84°33, corresponding to Bi,(TeS,).~~

~~13. Dramonn, C.~~

~~Var. 1. Crystallized.—Cubic; very frequently hemihedral. Crystals most generally with curved faces. Twins conmmon on the octahedral face; hemitropes also common (see figs. 170, 204, 205, 207). Crystals vary remarkably in appearance (see figs. 259 to 262). Cl. octahedral. H.=10;G.=3°5to3°6. Transparent, or translucent when of dark colour. Refracts light strongly. The back planes of diamonds reflect all the light which strikes them at an angle exceed- ing 24° 13', and thence comes their peculiar brilliancy. HIgh adamantine lustre. Colourless, but often tinged white, grey, and brown, —more rarely yellow, pink, blue, green, and black, those last named being the rarest. Disperses light highly, and hence emits brilliant flashes of all the colours of the spectrum. Becomes posi- tively electric by friction. B.B. infusible, but burns into carbonic~~

~~7~~

~~Fig. 259. acid in oxygen gas. When air is excluded is unchanged at the temperature of melting cast iron, but at that of melting malleable iron is changed into a black coke, or, it is said, into graphite. Insoluble in all acids and alkalies. C.c.: carbon, with traces of silica and earths. Geologic formation apparently a laminated flexible quartz rock called itacolumite, which occurs in Brazil, the Urals, Georgia, and North Carolina, in the vicinity of places where diamonds have been found. Minute crystals have been found in xanthophyllite, and in talc slate and serpentine, in the Schischim- skian hills, near Zlatoust (Russia). They have also been obtained in Brazil imbedded in a conglomerate composed of much-worn pebbles of quartz, chalcedony, and gold, cemented by limonite or~~

~~Fig. 261. ferruginous clay.~~

~~Fig. 262.~~

~~In South Africa they are imbedded in a steatitic clay. Diamonds were formerly obtained in India, at Panua, Raol-~~

~~conda, and Golconda. So few arenow obtained here that the mines are let for £1 a year. From these mines were obtained not only the Kohinoor, which~~

~~was possibly the same as the great diamond mentioned by Tavernier as having been seen by him in the pos- session of the Great Mogul, which weighed 280 carats, but the Regent, of 136 carats (which, not only from its size, but from the~~

~~erfection of its form, is very much the finest diamond known), the~~

~~izam, an uncut diamond of 340 carats, and the Carlow, rose- cut, 198 carats. More lately diamonds were found in great quantity in the neighbourhood of Rio Janeiro in Brazil ; they occur in two different deposits: the one called "gurgulho" consists of broken quartz covered by a bed of sand; the other, "cascalho," consists of rolled quartz pebbles united by ferruginous clay; both rest on talcose clays, which are the debris from talcose rocks. The first deposit affords the finest diamonds, and both contain gold, plati- num, magnetite, and rutile. A dodecahedral diamond of 257 carats was lately found at Bogagem in this district; this was~~

~~o8l~~

~~reduced by cutting to an oblong brilliant of 125 carats, and is the second most valuable diamond,—the Kohinoor, now reduced to an imperfectly circular brilliant of 102 carats, occupying the third place. The two coloured diamonds most worthy of note are a green diamond in the Dresden collection weighing 31 carats~~

~~which is a little deeper in tint than a beryl, and a blue diamond in the Hope collection, of 44 carats, as highly coloured as a sapphire, which it is by some considered to be. "Diamonds have lately been found in very large quantities, and some of great size, north of the Cape of Good Hope; these for the most part are of yellow colour and of very inferior value. While a Brazilian cut brilliant of one carat is worth from £20 to £25, the value of the finest brilliants from the Cape is only from £8 to £4, and that of the yellow diamonds is from £2 to £2, 10s. Apart from its employment as an ornamental stone, the diamond has an intrinsic value from its being utilized for cutting glass and for grinding and, polishing other gems. Of late years its usefulness has had a new application, it being employed for the drilling of rocks in tunnelling operations and in the boring of artesian wells. A singular observa- tion has resulted from these last methods of utilizing it,~~

~~namely, that the hardness of the African diamonds, as tested by the amount of their endurance, is markedly inferior to that of the Brazilian and Indian. So much is this recognized that, while the bort, or minute crystals, of the latter command a price of 15s. per carat, the African can be got for about 5s. The cleavage of certain of the African diamonds is so eminent that even the heat of the hand causes some of them to fallin pieces. Such diamonds, generally octahedra, may be recognized by a peculiar watery lustre ; they are called plate diamonds. The above facts give some ground for the supposition that there may be a slight difference in their composition, possibly that both may contain small, but different, quantities of hydrogen. The circumstances under which diamonds have been formed are altogether unknown. The fact of their being changed into a kind of coke at a very high temperature is an argument against their having been produced through the operation of heat, and it has long been known that an excess of carbon dissolved by molten cast iron crystallizes on cooling in the form of graphite ; yet the only attempts to form diamonds deserving of being mentioned as having been attended with any measure of success are those in which sugar charcoal was dissolved in niolten silver at the temperature only or melting steel. There were thus obtained a few minute black and also colourless octahedral and cubo-octahedral crystals with curved faces, mingled with a much larger amount of graphitoidal carbon.~~

~~Var. 2. Massive.—In black pebbles or masses called carbonado, sometimes 1000 carats in weight. H.=10; G.=3:012 to 3°42. C.c.: carbon except '27 to 2°07 per cent. of ash. Found in the mines of Baranco, &c., in Bahia.~~

~~Var. 3. Anthracitic.—Like anthracite, but scratches the diamond. In mammillar masses, partly in concentric layers, and globular. Brittle. G.=1°66. C.c.: carbon 97, hydrogen '5, oxygen 1°5. When cutand polished, refracts and disperses light, like the diamond. Supposed from Brazil.~~

~~14. GrapmiteE, C.~~

~~Hexagonal in flat crystals; p:p 85° 29'. Usually foliated, scaly, orcompact. Cl. basal. H.=0°5tol; G.=1°9to2°2. Lustre metallic. Colour and streak black to dark steel-grey ; flexible in thin lamine; very sectile; feels . greasy ; leaves a mark on paper of its own colour; conducts elec- tricity. B.B. burns with diffi- culty ; heated with nitre, de- flagrates. C.c.: carbon, with small~~

~~*quantities of volatile matter, and ash from 5 to 40 per cent. Strathfarrer (Inverness-shire), Mull, Craigman (Ayrshire), Borrowdale in Cumberland, Ural Mountains, Ceylon, Greenland. Used for making pencils.*~~

~~*15) Tos, Su:*~~

~~*Tetragonal in greyish white metallic grains. Reported as occur- ring with Siberian gold; with bismuthite from Guanajuato in Mexico.*~~

~~*16. Iron, Fe.*~~

~~*Cubic; in grains and plates or disseminated. 7 to 7°8. Steel-grey or iron-black. ve' magnetic. B.B. infusible. Sol. in h. acid. Two varieties are to be distinguished. (a) Telluric Jron, in grains and plates. Almost pure iron, or contains graphite, carbon, lead, or copper, but no nickel. At Chotzen in Bohemia in limestone ; in an argillaceous sandstone in the keuper at Miihlhausen ; in Thuringia along with fossils; in an ironstone conglomerate in Brazil, and: in lava in Auvergne ; in the mine of Hackenburg; at Bexley, in Liberia, Africa, along with quartz, a zeolite, and magnetite ; enclosed in magnetite in Unst (Shetland) and in Sutherlandshire ; in basalt in Antrim, Ireland; in the gold sands of Brazil, the Urals, and Olah- pian (Transylvania). (6) Meteoric tron, steel-grey to silver-white.*~~

~~*H. =4°5 4 ce = Native Fracture hackly, very metals.*~~

~~*382*~~

~~*Almost always contains nickel, with cobalt, copper, and several minerals which are non-terrestrial. When polished and etched with nitric acid the surface is marked by lines of unaffected inter- lacing crystals called Widmannstitten's figures ; most of the nickel is contained in these. Occurs in masses which vary in size from the smallest microscopic dust as dredged from the depths of the ocean to upwards of 32,000 ib. Many of these masses have been seen to fall. Several (suspected, however, to_be terrestrial) have been found imbedded in a basaltic rock near Disco Bay in Green- land, one of which is 44,000 ib in weight. Several contain hydrogen in their pores, condensed to the extent of eight times the volume of the mass; and the pitted depressions frequently observable upon their surface give countenance to*~~

~~*the view that, if not dis- charged from a volcanic throat, they were set at liberty by some sudden disrupting gaseous explosion.*~~

~~*17. Zinc, Zn.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral. Said to be found in large hexagonal pyramids. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=2; G.=7. Lustre metallic. Colour and streak bluish white. Found in a geode in basalt near Melbourne, Australia, coated with smithsonite, erythrine, and aragonite. Also in the gold sands of the Mittamitta river.*~~

~~*18. CoprEr, Cu.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 28, 30, 26, 33, 37, 264). Twins, on an octahedral face. Crystals generally distorted. Often filiform and arborescent, or in plates and lamin. H. =2°5 to 3; G.=8°5 to 8°9. Lustre dull metallic. 'Colour and streak copper-red, with yellow or brown tarnish. B.B. easily = fusible, colouring the outer flame green.*~~

~~*Sol. inn. acid. Occurs in many rocks*~~

~~*(generally igneous), and frequently asso-*~~

~~*ciated with zeolites. In the Faroes, Unst*~~

~~*(Shetland), Cornwall, Chessy near Lyons,*~~

~~*the Banat (Hungary), Siberia, China,*~~

~~*Mexico, Brazil, Chili, and Australia.*~~

~~*Masses of great size are found, much the*~~

~~*largest being from the Ontanagon river,*~~

~~*on the south of Lake Superior. One Fig. 264.*~~

~~*mass found in February 1857 was 45 feet :*~~

~~*in length, 22 feet in width, and 8 feet in thickness; its weight was 420 tons. Another was found in 1869, 65 feet in length, 32 in width, and from 4 to 7 feet in thickness; this weighed upwards of 1000 tons, and had a value of 400,000 dollars.*~~

~~*19. Luap, Pb.*~~

~~*Cubic, but only in thin plates, capillary or filiform. Cl. none. H.=1°5; G.=11‘36 to 11°4. Ductile, malleable, and_sectile. Bluish grey, but with a blackish tarnish. Found in lava in Madeira, and at the mines near Cartagena in Spain; in amygdaloid near ‘Weissig ; in basaltic tufa at Rautenberg in Moravia ; with gold near Mount Alatau in the Altai, at Velika in Slavonia, and at Olahpian in Transylvania ; near Ekaterinburg in the Urals; in the district of Zomelahuacan in Vera Cruz, in foliated galena, in granular lime- stone; in the iron and manganese bed of Paisberg in Wermland (Sweden), with hematite, magnetite, and hausmannite; in white quartz, north-west, near the Dog Lake of the Kaministiquia, an affluent of Lake Superior; imbedded in hornstone in plates and grairis, in the mine of Bogoslovskoi in the Kirghiz steppes; in green- stone porphyry at Stiitzerbach in Thuringia ; with hematite in the islands of Nias on the west coast of Sumatra.*~~

~~*20. Mercury, Hg.*~~

~~*Cubic. Occurs in small liquid globules in its gangue, but may be solidified at — 39°, when it forms octahedral crystals. G. = 13596 when liquid, 15°612 when solid. Lustre brilliant metallic; tin white. B.B. volatile, sometimes leaving a little silver. Readily sol. inn. acid. Occurs generally in clay shales or schists of dif- ferent ages. The globules of mercury are usually found in rents in cinnabar, or accompanying calomel, at most of the localities for these minerals. Found at Idria in Carniola and Almaden in Spain. At Idria it is obtained by washing a soft clay slate. In Transylvania and Galicia springs issuing from the Carpathian sandstone bear along globules of mercury. At the Pioneer mine in California some of the quartz geodes contain several pounds of mercury. At Cividale in Lombardy it is found in an Eocene marl. It has also been observed occasionally in drift, and has even been stated to have been found in a peat bog.*~~

~~21. Sttver, Ag.~~

~~Cubic (figs. 26, 30, 33, 40, 37). Crystals generally small, also and most frequently filiform, arborescent, and in plates or crusts. These either project into cavities, coat their surfaces, or ramify in a reticu- lated manner throughout the mass of the rock. Twins of octahedral and trapezohedral composition. Nocl. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=101 toll'l. Lustre metallic. Colourand streak silver-white, but generally tarnished yellow, brown, or black. Malleable, ductile, and sectile, but less so than gold. B.B. easily fusible. Sol. in n. acid; the solution colours the skin black. C.e.: silver, with varying~~

~~proportions of gold, platinum, mercury, copper,~~

~~gol antimony, and~~

~~bismuth. The auriferous from Norway contains silver 72, gold 28 ; from quartz reefs in Sutherland, silver 71:4, gold 28°6. The cupriferous from Courcy near Caen contains 10 per cent. of copper. The antimonial from Bohemia contains 1 per cent. of antimony. The mercurial from Kongsberg in Norway has '4 of mercury, found chiefly in veins in gneiss, clay slate, and limestone. Localities : Alva and elsewhere in Scotland, Ballycorus in Ireland, and Cornwall in England; at Freiberg, Andreasberg, and Kongsberg; along with native copper at Lake Superior ; in Mexico, in Peru, and in the United States. The finest crystallized silver oecurs at Lake Superior, and at Kongsberg. At the last locality the crystals are an inch in diameter, and are disposed on large filiform brushes. Silver occurs in large masses ; three of 436, 560, 812 ib have been recorded from Kongsberg. A block which smelted 44,000 Ib was for some years used as a table by Duke Albert on his annual visits of inspection to the Schneeberg mine in Saxony. A Mexican specimen was found of 400 Tb; the mines of Huantaya in Peru have yielded masses of 444 and 960 fb. Britain produces annually about 760,000 oz. of silver, chiefly, however, from lead ores. The value of annual produce for the whole world from all sources is froni 8 to 10 millions of pounds sterling.~~

~~22. SCHNEIDERITE (Gold Amalgam), AugHg;. |~~

~~*Tetragonal four-sided prisms, easily crumbling, yellowish white to white ; sometimes in grains the size of a pea. C.e.: gold 41°63, mercury 58°37. Found at Mariposa in California. A variety (Au, Ag), Hg, is found along with platinum in Columbia ; this contains gold 38°39, silver 5, mercury 57°40. —*~~

~~*23, ARQUERITE, AggHg.*~~

~~*Cubic. In octahedra, also in grains and dendrites. G. =10°8. Like native silver, but softer. C.e.: silver 86‘5, mercury 13°5. From Arqueros in Coquimbo, Chili. Kongsbergite, AgjgHg, occurs at Kongsberg, with 95:1 of silver and 4°9 of mercury.*~~

~~*24, AMatcaM, Ag.Hg,, and AgHg;.*~~

~~*Cubic (fig. 33, in combination with 40, 30, 41, 38). Cl. dodeca-*~~

~~*hedral. H. =3to 3°5; G.=10°5to14. Colour and streak silver- white. Fracture conchoidal, brittle, grates when cut. — In closed tube yields mercury aud leaves silver. Sol. inn. acid. The first*~~

~~*variety (silver 34°8, mercury 65°2) oecurs at Moschellandsberg in the Palatinate, where the veins of mercury and silver intersect one another; the second (silver 26°25, mercury 73°75) there, and also at Allemont in Dauphiné, Almaden in Spain, in Hungary, and in Sweden. From Rosilla in Ataeama (Chili) Domeyko reports the following other compounds: Ag3Hg,, silver 46°8, mercury 53°2, white and silvery ; AgHg,; silver 55:1, mercury 44-9, granular and dull; Ag;Hgs, silver 64°2, mercury 35°8; of the last there is a mass weighing 22 Ib in the museum of Santiago.*~~

~~*25. Gop, Au.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 30, 26, 38, 40, 36) and more complex forms. Crystals generally smalland indistinct through elongation, assuming capillary and arborescent shapes. Also in thin plates. Twins rare; twin face octahedral. Frequently in rounded and apparently colloidal masses impacted in clay, or loose in small grains (pipettes) rolling in the bed of streams. Fig. 265 is of such a mass found in Sutherland. No cl. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=17 to 194. Lustre metallic, but*~~

~~*fre- quently dull and partly coated with a brown crust. Colour and streak yellow- ish white to bright gold- yellow. Malleable, ductile, and sectile; the purer varieties the more so and the softer. B.B. easily fusible. Sol. in aqua regia, generally with precipitation of chloride of silver. Solu- tion yellow, stains skin purple-red, with corrosion. ‘ C.c.: gold, with silver from °72 to 26 per cent. ; sometimes iron and copper under 1 per cent. Found in beds and veins generally of quartz in metamorphic rocks of a schistose nature, rarely in diorite and porphyry, and very rarely in granite. Its general associate is limonite, formed from decomposition of pyrite ; sometimes also hematite and magnetite. Occurs also in microscopic grains in quartz, from which it is extracted by crushing and amalgamation. The geologic range is from the Azoic to the Tertiary and Cretaceous, as in California ; but even in these more recent rocks the original source must have been at least Paleozoic. Of localities which yield gold the following may be noticed :— the Leadhills in Scotland, Wicklow in Ireland, Dolgelly in North Wales, Cornwall in England; Transylvania, HIungary, and Piedmont; the Urals, Ekaterinburg, and India; Kordofan, the coast opposite Madagas- car, and the Gold Coast (the fame of which has been recently re- vived); Minas Geraes in Brazil, Bolivia, North Carolina, and*~~

~~*Fig. 265.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*California ; aud more recently New South Wales and Queensland in Australia, Tasmania, and New Zealand.*~~

~~*Some of the largest single masses of gold found in recent times are the following:—one of 22 0z. in Transylvania, of 28 16 in North Carolina, of 20 ib in California, one of 96 Tb troy near Miask in the Urals, and one of 184 tb 8 oz., which yielded £8376, 10s. 6d., at Ballarat, Australia.*~~

~~*The annual produce of gold from Australia is about 5 millions of pounds sterling, of the United States about 15 millions, and the whole earth about 23 millions.*~~

~~*The following sub-species may be noticed :—*~~

~~*1. Electrum. This name for the alloys of gold and silver was applied by Pliny, whenever the proportion of the latter metal was one-fifth. An alloy of 2 gold and 1 silver contains 21 per cent. of silver; this is found in Sutherland. One of 1 to 1 contains 36 per cent. of silver, this last being the most usual proportion. It occurs in Transylvania, in the Altai, and in Colombia. Its colour is brass-yellow to yellowish white. G.=12°5 to 15:5.*~~

~~*2. Porpezite, or Palladium Gold (ouro-poudré), from Porpez in*~~

~~*Brazil, contains 9°85 per cent. of palladium and 4°17 of silver. 3. Rhodium Grold, from Mexico (G. =15°5 to 16°8), contains from 34 to 43 per cent. of rhodium,*~~

~~*26. PLATINUM, Pt.*~~

~~*Cubic; rarely in small cubes or octahedrons, usually in minute scaly grains, sometimes cohering, and also in rounded lumps. No cl. H. =4 to 45; G.=17to 19. Lustre metallic. Colour and streak pale steel-grey. Malleable and ductile with difficulty, having a hackly fracture. When containing much iron, magnetipolar. B.B. in- fusible. Sol. in aqua regia, but only when heated ; solution red ; corrodes tlhe skin. C.c.: platinum, but never toa greater extent than 865 percent. The remainder consists ofiron, iridium, rhodium, palladium, osmium, gold, copper, and a mechanical mixture of irid- osmine. The iron exists in quantities varying from 4°3 per cent. to double that amount. Occurs in Brazil in syenite; near Popayan (Colombia) in alluvium, associated with chromite, iridium, palla- dium, gold, and copper; in the Urals in alluvium derived from crystalline rocks; and at Nijni-Tagilsk in serpentine along with chromite. It is also found in Borneo, California, and Carolina, and is said to have been found in the county of Wicklow in Ireland. The sands of many rivers yield it in small amount. Platinum does not occur in large masses. A mass in the Madrid Musenm: from Condoto weighs 264 oz. ; masses have been found in the Urals from 11 to 21 fb.*~~

~~*Iron Platina is a sub-species. This, which has a composition FePt,, and contains from 11 to 13 per cent. of iron, is found at Nijni-Tagilsk. G.=14-6 to 15°38; H.=6. It is magnetipolar, and attracts iron much more strongly than an ordinary magnet.*~~

~~27. PLATINIRIDIUM.~~

~~In minute silver-white grains. H.=6 to 7; G.=16‘94 to 22:8. Contains 55°44 platinum, 27°79 iridium, 6°86 rhodinm, 4:14 iron, 3‘3 copper, ‘49 palladium. Is found in Brazil.~~

~~28. Inip1uM, Ir.~~

~~Cubic (fig. 27). H. =6 to 7; G. =21°57 to 23°46. Cl. cubic, traces. Very slightly malleable. Silver-white to steel-grey. B.B. un- changed. Insoluble in all acids. C.c.: 76°8 iridium, 19°64 “platinum, 0°89 palladium, 1°78 copper. Found at Nijni-Tagilsk, generally in minute grains. Is the heaviest known substance.~~

~~Avaite, sub-species. From Ava in India. C.c.: 60 iridium, 20 platinum (according to Prinsep).~~

~~29. PALLADIUM, Pd.~~

~~Cubic ; in minute octahedrons, and ingrains. H. =4°5to5; G.= 11°3 to11°8. Malleable. Lightsteel-grey. B.B.infusible. Slowly dissolves in n. acid, forming a brown-red solution. C.c.: palla- dium, with a little platinum and iridium. From the gold sands of Brazil, often in small plumose crystalline lumps. Also from St Domingo, and the Urals. Does not tarnish with sulphurous fumes.~~

~~30. ALLOPALLADIUM, Pd,.~~

~~Hexagonal ; in small flat hexagons. bright silvery. Colour palé steel-grey. Harz, with gold.~~

~~31. NEWJANSKITE (Osmiridiwm), IrQs (iridium 49°78, osmium 50°22) and Ir,Os.~~

~~‘Hexagonal; P 124°. OP, P, oP. Generally in flat scales. Cl. basal perfect. H.=7; G.=18°8 to 19°47. Lustre metallic. Colour tin-white. B.B. unchanged. Insoluble —·— in all acids. The analyses of this mineral give a ar ae quantities of iridium varying from 44 to 77 per cent., and of osmium~~

~~*from 21 to 49. Ruthenium, ! rhodium, and platinum make up the 100 parts. Fic, 266 The largest quantity of ruthenium is 8°49, and Ne one variety from New Granada was found to contain no ruthenium, but 12°3 of rhodium, which is more than double its usual amount. Occurs with platinum in Choco (Colombia); at Newjansk and*~~

~~*Cl basal, perfect. Lustre From Tilkerode.in the*~~

~~*383*~~

~~*several localities in the Urals, in Australia, in northern California (somewhat abundantly in gold sands), also in Canada.*~~

~~*32. SISSERSKITE (Jridosmiwm), lrOs, (iridium 19°9, osmium 80:1) and IrOs, (iridium 24:8, osmium 75-2).*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R=84° 28'. H.=7:5; G.=21-12. Colour lead- grey to bluish. B.B. becomes black, with strong odour of osmic acid ; in flame of spirit-lamp shines strongly, and colours flame yellowish red. Occurs in small quantity with newjanskite at all its localities, and in proportionally larger quantity at Sissersk in the Urals. It is used for pointing gold pens, and in the United States sells at 50 dollars an ounce.*~~

~~*COMPOUNDS OF FLUORINE, CHLORINE, BROMINE, AND IODINE (HALOID SALTS).*~~

~~*33. FLuoRITE (Fluor-spar), CaF.*~~

~~*_ Cubic (figs. 267 to 270, also figs. 31, 33, 36, 55, 56, 57, 58); also divergent crystalline, granular, and compact. Cl. octahedral; fracture conchoidal ; brittle. H.=4; G.=3-1to 3-2. Transparent to pellucid. Lustre vitreous. Colourless, but generally coloured purple, blue, green, yellow, white, black, and pink. Sometimes two or three colours disposed in layers in one crystal. Frequently*~~

~~*Fig. 269.*~~

~~*Fig. 270.*~~

~~phosploresces with different tints of light, when heated. B.B. de- crepitates and fuses to an opaque bead. Sol. ins. acid with evolution of hydrofluoric acid. C.c.: 51°3 calcium, 48°7 fluorine. Common in veins, generally associated with metallic ores. Shetland, Suther- land, on the Avon, and Ballater in Scotland; Cumberland, Northumberland, Derbyshire, and Cornwall; Saxony, Bohemia, Freiberg. Used to be turned intovases and other ornaments (“ blue John ”) ; formerly employed as a flux, now for etching and obsenring glass. . :~~

~~34. YITROCERITE.~~

~~In crystalline crusts. H.=4t05; G.=3‘4to3°5. Translucent ; vitreous. Violet-blue to grey or white. B.B. infusible. Evolves fluorine when heated with sulphuric acid. C.c: fluorides of cerium, yttrium, and calcium. Finbo and Broddbo near Falun (Sweden), Massachusetts and New York.~~

~~35. FLUOCERITE, CeF + Ce,F3.~~

~~Hexagonal. H.=4 to 5; G.=4°7. Opaque or translucent on the edges. . Pale brick-red or yellowish ; streak yellowish white. B.B. infusible. In closed tube gives out hydrofluoric acid. C.c.: 82°64 peroxide of cerium, 1°12 yttria, 16°24 hydrofluoric acid. Finbo and Broddbo.~~

~~36. FLUOCERINE, Ce,F,(Ce,03 H,O).~~

~~Massive ; fracture conchoidal. H.=4°5 to 5. Opaque; resinous. Bright yellow to reddish brown ; streak brownish yellow. B.B. infusible, darkens with the heat; colour restored on cooling. C.c¢.: cerium 17°6, fluorine 10°9, sesquioxide of cerium 6674, water 5:1. From Finbo.~~

~~37. BASTNAESITE, Ce,F;Ce,03; 4H,0, and~~

~~38. HaMarrIrE, 2(LaO, CeO)3CO,+CeF;, are similar. The first is from Bastnaes in Sweden, the second from Pike’s Peak in Colorado.~~

~~39. FLUELLITE, Al,F3. Right prismatic. In acute rhombic octahedrons with truncated apex. Polar edges 109° 6' and 82° 12', middle 144°. H.=8. Lustre vitreous. Colour white; transparent. 40. OryvotiTE, 3NaF + ALF3.~~

~~Anorthic; but mostly in cleav- able masses. M:7 91°57'; P:T~~

~~Stenna-gwyn in Cornwall.~~

~~90° 2; P:M 90° 40'. Cl P perfect, Jf and 7 imperfect ; brittle. H.=2°5; G.=2°9 to 3°08.~~

~~Vitreous, somewhat pearly on P. Translucent; after immersion in water transparent. Colourless and . snow-white ; but when deep-seated brown to black. Melts even in flame of candle to a white enamel. In open tube traces of hydrofluoric acid. Sol. ins. acid. C.c.:alumi- nium 13, sodium 32°8, fluorine 54°2. Fic. 271 Arksutfiord, Greenland; Miask, a Siberia. Used for manufacture of a white glass, and extraction of aluminium. '~~

~~41, Arxsvuvits, (CaNa),F+AlLF;. Ca:Na=1:3.~~

~~Massive granular. H.=2'5; G.=8°03 to 3°18. Cl. one distinct. Vitreous; white; translucent. C.c.: aluminium 18°6, sodium 23°38, calcium 6°8, fluorine 51°38. Arksutfiord.~~

~~42. CHioLirE, 8NaF +2Al,F;.~~

~~Pyramidal, and twins (fig. 272). Middle edge 111° 14'. Mostly granu- lar. Cl. imperfect. H.=4; G.=2°84 to 2°9. Resinous; white. Fuses more easily than cryolite; evolves hydro- fluoric acid. C.e.: aluminium 18°6, sodium 23°4, fluorine 58. Ilmen Mts. near Miask.~~

~~43, CHODNEFFITE, 2NaF + Als.~~

~~G.=3. Other characters like chiolite, and from same locality.~~

~~44, PacuNoutrE, 3(CaNa)F+Al,F3;+2H,0. Ca: Na=38:2.~~

~~Oblique prismatic. oP 98° 34'; always twins. Vitreous; white ; semitransparent. C.c.:aluminium 12°3, calcium 16°1, sodium 12°4, fluorine~~

~~51°1, water 8°1. Evolves water with crackling, when heated ; other characters like cryolite, along with which it occurs in Greenland. :~~

~~45. Tuomsenouite, 2(CaNa)F+Al,F;+2H,0. Ca: Na=7: 3.~~

~~Oblique prismatic. Prismatic planes striated; oP 89° (fig. 273). Cl. basal, perfect. H. =2°5 to 4; G.=2°74 to 2°76. Vitreous; cleav- age face pearly. White with yellow crust; trauslu- cent. C.c.: aluminium 15, calcium 15-4, sodium 76, fluorine 52-2, water 9°8, B.B. fuses more easily than cryolite to clear glass, decrepitating violently. Along with cryolite in Greenland.~~

~~46, GEARKSUTITE, Cag + Al,F3+4H,0. RSS~~

~~Earthy. H.=2. White; dull; opaque. C.c.: KN aluminium 15°5, calcium 19°38, sodium 2°5, fluorine KXy=~~

~~41:2, water 20°3.. Along with cryolite.~~

~~47. EviaToxiTE, 2CaF,+ALF,+2H,0.~~

~~Crystalline. Soft; brittle ; like kaolin. calcium 22°39, aluminium . 16°23, fluorine 55°24, water 5°71. land.~~

~~48, PROSOPITE. Oblique prismatic. A hydrated silico-fiuoride of aluminium and calcium. H.=4; G.=2°89.~~

~~Colourless imbedded crystals. From the tin- mines of Altenberg.~~

~~49, CALOMEL, Hg,Cl.~~

~~Pyramidal ; P 135° 50' (fig. 274). H.=1to2; G.=6'4 to 65. Translucent; adamantine. Yel- lowish white to grey. Sublimes unchanged in closed tube; with soda yields mercury. Insol. in n. acid.~~

~~C.c.: mercury 85, chlorine 15. Moschellandsberg, Idria, Almaden.~~

~~50. SyLvitg, KCl.~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 26, 30); also massive. H.=2; G=1°9 to 2. White or colourless. .. ._ Vitreous; soluble; taste like common salt. Fig. 274 (sp. 49). C.c.: potassium 525, chlorine 47°5. B.B. fuses, and colours flame violet. Crater of Vesuvius, and salt beds of Stassfurt.*~~

~~*51. HALITE (Common Salt, Rock-salt), NaCl.*~~

~~*Cubic (fig.21) ; generally granular, sometimes fiorous. Cl. cubic.*~~

~~*(Cken sodium ‘43, Arksutfiord, Green-*~~

~~*Cl. cubic.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*H.=2; G.=2‘1 to 2:2. Transparent to translucent ; vitreous. Colourless or white; but often coloured red, yellow, or blue. Taste saline. B.B. fuses and partly evaporates ; colours flame yellow. C.c.: sodium 39°3, chlorine 60°7. In great beds at Wieliczka, Salzburg, Bex, &c., on the Continent; Cheshire in England. As an efflorescence in Brazil, Abyssinia, the Caspian and ‘Aral Seas. As a sublimation among lavas at Vesuvius and other volcanoes.*~~

~~*52. Satmrac, NH,Cl.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 30, 40, and 41 with 26, 33, 40). Cl. octahedral ; also stalactitic, globular, and as an efflorescence. H. =1°‘5 to 2; G.=1‘5 to 1°6. Pellucid; vitreous. Colourless, but sometimes stained. Taste pungent. B.B, directly volatile ; in copper colours flame blue-green. C.c.: 32 ammonia, 66°4 chlorine. A sublimate on active volcanoes. Vesuvius, island of Volcano, Iceland. Near coal-seams which have taken fire, in Scotland and at Newcastle.*~~

~~*53. CHLoRo-CALcITE, CaCl+(KCl, NaCl). Cubic. Vesuvian bombs.*~~

~~*54. CERARGYRITE, AgCl.*~~

~~*Cubic (fig. 26). Twins on octahedral face. No cl. ; chiefly massive in crusts. H.=1 to 1°55; G.=5°5 to 5°6. Fracture con- choidal. Malleable. Translucent; adamantine to resinous. Grey, yellowish, and greenish. B.B.*~~

~~*fuses easily to a dark bead, reduced iu inner flame. Soluble in ammonia. C.c.: silver 75, chlorine 25. Johann-Georgenstadt, Mexico, Peru.*~~

~~*55. Empo.itr, 2AgBr + 3AgCl.*~~

~~*Cubic (fig. 29); also massive or concretionary. Boel todca; G.-=5°8. Adamantine to resinous. Green and yellowish green. C.c.; silver 67, chlorine 13, bromine 20. Chili, Mexicv, Honduras.*~~

~~*56. Bromite, AgBr.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 26, 80). H. =1to2; G.=5°8 to 6. Splendent. Yellow to olive-green ; streak siskin-green. B.B. fusible easily. C.c.: silver 57°5, bromine 42°5. San Onofre and Plateros (Mexico).*~~

~~*57. Iopirz, Agl.*~~

~~*Hexagonal. Cl. basal; also massive, and in crystalline plates some inches in width; these are flexible. H.=1 to 15; C= 55 to 5°7. Translucent; adamantine. Citron and sulphur-yellow ; streak yellow. B.B. fusible, colours the flame purple-red, and leaves button of silver. O.c.: silver 46, iodine 54. Zacatecas in Mexico, Algodones in Chili, Arizona, rarely in Spain.*~~

~~*58. CocciniTE, Hgl,.*~~

~~*In grains of an adamantine lustre, from Casas- Viejas in Mexico. Colour red to yellow ; in acute rhombic prisms. Also from Zimapan and Culebras.*~~

~~*59. TocoRNACLITE, Ag! + Hg,I .*~~

~~*Amorphous, yellow, soft. Chaiiarcillo in Chili.*~~

~~*60. CoruNNITE, PbCl.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. H.=2; G.—5°238. Transparent ; high ada-*~~

~~*mantine to pearly. White. C.c.: lead 74, chlorine 26. Crater of Vesuvius.*~~

~~*61. MotysiTE, Fe,Cls.*~~

~~*Incrusting. Brownish red and yellow. On lavas of Vesuvius.*~~

~~*C.c.: iron 34°5, chlorine 65°5. 62, CARNALLITE, KC1+2MgC1+12H,0.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. Nocl. Conchoidal fracture. H.=2 to 2°5; G.—1°6. Colourless, generally red from iron. C.c.: 342 chloride of magnesium, 26°9 chloride of potassium, 38°9 water. Stassfurt, Galicia, Persia.*~~

~~*63. TAcHHIYDRITE, CaCl+2MgCl+12H,0.*~~

~~*Massive. Yellow, translucent, very deliquescent. In anhydrite. C.c.: calcium 7°46, magnesium 9°51, chlorine 40°34, water 42°69. Stassfurt.*~~

~~*64. Kremersite, KCl+NH,Cl+ FeCl, +3H,0.*~~

~~*Cubic; in octahedra. Ruby-red. Soluble. Fumaroles of Vesuvius.*~~

~~*65. ERITHROSIDERITE, 2KCl+ Fe,Cl,+2H,0.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. Vesuvian lava.*~~

~~*66. MATLocKITE, PbCl+ PbO.*~~

~~*Pyramidal; P 136° 17'. Crystals tabular. Cl. basal ; fracture conchoidal. H.=2°5 ; G.=7°21. Translucent; adamantine. Yellowish white. B.B. fuses easily with decrepitation ; colours flame blue. C.c.: chloride of lead 55°5, oxide of lead 44°5.*~~

~~*| Cromford in Derbyshire.*~~

~~*67. MrnprpiTE, PbCl+2PbO.*~~

~~*Right prismatic; chiefly massive. Cl. oP perfect 102° 36'. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=7:to7'l. Fracture conchoidal. Translucent; adaman-*~~

~~*_ tine to pearly. Yellowish or greyish white. BB. decrepitates, fuses*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~easily. Sol. in n. acid. C.c.: chloride of lead 40, protoxide of lead 60. Mendip Hills, and Brilon in Westphalia,~~

~~68. SCHWARTZEMBERGITE, PbI+2Pb0O.~~

~~Rhombohedral ; in thin crusts. H.=2to 2°5; G.=5°7 to 6°3. Adamantine. Honey-yellow. Desert. of Ata- cama.~~

~~69. ATACAMITE, CuCl+3Cu0,H,O.~~

~~Right prismatic ; oP (Jf) 112° 25', Po (P)~~

~~106° 10', oP so (h) (fig. 275); also reniform. Cl. h perfect. Semitransparent; vitreons. Emerald — green ; streak apple-~~

~~green. B.B. fuses, leaving cop- per. Easily soluble in acids. C.c.: copper protoxide 55°85,~~

~~copper 14°86, chlorine 16°61, water 12°68. Atacama, Chili; Tarapaca, Peru; Bolivia ; Burra- Burra, Australia; Serra de Bembe, Ambriz, Africa ; Vesu- vius and (?) Etna,~~

~~70. TALLINGITE, CuCl, H,O+4Cu0, H,O.~~

~~In crusts. H.=3; G.=3°5. Bright blue to greenish blue. Trauslucent; brittle. Botallack in Cornwall.~~

~~71. PERCYLITE, (PbCl+ PbO) + (CuCl1+CuO). Cubic (com. of figs. 26, 30, 38, 36). H.=2. Vitreous. Sky-blue. Sonora in Mexico. , 72. CONNELLITE. Bae oo lsp. 12), Hexagonal (fig. 276). 6:r 148° 10°; r:r 182° 50'. Crystals acicular. Vitreous; translucent. Vitriol-blue. A~~

~~chloride and sulphide of copper. Wheal Unity and Wheal Damsel (Cornwall).~~

~~sweet~~

~~Fig. 275 (sp. 69).~~

‘

1

‘

4

‘a ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ a ‘

1

i

‘

‘ ry i

1 1

’

1 + 1 .

‘

4

A,

OXIDES OF METALS.

1. SuBoxIDES AND PROTOXIDES. 73. CupRITE, Cu,0.

Cubic (figs. 22, 30, 38, 26, with 39, 40). Compact and granular. Cl. octahedral ; brittle. H.=3‘5to4; G.=5°7 to6. Transparent and opaque ; adamantine. When transparent, crimson; when opaque, cochineal or brick-red. Often tarnished grey. B.B. becomes black, fuses, and is reduced on charcoal. Soluble in acids and in ammonia. C.c.: 88°9 copper, 111 oxygen.

~~Cornwall, Siberia, Banat, Chessy near Lyons, Linares in Spain, Urals, South Africa, Burra-Burra. Valuable copper ore. Chalcotrichite consists of cubes elongated so as to become fibrous. Tile-ore is a ferruginous variety. Hepatic copper, liver ore, or pitchy copper ore seems to be a product of the decomposition of chalcopyrite. Delafossite, Cu,0 + Fe,0,, from Bohemia and Siberia.~~

~~74, Water, HO.~~

~~Hexagonal, when solid, in complex twins in snow crystals; thombohedric by cleavage, inice. H.=1°5; G.=-918. Hence 1000 of water—1089°5 of ice, or water expands #,th in freezing. Trans- parent ; vitreous. Colourless, but in bulk pale emerald-green. R 117° 23”. Cl. basal. Water when pure colourless, in mass bluish green. Occurs in centre of geodes of chalcedony in China; of druses of quartz in California and many other countries; in zeolitic cavities to the amount of several gallons in the Faroes, also in the Hebrides, &e. Water of the ocean, from holding saline matters in solution, has G. =1‘027 to 1:0285. Waters ofsaline lakes contain sometimes 26 per cent. of salts, and have G. 1°212. Besides its vast bulk in the ocean, water occurs in enormous amount in the solid form, often as water of crystallization in rocks and minerals, ¢.g., zeolites. Igneous rocks in some districts are converted largely into saponite, which contains 25 per cent. of water. Water is the standard for specific gravities of solids and liquids ; 1 cubic inch at 60° F. and 30 inches of the barometer weighs 252°458 grains ; 1 litre weighs 1000 grammes.~~

~~75. PericuasE, MgO. Cubic; in cubes and octahedrons.~~

~~3°75. Transparent; vitreous. Grey to dark green. B.B. infusible. Sol. in acids. C.c.: magnesia, with 6 to 8 of iron oxide. Somma.~~

~~76. Bunsenirg, NiO.~~

~~Cubic; in octahedrons. H. =5°5; G.=6°4. Vitreous. Pistachio- green. Johann-Georgenstadt.~~

~~77. ZINcITE, ZnO.~~

~~*Hexagonal and granular. Cl. basal. 5°5. Adamantine ; translucent. orange-yellow.*~~

~~*Cl. do. H.=6; G.=3°6 to*~~

~~*H. =4 to 4°55; G.=5°4 to Blood- or hyacinth-red ; streak B.B. infusible, but phosphorescces. O,c. : zine*~~

~~*385*~~

~~*80°26, oxygen 19°74; sometimes with manganese peroxide. Valuable ore of zinc. Franklin and Sterling in New J ersey.*~~

~~*- 78. Massicot, PbO.*~~

~~*Massive ; scaly crystalline. H.=2; G.=7°8 to 8. lemon-yellow ; often contains iron.*~~

~~*79. MELACONITE, CuO.*~~

~~*Cubic ; compact. H.=3 to 4; G.=6 to 6:3. infusible ; soluble in acids. Burra-Burra.*~~

~~*80. TENORITE, CuO.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic ; occurs in thin scales of metallic lustre on lava of Vesuvius. Colour black and dark-red.*~~

~~*Sulphur- or Popocatepetl in Mexico.*~~

~~*Black. B.B. Cornwall, Leadhills, Lake Superior,*~~

~~*2. SESQUIOXIDES. 81. Corunpum, Al,0,.*~~

~~*Hexagonal ; R 86° 4’”.. Twins common. Cl. rhombohedral, and basal. Excessively tough, and difficultly frangible. H. =9; G.=3°9 to4°2. Transparent or translucent ; vitreous, but pearly to metallic on basal face. B.B. unchanged. As Corundwm, white, grey, and greenish, frequently with bronzy lustre on basal face. C.c.: alumina, with a little peroxide of iron.*~~

~~China, Ceylon, Bohemia, Malabar, Macon in North Carolina (one crystal 300 tb weight). Emery is coinpact, crystalline, granular; grey to indigo-blue. Asia Minor, Naxos, Spain, Greenland, America. Corundum is used when crushed for cutting and polishing gems in China and India, emery in powder for grinding. Alumina oc- curs also in a purer state in transparent crystals of vari- ous tints of colour. When red and of the colour of pigeon's blood they are termed Rubies; these come from Syriam in Pegu, Ava, Ceylon, Bohemia, and near Expailly. When 5 carats in weight a ruby is twice the value of a diamond of the same size, when 10 carats three times the value. When blue the crystal is the Sapphire, found chiefly in Ceylon and Pegu; when green it is the Oriental Emerald, when yellow the Oriental Topaz, when purple the Oriental Amethyst,—the adjective here distinguishing them from the true or occidental stones of the same name. Other tints of colour also occur, but with the excep- tion of the red and blue they are seldom pure or deep. The prism when cut with a hemispherical dome sometimes displays a six- rayed star, either of a bright gold or a silvery white colour, upon a greyish blue ground. These receive the name of Asteria Sapphires. The same crystal frequently shows portious of even three different tints. When perfectly devoid of colour, they are called Water Sapphtres; such are little inferior to the diamond in brilliancy, but do not disperse rays of light to the same extent.~~

~~82. HaMarTITE, Fe,O,.~~

~~Hexagonal and rhombohedral ; R 86°. Crystals rhombohedric, prismatic, and tabular. Twins with axes parallel. Cl. R, and basal; fracture conchoidal; brittle. H.=5°5 to 6°5; G.=5'1 to 5°38. Opaque, but in thin lamine transparent and blood-red. Brilliant metallic lustre, iron-black to steel-grey, often brilliantly tarnished of red, yellow, green, and blue tiuts ; streak cherry-red. B.B. in the inner flame becomes black and magnetic. Sol. in acids. C.c.: iron 70, oxygen 30. The following are varieties or subdivisions:—~~

~~Elba Tron Orc, highly modified rhombohedral crystals, often bril- liantly tarnished. Specular Iron Ore, in thin flat crystals, often from volcanoes, as on the island of Ascen- sion ; this variety includes Micaccous Iron, thin, lamellar, and curved, and Red Iron Froth, scaly. Red Hema- tite, in~~

~~*botryoidal and _ stalactitic forms, which are internally com- ‘ posed of radiating fibres, and often Fig. 280. have a concentric structure; the external surface has a dark red to a brownish red hue. Compact and Ochrey varieties, with more or less aluminous impurity, pass into Reddle or red chalk, and when still more earthy into jaspery and columnar ores. This ore is very commonly distributed :—micaceous iron at Pitfichie in Aberdeen and Birnam in Perthshire; red hematite at Leadhills and at*~~

~~*Fig. 278.*~~

~~*Ulverston in Lancashire ; specular iron at Tavistock in Devonshire and in Cumberland. Martite seems to be the same substance in pseudomorphs after magnetite; it occurs in octahedra in Bute, Framont (Vosges), New York, and Brazil.*~~

~~*83. ILMENITE, (Fe, Ti),03.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral; R 86°. Crystals rhombohedral and tabular, also intwins. Cl. basal; fracture conchoidal. H.=5 to6; G.=4°66 to 5, Opaque, semimetallic, iron-black to dark brown; streak black or reddish brown. Sometimes slightly magnetic. B.B. infusible, but with microcosmic salt forms a red glass. Slowly sol. in s. acid when pow- dered: C.c.: peroxide of iron, with from 8 to 58 per cent. oxide of titanium. Occurs in metamor- 3 phic rocks. Common in chloritic Fig. 281. gneiss in Scotland ; Menaccan (Cornwall), Ilmen Mountains, Salz- burg, Egersund (Norway), Arendal, Dauphiné (Crichtonite), Massa- chusetts (Washingtonite).*~~

~~*84. ISERINE.*~~

~~*Cubic; in octahedra. Strongly magnetic; in other respects similar to ilmenite, but occurs in igneous rocks. Common as black iron- sand in Scotland ; Iserweise in Bohemia, Auvergne, Canada, New Zealand.*~~

~~*3. COMPOUNDS OF SESQUIOXIDES WITH PROTOXIDEs (SPINELS).*~~

~~85. MAGNETITE, FeO, Fe,03.~~

~~Cubic (figs. 35, 30, 38, 29, 34, 37, with 40, 41, 36). Hemi- tropes common on octahedral face (fig. 169). Twins (fig. 261). Faces of «0 striated in long diagonal. Often compact and granular. Cl. octahedral; fracture conchoidal or uneven; brittle. H.=5°5 to 6°5;~~

~~G=4'9 to 5°2. Opaque; lustre metallic. Iron-black to brown ; streak black. Highly magnetic; often polar, forming natural magnets. B.B. becomes brown and non-magnetic, fusing with~~

~~difficulty. Powder sol. in h. acid. C.c, : 31 protoxide and 69 per- oxide of iron; or 72°4 iron, 27°6 oxygen; sometimes with titanic acid. In crystals in Shetland and Sutherland; also Cornwall and Antrim, Traversella (Piedmont), Tyrol, Styria. Massive at Dannemora and Taberg (Sweden), Norway, Urals, Harz, Saxony, Elba. This is the most important ore in Norway, Sweden, and Russia, and affords the finest iron.~~

~~86. MAGNESIO-FERRITE, MgO, Fe,O3.~~

~~Cubic (fig. 30). H.=6 to 65; G.=4°57 to 4°66. Other characters same as magnetite. C.c.: maguesia 20, peroxide of iron 87. Fumaroles of Vesuvius.~~

~~87. JAcoBsITE, (MnO, MgO), (Fe,03;, Mn,O3).~~

~~Cubic; O. Black; vitreous; streakred. Nordmark in Sweden.~~

~~88. FRANKLINITE, (FeO, ZnO, MnO), (Fe,0;, Mn,0O3).~~

~~Cubic (figs. 34, 64); also granular. Cl. octahedral; fracture conchoidal ; brittle. H.=5°5 to6°5; G.=5-07. Metallic lustre. Iron-black ; streak reddish brown. Opaque; slightly magnetic. B.B. infusible, but shines and throws ont sparks. On charcoal with soda a deposit of oxide of zinc. Sol. in h. chlorine. C.c.: about 67 iron oxide, 17 manganese peroxide, 16 zinc oxide, Franklin and Sterling (New Jersey).~~

~~89. CHROMITE, FeO, Cr,03.~~

~~*Cubic; in octahedra, generally granular-massive. G.=4‘4 to 4°5. Opaque ; semimetallic to resinous. Iron-black to dark brown ; Streak reddish brown. Fracture uneven ; sometimes magnetic. B,B. unchanged ; inred. flame becomes magnetic; with borax forms an emerald-green bead. Not soluble in acids. C.c.: 19 to 37 protoxide of iron, 0 to 15 magnesia, 36 to 64 peroxide of chromium, 9 to 21 alumina. Unst (Shetland), Towanrieff (Aber-deenshire), Silesia, Bohemia, Styria, Urals, Turkey, Baltimore Massachusetts, and Hoboken. The ore of chromium: used for dyes. rite is chromite mixed with iridosmium. ;*~~

~~*90. URANINITE (Piteh Blende), UO, U,0.*~~

~~*Cubic (fig. 30); usually massive and botryoidal. H.=5 to 6; G=6‘5to 8. Lustre pitch-like to submetallic. Colour pa ae brownish black, and grey. B.B. infusible. Not sol. in h. acid, we “— oe n. ie rs : oxides of uranium 80, witha mixture of other oxides. ohann-Georgenstadt, Annab Przi : ruth in Cornwall. The chief a of uranium. iece bie*~~

~~*91. GamniTE, ZnO, Al,O3.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 166, 30, 38, and with 39, 40). Hemi ik magnetite. Cl O; brittle, with conehoidal fracture. ais ee 8; G.=4°3 to 4°9. Opaque; vitreous to resinous. Dark leck-green to blue; streak grey. B.B. unchanged. Unaffected by acids or alkalies. _ C.c.: 44 oxide of zinc, 56 alumina. Falun, Broddbo Haddam in Connecticut, and Franklin in New Jersey. Dysluite contains 42 per cent. sesquioxide of iron; and Kreittonite contains 24 oxide of manganese.*~~

~~*E55 **~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*3°95. Ronsberg in the BOhmerwald.*~~

~~*parent to opaque; vitreous. Black, red, blue, green ; streak white.*~~

~~*acid with evolution of*~~

~~92. Hercynitr, FeO, Al,Og.~~

~~Cubic ; generally granular massive. B.B. infusible. C.c. :~~

~~H.=7°5 to 8; G.=3°‘9 to oxide of iron 41°1, alumina 58°9.~~

~~93. SpENEL, MgO, Al,03. Cubic (figs. 30, 88, 40 with 26); hemitropesunited byface ofO. Cl. octahedral ; fracture conchoidal H.=8; G.=—3‘4 to 41. Trans-~~

~~B.B. infusible and unchanged. C.c.: 28 magnesia, 72' alumina; some with a little iron, and the red varieties some chromium. Varieties are—Spinel Ruby when scarlet, Balas Ruby when rose-red ; both often sold as the true ruby, but not nearly so valuable ; when of 4 carats valued at half the price ofa diamond the same size. These~~

~~Fig. 282.~~

~~come from Pegu (native name Balachan). The violet-coloured is the Alabandine ruby from Alabandin in Caria, (Asia Minor). The orange red isthe Rubicella. Theabove also occur at Ceylon, Ava, and Siam. Sapphirine is pale sapphire-blue to greenish or reddish blue; from Aker in Sweden, Greenland, and North America. Pleonaste, dark green or blue to black; from Candy in Ceylon. Chloro- spinel, grass-green with a yellowish white streak; from Zlatoust. Water-spinel colour- less; from Ceylon. Picotite is a dark blue chromiferous variety from serpentine.~~

~~94, CuRYSOBERYL, G10, Al,O3.~~

~~Right prismatic (fig. 284). Twins common, united by a face of Poo (fig. 285, also 156). Cl. brachydiagonal imperfect, macrodiagonal more so; fracture conchoidal. H.=8‘5; G.=3°68 to 3°8. Transparent or translucent; vitreous. Greenish white, leek-green, and dark emerald- green. B.B. infusible. Not affected by acids. C.c.: glucina 20, alumina 80. Brazil, Ceylon, India, the Urals, Haddam in Connecticut. A very valuable gem. It sometiines possesses an opalescent band, which when the stone is cut en cabochon appears as a streak of floating light ; whence it derives its name of Cymo-phane. It is then also called the chatoyant or Oriental chrysolite, and when~~

~~*fine is of extreme value. The emerald-green variety, or Alex- andrite, is columbine-red by transmitted light.*~~

~~*Fig. 288.*~~

~~*v*~~

~~*ps a ata a Gere dy*~~

~~*4, DEUTOXIDES, 95. Rutite, Tid,. Pyramidal ; prisms dominant. P84 40’; Poo 65° 35’ (figs. 286, 287). Hemitropes common, with axes of halves ies 26r GT,*~~

~~*o Pand Poo, perfect. H.=6 to 6°5; G.=4°2 to4°3. Trans- parent to opaque;*~~

~~*adamantine lustre.*~~

~~*Brown-red, red, pale ZK: Ss*~~

~~*yellow, and black; Al bee*~~

~~*streak yellowish brown. oJ > if B.B. unchanged ; with . borax in the ox. flame*~~

~~*forms a greenish, in . the red. flame a violet >*~~

~~*glass. Not affected by a 7*~~

~~*— rs titanic*~~

~~*acid, with some _per-*~~

~~*oxide of iron. aly:*~~

~~*cailleach and Ben-y-*~~

~~*Gloe (Perthshire), The ; Cobbler and Ben-Bheula Fig. 286. (Argyllshire), Alps, Limoges, Norway, Brazil. Large crystals at Titanium Mount (Lincoln county, Georgia). Used in porcelain painting, and for tinting artificial teeth.*~~

~~*When attenuated crystals are imbedded in rock-crystal they are called Venus' hair.*~~

~~*Fig. 287.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*96. ANATASE, TiO,. Pyramidal ; pyramids dominant. P 136° 36' (fig. 288). basal, aud P, both perfect; brittle. H. =5'5 to 6; G.=3°8 to 3:93. Trans- parent to opaque ; lustre adamantine to*~~

~~*Cl.*~~

~~*metallie. Indigo-blue, yellow, brown, rarely colourless; streak white. B.B. infusible. Sol. in hot s. acid. C.e.:*~~

~~*titanic acid, with a little iron and rarely tin. Cornwall and Devonshire, the Alps, Dauphiné, Valais, the Urals, Minas Geraes (Brazil).*~~

~~*97. BrooxiTe, TiO,.*~~

~~*Right prismatie ; with polar edges 135° 37' and 101° 3' (fig. 289). Cl. maerodia- gonal. H.=5°5 to 6; G.=3°86 to 4:2. : Transparent to opaque; lustre metallie Fig. 288 (sp. 96). adamantine. Yellowish, reddish, and hair- brown; streak yellowish white to white. B.B. infusible; with mierocosmic salt, a brownish yellow glass. C.e.: titanic acid, with 1 to 4°5 per eent. peroxide of iron. Snowdon and Tremadoc (Wales), Chamouni, Bourg d'Oisans, Miask.*~~

~~*98. CASSITERITE, SnO,.*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 87° 7'; Poo 67° 50' (figs. 290 to 292). Crystals oP, P; or oP (9), P (s), oP (2); or with Poo (P), (fig, 290); and also oP2 ®, and*~~

~~*: 3P3 (2), (fig. 291). Hemitropes ver Be oe ep 27), atin yaiieed by a face of Pe with theechief axes 112° 10' (figs. 293, 171, 172, 173); also fibrous (Wood Tin), or in rounded fragments and grains (Stream Tin). Cl. pris- matie along oP, andoPo, imperfeet; brittl. H.=6 to 7;*~~

~~*Fig. 290,*~~

~~*G.=6‘8 to 7. Translucent or opaque; adamantine or resinous. White, but usually grey, yellow, red, brown, and black; streak white, light grey, or brown. B.B. in the forceps infusible ; on*~~

~~*asa*~~

~~*ae*~~

~~*eharcoal, in the inner flame, reduced to tin. Not affected by aeids. C.e.: 78°6 tin and 21°4 oxygen, but often mixed with peroxide of iron, or manganese, or tantalie aeid. Cornwall, Bohemia, Saxony, also Silesia, Haute-Vienne in France, Greenland, Russia, North and South Ameriea, Malacea, Banea, and Queensland. Almost the only ore of tin.*~~

~~*99. HAusMANNITE, 2MnO, MnO,.*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 116° 59’; Poo 98° 32’ (fig. 110). Twins common, and rosettes of twins (figs. 174,175). Cl. basal, perfect, less so P and Poo; fraetureuneven. H.=5‘5; G.=4°7 to 4°8. Opaque; metallic lustre. TIron-black; streak brown. B.B. infusible, but becomes*~~

~~*ee*~~

~~*Fig. 292.*~~

~~*Fig, 293.*~~

~~*387*~~

~~*brown. Sol. in h. aeid, with evolution of chlorine. Powder colours s. acid red. C.e.: 31 protoxide and 69 peroxide of manganese. Thlefeld and Ilmenau in the Harz, and Sweden.*~~

~~*100. BraunitTEz, MnO, MnO,.*~~

~~*Tetragonal. P108°39’. Cl. P; brittle. H.=6 to 6:5; G.=4°7 to 4°9. Metallie lustre. Colour and streak dark brownish black. C.e.: 70 manganese and 30*~~

~~oxygen, generally with about 8 per cent. of siliea. Ihlefeld and St Mareel. Mareeline has violet tarnish.~~

~~101. Pyro.usiTe, MnO,.~~

~~Right prismatic ; oP 93°40'; generally radiating fibrous, or compaet earthy. Cl. oP; friable. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=4'7 to 5. Opaque; lustre silky to semi-metallie. Dark steel-grey to black ; streak blaek. Soils. B.B. infusible, loses oxygen and becomes brown. Sol. inh. aeid, with evolution of chlorine. C.e.: manga- // | nese 63, oxygen 37. Arndilly (Banffshire), (6 ./ Cornwall and Devon, Ilmenau, Ihlefeld, Franee, Hungary, Brazil. Used for re-~~

~~moving the green iron tint from glass ; henee~~

~~its name and that of Savon de verrier, Also '~~

~~for obtaining oxygen and ehlorine. Var- = vicite is a variety with 5 per eent. of water, ;~~

~~from Warwickshire. Fig. 294.~~

~~102. CREDNERITE, 3CuO, 2(MnO,Mn0O,).~~

~~Oblique. H.=4'5; G=5. Metallie. Black; streak brown. Thuringia,~~

~~108. PLATINERITE, PbO,.~~

~~Hexagonal. oP120°. Cl. indistinct ; brittle.~~

~~metallie. Iron-black; streak brown. 13°8. Leadhills.~~

~~104. Mrxtum, 2PbO, PbO,.~~

~~Pulverulent. H.=2to 3; G.=4°6. Dull. Colour bright red ; streak orange-yellow. B.B. fuses easily and reduced. Sol. in h. aeid. C.e.: lead 90°7, oxygen 9°38. Leadhills, Weardale in York- shire, Anglesea, Badenweiler, Siberia.~~

~~G. =9'4. Opaque; C.e.: lead 86°2, oxygen~~

5. Hyprovus OxIpDEs, 105. SAssoLINE, B,O;, H,O.

Anorthie. OP: ol' 75° 30'. Scaly six-sided plates. Cl. basal. Flexible and sectile. H.=1; G.=1'4 to 1°5. Translucent; pearly; white; taste bitter; greasy. Sol. in hot water. C.e.: boraeie aeid 56°45, water 43°55. Hot springs of Sasso, near Siena, Tuseany; and with sulphur in the crater of Voleano, Lipari Islands.

106, TuRGITE, 2Fe,03+H,0.

Massive and fibrous, also earthy. H.=5 to 6; G.=3°54 to 4°68. Lustre satin-like, also dull. Colour reddish black to bright red. Botryoidal surfaces lustrous like limonite. Opaque. C.c.: iron sesquioxide 94°7, water 5'3. B.B. deerepitates violently and yields water. Kerrera (Hebrides), Bogoslovsk (Urals), and many limonite localities, Fre- quently taken for limonite.

107. Drasporr, Al,O,, H,0.

Right prismatic; oP 129° 47'; usually thin foliated. Cl. braehydiagonal, perfect ; brittle. H. =6; G.=3°3 to 3°4. Vitreous; pearly on eleavage-planes. ' oa At piboesly greenish, or violet. .B. infusible, decrepi- 2 " tates, 'Insoluble. C.c. : alumina 85, earat Hi SO. 107): 15. Sehemnitz, Broddbo, Switzerland, Naxos, Chester, Massa- chusetts. Fig. 295.

108. GdruiTE, Fe,0;, HO.

Right prismatie ; oP 94° 53'; > also eolumnar, fibrous, or sealy. Cl. brachydiagonal, perfeet ; brit- x

tle. H.=5 to 5°5; G.=3°8 to4-4.

Opaque; or fine erystals trans-

parent, and hyaeinth-red ; lustre

adamantine or silky. Colour

yellow, red, or dark brown ; streak

~~*brownish yellow. B.B. beeomes*~~

~~*magnetic, diffieultly fusible. Sol.*~~

~~*in h. aeid. C.e.: peroxide of iron 90, water 10. Hoy (Orkney),*~~

~~*Achavarasdale (Caithness), Salis-*~~

~~*bury Crags (Edinburgh), Lost-*~~

~~*withiel, Clifton, Bristol, Przibram, Ameriea.*~~

~~*Fig. 297.*~~

~~*Siegen, Saxony, Urals, North*~~

~~*109. MANGANITE, Mv,03, H,O.*~~

~~*Right prismatic, sometimes hemihedric; oP (Jf) 99°40. prismatic (figs. 298 to 300); vertically striated; also columnar or fibrous. Hemitropes com-mon. Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect; brittle. H.-3°5 to 4; G.=—4°3 to 4:4, Opaque; metallic lustre. Steel-grey to iron-black; streak brown. B.B. infusible. Sol. in warm*~~

~~*Crystals*~~

~~*h. acid. C.e.: peroxide of manganese 89°9, water 10°1. Grandholm (Aberdeenshire), Cork, Upton Pyne (Exeter), Churchhill*~~

~~*(Somerset), Warwickshire, Thlefeld, Thuringia, Norway, Sweden, Nova Scotia.*~~

~~*5 =*~~

~~*‘ 1 1 ‘ ‘ 1 1 1 ‘ ‘ ‘ 1 ! 1 1 1 1 1 1 4*~~

~~*Sp ee ween ne*~~

~~*Fig. 299 (sp. 109). 110. LimoniTE, 2Fe,03+3H,0. Fibrous, botryoidal, and stalactitic, some-*~~

~~*¥*~~

~~*.,*~~

~~*¥ ’*~~

~~*ex*~~

~~*YS times earthy. H.=4°5 to 5°5; G.=3”4 to id aks 3°95. Opaque; lustre silky, glimmering, or dull. Brown, yellow- ish and blackish brown, often black on surface; streak ochre- yellow. In closed tube yields water and becomes red. B.B. in inner flame becomes magnetic, fusing toa glass. C.c.: peroxide of iron 85°6, water 14°4. Sandlodge (Shetland), Hoy (Orkney), Clifton, Bristol, Cornwall, Harz, Thuringia, Nassau, Styria, Carin- thia, Siberia, United States.*~~

~~*111. XANTHOSIDERITE, Fe,0;, 2H,O.*~~

~~*Fibrous, stellate, also asan ochre. H.~2°5. Silky or greasy, pitch-like or earthy. In needles, golden-yellow or brown-red; as an ochre, yellow, red, or brown; streak ochre-yellow. B.B. like limonite. C.c.: peroxide of iron 81‘6, water 18°4. Hoy (Orkney), — ee Kilbride, Wicklow, Imenau, Goslar, and Elbingerode in the Harz.*~~

~~*112. Brauxire, (8A1,0,, FeO), 2H,O.*~~

~~*Oolitic, concretionary, disseminated ; also earthy and clay-like. G.=2°55. White, grey, ochre-yellow, brown, and red. C.c.: alumina 50-4, peroxide of iron 26°1, water 23°5. From Beaux (or Baux) near Arles, and elsewhere in France. In grains in compact limestone. Pure varieties used for manufacture of aluminium.*~~

~~*113. Exvrasitz, U,0,;+2H,0.*~~

~~*Amorphous masses; resin-like. H.=3°‘5 to 4:5; G.=4 to 5. Reddish brown to black ; streak wax-yellow to olive-green. C.c. + 68°5 per cent. sesquioxide*~~

~~*of uranium, 10 of water, with impurities. Elias mine (near Joachimsthal).*~~

~~*114. Brucitr, MgO,H,O.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R 82° 22'; also foliated and botryoidal columnar. Cl. basal, perfect ; sectile; lamine flexible. H.=2;G.=2°3 to 2-4. Translucent, pearly. Colourless. B.B. infusible. Easily soluble in acids. C.c.: 69 magnesia, 31 water. Nemalite is afibrous variety with silky lustre. Swinaness and Quin Gio in Unst, Beresovsk in the Urals, Hoboken, New Jersey, Texas, Pennsylvania.*~~

~~*115. PyrocurolTE, MnO, H,0.*~~

~~*Foliated. H.=2°5. Pearly, white, but changing throwgh bronze to black. Flesh-red by transmitted light. i matrass becomes verdigris-green, finally black, yielding water. C.c. : protoxide of manganese 79°8, water 20°2. netite at Paisberg in Sweden.*~~

~~*116. GisBsITE (Hydrargillite), Al,O3;, 3H,O.*~~

~~*Hexagonal. C.c.: 65°5 alumina, 34°5 water. The crystals from Zlatoust in the Urals ; stalactites from Richmond in cee setts and Villa Rica in Brazil.*~~

~~*117. LimnitE, Fe,0;, 3H,O.*~~

~~*Massive in stalactites, also as a yellow ochre. Like limonitc, but*~~

~~*pitchy lustre. C.c.: peroxide of iron 74°8, water 25:2. dhill Botallack (Cornwall), Novgorod (Russia). ai ¥*~~

~~*118. Hyproratcitr, Al,O;, 3H,0+6Mg0, H,O+6H,0.*~~

~~*Hexagonal. Cl. basal, foliated, and somewhat fibrous. H.=2 ; G.=2°04. White, pearly. Greasy to the touch. Translucent. C.c.: alumina 16°8, magnesia 39°2, water 44. Zlatoust, Urals ; Snarum, Norway ; New York.*~~

~~*Sol. in h. acid. In veins in mag-*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~119. PrroauRITE, Fe,03;, 3H,0+6Mg0, H,0 +6H,O.~~

~~Hexagonal ; tables and scaly coatings. Lustre pearly to sub- metallic. Colour white to gold-yellow. Translucent. BoB i fusible, yields water. Sol. in h. acid, C.c.: peroxide of iron 23°9, magnesia 35°8, water 40°3. HaafGrunay in Shetland, Lang- ban in Wermland. _~~

~~120. GumuiteE, U,03, 3H,0.~~

~~In rounded lumps, resembling gum. H.=2°5 to 3; G. =3°9 to 4-2, Lustre greasy. Reddish yellow to yellowish brown. C.c.: 72 per cent. sesquioxide of uranium water 14°75, with impurities. Johann-Georgenstadt.~~

~~121. PstLoMELANE, (BaO, MnO) MnO,+3H,0, MnO, +3H,0.~~

~~Massive and botryoidal ; fracture conchoidal. H.=5‘5 to 6; G. = 41 to4°3. Biluish black. B.B. infusible. About 80 per cent. of oxide of manganese, with baryta, potash, and water. Hoy (Orkney), Leadhills, Cornwall, Devon, Schneeberg, Hmenau, Vermont in France. Wad is similar, but sometimes soft and light. Lead- hills, Cornwall, Harz, France.~~

~~122. CHALCOPHANITE, MnOZnO+2Mn0O, + 2H,0.~~

~~Hexagonal. R:R 114° 30’. Cl. basal. H.=2°5; G. =3°91. Metallic lustre. Blue-black; streak brown, dull. Opaque; flexible. C.c.: manganese binoxide 59°94, protoxide 6°6, zinc oxide 2177, water 11°6. Sterling Hill (New Jersey).~~

~~OXIDES OF NON-METALS. 1. Oxrpes or ArsEnio-ANTIMONY FaMILy (TEROXIDES).~~

~~123. ARSENOLITE, AsO3.~~

~~Cubic; in octahedra; also botryoidal, stalactitic. 3-7, Lustre vitreous. White; streak pale yellow. Translucent. Sublimes in closed tube, condensing in brilliant octahedra. C.c.: arsenic 75°76, oxygen 24°24. Cornwall, Andreasberg, Joachimsthal, Kapnik (Hungary), Nevada, California.~~

~~124. SENARMONTITE, SbO3.~~

~~*Cubic; in octahedrons. Cl. octahedral, also massive granular. H. =2 to 2°5; G. =5‘22 to5°3. Transparent; adamantine. White or grey. B.B. ininner flame fuses and colours the flame greenish blue. Sol. in h. acid. C.c.: antimony 83°56, oxygen 16°44. Endellion in Cornwall, Constantine in Algeria, Malaczka in Hungary.*~~

~~*125. VALENTINEITE, SbO,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic; oP187°. Cl. oP, perfect. H. =2°5 to 8; G. =5°5 to5-6. Translucent; adamantine to pearly. Yellowish white, brown- grey; streak white. Other properties and composition like senar- montite. Glendinning (Dumfriesshire), Przibram, Braunsdorf (Saxony), Harz, Hungary, Allemont (Dauphiné), Siberia.*~~

~~*126. BrsmITE, BiO3.*~~

~~*Massive, earthy. G.=—4°36. Grey, yellow, green. C.c.: bismuth 89°65, oxygen 10°35. St Agnes (Cornwall), Schneeberg, Siberia.*~~

~~*127. MoryspitTE, MoO .*~~

~~*Right prismatic; oP 136° 48’, Incapillary crystals, also powdery. H.=1 to 2; G.=4°5. Straw-yellow to yellowish white. C.c.: molybdenum 65°71, oxygen 84°29. With molybdenite at many of its localities.*~~

~~*128. TunasTITE, WO;.*~~

~~*Earthy. Soft yellow or yellowish green. Sol. in alkalies. C.c.: tungsten 79°38, oxygen 20°7. Cumberland and Cornwall, Monroe in Connecticut.*~~

~~*129. CERVANTITE, SbO3+SbO;.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. Acicular, generallyearthy. H.=4 to 5; G.=4°1. Isabel-yellow, reddish white. B. B. on charcoal reduced; un- altered per se. Sol. inh. acid. Harehill, Ayrshire; Endellion, &c., Cornwall; Cervantes, Spain; Felsobanya, Hungary; Mexico ; Canada; California.*~~

~~*130. ST1BIconITE, SbO,, H,O.*~~

~~*Massive, powdery. H.=4 to 5°5; G.—5°28. Pale yellow. In closed tube yields water. C.c.: antimony 74:9, oxygen 19°6, water 5°5. Goldkronach (Bavaria).*~~

~~*131. VoteErirE, SbO,;, 5H,0.*~~

~~*Massive and powdery. White. ness. O.c.: antimony 58°9, oxygen 19°38, water 21°8. in Algeria.*~~

~~*132. ZUNDERERZ (Tinder Ore).*~~

~~*In soft, flexible, tinder-like masses. Colour dark cherry-red to blackish red; lustre glimmering. Two varieties :—one, from Klaus- thal, contains antimony oxide 33, iron oxide 40, lead 16, sulphur 4; the other, from Andreasberg and Klausthal, seems to be a mixture A reales (82°04 per cent.), mispickel (13°46), aud pyrargyrite*~~

~~*133. TELLURITE.*~~

~~*Yellowish or whitish. Radiated, spherical masses. Gives the reactions of tellurous acid. Facsebaya and Zalathna, Colorado.*~~

~~*HH =1576. =*~~

~~*In tube yields water, below red- Constantine*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*134. TANTALIC OCHRE. Powdery; brown; vitreous. Pennikoja in Finland. 2. OXIDES OF CARBON-SILICON FAMILY (BINOXIDES). 135. QuaRTZ, SiO,. Hexagonal ; the purest varieties tetartohedral. The primary pyramid P has the middle edge=103° 34', and the polar edges=*~~

~~*7 \//*~~

~~*Fig. 301. Fig. 302. Fig. 303. Fig. 304. Fig. 3065.*~~

~~*133° 44%, and is often perfect. Very frequently it appears as a rhombohedron R (or }P), with polar edges=94° 15'. Crystals often of oP, P*~~

~~*or oP, P, 4P, the forms oPand 4P being combined , in an oscillatory manner, producing striz on the face of the prism (figs. 303, 304, 305); also oP, P, $(2P2), the last face appearing as a rhomb replacing the alter- nate angles between the two other forms (figs. 307, 308). They are prismatic, or py- Fig. 306. Fig. 307. ramidal, or rhombohedral, wheu P is divided into R and —R; the latter very often wanting. Many faces plagihedral, as in figs. 302, 306, 309. ; Twins common, with parallel axes, and either merely in juxtaposition (see fig. 178) or interpene- trating. Orystals often distorted, as in figs. 310 to 313. The crystals occur either single, attached, or imbedded, or in groups and druses. Most fre- quently granular, massive, fibrous, or columnar; also in pseudomorphs, petrifactions, and other forms. Cl. rhombohedral along R, very imper- fect; prismatic along oP, still more imperfect ; fracture conchoidal, uneven, or splintery. H.=7; G.=2°5 to 2°8; 2°65 in the purest varieties. Colourless, but more often white, grey, yellow, brown, red, blue, green, or even black. Lustre vitreous, inclining to resinous; transparent or translucent ; when impure almost opaque. B.B. Fie. 309. infusible alone; with soda effervesces, and melts a into a clear glass. Insoluble in acids, except the hydrofluoric; when pulverized, slightly soluble in solution of potash. C.c.:*~~

~~*Fig. 310. Fig. 311. Fig. 312. Fig. 313.*~~

~~*48°05 silicon and 51°95 oxygen; but frequently a small amount of the oxides of iron or titanium, of lime, alumina, and other substances,*~~

~~*The following are varieties :—*~~

~~*Rock-crystal: highly transparent and colourless; Dauphiné, Switzerland, Tyrol, Hungary, Madagascar, and Ceylon.*~~

~~*Amethyst ; violet-blue (from iron peroxide or manganese), and often marked by zigzag or undulating lines, and the colour dis- posed in clouds; Siberia, Persia, India, Ceylon, Brazil (white or yellow, named false topaz), Hungary, Ireland (near Cork), and Aberdeenshire. Wine-yellow (Citrin and Gold Topaz); the brown or Smoky Quartz (coloured by a substance containing carbon and nitrogen); and the black or Morion, from Siberia, Bohemia, Pennsylvania, and other places. Cairngorm Stone, black, brown, or yellow,*~~

~~*from Aberdeenshire mountains. The above are valued as ornamental stones ; those which follow are less so.*~~

~~*Rose Quartz : red inclining to violet-blue; Clashnarce Hill (Aber- deen), and Rabenstein in Bavaria. Milk Quartz: milk-white, and slightly opalescent; Greenland. Prase: leek and other shades of*~~

~~green; Saxony and Cedar Mountain in South Africa. Cat's-eye, inclosing asbestos: greenish white or grey, olive-green, red, brown, or yellow; Ceylon and Malabar. Avanturine, enclosing mica: yellow, red, green, or brown; India, Spain, and Scotland. Siderite: indigo or Berlin blue ; Golling in Salzburg.~~

~~Common Quartz, crystallized or massive, white or grey, also red, brown, &c., is a frequent constituent in many rocks. Some impure varieties are properly rocks, as:—~~

~~(1) Ferruginous Quartz, or Iron Flint: red, yellow, or brown; often associated with iron ores.~~

~~(2) Jasper: red, yellow, brown, also green, grey, white, and black ; alone, or in spots, veins, and bands (Ribbon or Egyptian Jasper); Urals, Tuscan Apennines, Harz, and many parts of Scotland.~~

~~(3) Lydian Stone, or Flinty Slate: black, grey, or white; has a splintery or conchoidal fracture, breaks into irregular fragments, and passes by many transitions into clay-slate, of which it is often merely an altered portion, as in Scotland; used as a touchstone for gold, and at Elfdal (Sweden) manufactured into ornaments.~~

~~(4) Hornstone or Chert: compact, conchoidal, splintery fracture; translucent on the edges; dirty grey, red, yellow, green, or brown; passes into flinty slate or common quartz; conmon in the Mountain limestone, Oolite, and Greensand formations; and often contains petrifactions, as shells, corals, and wood.~~

~~Other siliceous minerals seem intimate mixtures of quartz and opal, as:—~~

~~Flint: greyish white, grey, or greyish black, also yellow, red, or brown; sometimes in clouds, spots, or stripes ; semitrans- parent; lustre dull; fracture flat conchoidal; occurs chiefly in the Chalk formation, as in England, Ireland, Aberdeenshire, France, Germany, and other countries;~~

~~*sometimes in beds or vertical veins, often in irregular lumps or concretions, inclosing petrifactions, as sponges, echinoids, shells, or siliceons Jnfusoria. The colour is partly derived from carbon, or organic matter. Used formerly for gun-fiints, and still for the manufacture of glass and pottery; and cut into cameos or other ornaments.*~~

~~*Chalcedony : semitransparent or translucent ; white, grey, blue, green, yellow, or brown; stalactitic, reniform, or botryoidal, and in pseudomorphs or petrifactions ; Iceland, Faroes, Trevascus in Cornwall, Scotland, Hungary, Bohemia, Oberstein. Carnelian: chiefly blood-red, but also yellow, brown, or almost black ; India, Arabia, Surinam, and Siberia; also Bohemia, Saxony, and Scotland (Fifeshire). Plasma: leek- or grass-green, and waxy lustre; Olym- pus, Black Forest, India, and China.*~~

~~*Chrysoprase: apple-green; Silesia, and Vermontin NorthAmeerica. Moss-Agate and Heliotrope: dark green and dendritic (called Blood- stone when sprinkled with deep red spots); India, Siberia, Bohemia, Fassa Valley, island of Rum and other parts of Scotland.*~~

~~*136. TRIpYMITE, Si0,.*~~

~~*Hexagonal ; P middle edge 124° 4', polar edges 127° 35'. Single crystals, very minute hexagonal tables of OP, oP, but with the edges replaced by P and oP2, are rare (fig. 314). Mostly twinned*~~

~~*Fig. 315. . in double or (oftener) triple combinations (figs. 315 to 317). Cl. basal, indistinct; fracture con- choidal. H.=7; G.=2°282 to 2°326. Colonrless and transparent; vitreous, pearly on the base. B.B. like quartz. C.c.: 96 silica, with some a. alumina, magnesia, and iron peroxide, probably from the matrix. Discovered by Von Rath in the trachyte of San Cristobal, near Pachnea, in Mexico; also in the trachyte of Mont-Dore (Puy-de- Dome), the Drachenfels, and Hungary. Many opals, treated with solution of potash, leave crystals, as those from Zimapan, Kaschau, Silesia, and the cacholong from Iceland. Where such co are abundant, the opal becomes opaque or snow-white. Jenzec regards these as still another variety of silica.*~~

~~*Ba a*~~

~~*Fig. 317.*~~

~~*390*~~

~~*137. OPAL, 9SiO,, H,O to 38i0,, H,0.*~~

~~*Amorphous; fracture conchoidal; very brittle. H.=5°5 to 6°5; G.—2 to 2°2, Transparent to opaque; vitreous, inclining to resinous. Colourless, but often white, yellow, red, brown, green, or grey, with a beautiful play of colours. B.B. decrepitates and becomes opaque, but is infusible; in the closed tube yields water; almost wholly soluble in solution of potash. C.c.: silica, with 5 to 13 per cent. water. Most opals are mixtures of various miuerals.*~~

~~*The following varieties may be noticed:—(1) Hyalite, Glassy Opal, or Miiller's Glass: transparent, colourless, very glassy; small botry- oidal, or incrusting; Kaiserstuhl in the Breisgau, Schemnitz, Silesia, Moravia, Mexico, and other places. (2) Fire Opal or Girasol: trans- parent; brilliant vitreous lustre ; bright hyacinth-red or yellow ; Zimapan in Mexico, and the Faroes. (3) Noble Opal, semi-trans- parent or translucent; resinous, inclining to vitreous; bluish or yellowish white, with brilliant prismatic colours; most show double *efraction and are binaxal; in irregular masses or veins near Eperies in Hungary; Australia. (4) Common Opal: semitransparent, vitreous; white, yellow, green, red, or brown; Hungary, also Faroes, Iceland, the Giant's Causeway, and the Western Isles of Scotland. (5) Semi-opal: duller and less pellucid; Wood Opal or Lithoxylon: with the form and texture of wood distinctly seen; Hungary, Bohemia, aud other countries. (6) Menilite: compact, reniform; opaque and brown or bluish grey; Menilmontant, near Paris. (7) Opal Jasper: blood-red, brown, or yellow. (8) Cacholong: opaque, dull, glimmer- ing, or pearly, and yellowish or rarely reddish white; in velns or reniform and incrusting ; Faroes, Iceland, the Giant's Causeway. One variety is named Hydrophane, from imbibing water, and becoming translucent. (9) Siliccous Sinter: deposited from the Geyser and other hot springs; and Pearl Sinter: incrusting voleanic tufa at Santa Fiora in Tuscany (Fiorite), and in Auvergne.*~~

~~*138. Zircon, ZrOs, SiO, .*~~

~~*Pyramidal; P 84° 20'. Crystals, oP, P; often with 3P3; also oPoo, P; or wPo (s), oP (2), P (P), 3P8 (x), Poo (t), 4P4 (y), 5P5 (2), (fig. 318, also 86, 87, 585). Chiefly prismatic or pyramidal, and in rounded grains. Trans- parent to opaque; vitreous, often ada- mantine. Rarely white, generally grey, yellow, green, or fre- £ quently red and brown. B.B. loses its colour, but is jn- fusible. Not affected by any acid except * concentrated s. acid, after long digestion. C.c.: 66°3 zirconia and 33°7 silica, with : q 0 to 2 iron peroxide Fig. 318. Fig. 319 (sp. 188). as colouring matter. Miask, Arendal, Sweden, Belgium (at Nil-St- Vincent), Carinthia, Tyrol, Ceylon, and North America; in Scot- land, Scalpay in Harris (fig. 819), Lewis (Hyacinth), Sutherland, Ross. The colourless varieties are sold for diamonds. The more brilliantly coloured are named hyacinths, and are valuable gems.*~~

~~*SULPHIDES, SELENIDES, TELLURIDES, &c, 139. Pyrite, FeS,. :*~~

~~*Cubic ; semitesseral dominant (figs. 8320 to 323, also 67 to 77, and 26 to 34). Pentagonal-dodecahedron in excess; or striz, produced by oscillation of it with faces of the cube, visible. Often distorted, as in the cubo- octahedral twin (fig. 323). Sometimes massive and in pseudomorphs. Cl. cubic or octahedral, difficult; brittle, H.=6*~~

~~*Fig. 320.*~~

~~*Fig. 321. Fig. 322.*~~

~~*to 6; G.=4°9 to 5:2. Brass-yellow, often somewhat gold- yellow; streak brownish black, Sek broken emits ooh gs sulphur. In closed tube sulphur sublimes. B.B. on charcoal burns with blue flame, and odour of sulphurous acid. In inner flame fuses to magnetic bead. Sol. in n. acid, with deposition of sulphur. C.c.: iron 46°7, sulphur 53°3; often contains gold in visible grains, when broken. Common to rocks of allages. Tomnadashin,*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*Birnam, Scotland; Cornwall, England; Elba and Traversella; Peru; Rossie, Middletown, and Schoharie in U.S. Auriferous pyrites, Berezoff (Siberia), Adelfors (Sweden), Mexico. Used to be cut in facets and set asan ornament,*~~
~~÷~~

~~under the name of marca- sites; also for striking fire in the old firelocks, whence the name of firestone; now used for manufacture of sulphuric acid.~~

~~140. MarcasiTE, Fe8,.~~

~~Right prismatic; oP (MM) 106°5'. Crystals tabular, thin — . prismatic, or pyramidal. Fig. 323 (sp. 189). Twins very frequent, also cockscomb-like groups, or spherical and stalactitic. Cl. oP; fracture uneven; brittle. G.— 4°65 to 4°9. Greyish bronze- yellow to greenish grey, often with brown crust; streak greenish grey or brownish black. B.B., &c., like pyrite. Very prone to decomposition, being changed into green vitriol, which may be detected by the tongue. ; Spear Pyrites are twins like Fig. 324. Fig. 325. fig. 825; Littmitz, Przibram. Hepatie Pyrites or Leberkies, liver- brown, generally decomposing; Harz, Saxony, Sweden. Cockscomb Pyrites;. Derbyshire and the Harz, Kyrosite contains arsenic.~~

~~141. MispickEL, FeS,+FeAs.~~

~~Right prismatic; oP (Jf) 111° 12' (fig. 326). Twins common; also massive or columnar. Cl. oP; fracture = uneven; brittle. H.=5°5 to 6; G.=6 to 62. Silver-white to steel-grey; streak black. In closed tube yields first a red then a brown sublimate, lastly metallic arsenic. B.B. on char- coal fuses to a black magnetic globule. Sol. in n. acid, with separation of arsenious acid and sulphur. C.c.: 34°3 iron, 46°1 arsenic, 19°6 sulphur; some- times silver or gold, or 5 to 9 of cobalt.~~

~~Fig. 326. Cornwall, Freiberg, Zinnwald, Sweden, Franconia, America.~~

~~142, LeucopynriTE, Feds.~~

~~Right prismatic ; oP (d)122°26'; Poo (0) 51°20'. Crystals like~~

~~fig. 327; generally massive or columnar. Cl. basal;~~

~~fracture uneven ; brittle. H.=5 to 55; G.=7 to~~

~~7°4, Silver-white with darker tarnish; streak greyish~~

~~*black. B.B. emits strong smell of arsenic, and fuses d to a black magnetic globule. C.c.: iron 27°2,*~~

~~*arsenic 72°8 ; sometimes iron 32°2 and arsenic 66°8 ; always some sulphur, and often nickel and cobalt.*~~

~~*Fossum in Norway, Andreasberg, Styria, and Silesia. Spathiopyrite, from Bieber in Hesse, seems a variety.*~~

~~*148. CoBALTITE, CoS,+CoAs.*~~

~~*Cubic and hemihedral ; sometimes massive (figs. 67, 74). Cl. cubic, perfect ; brittle. H.=5°5; G.—6 to 6°3. Brilliant lustre. Pinkish silver-white; tarnishes yellow or grey; streak greyish black. B.B. with borax blue glass; evolves smell of arsenic. C.c.: cobalt 35°9, arsenic 44°9, sulphur 19°2. St Just in Cornwall, Tunaberg in Sweden, Skutterud in Norway, Querbach in Silesia.*~~

~~*144. GLaucoporg, (Co, Fe)S,+(Co, Fe)As, ,*~~

~~*Right prismatic; oP 112° 36'. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=—5; G.= 6. Lustre metallic. Greyish white; streak black. C.c.: cobalt 24°7, iron 11:9, arsenic 43°2, sulphur 20°2. Huasco in Chili.*~~

~~*145. SMALTINE, (Co, Fe, Ni) Aso.*~~

~~*Cubic ; generally like fig. 27; also reticulated and granular com- pact, Cl. octahedral; fracture uneven; brittle. H.=5°5; G.= 6°4to7°3. Tin-white to steel-grey, with dark or iridescent tarnish ; streak greyish black, Evolves odour of arsenic, when broken ot heated. C.c.: 71°4 arsenic, 28°6 cobalt; sometimes 3 to 19 iron, and 1 to 12 nickel, or 4 bismuth. Dolcoath and Redruth in Cornwall, Schneeberg, Annaberg, Tunaberg, Allemont, Chatham in Connecticut.*~~

~~*146. CHLOANTITE (White Nickel), NiAs.*~~

~~*Cubic ; generally fine granular or compact; fracture uneven ; brittle. H.=5°5; G.=6'4 to6°6. Tin-white, rapidly tarnishing black. In the closed*~~

~~*tube yields a sublimate of arsenic, and becomes copper-red. Gives odour of arsenic when broken. B.B. fuses with much smoke, becomes coated with crystals of arsenious acid, and leaves a brittle grain of metal. C.c.: 28°2 nickel, 71°8*~~

~~*arsenic, but often with cobalt. Schneeberg, Riechelsdorf, Alle- mont, Chatham in Connecticut.*~~

~~*Fig. 327.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*147, GersporFFiTL, NiS,+NiAs,.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 74, 30, 26). Cl. cubic, generally granular. H.=5‘5; G.=6°67. Lustre metallic. Silver-white to steel-grey, decrepitates in closed tube. B.B. fuses to a black slag; partially sol. in n. acid. C.c.: 85°2 nickel, 45°4 arsenic, and 19-4 sulphur ; sometimes with cobalt. Craignuir, near Loch Fyne, with 23 nickel and 6 cobalt. The Harz, Sweden, Spain, and Brazil.*~~

~~*148. ULLMANNITE, NiSb+NiS,.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 31, 29, 27); often tetrahedral, and in twins as in figs. 328, 8329. Cl. cubic, perfect; fracture uneven. H. =5 to 5‘5; G.=62 to 6°. Lead-grey to tin-white, often with iridescent*~~

~~*Fig. 329.*~~

~~*tarnish. B.B. fuses with dense fumes. Sol.inn. acid. C.c.: 27°4 nickel, 57°5 antimony, and 15°1 sulphur. Westerwald, Siegen, Harzgerode, Lolling (Carinthia), Lobenstein, and Bleiberg.*~~

~~*149. RAMMELSBERGITE, NiAs.*~~

~~*Right prismatic ; oP 123° to 124°. Chiefly massive, or in radiating and botryoidal aggregates) H.=5; G.=7‘2. Colour tin-white. Schneeberg, Reichelsdorf, and Wittichen in Baden.*~~

~~*150. HAveERiITE, Mn8,.*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 30, 30-26, 30-33-37). Crystals single or in spherical groups. Cl. cubic, perfect ; H.=4; G.=8-46. Reddish brown to brownish black ; streak brownish red. In closed tube yields sul- phur, and leaves a green mass, which is sol. in h. acid. OC.c.: 46 manganese and 54 sulphur. Kalinka in Hungary.*~~

~~*151. PyRRHoTITE (Magnetic Pyrites), Fe,S,.*~~

~~*Hexagonal; P 126° 48'. Crystals rare, sometimes hemihedral on zh, commonly massive or granular. Cl. oP, imperfect; brittle. H.= 3°5 to 45; G.=4°5 to 4°6. Colour bronze-yellow with pinchbeck- brown tarnish ; streak greyish black. Morcorlessmagnetic. O.c.:*~~

~~*e ⊣*~~

~~*6*~~

~~*x*~~

~~*)*~~

~~*ONN re A : a. Fig. 330. Fig. 331.*~~

~~*63°65 iron and 36°35 sulphur ; sometimes with nickel. Common in ey limestones and diorites of Scotland. Crystallized in above orms at Askaig, on Loch Shin, Sutherland ; Carnarvon, Cornwall, Fahlun, Bodenmais, Andreasberg. Distinguished by its colour and its solubility in h. acid.*~~

~~*152. LINNZITE, 2(Co, Cu)S + CoS, .*~~

~~*Cubic (figs. 29, 30); often twinned ; twin face 0; also massive. Cl. cubic; brittle. H.=5-5; G.=4°9 to 5, Silver-white, with a yellow tarnish ; streak blackish grey. B.B. fuses to a grey mag- netie globule, which is bronze-yellow when broken. C.e.: cobalt 43°2, copper 14°4, iron 3°5, sulphur 38°5. Bastnaes (Sweden).*~~

~~*158. SIEGENITE, CoS + Ni,S, (2).*~~

~~_Onbic ; generally in crystals like fig. 29; also massive. Colour silver-white, inclining to pink. Other features like linneite. C.c.: cobalt 40°8, nickel 14°6, sulphur 43°1. Miisen near Siegen, Mary- land, and Missouri. The American mineral has 30°5 of nickel.~~

~~154. Potypymirs, Ni,S,.~~

~~Cubic ; in minute octahedral crystals and flattened twins. Cl. cubic. H.=4°5; G.=4°81. C.c.: 89°45 nickel, 40°55 sulphur, but generally with 4 of iron. Westphalia. Saynite or grunaaite seems~~

~~to be a bismuthic and cobaltic variety ; it is from Grunau in Sayn-Altenkirchen.~~

~~| metallic arsenic, otherwise like smaltine.~~

~~391~~

~~155. Byricurire, 3NiS+2NiS,.~~

~~H.=3 to 35; G.=4°7. Ce: 54:23 nickel, 2°79 iron, 42°86 sulphur. From the Westerwald.~~

~~156. Horsacuire, 4Ye,S,+Ni,S,.~~

~~Crystalline masses. H.=4‘5; G.=4:43 to 4-7. Colour pinch- beck-brown ; streak black. (.c.: nickel 11°98, iron 41°96, sulphur 45°87. Horbach in the Black Forest.~~

~~157. SKUTTERUDITE, CoAsg.~~

~~Cubic (figs. 30, 26 with 33, 40) and granular. Cl. cubic; frac- ture conchoidal ; brittle. H.=6; G.=6-74 to 6°84. Tin-white to lead-grey. Lustre brilliant. In closed tube gives sublimate of C.c.: 79 arsenic, 21 cobalt. Skutterud, near Modum in N orway.~~

~~158. Ganena, PbS.~~

~~*Cubic ; crystals chiefly cube, octahedron, and rhombic dodeca- hedron ; rarely 20 and 202. Also massive and granular, compact, or laminar, and in pseudomorphs of pyromorphite and other minerals. Cl. cubic, very perfect; fracture scarcely observable; sectile. H.=2°5; G.=7‘2 to 7°6. Lead- grey, with darker or rarely iridescent tarnish; streak greyish black. B.B. decrepitates, fuses, and leaves a globule of lead. Sol. in un. acid, C.c.: 86°7 lead, and 13°3 sulphur ; but usually contains a little silver, | ranging from 1 to 8 or 5 parts in 10,000 ; rarely 1 per cent. or more. Some contain copper, zinc, or anti- mony, others selenium, and others (the “supersulphuret”’) probably free sulphur (2 to 8 per cent.). “Most common ore of lead in many countries. Leadhills, Pentland Hills, Linlithgow, Inverkeithing, Monaltrie, Tyndrum, Strontian, Islay, Orkney, Cornwall, Derbyshire (Castletown), Cumberland (Alston Moor), Durham (Allenhead), Wales, Isle of Man.*~~

~~*159. CUPROPLUMBITE, 2PbS+(Cu,S. Cubic. H.=2°5; G.=6‘4. Bluish grey. Chili. 160. BrxcrritE, 6PbS + Bi,S,.*~~

~~*Cubic. G.=7-27. Cl. cubic. Light to dark grey. Lustre brilliant. C.c.: sulphur 15, bismuth 20°6, lead 64:2, with copper 1°7. Grant (Park county, Colorado).*~~

~~*161. CLAUSTHALITE, PbSe.*~~

~~*Cubic; but massive granular. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=8‘2 to 8°8. Lead-grey ; streak grey. B.B. fuses, smells of selenium, colours the flame blue, stains the support red, yellow, and white, and volatilizes, except a small residue, withont fusing. C.c.: 72°7 lead, 27°3 selenium; but sometimes 11°7 of silver. Zorge, Lerbach, and Clausthal in the Harz. Tilkerodite, or Selen-Cobalt-Blei, containing 3 per cent. of cobalt, from Tilkerode, is a variety.*~~

~~*162. ZoRGITE.*~~

~~*Massive granular ; like clausthalite, but inclining to reddish, and often tarnished. There are four varieties. -(a) Selen-Blei-Kupfer : G.=7°4to7°5 ; 5PbSe+CuSe ; with 4 copper, 65 lead, 30 selenium. (0) The same, but with G.=5°6; 4Pb, 4Cu, 7Se ; with 15-8 copper, 48°4 lead, and 85 seleninm. (¢) Selen-Kupfer-Blet: with G.=7; 2PbSe + CuSe; with 8 copper, 57 lead, and 82 selenium. (d)2PbSe+ 9CuSe ; with 46-64 copper, 16°58 lead, and 36°59*~~

~~*selenium. : From Tilkerode and Zorge in the Harz, and near Gabel in Thuringia.*~~

~~*163. ALTAITE, PbTe.*~~

~~*Cubic and granular ; fracture uneven; sectile. H. =3 to 3°5; G. = 8*1to8-2. Tin-white to yellow, with yellow tarnish. B.B. colours the flame blue, fusing to a globule, which almost wholly volatilizes, C.c.: 61°9 lead and 38:1 tellurium. Zavodinski in the Altai, California, Colorado, and Chili.*~~

~~*164. Reprutuire (Copper Glance), Cu,S. Right prismatic. oP (0) 119° 35'; P (P) middle edge 125° 22'; ap (a) middle edge 65° 40'; 2P oo (d) middle edge 125° 40'; 2Pco (e)*~~

~~*Fig. 382.*~~

~~*middle edge 65° 48'. Crystals OP (s), oP (0), cPco (p) (figs. 388,*~~

~~*Fig. 333. Fig. 334. 334); with hexagonal aspect ; also twins; and massive. Cl. oP, imperfect ; fracture conchoidal or uneven; sectile. H.=2 to 3;*~~

~~*o92*~~

~~*G.=5°5 to 5°8. Rather dull; brighter on the streak. Blackish lead-grey, with a blue or other tarnish. B.B. colours the flame blue ; on charcoal in the oxygen flame spntters, and fuses easily ; in the red. flame becomes solid. With soda gives a grain of copper. Green solution in n. acid, leaving sulphur. C.c.: 79°8 copper, 20°2 sulphur. Fassnet Burn (Haddingtonshire), Ayrshire, Fair Island, near Redruth and Land's End in Cornwall, Saxony, Silesia, Nor- way, the Banat, Siberia, and the United States. Important copper ore.*~~

~~*165. STROMEYERITE, Cu,S+ Ags.*~~

~~*Right prismatic ; isomorphous with redruthite. Crystals rare ; usually massive ; fracture flat, very sectile. H. =2'5; G.=6'2 to 6°3. Bright. Blackish lead-grey. C.c.: 53:1 silver, 31°2 copper, and 15°7 sulphur, but*~~

~~*often indeterminate proportions of silver (3 to 53) and copper (80 to 75). Schlangenberg in Siberia, Rudelstadt in Silesia, and Catemo in Chili.*~~

~~*166. BERZELINITE, Cu,Se.*~~

~~*Crystalline, in thin dendritic crusts, and imbedded in calcite. Silyer-white with a black tarnish ; streak shining. In open tube gives a red sublimate of selenium, with white crystals of selenious acid. B.B. on charcoal fuses to a grey, slightly malleable bead, giving odour of selenious acid; with soda a grain of copper. C.c.: 61°5 copper and 88°5 selenium. Skrikerum in Smaland, Lerbach in the Harz.*~~

~~*167. CRooKESITE, (CuTI),Se.*~~

~~*In crystalline grains the size of peas. H.=2°5 to3; G.=6°9. Brittle. Lead-grey. Metallic. B.B. colours the flame intense green, C.c.: 45°76 copper, 3°71 silver, 17°25 thallium, 33°27 selenium. From Skrikerum.*~~

~~*168. EUKAIRITE, Cu,Se+ AgSe.*~~

~~*Massive and granular crystalline. Cuts with knife. Lead-grey ; streak shining. B.B. fuses to a brittle metallic grain. C.c.: 43°1 silver, 25°3 copper, and 31°6 selenium. Skrikerum, Atacama, Chili.*~~

~~*169. ARGENTITE, Ag,S.*~~

~~*Cubic. ©00; 0; 00; and 202 (figs. 29, 56). Crystals generally misshapen, with uneven or curved faces; in druses, or linear groups ; also arborescent, capillary, or in_crusts. Cl. indistinct ; fracture hackly ; malleable and flexible. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=7 to 7-4, Rarely brilliant, more so on the streak. Blackish lead-grey, often with a black, brown, or rarely iridescent tarnish. B.B. on charcoal fuses, intumescees greatly, and leaves a grain of silver. Sol. in con. n. acid. C.c.: 87 silver and 13 sulphur. Huel Duchy, Dolcoath, Herland, and near Callington in Cornwall ; Alvain Stirlingshire; Freiberg, Marienberg, Annaberg, Schneeberg, Johann-Georgenstadt, J oachimsthal, Schemnitz and Kremunitz, Kongsberg. Common ore at Guanajuato and Zacatecas in Mexico, in Peru, and at Blagodat in Siberia.*~~

~~170. AcANTHIITE, AgS.~~

~~Right prismatic. H.=2°5 ; G. =7°33. argentite, thus dimorphous. also at Copiapo.~~

~~171. Jatpaits, 8AgS+Cu,S.~~

~~Cubic; form 0. Cl. cubic; malleable. H.=2°5; G.=6°88. Dark- grey. Metallic lustre. C.c.: silver 71°78, copper 14°04, sulphur 14-2. Jalpa in Mexico.~~

~~172. LauTiTE (CuAg) Ass.~~

~~Granular. TIron-black. H.=3; G.=4°96. silver 12, arsenic 41°8, sulphur 17°86.~~

~~173. NAUMANNITE, AgSe.~~

~~In thin plates and granular. Cl. hexahedral, perfect. Malleable. H. =2°5; G.=8. Tron-black. Splendent. C.c.: 73 silver and 27 selenium, with 4°91 lead, Tilkerode.~~

~~174. HIussite, AgTe.~~

~~Cubic or anorthic (?); massiveand granular. Slightly malleable. H.=2‘5 to 3; G.=8‘1 to 8°45. Blackish pate to steel- grey. B.B. on charcoal fumes, fuses to a black grain with white spots, and leaves a brittle grain of silver. C.c.: 62°8 silver and 37°2 tellurium. Zavodinski (Altai), Nag- yag, Rezbanya, California, and Chili.~~

~~175. Prerzire, 2AgTe+AuTe.~~

~~Like hessite. Two varieties :— (a) with G. =8°72, containing 18 per cent. of gold, from Nagyag ; (0) with G. =9 to 9°4, and 24 to 26 of gold. Calaveras and Tuolumne in Cali- fornia, Colorado.~~

~~176. DiscrasITE, Ag,Sb; Ag,Sb; and Ag,gSb.~~

~~Right prismatic; P with polar edges 182° 42’ and 92°; oP 120°~~

~~*Iron-black. €.c. like Freiberg and Clausthal, on argentite;*~~

~~*C.c.: copper 28°3, Lauta, near Marienberg.*~~

~~*Fig. 335 (sp. 176). nearly (figs. 385, 336). Crystals short prismatic, or thick tabular,*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*and vertically striated (fig. 335) ; often in stellar groups (fig. 386); also massive or granular.*~~

~~*twins united by a face of oP; Cl,*~~

~~*basal and Po, distinct ; oP imperfect ; rather brittle, and slightly malleable. I= 3515 CG. =9°4 to 9°8. Silver-white to tin-white, with a yellow or blackish tarnish. B.B. fuses easily, fumes staining the charcoal white, and leaves a grain of silver. Sol. in n. acid. C.c.: 64 to 84 silver, and 36 to 16 antimony. Andreas- 3 berg, Allemont in Dauphiné, Spain, and Ar- Fig. 386. queras in Coquimbo (Chili). A valuable ore of silver. A variety from Chili contains 94°2 silver and 5°8 antimony, and is Ag,,Sb.*~~

~~*177. BueNDE, ZnS.*~~

~~*Cubic and tetrahedral (figs. 152, 158, 337). Twins remarkably common, united by a face of O, and several times repeated ; fre- quently massive and granular. Cl. 0, perfect; very brittle. H.= 3-5to 4; G.=3°9to4°2. Semitransparent to opaque ; adamantine and resinous. Brown or black, also red, yellow, and green, rarely colour- less or white. B.B. decrepitates, often violently, but only fuses on very thin edges. Sol. in con. n. acid, leaving sulphur. C.c.: 67 zinc and 33 sulphnr ; but generally in the darker varieties with 1 to 15 iron, 0 to 8 cadmium. Very abundant. Glen Gairn (bright yellow and highly phosphorescent), Leadhills, Tyndrum, Cornwall, Derby- shire, Cumberland, the Harz, Freiberg, ; Przibram, Schemnitz, Kapnik, North Fig. 387. America, Peru. Used for producing zinc vitriol and sulphur, and as an ore of zinc. Lithium, indium, thallium, and gallium have all been found in blende.*~~

~~*178. Wourrzire, 6ZnS+ Fes.*~~

~~*Hexagonal; oP, P, with well-marked horizontal strie. Cl. basal, and prismatic. H.=38°5 to 4; G.=3°9 to 4°1. Brownish black ; streak light brown. C.c. : like blende, which is thus dimor- phous. Oruro in Bolivia, and Przibram (radiated and cadmiferous).*~~

~~*179. GREENOCKITE, CdS.*~~

~~*Hexagonal, and generally hemimorphic. P 86°21'; 2P 123° 54'. Crystals 2P, OP, oP, P; or P, 2P, oP; attached singly. Cl. oP, imperfect; basal perfect. H.=8 to 3°5; G.=4°8 to 4°9. Trans- lucent; brilliant resinous, or adaman- tine. Honey- or orange-yellow, rarely brown; streak yellow. B.B. decrepitates, and becomes carmine- red, but again yellow when cold ; fused with soda forms a reddish brown coating on charcoal. Sol. in h. acid. C.c.: 77°6 cadmium, and 22°4 sulphur. Bishopton in Renfrewshire, Przibram, and Friedensville in Pennsylvania.*~~

~~*180. ALABANDINE, Mns.*~~

~~*Cubic; O and Oc ; usually massive and granular. Cl. hexa- hedral, perfect ; fracture uneven ; rather brittle. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=3°9 to 4. Opaque ; semi- metallic. Iron-black to dark steel- grey, brownish black tarnish ; streak dark green. B.B. fuses on thin edges to a brown slag. Sol. in'h. acid. C.c.: 638 manganese and 37 sulphur. Nagyag, Kapnik, Alabauda in Caria, Mexico, and Brazil.*~~

~~*181. Mruuerite, Nis.*~~

~~*Hexagonal rhombohedral; R 144° 8'; in fine acicular prisms of wP2, R. Brittle. H. =3°5; G.=4°6 (or 5°26 to 5°65). Brass- or bronze-yellow, with a grey or iridescent tarnish. B. B. fuses easily to a_blackish metallic globule, which boils and sputters. In nitro-hydrochloric acid forms a green solution. C.c.: 64°4 nickel and 35°6 sulphur. Morven (Argyllshire), Chapel (Fife), Ayrshire, near St Austell in Cornwall, at Merthyr-Tydvil, J ohann-Georgen- stadt, Joachimsthal, Przibram, Camsdorf, Riechelsdorf, Pennsyl- vania.*~~

~~*182, PENTLANDITE (Eisennickelkies), 2FeS+NiS.*~~

~~*Cubic; massive and granular ; fracture uneven ; brittle. H.= 3°5 to 4; G.=4°6. Light pinchbeck-brown, with darker streak. Not magnetic. B.B. acts in general like pyrrhotite ; the roasted powder forms with borax in the red. flame a black opaque glass. C.c.: 36 sulphur, 42 iron, and 22 nickel ; but mixed with pyrrhotite and chalcopyrite. Lillehammer in southern Norway. Inverarite, 5FeS + NiS, with 11 of nickel, from near Inveraray, is a variety.*~~

~~*183, NIcKELITE (Copper Nickel), NiAs.*~~

~~*Hexagonal ; P 86° 50'. Crystals oP, OP; rare. Arborescent, reniform, and massive ; fracture conchoidal and uneven ; brittle. H.=5°5;G.=7°5to7°7. Light copper-red, with a blackish tarnish. It forms no sublimate in the closed tube. B.B. fuses with strong*~~

~~*Fig. 338.*~~

~~*Mer LER AL OGY*~~

~~*fumes to a White, brittle, metallic globule. C.c.: 43°6 nickel and 56°4 arsenic. HIlderston in Linlithgow, Pibble in Kirkcudbright, Leadhills, Pengelly and Huel Chance in Cornwall, Freiberg, Schnee- berg, Joachimsthal, Sangerhausen, Andreasberg, Chatham in Con- necticut. Used as an ore of nickel.*~~

~~*184. BREITHAUPTITE (Antimonial Nickel), NiSb.*~~

~~*Hexagonal; P 86° 56'. Crystals, thin striated hexagonal tables of OP, oP. H.=5; G.=7'5to7°6. Brilliant. Light copper-red, generally with violet tarnish. B.B. fumes, but fuses with great difficulty. C.c.: 32°2 nickel and 67°8 antimony. Andreasberg.*~~

~~*185. STANNITE (Tin Pyrites), 20uS, SnS,+2(FeS, ZnS)+SnS,.*~~

~~*Cubic ; in cubes very rare, generally massive and granular. Cl. hexahedral, imperfect; fracture uneven or small conchoidal ; brittle. H.=4; G.=4°3 to 45. Steel-grey; streak black. C.c: 26 to 32 tin, 24 to 30 copper, 5 to 12 iron,*~~

~~2 to 10 zinc, and 30 sulphur. Huel Rock near St Agnes, St Michael's Mount, and Carn- brea in Cornwall; Zinnwald. Bell-metal ore.~~

~~186. STERNBERGITE, (AgS +2FeS)FeS,.~~

~~Right prismatic; P middle edge 118°. Crystals usually thin tabular; in twins, or in fan-like and spheroidal groups. Cl. basal, erfect ; sectile, and flexible in thin sth H.=1 to-1°5; G.=4°2 to 4°25. Dark pinchbeck-brown, often a violet-blue tarnish; streak black. C.c.: 34°2 silver, 35:4 iron, and 30°4 sulphur. Joachimsthal, Schneeberg, and Johann -Georgenstadt. Flexible~~

~~Fig. 339.~~

~~Sulphuret of Silver, from Hungary and Freiberg, is identical. Frie- | seite, Ag.Fe,S,, in twins (fig. 339), is a variety.~~

~~187. RITTINGERITE, AgAs.~~

~~Oblique prismatic. oP 126° 18'; oPo and OP. Cl. basal ; fracture conchoidal; brittle. H.=2°5to 3; G.=—5°63. C.c.: silver 57°7, the remainder being arsenic, with someselenium. Joachimsthal, Silesia, Felsébanya in Hungary.~~

~~188. CovELLINE, CuS.~~

~~Hexagonal. Crystals oP, OP; rare; usually reniform and granu- lar, Cl. basal; sectile. Thin lamine flexible. H.=1°5to2;G.= 3°8 to 4:6. Resinous. Indigo-blue; streak black. B.B. burns with blue flame. Sol. in n.acid. C.c¢.: 66°7 copper, 33°3 sulphur. Cairnbeg in Cornwall, Vesuvius, Leogang (Austria), Chili, Angola, New Zealand, and Victoria.~~

~~189. CHALCOPYRITE (Copper Pyrites), CuS+FeS.~~

~~Pyramidal ; and sphenoidal hemihedric ; $P (P) with polar edges 71° 20'; oP. Crystals generally small and deformed; twins very common, like fig. 340. Po(b) 89° 10', 2Po(e) 126° 11', OP (a), P (fig. 89). Most commonly compact and disseminated; also botryoidal and reniform. Cl. pyramidal 2P0 ; some- times rather distinct ; fracture conchoidal or uneven. H.=3°'5~~

~~*to 4; G.=4‘1 to 4:3. Brass-yellow, often with a gold-yellow or iridescent tarnish (peacoek copper ore) ; streak greenish black. B.B. on chareoal becomes darker or black, and on cooling red; fuses easily to a steel-grey globule, whieh at length becomes magnetic, brittle, and greyish red on the fractured surface ; with borax and soda yields a grain of copper; moistened with h. acid, colours the flame blue. C.c. essenti- ally 1 atom eopper, 1 atom iron, and 2 atoms sulphur; with 34°5 copper, 30°5 iron, and 35 sulphur. The most abundant ore of copper.*~~

~~*Fig. 340.*~~

~~*In Kirkeudbright- shire and Wigtownshire, Tyndrum in Perthshire, Inverness-shire, Lairg in Sutherland, Shetland, Anglesea (Parys mine), Derbyshire, Staffordshire, Cumberland, Gunnislake (Devonshire), St Austell (Cornwall), Wicklow, Falun, Roraas, Freiberg, Mansfeld, Goslar,*~~

~~*Lauterberg, Miisen, Siberia. It is distinguished from pyrite by yielding readily to the knife, by its tarnish, and by forminga green solution in n. acid.*~~

~~*190. BornitTE (Purple Copper), 3Cu,S, FeSs.*~~

~~*Cubic. Crystals o0c0,and oOo, O; but rare, and generally rough or uneven; also twins. Mostly massive. Cl. octahedral ; fracture conchoidal ; slightly brittle; sectile. H.=3; G.—4°9 to 5‘1. Colour between eopper-red and pinehbeck-brown, with tarnish at first red or brown, then violet or sky-blue ; streak greyish black. B.B. acts like chalcopyrite. Soluble in con. h. acid, leaving sulphur. C.c.: 55°6 copper, 16°4 iron, and 28 sulphur. Crystals near Redruth and St Day in Cornwall; massive at Killarney in Ireland ; also Norway, Sweden, Mansfeld, Silesia, Tuscany, and Chili. An ore of copper.*~~

~~*191. CuBan, CuS, Fe,8,. Cubic. H.=4; G.=4°1. Bronze-yellow; streak bronzc-yellow and black. Barracanao in Cuba, Tunaberg and Kafveltorp in Sweden.*~~

~~*393*~~

~~*192. DoMEYKITE, Cu,As.*~~

~~*Botryoidal or massive ; fracture uneven ; brittle. H.=3 to 3°53 G.=7 to 7°5. Tin- or silver-white, inclining to yellow, with an iridescent tarnish. Not affeeted by h. acid. C.c.: 71°63 copper and 28°37 arsenic. Calabazo in Coquimbo, and Copiapo in Chili. Con- durrite, massive, seems an impure variety ; from Condurrow mine and near Redruth (Cornwall). Algodonite from Lake Superior, Whit neyite from Mexico, and Darwinite (88 copper) are also identical or similar.*~~

~~*193. MELonirTE, Ni,Te,.*~~

~~*Hexagonal; minute tabular crystals, foliated and granular. Metallie lustre. Reddish white; streak dark grey. C.e.: nickel 21, silver 4°1, tellurium 73-4. Stanislaus and Calaveras (California).*~~

~~*194. SytvaniTE, AgTe,+AuTe,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 55° 21'. oP 94° 26'; — P°a 19° 21'; P®co 62° 43'. Crystals small, short acicular, and oftentwinned and grouped in rows like letters; sectile, but friable. H.=1°5 to 2; G.=7°99 to*~~

~~*Fig. 341. 8°33. Steel-grey to silver-white, and pale bronze-yellow. C.c.: 59°6 tellurium, with 0°6 to 8°5 antimony, 26°5 gold (in some 30), and 13°9 silver, with 0°2 to 15 lead. Offenbanya (Graphic Tellurium), Nagyag (Yellow Tellurium), and California.*~~

~~*195. NacyaaiTe, Blaek Tellurium. Pyramidal. P 137° 52'; Poo 122° 50'; andOP (fi*~~

~~*Fig. 342.*~~

~~*tabular, rare; in general in thin plates or foli- ated. Cl. basal, perfect; sectile; thin lamine flexible. H.=1 to 1°5; G.=6°85 to 7°2. Splendent. Blackish lead-grey. C.c.: 51 to 63 lead, 6 to 9 gold, 1 eopper and silver, 13 to 32 tellurium, 3 to 12 sulphur, and 0 to 4°5 antimony. Nagyag and Offenbanya in Tran- sylvania.*~~

~~*196. MALDONITE, Au,Bi.*~~

~~*H.=15 to 2; G.=82 to 9°7. Colour _*‘ silver-white, with black tarnish. C.c.: gold Fig. 348 (sp. 195). 64°5, bismuth 35°5. Occurs in granite veins at Maldon in Victoria.*~~

~~*197. CHILENITE, Ag, Bi.*~~

~~*Minute plates of metallic lustre. Silver-white, but tarnished red or yellow. Silver 83°9, bismuth 1671. From the mine San Autonio near Copiapo in Chili,*~~

~~*198. CINNABAR, HgS.*~~

~~*Hexagonal and rhombohedral; R71° 48’. R(x), OR (0), oo R (m). 2R (<) (fig. 344). Crystals rhombohedral; also granular, compact, and earthy. Cl. oR, perfect; fracture uneven and _ splintery ; seetile. H.=2 to 2°5; G.8 to 8°2. Trans | parent, with circular polarization. Adaman- tine. Coclineal-red; streak searlet. C.e.: 86°2 mercury, 13°8 sulphur. Idria in Carniola, Almaden in Spain, Wolfstein in Bavaria, ae Saxony, Hungary, Tuscany, China, Cali- Pig. 344. fornia, Mexico, Peru. Chief ore of mercury. Also a pigment. Fepatie Cinnabar is a bituminous mixture.*~~

~~*199. TIEMANNITE, HgSe.*~~

~~*Fine granular ; brittle. H.=2°5; G.=7:1to7‘4. Brilliant. Dark lead-grey. C.c.: 75 merenry, 25 selenium. Clausthal and Zorge.*~~

~~*200. LERBACHITE, (PbHg)Se.*~~

~~*Granular and massive. G.=7°& to 7°88. Colour steel-grey to iron-black. Brittle. Lerbach, Tilkerode in the Harz.*~~

~~*201. GUANAJUATITE, Bi,Se;.*~~

~~*Massive; granular; foliated and fibrous. Ii.=2°5 to 3; G. =6525),*~~

~~*Blue-grey; streak grey and shining. Metallic; soft and malleable. C.c.: selenium 34:3, sulphur ‘7, bismuth 65. Santa Rosa (Guana-*~~

~~*juato, Mexico). XVI. — 50*~~

~~202. CotorapoiTE, HgTe. Massive and granular. H.=8; G.=8°63. Metallic. Tron-black. Conchoidal fracture. C.c.: 61 merenry, 39 tellurium. Colorado.~~

~~208. MoLyBpENITE, Mos.~~

~~Hexagonal (?). Crystals OP, «P; and OP, oP,P. Generally scaly. Cl. basal, perfect; sectile and flexible. Feels greasy. H. =1tol‘5; G.=4°6 to 4:9. Lead-grey with red tinge; grey streak on paper, greenish on porcelain. B.B. colours flame siskin-green; on charcoal yields sulphurous fumes, : and forms a white coating; in warm nitrochloric acid a greenish, and in boiling s. acid a blue pa C.c.: 59 molybdenum, 41 sulphur. i In ccopatitar" Uenewsores, and in Fig. 345. } granites in Sutherland, Ross, Aberdeen, Argyll, and Kirkcudbright; Shap in Westmorcland, Caldbeckfell in Cumberland, Arendal, Zinnwald, Mont Blanc, Maine, Connecticut, Yeain Victoria. Used~~

~~for preparing blue carmine, for colouring porcelain. 204. Laurits, (RuQs),83.~~

~~Cubic. Crystals O, 200; 003, 000. Ol. octahedral. H. = 75: G.=6°99. Metallic, bright. Dark iron-black. Powder grey. Brittle. O.c.: ruthenium 65°18, osmium 3°08, sulphur 31°79.~~

~~From platinum grains, in Borneo and Oregon.~~

~~205. ReaLcAR, Ass.~~

~~Oblique prismatic. oP (Af) 74° 26'; Pec (n) 182° 2', oo P92 (7) 113° 16'. Crystals (fig. 346) generally prismatic; sometimes massive. Cl. basal, also clino- diagonal; fracture splintery ; sectile. H.=1‘5 to 2; G.=3‘4 to 3°6. Trans- parent to opaque; resinous. Aurora-red ; streak orange-yellow. C.c.: arsenic 70, sulphur 30. Nagyag, Felsobanya, St Gotthard, Vesuvius.~~

~~206. ORPIMENT, AS,S3.~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 117° 49'. Fre- quently foliated. Cl. brachydiagonal ; striated vertically ; sectile aud flexible. H.=1'5 to 2; G.=38'4 to 35. Semi-transparent; resinous to pearly. Citron- yellow and orange-yellow. C.c.: arsenic 61, sulphur 39. Kapnik, Andreasberg, Solfatara, Zimapan in Mexico.*~~

~~*207. DIMORPHITE, AS.S3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. H.=1°5; G.=3°58. Orange-yellow. Solfatara.*~~

~~*208. STIBNITE, Sb,S3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. P polar edges 109° 26' and 108° 21'; Crystals (fig. 347) generally prismatic. Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect ; sectile. H.=2 5 G.=4'6 to 4'7. Brilliant lead-grey, often tarnished. C.c.: antimony 71°8, sulphur 28°2. Maisley, Banffshire; Harehill, Ayrshire; Glendinning, Dumfriesshire ; Endellion and Padstow, Cornwall ; Wolfs- berg, Harz; Przibram, Schemnitz, Auvergne, Spain, America, Melbourne. Chief ore of antimony.*~~

~~*209. BisMUTHINE, Bi,S.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 91° 30'. Crystals prismatic, striated; also granular and > foliated. Cl. brachydiagonal; sectile. Fi H. =2 to2'5; G.=6'4t06°6. Lead-grey. ig. 347 (sp. 208). C.c.: 81-2 bismuth, 18°8 sulphur. Caldbeckfell (Cumberland), Redruth (Cornwall), Riddarhyttan and Bastnaes (Sweden), Alten- berg, Haddam (Connecticut), Ballarat (Victoria), Bolivia.*~~

~~*210. FRENZELITE, Bi,Seg, or 2Bi,Se3 + Bi,S3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic; oP 90°. Needle crystals, and massive. Cl. brachydiagonal. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=6°25. Bluish grey; streak greyish black, shining. Lustre metallic. Malleable. C.c.: bismuth 67°38, selenium 24°13, sulphur 6°6. Guanajuato (Mexico).*~~

~~*Fig. 346 (sp. 205).*~~

~~*Servia,*~~

~~*oP 90° 54',*~~

~~*SULPHUR SALTS.*~~

~~*211. GUEJARITE, Cu,S + 2Sb,8;. Right prismatic. oP 101° 9%. G.=5‘03. Steel-green, with bluish streak. C.c.: copper 15°5, anti- mony 58°5, sulphur 25. Guejar in*~~

~~*Sierra Nevada. 212. Miareyrire, AgS+Sb8,. Oblique prismatic, C 81° 36’. P 90° 53’;-P 59° 59’. Crystals | pyramidal, or tabular (fig. 348); ~ massive; sectile. H.=2 to 2°5; G. =5‘2 to 5°3. Metallic adamantine.*~~

~~*Cl. brachydiagonal. H.=3‘5;*~~

~~*R*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*Fig. 348 (sp. 212). Blackish lead-grey to steel*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*grey; streak cherry-red. C.c.: 87 silver, 41 antimony, 22 sulphur. Freiberg, Przibram, Potosi.*~~

~~*213. MorococnireE (Silber- Wismuth Glanz), AgS + BiSs.*~~

~~*Massive. Colour grey; streak light green. G.=6°92. C.c.: silver 28-3, bismuth 54°7, sulphur 17. Morococha in Peru.*~~

~~*214. SARTORITE, PbS + As,S3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. Crystals slender; oP 123°20’. Cl. OP. H.=3; G. =5°39. C.c.: lead 42°68, arsenic 30°93, sulphur 26°39. Binnen- thal in Switzerland.*~~

~~*215. ZINCKENITE, PbS+SbS3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP (d) 120° 39; Poo (0) 150° 36’ (fig. 349). Crystals acicular; vertically striated, and twinned KO 3 or 6. Sectilee H.=38 to 85;*~~

~~*G.=5°3 to 5°35. Steel-grey to lead-grey ; with blue tarnish. C.c.: lead 359, antimony 42, sulphur 22°1. Wolfsberg.*~~

~~*216. EMPLECTITE, CuS + Bi,8,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. Tin-white. Saxony, Wiirtemberg, yt and Copiapo. Fig.*~~

~~*217. WoLFSBERGITE, Cu,S +Sb,S3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 135° 12'; oP2 111° Crystals tabular ; also fine granular. Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect ; fracture conchoidal oruneven. H.=3°'5; G. =4°748, Lead-grey to iron-black, sometimes iridescent ; streak black, dull. C.c.; 25°4 copper, 49 antimony, and 25°6 sulphur. Wolfsberg.*~~

~~*218. BERTHIERITE, FeS, SbS3.*~~

~~*Massive ; columnar or fibrous, with indistinct cleavage. H.= 2°3; G.=4 to 4°38. Dark steel-grey, reddish. Tintagel and Padstow in Cornwall, Auvergne and Anglars (Creuse) in France, Braunsdorf in Saxony. In France used as an ore of antimony.*~~

~~*219. PLAGIONITE, Pb,Sb3.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 72° 28'.*~~

~~*(6)*~~

~~*P 184° 80' and 142° 3'; -2P*~~

~~*120° 49'. Crystals thick, tabu- lar (fig. 350), minute, and in o" druses. Cl. — 2P, perfect; brittle. H.=2°5; G.=5'4. Blackish lead-grey. C.c.: 41 lead, 38 antimony, and 21 sulphur. Wolfsberg. 220. KLaprorHITE, 3Cu,S + 2Bi,S,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic; long striated crystals; oP=107°. Wittichen, Fig. 350 (sp. 219). Bulach. Schirmerite, from Colorado, 3(Ag,Pb)S + 2Bi,S3, with G. =6'74, is similar.*~~

~~*221. BinniTE, 3CuS + 248,83.*~~

~~*Cubic. Typical forms 00, 202; 0, 00, 606; 404, 10010 303. H.=4:5; G.=4°48. Metallic. Black. Binnen.*~~

~~*222. JAMESONITE, 3PbS + 28b,S3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic; oP 101° 20'. Crystals oP, oP, long- prismatic, parallel or radiating. Cl. basal perfect, oP and brachy- diagonal imperfect; sectile. H.=2 to 25; G.=5'5 to57. Steel- grey to dark lead-grey. B.B. decrepitates, fuses easily, and wholly volatilizes except a small slag. Sol. in warm n. acid. C.c.: 44°5 lead, with 2 to 4 iron, 34°9 antimony, and 20°6 sulphur, Cornwall, Estremadura, Hungary, Siberia, and Brazil.*~~

~~*223. DuUFRENOYSITE, 2PbS + As,§3.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 93° 39'. Generally in thick rectangular tables. H. =3; G.—5°56. Lead-grey. Brittle. Binnen, St Gotthard.*~~

~~*224. FRIESLEBENITE, 5(Pb, Ag,)S + 2Sb,83.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 87° 46'. ooP 119° 12'; P®co 31°41' (fig. 851)*~~

~~*| in prisms with curved reed-like faces, and*~~

~~*strong vertical strie. Twins intersecting ; also massive. Cl. oP, perfect; fracture con- choidal or uneven ; rather brittle. H.=2 to 25; C.=6'2to 64. Steel-grey to dark lead- grey. C.c.: 22°5 silver, 32°4 lead, 26°8 anti- mony, and18°3 sulphur, Freiberg (Saxony), a Hiendelaencina (Spain).*~~

~~*225. PYRARGYRITE, 8Ag,S+5Sb,S3.*~~

~~*Hexagonal rhombohedral; R (P) 108° 42'; —4R 187° 58'; OR; —2R ®; R8; oP2(s); and oR (/). Crystals prismatic (fig. 352); twins common, of various kinds; also massive, dendritic, oriuvesting. Cl. R, rather perfect; : fracture conchoidal to uneven and splintery; Fig. 351 (sp. 224). sectile. H.=2 to 2:5. Crimson-red to blackish lead-grey ; streak cochineal to cherry-red. Huel Brothers and Huel Duchy in Cornwall, Andreasberg, Freiberg, Johann-Georgenstadt, Annaberg,*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*Schneeberg, Marienberg, Przibram, Schemnitz and Kremnitz, Kongsberg, Mexico, Nevada, &c.*~~

~~*226. ProusTITE, 3Ag,S+ As,S,.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral, like pyrargyrite, except R 107° 50' (fig. 353). 008 tu Sila transparent to trans- lucent on the edges. Cochineal to crimson-red. C.c? 65°5 silver; 15°1 arsenic, and 19°4 sulphur. Streak aurora-red. B.B. arsenical odour, and difficultly reduced to metallic silver. At the same localities as pyrar- gyrite; both are valu- able ores of silver. Red orpiment has a_ lower specific gravity, and yellow streak; cinnabar volatilizes before the blowpipe.*~~

~~*227. BOULANGERITE, 3PbS+SbS,.*~~

~~*Fine granular, columnar, radiating, or fibrous ; slightly sectile. H.=3; G.=5'8 to 6. Silky, metallic. Blackish lead-grey, with darker streak. B.B. like jamesonite. C.c.: 59 lead, 22°8 antimony, and 18°2 sulphur. Moliéres in France, Oberlahr (Rhenish Prussia), Lapland, and Siberia. Plumbostib or Embrethite, from Nertchinsk, is only a variety.*~~

~~*228. KoBELLITE, 3PbS, Bi,S;+3PbS, Sb,S,.*~~

~~*Radiated columnar; soft. G.=6'2to 6°3. C.c.: 58 lead, 20 bis- muth, 10 antimony, and 17 sulphur. HIvena in Nerike (Sweden).*~~

~~*229. WITTICHENITE (Cupreous Bismuth), 3CuS + Bi,S,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic ; in tabular crystals like bournonite. Wittichen in the Black Forest.*~~

~~*230. BovRNonITE (3CuS + Sb,S,) + 2(3PbS + Sb,8,).*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP (d) 93° 40'; Poo(n) 96° 13'; Boo (e) 92° 34'; OP ®; Poo (s); wPoo(k) (fig. 354). perfect ; fracture uneven to conchoidal; rather brittle. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=5°7 to 59. Lustre brilliant metallic. Steel- grey. C.c.: 42°4 lead, 13 copper, 25 antiniony, and 19°6 sulphur. Redruth and*~~

~~Beeralston; Harz (Neudorf), Brauns- dorf, Kapnik, Servoz; Alais and Pontgi- baud in France.~~

~~Wolchite from Wolch in Carinthia is only a variety.~~

~~231. AIKINITE (WNeedle-ore), + Bi,S;) +3(CuS + Bi,S,). . _ Right prismatic; long thin crystals d imbedded in quartz, often bent or broken; : vs rather brittle, H.=2°5; G.=6-7t06°8, Fig. 354 (sp. 230). Blackish lead-grey or steel-grey, with a brownish tarnish. C.c.: 36 lead, 11 copper, 36 bismuth, and 17 sulphur. Berezoff (Siberia), Georgia.~~

~~232. StyLoryp, 3(CuAgFe)S + Sb,§,.~~

~~a prismatic. OP 92° 30'. H.=3;G.=4'8. Black. Copiapo,~~

~~ili.~~

~~233. ANNIVITE, 4CuS +(As,S3, Sb.S5, Bi,S,).~~

~~Massive, similar to the foregoing. From Anniver in Valais. Studerite is similar, but with 15°5 of antimony.~~

~~234. JULIANITE, 3Cu,S+As,S3._~~

~~Cubic. G.=5°12. Metallic. Reddish grey. Silesia.~~

~~235. Menrcuinitr, 4PbS +Sb,9,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 72° 8', oP 140° 24'; P®c 70°, small, acicular, chiefly of oP*o, fibrous. Saxony.~~

~~236. JoRDANITE, 4PbS + As,Sz. Right prismatic; oP 123° 29', Streak black. G.=6°38. 18°6. Binnen and Nagyag. 237. TETRAHEDRITE (Fahlerz), 4Cu,8 +Sb,85.~~

~~0 202~~

~~~o> oO, 7s (figs. Twins (figs. 164, 207); generall Cl. octahedral ; fracture conchoidal ; brittle. H. aend~~
~~~

~~*y*~~

~~*ee oe ee*~~

~~*Fig. 358 (sp. 226).*~~

~~*Fig. 352 (sp. 225).*~~

~~*Cl. brachydiagonal, im-*~~

~~*&*~~

~~*2(3PbS*~~

~~*Rudelstadt in*~~

~~*Crystals “2, coP%, oP; rare; mostly H. =3; G.=6‘4. Bottino in Tuscany, Schwarzenberg in*~~

~~*Cl. brachydiagonal, perfeet. C.c.: lead 68°9, arsenic 12°5, sulphur*~~

~~*Tesseral and tetrahedral. In crystals ss A*~~

~~*355 to 358, also 65, 66, 206). massive,*~~

~~*395*~~

~~*G.=4‘5 to 52. Steel-grey to iron-black; streak black (dark red when containing zinc). B.B. on charcoal boils slightly, and fuses to a steel-grey slag, usually magnetic, and with soda gives copper. C.c. essentially Cu,S in combination with Sb,8;. Airthrey near*~~

~~*Fig. 358.*~~

~~*Fig. 357.*~~

~~*Stirling, Sandlodge in Shetland, Tomnadashin on Loch Tay, Kirk-eudbright; Crinnis and other Cornish mines near St Austell; Harz, Miisen, Freiberg, Camsdorf, Alsace, Kremuitz, and Kapnik. Those with 17 to 31 silver are the Silver Fahlore (Freiberg). Ore of copper and silver.*~~

~~*238. TENNANTITE, (CuS, FeS) As,S,.*~~

~~*Cubic (like fig. 237). Cl. oO. Brittle. H.=4; G.=4°3 to 4:5. Tron-black ; streak dark red, grey. C.c.: 49 copper, 4 iron, 19 arsenic, and 28 sulphur. Redruth and St Day (Cornwall), and Skutterud. Copper-blende, with brownish red streak; G.=4°3; con- tains 8°9 zinc; Freiberg.*~~

~~*239. POLYTELITE (Weissgiltigerz), 4RS + Sb,S3.*~~

~~*Like tetrahedrite. H.=2°5;G.=5°4t05°7. C.c.: silver 6 to 22, lead 38 to 52, antimony 8°5 to 22, sulphur 13 to 22°5. Freiberg.*~~

~~*240. STEPHANITE, 5Ag,S+Sb,8,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP (0) 115° 39'; P (P) middle edge 104° 20';*~~

~~*| 2Poo(d) middle edge 107° 48'; OP (s); «Pco(p) (figs. 333, 334).*~~

~~*Cl. d and p, both imperfect ; fracture conchoidal or uneven ; sectile. H. =2 to 2°5; G.=6-2 to 6°3. Iron-black to blackish lead-grey. C.c.: 68°5 silver, 15°3 antimony, and 16°2 sulphur. Cornwall, Freiberg, Schneeberg, Annaberg, Joachimsthal, Przibram, Schem- nitz, Mexico, Peru, and Siberia. Valuable ore of silver.*~~

~~*241. GrocroniTE, 5PbS+(Sb, As),Sz.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. Fracture conchoidal; sectile. H.=2to3; G.= 6°45 to 6°54. Pale lead-grey. C.c.: 67 lead, with 1 to 2 copper and iron, 16 antimony, with 4°7 arsenic, and 17 sulphur. Sala in Sweden, Meredo (Oviedo) in Spain, and near Pietrosanto in Tuscany.*~~

~~*242, KILBRICKENITE, 6PbS + Sb,S,. Massive ; granular or foliated. C.c.: 70°01 lead, 13°76 antimony, and 16°23 sulphur. County Clare in Ireland.*~~

~~243. PoLYBASITE, 9(Ag,, Cu,)S+(Sb, As),S3.~~

~~Hexagonal; P 117°. Crystals OP, oP; and OP, P, tabular. Cl. basal, imperfect ; sectile, and easily frangible. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=6 to 6:25. Iron-black, in very thin lamell, translucent, red. C.c.: 64 to 72 silver, 3 to 10 copper, 16 to 17 sulphur, 0°2 to 8 antimony, and 1 to 6 arsenic. Freiberg, Joachimsthal, Schem- nitz, Guanajuato, Nevada, and Idaho. Rich ore of silver.~~

~~244, PoLYARGYRITE, 12AgS+Sb,§3.~~

~~Cubic. Typical forn 0, o00, 00,mOm. Cl.cubic. H.=2°5; G.=6'97. Metallic, iron-black ; streak black. Malleable. C.c.: 78°2 silver, 7°4 antimony, 14°5 sulphur. Wolfach in Baden.~~

~~245. ENARGITE, 3Cu,S+As,S,.~~

~~Right prismatic. Cl. oP 97°53' perfect, brachydiagonal 100° 58'~~

~~Typical form oP, 0P, Po, oP. Iron-black. O.c.: 48°3 copper,~~

~~Morococha in Peru.~~

~~and macrodiagonal less so. Brittle, H.=3; G.=4°3 to 45: 19°1 arsenic, and 32°6 sulphur.~~

~~396~~

~~246. CLARITE, 8CuS+As8.~~

~~Oblique prismatic. Cl. clinodiagonal. Ordinary form of, oPto, OP, mP. H.=3°5; G.—4°46. Dark bluish grey. Kinzig- thal in Baden. Lwuzonite is similar.~~

~~247. FAMATINITE, 83CuS+SbsS.~~

~~Right prismatic. Typical form OP, oP, oPo, ooP3. Massive or reniform. H.= —3°5; G.=4°57. Copper-red to grey ; streak black. Famatina Mts. in the Argentine Republic, and Cerro de Pasco in Peru.~~

~~248. CHIVIATITE, 2PbS + 3Bi,§;.~~

~~Foliated, massive. G.=6°9. Metallic. Lead-grey. Chiviato in Peru.~~

~~249, EPIGENITE, 6RS + As,S;.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 110° 50'. Steel-grey. H.=3°5. Witti- chen.~~

~~250. EP1BOULANGERITE, 3PbS+Sb,§;.~~

~~Right prismatic. G.=6°3. Metallic. in Silesia.~~

~~251. XanTHOcON, 2(3AgS + As,S,) + (8AgS + AsS;).~~

~~Hexagonal rhombohedral. R:0R 110° 30'. Crystals thin hex- agonal tables ; brittle, easily frangible. H. =2 to 2°5; G.=5 to 5-2, Translucent; adamantine. Orange-yellow or brown; streak darker. In the closed tube fuses easily, becomes lead-grey. C.c.:~~

~~63°4 silver, 14°7 arsenic, and 21°9 sulphur. Himmelsfurst mine at Freiberg.~~

~~Blue-black. Altenburg~~

~~952. PYROSTILPNITE (Fire-blende).~~

~~Oblique prismatic ; crystals like stilbite. OP 139° 12'. Twins on orthodiagonal. H.=2; G.=4°2. Lustre pearly, and adamantine. Colour hyacinth-red and bright-yellow. Sectile. C.c.: 62°3 silver, with sulphur and antimony. Freiberg, Andreasberg, Przibram.~~

~~OXYSULPHURETS.~~

~~253. KermusItE, SbO,+ 2Sb8;.~~

~~Oblique prismatic ; crystals oPo, OP, acicular and diverging ; sectile. H.=1 to 1°5;G.=4°5 to 4°6. Translucent ; adamantine. Cherry-red ; streak similar. Sol. in h. acid. In potash solution becomes yellow, and dissolves. C.c.: 75°3 antimony, 19°8 sulphur,~~

~~4°9 oxygen. Brdiunsdorf, Przibram, Pernek near Bosing (Hungary), Allemont, Southham (Canada).~~

~~254. Voitzine, ZnO+4ZnS8. Incrusting. H.=4°5; G.=3°7. Joachinisthal.~~

~~255. KARELINITE, 8Bi0+ BiS.~~

~~H. =2; G.—6°6, Metallic. Lead-grey. Zavodinski in the Altai. 256. BoxiviTE, Bi,O3+ Bi.S3.~~

~~Rhombohedral. From Bolivia.~~

~~Yellow. Pontgibaud and~~

~~SELENITES,~~

~~257. OHALCOMENITE, CuSe-+2H,[=Cu0, SeO, +2H,0}. Oblique prismatic, C 108° 20'. G.=3°76. Bright blue. Trans-~~

~~parent. C.c.: selenious acid 48-2, copper oxide 35-4, water 15°3. Cerro de Cacheuta (Mendoza, Argentine Republic).~~

~~NITRATES AND BORATES. 258. NirraTINE, Na,N.f=Na,0; N,O;}:~~

~~Rhombohedral ; R. 106° 30'. Tarapaca in Peru. Used in the arts as a substitute for nitre; but deliquesces in moist air.~~

~~259. Nirru (Saltpetre), K,N,[=K,0, N,O,]~~

~~Right prismatic. oP (If) 118° 49'; 2P~~

~~260. NirrocauciTr, CaN,+H,.~~

~~_Fibrous or pulverulent. White or grey. C.c.: 30°8 lime, 59:3 nitric acid, and 9°9 water. Limestone caves of Kentucky ; on old walls and limestone rocks.~~

~~261. NiTromacnesitE, MgN,+H,. Taste bitter. In the same places, and similar to nitrocalcite.~~

~~262. BoraciTE, 2Mg3B,+ MgCl.~~

~~Tesseral and hemihedral (figs. 68, 253, 359). perfect; fracture conchoidal ;__ brittle. H.=7; G.=2°9 to 3. Transparent or translucent; vitreous or adamantine. Colourless or white, often greyish, yellow- ish, or greenish. Becomes polar electric by heat. B.B. fuses with difficulty to a clear yellowish bead, which on cooling forms a white opaque mass of needle-like crystals ; at the same time colours the flame green. Sol. in h. acid. C.c.: 62°5 boracic acid, 26°9 magnesia, 7°9 chlorine, and 2°7 mag- nesium. Liineberg, Segeberg in Holstein, Stassfurt.~~

~~263. STASSFURTITE.~~

~~In very minute prismatic crystals. White. cite, and thus perhaps dimorphous. Stassfurt.~~

~~264. RuopiziTE, 2CagB, (?).~~

~~H.=8 and G.=3°3 to 3°42; agrees in most characters with boracite. Pyro-electric. Mursinsk in Siberia.~~

~~265. LupwiciTs, 2MgB+FeFe. Fibrous masses. From limestone at Morawitza in the Banat.~~

~~266. Borax (Tinkal), Na.2B+10H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 78° 25'. oP 87°; P 122° 34° (fig. 360). Almost isomorphous with augite; brittle. H.2 to 2°5; G.=1'7 to 1°8. Pellucid; resinous. Colour-less, or yellowish, greenish, and greyish white. Taste feebly alkaline and sweetish. C.c.: 16°4 soda, 36°5 boracic acid, and 47:1 water ; but often with 2 phosphoric acid or other impurities. Shores of salt lakes in Tibet and Nepal, in California, and near Potosi.~~

~~267. BorocaxcrTE, Ca2B+6H,.~~

~~Similar to ulexite (sp. 268); and from same locality.~~

~~*268. Unexite, Na,2B+2Ca2B+18H,.*~~

~~*Fibrous. H.=1; G.=1°6. White. Tasteless. Iquique and Nova Scotia.*~~

~~*269. SZAIBELYITE, 2Mg,2B+3H,.*~~

~~*H.=3'°5; G.=2°7, Werksthal in Hungary.*~~

~~*270. HypRoBoRAciTE, 2Ca8B,+2Mg3B, + 12H,.*~~

~~*Radiating and foliated. Caucasus. A similar mineral, with soda in place of magnesia, is found in Peru.*~~

~~*271. SussEXITE, (Mn, Mg).B+ Hy.*~~

~~*Fibrous, silky. White. H.=3; G.=3"4. county, New Jersey).*~~

~~*Cl. octahedral, im-*~~

~~*Fig. 359.*~~

~~*C.c. same as bora-*~~

~~*Fig. 360 (sp. 266).*~~

~~*Franklin (Sussex*~~

~~*ANHYDROUS CARBONATES.*~~

~~*272. CarcrtTx (Cale-spar, Calearcous Spar), CaC.*~~

~~*Hexagonal and rhombohedral; R 105° 5' (fig. 101). The forms and combinations exceed those of any other mineral. Among them are more than fifty rhnombohedrons, especially — 4R 135°; R; —2R 79°; and 4R 66°; with OR and oR as limiting forms. There are one hundred and fifty-five distinct scalenohedrons, as R38; R2; 1R3 ; and the second hexagonal prism oP2. Hexagonal pyramids are among the rarer forms. Some of the most usual combinations are oR, —48 (c, g, fig. 179); or — $8, oR, very frequent ; also oR, OR; likewise -2R, R (/, P, fig. 107); R38, oR, -2R; RS (y), R38 (r),*~~

~~*RB (P), 4R (mm), oR (e) (fig. 109); R, R8 (fig. 108). Several hundred distinct combinations are known.*~~

~~*Hemitropes and twins are not uncommon. These occur with the axes parallel (figs. 106, 146, 148, 180, 366, 367). Others*~~

~~*Cay*~~

~~*Fig. 361.*~~

~~*Fig. 362.*~~

~~*Fig. 363.*~~

~~*Fig. 364.*~~

~~*are conjoined by a face of R, the axes being almost at right angles, 89° 8' (figs. 188, 369) or by a face of —4R, in which the chief axes form an angle of 127$°; and usually many times repeated, so that the centre crystals appear in lamella not thicker than paper (fig. 181); at an obtuse angle, as figs. 149, 368, or an acute*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*angle, as figs, 364, 368. Also occurs granular, lamellar, parallel or radiated fibrous, compact and earthy. Cl. rhombohedral along R, very perfect and easily obtained, so that the couchoidal fracture is rarely observable; brittle. H.—3; G.=2°6 to 2°8; pure*~~

~~*transparent crystals=2°72. Pellucid in all AD F \ LEAP TS*~~

~~*degrees. Very distinct double refraction. Lustre vitreous, but several faces resinous, and*~~

~~*OR pearly. Most frequently colourless or*~~

~~*white, but often grey, blue, green, yellow,*~~

~~*red, brown, or black; streak greyish white. ae B.B. infnsible, but becomes caustic and emits ae*~~

~~*a bright light. Effervescees, and is entirely eu, sol. in h. orn. acid. The fine powder, ignited :*~~

~~*on platina-foil over the spirit-lamp, forms a Fig. 365. somewhat connected mass, and even adheres to the platina. C.c. of the purest varieties, carbonate of lime, with 44 carbonic acid and 56 lime, but usually contains magnesia and protoxide of iron or of manganese. Remarkable specimens of the crystallized variety or proper cale-spar are found at Alston Moor in Cumberland (fiat rhombic crystals) and in Derbyshire (pale yellow*~~

~~*Fig 366.*~~

~~*Fig. 367.*~~

~~*transparent pyramids), at Strontian, Elie in Fife (figs. 370, 371, 372), Andreasberg and other parts of the Harz (six-sided prisms), and at Freiberg, Tharand, and Maxen in Saxony.*~~

~~*Certain varieties are distinguished. Iceland Spar, remarkable*~~

~~*for its transparency and double re- fraction, occurs massive and in huge crystals in a trap rock in Iceland. Slate Spar, thin lamellar, often with a shining white pearly lustre aud greasy feel; Abergairn and Glen*~~

~~*JAI a*~~

~~*Fig. 368. Fig. 369.*~~

~~*Tilt in Scotland, Wicklow in Ireland, and Norway.*~~

~~*Fig. 370. Fig. 371.*~~

~~*of the ancients were impure limestones, as the Cipollino, zoned with green tale or chlorite, and Verde Antique, mixed with green*~~

serpentine. Ruin Marble shows irregular markings like ruins; Val d'Arno (Florentine niarble), and Bristol (Cotham marble). LIneullite from Egypt, and Anthraconite, from Campbelltown and Kilkenny, are black from carbon. Lwmachello, from Bleiberg in Carinthia, exhibits beautiful iridescent colours from fossil shells, sometimes deep red or orange (Fire Marble). Hislopite, from Poonah, is green, from celadonite.

Limestone occurs in all formations under varions names, as Oolite, egg-stone, orroe-stone,—round concretiouswithaconcentricstructure like the roe of a fish ; Pisolite, or peastone, similar structure; Chalk, soft earthy; Lnthographie Stone, yellowish and compact, from Solenhofen; and Marl, calcareous matter more or less mixed with clay. Calearcous Tufa, generally a recent deposit from calearcous springs, has often a loose friable texture, but at other times is hard and compact; and in the neighbourhood of Rome fornis the common building stone Travertino. The sandstone of Fontaine-bleau is carbonate of lime (3) mixed with quartz sand (§), and occasionally crystal- lizing in rhombohedrons.

This mineral is employed in many ways:—the coarser varieties, when burnt to drive off the carbonic acid, as lime, for mortar, manure, tanning; as a flux in melting iron and other ores, or in pre- paring glass, and for similar purposes; the finer, as marbles, for sculpture, architec-

Fig. 372.

ture, and ornamental stone-work; the chalk for writing, white- washing, or producing carbonic acid.

Plumbocalcite.—Cl. 104° 53'. White and pearly; softer than cale-spar ; but G.=2°824. Contains 2°3 to 7°8 carbonate of lead. Wanlockhead and Leadhills (Scotland).

273. DotomitR (Bitter-spar), Cab +MgG.

Hexagonal rhombohedral ; R 106° 15'-20'; most frequent form R. 'The rhombohedrons often curved and saddle-shaped ; also granular or compact, often cellular and porous. Cl. rhombohedral. H.=3°5 to 45; G.=2°85 to 2°95. 'Translucent; vitreous, but often pearly. Colourless or

~~*white, but frequently pale red, yellow, or green. B.B. infusible, but becomes caustic, and often shows traces of iron and manganese. Fragments effervesce very slightly or not at all in hydrochloric acid ; the powder is partially soluble, or wholly when heated. C.c.: 54:3 carbonate of lime and 45°7 carbonate of magnesia, but generally carbonate of lime with more than 20 per cent. carbonate of magnesia and less than 20 per cent. carbonate of iron.*~~

~~*Varieties are—Dolomite, massive-granular, easily divisible, white; Rhomb or Bitter-spar, larger grained, or distinctly crystallized and cleavable, often inclining to green ; and Brown-spar and Pearl-spar, in simple crystals generally curved (fig. 231), or in imitative forms, of colours inclining to red or brown, more distinct pearly lustre, and under 10 per cent. carbonate of iron. Leadhills and Charlestown in Scotland, Alston in Cumberland, in Derbyshire, Traversella in Piedmont, St Gotthard, Gap in France. Greenish, twinned ; Miemo in Tuscany (Aiemite), and Tharand in Saxony (Tharandite).*~~

~~*The massive and compact varieties are very common, and are valued as building stones (cathedral of Milan, York Minster, and the Houses of Parliament at Westminster). The Parian marble, and also the Sutherland and Iona marbles, belong to this species.*~~

~~*274. ANKERITE, CaC+(MgFe)G. R 106° 12'. Usually massive and granular. Otherwise like siderite. Unst (Shetland), Styria.*~~

~~*275. Macnesirz, MgC.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; 107° 10'-30'. Reniform or massive. H.=3'5; G.=2°85 to 2°95. Subtranslucent or opaque; streak shining. Snow-white, greyish or yellowish white, and pale yellow. Tyrol, Norway, North America.*~~

~~*276. BREUNNERITE (Giobertitc), MgC+(MnFe)C.*~~

~~*Hexagonal rhombohedral; R107°10'-30'.. Granular or columnar. Cl. R, very perfect. H.=4 to 4:5; G.=2°9 to 3:1. Transparent or translucent on the edges; highly vitreous. Colourless, but often yellowish brown or blackish grey. C.c. essentially carbonate of magnesia, with 51°7 carbonic acid and*~~

~~48°3 magnesia, but often nixed with 8 to 17 carbonate of iron or manganese. Unst, Tyrol (in Fassa Valley, &c.), St Gotthard, Harz.~~

~~277. SIDERITE (Sparry Iron, Chalybiic), FeC.~~

~~Hexagonal and rhombohedral ; R 107°. Chiefly R, often curved, saddle-shaped (fig. 232), or lenticular. Cl. rhombohedral along R, perfect; brittle. H.=3°5 to 4:5; G.=38°7 to 3°9. ; Translucent in various degrees, becoming opaque when weathered; vitreous or pearly. Rarely white, generally yellowish grey or yellowish brown, changiug~~

~~G.=2°'9 to 3°1.~~

~~to red or blackish brown on exposure. B.B. infusible, but becomes black and magnetic ; with borax and salt of phosphorus shows reaction for iron ; with soda often for manganese. In acids soluble with effervescence. C.c. carbonate of iron, with 62°1 protoxide of iron and 37°9 carbonic acid, but usually 0°5 to 10 or even 25 protoxide of manganese, 0°2 to 15 magnesia, and 0°1 to 2 lime. Unst, Kintyre. In beds or masses in Beeralston 11 Devonshire, Alston Moor in Cumberland, and in many of the tin-mines In Cornwall, in Styria, Carinthia, and Westphalia ; in veins 1n Anhalt and the Harz; also in the Pyrenees and the Basque, provinces of Spain, as near Bilboa; in crystals at Joachimsthal, Freiberg, Klausthal.~~

~~Clay Ironstone, grey, blue, brown, or black,—G. =2°8 to3°5, H. = 3°5 to 4°5, —is an impure variety.~~

~~278, DIALOGITE (Red Manganese), MnC.~~

~~Hexagonal rhombohedral ; R 106° 56'. Crystals often curved, lenticular, or saddle-shaped ; also spherical, reniform, and columnar or granular. Cl. R, periect. H. =3°5 to 4°5; G. =3°3 to 36. Trans- lucent; vitreous or pearly. _Rose-red to flesh-red ; streak white. C.c.: 62 manganese protoxide and 38 carbonic acid. Freiberg, Schemnitz, Kapnik, Nagyag, Elbingerode, and near Sargans.~~

~~279. CopatTsPaTH, CoCo. Rhombohedral and spheroidal. H.=4; G.=4 to 4°18. blossom-red ; but dark externally. Schneeberg.~~

~~280. SMITHSONITE (Calamine), ZnC.~~

~~Hexagonal rhombohedral ; R 107° 40'. Usually reniform, stal- actitic, and laminar or granular. Cl. R, perfect, but curved; fracture uneven, conchoidal ; brittle. H.=5; G.=4°1 to 4°5. Translucent or opaque ; pearly or vitreous. Colourless, but often pale greyish yellow, brown, or green. C.c.: 64°8 zinc oxide and 85°2 carbonic acid, Mendip in Somersetshire, Matlock in Derbyshire, compact at Alston Moor, Chessy near Lyons, Altenberg near Aix-la-Chapelle, Brilon in Westphalia, Tarnowitz in Silesia, Hungary, Siberia.~~

~~281. ARAGONITE, CaC.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 116° 10'; Poo 108° 26'. The most common combinations are cobs (h), oF (Jf), Po (k, P) (fig. 275), generally long prismatic (like the separate crystals in fig. 184) ; oP, oP,~~

~~OP, generally short prismatic ; crystals of 6P4, oP, Po, 6Pxo (g) (fig. 378) acute pyramidal. But simple crystals are rare, from the great tendency to form twins, con- joined by a face of oP, and repeated either in linear arrangement (fig. 185) or in rosette group- ing (fig. 186). Also columnar, fibrous, and in crusts, stalactites, and other forms. Cl. brachy- diagonal, distinct ; fracture conchoidal or uneven. H. =3°5 to 4; G.=2°9 to 3 (massive 2°7). Trans- parent or translucent; vitreous. Colourless, but yellowish white to brick-red ; also light green, violet-blue, or grey. In the closed tube, before reaching a red heat, it swells, and falls down into a white coarse powder, evolving a little water. Unst and Leadhills; Valencia, Molina and else- where in Aragon ; Leogang in Salzburg, and Anti- paros, los-ferri, coralloid, in the iron-mines of Styria. Satin-spar, fine fibrous silky, at Dufton (Westmoreland). Stalactitic, coast of Galloway, Leadhills, Buckinghamshire, and Devonshire. Also deposited as tufa by the Carlsbad and other hot springs. 282, Wirneritz, BaC.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP (g) 118° 30'; 2Poo(P) 112°. Crystals not common like fig. 275, but generally with quite an hexagonal aspect from being twinned~~

~~like aragonite (fig. 374). Oftener spherical botryoidal, or reniform, with radiated-columnar structure. Cl. oP, distinct ; fracture uneven. H.=3 to 3°5; G.=—4‘2 to 4°3. Semitransparent or translucent; vitreous, or resinous on the fracture. Colourless, but generally yellowish or greyish. B.B. fuses easily to a transparent globule, opaque when cold ; on charcoal boils, becomes caustic and sinks into the support; soluble with effervescence in n. or h. acid. C.c.: 22°3 carbonic acid and 77°7 baryta. Alston Moor and Hexham in Northumberland, also in Styria, Salzburg, Hungary, Sicily, Siberia, and Chili.~~

~~288. AusTONITE, BaC+CaC.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 118° 50’; 2Poo 111° 50’ ; usual combination P, 2Pc, oP, resembling an hexagonal pyramid (fig. 375). Cl. oP~~

~~Peach-~~

~~WO~~

~~eh.~~

~~Fig. 374.~~

~~ALOGY~~

~~and obo, rather distinct. H.=4 to 45; G.=3°65 to 3°76. 3°76. Translucent ; weak resinous. Colourless or greyish-white. C.c.: 66 carbonate of baryta and 34 carbonate of lime. Fallowfield near Hexham, and Alston Moor.~~

~~984, STRONTIANITE, SrC. Right prismatic. oP 117° 19’;~~

~~Poo 108° 12’. Crystals (fig. 376) and twins like aragonite; also broad columnar and fibrous, Cl. pris- matic along oP (Mf), H.=3°5; G.=8°6 to 3°8. Translucent or transparent; vitreous or resinous on fracture. Colourless, but often light asparagus- or apple-green, more rarely greyish, yellowish, or brown- ish. B.B. fuses in a strong heat only on very thin edges, intumesces~~

~~*in cauliflower-like forms, shines Fig. 375 (sp. 283). brightly, and colours the flame red ; easily soluble in acids, with effervescence. C.c.: 30 carbonic acid and 70 stroutia. but often — contains carbonate of lime (6 to 8). Strontian in Argyllshire, Suther- land, Leogang in Salzburg, Braéuns- dorf in Saxony, Hamm in West- phalia, the Harz; at Schoharie (N.Y.) and elsewhere in United States (Hmmonite). It is used to produce red fire in pyrotechnic exhibitions.*~~

~~*285. MANGANOCALCITE, (Mn, Ca, Fe) C.*~~

~~*Right prismatic ; in prisms like aragonite, and bears the same relation to dialogite that aragonite does to cale-spar. H.=4 to 5; G.=3°03. Red or reddish white. Vitreous. Schemnitz.*~~

~~*286. CerussitE (Lead Spar), PbC. Right prismatic; isomorphous with aragonite and nitre, oP*~~

~~*(Mf) 117° 14'; Peo 108° 16'; 2Poo (w) 69° 20'; also OP; P (4); 4Poo (s); «Poo (1); oP3 (e) (fig 377). wins common (figs. 158, 159, 378, 379). Also granular or earthy. Cl. oP and*~~

~~*QP oo, rather distinct; fracture conchoidal ; easily frangible. H.=38 to 3°5; G.=674 to 6°6, Transparent or translucent ; adamantine or resinous. Colourless and often white, but also grey, yellow, brown, black, rarely green, blue, or red ; streak white. B.B. decrepitates violently, but easily fused and reduced ; soluble with effervescence in n. acid. C.c. ; 83°5 protoxide of lead and 16°5 carbonic acid. Very common. _ Leadhills, Wanlockhead,: Keswick, Alston Moor, Beeralston in Devon- shire, St Minver in Cornwall; Przibram, Mies, and Bleistadt ;*~~

~~*eee eee 7 er*~~

~~‘~~

~~*Fig. 378.*~~

~~*| Tarnowitz, J ohann-Georgenstadt, Zellerfeld, Klausthal, and many other places.*~~

~~287. BAryTo-CaterTE, Ba + Cad.~~

~~h~~

~~—7~~

~~Fig. 380.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 69° 30'.~~

~~Fig. 381. ooP (m) 84° 52', P (s) 106° 54',~~

~~MINER~~

~~ALOG YY 399~~

~~P%o (h) 61° (figs. 380, 381); also columnar and granular. Cl. P | Thuringia, Moldawa in the Banat, in North America, Africa, and~~

~~perfect, Pec less perfect. H.=4; G.=3°6 to 3°7. or translucent ; vitreous, inclining to resinous. C.c.: like alstonite. Alston Moor.~~

~~288. BISMUTO-SPHIZRITE, Bi,C.~~

~~Small fibrous brown concretions from Neustadtel, near Schnee- berg. »~~

~~Transparent~~

~~HYDROUS CARBONATES. 289. THIERMONATRITE, Na,C+H,. Right prismatic. oP2 (d) 107° 50'; (P) in rectangular tables (fig. 382). brachydiagonal, perfect. H.=1°5; G. =1°5 to 1°6. Colourless. B.B. like natron, but does not melt. C.c.: 50'lsoda, 35°4 earbonic acid, and 14°5 water. Natron lakes of Lagunilla in Veneznela, of Lower Egypt, and of the steppes between Urals and Altai.~~

~~290. Natron, Na,G+10H,. Oblique prismatic, C 57° 40'. Crystals artificial; with oP 79° 41'; P 76° 28'.~~

~~Poo (0) 83° 50'; with ooPco Cl.~~

~~Cl. orthodiagonal, distinct. H.=1t01°5; G.=14 to 1°5. Pellucid; vitreous. : ; Colourless or greyish white. 'B.B. melts 'Fig. 382 (sp. 289).~~

~~easily, colouring the flame yellow. C.c.: 22 soda, 15 carbonic acid, and 63 water ; but mixed with chloride of sodium and other salts. Only as an efflorescence on the ground or rocks (lava of Vesuvius and Etna) in various countries (Hungary, Egypt, Tartary), and in mineral springs and lakes. Used in the manufacture of soap, in dyeing, and in bleaching.~~

~~291. Trona, Urao, Na,C,+4H,.~~

~~Obliqne prisinatic. Crystals 0P (7), @P%«% (A), P (n). 103° 15' (fig. 383). Cl. orthodiagonal, perfect. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=2'1 to 2°2. Transparent to translucent. Colourless. Does not decompose in the air. Taste alkaline. C.c:: 38 soda, 40 car- bonic acid, and 22 water. Fezzan and Barbary (Trona), Lagunilla (Urao).~~

~~292. GavussirE, Na,(CaG 5H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 78° 27'. Cl. oP, imperfect; fracture conchoidal. H.=2°5; G.=1°9 to 1°95. "ransparent; vitreous. Colourless. C.c.: 34°5 carbonate of soda, 83°6 carbonate of lime, 30°4 water, with 1°5 clay. Lagunilla.~~

~~2938. HyproMAGyesiTx, Mg,C,+4H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic. oP 88° nearly. Crystals small, rare ; also massive. H.= —1°5 to 3; G.=2°14 to 2°18. Vitreous or silky. White. C.c.: 36°2 carbonic acid, 44 magnesia, and 19°8 water. Unst (Shetland), Moravia, Kumi in Negropont, Hoboken in New~~

~~Jersey, and Texas in Pennsylvania.~~

~~294. AzuRITE (Blue Copper), CugO,+ H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 87° 39'. oP (M) 99° 32';-— P(x') 106° 14'. Crystals OP, oP, oP%o,P (or h, M, s,k', in fig. 384, but in another position) ; also radiated and earthy. Cl. clinodomatic (P) 59° 14', rather perfect; frac ture~~

~~*conchoidal or splintery. H.=3°5 to 4‘2; G.=3°7 to 3°8. Translucent or opaque; vitre- ous. Azure-blue, the earthy varieties (and streak) smalt-*~~

~~*lue. B.B. on charcoal fuses and yields a grain of copper ; soluble with effervescence in acids, and also in ammonia. C.c.: 69°1 protoxide of copper, 25°7 carbonic acid, and 5°2 water.*~~

~~*T:M*~~

~~*ery*~~

~~*Fig. 383.*~~

~~*Fig. 384.*~~

~~*Crystals at Redruth, Alston Moor, Chessy near Lyons, in Siberia, Moldawa in the Banat, Burra-*~~

~~*Burra (Australia). Valued as an ore of copper.*~~

~~*295. MaLacuirr, Cu,C+H,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 61° 50’. oP 104° 20’. Crystals oP (Jf), coP%co (s), OP (P), in hemitropes (fig. 885). In general acicular, scaly, or reniform, stalactitic, and radiated fibrous. Cl. basal and clinodiagonal, very perfect. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=3°6 to 4. Transparent or translucent on the edges; adamiantine, vitreous, silky, or dull. Emerald and other shades of green; streak apple- ad green. B.B. and with acids like azurite. C.c.:*~~

~~*71°8 copper protoxide (=57°5 copper), 20 carbonic ee a acid, and 8:2 water. Crystalline at Rheinbreiten- ; z bach on the Rhine and Zellerfeld in the Harz; fibrous Fig. 385.*~~

~~*and compact at Sandlodge in Shetland, Leadhills, Cornwall, Wales,*~~

~~*and Ireland, at Chessy in France, Siberia, the Urals, Saalfeld in | H.=2°5; G.—6°26 to 6°44.*~~

~~*Yellowish white. .*~~

~~*Australia, Frequently pseudomorphous after copper and its ores, also after calcite and cerussite. Valuable ore of copper ; the finer varieties are prized for ornamental purposes.*~~

~~*296. Hyprozincirs, ZnO+2ZnH,.*~~

~~*Massive. C.c.: zinc oxide 75°38, carbonic acid 13°6, water 11°1. Spain, Westphalia, Bavaria, Persia, United States. Valuable ore.*~~

~~*297. AUBICHALCITE, 2CuC+3ZnH,.*~~

~~*Acicular. H.=2. Translucent, pearly, and verdigris-green. C.c. : 29°2 copper protoxide, 44°7 zinc oxide, 16°2 carbonic acid, and 9°9 water. Leadhills, Matlock, Loktevski in the Altai.*~~

~~*298. EMeraLp-NIckEt (Zaratite), NiC+6H,.*~~

~~*Amorphous, reniform, and incrusting. H.=3; G.=2°6 to 2°7. Translucent ; vitreous. Emerald-green. C.c.: 59°3 nickel pro- toxide, 11°7 carbonic acid, and 29 water. On chromite at Hagdale in Unst, Texas in Pennsylvania; also Cape Ortegal in Spain, Tyrol, and Ekaterinburg in the Urals.*~~

~~*299. Linpaxerits, U,0+2CaC+10H,.*~~

~~*In small siskin-green crystalline aggregates. H.=2°5 to 3. From Elias mine near Joachimstlal, implanted on pitch-bleude.*~~

~~*300. Voeuite, 4UC + 76a +3CuG + 24H,.*~~

~~*Rhomboidal. Emerald-green scales with pearly lustre. Elias mine, Joachimsthal.*~~

~~*301. Lizsierre, U,C+CaG+20H,.*~~

~~*Mammillary concretions. H.=2to2°5. Apple-green. Adrian-*~~

~~*ople, Joachimsthal, and Johann-Georgenstadt.*~~

~~*302. Bismutuire, Bi,C,+4H,.*~~

~~*Disseminated, investing or acicular ; fracture conchoidal or un- even ; very brittle. H.=—4 to4°5;G.=6°8 to 6°91. Opaque; dull vitreous. Grey, yellow, or green. C.c.: 90°1 bismuth oxide, 6°4 carbonic acid, and 3°5 water. Ullersreuth (Reuss), Sclineebery, Johann-Georgenstadt ; also Chesterfield in South Carolina.*~~

~~*303. LANTHANITE, LaC+3H,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 92° 46'. Small tabular crystals; usually granular or earthy. Cl. basal. H.=2; G.=2°7. Dull or pearly. White or yellowish. C.c.: 21 carbonic acid, 55 lanthanum oxide, and 24 water. Bastnaes in Sweden, Lehigh in Pennsylvania.*~~

~~*CARBONATES WITH HALOID SALTS, &c.*~~

~~*304. PHosGENITE, PbC1+PbC.*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 118° 56'. Crystals short-prismatic or sharp- pyramidal. Cl. oP, rather perfect ; fracture conchoidal. . Hi=2-5 to' 35 G.=6 to-6°2. Transparent or translucent ; resinous adaman- tine. White, yellow, green, or grey. C.c.: 51 chloride and 49 carbonate of lead. Very rare. Stottfield near Elgin in Scotland, Matlock and Cromford in Derbyshire, Tar- nowitz.*~~

~~*305. PARISITE, 8CeC+CaF.*~~

~~*Hexagonal. P 164° 58'. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=4°5; G.=4°35. Vitre- / ous; on cleavage-plane pearly. — Brownish yellow, inclining to red. C.c.: 23°5 carbonic acid, 42°5 prot- : t oxide of cerium, 8°2 lanthanum*~~

~~*Big SSF Gap. SDP oxide, 9°6 didymium oxide, 2°8 lime, 10°1 fluoride of calcium, and 2°2 fluoride of cerium. Emerald mines of the Muzo Valley in Colombia, Urals.*~~

~~*306. LEADHILLITE (Jfawzite), PbgCy8,0,, + 5H,. Right prismatic. P middle edge 137°; oP 120° 20/; 2Poo 43°12'.*~~

~~*Fig. 389.*~~

~~*v Fig. 388. . Mostly tabular ; also twins. Cl. basal, perfect ; slightly brittle.*~~

~~*Transparent or translucent ; resinous*~~

~~*or adamantine, pearly on OP. Yellowish white, inclining to grey, green, yellow, or brown. C.c.: 81°98 oxide of lead, 8°03 car- bonic acid, 8°12 sulphuric acid, 1°8 water. Lead- hills, Taunton, Nertchinsk, Granada. Jfawxite from Sar- dinia.*~~

~~*307. SUSANNITE, 38PbC +Pbs.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral; R 72° 29'. Cl. basal, perfect. H. =2°5; G.=6°55. White, green, yellow, brownish. Resinous to adamantine ;*~~

~~*pearly on the cleavage faces. Powder white. C.c.: 72°5 carbonate and 27°5 sulphate of lead.*~~

~~*From the Susanna mine at ,,. fe Leadhills, but very rare; Fig. 390 (sp. 307). also in large dark crystals from the Banat.*~~

~~*Fig. 391 (sp. 307).*~~

~~*ANHYDROUS SULPHATES.*~~

~~*808. ARCANITE (Glaserite), KS. Right prismatic. Acute pyramids, with oP 120° 24'; dimorphous and also rhombohedral, with R 88° 14'. Mostly in crusts, or pul- verulent. Cl. basal, imperfect. H.=2'5to3; G.=2°7. Pellucid; vitreous or resinous. Colourless or white. C.c. : 54 potash and 46 sulphuric acid. Lavas of Vesuvius and other volcanoes.*~~

~~*309. MascacninE, (NH,)S.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. ooP 121° 8'; but chiefly in crusts and stalac- tites. Cl. perfect; sectile. H.=2 to 25; G.=1'7 tol. Pel- lucid ; vitreous. Colourless, white, or yellowish. Taste pungent and bitter. C.c.: 25°9 ammonia, 60°5 sulphuric acid, and 13°6 water. Near volcanoes, as Etna, Vesuvius, the Solfatara, the Lipari Islands, in the marshes near Siena, and in ignited coal-beds, as at Bradley in Staffordshire.*~~

~~310. THENARDITE, Na,S. *~~

~~Right prismatic. Acute pyramids P, with 0P and oP, in crusts and druses. Cl. basal, perfect ; fracture uneven. H.=2°5; G.= 2°6 to 2°7. Pellucid; vitreous. White. C.c.: 43°82 soda and~~

~~56°18 sulphuric acid. In salt deposits near Aranjuez (Spain) and at Tarapaca (Peru).~~

~~311. GLAUBERITE (Brongniartine), Na,S+CaS. Oblique prismatic, C 68° 16'. OP,—P, or with oP (P, f, M, fig. 392). Cl. basal, perfect; along oP traces. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=2°75 to 2°85. Translucent; vitreous to resinous. Colourless. C.c.: 51 sulphate of soda, and 49 sulphate of lime. Villarnbia in Spain, Vic, Berchtesgaden, near Brugg in Aargau, Aussee and £ Ischl in Anstria; Tarapaca in Peru, with 1 to 5 boracic acid.~~

~~312. ANHyDRITE (Karstenite), CaS.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 90° 4'. Chiefly granular, or almost com- pact or columnar. Twins: rare. Cl. macrodiagonal and brachy- diagonal, both perfect; basal perfect. H.=3 to 3°5; G.=2°8 to~~

~~3. 'Transparent or translucent; vitreous; on oPoo pearly. Colourless or white, but often blne, red, or grey; streak greyish white. (C.c.: 58°75 sulphuric acid and 41°25 lime.~~

~~; The crystalline, or /uriaette, occurs in the salt-mines of Bex, Halt in Tyrol, and Aussce in Styria, also at Sulz, Stassfurt, and Bleiberg. Compact at Ischl iu Austria, Berchtesgaden, Eisleben, and the Harz. Grauniar, or Vulpinite, near Bergamo. The contorted, or Gekrosstein, chiefly at Wieliczka and Bochnia. ;~~

~~313. BARYTE (Heavy Spar), BaS.~~

~~Right prismatic. Poo (g) 78° 20'; Boo (f) 105° 22'; wP2 (d) 77° 44'; also ooPoo © (figs. 125, 126, 127, but in a different position, d, d@ being placed vertical). The crystals show very many forms~~

~~*and combinations, and are tabular or columnar, often in drnses or groups; also foliated, fibrous, granular, or compact. Cl. brachy-*~~

~~*diagonal perfect, along Poo less perfect ; basal, traces. H.=3 to 3°5; G.=4°3 to 4:7. Transparent to translucent; vitreous or resinous. Colourless and white, but generally reddish white or flesh-red, yellow, grey, bluish, greenish, or brown. B. B. decrepitates violently, and fuses very difficultly, or only on the edges, colouring the flame yellowish green ; not soluble in acids. C.e.: 34°38 sulphuric acid and 65°7 baryta, but occasionally with 1 to 15 sulphate of strontia. Very common, chiefly in veins, either alone or accompanying ores. Crystals at Arran, Strontian, Elic, Sutherland ; Duftou, Bohemia, Felsobanya and Kremnitz in*~~

~~*M Fig. 392.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*Hungary, Auvergne, and United States. Columnar at Freiberg. The radiated from near Bologna, or the Bolognese Stone, plios- phorescces in the dark. Massive, or Cawk, from Derbyshire and Staffordshire, Leadhills, and Arran.*~~

~~*Lime Barytes, from Derbyshire, Strontian, Freiberg, seems a mixture with sulphate of lime; crystals tabular, in rosettes and other groups; G.=4 to 4°3. Hepatite, dark grey, from carbona- ceous matter; Kongsberg. Allomorphite, scaly, white, and pearly, near Rudolstadt, agrees essentially with barytes.*~~

~~*314. BarytTo-CELESTINE, 2SrS+BaS.*~~

~~*Radiated and foliated. Bluish white. Brittle and friable. H. = 2°5;G.=— 3°92. Difficultly fusible. Lake Erie, Upper Canada, and Biunenthal.*~~

~~*315. CELESTINE, SrS. . Right prismatic ; forins like barytes and anglesite. Poo (0) 104°*~~

~~*8”; Poo (Mf) 75° 58’. Usual combinations Po, Po, co Poo ; or this with oP2 (d); also columnar and foliated; or fibrous, fine*~~

~~*granular, or compact. Cl. macrodiagonal, perfect ; along Poo less perfect. H.=3 to3°5; G.=3°9 to 4. Transparent or translucent ; vitreous or resinous. Colourless, but usually bluish white to indigo-blue, and rarely reddish or yellowish. B.B. decrepitates and fuses easily to a milk-white globule; colours the flame carmine-red. Distinguished from barytes by a splinter, after ignition in the inner flame, on being moistened with h. acid, and held in the blue border of the flame of a candle, colouring this of a lively purple-red. Scarcely affected by acids. C.c.: 43°6 sulphuric acid and 56°4 strontia, but often some baryta or lime. Tantallon Castle, Calton Hill, Clachnaharry; near Bristol and Knares- borough ; sulphur-mines of Girgenti and other parts of Sicily, Herrengrund in Hungary, Bex, Salzburg, Monte Viale near Verona, and Meudon and Montmartre near Paris. Used for producing a red_ light in pyrotechnic mixtures.*~~

~~*316. ANGLESITE, PbS.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 108° 48'; Poo' 75° 35'. The crystals, of many forms and combinations, are short prismatic, pyramidal, or tabular. Cl. prismatic along oP, and basal; fracture conchoidal; very brittle. H.=8; G.=6'2 to 6°35. Transparent or translucent; adamantine or _ resinous. Colourless and white, but occasionally yellow, grey, brown, or blue; streak white. De-crepitates in candle ; B.B. on charcoal fuses in the oxygen flame to a milk-white bead ; very difficultly soluble in acids, wholly in solution of potash. C.c.: 73°7 lead protoxide and 26°3 sulphuric*~~

~~*Fig. 394. Fig. 395. acid. Leadhills (fig. 397), St Ives in Cornwall, Derbyshire,*~~

~~*Parys mine in Anglesea, Zellerfeld, Klausthal, Baden-*~~

~~*Fig. 396. | weiler, Siegen, Silesia, Linares, Pheenixville in Pennsylvania. 317. LANARKITE, PbS+Pb.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. oP 49°50'. Cl. basal, perfect ; sectile; thin laminez flexible. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=6°3 to 67. Transparent ;*~~

~~*eeoserr*~~

~~*aon Se Bess s+ amasensensie ns ys===**~~

~~*Fig. 398.*~~

~~*resinous or adamantine; on OP pearly. Greenish or yellowish white, inclining to grey ; streak white. B.B. on charcoal fuses to a white globule containing metallic lead ; partially suluble in n.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*acid with effervescence.*~~

~~*C.c.: sulphate of lead 57°6, oxide of lead 42°4, Leadhills; rare.*~~

~~*HYDROUS SULPHATES.*~~

~~*318. MIRABILITE (Glauber Salt), NagS+10H,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 72° 15'. Cl. orthodiagonal; fracture conchoidal. H.=1°5to 2; G.=1°4 to 1°5. Pellucid and colour- less. C.c.: 19°2 soda, 24°8 sulphuric acid, and 56 water. As an efflorescence in quarries, on old walls, or on the ground; in the waters of lakes and springs in Russia and Egypt, and on Vesuvius on lava. :*~~

~~*319. Gypsum, CaS+2H,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 80° 57'. The most common forms are oP 111°30'; P 138° 40'; —P 143° 30'; and oP*0. Twocommon combinations are oP(f), oP*%o (p),—P (1) (fig. 129), and this with P. Lenticular crystals often occur ; hemitropes frequent (figs. 161, 150, 151); also granular, compact, fibrous, scaly, or pulverulent. Cl. elinodiagonal perfect, along P much less perfect ; sectile ; thin plates flexible. . H.=1°5 to 2 (lowest on P); G.=2°2 to 274. Transparent or translucent ; vitreous, on cleavage pearly or silky. Colourless, and snow-white, but often red, grey, yellow, brown, and more rarely greenish or bluish. ' In the closed tube yields water. B.B. becomes opaque and white; soluble in 400 to 500 parts of water, scarcely more so in acids. C.c.: 46°5 sulphuric acid, 32°6 lime, and 20°9 water. ' Transparent crystals, or Selenite, occur in the salt-mines of Bex in Switzerland, of the*~~

~~Tyrol, Salzburg, and Bohemia, in the sulphur- mines of Sicily, at Lockport in New York, in porphyry at Gourock, in the clay of Shotover Hill near Oxford, at Chatley near Bath, and many other localities. Fibrous gypsum at Campsie, Matlock in Derbyshire, and at Ilfeld in the Harz. Compact gypsum in whole beds in many parts of England, Germany, France, and Italy, at Volterra in Tuscany (Alabaster) often with rock-salt. The finer qualities (or alabaster) are cut into various ornamental articles.~~

~~320. KiEsERITE, MgS+H,.~~

~~Rhombic, but chiefly massive. G.=2°52. white. C.c.: magnesia 29, sulphuric acid 58, water 13. Stassfurt.~~

~~321. EpsoMITE (Zpsom Salt), MgS+7H,.~~

~~Right prismatic. P mostly hemihedric; oP 90°38'. oP (dN, coPoo (0), P (2) (fig. 399). Granular, fibrous, or earthy. Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=1°'75. Pellucid; vitreous; and white. Taste bitter. C.c.: 16°32 magnesia, 32°53 sulphuric acid, and 51'15 water. Efflorescence on various rocks, as at Hurlet near Paisley, Idria, Montmartre, and Freiberg; on the ground in Spain and the Russian steppes ; in mineral waters, as at Epsom in Surrey, Saidschitz and Seidlitz in Bohemia. Used in medicine,~~

~~322, GostaniTe (White Vitriol), ZnS So Right prismatic.~~

~~Pellucid:; greyish In beds at~~

~~oP 90° 42'; isomor-~~

~~phous with epsomite. oP, oPo, P (M, 0, : 1) (fig. 399). P Mostly granular or stalactitic; Fig. 999 (sp. 821).~~

~~reniform and incrusting. Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=2to 2:1. Pellucid; vitreous. White, inclining to grey, yellow, green, or red. Taste nauseous-astringent. C.c.: 28°2 zinc oxide, 27°9 sulphuric acid, and 43°9 water. Holywell in Flintshire, Cornwall, Ram- melsberg near Goslar in the Harz, Falun, Schemnitz. Used in dyeing and medicine.~~

~~823. Morenositz, NiS+7H,.~~

~~Acicular, fibrous, and as an efflorescence. H. =2 to .2°25; G.=2. Lustre vitreous. Apple-green; streak white. Soluble. Mor- veru in Argyllshire, Cape Ortegal (Spain), Lake Huron, Pennsylvania.~~

~~324, MELANTERITE (Green Vitriol, Cop- peras), FeS+7H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 75° 45'. oP (f) 82° 22; —P (P) 101° 34'; P*0(0) 67° 30' (fig. 400); chiefly stalactitic, reniform, or in~~

~~Fig. 400 (sp. 324).~~

~~crusts. Cl. basal, perfect; prismatic less so. H.=2; G. =1'8 to 1°9. Translucent, rarely transparent ; vitreous. Leek- ormountain-green, often with a yellowish coating; streak white. C.c.: 26 protoxide of~~

~~Hurlet near Paisley,~~

~~iron, 29 sulphuric acid, and 45 water. Used in~~

~~Bodenmais, Rammelsberg, Falun, Schemnitz, Bilin.~~

~~401~~

~~dyeing, and in manufacturing ink, Prussian blue, and sulphuric acid.~~

~~325, Smixire, Mn,S+H,. Stalactitic aggregates. Rose to white. Felsébanya (Hungary). 326. MALLARDITE, MnS+7H,.~~

~~Crystalline foliated masses ; apparently oblique prismatic. Lucky Bay mine in Utah.~~

~~827. BIEBERITE (Cobalt Vitriol), CoS +7H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic ; usually stalactitic, or an efflorescence. Pale~~

~~rose-red, C.c.: 20 cobalt oxide, 4 magnesia, 29 sulphuric acid, and 47 water. Bieber near Hanau, and Leogang.~~

~~828. ALUNOGENE (Hair-Salt), Al,8’+18H,.~~

~~Capillary or acicular, in crusts or reniform masses. H.=1°5 to 2; G.=1°6 to1‘7. Silky. White, inclining to green or yellow. C.c.: 36 sulphuric acid, 15°4 alumina, 48°6 water. Volcanoes of South America, in coal and lignite in Germany, and on old walls.~~

~~329, ALUMINITE (Websterite), Al,S+9H.~~

~~Reniform, and very fine scaly, or fibrous. Fracture earthy ; sectile or friable. H.=1; G.=1°7. Opaque ; dull or glimmering ; snow-white or yellowish white. C.c.: 29°8 alumina, 23°2 sulphuric acid, and 47 water. Newhaven in Sussex ; Epernay, Auteuil, and Lunel Vieil in France; Halle and Morl in Prussia, Felsébanyite, from Hungary, in rhombic tubes, is similar, but has 10 per cent. of water.~~

~~330. Coquimaire, Fe,38+9H,.~~

~~Hexagonal. P 58°. Crystals OP; with «P and P; usually granular, Cl. oP, imperfect. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=2 to 2°1. White, also brown, yellow, red, and blue. C.c.: 28°5 iron peroxide, 42°6 sulphuric acid, and 28-9 water. Copiapo in Chili, and Calama in Bolivia,~~

~~381. CoprapiTe, 2Fe,58+13H,.~~

~~Six-sided tables, but system uncertain ; also granular. Cl. per- fect. Translucent; pearly. Yellow. C.c.: 34 iron peroxide, 42 sulphuric acid, and 24 water. Copiapo in Chili. Also radiated- fibrous masses, dirty greenish yellow, incrusting the former, with 32 sulphuric acid and 37 water. Both probably mixtures.~~

~~Fibroferrite, also from Chili, and Yellow Iron Ore, from the brown coal at Kolosoruk in Bohemia and Modum in Norway, are both reniform, or compact and earthy. H.=2°5 to3; G.=2°7 to 2°9. Colour ochre-yellow. Apatelite, reniform-earthy, yellow, from Auteuil near Paris, is similar; also Vitriol Ochre from Falun. Misy, from Rammelsberg in the Harz, containing sulphates of iron, copper, zinc, and other metals, is a product of decomposition.~~

~~332. PissopHanr, (Al,!e,),8+15Hy.~~

~~Stalactitic ; fracture conchoidal ; very easily frangible. H.=2; G.=1°9 to 2. Transparent or translucent; vitreous. Olive-green to liver-brown ; streak greenish white to pale yellow. C.c.: 7 to 35 alumina, 10 to 40 iron peroxide, 12 sulphuric acid, and 41 water. Saalfeld and Reichenbach in Saxony.~~

~~Carphosiderite, reniform, opaque, resinous, and straw-yellow, with a greasy feel, is related. H.=4°5; G.= 2°5. Consists of hydrous sulphate of g iron. Labrador. Ww~~

~~338, CHaLcaNnTuTe, CuS+5H,.~~

~~Anorthic. oPo(n): cP ® 79°* iP Qs oP (7) 127° Oe. Pin 120° 50': P:¢ 108" 37", @P* (7): oo'P (Af) 128° 10' (fig. 401). Generally incrusting. €]. T and MM, im- perfect. H.= 25; G.=2°2, Blue. C.c.: 32 protoxide of copper, 382 sulphuric Cornwall, Wicklow,~~

~~Fig. 401 (sp. 333).~~

~~acid, 36~~

~~Hungary,~~

~~Falun, and on lava of Vesuvius. 334. BRocHANTITE, CuS+8CuH,.~~

~~oP 104° 32'; Po~~

~~hi2* 3 3. and. cP; also reniform. Cl.~~

~~water. Tyrol,~~

~~Right prismatic.~~

~~brachydiagonal, perfect, H.=3'5 to 4;~~

~~G.=3°75 to 39. Transparent or trans-~~

~~lucent; vitreous. Emerald or blackish~~

~ green; streak bright green. C.c.: 70

Fig. 402 (sp. 334). copper protoxide, 18 sulphuric acid,

and 12 water. Sandlodge (Unst), Roughton Gill in Cumber- XVI — 51

402

land, Rezbanya, (Krisuvigite). 335. Lanirs, CuS+3CuH,+2H,. Right prismatic. oP 123° 44'. Crystals long-tabular, mostly

Ekaterinburg; also Krisuvig in Ieeland

Also in fibro-lamellar and concretionary crusts, with

in twins. ' earthy surface. Cl. basal and brachydiagonal. H.=2°5; G. =3°5. Vitreous. Greenish blue. C.c.: 65°1 copper protoxide, 16°4 sul-

Cornwall.

phuric acid, and 18°5 water. "UP also Konigince from Siberia.

Warringtonite is similar ;

336. JomANNITE (Uran-vitriol).

Oblique prismatic, C 85° 40'. oP 69°. ; trona (No. 291, fig. 383), but minute ; arranged in concretionary and reniform masses. H.=2t02°5; G.=3'19. Semitransparent; vitreous. Soluble. Taste bitter. Bright grass-green. C.c.: oxides of uranium 67°72, oxide of copper 5°99, sulphuric acid 20°02, water 5°59. Joachimsthal (Bohemia), J ohann-Georgenstadt.

337. Biupite (Astrakanite), (MgNae)S + 2H,.

Oblique prismatic, C 100° 43'. cP°2 112° 55'; eP (m), eP®oo (0), oo P°2 (n), ao P® oo (2), -P(p), P*co (d), OP (ec) (fig. 403). In prismatic crystals, or efflorescent. H.=3°5; G. =2°2, Transparent. White or red. C.c.: 47°9 sulphuric acid, 8°5 soda, 12 magnesia, and 21°5 water. Salt lakes on the

~~*Volga near Astrakhan, Ischl, Stassfurt, and near Mendoza in South America.*~~

~~*Reussine from Seidlitz is similar, but a mixture.*~~

~~*338. LoWEITE, 2(Na.S + MgS)+5Hg.*~~

~~*Pyramidal, but only compact. CL. basal, distinct; also octahedral, with angles 110° 44' and 105° 2.) H.=2% ; to 3; G.=2°376. Vitreous. Yellow-*~~
~~*Fig. 403 (sp. 387). ish white to flesh-red. C.c.: 20 soda, 18 magnesia, 52 sulphuric acid, and 15 water. Ischl.*~~

~~*339. Syncrnite, K,S+CaS+ Hy.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 76°. oP 73° 55'. coP%co (5), OP (2), oP (p), oP°2 (p"), oP (p'"), 2P°2 (e'), P (0), 2P (0), Peo (q)— Po (7), Pe (1'), 2P%co (r"), —3P°co (9). Cl. oP, perfect; fracture conchoidal. H. =2°5; G. =2°25. Colour- less to milk-white. C.c.: lime 16°88, potash 28°55, sulphuric acid 48°45, water 5°47, Soluble in 400 parts of*~~

~~*Crystals similar to*~~

~~*Crystals «P°c (a),*~~

~~*\ ay a*~~

~~*er i ae z*~~

~~*water. In cavities iu halite at Kalusz (Galicia).*~~

~~*340. Potyuatirs, 20aS+MgS+K,8 UP + ele:*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 115°. Mostly fibrous,' Hi<=8'5% (Gee 277 (00 0238.*~~

~~*Translucent; resinous. Colourless, gene- rally brick-red. C.c.: sulphate of lime*~~

~~*Fig. 404 (sp. 389). 45, of inagnesia 20°5, of potash 29, water 5:5. Berchtesgaden.*~~

~~Ischl, Aussee, and~~

~~_ Cubie. O, sometimes with oO and Ow. Generally efflorescent in fibrous erusts. Cl. octahedral; fracture conchoidal. H.=2 to 2°5;G.=1°75to1‘9. Translucent. White. Taste sweetish-astrin- gent. Soluble. B.B. evolves sulphurous fumes. (a) Potash Alum: RO=K,0; 33°7 sulphuric acid, 10°9 alumina, 9°9 potash, and 45°5 water. In the coal formation at Hurlet and Campsie in Scotland ; the Tertiary brown coals of Hesse and the Rhine; the Lias neat Whitby ; Silurian alum slates of Scotland, Norway, and Sweden; the volcanic formations of the Lipari Islands, Sicily, and the Azores. (6) Ammonia Alum: RO=(NH,O),; about 4 per cent. oxide of ammonium and 48 water. In closed tube forms a sublimate of sul- phate of amnionia. Tschermig in Bohemia. (c) Soda Alum: RO=Na,0; with 7 of soda and 48 water. Mendoza in South America, Solfatara near Naples, and Milo. (d) Magnesia Alum: RO=MgoO. Translucent and silky. South Africa, Iquique in Peru (Pickeringite). (e) Iron Alum (Feather Alum): RO=FeO. Hurlet near Paisley, Morsfeld in Bavaria, Krisuvig in Iceland. ganese Alum: RO=MnO. From Delagoa Bay in South Africa, An alum with 3°7 oxide of zine occurs at Felsobanya, and has been termed Dietrichite.~~

~~Cubic, O; 0c; Oc, Black, brown, or green. H.=8; G.=~~

~~(f) Man-.~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~2°79. Solfatara near Naples, Goslar in the Harz, and Krem- mites~~

~~earthy. Cl. basal. G. —2°6 to 2°8. Translucent ; vitre- ous, pearly on O. Colorless, but often stained. Hungary, Tolfa (near Civita Vecchia), Lipari Islands, Auvergne, and Milo.~~

~~344, JARoSITE, K,S+Fe,3S+ 2(Fe,3H,) .~~

~~Rhombohedral ; R 88° 58’. Cl. basal; also fibrous in nodules or incrusting. H.=2°5 to 35; G.— 3°24. Spain, Saxony, and Mexico.~~

~~Fig. 405 (sp. 343). Colour ochre-yellow.~~

~~*345, GELBEISENERZ, K,S+4¥e,S+9H,. Foliated and massive. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=277 to 2°9. Bohemia, Norway, and Tcheleken Island in the Caspian Sea.*~~

~~*347. BorryoGENnr (Red Vitriol), Fe,S,+3(Fe,28)+36Hy.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 62°26'. oP 119° 56'. Commonly botry- oidal. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=—2. Translucent; vitreous. Hyacinth- red and orange-yellow. Falun in Sweden.*~~

~~*348. HERRENGRUNDITE.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 88° 50'. Dark emerald-green crystals. H. =2°5; G.=3°18. C.e.: 57°22 oxide of copper, 23°04 sulphuric oxide, 19°44 water, sometimes with lime. Herrengrund (Hungary).*~~

~~*349, Lixanire, (PbS+H,Pb)+(CuS+H,Cu).*~~

~~*Oblique prisinatic, C 77°22'. oP (M) 61° 41'; 2Pew (a) 52° 31'. Crystals cP®co (a), OP ©, and the above forms generally. Hemi- tropes united by «P% (a). Cl. orthodiagonal, perfect ; fracture*~~

†

~~*Fig. 406. H.=2°5 to 3; G. =5°2 to 5°45. Translucent ; adamant-*~~

~~*conchoidal. inc. Azure-blue to dark blue; streak pale blue. C.e,: oxide, of lead 55°69, oxide of copper 19°83, sulphuric acid 19°98, water 4°5. Leadhills, Red Gill and Roughton Gill (Cumberland), Linares in Spain, and Nertchinsk.*~~

~~*350. CALEDONITE, 5PbS+2(H,Pb)+3(H,Cu). Right prismatic. ooP'(m) 95°; Poo (2) 70° 57'; 2Poo (x) 36° 10'.*~~

~~*Crystals frequently as in fig. 407, but gene- aN rally hemihedral. C1. brachydiagonal, @ dis- Jn) tinct; m, cimperfect. H.=2'5 to3; G. =6'4. Gi Transparent; resinous. Verdigris-green and*~~

~~*mountain-green ; streak greenish white. C.Gst 68°42 oxide of lead, 10°17 oxide of copper, 17°3 sulphuric acid, 4°05 water. Leadhills, ; Red Gill in Cumberland, Rezbanya in Tran- sylvania.*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*351. Lerrsomire, 30u,9 + 2(Al,3H,) + \ € 15H,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic; but in tufts of eapillary WV crystals with velvet-like appearance. Colour 6 smalt-blue to sky-blue. C.c.: 49 oxide of Fig. 407 (sp. 350).*~~

~~*1°41 oxide of iron, 12°1 sulphuric*~~

~~*eopper, 2°97 lime, 11°21 alumina, Woodwardite is*~~

~~*acid, 22°5 water. Moldawa in the Banat. probably an aluminous variety of the above. Turquoise-blue to greenish blue. Cornwall.*~~

~~*352. Karnitz, MgS + KCl + 3H. Obliqne prismatic, C 85° 5'*~~

~~*(fig. 408). G.=2°13. Cl. ortho- diagonal. White to reddish.*~~

~~*Fig. 408 (sp. 352). C.c.: 16°1 magnesia, 15°7 potash, 32°2 sulphuric acid, 14°3 chlorine,*~~

~~*21°7 water. Stassfurt.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*TELLURATES AND CHROMATES.*~~

~~*353. Montanirer, Bi,Te+2H,. Incrusting, carthy. Lustre waxy. Yellowish. Opaque. bismuth 66°8, tellurium 26°8, water 5-9.*~~

~~*C.c. Highland in Montana.*~~

~~*354. Macnouite, HgTe. ' White acicular crystals from Keystone mine in Colorado. –*~~

~~855. CROcOISITE, PbCr. Oblique prismatic, C 77° 27'. oP 98° 42' (AN, — P 119° 12' (2), oo P°2 (7) 56°10', coP%oo (g), (fig. 409). Cl. of, distinct; seetile. H.=2°5 to 8; G.=5'9 to6°1. Translucent ; ada- mantine. Hyacinth- or anrora-red ; streak orange-yellow. C.c.: 31 chromic acid, and 69 lead protoxide. Berezoff, Mursinsk, and Nijni-Tagilsk in the Urals, Congonhas do Campo in Brazil, 'Rezbanya, Moldawa, and Tarnowitz. Used as a pigment, but not permanent. 356. PHa@nico-CHROITE,2PbCr + Pb. Right prismatic; dimensions un- known. He=s tos hs Go br7b: Translucent on the edges; resinous or adainantine. Cochineal- to hya-~~

~~Fig. 409 (sp. 355). einth-red ; streak brick-red. C.c.: 23 chromic acid, and 77 prot- oxide of lead. Berezoff.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 67° 15'. Crystals 0P,-—P,—P®oo (or P, f, h), always twinned (fig. 410), the faces of OP reniform. H,=2°5 to3; G.=5°'5 to 5°8. Semi 05> translucent or opaque; resinous. Blackish or lead protoxide, 11 copper protoxide, 28 chromic acid. Leadhills, Berezoff, Congonhas do Campo (Brazil). 358. WuLFenrtTE, PbMo. Pyramidal. P131°48'. OP(a),4P (5), P, oP (m), oP2 ® (figs. fracture uneven, or con- choidal. H.=8; G.=6°3 to adamantine. Orange- yellow, honey-yellow, and of lead 61°5, inolybdic acid 88°5; red varietics have entyre in Kirkcudbright (fig. 412), Bleiberg, Rez- eatecas. 2PbOMoO,; + CaOMo0,, with 6°88 of~~

~~357. VAUQUELINITE, 2(2PbCr + Pb) + (2CuCr + Cu). forming an angle of, 134° 30'; also botryoidal or dark olive-green ; streak siskin-green. C.c.: 61 Hig, £10. MOLYBDATES AND TUNGSTATES. 411-414), Cl P; brittle; to 6°9. Pellucid; resinous eolourless. C.c.; protoxide some chromic acid. Lack- banya, Pennsylvania, Za- lime, occurs in Chili.~~

~~Fig. 413 (sp. 858). °~~

~~359, EosirTE. : Pyramidal. OP © : p'117°10' ; p' : p 125° 40' (fig. 415). H.=3 to4. Colonr deep aurora-red. Streak orange-~~

~~yellow. A vanadio-molybdate of lead. Lead- hills.~~

~~360. MrcasasiTE, Mg,Ws3.~~

~~*Oblique prismatic; similar to wolframite. In fine needles. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=6°45 to 6°97. Vitreous to adamantine. Yellowish brown to brownish red, translucent hyacinth- red; streak ochre-yellow. C.c.: protoxide of manganese 23°1, protoxide of iron 5:4, tungstic acid 71°5. Schlaggenwald, Sadis- dorf, Morococha in Peru.*~~

~~*361. ScHEELITE, CaW. Pyramidal; with many of the modifying planes hemihedric. P. 113° 32', Cl. 2Poo (nm) 180° 33', perfect; Pand OP less so. Frac- ture conchoidal. H.=4 to 4°5; G.=—5°9 to 6°2. Translucent ; resinous to adamantine. Colourless, and grey, yellow, or brown; streak white. C.c.: 19°4lime, 80°6 tungsticacid. Caldbeckfell near*~~

~~*Fig. 414 (sp. 358).*~~

~~*Fig. 415 (sp. 359).*~~

~~*403*~~

~~*Keswick, Pengelly in Cornwall, Zinnwald, Schlageenwald, Salz- burg, Chili, Si- beria, Connecti- eut. Employed for the extrac- tion of yellow tungstic acid, a fine pigment.*~~

~~*3862. Srouz- ITE, PbW. Fig. 416 (sp. 361).*~~

~~*Pyramidal; generally hemihedric. P. 131° 25'. Crystals sometimes spindle-shaped. Cl.P, imperfeet. H.=3; G.= 7°9to8-1. Translucent; resinous. Grey, yellow, brown. C.c.; 48°4 protoxide of lead, 51°6 tungstic acid. Keswick, Zinn- wald, Coquimbo (Brazil).*~~

~~*363. REINITE, FeW.*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 103° 32'; basal angle 122° 8'. Cl. oP. H.=4; G.=6°64. C.c.: protoxide of iron 23°4, tungstic aeid 75°45. Kimbosan in Japan.*~~

~~*364. WoLFRAMITE, (Fc, Mn) W. Oblique prismatie, C 89° 22', G1" 54", Pte (wu) 98° 69, Po (), 42P¢2 (s), Twinscommon. Also laminar. Cl. clinodiagonal, perfect; fracture un- even; H.=6 to 6; G.=7-1. to. 7°65. Opaque; resinous, metallic adamantine on the cleavage. Brownish black ;*~~

~~*streak black (varieties with most iron) to reddish brown (most manganese). C.c.: 76 tungstic acid, 9°5 to 20 protoxide of iron, and 4 to 15 protoxide of manganese, in some with 1:1 niobic acid. East Pool, Carnbrae, and mines near Redruth; Godolphin's Ball in Cumberland ; Alten- berg, Geyer, Ehrenfriedersdorf, Schlag- genwald, Zinnwald, the WHarz; also Urals, Ceylon, and North America. Fi*~~

~~*Ferberite, with 26 protoxide of iren ig. 418.*~~

~~*and 2FeW + Fe (H. =4 to4'5; G.=6°7 to 6°8), from Spain, may bo different.*~~

~~*365. Hipnuritz, MnW. |*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP (Af). M:M105°. Cl. Poo, perfect ; usually foliated or columnar. H.=4°5; G.=7°14. Adamantine on cleavage; elsewhere greasy. Brown-red; streak yellow-brown, C.c.: protoxide of manganese 28°4, tungstic acid 76°6., Mammoth district in Nevada.*~~

~~*Fig. 417 (sp. 361).*~~

~~*oP (M) 100° 37',-4P%0 (P) coP°2 (b),-P*~~

~~*(@),*~~

~~*ANHYDROUS PHOSPHATES, ARSENIATES, AND VANADIATES.*~~

~~*366. XENOTIME, Y3P.*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 82° 22' middle angle; polar angle 124° 30'. Crystals: P; oP; aoPo. Cl. oP. H. =4°5; G.=4'6 to 4°55. Translucent in thin splinters; resinous. Yellowish and flesh-red.. C.c.: 62 yttria, and 38 phosphoric acid ; but some with 8 to 11 eerium protoxide. Lindesnaes and Hit- teré in Norway, Ytterby (Sweden), Georgia, and (Wiserine) St Gotthard.*~~

~~*867. CRYPTOLITE, Ce3P,.*~~

~~*Aecicular crystals, embedded in apatite. ' G.=4°6. Transparent. Pale wine-yellow. Powder sol. in con. s. acid. Wohler found 73°70 cerium protoxide,*~~

~~27°37 phosphoric acid, and 1°51 iron protoxide. Occurs in the apatites of granite in Scotland, but not in those of limestones. Also at Arendal.~~

~~Fig. 419 (sp. 366).~~

~~368. Monazite, (Ce, La, Th)3P2.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 76° 14'. oP 93° , 23'; erystals (fig. 420) generally thick or tabular. Cl. basal, perfect; translucent on edges. Flesh-red and reddish brown. C.c.: 28 phosphoric acid, 37 to 46 cerium prot- arse oxide, 24 to 27 lanthanum oxide; that from Fig. 420 (sp. 368). Zlatoust from 18 to 32°5 of thoria. Notero ' Ayn in Norway, Miask, Norwich in Connecticut, and the Rio Chico in Colombia. Turnerite, from Dauphiné, in complex transparent honey-yellow crystals, is monazite.~~

~~ee~~

~~Noa ae a~~

~~404~~

~~369. TRIPHYLITE, (2Fe + Li,)P..~~

~~Right prismatic. ooP 133°; chiefly granular, H.=5; G.=3°6. Resinous. Greenish grey with blue spots. C.c.: iron protoxide 40, manganese protoxide 5°5, lithia 7'5, phosphoric acid 45. Boden- inais in Bavaria, Norwich in Massachusetts. Lithiophilite, from Fairfield (Connecticut), is a manganesian triphylite.~~

~~370. BERZELIITe (Kuhnite), (CaMg)zAsy ; Massive. H.=5 to 6; G.=252. C.c.: lime 23, magnesia By arsenic acid 60. Sol. inn. acid. Langban (Sweden).~~

~~371, ARSENIATE oF Nickel, Ni, As). Amorphous. H.=4; G.=4°98. Sulphur-yellow. C.c.: nickel 48°2, arsenic acid 50°5. J ohann-Georgeustadt.~~

~~379, Nickruerz, NisAs,+2Ni. Crystalline massive. G. 4°84. Dark grass-green ; streak lighter. C.c.: oxide of nickel 6271, arsenic acid 36°6. Johann-Georgeustadt.~~

~~373. DECHENITE, (PbZn)V9.~~

~~Botryoidal and stalactitic. H.=3 to 4; G =5°82. Lustre resinous to greasy. Yellowish red, deep red ; streak orange to pale yellow. C.c.: 57°7 oxide of lead, 15°8 oxide of zinc, 24°2 of vanadic acid. Wanlockhead, Freiburg (in Baden), Lauter Valley.~~

~~374, PSITTACINITE, 3(Pb,V,)+Cu3V.+6CuHy,.~~

~~Mammillated and incrusting. Siskin- to olive-green. C.c.: vanadic acid 19°3, lead oxide 53°2, copper oxide 18°95, water 8°58. Silver Star (Montana).~~

~~375. PucHERITE, Bi,Vo.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 123°55'". H.=4; G.= 6°25. Cl. basal, per- fect; vitreous. Red or reddish brown; streak yellow. Easily soluble inacids, C.c.: bismuth oxide 71°7, vanadic acid 28°3. Schneeberg.~~

~~376. AvropitE, Ca,Sb,.~~

~~Cubic (figs. 30 with 26 and 33). H.=5:5 to 6; G.=5. Lustre greasy; yellow to resin-browa. 'Translucent. C.c.: antimonic acid 73°2, lime 17°5, iron protoxide 2°7, magnesia 1°5, soda 4°38. Lang- ban (Wermland).~~

~~HYDROUS PHOSPHATES, &c.~~

~~377. BRUSHITE, (30a +2H,),P> + 4H.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 62° 45'. Needle crystals. H.—2 to 2s G. =2°21. Vitreous. C.c.: lime 32°6, phosphoric acid 41°3, water 26'4. Aves Islands and Sombrero (Antilles).~~

~~378. NewberviTE, Mg,H,, P.+6H,.~~

~~Right prismatic. Cl. brachydiagonal. C.c,: phosphoricacid 41°25, magnesia 23, water 35°7. From guano, Skipton Caves, Victoria.~~

~~379. HaIpINceritE. CayAs,+3Hby.~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 100° Cl. perfect; sectile, flexible. H. =2 to 2°5; G.=2°8 to 2°9. Otherwise like pharmacolite (sp. 381). C.c.: 85°68 arseuiate of lime, and 14°32 water. Joachimsthal.*~~

~~*380. RosrtitE, R,As,+2H,.*~~

~~*Anorthic, Cl. macrodiagonal. Rose-red; streak white. H.= 3°5; G.=—3°46. C.c.: 25°5 lime, 10°3 cobalt oxide, 3°6 magnesia, 52°4 arsenic acid, 8°2 water. Schneeberg.*~~

~~*381. PHARMACOLITE, 2CaAs,+6Hy.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 65° 4' (fig. 421), 139° 17',- P (n) 141° 8', 4P®c0 (0) 88° 14', oP°3 (g) 157° 5'. Crystals generally acicular and radiated. Cl. clinodiagonal, perfect; sectile and flexible. H.=2 to 2°55; G.=2°6 to 2°8. Translucent; vitreous. Pearly white. Yields water in the closed tube. C.c.: arsenic acid 51, lime 25, é water 24. _Andreasberg, Bieber, Mar- Fig, 421. kirchen, Wittichen. Generally mixed with erythrite or annabergite.*~~

~~*382, WaprLerity, 2CaAs+8H,,*~~

~~*Anorthic; «P' (m), «'P (I), oP'2 (n), o'P.2 (WN), Pro (d), "Po (D), 3 Po (t), 3'P,co (1), 2P'2 (p), 323 (9), 3'P3 (@), 4,P4 (w), 2,P2 (mw), Poo (b) (fig. 422); also incrusting and globular. Cl. clinodiagonal. H.=2 t02'5; G.= 2°48. Colourless. Vitreous. C.c.: lime 15°6, magnesia 7°4, arsenic acid 47°5, water 29°5. Joachimsthal.*~~

~~*383. Hornesire, Mg,As,-+8Hp.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. oP 107°. H.*~~

~~*=5 tol; G.=2°47. White. Translucent; pearly. C.c.: 24°83 magnesia, 29°14 water, 46°56 arsenic acid. Probably from Hungary.*~~

~~*oxide of*~~

~~*oP (f) 117° 24', -P (2)*~~

~~*Fig. 422 (sp. 882).*~~

~~384. VIVIANITE, 3FeP,+ 8H.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 75°34', ooP (m) 108° 2'; P (vw) 120° 26', Peco (w) 54° 40'. wing prismatic (figs. 423, 424) ; also fibrous. or earthy. Cl. clino- n Sigganal, pated, thin <—JSiN lamine flexible. H. =2; oe G.=2°6 to 2°77. Trans- lucent or transparent ; vitreous, or bright pearly on cleavage. Indigo- blue to blackish green ; streak bluish white, but soon becomes blue on exposure. Cee 331 iron protoxide, 12°2 iron peroxide, 29 phosphoric acid, and 25°7 water.~~

~~Transparent indigo-~~

~~coloured crystals at St ; Agnes in Cornwall, and Fig. 428. Fig. 424. Allentown and Imleytown in New Jersey ; earthy in Cornwall, Styria, North America, Greenland, and New Zealand ; and in peat mosses in northern Germany, Sweden, Norway, and Shetland.~~

~~385. SyMPLESITE, Fe,As,+ 8H.~~

~~Oblique prismatic; in minute acicular crystals. Cl clino- diagonal H.=2'5; G.=2°96. Vitreous. Cleavage face pearly. Celadon-green to pale indigo; streak bluish white. Lobenstein in Reuss, and Lélling in Carinthia.~~

~~386. EryTuRitTE, CosAs,+ 8H.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 55° 9'. coP*co (P), ep a (1), Peo (ah) 5 also oP8 (k), and P (J) 118° 28' (fig. 425). Cl. clinodiagonal (P), perfect'; sectile; thin lamine flexible H.=1°5 to.25; G.=2°9 to 8. Translucent; vitreous, pearly on the cleavage. Crimson or peachblossom-red. C.c.: 38-2 arsenic acid, 37°8 cobalt protoxide, 24 water, but often with nickel 9. Cornwall, Alston in Cumberland, Alva in Stirlingshire, Schneeberg, Saalfeld, Allemont, Riechelsdorf, the Pyrenees, and Modum in Norway. Kobaltbeschlag or Earthy Incrusting Cobalt, reniform, is a mixture of erythrine with arseni- ous acid. Lavendulan, thin reniform lavender- blue crusts, translucent, resinous, or .vitreous ; (H. =2°5 to 8; G.=2°95 to 3:1), consisting of Fig.~~

~~*425. arsenic acid, protoxides of cobalt, nickel, and copper, with water ; from Annaberg.*~~

~~*387. Kérricite, (Zn, Co, Ni)sAs,+ 8H.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic ; massive or in crusts, with crystalline surface and fibrous structure. Cl. clinodiagoual, perfect. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=3°1. Lustre of fracture silky. Colour light carmine and peach- blossom-red, of different shades ; streak reddish white. Translucent to subtranslucent. C.c.: 30°52 zine oxide, 6°91 cobalt oxide, 2 nickel oxide, with arsenic acid. Schneeberg.*~~

~~*_ 388. ANNABERGITE (Nickel Ochre), Ni,As + 8H.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic ; in capillary crystals, also earthy ; sectile. H.=2 to 25; G.=8 to 31. Dull or glistening. Apple-green or greenish white; streak greenish white and shining. C.c.: 38°7 arsenic acid, 37°3 nickel protoxide, and 24 water, but with a little cobalt or iron. Leadhills, Pibble in Kirkeudbright, Andreasberg, Saalfeld, Riechelsdorf.*~~

~~*339. Luptamrre, Fe,2h)+9H,. Oblique prismatic, C 79° 27'.*~~

~~=~~

~~‘~~

~~t~~

~~1 ‘~~

~~t~~

~~‘ ‘ 1~~

~~t~~

~~1 1 1 1~~

~~L~~

~~oP 131° 23'; OP; P 111° 29°~~

~~(fig. 426). Cl. OP, perfect. H.=386; G=312. Ge. 53°05 oxide of iron, 29°88~~

~~phosphoric acid, 17°0 water. Cornwall.~~

~~390. FittowiTE, 3(RP,)+He.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 89° 51'; P; -2P8; OP. Cl. basal. H.=4°5; G. =3°43. Resinous to greasy. Wax-yellow to red-brown, or colourless; streak white; translucent. C.c.: phosphoric acid 40°2, iron protoxide 6:8, manganese protoxide 40:2, linc 5°2, soda 5°8, water 1°7, Branchville (Connecticut).~~

~~391. HurEavuirs, 5(Mn, Fe)2P,+5H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 89° 27'. oP 61°. H.=8'°5; G.=8°2. Translucent ; resinous.~~

~~Fig. 426 (sp. 389).~~

~~pseudo-rhombohedral.~~

~~Fracture conchoidal. Reddish yellow or~~

~~'brown. B.B. fuses easily to a black metallic globule. Soluble in~~

~~acids. -C.c. : 39 phosphoric acid, 8 iron protoxide, 42 mangancse protoxide, and 12 water. Hurcaux near Limoges.~~

~~METNERALOG Y~~

~~Heterozite. .H.=5; G.=3°5. Opaque; vitreons or resinous. Dark violet or blue to greenish grey ; streak violet-blue or erim- son-red, Contains more iron and less manganese than the above, Hureaux.~~

~~392. DickINsoniTE, 4(R;P,)+3H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 60° 30'. Crystals tabular. Cl. basal, per- fect. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=3°34. Vitreous; pearly on cleavage. Olive- to oil-green, and grass-~~

~~green; streak white. Transparent; brittle. C.c.: phosphoric acid 40, iron protoxide 12°7, manganese protoxide 25, lime 11°8, soda 6°6, water 38. Brancliville (Con- necticut).~~

~~393. TrrpLorpire, (Mn, Fe);P,+H,(Mn, Fe),.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 51° 56'. Generally fibrous; transparent ; resinous toadamantine. H.=4°5 to 5; G.=3°7.° Yellowish-brown. C.e.: 48°45 oxide of manganese, 14°88 protoxide of iron, 32°1 phos- phoric acid, 4°1 water. Fairfield (Connecticut).~~

~~394. Farrrievpire, R,P,+2H,.~~

~~Anorthic; usually foliaceous. H.=3°5; G.=3°15. White to straw-yellow ; streak white. Pearly to brilliant-adamantine on eleavage. Transparent; brittle. C.c.: phosphoric acid 38:4, iron protoxide 5°6, manganese protoxide 15°6, lime 30, soda -7, water 10. Fairfield (Conneeticut).~~

~~395. CHonprarsEnire, Mn, As, +H. In small grains. H.=3. Yellow to reddish-yellow. Trans-~~

~~lucent; brittle; fracture conchoidal. Paisberg mines (Werm- land). 396. ReppinciTE, Mn,P,+3H,.~~

~~Right prismatic. P; P2; oPo. H.=8 to 3°5; G.=3°1. Vitreous; rose-pink to yellowish white. Tyranslneent; fracture uneven; brittle. C.c.: phosphoric acid 34°5, iron protoxide 5:43, manganese protoxide 46°83, lime '8, water 18°1. Branchville.~~

~~397. ScoropiTE, Fe,As,+4H,. Right prismatic. P with polar edges 102° 52' and 114° 40'. Crystals P (p), wPo (a), and oP (6); also OP, $P (7), oP (n),~~

~~2P2 (s), oP2 (d) 120° 10', and 2Pa (m) 132° (fig. 427); also columnar and fibrous. Cl. imperfect; brittle. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=3'1 to 8°2. Translucent ; vitreous. Leek-green to greenish black, also indigo- blue, red, and brown. B.B. fuses easily, with arsenical odour, to a grey magnetic slag. Sol. in h. acid, to a brown solution. C.c.: 49°8 arsenic acid, 34°6 iron peroxide, and~~

~~15°6 water. St Austell in Cornwall, near Limoges in France, Schwarzenberg, Lolling in Carinthia, Brazil, and Siberia.~~

~~Right prismatic. 101° 38’ and . 115° 36’, mid- dle edge 111° 30’. oP2 (d)~~

~~and Po (7), P (P), OP (h),~~

~~2Pc (m) 48° (fig. 428). Cry- stals generally PP as Tf do- minant. Cl.r. H.=3 to 4; G.=2°87. Cherry-red. ‘Translucent. C.c.: prot- oxide of iron 48°18, phosphorie acid 37°42, water 19-4. Rock Bridge (Vir- ginia).~~

~~Fig. 427 (sp. 397).~~

~~Fig. 428 (sp. 398). 399. DuFrenivTe (Kraurite), 2¥e,P,+3H, .~~

~~Right prismatic. oP about 123°. Spherical or reniform. Cl. brachydiagonal ; brittle. H.=3 to 3°5; G.=3°3 to 3°4. Trans- lucent on the edges, or opaque; shining or dull. Dirty leek-green or blackish green; streak siskin-green. C.c.: 68 iron peroxide, 28 phosphoric acid, and 9 water. Westerwald, Hirschberg, and Limoges,~~

~~400 Brraunire, 5Fe,3P,+14H,.~~

~~Occurs in small foliated and columnar aggregates. Cl, plane metallic pearly. H.=2; G.=2°878. Colour hyacinth-red to reddish brown ; streak dirty-yellow. C.c. : 54°5 peroxide of iron, 28°65 phosphoric acid, and 16°55 water. Bohemia, Scheibenberg in Saxony.~~

~~405~~

~~401. Exgoyonire, 3fe,2P, + 8H, .~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 48° 33’. Twin face the orthopinacoid. Cl, oP%. H.=8 to 4. Dark hyacinth-réd ; streak yellow. Vitreous to pearly. C.e. : 51°94 peroxide of iron, 31-88 phosphoric aeid, 16°37 water. Eleonore mine near Bieber,~~

~~402. CacoxENE, 2Fe,P,+12H,.~~

~~Radiated tufts, of a brownish-yellow colour. H.=3 to 4 : G.=3°38. Sol. in h.acid. From the Hrbeck mine near Zbirow in Bohemia.~~

~~403. PHARMACOSIDERITE (Cube Ore), 4¥e,3As, +15H,. Cubic and tetrahedral ; usually Ow, with 4 or oO. Brittle.~~

~~H.=2°5; G.=2‘9 to3. Cl. oOo. Semitransparent to translu- cent ; adamantine or resinous. Olive- to emerald-green, honey- yellow, and brown ; streak straw-yellow. Pyro-electric. C.c.: 43 arsenic acid, 40 iron peroxide, and 17 water. Carharrack in Corn- wall, Burdle Gill in Cumberland, Lobenstein in Reuss, Schwarzen- berg in Saxony, North America, and the gold quartz of Australia.~~

~~405. WAVELLITE (Lastonite),3’Ai,2P, +12H,. oP 126° 25 ; Poo 106° 46’. Crystals ooPoo~~

~~(P), oP (d), Poo (0) (fig. 429); but generally small, acicular, and in radiated-hemispherical and stellate-fibrous masses. Cl. along oP and Poo, perfect. H.=3°5 to4; G.=—2°3 to 2°5. Translucent ; vitreous. Colourless, but generally yellowish or greyish,~~

~~sometimes green or blue.. C.c.: 38 alumina, 35°3 phos- Id~~

~~Right prismatic.~~

~~phoric acid, and 26°7 water; but generally traces of fluoric acid (2 per cent.), Shiant Islands and Glencoe in Scotland, Barnstaple, St Austell, near Clonmel and Portrush, Beraun in Bohemia, Amberg in Bavaria ; also~~

~~in New Hampshire and Tennessee. Ceruleolactin, from Fi8- 429. Nassau, has two equivalents less of water.~~

~~406. Vanisrte, Al, P,+4H,.~~

~~Right prismatic; reniform ; conchoidal fracture. H.=4 to 5;~~

~~G. =2°34 to 2°38. Apple- and emerald-green ; streak white. 32°4 alumina, 44°85 phosphoric acid, 22°74 water. Reuss, Montgomery county in Arkansas.~~

~~*Zepharovichite from Bohemia contains one equivalent more water; Evansite from Hungary two equivalents more.*~~

~~*407. FISCHERITE, 2Al,P,+8H,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 118° 32'; generally in crystalline crusts. H.=5; G.=2°46. Grass- and olive-green. Vitreouslustre. C.c.; alumina 42, phosphoric acid 29, water 29. Nijni-Tagilsk.*~~

~~*408. PEGANITE, 2Al,P,+6H,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 127°. In thin reniform crusts, of fibrous structure. H.= —3 to 4; G.=2°49 to 2°54. Grass- aud emerald- green. Vitreous or greasy lustre. C.c.: alumina 45, phosphoric acid 31°3, water 23°7. Striegis in Saxony.*~~

~~*409. Hoprrre, Zn,P+4H,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP2 82° 20'; P with polar edges 106° 36' and 140°. Cl. macrodiagonal, perfect. H.=—2°5to3 ; G.=2°76 to 2°85.*~~

~~*Vitreous or pearly. Greyish white. C.c.: oxide of zinc 35°21; phosphoric acid 31°1, water 15°38. Altenberg.*~~

~~*410. ApAmITE, 4ZnAs,+ Hy.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 91° 52'. Cl. macrodomic. H.=3°'5; G.=4°34. Lustre vitreous. Colonr honey- yellow to violet; streak white. Trans- parent. C.c.: oxide of zinc 56°6, arsenic acid 40°2, water 3°2. Cape Garonne in France, Chafiarcillo in Chili.*~~

~~*(Oo Messbach in*~~

~~*411, Lrserenire 40uP;+ 6H.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP (w) 92° 20', Poo (0) 109° 52', and P (fig. 430). H.=4; G. =8°6 to 3°8. Translucent on the edges; resinous. Leek-, olive-, or blackish-green; streak olive-green. C.c. : 66 copper prot- oxide, 80 phosphoric acid, and 4 water.*~~

~~*Fig. 480 (sp. 411). Gunnislake (Devon), Libethen (Hungary), Nijni-Tagilsk.*~~

~~*- 20°5.*~~

~~*406*~~

~~*412, Ourventre, 40u (As,P,)+ Hy.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. o(P) (r) 92° 30', Poo(Z) 110° 50', Peo (2) (fig. 481); also spherical and reniform, and eolumuar or fibrous. Cl. (r) and (/), im- perfect. H.=—3; G.=4'1 to 4°6. Pellucid in all degrees; vitreous, resinous, or silly. Leek-, olive-, or blackish-green, also yellow or brown; streak olive-green or brown. B.B. in the forceps fuses easily to a dark brown adamantiue bead, covered with radiating crystals; on charcoal detonates, emits arsenical vapours, and is reduced. Sol. in acids and ammonia. C.c.: 56°5 eopper protoxide, 39°5 arsenic acid, and 4 water; but also 1 to 6 phosphoric acid. Carharrack, Tin Croft, Gwennap, and St Day in Cornwall; Alston Moor, Thuringia, Tyrol, Siberia, Chili. oe*~~

~~*413. VuszeLyire, 9Cu, 6Zn, P,, Asp+18H.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 108° 50'. H. =3'5 to 4; G. = 3°53. Green- ish blue. C.c.: copper 37°34, 25°20 zine oxide, 10°41 arsenic acid, 9°01 phosphoric acid, 17°05 water. Moravicza (Banat).*~~

~~*Fig. 431.*~~

~~*414, DEscLoIziTE, 2PbV,.+ He.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 116° 25'. H.=3'5; G.=5'86 to 6:1. Olive-brown to black. C.c. : 56°48 oxide of lead, 16°6 oxide of zine, 1°16 oxide of manganese, 22°74 vanaiic acid, Sierra de Cordoba in the Argentine Republic.*~~

~~*415. Votportulre, 4(Cu, Ca) Vo+Hp.*~~

~~*Hexagonal; small tabular crystals, OP, oP, single or in groups. Generally massive H.=3; G.=—3°45 to 3°89. Olive-green ; streak almost yellow. B.B. on charcoal fuses easily aud forms a graphite-like slag, containing grains*~~

~~of copper. Sol. in n. acid, and with water gives a brick-red precipitate. C.¢. : 37 to 88 vanadic acid, 39°4 to 46 copper oxide, 18°5 to 13 lime, 3°6 to 5 water. Sissersk (Urals), Nijui-Tagilsk, and Friedrichroda in Thuringia.~~

~~416. TacitirE, 4CuP,+3H,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic; but botryoidal and radiating-fibrous, or earthy. H.=—3; G.=4. Emerald-green. C.c.: 61°8 copper prot- oxide, 27°7 phosphoric acid, aud 10°5 water. Nijui-Tagilsk, and near HIrschberg.~~

~~417. Eveurorrs, 4CuAs,+7H).~~

~~Right prismatic. oP (Af) 117° 20', Poo(m) 80° 52', with wP2 (2) and OP (P) (fig. 432). Brittle. H.=3°5 ; to4; G.=—3°35 to 3°45. Translucent ; vitre- ous. Emerald- or leek-green; streak ver- digris-green. B.B. in forceps fuses to a | greenish brown crystallized mass. Easily | sol. in n. acid. C.c.: 47 copper protoxide, | 34 arsenic acid, and 19 water. Libethen in | Hungary. 418, Errntre, 5CuAs,+2Hy. Reniform and foliated; conchoidal fracture.~~

~~H.=4'5 to 5; G.=4 to4'l. Translucent on the edges; dull resinous.~~

~~Fig. 432 (sp. 417).~~

~~Emerald- or grass-green ; streak similar. — C.c.: 59°9 copper protoxide, 34'7 arseuic acid, and 5°4 water.~~

~~Cornwall. Cornwallite has 3 or.5 of water.~~

~~419. Duryrirz, 5CuP,+2H,.~~

~~G.=4'4. Oxide of copper 69, phosphoric acid 24°7, water 6°25. Rheinbreitenbach and Nijni-Tagilsk.~~

~~420, Morrramire, 5(Cu, Pb)V,+2Eh. | Black crystalline crusts; streak yellow. H.=3; G.=5°9.~~

~~C.c.: oxide of copper 20°4, oxide of lead 7°2, vanadic acid 18°7, water 3°7. Mottram.in Cheshire.~~

~~421, Enuits 50uP,+3Hp.~~

~~Right prismatic ; botryoidal, radiating, foliated. H.=1°5 to 2; G. =3°8 to 4°27. Translucent on the edges ; pearly on the cleavage. Verdigris-green ; streak paler. C.c.: 67 copper protoxide, 24~~

~~os acid, and 9 water. 'ity on the Rhine, Nijni-Tagilsk,~~

~~492, Tyrouire, 5CuA's, +9H,.~~

~~Right prismatic. Cl. basal, perfect; reniform. Radiate-folia- ceous. H.=1°5 to 2; G.=3. Lustre pearly on cleavage face. Colour apple-green and verdigris-green to sky-blue; streak paler. Sub- translucent. C.c.: oxide of copper 50°3, arsenic acid 29°2, water Tyrol, Hesse, Thuringia.~~

~~423, PHOSPHOROCHALCITE (Lunnite), 6Cul',+3H,. Oblique prismatic. Crystals oP¢2 (f) 38° 56', P(P) 117° 49',~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~with OP (a) and coP%o (¢) (fig. 433) ; nsually small and indistinct; more common in spherical or reniform and b radiated-fibrous masses. H.=5;, G.=4'1 to 4°3. Translucent throughout or on the edges; adamantine to resinous. Blackish-, emerald-, or verdigris-green. C.c.: 70°8 copper protoxide, 21°2 phosphoric acid, and 8 water. Cornwall, Rheinbreitenbach, Nijni-Tagilsk.~~

~~424, CLINOCLASE, 6CuAs,+3H,.~~

~~Obliqne prismatic, C 80° 30°. OP (P), co P (m) 56°, $P°c0o (a) 99° 30', (7) 128° 48' (figs. 484, 485) ; and hemispherical. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=2°5 to3; G.=4°2 to 4°4.~~

~~ous; pearly on cl. Dark =~~

~~Fig. 483 (sp. 428). Translucent ; vitre-~~

~~verdigris-green to sky-blue ; streak blue. C.c: 62°6 copper protoxide, 30°3 ar- senic acid, 7*1 water. Corn- wall, Tavistock, Erzgebirge. 425. MixXITE.~~

~~*Oblique prismatic or an- orthic (%). Radiating, cen- trally granular, oP 125°. H. =3 to 4;G. =2°66. Eme- rald-green to blue-green ; ; streak paler. C.c.: 48°21 ,. A saigpel Peide, 13°1 bismuth Fig 434 (sp. 424). Fig. 486 (sp. 424). oxide, 30°45 arsenic acid, 11°1 water.*~~

~~*- Geistergang, Joachimsthal. 426, Ruacirs, 51,243, +8H,.*~~

~~*Grape-like groups of minute crystals. streak white. Lustre wax-like ; brittle.*~~

~~*Colour yellowish green ; H.=5; G.=6°82. C.c.:*~~

~~*bismuth oxide 79°5, arsenic acid 15°6, water 4°9. Neustiidtel near Schuceberg.*~~

~~*497, Trocenite, 3U As, +12H,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 80°. Crystals thin tabular. Cl. clino-*~~

~~*diagonal, perfect. Lustre pearly. G.=3°3. Lemon-yellow. C.c.: 65°95 oxide of uranium, 17°56 arsenic acid, 16°49 water. In closed tube gives off water, and becomes golden brown, but again yellow on cooling. Neustidtel.*~~

~~*428. SrruvitE, (NH, 2Mg) P,+12H,.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. Poo (a) 68° 7', Poo © 95°, 4Poo (b) 30° 32', wPoo (2), #Pco (m) 128°, OP (0) (fig. 436). Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect. H. =1°5 to 2; G.=1°66 to 1°75. Trans- parent or opaque ; vitreous. Colonrless, but yellow or brown. C.c.: 29°9 plios- phoric acid, 16°3 magnesia, 10°6 am- nionia, and 44 water. Under St Nicholas church at Hamburg, and in guano from South America.*~~

~~*Spherical and fibrous , friable. H.=—1°2; G.=3°52 to 3°88. Opaque; silky. Golden yellowish brown; streak yellowish brown. C.c.: peroxide of iron 39°4, lime 13°8, arsenic acid 37°9, water 8°9. Romanéche uear Macon.*~~

~~*430. CHALCOSIDERITE. Anorthic. Light green erystais. G.=3°1l, C.c.:*~~

~~*oxide of iron, 8°1 oxide of eopper, 4°45 alumina, 30°54 phosphoric acid, 15 water. Cornwall. 431, Lazuuirs, Al,P +(Mg, Fe);P,+2H,. . Oblique*~~

~~prismatic, C 88° 2'. oP 91° 30', P (e) 99° 40',P (p) 100° 20'. Crystals often tabular through distortion; twins on OP, and wP%«; also massive ; fracture splint~~

~~ery. Cl. @P. Ho=5 to 2. : 6) G28 to 31. 'Trans. Fig: 437 (sp. 431). Fig, 488 (sp. 481). Incent; vitreous. Indigo- and smalt-blue to greenish ; streak white. In closed tube yields water, and loses colour. Soluble in acids after ignition. C.c.: 31°7 alumina, 10 magnesia, 6 prot- oxide of iron, 44 phosphoric acid, and 6 water. Salzburg, Styria,~~

~~42°8 per-~~

~~| Brazil, Georgia, Lincoln in North Carolina.~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~432, CHILDRENITE, 2(Fe, Mn), AlP 15H. P=P,,H=H,,&e. Right prismatic. Polar edges 101° 43', 130° 10', middle 98° 44';~~

~~usual form P, 2P0, «Po (e, a, P, fig. 439). ie~~

~~H.=4'5 to 5; G.=3'18 to 3°3, Translucent; SS~~

~~vitreous. Yellowish white to winc- or ochre-yellow,~~

~~brown, or almost black. C.c.: 30°7 iron protoxide,~~

~~9 manganese protoxide, 14°5 alumina, 29 phos-~~

~~phoric acid, and 17 water. Tavistock, Crinnis —~~

~~and Callington (Cornwall). Fig. 459.~~

~~433. EHOSsPHORITE (Ie, Mn),7], P+4H.~~

~~Right prismatic. P (p) 183° 32' and 118° 56'; oP (2) 104° 19'; a@Poo (a), oPoo (b), oP2(g), PE (¢), 2P2 (s) (polar edges 130° 26' and 98° 42') (fig. 440). Cl. macro- diagonal. H.=5; G.=3°13. Pale red. Vitreous. C.c.: 22~~

~~alumina, | 7°4 protoxide of iron, 23°5 oxide of manganese, 31°5 phosphoric acid, 15°6 water. Fairfield (Connecticut).~~

~~434, LrroconirE, Cu,As+Al¢~~

~~+24%.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 88° 33'. oP (d) 61° 31', P%oo (0) 74° 21' (fig. 349). He 2 te 2:5; G)=2°8 to 3.. Trans- lucent ; vitreous or resinous. Azure- blue to verdigris-green; streak paler. ; :~~

~~C.c.: 86°6 protoxide of copper, 11°9 Fig. 440 (sp. 433).~~

~~alumina, 26°6 arsenic acid, 24'9 water. Redruth, Herrengrund in Hungary. — he 435, CHALCOPHYLLITE, Cu,As +124.~~

~~Hexagonal rhombohedral ; R 69° 48' (fig. 441). Cl. basal, perfect ;~~

~~Reale, He—=2 5 G.—24 to 26. ' : Transparent; vitreous to adamantine. — 7 Pearly on OR (0). Enerald- to grass- =. * and verdigris-green; streak pale green. 3~~

~~Soluble in acids and ammonia. C.c.: Fig. 441.~~

~~protoxide of copper 49°6, arsenic acid 18, water 32°4. Redruth~~

~~in Cornwall, Saida in Saxony, Moldawa in the Banat.~~

~~436, URANITE, (Ca, U,) P+8H.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 90° 48'; P middle edge 127° 32'. OP:P 116°14; OP : 2P<0 109° 6'; OP : 2Poo 109° 197 (figs. 442, 443). _ Crys- tals flat. Cl. basal, perfect; sectile H.=1 to 2; G.=8 to 3:2. Translucent; pearly on OP. Sulphur-yellow to siskin-green; streak yellow. C.c.: 15°5 phosphoric acid, 62°6 uranium peroxide, 6°1 lime, and 15:8 water.~~

~~Fig. 443.~~

~~Cornwall, Autun and Limoges in France, Johann-Georgenstadt and Eibenstock in Saxony, Chesterfield in Massachusetts.~~

~~Right prismatic; quadrangular, scale-like crystals. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=2°3; G.=3°45. Siskin-green. C.c.: lime 5°47, sesqui-~~

~~oxide of uranium 59°18, arsenic acid 19°37, water 16°29. Neu- stadtel. 438. Uranocrrcire, (Ba, §,)P +8.~~

~~Yellowish green crystals, isomorphous with 4387. Cl. basal.~~

~~G. =3°53. C.c.; sesquioxide of uranium 56°86, baryta 14°57, phos- phoric acid 15-1, water 14. Falkenstcin in Voigtland.~~

~~439. CHALCOLITE, (Cu, U,) P+ 8H.~~

~~Pyramidal, [P middle edge 142° 8'; Poo 128° 14'. Crystals OP, P, wPo, Po. Cl. basal, perfect; pearly lustre; brittle. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=8°5 to 3°6. Grass- to emerald- or verdigris- green; streak apple-green. C.c.: 15°2 phosphoric acid, 61 uranium peroxide, 8°5 copper protoxide, and 15°38 water. Red- ruth and St Austell, Johann-Georgenstadt, Eibenstock, Schneeberg Bodenmais, Baltimore.~~

~~Pyramidal. P middle edge 142° 6'. OP:P 109° 57'. Crystals tabular. Cl. basal. H.=2°5; G.=3°58. Grass-green. Lustre pearly. C.c.:7°7 oxide of copper, 55°95 sesquioxide of uranium, 14 water. Huel Gorland in Cornwall, Nenstidtel, Joachimsthal, Zinnwald, Wittichen.~~

~~407~~

~~Anorthic; in scaly crystals. Wax-yellow to pomegranate-red Adamantine to greasy. H.=3°5; G.=5°76. C. ty henioxias, of bismuth 60°4, sesquioxide of uranium 20°4, arsenic acid 138, water 4°5. Neustédtel. :~~

~~442. Puomecommer, Pb, + 6AlF.~~

~~Reniform or stalactitie ; fracture conchoidal and splintery. H.= 4 to 4°5; G.=6°3 to6'4. Translucent; resinous. Yellowish or greenish white to reddish brown. C.c.: 88 protoxide of lead, 35 alumina, 8 phosphoric acid, and 19~~

~~water; but with 2 chloride of lead. Poullauouen, Nuissiére (near Beaujeu), Georgia.~~

~~ComMPOUNDS oF PHospHATrs, VANADIATES, AND ARSENIATES witH HAtorp SAtts.~~

~~443. Apatite, 3CaF+(Ca(Cl, F).~~

~~Hexagonal and pyramidal-hemihedric. P 80° 26'. The most common forms are oP (M); oP2(n); OP (m); P(x); the base OP seldom wanting (figs. 92, 95, 96, 97, 98). The crystals are short- prismatic or thick-tabular; also granular, fibrous, or com- pact; fracture conchoidal or splintery; brittle. H. —5: G. =3°1 to 3:25. Transparent to opaque; vitreous to resinous. Colourless and white, but generally light green, grey, blue violet, or red. C.c.: phosphate of lime (89 to 92°3), with chloride (to 11) or fluoride (to 7°7) of calcium, or both. Dissemi- nated in granite, gneiss, mica and hornblende slates, primary limestones, and trap rocks; also in beds and veins. Sutherland Ross, and Aberdeen, in granite and limestone ; Cumberland, Devonshire, and Cornwall; in tin-mines in Saxony; Bohemia, St Gotthard, Tyrol; Krageré in Norway, New York, Canada.~~

~~444, PyromMorpHITE, 3Pb,P + PbCl.~~

~~Hexagonal; P 80°44'. Crystals oP, OP, with »P2, or P CLAP hey fig. 444), occasionally thicker in the middle, or spindle-shaped ; also reniform or botryoidal; fracture conchoidal or un- ; even. H.=3°'5 to 4; G.=6°9 to 7. Translucent; resin- ous or vitreous. Colourless, but generally grass-, pis- tachio-, olive-, or siskin-green, and clove- or hair-brown, and scarlet (Leadhills). C.c.: 89°7 phosphate and 10°3 chloride of lead, but with 0 to 9 arseniate of lead, 0 to 11 phosphate of lime, and 0 to 1 fluoride of calcium. Elgin, Wanlockhead, also Cornwall, Derby- shire, Yorkshire, Durham, Cumberland, Wicklow; Przibram, Mies, and Bleistadt in Bohemia ; Berezoff, Phenixville in Pennsylvania, and Mexico.~~

~~445, VANADINITE, 3Pb;¥+PbCl.~~

~~Hexagonal; P 78° 46'. Forms oP, OP (0), P(z), 2P,4P(b4), oP, oP, 2P2 (fig. 445). Transparent to opaque; resinous. Honey-yellow to greyish brown;~~

~~*streak white. H.=3; G. =6°8to7 '2. C.c.: oxide oflead 70°88, S vanadic acid 19°35, lead 7-2, chlorine Saaceniteek — EE 2°62. Wanlockhead, Windischkappel : tN*~~

~~*in Carinthia, Haldenwirthshaus in the Black Forest, Bolet in West-Gotland, Berezovsk, Zimapan in Mexico,*~~

~~*Cordoba in the Argentine Republie.*~~

~~*446. MIMETESITE, 3Pbs74s + PbCI.*~~

~~*Hexagonal ; P-S1° 48'. Crystals -4_ }— b.----0.g0 Soop. oP, OP, P (figs. 91, 444), or P, OP. Yes Se 7 y Cl. P; fracture conchoidal or uneven.*~~

~~*H.=3°5 to 4; G.=7719 to 7°25. Be*~~

~~*Translucent. Colourless, but usually F*~~

~~*honey- or wax-yellow, yellowish green :*~~

~~*or grey. O.c.3_ 90°7 sieaniaia and ae Fae eee BA*~~

~~*9°38 chloride of lead; but part of the arsenic oecasionally replaced Ly phosphoric acid. Leadhills, Huel Alfred and Huel Unity in Corn- wall, Roughten Gill and Dry Gill in Cumberland, Beeralston in Devonshire, Johann-Georgenstadt, Zinnwald, Badenweiler, St Prix in France, Nertchinsk, and Zacatecas in Mexico.*~~

~~*447. WAGNERITE, Mg,P+MeF.*~~

~~*Obliqne prismatic, C 68°25'. oP 57°35'. Cl. prismatie, and orthodiagonal imperfect ; fracture conchoidal or splintery. H.=5 to 5°5; G.=8 to 3:2. Translucent or transparent; resinous. Wine- yellow and white. C.c.: 43°3 phosphoric acid, 11°4 fluorine, 37°6 magnesia, and 7°7 magnesium; but with 8 to 4°5 iron protoxide and 1to4lime. Werfen in Salzburg.*~~

~~*448, TrIPLiITE, (Fe, Mu),P+RF. ; 7*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic; only granular. Cl. in two directions at right angles ; fracture conchoidal. H.=—5 to 5°5; G.=3°6 to 3°8. Translucent or opaque; resinous. Chestnut- or blackish-brown ; streak yellowish grey. C.c.: iron and manganese protoxides, with 38 phosphoric acid, and 7 or 8 fluorine. Limoges, Schlaggenwald.*~~

~~*408*~~

~~*449, ZwIEsELITE, (Ie, Mn) + FeF.*~~

~~*Right prismatic ; but only massive. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=4°5 to 5; G.=3‘95 to 4. Brown; streak yellow. C.c.: like triplite. Zwiesel in Bavaria.*~~

~~*Montebrasite has no soda.*~~

~~*451. DuRANGITE, (Re) As+2NaF.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic; crystals like keilhauite (sp. 669). oP110°10’; P112°10’. Cl. prismatic. H.=5; G. =3‘95 to 4. Bright orange-red;*~~

~~*streak cream-yellow. Vitreous. C.c.: alumina 17°2, iron protoxide*~~

~~*9-2, arsenic acid 53, soda 13°1, fluorine 7°7. Durango (Mexico). 452. HERDERITE,*~~

~~*P polar edges 77° 20’ and 141° 16’; »P 115°*~~

~~*53’. Fracture conchoidal. H.=5; G.=2°9 to 8. Translucent;*~~

~~*vitreous, inclining to resinous. Yellowish or greenish white.*~~

~~*Ehrenfriedersdorf in Saxony. An anhydrous phosphate of alumina with lime and fluorine.*~~

~~*Right prismatic.*~~

~~*PHOSPHATES WITH SULPHATES AND BORATES.*~~

~~*453. SVANBERGITE.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral; R 90° 35'. H.=4°5; G.=2°57. Vitreous to adamantine. Honey-yellow, reddish brown, and rose-red ; streak reddish. Subtransparent. C.c.: 87°8 alumina, 6 lime, 17°83 sul- phuric acid, 12°8 soda, 17°8 phosphoric acid, 6°8 water. Horr- sjoberg in Wermland.*~~

~~*Reniform and stalactitic; fracture conchoidal. H.=3; G.=1°9 to 2. Resinous; vitreous. Yellow or yellowish brown; streak white. (C.c.: 36°7 iron protoxide, 14°8 phosphoric acid, 15°2 sulphuric acid, 'and 80°38 water. Grafenthal and Saalfeld.*~~

~~*Reniform and stalactitic ; brittle ; fracture conchoidal. H. =2°3; G. =2°3 to 2°5. Translucent throughout, or on the edges; resinous to vitreous. Yellowish, reddish, or blackish brown, sometimes in spots or stripes; streak light yellow or white. C.c.: 35 iron per- oxide, 26 arsenic acid, 14 sulphuric acid, and 24 water. In many old mines, as Freiberg and Schneeberg.*~~

~~*456. BEUDANTITE.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R 91°18'. H.=3°5; G.=4. Vitreous. Olive- green; streak greenish yellow. C.c.: oxide of iron 40°69, oxide of lead 24°05, sulphuric acid 13°76, phosphoric acid 8°97, water 9°77. Dernbach in Nassau, Cork in Ireland.*~~

~~*457, Lunepurerre (2Mg, #) P+ MgB+7H.*~~

~~*Concretions of fibrous structure.*~~

~~*C.c.: 25°2 magnesia, 29°8*~~

~~*phosphoric acid, 14°74 boracic acid, 30°23 water. Liineburg. ARSENITES. 458. Ecprmirs, Pb,As,+2PbCl,. Pyramidal. Cl. OP. H.=2°5 to 83; G.=7:14. Pale green.*~~

~~*Vitreous on cleavage ; resinous on fracture. C.c.: oxide of lead 59°67, lead 22°2, arsenious acid 10°59, chlorine 7°58. Langban in Wermland. 459. TrippKerre, Cuds. Pyramidal; P 111° 56'. Blue-green. Lustrous. Copiapo in Chili.*~~

~~*SILICATES. ANDALUSITE Group.*~~

~~*460. ANDALUsSITE, AISi. Right prismatic. ooP (2m) 90°50', Poo ® 109° 4', Poo (s) 109° 51'.*~~

~~*Fig. 446.*~~

~~*Fig. 447. Also columnar. Cl. m; fracture splintery. H. =7 to 7°5; G. =3'1 to*~~

~~*3°2. Pellucid; vitreous. Grey, green, red, or blue. B.B. infusible.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*Not affected by acids. C.c.: alumina 6371, silica 36°9. Clashnaree (figs. 446 to 449) and Clova in Aberdeenshire, Marnoch and Botriph-*~~

~~*Fig. 448. nie in Banffshire, Killiney Bay in Wicklow, Andalusia, Tyrol, Penig, Massachusetts, Litchfield in Connecticut.*~~

~~*Chiastolite. H.=5to5'5; G.=3. Pale grey, yellow, green, and red. A compound structure, formed of four double wedge-shaped crystals, arranged in contact with the angles of a square conoidal crystal placed in their*~~

~~*Fig. 449.*~~

~~*centre, and imbedded in a paste of clay slate. The section of the compound structure forms a tesselated | cross, the appearance of which varies with the portion Fic, 430 of the crystal which is cut. Portsoy (fig. 450) and ae Sa Boharm in Banffshire, Wicklow, Keswick and Skiddaw, Brittany, Pyrenees, Maine, New Hampshire, Nova Scotia, Canada.*~~

~~*461. CYANITE (Disthene), X1Si.*~~

~~*Anorthic ; generally broad-prismatie lengthened crystals, formed*~~

~~*by two faces (m, ¢). m:t 106° 15'; m:% 145° 41'; p:m98° 15' (fig. 451). Hemitropes common, united by m. Also radiated. Cl. m, perfect; brittle. H. =7, on cl. planes 5; G.=3°5 to 3°7. Pellucid; vitreous. Cl. pearly.*~~

~~Colourless, and red, yellow, green, grey, and blue. 8B.B. infusible. Not affected by acids. C.c. same as andalusite. Hillswick in Shetland, Mount Battock, Tarfside (fig. 451), Botriphnie (Banffshire), Tyrol, St Gotthard, Bohemia, Pontivy in France.~~

~~462. SILLIMANITE, AlISi.~~

~~Right prismatic; oP 111°. Crystals fibrous, columnar, and radi- ating. Cl. macrodiagonal. H.=7; G.=3°2 to 3°26. Translucent; resinous ; oncl. vitreous. Greyish, greenish, clove, or hair-brown. C.c. and chemical characters like cyanite. 'Tvedestrand, Norway; Chester and Norwich, Connecticut. Al,O,SiO, is thus trimorphous.~~

~~Monrolite, Xenolite, Bucholzite, Fibrolite, and Bamlite are varieties.~~

~~463. Topaz, 5A1Si+ AIF, +SiF). Right prismatic. ooP (Jf) 124° 17', 2Boo (nm) 92° 42', oP2 (1) 98°~~

~~Fig. 451.~~

~~14', P(o). Crystals always prismatic (fig. 122), often hemimorphie.~~

~~Cl. basal, perfect ; fracture conchoidal. Transparent ; vitreous. Colourless, honey-yellow, amber, pink, asparagus-green, blue. Becomes electric by heat or friction, and the yellow colours become pink. B.B. infusible. Not affected by h. acid; by digestion in s. acid gives traces of fluorine. The formula requires 33°2 silica, 56°7 alumina, 17°5 fluorine. Part of the oxygen must be replaced by fluorine, as the total of the above is 107°4. Ben-a-bourd and Arran, Scotland ; Mourne Mountains, Ireland; St Michael's Mount, Cornwall; Siberia, Saxony, Bohemia, Connecticut, Australia, Ceylon, Brazil, Peru. The finest topazes are the blue from Scotland and Siberia, the pink, the yellow from Brazil, and the colourless from Pern. The last-named when cut may be distinguished at once from diamond by their elec- tricity. Pyrophysalite isa massive opaque cleavable variety from Falun. Pyenite is a columnar straw-yellow to reddish white variety from Zinnwald in Saxony and Durango in Mexico.~~

~~H=5: G34 t 0%,~~

~~Mg) Si.~~

~~Right prismatic. ooP (m) 128° 42', Poo ® 70° 46', cP (0), OF (p) (fig. 452). Twins common, as figs. 140, 144, 187, 453. Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect ; fracture conchoidal to splin- _° : tery. HH. =7; G. =3°5 to 3°8. Trans- Fig. 452. (Sp. 464.) Fig. 453. parent to opaque; vitreous to resinous. Reddish brown; streak white. B.B. infusible. Not affected by h. acid, partially by s. acid.~~

~~. long prismatic, and striated (fig. 45, and 249 to 252).~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~C.c.:; silica 30, alumina 48'5, with 5°5 iron peroxide, 12°5 iron protoxide, 3°5 magnesia; often impure. Shetland, Boharm and Marnoch in Banffshire, St Gotthard, Greiner in Tyrol, Finistére, Urals, and North America. Xantholite is a yellow variety from Urquhart (Inverness).~~

~~465. SAppHiriTe, 4Mg, 541, 28i.,~~

~~Oblique prismatic; granular. H.=7 to 8; G.=3'4 to 3°5. Vitreous; pale blue or green; translucent; dichroic. C.c.: alumina 63°2, magnesia 19°3, silica 14°9. Fiskenaes in Greenland.~~

~~ToURMALINE GROUP.~~

~~466. ToURMALINE, R,Si+ Ri. Rhombohedral ; R 133 10'. Crystals of OR (%'),-42; usually Generally hemimorphic; also radiating and fibrous; fracture conchoidal to uneven. H.=6'5to 75; G.=3 to 3°3. Black varieties opaque, others transparent; vitreous. Generally black ; but colourless, yellow, brown, blue, green, and rose-red; streak white. Different colours often disposed in layers parallel to the axis; and portions of one crystal differing also in colour along the axis. By friction acquires positive electricity; and becomes elec- trically polar when heated. Powder insol. in h. acid ; imperfectly in s. acid. C.c. complex, but all with water and fluorine, some with boracie acid. Coarse black columuar varieties, called Schori, very common in granite and gneiss. Black occur at Portsoy in Banff, Clova, Cabrach, and Rubislaw in Aberdeenshire, Bovey in Devon- shire, St~~

~~*Just in Cornwall, in Greenland, Arendal, Tyrol, and North America ; blue or Jndicolite at Uté in Sweden ; green at Glen Skiag in Cromarty. Crystals ruby-red within, surrounded by green or red at one extremity and green at the other, also blue and pink, at Albany, Paris, and Hebron in Maine. Currant-red or Rubellite in India and Ceylon, also in Siberia and Brazil.*~~

~~*467. DATHOLITE, CaB+ CaSi, +H.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 89°51'. &P (g) 115° 22', wP°2(f) 76° 38', P (P) 120°, —P%co (a) 45° 8', cP%o (s), 2Peoo (0) (fig. 454); or rhombic with 6: 90°, 6:4 185°, b:c 141° 9', and. f:g 160° 39'. Fracture uneven, or conchoidal. H.=5 to 55; G.= 2°9 to 3. Transparent or translucent ; © vitreous. Colourless and tinted green- ish, yellowish, or pink. In closed tube yields water. B.B. intumescees and melts easily to a clear glass, colouring the flame green; the powder gelatinizes in h. acid. C.c.: 38°1 silica, 21°6 boracic acid, 34°7 lime, and 5°6 water. Bishopton in Renfrew, Glen Farg in Perthshire (fig. 455), Salisbury Crags and Corstor- phine Hill near Edinburgh, Arendal, Uté, Andreasberg, Seisser Alp, Connecticut, and New Jersey. Figs. 238, 239 are pseudomorphs of quartz after datholite termed Haytorite.*~~

~~*468. EucLAsE, AME.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 79° 44', coP®2 (s) 115°; 8P°3 (/) — . 105° 49'. Crystals specially of oP°2, o Peo (7), 3P°3. Cl. clino- diagonal, perfect; very brittle and fragile; fracture conchoidal.*~~

~~*Fig. 404,*~~

~~*2G18i +*~~

~~*Fig. 455 (sp. 467).*~~

~~*Fig. 457. H.=7°5; G.=8 to 31. Transparent; splendent; vitreous.*~~

~~*Bixeter Voe and Unst in.*~~

~~*fusion soluble with gela-*~~

~~_Chemical and physical characters like~~

~~Cle.; 27-4 alumima, 8°5~~

~~Mountain-green, passing into blue, yellow, or colourless. B.B. intumesces, becomes white, and melts in thin splinters to a white enamel. Not affected by acids. C.c.: 42 silica, 35 alumina, 18~~

~~glucina, 6 water. Peru and Brazil, and Southern Urals. Cannot be used as 'a gem on aecount of its brittleness ; whence its name.~~

~~469. HoMILirE.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 89° 21'. H.=5°5; G.=3'28. Black and brownish black. Vitreous. C.c.: 27°28 lime, 16°25 protoxide of iron, 31°87 silica, 18°1 boracic acid. Stoké and Brevig (Norway).~~

~~470, BorrYo.ire.~~

~~Fine fibrous, botryoidal, or reniform. Snow-white to hair-brown.~~

~~datholite, but 10°64 of water,—being 2 equivalents. Arendal.~~

~~471, Gapo.tnire, (Y, Ce, Fe),Si.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 89° 28'. o! 116°; P_ 120° 56' (fig. 458). Fracture conchoidal, or splintery. H.=6°5 to 7; G.=4 to 4:4. Translucent on the edges; vitreous to resinous. Black; streak greenish grey. B.B. the con-choidal (vitreous) varieties incandesce; ; gelatinizes in h. acid. OC.c.: 36 to 51 Fig. 458 (sp. 471). yttria, 10 to 15 iron protoxide, 5 to 17 protoxide of cerium with lanthanum, 0 to 12 glucina, and 25 to 29 silica. HIitteré in Norway, Ytterby, Broddbo and Finbo near Falun.~~

~~EpipoTe Grovp.~~

~~472, Zoisits, 4Ca, 341, 681+.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 116° 26'; oP2 145° 24'; wP3 156° 40'; Po 122° 4'; 2Poo 111 6' (fig. 459). Cl. brachydiag- onal, perfect. H. =6; G. =3'2to3°4.~~

~~*White, brownish grey, and dark green. B.B. intu- mesces, and forms a white or yellow porous mass; and on the edges fuses to a clear glass. C.c.: 29°8 alumina, 24°35 lime, 2°8 oxide of iron, 40°83 silica, and 2°1 water. Glen Urquhart, Dalnain, and Allt Gonolan, In- verness; Sterzing in Tyrol, the Sau Alp in Carinthia, the Urals, and Connecticut. Thulite, peachblossom-red, from Souland in Thelemark (Norway), is similar.*~~

~~*473. Eprpore, 4Ca, 841, 6Si+#.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 89° 27'. oP°«o (J), ooP 2 (0) 68° 1', P®c0(T) 64° 36', —P (x) 70° 25', — Poo ® 63° 42', P (z) 70°. Crystals complex, with many partial forms. Hemitropes united by 7'; also columnar and granu- lar. Cl. M, perfect; also 7', forming 115° 24'; fracture conchoidal to splintery. H.=6 to7; G.=3'2to03'5. Pellucid ; vitreous. Green to yellowish grey. B.B. fuses and swells to a dark brown slag; after*~~

~~*Fig. 459 (sp. 472).*~~

~~*tinization in. h. acid. iron peroxide, 23°9 lime, 88°3 silica, 1:9" water. Shetland,GlenelginInver- ness, Tilquilly in Aber- : hops deen, in pr in amyg-*~~
~~*Fig. 460. Fig. ace daloid in Mull and Skye ; in granite at Cassencary in Kirkeud- bright; Arendal, Dauphiné, Greenland, the Urals, North America. Withamite from Glencoe is a red, strongly dichroic variety. Pied- montite or Manganese Epidote, brownish violet, from St Marcel, has 20 per cent. of manganese peroxide.*~~

~~*474, ALLANITE (Orthite, Cerine), RySi, + RSI.*~~

~~*Fig. 463. Oblique prismatic, C 65°. oP (z) 70° 48', P (x) 71° 27', —P (d)*~~
~~*XVI — 52*~~

~~*Fig. 462.*~~

~~*410 MINER*~~

~~*96° 40', OP (MD, Po (7), ePo (7). Mf: 7 115°, T:n 111° 21, 7: &130°18'. Often massive or granular; fracture conchoidal. H. =6; G.=8'4 to 3°8. Translucent on edges; vitreous to resinous. Black to brown or greenish;*~~

~~*streak brownish grey. B.B. froths and melts toa brown glass, Gelatinous with h. acid. C.c.: 12 to 18 alumina with peroxide of iron, 13 to 26 oxide of eerium and lanthanum, 2 to 12 yttria, 4 to 20 protoxide of iron, 30 of silica. Small crystals eommon in the syenitic granites of Scotland 3 as at Lairg, Boat of Garten (fig. 468), Aboyne, and Criffel. In lime- stone at Urquhart (fig. 462), Greenland, Hittero and Snarum, Thuringia, Pennsylvania, New Jersey. Orthite (massive) at Finbo, Krageré, and Falun. Cerine (granular) at Riddarhyttan. "Pyr- orthite has carbonaceous matter. Bodenite is a variety.*~~

~~*475. Ipocrass, 3(Ca, Mg),Si+ 2AISi.*~~

~~*Pyramidal ; P © 74° 27' (figs. 464 to 466). Crystals «PD (d),*~~

~~*Fig. 464.*~~

~~*Fig. 465.*~~

~~*oP (J), P (ec), OP (p), Po (0) 56° 29', wP2 (f). Prismatic, striated ; also granular; fracture uneven. H.=6°5; ig G. =3°35 to 4. Pellucid ; vitreous to resinous. Brown, green, yellow; streak white. B.B. fuses easily, with intumescence, to a green or brown glass. Partially gol. in h. acid; after ignition totally, gelatinizing. C.c.: alumina 16, peroxide of iron 7, lime 34, silica*~~

~~*38. Glen Gairn and Crathie, Aberdeenshire, in lime- stone; Broadford, Skye; Wicklow and Donegal, Ire- land; Egg, Norway; Mussa, Piedmont; Vesuvius; Fig. 466.*~~

~~*Wilui river, near Lake Baikal (fig. 463). Cyprine from Thele- mark is azure-blue, from copper. ;*~~

~~*OLIVINE Group. 476. ForsTerity, Mg, Si. Right prismatic. Like olivine (sp. 478). 3°3. Vitreous ; transparent. White, wax- yellow, greenish; streak white. C.c.: magnesia 57°1, silica 42°86. Vesuvius.. Boltonite, red, is from Massachusetts.*~~

~~*477, FAYALITE, Fe,Si.*~~

~~Right prismatic ; 2 »n' 49° 36' (fig. 467). Massive. Cl. rectangular. Black, green- ish, or brownish. Metallic to resinous ; fracture conchoidal; magnetic. H.=6°'5; G.=4 to 41. C.c.: protoxide of iron 70°5, silica 29°5. Mourne Mountains, Treland ; Fayal, Azores.~~

~~H.=6to7; G.=3°'2 to~~

~~478. CHRYSOLITE (Olivine, Peridote), (Fe, Mg),Si . ge al Right prismatic. P (e) 85° 16'-and 'Fis: 467 (sp. 477).~~

~~139° 54'; middle 108° 30'. (k) 80° 53', wPo (MM) (fig. 468). Also diagonal, perfect; fracture conchoidal. H=65 to 73 GC. =33 to 85. 'Wrans: parent; vitreous. Olive-green, yellow, brown, and colourless. B.b. intusible. Soluble, with gelatinizing, in acids. C.c.: 47 magnesia, 12 protoxide of iron, 40 || silica. Talisker in Skye, Haalival in | Rum, Elie in Fife, Unkel on the Rhine, Vesuvius, Esneh in Egypt, Brazil. Hya- losiderite, brown and yellow, with metallic lustre and 380 per cent. protoxide of iron, is from the Kaiserstuhl in the Breisgau.~~

~~479, TEPHROITE, Mn,Si. Fig. 468 (sp. 478). Right prismatic ; granular, with rectangular cleavages. Ash- grey, rose-red. Adamantine; translucent. H.=5%5 to6; G.=4~~

~~to 4:1. C.c.: protoxide of manganese 70°2, silica 29°8. Franklin and Sparta in New Jersey.~~

~~oP (n) 130° 2', Poo (d) 76° 54', 2P oo Cl. brachy-~~

~~massive.~~

~~ALOG Y~~

~~| 480, KNEBELLITE, le,Si+Mn,Si. Massive. Grey, brown, green, black. Glistening ; brittle.~~

~~H.=6'5; G.=3°71. C.e.: protoxide of iron 35:5, protoxide of~~

~~manganese 35, silica 29°5. Ilmenau, Dannemora in Sweden.~~

~~481. Montice.ute, Ca,Si+Mg,Si. Right prismatic. P (/) 110° 43’ and 97° 55’, oP (s) 98° 7’, wP2 (x) 188°6’, Boo (Ke) 81° 57’, kPoo (hk) 120° 8’, P2 © 141° 47’ and 82°,~~

~~wD (b) (fig. 469). Vitreous. Grey, yellowish and greenish, and white ; we~~

~~streak white. Translucent. H.=5 } 1~~

-

~~Se ra~~

~~magnesia 21°9, protoxide of iron 5°6, silica 37°5. Sol. in h. acid, gelatiniz-ing. Somma (Milan).~~

~~482. CHONDRODITE (Humitie), Mg,Sia.~~

~~Right prismatic. P middle edge 156° 38’, polar edges 131° 34’ and 54° 28’ (figs. 470 to 472). Crystals monoclinic in habit, often grauular-~~

~~to 5°5; G. =3 to 3°25. C.c.: lime 35, i] Ea, Wa~~

~~a,~~

~~silicate of magnesia, with 2 to 3of fluorine. From limestone on Loch Ness (?); Pargas, Finland; Gallsj6 and Aker, Sweden; New~~

~~York ; Sparta, New Jersey. Hwmite, from Somnia. 483. Lirvrits, 3(Fe, Ca),Si+FeSi+H. tight prismatic. P (0) polar edges 139° 30’ and 117° 27’; oP~~

~~112° 38’, Poo (d) 112° 49’, oP2 (s) 106° 15’. Crystals (fig. 124) are long-prismatic and vertically striated ; also radiated, columnar, or fibrous; brittle. H.=5°5to6; G.=3‘9to4‘2. Opaque ; resinous or imperfect metallic. Brownish or greenish black ; streak black. B.B. fuses easily to a black magnetic globule. Sol. in h. acid, forming a yellow jelly. C.c.: 29°83 silica, 19°6 iron peroxide, 35°2 iron protoxide, 13°7 lime, and 2°2 water. Rio in Elba, Fossum, | Kupferberg, Rhode Island, and Greenland.~~

~~484, CERITE (Ce, R),Si+H.~~

~~Hexagonal ; 0P; oP; in low six-sided prisms. Generally fiue- | granular ; fracture uneven, splintery ; brittle. H.=675; G.=4°9 to 5. Translucent on the edges; dull, adamantine, or resinous. Clove-brown, cherry-red, or pearl-grey. Sol. in h. acid, leaving gelatinous silica. C.c.: 20°5 silica, 73°5 protoxide of cerium (with didymium and lanthanum), and 6 water. Bastnaes near Riddar- hyttan.~~

~~485. Gates, Zn,Si+H. Right prismatic, and hemimorphic ; 2P2 (P) with polar edges 101° 35' and 132° 26', oP (d) 108° 50', Poo (0) 117° 14', Poo (J)~~

~~128° 55' (fig. 46); common form «Po (s), oP, Po. Also columnar, fibrous, granular, and earthy. Cl. prismatic along oP,~~

~~very perfect; along Po perfect. H.=5; G.=3°'3 to 3°5. Trans- parent to translucent ; vitreous and pearly. — Colourless or white, | but often light grey, also yellow, green, brown, and blue; becomes electric by heat. B.B. decrepitates slightly, but is infusible ; with cobalt solution blue and partly green ; readily soluble in acids, and gelatinizes. C.c.: 25 silica, 67°5 zinc oxide, and 7°5 water. Wau- lockhead, Mendip Hills, Matlock, Raibl and Bleiberg in Carinthia, Aix-la-Chapelle, Iserlohn, Nertchinsk, Pennsylvania, Virginia. Used as an ore of zinc.~~

~~WILLEMITE GROUP. | 486, Wittemirs, Zn,Si. __ Rhombohedral; R 116° 1'. Cl. basal, and prismatie, of; _ brittle. H.-5°5; G.=—39 to £°2. White, yellow, brown, and red. Vitreous lustre. C.c.: oxide of zinc 73, silica 27. Altenberg, | Liége, Greenland, New Jersey.~~

~~MINER~~

~~487, TroostiTE, ZnSi+MnSi. |~~

~~Rhombohedral ; R 116°. Cl. prismatic, oP2; brittle H.=5°5 ; G.=4°1. Asparagus-green, grey, and reddish brown. Vitreous. C.e.: oxide of zinc 58, oxide cf manganese 13, siliva 28. New Jersey. |~~

~~488, CENTROLITE (PbMn) Si.~~

~~Right prismatic; oP 115° 18'. G.=6°2. Red-brown. Chili.~~

~~489, PHENACITE, GI,Si.~~

~~Hexagonal and tetartohedral; R (p) 116° 36' (fig. 473). Crystals Kk, oP2, 2P2. Twins with +~~

~~parallel axes, and intersecting. CL R, and oP2; fracture con- choidal H.=7°5 to 8; G.=~~

~~Form «oP, P, wPo. H.=5; Cl. prismatic; splendent on P. Southern~~

~~| wine to purplish red.~~

~~2°97. Transparent or trans- lucent ; vitreous. Colourless, and wine-yellow or brown when fresh, but colour soon lost on exposure. B.B. infusible; not | affected by acids. C.c.: glucina |; 45°8, silica 54°2. Framont in Alsace, Takovaya in Urals, Miask, Durango in Mexico. 490. DioprasE, CuSi+#. Hexagonal and rhombohe- dral; R 125° 54', —2R ® 95° 28', oP2, -2Ri(s) (fig. 474). Cl. R, perfect; brittle H.=5; G.=3°2 to 3:3. Transparent or translucent; vitreous. Emerald-green, rarely verdigris-green or blackish green; streak green. C.c.: 38°7~~

~~Fig. 473 (sp. 489).~~

~~silica, 50 copper protoxide, and 11°3 water. Altyn-Tiibeh in the Kirghiz Steppe, Murosh- naya, Copiapo.~~

~~491. CHRyYsocoLLA, CuSi+2H.~~

~~Botryoidal or investing ; brittle; fracture econchoidal. H.=2to3; G.=2to2°3. Trans- lucent; resinous. Verdigris- to emerald-green or azure-blue ; streak greenish white. C.c.: | 34°83 silica, 44°94 copper protoxide, and 20°23 water. Leadhills, Lackentyre in Kirkeud- | bright, Cornwall, Saxony, Hungary, Spain, Urals, Australia, Chili. |~~

~~492. BoGoOSLOVSKITE (Kupferblau).~~

~~*Massive; fracture conchoidal; brittle. H. = 4to5; G.=2°56. Sky-to ultramarine-bluc ; streak smalt-blue,and shining. A silicate of copper, with 45°5 per cent. copper oxide. Schapbach Valley in Raden, Bogoslovsk in the Urals. Demidowite may be the same.*~~

~~*Fig. 474 (sp. 490).*~~

~~*GARNET GRovur.*~~

~~*493. GARNET, R,Si,+ BSi.*~~

~~*Cubic ; most common forms «0 and 202 (figs. 33, 40, 60, 475). | Also granular. Cl. dodecahedral; fracture conchoidal, or splintery. — H.=6‘5 to 7°5; G.=8‘5 to 4°3. Pellucid ; vitreous or resinous. Rarely colourless or white ; generally red, brown, black, green, or yellow. B.B. in general fuses to a glass, black or grey in those containing much iron, green or brown in the others, and often magnetic; imperfectly soluble in h. acid. C.c. ex-ceedingly variable, but generally forming two series, according as R,O, is chiefly alumina or 2 chiefly iron peroxide; and these are again Fig. 475. divided according as RO. is more especially lime, iron pro- | toxide, magnesia, or a similar base. The more important varieties are—*~~

~~*(1) Lime-Alumina Garnet, Ca,Si,+AlSi, with 40 silica, 23 alumina, and 87 lime. To this subdivision belong—*~~

~~*(a) Water Garnet.—Colourless to white. Craig Mohr, Aberdeen; Thelemark in Norway.*~~

~~*(b) Grossular.—Olive- to gooseberry-green. Craig Mohr; Wilui river ; America.*~~

~~*(c) Cinnamon Stone.—Hyacinth-red to’ orange-yellow. Glen | Gairn (Aberdeen), Allt Gonolan and Ord Ban (Inverness), Ceylon, | Wernland. Romanzowite, from Kimito (Finland), is the same. | This variety when polished is often sold as Hyacinth.*~~

~~*(d) Common Lime Garnet.—Here one half of the alumina is replaced by iron peroxide. Colours red, brown, yellow. Piedmont, Vesuvius, the Urals.*~~

~~*(2) Magnesia-Alumina Garnet ; RO chiefly magnesia.*~~

™~

~

~~*Arendal.* |~~

~~*| bedded or attached.*~~

~~*I to 6; G.=—3°43.*~~

~~*| to 5; G.=5°9 to 671.*~~

~~*ALOGY 411*~~

~~*(3) Manganese-Alumina Garnet; RO=MnO; reddish-brown. Spessart (Bavaria), Sweden. ,*~~

~~*(4) Magnesia-Iron-Lime-Alumina Garnet, Pyrope.—-Colour port- Elie in Fife, Zoblitz in Saxony, Bohemia.*~~

~~*(5) Lron-Alumina Garnet, Almandine, Noble Garnet. —Colum- bine-red, inclining to violet, blood-red, and reddish brown. Common in mica-slate, gneiss, and granite. Shetland, Ross, Inverness, Aberdeen, Falun, Arendal, Tyrol, the Urals, North America, Pegu, and Ceylon.*~~

~~*(6) Lime-Chrome-Alumina Garnet, Ca,8i, + (6r, ADSi, Uwaro- wite, Emerald-green; with 22 per cent. chrome oxide. .Bissersk and Kyshtimsk in the Urals, India, and California.*~~

~~*(7) Lime and Iron Garnet, Ca,8i,+¥Fe, Si. This includes—*~~

~~*(a) Common Lron-Garnet, Rothofite, Allochroite.—Subtranslucent or opaque. Green, brown, yellow, or black; with white, grey, or yellow streak. Sweden and Arendal.*~~

~~*(6) Melanite.—Black ; opaque; in thin splinters translucent ; streak grey ; slightly magnetic. Albano near Frascati, Vesuvius, France, Lappmark.*~~

~~(e) Colophonite.—Yellowish-brown to pitch-black, also yellow or red; resinous ; streak white. G.=3°48. Arendal.~~

~~The red varieties, when cut en cabochon, are termed Carbuncles.~~

~~Anorthic. Crystals unsymmetrical. w: P 185° 81'; w:7 115° 38', P:r 184° 45' (figs. 186, 187). Cl. distinct along planes trun- cating the sharp edges between P and wv andP and r, H.=6°5 to7; G.=8'2 to3°3. Pellucid; vitreous. Clove-brown, inclining to smoke-grey or plum-blue; but often cinnamon-brown in one direc- tion, dark violet-blue in a second, and pale olive-green in a third (triechroism). B.B. colours flame green; intumescces, and fuses easily~~

~~| toa dark green glass, becoming black in the ox. flame ; not sol. inh.~~

~~acid till after ignition, when it gelatinizes. C.c.: 45°9 silica, 5'9~~

~~| boracic acid, 17°5 alumina, 9°3 iron (with manganese) protoxide,~~

~~and 21°4 lime. Botallack and other mines in Cornwall, Bourg~~

~~_ d'Oisans in Dauphiné, Kongsberg, Arendal, Nordmark in Sweden,~~

~~Pyrenees, St Gotthard, Tyrol, Thum in Saxony, Urals, and North America.~~

~~495. DANBURITE (Ca, B) 28i. Right prismatic. oP (Z) 122° 52', owP2 (¢) 94° 52', Peo (d) 97° 7', 4Poo (w) 54° 58', OP ©, P (0), 2P2 (1), cPoo (a), old (n).~~

~~Fig. 477. Fig. 479.~~

~~Fig. 476. Fig. 478. Cl. basal; fracture uneven to subconchoidal ; vitreous to greasy lustre. H.=7to7°5; G.=2°986 to 3°021. Pale yellow to reddish brown. Translucent; brittle. C.c.: 22°76 lime, 28°46 boracic acid, 48°76 silica. Danbury in Connecticut, Russell in New York.~~

~~HELVINE Grovr.~~

~~496. HELvINE, Mn$+3R,Si.~~

~~*Cubic and tetrahedral. 5 or 7-3 (fig. 64 and with 66), Im-*~~

~~*Cl. octahedral. H.=6 to 6°5; G.=3‘1 to Translucent on the edges; resinous. Wax-yellow, siskin- B.B. in the red. flame fuses with in- tumescence to a yellow obscure pearl; sol. in h. acid, evolving sulphuretted hydrogen, and gelatinizes. C.c.: 34 silica, 10 glucina, 8 iron protoxide, 43 manganese protoxide, and 5 sulphur. Schwarz- enberg in Saxony, and near Modum in Norway.*~~

~~*497. DANALITE, 8R.Si+Zns.*~~

~~*Cubic. In octahedra, with striated dodecahedral planes. H.=5°5 Vitreous to resinous. Flesh-red to grey ; streak lighter. Translucent; brittle. C.c.: protoxide of -iron 29, of manganese 6°5, of zinc 19, silica 31°5, sulphur 5°5. Rockport in Massachusetts.*~~

~~*3°3. green, or yellowish brown.*~~

~~*498, EULYTINE, Bi,Si;.*~~

~~*202*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*Cubic and tetrahedral. — and — ==*~~

~~*The crystals (fig. 66) small, and often with curved faces ; fracture conchoidal. H.=4°5 Transparent and translucent ; adamantine. streak white or grey. C.c¢.: Schneeberg and Brauns-*~~

~~*Clove-brown, yellow, grey, or white; 16°2 silica and 83°8 bismuth peroxide. dorf near Freiberg.*~~

~~*412*~~

~~*SCAPOLITE GROUP. 499, SancoxiTE, 8Ca, 341, Na, 9Si. Pyramidal. P 102° 54; wPo; OP; P, and other facesas in fig. 480, many of the faces being alternately hemihedral. H.=5‘5 to 6; G.—2°93. Vitreous. Grey to rose-red. Translucent ; very*~~

~~*brittle. B.B. fuses to a white enamel; gelatinizes with acids,*~~

~~*C.c: alumina 21°5, lime 32°4, soda 3°38, silica 40°5. Somma.*~~

~~*| Crystals imbedded, or in druses ; also | massive-granular; fracture conchoidal,*~~

~~*Fig. 480 (sp. 499).*~~

~~*Fig. 481 (sp. 500).*~~

~~*500. Mrronrrs, 6(Ca, Na), 441, 98i.*~~

~~*P (0) 68° 42'; Poo (é); oP (a); oP (b) (fig. 481). H.=5'6 to 6; G.=2°6*~~

~~*Pyramidal. Cl.. maerodiagonal.*~~

~~*to 2°74. Vitreous. Colourless or white.*~~

~~*Transparent. Much eracked. C.e.: 31°9*~~

~~*alumina, 26'2 lime, 41°9 silica. Gelatinizes*~~

~~*in acids, Somma. A*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*501. MizzontTE, 6(Ca, Na), 4A], 158i. Pyramidal ; P 64° 4' (fig. 482). Similar to*~~

~~*meionite.- C.c.: alumina 23°8, lime 8°8, soda 9°8, silica 54°7. Insoluble in h. acid. Somma.*~~

~~*502, ScapouiTs, 3(Ca, Na)Si+ALSi,. Fig. 482 (sp. 501).*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 63° 42'; «Po; P; oP; also massive. Cl. oPoo, perfect; and oP. H.=5 to 55; G.=2°6 to 28. Trans- parent or translucent ; vitreous, pearly, or resinous. Colourless, but also pale grey, green, yellow, or red. B.B. melts with effervescence to a vesicular glass; in the closed tube may show traces*~~

~~*of fluorine; with solution of cobalt becomes blue. Sol. in hi. acid. C.c.: 49 silica, 28 alumina (with iron peroxide), and 28 lime (with soda). Tiree (Scotland), Arendal, Tunaberg, Pargas, Massachusetts, and | New York. Known by its rectangular cleavage, resinous lustre on fractured surfaces, and action B.B. Dipyre, P 64° 4', is a variety.*~~

~~*508. MELLILITE (HIwmboldtilite), 2(Ca, Mg)Si,+ (Al, Fe)Si.*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 65°30'; OP; oPo. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=5 to 5°5; G.=2°91 to 2°95. Translucent on edges ; vitreous to resin- ous. Houey-yellow, orange-brown, and yellowish white. C.e.:*~~

~~*32 lime, 7 magnesia, 9 alumina, 7 iron peroxide, 40 silica. Capo di Bove, and Vesuvius. :*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P. 59°; 0P; wPoo; oP38; 2P. Cl. basal H.=5'5 to 6; G.=2°9 to 3°1. Translucent on edges. Dull resinous. Mountain-, leek-, or olive-green, and liver-brown. C.e,: 22 alumina, 5 iron peroxide, 35 lime, 4 magnesia, 31°4 silica. Mon- zoni in the Fassa Valley.*~~

~~*NEPUELINE GRovp. 505, Leucire, Al, Si,+KSi. Pyramidal. Combination of the ditetragonal pyramid (7) with the tetragonal pyramid 'o), and 2P (u)with oP(m). Hemitropes united |*~~

~~=~~

~~*Fig. 483.*~~

~~*by (wu). Fracture conchoidal. H.=5'5to6; G.=2°4to2°5. Trans- parent to translucent on the edges; vitreous, inclining to, resinous.*~~

~~*B.B. infusible ; with cobalt solution becomes blue. Sol. in h.*~~

~~*Colourless, but greyish, yellowish, or reddish white; streak white. |*~~

~~*| to 2°58.*~~

~~*| soda, 4'7 sodium, and 7°3 ehlo-*~~

~~; acid, without gelatinizing.~~

~~C.c.: 54°9 silica, 28°6 alumina, and 21°5 potash. Abundant in the lavas of Vesuvius, the tufas near Rome, and the peperino of Albano; also at the Kaiserstuhl, and near Lake Laach. Readily distinguished from analcime by its in- fusibility, and by never showing faces of the cube.~~

~~506, NePuELINE (Eleolite), AlSi+4(Na, K)Si.~~

~~Hexagonal. P 88° 10'. oP, OP, P common ; also fig. 485.~~

~~or uneven. H.=5'5 to 6; G.=2°58 to 2°64. Transparent or translucent ; vitreous and resinous. Colourless or white (nepheline); or opaque, dull resinous, and green, red, or brown (eleolite). B.B. melts diffieultly (nepheline), or easily with slight effer- veseence (elxolite), into a vesicular glass. Sol. and gelatinizes in h. acid. C.e.: 41°2 silica, 35°3 alumina, 17 soda, 6°5 potash. Nepheline at Monte Somma, Capo di Bove, Katzenbuekel in the Odenwald, Aussig, and Lusatia. Eleolite in the zireon syenite at Laur- Fic. 485 vig, Fredriksvirn, Brevig, and Miask. Massie~~

~~Davine, with 4P 51° 46', seems only a variety; as also Canert- nite, bright blue, and with some earbonate of lime.~~

~~Hexagonal. oP; 0P; oP2; oP§. Cl. oP. H.=6; G.=2°42 Colourless to yellow; lustre silky. Sommaand Vesuvius.~~

~~Cubic; 0, and fig. 486 ; generally distorted ; also massive and~~

~~granular. Cl. 0; fracture eonehoidal or uneven. H.= 5°5; G.=2°13 to 2°29. Trans-~~

~~lucent; vitreous. White, grey, and rarely green or blue. C.e.: 87 silica, 31°8 alumina, 19°2~~

~~rine. Greenland, Vesuvius, Ilmen Hills, Fredriksvirn, and Litchfield in Maine.~~

~~*509. NosEAN, 3(AlSi+ Nasi) + WNas.*~~

~~*Cubic ; and granular. H.= 55; G.=2°28 to 2°40. Trans- lucent; vitreous to resinous. Ash or yellowish grey, sometimes blue, brown, or black. C.c.: 36 silica, 81 alumina, 25 soda, and 8 sulphuric acid. Lake Laach, and Rieden near Andernach, on the Rhine. Occurs in phonolites, in minute crystals.*~~

~~*Fig. 486 (sp. 508).*~~

~~*Cubie; chiefly «0; also fig. 487; but more common in grains. Cl. ©0. H.=5 to 5°5; G.=2‘4 to 2°5. Semitransparent or trans- lucent; vitreous or resinous. Azure- or ; sky-blue; streak bluish white. C.c.: 34°2 silica, 28°5 alumina, 11°5 soda, 4°3 potash, 10°4 lime, and 11°1 sulphuric acid. Vesu- vius, Mount Vultur near Melfi, the Cam- pagna of Rome, and Niedermendig near Andernach.*~~

~~*511. Lapis-Lazv.i.*~~

~~*Cubic ; Oo; generally massive, granu- e lar, H.=5‘5; G.=2‘38 to 2°42. Trans- Fig. 487 (sp. 510). lucent on edges; dull resinous or vitreous. Ultramarine, or azure-blue; streak light blue. B.B. fuses readily to a white porous glass. In h, acid the powder is dissolved and gelatinizes, evolving sulphuretted hydrogen. C.c.: 45°50 silica, 5°89 sul- phuric acid, 31°76 alumina, 9°09 soda, 3°52 lime, 0°86 iron, 0°42 chlorine, 0°95 sulphur, 0°12 water. Near Lake Baikal, China, Tibet, Tartary, Monte Somma, and Chili. It is used for ornamen- tal purposes, and in the preparation of ultramarine. The colour both in it and hauyne seems due to some compound of sulphur with sodium and iron.*~~

~~*Mica Group.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 89° 59'. OP ©, 98° 41' P (m),-4P (0),*~~

~~*o Peco (b), Bao ®, — $P°8 (2). Cl. basal, perfect; sectile; thin plates elastic. H.=2°5 to 3; G. =2°85 to2:9. Transparent, but often only*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*in very thin plates. Generally uniaxal, sometimes with diver- gence=56°. Metallic, pearly. Usually dark green, brown, or black; streak greenish grey or white. B.B. difficultly fusible to a grey or black glass. Completely sol. in concentrated s. acid, leaving white*~~

~~*+ !*~~

~~*i*~~

~~*1 1 ! '*~~

~~*how m*~~

~~*,*~~

~~*Fig. 488. Fig. 489.*~~

~~*pearly plates of silica. C.c.: 39 silica, 17 alumina, 10 iron protoxide, 20 magnesia, 9 potash. Hillswick, Shetland, in gneiss; Sutherland, Ross, Inverness, in limestone; Skye and Fife in trap; Pargas, Boden- mais, Greenland, New York. Rubellan is a decomposed variety.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=3; G.=3:1. Vitreous to adamantine. Chocolate-brown to black. Weathers pale green and ochry. Difficultly soluble in acids. B.B. fused with difficulty toa highly magnetic bead. C.c.: silica 36, alumina 18, ferric oxide 4°5, ferrous oxide 18, magnesia 9, potash 8, water 3. Common in the granites of Scotland. Black Forest, Harzburg, Tyrberger.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. Cl. basal, perfect ; brittle. H. =3; G. =2°97. Vitreous; transparent to opaque. Rich brown to raven-black. B.B. fuses easily to a*~~

~~*black feebly-magnetic bead. Sol. in h. acid, leaving pearly scales of silica. C.c.: 37 silica, 17 alumina, 24 iron peroxide, 3 protoxide of iron, 8 potash, 10 magnesia, 4 water.*~~

~~*Rarely in gneiss, Scotland ; common in granite, Ireland ; and Pers-*~~

~~*berg, Sweden.*~~

~~*515. ANoMITE, 12Mg, 3A1, 2K, H, 125i,*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. c¢:m 98° 42'. Form e¢, m, 0, b (sec fig. 488); divergence of optic axes 12°to 16°. Monroe(New York), Lake Baikal.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. OP ©, P(m),—$P (0), «Poo (5). ¢:m98° 30' to 99°. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=2°5 to 3; G.=2°75 to 2°97. Pearly to submetallic. Yellowish brown with copper-like reflexion; also green, white, and colourless. Transparent. Divergence of optic axes 3° to 20°. C.e.: 14 alumina, 2 protoxide of iron, 28 mag- nesia, 8°6 potash, 2°57 fluorine, 41 silica. B.B. whitens, and fuses on edges. Decomposed by s. acid, leaving the silica in scales. Pargas (Finland), Fassa Valley, New York, Canada, Ceylon. Char- acteristic of serpentine and of dolomitic limestones.*~~

~~*517. ZINNWALDITE.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. Forms as in figs. 490, 491; also 2P0o (H) and 3P°3 (x). m:¢ 98° to 99°. Divergence of optie axes 65°. G.= 2°82 to 3°2. C.c. similar to muscovite (sp. 519), but with 4 to*~~

~~*Fig. 490. 8 fluorine, 2 to 5 lithia, and traces of rubidium, cesium, and thal- lium. Altenberg and Zinnwald, St Just and Trewavas in Cornwall. Cryophyllite from Cape Anu in Massachusetts is similar.*~~

~~*518. LEPIDOLITE. Oblique prismatic. Forms like muscovite. Divergence of optic*~~

~~*axes 50° to 77°. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=2°5 to 4; G.=2°84 to 3. Often massive; scaly granular, coarse or fine. Lustre pearly. Colour rose-red, violet, lilac, yellow, greyish white. Contains 5 to 6 per cent. lithia, with*~~

~~rubidium, cesium, and thallium, also fluorine. B.B. colours flame red. Mourne Mountains, Rozena (Moravia), Uté (Sweden), Ekaterinburg, Maine.~~

~~519. MuscovitTE (Afuscovy-Glass), 3A1Si+ Si.~~

~~Right prismatic, with monoclinic habit. OP ©; oP (AN; oP%o (0); P (m); 2P%co (y). ooP nearly 120°. Twin-face c. Cl. basal, perfect ; elastic. Angle of optie di- vergence from 44° to 77°. Metallic, pearly. Colourless, and tinged of various shades to black. B.B. fuses to an opaque enamel. Not affected by acids. C.c.: 36°6 alumina, 11°8 pot- ash, 45-1 silica, 4°5 water, with traces of fluorine. Shetland, Loch Glass (crystals 15 inches in length) and Struay Bridge in Ross, Aber-~~

~~Fig. 492." in Sutherland, Glen Skiag | side, Bute, and Jnra in Scotland. Cornwall, Cumberland, Wales, Fassa Valley, Urals, America.~~

~~deen, Cornwall, St Gotthard, Norway, Sweden, Siberia. Crystals over a yard in diameter in China, where it is used for windows. Fuchite, bright green, has 6 per cent. of chrome oxide. Margaro- dite contains 4 to 6 water. ilbertite, Cornwall, may be different.~~

~~Massive; foliated. Lustre pearly. H.=2°5 to 8; G.=2°78 to2°9,~~

~~| Yellowish, greyish, and greenish. C.c.: 40°1 alumina, 6°1 soda,~~

~~47°75 silica, 4°6 water.. Monte Campione, St Gotthard. 521. SANDBERGERITE (Baryta-Mica).~~

~~_ White minute scaled aggregates. G.=2°894. C.c.: 30-2 alumina, 4'9 magnesia, 5°9 baryta, 7°6 potash, 42°6 silica, 4°48 water, Pfitsch Valley in Tyrol, and the Swiss Alps.~~

~~522. MARGARITE (Lime-Mica).~~

~~Right prismatic. Cl. basal perfect. H.=3°5 to 4-5; G. =2°99 to 3°1. Lustre of cl. pearly. Lateral planes, vitreous. Snow-white, reddish white, and pearl-grey. Lamine brittle. Optic axial angle 109° to 129°. C.c.: 51°2 alumina,~~

~~11°6 lime, 2°6 soda, 30°1 silica, and 4-5 water. Greiner in Tyrol, Naxos, Asia Minor, Greece, Pennsylvania, North Carolina. D¢phavnite is similar.~~

~~Like muscovite, but laminz not easily separable. H.=3°5 to 4°5; G.=2°83 to 3. Lustre of cl. pearly to adamantine. White to colourless. Transparent to opaque. Lamine brittle. Optic axial angle 714°. C.c.: alumina 42°3, lime 1°5, potash 8:2, soda 5°9, silica 41°6, water 5°5. Unionville in Pennsylvania. —~~

~~524. CLINTONITE, (2R,2A1),Si }4E.~~

~~Oblique prismatic; in hexagonal tables, or massive foliated. basal, perfect. H.=5 to 5°5; G.=3°15. Translucent ; pearly to metallic on the cleavage. Angle of the optic axes 3° to 18°. Reddish brown to yellow. C.c.: 39°7 alumina, 21:1 magnesia, 13°1 lime, 19°2 silica, 2 protoxide of iron, 4°9 water. Amity and War- wick in New York. Brandisite is similar.~~

~~525. XANTHOPHYLLITE.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C about 90°. Crystalline aggregates. Radiate lamellar. H.=4°5to6; G.=3-1. Lustre pearly. Colour yellowish to copper-red. Angle of optic axes 0° to 20°. C.c.: alumina 43°6, lime 13, magnesia 17°5, silica 16°9, water 5°1. Zlatoust.~~

~~526. CHLoRIToID, FeSi+Ali#t.~~

~~Right prismatic; in foliated crystals; brittle. Cl. basal. Lustre greasy to pearly. H.=5°5 to6; G.=3°52 to 3°56. Dark green ; streak greenish white. C.c.: 40 alumina, 27 protoxide of iron, 25 silica, 7 water. B.B. infusible, but becomes magnetic. Decomposed by s. acid. MHillswick in Shetland, Pregratten in Tyrol, Ekaterinburg, Canada.~~

~~527. MASONITE.~~

~~_ Broad plates. H.=6°5; G.—3°53. Grey-green. Streak grey. Pearly to vitreous. C.c.: 26°4 alumina, 19 peroxide of iron, 16°7 protoxide of iron, 32°68 silica, 4°5 Water. Middletown in Rhode Island. –~~

~~528. OTTRELITS, Al,Sig+3(Fe, Mn)Si+ 3H.~~

~~Thin hexagonal tables. Cl. parallel to the prismatic faces. H. = 5°5; G.=4°4. Translucent; vitreous. Greenish or blackish grey. C.c.: 24°3 alumina, 16°8 protoxide of iron, 11°1 protoxide of manganese, 43°4 silica, 5°65 water. Ottrez in the Ardennes (Luxemburg), Aste in the Pyrenees, Ebnat in Bavaria, Newport (Rhode Island), Vardhos (Greece).~~

~~529. PyrosMALITE, 7RSi+ RCI, + 5H. .~~

~~Hexagonal. P101° 34'; crystals oP, OP; tabular; also granular. Cl. basal, perfect ; brittle. H.=4 to 4:5; G.=3to3'2.. Trans- lucent to opaque; resinous, or metallic-pearly. Liver-brown to olive-green. OC.c.: 35°5 silica, 27°5 iron protoxide, 21°5 manganese protoxide, 8 chloride of iron or manganese, and 7°5 water. Nord- mark in Sweden.~~

~~530. ASTROPHYLLITE, (Rg, B)ySig. . Right prismatic, with oblique habit. and in stellate groups. Cl. basal, perfect. H.=3°5; G.=3°33. Submetallic to pearly. Tombac-brown to gold-yellow. Pellucid. Axial divergence 118° to 124°. C.c.: peroxide of iron 9°3, protoxide 23°6, protoxide of manganese 10, soda 3°9, potash 5:9, titanic acid 7°90, silica 39°2. Brevig, El Paso in Colorado.~~

~~Cl.~~

~~In long tabular prisins,~~

~~' CuLoritre GROUP.~~

~~581. Cuorire, 2RSi+R,Al+ 3H. Hexagonal. P 106° 50'; crystals tabular of OP, »P or OP, P (fig. 493); often in comb-like or other groups ; generally foliated and scaly. H.=1to 15; G.=2°78 > to 2°96. lLeck-green to blackish green; streak greenish grey. C.c.: 21 alumina, 20 protoxide 55, gos. of iron, magnesia 18, silica 24, water 11. Tarf- =~~

~~414~~

~~532. PENNINE, 4MgSi+ Mg,Al1+ 5.~~

~~*Hexagonal, rhombohedral ; R 65°.28'. rhombohedrons, with or without the base. Lustre resinous. H 2 to 3; G.=2°6 to 2°77. Streak greenish white. B.B. exfoliates, becomes white, and fuses on the edges to a white enamel, Com- pletely sol. in warm s. acid. C.c.: 83°6 silica, 14°4 alumina, 39°4 magnesia, and 12°6 water; but with 5 to 6 iron protoxide re- placing magnesia. Scalpa in Harris, Glen Lochy in Perthshire, Zermatt in Valais, Tyrol, Ala di Stura in Piedmont, Mauleon in the Pyrenees. Lewehtenbergite is the same. Kammererite, with 5 to 8 chromium sesquioxide, is violet-blue or green ; Unst, Siberia, Pennsylvania. Rhodochrome and Tabergite are also varieties.*~~

~~*533, CLINOCHLORE (Ripidolite), 3MgSi+ Mg,Al+ 4H.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C. 76° 4'. oP i9i°°93. "OP*~~

~~*Sy'; OP: oP 192°8'.. Crystals —2P, P, 4P%o0, OP (n, m, t, P, fig. 494). Twins common; lustre vitreous or resiuous. H.=2 to-3; G.=2°6 to 2°8. B.B. becomes white, and fuses on thin edges to a greyish yellow enamel. C.c.: 30°3 silica, 17°3 alumina, 40°3 magnesia, and' 12°1 water. Edentian and Blair Athole in Scotland, Traversellain Piedmont, Akhmatovsk in Urals, West Chester in Pennsylvania. Corwndophyllite, Epi- chlorite, and Kotschubeyite are varieties.*~~

~~*534. PYROSCLERITE, (3K, $8),Si3+ 3H. _ Right prismatic. sectile. H.=3; G.—2°7 to 2°8. Pearly; translucent. Apple-, emerald-, and grey-green. C.c.: alumina 13-4, chrome oxide 174, protoxide of iron 3°5, magnesia 31°6, silica 37, water 11. Porto- Ferraio in Elba, China. !*~~

~~*MINER*~~

~~*Crystals chiefly very acute*~~

~~*Fig. 494. Cl. basal, perfect ; fracture uneven ; brittle,*~~

~~*535, CHONICRITE.*~~

~~*Massive; crystalline-granular and globular-radiated. H.=2'5 to 3;G.=2°91. Weak silky. White, with yellowish spots ; greenish blue. C.c.: 17°1 alumina, 22°6 magnesia, 12°6 lime, 35°7 silica, 9 water. B.B. fuses easily, with*~~

~~*intumescence, to a grey glass. composed by h. acid, with separation of silica. Colmonell (Ayrshire), Porto-Ferraio.*~~

~~*586. PycNoTROP. ;*~~

~~*Large grained aggregates. Cl. along two rectangular faces ; frac- ture hackly, splintery. Greyish white to brown-red. Vitreous to greasy. H.=2 to 2°3; G.=2°6 to2°7. C.c.: alumina 29°3, mag- nesia 12°6, potash 474, silica 45, water 7°8. Waldheim in Saxony.*~~

~~*537. Tuvrincite, ($R, Ff, +4(Al, #e)),Si, + 4H.*~~

~~*Massive ; scaly. H.=2to25;G.=3°2. Pearly. Olive-green to pistachio-green ; streak paler. Very tough. Powder greasy. C.c.: alumina 16, peroxide of iron 14, protoxide of iron 33, silica 23, water 11. Schmiedefeld in Thuringia, Harper's Ferry on the Potomac, Hot Springs in Arkansas.*~~

~~*538. Deuessite, (Fe}, Mg3),Si,+ (Alyy, Feg,)Si+ 34+ 2MgH.*~~

~~*Massive ; scaly. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=2°6 to 2°89. Olive-green to |*~~

~~*dark green, passing to dark brick-red ; streak light greeu. C.c.: alumina 16°3, protoxide of iron 12°6, magnesia 21, silica 31°5, water 15°8. Common in igneous rocks of Old Red Sandstone and Coal- measure age in Scotland. Oberstein, Zwickau, Lagréve near Mielin.*~~

~~*589. CronsTEDTITE, FeSi+(Fe, Mg), Si+ 3H.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral; radiated columnar. In _. : tapering hexagons, and hemihedral (figs. Fig.495. (Sp.589.) Fig.496. 495, 496). Cl. basal, perfect; elastic. H.=2°5; G33 to 2-5. Vitreous, Coal-black and brownish black; streak dark olive-green.*~~

~~*C.c.: protoxide of iron 39, peroxide of iron 29, silica 22, water 11. Huel Maudlin in Cornwall, Przibram, Brazil (Siderosehisolite).*~~

~~*TALC AND SERPENTINE GROUP.*~~

~~*540. Tato, Mg,Si,+7k.*~~

~~*Right prismatic (%) ; rarely found in six-sided or rhombic tables ; generally massive, granular, or scaly. Rarely fibrous. Cl. basal perfect ; soft, sectile, and flexible in thin plates. H.=1; G. =2°6 to 2°8. Transparent in thin plates, and optically binaxal; pearly orresinous. Colourless, but generally greenish or yellowish white to apple- or olive-green. Feels very greasy. B.B. emits a bright light, exfoliates, and hardens (H. =6), but is infusible ; with cobalt solution becomes red. Not sol. in h. or s. acid before or after igni- tion. C.c.: 63°5 silica, 31°7 magnesia, and 4°8 water. Unst in Shetland, green; Cairnie in Aberdeenshire, brown; Greiner in Tyrol, Sala and Falun, the Pyrenees. Used as crayons, also for forming crucibles and for porcelain.*~~

~~*Steatite.—Massive. Grey, red, yellow, or green. Shetland,*~~

~~*De- |*~~

~~*| H.=3 to3°5; G.=2°5 to 2°7. Translucent to opaque ; | ous.*~~

~~*ALOG Y.*~~

~~*Sutherland, Portsoy, and near Kirkcaldy, Scotland; the Lizard Poiut, Cornwall ; Briangon, Wunsiedel. Savage nations cut the steatite into culinary utensils.*~~

~~*Potstone is a mixture of talc, chlorite, and other minerals.*~~

~~*541. PICROPHYLL, 3RSi+2H.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. H.=2°5; G.=3°75. Dark green. Foliated, shining. C.c.: magnesia 3071, protoxide of iron 6°9, silica 49°8, water 9°8. Sala in Sweden.*~~

~~*542. PicrosMINE, 2MgSi+ Hf.*~~

~~*Right prismatic, but massive. Cl. coPco perfect, less so in other directions ; sectilee H.=2°5 to3;G.=2°5 to 2°7. Translucent or*~~

~~*opaque ; vitreous, but pearly on oP, Greenish white, grey, or blackish green ; streak colourless. Yields a bitter odour when breathed on ; hencethe name.*~~

~~C.c.: 55°8 silica, 36°1 magnesia, and 8‘1 water. Presnitz in Bohemia, and Greiner in Tyrol. a~~

~~543. Monravire, 4(3Mg, #Fe)Si+H.~~

~~Massive, foliated, translucent, and yellowish-grey. H.—6;G.= 3°27. O.c.: silica 55°2, magnesia 31°9, protoxide of iron 8°8, water 4-1. B.B. infusible. Bergen in Norway.~~

~~544, MEERSCHAUM, 2\Ig,Si, + 41.~~

~~Fracture earthy ; sectilee H.=2 to 25; G.=0°8 to 1 (when moist nearly 2). Opaque, dull. Yellowish and greyish white; streak slightly shining. Feels rather greasy, and adheres strongly to the tongue. C.c.: 54°2 silica, 24°7 magnesia, and from 9 to 21°7 water. es ae Anatolia, near Madrid and Toledo, Moravia, Werm- land. ;~~

~~545. ApHRODITE, 4MgSi+H. Soft and earthy. G.=2°21. silica, 35°3 magnesia, 11°9 water. 546. SpapAITE, Mg,Si,+ 444. Massive ; fracture splintery ; sectile. H.=2°5. Translucent ;~~

~~resinous. Red, with white streak. C.c.: 57 silica, 31°6 magnesia, 11°4 water. _Capo di Bove near Rome.~~

~~547, GYMNITE.~~

~~Massive. H.=2to 3; G.=1‘9 to 2°2. Translucent ; resinous. Dull orange-yellow. C.c.: 41 silica, 37 magnesia, 22 water. Tyrol, Passau, Texas, Barehills uear Baltimore. Nickel Gymnite has 29 of nickel oxide, replacing the water. Unst, Texas, Pennsylvania.~~

~~548. SAPONITE, (FeCaMg)gSig + (Alg¥e)Si+ 13H.~~

~~Massive; sectile, and very soft. H.=1°5; G.=2°2 to 2°3. White, orange-yellow, pale green, and reddish brown. Feels greasy; does not adhere to the tongue; falls to pieces in water. C.c.: silica 40°8, alumina 7°5, ferric oxide 3°9, magnesia 20°6, water 22°7. Occurs in all the above colours in the later~~

~~*igneous rocks of Scotland, com- monly. Lizard Point and St Clear in Cornwall, and Dalecarlia in Sweden. Pimelite has 2°8 oxide of nickel.*~~

~~*549. SERPENTINE, 2MgSi+ Mgt.*~~

~~*Crystallization uncertain ; pseudomorphic after olivine, &c. ; generally massive, and granular or fibrous; fracture flat-cou- choidal, uneven, or splintery; sectile, and slightly _ brittle. dull resin- Green, grey, yellow, red, or brown; often in spots, stripes, or veins ; streak white, shining. Feels greasy, and does uot adhere to the tongue. In the closed tube yields water, and becomes black. C.c.: 43°5 silica, 43°5 magnesia, and 13 water ; but with 1 to 8 iron protoxide, and also carbonic acid, bitumen, and chrome oxide.*~~

~~*Varieties are—(1) Noble Serpentine, brighter coloured, 16H,0, and more translucent; (2) Picrolite, or fibrous (H.=3°5 to 4°B); (3) Common, or compact; (4) Chrysotile (Baltimorite, Metasite), in fine asbestiform fibres, easily separated, with a metallic or silky lustre (G. =2°219).*~~

~~*Common in Shetland, Urquhart, Portsoy, Ballantrae ; Lizard Point in Cornwall ; Norway, Sweden, North America. Chrysotile at Colafirth and Fetlar, Shetland, Portsoy, Towanreiff, in Scot- land; Reichenstein in Silesia, the Vosges Mountains, and North America. Serpentine is often a product of decomposition, or pseudo- morph of various minerals, as augite, hornblende, olivine, spinel, enstatite, garnet, &c. It forms whole rocks and mountains, and is manufactured into yarious ornamental articles.*~~

~~*550. Marmonire, 3MgSi+2iIgH,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic ; often foliated. H.=2°5 to 3; G. =2‘41 to 2°47, Lustre peatly. Greenish white, bluish white, and asparagus- green. C.c.: silica 42°1, magnesia 38°5, water 17°5. In veins in serpentine of Urquhart and Portsoy (Scotland) Cornwall, Fin- land, Hoboken. :*~~

~~*- 551. ANTIGORITE.*~~

~~*Thin flat lamine. H.=2°5;G.=2°6. Translucent. Green with brown spots ; streak white. C.c.: silica 40°8, magnesia 36°3, prot- oxide of iron 5:8, water*~~

~~12°4. Antigorio in Piedmont.~~

~~Milk-white; opaque. C.c.: 52°9 Langban (Sweden), Elba.~~

—

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~- 552. Hypropuirs, (Mg, Fe),8i,+ 4H.~~

~~Massive and fibrous. H.=3 to 4; G.=2°65. Mountain-green to blue-black ; streak paler. C.c.: silica 36‘2, magnesia 21°1, protoxide of iron 22°7, water 16. Taberg in Sweden, New York.~~

~~553. VILLARSITE, 2Mg,Si+3. ba~~

~~Right prismatic ; erystals P, OP, meeting at 136° 32’, often twins in triple combination; also grannlar. H.=3;G.=2‘9 to 3. Trans- lucent. Greenish to greyish yellow. C.c.: siliea 39°6, magnesia 47°4, protoxide of iron 3°6, water 5°8. Totaig, Ross-shire ; Traver- sella, Piedmont; Forez, France.~~

~~554. PYRALLOLITE.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 72° 56’; columnar and granular. Cl. basic and_hemidomatie, meeting at 94° 36’; fracture splintery ; brittle. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=2°6. Translucent on edges ; resinous. Greenish to yellow-grey. C.c.: silicate of magnesia and water. Storgard in Finland.~~

~~555. DERMATINE, (Mg, Fe) Si+2H. Reniform ; stalactitie; fracture econehoidal ; brittle. H.=2°‘5; G.=2‘1. Resinous. Blackish green; streak yellow. Does not~~

~~adhere to tongue. C.c.: silica 38, maguesia 22, protoxide of iron 12, water 23. . Waldheim in Saxony.~~

~~Massive, rarely reniform. Coating or filling up geodes in amyg- daloidal cavities. H.=1°5; G.=2°02to2°3. Seetile; fracture con- choidal. On first exposure transparent and olive-green to orange- yellow, but soon changes to black and opaque, splitting in so doing. Vitreous to shining. B.B. melts to~~

~~*a black glass. C.e.: silica 86°2, alumina 8°9, peroxide of iron 18°8, protoxide of iron 2°4, lime 3°8, magnesia 10, water 24:8. -Rum and Canna in the Hebrides, Giant's Causeway. The original mineral from Rum has 22°8 iron peroxide and no alumina.*~~

~~*557. ForcHaAMMERITE, FeSi+6H.*~~

~~*Granular massive. Subresinous to dull. Dark green. H.=2; G.=1'8. C.e.: silica 32°8, protoxide of iron 21°6, maguesia 3°4, water 42°2. Faroes.*~~

~~*558. KIRWANITE.*~~

~~*Fills druses in amygdaloids with divergent sheaf-like crystals. H. =2; G.=2°9. Opaque. Olive-green to dark green. C.e.: siliea 40°5, alumina 11°1, protoxide of iron 23:9, lime 19°8, water 4°4. Loeh Baa in Mull; Mourne Mountains in Ireland.*~~

~~*559. GLAUCONITE,*~~

~~*Round grains. Dull resinous. Light green. C.e.: silicate of protoxide of iron and potash. Ashgrove near Elgin; greensand of England, Franee, Germany, and America.*~~

~~*Massive, forming crusts, as of agates. Earthy, sectile. H.=1 to 2; G.=—2°6 to 2°8. Opaque, shining. Bright green. Feels greasy. C.e.: silica 54, alumina 3°8, ferric oxide 11°9, ferrous oxide 5'4, magnesia 6°8, potash 7°9, water 10. Orkney, Rum, and Fifeshire in Seotland. Giant's Causeway, Verona, Faroes, Iceland, Cyprus, Bohemia.*~~

~~*Massive or radiating-foliated. One el. perfect; brittle. H.=3 to 4;G.=3to3'4. Opaque; vitreous topearly. Greenish black. C.e.: 45°3 silica, 6°9 alumina, 38°3 iron protoxide (with 2 to 3 magnesia), and 9°5 water. Zuekmantel in Silesia and Weilburg in Nassau.*~~

~~*562. CHAMOISITE.*~~

~~*Oolitic and massive. H.=3; G.=3 to 3°4. Greenish grey to black; streak paler. C.c.: siliea 14°3, alumina 7°8, protoxide of iron 60°5, water 17'4.*~~

~~Chamoison (or Chamoson) in Valais, the~~

~~Vosges. Berthierine has 75 protoxide of iron and 5 of water; Moselle.~~

~~AUGITE AND HoRNBLENDE Grovp.!~~

~~Hornblende and augite rather represent gronps of minera] snb- stanees than single species. They are best distinguished when imperfectly formed, by the cleavage and angles of the prisms.~~

~~563. ENSTATITE (Chladnite), MgSi.~~

~~1 Hornblende and angite agree so closely in crystalline forms and chemical com- position that it has sometimes been proposed to unite them in one species. They, however, differ too widely to justify their union. Hornblende is more fusible, and ranges lower in specific gravity (hornblende from 2°931 to 3°445, augite 3195 to 3°525), Though both possess a cleavage parallel to their vertical prisms, yet these differ in angular dimensions :—hornblende 124° 12', augite 87° 6'. They also occur in distinct geognostic positions :—hornblende in rocks con- taining quartz or free silica, and mostly with minerals that are neutral compounds of silica, as orthoclase and albite; augite in rocks that do not contain free silica, and mostly with minerals that are not neutral silicates, as labradorite, olivine, and leucite. Hence there are two distinct series of massive or igneous rocks :—the hornblende series, including granite, syenite, diorite, diorite-porphyry, and red porphyry ; and the augite series or hypersthene rock, gabbro, dolerite, nepheline rock, augite-porphyry, and leucite-porphyry-~~

~~415~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 92° to 93°; crystals Poo (a), clo (6), @P (m), $Peo (k), $Poo (9), &Poo (¥), $P (7) (fig. 497). Usually imbedded, or indis- tinet granular masses. Cl. macrodiagonal very perfect, prismatic oP distinet, brachy- diagonal imperfect. H. =5-5; G.=3'1 to 3°3. Translucent throughout, or only on the edges; vitreous or pearly on the more perfeet .cleavage- planes. Colourless, greyish or greenish white, yellowish, or brown. Not affeeted by acids. B.B. almost infusible. Fig. 497.~~

~~*C.c.: 60 silica and 40 magnesia, but with 6 to 8 iron protoxide, 1 to 2 alumina, and‘1 or 2 water. In olivine and serpentine roeks in Moravia, the Harz (Baste), and the Pyrenees.*~~

~~*564. BronziTE (Schiller Spar, Bastite), (Mg, Fe)Si.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 94°; only granular and foliated. (1. brachydiagonal perfeet, prismatic less so ; fracture uneven, splin- tery, H.=4 to 5; G.=3 to 35. Translucent on thin edges; metallic pearly. Green, inelining to yellow or brown. Imper- fectly sol. in h. acid, wholly in s. acid. B.B. becomes magnetic, and fuses in very thin splinters. C.e.: 43 silica, 26 magnesia, 2°7 lime, 7°4 iron protoxide, 33 iron peroxide, 2‘4 chrome oxide, 1°7 alumina, and 12-4 water. Bastite is possibly altered enstatite. Belhelvic and Black Dog in Aberdeenshire, Baste, Tyrol, Baireuth, . Styria.*~~

~~*565. PAULITE (Hypersthene), (Fe, Mg)Si.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP (m) 98° 30’, P2 (ec), 2P2 (i), 3P3 (w),*~~

~~*coP2 (x), 2Po (h), wPo (a), aPo (b), 4Poo (k), 2Poo (d). Granular or disseminated. Cl. brachydiagonal very perfeet, prismatie ooP distinet, macrodiagonal very imperfect. H.=6; G.=3°3 to 3°4. Opaque or translucent on thin edges ; vitreous or resinous, but metallie pearly on the cleavage planes, of which one is copper-coloured to violet or silvery. Pitch-black and greyish black; streak greenish grey or pinehbeek-brown, inclining to copper-red. Not affected by acids. B.B. melts more or*~~

~~*i)*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*WL*~~

~~*H H i ‘*~~

~~*1*~~

~~*t*~~

1

I i i i I |

1

{

1 1

I

1

\ { I

ig

‘ UJ

je-o= ‘ ¢ nn eee ne nnn enn nn nnn nny

Pa

Fig. 498. Fig. 499.

less easily to a greenish black glass, often magnetic. C.c.: gene- rally 46 to 58 siliea, 0 to,4 alumina, 11 to 26 magnesia, 1 to 5 lime, 13 to 34 iron protoxide, 0 to 6 manganese protoxide. Portsoy and Craig Buroch in Banffshire, Barra Hill in Aberdeenshire, Paul’s Island, Labrador, and Greenland. Crystals oceur in sanadine bombs at Lake Laach (Amblystegiée), and in meteorites of Breiten- bach. Hypersthene rock in Norway, Elfdal in Sweden, Cornwall

(2), the Harz, and Canada. Chemically enstatite and paulite pass

into one another; the essential difference is that the axial dispersion is uniformly p

~~566. WoLLAsTONITE (Tabular Spar), CaSi.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 84° 30'. oP 87° 18', OP (w or h'), coPoo (ce orp), oP (z) 110° 7', Pe? (x or e') 51°, — Poo (v) 44°~~

~~27', 4Poo (a) 69° 56' (fig. 500). Rarely crystallized, mostly broad prismatic or laminar. Frequently fibrous. Cl. along OP and oP%o perfect, but planes uneven or rough ; meet ab 95° 232" -Hi=45. to 5; G. =2°8 to 2'°9. Translucent ; vitreons or pearly on cleavage. ; White, inclining to grey, yellow, red, or brown ; streak white.~~

~~Fig. 500.~~

~~416~~

~~Phosphoresces with heat or friction; gelatinizes — h. acid. B,B. .e.8~~

~~difficultly fusible to a semitransparent glass. 51°7 silica and 48°3 lime, but with 0 to 2 magnesia and 0 to 2 iron protoxide. Glen Gairn, Crathie, &c., in Aberdeen- shire, Urquhart in_ Inver- ness, Skye, Banat, Finland, Sweden, Vesuvius (fig. 501), North America, Ceylon, Capo di Bove.~~

~~567. AUGITE (Pyroxene), RSi=(Ca, Mg, Fe)Si.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 74°11'. oP 87° 6"; P(s:s) 120° 48'; Fig. 501 (sp. 566). —P (ut) 181° 30'; 2P (0) 95° 48'; OP; 8P; Peo. In fig. 180 oP (Mf), wP% (7), wP oo (2), P(s); also various twins and hemitropes of same form (figs.~~

~~191, 502, 503).~~

~~also granular, columnar, and scaly. Cl. prismatic along oP (with~~

~~Fig. 602. angles of 87° 6' and 92° 54'), generally rather imperfect ; ortho- diagonal and clinodiagonal imperfect. H.=5 to 6; G.=38 to 3°5. Pellucid in all degrees; vitreous; in some pearly on oP®o,- Colour-~~

~~less, and white, but usually grey, green, or black. B.B. generally fusible; imperfectly soluble in acids. C.c. generally as follows :—~~

~~| Silica. ‘Lime. Magnesia. | Iron. | (a) Magnesia augite……. 56°22 | 25°54; 18°24 | -... | (0) Magnesia-iron augite 52°72 | 23°81 8°50 =|: 14°97 (c) Tron augite w…sessecceees ..| 49°06 | 22°29 se | 28°65~~

~~Analysis gives 47 to 56 silica, 20 to 25 lime, 5 to 15 magnesia, 1 to 20 iron protoxide, with 0 to 3 manganese protoxide and 0 to 8 alumina. The alumina, chiefly found in very dark green or black augites, may in some replace either silica or part of the silicate. The more important varieties are — Diopside, —Greyish or greenish white, to pearl-grey or leek-green; streak white. Crystallized or broad columnar, or concentric~~

~~lamellar. Transparent to translucent on the edges. Not affected by acids. B.B. fuses to a-whitish semitransparent glass. C.c.: generally lime 26 and magnesia 18°5, with 55°5 silica. Mussa Alp~~

~~(Mussite) and Ala (Aladlite) in Piedmont, Schwarzenstein in Tyrol, Scandinavia, Finland, Urals, and North America.~~

~~Malacolite, Sahlite.—White, green, rarely yellow, brown, or red; streak white. Translucent, or only on the edges ; vitreous, inclining to pearly. Seldom crystallized, mostly columnar~~

~~Fig. 504. B.B. melts to a dark-~~

~~or lamellar. coloured glass. Malacolite common in primary limestones in Scotland, as at Shinness, Ledbeg (fig. 505), and Glen~~

~~Fig. 506. Tilt. Fassa Valley (Fassaite), Piedmont, Arendal, Philipstadt in~~

~~Almost always prismatic, imbedded, or attached ; |~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~Sweden; Lake Baikal (Batkalite); near Lake Lherz in the Pyrenees (Lherzolite) ; Sala (or Sahla) in Sweden (Sahlite) ; Shinness (figs. 504, 506), Glenelg, Tiree, in Scotland ; Tyrol ; North America. Coccolite is a granular sahlite or augite.~~

~~*Augite.—Leek-green, greenish black, or velvet-black, rarely brown ; streak greenish grey. Vitreous to resinous; translucent or qpaque. Only slightly affected by acids. B.B. fuses to a black, often magnetic glass. An essential component of many rocks, as basalt, dolerite, clinkstone, and augite porphyry ; Germany, Auvergne, Vesuvius ; St Kilda, Rum, Tiree, Dalnain, and Urquhart in Scotland. Augite crystals in basalt often contain very many mi- croscopic crystals and glasses ; also pores with fluid carbonic acid.*~~

~~*Hudsonite.—Cleavable lamellar, and jet-black, with green streak and bronzy tarnish, from the Hudson river ; the most highly ferru- ginous variety.*~~

~~*Amianthus.—Some asbestiform minerals are augite, but the greater number hornblende.*~~

~~*Breislackite.—Fine yellowish or brown woolly crystals.. Vesuvius, and Capo di Bove near Rome.*~~

~~*568. DraLuace, (Ca, Mg, Fe) Si.*~~

~~*Like angite, and only a variety with very perfect cleavage in the clinodiagonal, which forms with a second cleavage an angle of 87°. Lustre metallic pearly; colour grey or pinchbeck-brown. i.=4; G.=3°23. B.B. melts easily to a greyish or greenish enamel. C.c.: 50 to 58 silica, 1 to 5 alumina, 15 to 23 magnesia, 11 to 20 lime, and 5 to 20 manganese protoxide. Constituent of*~~

~~*_ the augite rock of the Cuchullins in Skye and of the gabbro of Unst _ and Ayrshire.*~~

~~*Baste in the Harz, Silesia, the Alps, Apennines,*~~

~~*and Urals. Vanadine-Bronzite, containing soda and vanadie acid,*~~

~~*_issimilar. At Craig Buroch (Banffshire) diallage passes in paulite.*~~

~~*569. JEFFERSONITE. |*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. Cl. prismatic oP 87° 30’, and orthodiagonal. H.=4°‘5; G.=3°3 to 3°5. Dark clive-green, brown to black. Lustre greasy. A manganese and zinc augite, with 10°2 protoxide of manganese, and 10°15 oxide of zinc. Sparta in New Jersey.*~~

~~*570. ACMITE, 2FeSi,+3RSi.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic. Crystals long often acute-pointed prisins. oP 87°15’, wPo ®, P(s), 6P (0), — 6P°3(z) (figs. 507, 508). Cl.*~~

~~*like augitec. H.=6 to 6°5; G.=34 to. 3°6. ‘(Nearly LAN opaque; vitreous. Brownish fo*~~

~~*or greenish black; streak greenish grey. Imperfectly soluble in acids. B.B. fuses easily to a black magnetic glass. C.c.: 52 silica, 30 iron |:|! peroxide, 5 iron protoxide, [*: and 18 soda, but with 1 to 3 manganese peroxide, and alsq 3to4titanicacid. Eger and Porsgrund in Norway.*~~

~~*571. Active, R,Si;+ RSi +2NaSi.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic; striated Fig. 507. (Sp. 570.) Fig. 508. or reed-like prisms of 86° 30’ to 87° 45’. Cl. orthodiagonal per- fect, less distinct clinodiagonal, and prismatic. H.=5°5 to 6; G.=3‘4 to 3°5 or 3°6. Vitreous; translucent on edges, or opaque. Greenish black. B.B. fuses easily, colouring the flame yellow. Searcely affected by acids. C.c.: 49 silica, 31°7 iron peroxide, 6°6 iron (and manganese) protoxide, and 12°7 soda, with a little magnesia and potash. HIas the same relation to augite as arfved- sonite to hornblende. Near Brevig and Barkevig in Norway.*~~

~~*572. SpopumEN#, 4A]Si,+3(hi, Na, K)Si.-*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 69° 40’. oP 87° (fig.509). Cl. prismatic oP and orthodiagonal, perfect; chiefly massive or foliated. H.=6°5 to 7; G.=8‘1 to 3°2, Translucent; vitreous or pearly. Pale greenish grey or white to apple- green; streak white. B.B. intumesces slightly, tinging the flame momentarily purplish red, and fuses easily to a colour- less glass. Not affected by acids. C.c.: 65 silica, 28°7 alumina, and 6°3 lithia. Killiney near Dublin, Uté in*~~

~~*Sweden, Tyrol. Killinite (sp. 651), from Killiney, seems to be decomposed spodumene.*~~

~~*Che*~~

~~*Na)Si,. Oblique prismatic. Castor has C 67° 34° and oP 86° 20', in irregular rect-*~~

~~*angular prisms, petalite being massive and coarse granular.*~~

~~*Fig. 509 (sp. 572). Cl. basal, distinct; in a second direction*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*(meeting at 1414°) less so. H.=6°5; G.=2'4 to 2:5. Greenish, greyish, or reddish white to pale red. Translucent; vitreous or pearly. B.B. melts easily into a porous obscure glass, colouring the flame red. Notaffeeted by acids. C.c.: 78°3 siliea, 17°4 alu mina, 3°2 lithia, and 1°1 soda. Uté, Bolton in Massachusetts, York in Canada. Castor in Elba. Milarite, valley of Milar, Switzerland.*~~

~~*574. RHoDONITE (Afanganese-Spar),-MnSi.*~~

~~*Anorthie. oPco(a); oPco (b); OP ©; oP' (uw); P'co (k); Poo(s); 'P'co (0) ; m'P'oo (t). a:b 111°9'; c: @ 98° 28'; n: a 106° 19'; but chiefly massive or granular. Cl. oPo and OP, meeting at 87° 38', perfect ; brittle. . H.=5 to 5°5; G.=3°5 to 3°7. Translucent; vitreous or partly pearly. Dark rose-red, bluish red, or red- dish brown. Not affeeted by acids. — B.B.. fusible. C.c.: 45°8 silica and 54:2 manganese protoxide, with 3 to 5 lime and 0 to 6 iron protoxide. St Marcel, Langban: Ekaterinburg, the Harz, and New Jersey. Bustamite, pale greenish or reddish grey, with 14 lime, Mexico; Fowlerite, New Jersey, With 7 to 11 iron protoxide; and Paisbergite, Sweden, are varieties. Hydropite, Photicite, Allagite, and Horn-Manganese are mere mixtures.*~~

~~*575. BaBINGTONITE, 9(Ca, Fe, Mn)Si+ FeSi,.*~~

~~*Anorthic. Crystals very low eight-sided prisms, small, attached. gue. 90° 24°. ee 87° 27" pa: b.1I2" eS bie 81 8's ved). 150" 10° (fig: 511). Cl. basal ©, very perfect; also along 6. H.=5°5 to 6; G.=3°3 to 3°4, Thin lamine translucent. Splen- dent vitreous ; black. Notaffected by acids. B.B. fuses easily with efferves- cence to a black magnetic bead. C.c.: 50°7 silica, 11 iron peroxide, 10°3 iron protoxide, 7°7 manganese protoxide, aud 20°3 lime, in the Arendal speci- mens; one from Nassau gave about 17 of peroxide, with protoxides only 11. Tongue (Sutherland), Portsoy (Banffshire), Arendal, Nassau, and Gouverneur (New York).*~~

~~*Fig. 511.*~~

~~*Anorthic. ooP'(2); 00'P (m) 88° 40'; ola (5); Poo (a); P'(p); —!P (0); 2'P.co (y); 2P'oo (x) (fig. 512). H.= 5; G.=3°'5. Brownish red to reddish yellow. Pleochroic.*~~

~~*C.c.: silica 52°4, per-*~~

~~*oxide of iron 44°7, lime 3°1. Slightly sol. in s. acid, more so in h. acid. Calvario on Kitna, Mont Dore. el @*~~

~~*577. ANTHOPHYLLITE, 3MgSi+ FeSi.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 124° 30'. Cl. macrodiagonal, perfect. Clove-brown to purplish brown and leek-green. Trans- lucent; radiating and foliated. Pearly on el. plane. H.=5°5; G.=8°2. C.c.: silica 55:9, protoxide of iron 16°7, magnesia 27°8. B.B. very difficultly fusible. Hillswick, Shetland ; Kongsberg and Modum, Norway ; Greenland, and the United States.*~~

~~*578. HoRNBLENDE.*~~

~~*Fig. 512 (sp. 576).*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic (figs. 513 to 517; see also fig. 192). Distinct*~~

~~*cleavage in several directions. ~H.=4 to 6, but generally 5 (will seratch with knife); G.=2°5 to 4:0, but mostly high. Mostly coloured. Lustre vitreous, in some silky or metallic pearly. Sol., but not very readily, in acids;*~~

~~more or less easily fusible. C.e.: anhydrous silicates and aluminates of lime, magnesia, iron pro- toxide; more sparingly of soda, yttria, and manganese protoxide. on chief species form by their decomposition highly fertile soils.~~

~~Amphibole.—Oblique prismatic, C 75° 10'. oP 124° 307.8 148° 30'. The erystals short and thick, or long and thin prismatic ; formed especially by oP (2m), oP*o (x), and bounded on the ends chiefly by OP(p) and P ®. Twins eommon, with the chief axis the twin axis. Very often radiated, fibrous, or columnar, or granular. Cl. prismatic along oP 1244°, very perfect; orthodiagonal and clinodiagonal very imperfect. H.=5 to 6; Gl=e"9 to 3°4. Pellueid in all degrees ; vitreous, but sometimes pearly or silky. Colourless or white, but usually some shade of grey, yellow, green, brown, or black. B.B. fuses, generally intumeseing and boiling, to a grey, green, or black glass. Those containing~~

~~most iron are most fusible, and are also partially sol. in h. acid whieh scarcely affeets the others. C.e. very variable ; the silica is partly replaced by alumina, specially in the green or black varieties; RO is chiefly MgO, CaO, and FeO. Lime is the most~~

~~Fig. 513, Fig. 514~~

~~constant element, in most from 10 to 12; magnesia and iron protoxide replace each other, the one inereasing as the other diminishes.~~

~~With 48i and R=2Mg+1Ca+1Fe, the average composition is 53°6 silica, 17°8 magnesia, 12°5 lime, and 16°1 iron protoxide ; but~~

~~Fig. 516,~~

~~Fig. 515.~~

~~analyses give 40 to 60 silica, 0 to 17 alumina, 0 to 30 magnesia, 10 to 15 lime, 0 to 36 iron protoxide (or peroxide), and 0 to 4 manganese protoxide, 0 to 8 soda, 0 to 8 potash, and 0 to 1°5 fluorine with a little water.~~

~~*The more iniportant varieties are—*~~

~~*Amianthus, Asbestos, and Byssolite, 2MzSi + CaSi. Fine fibrous.*~~

~~*Fig. 517.*~~

~~*White, grey, or green. The fibres often easily separable, elastie, and flexible. Unst, Shinness, Portsoy, Savoy, Tyrol, Corsica.*~~

~~*Tremolite, Grammatite, 3MgSi + CaSi, with 58°35 siliea, 28°39 magnesia, and 13°26 lime. White, grey, green; in long prismatic erystals, often striated longitudinally. Pearly or silky; semi- transparent or translueent. B.B. fuses readily to 2 white or nearly colourless glass. Loch Shin (Sutherland), Glen Tilt, Glenelg, Tiree, Cornwall, Cumberland, Sweden, the Alps, Pyrenees, Silesia, Siberia, North America.*~~

~~*Nephrite, or Jade, isa tough, compaet, fine-grained tremolite, with H.=6 to 65; G.=2‘9 to 3°1. Fracture close splintery. Very tenacious. Translucent ; dull to resinous. Leek-green to blackish green. Feels slightly greasy. Formerly made into ring-stones, amulets, idols, and war axes. New Zealand, China, Mexico, Peru, Balta (Shetland).*~~

~~*Actinolite, Actinote, or Strahlstein (Ca, Mg, Fe) Si. Colour green, inclining to black, grey, or brown. Translueent through- out, or only on the edges. Long prismatic crystals, or radiated- columnar masses. B.B. melts to a greenish or blaekish enamel. Fethaland and Colafirth and Hillswiek (Shetland), Oronsay, Ord Ban (Inverness), Sweden, Tyrol, North America.*~~

~~*Hornblende.—6RSi + 8,Si3. Green or blaek, seldomer brown or grey. G.=3’l to 3°3. B.B. fuses rather easily to a yellow, greenish, or black enamel. Three varieties are distinguished. (a) The noble or Pargasite, pale celadon- or olive-green, and strong pearly or vitreous lustre; at Pargas in Finland, Tyrie in Seotland. (6) Common hornblende, dark leek- or blaekish-green; opaque ; streak greenish grey. A constituent of many rocks, as in Norway, the Alps, and Scottish Highlands (Ballater, Ben Arihaar, Glen- bucket, Colafirth). (c) Basaltic, foliated, with bright even cleavage, opaque, velvet-black; streak grey or brown. Generally contains alumina (9 to 15) and*~~

~~much (5 to 11) iron peroxide. In basalt and volcanic rocks. Etna, Vesuvius, Rhineland, Bohemia.~~

~~AVI — 53~~

~~418~~

~~579. ARFVEDSONITE, RSi + Fei, .~~

~~Oblique prismatic. oP; oP «o; P; 2P%« 120° 24'; OP. Cl. oP 124° 29', perfect; also OP. Massive. Black; opaque. | Vitreous. H.=6; G.=3'44. C.c.: silica 43, alumina 4°5, peroxide of iron 3°8, protoxide 34, lime 577, soda 8°5. Streak dark blue-grey. Fusible in fine splinters in the flame of a candle. B.B. intu- mesces atid melts easily to a black magnetic globule. Not sol. in acids. Kangerdluarsuk in Greenland, Frederiksvirn, Arendal, El Paso in Colorado.~~

~~MINER~~

~~Felted or matted fibres more or less dense. Cream yellow to buff. Dull; extremely tough; absorbs water like a sponge. H. =1 to 2°5; G.=°68 to1:34. Structure varies considerably, and has given rise to trivial names, as mountain paper, mountain leather, mountain flesh, rock cork, &c. Mountain Paper occurs 1n thin sheets at Boyne Castle near Banff ; Mountain Leather, Burn of the Cairn (Cabrach), Tod Head (Kineardineshire), Leadhills, Strontian ; Rock Cork, Portsoy and Boyne Castle, Saxony, and Sweden. C.c.: silica 51°6, alumina 8°6, ferrous oxide 2°88, magnesia 10°2, water 23°38.~~

~~581. KroxKIpouiTE, 3FeSi + (Na, Mg)Si,+ 2H.~~

~~Delicate, easily separable, but tough fibres ; elastic. H.=— 4; G. =3°2to3°3. Trauslucent ; silky. Indigo-blue ; streak lavender. B.B. fuses easily to a black magnetic glass. C.c.: silica 50°8, iron protoxide 85, magnesia 2°2, soda 6°7, water 5°8. Stavern in Norway, Greenland. A fibrous yellow mineral from Orange river, South Africa, has been referred here ; its fibres are not separable, and its hardness is 7. Abriachanite, a very similar mineral, of blue colour, occurs near Inverness.~~

~~582. GLAUCOPHANE, 9R3i + 2AISi,. Oblique prismatic. Cl. prismatie, perfect ; fracture conchoidal. H.=5‘5; G.=3°1. Translucent; vitreous to pearly. Indigo-~~

~~blue, grey, bluish black. B.B. becomes brown, fusing easily to~~

~~olive-green glass. C.c.: silica 56°5, alumina 12°2, protoxide of iron 10°9, magnesia 8, soda 9°3. Island of Syra.~~

~~588. HERMANNITE, MnSi.~~

~~Granular and arborescent. Rose-red. G.=3”4. of manganese 46°7, silica 48°9, lime 2, magnesia 2°4. in Massachusetts.~~

~~584. GRuNERITE, FeSi.~~

~~Asbestiform. G.=3°7, Brown; silky lustre. C.c.: protoxide of iron 51°55, silica 45°45. Mt. des Maures (Var).~~

~~585. IoniTE (Cordicrite, Dichroite), A,Si,+2(Mg, Fe)Si.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP (P) 119° 10’, middle edge of P 95° 36’. Form oP (7), Po (J), OP (m); and this with oP (k), ol3 (d), Po (n),.and $P (s), (fig, 518); short, prismatic. Cl.~~

~~«Pc distinct, traces along Poo ; fraeture conchoidal or uneven. = 7% t0/,/75.4G.—2°5. to 257, dllwams= parent or translucent; vitreous, inclining to resinous. Colourless, but chiefly dark blue, or violet, green, brown, yellow, and grey. Often with distinct trichroism; on~~

~~OP blue, on oP grey, and on Po yel- Towish. B.B. fuses diffieultly to a clear glass; slightly affeeted by acids. C.c.: 48 to 51 siliea, 29 to 33 alumina, 8 to 13 mag- nesia, 1 to 12 iron protoxide. Cabo de Gata in Spain, Bodenmais (Peliom), Orijerfvi in Finland (Steinheilite), Norway, Sweden, Greenland, North America, and Siberia. Small rolled masses of an intense blue colour and transparent, found in Ceylon, are the Sapphire d’ Eau or Luehssapphir of the jewellers.~~

~~*The following have been considered cordierite altered, or with 2 to 6 atoms water :—(a) Bongdorjite, Hydrous Iolite, greenish brown or dark olive-green ; near Abo. (b) Esmarkite, Chlorophyllite, large prisms or foliated, green or brownish ; near Cabrach (Aberdeen) Brevig in Norway, Unity in Maine, and Haddam in Connecticut, (c) Fahlunite, Trielasite, compact, greenish brown or black, foliated ; H. =2°5 to 3; G.=2°5 to 2°38; Falun. (d@) Huronite, granular ; pearly, yellowish-green ; H=3°3; G.=2°86; infusible and insol- uble; Lake Huron. (¢) Weissite, kidney-shaped and ash-grey or brown; Falun and Lower Canada. (f/f) Pyrargillite, indistinct imbedded crystals, black passing into brown or red, dull resinous lustre; H.=3‘5; G.=2°5; Helsingfors. (g) Pinite, crystallized, or massive and laminar, with imperfeet cleavage; H.=2 to 8; G.=2°7 to 2°9, semitranslucent or opaque, dull or resinous, and dirty grey, green, or brown; B.B. fuses toa glass, sometimes clear, at other times dark-coloured ; Auvergne, Schneeberg, Penig in Saxony, the Harz, Cornwall, Cabrach and Torry (Aberdeenshire),*~~

~~*C.c.: protoxide Cummington*~~

~~&~~

~~*)o<--------‘*~~

~~*1*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*(a, p, ¢, 8, fig. 519) are prismatic, generally with vertical strie, Cl.*~~

~~*PPS at SAN basal, rather perfect; oP im- Lai: Bema ne WS perfect. H.=7°5 to 8; G.=2°6 Vg ORY \ to 2:8. Transparent or trans- (*~~

~~*lucent ; vitreous.*~~

~~*times very brilliant; also yellow*~~

~~*to 3°5 chrome oxide in the rich A ed ‘green emerald. Emerald, bright 1 VSL*~~

~~*| acids.*~~

~~*ALOGY*~~

~~*the United States, aud Greenland (Giescekite, sp. 650). Oosite from Geroldsau in Baden, snow-white, opaque, fragile, is similar. () Gigantolite ; H.=3°5 ; G.=2°8 to 2°9; opaque, dull resinous, and greenish grey or brown ; B.B. intumescces slightly, and fuses easily to a greenish slag ; Tammela in Finland. and green; Brevig in Norway.*~~

~~*(¢) Prascolite, lamellar*~~

~~*586. EMERALD (Beryl), AlSi, + 3G18i. Hexagonal; P 59°53'. Crystals of oP, OP, and oP, wP2, OP, P*~~

~~*Colourless or white, but generally green, some-*~~

†

~~*and smalt-blue. B.B. melts with difficulty on the edges to an obscure vesicular glass. Not affected by acids. C.c.: 67°5 silica, 18°7 alumina, and 13°8 glucina, with 0°3 to 38 iron peroxide, and 0°3*~~

~~*green ; G. =2°710 to 2°759; occurs : in Muso Valley uear Bogota, also Fig. 519.*~~

~~*in Salzburg and the Urals. Bery', or Aquamarine, colourless, or less brilliant; G.=2°677 to 2°725 ; near Mursinsk and Nertehinsk in Siberia, Salzburg, and Brazil; in the United States, where at Grafton, between the Connecticut and Merrimack, crystals 4 to 6 feet long, aud weighing 2000 to 3000 Ib, occur ; Mourne Moun- tains in Ireland; Mount Battock and Cairngorm in Scotland (fig. 98). Common Beryl at Falun in Sweden, Fossum in Norway, Limoges in France, Rabenstein in Bavaria, Nigg Bay and Pitfodels and Rubislaw near Aberdeen (Davidsonite), Struay Bridge (Ross). Emerald and beryl are much valued as precious stones. Known from quartz by face py. Forms shown in figs. 92, 95, 96, 97, 98, 276.*~~

~~*587. Levcopuaneg, 6CaSi+3GISi+2NaF.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 91°. CL basal perfect. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=2°97. _ Pellucid. | Wine-yellow to olive-green. Vitreous. B.B. fuses to pale violet-blue bead. C.c.: silica 47, lime 23°4, glucina 10°7, soda 11°3, fluorine 6°6. Lamé in Norway.*~~

~~*588. Mr.inopHane, 7(R,S8i,)+6NaF.*~~

~~*Pyramidal. P 122° 23'. Mostly lamellar. H.=5; G.=3. Honey-yellow to citron-yellow. Brevig and Frederiksvarn.*~~

~~*FELSPAR GROUP.*~~

~~*Crystallization oblique prismatic or anorthic; very similar both in aspect and in angles. Cl. very distinct, especially the basal P; less so the elino- or brachydiagonal M. G.=2°4 to 3°2, but mostly 2°5 to 2°8; H.=6 ora little more. Slightly or not at all soluble in B.B. fusible, but often with difficulty. Translucent; pure varieties transparent. Colourless, white, or shades of red ; less commonly of green or yellow. C.c.: anhydrous silicates of alumina, and of an alkali or alkaline earth.*~~

~~*The felspars are very important constituents of the earth's crust, occurring in nearly all the igneous rocks, and in many of the stratified crystalline schists. In true strata they are found chiefly as fragments or decomposed, and in the latter state form a large part of wet soils and clays. By the older mineralogists and in popular language many species are conjoined under the common name of felspar which are now considered as distinct, each of them having not only its peculiar physical and chemical characters, but also geognostic position and associated groups of minerals. Thus orthoclase, and the other more siliceous felspars with potash, abound in granite and the plutonic rocks ; the less siliceous, with soda and lime, characterize the volcanic rocks,—e.g., labradorite the basaltic group, glassy felspar the trachytic. Orthoclase is associated with quartz, hornblende, and mica; glassy felspar either with hornblende and -a black mica or with augite; labradorite with augite, very rarely with quartz or hornblende.*~~

~~*The felspars are best known from similar minerals by their hard- ness (they scarce scratch with a good knife), difficult fusibility, and unequal cleavages.*~~

~~*The following marks may aid'the student in distinguishing the more common species. In orthoclase the basal eleavage plane forms a right angle with the clinodiagonal cleavage planes Jf on both hands; in the triclinic or plagioclase felspars the angles are unequal. Orthoclase, albite, andesine, and oligoclase*~~

~~*are insoluble in acids; labradorite and anorthite are more or less –*~~

~~*soluble. In granite, when decomposing, orthoelase often becomes reddish or dark-red ; oligoclase dull green, and at length white. Walterhausen considers that the felspars are mixtures of three true species, forming a series with the oxygen of the silica, alumina, and KO in the proportions x :8:1, — « ranging from 24 to 4. Tcher-*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*mak and most mineralogists now take a similar view, regarding orthoclase, albite, and anorthite alone as true species, of which the others are mixtures. Those consisting essentially of potash and soda only are mechanical mixtures of orthoclase and albite, the distinct lamelle being visible by the microscope; those again that contain essentially lime and soda together are, sometimes at least, chemical, being isomorphous compounds of albite and anorthite in various proportions, and with corresponding transitions in erystallographic and physical properties. Notwithstanding this, these intermediates must be regarded as independent mineral species, inasmuch as they are severally typical of certain rocks, and have characteristic forms differing from each other in angular inclination.*~~

~~*589. OrTHOoLASE, AlNi; + KSi,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C=63° 57. oP (7 and J} 118° 47' ; P°co (zx) 65° 46'; 2P%oo (z) 90° 71'; 2Poo (y) 35°45'. The commonest and simplest forms are oP, OP, Poo, and oP (M), oP, OP (P), 2P%o (figs. 520 to 527). When oP predominates the crystals*~~

~~*eo*~~

~~*Fig. 523.*~~

~~are short rhombic prisms ; when oP*%o predominates they are tabular; when oP and mP*%o predomi- nate they are short hexa- gonal prismatic, when OP and oP*co they are rect- angular prismatic, often much lengthened. Twins are very frequent, and oceur according primarily : . to four laws. First, Fig. 526. Fig. 527.~~

~~through revolution of one half or of a whole crystal, then forming interpenetrating twins round a vertical axis (fig. 195). In the case of this hemitropic revolution one of the external faces becomes a face of union. erystal) is conceived to be that which has been revolved the crystals are termed right and left, as in figs. 188, 189. Second, by revolution of one half around an axis normal to ¥; in such twins the com- position is not evidenced externally except by sutures. Third,~~

~~Fig. 528.~~

~~Fig, 529.~~

~~through revolution round an axis normal to P, forming orthorhombic prisms which show a herring-bone lineation, through the meeting of striz commonly present upon the face M parallel to the intersection of its edge with the face 7' (fig. 528). Fourth, by revolution round an axis normal to 2P%co (") ; this also forms a prism the section of which is nearly square (fig. 529). Compound twins on this last type are formed of 8 to 4 and 8 crystals (fig. 530).~~

~~Uccurs also massive, and coarse or fine granular. Cl. basal (P), very perfect ; clinodiagonal (df), perfect (P : M=90°) ; fracture conchoidal or splintery. H.=6; G.=2°53.to 2°58. Transparent to translucent on the edges ; vitreous but pearly on cl.; and also opalescent, with bluish or changing colours. Occasionally colour- less but generally red, yellow, grey, or green. B.B. fuses with~~

~~According as the right or the left half (or whole.~~

~~419~~

~~- difficulty to an opaque vesicular glass. Not affected by acids. C.c.:~~

~~64°6 silica, 18°5 alumina, and 16°9 potash, but generally 10 to 14 potash, 1 to 4 soda, 0 to 1°3 lime, 0 to 2 iron peroxide. Varieties are—~~

~~(1) Adularia and Jee-spar, transparent or translucent, splendent, and almost colourless. Some with bluish opalescence are named Moonstone ; St Gotthard, Mont Blanc, Dauphiné, Arendal, Green- laud, and Ceylon.~~

~~(2) Common Felspar, generally white or red, especially flesh-red, is a common constituent of many rocks. Crystals at Baveno on Lago Maggiore, Lomnitz in Silesia, Mourne Mountains and Wick- low in Ireland, Aberdeenshire (at Rubislaw 6 or 8 inches long) in Scotland, and at Carlsbad and Elnbogen in Bohemia. Amazon . Stone, verdigris-green, from Sutherland, Lake Ilmen, and Colorado, and Murchisonite, golden or greyish yellow, from Arran and Dawlish, are varieties,~~

~~(3) The Glassy Felspar or Sanidine (C 64° 1', @P 119° 16') con- tains 3 to 12 potash and 3 to 10 soda. Crystals imbedded ; vitreous, translucent, and often much cracked; Arran, Figg, and other parts of Scotland, Drachenfels, Auvergne, and other countries.~~

~~Orthoclase occurs in granite, gneiss, and porphyry in many countries. It is commonly associated with quartz; sometimes, as~~

~~'in the Graphic Granite of Sutherland, Harris, and Portsoy, in~~

~~letter-like combinations of the latter. It is very liable to decom- position, when it is converted especially into kaolin, used for manufacturing porcelain and stoneware. The adularia or moon- stone and the green amazon stone are cut as ornamental stones. Leelite, from Biddean nam Bian in Argyllshire and Grythyttan in Sweden, is a somewhat siliceous horny- lustred flesh-coloured com- pact variety. Petwntze and Hornstone are similar but more impure. Mieroeline is a variety with angle distorted by interstitial penetra- tion, by oligoclase (Sutherland), and by albite (Frederiksvirn, &c.).~~

~~590. Axsire, AlSi, + NaSi,. Anorthic. OP (P):0Pco (M) 86° 24'; cP" (J) : oP (7) 122° 15';~~

~~but angles variable. Crystals, generally like those of orthoclase, are tabular or prismatic (fig, 197). Hemitropes common, especially~~

~~united by a face of oPco (figs. 581, 582) the re-entering angle he-~~

~~ee N~~

~~:~~

~~n------ye~~

~~+ 1 ‘ ‘ 1 ‘ 1 ‘ !~~

~~n~~

~~7 /~~

~~N\A~~

~~¢~~

~~Fig. 531.~~

~~tween the faces of OP (P and P’) 172° 48’ being very characteristic. Fig. 198 is another common hemitrope. Also massive, and in radiat- ing plates. Cl. basal and brachydiagonal, almost equally perfect ; fracture conchoidal or uneven. H.=6 to 65; G.=2°6 to 2°67. Rarely transparent ; vitreous, pearly on the cl. Colourless, but generally white, grey, green, red, or yellow; streak white. B.B. difficultly fusible, ~~

~~tinging the flame yellow, to a white semiopaque glass. Not affected by acids. C.c.: 68°6 silica, 19 ‘6alumina with 01 to 1 iron peroxide, and 11‘8 soda, with 0°3 to 4~~

~~:~~

~~Fig. 533. lime, 0 to 2°5 potash. Hence albite and orthoclase both contain~~

~~soda and potash, only in different proportions. Albite is most easily recognized by its frequent re-entering angles, its readier fusibility, and the obliquity (93° 36') of its cl. planes, often marked with strie. Pericline is a variety of which fig. 533 is a typical form.~~

~~Albite is a constituent of many " greenstones," as at Corstorphine (Edinburgh), and of granite, syenite, gneiss, porphyry, and trachyte. Crystallized at Murdoch's Cairn, Aberdeenshire, being the colourless felspar of the red granites of Scotland. Dauphiné, St Gotthard, Tyrol, Salzburg, and Arendal. : ;~~

~~" Adinole is a compact variety similar in appearance to Leelite.~~

~~591. Anorrurre, AlSi+CaSi.~~

~~Anorthic. OP (P): Poo (AN) 85° 50'; oP' (1): 'P(T) 120° 30'. Hemitropes common on both M and P. Angle between P and P' 180° 24'. Cl. basal and brachydiagonal, perfect. H.=6 ;~~

~~420~~

~~G.=2°7 to2°78. Transparent ortranslucent; vitreous. Colourless or white. B.B. fuses toa clear glass ; soluble without gelatinizing in con. h. acid. C.c.: 48 silica, 36°9 alumina, 20°1 lime. sometimes~~

~~Fig. 535.~~

~~with magnesia and soda. Fetlar in Shetland ; Lendalfoot in Ayr- shire, in gabbro; Monte Somina, Iceland, Java. Lepolite and Am- phodelite are varieties. In Latrobite the greater part of the lime is replaced by potash. Glen Gairn and Labrador. At both rose-red.~~

~~592. OLIGOCLASE, 2A1Si, + (Na, Ca),Si.~~

~~Anorthic. OP : wPo 86°10'; oP': w'P 120° 42'. Hemitropes face m, with p: p' 178° 4'; 2:1 120° 20'; y:y179° 9; 2:2 175° 59'. Cl. basal, perfect; brachydiagonal, lessso. H.=6; G. =2°62 to 2°84. Vitreous, resinous on the cl. White, with a tinge of green, grey, orred. B.B. inelts easier than~~

~~orthoclase or albite to a clear glass ; not affected by acids. C.c.: 68 silica, 23°4 alumina, 8°4 soda, and 42 lime; thus nearly=8 albite and 1 anorthite. Distinguished from orthoclase by the marked strie on the faces ; less readily from albite, but more fusible and G. higher. The common associate of~~

~~orthoclase in the Scotch grey granites, especially in vein granite, as at Rispond and Ben Loyal (figs. 586, 587) in Sutherland, and at~~

~~Fig. 534.~~

~~Fig. 536.~~

~~Fig. 537.~~

~~Rubislaw ; Scandinavia, Urals, Harz, and North America. The Sunstone, from Foinaven in Sutherland, Norway, Lake Baikal, and~~

~~Ceylon, with a play of colour due to imbedded crystals of rubin-~~

~~glimmer (gidthite), belongs to this species.~~

~~593. LaBraporite, AlSi,+ (Ca, Na)Si.~~

~~Anorthic. OP: Poo 86° 40'; OP: o'P 111°; OP: oP' 113° 34'; oo': o'P 121° 37'; cPoo ; @P' 120°58'; oPco : w''P 117° 30'. Hemitropes of three types : —(1) according to the first law of orthoclase as in fig. 588; that is, vertical revolution and face of~~

~~union cPoo ; (2) revolution of onc half with reunion on the face wPa,~~

~~ch a4 VA WA~~

~~Fig. 539. Fig. 540,~~

~~as in fig. 589; (8) with twin face P, as in fig. 540. Hemitropes of the last form also occur in which the lower half consists of a hemi- trope formed according to the second method. Crystals imbedded~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~*in rocks consist generally of repeated twins affording an angle of 178° 20'. Cl. basal, perfect; brachydiagonal, less so; both usually striated on account of the above twinning. H.=6; G. =2°68 to 2°74. Translucent; vitreous, on the cl. resinous. Grey, passing into white,*~~

~~*green, yellow, or red. The faces of oPco often exhibit very beauti- ful changing colours—blue, green, yellow, red, or brown—some- times bands intersecting at certain angles. B.B. fuses more readily than orthoclase to a compact colourless glass. Sol. inh. acid. C.c.: 52°9 silica, 30°38 alumina, 12°3 lime, and 4°5 soda. It is thus=1 albite and 3 anorthite. Common constituent of dolerite, gabbro, and hypersthene. rocks. , In Scotland, Labrador, Finland, Harz, Tyrol; also at Etna and Vesuvius.*~~

~~*Anorthic. Crystals similar to albite and anorthite. Twin face M. Crystals generally formed of repeated plates. G.=2°67 to 2°7. Physical properties like albite; more easily fusible to a porous white glass; h. acid sometimes dissolves out alternate lamine of crystals. C.e.: 59°7 silica, 25°6 alumina, 7°7 soda, and 7 lime, and thus nearly 1 of albite and 1 anorthite. Typical of the primary limestones and a granitic belt therein in Scotland, as at Shinness, Urquhart, Dalnain, &c. In the Andes, the Vosges, and Iceland.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic; resembles orthoclase; crystals and angles nearly the same. Cl. OP, perfect. H.=6 to 6°5 ; G.=2°8 to 2°9. Transparent. Lustre vitreous. Colourless, white, and flesli-red. C.c.: silica 52°7, alumina 21, baryta 15°1, potash 7°8, soda 2°1. B.B. difficultly fusible to a blebby glass, not acted upon by acids. Binnen in Valais, Jacobsberg in Sweden.*~~

~~*596. BarsoviTr, AlSi + CaSi.*~~

~~*Right prismatic, or oblique prismatic. H.=5°5 to 6; G.=2°58. Snow-white ; translucent. Fracturegrannlar. Pearly. C.c.: silica 42°2, alumina 36°4, lime 19°8. Gelatinizes in h. acid, difficultly fusible. A dimorphic form of anorthite. Barsovskoi in the Urals.*~~

~~*597. SAUSSURITE.*~~

~~*A massive, granular, translucent, white or pale green felspathic mineral of the nature of anorthite mixed with labradorite. H.=6 to 7; G.=3°26 to 3°4.*~~

~~*Probably a mixture. Occurs in loose blocks near Geneva, and in Corsica. In China and in India is carved under the namie of Oriental jade (nephrite). Seems to be confounded also with zoizite, and perhaps with yu (prehnite). Jadcite is similar.*~~

~~*ZEOLITE GROUP.*~~

~~*These crystallize in all the systems except the anorthic, and them- selves present great variety of development. Mostly hyaline and white; rarely red, grey, or yellow. Cl. generally distinct. All yield water in closed tube ; all: fusible B.B. most easily, and often intumescing ; all sol. in acids, and mostly gelatinize or deposit silica. They are hydrated silicates of alkalies, or alkaline earths, mostly with silicates of alumina, but rarely. contain magnesia. Some mineralogists regard the water as basic, in union with silica, and Kenngott gives the formula in that form, thus :—*~~

~~*Analcime, (NaAl) 2Si + 2(FF, Si),*~~

~~*Natrolite, (NasAl) 28i + 2(H, Si),*~~

~~*Stilbite, Ca, Al + 6(4, Si), aud the others similar. They are generally found in amygdaloidal cavities or fissures of trap or plutonic rocks, apparently as deposits from water percolating into them, and are thus. probably products of decomposing uepheline or felspars, or hydrated felspars them- selves. They never form constituents of rocks. WNatrolite, scolezite, thomsonite, and the connected varieties are marked by their needle-like radiating forms ; stilbite and heulandite by their broad, foliated, pearly cleavage.*~~

~~*598. Preerouits, 4CaSi + NaSi, + H .*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 84° 37'. Peo ©; OP (uw) 95° 23'. Cl. c and w. Twin- face c; chiefly spher- oidal and radiating fibrous. H.—5; Se . G.=2°74 to 2°88. Translucent ; Wo Fa crystals pearly ; fibressilky. Pale SS*~~

~~*green to yellowish white. Sol. in h. acid, leaving silica. C.c.: 51:2 : silica, 83°7 lime, 9°4 soda, and Fig. 541*~~

~~2°7 water. Ratho, Corstorphine, Castle Rock, and Arthur's Seat, Edinburgh; Kilsyth, Stirling ; Knockdolian and Lendalfoot, Ayr- shire; Skye; Montebaldo; Monzoni Valley in Tyrol.~~

~~599. Waxerite, 4Ca8i + MgSi + NaSi, + 2H.~~

~~Like pectolite, but columnar. H. =4°5; G.=2°7. Flesh-coloured. Lustre pearly to greasy. C.c.: silica 58°7, lime 28°6, magnesia 5'1, soda 7°9, water 4°6. Corstorphine Hill, Burntisland.~~

~~600. Xonotuits, 4CaSi + #.~~

~~Massive. H.=6; G.=2°6 to2°7. Pink, white, and grey. Tough;~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~fracture conehoidal and splintery. — C.c.: siliea 49°8, lime 4375, protoxide of manganese 2°3, protoxide of iron 2°9, water 3°7. _ Kilfinichen and Torosay (Mull), Xonotla (Mexico).~~

~~' 601. ToBERMORITE, 3(Ca,, Hf)Si, + 25H.~~

~~Massive, fine granular; translucent ; fracture haekly. H.=5; G.=2'4. Pale pink. C.c.: siliea 49°8, lime 37°2, water 12°9. Tobermory (Mull), Dunvegan (Skye).~~

~~602. OKENITE, CaHfSi, + H.~~

~~Right prisinatic. oP 122° 19'. Usually fine fibrous; radiating. H.=5; G, =2°28 to 2°36. Pellucid; slightly pearly. Yellowish to bluish white. In powder easily sol. in h. acid, leaving gelatinous flakes after ignition. C.e.: 56°6 silica, 28°4 lime, and 17 water; an apophyllite without the fluorine. Disco Island, Faroes, and Iceland. ;~~

~~603. APOPHYLLITE, 8(CaSi + 2H) + KF.~~

~~Pyramidal. P 120° 56'. P, wPo (m), _ Rarely lamellar. Cl]. 0, perfect. Brittle. G.=2°3 to 3:4. Transparent ; vitreous. thalmite). Colourless, rarely pink, green, red, brown, and yellow. B.B. exfoliates, intumesces, aud melts~~

~~*to white enamel. Sol. in h. acid, leaving silica. C.c.: silica 50°38, lime 24°7, water 15:9,*~~

~~*OR) @), oP2i (x): He deb to bb;*~~

~~*P r*~~

1.

~~-~~

~~*Ne*~~

~~*Ld*~~

~~‘~~

~~‘~~

~~‘~~

~~‘~~

~~‘~~

~~’ *n*~~

~~‘~~

~~’~~

~~*Fig. 542. Fig. 543. Fig. 544. potassium 4°3, fluorine 21. Dunvegan and Storr, Skye (fig. 544); Chapel, Fife ; Corstorphine (fig. 542) and Ratho, near Edinburgh ; Kilsyth, Bowling, Kilpatrick ; Port Rush, Ireland. In the form P (fig. 79), grass-green at Oxhaveer, Jeeland (Oxhaveerite) ; Ut, Sweden; Andreasberg and Faroes (pink); Faroes, and Poonah in India (green). Internal structure tesselated, being built up of wedge and lenticular forms with varying refractive indices, hence exhibit- ing a beautiful structure with polarized light.*~~

~~604. GyROLITE, (?Ca+7H)Si+H.~~

~~Lamellar, radiate, spherical, and investing. H.=3to4. Pearly. Bluish white to cream-coloured. 'Transparent, rapidly becoming opaque. C.c.: silica 53°3, lime 382°9, water 13°8. Quiraing, Lyndale, and Storr, Skye; Loch Screden and Carsaig, Mull; Canna; Karartut, Niakornak, and Disco ; Faroes ; Nova Scotia.~~

~~605. ANALCIME, AISi,+NaSi+2H.~~

~~Cubie. oOc;202. Fractureuneven. H.=5°5; G. =2°1 to 2°28. Colourless, white, flesh-red, sear- let. Vitreous; transparent. B.B. melts without frothing to a clear vesicular glass. Decomposable with gelatinization in h. acid. C.e.: 54°5 silica, 23°3 alumina, 14°1 soda, 8°2 water. Walls, Orkney; Talisker, Skye; Sanda, and Hebrides generally. 'Trans- parent at Eigse, and Elie, Fife scarlet at Bowdens, Kincardine ; opaque white at Glen Farg, Salisbury Crags, and Dumbarton; Giant's Causeway, Seisser Alp in~~

~~Fig. 545. Tyrol, Cyclopean Islands (fig. 545), Faroes, Iceland, and Nova~~

~~Scotia. Hudnophite is a variety. Pecto- lite (sp. 598) occurs pseudomorphous after analcime, in large crystals of a, 7, at Ratho, Edinburghshire.~~

~~606. Ponnux, 3(AlSi;+(€s2, Nad)$i) +~~

~~oOo; 202 (fig. 546). Also massive. Gum-like externally. Brittle,~~

~~with traces of cleavage. Fracture con-~~

~~choidal. H.=5°5 to 65; G.=2°86 to SQ~~

~~2°9. Colourless. Vitreous. Sol. in n. " :~~

~~acid. C.e.: silica 44, alumina 16, oxide cia GP 606); : of cesium 34; soda 2°5, water 2°4. Elba. The only mineral which contains cesium in quantity. :~~

~~On o pearly (Lehthyoph- |~~

~~421~~

~~607. Fausasitz, 2418i, + (CaNa),Sig + 18HE.~~

~~Cubic ; in octahedrons with the icositetrahedron $0%. Fracture uneven ; brittle H.=7; G.=1°92. Transparent; vitreous to adamantine. White to brown. Sol. inh. acid. C.c.: 46°8 silica 16 alumina, 4-4 lime, 4°8 soda, 28 water. Kaiserstuhl in Baden, Annerod near Giessen, Eisenach, Marburg.~~

~~Rhombohedral ; R 94° 46.' 48R4;— 4R ®;-2R (ce); wP2 (a). Twins very common (generally interse*ting), on faces oP and~~

~~)~~

~~Fig. 547. Fig. 548, Poo. Primary rhombohedron is sometimes twinned with a crystal with faces r, e,s. Cl. r perfect. H.=4 to 45; G.=2 to 2°92. Transparent or translucent; vitreous. Colourless, and brownish,~~

~~Fig. 549. Fig. 550.~~

~~yellowish, brick-, and flesh-red. Sol. in h. aeid, leaving silica. C.c.: silica 47°8, alumina 20°8, lime 10°7, water 21°3. Lyndale (figs. 547, 548, 549), Talisker (figs. 176, 550, sometimes flesh~~

~~eS~~

~~Fig. 551. Fig. 552.~~

~~colour), and Storr, Skye (figs. 547, 548); Port Glasgow and Kil- malcolm (pink and brown); Giant's Causeway and Magee Island (red), Faroes, Iceland, Aussig, Andreasberg (fig. 551). Haydenite in twinned rhombohedra, with p:p 95° to 97° and p:@ 170° reentering (fig. 552), from Fassa and ¢ Maryland, is similar. Phaeolite is chabasite in twins of 2P2, oP2, R, -4R at the Giant's Causeway (fig. 154). At — Richmond in Victoria~~

~~they occur as in fig~~

~~Fig. 553. 553, -2R (n), — 3R ®, $P2 (0), OP ©; polar edge, 3P2 145°. In this, half of the lime is replaced by soda. < 609. GMELINITE (Soda-~~

~~Chabasite), ANSi, + NaSi + 6H « Hexagonal. R 112° 26'; P 79° 54'. Combination P, OP, oP~~

~~(figs. 554, 556). Faces of P striated parallel to the polar edge, those of the prism horizontally (fig. 555). Cl. ooP distinct. Gelatinizes~~

~~"as CY~~

~~Fig. 556.~~

~~iy with h. acid. C.c.: 47°6 silica, gre 19°7 alumina, 12 soda, 20°7 water.~~

~~Fig. 555. Certain crystals seem to indicate twinning. Talisker in Skye (twins of fig. 555), Glenarm in Antrim (fig. 555), Vicenza, Pyrgo in Cyprus, Cape Blomidon in Nova Scotia.~~

~~610. Levyne, AlSi, + CaSi + H5. :~~

~~Rhombohedral; R (s) 79° 29'; ~·—4R ® 106° 3'; OR (0). Forms intersecting twins as in fig. 557. H.=4; G. =2°1 to 2:2, Colourless and white. C.c.: silica 43°8, alumina 23°8, lime 9°7, water 21. Storr in Skye (0, s), Ireland (at Glenarm, Island Magee, London-~~

~~derry, &c.), Iceland, Dalsnypen, and Naalso in the Faroes.~~

~~611. Hersceneuirs,~~

~~Hexagonal prisms (¢) surinounted by two trihedral pyramids of a7 and one of a3) (fig. 558). a,: ¢ 122°8';~~

~~a :¢ 107° 26'; e striated hori- zontally. Cl. e; fracture con- choidal; transparent; vitreous. € White or colourless) H.=5'5; . G.=2°06. Cc: silica 47, alu- Fig. bho et) mina 21°2, lime 5°2, soda 4°8, potash 2, water 17°86. Aci- Castello and Palagonia in Sicily, Yarra in Australia. 612, LAUMONTITE (Leonhardite), AlSi, + CaSi + 4H. Oblique prismatic, C 80° 42', oP (m) 86°16', oP:— oP (ce)~~

~~118°30' ; Poo (a,):— oP 111° 14'; ¢: @125° 41'; a:090°; ¢:2149° 15'. Twin facea. Cl. m, perfect ; very brittle. H.=3 to 35; G,=2°2 to 2°38.~~

~~*Pellucid when fresh ; vitreous ; pearly on cl. White, cream-coloured, brick-red. De- composes rapidly through loss of water. B.B. intumesces, and melts first to a white enamel, ultimately to a clear glass. Gelatinizes in h. acid. C.c: silica 50°9, alumina 21°8, lime 11°9, water 16°3. Rapidly loses 1 equivalent or 3°86 per cent. of water, and becomes fri- able (Hypostilbite). Kilfinichen, Mull (jig. 559); Storr and Quiraing, Skye (hypostil- bite); Tod Head, Snizort, Glen Farg (red) ; Bowling, Dumbarton (twins of m, e); Huel- ; goat. in Brittany; Prague, Falun, Iceland, Fig. 559.*~~

~~*Faroes, Nova Scotia. Caporcianite from Tuscany has only 3*~~

~~*water. 613. EPpImsTILBITE (Reisstte), AISi, + CaSi, + 574.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 54° 53'. coP (m) 135° 10'; Poo (¢) 109° 46'; $P(s) 147° 40'(fig. 560). Henni- tropes united by m, with twins of the same united by the brachy- diagonal (a). Cl. brachydiagonal, perfect. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=2°3 to 2°4, Pellucid ; vitreous; pearly on cl. Colourless. Sol. without gelatinizing. C.c.: silica 59, alum- ina 17°5, lime 9, soda 1°5, water 14°5. Talisker in Skye (m, ¢, a);*~~

~~*Fig. 560.*~~

~~*Hartlepool (in twins), Iceland, Faroes, Silesia, Viesch in Valais, Nova Scotia, and New Jersey.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*614. HrvtanpirTe, ASi, + Cadi, + 5H. — Oblique prismatie, C 63° 40'. Pc' (p) 50° 20'; 2P (z) ; $P (w) 5*~~

~~*2P%co (7); SPeoo (s); Poo; oP®; OP. 2:2 186°4'; w: wu 146° 52'. Crystals elongated along each of the axes pre- sent very varying forms, but generally tabular Cl. clinodiagonal, per- fect; pearly on this, vitreous on others; brittle. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=2°1 #0 2°2, "Drans- parent to translucent ; colourless, white, brick- red, rose, green, hair- brown. B.B. melts with exfoliation and _ intu- mescence to a white enamel. . Sol. in h. acid, leaving _ silica. Storr and Talisker, Skye (fig. 562); Sanda; Kilmalcolm; Catterline, Kincardine (fig. 563); Kilpatrick Hills (p, mm, N, %, U,7,8)and Kintyre .*~~

~~—— (red); Iceland, Tass. Fig. 564. Fig. 565. Fassa Valley, Nova Scotia, Baltimore (Beawmontite) (fig. 565) (p, m, 2, 2, t); Vindhya Mountains in India (fig. 564).~~

~~615. BrewsreriTe, AlSi,RSi, 57. R=(¢Sr + ?Ba + }Ca).~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 86° 56'. cP%s0 (a); coPto (b); OP (0); nPoo (€); oP (m); wPe2 ©; oP% (Z). e:e 178° 10' (fig. 566). Cl. clinodiagonal, perfect ; pearly on do., vitreous on others; pellucid. H.=5 to 5°5; G.=2°5 to 2°45. Colourless, yellow, or brown. Sol. with gelatinization in h. acid. C.e.: 54°83 silica, 15 alumina, 9 strontia, 6°6 baryta, 1°3 lime, 13°5 water. Strontian, Freiburg in the Breisgau, Pyrenees.~~

~~Fig. 562. Fig. 563.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 55° 1'. oP (m);| cP (b); OP (¢). Polar edges 120° 42' and 119° 18'. Faces b and m striated parallel to the intersections. ase always twinned; \ |.~~

~~enerally these duplicated by intersection on |.~~

~~ee b ai fade € (figs. 567, 568), and frequently Fig. 566 (sp. 615). arranged so that three of the above double twins intersect at right angles to one another, forming the cruciform fig. 569.~~

~~;~~

~~Fig. 569. . When the prismatic faces of these are short, the faces m of the~~

~~Fig. 570.~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~intersecting individuals fall nearly into one plane, presenting the form fig. 570; when long, fig. 190. Brittle; fracture uneven. H. =4'5; G.=2°15 to 2°2. Gelatinizes in h. acid. C.e.: silica 48°6, alumina 20°2, lime 7°3, potash 6°2, water 17°7. Giant's Causeway, Giessen, Marburg, Cassel, Capo di Bove, Vesuvius, Iceland.~~

~~*Physical properties like phillipsite, but G.=2°3 to 2°5, and fuses*~~

~~*SESS 7)*~~

~~*ane *~~

~~*Fig. 573. with difficulty. Difficultly sol. in h. acid. C.c.: 46°5 silica, 15°9*~~

~~*Fig. 574.*~~

~~*alumina, 23°7 baryta, and 13°9 water. Stroutian, transparent (Morvenite, fig. 572) and opaque (figs. 571, 573); Glen Arbuck (fig. 574) and Bowling in Dumbarton; Corstorphine near Edinburgh ; Andreasberg, Kongsberg, Oberstein.*~~

~~*618, Srinpire, AISi, + CaSi, + 6FF. Oblique prismatic, but with right prismatic habit; C 50° 49'.*~~

~~*aPo (a); wPo(b); P®; oP2 (m); OP (p). Cl. a, perfect. Ho=3'> to.4; G.—2Tto22. Transparent ; vitre- ous. Pearly on a. Colourless, white, yellow, pale brown, brick-red. Decomposed by h. acid, leaving silica. C.c.: silica 57°5, alumina 16°4, lime 8'9 water 17°2. Storr and Talisker in Skye (a, 6, p) (fig. 575), and in Hebrides (colourless); Arran and Kilmalecolm (pale brown); Long Craig (Dumbarton) and Kinneff (Kincardine) (brick-red); Iceland, i Faroes, Andreasberg, Vindhya Mountains, Wellington Mountains (Australia), Nova Scotia. i*~~

~~*619. PurrLeriTE, AlSi, + Ca,Si,+ SFE*~~

~~*Fibrous globular concretions, with vitreous surface. H.=4; G.=2-21. Greyish white. 'Transparent. C.c.: silica 52°8, alumina 16°3, lime 11°2, water 17°2. Pufflatsch in the Seisser Alp.*~~

~~*620. Epincronire, 4A]Si,3BaSi 12H.*~~

~~*Pyramidal ; hemihedral with inclined faces. 129° 8'; oP (a); polar edges P 92° 51' (fig. 576). Cl. a, per- fect ; fracture uneven. H.=4 e425: Gl—2-7 to. 2°71. Trans- lucent ; vitreous. Colourless. C.c.: silica 37°3, alumina 23°75, baryta 26°52, water 12°46. Kil- patrick Hills in Dumbarton- shire,*~~

~~*P 87° 19'; 4P (n)*~~

~~*ene calc ign*~~

~~*621. Foresite, 2AINi, _ + (Na, Ca,)Si, + 6H. Fig. 576 (sp. 620). Right prismatic. Pc; oPo;0P. Cl. perfect ; lustre thereon pearly. G.=—2°4. White.*~~

~~*50, alumina 27°4, lime 5°5, soda 1°4, water 15:1. in Elba, .*~~

~~*622. Narrouire, AlSi, + NaSi + 2H. Right prismatic. ooP(m) 91°; P (0); polar edges 148° 20' and 144° 40', middle edge 58° 20'; «Pa (b); Pc (a). Radiating*~~

~~*brachydiagoual, C.c. > silica San Piero*~~

~~*| 55; G.=2°2 to 2°3.*~~

~~*423*~~

~~*acicular crystals, often fibrous. Cl. oP, perfect. H.=5 to 55; G. =2°17 to 2°26.. Pellucid; vitreous. Colourless, ochre-yellow, reddish. Is not pyro-electric. B.B. melts quietly to a clear glass, colouring flame yellow. Sol. in oxalic acid. C.c.: 47°2 silica.*~~

~~*Fig. 577. Fig. 578. 27 alumina, 16°3 soda, 9°4 water. Glen Farg (fig. 577), (colourless and reddish), Tantallon Castle (fig. 578), Dumbarton, Bowling (green), Campsie, Bishopton, Glenarm and Port Rush (Ireland), Auvergne, Hesse, Hohentwiel in Swabia, Norway. Crocalite is red, fibrous, and investing ; Kintyre, Forfarshire, Wemyss Bay, and the Urals.*~~

~~*623. Sconecire, AISi, CaSi 3H.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 89° 6'. oP (m) 91° 35'; P (0) 144° 20;-P. Prismatic and acicular crystals. Twins common, on face coP*co , one face with feathered stria, Cl. oP, perfect. H.=5 to Pellucid ; vitreous ; pyro-electric. White to reddish white. B.B. twists in a vermicular manner; melting readily to a porous glass. Only par- tially sol. in oxalic acid. C.c.: silica 45°8, alumina 26°2, lime 14°3, water 13°7. Staffa; Loch Screden, Mull; i] Talisker, Skye; Berufiord, Iceland \ if (fig. 579); Faroes ; Vindhyas, India.*~~

~~Ni} Natrolite and scolecite pass into one ‘i another. There are two definite in- termediates—Fargite, consisting of two equivalents of natrolite and one of scolecite, aud Mesolite, consisting of one of the former and two of the latter. The first of these occurs at Glen Farg and at Bishopton (Galactite) ; the second is the ordi- nary radiated zeolite of the amygda- Fig. 579. loids of the Tertiary igneous rocks of the Hebrides and the Farces. It there occurs in matted crystals of extreme tenuity (Cotton- stone), also in delicate feathery tufts ; in Renfrewshire in spheres with an internally radiated structure, and also in needle form and in downy tufts.~~

~~Pyramidal. P (6) 92° 30’; polar angie 118° 34’; owPo (fig. 580). Cl. P. H.=5, on edges and angles 5 to 6; G.=2°26. Translucent ; vitreous. JBluish white to pale red. C.c.: silica 35°9, alumina 27°3, lime 1371, potash 2°8, water 21°l. Island Magee and Larne, Ireland; Vesu- vius, Aci-Castello, and Capo di Bove; Schiffenberg near Giessen; Schlauroth near Gorlitz.~~

~~Si 4 atk. Fig. 580.~~

~~Right prismatic. P polar angle 120° 37’ and 121° 44’; middle angle 89° 13’. Crystals like fig. 419. H.=5, on edges and angles 7; G.=2°2. Transparent; vitreous. Colourless, white, or bluish. C.c.: silica 44, alumina 23°38, lime 5°3, potash 11°1, water 15°3. Capo di Bove.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP (m) 90° 26’; oPco (a); coBco (b); sPeo (y); Poo ®; debo (2), aie 177° 34’ 20”, Cl. macrodiagonal and_brachy- diagonal, both perfect. H.=5 to 5°56; G.=2°35 to 2°38, Translucent; vitreous ; pearly on mac- rodiagonal. Colourless. B.B. difficultly fusible with intumescence to a white enamel. Sol. with pic, 581 (sp. 626). gelatinization in h. acid. C.c.: silica 3877, ; alumina 30°8, lime 13°4, soda 4°4, water 13°1. Lochwinnoch, Renfrew ; Kilpatrick (fig. 58°. > Quiraing and Talisker (sometimes~~

~~massive-granular) ; Rathlin and Magee Island, Ireland; Faroes,~~

~~Vesuvius (fig. 581), Sicily, Bohemia, Tyrol,~~

~~Nova Scotia. A..* aA Faroelite is a variety with 42°5 of silica.~~

~~*It replaces thomsonite generally in Tertiary*~~

~~*igneous rocks, occurring at Storr and else-*~~

~~*where in the Hebrides, Faroes, Iceland,*~~

~~*and Nova Scotia. The angle of the vertical*~~

~~*prism is within 8' of that of thomsonite. It*~~

~~*contains an equivalent more silica.*~~

~~*627. Prennitr, AlSi + 2CaSi + H.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP (m) 99° 58'; OP ©) 3Poo (e) 33° 26'; $Poo (v) 90° 32'; «Poo (a); cPoo (b); P(s). Crystals either tabular of ¢, or prismatic along both the vertical and the brachydiagonal axes, hence varying much in form. Also in fan-shaped and botryoidal aggregations. Cl. ¢, perfect; pearly thereon, vitreous else-*~~

~~*where. H.=6 to 7; G.=2°8 to 3. Transparent to translucent. Colour-*~~

~~*Fig. 583.*~~

~~*Fig. 582 (sp. 626).*~~

~~*Fig. 584.*~~

~~*less, but generally green of bright but pale tints, also lemon-yellow. Becomes electrically polar by heat. B.B. intumesces greatly, melting to a porous enaniel. Decomposed by h. acid. C.c.: silica 43°6, alumina 24°9, lime 2771, water 4°4. Glen Gairn, Aber- deen (fig. 588); Skye and Mull; Corstorphine Hill (green and pink), Castle Rock (white), and Salisbury Crags (yellow), Edin- burgh; Frisky Hall, Dumbartonshire (fig. 584); Hartfield Moss, Renfrew (botryoidal); Cornwall; Dauphiné; Tyrol: Cape of Good Hope; China (Yu).*~~

~~*628. FRIEDELITE, Mn,Si,; + 2H.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R 128° 42'. OR; oR. Tabular habit, and in granular aggregates. Cl. basal,perfect. H.=4 to 5; G.=3°1. Rose-*~~

~~*red, with paler streak. C.c.: silica 36, protoxide of manganese 53, lime 2°96, water 7°9. Adervielle on the Neste de Louron (Pyrenees).*~~

~~*Hyprovs SilIcaATEs oF ALUMINA.*~~

~~*These are probably for the most part products of decomposition of felspars under atmospheric exposure.*~~

~~*629. Kaottn (Porcelain Earth), A\Si,+ 24.*~~

~~*Massive ; in beds and veins. Fracture uneven ; fine earthy, very soft, sectile, and friable. H.=1; G.=2'2. Opaque, dull. White or grey, inclining to blue, green, yellow, or red. Feels meagre, not greasy when dry, and plastic when wet. 3B.B. infusible. Not affected by h. acid, but decomposed by warm s. acid, leaving silica. C.c. very variable, but approximates to 46 silica, 40 alumina, and 14 water. Chiefly a product of the decomposition of orthoclase, or of granite, porphyry, and other rocks containing that mineral. Cornwall and Devonshire in England are the chief European locali- ties for the kaolin used in manufacturing porcelain.*~~

~~*Clays are merely varieties of kaolin, mixed with quartz-sand, car- bonate of lime, magnesia, and the oxyliydrates of iron. Often 40 to 50 silica, 30 alumina, 13 to 20 water, and 4 iron peroxide, with lime and potash. In the fire they are infusible, burning hard. Generally they are compact and friable, of white, yellow, red, blue, grey, or brown colours, Their specific gravity varies from 1°8 to 27. The following are varieties. Pipe-clay, greyish or yellowish white, with a greasy feel, adheres strongly to the tongue, when wet is very plastic and tenacious, and in the fire burns white. Abundant in Devonshire, and in the Trough of Poole in Dorsetshire; in France, Belgium, and Germany. "Used for manufacturing tobacco-pipes and similar articles. Potter's Clay, red, yellow, green, or blue, becoming yellow or red when burnt; more easily fused than the former, and often effervesces with acids. That used in the potteries in England comes chiefly from Devonshire. Loam, coarser and more impure, with more sand, and consequently less plastic. Shale or Slate Clay, greyish black, and much mixed with bituminous or*~~

~~carbonaceous matter. Bituminous Shale, known by its shining resinous streak. Black Chalk, with more carbon, leaves a black mark on paper. Jron~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~Clay contains much peroxide of iron, is reddish-brown, and forms the basis of many amygdaloids and porphyries. °~~

~~630. NacriTE, AlSi,+ 2H.~~

~~Right prismatic; minute six-sided tables in fan-like group ; and scaly. H.=0°5 to1; G.=2°35 to2°6. Glimmering to pearly, snow- white or yellowish white. C.c.: silica 46°83, alumina 39°8, water 13°9. Acrystalline form of kaolin. Fins in Allier, Mons, Freiberg, Pennsylvania, and coal formation commonly;~~

~~631. LiTHOMARGE. Kaolinie substances, compact, earthy, and pseudomorphous. H.=2‘5to3; G. =2°4to 2°6. White, yellow, orred. Greasy, adheres~~

~~to tongue. Klausthal, Harz, &c. Similar are Carnat, Myelin, Melopsite.~~

~~632. Hattoysirs, AlSi+ 47.~~

~~Massive and reniform. H.=1°5to 2°5; G.=1°‘9to 2-1. Trans- lucent wheu moist. Bluish white, green, or yellow. C.c.:.41°5 silica, 34°4 alumina, 24°1 water. Hospital Quarry near Elgin, on the Tweed, Liége, Tarnowitz, Eifel (Lenzinite). Fuller’s Earth may be an impure ferruginous variety. Maxton in Scotland, Reigate aud Maidstone in England, Saxony, Bohemia, &c.~~

~~633. GLAGERITE, z1,Si3+ 61.~~

~~H.=1; G.=2°35. Bergnersreuth. Jfalthazite, from Steindérfel near Bautzen, has less alumina.~~

~~H.=1 to 2; G.=2. Also similar. Schemnitz, Pyrenees, and Saxony. Scarbroite from Scarborough has 10H,0.~~

~~635. MILOSCHIN.~~

~~*Conchoidal or earthy. . H.=2; G.=2°1. green ; has 2 to 4 chrome oxide.*~~

~~*Indigo-blue to celadon+ Ruduik in Servia.*~~

~~*636. MONTMORILLONITE, Al,Si,+ 2H.*~~

~~*Massive. Rose-red. Montmorillon and elsewhere in France, Poduruoj in Transylvania.*~~

~~*From Carinthia. Chrome Ochre, with 2 to 10 per cent. of chrome oxide, from Waldenburg in Silesia and Creusot in France, is similar.*~~

~~*638. CrmoniTE, Al,Si,+ 67.*~~

~~*Pseudomorphous after augite. Argeutiera and Milo.*~~

~~*639. ALLOPHANE, AlSi+ 53H.*~~

~~*Botryoidal and reniform. Fracture conchoidal; brittle. H.=38 ; G.=1°8 to 2. Pellucid; vitreous. Pale blue, white, green, or brown. Colour duc to copper. Charlton, Woolwich, Baden, and Bonn.*~~

~~*640. PYRoPHYLLITE, AISI,+ HH.*~~

~~*Right prismatic, but radiated, foliated. Cl. perfect ; flexible, sectile. H.=— 1; G.=2°8to2°9. Translucent, pearly. Light verdi- gris-green to yellowish white. B.B. swells up with many twistings to a white infusible mass. C.c.: 67 silica, 28 alumina, and 5 water. Urals, Spa, Morbihan, Westana in Sweden, Carolina, and Brazil. Talcosite, from Heathcote in Victoria, has silica and alumina about equal.*~~

~~*641. AnauxiTE, AlSi,+3H.*~~

~~*Granular. H.=2 to 3; G.=2°2 to2°4. Translucent, pearly. Greenish white. C.c.: 60°5 silica, 26 alumina, and 13°5 water. Bilin in Bohemia.*~~

~~*Bilin, Limburg, Kaiserstulil,*~~

~~*Hyprovs SILIcATES OF ZIRCONIA, THORIA, &c.*~~

~~642. MALAcCONE, 3ZrSi + Hf.~~

~~Pyramidal. P 83°30'. Typical form Po, P, oP. H. =6; G.=3°9 to 4°1. Conchoidal fracture. Lustre vitreous. C.c. same as zircon, but with 3 of water in the Hitteré variety and over 9 in that from Finland. Has a surface opalesceuce, and may be altered zircon. Hitterd, Chanteloube (near Limoges), near Dresden, Rosen- dal, Finland, Miask.~~

~~643. EUCRASITE.~~

~~Right prismatic (?). H.=4'5 to5; G.=4°39. Lustre greasy. Blackish brown; streak brown. Translucent on edges. Fracture uneven; brittle. C.c. very complex: silica 16, thoria 86, cerium protoxide 5:5, peroxide 6, lanthania 2°4, yttria 4°3, erbia 1°6,~~

~~titanic acid 1°3, ferric oxide 4°25, alumina 1°8, water 9. Barkevig near Brevig.~~

~~644, Tuorire, ThSi + 2H .~~

~~Pyramidal. oP: P 133° 30'. Generally massive. H.=4°5 to5. G.=5to5'4. Lustre brilliant vitreous; when weathered resinous. Fracture conchoidal when fresh, splintery when~~

~~weathered. Brownish black to clove-brown. C.c. complex, but essentially 18 silica, 73 thoria, 9 water. In syenite at Lochan~~

~~MINERALOGY~~

~~Hacon, and in a boulder on Ben Bhreck in Sutherland, in crystals (fig. 585); L6éwo6 near Brevig, Nor- way. Uranothorite, from Arendal, has 50 per cent. thoria and 10 uranous oxide ; found also at Hitter and at Champlain (U. 8.)~~

~~645. ORANGITE, 8ThSi + 2H.~~

~~Massive. Orange-yellow to cinua- mon-red. Other characters like tho- mite, ©.e.: 7 silica, 75 thoria, 7 water. Ben Bhreck, Langesund near Brevig. The~~

~~*mineral from Ben Bhreck passes gradually into thorite, which | thus would appear to be altered orangite.*~~

~~*646. TRITOMITE, B,Si,+ 4H.*~~

~~*Cubic. In tetrahedra. H.=5‘5; G.=3°9 to 4°66. Lustre vitreous. Dull brown; streak yellowish grey. Subtranslucent. C.c. complex: silica*~~

~~*Fig. 585 (sp. 644). 21, alumina 2°5, ceria 40, lanthania 15, yttria 4°6, lime 4, water 8. Lam6 near Brevig.*~~

~~*MAGNESIAN SILICATES.*~~

~~*647. AGALMATOLITE (Figure Stone), 4A]Si, + KSi, + 342.*~~

~~*Massive or slaty. Fracture splintery, rather sectile. H.=2 to 3; G. =2°8to2°9. Translucent; glimmering. Green, grey, red, and yellow. Feels somewhat greasy, but does not adhere to the tongue. Sol. ins. acid. C.e.: 55 silica, 33 alumina, 7°6 potash, and 5 water; but in many localities magnesian. Calligaig in Sutherland ; China, where it is cut into various works of art; also Nagyag in Hungary, and Saxony.*~~

~~*648. OncosINn, 2AISi, + (K,Mg)Si,+ 2H.*~~

~~*Fracture uneven or splintery; sectile. lucent; slightly resinous. Apple-green or brown. Sol. ins. notin h. acid. Salzburg.*~~

~~*649. LIEBENERITE.*~~

~~*Hexagonal. oP; 0P. Cl. prismatic, perfect ; fracture hackly.*~~

~~*®@H.=3‘5; G.=2°8. Oil-green, bluish green, and greenish grey. Greasy lustre. C.c.: silica 44°7, alumina 36°5, potash 9°9, water 5°5. Monte Viesena near Forno, Predazzo in Tyrol.*~~

~~*650. GIESECKITE.*~~

~~*Hexagonal. oP; OP. Fracture splintery. H.=3 to 35; G.=2°7 to2°9. Kangerdluarsuk in Greenland, Diana in New York.*~~

~~*Crystalline, foliated. Cl. along a prism of 135° 44'. G.=2°65. Greenish grey, yellow, or brownish green. C.c.: 48 silica, 31 alumina, 2°3 protoxide of iron, 6°5 potash, 10 water. Killincy near Dublin.*~~

~~*652. HYGROPHILITE.*~~

~~*Sealy. H.=—2to 2°5; G.=2°7.*~~

~~*Sol in h. acid.*~~

~~*potash 5°7, water 9. Halle on the Saale.*~~

~~*__ Aggregates of thin plates. H: =1to2; G.=2°6. C.c.: silica 51:4, alumina 18°9, peroxide of iron 4, magnesia 3°3, potash 6°5, water 18°3. Noyant in Allier.*~~

~~*654. PINITOID.*~~

~~*Massive. Leek- and oil-green. H.=2°5; G.=2°8. C.c.: silica 48°5, alumina 28, protoxide of iron 8, potash 5°8, water 4°5. Frei- berg and Chemnitz in Saxony.*~~

~~*655. BoLe.*~~

~~*Earthy, in nests and veins.*~~

~~*_ 25.*~~

~~*Conchoidal. H.=1 to 2; G.=2°2 to Opaque ; dull resinous; streak shining. Brown, yellow, or 'red. Feels greasy; some adhere strougly to the tongue, others not atall. In water crackles and falls to pieces. C.c. hydrous silicates of alumina and iron peroxide, in various proportions. Scotland, lreland, Dransfeld, Clermont in Auvergne. Stolpenite, Rock Soap, Plinthite, Yellow Earth or Felinite, Fetbol, and Ochran are varieties.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. P111°27'. Radiating stellated. H.=5 to 5°5; G. =2°9. Translucent; silky; straw- to wax-yellow. B.B. intumesces and fuses to an opaque brown glass. C.c.: silica 38, alunina 29°4, protoxide of iron 2°9,*~~

~~*peroxide of iron 4, protoxide of manganese 11°8, water 10°8. ebtnceon wall Wippra in the Harz, Meuville in the Ardennes.*~~

~~*657. NonTRonitTE, FeSi,+ 5H.*~~

~~*Massive; fracture uneven. H.=2 to 3; G.=2 to 2°3. Opaque; dull or glimmering; streak resinous. Straw-yellow or siskin-green. B.B. decrepitates, becomes black and magnetic, but without fusing;*~~

~~*| and 21 water, with 3°5 alumina and 2 magnesia. France, Harz, and Bavaria.*~~

~~*| yellow-brown.*~~

~~*_=2: G.=2°8. Trans- | He = 2s G 8. Trans- 19, ferric oxide 10, water 21.*~~

~~*| Crystals honey-yellow ; when massive leek-green.*~~

~~*Greenish grey. Lustre and feel / greasy. C.c.: silica 48°4, alumina 32°1, protoxide of iron 3°3, |*~~

~~*425*~~

~~*sol. and gelatinizes in warm acids. C.c,: 48 silica, 36 iron peroxide, Nontron in Chloropal is similar. B.B. brown. Unghvar in Hungary, and Passau.*~~

~~*658. PINGUITE.*~~

~~*Massive; fracture splintery; sectile. H.=1; G.=2°3. Light to dark green. Lustre vitreous. Feels greasy. C.c.: silica 36°9, per- oxide of iron 29°5, protoxide of iron 6°1, water 25:1. Wolkenstein,*~~

~~*| Suhl.*~~

~~*659. HisincErive, Ye,Si, + 2FeSi+ 9H.*~~

~~*Reniform, andin crusts. H.=3‘5 to4; G.=2°6 to 3. Opaque, resinous. Brownish or bluish black; streak liver-brown or yellowish brown. C.c.:*~~

~~*various, but 32°5 silica, 83°5 iron peroxide, 15°1 iron protoxide, and 19 water, in the Thrauwlite from Bodenmais. Also Gilling and Riddarhyttan in Sweden, and Breitenbrunn (Polyhydrite).*~~

~~*660. BERGHOLZ.*~~

~~*Fine fibrous; glimmering lustre. Wood-brown to green. G. =2°4, C.c.: silica 55°5, peroxide of iron 19°5, magnesia 15, water 10°38.*~~

~~*| Sterzing in Tyrol.. Xylite, probably from the Urals, is similar.*~~

~~*661. UMBER.*~~

~~*Massive; fracture conchoidal. H.=1°5; G.=2°2. Liver-brown; streak shining. Mixtures of peroxide of iron, oxide of manganese, and alumina with water. Cyprus. Hypoxanthite and Siderosili- cite are similar.*~~

~~*662. KuipsTEINITE, (Rg, #,),Si, + Rely.*~~

~~*Compact. H.=5 to 5‘5; G.=3°5. Liver-brown to black ; streak C.c.: silica 25, peroxide of iron 4, sesquioxide of manganese 57, water 9. Klapperud in Dalecarlia, Herborn near*~~

~~*| Dillenburg.*~~

~~*663. WOLKONSKOITE.*~~

~~*Amorphous. Horny; bluish green to grass-green. Fracture con- choidal ; brittle. C.c.: silica 36, alumina 3, sesquioxide of chromium Okhansk in Siberia.*~~

~~*664. RUrrisiTE, 3NiSi+ 4H.*~~

~~*Amorphous and reniform. Apple-green toemerald-green. H. =2 to 2°5; G.=2°35 to 2°37. C.c.: silica 43°7, nickel oxide 35°9, water 11°2. Réottis near Reichenbach in Saxony. Konvarit is similar.*~~

~~*Right prismatic. oP 146°; cPco; Po; with polar angle 90°. H. =2°5; G= 2°6 to 2°8. C.c.: silica 17, alumina 6°1, oxide of uranium §3°3, lime 5°1, water*~~

~~15°1. Kupferberg in Silesia.~~

~~666. URANOTILE, CaSi+%,Si, + 91.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 164. Instellate groups. Lemon-yellow. G.=3°96. C.c.: silica 18°8, oxide of uranium 66°75, lime 5°27,~~

~~| water 12°67. Wolsendorf in Bavaria, Joachimsthal, Mitchel county~~

~~in North Carolina.~~

~~667. BISMUTOFERRITE, Bi, Sig, + 2¥e,Si.~~

~~Crypto-crystalline ; oblique prismatic. Siskin- to olive-green. H. =3‘5; G. =4°48. C.c.: silica 24, oxide of bismuth 42°8, peroxide of iron 38°1. Schneeberg in Saxony. Hypochlorite is a variety containing 18 of bismuth. In a third variety, from Briunsdorf, antimony replaces bismuth. ,~~

~~SILICATES WITH TITANATES, NIOBATES, &c. 668. SPHENE, CaSi, + CaTi,.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 85° 22’. oP (i) 133°2’; $P°c0(x) 55°~~

~~| 21’; Peco (y) 34°21’; wP* (g): 0P (Porc) 90°; oP3 (1 76°7’ ;~~

~~Peco ® 118° 30’; 3P°2 (m) 136° 12’; 4P%4 (s) 67° 57’. vary extremely in form, being generally appar- ently oblique-tabular, from predominance of nm, which are hemidomes in alternate position on opposite ends; also,~~

~~but more rarely, pris- matic, with dominance of 2 and M@. Twins frequent. Twin face ¢, and formed by revolution either (a) on an axis nor- mal to ¢ or (J) ona vertical axis; the former very commonand usually producing thin tables with a re-entering angle along one side, and sometimes elongated. Occasionally in double twins. Some-~~

~~Crystals~~

~~Fig. 586. Fig. 587.~~

~~*times granular or foliated. Cl. in some (/), in others ®.*~~

~~*H.=5 Semitransparent ; adamantine or resinous.*~~

~~*to 55; G.=3°‘4 to 3°6. XVI. — 54*~~

~~*426 MINER*~~

~~*Yellow, brown, and green. B.B. fuses with micro-salt in the red. flame, gives reaction for titanicacid. C.c.: silica 30°6, titanic acid 40°8, lime 28°6. In Scotland, typical of syenites and primary lime- stones. In minute hair-brown crystals in the first ; as at Lairg (Sutherland), Achavarasdale (Caithness), and Criffel (Kirkeud-*~~

~~*Fig. 588. Fig. 589.*~~

~~*bright) (figs. 586 to 588). In the latter often in highly complex twins, yellow to brown, at Shinness (figs. 193, 589), Urquhart, Dalnain, Torbane, &c., also with ilmenite and allanite in exfiltra- tion veins of grey granite. Dauphiné, Mont Blanc, St Gotthard, Tyrol, Arendal, America. (reenovite, flesh-red from Glen Gairn in Aberdeenshire (like 194), and St Marcel in Piedmont; contains manganese at the latter locality.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 58°. oP 114. Cl — 2P, 138°. H.=6 to 7; G.=3°5 to3°7. Blackish brown; streak greyish yellow. B.B. with borax forms blood-red glass in the red. flame; other features like sphene. C.c.: 29°7 silica, 28°7 titanic acid, 21°1 lime, 10°8 yttria, 6°2 alumina, and 6°5 iron peroxide. Near Arendal.*~~

~~*670. ScuoRLoMITE (Ferrotitanite), Ca,Si+¥e,Si, + CaTig.*~~

~~*Cubic ; oO and 202; generally massive ; fracture conchoidal. H. =7 to 7°5;G.=3°8. Black; streak grey-black; vitreous. C.c.: silica 26, titanic acid 23°3, peroxide of iron 20, lime 29°4. Arkansas, Kaiserstuhl, Ivaara in Finland. Perhaps a titaniferous garnet.*~~

~~*671. TsCHEWKINITE.*~~

~~*Massive ; fracture flat conchoidal. H.=5 to 5°56; G.=4°5. Opaque, vitreous, splendent. Velvet-black; streak dark brown. B.B. intumesces greatly, becomes porous, and often incandesces ; in white heat fuses to black glass ; gelatinizes with h. acid. C.c.: 21 silica, 20 titanic acid, 11 iron protoxide, 45 peroxides of cerium metals with perhaps thoria, lime 4. Miask, Coromandel.*~~

~~*672. MOSANDRITE.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 71° 243'. oP (¢) 88° 36'; cP (n); Po (a); —P (e) 124° 1'; — P°co (gq); wP*co. £: a 134° 18; m: a 152° 52'; g:a@ 138° 2'. Twin face the orthopinacoid. Generally massive. Fracture uneven. H.=4; G.=2°93 to 3. Yellowish or reddish brown ; streak pale green. Vitreous to resinous lustre. C.c.: silica 29°9, titanic acid 9°9, oxide of cerium metals 26°5, lime 19, water 8°9. Brevig and Langesundfiord.*~~

~~*673. EUDIALITE (Zukolite), 6RSi,+RZr.*~~

~~*Rhombohedral ; R 73°10'. BR (p), OR (a,), wP2 (d,), 1R (ao); also oR, &R, ~4R, —2R, —3R, Te Pe (1) ity) $B Sas (fig. 591). Generally massive, granular. Cl. a, and a; fracture uneven. H.=5 to5°5; G.=2°84t02°95. Peachblossom- red to brownish red ; streak white. Trans- lucent; vitreous. B.B. fuses easily to a light-green opaque glass; gelatinizes in h. acid. C.c.: silica 50, zirconia 16°9, penne of iron 7, lime 11, soda 12.*~~

~~*angerdluarsuk in Greenland, Sedlova- toi Island in White Sea, Brevig (Zuko- lite), Magnet Cove in Arkansas.*~~

~~*674. CATAPLEITE, 2(Na,Ca)(SiZr), + OF.*~~

~~*Hexagonal. P 114° 43'. OP, oP, P, also with 2P, and 4P. In lamellar agere- gates. Cl. prismatic and P; fracture uneven. yellow, lustrous. 9. Brevig.*~~

~~*Fig. 590 (sp. 672).*~~

~~*Fig. 591 (sp. 673). H.=6; G.=2°8. Yellowish brown to pale green ; streak*~~

~~*C.c.: silica 46°7, zirconia 29°6, soda 10°8, water*~~

~~675. CERSTEDITE.~~

~~Pyramidal. P 84° 25'. P,aP,aoPo, Like zircon. G. =3°63. Lustre adamantine. Reddish brown. titanate of zirconia 68°96, water 5°6. Arendal.~~

~~Hi ==‘b5 5 C.e.: silica 19°7,~~

~~| stuhl, Brevig, and Frederiksvarn.~~

~~ALOGY~~

~~676. WOuLERITE, 9RSi + 3RZr + RNb.~~

~~Oblique prismatic, C 70° 45'. oP 90°14'; —P%0 438° 18'. OP: wP°~ 109° 15; —P°m: wP®% 136° 42'; OP : wP 103° 31'. Crystals tabu- lar and prismatic. Cl. clinodia- gonal; fracture conchoidal. H.=5 to 6; G.=3°4. Light yellow, honey- yellow to brownish grey; streak yellowish white. C.c.: silica 28, zirconia 19, niobic acid 13°9, lime 27°8, soda 8°38, protoxide of iron 3. B.B. fuses to yellowish glass. Sol. in h.. acid. Langesundfiord, Brevig.~~

~~677. ARDENNITE.~~

~~Right prismatic. oP 131°2'; Poo 112°24'; P38; wP3; wP2; oP; wPo. Crystals like ilvanite. Cl. brachydiagonal, and oP, H.=6 to7; G.=3°62. Yellow to yellow-brown. Dichroic; brittle. C.c.: silica 27°8, alumina 24, protoxide of manganese 26°7, lime 2°2, magnesia 4'3, vanadic acid 3°2, arsenic acid 6°38, water 5. Ottrez in the Ardennes (Luxemburg).~~

~~678. RoscoELITE.~~

~~Foliated masses, sometimes stellated. H.=1; G.=2°3 to 2:9. Dark green to greenish blue. Pearly lustre. C.c.: silica 47:7,~~

~~vanadic acid 22, alumina 14°1, magnesia 2, potash 7°6, water 5. Eldorado in California.~~

~~ca POT 27" 47;~~

~~TITANATES WITH NIOBATES. 679. TrITANoMoRPHITE, CaTi,. Oblique prismatic. Like sphene. 2p°2. C.c.: titanic acid 74°3, lime 25°3. Weistritz. 680. PERovskITE, CaTi. Right prismatic. In complicated twins, often distorted, pseudo-~~

~~oP, OP, $P%co ' P%o , Lampersdorf in Silesia,~~

~~cubic. H. =5°5; G. =4to4'1. Lustre metallic- adamantine. Pale yellow, reddish brown to f_—*} iron-black ; streak grey. C.c.: 58°8 titanic 5 4) acid, 41:2 lime. B.B. with micro-salt in onter es SES flame gives a bead greenish while hot, colour- less on cooling; in inner flame grey-green when hot, violet-blue when cold. Decomposed~~

~~by boiling s. acid. Zlatoust, Schelingen, Zer-~~

~~matt, Malenco Valley near Sondrio, Pfitsch :~~

~~in Tyrol, Magnet Cove in Arkansas. iS~~

~~681. Koprirs, R,Nb,. Fig. 598.~~

~~Cubic; 00. G.=4'45 to 4°56. Brown. Transparent. C.c.: niobic acid 62°46, oxide of cerium 6°7, oxide of lanthanum 3. Schelingen on the Kaiserstuhl in Baden.~~

~~682. ANNERUDITE, 2R,Nb+5H :~~

~~Right prismatic. H=6. G 5'7. Metallic to greasy. Black. Streak black, brown, greenish grey. 'Translucent in splinters; brittle. C.c.: 48 niobic acid, with zirconia, thoria, ceria, yttria, and uranium oxide. Annerdd near Moss (Norway).~~

~~683. DysANALYTE, 6RTi+ RNb.~~

~~Cubic; «O00. Cl. cubic. G.=4°13. Black. C.c.: titanic acid 41°5, niobic acid 23°2, cerium oxide 5°7, lime 19°8; protoxide of iron 5°8, soda 3°6. Vogtsburg on the Kaiserstuhl.~~

~~684. PyrocHLORE, 5RNb+4R(TiTh),+4NaF.~~

~~*Cubic (fig. 594). Cl. octahedral ; brittle ; fracture conchoidal. H.=5; G.=4°2to4°4. Resinous, opaque. Red-brownto black, ruby- red and transparent rarely; streak pale brown. C.c.: niobic acid 53°2, titanic acid 10°5, thoria 7°6, cerium oxide 7, lime 14:2, soda 5, fluorine 3°1. Miask, Kaiser-*~~

~~*Microlite, from Chesterfield in Massachnsetts, has tantalic acid 68°4, niobic acid 7°75, 11°7 lime and 7°7 protoxide of manganese. Pyrrhite from Mursinsk in the Urals, San Piero in Elba, and the Azores may be the same; at the last locality it is in orange-red octahedra, and is a niobate of zirconia.*~~

~~*685. Bromsrranpirs, (Ga,Fe), Ti+UNb, +. Massive. H=5°5.. G.=4‘17 to 4°25 Vitreous, black. Streak*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*brown. Translucent in splinters. C.c.: niobic acid 49°8, titanic acid 10°7, uranium oxide 23°7, protoxide of iron 3°3, lime 3°5, water 7°9. Nohl (Sweden).*~~

~~*686. Potyorase, 4R’Ti+RNb. Right prismatic (fig. 595). oP, oP*~~

~~*(140°), P, 2Poo (56°). Fracture conchoidal. H.=5 to 6; G.=5’l. Black; streak grey- brown. 8B.B. decrepitates violently, incan- descing, but does not fuse. Sol. in s. acid. C.c.: titanic acid 26°6, niobic acid 20-4, yttria 23°83, erbia 7°5, oxide of uranium 7°7, water 4, Hitterd (Norway), Slettakra in Jonkdp- ing (Sweden).*~~

~~*687. Evxenirs, IRTi+RNb+H. Right prismatic (fig. 596). oP (m) 140°;*~~

~~*oP (b); 2Poo (d) 52°; P (p) 102° 58’, p:b 108° 6’. Fracture conchoidal. Opaque ; nietallic to vitreous. Black and brownish black; streak red-brown. B.B. infusible. Not acted on by acids. C.c.: niobic acid 32, titanic acid 19°2, uranium oxide 19-5, yttria 18°2, cerium oxide 2°8, but variable. Jolster, Tromé, Alvé, &c., in Norway ; also Hitters and Cape Lindesnaes.*~~

~~*Fig. 595.*~~

~~S~~

~~688. AISCHYNITE. Fig. 596. Right prismatic. oP (Mf) 128° 34'; 2Pco (y) 73° 16'; P (0 : 0) 137° 14'; P83. 69° 23'; Poo; OP. Crystals long prismatic (fig. 597). Cl. traces; fracture imperfect conchoidal. | H. =5 to 5°5 ; G.=4°9 to 5°1. Opaque ; submetallic or resinous. Iron-black or brown; streak yellow- ish brown. B.B. swells and becomes yellow or brown, but is infusible. Not sol. in h. acid, partially in s. acid. C.c.: niobic and tantalic acids 28°8, titanic acid 22°6, thorium oxide 15°7, cerium || x protoxide 18°5, lanthanum oxide and didymium oxide 5°6. Miask, Hitters. :~~

~~689. PoLYMIGNITE.~~

~~Right prismatic. P (py) polar 136° 28' and 116° ff 22'; oP 109° 46'; wPo; WZ oo Poo (fig. 598). Cl. macro- Fig. 597 and brachydiagonal, imper- ees 883) fect; fracture conchoidal. H.=6°5; G.=~~

~~4°7 to 4°8. Opaque; semimetallic. lron- black ; streak dark brown. B.B. infusible. Sol. inh. acid. C.e.: titanic acid 46°3, zir- conia 14°1, yttria 11-5, lime 4°1, iron peroxide 12°2, cerium ox- ide 5. Frederiks- varn. ee 690. Mencirx, ; (Fe, Zr) Ti.~~

~~Fig. 598 (sp. 689). Righb priswia- tic. P(e) polar angle 151° 27' and 101° 10'; oP 186° 20'; P83; cP (fig. 599). Fracture uneven. H.=5 to 5°5; 5°48. Opaque; semimetallic. black ; streak chestnut-brown. B.B. : infusible, but becomes magnetic. Sol. Pig 09 (yp 600), ins. acid. Miask, Groix island in Morbihan.~~

~~691. TANTALITE, Fe (La, Nb).~~

~~7, =~~

~~Iron-~~

~~Right prismatic. P (p) with polar edges 126° and 112° 30', |~~

~~middle 91° 42'. oP2® 122° 53 — aPo (s); cP (t); Poo (m) 118° 48; 8Pa (q) 54° 10'; .3Poo (nm) 167° 36; P (v); 2P2 (0). Fracture conchoidal or~~

~~uneven. H.=6 to 65; G.=6‘1 to 8. Opaque; semimetallic, – adamantine, or resinous. Iron-black; streak cinnamon- or coffee-brown. B.B. infusible ; scarcely affected by acids. C.c.: 76 to 50 tan- talic acid, 7°5 to 29 niobic acid, 9 to 16 iron protoxide, and 1 to 6 manganese protoxide; some with 1 to 10 tin oxide (Cassiterotantalite); also in union with iron (mauganese) protoxide, Kimito and Tammela in Finland, Broddbo and Finbo near Falun, and Chanteloube near Limoges ; always in granite.~~

~~692. TapiouTE, 4a + Feb. Pyramidal. P middle angle 84° 52’, summit 123°1’.. 1.=6; G.=~~

~~Fig. 600.~~

~~427~~

~~C.c.: tantalic acid 73°9, niobic acid Tammela in Finland.~~

~~698. CoLumBITE, m¥eNb+nFe#a.~~

~~Right prismatic, P (a) polar angles 104° 10’ and 151°, middle~~

~~| angle 83° 8’; OP ©; coPco (b); Poo (a); oP (y) 135° 40’;~~

~~oPco (m) 101° 26’; 2P (s); 3P3 (0); 31% (x); AP oo (2) 161°;~~

~~Poo (&) 148°; 2Poo (h) 112° 26’; Poo (4) 101° 12’; 2Poo (e) 62° 40’.~~

~~Hemitropes, face ¢; vertical axes forming an angle of 62° 40’; also~~

~~on faces 2P2 (n), and rarely b. Also granular and foliated. Cl.~~

~~brachydiagonal, perfect, also macrodiagonal. H.=6 ;°G.=5‘4 to 6°4. Metallic, adamantine. Iron-black to brownish ; streak black~~

~~5~~

~~PR]~~

~~72 to 7°5. . Black. Lustrous. 11°2, protoxide of iron 15.~~

~~*Fig. 601.*~~

~~*Fig. 602. B.B. infusible; not affected by acids.*~~

~~*Cre: isomorphic mixtures of niobic and tantalic acids with protoxide of*~~

~~*or reddish brown.*~~

~~*iron (or manganese). Pure coluinbite would give 78°8 niobic acid, 'pure tantalite 86 tantalic acid. The niobic acid generally prevails, and the crystals are better formed the more this is the case. Rabenstein, Bodenmais, Chanteloube, Finland, Imen Hills, Evigtok in Greenland, Haddam and Middletown in Connecticut, Acworth in New Hampshire, Pike's Peak in Colorado.*~~

~~*In two varieties. (@) Black. Right prismatic; in short pris-*~~

~~*matic or tabular crystals. oPco ; ooP (m) 121° 48'. OP : 2Pa 108° 26'; Poo: OP 181° 26'; 7: ¢ 149° 42! (fig. 604); also in grains and lamellae. << Cl. brachydiagonal, indistinct; fracture (" ; conchoidal or uneven. Opaque, or in thin splinters translucent. Velvet-black, semi- metallic lustre, and greenish grey streak. H.=5°5; G.=5°4 to 5°7. (0) Yellow. Amorphous, yellowish brown, or yellow, often striped or spotted ; resinous or vitre- ous; streak white. G.=5'46 to 5°88. Both varieties B.B. infusible, but become Fic. 604 brown or yellow. Not affected by acids. Se ee C.c.: 57 to 60 tantalic acid, 1 to 8 tungstic acid, 0 to 20 niobic acid, 20 to 88 yttria, 0°5 to 6 lime, 0°5 to 6 uranium peroxide, and 0°5 to 3°5 iron peroxide. Ytterby, and near Falun.*~~

~~*695. FERGUSONITE, (Y, Er, Ce),(Nb, Fa). Pyramidal and hemihedric ; P (s) 128° 28'. Usual form (4) 3P8 (z), P, 4oP% (g), OP © (fig. 605). s:s 100 54' s:¢ 115° 16', 2: r 169° 17. Cl. traces along P; fracture imperfect conchoidal ; brittle. H.=5°'5 to 6; G.=5°6 to 5°9. Translucent in thin splinters; semimetallic. Brownish black ; streak pale brown. B.B. infusible. C.c.: chiefly niobic acid and yttria, with erbia, also a little cerium protoxide, tin oxide, ura- | nium oxide, and iron protoxide. Cape Fare- well in Greenland, Ytterby, Ricsengebirge, Rockport in Massachusetts. Tyrite, from Helle near Arendal, is similar.*~~

~~696. HJELMITE.~~

~~Massive, with granular fracture and traces of crystals; H.=5; G.=5°€2. black. Lustre metallic. 2 i 4-9, protoxide of iron 8°1, yttria 5-2. B.B. infusible. In closed tube decrepitates and yields water. — Kararfvet near Falun.~~

~~697. SAMARSKITE (Uranotantalite), (Rg, 8, R2),(Nb£Fa); — '~~

~~oP 122° 46'; wP2 95°; Po 93°; P; Po; oPco ; 8P3; also in grains. Fracture conchoidal ; brittle. H.= 5°56; G.=5°6 to 5°76. Opaque; strong semimetallic. Velvet- black ; streak dark reddish brown. B.B. fuses on the edges to a black glass. In the closed tube decrepitates, yields water, incan- desces, and becomes brown. Sol. in h. acid to a greenish finid.~~

~~Fig. 605.~~

~~Velvet-black ; streak greyish C.e.: tantalic acid 62°4, tin 6°6, uranium~~

~~Right prismatic.~~

~~428 MINER~~

~~C.e.: 37°2 niobie acid, 18°6 tantalic acid, 12 iron protoxide, 14 to 20 uranium oxide, 6 thorium oxide, 4 zirconia, and 16 yttria with lime and magnesia. Miask, Mitchell county in North Carolina. The Yittrotlmenite of Hermann.~~

~~698. NoHLiTE, R,Nb.~~

~~Massive. H=4'5 to 5; Brittle. Opaque ; vitreous. ; zirconia 3, ferrous oxide 8, yttria 14°4, lime 4°7, water 4°6. near Kongelf (Sweden).~~

~~699. HarcHETTOLITE.~~

~~Cubic; O, "O00. Yellowish brown. Resinous lustre. Frac- ture conchoidal. H.=—5; G.=—4°8 to 4°9. C.e.: miobie acid 34°3, tantalic acid 29-8, uranium oxide 15°5, lime 8°9, water 4°5. North Carolina.~~

~~G.=5°04. Black-brown. Splintery. Niobic acid 50°4, uranium oxide 14°4,~~

~~ANTIMONIATES.~~

~~700. Romerre, Ca,8b8b.~~

~~Pyramidal; P110°50'. Scratches glass. G.=4'7. Honey-yellow or hyacinth-red. B.B. fuses to a blackish slag. Sol. in acids. C.c.: 41°3 antimonic acid, 37°3 antimony oxide, and 21°4 lime, but with 2 to 3 manganesc and iron protoxide. St Marcel in Piedmont.~~

~~Schneebergite, from Tyrol, may be an impure variety.~~

~~701. BuginierE, Pb(Sb, 8b) + H.~~

~~Reniform and massive. H.=4; G.=8°9 to 4:8. Translucent; resinous to earthy. Colourless, yellow, brown, and grey. B.B.~~

~~reduced on charcoal. C.c.: oxide of lead 41 to 62, antimonious acid 32 to 47, water 6 to 12. Lostwithiel, Horhausen, Nertchinsk.~~

~~702. Naporirr, PbSb + PbCh.~~

~~Right prismatic; oP 132° 51'. Crystals tabular. Cl. macro- diagonal, H.=3; G.=7. Yellowish or greyish brown. Resinous to adamantine; translucent. C.c.: lead 52°2, antimony 30°8, oxygen 8, chlorine 9. Constantine (Algeria).~~

~~703. RIVOTITE.~~

~~Massive. Yellowish to greyish green. Opaque; fracture un- even ; brittle. H.=3°5 to 4; G.=3°6. C.c.: oxide of copper 39°5, oxide of silver 1°2, antimonic acid 42, carbonic acid 21. Sierra del Cadi in the province of Lerida. Thrombolite from Rez-~~

~~banya, Hungary, may be a hydrated variety. 704. Mute, Al(C,,0,) + 18F.~~

~~Pyramidal ; P 93° 5'. OP; Poo; and wPoo. eonchoidal; brittle. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=1°5 to 1:6. Transparent; doubly refractive ; vitre- ous. Honey-~~

~~*yellow or reddish; streak white. In closed tube yields water. B.B. chars with- out odour. Burns white and acts like alumina, Sol. in n. acid or potash. C.c.: alumina 14°4, mellic acid 40°3, water 45°3. In lignite at Fig. 606. Artern in Thuringia and Luschitz in Bohemia; Walchow in Moravia (cretaceous); in coal at Malovka in Tula.*~~

~~*705. OxALiITE, 2Fe6,+3H.*~~

~~*Capillary crystals, also botryoidal or compact; fracture uneven ; sectile. H.=2;G.=22. Opaque; resinous todull. Straw-yellow. B.B. turns blaek, then red. Sol. to yellow solution in acids. C.c.: 42°1 iron protoxide, 42°1 oxalic acid, 15°8 water. In lignite at Kolosoruk near Bilin, Duisburg, and Gross Almerode in Hesse.*~~

~~*706. WHEWELLITE, CaO +H.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic, C 72° 41'. oP 100° 36'.*~~

~~*Cl. P ; fracture*~~

~~*Cl. basal, perfect ;*~~

~~*brittle. H.=2°5 to 28; G.—1°838. Transparent to opaque ; vitreous. Colourless. O.c.: 49°31 oxalic acid, 38°36 lime, 12°33 water. Hungary.*~~

~~*THE MINERAL RESINS.*~~

~~*Many of these are only vegetable resins slightly altered. Naphtha is fluid ; the others solid, with H.=1 to 2 or 2°5. Most are amor- phous, a few crystalline and monoclinie. G.=0°6 to1°6. Mostly resinous ; colourless, or eoloured brown, yellow, or red, with paler streak. Sol. in acids, aleohol, ether, and oils. Melt readily, and burn with flame and smoke.*~~

~~*707. NarutHa, Prrroteum, CH.*~~

~~*Liquid. Colonrless, yellow, or brown. Transparent or translu- eent. G.=0°7 to 0°9. Volatilizes in the atmosphere with an aromatic bituminous odour. C.c.: 84 to 88 carbon, and 12 to 16 hydrogen. Varieties are—*~~

~~*Naphtha.—Very finid, transparent, and light yellow. Tegern Lake in Bavaria, Amiano near Parma, Salies in the Pyrevees, Rangoon, Baku on the Caspian Sea, China, Persia, and North America. Used for burning, and in preparing varnishes.*~~

~~*Petroleum.—Darker yellow or blackish brown; less fluid or volatile. Ormskirk in Lancashire ; Coalbrookdale, Pitchford, and*~~

~~*Nohl |*~~

~~*ALOGY*~~

~~*Madeley in Shropshire ; St Catherine's Well, south of Edinburgh ; Mainland of Orkney ; and many other parts of Europe.*~~

~~*708, ELATERITE (Elastic Bitumen, Mineral Caoutchoue), CH, .*~~

~~*Compact ; reniform or fungoid ; elastic and flexible like caont- choue, very soft. G.=0°8 to 1:23. Resinous. Blackish, reddish, or yellowish brown. Strong bituminous odour. C.c.: 84 to 86 carbon, 12 to 14 hydrogen, and a little oxygen. Derbyshire, Montrelais near Nantes, and Woodbury in Connectieut.*~~

~~*709. AsPHALTUM, BITUMEN.*~~

~~*Compact and disseminated ; fracture conchoidal, sometimes vesieular; sectilee H.=2; G.=1°1 to 1°2. Opaque, resinous, and pitch-black; strong bituminons odour, especially when rubbed. Takes fire easily, and burns with a bright flame and thick smoke. Sol. in ether, except a small remainder, which is lissolved in oil of turpentine. C.c.: 76 to 88 carbon, 2 to 10 oxygen, 6 to 10 hydrogen, and 1 to 3 nitrogen. Limmer near Hanover, Seyssel on the Rhone, Val Travers in Neufchatel, Lobsann in Alsace, in the Harz, Dead Sea, Persia, and Trinidad ; Cornwall, Haughmond Hill (Shropshire), East and West Lothians, Elie and Burntisland (Fife).*~~

~~*710. ALBERTITE.*~~

~~*Massive. Velvet-black. carbon 86, hydrogen 9, nitrogen 2°9, oxygen 2. Strathpeffer, Ross ; Hillsborough, New Brunswick.*~~

~~*711. Pravuzire.*~~

~~*Massive ; imperfect couchoidal, sectile. H.=1°5; G. =1°22. Dimly translucent on very thin edges ; resinous. Blackish brown ; streak yellowish brown. Fuses at 600° Fahr., and burns with an aromatic odour, lively fame, and dense smoke. Sol. in ether and caustic potash. Piauze near Rudolfswerth in Carniola.*~~

~~*712. IXOLYTE.*~~

~~*Massive ; conchoidal fracture. H.=7; G.=1°008. Resinons. Hyacinth-red ; streak ochre-yellow. Rubbed between the fingers it' emits an aromatic odour; becomes soft at 119°, but is still viscid at 212°. Oberhart near Gloggnitz in Austria.*~~

~~*713. AMBER (Succinite), Cy)H,0.*~~

~~*Round irregular lumps, grains, or drops. Fracture perfect con- choidal ; slightly brittle. H.=2to 25; G.=1to1'l. Transparent to translucent or almost opaque ; resinous. Honey-yellow, hyacinth- red, brown, yellowish white ; also streaked or spotted. When rubbed emits an agreeable odour, and becomes negatively electric. It melts at 550°, emitting water, an empyreumatic oil, and succinic acid ; it burns with a bright flame and pleasant odour, leaving a carbonaceous remainder; only a small part is soluble in alcohol. C.c.: 79 carbon, 10°5 hydrogen, and 10°5 oxygen. Derived chiefly from an extinct coniferous tree (Pinites succinifer), and found in the Tertiary and diluvial formations of many countries, especially northern Germany and shores of the Baltic, Sicily, Spain, and northern Italy, rarely in Britain (on the shores of Fife, Norfolk, Suffolk, and Essex, and at Kensington, near London). Used for ornamental purposes, and for preparing succinic acid and var- nishes. Krantzite, from Nienburg, is essentially the same.*~~

~~*714. RerinrvE (Retinasphalt).*~~

~~*Roundish or irregular lumps ; fracture uneven or conchoidal ; very easily frangible. H.=1‘5 to 2; G.=1°05 to 1:15. Trans- lucent or opaque; resinous or glistening. Yellow or brown. Melts at a low heat, and burns with an aromatic or bituminous odour. C.c.: in general carbon, hydrogen, and oxygen, in very un- certain amount. Bovey, Halle, Cape Sable, and Osnabriick. Pyroretinite from Aussig in Bohemia is similar.*~~

~~*715. Wa.cHowiTE, C),.H,0.*~~

~~*Rounded pieces, with a conchoidal fracture. H.=1°5 to 2; G. =1°085 to 1:069. Translucent, resinous. Yellow with brown stripes, and a yellowish white streak. It fuses at 482°, and burns readily. Soluble partially (7°5 per cent.)in ether ; in s. acid forms a dark-brown solution. C.c.: 80°4 carbon, 10°7 hydrogen, and 8-9 oxygen. Walchow in Moravia.*~~

~~*716. CopaLine (Fossil Copal, Highgate Resin), CypH,,O-*~~

~~*Irregularfragments. H.=1°5; G.=1°046. Translucent, resinous; burns with light yellow flame and much smoke; alcohol dissolves little of it ; becomes black in sulphuric acid. C.c.: 85°54 carbon, 11°63 hydrogen, 2°76 oxygen. Highgate near London. A similar resin from Settling-Stones mine in Northumberland, found in flat drops or crusts on cale-spar, is infusible at 500° Fahr.; G. =1°16 to 1°54; it contains 85°13 carbon, 10°85 hydrogen, and 3°26 ashes.*~~

~~*717. BERENGELITE, Cj)H¢.0,.*~~

~~*Amorphous; conchoidal fracture. Dark brown, inclining to green; yellow streak. Resinous; unpleasant odour, and bitter taste. Fuses below 212°, and continues soft afterwards at ordinary temperatures; easily soluble in alcohol. C.c.: 72°40 carbon, 9°28 hydrogen, 18°31 oxygen. San Juan de Berengela in Peru.*~~

~~*718. GUAYAQUILLITE, Cy9H,,03.*~~

~~*Amorphous ; yielding easily to the knife, and very friable. G.*~~

~~*Adamantine lustre; brittle. C.c.: Hoy, Orkney ;*~~

~~*Ce cal*~~

~~*Sa*~~

~~*MINER*~~

~~*=1:092. Pale yellow. Slightly resinous. Fluid at 212°, viscid when cold; slightly soluble in water, and largely in alcohol, forming a yellow fiuid with a bitter taste. C.c.: 77°01 carbon, 8°18 hydro- gen, and 14°80 oxygen. Guayaquil in South America.*~~

~~*Bogbutter, from the Irish peat mosses, is similar; it melts at 124°, is easily soluble in alcohol, and contains 73°70 carbon, 12°50 hydrogen, and 13°72 oxygen. ;*~~

~~*719. HaRTINE, Co)H)+H.*~~

~~*Round masses or thin layers. Brittle, but easily cut with a knife. G.=1°6. Resinous. Reddish brown by reflected and deep red by transmitted light; streak light brown. Becomes black on exposure. OC.c.: 86°43 carbon, 8°01 hydrogen, 5°56 oxygen. In the main coal seam at Middleton near Leeds, and at Newcastle.*~~

~~*720. OzocERITE (Native Parafin), CH.*~~

~~*Amorphous, sometimes fibrous. fashioned with the fingers. G.—0°94 to 0°97. Glimmering or glistening; semitranslucent. Yellowish brown or hyacinth-red_by transmitted, dark leek-green by reflected light. Strong paraffin or aromatic odour; fuses easily to a clear oily fluid; at higher temperature burns with a clear flame, seldom leaving any ashes ; readily soluble in oil of turpentine, with great difficulty in alcohol or ether. O.c.: 85°7 carbon, and 14°38 hydrogen. Binny (Linhth- gow), and Edinburgh ; Slanik and Zietriska in Moldavia, near Garning in Austria, and Baku; also at Urpeth coal-mine near Newcastle-on-Tyne. Pyropissite may be a variety.*~~

~~*721, HATCHETTINE (Mineral Tallow).*~~

~~*Flaky, like spermaceti; or subgranular, like beeswax; soft and flexible. G.=0°6. Translucent; weak pearly. Yellowish white, wax-yellow, or greenish yellow. Greasy inodorous ; readily soluble in ether. C.c.: 85°91 carbon, 14°62 hydrogen, or similar to ozocerite. Loch Fyne (fusible at 115°), Merthyr-Tydvil, Schaumburg.*~~

~~*722, FICHTELITE, C,H3.*~~

~~*Crystalline (oblique prismatic) lamelle, which swim in water, but sink in alcohol. White and pearly. Fuse at 114°, but agaiu become crystalline on cooling. Very easily soluble in ether, and pre- cipitated by alcohol. C.c.: 88°9 carbon and 111 hydrogen. In pine wood in a peat-moss near Redwitz in Bavaria.*~~

~~*723. Hantite, C,H;.*~~

~~*Anorthic; but mostly like spermaceti or white wax, and lamellar. Sectile, but not flexible H.=1; G.=1°046. Translucent; dull resinous. White. Melts at 165°, and burns with much smoke. Very soluble in ether, much less so in alcohol. C.c.: 87°8 carbon, aud 12‘2 hydrogen. Oberhart in Austria.*~~

~~*724, KONLITE, C,H.*~~

~~*Crystalline folia and grains. Soft. resinous. White, without smell. Fuses at 120° to WBE n. acid; precipitated by water in a white crystalline mass. 92°3 carbon, 7°7 hydrogen. Uzuach near St Gall, Redwitz.*~~

~~*725. ScuEERERITE, CH,.*~~

~~*Oblique prismatic ; tabular or acicular. Soft and rather brittle. G.=1 to 1‘2. Translucent; resinous or adamantine. White, in- clining to yellow or green. Feels greasy, has no taste, and when cold no smell, but when heated a weak aromatic odour. Insoluble in water; readily sol. in alcohol, ether, and n. and s. acids. C.c.: 75 carbon, 25 hydrogen. Uznach. Branchite, white, translucent, fusing at 167°, is similar; Montevaso in Tuscany.*~~

~~*‘ 726. IpRIALITE, C3H,.*~~

~~*Massive; fracture uneven or slaty; sectile. H.=—1 to ihe G.=1‘4 to 1°6 (1:7 to 3°2). Opaque; resinous. Greyish or brownish black ; streak blackish brown, inclining to red. F eels greasy. Burns with a thick smoky flame, giving out sulphurous acid, and leaving some reddish brown ashes. C.c.: 77 idrialine (=94°7 carbon and 5°83 hydrogen) and 18 cinnabar, with a little silica, alumina, pyrite, and lime. The idrialine may be extracted by warm olive oil or oil of turpentine as a pearly shining mass, difficultly fusible. Idria.*~~

~~*G.=0°88. Translucent ; Sol. in Cres:*~~

~~*Very soft, pliable, and easily.*~~

~~*abo Ge 429*~~

~~*727. ‘TORBANITE.*~~

~~*Massive ; fracture subconchoidal. Yellow, brown-grey, and light brown. H.=1°5 to 2; G.=1‘28. C.c.: 60 to 65 carbon, 9 hydrogen, 4 to 5 oxygen, 10 to 20 silicate of alumina. When distilled below redness yields a burning fluid holding paraffin in solution ; above redness a large quantity of highly illuminating gas. Shown by the microscope to consist of granules of a yellow bituminoid wax, with interstitial shaly matter. Torbanehill in Scotland, Pilsen in Bohemia, Kurakina and Murayevna in Russia.*~~

~~*728. DopPLERITE.*~~

~~*Jelly-like elastic masses. Brownish black; streak brown. Greasy lustre. Hl. =0°5; G.=1°‘1. After drying H.=2‘5; G.=1°5. Insol- uble in alcohol and ether. An acid substance related to humic acid. From peat beds, Aussee (Styria) and Switzerland.*~~

~~*THE COALS.*~~

~~*729. ANTHRACITE (Glance Coal).*~~

~~*Massive and disseminated; rarelycolumnar. Fracture conchoidal ; brittle. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=1‘4 to1‘7. Opaque; brilliant metallic. Iron-black; streak*~~

~~*unaltered. Perfect conductor of electricity. Burns difficultly with a very weak or no flame, and does not cake ; in the closed tube yields a little moisture, but no empyreumatic*~~

~~*oil; detonates with nitre. C.c.: carbon above 90 per cent., with 1 to 8 oxygen, 1 to 4 hydrogen, and 0 to 3 nitrogen; and ashes chiefly of silica, alumina, lime, and peroxide of iron. Common in some parts of all coal-fields; and especially in the United States, as in Rhode Island, Massachusetts, and above all in Pennsylvania. Used chiefly for manufacturing metals.*~~

~~*730. Common Coal (Black Coal, Stone or Mineral Coal, Bitu minous Coal).*~~

~~*Compact, slaty, or confusedly fibrous; often dividing into rhom- boidal, columnar, or cubical fragments. Fracture conchoidal, un- even, or fibrous; rather brittle or sectile. H.=2 to 2°5; G.=1‘2 to 1°5. Vitreous, resinous, or silky in the fibrous variety. Blackish brown, pitch-black, or velvet-black. Burns easily, emitting flame aud smoke, with a bituntinous odour ; heated in the closed tube yields much oil. C.c.: 74 to 90 carbon, with 0°6 to 8 or 15 oxygen, 3 to 6 hydrogen, 0 to 1 to 2 nitrogen, 0°1 to 8 sulphur, and 1 to 11 earthy matters or ash, in 100 parts.*~~

~~*Slate Coal or Splint hasa thick slaty structure, and an uneven fracture. Cherry Coal is the name applied to the brittle highly lus- _ trous variety common in the English coal-fields. Caking Coal is a*~~

~~*more bituminous variety which undergoes semifusion when ignited, caking oragglutinating during combustion. Cannel Coal hasa resin- ous, glimmering lustre, and a flat-conchoidal fracture, breaks into irregular cubical fragments, but is more solid and takes a higher polish than other varieties. This burns with a bright flame, and yields much gas. Abundant in many lands, as in England, Scot- land, and Ireland, in Belgium and France, in Germany and southern Russia. British America and the United States possess immense fields, especially in the valley of the Mississippi. Also found in China, Japan, Hindustan, Australia, Borneo, and several of the Indian islands.*~~

~~*731. Lienits (Jet, Brown Coal).*~~

~~*Distinctly vegetable in origin, the external form, and very often the internal woody structure, being preserved. The texture is com- pact, woody, or earthy. Fracture conchoidal, woody, or uneven ; soft and often friable. G.=0°5 to 1°5. Lustre sometimes resin- ous, mostly glimmering or dull. Brown, black, or rarely grey. Burns easily with an unpleasant odour; colours solution of potash deep brown. C.c.: 47 to 78 carbon, 2°5 to 7°5 hydrogen, 8 to 33 oxygen (with nitrogen), and 1 to 15 ashes. Jet is pitch-black, with conchoidal fracture and resinous lustre. Brown coal occurs at Bovey-Tracy in Devonshire; also in Germany, Hungary, France, Italy, and Greece. The Surturbrand of Iceland seems a variety.*~~

~~*Used as fuel, but much inferior to common coal. The Oolitic coals of Yorkshire, Antrim, Brora, Mull, and Skye are intermedi- ate varieties.*~~

~~*TnpEX OF MINERAL SPECIES.*~~

~~*Abriachanite, 581. | Albite, 590. Alunogene, 328. Andesine, 594.*~~

~~*Babingtonite, 575. Baikalite, 567. Barsovite, 596.*~~

~~*Bergholz, 660. Berthierine, 562. Berthierite, 218,*~~

~~*Arsenie, 6. Arseniosiderite,429. Arsenolite, 123.*~~

~~*Antimony, 6. Apatelite, 331.*~~

~~*Aeanthite, 170. Alexandrite, 94. Amalgam, 24. Anglesite, 316. Acmite, 570. Algodonite, 192. Amazon stone, 589. | Anhydrite, 312. Actinolite, 578. Allanite, 474. Amber, 713. Ankerite, 274.*~~

~~*Adamite, 410. Adinole, 590. Adularia, 589. 'Egerine, 571. 4Eschynite, 688.*~~

~~*Agalmatolite, 647.*~~

~~*Aikinite, 231. Alabandine, 180. Alabaster, 319. Alalite, 567. Albertite, 710,*~~

~~*Allemontite, 7. Allochroite, 493.*~~

~~*Allomorphite, 313.*~~

~~*Allopalladium, 30. Allophane, 639. Almandine, 493. Alstonite, 283. Altaite, 163. Alum, 341. Aluminite, 329.*~~

~~*| Alunite, 343.*~~

~~*Amblygonite, 450. Amblystegite, 565. Amethyst, 81, 135. Amianthus, 4567,*~~

~~*578.*~~

~~*Amphibole, 578. Amphodelite, 591. Analcime, 605. Anatase, 96. Anauxite, 641.*~~

~~*| Andalusite, 460.*~~

~~*; Annabergite, 388. | Annerédite, 682. Anniyite, 233. | Anomite, 515. Anorthite, 591. Anthophyllite, 577. Anthracite, 729. Anthraconite, 272. Antigorite, 551. Antimonial niekel,*~~

~~*184.*~~

~~*Apatite, 443. Aphrite, 272. Aphrodite, 545. Apophyllite, 603.*~~

~~*Aquamariue, 586.*~~

~~*Aragonite, 281. Areanite, 308. Ardennite, 677.*~~

~~*Arfvedsonite, 579.*~~

~~*Argentite, 169. Arkansite, 97. Arksutite, 41. Arquerite, 23.*~~

~~*Asbestos, 578. Asphaltum, 709.*~~

~~*| Astrakanite, 337. | Astrophyllite, 530. Atacamite, 69. Atopite, 376. Augite, 567. Aurichalcite, 297. Avaite, 28. Avanturine, 135. Axinite, 494.*~~

~~*‘ Azurite, 294.*~~

~~*Baryta-mica, 521. Baryte, 313. Baryto-ealcite, 287. Baryto-eelestine,*~~

~~314.~~

~~Bastite, 564. Bastnaesite, 37. Beaumontite, 614. Beauxite, 112. Beegerite, 160. Beraunite, 400. Berengelite, 717.~~

~~Beryl, 586. Berzelinite, 166. Berzelite, 370. Beudantite, 456. Bieberite, 327. Binnite, 221. Biotite, 512. Bismite, 126. Bismuth, 8. : Bismuthine, 209. Bismuthite, 302. Bismutofervite, 667.~~

~~430~~

~~Bismuto-spherite,~~

~~288.~~

~~Bitter-spar, 273. Bitumen, 708, 709. Bleiniere, 701. Blende, 177. Blédite, 337.~~

~~Blomstran dite, 685.~~

~~Bloodstone, 135. Bodenite, 474. Bogbutter, 718. Bogoslovskite, 492. Bole, 655. Bolivite, 256. Bolognese stone,~~

~~313. ;~~

~~Boltonite, 476. Bonsdorfite, 585. Boracite, 262. Borax, 266. Bornite, 190. Borocalcite, 267. Botryogene, 347. Botryolite, 470. Boulangerite, 227. Bournonite, 230. Branchite, 726. Brandisite, 524. Braunite, 100. Bravaisite, 653. Breislackite, 567. Breithauptite, 184. Breunnerite, 276. Brewsterite, 615. Brochantite, 354. Bromite, 56.~~

~~Brongniartine, 311.~~

~~Bronzite, 564. Brookite, 97. Brown coal, 731. Brucite, 114. Brushite, 377. Bunsenite, 76. Bustamite, 574. Byrichrite, 155. Byssolite, 578. Cacholong, 137. Cacoxene, 402. Cairngorm, 1385. Calaite, 404, Calamine, 280. Calcite, cale-spar, Zi2: Caledonite, 350. Calomel, 49. Cancrinite, 506. Caporcianite, 612. Carbuncle, 4938. Carnallite, 62. Carnat, 631. Carnelian, 135. Carpholite, 656.~~

~~*Carphosiderite, 332.*~~

~~*Cassiterite, 98. Cassiterotantalite,*~~

~~*691.*~~

~~*Castor, 578. Catapleite, 674. Cat's-eye, 135. Cawk, 313. Celadonite, 560. Celestine, 315. Centrolite, 488, Cerargyrite, 54. Cerine, 474. Cerite, 484. Cerussite, 286. Cervantite, 130. Chabasite, 608. Chaleauthite, 333. Chalcedony, 135. Chalcolite, 439.*~~

~~*Chalcomenite, 257. Chalcophanite, 122. Chaleophyliite, 435.*~~

~~*Chalcopyrite, 189.*~~

~~*Chalcosiderite, 430.*~~

~~*Chalcotrichite, 73. Chalk, 272. Chalybite, 277. Chamoisite, 562. Chert, 135. Chiastolite, 460. Childrenite, 432, Chilenite, 197. Chiolite, 42.*~~

~~*Chiviatite, 248. Chladnite, 563. Chioantite, 146. Chlorite, 531. Chloritold, 526. Chlorocalcite, 53, Chloropal, 657. Chlorophite, 556. Chlorophyllite, 585. Chlorospinel, 93. Chodneffite, 43. Chondrarsenite, **~~

~~*395.*~~

~~*Chondrodite, 482. Chonicrite, 535.*~~

~~*Chromite, 89. Chrysoberyl, 94. Chrysocolla, 491. Chrysolite, 478. Chrysoprase, 135. Chrysotile, 549. Cimolite, 638.*~~

~~*Cinnabar, 198.*~~

~~*Cinnamon stone,*~~

~~*493,*~~

~~*Cipollino, 272.*~~

~~*Clarite, 246.*~~

~~*Clausthalite, 161.*~~

~~*Clay ironstone, 277.*~~

~~*Clays, 629. Clinochlore, 533. Clinoclase, 424. Clintonite, 524. Coals, 729-731. Cobaltite, 143. Cobaltspath, 279. Cobalt vitriol, $27. Coccinite, 58. Coccolite, 567.*~~

~~*Colophonite, 493. Coloradoite, 202. Columbite, 693. Condurrite, 192. Connellite, 72. Copaline, 716. Copiapite, 331. Copper, 18. Copperas, 324.*~~

~~*Coquimbite, 330. Cordierite, 585. Cornwallite, 418. Corundophyliite,*~~

~~*533.*~~

~~*Corundum, 81. Cotton-stone, 623. Cotunnite, 60. Covelline, 188. Crednerite, 102. Crichtonite, 83. Crocalite, 622. Crocoisite, 355. Cronstedtite, 539. Crookesite, 167. Cryolite, 40. Cryophyllite, 517. Cryptolite, 367 Cuban, 191. Cube ore, 403. Cuprite, 73. Cuproplumbite,*~~

~~*159,*~~

~~*Cyanite, 461. Cymophane, 94. Cyprine, 475. Danalite, 497. Danburite, 495. Darwinite, 192. _Datholite, 467. Davidsonite, 586. Davine, 506. Dechenite, 373. Delafossite, 73. Delessite, 538. Demidowite, 492. Dermatine, 555. Descloizite, 414. Diadochite, 454. Diallage, 568. Dialogite, 278. Diamond, 13. Diaspore, 107. Dichroite, 585. Dickinsonite, 392.*~~

~~*Chrome ochre, 637,*~~

~~*Ceeruleolactin, 405.*~~

~~*Copper-blende, 238.*~~

~~*MINERALOGY*~~

~~*Dietrichite, 341, Dihyrite, 419. Dimorphite, 207. Diopside, 567. Dioptase, 490. Diphanite, 522. Dipyre, 502.*~~

~~*Discrasite, 176.*~~ ~~~~

~~*Disthene, 461. Dolomlte, 273. Domeykite, 192. Dopplerite, 728. Dufrenite, 399. Dufrenoysite, 2238. Durangite, 451. Dysanalyte, 683. Dysluite, 91. Ecdemite, 458. Edingtonite, 620. Ehlite, 421. Eisennickelkles,*~~

~~*182.*~~

~~*Eleolite, 506. Elaterite, 708. Electrum, 25. Eleonorite, 401. Eliasite, 113. Embolite, 55. Embrethite, 227. Emerald, 81, 586. Emerald-nickel*~~

~~*298.*~~

~~*Emery, 81. Emmonite, 284. Emplectite, 216. Enargite, 245. Enstatite, 563. Eosite, 359. Eosphorite, 433. Epiboulangerite,*~~

~~*250.*~~

~~*Epichlorite, 533. Epidote, 478. Epigenite, 249. Epistilbite, 613. Epsomite, 321. Erinite, 418. Erithrosiderite, 65. Erythrite, 386. Esmarkite, 585. Euchroite, 417. Euclase, 468. Enerasite, 643. Eudialite, 673. Eudnophite, 605. Eukairite, 168. Eukolite, 673 Eulytine, 498. Euphyllite, 523. Euxenite, 687. Evansite, 406. Evigtokite, 47. Fahlerz, 237. Fahlunite, 585. Fairfieldite, 394. Famatinite, 247, Fargite, 623. Faroelite, 626. Fassaite, 567. Faujasite, 607 Fayalite, 477, Felinite, 655. Felsébanyite, 329. Felspars, 589-597. Ferberite, 364. Fergusonite, 695. Ferrotitanite, 670. Fetbol, 655. Fibroferrite, 331. Fichtelite, 722. Fillowite, 390. Fiorite, 137. Fire-blende, 252. Fischerite, 407, Flint, 135. Fluellite, 39. Fluocerine, 36. Fluocerite, 35.*~~

~~*Fluorite, fluor-spar,*~~

~~*33.*~~

~~*Forchhammerite,*~~

~~557.~~

~~Foresite, 621. Forsterite, 476. Fowlerite, 574. Franklinite, 88.~~

~~Frenzelite, 210. Frledelite, 628.~~

~~Frieseite, 186,~~

~~Frieslebenite, 224.~~

~~Fuchlte, 519.~~

~~Fuller's earth, 632.~~

~~Gadolinite, 471. Gahnite, 91. Galactite, 623. Galena, 158. Galmei, 485. Garnet, 493. Gaylussite, 292. Gearksutite, 46. Gehlenite, 504. Gelbeisenerz, 345. Geoeronite, 241. Gersdorffite, 147. Gibbsite, 116. Gieseeklte, 585,~~

~~650.~~

~~Gigantolite, 585. Gilbertite, 519. Giobertite, 276. Glrasol, 157. Gismondine, 624, Glagerite, 633. Glaserite, 308. Glauberite, 311. Glaucodote, 144. Glauconite, 559. Glaueophane, 582. Gmelinite, 609. Gold, 25. Goslarite, 322. Gothite, 108. Grammatite, 578. Graphie granite,~~

~~589.~~

~~Graphite, 14. Greenockite, 179. Greenovite, 668. Grunauite, 154. Grunerite, 584. Guanajuatite, 201. Guayaquillite, 718. Guejarite, 211. Gummite, 120. Gymunite, 547. Gypsum, 319. Gyrolite, 604. Hematite, 62. Haidingerite, 379. Hair-salt, 328. Halite, 51. Talloysite, 632. Hamartite, 38. Harmotome, 617. Hartine, 719. Hartite, 723. Hatchettine, 721. Hatchettolite, 699. Hauerite, 150. Haughtonite, 513. Hausmannite, 99, Hauyne, 510. Haydenite, 608. Haytorite, 467. Heliotrope, 135, Helvine, 496. Ifepatite, 313 Hereynite, 92. Herderite, 452. Hermannite, 583. Iferrengrundite,~~

~~348,~~

~~Herschelite, 611. Hessite, 174. Heterozite, 391. TNeulandite, 614. Hisingerite, 659, Hislopite, 272. Hjelmite, 696, Homilite, 469, Hopeite, 409. Horbachite, 156. Hornblende, 578, Hornesite, 383. Hornstone, 135,~~

~~589.~~

~~Hiibnerite, 365. Hudsonite, 567.~~

~~Tumboldtilite, 503.~~

~~Humite, 482. Ifureaulite, 391. Tluronite, 585.~~

~~Hyacinth, 138.~~

~~lyalite, 137. Hyalophane, 595. Hyalosiderite, 478.~~

~~Hydrargillite, 116. Hy droboracite, 270. Hydromagnesite,~~

~~293.~~

~~Hydrophane, 137. Ifydrophite, 552. Hydrotalclte, 118. Hydrozincite, 296. Hygrophilite, 652. Hypersthene, 565. Hypochlorite, 667. Ifypostilbite, 612. Hypoxanthite, 661. Feewv4: Iceland spar, 272. Ice-spar, 589. Ichthyophthalmite,~~

~~6038,~~

~~Idocrase, 475. Idrialite, 726. Ilmenite, 83. Indicolite, 466. Inverarite, 182. Todite, 57. Tolite, 585. Iridium, 28. Iridosmium, 32. Trite, 89. Tron, 16. Iserine, 84. Ixolyte, 712. Jacobsite, 87. Jade, 578. Jadeite, 597. Jalpaite, 171. Jamesonite, 222. Jarosite, 344, Jasper, 135, Jeffersonite, 569. Jet, 731. Johannite, 336. Jordanite, 236. Joseite, 12. Julianite, 234, Kainite, 352. Kammererite, 532. Kaolin, 629. Karelinite, 255. Karstenite, 312. Keilhauite, 669. Kermesite, 253. Kieserite, 320. Kilbrickenite, 242. Killinite, 572, 651. Kirwanite, 558. Klaprothite, 220. Klipsteinite, 662. Knebellite, 480. Kobaltbeschlag,~~

~~386.~~

~~*Kobellite, 228. Kollyrite, 634. Komarit, 664… Kongsbergite, 23. Konigine, 335. Konlite, 724. Koppite, 681. Kotschubeyite, 533. K6ttigite, 387. Krantzite, 713. Kraurite, 399. Kreittonite, 91. Kremersite, 64. Krisuvigite, 334. Krokidolite, 581. Kuhnilte, 370. Kupferblau, 492. Kyrosite, 140. Labradorite, 593. Lanarkite, 317. Langite, 335. Lanthanite, 303. Lapis-lazuli, 511. Lasionite, 405. Latrobite, 591. Laumontite, 612. Laurite, 204. Lautite, 172. Lavendulan, 386. Lazulite, 431. Lead, 19. Leadhillite, 306.*~~

~~*Leadspar, 286. Leberkies, 140. Leelite, 589. Lenzinite, 632. Leonhardite, 612. Lepidolite, 518.*~~

~~*Lepidomelane, 514.*~~

~~*Lepolite, 591. Lerbachite, 200. Lettsomite, 351. Leuchtenbergite,*~~

~~*5382.*~~

~~*Leucite, 505. Leucophane, 587. Leucopyrite, 142. Levyne, 610. Lherzolite, 567. Libethenite, 411. Liebenerite, 649, Liebigite, 301. Lievrite, 483. Lignlte, 731. Lime-mica, 522. Limestone, 272. Limnite, 117. Limonite, 110. Linarite, 349. Lindakerite, 299. Linneite, 152. Liroconite, 434. Lithiophilite, 369. Lithomarge, 631. Lithoxylon, 137. Loam, 629. Loweite, 338. Luclissapphir, 585. Lucullite, 272. Ludlamite, 389. Ludwigite, 265. Luinachello, 272. Liineburgite, 457. Lunnite, 423. Luzonite, 246. Lydian stone, 135. Magnesia-mica,*~~

~~*512.*~~

~~*Magnesio-ferrite,*~~

~~*86.*~~

~~*Magnesite, 275. Magnetite, 85. Magnolite, 354. Malachite, 295. Malacolite, 567. Malacone, 642. Maldonite, 196. Mallardite, 326. Malthazite, 633. Manganese, red,*~~

~~*278.*~~

~~*Manganese-spar,*~~

~~574.~~

~~Manganite, 109. Manganocalcite,~~

~~285.~~

~~Marble, 272. Marcasite, 140. Marceline, 100. Margarite, 522, Margarodite, 519. Marl, 272. Marmollte, 550. Martite, 82. Mascagnine, 309. Masonite, 527. Massicot, 78. Matlockite, 66. Maxité, 306. Meerschaum, 544. Megabasite, 360. Meionite, 500. Melaconite, 79. Melanlte, 493. Melanterite, 324. Melinophane, 588. Mellilite, 503. Mellite, 704. Melonite, 193. Melopsite, 631. Mendipite, 67. Meneghinite, 235. Mengite, 690. Menilite, 137. Mercury, 20. Mesolite, 623. Meteoric iron, 16. Miargyrite, 212.~~

~~Mica, 512. Microcline, 589. Microlite, 684.~~

~~Microsommite, 507.~~

~~Miemite, 273. Milarite, 573, Millerite, 181. Miloschin, 635. Mimetesite, 446. Minium, 104. Mirabilite, 318. Mlspickel, 141. Misy, 381. Mixite, 425. Mizzonite, 501. Molybdenite, 203. Molybdite, 127, Molysite, 61. Monazite, 368. Monradite, 543. Montanite, 353.~~

~~Montebrasite, 450.~~

~~Monticellite, 481. Montmorillonite,~~

~~636.~~

~~Moonstone, 589. Morenosite, 323. Morion, 136. Morocochite, 213. Morvenite, 617. Mosandrite, 672. Moss-agate, 135. Mottramite, 420.~~

~~Murchisonite, 589.~~

~~Muriacite, 312. Muscovite, 519. Mussite, 567. Myelin, 631. Nacrite, 630. Nadorite, 702. Nagyagite, 195. Naphtha, 707. Natrolite, 622. Natron, 290. Naumannite, 173. Needle-ore, 231. Nemalite, 114. Nepheline, 506. Nephrite, 578. Newberyite, 378. Newjansklte, 31.~~

~~*Nickel, arseniate of,*~~

~~*371.*~~

~~*Nickelerz, 372. Nickelite, 183. Nitratine, 258. Nitre, 259. Nitrocalcite, 260. Nitromagnesite,*~~

~~*261.*~~

~~*Nohlite, 698. Nontronite, 657. Nosean, 509. Ochran, 655. Crstedite, 675. Okenite, 602. Oligoclase, 592. Olivenite, 412. Olivine, 478. Oncosin, 648. Oolite, 272. Oosite, 585. Opal, 136, 187. Orangite, 645. Orpiment, 206. Orthite, 474. Orthoclase, 589. Osmiridium, 31. Ottrelite, 528. Oxalite, 706. Oxhaveerite, 603. Ozocerite, 720. Pachnolite, 44. Paisbergite, 574. Palladium, 29. Paraffin, 720. Paragonite, 520. Pargasite, 578. Parisite, 305. Paulite, 565. Pectolite, 598. Peganite, 408. Peliom, 585. Pennine, 532. Pentlandite, 182. Percylite, 71.*~~

~~*Periclase, 75. Pericline, 590. Peridote, 478. Perovskite, 680. Petalite, 573. Petroleum, 707. Petuntze, 589. Petzite, 175. Phacolite, 608. Pharmacolite, 381. Pharmacosiderite,*~~

~~*403.*~~

~~*Phenacite, 489. Phillipsite, 616. Phlogopite, 516. Phosnico-chroite,*~~

~~*356,*~~

~~*Phosgenite, 304. Phosphorochalcite,*~~

~~*423.*~~

~~*Piauzite, 711. Pickeringite, 341. Picotite, 93. Picrolite, 549. Picrophyll, 541. Picrosmine, 542. Piedmontite, 473. Pilolite, 580. Pimelite, 548. Pinguite, 658. Pinite, 585. Pinitoid, 654. Pisolite, 272. Pissophane, 332. Pitch blende, 90. Pitticite, 455. Plagionite, 219. Plasma, 135. Platiniridium, 27. Platinum, 26. Plattnerite, 103. Pleonaste, 93. Plinthite, 655. Plombgomme, 442. Plumbocalcite, 272. Plumbostib, 227. Pollux, 606. Polyargyrite, 244. Polybasite, 243. Polycrase, 686. Polydymite, 154.*~~

~~*Polyhalite, 340. Polyhydrite, 659. Polymignite, 689. Polytelite, 239. Porcelain earth,*~~

~~*629.*~~

~~*Porpezite, 25. Potstone, 540. Prase, 135. Praseolite, 585. Prehnite, 627. Prosopite, 48. Proustite, 226. Psilomelane, 121. Psittacinite, 374, Pucherite, 375. Pufflerite, 619. Pycnite, 463. Pycnotrop, 536. Pyrallolite, 554. Pyrargillite, 585. Pyrargyrite, 225. Pyrite, 139, 140,*~~

~~*151, 185, 189.*~~

~~*Pyroaurite, 119. Pyrochlore, 684.*~~

~~*| Pyrochroite, 115.*~~

~~*Pyrolusite, 101. Pyromorphite, 444. Pyrope, 493. Pyrophyllite, 649, Pyrophysalite, 463. Pyropissite, 720. Pyroretinite, 714. Pyrorthite, 474. Pyrosclerite, 534, Pyrosmalite, 529. Pyrostilpnite, 252. Pyroxene, 567. Pyrrhite, 684, Pyrrhotite, 151, Quartz, 135. Rammelsbergite,*~~

~~*149.*~~

~~*Razoumoffskin, 637, —*~~

~~*Realgar, 205. Reddingite, 396. Reddle, 82. Redruthite, 164. Reinite, 363. Reissite, 613. Resins, 707-728. Retinite, 714. Reussine, 337. Rhagite, 426. Rhodizite, 264. Rhodochrome, 532. Rhodonite, 574. Ripidolite, 533. Rittingerite, 187. Rivotite, 703. Rock-crystal, 135. Rock-salt, 51. Rock soap, 655. Romanzowite, 492, Romeite, 700. Roscoelite, 678. Roselite, 380. Rothoffite, 493. Rottisite, G64. Rubellan, 512. Rubcellite, 466. Rubicella, 93. Ruby, 81, 93. Rutile, 95. Sahlite, 567. Salmiac, 52.*~~

~~*Salt, 51. Saltpetre, 259. Samarskite, 697. Sundbergerite, 521,*~~

~~*MINERAL*~~

~~*Sanidine, 589. Saponite, 548. Sapphire, 81. Sapphire d'eau,*~~

~~585.~~

~~Sapphirine, 93. Sapphirite, 465. Sarcolite, 499. Sartorite, 214. Sassoline, 105. Satin spar, 281. Saussurite, 597. Savon de verrier,~~

~~101.~~

~~Saynite, 154. Scapolite, 502. Scarbroite, 634. Scheelite, 361. Scheererite, 725. Schiller spar, 564. Schirmerite, 220. Schneebergite, 700. Schneiderite, 22. Schorl, 466. Schorlomite, 670. Schwartzember- gite, 68. Scolecite, 623. Scorodite, 397. Selenite, 319. Selenium, 3. Selensulphur, 2. Senarmontite, 124, Serpentine, 549.~~

~~'| Shale, 629.~~

~~Siderite, 135, 277.~~

~~Sideroschisolite,~~

~~539.~~

~~Siderosilicite, 661. Siegenite, 153. Sillimanite, 462. Silver, 21. Sinter, 137. Sisserskite, 32. Skutterudite, 157. Slate clay, 629. Slate spar, 272. Smaltine, 145. Smikite, 325. Smithsonite, 280. Soda-chabasite,~~

~~609,~~

~~Sodalite, 508. Soda-mica, 520. Spadaite, 546. Spar, heavy, 313.~~

~~Spathiopyrite, 142.~~

~~Splene, 668. Spinel, 93. Spodumene, 572. Stannite, 185. Stassfurtite, 263. Staurolite, 464. Steatite, 540. Steinheilite, 585. Stephanite, 240. Sternbergite, 186. Stibiconite, 130. Stibnite, 208. Stilbite, 618.~~

~~Stilpnomelane, 561.~~

~~Stolpenite, 655.~~

~~*Stolzite, 362. Strahlstein, 578. Strengite, 398. Stromeyerite, 165. Strontianite, 284. Struvite, 428. Studerite, 233. Stylotyp, 232. Succinite, 713. Sulphur, 1. Sunstone, 592. Surturbrand, 7381. Susannite, 307. Sussexite, 271. Svanbergite, 453. Sylvanite, 194. Sylvite, 50. Symplesite, 385. Syngenite, 339. Szaboite, 576. Szaibelyite, 269. Tabergite, 532. Tabular spar, 566. Tachhydrite, 63. Tagilite, 416. Talc, 540. Talcosite, 640. Tallingite, 70.*~~

~~*Tantalic ochre, 134,*~~

~~*Tantalite, 691. Tapiolite, 692.*~~

~~*Telluric bismuth, 9.*~~

~~*Telluric iron, 16.*~~

~~*Tellurite, 133.*~~

~~*Tellurium, 4; black, 195; graphic,194.*~~

~~*Tennantite, 238. Tenorite, 80. Teplhiroite, 479. Tetradymite, 10. Tetrahedrite, 237. Tharandite, 273. Thenardite, 310. Thermonatrite, 289. Thomsenolite, 45. Thomsonite, 626. Thorite, 644. Thraulite, 659. Thrombolite, 703. Thulite, 472. Thuringite, 537. Tiemannite, 199. Tilkerodite, 161. Tin, 15; ores of,*~~

~~*98.*~~

~~*Tinder-ore, 129. Tinkal, 266. Titanomorphite,*~~

~~*679,*~~

~~*Tobermorite, 601. Tocornaclite, 59. Topaz, 81, 463. Torbanite, 727. Tourmaline, 466. Travertino, 272. Tremolite, 578. Triclasite, 585. Tridymite, 136. Triphylite, 369, Triplite, 448. Triploidite, 393. Trippkeite, 459.*~~

~~*Zealand, and Japan.*~~

~~*Tritomite, 646. Trogerite, 427. Trona, 291. Troostite, 487, Tschewkinite, 671. Tufa, 272. Tungstite, 128. Turgite, 106. Turnerite, 368. Turquoise, 404. Tyrite, 695. Tyrolite, 422. Ulexite, 268. Ulimannite, 148. Umber, 661. Uraninite, 90. Uranite, 436. Uranocircite, 438. Uranophane, 665. Uranospinite, 437. Uranotantalite, 697. Uranothorite, 644. Uranotile, 666. Uran-vitriol, 336. Urao, 291. Urusite, 346. Uwarowite, 493. Valentineite, 125. Vanadine-bronzite,*~~

~~*568.*~~

~~*Vanadinite, 445. Variscite, 406. Varvicite, 101. Vauquelinite, 357. Venus' hair, 95. Veszelyite, 413.*~~

~~*Villarsite, 553. Vitriol, green, 324; red, 347; white,*~~

~~*322.*~~

~~*Vitriol ochre, 331. Vivianite, 384. Voglite, 300. Volborthite, 415. Volgerite, 131. Voltaite, 342. Voltzine, 254. Vulpinite, 312. Wad, 121. Wagnerite, 447. Walchowite, 715. Walkerite, 599. Walpurgite, 441. Wapplerite, 382. Warringtonite, 335. Washingtonite, 83. Water, 74. Wavellite, 405. Websterite, 329. Webrlite, 11. Weissgiltigerz, 239. Weissite, 585. Whewellite, 706. Whitneyite, 192. Willemite, 486. Wiserine, 366. Withamite, 473. Witherite, 282. Wittichenite, 229. Wohlerite, 676. Wolchite, 230. Wolframite, 364.*~~

~~*431*~~

~~*Wolfsbergite, 217. Wolkonskoite, 663. Wollastonite, 566. Woodwardite, 351. Wulfenite, 358, Wurtzite, 178. Xanthocon, 251. Xantholite, 464. Xanthophyliite,*~~

~~525.~~

~~Xanthosiderite, Ibe Xenotime, 366. Xonotlite, 600. Xylite, 660. Yellow earth, 655. Yttrocerite, 34. Yttroilmenite, 697. Yttrotantalite, 694. Yttrotitanite, 669. Yu, 627. Zaratite, 298,~~

~~"| Zeagonite, 625.~~

~~Zeolites, 598-628. Zepharovichite, 406. Zeunerite, 440. Zinc, 17. Zincite, 77. Zinckenite, 215. Zinnwaldite, 517. Zircon, 138. Zoisite, 472. Zorgite, 162. Zundcrerz, 132. Zwieselite, 449. (M. F. IIII.)~~

~~But there are few countries in which~~

~~tion can be drawn between ordinary and mineral waters. There is usually in the latter an excess of mineral con- stituents or of temperature, but some drinking waters contain more mineral constituents than others that are called mineral waters, and many very pure waters, both cold and warm, have been regarded for ages as mineral springs.~~

~~As to the origin of mineral waters, there is much in what the elder Pliny said, that waters are such as the soil through which tliey flow. Thus in limestone and chalk districts an excess of lime is usually present; and the waters of a particular district have much resemblance to each other—as in the Eifel, in Auvergne, and in the Pyrenees. But this is only a partial explanation, for waters are by no means necessarily uniform throughout a particular geological formation. We do not know with any certainty the depth from which various mineral waters proceed, nor the various distances from the surface at which they take up their different mineral constituents.~~

~~The source of the temperature of thermal waters remains a subject of much uncertainty. Among the assigned causes are the internal heat of the globe, or the development of heat by chemical or electrical agencies in the strata through which they arise.~~

~~Their occasional intermittence is doubtless often depend- ent on the periodical generation of steam, as in the case of the Geysers. A few geological facts are certain, which bear on the origin of mineral waters.~~

~~*Such springs are most abundant in volcanic districts, where many salts of soda and much carbonic acid are present. They occur most frequently at meetings of stratified with unstratified rocks, in saddles, and at points where there has been dislocation of strata,*~~

~~*The diffusion of mineral waters is very extended. Pliny was quite correct in observing that they are to be found on alpine heights and arising from the bottom of the ocean. 'They are found at the snow in the Himalayas and they rise from the sea at Baise and Ischia. They are to be found in all quarters of the globe, but more particularly in volcanic regions, as in. the Eifel and Auvergne, in the Bay of Naples, and parts of Greece, in Iceland, New*~~

~~*they are not to be found, except in very flat ones and in deltas of rivers,—for instance, in the north of France, where they are very few, and in Holland, from which they are ab- sent, France, Germany, Italy, and Spain, as wellas Greece, Asia Minor, and the Caucasus, are all rich in mineral waters. The British Isles have a fair though not very large pro- portion of them. There are a few in Sweden and Norway. They are abundant in the United States, less so in Canada. They are found in the Azores and in the West India Islands. Of their occurrence in the interior of Africa or of Australia we know little ; and the same is true of South America. But they are met with in Algiers, in Egypt, and in the Holy Land. The vast Indian peninsula has for its size a comparatively small supply.*~~

~~*As the effects of mineral waters on the bodily system have been found to be different from those of drinking waters, an explanation of this has been naturally sought for. It has been imagined that there is something special in the nature of mineral waters, that their heat is not ordinary heat, that their condition is a peculiar electric one. Some French modern writers even say that they have a certain life in them, that their constitution is analogous to that of the serum of the blood. But we must pass by these speculations, and be guided as far as possible by ascer- tained facts, respecting the action on the system of water, of heat and cold, and of the mineral constituents present.*~~

~~*Mineral waters, when analysed, are found to contain a great many substances, although some of them occur only in very minute quantities:—soda, magnesia, calcium, potash, alumina, iron, boron, iodine, bromine,*~~

~~arsenic, lithium, cesium, rubidium, fluorine, barium, copper, zinc, manganese, strontium, silica, phosphorus, besides extractive matters, and various organic deposits known under the name of glairin or baregin. Of gases, there have been found carbonic acid, hydrosulphuric acid, nitrogen, hydro- gen, oxygen, and ammonia. Of all these by far the most important in a therapeutic point of view are sodium, magnesia, and iron, carbonic acid, sulphur, and perhaps hydrosulphuric acid. These substances, detected separately by chemists, are in their analyses combined by them into various salts, if not with absolute certainty, undoubtedly~~

~~with a close approximation to it. Those combinations are very numerous, and some waters contain ten to twenty of them; but there are always soime predominating ones, which mark their character, while many of them, such as cesium, rubidium, or fluorine, occur in mere traces, and can not be assumed to be of any real importance. Mineral waters therefore resolve themselves into weaker or stronger solutions of salts and gases in water of higher or lower temperature. For medical purposes they are used either externally or internally, for bathing or for drinking. As the quantity of salts present commonly bears but a very small proportion to that of the fluid containing them, water becomes a very influential agent in mineral-water treatment, about which it is therefore necessary to say something.~~

~~For the action of hot and cold baths the reader is referred to the article Barus. But it may be observed here that, according to the most generally received opinion, the cuta- neous surface does not absorb any portion of the salts in a mineral-water bath, although it may absorb a little gas (an alkaline water, for instance, at most acting as a shight detergent on the skin), and that neither salts nor gases have any action on the system, except as stimulants of the skin, with partial action on the respiratory organs.~~

~~It seems to be ascertained that drinking considerable amounts of cold water reduces the temperature of the body, diminishes the frequency of the pulse, and increases the blood pressure temporarily. Water when introduced into the stomach, especially if it be empty, is quickly absorbed ; but, although much of the water passes into the veins, there is no proof that it ever produces in them, as is sometimes supposed, a state of fluidity or~~

~~*wateriness. Therapeutically, the imbibition of large quantities of water leads to a sort of general washing out of the organs. This produces a temporary increase of certain excretions, augmented diuresis, and a quantitative increase of urea, of chloride of sodium, and of phosphoric and sulphuric acids in the urine. Both the sensible and the insensible perspirations are augmented. A draught of cold water undoubtedly stimulates the peristaltic action of the intestines. On the whole water slightly warm is best borne by the stomach, and is more easily absorbed by it than cold water; and warm waters are more useful than cold ones when there is much gastric irritability.*~~

~~*In addition to the therapeutic action of mineral waters, there are certain very important subsidiary considerations which must not be overlooked. An individual who goes from home to drink them finds himself in a different climate, with possibly a considerable change in altitude. HIs diet is necessarily altered, and his usual home drinks are given up. There is change in the hours of going to bed and of rising. HIe is relieved from the routine of usual duties, and thrown into new and probably cheerful society. HIe takes more exercise than when at home, and is more in the open air, and this probably at the best season of the year. So important has this matter of season and climate been found that it is an established axiom that waters can be used to the greatest advantage during the summer months and in fine weather, and during the periods most convenient for relaxation from business. Summer is therefore the bath*~~

~~*season, but of late years provision has been made in many:*~~

~~*places, .with the aid of specially constructed rooms and passages, for carrying out cures satisfactorily during the winter season, ¢.g., at Aix-la-Chapelle, Wiesbaden, Baden Baden, Baden in Switzerland, Dax, Vichy, and Bath. The ordinary bath season extends from the 15th of May to the 20th or 30th September. The season for baths situated at considerable elevations commences a nionth later and terminates some ten days earlier. Mineral waters may be employed at home, but patients seldom so use them; and*~~

~~*MINE RAW WATE RE*~~

~~*this necessarily limits the time of their use. It is common to declare that the treatment should last for such or such a period. But the length of time for which any remedy is to be used must depend on its effect, and on the nature of the particular case. It is found, however, that the con- tinued use of mineral waters leads to certain disturbances of the system, which have been called crises, such as sleep- lessness, colics, and diarrhœa, and to skin eruptions known as la poussée. This cause, and also certain peculiarities of the female constitution, have led to the period of three weeks to a month being considered the usual period for treatment. A certain after-treatment is often prescribed — such as persistence in a particular diet, visiting springs or climates of a different and usually of a tonic character,*~~

~~*or continuing for a certain time to drink the waters at .*~~

~~*home. It may be added that the advantage of having recourse to mineral waters is often felt more after than during treatment.*~~

~~*Since improved methods of bottling have been discovered, and the advantage of an additional supply of carbonic acid has been appreciated, the export of waters from their sources has increased enormously, and most of the principal waters can now be advantageously used at home. It may be added that many of the artificial imitations of them are excellent.*~~

~~*The history of the use of mineral waters can only just be alluded to. They have been employed from the earliest periods, and traces of Roman work have been found at most of the European baths which are now in favour, — at almost all the thermal ones. Occasionally new springs are discovered in old countries, but the great majority of them have been long known. They have varied in popularity, and the modes of applying them have also varied, but less so than has been the case with most of the ordinary medicines. Warm waters, and those containing small quantities of mineral constituents, appear to have remained more steadily in favour than any other class within the appropriate sphere of mineral waters, which is limited to the treatment of chronic disease.*~~

~~*The attempt has been made to range mineral waters according to their therapeutic action, according to their internal or external use, but most generally according to their chemical constituents so far as they have been*~~

~~from time to time understood; and a judicious classification undoubtedly is a help towards their rational employment. But their constituents are so varied, and the gradations between different waters are so finely shaded off, that it has been found impossible to propose any one definite scientific classification that is not open to numberless objections. Thus a great many of the sulphur waters are practically earthy or saline ones. Yet because they con- tain very minute amounts of such a gas as hydrosulphuric acid, an ingredient so palpable as always to attract attention, it is considered necessary to class them under the head of sulphur. The general rule is to attempt to class a water under the head of its predominant element ; but if the amount of that be extremely small, this leads to such waters as those of Mont Dore being classified as alkaline or arseniated, because they contain a very little soda and arsenic. The classification in the following table, which is that usually adopted in Germany, has the merit of comparative simplicity, and of freedom from theoretical considerations which in this matter influence the French much more than the German writers. The more important constituents only are given. The amount of solid constitu- ents is the nuniber of parts to one thousand parts of the water ; the temperature of thermal springs is added. The waters are classified as indifferent, earthy, salt, sulphuretted, iron, alkaline, alkaline saline—with subvarieties of table waters and purging waters.~~

~~TABLE I.—Typical Mineral Waters.~~

~~indifferent.| Earthy. Salt. Salt. ee ee Kissingen. | Sea-Water. Solids, Bicarbonate of soda. ..... a potash. ... , magnesia.| *0017 ‘013 017 “45 ay ealeium…| °0195 012 1°06 2°38 Sulphate of soda.…..... 0208 050 5 potashr…..... 0135 038 – magnesia….. 308 588 2°96 + caleiom:..... 1°520 *389 °25 Sulphide of sodium.…..... Chloride of sodiuim.…..... 0428 5°52 25°21 potash. ....:. – magnesia….. Carbonate of iron.…..... 0005 023 RSINICTGHACIO, ..ccsesceesece soe “0496 036 Gases.~~

~~Carbonic acid Hydrosulphuric acid~~

~~*In addition to their solid constituents, gas is present in many waters in considerable quantity. There is a little oxygen and a good deal of nitrogen in some of them; the quantity of hydrosulphuric acid, even in strong sulphuric waters, is wonderfully small; but the volume of carbonic acid present is often very large,—for instance, in the case of Kissingen, Schwalbach, and Selters. Carbonic acid is so generally diffused that it is practically a very important agent in the therapeutics of mineral waters. Springs that contain it are far the most agreeable to the taste, and consequently most popular with patients. The immediate effect of the carbonic acid which they contain is that of pleasant stimulation to the stomach and system, although it can scarcely be said to approach, as some have thought, the slighter forms of stimulation from alcoholic drinks. Extremely little appears to be known of its actual operation on the system: a part of what is swallowed is returned by eructation, and a part passes on to the intestines ; whether any appreciable quantity reaches the blood is doubtful. There is no question that carbonic acid increases diuresis. Practically it is found to aid digestion, helping the functions of the stomach, and in a slight degree the peristaltic action of the intestines. The increased flow of urine may be caused by its favouring the absorption of water by the stomach. In some baths carbonic acid is so abundant that precautions have to be taken to prevent its tendency to accumulate on account of its heavy specific gravity. Car- bonic acid gas, used as a bath, proves stimulating to the skin and to the general system; but its employment has not answered the expectations formed of it. _.*~~

~~*Indifferent Waters scarcely vary in chemical qualities from ordi- nary drinking water ; but they are usually of higher temperature. Their therapeutic action, which is mainly exercised through baths, has been explained on the theory of peculiarities of their electric or thermal condition, about which we know nothing definite, and ou the presence in some of them of a large quantity of nitrogen. It has also been ascribed to the various organic substances in some of them, such as glairin, which when collected is sometimes useful as*~~

~~*a cataplasm. These waters are not often much drunk, but any efficiency they may have in dyspepsia and perhaps in neuralgic*~~

~~diarrheeas must be attributed to the favourable action of hot water |~~

~~on the digestion. The waters of this class, especially the hotter ones in the form of baths, are extremely useful in resolving the effects of inflammation, in thickenings of the joints, and in clironic rheumatism and gout. They also are often effective, especially the cooler ones, in neuralgia and in some hysterieal affections. They are sometimes prescribed in urinary affections, in which case they probably assist by dilution. The effects of many of these waters are aided by the baths often being situated at considerable elevations and in out-of-the-way spots, whence the Germans called them Wildbéder. They are very widely diffused, being found in all quarters of the globe, especially in volcanic districts. There are many in New Zealand ; in America the hottest are in the West and in California.~~

~~Purging~~

~~Sulphur. Tron. Alkaline,| A ae Beas aline, -Water, Water. Alx-la-Chapelle i : di ig do" ©) Sehwalbach, vie ip ae Sclters. oe 6449 0206 4°883 1°92 ey~~

~~352~~

~~"0506 "DAD? 303 18 "157 ALS} "434 4298 *2831 "0079 "292 Dey 15°9 "1527 '0037 "16 46 16°0~~

~~0136~~

~~2616 534 1°03 Aa ss~~

~~Locality, a Fale. For what prescribed. Evian, Lake of Geneva! 1,100 , { Nervous cases, dyspepsia, urinary affections. — padenmellere Raden 1.425 For mild rheumatie treatment; a 2 | ae health resort. Buxton, England….. 980 82 { Gout a rheumatism (nitrogen aor present). Schlangenbad, Nassau.| 800 | 80-87 =. cases, female disorders, skin. le — hceumatism, gout, cutaneous affec- Sacedon, Spain……. 1,500 85 fone 4 x Wildbad, Wiirtemberg.| 1,320 | 90-101 ei ieee neuralgia, Pfctfers, Switzerland…| 2,115 | 99 Do. "do. do. Ragatz, do. «| 1,570 95 Do. do. do. f e Do. (nitrogen present); special action Panticosa, S. Pyrenees.) 5,110 | 85-95 in phthisis. Teplitz, Bohemia 648 |101-120 { Gout, rheumatism, old injuries, joints~~

~~SARS 2 ae eS. | Gastein, Austria…….. 3,315 | 95-118 | Do. do.; soothes nervous system.~~

~~Earthy Waters.—These differ chiefly from the indifferent waters in containing an appreciable quantity of salts, among which sulphate or carbonate of lime or of magnesia predominates. The great majority of them are of high temperature. They produce the same effects as the indifferent waters, but are perhaps less efficacious in neuralgic affections, while they are more employed in some of the chronic scaly eruptions. There was formerly a tendeney to consider these waters useful in urinary affections; but at the present day it is only the colder ones that have come into repute for the expulsion of gravel and biliary calculi and in the treat- ment of affections of the bladder generally. Some of them have also of late years been considered to exercise a favourable influence on scrofula, and to.be useful in the early stages of pulmonary phthisis. This has been attributed to the salts of lime present in them, although it is known that most of its salts pass through the system unaltered. Many of these baths, such as Leuk and Bormio, enjoy the advantages of great elevation, but Bath, otherwise one of the best of them, lies low.~~

~~TasLe IIJ].—Zarthy Waters.~~

~~: Height; Temp. 2 : Locality. feet irate Therapeutic Action, (r q Special action in calculous Contrexeville, Vosges…….. 1,050 { Le canes — : Supposed to be useful in Lippe Springe, N. Germany phthisis. 5 ; Special use in urinary com- es} ; P' uy & Wildungen, do. | plaints; contains iron. 2 Resorted to for pulmonar. Weissenberg, Switzerland…| 2,600 ane hicke: Pp y Dyspepsia, diabetes, hepatic Pougues, FYance….cseeseeeeeee 600 50 arianeint ary con BR . Baden, Switzerland…….. + + 1,180 | 117-122 apa ny || Leis GIQ® —_ Seasnoseenoc 4,400 | 93-123 | Do., some female complaints. = | Bormio, North ltaly…….. 4,400 | 86-104 | Do. do. ; old sprains. an eg eee … {108-122 Do. do. do. i= Lucca, ltaly …cccc-ceeree = | Bath, England……..-sseeeeeseee| aes 108-122 | Do. do. 0. Dax, south of France……..- 1,400 139 | Do. do. ; B. de Bigorres, Pyrenees…..| 1,800 64-123 | Do.; chlorosis, neuralgia.~~

~~f i ion is gi t-known~~

~~! In this and the following tables a selection is given of some of the bes n mineral waters in various European countries that possess establishments. Bed chief peculiaritics of elevation, of temperature, and constituents are briefly pa . The curative effects, necessarily alluded to very generally, are those usually~~

~~attributed to them. XVI — 55~~

~~Salt Waters are so called from containing a predominant amount of chloride of sodium. They also generally contain chlorides of magnesia and of lime, and occasionally small amounts of lithium, bromine, and iodine. They further often contain a little iron, which is an important addition. The great majority of the drinking wells have a large supply of carbonic acid. There are cold and hot salt springs. Sometimes bathing; and the double use of them is often resorted to. ;~~

~~The normal quantity of common salt consumed daily by man 1s usually set down at about 300 grains, The maximum quantity likely to be taken at any well may be 225 grains, but commonly not inore than half of that amount is taken. The increase to the usual daily amount is therefore probably not much more than one-third. Still it may be presumed that the action of a solution of salt on an empty stomach is different from that of the same amount of salt taken with food. Salt introduced into the stomach excites the secretion of gastric juice, and favours the peristaltic actions, and when taken in considerable quantity is distinctly aperient. We thus see how itis useful in dyspepsia, in atony of the stomach and intestines, and sometimes in chronic intestinal catarrh. Salt when absorbed by the stomach appears again in the urine, of which it in- creases the amount both of fluid and of solid constitueuts, especially ofthe urea. It seems therefore to be pretty certain that considerable quantities of salt taken into the circulation increase the excretion of nitrogenous products through the urine, and on the whole accelerate the transformation of tissue. Salt is thus useful in scrofula by stimulating the system, and also in anemia, especially when iron is also present. In some German stations, as at Soden, carbonated salt waters are considered to be useful in chronic laryngitis or granular pharyngitis. :~~

~~*Baths of salt water, as usually given, rarely contain more than 3 per cent. of chloride of sodium, some of the strongest perhaps from 8 to 10 per cent. Their primary action is as a stimulant to the skin, in which action it is probable that the other chlorides, especially that of calcium, and still more the carbonic acid often present, co-operate. In this way, and when aided by various pro- cesses of what may be termed water poultices and packing, they are often useful in removing exudations, in chronic metritis and in some tumours of the uterus, and generally in scrofula and rachitis, and occasionally in some chronic skin affections.*~~

~~*The French accord high praise to some of their thermal salt waters in paralysis, and some German ones are used in a similar way in spinal affections. that they must be diluted for bathing. In other cases concen- trated solutions of salt are added to make them sufficiently strong. These waters are widely diffused, but on the whole Germany is richest in them, especially in such as are highly charged with salt. The Kissingen springs may be-considered as typical of the drinking wells, and sea-water of bathing waters. The air of salt- works and pulverization of the water are employed in German baths as remedial agents.*~~

~~*Salt springs are found in many quarters of the world, but the chief carbonated groups for drinking purposes occur in Germany, and at Saratoga in America, where very remarkable wells indeed are to be found. France and England have no springs of this class. The stronger wells, used chiefly for bathing, occur where*~~

~~*TasiE 1V.—Salt Springs.*~~

~~*Locality. oe Therapeutie Action. "Soden, near Fiankfort……..0- { Dyspeeea, ane Pinar aks orm nee gieia i eae net dae special for throat and phthisis. | Homunre ay : { Dyspepsia, slighter hepatic} |e , : Fe affections, chlorosis, gout. = j Kissingen, Bavaria. antes 1n all essentials the same. © | Pyrmont, North Germany…….. { Better known for its iron; has | a good salt drinking spring. . , Asalt well without carbonic acid Kreuznach, near Bingen……. used in scrofula and anemia; bathing more important. Wiesbaden, Nassau…..ee.eeeeeee 155 Used in dyspepsia and gout; the (bathing is most important. UON-BAGOW: ; csi, sec eessecccesee see ss 156 cr alld 7 uses similar ; ut. Bourbonne, Hante-Marne…….. 114-149 { ba ranean*~~

~~neuralgia, effects | ria. Balaruc, South Francce…….00 116°6 { Do.; special for treatment of | = Metal a q | Salins, Moutiers, Savoy (1480 ft. { Sere eis eee lb emeeromer E a a y¢ i Y. sexual disorders. a = | Brides, Savoy (1700 ft.).-e-ceesesae- | 4 Act ones smaidigearecicanal; eS ’ y ( ) og : used for obesity. Aequi, North Italy..c..ceessssseeeeee- | 469 { Rheumatism; special treatment | with the bath deposit. pn ds: eee 185 ed as baths; nud of bath Caldas de Momb) Rhe sae toe e uy, near 2 eumati sciati in- Barcelona….s.sse0e rt fi Ue { ‘ juries. ee ae { Cestona, Guipuzcoa, Spain…….. 88-94 { ET ela indigestion, bron-~~

~~Almost all the above stations have several springs of various strengths: the cold may be said to vary from 14 to 5°8 per cent. of chloride cf sodium ; the warm are generally weaker, perhaps varying from 6°8 to 1°6.~~

~~they are used for drinking, sometimes for —~~

~~The salt waters are sometimes so strong —~~

~~WATERS~~

~~there are salt-bearing strata, as in Germany, Galicia, Italy, Switzer- land, France, and England. Very powerful waters of this class are those of St Catherines in Canada.~~

~~The presence of minute: portions of dodine or bromine in salt waters is by no means infrequent, and they appear in considerable quantity in some few. It is, however, extremely doubtful whether any known spring contains a sufficient quantity of iodine, still more of bromine, to act specially on the system, even if that action were not necessarily superseded by the presence of the large quautity of other salts with which they are associated. Some of the best known springs of the kind are :—Challes, Wildegg, Castrocaro, Hall, Adel- heid’s Quelle, Krankenheil, Kreuznach, Woodhall Spa.~~

~~Tron or Chalybeate Waters.—Ivon usually exists in waters in the state of protoxide or its carbonate, less frequently as sulphate or crenate, and very rarely if at all as chloride. The quantity present is usually extremely small. It may be said to vary from °12 to ‘03 in the 1000 parts of water. Some wells considered distinct chaly- beates contain less than ‘03. Many wells,~~

~~*especially in Germany, have a rich supply of carbonic acid, which is unfortunately wanting in French and English ones.*~~

~~*It has long been the prevalent idea that want of iron in the blood is the main cause of chlorosis and of other anemic conditions, and that these conditions are best relieved by a supply of that metal. Since the detection of it in hemoglobuline this view has been still more popular. It is pretty certain that the blood contains 37 to 47 grains and the whole system 70 to 74 grains of iron; and it has been calculated that in normal conditions of the system some- what more than one grain of iron is taken daily in articles of food, and that the same amount is passed in the feces; for although the stomach takes the iron up it is excreted by the alimentary canal mainly, if being doubtful whether any is excreted in the urine. It is possible by drinking several glasses to take in more thana grain of carbonate of iron in the day, equivalent to half that amount of metalliciron. It has further been ingeniously reckoned from practice that 10 to 15 grains of metallic iron suffice to supply the deficiency in the system in a case of chlorosis. It is thought probable that a portion of the iron taken up in water is in certain pathological states not excreted, but retained in the system, and goes towards making up the want of that metal. But, whether this or any other explanation be satisfactory, there is no question as to the excellent effects often produced by drinking chalybeate waters (especially when they are carbonated), and by bathing in those which are rich in carbonic acid after they have been artificially heated. As regards the drinking cure we must not, however, forget that carbonate and chloride of sodium, and also the sulphate, are often present and must be ascribed a share inthe cure. Thus chloride of sodium isa power-*~~

~~*TaBLE V.—Stronger Salt Waters.*~~

~~*Chloride of Sodium in*~~

~~*Locality. 1000 parts Therapeutic Application. of Water. (Serofula, effects of inflamma- | tion, chronic exudations, Rheinfeld, Aargau, Switzerland ….. 311 4 some elironic exanthe- | inas, rheumatism, uterine | infiltrations, Salzungen, North Germany…..+ + .. 256 Do. do Isehl, Austria (1440 ft.)....00 oe eens Do. do Wall, Tyrol (1700 ft.) .....cccceeseeeeeeeseee 255 Do. do Reichenhall, near Salzburg (1800 ft.) ae Do. do Bex, Rhone Valley (1400*~~

~~ft.)..... 156 Do. do Castrocaro, TUSCANY.....0+60.+0- 36 Do. do Droitwich, near Worcester…... 233°6 Do. do. Sea Water ….....00.- sesescccccessesecces cae 30°4 — ‘ on © 5 3 a mo- Rehme, Westphalia (92° F.).....0..| 24-85 re i bccdiawes he 29 Do. do.~~

~~Nauheim, Wetterau (80°-103° F.)....~~

~~TABLE VI.—Jron Waters.~~

~~ee~~

~~Locality ba pee Therapeutic Use. Rippoldsau, Black Forest…...| 1,886 “12 | For anemic cor ditions; laxative. Homburg, near Frankfort…) ... 10 Do. do. co. Wister (Saxon yoeseceeress-=—s [lg 08 Do. do. do. Liebenstein, North Germany| 911 08 Sehwalbach, Nassau..... 900 08 Do.; much of a ladies’ path. Bocklet, near Kissingen…... 600 08 Do.~~

~~Gricsbach, Black Forest…... 1,614 07 Do.; laxative; a ladies’ bath. Franzensbad, Bohemia……..| 1,293 07 Do, do. do. Pyrmont, Germany …….-.| «+. 07 Do, Spa, Belgium. ....0+..<-2e---.../e0UG 06 Do. Petersthal, Black Forest…... 1,353 “04 Do.; laxative. Se oe, Ee: 5,464 03 Do.; sought for its air. Forges-les-Eaux, France….. aes 06 Do. La Malou, Hérault, 0 :~~

~~France (temp. 8S°)..... aoe e L& Recoaro, North Italy…….| 1,463 04 Do. Tunbridge Wells, England…| ... 06 Dos deficientin carbonicacid Muspratt Spring, Harro- :~~

~~gater(chloride) 222-2-..<. i Le |~~

~~MINERALIWATERS~~

~~ful adjuvant in the strong Stahl Quelle of Homburg and in the Putnam Well at Saratoga. A whole category of female complaints is treated successfully with these waters. Indeed anemia from any source, as after fever or through loss of blood, and enlargements of the spleen, are benefited by them. The stimulating action of the copious supply of carbonic acid in steel baths is a very important adjuvant; no one now believes in direct absorption of iron~~

~~*from the bath. Iron waters are scarcely ever thermal. They are extremely common in all countries,—frequently along with sulphurctted hydrogeu in bogs, and near coal-measures. But such springs and non-carbonated wells generally are weak, and not now held in much esteem.*~~

~~*It may be added that some of the strongest known iron wells are sulphated or aluminated. They are styptic aud astringent, and can only be used diluted. They are sometimes useful as an application to ulcersand sores. Such springs have oftcn been brought into notice, but never retain their popularity. They are known in the Isle of Wight, in Wales, in Scotland, as well as in Elba, &c.; and of late years the Bedford Alum and Oak Orchard Springs, U.S., have been brought into notice, the latter containing 10 grains of free sulphuric acid in the pint. All such springs have been considered useful in scrofula, anemia, and chronic diarrheeas.*~~

~~*Sulphur Springs.—Waters having the odour of hydrosulphuric acid, however slightly, are usually called sulphur ones. They owe their smell sometimes to the presence of the free acid, sometimes to sulphides of sodium, calcium, or niagnesia, and sometimes to both. Hydrosulphuric acid is absorbed more freely by cold than by hot water, and is therefore most abundant in cold springs. The sulphides decompose and give off the gas. Most of these springs occur near coal or shale measures, or strata containing fossils, or in moors and in places generally where organic matter is present in the soil or strata. Many of them contain so little mineral impreg- natiou that they might as well be classed among the indifferent or earthy waters. One group cotains a considerable amount of chloride of sodium, another of sulphate of lime, while a third has little mineral impregnation, but contains sulphides.*~~

~~*Hydrosulphuric acid is a strong poison, and its action on the system has been pretty well ascertainced. It has been assumed that the gas in mineral waters acts similarly, though in a modified deeree; but there is next to nothing absolutely known of the action of the small quantities of the gas that are present in mineral waters, and which certainly have no toxic effect. It has been assumed that this gas has some special action on the portal system and so on the liver. On the connexion of metallic poisoning with the liver has been founded the idea that sulphur waters are useful in metallic*~~

~~*intoxication. Drinking large quantities of these waters, especially of such as contain sulphates or chlorides of sodium or magnesia, combined with hot baths and exercise, may help to break up albuminates, but there is no proof of the action of the sulphur.)*~~

~~*For similar reasons, and primarily to counteract mercurial poison, sulphur waters have been considered useful in syphilis. But it may be well to remember that at most baths mercury is used along with them, No doubt they are frequently, like other warm waters, nseful in bringing out old eruptions, acting in this way as a test for syphilitic poison, and in indicating the treatment that may be*~~

~~*Taste VII.—Cold Sulphur Springs.*~~

~~*Hydrosul- . ‘ phuric Acid | Sulphide Locality. absorbed in | coginm Water. ‘ USNS CHAMMDUTSALAPNE.....—.00---eac-esecceseesnesncoee 42°3 as MleiMbengy Lippe-WEtMOld..,.....-0s0ccccevseccccccesesesesvessees 23°71 “008 Gurnigel, Switzerland (8600 ft.).....00+ 1571 eda Leuk, OMEN (SDOSHE Serre cscee. os eos.0e0 44°5 = NEB PES ARONA (OUOHU2) xcen-erecacses-<avesesenesacens ae “478 Enghien, near Paris..... ae 106 Uriage, Istre, France (1509 f 7°34 ood Harrogate, England..... se0 *207 Strathpetfer, Scotland..... “026 isdanivains, Clare, Ireland…-....- s.s02c-ccossesereenneses see TABLE VIII.—Warm Sulphur Springs. | Hydrosul- . Height! Temp. | Sulphide | phuric Acid eeety in eel. ° Fahr. | of Sodium. | absorbed in Water. Aix-la-Chapelle, Germany.....+ 534 | 131-140 01 3 Baden, near Vienna.....ccccccccccces or 95-115 “052 25 Schinznach, Switzerland .....c00000 1,060 80-92 aoe 37°38 MEANEYAeLHONC VELICY.....c2-.2reeee

~~required, Sulphur waters, both hot and cold, are used in gout and rheumatism, in dyspepsia, in hepatic and cutaneous affections ; and of late years inhalation of them has been popular in phthisis and in laryngeal affections. They have long been popular remedies in cutaneous affections. While so much doubt has been cast on the action of the sulphur of these waters, it may be admitted that the~~

~~- sulphides are probably decomposed in the stomach and hydrosul-~~

~~phuric acid generated. That gas is probably a slight stimulant to the intestine. What hydrosulphuric acid reaches the blood is eliminated by the lungs. There seems to be no doubt that the gas is absorbed in smal] quantities by the skin.~~

~~It is in sulphur waters chiefly that glairin and baregin occur. This peculiar organic substance has been found both in-American and in European spriugs. Cold sulphur springs are very widely diffused throughout the world. Thermal ones are not so common. Per- haps the largest though not the strongest group of the latter is to be found in the Pyrenees. We may remark again how very little hydrosulphuric acid there is in many of the most favourite sulphur springs, including the very popular White Sulphur ones of Virginia. There seems to be something peculiarly unsatisfactory in the analysis of sulphur waters, and there has been difficulty in construct- ing the following imperfect tables.~~

~~Some of the most powerful cold wells are those of Challes (with its very peculiar water), Leuk, and Harrogate. Uriage has a very large amount of chloride of sodium in its springs. Cold sulphur waters are on the whole more used in liver and indigestion than warm ones. The general effects of warm sulphur waters differ so little at the various baths as to make it difficult to mention anything special to particular localities. Schinznach has a reputation in skin complaints, Cauterets, Eaux Bonnes, and Challes in laryngeal affections, the two Aixes, Luchon, and Archena in syphilis.~~

~~Alkaline Waters are such as contain carbonate (chiefly bicarbon- ate) of soda, along with an excess of carbonic acid. Of the action of those carbonates it is known that when taken into the stomach they are neutralized by the gastric juice, and converted into chloride of sodium. On~~

~~their introduction into the stomach they produce an increased flow of gastric juice. If given during or immediately after meals in any quantity, they impede digestion. They slightly increase peristaltic action, but only feebly, unless assisted by other salts. They act slightly as diuretics. Of the connexion between the biliary system and alkalies, which undoubtedly exists, not much is known with certainty. The alkalization of the blood by them is It is very doubtful whether they reduce the quantity of fibrine in the blood, and thus induce a~~

~~TABLE LX.—4lkaline Waters.~~

~~Cuass I1.—Simple Alkaline.~~

~~Locality. cae Therapeutic Uses. Catarrh of stomach, gout, renal and iValS, SOUL) ELANCEs. ...cc+02.5-s<0sce fel biliary calculi, liver complaints, diabetes. Bilin; Bobemia:.....--... 4:2 Do. do. do. Vichy, France (105° F.).....-0 51 Do. do. do. — Neucnahr, Rhineland (92°-97° F.).| 1:0 Mucous catarrh; diabetes specially. 5 Do.; sedative effect on nervous La Malou, France (97° F.).....00-. i. system. ae Do., gout, urinary affections —'' The Vidago, Portugal:.....<-.....-. Portuguese Viehy."~~

~~Ciass Il.—With Chloride of Sodium varying from 4°3 to 1 in amount.~~

~~Height) Temp. | Carb. in Feet.| ° Fahr. | Soda.~~

~~a : Springs rich bothincarb. — a ; soda and chl. sodium. {Light antacid tonic to~~

~~Locality. Therapeutic Uses.~~

~~Luhatsehowitz, Moravia.....~~

~~Toénnistcin, Rhine Valley…| ... soe 2°5 Venta ee. Special in female com-ETS NRSSA I toe ecesssrcecces soe. 85-115 | 2°0 plaints and mucous s : membrane, : : P Specially rheumatism iRs@hiias sMtaliye.cccseeccesestcneecse uptol70| 2-0 6 dfernlile complaints. Do. and some skin|. Royat, AUVergne ……..eeeee 1,400 | 80-95 1°3 {~~

~~*RifCCHIGTIS! Asthma, chronic laryn- Mont Dore, do. .....------| 3,800 | 100-114] ... ae y a Scrofula, rachitis, cuta- Bown boule; iO: *~~

~~*Crass III.— With Sulphate of Soda varying from 5°2 to 2 in amount, and _ Carbonate of Soda varying from 3°85 to °51 in amount.*~~

~~*ight :*~~

~~*Locality. fe ea Therapeutic Uses. i sbdominal organs 1,460 | {Action on abdominal organs,*~~

~~*BISber, SAXONY .....00c.seerecvece eee -= {. female complaints.*~~

~~*es*~~

~~*Marienbad, Bolicmia.. good) Joe es Do.; special nse in obesity.*~~

~~*R cee ree} Do.; specially a ladies' bath. eg ae . ' Powerful action on abdominal Tarasp, Lower Engadine.....| 4,000 Piscorat a :*~~

~~*Gout, liver affections, biliary an Carlsbad, Bohemia (121°-164° F.)..| 1,200 { Sree ailboses.*~~

~~*ee eee eee EE ES*~~

~~*436 MINERAL*~~

~~*lowered state of the system, or whether they have any direct tend- ency to combine with fat and carry off a portion of. superfluous adipose tissue. Their excess of carbonic acid, through its action on the stomach, favours the operation of alkaline waters. They have been classed as follows:—(I.) simple alkalines, where carbonate of soda is the main agent ; (II.) waters containing in addition some chloride of sodium ; (III.) waters containing sulphates of soda or of magnesia. All these classes may be said to be used in gout, lithi- asis, affections of the liver, catarrh, and obstructions of the gall ducts, in dyspepsia, chronic catarrh of the stomach, and diarrhea, in obesity, and in diabetes. Some of the waters of the second class are supposed to influence bronchial catarrhs and incipient phthisis, while the more powerful sulphated waters of the third class are especially useful in*~~

~~*catarrh of the stomach, and in affections of the biliary organs; of these only one of importance (Carlsbad) is ther- mal. ' The rival cold waters of Tarasp contain twice as much car- ponate of soda. The cold ones are chiefly used internally, the thermal ones both internally and externally. — The latter, besides acting as warm water, slightly stimulate the skin when the car- bonic acid is abundant, and the carbonate of soda has some slight detergent effect on the cutaneous surface like soap. These waters are unknown in England. 'They are most abundant in countries of extinct volcanoes.*~~

~~*Classes I. and II. of alkaline waters may be said to have a sub- variety in acidulated springs or carbonated waters, in which the quantity of salts is very small, that of carbonic acid large. These table waters are readily drunk at meals. They have of late years been so widely exported as to be within the reach almost of every one. Their practical importance in aiding digestion is in reality much greater than one could expect from their scanty mineraliza- tion. 'They are drunk by the country people, and also largely ex- ported and imitated. They are very abundant on the Continent, and, although some of the best-known ones enumerated below are German and French, they are common in Italy and elsewhere :— Heppingen, Roisdorf, Landskro, Apollinaris, Selters, Briickenau, Gieshiibel, all German ; St Galmier, Pougues, Chateldon, French.*~~

~~*Associated with Class III. is that of the strongly swlphated waters known in Germany as bitter or purging waters, which have of late deservedly come into use as purgative agents. They are almost wanting in France and in America, and there are no very good ones in England. The chief supply is from Bohemia and Hungary. The numerous waters of Ofen are the best- known, and some of them are stronger than the Hunyadi, of which an analysis has been given in Table I. They are easily imitated. Some of the best-known are Ofen, Piillna, Saidschiitz, Friedrichshall, Birmerstoff, Kissingen.*~~

~~*Two other classes of waters demand a few words of notice. The French have much faith in the presence of minute quantities of arsenic in some of their springs, and trace arsenical effects in those who drink them, and some French authors have established a class of arsenical waters. Bourboule in Auvergne is the strongest of them, and is said to contain ⁺ ,th of a grain of*~~

~~arseniate of soda in 7 ounces of water. Baden-Baden, according to Bunsen's latest analysis, has a right to be considered an arsenical water. It is, however, extremely doubtful whether the small amounts of ar- seniate of soda which have been detected, accompanied as they are by preponderating amounts of other salts, have any actual opera- tion on the system. The following are among the most noted springs :—Bourboule, Mont Dore, Royat, Salies (Bigorres), Plom- biéres, Baden-Baden.~~

~~Of late years lithiwm has been discovered in the waters of Baden-~~

~~Baden; and various other places boast of the amount of that sub-~~

~~stance in their springs. Indeed a new bath has been established at Assmannshausen on the Rhine in consequence of the discovery of a weak alkaline spring containing some Vehinih. Not very much is known of the action of lithium in ordinary medicine, and it un- doubtedly does not exist in medicinal doses even in the strongest springs. Among these springs are those of Baden-Baden, Assmanns- hausen, Elster, Royat, Ballston Spa, and Saratoga (U.S.).~~

~~AMERICAN MINERAL WATERS.—The number of springs in the United States and Canada to which public attention has been called on account of their supposed therapeutic virtues is very large, amounting in all to more than three hundred. Of this number comparatively few are in Canada, and of these not more than six (St Catharines, Caledonia, Plantagenet, Caxton, Charlottesville, and Sandwich) have attained general celebrity. The first three belong to the saline class, the Caxton is alkaline-saline, and the last two are sulphur waters. The St Catherines is remarkable for the very large amounts of sodium, calcium, and magnesium chlorides which it contains, its total salts (450 grains in the pint) being more than three times the quantity contained' in the brine-baths of Kreuz- nach in Prussia. The Charlottesville and Sandwich springs likewise surpass the noted sulphur-waters of Europe in their excessive per- centages of sulphuretted hydrogen, the former containing more than 3 and the latter 4°72 cubic inches of this gas in the pint.~~

~~The mineral springs in the United States are very unequally dis- tributed, by far the larger number of those which are in high medical repute occurring~~

~~*along the Appalachian chain of mountains,*~~

~~*WATERS*~~

~~*and more especially on or near this chain where it passes through the*~~

~~*States of Virginia, West Virginia, and New York. The Devonian*~~

~~*and Silurian formations which overlie the Eozoic rocks along the*~~

~~*course of the Appalachian chain have been greatly fissured—the*~~

~~*faulting of the strata being in some places of enormous magnitude*~~

~~*—by the series of upheavals which gave rise to the many parallel*~~

~~*mountain ridges of the Appalachians. In many places the springs*~~

~~*occur directly along the lines of fault. The various classes of mineral waters are likewise very unequally represented, the alkaline*~~

~~*springs, and those containing Glauber and Epsom salts, being much*~~

~~*inferior to their European representatives. On the other hand, the*~~

~~*very numerous and abundant springs of Saratoga compare very*~~

~~*favourably with the Selters and similar saline waters, and among*~~

~~*the many American chalybeate springs the subclass represented*~~

~~*by the Rockbridge Alum is unequalled in regard to the very large*~~

~~*percentages of alumina and sulphuric acid which it contains.*~~

~~*Besides its greater amount of mineral constituents (185 grains per*~~

~~*pint), the Ballston spring surpasses the similar saline waters of Homburg, Kissingen, Wiesbaden, and Selters in its percentage of carbonic acid (53*~~

~~*cubic inches). It is also remarkable for the very*~~

~~*large proportion of carbonate of lithia, amounting to 0°701 grains.*~~

~~*Thermal springs are specially numerous in the territories west of the Mississippi and in California. Those in the east mostly occur*~~

~~*in Virginia along the southern portion of the Appalachian chain ;*~~

~~*in the middle and New England States Lebanon is the only im-*~~

~~*portant thermal spring. Subjoined is a list of thirty American*~~

~~*springs, the design being to represent as many of the more noted*~~

~~*spas as possible, while at the same time enumerating the best repre-*~~

~~*sentatives of the classes and subclasses into which mineral waters*~~

~~*are divided according to the German method of classification.*~~

~~*Designation aud Loeality. Therapeutic Application*~~

~~*Lebanon, Columbia Co., N.Y. (73° F.)..*~~

~~*Serofulous ulcers and ophthal-*~~

~~*. = mia,ozzena,chronie diarrheea*~~

~~*Healing; Bath Coz, Va: @8" F.)sa:....|) gaa' deuettery,. scéaualite (and tertiary syphilis.*~~

~~*een, and subacute rheuma-*~~

~~*Warm, Bath Co., Va. (98° F.).....000+ tism, gout, neuralgia, neph-*~~

~~*ritie and caleulous diseases. Chronie rheumatism, gout, diseases of liver, neuralgia,*~~

~~*contractions of joints.*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*Hot, Bath Co., Va. (110° F.) .....eeeeeeee*~~

~~*Paso Robles, San Luis, Obispo Co.,) | GAGS 5); a een tees*~~

~~*Indifferent (Thermal).*~~

~~*functional diseases of uterus. ehronic mercurial and lead poisoning. Calculus, gravel, catarrh of 4 stomach or bladder,dyspepsia. Gravel, dyspepsia (diuretic, diaphoretic). Neuralgia (restorative). Purgutive, diuretic. | amma mellitus, gravel, in-*~~

~~*Hot, Garland Co., Ark. (93°-150° F.)....*~~

~~*— diseases of skin,*~~

~~*Gettysburg, Adams Co., Penn.……0+*~~

~~*Sweet, Monroe Co., W. Va. (74° F.)...-*~~

~~*Berkeley, Morgan Co., W. Va. (74° F.). Alleghany, Moutgomery Co., Va.…...-*~~

~~*Calcareous and Earthy.*~~

~~*Bethesda, Waukesha Co., Wis….. fiammation of bladder,dropsy, albuminuria (diuretic). Aperient and alterative.*~~

~~*do.*~~

~~*Lower Blue Liek, Nicholas Co., Ky…..*~~

~~*5 Sharon, Sehoharie Co., N. Y……..0200+ + Do. a j Dartrous skin diseases, dis- = White Sulphur, Greenbrier Co., Va. .... } eases of the bladder, jaun- Rn diee, dyspepsia. 2 Salt Sulphur, Monroe Co., W. Va.…..— Do.; serofula and syphilis. a} Bedford Aaland Go, Pétthesereene Ansmia, gravel, ealculus*~~

~~<3)~~

~~g St Catherines, Ontario, Canada…….. en" gout, serofula, Ea Caledonia, Ontario, Canada……..+...008 Rheumatism, gout. Dyspepsia, jaundiee, abdomi- n yspep J € 0 2 Hathorne, Saratoga, N.Y…....csesseseers nal pl Sano 2~~

~~Ballston, Saratoga Co., N.Y. ...+sse000| Do. do. do. Uleers, diseases of the skin, passive hemorrhages, atonic~~

~~Qak-Orchard Acid, Genesee Co., N.Y… diarrhcea(has 10 grainsof free~~

~~: | sulphuric acid in the pint). S E 5 Chlorosis and anemia gene-~~

~~/~~

~~= Rawley, Rockingham Co., Va……..+ { rally; tonie. | Sweet Chalybeate, Alleghany Co.. Va.| Do. do. do. ; Roekbridge Alum, Rockbridge Co., Va.| Serofula, ehronic diarrhoea. ~ ; ' Aneniia, ehlorosis, ehronic a | cooper s Well, Hinds Co., Miss…….. diarrhea, dropsy.. >. 3 (Crab Orehard, fineoln Co., Ky…….. SA (Midland, Midland Co., Mieh…..... S _ (Bladon, Choetaw Co., Ala. (earbon- a ated alkaline). ……..+. soocnmanseenane a 4 Congress, Santa Clara Co., Cal.? 2 (saline alkaline). …….000—sesesssses id~~

~~and subacute rheumatism.~~

~~St Louis, Gratiot Co., Mieh. praiie:~~

~~Dyspepsia, neuralgia, ehronic alkaline)~~

~~Bibliography.—1. German: E. Osann, Darstellung der Heilquellen Europas, 3 vols., Berlin, 1839-43 ; J. Seegen, Handbuch der Heilquellenlehre, Vienna, 1862; B. M. Lersch, Hydrochemie, 1870, and many other works; Helfft, Handbuch d. Balneotherapie, 8th ed., Berlin, 1874 ; Valentiner, Handbuch d. Balneotherapie, Berlin, 1876; L. Lehmann, Bader u. Brunnen Lehre, Bonn, 1877; J. Braun, System. Lehrbuch d. Balneotherapie, 4th ed., by Fromm, Berlin, 1880 ; 0. Leich- tenstern,~~

~~*Balneotherapie, Leipsie, 1880. 2. French: Dictionnaire des Eaux minerales, &c., by MM. Durand-Fardel, &c., 2 vols., Paris, 1860; J. Lefort, Traité de Chemie Hydrolologique, 2d ed., Paris, 1873 ; C Jamies, Guide Pratique aux Eaux*~~

~~*minerales, Paris (many editions); Macé, Guide aug Villes d' Eaux, &c., Paris, 1881; Joanne and Le Pileur, Les Bains d'Lurope, Paris. 3. Swiss: Meyer Ahrens, Heilquellen der Schwettz, Ziivich, 1867; Gscll Fels, Die Bader und Kurorte der Schwettz, Zitvich, 1850. 4. ltalian: G. Jervis, Guida alle Acque Minerali d'Italia, Turin, 1876, &c.; E. F. Harless, Die Heilquellen und Kurbdder Italiens, Berlin, 1848. 5. Spanish: Rubio, Tratado de las Fuentes Minerales de Espaiia, Madrid, 1853; Don J. de Antelo y Sanchez has recently published a work on Spanish waters. 6. English: T. Short, History of the Mineral Waters, London, 1784; J. Rutty, Methodical Synopsis of Mineral Waters, London, 1757; Granville, Spas of England, 1841; E. Lee, Mineral Springs of England, London, 1841; J. Macpher- son, Our Baths and Wells, 1871; 1d., Baths and Wells of Europe, 1873; and H. Weber's English edition of Braun, London, 1875. A great portion of the literature is to be found in monographs on particular places. 7. American: J. Bell, The Mineral and Thermal Springs of the United States and Canada, 1855; Moorman, The Mineral Waters of the United States and Canada, 1867; Chandler, Lecture on Water, 1871; Walton, The Mineral Springs of the Untied States and Canada, 1875. (J. M.—A. R. L.)*~~

~~*MINERVA (i.e., menes-va, endowed with mind) was the Roman goddess who presided over all handicrafts, inven- tions, arts, and sciences. She was probably an Etruscan deity, but her character was modified on Roman soil through her identification with the Greek Pallas Athena (see Arnena). No legend of her birth is recorded ; the Roman deities were abstractions, not distinct persons with an individual history. Her chief worship in Rome was in the temple built by Tarquin on the Capitol, where she was worshipped side by side with Jupiter and Juno, This foundation may be assigned to Etruscan influence. She had also an old temple on the Aventine, which was a regular meeting-place for dramatic poets and actors. The dedi- cation day of the temple and birthday of the goddess was March 19, and this day was*~~

~~*the great festival of Minerva, called quinquatrus because it fell on the fifth day after the Ides. The number five was sacred to the goddess, All the schools had holidays at this time, and the pupils on reassembling brought a fee (minerval) to the teachers. In every house also the quinquatrus was a holiday, for Minerva was patron of the women's weaving and spinning and the workmen's craft. At a later time the festival was extended over five days, and games were celebrated. This feature is evidently due to the Grecizing conception of Minerva as the goddess of war. To this same Grecizing tendency we must attribute the dectesternium to Minerva and Neptune conjointly after the battle of the Trasimene Lake. The 23d had always been the day of the tubilustrium, or purification of the trumpets, so that the ceremony came to be on the last day of Minerva's festival. Trumpets were used in many religious ceremonies; and it is very doubtful whether the twbelustrewm was really con- nected with Minerva. There was another temple of Minerva on the Celian Hill, and a festival called the lesser quin-quatrus was celebrated there on June 13-15, chiefly by the flute-players.*~~

~~*Minerva of the Celian temple was called Capta; June 19 was the foundation day of this temple and the birthday of the goddess. The palladiwm, an archaic image of Pallas, was brought from Troy to Lavinium, and thence to Rome by the family of the Nautii; it was preserved in the temple of Vesta as a pledge of the safety of the city. There are some traces of an iepiilientiion of Minerva with the Italian goddess Nerio, wife of Mars; it is probable that March 19 was originally a feast of Mars.*~~

~~*Besides Preller, Rém. Myth., and Hartung, Relig. d. Rémer, &c., see Jordan, a Epigraph., i. 238; Mommsen, C. J. L., i. 3888; Usener, Rhein. Mus., Xxx.*~~

~~*MINGRELIA, a former principality of Transcaucasia, which became subject to Russia in 1804, and since 1867 has constituted three circles of the government of Kutais—Letchgum, Senakh, and Zugdidi. The country corresponds to the ancient Colchis; and Izgaur or Iskuriah on the Black Sea coast, which was the capital during the period of Mingrelian independence under the Dadian dynasty, is to be identified with the ancient Dioscurias, a colony of Miletus. The Mingrelians (still almost exclusively confined to the Mingrelian territory, and numbering 197,000) are closely akin to the Georgians. See Caucasus, vol. v. p. 257, and GEORGIA.*~~

~~MINIATURE is a term which by common usage has come to be applied to two different branches of painting.~~

~~437~~

~~Derived from the Latin word miniwm, the red pigment used in the primitive decoration of MSS., in the first place it is the technical word employed to describe a painting in a MS. ; and, from the fact of such pictures being executed on a reduced scale, it has its secondary and modern signifi- cation of a small, or miniature, portrait. In the latter sense it belongs to the general subject of painting. Here it is proposed to trace the development of the miniature in MSS. of the different schools of Europe.~~

~~'The rise of the art of InLumryarioy, in which the miniature plays so important a part, has been described under that heading ; and something has been said in that place about the earliest extant specimens of miniature painting. Unfortunately we cannot with any certainty reach farther back than the 4th century for the most ancient of them ; and all remaining examples between that period and the 7th century in Greek and Latin MSS. can be counted on the fingers. The two famous codices of Virgil in the Vatican Library stand pre-eminent as the most ancient Latin MSS. decorated with paintings. The miniatures in the first of them, the Codex Romanus, are large and roughly yet boldly executed paintings, which have no pretension to beauty, and are simply illustra- tions ; but they are as old as the 4th century, and are of the highest value in enabling us to appreciate the debased style to which classical art had descended, and which no doubt was more largely employed than we might think. The second MS., the Schedx Vaticane, which may also be assigned to the 4th century, is far more artistic and retains a good deal of the grace of classic art. Of the same kind, but of rather later date, are the fragments of the Ziad in the Ambrosian Library at Milan, the miniatures of which are generally of excellent design. Next comes the Dioscorides of the Imperial Library at Vienna, with its semiclassical portrait-miniatures executed at the beginning of the 6th century. Of a rather later period are the paintings which illustrate the Greek MS. of Genesis in the same library. A far finer and older MS. of the same book of the Pentateuch once existed in the Cottonian Library, but was almost totally destroyed by fire. The few fragments of the miniatures which~~

~~once filled this volume, and which were of the 5th century, are sufficient to show what excellent work could be done in tlie capital of the eastern empire, from whence the MSS. most probably came. The late interesting discovery of an illus- trated MS. of the Gospels in Greek, of the latter part of the 6th century, at Rossano in southern Italy, adds another number to our scanty list of early volumes of this class, which is closed by the Latin Pentateuch in the library of the earl of Ashburnham. This last MS., however, is not older than the 7th century. It was executed in Italy, and is adorned with many large miniatures, not of high artistic merit, but of great interest for the history of painting and of costume.~~

~~Coeval with the MSS. which have just been enumerated are the beautiful mosaics and wall-paintings which are seen at Rome, Ravenna, and in other parts of Italy, serving as standards of comparison'and carrying on the history of art where MSS. fail us. The strong and ever-increasing Byzantine element which appears in these works prepares us to find the predominance of the same influence when we again pick up the broken thread of the history of miniature painting. We may then, at this point, turn for a moment to the east of Europe and state briefly what remains of Greek art in MSS. Of Greek miniatures there are still many fine examples extant, but, excepting those which have been noticed above, there are few which are earlier than the 11th century. At this period the miniature appears in the set form which it retained for the next two or three hundred years; and the connexion between 1ts~~

~~*style and that of the mosaics is too evident for us to be at | of earlier ages. But, apart from ornamentation, the Irish*~~

~~*a loss to explain the course of development. The figure drawing is delicate, but rather exaggerated in length; the colours are brilliant; and the whole effect is heightened by glittering backgrounds of gold. In some few instances, however, the Greek artist breaks away from conventionalism, and, especially when pourtraying the divine features of the Saviour or some subject which deeply stirs his feelings, he surprises us with the noble dignity with which he invests his figures. Minuteness also caught the fancy of these Byzantine miniaturists ; and there still remain MSS., such as Psalters and saints' lives, adorned throughout with delicate little drawings of great symmetry and beauty. The ornamentation which was employed in Greek MSS. in the period of which we are speaking, either as frames for miniatures or as borders or head-pieces, is designed evidently after Eastern types, and has more than an accidental likeness to the patterns which are seen in the tapestries and prayer-carpets of Persia. After the 13th century decadence sets in, and we need not follow the course of Byzantine art in MSS. farther than to notice that immediately from it sprang such national styles as those of Russia, Bulgaria, and modern Greece.*~~

~~*Meanwhile, in the West, under the fostering care of Charlemagne, arose a great school of decoration in MSS., which at the close of the 8th and beginning of the 9th century were multiplied and enriched with all the splendour that colours and gilding could give to them. But the books thus ornamented were almost always copies of the Gospels, or Bibles, or church service books, which afforded little scope for invention. Hence among the miniatures of this period we have an endless repetition of portraits of the evangelists, drawn, for the most part, in a lifeless way after Byzantine traditions, and degenerating, as time passes, into positive ugliness. The few miniatures of other descrip- tions, such as Biblical illustrations, show no great merit, and a half-barbaric splendour was generally preferred to artistic effect, But an exception must be made in regard to the style of drawing found in the MS. known, on account of its present resting-place, as the Utrecht Psalter. This volume is filled from beginning to end with delicately drawn pen illustrations, designed and executed with a facility*~~

~~*which, compared with the mechanical and clumsy drawing of other Continental MSS. of the period, is astonish- ing. And these drawings are of particular interest for us, as they are of the style which was adopted in England and which gives to Anglo-Saxon art its distinctive aspect. Executed about the year 800 or early in the 9th century, and probably in the north of France, the volume was soon brought to England, where, however, MSS. of the same kind, it may be assumed, had long before been intro- duced. The light " fluttering" outlines of the drapery and other details of the drawings seem to suggest that the original models were derived directly from Roman life, and perhaps partly copied from sculpture; but those models inust have gone through many modifications before passing into the style of the drawings of the Psalter, That the MS. was copied from an older one there can be scarcely a doubt ; and it is not impossible that the original archetype may date back some centuries earlier. May not MSS. which St Augustine and his successors brought from Rome have contained drawings of the same kind? This style of drawing was, at all events, adopted and became nationalized in England ; but it had there a rival in the Irish school of ornamentation, introduced from the north of the island. The early civilization of Ireland placed her in the van of art development in these islands. The wonderfully intricate interlaced designs which render Irish MSS. of the 7th and 8th centuries such marvels of exact workmanship derive their origin, in all probability, from the metal-work*~~

~~*miniatures of saints and evangelists are extraordinary and grotesque instances of purely mechanical drawing, which cause us to wonder how the same eyes and hands which assisted in the creation of such beautiful specimens of pure ornament could tolerate such caricatures of the human shape. The explanation is perhaps to be found in super- stitious regard for tradition. This style of art was carried by the monks to Jona and thence to Lindisfarne, where was founded the school which produced, in the 8th and 9th centuries, the richly ornamented codices of Durham. While, then, Byzantine models were copied on the Continent, the free drawing introduced from the south and the intricate ornamentation brought in from the north were practised in England ; but the free drawing, with its accompanying decoration copied from foliage, and gradually developing into beautiful borders harmoniously coloured, gained the day, and lasted down to the time of the Norman Conquest. The one great fault of this latter*~~

~~*style of drawing strikes' the eye at the first glance. This is the inordinate length of limb with which the human figures are endowed. But this blemish is forgotten when one comes to appreciate the many points of merit in the designs.*~~

~~*In Italy, aftera long period of inactivity, two very different styles of decoration of MSS. sprang into existence. The first of these was that of the Lombardic school, which is distinguished by intricate patterns and bright colouring. The large initial letters which are found in the MSS. of the 11th and 12th centuries, the best period of this style, are often a perfect maze of interlaced bands and animal forms, and are extremely handsome and effective. Figure drawing, however, seems to have been but little practised by the Lombardic artists, but such as there is appears on a broad scale and well executed. In the collections of Monte Cassino are some of the best examples of this school. In the second style which developed in Italy the Byzantine influence is at first most marked. Indeed, among its early specimens of the 13th century are some which might pass for the work of Greek artists. But the genius of the Italians soon assimilated the foreign element, and produced a national school which spread throughout the peninsula and afterwards extended its influence to southern France and Spain. It is, however, remarkable that in a country which produced such fine pictures and wall-paintings at an early date there is com- paratively little miniature painting in contemporary MSS. A curious and early instance of this kind of art occurs in a MS. in the British Museum, written and orna- mented with a series of miniatures at Winchester, in the 12th century, in which are two paintings which are purely Italian and of more than ordinary excellence.*~~

~~*In the majority of the extant Italian miniatures of the 14th century the influence of the great artists of the Florentine school is manifest. The peculiar treatment of flesh tints, painted in body colour over a foundation of olive-green, and the peculiar vermilion and other colours which need be but once seen to be ever afterwards recog- nized as belonging to this school, are constantly present. The figures are generally rather shortened and the drapery carried in straight folds, very different characteristics from the swaying figures and flowing drapery of the English and French artists of the same period. The ornamentafion which accompanied this style of*~~

~~miniature generally consists of heavy scrolls and foliated or feather-like pendants from the initial letters, with spots of gold set here and there in the border. There are also extant some examples of a most beautiful kind of ornamentation which appears to have originated in central Italy, and which seems to partake of the qualities of both the styles of Italian art of which we have been speaking, combining~~

~~the drawing of the Florentine school with a lighter colour- ing which may have been suggested by the Lombardic.~~

~~Of native Spanish miniature art little can be said. In the Visigothic MSS. of the early Middle Ages there is no ornament beyond roughly coloured initial letters and some barbaric figure drawing. A little later, however, we get some indication of national peculiarities in the MSS. of the 10th, 11th, and 12th centuries. Here there appear miniatures, stiff and rude in their drawing, but exhibiting the unmistakable Spanish predilection for sombre colours, —dusky reds and yellows and even black entering largely into the compositions.~~

~~The materials at our disposal of the 10th, 11th, and 12th centuries show the gradual development in France and western Germany of a fine free-hand drawing which was encouraged by the proportionately increasing size of books. Both in outline and colour the fully de- veloped miniatures of the 12th century are on a grand scale ; and initial letters formed of scrolls and interlacings assume the same proportions. The figure drawing of this time is frequently of great excellence, the limbs being well- proportioned ; care is also bestowed upon the arrangement of the drapery, which is made to follow the shape and, as it were, to cling to the body.~~

~~But the great revulsion from the broad effects and bold grandeur of the 12th century to the exact details and careful finish of the 13th century is nowhere more striking than in miniature painting in MSS. With the opening of the new period we enter on a new world of ideas. Large books generally disappear to give place to smaller ones; minute writing supersedes the large hand ; and miniatures appear in circumscribed spaces in the interior of initial letters. The combination of the miniature with the initial brings it~~

~~into close connexion with the ornamental border, which develops pari passu with the growth of the minia- ture and by degrees assumes the same national and distinctive characteristics. Burnished gold was now also freely used, tending to give the miniature a more decorative character than formerly. In England, northern France, and the Netherlands the style of miniature painting of this period was much the same in character; and it is often difficult to decide from which of these countries a MS. is derived. English work, however, may be often distinguished by its lighter colouring, while deeper and more brilliant hues and a peculiar reddish or copper tinge in the gold marks French origin. The drawing of the Flemish artists was scarcely so good, the outlines being frequently heavy and the colours rather dull. Of the Rhenish or Cologne school examples are more scarce ; but they generally show greater contrasts in the colours, which, though brilliant, are not so pleasing. As the century advanced, and particularly at its close, national distinctions became more defined. English artists paid more attention to graceful drawing and depended less upon colour. In some of their best productions they are satisfied with slightly tinting the figures, finding room in the backgrounds for display of brilliant colours and gilding. In France the drawing, though exact, is hardly so graceful, and colour plays a more important part. From the 13th to the middle of the 15th century great decorative effect is obtained by the introduction of diapered or other highly ornamented backgrounds. Of landscape, properly so called, there is but little, a conventional hill or tree being often taken as sufficient indication. Borders begin in the 13th century in the form of simple pendants from the initial letters, terminating in simple buds or cusps. But once arrived fairly in the 14th century, a rapid development in all parts of the decoration of MSS. takes place. There is greater freedom in the drawing; the borders begin to throw out branches and the bud expands into leaf. This is the best~~

~~period of English miniature painting, many of the fine MSS. of this century which are preserved in the public libraries bearing witness to the skill and delicate touch of native artists. In France the decoration of MSS. received a great impetus from the patronage of King John and Charles Ve; of whose famous libraries many handsome volumes are still to be seen; and later in the century the duke of Berri carried on the same good work,~~

~~*With regard to miniature art in Germany there are so*~~

~~*few examples to guide us that little can be said. Most of them are rough in both drawing and colouring ; and in the few remaining specimens of really good work foreign influence is distinctly seen. In the west the art of France and Flanders, and in the south that of Italy, are pre- dominant. Perhaps the finest MS. of this southern style to be seen in England is a Psalter belonging to Lord Ashburnham, which was probably executed in the 14th century at Prague, and is full of miniatures which in drawing and colouring follow the Italian school. _ When we enter the 15th century we find great changes in both. the great English and French schools. In England the graceful drawing of the previous century has disappeared, At first, however, some beautiful examples of purely native work were produced, and still remain to excite our admiration. Probably the most perfect of these MSS. are the Sherborne Missal belonging to the duke of North- umberland, and a very beautiful volume, a Book of Hours, in the library of Lord Ashburnham. The care bestowed upon the modelling of the features is particularly noticeable in English work of this period. In decoration the border of the 14th century had by this time grown to a solid frame surrounding the page ; but now another form of most effec- tive ornament was also used, consisting of twisted feather- like scrolls brightly coloured and gilt. As the century advanced native English work died out, and French and then Flemish influence stepped in.*~~

~~*In France immense activity was shown all through the 15th century in the illumination and illustration of books of all kinds, sacred and profane; and it is in the MSS. of that country, and, a little later, in those of the Low*~~

~~*Countries, that we can most exactly watch the transition*~~

~~*from medizeval to modern painting. Early in the century there were executed in France some of the most famous MSS. which have descended to us. In these the colouring is most brilliant, the figure drawing fairly exact; and the landscape begins to develop. The border has grown from the branching pendant to a framework of golden sprays.or of conventional and realistic leafage and flowers. Towards the middle of the century the diaper disappears for ever, and the landscape is a recognized part of the miniature ; but perspective is still at fault, and the mystery of the horizon is not solved*~~

~~until the century is well advanced. And now Flemish art, which had long lain dormant, sprang into rivalry with its French sister, under the stimulus given to it by the Van Eycks, and the struggle was carried on, but unequally, through the rest of the century. French art gradually deteriorates ; the miniatures become flat and hard; nor are these defects compensated for by the meretricious practice of heightening the colours by pro- fusely touching them with gold. The Flemish artists, on the other hand, went on improving in depth and softness of colouring, and brought miniature painting to rare perfec- tion. The borders also which they introduced gave scope for the study of natural objects. Flowers, insects, birds, and jewels were painted in detached groups on a solid framework of colour surrounding the page. But if, as the 15th century drew to its close, the Flemings had outstripped their French rivals, they had now more powerful antagonists to contend with. The Italians had been advancing with rapid strides towards the glories of~~

~~the Renaissance. Early in the century there arose a taste for older models. As, for their writing and afterwards for their printing, they went back to the 11th and 12th centuries for their standards, so they adopted again the interlacing designs of the Lombardic school for their orna- ment, and produced beautiful borders of twining patterns relieved by colour; or they took natural objects for their models, and painted borders of delicate flowers made still more brilliant with clustering stars of gold. Later, they drew from the ancient classical designs inspiration for the wonderful borders of arabesques, medallions, griffins, human forms, antique objects, &c., which they brought to such perfection early in the next century. heir miniatures rose to the rank of exquisitely finished pictures, and were executed by some of the best artists working under the patronage of such great houses as those of Sforza and Medici.~~

~~Here then, having advanced to the threshold of the domain of modern painting, we leave these two great schools of miniaturists in possession of the west of Europe. The Flemings had the wider field; they were wanderers~~

~~from home; and their works are scattered through many lands, from England in the north to Spain in the south. But Italian art had greater inherent strength, and will always hold the first rank. To instance a few of the more famous MSS. of this closing period of miniature painting : the Breviary of Isabella the Catholic, in the British Museum, is a masterpiece of Flemish art produced in Spain; the Grimani Breviary at Venice is another fine example of the same school. Some beautiful Italian miniatures (executed for Leo X. and others) were in the collection lately sold by the duke of Hamilton. 'The earl of Ashburnham possesses a most delicately illuminated Book of Hours written for Lorenzo dei Medici by the famous scribe Sinibaldo in 1485, as well as a MS. to which Perugino and his contemporaries contributed paintings. And in one MS8., a Book of Hours belonging to Mr Malcolm of Poltalloch, are gathered some of the best miniatures of both schools, viz., a series of exquisite paintings by Milanese artists supplemented by later ones of the finest Flemish type. (. ac)~~
~~MINIMS. See Francis (St) or Paowa, vol. ix. p. 695.~~

~~MINING~~

~~IIE art of mining consists of those processes by which useful minerals are obtained from the earth's crust.~~

~~This definition is wider than what is popularly known as mining, for it includes not only underground excavations but also open workings ; at the same time it excludes under- ground workings which are simply used for passages, such as railway tunnels and sewers, and galleries for military purposes. We must remark also that the word " mine," or its equivalent in other languages, varies in signification in different countries on account of legal enactments or decisions which define it. Thus, in France and Belgium, the workings for mineral are classified by the law of 1810, according to the nature of the substance wrought, into mines, miniéres, et carriéres. In the United Kingdom, on the contrary, it is the nature of the excavation which decides the question for certain legislative purposes, and~~

~~the term mine is restricted to workings which are carried |~~

~~on underground by artificial light. The consequence is that what is merely an underground stone quarry in France becomes a true mine in England,~~

~~*whilst the open workings for iron ore, such as exist in Northampton- shire, would be true mines under the French law. It is necessary, therefore, in an article on mining, to go beyond the English legal definition of a mine, and include the methods of working minerals in excavations open to day- light as well as in those which are purely subterranean: Furthermore, as it is customary for the miner to cleanse his ore to a greater or less extent before selling it to the smelter, we shall treat, under the head of mining, those processes which are commonly known as the dressing or mechanical preparation of ores ; and, finally, a few remarks will be made concerning legislation affecting mines in the United Kingdom, accidents in mines, and the production of the useful minerals in various parts of the globe.*~~

~~*The subject therefore will be dealt with as follows :—*~~

~~*1. Manner in which the useful minerals occur in the earth's crust, viz., tabular deposits and masses ; faults or dislocations.*~~

~~*2. Prospecting, or search for mineral.*~~

~~*3. Boring with rods and ropes; diamond drill.*~~

~~*4, Breaking ground ; tools employed ; blasting by vari- ous methods ; machine drills ; driving levels and sinking shafts.*~~

~~*5. Principles of employment of mining labour.*~~

~~*7. Exploitation, or the working away of strata or veins.*~~

~~*8. Carriage or transport of minerals through under- ground roads.*~~

~~*9. Winding, or raising in the shafts, with the machinery and apparatus required.*~~

~~*10. Drainage of mines, adit-levels, pumps, pumping engines,*~~

~~*11. Ventilation and lighting of mines.*~~

~~*12. Means of descending into and ascending from mines.*~~

~~13. Dressing or mechanical preparation of minerals.~~

~~14. Recent legislation affecting mines in the United Kingdom.~~

~~15. Accidents in mines.~~

~~16. Useful minerals produced in various parts of the globe.~~

~~1. Manner in which the Useful Minerals Occur.—The repositories of the useful minerals may be classified accord- ing to their shape as (A) tabular deposits, and (B) masses.~~

~~A. Tabular Deposits—These are deposits which have a more or less flattened or sheet-like form. They may be divided, according to their origin, into (1) beds or strata, and (2) mineral veins or lodes.~~

~~(1) Beds.—Geology teaches us that a large proportion Stratifiel] of the rocks met with at the surface of the earth consist deposits))«~~

~~of substances arranged in distinct layers, owing to the fact that these rocks have been formed at the bottom of seas, lakes, or rivers by the gradual deposition of sediment, by precipitation from solutions, and by the growth or accumu- lation of animal and vegetable organisms. If any one of these layers consists of a useful mineral, or contains enough to make it valuable, we say that we have a deposit in the form of a bed, stratum, or seam. Of course the most important of all bedded or stratified deposits is coal, but, in addition, we have beds of anthracite, lignite, iron ore, especially in the Oolitic rocks, cupriferous shale, lead- bearing sandstone, silver-bearing sandstone, diamond., gold-, and tin-bearing gravels, to say nothing of sulphur, rock-salt, clays, various kinds of stone, such as limestone and gypsum, oil-shale, alum-shale, and slate.~~

~~The characteristic feature of a bed is that it is a member of a series of stratified rocks; the layer above it is called~~

~~'the roof of the deposit, and the one below it is the jloor.~~

~~Its thickness is the distance from the roof to the floor at~~

~~6. Means of securing excavations by timber or masonry. | right angles to the planes of stratification ; its dip is the~~

~~inclination downwards measured from the horizontal ; its strike is the direction of a horizontal line drawn in the middle plane.~~

~~The thickness of beds that are worked varies within very wide limits. Whilst the thickness of certain workable beds of coal is only 1 foot, and that of the Mansfeld cupriferous shale only 10 to 20 inches, we find on the other hand one of the beds of lead-bearing sandstone at Mechernich no less than 85 feet thick, and beds of slate far exceeding that thickness. It must not be supposed, however, that the thickness of a bed necessarily remains uniform. Occasionally this is the case over a very large area; but frequently the thickness varies, and the bed may dwindle away gradually, or in- : ne crease in size, or become divided DEST test into two owing to the appearance = Suaue of a parting of valueless rock, 2s 32==s= Sree non Om Fig. 1 shows beds of shale, ine. == stone, iron ore, and sandstone. =e rte Any one of these beds may be = valuable enough to be worked. Fig. 1.~~

~~(2) Mineral Veins or Lodes.—Veins or lodes are tabular or sheet-like deposits of mineral which have been formed since the rocks by which they are surrounded ; they differ, therefore, by their subsequent origin from beds, which, as just stated, are of contemporaneous origin with the enclos- ing rocks (although of course cases occur in which the deposit is lying unconformably upon very much older strata, or is covered unconformably by very much younger strata). Itis necessary to explain that the term " vein" in this definition is used in a more restricted sense than is sometimes customary among miners, who speak of veins of coal, clay-ironstone, and slate, which geologically are true beds, They see a band of valuable mineral or rock, and, careless of its origin, call it metaphorically a vein or seam. On the other hand, the definition is broader than that which prevails among some geologists, who would confine the term vein to deposits occupying spaces formed by fissures.~~

~~The term " lode" was defined in 1877 by Mr Justice Field in the celebrated Eureka v. Richmond case asfollows:—" We are of opinion, therefore, that~~

~~*the term, as used in the Acts of Congress, is applic- able to any zone or belt of mineralized rock lying within bound- aries clearly separating it from the neighbouring rocks." This interpretation seems suitable for the peculiar mining tenure of the United States, where the discoverer of a vein or lode can obtain*~~

~~*"a inining claim of 500 yards in length along the lode. It protects the prospector, whose object is to obtain a secure title, the mode of origin of the deposit being a matter of small importance to him so long as it is worth working. In many cases also it would be impossible to decide upon the mode of origin until workings had progressed considerably, and even then there would be room for disputes.*~~

~~*No doubt a very large number of mineral veins are simply the contents of fissures; others are bands of rock impregnated with ore adjacent to fissures or planes of separation ; others, again, have been formed by the more or less complete replacement of the constituents of the original rock by particles of ore.*~~

~~*Veins may occur in igneous or in sedimentary rocks,*~~

~~*and in the latter they frequently cut across the planes of stratification. _ Like a bed, a vein has its dip and strike; but, as the dip of veins is generally great, the inclination is usually measured from the vertical, and is then spoken of as the wnderlie or hade. The bounding planes of a vein are called the walls or cheeks, and they are frequently smooth and striated, showing that one side must have slid against the other. The upper wall is known as the hanging wall, the lower one as the foot wall. The width of a vein is measured at right angles to the walls.*~~

~~*A typical example of a fissure-vein is shown in fig. 2, repre- senting a lead lode in slate at Wheal Mary Aun mine! in Cornwall.*~~

~~*1 0. Le Neve Foster, " Remarks on the Lode at Wheal Mary Ann, Menheniot," Trans, Roy. Geol. Soc. Cornwall, vol. ix. p. 153.*~~

~~*It is evident that a fissure in the surrounding slate has here been a up by the successive deposition of bands of mineral on both es.*~~

~~*A large proportion of the contents of a lode may consist of fragments of the walls that have fallen into these are often tightly cemented ——W together by minerals that have == been introduced subsequently. The = horizontal section of part of the = Comstock lode? (Plate IV.) shows much "country" rock enclosed = within the walls. ——— _ Where a lode consists of rock impregnated with ore, the nineral- ized part may fade away gradually into the surrounding rock (country) without there being any distinct*~~

~~*DINDDITIVIID — TIVM\ ONIDNY*~~

~~*Fig. 2. wall, as shown in fig. 3, which is an illustration taken from the Great Flat Lode? near Redruth in Cornwall.*~~

~~*The celebrated Ruby Hill deposit in the Eureka district, Nevada,*~~

~~*is a mineralized zone of dolo- mitic limestone varying in width from a few inches to 450 feet, and having a mean width of 250 feet. It con- tains numerous irregular ore- bodies, which consist mainly of highly ferruginons car- bonate of lead, rich in silver aud gold. This mineralized limestone band, long called , Fig. 3.*~~

~~*a lode by miners, has been determined by the decision just men- tioned to be a lode in the eyes of the law.*~~

~~*Veins often continue for a great distance along their strike. The Van lode in Montgomeryshire is known for a length of 9 miles, whilst the Great Quartz Vein in California has been traced for a distance of no less than 80 miles. Veins are of less uniform pro- ductiveness than beds, and are rarely worth working throughout. Rich portions alternate with poor or worthless portions. The rich parts have received various names according to the forms they assunie: fig. 4 represents a gyeeace une longitudinal section along the ——·__——··__———_ &_ strike (cowrse) of a lode, and — 42=+#*=* & = tts the stippled parts are ore- bodies ; B, B, Bare bunches; A is a large bunch or course of ove; when an ore-body forms a sort of*~~

~~*continuous column we have a shoot, and ore- bodies which on being ex-*~~
~~*Fic. ¢*~~

~~*: 5 g. 4. cavated leave chimney-like openings are called pipes (fig. 4, C). In the United States the Spanish word bonanza, literally meaning 'fair weather" or " pro- sperity," is frequently used for a rich body of ore.*~~

~~*The richness of veins is dependent in many cases upon the nature of the adjacent rock (cowntry), upon the underlie, and upon the strike, variations in any one of these three elements being often sufficient to cause a decided change of productiveness.*~~

~~*Various theories have been formed concerning the origin of mineral veins. Some geologists suppose that the minerals now constituting the veins have been dissolved out of the adjacent rocks and re-deposited in the vein cavity ; others, on the contrary, believe that the ores have been brought up from great depths by mineral springs. In all probability both theories are correct, some lodes having been formed by the former process and some by the latter ; and, furthermore, other lodes appear to owe their origin to a gradual substitution of valuable mincrals in the place of some of the con- stituents of a worthless rock. One of the most important con- tributions to the science of ore-deposits of late years has been the discovery by Professor F, Sandberger of small quantities of silver, lead, copper, nickel, cobalt, bismuth, arsenic, antimony, and tin in silicates, such as olivine, augite, hornblende, and mica, which are constituents of igneous rocks. He therefore regards these rocks as the sources from which lodes have derived their riches.*~~

~~*B. Masses.—These are deposits of mineral, often of*~~

~~*irregular shapes, which cannot be distinctly recognized as beds or veins. Such, for instance, are the red hematite*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*sey i*~~

~~*GRANITE. °*~~

~~2~~

~~>~~

~~z~~

~~aj~~

~~m~~

~~aang sig Wrens:~~

~~10 raTHIoMs ev”~~

~~2B 60 FATHOMS LEVEL pine Bs sie 2 ——————EET—TE——————~~

~~2 James D. Hague, in United States Geological Exploration of the Fortieth Parallel, vol. iii., “ Mining Industry,” Washington, 1870, Atlas, plate 11.~~

~~3 C. Le Neve Foster, ruth and Camborne, and on the Alteration of Granite,” Quart.~~

~~644.~~

~~‘On the Great Flat Lode south of Red- some other Tin Deposits formed by Jour. Geol. Soc., vol. XXXIV. P.~~

~~XVI. — 56~~

~~Masses.~~

~~Faults.~~

~~442~~

~~= ORDNANCE DATUM~~

~~50 FATHOMS LEVEL~~

~~60 FATHOMS LEVEL~~

~~Fig. 5.—Vertical Section, Roanhead Mine. A, Mountain Limestone ; B, red hematite ; C, sand and clay; D, gravel. Scale ga'yo-~~

~~occupy irregular cavities in the Mountain Limestone. These may have been formed by the percolation of water bring- ing down iron in solution from overlying Triassic rocks.~~

~~Other examples of masses Z\ ee :~~

~~are the calamine deposits of Sates Altenberg? (fig. 6), Sardinia, Yi), he: qq |~~

~~and Lombardy, the iron ore 7% ' 4 deposits in Missouri, such Yj = J as Iron Mountain and Pilot 7 A\\ —=\7 tj; Knob, the huge upright Fic. 6.—Vertical Section, Alten- "necks" or "pipes" of dia- berg. B, slate; d, dolomite ; mantiferous rock in- South ©, calamine ; L, clay.~~

~~Africa, and the granite decomposed im situ worked for china clay in Cornwall.~~

~~Under this head also are included by most authors the so-called "stockworks" or "reticulated masses," names applied to masses of sedimentary or igneous rock which are penetrated by so many little mineral veins as to make the whole worth excavating.~~

~~It must be understood that we cannot expect nature to make distinct lines of demarcation between the different kinds of deposits. Though we may be able to see clearly that a seam of coal is contemporaneous with the enclosing rocks, and that a vein intersecting beds of shale and sandstone was formed subsequently, cases frequently occur where the origin of the mineral is uncertain. For example, we have the lead-bearing sandstone of Mechernich and the silver-bearing sandstone of Utah. The grains of sand are of sedimentary origin ; but opinions differ as to whether the lead and silver respectively were deposited with the sand or were introduced subsequently by solutions percolating through the beds. In the case of the well-known bed of Cleveland ironstone, Dr Sorby considers that the iron was "derived partly from mechanical deposition and partly from subsequent chemical~~

~~*replacement of the originally deposited carbonate of lime.”? Furthermore, a bed may be so folded and contracted as to lose its original sheet-like form in places and assume the shape of an itregular mass. This may happen even with a coal seam.**~~

~~*All kinds of deposits are subject not only to irregularities of origin dependent upon their mode of formation but also to dislo- cations or shiftings known as faults, heaves, or throws.*~~

~~*We will take the case of a bed (fig. 7). AB is a seam which ends off suddenly at B, whilst the continuation is found at a lower level at CD. The bed was evidently once continuous ; buta fracture took place along the line XY followed by a displacement. “As a rule*~~

~~*Fig. 7.*~~

~~*the portion of rock on the hanging-wall side of a fault appears to have slid downwards, but occasionally this is not so, and we havea*~~

~~*Fig. 8.*~~

~~*reversed fault (fig. 8). It is very evident, in some cases, that the motion took place, not along the line of greatest dip, but in a dia-*~~

~~*1 Fr. Moritz Wolff, “ Beschreibung der Rotheisenerzlagerstitten von West Cumberland und North Laneashire,” Stahl und Eisen, 2 Jahrgang, No. 12, plate vi. ‘*~~

~~*2M. Braun, Zetischr. d. d. geol. Gesellsch., 1857, vol. ix.; and A. von Groddeck, Die Lehre von den Lagerstitten der Erze, Leipsic 1879, p. 242. :*~~

~~*3 Quart. Jour, Geol. Soc., vol. xxxv. (1879), p. 85, Anniversary Address of the President.*~~

~~*4 J. Callon, Lectures on Mining, vol. i. p. 63, and Atlas, plate vill. fig. 44.*~~

~~*MINING*~~

~~*[PROSPECTING.*~~

~~gonal direction, causing a displacement sideways as well as down- wards. Nevertheless, where beds or veins are not horizontal, a mere shift along the line of dip is sufficient to cause an apparent heave sideways. This will be understood from fig. 9. Let AB and CD represent two portions of a lode dislo- A cated by the fault EF. The point B' corresponded originally with B, and the dislocation was caused by a simple sliding of B' along the line of dip BB'. An instance of the complication caused by a succession of faults is shown in fists L029~~

~~2. Prospecting, or Search for Mineral.—The object of the pro-~~

~~Fig. 9. spector is to discover valuable deposits of mineral.~~

~~This~~

~~search is beset with many difficulties: the outcrops of~~

~~LIVHS Inton»z~~

~~Fia. 10.—Vertical Section, Penhalls Mine, Cornwall. G, G, G, small veins called gossans in the St Agnes district.~~

~~mineral deposits are frequently hidden by soil; the nature of the deposit itself is generally entirely changed near the surface; and, in addition to this, the explorer may have to pursue his work in trackless forests far away from any settlements.~~

~~The prospector seeks for natural sections of the rocks, such as occur in cliffs or in river valleys and their tributary gullies and gorges; he examines the materials constituting the river-beds, often digging up and washing portions in a pan, in order to ascertain whether they contain traces of the heavy ores or metals. If, while prospecting in a valley, he discovers stones that have the appearance of having once belonged to veins, he endeavours to trace them to their source, and is perhaps rewarded by finding similar frag- ments, but less water-worn, as he goes up the stream ; further on he may come upon large blocks of veinstuff lying about, and finally find the vein itself laid bare in a gorge, or at the bottom of a brook, or possibly projecting above the soil in the form of huge crags of quartz. Thus at the~~

~~*Great Western quicksilver mine in California the outcrop of the vein appears as a dike over 100 feet wide, and having precipitous sides in places 75 feet high.® Loose pieces of veinstuff found lying about are known in Cornwall as shoad-stones, and shoading is the term given to the process of tracking them to the parent lode.*~~

~~*The upper portion of a deposit is frequently much altered by atmospheric agencies, and bears little resemblance to the undecom- posed bed or vein which will eventually be met with ata greater or lesser depth. The principal difference consists in the change of sulphides into oxides or oxidized compounds, Thus iron pyrites, which is such a common constituent of mineral veins, is converted into hydrated oxide of iron, and a vein originally consisting largely of iron pyrites and quartz now becomes a cindery mixture of quartz and ochre, known in Cornwall as gossan. This gossan, or tron hat, may often furnish important indications concerning the nature of the lode itself, because such minerals as pyromorphite or cerus- site point to the existence of galena, whilst melaconite, cuprite, malachite, and azurite are the forerunners of chalcopyrite or copper glance. The gossan itself may contain a sufficient quantity of valu- able ores to be worth working.*~~

~~*The seams containing native sulphur in Sicily often show no trace*~~

~~*of that element immediately at the surface, as the sulphur-bear- ing limestone weathers into a soft white granular or pulverulent*~~

~~*5 J. W. Pike, " On some remarkable heaves or throws in Penhalls Mine," Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., vol. xxii. p. 537.*~~

~~*. Luther Wagoner, " The Geology of the Quicksilver Mines of Cali- fornia," Engineering and Mining Journal, vol. xxxiv. p. 334.*~~

~~*BORING. |*~~

~~*variety of gypsum, called briscale by the miners, and considered by them as affording important indications concerning the bed itself.1*~~

~~*Other signs of mineral deposits are given by springs and by certain plants dependent upon the deposit or its associated minerals for part of their nourishment. The appearance of the so-called*~~

~~*lode-lights may be explained by the production of phosphoretted |*~~

~~*hydrogen from the action of organic matter and water upon phos- phates, which are so common in the upper parts of mineral veins; and one hears also of differences in the appearance of the vegetation along the line of the deposit, of places where snow will not lie in winter, and of vapours hanging over the ground. Though some writers refuse to put any value upon these indications, they should not be entirely overlooked, because the outcrop ofa lode, of different nature and texture to the surrounding rocks, and which is generally a channel for water, may readily cause the phenomena just mentioned. Where the surface is cultivated and the natural springs are tapped by adit-levels or other mine-workings, these appearances cannot be looked for to any great extent. With one special mineral, magnetic iron, the position of the deposit may be traced out with some degree of accuracy with a dipping needle; this is used in Sweden.*~~

~~*After having acquired an idea of the position of a vein or seam by some of the surface indications just mentioned, it is necessary, before attacking it by shafts or levels, to obtain more certain data concerning it. In the case of mineral veins, trenches are dug at right angles to the supposed strike; and, when the upper part of the deposit*~~

~~*has been cut in several places, its general course and dip | can be determined sufficiently for the purpose of arranging —*~~

~~*the future workings. These trenches are called ‘“ costean pits”; in some cases, instead of a trench, a pit is sunk a short distance and a little tunnel driven out.*~~

~~*Where the mineral to be wrought occurs as a bed or*~~

~~*mass, the process of boring is resorted to, and indeed this | method is also applied in the case of veins, especially in» Boring is a work of such importance |*~~

~~the United States. that it deserves to be treated under a separate heading.~~

~~3. Boring with Rods and Ropes—Diamond Drills.—The object of boring is to reach a deposit by a small hole and ascertain its nature, its depth from the surface, thickness, dip, and strike. water, brine, and petroleum, which either rise to the surface or have to be pumped up from a certain depth, and finally for tapping water-in old workings or for effecting ventilation, follows :—(1) boring with the rod; (2) boring with the rope; (3) boring with the diamond drill.~~

~~In the first method tools for cutting and removing the~~

~~rock are fixed to rods, which are lengthened as the hole > increases in depth, and which are worked by hand or by | Where the ground is soft, such †~~

~~machinery at the surface. as sand or clay, tools like augers can be employed; but in harder ground it becomes necessary to have recourse to percussion ; various forms of chisel are used, the simplest being made of the shape shown in fig. 11.2 The rods generally consist of bars of square iron, from 1 inch to 2 inches on the side. The length of each rod de- pends upon the height of the tower, derrick, or shears erected above the bore-hole, which should be an exact multiple of the individual parts. These are made in lengths of 15 to 30 or rarely 40 feet, and with a suitable tower it is possible to de- tach or attach two or three lengths at a time, instead of having to make or unmake every joint. nexion usually preferred is by a screw joint as shown in fig. 12; care is taken to have all the joints exactly alike, so that any two bars can be screwed together. In order to~~

~~1 Lorenzo Parodi, Sull' Estrazione dello Solfo in Sicilia, 1873, pp. 7 and 24, ® Serlo, Leitfaden zur Bergbaukunde, Berlin, 1878, p. 59.~~

~~MINING~~

~~Bore-holes are also used for obtaining |~~

~~The methods of boring may be classified as _~~

~~*Fia. 11.—Chisels. Fig. 12.*~~

~~*The mode of con- |*~~

~~*| diminish the weight of the rods, which becomes consider able in deep holes, wood has sometimes been employed. The rods are connected by male and female screws attached to the rods by sockets of sheet iron, or by a fork-like _arrangement. At the surface a head is screwed to the uppermost rod by which the rods can be lifted, and they are turned by means of cross-bars called tillers.*~~

~~*When the depth is small the rods are lifted by hand and then allowed to drop, being turned slightly at each lift so that the cutting chisel may strike a new place each time. For greater depths a lever has to be employed, the rods being suspended at one end, whilst the other end can be pressed down by men using their hands or feet. The spring pole is another arrangement, in which the elasticity of a long pole is made use of for lifting the rod at each | Stroke. The length of the stroke can be maintained the same while the bore-hole is deepened by means of a screw ina swivel-head at the top of the rod.*~~

~~*With deep holes, and especially those of large diameter, steam machinery has to be employed for working the rod; the engine may be direct-acting and stand immediately above the bore-hole, but a commoner arrangement is to employ a single-acting cylinder working a beam. Occasionally also the beam is actuated by a connecting-rod worked by a crank.*~~

~~*The actual boring machinery has now been described, and the mere boring appears to be a very simple matter, consisting only in lifting the rod a little and allowing it to drop, the rod being turned slightly before each stroke. Nevertheless the process of putting | down a bore-hole is not so simple as it seems, for there are numer- ous indispensable accessory operations which take up much time. In the first place the débris have to be removed, and in order to effect this the rods must be drawn up, the swivel-head is discon- nected and a capscrewed on. A length of rods is now drawn up by | a hand or steam windlass and disconnected. It is well to have as many caps as*~~

~~there are lengths to be drawn up, and then each length can be suspended in the house. Sometimes a grip which catches the rod at the bulging joint is used instead of acap. The next operation consists in lowering by means of a rope the shell-pwmp or sludger, which is a hollow cylinder with a clack or a ball- f valve (fig. 13). Itis worked up and down a little tillitis filled, and it is then drawn up and emptied at the surface. §) The operation is repeated, if necessary, and the boring is #) resumed with the rod. :~~

~~Occasionally a bore-hole has to be widened slightly with a tool called a reamer. Soft beds may have to be bored through with a wimbdle; and, unless the rocks are hard and Vix firm, the hole has to be lined with a tube, generally of sheet- _. iron. Accidents may occur, causing an immense amount Fig. 18- of trouble, such as the breaking of rods or chisel, and many in- genious implements have been devised for seizing the broken rod or the fragments of tools which prevent further progress , | with the work.~~

~~In boring at considerable depths, the weight of the rod becomes so great that much vibration ensues when / the mass is suddenly arrested by the chisel striking 7 against the bottom of the hole. Various devices have 7 been contrived for overcoming this difficulty and pro- 7 ducing a tool which will act independently of the rod. | One of the best-known arrangements is the free-falling /~~

~~tool invented by Kind (fig. 14). The head of the actual /~~

~~boring-rod is held by a click or grapple; when the main / ‘ rod descends, the resistance of the water in the hole / slightly stops the sliding disk D, the jaws J, J open, the / head is disengaged, and the boring part falls and strikes the bottom without any injurious vibrations being com- municated to the main rod. When this descends farther the head is caught again by the click. Special tools also are used for cutting an annular groove at the bottom of a bore-hole and breaking off the core, which is then brought up, with certain precautions, so as to show the nature and dip of the strata traversed.~~

~~In order to obviate the great loss of time which ensues from connecting and disconnecting long | lengths of rods, recourse may be had to boring 7~~

~~*In this method, known as the 4 _ a*~~

~~*| Ohinese method, the chisel is worked by a rope in Fis. 14.*~~

~~*the same manner as the sludger already described. Messrs*~~

~~*Mather and Platt of Manchester have long used with suc-*~~

~~*cess, in many parts of England and various other countries, a system of boring by means of a flat hempen rope. |*~~

~~*The most important modification of late years 1n the*~~

~~*x. fig. 52.*~~

~~*SSS*~~

~~*SSS SSH SSSA*~~

~~*SSS*~~

~~*| with the rope.*~~

~~*| J. Callon, Lectures on Mining, vol. i., Atlas, plate i*~~

~~*, Boring Z with*~~

~~*rope.*~~

~~*444*~~

~~*Diamond process of making bore-holes is the introduction of the*~~

~~*drill.*~~

~~*diamond drill. The working part of the drill consists of the so-called crown, which is a short piece of tube made of cast steel, at one end of which a number of black diamonds are fastened into small cavities (fig. 15). The crown is screwed on to wrought-*~~

~~LZ Za Za |~~

~~which, breaking off from time to time, 2 is caught by a little shoulder, and brought up to the surface with the rod. In places where it is not necessary to make any verification of the rocks tra- versed, the crown is arranged with diamonds in the centre also. The débris, in either case, are washed away by a stream of water, which is forced down the tube and flows up the sides of the hole. With this system a bore-hole can be deepened continuously at a speed altogether unattainable by the other methods, which require stoppages for cleaning out. Tt has the further advantage of making it possible to drill holes in any direction; and prospecting diamond drills are constantly used with much success inside many metal mines, especially in the United States.~~

~~Fig. 16! shows the Little Champion Rock-Drill,which is largely em- ployed in the Lake Superior district for prospecting. It can be used above or below ground. Two inclined cylinders drive a horizontal crank shaft, which works bevel gear, causing the drill to revolve. At the same time a countershaft is likewise set in motion, and this effects the advance of the drill by gearing driving the feed-screw; as there are three kinds of gearing, the speed can be varied at pleasure. The feed-screw and its connexions are carried by a swivel-head, and this can be tumed so as to drill holes at an angle. The drum shown above the cylinders is used for hoisting out the drill-rods by a rope.~~

~~The rods are lap-welded iron tubes 1§ inches in diameter, fitted with.~~

~~a bayonet joint. Another light portable prospecting drill for underground work is~~

~~Fic. 16.—Little Champion Rock-Drill.~~

~~represented in fig. 17.2 It is intended for drilling holes 1} inches in diameter to a depth of 150 feet. The cores which it yields are % inch in diameter. It has double oscillating cylinders 34 inches in diameter with 34 inches stroke, which are run up to a speed of 800 revolutions. The drill can be set to bore in any direction by turning the swivel-head on which it is carried.~~

~~*The larger rock-drill used by the American Diamond Rock Boring Company for putting down holes to a depth of 2000 feet consists of a 20 horse-power boiler with two oscillating 6-inch cylinders and the necessary gearing for working the drill, all*~~

~~*1 Engineering and Mining Jour., vol. xxxiii. p. 119. 2 Tbid., vol. xxxiii. p. 273.*~~

~~*MINING*~~

~~*[BREAKING GROUND.*~~

~~*mounted upon a carriage, so that the whole machine is readily moved from place to place. The feed is effected by gearing or by hydraulic pressure; a 23-inch crown is employed, leaving a 2-inch core. Each separate drill-rod is 10 feet long. The total weight of the machine is about 4 tons.*~~

~~*4, Breaking Ground — Tools Employed — Blasting by Various Methods—Machine Drills—Drwing Levels and Sinking Shafts—The kind of ground in which mining ex- cavations have to be carried on varies within the widest limits, from loose quicksands to rocks which are so hard that the best steel tools will scarcely touch them.*~~

~~*Loose ground can be removed with the shovel; but in Tools. |*~~

~~*the special case of peat sharp spades are employed, which cut through the fibres and furnish lumps or sods of con- venient form for drying and subsequent use as fuel. What*~~

~~*-is called fair, soft, or easy ground, such as clay, shale,*~~

~~*θ*~~

~~*decomposed clay-slate, and chalk, requires the use of the pick and the shovel. The pick is a tool of very variable form, accord- ing to the material operated on. Thus there are the navvy's. pick, the single-pomt- ed pick with a striking head at the other end called the poll-*~~

~~*pick (fig. 18), and numerous varieties*~~

~~*of the double-pointed pick (fig. 19), the*~~

~~*special tool of the collier, but also*~~

~~*largely used in metal mining. When*~~

~~*the ground, though harder, is neverthe-*~~

~~*less "jointy," or traversed by many*~~

~~*natural fissures, the wedge comes into Fre. 19.—Double- play. The Cornish tool known as a gad _ pointed Pick.*~~

~~*is a pointed wedge (fig. 20). The so-called "pick and gad" work consists in breaking away the easy ground with the point of the pick, wedging off pieces with the gad driven in by a sledge or the poll of the pick, or prizing them*~~

~~*Fic, 18.—-Poll-pick.*~~

~~*SS*~~

~~*off with the pick after they have been loosened by _ iS the gad. The Saxon gad is held on a little handle,*~~

~~*and is struck with a hammer. It is used for wedg-*~~

~~*ing off pieces of jointy ground, and in former days*~~

~~*even hard rocks were excavated by its aid. The ¥—-' process consisted in chipping out a series of parallel —*~~

~~*grooves and then chipping away the ridges left between the grooves. Asa method of working this process is obsolete; but it is useful on a small scale for cutting recesses (hitches) for timber, for dressing the sides of levels*~~

~~*_ or shafts before putting m dams, and for doing work*~~

~~*in places where blasting might injure pumps or other machinery.*~~

~~We now come to hard ground ; and in this class we have a large proportion of the rocks met with by the miner, such as slate of various kinds, hard grits and sandstone, limestone, the metamorphic schists, granite, and the contents of many mineral veins. Rocks of this kind are attacked by boring and blasting. The tools employed are the jumper, the borer or drill, the hammer, the sledge (mallet, Cornwall), the scraper and charger, the tamping bar or stemmer, in some places the pricker or needle, the claying bar, the crowbar, and finally the shovel for clearing away the broken rock.~~

~~The jumper (fig. 21) is merely a long bar of iron terminating in two chisel-like edges made of steel; Fig, 21. generally there is a swelling in the middle, and sometimes the jumper tapers all the way from the middle to the edge or bit. The jumper is most commonly used when it is necessary to bore holes downwards, and is~~

~~largely employed in quarries; occasionally it is used in boring holes horizontally, as for instance in the salt mines of~~

~~Cheshire. The jumper is held in the desired direc- tion, lifted up, and thrust down; it is turned a little after each stroke.~~

~~However, the miner's tool is generally the borer proper, or drill (fig. 22), which is a bar of round or octagonal steel, usually from { inch to-14 inches in diameter, with one end forged into a chisel-shaped edge, the exact shape and degree of sharpness varying according to the hardness of the rock. | The hole is bored by striking the drill with a hammer or sledge and turning it after each blow. etic Boring is said to be single-handed if the miner * holds the drill in one hand and strikes with the hammer in the other, whilst it is called double-handed when one Iman turns and an- 2 other strikes. The hammers for single- Wh… handed boring usu- cam ally vary in weight © from 2 to 6 or 7 bb. Fic. 23.—Sledge-Hammer. The double-handed boring hammer, or sledge (fig. 23), weighs from 6 to 10 ib or more. If a hole is directed downwards, the miner pours in a little water and bores the hole wet. From time to time he draws out the sludge with the scraper, a little disk~~

~~*at the end of a metal rod, and he takes a fresh borer when the tool he is using has become blunt. The depth bored varies with the rock and the nature of the excavation; but in driving levels in the ordinary way the depth is commonly from 18 inches to 3 feet.*~~

~~*Holes for blasting are sometimes bored by tools like carpenters' augers. One of the simplest, which is used in some French slate-mines, is very like a brace and bit, and the tool is kept pressed against the rock by means of a screw fixed in a frame resting on the ground.*~~

~~*The pricker, or needle, is a slender tapering rod of copper or bronze, with a ring at the large end. It is used for maintaining a hole in the tamping through which the charge can be fired. The use of needles made of iron is prohibited in many countries, on account of the danger of their striking sparks which might fire the charge. The tamping bar, or stemmer, is a rod of iron, copper, or bronze, or iron shod with copper, and it is used for ramming in dried clay, slate pounded up, or other fine material, upon the powder, and so creating a resistance sufficient to make the gases generated by the explosion of the charge rend the rock in the manner required. The claying bar is used for lining wet holes with clay, and so rendering them temporarily watertight.*~~

~~*Shovels vary much in different districts. In the south- west of England the long-handled shovel is preferred to the common one with a short handle; in Germany the ore or rubbish is frequently scraped into a tray with a sort of hoe.*~~

~~*In addition to these tools the miner requires an ex- plosive, and a means of firing the charge at the bottom of the hole which will give him time to escape. Twenty years ago gunpowder was the only explosive in common use in mines, but at the present day its place has been taken to a very large extent by mixtures containing nitro-glycerin or gun-cotton. The powder used for blasting in mines usually contains less saltpetre than that which is employed for sporting or military purposes. The following is an analysis of mining powder by Captain Noble and Sir F. Abel :1—*~~

~~*SSG PEULG ..ccccceseer eso ec GHRGGE INOMV EEN. . 5. occ. ..002. o.55 2°23*~~

Potassium sulphate…... @ 13 |) ASE Sineenennbeoceeeeespeorec 0°59 5 chloride…... ODMR Watelser,corseedenes dete: sae 1°61

PEPORMED one 22. -sy een 0evene 15°06

(Cia On) socencee ee eee 17°98 100-00

IN CN@ 350) GenpepeePeernEEee 0°66

1 "Qn Fired Gunpowder," Phil. Trans., 1880, p. 225,

M-I -N. IN G

445

Gunpowder compressed into cylinders of diameters suitable for bore-holes, and provided with a central hole for the insertion of the fuse, has lately been brought forward with some success.

Nitro-glycerin or glyceryl nitrate is a light-yellow oily liquid which is very sensitive to shocks; under the action of a fulminating cap it explodes with great violence. Its chemical composition is expressed by the formula C;H; (NO,),0, or (C3H;)3NO,; its specific gravity is 16. It has been found so dangerous that its use by itself has been given up; but on the other hand the mix- ture of nitro-glycerin and infusorial earth (Kieselguhr) called dynamite or giant powder is now one of the commonest explosives met with. It has the advantage over powder that it is far more powerful, that it may be used in wet holes or under water, that it is very effective even in ground full of "'vughs" or cavities, and that it requires no hard tamping, which is always a source of danger. Its plasticity too enables it to fill the space at the bottom of a bore-hole, which is rarely a true cylinder, more completely than any solid cartridge can do. One disadvantage is that it has to be thawed in cold weather, and there is also the fact that occasionally the whole of a charge of dyna- mite fails to go off, and unnoticed remnants have exploded and caused serious and even fatal accidents when struck with the pick or borer. The danger is enhanced when the remnants have been left in contact with water, which causes a separation of the sensitive nitro-glycerin, so that even a blow upon the adjacent rock may lead to an accident if any of the

~~*explosive oil has leaked into cracks. The strongest dynamite contains about 75 per cent. of nitro- glycerin, the rest being kieselguhr. A newer explosive is blasting gelatin; it is made by mixing nitro-cotton with nitro-glycerin, until enough nitro-cotton has been dissolved to convert the nitro-glycerin into a jelly-like mass. The blasting gelatin in ordinary use contains no less than 93 per cent. of nitro-glycerin, with 7 per cent. of nitro-cotton, and its strength is very great.*~~

~~*Gun-cotton per se is not much in favour in ordinary mining; but mixed with some nitrate or mixture of nitrates, such as the nitrates of barium and potassium, and known as cotton powder, tonite, and potentite, it is employed extensively. Though not quite so powerful as dynamite, nitrated gun-cotton possesses the important advantage of not requiring to be thawed in cold weather. As in the case of dynamite, accidents have been caused by remnants of charges ; and with both explosives it is neces- sary to examine carefully the bottoms of all holes after blasting, and to destroy any possible remnants by firing off a detonator in any bottom or "socket" which cannot with certainty be pronounced free from danger.*~~

~~*The commonest method of firing a. charge is by means Safety- of the safety-fuse, a cord containing a core of gunpowder fuse.*~~

~~*introduced during the process of manufacture ; it may be rendered waterproof by tar or gutta-percha.*~~

~~*In blasting in the ordinary way the charge of gunpowder is put in either loose or enclosed in a paper bag, aud it is pressed down to the bottom of the hole with a wooden stick, whilst a piece of fuse also is inserted extending from the charge well beyond the hole. If the powder is loose the miner carefully wipes down the sides of the hole with a wet swab stick (a wooden rod with the fibres frayed at one end), or with a wisp of hay twisted round the scraper, in order to remove any loose grains adhering to the fuse or the sides of the hole, and then presses in a wad of hay or paper. A little fine tamping, often the dust from boring a dry hole, is now thrown in and rammed down with the wooden charging stick, and the same process is repeated, and when harder tamping is required the nietal bar is brought into operation, until the hole is completely filled.*~~

~~*As the safety-fuse burns slowly, at the rate of about 2 or 3 feet a minute, the miner can secure ample time for retreat by taking a sufficient length. It is usual to ignite the fuse by a _candle-end fixed under it by a piece of clay, and it takes a little time for the candle to burn through the fuse. — ;*~~

~~*The old plan of firing a charge, which is still in use In many*~~

~~*Blasting by elec- tricity.*~~

~~*446*~~

~~*places, consists in inserting the needle into the charge and then tamping up the hole. Care is taken to draw out the needle a little as the tamping proceeds, so as to prevent too much foree being re- quired for its final withdrawal. The small hole left in this way serves for the insertion of a straw, rush, or series of small quills, filled with fine powder, which like the fuse reaches from the charge to the outside. A short squib which shoots a stream of sparks down the needle hole is also used occasionally. The straw or squib is lighted by some kind of slow match, made either by dipping a cotton strand in melted sulphur or soaking a picce of paper or a lucifer in the tallow of a candle; touch-paper also is used. Dynamite, blasting gelatin, gun-cotton, and cotton-powder are fired by the detonation of a fulminating cap. A long copper cap containing fulminate of mercury is fastened into the safety-fuse by squeezing with a pair of nippers, and is then inserted into a small cartridge of the explosive (primer), and placed above the rest of the charge. Fig. 24 shows a hole charged with two dynamite cartridges, a primer with cap, and filled up with water as*~~

~~*tamping. Sometimes gun-cotton is fired : — by a small charge of powder above it. a r Several substitutes for explosives es have been tried with the object of pe getting rid of the flame, which is Be. dangerous in collieries giving off fire- Bae*~~

~~*damp. Among these may be men- tioned plugs of dry wood which swell when wetted, wedges worked by hydraulic pressure, cartridges con- taining compressed air at extremely*~~

~~*high pressures, and lastly cartridges of compressed lime which ex- pands when water is brought into it.*~~

~~*For the purpose of firing several holes simultaneously, Messrs Bickford, Smith, & Co., the original inventors and makers of the safety-fuse, have brought out a new fuse (fig. 25), the action of which will be easily understood from the figure. An ordi- nary fuse is fixed into a metal case called the igniter, from which a number of instantaneous fuses convey fire to as many separate holes. It is found in practice that this fuse answers very well.*~~

~~*Charges may be readily fired singly or simultaneously with the aid of electricity, either of high tension obtained from a_ frictional, magneto-electric, or dynamo-electric machine, or of low tension from a galvanic battery. The former is preferred.*~~

~~*Fig. 26 shows a section of one of Brain's high-tension fuses. A is a cylindrical wooden case containing a paper cartridge B,*~~

~~*with an electric igniting composition C at the bottom. copper wires D, D enclosed in gutta-percha E, E reach down to*~~

~~*Two*~~

~~*the composition, where they are about jy inch apart. A copper cap or detonator G is fixed on to the small end of the wooden case. The insulated wires D, D are long enough toreach beyond the bore- hole. The ends of the wires are scraped bare, and one wire of the first hole is twisted together with a wire of the next hole, and so on, and finally the two odd wires of the first and last hole are connected to the two wires of a single cable, or to two separate cables, extending to some place of safety to which the men can retreat. Here the two cable wires are connected by binding screws to a frictional electrical machine or dynamo exploder.*~~

~~*One great advantage of electric firing is that the miner can retire to a perfectly safe place before attempting to explode the charge. This is important in sinking shafts,*~~

where the means of escape are less easy than in levels. | in diameter, the length of the stroke 4 inches, and the maximum

A second advantage is that there is no danger of a "' hang

"a.

MINING

[BLASTING.

fire," an occasional source of accidents with the ordinary safety-fuse.

One of the greatest improvements in the art of mining Machine during the last few years has been the introduction of drills. —

machinery for boring holes for blasting; most of the machines imitate percussive boring by hand, but a few rotary machines are also in use. A percussive drill or perforator consists of a cylinder with a piston to which the drill is fastened. Compressed air is made to act alternately on each side of the piston, and in this manner the drill receives its reciprocating motion. Various arrangements have been adopted for securing the automatic rotation of the drill. In some cases also the advance forward of the machine, as the hole is deepened, is also effected automatically ; but im many of the best drills this work is left to the man in charge. It is impossible within the limits of this article to describe the various drills now in use, or even to make a complete enumeration of them.

The following, in alphabetical order, are the names of some of the best-known drills:—Barrow, Beaumont, Burleigh, Champion, Cornish, Cranston, Darlington, Desideratum, Dering, Dubois and Frangois, Dynamic, Eclipse, Excelsior, Ferroux, Frohlich, Inger- soll, Laxey, Mackean, Osterkampf, Rand, Roanhead, Sandycroft, Schram. An account of two of the simplest, the Barrow and the Darlington drills, will be sufficient to give a general idea of the construction of these machines.

"The Barrow drill (fig. 27) consists essentially of a gun-metal Barrow

~~D~~

~~cylinder C about 2 feet in length and 4 inches in diameter, in which works a cast-steel piston-rod D, fitted with two pistons G, about 12 inches apart, mid-way between which is the tappet, or boss, G'. Ina valve-box on the top of the cylinder is placed the oscillating slide-valve H (shown separately), hinged at M, which is worked by the reciprocation of the tappet G' coming in con- tact with its lower edges, which for this purpose are formed with two slopes at each end, as shown. It has ports corresponding with openings in the slide-valve face for admitting the fresh steam or compressed air from the inlet pipe I (fig. 28) to the~~

~~ports j at each end of the cylinder, and for letting the spent or~~

~~exhaust air or steam escape by the exhaust pipe J. This simple~~

~~arrangement constitutes the whole valve gear of the machine. '~~

~~piston rod, and is fixed therein by means of a screw. Its rotation is effected by hand, by means of the handle D", turning a spindle D', which is so fitted by means of the cotter d, made fast in the piston DG, and fitting in a slot in the spindle D', that the latter can slide in the piston DG, but when turned by the handle causes the piston to turn with it. The spindle D' has a pinion E gearing into the pinion F, on the adjusting and feeding screw C', so that when the piston D is turned by means of the handle D" the cylinder C is simultaneously pushed along the bed-plate A. These pinions can be easily disconnected by loosening the nut /f, and thus the piston and the adjusting screw can be turned independently of one another when required.~~

~~"The borers used are respectively 1} inches, 1} inches, and 1 inch~~

~~number of blows about three hundred per minute. The air is~~

~~MACHINE DRILLS. |~~

~~brought down about 400 fathoms from surface, at a pressure of 50 to 55 Ib to the square inch, in wrought-iron pipes 2 inches in diameter in the shaft, and 14 inches in the level, and admitted through a flexible tube into the~~

~~*inlet I on the left-hand side of the eylinder. The cost of the pipes is rather under 7d. a foot, or about 3s. 3d. per fathom.*~~

~~*MINING*~~

~~*447*~~

~~*machine drills. The gross weight of the machine, including the bed-plate and gudgeon, is about 115 tb." * The method of fixing the machine for work is as follows :—" The bed-plate A of the machine is formed with a gudgeon A' which fits into, and can be adjusted to any position in, a socket formed in or*~~

~~*The air is compressed at the surface by a 14-inch compressor, worked | on a clamp B', which can be fixed on any part of the wrought-iron by a 12-inch horizontal engine, capable, however, of working two | bar or column B, thus forming a universal joint. This bar or column*~~

~~=~~

~~—~~

~~=~~

~~= =. ——— ora =~~

~~*Scule, figs. 29, 30.*~~

~~*ia Lt ee es a ee Pe J*~~

~~‘~~

~~*Inches 12 9 6 3 0*~~

~~*i x 2 Feet.*~~

~~*Fig. 29.—Side Elevation of Darlington's Rock-Drill.—Scale ~;4.*~~

~~can be placed in position either horizontally or vertically, as may be most convenient, but is generally placed across the level, against the sides of which it is secured by means of the clamp L, and~~

~~adjusting screw M, and claws N and N'. If necessary, wooden~~

~~wedges QO, O' are driven in between the claws and the wall to make it still firmer. The weight of the bar is about 120 ib.""?~~

~~——— ee — ee eee~~

~~Fia. 30.—Horizontal Section of Darlington's Rock-Drill.—Scale 7's.~~

~~Air-compressing plant of greater size has now been erected at Dolcoath mine, to which the above description refers. At Snail- beach mine in Shropshire they have two air-compressors of 18 inches~~

~~x NS SS~~

~~diameter and 5 feet stroke ; the air-main is at first 9 inches in dia- meter, then 6 inches, whilst 2-inch gas-pipe is used in the levels. A rock-drill which has done, and is doing, exeellent work is that~~

~~of Mr John Darlington. Its construction will be understood by referring to figs. 29, 30, and 31; a is the cylinder, d the piston rod, ce the borer; d, d are two openings for bringing in compressed. air, either of which may be used according to the position of the drill; eis the inlet hose with a stopcock, fdrill-holder, g stretcher bar, h piston, j rifled bar for turning piston and drill, & ratchet wheel attaehed to rifled bar, 7 rifled nut fixed in the piston head, m wood for lessening weight of piston rod and blocking space, » portway for allowing the eompressed air to pass to the top of the piston and give the blow, o exhaust portway. The action of the drill is as follows. The compressed air is always acting on the underside of the piston, and when the upper side of the piston communicates with the outer atmosphere the piston moves rapidly backwards and uncovers the portway 2. The eompressed air rushes through and presses against the upper side of the piston, which has a greater area than the lower side, the difference being equal to the area of the piston rod. The piston is driven rapidly downwards~~

and the drill strikes its blow. At the same time it uncovers the exhaust port o and then the con- stant pressure on the annular area on the underside of the piston produces the return stroke. The number of blows per minute is, from six hundred to eight hundred. The rotation of the drill is effected by the rifled bar. On the down-stroke of the piston the bar with its ratchet wheel is free to turn under a couple of pawls, and eonsequently the piston moves straight whilst the bar and ratchet wheel turn. When the up-stroke is being made the ratchet wheel's held by the pawls and the piston is forced to make part of a revolution. "As the hole is deepened the cylinder is advanced

forwards by turning the handle »; this works an endless screw ¢

1 Proc. Mining Institute of Cornwall, vol. i., 1877, p. 12,

Darling- ton drill.

Rotating drills.

Driving levels.

448

passing through a nut attached to the cylinder; 7 is the cradle carrying the feed-screw and supporting the cylinder. It is centred on the clamp s. As this clamp can be fixed in any position on the bar, and as the cradle can be turned on the clamp, it is evident that holes can be bored in any direction.

In driving a level with the Darlington drill it is usual to fix the stretcher bar horizontally across the level so as to command the upper .part of the face; holes can then be bored with the cradle above the bar or below it. The bar is then shifted low enough to bore the bottom holes. It is found that all the necessary holes can be bored from two positions of the bar. The bar therefore has simply to be fixed twice; the alterations in position for boring holes in various directions are managed by shifting the clamp on the bar and turning the cradle on the clamp. Fig. 31 shows the stretcher bar fixed in a vertical position, which is sometimes convenient.

~~*In order to clear out the sludge from holes that are 'looking downwards," a jet of water, supplied from a hose attached toa half- inch gas-pipe leading from a cistern at a higher level, is made to play Into the holes during the process of boring.*~~

~~*For sinking shafts Mr Darlington has the drill fixed in a cylin-*~~

~~*drical case with a large external thread which works in a nut on the °*~~

~~*clamp. The drill is fed forwards by turning a hand-wheel attached to the case.*~~

~~*Rotating machine drills are also used in mines as well as those with percussive action. Stapff pointed out some years ago that, if a rock may be chipped off by power com- municated by a blow, it may also be chipped off by a similar amount of power communicated by pressure. Brandt's rotatory boring-machine consists of a hollow borer which has a steel crown with cutting edges screwed on. The tool is kept tight against the rock by the pressure of a column of water, and is at the same time made to rotate by two little water-pressure engines, whilst a stream of water passing down through the borer washes away the débris and keeps the cutting edges cool. In principle, therefore, this drill resembles the original diamond boring machine of De la Roche-Tolay and Perret, save that the crown is made of steel and not of diamonds. During the last few years it has been tried with success in railway tunnels and in mines. Jarolimek's drill! acts also by rotation, but the borer is fed forwards and pressed against the rock by a differential screw arrangement. The machine can be worked by hand, or by a little water-pressure or compressed-air engine or an electro-motor. In working certain minerals occurring in seams the undercutting may be performed by machines similar to those used in coal mines (see vol. vi. p. 68).*~~

~~*We now come to the application of the tools and machine drills to the purpose of breaking ground for driving levels and sinking shafts,*~~

~~*A level or drift is a more or less horizontal passage or tunnel, whilst a shaft is a pit either vertical or inclined. In driving a level by hand labour in hard ground, the first thing the miner has to do is to take out a cut, z.e., blast out*~~

~~a preliminary opening in the "end" or " forebreast." The position of this cut is determined by the joints, which the miner studies carefully so as to obtain the greatest advantage from these natural planes of division. Thus fig. 32 shows a case in which, owing to joints, it was dD~~

~~advisable to begin with a hole No. 1, and then bore and blast 2, 3, and 4 one after the other. The miner as a rule does not plan the position of any hole until the previous~~

~~1 Oesterreichische Zeitschrift fir Berg- und Wiittenwesen, 1881.~~

~~[FORMATION OF EXCAVATIONS.~~

~~one has done its work; in fact he regulates the position and depth of each hole by the particular circumstances of the case. Though a vein andits walls may be hard, there is occasionally a soft layer of clay (DD, DD, fig. 33) along one wall (dig, Cornwall; gouge, United States). The miner then works this away with the pick, and, having excavated a groove as deep as possible, he can now blast down the lode by side holes and so push the level forward.~~

~~In sinking a shaft a similar method of proceeding is Sinking observed. A little pit (sink) is blasted out in the most shalts. convenient part, and the excavation is widened to the full size by a succession of blasts, each hole being planned according to circumstances. This series of operations is repeated, and the shaft is thus gradually deepened.~~

~~Where boring machinery is employed, less attention, and sometimes no attention, is paid to natural joints, because when once the drill is in its place it is very little trouble to bore a few more holes, and the work can then be carried on according to a system which is certain of effecting the desired result.~~

~~A common method of procedure for hard ground is Driving shown in figs. 34 and 35. Four centre holes are bored levels about a foot apart — pies at first, but con- Zz verging till at a depth of 3 feet they are within 6 inches, or~~

~~less, of each other. Other holes are = then bored around ~~~ : them until the Hig BE. end is pierced by twenty or thirty holes in all. The four centre holes are then charged and fired simultaneously, either by electricity or by Bickford's instantaneous fuse, and the result is the removal of a large core of rock. The holes round the opening are then charged and fired, generally in volleys of several holes at a time, and the level is thus carried forward for a distance of 3 feet. If the ground is more favourable fewer holes are required, and they may be bored deeper,—in fact as much as 6 feet in some instances. Occasionally the four centre holes are directed so that they meet at the apex of an acute pyramid, and then, after all have been charged with blasting gelatin, only one of them receives a primer and cap ; the shock of the explosion of one charge fires the other three adjacent charges simultaneously. The preliminary opening is not necessarily made in the centre of a level, and sometimes it is blasted out in the bottom or one side.~~

~~In sinking shafts by boring machinery operations are conducted Sinking much in the same way as in levels, save of course that the holes shafts are directed downwards. Figs. 36 and 37 are a section and plan of with a shaft which is machine now being sunk at yz, Wills. the Foxdale mines arr LAL in the Isle of Man. ' oe About forty-five holes are bored in the bottom of the shaft before the drills are removed ; two of the holes A, B, and occasionally four, are bored only 4 feet deep, and are blasted with ordinary fuse. They serve simply to smash up and weaken the core; then the six holes nearest the centre, which are 8 feet deep, are blasted all together with Bickford's instantaneous fuse, and the result is the removal of a large core leaving a deep sink. The remaining holes are fired in volleys of four at a time in the ordinary way. In this manner the shaft, which is in hard granite, is being deepened atthe rate of 34 or 4 fathoms a month. Tonite is the explosive used.~~

~~'Sundry machines have been invented and used for driving levels without blasting. Some cut up the face into small chips which can~~

-

~~machine drills.~~

~~Fig. 87.~~

~~|| Modes of~~

~~| paying) miners.~~

~~PAYMENT OF MINERS. |~~

~~easily be removed, but they have not made their way at present into ordinary mining. The Bosseyeuse of MM. Dubois and Frangois acts on a different principle. It is a strong machine worked by compressed air. It first of all drills holes 4 inches in diameter by percussion ; a striking head is then substituted for the drill, and wedges, ou the principle of the plug and feathers, are inserted into the holes; and powerful blows with the striking head wedge off the rockin lumps. This machine is being used with success in Belgium for driving levels and crosscuts in fiery mines.~~

~~Some comparative experiments betweeu hand-labour, a percussive drill, and a rotatory drill have lately been made in one of the Freiberg mines,! and the results are of much interest and import- anee. The actual figures are as follows, the eost ineludiug, in the case of the machines, interest, depreciation, and cost of repairs, and cost of steam-power, supposing water-power not available :—~~

~~Hand- | Schram's Brandt's |~~

~~boring. | Drill. Drill. Distance driven per week (in metres) .....-| 0°95 4°5 5°0 A 120to | 77°4t Cost in marks per Metre Ariven.....seeeeeeeseeeses (123-5 tis 74°34 Wages realized by the miners, in marks, per 8) | 1°85 to | 3°48 to 3°76 PREBLE co eis eo 5: wanes Sessa nen seeaseus,s i 205 3°66~~

~~The advantages of machine work are very marked indeed both as regards rate and cost of driving, and wages earned by the men. Brandt's rotatory drill did its work cheaper and faster than Sehram's machine; but nothing is said in the original notice of the advantage of a machine driven by compressed air for ventilating workings such as advanced headings in which these drills are employed.~~

~~Brandt's machine was worked with water at a pressure of 834 atmospheres, of which 56°6 atmospheres were obtained by pressure pumps provided with~~

~~an accumulator, and 26°9 atmospheres by natural fall, owing to the working level being 277 metres below the pumps. The water was conveyed to the machine in iron pipes of 14 inches diameter inside. The diameter of the holes bated was 22 inches, and they could be bored in gneiss at the rate of 14 inches per minute. The stretcher bar on which the machine is carried is hollow, and has a piston which can be forced out by hydraulic pressure so as to fix the bar firmly. A similar bar is sometimes used with percussive drills."~~

~~As a method of breaking ground the ancient process of fire-setting requires to be mentioned. Before blasting was known it was largely employed, but its use is now confined to a few places on the Con- tinent where the rocks are exeeedingly hard and where wood is abundant and cheap. Piles of wood are heaped up against the face of the workings and set on fire. On returning to the working place two or three days afterwards, when the rocks have cooled a little, it is found that the ground has split and flaked off, and that much has been loosened which can be removed by the pick and wedge.~~

~~We finally come to water as an agent for removing rocks. Streams of water were formerly used in South Wales for working beds of clay ironstone at the outcrop. The water washed away the clay and shale and left the clean nodules of ironstone. The china clay of Cornwall is also worked by water: a stream of water is turned on to the soft mass, and the workman loosens the ground with a pick; the water carries off the particles of decomposed rock in suspension to regular settling pits. Water under pressure has rendered vast services to the miner in working auriferous alluvia. The system is described and figured at p. 746 of vol. x., so it is unnecessary here to enter into details. In the special case of salt-mines recourse may be had to the solvent aetion of water, directed by suitable jets, for making excavations.~~

~~5. Principles of Employment of Mining Labour.—As a large proportion of the expenditure in mining is for actual manual labour, it is very important that means should be taken to prevent any waste in this department. Three principles are in vogue—payment by time, by work done either measured or weighed, and by the value of the ore extracted.~~

~~The overseers, called captains in many metal mines, are naturally paid by the month, and where strict supervision can be exercised, such as is~~

~~possible at the surface, on the dressing-floors for instance, the same principle may be adopted; but when men are working underground, and often in small gangs of only two or three persons at some distance apart, piecework of some kind is more economical and satisfactory in every way.~~

~~In driving levels and sinking shafts it is usual for the~~

~~1 Jahrbuch fiir das Berg- und Hiittenwesen im Konigreiche Sachsen auf das Jahr 1882, p. 18, and abstraet in Proc, Inst. Civ, Eng., vol. lxix., 1881-82, part iii. p. 51.~~

- ~~Annales des Mines, ser, 8, ii., pl. 1, fig. 6, 1882.~~

~~men to work at a certain price per running yard or fathom. The agents have to see that the excavation, whether shaft or level, is maintained of the full dimensions agreed upon, and preserved in the proper direction. At the end of a certain time, generally a month, the work is measured by the agent. From the gross amount obtained by multiply- ing the price by the number of fathoms driven or sunk it is necessary to deduct the cost of the materials supplied to the men by the mining company, such as explosives, steel, candles, &c., and the remainder is divided among the persons who took the contract. When the useful mineral is being obtained the men may be paid at so much per cubic yard or fathom excavated, or at so much per ton of mineral extracted; the overseer of course has to see, in this latter case, that worthless rock is not sent to the surface. Payment by the number of inches bored is a method in use in some countries, where the men are not experienced or enterprising enough to undertake the work in any other way. A foreman points out to the men the position and direction in which the holes must be bored, measures them when completed, and subsequently charges and fires them.~~

~~The third method is that which is known as the tribute system. The miner working on tribute is allowed to speculate upon the value of the ore in a certain working area assigned to him and called his pitch. He gives the~~

~~mining company all the ore he extracts at a certain pro- portion of its value, after he has paid all the cost of break- ing it, hoisting it to the surface, and dressing it. Thus, supposing he takes a pitch at 5s. in the £, and produces marketable copper ore of the value of £50, his share will be 50× 5s.= £12, 10s., less the cost of the materials he has been supplied with, and all expenses for winding, dressing, sampling, &c.~~

~~6. Means of Securing Excavations by Timber, Iron, and Timber- Masonry.—The following kinds of timber are those most !8-~~

~~frequently employed for securing excavations underground : oak, larch, pitch pine, spruce fir, and acacia. In many mines the timber is attacked by dry rot, which gradually renders it useless, and when the timber has often to be. renewed the expense may be very considerable. Various methods of preventing dry rot have been tried with more or less success, such as letting water trickle over the timber in the mine or treating it with preservative solutions beforehand. Brine, creosote, and solutions of chloride of zinc, sulphate of zinc, sulphate of copper, and sulphate of iron increase the duration of timber. It was found by experiments carried on at Commentry during a long series of years that one of the best plans was to soak the timber for twenty-four hours in a strong solution of sulphate of iron. The total cost was only 4d. per yard of prop, whilst the timber lasted eleven times as long as when this simple treatment was omitted.~~

~~Timber is used in various forms—either whole and merely sawn into lengths, or squared up, or sawn in half, or sawn into planks of various thicknesses. tes~~

~~Where the roof of a bed is weak it may be kept up by simple props; but in some coal- mines and clay-minesa better > support is obtained by logs (chocks) laid two by two crosswise (fig. 38).~~

~~Though a level is an ex- cavation of a very simple nature, the methods of tim- bering it vary considerably, = beeause the parts requiring support may either be the : roof alone, or the roof and one or two sides, or the roof, sides, bottom.~~

If the roof only is weak, as is the case with a soft lode between two hard walls, a cap with a few boards resting on it (fig. 39) is sufficient to prevent falls. If one side is weak the cap must be

XVI. — 57

and

450 MINING

supported by a side prop or leg (fig. 40), and very often by two logs. The forms of joint between the cap and leg are numerous

[s ECURING EXCAVATIONS.

Figs. 48 and 49 show methods of sccuring a drift by arches when a lode has been removed.

Tron supports.

Masonry.

Qe SF EA ee ey | 3 = ss Pe = ee Fig. 39. Fig. 40. a. uf ac (fig. 41), depending to a great extent upon the nature of the pres- ek =

sure, whether coming upon the top or sides. the top of the leg is sometimes hollowed as shown in fig. 42 A, but occasionally the joint is flat and | a thick nail, or nog, is put in (fig. 42 B)

B e ae

wal

Fig. 41. Fig. 42.

to prevent the effects of side pressure, or, better, a piece of thick Where the floor of a level

plank is nailed under the cap (fig. 43). is soft and weak, a sole-piece or stil be- comes necessary, and, if the sides or roof are likely to fall in, a lining of poles or planks is used (fig. 43). In some very heavy ground in the Com- ¢ stock lode a_ special system of timbering is adopted (fig. 44).

(YEASTS ER Ay

y

Ey Ey

Fig. 43.

If the ground is loose, so that the roof or sides, or both, will run in unless immediately supported, the method of working called It consists in supporting the weak

spilling or poling is pursued. parts by boards or poles kept in advance of the last frame set up. The poles or boards (Jaths) are driven forward by blows from a sledge, and the ground is then worked away with the pick; as soon as a sufficient advance has been made a new frame is set up to support the ends of the poles or boards and the process is re- peated (figs. 45 and ; 46). In running ground it is necessary to have the laths fitting closely together, and the working face also must be supported by breast-boards kept in place by little struts resting against the frame. These are removed and advanced one by one after the laths in the roof and side have been driven beyond them.

On account of the high price of' timber, iron is sometimes em- ployed in its place. One method in use in the Harz consists in bending a rail into the form shown in fig. 47 and making it support other rails laid longi- tudinally, against which flattish stones are placed; the vacant spaces are then filled with rubbish.

Masonry has long been used for supporting the sides of mining excavations. The materials necessary are stone, ordinary bricks, or slag-bricks, and they may be built up alone (dry Fic. 47 walling) or with the aid of oe mortar or hydraulic cement. The bottom of a level is occasionally lined with conerete

~~*to carry a large stream of water, which other- wise might run into lower workings through cracks and crevices. Dry walling is not uncommon, and it may be combined with the use of timber (or iron) as shown in fig. 69, in which a level is maintained between two walls keeping back a mass of rubbish.*~~

~~*yal |*~~

~~*shy Uf is 3*~~

~~*4)*~~

~~*oe) wa te (| oes \ J A*~~

~~*With round timber A*~~

~~*The timbering required for shafts varies according to the nature Timber.*~~

~~*¥ J*~~

~~*SY*~~

~~*of the ground and the size of the excavation. of planks set on their edges (fig. 50) suffices corner pieces being nailed to keep the successive frames together. In some of the salt-mines of Cheshire the shafts are lined with 4-inch planks united by mortice and tenon joints.*~~

~~*The usual method of securing shafts is by sets or frames. Each set consists of four pieces, Fig. 50. two longer ones called wall-plates and two shorter ones called end- pieces. They are joined by simply halving the timber as shown in*~~

~~*A mere lining for small shafts,*~~

~~*Z Fig. 51. Fig. 52. fig. 51. A more complicated joint (fig. 52) is often preferred. The separate frames are kept apart by corner pieces (studdles, Cornwall ; jogs, Flintshire), and loose ground is prevented from falling in by boards or poles outside the frames,*~~

~~*As shafts are frequently used for the several purposes of pumping, hoisting, and affording means of ingress and egress by ladders, it becomes necessary in such cases to divide them into compartments. Pieces of timber parallel to the end-pieces (buntons or dividings) are fixed across the shaft, and serve to stay the wall-plates and carry the guides as well as to support planks (easing boards) which are nailed to them so as to form a continuous partition or brattice. The magnificent timbering of some of the shafts on the*~~

~~*Comstock lode is described by Mr James D. Hague as follows :'— 'The timbering consists of framed sets or cribs of square timber, placed horizontally, 4 feet apart, and separated by uprights or posts introduced between them. Cross-timbers for the partitions between compartments form a part of every set.*~~

~~*the*~~

~~*wz*~~

~~*The whole is covered*~~

~~*HOISTING COMPARTMENT.*~~

~~*HOISTING COMPARTMENT.*~~

~~*HOISTING COMPARTMENT,*~~

~~*Fig. 54. on the outside by a lagging of 3-inch plank placed vertically." Figs. 53, 54, and 55, copied from Mr Hague's plates, illustrate this method*~~

~~*. 1 United States Geological Exploration of the Fortieth Parallel, vol. iii., 'Mining Industry," p. 103.*~~

~~*Fig. 55.*~~

~~*Masonry for shafts.*~~

~~*Exploi- tation,*~~

~~*EXPLOITATION. |*~~

~~*of timbering. Fig. 538 is a plan of the shaft: "S, S are the lougi- tudinal or sill-timbers,.T, T the transverse end-timbers, P partitiou- timbers, 7 guide-rods between which the cage moves, g gains cut in the sill-timbers, to receive the ends of the posts. The sheathing or lagging is seen enclosing the whole frame." Fig. 54 is a trans- verse section through the partition P of fig. 53, " between the pumping compartment and the adjoining hoisting compartment, looking towards the latter. In this figure, G, G are the posts, S the sill-timbers, P the partition-timbers, the ends of which are framed with short tenons that are received in gains cut in the sill- timbers and the ends of the posts, r guide-rod, 7 lagging or sheathing." Fig. 55 is an end view of the frame shown in fig. 53. "The single picce T forms the end, while the double pieces P forming the partitions are seen beyond." "The outer timbers of each set, that is, the two sides aud ends of the main frame, are 14 inches square; the posts, ten in number, four at the corners and two at each end of the three partitions, are of the same size. The dividing timbers, forming the partitions, are 12 inches square,"*~~

~~*When ground is loose or running, recourse must be had to a spilling process like that described for levels. Strong balks of timber are fixed at the surface or in solid ground, and then the first frame is hung from these bearers, and each successive frame from the one above it. Iron bars with cotters may be used for suspend- ing the sets; but on the Comstock lode each bolt is made in two parts with a tightening screw in the middle, and the sets can thus be kept very firmly together. The laths arc driven in advance, in the manner explained in the case of levels, and a new frame is put in as soon as the excavation has been sufficiently deepened within the protecting sheath of boards. In very unstable ground it may be necessary to put in the frames touching each other, so that the shaft becomes encased in a solid box of timber, occasionally 14 inches thick.*~~

~~*Like levels, shafts may be lined with masonry or brickwork, and these have the advautage of being far more permanent than timber, and of requiring fewer repairs. This kind of shaft-lining is especially desirable in the loose ground near the surface; because, if the working is discontinued temporarily, the shaft still remains secure aud available for use at any future time, whereas if timber is put in it often decays, the top of the shaft collapses, and much ex- peuse is incurred in the process of reopening it.*~~

~~The section of the shafts that are walled is generally circular as affording the best resistance to pressure; but elliptical walling is also met with. Another shape is like a rectangle, save that the sides, instead of being straight, form curves of large radius. The walling may be dry or with mortar, according to circumstances.~~

~~the shaft, and on this is placed a crib or curb AB (fig. 56)! con- sisting of segments of timber which form qaEgE ES a ring. This serves for a foundation for Vee the brickwork, which is built up to the =¥ surface; the temporary timbering is re- © moved, and the space filled up with earth % or concrete. Sinking is then resumed ‘ below the curb, and for a certain distance < J" jj of a smaller diameter, so as to leave a “UH bracket, or ledge, to support the first curb. ~· On arriving, after a certain depth of sink- owing to the nature of the ground, it ~· is impossible at first to find a firm seat SS SS for the curbs, it becomes necessary to hang Fig. 56. them by iron bolts from a strong bearing frame at the surface. When shafts pass through very watery strata, it is most desirable to stop all influx into the mine for the purpose of saving the heavy expense of pumping. The manner in which this is effected by a watertight lining, known as tubbing, is described in the article COAL, vol. vi. p. 62, where will also be found an account of Triger’s plan of sinking shafts with compressed air, and the very successful method of boring shafts through water-bearing ground invented by Messrs Kind & Chaudron.~~

~~1. Exploitation, or Working Away of Veins, Beds, and Masses.—We have described how shafts are sunk and levels~~

~~driven, and we now come to the processes employed in removing the mineral.~~

~~Taam~~

~~1 J. Callon, Lectures on Mining, vol. i., Atlas, plate xxviii.~~

~~*The deposit must first of all be reached by a shaft, or, where the contour of the country permits it, by a level. In the case of a vein an exploratory shaft is often sunk on the course of the lode for 20 or 30 fathoms, and, if the indications found in a level driven out from this shaft warrant further prosecution of the mine, a first working shaft is sunk to intersect the lode at a depth of 100. fathoms or more from gouts. the surface. Crosscuts are then driven out at intervals of 10,15, or 20 ~· fathoms to reach the lode, ~· \ as shown in fig. 57, which represents a section at — right angles to the line of strike. Sometimes the main shafts are carried (~· down all the way along , \~* the dip of the deposit, *~~

~~*NORTH.*~~

~~*Bsnaccow ADIT*~~

~~*though perpendicular ~~· y shafts have the advan- < ni tages of quicker and 'SY a cheaper winding and 7*~~

~~*cheaper pumping, to say Fig. 57.*~~

~~*nothing of the possibility of utilizing the cages for the rapid descent and ascent of the miners. If an inclined shaft appears to be advisable, great care should be taken to sink it in a straight line. In either case levels are driven out along the strike of the lode as shown in the longitudinal section fig. 58, in the hopes of meeting with valuable ore-*~~

~~*Lope*~~

~~*Swart on m > w "I*~~

~~'~~

~~*Suattow_Aoir*~~

~~*Shart on UNOERLE OF Looe*~~

~~*Fig. 58. bodies such as are represented by the stippled portions of*~~

~~*the figure. For the purpose of affording ventilation, and still further exploring the ground and working it, inter- mediate shafts, called winzes (Cornwall) or swmps (North Wales), are sunk in the lode.*~~

~~*The actual mode of removing the lode itself depends a good deal upon circumstances, viz., its width, the nature of its contents, and the walls that enclose it; but the methods of working may generally be brought under one of two heads, viz., underhand stoping or overhand stoping. The word stope is equivalent to step, and the term stoping means working away any deposit in a series of steps. Underhand or bottom stopes are workings arranged like the steps of a staircase seen from above, whilst overhand or back stopes are like similar steps a from underneath. Both methods have their advantages anc disadvantages, and both are largely MULL used.*~~

~~*We will first take underhand stop- ing, as this is the older method. In the old days the miner began in the floor of the level (fig. 59), and sank down a few feet, removing the part 1; he followed with 2, 3, 4, &c.,*~~

~~*hand stoping.*~~

~~*Fig. 59. until the excavation finally presented the appearance shown in*~~

~~*fig. 60. Any valueless rock or mineral was deposited upon plat- forms of timber (stud/s), and the ore was drawn up into the level*~~

~~*452*~~

~~*by a windlass. ore and water have to be drawn up some distance by hand labour ; much timberis required, yyy py)*~~

~~*for the stulls if there YY yy MU) is a large quantity of worthless stuff in the vein, or if the sides are 7 weak. The advantages are that ore can be worked away as soon as the level is driven, that the men are always bor- ing downwards, and, lastly, that the ore can be carefully picked after it is broken, particles being lost.*~~

~~*A more economical method of working by underhand stopes, and one largely employed in Cornwall at the present day, consists in reserving any*~~

~~attack upon : the ore-ground until a lower level has been driven. An intermediate shaft (winze) between the two levels is then made, either by sinking froin the upper level or rising from the lower one. The work of stoping is com- menced at the two upper ends of the winze, and the lode is removed in a suc-~~

~~4,~~

~~without fear of any valuable ||~~

~~ae as Fig. 61. cession of steps, the workings assuming the appearance exhibited in~~

~~#~~

~~fig. 61. The steps are generally made steep, so that the ore may readily roll into the winze, and so that the bore-holes may do better execution; but these steep stopes are dangerous if a man happens to slip and fall. The huge open chasms left by the removal of a large lode in this way are also a source of danger ; for there is always a risk of falls of rock, and from places which cannot easily be examined. Figs. 62 and 63, kindly supplied by Captain Josiah Thomas,' explain the general arrangement of the workings of the largest tin mine in Cornwall. The lode after producing copper ores to a considerable depth changed its character and became rich in tin. The workings for tin ore are confined almost entirely to the~~

~~WEST~~

~~=~~

~~MINING~~

~~granite. The section fig. 62 shows that the main shaft of the mine is at first vertical and then carried down on the dip of the lode.~~

~~[EXPLOITATION.~~

~~SOUTH wa NORTH~~

~~*WX AZZ ZEN*~~

~~*< Scale.*~~

~~*Cha Wee LP oat MOTD*~~

~~*Fathoms 100 50 0 100 Fathoms. Fic. 62.—Transverse Section, Dolcoath Mine, Cornwall.*~~

~~*The process of overhand stoping is precisely the reverse of that*~~

~~*EAST*~~

~~*Nhe*~~

~~*— _2 Sa ee ee nee SS = Ca SS Ee Zee Le*~~

~~*Ce)*~~

~~*°o {See oe eee ee ae ¢j es os ae =*~~

~~*(26 4 Sal aes*~~

~~*CROSS COURSE*~~

~~*Es ILS*~~

~~*meme ef ee Gb ne ee pe ee ee ewe nee SS SS R ASSS EG. BSS S GRANITE BSI WK KCCI a SS S IN LIX W)\W TSS KW*~~

~~*1298 |*~~

~~*pepe ess |*~~

~~*GREAT*~~

~~*IWS*~~

~~*IW WT SS ACY "AGS*~~

~~SSN~~

~~~ SRG ou. Fa~~

~~Ed AW K.KKC AKFCF~~

~~PW Pa~~

~~CoPPER WORKINGS Copper ano Tin mixeo — Eeesed Tin) WORKINGS NGG "pl ed oat Mis We a Fathoms 100 50 0 100~~

~~Scale.~~

~~200~~

~~300 400 Fathoms.~~

~~Fre. 63.—Longitudinal Section, Main Lode, Dolcoath Mine, Cornwall.~~

~~Over- which has been just described ; the work is commenced from a rise~~

~~hand 1 See Report of Miners' Association of Devon and Corntcail for 1882, and R. J. stoping. Freecheville, Trans. Roy. Geol. Soc, Cornwall, vol. x. part v.~~

~~(fig. 64 A), or better from the two bottom ends of a winze (fig. 64 B). As soon as the men have excavated a sufficient height of the roof of the level, they put in strong pieces of timber from wall to wall, and~~

~~Working When very wide lodes~~

~~wide lodes.~~

~~Van mine.~~

~~EXPLOITATION. |~~

~~In the midst of the rubbish chimney-like openings~~
~~~

~~Ae~~

~~WELLL Fig. 64.~~

~~closed at the bottom with shoots provided with doors. The ore is thrown into these passes, which are tapped when necessary; the ore falls into the tram-waggon placed ready to receive it.~~

~~Fig. 65 gives a transverse section showing the rubbish resting on the stull. This is what may be called the typical method of stop- ing, when the lode affords rubbish enough for the men to stand on and to keep them close to the rock they are attacking. Very often such is not the case, and the whole of the lode has to be sent to the surface for treatment. If the walls are firm, the lode is sometimes stoped away, a stull putin, and a sufficient heap of broken ore is left upon the stull to give the men good standing ground ; the excess is thrown over the ends of the stull, or the great heap is tapped by cutting a hole in the . icc vexing, and al- \ a Ss ORAS BS lowing a quantity to — . run down into the level.~~

~~Another method con- sists in putting in temporary stages upon Bee which the men stand to SE awe do their work, whilst the excavation is left as = N ae an open space (fig. 66). Fig. 66.~~

~~This mode of working is incompatible with weak walls. Ifa lode does not afford rubbish enough for completely filling up the exca- vated space, or if it is too narrow £~~

~~for men to do their work comfort- ably, one of the walls may be eut = into and blasted down (fig. 67), so that the men always stand upon a firm bed of rubbish while at work, and there is no fear of a collapse of the mine. In certain special 2 cases rubbish is sent down from the surface to fill up the excavations.~~

~~The advantages of overhand < stoping are—that the miner is – assisted by gravity in his work, that no ore or rock has to be drawn up by hand labour, and that less timber is required. On the other = hand, the miner is always menaeed by falls, but as he is elose by he can constantly test the solidity of the roof and sides by sounding them with his sledge ; there is the further~~

~~disadvantage that particles of ore may be lost in the rubbish, but this loss is often prevented by laying down boards or sheets of = iron while the lode is being broken down.~~

~~NS~~

~~come to be worked, recourse is often had to special methods. The great lode at the famous Van mine, in Montgomeryshire, is some- times 40 feet in width, and the hanging wall is weak. The lode is stoped away overhand, and the cavities packed with rubbish, part of which is derived from the lode itself, whilst the greater portion is supplied from a special quarry at the surface. Fig. 68! explains the details of the case. A is the original cross-~~

~~MINING~~

~~cover these eross-pieces (stempels, stull-pieces) with boards or poles, and throw down the rubbish upon the platform (stwll, bunning) thus formed. (mills, passes) are reserved, lined with boards or dry-walling, and~~

~~WEE)~~

~~; 7~~

~~453~~

~~eut (not in the line of section) by which the lode was reached B is the flucan, C the bastard lode, generally worthless, E. the main lode, H permanent levels, and K ore-pass reserved amidst the rubbish (deads) D, I pass down which rubbish is shot, N erosscut connect- ing the level H with P the permanent level in the country.~~

~~If the lode is not firm enough to allow of the stopes being carried for its full width, the crosscut method is adopted ; the workings in this case, instead of proceeding along the strike, are carried across the deposit from one wall to another.~~

~~The lode is removed in successive horizontal slices A,B, C,D,E, and for each slice a level (L, fig. 69) is driven, either in the lode,~~

~~*I a a a a w w > = wu – a 3 u z 4 is z 4 c oO*~~

~~*Fig. 70.*~~

~~*or partly or entirely in the country; from this level crosscuts are put out 6 or 8 feet wide, as shown in the plan (fig. 70). These are regularly timbered according to the necessities of the case, and, when No. 1 is completed, No. 2 is begun, and the rubbish from No. 2 thrown into the empty space of No. 1 crosscut. If the quantity is insufficient, deads are brought in from the surface or from exploratory workings in worthless rock in the neighbourhood. Sometimes the crosscuts are not driven side by side, but 1 and 5 would be driven first, leaving 2, 3, and 4 as a solid pillar; then 3 would be worked away, and finally 2 and 4 between the timber and rubbish on each side. The greater part of the timber can be re- covered when the next slice above is taken off, as the props are put in with the small ends downwards, and can be drawn up with levers. M (fig. 69) is a level reserved in the deads for traffic and ventilation. This method of working is applicable not only to lodes but also to irregular masses.*~~

~~*In working away the soft " bonanzas" or ore-bodies of the great Comstock Comstock lode, which are from 10 to 80 or even 40 or 50 feet wide, lode.*~~

~~*and which are enclosed in very un- stable ground, a special method of timbering is employed (figs. 71 and 72).2 '"Iteonsists in framing timbers together in rectangular sets, each set being eomposed of a square base placed horizontally, formed of four timbers, sills, and eross-pieces, 4 to 6 feet long, framed 'together, sur- mounted by four posts 6 to 7 feet high, at each corner, and capped by | a frame-work, similar to that of the base. These cap-pieces, forming the top of any set, are at the same time the sills or base of the next set above, the posts, as the sets rise one above the other in the stope, being gene- rally placed in position directly over . those below." "The timbers are ; usually of 12-inch stuff square-hewn ; or sawn." Each post has a tenon 9 inches long at the upper end, and a tenon of 2 inches at the lower end, which fit into mortices in the cap and sill respeetively ; and "the sills and eaps have short tenons on each end and shoulders cnt to receive the ends of the post and the horizontal cross-*~~

~~pieces." The walls of the excavation are sus- tained by a lagging of 3-inch or 4-inch plank. The whole width of the ore-body is stoped away at once, = its en supplied by timbering, an Snails the Ror space is filled | IL | | IIU with waste rock derived from dead work in the mine or from special excavations, — under- a " ground quarries in fact,— in barren ground. The stoping 1s earried on overhand, starting from an intermediate shaft or winze, and fig. 73 will explain how the different frames are built up one above the other. k p : Another method of working a' wide lode is to attack it in slices~~

~~'C. Le Neve Foster, "Notes on the Van Mine," Trans. Roy. Geol. Soc. Corn- wall, vol. x. p. 41.~~

~~< BK. coe ia es Vy a / s we are 1 bee : F 5 ¥ 4 ' ey : Yo \ S \S : te Z Ze , b— SE Z : 5 \\ Zednes) 7 \ NSS 5 ws .~~

~~2 James D. Hague, United Staies Geological Exploraiton of the Fortieth Parallel, yol. iii. " Mining Industry," p. 112.~~

~~Working We now come to beds or scams. , of beds, mode of working the most important beds —~~

~~Cleve- land ironstone work- ings.~~

~~Gypsum quarries.~~

~~Slate quarries.~~

~~454~~

~~parallel to the dip, working away each slice separately as if it were a lode of ordinary dimensions, and filling up with rubbish (fig. 74).~~

~~The~~

~~that occur in the earth's crust, viz., coal Z seams, has already been described in the 2 article CoaL (vol. vi. p. 64 sq.), and ; details have been given concerning the Z removal of the mineral by pillar working <7 and long-wall working. Both these 2 methods are applicable in the case of~~

~~seams of other minerals. Such for ~· instance are the beds of fire-clay and ~·· © clay-ironstone which are wrought by both the processes just mentioned, and often in connexion with coal.~~

~~Next in importance to coal is ironstone, and a brief account of the workings in the Cleveland district will explain the manner il which more than one-third of the iron ore raised in the British Isles is obtained by mining. It resembles the "bord and pillar" system used for working coal in Durham.~~

~~The Cleveland ore occurs in the form of a bed from 6 to 16 feet thick in the Middle Lias, lying pretty level. A mainway (fig. 75) is driven about 12 feet wide for a considerable distance, and at right angles to it bords are driven 5 yards wide fora length of 30 yards, and then at right angles a wall 7 or 8 feet wide and 20 yards long. By driv- ages of this kind the bed is cut up into pillars or blocks 30 yards long by 20 yards wide. The pillars are subsequently removed in the following way.~~

~~Fig. 76 represents in section and plan the chambers and pillars of the underground gypsum quarries ee which supply the well-known plaster of Paris to all the world! The principal bed is from 50 to 60 feet in thickness; pillars are left 10 feet square at the base, and the stadls between them are 16 feet wide. The workings are slightly arched, and are = = not carried up to the roof, for the —=== purpose of better maintaining the security of the chambers, because~~

~~mes ee ey~~

~~heavy damages would have to be \ eee — "caved in" and ren- \ dered the surface useless. A simi- \ lar layer left for the floor prevents U creep (see CoAL, vol. vi. p. 64), and Fig. 76.~~

~~enables the underground roads to be kept in good repair. Underground slate quarries afford examples of very various methods of removing thick beds of mineral of comparatively little intrinsic value. At Angers in France, where the beds dip at a high angle, the underground workings are carried on like an open quarry~~

~~*Fig. 79. —A,A, pillars of slate; B, B, rubbish ; C, C, slate cham- bers. Scaleggyz-*~~

~~*Fig. 77.*~~

~~*under a strong roof of slate ; the floor is continually being worked*~~

~~*Fig. 78.*~~

~~*away in steps, and an immense open chamber is left. In the*~~

~~*1Callon, Lectures on Mining, vol. ii. plate xi.*~~

~~*MINING*~~

~~*[EXPLOITATION.*~~

~~*Festiniog district in North Wales the principal bed, or vein as it is called, is more than 100 feet thick in places, and the method of working consists in making alternate pillars and chambers each 30 feet to 50 feet wide along the strike (cross-section and plan, figs. 77 and 78). The pillars follow lines of natural cross-rending PP', which commonly make an angle of 25° to 35° with the direction of the dip. The excavations are arranged in regular lines, and form continuous chambers extending very often from the surface to the very lowest workings. A,B,C, D are the original working levels. The slate of the supporting pillars is entirely lost, as these cannot be removed with safety. This method of working requires a strong roof. In the Ardennes, on the contrary, the pillars are carried along indefinitely along the strike (fig. 79, cross-section). The slate in each longi- tudinal chamber is removed in slices parallel to the bedding, and the men stand upon the rubbish, which finally fills up the chambers*~~

~~*(MARLSTONE-.. — WITH*~~

~~*SSS ees &OCK-SALT ——*~~

~~*Fig. 80. Fig. 81.*~~

~~*are advanced by making in the upper part an excavation 5 feet 9 inches high, called the roofing (a, fig. 81); and then the lower two-thirds of the part worked are removed by blasting slanting holes. Many of the old salt mines have collapsed from weakness of the roof or insufficiency of the pillars, and have become inundated; the brine is then extracted by pumping and evaporated for salt.*~~

~~*In some countries, especially when the beds of salt are impure or much mixed with clay or shale, the formation of brine is conducted regularly by making a network of drivages within a rectangular, elliptical, or circular area in thick beds of saliferous marl, and then introducing fresh water by pipes, so as to form underground ponds which gradually dissolve the roof and sides. The brine is drawn off and either pumped up or conveyed by adits to the surface.*~~

~~*A few words remain to be said about open workings. Some minerals are always obtained in this way; others are worked open before regular underground mining begins; and, thirdly, it often happens that underground and surface work are both carried on simultaneously on the same deposit. Among deposits worked open- cast are peat, numerous kinds of stone, iron ore, cupreous pyrites, lead ore, gold- and tin-bearing alluvia, and diamantiferous rock.*~~

~~*Owing to its soft, spongy, and fibrous texture, and the fact of its often lying below the water-level, peat has to be worked in a special manner. Trenches are dug about a foot deep with a sharp spade, which cuts out sods of convenient size for drying and burning. When one layer has been removed in this way, another is taken off, and so on. If water is reached the working can still be pursued by using the long spade (grand louchet, France) with a handle of 16 or 20 feet. It cuts ont a sod 8 or 4 feet long at each thrust.*~~

~~*When a deposit is more or less solid the workings are frequently arranged in steps, the height and breadth of each depending upon the firmness of the rock.*~~

~~*In many cases the first work consists in removing worthless rock at the surface (overburden), and where the underlying deposit is thick or very valuable it will pay to remove a very great thickness of overburden, on*~~

~~*account of the advantages of working a deposit open. These advantages are — entire removal of the deposit without loss in pillars, no expense for timbering or for packing with rubbish or for ventilating or lighting the workings, better ventilation, easier supervision, longer working hours, less danger.*~~

~~*As an example of a large open working may be mentioned the great Penrhyn slate quarry near Ban- gor, employing about 3000 hands, and worked by a succession of terraces on an average 60 feet high by 30 feet wide (fig. 82). Reference has already been made to the thick lead-bearing sandstone of Mechernich, which is in part worked as an open quarry. Mokta-el- Hadid, near Bona in Algeria, and the Rio Tinto mines in Spain, afford instances of extensive combined open and mnder- ground workings for iron ore and cupriferous pyrites respectively.*~~

~~*Local laws regulating the size of the working areas, or claims,*~~

~~*? Joseph Dickinson, " Report on the Salt Districts," Reports of the Inspectors of Mines for the year 1881, p. 66.*~~

~~*Diamond mines.*~~

~~*Evils at- tending hy- draulic mining.*~~

~~*Under- ground trans- port.*~~

~~*Carriage*~~

~~*by workers.*~~

~~*Sledges.*~~

~~*'| Wheel carriages.*~~

~~*CARRIAGE. |*~~

~~*owned by separate individuals or companies, considerably affect the methods of working. This is especially the case with the diamond deposits of South Africa. The diamantiferous rock at the cclebrated Kimberley mine*~~

~~*(formerly called Colesberg Kopje) occurs in the shape of an elliptical upright mass, the greatest length being about 330 yards and the greatest breadth about 200 yards. The super- ficial area is about 9 acres; the mass extendsdownwards within almost perpendicular walls of shale, and is worked in places to a depth of about 400 feet. The claims are only 31 feet square, and are more than four hundred in number, and these have in some instances been subdivided into portions as small as the sixteenth of a claim; but, as at the present time one company may own very many claims, the number of individual holdings is less numerous than formerly when the limit was two claims. The working is carried on vertically downwards, and, as the claims are not all worked at the same rate, those that progress most rapidly are surrounded by perpendicular walls of neighbouring claims. The shale, or reef, enclosing the deposit is constantly falling into the huge open pit, and has to be cut away to a slope, the expense of this work being charged to the claim-holders generally by the mining board. The diamanti- ferous rock is extracted by innumerable wire-rope inclines.*~~

~~*We have already referred to the method of working gold-bearing alluvia by the hydraulic process, which has rendered such services in the United States (GOLD, vol. x. p. 746). At the same time one must not be blind to the evils of this method of working, which have at last necessitated legislative interference. Some idea of the extent of the mischievous results of hydraulic mining will be gathered from the statement that one working alone, the Gold Run Ditch and Mining Company, for the last eight years has been discharging 4000 to 5000 cubic yards of sand, gravel, and boulders daily, for a period of five months each year, into a tributary of the Sacramento. Asa natural consequence deposits are formed lower down the river, ob- structing the navigable channels, rendering overflows more frequent and destructive, and causing valuable land to be destroyed by de- posits ofsand. The superior court of Sacramento county, California, has recently decided that the hydraulic mining companies must build dams to impound the coarse and heavy débris, or take other efficacious means to prevent their being washed down the rivers.*~~

~~*8. Carriage or Transport of Minerals along the Under- ground Roads.—After the mineral has been broken down in a deposit it is necessary to pick out any barren rock and then convey to the surface all that is of value.*~~

~~*The simplest and oldest method of transport along underground roads is carriage on the back, and this method may still be seen at the present day even in countries where the art of mining is generally highly advanced. Thus, for instance, in the little slate mines near Cochem on the Moselle men and lads carry up all the blocks of slate upon their backs, walking upon steps cut in the rock ; they come up with their hands upon the ground bent almost double under the weight of the block, which rests upon a thick pad. Again, the blocks of slate are still carried on the back from the actual working place to the nearest tram-road, in the slate mines of the Ardennes. In the Sicilian sulphur mines the same method is common, and it is found also in parts of Spain and China, where baskets are used, whilst bags are employed in Mexico and also in Japan. Even in England the system still survives in the Forest of Dean, where boys carry iron ore in wooden trays from the very irregular ore-producing cavities either to the surface or to the nearest shaft.*~~

~~*Sledges, or sleds, enable greater loads to be transported ; but they are not available unless the conveyance is along roads sloping downwards. They have been largely employed in coal mines, and are still resorted to in some collieries for conveying the coal from the working place to the nearest tram-road.*~~

~~*We next come to wheeled carriages. The simplest is the wheelbarrow. The barrow used in Cornwall at the present day is not unlike that figured more than three centuries ago by Agricola. The navvy's barrow is more advantageous, but it requires a wider and higher level. The barrow runs upon the natural floor of the level, upon boards, or upon thin strips of iron. Carts drawn by horses may be used in large underground quarries. Excepting in special cases it is advisable to replace barrows by waggons running upon rails. The oldest form is the German Hund.*~~

~~*It consists of a rectangular wooden body, with four wheels, resting upon two boards as rails, and it is kept on the track by a pin which runs between the boards.*~~

~~*Cast-iron tram-plates were introduced in the last century, and were finally succeeded by iron rails, which are now in general use, though steel threatens to displace iron in this as in other departments of mining. Various forms of rail are employed. The simplest is a bar of iron set on its edge in transverse sleepers, or flat iron nailed to longitudinal sleepers. Small T-headed and bridge rails are not uncommon. In the Harz the rails sometimes lie on stone sleepers ; a hole is bored in the stone, plugged with wood, and the rail is nailed on. The gauge varies from 14 inches to 3 feet or more ; 20 inches to 22 inches is a common gauge in metal mines. Arrangements of course have to be made for passing from one line to another by points; but the transference is frequently best effected by putting down flat plates of cast iron, upon the smooth surface of which the waggons can be handled with ease and turned in any direc- tion ; raised ledges guide the wheels into any particular track.*~~

~~*The form and size of the waggons running upon the rails necessarily vary according to the size of the underground roads and the manner in which the mineral is raised in the shaft. In some mines the practice exists of loading the mineral in the level into an iron bucket (kibble) standing upon a trolley, which is merely a small platform upon wheels. This trolley is pushed (¢rammed) to the shaft; the full kibble is hooked on to the winding-rope and drawn up, whilst an empty kibble is placed upon the trolley and trammed back along the level, where it is again loaded from a shoot (mel, pass) or by the shovel. The usual plan, however, is to have a waggon, which is tipped on coming to an enlargement of the shaft (plat, lodge) where the level joins it. These waggons may be made of wood or sheet- iron, and of late years sheet-steel for the body and cast- steel for the wheels have been coming into favour.*~~

~~*The most modern system in metal mines is to imitate collieries, and use waggons which are drawn up in cages. Fig. 83 represents the plain but strong waggon of the Van mines, consisting of arectangular) = === body of sheet-iron resting on an oak frame, and provided with cast-steel wheels. The wheels are loose upon the axles, which them. selves run loose in the pedestals. The waggon is emptied by being*~~

~~*Fig. 83, run on to a "tippler," which enables it to be completely over-*~~

~~*turned with great ease. A commoner plan is to construct the waggon with a hinged door at one end, and the contents are discharged by opening this door and raising the body.*~~

~~*The motive power for tramming waggons along the levels of metal mines is generally supplied by men or boys, though, where large quantities have to be extracted, and where the roads are favourable, recourse may be had to ponies and horses and the various kinds of mechanical haulage described in Coat, vol. vi. p. 69.*~~

~~*Trains of cars are sometimes drawn along underground railways by locomotives; they have the great disadvantage of polluting the air with the products of combustion, and consequently they are not available unless the ventilation is very good. Asmall locomotive of 2 horse-power nominal is used on an 18-inch track in the adit-level of the Great Laxcy mine (Isle of Man), now approaching a mile in length, and full-sized locomotives ply along the adit of the Rio Tinto mines. Locomotives worked by compressed air improve the ventilation instead of injuring it, and are not a source of danger in cases where fire-damp may be present ; but, except in special cases, they cannot be worked so cheaply as engines fired with coal. Conveyance by electric railroads underground has hardly gone beyond the experimental stage, but the results obtained at the Zaukeroda colliery in Saxony! show that electricity can be applied with profit in this department of mining.*~~

~~*A few instances of transport by boats may still be met with. Boats.*~~

~~*The boats used in the underground canal at Klausthal are 31 feet*~~

~~*1 Jahrbuch fir das Berg- und Hiittenwesen im Kénigreiche Sachsen auf das Jahr 1883, p. 50.*~~

~~*Winding.*~~

~~*Buckets.*~~

~~*long by 4 feet 6 inches wide, and 2 feet 11 inches deep. Each boat earries 5 or 6 tons. .*~~

~~*Where roads have a strong gradient, inclined planes are employed, either self-acting if the mineral has to be lowered, or worked by stationary engines if the mineral has to be raised (see CoAL, vol. vi. p. 69).* |~~

~~*9. Winding, or Raising in the Shafts, with the Machinery and Apparatus required.—In speaking of the transport by underground roads, we mentioned that the mineral is occa- sionally brought to the surface on the backs of men or boys. In other cases daylight is reached by adit-levels provided with railroads ; but in by far the greater number of mines it is necessary to hoist the mineral, and often much rubbish, up vertical or inclined pits generally known as shafts.*~~

~~*In beginning to sink a shaft from the surface, or in sinking a winze, hand-power applied by a windlass is sufficient. The broken rock at the bottom of the shaft is shovelled into a wooden or iron bucket (Azbble), which is drawn up by a rope passing round the barrel of the wind- lass. When a depth of 20 or 30 yards has been reached it is more advantageous to introduce horse-power, and the usual machine by which this power is applied, called a gin or horse-whim, is a common sight in many metalliferous districts. It consists of a vertical axis carrying a barrel or drum 8 to 12 feet in diameter, round which is coiled the rope, which after passing over a pulley hangs down the shaft. 'The axis carries an iron pin at each end, the lower one working in a stone and the upper one in a socket in the span-beam or cross-bar of the supporting frame. Under the barrel is a long driving beam to which a horse is harnessed, and, as will be readily understood, the kibble is drawn up or lowered down as the horse walks round. Tt is most economical to have two kibbles, for then they balance each other.*~~

~~*Where steam and water-power are not available, a large number of horses or mules are sometimes harnessed to whims, and ore raised from depths of 200 fathoms. These, however, are exceptional cases; and, especially since the introduction of portable engines, the use of steam-power even for comparatively small depths, such as 100 yards, is daily increasing. In hilly districts water-power is generally at hand, and huge reservoirs are frequently constructed for storing the rainfall, and so affording an adequate*~~

~~and con- stant supply. It may be utilized by water-wheels, turbines, and water-pressure engines.~~

~~There are three systems of winding by steam or water- power which are in regular use :—(1) by buckets (kzbbles), baskets, or bags swinging loose in the shafts ; (2) by boxes working between guides (skips, Cornwall); (3) by cages carrying one or More waggons.~~

~~The buckets are made of wood, sheet-iron, or sheet-steel. Their shape varies ; it may be round or elliptical, straight in the side or bulging in the middle. Fig. 84 represents-a kibble made of sheet-iron. When the shaft is inclined, the side upon which the kibble slides is carefully lined with boards (bed-planks) resting upon cross sleepers. Planks of hard wood like beech last longer and require fewer repairs than $A' deal boards. In the Harz, poles fixed lengthwise | take the place of boards, which are customary in | Great Britain. Even where shafts are perpen- dieular a lining of planks is often put in round the winding compartment, unless the space is considerable, and the kibble then glides up smoothly, and there is less risk of accidents. A inore modern system is to use wire-rope guides for the kibble, which is thus kept from swinging about. Another advantage of this plan is that a light cage ean easily be substituted for the kibble and used for the aseent and descent of the men. Mr Galloway has patented a method of sinking shafts with wire-rope guides, the upper ends of which are coiled upon drums at the surface. By adopting this expedient the guides ean be lengthened as the shaft is deepened.~~

~~A word must be said about the actual loading and emptying of the kibble. Sometimes, as already mentioned, the kibble is filled at the working place or from a shoot (pass, Cornwall) carried down~~

~~into the level, and then conveyed on a trolley to the shaft, where.~~

~~it is hooked on to the rope and drawn up. More frequently the filler standing in the plat loads the kibble with a shovel; and in order to save time two~~

kibbles are often provided, one being filled while the other is making the journey to and from the surface. In this case it is necessary to have some kind of elevis, which will enable the kibble to be readily detached from the winding-rope, and quickly and securely fastened on again. On its arriving at the surface the lander seizes an eye or ring at the bottom of the kibble by a pair of tongs suspended by a chain, and the rope is now lowered. The kibble is thus turned over and the contents fall into a tram-waggon.

The inconveniences of this method of winding are considerable, especially in inclined shafts where the direction and amount of the inclination are not constant. There is great wear and tear of the bed-plank and easing-boards; and, unless constant attention is paid to repairs, places are worn out where the kibble catches, causing the rope-to break. The fall of a kibble and its contents not only does much damage to the shaft, but also is a source of danger to the men. The introduction of boxes (skips) working between guides or conductors was therefore a decided step in advance, for the system allows the winding to be carried on with less friction and with greater rapidity and safety. The guides are

often made of pieces of timber (like 7, fig. 58) bolted to the end-

pieces and dividings. It is only in perpendicular shafts that guides made of wire-rope or iron rods can be applied. The skip isa box of rectangular section made of sheet-iron or sheet-steel, with a sloping bottom, and provided with a hinged door closed by a bolt for discharging its contents. Fig. 851 shows how the skip runs upon

AY { {i N

hh 5 it |

the guides by means of four cast-iron or (better) cast-steel wheels. In an inclined shaft the guides sometimes have iron rails laid on them so as to diminish the wear. Some of the skips in Cornwall are made to hold as much as a ton and a half of tin-bearing rock. The skip is filled with a shovel by a man standing in the plat, but a better plan is to arrange shoots leading from large hoppers, so that the ore can be made to run in without any shovelling. The skip is sometimes tilted completely over instead of being emptied by a

~~*hinged door; this arrangement is in use in some of the German mines, where the skip is made of wood, and is guided on each side by two pins or rollers running between two conductors. When the skip has reached the surface two catches are made to support the lower rollers, whilst the upper ones pass through openings in the front guides, and the skip, turning mpon the lower ones, is tipped over and so emptied.*~~

~~*Skips,*~~

~~*The most satisfactory system of winding is by eages ; there is Cage.*~~

~~*less handling of the mineral, and the hoisting proceeds at far greater speed. This system, which is almost universal in collieries, is employed also for working deposits of other minerals, and, though*~~

~~*OO*~~

~~*1 Moissenet, Annales des Mines, ser. 6, vol. ti., 1862, plate vii.*~~

~~*Koepe system,*~~

~~*Blan- chet's method.*~~

~~*DRAINAGE.* |~~

~~*managers are beginning to recognize the advantages of the cage and equip their mines with more modern appliances than have hitherto been customary. The cages used in the mines on the Comstock lode are very light and simple in construction, as will be seen from fig. 86. The cage in fact is a mere timber platform, 5 feet by 4,*~~

~~*ren Has Ms*~~

~~‘ . .~~

~~+ ‘ ‘ ‘~~

~~‘ ’~~

~~‘ +~~

~~*$50 eww a seaneniend*~~

~~*+] SN Sot) = HESS A ESSNe WLLL*~~

~~*Petes arnt rte ree ree eee ene meee eee*~~

~~*iyi ities Lend Fic. 86.—Cage used in Comstock Lode.*~~

~~*resting on iron bars y, and supported by iron rods on each side. It is provided with a sheet-iron bonnet to protect the men if they are inside, and also with safety catches ¢, t, which come into play if the rope breaks. The hand levers &, & at the ends of the cage raise up blocks which keep the car in its place during the aseent or descent ; g, g are guides for the end of the crossbar 6; c, bar working teeth t,t by levers; f, “ear” or “shoe” embracing the guide-rod in shaft; 7, lifting bar; s, strong spring.*~~

~~*The most important details concerning the use of cages, ropes, and other hoisting appliances such as pulleys, pulley-fraimes, detaching hooks, and winding engines, have already been set forth in the article Coal, vol. vi. p. 74; and it is therefore needless to repeat these particulars, especially as the art of winding mineral cheaply, speedily, and safely has been carried to a far greater pitch of perfection in collieries than in the majority of metal mines. It is often convenient to fix winding engines underground for the purpose of sinking shafts and winzes, and drive them by com- pressed air brought down in pipes from the surface.*~~

~~*The Koepe system of winding, which appears to be viewed with favour on the Continent, consists in having what is practically an endless rope with one large sheave over the shaft, in the place of the two drums. There are two cages, and the rope below them acts as a counterbalance, so that the load is uniform throughout.*~~

The most novel hoisting apparatus is that of M. Blanchet (Coat, vol. vi. p. 76), which has now been regularly at work in the Hot- tinguer shaft at Epinac in France for the last six years. M. Blanchet's method consists in fixing in the shaft a large pipe in which is arranged a piston; from this is suspended a cage carrying waggons. By exhausting the air above the piston the load is eotely forced up: by the atmospheric pressure below it. The

ottinguer shaft is 660 yards deep, and the pipe is 5 feet 3 inches in diameter, made up of a succession of cylinders of sheet-iron about 38, inch thick and 4 feet 4 inches high, joined by flanges and bolts. The 485 rings composing the long pipe weigh altogether 418 statute tons. The cage has nine decks, and arrangements are made for unloading three at a time; each waggon holds half a ton, so that the total useful load is 44 tons. The speed of hoisting is 20 feet per second. If two hoisting pipes are connected the dead weights may be made to balance each other, and the power required is simply that which is necessary to overcome the weight of the useful load. All the men prefer the pneumatic hoist to the ordinary cage for descending and ascending the mine, and are regularly lowered and raised by it. The advantages claimed by M. Blanchet for this system are—(1) the possibility of hoisting from depths at which rope-winding would no longer be practicable ; (2) getting rid of the costly ropes and dangers connected with rope- winding ; (3) better utilization of the engine power ; (4) improve- ment of the ventilation and diminution of the amount of fire-damp.

10. Drainage.—The mineral having been raised to the surface, the task of the miner might appear to be at an

in vein-mining the skip and kibble still prevail in England, the

end; but this is not the case, for it is further necessary that he should keep his mine free from water and foul air. These two indispensable operations of draining and ventilating frequently require special appliances which add considerably to the general cost of mining,

~~*In all cases where it is possible, endeavours should be made to keep the water out of a mine, so as to save the expense of pumping it; and the method of putting in a watertight lining (¢ubbing) in a shaft has been already described (Cot, vol. vi. p. 62). When large streams of water happen to be intersected by underground work- ings, and threaten to overpower the available pumping machinery, or when it is advisable to save the expense of draining abandoned workings, the entry of this water into the mine may often be prevented by stoppings, called dams, constructed of timber or brickwork.*~~

~~*In spite of all precautions, the miner generally has to contend with water which percolates into the workings. Four methods of getting rid of this water are available, viz., adits, siphons, winding machinery, and pumps.*~~

~~*An adit, day-level, or sough is a nearly horizontal tunnel with one end opening at_the surface, allowing the water to drain away naturally. In hilly countries mines are often worked entirely by adits, and even whena mine is deepened below the drainage level the utility of the adit is still threefold :— it lessens the quantity of water which tends to percolate into the lower workings ; it lessens the depths to which the water has to be pumped; and, by furnishing a certain amount of fall, it enables water to be applied as power. On account of these important advantages some very long and costly adits have been driven for the purpose of aiding the miners in certain metalliferous districts.*~~

~~*Thus in the Harz the Ernest Augustus adit (“‘Ernst August Stolln”) has been driven a distance of nearly 64 miles into the Klaus- thal district. The total length of the adit, including the branches, is no less than 14 miles. It intersects many of the lodes at a depth of upwards of 400 yards from the surface. ‘The total cost of this adit is estimated at £85,500.*~~

~~*Another long adit is the celebrated ‘“‘Rothschonberger Stolln,” which unwaters some of the most important mines at Freiberg in Saxony. The length of the main or trunk adit is more than 84 miles; the gradient of the greater part of it is only 1°18 inch in 100 yards. The branches of this adit among the mines are more than 16 miles in length, so that the total length of the main adit with its branches amounts to nearly 25 miles. Many of the mines are now drained naturally to a depth of 250 to 300 yards. The cost of*~~

~~*the main tunnel was £359,334, or nearly £24 per yard, but this includes the cost of eight shafts, heavy expeuses for pumping from these shafts, the walling of the adit for } mile, and all general expenses. The length of time occupied in driving this adit was thirty-three years. The " Kaiser Josef II. Erbstolln" in Hungary is another remarkable mining tunnel, which was commenced in 1782, and com- pleted in 1878 at a total cost of 4,599,000 florins. It is 10} miles in length, extending from the valley of the river Gran to the town of Schemnitz, where it intersects the lodes at depths varying from 300 to 600 yards according to the contour of the surface.*~~

~~*In Cornwall the Great County adit was driven for the purpose of relieving the Gwennap mines of their water, and it was pushed on nearly to Redruth. This adit differs from the great works under- taken in Germany by the fact that it commences in the mining district, and, though the length of all the drivages amounts to more than 30 miles, the water from the most distant mine does not run more than abont 6 miles before reaching daylight. The average depth is only 70 or 80 yards from the surface. In fact this great adit, though a work of great utility when the Gwennap district was in a flourishing condition, is merely a network of comparatively shallow drivages, often along the lodes themselves, among the mines, and therefore for boldness of execution cannot for one moment be compared to the great Schemnitz, Freiberg, and Klausthal drainage tunnels which have just been mentioned. The Blackett Level in Northumberland is an adit which has been driven a distance of about 4% miles, and it will have to be extended about 2 miles further before reaching Allenheads. Its depth from the surface at this place will be about 200 yards. or .*~~

~~*The main part of the Halkyn tunnel in Flintshire is 2 miles 1256 yards in length, and the branch driven out to Rhosesmor mine intersected the, vein at a distance of 809 yards, making a total of about 3 miles. The greatest depth from the surface is 230 yards, and the average depth in Halkyn Mountain about*~~

~~*Siphons.*~~

~~*Winding*~~

~~*machin- ery.*~~

~~*Pumps.*~~

~~*MIN*~~

~~*215 yards. The length and depth of this adit are not remarkable; but the great quantity of water discharged is a point of considerable interest and importance. It is estimated that this adit is now discharging 15 million gallons or 66,000 tons of water in twenty- four hours, although the outflow is purely natural, for no mines are pumping water into it. It is now easy to understand that the Rhosesmor mine, though provided with powerful pumping machinery, was unable to cope with the springs it encountered. —*~~

~~*In the United States the famous Sutro tunnel is an adit of which the main branch, 4 miles in length, reaches the great Comstock lode in Nevada at a depth of 1700 feet. The total cost of this tunnel, which was completed in nine years, is estimated to have been $7,000,000. The quantity of water running out daily in 1879 was 12,000 tons, at a temperature of 123° Fahr. at the mouth of the tunnel. All this water must otherwise have been pumped to the surface at a cost estimated at $3000 a day. The obstacles to progress were very great: not only was the heat extreme, but swelling ground was encountered which snapped the strongest timber. Thanks, however, to the untiring energy of Mr Adolph Sutro, the difficulties were at last successfully overcome, and this great work will long remain as a mouument to his foresight, skill, and patient pertinacity.*~~

~~*The Atlantic-Pacific tunnel,!*~~

~~*458*~~

~~*which was commenced in 1880, will pierce the heart of the Rocky Mountains under Grey's Peak, Colorado. It is being driven from both sides of the watershed, and will have a total length of 42 miles from end to end.*~~

~~*Siphons have been used for unwatering workings in special cases ; but of course they will not act unless the barrier over which the water is raised is very decidedly less than 33 feet.*~~

~~*When workings cannot be drained by tunnels or siphons it is necessary to raise the water mechanically, elther to the surface or at all events to an adit through which it can flow away naturally. If the amount of water is not too considerable, it is often convenient to use the winding machinery and draw up the water in special buckets (water- barrels) or tanks. The bucket may be tilted over on reach- ing the surface, or it may be emptied by a valve at the bottom. This means of raising water is often adopted while sinking shafts, when it may be desirable to wait till the whole or a portion of the shaft is completed before putting in the final pumping machinery.*~~

~~*The varieties of pumps used in mines are numerous. In small sinkings hand-pumps, either direct-acting or rotary, may be applied; steam-jet pumps on the principle of the Giffard injectors are also used; and pulsometers, though requiring a large expenditure of steam, have the advantages of being quickly fixed, of occupying little space, and. of working with sandy or muddy water. They are capable, therefore, of rendering great services in special cases. When we come to the definitive machinery erected in large mines of considerable depth, we find that the pre- vailing types of pumps arefew. They may be classified as follows :—(A) lifting and force pumps worked by rods in the shaft actuated by wind, water, or steam power ; (B) force-pumps at the bottom of the shaft worked by steam, compressed air, or hydraulic pressure.*~~

~~*A. In describing the first method we have to consider the motive power, the rods, and the actual pumps themselves.*~~

~~*Windmills have the disadvantage, which is often fatal, that the power is not constant. By erecting an auxiliary steam-engine, which can be set to work if wind fails, this evil is overcome ; and at the Mona mines in Anglesea a windmill pumps up water from a depth of 80 fathoms at the rate of upwards of 90 gallons per*~~

~~*minute. As the site of the mine is breezy, there is wind enough to work the mill about one-half of the time.*~~

~~_ Water-power was for a long period the principal agent employed in draining mines, and it is still of the greatest utility in many districts, reservoirs being constructed to collect and store the rainfall. Some idea of the scale upon which these works are conducted will be gathered from the following figures relating to the Harz mines. In 1868 there were "sixty-seven reservoirs covering an area of 604 acres, and having a storage capacity of 336,000,000 cubic feet."2 The total length of the various leats,~~

~~ee 1 Mining and Scientific Press, San Francisco, 1882, vol. xlv. p. 241. 2 ¢ Notes on the new Deep Adit in the Upper Harz Mines," by H. Bauerman, Report of the Miners' Association of Cornwall and Devon- shire, 1868, p. 21,~~

~~ING races, and other water-courses, including the six principal adits, is about170 statute miles. The net power extracted is reckoned at 1870 horse-power, but less than one-fourth of this is used for pumping.~~

~~Water-power is applied to pumping machinery by water-wheels, turbines, and rotary or non-rotary water-pressure engines. Hxcept- ing the case of the latter, the rotary motion has to be converted into a reciprocating motion by a crank ; and furthermore with turbines the speed must be reduced very considerably by intermediate gearing.~~

~~Overshot wheels are the commonest prime movers when pumps are worked by water-power ; water-wheels are frequently constructed 40 or 50 feet in diameter, and at the Great Laxey mine, in the Isle of Man, one of the wheels is no less than 72 feet 6 inches in diameter and 6 feet in the breast. The power is conveyed from the water- wheel by a connecting rod toa bell-crank (600) laced over the shaft ; and when, owing to the contour of the ground, the wheel has to be placed at a distance, it is connected to the bob by the so-called flat rods, made of wood, bars of iron, or wire-rope, travelling backwards and forwards, and supported by pulleys or oscillating upright beams.~~

~~Water-pressure engines have the advantage of being able at once to utilize any amount of fall, and those which are direct-acting can be applied immediately to the main rod of the pumps.~~

~~*Steam, however, is the power used par excellence in draining mines ; indeed the first applications of steam-power were made for this purpose, and Watt's great inventions owed their birth to the necessities of mines which could no longer be drained by the water- power at their command.*~~

~~*The principal type of engine is that known as the Cornish engine, which is a single-acting condensing beam engine working ex- pansively. Its mode of action may be briefly described as follows. The steam is let in at the top of the cylinder and presses down the piston, which is connected with one end of a large beam, whilst the main rod of the pumps is attached to the other. When the piston has completed its course the equilibrium valve is opened by a cataract, and, the pressure on both sides of the piston being now equal, the weight of the punip rods, or rather the excess of their weight over that of the counterbalances, causes them to drop and force up the water from the mine by means of the plungers, which will be described immediately. Double-acting rotary engines working the pumps by cranks may also be met with.*~~

~~*The rod in the shaft, known as the main rod or spear rod, is usually made of strong balks of timber butted together and con- nected by strapping plates fastened by bolts. It serves to work either lifting-pumps or force-pumps, or both.*~~

~~*¥*~~

~~*[DRAINAGE.*~~

~~*AWN*~~

~~*Y y Ze Yy Z*~~

~~*GY, 4 Yi ty AA y aa BZ Ki GLP EE 3g Ze a Se YY A Z 4 =] ¥ WY ZS lo Zz Vp. = o*~~

~~*Z an Gy, tyes Y; ,*~~

~~*NS*~~

~~N~~

~~SSX Ss~~

~~S&S~~

~~Aa BZ Hy i, Uf Y LY~~

~~WN~~

~~ANH~~

~~SS Ss~~

~~~~

~~aS SS~~

~~2 PONS Wi Fig. 87. Fig. 88. The lifting-pump, or drawing lift (fig. 87),? consists of the wind- bore, the clack-piece, the clack-seat piece, the working barrel~~

~~piece Banicelaleiaahiat oui: nian aia eS 8 Michell and Letcher on 'Cornish Mine Drainage," Forty-Third~~

~~Annual Report of the Royal Cornwall Polytechnic Society, p. 211.~~

~~Cornish engine,~~

~~VENTILATION. |~~

~~surmounted by pumps, and the bucket with its rod. The whole works like any ordinary pump, and needs no special explanation.~~

~~The force-pump used in mines, known as the plunger-pump, eonsists of a solid piston (plunger) (fig. 88)! working through a stuffing-box in a pump standing on the H-piece. This has a valve which communicates with the windbore resting in the cistern. Above the H-piece comes the door-piece with another valve, and then a series of pipes, generally of east iron, but~~
~~~~

~~*occasionally of wrought iron, constituting the eolunin. The upward motion of the plunger, which is attached to the main rod, causes an inflow of water, which is foreed into the eolumn when the plunger descends. It is usual to fix a drawing lift at the bottom of the shaft, which raises the water into a first eistern, and thence a plunger forces it into a second cistern some 60 yards higher up; and it is continually forced up from cistern to cistern until it reaches the adit or the surface.*~~

~~*There are numerous important matters which require special attention, such as the valves, eatches, balance-bobs, guiding arrangements for the rod in inclined shafts, the V-bobs, tend-off bobs, and running loops, which have to be used when there are bends in the shaft; but space will not permit of more than mere mention of these details.*~~

~~*Such then is the standard arrangement worked by steam or water power for pumping from mines. The great advantage of the system consists in the employment of the plunger, because it is simply necessary for the machine to raise a weight slightly greater than that of the water, which is forced up afterwards by the down- stroke of the rods. Leaks are readily discovered, and the stuffing- box can be easily screwed up as the packing wears; this is one great reason of the superiority of the plunger compared with a piston working in a barrel.*~~

~~*The modifications of this system relate more to the engines em- ployed than to the actual pumps themselves,*~~

~~*The cylinder of the Cornish engine is sometimes reversed and stands over the shaft, the main rod being attached directly to the piston. This type of engine, known as the Bull engine in Corn- wall, dispenses with the ponderous beam, but it has the great disadvantage of obstructing the mouth of the shaft. The use of two cylinders combined, as invented by Woolf, eauses less strain upon the main rod and pumps (pit-work) and machinery generally, as the initial velocity of the piston is smaller and the engine starts with less jerk. 'he cylinders are placed side by side or one above the other.*~~

~~*Kley, of Bonn, has constructed engines on the Woolf system with steam acting on both sides of the pistons. He makes the excess of the weight of the*~~

~~rod over that of the counterbalances sufficient to raise only half the weight of the water and to overcome the friction; and then in the descending stroke the steam aets on the top of the piston and so makes up for the insufficiency in force of the rods. As the steam acts on both sides of the piston the same amount is eon- sumed, it is true, but a smaller cylinder will do the work, and the original cost of the engine is lessened. The same engineer of late years has put up several pumping engines in Belgium, Germany, and France of 30 to 460 horse-power, with a fly-wheel which serves simply to regulate the stroke of the pistou, so that the crank always stops before or after the dead point till the cataract starts another stroke. The engines are double-acting, with two cylinders and beam. The advantage of working with the fly-wheel is that the main rod and pumps are set in motion without the injurious jerk unavoidable with a Cornish engine worked at a high rate of expansion.~~

~~M. Guinotte, the well-known Belgian engineer, also adopts a fly-wheel, and the engines he has erected at Mariemont and else- where are single-acting rotary engines with one cylinder. The peculiarity of the fly-wheel is that he ean weight it in any way he pleases ; and he so overcomes the difficulty, which occurs in other rotary machines, of its being impossible to work them below a certain speed. His object has been to make the speed slow at the beginning and end of a stroke, so as to avoid the injurious shocks to the valves and machinery generally from sudden starts and stoppages. In order to make the main rod aet by traction only aud not compression, which may be advisable with iron rods, the plungers are sometimes reversed ; whilst Kraft of Seraing has introduced the Rittinger pump, which consists ofa hollow moviug plunger with a valve inside, and a plunger case above it working over a hollow fixed plunger. By this arrangement both the up and the down stroke of the engine cause Water to be forced up; and this pump is used with a double-acting rotary engine.~~

~~B. We must now speak of the second class of pumps, viz., force- pumps worked by steam, water-power, or eompressed air at the bottom of the shaft.~~

~~The steam pumps are of very various descriptions,? but they mostly-consist of one or two plungers, or rams, set in motion by a rotary or a non-rotary engine, which may or may not work with~~

~~1 Michell and Letcher on "Cornish Mine Drainage," Forty-Third Annual Report of the Royal Cornwall Polytechnic Society, p. 211. 2 Stephen Michell, Mine Drainage, London, 1881.~~

~~expansion and condensation. The plunger or ram is generally fixed directly on to the piston, and works in the same line, con- sequently the power is transmitted to the plunger with the least possible loss. The water is forced up the shaft in one long column. Engines and pumps of this kind are easily kept in order; all the parts are readily accessible. The miner is able to dispense with the heavy beam, the massive engine-house, the long main rod and its connexions and bobs, the various cisterns and plungers, and instead he has a compact and easily supervised machine and a simple line of pipes taking up but little space in the shaft; the pump can therefore be erected and set to work very quickly, and this is a matter of the utmost importance in emergencies. It is true that these direct-acting steam-pumps, even when worked by a compound engine, cause a greater consumption of coal than the Cornish engine ; but, as a set off, there is the economy in first cost, erection, and repairs which has led to their adoption more especially in collieries. The steam is generated by boilers underground, or is conveyed from the surface in well-jacketed pipes.~~

~~If natural water-power is available water-pressure engines working the plunger directly are often employed, and indeed such water-power may be created artificially for use in workings where steam-power is objectionable on account of the heat. 'There are other reasons too for employing water for transmitting power; where the length of the rods is very great, and they have to be worked quickly, there is a great liability to breakages; in order to overcome these difficulties at the mines on the Comstock lode, Mr Joseph Moore? uses a steam- engine at the surface to work an hydraulic accumulator, and then by pipes couveys the water under pressure to hydraulic engines working plungers. These are fixed at 2400 feet from the surface, and force the water in one column, 813 feet high, to the level of the Sutro tunnel. The exhaust water is returned to the surface in pipes and used over again. The pumps are now raising 1600 to 1700 gallons per minute.~~

~~*Where compressed air is being supplied to a mine for drilling and winding purposes, it is often convenient to employ it, by means of direct-acting pumps, such as are generally used with steam, for the drainage of small temporary sinkings ; and occasion- ally large pumps raising considerable quantities of water are worked in this way.*~~

~~*ll. Ventilation and Lighting.—The composition of the air of the atmosphere is about one-fifth by volume of oxygen and four-fifths of nitrogen, with a little carbonic acid gas; more exactly, the standard amount of oxygen may be taken at 20°9 per cent., and that of the carbonic acid gas at 0°03 per cent. The atmosphere of mines is subject to various deteriorating influences: not only do noxious gases escape from the rocks into the underground excavations, but also the very agents employed in the execution of the work itself pollute the air considerably.*~~

~~*The dangerous emanations of fire-damp in collieries have Deleteri- been already described (Coat, vol. vi. p. 72); and with ous gases.*~~

~~*reference to this gas it is simply necessary to say that its presence is not entirely confined to coal mines. Large quantities have been observed in Silver Islet mine,* Lake Superior, where several explosions have occurred, whilst small quantities are met with in the stratified ironstone of Cleveland, and also in the Cheshire salt mines ; jets of the gas may be seen constantly burning in the salt mine at Bex in Switzerland ; a little has been noticed also in lead mines in Wales and Derbyshire. In the Sicilian mines the amount given off by the black carbonaceous shales inter- stratified with the sulphur beds is sufficient to cause dangerous explosions. It has been pointed out (vol. vi. p. 72) that carbonic acid gas exudes from coal ;° it escapes also from some mineral veins. At the lead mines of Pontgibaud in central France it is so abundant that special fans have to be provided for getting rid of it ; very distinct issues of this gas may be observed at the Foxdale mines in the Isle of Man, and in the Alston Moor district it is not*~~

~~*3 Trans. Inst. Engineers and Shipbuilders in Scotland, 1882.*~~

~~*4 Engineering and Mining Journal, vol. xxxiv. p. 322. ;*~~

~~5 A, Schondorff, “ Untersuchung der ausziehenden Wetterstrome in den Steinkohlenbergwerken des Saarbeckens,” Zeitschrift fir das Berg-, Hiitten-, und Salinen-Wesen im Preussischen Staate, vol. XXIV. Dp. 133 and Cl. Winkler, “ Die chemische Untersuchung der bei verschiedenen Steinkohlengruben Sachsens ausziehenden Wetterstrome und ihre Ergebnisse,” Jahrbuch fir das Berg- und Hitienwesen vm Kénigreiche Sachsen auf das Jahr 1882, p. 65.~~

~~oxide and carbonic oxide, and the analyses of MM. Sarrau and Vieille confirm the practical experience of miners, who complain greatly of noxious fumes when, owing perhaps to a bad detonator, a charge of dynamite or tonite fails to explode properly.~~

~~The air of mines is finally deteriorated by organic matter con- tained in the exhalations of the men and animals employed and in the products of decaying timber, by dust, and by the solid par- ticles constituting the smoke of explosives. It must be recollected also that the injury to the air is not confined to the addition of the~~

 ~~uncommon. This gas is likewise given off in the Sicilian sulphur mines, where also the highly poisonous sulphuretted hydrogen is of frequent occurrence, the water in the work- ings being often saturated with it. Small quantities of mercurial vapour occur in quicksilver mines.~~

~~Products Such then are the principal gases which naturally pollute~~

~~of respi- the atmosphere of mines, and have to be swept out by~~

~~ration, Ventilation. In addition to these we have the products | gases and substances just mentioned ; but the proportion of oxygen “digas of the respiration of the men and animals in the pit, and | is diminished by the combustion of candles, by respiration, the e.~~

~~decay of timber, and decomposition of some minerals such as iron pytites. Dr Angus Smith‘ sums up the results of his analyses of the air of British~~

~~metal-mines as follows :—~~

~~those due to the combustion of candles or lamps, and the explosion of gunpowder, dynamite, &c.~~

~~Dr Angus Smith?~~

~~reckons that two men working eight hours, Percentage by volume, 20°26~~

~~and using 4 tb of candles and 12 oz. of gun owder, produce 25°392 Oxygen, average of 339 specimens 0 cubic feet of earbonic acid feonbpiitley a Te F., —viz., 10°32 by » pag h or aie breathing, 12°276 by candles, and 2°796 by gunpowder. "in currents.… tee The products of the explosion of gunpowder have been carefully » 4n Bri SAR Seceyae wee vooeee 2OTF studied by Captain Noble and Sir Frederick Abel, and the follow- eae ing figures, showing proportions by weight, are copied from the tibial ch Sa cl oo oes~~

~~valuable paper? containiug the results of some of their researches: —~~

~~He considers air with 20°9 per cent. oxygen as normal, and air with proportions between that and 20°6 as impure; and where the per- centage of oxygen descends below 20°6 he calls the air exceedingly~~

~~Curtis & Harvey's | Mining No. 6 Gunpowder. | Powder.~~

~~Total Solid products.…..ccccsssssrsssseersesees ssestentse ons 57°74 47°04 bad. According to these standards, only 10°67 per cent. of the Total gaseous products 41:09 51°35 samples showed the air to be normal or nearly so; 24°69 per cent. WAteD.. ..ccsosceeccensesecceerectenseeseressensee scorer sescsceenes Pat 1°61 were decidedly impure ; whilst 64°63 per cent. or nearly two-thirds~~

~~190-00 Joo-00 | | of the samples were exceedingly bad. The amount of oxygen in~~

~~one specimen was as low as 18°52 per cent., whilst the carbonic~~

—

~~The solid residue of the mining powder consisted mainly of potassium carbonate, potassium monosulphide, and sulphur. The pereentage composition by volume of the gas produced was :—~~

~~Carbonic anhydride Carbonic oxide.. ONIErO COM... .050----c-~~

~~acid often exceeded 1 per cent. and in several instances 2 per cent. It is evident that twenty years ago the ventilation of British metal mines was anything but satisfactory, and even now there is room for improvement.~~

~~Having explained the reasons why the air of mines must be constantly renewed, we must now point out how this desirable end is effected.~~

~~Sulphuretted hydrogen Marsh QAS...ccccccecoeeesees Fy rOGeD.……cccccccccesceccceneeccccccecoeteessesersarecccces~~

~~Two systems are employed,—natural ventilation and Systems artificial ventilation; but, as both systems have been of venti- described (Coat, vol. vi. p. 70), little remains to be said stem~~

~~The volume (calculated for a temperature of 0° C. and barometer 760 mm. of mereury) of permanent gases generated by the explosion of 1 gramme of dry powder is—~~

~~Curtis & Harvey, No. 6…....c0.-ecccccescreee0 Mining~~

~~seooeee 241°0 eurdic centimetres. 3603 yy ”~~

~~MM. Sarrau and Vieille have communicated to the Academy of Seiences? the results of their researches concerning the decomposi- tion of certain explosives, and more particularly gun-cotton and nitrated gun-cotton. The following table shows, in litres, the volume (at 0° C, and 760 mm. of mercury) of each of the gases per kilogramme of the substance exploded in a closed vessel: —~~

~~PPrrererrerre ree reer~~

~~Kind of Explosive. CO.| CO>.| H.| N.|0./C2Hy.| HS.| Total. es = aie ie | aca a Pure gun-e0tton…….ccce. eee 234 | 234 | 166] 107)... 741 Gun-cotton~~

~~*and nitrate of | potash (50 per cent. ott 171 109 | 45 825 GROM) <: <.oeetele ccavoneacnceenc i Gun-cotton (40 per cent.) and nitrate of ammonia 184 211) 6 401 (60) ner Gent.) 2... ..esresres | NIEPO-QIY CEPI... ceccese seceevess] ove 295 || >.. |d47 25 Ses 467 Ordinary blasting powder…... 64) 150 4) 6G…) 24 ipa 304*~~

~~*_ If, however, the explosive is decomposed at a pressure approach- ing that of the atmosphere, the volumes (again at 0° C. and 760 mm. of mercury) are very different, as shown below:—*~~

~~*Kind of Explosive.*~~

~~*Pure gun-cotton…….. Sctvomcsniee 139 | 237; 104 | 45 | 33 a 565 Gun-cotton and nitrate of ral potash (50 per cent. of each) 56] 57) 3 iJ 196*~~

~~*nitrate of ammonia (60 per*~~

~~*Gun-cotton (40 per cent.) and*~~

~~*122*~~

~~*cent.) —*~~

~~*218*~~

~~*When explosives are decomposed in this way they liberate nitrie*~~

~~*1 Report of the Commissioners Appointed to Inquire into the Condt- tion of all Mines in Great Britain to which the Provisions of the Act 23 & 24 Vict. c. 151 do not apply, Appendix B., p. 224.*~~

~~*2 "On Fired Gunpowder," Captain Noble and Mr F. A. Abel Phil. Trans., 1880, p. 278.*~~

~~*Bree Recherches expérimentales sur la décomposition de quelques explosifs en vase clos ; composition des gaz formes,' Comptes Rendus, 1880, pp.1058 and 1112.*~~

~~*| air-way may be constructed*~~

~~here, especially as the ventilating machines in metalliferous~~

~~| mines generally cannot for one moment be compared with~~

~~the powerful appliances employed in collieries. In vein- mining there are generally many more shafts than in collieries, and natural currents are set up which are often considered sufficient for ventilating the mines; never-theless, the advanced workings, such as the ends, rises, and winzes,—in fact all workings in the form of a cul-de- sac,—are likely to require special means of ventilation as soon as they proceed a little distance from the main air-current.~~

~~The means of ventilating a drift or heading are various. Tf a natural or artificial draught exists at the mouth of the drift, it may be diverted by an up- right partition (Jrattice), or an Y~~

~~along the roof or floor by a horizontal partition of planks (air-sollar) (fig. 89). In this~~

~~Fig. 89.~~

~~way a sufficient supply is~~

~~secured at the end or fore-breast. The water-blast is another simple~~

~~appliance ; it is pre- cisely the same as the well-known tromp, and it blows a current of air through square pipes made of boards, or better through cylindri- 7/7//7//// cal pipes of sheet zine. The fall of water may be applied by Williams's water-jet, shown in fig. 90. The jet of water acts like an injector, and creates a powerful current.~~

~~Small fans driven by boys, or better by small water- wheels or other machinery, are frequently applied, and the~~

~~4 Op. cit, p: B22.~~

~~LIGHTING.|~~

~~*Harz blower (duck machine, Cornwall) (fig. uncommon. 'This is merely an air-pump of construction which is worked by the main rod of the pumps, and can be arranged so as to exhaust the foul air or force in fresh air.*~~

~~*In working in blasting ground, boring-machines driven by com- pressed air are becoming more and more largely used every day, and the exhaust air escaping from the machines is invaluable for ventilation. At the same time, on account of volley firing, the quantities of dele- terious gases generated in a short space of time are very considerable ; and, in order to get rid of them speedily, the compressed air may be*~~

~~*91) is not very simple*~~

~~*Fig. 91. . utilized for working a Korting aspirator or the somewhat*~~

~~*similar ventilator of Mr Teague, a jet of compressed air turned into a ventilating pipe, which creates an exhaust*~~

~~*(fig. 921). Naturally this MAM nee ee ly*~~

~~*ventilator is merely*~~

~~*brought into play at the 7 G*~~

~~*time of blasting, and I while the boring ma- GH Sacaaiasiantaniaineate . chinery is out of use. MM La*~~

~~*When compressed air is Fig. 92.*~~

~~*being supplied on a large scale to a mine for boring and winding machinery, it is often convenient to convey it by a small gas-pipe to working places in which the ventilation is inadequate. Of course, in one sense, it is very unecono- mical to compress air to a pressure of 60 or 70 ib to the square inch for ventilating purposes only; but, where com- pressing machinery is always at work on the mine, it may be better to be a little wasteful of cheap power at the sur- face than to go to the greater expense of having a man or boy to work a fan underground.*~~

~~*Mines are lighted by lamps, torches, candles, and electricity. The subject of safety lamps for fiery mines has already been discussed (see Coat, vol. vi. p. 72), and consequently the question of illuminating mines may be treated in a very summary manner.*~~

~~*Lamps vary very much in shapeand size. The Sicilian miner has a mere shallow cup of unglazed pottery ; the Saxon a small tin or brass lamp in a wooden box lined with tinplate and open in front. In the Harz the miner prefers a heavy flat iron lamp with a hook by which it is stuck into the timber or any crack in the rocks ; in France, northern Italy, and parts of Spain, the iron lamp is lenticular in shape and also suspended by a hook. In Scotland, and parts of Germany and the United States, a small tin lamp of the shape shown in fig. 98 is very common ; the hook Fin 03 enables it to be carried on the hat while climbing ig. 93. ladders, and to be fixed up underground. Olive oil and rape oil are burnt in these lamps ; petroleum lamps are employed occasionally.*~~

~~*The miners of England and Wales still cling to the tallow candle; and when surrounded by a lump of clay it can easily and quickly be fixed in the working place or carried upon the hat when climbing. Gas brought down from the surface answers for Uluminating large excavations, such as on-setting places and engine-rooms.*~~

~~*Up to the present time the electric light has been but little used underground on account of its want of portability, and the small- hess of the spaces requiring illumination. Very often a few men only are employed in each working place, and consequently the expense incurred in fixing and shifting the lamps and maintaining them alight would be out of proportion to the value of the work executed. However, an incandescent electric lamp has been invented weighing only 10 tb, which gives the light of three candles for six hours, and it may be reasonably expected that improvements will be made which will render the electric light more available for underground purposes than it is at present. When the area requir- ing illumination is large, an arc-lamp may be used with advantage.*~~

~~*1 Trans. Roy. Geol. Soc. Cornwall, vol. x. p. 142.*~~

~~Among the first successful applications of electric lighting to underground excavations may be mentioned that of M. Blavier at the Angers slate quarries.2 In the year 1879 he fixed two Serrin lamps in one of the large underground chambers with an area of 2400 square yards, and he found that they gave light enough for all the men at work. The total cost, reckoning everything, viz., coal, carbons, repairs, labour, depreciation of plant, and interest oncapital, is 50 francs per day ; the gas formerly in use cost 54 francs a day and gave much less light. It is evident, however, that the arc lights can only be applied with advantage in special cases where a large number of men are concentrated in one working area which can be illuminated from one or two points.~~

~~The large chambers in the salt mine of Maros-Ujvar in Hungary have been regularly lighted up by electricity since 1880. The cost is somewhat greater than that of the tallow, oil, or petroleum formerly in use ; but, on the other hand, the illumination is better, the men can do more work and are more easily supervised, whilst the air of the mine is not deteriorated by the products of combustion of the lamps.? ~~

~~12. Means of Descending into and Ascending from Means of~~

~~Mines.—Where mines are worked by adit-levels the men naturally walk in along the ordinary roadways; such mines, however, are exceptional, and the men generally have to climb down and up by ladders, or are raised and lowered by machinery. The means of access to and from workings may be classified as follows:—(1) steps and slides ; (2) ladders ; (3) cages ; (4) man-engines.~~

~~If a lode or seam is inclined at an angle or 40° or 50° from the horizon, steps may be cut in the floors of the deposit if it is firm enough, or wooden stairs may be put in with a hand-rail. Even with higher dips steps may be arranged by directing them in a line intermediate between the dip and the strike. In speaking of con- veyance underground, reference has already been made to the practice of carrying sulphur ore in Sicily and slate in Germany up to the surface by steps; and steps may be found in other foreign mines and occasionally in Great Britain. They are much less fatiguing than~~

~~ladders placed so flat that part of the weight of the body rests upon the arms. In some of the Austrian salt mines the men descend by wooden slides inclined at angles varying from 30° to 50°, flattening at the bottom to destroy the velocity gradually; the ascent is effected by steps.~~

~~Ladders are very largely used in metal mines all over the world, but they vary a good deal in different countries. The ladder consists of two sides and a series of rungs (staves, Cornwall). The sides are usually made of wood, and the rungs of wood or iron. The distance between the rungs is important; 10 inches from centre to centre is sufficient, for climbing upon ladders with the rungs 12 inches apart is decidedly more fatiguing. On the Continent wooden rungs are commoner than iron ones, and oak is preferred. Sometimes the wooden staves, instead of being round, are flat, so as to stand more wear, and iron sides may be seen in places where dry rot is very bad. Platforms should be fixed at short intervals, not exceeding 3 or 4 fathoms in perpendicular shafts, so~~

~~: gg as to prevent falls from having fatal Z i y |~~

~~consequences. Z In many cases sufficient attention is not paid to the angle of inclination of the ladders. A ladder is climbed with the least fatigue when the person uses his arms simply to steady hin- self, and is not compelled to pull himself up by them, as on a vertical _ ladder, or to support much of the © weight of his body by them, as happens with a very flat one. The best angle is about 20° from the xen vertical, and in Belgium the autho- Fig. 94. rities have very wisely decreed that no ladder shall be inclined at an angle of less that 10° from the vertical. Furthermore, of the two arrangements shown in fig. 94~~

~~SS~~

~~WES ASS~~

~~S~~

~~EWE SSG~~

~~*2M. Blavier, "L' Eclairage électrique aux Ardoisiéres d' Angers," Annales des Mines, ser. 7, vol. xvii., 1880, p. 5. — 3 Oesterreichische Zeitschrift sir Berg- und Hiilienwesen, 1882, No.*~~

~~*25, p. 296,*~~

~~*access.*~~

~~*Steps.*~~

~~*Slides.*~~

~~*Ladders.*~~

~~*Cages,*~~

~~*Man- engines,*~~

~~*462*~~

~~*A is better than B, because it not only affords a greater inclination for the ladders, but also renders it less likely that a man will drop through the opening (manhole) in the platform (sollar) if he loses his hold and falls. These may seem trifling matters; but, leaving aside the question of safety, the economy derived from fixing the ladders at the best inclination is by no means small. To make this apparent we must recollect the depths to and from which men have to climb, viz., 300, 400, and even 500 yards. It is important, therefore, to save every unnecessary expenditure of energy, which, though trifling for one ladder, becomes considerable when repeated a great number of times. When a mine has reached a depth of 200 yards, and a fortiori when it exceeds it, mechanical appliances should be introduced for raising and lowering the men, because time and strength are wasted by climbing. Medical men also are agreed that excessive ladder-climbing is injurious to the health of the miner. Therefore, both upon hygienic and financial grounds, one of the first thoughts in working a mine should be the conveyance of the men up and down the shafts by machinery with the least possible fatigue.*~~

~~*In collieries and other mines worked by perpendicular shafts, it has long been customary to raise and lower the men by the ordinary winding machinery already described. In the United Kingdom it is necessary that guides should be used if the shaft exceeds 50 yards in depth; safety- catches and disengaging hooks (Coat, vol. vi. p. 75) are frequently applied for the purpose of preventing accidents. The simplicity of this method of ingress and egress naturally renders it popular, and statistics prove that, where proper precautions are used, it is exceedingly safe.*~~

~~*The first man-engine was put up in the Harz in 1833, and nine years later a similar machine was fixed in Tresavean mine in Cornwall. Since that time this very useful means of conveying workmen up and down shafts has been resorted*~~

~~*_ to in other mining districts, and especially in Belgium and*~~

~~*Westphalia.*~~

~~*Two kinds of man-engine are in use, the double-rod machine and the single-rod machine. The double-rod or original man-engine consists of two reciprocating rods like the main rods of pumps, earry- ing small platforms upon which the men stand. 'The stroke is froin 4 to 16 feet, and the little platforms are so arranged that they are always opposite each other at the beginning and end of each stroke.*~~

~~*Figs. 95 and 96 represent the rods in the two final positions. A man who wishes to descend steps upon platform 6 (fig. 95); the rod B goes down, and A goes up, so that 6 (fig. 96) is brought opposite c. The man steps across from 6 to ¢, and then the rod A makes a down-stroke, B an up-stroke. Platforin ¢ is now oppo- w site d (fig. 95), and the man again steps across ; and 77 thus, by constantly stepping from the rod as it com- yy) pletes its down-stroke, the man is A gradually eonveyed to the bottom of*~~

~~*Ze SAAS AAs*~~

~~*the shaft. By reversing the process, or, in other words, by stepping off | B on to the opposite platform as soon as the rod has completed its up- 5 2 stroke, the man is raised to the sur- {ZF faee, without any fatigue beyond that | V7*~~

of the very slight effort of stepping sideways. If each rod makes four d 7, up and down strokes of 10 feet each Yj per minute, the rate of aseent or VE deseent will be 80 feet per minute. 1 Vy

The single-rod man-engine has one YY rod carrying steps, whilst fixed plat- Z

yj

forms are arranged in the shaft so as to correspond exactly with them (fig. 97). If a man wants to go down, he steps on to A when the up stroke is eompleted ; the rod goes Fj :

down and A is brought down oppo- eo HE

Fig. 97. site to the fixed platform }, on to which he steps off. He then

waits on 6 until the rod has finished its up-stroke. B is brought opposite 6; he steps on to B, the rod goes down and he is brought opposite ¢, where he steps off again and waits. By reversing the operation he is gradually lifted to the top of the shaft. The single-

rod engine may be used by men going up while others are going '

MINING

[MEANS. OF ACCESS.

down, provided that there is sufficient room upon the fixed plat- forms (sollars). The best plan is to have sollars right and left, as shown in the figure, and then the aseending men step off to the left, for instance, while the descending men take the right-hand sollars. The ascending man steps on to the man-engine as soon as the deseending man steps off, and so the rod may be always carrying men up or down. The usual stroke in Cornwall is 12 feet, and there are from three to five or six strokes a minute. With five strokes the men descend 10 fathoms a minute, or in other words a descent or ascent of 300 fathoms oeeupies half an hour. The reciprocating motion is best obtained from a crank, because in this ease the speed is diminished

~~gradually at the dead points, and the danger of an accident in stepping off and on is thereby dimin- ished; man-engines, however, are sometimes driven by direct-acting engines.~~

~~Man-engine rods are constructed of wood or iron; and at An- dreasberg in the Harz each rod is replaced by two wire ropes. Like a pun.p rod the man-engine rod requires proper balance bobs and catches, and for the safety of the men a handle is provided at a convenient height above each step.~~

~~The man-engine has one great advantage over the cage, which consists in the fact that it can be safely applied in inclined and even crooked shafts ; and it is for this reason that man-engines have been adopted in many metal mines unprovided with vertical shafts.~~

~~Careful comparisons as regards safety of travelling have been made in Prussia between ladders, man-engines, and cages. The average accidental death-rate is shown by the accompanying table, which gives averages for a period of ten years, 1871 to 1880:—~~

~~Ladders. | Man-engines. | Cages.~~

~~Average annual number of men travelling. 73,942 7,191 64,071 Total number of persons killed……. 75 41 74 Average annual death-rate per 1000…..... 0°101 0°570 0-115~~

~~a nnn nnn LEE EEE EE EEE!~~

~~The table shows that the cage is nearly as safe as ladders. In reality, if the actual distance travelled were taken into account, the cage would appear to be safer, because we may fairly assume that the mines in which men are hoisted by cages are on the whole very much deeper than those in which men ascend and descend by ladders. The man-engine appears to be decidedly more dangerous than either the cage or ladders. Here again a distinction requires to be made between the single-rod and the double-rod machines, and the Prussian statistics include many of the latter. It will be readily understood that a fall in a naked shaft with few fixed platforms is much more likely to be fatal than a fall in the shaft of a single-rod man-engine which is closed with the exception of the manhole at intervals of 12~~

~~feet. The Belgian warocquéres are rendered safer than the Harz or Saxon man-engines by having a railing round the pack of each platform on the rod. Some of the double-rod machines are made with large platforms so that two persons can stand on them, one going up and the other going down, or both travelling in the same direction. The use of double-rod man-engines has been entirely abandoned in the United Kingdom. The death-rate from accidents on man-engines in Cornwall and Devon during the nine years 1878 to 1881 was 0°17 per 1000 persons using them, whilst the annual death-rate per 1000 persons using ladders was slightly higher, viz., 0°19. If the actual distance travelled were taken into account, the scale would turn more decidedly in favour of the man-engine.~~

~~The cost of raising and lowering men by the man-engine is not great. At Dolcoath, a tin mine in Cornwall approaching 400 fathoms in depth (see figs. 62, 63), it is reckoned that 14d. per man per day covers all expenses, including interest upon the capital expended and depreciation of plant.~~

~~13. Dressing or Mechanical Preparation of Ores.—In a Dressing js large number of cases the mineral, as it is raised from the of ores. |~~

~~niine, is not ready for sale. It usually requires to be sub- jected to mechanical processes whereby the good ore is entirely or partly freed from valueless veinstone. These processes, which in a few special instances are aided by calcination in furnaces, are known as the dressing or mechanical preparation of the ores. Asa rule the valuable ore is specifically heavier than the veinstone, and most of the separating processes are based upon the fact that the heavy particles of ore will fall in water more quickly than the light particles of veinstone.~~

~~The processes of mechanical preparation may be classified as follows :—(1) washing and hand-sorting ; (2) disintegra- tion, or reduction in size; (3) classification by size or by equivalence ; (4) concentration.~~

~~(1) Sometimes the ore coming from the mine requires Washing),~~

~~simply to be freed from adhering particles of clay in order~~

~~DRESSING. |~~

~~*to be rendered fit for sale, at other times the washing is necessary as a preliminary process previous to sorting by hand. 'The operation is performed either by raking the ore backwards and forwards upon a grating under a stream of water, or in a box containing water, or, thirdly, by means of an inclined revolving iron drum worked by hand or any other motive power. The machines used for this purpose, known as washing trommels, are revolving cylinders or truncated cones of sheet-iron provided with teeth inside. The ore is fed in at one end, is subjected to the action of a stream of water, and is discharged at the other end.*~~

~~*The stuff, z.¢., the mixed ore, veinstone, and country rock, having been cleansed, it is now possible to make a separation by hand. Women and children are generally employed for this work, as their labour is cheaper and their sight sharper than that of men. The stuff is spread out ona table, and various classes are picked out according to the nature of the products furnished by the mine. Thus in a lead mine we may have—(a) clean galena, (6) mixed ore, 7.¢., pieces consisting partly of galena and partly of barren veinstone, (c) barren veinstone and country rock. This is a most simple case; very frequently we have to deal with a vein producing ores of two metals, especially in the case of lead and zinc, and then the classification into various qualities becomes more com- plicated.*~~

~~*(2) Reduction in size is necessary for two reasons. Even when an ore is sufficiently clean for the smelter, the large lumps are often crushed by the miner for the sake of obtaining a fair sample of the whole, or supplying a product which is at once fit for the furnace. The chief reason, however, for disintegration lies in the fact that the particles of ore are generally found enclosed in or adhering to particles of barren veinstone.*~~

~~*The disintegration is effected by hand or by machinery. Large blocks of ore and veinstone are broken by men with large sledge hammers, and the reduction in size is continued very often by women with smaller hammers. Sometimes the blow of the hammer is directed so as to separate the good from the poorer parts, and hand-picking accompanies this process, called cobbing. Ore may be crushed fine by a flat-headed hammer (bucking iron) on an iron plate.*~~

~~*The machines used for reducing ores to smaller sizes are very numerous ; here it is impossible to do more than briefly call attention to those most commonly used. These are stone-breakers, stamps, rolls, mills, and centrifugal pulverizers.*~~

~~*The stone-breaker, or rock-breaker, is a machine with two jaws, one of which is made to approach the other, and*~~

~~*Fig. 98.—Blake's Stonebreaker, improved by Marsden. so crack any stone which lies between them. The best- known stone-breaker is the machine invented by Blake, which has rendered inestimable services to the miner for*~~

~~*the last twenty years, and the introduction of which con- stituted a most important step in advance in the art of ore-dressing. Its mode of action is very simple. When the shaft A (fig. 98) revolves, an excentric raises the "'pitman" B, and this, by means of the toggle-plates C, C, causes the movable jaw D to approach the fixed jaw E by about 2 inch at the bottom. When the pitman descends the jaw is drawn back by an india-rubber spring. The jaws are usually fluted, the ridges of one jaw being opposite the grooves of the other, and they are so con- structed that the wearing parts are quickly and easily replaced.*~~

~~*Mr Marsden of Leeds has lately introduced a pulverizer, constructed on the principle of the stone-breaker, which will reduce large stones to the finest powder in one opera- tion. The moving jaw has an up-and-down as well as the old backwards-and-forwards motion, and the stones are first cracked and then ground by the double action.*~~

~~*Stamps are pestles and mortars worked by machinery. gtamps.*~~

~~*The construction of the modern California stamp mill with revolving heads is explained in Gop, vol. x. p. 747, and the description need not be repeated. In Cornwall the older form with rectangular heads still prevails.*~~

~~*It is impossible to give any correct average figures representing the work done by a stamping mill, because this varies with the hardness of the stuff treated and the fineness to which it must be reduced. However, it is usual in Cornwall to reckon | ton of tinstuff and in California 1 to 1) ton of gold quartz stamped per horse-power in twenty-four hours.*~~

~~*Stamps are principally used in dressing the ores of gold, silver, and tin, but are occasionally employed for those of copper and lead. The stamps described at vol. x. p. 747 act simply by gravity. Another form, which has met with favour in the Lake Superior district, is the direct- acting or Ball stamp, which works like a steam hammer, the blow of the head being assisted by the pressure of steam. At the Calumet and Hecla Mill, Lake Superior, each Ball stamp is capable of crushing 130 tons in twenty- four hours. Ina third kind of stamps, the heads are lifted by a crank and the power of the up-stroke compresses a cushion of air (pneumatic stamps) or a spring, storing up power which makes the down-stroke strike a heavier blow.*~~

~~*Revolving rolls were introduced in the west of England Rolls.*~~

~~*in the early part of the present century to replace bucking by hand. The machine, now often known as the Cornish crusher, consists of two cast-iron or steel cylinders which revolve towards each other, whilst at the same time they are kept pressed together by levers or springs. The cylinders or rolls are generally from 18 inches to 2 feet or 2 feet 8 inches in diameter and 12 to 22 inches wide.*~~

~~*Stone mills constructed like flour mills are employed in Mills.*~~

~~*some countries for reducing ores to powder; and the arrastra, which consists of heavy stones dragged round upon a stone bed, has rendered good service in grinding and amalgamating gold and silver ores, in spite of its being slow and cumbersome. Edge-runners (Chilian mills) also deserve mention.*~~

~~*Tron mills, known as pans, with grinding surfaces made of chilled cast-iron and arranged so that they can be quickly and easily replaced when worn out, are greatly in vogue in the United States for the treatment of ores of*~~

~~gold and silver ; the ore delivered to them is already finely divided, and they are intended, not only still further to reduce the size of the particles, but also and more especially to effect the amalgamation of the precious metals with quicksilver. The pulverizers used in Cornwall for grinding grains of tin ore with a little waste still adhering to them are also iron mills. ;~~

~~The centrifugal pulverizers are machines by which the~~

~~Centri- fugal pulver- izers,~~

~~Classifi-~~

~~464~~

~~pieces of ore are thrown with great velocity against bars or arms, or against each other, and so reduced to powder ; in other machines iron balls or iron rollers are whirled by centrifugal force against an iron casing and grind any mineral contained inside it. These pulverizers are much less used than stone-breakers, stamps, and rolls for the dis- integration of metallic ores. ;~~

~~(3) Classification of a crushed ore into sizes is absolutely~~

~~cation of necessary in some cases and advisable in others, because~~

~~ores.~~

~~Coneen- tration.~~

~~Jiggers.~~

~~the subsequent concentration is dependent upon the fall of the particles in water, as will be presently explained. Classification by size is effected by sieves. Hand sieves and flat sieves placed one above the other have been super- seded at most dressing establishments by cylindrical or conical revolving screens known as trommels. These screens are made of wire web or of perforated sheets of metal, and they are often arranged so as to discharge one into the other, so that the ore from a crusher can quickly be separated into classes of various sizes.~~

~~*With sizes of less than 1 millimetre (1; inch) trommels are no longer employed, and recourse is had to the so-called separators or classifiers. These are boxes in the shape of inverted cones or pyramids into which the finely crushed ore is brought by means of a current of water; a jet of clean water is often made to rise up in the bottom; the larger and the specifically heavier particles fall and are discharged with a stream of water at or near the bottom, whilst the smaller and specifically lighter particles flow away at the top. The separators do not effect a true classi- fication by size ; they merely cause a division by equevalence, a term which will be explained immediately.*~~

~~*(4) We now have to deal with the enriching of the ore, or the concentration of the valuable particles into as small a bulk as iseconomically advantageous. The concentration is generally brought about by the fall of the particles in water. Occasionally the fall in air is utilized; mercury is employed as a collecting agent in the case of gold and silver, and in a few instances magnetism can be applied.*~~

~~*The concentration in water depends upon the difference in specific gravity of the valuable ore and the waste vein- stone or rock. A piece of galena with a specific gravity of 7-5 sinks to the bottom more quickly than a similar piece of quartz, the density of which is only 2°6. Nevertheless a large piece of quartz may fall to the bottom as quickly as a small piece of galena. Particles which have equal velocities of fall, though differing in size and specific gravity, are said to be equal-falling, or equivalent. P. von Rittinger shows that a sphere of quartz of 4 inch in diameter would sink in water exactly as quickly asa sphere of galena of ;', inch in diameter, and these two particles are therefore equal-falling. Consequently, before we can separate properly by water it is necessary to classify the particles by size, so that equivalence shall not prevent a separation or lessen its sharpness. Jt is nevertheless true that in the early part of the fall of equivalent grains the influence of the specific gravity preponderates, and the denser particles take the lead; therefore, by a frequent repetition of very small falls, particles which have not been closely sized may still be separated.*~~

~~*The principal machine for concentrating particles of sizes ranging between 1 inch and #5 inch is the jig or jigger. The hand jigger is merely a round*~~

~~sieve which is charged with the crushed ore and then moved up and down ina tub full of water. The particles gradually arrange them- selves in layers, the heaviest on the bottom and the lightest at the top. On lifting out the sieve the light waste can be skimmed off with a scraper, leaving the concentrated pro- duct below ready for the smelter or for further treatment. Similar sieves worked by machinery were for a long time employed in dressing establishments, but the introduction~~

~~of the improved continuous jiggers has led to their The con-~~

~~abandonment in all works of any importance. tinuous jigger is one of the =~~

~~most useful dressing ma- chines of the present day. It consists of a box or hutch divided by a partial partition into two compartments ; in one is fixed a flat sieve s (fig. 99), which carries the ore, and in the other a piston p is made to work up and down by means of an ex- centric. The hutch being full of water, the movement of the piston causes the water to rise up and fall down through the ore, lifting it and letting it fall repeatedly. The effect of these frequent lifts and fallsistocauseasepa- ration of the previously sized ore into layers of rich mineral at the bottom, light waste at the top, and particles of ore mixed with waste in the middle.~~

~~The great value of these jiggers is the continuous discharge of the products without stoppages for their removal. Several methods are in vogue, viz., the end discharge, the central discharge, and the discharge through the meshes of the sieve. With the first, the enriched product lying at the bottom of the sieve passes out through openings at the end of the jigger, and the amount escaping is governed by an adjustable cap or shutter, by which the size of the openings can be increased or diminished at pleasure; the middle product can be discharged by openings placed a little higher up, whilst the waste is washed over the top of the end of the jigger at each ae Very often a first sieve simply separates a concen- trated product and discharges the poorer product into a second sieve, where a similar separation is effected. With the central discharge, a pipe is brought up through the bottom of the~~

~~*sieve, and the size of the opening for the escape of the concentrated ore is regulated by a cylindrical cap which can be raised or lowered by ascrew. The discharge through the sieve is especially adapted for the finer products from the crusher, though it is also used in some cases for grains up to $ inch in diameter. The mesh of the sieve is ehosen so that the par- ticles under treatment will just pass through, but above the sieve a layer of clean ore is} placed which prevents * {2 anything but the heavier particles from being dis- charged. The pulsations of the water, as before, cause a separation into layers, and the heavy rieh particles find their way through the bed and drop into the hutch, whence they can be drawn off through a hole at pleasure. The poorer part passes over a simple sill at the end of the sieve, or to a second sieve if necessary. Three or four sieves are occasionally arranged in a row in one machine. Y'*~~

~~*Fig. 100 is a section through the two sieves of a Harz sand jig. The pistons act in the manner explained by fig. 99.*~~

~~*pr WATER TROUGH. | — =3*~~

~~*TELE Ee IKE*~~

~~*The smaller sizes are concentrated by a variety of machines. The action of many of them is based upon the behaviour of particles carried down an inclined plane by a thin stream of water. If the gradient of the plane and the strength of the thin current are properly arranged, the denser particles will be deposited and the specifically ighter ones washed away, although they may be equal-falling if allowed to settle in deep water.*~~

~~*Frue vanner,*~~

~~*Buddles,*~~

~~*MIN*~~

~~*The principal machines for concentrating fine sands and slimes are the frame, rotating frame, percussion frame, side-blow percussion frame, revolving belt and Frue vanner, the hand buddle, the round buddle, and the keeve.*~~

~~*The frame is simply an inclined wooden table upon which a thin deposit is formed by the sheet of ore-and-waste-bearing water which is made to flow over it gently. The stream is then stopped and the deposit washed off by hand or automatically, aud collected in pits for subsequent retreatment by similar appliances if necessary.*~~

~~*The rotating frame is a round table with a very flat convex conical surface; the ore for suspension flows on at one part of the centre and forms a thin deposit which is richest at the top and poorest at the bottom, and this deposit is washed off so as to form two classes by means of jets of water, under which the table passes as it turns round. Concave rotating tables, fed at the circumfer- ence, are also employed.*~~

~~*The percussion frame, the Stossheerd of the Germans, is a table suspended by four chains which receives a succession of blows from a cam in the direction of the stream flowing over it; after each blow it bumps against a piece of timber before receiving the next blow. These bumps cause the ore to settle, and after a thick deposit is formed it is dug off with the shovel, the upper end being richer than the middle or the tail.*~~

~~*Rittinger's side-blow percussion frame is a suspended rectangular table ABCD (fig. 101), receiving blows and bumps on the side and*~~

~~*not on theend. A stream of orey ae we ow Rutt*~~

~~*DRESSING.*~~ |

~~*clean water W is supplied by the other head-boards H, H, H; and the table is pushed out by cams in the direction of the arrow, and is driven back by a spring so that the cross-piece E strikes against a bumping-block K. The light par- ticles travel down the table much faster than the heavy ones, and take a comparatively straight course; whereas the heavy and richer particles remain on the table, subject to the influence of the side-blows, for a much longer time, and travelling alongacurved path reach the bottomat F. The iniddle class is discharged at G aud the poor waste at K. The exact degree of richness of the products can be regulated by alter- : ing the pihctanny atrios of wood Fig. 101. which can be turned so as to divide the stream of ore and waste where thought most desirable. The great advantage*~~

~~*of this machine over the old percussion frame is its continuous action. The Frue vanner (fig. 102) may be looked upon as an improved form of Brunton's simple revolving belt. It is an endless band of india- rubber cloth, flanged on each side, which revolves slowly in QS the direction of the arrows, whilst at the same time it is shaken sideways by a crank motion. The orey water is fed on at A, clean water at B. The natural path of the particles is*~~

~~*water S is fed on at the corner A;*~~

~~*LAUNDER*~~

~~*Fig. 102.*~~

~~*down the inclined belt, but the specifically heavier ones settle upon*~~

~~*it and are carried upwards. Those that can resist the action of the stream of clean water at B go over the end and are washed off as the belt passes through the tank. The poor stuff falls into the waste launder. The degree of concentration can be regulated by the slope and speed of the belt and the strength of the streams of ore and water. The Frue vanner has the disadvantage that it makes ouly two classes, rich and poor, without any intermediate product.*~~

~~*The hand buddle isa rectangular wooden box with a sloping bottom. A stream of fine ore and waste suspended in water is fed in at the upper end and gradually forms a deposit on the bed of the buddle. A boy with a broom keeps the top of the sediment smooth, so as to ensure regularity of action. After a thick deposit has accumulated, it is << out in sections which decrease in richness from the upper end (head) to the lower end (fail).*~~

~~*Round buddles, like rotating frames, are of two kinds, convex and concave. The convex round buddle (figs. 103! and 104) is a circular pit with a truncated cone, or head, of varying size in the centre, and a bottom sloping towards the circumference. The orey stream A falling over this head runs down gently, depositing the heaviest particles near the top, the lighter ones further down, whilst the*~~

~~1 Henry T. Ferguson, "On the Mechanical Appliances Used for Dressing Tin and Copper Ores in Cornwall," Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1878, pl. 41.~~

~~ING~~

~~lightest of all flow away at C. even by revolving brushes D.~~

~~465~~

~~The surface of the sediment is kept This machine may be compared to~~

~~20FEEr~~

~~Scale.~~

~~a number of hand buddles arranged radially round a centre. The deposit that is formed is dug out in rings of varying richness.~~

~~Fig. 104. The concave buddle is a circular pit with the bottom sloping to-~~

~~wards the centre. The stream of ore is fed all round the circum- ference, and runs inwards to the middle, where the lightest particles escape. The rich head is of course near the circumference.~~

~~The keeve is a large tub in which the fine stuff is stirred with Keeve. water and then is allowed to settle from a state of suspension while blows are being struck on the side of the tub. The deposit is afterwards scraped out in layers which increase in richness as they approach the bottom.~~

~~The series of processes employed in dressing an ore varies, Dressing not only according to the nature of the particular mineral different to be concentrated, but also according to the size of its ores. particles and the nature of the other minerals with which it is associated.~~

~~With gold the reduction in size is usually effected by Gold. stone-breakers and stamps, and much of the metal is then caught by mercury ; what escapes is concentrated with its accompanying pyrites by inclined tables covered with blankets, or by buddles, and the concentrate is treated by amalgamation or chlorination. See Goxp, vol. x. p. 746.~~

~~*In the case of silver the ore is frequently pulverized by Silver. stamps, and the resulting pulp amalgamated in pans or barrels. The ore may also be concentrated by any of the various machines described, and delivered to the smelter. Many of the ores of silver are sent to the smelting works without any concentration by water, as this would cause a serious loss.*~~

~~*Lead ore is generally crushed by rolls, often after a pre- Lead. liminary reduction in size by the stone-breaker. The crushed ore is classified by revolving screens down to the size of 1 mm., and the resulting grains concentrated by jigging ; dredge, or grains of ore and matrix, must be recrushed, sized, and jigged. The finer sizes are classified by pyramidal boxes and concentrated by frames, rotating tables, and buddles.*~~

~~*Zinc ore is dressed in the same way as lead ore ; and, as Zinc. galena and zinc-blende are frequently intimately associated together, it is necessary to separate them by the use of the jig, buddle, and frame.*~~

~~*XVI. — 59*~~

~~*Tin.*~~

~~*Copper.*~~

~~*Loss in dressing,*~~

~~*Separa- tion by magnet- ism.*~~

~~*Recent*~~

~~*improve-*~~

~~*ments,*~~

~~*466*~~

~~*Tin-bearing rock is crushed by the stone breaker and then stamped fine. The resulting sand and slime may be concentrated by the repeated use of the round buddle, with the keeve for a final cleaning; but often the sand only is enriched by the buddle, whilst the very finest particles, constituting an*~~

~~*almost impalpable mud (slime) when mixed with water, are treated by frames. When much pyrites is present it is necessary to make a preliminary concentra- tion and roast the enriched product (witts) in a furnace. The calcination converts the heavy iron and arsenical pyrites into a light oxide which can be got rid of with the rest of the waste by buddling and framing. The final product from the keeve is clean enough to approach pure cassiterite in the percentage of metal. Alluvial tin ore is concentrated in sluice-boxes, and sometimes by jiggers, after a preliminary treatment in a puddling-machine (GOLD, vol. x. p. 745) if there are balls of clay which have to be broken up. When the alluvial ore occurs as a hard con- glomerate (cement), it has to be stamped.*~~

~~*Copper ores are treated by crushing by rolls and some- times stamps, sizing by trommels, and then jigging and buddling ; but, as some of the ores are very friable and easily carried away by water, hand-picking is employed to a greater extent than with lead and tin ore, and the enrichment by water is not carried so far on account of the inevitable loss that would ensue. The amount of concentration depends upon the distance from the smelting works, and the mine-owner has to calculate whether it is best to get a low price for a large quantity of ore, after paying the carriage, or a higher price for a smaller lot (parcel) when due allowance has been made for the cost of dressing and loss sustained in that process. Thus, for instance, in Cornwall, the ore containing copper pyrites is dressed so as to contain only from 5 to 8 or 9 per cent. of metal, because it can easily be conveyed to Swansea by sea, and because further reduction in bulk would cause greater loss in value than the saving of freight.*~~

~~*The loss in dressing is very considerable. P. von Rittinger estimates it at from 30 to 50 per cent., and stubborn facts bear out his conclusions. Heaps of refuse from dressing floors are frequently worked over again with profit; and in the year 1881 no less than 909 tons of "black tin" (i.e, concentrated tin ore fit for the smelter), worth £35,283, were extracted from the muddy water allowed to flow away from the dressing floors of some of the principal Cornish tin mines.*~~

~~*The fall in air has been employed instead of the fall in water for concentrating purposes, and several ingenious air-jigs have been*~~

~~constructed and worked upon this principle.~~

~~In exceptional cases magnetic attraction may be utilized. Mag- netic iron can be separated in this way, and the magnetic process 1s applied for treating mixed blende and chalybite, the specific gravities of which are too close to render concentration by water practicable. The mixed ore is calcined, and the chalybite is thus converted into~~

~~magnetic iron, which can be extracted by a magnetic separator, leaving saleable blende.~~

~~Before concluding this part of the subject we will briefly~~

~~enumerate the principal improvements that have been |~~

~~made in metal-mining during the last quarter of a century. They are as follows :—diamond-drill for prospecting ; machine drills for driving, sinking, and stoping; use of compressed air for winding underground ; stronger explo- sives, especially the nitro-glycerin compounds dynamite~~

~~and blasting gelatin; increased use of steel for various | purposes ; Blake's stone-breaker and continuous jiggers ;~~

~~extended application of hydraulic mining ; larger employ- ment of electricity both for blasting purposes and for signalling by telegraph and telephone. It may be reason-~~

~~ably hoped that ere long electricity will render increased |~~

~~services to the miner for lighting the workings and for the transmission of power.~~

~~MINING~~

~~14. Recent Legislation affecting Mines in the United King- Recent~~

~~}~~

~~[LEGISLATION.~~

~~*dom.!—In England the person owning the surface of a free- hold is prima facie entitled to all the minerals underneath, excepting in the case of mines of gold and silver, which be- long to the crown. The crown, however, does not claim gold and silver extracted from the ores of the baser metals. The ownership of the minerals can be, and often is, severed from that of the surface, the latter being sold whilst the mineral rights are reserved by the original owner. Local customs, now regulated by Acts of Parliament, are still in force in Derbyshire (High Peak Mining Customs and Mineral Courts Act, 1851, 14 & 15 Vict. c. 94, and the Derbyshire Mining Customs and Mineral Courts Act, 1852, 15 & 16 Vict. c. 43) and in the Forest of Dean (1 & 2 Vict. c. 43, and 24 & 25 Vict. c. 40). The Stannaries Act (32 & 33 Vict. c. 19) regulates the commercial dealings of mining companies in Cornwall and Devon, and provides for their liquidation.*~~

~~*The working of mines in the United Kingdom is con- trolled by five Acts of Parliament, viz., "The Coal Mines Regulation Act, 1872" (35 & 36 Vict. c. 76), "The Metalliferous Mines Regulation Acts, 1872 and 1877" (35 & 36 Vict. c. 77, and 38 & 39 Vict c. 39), "The Stratified Ironstone Mines (Gunpowder) Act, 1881" (44 & 45 Vict. c. 26), and "The Slate Mines (Gunpowder) Act, 1882" (45 Vict. c. 3). The last three Acts simply refer to the annual returns, and exemptions from certain restrictions concerning the use of gunpowder.*~~

~~*The Coal Mines Regulation Act applies to mines of coal, stratified ironstone, shale, and fire-clay. The Metalliferous Mines Regulation Act applies to all mines uot included under the Coal Mines Act, and therefore controls not only workings for lead, tin, copper, and iron, commonly known as mines, but also the salt-mines, and under- ground quarries worked for stone, slate, or other earthy minerals. The principal provisions of the Coal Mines Regulation Act have been set forth at vol. vi. p. 78; those of the Metalliferous Mines Regulation Act are similar, but less strict owing to the almost complete absence of fire-damp. One important difference is that the manager of a mine under the Metalliferous Act need not hold any certificate of competency or service.*~~

~~*Other Acts of Parliament are the "Explosives Act, 1875" (88 Vict. c. 17), regulating the manner in which explosives are stored the 'Elementary*~~

~~*Education Acts, 1876 and 1880" (38 & 39 Vict. c. 79, and 43 & 44 Vict. c. 23), regulating the employment of children ; the '"' Factory and Workshop Act, 1878" (41 Vict. c. 16), which applies to the dressing floors of mines under the Metalliferous Mines Regulation Act.*~~

~~*The statute of Elizabeth (48 Eliz. c. 2) which was passed for raising money for the relief of the poor mentions coal mines, but omits other mines; these have been made subject to poor- rates by "The Rating Act, 1874" (37 & 38 Vict. c. 54). The "Employers' Liability Act, 1880" (43 & 44 Vict. c. 42), extends and regulates the liability of employers to make compensation for personal injuries suffered by workmen in their service. Finally, if, as sometimes happens, works are put up at a mine for roasting copper ores with comnion salt in order to extract the metal by the wet way, the provisions of the "Alkali, &c., Works Regulation Act, 1881" (44 & 45 Vict. c. 37), must be attended to.*~~

~~*It is thus very evident that the laws affecting mines have received most important additious during the last few years.*~~

~~*15. Accidents in Mines.—Mining is one of the occupa- Accident)*~~

~~*tions that may decidedly be called hazardous. This fact has been thoroughly impressed upon the public mind by explosions of fire-damp in collieries ; but, though accidents of this kind are appalling, owing to the number of victims who perish at one time, fire-damp is by no means the worst enemy with which the miner has to contend. Falls of roof and sides both in collieries and metal mines are far more fatal in their results. With the risks attending the collier's calling we need not deal, as statistics upon*~~

~~*1 For information concerning the laws relating to mines in the United. Kingdom, see W. Bainbridge, A Treatise on the Law of Mines and Minerals, 1878, and Arundel Rogers, The Law relating to Mines, Minerals, and Quarries in Great Britain and Ireland, with a Sum-*~~

~~*| mary of the Laws of Foreign States, 1876.*~~

~~this subject have been already given (see Coat, vol. vi. | mines prove that the occupation of the metal miner is p. 79); but the figures below relating to metalliferous | very little less dangerous.~~

~~Mines classed under the Metalliferous Mines Regulation Act in Great Britain and Ireland.~~

~~Number of Deaths from Accidents.~~

~~Death-rate from Accidents per~~

~~Persons Employed. 1000 persons employed.~~

~~Under Ground.~~

~~hl La aoe Genera] Falls of In Miscel- round, Under | Above | Under Ground Under Ground. | Above Ground. Total. Ground.| Shafts. feces. Total. pee abe ia | a | '| Above Ground. 1874 34,036 22,325 40 34 15 89 14 103 1°82 1875 34,905 23,168 32 35 | 33 | 100 19 119 2-36 | O89 2-05 1876 34,109 23,388 25 16 23 64 6 70 7: ales Aca 1877 34,095 23,300 41 21 24 86 11 97 2°52 0°47 1°69 1878 30,624 20,834 27 19 23 69 8 77 3235 | 0-38 149 1879 28,265 18,795 24 16 16 56 8 64 1-98 | 0-42 i-n6 1880 32,045 20,863 52,908 31 ili 18) 7a 13 84 PFI | 0°62 1°59 1881 33,291 21,651 54,942 | . 36 22 32 90 9 99 270 | O41 1:80 1882 33,814 21,692 55,506 30 27 17 74 18 92 218 | 083 1°65 Total and averages = oe ; 295,184 196,016 491,200 =~~

~~This table! shows that the average accidental mortality of the | ——- ————__-~~

~~persons employed wrderground in metalliferous mines is 2°37 per Minerals. ————__|__ Quantities, Values. 1000. During the ten years 1873-1882 the corresponding mor- Tate, E ae | tality at mines under the Coal Mines Act was 2°57, showing a (CO bonnenconosoooconnenoeeeeeeeneeoeeed | LEC GT 65,528,327 10 0 difference of only 0°20 per 1000 in favour of the metal miner ; and | | [TOM OTC .sssssessseeseseeeeseeeeteeeeees Be 6,201,068 6 6 when we take the well-kuown metalliferous distriet of Cornwall a 52. ee 1 ee ; é aud Devon we find a death-rate for the ten years mentioned of | |~~

~~Lead ore… eeeeeseessessencessssens 64,702 5 656,725 0 0 2°63 per 1000, which therefore exeeeds that of coal mines. . serie 35,527 7 110,048 10 8 Referenee to the table shows that more than one-third of the | | Gog Py CSsrrrrrrreetesteestecceeeneees ad BA ee aoe deaths were eaused by falls of ground. The actual pereentages of S 5 19° 358 7 0 the deaths are as follows:—falls of ground 35°5, in shafts 26-2, ie and nickel ore .. 63 14 309 12 8 miscellaneous 25°1, on surface 13°1. The aecidents in shafts are | | M@nganese….. — 2,884 0 6441 5 0 ; : PY Ol fiemtnae seers 2. « oeSeeceareereresesesn 54 7 5644 1 9 due to falls from ladders, cages, and man-engines, ropes and chains | | Ochre and UMbeT. seseeeeeeeeeeeee, 7,996 9 12,986 7 0 breaking, overwinding, and other eauses, whilst the miscellaneous | | Arsenic…...sssssseseessenseeeseene 6,156 8 45,070 7 6 aecidents include numerous fatalities in connexion with blasting | | (UOT SPar, GC…..seeeesesees 372 14 253 10 0 F : oe) 2,401,421 0 1,200,210 0 0 operations. The surfaee accidents are mostly eaused by persons se om eal 2998290 0 149,110 0 0 beeoming entangled in maehinery, and there have been several fatal | | Barytes……..eeeeesssssseeesesesseeeeees 21,313 11 23,894 3 10 boiler explosions, Sundry minerals, including In spite, however, of all the dangers to which miners are exposed, ere expan, calapa = eae 2) they are less likely to be the vietims of accident than railway ser- vants, among whom the rate of fatal aecidents varies from 2°5 per The total value of minerals produeed in 1881 was £76,201,695, 2s., 1000 on passenger traffie lines to 3°5 per 1000 on lines possessing | exelusive of slate, building-stone, limestone, and other stones worked a heavy goods traffie.? ; by mines and quarries. Statisties coneerning aeeidents in mines are published by many The quantity of eoal raised in 1882 was 156,499,977 tons. foreign countries; the most minute are those prepared by the The metals obtained from the ores produeed in the United~~

~~Government mining engineers in Prussia. The average annual | Kingdom in 1881 were— death-rates per 1000 persons employed below ground and above ground from aeeeidents in mines in Prussia during the fifteen years~~

~~Metals. Quantities. Values.~~

~~1867 to 1881 have been:— -coal mines 2°952, lignite mines 2°474, £~~

~~metal inines 1°446, other mines 1°693, all the mines together 2°476. || Gold… scsssessssetsscerseeseesetenseeeeeee 18 In making any comparison between these figures and those we have Silver, ae oS geen a { 67,140 given for Great Britain, it is necessary to recollect that the mines ‘oi 20,361,122 under the Coal Mines Act inelude some workings whieh in Prussia 839,680~~

~~would be classed as metalliferous, and that British mines under the Metalliferons Aet inelude underground stone-quarries.~~

~~Before coneluding the subject of aeeidents, it is neeessary to point out that sueeessful efforts have been made of late years to mitigate their results. In the first place, persons equipped with~~

~~£22,514,508~~

~~the Fleuss breathing apparatus ean now enter mines after explosions, The total valne of minerals and metals obtained from the mines in spite of the noxious and irrespirable gases, and save lives whieh and other mineral workings of the United Kingdom in 1881 was— would otherwise be saerifieed.? Secondly, by means of the instrue- £~~

~~tion afforded by classes established by the St John Ainbulance | Coal… ssessesssessessesessessessesesesesssnssoenseseeesesanessssteaeenees 65,528,327~~

~~Metals, as above.. — 22,514,508~~

~~Association, miners are learning how best to render first aid to the maneaiosiret red mee iI a aa 2,817,652~~

~~injured before the arrival of a medieal man, and there is no doubt that many valuable lives have been lost in times past for want of £90,860,487~~

~~this knowledge. Thirdly, a vast amount of good has been done From these tables it is evident that coal and iron are by far the by the establishment of Miners’ Permanent Relief Societies in | most important mineral productions of the United Kingdom, as 94 different districts, which afford aid to persons~~

~~disabled by accidents | per cent. of the total value is due to these two snbstanecs.~~

~~and to the dependent relatives of those who have unfortunately Franee.— The mineral productions of Franee® for the year 1880 are lost their lives by any mining fatality. set forth in the following table:—~~

~~16. Useful Mincrals produced in Various Parts of the Globc.~~

~~Values.~~

~~Quantities.~~

~~Great Britain and Ireland.—The mineral produce of the United Metric Tons. Francs. Kingdom for the year 1881 is summed by Mr Robert Hunt* as 19,362,000 | 246,687,000 foll 243,000 2,755,000 ne 144/000 1.023,000~~

~~2,874,000 peal~~

~~'1 y 133,000 114,~~

~~Frota Reports of H.M. Inspectors of Mines for the year 1882, ea 4690.00 p. Xxxvi. : , : 333,000 11,814,000~~

~~2 The Rate of Fatal and Non-Fatal Accidents in and about Mines 367,000: 6,719,000 aw ailways, with the Cost of Insurance against sueh Accidents —~~

~~ee, Ut u a ' Genera. totalsseesssessesssees ee 23,514,000 | 290,711,000~~

~~by Franeis G. P. Neison, London, 1880.~~

~~3 Reports of H.M. Inspectors of Mines for the year 1881, Mr ; 7 Bell's Peon ¢. 463. f ' 5 Statistique de Industrie Minérale et des A 'ppareils & Vapeur en~~

~~4 Mineral Statistics of the United Kingdom for 1881, p. ix. France et en Alyéric, Année 1880, Paris, 1882, p. 45.~~

The quantities of metal produced in Frauce from native and foreign ores in 18801 were—

Pig iron… 1,725,000 metrie tons. Nickel…....ccssees 30 metric tons. Lead…....0s0 ‘ 6,500 ,, “9 0) il Eyeeeereo scot 31 kilogrammes COpper. ...- ceeeeeee 3,400, “5 Silver…sseseeeeeee 40,400 –

ZINE. ..cccerceeseees 16,200, Aluminium…... . 1,150 3

Germany.—The mining industry of the German empire is of

ING

high importance. The output of the mines in 1881 is shown by the following table,—taken from the Stat. Jahrb. Siir das Deutsche Reich, Berlin, 1888, p. 27. The production of common salt, potassium ehloride, and other salts from brine is also considerable. The total quantity for the German empire in 1881 was 698,000 metrie tons, worth 38,567,000 marks, including 113,200 tons of potassium elloride valued at 14,090,000 marks.

[MINERAL PRODUCE OF

Silver | Iron Pyrites Total Value

Other Pe Rock- | Potash and and other ae of all the Coal. Lignite. | ‘gai. | ‘Salts, | Ho” OF Gold | Vitriol and cane Mining Ore. | Alum Ores. *| Products. Uae | Unte | Unit | Unis | Unit Unit | Unit Unit 1000 1000 1000 | 1000 | 1000)) } 1000 1000 1000 aan Metrie Metrie Metrie | Metric | Metrie Mctrie | Metrie | Metrie | Metrie Metrie Secs Tons. Tons. Tons. | Tons. Tous. Tons. | Tons. Tons. Tons. Tons. ss [= a3780°5. | o4l2-2 | 2078 | 545-4 | 39063 0-1 142-0 33-2 326,423 Poe ccececers 519°8 18-1 0°9 200 756 ese eA! 15 6,124 : 3707°8 609°7 eh . 23°8 26-7 0-1 1-2 33,057 wee aco 84-2 19°3 oes 0-1 m0 752 94 650 oot ose eee 5 0-0 3 110 mon Soncesaéocenane . 30°7 Bee 133°8 =o . 06 1,115 Meeklenburg….s.sseseeeees ner 12°3 oe ae oot 2 46 Thuringia we cocete 0°9 735°3 284 0-4 1-4 1,626 Brunswick. oc 273°7 oe or 96°4 × 18-0 1,578

~~oon 766°1 19°0 360°5 21 6,344 108-9 eae eee ese =e 965 con Bec 32°3 003 170 560°9 3-2 1096-0 97 German OMpire…….seccecccccres 48688 2 12852°3 311°9 905°9 54119 164°8 523°7 26°8 146°1 67°7 384,000 LUXCMDULE ....—ecccccccccseccccce tee oe =09 ose 2161-9 eee eee tee see see 4,994 Together ……ccccesecccccccccsereeeee 48688°2 12852°3 | 311°9 905°9 7573°8 523°7 26°8 14671 677 388,994~~

~~Austria-Hungary. Hungarian empire may : Transylvania for gold and silver ; Styria produces much of the iron ; quicksilver is yielded by the mines of Idria in Carniola, lead and silver by those of Przibrain_ in Bohemia ; salt is obtained in the Austrian Alps and in Galicia, which also produces petroleum and ozokerite.~~

~~The production of minerals and metals in Austria year 1881 was as follows :—~~

~~—Among the famous mines of the Austria-~~

~~5 during the~~

~~Gold OFe……..seceee 784 metric tons—Metallic gold……. 18°6 kilogrammes.~~

~~Silver Ore …...2+0. 12,383 ,, os silver…... 31,359 53~~

~~Quicksilver ore….. 48,20 a5 » — oo mereury.. 398 metric tons,~~

~~Copper Ore…...-+. 4445, » — » copper… 481 ,, *~~

~~Tron ore…....-----.. 618,963 4, so 4 ae a + “ eS § i» Gid……. 6385 ,, 3~~

~~Lead ore…... 13,542, » “—\ Lisdeege «me 2‘996 3 .~~

~~ZANCIOLE ....200-0-s-=- Dss9) » —letallie zinc ……. 4,819 ,, op~~

~~Manganese orc….. Oe109) 39~~

~~Graphite……..0-. TSO) Tse “a~~

~~*Petroleum … ase 1.249 |; 5*~~

~~*Lignite…..... ⁺. 8.961,498 4, fy*~~

~~*Comes cccseeresersens . 6,343,315 ,, a*~~

~~*Exclusive of salt, the value of the produce of the Austrian mines in 1881 was 44,693,692 florins. The total output of salt in 1881 was 267,279 metric tons, valued according to the monopoly prices at 23,000,498 florins.*~~

~~*Hungary in 1879 ® produced*~~

~~*1,593 kilogrammes. 18,660 ac 1,035 metric tons,*~~

~~*33 ” 3?*~~

~~*Belgiwm.—Belgium is rich in coal, the output in 1881 being no less than 16,873,951 metric tons, valued at 163,704,242 francs. Though it produces iron ores, it is largely dependent upon other countries, and especially the grand-duchy of Luxemburg, for supplies for its blast furnaces. The principal lead mine is that of Bleiberg, and the calamine deposits in the neutral territory of Moresnet have long been worked with success by the eelebrated Vieille Montagne Company, which also owns zinc mines in Belgium, Germany, Sweden, Sardinia, and Algeria.*~~

~~*Russia.—In a vast empire like Russia it is not surprising that there should be valuable deposits of a great variety of minerals.*~~

~~*Mercury*~~

~~*Among the most important are the auriferous alluvia of the Ural |*~~

~~*mountains and Siberia, which in 1880 yielded 115,940 troy tb of gold, worth more than 5 millions sterling. Platinum is found associ- ated with the gold-bearing sands of the Urals; the output in 1880 was 7895 troy tb. Zinc ore is largely worked in Poland. Import-*~~

~~*1 Statistique de U Industrie Minerale et des Appareils & Vapeur er Algérie, Année 1830, Paris, 1882, pp. 59 and 72.7 e Fear ee*~~

~~2 Detailed statistics eoucerning the mineral produee of Prussia are given every year in the Zeitschrift fir das Berg-, Hiitien-, und Salinen-Wesen im Preussischen Staate (Berlin).~~

~~3 Quantity less than 50 tons.~~

~~4 Detailed statistics of the mineral produee of Saxony are given yearly in the Jahrbuch fir das Berg- und Iftittenwesen tm Kénigreiche Sachsen (Freiberg).~~

~~5 Stat. Jahrb, des k. k. Ackerbau- Ministeriums fiir 1881, Weft iii., Lief. 1 Vienna, 1882. :~~

~~6 " Der Bergwerkshetrieb Ungarns im Jahre 1879," Oesterreichische Zatschrift fiir Berg- und Hiittenwesen, 1881, p. 271.~~

~~be mentioned those of Hungary and |~~

~~| extracted from the burnt ore by Claudet's process,~~

~~ant supplies of chromic iron ore are derived from the Urals, amount- ing in 1880 to more than 8000 tons. The metallic copper produced in 1880 was about 3100 tons, and the oil wells of Baku yielded in that year 346,000 tons of petroleum. Russia also possesses mines of iron ore, manganese, lead, silver, coal, and lignite. A little tin ore is furnished by Finland.~~

~~Italy.—The most important mineral in Italy? is sulphur, 359,540 tons (metric), worth 36,448, 453 lire, having been obtained in 1880,~~

~~| and mainly from seams containing the native element in the~~

~~Miocene rocks of Sicily and Romagna.~~

~~The celebrated iron mines of the island of Elba have been worked from very early times, and furnish a valuable ore ; and the deposits of calamine, lead ore, and silver ore in Sardinia form no small pro- portion of the mineral wealth of the Italian kingdom. The gold mines in and near the Val Anzasca (Piedmont) are producing more than 7000 ounces of metal yearly.~~

~~*Spain.—Spain is justly celebrated for its mineral wealth. It produces more cupreous pyrites than any other country in the world, and very large amounts of lead ore and quicksilver; and its iron ores are abundant and of excellent quality. The principal lead mines are in the provinees of Jaen (Andalusia) and Murcia, and the total amount of metallic lead produced in Spain or from Spanish ores is estimated to be 120,000 tons yearly.*~~

~~*Cinnabar, the heavy red ore of mercury, naturally attracted atten- tion at a very early date, and the world-renowned Almaden inine has been worked from time immemorial. The output in 1880 was 13874 tons (metric) of quicksilver.®*~~

~~*The cupreous pyrites, often known as sulphur ore, is obtained from the province of Huelva, where vast deposits occur over a belt of country nearly 100 miles long by 20 miles wide. The Rio Tinto mines are the largest in the district, and are worked on a gigantic scale. The company employs upwards of 10,000 hands, or more persons than are engaged in all the Cleveland iron mines, and the output is upwards of a million tons per anntum. About one-quarter*~~

~~*| of this, containing 3} per cent. of copper, is exported, mainly for the*~~

~~*manufacture of sulphuric acid and subsequent treatment for copper and silver, whilst theremaining three-quarters, with 25 to 24 per cent. of copper, are treated on the spot. 'T'he ore contains rather less than 1 oz. of silver to the ton, anda few grains of gold. These are profitably and some idea of the importance of the copper and silver will be gained by reference to the following figures. During the year 1881 there were obtained from cupreous pyrites imported into the United Kingdom in 1881, mainly from Spain and Portugal, 14,000 tons of copper, 258,468 oz. of silver, and 1490 oz. of gold. The total value of the silver and gold was £64,195,*~~

~~*The total output of iron ore in 1880 was 3,565,338 metric tons,!® more than two-thirds, viz., 2,683,627 tons, being obtained from the celebrated mines near Bilbao in the province of Biscay. England, France, Belgium, and Germany are all glad to draw supplies of*~~

~~*ee*~~

~~*7 Notizie statistiche sulla Industria Mineraria in Italia dal 1860 al 1880, Rome, 1881, p. 406.*~~

~~*5 : pay Minera de Espaita, correspondiente al aiio de 1880, Madrid, 1882, 9 Hunt, Mineral Statistics, &c., p. 45. 10 Estadistica Minera, &c., ut supra, p. 15.*~~

~~*DIFFERENT COUNTRIES. |*~~

~~*excellent red and brown hematite from the Bilbao mines. Murcia comes next in importance to Biscay, with a production of 589,328 tons.*~~

~~*Portugal.—The great mineral belt of Huelva extends into Portugal, and deposits of cupreous pyrites almost identical with that of Rio Tinto have been wrought from very early ages. The principal mine, San Domingos, is close to the Spanish frontier. It is estimated that the workings had yielded up to the year 1877 no less than 3,578,745 English tons of cupreous pyrites, by far the greater part of this having been extracted in recent times. The quantity of ore raised from the mine in 1882 was 405,029 tons.*~~

~~*Portngal possesses notable manganese mines, but produces com- patatively small quantities of iron, lead, and copper.*~~

~~*Norway.—The mines at Kongsberg are famous for the large quantities of native silver they produce, and enormous masses are sometimes inet with. The annual output is from 10,000 to 12,000 troy ounces. Copper ore and cupreous pyrites are also mined in Norway, and there are important workings for nickel and eobalt and for apatite. Allnvia) gravels have been washed for gold in Norwegian Finland.*~~

~~*Sweden.—Yhe most important mineral obtained in Sweden is iron ore, much being in the form of magnetite ; red hematite also is mined, and brown hematite is dredged up from some of the lakes. The principal iron-producing districts are those of Norberg, Danne- mora, Nora, and Perseberg. The output of the Swedish mines in 1880 was—*~~

~~*775,205 tons, 43,452 tons.*~~

~~12988 ,, 29,380 ,,~~

~~Greece. —One of the most interesting undertakings of modern times has been the re-working of the Laurium mines, whicli are situated in the southern extremity of Attiea ; and an account of them written by Cordella furnishes many curious details concerning the inethods of mining, washing, and smelting employed by the ancients. The workings for lead and silver appear to have been carried on with the greatest vigour between 600 3.c. and the Peloponnesian War, and were finally abandoned in the 1st century of the Christian era. Huge piles of slag which had accumulated from the old smelting works were found to be well worth being re-worked for silver and lead, and operations were commenced in 1864. Five years later the old heaps of mine refuse began to be treated, and at last in 1875 a French company resumed working the mine. A Greek company employing some 3000 persons is now producing annually from the old mine heaps no less than 8000 to 9000 tons of pig lead, yielding 45 oz. of silver to the ton, whilst the mines of the Compagnie francaise des mines du Lawriwm made an output in 1881 of 36,664 tons (metric) of roasted calamine, with 40 to 60 per cent. of zinc, in addition to lead ore and mixed ores. Cordella calculates that during the three hundred years the Lanrium mines were worked by the ancients the total amount of lead produced was 2,100,000 tons, with 224 million troy fbof silver. Besides this the ancients left behind two million tons of lead slags containing on an average 10°67 per cent. of lead, 109 million tons of mine refuse with 14 to 18 per cent. of lead, and exeavations to the extent of 51 million enbie yards with lead ore still in sight. They did not touch the calamine deposits.!_ Next in importance to lead, silver, and zinc comes bay-salt, and after that emery. The island of Naxos furnished 3300 metric tons of emery in 1877, valued at £28,000.~~

~~Africa.—Algeria is rich in iron, and three-fourths of the value of its total mineral output are due to ores of this metal. In 1880 the iron mines produced 614,000 metric tons of ore, Mokta- el-hadid mine, near Bona, alone yielding about 300,000 tons. Algeria also possesses mines of copper, lead, zinc, and antimony.~~

~~The name “ Gold Coast” applied to part of the shores of Africa, denotes its productiveness of the precious metal, and it is probable that very important~~

~~supplies of gold will one day be derived from various districts of the Dark Continent.~~

~~Cape Colony possesses rich copper mines in the Namaqualand division, which in 1882 produced ore and metal worth £331,546; however, the most valuable and remarkable mineral deposits of Africa at the present time are the diamond mines, The first diamonds were obtained from recent gravel in the bed of the Vaal river, and it was afterwards discovered that the precious stones could be obtained from the so-called dry diggings. The most im. portant of these, the Colesberg Kopje, now known as the Kimberley mine, produced in 1881 diamonds weighing 900,000 earats, worth £1,575,000. Three other neighbouring mines are Old De Beer's, which yielded 300,000 earats in 1881, worth £600,000, Du Toit's Pan, and Bulfontein. The value of the diamonds raised in South Africa since 1870 amounts to forty millions sterling ;? indeed the Kimberley mine alone was estimated in 1877 to have already pro- duced ten million pounds worth of diamonds, extracted from 4 million tons of diaiantiferous roek.~~

~~1 A. Cordella, " Mineralogisch-geologische Reiseskizzen aus Griechenland," Berg- und hiittenmdnnische Zeitung, vol. xlii., 1883, p. 21.~~

~~2-A, J. Macdonald. "The Value of the Cape as a Dependency of Great Britain," The Times, 3d May 1883.~~

~~| Asia.—For many centuries India was regarded as possessing fabulous inineral wealth, and a strong basis for this idea may be found in the existence of traces of mining on a very extensive seale. No doubt in early days India did supply what then appeared to be very large quantities of metals, and a country that produces gold and precious stones is apt to be endowed by the popular mind with boundless riches. The actual amounts of mineral raised in India at the present day are comparatively small. Gold exists over con- siderable areas, but it remains to be proved that the gold mines of the Wynaad and Mysore can be profitably worked by British com- panies. Diamonds occur and are worked in alluvial diggings aud in a~~

~~*conglomerate belonging to the Vindhyan formation. Sapphires and rubies are obtained from Upper Burmah, Ceylon® produced in 1880 no less than 10,286 tons of graphite or plumbago, valued at £192,879. Petroleum is abundant in Upper Burmah, and oil from wells has been utilized for upwards of twenty centuries. The total output in 1878 was estimated to be about 10,000 tons yearly. Tinore oecurs and is worked in Tenasserim. Passing into Siam and the Malay Peninsula we find deposits of alluvial tin ore, producing what is known in commerce as Straits tin. A little to the east are the islands of Banca and Billiton, which for many years have been a source of wealth to the Dutch Government. The sales of Banca tin in 1881 amounted to 4339 tons, and those of Billiton tin to 4735 tons, whilst 11,475 tons of Straits tin were exported from Penang and Singapore.* Stanniferous alluvia are also worked in Karimon, Singkep, and Sumatra, whilst the latter island possesses also valuable seams of coal.*~~

~~*Borneo furnishes coal, antimony ore, and some cinnabar; and river-gravels are washed for diamonds, gold, and platinum.*~~

~~*There is no doubt that the mineral wealth of China is enormons. In addition to important coal-fields it possesses numerous metallic mines. The province of Yunnan in the south of the empire seems to be specially favoured with regard to metalliferous wealth, for mines of gold, silver, copper, lead, tin, and iron are worked there, whilst jade and precious stones are found in the beds of rivers.*~~

~~*Japan produces more than 3000 tons of copper yearly, or about as much as the British Isles. The output of lead and tin is insignifi- cant, but the quantity of silver, exeeeding 300,000 oz. yearly, is worthy of notice. Gold, iron, and petroleum are other products of Japan.*~~

~~*The gold of Siberia has been mentioned in speaking of Russia.*~~

~~*Canada.—The Dominion of Canada is rich in minerals. Gold- bearing quartz veins are worked in Nova Scotia, whilst in British Columbia alluvial deposits are the main source of the supply. Silver oecurs on Lake Superior, the most important mine being that of Silver Islet, which from 1869 to the spring of 1877 yielded 24 million ounces of silver, and gave a profit of £200,000.*~~

~~*Rocks resembling the copper-bearing strata of the United States territory are mined in Miehipoten island in Lake Superior. Iron ores, in the form of magnetite, red hematite, limonite, and ilmenite, are worked in various parts of Canada.*~~

~~*Petroleuin is derived from oil wells in Western Ontario, and the quantity refined in 1875 was about 210,000 barrels, each of 40 gallons. It isin Ontario also that the veims of apatite exist from which a large amount of that useful mineral has been raised.*~~

~~*United States.—The mineral wealth of the United States is admirably summed up by Mr Richard P. Rothwell in his address*~~

~~*to the American Institute of Mining Engineers.®*~~

~~*“ Production of Coal, Metal, and Petroleum in 1881.6*~~

~~*Anthraeite…….. SREB ET GOEnIceDAnacOcGHO 30,261,940 tons (of 2240 tb). Bituminous coal 42,417,764 ,, (of 2000 tb).*~~

~~*Pig i7OM……..c-esecoseeeeeseeerseee 4,144,000 ,, (of 2240 Ib).*~~

~~*ia camer cecesens sissies <*~~

~~*‘The statisties of other useful minerals and metals show an equally marvellous advance during the past thirty years. The production of pig iron, which in 1852 was 541,000 net tons, in 1861 was 653,000 tons, and in 1871 was 1,708,000 tons. Ten years later, in 1831, we produced 1o less than 4,141,000 tons, an inerease in thirty years of nearly 800 per cent. ; ;*~~

~~*« Lead, which appears at 14,400 tons in 1852, varied but little from that figure until the construction of railroads into the argentiferous lead-mining districts of the west about 1870. Eureka, Nevada, Utah, and more recently Colorado, with its Leadville bonanzas. rapidly raised the production from 18,000 tons in 1871 to 47,000 tons in 18738, 75,000 tons in 1877, and 105,000 tons in 1881.*~~

~~*‘Our production of copper steadily increased from 1000 tons in 1852 to 31,000 tons in 1881,—the enormous output of that unrivalled mine Calumet and Heela steadying the production and neutralizing the fluctuations of the lesser mines.*~~

- ~~*Quicksilver has shown wide fluctuations, due more to trade combinations than to the condition of the mines. In 1852 the output amounted to 20,000 flasks;*~~

~~*3 Statistical Abstract for the Several Colonial and other Possessions of the United Kingdom tn each year from 1860 to 1880, London, 1882, p. 39.*~~

~~*4 Hunt, Min. Stat. for 1881, p. 9. ;*~~

~~*5 Engineering and Mining Journal, vol. XxXxiv. DP.*~~

~~*6 The total production of coal in the United States 86,862,614 tons of 2240 tb (Colliery Guardian for 1883, p. 731).*~~

~~*es in 1882 amounted fo The quantities of*~~

~~*ss tons of*~~

~~*metals produced in 1882 are estimated to be—pig iron 4,623,323 gro he ed*~~

~~*: B s (The fron, 2240 ib each, lead 123,000 gross tons, copper 40,000 gross tons (T Tron, Allied Trades in 1882, p. 188; Eng. and Min. Jour., yol. xxxyv. p. 27).*~~

~~*Plate IV.*~~

~~*470*~~

~~*but it went as low as 10,000 flasks in 1860, and rose to 53,000 flasks five years later; from this it declined to 15,000 flasks in 1875, though in the following year it grew to 75,000 flasks. Last year we produced 59,000 flasks.*~~

~~" Gold is the only metal in which our production has been declining. In 1852 it amounted to $60,000,000; but, with some fluctuations, it has now declined to less than $32,000,000 annually. t~~

~~"The production of silver, on the contrary, has largely increased. Commencing in 1859 with $100,000, it has now attained $45,000,000, In 1877 only were these figures exceeded, and then only by about $1,000,000. ;~~

~~"The production of petroleum, that great American industry, has grown with wonderful rapidity. In 1859 it commenced with only 3000 barrels, and, after an almost uniform increase, it attained last year the enormous figures of 27,000,000 barrels. Scientific investigation has recently raised a note of warning in this industry, asserting the limited area of oil-producing territory and its approaching exhaustion."~~

~~Some valuable statistics concerning the production of the precious metals in the United States are coutained in a report issued by the Censns Bureau.! The output for the year ended 31st May 1880 is suinmed up as follows :—~~

~~Silver.~~

~~1,033,974 |$21,374,152 580,767 | 12,005,511~~

~~33,379,663~~

~~31,717,297 80,177~~

~~$41,007,296 | $62,381,448~~

~~Deep mines…. 103,661 | 12,109,172~~

~~Placers~~

~~41,110,957 | 74,490,620~~

~~31,797,474~~

~~All mines.~~

~~1,614,741~~

~~The State producing the greatest value is Colorado, viz., $19,249,172, or gold 180,607 oz. and silver 12,800,119 oz. ; Cali- fornia comes next, having produced $18,301,828 of bullion, and then Nevada, with $17,318,909 of bullion. :~~

~~The greatest gold producer among the States and Territories is California, with 829,676 oz. of gold, half from deep mines and half from placers. Next follows Nevada, with 236,468 oz. of gold, of which only about 1 per cent. came from placer mines ; then Dakota, 159,920 oz. of gold, nearly entirely produced by deep mines ; and in the fourth rank Colorado, 180,607 oz., with a placer production of less than 5000 oz.~~

~~The greatest silver producer is Colorado, with 12,800,119 oz.; then Nevada, 9,614,561 oz.; then Utah, 3,668,365 oz.; Montana, 2,246,938 oz. ; and fifthly Arizona, 1,798,920 oz. '~~

~~It is useless within the limits of this article to attempt to convey an adequate idea of the enormous mineral resources of the United States. We can merely very briefly allude to some of the principal deposits, which are of commercial value on account of their magni- tude, of scientific interest owing to their mode of occurrence, and of technical importance as having led to the introduction of consider- able improvements in the arts of mining, milling, and dressing.~~

~~Among these may be mentioned the coal and anthracite mines and oil wells of Pennsylvania, the gold and quicksilver mines of California, the silver mines of Nevada, the lead and silver mines of Colorado, and the copper mines of Lake Superior. The articles CoaL (vol. vi. p. 60) and GoLp (vol. x. p. 743) may be referred to for information concerning the occurrence of these minerals and the method of extracting gold by hydraulic mining and improved stamping machinery.~~

~~Quicksilver in the form of native mercury and cinnabar occurs in considerable abundance in California, and much of it is found in connexion with serpentine, either in the serpentine itself or in sand- stone near its junction with serpentine. The inost important mines are those of New~~

~~*Almaden in the southern part of the State near San Jose. The deposit at Sulphur Bank in Lake County is of much geological interest. It consists of native sulphur, gypsum, and cinnabar in a decomposed andesitic lava close to an extinct geyser from which boiling water still issues. The top of the bank was worked open-cast for sulphur, and then for sulphur and cinnabar, and now underground mining is carried on in stratified sandstone and shale impregnated with cinnabar and underlying the lava.*~~

~~*Some of the most marvellous silver mines in the world are those upon the Comstock lode in Nevada. A horizontal section of part of this great vein is shown on Plate IV., copied from the excellent and well-known report of Mr J. D. Hague.? The strike is nearly north and south, and the dip about 43° to the east. " The vein matter of the Comstock consists of crushed and decomposed country rock, clay, and quartz." "Up to January 1, 1880, the Comstock had yielded in twenty years about $325,000,000 worth of bullion. The total length of shafts and galleries is about 250 miles. The number of men employed in the mines in January 1880 was 2800, earning average wages of $4a day. At the same date 340 men were at work in the amalgamating mills." The heat of the Comstock lode is remarkable, On the 2700 feet level of the Yellow Jacket mine Mr Becker found the temperature of the water to be 158°, that of the air 126° ; whilst the water in the Yellow Jacket shaft at a depth of 3065 feet has a temperature of 170° Fahr.4*~~

~~*1 Clarence King, special agent of the Census, Statistics of the Producti Precious Metals in the United States, Washington, 1881, p. 69. cael 2 United States Geological Exploration of the Fortieth Parallel, vol. iii., Mining indus, Atlas, plate 11. Clarence King, First Annual Report of the U.S. Geological Surve 3 _ 4 Op. cét., pp. 44, 45. Z De ae*~~

~~*MINING*~~

~~*[MINERAL PRODUCE OF*~~

~~*During the last few years the Comstock lode has been falling off in productiveness. In 1876 the total yield of the Comstock lode was $38,572,984 (gold, $18,002,906; silver, $20,570,078). During the census year ending May 31, 1880, the product of the whole Comstock district, including outlying veins, was $6,922,330 (gold, $3,109,156; silver,*~~

~~*$3,818,174), showing a decline of $31,650, 654, or 82°06 per cent., since 1876.° ;*~~

~~*Though the extraction of silver from its ores may be regarded as the business of the metallurgist rather than of tle miner, we must not forget to mention that it is to the necessities of the treat- ment of the Nevada ores that we owe the system of pan amalgama- tion first developed in that State and practised since in Colorado.*~~

~~*Another district in Nevada which cannot be passed over in silence is that which contains the Eureka and Richmond mines, which are celebrated, not only for the silver they have produced, but also for the important trial in which the issue hinged upon the defini- tion of the term vein or lode (p. 441). The bullion produced in the Eureka district from ore raised and treated during the census year ended May 31, 1880, was—gold, 62,893 oz.; and silver, 2,037,666 oz.; worth altogether $3,934, 621.§*~~

~~*The history of Leadville in Colorado seems like a romance when we read of the rapid development of the mines, the creation of a large and important town, the erection of smelting works and the building of railways, under very adverse conditions, in the heart of the Rocky Mountains, all within the space of four or five years. It affords additional proof that the miner is the true pioneer of civilization. The main facts concerning the Leadville deposits are admirably summed up by Mr S. F. Emmons, from whose report? we borrow, not only the following facts, but also the geological section across the district (Plate IV.).*~~

~~*The principal deposits of the region are found at or near the junction of the porphyry with the Blue limestone, which is the lowest member of the Carboniferous formation. This bed is about 150 or 200 feet thick, and consists of dark blue dolomitic limestone. At the top there are concretions of black chert. The porphyry occurs in intrusive sheets which generally follow the bedding, and almost invariably a white porphyry is found overlying the Blue limestone. This porphyry is of Secondary age ; it isa white homo- geneous-looking rock, composed of quartz and felspar of even granular texture, in which the porphyritic ingredients, which are accidental rather than essential, are small rectangular crystals of white felspar, occasional double pyramids of quartz, and fresh hexa- gonal plates of biotite or black*~~

~~*mica. Along the plane of contact with the porphyry the limestone has been transformed, by a process of gradual replacement, into a vein consisting of argentiferous galena, cerussite, and cerargyrite mixed with the hydrous oxides of iron and manganese, chert, granular cavernous quartz, clay, heavy spar, and "Chinese tale," a silicate and sulphate of alumina. The vein seems to have been formed by aqueous solutions, which took up their contents from the neighbouring eruptive rocks and brought about the alteration of the limestone as they percolated downwards through it. In Carbonate Hill, a gradual passage may be observed from dolomite into earthy oxides of iron and manganese. The masses of workable ore are extremely irregular in shape, size, and distribu- tion. They are often 30 to 40 feet thick vertically, and occasionally 80 feet, but only over asmallarea. The rich ore bodies are common- est in the upper part of the ore-bearing stratum. At Fryer Hill the Blue limestone is almost entirely replaced by vein material.*~~

~~*In the census year ended May 31, 1880, Lake County, Colorado, which includes the Leadville district, produced 28,226 gross tous of lead, with 3830 oz. of gold and 8,853,946 oz. of silver, of a total value of $13,032,464.8*~~

~~*The most important copper mines of the United States are those on Lake Superior, where the native metal occurs "in veins, in large masses, or scattered more or less uniformly in certain beds which are either amygdaloid or conglomerates." ®*~~

~~*The copper-producing districts are those of Ontonagon, Keweenaw County, and Portage Lake. The last-named contains the famous Calumet and Hecla mine, which alone produced 15,887 tons of copper in 1880, or about half the entire output of the United States. The deposit from whence this vast amount of copper was obtained is a bed of conglomerate, generally called a vein, dipping about 38° north- west. It has been worked for a depth of 2250 feet on the incline. In 1875 the stuff stamped yielded 44 per cent. of copper.*~~

~~*In conclusion, we will point out that the value of the mining industry in the United States exceeds that of any other country in the world, Mr Porter estimating it for 1879-1880 at 360 million dollars, and that of Great Britain at 325 millions.° Germany holds*~~

~~5 Clarence King, Statistics of the Production of the Precious Metals in the United States, Washington, 1881, p. 19.~~

~~8 Opctt., Da2l.~~

~~7 Abstract of a Report upon the Geology and Mining Industry of Leadville, Colorado, Washington, 1882.~~

~~8 Clarence King, op. cit., p. 47.~~

~~9 Charles E, Wright, commissioner, Annual Report oy the Commissioner of Mineral Statistics for the State of Michigan for 1880, Lensing, Michigan, 1881.~~

~~es "ew P. Porter, The West from the Census of 1880, Chicago and London, Depelge~~

~~MIN the third rank, followed by France and Russia. The United States produce 38 per cent.' of the gold yield of the whole world, 50 per cent. of the silver, 22 per cent. of the pig iron,? 29 per cent. of the steel, and about 25 per cent. of the lead.~~

~~Mexico has been renowned for its gold and silver mines ever since the Spaniards first took possession of it, and its production is still very considerable. Indeed, after the United States, it still produces far more silver than any other country in the world. The average annual output of silver during the twenty-five years 1851 to 1875 is estimated by Dr Adolf Soetbeer at 501,520 kilogrammes, or 16,124,235 oz. ;? whilst the average annual output of gold during the same period was 1785 kilogramimes, or 57,389 oz. Tin ore occurs in considerable quantities in Mexico, and is likely to be worked on a large scale as soon as the tin district is opened up by a railway.~~

~~Central America possesses numerous gold mines.~~

~~South America.—Venezuela produces gold, copper, and a little lead. The copper is found at Aroa near the north coast, and the gold in the province of Guiana, which is now producing upwards of 100,000 oz. annually. It is~~

~~highly probable that the existence of this gold was known to the Indians, who reported it to Sir Walter Raleigh, and so led him to undertake his unfortunate expedition in search of "E] Dorado." French Guiana contains workable deposits of gold, and yielded 72,168 oz. in 1880.~~

~~The chain of the Andes forms a long belt of mineral-producing country. Beginning with the United States of Colombia we have a country rich in gold,—the State of Antiquoia being especially favoured in this respect. The annual yield of all the states is about 200,000 oz. Colombia has mines of rock salt, yielding 19,000 tons a year, and the emerald mine at Muzo has long been famous. Peru is renowned for its silver mines; the best-known are those of Cerro de Pasco, situated at an elevation of 14,000 feet above the sea-level. Passing into Bolivia, we must notice the silver mines of Potosi, the wealth of which is proverbial. Chili is best known as the principal copper- producing country of South America ; but its silver mines are not unimportant, and beds of nitrate of soda are largely wrought.~~

~~The most remarkable gold mines of Brazil lie in the province of Minas Geraes, whilst diamonds are obtained in that of Matto Grosso. In the Argentine Republic gold, silver, and copper mines are worked, especially in the provinces on the eastern flanks of the Andes.~~

~~The total annual output of the precious metal in South America is estimated to be upwards of 300,000 oz. of gold, and 2,000,000 oz. of silver. In 1877 Chili exported 35,128 metric tons of metallic copper, in addition to ore and regulus.~~

~~Australia,—Australia is remarkably rich in minerals, especially gold (see Gorn, vol. x. p. 744), tin, and copper, and its coal deposits are likely to be largely utilized in the future.~~

~~Queensland, though a young colony, has already made itself famous for gold and tin, and it also possesses vast resources of coal and copper, in addition to the ores of other metals. The quantity of gold sent by escort from the different gold fields was 204,388 oz. in 1880, in addition to what was carried by private hands. Tin ore was first worked in 1872 near the border of the colony with New South Wales, and large quantities of stream tin have~~

~~been obtained from very shallow alluvial diggings near Stanthorpe. Like gold,~~

~~Leap, about 50 ft. deep,~~

~~'DIFFERENT COUNTRIES. |~~

~~. not rich. 7A PEO UM, B SURFACE vies v4 aD) . — SRR TE eS hfs fo pe 7 eee —— ceiiig ois PAILS AERA EPS 5 ee (y PTAA ONY 4 fig pet aif hE ko ge aa K a \/< />~~ '

~~3 ,~~

~~Deep Leap, about 150 ft. deep; tin wash from 2 ft.~~

~~to 15 ft. thick.~~

~~E 4 GV ag ees : Peete a~~

~~=i fer AX ak vy Se cl cu gy |~~

~~ALA ANINY EY Zoe~~

~~fey ee 1 Skip fy a py "M4 a OK Ze, |S i hep has ie hes Yi Vege lerey dalek]: |·~~

~~' oed Oi? oT. z~~

~~4 ACN ALTE, Fe! te~~

~~"fh Fula~~

~~>~~

~~ING 471~~

~~the tin ore is not confined to one district ; it occurs and is worked at the North Palmer diggings; a little to the south is Great Western, rich in tin ore,~~

~~*and so is Herberton to the north-east on the other side of the Dividing range.*~~

~~*In 1881 New South Wales# produced minerals and metals worth £2,373,191, viz., 149,627 oz. of gold, 1,775,224 tons of coal, 8200 tous of tin, 5493 tons of copper, 6560 tons of iron, besides silver, oil-shale, and antimony. In addition to the facts concerning the oceurrence of gold already inentioned (Joc, cit.), it is interesting to note that auriferous conglomerates containing the precious metal in payable quantities have been discovered and worked in this colony in rocks of the age of the Coal Measures.> The most important tin district is that of Vegetable Creek in New England, which from 1872 to 1880 produced 20,988 tons of tin ore. The accompanying map (fig. 105%) shows the recent alluvium which has hitherto been*~~

~~*PY : if al idl, P, | ll lj iy Hy, nF hn mt : ; “ Nags » E>, Man os | gee.*~~

~~*Wy, My “yy*~~

~~*I) verity: Ss i ee | iw*~~

~~*Uy*~~

~~*M1 4 ime Moin,*~~

~~*Ve*~~

~~*FEET DEEP*~~

~~*Scale. —_.. 1. i 2 Miles, Fig. 105.—Sketch Map of Part of Vegetable Creek, New South Wales, showing recent and ancient tin deposits. The stippled part re- presents tin-bearing alluvium. The shaded part AB denotes basalt which has covered the lower portions of the ancient tin- bearing alluvia (deep leads), as explained in fig. 106. The rest is granite.*~~

~~*the main source of the supply, and the deep leads which, as far as explored at present, promise still greater riches. The section (fig. 106°) shows that these deep leads, like those of the gold fields*~~

~~LEAD, about 60 ft. deep, and very rich,~~

~~: SURFACE~~

~~Se SSS SSS SSS SRE — ..BASALT~:~ Se sean cK M4~~

~~5~~

~~os 5 ENGST IN SOE LS. "s/l See SIX fx] SRW L A SPAL AIS 4.)/% AED OE Rede Po 4 AM LSA Toe]! KH ULeL Y xh y AUER SINSIN OU < yald ah oph LiL, , aR > =f Bt ARs <1 "~~

~~3~~

~~' ns~~

~~eee~~

~~Fig. 106.—Enularged Section (on AB of fig. 105) across Deep Leads in Vegetable Creek, New South Wales.~~

~~(GoD, vol. x. p. 748), are old alluvia preserved under a capping of basaltic lava. There are also numerous tin lodes which are begin- ning to be worked.~~

~~_ Victoria heads the list of gold-producing British colonies, having yielded in 18827 as much as 864,610 oz., of which 352,078 oz. were derived from alluvial deposits, and 512,532 oz. from quartz mines. 1077 tons of tin ore were raised and 375 tons of antimony ore,~~

~~South Australia is the great copper-producing province, though the yield is not so great as it was ten years ago. The principal~~

~~1 Clarence King, op. cit., p. 93.~~

~~2 James M. Swank, Statistics of the Iron and Steel Productions of the United States, Washington, 1881, p. 179. 3 Dr Adolf Soetbeer, Edelmetall-Produktion, Gotha, 1879, p. 60.~~

4 Annual Report of the Department of Mines New South Wales, for the 1881, Melbourne, 1882, 7 3 ‘ ~ vid

5 Annual Report of the Department of Mines, New South Wales, for the year 1876, Sydney, 1877, p. 173. , oa . 6 Furnished by Mr W. H. Wesley.

7 Mineral Statistics of Victoria for the year 1882, Melbourne, 1883, p. 7.

mines now at work are on Yorke’s Peninsula. In 18818 South Australia produced 3824 tons of copper, worth £263,370, and 21,638 tons of copper ore, worth £154,926.

In 1881 Western Australia exported 1400 tons of lead ore, valued at £11,204.

Tasmania, like some parts of Australia, is rich in tin ore, which is now obtained principally from an alluvial deposit at Mount Bischoff. The ore is now almost entirely smelted in the colony, and in 1880 the exports were 3951 tons of metal and 8 tons of ore, worth altogether £341,736.

New Zealand furnishes a considerable amount of gold from quartz reefs and alluvial diggings. The annual exports during the ten years 1862 to 1872 were often 600,000 and even 700,000 oz. Of late years the yield has gradually diminished, and in 1880 only 303,215 oz., valued at £1,220, 263, were exported. Silver is exported to the

§ Statistical Register of the Province of South Australia for the year 1881, Adelaide, 1882,

extent of 20,000 to 30,000 oz. annually ; it is mainly derived from the gold obtained in the Thames district, which contains about 30 per ceut. of the less valuable metal. Coal is worked in several places, but the total output is at present comparatively small.

New Caledonia.—The discovery of nickel ore in this island by M. Garnier in 1867 was one of great mineralogical interest, and it has since borne

~~*fruits of considerable commercial importance. The New Caledonia ores are hydrous silicates of nickel and magnesium, which occur in veins in serpentine, and contain from 7 to 18 per cent. of metal. The mineral is found on the Mont d'Or not far from Noumea. Most of the ore is sent to France to be treated.*~~

~~*MINISTRY. Ever since the introduction of monarchical institutions into England the sovereign has always been surrounded by a select body of confidential advisers to assist the crown in the government of the country. At no period could a king of England act, according to law, without advice in the public concerns of the kingdom ; the institution of the crown of England and the insti- tution of the privy council are coeval. At the era of the Norman Conquest the king's council, or as it is now called the privy council, was composed of certain select members of the aristocracy and great officers of state, specially summoned by the crown, with whom the sove- reign usually advised in matters of state and government. In the earlier stages of English constitutional history the king's councillors, as confidential servants of the monarch, were present at every meeting of parliament in order to advise upon matters judicial in the House of Lords; but in the reign of Richard II. the privy coun- cil dissolved its judicial connexion with the peers and assumed an independent jurisdiction of its own. It was in the reign of Henry VI. that the king's council first assumed the name of privy council, and it was also during the minority of this sovereign that a select council was gradually emerging from out of the larger body of the privy council, which ultimately resulted in the institution of the modern cabinet. Since the Revolution of 1688, and the development of the system of parliamentary govern- ment, the privy council has dwindled into comparative insignificance when contrasted with its original authorita- tive position. The power once swayed by the privy council is now exercised by that unrecognized select committee of the council which we call the cabinet. The practice of consulting a few confidential advisers instead of the whole privy council had been resorted to by English mronarchs from a very early period ; but the first mention of the term cabinet council in contradistinction to privy council occurs in the reign of Charles I., when the burden of state affairs was intrusted to the committee of state which Clarendon says was enviously called the "cabinet council." At first government by cabinet was as unpopular as it was irregular. Until the*~~

~~*formation of the first parliamentary ministry by William III. the ministers of the king occupied no recognized position in the House of Commons; it was indeed a moot point whether they were entitled to sit at all in the lower chamber, and they were seldom of one mind in the administration of matters of importance. Before the Revolution of 1688 there were ministers, but no ministry in the modern sense of the word ; colleague schemed against colleague in the council chamber, and it was no uncommon thing to see ministers opposing one another in parliament upon measures that ought to have been supported by a united cabinet. As the exchange from government by prerogative to government by parlia- ment, consequent upon the Revolution of 1688, developed, and the House of Commons became more and more the centre and force of the state, the advantage of having ministers in the legislature to explain and defend the measures and policy of the executive Government began*~~

~~*MIN—*~~

~~*MIN*~~

~~*To the list of works on mining mentioned in the article Coat (vol. vi. p. 81) the following may be added :—Callon, Cours d'erplottation des Mines, Paris; 1874, and English translation by C. Le Neve Foster and W. Galloway; Serlo; Leitfaden zur Bergbaukunde, Berlin, 1878; Zoppetti, Arte mineraria, Milan, 1882; A. yon Groddeck, Die Lehre von den Lagerstdtten der Erze, Leipsic, 1879 ; P. von Rittinger, Lehrbuch der Aufbereitungskunde, Berlin, 1867 ; Jahrbuch fir das Berg- und Huttenwesen im Kénigreiche Sachsen, Freiberg, annually; Annual Reports of H.M. Inspectors of Mines; Preliminary Report of Her Majesty's Commissioners Appointed to Inquire into Accidents in Mines, London, 1881; Annales des Mines, Paris, 6 parts published yearly; The Engineering and Mining Journal, New York, published weekly ; Transactions of the American Institute of Mining Engineers, Philadelphia ; Die berg- und hiittenmdnnische Zeitung, Leipsie,*~~

~~*weekly; Oesterreichische Zeitschrift fir Berg- und Htttenwesen, Vienna, weekly. (C, L. N. F.)*~~

~~———_ _ .~~

~~*gradually to be appreciated. The public authority of the crown being only exercised in acts of administration, or, in other words, through the medium of ministers, it became absolutely necessary that the advisers of the sovereign, who were responsible for every public act of the crown as well as for the general policy they had been called upon to administer, should have seats in both Houses of Parliament. The presence of ministers in the legislature was the natural consequence of the substitution of government by parlia- ment for the order of things that had existed before 1688. Still nearly a century had to elapse before political unanimity in the cabinet was recognized as a political maxim. From the first parliamentary ministry of William IIL. until the rise of the second Pitt divisions in the cabinet were constantly occurring, and a prime minister had more to fear from the intrigues of his own colleagues than from the tactics of the opposition. In 1812 an attempt was made to form a ministry consisting of men of opposite political principles, who were invited to accept office, not avowedly as a coalition Government, but with an offer to the Whig leaders that their friends should be allowed a majority of one in the cabinet. This offer was declined on the plea that to construct a cabinet on "a system of counteraction was inconsistent with the prosecution of any uniform and beneficial course of policy." From that date 't has been an established principle that all cabinets are to be formed on some basis of political union agreed upon by the members composing the same when they accept office together. It is now also distinctly understood that the members of a cabinet are jointly and severally responsible for each other's acts, and that any attempt to separate between a particular minister and his colleagues in such matters is unfair and unconstitutional.*~~

~~*The leading members of an administration constitute the Castner (q.v.). The members of an administration who are sworn of the council, but who are not cabinet minis- ters, are the lord-lieutenant of Treland, the vice-president of the council for education, the judge advocate general, and the chief officers of the royal household. The sub- ordinate members of an administration who are never in the cabinet, and who are seldom raised to the distinction of privy councillors, are the junior lords of the treasury, the joint-secretaries to the treasury, the paymaster-general, the junior lords of the admiralty, the parliamentary under- secretaries of state, and the law officers of the crown.*~~

~~During the present century the power of ministers has been greatly extended, and their duties more distinctly marked out. Owing to the development of the system of parliamentary government, much of the authority which formerly belonged to English sovereigns has been delegated to the hands of responsible ministers. As now interpreted, the leading principles of the British constitution are the personal irresponsibility of the sovereign, the responsibility of ministers, and the inquisitorial power of parliament. At the head of affairs is the prime minister, and the difference between theory and practice is curiously exemplified by the post he fills. The office is full of anomalies. Like the cabinet council the prime minister is unknown to the law~~

~~Rel ne al Seal ke Y~~

~~and the constitution, for legally and according to the fictions of the constitution no one privy councillor has as such any superiority over another, yet practically the premier is the pivot on which the whole administration turns. He is the medium of intercourse between the cabinet and the sovereign; he has to be cognizant of all matters of real importance that take place in the different departments so as to exercise a controlling influence in the cabinet; he is virtually responsible for the disposal of the entire patronage of the crown; he selects his colleagues, and by his resignation of office dissolves the ministry. Yet, though entrusted with this power, and wielding an almost absolute authority, he is in theory but the equal of the colleagues he appoints and whose opposition he can silence by the threat of dissolu- tion. The prime minister is nominated by the sovereign. "1 offered," said Sir Robert Peel on his resignation of office, "no opinion as to the choice of a successor. That is almost the only act which is the personal act of the sovereign ; it is for the sovereign to determine in whom her confidence shall be placed." Yet this selection by the crown is practically limited. No prime minister could carry on the government of the country for any length of time who did not possess the confidence of the Honse of Commons ; and royal favour, if it were ever invidiously exercised, would ultimately have to yield to a regard for the public interests. As a general rule the prime minister holds the office of first lord of the treasury, either alone or in connexion with that of chancellor of the exchequer. Before 1806 the premiership was occasionally held in~~

~~*connexion with different other offices,—a secretaryship of state, the privy seal, and the like,—but it is now almost invariably associated with the post of first lord of the treasury. With the exception of the premier, whose duties are more general than departmental, the work of the other members of the administration is exemplified by the title of the offices to which they are called. The lord chancellor, in addition to the jurisdiction which he exercises in his judicial capacity, is prolocutor of the House of Lords by prescription, the keeper of the sovereign's conscience, the general guardian of all infants, idiots, and lunatics, and to him belongs the appointment of all the justices of the peace throughout the kingdom. In former times the lord chancellor was frequently prime minister; the earl of Clarendon in the reign of Charles IT., however, was the last who occupied that position. The lord president of the council, who is always a member of the Upper House, presides over the department of the privy council, exercises a general superintendence over the education department, and has to frame minutes of council upon subjects which do not belong to any other department of state. Sub- ordinate to his department are separate establishments in relation to public health, the cattle plague, and quarantine. The post of lord privy seal is one of great trust, though its duties are not very onerous, since they simply consist in applying the privy seal once or twice a week to a number of patents. Ever since the days of Henry VIII. the privy seal has been the warrant of the legality of grants from the crown and the authority of the lord chancellor for affixing the great seal. is always a member of the cabinet. As his official duties are light he is at liberty to afford assistance to the administration in other ways, and he has often to attend to matters which require the investigation of a member of the Government.*~~

~~*The secretaries of state are among the most important members of the ministry, and within the present century their number has been increased and their duties more specially consolidated. The ancient English monarchs were always attended by a learned ecclesi-*~~

~~*astic, known at first as their clerk, and afterwards as secretary, who conducted the royal correspondence ; but it was not until the*~~

~~*end of the reign of Queen Elizabeth that these functionaries were called secretaries of state. Upon the direction of public affairs passing from the privy council to the cabinet after 1688, the secre- taries of state began to assume those high duties which now render their office one of the most influential of an administration. Until the reign of Henry VIII. there was generally only one secretary of state, but at the end of his reign a second principal secretary was appointed. Owing to the increase of business consequent upon the union of Scotland, a third secretary, in 1708, was created, but a vacancy occurring in this office in 1746 the third secretaryship was dispensed with until 1768, when it was again instituted to take charge of the increasing colonial business. However, in 1782 the office was again abolished, and the charge of the colonies trans- ferred to the home secretary; but owing to the war with France in 1794 a third secretary was once more appointed to superintend the business of the war department, and seven years later the colonial business was attached to his department. In 1854 a fourth secre- tary of state for the exclusive charge of the war department and in 1858 a fifth secretaryship for India were created. 'There are there- fore now five principal secretaries of state, four of whom, with their political under-secretaries, occupy seats in the House of Commons. One of these secretaries of state is always a member of the House of Lords. The secretaries of state are the only authorized channels through which the royal pleasure is signified to any part of the body politic, and the counter-signature of one of thein is necessary to give validity to the sign manual; thus, while the personal immunity of the sovereign is secured, a responsible adviser for every act is provided who has to answer for whatever course the crown has pursued. The secretaries of state constitute but one office, and are coordinate in rank and equal in authority. Each is competent in general to execute any part of the duties of the secretary of state, the division of duties being a mere matter of arrangement. These duties are of the deepest importance to the welfare of the nation. The home secretary controls all matters relating to the internal affairs of the country: he is responsible for the preservation of the public peace and for the security of life and property throughout the kingdom ; he exercises extensive powers over the civil and military authorities of the country, and has a direct controlling power over the administration of justice and police in the municipal boroughs, over the police in and around London, and over the county constabulary ; and he is especially responsible for the exer- cise of*~~

~~*the royal prerogative in the reprieve or pardon of convicted offenders or the commutation of their sentences. The foreign secre- tary, as his name implies, is the official organ of the crown in all communications between Great Britain and foreign powers: he negotiates all treaties or alliances with foreign states, protects British subjects residing abroad, and demands satisfaction for any injuries they may sustain at the hands of foreigners. The secretary of state for the colonies has to superintend the government of the various colonial possessions of the British crown: he appoints the governors over the different dependencies of the crown, and sanc- tions or disallows the enactments of the colonial legislatures. This latter power has of late years been much curtailed owing to the establishment of responsible government in imost of the colonies ; still it is the duty of the secretary of the colonies to correspond with the colonial governors and to offer such suggestions as may be expedient to assist the deliberations of the colonial councils and to promote the welfare of colonial subjects. Until the year 1854 the direction of military affairs was practically divided between the commander-in-chief at the horse guards, the board of ordnance, the secretary at war, and the secretary of state for war and the colonies. Upon the declaration of hostilities, however, against Russia in 1854, the duties of war minister were separated from those of colonial secretary, and a secretary of state for war appointed, in whose hands the supreme and responsible authority over the whole military business of the country formerly transacted by the various depart- ments was placed. The actions of the commander-in-chief are sub- ject to the approval of the secretary of state for war. The duties of the commander-in-chief embrace the discipline and patronage of the army and the direct superintendence of the personnel of the army ; with the exception of those duties, everything connected with the management of the army in peace or war (its matériel and civil administration, &c.) remains in the hands of the war minister. The subordinate position of the commander-in-chief is the result of the British system of parliamentary government. The secretary of state for war is the minister of the crown and not of parliament ; although he is responsible to parliament for the advice he may give to the sovereign, yet it is in the execution of the royal authority and prerogative that he is superior to the officer commanding in chief. 'The principle of the constitutional army 1s that command, prefer- ment, and honour come to it from the crown; but the general prin- ciple is equally undisputed that for all pecuniary*~~

remuneration it is made to depend on parliament. By the constitution the crown exercises its authority only through responsible advisers, and hence it follows that the secretary of state for war is supreme over any authority in the army, including the officer commanding in chief. From 1784 to 1858 the territories belonging . the British crown in

WL — Ge

474

the East Indies were governed by a department of state called the board of control in conjunction with the court of directors of the East India Company. In 1858 this double goverument was abolished, and the entire administration of the British empire in India was assumed by the crown, and all the powers formerly exer- cised by the East India Company and the board of control were transferred to a fifth principal secretary of state. The secretary for India is responsible for everything connected with the Indian Government at home and abroad ; the whole of the Indian revenues are at his disposal, and the governor-general of India is subject to his control. Yo assist him in his labours, and to act asa check upon the exercise of his otherwise arbitrary administrative powers, this secretary has the aid of a council of state for India, consisting of fifteen persons, of which, however, he is the president. The members of the council for India cannot sit in the House of Commons.

The duties of the other members of the ministry can be briefly disinissed. The chancellor of the exchequer at present exercises all the powers which formerly devolved upon the treasury board ; he has the entire control of all matters relating to the receipt and expenditure of public money; he frames the annual estimates of the sums required to defray the expenditure of government in every branch of the public service ; and it is his duty to lay before the country the annual statement of the estimated expenses of govern- ment and of the ways and means by which it is proposed to defray those charges, including the imposition or remission of taxes. The first lord of the admiralty (since the abolition of the office of lord high admiral), with the aid of the junior lords who are called the lords of the admiralty, conducts the administration of the entire naval force of the empire both at home and abroad, and is respon- sible to parliament for all his political

~~*proceedings ; as the admiralty is but an executive board, it is, however, subject on certain matters — the number of men required for the naval service, the distribution of the fleet, the strength of foreign squadrons, &c. — to the control of the cabinet. The president of the board of trade takes cognizance of all matters relating to trade and commerce, and has to protect the mercantile interests of the United Kingdom ; until 1864 it was not necessary for the president to have a seat in the cabinet, but since that date he has always been a cabinet minister in order to insure for his advice on commercial matters a due consideration ; in*~~

~~*1867 the office of vice-president of the board was abolished. The |*~~

~~*chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster exercises jurisdiction over all matters of equity relating to lands held of the crown in right of the duchy of Lancaster; the office is, however, practically a sinecure, and is usually filled by a leading statesman whose time is at the service of the Government for the consideration of such important questions as do not come within the province of other departments. In 1832 the public works and buildings of Great Britain were for the first time placed under the control of a responsible minister of the crown, and were assigned to the charge of the commissioners of woods and forests ; but in 1851 the department of public works was separated from the woods and forests and erected into a board under the name of the office of her majesty's works and public buildings. The first commissioner of works is the head of the board, and in his hands is placed the custody of the royal palaces and parks and ofall public buildings not specially assigned to the care of other depart- ments. Since the establishment of his office the first commissioner has frequently had a seat in the cabinet. The duties of the post- master-general, of the president of the local government board, and of the minor members of the administration are so obvious from the titles of the offices they hold as not to call for any special mention.*~~

~~*The prime minister is responsible for the distribution of the chief offices of government between the two Houses of Parliament. Owing to the development of the House of Commons within the present century it is now considered advisable that a larger propor- tion of cabinet ininisters should have seats in that chamber than was formerly the case. In the first cabinet*~~

~~of George III. only one of its members was in the House of Commons and thirteen in the House of Lords. In 1783 Mr Pitt was the sole cabinet minister in the Commons. In 1801 four cabinet ministers were in the Commons and fivein the Lords. In 1804 Mr Pitt and Lord Castlereagh were out of a cabinet of twelve, the only ministers in the Commons. Iu the Grenville ministry (“ All the Talents’), of a cabinet of eleven seven were in the Lords and four in the Commons. In 1809, of Mr Perceval’s cabinet, six were peers and four commoners. In 1812 of Lord Liverpool’s cabinet, ten were peers and only two commoners. In 1818, ont of a cabinet of fourteen, six were commoners; and in 1822, out of a cabinet of fifteen, nine were peers. Since the Reform Act of 1832, however, the leading members of Government have been more equally apportioned between the two Houses.~~

~~See May, Constitutional Iistory of England; Cox, Institutions of the English Government; Alpheus Todd, On Parliamentary Government ; oie Hitorjiof Party. (A. C. E.)~~

~~MINK. The genus Putorius, belonging to the family Mustelide or Weasel-like animals (see Mammatta, vol. xv. p. 440), contains a few species called Minks, distin- guished from the rest by slight structural modifications, and~~

~~especially by semiaquatic habits. They form the subgenus Lutreola of Wagner, the genus Vison of Gray. As in other members of the genus, the dental formula is 7 3, ¢ ↑, p . m4; total 34. They are distinguished from the Polecats, Stoats, and Weasels, which constitute the remainder of the group, by the facial part of the skull being. narrower and. more approaching in form that of the Martens, by the pre- molar teeth (especially the first of the upper jaw) being larger, by the toes being partially webbed, and by the absence of hair in the intervals between the naked pads of the soles of the feet. The two best-known species, so much alike in size, form, colour, and habits that although they are widely separated geographically some zoologists question their specific distinction, are P. lutreola, the Nore or Sumpf- otter (Marsh-Otter) of eastern Europe, and P. wson, the Mink of North America. The former inhabits Finland, Poland, and the greater part of Russia, though not found east of the Ural mountains. Formerly it extended west- ward into central Germany, but it is now very rare, if not~~

~~*extinct, in that country. The latter is found in places which suit its habits throughout the whole of North America. Another form, P. scbéricus, from eastern Asia, of which much less is known, appears to connect the true Minks with the Polecats.*~~

~~*The name may have originated in the Swedish maenk applied to the European animal. Captain John Smith, in his History of Virginia (1626), at p. 27, speaks of ‘ Martins, Powlecats, Weesels, and Minkes,” showing that the animal must at that time have been distinguished by a vernacular appellation from its congeners. By later authors, as Lawson (1709) and Pennant (1784), it is ofteu written “Minx.” For the following description, chiefly taken from the American form (though almost equally applicable to that of Europe) we are mainly indebted to Elliott Coues’s Mur-bearing Animals of North America, 1877.*~~

~~*In size it much resembles the English Polecat, —the length of the head and body being usually from 15 to 18 inches, that of the tail to the end of the hair about 9 inches. The female is considerably smaller than the male. The tail is bushy, but tapering at the end. The ears are small, low, rounded, and scarcely project beyond the adjacent fur. The pelage consists of a dense, soft, matted under fur, mixed with long, stiff, lustrous hairs on all parts of the body and tail. The gloss is greatest on the upper parts; on the tule bristly hairs predominate. Northern specimens have the finest and most glistening pelage ; in those from southern regions there is less difference between the under and over fur, and the whole pelage is coarser and harsher. In colour, differeut specimens present a con- siderable range of variation, but the animal is ordinarily of a rich dark brown, scarcely or not paler below than on the general upper parts; but the back is nsually the darkest, and the tail is nearly black. The under jaw, from the chin about as far back as the angle of the mouth, is generally white. In the European Mink the upper lip is also white, but, as this occasionally occurs in American specimens, it fails as an absolutely distinguishing character. Besides the white on the chin, there are often other irregular white patches on the under parts of the body. In very rare instances the tail is tipped with white. The fur, like that of most of the animals of the group to which it belongs, is an important article of commerce.*~~

~~*The principal characteristic of the Mink in comiparison with its congeners is its amphibious mode of life. It is to the water what the other Weasels are to the land, or Martens to the trees, being as essentially aquatic in its habits as the Otter, Beaver, or Musk-rat, and spending perhaps more of its time in the water than it does on land. It swims with most of the body submerged, and dives with perfect ease, remaining long without coming to the surface to breathe. It makes its nest in burrows in the banks of streams, breeding once a year about the month of April, and producing five or six young atabirth. Its food consists of frogs, fish, freshwater molluscs and crustaceans, as well as mice, rats, musk-rats, rabbits, and small birds. In common with the other animals of the genus, it has a very peculiar and disagreeable effluvium, which, according to Coues, is more powerful, penetrating, and lasting than that of any animal of the country except the Skunk. It also possesses the courage, ferocity, and tenacity of life of its*~~

~~allies. When takeu young, however, it can be readily tamed, and lately Minks have been extensively bred in captivity in America both for the sake of their fur and forthe purpose of using them in like manner as Ferrets in England, to clear buildings of rats. (W. H. Ba~~

~~MINNEAPOLIS, the county seat of Hennepin county, Minnesota, United States, and in 1880 the first city of the State as regards population, lies on both banks of the~~

~~Mississippi, at the fails of St Anthony, 14 miles by river | St Lawrence system sends its waters towards the Atlantic,~~

~~above St Paul. The east side was first settled, under the name of St Anthony, which was incorporated as a city in 1860. The west side settlement, named Minneapolis, was incorporated as a city in 1867, and soon surpassed St Anthony in population. In 1872 the two cities were united under the name of Minneapolis. The chief in- dustries are the manufacture of flour and of lumber, for which the falls supply abundant water-power. The Missis- sippi here flows over a limestone bed resting upon a friable white sandstone; hence erosion is rapid, and the river banks show that the falls have receded from a position at the mouth of the Minnesota river. In 1851 90 feet of the limestone gave way at once; and, as the rock bed extends but 1200 feet above the present site of the falls, the destruction of the water-power was threatened. This has been averted by the construction of an apron, or inclined plane, of timber, with heavy cribwork at the bottom, and the building of a concrete wall in the bed of sandstone behind the falls and underneath the channel of the river. Yor this work the United States Government appropriated $550,000 and the citizens of Minneapolis contributed $334,500. The city has twenty-seven flour-mills, which can produce 29,272 barrels a day. The total product for the year ended September 1, 1882, was 2,301,667 barrels. The shipments of lumber for 1880 were 164,620,000 feet. The population in 1870 was 18,079; and in 1880, 46,887.~~

MINNESANGER. See Germany, vol. x. p. 525.

MINNESOTA, one of the north-western States of the American Union, extending from 43° 30’ N. lat. to the British Possessions (about 49° N. lat.), and from Wisconsin and Lake Superior on the east to Dakota on the west, between the meridians of 89° 39’ and 97° 5’ W. long. Its area, including half of the lakes, straits, and rivers along its boundaries, except Rainy Lake and Lake of the Woods, amounts to 83,365 square miles.

The surface of Minnesota is diversified by few elevations of any great height. In general it is an undulating plain, breaking in some sections into rolling prairie, and traversed by belts of timber. It has an average elevation above sea-level of about 1000 feet. The watershed of the north (which determines the course of the three great continental river systems) and that of the west are not ridges or hills, but elevations whose inclination is almost insensible. The southern and central portions of the State are chiefly rolling prairie, the upper part of which is crossed from N.W. to §.E. by the forest belt known as the Big Woods,— a stretch of deciduous forest trees with an area of about 5000 square miles. North of the 47th parallel, the great Minnesota pine belt reaches from Lake Superior to the confines of the Red River valley, including the region of the headwaters of the Mississippi and its upper tributaries, as well as those of the Superior streams. North of the pine region there is but a stunted growth of tamarack and dwarf pine. In the north-east are found the rugged ele- vations of the granite uplift of the shores of Lake Superior, rising to a considerable height; while in the north-west the surface slopes away to the level prairie reaches of the Red River valley. The surface elevation of the State varies from 800 to 2000 feet above sea-level. A short line of hills in the north-east reaches the latter altitude, while only the valleys of the Red River, the Mississippi, and the Minnesota fall below the former.

Geology and Soil.—The geology has not yet been mapped out with the precision attained in other States. The great central zone, from Lake Superior to the south- western extremity of the State, is occupied by granitic and metamorphic rocks, succeeded, in the south-east, by nar- rower bands of later formation. Within the great Azoic area lies the central watershed of the continent, from which the

~~*the Mississippi towards the Gulf of Mexico, and the Red River of the North to Hudson's Bay. These primordial rocks carry back the geologic history of Minnesota to pre- Silurian times. They form in the north-east, in the neighbourhood of Lake Superior, an extremely rough and hilly country, but as they reach the central and south- western portions of the State they for the most part disappear beneath the surface drift. This central belt is succeeded, on the south and east, by a stretch of sandstone, partially the true red Potsdam and partially a similar but lighter-coloured stratum, which some have proposed to designate the St Croix Sandstone. Isolated beds of sand- stone are found in various parts of the State. The north-western corner, stretching east from the Red River valley, is believed to be Cretaceous; but the great depth of drift and alluvium, disturbed by no large rivers, prevents a positive conclusion. The Lower Magnesian limestone underlies the extreme south-eastern portion of the State, and extends along the west side of the Mississippi to a point a little below St Paul; thence it takes a course almost semicircular, and finally passes out of the State at the south-western boundary. The Trenton limestone occupies a large field in the south and south-east; it comes to the surface in long irregular bands, and an island of it underlies the cities of Minneapolis and St Paul with the adjacent districts. The Galena limestone, the Masquoketa shales, the Niagara limestone, and the rocks of the Devonian age in turn prevail in the other counties of the south and east ; while the existence of the St Peter sandstone would scarcely be known but for its outcropping along the bluffs of the Mississippi, and at the famous waterfall of Minnehaha. From these various formations numerous kinds of stone valuable for building purposes are obtained. The grey granite of St Cloud is extremely hard and enduring. The Lower Magnesian furnishes two especially handsome building stones, —the pink limestone known as Kasota stone, and the cream-coloured stone of Red Wing, both easily worked, and hardening by exposure to atmospheric changes. . Naturally, from its location underneath the principal cities of the State, the Trenton limestone is the most widely used. Sand suitable for glass-making, and argillaceous deposits abound. The clays which make up so large a portion of the sur- face drift of the State are almost wholly of glacial origin. Overlying the deposits of sand, gravel, boulders, and clay is, in most portions of the State, a sandy loam, very finely divided, rich in organic matter, deep brown or black in colour, and of the greatest fertility. It is this soil which has given to the State its reputation for productiveness. Its*~~

~~depth varies from 2 to 5 feet in various parts of the State, and it has been described by Dr Owen as "excellent in quality, rich as well in organic matter as in those mineral salts which give rapidity to the growth of plants, while it has that durability which enables it to sustain a long succession of crops."~~

~~Rivers and Lakes.—The State holds a unique place with reference to the great water systems of the continent. The Mississippi takes its rise in Lake Itasca, north of the centre of the State. Before it leaves the State limits it becomes a great river, half a mile wide, and from 5 to 20 feet deep. It drains with its tributaries all the southern and central portions and a large area of the northern part of the State. It is navigable as far as St Paul, and at Minneapolis the falls of St Anthony afford unrivalled facilities for manufacturing. Of the many affluents of the Mis- sissippi the most important is the Minnesota, which after a course of about 440 miles flows into the main stream at Fort Snelling, 3 miles above St Paul. The source of the Minnesota is but 1 mile from Lake Traverse, the origin of the Red River of the North, and it is navigable during the high-water season for about 238 miles. Its principal tributaries are the Blue Earth, Chippewa, Redwood, Lac qui Parle, and Pomme de Terre. The Red River system drains the north-western part of the State, and its waters~~

~~476~~

~~finally pass into Hudson's Bay, as also do those from the country drained by streams flowing to the Rainy Lake river and the lakes along the northern boundary line. East of this lies the region tributary to Lake Superior and the St: Lawrence system. This comprises an area within the State estimated at 9000 square miles. Its principal river is the St Louis. There are altogether about 2796 miles of navigable water in Minnesota.~~

~~The number of lakes isestimated at seven thousand. They are of all sizes, and are found chiefly in the northern two-thirds of the State. They have been classified geologieally into glacial or drift lakes, fluviatile or river lakes, oceupying basins on river courses, and lakes having rock basins either seooped. out by the action of glaciers or formed by the relative position of different geological formations. By far the greater number give evidence of glacial action in their origin. They abound over the region most deeply~~

~~*covered by the surfaee drift, and are especially prevalent in morainie districts, forming the southern fringe of the laeustrine area of North Ameriea. With the melting of the iee-sheet which onee overspread Minnesota its innumerable lakes eame into existenee ; and the gentle aeelivity of its slopes, precluding rapid erosive aetion, has tended to give permanence to the depressions constituting their basins. The census returns give 4160 square miles of water surfaee within the State. Most of the lakes are exceedingly picturesque in their sur- roundings. Forests skirt their shores, whieh are seldom marshy ; and their waters, abounding in various kinds of fish, are elear and eool. Besides the sanitary advantages afforded by the lakes, as supplying places for reereation and delightful summer resorts, they affect. the elimate to some extent, tempering the extremes com- monly experienced in northern latitudes. The faet that many of the lakes are gradually drying up must be explained by agricul- tural operations. The largest lakes, exclusive of Superior, lying wholly or in part in Minnesota are as follows :—Lake of the Woods, 612 square miles ; Red, 342; Mille Laes, 198; Leeeh, 194; Rainy, 146; Winnibigoshish, 78, and Vermilion, 63.*~~

~~*Flora and Fauna.—The flora and fauna present no marked differences from those of other States in the same latitude. Ina partial list of the birds of Minnesota, two hundred and eighty-one species are enumerated. Of wiuter birds fifty-two speeies have been elassified, twenty-three of them being permanent residents.*~~

~~*Climate. —The State lies so far north as to have a low mean annual temperature, and so far inland as to have the charaeteristie continental elimate. Its elevation above sea-level gives an agree- able rarefaction to the atmosphere, and makes the prevalence of fogs and damp weather unknown. Between June and January there is an annual variation from the summer heat of southern Ohio to the winter cold of Montreal. The winter, usually eom- ineneing in November, and eontinuing till near the end of March, is not a period of intense continued eold, but is subject to consider- able variations. Asa rule, the comparative dryness of the atmo- sphere neutralizes the severest effeet of exeessive cold. The snowfall is extremely light during most of the winter, but as spring approaches preeipitation beeomes greater, and there are frequently heavy snowfalls in February and March. The ehange from winter to summer is rapid, vegetation sometimes*~~

seeming to leap into full and active growth within the space of a few weeks. The summer months bring days of intense heat, but, with comparatively rare exceptions, the nights are deliciously cool. Hot days and eool nights make the ideal weather for a good wheat erop ; and the foreing heats of summer produce in luxuriant growth the vegetable life which belongs to the middle States. The Smithsonian chart assigus to Minnesota an average temperature for the hottest week in summer of from 85° to 90°, and for the eoldest week in winter from 10° to 20° below zero. The mean annual average, for all below 47° of latitude, it gives as 40°. Observations at St Paul, extending over a period of more than thirty-five years, show thie following mean temperatures:—spring, 45°°6; summer, 70°°6 ; autumn, 40°'9 ; winter, 16°°1; average, 44°°6. The average annual rainfall is about 25°5 inches. While this is not large, it is so distributed as best to subserve the purposes of vegetable growth. No moisture is lost in superfluous spring and autumn rains, or in the cold and non-producing part of the year, the precipitation, which jn winter is less than 2 inches, inereasing to about 12 for the sum- mer, To the season of vegetable growth belong 70 per eent. of the yearly measures of heat, 76 per cent. of the rainfall, and 76 per cent. of the atmospheric humidity. The prevailing winds are from the south or south-east. In 1880 rain or snow fell on 150 days, and in 1881 0n 167. Itisevident that the eauses which mitigate the actual severity of the climate as felt, which produce so large a nuniber of clear days, and which forbid the continued presence of a large amount of moisture in the atmosphere, are those which render a elimate healthful in the highest degree. Minnesota has been for many years a favourite resort for invalids. The curative properties of its elimate are especially marked in the ease of pulmonary complaints.

Agriculture.—The leading industry of the State is agriculture, The charaeter of the surface soil varies in different parts of the State with the charaeter of the underlying strata. The fertile land comprises about three-fourths of the entire area of the State. The

drift soil proper of the south and eentre, including the Minnesota valley and the greater part of that of the Mississippi, contains silica and calcareous matter, and is interspersed with alluvial river bottoms. The limestone soil,

~~*in which there is a large calcareous element, lies chiefly on the western slope of the Mississippi. The Red River valley consists of an argillaceous mould, rich in organic deposits. Around Lake Superior, wherever arable land is to be found, it is marked by a rich trap soil. North of the central fertile area, and in the neighbourhood of the sources of the Mississippi, is much swampy land, susceptible of easy drainage, with a large tract of sand and other drift detritus, unfavourable to production. Maize and potatoes flourish, and the uplands, which support hardwood ridges, are suited to general agriculture. To the extreme north the surface, while indicating mineral wealth, is utterly unfit, except in occasional isolated areas, for purposes of tillage.*~~

~~*Wheat has hitherto been the staple product of the State. Soil and climate are such as to ensure a large average yield, while the superior quality of the grain has given it a wide reputation. The other cereals are also cultivated with success. The tendency to diversify agriculture, especially in the southern part of the State, has been stimulated by several partial failures of the wheat crop, the locust invasions, and the competition of the farther north-west.*~~

~~*The area of the State includes 89,791,265 acres surveyed, 10,968,575 acres not surveyed, and 2,700,000 acres of lake surface. The total sales of public and railroad lands in 1879 and 1880 were not far from 4,000,000 acres. It is estimated that the aggregate of lands yet undisposed of, three-fourths of which may be profitably cultivated, is nearly 20,000,000 acres, exclusive of the lands belong- ing to the State. White Earth Indian reservation has thirty-six townships of prairie and timber land; and Red Lake reservation contains 3,200,000 acres.*~~

~~*Forestry.—A special census bulletin estimates the amount of merchantable white pine standing, May 31, 1880, as amounting in all to 6,100,000,000 feet. The entire cut for the census year 1880 was 540,997,000 feet. Of hardwood forest 3,840,000 acres remain, capable of yielding 57,600,000 cords of wood.*~~

~~*Every encouragement is afforded, both by the railway corpora- tions and the State, to tree-planting on the prairies. A quarter section is given to any one who will plant and keep in good condi- tion 40 acres of timber for eight*~~

~~*years. In 1880 there were planted 25,331 acres of trees, exclusive of those bordering highways and the windbreaks along the railroad lines.*~~

~~*Manufactures.—The manufactures of Minnesota are yet in their*~~

~~*infancy. The abundant water-power of the State, its proximity to*~~

~~*the coal-fields of Iowa, its superior transportation facilities, and the large demand for manufactured commodities are, however, rapidly developing this brane ofindustry. The most important industries are the manufacture of flour and that of lumber. The former natu- rally established itself in aState of immense wheat yield andabundant water-power. It received its greatest stimulus from the invention and adoption of the middlings purifying process, which produces the highest grade of flour, and to which the hard spring wheat of Minnesota is especially adapted. Among other manufacturing industries actively prosecuted are the making of brick, pottery, stoneware, and agricultural implements, and also meat-packing.*~~

~~*Commerce.—The geographical position of Minnesota gives it ex- tensive commercial interests. Two continental waterways terminate within the State. The Mississippi affords continuous navigation to European ports during eight months of the year. From Duluth numerous lines of vessels traverse the chain of great lakes, and transport the products of the west to the eastern seaboard. Three great transcontinental railway lines are connected more or less directly with the railroad system of the State. Twelve lines of rail- way from every part of Minnesota converge at the contiguous cities of St Paul and Minneapolis, and three great trunk lines from these centres to Chicago secure the advantages of a lively competition.*~~

~~*Education.—The common school system is supported by land grants, a local tax, and a State tax. The superintendent of in- struction is appointed by the governor. County superintendents are chosen by popular vote. Common school districts have boards of three trustees each. Six directors are appointed for independent districts. The permanent fund in 1881 was $4,850,000, and the current fund $260,835. The State university, located at Minnea- polis, is governed by a board of regents, consisting of the governor of the State, the superintendent of public instruction, the president of the university, and six others; both sexes are admitted, and tuition is free. The*~~

~~*State supports three normal schools. Forty- two aeademies and six colleges are sustained by denominational or private enterprise.*~~

~~*Administration.—The departments of Government are, as in all the States, the legislative, the executive, and the judicial. The State contains seventy-eight counties, of which some are still subject to change of boundary. From these are elected by districts forty-seven senators and one hundred and three members of the House of Representatives. The State officers arc a governor, lieutenant-governor, seeretary of state, treasurer, and attorney-general, all elected by the people. The term of oflice is two years.*~~

~~*MIN——-MIN*~~

~~*The governor has power to veto separate items of a money bill. judieiary is elective, and the termi of office seven years. requirements for citizenship are residence in the United States one year, in the State four months, and in the election district ten days preceding an election. _. Women arc allowed to vote for school officers aud upon questions relating to the management of schools, and are also eligible to sueh offices. No coumty can eon- tain more than 400 square miles. Extra sessions may be called, but no session can exceed sixty days in length. Under the last apportionment the State is entitled to five representatives in the national Congress.*~~

~~*The annual valuation of property for 1882, as equalized by the State board, gives the personal property as $79,219,445, the real estate $242,938,170. from $750,000, 000.*~~

~~*While Minnesota was still a Territory, but after it had adopted a State constitution, an amendment was added to the constitution authorizing the issue of a large ainount of bonds in aid of railway construction. Shortly afterwards, the companies having failed to fulfil their contracts and defaulted payment, the State foreclosed its mortgage on the lands, franchises, &c., of the roads, and turned them over to other companies. By another amendment to the constitution, the payment of the bonds was made contingent upon the result of a popular vote. Several proposals having failed to receive this sanetion, the necessity for it was removed in 1881 by a decision of the supreme court, declaring the aniendment uncon- stitutional. The legislature immediately met, accepted a plan of settlement proposed by*~~

~~*the bondholders themselves, and over $4,000,000 worth of new bonds were issued in exchange for the old. For the payment of the principal and interest of these the people have voted (November 1882) to set aside as a sinking fund the proceeds of 500,000 acres of land belonging to the State internal improvement fund, the deficit to be paid out of the tax on railroad earnings. These bonds include all the State debt except about $200,000.*~~

~~*Population. The population of the State was 6077 at the census of 1850, 172,023 in 1860, 439,706 in 1870, and 780,778 (419,149 males and 361,624 females) in 1880. According to the last census 299,800 whites had been born in the State; and of the 267,676 foreign-born inhabitants of the State 107,770 came from Seandina- vian countries and 68,277 from the United Kingdom and the British colonies, while 77,505 acknowledge the German as their native tongue. The increase of population in the State for the last decade of years alone was 75 per eent. The most important cities are St Paul, the capital, and Minneapolis, with 41,473 and 46,887 inhabit- ants respectively in 1880; Winona had 10,208 and Stillwater 9055.*~~

~~*History.—Missionary efforts and the trading spirit first induced white men to venture as far into the unexplored north-west as the boundaries of what is now the State of Minnesota. The earliest accounts of its natural features and native tribes appear in the Jesuit writings. The "Relations" of 1670-71 allude to the Sioux or Dakotas. In 1678 a company was formed for trading with this tribe. Du Luth was leader of this expedition, and later on went from Lake Superior to the Mississippi by canoe. But the first pub- lished account is that of Louis Hennepin, a Recollect monk, who, in 1680, visited the falls of St Anthony, and gave them their name, from that of his patron saint. For a eentury the only visitants of the wild region were a few missionaries, and a number cf fur traders who found the profit of the journey to more than couuter- balance its perils and hardships. To the latter class belong Perrot, who reached the Mississippi by way of the Fox and Wiseonsin in 1684, aud founded at Lake Pepin the first trading post in the State, aud Le Sueur, a Canadian, who ascended the great river from its mouth, and established another post above Lake Pepin. Captain John Carver, the explorer of the country of the upper Mississippi, visited the falls of St Anthony in 1766, being the first British tra- veller who reached the spot. On March 20, 1804, Upper Louisiana was organized, eonsisting of*~~

~~*Arkansas, Missouri, Iowa, and a large portion of Minnesota. From this time onwards the progress of explo- ration was rapid, and settlement followed in its train. The first really extensive exploration of any large part of what is now Minnesota was made between 1817 and 1823, by Major S. H. Long, of the United States engineer corps, in command of a Government expedition. About the same time the Red River received its first visitant. Thomas Douglas, earl of Selkirk, an Englishman of eccentric character, went, in 1817, to what is now Winnipeg, by way of York river. Having been struck with the agricultural possibilities of the region about the Red River of the North, he induced a colony of Swiss farmers to settle there. These were dis- appointed in the country, and unused to the severity of the climate, so that they finally removed to the vieinity of St Paul and_con- tributed to the earliest development of the agrieultural in- dustry of the State. In 1821 Colonel Snelling built, at the junction of the Minnesota and Mississippi rivers, a stronghold which he named Fort St Anthony. The name was changed to Fort*~~

~~*The*~~

~~*The legislature meets biennially. |*~~

~~*AUT*~~

~~*The State | Snelling in his honour, in 1824, and the fort is still an important*~~

~~*post as a base of supplies for the newer north-west. The first steamboat made its appearance at the head of navigation in 1823. The settlement of St Paul, one of the oldest towns as well as the capital, iscommonly dated from 1846, at which time there were a few shanties on its site. Population now began to arrive in constantly increasing numbers, and on Mareh 3, 1849, a bill passed Congress for organizing the Territory. It was proposed at one time to name it Itasca, but the name Minnesota, meaning, "sky-tinted water," and originally applied to the river bearing that title, was finally retained. The western boundary of the territory was fixed at the Missouri river, The population was but 4057, the largest town*~~

~~*: | had but a few hundred inhabit and ¢ i Te Geel valicor not tar | undred inhabitants, and a large part of the soil of*~~

~~*the State still belonged to the Indians. But progress now began in earnest. A constitution was adopted in 1857, and on May 11, 1858, Minnesota was admitted as a State, with a population, according to the last Territorial eensus, of 150,037.*~~

~~*One of the first acts of the new State was the issue of the rail- road bonds noticed above. Soon after eame the civil war. Within two months of Lineoln's first call for troops the first Minnesota regiment, over one thousand strong, was mustered into serviee. By August of 1862 ten regiments had been called for andfurnished. In all, the Statesupplied to the armies of the Union 25,052 nen, or about one-seventh of its entire population at the outbreak of the war.*~~

~~*In the meantime there occurred, in 1862, the horrible outbreak known as the Sioux massacre. Settlements were cut off, isolated settlers murdered, and even a strong post like Fort Ridgely was attacked. The outbreak spread over a large portion of the State; several severe engagements were fought; and it was not until the State had a thoroughly equipped military force ready for the cam- paign that the Indians begun to flee or to give themselves up. By this time over 700 persons had been niurdered, 200, chiefly women, taken eaptive ; eighteen counties were ravaged, and 30,000 people were homeless. The property loss was not less than $3,000,000.*~~

~~*During these loeal and national disturbanees the material pro- sperity of the State was unabated. Notwithstanding the heavy cost of the civil war and the Sioux massacre, the eensus of 1865 showed a population of 250,099. Railroad construction began to be ener- getically carried forward; in 1870 329 miles were made and 1096 miles were in operation; a road to Lake Superior was completed, and the Northern Pacifie was fairly under way. In 1878-76, and to some extent in 1877, successive visitations of locusts destroyed the crops of the south-western counties. The sufferers were relieved by the State, and no repetition of the scourge has sinee been experienced. (Gis is 12)*~~

~~*MINNOW (Leuciscus phoxinus or Phosxinus levis) is the smallest British Cyprinoid, readily distinguished by its very small scales. It is abundant in rivers, brooks, and lakes, always swimming in schools, and shifting its ground in search of food, which consists of every kind of vegetable and*~~

~~*animal substance. It ranges from southern Europe to Scandinavia, and from Ireland into north-eastern Asia ; in the Alps it attains to a higher altitude than any other Cyprinoid, viz., to nearly 8000 feet. Its usual size varies between 2 and 3 inches; but insuitable localities, especially in Germany, it is known to reach a length of from 4 to 5 inches. The colours vary with age and season ; a series of dark spots or cross-bands along the sides is always present, but the males assume in summer a nuptial dress of scarlet or purple on the lower parts of the head and body. The minnow is used as bait; it can also be introduced with facility and with great advantage into ponds in which there is otherwise a scarcity of food for more valuable fishes, such as trout, perch, and pike.*~~

~~*MINO DI GIOVANNI (1431-1486), called pa Fresoze, was born at Poppi in the Casentino in 1431. He had property at Fiesole, whence his usual name. Vasari's account of him is very inaccurate and full of contradictions. Mino was a friend and fellow-worker both with D. da Settignano and Matteo Civitale, all three being about the same age. 'There is considerable similarity in their works, showing mutual influence. Mino's sculpture is remarkable for its gem-like finish and extreme delicacy of detail, as well as for its spirituality and strong devotional feeling. No other sculptor portrayed the virginal purity of the Madonna or the soft infant beauty of the Divine Child with greater tenderness and refinement. _ Of Mino's earlier works, the finest are in the duomo of Fiesole, the altarpiece*~~

~~*and tomb of Bishop Salutati, executed about 1464. In the Badia of Florence are some of Mino's most important sculptures—an altarpiece, and the tombs of Bernardo Giugni, 1466, and the Margrave Hugo, 1481—all sculptured in white marble, with beautiful life-sized recumbent effigies and attendant angels. The pulpit in Prato cathedral, finished in 1473, is very delicately sculptured, with bas-reliefs of great minuteness, but somewhat weakly designed. Soon after the completion of this work Mino paid a visit of some years to Rome, where he executed several fine pieces of sculpture, such as the tomb of Pope Paul II. (now in the crypt of St Peter's), the tomb of Francesco Tornabuoni in 8. Maria Sopra Minerva, and a beautiful little marble tabernacle for the holy oils in S. Maria in Trastevere. There can be*~~

~~little doubt that he was also the sculptor of several of the very lovely monu-ments in §. Maria del Popolo, especially those in the sacristy of Bishop Gomiel and Archbishop Rocca, 1482, and the marble reredos, also in the sacristy, given by Pope Alexander YI. Some of Mino's portrait busts and delicate profile bas-reliefs are preserved in the Bargello at Florence ; they are full of life and expression, though without the extreme realism of Verrocchio and other sculptors of his time. He died in 1486.~~

~~See Vasari, Milanesi's cd., 1878-82; Perkins, Italian Sculptors ; Winckelmann and D'Agincourt, Storia della Scultura, 1818.~~

~~MINOR. See INFANT.~~

~~MINORCA. See Batraric IsLanps.~~

~~MINORITES. See Franciscans.~~

~~MINOS, a legendary king of Crete, in whom both historical and religious elements are united. The historical element lies in the fact that an early civilization and mari- time power had its seat in Crete. The Phcenician inter- course played a great part in developing this island state, and Minos issometimescalleda Phcenician. The name Minoa is often found where Phcenician influence was strongest, e.g., at Megara. The laws and constitution which existed from a very early time in Crete were attributed to Minos, to whom they were revealed by Zeus. After his death he became the judge of the dead; he is one of the forms assumed by the old conception of the first man, who is after death king and god among the dead. It is therefore highly probable that the name Minos is the Greek form of the original Manva, 2.e., "endowed with thinking," which is seen in the Hindn Manu and the Germanic Mann. As in all other heroized forms of the god of the dead, there is both a terrible and a wise and beneficent side in the character of Minos. Cretan legends described him as the wild huntsman of the forests and mountains, the lover of the nymphs, though his love means death to them. His death is localized in the far west, in the land of sunset ; his grave was shown at Camicus near Agrigentum, attached toa temple of Aphrodite. He pursued Dedalus thither, and the daughters of Cocalus, the king of Agrigentum, killed him by pouring boiling water over him in the bath, an obvious myth of the sun dying in the sea. Minos, the god of the~~

~~dead, is, according to the usual rule, the sun-god, who goes to illumine the dead when he dies on the earth. His wife is Pasiphae, the moon-goddess, who had an oracle by dreams at Thalame in Laconia. The union of the sun and the moon, the bull and the cow, gave rise to many quaint and ugly legends: Pasiphae loved the bull of Minos, was aided by the stratagem of Deedalus, and gave birth to the Minotaur, half bull and half man. The Minotaur is one of those monstrous forms which were suggested to the Greek fancy by the quaint aniinals common in Oriental art. It was shut up in the LaByRINTH (q.v.), which was constructed by the skilled artist Dedalus. Now a son of Minos nained Androgeus had been killed by the Athenians, and Minos as a punishment required that seven Athenian~~

~~youths and seven maidens should be sent every ninth year and given up to the Minotaur to be devoured. When this sacrifice took place for the third time Theseus came as one of the hostages, and slew the Minotaur with the help of Ariadne. Throughout these legends we see the close relation of Minos to the Phoenician sun-god Melkarth, and perceive the way in which different places where Pheenician influence can be traced, Athens, Sicily, &c., are brought together in religious myths.~~

~~MINOTAUR. See Minos.~~

~~MINSK, a western government of Russia, is bounded by Vilna, Vitebsk, and Moghileff on the N. and E., and by Tchernigoff, Kieff, Volhynia, and Grodno on the 8. and W., and has an area of 35,175 square miles. The surface is undulating and hilly in the north-west, where a narrow plateau and a range of hills of the Tertiary forma- tion runs to the north-east, separating the basin of the Niemen, which flows into the Baltic, from that of the Dnieper, which sends its waters into the Black Sea. The range, which averages from 800 to 1000 feet, culminates in Lysaya Gora (1129 feet). The remainder of the province is flat, 450 to 650 feet above the sea-level, covered with sands and clays of the glacial and post-glacial periods. Two broad shallow depressions, drained by the Berezina and the Pripet, cross the province from north to south and from west to east; and these, as well as the triangular space between them, are covered with immense marshes (often occupying 200 to 600 square miles), numberless ponds and small lakes,~~

~~*peat-bogs, downs, and moving sands, as well as with dense forests. This country, and especially its south-western part, is usually known under the name of Polyesie ("The Woods"). Altogether, marshes take up 15 per cent. and marshy forests no less than 55 per cent. of the entire area of the province (60 to 71 per cent. in several districts). The forests, however, consist of full- grown trees in the higher districts of the north-west only, those which occupy the marshy ground consisting of small and stunted pine, birch, and aspen. The climate of the Polyesie is harsh and extremely unhealthy; malarias and an endemic disease of the bulbs of the hair (oltun, plica Polonica) are the plagues of these tracts, the evil being intensified by the dreadful poverty of the popula- tion. Communication is very difficult. The railway from Poland to Moscow has, so far as Minsk is concerned, taken advantage of the plateau above mentioned ; but still it has to cross the broad marshy depression of the Berezina. A successful attempt was recently made to drain the marshes of the Polyesie by a system of canals, and more than 4,500,000 acres have thus been rendered suitable for pasture and agriculture. Two great tributaries of the Dnieper, the Berezina and the Pripet, both navigable, with numberless subtributaries, many of which are also navigable, are the natural outlets for the marshes of the province. The Dnieper flows along its south-eastern border for 160 miles, and the Niemen on the north-western for 130 miles. The affluents of the Baltic, the Duna (Dwina), and the Vistula are connected by three canals with tributaries of the Dnieper. The population of the province (1,183,200 in 1873) may be estimated at about 1,350,000, mostly White Russians (67 per cent.); there are also Poles (about 11 per cent.), especially in the western districts, Jews (more than 10 per cent.), Little Russians (5 per cent.), and Russians (2 per cent.). About 70,000 are considered to be Lithuanians ; there are also 4000 Tartars, whose presence can be traced to the raids of their ancestors on Lithuania in the 13th century, and about 2000 German agriculturists who settled in last century*~~

~~*The chief occupation of the inhabitants is agriculture, which is, however, very unproductive in the lowlands; in the Polyesie the peasants rarely have pure bread to eat. Only 23°8 per cent. of the*~~

~~*area is under crops, the average yield being 1,600,000 quarters of corn and 1,170,000 quarters of potatoes. Cattle-breeding is very imperfectly developed, the meadows being marshy throughout the lowlands. Hunting and bee-keeping are sources of income in the Polyesie, and fishing gives occupation to about twenty thousand persons. The chief source of income for the inhabitants of the low- lands is the tiinber trade. Timber is floated down the rivers, and tar, pitch, various products of bark, potash, charcoal, and numerous sorts of timber-ware (wooden dishes, &¢.)are manufactured in villages toa great extent ; and shipbuilding is carried on along the Dnieper, Pripet, and Niemen. Shipping is also an important source of income, owing to the traffic on the canals and rivers of the province. In 1877 560 boats and 1120 rafts with 170,000 cwts. of cargo left the banks of the Berezina and Pripet ; and the traffic on the Dnieper and Niemen was nearly as great. The industrial arts are almost entirely undeveloped. There are, however, several distilleries and tanneries ; aud woollen-stuffs, candles, tobacco, and sugar are manu- factured to a limited extent. Corn is exported from the western districts, but imported to the same amount into the southern parts ; the chief export trade is in produce of forest industries. The pro- vince is crossed by two important railways, one of which connects Poland with Moscow, and the other Libau and Vilna with the srovinees of Little Russia; the great highway from Warsaw to loscow crosses the province in the south, and its passage through the Berezina is protected by the first-class fortress of Bobruisk. Minsk is divided into nine districts, of which the capitals are— Minsk (43,500 inhabitants), Bobruisk (26,850), Borisotf (5650), close by the place where Napoleon I. crossed the Berezina on his retreat from Moscow, Igumen. (2200), Mozyr (4200), Novogrodek (9000), Pinsk (18,000), Ryechitsa (4300), and Shutsk (17,200). The pro- vinee is well provided with secondary schools, but primary edu- cation, especially in the Polyesie, is in a very backward state.*~~

~~*The country now occupied by the province of Minsk was, as far as historical records extend, an abode of Slavonians. That portion of it which was occupied by the Krivichi became part of the Polotsk principality and so of " White Russia" ; the other portion, ocen- pied by the Dregovichi and Drevlans, became part of the " Black*~~

~~*tussia ”; whilst the south-western portion of it was occupied by Yatvyags or Lithuanians. During the 12th, 13th, and 14th cen- turies it was divided among several principalities, which were in- corporated with the great principality of Lithuania, and later were annexed to Poland. Russia took possession of this country in 1793. In 1812 it was invaded by the army of Napoleon I.*~~

~~*Minsk, the capital of the above province, is situated on the Svisloch, a tributary of the Berezina, at the junction of the Moscow and Warsaw and the Libau and Kharkoff railways, 465 miles by rail west from Moscow. It has 43,500 inhabitants, of whom one-third are Jews of the poorest class; the others are White Russians, Poles, and Tartars (about 700). The manufac- tures are few and insignificant. Since the introduction of railways the commercial importance of the place, which formerly was slight, has begun to increase.*~~

~~*Minsk is mentioned in Russian annals in the 11th century under the name of Myen’sk or Menesk. In 1066 and 1096 it was devas- tated, first by Izyaslav and afterwards by Vladimir. It changed rulers many times until the 13th century, when it became a Lithu- anian fief. Jn the 15th century it became partof Poland, but as late as 1505 it was ravaged by Tartars, andin 1508 by Russians. In the 18th century it was taken several times by Swedes and Russians. Russia annexed it in 1793. Napoleon I. took it in 1812.*~~

~~*MINSTREL. The “minstrels,” according to Bishop Percy, “were an order of men in the Middle Ages who united the arts of poetry and music, and sang verses to the harp of their own composing, who appear to have accom- panied their songs with mimicry and action, and to have practised such various means of diverting as were much admired in those rude times, and supplied the want of more refined entertainments.” This conception of the ‘minstrel ” has been generally accepted in England ever since Percy published his Reliques of Ancient Poetry, which he gave to the world as the products of the genius of these anonymous popular poets and harpers. The name has been fixed in the language by the usage of romantic poets and novelists ; Scott’s “last minstrel” and Moore’s “minstrel boy ” were*~~

~~*minstrels in Percy’s sense of the word. The imagination |*~~

~~was fascinated by this romantic figure, and the laborious and soured antiquary Ritson argued in vain that nobody before Bishop Percy had ever applied the word minstrel to such an order of men, that no such order of men ever did~~

~~| his own composing.~~

~~479~~

~~exist in medizval England, and that the historical English "minstrels," so-called, were a much less gifted and respect- able class, being really instrumental musicians, either retainers or strollers.~~

~~The dispute between Ritson and Percy was partly a dis- pute about a word, and partly a dispute about historical facts; and there can be little doubt that Ritson was substan- tially right in both respects. The romantic bishop trans- ferred to the medizeval English minstrel the social status and brilliant gifts of the Anglo-Saxon gleoman or scép, and the French troubadour in the flourishing period of Provencal poetry. Thatthegleemen sang tothe harp verses of their own composing, that some of them travelled from court to court as honoured guests, while others were important attached court officials, and all received costly presents, is a well attested historical fact. The household bard at Heorot in the poem of Beowulf, a man who bore many things in mind and found skilfully linked words to express them, was one of King Hrothgar's thanes; the gleeman of the 7'raveller's Song had visited all the tribal chiefs of Europe, and received many precious gifts, rings and bracelets of gold. The incidents in these poems may not be historic, but they furnish indubitable testimony to the social position of the gleeman in those days; a successful gleeman was as much honoured as a modern poet-laureate, and as richly rewarded as a fashionable prima donna. Further, the strolling glee- man of a humbler class seems to have been respected as a nou-combatant ; this much we may infer from the stories about Alfred and Anlaff having penetrated an enenty's camp in the disguise of gleemen, whether these stories are true or not, for otherwise they would not have been invented. The position of pocts and singers in Provence from the 11th to the 13th century is still clearer. The classification of them by King Alphonso of Castile in 1273, by which time honourable designations were getting mixed, may help to determine the exact position~~

~~of the English "minstrel." There was first the lowest class, the ba/os, who strolled among the common people, singing ribald songs, playing on instruments, showing feats of skill and strength, exhibiting learned dogs and goats, and so forth ; then the joglars or joculatores, who played, sang, recited, conjured, men of versatile powers of entertainment, who performed at the houses of the nobility, and were liberally remunerated ; then the trobadors, or inventores, whose dis- tinction it was to compose verses, whether or not they had sufficient executive faculty to sing or recite them.~~

~~If we compare these distinctions with Percy's definition of the minstrel, we see that his minstrel would have corre- sponded with the jog/ar, who also wrote his own songs and recitations. Now in the palmy days of Provencal song there were many professional joglars, such as Arnaut Daniel or Perdigo, who stood high among the most brilliant troubadours, and visited on terms of social equality with nobles and princes. But long before English became the court language the fashion had disappeared, and a new division of functions had been developed. In Chaucer's time the poet of society no longer sang his verses to harp or fiddle, or amused his patrons with feats of legerdemain ; the king's gestour (teller of gestes) discharged the profes- sional duty of amusing with witty stories; and the social position of the joglar had very much sunk. Ritson was perfectly right in saying that no English poet of any social position was a professional reciter to the harp of verses of The Provengal joglar, travelling from court to court, combined our modern functions of poet, society journalist, entertainer, and musician. But about the time when the word "minstrel" came to be applicd to him the English joglar was rapidly sinking or had already sunk to the social position of the modern strolling mounte- bank, travelling showman, or music-hall singer. And the.~~

~~word minstrel had had a separate history before it became synonymous (as in the Catholicon Anglicum of 1483) with gesticulator, histrio, joculator, and other names for strolling entertainers. Derived from the Low Latin ministralis, it was originally applied to those retainers whose business it was to play upon musical instruments for the entertainment of their lords. In Chaucer's Syuire's Tale, the " minstralles " play before King Cambuscan~~

~~*as he dines in state " biforn him at the bord deliciously," and the '"loude minstralcye " precedes him when he rises and withdraws to the orna-mented chamber, Ther as they sownen diverse instrumentz, That it is lyk an heuen for to here.*~~

~~*But even in Chaucer's time there were less respectable musicians than those of the king's household—strolling musicians, players on trumpets, clarions, taborets, lutes, rebecks, fiddles, and other instruments. These also were known by the generic name of minstrels, whether because many of them had learnt their art in noble households before they took to a vagabond life, or because the more respectable of them affected to be in the service or under the patronage of powerful nobles, as later on companies of strolling players figured as the "servants" of distinguished patrons. All the allusions to minstrels in literature from Langland's time to Spenser's point to them as strolling musicians. Some of them may have sung to the harp verses of their own composing, and some of them may have composed some of the ballads that now charm us with their fresh and simple art ; but the profession of the "' minstrel," properly so-called, was much less romantic than Bishop Percy painted it. It was not merely "the bigots of the iron time" that "called their harmless art a crime"; in a repressive Act passed by Henry IV. they appear with "westours, rymours, et autres vacabondes" among the turbulent elements of the community.*~~

~~*In a passage in Malory's Morte Darthur, the word minstrel is applied to a personage who comes much nearer the ideal of the Provengal joglar. When Sir Dinadan wished to infuriate King Mark, he composed a satirical song, and gave it to Elyot a harper to sing through the country, Tristram guaranteeing him against the conse- quences. When King Mark took him to task for this, the harper's answer was, ' Wit you well Iam a minstrel, and I must do as Iam commanded of these lords that I bear the arms of." And because he was a minstrel King Mark allowed him to go unharmed. The service done by Elyot the harper in the old romance is a good illustration of the political function of the itinerant medieval joculator; but even he did not sing verses of his own composing, and he was not a "minstrel" in the sense in which the word was used by romantic poets after the publication of Percy's Reliques. (w. M.)*~~

~~*MINT. The mint is the place where the coinage of a country is manufactured, and whence it is issued by sovereign authority, under special conditions and regulations. The privilege of coining has in all ages and countries belonged to the sovereign, and has, in England at least, been rarely delegated to any subject, and in any case in a restricted form, the crown always reserving the right of determining the standard, denomination, and design of the coins.*~~

~~*At a very early stage of civilization it was found necessary to have some definite medium of exchange, in order to avoid the great inconvenience arising from the system of payment in kind, which was the primitive and natural method. It was not long before metal came to be used as such a medium, probably from its durability and portability, and in the case of gold and silver on account of their intrinsic value. The less liable the value of a metal is to change the better is it suited for a standard of value.*~~

~~*Though historians assure us that metals were found in*~~

~~*Britain at a very early period, there does not appear to be any evidence that the mines were worked until consider- ably later than the time at which the use of metal as a medium of exchange was introduced. It 1s probable there- fore that the metals for exchange were imported into Britain long before the native mines were developed.*~~

~~*The metals chiefly used were silver and brass, which were at first simply exchanged by weight for commodities of all kinds. As commercial transactions became more numerous and more complicated, this system of payment grew troublesome, and it was found convenient to divide the mass of metal into small parts, which soon took the form of rough coins. But the principle of payment by weight was retained through many centuries, and is per- petuated, though in name only, in the word " pound."*~~

~~*Records of attempts to organize the coinage of England are found as far back as the Anglo-Saxon period, and it is known that on the dissolution of the Heptarchy the mints were regulated by laws framed in the witenagemot. The first monarch who appears to have dealt successfully with the*~~

~~*organization of the coinage was Athelstan, who framed laws for the regulation of the mints, and appointed officers whose titles and duties are then first recorded. The only officers connected with the coinage of whom mention is found before this time are the "moneyers," who appear to have been alone responsible for the manufacture of the coin ; but it is probable that even then there existed some officer who had authority over them. In early Saxon and Norman times the number of moneyers was considerable, mints being established in almost every important town, as might be expected at a period when communication between distant places was extremely difficult. They appear to have been the officers who actually performed the work of making the coin, the mint master in later times contracting with them, ata high rate, for the work. They were respon- sible for the purity and perfection of the coins produced, as appears from the fact that it was they who were punished (as traitors) in the case of any deficiency in weight or fineness. They had prescriptive rights in the coinage, and in modern times (even so lateas 1850) claimed to have corporate privileges; but it is clear, on the authority of Ruding, that they never were a "corporation" separate from other officers of the mint.1 The number of mints was greatly reduced after the Norman Conquest, but continued to be considerable until the reign of Richard L, when the work of coining for the whole kingdom was con- centrated in the mint in the Tower of London. Only one provincial mint (Winchester) remained till a later date.*~~

~~*An important reorganization of the coinage took place in 1325 under Edward II., the regulations then framed for the manufacture and issue of the coins forming the basis of those still in force. The principal officers under these regulations were—master, warden, comptroller, king's assay master, king's clerks, and cuneator. The office of cuneator was one of great importance at a time when there existed a multiplicity of mints, since he had the sole charge of all the dies used not only at the mint in the Tower of London but also in the provinces. He chose the engravers and presented them to the barons of the exchequer in order that they might take the oath of fidelity ; he superintended their work, and was generally answerable for the perfection of the dies before they were issued for use in the various mints of the country. The office, which was hereditary, ceased to exist when the provincial mints were suppressed. In its place was instituted the office of clerk of the irons,*~~

~~*1 Among the special privileges which they undoubtedly enjoyed was exemption from local taxation, as appears in a writ of Henry III., which commands the mayor of London not to disturb them "by exacting tallages contrary to their privileges." Sometimes also houses were allowed to them rent free.*~~

~~*Ma NT*~~

~~*whose functions were more limited, and were not hereditary. This office was only recently abolished.*~~

~~*In the Middle Ages an important duty devolving on the officers of the mint was the collection of the seigniorage which was levied on the coining of money, not only for the purpose of covering the expenses of minting, but also as a source of revenue to the crown which the sovereign claimed by virtue of his prerogative. In former times the collection of the seigniorage was entrusted to the warden, who also superintended the manufacture of the coins, so far as to ensure the proper relations between the moneyers on the one hand and the state on the other. He does not appear, however, to have had any responsibility with regard to the fineness and weight of the coins.*~~

~~*The king's assay master was specially charged with all matters relating to the accuracy of the standard. The officer next in rank to him was the comptroller, who presented annually to the barons of the exchequer a report of all the gold and silver money struck in the kingdom during the year. These reports, which were always written upon parchment, constitute the chief mint records. The king's clerk exercised a general superintendence and kept an account of all the mint transactions. As the work of the mint became more extensive and more complicated, other officers were added such as the surveyor of the meltings, surveyor of the money presses, and many others.*~~

~~*The present arrangements with regard to the officers of the mint were made in 1870, when several important changes took place in the mint establishment. Up to that time there had been two controlling officers,—the master, who in some instances was selected on account of distinguished scientific attainments (as in the cases of Sir John Herschel and Professor Graham), and the deputy master and comp- troller. A careful inquiry,*~~

~~*however, having led to the conclusion that the control of the mint might with advantage be concentrated in the hands of asingle officer of experience in the conduct of public business, it was decided, on the death of Professor Graham, to entrust the actual administra- tion of the department to the deputy master,—the office and title of master of the mint being held by the chancellor of the exchequer for the time being, without salary. At the same time the services of a scientific officer were secured, by the appointment of a chemist of the mint. The coining and die department and the melting depart- ment were united under the name of the operative depart- ment, and placed under a single superintendent. The first deputy master appointed under the new regulations was the Hon. C. W. Fremantle, C.B., to whom the public are indebted for a series of Annual Reports which have given a new and increased interest to the subject of the coinage, and may be said to constitute in themselves a mint literature.*~~

~~*The actual operations of coining in early times were few in number and simple in character. The metals forming the alloy were melted together in the proportion necessary to bring them to the required standard, and the alloy thus obtained was cast into bars, which were reduced by hammering to the requisite thickness. They were then cut with shears into pieces more or less regular in size and form, roughly annealed, and finally impressed with the prescribed device by a blow with a hammer.*~~

~~*The last-named appears to have been the only part of the process which was performed with any great amount of care. The blank piece was placed by the hand upon a die fixed into a block of wood having a large heavy base to resist the oscillation caused by the blow ; the die on which was engraved the device for the reverse of the com was then placed upon the upper side of the blank and held by means of a holder, round which was placed a roll of lead to protect the hand of the operator while heavy blows were struck with a hammer by an assistant workman. One of the*~~

~~*earliest improvements in coining was the introduction of a tool in shape resembling a pair of tongs, the two dies being placed one at the extremity of each leg. This avoided the necessity of readjusting the dies between successive strokes of the hammer, and ensured greater accuracy in the*~~

~~*impres- sion. It was long before the system of coining by hand was superseded by the coining press, or mill, which, even after its first introduction, was only very slowly adopted. Several attempts were made to introduce machinery for coining before it was brought into active use, the objection to it being its great expense. The mill and screw were finally introduced into the mint under Charles II., when many improvements were also made in the preliminary operations. Steam-power was first applied in 1810, when the vacuum screw-press was introduced. In 1839 Uhlhorn invented the lever-press, which still remains in use.*~~

~~*The subject of the design on coins, besides being inter- esting both from an artistic and an historical point of view, becomes very important when it is remembered that it is the impression of the coin with the authorized device which makes it legally current. The artistic merits of the design of the early Greek coins are well known, and prove that the dies from which the coins were struck must have been engraved with much skill and care. The form of the coins before being stamped was at first merely that of*~~

~~*| natural rounded nuggets of gold, or of the silver-gold alloy*~~

~~*known as electrum. Such coined nuggets of gold are still to be found among the hill tribes of India. Simple nuggets were afterwards replaced by roughly-fashioned masses like half bullets, a form which rendered it easy to impart high relief to the obverse and comparatively low relief to the reverse of the coins. The early British coins! had for their prototype the gold "'stater" of Philip of Macedon, but the design of this beautifully finished coin was so roughly imitated by a succession of British copyists that ultimately the wreath round the head of the monarch alone survived, and that in a scarcely recognizable form. It is not only in the early British coins that the influence of classical art may be seen, for it is very evident in some of the present day, the most notable instances being the reverse of the bronze coinage, and the beautiful design of St George and the dragon by Pistrucci, which is still used as an alternative design for the sovereign. It has been ascertained that the impressions on the reverse of very early Greek coins were produced by the rough surface of the anvil or the nail head on which they were placed, while the obverse was struck with the die. A little later the device on the reverse of the coins was obtained by placing*~~

~~*the blank piece on small points of metal arranged in geometrical forms which caused corresponding indenta- tions on the coins when struck with the hammer. The beauty and accuracy of design on coins gradually increased as art and manual skill developed, and probably culminated at the period of the Renaissance.*~~

~~*Although it has been the custom since the time of the Saxons to stamp coins with the head of the reigning monarch, it does not appear that any attempt at actual por- traiture was made in England until the reign of Henry VII, who, "about the eighteenth or nineteenth year of his reign, did make a great alteration in the form of his coin, upon which his head was now represented in profile, and with a good resemblance of his other pictures."? Since then much care seems to have been taken to stamp the coins with a true likeness of the monarch. In most cases the heads bear a striking resemblance to the portraits drawn by the great artists of the respective periods, and were, indeed, generally designed by artists of eminence. Some of the Milan coinage of Louis XII. is said to have been*~~

~~*1 See Evans, Coins of the Ancient Britons. 2 See Martin Folkes, Tables of English se A*~~

~~*d Gold Coins.*~~

~~*== Of*~~

~~*482 MI*~~

~~*designed by Leonardo da Vinci, and similar work is attri- buted to Benvenuto Cellini.*~~

~~*In very early times the silver coins were equal in weight and in tale, each penny weighing 24 grains or | penny- weight. The amount now denominated a pound was a pound weight of standard or sterling silver. This principle was in fact, however, not strictly adhered to, the coins frequently falling below the standard of weight. This deviation may possibly have arisen from the imperfection of the methods of manufacture, but Ruding (Annals of the Coinage) considers it to have occurred from design, as the deficiency in weight was sometimes made a source of profit. The deviation from the*~~

~~*standard weight permitted by law, now called the "remedy," and anciently called the " shere," was taken advantage of to a large extent, so that the coins suffered considerable diminution, particularly when, as frequently happened, they were also "clipped" as soon as they were issued. When these coins were called in they were taken by weight and not by tale, so that the posses- sors suffered considerable loss. In later times the great improvements in the method of manufacture made it easy to attain far greater accuracy both of weight and fineness ; consequently the remedy permitted by law has been con- siderably reduced, and the possibility of making a large amount of profit by this means proportionally diminished.?*~~

~~*The seigniorage levied on the coining of money was not a fixed rate, but varied considerably at different times, and accrued from a deduction made from the bullion coined. It was abolished by an Act of Charles II., which provided that whoever brought sterling silver or standard gold to the mint should receive in exchange an equal weight of current coin, the expenses of coining being defrayed by means of duties levied upon certain commodities of common use. The seigniorage on silver was revived in the reign of George IIL, when that part of the Act of Charles II. which related to the coining of silver without charge was repealed, and another Act was passed, requiring every pound of silver to be coined into sixty-six shillings instead of sixty-two,—the four shillings realized on each pound of silver by this depreciation of its value being handed over to the master of the mint to defray the expenses of assay- ing, loss, and manufacture. An Act of William IV. required the seigniorage on the silver coinage to be paid to the credit of the Consolidated Fund, and the charges of the mint to be brought annually before parliament. Against the profit derived by the state from this source must be placed the expense of maintaining the silver coinage in a condition fit for circulation by frequently withdrawing, recoining, and reissuing the silver coins. A vote of £15,000 is annually taken in the mint estimates for the loss on the recoinage of silver.*~~

~~*In former times the work of the mint was performed by contract, the mint master undertaking the manufacture of the coinage at a stated price, and paying the moneyers and other officers and workmen under him at a fixed tariff. The agreement made between the crown and the mint master, called the 'master's indenture," was sometimes purposely kept secret. This system*~~

~~appears to have pre- vailed from the reign of Edward I, when an agreement was entered into between the king and the first master of the mint (appointed about 1279). Under this agreement~~

~~1 Two notable instanees are recorded of the use that has been made at various times of the shere, or remedy, as a means of profit, one being in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, when Lonison, then master of the mint, finding the allowanee made him under his contract was in- sufficient to eover the expenses of eoining, availed himself of the remedy on the silver coiuage, amounting to 63d. in the pound troy. The other ocenrred at the time of the great reeoinage of silver in the reign of William III., when the profit of the shere amounted to 3d. per pound weight, or rather more than 8s, in every hundred pounds of money.~~

~~N T~~

~~an allowance was secured to the master to cover all the ex- penses of coinage. Although the master of the mint ceased to be a contractor, the arrangement with the managers con- tinued in force up to 1851.~~

~~The work of coinage was transferred in 1810 from the Tower of London, where it had been carried on for many centuries, to the present Mint on Tower Hill, not far from the Bank of England. The head of the department, as has already been stated, is the chancellor of the exchequer for the time being, who is ex officio master of the mint,—the practical direction of the work being placed in the hands of a permanent officer, the deputy master, who is responsible for its due performance. From the English mint is supplied the coinage for the whole of the British empire, including the colonies, with the exception of Australia; the latter and the East Indies are supplied from branch mints estab- lished at Sydney and Melbourne, and the mints of Calcutta and Bombay. In addition to the gold, silver, and bronze coins current in the United Kingdom, the English mint strikes gold coins of the value of two dollars for New- foundland ; silver coins of the value of fifty, twenty-five, twenty, ten, and five cents respectively for Newfoundland and Canada; bronze pence and halfpence of special design for Jersey, and nickel pence, halfpence, and farthings for the West Indies. The number of coins of each separate denomination issued varies considerably in different~~

~~years, the demand for special denominations of coin naturally determining the supply.~~

~~The following table (from official sources) shows the value of the~~

~~gold and silver coins issued during the ten years 1871-81. The total value of the bronze coin issued in the same period is £112,890.~~

~~Gold Coinage.? Silver Coinage. Date. ; :~~

~~Sovereigns. |Half-Sovereigns.| Total Value.| Half-Crowns.| Florins.~~

~~£ £ £ £ £ 1872 13,643,885 1,617,556 | 15,261,441 ae 692,010 1873 2,382,835 1,001,733 3,384,568 bz 596,574~~

~~1874 519,629 941,936 1,461,565 278,240 180,774~~

~~1875 ace 243,264 243,264 138,996 114,246~~

~~1376 3,294,705 1,401,943 4,696,648 79,200 60,786~~

~~1877 a ; 981,468 55,836 68,706 1878 | 1,106,289 1,158,780 2,265,069 183,150 178,596 1879 | 17,525 | 17,525 35,050 112,662 135,432 1880 3,645,853 | 504,199 4,150,052 168,102 | 232,254 1881 es > Es me 280,170 256,806~~

~~24,610,721 7,868,408 32,479,129 1,291,356 2,516,184~~

~~Silver Coinage.3~~

~~Date. 5 ae Six- Four- Three- Two- Shillings. pences. | pences. pences. pences. Bees. Totals. £ £ £ £ 8. Leis £ "g~~

~~1872 | 443,322 94,446 69 6 13,916 2 39 12 33 1,243,836 1873 | $24,324 | 109,890; 69 6j 50,744 2 39 12 33 | 1,081,674 1874 | 275,022 | 105,732} 69 6 | 55,694 2 39 12 33 890,604 1875 | 217,800 81,878 | 69 6 | 41,488 2 389 12 33 594,000 1876 38,412 20,988} 69 6] 22,826 2 39 12 33 222,354 1877 | 163,350 | 101,772; 69 G| 31,142 2 39 12 33 420,948 1878 156,222 65,538 | 69 6 | 30,350 2 39 12 33 618,998~~

1879 180,576 83,160; 69 6) 37,082 2 39 12 33 549,054

1880 | 242,154 96,426| 69 6 | 22,480 2 39 12 33 761,508 1881 262,548 | 156,816| 69 6 | 40,646 2 39 12 33 997,128 |

{ |— - — | — ee

| 2,308,730 916,146 | 693 0 | 346,269 0 | 396 0 330 | 7,875,104

ee ee | Cee De a eee

The British sovereign or twenty-shilling piece was first issued by proclamation dated 1st July 1817, superseding the guinea or twenty-one-shilling piece. Crown pieces of the nominal value of five shillings were first struck in the reign of Henry VIII, six- pences and threepenny-pieces are first mentioned in the reign of Edward V1., while the groat or fourpenny-piece was coined as early as the reign of Edward J.; the florin or two-shilling-piece was introduced in 1849. Copper money was first coined by Charles I. in 1665, but does not appear to have been issued until 1672. Copper was replaced by bronze in 1860.

The weight and fineness of the various denominations of coin struck at the Royal Mint is shown in the first schedule of the Coin- age Act (38 Vict. c. 10), 1870 :— a

2 In these gold returns fractions of pounds sterling are omitted.

3 The numbers and weights of the fourpenees, twopences, and pence, being Maundy eoins, are the same for each of the years :—4518 four- pences, 4752 twopenees, and 7920 pence.

MIN T 483

Standard Weight. Least Current Weight. Remedy Allowanee. Denomination of Coin. Imperial Metrie Imperi 'i . Weight per Pi) perial Metrie Sta y é eight per Liece. Weight. Weight. Weight. Weight. ndard Fineness. |__| itiesimal Grains. Grammes. Grains. Grammes. Imperial | Metric | Fineness. Grains. | Grammes. Gold— Five POUNG

~~.....cccs..ceseeeseescccnsnsescnseccscsecsees 616°37239 39°94028 612°50000 39°68935 l fi : ne gold, 4! 1°00000 0064 Two pound cepueres ae 246°54895 15°97611 24500000 15°87574 i aS ee feiles (0°40000 ee Sovereign «sss… s veee| 128°27447 798805 122°50000 7°98787 simal fineness 0-20000 | 0-01296 0°002 ‘ la 6163723 | 3:99402 61°12500 3-96083 916-66, t 0°10000 | 0:00648 4 — } | COISEWELTL eneosnnnc cnc ChOce pO EEDEECCCOCEDE SOE LCS DBO CSTE ribed 436°36363 28°27590) Fo 6 er “u] 21stsis1 | 1413795 (| egens | one Florin… cece ccc cevcccceseccccces “pag 174°54545 (1131036 a8 fine silver, i 0°72727 0°04712 | Shilling …. 5 87°27272 565518 $y alloy; or 0°36363 0-02356 || 2 ee Sana eens — A 43 °63636 2°82759 millesimal ~ | 0:18181 0-01178 0-004 MEMIMOIPNOMT DOMGECs.c.20cccncecccneccccansssscesese=s 29-09090 1:88506 fineness 0°12121 0:00785 | aga (i 21:81818 141379 | : 925. | 0-09090 | 0-00589 ence en OtCOSCECECCE EDR CEATOOLDOEEEO DGS eee 0°94253 Bs 0-06060 0°00392 | HS acco no Sage SeCERIRRON OO SADOR IDET OCH SUCH SOCHEODE 7°27272 047126 | : | o- 2 Ree. ‘ | 0:03030 0°00196 |) Oo Ws 145-83333 944984 ee = Mixed metal:— (2°91666 | 0°18899 Halfpenny… 87°50000 5°66990 | woe oct copper, tin, and 1-75000 | 0°11339 None. nso secon cance derece eo atcannnsen sna 43°75000 283495 – a zine, _ 0°87500 | 0°05669 ee~~

~~*The weight and fineness of the coins specified in this schedule are according to what is provided by the Act 56 Geo. III. c. 68, that the gold coin of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland should hold such weight and fineness as were prescribed in the then existing mint indenture, that is to say, that there should be nine hundred and thirty-four sovereigns and one ten-shilling piece contained in 20 fb weight troy of standard gold, of the fine- ness, at the trial of the same, of 22 carats fine gold and 2 carats of alloy in the pound weight troy, and further, as regards silver coin, that there should be sixty-six shillings in every pound troy of standard silver of the fineness of 11 ounces 2 pennyweights of fine silver and 18 pennyweights of alloy in every pound weight troy.*~~

~~*The present standard of fineness for gold, 22 parts fine or pure gold and 2 parts of alloyed metal, was finally adopted in the reign of Charles II., and has remained unchanged up to the present time. Before the passing of the Act determining this standard considerable changes had been made from*~~

~~time to time, the highest degree of fineness having been reached in the reign of Henry Ill, when the first gold coins were struck of the standard of 24 carats pure gold. The standard of fineness for gold at some different periods may be seen from the following table, which shows the composition of some of the ancient gold trial plates, of which portions are preserved in the Mint : —~~

~~rT~~

~~Standard preseribed . Remedy or by Baw: Standard Permitted Variation | Date. 3 hell in Carats and in In Carats Deeimal Assay Tho aa mits and Grains. | Equivalent. | uss — 1349 a6 eon noe 3 earat, or 13°9 1477 23 3h 994:8 Gold 993°5 eee 15.2 1527 22 0 916°6 » gas5 ey OO 1543 (2) 23 «0 958°4 » «©9544 Ae 5. yn Gs? 1553 3 8y 994°8 yy» 990°3 ih i ee. Ot) 1560 220 916°6 glbez a eGo 1560 23 3h 994°8 » 994°3 i Geer. es 1593 22 0 916°6 a) cy ye orn. ee) 1605 23° 3h 994°8 ae ues ee 3) gan Ose 1649 22 0 9166 » 913-0 Me 6:9 1660 23 32 994:8 » ©9909 eS ty Ee 1660 22 0 916°6 » ©9129 1g G9 1688 22 0 916°6 4» 914°6 ee CN 1707 22, 0 916°6 Poe ial | iy po 1728 D2 0 916°6 » 916'1 ee G29 1829 22 0 916°6 = 9153 sie Sy py AB 1873 22 0 916°6 Do Loco) g 2-0 1873 Supplementary plate. | Pure gold. AG~~

~~The earliest trial plate of which there is any record was made in the seventeenth year of Edward IV. Before that time it would seem that the coins were compared with others known to be of standard fineness, since among the Cotton MSS. is preserved the account of the trial of the pyx of gold nobles in 1349, when the coins wgre compared with an ounce of florins of Florence kept in the Treasury as standards, The first gold coins were 24 carats fine or pure gold. Edward III. caused coins to be struck of 23 carats 34 grains fine in 1345, but no trial plate of this standard was made until 1477. Henry VIII. lowered the standard to 22 carats, but caused coins to be struck both of that and the former standards. The greatest debasement of the standard ever reached in England was in 1546, when it sunk as low as 20 carats. It reached a low point in the early part of Edward VI.'s reign, but was raised towards the end of it to 22 carats; and it was still further raised to 2 carats 84 grains by Elizabeth, who, however, caused gold coins of 22 carats also to be struck. Charles IT. on his accession rejected the trial~~

~~plates of the standard of 22 carats which had been made under the Commonwealth, and caused others to be made of the standard of 28 carats 34 grains. No coins, however, appear to have been struck of this standard. The same monarch~~

~~afterwards fixed the standard at 22 carats; and no variation in the legal standard has occurred since that time. The last new trial plates, made in 1878, were alloyed with copper only, in order that they might correspond with the composition of the British gold coins, former plates having been alloyed with silver and copper. At the same time supplementary plates of pure gold and silver were prepared in order that the greatest possible accuracy might be secured.~~

~~The present standard of fineness of silver for coinage was fixed at a very early period, but has been subject to considerable varia- tion since the reign of Edward I., the first English monarch who debased the silver coinage. In the reign of Henry VIII. it was once reduced as low as 4 ounces of silver to 8 of alloying metal, | and Edward VI. reduced it even lower. It was restored by Elizabeth to the original standard. i~~

~~The following table shows the composition of some of the ancient eee trial plates of which portions have been preserved in the~~

~~int :—~~

~~Standard preseribed s Remedy or Date py ta. a. Permitted Variation Ps . y in Dwts. and in In ozs. Deeimal Assay. THOUeATdEl and dwts. | Equivalent. Weis Hela No date. BOS ne0 Silver 757°4 406 | 1477 eZ 925°0 » ©9235 2 dwts, | 1527 (2) AAD 506 3 885°5 aes 1542 ; 8 € 7759 » 163°6 3 dwts. (?), or 12°5 1553 ; il 2 925°0 » 9270 | 2dwts, or 8-4 1560 ll 2 9250 » 930°2 i) Es wae 1600 3 0 250°0 » 252°0 Bec 5, 125 1601 im 2 925°0 5 as DB bs » 84 1604 nig ae 925-0 tend 2 dwts. 1649 in 2 925°0 » 9287 Dx 1660 ijl 9§25-0 me za 2 dwts., or 8°4 1688 2 925°0 ae 922:0 2 Sy yee 1707 iit 2) 925:0 92270 Do iy RS 1728 ll 2 925°0 3 928°9 2 dwts. 1829 iW 2 925°0 oy, MEAD 1 dwt., or 42 1873 el) 925°9 », 924°96 4:0 1873 Supplementary plate. Pure silver.~~

~~ee ee~~

~~*The alloy used for the bronze coinage is composed of 95 per cent. of copper, 4 of tin, and 1 of zinc. The bronze coinage superseded the old copper coinage in 1860, the latter having been in use since the reign of Charles II. The vicissitudes of the copper coinage were even greater than those of the superior coinages, coins for Ireland having been issued at one time of pewter and of other alloys in which scarcely any copper was contained.*~~

~~*The annual testing of the standard of gold and _ silver coins, called the trial of the pyx, from the " pyx" or chest in which the coins to be examined are kept, is a ceremony of very ancient institution. It arose from the circumstance that the mint master was originally a contractor, under the crown, for the manufacture of the coinage, and it was therefore necessary that periodical examinations of the coins should be held in order to ascertain that the terms of his contract had been complied with. At the present day, when the mint master is no longer a contractor, but an officer of the crown, the trial of the pyx has a somewhat different object; but it would appear from the description of these periodical examinations in some of the earliest mint records that but little change has taken place in the manner of conducting them. 'The finished coins are delivered | to the mint master in weights called " journey weights,*~~

~~*484*~~

~~*supposed to be the weight of coin which could be manu- factured in a day when the operations of coining were performed by the hand. The journey weight of gold is 15 ib troy, coined into 701 sovereigns or 1402 half-sovereigns. The journey weight of silver is 60 tb troy. From each journey weight a coin is taken and deposited in the "pyx" or chest for the annual trial. This is made by the freemen of the goldsmiths' company under the direction of the crown in the presence of the queen's*~~

~~*remembrancer, who administers the oath to the jury and |*~~

~~*presides over the proceedings. The coins selected for trial are compared with pieces cut from trial plates of standard fineness, which are in the keeping of the warden of the standards, these pieces being assayed against the coins under examination. If the coins are found to be of the standard*~~

~~*fineness and weight, within certain limits, a verdict to that effect is drawn up by the jurors and presented to the Treasury.*~~

~~*In consequence of the impossibility of ensuring an abso- lutely exact admixture of metals in coining, it has been found necessary at all times to allow to the mint master a certain margin, or "remedy," within which coins may vary in weight and fineness from the fixed standard and still be considered of the current standard. The remedy of fineness for English gold coin is now fixed at 2 parts per 1000. The great importance of maintaining the standard of fineness for gold will be evident when it is stated that the variation of ;J, of a millieme (or thousandth part) above or below the standard causes a gain or loss of £100 in every million sterling. Gold coins would be within the remedy of fineness permitted by law if the amount of precious metal contained in them varied from 914°6 to 918°6 parts in 1000; and, although this remedy cannot be considered to be more than would meet occasional and unavoidable deviation from the exact standard, still, in the case of gold, but a very small part of the remedy of fineness is actually used, the coins seldom falling below 916-3 parts of gold in 1000, or rising above 917:0, while the mean composition of many millions of coins issued from the mint is often of the precise legal standard, 916°66, The remedy of fineness for silver coin, which appears to have been always greater than that for gold coin, is 4 parts per 1000. The remedy of weight*~~

~~*for gold is 16 per 1000 parts, that for silver 4°17, and |*~~

~~*that for bronze 20. Extreme care is taken to prevent the issue from the mint of any coins that exceed these permitted variations in weight and standard, each coin being weighed separately, and all those found to be above or below the standard being returned to the melting-house.*~~

~~*Since the real value of the gold coinage is the same as its nominal value, it is of the first importance that gold coins which are below the standard weight should not be allowed to circulate, otherwise holders of large quantities of gold coin are liable to considerable loss. After a certain amount of wear a gold coin in passing from hand to hand loses weight and becomes legally uncurrent. By the Comage Act it is made compulsory for every person to "cut, break, or deface" any coin tendered to him in payment which is below the current weight, the person tendering it bearing*~~

~~*the loss; but, as no penalty is imposed for disregard of this obligation, the law is practically without effect. The withdrawal of light coin from circulation was formerly accomplished solely by the Bank of England, the mint regulations making provision for the receipt of gold tendered for coinage only in the form of bars. The bank undertook to purchase the light gold from the public at the rate of £3, 17s, 64d. an ounce, a price which, as compared with the mint value of £3, 17s. 104d., entailed a loss of no less than 4d. an ounce on the seller. This loss was occasioned chiefly by the circumstance that the bank, being obliged*~~

~~*MINT*~~

~~*before sending the light gold to the mint for recomage to melt, assay, and cast it into bars, found it necessary to deduct the sum of 24d. an ounce from the rate of £3, 17s. 9d. an ounce at which it was allowed by statute to purchase gold for coinage, in order to cover the expense of these operations and the loss incident to them. The heavy loss in price, added to that from deficient weight, occasioned constant disregard of the law requiring all light coin to be cut or defaced, and consequently a large amount of light gold continued to be circulated. After the passing of the Coinage Act in 1870, accordingly, fresh regulations were made, by which the mint authorities undertook to receive light gold coin for recoinage, returning to the importer the full mint value of £3, 17s. 104d. an ounce, thus reducing the loss to that arising from deficiency of weight only. As the Bank of England was enabled py these regulations to raise ~ its price for light gold to the rate of £3, 17s. 9d., the same rate at which it is bound to purchase ingots of standard gold, greater inducements were offered to the public to send in. light gold for recoinage, and its withdrawal from circulation was in consequence greatly facilitated. It is*~~

~~*| evident, however, that, as the deficiency in weight must*~~

~~*entail some loss on the holders of light gold coin, they will be disposed to keep it in circulation as long as_ possible ; consequently only a small proportion of the light gold received by bankers finds its way to the Bank of England and thence to the mint for recoinage. The result of some careful experiments made by the late Mr Stanley Jevons, and published by him in the Journal of the Statistical Society (vol. xxxi. p. 426), showed that a*~~

~~*sovereign becomes so light as to be legally uncurrent at the end of eighteen years. The last state measure taken for the withdrawal of light gold coin from circulation was the issue of a royal pro- clamation in 1842 calling attention to the laws and regulations relating to light gold coin, and instructing those persons whose duty it was to enforce them to see that they were carried out. From the beginning of July 1842 to the end of March 1845 £14,000,000 in light gold coin was withdrawn from circulation and recoined. This amount was estimated to represent 95 per cent. of the whole of the light gold then in circulation. In order to facilitate this withdrawal the Treasury had in June 1842 entered into arrangements with the Bank of England by which the bank was enabled to purchase light gold on behalf of the Government, at the full mint value of £3, 17s. 103d. an ounce. Light coin, however, continued to be sent into the bank for some time after it had reverted to its original rate of payment for light gold, z.¢., £3, 17s. 64d. an ounce. The expense to the state of this withdrawal, including the expenses of recoinage, was £67,816. As no important withdrawal of worn gold coin has occurred since that time, it is evident that a large amount of light gold must be at the present time in circulation, and that the loss in weight must be considerably greater than that of the coins withdrawn in 1842, the oldest of which were not more than twenty-five years old, the first issue having taken ylace in 1817. It has been proved by experiment that the average loss of weight in worn sovereigns and half-sovereigns now in circulation is about 3d. in each sovereign, and that the deficiency in fineness of a large proportion of the coin amounts to about £400 per million. This deficiency arises from the trial plate of 1829, which determined the standard of a portion of the coins still in circulation, being itself below the legal standard. Taking the gold circulation at £100,000,000, of which about 50 per cent. is light, it is estimated that the amount to be recoined cannot be less*~~

~~*than £50,000,000, on which the loss from deficiency of*~~

~~*gold, both in weight and fineness, must be reckoned at about £650,000, independent of the expenses of recoinage. In the case of the silver coinage, the loss consequent on the*~~

~~*MINT*~~

~~*withdrawal and recoinage of silver money is now covered by the seigniorage arising from the difference between the real and the nominal value of the coins. Before the adop- tion of gold as the sole standard of value, the conditions attending the withdrawal and recoinage of silver were much the same as those for gold. In the period between the reign of Charles IJ. and the accession of William III. the condition of the silver coinage became so unsatisfactory as to demand the attention of parliament. A recommendation made at the suggestion of Sir Isaac Newton for a recoinage of silver was at first strenuously opposed, but was finally adopted. In the course of the discussion the question of raising the standard of weight and fineness arose, and this important change would probably have been made but for the representations of Locke, who warmly took up the question and convinced the Government of the desirability of preserving the established standard. In the great recoinage of silver, the loss arising from clipped and defaced coin was borne by the public, the money being raised by means of a special tax on glass windows. The silver reissued at this time amounted to £7,000,000, and the tax raised to cover loss and the expenses of coinage to £1,200,000. The work of this recoinage was so great that the resources of the mint in London were found to be unequal to the pressure put upon them, and therefore mints were either revived or established for the first time in a few of the large provincial towns. In addition to this ten furnaces were erected behind the Treasury at Whitehall to melt down the old pieces. By these means the renovation of the silver coinage was completed within the year. The new silver coins then issued were the first which had milled edges, the milling having been introduced in order to prevent clipping.*~~

~~*The mode in which the silver currency is distributed throughout the kingdom is explained by the late Mr George Forbes, caslucr of the Bank of England, as follows :—*~~

~~*Every banker in the kingdom has a banker wlio is his agent in London. Every London banker has an account with the Bank of England. In the Bank of England there is a department devoted to the issue and receipt of silver coin. If in a district there is a deficiency of silver currency, the bankers of the district are the first to find it out. They at once write to their London agents, who draw on their account with the Bank of England, and obtain*~~

~~what silver is required, which they send to the country banker. On the other hand, if there is a surplus of silver in a district it accumulates in the coffers of the local bankers, who send it up to their London agents, and they send it into the Bank of England. If there isa general demand for silver currency, the stock which the Bank of England endeavours to keep on hand becomes unduly diminished, and immediate notice of the fact is conveyed to the mint authorities, who proceed with all convenient speed to coin a supply of florins, shillings, sixpences, or of all of these coins, as the nature of the demand may require.~~

~~Gold bullion for coinage is supplied to the mint almost entirely by the Bank of England, the bank being bound by law to purchase at the rate of £3, 17s. 9d. an ounce any gold bullion of the legal standard which the public may bring for sale. Private individuals are permitted to bring bullion to the mint, and to receive back the full amount (at £3, 17s. 104d. an ounce) converted into coin, free of any charge for loss or manufacture ; but, as they are subject to considerable delay, all "importations" of bullion being converted into coin in the order in which they are brought to the mint, the public practically prefer to sell their bullion to the bank, and receive its value without delay. In order to be accepted by the bank, the bullion must be cast into ingots and assayed, a guarantee being | given by certain recognized assayers that the gold is of a certain standard fineness. This is known as the "trade assay." When the bank requires gold to be struck, due- notice is sent to the deputy master, and on a fixed day the bullion is conveyed to the mint and delivered into his~~

~~about 200 ounces, the aggregate value of each importa- tion being about £144,000. When the ingots arrive at the mint a small sample is taken from each and assayed,} the result being sent to the authorities of the bank in order that it may be compared with that of the trade assay. Ifthe bank authorities find that the two assays agree, within certain limits, as to weight~~

~~*and fineness, the ingots are immediately sent to the operative department of the mint to be converted into coin. The mint assay affords the basis for calculating the amount of copper, the alloying metal, that must be melted with the gold in order to produce the standard prescribed by law. 'The case of silver is somewhat different, the bullion being purchased by the department at its market value, which varies from year to year. During the ten years ending 1881 the average price of silver bullion sank gradually from 607;d. to 51432d. The silver bullion arrives at the mint in the form of ingots, each of which weighs about 1000 ounces, the value of each set of ingots varying considerably. The ingots, both of gold and silver, are weighed on a balance capable of turn- ing with 1 grain when loaded with 1200 ounces.*~~

~~*The operations of coining have undergone some slight changes with the introduction of new machinery and the increased extent of the Royal Mint, since the reconstruc- tion of the operative department in 1881.2 The plan (fig. 1) shows the present arrangement of the operative department.*~~

~~*The operations employed in the manufacture of gold and silver coin are as follows (incidental operations being printed in smaller type) :—*~~

~~*I. Assaying the bullion.*~~

~~*II. Melting the metal.*~~

~~*(w) Addition of the amount of copper necessary to form the prescribed alloy; (b) pouring the metal into moulds so as to form bars; (c) dressing these bars to remove rough edges and hollow ends ; (d) recovery of precious metals from crucibles and "sweep."*~~

~~*III. Assaying portions of metal cut from certain bars, to ascertain whether sufficient accuracy has been attained in the standard fineness.*~~

~~*IV. Rolling the bars into strips or " fillets."*~~

~~*Aunealing the fillcts (in some cases).*~~

~~*V. Adjusting the fillets by a final rolling, and in some cases by the use of the drawbench.*~~

~~*Testing the fillets to ascertain whether they arc of suffi- cient accuracy as regards thiekness.*~~

~~*VI. Cutting out disks or blanks from the fillets.*~~

~~*Adjusting the blanks in weight (in some mints).*~~

~~*VII. Edge-rolling the blanks to produce a raised rim,*~~

~~*Annealing the blanks and (in some cases) “ blanching” or ‘* piekling” them in dilute acid.*~~

~~*VIII. Coining, or stamping the device on the blanks, by means of engraved steel dies.*~~

~~*Milling the edges of the blanks or (in some cases) im- pressing a device, inscription, or ornament upon them.*~~

~~*IX. Weighing each coin, usually by the aid of automatic machinery.*~~

~~*X. Assaying and weighing pieces taken from the finished coin before it is issued to the public.*~~

~~*The foregoing list will make it clear that the operations of minting consist, not simply in the mechanical production of accurately adjusted disks of metal the purity alone of*~~

~~*1 The assays are conducted in the manner already described in the articles ASSAYING and GOLD.*~~

~~*2 Tn order to provide a stock of silver coin during the temporary suspension of the work of the mint, a large coinage of silver was issued, and BO tons of bronze coins were manufactured by contract in the autumn of 1881. The governor of the Bank of England had previously reported that the stock of gold coin held by the bank was abnormally large, and that no*~~

~~inconvenience would arise "af the mint were to fo coining sovereigns and half-sovereigns for a period of six mouths or a~~

~~custody. It arrives in the form of ingots, each weighing | year or even more." ui 8 |~~

~~486 MI~~

~~which has to be guaranteed, but in the formation of an | alloy composed of precious and base metals in definite pro- portions. The accuracy of the "standard fineness" of the | alloy after melting must be absolutely ascertained ; the | alloy must be protected during manufacture against a change of standard, and finally its correctness must be verified after it has been converted into coin.~~

~~The precious metals are weighed on entering the mint, as well as during various stages in the manufacture of coin. The finished coins are also weighed in bulk before they are issued to the public.~~

~~The operations incidental to the coinage of bronze and | silver differ from those described in relation to gold in some — unimportant details only; and the weight and composition | of the bronze coins are not so carefully guarded as is the case with gold and silver.~~

~~Nt Subjoined are the details of the operations involved in the conversion of bullion into coin at the British mint.~~

~~After being assayed and weighed in the manner already described Melting the bullion is taken to the melting-house, where the dctails of treat- the (The sub-.metal.~~

~~ment for silver and gold respectively differ somewhat. sequent operations are nearly identical for both metals.) The silver melting-house (see fig. 1) contains eight furnaces, of the kind shown at A fig. 2, the part of the furnace containing the crucibles being below the lids B, B. Crucibles of cast iron were formerly employed, but these were replaced in 1853 by wrought iron pots, which have since 1870 been in turn abandoned in favour of crucibles made of a mixture of clay and graphite, each crucible being capable of~~

containing about 3000 oz. Such crucibles are very generally adopted throughout the Indian and Continental mints, but the form and dimensions given to them vary. The fuel employed in England is coke, about 75 tb of which are re- quired to melt 3000 oz. of standard silver. Sufficient draught is

afforded by the flue C and by a chimney about 35 feet high which communicates with it.

The silver and copper are melted together ;

BRONZE STORE

client

IM

ff

fii

Annealing

ween 47+

OFFICE wu

DIE TURNING Ee eat FORGE al . SMITHS

| SHOP

SILVER

MELTING i

(OFFICES

R20 H PeNGiNeEgD BOILERS 3

~~: = =~~

~~| —”—-~ praa Room Se~~

~~MAIN BUILDING ~ \~~

~~=~~

~~f STORES~~

~~7~~

~~=~~

~~PACKING ROOM~~

~~ANNEALING FURNACE~~

~~ROLLING~~

~~ROOM~~

~~COPPER Be OFFICE~~

~~ANNEALING BB ee~~

~~“STRONG” “HOLD,~~

~~= = =~~

~~se~~

~~/~~

~~&o) . A ‘eV MINT OFFICE~~

~~SCALE.~~

~~60~~

~~10~~

~~0 20 40 80 100 120 Foot.~~

~~—>———~~

~~FINISHED~~

~~BULLION COIN~~

~~Fic. 1.—Royal Mint, Tower Hill, London. Plan showing the Operative Department as rearranged in 1881-82.~~

~~and before the metal is poured into moulds it is stirred with an iron rod having a flattenedend. The surface of the molten metal is | covered with a layer of charcoal to prevent oxidation of the copper. | ' The crucible with its contents is then removed from the furnace | by the aid of a crane and tongs W, and is placed in a cradle M, which can be tilted by means of a handle D. By the interven- tion of toothed wheels E, F, G, H, and K acting on a rack the handle turns the crucible on the fulerum formed by a spindle, so that the contents of the crucible may be poured into the moulds N mounted on a carriage OP, running on rails Q, Q. The moulds now in use in London are of such dimensions as to enable bars to be cast 12 inches long and inch thick. The width of the bars varies, according to the coin to be produced, from 1 to 28 inches. | When the metal has solidified in the moulds it is removed, and | the bars are trimmed by the aid of a revolving circular file, their | ends being cut off and returned to the melting pot. Portions of metal are then cut from certain of the bars, and sent to the assay department. The bars are weighed before they pass to the subse-~~

~~quent operations of coinage, in order that the amount of inctal re- |~~

~~tained by the crucibles or carried into the flues may be ascertained. Gold bullion is melted in a similar way, but the crucibles are~~

~~| grasped being supporte~~

~~*and contain only 1200 oz. Their contents are poured by hand into moulds, one end of the tongs by which the erncible is d by a chain and suspended from the roof.? mints it is very generally the practice to metals in the furnace, the aid of small ladles*~~

~~*smaller,*~~

~~*In many Continental leave the crucible containing the precious and to pour the contents into the moulds by of wrought iron lined with clay. ;*~~

~~*It has been pointed out in Gop (vol. x. p. 751) that minute quantities of certain metals render standard gold extremely brittle and unfit for coinage. If either the gold bullion or the copper used as an alloying metal should be impure, brittle bars will be the result. Should this prove to be the case, the bars are re-*~~

~~*1 A new form of furnace devised by M. 'A. Piat of Paris has recently been introduced. In these furnaces the portion which contains the crucible may be detached from the flue, so as to admit of the molten metal being poured into moulds without removing the crucible from the incandescent fuel. Four of such furnaces have been fitted up in the gold melting-house, but have not as yet been used for gold melt- | ing ; in the melting of silver and bronze, however, they are known to | effect considerable economy in labour, fuel, and crucibles.*~~

~~*Rolling.*~~

~~*MINT*~~

~~*melted and chlorine gas is passed through the molten mass in the manner described in GoLD, vol. x. p. 750.*~~

~~*The engine-room (shown in fig. 1) contains three 60-horse- power vertical condensing engines, which are provided with Corlis valves, and are specially devised for meeting the constantly vary- ing strain to which they are subjected by the machinery, the whole of which they are capable of driving. The central éngine acts directly on either or both of the rolling rooms placed on each side of the engine-house. There is, however, an*~~

~~additional 20-horse- power compound beam engine usually employed, in connexion with the pumps of a deep artesian well.~~

~~Into one or other of these rooms the bars which have been cast~~

~~487~~

~~in the melting-house are brought, and are rolled into strips the thickness of which depends on the kind of coins to be produced. Gold is rolled in one room and silver or bronze in the other. The details of manipulation involved in the conversion of gold, silver, or bronze bars into coin, however, do not differ materially, and the coinage of sovereigns will therefore be taken as typical.~~

~~Each room contains six pairs of rolls, the diameter of the rolls varying from 10 to 14 inches. Smaller diameters are employed in most European mints, but on the other hand the use of very narrow rolls of far larger diameter has often been suggested, and there appears to be good ground for the belief that the rigidity of such rolls would enable strips or fillets of more uniform thickness to be~~

~~Fic. 2.—Furnace Apparatus.~~

~~produced than is the case at present. The iron frame CC (fig. 3) is | and, as it rises with the screws, it can thus be readily adjusted in a~~

~~firmly bolted to the stone D, which rests on a solid foundation KE. This frame supports the two rolls A, B, the lower of which B revolves, but is not, like the upper, capable of adjustment in a ver-~~

~~L~~

~~= =~~

~~Fig. 8.—Rolls. tical plane. The upper roll is centred in bearings, and may be raised | first room, In some of the six pairs the bottom rolls revolve and drive the upper~~

or lowered by means of screws connected with toothed wheels F, F, which are turned by a handle G, both wheels being moved simulta- neously by worms on the rod If.

|| i

/ minute.

line exactly parallel with the lower roll, at a sufficient distance from it to admit the bar which is to be reduced to a strip or fillet. The rolls are turned by the shaft NN, the main wheel M, and the gearing K, L, O, P. The sockets r by which the upper roll is conuected with the gearing by the shaft I are not rigid, as is the case with the shaft Q of the lower roll, but admit of the adjust- ment of the roll. The portion of the roll used is determined by a

| guide a little wider than the bar.1 The rolls throughout this

department are driven at the rate of about 32 revolutions in a The iron frame CC is braced by rods a, s; and blocks bearing the driving shafts are shown at k, k, p, p.

The initial thickness of a sovereign bar is 3ths of aninch. The bars

' are weighed out to the workmen in batches of about sixty bars,

i

[| | same conditions of adjustment.

†

†

an entire batch being passed through the rolls under precisely the The bars are only slightly reduced in width by repeated passages through the rolls, but are successively reduced in thickness in the first stages of the rolling by #yth of an

$$._ —€—0 0€0¢0 050 0

~~1 In the second rolling room, shown in the plan on the right of the engine-~~

~~| house, the frames and gearing of the rolls are of newer pattern than those in the~~

~~| which the fillets are first treated,—the upper roll is stationary, | alone revolving.~~

~~The bearings of the upper roll are |~~

~~In the pair of “ breaking-down”’ rolls in this room,—that is, the roll by the Jower ro} “pite” is given to the fillet, when its end is a ratchet-wheel and~~

~~ones,~~

~~The necessary introdueed, by slightly turning the upper roll by means of~~

~~connected by vertical rods with weights below the level of the floor ; | lever.~~

~~488~~

~~inch, while in the later stages the reduction in thickness at eacli passage through the rolls is less than +4,th of an inch, and finally one or two “spring pinches” are given to the bars by simply pass- ing them through the rolls without altering the adjustment. The testing of the fillets, to ascertain whether they are of the accurate thickness, is effected by the aid of the gauge plate (fig. 4), which |uo, consists of two steel bars sct at a low angle in relation as ne other and graduate to rassth gee inch. Fie. 4.—Gauge Plate.~~

~~It will be evident that the weight of the finished coin depends upon the thickness of the fillets ; and to show how accurately the rolling must be performed it may be pointed out that, in the ease of the half-sovereign, a variation of gy$yth of an inch above or below the accurate thickness (or a range of r}yath of an inch) throws the coin out of “ remedy.”~~

~~IHh | HN A hin~~

~~AWN , NS ll~~

~~*MINT*~~

~~*The repeated passage through the rolls is attended by a consider- able increase of hardness in the metal, and it is therefore in some cases necessary to anneal the fillets repeatedly during the rolling. In the case of fillets for sovereigns the annealing may be entirely dispensed with if the initial thickness of the bars does not exeeed ths of aninch. Fillets for half-sovereigns have only to be annealed onc2, In some European mints the fillets are annealed frequently ; in one mint the operation is performed after each passage through the rolls. The furnace used for the purpose is generally so arranged as to permit the flame to play over the fillets, which are sometimes freely exposed to its action, but are more often enclosed in cases or tubes. Muffle furnaces are frequently used. The furnace used in the Royal Mint is a simple form of reverberatory furnace. The final rolling is given by a pair of finishing rolls capable of more accurate adjustment than the " breaking-down" rolls.*~~

~~*The fillets of gold or silver are in some eases, though not always, Drag submitted to an appliance known as the drag bench, show in bench,*~~

~~*figs. 5, 6, 7. drawing them between steel cylinders.*~~

~~*Its object is to equalize the thickness of the fillets by The ends of the fillets are*~~

~~¥~~

~~*i*~~

~~*Mit*~~

~~*Fries. 5, 6, 7.—Drag Bench.*~~

~~*first flattened in a little appliance, which need not be described. | fillet is released, the pins 7, 7 and the weight / loosen the jaws and*~~

~~*The essential feature of the machine now used in the mint consists of two small steel cylinders A, A, which : do not revolve, aud are via*~~

~~*held in position in the > (; Ni ig Z UT say |*~~

~~*plates D, D by clamp pieces _ Lt >*~~

~~*F, F serewed against them. The portions of metal may be adjusted by the aid of a wheel and screw II (figs. 6, 7), and by small ad- justing screws f, f. The part of the machine con- taining the steel cylinders is fixed at the end of a long bench, and gearing at the other end of this bench drives an endless chain BB (fig. 6), one link or other of F which eatches the carriage, * shown in plan in fig. 5, and drags it along as soon as its end f is depressed by the handler. The carriage runs on the wheels d, d. The drawing of the fillet C is conducted as follows. Its flattened end is intro- duced between the steel eylinders, and is grasped — by the jaws a. The jaws — turn on the pin ¢, and while the fillet is being dragged through the cylinders the === SS = axle of the wheels d, d tends : :*~~

~~*to inerease the grip ed the Fie, 8.—Cutting Machine.*~~

~~*jaws by acting on their inclined ends. Directly the strain on the*~~

~~*at the same time raise the end of the earriage so as to arrest its further progress along the bench. 'The carriage is then moved forward by the handle s until the jaws enter the hollowed portion N and grasp another fillet.*~~

~~*Formerly—when fillets were rolled from thick bars—this appliance played a more important part in coining operations than at present. It is now only used for fillets from which sovereigns and half- sovereigns are to be produced. Before fillets are passed on to the next operation—that of cutting from them the disks or blanks destined to form the coin—they are carefully tested by a skilful workman*~~

~~*called the "tryer," who cuts one or two blanks from the sides of Trying.*~~

~~*each fillet by the aid of a cutter worked by hand. These blanks are weighed on a delicate balance against a standard weight, and the experience of the operator enables him to determine whether the*~~

~~*| variation from the exact weight will justify his sending the fillets for- | ward to the cutting room. 'two or more classes for a reason that will be explained presently. The cutters employed in the mint until quite recently were of Cutting complicated construction, but these have been replaced by a simple blanks.*~~

~~*In any case he divides the fillets into*~~

~~*machine (fig. 8) which, by the revolution of an excentric A, causes two short steel cylinders, mounted on a block of iron B suitably guided, to enter two holes firmly fixed in a plate on the bed of the*~~

~~*machine. When the fillet FF is interposed between the short eylin- ¢ OO O O ole ders and the holes, the former force OC) C) C) C) C) 'S*~~

~~*disks of metal through the holes, Fic. 9 the fillet being advanced at each ie stroke of the machine by small gripping rolls C, C', C" actuated by a ratchet-wheel E, driven from the shaft which bears the excentric A. The disks pass down the tube G to a receptacle placed on the floor.*~~

~~*'In the ease of very large silver coins, only one disk is cut in the*~~

~~*width of the fillet; and in some few mints disks for gold coin are also eut in this way, but it is far more usual to cut two disks in the width of the fillet, the position of the cutters being so arranged as to remove blanks in the*~~

~~*manner shown in fig. 9. In cutting disks for bronze coin extreme precision is not necessary, and it has ney been found possible to obtain five at each stroke of the machine.*~~

~~*ML NT*~~

~~*Tt will be evident that the rough classification of the fillets according to their thickness, to which reference has already been made, renders it easy to compensate for slight irregularities in thick- ness caused by rolling, by employing cutters of a slightly larger diameter than the standard size for fillets which are too thin.*~~

~~*The fillets after the removal of the disks present the perforated appearance shown in fig. 9. The residual metal, called " scissel," which amounts to from 25 to 30 percent. of the metal operated upon, is returned to the melting-house in bundles weighing 180 oz. 1t may be mentioned here that all attempts to cut disks or blanks for coinage from the ends of rods or cylinders, and thus to avoid the production of scissel, have hitherto failed. —*~~

~~*The next operation to which the blanks are submitted varies in different mints. In some, each blank is weighed by hand or by automatic machinery, and each blank that is too heavy is adjusted either to an exact weight or to within the remedy prescribed by law. On the Continent it is very generally the practice to adjust blanks by the aid of a file, or by a machine that removes a fine shaving of metal from the surface of the blank. In mints where mechanical adjustment isadopted there isa tendency to produce '*~~

~~*Fig. 10.*~~

~~*between two planes, one of which is fixed and bears the device, while the other has a reciprocating motion imparted to it, or the edge of the blank receives the impression, which may be either raised*~~

~~*:—*~~

~~*1 A description of a machine used for the adjustment of blanks will be found in Dingler's Polytechnisches Journal (1882, ccxlv. 61, pl. 6); und some years ago Mr J. M. Napier devised for the Indian mints a beautiful machine*~~

~~*which first ascertains how much it is necessary to cut from each blank in order to reduce it tothe standard weight, and then removes the necessary amount of metal and no more. The initial eost of such machinery, however, is considerable. In 1849 M. Diereek, director of the mint in Paris, endeavoured to substitute a chemical for a mechanical treatment by submitting the heavy gold blanks to aqua regia, which it was anticipated would bring them within the prescribed limits of accuracy. The results were not satisfactory, and the attempt was abandoned. In 1870 the present chemist of the mint, Professor W. Chandler Roberts, showed that gold alloyed with copper might be removed from heavy blanks with singular regularity by means of a suitable solvent aided by a battery. The blanks are arranged in a frame of wood and submitted to the action of a solution of eyanide of potassium, the heavy blanks forming the dissolving pole of the battery. The process was not used in the London mint, as it became evident that it could not profitably replace the present system, under which finished coins alone are weighed and the manufacture of good coin only is paid for. It was, however, introduced into the Bombay mint in 1870 by the late Mr L. G. Hines, who extended its usefulness by transferring the metal dissolved from the heavy blanks to blanks which are too light, the latter being by this means raised to the prescribed weight. The process has now fairly taken its plaee as an ordinary operation of coining, and its importance to the mints where it is used may be gathered from the fact that in the Indian mints no less than 1300 tons of silver were converted into coin in one year (1879), so that the saving effected by its introduction must be considerable.*~~

~~*489*~~

~~*In the London mint finished coin alone is weighed, so that the blanks after leaving the cutting room pass directly to an edge-rolling machine, which thickens the edge of each blank so as to form arim intended to protect the impression on the finished coin. The operation of edge-rolling is called "marking," and the method of conducting it varies considerably in different mints.*~~

~~*_In the Royal Mint the blanks are made to pass in quick succes- sion, at the rate of six hundred a minute, between a circular groove in the face of a revolving steel disk and a groove in a fixed block placed parallel to the face*~~

~~*of the revolving disk. The groove in the block exactly corresponds to that on the disk; and, as the distance between the' block and the disk is slightly less than the diameter of the blank submitted to the operation, the result is that before the blank escapes from the machine its edge has been thickened. The operation may be varied by admitting the blanks between a groove in the periphery of a revolving wheel and a groove in a segmented block, placed at a distance from the wheel rather less than the diameter of the blank. The wheel and block may be either vertical or horizontal.*~~

~~*In some cases the edges of the blanks, at the same time that they are thickened, receive the impression of a legend, or inscription, or an ornamental device. When this is the case the blank is rolled*~~

~~*W.J WELCH. SE*~~

~~*Pigs,*~~

~~*| or sunk, from a collar surrounding the blank in the coining press, as*~~

~~*will be afterwards explained.*~~

~~*Before passing to the coining press the blanks either of gold or Anneal- In many mints the object of the heating is ing the not only to soften the blanks before they receive the impression, but blanks.*~~

~~*silver are annealed.*~~

~~*also to produce a film of oxide of copper on their surface. This is attained in various ways. In England gold blanks are placed in cylindrical crucibles of plumbago and covered with a layer of char- coal, heated in a reverberatory furnace, and when the blanks reach cherry-redness they are cooled by plunging them in water. The thin film of oxide of copper thus formed on the surface of the gold or silver blanks is readily soluble in dilute sulphuric acid, and the removal of a small portion of the alloying metal in this way con- stitutes "blanching" or "pickling" the coin. The method of conducting the operation varies somewhat in different mints, mainly, however, in the strength of the acid used, which varies from 3° to 5° of the hydrometer of Baumé. The solution is sometimes heated to 96° to 98° C., while in other*~~

~~*cases the blanks are intro- duced into the solution while at a red heat. The latter method is, however, objectionable, as a dense layer of pure metal is found at the surface of the blank which is apt to protect the underlying oxide of copper from the action of the acid. The planks are afterwards washed in pure water and dried either in sawdust or in copper vessels heated by steam jackets. The — _ the — is to . — 62*~~

~~*Coining press.*~~

~~*Auto- matic balance.*~~

~~*490*~~

~~*improve the appearance of the finished coin by removing all traces of impurity from the surface of the blank. It has, however, been abandoned in the British mint except in the case of some of the smaller silver coins, mainly because the soft superficial layer of metal wears away with undue rapidity. Certain precautions suggested in 1869 by Mr Hill, the superintendent of the operative department, for avoiding oxidation or tarnishing of the metal during coinage rendered the abolition of the process possible.*~~

~~*The blauks receive the impression which constitutes them coins from engraved dies. Each is placed in the lower of two dies, and the upper die is brought forcibly down upon it. The lateral escape of the metal is prevented by a collar which surrounds the blank while it is being struck. This collar may be either plain or engraved, and if the latter is the case any device or ornament it may bear will be imparted to the edge of the blank. } ;*~~

~~*The coining presses used in various mints may be divided into three types : —(1) the screw press worked by atmospheric pressure, (2) the excentric press, and (3) the lever press. The first of these (see Ency. Brit., 8th ed., vol. vii. p. 92) has now been abandoned. In the excentric press the power is applied to a shaft bearing an excentric which acts by means of a connecting rod upon a verti- cal slide holding the die which is brought down on the blank. This form of press is used in the mint at Constantinople, where the atmo- spheric screw press is also still retained. Of the third type, the lever press, there are two modifications, devised respectively by Thonnelier and*~~

~~*by Uhlhorn. The details of the Uhlhorn press have been improved by Messrs R. Heaton & Sons of Birmingham ; and, their superiority to the old vacunm screw press having been demou- strated by careful experiments, they have been finally adopted in the newly arranged mint, which contains fourteen of them. This press is shown in figs. 10 and 11. It is driven from below the floor of the press-room by bands which pass over fast and loose pulleys on the same shaft that bears the fly-wheel. The loose pulley, however, is only used when it is necessary to stop the machine entirely, as the fly-wheel is permitted to revolve without imparting motion to the shaft so long asa lever M, worked from the front of the machine, does not cause the fly-wheel to be con- nected with the driving wheel by means of two pins. The dies are placed in the front part of the machine (fig. 10). The lower one is firmly fixed to the bed, while the upper is held at A by the upper of two jaws F and A', or levers, the fulera of which are so close together as almost to coincide, the lower jaw A' bearing the collar which encircles the blank while it is being converted into a coin; the Ly jaw F, A, governed by the weighted lever H shown below the bed of the machine, has a tendency to rise a sufficient distance to admit the blank between the upper and lower die. A crank B on the shaft bearing the fly-wheel is connected by a rod C with the bent lever D, and this bent lever, acting through the toggle joint and a piece of metal E connected with the jaw that bears the*~~

~~*Fig. 12. upper die, forces it down, and thus squeezes the blank between the*~~

~~*upper and lower dies. A cam on the crank shaft acting on the lower of the two levers G shown below the bed of the machine causes the lower jaw A' bearing the collar which surrounded the blank to be depressed sufficiently to leave the finished coin freely resting on the lower dic, from whence it is driven down the shoot N by the next blank in succession. Coins are produced at rates varying from 60 to 120 a minute, 90 a minute giving the best results. The blanks to be converted into coins are placed on the slide J, and the advance of each blank in succession is regulated by the rod called the "layer on" K, the backward and forward movement of which is also regulated by an excentric on the crank shaft. The details of this part of the machine are shown in plan, fig. 12.*~~

~~*The last operation before the finished coin is returned to the mint office for issue to the public is the weighing each gold or silver piece separately. This is effected in the American and in most Contiuental*~~

~~*MINT*~~

~~*mints by hand, but in England automatic balances of beautiful construction are employed. They were originally devised for separating worn pieces from those of current weight, but they are now employed to distinguish between "light," "heavy," and " good" pieces, the latter alone being permitted to pass into circulation. In the newly arranged department thirty such machines are provided. Each is driven from overhead shafting by means of gut linex The driving pulleys derive their motion from a small atmospheric engine, which is found to give more satisfactory results than would be the case if the steam-engine were employed directly. Each balance is worked by a cone pulley A (fig. 13) by a gut line passing round it from the loose pulleys B, the necessary ten- sion being imparted to the line by means of a spring C. The tension of the line is, however, but slight, for if the action of the balance is arrested by accident the cord slides over the cone pulley A without turning it. It will be obvious that the use of the cone pulley enables the machine to be driven with varying degrees of speed. The toothed wheel D is mounted on the spindle which bears the driving pulley A, but it acts only through the intervention of a friction cheek, which is so lightly screwed against the driving wheel – that it would cease to act if the machine should be accidentally deranged. The wheel D sets in motion the wheels E, E', E'. The cam F, acting on the curved extremity of the rocking frame G, causes the slide H to bring forward one of a series of coins (arranged in the hopper I) until it rests on the plate J of the balance beam, of which beam a portion is shown in an enlarged drawing above the balance, while the plate that receives the coin is also shown in a separate drawing to the left ofthe machine. Another cam K then comes into play, and enables the forceps, shown at L, to release the rod M to which the balance plate J is attached. The forceps L serves to keep the rod steady while the coin is being placed on the plate J. A rod shown at N is then raised by the cam O, the lower extremity of the rod being kept steady by a pin sliding in a hole in the bottom plate of the balance, and its upper end by a pin which works into the central support of the balance beam. At the base of this rod N, and at right*~~

~~*angles to it, there is a metallic bar QQ, the ends of which pass through stirrups in the pendants M and P from the opposite ends of the beam. The elevation of this horizon- tal rod by the cam O simultaneously releases both ends of the beam, aud the coin placed on the beam plate has then, for the first time, a direct influence on the beam. If the coin is "too light" the counterpoise R in the cage at the end of the rod P will raise the coin, and the revolution of the machine then causes part of the cam K to permit a spring to close the forceps L and to hold the pendant M firm. An indicating finger T then falls, and by means of a horizontal lever UU', which fits into one of three inverted steps on the bottom of the shoot V, determines over which of three orifices W,W',W" in the bottom plate of the balance this shoot shall stand. In the meantime the advance of the slide H brings the next piece forward, and displaces the coin which has hitherto occupied the beam plate J, forcing the coin down the shoot V, and thence through the orifice W into a receptacle, external to the balance, destined for the reception of ""'light coin." If this next piece should be "too heavy" it will not only raise the counterpoise R but will also elevate a little wire S, which would otherwise remain undisturbed ona support. This little wire represents the "working remedy" for the particular denomination of coin in question, which, for safety, is less by 35th of a grain than the remedy permitted by law. The undue weight of the " heavy coin" will depress the right end of the balance beam and its pendant M to the lowest possible point, and the indicating finger T will, in this case, determine that the rod UU' shall occupy the lowest step of the shoot V, which will conse- quently stand over the orifice W" in the bottom plate of the balance which communicates with the receptaele for the ""' heavy" coins, and the heavy coin on the beam plate will be driven down the shoot by the next coin in succession. If the coin which is next brought forward by the slide H should be a "good" one, that is, if it is within the working "remedy," its action will be as follows. It may be slightly heavier than the counterpoise, but not sufficiently heavy to lift both the counterpoise and the remedy wire. The balance beam consequently remains approximately horizontal, and the indicating finger T will cause the rod UU' to strike the centre step of the shoot V, which will then stand over the central orifice W' in the bed plate which communicates with a receptacle for " good" coins, into which the coin will find its way, as soon as it is driven from the beam plate by the next coin of the series. It will*~~

~~*be evident that this excelient appliance both weighs and classifies the coins. About twenty-three coins are passed through it in a minute.*~~

~~*In order to show the importance of extreme accuracy in weighing, it may be pointed out that, although by the Coinage Act of 1870 the 'remedy ," or allowed variation above or below the standard weight of a sovereign is only)th of a grain, yet in a million sterling of sovereigns the difference between the least and the greatest weight the law allows would be no less than £3244.*~~

~~*The manufacture of coin is not the only work which is performed in the Royal Mint. All medals issued to the*~~

~~*MINT*~~

~~*army and navy, as well as those given by the Royal Society and the university of London and some others, are struck in the mint, and their preparation forms a considerable part of the work of the die department. Since 1874 the clasps and bars for the medals have also been manufactured in the mint, whence they have been issued completely mounted. Another operation, not con- nected with the coinage, which is performed in the mint*~~

~~*CO)*~~

~~*f*~~

~~*491*~~

~~*is the assay of the "diet" or metal scraped from the gold and silver plate manufactured at Sheffield and Birmingham under the direction of the warden of the standard of wrought plate for those towns. By Act of Parliament it is directed that this shall be brought once in each year to the mint to be assayed by the "king's assay master," under the supervision of an officer appointed by the lords of the Treasury.*~~

~~*cic ESS:*~~

~~*A! ' | (\ — EEE*~~

~~*The gold coin in circulation in Great Britain is esti- mated at £100,000,000. It may be well to add the following table, which gives the value of the gold and silver coinages of four of the most important foreign countries, in two recent years :—*~~

~~*1880, 1881.*~~

~~*Gold. Silver. Gold. Silver.*~~

~~*United States £12,461,655, £5, 481,941 £19,370,178 £5,587,840 Germany ….. 1,332,430 ae 326,837 dr MISE es. . 493,605, 1,674,712 485,999) 1,805,734 Francee)s….. ˈ.- sid 83,646 259,910*~~

~~*£14, 287,690 £7,156,653 £20, 266, 660) £7,653, 484*~~

†

~~*The value of the gold coinage of the American mints during the fiscal year ending June 1882 amounted to*~~

~~*$89,413,447°50,—being greater than that of any previous |*~~

~~*year in their history. (W. CG. RR. A. H.) MINT, botanically Mentha, a genus of labiate plants, comprising about twenty species of perennial herbs, widely distributed throughout the temperate and sub-tropical portions of the globe. All the species are furnished with square stems, opposite, aromatic leaves, and creeping roots. The flowers are arranged in axillary cymes, which either form separate whorls or are crowded together into a terminal spike. The corolla is usually small, and of a pale purple or*~~

†

~~*Gos*~~

~~*Fic. 13.—Automatic Balance.*~~

~~*pinkish colour ; it has four nearly equal lobes, and encloses two long and two short stamens. Great difficulty is experienced by botanists in discriminating the species of this genus by reason of the occurrence of a*~~

~~large number of intermediate forms, nearly three hundred of which have been named and described. Many of these varieties are permanent in consequence of being propagated by stolons.~~

~~In Britain nine of the recognized species are indigen- ous. Mentha viridis, L., or Spearmint, grows in marshy meadows, and is the species commonly used for culinary purposes ; it is distinguished by its smooth, sessile leaves and lax tapering flower-spikes. Mentha sylvestris, L., or Horsemint, chiefly differs from the above in its coarser habit and hairy leaves, which are silky beneath, and in its denser flower-spikes. This plant is supposed to be the mint of Scripture, as it is extensively cultivated in the East, and is much used in cookery; it was one of the bitter herbs with which the paschal lamb was eaten. M. rotundifolia~~

~~| resembles the last in size and habit, but is readily distin- _ guished by its rounded wrinkled leaves, which are shaggy~~

†

†

~~beneath, and by its lanceolate bracts. The last two species usually grow on damp waste ground near roadsides. MM, aquatica, or Capitate Mint, grows in ditches and by the side of streams, and is easily recognized by its rounded flower-spikes and stalked hairy leaves. /. Piperita, or Peppermint, has stalked smooth leaves and an oblong obtuse terminal spike of flowers ; it is extensively culti-~~

~~492~~

~~vated for its volatile oil. JL pratensis belongs to a group of mints which, unlike the foregoing, have the flowers arranged in axillary whorls and never in terminal spikes ; it otherwise bears some reserblance in foliage and habit to M. viridis. M. sativa, the Whorled Hairy Mint, grows by damp roadsides, and M. arvensis in cornfields ; they are distinguished from J. pratensis by their hairy stalked leaves, which in Jf arvensis are all equally large, but in M. sativa are much smaller towards the apex of the stem. M. Pulegium, commonly known as Pennyroyal, more rarely as Flea-mint, has~~

~~*small oval obtuse leaves and flowers in axillary whorls, and is remarkable for its creeping habit and peculiar odour. It differs from all the mints above described in the throat of the calyx being closed with hairs. It is met with in damp places on grassy conmmons, and forms a well-known domestic remedy for female disorders.*~~

~~*All the plants of the genus Mentha abound in a volatile oil, which is contained in small receptacles having the appearance of resinous dots in the leaves and stems. The odour of the oil is similar in several species, but is not dis- tinctive, the same odour occurring in varieties of distinct species, while plants which cannot be distinguished by any botanical character possess the same odour. Thus the peppermint flavour is found in J. Piperita, in A. incant, and in Chinese and Japanese varieties of M.arvensis. Other forms of the last-named species growing in Ceylon and Java have the flavour of the common garden mint, Jf. viridis, and the same odour is found to a greater or less degree in M. sylvestris, M. rotundifolia, and MM. canadensis, A bergamot scent is met with in a variety of M. aquatica and in forms of other species. Most of the mints may be found in blossom in August.*~~

~~*The name mint is also applied to plants of other genera, Monarda punctata being called Horsemint, Pyenanthemum linifolium, Mountain Mint, and Nepeta Cataria, Catmint.*~~

~~*MINTO, Sir Gitzert Extiot, First Hart or (1751- 1814), was descended from an old border family, the Elliots of Minto, and was born at Edinburgh, April 23, 1751. His father, Sir Gilbert Elliot, was a member of the administration of Pitt and Grenville, and is spoken of by Horace Walpole as "one of the ablest men in the House of Commons." Young Elliot was educated by a private tutor, with whom at the age of twelve he went to Paris, where David Hume, who was then secretary of the embassy, undertook, from friendship to his father, the special charge of superintending his studies. After spending the winters of 1766 and 1767 at Edinburgh University, Elliot entered Oxford. On quitting the university he became a member of Lincoln's Inn, and was in 1774 called to the bar. He entered parliament in 1776, the year of his father's death. Although he gave a general support to Lord North's administration, he from the beginning occupied an inde- pendent*~~

~~*position, and in 1782 supported the address of the Commons against an offensive war with America. From this time he became a declared follower of Fox and Burke, with the latter of whom he gradually came to be on terms of great intimacy. He was created Baron Minto in 1797, and after filling several diplomatic posts with great success became in 1807 governor-general of India. The character and events of his rule in India are described in vol. xii. p. 805. He was created Earl of Minto and Viscount Melgund in 1813. He returned to England in 1814, and died on June 21st of that year.*~~

~~*See Life and Letters of Sir Gilbert Elliot, first Earl of Minto, from 1751 to 1806, 1874; and Lzfe and Letters, 1807-14, 1880. See also MIRABEAU.*~~

~~*MINUCIUS FELIX, Mazcus, one of the earliest, if not the earliest, of the Latin apologists for Christianity. Of his personal history nothing is known, and even the date at which he wrote can be only approximately ascertained.*~~

~~*MIN—Mih*~~

~~*Jerome (De Vir. Iil., 58) speaks of him as "Rome insignis causidicus," but in this he is probably only improving on the expression of Lactantius (Inst. Dw., v. 1) who speaks of him as "non ignobilis inter causidicos loci." He is now exclusively known by his Octavius, a dialogue on Christianity between the pagan Czcilius Natalis! and the Christian Octavius Januarius, a provincial solicitor, the friend and fellow-student of the author. The scene is pleasantly and graphically laid on the beach at Ostia on a holiday afternoon, and the discussion is represented as arising out of the homage paid by Ceecilius, in passing, to the image of Serapis. His arguments for paganism, which proceed partly upon agnostic grounds, partly upon the inexpediency of disturbing long-established religious beliefs, partly upon the known want of culture in Christians, the alleged indecency of their worship, and the inherent absurdity of their doctrines, are taken up seriatim by Octavius, with the result that the assailant is convinced, postponing, however, the discussion of some things neces- sary for perfect instruction to a future occasion, The form of the dialogue, modelled on the De Natura Deorwm and De Divinatione of Cicero, shows much care and ability, and its style is on the whole both vigorous and elegant if at times not exempt from something of the affectations of the age If the doctrines of the Divine unity, the resurrection, and future rewards and punishments be left out of*~~

~~*account, the work has less the character of an exposition of Christianity than of a philosophical and ethical polemic against the absurdities of crass polytheism. Christology and the other metaphysics of distinctively Christian theology are entirely passed over, and the canonical Scriptures are not quoted, hardly even alluded to.*~~

~~*The Octavius is admittedly earlier than Cyprian's De Idolorum Vanitate, which borrows from it ; how much earlier can be deter- mined only by settling the relation in which it stands to Tertullian's Apologeticum. The argument for the priority of Minucius has been most exhaustively set forth by Ebert ("Tertullians Verlalt- niss zu Minucius Felix," in vol. v. of the philologico-historical series in Abhandl. d. Kénig. Stehs. Gesellsch. der IVi issonschaften, 1868), who has been followed by Teuffel (Rém. Lit., sec. 368), Keir (Celsus' Wahres Wort, 1873), Kuhn, and other scholars. The opposite view is ably maintained by Professor Salmon (" Minucius Felix" in Smith's Dict. Christ. Biogr., 1882). The Octavius was first printed (Rome, 1543) as the eighth book of Arnobius Adv. Gentes ; Balduinus (Heidelberg, 1560) first assigned it to its propow author. There have been numerous subsequent editions, the best being that of Halm in the Corp. Scriptor. Eccl. Lat. (Vienna, 1867). See Kuhn's monograph, Der Octavius des Minucius Feliz (1882), MINUET (Fr. Menuet, from [pas] menus), a very grace- ful kind of dance, consisting of a coupee, a high step, and a balance. Its invention is universally ascribed to the inhabitants of Poitou. The melody begins with the down beat, and contains three crotchets ina bar. The music is made up of two strains, which, from being repeated, are called reprises, each consisting of eight or more bars, but very rarely of an odd number. Walther speaks of a minuet in Lully's opera of Roland, each strain of which contains ten bars, the sectional number being five,—a circumstance which renders it very difficult to be danced ; but Lully's system of phrasing was remarkably irregular. Modern instrumental composers have introduced into their sym- phonies and quartetts, &c., minuets of rapid movement and fanciful character, followed by supplementary strains (called trios) in a different style. Some of these composi- tions bear but very slight resemblance to the older forms ; and many of them begin with the third beat in the bar. The finest minuets we possess are those in Handel's Samson and Mozart's Don Giovanni.*~~

~~*MIRABEAU, HonortGasrieLt RiquetiI, CoMTE DE, (1749-1791), one of the greatest statesmen and orators*~~

~~*1 This name occurs in six inscriptions of the years 211-217 found at Constantine (Cirta), North Africa (C. Z. Z., vol. viii.).*~~

~~*MIRABE AWG 492*~~

~~*France has ever produced, was born at Bignon, near Nemours, on March 9, 1749. M. de Loménie has shown that the family of Riquet or Riqueti came originally from the little town of Digne, that they won wealth and municipal honours as merchants at Marseilles, and that in 1570 Jean Riqueti bought the chateau and estate of Mirabeau, which had up to that time belonged to the great Provengal family of Barras, and took the title of esquire a few years later. In 1685 Honoré Riqueti obtained the title of Marquis de Mirabeau, and his son Jean Antoine brought honour to it. He served with distinction through all the later campaigns of the reign of Louis X1V., and especially distinguished himself in 1705 at the battle of Cassano, where he was so severely wounded in the neck that he had ever after to wear a silver stock ; yet he never rose above the rank of colonel, owing to his eccentric habit of speaking unpleasant truths to his superiors. On retiring from the service he married Frangoise de Castellane, a remarkable woman, who long survived him, and he left at his death, in 1737, three sons —Victor, Marquis de Mirabeau (see next article), Jean Antoine, Bailli de Mirabeau, and Comte Louis Alexandre de Mirabeau. The great Mirabeau was the elder surviving son of the marquis. When but three years old he had a virulent attack of confluent small-pox which left his face for ever disfigured, and contributed not a little to nourish his father's dislike to him. His early education was conducted by Lachabeaussitre, father of the better known man of letters, after which, being like his father and grandfather destined for the army, then the only profession open to young men of family, he was entered at a pension militaire at Paris, kept by an Abbé Choquart. Of this school, which had Lagrange for its professor of mathematics, we have an amusing account in the life of Gilbert Elliot, first earl of Minto, who with his brother Hugh, afterwards British minister at Berlin, there made the acquaintance of Mirabeau, an acquaintance which soon ripened into friendship, and to which Mirabeau in later life owed his introduction into*~~

~~*good English society. On leaving this school in 1767 he received a commission in the cavalry regiment of the Marquis de Lambert, which his grandfather had commanded years before. He at once began love making, and in spite of his ugliness succeeded in winning the heart of the lady to whom his colonel was attached, which led to such scandal that his father obtained a lettre de cachet, and the young scapegrace was imprisoned in the isle of Rhé. The love affairs of Mirabeau form quite a history by themselves, and a well-known history, owing to the celebrity of the letters to Sophie; and the behaviour of the marquis in perpetually imprisoning his son is equally well known, and as widely blamed. Yet it may be asserted that until the more durable and more reputable connexion with Madame de Nehra these love episodes were the most disgraceful blemishes in a life otherwise of a far higher moral character than has been commonly supposed. As to the marquis, his use of lettres de cachet is perfectly defensible on the theory of the exist- ence of lettres de cachet at all. They were meant to be used (see Lurrres DE CacueEt) by heads of families for the correction of their families, and Mirabeau, if any son, surely deserved such correction. Further, they did have the effect of sobering the culprit, and the more creditable part of his life did not begin till he left Vincennes. Mirabeau, it may be remarked at once, was not a states- man of the Alcibiades type, and he did not develop his great qualities of mind and character until his youthful excesses were over. These will be passed over as rapidly as possible, for it was not till 1781 that the qualities which inade him great began to appear.*~~

~~*On being released from his first imprisonment, the young count, who had always intended to continue his military*~~

~~*career, obtained leave to accompany as a volunteer the French expedition which was to effect the reduction of Corsica. The cunquest was one of sheer numerical strength, for the whole population was on the side of Paoli, and Mirabeau, perceiving the value of public opinion, is said to have written a treatise on the oppression the Genoese had formerly exercised over the island, which the Government was ready to publish had not the Marquis de Mirabeau thought fit to destroy it because of its divergence from his own philosophical and economical views. For his services in Corsica Mirabeau was made a captain of dragoons, though not in any particular regiment,*~~

~~*and on his return his father endeavoured to make use of the literary ability he had shown for the advancement of his own economical theories. He tried to keep on good terms with his father, though he could not advocate all his ideas, and even went so far in 1772 as to marry a rich heiress, a daughter of the Marquis de Marignane, whose alliance his father had procured for him. He did not live happily with her, and in 1774 was ordered into semi-exile in the country, at his father's request, where he wrote his earliest extant work, the Essai sur le Despotisme. His violent dis- position now led him to quarrel with a country gentleman who had insulted his sister, and his semi-exile was changed by lettre de cachet into imprisonment in the Chateau d'Il. In 1775 he was removed to the castle of Joux, to which, however, he was not very closely confined, having full leave to visit in the town of Pontarlier. Here he met Marie Therése de Monnier, his Sophie as he called her, a married woman, for whom he conceived a violent passion. Of his behaviour nothing too strong can be said: he was introduced into the house as a friend, and betrayed his trust by inducing Madame de Monnier to fall in love with him, and all his excuses about overwhelming passion only make his conduct more despicable. The affair ended by his escaping to Switzerland, where Sophie joined him ; they then went to Holland, where he lived by hack-work for the booksellers ; meanwhile Mirabeau had been condemned to death at Pontarlier for rapt et vol, of which he was certainly not guilty, as Sophie had followed him of her own accord, and in May 1777 he was seized by the French police, and imprisoned by a lettre de cachet in the castle of Vincennes. There he remained three years and a half, and with his release ends the first and most disgraceful period of his life. During his imprisonment he seems to have learnt to control his passions from their very exhaustion, for the early part of his confinement is marked by the indecent letters to Sophie (first published in 1793), and the obscene Erotica Biblion and Ma Conversion, while to the later months belongs his first political work of any value, the Lettres de Cachet. The Essai sur le Despotisme was an ordinary but at times eloquent declamation, showing in its illustra- tions a wide miscellaneous knowledge of history, but the Lettres de Cachet exhibits a more accurate knowledge of French constitutional history skilfully applied to an*~~

~~*attempt to show that an existing actual grievance was not*~~

~~only philosophically unjust but constitutionally illegal. It shows, though still in rather a diffuse and declamatory form, that application of wide historical knowledge, keen philosophical perception, and genuine eloquence to a practical purpose which was the great characteristic of Mirabeau, both as a political thinker and as a statesman. With his release from Vincennes begins the second pericd of Mirabeaw's life. He found that his Sophie was an ideal- ized version of a rather common and ill-educated woman, and she speedily consoled herself with the affection. of a young officer, after whose death she committed suicide. Mirabeau first set to work to get the sentence of death still hanging over him reversed, and by his eloquence not only succeeded but got M. de Monnier condemned in the costs of~~

~~the whole law proceedings. From Pontarlier he went to Aix, where he claimed the court's order that his wife should return to him. She naturally objected, but his eloquence would have won his case, even against Portalis, the leader of the Aix bar, had he not in his excitement accused his wife of infidelity, on which the court pronounced a decree of separation. He then with his usual impetuosity inter- vened in the suit pending between his father and mother before the parlement of Paris, and so violently attacked the ruling powers that he had to leave France and again go to Holland, and try to live by literary work. About this time began his connexion with Madame de Nehra, which sweetened the ensuing years of toil and brought out the better points of his character. She was the daughter of Zwier van Haren, a Dutch statesman and political writer, and was a woman of a far higher type than Sophie, more educated, more refined, and more capable of appreciating Mirabeaw's good points and helping him to control his passions. With her the lion became a lamb, and his life was strengthened by the love of his petite horde, Madame de Nehra, her baby son, afterwards Lucas de Montigny, and his little dog Chico. After a period of work in Holland he betook himself to England, where his treatise on Lettres de Cachet had been much admired, and where he was soon admitted into the best Whig literary and political society of London, through his old schoolfellow Gilbert Elliot, who had now inherited his father's baronetcy and estates, and become a leading Whig member of parliament. Sir Gilbert introduced him freely, but ofall his English friends none seem to have been~~

~~*so intimate with him as Lord Lans- downe, and Mr (afterwards Sir Samuel) Romilly. The latter became particularly attached to him, and really understood his character ; and it is strange that his remarks upon Mirabeau in the fragment of autobiography which he left, and Mirabeau's letters to him, should have been neglected by French writers. Romilly was introduced to Mirabeau by D'Ivernois, and readily undertook to translate the Considerations on the Order of Cincinnatus. Romilly writes thus of him in his autobiography :—*~~

~~*"The count was difficult enough to please; he was sufficiently impressed with the beauties of the original. He went over every part of the translation with me, observed on every passage in which justice was not done to the thought or the force of the expression lost, and made many useful criticisms. During this occupation we had occasion to see one another often, and became very inti- mate; and, as he had read much, had seen a great deal of the world, was acquainted with all the most distinguished persons who at that time adorned either the royal court or the republic of letters in France, had a great knowledge of French and Italian literature, and possessed very good taste, his conversation was extremely interest- ing and not a little instructive. I had such frequent opportunities of seeing him at this time, and afterwards at a much more import- ant period of his life, that I think his character was well known tome. I doubt whether it has been so well known to the world, and I am convinced that great injustice has been done him. This, indeed, is not surprising, when one considers that, from the first moment of his entering upon the career of an author, he had been altogether indifferent how numerous or how powerful might be the enemies he should provoke. His vanity was certainly excessive ; but I have no doubt that, in his public conduct as well as in his writings, he was desirous of doing good, that his ambition was of the noblest kind, and that he proposed to himself the noblest ends. He was, however, like many of his countrymen, who were active in the calamitous Revolution which afterwards took place, not suffi- ciently scrupulous about the means by which those ends were to be accomplished. He indeed to some degree professed this; and more than once I have heard him say that there were occasions upon which 'la petite morale était ennemie de la grande.' It is not sur- prising that with such maxims as these in his mouth, unguarded in his expressions, and careless of his reputation, he should have afforded room for the circulation of many*~~

~~*stories to his disadvan- tage. Violent, impetuous, conscious of the superiority of his talents, and the declared enemy and denouncer of every species of tyranny and oppression, he could not fail to shock the prejudices, to oppose the interests, to excite the jealousy, and to wound the pride of many descriptions of persons.*~~

~~*Witha PEW*~~

~~*him asa nmionster of vice and profligacy. A scandal once set on foot is strengthened and propagated by many, who have no malice against the object of it. They delight to talk of what is extraordi- nary ; and what more extraordinary than a person so admirable for his talents and so conteinptible for his conduct, professing in his writings principles so excellent and in all the offices of public and private life putting in practice those which are so detestable? I indeed possessed demonstrative evidence of the falsehood of sonie of the anecdotes which by men of high character were related to his prejudice. "—Life of Sir S. Romilly, vol. i. p. 58.*~~

~~*This luminous judgment, the best that is extant on the character of Mirabeau, deserved to be quoted at length ; it must be noted that it was written by a man of acknow- ledged purity of life, who admired Mirabeau in early life, not when he was a statesman, but when he was only a struggling literary man. This close association with Romilly, and his friends Baynes, Trail, and Wilson, does credit to Mirabeau, and must have helped that moral revolution against his passions which was passing within him. He was a warm friend, and first made Romilly acquainted with Lord Lansdowne, and tried to get him a seat in parliament. Lord Lansdowne was himself an extraordinary man, and the first of the new Whigs might well feel sympathy with the statesman of the French Revolution. The Considérations sur ordre de Cincinnatus which Romilly translated was the only important work Mirabeau wrote in the year 1785, and it is a good speci- men of his method. He had read a pamphlet published in America attacking the proposed order, which was to form a bond of association between the officers who had fought in the American War of Independence against England ; the arguments struck him as true and valuable, so he rearranged them in his own fashion, and rewrote them in his own oratorical style. He soon found such work not sufficiently remunerative to keep his 'petite*~~

~~*horde" in comfort, and then turned his thoughts to employment from the French foreign office either in writing or in diplomacy. He first sent Madame de Nelira to Paris to make his peace with the authorities, in which she was completely successful, and then returned himself, hoping to get employment through an old literary collaborateur of his, Durival, who was at this time director of the finances of the department of foreign affairs. One of the functions of this official was to subsidize political pamphleteers, and Mirabeau had hoped to be so employed, but he ruined his chances by a series of financial works. On his return to Paris he had become acquainted with Claviéres, a Genevese exile, who was minister of finance during the Revolution, and who now introduced him to a banker named Panchaud. From them he heard plenty of abuse of stock-jobbing, and seizing their ideas he began to regard stock-jobbing, or agiotage, as the source of all evil, and to attack in his usual vehement style the Banque de St Charles and the Compagnie des Faux. This was at least disinterested on his part, for, while his supporters were poor, the bankers he attacked were rich, and would gladly have bought his silence ; but Mirabeau, though ever ready to take money for what he wrote, never sold his opinions, or wrote what he did not really believe. The very eloquence of his style rests upon the enthusiastic conviction that he himself was right, and those who differed from him were stupidly and wilfully wrong. This last pamphlet brought him into a contro- versy with Beaumarchais, who certainly did not get the best of it, but it lost him any chance of literary employ- ment fron Government. However, his ability was too great to be neglected by a great minister such as M. de Vergennes undoubtedly was, and after a preliminary tour in the early spring of 1786 he was despatched in June 1786 on a secret mission to the court of Prussia, from which he returned in January 1787, and of which he gave*~~

~~*| a full account in his Hstorre Secréte de la Cour de Berlin.*~~

~~*Min ASE A U*~~

~~*495*~~

~~*The months he spent at Berlin were important ones in the] the majority of the representatives of the country; and he*~~

~~*history of Prussia, for in them Frederick the Great died. The letters just mentioned show clearly what Mirabeau did and what he saw, and equally clearly how unfit he was to be a diplomatist ; for, with all his knowledge of men and his influence over them, he thought (and showed he thought) too much of himself ever to be able to surprise their secret thoughts and intentions. He certainly failed to conciliate the new king Frederick William; and thus ended Mirabeau's one attempt at diplomacy. During his journey he had made the acquaintance of a Major Mauvillon, whom he found possessed of a great number of facts and statistics with regard to Prussia; these he made use of in a great work on Prussia published in 1788, as Romilly says, to show that he could write more than a fugitive pamphlet. But, though his Monarchie Prussienne gave hin a general reputation for historical learning, he had in this same year lost a chance of political employment. He had offered himself as a candidate for the office of secretary to the Assembly of Notables which the king had just con- vened, and to bring his name before the public published another financial work, the Denonciation de l'Aguotage, dedicated to the king and notables, which abounded in such violent diatribes that he not only lost his election, but was obliged to retire to Tongres ; and he further injured his prospects by publishing the reports he had sent in during his secret mission at Berlin. But 1789 was at hand ; the states-general was summoned ; Mirabeau's period of pro- bation was over, and he was at last to have that oppor- tunity of showing his great qualities both as statesman and orator on a worthy arena.*~~

~~*On hearing of the king's determination to summon the states-general, Mirabeau started for Provence, and offered to assist at the preliminary conference of the noblesse of his district. They rejected him; he appealed to the ters état, and was returned both for Aix and for Marseilles. He elected to sit for the former city, and was present at the opening of the states-general on May 4, 1789. From this time the record of Mirabeau's life forms the best history of the first two years of the Constituent Assembly, for at every important crisis his voice is to be heard, though his advice was not always followed. It is impossible here to detail minutely the history of these two eventful years; it will be rather advisable to try and analyse the manner in which Mirabeau regarded passing events, and then show how his policy justifies our analysis.*~~

~~*Mirabeau possessed at the same time great logical acuteness and most passionate enthusiasm; he was there- fore both a statesman and an orator, and the interest of the last two years of his life lies mainly in the gradual but decided victory of the statesmanlike and practical over the impulsive and oratorical qualities. From the beginning Mirabeau recognized that government exists in order that the bulk of the population may pursue their daily work in peace and quiet, and that for a Government to be successful it must be strong. In this practical view of the need of a strong executive lies one of Mirabeau's greatest titles to the name of statesman. At the same time he thoroughly com- prehended that for a Government to be strong it must be in harmony with the wishes of the majority of the people, and that the political system of Louis XIV. was now fall- ing for lack of this. He had carefully studied the English constitution in England under the guidance of such men as Lord Lansdowne, Sir Gilbert Elliot, and Romilly, and appreciated it with the wise approval of its powers of ex- pansion which characterized the new Whigs, and not with the blind admiration of Burke. He understood the key- notes of the practical success of the English constitution to be the irresponsibility of the king, the solidarity of the ministers, and the selection of the executive from aniong*~~

~~*hoped to establish in France a system similar in principle, but without any slavish imitation of the details of the English constitution.*~~

~~*In the first stage of the history of the states-general Mirabeau's part was very great. He was soon recognized as a leader, to the chagrin of Mounier, because he always knew his own mind, and was prompt at emergencies. To him is to be attributed the successful consolidation of the National Assembly, its continuance in spite of De Brezé and the carpenters, and the address to the king for the with- drawal of the troops assembled by De Broglie. When the taking of the Bastille had assured the success of the Revolution, he was the one man who warned the Assembly of the futility of passing fine-sounding decrees and the necessity for acting. He declared that the famous night of August 4 was but an orgy, giving the people an immense theoretical liberty while not assisting them to practical freedom, and overthrowing the old régime before a new one could be constituted. Still more did he show his foresight when he attacked the dilatory behaviour of the Assembly, which led to the catastrophes of the 5th and 6th October. He*~~

~~*implored the Assembly to strike while the iron was hot, and at once solve in a practical manner the difficult problems presented by the abolition of feudalism. But the Assembly consisted of men inexperi- enced in practical politics, who dreamed of drawing up an ideal constitution preluded by a declaration of rights in imitation of the Americans; and for two months the Assembly discussed in what words the declaration should be expressed, while the country was in a state of anarchy, declaring old laws and customs abolished and having no new ones to obey or follow, disowning the old adminis- trative system and having no new one yet instituted, while Paris was starving and turbulent, and the queen and her friends planning a counter-revolution. The result of these two months' theorizing was the march of the women to Versailles, and the transfer of the king to Paris. Mirabeau now saw clearly that his eloquence would not enable him to guide the Assembly by himself, and that he must there- fore try to get some support. He wished to establish a strong ministry, which should be responsible like an English ministry, but to an assembly chosen to represent the people of France better than the English House of Commons then represented England. He first thought of becoming a minister at a very early date, if we may believe a story contained in the Mémoires of the Duchesse d'Abrantes, to the effect that in May 1789 the queen tried to bribe him, but that he refused to be bribed to silence, and expressed his wish to be a minister. The indignation with which the queen repelled the idea may have been the cause of his thinking of the Duc d'Orleans asa possible constitutional king, because his title would of necessity be parliamentary. But the weakness of Orleans was too palpable, and in a famous remark Mirabeau expressed his utter contempt for him. He also attempted to form an alliance with Lafayette, but the general was as vain and as obstinate as Mirabeau himself, and had his own theories about a new French constitution. Mirabeau tried for a time, too, to act with Necker, and obtained the sanction of the Assembly to Necker's financial scheme, not because it was good, but because, as he said, "no other plan was before them, and something niust be done."*~~

~~*Hitherto weight has been laid on the practical side of Mirabeau's political genius ; his ideas with regard to the Revolution after the 5th and 6th October must now be examined, and this can be done at length, thanks to the publication of Mirabeau's correspondence with La Marck, a study of*~~

~~which is indispensable for any correct knowledge of the history of the Revolution between 1789 and 1791.~~

~~496~~

~~The Comte de la Marck was a Flemish lord of the house of Aremberg, who had been proprietary colonel of a regiment in the service of France; he was a close friend of the queen, and had been elected a member of the states-general. His acquaintance with Mirabeau, commenced in 1788, ripened during the following year into a friendship, which La Marck hoped to turn to the advantage of the court. After the events of the 5th and 6th of October he consulted Mirabeau as to what measures the king ouglit to take, and Mirabeau, delighted at the opportunity, drew up an admirable state-paper, which was presented to the king by Monsieur, afterwards Louis XVIII. The whole of this Mémoire should be read to get an adequate idea of Mirabeau's genius for politics; here it must be merely sum- marized.~~

~~The main position is that the king is not free in Paris ; he must therefore leave Paris and appeal to France. " Paris n'en veut que argent; les provinces demandent des lois." But where must the king go? 'Se retirer & Metz ou sur toute autre frontiére serait déclarer la guerre 4 la nation et abdiquer le tréne. Unroi qui est la seule sauvegarde de son peuple ne fuit point devant son peuple ; il le prend pour juge de sa conduite et de ses principes." Ho must then go towards the interior of France to a provincial capital, best of all to Rouen, and there he must appeal to the people and summon a great convention. It would be ruin to appeal to the noblesse, as the queen advised: "un corps de noblesse n'est point une armée, qui puisse combattre." When this great convention met, the king must show himself ready to recognize that great changes have taken place, that fendalism and absolutism have for ever disappeared, and that a new relation between king and people has arisen, which must be loyally observed on both sides for the future. "Il est certain, d'ailleurs, qu'il faut une grande révolution pour sativer le royaume, que la nation a des droits, qu'elle est en chemin de les recouvrer tous, et qu'il faut non seulement les rétablir, mais les consolider." To establish this new constitutional position between king and people would not be difficult, because "]'indivisibilité du monarque et du~~

~~*peuple est dans le cour de tous les Frangais ; il faut qu'elle existe dans l'action et le pouvoir."*~~

~~*Such was Mirabeau's programme, which he never diverged from, but which was far too statesmanlike to be understood by the poor king, and far too positive as to the altered condition of the monarchy to be palatable to the queen. Mirabeau followed up his Afémoire by a scheme of a great ministry to contain all men of mark,—Necker as prime minister, "'to render him as powerless as he is incapable, and yet preserve his popularity for the king," the archbishop of Bordeaux, the Duc de Liancourt, the Duc de la Rochefoucauld, La Marck, Talleyrand bishop of Autun at the finances, Mirabeau without portfolio, Target mayor of Paris, Lafayette generalissimo to reform the army, Segur (foreign affairs), Mounier, and Chapelier. This 'scheme got noised abroad, and was ruined by a decree of the Assembly of November 7, 1789, that no member of the Assembly could become a minister; this decree destroyed any chance of that necessary harmony between the ministry and the majority of the representatives of the nation exist- ing in England, and so at once overthrew Mirabeaw's present hopes and any chance of the permanence of the constitution then being devised. The queen utterly refused to take Mirabeau's counsel, and La Marck left Paris. However, in April 1790 he was suddenly recalled by the Comte de Mercy-Argenteau, the Austrian ambassador at Paris, and the queen's most trusted political adviser, and from this time to Mirabeau's death he became the medium of almost daily communications between the latter and the queen. Mirabeau at first attempted again to make an alliance with Lafayette by a letter in which he says, "Les Barnave, les Duport, les Lameth ne vous fatiguent plus de leur active inaction ; on singe longtemps l'adresse, non pas la force." But it was useless to appeal to Lafayette; he was not a strong man himself, and did not appreciate "la force" in others. From the month of May 1790 to his death in April 1791 Mirabeau remained in close and suspected but*~~

~~*MIRABEAU*~~

~~*up many admirable state-papers for it. In return the court paid his debts; but it ought'never to be said that he was. bribed, for the gold of the court never made him swerve from his political principles—never, for instance,*~~

~~*made him a royalist. He regarded himself as a minister, though an unavowed one, and believed himself worthy of his hire. Undoubtedly his character would have been more admirable if he had acted without court assistance, but it must be remembered that his services deserved some reward, and that by remaining at Paris as a politician he had been unable to realize his paternal inheritance. Before his in- fluence on foreign policy is discussed, his behaviour on several important points must be noticed. On the great question of the veto he took a practical view, and seeing that the royal power was already sufficiently weakened, declared for the king's absolute veto, and against the compromise of the suspensive veto. He knew from his English experiences that such a veto would be hardly ever used unless the king felt the people were on his side, in which case it would be a useful check on the representatives of the people, and also that if it was used unjustifiably the power of the purse possessed by the representatives and the very constitutional organization of the people would, as in England in 1688, bring about a bloodless revolution, and a change in the person entrusted with the royal dignity. He saw also that much of the inefficiency of the Assembly arose from the inexperience of the members, and their incurable verbosity ; so, to establish some system of rules, he got his friend Romilly to draw up a detailed account of the rules and customs of the English House of Commons, which he translated into French, but which the Assembly, puffed up by a belief in its own merits, refused touse. On the great subject of peace and war he supported the king's authority, and with some success. What was the good of an executive which had no power? Let it be responsible to the representatives of the nation by all means ; but if the representatives absorbed all executive power by perpetual interference, there would be six hundred kings of France instead of one, which would hardly be a change for the better. Again Mirabeau almost alone of the Assembly understood the position of the army under a limited monarchy. Contrary to the theorists, he held that the soldier ceased to be a citizen when he became a soldier ; he must submit to be deprived of his liberty to think and act, and must recognize that a soldier's first duty is obedience. With such sentiments, it is no wonder that he approved of Bouillé's vigorous conduct at Nancy, which was the more to his credit as Bouillé was the one hope of the court influences opposed tohim. Lastly, in matters of finance he showed his wisdom: he attacked Necker's "caisse d'escompte," which was to have the whole control of the taxes, as absorbing the Assembly's power of*~~

~~*the purse ; and he heartily approved of the system of assignats, but with the important reservation that they should not be issued to the extent of more than one-half the value of the lands to be sold. This restriction was not observed, and it was solely the enormous over-issue of assignats that caused their great depreciation in value.*~~

~~*Of Mirabeau's attitude with regard to foreign affairs it is necessary to speak in more detail. He held it to be just that the French people should conduct their Revolution as they would, and that no foreign nation had any right to interfere with them, so long as they kept themselves strictly to their own affairs. But he knew also that neighbouring nations looked with unquiet eyes on the progress of affairs in France, that they feared the influence of the Revolution on their own peoples, and that foreign monarchs were being prayed by the French emigrés to interfere on behalf of the French monarchy. To prevent this interference, or*~~

~~*not actually proved connexion with the court, and drew | rather to give no pretext for it, was his guiding thought as*~~

~~*MPT hos BE AU*~~

~~*to foreign policy. He had been elected a member of the comité diplomatique of the Assembly in July 1790, and became its reporter at once, and in this capacity he was able to prevent the Assembly from doing much harm in regard to foreign affairs. He had long known Montmorin, the foreign secretary, and, as matters became more strained from the complications with the princes and counts of the empire, he entered into daily communication with the minister, advised him on every point, and, while dictating his policy, defended it inthe Assembly. Thus in this parti- cular instance of the foreign office, for the few months before Mirabeau's death, a harmony was established between the minister and the Assembly through Mirabeau, which checked for a time the threatened approach of foreign intervention, and maintained the honour of France abroad. Mirabeau's exertions in this respect are not his smallest title to the name of statesman; and how great a work he did is best proved by the confusion which ensued in this department of affairs upon his death.*~~

~~*For indeed in the beginning of 1791 his death was very near; and he knew it to be so. The wild excesses of his youth and their terrible punishment had weakened his strong constitution, and his parliamentary labours completed the work. So surely did he feel its approach that some time before the end he sent all his papers over to his old English friend and schoolfellow Sir Gilbert Elliot, who kept them under seal until claimed by Mirabeau's executors. In March his illness was evidently gaining on him, to his great grief, because he knew how much depended on his life, and felt that he alone could yet save France from the distrust of her monarch and the present reforms, and from the foreign interference, which would assuredly bring about catastrophes unparalleled in the history of the world. On his life hung the future course of the Revolution. Every care that science could afford was given by his friend and physician, the famous chemist Cabanis, to whose brochure on his last illness and death the reader may refer. The people, whose faith in him revived in spite of all suspicions, when they heard that he was on his death-bed, kept the street in which he lay quiet; but medical care, the loving solicitude of friends, and the respect of all the people could not save his life. His vanity appears in its most gigantic proportions in his last utterances during his illness; but many of them have something grand in their sound, as his last reported expression, when he looked upon the sun—'"'If he is not God, he is at least His cousin-german." When he could speak no more he wrote with a feeble hand the one word "dormir," and on April 2, 1791, he died.*~~

~~*With Mirabeau died, it has been said, the last hope of the mon- archy; but, with Marie Autoinette supremeatcourt, canit be saidthat there could ever have been any real hope for the monarchy? Had she been but less like her imperious mother, Louis would have made a coustitutional monarch, but her will was as strong as Mirabeau's own, and the Bourbon monarchy had to meet its fate. The subse- quent events of the Revolution justified Mirabeau's prognostications in his first mémoire of October 15, 1789. The royal family fled towards the German frontier, and from that moment there sunk deep into the hearts of the people not only of Paris, but of the provinces, a conviction that the king and queen were traitors to France, which led inevitably to their execution. The noblesse and the foreign aid on which the queen relied proved but a source of weakness. The noblesse, Mirabeau had said, was no army which could fight; and truly the army of*~~

~~*the emigrés could do nothing against revolutionary France in arms. The intervention of foreign aid only sealed the king's fate, and forwarded the progress of the Revolution, not in a course of natural development, but to the terrible resource of the Reign of Terror. With regard to the Assembly too, and its consti- tution, Mirabeau had shown his foresight. The constitution of 1791, excellent as it was on paper, and well adapted to an ideal state, did not deal adequately with the great problems of the time in France, and by its ridiculous weakening of the executive was unsuited to a modern state. Surely if events ever proved a man's political sagacity, the history of the French Revolution proved Mirabeau's.*~~

~~*497*~~

~~*_A few words must be added on Mirabeau's manner of work and his character.*~~

~~*No man ever so thoroughly used other men's work, and yet made it all seem his own, " Je prends mon bien ou je le trouve" 1s as true of him as of Moliére. His first literary work, except the bombastic but eloquent Essai sur le Despotisme, was a transla- tion of Watson's Philip IJ., accomplished in Holland with the help of Durival ; his Considérations sur Vordre de Cincinnatus was based on an American pamphlet, and the notes to it were con- tributed by Target ; while his financial writings were all suggested by the Genevese exile Claviéres. During the Revolution he received yet more help; men were proud to labour for him, and did not murmur because he absorbed all the credit and fame. Dumont, Claviéres, Duroveray, Pellenc, Lamourette, and Reybaz were but a few of the most distinguished of his collaborators. Dumont was a Genevese exile, and an old friend of Romilly's, who willingly prepared for him those famous addresses which Mirabeau used to make the Assembly pass by sudden bursts of eloquent declamation ; Claviéres and Duroveray helped him in finance, and not only worked out his figures, but even wrote his financial discourses. Pellenc was his secretary, and wrote the speeches on the goods of the clergy and the right of making peace, and even the Abbé Lamourette wrote the speeches on the civil constitution of the clergy. Reybaz, whose per- sonality has only been revealed within these last ten years, not only wrote for him his famous speeches on the assignats, the organization of the national guard, &c.,*~~

~~*which Mirabeau read word for word at the tribune, but even the posthumous speech on succession to estates of intestates, which Talleyrand read in the Assembly as the last work of his dead friend. Yet neither the gold of the court nor another man's conviction would make Mirabeau say what he did not himself believe, or do what he did not himself think right. He took other men's labour as his due, and impressed their words, of which he had suggested the underlying ideas, with the stamp of his own individuality ; his collaborators themselves did not com- plain,—they were but too glad to be of help in the great work of controlling and forwarding the French Revolution through its greatest thinker and orator. True is that remark of Goethe's to Eckermann, after reading Dumont's Souvenirs: "At last the wonderful Mirabeau becomes natural to us, while at the same time the hero loses nothing of his greatness. Some French journalists think differently… .. The French look upon Mirabeau as their Hercules, and they are perfectly right. But they forget that even the Colossus consists of individual parts, and that the Hercules of antiquity is a collective being—a gigantic personification of deeds done by himself and by others."*~~

~~*There was something gigantic about all Mirabeau's thoughts and deeds. The excesses of his youth were beyond all bounds, and severely were they punished ; his vanity was immense, but never spoilt his judgment; his talents were enormous, but could yet make use of those of others. As a statesman his wisdom is indubit- able, but by no means universally recognized in his own country. Lovers of the ancien régime abuse its most formidable and logical opponent; believers in the Constituent Assembly cannot be expected to care for the most redoubtable adversary of their favourite theorists, while admirers of the republic of every description agree in calling him from his connexion with the court the traitor Mirabeau. As an orator more justice has been done him: his eloquence has been likened to that of both Bossuet and Vergniaud, but it had neither the polish of the old 17th-century bishop nor the flashes of genius of the young Girondin. It was rather parliamentary oratory in which he excelled, and his true compeers are rather Burke and Fox than any French speakers. Personally he had that which is the truest mark of nobility of mind, a power of attracting love, and winning faithful friends. "I always loved him," writes Sir Gilbert Elliot to his brother Hugh; and Romilly, who was not given to lavish praise, says, "I have no doubt that in his public conduct, as in his writings, he was desirous*~~

~~of doing good, that his ambition was of the noblest kind, and that he proposed to himself the noblest ends." What more favourable judgment could be passed on an ambitious man! What finer epitaph could a states-man desire !~~

~~The best edition of Mirabeau's works is that published by Blanchard in 1822, fn 10 vols., of which two contain his uvres Oratoires; from this collection, how- ever, many of his less important works, and the Monarchie Prussienne, In 4 vols., 1788, are omitted. For his life consult Mirabeau: Mémoires sur sa vive littéraire et privée, 4 vols., 1824, and, what is of most iinportance, Mémoires biographiques, littéraires, et politiques de Mirabeau écriis par lui-méme, par son pere, son oncle, et son fils adoptif, which was issued by M. Lucas de Montigny in 8 vols., Paris, 1834, See also Dumont, Souvenirs sur Mirabeau, 1832 ; Duval, Souvenirs sur Mirabeau, 1832; Victor Hugo, Etude sur Mirabeau, 1834 ; Mirabeau's Jugendleben, Breslau, 1832: Schneidewin, Mirabeau und seine Zeit, Leipsic, 1831; Afirabeau, Life His- tory, London, 1848. The publication of the Correspondance entre Mirabeau et le Comte de la Marck, by Ad. Bacow't, 2 vols., 1851, marks an epoch in our exact~~

~~Mirabeau et la Constituante, 1873. On his eloquence and the sate eS collabora- tors had in his specches, see Aulard, L' Assemblée Cogs ene, ae death see the curious brochure of his physician Cabanis, Journal ae~~

~~i is, 17 II, M.S.) et de la mort de Mirabeau, Paris, 1791. . (IIA. Vas cole ae~~

~~498~~

~~MIRABEAU, Vicror RiqveT, Marquis pz (1715- 1789), himself a distinguished author and political econo- mist, but more famous as the father of the great Mirabeau, was born at Pertuis near the old chateau de Mirabeau on October 4, 1715. He was brought up very sternly by his father, and in 1729 joined the army. He took keenly to cam- paigning, but never rose above the rank of captain, owing to his being unable to get leave at court to buy a regiment. In 1737 he came into the family property on his father's death, and spent some pleasant years till 1743 in literary~~

~~*companionship with his dear friends Vauvenargues and Lefranc de Pompignan, which might have continued had he not suddenly determined to marry—not for money, but for landed estates. The lady whose property he fancied was Marie Genevieve, daughter of a M. de Vassan, a brigadier in the army, and widow of the Marquis de Saulveboeuf, whom he married without previously seeing her on April 21, 1743. While in garrison at Bordeaux, Mirabeau had made the acquaintance of Montesquieu, which may have made him turn his thoughts to political speculations ; anyhow it was while at leisure after retiring from the army that he wrote his first work, his Testament Politique (1747), which demanded for the prosperity of France a return of the French noblesse to their old position in the Middle Ages. This work, written under the influence of the feudal ideas impressed upon him by his father, was followed in 1750*~~

~~*by a book on the Utilité des Etats Provenciauc, full of |*~~

~~*really wise considerations for local self-government, which was published anonymously, and had the honour of being attributed to Montesquieu himself. In 1756 Mirabeau made his first appearance as a political economist by the publication of his Ami des Hommes ow traité de la population. This work has been often attributed to the influence, and in part even to the pen, of Quesnay, the founder of the economical school of the physiocrats, but was really written before the marquis had made the acquaintance of the physician of Madame de Pompadour. In 1760 he published his Théorie de [Impét, in which he attacked with all the vehemence of his son the farmers- general of the taxes, who got him imprisoned for eight days at Vincennes, and then exiled to his country estate at Bignon. At Bignon the school of the physiocrats was really established, and the marquis surrounded himself with devotees, and eventually in 1765 bought the Journal de Pagriculture, du commerce, et des finances, which became the organ of the school. He was distinctly recog- nized as a leader of political thinkers by Prince Leopold of Tuscany, afterwards emperor, and by Gustavus ITI. of Sweden, who in 1772 sent him the grand cross of the order of Vasa. But the period of his happy literary life was over; and his name was to be mixed up in a long scandalous lawsuit. Naturally his marriage had not been happy; he had separated from his wife by mutual consent in 1762, and had, he believed, secured her safely in the provinces*~~

~~*by a lettre de cachet, when in 1772 she suddenly appeared in Paris, and soon after commenced proceedings for a separation. The poor marquis did not know what to do; his sons were a great trouble to him, and it was one of his own daughters who had encouraged his wife to take this step. Yet he was determined to keep the case quiet if possible for the sake of Madame de Pailly, a Swiss lady whom he had loved since 1756. But his wife would not let him rest; her plea was rejected in 1777, but she renewed her suit, and, though the great Mirabeau had pleaded his father's case, was suc- cessful in 1781, when a decree of separation was pro- nounced. This trial had quite broken the health of the marquis, as well as his fortune; he sold his estate at Bignon, and hired a house at Argenteuil, where he lived quietly till his death on July 11, 1789.*~~

~~*MIR—MIR*~~

~~*For the whole family of Mirabeau, the one book to refer to is Louis de Loménie's Les Mirabeau, 2 vols., 1878, and it is greatly to be regretted that the talented author did not live to treat the lives of the great Mirabeau and his brother. See also Lucas de Mon- tigny's Mémoires de Mirabeau, and, for the marquis's economical views, De la Vergne's Economistes frangais du 18™ siécle,*~~

~~*MIRAGE. See Lieut, vol. xiv. p. 600.*~~ |

~~*MIRAMON, Micuet, a Mexican soldier of French extraction, was born in the city of Mexico, September 29, 1832, and shot along with the emperor Maximilian at Queretaro, June 19, 1867. While still a student he helped to defend the military academy at Chapultepec against the forces of the United States; and, entering the army in 1852, he rapidly came to the front during the civil wars that dis- turbed the country. It was largely due to Miranion's support of the ecclesiastical party against Alvarez and Comonfort that Zuloaga was raised to the presidency; and in 1859 he was called to succeed him in that office. Decisively beaten, however, by the Liberals, he fled the country in 1860, and spent some time in Europe earnestly advocating foreign intervention in Mexican affairs; and when he returned it was as a partisan of Maximilian. His ability as a soldier was best shown by his double defence of Puebla in 1856.*~~

~~*MIRANDA, Francesco (1754-1816), was born at Santa Fé in New Granada in 1754. He entered the army,*~~

~~*'and served against the English in the American War of*~~

~~*Independence. The success of that war inspired him with a hope of being the Washington of his own country, and a belief that the independence of Spanish America would increase its material prosperity. With these views he began to scheme a revolution, but his schemes were dis- covered and he had only just time to escape to the United States. Thence he went to England, where he was intro- duced to Pitt, but chiefly lived with the. leading members of the opposition—Fox, Sheridan, and Romilly. Finding no help in his revolutionary schemes, he travelled over the greater part of Europe, notably through Austria and Turkey, till he arrived at the court of Russia, where he was warmly received, but from which he was dismissed, though with rich presents, at the demand of the Spanish ambassador, backed up by the envoy of France. The news of the dispute between England and Spain about Nootka Sound in 1790 recalled him to England, where he saw a good deal of Pitt, who had determined to make use of him to "insurge" the Spanish colonies, but the peaceful arrangement of the dispute again destroyed his hopes. In April 1792 he went to Paris, with introductions to Pétion aud the leading Girondists, hoping that men who were work- ing so hard for their own freedom might help his country- men in South America. France had too much to do in fighting for its own freedom to help others ; but Miranda's friends sent him to the front with the rank of general of brigade. He distinguished himself under Dumouriez, was intrusted in February 1793 with the conduct of the siege of Maestricht, and commanded the left wing of the French army at the disastrous battle of Neerwinden. Although he had given notice of Dumouriez's projected treachery, he was put on his trial for treason on May 12. He was unanimously acquitted, but was soon again thrown into prison, and not released till after the 9th Thermidor. He again mingled in politics, and was sentenced to be deported after the struggle of Vendémiaire. Yet he escaped, and continued in Paris till the coup @état of Fructidor caused him finally to take refuge in England. He now found Pitt and Dundas once more ready to listen to him, and the latter sent a special minute to Colonel Picton, the governor of Trinidad, to assist General Miranda's schemes in every possible way: but, as neither of*~~

~~them would or could give him substantial help, he went to the United States, where President Adams gave him fair words but nothing more. Once more he returned to. England,~~

~~MIR—MIR~~

~~where Addington might have done something for him but for the signature of the peace of Amiens in 1802. At the peace, though in no way amnestied, he returned to Paris, but was promptly expelled by the First Consul, who was then eager to be on good terms with the court of Spain. Disappointed in further efforts to get assistance from England and the United States, he decided to make an attempt on his own responsibility and at his own expense. Aided by two American citizens, Colonel Smith and Mr Ogden, he equipped a small ship, the "Leander," in 1806, and with the help of the English admiral Sir A. Cochrane made a landing near Caracas, and proclaimed the Colombian republic. He had some success, and would have had more~~

~~had not a false report of peace between France and | England caused the English admiral to withdraw his |~~

~~support. At last in 1810 came his opportunity; the events in Spain which brought about the Peninsular War had divided the authorities in Spanish America, some of whom declared for Joseph Bonaparte, others for Ferdinand VII., while others again held to Charles IV. At this moment Miranda again landed, and had no difficulty in getting a large party together who declared a republic both in Venezuela and New Granada or Colombia. Miranda's desire that all the South American colonies should rise, and a federal republic be formed, awoke the selfish- ness and pride of individual provincial administrations, and thus weakened the cause, which further was believed to be hateful to heaven owing to a great earthquake on March 26, 1812. The count of Monte Verde, the Bourbon governor, had little difficulty in defeating the dispirited forces of Miranda, and on July 26 the general capitulated on condition that he should be deported to the United States. The condition was not observed; Miranda was moved from dungeon to dungeon, and died in 1816 at Cadiz.~~

~~There are allusions to Miranda's early life in nearly all memoirs of the time, but they are not generally very accurate. For his trial see Buchez et Roux, Histoire Parlementaire, xxvii. 26-70. Yor his~~

~~later life see Biggs, History of Miranda's Attempt in South America, London, 1809 ; and Veggasi, Revolucion de la Columbia.~~

~~MIRANDOLA. See Pico.~~

~~MIRKHOND (1433-1498). Mohammed bin Khawand- shah bin Mahmud, commonly called Mirkhwand or Mirk- hawand, more familiar to Europeans under the name of Mirkhond, was born in 1433, the son of a very pious and learned man who, although belonging to an old Bokhara family of Sayyids or direct descendants of the Prophet, lived and died in Balkh. From his early youth he applied himself to historical studies and literature in general. In~~

~~(born 1440), who served his old school-fellow the reigning sultan Husain (who as the last of the Timurides in Persia ascended the throne of Herat in 1468), first as keeper of the seal, afterwards as governor of Jurjin. At the request of this distinguished statesman and writer! Mirkhond began about 1474, in the quiet convent of Khilastyah, which his patron had founded in Herat as a house of retreat for literary men of merit, his great work on universal history, the largest ever written in Persian, and to the present day an inexhaustible mine of information both to Eastern and Western scholars. It is named Rauzat-ussafé fi strat-ulanbid walmulik walkhulafé or Garden of Purity on the Biography of Prophets, Kings, and Caliphs. That the author has made no attempt at a critical examination of historical traditions can scarcely be called a peculiar fault of his, since almost all Oriental writers are equally deficient in sound criticism ; more censurable is his~~

~~1 Mir 'Alishir not only excelled as poet both in Chaghatai, in which his epopees gained him the foremost rank among the classic writers in that language, and in Persian, but composed an excellent tadhkirah or biography of contemporary Persian poets.~~

~~But |~~

flowery and often bombastic style, but in spite of this draw- back, and although, in our own age, the discovery of older works on Asiatic history has diminished to some extent the value of Mirkhond's Razgat, it still maintains its high position as one of the most marvellous achievements in literature from the pen of one man, and often elucidates, by valuable text-corrections, various readings, and important additions, those sources which have lately come to light. It comprises seven large volumes and a geographical ap- pendix ; but internal evidence proves beyond doubt that the seventh volume, the history of the sultan Husain (1438- 1505), together with a short account of some later events down to 1523, cannot have been written by Mirkhond himself, who died in 1498. He may have compiled the preface, but the main portion of this volume is probably

_ the work of his grandson, the equally renowned historian

Khwandamir (1475-1534), to whom also a part of the appendix must be ascribed.

The following is a summary of the contents of the other six volumes. Well, ah : Preface on the usefulness of historical studies, history of the creation, the patriarchs, prophets, and rulers of Israel down to Christ, and the Persian kings from the mythical times of the Peshdadians to the Arab conquest and the death of the last Sasdnian Yazdajird III. in 30 a.u. (651 A.p.). Vol. ii.: Mohammed, Abubekr, 'Omar, 'Othman, and 'AH. Vol. iii.: The twelve imams and the Omayyad and 'Abbasid ealiphs down to 656 A.H. (1258 A.D.). Vol. iv.: The minor dynasties contemporary with and subsequent to the 'Abbasids, down to 778 a.H. (1376 A.v.), the date of the over- throw of the Kurdsby Timur. Vol. v.: The Moghuls down to Timur's time. Vol. vi.: Timur and his sueeessors down to Sultan Husain's aceession in 873 A.u. (1468 A.p.). The best accounts of Mirkhond's life are De Saey's " Notice sur Mirkhond" in his Mémoires sur diverses antiquités de la Perse, Paris, 1793 ; Jourdain's " Notiee de Vhistoire universelle de Mirkhond" in the Notices et Extraits, vol. ix., Paris, 1812 (together with a translation of the preface, the history of the Ismailians, the conclusion of the sixth volume, and a portion of the appendix) ; Elliot, History of India, vol. iv. p. 127 sq. ; Morley, Descriptive Catalogue, London, 1854, p. 30 sg. ;

~~*Rieu, Cat. of Persian MSS. of the Brit. Mus., vol. i., London, 1879, p. 87 sq. Mirkhond's patron, Mir 'Alishir, to whom the Rauzat is dedicated, died three years after him (1501),*~~

~~*Besides the lithographed editions of the whole work in folio, Bombay, 1853, and Teheran, 1852-56, and a Turkish version, Constantinople, 1842, the following portions of Mirkhond's history have been published by European Orientalists: Eariy Kings of Persia, by D. Shea, London, 1832 (Oriental Translation Fund); L fistoire dela dynastie des Sassanides, by S. de Saey (in the above-mentioned Mémoires); Histoire des Sassanides (texte Persan), by Jaubert, Paris, 1843; His- toria priorum regunt Persarum, Pers. and Lat., by Jenish, Vienna, 1782; Mirchondt historia Taheridarum, Pers. and Lat., by Mitscherlik, G6ttingen, 1814, 2d ed., Berlin, 1819; Zfstoria Samanidarum, Pers. and Lat., by Wilken, Géttingen, 1808 ; Histoire des Samanides, translated by Defrémery, Paris, 1845; Historia Ghaznevidarum, Pers. and Lat., by Wilken, Berlin, 1832; Geschichte der Sultane aus dem Geschlechte Bujeh, Pers. and German, by Wilken, Berlin, 1835; followed by Erdmann's Lrlduterung und Ergdnzung, Kazan, 1836; Historia Seldschuckidarum,*~~

~~*| ed. Vullers, Giessen, 1837, and a German translation by the same, Histoire des*~~

~~*Sultans du Kharezm, in Persian, by Defrémery, Paris, 1842; Histery of the Atabeks of Syria and Persia, in Persian, by W. Morley, London, 1848; Historta*~~

~~*tie . | Ghuridarum, Pers. and Lat., by Mitseherlik, Frankfort, 1818; Histotredes Sultans Herat, where he spent the greater part of his life, he gained |*~~

~~*the favour of that famous patron of letters, Mir 'Alishir |*~~

~~*Ghurides, translated into French by Defrémery, Paris, 1844, Vie de Djinghiz-Khan, in Persian, by Jaubert, Paris, 1841 (see also extracts from the same 5th volume in French translation by Langlés in vol. vi. of Notices et Extraits, Paris, 1799, p. 192 sg., and by Hammer in Sur les origines Russes, St Petersburg, 1825, p. 52 sg.); "Timtr's Expedition against*~~

~~*Tuktamish Khdn," Persian and French, by Charmoy, in Mémoires de I' Acad. Impér. de St Pétersbourg, 1836, pp. 270-321 and 441-471. (CH, E.)*~~

~~*MIROPOLIE, a town of Russia, situated in the govern- ment of Kursk, district of Suja, 83 miles south-west of Kursk and 25 miles from the Sumy railway station. It is supposed to have been founded in the 17th century, when it was fortified against the raids of Tartars. The fertility of the soil Iced to the settlement of large villages close by the fort, and the 10,800 inhabitants of this town are still engaged mostly in agriculture. There is also an extensive manufacture of boots.*~~

~~*MIRROR. It is only since the early part of the 16th century that mirrors have become articles of household furniture and decoration. Previous to that time—from the 12th to the end of the 15th century—pocket mirrors or small hand mirrors carried at the girdle were indispensable adjuncts to ladies' toilets. The pocket mirrors consisted of small circular plaques of polished metal fixed in a shallow circular box, covered with a lid. Mirror cases were chiefly made of ivory, carved with relief representations of love*~~

~~*or domestic scenes, hunting, and games, and sometimes illustrations of popular poetry or romance. Gold and silver, enamels, ebony, and other costly materials were likewise used for mirror cases, on which were lavished the highest decorative efforts of art workmanship and costly jewelling. The mirrors worn at the girdle had no cover, but were furnished with a short handle. In 625 Pope Boniface IV. sent Queen Ethelberga of Northumbria a present of a silver mirror; and there is ample evidence that in early Anglo-Saxon times mirrors were well known in England. It is a remarkable fact that on many of the sculptured stones of Scotland, belonging probably to the 7th, 8th, or 9th century, representations of mirrors, mirror cases, and combs occur.*~~

~~*The method of backing glass with thin sheets of metal for mirrors was well known in the Middle Ages at a time when steel and silver mirrors were alimost exclusively employed, Vincent de Beauvais, writing about 1250, says that the mirror of glass and lead is the best of all "quia vitrum propter transparentiam melius recipit radios." It is known that small convex*~~

~~*mirrors were commonly made in southern Germany before the beginning of the 16th century, and these continued to be in demand under the name of bull's-eyes (Ochsen-Augen) till comparatively modern times. They were made by blowing small globes of glass into which while still hot was passed through the pipe a mixture of tin, antimony, and resin or tar. When the globe was entirely coated with the metallic com- pound and cooled it was cut into convex lenses, which of course formed small but well-defined images. It appears that attention was drawn to this method of making mirrors in Venice as early as 1317, in which year a " Magister de Alemania," who knew how to work glass for mirrors, broke an agreement he had made to instruct three Venetians, leaving in their hands a large quantity of mixed alum and soot for which they could find no use.*~~

~~*It was, however, in Venice that the making of glass mirrors .on a commercial scale was first developed; and that enterprising republic enjoyed a rich and much-prized monopoly of the manufacture for about a century and a half. In 1507 two inhabitants of Murano, representing that they possessed the secret of making perfect mirrors of glass, a knowledge hitherto confined to one German glass- house, obtained an exclusive privilege of manufacturing mirrors for a period of twenty years. In 1564 the mirror- makers of Venice, who enjoyed peculiar privileges, formed themselves into a corporation. The products of the Murano glass-houses quickly supplanted the mirrors of polished metal, and a large and lucrative trade in Venetian glass mirrors sprang up. They were made from blown cylinders of glass which were slit, flattened on a stone, carefully polished, the edges frequently bevelled, and thie backs "silvered" by an amalgam. The glass was remarkably pure and uniform, the "silvering" bright, and the sheets sometimes of considerable dimensions. In the inventory of his effects made on the death of the great French minister Colbert is enumerated a Venetian mirror 46 by 26 inches, in a silver frame, valued at 8016 livres, while a picture by Raphael is put down at 3000 livres.*~~

~~*The manufacture of glass mirrors, with the aid of Italian workmen, was practised in England by Sir Robert Mansel early in the 17th century, and about 1670 the duke of Buckingham was concerned in a glass-work at Lambeth where flint glass was made for looking-glasses. These old English mirrors, with bevelled edges in the Venetian fashion, are still well known.*~~

~~*The Venetians guarded with the utmost jealousy the secrets of their varied manufactures, and gave most excep- tional privileges to those engaged in such industries. By their statutes any glassmaker carrying his art into a*~~

~~*foreign state was ordered to return on the pain of imprisonment of his nearest relatives, and should he disobey the command emissaries were delegated to slay the contumacious subject. In face of such a statute Colbert attempted in 1664, through the French ambassador in Venice, to get Venetian artists transported to France to develop the two great industries of mirror-making and point-lace working. The ambassador, the bishop of Béziers, pointed out that to attempt to send the required artists was to court the risk of being thrown into the Adriatic, and he further showed that Venice was selling to France mirrors to the value of 100,000 crowns and lace to three or four times that value. Notwithstanding these circumstances, however, twenty Venetian glass-mirror makers were sent to France in 1665, and the manufacture was begun under the fostering care of Colbert in the Faubourg St Antoine, Paris. But previous to this the art of blowing glass for mirrors had been actually practised at Tour-la-Ville, near Cherbourg, by Richard Lucas, Sieur de Nehou, in 1653; and by the subsequent combination of skill of both establishments French mirrors soon excelled in quality those of Venice. The art received a new impulse in France on the introduction of the making of plate glass, which was discovered in 1691. The St Gobain Glass Company attribute the discovery to Louis Lucas of Nehou, and over the door of the chapel of St Gobain they have placed an inscription in memory of " Louis Lucas qui in- venta in 1691 le methode de couler les glaces et installa la*~~

~~*manufacture en 1695 dans le chateau de Saint Gobain."*~~

~~*Manufacture.—The term "silvering," as applied to the forma- tion of a metallic coating on glass for giving it the properties of a mirror, was till quite recently a misnomer, seeing that till about 1840 no silver was used in the process. Now, however, a large proportion of mirrors are made by depositing on the glassa coating of pure silver, and the old amalgamation process is comparatively little used.*~~

~~*The process of amalgamation consists in applying a thin amalgam | of tin and mercury to the surface of glass, which is done on a perfectly flat and horizontal slab of stone bedded in a heavy, iron- bound wooden frame, with a gutter running round the outer edge. On the surface of this table, which must be perfectly smooth and level, is spread a sheet of thin tin-foil, somewhat larger than the glass to be operated on, and after all folds and creases have been coni- pletely removed, by means of stroking and beating with a covered wooden rubber, the process of " quickening" the foil is commenced. A small quantity of mercury is rubbed lightly and quickly over the whole surface, and the scum of dust, impure tin, and mercury is taken off. Mercury is then poured upon the quickened foil, until there is a body of it sufficient to float the glass to be silvered (about } inch deep), and, the edge at one of the sides having been cleared of the scum peculiar to mercury, the glass (scrupulously cleaned simultaneously with the above operations) is slid from that side over the surface of the mercury. Weights are placed over the surface until the greater part of the amalgamated mercury is pressed out, the table is then tilted diagonally, by means of dumb-screws, and all superfluous mercury finds its way to the gutter. The glass is left twenty-four hours under weights; it is then turned over silvered side up, and removed to a drainer with inclining shelves, where by slow degrees, as it dries and hardens, it is brought toa vertical position, which in the case of large sheets may not be arrived at in less than a month. This process yields excellent results, producing a brilliant silver-white metallic lustre which is only subject to alteration by exposure to high temperatures, or by contact with damp surfaces; but the mercurial vapours to which the workmen are exposed give rise to the most distressing and fatal affections. 7*~~

~~*In 1835 Baron Liebig observed that, on heating aldehyde with an ammoniacal solution of nitrate of silver, in a'glass vessel, a brilliant deposit of metallic silver was formed on the surface of the glass. To this observation is due the modern process of silvering glass. In practice the process was introduced about 1840; and it is now carried on, with several modifications, in two distinct ways, called the hot and the cold process respectively. In the former method there is employed a horizontal double-bottomed_ metallic table, which is heated with steam to from 35° to 40°C. The glass to be silvered is cleaned thoroughly with wet whiting, then washed with distilled water, and prepared for the silver with a sensitizing*~~

~~solution of tin, which is well rinsed off immediately before its removal to the silvering table. The table being raised to the proper temperature, the glass is laid, and the silvering solution at~~

~~MIRROR~~

~~once poured over it, before the heat of the table has time to dry any part of the surface of the glass. The solution used is prepared as follows:—in half a litre of distilled water 100 grammes of nitrate of silver are dissolved; to this there is added of liquid ammonia (sp. gr. 0°880) 62 grammes; the mixture is filtered, and made up to 8 litres with distilled water, and 7°5 grammes of tartaric acid dissolved in 30 grammes of water are nixed with the solution. About 2°5 litres are poured over the glass for each superficial metre to be silvered. The metal immediately begins to deposit on the glass, which is maintained at about 40°C. (104° F.), and in little more than half an hour a continuous coating of silver is formed. The silvered surface is then cleaned by very cautiously wiping with a very soft chamois rubber, and treated a second time with a solution like the first, but containing a double quantity of tartaric aeid. This solution is applied in two portions, and thereafter the glass is once more carefully cleared of all unattached silver and refuse and removed to a side room for backing up. i~~

~~In silvering by the cold process advantage is taken of the power of inverted sugar to reduce the nitrate of silver. This process has been adopted for the silvering of mirrors for astronomical telescopes, notably for Leverrier's great telescope in the Paris Observatory. For ordinary mirror silvering the following is the process recommended by H. E. Benrath. Two solutions are prepared, the first of which contains the silver salt, and the second the sugar preparation. For the silver solution 800 grammes of nitrate of silver and 1200 grammes of nitrate of ammonium are dissolved in 10 litres of water, and 1°3 kilos of pure caustic soda in 10 litres of water, and of each of these solutions 1 litre is added to 8 litres of water, which is allowed to rest till the sediment forms and then decanted. The second solu- tion—inverted sugar—is prepared by dissolving 150 grammes of loaf sugar with 15 grammes of vinegar in 0°5 litre of water, and boiling the solution for halfan hour. After cooling it is made up with water to 4200 cubic centimetres. The silvering is done on horizontal tables in a well-lighted and moderately~~

~~heated apartment, and the glass is cleaned with scrupulous care. For each square centimetre of glass operated on 15 cubic centimetres of the silver solution above described are measured ont, and from 7 to 10 per cent. of the solution of inverted sugar is added, both being quickly stirred to- gether and poured rapidly and evenly over the glass. The reduction immediately begins, and the solution exhibits tints passing througli rose, violet, and black, till in about seven minutes it again becomes transparent and the deposit of metalis complete. This first deposit is extremely thin, and allows the transmission of bluish rays. The exhausted solution with floating and unattached dust-like granules of silver is carcfully wiped off, the silvered surface washed with distilled water and again treated with the mixed solutions to the extent of half the quantity used in the first application. The finished surface is wiped and washed in the most thorough manuer,—for the least trace of caustic soda left would destroy the mirror. The further processes are the same in both methods of silvering.~~

~~The deposit of silver on glass is not so adherent and unalter- able under the influence of sunlight and sulphurous fumes as the tin-mereury amalgam, and moreover real silvered glass has a slightly yellowish tinge. These defects have been overcome by a process introduced by M. Lenoir, which consists of brushing over the silvered surface with a dilute solution of cyanide of mercury, which instantaneously forming a kind of amalgam renders the deposit at once much whiter and more firmly adherent than before. To protect the thin metallic film from mechanical injury and the chemical action of gases and vapours, it is coated with shellac or copal varnish, over which when dry are applied two coatings of red-lead paint.~~

~~Platinum Mirrors.—A cheap process of preparing mirror glass is to some extent prosecuted in France, whereby a thin but very adherent deposit of platinum is formed on the glass. A solution of chloride of platinum with a proportion of litharge and borate of lead dissolved in essential oil of spike is applied with a brush to well-cleaned glass, which is then placed on edge in a mufile furnace, and the platinum is thus burned in, forming an exceedingly thin~~

~~but brilliant metallic backing having a somewhat grey lustre. It.~~

~~is used only for the lids of cheap boxes, toys, ornamental letters, &c.~~

Magic Mirrors.—Hand mirrors of metal are still in common use in Oriental countries, and especially in Japan and China they con- tinue to be the prevalent form of looking-glass. In the former country indeed bronze mirrors are articles of the greatest importance in the generally meagre furnishing of houses, and besides possess a religious significance. They have been known and used from the most remote period, mention of them being found in Chinese literature of the 9th century. The (reputed) first made Japanese mirror, preserved at Is¢, is an object of the highest veneration in Japan, and an ancient mirror, connected with which is a tradition to the effect that is was given by the sun-goddess at the foundation of the empire, is a principal article of the Japanese regalia. The mirrors of Japan vary in form and size, but in general they con- sist of thin disks, from 3 to 12 inches in diameter, of speculum metal with handles cast in one piece. The polished face of the mirror is slightly convex in form, so that a reflected image is seen

proportionately reduced in size; the back of the disk is occupied with characteristic Japanese ornamentation and inscriptions in bold relief, and its rim is also raised to the back. Much attention has been attracted to these mirrors by a singular physical peculi- arity which in a few cases they are found to possess, These are known as magic mirrors from the fact that when a strong beam of light is reflected from their smooth and polished surface, and thrown on a white screen, an image of the raised ornaments and characters on the back of the mirror is formed with more or less distinctness in the disk of light on thescreen. This peculiarity has at no time been specially observed by the Japanese, but in China it attracted attention as early as the 11th century, and mirrors possessed of this property sell among the Chinese at ten or even twenty times the price sought for the ordinary non-sensitive examples. The true explanation of the magic mirror was first

"suggested by the French physicist Person, who observed that

the reflecting surface of the mirrors was not uniformly convex, the portions opposite relief surfaces being plane. There- fore, as he says, "the rays reflected from the convex portion diverge and give but a feebly illuminated

~~*image, while, on the contrary, the rays reflected from the plane portions of the mirror preserve their parallelism, and appear on the screen as an image by reason of their contrast with the feebler illumination of the rest of the disk." That such differences of plane in the mirror surface arise is an accidental circumstance due to the manner in which it is prepared, a process explained by Professors Ayrton and Perry, by whom ample details of the history, process of manu- facture, and composition of Oriental mirrors have been published. A preliminary operation in polishing the surface consists of scoring the cast disk in every direction with a sharp tool. The thicker portions with relief ornament offer more resistanee to the pressure of the tool than the thin flat portions, which tend to yield and form at first a concave surface, but this by the reaction of its elastieity rises afterwards and forms a slightly convex surface while the more rigid thick portions are comparatively little affected. This irregu- larity of surface is inconspicuous in ordinary light, and does not visibly distort images ; but when the mirror reflects a bright light on a screen the unequal radiation renders the minute differences of surface obvious. The ingenious theory of Person has been estab- lished by experiments cominunicated by M. Govi to the academy of Turin in 1864-65, and more recently by investigations of MM. Bertin and Dubosq. See Annales de Chimie et de Physique (5th ser., vol, xx.). . (J. PA.)*~~

~~*Ancient Mirrors.*~~

~~*The mirror of classical antiquity (kdromzpoy, speculum) was a thin disk of bronze slightly convex on one side and polished, usually provided with a handle, sometimes mounted on a stand in the form of a female figure (see CosruME, vol. vi. p. 453, fig. 1), sometimes fixed inside a circular bronze case. The common size is that of an ordinary hand mirror. Examples large enough to take in the whole figure appear to have been rare. Mirrors of glass are mentioned, and though none of them have been found their existence need not be questioned altogether, since the process of silvering occasionally employed on bronze mirrors suggests that an analogous process may have been applied to glass. But the very large number of mirrors still existing from antiquity shows that bronze was the regular material employed. The alloy known as speculum, producing a very hard*~~

~~metal with great reflecting power, is comparatively seldom met with. Silver mirrors are men- tioned, but none have as yet been found.~~

~~The principal feature of ancient mirrors, especially those of Etruria, is the design incised on the back (see Erruria, vol. viii. p. 648). While twelve incised specimens are all that are as yet known from Greece, the number found in Etruria must be nearly a thousand. As a rule the subjects incised are taken from Greek mythology and legend, the names of the persons represented being frequently added in Ktruscan letters and orthography. In most cases the style of drawing, the types of the figures, and the manner of composing the groups are true to the characteristics of Greek art. Some may have been im- ported from Greece ; but the greater number appear to have been more or less faithfully imitated from such designs as oecurred on the almost innumerable printed Greek vases which the Etruscans obtained from Greece. Even where distinctly Etruscan figures are introduced, such as the heroes Allius and Celius Vibenna on a mirror in the British Museum, Greek models are followed. The characteristics of Greek art here referred to date from a little before 400 B.c., and last for some time after. In this period would fall the majority of the Etruscan mirrors, and to this period also belong the Greek ineised mirrors, among which may be mentioned for their beauty one representing Leucas and Corinthus, inscribed with their names (engraved, Monuments Grecs, 1873, pl. 8, published by the Association pour l'encouragement des Etudes Grecques), and another in the British Musenm (Gazette Arch., ii. pl. 27), ou the back of which is a figure of Eros which has been silvered over. With this last-mentioned mirror was found the bronze case used to contain it,~~

~~502~~

~~on the back of which is a group of Aphrodite and Eros in repoussée. |~~

~~It was found in Crete. But most-of the Greek mirrors and mirror- cases having artistic designs are from Corinth. One bears the name of the artist, AwoAAas emote: (engraved, Arch. Zeitung, 1862, pl. 166, fig. 1). :~~

~~Archaic art (about 500 B.C.) is represented by a mirror in the British Museum from Sunium in Attica. The mirror itself is quite plain, but the stand is composed of a draped female figure, above whose head float two~~

~~*cupids. From Etruria there is a comparatively small number with archaic incised designs. It may be concluded that the luxury of mirrors enriched with incised designs was not freely in- dulged before 400 B.o. in Etruria and never to any extent in Greece. A special centre of incised mirrors was the Latian town of Preneste (Palestrina), and it is of interest in regard to some of the mirrors found there that they have inscriptions in early Latin. Artistically they have a purely Greek character. Plain mirrors are found wherever Greek and Roman civilization spread, and it may be seen from a specimen found in Cornwall, now in the British Museum, that the Celtic population of England had adopted the form and substance of the mirror from their conquerors. This specimen is enriched with a Celtic pattern incised. The shape of the handle testifies to native originality. Mirrors were used in Greece, perhaps rarely, for divination, as appears, for example, from Pausanias (vil. 21, 5), the method being to let the inirror down into a well by means of a string till it reached close to the surface of the water. When it was pulled up after a little it was expected to show the face of the sick person on whose behalf the ceremony was performed. This was at Patras.*~~

~~*The principal publications on ancient mirrors are Gerhard, Etruskische Spiegel, Berlin, 1843-67, 4 vols., containing 430 plates; for the Greek mirrors, Mylonas, 'EAAnvixd kaéromrpa, Athens, 1876, and Dumont, Bullet. de Corresp. Hellén.. 1877,*~~

~~*. 108; see also Friederichs, K/einere Kunst und Industrie im Alterthum, Diissel- dorf, 1871, p. 18 sg; and Marquardt and Mommsen, Handbuch der rémischen Alterthiimer, vii. pt. 2, p. 670. (A. S. M.)*~~

~~*MIRZAPUR, a district in the North-Western Provinces of India, lying between 23° 51' 30" and 25° 31' N. lat.,*~~

~~*on the N. by Jaunpur and Benares, on the E. by Shahdbad and Lohardaga, on the S. by Sarguja state, and on the W. by Allahébad and Rewah state, and has an area of 5217 square miles. It is crossed from east to west by the Vindhya and Kaimur ranges. A central jungly plateau connects these, and separates the valley of the Ganges from that of the Son.*~~

~~*The population in 1872 was 1,015,203 (males, 520,496; females, 494,707), of whom 949,644 were Hindus, 64,809 Mohammedans, and 750 Christians. The non-Asiatic population numbered 623. Only three towns had a population exceeding 5000 :—Mirzapur, 67,274; Chanar, 10,154; and Ahraura, 9091. Out of a Govern- ment-assessed area of 3048 square miles, 1313 are cultivated, 497 cultivable waste, and 1238 uncultivable. The part of Mirzapur which lies north of the Vindhydas is very highly cultivated and thickly peopled, but the rest of the district consists largely of ravines and forests, with a very sparse population. Local manu- factures comprise carpets of a superior description, brass ware, and shellac. The East Indian Railway traverses the district, along the right bank of the Ganges, for a distance of 32 miles. The climate is slightly warmer and damper than that of districts farther north and east. The mean annual rainfall is 42°7 inches.*~~

~~*MirzAror, chief town and administrative headquarters*~~

~~*of the Ganges, 56 miles below Allahabad (25° 9’ 43” N. lat., 82° 38’ 10” E. long.). The population in 1872 was 67,274, of whom 55,917 were HIndus and 11,053 Mo- hammedans. Up to quite recent years Mirzapur was the largest mart in upper India for grain and cotton; but of late its commercial importance has rapidly decreased, owing to the establishment of through railway communica- tion with Bombay wa Jabalpur, and the rise of Cawnpore to the position of a mercantile centre. The river front, lined with stone ghdis or flights of stairs, and exhibiting numerous mosques, HIndu temples, and dwelling-houses of the wealthier merchants, with highly decorated facades and richly carved balconies and door-frames, is handsome ; but the interior of the town is mainly composed of mud huts. The manufacture of shellac gives employment to about four thousand persons ; brass ware and carpets are also made, The imports consist of grain, sugar, cloth, metals, fruit, spices, tobacco, lac, salt, and cotton ; the same articles, with manufactured lac-dye, shellac, and ghi, are exported.*~~

~~*th t” (Stephen’s Digest, art. 22). and between 82° 9’ 15” and 83° 0’ 36” E. long., is bounded | e court” (Stephen’s Digest, art. 22)*~~

~~*MIR—MIS*~~

~~*MISDEMEANOUR. "The word mnisdemeanour," says Russell (On Crimes, vol. i. chap. iv.), "is applied to all those crimes and offences for which the law has not provided a particular name." Stephen, in his Digest of the Criminal Law, adopts the following mode of distinguishing between misdemeanour and other crimes. '"' Every crime is either treason, felony, or misdemeanour. Every crime which amounts to treason or felony is so denominated in the defini- tions of crimes hereinafter contained. All crimes not so denominated are misdemeanours." It is customary to speak of misdemeanour as implying a less degree of crime than felony (see Fetony). " Misdemeanours," observes Russell in the passage already cited, 'have been sometimes termed misprisions ; indeed the word misprision, in its larger sense, is used to signify every considerable misdemeanour which has not a certain name given to it in the law, and it is said that a misprision is contained in every felony whatsoever, so that the offender may be prosecuted for misprision at the option of the crown." Misprision, -in a more restricted sense (or negative misprision), is the concealment of an offence. Positive misprisions are contempts or misdemeanours of a public character, ¢.7., mal-administration of high officials, contempt of the sovereign or magistrates, &c. The rule as to punishment, when no express provision has been made by law, is that "every person convicted of a misdemeanour is liable to fine and imprisonment without hard labour (both or either), and to be put under recognizances to keep the peace and be of good behaviour at the discretion of By 28 & 29 Vict. c. 67 prisoners convicted of misdemeanour and sentenced to hard labour shall be divided into two divisions, one of which shall be called tlie first division, and when a person convicted of misdemeanour is sentenced to imprisonment without hard labour the court may order him to be treated as a first-class misdemeanant, who shall not be deemed a "criminal prisoner" within the meaning of that Act. The Prison Act, 1877 (S$ 40, 41), requires prisoners con- victed of sedition or seditious libel, or attached for contempt of court, to be treated as misdemeanants of the first class.*~~

~~*In New York and some other States of the American Union the legislature has defined felony as any crime which is or may be punishable with death or imprisonment in a State prison, all other crimes being misdemeanours.*~~

~~MISHNAH. The Mishnah, in the most familiar appli- cation of the name, is the great collection of legal decisions by the ancient rabbis which forms in each Talmud the text on which the Gemara rests, and so is the fundamental document of the oral law of the Jews. The question What is Mishnah? was asked, however, as early as the~~

~~| latter part of the Ist cr the early part of the 2d century, of the above district, is situated on the south bank |~~

~~though in a somewhat different sense and for a somewhat different purpose.! It will be answered in the course of this article in all its bearings.~~

~~1. Name.—Rabbinic tradition has fixed the pointing Mishnah (}¢‘2) by giving its status constructus as Mishnath. Although the word Mishnah is not found in the Bible, it is no doubt a classical Hebrew term, signi- fying something closely akin to Mfshneh (which term occurs more than once there), as may be seen on comparing Mikvah with Mikveh, Miknah with Mikneh, Ma‘alah with Ma‘aleh, and Mar’ah with MMar’eh, each two of which are, however they may vary in practical application, un- questionably synonymous terms. The practical signifi- cations of Mishnah are seven in number :—(1) repeti- tion, i.e, tradition :2 as such it is the equivalent of the i ee ee Re~~

~~1 See T. B., Kiddushin, 49a.~~

~~2The root Shanoh (73), from which Mishnah is immediately de- rived, is not merely, as is often thought, to learn, to teach, but to~~

~~repeat ; and it is in reality this last meaning which underlies the two former.~~

~~Sevrepdoeis of Epiphanius,! the traditiones et devrepdcas | given by God to Moses, and in uninterrupted succession~~

~~of Jerome,? the devrépwors of Justinian,? and the may~~

~~sand ("the second to the law") of the Arukh*; (2) re-_ citation from memory, in contradistinction to reading from | a book ;° (3) study: as such it is the equivalent of |~~

~~Midrash in the former part of its third signification ; (4) instruction ; as such it is the equivalent of Midrash in the latter part of its third signification ;° (5) system, style, view, line of study and instruction: as such it is~~

~~identical with the Talmudical Shitiah ;* (6) a paragraph | of the Mishnah: it is invariably employed in this sense in | the Babylonian Talmud, and is identical with the word |~~

~~alakhah, used for the same purpose, in the Palestinian Talmud ; and (7) the collection of the decisions of the whole "oral law," @.e., the J¢shnah in the concrete sense.~~

~~The word Mishnah has three different plurals :—(1) the | traditional Mishnayoth for signification (7), formed on the analogy of JMikvaoth (not, as some think, on that of |~~

~~Mikraoth or Midrashoth) ; (2) the correct, though ques- tioned, Mishniyyoth for signification (6), formed on the analogy of Parshiyyoth from Parashah (or Parshah), not to speak of that of Ja'asiyyoth from Ma'aseh ; (3), the~~

~~somewhat inelegant, but correct, Mishnoth,® which also |~~

~~serves for signification (6). Significations (1), (2), (3),~~

~~(4), and (5) have, however inconsistent it may appear | when one takes into consideration their respective equi-~~

~~valents, no plural whatever. Mishnah. later.~~

~~2. Contents and Nature.—The Mishnah consists chiefly~~

~~So much for the Hebrew | The Aramaic JJathnitho will be spoken of |~~

~~of IIIalakhah;9 there is, comparatively speaking, little |~~

~~Agadah® to be found in it. It is not, however, as many think, either a commentary on the Halakhic portions of the Pentateuch, or on the ordinances of the Sopherim, or on both together. It rather presupposes the knowledge of, and respect for, both the Mosaic and the Sopheric laws, and it only discusses, and finally decides on, the best mode and manner of executing these. The discussions and eventual decisions to be found in the Jishnah owe their existence principally to deep meditation on these two kinds of laws, notably on the former, by the rabbis of various ages, but chiefly by those who lived fifty years before and one hundred and fifty years after the rise of Christianity, the names of whom it faithfully gives, along with their respective discussions and decisions. 'There are but few cases to be found in the Mishnah which would critically come under the denomination of an //alakhah le- Mosheh mis-Sinai, i.e.,an explanation (of a law) as directly~~

~~1 Heores., xv. (xaT& ypaypatéwv), in fine. Epiphanius was a native of Palestine, even if he was not, as some think, of Jewish parentage. Asa Palestinian writer on Jewish and semi-Jewish matters he must have had a more than superficial knowledge of the Jewish traditions (the Mishnah, &c.). And indeed, to judge from the account he gives of the various Jewish traditions (althongh the text of this account is extremely corrupt in every way), he was pretty well informed, For he tells us that the Jews have four kinds of traditions :—such as are ascribed to Moses (by which he no doubt means the Zalakhah le- Mosheh mis-Sinai) ; such as are ascribed to the sons of Asmoneus (by which he means the Tekanoth, &c., of the Beth Dino shel Hash- monat; see T. B., 'Abodah Zarah, 36b); such as are ascribed to R. 'Akibah (the great teacher and martyr) ; and such as are ascribed to R. Andan, &c, (Rabbi Yehudah Hannasi).~~

~~2 In Isaiam, cap. viii. 11-15.~~

~~8 Nov. exlvi. (Tlep) 'EBpatwv) cep. d, in medio.~~

~~4 Article 13W'D (first definition).~~

~~5 Contrast Shanoh (3¥) with Karo (SY).~~

~~6 See article MIDRASH, p. 285.~~

~~7 See Schiller-Szinessy, Catalogue of Hebrew MSS. in the Cambridge University Library, ii. p. 94.~~

~~8 See MS. Add. 464 (University Library, Cambridge), leaf 2835.~~

~~9 This word, derived from the root Halokh (FO), to go, is synony-~~

~~mous with Minhag (custom, practice) and Mishpat (rule), &c. 10 For the meaning of this term and the Agadic parts which are to be found in the Mishnah, see MIDRASH.~~

~~received from him by the rabbis. Several cases given under this name in the JMZishnah are not bona fide cases ; for the test of such an Halakhah is that it must never have been contested by any one.?2~~

~~3. Method.—A Mishnah, if genuine, never begins with a passage of the Pentateuch, and even comparatively seldom brings direct proof from or gives reference to it. When there is any exception to this rule it will be found, on close examination, either that such a paragraph belongs to a very early age (that of the Sopherim), or that it is to be found in another work of the "oral law," and is simply copied in the Mishnah, or, what is more likely, that, if independent, it belongs to a very late age, or, finally, that~~

~~_ the proof or the reference thus given is only a later addi-~~

~~tion. One example of the true method of the Wishnah will, perhaps, better illustrate the foregoing statement than a sheet full of theorizing on the subject; and this one example will the more surely suffice because of its mixed (Mosaic and Sopheric) character. It is the very first paragraph of the whole Mishnah, and runs thus: 'From what time (of the day) does (may, should) one read the Shema' ('the taking upon oneself the yoke of the heavenly kingdom') in the evening?" The JZishnah does not begin: One is in duty bound to read the Shema in the evening, because it is written (Deut. vi. 7), "'And when thou liest down." For, in the first place, the law to read the Shema evening and morning is not unquestionably Mosaic, as the words, "And thou shalt talk of them, &c.," do not refer to this passage of~~

~~*the law particularly, but rather to the words of the Pentateuch in general ;!° and, secondly, it is needless to say that one is in duty bound to recite the Shema twice a day, since every Jew readily acknowledges this duty and executes it, although it isnot Mosaic. This duty of reading the Shema, the grounds on which this duty rests, and how it is best fulfilled, are fully and ably discussed, developed, and finally settled in that part of the Talmud called Gemara,—the business of which it is to discuss the words of the Jlishnah and to show the sources of the tradition, and eventually the passage in the Pentateuch (if on such the case rest) from which the respective disputants had derived their views, &c.*~~

~~*4. Purpose.—Although it is a book containing Halakhic decisions, the Mishnah was never intended, as many think, to enable the reader thereof to decide from it immediately. This mistake is old}5 and widely spread,—but a mistake nevertheless. The purpose of the Meshnah was and is simply to exhibit the development of the "oral law" and the view taken of this development by the rabbis of various times. For this reason one finds side by side with the opinions of the majority those also of the minority, which latter are very carefully given. But why, since these opinions of the minority can have no decisional effect? The Mishnah itself ("Hduyyoth,' i. 5)*~~

~~*ŕ*~~

~~*11 See R. Asher b. Yehiel (Harosh), Hilekhoth Mikvaoth (coming close after this Rabbi's commentary on Viddah, in the printed editions of the Bab. Talmud), i. 1.*~~

~~*12 There are, however, at least sixteen such dona side cases to be found in the works of the "oral law."*~~

~~*13 See T. B., Berakhoth, on Deut. xi. 19.*~~

~~*14 Gemara, or Gemoro, signifies concretely discussion on and final settlement of the contents of the Mishnah, from gemar (124); to study deeply, to come to a final result ; which last signification is, to some extent, to be found also in the Hebrew root gamor (1193). Compare*~~

~~*T. B., Bobo Metsi'o, 33a, and Rashi, tn loco.*~~

~~15 See T. B., Sotah, 22a. —~~

~~16 'The word MY} is variously pointed :— Aduyoth, Ediyoth, and, as in the text, 'Edwyyoth, which last, if the name come from M3TY, because of the testimony of the witnesses on which this Massekheth chiefly rests, would be the only correct one. But it ought to be remarked that the Babylonian teachers must have spelled it Idiyyoth (best things), since its equivalent is given by them as Behirto (or Behirotho). See T. B., Berakhoth, 27a aud elsewhere.~~

~~answers this question: it is that the teacher or the judge | Mzshnah is untrue, because the thing is impossible. For~~

~~of later ages may be thus enabled, if he have good grounds for taking a view different from that of the majority as given hundreds of years before, to reverse the old decision, by forming, on the strength of the example before him, with others who agree with him (or without them, if only one vote was wanted to reverse the majority) a fresh majority. Thus the Jewish "oral law" can never become ossified like the laws of the Medes and Persians.~~

~~5. Language.—The Mishnah is, on the whole, written in almost pure Hebrew; and even the originally non- Hebrew words (Aramaic, Greek, Latin, &c.) are so skil- fully Hebraized that they are a most creditable testimony to the linguistic powers both of many of the disputants mentioned in it, whose very words are in most cases given, and of the editor! or editors who revised them.~~

~~6. Age and Authorship.—R. Yehudah Hannasi (the Prince), the reputed author (in reality only the principal and best among the editors) of the Mishnah, was born before the year 140 of the Christian era. in full Yehudah b. Shime'on b. Gamliel b. Shime'on b. Gamliel? b. Shime'on b. Hillel. On account of his holy living he was surnamed Rabbenu Hakkadosh, and on account of his great learning and authority he was called simply "Rabbi" (" 'My Teacher" par excellence). Rabbi and his time, however, are no~~

~~terminus a quo for the composi- tion of the Mishnah. For, not to speak of many isolated Mishniyyoth which can be brought home to R. Meir, to R. 'Akibah, to Hillel,? to Yose b. Yo'ezer,* and to others, even to the earlier Sopherim,® we find that R. Yose b. Halaphta of the Ist century already quotes the beginning and end- ing of a whole Mishnic treatise (elim ®), and that in the same century (or very early in the 2d) another treatise consisting of early testimonies ("Hduyyoth") was put into order. Moreover, although the phrases Mishnath R. Eliezer b. Ya'akob' and Mishnath R. "Akibah® do simply signify the systems, styles, and views of these two eminent teachers, there can be little doubt that they and others besides them, presided over colleges in which the whole Halakhic matter was systematically treated and regularly gone through. Nor are Rabbi and his time for the composition of the Mishnah a terminus ad quem, for the Mishnah was not brought to a close till a very long time afterwards. Not only did R. Hiyya Rabbah, R. Hosha'yah Rabbah, and Shime'on bar Kappara redact Mishnayoth,'° but in the Mishnah before us notices are actually found which reach to the end of the 3d century, if not even later. The statement that Rabbi was the first to write down the~~

~~1 The Hebrew spoken in the house of the principal editor of the Mishnah was so correct that rabbis actually learnt the meaning of uncommon words of the Bible from the handmaidens of this house. See T. B., Rosh Hasshanah, 266. As for Rabbi himself, he was not merely a fine Hebrew scholar, but a fine Greek scholar also. He was also a purist ; for in T. B., Sotah, 49}, he is reported to have exclaimed, "Why should any one speak in Palestine 'Sursi'? Let him speak either Hebrew or Greek!" In using the word " Sursi"' for '* Surith" (Syriac), he no doubt makes a punning allusion to the mixed (cut-up)~~

~~character of the language, corrupted from Hebrew, Chaldee, Persian, Greek, and Latin.~~

~~2 This was the teacher of St Paul.~~

~~3 In addition to such well-known Agadic Mishniyyoth as those which are distinctly ascribed in Aboth to Hillel, see Mishnah Kiddushin, iv. 1; and contrast it with the language and style of the Afishnah in general, and that of Massekhto Kiddushin in particular.~~

~~*4 Mishnah ‘Eduyyoth, viii. 4.*~~

~~*5 See Mishnah Ma’aser Sheni, v. 7; Sotah, v.1, 2; Nega‘im, xii. 5, 6, 7, &c.; though it cannot be said that these passages preserve the teaching of the Sopherim in their original purity.*~~

~~*6 See Mishnah Kelim, in fine.*~~

~~*7 See T. B., Berakhoth, 28a: ‘It is handed down orally (3M) that Eduyyoth was on that day (when R. EYazar b. ‘Azaryah was installed as president) gone through,” 7.¢., redacted.*~~

~~*87. B., Yebamoth, 490.*~~

~~*9 Mishnah Synhedrin, iii. 4.*~~

~~*10 See Koheleth Rabbah on ii, 8 in medio.*~~

~~*the two Talmuds, of which that of Babylonia was not finished before the 6th century (if then), know, certainly, nothing of the writing down of the Mishnah. On the contrary, their language throughout presupposes the Mish- nah in their time to have been what its name indicates, a repetition, ¢.¢., a thing acquired by continual recitation, because, like the other works of the “oral law” (Torah shebbéal peh), it was to be, and was, handed down orally.U As for the difficulty of keepmg in memory such a stu- pendous and vast work as the J/ishnah, it is sometimes forgotten in this controversy that memory was aided by a great variety of mnemotechnic means, such as numbers and names of teachers, and by the existence of other works of the “oral law,” which, although they also were not written down, could be easily kept in memory because they rested on letters, words, and verses of the written Pentateuch. Anyhow, there is ample evidence, both nega-*~~

~~*| tive and positive, that the J/tshnah as we now have it HIs name was |*~~

~~*was not committed to writing in the times of Rabbi or for long afterwards. But it certainly does not follow that no merit is due to Rabbi in connexion with the Mishnah. Wis merit in connexion with it is great in every way. For (1) Rabbi was himself a link in the chain of tradition, since he had*~~

~~*"received" from his own father and so on up to his ancestor HIllel and even higher; (2) he gave in the Mishnah his own decisions, in most cases in accordance with those of the famous R. Meir, which are thus in a great part secured to us; (3) in giving his own decisions he preserved to us also a good many decisions of the teachers of the 2d century ; (4) in collecting all these decisions he anxiously ascertained the genuine formulas of the older Mishniyyoth ; (5) he did not merely reproduce the formulas which he esteemed the best, but discussed them anew in his own college, which was composed of men of the highest eminence, as is well known; (6) although he gave on the whole the very language of the teachers who preceded him, he gauged it, guarding it against the barbarisms which are so plentiful in the other works of the "oral law" ; and (7) he scattered the Mishnah broadcast (thougli only by word of mouth) over all Palestine and Babylonia by means of the disciples who flocked to him from all parts of those countries. If the I/ishnah, as it now exists, is not entirely his, it certainly belongs to him in a great measure and in more than one sense.*~~

~~*7. Value and Appreciation—Whatever can be said in favour of the Agadah applies with equal if not greater force to the Mishnah, as the latter is a canonical and therefore more reliable work of the "oral law." The Mishnah is one of the richest mines of archeeology which the world possesses. But it waits yet for the master touch to break the spell which holds it bound. Great, however, as the value of the Mishnah is, its popu- larity has never been steady, but has been continually fluctuating, and that for various reasons. Even Rabbi in his time had to appeal for due attention to it. Whilst it was neglected in troublous times by the masses, who ran after the Agadah,!8 which, besides being consoling, — needed no particular study, it was, in prosperous times, neglected by the rabbis themselves through the study of the Bible and the Talmud.!4 And much more was this*~~

~~*1 See particularly T. B., Bobo Metsi'o, 33a and 6; and compare also Rashi, in loco.*~~

~~*22 See T. Y., Ma''aser Shent, v. 1; and compare the preceding note.*~~

~~*13 See MipRasH, p. 285, note 14.*~~

~~*14 R. Yohanan said, This Mishnah (Boraitho), that no study can ex- cel that of Gemara, was taught in the time of (and by) Rabbi himself. Then the people went after Gemara and neglected the study of the A/ish- nah, Whereupon he again bade them ever run more after Mishnah than after Gemara. TT. B., Bobo Metsi'o, 336, and Rashi, in loco.*~~

~~*MISHNAH*~~

~~*the case when the Talmud had developed from a mere studious activity to two concrete works of large size.*~~

~~*8. The Ultimate Writing Down of the Mishnah.—The troubles of the unhappy Jews had multiplied everywhere. The masses, as already stated, preferred, in consequence of these troubles, the Agadah. But the number of the learned also diminished through these troubles day by day ; and the comparatively few that remained preferred more and more the Talmud (in Palestine the Palestinian and in Babylonia the Babylonian), which was a better field for the exercise of their ingenuity. The fate of the Mishnah would have been sealed had it not been ultimately written down. But the writing down of Halakhah en masse had been prohibited in early times. Two considera- tions, however, ultimately removed all scruples. (1) It was a time to do something for God, even if by such doings His law was apparently destroyed.!_ Let one (and a minor) law be disregarded, so that many (and higher) laws be preserved. The Halakhoth of the Mishnah were numerous and the students few; the power of tyranny increased and that of the memory decreased by reason of the persecution.*~~

~~*2) The language of the Mishnah, although pure, and in- deed purer than the language of several books of the Bible, was so concise and terse that it could not be understood without a commentary; and, therefore, even after being written down, it would virtually retain its oral character.*~~

~~*9. Recensions—The Mishnah has three principal recen- sions :—(1) the Mishnah as presented in the work standing by itself; (2) that on which the Palestinian Talmud rests ; and (3) that of the Babylonian Talmud. The first-named and the last-named Mishnayoth have always been known as complete; the second, however, was supposed for several hundred years to*~~

~~be imperfect, lacking four Perakim in Shabbath, two entire Massekhtoth in the Seder Nezikin, the whole of the Seder Kodoshim, and by far the~~

~~greater part of the Seder Tohoroth.? But since 1869 this |~~

~~recension also has been known to have been always comi- plete ; and it is to be found in its entirety in a MS. pur- chased in that year for the University Library of Cam- bridge (Add. 470. 1). Besides these three there are many minor recensions, touching, however, only isolated read- ings. These last are to be attributed chiefly to copyists. The origin of the difference between the principal recen- sions is to be sought in the following two facts :—(1) Rabbi had himself gone twice through the Mzshnah and had himself considerably altered the wording of the text;® and (2) his successors in early and late times had wilfully altered and corrected the original text.~~

~~10. Divisions and Detailed Contents of the Mishnah.—The Mish- nah in all recensions is divided into six Sedarim (orders), each of which contains a number of Massekhtoth * (treatises), which stand in connexion with one another. These are subdivided into Perakim (chapters), and these again into Halakhoth or Mishniyyoth (para- graphs called Mishnoth).° The number of the Sedarim is six, that of the Massekhtoth sixty,® and that of the Perakim 528, or,~~

~~1 This is a somewhat inexact application of Ps. cxix. 126, but it has been more than once acted upon both in ancient and modern times by the Jews. Compare the explanation given in T. B., Berakhoth, 63a, and Menahoth, 99a.~~

~~2 Niddah is the only Massekheth of this Seder of which three entire Perakim are to be found in the printed editions. Compare Schiller- Szinessy, Occasional Notices, &c., i. (Cambridge, 1878, 8vo) p. 8.~~

~~3 See T. B., Bobo Metsi‘o, 44a, and elsewhere. :~~

~~4 Whether the word Massekheth comes from Masokh (WDD, to pour into, to mix, &c.), or from Nasokh (D2, to pour, to mix, to weave, &c.), it signifies in either case here a mould, a form, a frame. Dfas- sekheth has three~~

~~*several plurals :—(1) the common Massekhtoth (not Massikhtoth) ; (2) the less common Massekhoth (see MS. Add. 470. 1, belonging to the University Library of Cambridge, leaf 69a and else- where) ; and (3) Massekhtiyyoth (MNYNSDD), see Midrash Rabbah on Canticles vi. 8, 9. The Aramaic Massekhto (not Massikhto) has in the plural Massekhotho, the use of which is, however, very uncommon. ~*~~

~~*5 Compare above, p. 503. 6 Compare Midrash Rabbah on Canticles vi. 8, 9.*~~

~~*| Gate, in ten chapters ;*~~

~~*505*~~

~~*| with a fourth Perek to Bikkurim, 524.7 The following is a scheme of the whole Mishnah.®*~~

~~*I, Zera'tm (on Agriculture, preceded by the Treatise on Thanks- givings®). (1) Berakhoth (blessings), in nine chapters; (2) Peah (Lev. xix. 9, &c.), in eight chapters; (3) Demai (fruit, grain, &c., doubtful if tithed), in seven chapters ; (4) Kilayim (mixtures of plants, animals, and garments respectively), in nine chapters ; (5) Shebi'ith (year of release), in ten chapters ; (6) Terumoth (gifts to the priests), in eleven chapters ; (7) Ma'aser Sheni? (Deut. xiv. 22-27), in five chapters ; (8) Ma'aser Rishon, otherwise Ma aseroth (Levitical tithes), in five chapters ; (9) Hallah (Num. xv. 19-21), in four chapters ; (10) 'Orlah (Lev. xix. 28), in three chapters; and (11) Bikkwrim (Deut. xxvi. 1-10), in three (commonly four) chapters.*~~

~~*Il, Moxrp (on Festival Times). (1) Shabbath (Sabbath), in twenty-four chapters ; (2) 'Erubin (mixtures, i.¢e., ideal union of divided spaces), in ten chapters ; (3) Pesah (commonly Pesahim, 1.60, Passover), in ten chapters ; (4) Kippurim (commonly Yoma, i.e., "the day" [of atonement]), in eight chapters ; (5) Shekalim (Exod. xxx. 12-15), in eight chapters; (6) Sukkah (Lev. xxiii. 34-43), in five chapters ; (7) Betsah ("an egg," so called from the beginning of the treatise; also Yom Tob, i.e., on work prohibited, or permitted, on festivals), in five chapters ; (8) Rosh Hasshanah (on the various kinds of new year, as religious or civil, the king's accession and coronation, &c.), in four chapters; (9) Ta aniyyoth (fast-days), in four chapters ; (10) Alegillah (reading of the book of Esther, other readings,*~~

~~*&c.), in four chapters; (11) HagigaH (festival-offerings), in three chapters; (12) MashkiN (so called from the begiuning of the treatise, but commonly Moed Katau, on work prohibited, or permitted, on the middle holidays of Passover and Tabernacles), in three chapters.*~~

~~*III]. NasHim (Women). (1) Nashim (so called from the first distinctive word of the treatise, but commonly Yebamoth, on sisters-in-law, the levirate, &c.), in sixteen chapters; (2) Kethuboth (marriage-pacts, settlements, &c.), in thirteen chapters; (38) Nedarim,*~~

~~| (vows), in eleven chapters; (4) Nazir (Num. vi. 2-21), in nine | chapters ; (5) Gittin (bills of divorcement and other bills), in nine~~

~~chapters; (6) Kiddushin (betrothal and marriage), in four chapters; (7) Sota (mostly Sotah, Num. v. 12-31), in nine chapters.~~

~~IV. NEziKIM, commonly Nezikin (Damages, &c.; see Exod. xxi, xxii., &c.). (1) Nezikin (commonly Bobo Kammo, the Former Bobo Metsi'o, the Middle Gate, in ten chapters; and Bobo Bathro, the Last Gate, in ten chapters!!), in thirty chapters ; (2) Synhedrin (courts of justice, &c.), in eleven chapters; (3) Makkoth ("forty stripes save one," &c.), in three chapters ; (4) Shebwoth (oaths, &c.), in eight chapters ; (5) HduyyoTh (testinionies) or 'Jdiyyoth (chiefest or best things »), in eight chap- ters; (6) 'Abodah Zarah (idolatry), in five chapters ; (7) Aboth (see MiprasH, p. 286), in five chapters; (8) HorayoTh (judicial errors, teachings, and decisions), in three chapters.~~

~~V. Koposuim (HoTy Things). (1) Zebahim™ (sacrifices), in fourteen chapters; (2) Menahoth (meat-offerings), in thirteen chapters ; (3) Shehitath HuTlin (slaying animals for common food ; commonly HuTlin, or common food), in twelve chapters ; (4) Be- khoroth (the first-born of beast and man), in nine chapters ; (5) 'Arakhim, commonly Erachin (on valuations ; see Lev. xxvii. 2-33), in nine chapters ; (6) Temurah (Lev. ix. 10, 33), in seven chapters; (7) Karethoth, not Kerithoth (sins the punishment of which is excision), in six chapters; (8) Mé¢ilah (Num. v. 6, 7), in stx chap- ters; (9) Middoth (description of the temple and its measurements ; see MIDRASH, p. 286), in five chapters ; (10) Tamid (perpetual or daily sacrifice), in six (commonly arrauged in seven) chapters ; (11) Kinnim (sacrifices of birds), in three chapters.~~

~~VIL. Tonororu (Purifications). (1) Kelim (impurities of vessels), in thirty chapters ; (2) Oholoth (Num. xix. 14-16, &c.), in eighteen chapters; (3) Nega'im (plague of leprosy in man, house, and garment), in fourteen chapters; (4) Parah (Num. xix. 1-19), in twelve chapters ; (5) Tohoroth (euphemism for impurities), in ten chapters; (6) Alikvaoth (religious baths), in ten chapters; (7) Niddah (Lev. xv. 19-33), in ten chapters ; (8) Makhshirim (liquids~~

~~7 Others include, instead of a fourth Perek of Bikkurim, the Perek Rabbi Meir, i.e., the treatise 'On the Acquisition of the Law." The original Mishnah, however, had neither of these two Perakim.~~

~~®In this scheme the Cambridge MS. of the Afshnah is taken as the groundwork, while the variations in title, &c., are given from the common texts.~~

~~9 Compare St Paul's words, Eph. v. dep TaVTOV. ' ;~~

~~10 On the apparent anomaly of Me'aser Sheni preceding Ala aser Rishon, see Schiller-Szinessy's Catalogue of Hebrew MSS. in the Cambridge University Library, vol, ii, p. 1, note 4. Pi~~

~~11 In the Cambridge MS. Add. 470. 1, Alassekhto Nezikin is given correctly as one, containing thirty chapters. Compare T. B., Bobo Kammo, leaf 102a, 'Abodah Zarah, 7a, and Midrash Shemuel, V.~~

~~12 See p. 503, note 16. | 33 Also known under Shehitath Kodoshim.~~

~~xVL — 6~~

~~20, ebxapiorobvres wdvToTE~~

~~i~~

~~506~~

~~predisposing for the contraction of impurities, Lev. xi. 34), in six chapters ; (9) Zabim (Lev. xv. 2-33), in five chapters; (10) Zebul Yom (Num. xix. 19), in four chapters ; (11) Yadayim (purification of the hands), in four chapters ; (12) 'Okotsin (stalks, peel, &c., of fruit), in three chapters.~~

~~11. Editions. — The editions of the Mishnah, whether as a book by itself or as contained in the Babylonian Talmud, are too numerous to be mentioned here. The editio princeps of the Mishnah, as a separate book, appeared (with Maimonides's com- mentary) at Naples in 1492 (see MarMonrDEs), and that as contained in the Babylonian Talmud at Venice in 1520-23, both in folio. As part of the Palestinian Talmud the Mishnah came out also at~~

~~*Venice, in 1523-24, folio. This Talmud, however, being defective, its Mishnah naturally is incomplete too (see p- 505); and it is, moreover, '* corrected "' by the scribe of 1288-89 (see Schiller-Szinessy, Occasional Notices, &c., i. pp. 8, 11). The syndics of the University Press of Cambridge have therefore laid the learned public under considerable obligations by publishing for the first time the complete original Mishnah on which the Palestinian Talinud rests, from the unique MS. preserved in the University Library.*~~

~~*12. Translations.—There exist translations of the Mishnah in Latin, German, and English. (1) There is a Latin translation by the brothers Abendana (R. Ya'akob and R. Yitshak). The former was Haham (Hakham, %.e., chief rabbi) of the Sepharadim in England, and the latter was teacher of Hebrew and Rabbinic at Cambridge and Oxford successively. Both brothers, correspond- ents in 1660 of Buxtorf, were fine Hebrew and Latin scholars (see Schiller-Szinessy, "The Abendanas," in Jewish World of December 5, 1879). This translation is preserved in the Cambridge Univer- sity Library MS. Mm. 1. 4-8.2 (2) The Abendanas' version was before Surenhusius when he compiled, from old and new mate- rials, his Latin translation, which appeared (with the text of the Mishnah and the translation also of the commentaries of Mai- monides and ' Bertinoro"') at Amsterdam in 1698-1703, folio. The great indebtedness of Surenhusius to the Abendanas is a fact either unknown to or ignored by the bibliographers.? (3) A German translation by Rabe came out in German letters at Onolzbach in 1760-63, 4to. (4) The version last-named was in the possession of the anonymous author of the translation, printed in Rabbinic letters, in the Vienna edition of the Mishnah with the commentary Kaph Nahath, 1817-35, 8vo. This author (or editor) silently "used" the work of his predecessor. (5) Both these translations were surpassed in German diction, as well as in correctness of rendering, by that which came out in Hebrew square letters at Berlin in 1832-34, 4to, and which, no doubt, belongs to J. M. Jost the historian. (6) The English translation which came out at London in 1843, 8vo, by De Sola and Rapliael, extends only over eighteen treatises.*~~

~~*13. Commentaries.—The commentaries on the Afishnah are almost as numerous as the editions, and cannot therefore be speci- ally enumerated*~~

~~*here. The principal and the oldest, however, are the following. (1) The two Talmuds themselves, of which, at present,4 the Babylonian is the only {and that but compara- tively) perfect one, or at all events the more extensive of the two. It ought, however, to be stated, first, that the Palestinian Talmud has Gemara on the whole order Zeraim, whilst the Babylonian has it on the first " treatise" only of that order (Berakhoth), and, secondly, that the Gemurath Shekalim in the Babylonian Talmud is only borrowed from the Palestinian Talmud. (2) The commentaries on Zeradim, Tohoroth, &., by Rabbenu Hai Gaon, who was the last, most learned, and in every way noblest of the Geonim.® He flourished in the 10th and 11th centuries. Part of the commentaries (viz., that on Tohoroth) has appeared in the collection*~~

~~*1See Mr W. H. Lowe's able edition of this grand work (The oo on which the Palestinian Talmud rests, Cambridge, 1883,*~~

~~*vo).*~~

~~*? According to Picciotto (Sketehes of Anglo-Jewish History, London, 1875, 8vo, p. 55), R. Yitshak Abendana translated the Mishnah and its commentaries (Maimonides and " Bertinoro "?) also into Spanish.*~~

~~*3 Surenhusius was also aided in his grand work by the books and notes of Guisius (in Berakhoth, Peah, Demai, [Kil'ayim, Shebiith Terumoth, and Ma aseroth, i.—iii. 3), Schmid (in Shabbath and 'Erubin), Houting (Mosh Hasshanah), Lund (Ta'anith), Otho (Shekalim) Wagenseil (Sotah), Cocceius (Makkoth), Fagius (Aboth), Arnoldi (Tamid), L'Empereur (Mfiddoth), and Ulmann (Zebahim and Kare- thoth). But without the Abendanas Surenhusius could never have commenced, much less executed, the great task he had before him.*~~

~~*4For the probability that the missing parts of the Palestinian Talmud will one day come to light somewhere in the Hast, see Schiller- Szinessy in the Academy, February 23, 1878 ; [fe-Chaluz, xi. ; and Steinschneider, Mlandschriften-Verzeichnisse der kiniglichen Bibliothek zu Berlin, ii., &c. (1878, 4to), p. 65, where a passage of Palestinian Gemara of 'Okotsin is actually quoted.*~~

~~*5 He was also a poet of no mean standing.*~~

~~*See his Musar Hashel (or Hassekhel), ed. princ. Fano, 1505 (%), 4to.*~~

~~*Ma 4S Ta a Al*~~

~~*Kobets Ma'ase Yede Geonim, &c. (Berlin, 1856, 8vo). (3) The commentary on various treatises of the B. Talmud, and indirectly on the Mishnah, by Rabbenu Gershom Meor Haggolah (the " Light of the Diaspora," flourished in the 10th and 11th centuries). Frag- ments of this commentary are incorporated in the ordinary Talmud editions (¢.g., Nedarim, 22b, &c.), but the greater part lies as yet in manuscript in various libraries. (4) The commentary of Rabbenu Hananeel, who lived at Kairawan (in Africa) in the 10th and 11th centuries. His commentary on the Talmud, and thus indirectly on the Mishnah, is now being published in the Vilna edition of the Babylonian Talmud." (5) The commentary of Rashi (0d. 1105) in all those parts of the B. Talmud on which that " prince of commentators'"'? wrote. Here ought to be mentioned also the separate editio princeps of this commentary as far as the Mishnah is con- cerned, which appeared at Leghorn in 1653-54, 8vo. (6) The supplements and additions to the commentary of Rashi by his son- in-law Rabbenu Yehudah b. Nathan (¢.g., T. B., Mukkoth, 196, &c.), and by his grandsons Rabbenu Shemuel b. Meir (vulgo Rashbam; see Pesahim, 99b, and Bobo Bathro, 29a, &c.) and Rabbenu Shema'yah b. Simhah of Vitri,8 who interpreted the Mas- sekheth Middoth before Rashi, his grandfather (see Schiller-Szinessy, Catalogue of the Hebrew MSS. preserved in the University Library of Cambridge, ii. p. 89). (7) The commentary on the whole Mishnah by MatMonIDES (q.v.). (8) The commentary by R. Abraham b. David of Posquiéres (vulgo Rabad) on 'Eduyyoth (see editions of the B. Talmud), Kinnim (with two other commentaries by Rabbenu Zerahyah Hallevi and R. Asher b. Yehiel, Constantinople, 1751, folio), and on many other Mishniyyoth of the orders Zeradim and Tohoroth (in his " strictures " on Maimonides, Mishneh Torah, books Zerdim and Tohorah). (9) The commentary of R. Shimshon of Sens (who, like the foregoing, was a contemporary and opponent of Mainionides) on the orders of Zera'im (with supple- ments taken from the works of the somewhat older R. Yitshak b. Malkitsedek) and Tohoroth.® (10) The commentary by R. Meir of Rothenburg (the celebrated captive of Rudolph of Hapsburg); see under (13) below. (11) The commentary by R. Asher b. Yehiel (a disciple of the foregoing, who died at Toledo in 1327) on*~~

~~twenty- oue treatises of the orders i. and vi. (12) The commentary on the whole Mishnah, by Rabbenu 'Obadyah di Bertinoro (flourished in the 15th and 16th centuries), the editions of which are very numerous. (13) The commentary on the whole MJishnah, by R. Yomtob Lip- mann Heller (flourished in 16th and 17th centuries). This famous teacher, rabbi in some of the greatest congregations of the Jews (Prague, Vladimir, and Cracow), incorporated much of the com- mentary of R. Meir of Rothenburg ; compare under (10).~~

~~14. Works Subsidiary and Auailiary to the Mishnah.—These Math- may be summed up under the word Mathnitho. Mathnitho is uitho. ostensibly the Aramaic equivalent of the Hebrew Mishnah ; in reality, however, it signifies and comprises, not merely every- thing which is understood under that name, but also Boraitho (in full, Mathnitho Borattho), i.e., four other works of the oral law, and many literary notices of Mishnic and pre-Mishnic times besides, which are scattered throughout the Talmuds and other early Rabbinic works. :~~

~~The first of these is Tosephto. As its name indicates, Tosephto Tosephto. is " Addition," 7.¢., to the canonical Mishnah. All Mishnah teachers from time immemorial, notably R. 'Akibah and R. Yehudah Hannasi, left out, when they taught Mishnah, a large mass of kindred and explanatory matter, which they only occasionally and supplementarily mentioned, ¢.¢., when absolutely wanted. The chief collection of this additional matter, not incor- porated in the system of the canonical Mishnah, is called Tosepheth in Hebrew and Tosephto (or Tosiphta as some less correctly write it) in Aramaic. The Aramaic singular and the Hebrew plural occur already in the Talmuds and Jfidrashim. Tosephto shares with the Mishnah, which it enlarges and explains, the number of orders and treatises, but not that of chapters, of which it has only 452. The oldest collection of Tosephtic matter, even as the oldest collection of Mishnic matter, is due to R. 'Akibah. But, whilst~~

~~6 In the synod called together by Rabbenu Gershom, among several " ordinances" was also one that no Jew is allowed to marry more than one wife.~~

~~7 His commentary on Pesahim appeared at Paris in 1868, and that ou Makkoth at Leipsic in 1876, both in 8vo.~~

~~8 These writers (together with Rabbenu Meir another son-in-law and Rabbenu Ya'akob another grandson of Rashi) are the first of the so- called Tosaphists, whose activity continued down to the early part of the 14th century. :~~

~~® Whether the commentary on Yamid printed under his name, together with that of R. Asher b. Yehiel on the same treatise (Prague, 1725, 4to), is really his is still matter of dispute.~~

~~10 See T. Y., Shabbath, viii. 1, &c.; T. B., Synhedrin, 86a and else- where ; Midrash Rabbah on Ecclesiastes v. 8, &c. There can be little doubt that in some places the word NNDDIN ought to be transliterated Tosephotho (i.e., as plural).~~

~~Mekhilto.~~

~~mis HN AE~~

~~the Mishnah, as a work, was first sifted by his disciple R. Meir, Tosephto, as a work, was first sifted by another disciple R. Nehemyah ; and just as R. Meir's Mishnah was sifted again by Habbi and others after him, and was not written down before the 6th century, so Tosephto was sifted again by R. Hiyya, R. Hosha'yah, and others, aud was not written down in its entirety before the 6th century. It is no wonder, then, that it now contains matter of a considerably later age. T'osephto is not merely of great help for understanding the Mishnah, which is, in a certain sense, incomplete without it, but for the precise and exact knowledge of Jewish archeology and other sciences, and in its Agadic parts, of which there are many, for the Greek Scriptures also. Here ought also to be mentioned Aloth de-Rabbi Nathan, which is, no doubt, Tosephto to the Mishnah of Aboth. Tosephto used to be printed till within the last forty years ? as an appendix to the Riph, i.e., the Hilekhoth Rab Alphes (a compendium of the Talmud by R. Yitshak b. Ya'akob Al-Phesi, or Al-Phasi, i.e, of Fez, ob. 1103), which appeared first with this appendix at Venice, 1521-22, folio. Here, however, it was not edited critically or printed with even ordinary care. But in the Vienna~~

~~*edition of the Babylonian Talmud (1860-72) it came out, for the first time, worthily after a MS. till then uncollated which is preserved in the Court Library. Dr Zuckermandel has since published it from the Erfurt and Vienna MSS., with collations.? A Latin translation of Tosephto (with the Hebrew text) is to be found, under the name of Tosaphta, in Blasins Ugolinus's Zhesaurus Antiquitatum Sacrarum (xvii.-xx.). It comprises, however, only the orders Zera'im, Mo'ed, and Kodoshim, and came out at Venice in the years 1755-57, folio.*~~

~~*The second of these pieces of literature is Mekhilto. This word*~~

~~*is the Aramaic equivalent of the Hebrew Middah (measure), and'*~~

~~*hence signifies mould, form, 7.¢., of Scriptural exegesis, notably of part or parts of the Pentateuch. As such it might, of course, stand for any kind of commentary on any book of the Pentateuch, and have been composed by any one. And we find, indeed, that Mekhiito signified at one time a commentary on the books Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy, either by R. Yishmael or by R. 'Akibah,? at another time a commentary on Exodus, by R. Shime'on b, Yohai,* and at another time again a commentary on the last four books of Moses, by (Shime'on) Ben 'Azzai.® Mekhilto now, however, means a commentary on the greater part of Exodus, ascribed to R. Yishma''el emaaned in the 1st century) ; although, in reality, this teacher cannot have been the author of the book, seeing that his name is more than seventy times mentioned in it. The reason why the ancients called the book by his name is, no doubt, because the first words of the real work are Amar Rabbi Vishma'el. Like the other works of the 'oral law," Alekhilto was not written down before the 6th century, a fact which accounts also, in part at least, for the loss of several portions of this com- mentary, which, at present, only extends from xii. 1 to xxv. 3, with several gaps between. That Mekhilto was once fuller than it is now we know, not only from a statement made by Maimonides and others, but from a MS. (Add. 394. 1, in the University Library of Cambridge, leaf 400), where an extract is given by a Franco- German author of the 12th or 18th century. The Talmud knows the name Mekhilto, and actually quotes Boraithoth (non-canonical Mishniyyoth) which are to be found in our book; and yet the existing Mekhilto can scarcely have been known to the teachers of the Talmnd.*~~

~~*Mekhilto is by some called Midrash and by others Mishnah; both names are in a certain sense correct. It is Mid- rash in substance, inasmuch as it contains exegesis, and in form, inasmuch as it is subdivided into Parshiyyoth and follows the order of the Scriptural verses. But it is Aishnah in substance, inas- much as it not only deals with the groundwork of the Afishnah, but consists of Boraithoth (non-canonical MMishniyyoth), and in form, inasmuch as it is, like the canonical Mishnah, divided into Massekhtoth. These latter are nine in number, and are called re- spectively (1) Dephisha (with 18 Parshiyyoth and 1 Pethihto or introduction), (2) Beshallah (with 6 Parshiyyoth and 1 Pethihto), (3) Deshiretha (with 10 Parshiyyoth), (4) Vayyassa' (with 6 Par- shiyyoth), (5)'Amalek (with 2 Parshiyyoth), (6) Yithro (with 2 Parshiyyoth), (7) Bahodesh (with 11 Parshiyyoth), (8) Nezikin and Kaspo (with 20 Parshiyyoth), and (9) Shabbetho (with 2 Par- shiyyoth—1 in the pericope Ai thissa and 1 in that of Vayyakhel). Mekhilto was published first at Constantinople in 1515, under the name of Sepher Hammekhilto, and in 1545 at Venice as Mid- rash Hammekhilto. In 1712 it appeared at Amsterdam with a commentary. In 1744 it appeared again at Venice with a Latin translation by Blasius Ugolinus (Thes. Antig. Sacr., xiv.). – In 1801 it appeared at Leghorn with a different commentary. In 1844 it*~~

~~*1That on the order Zeraim came out at Vilma in 1799, 4to; but in its entirety it came only out between 1837, 1841, and 1871, folio.*~~

~~*2 Tssued at Pasewalk and Treves from 1877 to 1882, 8vo.*~~

~~*2 See Maimonides's preface to the Mishneh Torah.*~~

~~*4 See Nahmanides's commentary on the Pentateuch (on Gen. xlix. 31).*~~

~~*5 See Yuhasin Hasshalem (ed. Filipowski, London and Edinburgh, 1857, 8vo), p. 30, col. 2.*~~

~~*came out at Vilna with a newcommentary. All these are in folio. The best and cheapest editions with commentaries are those by ewe (1865) and Friedmann (1870), both printed at Vienna, and in 8vo.*~~

~~_ The third of these pieces of literature is Siphro. itself, because it is the most difficult of all Mosaic books, and the oldest Rabbinic commentary on it, because it is the most difficult of all commentaries on the Scriptures, have been from time immemorial known under the name of Siphro (i.e., the Book).® This book and this commentary are also called Zorath Kohanim, and the former is spoken of in the Talmud already as Szphro debe Rub." This latter expression has led many great meu (among others Maimonides) 8 to ascribe the authorship of this commentary to Rab (Abba Arikho, a nephew and disciple of R. HIyya). But such a view is erroneous in the extreme, as the book is, so far as form and substance go, both older and later than Rab, paradoxical as this statement may appear. It is older in its origin and in its matter, for not merely do all the anonymous Boraithoth which are to be found in it belong to R. Yehudah b. II'ai, a teacher of the lst century, but one of the sons of Rabbi (of the 2d century) had actually taught another rabbi two-thirds of a third, i.e., two-ninths, of this work.® It is later than Rab, for in it are found one " authority" and several "results" of much later date than that of this great Babylonian teacher.!° The fact is, the word Rab in the phrase Siphro debe Rab is not a proper name at all, but simply stands for "teacher," and debe Rad thus signifies "' of a school," a terin used for any teacher and any school of any time. Although most of the Boraithoth which it contains are as old as the 1st century, this book as such cannot have been written down earlier than the 6th, in accordance with the treatment, in this respect, of all the other HIalakhic works of the "oral law." Stphro, although it bears on the pericopes and verses of Leviticus, and is on account of this fact by many called a Midrash, is in reality Mishnah,4u—a name borne out by the nature of its contents, which are mostly Mishnic, and sometimes represent actual canonical Mishniyyoth. Siphro exhibits a curious conglomeration of matter. It opens with the "Rules of the Interpretation of Scripture," ascribed to R. Yishma'el,—a Boraitho which, although important in itself, is not more important for this than for any other com- mentary on the Pentateuch. And this conglomerate nature shows itself even more strikingly in form; for Siphro contains as forms of division Dibburim, Mekhilto, Parshiyyoth (some of which mean pericopes, whilst others mean chapters), Perakim, and Piskoth. All this points, of course, to various divisions of the book made at various times. Whilst none of these divisions can be later than the 12th century,?2 the earliest is at least as old as the 2d, and belongs perhaps to the ist.8 Siphro is chiefly of importance~~

~~*for the under- standing of the Wishnah of the orders Kodoshim and Tohoroth (which were, no doubt, the earliest Mishniyyoth put into 'Sordens) but, whilst it is a sure help for the Mishnah, the Mishnah is no sure help for it: Siphro is a genuine specimen of the "' oral law," inasmuch as it cannot be mastered without ateacher. Owing to the difficulty of understanding it, Siphro has not been often studied, and conse- quently not often printed. The editio princeps is of 1545; the second edition with the commentary Korban Aharon is of 1609-11, both at Venice. The third edition with the just-named commen- tary is of 1702, and came out at Dessau. The fourth edition, with a Latin translation, is to be found in Blasius Ugolinus's Thesawrus Antiquitatum Sacrarum, &c., Venice, 1744 (vol. xiv.). All these are in folio. The fifth edition, with the commentary 'Azarath Kohanim (vol. i.), appeared at Vilna, 1845, 4to. The sixth edition, with the commentary 'Asirith Haephah, appeared at Lemberg, 1848, folio. The seventh edition, with the commentary Hattorah Veham-Mitsvah, appeared at Bucharest, 1860, 4to. The eighth edition, with the commentary of R. Abraham b. David of Pos- quiéres, &., appeared at Vienna, 1862; and the ninth edition, with the commentary by R. Shimshon of Sens, appeared at War- saw, 1866, both in folio. .*~~

~~*The fourth of these pieces of literature is Siphere. Siphere debe Rab, which in_ earlier times certainly included the oldest Rabbinic commentaries on Exodus, Numbers, and Deu- teronomy (and perhaps also that on Leviticus), means now the oldest Rabbinic commentary on the last two books of Moses only. ee*~~

~~*6 See T. B., Berakhoth, 186, and Rashi, in loco. The Siphro said here to have been studied by Benaiah the son of Jehoiada may well have been our Leviticus, though of course it cannot have been the Siphro with which we are here concerned,*~~

~~*7 Ibid.*~~

~~*8 Preface to Mishneh Torch.*~~

~~*9 See T. B., Kiddushin, 33a.*~~

~~*10 See the pericope Kedoshim, vi. :*~~

~~11 Its original founder (R. Yehudah b. Il'ai) identifies Mishnah and Midrash, T. B., Kiddushin, 49a.~~

~~12 They were known to R. Abraham b. David (Rabad).~~

~~B37, B., Kiddushin, 33a.~~

~~Both Leviticus Siphro.~~

~~Siphere, or Siphere.~~

~~Boraitho.~~

~~008~~

~~Both books are divided into Piskoth (paragraphs), of which Siphere on Nuinbers has 161, whilst that on Deuteronomy has 357. The ancient division into Boraithoth cannot now be accurately traced. The work eommeuces now at Numbers v. 1, and goes to the end of Deuteronomy. The passages anonymously given in Siphere are ascribed by the Babylonian 'Talmud! to R. Shime'on b. Yohai, the favourite disciple of R. 'Akibah, and the reputed author of the Zohar. But although he is no doubt the virtual author of Siphere, seeing that most Boraithoth which are to be found therein are his, he cannot be, technically speaking, itsauthor. For, in the first place, he is not only repeatedly named in the book, but several times actually contradicted by others; and, secondly, there are several passages, anonymously given, in the book, which can only be the result of "Talmudic" study, and must be consequently pos- terior to the composition of the Talmud. The fact is that Siphere, like the other works of the "oral law," was not written down before the 6th century. It ought to be mentioned here that the rabbis of the 11th, 12th, and 18th centuries, and even somewhat later, speak also of another Siphere which they variously designate as Siphere Panim Sheni, Siphere shel Panim Sheni, Siphere Bemid- bar Sinai, Siphere Zutta, and Siphere simply. To judge from the extracts which have coine down to us, that work must not only lave been of much later date, but also of far less value than the work in our hands. Siphere appeared for the first time in 1545, and with a Latin translation by Blasius Ugolinus, in his Thesaurus, &c. (vol. xv.), in 1744,—both at Venice, and in folio. The third~~

~~*edition appeared at Hamburg in 1789, and the fourth at Sulzbach in 1802, both in 4to. The fifth edition, with the commentary Zera Abraham, appeared in two volumes, of which the first was printed at Dyhernfurt in 1811 and the second at Radawell in 1820, both in folio. The sixth and best edition is that of Friedmann (Vienna, 1864), and the seventh is that of Lemberg, 1866, both in 8vo. There is also a fifth piece of Mishnic literature known specially by the name Boraitho. Besides the Boraithoth constituting Tosephto, Mekhilto, Siphro, and Siphere, there are hundreds of other Boraithoth to be found scattered about in both Talmuds. These are, however, mere fragments of the vast Mishnayoth (entire Mishnic works?) composed by Bar Kappara, Rabbi Hiyya, and hundreds of other teachers, which in course of time must have perished. There is, however, enough left of the Mishnah, canonical and non-canonical, to prove the correctness of the cabbalistic remark that Mishnah is the equivalent of Neshamah (soul). This is no mere trifling based on the fact that the two words (FAWN, mows) accidentally consist of the same letters; it is rather an enunciation of an intrinsic truth: what the soul (Neshamah) is to the body, the Mishnah is to Mosaism. The soul gives life to the body, aud the Afishnah gives life to the Pentateuch. For the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life! (S. M. 8.-S.)*~~

~~*MISKOLCZ, capital of the Cis-Tisian county of Borsod, Hungary (48° 6' N. lat., 20° 49' E. long.), is picturesquely situated in a valley watered by the Szinva, 90 miles north- east from Budapest, with which, as also with Debreczen and Kassa (Kaschau), it is directly connected by railway. Miskolez is one of the most thriving provincial towns in the kingdom, and has many fine buildings, including Roman Catholic, Greek Catholic, Lutheran, and Calvinist churches and schools, a Minorite convent, synagogue, Hungarian theatre, hospital, royal and circuit courts of law, salt and tax offices, and the administrative bureaus for the county. There are manufactories of snuff, porcelain, boots and shoes, and prepared leather, and both steam and water mills. The trade is chiefly in grain, wheaten flour, wine, fruit, cattle, hides, honey, wax, and the agricultural products of the neighbourhood. The great fairs, held five times a year, are much resorted to by strangers from a distance. Not far from the town are stone quarries and iron mines. At the end of 1880 the (civil) population amounted to 24,343, of whom the majority were Magyars by nationality.*~~

~~During the 16th and 17th centuries Miskolez suffered much from the desolating hordes of Ottomans who then ravaged the country, as also from the troops of various Transylvanian princes and leaders, especially those of George Rakéczy and Emerie Tokélyi. In 1781, 1843, and 1847 it was devastated by fire, and on the 30th August~~

~~1878 a great portion of the town was laid in ruins by a terrific storm. (See Huncary, vol. xii. p. 374.)~~

~~MISREPRESENTATION,. See Fravp.~~

~~1 Synhedrin, 86a. 2 According to T. B., Hagigah, 14a, there existed at one time no less than six or seven hundred ALishnah orders.~~

†

~~MIS—MIS~~

~~MISSAL,? the book containing the liturgy, or office of the mass, of the Latin Church. This name (e.g., Missale Gothicum, Francorum, Gallicanum Vetus) began to super- sede the older word Sacramentary (Sacramentarium, Liber Sacramentorum) from about the middle of the 8th century. At that period the books so designated contained merely the fixed canon of the mass or consecration prayer (actionem, precem canonicam, canonem actionis), and the variable collects, secretze or orationes super oblata, prefaces, and post-communions for each fast, vigil, festival, or feria, of the ecclesiastical year; for a due celebration of the Eucharist they required accordingly to be supplemented by other books, such as the Antiphonarium, afterwards called the Graduale, containing the proper antiphons (introits), responsories (graduals), tracts, sequences, offertories, com- munions, and other portions of the communion service designed to be sung by the schola or choir, and the Lection- arium (or Epistolarvum and Evangelistarvum) with the proper lessons. Afterwards missals began to be prepared contain- ing more or less fully the antiphons and lessons as well as the prayers proper to the various days, and these were called missalia plenaria. All modern missals are of this last de- scription. The Mfssale Romanum ex decreto SS. Concilii Tridentini restitutum, now in almost exclusive use through- out all the churches of the Latin obedience, owes its present form to the council of~~

~~*Trent, which among its other tasks undertook the preparation of a correct and uniform liturgy, and entrusted the work toa committee of itsmembers. This committee had not completed its labours when the council rose, but the pope was instructed to receive its report when ready and to act upon it. The "reformed missal" accordingly was promulgated by Pius V. on July 14, 1570, and its universal use enjoined on all branches of the Catholic Church, the only exceptions allowed being in the case of churches having local and independent liturgies which had been kept in unbroken use for at least two centuries.* It has subsequently undergone slight revisions under Clement VIII. (1604) and Urban VIII. (1634); and various new masses, both obligatory and permissive, universal and local, have been added by the competent authority. Although the Roman is very much larger in bulk than any other liturgy, it need hardly be explained that the com- munion office to which it relates is not in itself inordinately long. By much the greater part of it is contained in the "ordinary" and "canon" of the mass, usually placed about the middle of the missal, and occupies, though in large type, only a few pages in any printed copy. The work owes its bulk and complexity to two circumstances. On the one hand, in the celebration of the sacrifice of the mass practically nothing is left to the impulse or discretion of the officiating priest ; everything—what he is to say, the tone and gestures with which he is to say it, the cut and colour of the robe he is to wear—is carefully prescribed either in the general rubrics prefixed to the text, or in the running rubrics which accompany it. On the other hand, the Roman, like all the Western liturgies, is distinguished*~~

~~*3 Missalis (se., liber), Missale, from Missa ; see vol. viii. p. 652.*~~

- ~~*The English missal consequently continued to be used by English Catholics until towards the end of the 17th century, when it was superseded by the Roman through Jesuit influence. The Gallican liturgy held its ground until much more recently, but has now succumbed under the Ultramontanism of the bishops.*~~

~~*> In all the older liturgies the comparative absenee of rubrics is conspicuous and sometimes perplexing. It is very noticeable in the Roman Sacramentaries, but the want is to some extent supplied by the very detailed directions for a high pontifical mass in the various texts of the Ordo*~~

~~*Romanus mentioned below. That there was no absolutely fixed set of rubrics in use in France during the 8th century is shown by the fact that each priest was required to write out an account of his own practice ("libellum ordinis") and present it for approbation to the bishop in Lent (see Baluze, Cap. Reg. Frane., i.*~~

~~*| 824, quoted in Smith's Diet. of Chr. Antiq., ii. 1521).*~~

~~*MISS AL*~~

~~*from those of the Eastern Church by its flexibility. Partly by conscious effort, no doubt, but partly also by happy accident, a well-marked distinctive character has been given in one or all of the above-mentioned respects to the office for each ecclesiastical season, for each fast or festival of the year, almost for each day of the week ; and provision has also been made of a suitable communion ser- vice for many of the special and extraordinary occasions both of public and of private life. This richness of variety is seen not only in the collects but also in the lessons and antiphonal parts of the service, passages of Scripture in the selection and collocation of which an exquisite delicacy of religious and esthetic instinct has been for the most part strikingly shown.*~~

~~*The different parts of the Roman communion office are not all of the same antiquity. Its essential and character- istic features are most easily caught, and their rationale best understood, by reference to the earliest Sacramentaries (particularly the Gregorian, which was avowedly the basis of the labours of the Tridentine committee), to. the Gregorian Antiphonary, and to the oldest redaction of the Ordo Romanus.1 The account of the mass (qualiter Missa Romana celebratur) as given by the Sacramentarium Gregorianum is to the effect that there is in the first place '"'the Jntroit according to the time, whether for a festival or for a common day; thereafter Ayrie Lleison. (In addition to this Gloria in Excelsis Deo is said if a bishop be [the celebrant], though only on Sundays and festivals ; but a priest is by no means to say it, except only at Eastertide. When there is a litany (quando letania agitur) neither Gloria in Hxcelsis nor Alleluia is sung.) After- wards the Oratio is said, whereupon follows the Apostolus, also the Gradual and Alleluia. Afterwards the Gospel is read. Then comes the Ofertorium,? and the Oratio super oblata is said." Then follow the*~~

~~*Sursum Corda, the Pre- face, Canon, Lord's Prayer and "embolism" (éuBddocpa or insertion, Labera nos, Domine), given at full length precisely as they still occur in the Roman missal.*~~

~~*In every liturgy of all the five groups a passage similar to this occurs, beginning with Surswm Corda, followed by a Preface and the recitation of the Sanctus or Angelic Hymn. The "canon" or consecration prayer, which in all of them comes immediately after, invariably contains our Lord's words of institution, and (except in the Nestorian liturgy) concludes with the Lord's Prayer and '"'embolism." But within this framework there are certain differences of arrangement, furnishing marks by which the various groups of liturgies can be classified (see vol. xiv. p. 709 sq.). Thus it is distinctive of the liturgy of Jerusalem that the " great intercession" for the quick and the dead follows the words of institution and an Epiklesis (érixAnots TOU Tvevparos dyiov) or petition for the descent of the Holy Spirit upon the gifts ; in the Alexandrian the "'oreat intercession" has its place in the Preface; in the East Syrian it comes between the words of restitution and the Epiklesis ; in the Ephesine it comes before the Preface ; while in the Roman it is divided into two, the commemora- tion of the living being before, and that of the dead after, the words of institution. Other distinctive features of the Roman liturgy are (1) the position of the " Pax" after the consecration, and not as in all the other liturgies at a very early stage of the service, before the Preface even; and (2) the absence of the Epiklesis common to all the others.?*~~

~~*1 For the genealogical relationships of the Roman with other liturgies, the reader is referred to the article Lirurey (vol. xiv. 706 sq.), where some account is also given of the three Sacramentaries. For the doctrines involved in the " sacrifice of the mass," see HucHARIST, vol. viii. p. 650 sq.*~~

~~*2 Some editions do not mention the Offertory here.*~~

~~*3 This was one of the points discussed at the council of Florence, and Cardinal Bessarion for a time succeeded in persuading the Greeks to give up the Epiklesis.*~~

~~*-(precem quam scholasticus composuerat).*~~

~~The words of its 'canonical prayer" are of unknown antiquity ; they are found in the extant manuscripts of the Sacramentarium C'elasianum, and were already old and of forgotten authorship in the time of Gregory the Great, who, in a letter to John, bishop of Syracuse (Registr. HIpist., vii. 64), speaks of it as " the prayer composed by a 'scholastic' "). The same letter is interesting as containing Gregory's defence, on the ground of ancient use, of certain parts of the Roman ritual to which the bishop of Syracuse had taken exception as merely borrowed from Constantinople. Thus we learn that, while at Constantinople the Kyrie HIleison was said by all simultaneously, it was the Roman custom for the clergy to repeat the words first and for the people to respond, Christe Eleison being also repeated an equal number of times. Again, the Lord's Prayer was said immediately after the consecration aloud by all the people among the Greeks, but at Rome by the priest alone.~~

~~The somewhat meagre and imperfect liturgical details furnished by the Sacramentarium Gregorianum are supple- mented in a very full and interesting manner by the succes- sive texts of the Ordo Romanus, the first of which dates from about the year 730. The ritual they enjoin is that for a pontifical high mass in Rome itself ; but the differences to be observed by a priest "quando in statione facit missas" are comparatively slight. Subjoined is a précis of Ordo Romanus I.~~

~~It is first of all explained that Rome has seven ecclesiastical regious, each with its proper deacons, subdeacons, and acolytes. Each region has its own day of the week for high ecclesiastical functions, which are celebrated by each in rotation. [This accounts for the Statio ad 8. Mariam Majorem, ad S. Crucem in Jerusalem, ad S. Petrum, &c., prefixed to most of the masses in the Gregorian Sacramentary, and still retained in the " Proprium de Tempore" of the Roman missal.] The regulations for the assembling and marshalling of the procession by which the pontiff is met and then escorted to the appointed station are minutely given, as well as for the adjustment of his vestments "ut bene sedeant," when the sacristy has been reached. HIe does not leave the sacristy until the Introit has been begun by the choir in the church. Before the~~

~~*Gloria he takes his stand at the altar, and after the Kyrie Elcison has been sung (the number of times is left to his discretion) he*~~

~~*. begins the Gloria in Excelsis, which is taken up by the choir. Dur-*~~

~~*ing the singing he faces eastward; at its close he turns round for a moment to say " Pax vobis," and forthwith proceeds to the Oratio.4 This finished, all seat themselves in order while the subdeacon ascends the ambo and reads [the /pistle]. After he has done, the cantor with his book (cantatorio) ascends and gives out the response (Responsum) with the Alleluia and TJ'ractus in addition if the season calls for either. The deacon then silently kisses the feet of the pontiff and receives his blessing in the words " Dominus sit in corde tuo et in labiis tuis." Preceded by acolytes with lighted candles aud subdeacons burning incense, he ascends the ainbo, where he reads the Gospel. At the close, with the words " Pax tibi" and '*Dominus vobiscum," the pontiff,® after another Oratio, descends to the " senatorium " accompanied by certain of the inferior clergy, and receives in order the oblations of the rulers (oblationes princi- pum), the archdeacon who follows taking their "amulas" of wine and pouring them into a larger vessel; similar offerings are received from the other ranks and classes present, including the women. This concluded, the pontiff and archdeacon wash their hands, the offerings being meanwhile arranged by the subdeacons on the altar, and water, supplied by the leader of the choir (archiparaphonista), being mingled with the wine. During this ceremony the schola have been engaged in singing the Ofertorium; when all is ready the pontiff signs to thein to stop, and enters upon the Preface, the sub- deacons giving the responses. At the Angelic Hymn (Sanctus) all kneel and continue kneeling, except the pontiff, who rises alone and begins the Canon. At the words " per quem hec omnia" the archdeacon lifts the cup with the oblates, and at " Pax Doinini sit semper vobiscum " he gives the peace to the clergy in their order, and to the laity. The pontiff then breaks off a particle from the consecrated bread and lays it upon the altar; the rest he places on the paten held by the deacon. It is then distributed while Agnus Dei is sung. The pontiff in communicating puts the particle into the cup, saying, " Fiat commixtio et consecratio corporis et sanguinis Domini nostri Jesu Christi accipientibus nobis in vitam eterna." Those present communicate in their order under this species also.*~~

~~*4 Quam collectam dicunt, Ord. Rom. IJ, 5 After singing " Credo in unum Deum," Ord. Rom. IT.*~~

~~*510*~~

~~*As the pontiff descends into the senatorium to give the communion, the schola begins the communion Antiphon, and continues singing the Psalm until, all the people having communicated, they receive the sign to begin the Gloria, after which, the verse having been again repeated, they stop. 'The celebrant, then, facing eastward, offers the Oratio ad Complendum, which being finished the arch- deacon says to the people,* **' Ite, missa est," they responding with '** *Deo gratias.""*~~

~~*To complete our idea of the Roman communion office as it was prior to the end of the 8th century we must now turn to the Gregorian Antiphonarius sive Gradualis Liber ordinatus per circulum anni, which as its name implies contains those variable portions of the mass which were intended to be sung by the schola or choir. It gives for each day for which a proper mass is provided—(1) the Antiphona (Anti- phona ad Introitum) and Psalmus ; (2) the Responsorium and Versus, with its Allelwia and Versus; (3) the Offertorium and Versus; (4) the Communio and Psalmus. Some explanation of each of these terms is necessary. (1) The word Antiphon (dvzipuvov, Old English Antefn, English Anthem) in its ecclesiastical use has reference to the very ancient practice of relieving the voices of the singers by dividing the work between alternate choirs. In one of its most usual meanings it has the special significa- tion of a sentence (usually scriptural) constantly sung by one choir between the verses of a psalm or hymn sung by another. According to the Roman liturgiologists it was Pope Celestine who enjoined that the Psalms of David should be sung (in rotation, one presumes) antiphonally before mass; in process of time the antiphon came to be sung at the beginning and end only, and the psalm itself was reduced to a single verse. In the days of Gregory the Great the introit appears to have been sung precisely as at present,—that is to say, after the antiphon (proper and par excellence), the Psalmus with its Gloria, then the antiphon again. (2) The Responsorium, like the Greek antiphon, derives its name from the responsive manner of singing. As introduced between the epistle and gospel it was probably at first a comparatively long passage, usually an entire*~~

~~*psalm or canticle, originally given out by the cantor from the steps from which the epistle had been read (hence the later name G'raduale), the response being taken up by the whole choir. (3) The Ofertoriwm and Communio correspond to the "hymn from the book of Psalms" mentioned by early authorities (see, for example, Augustine, Retr., ii. 11; Ap. Const., vill. 13) as sung before the oblation and also while that which had been offered was being distributed to the people. A very intimate connexion between these four parts of the choral service can generally be observed ; thus, taking the first Sunday in the ecclesiastical year, we find both in the Antiphonary and in the modern Missal that the antiphon is Ps. xxv. 1-3, the psalmus Ps. xxv. 4, the responsorium (graduale) and versus Ps. xxv. 3 and xxv. 4, the offertorium and versus Ps. xxv. 1-3 and Ps. xxv. 5. The communio is Ps. Ixxxv. 12, one of the verses of the responsorium being Ps. lxxxv. 7. In the selection of the introits there are also traces of a certain rotation of the psalms in the Psalter having been observed.*~~

~~*The first pages of the modern Roman missal are occupied with the Calendar and a variety of explanations relating to the year and its parts, and the manner of determin- ing the movable feasts. The general rubrics (Rubrice Generales Missalis) follow, explaining what are the various kinds of mass which may be celebrated, prescribing the hours of celebration, the kind and colour of vestments to be used, and the ritual to be followed (ritus celebrandi missam), and giving directions as to what is to be done in case of various defects or imperfections which may arise. The Preparatio ad Missam, which comes next, is a short*~~

~~*Mista L*~~

~~*to be used as opportunity may occur before and after celebration. Next comes the proper of the season (Proprium Missarum de Tempore), occupying more than half of the entire volume. It contains the proper introit, collect (one or more), epistle, gradual (tract or sequence), gospel, offertory, secreta (one or more), communion, and post-communion for every Sunday of the year, and also for the festivals and ferias connected with the ecclesiastical seasons, aS well as the offices peculiar to the ember days, Holy Week, Easter, and Whitsuntide. Between the office for Holy Saturday and that for Easter Sunday the ordinary of the mass (Ordo Missx), with the*~~

~~*solemn and proper pre- faces for the year, and the canon of the mass are inserted. The proper of the season is followed by the proper of the saints (Proprium Sanctorum), containing what is special to each saint's day in the order of the calendar, and by the Commune Sanctorum, containing such offices as the com- mon of one martyr and bishop, the common of one martyr not a bishop, the common of many martyrs in paschal time, the common of many martyrs out of paschal time, and the like. A variety of masses to be used at the feast of the dedication of a church, of masses for the dead, and of votive masses (as for thesick, for persons journeying, for bridegroom and bride) follow, and also certain benedictions. Most missals have an appendix also containing certain local masses of saints to be celebrated "ex indulto apostolico."*~~

~~*Masses fall into two great subdivisions :—(1) ordinary or regular (secundum ordinem officii), celebrated according to the regular rotation of fast and feast, vigil and feria, in the calendar ; (2) extraordinary or occasional (extra ordinem officii), being either "votive" or "for the dead," and from the nature of the case having no definite time prescribed for them. Festival masses are either double, half-double, or simple, an ordinary Sunday mass being a half-double. The difference depends on the number of collects and secrete ; on a double only one of each is offered, on a half-double there are two or three, and on a simple there may be as many as five, or even seven, of each. Any mass may be either high (missa solennis) or low (missa privata). The distinction depends upon the number of officiating clergy, certain differences of practice as to what is pro- nounced aloud and what inaudibly, the use or absence of incense, certain gestures, and the like. Solitary masses are forbidden; there must be at least an acolyte to give the responses. The vestments prescribed for the priest are the amice, alb, cingulum or girdle, maniple, stole, and chasuble (planeta) ; see Costums, vol. vi. p. 462. There are certain distinctions of course for a bishop or abbot. The colour of the vestments and of the drapery of the altar varies according to the day, being either white, red, green, violet, or black. This last custom does not go much further back than Innocent III., who explains the symbolism intended.*~~

~~*Subjoined is an account of the manner of celebrating high mass according to the rite at present in force.*~~

~~1. The priest who is to celebrate, having previously confessed (if necessary) and having finished matins and lauds, is to seek leisure for private prayer (fasting) and to use as he has opportunity the "* prayers before mass" already referred to. How the robing in the sacristy is next to be gone about is minutely prescribed, and prayers are given to be used as each article is put on. The sacramental elements having previously been placed on the altar or on a credence table, the celebrant enters the church and takes his stand before the lowest step of the altar, having the deacon on his right and the subdeacon on his left. After invoking the Trinity (In nomine Patris, &c.) he repeats alternately with those who are with him the psalm " Judica me, Deus," which is preceded in the usual way by an~~

~~antiphon (Introibo ad altare Dei), and followed also by the Gloria and Antiphon.! The versicle " Adjutorium nostrum," with its~~

~~u This antiphon is not to be confounded with the Antiphona ad Introitum further on. This use of the 43d Psalm goes as far back at least as the end of the 11th century, being mentioned by Micrologus~~

~~manual of devotion containing psalms, hymns, and prayers | (1080). It is omitted in masses for the dead and during Holy Week.~~

~~MIS—MIS~~

~~response "Qui fecit," is followed by the "' Confiteor,"? said alter- nately by the priest and by the attendants, who in turn respond with the prayer for divine forgiveness, " Misereatur." The priest then gives the absolution (" Indulgentiam "), and after the versicles and responses beginning " Deus, tu conversus" he audibly says, "Oremus," and ascending to the altar silently offers two short prayers, one asking for forgiveness and liberty of access through Christ, and another indulgence for himself 'through the merits of thy saints whose relics are here." Receiving the thurible from the deacon he incenses the altar, and is thereafter hiniself incensed by the deacon. He then reads the Introit, which is also sung by the choir ; the "' Kyrie Eleison" is then said, after which the words "Gloria in Excelsis "? are sung by the celebrant and the rest of the hymn completed by the choir.~~

~~2. Kissing the altar, and turning to the people with the formula '¢ Dominus vobiscum," the celebrant proceeds with the collect or col- lects proper to the season or day, which are read secretly. The epistle for the day is then read by the subdeacon, and is followed by the gradual, tract, alleluia, or sequence, according to the time.? This finished, the deacon places the book of the gospels on the altar, and the celebrant blesses the incense. The deacon kneels before the altar and offers the prayer '"' Munda cor meum," after- wards takes the book from the altar, and kneeling before the celebrant asks his blessing, which he receives with the words 'Dominus sit in corde tuo." Having kissed the hand of the priest, he goes accompanied by acolytes with incense and lighted candles to the pulpit, and with a " Dominus vobiscum " and minutely pre- scribed crossings and incensings gives out and reads the gospel for the day, at the close of which " Laus tibi, Christe" is said, and the book is brought to the celebrant and kissed with the words " Per evan- gelica dicta deleantur nostra delicta." Thecelebrant then standing at the middle of the altar sings the words " Credo in unum Deum," and the rest of the Nicene creed is sung by tlie choir.4~~

~~3. With " Dominus vobiscum" aud " Oremus" the celebrant proceeds to read the Offertory, which is also sung by the choir. This finished he receives the paten with the host from the deacon, and after offering the host with the prayer beginning " Suscipe, Sancte Pater" places it upon the corporal. The deacon then ministers wine and the snbdeacon water, and before the celebrant mixes the water with the wine he blesses it in the prayer " Deus qui humane." He then takes the chalice, and having offered it (" Offerimus tibi, Domine ") places it upon the corporal and covers it with the pall. Slightly bowing over the altar, he then offers the prayer "In spiritu humilitatis," and, lifting up his eyes and stretching out his hands, proceeds with " Veni sanctificator." After blessing the incense (" Per intercessionem beati Michaelis archangeli") he takes the thurible from the deacon and incenses the bread and wine and altar, and is afterwards himself incensed as well as the others in their order. Next going to the epistle side of the altar he washes his fingers as he recites the verses of the 26th Psalm beginning "Lavabo." Returning and bowing before the middle of the altar, with joined hands he says, "Suscipe, sancta Trinitas," then turning himself towards the people he raises his voice a little and says, "Orate, fratres" ("that my sacrifice and yours may be acceptable to God the Father Almighty"), the~~

~~*response to which is ‘“Suscipiat Dominus sacrificium de manibus tuis,” &c. He then recites the secret prayer or prayers, and at the end says, with an audible voice, “ Per omnia secula seculorum ” (R. “Amen”).*~~

~~*4, Again saluting with a “‘ Dominus vobiscum,” he lifts up his hands and goes on to the “Sursum Corda” and the rest of the Pre- face. A different intonation is given for each of the prefaces.® At the Sanctus the handbell is rung. If there is a choir the Sanctus is sung while the celebrant goes on with the Canon.* After the words of consecration of the wafer, which are said “secretly, dis- tinctly, and attentively,” the celebrant kneels and adores the host, rising elevates it, and replacing it on the corporal again*~~

~~*1 A form very similar to the present is given by Micrologus, and it is foreshadowed even in liturgical literature of the 8th century.*~~

~~*2 During Lent and Advent, and in masses for the dead, this is omitted. In low masses it is of course said, not sung (if it is to be said). It may be added that this early position of the Gloria in Excelsis is one of the features distinguishing Roman from Ephesine use.*~~

~~*3 The tract is peculiar to certain occasions, especially of a mournful nature, and is sung by a single voice. By a sequence is understood a more or less metrical composition, not in the words of Scripture, having a special bearing on the festival of the day. See, for example, the sequence, “ Lauda Sion Salvatorem,” on Corpus Christi day.*~~

~~*4 On certain days the Credo is omitted.*~~

~~*5 Now eleven; they were at one time niuch more numerous.*~~

~~*6 The approved usage appears to be in that case that it is sung as far as “ Hosanna in Excelsis”’ before the elevation, and “ Benedictus qui venit”’ is reserved till afterwards. In France it was a very com- mon custom, made general for a time at the request of Louis XII., to sing ‘GO salutaris hostia”’ at the elevation.*~~

~~*oll*~~

~~adores it (the bell meanwhile being rung).? The same rite is observed when the chalice is consecrated. Immediately before the Lord's Prayer, at the words " per ipsum et cum ipso et in ipso," the sign of the cross is made three times over the chalice with the host, and towards the close of the "' embolism" the fraction of the host takes place. After the words " Pax Domini sit semper vobis- cum" the emission of the particle into the cup takes place with the words " Hac commixtio et consecratio," &c. The celebrant then says the Agnus Dei three tines.~~

~~5. While the choir sings the Agnus Dei and the Communion, the celebraut proceeds, still ' secrete," with the remainder of the office, which though printed as part of the canon is more conveniently called the Communion and Post-communion. After the prayer for the peace and unity of the church ("Domine Jesu Christe, qui dixisti") he salutes the deacon with the kiss of peace, saying, " Pax tecum"; the subdeacon is saluted in like manner, and then conveys the '" pax" to the rest of the clergy who may be assisting. The cele- brant then communicates under both species with suitable prayers and actions, and afterwards adniinisters the sacrament to the other communicants if there be any. Then while the wine is poured into the cup for the first ablution he says, " Quod ore sumpsimus" ; having taken it he says, " Corpus tuum, Domine." After the second ablution he goes to the book and reads the Communion. Then turn- ing to the people with " Dominus vobiscum" he reads the Post- communion (one or more); turning once more to the congregation he uses the old dismissal formula " Dominus vobiscum" (#. Et cum spiritu tuo), and "Ite, missa est" [or " Benedicamus Domino," in those masses from which " Gloria in Excelsis" has been omitted] (R.-Deo Gratias). Bowing down before the altar he offers the prayer "¢Placeat tibi, sancta Trinitas," then turning round he makes the sign of the cross over the congregation with the words of thc benediction (" Benedicat").§ He then reads the passage from the gospel of John beginning with "In principio erat Verbuin," or else the proper gospel of the day.® (J. S. BL.)~~

~~MISSIONS. The history of Christian missions may, for practical purposes, be best divided into three chief periods—(1) the primitive, (2) the medieval, and (3) the modern. None of these periods can be neglected, for they have an intimate connexion with each other, and illustrate the activity~~

~~*respectively of individuals, of the church in her corporate capacity, and of societies.*~~

~~*1. The Primitive Period.*~~

~~*Christian missions had their origin in the example and the command of our Lord Himself (Matt. xxviii. 19); and the unparalleled boldness on the part of the Founder of Christianity, which dared to anticipate for the Christian faith a succession of efforts which should never cease to cause its propagation to be undertaken as "a distinct and direct work," has been justified by the voice of history.!° Whereas other religions have spread from country to country as component parts of popular opinion, have travelled with migration or conquest, have passed in the train of things and by the usual channels of communica- tion, the first foundations of the church had hardly been laid before individual missionary activity marked the life of each one of the circle of the apostles.*~~

~~*Of the actual details of their labours we have been per- mitted to know but little. Three only of the immediate followers of the Saviour have any conspicuous place in the apostolic records, and the most illustrious in the whole domain of missionary activity, St Paul, did not belong to the original twelve. His activity took the form of journeys and voyages, chiefly to large towns, where his message found a point of contact either with the Jewish synagogue or the aspirations of the Gentile world. The result of his labours and of those of his successors*~~

~~*7' The history of the practice of elevating the host is somewhat obscure. It seems to have arisen out of the custom of holding up the oblations, as mentioned in the Ordo Romanus (see above). The elevation of the host, as at present practised, was first enjoined by Pope Honorius III. The use of the handbell at the elevation is still later, and was first made general by Gregory XI.*~~

~~*8 The benediction is omitted in masses for the dead.*~~

~~*®8 The reading of the passage from John on days which had not a proper gospel was first enjoined by Pins V.*~~

~~10 Davison, On Prophecy, p. 278.~~

~~was that towards the middle of the 2d century the church had gradually extended its conquests through Asia Minor, Greece, Italy, southern Gaul, and northern Africa.! Ecclesiastical history can tell but little of the church's earliest teachers, and the infancy of many of the primitive congregations is wrapped in hopeless darkness. Whatever was effected was due to the evangelizing labours of individual bishops and clergy, who occupied themselves "in season and out of season," and toiled zealously and effectively in the spread of the church, though leaving no record of their devotion. representatives of this individual activity in the 4th and 5th centuries may be mentioned Ulfila, the " apostle of the Goths," about 325; Frumentius, a bishop of Abyssinia, about 327; Chrysostom, who founded at Constantinople in 404 A.D. an institution in which Goths might be trained to preach the gospel to their own people ;? Valentinus, the "apostle of Noricum," about 440; and Honoratus, who from his monastic home in the islet of Lerins, about 410, sent forth numerous labourers to southern and western Gaul, to become the leading missionaries of their day among the masses of heathendom in the neighbourhood of Arles, Lyons, Troyes, Metz, and Nice.~~

~~2. The Medizval Period.~~

~~With the 5th century the church found a very different element proposed to her missionary energies and zeal. Her outposts of civilization had scarcely been planted when she was confronted with numberless hordes which had long been gathering afar off in their native wilds, and which were now precipitated over the entire face of Europe. Having for some time ceased to plead for toleration, and learnt: to be aggressive, she not only stood the shock of change but girded herself for the difficult work of calming the agitated elements of society, of teaching the nations a higher faith than a savage form of nature worship, of purifying and refining their recklessness, independence, and uncontrollable love of liberty, and fitting them to become members of an enlightened Christendom.~~

~~*(a) The Celtic Missionaries.—The first pioneers who went forth to engage in this difficult enterprise came from the secluded Celtic churches of Ireland and the Scottish Highlands, which, though almost forgotten amidst the desolating contest which was breaking up the Roman world, were no sooner founded than they sent forth "armies of Scots" to pour back upon the Continent the gifts of civilization and the gospel. Of many who deserve mention in connexion with this period, the most prominent were—Columba, the founder of the famous monastery of Iona, and the evangelizer of the Albanian Scots and northern Picts; Aidan, the apostle of Northumbria ; Columbanus, the apostle of the Burgundians of the Vosges ; Callich or Gallus, the evangelizer of north-eastern Switzer- land and Alemannia; Kilian, the apostle of Thuringia ; and Trudpert, the martyr of the Black Forest. The zeal of these singular men at the head of ardent disciples seemed to take the world by storm. Travelling generally in companies, and carrying a simple outfit, these Celtic pioneers flung themselves on the Continent of Europe, and, not content with reproducing at Annegray or Luxeuil the willow or brushwood huts, the chapel and the round tower which they had left behind in Derry or in the island of Hy, they braved the dangers of the northern seas, and pene- trated as far as the Faroes and even far distant Iceland.?*~~

~~*(b) The English Missionaries—Thus they laid the foundations, awing the heathen tribes by their indomitable spirit of self-sacrifice and the sternness of their rule of life.*~~

~~*1 Justin, Dial. c. 117; Tertull., Apol., 37; Id., Adv. Jud., 7. 2 Theodoret, H.#., v. 30. 2 See A. W. Haddan, "Scots on the Continent," Remains, p. 256.*~~

~~*Amongst the most distinguished |*~~

~~*MLSs 1 NS*~~

~~*But, marvellous as it was, their work lacked the element of permanence ; and it became clear that if Europe was to be carried through the dissolution of the old society, and missionary operations consolidated, a more practical system must be devised and carried out. The men for this work were now ready. Restored to the commonwealth of nations by the labours of the followers of Augustine of Canterbury and the Celtic missionaries from Iona,*~~

~~*the sons of the newly evangelized English churches were ready to go forth to the help of their Teutonic brothers in the German forests. The energy which warriors were accustomed to put forth in their efforts to conquer was now "exhibited in the enterprise of conversion and teaching" * by Wilfrid on the coast of Friesland,® by Willibrord in the neighbourhood of Utrecht, by the martyr-brothers Ewald or Hewald amongst the "old" or continental Saxons,' by Swidbert the apostle of the tribes between the Ems and the Yssel, by Adelbert, a prince of the royal house of Northumbria, in the regions north of Holland, by Wursing, a native of Friesland, and one of the disciples of Willibrord, in the same region, and last, not least, by the famous Winfrid or Boniface, the "apostle of Germany," who went forth first to assist Willibrord at Utrecht, then to labour in Thuringia and Upper Hessia, then, with the aid of his kinsmen Wunibald and Willibald, their sister Walpurga, and her thirty companions, to consolidate the work of earlier missionaries, and finally to die a martyr on the shore of the Zuyder Zee.*~~

~~*(c) Scandinavian Missions.—Devoted, however, as were the labours of Boniface and his disciples, the battle was not yet nearly won. All that he and they and the emperor Charlemagne after them achieved for the fierce untutored world of the 8th century seemed to have been done in vain when, in the 9th, "on the north and north-west the pagan Scandinavians were hanging about every coast, and pouring in at every inlet; when on the east the pagan Hungarians were swarming like locusts and devastating Europe from the Baltic to the Alps; when on the south and south-east the Saracens were pressing on and on with their victorious hosts. It seemed then as if every pore of life were choked, and Christendom must be stifled and smothered in the fatal embrace."® But it was even now that one of the most intrepid of missionary enterprises was undertaken, and the devoted Anskar went forth and proved himself a true apostle of Denmark and Sweden, sought out the Scandinavian viking in his native home and icy fiords, and, after persevering in the face of apparently insurmountable difficulties and hardships, handed on the torch of self-denying zeal to others, who "casting their bread on the waters" saw, after the lapse of many years, the close of the monotonous tale of burning churches and pillaged monasteries, and taught the fierce Northman to lay aside his old habits of piracy, and gradually learn respect for civilized institutions,*~~

~~*(d) Slavonic Missions.—Thus the "gospel of the kingdom" was successively proclaimed to the Roman, the Celtic, the Teutonic, and the Scandinavian world. A contest still more stubborn remained with the Slavonic tribes, with their triple and many-headed divinities, their powers of good and powers of evil, who could be approached only with fear and horror, and propitiated only with human sacrifices. Mission work commenced in Bulgaria during the latter part of the 9th century; thence it extended to Moravia, where two Greek missionaries—Cyril and Methodius—provided for the people a Slavonic Bible*~~

~~*4 Church, Gifts of Civilization, p. 330. 5 Bede, H.H., v. 19*~~

~~*6 ** Annal. Xantenses," Pertz, Mon. Germ., ii. 220. 7 Bede, H.E., v. 10.*~~

~~*8 See Lightfoot, Ancient and Modern Missions.*~~

~~*mission sd*~~

~~*and a Slavonic Liturgy; thence to Bohemia, and so onwards to the Scythian wilds and level steppes, where arose the Russian kingdom of Ruric the Northman, and where about the close of the 10th century the Eastern Church "silently and almost unconsciously bore into the world her mightiest offspring." But, though the baptism of Vladimir and the flinging of the triple and many-headed idols into the waters of the Dnieper was a heavy blow to Slavonic idolatry, mission work was carried on with but partial success ; and it taxed all the energies of Albrecht, bishop of Bremen, of Vicilin, bishop of Oldenburg, of Bishop Otto of Bamberg the apostle of the Pomeranians, of Adalbert the martyr-apostle of Prussia, to spread the word in that country, in Lithuania, and in the territory of the Wends. It was not till 1168 that the gigantic four- headed image of Swantevit was destroyed at Arcona, the capital of the island of Riigen, and this Mona of Slavonic superstition was included in the advancing circle of Christian civilization. As late as 1230 human sacrifices were still being offered up in Prussia and Lithuania, and, in spite of all the efforts of the Teutonic Knights to expel by force the last remains of heathenism from the face of Europe, idolatrous practices still lingered amongst the people, while in the districts inhabited by the Lapps, though successful missions had _ been inaugurated*~~

~~*as early as 1335, Christianity cannot be said to have become the dominant religion till at least two centuries later.*~~

~~*(ee) Moslem Missions—The mention of the order of the Teutonic Knights reminds us how the crusading spirit had affected Christendom, and exchanged the patience of a Boniface or an Anskar for the fiery zeal of the warrior of the cross. Still it is refreshing to notice how even now there was found the famous Raymond Lully to protest against propagandism by the sword, to urge on pope after pope the necessity of missions amongst the Moslems, and to seal his testimony with his blood outside the gates of Bugiah in northern Africa (June 30, 1315). Out of the crusades, however, arose other efforts to bear the banner of the cross into the lands of the East, and to develop the work which Nestorian missionaries from Baghdad, Edessa, and Nisibis had already inaugurated along the Malabar coast, in the island of Ceylon, and in the neighbourhood of the Caspian Sea. In 1245 the Roman pontiff sent two embassies, one to charge the Mongol warriors to desist from their desolating inroads into Europe, the other to attempt to win them over to the Christian faith.. The first, a party of four Dominicans, sought the commander-in-chief of the Mongol forces in Persia ; the second, consisting of Franciscans, made their way into Tartary, and sought to convert the successor of Oktai-Khan. Their exertions were seconded in 1253 by the labours of another Franciscan whom Louis IX. of France sent forth from Cyprus,? while in 1274 the celebrated traveller Marco Polo, accompanied by two learned Dominicans, visited the court of Kublai-Khan, and at the commencement of the 14th century two Franciscans penetrated as far as Peking, and kept alive a flickering spark of Christianity in the Tartar kingdom, even translating the New Testament and the Psalter into the Tartar language, and training youths for a native ministry.?*~~

~~*(f) Missions to India and the New World.—These ten- tative missions in the East were now to be supplemented by others on a larger scale. In 1486 the Cape of Good Hope was rounded by Dias, and in 1508 the foundations of the*~~

~~*1Stanley, Hastern Church, p. 294.*~~

~~*2 Neander, vii. 69; Hakluyt, 171; Hue, i. 207.*~~

~~*3 Neander, vii. 79; Gieseler, iv. 259, 260; Hardwick, Middle Ages,*~~

~~*235-337,*~~

~~*513*~~

~~*Portuguese Indian empire were laid by Albuquerque. Columbus also in 1492 had landed on San Salvador, and the voyages of the Venetian Cabot along the coast of North America opened up a new world to missionary enterprise. These bold discoverers had secured the countenance of the pope on the condition that wherever they might plant a flag they should be also zealous in promoting the extension of the Christian faith, Thus a grand opportunity was given to the churches of Portugal and Spain. But the zeal of the Portuguese, even when not choked by the rising lust of wealth and territorial power, took too often a one-sided direction, repressing the Syrian Christians on the Malabar coast, and interfering with the Abyssinian Church,* while the fanatic temper of the Spaniard, maddened by his prolonged conflict with the infidel at home, betrayed him into methods of propagating his faith which we cannot contemplate without a shudder, consigning, in Mexico and Peru, multitudes who would not renounce their heathen errors to indiscriminate massacre or abject slavery. Their only defender for many years was the famous Las Casas, who, having sojourned amongst them till 1516, has drawn a terrible picture of the oppression he strove in vain to prevent.© Some steps indeed were taken for disseminating Christian principles, and the pope in granting territory to the crowns of Spain and Portugal had specially urged this duty, and had been instrumental in inducing a band of missionaries, chiefly of the mendicant orders, to go forth to this new mission field? But the results were scanty. Only five bishoprics had been established by 1520, and the number of genuine con- verts was small. In settling, however, his realm the conqueror of Mexico evinced no little solicitude for the spiritual welfare of his charge; and the labours of the devoted men whom he begged the emperor to send out were successful in banishing every vestige of the Aztec worship from the Spanish settlements.®*~~

~~*(g) The Jesuit Missions.—It was during the period at which we have now arrived that the great organization of the Jesuits came into existence, and one of the first of Loyola's associates, Francis Xavier, was also one of the*~~

~~*greatest and most zealous missionaries of his or any other era. Encouraged by the joint co-operation of the pope and of John III. of Portugal, and strongly tinged like Loyola with ideas of chivalry and self-devotion, he disem- barked at Goa on the 6th of May 1542, and before his death on the Isle of St John (Hiang-Shang), December 2, 1552, he had roused the European Christians of Goa to a new life, laboured with singular success amongst the Para- vars, a fisher caste near Cape Comorin, gathered many converts in the kingdom of Travancore, visited the island of Malacca, made his way to and founded a mission in Japan, thence revisited Goa, and impelled by the quenchless desire to unfurl the banner of the cross in China, had set out thither to fall a victim to malignant fever at the early age of forty-six, within sight of that vast empire whose conversion had been the object of his holy ambition.*~~

~~*The immediate successor of Xavier, Antonio Criminalis, was regarded by the Jesuits as the first martyr of their society (1562). Mattheo Ricci, an Italian by birth, was also an indefatigable missionary in China for twenty-seven years, while the peculiar methods of unholy compromise with Brahmanism in India followed by Robert de' Nobili drew down the condemnatory briefs of pope after pope, and were fatal to the vitality of his own and other missions.*~~

~~*4 Geddes, History of the Church of Malabar, p. 4; Neale, Lastern Church, ii, 343. : 5 Prescott, Conquest of Mexico, i. 318, iii, 218. 6 Relacion de la Destruycion de las Indias. 7 Prescott, Afexico, iii, 218 n 8 Prescott, iii. 219. Vive OF*~~

~~*514*~~

~~*Other representatives of the same order worked with success in evangelizing the Spanish settlement of Paraguay in 1582, while their defeated foes the Huguenots sent forth under a French knight of Malta a body of devoted men to attempt the formation of a Christian colony at Rio Janeiro. By the close of the 16th century the unflag- ging zeal of the Jesuits led to a more complete development and organization of the missionary system of the Roman Church. To give unity and solidity to the work of missions, a committee of cardinals was appointed under the name of the "Congregatio de propaganda fide," and to it was entrusted the entire*~~

~~*management of the mission, conducted under the superintendence of the pope. The scheme origin- ated with Gregory XIII, but was not fully organized till forty years afterwards, when Gregory XV. gave it plenary authority by a bull dated June 2, 1622. Gregory's suc- cessor, Urban VIIL, supplemented the establishment of the congregation by founding in connexion with it a great missionary college, where Europeans might be trained for foreign labours, and natives might be educated to undertake mission work wherever new colonies were settled. At this college is the missionary printing-press of the Roman Church, and its library contains an unrivalled collection of literary treasures bearing on the particular work. From its walls have gone forth numbers of devoted men, who have proved themselves able to promote in a singular degree the enlargement of the boundaries of the church by means of material as well as spiritual forces.*~~

~~*38. The Modern Period.*~~

~~*This last period of missionary activity is distinguished in a special degree by the exertions of societies for the development of mission work.*~~

~~*As contrasted with the colossal display of power on the part of the Church of Rome, it must be allowed that the churches which in the 16th century broke off from their allegiance to the Latin centre at first presented a great lack of anxiety for the extension of the gospel and the salvation of the heathen. The causes of this, however, are not far to seek. The isolation of the Teutonic churches from the vast system with which they had been bound up, the conflicts and troubles among themselves, the necessity of fixing their own principles and defining their own rights, concentrated their attention upon themselves and their own home work, to the neglect of work abroad.*~~

~~*Still the development of the maritime power of England, which the Portuguese and Spanish monarchies noted with fear and jealousy, was distinguished by a singular anxiety for the spread of the Christian faith. Edward VI. in his instructions to the navigators in Willoughby's fleet, Cabot in those for the direction of the intended voyage to Cathay, good old Hakluyt, who promoted many voyages of dis-*~~

~~*covery in addition to writing their history, agree with.*~~

~~*Sir Humphrey Gilbert's chronicler that "the sowing of Christianity must be the chief intent of such as shall make any attempt at foreign discovery, or else whatever is builded upon other foundation shall never obtain happy success or continuance." When on the last day of the year 1600 Queen Elizabeth granted a charter to George, earl of Cumberland, and other "adventurers," to be a body- corporate by the name of "The Governor and Company of Merchants of London trading with the East Indies," the expressed recognition of higher duties than those of com- merce may by some be deemed a mere matter of form and, to use the words of Bacon, "what was first in God's providence was but second in man's appetite and intention." Yet a keen sense of missionary duty marks many of the chronicles of English mariners. Notably was this the case with the establishment of the first English colony in America, that of Virginia, by Sir Walter Raleigh. The*~~

~~*Miss oO Ns*~~

~~*philosopher Heriot, one of his colleagues, laboured for the conversion of the natives, amongst whom the first baptism is recorded to have taken place on August 13, 1587.1 Raleigh himself presented as a parting gift to the Virginian Company the sum of £100 "for the propagation of the Christian religion" in that settlement.2, When James I. granted letters patent for the occupation of Virginia it was directed that the "word and service of God be preached, planted, and used as well in the said colonies as also as much as might be among the savages bordering among them"; and the honoured names of Nicolas Ferrar, John Ferrar, Dr Donne, and Sir John Sandys, a pupil of Hooker, are all found on the council by which the home management of the colony was conducted.*~~

~~*In the year 1618 was published Zhe True Honour of Navigation and Navigators, by John Wood, D.D., dedicated to Sir Thomas Smith, governor to the East India Company, and much about the same time appeared the well-known treatise of the famous Grotius, De Veritate Religionis Christiane, written for the express use of settlers in distant lands. The wants, moreover, of the North American colonies did not escape the attention of Archbishop Laud during his official connexion with them as bishop of London, and he was developing a plan for promoting a local*~~

~~*episcopate there when his troubles began and his scheme was interrupted. During the Protectorate, in 1649, an ordinance was passed for "the promoting and propagating of the gospel of Jesus Christ in New England" by the erection of a corporation, to be called by the name of the President and Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England, to receive and dispose of moneys for the purpose, and a general collection was ordered to be made in all the parishes of England and Wales; and Cromwell himself desired a scheme for setting up a council for the Protestant religion, which should rival the Roman Propaganda, and consist of seven councillors and four secretaries for different provinces. On the restoration of the monarchy, through the influence of Richard Baxter with Lord Chancellor Hyde, the charter already granted by Cromwell was renewed, and its powers were enlarged. For now the corporation was styled "The Propagation of the Gospel in New England and the parts adjacent in America," and its object was defined to be "not only to seek the outward welfare and prosperity of those colonies, but more especially to endeavour the good and salvation of their immortal souls, and the publishing the most glorious gospel of Christ among them." On the list of the corporation the first name is the earl of Clarendon, while the Hon. Robert Boyle was appointed president. Amongst the most eminent of its missionaries was the celebrated John Eliot, who, encouraged by Boyle, and assisted by him with considerable sums of money, brought out the Bible in the Indian language in 1661-64, having revealed at the end of the Indian grammar which he had composed the secret of his success: "prayer and pains, through faith in Jesus Christ, will do anything." Boyle displayed in other ways his zeal for the cause of missions. He contributed to the expense of printing and publishing at Oxford the four Gospels and the Acts of the Apostles in the Malay language, and at his death left £5400 for the propagation of the gospel in heathen lands.*~~

~~*The needs of the colonial church soon excited the attention of others also, and great efforts were made by Bishop Beveridge, Archbishop Wake, Archbishop Sharpe, Bishop Gibson, and afterwards by the philosophic Bishop Berkeley, and Bishop Butler, the famous author of the Analogy, to*~~

~~*1 Hakluyt, Voyages, iif. 345.*~~

~~2 Oldy, Life of Raleigh, p. 118.~~

~~° Neale, History of New England, i. p. 260; Burnet, History of his own Times, i. p. 182.~~

~~MISS TONS~~

~~develop the colonial church and provide for the wants of the Indian tribes. In 1696 Dr Bray, at the request of the gover- nor and assembly of Maryland, was selected by the bishop of London as ecclesiastical commissary ; and, having sold his effects, and raised money on credit, he sailed for Maryland in 1699, where he promoted, in various ways, the interests of the church. Returning to England in 1700-1, and supported by all the weight of Archbishop Tenison and Bishop Compton, he was graciously received by William IIT., and received letters patent under the great seal of England for creating a corporation by the name of the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts" on the 16th of June 1701.~~

~~With the establishment of this corporation the era of the activity of societies for carrying out mission work may be said to commence, though the opening of the 18th century saw other movements set on foot for the same object. Thus in 1705 Frederick IV. of Denmark founded a mission on the Coromandel coast, and inaugurated the labours of Ziegenbalg, Schultze, and Schwartz, whose devotion and success told with such remarkable reflex influence on the church at home. Again in 1731 the Moravians illustrated in a signal degree the growing consciousness of obligation towards the heathen. Driven by persecution from Moravia, hunted into mountain-caves and forests, they had scarcely secured a place of refuge in Saxony before, "though a mere handful in nunibers, yet with the spirit of men banded for daring and righteous deeds, they formed the heroic design, and vowed the execution of it before God, of bearing the gospel to the savage and perishing tribes of Greenland and the West Indies, of whose condition report had brought a mournful rumour to their ears." And so, literally with "neither bread nor scrip," they went forth on their pilgrimage, and, incredible as it sounds, within ten years they had established missions in the islands of the West Indies, in South America, Surinam, Greenland, among~~

~~*the North American tribes, in Lapland, Tartary, Algiers, Guinea, the Cape of Good Hope, and Ceylon.!*~~

~~*Such were the preparations for the more general move- ments during the last hundred years, and the manifesta- tion of missionary zeal on a scale to which it would be diffi- cult to find a parallel in Western Christianity.*~~

~~*The progress that has been made may be best judged of from consideration of the following details :—*~~

~~*(a) At the close of the last century there were only seven missionary societies in existence, properly so called. Of these three only, the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, the Halle-Danish Society, and the Moravians, had been at work for the greater part of the century, whilst four, the Church Missionary Society, the Baptist Missionary Society, the London Missionary Society, and the Dutch Society at Rotterdam, began their work only in its tenth decade. To-day these seven have, in Europe and America alone, increased to upwards of seventy, and to these must be added, not only several independent societies in the colonies, but numerous missionary associations on a smaller scale, the offspring of English and American societies.*~~

~~*(b) The following chronological lists illustrate the growth of missionary societies in Britain and the United States :—*~~

~~*Great Britain and Ireland.*~~

~~*Christian Faith Society for the West Indies.*~~

~~*Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge.*~~

~~*Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. Moravian (Episcopal) Missions of the United Brethren, Baptist Missionary Society.*~~

~~*London Missionary Society.*~~

~~*Scottish Missionary Society.*~~

~~*Church Missionary Society.*~~

~~*Religious Tract Society.*~~

~~*British and Foreign Bible Society.*~~

~~*London Society for Promoting Christianity among the Jews. Wesleyan Missionary Society.*~~

~~*General Baptist Missionary Society.*~~

~~*Colonial and Continental Church Society.*~~

~~*Church of Scotland Mission Boards.*~~

~~*National Bible Soeicty of Scotland.*~~

~~*1691, _1698. 1701. 1732, 1792. 1795, 1796, 1799. _1799. 1804, 1808, 1813. 1817, 1823, 1829,*~~

~~*d15*~~

~~*| eg Trinitarlan Bible Soelety.*~~

~~*32. Wesleyan Ladies' Auxiliary for Female Edueation in Foreign Countries. 1854, Society for Promoting Female Education in the East. 1835. United Seeession (now United Presbyterian) Foreign Missions. 1836. Colonial Missionary Society. 1840. Foreign Aid Suciety. Coral Missionary Fund. 1840, Welsh Calvinistic Methodist Missionary Society. 1841. Colonial Bishoprics Fund. 1841. Edinburgh Medical Missionary Society. Waldensian Missions Aid Fund. 1843. British Society for the Propagation of the Gospel among the Jews. 1843. Free Church of Scotland Missions. 1843. Primitive Methodist African and Colonial Missions. Methodist New Connexion in England Foreign Missions. 1844, South American Missionary Society. 1849. Evangelical Continental Society. 1852. Indian Female Normal School Society. 1853. Lebanon Schools, 1855. Presbyterian Church in England Foreign Missions. 1856. Turkish Missions Aid Society. 1856. United Methodist Free Churches Foreign Missions. 1858. Christian Vernacular Education Society for India. 1860, Central African Mission of the English Universities. 1860. British Syrian Schools. Melanesian Mission. 1865.*~~

~~*Ladies' Association for Promoting Female Education among the Heathen, 1866, China Inland Mission. 1867. Delhi Female Medical Mission. 1867. '* Friends" Foreign Mission Association. 1868. Cape Town Aid Association. 1869, " Friends" Mission in Syria and Palestine. Irish Presbyterian Missions. 1876. Spanish and Portuguese Church Aid Society. Columbia Mission. Original Secession Church Indian Mission. 1877, Cambridge Mission to DeJhi. 1880. Church of England Zenana Missionary Society.*~~

~~*United States of America.*~~

~~*1733, Corporation for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England. 1787. Society for Propagating the Gospel among the Indians at Boston. 1800. New York Missionary Society. Connecticut Missionary Society for Indians, 1808. United States Mission to the Cherokees. 1806, Western Missionary Society for Indians. 1810. Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. 1814, Baptist Missionary Union. 1833, Free-will Baptist Foreign Missionary Society in India. 1835. Foreign Missions of the Protestant Episcopal Church. 1837. Board of Foreign Missions of the Presbyterian Church, 1837, Evangelical Lutheran Foreign Missionary Society. 1839. Methodist Episcopal Church Missionary Society. 1842. Seventh Day Baptist Missionary Society. Strict Baptist Missionary Society. 1843. Baptist Free Missionary Society. 1845. Methodist Episcopal Church, South. 1845. Southern Baptist Convention. 1846. American Missionary Association. 1857, Board of Foreign Missions of (Dutch) Reformed Church. 1859. Board of Foreign Missions of United Presbyterian Ciurch. American United Brethren, Moravian. United States German Evangelical Missionary Society. American Mexican Association. : Indian Home Missionary Association: Indian Missionary Association. Local Baptist Missionary Society. Women's Union Zenana Missionary Society.*~~

~~*(c) At the beginning of the present century the total sum con- tributed for Protestant missions can hardly be said to have amounted to £50,000; in 1882 the amount raised by British con- tributions alone to foreign missions amounted to upwards of £1,090,000,? thus divided :—*~~

~~*Church of England Missions…….. sieateceeccertantesenceczsencre soseee £460,935 Joint Societies of Churchmen and Nonconforimists……..*~~

~~153,320 Nonconformist Societies, English and Welsh,.....++-++++00+~~
~~313,177 Scottish and Irlsh Societies.....see- Saredep ses 5~~

~~Roman Catholic Societies.....sccesesesecsereeeeccrecsserserereneseres~~

~~(d) At the same date it is calculated that there were about 5000 heathen converts under instruction, not counting those belonging to the Roman Catholic missions. At the present day the converts from heathenism may be estimated certainly at no less than 1,800,000, a single year (1878) showing an increase of about 60,000.~~

~~(c) When the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel was founded in 1701, there were probably not twenty clergymen of the Church of England in foreign parts. The spiritual condition of the settlers in Ameriea and elsewhere was terrible in the extreme, and no effort was then made by the church to win over the heathen to Christ. But now the position which the church holds in the British colonies and dependencies and many parts of heathendom is recognized by all. In those regions where the society labours, aud which before it commenced its work were spiritually the 'waste places" of the earth, there are, ineluding the American Church (the first fruits of the society's efforts), 138 bishops, more than 5000 clergy, and upwards of 2,000,000 members of the communion.~~

~~The above tables sufficiently indicate how varied are the missionary agencies now at work, covering the heathen~~

~~1 Holmes, /ist. Sketches of the Missions of the United Brethren, p. 3; Grant, Bampton Lectures, p. 190.~~

~~2 See Seott Robertson, Analysis of British Contributions to Foreign~~

~~| Iissions, 1888.~~

~~world with a network of mission outposts, which within the last century have won nearly two millions of converts to the Christian faith.~~

~~*The continuity of missionary enthusiasm maintained through the primitive, the medieval, and the modern periods of the church's history, operating at every critical epoch, and surviving after periods of stagnation and depression, is a very significant fact. It is true that other religions have been called missionary religions, and that one of them occupies the first place in the religious census of mankind.? But the missionary activity of Buddhism is a thing of the past, and no characteristic rite distinguishing it has found its way into a second continent; while, as for Mohammedanism, the character of its teaching is too exact a reflexion of the race, time, place, and climate in which it arose to admit of its becoming universal.2. These and other religions of the far East may still maintain their hold over millions, but it must be admitted that their prospect of endurance in the presence of advancing Christianity is very small, and it is difficult to trace the slightest probability of their harmonizing with the intellectual, socia], and moral progress of the modern world. With all its deficiencies, the Christian church has gained the "nations of the future," and whereas in the 3d century the proportion of Christians to the whole human race was only that of one in a hundred and fifty, this has now been exchanged for one in five,' and it is indisputable that the progress of the human race at this moment is entirely identified with the spread of the influence of the nations of Christendom.*~~

~~*Side by side with this continuity of missionary zeal, a noticeable feature is the immense influence of individual energy and the subduing force of personal character. Around individuals penetrated with Christian zeal and self- denial has centred not merely the life, but the very existence, of primitive, mediaeval, and modern missions. What Ulfila was to the Gothic tribes, what Columba and his disciples were to the early Celtic missions, what Augustine or Aidan was to the British Isles, what Boni- face was to the churches of Germany and Anskar to those of Denmark and Sweden, that, on the discovery of a new world of missionary enterprise, was Xavier to India, Hans Egede to Greenland, Eliot to the Red Indians, Martyn to the church of Cawnpore, Marsden to the Maoris, Carey and Marshman to Burmah, Heber, Wilson, Milman, and Duff to India, Gray, Livingstone, Mackenzie, Steere, Callaway to Africa, Broughton to Australia, Patteson to Melanesia, Mountain and Feild to Newfoundland, Crowther to the Niger Territory, Brett to Guiana. At the most critical epochs such men have ever been raised up, and the reflex influence of their lives and self-denial has told upon the*~~

~~*church at home, while apart from their influence the entire history of important portions of the world's surface would have been altered.*~~

~~*If from the agents themselves we turn to the work that has been accomplished it will not be disputed that the success of missions has been marked amongst rude and aboriginal tribes. What was true in the early missions has been found true in these latter times. The rude and barbarous northern peoples seemed to fall like "full ripe fruit before the first breath of the gospel." The Goths and the Vandals who poured down upon the Roman empire were evangelized so silently and rapidly that only a fact here and there relating to their conversion has been preserved. Now this is exactly analogous to modern experience in the South Seas, America, and Africa, We must here content ourselves with a cursory survey*~~

~~*1 Max Miiller, Chips, iv. p. 265.*~~

~~*2 Newman, Grammar of Assent, p. 424.*~~

~~*3 Lightfoot, Comparative Progress of Ancient and Modern Missions, Das*~~

~~*of what missionary enterprise has accomplished in those regions and among the more civilized nations of Eastern Asia.*~~

~~*The South Seas.—That missions have done much in these regions in suppressing cannibalism, human sacrifices, and infanticide, humanizing the laws of war, and elevating the social condition of women, is a fact confirmed by the researches of Meinicke, Waitz, Gerland, Oberlander, and even of Darwin.4*~~

~~*In Australia work among the aborigines, wherever it has been zealously conducted, has been blessed with signal success. Amongst the Papuans the Moravian stations of Ebenezer in the district of Wimmera, and Ramahyuck in that of Gippsland, can point to their little villages of 125 native Christian inhabitants, their cleanly houses, and their well-ordered churches. In the district of South Adelaide, at Point Macleay, the Scottish Presbyterian Mission has been similarly successful, while in New Zealand the native*~~

~~*population was converted almost within a single generation. In the islands north and north-west of Australia the Dutch missionaries have been especially successful in the Minahassa (see CELEBES), of whose 114,000 inhabitants more than 80,000 have been won over to the Christian faith, forming 195 communities with 125 schools; and in southern Borneo, the Rhenish Mission in the south and the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in the north have been enabled to establish themselves firmly, while the former society has also done a great work among the Battaks in Sumatra. Amongst the dark-coloured races of Polynesia missionary work has made great advances through the labours of the London Missionary Society, the Wesleyans, and the American Board. Making Tahiti its basis of operations, the first-named society has carried on missionary operations in the islands of Australasia, Hervey, Sarnoa, Tokelau, and Ellice, while the American Board has witnessed equally favourable results in the Sandwich Islands, and in Micronesia (Caroline, Marshall, and Gilbert Islands) the agents of the Hawaiian Association are actively at work under the direction of American missionaries. In Melanesia the Soeicty for the Propagation of the Gospel, the Wesleyans, the London Missionary Society, and the Presbyterians are all actively engaged. The Fiji group stands out as one of the most promising centres of Christian eivilization, and the governor, Sir A. Gordon, was enabled to report in 1879 that, out of a population of about 120,000, 102,000 are now regular worshippers in the churches, which number 800, while over 42,000 children are in attendance in 1534 Christian day schools. The Loyalty Islands have been occupied partly by Roman Catholic missions and partly by the London Missionary Society, while in the New Hebrides the missionaries of the Free Church of Scotland and of the Presby- terian churches of Canada, New Zealand, and Australia, in spite of many obstacles, the unhealthiness of the climate, and the variety of the dialects spoken, have upwards of 3000 natives receiving Christian teaching, 800 communicants, and 100 native teachers. On the islands of Banks, Santa Cruz, and Solomon, the English Episcopal Church is achieving no little success, sending native youths for months at atime to Norfolk Island to receive instruction, whence they return again-in order to spread the knowledge of truth at home. These islands will ever be famous in connexion with the martyr-death of the noble Bishop Patteson.*~~

~~*The Uncivtlized Peoples of America.—The quiet humble labours of the Moravians have accomplished much in Greenland and Labrador, whilst among the Indiaus of Canada and the people of Hudson's Bay the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel has not laboured in vain, nor the Church Missionary Society in the dioceses of Rupertsland, Red River, Saskatchewan, and Moosonec. At Columbia, on the coast of the Pacific, a practical missionary genius named William Duncan has succeeded in civilizing a body of Indians degraded by cannibalism, and at his Metlakahtla mission stands at the head of a community of some thousand persons, which has a larger church than is to be found between there and San Francisco. Testimony to the value of the results achieved was borne in 1876 by Lord Dufferin, then governor-general of Canada, who declared that he could hardly find words to express his astonishment at what he witnessed. Amongst the Indian tribes of the United States work is carried on by the Moravians, the American Board of Missions, the Presbyterians of the Northand South, the Baptists, the Epis- copal Methodists, and the American Missionary Society ; and the result is that 27,000 Indians, divided amongst tlie 171 communities of different denominations (including the Roman Catholic) arein full menibership with the church, and have 219 places of worship, besides 366 schools attended by about 12,222 Indian children. The Cherokees, the Choctaws, the Creeks, the Chiekasaws, have their own eliurches, schools, and academies, and may compare favourably both intellectually and morally with their white neighbours in Missouri, Arkansas, and Texas.> Amongst the negroes in the United States more than 1000 places of worship have been built since the last war, while the American Missionary Association alone has erected 26 academies with about 6000 students, for the purpose of*~~

~~*4 See Christlieb, Foreign Missions, p. 88. Swibid., pose, Yes*~~

~~*Miss rows*~~

~~*preparing freed slaves to be teachers and missionaries. Amongst the Indians on the Essequibo and Berbice in British Guiana, the missions of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel have been rapidly extended, and now upwards of half the Indian population are members of Christian churches. In the British West Indies, through the united labours of various*~~

~~*missionary societies, out of 1,000,000 inhabitants upwards of 248,000 are returned as regular members of the churches, 85,000 as communicants, while 78,600 children receive instruction in 1123 day schools, of which number about 45,000 belong to Jamaica.*~~

~~*Passing to the southern promontory of South America, we find that the self-denying labours of Allen Gardiner are beginning to justify the devotion that prompted them. The London South American Missionary Society not only carries on its operations in the Falkland Islands, where youths from Tierra del Fuego receive instruction, but has founded stations in Tierra del Fuego itself, has roused the natives of Patagonia from their spiritual deadness, and lias extended its labours even to the Indians in Brazil.*~~

~~*Africa.—Here there are three great regions of missionary activity,—on the west coast, in the south, and in some parts of the east.*~~

~~*The largest and most fruitful mission field in West Africa is that of Sierta Leone, where at least seven-eighths of the people are now Christians, though the first mission does not date further back than the present century; and important results have also been obtained in Senegambia (on the Pongas), in Old Calabar, and in the republic of Liberia. On the Gold and Slave Coasts the labours of English Wesleyan missionaries and of the North German missionary societies have been crowned with no small success, while the Basel Society, which celebrated its jubilee in 1878, has extended its sphere of activity to Ashantee, translating the Scriptures into the native languages, and changing primeval marshes into bright- looking Christian villages. In the Yoruba lands the Church Missionary Society has 11 stations, 5994 Christians, and 1657 scholars, while on the Niger we are confronted with the interesting spectacle of negro preachers and teachers labouring under the coloured Bishop Crowther, carrying on a work which within the last few years was consecrated by the blood of martyrs.*~~

~~*Sonth Africa has for some time been a centre of missionary activity. Here thirteen British and Continental associations have proved that all the South African races, Hottentots and Kaffres, Fingoes and Bechuanas, Basutos and Zulus, are capable of attaining a considerable degree of Christian civilization, and can not only be instructed in handicraft and agriculture, but trained as ministers and teachers. A single instance of this is afforded in*~~

~~*British Kaffraria by the Lovedale Institute of the Free Church of Scotland, where youths from all the above-mentioned tribes are taught along with Europeans, and every Sunday sixty students proclaim the gospel in the neighbouring villages. In the cause of mission work here few ever laboured more zealously than the late Bishop Gray, whose diocese, when first constituted, included the whole colony of the Cape, but whose successor has now for his suffragans the bishops of Grahamstown, Maritzburg, St Helena, Bloemfontein, Zululand, St John's, and Pretoria.*~~

~~*Fast and East Central Africa, so long neglected, is now being rapidly occupied by missionary enterprise. Here the island of Madagascar has been in great part evangelized, while on the island of Mauritius the Anglican Mission has developed pre-eminent results. On the mainland, the coast of Zanzibar calls for special notice. Here the little island of the same name has long been the seat of the Universities Mission to Central Africa, and the heroic Bishop Steere has not only erected a cathedral on the site of the former slave-market, but translated the New Testament into Sawahili, a language which can be understood by the tribes around the lakes, and even in Uganda.*~~

~~*China.—"O mighty fortress! when shall these impenetrable brazen gates of thine be, broken through?" was the mournful exclamation of Valignani, the successor of Xavier, as he gazed in sadness at the mountains of China. The words well express the incredible difficulties which this largest and most thickly peopled heathen land in the world, with its petrified constitution and culture of three thousand years, presents in the way of missionary effort. The country itself, the people, their speech, their manners, their religion, their policy, seemed to unite in opposing an insuper- able barrier, but history has to record how efforts have been made by many bodies, and at many times, to break it down. An early Nestorian Church established itself in the empire, but was either uprooted, or died out in course of time. In the 16th century the Jesuits undertook the task, and in spite of the persecutions which they have undergone the missions of the Roman Church, with their numerous foreign clergy and their hosts of natives of different ecclesiastical degrees, have attained no small measure of success. Before the country was really opened to foreigners by the treaty of Tientsiu, pioneers proceeded*~~

thither from America, and from the London Missionary Society. The labours of Dr Legze in translating and reducing to system the Chinese classics are

1 See Lightfoot, Anctent and Modern Missions, p. 10.

ol7

well known. At the present day it is estimated that there are upwards of 29 societies at work in the country, with about 250 ordained missionaries and 63 female teachers, aud the number is constantly increasing. These societies, of which the largest pro- portion belong to England, and the next largest to America, support, it is estimated, 20 theological schools, 30 higher boarding schools for boys with 611 scholars, 38 for girls with 777 scholars, 177 day sehools for boys with 4000 to 5000 pupils in attendance, 82 for girls with 1307, while 16 missionary hospitals and 24 dispensaries are under the direction of medical missionaries, whose work in China has been recognized almost from the first as the source of the greatest blessing. The mission centres stud the east coast from Hong Kong and Canton to the frontiers of Manchuria in the north ; thence they advance little by little every year into the interior, while as yet the western provinces are scarcely touched by missionary effort. The literary labours of the various societies have been carried on with the utmost perseverance; and on the foundations laid by a Morrison and a Milne later toilers have been enabled to raise a superstructure of translations of various portions of the Bible, as well as various Christian books and religious and general periodicals which constitute a means of vast importance towards gradually gaining over this land of culture. At Peking a Russian mission has been labouring for more than one hundred and fifty years. The Society for the Propagation of the Gospel and the Church Missionary Society have lately opened up new centres in this almost limitless country.?

Japan.—Of the missions in Japan it is as yet too early to fore- cast the future. The signing of the commercial treaties of 1854 and 1858 with America and England was followed in 1859 by efforts on the part of the American churches to extend a knowledge of Christianity, and in these Bishop Williams, an accomplished Japanese scholar, proved himself a valuable leader and guide. Soon afterwards other societies found their way into the country, and in March 1872 the first Japanese congregation, of 11

~~converts, was constituted in Yokohama. Within the last eight years these 11 have increased to 1200, while the American missious have been supplemented by those of the Church Missionary Society and the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. Nearly every mission has what may be called a high school for girls, and these institu- tions are very popular. Thousands of copies also of the Gospels have been circulated in Japanese, and representatives of nearly all the missions are engaged in translating the entire New Testament, while a Russo-Greek mission has established itself in the north, and is advancing steadily, having already madé about 3000 converts.3 Thus, when it is considered that in the beginning of the 17th century the Japanese Government drove out the Portuguese and massacred the native Catholic converts, and prohibited all Christians under pain of death from ever setting foot in the country, and when it is borne in mind that many of these old laws against Christianity have not yet been repealed and that the old distrust of strangers is still plainly discernible among the governing classes, it is clear that, while there is much ground for hope, effectual results can only be the work of time.~~

~~India.—What is true of China and Japan applies with tenfold force to India. Here the results achieved resemble those which were attained in the conflict between Christianity and the religion of old pagau Rome, with its mass of time-honoured customs interwoven with the literature, institutions, and history of the empire. Against the influence of prestige and settled prejudice the wave of the gospel beat for centuries in vain. Slowly and gradually it was undermining the fabric, but no striking results were immediately visible. So also in India with the Hindu proper Christianity has hitherto made inappreciable progress, while among the rude aboriginal or non-Aryan tribes its success has been remarkable. Independently of Roman Catholic missions upwards of twenty-eight societies are earnestly engaged in the English mission field, and the following figures will give some idea of the progress that has been made during the last twenty or thirty years. In British India, including Burmah and Ceylon, it is estimated that in 1852 there were 22,400 comniunicants and 128,000 native Christians young and old; in 1862 these had increased to 49,681 communicants and 213,182 native Christians; in 1872 there had been a further in- crease to 78,494 communicants and 318,363 native Christians, while in 1878 the latter figures rose to 460,000. When we look at the share that each of the societies~~

has had in this inercase, we find that the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel and the Church Missionary Society together have since 1850 increased in member- ship from 61,442 to upwards of 164,000; the London Missionary Society from 20,000 to npwards of 48,000; the Presbyterian missions of Scotland, England, Ireland, and America from 800 to 10,000 ; the Basel mission in India from 1000 to 6805 ; the Baptist missionary societies (including the American as well as the English) from 30,000 to 90,000; the five Lutheran societies from 3316 to about 42,000. In some places the progress made has been excep-

2 The Roman Catholic Mission had 404,530 converts in China in 1876, with a yearly increase of about 2000. 3 Christlieb, Foreign Missions, p. 222.

tionally rapid. In Cuddapah, ¢.g., in the Telugu territory, the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel and the London Mission- ary Society laboured side by side for upwards of thirty years without winning over more than 200 converts. Then on a sudden there sprang up a revival among the non-caste population, and the 200 became nearly 11,000. Among the Kols, after five years' waiting, the Gossuer missionaries baptized their first converts in 1850; now in the German and English stations together these amount to about 40,000. Since the famine, however, in 1878-79, the increase of new converts has been still more rapid, and the practical experience of the superiority of Christian pity to heathen selfishness and of the helplessness of their heathen deities, united with the effect produced by persistent missionary labour in past years, brought thousands into the fold of the church. Thus in the Tinnevelly district, where the Church Missionary Society carries on its operations, upwards of 11,000 heathens applied in 1878 to Bishop Sargent and his native clergy for instruction preparatory to baptism.! In the same district, in connexion with the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, between July 1877 aud the end of June 1878 upwards of 23,564 persons betook themselves to Bishop Caldwell and his fellow- labourers for Christian teaching. Thus the English Church mis- sions in Tinnevelly and Ramnad received in little more than a year and a half an increase of 35,000 souls,?and the Propagation Society is now

~~proclaiming the gospel in nearly six hundred and fifty villages in the Tinnevelly district, amongst not merely food-seeking ‘~~

~~ringing about results analogous to that to which Sir James Mack- intosh referred in a conversation with Henry Martyn, when the~~

~~! Abstract of Church Missionary Society’s Report for 1879, p. 18. 2 Report of the Propagation Society for 1879, p. 31 sq.~~

~~Oriental world was made Greek by the successors of Alexander in order to make way for the religion of Christ. But when to these indirect influences we add the effects of direct missionary instruc- tion, of training schools like those of the Free Church of Scotland in Madras, of Bishop Sargent in Tinnevelly, of Bishop Cotton in the North-West Provinces, of Zenana missions now carried on on an extensive scale amongst the female population, of the numerous missionary presses at work circulating thousands of copies of the Holy Scriptures and of Christian books, it is obvious that, small and insignificant as these agencies may seem compared with the magnitude of the work required to be done, there has been a great advance made during recent years. The present century of missions may: favourably compare with the primitive and medieval ages of the church, and the continuity of the missionary spirit operating, as we have seen, after long periods of stagnation and depression is the best guarantee of its ultimate and more com- plete success at the close of the present epoch, during which, to use Karl Ritter’s expression, “‘ almost all the rivers of the earth have begun to run in double currents, and nearly all the seas and rivers have become the seas and rivers of civilization.” (G. F. M.)~~

~~MISSISSIPPI. The territory drained by the Missis- sippi river and its tributaries includes the greater part of the United States of America lying between the Alle- ghany Mountains on the east and the Rocky Mountains on the west, and has an area (1,244,000 square miles) con- siderably larger than all central Europe. The central artery through which the drainage of this region passes is called the Mississippi river for about 1300 miles above its mouth. The name is then usurped by a tributary, while the main~~

~~Cincinnati~~

~~ee J~~

~~one s ass es Ww~~

~~°, Py Lississin,~~

~~s one? nets~~

~~The Mississippi and its Tributaries.~~

~~stream becomes known as the Missouri. From its remote sources in the Rocky Mountains to the Gulf of Mexico the total length of the river is about 4200 miles. The other principal tributaries are the Ohio, the Arkansas, and the Red River, but the Yazoo and the St Francis often make dangerous contributions in seasons of flood.~~

~~The tables given below exhibit the hydraulic features of the Mississippi and its principal tributaries.~~

~~Below the influx of the Ohio the Mississippi traverses alluvial bottom lands liable to overflow in flood seasons. The soil is of inexhaustible fertility, producing large crops of corn in the northern portion, cotton in the middle dis- trict, and sugar, rice, and orange groves near the mouth. These bottom lands, averaging about 40 miles in width, extend from north to south for a distance of 500 miles, having a general southern slope of 8 inches to the mile. The river winds through them in a devious course for 1100 miles, occasionally on the east side washing bluffs from 100 to 300 feet in height, but usually confined by banks of its own creation, which, as with all sediment-bearing rivers of like character, are highest near the stream itself. The general lateral slope towards the foot hills is about 6 inches~~

~~wSisgtdssiPrP Pt~~

~~in 5000 feet, but the normal fall in the first mile is about 7 feet. Thus apparently following a low ridge through the bottom lands, the tawny sea sweeps onward with great velocity, eroding its banks in the bends and~~

~~*rebuilding them on the points, now forming islands by its deposits, and now removing them as the direction of the flow is modified by the never-ending changes in progress. Chief among such changes is the formation of cut-offs. Two eroding bends gradually approach each other until the water forces a passage across the narrow neck. As the channel distance between these bends may be many miles, a cascade perhaps 5 or 6 feet in height is formed, and the torrent rushes through with a roar audible for miles, The banks dissolve like sugar. In a single day the course of the river is changed, and steamboats pass where a few hours before the plough had been at work. The checking of the current*~~

~~*at the upper and lower mouths of the abandoned channel soon obstructs them by deposit, and forms in a few years one of the characteristic crescent lakes which are so marked a feature on the maps.*~~

~~*ol9*~~

~~*The total area of the bottom lands is about 32,000 square miles, of which only a narrow strip along the immediate banks of the main river and of its principal bayous and tributaries has even yet been brought under cultivation. A proper system of protection against overflow would throw open 2,500,000 acres of rich sugar land, 7,000,000 acres of the best cotton land in the world, and 1,000,000 acres of corn land of unsurpassed fertility.*~~

~~*The work of embankment began in 1717, when the engineer De la Tour erected a dyke or levee 1 mile long to protect the infant city of New Orleans from overflow. Progress at first was slow. In 1770 the settlements extended only 30 miles above and 20 miles below New Orleans ; but by 1828 the levees, although quite insufficient in dimensions, had become continuous nearly to the mouth of Red River. In 1850 a great impulse was given to systematic embankment by the U.S. Government, which gave over to the several States all unsold swamp and over- flowed lands within their limits to provide a fund for re- claiming the districts liable to inundation. The action*~~

~~*Tributaries of the Lower Mississippi.*~~

~~Distance Width Range River from | Elevation | petween | between Mouth. | above Sea. | Banks, High and Low Water. Missouri— Miles, Feet. Feet. Feet. IKONS co aogunoEAbEesoc 2, 908 6,800? Three Forks……. 2,824 4,319 ig abe Fort Benton ……. 2,644 2,845 1,500 6 Fort Union'……. 1,894 2,188 1,500 ae Siow Citys… 2a. 842 1,065 2,500 dns Stwlosephiy…... ae. 484 756 3,000 20 Mouth ……..ceccecees 0 381 38,000 35~~

~~OUNCE fie… cc ees ceccnnen 1,330 1,680 ann Swan River:……. 998 1,290 120 ae StaPaulee sc: ss cases 658 670 1,200 20 Rock Island 310 505 5,000 16 OEM Reise vss ces.crs 381 5,000 35 Ohio— Coudersport……. 1,265 1,649 age nad Bittaberg.. centeo...- 975 699 1,200 45 Cinfeiniiaitis)……..-. <. 515 432 ge 42 IVIGMIEN 555s ccsw esses 0 275 3,000 51 Arkansas— ISOUNCEM Aer. ...csene: «ot 1,514 | 10,000 150 aon Bontyseh ons. ve... 1,289 3,672 5,000 6 Great Bend……. 992 1,658 5,000 oe Port Smith……. 522 418 1,500 25 Inttle Rock:……2... 250 252 1,500 35 WIG. saorngeirnccanreee: 0 162 1,500 45 Red River— Near source. . 1,200 2,450 2,900 8 IBTESUOM ass cceices esses. 820 641 2,000 aa DMTEVEPOTt…..0.. ⁺. 330 180 800 25 MIO cesses ers es 0 4 800 45~~

~~High Water Cross Section.~~

~~Square Feet.~~

~~Remarks.~~

~~Area of basin, 518,000 square miles ; rainfall, 20°9 inches ; annual discharge, 37455 ' pillions lase-,~~

~~3,780,000, 000,000] cubic acl ratio between~~

~~drainage and rainfall, 7455 ; mean discharge per~~

~~75,000 second, 120,000 cubic feet. 75,000 | } Area of basin, 169,000 square miles; rainfall, 35:2 100.000 \ inches ; annual discharge, 3435 billions 'oubie 100.000 feet; ratio between drainage and rainfall, 5%; 100.000 | mean discharge per second, 105,000 enbic feet. ? i \ Area of basin, 214,000 square miles; rainfall, 41°5 50,000 \ inches ; annual "discharge, 5 billions cubic. feet ; hs ratio between drainage and rainfall, 3%°;; mean 150,000 }~~

~~discharge per second, 158,000 cubic feet. 80,000 | Area of basin, 189,000 square miles; rainfall, 29°3 Be inelies; annual discharge, 2 billions cubic feet; 70,000 ratio between drainage and rainfall, ~y%; mean 70,000 | discharge per second, 63,000 cubic feet.~~

~~70,000~~

~~inches ; annual discharge, 135 billions ee feet; ratio between drainage and" tain fall, vyo «Mean~~

~~40,000~~

~~discharge per second, 57,000 cubic feet.~~

~~J 12,000 {ina of basin, 97,000 square | miles; rainfall, 39 40,000 J~~

~~The Lower Mississippi.~~

~~Miles. Feet. Feet. Mouth: of Missouri.....0¢ 1,286 ee~~

~~Cob ILC ene pedoce cooneeeneanteannrr 1,270 0°500 MR etariciatiers orca oeistac es cieleiais a casa ae 1,097 0°497 ee 1,076 0°571 pOUCHOCSBB SOUS TOanEEAe ae 0°486 es. co ons 0°320 MRR ear or slsfiiicin as aisis's 0°309 ee 0°266~~

~~WoBLOM ROUGE .....:000eeeer ees 0°220 Wonalasonvill€.....2.50000600000. 0°156 WannollibONl.....0ccessccceneseeses08 0°147 ad 0119 We#a Of BHSSCS). cic. cccccveace oes 07115~~

~~0°171~~

~~Cn sei i~~

~~High idth Least Low Range ae Water Fall per — Water Depth| between — . Cross — ry a Elevation Mile, Banke upon the High and High We ie CH SESS Mouth. | above Sea. ; Bars. Low Water. eS AEE~~

~~Feet.~~

~~*Feet.*~~

~~*Square Feet.*~~

~~*area, square*~~

~~*miles: rainfall, 30°4 | inches; annual dis- | charge (including*~~

~~*three outlet bay- ous), 213%; billions 1 ap el*~~

~~*2-0*~~

~~*Drainage*~~

~~*1,244,000*~~

~~*of cubic feet ; ratio between drainage and rainfall, 3%; mean discharge per*~~

~~*675,000*~~

~~*bd Oo ON one eR BRE RE?*~~

~~*second, cubic feet.*~~

~~*SwmaRwdewd”*~~

~~*520*~~

~~*resulting from this caused alarm in Louisiana, for the great bottom lands above were believed to act as reservoirs to receive the highest flood wave ; and it was imagined that if they were closed by levees the lower country would be overwhelmed whenever the river in flood rose above its natural banks. The aid of the Government was in- voked, and Congress immediately ordered the necessary investigations and surveys. This work was placed in charge of Captain (now General) HIumphreys, and an elaborate report covering the results of ten years of investi- gation was published just after the outbreak of the civil war in 1861. The second of the tables given above, and indeed most of the physical facts respecting the river, are quoted from this standard authority.*~~

~~*To understand the figures of the table it should be noted*~~

~~*that at the mouth of Red River, 316 miles above the passes, | the water surface at the lowest stage is only 555 feet above |*~~

~~*the level of the Gulf, where the mean tidal oscillation is about 1,2; feet. The river channel in this section is there- fore a freshwater lake, nearly without islands, 2600 feet wide and 100 feet deep along the deepest line. At the flood stage the surface rises 50 feet at the mouth of Red River, but of course retains its level at the Gulf, thus giving the head necessary to force forward the increased volume of discharge. Above the mouth of Red River the case is essentially different. The width increases and the depth decreases ; islands become numerous; the oscillation be- tween high and low water varies but little from 50 feet until the mouth of the Ohio is reached—a distance of about 800 miles. Hence the general slope in long distances is here nearly the same at all stages, and the discharge is regulated by the varying resistances of cross section, and by local changes in slope due to the passage of flood waves contributed by the different tributaries. The effect of these different physical conditions appears in the compara- tive volumes which pass through the channel. At New Orleans the maximum discharge hardly reaches 1,200,000 cubic feet per second, and a rising river at high stages carries only about 100,000 cubic feet per second more than when falling at the same absolute level ; while just below the mouth of the Ohio the maximum flood volume reaches 1,400,000 cubic feet per second, and at some stages a rising river may carry one-third more water than when falling at the same absolute level.*~~

~~*The percentage of sedimentary matter carried in suspen- sion by the water varies greatly at different times, but is certainly not dependent upon the stage above low water. It is chiefly determined by the tributary whence the water proceeds, but is also influenced by the caving of the banks, which is always excessive when the river is rapidly falling after the spring flood. In long periods the sedimentary matter is to the water by weight nearly as 1 to 1500, and by bulk as 1 to 2900. The amount held in suspension and annually contributed to the Gulf constitutes a prism 1 mile square and 263 feet high. In addition to this amount a large volume, estimated at 1 mile*~~

~~*square and 27 feet high annually, is pushed by the current along the bottom and thus transported to the Gulf.*~~

~~*The mean annual succession of stages for long periods is quite uniform, but so many exceptions are noted that no definite prediction can safely be made for any particular epoch. The river is usually lowest in October. It rises rapidly until checked by the freezing of the northern tributaries. It begins to rise again in February, and attains its highest point about the lst of April. After falling a few feet it again rises until, early in June, it attains nearly the same level as before. After this it rapidly recedes to low- water mark. As a rule the river is above mid-stage from January to August inclusive, and below that level for the remainder of the year.*~~

~~*Missi esrerda*~~

~~*Tt has been established by measurement and observation that the great bottom lands above Red River before the con- struction of their levees did not serve as reservoirs to diminish the maximum wave which passed through Louisiana in great flood seasons. They had already become filled by local rains and by water escaping into them from the Mississippi through numerous bayous, so that at the date of highest water the discharge into the river near their southern borders was fully equal to the volume which the wave had lost in passing along their fronts.*~~

~~*In fine, the investigations between 1850 and 1860 estab- lished that no diversion of tributaries was possible ; that no reservoirs artificially constructed could keep back the spring freshets which caused the floods; that the making of cut- offs, which had sometimes been advocated as a measure of relief, so far from being beneficial, was in the highest degree injurious ; that, while outlets within proper limits were theoretically advantageous, they were impracticable from the lack of suitable sites ; and, finally, that levees properly constructed and judiciously placed would afford protection*~~

~~*'to the entire alluvial region.*~~

~~*During the civil war (1861-65) the artificial embankments were neglected ; but after its close large sums were expended by the States directly interested*~~

~~*in repairing them. The work was done without concert upon defective plans, and a great flood early in 1874 inundated the country, causing terrible suffering and loss. Congress, then in session, passed an Act creating a commission of five engineers to determine and report on the best system for the permanent reclamation of the entire alluvial region. Their report, rendered in 1875, endorsed the conclusions of that of 1861, and advocated a general levee system on each bank. This system comprised—(1) a main embankment raised to specified heights sufficient to restrain the floods; and (2), where reasonable security against caving required considerable areas near the river to be thrown out, exterior levees of such a height as to exclude ordinary high waters but to allow free passage to great floods, which as a rule only occur at intervals of five or six years. The back country would thus be securely protected, and a safe refuge would be pro- vided for the inhabitants and domestic animals living upon the portion subject to occasional overflow. An engineering organiza- tion was proposed for constructing and maintaining these levees, and a detailed topographical survey was recommended to determine their precise location. Congress promptly approved and ordered the survey ; but strong opposition on constitutional grounds was raised to the construction of the levees by the Government.*~~

~~*In the meantime complaints began to be heard respecting the low-water navigation of the river below the mouth of the Ohio. Forty-three places above the mouth of Red River afforded depths of less than 10 feet, and thirteen places depths less than 5 feet, the aggregate length of such places being about 150 miles. A board of five army engineers, appointed in 1878 to consider a plan of relief, reported that 10 feet could probably be secured by narrow- ing the wide places to about 3500 feet with hurdle work, brush ropes, or brush dykes designed to cause a deposit of sediment, and by protecting caving banks, when necessary, by such light and cheap mattresses as experience should show to be best suited to the work. Experiments in these methods were soon begun upon the river above Cairo, and have since proved of decided benefit.*~~

~~*In June 1879 Congress created a commission of seven members to mature plans to correct, permanently determine, and deepen the channel, to protect the banks of the river, to improve and give safety to navigation, to prevent destructive floods, and to promote and facilitate commerce. Up to 1882 appropriations amounting to £1,285,000 were made to execute the plans of this commission, but with provisos that none of the funds were to be expended in repairing or building levees for the protection of land against overflow, although such levees might be constructed if necessary to deepen the channel and improve navigation. Acting under this authority, the conmmission have allotted considerable sums to repair existing breaks in the levees ; but their chief dependence is upon contracting the channel at low water by promoting lateral deposits, and upon protecting the high-water banks against caving by mats of brush, wire, &c., ballasted where necessary with stone,—substan- tially the plaus proposed by the army board of 1878.*~~

~~*The bars at the efflux of the passes at the mouth of the Mississippi have long been recognized as serious impediments to commerce. The river naturally discharges through three principal branches, the south-west pass, the south pass, and the north-east pass, the latter through two channels, the most northern of which is called Pass & POutre. The ruling depth on the several bars varies with the discharge over them, which in turn is controlled by the successive advances of the passes. In the natural condition the greatest*~~

~~*rissit Sir pi*~~

~~*521*~~

~~*depth does not exceed 12 or 13 feet. The first appropriation by | "the north-western corner of Washington county on the*~~

~~*Congress to secure increased depth was made in 1837, and was ex- pended in an elaborate survey and in a system of dredging by buckets, but the plan of a ship canal was also discussed. At the next appropriation, made in 1852, a board of officers, appointed by the war department, recommended trying in succession—(1) stirring up the bottom by suitable machinery, (2) dredging by buckets, (3) constructing parallel jetties 5 miles long at the south-west pass, to be extended as found necessary, (4) closing lateral outlets, and (5) constructing a ship canal. A depth of 18 feet was secured by the first plan, and was maintained until the available funds were exhausted. Under the next appropriation (1856) an abortive attempt was made to apply the plan of jetties to the south-west pass. 'his failed from defects in execution by the contractors, but a depth of 18 feet was finally secured by dredg- ing and scraping. The report of 1861 discussed the subject of bar formation at length. Although it approved the plan of jetties and closure of outlets as correct in theory, the stirring up of the bottom by scrapers during the flood stages of the river (six months annually) was recommended by it as the most economical and least objection- able. After the war this recommendation was carried into effect for several years with improved machinery, giving at a moderate annual cost a depth at times reaching 20 feet at extreme low water, but experience indicated that not much more than 18 feet could be steadily maintained. This depth, entirely satisfactory at first, soon*~~

~~*became insufficient to meet the growing demands of commerce, and |*~~

~~*in 1878 Major Howell, the engineer in charge, revived the pro- ject of a ship canal. The subject was discussed carefully by a board of army engineers, the majority approving a ship canal. In 1874 Congress constituted a special board which, after visiting Europe and examining similar works of improvement there, reported in favour of constructing jetties at the south pass, substantially upon the plan used by Mr Caland at*~~

~~*the mouth of the Meuse ; and in March 1875 Captain J. B. Eads and associates were authorized by Congress to open by contract a broad and deep channel through the south pass upon the general plan proposed by this board. This contract called for " the maintenance of a channel of 30 feet in depth and 350 feet in width for twenty years" by ""the construction of thoroughly substantial and permanent works by which said channel may be maintained for all time after their completion." The jetties were to be not less than 700 feet apart. The sum of £1,080,000 was to be paid for obtaining this channel, and £412,000 for maintaining it for twenty years. In addition, the contractors were authorized to use any materials on the public lands suitable for and needed in the work.. The south pass was 12,°, miles long. It had an average width of 730 feet and a minimum interior channel depth of 29 feet. The distance from the 30-foot curve inside the pass across the bar to the 30-foot curve outside was 11,900 feet. The minimum depth at average flood tide on the bar was about 8 feet. The discharge at the mouth was about 57,000 cubic feet of water per second, trans- porting annually about 22 million cubic yards of sediment in sus- pension to the Gulf. A small island and shoal existed at the head of the pass, the channel there having a minimum depth of 17 feet. The work was begun on June 2, 1875, and has been so far success- ful that during the year ending June 30, 1882, a channel was main- tained having a least depth of 30 feet between the jetties and extend- ing through the bar. Its least width was 20 feet, the average being 105 feet. The 26-foot channel had a least width of 200 feet, except for a few days. In the pass itself the 26-foot channel had a least width of 50 feet. A very powerful dredge-boat was at work between and beyond the jetties 87 days, of which 51 were devoted to the channel in the Gulf. A deepening of 6 feet has occurred in Pass 3 l'Outre near its head since 1875. Up to the present time the work has proved of great benefit to the commerce of New Orleans.*~~

~~*For further details, see RIVER ENGINEERING.*~~

~~*MISSISSIPPI, one of the Southern States of the American Union, derives its name from the river which for more than 500 miles forms its western boundary between the 35th and 31st parallels of north latitude, separating it from Arkansas and Louisiana. The boundary with the latter State is continued along the 31st parallel, for 110 miles, to the Pearl river, and then*~~

~~*down the Pearl to its mouth. The Gulf of Mexico, eastward from the mouth of Pearl river, completes the southern boundary. On the north the 35th parallel, from the Mississippi river to the Tennessee, separates the State from Tennessee, and the boundary then follows the latter river to the mouth of Bear Creek, in 34° 53' N. lat. and 88° 15' W. long. The eastern boundary of the State, separating it from Alabama, follows a line drawn from the mouth of Bear Creek about seven degrees west of south to what was*~~

~~*(H. L. A.)*~~

~~*Tombigbee," and thence due south to the Gulf of Mexico. Ship, Horn, Cat, and Petit Bois Islands, and those nearer the shore, form a part of Mississippi. The extreme length of the State, north and south, is 330 miles, and its maximum breadth is 188 miles. Under the United States surveys, begun in 1803, the State has been divided into townships and sections, except such parts as were at the first owned by individuals. The area of the State is given in the census reports for 1880 as 46,340 square miles. Topography.—There are no mountains in Mississippi, but a considerable difference of level exists between the continuously low, flat, alluvial region lying along and between the Mississippi and Yazoo rivers, called "the Bottom," and nearly all the remainder of the State, which is classed as upland. The latter part, comprising five- sixths of the whole, is an undulating plateau whose general elevation above the water of the Gulf of Mexico increases to 150 feet within a few miles of the coast, and varies elsewhere from 150 to 500 or 600 feet. Some exceptional ridges are probably 800 feet high. The streams of this region flow in valleys varying in width from a few hundred yards to several miles. The fall of each river is not great, and is quite uniform. Usually a considerable part of the valley of each larger stream is several feet above its present high water mark, and forms the "hommock," or "second bottom" lands. On some of the rivers the lowest part of the valley, subject to overflow, is several miles in width,*~~

~~*and bears a resemblance to the Mississippi Bottom.*~~

~~*Ridges or plateaus everywhere in the upland region divide the contiguous basins of creeks and rivers, descending more or less abruptly to their valleys. In the north-eastern part of the State, almost level prairies cover large areas overlying a Cretaceous formation called Rotten Limestone.*~~

~~*A line of abrupt bluffs, extending southward from the north-west corner of the State, divides the upland region from the Bottom, where the general surface lies below the high-water level of the Mississippi river. A few low ridges, running north and south, and embracing about 200,000 acres, are barely above high water. The culti- vated lands in the Bottom lie on these, and on the borders of the rivers and the numerous lakes and bayous, where the surface is slightly elevated. Low swamps or marshes, in which flourish large cypress trees (Taxodium distichum), lie between the streams, and frequently receive the surface drainage from their banks. Large forest trees and dense cane-brakes (Arundinaria gigantea) occupy the drier ground. The Mississippi river is prevented from flooding the Bottom during high water by a system of levees or embankments built by a fund derived partly from taxation on the land and partly from the proceeds of the sale of public lands in the State classed as "swamp lands," which were given over for this purpose by Congress. The only com- pensation for the injury done when breaks in the levees ('crevasses ") occur is the deposit of alluvial matter left by the overflow, which adds to the productiveness of the already wonderfully fertile soil. 'The present levee system usually protects about one-fourth of the 4,000,000 acres in the Bottom. Many crescent-shaped lakes ("cut-offs") occur in the Bottom. Similar phenomena present them- selves in the channels of the other rivers having wide bottoms.*~~

~~*The volume of water in the streams varies greatly during the year, and is usually largest between the months of January and April. During high water all the larger streams are navigable by steamboats. These ply upon the Mississippi, Tennessee, and Yazoo rivers throughout the whole year. The rivers flowing into the Gulf are much obstructed by sand-bars, and are chiefly used for floating*~~

~~*logs to the saw-mills on the coast. XVI. — 66*~~

~~*522*~~

~~*The best and only deep harbour on the coast is the well- protected roadstead inside of Ship Island. It has a depth of 27 feet, a firm clay bottom, and is readily accessible to lighters from the shallower harbours along the coast.*~~

~~*Climate.—Near the waters of the Gulf of Mexico the climate is much milder than in the northern parts of the State. On the southern borders the temperature rarely falls to 32° Fahr., or exceeds 95°, the annual mean being about 68°. The orange, lemon, almond, banana, and olive can be grown without protection. In the latitude of Vicksburg the temperature ranges from 98° to 20°, very rarely lower; the annual mean is 65°. The range in the northern part of the State is from 98° to 15°, or rarely 10°, and the annual mean is 61°. The first and last hoar-frosts occur, in the central parts of the State, usually in the latter parts of October and March. The ground is seldom frozen to the depth of 3 inches, and only for a few days at a time. The rainfall on the coast is 60 to 65 inches per annum, and at the northern boundary 50 inches. While about two-thirds of this precipitation occurs in winter and spring, a month seldoin passes without several inches of rainfall.*~~

~~*Land and sea breezes in the south, and variable winds elsewhere, make the heat of summer tolerable. In healthfulness Mississippi compares favourably with other States. The average death-rate of thirteen States, variously situated, as given in the census of 1880, is 1°38 per cent. ; that of Mississippi is 1°19 per cent. Where the surface is flat and poorly drained malarial fevers are prevalent during the warm season. Yellow fever has become epidemic after importa- tion, but strict quarantine has been successful in preventing it.*~~

~~*Geology.—In accordance with an Act of the legislature passed in 1850, an agricultural and geological survey of the State was begun, which continued, with interruptions, until 1871. Two reports have been published, one in 1854 and another in 1860.*~~

~~*The geological structure of the State is comparatively simple, and closely related to that of the adjacent States,*~~

~~*period, which will described last. In the extreme north- eastern portion are found the oldest rocks in the State,—an ex- tension of the Subcarboniferous formation which underlies the Warrior coal-fields of Alabama, The strata here show some traces of the upheaval which formed the Appalachian mountain chain, whose south-west termination is found in Alabama. When this chain formed the Atlantic mountain-border of the continent, except- ing*~~

~~*this north-east corner, Mississippi had not emerged from the waters of the ancient Gulf of Mexico. As the shore-line of the Gulf slowly receded southward and westward, the sediment at its bottom gradually came to the surface, and constituted the Cretaceous and Tertiary formations of this and adjacent States. Wherever stratification is observed in these formations in Mississippi, it shows a dip west and south of 20 or 80 feet to the mile. The Cretaceous region includes, with the exception of the Subcarboni- ferous, all that part of the State eastward of a line cutting the Tennessee boundary in 89° 3' W. long., and drawn southward and eastward through the towns of Ripley, Pontotoc, and Stark- ville, crossing into Alabama in latitude 32° 45'. Four groups of Cretaceous strata have been determined in Mississippi, defined by lines having the same general direction as the one just described. The oldest, bordering the Subcarboniferous, is the Eutaw or Coffee group, characterized by bluish-black or reddish laminated clays, and yellow or grey sands, containing lignite and fossil resin, Westward and southward to the city of Columbus is the Tombigbee sand group, consisting chiefly of fine-grained micaceous sands of a greenish tint, with many marine fossils. Next in order, westward and southward, is the Rotten Limestone group, made up of a material of great uniformity,—a soft chalky rock, white or pale blue, composed chiefly of tenacious clay, and white carbonate of lime in minute crystals, Borings show the total thickness of this group to be about 1000 feet. Fossils are abundant, but species are few. The latest Cretaceous is the Ripley group, lying west of the northern part of the last-named group, and characterized by hard crystalline white limestones, and dark- coloured, micaceous, glauconitic marls, whose marine fossils are admirably preserved. One hundred and eighty species have been described. The total thickness of the Cretaceous is about 2000 feet. Deposits of the Tertiary period form the basis of more than half the State, extending from the border of the Cretaceous west- ward nearly or quite to the Yazoo and Mississippi Bottom, and southward to within a few miles of the Gulf coast. Seven groups of the Tertiary strata have been distinguished. Beginning nearest the Cretaceous, the Flatwoods group is characterized by grey or white clays, and a soil which responds poorly to tillage. "The Lagrange group, lying to the west of the last, is marked by grey clays and sands, fossil plants, and beds of lignite or brown coal*~~

~~*sometimes 8 feet in thickness. The Buhrstone group, lying south- westward from the last, is characterized by beds of white siliceous clays, and of silicified shells, and sandy strata containing glauconite in valuable quantities. The Claiborne group lies south of the last, and is slightly developed in Mississippi, but well-marked in*~~

~~*The older | formations are i all overlaid by deposits of the Quaternary | e*~~

~~*MEiSSiIisS62@? Pa*~~

~~*Alabama. The Jackson group, south-west of the last two, is made up chiefly of soft yellowish limestones or marls, containing much clay, and sandy strata with glauconite. Zeuglodon bones and other marine fossils are abundant. The Vicksburg group lies next in order south-westward, and is characterized by crystalline limestones and blue and white marls. Marine fossils are very abundant. More than one hundred and thirty species have been determined. The Grand Gulf group, showing a few fossil plants and no marine fossils, extends southward from the last to within a few miles of the coast.*~~

~~*The oldest formation of the Quaternary period is the " orange sand" or "stratified drift," which immediately overlies all the Cretaceous groups except the prairies of the Rotten Limestone, and all the Tertiary except the Flatwoods and Vicksburg groups and parts of the Jackson. Its depth varies from a few feet to over 200 feet, and it forms the body of most of the hills in the State. Its materials are pebbles, clays, and sands of various colours from white to deep red, tinged with peroxide of iron, which sometimes cements the pebbles and sands into compact rocks. The shapes of*~~

~~*pa*~~

~~~~

~~*g—Ser rt*~~

~~*yy. "yh? VON SWAIN,*~~

~~*ry SLUEES*~~
~~~~

~~.—~~

~~~~

~~*Nha*~~

~~~~

~~~· *aye*~~

~~*1*~~

~~“ *~~

~~*3 3*~~

~~*4*~~

~~†~~

~~*PORT HUODSY)N*~~

~~*GULF or MEXICO Geological Map of Mississippi State.*~~

~~*these ferruginous sandstones are very fantastic, —tubes, hollow spheres, plates, &c., being common. The name stratified drift is used by the geologist of Alabama to indicate its connexion with the northern drift. The fossils are few, and in some cases probably derived from the underlying formations. Well-worn pebbles of amorphous quartz, agate, chalcedony, jasper, &c., are found in the stratified drift along the western side of the Tertiary region of the State, and from Columbus northward. “While this forma- tion is not well understood, it seems tolerably well established that the melting of the great glaciers of the north furnished the water which brought with it fragments of the rocks over which it passed, and flowed into the Gulf with a current which was most rapid where the pebbles were dropped, but overspread the remainder of the State with a gentler flow, leaving sands and clays” (EK. A. Smith). The second Quaternary formation is the Port Hudson, occurring within 20 miles of the Gulf coast, and prob- ably outcropping occasionally in the Mississippi Bottom. Clays, gravel, and*~~
~~~

~~*sands, containing cypress stumps, drift-wood, and mastodon bones, are characteristic. The loess or bluff formation lies along the bluffs bordering the Bottom, nearly continuously through the State. Its fine-grained, unstratified silt contains the remains of many terrestrial animals, including fifteen mammals.*~~

~~*Pro ers st iP Pi*~~

~~*The surface and subsoil of nearly all the upland region of Mississippi, the southern part being the exception, is composed of yellow loain or brick-clay containing no fossils, and showing no stratification. The soil of the Rotten Limestone region is similar in its general make up, but is black, aud contains more lime and clay. Both are regarded as an independent aqueous deposit, pos- terior to the stratified drift and bluff formations, and anterior to the alluvium of the present epoch. The 'second, bottoms," probably, are later than the yellow loam, and belong to the " terrace epoch." The latest formation, alluvium, is strongly marked, and covers a large area in the Yazoo and Mississippi Bottom, and along other streams.*~~

~~*The following are the equivalents of the Mississippi groups in Dana's Geology :—*~~

~~*(DOE NOMI oconsr.vcoes crecenevrscese 2 20c Loam and loess wee Quaternary…..----. "*~~*) 99% Port Hudson… is DANTE JOYS RRS Becocnoccoecneenetnnonrec 3 Grand Gulf. UPPer vesseerseves { Vicksburg. TOWN iissin es. csncssvoaees 19a Eocene… Middle ……. ns ; Buhrstone, Lagrange. Lower….. O coco Flatw aden : Ripley. on SOL esece ere Upper… seve peesceneias { Putten Liniwstoné. COUSccccvvccccsvee Tombigbee 18a….00+. LOWE! ..- are Coiice ; SubcarboniferOus …….cesescccccve. cere Been ssessescaccarecorenee Keokuk.*~~

~~*Minerals.—Metallic ores are not found in Mississippi in paying quantities. The only valuable minerals are sandstones and lime- stones, marls, sands, lignite or brown coal, and fire-clays. Nonc of these have been extensively brought into market. Potable water is found almost everywhere. Artesian wells furnish it in the Rotten Limestone region, when bored into the underlying Coffee strata.*~~

~~*Fauna.—Mississippi affords ere no species which are nov found in the neighbouring States. 'There are thirty or forty species of Mammalia, the most remarkable being the American opossum, still quite abundant. The deer (Cervus virginianus), black bear (Ursus americanus), wolves (Canis lupus and Lupus americanus), catamount (Felis concolor), and wild-cat (Lyncus rufus) have much decreased in number, and may, like the buffalo and elk, shortly become extinct. About one dmared and fifty species of birds are found during at least part of the year. Many are seen only in transitu, and about twenty species from the north spend the winter here. The mocking bird (Minus polyglottus), the most remarkable songster, is very abundant. The wild turkey (Meleagris gallipavo) survives by virtue of its wary and watchful character. Over fifty species of Reptilia have been found, prominent among which is the alligator (4. mississippiensis), which attains a length of 12 or 15 feet, and is common in the southern river bottoms. The rattlesnake, moccasin, and copperhead, venomous serpents, are occasionally found. About half of the sixty-three species of fish abounding in the fresh and salt waters of the State are valuable for food. The edible oysters and crustaceans of the coast are remarkably fine.*~~

~~*Flora.—Originally uearly the entire State was covered with a growth of forest trees of large size, mostly deciduous. The under- growth was kept down by annual burnings by the natives, and the ground became carpeted with grasses and herbs. Over 120 species of forest trees are found ; miany valuable ones are abundant, and their tiniber constitutes a large item in the resources of the State. Of the 15 species of oak the most valuable are the live-oak (Q. virens), found near the coast, and the white-oak (Q. alba), widely distributed. The cypress (Taxodiwm distichwm) is very abundant in the bottoms. Various species of hickory, the chest- nut, black walnut, sweet gum, cucumber tree, cottonwood (Populus deltoides), red cedar, elms, holly, maguolias, maples, ash, persim- mon, sycamore, tupelo, and many others valuable for their timber, are abundant and of large size. The long-leaved pine (P. australis) forms the principal forest growth south of lat. 32°15'. 1t attains a diameter of 2 or 3 feet, has a tall and shapely trunk, and its timber is unsurpassed in the variety of its uses. The census reports estimate the merchantable timber of this species now standing in the State at 18,200,000,000 feet, board measure. The amount cut in 1880 was 108,000,000 feet. The short-leaved pine (P. nvitis), almost as valuable, is*~~

~~found in various parts, the quantity now standing being estimated at 6,775,000,000 feet. The total value of the pine timber of the State is about $250,000,000.~~

~~Agriculture is the leading industry in Mississippi. Over 300,000 of the population are directly engaged in the cultivation of 4,895,000 acres of land. The character of the soil is varied, and all is productive, except that in the Flatwoods region and in the district covered with long-leaved pine, where only the valleys are fertile. At least half the State is exceptionally fertile. Not more than one-fourth of the arable land has been brought into culti- vation, and two millions of acres of the best lands in the State, lying in the Bottom, might be made arable by proper drainage.~~

~~Cotton is the chief agricultural product; in 1880 Mississippi~~

~~ranked first among the States in the amount raised. The crop of | New~~

~~523~~

~~1879-80 amounted to 955,808 bales, worth $43,000,009. There were produced also of cotton seed 28,000,000 bushels, worth $3,000,000; of Indian corn, 21,340,800 bushels ; of oats, 1,959,620 bushels ; of wheat, 218,890 bushels ; of rice, 1,718,950 Ib. Small quantities of rye, barley, molasses, and tobacco, and abundant crops of potatoes, yams, pease, and all garden vegetables, are annually produced.~~

~~Fruits of various kinds flourish in many parts of the State, and, with early vegetables, are largely shipped to the northern markets in spring and early summer. The value of the cotton crop is about three times as great as that of all the other products of the soil, which are sometimes insufficient for home consumption. Economically this specialization of agriculture is to be regretted ; but successful efforts are being made to diversify it by growing other crops to which the soil and climate are equally well suited.~~

~~Manufactwres.—The principal articles manufactured are lumber, oe and woollen goods, cotton seed oil, and agricultural imple- ments.~~

Population.—The number of inhabitants according to the different census returns from 1850 is given in the following table :—

a

: , Density per Census. Total. White. Coloured. Sq. Mile. 1850 606,526 295,718 310,808 13°09 1860 791,314 353,910 437,404 17°07

1870 829,609 384,549 445,060 17:9

1880 1,131,592 479,371 652,221 24°42

Of the coloured population, mostly freedimen and their descend- auts, 1738 were Indians or half-breeds in 1880, and abont 60,000 mulattoes. The whites own nearly all the farms and other real property. The total property valuation in the State decreased trom $607,324,911 in 1860 to $209,197,345 in 1870, on account of the losses in war and the liberation of the slaves. There has been, however, a rapid increase in the last decade. The towns in the State have small populations: in 1880 Vicksburg had 11,814 in- habitants, Natehez 7058, and Jackson, the State capital, 5204.

Administration.—The three departments, legislative, executive, and judiciary, are similar to those of other States. The governor and other executive officers are elected for four years. The legis- lature, which meets biennially, is composed of forty senators, serving four years, and one hundred and twenty representatives, serving two years. These are apportioned to the seventy-four counties according to population, aud eleeted by the people. The judiciary officers, consisting of three justices of the supreme court, twelve circuit judges, and twelve chancellors, are appointed by the governor with the consent of the senate. One attorney-general and twelve district attorneys are elected by the people. 'The State maintains a public school system, with separate schools for the two races, costing in 1880 $830,704, besides a State university and other schools of high grade for each of the races.

History.—Mississippi was first visited by Europeans in 1540, when the adventurous expedition of De Soto reached its northern parts. After the disastrous termination of this expedition no other Europeans visited this

~~*region until 1673, when Joliet and Pere Marquette descended the Mississippi to lat. 33°. In 1682 La Salle and Tonty descended to the mouth of the river, and claimed the whole region drained by it for the king of France, giving it the name Louisiana. In 1699 the first colonists reached the coast of Mississippi, sent from France under Iberville. Settlements were made on Ship Island and Cat Island, and upon the mainland on the eastern side of Biloxi Bay, at Bay St Louis, and at Mobile. The colony did not prosper, and in 1712 Anthony Crozat obtained by charter from the king all the commercial privileges of the lower Mississippi valley. Under his management the colony languished, and in 1717 the king accepted the surrender of his charter, and granted another with more extended privileges to the '¢ Western Company," or " Mississippi Scheme," with John Law as director-general, and Bienville as governor of the colony. Under this management the rich alluvial lands on the Mississippi river began to be occupied ; tobacco, rice, and indigo were culti- vated, and African slaves were introduced. Settlements were made near the present city of Natchez in 1720. wo years later, Law's company becoming bankrupt, much embarrassment in the colony followed, and troubles also began with the natives. On November 28, 1729, the Natchez Indians surprised and murdered about 200 of the white male residents, and made captives of about 500 women and cbildren and negroes. A war followed, resulting in the destruction of the Natehez tribe. The representatives of the '* Western Company " returned their franchises to the king in 1782, the number of colonists and slaves being then about 7000. _ After two unsuccessful eampaigns against the Chickasaw Indiaus in the northern part of what is now Mississippi, Bienville was superseded by the Marquis de Vaudreuil in 1740. ;*~~

~~*By the treaty of Paris, in 1763, France ceded all her possessions east of the Mississippi river to England, excepting the island of Orleans, ceded to Spain. The British province of West*~~

~~*Plate VII.*~~

~~*524*~~

~~*Florida at first extended eastward from the Mississippi river along the Gulf coasts, with its northern limit at the 31st parallel of north latitude. Soon*~~

~~*afterwards the northern boundary was fixed at a line drawn eastward from the point where the Yazoo river unites with the Mississippi.*~~

~~*Under British rule the Natchez country, which had been deserted since the massacre of 1729, and the southern part of the present State of Mississippi, rapidly filled with settlers, many of them emigrants from the Atlantic colonies. Cotton, indigo, and sugar were cultivated, and negro slaves continued to be freely introduced. During the revolutionary war of the Atlantic colonies, West Florida, being far removed, remained undisturbed until 1779. Spain and England being then at war, Galvez, the governor of New Orleans, aided by sympathizers with the revolutionary colonists, took possession of the whole of West Florida for the king of Spain. At the peace of 1783 England acknowledged the 31st parallel as the southern boundary of the United States, and ceded West Florida to Spain. The district between the 31st parallel and the parallel through the mouth of the Yazoo was therefore claimed by the United States and by Spain, the latter being in possession. After tedious negotiations the latter power relinquished the district in March 1798, and Congress at once formed it into " the Mississippi Territory," which extended from the Mississippi river eastward between the two above-mentioned parallels of latitude to the Chattahoochee river.*~~

~~*The State of Georgia claimed as a part of its domain all of the district east of the Mississippi river, and between the 31st and 35th parallels. In 1802 it ceded its claims to the Federal Government for certain considerations, and in 1804 Congress extended the limits of the Mississippi Territory northward to the 35th parallel. Nearly all of the Territory was then owned by the native Indians. The Choctaws occupied the southern part, and the Chickasaws the northern part of what is uow the State of Mississippi. In 1812 the United States troops occupied Spanish West Florida, and the district east of Pearl river and south of lat. 31° was added to the Mississippi Territory. The Territory was divided by the present line between Alabama and Mississippi, and the State of Mississippi admitted into the Union in 1817. In 1830-32 the native tribes exchanged their lands for others west of the Mississippi river and were nearly all removed, and a rapid influx of settlers followed. In January 1861 the State seceded from the Federal Union, and, joining the Southern Confederacy, furnished a large*~~

~~*number of troops during the civil war. It was the field of many important campaigns, and suffered great losses. Exhausted by the conflict, and harassed by processes of political reconstruction, the State was in a deplorable condition for several years. But within the last decade an era of laa or commenced, marked by a large increase in population and great activity in agricultural and other pursuits.*~~

~~*Literature.—Gayarré, History of Louisiana; Monette, History of the Valley o7 the Mississippi, New York, 1846; Claiborne, Mississippi as a Province, Territory, and State, Jackson, 1880; Wailes, Agriculture and Geology of Mississippi, Jackson, 1854; Uilgard, Agriculture and Geology of Mississippi, Jackson, 1860; Smith,*~~

~~*Outline of the Geology of Alabama, Montgomery, 1880; Wall, Handbook of Mis- Sissippi, Jackson, 1882. (R. B. F.)*~~

~~*MISSOLONGHI, or Mesotoneut (MeooAoyyiov), a city of Greece, the chief town of the nomarchy of Acarnania and Autolia, situated on the north side of the Gulf of Patras, about 7 miles from the coast, in the midst of a shallow lagoon, with a population of 6324 in 1879, is notable for the siege of two months which Mavrocordatos with a handful of men sustained in 1821 against a Turkish army 11,000 strong, and for the more famous defence of 1825-26 (see vol. xi. p. 125). Byron died there in 1824, and is commemorated by a cenotaph.*~~

~~*MISSOURI, a Central State of the American Union, lying almost midway between the Atlantic and the Rocky Mountains, British America and the Gulf of Mexico. Its eastern boundary is the Mississippi, separating it from Tllinois, Kentucky, and Tennessee. North and south its boundaries with Iowa and Arkansas respectively are mainly coincident with the parallels of 40° 30' and 36° 30' N. lat.; but a small peninsula between the Mississippi and St Francois rivers stretches 34 miles farther south between Arkansas and Tennessee. The western border with Nebraska, Kansas, and the Indian Territory, is nearly coincident with the course of the Missouri to the junction of that stream with the Kansas, and then follows the meridian of 17° 40' W. of Washington (94° 43' W. of Greenwich). The area of the State is 65,350 square miles, the extreme length from north to south 282 miles, the extreme width 348 miles. Missouri is divided into*~~

~~*a northern and southern portion by the Missouri river, flowing 400 miles in a generally easterly direction from its junction with the Kansas to the point 12 miles above St Louis where it unites with the Mississippi. Northern Missouri has a surface broken and hilly, but not moun- tainous. It is mainly prairie land, well watered by streams, and fit for agriculture ; but there is a good deal of timber in the eastern parts, especially along the bold bluffs of the two great rivers. Southern Missouri is almost equally divided between timber land in the east and prairie in the west. In its south-western portion rises the table-land of the Ozark hills (highest point 1600 feet above the sea). The Osage, the Gasconade, and other streams flow north- ward and eastward into the Missouri. The south-eastern lowlands form an undulating country, readily drained after rain, with fertile ridges generally running north and south, occasional abrupt isolated hills, forests of oak, hickory, elm, maple, ash, locust, willow, persimmon, pecan, chestnut, and cherry trees, and in the lowest parts swamps and morasses. High rocky bluffs extend along the banks of the Mississippi from the mouth of the Meramec river to Ste Genevieve, rising sometimes precipitously to the height of 350 feet above the water, and low bottom lands with many lakes and lagoons extend from Ste Genevieve to the Arkansas border. The south-east corner of the State is 275 feet above the sea, the north-east corner 445 feet, and the north-west corner 1000 feet.*~~

~~*Climate.—The climate of Missouri, lying as it does far from the ocean and unprotected by mountain ranges, is one of extremes in heat and cold, moisture and drought. The Ozark range is high enough to influence the climate locally, but not to affect that of the whole State. The mean summer temperature for the ten years 1870-80 ranged from 75° in the north-west of the State to 78°°5 in the south-east; but the thermometer has been known to rise to 104°. The winter temperature averaged 33°:87 for the whole State, varying from 28°°5 in the north-west to 39°°5 in the south-east. In some winters the temperature hardly falls to zero; in others 20° below zero have been registered. The Mississippi at St Louis freezes over once in four or five years; but this is partly caused by the accumulations of floating ice coming down from the north. The river has closed as early as the first week in December, and, again, has remained open until the last week in February. It*~~

~~*is in cold seasons sometimes passable for the heaviest teams. The Missouri river is often closed during the whole winter. The mean annual temperature of the State varies from 53°-to 58°. The climate is, on the whole, dry ; for, in spite of the abundant rains, especi- ally in the spring, evaporation is so rapid that the atmo- sphere is rarely overloaded with moisture. April is the driest month. The greatest amount of rain falls in the south-eastern part of the State. An unusual amount of fair weather, prevailing clearness of sky, general salubrity of soil and climate, are chief among the natural advantages of this great State.*~~

~~*Geology.—The stratified rocks of Missouri belong to the following divisions :—Quaternary, Tertiary, Carboniferous, Devonian, Silurian, and Archean. The Quaternary system comprises the drift, 155 feet thick ; the bluff, 200 feet above the drift; then the bottom prairie, 35 feet thick ; and on the surface the alluvium, 30 feet in thickness. Clays with strata of sands, marls, and humus form the alluvial bottoms of the two great rivers of the State, and make up a soil deep, light, and incomparably rich. Beneath the alluvium is found the bottom prairie, made up also of sands, clays, and vege- table moulds. This formation is found only in the bottom lands of the Missouri and Mississippi rivers, and more abundantly in those of the former. Numerous and well- preserved organic remains are found in the bottom prairie,*~~

~~*mee Ss © UR I*~~

~~*including the shells found in great quantities in the bluff and remains of the mastodon and many trees and plants. Below this formation, resting upon the drift, is the bluff. This rests upon the ridges and river bluffs, and thus is topographically higher, although geologically lower, than the bottom prairie. It is composed chiefly of a grey siliceous marl, coloured sometimes to a deep brown or red by the stains of oxide of iron. This formation extends along the bluffs of the Missouri from Fort Union to its mouth, and is found capping those of the Mississippi from Dubuque to the mouth of the Ohio. It is sometimes 200 feet thick ; at St Joseph it is 140, at Booneville 100, at St Louis 50, in Marion county only 30 feet. This forma- tion has interesting fossils (Zlephas primigenius, &c.). The drift, the lowest of the Quaternary system, appears in the altered drift, the boulder formation, made up largely*~~

~~of the igneousandmetamorphicrocks, with rocks from the Paleozoic strata upon which the others rest. Large boulders, five or six feet in diameter, are found, usually of granite or meta- morphic sandstone; no fossils except a few logs in the altered drift have been found in this formation. The Tertiary formation in Missouri is composed of clays, shales, iron ores, sandstone, and sand, and extends along the bluffs and bottoms of the south-east part of the State. Iron ore is found in this formation in great abundance ; sand of the best quality for glass-making and clays for pottery and stoneware also abound. Below the Tertiary bed are found rocks which strongly resemble Cretaceous beds found in other places in the United States. These strata are in such a state of irregularity and disturbance as to indicate the occurrence of some great movements after their deposition and before the formation of the Tertiary strata. The Upper~~

~~Carboniferous system, or coal measures, made up of sand- |~~

~~stone, limestone, marl, coal, and iron ores, covers an area of more than 23,000 square miles in Missouri, occupying the western and northern portions of the State. The supply of bituminous and cannel coals found here would seem to be well-nigh inexhaustible. In the Lower Carboniferous rock are found many varieties of limestone and sandstone. Among these are the Upper Archimedes Limestone, 200 feet; Ferruginous Sandstone, 195 feet ; Middle Archimedes Limestone, 50 feet; St Louis Limestone, 250 feet. The Devonian system is represented by limestone in Marion, Ralls, Pike, Callaway, Saline, and Ste Genevieve counties,~~

~~among which occur the Chouteau Limestone, 85 feet;~~

~~Lithographic Limestone, 125 feet ; Onondaga Limestone, 100 feet. Of the Upper Silurian series are the following formations :—Lower Helderberg, 350 feet; Niagara Group, 200 feet ; Cape Girardeau Limestone, 60 feet. Prominent among the Lower Silurian formations are the Trenton Limestone, 360 feet; the Black River and Bird's Eye Limestone ; and the Magnesian series. The last-named series is valuable both in a scientific and an economic sense. It covers much of the southern and south-eastern portions of the State, and in it are found vast deposits of lead, zinc, copper, cobalt, iron ores, and marble. The Archean rocks occur below the Silurian deposits,~~

~~*and contain siliceous and other slates in which no fossils are found. The porphyry rocks of this formation also contain iron ores.*~~

~~*Coal.—The exposed coal in Missouri includes upper, middle, and lower measures. In the first are about 4 feet of coal, and the area of exposure is about 8400 square miles. The middle coal measures contain about 7 feet of coal, and cover an exposed area of about 2000 square miles. The lower measures have five workable seams, varying from 18 inches in thickness to 43 feet, and also some thin seams of only a few inches. In 1880 556,304 bushels of bitu- minous coal were raised in thirty-five counties of Missouri, the value at the pit mouth being $1,060,225. $642,772 were paid in wages to 2599 persons. The Missouri coal mines are easily worked.*~~

~~*Jvon.—The iron ores are red hematite, red oxide, specular iron,*~~

~~*brown hematite or limonite, and clay ironstone. Manganiferousand |*~~

~~*siliceous specular ores occur in the porphyries of the Archean rocks,*~~

~~*525*~~

~~*and in the granites. The greatest exposure of specular iron yet dis- covered is Iron Mountain, the purest mass or body of iron ore known. Analysis shows it to contain from 65 to 69 per cent. of metallic iron. The ore of Shepherd Mountain is not so rich as that of Iron Moun- tain, but is uniform in character, free from sulphur and phosphoric acid and on the whole superior to any other yet developed in Missouri. Pilot Knob ore gives 53 to 60 per cent. metallic iron, and has few deleterious substances. It is fine-grained, light bluish grey in colour. The ore of the Scotia iron banks and Iron Ridge are much alike in appearance and character, being specular boulders imbedded in soft red hematite. In some of these boulders are cavities in which the ore has taken botryoidal form, and upon these peroxide of iron crystallizations are so formed that a gorgeous show of prismatic colours is presented. The above are the chief deposits of iron ores, but limonites are found mostly in the southern parts of the State. The counties of Ste Genevieve, Madison, St Francois, Cape Girar- deau, Bollinger, Wayne, Stoddard, Washington, Reynolds, Shan- non, Carter, and*~~

~~*Ripley have the greatest exposures of these orcs, although they are found in many others. The supply of iron ores is, indeed, practically inexhaustible.*~~

~~*Lead.—Second only to iron among the metals of Missouri is the vast deposit of lead found in the southern parts of the State. The great disseminated lead region occupies about one-half of the north- ern portion of Madison, and about as much of St Frangois county. It isin the magnesian limestone that the largest quantities have been found. In Franklin county galena is found in abundance in ferruginous clay and coarse gravel. In the great mammoth mine in Washington county is a succession of caves in which millions of pounds of lead were found adhering to the sides and roofs, The central lead district of the State compvises the counties of Cole, Cooper, Moniteau, Morgan, Miller, Benton, Maries, Camden, and Osage ; the southern lead region the counties of Pulaski, Laclede, Texas, Wright, Webster, Douglass, Ozark, and Christian. The western lead district includes the counties of Hickory, Dallas, Polk, St Clair, Cedar, and Dade; the south-western the counties of Jasper, Newton, Lawrence, Stone, Barry, and M'Donald. The two couuties Jasper and Newton produce fully one-half of the pig lead of Missouri. The lead mines of Granby are among the best- known in the State, and millions of pounds of lead have been taken from these lands.*~~

~~*Copper deposits have been found in several counties, chiefly in the south-western part of the State. Zinc is found, in the shape of sulphuret and also silicate of zinc, in nearly all the lead mines in south-western Missouri. It has often occurred in such masses as seriously to hinder mining operations, and until very recent years, when railroad facilities have given this ore a market, it was thrown aside as worthless. It is now an important and profitable adjunct of the lead mines of Missouri. Cobalt and niekel are found at Mine La Motte and in a few otherplaces. Silver is found in small quan- tities in lead nines in Madison county, combined with the lead.*~~

~~*Clays for the manufacture of ordinary brick for building purposes and for fire-brick exist in quantities beyond computation, and kaolin has been found in a few places. Marble of various shades and qualities abounds in Missouri, and is an important item in its mineral wealth. Limestones and sandstones suitable for building purposes are found in many parts of the State.*~~

~~*Agricultwre.—Indian corn, wheat, oats, and tobacco are the staple products ; but cotton, hemp, and flax are also raised to some extent in the southern counties. The average yield of wheat to the acre is 30 bushels, and that return is often far exceeded. No flour is of a higher quality or more in demand in foreign as well as home markets than that made from Missouri wheat. Indian corn is especially used in fattening live stock. Blue grass, timothy, red-top, and red and white clover grow luxuriantly, and favour stock-raising. In some parts of the State pasturage can be had all the year round, and the cheapness of corn makes the raising of pork, in particular, a very profitable business. All varieties of fruit can be very suc- cessfully cultivated. The more tender fruits, such as apricots, nec- tarines, figs, and many choice kinds of grapes, grow here as well as the more northern fruits —the apple, the pear, the pluin, and the cherry. Apples and peaches do well in all parts of the State. Six native varieties of grapes are found in luxuriant growth, and many cultivated varieties have been successfully introduced. No State, not even California, can hope ultimately to rival Missouri in the production of both red and white wines. Sheep-raising has proved remunerative in the southern counties chiefly, where the mild cli- mate, the fine grasses, and the abundance of good water are especially favourable to this branch of agricultural industry. There are in Missouri, in round numbers, 10,000,000 acres of improved and 13,000,000 of unimproved land, including 9,000,000 acres of wood- land. 'The cash value of the farms is estimated at $90,000,000. In 1880 there were on the farms in the State 667,776 horses, 192,027 mules and asses, 9020 oxen, 661,405 cows, 1,410,507 other cattle, 1,411,298 sheep, and 4,553,123 swine. Missouri is the fourth maize-producing State of the Union; it supplies more wine than any State except California, and is a rival of Kentucky, Virginia, Tennessee, and Maryland in the culture of tobacco, which is a*~~

~~*staple in the rich counties in the northern central part of the State, bordering upon the Missouri river. No State raises so many mules, asses, and hogs. The production of cereals in 1880 was——corn, 202,485,723 bushels ; wheat, 24,966,627 bushels ; rye, 535,426 bushels ; oats, 20,670,958 bushels ; barley, 123,031 bushels ; buckwheat, 57,640 bushels. The production of tobacco for the same year was 12,015,657 tb from 15,521*~~

~~*acres, valued at $600,256, Three-fourths of this amount was raised in Chariton, Marion, Randolph, Howard, Callaway, and Saline counties.*~~

~~*Wild Animals.—Red-deer are found in every part of the State, especially in the thinly-settled and mountainous districts. Venison, indeed, in its season, is as cheap as good beef in the markets of St Louis. Wild turkeys are numerous in the swampy and mountainous districts, and are found in all parts of the State. Prairie chickens, or pinnated grouse, are found in the prairie portion of Missouri, and are shipped in great numbers to Eastern markets. In all parts of Missouri are found the quail or Virginia partridge, thousands of barrels of which are shipped from the State each season. The rabbit, a species of hare, is so common as to be considered a pest. The grey squirrel and the red fox-squirrel are also found in large numbers all over the State. Black bass, perch, catfish, buffalo fish, suckers, and pike are the leading varieties of native fish.*~~

~~*Manufactures.—In 1880 Missouri had about 20,000 manufactur- ing establishments, in which a capital of about $125,000,000 was employed. The products of these establishments were valued at upwards of $300,000,000. The leading manufacturing counties outside of the city of St Louis are Jackson, Buchanan, St Charles, Marion, Franklin, Greene, Cape Girardeau, Platte, Boone, and Lafayette; but more than three-fourths of the manufactures are produced at St Louis, which is the fourth manufacturing city of the Union. The chief manufacture is that of flour, which employs about 900 mills, and is rapidly increasing. Twenty-four mills made in St Louis, in 1880, 2,142,949 barrels of flour, having a daily out- put of more than 11,000 barrels. St Louis millers and dealers sent in 1880 to Europe and South America 619,108 barrels of flour ; and at the world's fairs at Paris, Vienna, and Philadelphia, Missouri flour received the first award. The iron industry, which stands second in importance, is yet only in its infancy, and St Louis seems destined to be one of the great centres of iron and steel manufacture. The amount of iron made in Missouri in 1880, in twenty-two establish- ments employing 3189 hands, was 125,758 tons. St Louis made the same year 102,664 tons of pig-iron, steel, and rolled iron and blooms. The yearly values of a number of other industries are estimated as follows :—meat packing, $20,000,000 ; lumber, $10,000,000 ; bags and bagging, $7,000,000; saddlery, $7,000,000 ; oi}, $6,000,000 ; printing and*~~

~~publishing, $5,500,000 ; furniture, $5,000,000 ; car- riages and waggons, $4,500,000 ; marble and stone, $4,000,000 ; tin, copper, and sheet-iron, $4,000,000 ; agricultural implements, $2,000,000. The manufacture of glass and glass-ware is carried on to a considerable extent, especially in St Louis. At Crystal City, on the Mississippi, 80 miles below St Louis, is a very large deposit of sand suitable for the manufacture of plate-glass, and a company has been organized and is now in successful operation, with a capital of $1,000,000.~~

~~Commerce.—The extensive commerce of Missouri centres at St Louis, between which city and the ports on the Mississippi and Missouri rivers steamboats are constantly plying. Railroad _traus- portation has, in recent years, furnished superior and cheaper facilities for much of the trade which formerly depended upon the rivers. The trade in cotton especially has been greatly increased in Missouri since 1870 by the use of railroad transportation, which has made St Louis one of the great cotton centres of the United States. Extensive cotton presses were built in St Louis in that year, and the receipts of cotton from the more southern States has increased rapidly—from 12,264 bales in 1869-70 to 457,568 bales in 1879-80. Railroad connexions have made the interior portions of Arkansas and Texas more accessible to St Louis than to the southern ports of shipment, and the trade with the south-west, with the Indians, and with Mexico is constantly increasing. In 1870 St Louis was made by Act of Congress a port of entry to which foreign merchandise could be brought in bond. The value of the direct imports for the year ending 30th June 1882 was $1,934,342.~~

~~Population.—Missouri is divided into 114 counties. The following table gives the number of inhabitants since 1850 :— .~~

~~Males. Females. Total. Density per ‘ square mile. 357,882 | 324,212 682,044 14°37 622,201 | 559,811 | 1,182,012 18-08 896,347 824,948 1,721,295 26°34 1880 1,127,187 | 1,041,193 | 2,168,380 31°55~~

~~In 1880 the foreign-born residents numbered 211,578, or 9°7 per cent., of whom 109,974 were Germans and Scandinavians ; there were also 145,046 of African descent. The early settlers of the State~~

~~MPT 5% © 0 ire~~

~~were French, and their descendants are still found in St Louis and Ste Genevieve and a few other smaller towns. Many Germans have recently settled in all parts of the State, while English, Irish, Scotch, and Swedes have also made Missouri their home in considerable numbers. The native American population is mostly descended from immigrants from the States of Kentucky, Tennessee, N orth Carolina, and Virginia. During recent years there has been a large accession to the population from the eastern and north-western States.~~

~~St Louis, the chief city of the Mississippi valley, situated upon the Mississippi river about 12 miles below the mouth of the Missouri, has a population of 850,518; Kansas City, a thriving town on the western border, situated on the banks of the Missouri, has 55,785 ; St Joseph, in the north-west, has 32,431 ; Hannibal, in the north-east, has 11,074 ; and Jefferson City (the State capital), in the centre, has 5271.~~

~~Education.—Missouri has a public school system of education first adopted in 1839. There are district schools, elementary and ungraded ; city schools, graded, with high school courses; four normal schools, and a State university. Free public schools for white and coloured children between the ages of six and twenty years are required by law for every district in the State. Besides these public institutions supported by the State there are many private schools and colleges for both sexes. Chief among these are the St Louis University, an institution managed by the Jesuits ; the College of Christian Brothers, also under the control of the Roman Catholics ; and Washington University, a non-sectarian en- dowed school, which has property estimated at $1,000,000, and more than 1300 students. The Baptists have a college at Liberty called William Jewell College ; the Congregationalists one at Spring- field called Drury College ; and the Methodists and Presbyterians several colleges and seminaries.~~

~~Religion.—The early settlers of Missouri were Roman Catholics, and in the river towns may be found to-day a large number of that faith. The Baptists have 88,999 members, with 1885 churches ; the Methodists, 96,270 members and 918 churches ; the Protestant Episcopal Church, 25,000 members and 65 church buildings ; the Presbyterians, with their various branches, 84,628 members and 706 churches.~~

~~*Administration.—The legislative power is vested in a body con- sisting of a senate and a house of representatives, which meets once in every two years, on the Wednesday after the first day of January next after the election of the members thereof. Members of the legislature are paid a sum not to exceed $5 a day for the first seventy days of the session, and after that not to exceed $1 a day for the remainder of the session. They are also allowed mile- age. The executive department consists of a governor, a lieu- tenant-governor, a secretary of state, a State auditor, State treasurer, an attorney-general, and a superintendent of public instruction ; these are all elected by the people. The supreme executive power is vested in the governor, who is chosen for four years, as also are the other members of this department. The governor has a qualified veto upon the acts of the legislature, and such other powers as are common to that officer in the several States. The judicial power of the State is lodged in a supreme court, the St Louis court of appeals, circuit courts, criminal courts, probate courts, and municipal courts. All judicial officers are elected by the people. Judges of the supreme court are elected for ten years, those of the St Louis court of appeals for twelve years, those of the circuit courts for six years. Executive and judicial officers are liable to impeachment by the house of repre- sentatives. All impeachment cases are tried by the senate.*~~

~~*Every male citizen of the United States, and every male person of foreign birth who may have declared his intention to become a citizen of the United States, according to law, not less than one year nor more than five years before he offers to vote, who is over the age of twenty-one years, is entitled to vote at all elections by the people, if he has resided in the State one year immediately preceding the election at which he offers to vote, and has resided in the county, city, or town where he shall offer to vote at least sixty days immediately preceding the election.*~~

~~*History.—On the 9th April 1682, the French voyager and dis- coverer La Salle took possession of the country of Louisiana in the name of the king of France. Its limits were quite indefinite, and in- cluded the present territory of Missouri (see LovistAna). The first settlements of Missouri were made in Ste Genevieve and at New Bourbon, but uncertainty exists as to the exact date. By some the year is fixed at 1768; by others, and by many traditions, as early as 1735. St Louis was settled by Pierre Laclede Liguest, a native of*~~

~~France. The site was chosen in 1768, and in February 1764 Auguste Chouteau went at the order of Liguest to the spot previously selected, and built a small village. For a long time the settlements were confined to the neighbourhood of the river. On the 31st of October 1808 the Congress of the United States passed an Act by which the president was authorized to take possession of the territory according to the treaty of Paris, and the formal transfer of Lower Louisiana was made on 20th December~~

~~1803. In 1804 Congress divided the territory into two portions. The northern part, commonly called Upper Louisiana, was taken possession of in March 1804. In June 1812 Missouri was organ- ized as a Territory, with a governor and general assembly. The first governor (1813-1820) was William Clarke. In 1818 Missouri applied for admission to the Union as a State. Two years of bitter controversy followed, which convulsed the country and threatened the dissolution of the Union. This controversy followed a resolution introduced into Congress which had in view an anti-slavery restriction upon the admission of Missouri to the Union. This was at last settled by the adoption of the " Missouri compromise," which forbade slavery in all that portion of the Louisi- ana purchase lying north of 36° 30' except in Missouri, and on 19th July 1820 Missouri was admitted to the Union. A conven- tion to frame a constitution had already been called, and the constitution then adopted remained without material change until~~

~~1865.~~

~~St Louis in September 1820, and Alexander M'Nair was chosen governor in August. The seat of government was fixed at St Charles in 1820, and removed to Jefferson City, the present State capital, in 1826. The first census of the State was taken in 1821, when the number of inhabitants was found to be 70,647, of whom 11,254 were slaves. In the Black Hawk war in 1832, the Florida war in 1837, and the Mexican war in 1846 Missouri volunteer troops did their share of the work. In the troubles in Kansas, and the bitter discussion upon the question of slavery, Missouri was deeply involved. A strong feeling in favour of secession showed itself in many parts of the State. Governor Jackson, in his inaugural address on the 4th of January 1861, said that Missouri must stand by the slaveholding States,~~

~~*whatever might be their course. The election of a majority of Union men, however, as delegates to a convention ealled to eonsider the aifairs of the nation, showed that public sentiment was hostile to secession, and the convention adjourned without committing the State to the seeession party. United States troops were soon gathered at St Louis, and forees were also sent to Jefferson City, and to Rolla. Governor Jaekson fled from the eapital, and summoned all the State troops to meet him at Booneville. General Lyon defeated these troops, 17th June 1861, and soon most of the State was under the eontrol of the United States forees. tion was reassembled. This body deelared vacant the offices of governor, lieutenant-governor, and secretary of state, and filled them by appointment. The seats of the members of the legislature were also declared vaeant.*~~

~~*The first general assembly under the constitution met in* |~~

~~*The State conven-* |~~

~~*Governor Jackson soon issued a pro-* |~~

~~*clamation deelaring the State out of the Union, and Confederate | forees were assembled in large numbers in the south-western part* |~~

~~*of the State. Creek near Springfield, and General Fremont, commanding the department of the west, deereed martial law throughout the State. For a year matters were favourable to the Confederates, and at the opening of 1862 their troops held nearly half the State ; but in*~~

~~*General Lyon was killed at the battle of Wilson's* |~~

~~*February a Federal foree under General Curtis drove General Price* |~~

~~*into Arkansas. He returned in 1864, and overran a large part of the State, but was finally foreed to retreat, and but little further trouble arose in Missouri during the war. the United States army during the war 108,773 troops. a new eonstitution was adopted by the people. In 1869 the XV. Amendment to the United States constitution was adopted by a large majority. by a convention called for that purpose, and ratified by the people, and is now the fundamental law of the State. (M. S. S.)*~~

~~*MISTLETOE! (Viscum album, L.), a species of Viscum, of the family Loranthacex. The whole genus is parasitical, and seventy-six species have been described ; but only the mistletoe proper is a native of Europe. It forms an ever- green bush, about 4 feet in length, thickly crowded with (falsely) dichotomous branches and opposite leaves. The leaves are about 2 inches long, obovate-lanceolate, yellowish green ; the dicecious flowers, which are small and nearly of the same colour but yellower, appear in February and March ; the fruit, which when ripe is filled with a viscous semitransparent pulp (whence birdlime is derived), is almost always white, but there is said to be a variety with red fruit. evergreen trees and shrubs, and "it would be difficult to*~~

~~*1 Greek itfa or ités, hence Latin viscum, Italian vischio or visco, and French gui. The English word is the Anglo-Saxon misteltan, Icelandic mistelteinn, in which tan or tetnn means a twig, and mistel may be associated either with mist in the sense of fog, gloom, beeause of the prominence of mistletoe in the dark season of the year, or with the same root in the sense of dung (from the character of the berries or the supposed mode of propagation).*~~

~~*Missouri furnished to | In 1865 |*~~

~~*In 1875 still another State constitution was drawn up |*~~

~~*The mistletoe is parasitic both on deciduous and |*~~

~~*O27*~~

~~*say on what dicotyledonous trees it does not grow" (Loudon). In England it is most abundant on the apple tree, but rarely found on the oak. 'The fruit is eaten by most frugivorous birds, and through their agency, particu- larly that of the thrush (hence missel-thrush or mistle- thrush), the plant is propagated. (The Latin proverb has it that "Turdus malum sibi cacat"; but the sowing is really effected by the bird wiping its beak, to which the seeds adhere, against the bark of the tree on which it has alighted.) The growth of the plant is slow, and its dura- bility proportionately great, its death being determined generally by that of the tree on which it has established itself. See Loudon, Arboretum et Fruticetum Britannicum, vol. ii. p. 1021 (1838).*~~

~~*The mistletoe so extensively used in England at Christmas tide is largely derived from the*~~

~~*apple orchards of Normandy.*~~

~~*Pliny (H. V., xvi. 92-95; xxiv. 6) has a good deal to tell about the viscwm, a deadly parasite, though slower in its aetion than ivy. He distinguishes three " genera." "On the fir and lareh grows what is called stelés in Euboa and hyphear in Arcadia." Viscum, called dryos hyphear, is most plentiful on the esculent oak (quereus), but oeenrs also on the robur, Prunus sylvestris, and terebinth. Hyphear is useful for fattening cattle if they are hardy enough to withstand the purgative effeet it produces at first ; viseum is medicinally of value as an emollient, and in eases of tumour, uleers, and the like; and he also notes it "coneeptum foeminarum adjuvare si omnino secum habeant." Pliny is also our authority for the reverence in whieh the mistletoe when found growing on the robur was held by the Druids. The robur, he says, is their saered tree, and whatever is. found growing upon it they regard as sent from heaven and as the mark of a tree chosen by God. Sueh eases of parasitism are rare, and when they oeeur attract much attention (est autem id rarum admodum inventu et repertum magna religione petitur), partieularly on ,the sixth (day of the) moon, with which their months and years and, after the lapse of thirty years, their "ages" begin. Calling it in their own language "all heal" (omnia sanantem), after their sacrifices and banquets have been duly prepared under the tree, they bring near two white bulls whose horns are then for the first time bound. The priest clothed with a white robe ascends the tree, euts [the mistletoe] with a golden hook; it is caught in a white mantle. They then slay the vietims, praying God to prosper His gift to them unto whom He has given it. Prepared as adranght, it is used as a eure for sterility and a remedy for poisons. The mistletoe figures also in Seandinavian legend as having furnished the material of the arrow with whieh Baldur (the sun-god) was slain by the blind god Héder. Most probably this story had its origin in a partieular theory as to the meaning of the word mistletoe.*~~

~~*MITAU (the Lettish Jelgava), a town of Russia, capital of the government of Courland. It is situated 27 miles by rail to the south-west of Riga, on the right bank of the river Aa, in a fertile plain which rises only 12 feet above*~~

~~sea-level, and which probably has given its name to the town (Mitte in der Aue). At high water the plain and sometimes~~

~~also the town are inundated. Mitau is surrounded by a~~

~~canal occupying the place of former fortifications. Another canal was dug through the town to provide it with water; but this now receives the sewage, and water is brought in cars from a distance of 3 miles. Though so near Riga, Mitau has quite a different character. It has regular broad streets, bordered with the low pretty mansions of the German nobility who reside at the capital of Courland either to enjoy the social amusements for which Mitau is renowned or to provide education to theirchildren. Mitau is well provided with educational institutions. A gym- nasium occupies a former palace of the dukes of Courland, and has a rich library; and there are about forty other schools. The town is also the seat of a society of art and literature, of a natural history society, which has a good local museum, and of the Lettish Literary Society. The old castle of the dukes of Courland, which has witnessed so many conflicts, was destroyed by the Duke Biron, who erected in its place a spacious palace, now occupied by the governor and the courts. Mitau has 22,200 inhabitants, mainly Germans, but including also Jews (about 6000), Letts (5000), and Russians. Manufactures are few, those~~

~~of wrought-iron ware and of white-lead being the most im- portant. The river Aa brings Mitau in connexion with the trade of Riga, small vessels carrying goods to the amount of about £150,000 a year.~~

~~Mitau is supposed to have been founded in 1266 by the grand- master Conrad Mandern. It has often changed its rulers. In 1345, when it was plundered by Lithuanians, it was already an important town, In 1561 it became the residence of the dukes of Courland. During the 17th century it was thrice taken by the Swedes, Russia annexed it with Courland in 1795. At the be-~~

~~ginning of this century it was the residence of the count of~~

~~*Provence (afterwards Louis XVIII.). Napoleon I.*~~

~~*MITCHEL, Ormssy M'Kyicurt (1810-1862), American general and writer on astronomy, was born in Union county, Kentucky, August 28, 1810. He began life as a clerk, but, obtaining an appointment to a cadetship at West Point in 1825, he graduated there in 1829, and became assistant professor of mathematics in 1831. Subsequently he was called to the bar, but forsook law to become professor of mathematics and natural philosophy at Cincinnati college. There he established an observatory, of which he became director. From 1859 to 1861 he was director of the Dudley observatory at Albany. He took part in the war as brigadier-general of volunteers, and for his skill and rapidity in seizing certain important strategic points was on April 11, 1862, made major-general. He died of yellow fever at Beaufort, South Carolina, October 30, 1862. Besides making important improvements on several astrono- mical instruments, Mitchel was the author of several works on astronomy, the principal of which are The Planetary and Stellar Worlds (1848) and The Orbs of Heaven (1851). See Memoir by Headley (1865).*~~

~~*MITCHELL, Sir THomas Livinestone (1792-1855), Australian explorer, was a son of Mitchell of Craigend, Stirlingshire, where he was born, June 16, 1792. From 1808 to the end of the Peninsular War he served in Wellington's army, and for his services received the medal and five clasps, and was raised to the rank of major. He was appointed to survey the battlefields of the Peninsula, and his map of the Lower Pyrenees is still admired. In 1827 he was appointed deputy surveyor-general, and after- wards surveyor-general, of New South Wales. He devoted himself to the exploration of Australia, making four expeditions for that purpose between 1831 and 1846. During these expeditions he discovered the Peel, the Namoi, the Gwyder, and other rivers, traced the course of the Darling and Glenelg, and was the first to pene- trate into that portion of the country which he named Australia Felix. His last expedition was mainly devoted to the discovery of a route between Sydney and the Gulf of Carpentaria, and during the journey he explored the Fitzroy Downs, and discovered the Balonne, Victoria, Warrego, and other streams. In 1838, while in England, Mitchell published the narrative of his first three journeys, Three Expeditions into the Interior of East Australia (2 vols.). In 1839 he was knighted and made a D.C.L. of*~~

~~*Oxford. During this visit he took with him some of the first specimens of gold and the first diamond found in the country. In 1848 the narrative of his second expedition was published in London, Journal of an Expedition into the Interior of Tropical Australia. In 1851 he was sent to report on the Bathurst gold-fields, and in 1853 he again visited England and patented his boomerang propeller for steamers. He died at his residence at Darling Poirt, Sydney, October 5, 1855.*~~

~~*Besides the above works, Mitchell wrote a book on Geographical*~~

~~*and Military Surveying (1827), an Australian Geography, and a translation of the Lusiad of Camoens.*~~

~~*In 1812 it was taken by*~~

~~*MITE. Mites (Acarina) are minute creatures which form a large division of the Arachnida, distinguished by*~~

~~*MIT—MIT*~~

~~*the absence of any constriction between the cephalothorax and abdomen. Linneeus included all in the single genus Acarus. They are now divided into several families (mostly containing numerous genera), viz., Trombidiide (harvest mites), usually scarlet specks seen running on stones, grass, &c., in hot weather; Z'etra- nychi, which, although not bright red, are the red spider of our green-houses, and are distinguished by feet with knobbed hairs; Bdellide, long-snouted mites with an- tenniform palpi; Cheyletide (fig. 1), the so-called book mites,—ferocious, predatory . little "beings, 'quite "wtncon- 7% 1—Ceeptete flabellifer.*~~

~~*nected with books; Hydrachnide, freshwater mites with swimming legs, mostly beautiful creatures of brillant colours; Limnocaridz, crawling freshwater or mud mites ; Halicaridz, chiefly marine ; Gamasidz, hard-skinned brown mites often parasitic on insects, and best known by the females, and young of both sexes, found on the common dung beetle (Geotrupes stercorarius) ; Txodide, the true ticks, not to be confounded with the sheep-tick, d&c., which*~~

~~*Fic. 2.—Letosoma palmicinetum ; nymph.*~~

~~*are wingless flies ; Oribatide, beetle mites, so called from their resemblance to minute beetles (these are never parasitic; they undergo transformations almost as strange as those of insects, many of the immature forms being quaint and beautiful, see fig. 2); Myobiada, bizarre para- sites of the mouse, &c., with peculiar holding claws ; Tyroglyphidx, the cheese mites; Analgide, found on the feathers of birds ; Sarcoptide, the itch mites ; Arctesconide, the water bears; Demodicidz, found in the sebaceous follicles of the human nose, &c.; and Phytoptidx, the gall mites, which attack the leaves of plants, making tiny gall- like excrescences.*~~

~~*The sexes are distinct individuals; the reproduction is oviparous; the larva is almost always hexapod, though the later stages have eight legs; that answering to the pupa of insects is active, and is called the nymph. The breathing in the first-named eleven families is tracheal, the position of the stigmata varying greatly; in the last-named six families it is by the general body surface. No heart or circulation of the blood is known to exist; the alimentary canal is usually somewhat on the insect type, but with cecal prolongations to the stomach, the reproductive organs often more on the crustacean type. There is generally a single very large nerve-ganglion above the cesophagus, sending nerve-branches to the various parts. The legs have ordinarily five to*~~

~~*MIT—MIT*~~

~~*seven joints, rarely three; the feet are usually terminated by claws or suckets, or both, sometimes by bristles. The mandibles are generally large, oftenest chelate (like a lobster's claw), sometimes style-like piercing organs, and of other forms. The maxille vary much: they may be piercing or crushing organs, or may coalesce to form a maxillary lip; there is usually one pair of maxillary palpi, no others. Sometimes there is a lingua, and in the Gamasidex a galea. Antenne are not found.*~~

~~*Mites are distributed all over the known world. They have been found in Franz-Josef's Land and Spitzbergen and in the hottest tropical regions, as well as the temperate zones. Often very similar species come from all parts. They are numerous in amber of the Tertiary epoch.*~~

~~*The best-known species are probably those which injure man or his works, viz., the itch mite, the cheese mite, the so-called harvest-bug, and the red spider. The dog-tick is also well known.*~~

~~*The itch mite (Sarcoptes scabiet, fig. 3) is a minute, almost circular, flattened, colourless creature, with skin covered with wavy wrinkles, and a number of triangular points arising from that of the back; legs short, the two front pairs and the fourth pair in the male terminated by suckers on long stalks, the two hind pairs in the female and third pair in the male having long bristles instead. It is parasitic on human beings: the males and young remain chiefly on the surface of the skin, but are difficult to find; the female burrows under the scarf-skin, causing the intense itching of scabies by the action of her chelate mandibles as she eats her way. A small watery pustule is raised near where the acarus has entered the skin, and others arise; the creature is not found in the pustule, but at the further end of a short tunnel which may be half aninch long. The eggs are laid in the tunnel after the acarus has passed ; they hatch and multiply rapidly. The disease can be certainly cured ; the usual mode is to rub the whole body with sulphur ointment, which is best done after a warm bath, allow it. to remain on all night, and wash off in the morning. This treatment should be repeated once or twice at intervals of a day ortwo. Other applications of sulphur, as sulphurous acid, sulphur vapour baths, d&c., are efficacious. All clothes which have touched the skin must be disinfected by heat. The disease is highly contagious. Most mammals have their peculiar varieties of itch mite.*~~

~~*The cheese mite (Z'yroglyphus siro) is an elliptical, fat- bodied, colourless acarus with smooth skin and very long hairs. It breeds in thousands in old cheese, flour, grain, é&c., and does much damage. There are numerous allied species; some belonging to the genus Glyciphagus are elegantly ornamented with plumes or leaf-like hairs.*~~

~~*The red-spider (Zetranychus telarius) attacks the leaves of plants or trees, and is a great pest in green-houses. It spins a slight web on the surface of the leaves, and lives in companies on the web; it is of a rusty red or brown.*~~

~~*The harvest bugs, thought by some writers to be a species, and by them called Leptus autwmnalis, are simply the larvee of several species of Z'rombidium. They are predatory, but will attach themselves temporarily to*~~

~~*the human skin, and produce the violent itching felt on the lower parts of the legs after walking through dry grass in autumn. On inspection with a glass the creature may be seen as a*~~

~~*Fra. 3.—The Itch Mite (Sareoptes seabiei) ; female. After Meguin.*~~

~~*O29 minute scarlet point. A drop of benzine will probably get rid of the intruder.*~~

~~*The dog tick, like the harvest-bug, is not really parasitic on mammals, though it attaches itself temporarily; its ordinary food may probably be vegetable. (A. D. M.*~~

~~*MITFORD, Mary Russett (1786-1855), born at Alres- ford, Hampshire, on the 16th of December 1786, retains an honourable place in English literature as the authoress of Our Village, a series of sketches of village scenes and characters unsurpassed in their kind, and after half a century of imitations as fresh as if they had been written yesterday. Washington Irving was Miss Mitford's literary model, but her work is thoroughly original and spontaneous, the free outflow ofa singularly charming character. The shortest account of her life would be incomplete without a reference to the scapegrace father who was the centre of her affections, and the "only begetter" of all that is most delightful and characteristic in her writing. Dr Mitford first spent his wife's fortune in a few years; then he spent also in a few years the greater part of £20,000 which his daughter drew (in 1797, at the age of ten) as a prize in a lottery ; then he lived, for most years of his life, on a small remnant of his fortune and the proceeds of his daughter's literary industry. In the little village of Three Mile Cross, near Reading, in a small cottage which Miss Mitford says was "a fine lesson in condensation," the doctor was the stay, support, and admiration of all the loafers in the neighbourhood, while his daughter, who had called herself his mamma, and treated him as her little boy from the time when she was herself a little girl, found an unfailing charm in his "friskings," and was the loving slave of all his good-humoured exactions. The father kept fresh in his daughter the keen delight in incongruities, the lively sympathy with self-willed vigorous individuality, and the womanly tolerance of its excess which inspire so many of her sketches of character. The woman who lived in close attendance on such an "awful dad," refused all holiday invitations because*~~

~~*he could not live without her, and worked incessantly for him, except when she broke off her work to read him the sporting newspapers, evidently wrote from the heart in her bright portraits of such characters as the Talking Lady, the Talking Gentleman, Joel Brent, Jack Rapley, Tom Cordery, Lizzy, Lucy, and Harriet. Her writing has all the charm of perfectly unaffected spontaneous humour, combined with quick wit and exquisite literary skill, She died January 10, 1855.*~~

~~*Miss Mitford's youthful ambition was to be " the greatest English poetess," and her first publications were poems in the manner of Coleridge and Seott (Miscellaneous Verses, 1810, of sufficient mark to be reviewed by Scott in the Quarterly ; Christine, a metrical tale, 1811; Blanche, 1818). Later on she essayed writing plays (Julian, 1823; The Foscari, 1826; Dramatie Seenes, 1827 ; Rienzi, 1828 ; Charles the First, 1828). But the prose to which she was driven by domestic necessities has rarer qualities than her verse. The first series of Our Village sketehes appeared in 1824, a second in 1826, a third in 1828, a fourth in 1830, a fifth in 1882, and Belford Regis, a novel in whieh the neighbourhood and soeiety of Reading were idealized, in 1835. Her Recollections of a Literary Life (1858) is a series of ewuseries about her favourite books. Five volumes of her Life and Letters were published in 1870 and 1872, showing her to have been a delightful letter-writer ; two volumes of letters to her appeared in 1882.*~~

~~*MITHRADATES, or, as it is often wrongly spelt, MirHRipAtEs (2.¢., "given by the god Mithras"), was a favourite name of the Pontic kings in the third and second centuries B.c., and was also common in Persia and the neighbouring countries. The dynasty of Pontus was a Persian family, claiming descent from the Achemenide, and the earliest of them known in history was satrap under the Persian empire. When that empire was destroyed Mithradates II. made himself king of Pontus; and he and his successors gradually spread their power over a great*~~

~~*part of Cappadocia and Paphlagonia. Several of them intermarried with the Seleucid and other Greek royal families, and something of the Hellenic*~~

~~*civilization was engrafted on the native non-Hellenic character of the kingdom. The names Mithradates, Pharnaces, and Ariobar- zanes, all non-Hellenic, alternate in the family. The pro- vince of Phrygia was sold in the most scandalous way by the Roman consul Aquillius to Mithradates V., who died probably in 120 s.c. He was succeeded by his son Mithradates Eupator, sixth of the name, one of those remarkable conquerors that arise from time to time in the East. He was a boy when his father died, and for seven years lived the wandering life of a hunter pursued by assassins. His courage, his wonderful bodily strength and size, his skill in the use of weapons, in riding, and in the chase, his speed of foot, his capacity for eating and drink- ing, and at the same time his quick and penetrating intellect, his wonderful mastery of twenty-two languages,— all these qualities are celebrated by the ancients to a degree which is almost incredible. With a surface gloss of Greek education, he united the subtlety, the superstition, and the obstinate endurance of an Oriental. He was a virtuoso, and collected curiosities and works of art; he assembled Greek men of letters round him; he gave prizes to the greatest poets and the best eaters. He spent much of his time in practising magic arts, the interpretation of dreams, and other superstitious ceremonies; and it was believed that he had so saturated his body with poisons that none could injure him. He trusted no one; he murdered his nearest relations, his mother, his sons, the sister whom he had married ; to prevent his harem from falling a trophy to his enemies he murdered all his concubines, and his most faithful followers were never safe. He once dis- appeared from his palace, no one knew whither, and returned after some months, having wandered over all Asia Minor in disguise. Except in the pages of romance or the tales of the Thousand and One Nights it would be difficult to find anything to rival the account given of Mithradates by the gravest of historians. These qualities fitted him to be the opponent of Roman arms in Asia Minor, to be the champion of the East in its struggle against the destroying and yet civilizing power of the West. He resisted the Romans for eighteen years, yet we can hardly credit him with much real generalship or organizing power. He could collect masses of men and hurl them against the Roman legions; everything that boundless energy and boundless hatred could do he did; but the strength of his opposition to the Romans lay in the fact that all the dislike inspired by Rome in the worst and most cruel time of her rule was arrayed on his side.*~~

~~No direct collision took place between the Romans and Mithradates for thirty-two years, though the republic took away Phrygia from him in 120 B.c., and several times thwarted his designs in Paphlagonia and Cappadocia. The rupture came about the time of the Social War. Mithradates, prompted, it is said, by envoys from the Italian allies, took advantage of the intestine struggles in Italy. War broke out in 88, on the ostensible cause of disputes about the kingdom of Bithynia; Mithradates rapidly overran Galatia, Phrygia, and Asia, defeated the Roman armies, and made a general massacre of the Romans resident in Asia. He also sent large armies into European Greece, and his generals occupied Athens. But Sulla in Greece and Fimbria in Asia defeated his armies in several battles ; the Greek cities were disgusted by his severity, and in 84 B.c. he concluded peace, abandoning all his con- quests, surrendering seventy ships, and paying a fine of 2000 talents. Murena invaded Pontus without any good reason in 83, but was defeated in 82. Difficulties con- stantly arose between the two adversaries, and in 74 a~~

~~MIT—~~

~~mit~~

~~general war broke out. Mithradates defeated Cotta, one of the Roman consuls, at Chalcedon ; but Lucullus worsted him in several engagements, and drove him finally in 72 B.c. to take refuge in Armenia with his son-in-law Tigranes. After two great victories in 69 and 68, Lucullus was dis-concerted by mutiny among his troops and the defeat of his lieutenant Fabius (see vol. xv. p. 56). In 66 he was superseded by Pompey, who completely defeated both Mithradates and Tigranes. The former established him- self in 64 at Panticapeum, and was planning new campaigns against the Romans when his own troops revolted, and, after vainly trying to poison himself, he ordered a Gallic mercenary to kill him. So perished the greatest enemy that the Romans had to encounter in Asia Minor. His body was sent to Pompey, who buried it in the royal sepulchre at Sinope.~~

~~MITHRAS was a Persian god whose worship spread over the Roman world during the 2d and 3d centuries after Christ. His name is found in the oldest records of the East Aryan races. In the Rig-Veda, Mitra, ze, the friend, and Varuna, 2.e., Odpavos, are a pair of gods regularly associated : they denote~~

~~*the heaven of day and the heaven of night. Mithras is therefore by origin the god of the bright heaven and of day, closely related in conception to, and yet expressly distinguished from, the sun. In the developed Old Persian religion of Zoroaster Mithras retained a place; he was not one of the greatest gods, but was first of a triad which, while less pure embodiments of the divine nature, were more easy for men to comprehend and to worship. The seventh month, which bears his name, and the sixteenth day of every month were sacred to Mithras; prayers were offered to him at sunrise, at mid-day, and at sunset. When the Persians conquered Assyria and Babylonia their religion was much affected by the worship of these more educated races. The worship of foreign deities was introduced, that of Persian deities was changed in character ; and the gods were represented by images. The cultus of Mithras now became far more prominent, he was identified with the sun, and an elaborate ritual with the non-Aryan accompaniment of mysteries was established. This revolution had begun before Herodotus (i. 131) could identify Mithras with the Assyrian goddess Mylitta, and it became more thorough during the 4th century B.c.*~~

~~*It is in this most developed form that we know the cultus of Mithras. The god of light becomes by a ready transition, which is made in the very oldest Aryan records, the god of purity, of moral goodness, of knowledge. There goes on in the world as a whole, and in the life of each man, a continual struggle between the power of good and the power of evil; Mithras is always engaged in this con- test, and his religion teaches all, men and women alike, to aid in the battle. Victory in this battle can be gained only by sacrifice and probation, and Mithras is conceived as always performing the mystic sacrifice through which the good will triumph. The human soul, which has been separated from the divine nature and has descended to earth, can reascend and attain union with God through a process of fasting and penance which is taught in the mysteries ; the sacrifice which is being always offered by Mithras makes this ascent and union possible. Those who were initiated in the mysteries of Mithras had to pass through a long probation, with scourging, fasting, and ordeal by water, and were then admitted as soldiers fighting on behalf of Mithras. This was the lowest terrestrial grade, but there were still two others to attain, the Bull and the Lion, each involving further probation, before the soul could rise above the earth. It then ascended by the grades of Vulture, Ostrich, and Crow through*~~

~~*the region of ether ; and then it strove to become pure fire through the grades of Gryphon, of Perses, and of the Sun. Finally*~~

~~*MIT—MIT*~~

~~*the soul attained complete union with the divine nature through the grades of Father Eagle, of Father Falcon, and of Father of Fathers. A holy cave on a hill was the central point in the worship; and the mystic rites involved watching and fasting all night till sunrise brought the triumph of light.*~~

~~*The worship of Mithras became known to the Romans through the Cilician pirates captured by Pompey about 70 B.c. It gained a footing in Rome under Domitian, was regularly established by Trajan about 100 a.D., and by Commodus about 190. Finally the mysteries were pro- hibited and the holy cave destroyed in 378. Dedicatory inscriptions to Deo Soli Invicto Mithre, and votive reliefs of Roman work, are very common. The usual representa- tion shows Mithras in the mystic cave performing the mystic sacrifice; a young man in Oriental costume kneels with one knee on a prostrate bull, grasping the head and pulling it back with the left hand, while with the right he plunges his sword into its neck. A dog, a snake, and a scorpion drink the blood that flows from the bull; a crow sits on the rock behind Mithras; the figures of the sun and of the moon occupy the two sides of the relief.*~~

~~*See Lajarde, Recherches sur le Culte de Mithras.*~~

~~*MITRE. See Costumg, vol. vi. p. 463 ; and HERALDRY, yok a.p. 711.*~~

~~*MITSCHERLICH, Eruarpt (1794-1863), was born January 7, 1794, at Neuende near Jever, in the grand- duchy of Oldenburg, where his father was pastor. He was educated at the gymnasium of Jever under the historian Schlosser. In 1811 he went to Heidelberg, where he devoted himself to philology, giving special attention to the Persian language. In 1813 he went to Paris, partly for study, partly with the view of obtaining permission to join a French embassy to Persia. The political events of 1814 put an end to this scheme, and Mitscherlich returned to Germany. He then set to work on a history of the Ghurides and Kara-Chitayens, manuscript materials for which he found in the university library of Gottingen, and a portion of*~~

~~*which he published in 1815. Still anxious to visit Persia, he resolved to study medicine in order that he might enjoy that freedom of travel usually allowed in the East to physicians. He began at Géttingen with the study of chemistry, and this so completely arrested his attention that he gave up the idea of the journey to Persia and the medical profession. In 1818 he went to Berlin, where he worked in the laboratory of Professor Link. He made analyses of phosphates and phosphites, arseniates and arsenites, confirming the observations of Berzelius as to their composition. In the course of these investigations he observed that corresponding phosphates and arseniates crystallized in the same form.*~~

~~*This was the germ from which grew the theory of isomorphism. In order to follow out his discovery Mitscherlich set to work to learn crystallography. His teacher was a fellow student, Gustav Rose, to whose penetrating mind and profound knowledge of mineralogy have been due some of the most interesting developments and illustrations of the theory of isomorphism. Having measured the inclinations of the faces of a vast number of natural and artificial crystals, he established the principles of isomorphism very much as we now hold them.*~~

~~*It is right that we should remember that Mitscherlich was not the first to notice the fact that two different sub- stances might have the same crystalline form, or that one element could partially replace another without great change of form. Romé de l'Isle in 1772 mentions mixed vitriols containing variable proportions of iron and copper, and Leblanc in 1802 showed that the crystalline form remains the same although the proportions vary both in the case of these mixed vitriols and in that of mixed*~~

~~*O31*~~

~~*alums. Vauquelin had already, in 1797, proved that alum might contain variable quantities of ammonia without any corresponding variation of crystalline form.*~~

~~*The authority of Haiiy, who laid down as one of his principles that each compound has its own crystalline form, for a time kept these observations in the background. Further cases were, however, observed. Wollaston (1812)*~~

~~*accurately measured the angles of the rhombohedral carbonates, and proved that the forms of these minerals, although nearly the same, are not absolutely identical. He showed that a similar close approximation to identity exists in the case of the vitriols. Fuchs in 1815 brought forward his theory of "vicarious constituents." Gay- Lussac proved that a crystal of common alum continues to grow when placed in a solution of ammonia alum, and cases of crystallized mixtures were pointed out by the French mineralogist Beudant. But notwithstanding these foreshadowings, of which we know, on the evidence of Gustav Rose, that Mitscherlich was wholly ignorant, there was at the time of which we are now speaking no trace of a theory, but merely isolated observations. The theory of isomorphism is the work of Mitscherlich. It was com- municated to the Berlin Academy on December 9, 1819.*~~

~~*In that year Berzelius paid a visit to Berlin, and was so struck with Mitscherlich's ability that he suggested him to the minister Altenstein as the most fitting successor to Klaproth in the chair of chemistry in that university. It is not surprising that this idea was not carried out. It was only four years since Mitscherlich had begun to study chemistry ; he had never lectured, nor had he published anything on the subject.*~~

~~*Although Altenstein did not at that time carry out the proposal of Berzelius, he was so far impressed by it that he obtained for Mitscherlich a Government grant to enable him to continue his studies under Berzelius.*~~

~~*In 1820 he went to Stockholm, where he worked for a year in Berzelius's laboratory. In 1822 he was appointed extraordinary and in 1825 ordinary professor in Berlin. In the course of an investigation into the slight differences discovered by Wollaston in the angles of the rhombohedra of the carbonates isomorphous with calc-spar, Mitscherlich observed that the angle in the case of calc-spar varied with the temperature. On extending his inquiry to other non- isotropic crystals he observed a similar variation, and was thus led, in 1825, to the discovery that non-isotropic crystals, when heated, expand unequally'in the direction of dissimilar axes. In the following year he discovered the change, produced by change of temperature, in the direction of the optic axes of selenite. The discovery (also in 1826) that sulphur can be obtained in two absolutely distinct*~~

~~*crystalline forms threw much light on the fact that the two minerals calc-spar and aragonite have the same composition but perfectly different forms. Other cases of this property, to which Mitscherlich gave the name of dimorphism, were arrived at not long after.*~~

~~*In 1833 he made a series of careful determinations of the vapour densities of a large number of volatile substances, and proved that Gay-Lussac's law as to the proportions by volume in which oxygen, nitrogen, hydrogen, and chlorine unite with one another holds generally for volatile elements, and that the simplicity of the relation of the volume of the compound to that of the component gases is also general,*~~

~~*In pure chemistry Mitscherlich's discoveries were mainly connected with isomorphism, Thus he obtained selenic acid in 1827, and showed the isomorphism of its salts with the sulphates, and examined with great care the manganates and permanganates, showing their isomorphism with the sulphates and with the perchlorates respectively. But he did much important work unconnected with this special*~~

~~*subject. We may in particular refer to his discovery of the relation of benzene to benzoic acid, of nitro-benzene, and of a considerable number of the derivatives of benzene.*~~

~~*In 1833 he published his Lehrbuch der Chemie, a student's text-book of chemistry of the most thoroughly practical and yet rigidly scientific kind, from the study of which teachers of chemistry may still derive many a valuable hint. His interest in mineralogy led him to the study of the geology of volcanic regions, and he made frequent visits to the Eifel with a view to the discovery of a theory of volcanic action. He did not, however, publish any papers on the subject, but since his death his notes have been arranged and published by Dr Roth in the Memoirs of the Berlin Academy (1866). In December 1861 symptoms of 'heart disease made their appearance, but he was able to carry on his academical work till December 1862. He died at Schéneberg near Berlin on 28th August 1863.*~~

~~*Mitscherlich's published papers are chiefly to be found in the Abhandlungen of the Berlin Academy, in Poggendorf's Annalen, and in the Annales de Chimie et de Physique. The fourth edition of the Lehrbuch der Chemie was published in 1844; a fifth was begun in 1855, but was not completed. (ACS Bs)*~~

~~*MITYLENE, or Mytitenr. See LEsBos.*~~

~~*MIZPAH (F531) and Mizprn (7BY!)) are Hebrew words for a "place of prospect," or high commanding point. The cities of Palestine generally occupied such positions ; and so in the Old Testament we find several places bearing the name of "The Mizpah" (Mizpeh). Sometimes a determining genitive is added; 'The Mizpeh of Gilead" (Judg. xi. 29), "The Mizpeh of Moab" (1 Sam. xxii. 3).*~~

~~*(1) The most famous of these places is that in Gilead, a noted sanctuary (J udg. xi. 11; Hosea v. 1), claiming consecration from the sacrifice of Jacob (Gen. xxxi. 54) and the masseba or sacred stone erected by him (ver. 45). The narrative of Gen. xxxi. 45 sq. is somewhat obscure, and not all from one hand. We gather, however, from it that another name of '"'The Mizpah" was Galeed, i.e, Gilead. Thus Mizpah, Mizpeh Gilead, Gilead (Hos. vi. 8), Ramath Mizpeh (ic., the height of Mizpeh, Josh. xiii. 26), and Ramoth Gilead (the heights of Gilead), or simply The Ramah (2 Kings viii. 28, 29), are almost universally taken to be one place. With this it agrees that Ramoth Gilead was a city of refuge, which points to an early sanctity. The place is prominent throughout the history. It was the seat of Jephthah (Judg. xi.), the mourning for whose daughter probably gives us a glimpse into the ancient rites of a provincial sanctuary, the residence of one of Solomon's officers (1 Kings iv. 18), and a hotly disputed frontier city in the wars between Syria and the house of Omri, before which Ahab fell (1 Kings xxii.), and in which the military revolt of Jehu was organized (2 Kings ix.). Maspha was still a strong place in the Greek period, and was taken by Judas Maccabeus (1 Mac. v. 35). Eusebius knows Ramoth as a place 15 miles west of Philadelphia or Rabbah of Ammon. It is therefore commonly identified with El-Salt, the modern capital of the Belk&; but this cannot be said to be made out. (2) The Benjamite Mizpah or Mizpeh, also a sanctuary, is often named in the history of Samuel. It was a border fortress of King Asa (1 Kings xv.*~~

~~22), and the residence of Gedaliah as governor of Judea after the fall of Jerusalem (Jer. xl.). Its old sanctity was still remembered in the Maccabee times, and from 1 Mac. iii. 46 we conclude that it commanded a view of Jerusalem. The most prob- able identification is with the prominent hill-top of Neby Samwil. There was (3) another Mizpeh in the low country of Judah (Josh. xv. 38), and (4) a land or valley of Mizpeh (Josh. xi. 3, 8) under Mount Hermon.~~

~~MNEMONICS, or artificial helps to the memory, have been employed in a more or less systematic form from a very early period. Mnemonics (76 pynpovirdy, sc. Texvnpa or wapdayyeApa) were much cultivated by Greek sophists and philosophers, and are repeatedly referred to by Plato and Aristotle. In later times the invention was ascribed to the poet Simonides,! perhaps for no other reason than that the strength of his memory was famous. Cicero, who attaches considerable importance to the art, but more to~~

~~the principle of order as the best help to memory, speaks~~

~~1 Pliny, 7. N., vii. 24. Cicero, De Or., ii, 86, mentions this belief without committing himself to it.~~

~~MIT—MNE~~

~~of Carneades (or perhaps Charmades) of Athens and Metro- dorus of Scepsis as distinguished examples of the use of well-ordered images to aid the memory. The latter is said by Pliny to have carried the art so far wt nihil non tisdem verbis redderet auditum. The Romans valued such helps as giving facility in public speaking. The method used is described by the author of Rhet. ad Heren., iti. 16- 24; see also Quintilian (Znst. Or., x. 1, 2), whose account is, however, somewhat incomplete and obscure. In his time the art had almost ceased to be practised. The Greek and Roman system of mnemonics was founded on the use of mental places and signs or pictures. The thing to be re- membered was localized in the imagination, and associated with a symbol which concretely represented what it was desired to retain in the memory, special care being taken that the symbols should be as vivid, pleasing, and impres- sive as possible. The most usual method was to choose a large house, of which the apartments, walls, windows,~~

~~*statues, furniture, &c., were severally associated with cer-*~~

~~*tain names, phrases, events, or ideas, by means of symbolic pictures ; and to recall these it was only necessary to search over the apartments of the house, till the particular place was discovered where they had been deposited by the ima- gination. As the things to be remembered increased, new houses could be built, each set apart to a certain class of ideas or events, and these houses were again constructed into a mnemonic town. In accordance with this system, if it were desired to fix an historic date in the memory, it was localized in an imaginary town divided into a certain number of districts, each with ten houses, each house with ten rooms, and each room with a hundred quadrates or memory-places, partly on the floor, partly on the four walls, partly on the roof. Thus, if it were desired to fix in the memory the date of the invention of printing (1436), an imaginary book, or some other symbol of printing, would be placed in the thirty-sixth quadrate or memory-place of the fourth room of the first house of the historic district of the town. The success of the method depended largely on the power of the imagination to give the different houses, rooms, &c., characteristic varieties of aspect, and we may suppose that it was the effort to frame suitable images and places, giving an adventitious interest to dry details, that constituted the real advantage of the system. Except that the rules of mnemonics are referred to by Martianus Capella, nothing further is known regarding the practice of the art until the 13th century, when the system of the Romans was revived and a good many treatises were published on the subject. Among the voluminous writ- ings of Roger Bacon is a tractate De Arte Memoratwwa, which exists in MS. at Oxford. Raymond Lully devoted special attention to mnemonics in connexion with his ars generalis, The first important modification of the method of the Romans was that invented by Conrad Celtes, a German poet, who, in his HIpitoma in utramque Ciceronis rhetoricam cum arte memorativa nova (1492), instead of places made use of the letters of the alphabet. About the end of the 15th century Petrus de Ravenna awakened such astonishment in Italy by his mnemonic feats that he was believed by many to be a necromancer. HIs Phenix Artis Memoriz, published at Venice in 1491 in four volumes, went through as many as nine editions, the seventh appear- ing at Cologne in 1608. An impression equally great was produced about the end of the 16th century by Lambert Schenkel, who taught mnemonics in France, Italy, and*~~

~~*Germany, and, although he was denounced as a sorcerer by the university of Louvain, published in 1593 his tractate De Memoria at Douai with the sanction of that celebrated theological faculty. The most complete account of his sys- tem is given in two works by his pupil Martin Sommer, published at Venice in 1619. Giordano Bruno, in connexion*~~

~~*with his exposition of the ars generalis of Lully, included a memoria technica in his treatise De Umbris Idearwm.*~~

~~*About the middle of the 17th century Winckelmann made known what he called the "most fertile secret" in mne- monics, namely the use of letters with figures so as to express numbers by words ; and the philosopher Leibnitz adopted an alphabet very similar to that of Winckelmann in connexion with his scheme for a form of writing common to all languages. Winckelmann's method was modified and sup- plemented in regard to many details by Richard Grey, who published a Memoria Technica in 1730. The principal part of Grey's method is briefly this: "To remember any- thing in history, chronology, geography, &c., a word is formed, the beginning whereof being the first syllable or syllables of the thing sought, does, by frequent repetition, of course draw after it the latter part, which is so contrived as to give the answer. Thus, in history, the Deluge happened in the year before Christ two thousand three hundred forty-eight ; this is signified by the word Deletok, Del standing for Deluge and etok for 2348." To assist in retaining the mnemonical words in the memory they were formed into memorial lines. The vowel or consonant which Grey connected with a particular figure was chosen arbitrarily ; but in 1806 Feinaigle, a monk from Salem near Constance, began in Paris to expound a system of mnemonics, one feature of which was to represent the numerical figures by letters chosen on account of some similarity to the figure to be represented or some accidental connexion with it. This alphabet was supplemented by a complicated system of localities and signs, with the aim of expressing, by a more vivid and impressive symbol, ideas which for want of this are apt to pass from the memory, and of establishing between ideas of the same group an intimate relation, so that the mention of the one would sug- gest the other. Feinaigle, who published a Wotice sur la mnémonique at Paris in*~~

~~1806, came to England in 1811, and in the following year published Zhe New Art of Memory. A simplified form of Feinaigle's method was published in 1823 by Aimé Paris, and the use of symbolic pictures was revived in connexion with the latter by a Pole, Jazwinsky, of whose system an account was pub- lished by J. Bem, under the title Haposé Général de la Méthode Mnémonique Polonaise, perfectionnée & Paris, Paris, 1839. Various other modifications of the systems of Feinaigle and Aimé Paris were advocated by subsequent mnemonists, among them being the Phrenotyping or Brain-Printing method of Beniowsky, the Phreno-Mnemo- techny of Gouraud, and the Mnemotechnik of Carl Otto, a Dane. The more complicated mnemonic systems have fallen almost into complete disuse ; but methods founded chiefly on the laws of association have been taught with some success in Germany by, among others, Kothe, who is the author of Lehrbuch der Mnemonik, and Katechismus der Gedéchtnisskunst, both' of which have gone through several editions; and in England by Dr. Edward Pick, whose Memory and the Rational Means of Improving i has also obtained a wide circulation. In certain cases mnemonical devices may be found of considerable service ; but all systems which have aimed at completeness have been found rather to puzzle than aid the memory. The fullest history of mnemonics is that given by J. C. F. von Aretin in his Systematische Anleitung zur Theorie und Praxis der Mnemonik, 1810.~~

~~MOA. See DInorNis.~~

~~MOAB. Moab and Ammon (children of Lot) consti- tute along with Edom and Israel (children of Isaac) that group of four Hebrew peoples which in early antiquity had issued from the Syro-Arabian wilderness, and settled on the border of the cultivated country eastward of the great depression which extends from the Gulf of Elath to the~~

~~Dead Sea, and up the valley of the Jordan. According to the book of Genesis, they had come out of Mesopotamia, and so were precursors of the larger wave which followed from the same quarter, forming the most southern outpost of the Aramzan immigration into the lands of Canaan and Heth. Whether the Hebrews were originally Ara- means is questionable, but it is certain that, like the Arameans, they were distinct from the Canaanites,~~

~~*whose conquerors they were. Such was the relation of the old and new inhabitants, not only in Western Palestine after the Israelite occupation, but also, and from a much earlier period, in Eastern Palestine, where the aborigines were Amorites—that is, Canaanites—and where the Bne Ammon and Moab and the Bne Isaac successively settled in their lands. The old population did not disappear before the conquerors, but continued to subsist among them. In a considerable district—namely, in Gilead—the Amorites even remained unsubdued, and thus formed a gap, only imperfectly filled up by the Bne Ammon, between the Hebrew line of immigration on the south and the Ara- mezean line more to the north,—a gap which did not begin to close until the historical period. From this district they even endeavoured, and with some success, as will be afterwards seen, to recover the territory which had been taken from them in the south. But where they were the subjects of the Hebrews they constituted the basis of the population, the mainstock of the working and trading classes. The extent of their influence over the conquerors may be judged from the fact that it was their speech which gained the upper hand. The Moabites, and doubt- less also the Ammonites and Edomites, spoke the language of Canaan as well as the Israelites. They must have learned it from the Canaanites in the land eastward of Jordan, prior to the period at which Jacob immigrated to and returned from Egypt. Our knowledge is extremely imperfect as regards other departments of the Canaanite influence; but in religion it has left a noticeable trace in the cultus of Baal-Peor, which was carried on in Moabite territory, but was certainly of Canaanite origin.*~~

~~*The assumption that the change of language was first brought about by the Israelites in the land which is called by preference that of Canaan, is rendered untenable by the fact that the Moabites also spoke Canaanitish. It is vain to urge against the identity of Hebrew and Canaanitish the distinction between Phcenician and Hebrew ; for doubtless similar distinctions existed between the dialect of the Pheenician coast towns and that of the Hivites, Amorites, and Canaanites generally, whose language the Hebrews borrowed. 'That the Aramzans of Damascus, who also were com- pelled to mingle with the Hethites in the country of which they had taken possession, nevertheless retained their original tongue is to be explained by the circumstance that they continued to maintain direct relations with the*~~

~~*mother-country of Mesopotamia, and more- over had greater internal cohesion. The designation Aimorites, usually given in the Old Testament to the original inhabitants of Eastern Palestine, is substantially synonymous with that of Canaanites, although not quite so comprehensive. The Palestine of the Pre-Israelitic period, which in the Pentateuch is called the Land of Canaan, figures in Amos as the Land of the Amorites. While, however, the former name is bestowed chiefly upon that portion of the earlier population which had remained unconquered, the latter is given to the portion against which the Israelites first directed their attack and in whose territory they settled. This took place in the mountain district, first to the east and afterwards to the west of Jordan. For this reason the Amorites, as contrasted with the Canaanites of the cities of the level country, are a highland race, like the Hebrews themselves, but belong exclusively to the past. In the time of the Biblical narrators, the Canaanites are still living here and there in the land, but the Amorites have once lived where the Israelites now are. This explains the fact that, while in ordinary peaceful circumstances the Canaanites are named as the old inhabitants, the Amorites are immediately substituted for them wherever war and conquest are spoken of. Sihon and Og, with whom Moses does battle, are kings of the Amorites ; in like manner it is with the twelve kings of the Amorites that Joshua has to deal westward of the Jordan. The Amorites as an extinct race of course assume a half-mythical character, and are represented as giants, tall as cedars and strong as oaks.*~~

~~*534*~~

~~*Just as Israel was the people of Jehovah, and Ammon the people of Milcom, Moab was the people of Chemosh (wD2, Num. xxi. 29). The kingship of Chemosh was regarded as thoroughly national and political in its character, but did not on that account exclude the institution of a human king, which existed in Moab much earlier than in Israel; in the time of Moses the Moabites had a king, and the institution was even then an old one. The capitals of the kingdom were Ar-Moab and Kir-Moab, south from the Arnon ; these were not, however, the constant residences of the kings, who continued to live in their native places, as, for example, Mesha in Dibon. Doubtless there were changes of dynasty, and traces exist of a powerful aristocracy (Ariele Moab ; 2 Sam. xxiii. 20).*~~

~~*The land of the Moabites, the Balk4, is bounded north- ward and southward by Mount Gilead and Wadi 'l-Ahsé, westward and eastward by the Dead Sea and the Wilder- ness; it is divided into two portions by the deep bed of the Arnon, that to the north being the more level (Mishér), and that to the south being more broken up, and consti- tuting the proper stronghold of the nation. The soil is peculiarly adapted for sheep-farming (2 Kings iii.) and the culture of the vine (Isa. xvi.).}*~~

~~*The historical importance of the Moabites lies wholly in their contact with Israel, and we have no knowledge of them apart from this. After the Israelites had quitted Egypt and passed a nomadic life for about a generation in the neighbourhood of Kadesh, they migrated thence, still under the leadership of Moses, into northern Moab, dis- possessing the Amorites, who had made themselves masters of that district. The interval from Kadesh to the Arnon could be passed only by a good 'understanding with Edom, Moab, and Ammon,—a proof that the ethnical relationships, which at a later period were expressed only in legend, were at that time still living and practical. In all probability the Moabites called the Israelites to their aid; they were not as yet aware that this little pastoral people was des- tined one day to become to them a greater danger than the Canaanites by whom they were threatened at the moment.?*~~

~~*As the story of Balaam indicates, the Moabites would willingly have been rid of their cousins after their service had been rendered, but were unable to prevent them from settling in the land of Sihon. The migration of the tribes of Israel into Western Palestine, however, and the dissolu- tion of their warlike confederation soon afterwards made a restoration of the old frontiers possible. If King Eglon took tribute of Benjamin at Jericho, the territory between Arnon and Jordan must also have been subject to him, and*~~

~~*1 There does not seem to have been any difference in this respect between the northern and southern portions; instead of Heshbon, Sibmah, and Jaezer (Isa. xvi.), the poet Hatim of Tayyi, a little before Mohanimed, names Maab and Zoar as the chief wine centres (Yakut, iv. 377, 19). '*~~

~~*2 The facts as a whole are indubitable; it cannot be an invention that the Israelites settled first in Kadesh, then in northern Moab, and thence passed*~~

~~*into Palestine proper. The only doubtful point is whether the song in Num. xxi. 27 sqg. is contemporary evidence of these events. It is certainly not a forgery, but it is a ques- tion whether it really refers to the destruction of the kingdom of the Amorites at Heshbon. This reference rests entirely upon the words*~~

~~*PD WON bn, which might very well be omitted as a mere gloss, in which case the song would naturally be understood as directed against the Moabites themselves ; it is in this last sense that it is taken by the author of Jer. xlviii. (Comp. E. Meyer in Stade's Zeitschr. f. A Tliche Wissensch., 1881, p. 129 sqg.) As Israel got the better of the Amorites on the plain of Moab, so did Hadad king-of the Edomites vanquish the Midianites on the ' field" of Moab (Gen. xxxvi. 35); this took place in Gideon's time, as is borne out by the fact that between Hadad and the downfall of the ancient Edomite monarchy, 7.e. to the period of David, there were four reigning princes. Confused recollections of a former settlement of the Midianites in northern Moab are seen in Num. xxii. 4, 7; xxv. 18.*~~

~~*MOAB*~~

~~*Reuben must even then have lost his land, or at least his liberty. It would appear that the Moabites next extended their attacks to Mount Gilead, giving their support to the Ammonites, who, during the period of the judges, were its leading assailants. So close was the connexion between Moab and Ammon that the boundary between them vanishes for the narrators (Judges xi.).*~~

~~*Gilead was delivered from the Ammonites by Saul, who at the same time waged a successful war against Moab ; the fact is lightly touched upon in | Sam. xiv. 47, as if this were a matter of course. The establishment of the mon- archy necessarily involved Israel in feuds with its neighbours and kin. The Moabites being the enemies of the Israelite kingdom, David naturally sent his people for shelter thither when he had broken with Saul; the incident is precisely analogous to what happened when he himself at a later period took refuge from Saul's persecution in Philistine territory, and needs no explanation from the book of Ruth. As soon as he ceased to be the king's enemy by himself becoming king, his relations with Moab became precisely those of his predecessor. The war in which apparently casual circumstances*~~

~~*involved him with Hanun ben Nahash of Ammon really arose out of larger causes, and thus spread to Moab and Edom as well. The end of it was that all the three Hebrew nationalities were incorporated with the kingdom of Israel; the youngest brother eclipsed and sub- dued his seniors, as Balaam had foreseen. Through the work of Saul and David the political system of Palestine was altogether changed: the smaller peoples were no longer a match for Israel, which established a decisive preponder- ance, and transformed what had hitherto been jealousy on the part of Moab and Ammon as well as of Edom into bitter hatred ; this hatred did not cease even after nothing but a religious shadow remained of what had once been the political supremacy of the people of Jehovah.*~~

~~*The struggle with Ammon which David began ultimately assumed larger dimensions, and brought the Arameans also into the field against him. He was successful, indeed, against them also, and destroyed their most powerful kingdom ; but after his death they recovered themselves, and pressed steadily on from the borders of the wilderness towards the sea; at their head were those kings of Damascus who had established themselves on the ruins of Zoba. In presence of these enemies the already fading distinction between the ruling and the subject nationality within the kingdom of Israel now completely disappeared ; and even towards the Canaanites outside the relations of the kings became friendly. It is in one instance expressly stated that the common danger threatening from the East had to do with this (2 Sam. viii. 9 sqq.). But, conversely, it was natural that Ammon and Moab should make common cause with the Aramzans; such an attitude was suggested by geographical position and old connexions, but above all by their helpless fury against Israel. Both nationalities must have succeeded in emancipating themselves very soon after David's death, and only now and then was some strong king of Israel able again to impose the yoke for a time, not upon the Ammonites indeed, but upon Moab. The first to do so was Omri, who garrisoned a number of their towns and compelled the king to acknowledge Israel's suzerainty by a yearly tribute of sheep,—a state of matters which con- tinued until the death of Ahab ben Omri. But when that brave king fell in battle with the Aramzans at Ramoth Gilead (about 850 B.c.), Mesha of Dibon, then the ruler of Moab, seized the favourable opportunity to make him- self and his people independent. In his famous inscription he tells how, through the wrath of Chemosh, the land*~~

~~*had fallen into the enemy's power and endured forty years of slavery, and how by the grace of Chemosh the yoke is now broken and the Israelites ignominiously driven off. In*~~

~~*MO A EB*~~

~~*the Bible we find only the curt statement that Moab rebelled against Israel after the death of Ahab (2 Kingsi.); on the other hand, there isa full narrative of a later attempt on the part of Joram ben Ahab to bring Mesha again into subjection—an attempt which promised very well at first, but ultimately failed completely. Joram's invasion took place not from the north but (probably very unex- pectedly to the enemy) from the frontier of Edom over the Wadi 'l-Ahs4; he marched through Judah and Edom, and the kings of those countries served as auxiliaries. He defeated a Moabite army on the frontier, penetrated into the country and laid it waste; he laid siege to the fortress of Kir-Moab so closely as to reduce it to great straits. But these straits seem to have filled the besieged with a desperate courage, for the fortunes of war suddenly changed. The Israelites were compelled to retire home- ward, a great wrath (of Jehovah) having come upon them, that is, a severe disaster having befallen them, which is not described, but, from the nature of the case, must have been a sudden surprise and defeat by the enemy.*~~

~~*As the Moabites owed their liberation from Israelite supremacy to the battle of Ramah—that is, to the Aramzans—we accordingly find them (as well as the Ammonites) afterwards always seconding the Arameans in continual border warfare against Gilead, in which they took cruel revenge on the Israelites. With what bitterness the latter in consequence were wont to speak of their hostile kinsfolk can be gathered from Gen. xix. 30 sqg.— the one trace of open malice in the story of the patriarchs, and all the more striking as it occurs in a narrative of which Lot is the hero and saint, which therefore in its present form is of Moabite origin, although perhaps it has a still older Canaanite nucleus. Of these border wars we learn but little, although from casual notices it can be seen (2 Kings xiii, 20; Amos i. 13; comp. 2 Kings v. 2) that they were long kept up, although not quite uninterruptedly. But when at length the danger from the Aramzans was removed for Israel by the inter- vention of the Assyrians, the hour of Moab's*~~

~~subjection also came ; Jeroboam II. extended his frontier over the eastern territory, as far as to the brook of the willows (Wadi 'l-Ahs4). (Perhaps the song of Num. xxi. 27 sqq. has reference to these events.) A vivid picture of the confusion and anguish then prevalent in Moab has been preserved to us in the ancient prophecy of Isa. xv., xvi. which indeed would have greater historical value if we were able to tell precisely what in it depicts the present, and what is prediction of the future.?~~

~~This utterance of an older prophet was repeated some~~

~~1 The narrative of Mesha in his inscription has, strange to say, not unfrequently been regarded as parallel with 2 Kings iii., and the conclusion been drawn that the Biblical narrative completely inverts the true state of the case,—it is difficult to see for what motives, for there is no braggadocio in 2 Kings iii, But it is perfectly clear that the narrative of 2 Kings iii. presupposes the revolt of Mesha as an old affair; while, on the other hand, Mesha's story on the stele in the Louvre is a narrative of this very revolt and its immediate consequences ; it is accordingly to be regarded as parallel with 2 Kings i. 1. Elisha's miracle in Wadi 'Ahsd (2 Kings iii. 16) is explained by the locality ; Alis& means a sandy ground with moist subsoil, where, by digging trenches, water is always obtainable. The (probably compulsory) par ticipation of the king of Edom in Joram's expedition against Moab may perhaps be brought into connexion with the fact that the Moabites burned to lime the bones of a king of Edom (Amos ii. 1).~~

~~2 In Isa. xv. xvi. it is presupposed that the attack upon Moab has been made from the north, at a time when Judah is a comparatively powerful kingdom, exercising sovereignty over Edom also, and in a position to afford shelter to the fugitive Moabites, thus not being itself at war with them. These marks taken together can only apply to the period of Jeroboam II. and Uzziah. Hitzig will have it that Jonah ben Amittai wrote Isa. xv. xvi. ; but according to 2 Kings xiv. 25 that prophet preached prosperity to Jeroboam, and not disaster to the Moabites,~~

~~*decennia later by the prophet Isaiah, with the addition of a clause adapting it to his time, to the effect that the Assyrians would carry out in all its fulness the hitherto imperfectly-executed threat. The Assyrians actually sub-jugated the Moabites, as well as the other small peoples of that region ; but the blow was apparently not so grave as Isaiah had predicted. They lay more out of the way than their western neighbours, and perhaps their resistance to the scourge of God was not so obstinate as to demand the sharpest measures. What made it all the easier for them to reconcile themselves to the new situation was the fact that the Israelites suffered much more severely than they. From these their deadly enemies they were henceforth for ever free. They did not on that account, however, give up their old hatred, but merely transferred it from Israel to Judah. The political annihilation of the nation only inten- sified in Jerusalem the belief in its religious prerogative, and against this belief the hostility of neighbours was aroused more keenly than ever. The deepest offence at the reli- gious exclusiveness of the people of Juda, which then first began to manifest itself, was, as is easily understood, taken by their nearest relatives, Edom and Moab. They gave terrible expression to their feelings when the Chal-deans urged them on like uncaged beasts of prey against the rebellious Jews ; and they joined loudly in the general chorus of malignant joy which was raised over the burning of the temple and tle ruin of the holy city.®*~~

~~*"Because Moab saith: Behold the house of Judah is like all the other nations, therefore do I open his land to the Bne Kedem," says the prophet Ezekiel (xxv. 8 sqq.). HIs threat against the Moabites as well as against the Edomites and Ammonites is that they shall fall before the approach of the desert tribes. Probably in his day the tide of Arabian invasion was already slowly rising, and of course it had first to overtake the lands situated on the desert border. At all events the Arab immigration into this quarter began at an earlier date than is usually supposed ; it continued for centuries, and was so gradual that the previously-introduced Aramezizing process could quietly go on alongside of it. The Edomites gave way before the pressure of the land-hungry nomads, and settled in the desolate country of Judah; the children of Lot, on the other hand, appear to have amalgamated with them, —the Ammonites maintaining their individuality longer than the Moabites, who soon entirely disappeared.*~~

~~*Israel and Moab had a common origin, and their early history was similar. The people of Jehovah on the one hand, the people of Chemosh on the other, had the same idea of the Godhead as head of the nation, and a like patriotism derived from religious belief,—a patriotism capable of extraordinary efforts, and which has had no parallel in the West either in ancient or in modern times. The mechanism of the theocracy also had much that was common to both nations; in both the king figures as the deity's .representative, priests and prophets as the organs through whom he makes his communications. But, with all this similarity, how different were the ultimate fates of the two! The history of the one loses itself obscurely and fruitlessly in the sand; that of the other issues in eternity. One reason for the difference (which, strangely enough, seems to have been felt not by the Israelites alone but by the Moabites also) is obvious. Israel received no gentle treatment at the hands of the world; it had to carry on a continual conflict with foreign influences and hostile*~~

~~*3 Zeph. ii. 8 sq. ; 2 Kings xxiv. 2, and Jer. xii. 9 sqg.; Ezek. xxv. 8 sqg. It need hardly be said that the Moabites shared the fate of all the Palestinian peoples when supremacy passed from the Assyrians to the Chaldeans, and that, notwithstanding their hatred of the Jews, they had no difficulty in seeking alliances with them, when occasions arose on which they could be made useful (Jer. xxvii. 3).*~~

~~*was not profitless, although the external catastrophe was inevitable. Moab meantime remained settled on his lees, and was not emptied from vessel to vessel (Jer. xlviii. 11), and corruption and decay were the result. This explana-*~~

~~*tion, however, does not carry us far, for other peoples with*~~

~~*fortunes as rude as those of Israel have yet failed to attain historical importance, but have simply disappeared.*~~

~~*The service the prophets rendered at a critical time, by raising the faith of Israel from the temporal to the eternal*~~

~~sphere, has already been spoken of in the article ISRAEL.~~

~~Sources.—The Old Testament (Ruth and Chronicles, however, being of no historical worth in this connexion), and the inscription of Mesha, on the stone of Dibon, discovered in 1868, and now in the Louvre. The Berlin Moabditica are valueless,—Schlottmann himself, the unshaken champion of their genuineness, conceding that they are mere scribbling, and do not even form words, much less sentences. The literature of the subject is to be found in the commentaries on the Old Testament books, and in those on the inscription of Mesha. (J. WE.)~~

~~MO'ALLAKAT. Al-Mo'allakdt is the title of a group of seven longish Arabic poems, which have come down to us from the time before Islam. The name signifies "the suspended" (pl.), the traditional explanation being that these poems were hung up by the Arabs on or in the Katba at Mecca. 'The oldest passage known to the writer where this is stated oceurs in the '/kd of the Spanish Arab, Ibn 'Abd-Rabbih (a.p. 861-940), Buldk ed. vol. iti. p. 116 sg. We read there: "The Arabs had such an interest in poetry, and valued it so highly, that they took seven long pieces selected from the ancient poetry, wrote them in gold on rolls (1) of Coptic cloth, and hung them up ('allakat) on the curtains which covered the Ka'ba. Hence we speak of 'the golden poem of Amraalkais,' 'the golden poem of Yohair" The number of the golden poems is seven ; they are also called 'the suspended' (al-Mo'allakdt)." Similar statements are frequent in later Arabic works. But against this we have the testimony of a contemporary of Ibn "Abd- Rabbih, the grammarian Nahhas (0b. a.p. 949), who says in his commentary on the Mo'allakat: "As for the assertion that they were hung up in [sic] the Ka'ba, it is not known to any of those who have handed down ancient poems." 4 This cautious scholar is unquestionably right in rejecting a story so utterly unauthenticated. The customs of the Arabs before Mohammed are pretty accurately known to us ; we have also a mass of information about the affairs of Mecca at the time when the Prophet arose; but no trace of this or anything like it is found in really good and ancient authorities. We hear, indeed, of a Meccan hanging up a spoil of battle on the Ka'ba (Ibn HIsham, ed. Wiis- tenfeld, p. 431). Less credible is the story of an important document being deposited in that sanctuary, for this looks like an instance of later usages being transferred to pre- Islamic times. But at all events this~~

~~*is quite a different thing from the hanging up of poetical manuscripts. To account for the disappearance of the Mo'allakat from the Ka'ba we are told, in a passage of late origin (De Sacy, Chrestom., ii. 480), that they were taken down at the cap- ture of Mecca by the Prophet. But in that case we should*~~

~~*expect some hint of the occurrence in the circumstantial '*~~

~~*biographies of the Prophet, and in the works on the history of Mecca; and we find no such thing. That long poems were written at all at that remote period is improbable in the extreme. All that we know of the diffusion of Arabic poetry, even up to a time when the art of writing had become far more general than it was before the spread of Islam, points exclusively to oral tradition. Moreover, it is quite inconceivable that there should have been either a guild or a private individual of such acknowledged taste,*~~

~~*1 Ernst Frenkel, An-Nahhas' Commentar zur Mu'allaga des Imruul- Qais (Halle, 1876), p. viii.*~~

~~*MO'ALLAKAT*~~

~~*powers ; and this perpetual struggle with gods and men*~~

~~*or of such influence, as to bring about a consensus of opinion in favour of certain poems. Think of the mortal offence which the canonization of one poet must have given to his rivals and their tribes! It was quite another thing for an individual to give his own private estimate of the respective merits of two poets who had appealed to him as umpire ; or for a number of poets to appear at large gather- ings, such as the fair of 'Okaz, as candidates for the place of honour in the estimation of the throng which listened to their recitations. In short, this legend, so often retailed by later Arabs, and still more frequently by Europeans, must be entirely rejected.2. The story is a pure fabrication based on the name "'suspended." The word was taken in its literal sense; and as these poems were undoubtedly prized above all others in after times, the same opinion was attributed to "the [ancient] Arabs," who were sup- posed to have given effect to their verdict in the way already described. A somewhat simpler version, also given by Nahhds in the passage already cited, is as follows : " Most of the Arabs*~~

~~were accustomed to meet at 'Okaz and recite verses ; then if the king was pleased with any poem, he said, 'Hang it up, and preserve it among my treasures.'" But, not to mention other difficulties, there was no king of all the Arabs; and it is hardly probable that any Arabian king attended the fair at 'Okaz. The story that the poems were written in gold has evidently originated m the name "the golden poems" (literally "the gilded"), a figurative ex- pression for excellence. We must interpret the designation "suspended" on the same principle. In all probability it means those (poems) which have been raised, on account of their value, to a specially honourable position. Another derivative of the same root is 'wk, "precious thing."~~

~~The selection of these seven poems can scarcely have been the work of the ancient Arabs at all. It is much more likely that we owe it to some connoisseur of a later date. Now Nahhas says expressly in the same passage : "The true view of the matter is this: when Hammad arrawiya (Hammad the Rhapsodist) saw how little men cared for poetry, he collected these seven pieces, urged people to study them, and said to them: 'These are the [poems] of renown.'" And this agrees with all our other information. Hammad (who lived in the first three quar- ters of the 8th century A.D.) was perhaps of all men the one who knew most Arabic poetry by heart. The recita- tion of poems was his profession, To such a rhapsodist the task of selection is in every way appropriate ; and it may be assumed that he is responsible also for the some- what fantastic title of "the suspended."~~

~~The collection of Hammad appears to have consisted of the same seven poems which are found in our modern editions, composed respectively by Amraalkais, Tarafa, Zohair, Labid, 'Antara, 'Amr ibn Kolthtim, and Harith ibn Hilliza. These are enumerated both by Ibn "Abd- Rabbih, and, on the authority of the older philologists, by Nahhas ; and all subsequent commentators seem to follow them. We have, however, evidence of the existence, at a very early period, of a slightly different arrangement. Two of the foremost authorities in Arabic poetry are Abu 'Obaida and Mofaddal,—men who for care and accuracy in preserving the genuine text were far ahead of their much older contemporary Hammad. Both of these inserted a poem by Nabigha and one by A'shé in place of those of 'Antara and Harith ;3 and, if our informant has expressed~~

~~2 Doubts had already been expressed by various scholars, when Hengstenberg — rigid conservative as he was in theology — openly challenged it; and since then it has been controverted at length in Noldeke's Beitrage zur Kenntniss der Poesie der alten Araber (Han- over, 1864), p. xvii. sqq. Our highest authority on Arabic poetry, Professor Ahlwardt, concurs in this conclusion ; see his Bemerkungen~~

~~tuber die Aechthett der alten arabischen Gedichte (1872), p. 25 sg. 3 The passage is cited by Noldeke, Bettrége, p. xx. sq.~~

~~MOALLAKAT~~

~~himself correctly, they also called this modified collection Mo'allakat. Mofaddal employs, besides, the names "the seven long [poems]" and "the necklaces." This last be- came afterwards a common title for the seven poems. The comparison of songs to strings of pearls is a very apt one, from the nature of the Arabic poem, composed as it is of separate loosely-connected parts. Hence it became so popular that even in ordinary prose to speak in rhyth- mical form is called simply nazm, "to string pearls." Mofaddal expressly opposes the view of those who did not acknowledge the pre-eminence of the seven poets selected by him. This appears to be an attack on Hammad for including in his collection the works of two men who for poetic fame could certainly never enter the hsts with Nabigha and A'shé. It is prima facie more likely that a later writer should have replaced the less famous poets by those who were universally placed in the first rank, than vice versa. Perhaps another fact is of some importance here. Hammad, a Persian by descent, was a client of the Arab tribe, Bakr ibn Wail. In the heathen period this tribe was much at war with the closely-related tribe Taghlib. Now of all Arabic poems none was more famous than that in which 'Amr ibn Kolthim celebrates in glowing terms the praises of his tribe Taghlib. If, therefore, Hammad's collection embraced this poem, it was very natural for him to gratify his patrons the Bakrites by placing alongside of it that of Harith—a Bakrite and contemporary of 'Amr—where he extols his own tribe and assails the Taghlibites with bitter scorn. Such considera- tions did not affect Abu "Obaida and Mofaddal.~~

~~The authority of these men has so far prevailed that the poems of their favourites Nabigha and A'sha often appear in the manuscripts, not indeed~~

~~*instead of those of ‘Antara and Harith, but after the other seven. Thus we sometimes read of nine Mo‘allakét. The first author in whom the writer has observed this is the great philosophic historian Ibn Khaldun (4.p. 1332-1406); he mentions instead of Harith the far more celebrated ‘Alkama ; whether relying on ancient authority, or by an oversight, we cannot tell. In an excellent collection of forty-nine long poems by Abt Zaid al-Korashi (date unknown) Mofaddal’s seven poets appear in the first class, “the necklaces;” but Ndabigha and A‘sha are each represented by a different piece from that usually reckoned among the Mo‘allakat. By this editor the name “golden poems,” which, as we have seen, sometimes occurs as a synonym of “Mo‘allakat,” is applied to seven quite distinct songs.) This uncertainty as to the selection and the titles may serve as an additional proof that the “suspension,” on the Ka‘ba or anywhere else, is a fable.*~~

~~*The lives of these seven (or nine) poets were spread over a period of more than a hundred years. The earliest of them, according to the common and probably correct opinion, was AMRAALKAIS (pronounced also Imroolkais, Imraalkais, &c.), regarded by many as the most illustrious of Arabian poets. His exact date cannot be determined ; but probably the best part of his career fell within the first half of the 6th century. He was a scion of the royal house of the tribe Kinda, which lost all its power at the death of King Harith ibn ‘Amr in the year 529.2 The poet’s royal father, Hojr, by some accounts a son of this Harith, was killed by Bedouins. The son led an adven- turous life as a refugee, now with one tribe, now with another, and appears to have died young. The anecdotes related of him—which, however, are very untrustworthy in detail—as well as his poems, imply that the glorious*~~

~~*1 See Noéldeke, Bettrdge, p. xxi., and the catalogue of the Arabic codd. in the British Museum, p. 480 sqq.*~~

~~*2 See Tabari’s Geschichte der Perser und Araber . . Th. Nildeke (Leyden, 1879), p. 171.*~~

~~*. ubersetzt von*~~

~~*5ae*~~

~~*memory of his house and the hatred it inspired were still comparatively fresh, and therefore recent.*~~

~~*The Mo'allaka of 'Amr hurls defiance against the king of HIra, 'Amr son of Mundhir, who reigned from the summer of 554 till 568 or 569, and was afterwards slain by our poet.? This prince is also addressed by HArrru in his Mo'allaka. Of Tarara, who is said to have attained no great age, a few satirical verses have been preserved, directed against this same king. This agrees with the fact that a grandson of the Kais ibn Khalid, mentioned as a rich and influential man in Tarafa's Mo'allaka (v. 80 or 81), figured at the time of the battle of Dhu Kar, in which the tribe Bakr routed a Persian army. This battle falls between A.D. 604 and 610 (Néldeke's Z'abari, p. 311).*~~

~~*The Mo'allaka of 'Anrara and that of Zowarr contain allusions to the feuds of the kindred tribes 'Abs and Dhobyadn. Famous as these contests were, their time cannot beascertained. But the date of the two poets can be approxi- mately determined from other data. Ka'b, son of Zohair, composed first a satire, and then, in the year 630, a eulogy on the Prophet; another son, Bojair, had begun, some- what sooner, to celebrate Mohammed. 'Antara killed the grandfather of the Ahnaf ibn Kais who died at an advanced age in A.D. 686 or 687 ; he outlived 'Abdallah ibn Simma, whose brother Doraid was a very old man when he fell in battle against the Prophet (early in a.p. 630); and he had communications with Ward, whose son, the poet 'Orwa, may perhaps have survived the flight of Mohammed to Medina. From all these indications we may place the productive period of both poets in the end of the 6th century.* The historical background of 'Antara's Mo'allaka seems to lie somewhat earlier than that of Zohair's.*~~

~~*To the same period appears to belong the poem of 'ALKAMA, which, as we have seen, Ibn Khaldtin reckons amongst the Mo'allakat. This too is certainly the date of NAsicHA, who was one of the most distinguished of Arabic poets. For in the poem often reckoned as a Mo"'allaka, as in many others, he addresses himself to the above-named No'man, king of HIra, who reigned in the two last decades of the 6th century. The same king is mentioned as a contemporary in one of 'Alkama's poems.*~~

~~*The poem of A‘sH4, which Mofaddal placed among the Mo‘allakat, contains an allusion to the battle of Dhu Kar (under the name “ Battle of Hinw,” v. 62). This poet, not less famous than Nabigha, lived to compose a poem in honour of Mohammed, and died not long before a.p.*~~

~~*630.*~~

~~*Lasip is the only one of these poets who embraced Islam. His Mo‘allaka, however, like almost all his other poetical works, belongs to the pagan period. He is said to have lived till 661 or even later; certainly it is true of him, what is asserted with less likelihood of several others of these poets, that he lived to a ripe old age.*~~

~~*We have already mentioned that the old Arabic poetry was transmitted not by manuscripts but simply through oral tradition. Many pieces, especially the shorter ones, may have owed their preservation to their hold on the popular memory. But, fortunately, there was a class of men who made it their special business to learn by rote, and repeat, the works either of a single poet or of several. The poets themselves used the services of such rhapso dists (rdéwis). The last representative of this class is Hammad, the man who formed the collection of Mo‘alla- kat ; but he, at the same time, marks the transition from*~~

~~*3 See Noldeke’s Tabari, pp. 170, 172.*~~

~~*4 This evidence might be supplemented from a poem in Zohair’s name, whose author describes himself as a man of ninety years, and in which the downfall of King No‘man of Hira (a.p. 601, see Tahari, p- 847) is spoken of as a not very recent event. But the genuineness*~~

~~*of this poem is more than doubtful (see Ahlwardt, op. cit. p. 64, and C, J. Lyall in the Academy, March 18, 1880, p. 192).*~~

~~*XVi — 68*~~

~~*538*~~

~~*the rhapsodist to the critic and scholar. Now, when we*~~

~~*consider that more than a century—in some cases two*~~

~~*centuries—elapsed before the poems were fixed by literary*~~

~~*men, we must be prepared to find that they have not*~~

~~*retained their original form unaltered. The most favour-*~~

~~*able opinion of the rhapsodists would require us to make*~~

~~*allowance for occasional mistakes; expressions would be*~~

~~*interchanged, the order of verses disarranged, passages omitted, and probably portions of different poems pieced together. The loose structure of the ancient poems ren- dered them peculiarly liable to corruptions of this kind. But the fact is that Hammad in particular dealt in the*~~

~~*most arbitrary fashion with the enormous quantity of poetry which he professed to know thoroughly. He is even charged with falsifications of all sorts in this depart- ment. Of others, again—and notably of the great philolo- gist Khalaf, "the Red"—it is credibly reported that they used their intimate knowledge of the style and language of the ancients to pass off whole poems of their own making as the productions of earlier authors. The worst anticipations are only too completely confirmed by an examination of such pieces as are still preserved, as is*~~

~~*shown most conclusively in Ahlwardt's Bemerkungen, already*~~

~~*cited. The seven Mo'allakat are indeed free from the sus-*~~

~~*picion of forgery, but even in them verses are frequently*~~

~~*transposed ; in all there are lacune; and probably all*~~

~~*contain verses which do not belong to them. Some of them have more than one introduction. This is the case even with the poem of 'Amr, although, as the finest pane- gyric of his very powerful tribe, it must have had a wide circulation. 'The true introduction begins at v. 9; before that we find another which certainly does not belong to this poem, and can hardly be the*~~

~~*work of the same poet. 'Amr lived in the desert regions near the lower Euphrates, under the Persian dominion; whereas the author of v. 8 boasts of his carousals in several parts of Roman Syria, and in v. 1 he speaks of drinking wine from a place in Northern Syria. It is evident that all attempts to restore the original order, to fill up blanks, or to remove interpola- tions, can only be carried to a certain degree of probability at the best; there must always be a large subjective ele- ment in judgments on points of the kind. Still less can we hope to discover and rectify the minor changes, in single expressions or grammatical forms, which the text may have undergone before it was fixed in writing. It may be re- marked in this connexion that where any ancient song has been transmitted through two different grammatical schools it generally appears in two considerably divergent forms, each having been taken down from the lips of a separate rawi. Of secondary importance are the errors due to later copyists. Considerable as these often are, we are, at least in many cases, better able to correct them.*~~

~~*Even the masters of old Arabian poetry do not exhibit such characteristic differences in their general manner and style as to leave in the mind a clear idea of their indivi- duality. A few distinct poetic types emerge, but the great majority of these poets present a somewhat monotonous aspect to the Western scholar, who indeed can at best have but a very imperfect feeling for nwances of style in this field. But if we are thus unable to isolate the various constituent parts of this poetical literature, and pass a critical opinion on each, we do get from this literature, as a whole, what is of far greater importance than an esthetic estimate of this or that particular poet, viz. a poetic picture of the whole life and activity of that remarkable people which, amid the endless agitation and endless sameness of its existence, and in an extremely inhospitable region, was preparing one of the mightiest revolutions in the history of the world. This collective impression is hardly impaired by the involuntary alterations made by the rawis; nor is*~~

~~*it greatly distorted by the forgers of the 2d century of Islam, who were thoroughly familiar with the spirit and style of antiquity, and seldom did violence to them.*~~

~~*The critics of the 2d and 3d centuries a.H. unani- mously ranked the poets of the heathen period above those of Islam ; and in that verdict we must concur. The older Moslem poets were for the most part mere Epigoni, content, for better or worse, to borrow the style of their pagan predecessors. It is only natural, therefore, that the seven best poems should have been selected from the pro- ductions of heathenism. But how these particular seven came to be fixed upon, it is difficult to decide. It is remarkable that people who knew thousands of such poems should have agreed as to the superiority of five, and only differed about two. No doubt the selection was greatly influenced by the widely-established reputation of certain poets, like Amraalkais, Zohair, and Tarafa ; while in other cases single poems, such as that of 'Amr, stood in high repute for special reasons. Still, even we, with a much narrower range of selection, should hardly pick out these seven as the finest. In all probability our choice would not light on a single one of them. The truth is, our sesthetic ideal is essentially different from that of those old litterateurs. And, while we may certainly consider our own taste, formed on the model of the Greeks and the best of the moderns, to be on the whole purer than theirs, we must not forget that they had the advantage of perfect knowledge of the language and the subject-matter, and could thus perceive a multitude of beautiful and delicate touches, which we either miss entirely or realize with labo- rious effort. The world of the old Arabian poet lay at an infinite remove from ours. HIs mental horizon was narrow, but within that horizon every minute detail was seized and designated with precision. Among the nomads, for example, the smallest point of the horse or camel that the eye can see has its importance ; the language has pre- cise and generally understood words for them all, where ours has only technical terms. It is the same with all the physical properties of the animal—its paces, ete. Thus, when a poet faithfully described the exterior and the deportment of his camel, that was to his hearers—and the same is true of later critics—a genuine pleasure, because the deccription conveyed to them a definite pictorial im- pression. But we do not understand the details of the picture; or, when at best with all the resources of tradition and natural history we have gained some tolerable compre- hension of them, the whole still leaves us indifferent. A camel to us is simply not a poetical object ; and even a horse ceases to be esthetically interesting —except perhaps to a sportsman—when one is asked to go over his points in detail. For this reason we are apt to find a great part of Tarafa's*~~

~~*Mo'allaka, and many parts of the poems of Amraalkais, viewed as poetry, distasteful rather than interesting. More attractive are the descriptions of the life and habits of wild animals in the desert, such as the wild ass and some species of antelope, which the poets are fond of introducing (see, ¢g., the Mo'allaka of Labid). There are also many vivid sketches from nature to be met with,—nature, of course, as seen in the very monotonous Arabian landscape. Monotony, indeed, is a predominant characteristic of this poetry. When one first reads poems where the bard begins by shedding tears over the scarcely perceptible traces of the dwelling of his beloved in years gone by, one's sympathy is aroused. But when poem after poem is found to commence with the same scene, and pos- sibly with almost the same words, the emotion is somewhat damped. No doubt such occurrences must really have been very common in the nomad life; nevertheless the suspicion becomes at last irresistible that for the most part all this is pure fiction. Nor can we be sure that the*~~

~~*MOB—MOB*~~

~~*poets are always to be taken aw sériewx when they describe those carousals, and other adventures in peace and war, of which they love to boast. They are probably more serious in the narratives of their love experiences: these are often very highly coloured, and yet are always pervaded by a certain natural refinement, which is too often wanting in the later erotic poetry of the Moslems. But there, too, our enjoy- ment is frequently marred by minute and even prosy de- scriptions of the physical charms of the object of affection.*~~

~~*The lyrical and even the more rhetorical passages of the poems make in general a deeper impression upon us than the descriptive portions, to which they owe their distinctive character, and which are often intimately blended with the former. When those old Arabs are really moved by love, or rage, or grief, when personal or tribal vanity vents itself in immoderate boasting, invective, or banter, then they strike chords that thrill our breasts. In those passages where genuine human feeling is stirred, they also display far greater individuality than in the more conventional descriptions. Especially affecting are the numerous pass- ages or complete poems which mourn over the beloved and venerated dead. Their sober practical philosophy too, as it*~~

~~*is presented in the Mo'allaka of Zohair and in many of Labid's poems, is really impressive.*~~

~~*The Mo'allakat are highly characteristic specimens of this poetry. They exhibit nearly all its merits as well as most of its defects. Amongst its merits we ought, perhaps, to include the unfailing regularity of the verse. That a people living under such extremely simple conditions should have cultivated a purely quantitative metre, so euphonious and so rigorously adhered to, is a fact worthy of our highest admiration. It is one evidence of that sense of measure and fixed form which is, in other directions also, a marked feature in the life and speech of the Arabs. The mere fact that in their verses they give so much attention to elegance of expression deserves commendation. Amongst the defects of this poetry we must emphasize the loose connexion between the separate parts. We require a poem, like any other work of art, to be a compact unity; the Arabs and many other Orientals lay all the stress on the details. In the Mo'allaka of Tarafa, for instance, after the poet has spoken long enough about his beloved, he starts off in this fashion: " But I banish care when it comes near with a"— she-camel of such and such qualities, and then proceeds to give a description of his riding-camel. Equally abrupt transitions occur in almost all these poems, generally more than once in the same poem. In many cases a sort of unity is preserved by making the different sections represent so many scenes from the life of the poet or from the common life of the Bedouins; but even then there is something unsatisfactory in the want of real connexion. It does not mend matters much when the poet keeps up a merely mechanical transition ; as, for example, when he speaks first of his camel, then with the words "it is as swift as a wild ass which," &c., passes to a description of that animal, and again proceeds, "or as swift as an ostrich which," &c., in order to introduce the ostrich.*~~

~~*This loose structure of the poems explains the fact that from a very early period particular pieces were culled from larger works and recited by themselves. For the town- Arabs of later times this procedure was especially convenient. For them the wild ass or oryx-antelope had little attraction ; and on the camel they bestowed about as much notice as we do on our dray-horses and waggons. But the love and hate, the pride and scorn, the fierce lust of revenge and the wailing grief, the bravery and the gaiety, which breathed through the old Bedouin songs, had an intense fascination for them. We see that their attitude towards that poetry had in some degree*~~

~~*approximated to our own. Hence it is that some anthologies from the old poetry, made by men*~~

~~*539*~~

~~*of learning and ability, with an eye to contemporary tastes, are on the whole much more pleasing to us than the com- plete poems themselves. This is eminently true of the excellent collection edited by Abii Tammam, himself a con- siderable poet (first half of the 9th century), under the title "Hamdsa" (Valour). This collection, which, however, embraces many pieces of the Moslem period, is certainly fitted to give a European a rather too favourable idea of ancient Arabic poetry. Whoever wishes really to know that poetry—and without this knowledge it is impossible to understand the Arabs themselves or their language—must betake himself to those which, like the Mo'allakat and others, have been preserved more or less in their integrity.*~~

~~*The Mo'allakat have been repeatedly printed, separately and collectively, both in the West and the ee generally with an Arabic commentary. A good commentary by a competent European is a real desideratum. A work of this kind would do more for the understanding of the poems than any poetical translation, which must always fail in rendering these definite concrete expressions of the Arabs for which we possess neither the idea nor the image. A*~~

~~*translation must either be a mere paraphrase or else substitute some- thing utterly vague. (CEN)*~~

~~*MOBILE, a city and port of entry of the United States, the capital of Mobile county, and, though not the capital, the largest city of Alabama, lies 140 miles east of New Orleans, on a sandy plain on the west bank of Mobile river, one of the arms of the Alabama. The municipal boundary includes an area about 6 miles long by 2 or 3 in breadth; but, excluding the suburban villas scattered about the nearer hills, the portion occupied by the buildings of the city proper is not more than a mile square. In the matter of paving and shade the streets are generally good, and Government Street especially, with its fine oak trees and gardens, forms an attractive promenade. Besides the spacious granite building erected in 1859 to accommodate the Custom-*~~

~~*House, the Post Office, and the United States courts, the principal edifices are the Roman Catholic cathedral of the Immaculate Conception (1833), Christ Church (Episcopal) (1837), the City Hos- pital (1830), the United States Marine Hospital (1836), the Providence Infirmary, the conjoint market-house and municipal buildings, Barton Academy (occupied by the high schools), and the Alabama Medical College (founded in 1859). About 6 miles out, at Spring Hill, is the Jesuit College of St Joseph, established by Bishop Portier in 1832. Asa commercial centre Mobile is in some re- spects very favourably situated. It is the only port of Alabama ; the estuary on which it stands is the outlet for several navigable rivers; and it is the seaward terminus of the Mobile and Ohio railroad, the Mobile and Mont- gomery, and the Grand Trunk. But, on the other hand, it lies 25 miles from the coast; the lagoon-like bay cut off from the Gulf of Mexico by the narrow isthmus of Mobile Point is extremely shallow ; and in 1879 no vessel drawing more than 13 feet could load and unload in the harbour with safety. Since 1827, it is true, various works have been undertaken to improve the approaches: the Choctaw Pass and the Dog River Bar, which had formerly a depth of little more than 5 and 8 feet respectively, were deepened to 17 feet by 1882; but Mobile will not take rank as a satisfactory ocean port till the scheme (now in operation) for constructing a wide channel more than 20 feet deep right through the bay has been fully carried out. The cost of the necessary works being beyond the power both of the city and State, Con- gress has granted $270,000 for the purpose of widening the channel to 200 feet, and deepening it to 23 feet. A private company, established in 1876, has built a break- water in the bay, and greatly increased the safety of the harbour. For the years between 1855 and 1859 the average value of exports and imports was respectively*~~

~~*$93,419,266 and $711,420; the following figures for recent years show a considerable decline on the total :—*~~

~~*Years ending in*~~

~~*ane Exports. Imports.*~~

~~1877 $12,784,171 $648,404 1878 9,493,306 1,148,442 1879 6,219,818 544,628 1880 7,188,740 425,519 1881 6,595,140 671,252 1882 3, 258,605 396,573~~

~~po In cotton, which forms the staple export, the falling off is par- ticularly noticeable, 632,308 bales being the average for 1855 to 1859, and 365,945, 392,319, and 265,040 bales the quantities for 1879, 1880, and 1881, A great deal of what comes to the Mobile inarket is sent to New Orleans for shipment, partly that it may obtain a higher price as ‘ Orleans” cotton. Lumber shingles, turpentine and rosin, fish and oysters, and coal, are also important items, but do not make in the aggregate so much as half the value of the cotton. Among the local industrial establishments arc several spinuing-mills, breweries, cooperages, shipbuilding yards, foundries, and sash and door works. The market gardeners of the outskirts produce a large quantity of cabbages, potatoes, water- melons, tomatoes, &c., to supply the cities of the western and northern States (value in 1879, $112,520; 1880, $174,483; 1881, $159,706; 1882, $867,194; 1883, estimated $700,000). Though in 1820 it had no more than 2672 inhabitants, Mobile had 31,255 in 1880; the figures for the intermediate decades being 3194 (1830), 12,672 (1840), 20,515 (1850), 29,258 (1860), and 32,034 (1870). Founded as a fort by Lemoyne d’Iberville (de Bienville) in 1702, Mobile continued to be the capital of the colony of Louisiana till 1723, when this rank was transferred to New Orleans. The site selected by Lemoyne was probably about 20 miles above the pre- sent position, which was first occupied after the floods of 1711. By the Treaty of Paris, 1763, Mobile and part of Louisiana were ceded to Britain; but in 1780 the fort (now Fort Charlotte) was captured by the Spanish general Galvez, and in 1783 it was recog- nized as Spanish along with other British possessions on the Gulf of Mexico. General Wilkinson, ex-governor of Louisiana, recovered the town for Louisiana in 1813, and in 1819, though its population did not exceed 2500, it was incorporated as a city. In 1864-65 Mobile and the neighbourhood was the scene of important military and naval engagements. The Confederates had surrounded the city by three lines of defensive works, but the defeat of their fleet by Admiral Farragut, and the capture of Fort Morgan, Spanish Fort, and Fort Blakelly, led to its immediate evacuation. Asa municipal corporation, Mobile had got into such financial difficulties~~

~~*by 1879 that its city charter was repealed, and a board of commissioners established for the liquidation of its debt of $2,497,856.*~~

~~*MOBIUS, Avcust Ferprnanp (1790-1868), astronomer and mathematician, was born at Schulpforta, November 17, 1790. At Leipsic, Gottingen, and Halle he studied for four years, ultimately devoting himself to mathematics and astronomy. In 1815 he settled at Leipsic as privat- docent, and the next year became extraordinary professor of astronomy in connexion with the university. Later he was chosen director of the university observatory, which was erected (1818-21) under his superintendence. In 1844 he was elected ordinary professor of higher mechanics and astronomy, a position which he held till his death, September 26, 1868. His doctor's dissertation, De computandis occultationibus jfixarum per planetas (Leipsic, 1815), established his reputation as a theoretical astronomer. Die Hauptsdtze der Astronomie (1836), Die Elemente der Mechanik des Himmels (1843), may be noted amongst his other purely astronomical publications. Of more general interest, however, are his labours in pure mathematics, which appear for the most part in Crelle's Journal from 1828 to 1858. These papers are chiefly geometrical, many of them being developments and appli- cations of the methods laid down in his great work, Der Barycentrische Calcul (Leipsic, 1827), which, as the name implies, is based upon the properties of the mean point or centre of mass. Any point in a plane (or in space) can be represented as the mean point of three (or four) fixed points by giving to these proper weights or coefficients, — an obvious principle which leads in the hands of Mobius to what no doubt is the chief novel feature of the work, a*~~

~~*system of homogeneous coordinates. Besides this, how- ever, the work abounds in suggestions and foreshadowings of some of the most striking discoveries in more recent times—such, for example, as are contained in Grassmann's Ausdehnungslehre and Hamilton's Quaternions. He must be regarded as one of the leaders in the introduction of the powerful methods of modern geometry that have been developed so extensively of late by Von Standt, Cremona, and others.*~~

~~*MOCHA, a town of Yemen on the coast of the Red Sea, in E. long. 43° 20', N. lat. 13° 19'. The point of the coast where Mocha lies appears to have owed early import- ance to its good anchorage, for the Muza of the Periplus (Geog. Gr. Min., i. 273 sqq.), a great seat of the Red Sea trade in antiquity, seems to be identical with the modern Muza' (Yakut, iv. 680; Niebuhr, Desc. de ? Arahve, p. 195), a few miles inland from Mochdé. Moché itself is a modern town, which rose with the coffee trade into short-lived pros- perity. The French expedition of 1709 found it a place of some 10,000 inhabitants, and its importance had increased half a century later, when Niebuhr visited it. The chief _ trade was then with British India. Lord Valencia in 1806 still found the town to present an imposing aspect, with its two castles, minarets, and lofty buildings ; but the popula- tion had sunk to 5000. The internal disorders of Arabia and the efforts of Mohammed Ali to make the coffee trade again pass through India accelerated its fall, and the place is now a mere village. Mochd never produced coffee, and lies indeed in a quite sterile plain; the European name of Mocha coffee is derived from the shipment of coffee there. The patron saint, Sheikh Shadali, was, according to legend, the founder of the city and father of the coffee trade.*~~

~~*MOCKING-BIRD, or Mock-Birp (as Charleton, Ray, and Catesby wrote its name), the Mimus polyglottus of modern ornithologists, and the well-known representative of an American group of birds usually placed among the TurusHES (q.v.), Turdidx, though often regarded as forming a distinct section of that Family, differing by having the tarsus scutellate in front, while the typical Thrushes have it covered by a single horny plate. The Mocking-bird inhabits the greater part of the United States, being in the north only a summer-visitant ; but, though breeding yearly in New England, is not common there, and migrates to the south in winter, passing that season in the Gulf States and Mexico. It appears to be less numerous on the western side of the Alleghanies, though found in suitable localities across the continent to the Pacific coast, but not farther northward than Wisconsin, and it is said to be common in Kansas. Audubon states that the Mocking-birds which are resident all the year round in Louisiana attack their travelled brethren on the return of the latter from the north in autumn. The names of the species, both English and scientific, have been bestowed from its capacity of successfully imitating the cry of many other birds, to say nothing of other sounds, in addition to uttering notes of its own which*~~

~~*possess a varied range and liquid fulness of tone that are unequalled, according to its admirers, even by those of the NicHTINGALE (¢.v.). This opinion may perhaps be correct; but, from the nature of the case, a satisfactory judgment can scarcely be pro- nounced, since a comparison of the voice of the two songsters can only be made from memory, and that is of course affected by associations of ideas which would pre- clude a fair estimate. To hear either bird at its best it must be at liberty ; and the bringing together of captive examples, unless it could be done with so many of each species as to ensure an honest trial, would be of little avail. Plain in plumage, being greyish-brown above and dull white below, while its quills are dingy black, variegated with white, there is little about the Mocking-bird's appear-*~~

~~*ance beyond its graceful form to recommend it; but the lively gesticulations it exhibits are very attractive, and therein its European rival in melody is far surpassed, for the cock-bird mounts aloft in rapid circling flight, and, alighting on a conspicuous perch, pours forth his ever- changing song to the delight of all listeners; while his actions in attendance on his mate are playfully demonstra- tive and equally interest the observer. The Mocking-bird is moreover of familiar habits, haunting the neighbourhood of houses, and is therefore a general favourite. The nest is placed with little regard to concealment, and is not dis- tinguished by much care in its construction. The eggs, from three to six in number, are of a pale bluish-green, blotched and spotted with light yellowish-brown. They, as well as the young, are much sought after by snakes, but the parents are often successful in repelling these deadly enemies, and are always ready to wage war against any intruder on their precincts, be it man, cat, or hawk. Their food is various, consisting of berries, seeds, and insects.*~~

~~*Some twelve or fourteen other species of Mimus have been recog- nized, mostly from South America; but Jf, orpheus seems to be common to some of the Greater Antilles, and Jf, Aillz is peculiar to Jamaica, while the Bahamas have a local race in M. bahamensis. The so-called Mountain Mocking-bird (Orcoscoptes montanus) is a form not very distant from Mimus ; but, according to Mr. Ridgway, it inhabits exclusively the plains overgrown with*~~

~~*Artemisia of the interior tableland of North America, and is not at all imitative in its notes, so that it is an instance of a misnomer. Of the various other genera allied to Mimus, those known in the United States as Threshers, and belonging to the genus Harporhynchus—of which six or eight species are found in North America, and are very Thrush-like in their habits—must be mentioned ; but there is only room here to dwell on the Cat-bird (Galcoscoptes carolinensis), which is nearly as accomplished an imitator of sounds as its more cele- brated relative, with at the same time peculiar notes of its own, from one of which it has gained its popular name. The sooty-grey colour that, deepening into blackish-brown on the crown and quills, pervades the whole of its plumage—the lower tail-coverts, which are of a deep chestnut, excepted—renders it a conspicuous object ; and though, for some reason or other, far from being a favourite, it is always willing when undisturbed to become intimate with men's abodes. It has a much wider range on the American continent than the Mocking-bird, and is one of the few species that are resident in Bermuda, while on more than one occasion it is said to have appeared in Europe.*~~

~~*The name Mocking-bird, or more frequently Mock-Nightingale, is in England occasionally given to some of the WARBLERS (q.v.), especially the Blackcap (Sylvia atricapilla), and the Sedge-bird (Acrocephalus schenobenus). In India and Australia the same name is sometimes applied to other species. (A. N.)*~~

~~*MODENA, one of the principal cities of Northern Italy, formerly the capital of a duchy, and still the chief town of a province and the seat of an archbishop, is situated in the open country in the south side of the valley of the Po, between the Secchia to the west and the Panaro to the east. By rail it is 31 miles E.S.E. of Parma, 24 W.N.W. of Bologna, and 37 S. of Mantua. The observatory stands 135 feet above the level of the sea, in 44° 38' 52" N. late and 10° 55' 42" E. long. Dismantled since 1816, and now largely converted into promenades, the fortifications still give the city an irregular pentagonal contour, modified at the north-west corner by the addition of a citadel also penta- gonal. Within this circuit there are various open areas—the spacious Piazza d'Armi in front of the citadel, the public gardens in the north-east of the city, the Piazza Grande in front of the cathedral, and the Piazza Reale to the south of the palace. The Aumilian Way crosses obliquely*~~

~~*right through the heart of the city, from the Bologna Gate in the east to that of Sant'? Agostino in the west. Commenced by the countess Matilda in 1099, after the designs of Lanfranc, and consecrated in 1184, the cathedral (St Geminian's) is a low but handsome building, with a lofty crypt, three eastern apses, and a facade still preserving some curious sculptures of the 12th and 15th centuries. The bell-tower, named La Ghirlandina from the bronze garland surrounding the weathercock, is lined with white marble,*~~

~~*541*~~

~~*and is 315 feet high; in the basement may be seen the wooden bucket captured by the Modenese from the Bo- lognese in the affray at Zappolino (1325), and rendered famous by Tassoni's Secchia Rapita. Of the other churches in Modena, San Pietro has terra-cottas by the local artist Begarelli, and 8. Agostino (now §. Michele) contains the tomb of Sigonius and the tombstone of Muratori. The old ducal palace, begun by Duke Francis I. in 1635 from the designs of Avanzini, and finished by Francis Ferdinand V., is an extensive marble building, and now contains the library (Bib. Palatina, see vol. xiv. p. 530), picture-gallery, and museum. Many of the best pictures in the ducal collection were sold in the 18th century, and found their way to Dresden. The valuable Museo Lapidario in a building near Porta Sant' Agostino is well known to the*~~

~~*Scale of ¥z English Mile*~~

~~*Plan of Modena.*~~

~~*4, 8. Domenico.*~~

~~*5. Royal Palace.*~~

~~*6. Archbishop's Palace. 10. 8. Pietro.*~~

~~*7. Cathedral. 8. Campanile Ghirlandina. 9. University.*~~

~~*1. Museo Lapidario. 2. 8. Agostino. 8. Academy of Fine Arts.*~~

classical antiquary through Cavedoni's Dichzarazione degli anticht marmi Modenesi (1828), and the supplements in the Memoirs of the Academy, vol. ix., &c. The university of Modena, originally founded in 1683 by Francis IL, is mainly a medical and legal school, but has also a faculty of physical and mathematical science. It has about twenty-five professors, and from 200 to 250 students; a library of 20,000 volumes, an observatory, botanical gardens, an ethnographical museum, &c. The old academy of the Dzssonanti, dating from 1684, was restored by Francis in 1814, and now forms the flourishing Royal Academy of Science and Art (Memoirs since 1833) ; and there are besides in the city an Italian Society of Science founded by Anton Mario Lorgna, an academy of fine arts, a military college (1859), an important agricultural college, and a lyceum and gymnasium, both named after Muratori. In industrial enterprise the Modenese show but little activity, silk and linen goods and iron-wares being almost the only products of any note. Commerce is stimulated by a good position in the railway system, and by a canal which opens a water-way by the Panaro and the Po to the Adriatic. The population of the city was 32,248 in 1861, and 30,854 in 1871; that of the com- mune 55,512 in 1861, and 58,058 in 1881.

The Ducuy or MoprEna, an independent sovereign state

(1452 to 1859), ultimately extended from the Po to the Mediterranean, and was bounded N. by Lombardy and the Papal States, E. by the Papal States and Tuscany, 8. by Tuscany, Sardinia, and the Mediterranean, and W. by Sardinia and the duchy of Parma. Its greatest length, from Porto-Vecchio, on its northern frontier towards Man- tua, to the outlet of the Parmignola torrent, on the Sardinian frontier, was 844 miles; and its greatest width, from the pass of Calama, on the Papal and Tuscan frontier, to the right bank of the Enza, on the frontier of Parma, was 37 miles. The area was 2371 square miles, of which three- {ths were mountainous. In 1855 the population was 606,159. The duchy had six provinces—Modena, Reggio, Guastalla, Frignano, Garfagnana, Massa-Carrara. .

Modena is the ancient Mutina, which was annexed by the Romans along with the rest of the territory of the Boii. In 183 3.c. Mutina becaine the seat of a Roman colony. During the civil wars Marcus Brutns held out within its

~~*walls against Pompeins in 78 B.c., and in 44 Bc. the place was defended by D. Brutus against M. Antony. The 4th century found Mntina in a state of decay; the ravages of Attila and the troubles of the Lombard period left it a ruined city in a wasted land. In the 8th century its exiles founded, at a distance of 4 miles to the north-west, a new city, Citta Geminiana (still represented by the village of Cittanova) ; but about the close of the 9th century Modcna was restored and refortified by its bishop, Laedoinus. When it began to build its cathedral (1099 a.p.) the city was part of the possessions of tle countess Matilda of Tuscany ; but when, in 1184, the edifice was consecrated by Lucius IIL, it was a free community. In tho wars between Frederick II. and Gregory IX. it sided with the emperor, though ultimately the papal party was strong enough to introduce confusion into its policy. In 1288 Obizzo d'Este was recognized as lord of the city; after the death of his successor, Azzo VIII. (1308), it resumed its communal independence ; but by 1836 the Este family was again in power. Constituted a duchy in 1452 in favour of Borso d'Este, and enlarged and strengthened by Hegcules II., it became the ducal residence on the incorporation of Ferrara with the States of the Church (1598). Francis I. (1629-1658) erected the citadel and commenced the palace, which was largely embellished by Francis IL Rinaldo (ob. 1737) was twice driven Loin his city by French invasion. To Francis III. (1698-1780) the city was indebted for many of its public buildings. Hercules III. (1727-1803) saw his states transformed by the French into the Cispadine Republic, and, having refused the principality of Breisgau and Ortenau, offered him in compensation by the treaty of Campo Formio, died an exile at Treviso. His only daughter, Maria Beatrice, married Ferdinand of Austria (son of Maria Theresa), and in 1814 theireldest son, Ferdinand, received back the Stati Estensi. His rule was subservient to Austria, reactionary, and despotic. On the outbreak of the French Revolution of 1830, Francis [V.seemed for a time disposed to encourage the corresponding movement in Modena; but no sooner had the Austrian army put an end to the insurrection in Central Italy than he returned to fis previous policy. Francis Ferdinand V., who succeeded in 1846, followed in the main his father's example. Obliged to leave the city in 1848, he was restored by the Austrians in 1849; ten years later, on 20th August 1859, the representatives of the Modenese, under the direction of Carlo Farini, declared their territory part of the kingdom of Italy, and their decision was confirmed by the plebiscite of 1860.*~~

~~*Natives of Modena are Fallopius the anatomist, Tarquinia Molza, Sadoletius, Sigonius, Tassoni, and Cavedoni the archeologist ; the names of Zaccaria, Tiraboschi, and Muratori are associated with its library. Tiraboschi's Bibliotheca Modenensis, 6 vols., contains an account of all the literary personages of the duchy.*~~

~~*See Vedriani, Storia di Modena, 1666; Tiraboschi, Mem storiche modenest, 1793; Scharfenberg, Gesch. des Herzogth. Modena, 1859; Oreste Raggi, Modena descritta, 1860; Baraldi, Storia di Modena; Valdrighi, Diz. Storico, &c., delle*~~

~~*contrade di Modena, 1879-80 ; Crespellani, Guida di Modena, 1879 ; Galvani, Mem. stor. tntorno la vita di Francesco IV., 4 vols.*~~

~~*MODICA, a city of Italy, in the province of Syracuse in Sicily, 8 miles from the south coast, on the line of rail- way decreed in 1879 between Syracuse and Licata. It has increased its communal population from 30,547 in 1861 to 41,231 in 1881, and is a well-built and flourishing place. Of note among the public buildings are the old castle on the rock, the medizeval convent of the Franciscans, and the churches of 8. Maria del Carmine (1150) and 8. Maria di Betlem—this last containing ruins of the ancient temple destroyed by the earthquake of 1693. Modicais the point from which the remarkable prehistoric tomb and dwelling- eaves of Val d'Ispica are usually visited. An early de- pendency of Syracuse, Motyca or Mutyca was in Cicero's*~~

~~*days a fairly important municipiuin. In modern times it was held as a countship by the dukes of Alba. Placido Caraffa has written a prolix history of the city, which may be found in Greevius, Zhes. Ant. e¢ Hist. [tal., vol. xii.*~~

~~*MOE, Jérceen Encrpretsen (1813-1882), Norwegian poet and comparative mythologist, was born at Hole in Sigdal, Ringerike, Norway, on 22d April 1813, and entered the university of. Christiania as a theological student at the age of seventeen. After leaving the university in 1839 he acted as tutor in various schools and families, and in 1845 was appointed professor of theology in the Military School of Norway, which post he held until 1853,*~~

~~*when he became resident chaplain in his native parish of Sigdal. In 1863 he received the living of Bragernees, Drammen ; in 1870 that of Vest Aker, near Christiania ; and in 1875 the bishopric of Christiansand, where he died on 27th March 1882.*~~

~~*Moe's first publication was a volume of Norse 'songs, ballads, and staves," which appeared in 1840; it was followed in 1841 by the Norske Folke-eventyr (Norwegian Popular Tales), which he had collected along with lis schoolfellow Asbjérnsen, 'The work excited such interest as a contribution to the study of comparative mythology that in 1847 he was sent by the Government through Thelemark and Setersdal to increase his collection of stories. The second (enlarged) edition, with a preface by Moe, appeared in 1852. In 1851 his I Brénden og i Tyernet (In the Well and in the Tarn), a delightful collection of prose stories for children, appeared, and it was followed in 1859 by a volume of poems entitled En liden Julegave (A Little Christmas Present). In 1877 he prepared a collected edition of his works in two volumes, the stories he had published along with Asbjérnsen being excluded. Many of the Volke-eventyr (Popular Tales from the Norse) were translated by Sir George Dasent in 1859.*~~

~~*MCBSIA (in Greek Mysia, or, to distinguish it from the country of the same name in Asia, Mysia in Europe), in ancient geography the territory immediately to the south of the Danube corresponding in the main to Servia and Bul- garia, It became a Roman province between 27 B.c, and 6 A.D., probably about 16 B.c.! In the time of Tiberius and Caius the province was under the same governor with Macedonia and Achaia. It was divided by Domitian into two provinces, Mesia Superior (Servia) and Mosia Inferior (Bulgaria) ; and the same emperor completed the great military road along the line of the Danube, increased the strength of the Roman forces in the country, and, by the conquest of Dacia, saved it from the inroads by which it had been harassed from the time of Tiberius. The Goths invaded Meesia in 250 a.D., and at last, in 395, a number of them, afterwards known as Mcesogoths, obtained per- mission to settle in the province. The Slavonians and Bulgarians appear in the 7th century.*~~

~~*The boundary between Upper and Lower Mcesia was not marked, as Ptolemy (iii. 9, 10) states, by the river Cebrus or Ciabrus (Cibritza or*~~

~~Zibru), but, as may be inferred from an inscription (6125, C. Inser. Lat., vol. iii. 2, additamenta), lay between Almus (Lom) and Ratiaria (Artcher). Upper Mesia, or, as it was often called, Meesia Prima, contained — Singidunum (Belgrade), headquarters of Legio IV. Flavia, and in the 3d century a colonia; Viminacium (Kostolatz), headquarters of Leg. VII. Claud., and designated some- times municipium Ailium, but more usually colonia (a rank bestowed on it by Gordianus); Bononia (Widin); Ratiaria, which, on the loss of Dacia, became the headquarters of Leg. XIII. gemina, and remained a large town till it was destroyed by Attila ; Remesiana (Mustapha Pasha Palanka), which has furnished inscriptions belong- ing to the unidentified Ulpiana ; and Naissus (Nissa or Nish), the birthplace of Constantine the Great. Lower Meesia (Mcesia Secunda) contained—Oescus (Colonia Ulpia, mod. Gigen), headquarters, after loss of Dacia, of Leg. V. Maced. ; Nove (Sistova), at a late date a camp of Leg. I. Ital., and afterwards chief seat of Theodoric king of the Goths ; Nicopolis ad Istrum (Nikup), really on the Iatrus or Yantra, a memorial of Trajan's victory over the Dacians ; Pristra (Rustchuk), Asamus (Nicopoli on the Osma), Darostorum (Silistria), Odessus (Varna), Tomi (Kustendjc), Troesmis (Iglitza).~~

~~See Roesler, Romanische Studien, 1871; Pfitaner, Gesch. der Rom. Kaiser-~~

~~legionen, 1881, pp. 152-161; Hahn, in Dkschr. K, Ak. der Wiss., Ph. H. Cl., Vienna, 1861, p. 228.~~

~~_ MOFFAT, a health resort of some note in Scotland, is situated in Upper Annandale, Dumfriesshire, occupying an~~

~~1 See A. W. Zumpt, Commentat. Epigraph., ii. 253 sqq.~~

~~agreeable position at the base of the Gallow Hill, 63 miles.~~

~~from Edinburgh, and 42 miles from Carlisle by railway. The Spa, which is 14 miles above the town (525 feet above sea-level), is sulphureous with' some saline ingre- dients, and is used in gout, rheumatism, and dyspepsia. Population (1881) 2161 ; in the season about 4000.~~

~~*MOFFAT, Ropsrt, D.D. (1795-1883), African mission- ary, was born at Ormiston, Haddingtonshire, Scotland, on 21st December 1795, of humble parentage. Moffat learned the craft of gardening, but in 1814 offered himself to the London Missionary Society, who, in 1816, sent him out to South Africa. After spending a year in Namaqua Land, with the powerful and dreaded chief Africaner, whom he converted, Moffat returned to Cape Town in 1819, and married Miss Mary Smith, a remarkable woman and most helpful wife. In 1820 Moffat and his wife left the Cape and proceeded to Griqua Town, and ultimately settled at Kuruman, among the Bechuana tribes lying to the west of the Vaal river. Here he worked as a missionary till 1870, when he reluctantly returned finally to his native land. He made frequent journeys into the neighbouring regions, as far north as the Matabele country, to the south of the Zambesi. The results of these journeys he communicated to the Royal Geographical Society (Jour. R. G. S., xxv. XXvili., and Proc. ii.), and when in England in 1842 he published his well-known Missionary Labours and Scenes in South Africa. Single-handed he translated the whole of the Bible into Bechuana. While solicitous to turn the people to Christian belief and practice, Moffat was perhaps the first to take a broad view of the missionary function, and to realize the importance of inducing the savage to adopt the arts of civilization. He himself was builder, carpenter, smith, gardener, farmer, all in one, and by pre- cept and example he succeeded in turning a horde of bloodthirsty savages into a "people appreciating and cultivating the arts and habits of civilized life, with a written language of their own." Now we find more or less Christianized communities extending from Kuruman to near the Zambesi. Moffat met with incredible discourage- ment and dangers at first, which he overcame by lis strong faith, determination, and genial humour. It was largely due to him that the work of Livingstone, his son-in-law, took the direction which it did. On his return to England, Moffat received a testimonial of about £6000. He died at Leigh, near Tunbridge Wells, 9th Aug. 1883.*~~

~~*See Scenes and Services in South Africa, the Story of Moffat's Missionary Labours, London, 1876 ; and publications of the London Missionary and the B. and F. Bible Societies.*~~

~~*MOGADOR, or SurraH (Berber Zasurt), the most southern seaport town on the Atlantic coast of Morocco, and the capital of the province of Haha,*~~

~~*stands from 10 to 20 feet above high water on a projecting ridge of cal- careous sandstone in 31° 30' N. lat. and 10° 44' W. long. In certain states of wind and sea it is turned almost into an island, and a sea-wall protects the road to Saffi. The streets are regular and, for a Moorish town, broad and clean. Within the walls there are three distinct divisions: the citadels old and new with the government buildings; to the north-west the outer town with its spacious markets in the centre; and at the north-west corner the Mellah, or Jews' quarter. In the citadels the houses are fairly good, and considerable attention is paid to sanitary matters. Water is brought from the Kseb, about 14 miles to the south, by an aqueduct. The prosperity of Mogador is due to its commerce; only a few gardens break the barren- ness of the immediate vicinity. The harbour or roadstead, though apparently protected by the island and quarantine 'station of Mogador, is extremely dangerous during west and south-west winds. 'Trade is carried on mainly with Marseilles, London, Gibraltar, and the Canaries,—the prin-*~~

~~*cipal exports being almonds, goat-skins, gums, olive oil, and ostrich feathers, and the principal imports cotton goods (half of the total) and tea. The average value of the ex- ports for the five years 1877-1881 was about £210,000, the imports rather less. Attention has been frequently directed to the value of Mogador as a health resort, especially for consumptive patients. The climate is remarkably steady : mean temperature of the hottest month 71-06, of coldest month 58°69. The annual rainfall is only 10 or 12 inches, and the rainy days of winter and spring about 28. The sirocco is but rarely felt. The population is about 15,000 (7000 Jews, about 150 foreigners). Jews, Protestants, and Roman Catholics have religious edifices in the town.*~~

~~*A place called Mogador is marked in the 1351 Portulan of the Lau- rentian Library, and the map in Hondius's Aélas Minor shows the island of: Mogador I. Domegador ; but the origin of the present town is much more recent. Mogador was founded by Sultan Mohammed, and completed in 1770. The town received from the Moors the name of Suerah (little picture), while the Portuguese called it after the shrine of Sidi Mogadul, which lies*~~

~~towards the south half-way to the village of Diabat, and forms a striking landmark for seamen. In 1844 the citadel was bombarded by the French.~~

~~MOGHILEFFY, a north-western government or province of the Russian empire, situated on the upper Dnieper, between the provinces of Vitebsk and Smolensk on the north and east, Tchernigoff and Minsk on the south and west. In the north it is occupied by the watershed which separates the basins of the Dwina and the Dnieper, an undulating tract from 650 to 900 feet above the sea-level, and covered nearly everywhere with forests. .This water- shed slopes gently to the south, that is, to the valley of the Dnieper, which enters the province from the north- east and flows west and afterwards due south. The southern part of the province is flat and has much in com- mon with the Polyesie of the province of Minsk; it is, however, more habitable, the marshes being less extensive.~~

~~The province is covered by the Tertiary formation ; Devonian sandstone appears in the north, and Carboniferous limestones in the east. The soil is mostly sand, clay (brick-clay and potter's-clay are not uncommon), and peat-bogs, with a few patches of "black- earth." The climate is rude and wet, the average yearly tempera- ture at the Gorki meteorological observatory being 40°°4 Fahr. (14°-2 in January, and 63°°8 in July); cold nights in summer are often the cause of bad crops. The province has about 1,140,000 inhabitants (947,625 in 1870), mostly White-Russians (78 per cent.), belonging to the Greek Church ; Jews are numerous (16 per cent.) ; Poles, belonging mostly to the nobility, make only 3 per cent. of the population. Agriculture is the chief occupation ; nearly one half (46 per cent.) of the surface of the province is under crop ; but, except after unusually good harvests, corn is imported, chiefly by the navigable channels of the Dnieper and Sozh. There are many distilleries on the estates of landowners, and wine-spirit is exported. The hemp culture is important; hemp and hemp- seed oil are exported to Riga. The province has one large paper- mill, a few iron and copper works, and minor manufactures.~~

~~The province of Moghileff is divided into eleven districts, with the chief towns: Moghileff (40,500 inhabitants), Chausy (4200), Tcherikoff (3900), Gomel (13,030), Gorki, formerly the seat of an agricultural institute (5050), Klimovichi (4000), Mstislav! (6700), Orsha (5350), Rogacheff (7750),~~

~~*Staryi Bykhoff (5200), and Syenno (2550). Of about 80 other municipal towns, we name Shkloff (13,000 inhabitants), Dubrovka (7000), Kricheff (4000).*~~

~~*This province was inhabited in the 10th century by the Krivichi and Radimichi. In the 14th century it became part of Lithuania and afterwards of Poland. Russia annexed it in 1772. '*~~

~~*MoGHILEFF ON THE DNIEPER, a town of Russia, capital of the province of same name. It is situated on both banks of the Dnieper, 40.miles south of the Orsha station of the railway between Moscow and Warsaw. A railway along the Dnieper will soon bring Moghileff into railway*~~

~~*communication with these capitals.*~~

~~*Moghileff is mentioned for the first time in the 14th century as a dependency of the Vitebsk, or of the Mstislavl principality. At the beginning of the 15th century it became the personal property of the Polish kings. But it was continually plundered — either by Russians, who attacked it six times during the 16th century, or by Cossacks, who plundered it three times. In the 17th century its inhabitants who belonged to the Greek Church suffered much from the persecutions of the Union, In 1654*~~

~~*it surrendered to Russia, but in 1661 the Russian garrison was massacred by the inhabitants. In the 18th century it was taken several times by Russians and by Swedes, and in 1708 Peter I. ordered it to be destroyed by fire. It was annexed to Russia in 1772. Of 40,500 inhabitants two-thirds are Jews and the remainder White-Russians, with a few Poles (2500). Its manufactures are without importance ; but one branch of trade, namely, the prepa- ration of skins, has maintained itself for many centuries. The commerce is mostly in the hands of Jews: corn, salt, sugar, and fish are brought from the south, whilst skins and manufactured ware imported from Germany (partly by smugglers) are sent to the southern provinces.*~~

~~*MOGHILEFF on tue Dntsster (Mohilov), adistrict town of Russia, situated in the province of Podolia, on the left bank of the Dniester, 87 miles east-*~~

~~south-east of Kamenets- Podolsk, and 43 miles from the Zhmerinka railway junc- tion. It has 18,200 inhabitants, nearly one-half of whom are Jews; the remainder are Little Russians, Poles (1500), and afew Armenians. The Little-Russian inhabitants of Moghileff carry on agriculture, gardening, wine, and mul- berry culture. The Jews and Armenians are engaged in a brisk trade with Odessa, to which they send corn, wine, spirits, and timber, floated down from Galicia, as well as with the interior, to which they send manufactured wares imported from Austria.~~

~~Moghileff, named in honour of the Moldavian hospodar Mohila, was founded by Count Potocki about the end of the 16th century. Owing to its situation on the highway from Moldavia to the Ukraine, at the passage across the Dnieper, it developed rapidly. For more than 150 years it was disputed by the Cossacks, the Poles, and the~~

~~Turks. It remained in the hands of the Poles, and was annexed to Russia in'1795. The Crown purchased it from Count Potocki in 1806.~~

~~MOGILAS, Perrus (c. 1600-1647), metropolitan of Kieff from 1632, belonged to a noble Wallachian family, and was born about the year 1600. He studied for some time at the university of Paris, and first became a monk in 1625. He was the author of a Catechism (Kieff, 1645) and other minor works, but is principally celebrated for the Orthodox Confession, drawn up at his instance by the abbot Kosslowski of Kieff, approved at a provincial synod in 1640, and accepted by the patriarchs of Constantinople, Jerusalem, Alexandria, and Antioch in 1642-3, and by the synod of Jerusalem in 1672. See GrezK CHURCH, vol. xi. p. 158.~~

~~There are numerous editions of the Confession in Russian ; it has been edited in Greek and Latin by Panagiotes (Amsterdam, 1662), by Hofmann (Leipsic, 1695), and by Kimmel (Jena, 1843), and there is a German translation by Frisch (Frankfort, 1727).~~

~~MOGUL, or MucHAL, |}xe, the Arabic and Persian form of the word Mongol, usually applied to the Mongol empire in India. See Iyp1a, vol. xii. p. 793 sqq.~~

~~*MOHACS, a market town in the Trans-Danubian county of Baranya, Hungary, stands on the right bank of the west arm of the Danube, 25 miles east-south-east of Pécs (Fiinf- kirchen), with which it is connected by railway, 45° 58' N. lat., 18° 37' E. long. At Mohdcs there are several churches and schools belonging both to the Roman Catholics and the Calvinists, also the summer palace of the bishop of Pécs, a monastery, an old castle, and a station for steamers plying on the Danube, by which means a considerable commerce in wine and the agricultural produce of the neighbourhood is carried on with Budapest and Vienna. Not far from Mohacs are coal mines, and the town is an important coal depot of the Danubian Steam Navigation Company. The population in 1880 was 12,047 (Magyars, Serbs, and Germans).*~~

~~*Two great. battles fought in the vicinity of the town mark the commencement and close of the Turkish dominion in Hungary. In the first, 29th August 1526, the Hungarian army under Louis IJ. was annihilated by the Ottoman forees led by Soliman the Magnifieent (see vol. xii. p. 369). In the second, 12th August 1687, the Austrians under Charles of Lorraine gained a great and decisive victory over the Turks, whose power was afterwards still further broken by Prince Eugene of Savoy.*~~

~~*MOG—MOH*~~

~~*MOHAIR is the woolly hair of a variety of the common or domestic goat inhabiting the regions of Asiatic Turkey, of which Angora is the centre, whence the animal is known as the Angora Goat (see Goat, vol. x. p. 708). Goat's hair has been known and used as a textile material in the East from the most remote periods; but neither the Angora goat nor its wool was known in Western Europe till, in 1655, the animal was described by the naturalist Tourne- fort. That textures of mohair were in use in England early in the 18th century is obvious from Pope's allusion :—*~~

~~*'* And, when she sees her friend in deep despair,*~~

~~*Observes how much a chintz exeeeds mohair." Owing, however, to the jealous restrictions of the Turkish power, it was not till 1820 that mohair became a regular article of import into the United Kingdom. In that year a few bales came into the market; but so little was the material appreciated*~~

~~that it only realized 10d. per ib. In 1870 average mohair fleece was selling at five times that price. From the small beginning of 1820 the imports gradually waxed, and the trade received a very consider- able impetus through the introduction in 1836, by Titus Salt, of the analogous fibre alpaca. The increasing demand for and value of mohair early stimulated endeavours to acclimatize the Angora goat in other regions; but all European attempts have failed, owing to humid and un- genial climates. In 1849 a flock was taken by Dr J. P. Davis to the United States of America, and since that time many fresh drafts have been obtained and distributed to Virginia and various Southern States, and to California and Oregon in the west. In these high and dry regions the goats thrive; and the flocks in the Western States now number many thousands. The Angora goat has also been introduced into the Cape of Good Hope with much success. The first importation of mohair from the Cape, made in 1862, amounted to 1036 tb; and now about one- tenth of the total British supply is received from that source. Mohair has also been received in England from goats reared successfully in Fiji, where they were first in- troduced in 1874, and there are also thriving flocks in Australia.~~

~~The trade in mohair between Asia Minor and western Europe is controlled in Constantinople. There upwards of twenty varieties of fleeces are distinguished according to the localities of their pro- duction, the richest and most lustrous qualities being produced in hilly and forest regions, while the fleeces from the Tale plains are comparatively kempy, coarse, and cottony. From the Lake Van district on the eastern borders of Asiatic Turkey a distinct and inferior variety of wool is obtained. It is known in commerce as Van mohair, and consists, to the extent of about 70 per cent., of white wool slightly streaked with black, with 30 per cent. of coloured red and black wool. At Konieh in the south, also, an inferior mohair known as Pelotons is produced, 80 per cent. of which is black and red, and the remainder white. The average weight of an Angora goat fleece is from 5 to 6 Ib. The finest quality of wool is obtained from the first clip, which is made in the second year of the animal. She-goats yield the best wool, after which come wethers, while the rams give the coarsest fleeces. Angora mohair is a brilliant white lustrous fibre, elastic and wiry in character, and devoid of felting properties. It attains the length of four or five inches, but the long fibre is mixed with an undergrowth of shorter wool, which in the spinning~~

~~*process is combed out as "noils" for separate use. It is a material of enormous durability, and, owing to its remarkable elasticity, it is especially fitted for working into long piled fabrics, such as plush and imitation furs, or for use in braids and bindings, and in boot and other laces. It is largely used for making Utrecht velvet or furniture plush for the upholstering of railway carriages, &c., a trade centred at Amiens. In the making of imitation seal- skins, and imitation beaver, otter, chinchilla, and other furs, and for earriage rugs generally, mohair is extensively employed. Many dress fabrics of mixed mohair and alpaca, eotton, or silk are also manufactured ; but with changes in fashion such materials are con- stantly ehanging in style, composition, and name. Mohair is also used for making certain qualities of lace, and an imitation of ostrich feathers for use as trimming has been made from the fibre. The imports of mohair into the United Kingdom during 1882 amounted*~~

~~*to 16,859,771 ib, valued at £1,433,584, a quantity largely in exeess of the imports of any previous year.*~~

~~*Plate NADU*~~

~~*the birth of Mo- hanimed.*~~

~~*Arabia at*~~

~~*545*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*Unver this head is given the history of Mohammed and his successors to the fall of the Eastern Caliphate, with a sketch of the institutions and civilization of the Moslem empire and an account of the Koran. The later history*~~

~~*PART IL—MOHAMMED AND*~~

~~*OHAMMED! or MAHOMET, the founder of Islam, first appears in the full light of history with his Flight to Medina (The Hijra), a.p. 622; and this date, not that of his birth, has been fittingly chosen as the epoch of the*~~

~~*Moslem Era, The best-attested tradition? places his first appearance as a prophet in Mecca some twelve years earlier (circa 610). He was then forty years old: the forty must be taken as a round number, but as such is doubtless trustworthy. Thus the birth of Moham- med falls about 570 a.D.: it is said to have fallen in the year when Abrah4, the Abyssinian viceroy of Yemen, made the expedition against Mecca, mentioned in the Koran, when the Arabs first saw the elephant and first suffered from smallpox.?*~~

~~*At the time of Mohammed's birth and youth nothing seemed less likely than that the Arabs should presently make their triumphal entrance into the history of the world as victors over the Greeks and Persians. Nowhere in the Peninsula was there an independent state of any considerable power and importance. At the beginning of the 6th century indeed the princes of Kinda had attempted to form a national kingdom, uniting in particular the tribes of central Arabia; but this kingdom was nothing more than an epic prelude to the true history of the Arabs, which begins with Islam. After the fall of the Kindite dynasty, the old anarchy reigned again among the nomads of the Nejd and the Hij4z; in all other quarters Greek or Persian influence predominated, extending from the frontier deep into the interior by the aid of two vassal states—the kingdom of the Ghassanids in the Haurdn under Greek suzerainty, and that of the Lakhmids in Hira and Anbar under the Persian empire. The antagonism between-By- zantium and Ctesiphon was reflected in the feuds of these Arab lordships; but indeed the rivalry of Greek and Persian exercised its influence even on the distant South of the Peninsula. Urged on by the Greeks, the Abyssinians had overthrown the Christian-hating realm of the Himyarites, the sunken remnant of the ancient might of the Sabans (a.D. 526), the Persians had helped a native prince again to expel the Christians (civca 570), and since then the Persians had retained a footing in the land. Toward the close of the 6th century, their direct and indirect influence*~~

~~*ne*~~

~~*1 'The name Mohammad means in Arabic "the praised," and it has been supposed that this epithet was conferred on the Prophet after his mission to mark him out as the promised Paraclete. This, however, is incorrect (Noldeke, Gesch. d. Qorans [Gott 1860], p. 6, note 2; Sprenger, Leben und*~~

~~*Lehre des M., i. 155 sq.) The name is found, although it was not common, among the heathen Arabs. Renan has shown it to occur on a Greek inscription of the early part of the 2d century of the Christian era (Boeckh, C. J. @., 4500), and Mohammed ibn Maslama of Medina, a contemporary of the Prophet, bore it as his original name, as appears from the fact that his brother was called Mahmud, it being a favourite practice to give to brothers variations of the same name, as Anas and Minis, Sahl and Sohail, Monabbih and Nobaih (Sprenger, i. 158, note 2). That Mohammed calls himself Ahmad, in sur. 1xi. 6, in order to adapt his name to a supposed prophecy, proves nothing ; on the other hand, the men of Mecca, on occa- sion of a treaty with the Moslems, demanded that the Prophet should not call himself messenger of God, but Mohammed ibn 'Abdallah, using his old familiar name; see J. Wellhausen, Vakidi's Kitab al- Maghazi in verkirzter deutscher Wiedergabe (Berl. 1882), p. 257.*~~

~~*2 Nildeke, wt supra, p. 54 sq.*~~

~~*3 Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser und Araber zur Zeit der Sasaniden aus… Tabari iibersetzt (Leyden, 1879), pp. 205, 218.*~~

~~*must be sought under the names of individual countries and dynasties. What falls to be said of the social and religious aspects of Islam in modern times will be given under the two great divisions of SUNNITESs and SHf'ITESs,*~~

~~*THE FIRST FOUR CALIPHS.*~~

~~*in Arabia greatly surpassed that of the Greeks; and since the Kindites had fallen before the kings of Hira, it extended right through the Nejd into Yemen.**~~

~~*In the Hij4z and western Nejd, the district from which Islam and the Arab empire took their beginning, Greeks and Persians, Ghassanids and Lakhmids, had not much influence ; the nomad tribes, and the few urban common- wealths that existed there, lived free from foreign interfer- ence, after the manner of their fathers. Mohammed's city*~~

~~*was Mecca, where the Banu Kindna had formed a settle- Mecca.*~~

~~*ment round the Ka'ba, the sanctuary of a number of con- federate tribes (Ahabish) belonging to that district. The feast annually observed in the days before the full moon of the month Dht'l-Hijja at Mecca and at 'Arafa and Kozah in the vicinity, presented strong attractions for all inhabitants of the Hij4z, and grew into a great fair, at which the Meccans sold to the Bedouins the goods they imported from Syria. Feast and fair gave the city the prosperity which it shared with other cities which, like Mecca, had the advantage of lying near the meeting-place of the two*~~

~~*great natural roads to Yemen—that from the north-west along the Red Sea coast, and that from the north-east fol- lowing the line of the mountains that traverse the Nejd.®*~~

~~*By their trading journeys the Koraish® had acquired a knowledge of the world, especially of the Greeco-Syrian world: the relative superiority of their culture raised them not only above the Bedouins, but above the agricultural population of such a city as Medina; the art of reading and writing was pretty widely diffused among them. The Koraish within the city were the Bani Ka'b ibn Loay, those in the surrounding country Banu 'Amir ibn Loay ; the townsmen proper were again subdivided into Motayya- bin and Ahl4f—the latter were the new citizens, who were distinguished from the old settlers by the same name in other Arabian towns, as in Téif and Hira. The community was a mere confederation of neighbouring septs, each occupying its own quarter; there was no magistracy, the town as such had no authority. All political action centred in the several septs and their heads ; if they held together against outsiders, this was due to interest and a sense of honour, a voluntary union strengthened by the presence of public opinion. In the time of Mohammed, the most numerous and wealthy sept was that of the Bani Makhzim ; but that of the Banu 'Abdshams was the most distinguished. The Bani Omayya were the most powerful house of 'Abd- shams ; their head, Abu Sofy4n ibn Harb, exercised a de- cisive influence in the concerns of the whole community. Mohammed himself was of the Banu Hashim; it is affirmed that these had formerly enjoyed and claimed of right the position actually enjoyed by the Bani Omayya, but this assertion seems to have had its origin in the claims to the Caliphate which the Hashimites (the house of 'Alf and the 'Abbdsids) subsequently set up against the Omayyads."*~~

~~*4 On the state of Arabia before Islam see Caussin de Perceval, HIssat sur Uhistoire des Arabes, vol. ii.; Muir, Life of Mah., vol. i.*~~

~~*5 Marr al-Zahran, near Mecca, is accordingly said to have been the point at which the great emigration of tribes from Yemen parted into two streams, moving north-west and north-east respectively.*~~

~~*6 The Koraish were the branch of Kindna settled in and about Mecca. They are called also Ghalib and Fihr, but the last name ig particularly applied to those of the Koraish who did not live within the town. 7 Sprenger, vol. ill. p. cxx. sg.*~~

~~*XVI.— 69*~~

~~*Youth of L I the Pro- not live to see the son's birth, and his mother*~~

~~*phet.*~~

~~*Arabian religion,*~~

~~*546*~~

~~*Mohammed's father, 'Abdallah b. 'Abdalmottalib, did mina died while he was still a child. Mohammed was then cared for first by his grandfather, 'Abdalmottalib, and after his death by his oldest paternal uncle, Abu Talib b. 'Abdalmottalib. HIe was kindly treated, but shared the hardships of a numerous and very poor family; he herded sheep and gathered wild berries in the desert. This is all that we know of his youth (sur. xciii. 6), all else is legend, containing at most an occasional fragment of truth.*~~

~~*It was, we are told, in his twenty-fifth year that Mohammed, on the recommendation of his uncle, entered the house and business of a wealthy widow named Khadija. For her he made commercial journeys, thus learning to know part of Palestine and Syria, and perhaps receiving impressions which fructified in his soul? By and by he married the widow, who was much his senior; he was a shrewd man, with prepossessing countenance, fair of skin, and black-haired. The marriage was happy, and blessed with several children. The two sons, however, died young; from the*~~

~~*elder the father received the surname Abu ’1- Kasim. The most famous of the daughters was Fatima, who married her father’s cousin, ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.*~~

~~*During his married life with Khadija, Mohammed came in contact with a religious movement which had laid hold on some thoughtful minds in Medina, Mecca, and Taif. In Mecca, as elsewhere, Arabian heathenism was a traditional form of worship, chiefly concentrated in great feasts at the holy places; it was clung to because it had come down from the fathers. The gods were many; their importance was not due to the attributes ascribed to them, but to their connection with special circles in which they were worshipped. They were the patrons of septs * and tribes, and symbolized, so to speak, the holy unity which united the present and past members of these. Above them all stood Allah, the highest and universal God. By him the holiest oaths were sworn; in his name (Bismika Alldhummd) treaties and covenants were sealed; the lower gods were not fit to be invoked in such cases, as they belonged to one party instead of standing over both. The enemy was re- minded of All4h to deter him from inhuman outrage ; enemy of All4h (‘aduw Allah, Geoorvy7s) was the name of opprobrium for a villain. But, since Allah ruled over all*~~

~~*1 The tradition relates that as an infant Mohammed was entrusted to a Bedouin foster-mother, Halima, who brought him up among her people, the Banu Sa‘d b. Laith. Sprenger (i. 162 sq.) will have it that this precise statement is also a fiction ; but he is probably wrong. It can hardly be disputed that Bedonin women were accustomed to suckle the children of townsfolk for wages, and Mohammed’s “ milk-kinship ” with the Banu Sa‘d b. Laith is confirmed by what happened at and after the battle of Honain. A nephew of Mohammed was also brought up among the Sa‘d. Comp. Vakidi, ut supra, pp. 364, 377 sq., 431, note 1. ;*~~

~~*2 He saw the mute witnesses of divine judgment, the rock-dwellings of Hijr and the Dead Sea; perhaps, too, he was impressed by the figure of some venerable mouk (Bahira legends), Comp. Ibn Hisham, p. 115 sq.; Sprenger, i. p. 178 sqq.*~~

~~*3 Vakidi, p. 850: Idols were fouud in every house, and homage was paid to them when men went out or in to gain their blessing. Abu Bajrat made and*~~

sold them ; there was a lively trade in idols with the Bedouins.

4 The particular gods are said to have been regarded as children of Alléh (oondy 893). From sur. iii, 21, xxvii, 149, it appears that the Meccaus called their goddesses daughters of All4h; perhaps it was their disputes with Mohammed that forced them to this view. At first, certainly, al-Lat and al-'Ozz4 were names of the wife of the supreme god ; sexual dualism dominated in the oldest Arab idea of the godhead. It was Mohammed who first reduced the gods to Jinns—1.e. to subordinate demons and kobolds—as he did not deny their existence, but only stripped off their divinity. To say that the oldest Arabs worshipped Jinns is as unreasonable as to say that they worshipped the devil; for Islam degraded the gods to Shaitans as well as to Jinns. Superstition certainly played its part among the Arabs, but superstition is not religion.

MOHAMMEDANISM

[MOHAMMED.

and imposed duties on all, it was not thought that one could enter into special relations with him. In worship he had the last place, those gods being preferred who represented the interests of a specific circle, and fulfilled the private desires of their worshippers.° Neither the fear of Allah, however, nor reverence for the gods had much influence. The chief practical consequence of the great feasts was the observance of a truce in the holy months, and this in course of time had become mainly an affair of pure practical convenience. In general, the disposition of the heathen Arabs, if it is at all truly reflected in their poetry, was profane in an unusual degree. Wine, the chase, gaming, and love on the one side ; vengeance, feuds, robbery, and glory on the other, occupy all the thoughts of the old poets. Their motives to noble deeds are honour and family feeling; they hardly name the gods, much less feel any need of them. The man sets all his trust on himself : he rides alone through the desert, his sword helps him in danger, no God stands by him, he commends his soul to no saint. HIs reckless egoism may expand to noble self-sacrifice for the family and the tribe; but in this heroism religious impulses have no part, there is nothing mystical in these hard, clear, and yet so passionate natures. The only vein of what can in any sense be called religious feeling appears when the volcano

~~*has burned itself out and the storm of life is over; then, it may be, a wail is heard over the vanity of all the restless activity that is now spent.® It is very possible that religion meant more to the sedentary Arabs than to the nomads, to whom almost all the ancient poetry belongs; but the difference cannot have been great. The ancient inhabitants of Mecca practised piety essentially as a trade, just as they do now; their trade depended on the feast, and its fair on the inviolability of the Haram and on the truce of the holy months.'*~~

~~*The religion of the Arabs before Mohammed was de- The crepit and effete.8 Many anecdotes and verses prove that Hanifs.*~~

~~*indifference and scoffing neglect of the gods was nothing uncommon. The need for a substitute for the lost religion was not very widely felt. But there were individuals who were not content with a negation, and sought a better re- ligion, Such were Omayya b. Abi '1-Salt in Taif, Zaid b. 'Amr in Mecca, Abt Kais b. Abi Anas, and Abt 'Amir in Medina.® They were called Hanifs, probably meaning*~~

~~*5 Vakidi, pp. 368, note 1, 370, note 1 ; Sprenger, iii. 457 sqg., 512. Whether the feast at Mecca was celebrated in honour of Allah before Mohammed, is very doubtful. It would seem that Hobal was wor- shipped in the Ka'ba (Ibn Hisham, p. 97 sq.), and Kozah in Mozdalifa (Vakidi, p. 428); it is possible, however, that Allah stood to Hobal among the Arabs as El to Jahwé among the Hebrews, Ritual sacri- fices were generally presented to a god who had a proper name; but the trace of a religious rite which still survived in the ordinary killing of beasts for food, possibly consisted even before Mohammed in the invocation of the name of Allah (Sprenger, ii. 478, note 1; but comp. Vakidi, p. 160, note 1, p. 158).*~~

~~*6 'We hasten towards an unknown goal, and forget it in eating and drinking. We are sparrows and flies and worms, but more dariug than famishing wolves. . . . My roots reach dowu to the depths of the earth; but this Death spoils me of my youth, and of my soul he spoils me and of my body, and right soon he lays me in the dust. I have urged my camel through every desert, wide-stretching and shimmering with mirage ; and I have ridden in the devouring host, reaching after the honours of greedy perils, and I joined in the fray under every sky till I longed for the home-coming instead of*~~

~~*booty. But can I, after Harith's death, and after the death of Hojr, the noble host—can I hope for a softer lot from the change of time, which does not forget the hard mountains? I know that I must soon be transfixed by his talon and tooth as befell my father and my grandsire, not to forget him that was slain at Kolab."—-Amraalkais, ed. Slane, No. 10, p. 33; ed. Ahlwardt, No. 5.*~~

~~*7 See, on Arabian heathenism, Pococke, Specimen hist. Arabum ; Krehl, Religion der vorislamischen Araber (Leip. 1863); Sprenger, i, 241 sq. 8 Vakidi, p. 298, note 1.*~~

~~*® See, for Omayya, Kitéb al-Aghdnit (Bulak ed.), iii, 186 sg.; for Zaid, Ibn Hisham, p. 148 sg. ; for Abt Kais, 7d. 348 sq., 39 sq.; and for Abu 'Amir, Vakidi, pp. 108, 161, 190, 410.*~~

~~*ifs, |*~~

~~*Jewish and Christian influence,*~~

~~*MOHAMMED. |*~~

~~*"nenitents", men who strive to free themselves from sin.) They did not constitute a regular sect, and had in fact no fixed and organized views. They had, no doubt, inter- course with one another, but were not a close society; they thought more of their own souls than of propaganda ; only in Medina they seem to have been more numerous. They rejected polytheism and acknowledged Allah, but not so much on intellectual grounds as on grounds of conscience. Faith in the one God was with them identical with pious resignation (Js/dém) to his will; their monotheism was most closely allied to the sense of responsibility and of a coming judgment ; it stood opposed to the worldly ideas of the idolaters, and was an impulse to upright and sin-avoiding walk. They were not theorists, but ascetics. It was the primitive ideas of Law and Gospel ("the religion of Abra- ham") that lived again in them. They felt on the whole less attracted towards the developed forms of the religion of revelation ; they rather sought after some new form ; few of them attached themselves to existing religious communities. Mohammed, it would appear, came into connexion with these Hanifs through a cousin of his wife, Waraka b. Naufal, who was one of them, Their doctrines found a*~~

~~fruitful soil in his heart ; he was seized with a profound sense of dependence on the omnipresent and omnipotent Lord, and of responsibility towards him. Following the example of old Zaid b. 'Amr, he now frequently withdrew for considerable periods to the solitude of the bare and desolate Mount Hird, and meditated there with prayer and ascetic exercises. For years, perlaps, he went on in these purely individual exercises, without anything to dis- tinguish him essentially from the others who held similar views. But in him the Hanifite ideas lodged themselves in a natural temperament which had a sickly tendency to excitement and vision, and so produced a fermentation that ended in an explosion.2 Thus he became a prophet ; he felt himself constrained to leave the silent circle of ascetics and make a propaganda for the truth. In this resolve he was unquestionably influenced by what he knew of the example of the Biblical prophets, perhaps also by the cir- cumstance that a longing after a new founder of religion was diffused among the Hanifs, and found support in some dim acquaintance with the Messianic hopes of the Jews. That Mohammed did not independently produce his own ideas is indisputable ; nor is it to be doubted that he de- rived them from the Hanifs. But what was the ultimate source of these first motions towards Islam? In general they are ascribed to a Jewish source. Jews were very numerous in Hij4z and Yemen, and had perfectly free intercourse with the Arabs, to whom they undoubtedly imparted a quantity of Biblical and religious material. Mohammed in particular was indebted to the Jews for almost all the stories and a great part of the laws of the Koran (laws of marriage, purity, etc.), and the theological language of Islam is full of Jewish words. But the ori- ginal and productive forces of Islam did not spring from Judaism, least of all the ideas of the Judgment and of the inexorable demands set before the creature by his Creator,~~

~~_ ia er 1 Sprenger (p. 38 sg.) connects Hanif with 42M, and expounds it~~

~~per antiphrasin as Jucus a non lucendo, on the ingenious fashion of A. Geiger. As tahannuth = tahannu/f is the technical name of such solitary ascetic practices as Mohammed himself engaged in before his call, Hanif may be taken to mean a mutahannif by profession. The connexion between hanif and tahannuf is certain, and it seems equally certain that tahannuf as an equivalent of tahannuth comes not from hanif but from hinth (for hinf),~~

~~*and means not to play the Hanif but to concern oneself with one's sin, to purge oneself of it.*~~

~~*2 It is disputed whether Mohammed was epileptic, cataleptic, hys- teric, or what not; Sprenger seems to think that the answer to this medical question is the key to the whole problem of Islam. It is certain that he had a tendency to see visions, and suffered from fits which threw him for a time into a swoon, without loss of inner con- sciousness.*~~

~~*which are so dominant in the older stras. A distinction must be drawn between the primitive impulses and the material added later; Mohammed did not get his leaven from the Jews, they only supplied him afterwards with meal. Neither in truth can Christianity be viewed as the proper source of Islam—Christianity, that is, in any of its great historical developments. The Arabs knew Greek, Syrian, and Abyssinian-Himyaritic churches ; manifold in- fluences from these doubtless reached Islam, but in none of them did the idea of Judgment still stand as the central point of religion ; the living sense of divine reality ruling over the life was half extinguished by the developments of theology. But in the Syro-Babylonian desert, off the line of the church's main advance, primitive forms of Chris- tianity, perhaps also of Essenism, still survived, which the course of church history had left untouched. To these belong on the one hand the Sabians (" Baptists," from pay), on the other the nunierous anchorets of these regions. The con- nection of Islam with the Sabians appears from the fact that in Mecca and Taif its adherents were simply known as Sabians.? From them, however, were derived, it would seem, for the most part only externals, though the import- ance of these must on no account be undervalued. The deepest influence exercised on the Hanifs, and through them on the Prophet, appears to have come from the an- chorite ascetics. How popular they were with the Arabs, appears from the Bedouin poetry ; what power they exer- cised over the minds even of the heathen, is proved by various episodes in the history of Ghassin and Hira; how well the Arabs knew the difference between them and the shaven clergy, is seen in the instructions of Abubekr to the commanders in the Syrian campaigns. It was not their doctrine that*~~

~~*proved impressive, but the genuine earnest- ness of their consecrated life, spent in preparation for the life to come, for the day of judgment, and forming the sharp- est contrast to the profanity of heathenism. Ascesis and meditation were the chief points with the Hanffs also, and they are sometimes called by the same name with the Christian monks. It can hardly be wrong to conclude that these nameless witnesses of the Gospel, unmentioned in church history, scattered the seed from which sprang the germ of Islan.*~~

~~*The tradition gives a telling story of the way in which Mohammed at length came to proclaim openly what had long been living and working within him ; in other words, how he became a propket. Once, in the month of Rama- dan, while he repeated his pious exercises and meditations on Mount Hird, the angel Gabriel came to him by night as he slept, held a silken scroll before him and compelled him, though he could not read, to recite what stood written on it.5 This was the first descent of a passage of the heavenly book, the source of revelation from which Moses and Jesus and all prophets had drawn ; and so Mohammed was called to be a prophet. The words with which Gabriel had summoned him to read, remained graven on his heart. They were the beginning of sur. xevi.—*~~

~~*3 Ibn Hisham (p. 835) relates that the Bani Jadhima announced their conversion to Islam to Khalid in the words, " We are become Sabians." Renan, Ktudes d'histoire rel. (1863), p. 257, misunderstands this utterance.*~~
~~:~~

~~*4 Abi 'Amir is as often called Rahib as Hanif. All the accounts indicate that the Hanifs stood nearer to Christianity than to Judaism, not only in Tif but elsewhere. Interesting in the highest degree is a verse ascribed to Sakhr al- Ghay in the Hodhailian Poems, ed. Kose- garten 18,11. A thundercloud is there described, the centre of which is an impenetrable mass ; only on the onter fringe a restless motion is discernible. "Its fringes on the mountain- ridge (al-Mala) are like Christians celebrating a banquet when they have found a Hanif (and so run to and fro in the restlessness of glad excitement)."" ;*~~

~~*5 Of course any one can read ina vision, The question discussed even by Moslems, as to whether the Prophet could read or not, has at least no place*~~

~~*in this connexion.*~~

~~*Moham-*~~

~~*med's*~~

~~*first vision.*~~

~~*The fatra.*~~

~~*548*~~

~~*"Read! in the name of thy Lord, who created, created man from a drop. Read! for thy Lord is the Most High who hath taught by the pen, hath taught to man what he knew not. Nay truly man walketh in delusion, when he deems that he suffices for him- self; to thy Lord they must all return."*~~

~~*What is here recorded is the commencement, not of Mohammed's knowledge, but of his prophesying. That the latter was due to a vision experienced by him on a night of the month Ramadan (sur. xcvii. 1, il. 181) is certain, and it is at least very possible that the form of the vision was governed by the traditional conception of revelation and prophecy which Mohammed had learned to accept.! It is, of course, uncertain whether the words in which the angel called the Prophet are really contained in sur. xcvi. Certainly this stira is very early, and its con- tents are, indeed, the best expression of the original ideas of Islam. Man lives on content with himself, but he must one day return to his Creator and Lord, and give account to him. This is ina sense the material principle of the oldest faith of Islam ; the formal principle is the very pro- minent doctrine of revelation in writing copied from the heavenly book.*~~

~~*When the angel left him—so the tradition runs on—Mohammed came to Khadija and recounted the occurrence to her in much distress ; he thought that he was possessed. She however comforted him, and confirmed him in the belief that he had received a revelation and was called as a mes- senger of God. Yet his doubts returned, when there ensued a break in the revelation, and they reached a distressing height. He was often on the point of seeking death by casting himself down from Mount Hird. It is usually*~~

~~assumed that this state of anguish lasted from two to three years. Then the angel is said to have suddenly appeared a second time; he came to Khadija in great excitement and said: "Wrap me up! wrap me up!" This, it must be explained, was done when he fell into one of his swoons ; and on this occasion, as often thereafter, the revelation came during an attack. Then was sent down sutra lxxiv. beginning with the address—'O thou enveloped one!" Henceforth there was no interruption and no doubt; the~~

~~revelations followed without break, and the Prophet was~~

~~assured of his vocation.~~

~~That Mohammed did pass through many doubts and much distress before he reached this assurance, may well be believed (sur. xciii. 3); but the systematic development of the doctrine of the fatra, or interval of from two to three years between the first and second revelation, belongs to a later stage of tradition. It appears that it was de- vised to dispose of the controversy whether Mohammed lived as a prophet in Mecca for ten or for twelve years ; perhaps, too, it was desired to solve another difiiculty— viz., whether sur. xevi. or sur. lxxiv. was the beginning of the revelation—in a sense that should do some justice to the rival claims of each.? The tradition may also have been influenced by the circumstance that Mohammed, in the first three years of his mission, did not appear as a public preacher,' but only sought recruits for his own cause and the cause of Allah in private circles. First, he gained the inmates of his own house,—his wife Khadfja, his freed-~~

~~1H. Dodwell, **De Tabulis cceli," in Fabricius, Cod. pseud. V. T., 2d ed , ii, 551 sg. Compare, in the Koran, especially sur. lxxxvii. 6, "We will cause thee so to read that thou mayest forget nothing save what God will." The following progress is noteworthy :—TIsaiah's lips are touched to purge them of sin (Isa. vi. 7); Jeremiah's are touched by the Lord to put His word in his mouth (Jer. i. 9) ; Ezekiel receives the revelation as a roll of a book which he has to swallow (Ezek. iii. 2).~~

~~2 See Sprenger in 7.D.M.G., 1859, p. 173 sq.; Néldeke, op. cit., 67 sz. Ewald thinks that the vocatives at the beginning of sur. Lxxiv. aud lxxiii, mean simply—O long sleeper! This view is worthy of consideration. The~~

~~*Moslem exegetes thoroughly understand the art of giving to general expressions of the Koran specific reference to historical events which they have themselves invented to facilitate exegesis, 3 Ibn HIsham, p. 166.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*man Zaid b. Haritha, his cousin 'Ali (of whose nurture he First had relieved Abu Talib, a poor man with many children), converts.*~~

~~*[MOHAMMED.*~~

~~*and finally his dearest friend Abtbekr b. Abt Kohafa. The last named won for him several other adherents: 'Othman b. 'Affan, Zobair b. al'Awwdm, "Abd al-Rahmén b. 'Auf, Sa'd b. Abt Wakkas, Talha b. 'Obaid All4h, all names of note in the subsequent history of Islam. Soon there was a little community formed, whose members united in common exercises of prayer.*~~

~~*To the HIanffs, especially to the family of Zaid b. "Amr, their relation was friendly ; they had the name of Moslem in common, and there was hardly any difference of prin- ciple to separate them. The personality of the prophet had given an altogether new impulse to a movement already in existence; that was all. To found a new religion was in no sense Mohammed's intention ; what he sought was to secure among his people the recognition of the old and the true. HIe preached it to the Arabs as Moses had before him preached to the Jews, and Jesus to Christians ; it was all one and the same religion as written in the heavenly book. The differences between the several religions of the book were not perceived by him till a much later period.*~~

~~*It is not difficult to understand why Mohammed should in the first instance have turned to those who were most readily accessible to him; but the nature of his mission did not suffer him to rest content with this; it compelled him to make public proclamation of the truth. One of his dependents, Arkam b. Abi Arkam, offered for this purpose his house, which stood close by the sanctuary, and thus the Moslems obtained a convenient meeting-place within the . town, instead of, as hitherto, being compelled to resort to ravines and solitary places. HIere Mohammed preached, and here too it was that he received some converts to Islam. But he did not obtain*~~

~~any great results among the Meccans. What he had to say was already in substance familiar to them; all that was new was the enthusiasm with which he proclaimed old truth. But this enthusiasm failed to make any impression on them; they set him aside as a visionary, or as a poet, or simply as one possessed. In their eyes it was a fatal flaw that his supporters were drawn from the slave-class and the lower orders, and the ranks of the young; it would have been quite another matter if one of the rulers or elders had believed in him. This circumstance was a source of annoyance to the pro-_ phet himself; in sur. lxxx. we find him rebuked by God for having repulsed in an unkind way a blind beggar who had interrupted him as he was endeavouring to win over a man of influence—an endeavour which proved of no avail.~~

~~This indifference of the Meccans embittered the mes- senger of God, and led him to give to his preaching a polemical character which it had not hitherto possessed. Tn the oldest stiras we have monotheism in its positive and practical form.5 God is the all-powerful Lord and all-know- ing Judge of man; he demands loyal self-surrender and unconditional obedience; the service he requires is a serious life, characterized in particular by prayer, almsgiving, and temperance. That the worship of other gods beside Allah is excluded by these views, goes without saying ; still it 1s~~

~~4 It does not appear that Arkam's house was of the nature of an asylum to which Mohammed betook himself for refuge from the ill- treatment to which he was subjected in his own home, nor is there any evidence that he ever lived in it. It was simply the meeting- house of the oldest Islam. Prayer continued to be offered within it until the conversion of 'Omar, who was bold enough to choose the Ka'ba itself, the centre of heathenism, as the Moslem place of prayer. Comp. Muir, ii. p. 117 ; Sprenger, i. p. 434.~~

~~5 What is meant by practical monotheism is most easily understood by reference to Matt. vi. 24 sqg., x. 28 sgg., and to Luther's exposi- tion of the first commandment in the catechisms ; itis the essence of religion. We do not, of course, mean that this practical monotheism a aoe in the Koran with as much purity and depth as in the~~

~~ospel.~~

~~*Hostility pressly to add the morals.*~~

~~*MOHAMMED.*~~ |

~~*noteworthy that the sharp negations of monotheism ac- quired prominence only by degrees. It was in his indig- nation against the cold mockery with which he was met that Mohammed first assumed an attitude of hostility towards the worship of polytheism, while at the same time he gave much greater prominence to his own mission, just because it was not acknowledged. He now began to threaten the infidels with the judgment of God for their contempt of His message and His messenger ; he related to them the terrible punishments that in other cases had fallen on those who refused to hear the voice of their pro- phet, applying the old legends to the circumstances of the present with such directness that it was superfluous ex- This could not fail to irritate the Meccans, especially as after all the new religion gained*~~

~~*Meccans. oround. What Mohammed attacked as ungodly and abom-*~~

~~*inable were their holy things ; they were jealous for their gods and their fathers. Their attachment to the tradi- tional worship was the greater that the prosperity of their town rested upon it ; for they had not yet learned that the Ka'ba was no institution of heathenism. They found, how- ever, no other way to remove the public scandal than to approach Abt Talib, the Prophet's uncle and the head of his family, asking him to impose silence on the offender, or else to withdraw from him his protection. Abu Talib was not personally convinced of Mohammed's mission, but he did not choose to impose conditions on the enjoyment of his protection. At length, however, when the Meccans adopted a threatening tone and said that he must either restrain his nephew from his injurious attacks, or openly take side for Mohammed and against them, he sent for his nephew, told him how things stood, and urged him not to involve them both in ruin. Mohammed was deeply moved ; he thought his uncle wished to get rid of him ; yet he could not and would not withdraw from the divinely- imposed necessity which impelled him to preach his con- victions. 'Though they gave me the sun in my right hand," he said, "and the moon in my left, to bring me back from my undertaking, yet will I not pause till the Lord carry my cause to victory, or till I die for it." With this he burst into tears, and turned to go away. But*~~

~~*Abt Talib called him back and said : “ ‘Go in peace, son of my brother, and say what thou wilt, for, by God, I will on -no condition abandon thee.”*~~

~~*The protection of his uncle did not relieve Mohammed from all manner of petty insults which he had to endure from his enemies from day to day; but no one ventured to do him serious harm, for the family feud which this would necessarily have produced was not to be lightly incurred. Less fortunate than the Prophet, however, were such of his followers as occupied dependent positions, and had no family support; especially the converted bondmen and bondwomen, who found no consideration, and were often treated with actual cruelty. For some of these Abtbekr purchased freedom. There seem to have been no martyrs, but the situation of many Moslems became so intolerable that they fled to Abyssinia. The Abyssinian Christians were quite looked upon as their religious kinsmen.*~~

~~*A breach with one’s people is for the Arab a breach with*~~

~~*“What think ye of al-Lat and al-‘Ozzd, and of Manat the third with them?” the devil put words in his mouth which he had long wished to have by revelation from God—viz. “These are the sublime Cranes,? whose intercession may be hoped for.” The auditors were surprised and delighted by this recognition of their goddesses, and when Mohammed closed the stra with the words, “So prostrate yourselves before Allah and do service to him,” they all with one accord complied. They then professed their satisfaction with his admissions, and declared themselves ready to recognize him. But the messenger of God went home dis- quieted. In the evening Gabriel came to him, and Mo- hammed repeated to him the stra; whereupon the angel said: ‘ What hast thou done? thou hast spoken in the ears of the people words that I never gave to thee.” Mohammed now fell into deep distress, fearing to be cast out from the sight of God. But the Lord took him back to His grace and raised him up again. He erased the diabolical verse and revealed the true reading, so that the words now ran— “What think ye of al-Lat and al-‘Ozz4, and of Manat the third with them? The male [offspring] for you and the female for God? That were an unjust*~~

~~*division!" When the new version reached the ears of the Meccans they compared it with the old, and saw that the Prophet had broken the peace again. So their enmity broke out again with fresh violence.*~~

~~*It is generally and justly suspected that this compromise did not rest on a momentary inspiration of Satan, but was the result of negotiations and protracted consideration. Nor was the breach so instantaneous as is represented ; the peace lasted more than one day. There is no doubt as to the fact itself. Every religion must make compro- mises to gain the masses. But for Mohammed the moment for this had not yet arrived ; later on he used the method of compromise with great effect.*~~

~~*The news of: the peace between Mohammed and the Meccans had recalled the fugitive Moslems from Abyssinia ;3 on their return the actual state of affairs proved very different indeed from what they had been led to expect, and it was not long before a second emigration took place. By degrees as many as a hundred and one Moslems, mostly of the younger men, in little groups, had again migrated to Abyssinia, where they once more met with a friendly reception. Among them were Ja'far, the brother of 'Alf, and the Prophet's daughter Rokayya, along with her hus- band 'Othman b. 'Affan.**~~

~~*Mohammed's position was very considerably altered for the worse, both subjectively and in other respects, by his precipitate withdrawal from the compromise almost as soon as it had been made. He himself indeed, although long and salutarily humbled by the remembrance of his fall (sur. xvii. 75 sqg.), never abandoned faith in his vocation ; his followers also did not permit themselves to be led*~~

~~*tradition ignores the fact itself, but knows its result, the return of the Abyssinian fugitives. : 2 « Al.ghardnik al-'olé," fine-sounding but perhaps meaningless words— "Herrlich, etwas dunkel zwar, Doch es klingt recht wunderbar."*~~

~~*Comp. Néldeke, op. cit., p. 80. Hobal, though the chief god of the*~~

~~*= God and the world ; he feels it like a living death. Mo- Meccans, is not mentioned in the Koran either here or elsewhere. ics, °® hammed, who*~~

~~*remained in Mecca, naturally made every | Perhaps as God of the Ka'ba he was already identified with Allah by*~~

~~*the Meccans, or was so identified by Mohammed.*~~

~~*3 The date assigned is the month Rajab of the fifth year of the Call, corresponding to the eighth year before the Flight (a.D. 614-615). The compromise must have been made in the interval. The chronology of this period is of course in the highest degree uncertain, and the order of the events hard to ascertain. Thus it can scarcely be deter- mined whether the above-mentioned scene with Abu Talib ought to be placed before or after the compromise.*~~

~~*4 'Othm4n and Rokayya, however, members of the noble house of Omayya, soon returned, along with many others. The rest reniained in exile until the seventh year of the Flight.*~~

~~*effort to heal the breach with his townsmen, and, as natur- ally, the latter met him half-way. He even went so far as to take the edge from his monotheism. Once, when the heads of the Koraish were assembled at the Ka''ba, Mohammed, we are told, came to them and began to recite before them sur. liii! When he came to the passage,*~~

~~*1 The authorities for this are Ibn Sa'd, the secretary of Wakidi, to*~~

~~*whom we owe the preservation of Wakidi's materials for the Meccan period, and especially Tabari; comp. Muir, ii. 150 sgg. The comnion*~~

~~*Hamza and 'Omar.*~~

~~*550*~~

~~*was nothing but a manifest imposture.*~~

~~*passionate assurances. — Fortunately for the Moslems, precisely at this juncture,*~~

~~*when matters were assuming so gloomy an aspect for their little company, two conversions took place, which were well Mohammed's uncle, Hamza b,*~~

~~*‘Abdalmottalib, felt his family pride wounded by the injurious treatment which the former had received from Abu Jahl, head of the great and wealthy family of the Bani Makhzim, and in order to become publicly his champion, he adopted Islam. Of much more importance still was the conversion in the same year (the sixth of the Call) of ‘Omar b. al-Khatt4b. ‘Omar was then only twenty- six years of age, and neither rich nor noble ; but his im- posing figure and his unbending strength of will gave him*~~

~~*fitted to revive their courage.*~~

~~*a personal influence, which immediately made itself felt in*~~

~~*a very marked manner in favour of Islam. Until now its*~~

~~*religious gatherings had taken place privately, especially in the house of Arkam ; but ‘Omar offered his prayers at the Ka‘tba as publicly as possible, and his example was followed by the other Moslems. Their religious exercises were no longer gone about in secret, but ostentatiously and before the eyes of all.*~~

~~*So far as can be gathered, it was at this time that the opposition between Mohammed and his townsmen reached its highest pitch. The feeling that he had somewhat committed himself embittered him ; he was determined to atone for his previous concessions to polytheism by un- compromising polemic against it. A personal element, which had lurked from the first in the war of principles, became by degrees increasingly dominant. The idols were less displeasing to Alldh than the idolaters; his own wor- ship was a matter of less concern to him than the recogni- tion of his messenger. With ever-increasing distinctness the prophetic utterances came to be mere words of threaten- ing and rebuke against the Meccans; it was impossible not to recognize in Noah and Moses or Abraham the pro- phet himself. The coming judgment upon Mecca, and the hour of it, were either in plain words or veiled allusion the continual theme of the ‘“admonisher ;” but the oftener and the more urgently it was repeated, the less was the impression it produced. The Meccans did not, on the whole, suffer themselves to be much disturbed by the pro- spect of the terrible overthrow which was portrayed before them in vivid colours. They were even profane enough to express a desire to see the long-threatened catastrophe arrive at last, and their*~~

~~*audacity went so far as to complain of the revelations with which Mohammed sought to stir their feelings as being tedious! They did not in the least believe that the Biblical narratives, which he related with special pride, were known to him by revelation; on the contrary, they pretended to know perfectly well the human source from which he had derived them (sur. xvi. 105; xxv. 5; xliv. 13). It is very interesting to find Mohammed in presence of their unbelief referring to the recognition and approval with which he met among the children of Israel (sur. vi. 114; x. 94; xiii. 36 sgg., xvii. 108; xxviii. 52 sq.; xxxiv. 6), and particularly to find him appealing to the testimony of a certain Jew, whom he does not name (sur. xlvi. 9 sgg.) Manifestly he had relations with Jews at this period, and was under their influence ; and from them, of course, it was that the material of his Old Testa- ment and Haggadistic narratives was derived. At the*~~

~~*1 Ibn Hisham, pp. 191, 235 sq.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*away. But the Meccans, from the way in which he had at first given out a verse as God's word and afterwards withdrawn it as a suggestion of Satan, did not hesitate to draw the inference that the whole of his boasted revelation To their cold and unfeeling logic the Prophet had nothing to oppose save*~~

~~*[MoHAMMED.*~~

~~*same time it is clear that he himself must have believed these to have come directly to him in a second revelation from above, otherwise he would hardly have taken his stand in the presence of his opponents upon the testimony of the Jews. Such a self-deception seems indeed hardly credible to us, but it is impossible to impute to the Arab prophet too complete an absence of the critical faculty.*~~

~~*The Koraish at last lost all patience. Their heads The in-*~~

~~*entered into a solemn compact to break off all intercourse terdict. with the Hashimids, as they declined to separate them- selves from Mohammed. The Hashimids submitted to the interdict for the sake of their relative, although*~~

~~*for the most part they were not believers on him. Along with the Bant ’l-Mottalib they withdrew into the separate quarter of their chief, into the so-called Shi‘b Abt Talib ; one only of their number, Abu Lahab, separated himself from them, and made common cause with the Meccans. All buying and selling with the excommunicated persons being forbidden, these found themselves reduced occasion- ally to outward distress, as well as excluded from all fellowship. This treatment, although apparently never carried out with absolute strictness, did not fail of its effect. The Prophet’s more remotely attached adherents fell away from him, and his efforts for the spread of Islam were crippled. All he could do was to encourage those who remained faithful, and to set himself to seek the con- version of his relations.*~~

~~*This state of matters, after continuing for from two to three years, at last became intolerable to the Meccans themselves, who had a variety of relations with the ex- communicated family. In the tenth year of the Call (a.p. 619-620) five of the leading citizens paid a visit to the Shitb Abi Talib and induced the Bani Hashim and al- Mottalib to come out of their retirement and again appear among their fellow-citizens. The rest of the Koraish were taken by surprise, and did not venture, by setting them- selves against the fait accompli, to run the risk of what might have become a dangerous breach. The story goes that a lucky accident released them from the solemn oath under which they had laid themselves with reference to the Bani’ Hashim—the mice had destroyed the document, hung up in the Ka‘ba, on which it was recorded.*~~

~~*Mohammed was now free once more; but he no longer The Pro- |, thought of carrying on his polemic against the Meccans or phet’s of seeking to influence them at all. In his relations to oy them three stadia can be distinguished, although it is easier penn to determine their character than their chronology. In the first instance, his endeavour was to propitiate them and win them over to his side ; when other methods failed, he even went so far as to make complimentary mention of their goddesses in one of his revelations, and thus to set up a compromise with heathenism. When this compromise failed, he forthwith commenced an embittered assault upon the idolaters, which ended in the outlawry of himself and of his family. And now, the ban having been removed, he gave the Meccans up, abandoning*~~

~~them to their hard- ness of heart. It had become clear to him that in his native town Islam was to make no progress, and that his position was untenable. HIs feeling of separation was in- creased all the more with the death of his faithful Khadija about this time, followed soon afterwards by that of Abu Talib, his noble protector. HIe accordingly came to the determination to take his chance in the neighbouring Taif, Visit to and set out thither alone. On his arrival he asked the Tait heads of the town whether they would be willing to receive him and protect the free proclamation of his doctrines. HIe was answered in the negative ; the mob drove him out of the town, and pursued him until he found refuge in a vineyard, the property of two noble Meccans. In the deepest despondency he again took the homeward road.~~

~~The men of Me- dina.~~

~~First Homage on the "Akaba.~~

~~MOHAMMED. |~~

~~Tradition has it that he found comfort in the fact that at least the Jinns listened to him as by the way he chanted the Koran in the sacred grove of Nakhla.! In the present circumstances it was now impossible for him to return into the town, after having openly announced his intention of breaking with it and joining another community. HIe did not venture to do so until, after lengthened negotiations, he had assured himself of the protection of a leading citizen, Mot'im b. 'Adi. Notwithstanding all that had happened, he resolved, two months after the death of Khadija, to enter upon a second marriage with Sauda bint Zam'a, the widow of an Abyssinian emigrant.~~

~~Chance soon afterwards brought to pass what fore- thought (on his journey to Taif) had failed to accomplish. After having given up the Meccans, Mohammed was wont to seek interviews with the Arabs who came to Mecca, Majanna, Dhu '1-Majaz, and 'Okaz, for the purpose of taking part in the feasts and fairs, and to preach to them.? On one such occasion, in the third year before the Flight (A.D. 619-620), he fell in with a small company of citizens of Medina, who to his delight did not ridicule him, as was usually the case, but showed both aptness to understand and willingness to receive his doctrines. For this they had been previously prepared, alike by their~~

~~*daily inter- course with the numerous Jews who lived in confederation with them in their town and neighbourhood, and by the connections which they had with the Nabateans and Christian Arabs of the north. Hanifitism was remarkably widely diffused among them, and at the same time there were movements of expectation of a new religion, perhaps even of an Arabian Messiah, who should found it. Medina was the proper soil for Mohammed's activity. It is singular that he owed such a discovery to accident. He entered into closer relations with the pilgrims who had come from thence, and asked them to try to find out whether there was any likelihood of his being received in their town. They promised to do so, and to let him hear from them in the following year.*~~

~~*At the pilgrim feast of next year, accordingly, twelve citizens of Medina had a meeting with Mohammed,' and gave him their pledge to have no god but Allah, to with- hold their hands from what was not their own, to flee for- nication, not to kill new-born infants, to shun slander, and to obey God's messenger as far as was fairly to be asked.* This is the so-called First Homage on the 'Akaba.> The twelve men now returned, as propagandists of Islam, to their homes with the injunction to let their master hear of the success of their efforts at the same place on the following year. One of the Meccan Moslems, Mos'ab b. 'Omair, was sent along with or after them, in order to teach the people of Medina to read the Koran, and instruct them in the doctrines and practices of Islam.*~~

~~*Islam spread very quickly on the new soil. It is easy to understand how his joy strengthened the Prophet's spirit to try a higher flight. As asymptom of his exalted frame we might well regard his famous night-journey to Jerusalem (sur. xvii. 1; vi. 2), if we could be sure that it*~~

~~*1 Sur, xlvi. 28; lxxii. 1. On the impossibility of historically fixing the date of this occurrence see Noldeke, op. cit., p. 101.*~~

~~*2 Muir (ii. 181 sq.) assumes, with good reason, that he had already done so during the time when he was living in the Shi'b Abi Talib, and assigns to this period the story that Abi Lahab followed him in this in order to counteract his preaching, and sow tares among the wheat.*~~

~~*3 Sprenger (ii. 526) identifies this meeting with the first, which tra- dition distinguishes from it and places a year earlier. He is probably right.*~~

~~*4 Afterwards this was called the women's oath. It is a noteworthy summary of the features by which Islam is distinguished from heathenism.*~~

~~*5 On the 'Akaba compare Vakidi, pp. 417, 427, 429. station between 'Arafa and Mind.*~~

~~*It was a*~~

~~*belonged to this period.6 The prophecy also of the final triumph of the Romans over the Persians (contained in sur. xxx. 1 sgg.) might very well pass for an expression of his own assurance of victory, as at that time he still hada feeling of solidarity with the Christians. But the prophecy (the only one contained in the Koran) belongs, it would appear, to a much earlier date."*~~

~~*At the Meccan festival of the last year before the Flight (in March 622) there presented themselves among the pil- grims from Medina seventy-three men and two women who had been converted toIslam. In the night after the day of the sacrifice they again had an interview with the Prophet on the 'Akaba ; Al-'Abbas, his uncle, who after Abt Talib's*~~

~~*death had become head of the Bani Hashim, was also Second This is the so-called Second Homage on the Homage.*~~

~~*present. 'Akaba, at which Mohammed's emigration to Medina was definitely settled. Al-'Abb4s solemnly transferred his nephew from under his own protection to that of the men from Medina, after these had promised a faithful discharge of the duties this involved. They swore to the Prophet to guard him against all that they guarded their wives and children from. He, on the other hand, promised thence- forward to consider himself wholly as*~~

~~one of themselves, and to adhere to their society. According to the tradition this remarkable scene was brought to a close by a sudden noise,~~

~~The Meccans soon got wind of the affair, notwithstand- ing the secrecy with which it had been gone about, but Ibn Obay, the leader of the Medina pilgrim caravan, whom they questioned next morning, was able with good con- science to declare that he knew nothing at all about it, as, being still a heathen, he had not been taken into the con- fidence of his Moslem comrades, and he had not observed their absence over night. The Meccans did not gain certainty as to what had occurred, until the men of Medina had left. They set out after them, but by this they gained nothing. They next tried, it is said, violently to prevent their own Moslems from migrating. After a considerable pause, they renewed the persecution of the adherents of the Prophet, compelling some to apostasy, and shutting up others in prison. But the measures they adopted were in no case effective, and at best served only to precipitate the crisis. A few days after the homage on the 'Akaba, Mohammed issued to his followers the formal command to emigrate.~~

~~months some 150 persons had reached Medina. from slaves, only a few were kept behind in Mecca. Mohammed himself remained to the last in Mecca, in the company of Abubekr and 'Ali. HIs reason for doing so is as obscure as the cause of his sudden flight. The explana- tion offered of the latter isa plan laid by the Meccans for his assassination, in consequence of which he secretly withdrew along with Abibekr. For two or three days the two friends hid themselves in a cave of Mount Thaur, south from Mecca, till the pursuit should have passed over (sur. ix. 40). They then took the northward road and arrived safely in Medina on the 12th of Rabf of the first year of the Flight. Meanwhile, 'Ali remained three~~

~~Apart~~

~~6 See Muir, ii, 219 sqg. ; Sprenger, ii. 527 sg. ; and on the other side, Noldeke, Koran, p. 102. The masra& was afterwards called mi'raj (ascension), and, originally represented as a vision, came to be regarded as an objective though instantaneous occurrence.~~

~~7 See on the one hand Muir (ii. 228 sqq.) and Sprenger (ii. 527 s9q.), and on the other Noéldeke (Qoran, p. 102; Tabari, p. 298). The manner in which Sprenger seeks to make the prophecy a vaticinium ex eventu is unfair.~~

~~8 Ibn Hisham, pp. 315 sq., 319 sq.~~

~~9 The 12th of Rabi‘ is, according to tradition, the Prophet's birth- day, the day of his arrival in Medina, and the day of his death. It is certain that he died at mid-day on Monday the 12th of Rabi', but~~

~~In the first month of the first year of the The emi- Flight (April 622) the emigration began; within two gration.~~

~~Moham- mel in Medina.~~

~~Medina.~~

~~days longer in Mecca, for the purpose, it is alleged, of restoring to its owners all the property which had been entrusted for safe keeping to the Prophet. The Koraish left him entirely unmolested, and threw no obstacle in the way when at last he also took his departure.~~

~~With the Flight to Medina a new period in the life of the Prophet begins; seldom does so great a revolution occur in the circumstances of any man. Had he remained *n Mecca he would in the best event have died for his doctrine, and its triumph would not have come until after his death. The Flight brought it about that he, the founder of a new religion, lived also to see its complete victory,—that in his case was united all that in Christen- dom is separated by the enormous interval between Christ and Constantine. He knew how to utilize Islam as the means of founding the Arabian commonwealth ; hence the rapidity of its success, That this was of no advantage for the religion is easily understood. It soon lost the ideality of its beginnings, for almost from the first it became mixed up with the dross of practical considerations. In reaching its goal so soon its capability of development was checked for all time to come; in every essential feature it received from Mohammed the shape which it has ever since retained. It~~

~~*ought not, however, to be overlooked that the want of ideality and spiritual fruitfulness was partly due to its Arabian origin.*~~

~~*Mohammed in the first instance took up his quarters in the outlying village of Koba, where several of his most zealous adherents had their homes, and had already built a mosque. It was not until after some days had passed, and he had made himself sure of the best reception, that he removed to the city itself, which at that time bore the name of Yathrib. All were anxious to have him; in order that none might feel themselves slighted, he left the decision to the camel (al-Kaswa) on which he rode. It knelt down in an open space in the quarter of the Banu Najjar, which he accordingly selected as the site of the mosque and of his own house. At first he took quarters for seven months in the house of Abi Ayyub; within this interval the mosque was finished, which was to serve at once as the place of religious gatherings and as the com- mon hall. Close to it was the Prophet's private dwelling, consisting of the huts of his wives, in one or other of which he lived. At that time he had only one wife, the Sauda already mentioned ; but soon he married, in addi- tion, the youthful 'Aisha, the daughter of his friend Abubekr, who acquired great influence over him. Some of the leading emigrants built houses in the same neigh- bourhood, while the rest continued to be quartered with the people of Medina.*~~

~~*Medina is situated on a westward spur of the Arabian tableland, on the Wadi Kandt. It is an oasis amongst barren rocks, mostly of volcanic origin. The inhabitants supported themselves by their date palms and by the field and garden fruits that grew under their shadow ; they had their homes partly in the town itself and partly in the suburbs and outlying villages. At one time the oasis had belonged to the Jews, as the similar oases to the north still did—Wadi 'l-Kordé, Khaibar, Fadak, Taima. But some centuries before Mohammed's time, Arabs of Yemen, the Bani Kaila, had immigrated and partially driven the Jews away. Many Jews, however, still continued to live there, partly scattered among the Arab tribes and under their protection, partly also in independent communities such as the Kainokd, the Nadir, and the Koraiza. For them it was a great advantage that the Arabs were not agreed among themselves. The Banu Kaila were divided*~~

~~*the other statements are all the more suspicious because they also speak of Monday and mid-day. Comp. Noldeke, Qoran, p. 59 sq.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*[MOHAMMED.*~~

~~*into two branches, the Aus and the Khazraj, who were Aus and constantly at daggers drawn. The mutual hate which Khazraj.*~~

~~*burned within them, from time to time manifested itself in murder and assassination, if by any chance one of the Aus had wandered into a Khazrajite quarter, or vice versd. Shortly before the arrival of Mohammed, the battle of Bo'dth had taken place within the liberties of Medina, in which the Aus, with the help of their Jewish allies, had vanquished the Khazraj and broken their preponderance. The Khazraj were the more numerous and powerful, and seem to have been on the point of making their leading man, Ibn Obay, the king of Medina; by the battle of Bo'éth the balance of parties —and anarchy—was pre- served in the interests of a third, who came in at the right moment to settle these feeble and exhausting feuds and restore order.*~~

~~*The circumstances were singularly fitted to change the Moham- religious influence which Mohammed brought along with meds in:*~~

~~*him into another of a political character, and from being as prophet to make him the founder of a commonwealth. The Arabs had hitherto been accustomed to lay before their Kéhins, or priestly seers, at the sanctuaries, for decision in God's name, all sorts of disputes and hard questions which ordinary means were inadequate to decide. The religious prestige which Mohammed enjoyed led directly to his being frequently called in as adviser and judge. In Medina quarrels and complications were abundant, and an authority to stand over both parties was much needed. Mohammed met this need in the manner which was most acceptable to the Arabs; the authority he exercised did not rest upon force, but upon such a voluntary recognition of the judgment of God as no one had any need to be ashamed of.!_ In principle, it was the same kind of judicial and public influence as had been possessed by the old Kahins, but its strength was much greater. This arose*~~

not only from the peculiarly favourable circumstances, but above all from Mohammed's own personality. It is im- possible to understand the history until one has mastered the fact of his immense spiritual ascendency over the Arabs. The expedient of giving oneself out for the mes- senger of God, and one's speech as the speech of God, is of no avail to one who finds no credence ; and credence such as Mohammed received is not given for any length of time either to an impostor or a dupe. Even the respect in which he was held as a prophet would have helped him little if his decisions had been foolish and perverse. But they were in accordance with truth and sound understand- ing; he saw into things and was able to solve their riddle ; he was no mere enthusiast, but a thoroughly practical nature as well.

It was not long before he was able to demand as of right that which, in the first instance, had been a voluntary tri- bute. "Every dispute which ye have one with another ye shall bring before God and Mohammed ;" so runs the text in the original constitution for Medina, set up in the first years after the F'light?; and in the Koran a rebuke is given to those who continue to seek the administration of justice at the hands of the false gods, tc. of their priests and seers.2 With incredible rapidity the Prophet as a veritable "hakim biamr Alléh" had come to be the most powerful man in all Medina.

1 Very significant is it that the Moslems were ready to submit even to punishment with stripes, if awarded by God.

2 Ibn Hisham, 342, 17.

3 Ibn Hishdm, 360, 8 sqqg. Jolas b. Sowaid and other hypocrites were summoned before Mohammed by their believing relatives on ac- count of some dispute ; but they in their turn summoned the plaintiffs before the K4hins, who in the days of heathenism had been their judges. It was with reference to this that sur. iv. 63 was revealed——— '¢ Hast thou not taken note of those who profess to be believers, yet wish to carry on their suit before the false gods ?"

MOHAMMED. |

MOHAMM

~~roAN TS & 553~~

~~Law. Mohammed thus laid the foundations of his position in | afterwards became the basis of the Moslem fiscal aystem, a manner precisely similar to that which Moses (Exod. | and so at the same time the material foundation of the xvill.) is said to have followed ; and just asthe Torah grew | Moslem state. Religion received so practical a develop- out of the decisions of Moses, so did the Sunna out of those | ment that of alms nothing but the name remained, and of Mohammed. It was perhaps in judicial and regulative | the convenient fiction that the taxes had to be paid to God. activity, which he continued quietly to carry on to the Just in proportion to the closeness of the union into In- very end of his life, that his vocation chiefly lay. At all | which Islam brought its followers did its exclusiveness creased events his work in this direction was extremely beneficial, | towards them that were without increase. If in Mecca °*°!"" if only because he was the creator of law and justice where | Mohammed in his relations to the other monotheistic reli.» previously there had been nothing but violence, self-help, | gions had observed the principle, "he that is not against or at best voluntary arrangement. But the contents of | me is for me," in Medina his rule was "he that is not for his legislation also (if it can be called by such a name) | me is against me." As circumstances were, he had to ad- The marked a distinct advance upon what had been the previ- | just matters chiefly with the Jews. Without any intention slowest ous use and wont in Arabia. In particular, he made it | on their part, they had helped to prepare the ground for his special care to set a fence round the rights of property, | him in Medina; he had great hopes from them, and at first~~

~~~ and to protect and raise the place of woman in marriage. | treated them on no different footing from that of the Arab~~

~~Blood revenge he retained indeed, but completely altered | families which recognized him. But as his relations with its character by reserving to himself the right of permitting | the Aus and Khazraj consolidated, those which he had it; in other words, the right of capital sentence. It need | with the Jews became less close. The conjunction of reli- not be said that in many ways he availed himself of that | gious with political authority, the development of civil which already existed, whether in the form of Arab~~
~~~

~~usage | polity out of religion, of the kingship from the prophetic or of Jewish law; he followed the latter, in particular, in | function, was precisely what they objected to.2 On the his laws relating to marriage. other hand, while the old polity of Medina, broken up and~~

~~Religion. The new situation of affairs inevitably brought it about | disorganized as it was, had no difficulty in tolerating~~

~~that religion was made a mere servant in the work of forming a commonwealth. Never has this service been better performed ; never has it been utilized with greater adroitness as a means towards this end. In Mecca, Islam had originally been nothing more than the individual con- viction of Mohammed ; it was only after severe struggles that he went so far as to preach it, and even his preaching had no other aim than to create individual conviction in others. What he said was of the simplest description— that people ought to believe in God and in judgment to come, that men ought to live their lives seriously and not waste them in follies, that one ought not to be high-minded or covetous, and so on. A community arose, it is true, even in Mecca, and was confirmed by the persecutions, There also religious meetings were held and social prayers. But everything was still in a very fluid and rudimentary stage ; religion retained its inward character. It was not until the first two years after the Flight that it gradually~~

~~'lost this, and became, if not exclusively, yet to a very large~~

~~extent, a mere drill system for the community.! No god but the one God (14 ilah illa ll4h) was the entire sum of their dogmatic, and less inportance was attached to belief in it than to profession of it. It was the watchword and battle-cry. The prayers? took the form of military exer- cises ; they were imitated with the greatest precision by the congregation, after the example of the Im4m. The mosque was, in fact, the great exercising ground of Islam ; it was there that the Moslems acquired the esprit de corps and rigid discipline which distinguished their armies. Next to the monotheistic confession (tauhid) and to prayer (saldt) came almsgiving (zakat, sadaka) as a third important means by which Mohammed awakened and brought into action among hisfollowers the feeling of fellow- ship. The alms by and by grew to be a sort of tithe, which~~

~~*1 This is to be understood as applying to the system as a whole. Of course, there are always individuals who break through system ; but the historical power of Islam rests upon the system. To the system also belongs the spiritual jargon which Mohammed introduced. Tt was no longer perntissible to say " Good morning !' ('im sabahan), the phrase now ran, '* Peace be with thee!" and on every occasion pious forms of speech were demanded. Characteristic of the puritan- ism of the system is the prohibition of wine and of gaming, first issued in the years immediately following the Flight, and the contempt for poetry.*~~

~~*2 They were five in number—at sunrise, noon, afternoon, sunset, and late evening. Each prayer consisted originally of two, afterwards of four, prostrations. The chief weekly public service (jom'a), with ser- mon, was held on Friday at mid-day.*~~

~~*foreign elements within its limits, the new political system created by Islam changed the situation, and rendered it necessary that these should be either assimilated or ex- pelled.*~~

~~*Mohammed's hostility to the Jews found expression, in the first instance, theoretically more than practically,* and especially in the care with which he now differentiated certain important religious usages which he had taken over from Judaism, so that they became distinguishing marks between Islam and Mosaism. Thus, for example, he altered the direction of prayer (Kibla), which formerly used to be towards Jerusalem, so that it now was towards Mecca; and for the fast on the 10th of Tisri ("Ashtra) he sub- stituted that of the month of Ramadan.® In appointing Friday as the principal day of public worship, he may also possibly have had some polemical reference to the Jewish Sabbath. Of these alterations the greatest in positive importance is the transference of the Kibla to Mecca. It symbolizes the completion of the Arabizing process which went on step by step with the change Islam underwent from being an individual to being a political religion. In substituting the Meccan Ka'ba for the sanctuary at Jeru- salem, Mohammed did not merely bid farewell to Judaism and assert his independence of it ; what he chiefly did was to make a concession to heathenism, and bring about a nationalization of Islam, for the purpose of welding together the Arab tribes (Kabdil) into one community. Of similar*~~

~~*significance was the institution of the feast of sacrifice (‘{d al-doha) on the day of the Meccan festival. The Moslems were to observe the latter as much as possible, even if they could not be actually present on the spot.*~~

~~*Thus we have the five chief precepts of Islam—(1) Con- Precepts fession of the unity of God; (2) stated prayer ; (3) alms- of Islam.*~~

~~*giving; (4) the fast of Ramadan; (5) observance of the festival of Mecca. Capable of having deeper meanings*~~

~~*3 While Islam had the effect of uniting the Arabs politically, uni- formity of religion in the case of the Jews had no such effect ; on the contrary, the mutual feuds and hatreds in which they indulged con- duced greatly to the advantage of the Moslems. The Jews, of conrse, recognised Mohammed’s supremacy as a fact, but they denied any legal title thereto as arising from his prophetic office. ‘*~~

~~*4 Compare the well-known second sura, in which a long attack is made on Judaism. :*~~

~~*5 A connection with the Christian fasts is usually alleged. It is possible that Christian influence may have to do with the long duration of the fasts, but it cannot have anything to do with the selection of Ramadan ; for in the first years after the Flight, Ramadan fell not in Spring but in December.*~~

~~*XVI.—70*~~

~~*554*~~

~~*attached to them, but meritorious also, even in a merely external observance, they were an excellent instrumentality for producing that esprit de corps, that obedience to Allah and his messenger, which constituted the strength of the Moslem system. Up till that time blood-relationship had been the foundation of all political and social relations in Arabia; upon such a foundation it was impossible to raise any enduring edifice, for blood dissociates as much as it unites. But now, religion entered upon the scene as a much more energetic agent in building the social structure ; it ruthlessly*~~

~~*broke up the old associations, in order to cement the thus disintegrated elements into a new and*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*[MOHAMMED.*~~

~~*chaos of existing relations, must have exercised a mighty power both of attraction and repulsion is obvious. More than one naive expression bears witness to the astonish- ment with which the Arabs regarded the strange spirit which animated the community of the Moslems—the firm- ness with which they held together, the absolute and will- ing obedience which they gave to their leaders, the reck- lessness with which they disregarded everything that before Islam, or outside of it, was looked upon as holy. Some natures felt themselves attracted by these peculiarities, especially if on other grounds they felt little difficulty in severing themselves from their old connexions ; but, on the*~~

~~*much more stable system. The very hearts of men were changed ; the sanctity of the old relationships faded away in the presence of Allah ; brother would have slain brother,*~~

~~*whole, feelings of antipathy prevailed. Even in Medina The itself this antipathy was widespread. The so-called hypo-hypo- crites (mondfikin) were either only half-attached to the cues*~~

~~*had Mohammed willed it. The best Moslem was he who was the most remorseless in separating from the old and attaching himself to the new ; Mohammed gave preference to active natures, even if they occasionally kicked over the traces; contemplative piety received from him only the praise of words. Over the anarchical rule of a multi- tude of families the sole sovereignty of God came forth triumphant ; its subjects were united by the firmest of all bonds. Every Moslem was every Moslem's brother, and, as matter of course, took his part as against every non- Moslem. Outside of Islam there was neither law nor safety; Alléh alone was powerful, and he protected those only who acknowledged his sole sovereignty.*~~

~~*Prophet or in their inmost hearts unfavourably disposed ; they were kept from overt action partly by the absence of a decided opinion, partly by the terrorism which the con- vinced Moslems exercised. The reproach of hypocrisy brought against them means chiefly that they did not manifest a full acceptance of the new political relations. They could not reconcile themselves to the position of having never a word to say in their own town, and of being compelled to obey the Prophet from Mecca and those who had come with him. For a time the danger was imminent that all Medina (the Emigrants of course ex- cepted) might be infected with hypocrisy, if one may call it hypocrisy when for a moment nature and blood asserted*~~

~~*Emi- The Emigrants (Mohdjira), who along with the Prophet | themselves against religious discipline and burst its bonds. grants had fled from Mecca, were the kernel and the cement of | The younger portion of the community, however, was on emg the community. It was made all the easier for them to | the whole enthusiastic for Mohammed ; the hypocrites*~~

~~*give effect to the fundamental principle, that citizenship in Medina depended not on family but on faith, because the natives themselves (Ansar, "the Defenders"), consisting of Aus and Khazraj, neutralized one another by their mutual enmity. Mohammed seems at first to have cherished the design not only of entirely disowning relationship with non-Moslems, but also of obliterating as much as possible, within Islam, the distinctions of blood, by means of the common faith. He established between emigrants and individual citizens of Medina relationships of brotherhood, which also involved heirship. But he soon abandoned this line, and expressly recognized the validity and sacredness, within Islam, of the old rights of family and inheritance (sur. viii. 76). Thus he refrained from carrying out to its full logical consequence the theoretical principle of equalization, but on practical grounds permitted the old order of society to continue. At a subsequent period, he even conceded to relationship and the ties of blood far larger rights than were compatible with Islam, and thus himself laid the foundations of the violent quarrel which rent the community, more particularly in the time of the Omayyads. Similarly it might be said that communism was originally involved in the principles of Islam; but it is characteristic that from the first the alms were less em- ployed for the equalization of society, than for strengthening the hands of the ruling*~~

~~*power. It frequently happens that a religious revolution finds expression also in the region of social polity ; but it is remarkable to observe how Islam utilized the religious leaven from the first for a positive re-organization of society, and neutralized the destructive tendency which that leaven is wont to show in political affairs, It did not indeed succeed in totally destroying the radical tendency, as the history of the caliphate shows. But, on the whole, the equality before God which Islam teaches interfered hardly at all with the subordination of men to their human leaders; both were demanded by religion, both were taken sincerely, and each was found, in practice, reconcilable with the other.*~~

~~*That this new and drastic principle, thrown into the*~~

~~*were for the most part older men, especially heads of families, who found it difficult to put up with the loss of political influence which they were suffering. As chief of their number Ibn Obay is always named, the foremost man of Medina, whom the Khazraj had thought of crown- ing as king, before matters were so fundamentally changed by Islam. Mohammed's attitude towards him and the hypocrites in general was that of connivance, —thoroughly appropriate here, where political rather than religious affairs were involved, and the question was one less of principle than of power.*~~

~~*The founding of the state upon the feeling of fellowship generated by religion, was without question the Prophet's greatest achievement: the community of Medina was the tool, its heroic faith the force, by means of which Islam attained the results which figure so largely in the history of the world.1 Moslem tradition, however, does not stop to inquire what it was that constituted the inward strength of Islam, but goes on at once to relate what were its outward manifestations. Its information on the subject of the period of Mohammed's sojourn in Medina is given under the title of "the campaigns (maghazt) of the apostle of God." With a few of the smaller tribes in the neighbourhood of Medina (Johaina, Mozaina, Ghifdr, Aslam), and with the Khoza'a, Mohammed maintained relations of peace and amity ; benevolent neutrality gradually grew into alliance, and finally union with the commonwealth of Medina. But towards all the rest of Arabia his very principles placed him in an attitude of war. Ever since Islam from being a religion had become a kingdom, he was compelled to vindicate, by means of*~~

~~*war against unbelievers, its claims to supremacy ; the conflict of principles had to be settled by the sword, the sole sovereignty of All4h demonstrated*~~

~~*1 The credit of being the founder of the Moslem state cannot be transferred to 'Omar, but must be left with Mohammed. It was not 'Omar who created that feeling of oneness which enabled him, for ex- ample, suddenly to recall a general like Khalid from his career of victory*~~

~~*without eliciting a murmur. The miracle is the "primitive cell" of*~~

~~*Medina, not the fact that in course of time success gave it the force of an avalanche,*~~

~~*The holy*~~

~~*war.*~~

~~*Battle of*~~

~~*Bedr.*~~

~~*MOHAMMED. |*~~

~~*by force to the rebels who showed unwillingness to accept it. More literally than Christ could Mohammed say of himself that he was come not to bring peace but a sword. Islam was a standing declaration of war against idolaters.*~~

~~*The nearest object against which to direct the holy war (jihad) was presented by the Meccans. Against them first did Mohammed bring into operation the new principle, that it is faith and not blood that separates and unites. Ac- cording to Arab notions it was a kind of high treason on his part to leave his native town in order to join a foreign society ; on the part of the people of Medina it was an act of hostility to Mecca to receive him among them. The Meccans would have been fully justified on their side in taking arms against the Moslems, but they refrained, being too much at their ease, and shrinking besides from fratricidal war. It was the Moslems who took the initia- tive; aggressiveness was in their blood. Mohammed began with*~~

~~*utilizing the favourable position of Medina, on a mountain spur near the great highway from Yemen to Syria, to intercept the Meccan caravans. Originally he sent forth only the Emigrants to take part in the expedi- tions, as the people of Medina had pledged themselves to defend him only in the event of his being attacked ; soon, however, they also joined him. What first induced them to do so was the prospect of booty ; afterwards it was im- possible to separate themselves, so great was the fusion of elements which had been quietly going on within the crucible of Islam.*~~

~~*The first plunder was taken in the month Rajab, a.H. 2 (Autumn 623), in which circumstance was at once seen the advantage arising from the change of conscience brought about by the new religion ; for in Rajab feuds and plun- dering raids were held to be unlawful. Relying upon the sacredness of this month a caravan of Koraish was return- ing from Tdif laden with leather, wine, and raisins. But this did not prevent Mohammed from sending out a band of Emigrants to surprise the caravan at Nakhla, between Taif and Mecca; his orders to this effect were given in a document which was not to be unsealed until two days after the departure of the expedition. The plan was carried out, and the surprise was all the more successful, because the robbers gave themselves the outward semblance of pilgrims; one Meccan was killed in the struggle. But the perfidy with which in this instance Mohammed's ad- vanced religious views enabled him to utilize for his own advantage the pious custom of the heathen roused in Medina itself such a storm of disapproval, that he found himself compelled to disavow his own tools. In Moham- medan tradition, the contents of the unambiguous document in which he ordered the surprise are usually falsified.*~~

~~*The Koraish still remained quiet ; another outrage had yet to come. In Ramadan a.n. 2 (December 623), the return of their great Syrian caravan was expected, and Mohammed resolved to lie in wait for it at Bedr, a favour- ite watering-place and camping-ground, northward from Medina. For this purpose he set out thither in person along with 308 men; but the leader of the caravan, the Omayyad Abu Sofydn, got word of the plan and sent a messenger to Mecca with a request for speedy help. Con- cern about their money and goods at last drove the Koraish to arms; a very short interval found them, 900 strong, on the road to Bedr. By the way they*~~

~~received intelligence that the caravan had made a circuit to the west of Bedr, and was already in safety. Nevertheless they resolved, at the instance of the Makhzumit Abu Jahl, for the sake of their honour, to continue their march. When the Moslems first got touch of them at Bedr, they took them for the caravan ; their surprise on discovering the truth may be imagined. But, kept firm by the courage of their leader, they resolved to face the superior numbers of the enemy.~~

~~On the morning of Friday, the 17th of Ramadan, the encounter took place. A number of duels were fought in the front, which were mostly decided in favour of the Moslems. The Meccans at last gave up the fight, strictly speaking for no other cause than that they did not see any reason for carrying it on. They were reluctant to shed the blood of their kinsmen ; they were awestruck in pre- sence of the gloomy determination of their adversaries, who did know what they were fighting for, and were absolutely reckless of consequences. After a number of the noblest and oldest of the Koraish, including at last Abt Jahl, had fallen, those who remained took to flight. The number of the dead is said to have been as great as that of the prisoners. Two of the latter, whom he per- sonally hated, Mohammed caused to be put to death— 'Okba b. Abi Mo'ait and al-Nadr b. al-Harith. When the last named had perceived, from the Prophet's malignant glance, the danger in which he stood, he implored an old friend of his among the Moslems for his intercession. This request being refused, al-Nadr said: '"'Had the Koraish taken thee prisoner, thou hadst not been put to death as long as I had lived ;" to which the apologetic reply was : "TY do not doubt it, but I am differently placed from thee, for Islam has made an end of the old relations." To the remaining prisoners life was spared on payment by their kinsmen of a heavy ransom; but Mohammed is said to have afterwards reproached himself for having allowed considerations of earthly gain to keep him back from send- ing them all to hell as they deserved.~~

~~The battle of Bedr is not only the most celebrated of Effect battles in the memory of Moslems; it was really also of of the~~

~~great historical importance. It helped immensely to strengthen Mohammed's position. Thenceforward open opposition to him in Medina was impossible; families which had hitherto withdrawn themselves from his influ- ence were so thoroughly cowed by some atrocious murders carried out in obedience to his orders, that they went over to Islam. He was now in a position to proceed to break up the autonomy of the Jews. In the first instance, he addressed himself to the weak Bani Kainoka, demanding their acceptance of Islam; on their refusal, he took the earliest opportunity that offered itself to declare war against them. After a short siege they were compelled to surren- der; and they might congratulate themselves that their old ally, Ibn Obay, was able to concuss the Prophet into sparing their lives, and contenting himself with their banishment from Medina. Soon afterwards other blows were struck, in the shape of assassinations, by means of which Moham- med put out of the way several of the Jews whom he hated most, such as Ka'b b. al-Ashraf and Ibn Sonaina.! The state of fear to which the rest were reduced may readily be imagined ; they came to the Prophet and begged him to be propitious. If in other days their dislike had found somewhat public expression in all sorts of witticisms and scornful sayings, they were now at least modest and quiet, and kept their hatred to themselves.~~

~~The Meccans also were very deeply impressed by the defeat inflicted on them by the Moslems. They saw clearly that the blow must be avenged, and they took comprehen- sive measures for their campaign. After a year's delay, their preparations being now complete, and their allies~~

~~1 The murderer of Ibn Sonaina was Mohayyisa b. Mas'ud, of whose elder brother, Howaisa, he had been a sworn ally. Howaigsa struck the murderer in consequence, and reproached him with his treacherous ingratitude, saying that much of the fat in his body had come from the estate of the Jew. Mohayyisa's reply was: "If he who bade me kill him were also to bid me kill thee, I should obey." The brother, amazed, asked him if he was serious, and when the other assured hin that he was, Howaisa exclaimed : " By God, a religion which brings it to this is a stupendous one," and forthwith became a convert. The story (Vakidi, p. 98) is too characteristic to be passed over.~~

~~Battle of changed their minds.~~

~~Ohod.,~~

~~Banu Nadir expelled.~~

~~556~~

~~(Ahabish) assembled, they set out under the command of~~

~~Abtt Sofyan, and without any check reached Medina, where they pitched their camp to the north-east of the city, in the green corn-fields by Mount Ohod. In Medina the elders were for awaiting the attack on the town and de-~~

~~fending themselves within it, but the young men hurried~~

~~the Prophet into the determination to meet the enemy~~

~~without the gates; this resolution once come to he per- severed in, even after those who had urged him to it had On the morning of Saturday, the 7th of Shawwal, au. 3 (Jan. Feb. 625), the armies met. At first the battle seemed to be going once more in favour of the Moslems; one after another the standard-bearers and champions of the enemy fell, the whole host wavered, and even the camp was gained. But here their lust for plunder did them an evil turn. Mohammed had covered his left flank against the Meccan horsemen by a number of bowmen, whom he had ordered on no account to leave their post. But as soon as they saw that the enemy's camp was taken, they threw off all discipline, and determined to have their share of what was going. It thus became possible for the Meccan cavalry to fall upon the Moslem rear, and snatch back the victory that had already been won. In the confusion which now ensued Mohammed himself was wounded in the face, and for some time lay for dead on the ground. Among the slain was found his uncle, Hamza b. 'Abdalmottalib, "the lion of God ;" his liver was cut out and carried to Abt Sofyan's wife, Hind bint 'Otba, whose father had been killed by Hamza at Bedr. But the Meccans did not know how to follow up their triumph. Instead of at once attacking Medina—where, to be sure, a second struggle with Ibn Obay, who with his following had not taken part in the battle at Ohod, would have been necessary—they con- tented themselves with the honour of their victory, and took the road home, after having~~

~~*summoned the Moslems to a repetition in the following year of the duel at Bedr. Mohammed even pursued them for a short distance on the following day (as far as to Hamré al-Asad), of course only for the sake of appearances, that the Arabs might not suppose him to have been daunted by his defeat.*~~

~~*Nothing came of the proposed meeting at Bedr, the Meccans failing to put in an appearance. 'The principal event of a.H. 4 was the expulsion of the Banu Nadir, the most distinguished and powerful Jewish family in Medina (Summer 625). Mohammed, under some pretext, suddenly broke with them and ordered their departure within ten days, on pain of death. Relying upon the support of Ibn Obay, they resolved to resist, and sus- tained a siege within their walls; but the ally they had counted on proved a broken reed,! and they were soon compelled to surrender. They were permitted to with- draw, taking along with them all their movable property except their arms. With music and roll of drum, the women in gala dress, they marched through the streets of Medina, on their way to Khaibar, where they had pro- perty. Their land the Prophet appropriated to himself (sur. lix. 7); the income derived from it could be em- ployed to meet the numerous claims that were made upon him. He seems also to have handed over some of it to the Emigrants, who until then had acquired no property in land in Medina.*~~

~~*Meanwhile, the Bantu Nadir were not idle in Khaibar, but left no stone unturned to annihilate their mortal enemy. They succeeded in bringing about an alliance of the Koraish and the great Bedouin tribes of Solaim and Ghatafan, for the suppression of Islam. In the month*~~

~~*1 The sympathy shown by many scholars for Ibn Obay, whose weak- ness degenerated into faithlessness, is unjustified.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*[MOHAMMED.*~~

~~*Dhu 'l-ka'da, a.H. 5 (March 627), the three armies set out, 10,000 strong, under the command of Abu Sofyan. Mohammed received word of this through the Khoza'a, who secretly played into his hands, and on this occasion he resolved, not as formerly to offer battle on the open field, but to*~~

~~*make preparation for a siege. For the most part the houses of the town were built so close to one another as to make a continuous wall; at the north-west corner only was there a wide open space, through which an enemy could easily effect an entrance. Here Mohammed, with the advice and direction of the Persian freedman Salman, drew a ditch, behind which he entrenched him- self with the Moslems, the hill of Sal'? protecting their rear. 'This fosse, which has become famous, and has even given its name to the entire campaign (the War of the War of Fosse), fully served its purpose. 'The enemy with their the cavalry perseveringly directed their attack on this spot, iat but were constantly repelled by the vigilant and courageous defence of the fosse. They at last gave up all hope of reaching their end in this way, unless a simultaneous attack were to succeed in another quarter. To assist them in this, they endeavoured to stir up the Koraiza, the*~~

~~*last autonomous family of Jews still remaining in Medina, having their settlements in the south-east of the town.*~~

~~*The Nadirite Hoyay b. Akhtab, the most zealous promoter*~~

~~*of the alliance against Mohammed, undertook charge of*~~

~~*the negotiations, and succeeded at last in persuading their prince, Ka'b b. Asad, to break his pact of neutrality with*~~

~~*the Moslems. But nothing came of it. The Jews doubted*~~

~~*the perseverance of the Koraish and their allies—they had their fears lest, if the struggle proved a protracted one, the besiegers might withdraw and leave them to their fate. They accordingly demanded hostages in security against such an event, being otherwise determined not to break*~~

~~*up all hope of reconciliation with Mohammed by entering*~~

~~*the contest. This attitude, in turn, aroused suspicion on*~~

~~*the part of the besiegers, whom it was not difficult to con- vince that the Jews were demanding hostages of them for*~~

~~*the purpose of handing them over to Mohammed, and so making their peace with him. All this crippled their activi-*~~

~~*ties still more than did the failure of their own attacks upon*~~

~~*the fosse. The season also was against them; the weather*~~

~~*was windy, the nights extremely cold, and, worst of all, the fields yielded nothing. From this cause the chief sufferers were the Bedouins, who had brought no forage for their camels and horses. Mohammed, who appears to have been*~~

~~*kept well informed of their mood, judged it expedient to open negotiations with them. These were soon broken off indeed, but the mere fact that the Ghatafan had ever entered upon them was enough to create mutual suspicion amongst the allies. One stormy night the Meccans suddenly raised the siege, after it had lasted fourteen days, and returned home; they were followed by the Ghatafan and Solaim. It was with no small joy that the Moslems on the following morning discovered the de- parture of the enemy ; it would have been impossible for them to have held out much longer, exhausted as they were, not less by cold and hunger, than by the fatigues of constantly mounting guard. As soon as Mohammed had given them permission to leave the camp beside the hill*~~

~~*of Sal', they dispersed with the greatest alacrity to their homes.*~~

~~*Mohammed, however, did not allow them much time to Attack recruit. Hardly had they reached their abodes, when he °? the again called them to arms against the treacherous Koraiza, The unlucky Jews had been given over to the sword by the withdrawal of the allies; a siege of fourteen days compelled them to surrender unconditionally. The men*~~

- ~~*Now the citadel, it would seem.*~~

~~*MOHAMMED. |*~~

~~*were driven in chains to the house of Osdma b. Zaid, whence on the following morning Mohammed caused them to be brought one by one to the*~~

~~*market-place of Medina, and there executed. This continued till late in the even- ing. They were six or seven hundred in number, and among them was the Nadirite Hoyay b. Akhtab, the author of the War of the Fosse, who had left the Meccans to join his fortunes with those of the Koraiza. By accepting Islam these men could have saved their lives, but they preferred death. No more magnificent martyrdom is known to history. The women and children were sold into slavery ; one young woman only, Banana, suffered the penalty of death for having broken the head of a Moslem "with a millstone during the siege. Withjoyous heart and smiling face she went to meet her death, never forgotten by 'Aisha, with whom she was when her name was called. The Prophet selected for himself the fair Raihana, and married her, after having caused her to become a convert to Islam.*~~

~~*The War of the Fosse was the last attack made by the Koraish upon Medina ; Mohammed now began to take the offensive towards Mecca. This he at first set about with extreme diplomacy, utilizing the festival, and the truce of God subsisting at the time of the festival, for the purpose of paying a visit to his native town. Although unsuccess- ful in winning to his side the neighbouring tribes of Bedouins, it was nevertheless with a considerable following (1500 men) that in Dhw '1-ka'da a.H. 6 (March 628),! he set out on his journey. In a dream he had had the key of the Ka'ba delivered to him; on the strength of this his followers believed firmly in the success of the expedition. But the Koraish were determined that the pretext of pil- grimage should not avail their adversary ; they summoned their allies and formed a camp to the north of their town for the purpose of preventing the entrance of the Moslems. Mohammed was forced to halt at Hodaibiya on the borders of the sacred territory, and it was in vain that by fair speeches he sought to obtain permission to make the circuit of the Ka'ba. He felt himself too weak to force his way, and accordingly preferred to treat. While the envoys were passing to and fro, there suddenly arose an alarm in the Moslem camp; they apprehended a sudden act of treachery on the part of the Meccans. It was on this occasion that the famous Homage under the Tree took place, when Mohammed pledged his followers by striking hands that they would stand by him and go to death for his sake. Some of the Koraish agents witnessed the scene, and were immensely impressed by it ; such an enthusiastic obedience as Mohammed received, such an ascendency over the minds of men as he exercised, they had never before*~~

~~*conceived to be possible, and on their return they urged their people in the strongest way not to permit matters to come to extremities. The Koraish accordingly judged it best to offer a bargain with Mohammed, the terms being that for this year he was to withdraw, so that the Arabs might not say that he had forced an entrance, but that on the following year he was to return and be permitted to remain three days within the sacred territory for the purpose of sacrifice. After some discussion Mohammed accepted this proposal, although zealous Moslems detected a discreditable shortcoming in matters of faith, in so far as it involved turning back within sight of the Ka'ba without being allowed to accomplish the sacred circuit. When the agreement was to be committed to writing, Mohammed dictated the words: "In the name of Allah, the merciful Rahman" ;? but the Meccan plenipotentiary, Sohail b. 'Amr, declared that he knew nothing about Rahman, and*~~

~~*1 Noldeke, Tabari, p. 308, note 1; Vakidi, p. 18.*~~

~~*? Rahman is a name of God which Mohammed had taken from the Jews and used with special preference.*~~

~~*Sey*~~

~~*insisted upon the customary formula—'" In thy name, Alla- homma!" The Moslems murmured, but Mohammed yielded. He then went on to dictate: "' This is the treaty of peace between the apostle of God." . . . Sohail anew protested ; to acknowledge Mohainmed as the apostle of God, would be to declare himself his follower; the de- signation ought to besimply Mohammed b. 'Abdallah. The Moslems murmured louder than before, and refused to consent to the change. The heads of the two tribes of Medina, Osaid b. Hodair and Sa'd b. 'Obdda, held the hand of the scribe and declared that " Mohammed the apostle of God" must be written, or the sword must de- cide. The Meccan representatives whispered to one another words of amazement at the spirit displayed by these men. But Mohammed made a sign to the zealots to hold their peace, and again gave way (sur. xvii. 110). The writing which now took shape ran as follows :—*~~

~~*In thy name, O God! This is the treaty of peace concluded by Mohammed b. 'Abdallah and Sohail b. 'Amr. They have agreed to allow their arms to rest for ten years. During this time each party shall be secure, and neither shall injure the other ; no secret damage shall be inflicted, but uprightness and honour prevail be- twixt us. Whosoever wishes to enter into treaty and covenant with Mohammed can do so, and whosoever wishes to enter into treaty and covenant with the Koraish can do so. But if a Koraishite comes without permission of his guardian (Wali) to Mohammed, he shall be delivered up; but if, on the other hand, one of Mohammed's people comes to the Koraish he shall not be delivered up. This year Mohammed with his companions must withdraw from us,? but next year he may come amongst us and remain for three days, yet without other weapons than those of a traveller, the swords remaining in their sheaths."~~

~~The first result of the treaty was that the Khozd'a de- clared for alliance with Mohammed; while, on the other hand, the Bekr b. Kindna joined themselves to the Koraish.~~

~~The treaty.~~

~~To compensate his followers for the apparent resultless- War with~~

~~ness of this expedition, Mohammed immediately after their return led them out against the rich Jews of Khaibar (northwards from Medina), whither the Banu Nadir had migrated, and from which place they had unceasingly stirred up opposition against the Prophet. Hitherto he had contented himself with putting out of the way, by means of assassination, some of their leading men who seemed to him to be particularly dangerous, such as Abu Réfit and Yosair b. Razim,* but now he resorted to whole- sale measures. In Moharram, a.H. 7 (May 628), he made his appearance before Khaibar with a powerful army ; in the plunder only those who had taken part in the expedi- tion of Hodaibiya were to share, but many others besides accompanied them. The Jews, although aware of the hostility of Mohammed's intentions, were nevertheless taken completely by surprise when one morning they saw him and his troops encamp before their strongholds. One of their leaders had given them the excellent advice not to shut themselves up by families in their quarters, but to construct a common camp in the fields, otherwise they were likely to share the fate of their~~

~~coreligionists in Medina. But they replied that their strongholds were of a different sort, perched on impregnable summits, and they remained shut up within them. They had neither discipline nor order, courage nor devotion. As they were wanting in community of feeling, so also were they lacking in leaders. Their best man, Sal4m b. Mishkam, lay on a sick-bed , his place was by no means supplied by Kinana b. b. Abi 'l-Hokafk. When they suddenly became aware that they had been completely abandoned by their Arab allies, the Ghatafan, their heart utterly failed them. When besieged in any of their citadels, they hardly ever waited~~

~~8 The "us" is remarkable, and sounds as if the treaty had been~~

~~dictated by the Meccans. 4 Vakidi, pp. 170, 239.~~

~~Khaibar.~~

~~Ruin of the Moslems; treachery, which had something to do with | divers of his missionaries who were sent to teach them the Jews. the surrender, was well-nigh superfluous. From Al-Natat the faith.2 We can hardly believe that a new spirit now the Jews were driven to Al-Shikk, and at last nothing was | suddenly possessed them. Their change of attitude was left to them but Al-Katiba (with Al-Watih and Soldlim).! | merely due to the imposing effect of the rising might of There they remained shut up and filled with fear, without | Islam. They began to respect the Moslems, who, in spite even risking, as formerly, single combats and skirmishes | of their small numbers, could defy a whole world, because before their citadels. After some time they asked for | they were of one mind, and did not ask what the world peace, and obtained it on the footing that, they retained | thought. They saw that, in the great conflict between. their lives, wives and children, and one garment each, but | Mecca and Medina, in which as actors or as spectators gave up all their property, the penalty of concealing any- | they had all participated, the victory inclined more and thing being death. Kinana b. b. Abf 'l-Hokaik was cruelly | more to the side of Medina, that force could accomplish tortured, and at last put to death because he had buried | nothing against faith. The prestige of Mecca was shaken the renowned jewels of his family ; thus at the same time | by the War of the Fosse, and was not restored by the treaty his handsome wife Safiya bint Hoyay was left free for | of Hodaibiya, in which the Koraish waved Mohammed off Mohammed. with the open~~

~~hand, and at the same time permitted him His marriage with "the daughter of the king" wound | to return next year. Islam had "stretched out its neck" up the prosperous campaign. Saffya felt no repulsion—had consolidated itself into indestructible existence— towards the man who had caused the death of her father | it now fought for victory. There was, moreover, another Hoyay, and of her husband Kindna; she gracefully accom- | argument in favour of the new religion, to which the Arabs modated herself to the situation. More worthy was the | were very sensible—the rich booty, to wit, which the demeanour of another Jewess, Zainab, who made the | Moslems acquired by their continual forays. There is no attempt to poison the executioner of her people, and | question that the material success of Islam was the chief atoned for this offence by her death. The attempt was | force that attracted new adherents. unsuccessful, but Mohammed believed that even in his The treaty of Hodaibiya gave a breathing space to the Results last illness he could trace the effects of the poison. two combatants, and of this the prophet reaped the whole of the Simultaneously with Khaibar, Fadak also fell into his | advantage. The truce, which lasted for almost two years, =i hands, and shortly afterwards Wadi 'l-Kord4, where also | brought to the Meccans an almost unbroken series of Mecca. there were settlements of Jews. The plunder was very | humiliations and losses. Contrary to all expectation, the considerable. So far as it consisted of movables, it was | provision made in their favour, by which Mohammed gathered together into a heap, and put up to auction ; the | bound himself to send back such of their sons as deserted proceeds were then divided. Mohammed insisted very | to him before their majority, turned to their hurt, so that strictly that no one should be permitted to plunder for | they had to ask Mohammed to have it changed.? Still his own hand. The property in land, palm plantations, | more serious for them was the desertion of three eminent vegetable gardens, were allowed for the time being to | men, Khalid b. al-Walid, 'Amr b. al-"As, and 'Othman b. remain at a rent in the hands of the Jews; half of the | Talha, whom the Prophet received with open arms. Next produce had to be paid to the new owners. The lion's | year they looked on with shame and concealed indignation share of the spoil fell to the lot of God, z.e. of the Prophet | when the Prophet, availing himself of his stipulated right, —a fifth of the movables, of the real estate a larger pro- | entered the city with 2000 men, and performed the sacred portion. He consequently had at his command consider- | ceremonies ('Omrat al-Kadé,~~

~~March 629). Still they were able material resources, and he well knew how to employ | afraid to break with him again, and did not even venture to them, not only for the enrichment of his family, but also | rid themselves of his spies, the Khoza‘a, who lived in their for gaining over to his side such individuals as were | midst. “ When they put one foot forward they draw the more accessible to payment than to principles. other back; they are convinced that Mohammed will The peace of Hodaibiya, with the subsequent conquest | win ”—such was the impression the Koraish made on the of Khaibar, closes the first period of Mohammed’s life at | Bedouins, who have a very keen instinct in matters of Medina ; strictly speaking, indeed, it merely confirmed the | this sort. They had lost confidence in themselves ; they status which in point of fact the War of the Fosse had | knew that the fight was not fought out, but they dared already given him. If at first it seemed as if Mohammed | not seek to bring it to a decision. had shamefully given way, it soon became apparent, never- Against their will the decision came. The Banu Bekr theless, that the advantage lay with him. “No victory of | fell upon Mohammed’s friends, the Khozd‘a, and_were Islam,” Abtbekr was wont to say, “has more importance | supported by some of their Koraishite allies. The Khoza- than the treaty of Hodaibiya; men are always for hurry- ing things on, but God lets them ripen.” ‘Previously | 2 gee vahidi, pp. 153-157 (Bir Ma’tma and al-Raji’), andthe general there had subsisted a wall of partition between the | view of these feuds, ébid. p. 29 sqq. Moslems and the rest of men; they never spoke to each 3 Abu Basir had fied to Mohammed to Medina; the Meccans de- other ; wherever they met, they began to fight. Sub- — = eer He was given se i cl his Enetonae “7° °. remonstrances, to e two messengers sent to letc im. on ·— oe, cn oe iu So ae i road he fell on one of them and slew him with his own sword; the (1 los eR: [alee toined dine SBiche. + : fe hastened back to Medina in horror, Abu Basir feuewed, ‘en g joined 1t; in the twenty-two | thinking Mohammed had now done enough to satisfy the Meccans.~~

~~558~~

~~to be stormed, but after one or two sorties evacuated it and withdrew to another, where the same story was re- peated. Thus citadel after citadel fell into the hands of~~

~~*months during which the truce subsisted, the number of conversions was greater than throughout the whole of the previous period ; the faith diffused itself in all directions among the Arabs."*~~

~~*As a religion Islam did not attract the Arabs; they had*~~

~~*1 Such were the names of the three separate quarters of Khaibar, each one made up of a complex of houses and citadels.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*[MOHAMMED.*~~

~~*no inclination to pray, read the Koran, and give alms. Of this they had given sufficient evidence by their per- ennial feuds with Mohammed, and by the murder of*~~

~~*Only, however, when the messenger refused the charge of so dangerous a prisoner, did Mohammed permit the latter to go off where he pleased, refusing to allow him to stay with the Moslems. Accordingly Abu Basir made for the coast-road of the Syrian caravans, and became the leader of other Moslem fugitives from Mecca, who quickly gathered round him. They intercepted all caravans, divided the prey, and slew the men. Abt Basir's robberies at length induced the Meccans to ask Mohammed by letter to allow him to join his community, and as _put an end to the mischief— Vakidi, p. 261; Ibn Hisham, p. 7 sqq.*~~

~~*The war is renewed.*~~

~~*MOHAMMED. |*~~

~~*ites complained to the Prophet, who eagerly seized the pretext for war. In vain did the Meccans send Abu Sofy4n to Medina to renew the truce; they could not move the Prophet from his purpose. In Ramadan, a.u. 8 (January 630), he moved against Mecca with an army of 10,000 men. With the Emigrants and the Defenders were mustered the Aslam, Ghifdr, Mozaina, Johaina, and Ashja'; the Solaim and the Khoza'a joined them on the way.*~~

~~*‘The Bedouins were drawn by the hope of booty ; the Fazarite ‘Oyaina was sorely vexed that he had left his*~~

~~*-Ghatafan at home, not knowing what was in view, for*~~

~~*Mohammed at first kept the aim of his expedition a secret. Some of the Meccan nobles must, however, have known it; Makhrama b. Naufal, for example, and the Prophet’s uncle, ‘Abbas, did not await the capture of their city, but deserted to the enemy while he was still distant. Abu Sofy4n, in particular, must have been in the secret; it appears that at Medina he received the promise that the holy city should be spared if it yielded pacifically, and that he pledged himself to do his best to play into the hands of the Prophet.1 But before the populace it was necessary to keep up the appearance of a sudden surprise, an inevitable submission to an unforeseen display of force. The same comedy was repeated afterwards at Taif; the headmen treated with the Prophet without consulting the Thakafites, and then contrived that the result of their policy should appear to be forced by the course of events. The Moslems were on the border of the holy land before the Meccans suspected their approach ; then suddenly one night 10,000 fires were seen rising to heaven to the north- west of the holy city. In well-feigned surprise Abu Sofydén*~~

~~*Conquest hastened to the hostile camp; he returned with the news*~~

~~*of Mecca.*~~

~~*that the Moslems were at the gates, that an improvised resistance could effect nothing against their force ; the only wise course was a surrender— Mohammed had promised security to those who remained in their houses or threw away their weapons. The terrified Meccans had hardly any other course open to them than to follow this advice. And now the Moslems entered the city from several sides at once, meeting only at one point with an easily quelled resistance. Mohammed insisted that there should be no violence ; he pledged the captains to avoid all bloodshed. Ten persons only were put to the ban, and of these one half were subsequently pardoned. HIe took all pains to preserve the sanctity of Mecca unimpaired, confirmed the rights and privileges therewith connected, and made it plain that the old cultus should not be less flourishing under Islam. The ceremonies were*~~

retained, save only that he abolished all idols, both the domestic gods found in every house and the images in and round the Ka'ba. But every sanctuary outside of Mecca was destroyed, except such as had a part in the celebration of the Feast, and so stood in connexion with the Ka'ba itself. Thus the Meccan worship gained a new and unique importance. Mohammed's reform did for Mecca what Josiah's did for Jerusalem?

The last step towards that identification of the Ka'ba with Islam, which made it the religious centre of the Moslem world, was not taken till the following year, when the famous Renunciation (Bard'a) of sur. ix. forbade the heathen to share in the Feast, which was henceforth to be a strictly Moslem ordinance, and at the same time abro- gated the peace of the holy months. A year later (Dht'l- Hijja, A.w. 10, March 632) he himself celebrated the Feast for the first time in the orthodox fashion, introducing certain modifications on. the traditional practice and

*1 The tradition indeed is silent, but Muir (iv. 120) is justified in drawing this inference from the course of events. * Snouck-Hurgronje, Het Mekkaansche Feest, Leyden, 1880.*

reducing certain varieties of use to uniform rule. In all this he professed to re-establish the true ancient use, purged of heretical deviations from the example of Abraham. At the same time he remodelled the Calendar, forbidding the occasional interpolation of a month as an arbitrary and human invention, and establishing the true lunar year of twelve lunations.

We return to the capture of Mecca. The submission of the Koraish was followed by that of their nomad brethren and allies. But the neighbouring Hawazin, to whom belonged also the Thakafite inhabitants of Taif, assembled for battle with the Moslems. They camped in Autds between Taif and Mecca. Mohammed advanced against them, and battle was joined in the valley of Honain. The Moslems were broken by the first charge of the foe; for a moment the Prophet himself was in danger, till the Khazraj rallied round him, checked the onset of the Hawazin, and at length turned them to

flight. A vast booty rewarded the victors ; for the Hawazin had brought all their herds and non-combatants with them and placed them in the rear, that they might feel what they were fighting for.® Mohammed caused the prey to be conveyed to the glen of Ji'rana, outside the north-west border of the Haram, a little way off the great valley that descends from Taif; he him- self pressed on to Taif itself. Here, however, he failed in his object ; in a dream he saw a cock peck a hole in a bowl of cream that was set before him, so that the con- tents ran out. After fourteen days he gave up the siege and marched to Ji'rdna to deal with the booty. He had deferred this task in the hope that the Hawazin would be tempted to embrace Islam in order to recover their families and cattle. But as they still sent no ambassadors, he had to yield to the pressure of the Bedouins and divide the spoil. When it was too late, the messengers of the Hawazin appeared to announce their conversion; they had now to give up their herds, and content themselves that their wives and children were restored to them, through the mediation of the Prophet with their new masters. The Bedouins received compensation for what they gave up; the Emigrants and Defenders gave up their captives freely. Altogether the men of Medina fared worst in the distribution of booty, though they had borne the brunt of the conflict ; those who fared best were the nobles of Mecca, who had no share in the fight, but whom Mohammed desired to conciliate by gifts (sur. ix. 60).

The fall of Mecca reacted powerfully on the future development of Islam. Again the saying came true: victa victores cepit ; the victory of the Moslems over the Koraish shaped itself into a domination of the Koraish over the Moslems. For this the Prophet himself was to blame. In making Mecca the Jerusalem of Islam, he was ostensibly moved by religious motives; but in reality Mohammed's religion had nothing to do with the heathenish usages at the Ka'ba and the Great Feast. To represent Abraham as the founder of the ritual was merely a pious fraud. What Mohammed actually sought, was to recommend Islam to Arabic prejudices by incorporating this fragment of heathenism, and at the same time he was influenced by his local patriotism. Henceforth these local feelings became quite the mainspring of his conduct ; his attitude to the Koraish was determined entirely by the spirit of clannishness. Hence the extraordinary value he set on the conciliation of their chiefs; one gains the impression that he cared more for this than for the con- version of all the rest of the world. He left to them all that they

~~already had ; he gave them in addition whatever they asked, if only they would be his good friends. Abt Sofy4n was a great man already, but Mohammed hastened~~

~~3 Among them were relatives of the Prophet's foster-mother, Halima.~~

~~War with the Ha- wazin.~~

~~Aggran- dizement of the~~

~~Koraish.~~

~~The Khari- jites.~~

~~Conver- sion of Arabia,~~

~~560~~

~~to raise his power by giving him rule over a broad tract southward from Mecca. He used every means to make their conversion easy to the Koraish, and to convince them that they were losing little and gaining much, They had the sense to understand this and act accordingly; they were soon the best of Moslems, and that for the best practical reasons.~~

~~The men of Medina, as was natural, felt themselves slighted in a special degree by this petting of the Koraish. They had done all and sacrificed all for the Prophet; were others now to reap the fruit of their labours? Had they by years of struggle made Mohammed Lord of Mecca, only that they might surrender in favour of Mecca the place they had hitherto held? Did he indeed esteem kin- ship so much more than tried service to the Faith? The Defenders had good ground for discontent, but Mohammed appeased them easily enough. He reminded them of their fellowship together in the great days of the past, of all that he had done for them, and they for him; he promised that their town should still be his residence, and so the political capital of Islam (Madinat al-Islim). Then all the men wept till their beards were wet, and said: "'O apostle of God, we are content with our share and lot!"~~

~~*The Defenders murmured at the preference shown to the Koraish, because they desired preference for them- selves. But already there were movements of an opposi- tion from principle which deemed it a falling away from Islam to give any heed to kinship instead of to faith. It is related that the beginnings of the Khérijites (Dissenters) go back to the distribution of booty in W. Ji'rdna.' Certain it is that a worldly bias, which had indeed been introduced into Islam long before, then first became visible to every eye. Certain it is that Mohammed then sowed the seeds of the deep dissensions that rent his following after his death—of the struggle between religious democracy, such as Islam demanded, and the national aristocracy, which alone was really fit to hold rule in Arabia. It was Mohammed who placed the helm in the hands of the Koraish and opened the way to sovereignty for Abu Sofydén and his house, the Omayyads. If the Khérijite Dhu 'l-khowaisira spoke out against the Prophet himself at Jitrana, the feeling that moved him was quite sound.*~~

~~*The last years of the Prophet were like the ingathering of a harvest laboriously reaped. The conquest of Mecca, so great was the impression it produced, was called "the Conquest," as if it contained in itself all others. From every side, in the next two years, the sheikhs streamed to Medina to open negotiations for the acceptance of Islam by their tribes; if they did not come spontaneously, Mohammed sent to them. A change of heart on the part of the Arabs had no more share in these than in former conversions. It cost them no struggle to cast away their idols ; the images and the sanctuaries fell quietly enough. Heathenism was a dead thing; superstitions could be transplanted into Islam. The unique sovereignty of Allah was clearly evidenced in the fact that no might could withstand his. It is safe to affirm that the acces- sions to Islam were due to political more than religious impulses, and meant adherence to the state of Medina rather than to monotheism. The power to which that city had grown, acted as a force of attraction upon the Arabs ; and their subjection was not the mere effect of fear, but expressed also that sense of the necessity for peace and order, which had led to the founding of states in the two previous centuries. Thus it becomes intelligible that from every side, by a sort of natural necessity, the*~~

~~*1 Vakidi, p. 877. Tbn Hisham, p. 884.*~~

~~*MOHA™"WEDANGS HS*~~

~~*[MOHAMMED*~~,

~~*masses of Arabian society were drawn towards the centre of attraction at Medina, and that the Prophet received the homage of distant tribes which he could not have influenced directly. The Christian tribes were not behind the rest, they were Arabs first and Christians after. Only the Christians of Najran remained true to their faith ; so did the Jews in all parts, and the Magians in the province of Bahrain.? The last named, as idolaters, ought not in strictness to have been tolerated in the Moslem state ; but practical considerations broke through theory, and the men of system had to accept the incon- sistency with the best grace they could.*~~

~~*The signs of submission were—(1) the performance of the five daily prayers, or at least the proclamation of the times of prayer by the Muedhdhin ; (2) the payment of the alms-tax ;3 (3) the acceptance of the Moslem Law, which was introduced by qualified delegates from Medina. Otherwise things remained as they were ; Mohammed was careful not to meddle with tribal affairs, and strengthened the existing aristocracies wherever he could do so. The change of faith was effected by treaty; the populace was not consulted, and the whole negotiations were directed by the Elders and Chiefs. For, in fact, purely political interests were involved.*~~

~~*A single case, about which our information is exception- Téif.*~~

~~*ally full, will suffice in illustration, The Hawazin had joined Mohammed after the battle of Honain, and now preached the duty of holy warfare against their kinsmen, the Thakafites of Taif, who were still heathens. They made raids on the cattle pastured without the city, and made captives of those who ventured abroad. The Thaka- fites were exposed, alone and helpless, to the advances of Islam ; they dared not stir a foot beyond their walls. The heads of the city found the situation untenable, and resolved to do homage to the Prophet for the sake of peace. Ten ambassadors proceeded to Medina, and nego- tiations began as to the conditions of the conversion of the Thakif. The envoys desired that fornication, usury, and wine-drinking should be permitted to them ; this Moham- med refused (sur. xvii, 234; ii. 278; v. 92); and they consented to yield the point when it was*~~

~~*explained that, indispensable as these three practices might seem, the other Moslems had learned to give them up. There was more difficulty about the Rabba or Goddess of Taif (al- Lat). The ambassadors begged that, as a concession to the foolish multitude, they might retain her for three years. When they found Mohammed resolute, they came down successively to two years, one year, and a month. Even this was refused ; Mohammed's sole concession was that they should not be obliged to destroy their goddess with their own hands. The deputation returned, and had nearly reached Taif, when 'Abdyalil counselled the others to make as if they had broken off the negotiation, and not to con- fess the conclusion of the pact till the Thakif showed no stomach for battle with Mohammed. With faces covered, like men who have no good news, they rode into the town, and first paid the customary visit to the temple of the Rabba. Then they told their tribesmen the conditions of treaty, declared them intolerable, and reviled Mohammed as a hard and arrogant man. 'And so," they concluded, "prepare for war, lay in provisions for two years ; Mohammed will surely not maintain the siege longer ; dig a fosse to protect your stronghold, and lose no time." The Thakafites at first agreed to this; but in a few days they lost courage, and bade the negotiators return and accept the conditions. These then confessed the truth,*~~

~~*2 Non-Moslem subjects were made to pay an arbitrary capitation or income tax.*~~

~~*3 The expenditure of this tax was regulated in the case of some tribes by special treaty.*~~

~~*MOHAMMED.* |~~

~~*and added that Mohammed's emissaries would presently appear to destroy the Rabba. The destruction took place accordingly, to the terror of the women and children, but without a single man raising his hand.*~~

~~*The pilgrimage undertaken by Mohammed in the year 10 (March 632) was like a very triumph. All Arabia, apart from the vassals of Persia and Greece, lay at his feet. The greatest success of his life had been effected by sheer moral force without a stroke of the sword. But Arabia*~~

~~religion was the soul of the community. The founding of a religion and the forming of a state were not connected in so merely external a way as is usually supposed ; on the contrary, the one was the natural and necessary consequence of the other. This must certainly be conceded, that, if we are to make any distinctions at all, Islam was far less rich in religious meaning than in social forces. The Koran is Mohammed's weakest performance; the 'weight of his historical importance lies in his work at Medina and not~~

~~no longer sufficed him ; he had wider aims. In his last | in that at Mecca. And it is a fact that the politician in War years he began to extend the holy war against the Greeks. | him outgrew the prophet more and more, and that in many with the Even on his return from Hodaibiya, he began to direct | cases where he assigned spiritual motives he merely did so Greeks. envoys to several foreign potentates, with letters demand- | to give a fair appearance to acts that emanated from secular ing their adhesion to Islam. One of these envoys was | regards. In this respect it appears to us particularly seized and beheaded in the Belk& (the ancient Moab). | objectionable that he gave out as revelations of God and Hence sprang the first campaign against the Greeks, 2.e. | placed in the Koran all sorts of regulations and orders of the Arabs who were subject to the Greek empire. The | the day, which proceeded simply from his own deliberations army directed against them was, however, entirely defeated | or even in part were suggested to him by advisers from at Mu'ta (Autumn 629); Khalid succeeded with difficulty | outside. At the same time the element of self-deception in rallying and leading back the broken remnant of the | is not excluded even here; he took for a message sent host. Next summer the Nabatzans who visited the mar- | down from heaven everything which in his cataleptic fits ket of Medina spread a rumour that the Emperor Heraclius | passed through his mind, however close might be its agree- was collecting a vast force to attack the Moslems; and | ment with his own previously cherished thoughts. It was Mohammed set forth to meet him at the head of 30,000 | pardonable that he went on with the idea after le had men, but got no farther than Tabuk, on the southern | once grasped it, that he blew upon~~

~~*the coals when the flame borders of ancient Edom, when the rumour was found to | threatened to die out. It is less easy to free him from the be false. The expedition, however, was not altogether | reproach of perfidy and cruel vindictiveness, The surprise fruitless, as it led to the submission of several small Jewish | of Nakhla in the month Rajab (ordered by him, though he and Christian communities in the north of the Peninsula. | afterwards repudiated it), the numerous assassinations Mohammed equipped a new expedition against the Greeks | which he instigated, the execution of the 600 Jews at the on his return from his "farewell pilgrimage," and it was | close of the War of the Fosse, burden the Prophet heavily, Death just ready to start when he died, on Monday, 8th June | and sufficiently explain the widespread antipathy in which a 632. he is held. Yet even in this respect it is well not to forget*~~

~~*In forming an estimate of one who has exercised so unexampled an influence on the history of the world, we shall do well to bear in mind the hint of Gibbon, that "some reverence is surely due to the fame of heroes and the religion of nations." The grounds on which Mohammed may be condemned are partly found in his private life. Although on the whole, even after he had become ruler of all Arabia, he maintained the original povertyand simplicity of his establishment, never set store by money and estate, eating and drinking and soft clothing, strictly continued to fast and watch and pray after his first fashion, and that, too, plainly out of a heartfelt need and without any osten- tation, he nevertheless in one point at least used his supreme authority as prophet to make provision for the flesh. He*~~

~~*the instance, already cited, of Charlemagne. It is precisely the man of vast aims who finds it most difficult to keep the beaten path.*~~

~~*After the death of Mohammed arose the question who was to be his "representative" (Khalifa, Caliph). The choice lay with the community of Medina; so much was understood ; but whom were they to choose? The natives of Medina believed themselves to be now once more masters in their own house, and wished to promote one of themselves. But the Emigrants asserted their opposing claims, and with success, having brought into the town a considerable number of outside Moslems,! so as to terrorize the men*~~

~~*of Medina, who besides were still divided into two parties. The Emigrants' leading spirit was 'Omar; he did not,*~~

~~*claimed to be personally exempt from those restrictions in regard to the female sex which lay upon all other Moslems, and, as is well known, he made very extensive application of this fundamental principle. This fact is quite rightly urged against him as a reproach ; even pious Moslems have*~~

~~*however, cause homage to be paid to himself but to Abubekr Abubekr, the friend and father-in-law of the Prophet. Calpe. The affair would not have gone on so smoothly, had not Revolt the opportune defection of the Arabians put a stop to the of the inward schism which threatened. Islam suddenly found 4'™>**~~

~~*been scandalised by it. At the same time, it is unnecessary to judge him on this account more harshly than we do Charlemagne, the most Christian king of the Franks; in any case we must not apply the standards of the present day to the circumstances of old Arabia. Of much weightier and indeed of crushing character is the accusation, that he did not really believe himself to be a prophet, but merely of set purpose played the part of one. For the first years of his activity indeed this charge is not now any longer maintained ; it is universally granted that at that period his enthusiasm was genuine and real. But in Medina, we are told, he used his prophetic character simply as a pretext for the establishment of his power. It seems to the present writer that into this opinion there enter modern notions as to the separation between religion and the civil magistracy, which ought to be carefully kept out of sight. By any other instrumentality than that of a prophet it would hardly have been possible to found the state of Medina ;*~~

~~*itself once more limited to the community of Medina ; only Mecca and Taif remained true. The Bedouins were willing enough to pray, indeed, but less willing to pay taxes ; their defection, as might have been expected, was a political movement.? None the less was it a revolt from Islam, for here the political society and the religious are identical. A peculiar compliment to Mohammed was involved in the fact that the leaders of the rebellion in the various districts did not pose as princes and kings, but as prophets ; in this the secret of Islam's success appeared to lie.*~~

~~*Abtbekr proved himself quite equal to the perilous situation. In the first place, he allowed the expedition against the Greeks, already arranged by Mohammed, quietly to set out, limiting himself for the time to the defence of Medina. On. the return of the army he proceeded to*~~

~~*1 Compare Muir, iv. 263.*~~

~~*2 See Noldeke, Betérige zur Kenntniss der (1864), p. 89 sq.*~~

~~*Poesie der alten Araber*~~

~~*xXVI.—71*~~

~~*Defeat of the rebels.*~~

~~*Khalia in Syria.*~~

~~*Battle of Ka- distya,*~~

~~*'Amr in Egypt.*~~

~~*562*~~

~~*attack the rebels. The holy spirit of Islam kept the men of Medina together, and inflamed them to a death-defying zeal for the faith ; while, on the other side, the Arabs as a whole had no other bond of union and no better source of inspiration than universal egoism. As was to be expected, they were worsted; eleven small flying columns of the Moslems, sent out in various directions, sufficed to quell the revolt. Those who submitted were forthwith received back into favour ; those who persevered in rebellion were punished with death. The majority accordingly converted, the obstinate were extirpated. In Yamama only was there a severe struggle; the Banu Hanifa under their prophet Mosailima fought bravely, but here also Islam triumphed.*~~

~~*The internal consolidation of Islam in Arabia was, strange to say, brought about by its diffusion abroad, The holy war against the border countries which Mohammed had already inaugurated, was the best means for making the new religion popular among the Arabs ; for, in spread- ing by means of*~~

~~*the sword the worship of Alléh, oppor- tunity was at the same time afforded for gaining rich booty. This vast movement was organized by Islam, but the masses were induced to join it by quite other than religious motives. Nor was this by any means the first occasion on which the Arabian caldron had overflowed ; once and again in former times emigrant swarms of Bedouins had settled on the borders of the wilderness. This had last happened in consequence of the events which destroyed the prosperity of the old Sabzan king- dom. At that time the small Arabian kingdoms of Ghassan and Hira had arisen in the western and eastern borderlands of cultivation ; these now presented to Moslem conquest its nearest and natural goal. But inasmuch as Hira was subject to the Persians, and Eastern Palestine to the Greeks, the annexation of the Arabians involved the extension of the war beyond the limits of Arabia to a struggle with the two great powers.*~~

~~*After the subjugation of Middle and North-Eastern Arabia, Khalid b. al-Walfd proceeded by order of the Caliph to the conquest of the districts on the lower Euphrates. Thence he was summoned to Syria, where hostilities had also broken out. Damascus fell late in the summer of 635, and on 20th August 636 the great decisive battle on the Hieromax (Yarmuk) was fought, which caused the Emperor Heraclius finally to abandon Syria.1_ Left to themselves, the Christians henceforward defended them- selves only in isolated cases in the fortified cities ; for the most part they witnessed the disappearance of the Byzan- tine power without regret. Meanwhile the war was also carried on against the Persians in 'Irék, unsuccessfully at first, until the tide turned at the battle of Kadisiya (end of 637). In consequence of the defeat which they here sustained, the Persians were forced to abandon the western portion of their empire and limit themselves to Eran proper. 'The Moslems made themselves masters of Ctesi- phon (Madain), the residence of the Sasanides on the Tigris, and conquered in the immediately following years the country of the two rivers. In 639 the armies of Syria and 'Irak were face to face in Mesopotamia. Ina short time they had taken from the Aryans all the prin- cipal old Semitic lands,—Palestine, Syria, Mesopotamia, Assyria, and Babylonia. To these was soon added Egypt, which 'Amr b. al-'As, aided by the national and confessional antipathies of the Copts towards the Greeks, overran with little trouble in 641.2. This completed the circle of the lands bordering on the wilderness of Arabia; within*~~

~~1 De Goeje, Afémoires d' Hist. et de Géog. Orient., No. 3. 1864; Noldeke, D. Af. Z., 1875, p. 76 sqq.; Beladhori, 137.~~

~~2 See H. Zotenberg in Journ. as., 1879 (xiii. 291-386). Gott. Gel. Anz. 1881, p. 587 sqq.~~

~~Leyden,~~

~~Comp.~~

~~MOHAMMEDANIS®M™~~

~~[THE FIRST~~

~~these limits annexation was practicable and natural, a repetition indeed of what had often previously occurred. The kingdoms of Ghass4n and Hira, advanced posts hitherto, now became the headquarters of the Arabs; the new empire had its centres on the one hand at Damascus, on the other hand at Cufa and Basra, the two newly- founded cities in the region of old Babylonia. The capital of Islam continued indeed for a while to be Medina, but soon the Hijéz and the whole of Arabia proper lay quite on the outskirt of affairs.~~

~~It is striking to notice how easily the native populations of the conquered districts, exclusively or prevailingly Christian, adapted themselves to the new rule. Their nationality had been broken long ago, but intrinsically it was more closely allied to the Arabian than to the Greek or Persian. Their religious sympathy with the West was seriously impaired by dogmatic controversies ;° from Islam they might at any rate hope for toleration, even though their views were not in accordance with the theology of the Emperor of the day. The lapse of the masses from Christendom to Islam, however, which took place during the first century after the conquest, is only to be accounted for by the fact that in reality they had no inward relation to the gospel at all, They changed their creed in order to acquire the rights and privileges of Moslem citizens. In no case were they compelled to do so; on the contrary, the Omayyad Caliphs saw with dis- pleasure the diminishing proceeds of the poll-tax derived from their Christian subjects.~~

~~*It would have been a great advantage for the solidity of the Arabian empire if it had confined itself within the limits of those old Semitic lands, with perhaps the addition of Egypt.*~~

~~*Moslems had subjugated the whole of the Sasanid empire. The most important event in the protracted war which led to the conquest of Eran, was the battle of Nehawend in 641 ;3 the most obstinate resistance was offered by Persis proper, and especially by the capital, Istakhr (Persepolis). In the end, all the numerous and somewhat autonomous provinces of the Sasanid empire fell, one after the other, into the hands of the Moslems, and the young Shahanshah, Yezdegerd, was compelled to retire to the farthest corner of his realm, where he came to a miserable end. But in more than one case the work of conquest had to be done over again : it was long before the Eranians learned to accept the situation. Unlike the Christians of Western Asia, they had a vigorous feeling of national pride, based upon glorious memories and especially upon a church having a connexion of the closest kind with the state. Internal disturbances of a religious and political character and external disasters had long ago shattered the empire of the Sasanids indeed, but the Eranians had not yet lost their patriotism. They were fighting, in fact, against the despised and hated Arabs, in defence of their holiest pos- sessions, their nationality, and their faith, They were subjugated, but their subjection was only outward. The commonwealth of Islam never succeeded in assimilating them as the Syrian Christians were assimilated. Even when in process of time they did accept the religion of the Prophet, they leavened it thoroughly with their own peculiar leaven, and, especially, deprived it of the practical political and national character which it had assumed after the Flight to Medina. To the Arabian state they were always a thorn in the flesh, it was they who helped most largely to break up its internal order, and it was from them also that it at last received its outward deathblow.*~~

~~*3 The accounts differ; see Beladhori, 305. The chronology of the*~~

~~*conquests, as is well known, is in many points uncertain. + Beladh., 315 sg.; Tabari, i. 1068.*~~

~~*But the Persians were not so ready as the Conquest Greeks to give up the contest ; they did not rest until the of Bran.*~~

~~*'Omar Caliph.*~~

~~*CALIPHS.*~~ |

~~*The fall of the Omayyads was their work, and with the Omayyads fell the Arabian empire. The course of Islam's political history during its first' centuries is denoted by the removal of the capital from Damascus to Cufa, and from Cufa to Baghdad, the latter occupying, approximately, the site of the ancient Ctesiphon.*~~

~~*But we must return to the period of Abtbekr, He died after a short reign, on 22d August 634, and as matter of course was succeeded by 'Omar. To 'Omar's ten years' Caliphate belong for the most part the great conquests. He hiniself did not take the field, but remained in Medina ; he never, however, suffered the reins to slip from his grasp, so powerful was the influence of his personality and the Moslem community of feeling. His political insight is shown by the circumstance that he endeavoured to limit the indefinite extension of Moslem conquest, and to main-*~~

~~*'tain and strengthen the national Arabian character of the*~~

~~*'Othman Caliph.*~~

~~*commonwealth of Islam ;! also by his making it his fore- most task to promote law and order in its internal affairs. The saying with which he began his reign will never grow antiquated: " By God, he that is weakest among you shall be in my sight the strongest, until I have vindicated for him his rights; but him that is strongest will I treat as the weakest, until he complies with the laws." It would be impossible to give a better general definition of the function of the State. After the administration of justice he directed his organizing activity, as the circumstances demanded, chiefly towards financial questions—the incidence of taxation in the conquered territories,? and the applica- tion of the vast resources which poured into the treasury at Medina. It must not be brought against him as a personal reproach, that in dealing with these he acted on the principle that the Moslems were the chartered plun- derers of all the rest of the world. But he had to atone by his death for the fault of his system ; a workman at Cufa,*~~

driven to desperation by absurd fiscal oppressions, stabbed him in the mosque at Medina. He died in the beginning of November 644.

Before his death 'Omar had nominated six of the leading Emigrants who should choose the Caliph from among them- selves—Othman, 'Ali, Zobair, Talha, Sa'd b. Abf Wakkas, and 'Abd al-Rahmaan b.'Auf. Thelast named declined to be candidate, and decided the election in favour of 'Othman b. 'Affan. Under this weak sovereign the government of Islam fell entirely into the hands of the Koraish nobility. We have already seen that Mohammed himself prepared the way for this transference ; Abubekr and 'Omar likewise helped it; the Emigrants were unanimous among themselves in thinking that the precedence and leadership belonged to them as of right. Thanks to the energy of Omar, they were successful in appropriating to themselves the succes- sion to the Prophet. They indeed rested the claims they put forward in the undeniable priority of their services to the faith, but they also appealed to their blood relationship with the Prophet, as a legitimation of their right to the inheritance ; and the ties of blood connected them with the Koraish in general. In point of fact they felt a greater solidarity with these than, for example, with the natives of Medina; nature had not been expelled by faith. The supremacy of the Emigrants naturally fur- nished the means of transition to the supremacy of the

1 He songht to make the whole nation a great host of God; the Arabs were to be soldiers and nothing else. They were forbidden to acquire landed estates in the conquered countries ; all land was either made state property or was restored to the old owners subject to a perpetual tribute which provided pay on a splendid scale for the army.

2 Noldeke, Tabari, 246. To 'Omar also is due the establishment of the Era of the Flight.

3 Even in the list of the slain at the battle of Honain the Emigrants are enumerated along with the Meccans and Koraish, and distinguished from the men of Medina,

~~*Meccan aristocracy. ‘Othman did all in his power to press forward this development of affairs. He belonged to the foremost family of Mecca, the Omayyads, and that he should favour his relations and the Koraish as a whole, In every possible way, seemed to him a matter of course. Every position of influence and emolument was assigned to them ; they themselves boastingly called the important province of ‘Irak the garden of Koraish. In truth, the entire empire had become that garden. Nor was it unreasonable that from the secularization of Islam the chief advantage should be reaped by those who best knew the world. Such were beyond all doubt the patricians of Mecca, and after them those of T4if, people like Khalid b. al-Walid, ‘Amr b. al-‘As, ‘Abdallah b, Abt Sarh, Moghira b. Sho‘ba, and, above all, old Abi Sofydn with his son Mo‘awiya, the governor of Syria.*~~

~~*Against the rising tide of worldliness an opposition, however, now began to appear. It was led by what may be called the spiritual noblesse of Islam, which, as dis- tinguished from the hereditary nobility of Mecca, might also be designated as the nobility of merit, consisting of the ‘ Defenders,” and especially of the Emigrants who had lent themselves to the elevation of the Koraish, but by no means with the intention of allowing themselves to be thereby effaced. The opposition was headed by ‘Ali, Zobair, ‘Talha, both as leading men among the Emigrants and as disappointed candidates for the Caliphate, who therefore were jealous of “Othman. Their motives were purely selfish; not God’s cause but their own, not religion but power and preferment, were what they souglit.* Their party was a mixed one. To it belonged the men of real piety, who saw with displeasure the promotion to the first places in the commonwealth of the great lords who had actually done nothing for Islam, and had joined themselves to it only at the twelfth hour, while those who had borne the burden and heat of the day were passed by. But the majority were merely a band of men without views, whose aim was not a change of system but of persons, that they themselves might fatten in the vacant places. Everywhere in the provinces there was agitation against the Caliph and his governors, except in Syria, where ‘“Othman’s cousin, Mo‘Awiya b. Abi Sofydn, carried on a wise and strong administration. The movement was most energetic in ‘Lrak and in Egypt. Its ultimate aim was the deposition of ‘Othman in favour of ‘Alf, whose own services as well as his close relationship to the Prophet seemed to give him*~~

~~*the best claim to the Caliphate. Even then there were enthusiasts who held him to be a sort of Messiah.*~~

~~*The malcontents sought to gain their end by force. In bands they came from the provinces to Medina to concuss 'Othman into concession of their demands. From the Indus and Oxus to the Atlantic the world was trembling before the armies of the Caliph, but in Medina he had no troops at hand. He propitiated the mutineers by concessions, but as soon as they had gone, he let matters resume their old course. Thus things went on from worse to worse. In the following year (656) the leaders of the rebels came once more from Egypt and 'Irak to Medina with a more numerous following ; and the Caliph again tried his former plan of making promises which he did not intend to keep. But the rebels caught him ina flagrant breach of his word, and now demanded his abdi- cation, besieging him in his own house, where he was 4 Tt was the same opposition of the spiritual to the secular nobility that afterwards showed itself in the revolt of the sacred cities against the Omayyads. The movement triumphed with the elevation of the 'Abbasids to the throne. But, that the spiritual nobility was fighting not for principle but for personal advantage was as apparent in 'Alf's hostilities against Zobair and Talha as in that of the 'Abbasids against the followers of "Ali.*~~

~~*Move- ment against 'Othman.*~~

~~*'Ali Caliph.*~~

~~*Mo'd- wiya.*~~

~~*564*~~

~~*defended by a few faithful subjects. As he would not yield, they at last took the building by storm and put him to death, an old man of eighty. His death in the act of maintaining his rights was of the greatest service to his house and of corresponding disadvantage to the enemy.*~~

~~*Controversy now arose among the leaders of the oppo- sition as to the inheritance. The mass of the mutineers summoned 'Alf to the Caliphate, and compelled even Talha and Zobair to do him homage. But soon these two, along with 'Aisha, the mother of the faithful, who had an old grudge against*~~

~~*'Ali, succeeded in making their escape to 'Trak, where at Basra they raised the standard of rebellion. 'Alt in point of fact had no real right to the succession, and moreover was actuated not by piety but by ambition and the desire of power, so that men of penetration, even although they condemned 'Othmin's method of govern- ment, yet refused to recognize his successor. The new Caliph, however, found means of disposing of their opposi- tion, and at the battle of the Camel, fought at Basra in November 656, Talha and Zobair were slain, and 'Aisha was taken prisoner.*~~

~~*But even so 'Alf had not secured peace. With the murder of 'Othman the dynastic principle gained the twofold advantage of a legitimate cry—that of vengeance for the blood of the gray-haired Caliph, and of a distin- guished champion, the Syrian governor Mo'awiya. Mo'dwiya was not inclined to recognize 'Ali, and the latter did not venture to depose him. 'To have done so would have been useless, for Mo'Awiya's position in Syria was impregnable. The kernel of his subjects consisted of genuine Arabs, not only recent immigrants along with Islam, but also old settlers who, through contact with the Roman empire and the Christian church, had taken on a measure of civilization. Through the Ghassdnids these latter had become habituated to monarchical government and loyal obedience, and for a long time much better order had prevailed amongst them than elsewhere in Arabia. Syria was the proper soil for the rise of an Arabian kingdom, and Mo'éwiya was just the man to make use of the situation. He exhibited 'Othman's blood-stained garment in the mosque at Damascus, and incited his Syrians to vengeance.*~~

~~*'Als position in Cufa was much less advantageous. The population of 'Irak was already mixed up with Persian elements; it fluctuated greatly, and was largely composed of fresh immigrants. Islam had its head- quarters here; Cufa and Basra were the home of the pious and of the adventurer, the centres of religious and political movement. This movement it was that had raised 'Ali to the Caliphate, but yet it did not really take any personal interest in him. Religion proved for him a much less trustworthy and more dangerous support than did the conservative and secular feeling of Syria for the Omayyads. Mo'dwiya could either act or refrain from acting as he chose, secure in either case of the obedience of his subjects. 'Alf, on the other hand, was unable to convert enthusiasm for the principle inscribed on*~~

~~_ his banner into enthusiasm for his person. It was necessary that he should accommodate himself to the wishes of his supporters, and at the same time it was impossible, for these wishes were inconsistent. They compelled him suddenly to break off the battle of Sifffn, which he was on the point of gaining over Mo'awiya, because the Syrians fastened copies of the Koran to their lances to denote that not the sword but the word of God should decide the contest (end of July 657). But in yielding to the will of the majority he excited the displeasure of the minority, the genuine zealots, who in Mo'Awiya were opposing the enemy of Islam, and who regarded 'AIt(''s entering into negotiations with him as a denial of the~~

~~faith. When the negotiations failed and war was resumed, the Kharijites refused to follow 'Alf's army, and he had to turn his arms in the first instance against them. He succeeded in disposing of them without diffi- culty, but in his success he lost the soul of his following. For they were the true champions of the theocratic principle ; through their elimination it became clear that the struggle had in no sense anything to do with the cause of God. 'Al's defeat was a foregone conclusion, once religious enthusiasm had failed him; the secular resources at the disposal of his adversaries were far superior. Fortunately for him he was murdered (end of January 661), thereby posthumously attaining au importance in the eyes of a large part of the Mohammedan world (Shi'a) which he had never possessed during his life. His son Hasan made peace with Mo'awiya.~~

~~The Kharijites are the most interesting feature of the The~~

~~then phase of Islam. In the name of religion they raised their protest against allowing the whole great spiritual movement to issue in a secular and political result, in the establishment within the conquered territories of an Arabian kingdom, a kingdom which diametrically contra- dicted the theocratic ideal. Islam was then on the point of making its peace with the world, not without a certain apostasy from its original principles, for which Mohammed himself had paved the way. Life was no more dominated by religion, but came to terms with it and parted com- pany. This development~~

~~was favoured by the govern- ment, which desired before all things to have peace. Orthodoxy arose, and thereby religion was tamed and divested of every dangerous element ; strictly speaking, it became a compromise, according to which the letter of the precept was correctly followed, in order that, in everything besides, a man might obey his own inclinations. The con- ditions under which any one might make sure of heaven were—on the one hand, the performance of " good works," a.e. of such opera operanda as had a special churchly merit assigned to them; on the other hand, faith in the absolute sovereignty of God even over the wills of men. About morals God showed little concern—the usual view of orthodox shamanism. This was by no means the original standpoint of Islam, although the transition to it was made at an early stage, and by the Prophet himself. Originally Islam—.e. religious resignation—was only the complement of pious effort; a man set himself about even the hardest and apparently purposeless tasks, because he believed the issue to lie entirely in the hand of God. But now all this was reversed; a man acted according to his humour, because his destiny had nothing to do with his inherent qualities, but was dependent entirely on Allah's caprice. The Kharijites protested not merely against the dynastic principle and the rule of the Omay- yads, but also against orthodoxy ; they disputed the doc- trine of predestination and the proposition that a great sinner could yet be a good Moslem, because they did not understand how to divorce religion from practice. To some degree they call to mind the Montanists, but their opposition was much more energetic in its expression.~~

~~Sources.—For the history of Mohammed these are—(1) the Sources.~~

~~Koran ; (2) the theologico-historical tradition or Hadith. The latter is chronologically arranged in the biographies, of which those of Ibn Ishak and of Wakidi are the oldest and most import- ant. Ibn Ishak's work in its complete form is now to be found only in Ibn Hishdm's revision (ed. Wiistenfeld), bunt large and numerous fragments of the original are given by Tabari (ed. De Jong). Of Wakidi the Kitdb al-Maghdzi, t.e. the history of Mohammed in Medina, is still extant (abridged German translation by Wellhausen, 1882); his collections for the earlier period are known to us through the work of Ibn Sa'd his secretary (Tabakdt,~~

~~*1 On the further development of Islam compare Houtsma, De Strid over het Dogma, Leyden, 1875.*~~

~~*The Omay- yads,*~~

~~*CALIPHATE. |*~~

~~*unedited). The Hadith is set forth more systematically, according to subjects, in the great collections of tradition by Malik b. Anas, Bokhari, Moslim, etc. (Bulak editions). A subsidiary authority is the humanistic tradition of the Odaba, with which the poetry may be reckoned. The principal collections of this class are the Kitab al-Aghéni (Bulak edition) and the Kémil (ed. Wright). For the period after Mohammed the most important work is the Chronicle of Tabari (Leyden edition); the history of the conquest is treated briefly after the best authorities by Beladhori (ed. De Goeje, 1866).*~~

~~*Literatwre.—The genuine tradition of the Arabs with reference to their prophet was first introduced into Europe by the French, beginning with Gagnier and ending with the valuable work of Caussin de Perceval. Weil and, after him, Noldeke especially, have*~~

~~*PART IIL—THE EASTERN*~~

~~*Sect, I.—THE OMAYYADS.*~~

~~*1. In commencing the history of the Omayyad dynasty we must first recur to the causes which brought about the triumph of this family, and which led its chief to substitute Damascus for Medina as the seat of the Caliphate; an event which led to profound changes in the Moslem empire, and exercised a considerable influence on its development. In the same way, at a later date, the transfer of the Cali- phate from Damascus to Baghd4d marked the accession of a new family to the supreme power, and gave Islam a new direction.*~~

~~*In the time of Mohammed, the Arabs were divided into an infinite number of tribes, some settled, others nomadic, which were constantly at war with each other. The Prophet united them into one body, but he could not entirely*~~

~~eradicate the hatred which had existed for ages between tribe and tribe. Thus the people of Mecca and those of Medina hated each other, because the former were a branch of the race of Ma'add, the great ancestor of the tribes of the North ;! while the latter belonged to the Yemenite race, or that of the South. The conquest of Mecca by Mohammed and his allies of Medina only exas- perated this hatred, and the nobles of the Koraish swore to take revenge on the Yemenites, as soon as they should be able to do so. One of the most violent opponents of the Prophet had been, as we have seen, the father of that very Mo'Awiya who founded the Omayyad dynasty, Abu Sofyan, grandson of Omayya, the leader of the Meccans in the battle at Ohod ; and it is related that his wife Hind, having found Hamza, Mohammed's uncle, among the dead, cut open his body, and tore out and devoured his liver. We have also seen how Abt Sofydén ultimately made his submission and embraced Islam, but only under compulsion. His son Mo'Awiya became, it is true, one of Mohammed's secretaries ; but we know that his faith was never very strong, and that he always made his religion subordinate to the interests of his family. Even in his youth, he had conceived the project of recovering the supreme power for his own race, and it has been related above how the inner conflicts of Islam under the Caliphates of 'Othman and 'Alf carried him forwards towards this goal.~~

~~Mo'Awiya might, no doubt, have marched to the help of 'Othman with an army of Syrians; but the preserva- tion of the Caliph, his relative, would not have served the purposes of his burning ambition, and we may say with- out hesitation that it was with secret joy that the prefect of Damascus heard of the fatal result of the plot against 'Othman, The Syrians were entirely devoted to Mo- 'awiya. Polite, amiable, and generous, he had gained the goodwill of all the Arabs of Syria, for whom Islam had remained a dead letter, and who, continuing Bedouins at heart, shared the feelings of their chief against the new~~

~~1 The Ma'addites are also often called Modarites and Kaisites, after their ancestors Modar and Kais.~~

~~*the merit of having shown how to use the Koran in conjunction with the Arab tradition asa main source. Of modern biographies the most important are those of Muir and Sprenger ; research has not yet got beyond them, although there is room for this. For the history of the Caliphs, the standard book is still the well-known work of Weil, although since it was published considerable addi- tions have been made to our knowledge of the sources, thanks specially to the labours of Dozy, De Goeje, and other Dutchmen. Hitherto the main object has been to bring together the materials in this department of research, and a comprehensive treatment of the entire subject has not as yet been accomplished ; still reference may be made in this connection to Dozy (Histoire de l'Islamisme), and A. von Kremer (Gesch. der herrschenden Ideen d. Islam, and Kulturgeschichte d. Orients unter den Khalifen). (J. WE.)*~~

~~*CALIPHATE.*~~

~~*aristocracy of Medina. Consequently, when 'Ali, 'Oth- man's successor, summoned Mo'dwiya for the last time to acknowledge him, and when Mo'dwiya, assembling his partisans in the mosque of Damascus, asked their advice, they replied that it was his part to command, and theirs to obey and to act. The enthusiasm of the Syrians was great; and Mo'dwiya having ordered a levy en masse, within three days every able-bodied man had joined his standard. Syria alone supplied Mo'dwiya with more troops than all the rest of the provinces put together furnished to 'Ali, who is said to have addressed his soldiers with these bitter words: "I would gladly exchange ten of you for one of Mo'Awiya's soldiers." Then he added—in allusion to the savage action of Hind, Mo'Awiya's mother, on the field of battle at Ohod—'" By God! he will gain the victory, this son of the liver-eater ! "*~~

~~*'Al's gloomy anticipations were fulfilled ; but it was by stratagem that Mo'Awiya gained his victory. The battle of Siffin, the abortive negotiations that followed, and the withdrawal of the Khérijites, have been already spoken of. The negotiations ended in the conference of Dumat al-*~~

~~*Jandal, a small place situated between Syria and 'Irdk,*~~

~~about seven days' journey from Damascus and thirteen from Medina. Here in Ramadan, a.H. 37 (a.D. 657-658), Abu Musé4 and 'Amr b. al-'Ags (the famous conqueror of Egypt) appeared as arbitrators for 'Alf and Mo'Awiya respectively, and the cunning of the latter induced Abu Musé to pronounce both pretendants deprived of whatever rights either might have to the Caliphate, and to say that it now rested with the Moslems to make a new choice. 'Amr, who was only waiting for this declaration, rose in his turn, and said to the Arabs who were crowding round the platform: "O people, ye hear what Abu Mus4 says. He himself renounces the claims of his master. I also agree to~~

~~the deprivation of 'Alf, but I proclaim my master Mo'awiya Mo'd- Abt Mus cried out against this treachery, but Viv !.~~

~~Caliph." no one would listen to him, and he fled for refuge to Mecca, where he ultimately recognised the claims of Mo'awiya, even in 'Ali's lifetime. This event marks the commencement of the Omayyad dynasty. 'Amr went in triumph to Damascus, where the Syrians took the oath of fidelity to Mo'Awiya.~~

~~In 'Trék, on the other hand, with the exception of the Kharijites, all the people remained faithful to the cause of 'Ali, who, mounting the pulpit at Cufa, summoned his army to the field, and fixed their rendezvous at Nokhaila, a small place not far from the city. The Kharijites had taken refuge at Nahrowdn, and 'Alf found it necessary to attack them there, before marching against the Syrians. At his arrival most of the rebels dispersed, except from fifteen to eighteen hundred fanatics, who remained at ~ their post and allowed themselves to be slaughtered to the last man. Thus rid of the Kharijites, "Alf meant to direct his march towards Syria, but his soldiers refused to move, and declared their intention of first taking some~~

~~Assassi- the mosque.~~

~~nation of alone fell.~~

~~1.~~

~~*rest at Cufa. Compelled to inaction, 'Alf returned to Cufa, while Mo'Awiya gave his attention to securing the ossession of the provinces. At the beginning of a.H. 38 (A.D. 658-659), Egypt was lost to 'Alf. 'Amr b. al-"As was sent thither by Mo'Awiya, and marched without delay, at the head of five thousand men, against 'Alt's vicegerent, Mohammed, son of the late Caliph, Abubekr. The brave general Ashtar, whom 'Ali sent to the help of Mohammed, was poisoned at Kolzom by the prefect of that place, acting under secret orders from Mo'éwiya, and 'Alt's troops retraced their steps. Meanwhile, in Egypt itself, a partisan of the Omayyads, Mo'Awiya b. Hodaij, who was at the head of six thousand fighting men, had declared against Mohammed, and driven him from Fostat. On his arrival in Egypt, 'Amr effected a junction with Mo'awiya b. Hodaij, and the unfortunate Mohammed, beaten by his adversaries, fell into the hands of Ibn Hodaij, who put him to death.*~~

~~*While Egypt was thus being lost to 'All, commotions were excited at Basra itself by a partisan of the Omayyads. These were, however, put down by the governor of that city, ZiyAd. This man was Mo'dwiya's own brother, but illegitimate, and not having been acknowledged by his father, Abu Sofyan, he had revenged himself by embracing the party of 'Alf. Ziydd was renowned among the Arabs for his eloquence, his resolution, and his courage. At a later period, Mo'awiya gained him over to his cause by publicly acknowledging him as his brother. At the time we speak of, he was a faithful servant of 'Alf, and as soon as the revolt of Basra was put down, he marched into Farsistan, where he maintained peace and kept the inhabitants in their allegiance. Meanwhile, however, the other provinces were falling one after the other under the power of Mo'awiya. His generals penetrated into the heart of Chaldea; and even in Arabia, where 'Alt's generals had at first gained some advantages, Bosr? b. Artah obtained possession of Medina a.u. 40 (A.D. 660-661), and compelled its inhabitants to acknowledge Mo'Awiya. After this he marched upon Mecca, expelled Kotham, 'Ali's governor, and there also exacted an oath of obedience to his master. Following up his successes, Bosr did not hesitate to press southward, and soon gained possession of Yemen. 'AL{ was now no longer master of anything but 'Irak and a part of Persia, and even of these provinces the former was menaced by the Syrians, as we have seen. Taking advantage of some partial successes gained by his forces in Arabia and in*~~

~~*Syria, ‘Ali made overtures for peace, but they were rejected. Mo‘dwiya believed himself too sure of ultimate success to be willing to share the empire.*~~

~~*It was then that three men of the Kharijites conceived the project of delivering Islam from those who were desolating it with fire and blood. ‘Abd al-Rahman b. Moljam, Boraik b. ‘Abdallah, and “Amr b. Bekr agreed that on the very same day the first should kill ‘Alf at Cufa, the second Mo‘Awiya at Damascus, and the third “Amr b. al-‘As at Fostat. They fixed on Friday the 15thof Ramadan, a.H. 40, when they were sure of finding their victims at The plot was put in execution, but ‘Alf On the appointed day, Boraik made his way into the mosque of Damascus, and stabbed Mo‘Awiya in the back with his sword. Before he could repeat the blow he was seized, and Mo‘éwiya recovered from his wound. As for ‘Amr, he had been kept at home by illness; his place at the mosque was taken by Kharija, the chief of his guards; and it was he who fell beneath the blows of ‘Amr b. Bekr. ‘Abd al-Rahman was more*~~

~~*1 Not Bishr, as some historians call him.*~~

~~*Bosr gave his name to a fortress near Kairawan.*~~

~~*Beladhori calls him Bosr b, Abi Artah.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*[oMAYYADS.*~~

~~*successful. As ‘Ali was entering the mosque, he dealt him a blow on the head with his sword, and stretched him on the ground mortally wounded. Two days later “Alf died, and the assassin was put to death with horrible torments.*~~

~~*‘Alf left two sons, Hasan and Hosain. The people of ‘Trak chose Hasan Caliph. But he, not having his father’s energy, recoiled before the prospect of a war with Mo‘Awiya. Though he had an army of forty thousand men at his disposal, he preferred to renounce the Caliphate. Besides, one of his generals, Kais b. Sa‘d, who had urged him to continue the struggle, and*~~

~~had himself tried the chance of arms, had just been beaten by the Syrians. In consequence of this defeat, a mutiny had broken out in Hasan's army. He abdicated, and only demanded, in exchange for the power which he resigned, pardon for his relatives and a yearly pension of five millions of dirhems,? together with the revenues of the Persian city of Darab- gird. A treaty to this effect was concluded between Mo'Awiya and Hasan, in spite of the opposition of Hosain, who exhorted his brother to continue the struggle; and Mo'éwiya entered Cufa at the head of his army, accord- ing to some authorities towards the end of the month of Rabi L, a.n. 41 (July, a.pv. 661), according to others a month or two later. Hasan retired to Medina, where he died eight or nine years afterwards, poisoned, it is said, by order of the Caliph.~~

~~Mo'Awiya, who now remained sole master of the Moslem empire, was, however, not yet universally acknowledged. Five thousand Kharijites made head against him in the province of Ahwaz, the ancient Susiana, and a revolt broke out at Basra. Ziydd himself, Mo'dwiya's brother, refused to take the oath to him, and fortified himself at Istakhr, the ancient Persepolis. The revolt at Basra was put down by Bosr b. Artah, and Moghira b. Sho'ba, whom Mo'awiya had named prefect of Cufa, accepted the task of bringing about a reconciliation with Ziyad. Ziyad refused to take the oath of allegiance only because he feared being called to account for certain sums of money which were missing from the public treasury of Persia. Mo'dwiya promised to shut his eyes to these irregularities ; and Ziyéd came to Damascus and was very well received by the Caliph, who hastened to adopt the bastard as his brother, to the great scandal of all pious Moslems.? After acknowledging Ziyad, who thus became Ziy4d son of Abu Sofyan, Mo'awiya entrusted him with the government of Basra and of Persia, and afterwards with that of Cufa, when Moghira b. Sho'ba died. Ziydd governed 'Irak with the greatest vigour, to the full satisfaction of Mo'Awiya, who further placed the whole of Arabia under his authority; but in that same year, A.H. 53 (A.D. 672-673), Ziyad died. It seems that Mo'Awiya had thought of him as his successor in the Caliphate. After Ziyad's death, the Caliph wished to secure the throne for his own son Yazid. This was a new violation of the customary rights of Islam ; for Mohammed, whose actions served as a rule, had not in his lifetime appointed any one as his successor. Mo'dwiya, who was a statesman above everything, and who held religion~~

~~very cheap when it interfered with his objects, did not hesitate to create a precedent. He met, however, at first with vigorous opposition, and it was not till some years later that he ventured to have his intentions publicly announced from the pulpit. In Syria the people took the oath of allegiance to Yazid; in Arabia and 'Irak public opinion declared itself against the step which Mo'dwiya had taken.~~

- ~~The dirhem is a silver coin worth about a franc.~~

~~3 At a later period, the 'Abbasid Caliph Mahdi thought it right to have the names of Ziy4d and his descendants struck off the rolls of the Koraish ; but, after his death, the persons concerned gained over the chief of the rolls-office, and got their names replaced on the lists. See Tabari, iii. 479.~~

~~Mo'a- wiya sole Caliph.~~

~~OMAYYADS. |~~

~~The Caliph was not moved; threats prevailed over the obstinacy of the people of "Irak, and Mo'Awiya repaired to Arabia in person, at the head of an army, to intimidate the inhabitants of Mecca and Medina. As may be supposed, the principal fomenters of the resistance in Arabia were the sons of the first Caliphs, "Abd al-Rahman the son of Abtbekr, 'Abdallah the son of "Omar, and Hosain the son of 'Ali; for, by submitting, they would have renounced all hope of being themselves chosen by the people. Another 'Abdallah, son of that Zobair who had been among the six candidates nominated at the death of 'Omar for the choice of the Moslems, was also one of the warmest opponents of the pretensions of Mo'Awiya. All the efforts of the Caliph to win over these personages to his side having proved vain, he ordered them to be brought into the mosque at Mecca, each between two soldiers ; then, having mounted the pulpit, he called on the bystanders to take the oath of allegiance to his son; adding that 'Abd al-Rahman, Hosain, and the two 'Abdallahs would raise no objection. They, in their terror, did not utter a word, and the assembly took the oath. Then Mo'Awiya, without con- cerning himself further about the malcontents, returned to Damascus.~~

~~*While thus occupied at home, Mo‘dwiya did not neglect foreign affairs. ‘Amr b. al-‘As, governor of Egypt, died A.H. 43 (A.D. 663-664), and was followed by several prefects in succession, under one of whom the general Mo‘Awiya b. Hodaij undertook several expeditions into the province of Africa. In the year 50 (a.p. 670) he advanced as far as Camunia, now Stsa, near which city he laid the foundations of the celebrated Kairawd4n, and even went on to Sabaratha, a town situated near the seashore, and opposite to the island of C’rina. The emperor, Constantine IV., had sent thither thirty thousand Greeks, who were beaten and compelled to re-embark in haste. Mo‘awiyab. Hodaij returned to Egypt after his victory, and the Caliph now considered the position of the Moslems in Africa so strong, that he separated that province from Egypt, and appointed as governor of Africa “Okba b. Nafi, who per- manently established Kairawan, in a plain situated at a little distance from the first encampment of Mo‘Awiya b. Hodaij. According to some historians, the new city was completed a.H. 55 (A.D. 674-675).*~~

~~*In the East the successes of the Moslems were still more brilliant. Ziydd, brother of Mo‘Awiya, as soon as he was appointed governor of ‘Irdk and Persia, sent an army into Khords4n. It advanced as far as the Oxus, crossed that river, and returned loaded with booty taken from the wandering Turkish tribes of Transoxiana. Bokhdrd was occupied by a son of Ziydd, and Sa‘d, son of the Caliph ‘Othman, whom Mo‘Awiya had made governor of Khordsdn, marched against Samarkand, a.H. 56 (a.p. 675-676). Other generals penetrated as far as the Indus, and over- ran and conquered Multén, Kabulistén, Mokrdn, and Sijistan.*~~

~~*In the North the Moslems were not less fortunate in their attacks on the Byzantine empire. Mo‘Awiya, while still only governor of Syria, had gained possession of Armenia, and had sent a fleet against Cyprus, which, in conjunction with that of the governor of Egypt, had effected the conquest of that island. Encouraged by the result of this expedition, he gave the order for new incur- sions in the Mediterranean. HIs fleet of twelve hundred vessels invested the islands of Cos, Crete, and Rhodes. The famous Colossus of Rhodes was broken to pieces, and it is said that the bronze of which it was made was bought by a Jew of Emesa, and formed a load for nine hundred and eighty camels. The Arabs even dared to threaten*~~

~~Constantinople, which owed its safety only to the Greek fire. Yazid, the son of Mo'dwiya, took part in these~~

~~expeditions, but with no great ardour, and in the year 58 (A.D. 677-678) Mo'Awiya concluded a thirty years' peace with Constantine IV. Two years later, he died at Damas- cus, after a reign of nearly twenty years. He had been governor of Syria for the same length of time. Before his death, he sent for his son Yazid, and having pointed out how he had smoothed down all difficulties for him, he advised him to spare no effort to preserve the attachment of the Syrians. He urged him also to keep a close watch on the actions of Hosain b. 'Ali, and of the other pre- tenders who had refused to take the oath of allegiance to him ; but he added that, should they rebel, Yazid ought to treat them with clemency, and not to forget their illus- trious origin. By failing to act upon this wise advice, Yazid rendered irreconcilable that formidable schism which, even at the present day, still divides the Moslem world, and which, at all periods, has been a source of calamity to Islam.~~

~~2. Yazid had not his father's genius. fond of pleasure, and careless about religion, he bestowed more care on turning a pretty couplet than on consoli- dating the strength of his empire. During his short reign he committed three actions for which Moslems never pardoned his memory: the murder of Hosain, son of 'Ali and grandson of the Prophet; the pillage of Medina; and the taking of the Ka'ba, the venerated temple of Mecca ; crimes which were not redeemed in the eyes of the people by a few fortunate expeditions on the part of his generals.~~

~~Immediately on ascending the throne, in the month Rajab a.u. 60 (April, a.p. 680), Yazid sent a circular to all his prefects, with an official announcement of his father's death, and an order to administer the oath of allegiance to their respective subjects. In particular, he charged the new prefect whom he appointed to Medina, his own cousin Walid b. 'Otba, to strike off the heads of Hosain son of 'Ali, 'Abd al-Rahman son of Abtbekr, 'Abdall4h son of 'Omar, and 'Abdalldh son of Zobair, if they again refused~~

~~*to acknowledge him. Terrified at such a commission, Walid did not dare to act with rigour against Hosain and 'Abdallah b. Zobair, both of whom refused to take the oath, but allowed them to escape to Mecca. Yazid immediately deprived him of his office, and appointed in his place "Amr b, Sa'id, already governor of Mecca. Once in the Holy City, 'Abdallih b. Zobair thought himself in such perfect safety that he began to intrigue with the Meccans to have himself proclaimed Caliph in Arabia. At Cufa the news of the flight of Hosain produced great agitation among the partisans of the family of 'Ali, who were numerous there, and they sent several addresses to the grandson of the Prophet, inviting him to take refuge with them, and promising to have him proclaimed Caliph in 'Irak. Hosain, who knew the fickleness of the people of 'Irak, hesitated to yield to their entreaties; but Ibn Zobair, who was desirous to get rid at all costs of so formidable a rival, persuaded him that he ought to go and put himself at the head of the people of 'Irak, and enter on an open struggle with Yazid. Hosain began by sending his cousin Moslim b. 'Akil to Cufa, and from him he learned that many of the inhabitants of that city appeared really decided to support him. The prefect of Cufa, No'man b. Bashir, though apprised of these proceedings, did not choose to make them known to Yazid, as he was reluctant to act with severity against a descend- ant of the Prophet. Information, however, reached the Caliph, who deprived No'man of his office, and ordered*~~

~~*1 Salam b. Ziyad invaded Sogdiana, and brought back immense booty to Merv. In Africa 'Okba b. Nafi' invaded the whole coast of the Mediterranean as far as Morocco. On his return, however, he fell into an ambuscade laid by the Berbers, who killed him and took Kairawan.*~~

~~*Passionately Yazid I.*~~

~~*Kerbela.*~~

~~*568*~~

~~*of Basra, to give up his post there to his brother "Othman,*~~

~~*and to repair in person to Cufa, in order to watch the*~~

~~*partisans of ‘Ali in that city. ‘Obaid Allah obeyed,*~~

~~*entered Cufa, and, ascending the pulpit the very day after his arrival, publicly announced his firm intention of putting Moslim b. ‘Akil was*~~

~~*to death any one who should rebel. given up by a traitor and executed. Meanwhile Hosain,*~~

~~*on receiving his cousin’s despatches, had already set out from Mecca with all his family, and had reached Kadistya*~~

~~*(a place situated only fifteen parasangs! from Cufa, and noted for the defeat sustained there by the Persians during the Caliphate of ‘Omar), news of these vexatious occurrences.*~~

~~*dissuaded him from doing so, crying out for revenge, and representing to him that doubtless he had only to show himself under the walls of Cufa to be received with enthusiasm by its inhabitants. sued his journey towards Cufa. But ‘Obaid Allah, who was watching all his movements, sent four thousand horsemen, devoted to the Omayyad cause, to meet him, with orders to bring Hosain before him either alive or dead. The commander of these horsemen was ‘Omar b. Sa‘d,? to whom ‘Obaid Allah had promised the govern- ment of Media as a reward, if his expedition should succeed. The Omayyads met Hosain in the plain of Kerbela, opposite to Cufa, before he had reached the Euphrates, and surrounded him. ‘Omar b. Sa‘d himself sought out Hosain and summoned him to surrender. Hosain declared himself ready to renounce his pretensions, provided he were allowed to return to Mecca with his followers, or were even sent to Damascus. When ‘Obaid All4h was informed of this proposal, he simply repeated his former order to bring Hosain to Cufa, dead or alive ; and, fearing the defection of ‘Omar b. Sa‘d, he sent out another troop of horsemen under the orders of a certain Shimr. On the 9th of Moharram in the year 61 (9th October A.D. 680), Shimr reached Kerbeld, and summoned Hosain afresh to surrender at discretion. Hosain pre- ferred to die sword in hand, and on the following day, after a desperate struggle, he was cut down with all his followers. His head was cut off and carried to Cufa, and then sent to Damascus. His body was not buried till the following day. Only the women of his family were spared, and one of his sons ; these were taken by Yazid’s order to Medina,*~~

where the sight of their mourning and the tale of their sufferings caused a profound sensation. The horror and grief of the partisans of "All's family were great. Hence the names of Yazid, 'Obaid Allah, and Shimr, have been held accursed ever since by the Shfites. They observe the 10th of Moharram as a day of public mourning. Among the Persians, stages are erected in public places on that day, and plays are acted, represent- ing the misfortunes of the family of 'Ali* The Omayyads themselves were loud in their reprobation of this impious massacre, and all Moslems, without distinction of party, considered it a monstrous act.*

At Mecca the news was received with a degree of indignation of which 'Abdallah b. Zobair took advantage to assume the title of Caliph. As early as a.H. 60, the new prefect of Medina had tried to secure his person. He had sent against him a force of two thousand men, at whose

1 The parasang is nearly equivalent to an English mile.

2 Son of the famous Sa'd b. Abi Wakkas, conqueror of Persia under 'Omar, and founder of Cufa.

3 Shi'ites comes from Shi'a, a word which in Arabic signifies "sec- tary." It is the name given to the partisans of the family of 'Ali, who acknowledge no legitimate Caliphate outside of that family. Shi'ism is the religion of Persia.

4 See Chodzko, Thédtre persan. Paris, 1878.

'Obaid All4h, son of the famous Ziydd, and then governor

when he received the He wished to retrace his steps immediately, but the friends of Moslim

Hosain accordingly pur-.

gates of the city is called the Gate of Harra.

~~*head was placed a brother of the pseudo-Caliph himself, called 'Amr, who, having been accused by 'Abdallah of maintaining a guilty intercourse with one of his wives, had become his bitter enemy. 'Abdallah collected an army, and placed it under the orders of 'Abdallah b. Safwan, who completely defeated the Omayyad troops. The brother of the pseudo-Caliph was taken and put to death. At the news of this defeat, Yazid swore that Tbn Zobair should never appear before him but as a prisoner in chains. He dismissed the new prefect of Medina, and reinstated Walid b. 'Otba, who, in the year 61, went to Mecca to try to seize 'Abdallah b. Zobair. The latter, in derision, wrote to Yazid: "Walid is a mad- man, who will ruin everything by his folly; send in his place another governor to repair the wrongs he has done." Yazid thought that 'Abdall4h meant these words as a step towards reconciliation ; hastened to deprive Walid of his office ; appointed 'Othman b. Mohammed in his place ; and even sent envoys to Ibn Zobair. He, however, would not listen to them; he thought he could reckon upon the devotion of the people of Mecca, and further hoped that Medina itself would declare against Yazid. This, in fact, took place in the year 63 (A.D. 682-683). The people of Medina, stirred up by a certain 'Abdallah b. Hanzala, who had had a near view of Yazid at the court of Damas- cus, and had been scandalized by the profligacy of his life, revolted, drove the governor and all the Omayyads out of Medina, and proclaimed the dethronement of Yazid. The Caliphate was even offered by sonie to 'Ali, that one of the sons of Hosain who had escaped the massacre of Kerbela ; but 'AH wisely refused it, At the news of this revolt, Yazid first sent an ambassador to Medina. This step proving fruitless, he next collected an army of from ten to twelve thousand Syrians, and entrusted their command to Moslim b. 'Okba, who passed, and with good reason, for a man who would recoil from nothing. This general, though weighed down by age and sickness, marched against Medina, took it, aftera battle known as the day of Harra 5 (26th Dhu '1-Hijja 63, 26th August 683), and gave Capture up the city for three days to massacre and pillage. 'Tor- and pil- rents of blood flowed, and hence Moslim b. 'Okba received a the surname of Mosrif (the Prodigal). On the fourth ad day, Moslim repaired to the mosque, and received the oath of allegiance from all those of the citizens of Medina who had not been able to make their escape. The news reached Mecca a few days later, and fell like a thunder- stroke on Ibn Zobair and his adherents, who prepared for war, expecting from day to day to see Moslim appear before the walls of their*~~

~~*city. He had, in fact, started for Mecca immediately after the conquest of Medina ; but he died on the road, and the command was taken by Hosain b. Nomair. The Omayyad army arrived before Mecca a month after the capture of Medina, and found Ibn Zobair ready to defend it. A number of the citizens of Medina had come to the aid of the Holy City, as well as many Kharijites and Shiites, at the head of whom was a certain Mokhtar b. Abi 'Obaid, who subsequently played a very important part in 'Trak. In spite of the sorties of the Meccans, the Syrian army invested the city. Siege of Hosain b. Nomair had caused balistas to be placed on Mecca. the neighbouring heights; and these, under the manage-*~~

~~*ment of an Abyssinian soldier, hurled against the Ka'ba*~~

~~*enormous stones and vessels full of blazing bitumen, with*~~

~~*such effect that the temple took fire and was consumed.*~~

~~*After a siege of two months, Ibn Zobair was beginning*~~

~~*to despair, when he received, through an Arab of the*~~

~~*desert, news of the death of Yazid. The Caliph had in*~~

~~*fact died on the 15th of Rabi' I. (11th November 683).*~~

~~*5 Harra is the volcanic district outside of Medina. One of the*~~

~~*Ibn Zo-*~~

~~*bair pro-*~~

~~*claimed*~~

~~*Prince of*~~

~~*the Be- lievers.*~~

~~*Mo'dwi- ya II,*~~

~~*Merwan I.*~~

~~*OMAYYADS.*~~ |

~~*Hosain b. Nomair immediately offered the Caliphate to Ibn Zobair, on condition that he should grant a complete amnesty to all those who had taken part in the battle of Harra and in the siege of Mecca. 'Abdallah had the folly to refuse, and Hosain then returned to Damascus.*~~

~~*Thus rid of his enemy, 'Abdallah caused the title of Prince of the True Believers (Amir al-mo'minin) to be conferred on him—a title which 'Omar had already received, and which was afterwards adopted by all the Caliphs. He sent one of his brothers, 'Obaid Allah, to Medina, and chose as governor of Egypt 'Abd al-Rahmaén b. Jahdam, who repaired to that province, and caused the authority of Ibn Zobair to be acknowledged there. At Basra and at Cufa, many of the inhabitants did not hesitate to acknowledge him, and received a Zobairite governor, while the Kharijites and the Shf'ites rose in revolt—the former at Basra under the leadership of Nafi' b. Azrak, the latter at Cufa under that of Solaiman b. Sorad—and expelled the Omayyad governor, 'Obaid Allah b. Ziydd, who took refuge at Damascus. Mesopo- tamia soon followed the example of 'Irak. Even in Syria, the population seemed disposed to forsake the cause of the Omayyads. The Kharijites and Mokhtar b. Abi "Obaid, who had supported Ibn Zobair, now repented of having laboured for the elevation of this pretender, and quitted Mecca. The son of Zobair, remaining thenceforth sole master of Mecca, occupied himself tranquilly in rebuilding the Ka'ba, which he restored on its ancient foundations.*~~

~~*3. It was in the midst of this break-up of his party that, immediately after the death of Yazid, his eldest son, Mo'awiya II., was elected Caliph at Damascus at the age of only seventeen or twenty. He was a young man of weak character, and imbued, it is said, with Shi'ite opinions. He felt himself incapable of ruling, and was contemplating abdication, when he died, after a reign of but forty days, by poison, as some say; of the plague, as others assert. The Caliphate was immediately offered to 'Othman b. 'Otba b. Abi Sofydn, cousin of Mo'Awiya IT. ; for Khalid, the second son of Yazid, was only sixteen years old. "Othman b. 'Otba, however, having made it a condition of his election that he should not be compelled to enter on any*~~

~~*war, or to condemn any one to death, the choice fell at Damascus on Merw4n b. al-Hakam, a descendant of Omayya through his grandfather Abu 'l-'As, but on con- dition that he should marry Maistn, the widow of Yazid, and should appoint Khalid, her son, as his successor.*~~

~~*4, Merwan b. al-Hakam had been secretary to the Caliph 'Othman, and governor of Medina under Mo'Awiya I. Yazid, on his accession to power, had dismissed him and put Walid b. 'Otba in his place; but Merwd4n had continued to live at Medina, and had been driven from it during the revolt of the year 63, and again in the following year, when "Obaid Allah b. Zobair had taken possession of that city in the name of his brother. It might have been thought that Merwdn would cherish a deep hatred of "Abdallah Ibn Zobair ; but he was an old man of sixty- two at the time of his election, and, dreading an unequal struggle, he was on the point of making his submission to the Meccan Caliph. The drooping courage of Merwdén was revived by his son 'Abd al-Melik and by 'Obaid Allah b. Ziyad, and he resolved to try the chances of war.*~~

~~*Dahhak b. Kais, governor of Damascus, had declared himself on the side of Ibn Zobair, and had raised an army, principally from among the tribe of Kais. This tribe had taken offence because Mo'dwiya I. and Yazid had chosen their wives from the Yemenite tribe of Kalb, and, con- tinuing to resent their conduct, now refused to acknowledge Khalid as the heir-presumptive of Merwdn. It was there- fore on the Yemenites that Merwan had to depend for the suppression of Dahhdk's rebellion. The latter had an*~~

~~*army of nearly sixty thousand horsemen, while Merwdn could bring together only thirteen thousand infantry. The two armies met at Marj Rahit, a few miles from Damascus, and, after a series of combats which lasted for twenty days, Merwan's troops gained a complete victory, and Dahhak was among the killed. The Syrian provinces hastened to acknowledge the conqueror, and Merwdn was able to turn his attention to Egypt, which, as will be remembered, had submitted to the Meccan. 'Abd al- 'Aziz, a son of Merwén, had already marched to Aila on the Red Sea, and was preparing to*~~

~~*enter Egypt ; Merwan joined him, and the Zobairite governor of Egypt, beaten by their united forces, was obliged to seek safety in flight. Merwdén made ‘Abd al-‘Aziz governor of the province. At the beginning of the year 65 (a.p. 684-685) Merwan returned in haste to Syria; for, during his absence, a brother of Ibn Zobair, named Mos‘ab, had invaded that province. Merwan triumphed over Mos‘ab; but an army of four thousand men, which he had sent to the Hijaz, and in which was Hajj4j b. Yusuf— then quite a young man, but who afterwards played so important a.part under ‘Abd al-Melik — was cut to pieces. This defeat was redeemed by a victory gained by his generals, ‘Obaid Allah b. Ziyéd and Hosain b. Nomair, at ‘Ain al-Warda over a small army of Shiites led by Solaimdn b. Sorad. But while the battle was being fought in Ramadan 65 (April-May 685), Merwan died ; suffocated, it is said, by his wife Maistin, because he had insulted her son Khalid, and had broken his word by nominating his own son ‘Abd al-Melik as his successor. The accession of ‘Abd al- Melik was attended with no difficulty, as he was acknow- ledged by the whole of Syria and Egypt. The Kaisites naturally rallied round him, because he had not a drop of Yemenite blood in his veins.*~~

~~*5. When ‘Abd al-Melik ascended the throne, there still remained much to be done before the unity of the empire could be re-established. Ibn Zobair was still master of Arabia and of ‘Irak, though in the latter province his authority was very much shaken by the permanent rebel- lion of the Shf‘ites at Cufa, and of the Kharijites at Basra. The Zobairite general Mohallab had, it is true, succeeded in forcing back the Kharijites into Susiana and Persia ; but at Cufa the Shiites, at the instigation of Mokhtar, continued their agitation. Mokhtar, as we have seen, had withdrawn from Mecca after the raising of the siege by Hosain b. Nomair. He returned to Cufa, and there fomented serious disturbances. Many of the inhabitants of that city repented bitterly of having allowed Hosain, the grandson of the Prophet, to be massacred. Amid the general disorder of the Moslem empire, Mokhtar hoped to make his own authority acknowledged in ‘Irak and Mesopotamia. He put himself forward as the avenger of the family of ‘Ali, and pretended to have been commissioned by a son of ‘Ali, Mohammed b. Hanafiya,! who was living at Medina, to give effect to his rights to the Caliphate. Many Shi‘ites believed him, and, detesting their chief Solaimén b. Sorad, joined Mokhtdér. On learning these intrigues, the Zobairite governor threw him*~~

into prison. Soon after the defeat of Solaiman at ‘Ain al-Warda, at the request of Mokhtar’s brother-in-law, who was no other than ‘Abdallah the son of ‘Omar, the governor consented to set him at liberty, on his swearing to make no further attempts against him. As Solaim4n had fallen on the

1 That is to say, the son of the Hanafite woman. The mother of Mohammed was of the tribe of Hanifa, Even before Mokhtar, Mo- hammed had partisans who looked on him as destined to be Caliph. These sectaries received the name of Kaisanites, from a freedman of ‘All, called Kaisdn, who was the most ardent advocate of Mohammed’s pretensions. After Mokhtar had declared in favour of Mohammed, his supporters received the name of Mokhtarites.

field of battle at ‘Ain al-Warda, all the Shi‘ites now acknowledged Mokhtar as their chief. He, however, con- sidering himself bound by his oath, remained inactive until the governor who had imposed it was replaced by ‘Abdallah b. Moti. The new Zobairite governor, suspect- ing with reason that Mokhtar was about to recommence his intrigues, thought it advisable to invite him to his house, with the intention of having him arrested. Mokh- tar called his partisans together, and plotted with them to take Ibn Moti by surprise. As, however, Sa‘d, one of the Shiite chiefs, asked for a delay of a week, for the purpose of collecting troops, Mokhtar was obliged to feign illness in order to evade the governor’s invitation, and took care to surround himself with a numerous body of guards. Meanwhile Sa‘d, who had only demanded this delay in order to ascertain the real wishes of Mohammed b, Hana- fiya, sent off four confidential messengers to Medina, to ask Mohammed whether he had really confided the care of his interests to Mokhtar. Mohammed contented himself with replying vaguely that it was the bounden duty of every good Moslem to take part with the family of the Prophet. These words were interpreted in favour of Mokhtar, and thenceforward all the Shi‘ites followed him blindly as their chief, Mokhtar fixed the middle of the month Rabi L, a.u. 66, for the commencement of*

~~*hostilities. During the night of the 13th to the 14th, the conspira- tors intended to gain possession of the city by a coup de main, but the governor was on his guard, and*~~

~~*Revolt of Mokhtar and his Shiites took the course of leaving Cufa.*~~

~~*Mokhtér 'They numbered sixteen thousand resolute men. All the*~~

~~*at Cufa. o»mies which 'Abdallah b. Moti' sent against them were successively beaten, and Mokhtar soon re-entered Cufa in triumph, compelling the Zobairite governor to flee to Basra. Once master of Cufa, Mokhtar thought himself already in possession of the empire. He sent emissaries to Medina, to Mosul, to Madain, and even into Azerbaijan, with orders to induce the people to take the oath of allegiance to him. He then sent his generals, Yazid b. Anas and Zofar, against the Omayyad army, which had entered Mesopotamia after the battle of 'Ain al-Warda, and these prevented the advance of the Syrians into 'Irak. Another of Mokhtar's generals, Ibrahim b. Malik, inflicted a serious defeat on the Syrians near Mosul, and "Obaid Allah b. Ziyad, who commanded them, fell in the battle. Tbrahim was rewarded by Mokhtar with the government of Mosul. Mokhtar himself next took the title of "lieutenant of the Mahdi") and inserted in the Khotba, on Friday's preaching, a prayer on behalf of Mohammed b. Hanaffya ; which was equivalent to declaring him Caliph. After this, urged on by his adherents, he caused all those who had taken part in the massacre of Hosain, the grandson of the Prophet, like 'Omar b. Sa'd and Shimr, to be sought out and put to death.*~~

~~*While these events were. occurring, the Caliph at Damascus, 'Abd al-Melik, sent an army of observation to the frontiers of Arabia. Mokhtar, having been informed of this, feigned an intention to help Ibn Zobair, and de-spatched a body of three thousand men from Cufa, under the command of a certain Shardhil. His real object was to concentrate forces at Medina, with a view to attacking Ibn Zobair. But the latter penetrated his design, and two thousand Meccans marched by his orders to meet Sharahil, who was defeated.*~~

~~*In the same year (A.H. 66) Mohammed b. Hanafiya had gone to Mecca to perform the ceremonies of the pilgrimage.*~~

~~*1 Mahdi, or "the well-guided," is the name given by the Shi'ites to that member of the family of 'Alf who, according to their belief, is one*~~

~~*day to gain possession of the whole world, and set up the reign of*~~

~~*righteousness in it. In Mokhtar's time, Mohammed b. Hanafiya was looked upon as the Mahdi.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM™M*~~

~~*[OMAYYADs.*~~

~~*Ibn Zobair took advantage of this to seize his person, and confined him in a small house adjoining the well of Zamzam, within the precincts of the Ka'ba. Mohammed succeeded in conveying intelligence of his detention to Mokhtar ; and he, delighted to find his aid implored by the very man whose follower he called himself, swore to effect his rescue. He despatched a thousand chosen horsemen, who managed to conceal their march so well, that they were under the walls of Mecca before the son of Zobair had been able to make the slightest preparations for defence. They made their way into the Holy City; but, being unwilling to draw the sword on that sacred ground, they armed them- selves with sticks, broke in the doors of the house in which Mohammed b. Hanafiya was imprisoned, rescued him, and escorted him out of the city. A son of Mohammed, called 'Al, who had also been thrown into prison, likewise suc- ceeded in escaping, and rejoined his father at some distance from Mecca.*~~

~~*In the following year, Ibn Zobair, who was determined to get rid, at all costs, of so dangerous an adversary as Mokhtar, ordered his brother Mos'ab to effect a junction with Mohallab, the conqueror of the Kharijites, and to march against Cufa. Mos'ab and Mohallab invested that city, and Mokhtar, making a sortie against them, was beaten, taken prisoner, and beheaded. 'Irak thus, for Death of the second time, fell under the rule of Ibn Zobair. Mokhtar. Ibrahim b. MAlik, who held Mosul in the name of Mokhtar, submitted to the conquerors, on condition of retaining his government; but Mos'ab deprived him of his office, and put Mohallab in his place. He himself was appointed governor of 'Irak by his brother, and, having installed himself at Basra, placed Cufa under the orders of his lieutenant*~~

~~*Harith. The year after, the Kharijites of Susiana raised a fresh' insurrection, and invaded 'Irak. Mohallab had to be recalled from Mosul, and during his absence it was Ibrahim b. Malik whom Mos'ab chose to supply his place. The period of the pilgrimage caused a momentary truce to all these struggles, and in that year was seen the curious spectacle of four different standards planted near Mecca, belonging respec- tively to four party chiefs, each of whom was a pretender to the empire: the standard of 'Abdallah b. Zobair, Caliph of Mecca; that of the Caliph of Damascus, 'Abd al-Melik ; that of the son of 'Ali, Mohammed b. Hanaftya ; and that of the Khdarijites, who were at that time under the command of Najda b. 'Amir. Such, however, was the respect inspired by the holy places, that no disorders resulted from the presence of so many inveterate rivals.*~~

~~*The Omayyad Caliph, whose troops had been beaten in Mesopotamia, and who had been hitherto content to watch the frontiers of Arabia, was again prevented from pushing on military operations more actively by the breaking out of troubles in Syria. At the beginning of AH. 69 (A.D. 688-689), 'Abd al-Melik having left Damascus at the head of a numerous army, with the purpose of marching against 'Irdk, the Omayyad 'Amr b. 'Amr b, Sa'id, whom he had appointed governor of Damascus, took Sa'id. advantage of his absence to lay claim to the supreme power, and to have himself proclaimed Caliph by his partisans.*~~

~~*'Abd al-Melik was obliged to retrace his steps, and to lay siege to his own capital. The garrison of Damascus took fright, and deserted their posts; so that "Amr b. Said, abandoned by his followers, was compelled to surrender at discretion. 'Abd al-Melik at first meant to spare him, but he afterwards changed his mind, and struck off his head with his own hand. Scarcely had he suppressed this revolt, when the Emperor of Constantinople, Justinian I1., in viola- tion of the thirty years' truce formerly concluded between Mo'Awiya I. and Constantine IV., sent a Greek army to invade Syria. 'Abd al-Melik was obliged to buy peace*~~

~~*MOHAMM™MEDANIS™*~~

~~*for the time, for he required all his forces to dispute the empire with the son of Zobair. He consented, it is asserted, to pay the Greeks an indemnity of one thousand pieces of gold weekly. He then gave his attention to the*~~

~~*renewal of the projected expedition against 'Irak. Mos'ab the Zobairite had rendered himself odious to the inhabit- ants of Basra and Cufa by his exactions, and a party*~~

~~*OMAYYADS. | 5/4 the Ka'ba, passed the night there in prayer. At daybreak of the 14th of Jomadi I. in the year 73 (1st October 692), the Omayyad troops made their way into the mosque. 'Abdallah attacked them furiously, notwithstanding his advanced age, but at last fell, overwhelmed by numbers. Death His head was cut off, carried to Hajjaj, and sent by the of Ibn victorious general to Damascus.! agpett:*~~

~~*favourable to "Abd al-Melik was already forming in those cities. The Omayyad Caliph marched forth at the head of an army composed of Syrians and Egyptians, and encamped three parasangs from the plain of Dair al-Jathalik, not far from the site of Baghdad, where Mos'ab had established his army. Before joining battle, 'Abd al- Melik had written secretly to all the chiefs of Mos'ab's army, making them the most seductive promises if they would agree to desert the cause of Mos'ab. This step was crowned with success, and on the eve of the battle, which took place on the 13th Jomadi IL, aw. 71 (23d Nov- ember 690), several of these generals passed into the*~~

~~*With Ibn Zobair perished the influence which the early companions of Mohammed had hithertoexercised over Islam. Medina and Mecca, though they continued to be the Holy Cities, had no longer the political importance which had enabled them to maintain a struggle with Damascus. Temporal interests, represented by Damascus, will hence- forth have precedence over those of religion ; policy will outweigh fanaticism ;? and the centre of Islam, now per- manently removed beyond the limits of Arabia, will be more easily affected by foreign influences, and assimilate more readily their civilizing elements. Damascus, Cufa, and Basra will attract the flower of all the Moslem*~~

~~*Defeat camp of "Abd al-Melik with arms and baggage. Mos'ab | provinces; and thus that great intellectual, literary, and and nevertheless attacked his enemy, but during the battle he | scientific movement which is to reach its apogee under the = found himself deserted by his troops, and, not choosing | 'Abbdsid Caliphs at Baghdad, will become daily more * to survive his defeat, he caused himself to be slain. This | marked. victory opened the*~~

~~gates of Cufa to ‘Abd al-Melik, and all By the death of the son of Zobair, ‘Abd al-Melik ‘Abd al- ‘Irak received him with acclamations. He remained forty | remained sole Caliph; for Mohammed b. Hanafiya Melik days at Cufa, and then, having given the government to | reckoned for nothing since the death of Mokhtar, whose his brother Bishr, while Khalid b. “Abdallah received that | creature he had been. The only remaining danger was of Basra, he returned in triumph to Damascus. Soon | from the Kharijites, who, though incessantly repulsed, as after, the Omayyad arms having sustained a check from | incessantly returned to the charge. Hajjaj had remained the Kharijites in Farsistin, the Caliph gave Khalid orders | after his victory at Mecca, where he was occupied in to march against those sectaries with the support of | rebuilding the Ka‘ba, ruined for the second time by his Mohallab, who was their terror, and of the governor of | engines of war. In the year 75, ‘Abd al-Melik, alarmed Rey. Khalid succeeded completely in this expedition, | at the news which reached him from Persia and ‘Irak, and drove the Kharijites out of Ahwaz, Farsistén, and | named Hajjaj governor of that province, and gave him the Kirman. On his side, the Omayyad Caliph stirred up a | most extensive powers for the re-establishment of order. revolt in Khorasan, a province which still remained faithful | The troops of ‘Irak, who accompanied Mohallab in an to the Zobairite cause. Its governor was treacherously | expedition against the Kharijites, had abandoned their assassinated by his lieutenant Bokair, who received, as the | general and dispersed to their homes, and nothing could price of this service, the governorship of the province. induce them to return to their duty. Hajjaj, arriving Hajj4jin Only Arabia now remained to Ibn Zobair. In a.H. 72 | unexpectedly at Cufa, ascended the pulpit at the moment ‘Irak. ‘Abd al-Melik made preparations for depriving him of it. | when the people were assembled for morning prayers, and Second Accordingly he raised an army; but when his generals | delivered an energetic address to them, which depicts his ae found that another siege of Mecca was in contemplation, | character so well, that some passages from it may be~~

~~not one of them was willing to accept such a mission. An obscure officer, Hajjaj b. Yusuf, boldly offered to lead the expedition. ‘Abd al-Melik had little confidence in him, and therefore at first placed only two or three thousand horsemen under his command. Hajjaj set out, traversed the Hijaz~~

~~without resistance, and pitched his camp at Taif, not far from Mecca. Ibn Zobair tried to dislodge him ; but in the frequent encounters between his troops and those of Hajjaj, the latter always had the advantage. 'Abd al-Melik then decided on sending him a reinforcement of five thousand men, on receiving which Hajjaj invested Mecca. The blockade lasted several months, during which the city was a prey to all the horrors of siege and famine. Hajj4j had set up balistas on the neighbouring heights, and poured a hail of stones on the city and the Ka''ba. Famine at length triumphed over the last adherents of the son of Zobair. Ten thousand fighting men, and even several of the sons of the pretender, left the city and surrendered. Mecca being thus left without defenders, Hajjaj took possession of it and invested the Ka'ba. Then the son of Zobair, seeing that ruin was inevitable, went to his mother Asma, who had reached the age of a hundred, and asked her counsel. She answered that he must die sword in hand; and when, in embracing him for the last time, she felt the cuirass which he wore, she exclaimed that such a precaution was unworthy of a man resolved to perish. 'Abdalldéh took off his cuirass, and taking refuge in~~

~~cited :—~~

~~'*Men of Cufa, I see before me heads ripe for the harvest, aud the reaper—I am he! I seem to myself already to see blood between turbans and shoulders. I am not one of those who can be frightened by an inflated bag of skin, nor need any one think to squeeze me like dried figs. 1 have been chosen on good grounds ; and it is because I have been seen at work that I have been picked out from among others. The Prince of the Believers has spread before him the arrows of his quiver, and has tried every one of them by biting its wood. It is my wood that he has found the hardest and the bitterest, and I am the arrow which he shoots against you."~~

~~Thereupon Hajj4j ordered that every man capable of bearing arms should immediately join Mohallab in Susiana, and swore that all who made any delay should have their heads struck off. This threat produced its effect, and Hajjaj proceeded to Basra, where his presence was followed by the same result. Mohallab, reinforced by the army of 'Irak, at last succeeded, after a struggle of eighteen months, in subjugating the Kharijites, and was able, at~~

~~*the beginning of a.u. 78, to return to Hajjaj at Basra. The latter loaded him with honours and niade him*~~

~~*1 On these events, see Quatremére, Mémoire historique sur la vie @ Abd-Allah b. Zobair. Paris, 1832.*~~

~~*2 It is said that the Caliph 'Abd al-Melik affected great piety before his elevation. At the moment when he was first saluted with the title of Caliph, he closed a copy of the Koran which was in his hands, say- ing: "' We must now part."*~~

~~*Ibn al- Ash'ath,*~~

~~*OTe governor of Khordsdn,! whence he directed several expedi- tions against Transoxiana.*~~

~~*While Mohallab was fighting against the Kharijites in Persia, Hajjaj himself had had to struggle against rebel- lion. Three Khéarijites, Salih, Shabfb, and Motarrif, had succeeded in creating a party in Mesopotamia and 'Irak. The second had even pushed his audacity so far as to march upon Cufa, and for a moment had occupied that city. Hajjaj overcame the rebels; and through his vigilance, Katari b. al-Foja'a, another Kharijite chief, after being pursued as far as Tabaristan, on the Caspian Sea, was taken and killed by two Omayyad generals.*~~

~~*When he gave the government of Khorasan to Mohallab, Hajjaj had committed that of Sijistin to 'Obaid Allah b. Abi Bakra. At the beginning of a.u. 79, 'Obaid Allah's troops were beaten by the king of Kabul. Hajjaj thought it advisable to remove 'Obaid All4h and to replace him by the captain of his guards, 'Abd al-Rahman b. al-Ash'ath, This was a bad choice, for Ibn al-Ash'ath had often given proofs of an insubordinate temper, and Hajj4j soon had occasion to repent of it. In fact, soon after his arrival in Sijistan, 'Abd al-Rahman, whose army was composed of contingents from Cufa and Basra, always ready for revolt, conceived the design of an insurrection against the authority of Hajj4j. Popular movements often go beyond the object first proposed; and not only did the troops welcome joyfully the idea of marching against the hated governor of 'Irak, but they even proclaimed the dethrone- ment of 'Abd al-Melik, and*~~

~~*saluted Ibn al-Ash‘ath as Caliph. The new pretender entered Farsistin and Ahwaz, and it was in this last province, near Shuster, that Hajjaj came up with him, after receiving from Syria the reinforcements which he had demanded in all haste from the Caliph. Hajj4j was beaten and obliged to retreat. Ibn al-Ash‘ath pursued him as far as Basra, which opened its gates to him; but fortune soon changed, and he was again driven out by his adversary. Ibn al-Ash‘ath then turned his arms against Cufa, and with aid from within, obtained possession of it; thus cutting the com- munications of Hajjaj with Syria. The latter, thus com- pelled to leave Basra, took the field, and pitched his camp at Dair al-Jamdjim, two days’ journey from Basra. Tbn al-Ash‘ath marched against him at the head of his army. The condition of ‘Irak caused the greatest uneasi- ness at Damascus, and ‘Abd al-Melik hoped to stifle the revolt by proposing to the insurgents the dismissal of Hajjaj from his post. The insurgents rejected this offer, and hostilities recommenced. At the end of three months, in Jomddi IL, aa. 83 (July 702), a decisive action took place. Victory declared for Hajj4j. Ibn al-Ash‘ath fled to Basra, where he managed to collect fresh troops ; but, having been again beaten, he took refuge in Susiana, from which he was driven by a son of Hajjaj. The rebel then retired into Sijistan, and afterwards sought an asylum with the king of Kabul. As soon as his partisans had rejoined him, he penetrated into Khorasdin, in order to raise an insurrection there. The governor of this province was at that time Yazid, son of the celebrated Mohallab, who had died in the year 82. Yazid marched against Ibn al-Ash‘ath, and cut his army to pieces. From that time the pretender disappeared ; and it is thought that, having again taken refuge with the king of Kabul, he was betrayed by him and put to death.? It was during*~~

~~*1 In a.u. 78, ‘Abd al-Melik had made Khorasan and Sijistan depend- ent on the governor of ‘Irak, so that Hajjaj had the right of directly nominating the governors of those provinces.*~~

~~*2 This king of Kibul is called Ratbil or Rotbil by some historians, and Zenbil by others. See Weil, Geschichte der Chalifen, i. 449; Tabari, transl. by Zotenberg, iv. 127 ; and Mas‘udi, transl. by Barbier de Meynard, index, s. v. Rotbil. According to Abulfeda’s Geography,*~~

~~this long struggle that, in the year 83, Hajjaj laid the foundations of the city of Wasit (the Intermediate) ; so called because it is situated midway between Cufa and Basra. Some time after the suppression of this revolt, in the year 84, Hajjaj deprived Yazid b. Mohallab of the government of Khorasan, accusing him of partiality towards the rebels, and appointed in his stead first his brother Mofaddal b. Mohallab, and nine months after Kotaiba b. Moslim, who was destined at a later period to extend the sway of the Moslems in the East as far as China.~~

~~While these events were taking place, 'Abd al-Melik was engaged in the West in a struggle against the Greeks. We have seen that in the year 69 the Caliph, compelled as he then was to direct all his efforts towards 'Irak and Arabia, had concluded a disgraceful peace with Justinian IL It was not till aH. 73 (a.v. 692-693) that he resumed hostilities in Armenia, Asia Minor, and Africa. The operations in Asia Minor and in Armenia were entrusted to Mohammed b. Merwan, brother of the Caliph, and to 'Othman b. Walid. They beat the Greeks at first; but, in consequence of subsequent reverses, the Moslems were compelled to accept peace, which was broken anew by the Greeks about the year 75 or 76, the Caliph in one of his letters to Justinian II. having used expressions which displeased the Christian monarch. In retaliation, Justinian threatened to have legends offensive to Islam struck on his coins. As, up to that time, the Moslems had no special coinage of their own, and princi- pally used Byzantine and Persian money, this menace led 'Abd al-Melik to institute a purely Arabic coinage. It was a Jew of Taimd, named Somair, who commenced its fabrication. Justinian IT. refused to receive these coins in payment of the tribute, and declared the treaty at an end. The incensed Moslems fought valiantly, and suc- ceeded in extending their frontiers to Mar'ash, on the side of Asia Minor, and to Amid, on the side of Armenia. From this time forth the Moslems made yearly expedi- tions against the Greeks; but they were only razzias, for which the Greeks often avenged themselves by incursions into the territory of Islam.~~

~~*In Africa we have seen that 'Okba b. Nafi' had been slain by the Berbers, who had taken Kairawin. In the year 73 'Abd al-Melik sent Hassan b. No'man into Africa, at the head of a numerous army. He retook Kairawdn, swept the coast as far as Carthage, expelling the Greek garrisons from all the fortified places, and then, turning his arms against the Berbers, beat them so completely that they submitted for a long time to the tribute and the conscription. But when Hassan left Africa, the Greeks, under the successor of Justinian, retook the coast-line. Hassdn prepared to return to Africa, but he previously demanded from the governor of Egypt, "Abd al-'Aziz, the recall of a freedman, whom he had appointed governor of a part of the province of Africa. 'Abd al- 'Aziz refused, and Hassan went to Damascus to complain to the Caliph. Soon after his arrival at the capital he died, and the governor of Egypt placed Musd b. Nosair at the head of the expedition. This general reconquered the seaboard as far as Carthage, and drove the Greeks permanently from it. The daring Mus4 continued his triumphant march, and took possession of the whole of the coast to Tlemcen. One of his lieutenants, in the year 82, carried a reconnaissance by sea as far as Sicily. The Moslem fleet having been destroyed by a storm, Mus4 equipped another, and entrusted its command to his brother 'Abdallah, who returned to Sicily and effected a*~~

~~*848, Ibn al-Ash'ath was killed in the province of Arrokhaj (Arra-*~~

~~*chosia), and his head was sent to Damascus and Egypt.*~~

~~*Progress of the Moslem arms,*~~

~~*First Arabic coinage.*~~

~~*Walid I.*~~

~~*Con- quest of Spain.*~~

~~*Mm Ons M M*~~

~~*razzia there. Merwdan, the father of 'Abd al-Melik, had designated as successor to the latter his other son, 'Abd al-"Aziz, governor of Egypt. 'Abd al-'Aziz having died in the year 84, 'Abd al-Melik chose as heirs of the*~~

~~*empire, first his son Walid, and after him his second son Solaiman.? He himself survived 'Abd al-"Aziz only two years, and died 14th Shawwal 86 (8th October 705), at the age of about sixty. His reign was one of the most unquiet in the annals of Islam, but also one of the most glorious. 'Abd al-Melik not only brought triumph to the cause of the Omayyads, but extended and strengthened the Moslem power externally. Amid so many grave anxieties, he yet found time for his pleasures. He was passionately fond of poetry, and his court was crowded with poets, whom he loaded with favours, even if they were Christians, like Akhtal. In his reign flourished also the two celebrated rivals of Akhtal, Jarir and Farazdak.?*~~

~~*6. Immediately on his accession Walid confirmed Hajj4j in the government of 'Irak, and appointed as governor of Medina his cousin 'Omar b. 'Abd al-'Aziz, who was received there with joy, his piety and gentle character being well known. Under his government important works were undertaken at Medina and Mecca by order of Walid, who, having no rivals to struggle against, was able to give his attention to pacific occupations. The mosque of Medina was enlarged, wells were sunk, the streets widened, and hospitals established. At Mecca many improvements were introduced. The reputation of 'Omar attracted to the two Holy Cities a great number of the inhabitants of 'Irak, who were groaning under the iron hand of Hajjij. The latter, who was not a man to let his prey escape from his grasp, was so urgent with Walid that he obtained the dismissal of 'Omar b. 'Abd al-'Aziz in the year 93, and the appointment of 'Othman b. Hayyan at Medina, and of Khalid b. 'Abdall4h at Mecca. These two prefects compelled the refugees at Mecca and Medina to return to 'Irak, where many of them were cruelly treated and even put to death by Hajjdj. It was probably his cruelty which drove so many men of 'Irak to enlist in the armies of the East and the South; and this may in some degree account for the unheard-of successes of Kotaiba b. Moslim in Transoxiana, and of Mohammed b. Kasim in India. They may also be explained by the ambition of Hajj4j, who, it is said, cherished the project of creating a vast empire for himself to the east and south of the Moslem realm, and had secretly promised the government of China to the first of his generals who should reach that country. Be this as it may, in the course of a very few years Kotaiba conquered the whole of Bokharia, Kharizm, and Transoxiana or M4 ward-annahr, as far as the frontiers of China.. Meanwhile Mohammed b. Kasim invaded Mokran, Sind, and*~~

~~Multan, carried off an immense booty, and reduced the women and children to slavery. In Armenia and Asia Minor, Maslama, brother of the Caliph Walid, and his lieutenants, also obtained numerous suc- cesses against the Greeks. In Armenia, Maslama even advanced as far as the Caucasus.~~

~~The most important achievement, however, of Walid's reign was the conquest of Spain. The narrative of this conquest belongs specially to the history of Spain ; and we shall therefore only touch briefly on it here. We have seen that, even in the Caliphate of 'Abd al-Melik, Musd b. Nosair had penetrated as far as Tlemcen in Africa. Under Walid, Mus4, who had been appointed governor of Africa, entered Morocco, occupied Fez and Tangier, and then~~

~~OMAYYADS. |~~

~~1 'Abd al-Melik had several other sons, two of whom, Yazid and Hisham, also reigned.~~

~~2 See Caussin de Perceval, Journal asiatique, 2¢ série, vols. xiii. and xiv.~~

~~DAN TS 573~~

~~returned to Kairawan, having made his lieutenant Tarik governor of Tangier and of all the West of Africa. The town of Ceuta still held out under its governor Julian, who held it in the name of Witiza, King of Spain. Witiza having been dethroned by Roderic, Julian thought he might find the Arabs useful allies in the struggle which he proposed to carry on against the usurper? and entered into negotiations with Tarik. The latter, foreseeing the possibility of conquering for the advantage of the Arabs a country which had been represented to him as a paradise, requested instructions from Musa, who referred the matter to the Caliph. Walid gave Musd carte blanche, and Tarik hastened to make alliance with Julian. He first, however, sent four ships, with five hundred men under the command of Tarif, to reconnoitre the country. This expedition was successful, and Tarik, now certain of meeting no serious opposition to his landing, passed into Spain himself, at the head of twelve thousand men, in the year 92 (a.p. 710-711), and landed at the spot which thence received the name of Jabal-Tarik, or 'Mountain of Tarik," a name which was afterwards corrupted by the~~

~~*Westerns into Gibraltar. At the news of this invasion, Roderic led a numerous army against the Arabs, but was completely routed near Cadiz, and perished in the conflict. Musa, jealous of the success of his lieutenant, hastened to Spain with eighteen thousand men, and his first step on arriving was to send Tarik orders to suspend his march. But Tarik, far from obeying, divided his little army into three corps, and obtained possession successively of Ecija, Malaga, Elvira, Cordova, and Toledo. Musd, hopeless of arresting the victorious march of Tarik, determined to play the part of a conqueror himself, and took Seville, Carmona, and Merida. On rejoining Tarik at Toledo, the first step he took was to throw him into prison. The Caliph, how- ever, gave orders that he should be set at liberty and restored to his command. The two conquerors then shared the country between them, and, in less than three years, all Spain was subdued, to the very foot of the Pyrenees. Meanwhile Walid, fearing to see Musd declare his independence, recalled him to Damascus. He obeyed after appointing his son 'Abd al-'Aziz governor of Spain, and assigning Seville as his residence. Musa left Spain in the month of Safar, a.n. 95 (October-November 713), in company with Tarik, bringing an immense booty to Damascus, and leading in his train a great number of prisoners. His journey from Ceuta to Damascus was one long triumph. He reached Egypt in the month of Rabi' I. in the following year (Nov.-Dec. 714), and then moved on by short marches towards Damascus, where he did not arrive till two months and a half later, at the very moment when Walid had just breathed his last, and his brother Solaim4n had been saluted as Caliph. The renowned Hajj4j had preceded his sovereign, and had expired five days before the end of Ramadan, a.H. 99. Mus4 did not receive the reward due to his distinguished services. Accused of peculation by the new Caliph, he was beaten with rods, and condemned to a fine of 100,000 pieces of gold; and all his goods were confiscated. Solaim4n did not stop here: he caused "Abd al-'Aziz, the son of Musd, to be put to death in Spain, and carried his cruelty so far as to show his severed head to Musa, asking him whether he recognised it. He replied that it was the head of a man a thousand times superior to him who had ordered his death. Mus4 died soon after. As for Tarik, there is no further mention of him after the beginning of the reign of Solaim4n, and we must therefore suppose that he retired into private life.*~~

~~8 According to Eastern chronicles, Julian's hatred of Roderic arose from the latter's having dishonoured his daughter.~~

~~Solai- 7. Solaiman had nearly missed the throne. Walid, in~~

~~m4n. the very year of his death, wished to have his son 'Abd al-'Aziz b. Walid chosen as his successor, and had offered Solaimdn a great sum of money to induce him to surrender his rights to the Caliphate; but Solaiman obstinately refused to do so. Walid went still further, and sent letters to the governors of all the provinces, calling on them to make the people take the oath of allegiance to his son. None except Hajjij and Kotaiba b. Moslim consented thus to set at nought the order of succession established by 'Abd al-Melik; and Solaimdn succeeded without difficulty at the death of his brother. We can easily conceive the hatred felt by Solaiman for Hajjaj, and for all that belonged to him, far or near. Hajjaj himself escaped by death; but Solaiman poured out his wrath on his family, and strove to undo all that he had done. First of all, Mohammed b. Kasim, the conqueror of India, who was cousin to Hajj4j, was dismissed from his post and outlawed. Hajj4j had deprived Yazid b. Mohallab of the government of Khorasin; Solaiman conferred on him that of 'Irak. Kotaiba b. Moslim, on learning the accession of Solaiman, knew that his own ruin was certain, and therefore anticipated the Caliph by a revolt. But Solaiman induced Kotaiba's troops to desert by authorising them to return to their homes; and when the illustrious general sought to carry his army with him, a conspiracy was formed against him which ended in his murder. Yazid b. Mohallab, who preferred Khorasan to 'Irak, obtained permission to exchange. Immediately on his return to Khords4n he set on foot a series of new expeditions against Jorjan and Tabaristin. But the inhabitants of Khordésén, which he governed oppressively, made complaints against him to the Caliph, accusing him of practising extortions in order to obtain such a sum of money as would enable him to rebel against his sovereign. From that day Solaiman determined to get rid of Yazid. As, however, he was then dreaming of the conquest of Constantinople, he thought it prudent to dissemble his dissatisfaction for some time.~~

~~*The Byzantine empire was disturbed by internal troubles during the years a.p. 715-717. Solaiman resolved to take advantage of these in order to rid hiniself for ever of the hereditary enemy of Islam, and prepared a formidable expedition. A fleet of eighteen hundred vessels, equipped at Alexandria, sailed to the coasts of Asia Minor, took on board the Moslem army, commanded by Maslama, and transported it to Europe. This army appeared under the walls of Constantinople, 15th August 717, five months after Leo III., the Isaurian, had ascended the throne. Once more the Greek fire prevailed against the Moslems. Their fleet was destroyed by this terrible engine of war; the army could obtain no fresh supply of provisions, and suffered all the horrors of famine. Mean- while the Caliph, who desired to be present in person at the taking of Constantinople, had set out to join the army. He fell ill at Dabik, not far from Aleppo, and died there on the 22d of September in the same year, after having nominated as his own successor his cousin, 'Omar b. 'Abd al-"Aziz, and as successor to the latter, Yazid b. 'Abd al-Melik, his own brother. In vain did the new Caliph despatch from Egypt a fleet of four hundred ships to carry arms and provisions to the army before Constanti- nople; this fleet also was destroyed by the Greeks, and the Moslem army was decimated by famine, and soon by the plague as well, A hundred thousand men perished miserably under the walls of Constantinople, and Maslama brought back to Asia Minor a mere handful of soldiers, and that with great difficulty.*~~

~~*Omar II. 8. 'Omar b. 'Abd al-'Aziz, incensed at this disaster, took his revenge on the Christians of his own states by*~~

~~*excluding them from all public employments, in spite of the great services they rendered there, and by loading them with imposts to such an extent that one public functionary wrote thus to the Caliph: "If things continue to go on in Egypt as at present, all the Christians will become Moslems to escape taxation, and the State will lose its revenue." To this the pious 'Omar replied: "TI should look on the conversion of all the Christians as a great piece of good-fortune ; for God sent his prophet to act the part of an apostle, and not of a tax-gatherer." By his religious intolerance, by the simplicity of his life, and by his vigour in observing the precepts of his religion and enforcing their observance, 'Omar has acquired in Moslem history the reputation of a saint. But the sanctity of a prince does not ensure*~~

~~*the greatness of a State; and the reign of ‘Omar, as we shall see, was injurious rather than advantageous to Islam. He alienated the provincial governors by his severity ; and the family of “Abbas took advantage of the general discontent to stir up the people secretly, and thus to prepare the way for the fall of the dynasty.*~~

~~*It will be remembered that Solaiman died before carry- ing out his purpose of deposing Yazid b. Mohallab, the governor of Khordsin. ‘Omar II. took it on himself to fulfil this design. He summoned Yazid to his presence, and on his arrival at Damascus, threw him into prison, and demanded the restitution of the money which he believed him to have misappropriated. As Yazid alleged that he could render no account of it, the Caliph banished him to Dahlak, a small island in the Red Sea, but soon brought him back, and placed him in close confinement. It was not till au. 101, when ‘Omar IJ. was dying, that Yazid succeeded in escaping and took refuge in ‘Irak. Mokhallad, the son of Yazid, whom his father, on quit- ting Khordsan, had left there as his lieutenant, was also summoned to Damascus, and the Caliph at first appointed Jarrah b. ‘Abdall4h governor of that province, but soon after, on receiving complaints against him, replaced him by ‘Abd al-Rahman al-Koshairi, whom he desired to use every effort for the conversion of the unbelievers, rather than to think of extending the Moslem power by force of arms. With so pacific a disposition, it is easy to understand that the Caliph did not signalize his reign by any conquest ; except a revolt of the Khdarijites in ‘Irak, which was suppressed by Maslama, his caliphate was not distinguished by any warlike event. Its most noticeable occurrence, as we have said above, was the commencement of the ‘Abbasid movement.*~~

~~*The ‘Abbasid family derived its name from ‘Abbas, who ‘Abbasid was Mohammed’s uncle on the father’s side, and who, ™0ve during the Prophet’s life, had enjoyed universal considera- sae” tion among the Moslems. It was he who, at the death of the Prophet, had the charge of washing the corpse. The first Caliphs, Abttbekr, ‘Omar, ‘Othman, and ‘Ali, showed the utmost deference to ‘Abbas; and his eldest son ‘Abdallah had been united in the closest friendship with Hosain, the unfortunate son of ‘Ali. After the assassina- tion of ‘Ali, and the slaughter of Hosain, ‘Abdallah had retired to Mecca, and there brought up his numerous family in hatred of the Omayyads. It was from his youngest son ‘Alf, born a.H. 40,*~~

~~that the "Abbasid dynasty sprung. Under the Caliph 'Abd al-Melik, this "Ali was living at Damascus; but, on his marrying Labbaba, the divorced wife of 'Abd al-Melik, the Caliph conceived a great aversion for 'Ali. Walid, the son and successor of 'Abd al-Melik, inherited his father's prejudices, subjected 'Ali to every kind of insult, and drove him from his court. Walid's successor, Solaiman, gave him leave to return to Damascus, but 'AH, instead of availing himself of this permission, preferred to retire to Homaima, a town situ-~~

~~ated in the south of Syria, on the confines of Arabia. It was in this retirement that his son Mohammed conceived the design of supplanting the Omayyad dynasty. We have said that the first 'Abbasids were closely united with the family of 'Alf, Mohammed b. 'Ali, the 'Abbasid, saw clearly that it was only among the followers of 'Ali that he was likely to be able to form a party. To attain this object, he formed the plan of making it believed that a descendant of the Prophet's son-in-law had transmitted to him his rights to the Caliphate. It will be remembered that Mohammed b. Hanaffya had come forward as a pre- tender to the throne at the troublous period when Ibn Zobair and 'Abd al-Melik were disputing the Caliphate. According to the story of the 'Abbasids, Abi Hashim "Abdallah, the son of Ibn Hanafifya, had gone to Homaima, to the house of Mohammed b. 'Alf, and had made on his deathbed a legal transfer of his rights to Mohammed, by appointing him his heir. Whatever may be the truth respecting this transfer,! Mohammed the 'Abbasid spread abroad the report of it, and chose especially for its pro-pagation the provinces in which the family of 'Ali had the greatest number of adherents, 'Irak and Khordsdn. Emissaries sent by him into these two provinces, under the caliphate of "Omar IJ., began to stir up the people in secret against the reigning house. 'Omar was probably acquainted with these intrigues, but he had not time to repress them, for he died on the 20th or 25th of Rajab, AH. 101 (5th or 10th February 720), after a reign of about two years and a half.~~

~~9. Yazid, the son of 'Abd al-Melik, ascended the throne without resistance. His first care was to pursue Yazid b. Mohallab, who had escaped from his~~

~~prison and taken refuge in 'Irdk. Besides reasons of state, Yazid II. had personal reasons for ill-will to Yazfd b. Mohallab. One of the wives of the new Caliph, the same who gave birth to that son of Yazid IJ. who afterwards reigned under the name of Walid II., was niece to the celebrated Hajj4j, who, as it will be remembered, had hated and per- secuted Yazid b. Mohallab. Aware of the alliance of the new Caliph with the family of Hajjaj, the son of Mohallab had made every effort to escape as soon as he was informed of the illness of 'Omar II. ; for he well knew that Yazid II. would spare neither him nor his family. In fact, the Caliph sent express orders to the prefect of 'Irak to arrest all the brothers and other members of the family of Mohallab who were to be found at Basra; and this order was immediately carried out. But Yazifd b. Mohallab had many partisans in 'Irak. He collected a small army, and fought with such valour that in a short time he succeeded in making himself master of Basra, where he had himself proclaimed Caliph. The public treasury fell into his hands, and he employed it in paying his troops and in raising fresh ones, whom he sent on expeditions into Khiuzistan or Ahwaz, Farsist4n, Mokrdn, and Sind. As this revolt threatened to spread far and wide, Yazid II. was obliged to have recourse for its suppression to the celebrated Maslama. Early in a.n. 102, this illustrious general took the field, and completely defeated Ibn Mohallab near Basra. Yazid fell in the battle, and his brothers fled beyond the Indus, but were pursued and slain by the lieutenants of Maslama.~~

~~This revolt suppressed, Yazid II. was able to give his thoughts to the extension of the empire, an object which had been so much neglected by his predecessor. Several expeditions were directed against Fargh4na in Transoxiana, against the Khazars in Armenia, and against the Greeks~~

~~in Asia Minor, but without any very decided results. In~~

~~1 The 'Abbdsid Caliph Ma'miin certainly did not believe in it, for he thought it his duty to restore the Caliphate to the family of 'Ali, by appointing as his successor 'Ali Rida, a descendant of the Caliph 'All.~~

~~*Africa, serious troubles had been caused by the appoint- ment as governor of a certain Yazid b. Abi Moslim, who had been secretary to Hajj4j, and who followed the example of his master's implacable harshness. The Ber- bers rose in insurrection, slaughtered the unfortunate governor, and chose in his place Mohammed b. Aus. The Caliph at first ratified this choice, but soon after dismissed Mohammed from his post, and replaced him by Bishr b. Safwan, who sent out an expedition against Sicily.*~~

~~*In Europe, the Arabs obtained at first some degree of success. Under the orders of Samah, then governor of Spain, they crossed the Pyrenees, and took possession of Narbonne ; but, having been beaten at Toulouse, they had to retrace their steps. It was the celebrated Abderame ('Abd al-Rahmén) who effected their retreat.*~~

~~*Yazid II. died three years later of a lingering illness, caused, it is said, by his grief for the death of a favourite slave-girl. At his accession, Yazid had designated as his successors, in the first place his son Hishdm, and in the second his son Walid. Hishdm ascended the throne without opposition.*~~

~~*10. Hisham was a pious prince and an enemy of Hishdm.*~~

~~*luxury; as rigid in his religion as 'Omar II. To this severity may in part be attributed the disturbances which broke out in the provinces during his reign. The governors were accustomed to remain loyal to the Caliphs only when the latter did not exact from them too rigorous an account. Hishdm was, besides, very avaricious, a fault highly calculated to make him odious to those about him. Lastly, he favoured the Yemenites, and this alienated from him the powerful party of the Kaisites. All these circumstances emboldened the 'Abbasids to carry on actively their propaganda in 'Irak and Khordsdn, and it succeeded beyond their hopes. The Kaisite tribes, offended at seeing the Caliph bestow the best posts on Yemenites, were ready to espouse with enthusiasm the cause of any one whose aim was the overthrow of the Omayyads. Rebellion had been smouldering in the provinces for thirteen years; it broke out at last at Cufa and in the whole of 'Irak, under chiefs called Moghira and Bahlul ; and when these insurgents had been chastised, others sprung up in their place, 'Amr al-Yashkori, Al-'Anazi, and Al-Sakhtayéni. The prefect of 'Irak, Khalid b. 'Abdallah, was accused of favouring this revolt, was degraded, and replaced by Yusuf b.*~~

~~*'Omar, who threw him into prison, where he remained for eighteen months. This measure increased the discontent of the people of 'Ir4k, and a member of the family of 'Alf, Zaid b. 'Alf, collected round him a small body of partisans, and had himself proclaimed Caliph, aH. 122 (a.v. 739-740).*~~

~~*Unfortunately for Zaid, he had to do with the same Cufans Zaid b. whose fickleness had already been fatal to his family. In Al!*~~

~~*the moment of danger he was deserted by his troops, slain in an unequal conflict, and his head sent to Damascus. In Khorasan also there were very serious disturbances. In the year 106 (a.p. 724-725) there had already been a revolt at Balkh, excited by the emissaries of the 'Abbasids. The following years brought with them fresh troubles, which led to the dismissal of the governor of Khorasan, Asad, the brother of Khalid b. 'Abdall4h, who had been prefect of 'Irak. Under the successors of Asad, who were successively Ashras b. 'Abdallah, Jonaid b. 'Abd al-Rahman, and 'Asim b. 'Abdallah, seditions broke out in Transoxiana, which were repressed with great difficulty ; and it was not until the year 120 that, by the appointment of the brave and prudent Nasr b. Sayyar as governor of Khordsdn, peace was for a time restored to that region. The 'Abbasid emissaries, nevertheless, secretly continued their propaganda.*~~

~~*In India, several provinces which had been converted*~~

~~*Walid II,*~~

~~*576*~~

~~*to Islam under the Caliphate of 'Omar II. declared them- selves independent; and this led to the founding of several strong cities for the purpose of controlling those provinces. It was thus that the cities of Mahfuza and Mansura had their origin.*~~

~~*In the north and north-west of the empire there were no internal disorders, but the Moslems had much to do to maintain themselves there against the Alans, the Turko- mans, and the Khazars. The illustrious Maslama lost his life in battle, and Merwdn b. Mohammed, afterwards Caliph, took his place as prefect of Armenia and Azer- baijan. He succeeded in imposing peace on*~~

~~*the petty princes of the Eastern Caucasus, and in consolidating the Arab power in that quarter. The war against the Byzan- tines lasted during the whole of Hishém's reign, In Asia Minor, the Moslems reoccupied Czesarea, and laid siege to Nicxa, Arab writers even declare that Constantine, after- wards Emperor of Constantinople, was made prisoner in the year 114 (a.v. 732-733), but the Byzantine authori- ties make no mention of this fact. On the other hand, they notice an important defeat of the Moslem arms in A.D. 739. This defeat, which is acknowledged by the Arab writers, cost the life of their general, 'Abdallah, surnamed al-Battél—' the hero "—whose prowess still lives in the memory of the people of Asia Minor.*~~

~~*In Africa, several successive prefects were fully occupied in repressing the constant insurrections of the Berbers. In Spain, the attention of the Moslems was principally turned to avenging their defeats beyond the Pyrenees. As early as the second year of the reign of Hish4m, 'Anbasa, governor of Spain, crossed the Pyrenees, and pushed on military operations vigorously. Carcassonne and Nimes were taken. The death of 'Anbasa, in A.H. 107 (aD. 725-726), put a stop to hostilities; but they recommenced still more vigorously six years later. 'Abd al-Rahman (Abderame), the same who, under Yazid IL, had led back to Spain the remnants of the Moslem army, crossed the mountains anew, and penetrated into Gascony by the passage of Roncevaux. The Moslems beat the Duke Eudes, gained possession of Bordeaux, and overran the whole of Southern Gaul as far as the Loire. But in a.H. 114 (a.v. 732) Charles Martel, whose aid the Duke of Aquitaine had implored, succeeded in inflicting on "Abd al-Rahm4n so severe a defeat, near Poitiers, that the Moslems were obliged to effect a hasty retreat, and to return to Spain. Two years later the new governor of Spain, 'Okba b. al-Hajjaj, re-entered Gaul, and pushed forward expeditions as far as Burgundy and Dauphiné. Charles Martel, with the help of the Lombards, again drove back the Arabs as far as Narbonne. Thenceforth the continual revolts of the Berbers in Africa on the one side, and on the other the internal troubles which disturbed Spain, and which led at a later period to its independence, offered insurmountable obstacles to the ambition of the Moslems, and prevented their resuming the offensive.*~~

~~*Such was the state of the empire when Hish4m died on the 6th of Rabi Il aw. 125 (6th Feb. a.p. 743), after a reign of twenty years. He had not been*~~

~~wanting in energy and ability. Yet under his reign the Moslem power declined rather than advanced, and signs of the decay of the Omayyad dynasty began to show themselves. The history of his four successors, Walid IL, Yazid III., Ibrahim, and Merwan IL., is but the history of the fall of the Omayyads.~~

~~11. Walid IL, the son of Yazid II., ascended the throne without opposition at the death of Hisham ; but he soon made himself so much hated and despised by his debauch- eries and his irreligion that even the sons of Hisham and of Walid I. plotted with the enemies of the Omayyads. Yazid, one of the sons of Walid L, went so far as to take~~

~~openly the title of Caliph, and to march against Damascus, which Walfd II. had quitted for fear of a pestilence which was then raging there. This step was fatal to the Caliph. The inhabitants of Damascus opened their gates to Yazid, who took possession of the arsenals, and used the arms they contained to equip new troops. Walid IL, on his side, collected his adherents and marched against his rival. The two armies met at a place called Bakhra, on the confines of Syria and Arabia. Yazid had no difficulty in overcoming his opponent, who was abandoned by his own soldiers. Walid II. died fighting, having reigned little more than a year, and his head was taken to Damascus, and carried about the city at the end of a spear. (Jomadi IL, a.u. 126, March-April 744.)~~

~~12. The death of Walid IL, far from appeasing the Yazid troubles of the State, put its unity in greater jeopardy than III.~~

~~ever, The distant provinces escaped from the power of the new Caliph. In Africa, 'Abd al-Rahman b. Habfb declared himself independent. In Spain, every emir aspired to free himself from a suzerainty which appeared to him only nominal. In Khorasan the 'Abbasid emissaries were more and more busy, acting in the name of Ibrahim b. Mohammed, who had become the head of the family by the death of his father, Mohammed b. 'Ali. Even in Syria Yazid III. saw his authority disputed. Himself belong- ing to the sect~~

~~*of Mo'tazilites, who rejected the doctrine of predestination—a sect to which we shall have occasion to recur in treating of the religious history of Islam — he aroused all the orthodox against him. Besides this, many of the Syrians, from a sudden change of feeling, now desired to avenge the death of Walid Il. The inhabitants of Emesa revolted, and marched against Damascus. They were beaten at a place called Thantfyat al-'Okab, or The Eagle's Pass, twelve miles from the capital. Palestine rose in its turn, and chose as its Caliph another Yazid, cousin of the reigning prince. This revolt also was suppressed. But a greater danger menaced Yazid III. The Omayyad Merwén b. Mohammed, who was, as we have said, governor of Armenia and of Azer- baijan, also prepared to dispute the supreme power with the Caliph of Damascus, and invaded Mesopotamia. Yazid IIL., in his alarm, offered him the government of this last province as the price of peace. Merwdn accepted these conditions, but he would probably not have left his rival long at rest, had not the latter died after a reign of only six months.*~~

~~*13. Yazid III. left his brother Ibrahim as his successor. Ibréhim.*~~

~~*At the news of Yazid's death, Merwan collected a power- ful army and entered Syria. Having beaten Ibrahim's generals one after the other and taken Emesa, he advanced rapidly towards Damascus. Solaimdn b. Hishdm tried to oppose his march, but he was defeated at 'Ain al-Jarr, between Baalbec and Damascus, and the Caliph Ibrahim took flight ; while Solaim4n, the son of Hisham, laid hands on the public treasure, and then fled in turn, Merwdn entered Damascus, and caused himself to be proclaimed Caliph. The reign of Ibrahim had lasted only two months. Ibrahim himself soon acknowledged the new Caliph, and submitted to his authority.*~~

~~*14. Merwdn IL was a man of energy, and might have Merwan*~~

~~*revived the strength of his dynasty, if the ferment in the ll. east of the empire had been less strong. Unfortunately for him, the 'Abbasid movement had never ceased to gain ground in Khorasan, and the chief adherent of the family of 'Abbas, Abi Moslim, was in no degree inferior to the Caliph in energy and ability. This Abi Moslim, whose origin is obscure and disputed, had been distinguished by the 'Abbasid Mohammed b. 'Alf, the same who*~~

~~alleged that he had been appointed heir to the claims of the family of ‘Alf to the supreme power. If we may believe the legend,~~

~~Al-Saffah~~

~~assumes 4~~

~~the title of Caliph.~~

~~OMAYYADS. |~~

~~Mohammed had even foretold that the accession of his family would take place in the year of the ass,! through the efforts of Abt Moslim, and that one of his three sons would ascend the throne. These three sons were: Ibra- him, “Abdallah, called Abu ’l-“Abbas, and ‘Abdallah, called Abt Ja‘far. Whatever we may think of this prediction, it is certain that under Merwan II. Abu Moslim was the principal emissary of the “Abbasid Ibrahim, and had been able to form a vast conspiracy in Khorasan, which broke out in A.H. 128, at the very moment when it had been dis- covered by Nasr b. Sayyar, the Omayyad governor of the province. Even before this, Merwan II. had had to repress disorders which had broken out in Syria, Palestine, and ‘Trak ; and the Caliph could now rely so little on Syria that he had thought it necessary to quit Damascus, and to fix his abode at Harran, in Mesopotamia. On learning the revolt of Abu Moslim, Merwadn II. wrote to Nasr b. Sayyar, directing him to act with vigour against the fomenters of sedition. It was easier to give such an order than to execute it, for Abu Moslim was at the head of a numerous army, absolutely devoted to the ‘Abbasids. Merwan II. thought it necessary at the same time to secure the person of the ‘Abbasid pretender Ibrahim, who was still living at Homaima. Ibrahim was therefore arrested, conveyed to Harran, and thrown into prison. He found means, however, of communicating with his lieutenant Abu Moslim, and the latter, who had received the most extensive powers from his chief, marched direct upon Merv, the capital of Khorasan, and drove out the governor Nasr. At the news of this the Caliph, no longer able to restrain his anger, had his captive Ibrahim put to death ; an execution which, at a later period, brought upon the Omayyads the most terrible reprisals. The brother of Ibrahim, Abu ’l‘Abbds, surnamed Saffah, “The Sanguinary,” on account of his cruelties, having by Ibrahim’s death become chief of the ‘Abbasids,~~

immediately quitted Homaima with all the members of his family, and took refuge in Khordsdn, that his pre- sence there might sanction and encourage the insurrection. Abt Moslim, now master of Khorasén by the capture of Merv, had meanwhile sent an army against 'Irdk, under the orders of Kahtaba b. Shab{b, who had beaten the Omayyad army, commanded by Yazfd b. Hobaira, governor of that province. In a.H. 132 Abt 'l'Abbas arrived at Merv. After remaining there some time, waiting for a favourable moment, he decided on openly assuming the title of Caliph. He installed himself n the governor's palace, and thence went in state to the mosque, where he mounted the pulpit, and officiated

in the capacity of successor of the Prophet. All those present took the oath of allegiance to him, and Abt 'Abbas returned to the palace, over which the black flag was flying, black being the distinctive colour of the 'Abbdsids.2 But he did not remain long at Merv. Committing the government of that city to his uncle Dawid, he went to review his army, and divided it into several corps, which he directed against different points. After this he went to Chaldea, and there estab- lished himself in a spot not far from Cufa, to which he gave the name of Hashimfya, or the city of Hashim, the ancestor of his own family and of that of the Prophet. Another of his uncles, 'Abdallah b. 'Ali, whom he had sent on an expedition against the city of Shahrozur, took pos- session of that place, and leaving Abt 'Aun 'Abd al-Melik b. Yazid there as governor, rejoined his nephew and sovereign at Hashimfya. Meanwhile the Omayyad Caliph had marched against Shahroztir. Abu 'Aun went out to meet him, and was joined by a strong reinforcement of cavalry under "Abdallah b. 'Ali. The 'Abbasids only numbered forty-five thousand soldiers, but these were experienced and resolute warriors. The Omayyad army, though much more numerous, was ill commanded and devoid of spirit. A battle ensued, and fortune favoured the rebels. In vain did Merwdn show himself everywhere; his soldiers gave way and repassed the Zab in disorder, hurrying away

in their flight the unfortunate Merwan. (Jomadi IT. 11, a.n. Triumph 132, 25th January 750.) This victory cost the Omayyads of the

~~*their empire. Merwdn attempted at first to take refuge at Mosul; but the inhabitants of that city having declared for the enemy, the prince went to his capital Harrdn, whence he was soon driven by the army of 'Abdallah b. 'Ali. From Harrin Merwdn fled successively to Emesa, to Damascus, to Palestine, and finally to Egypt. He was pursued without intermission by Salih, brother of 'Abd- allah b. 'Ali, who at last came up with him at Bustr, on the frontiers of the Delta. Merwdn took refuge ina Coptic church ; but the 'Abbasids pursued him into the building, and slew him at the foot of the altar. His head was cut off and sent to Cufa, where the new Caliph then was.*~~

~~*Thus perished in the East the dynasty of the house of Omayya, which, having been founded by usurpation, had only maintained itself by shedding torrents of blood, and was destined to perish in blood. We now enter upon the history of the new dynasty, whose origin we have described, and under which the power and glory of Islam reached their highest point.*~~

~~*Here we give the*~~

~~*GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE OMAYYADS. Omayya. |*~~

~~*| a Abu '1-'As. | Hakam.*~~

~~*| 4, en le*~~

~~*| hai 14, Merwan II.*~~

~~*| | | 6. ee I. 7, SOLAIMAN. 9. Yazip II.*~~

~~*| | 11. Wain II. 12, WOReA aD) NUL 13. IprAuim.*~~

~~*1 To understand this allusion we must know that Merwdn II. had received the nickname of Himér, "the ass," on account of his temper- ance and the strength of his constitution.*~~

~~*? Historians are divided as to the date at which black became the 'Abbasid colour. According to some, the first 'Abbasids wore a robe*~~

~~*| 5. 'ABD AL-MELIK.*~~

~~*Harb. Abt Abia. 1. Mo'Awrya I. 2. Yazip I.*~~

~~*| a ze a i | Abd al-'Aziz 3. Mo'Awiya IL.*~~

~~*| 8. 'Omar II.*~~

~~*| 10. HisHAM.*~~

~~*of black silk as early as at the battle called that of the Camel. According to others, it was only after the murder of Tbrahim by Mer- wan that the 'Abb4sids adopted black as a sign of mourning. See Quatremére, Mémoires historiques sur la dynastie des khalifes Abbas- sides. Paris, 1837.*~~

~~*XVI.—73*~~

~~*'Abba-*~~

~~*sids.*~~

~~*578 MOHAMMEDANISM ['appAstps. 2p submit. Lastly, Abt Moslim quieted the rising in coor eee Khorasan. Mosul also attempted an insurrection, but*~~

~~*Abi 1. From the death of Merwa4n may be reckoned the .'Abbas real accession of the 'Abbasid dynasty to the Caliphate, al-Saffdh. which thus returned to the hands of the grand-nephews*~~

~~*Yahya, a brother of the Caliph, quenched the revolt in streams of blood. All the provinces being thus reduced to peace, the new Caliph distributed them among the*~~

~~*of the Prophet. Abt 'l"Abbas, whose proper name was 'Abdall4h, and who afterwards received the surname of Saffah, was, as has been said above, a man of energetic will, who hesitated at nothing to ensure the triumph of his dynasty. When he caused himself to be proclaimed Caliph at Cufa, one of his partisans, Abu Salama, who had till then believed that Abu 'l'Abbas was working to restore the posterity of 'Ali to the throne, and not to gain posses- sion of the empire for himself, hesitated to take the oath of obedience to the new Caliph. Abt 'l'Abbaés immedi- ately resolved on his destruction, but*~~

~~fearing that Abu Salama might have a secret understanding with the con-queror of Khorasin, he began by sending his own brother Abt Ja'far into' that province to sound Abt Moslim. The latter loudly disclaimed any alliance with Abu Salama, and, that no suspicion might rest upon him, he sent a confidential agent to Cufa, and had Abt Salama assas- sinated. Still further to prove his zeal for the house of 'Abbas, Abi Moslim also got rid of Solaiman b. Kathir, another 'Abbasid emissary, whom he suspected of partiality towards the family of 'Ali. On his side, Abt 'l—Abbas caused 'Abdallah b. Mo'dwiya, an adherent of 'Alt's family, to be treacherously slain, though he had distinguished himself in the wars against Merwan. As for the Omayyads, they were systematically followed up and put to death.~~

~~principal members of his family and his best generals. To his brother Abti Ja'far he gave a part of Mesopotamia, Azerbaijan, and Armenia; to his uncle 'Abdallah b. "All, Syria; to his uncle Dawid, Arabia, Hijaiz, Yamdma, and Yemen; to his cousin '{sA b. Musa, the province of Cufa. Abt Moslim continued in possession of the govern- ment of Khorasan, Transoxiana, and a part of Farsistan. Egypt was entrusted to Abt 'Aun. Another uncle of the Caliph, Solaiman b. 'Ali, received the government of Basra, with Bahrain and 'Oman. Lastly, the province of Mosul was taken from the cruel Yahya, and granted to one of the uncles of Abt 'l'Abbas, Isma'il b. 'Alf, who received besides the government of Ahwaz. In Sind, the Omayyad governor had succeeded in maintaining himself, but was defeated by an army sent against him under Musa b. Ka'b, and the black standard of the 'Abbasids was raised over the city of Manstra. If we omit Africa and Spain in describing this division of the provinces of the empire, it is because the 'Abbasids never gained any real footing in Spain, while Africa remained in only nominal subjection to the new dynasty.~~

~~Abt 'l'Abbas, after having definitively established his power, left the town of Hashimfya and fixed his residence at Anbar, where he died on the 13th of Dhu '1-Hijja, a.H. 136 (9th June 754).~~

~~The new Caliph desired to exterminate that family, not only for the sake of revenge, but also that he might deprive~~

~~2. Abi 'l-'Abbds had designated as his successors, first Abi Ja- Abu Ja'far, and after him his cousin 'fsA b. Muisd. At 'far al-~~

~~*the Syrians of any pretext for fresh insurrections. In fact, hardly had Abu ’l-‘Abbas been proclaimed Caliph at Cufa, when the Omayyad governor of Kinnesrin, Abt Ward b. Kauthar, notwithstanding that he had taken the oath to the new sovereign, gave the signal for revolt in the name of the Omayyads. Abt ’l‘Abbas immediately ordered his uncle ‘Abdallah b. ‘Ali, who had been made governor of Palestine, to act with the utmost rigour against all members of the Omayyad family on whom he could. lay his hands. That he might let none of them escape, ‘Abdall4h pretended to grant an amnesty to all Omayyads who should come in and acknowledge the new Caliph, and even promised them the restitution of all their property. Ninety members of that unfortunate family allowed themselves to be entrapped by these specious promises, and ‘Abdallah, on pretence of sealing the reconciliation of the two parties, invited them to a banquet. But when they were all collected, a body of executioners rushed into the hall, and slew the Omayyads with blows from whips and rods. A grandson of Hish4m, ‘Abd al-Rahmdn b. Mo‘awiya, who had taken refuge in Africa, alone escaped this massacre. It was he who, at a later date, founded in Spain the Omayyad dynasty of Cordova. The cruelty of the ‘Abbasids excited a feeling of horror in the whole of Syria, and the revolt soon became general. Abu ’1Ward b. Kauthar found himself at the head of forty thousand men, and pitched his camp at Marj al-Akhram, a plain near Kinnesrin. The revolt spread even to Mesopotamia and ‘Irak. One of Merwan’s former generals, Ishak b. Moslim, laid siege to Harran, while Yazid b. Hobaira, formerly governor of ‘Irak, raised an insurrection at Wasit. In Khorasan also, as many as thirty thousand malcontents took up arms against Abu Moslim. Notwithstanding this formidable display of force, the ‘Abbasids remained conquerors. In Syria, ‘Abdallah b. ‘Ali beat Abu ’1Ward at Marj al- Akhram. Abt Ja‘far, brother of the Caliph, compelled Ishak b. Moslim and Yazid b. Hobaira in succession to*~~

~~*the moment of the death of Abu ’‘Abbés, Abu Ja‘far, Mansur.*~~

~~*who then assumed the title of Al-Manstr, “the Victo- rious,” was not in ‘Irak. He had undertaken the leader- ship of the pilgrims who had started on the journey to Mecca, and among whom figured the celebrated Abu Moslim. ‘Abdalléh b. ‘Ali, uncle of Abti ’l‘Abbas, dis- satisfied at having been excluded from the succession, took advantage of this absence to revolt.*~~

~~*Having raised an army and proclaimed himself Caliph, he marched against Harrdn and laid siege to it. On receiving this news, Abt Ja'far hastened to return to Anbar in company with Abi Moslim, whom he placed at the head of his troops, and sent against the rebel. At the approach of Abi Moslim, 'Abdallah, who had among his troops a body of seventeen thousand men of Khordsin, fearing that they might declare for Abi Moslim, had them all slaughtered, as the historians assert, by his Syrians, and then hastened to meet his enemy. The two armies met at Nisibis, and, after a number of skirmishes, a decisive engagement took place on the 7th of Jomadi IL, a.a, 137 (28th November 754). 'Abdallah was defeated and com- pelled to submit to Al-Manstr, who spared his life. The new and brilliant service thus rendered by Abt Moslim to his sovereign ought to have placed him even higher in the favour of Mansur than he already stood. On the contrary, it was the cause of his ruin. The Caliph wished to com- mit the task of maintaining order in Syria to Abu Moslim; but the latter refused to give up his government of Khorasdn, where he enjoyed an extraordinary reputation, and possessed numerous adherents, and, instead of obeying the order of the Caliph, directed his march towards the East. Thenceforth Manstr looked on him only as a dangerous rebel, and sought for means of getting rid of him. On pretence of conferring with him on business of state, he induced him to come to Maddin (the ancient Ctesiphon), caused him to be put to death by his guards, and ordered his body to be thrown into the Tigris. Thus miserably perished the real founder of the 'Abbasid*~~

~~*dynasty, after having accomplished his work, which, as the historians assert, cost the lives of more than 600,000 men, Notwithstanding the defeat of 'Abdallah b. 'Alf and the murder of Abu Moslim, the spirit of rebellion was not yet broken. Risings took place in Mesopotamia and to a still greater extent in Khorasan; and the Caliph's troops were repeatedly beaten by the rebels; but order was at last re-established by Manstir's generals, by Khazim b. Khozaima in Mesopotamia, and by Mohammed b. al- Ash'ath in Khorasan. About the same time Africa and Spain escaped from the dominion of the Eastern Caliphate; the former for a season, the latter permanently. The cause of the revolt of Africa was as follows: As soon as Mansur ascended the throne, he wrote to 'Abd al-Rahmdn, announcing the*~~

~~*death of Abu ’l-“Abbds, and requiring him to take the oath of allegiance. ‘Abd al-Rahmaan sent in his adhesion to the new Caliph, and added a few presents of little value. The Caliph was so much dissatisfied that he replied by a threatening letter which excited the anger of ‘Abd al- Rahman. He called the people together at the hour of prayer, mounted the pulpit, publicly cursed Mansur, and then declared his deposition from the Caliphate. He next caused a circular letter to be written, commanding all Maghrebins to refuse obedience to the Caliph; and this letter was circulated and read from the pulpit throughout the whole extent of the Maghrib (the West). A brother of ‘Abd al-Rahman, Ily4s, saw in this revolt an opportunity of obtaining the government of Africa for himself. Seconded by many of the inhabitants of Kairaw4n, who had remained faithful to the cause of the ‘Abbasids, he attacked his brother, slew him, and proclaimed himself governor in his stead. This revolution in favour of the ‘Abbasids was, however, of no long duration. Habib, the eldest son of ‘Abd al-Rahman, had fled on the night of his father’s murder, and Ily4s caused him to be pursued, with the object of transporting him to Andalusia. Habib was captured, but the vessel which was to convey him to Spain having been detained in port by stress of weather, the partisans of independence took arms, rescued Habib, and prepared to resist Ilyds, who was marching against them at the head of an army. Under these circumstances a fortunate idea occurred to Habib. He challenged his uncle Ily4s to single combat. Ilyds hesitated, but his own soldiers compelled him to accept the challenge. He measured arms with Habib, and was laid prostrate by him with a thrust of his lance. The party of independ- ence thus triumphed, and several years elapsed before the The Agh- Abbasid general, Al-Aghlab, was able to enter Kairawan, \| labites in and regain possession of Africa in the name of the Eastern \| Africa. Caliph. From this time forward, it must be added, Africa only nominally belonged to the ‘Abbasids; for, under the Caliphate of Harun al-Rashid, Ibrdhim, the son of Al- Aghlab, who was invested with the government of Africa, founded in that province a distinct dynasty, that of the Aghlabites. Spanish Coincidently with the revolt in Africa, the independent Caliph- Caliphate of the Western Omayyads was founded in Spain. , “The long dissensions which had preceded the fall of that dynasty in the East, had already prepared the way for the independence of a province so distant from the centre of the empire. Every petty emir there tried to seize sovereign power for himself, and the people groaned under the consequent anarchy.*~~

~~*Weary of these commotions, the Arabs of Spain at last came to an understanding among themselves for the election of a Caliph, and their choice fell upon the last survivor of the Omayyads, 'Abd al-Rahman b. Mo'dwiya, grandson of the Caliph Hisham. This prince was wandering in the deserts of Africa, pursued by his implacable enemies, but everywhere protected and*~~

~~*concealed by the desert tribes, who pitied his misfortunes and respected his illustrious origin. A deputation from Andalusia sought him out in Africa, and offered him the Caliphate of Spain, which he accepted with joy. On 25th September, a.p. 755, 'Abd al-Rahman landed in the Iberian Peninsula, where he was universally welcomed, and speedily founded at Cordova the Western Omayyad Caliph- ate, with which this history has no further concern.*~~

~~*While Mansur was thus losing Africa and Spain, he was trying to take from the Greeks the city of Malatiya, which, from the importance of its situation, was looked on as the key of Asia Minor. In a.u. 139-140 (a.p. 756- 757), 2 Moslem army of 70,000 men invested the place, and, after a vigorous siege, Malatiya was taken by assault. After this success the Moslems marched through Cilicia, entered Pamphylia, and cut to pieces a Greek army on the banks of the Melas. The Greeks asked and obtained a seven years' truce, which Mansur was the more disposed to grant because new and very serious troubles had been stirred up in his empire by certain sectaries of Khordsin, called Rawandis, These RAwandis, like many other Persian sectaries, admitted a number of dogmas completely foreign to Islam, such as the trans- migration of souls and the incarnation of the Deity as a man. 'They believed, for instance, as historians assure us, that divine honours ought to be paid to the Caliph Manstr, They had their name from Rawand, a city near Isfahan, where the sect originated. A great number of these sectaries had repaired to Hashimfya, the residence of the Caliph, and there persisted in marching in pro- cession round his palace, as if it had been the Ka'ba. Mansur, refusing to receive this impious homage, caused the principal chiefs of the sect to be seized and thrown into prison, The*~~

~~*Rdwandis imniediately rose in revolt, broke open the prison doors, rescued their chiefs, and pushed their audacity so far as to besiege the Caliph in his own palace. Very fortunately for Mansur, the populace declared against the Rawandis and massacred them ; but from that time forward he took a dislike to the city of Hashimfya, and resolved to choose another residence. He had at first thought of fixing his place of abode at Cufa; but he remembered the fickle character of the inhabitants, and decided on founding an entirely new city on the banks of the Tigris. His choice fell upon a spot near the ancient Ctesiphon, the capital of the Founda- Sassanids, called Baghdad. There he himself laid the tion of first stone of the city which was to be the centre of the Baghdad. civilised world as long as the Caliphate lasted. A revolt, however, of some importance soon called Mansur's atten- tion from the building of Baghdad. The descendants of 'Ali, who had had reason to think that the 'Abbasids were labouring for their advancement, were now cruelly un- deceived. In a.H. 145 (A.D. 762-763), Mohammed Mahdi, great-grandson of Hosain, and surnamed Al-Nafs al-Zakiya ("the pure soul"), collected a large number of adherents at Medina, and had himself proclaimed Caliph. The governor of Cufa, 'fs4 b. Musd, received orders to march against him, and entered Arabia. The partisans of 'Ali were defeated, and Mohammed Mahdi fell in battle. But meanwhile his brother Ibrahim had gone to Basra, and had there succeeded in exciting a revolt, in presence of which the 'Abbdsid governor had been obliged to capitu- late. The adherents of 'Ali, emboldened by this success, spread themselves over 'Irak, and obtained possession of several places, among which was the city of Wasit. Ibrahim was already advancing towards Cufa, at the head of a strong army, when '[s4 b. Mus4, who had been hastily recalled from Arabia, threw himself in his way. A terrible conflict took place. At last Ibrahim fell, pierced by an arrow, and, in spite of the desperate efforts*~~

~~*Mahdi.*~~

~~*580*~~

~~*of his followers, his body remained in the hands of the enemy. The partisans of 'Ali then dispersed, and never again ventured to have recourse to arms.*~~

~~The Caliph was highly delighted when he heard of the decisive victory gained by 'Isa, but, far from rewarding his valiant cousin, he tried to compel him to renounce his right of succession to the Caliphate, with the view of substituting as heir-presumptive his own son Mohammed. '{s4 at first energetically refused to abandon his rights ; but Mansur did not hesitate at a shameless deception, and produced false witnesses, who swore that 'Is4 had waived his claim in favour of Mohammed b. Manstir. However unwillingly, 'fs4 was obliged to yield his priority to Mohammed, but it was understood that, in case of the death of the latter, the succession should return to 'fsa. One of the false witnesses was, it is asserted, Khalid b. Barmak, the head of that celebrated Persian family the Barmecides, which played so important a part in the reign of Harun al-Rashid. To this Khalid, Manstr had entrusted the elevated post of minister of finance.~~

~~In a.H. 158 (s.D. 774-775), Mansur, feeling the decline of his powers, resolved to undertake for the last time the pilgrimage to Mecca. At the last station on the route he had a fall from his horse, and died at the gate of the Holy City. He was nearly seventy years of age, and had reigned for twenty-two years. He was buried at Mecca.~~

~~3. Mohammed b. Manstr was at Baghddd when he received the news of his father's death, and hastened to have himself proclaimed Caliph. He then took the title of Mahdi ("the well-directed"). To make his accession welcome to his subjects, he began by granting an amnesty to a great number of persons wlio had incurred the anger of Manstr, and had been thrown into prison. Among these was a certain Dawtd b. Ya'kub, whom Mahdi after- wards made his prime minister. But, on the other hand, Mahdi did not choose to confirm in their posts the pro- vincial governors in whom his father had placed confidence ; he supplied their places by creatures of his own. These changes displeased the people of Khordsdn, who revolted under the leadership of a certain Yusuf b. Ibrahim, sur- named Al-Barm. Mahdi sent against him his general Yazid b. Mazyad, who, after a desperate struggle, defeated Yusuf, took him prisoner, and brought him in triumph to Baghdad, where he was put to the torture and crucified. Mahdi had been scarcely a year on the throne, when he resolved to accomplish the pilgrimage to Mecca, and at the same time to visit the tomb of his father. Leaving his eldest son Mus& as governor of Baghdad, he set off,~~

~~*accompanied by his second son Hartin and a numerous suite. The chroniclers relate that the Caliph had ordered a great number of camels to be laden with snow, and that he reached Mecca without having exhausted this store. Immediately on his arrival in the Holy City, he applied himself, at the request of the inhabitants, to the renewal of the veils which covered the exterior walls of the Ka'ba. For a very long time these veils had been placed one over another, no care having been taken to remove the old covering when a new one was put on; so that the accumu- lated weight caused uneasiness respecting the stability of the walls. Mahdi caused the temple to be entirely stripped, and covered the walls again with a single veil of great richness. On this occasion he distributed considerable largesses among the Meccans. From Mecca, Mahdi went to Medina, where he caused the mosque to be enlarged. During his stay in that city he formed himself a guard of honour, composed of five hundred descendants of the Ansar,! to whom he assigned lands in 'Irak to be held in*~~

~~*1 The first citizens of Medina who embraced Islam were called Ansar; see above, p. 554, ;*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*[“ABBASIDS.*~~

~~*fief. Struck by the difficulties of every kind which had to be encountered by poor pilgrims who desired to repair to Mecca from Baghdad and its neighbourhood, he resolved to come to their help. His first care was to have the road from Baghdad to Mecca laid out, and its divisions.marked by milestones. He next ordered the construction at every stage of a kind of inn, where the poorer travellers might find shelter and food. He also saw to having new wells dug and cisterns built along the whole route.*~~

~~*Whilst he was devoting himself to these pious labours, he was menaced by a dangerous revolt in Khorasan. Its leader was a sectary called Hakim, surnamed Al-Mokanna' or the Veiled One, because he never appeared in public without having his face covered with a mask. Al- Mokanna' hoped to gather a great number of adherents around him, and to govern the province as absolutely as Abt Moslim had formerly done. His religious teaching consisted in the assertion that God had several times become incarnate*~~

~~among men, and that his last incarna- tion was Mokanna‘ himself. Many Persians were seduced by his words, and still more by the hope of plundering the property of the Moslems, which Mokanna’ promised to give up to them. The governor of Khordsdn and several other generals who marched against these sectaries were defeated; but at last the Caliph charged a skilful captain, Sa‘{d al-Harashi, with the direction of operations, and Sa‘id, having compelled the impostor to throw him- self into the city of Kash, soon reduced him to a choice between ‘surrender and death. Mokanna*‘ preferred the latter alternative, and took poison.~~

~~These disturbances did not suffice to turn Mahdi’s thoughts from the hereditary enemy of the Caliphate. Every summer he sent expeditions into Asia Minor against the Greeks; but these were not successful, and the Caliph decided on leading his army in person. Having levied in Khords4n a large number of those mountaineers who had always distinguished themselves by their valour, he assembled his army in the plains of Baraddn, on the banks of the Tigris, and commenced his march .u. 163, taking with him his second son Hart, and leaving his eldest son Musd4 as governor of Baghd4d. The latter was also designated as his successor in the Caliphate, ‘fs4 b. Mus4 having definitively renounced the throne. Mahdi traversed Mesopotamia and Syria, entered Cilicia, and established himself on the banks of the Jaihan (Pyramus). Thence he despatched an expeditionary force, at the head of which his son Hartin was nominally placed. In reality, that prince being too young to direct military operations, the chief command was exercised by his tutor, the Barmecide Yahya b. Khalid. Harun took the fortress of Samali after a siege of thirty-eight days. In consequence of this feat of arms, Mahdi made Harun governor of Azerbaijan and Armenia. Two years later war broke out afresh between the Moslems and the Greeks. Leo IV., Emperor of Constantinople, had recently died, leaving the crown to Constantine Porphyrogenitus. This prince was then only ten years old, and would have been incap- able of governing. His mother Irene took the regency on herself. By her orders an army of 90,000 men, under the command of Michael Lachonodracon, entered Asia Minor. The Moslems, on their side, invaded Cilicia under the orders of ‘Abd al-Kabir, but were defeated by the Greeks. Mahdi then recalled his son Hartn, and enjoined on him to avenge the failure of the arms of Islam. Hartin assembled an army of nearly 100,000 men, and conceived the project of~~

~~carrying the war to the very gates of Constantinople. The patrician Nicetas, who sought to oppose his march, was defeated by Hartn's general, Yazid b. Mazyad, and forced to take refuge at Nicomedia. Hartin marched through Asia Minor, and~~

~~Hadi.~~

~~'ABBASIDS. |~~

~~pitched his camp on the shores of the Bosphorus, Irene took alarm, sued for peace, and obtained it, but on humiliating conditions. This brilliant success increased Mahdi's affection for Harun to such an extent that he resolved, a few years later, to declare him his successor instead of Musé. It was necessary first to obtain from Miusé a renunciation of his rights; and for this purpose his father recalled him from Jorjan, where he was then engaged on an expedition against the rebels of Tabaristan. Musa, who had had information of his father's intentions, refused to obey this order. Mahdi determined to march in person against his rebellious son (a.H. 169), and set out, accompanied by Harun. But, after his arrival at MaAsabadhan, a place in Persian 'Irak or Jabal, the Caliph died suddenly, at the age of only forty-three. There are two versions of the cause of his death: some attribute it to an accident met with in hunting; others believe him to have been poisoned. If this was really the case, although we have no proofs against Mus4, we may reasonably sus- pect him of having been privy to the sudden death of his father.~~

~~4, Mahdi having died before he could carry out his plan for assuring the throne to Harun, the succession natur- ally fell to Musa, and he was proclaimed Caliph at Baghdad in the year of his father's death. He took the title of Hadi (He who directs). Harun made no opposition to the accession of his brother, and the army which had accom- panied Mahdi returned peacefully from Jabal to Baghdad.~~

~~The accession of a new Caliph doubtless appeared to the partisans of the house of 'Alf a favourable opportunity for arising. Hosain b. 'Ali, a descendant of that Hasan who had formerly renounced his pretensions to the Caliphate through fear of Mo'dwiya I., raised an insurrection at Medina with the support of numerous adherents, and had himself proclaimed~~

~~*Caliph. But having unfortunately conceived the idea of going on pilgrimage to Mecca, he was attacked at Fakh by a party of 'Abbasids, and perished in the combat. His cousin Idris b. 'Abdallah succeeded in escaping and fled to Egypt, whence he passed into Morocco; and there, at a later period, his son founded the Idrisite dynasty.*~~

~~*Hadi, as may be supposed, had never been able to forget that he had narrowly escaped being supplanted by his brother. He formed a plan for excluding Hartn from the Caliphate, and transmitting the succession to his own son Ja'far. He neglected no possible means of attaining this object, and obtained the assent of his ministers, and of the principal chiefs of his army, who took the oath of allegiance to Ja'far. Only Yahya b. Khalid the Barmecide, Hartn's former tutor, absolutely refused to betray the interests of his pupil. In a discussion which took place between him and the Caliph on this subject, Yahy4 showed such firm- ness and boldness that Haddi resolved on his death, and Harthama b. A'yan, one of the bravest generals of the empire, had already received the order to go and take his head, when the Caliph died suddenly. One of those terrible domestic dramas had been acted of which so many were afterwards seen in the palace of the Caliphs. The mother of Hadi and Hartin was Khaizordn, a haughty and intriguing woman, whose aim it was to get the direction of affairs into her own hands, leaving Hadi only the shadow of power. Her influence over all matters of government was so well understood that her door was beset all day by a crowd of petitioners, who neglected the Caliph and preferred to address their requests to her. Hadi soon became indignant at the subordinate part which his mother wished him to play, and after a dispute on the matter, he attempted to poison her. Khaizoran, hoping to find a more submissive instrument of her will in her second son, and wishing to protect herself against fresh*~~

~~*attempts at murder, caused Hadi to be taken unawares and smothered with cushions by two young slaves whom she had presented to him. (Rabf' IL, a.H. 170, Sept. A.D. 786.)*~~

~~*5. We have now reached the most celebrated name Hérin among the Arabian Caliphs, celebrated not only in the l-Ra- East, but in the West as well, where the stories of the 4*~~

~~*Thousand and One Nights have made us familiar with that world which the narrators have been pleased to represent to us in such brilliant colours.*~~

~~*On the unexpected death of Hadi, the generals and ministers who had declared against Harin, perceiving that popular favour did not incline to the son of the late Caliph, hastened to rally round the son of Khaizordn ; and Harin, surnamed Al-Rashid (The Upright), ascended the throne without opposition. His first act was to choose as prime minister his former tutor, the faithful Yahya b. Khalid, and to confide important posts to the two sons of Yahya, Fadl and Ja'far, the former of whom was also his own foster-brother. The Barmecide family were endued in the highest degree with those qualities of generosity and liberality which the Arabs prized so highly. Thus the chroniclers are never wearied in their praises of the Barmecides. Loaded with all the burdens of government, Yahya brought the most distinguished abilities to the exercise of his office. He put the frontiers in a state of defence, and supplied all that was wanting for their security. He filled the public treasury, and carried the splendour of the throne to the highest point. The following anecdote will show what an amount of earnest affection the Barmecide family succeeded in winning :—*~~

~~*After Hartn, as we shall relate farther on, had ruined the Barmecides of whose influence he was jealous, he forbade the poets to compose elegies on the disgrace of the family, and commanded that all who disobeyed this order should be punished. One day, as one of the soldiers of the Caliph's guard was passing near a ruined building, he perceived a man holding a paper in his hand, and reciting aloud, and with many tears, a lament over the ruin of the palace of the Barmecides. 'The soldier arrested the man and led him to the palace of the Caliph, who ordered the culprit to be brought before him, and asked him why he had infringed his orders. " Prince," replied the man, "let me relate my history to thee ; when thou hast heard it, do with me as thou wilt. I was an inferior clerk under Yahya b. Khalid. He said to me one day: 'Thou must invite me to thy house.' 'My lord,' I replied, 'I am quite unworthy of such an honour, and my house is not fit to receive*~~

~~*thee.' 'No,' said Yahya, 'thou must absolutely do what I require of thee.' 'In that case,' answered I, 'grant me some little delay that I may make suitable arrangements.' Yahya granted me some months. As soon as I informed him that I was ready, he repaired to my abode, accompanied by his two sons, Fadl and Ja'far, and by some of his most intimate friends. Scarcely had he dismounted from his horse when he begged me to give him some- thing to eat. I offered him some roasted chickens. When he had eaten his fill, he went over the whole of my house, and having seen it all, he asked me to show him the buildings attached to it. 'My lord,' said I, 'thou hast seen everything.' 'No,' said he, 'thou hast another house.' In vain I assured him that I had but one; he persisted in his assertion, and, sending for a mason, ordered him to make an opening in the wall. 'My lord,' said J, 'may I venture thus to make my way into my neighbour's house?' 'It matters not,' replied he. When a doorway had been opened, he passed through it, followed by his two sons, and I went after him. We entered a delightful garden, well planted and watered by fountains. In this garden stood a beautiful house with pavilions ~ adorned with furniture and carpets, and filled with slaves of both sexes, all of perfect beauty. ' All this is thine,' said Yahya to me. I kissed his hands and poured out my thanks to him ; and then I learned that on the very day when he had spoken to me of inviting him he had bought the land adjoining to my house, and had had it laid out for me without my ever suspecting it. I had certainly noticed that building was going on, but I was far from imagining that all this was intended for me. Yahyd next addressed himself to Ja'far and said: 'Here are certainly a house and servants, but who will provide for their support?' 'I,' replied Ja'far, 'will give him a farm and its dependencies, and will send him the deed of gift.' 'Very well,' continued Yahya; 'but how is he to live until he shall receive the revenue of his property?' 'I owe hima thousand pieces of gold,' said Fadl, 'and I will send them to his*~~

~~*582*~~

~~*house.' Thanks to these magnificent gifts, I afterwards gained great wealth, —wealth which I still enjoy. Since that day, I have never lost any opportunity of singing the praises of that noble family. And now, Prince, slay me if thou wilt; I am ready to die." Hardin, affected by this talc, let the*~~

~~*man depart, and in future forbade no man to weep for the tragical end of the sons of Barmak. (£l-Fachri, ed. Ahlwardt, p. 287.)*~~

~~*Although the administration of Hartn's states was com- mitted to skilful hands, yet the first years of his long reign were not free from troubles. Towards the year 176 (A.D. 792-793), a member of the house of 'Ali, named Yahya b. 'Abdallah, who had taken refuge at Dailam on the shores of the Caspian Sea, succeeded in forming a powerful party, and publicly announced his pretensions to the Caliphate. Hdrin immediately sent an army of 50,000 men against the rebel, under the command of Fadl. Reluctant, however, to fight against a descendant of the Prophet, Fadl first attempted to induce him to sub- mit, by promising him safety for his life and a brilliant position at the court of Baghd4d. Yahya accepted these conditions, but he required that the Caliph should send him letters of pardon countersigned by the highest legal authorities and the principal personages of the empire. Harin consented to do so, and Yahya, furnished with the Caliph's safe-conduct, repaired to Baghdad, where he met with a splendid reception. At the end of some months, however, he was calumniously accused of conspiracy, and the Caliph, seizing this opportunity of ridding himself of a rival who might prove dangerous, threw him into prison, where he was soon after put to death. Dreading fresh insurrections, Harin thought it well to secure the person of another descendant of 'Ali, Mus4 b. Ja'far, who was resident at Medina, where he enjoyed the highest consider- ation. The unfortunate man was sent to Baghdad, and there died by poison.*~~

~~*Meanwhile Harun did not forget the hereditary enemy against whom he had already fought. Under his reign all the strong places of Syria were formed into a special province, which received the name of "Awdsim. The charge of fortifying the city of Tarsus was committed to Faraj, the chief of the Turkish soldiers, whom the Caliphs were beginning to employ, and who were at a later period to become their masters. The ancient Anazarbus was rebuilt, and garrisoned with a military colony from Khordsén. Thanks to these measures, the Moslem armies were able to advance boldly into Asia Minor, Ishak b. Solaimdn entered Phrygia and defeated the Greek gover- nor of that province. A Moslem fleet destroyed that of the Greeks in the Gulf of Satalia. Harin in person invaded Asia Minor in the year 181 (a.D. 797-*~~

~~798), and during the following years his generals gained continual victories over the Byzantines, so that Irene was compelled to sue for peace. An attack by the Khazars called the Caliph's attention from his successes in Asia Minor. That people had made an irruption into Armenia, and their attack had been so sudden that the Moslems were unable to defend themselves, and a hundred thousand of them had been reduced to captivity. Two valiant generals, Khozaima b. Khazim and Yazid b. Mazyad, marched against the Khazars and drove them out of Armenia.~~

~~In the midst of the cares of war, Harun did not forget his religious duties, and few years passed without his making the pilgrimage. In one of these pilgrimages, A.H. 186 (A.D. 802), he was accompanied by his two eldest sons, Mohammed and 'Abdallah, and having determined to fix the order of succession in so formal a manner as to take away all pretext for future contentions, he executed a deed by which he appointed Mohammed his immediate heir; after him 'Abdall4h, and after 'Abdallih a third of his sons, named Kasim. Mohammed received the surname of Al-Amin (The Sure), "Abdallah that of Al-Ma'mun (He~~

~~['ABBASIDS.~~

~~in whom men trust), and Kasim that of Mo'tamin billéh (He who trusts in God). Harin further stipulated that Ma'min should have as his share, during the lifetime of his brother, the government of the eastern part of the empire. Each of the parties concerned swore to observe faithfully every part of this deed, which the Caliph caused to be hung up in the Ka''ba, imagining that it would be thus guaranteed against all violation on the part of men. These precautions were to be rendered vain by the perfidy of Amin. We shall see hereafter how he kept his oath, and how he expiated his treachery by death.~~

~~It was in the following year, at the very moment when the Barmecides thought their position most secure, that Hartin brought sudden ruin upon them. 'The causes of their disgrace have been differently stated by the annalists. Some relate that the Caliph, preferring to all other society that of his sister 'Abbdsa and of Ja'far b. Yahyd, resolved to unite them in~~

~~*marriage, in order to be able to bring them together in his presence without a breach of etiquette. He meant, however, that Ja'far should continue to be only the nominal husband of his sister. Ja'far accepted this condition, but it was not long before he forgot it, and the Caliph learned that his sister had given birth toa son. This, it is said, was the cause of Ja'far's disgrace, which involved his father and his brother. This story may be true; but the principal cause of the fall of the Barmecides appears to have consisted in the abuses of power of which they had been guilty, and in the sovereign influence which they exercised on those around them. The Barmecides lived in a magnificent palace opposite to that of the Caliph. Seeing one day an extraordinary crowd around the dwelling of his first minister, Harin was moved to say: "Verily Yahy4 has taken all business into his own hands; he it is who really exercises supreme power ; as for me, I am Caliph only in name." This secret dis- satisfaction was increased by a new act of disobedience on the part of Ja'far. Harun had ordered him to put to death secretly a member of the house of 'Ali, whose intrigues he dreaded. Ja'far allowed the victim to escape, and afterwards swore to the Caliph that his orders had been executed. Soon after, however, information against him was given to Hartn, who, after compelling Ja'far to acknowledge the truth, had his head struck off and brought tohim by Masrur, the chief of his eunuchs. On the very next day Yahyd, his son Fadl, and all the other Barme- cides, were arrested and imprisoned; all their property was confiscated ; and Hartn chose as his prime minister Fadl b. Rabi', who had been his chamberlain.*~~

~~*In the same year, a revolution broke out at Constan- tinople, which overthrew the Empress Irene, and raised Nicephorus to power. The new emperor had _ scarcely ascended the throne, when he thought himself strong enough to refuse the payment of tribute, and wrote an insulting letter to Harin, who contented himself with replying: 'Thou shalt not hear, but see, my answer." He then assembled an army, entered Asia Minor, and took Heraclea, plundering and burning along his whole line of march, till Nicephorus, in his alarm, sued for peace. Scarcely had the Caliph returned into winter quarters, when Nicephorus broke the treaty. Notwith- standing the rigour of the season, Harun retraced his steps, and this time Nicephorus was compelled to observe his engagements. The year after, aH. 189 (a.D. 804- 805), disturbances arose in Khordsin. They were caused by the*~~

~~*malversations of the governor of that province, 'Alt b. 'fs4, and the Caliph went in person to Merv to judge of the reality of the complaints which had reached him. 'Ali b. 'fs4 hastened to meet the Caliph on his arrival at Ray. He brought with him a great quantity of presents, which he distributed with such profusion*~~

~~*Amin.*~~

~~*ABBASIDS.*~~ |

~~*among the courtiers that every one found a thousand reasons for excusing his conduct. HA4rtn confirmed him in his post and returned to Baghdad, through which, how- ever, he only passed, and went on to Rakka on the Euphrates, a city which became his habitual residence. He did not long enjoy the repose which he went there to seek, for Nicephorus again broke the treaty of peace, and the Caliph was obliged to take the field anew. Once more Nicephorus was beaten, and so completely that he was obliged to submit to the very harsh conditions which the victor imposed on him.*~~

~~*Two years later, new disturbances broke out in Khora- san, where a certain Rafi b. Laith had revolted. Harin set out again for that province, accompanied by his son Ma'mun. It was to be his last journey. He was attacked by a tumour in the abdomen, and struggled in vain against this malady, which carried him off a year after his depart- ure, A.H. 193 (A.D. 808-809), just on his arrival at the city of Tus, the birthplace of the great epic poet of Persia, Firdausi. Hartin was only forty-seven years of age.*~~

~~*6. On the death of Harun, his minister Fadl b. Rabi' hastened to call together all the troops of the late Caliph, and to lead them back to Baghdad, in order to place them in the hands of the new sovereign, Amin. He even led back the corps which was intended to occupy Khorasan, and which ought to have fallen to the share of Ma'mun, according to the testament of Hérin. Fadl b. Rabi' thus committed a serious violation of the rights of Ma'mun ; but he cared little for this, being chiefly desirous of winning the confidence of the new Caliph. He was quite aware, however, that in thus acting he was making Ma'mun his irreconcilable enemy; and he therefore purposed to use every endeavour to arouse against him the enmity of his brother Amin. He advised him to exclude Ma'mun from the*~~

~~*succession, and the Caliph was weak enough to listen to him. Receiving the order to resign his government of Khordsan and to repair to Baghdd4d, Ma'miun was greatly perplexed ; but his tutor and vizier, Fadl b. Sahl, reani- mated his courage, and pointed out to him that, if he obeyed the orders of the Caliph, certain death awaited him at Baghdad. Ma'miun resolved to hold out against Amin, and found pretexts for eluding the orders of his brother and remaining in Khorasan. Amin, in his anger, caused the testament of his father, which, as we have seen, was preserved in the Ka*'ba, to be destroyed, declared, on his own authority, the rights of Ma'mun to the Caliphate to be forfeited, and caused the army to swear allegiance to his own son Musé, a child five years of age, on whom he bestowed the title of Natik bil-Hakk, '""He who speaks according to truth" (a.H. 194, a.p. 809-810). On hearing the news, Ma'miun, strong in the rightfulness of his claim, retaliated by suppressing the Caliph's name in all public acts. Amin immediately despatched to Khordsén an army of fifty thousand men, under the command of 'Alt b. 'fsa. Ma'min, on his side, raised troops among his faithful people of Khorasdn, and entrusted their command to Tahir b. Hosain, who displayed remarkable abilities in the war that ensued. In the following year, the two armies met under the walls of Ray, and victory declared for Téhir. Ma'miun now no longer hesitated to take the title of Caliph. The year after, Amin placed in the field two new armies, commanded respectively by Ahmed b. Mazyad and 'Abd- allah b. Homaid b. Kahtaba. The skilful Tahir b. Hosain succeeded in creating divisions among the troops of his adversaries, and obtained possession, without striking a blow, of the city of Holwdn, an advantage which placed him at the very gates of Baghdad. Ma'min immediately sent Tahir reinforcements under the orders of Harthama b. A'yan, which enabled him to maintain a firm hold on all the conquered territory, and to continue his victorious*~~

~~*march to the capital. Reverses naturally lead to fresh reverses. One after the other the provinces fell away from Amin, and he soon found himself in possession of Baghdad alone, which was speedily invested by the troops of*~~

~~Tahir and Harthama. That unfortunate capital, though blockaded on every side, made a desperate defence for two years. Ultimately the eastern part of the city fell into the hands of Tahir, and Amin, deserted by his followers, was compelled to surrender. He resolved to treat with Harthama, as he hated Tahir; but this step caused his ruin. 'Tahir learned by his spies that Harthama was to receive the Caliph in person, and gave orders to a body of horsemen to arrest Amin as he issued from Baghdad under cover of the night. On the banks of the Tigris, Harthama awaited Amin with a boat, but scarcely had the Caliph set foot in it, when the agents of Tahir poured on it a storm of arrows and stones. The boat sank, and the Caliph had to make his escape by swimming. But he was closely followed up, and had scarcely left the river when he fell into the hands of his enemies, who shut him up ina hut and went to inform Tahir of the capture. The victorious general immediately ordered him to be put to death, and the order was carried out. The head of the unfortunate Amin was cut off and sent to Ma'mun, a.u. 198. It was presented to him by his vizier, Fadl b. Sahl, surnamed Dhu 'l-Riydsatain, or "the man with two governments," because his master had committed to him both the ministry of war and the general administration. Ma'mun, on see- ing the head, hid his joy beneath a feigned display of sorrow.~~

~~7. On the day following that on which Amin had Ma'mtn.~~

~~perished so miserably, Tahir caused Ma'min to be pro- claimed at Baghdad. The accession of this prince appeared likely to put an end to the evils of civil war, and to restore to the empire the order necessary for its prosperity. It was not so, however. 'The reign of Ma'min—that reign on which art, science, and letters, under the patron- age of the Caliph, threw so brilliant a lustre—had a very stormy beginning. Ma'mtn was in no haste to remove to Baghdad, but continued to make Merv his temporary residence. In his gratitude to the two men to whom he owed his throne, he conferred on Tahir the government of Mesopotamia and Syria, and chose as prime minister of the empire Fadl b. Sahl, who had been already his vizier in the government of Khords4n. The adherents of 'Ali seized on the elevation of Ma'mun to power as a pretext for fresh revolts at Mecca, at Medina, and in 'Irak. At Cufa a certain Ibn Tabdtabé also broke out into open rebellion, and placed an army in the field under one of his partisans, Abu 'l-Sar4y4. Hasan b.~~

~~*Sahl, brother of Ma'miun's prime minister, who had been made governor of all the provinces conquered by Tahir, immediately sent troops against Cufa. They were defeated, and Abu 'l- Saraya, encouraged by this first success, and no longer finding a secondary part sufficient for his ambition, poisoned his chief Ibn TabdAtabé, and put in his place another of the family of 'Alf, Mohammed b. Mohammed, whom, on account of his extreme youth, he hoped to govern at his will. Fresh troops sent against Abu '71- Saraya fared no better than the first, and several cities of 'Irak, as Basra, Wasit, and Madain, fell into the hands of the rebels. Abu 'l-Sar4y4 was already marching against Baghdad, when Hasan b. Sahl, in great alarm, hastily recalled Harthama b. A'yan, one of the heroes of the civil war, who was already on his way back to Merv. As soon as this general had returned from Khorasan, the face of affairs changed. The adherents of 'Ali were everywhere driven back, and the whole of 'Irak fell again into the hands of the 'Abbasids. Cufa was taken by assault, and both Abt 'l-Sar4y4 and Mohammed b. Mohammed were*~~

~~*made prisoners. The former had his head struck off ; the latter was sent to Khords4n. The revolt in Arabia was also quickly stifled, and it might have been supposed that peace was about to be re-established. This, however, was by no means the case. The civil war had caused a swarm of vagabonds to spring, as it were, from underground at Baghdad. They proceeded to treat the capital as a con- quered city; and such was their audacity that they plundered houses and carried off women and children at mid-day. It became necessary for all good citizens to organize themselves into a regular militia, in order to master these ruffians. Meanwhile, at Merv, Ma'mtn was adopting a decision which fell like a thunderbolt on the 'Abbasids. In a.u. 201 (a.p. 816-817), under pretence of putting an end to the continual revolts of the partisans of 'Alf, and acting on the advice of his prime minister, Fadl, he publicly designated as his successor in the Caliphate 'AH b. Musa, a direct descendant of Hosain the son of 'Alf, and proscribed black, the colour of the 'Abbasids, in favour of that of the house of 'Ali, green. This step was well calculated to delight the followers of 'Ali, but it naturally could not fail to exasperate the 'Abbasids and their partisans. The people of Baghdad refused to take the oath to 'Alf b. Mus4 as heir-presumptive,*~~

~~*declared Ibrahim Ma'mun deposed, and elected his uncle Ibrahim, son of i of Mahdt, to the Caliphate! The news reached the Caliph 'loctedat ONLY indirectly, for his minister Fadl, desiring to leave Baghdad. Ma'mtin only the shadow of power, kept all important events carefully from his knowledge. The eyes of the Caliph were opened, and he now perceived that Fadl had been treating him as a puppet. His anger knew no bounds. Fadl was one day found murdered, and 'Ali b. Musé died suddenly. The historians bring no open accu- sation against Ma'mtn of having got rid of these two personages ; but it seems clear that it was not chance that did him such a seasonable service. Ma'mun of course affected the profoundest grief, and, in order to disarm suspicion, appointed as his prime minister the brother of Fadl, Hasan b. Sahl, whose daughter Buran he also after- wards married. But on the other hand, in order to quiet the people of Baghdad, he wrote to them: "The cause of your dissatisfaction in the business of 'Ali b. Mus& no longer exists ; since he who was the object of your resent- ment has just died." From that moment the pseudo- caliph Ibrahim found himself deserted, and was obliged to seek safety in concealment. His precarious reign had, however, lasted nearly two years. Ma'mun now decided on making a public entry into Baghdad, but to show that he came as a master, he still displayed for several days the green flag of the house of 'Ali, though at last, at the entreaty of his courtiers, he consented to resume the black. From this time the real reign of Ma'mun began, freed as he now was from the guardianship of Fadl. His general Tahir alone continued to excite his suspicions. Under the pretence that he could no longer endure the sight of the murderer of his brother, he removed Tahir to a dis- tance by appointing him governor of Khorasan. Like most of the great Moslem generals, Tahir, it is said, conceived the project of creating an independent kingdom for himself. His death, a.H. 207, prevented its realization ; but as his descendants succeeded him one after the other in the post of governor, he may be said to have really founded a dynasty in Khorasin. When, two years later, the impostor Babak set up a communistic sect in Armenia and Azer- baijan, it was a son of Tahir, "Abdallah, who was commis- sioned by Ma'mtin to put him down. Notwithstanding his ability, 'Abdallah could not accomplish the task, and it*~~

~~*1 On this event, see a remarkable essay by Barbier de Meynard, in the Journal asiatique for March-April, 1869.*~~

~~*[“ABBASIDS.*~~

~~*was only under Ma’mtn’s successor that Babak was taken*~~

~~*and put to death.*~~

~~*Ever since Ma’miun’s entry into Baghdad, the pseudo- caliph Ibra4him had led a wandering life. He was arrested one night in Baghdad, under the disguise of a woman, and brought before Ma’muin. The latter gener- ously pardoned him, and also granted an amnesty to the former minister of Amin, Fadl b. Rabi‘, although he had been the chief promoter of the terrible civil war which had so lately shaken the empire. After that time, Ibrahim the son of Mahdi lived peacefully at the court, cultivating the arts of singing and music, in which he excelled.*~~

~~*Tranquillity being now everywhere re-established, Ma’- min gave himself up, without hindrance, to his scientific and literary tastes. He caused works on mathematics, astronomy, medicine, and philosophy, to be translated from the Greek. It was also by his orders that two learned mathematicians undertook the measurement of a degree of the earth’s circumference. Ma’mun interested himself, too, in questions of religious dogma. Shocked at the opinion which had spread among the Moslem doctors, that the Koran was the uncreated word of God, he published an edict commanding them to renounce this error, Several distinguished doctors, and, among others, the celebrated Ibn Hanbal, founder of one of the four orthodox Moslem sects, were obliged to appear before an inquisitorial tribunal; and as they persisted in their belief respecting the Koran, they were thrown into prison. Meanwhile, war having broken out between the Greeks and the Moslems, Ma’mtn set out for Asia Minor, to put himself at the head of hisarmy. On his arrival at Tarsus, he received from the governor of Baghdad the report of the tribunal of inquisition, and ordered that the culprits should be sent off to him. Happily for these unfortunate doctors, they had scarcely started on the road to the frontiers, when news of the Caliph’s death reached Baghd4d. Ma’mtn having bathed in the Podendon, a burning fever was the result, which brought him to the grave in A.H. 218 (a.D. 833), Before his death, he*~~

~~*designated as his successor his brother Mo‘tasim billah, (He who seeks defence in God), whom he had for a long time preferred to Mo’tamin.*~~

~~*8. The accession of the new Caliph Mo’tasim met at Mo’tasim first with active opposition in the army, where a powerful billab. party had been formed in favour of ‘Abbas, the son of Ma’mtn. Thanks, however, to the disinterested conduct of that prince, civil war was averted. ‘Abbas publicly renounced all pretension to the Caliphate, and took the oath of allegiance to his uncle. Mo’tamin, the son of Harun, imitated the conduct of ‘Abbas, and the whole army accepted Mo’tasim, who made his public entry into Baghdad in the month of Ramadan 218.*~~

~~*The new Caliph, far from putting a stop to the persecu- tion which had been directed against the orthodox doctors, took up and carried out the views of Ma’mtn. The doctor Ibn Hanbal was beaten with rods and thrown into prison, together with several of his companions, and was not restored to liberty till the Caliphate of Motawakkil. This persecution had already prejudiced the people against Mo‘tasim, and their discontent became more marked when the Caliph created a new body of troops, specially intended to watch over his person. This new guard was composed of Turks, an unbridled and undisciplined body of soldiery, who, moreover, held in open contempt the religious pre- cepts of Islam. Tired of the excesses of every kind com- mitted by the Turks, the people of Baghdad rose in insurrection, and Mo‘tasim, not daring to act with severity either against his guard or the citizens, took the course of quitting the city. Leaving the government of the capital in the hands of his son Wathik bill4h (He who trusts in*~~

~~*Wathik.*~~

~~*“ABBASIDS. |*~~

~~*God), he established himself with his guard at Samarra, a small place situated a few leagues above Baghdad, and changed its name to Sorra- man-ra’a (He rejoices who sees it). This resolution of Mo‘tasim was destined to prove fatal to his dynasty ; for it placed the Caliphs at the mercy of their Pretorians. In fact, from the time of Mo’tasim, the Caliphate became the plaything of the Turkish guard, and its decline was continuous. Some glorious feats of arms, however, were still performed under Mo‘tasim. The*~~

~~*sectary Babak was at last taken by Afshin, a Turkish general of the Caliph, in the year 223 (A.D. 837-838). Babak was carried to Baghddd, led through the city on the back of an elephant, and then delivered to the executioners, who cut off his arms and his legs. Afshin, however, was very ill rewarded for his services, for shortly afterwards the Caliph had him put to death on a charge of heresy.*~~

~~*The death of Ma'mun had for the moment suspended hostilities with Constantinople ; under Mo'tasim the war was rekindled. A valiant Greek general, Manuel, who had incurred the displeasure of the Emperor Theophilus, took refuge with the Caliph, who eagerly welcomed him and gave him a command. Manuel began by reducing Khoras4n, which had risen in revolt, and Mo'tasim was so well satisfied with him that he thought of employing him against his own countrymen. This was precisely what Theophilus dreaded, and he took measures accordingly to bring back the banished general to his side. He sent an ambassador to Mo'tasim, under pretence of ransoming some Greek prisoners ; but the real object of his mission, which he contrived to communicate to Manuel, was the recall of that general. Manuel, feigning great animosity against his country, himself asked to be allowed to lead a Moslem army into Cappadocia. The Caliph granted his request, and sent with him his own son WaAthik bill4h. But, as soon as they reached the frontiers of Cappadocia, Manuel confessed to the young prince that his intention was to return to Constantinople, and quitted the army. Theophilus, taking advantage of the confusion into which the departure of Manuel had thrown the Moslems, made an incursion into Syria, laid waste that province as far as Zabatra, and returned loaded with booty. At the news of this disaster, Mo'tasim assembled a formidable army, estimated at more than two hundred thousand men, penetrated into Asia Minor, beat the Greeks, and took the city of Amorium, which he ordered to be razed to the ground, A revolt which broke out at Baghdad in favour of his nephew 'Abbas, the son of Ma'mtn, compelled the Caliph to turn back. Mo'tasim had the unfortunate "Abbas arrested, and he was soon after found dead in his prison. Mo'tasim survived him only four years. He died at Sorra-man-ra'a, in A.H. 227 (a.p. 841-842).*~~

~~*9. His son Wathik, who succeeded him, showed himself no less intolerant on the doctrinal question of the un- created Koran. He carried his zeal to such*~~

~~a point that, on the occasion of an exchange of Greek against Moslem prisoners, in the year 231 (a.p. 845-846), he ordered that all the Moslem captives who would not declare their belief that the Koran was a human work, should be left in the hands of the enemy. The reign of Wathik billah was not otherwise marked by any very striking events. He died in 232 (A.p. 846-847), after a reign of five years, As he had appointed no successor before his death, the principal personages of the state at first cast their eyes on his son Mohammed ; but they had scarcely saluted him with the title of Caliph, when they changed their purpose, and offered the supreme power to Motawakkil 'ala 'll4h (He who trusts to God), brother of Wathik. This prince was therefore elected in the same year in which Wathik died.~~

~~10. The first act of Motawakkil was an atrocious Mota- cruelty. He seized Mohammed b. 'Abd al-Melik, his wakkil. brother's vizier, who had always been his enemy, and ordered him to be placed in a furnace bristling within with iron points, which was then raised to a red heat. The Caliph looked on at the agonies of his victim, incessantly repeating: "Pity is a weakness." This had been the favourite maxim of the unfortunate vizier. An umpostor named Mohammed b. Faraj had set himself up as a prophet, giving out that he was Moses risen from the dead. By means of this gross fabrication, he had con- trived to attract twenty-seven followers. The Caliph had him seized, and condemned him to perpetual imprison- ment; but first he compelled each of the followers of Mohammed to give the pretended prophet ten blows on the head with his fist ; and the poor wretch expired under the hands of his own disciples. (A.H. 235, A.D. 849-850.)~~

~~In the year of his elevation to the Caliphate, Mota- wakkil had regulated the succession to the empire in his own family, by designating as future Caliphs his three sons, Montasir billah (He who seeks help in God), Mo'tazz billah (Strong through God), and Mowayyad bill4h (Assisted by God). In acting thus, his object was to protest against the tendency of his predecessors to favour the house of 'Ali, and to guard against the attainment of the Caliphate by any member of that house. Motawakkil displayed the most extreme hatred for the descendants of the Prophet. He even went so far as to~~

~~*destroy the chapel erected over the tomb of Hosain at Kerbela, and forbade the Shi'ites to visit the spot. Not content with attacking the liberty and the property of the descendants of 'Alf, he insulted their belief, by taking buffoons into his pay, whose business it was to turn the person of 'Al{ into mockery. He also persecuted the Christians and the Jews ; excluding them from all public employments, and obliging them to send their children to Moslem schools. In the year 237, a revolt broke out in Armenia. The Caliph sent the Turk Bugha against the rebels; but they met him with a vigorous resistance, and it was four years before peace was restored to the province. During that time the Greeks effected a descent on Egypt, and Damietta was taken and burned. Motawakkil caused Damietta to be fortified, and transferred his own residence to Damascus, doubtless that he might be able to keep a closer watch on the proceedings of the Byzantines. He soon thought himself strong enough to take the offensive, and poured his Turkish soldiery into Asia Minor, where they encountered the same Manuel who had been formerly received at the court of Mo'tasim. After an alternation of successes and reverses, both Moslems and Greeks retired from the conflict. Motawakkil then returned to his residence at Sorra-man-ra'a, and there caused a magni- ficent quarter to be built, which he called Ja'fariyya.1 There he gave himself up to debaucheries; till at last, during one of his orgies, he was murdered by a Turkish soldier named Wasif, who had been bribed to the deed by his own son Montasir billah (a.n. 247, a.v. 861-862).*~~

~~*11. On the very night of his father's assassination Mon- Montasir had himself proclaimed Caliph. The conspirators tasir. among the Turkish soldiery compelled him to deprive his two brothers, Mo'tazz and Mowayyad, who were not agree- able to them, of their rights of succession. Montasir did not long enjoy the fruits of his crime. He died five months after, by poison, it is said.*~~

~~*12. The Turkish soldiery, which now arrogated to itself Mosta'in. the mastery over the Caliphate, chose in succession to Montasir his cousin Ahmed, who took the title of Mosta'in*~~

~~*1 That is, " City of Ja'far." Ja'far was Motawakkil's own proper*~~

~~*name.*~~

~~XVI.— 74~~

~~Mo’‘tazz.~~

~~Mohtadi.~~

~~Mo’ta- mid.~~

~~586~~

~~the Moslems in Asia Minor. the city of Sorra-man-ra’a.~~

~~the Eastern Caliphate of those provinces. time, insurrections sprang up in every part of the empire. Next, the chiefs of the Turkish soldiery, in their mutual jealousies, began to tear each other to pieces. The infatu- ated Caliph fled from Sorra-man-ra’a, and took refuge at Baghdad. The Turks now resolved on his destruction, and forgetting that they themselves had deprived Mo‘tazz billah, brother of Montasir, of his legitimate rights, chose him as their Caliph. They next placed at their head a brother of Mo‘tazz, named Mowaffak billih, and besieged Mostatin at Baghdad. At the end of one month (a.H. 252, a.p. 866), Mosta‘in surrendered, and was put to death.~~

~~13. Mo‘tazz bill4h, thus called to the throne by the very men who had previously sought to exclude him from it, resolved to free himself from the yoke of the formidable Turkish soldiery which thus made and unmade Caliphs. But to maintain a struggle against such terrible adversaries, the new sovereign would have needed an ability and energy which he did not possess. HIe made, indeed, a very impolitic beginning in getting rid of his brothers Moway- yad and Mowaffak, of whom he put the former to death, and drove the latter into exile. Some time after, it is true, he had the satisfaction of seeing Wasif, one of the chiefs of the Turkish soldiery, lose his life in a mutiny of his own troops; and that of defeating in person another chief, Bugha, whom he afterwards caused to be beheaded. But in the following year (4.H. 254), the Turks chose as their leaders the sons of Wasif and Bugha, Salih and Mohammed, who avenged their fathers by plundering the palace of the prime minister and besieging that of the~~

~~*Caliph, whom they seized and threw into close confine- ment, where he died of hunger and thirst, a.H. 255.*~~

~~*14, Immediately after the fall of Mo'tazz, the Turks brought from Baghdad one of the sons of Wathik billih, and proclaimed him Caliph, with the title of Mohtadi billah (Guided by God). Mohtadi, a man of noble and generous spirit, exerted himself, but in vain, to release his prede- cessor from prison. Having failed in this, he kept the precarious measure of power which his masters left him, and applied it to the regeneration of Moslem society, the decay of which appeared to him imminent. He forbade wine and games of chance; he devoted himself to the administration of justice; he examined in person every sentence passed by the judges, and gave public audience to the people twice a week for the redress of their grievances. The farmers of the revenue were subjected to strict control, and the taxes were considerably lightened. It seemed as if these reforms were likely to re-establish order and prosperity in the empire. But Mohtadi came too late, and the Turks did not leave him time to finish his work. Salih, one of the chiefs of the Turkish soldiery, having been assassinated by a rival, Mohtadi punished the guilty person with rigour. The Turks, in their rage, beset the palace and slaughtered the unfortunate Caliph (a.H. 256, a.p. 870).*~~

~~*15. Whether from weariness, or from repentance, the Turkish soldiery discontinued for a time their hateful excesses. A son of Motawakkil was brought out of prison to succeed his cousin, and reigned for twenty-two years under the name of Mo'tamid 'ala 'Il4h (He whose support is God). During his reign two great events took place,*~~

~~*pill4h (He who looks for help to God). Under the reign of this feeble prince, the Greeks inflicted serious losses on The Turkish soldiery, instead of attempting to repair these losses, revolted against the Caliph whom they had themselves chosen, and plundered Taking advantage of these disorders, a descendant of 'Ali, named Hasan, gained pos- session of Tabaristan and Jorjan, and permanently deprived At the same*~~

~~*tokens and precursors of the dissolution of the Caliphate. Eastern Persia and Egypt separated themselves by force from the empire, and two new dynasties established themselves in these countries, those respectively of the Saffarids and the Tulinids, The founder of the former, Ya'kub b. Laith, was the son of a coppersmith (Saffar). At the head of a band of resolute men, he invaded success- ively Khorasan, Kirman, and Sijistan, and at last the Caliph Mo'tamid, powerless to arrest his progress, was obliged to give an official recognition to accomplished facts. But Ya'kub was not satisfied with this; he soon possessed himself of Tabaristan, Farsistan, and Ahwdz, and thence marched against Baghdad. Fortune, however, deserted him; he was beaten in the neighbourhood of Wasit (4.H. 262), and compelled to return to Persia in order to levy a new army there. In 265 he resumed his march against Baghdad, but was obliged by sickness to halt at Jondis- bur, where he died ; not, however, till he had obtained from the Caliph a formal investiture of all the provinces he had conquered. He was succeeded by his brother 'Amr. On the other side, a certain Ahmed b. Tultn, the son of a freedman, who had obtained from the Caliph the post of governor of Egypt, planned the creation for himself of an independent kingdom. Under Mo'tamid he even invaded Syria, and perhaps would have pushed his con- quests still farther, had not death overtaken him in 4.x. 270 (a.p. 883-884). His son Khomartya succeeded him in Egypt, and though, at a later period, he submitted to pay tribute to Mo'tadid, nevertheless a dynasty had been founded in that country which lasted for twenty-one years longer. Mo'tamid died eight years after Ahmed b, Tulun.*~~

~~*16. The reign of Mo'tadid bill4h (He who seeks his Mo'ta- support in God), who succeeded his uncle Mo"tamid, is did. principally remarkable for the rise of the celebrated sect of the Carmathians (Kardmita), who for two centuries laid waste the Moslem empire, and for the extinction of the Saffarid dynasty in Persia, where it was replaced by that of the SAmanids. Some details respecting the origin and the creed of the Carmathians will be found in the third section of this article. We shall content ourselves here with stating the fact that these sectaries, who were numerous in 'Irak, Syria, and Eastern Arabia, kept in check all the armies which were sent against them. Under the reign of Mo'tadid they invaded Mecca and committed great ravages there. In a.H. 281, Mo'tadid repaired the disasters which they had*~~

~~caused there, and raised important works about the Ka'ba. Mo"tadid died in 289 (a.p. 902), leaving the throne to his son Moktaff billih.~~

~~17. Moktafi billéh (He who sufficeth himself in God) Moktafi. — reigned for six years, during which he had constantly to J struggle against the Carmathians. One of his generals, indeed, gained a signal victory over these sectaries ; but, to avenge their defeat, they lay in wait for a caravan which was on its return from Mecca, and massacred twenty thousand pilgrims. This horrible crime raised the whole of Arabia against them. The Carmathians were beaten again, and Dhikriya, one of their ablest generals, was taken and put to death. The sectaries remained quiet for some time, and the Caliph took advantage of this respite to take Egypt from the house of Tulin, and to confer its government on the Ikhshidites. Moktaf{ died a.H. 295 (a.p. 907-908). His activity and energy revived for a moment the prestige of the Caliphate; but this fleeting renewal of its greatness was soon to disappear, and decay resumed its course.~~

~~18. The new Caliph, Moktadir bill4h (Powerful through Mokta- God), was only thirteen years of age when he ascended dir. the throne. His extreme youth prejudiced the people of Baghdad against him ; they rebelled, and swore allegiance to 'Abdallah, son of the former Caliph Mo'tazz; but the~~

~~The Fa- timites.~~

~~| The last | 'Abbé-~~

~~| sids.~~

~~| Kahir.~~

~~RAdi.~~

~~'ABBASIDS. |~~

~~party of Moktadir prevailed, and his rival was put to death. Moktadir, however, was too young to exercise any real power ; he was governed by his eunuchs. He was, besides, a man of feeble character, and looked on help-lessly at the death-struggle of the empire, upon which calamities of every~~

~~kind now poured in. The Greeks invaded Mesopotamia. A truce was concluded with them; but the Carmathians then recommenced their disorders in Syria. The indolence of the Caliph, and his inaction in the face of this danger, alienated all hearts from him ; and the eunuch Munis, the principal chief of his party, took the lead in deposing him and proclaiming in his stead his brother Kahir bill4h (Victorious through God), in the year 317 (a.p. 929-930). Kahir, however, having refused to distribute a donative to the army on the occasion of his accession, a counter-revolution took place, and Moktadir, who had been imprisoned, was taken from his dungeon and replaced on the throne, only three days after his de- position, Favoured by these disturbances, the governor of Mosul, Nasir al-Daula, declared himself independent, and founded definitively the dynasty of the Hamdanites ; thus causing an additional dismemberment of the empire. The Carmathians in their turn, under the guidance of a newchief, Abt Tdhir, obtained possession of Mecca, and carried off the celebrated black stone of the Ka'ba, which they did not restore till very long afterwards. Meanwhile the eunuch Minis had been disgraced. He withdrew at first to Mosul, to the court of Nasir al-Daula; but it was to raise an army and march upon Baghdad, where the Caliph had again fixed his abode. The object of Munis was not to~~

~~attack the Caliph, but only to take vengeance on his.~~

~~personal enemies. Moktadir was induced by evil coun- sellors to make a sally against Munis. His troops were put to the rout, and he himself fell on the field of battle, in the year 320 (a.D. 932).~~

~~With the reign of Moktadir is connected one of the greatest events in the history of the Caliphate, the founda- tion of the Fatimite dynasty, which reigned, first in the Maghrib and then in Egypt, for nearly three centuries. The first of this family who put forward any pretensions to the Caliphate was "Obaid Allah, surnamed the Mahdi, or Messiah of the followers of 'Alf, who gave himself out as a direct descendant of 'Alf, through his wife Fatima, the daughter of Mohammed, whence the name of Fatimite. It seems to be proved that "Obaid All4h was really descended from a certain 'Abdall4h b. Maimtn el-Kadddh, the founder of the Ismailian sect, of which the Carmathians were only a branch. This 'Obaid Allah had himself~~

~~*become pontiff of the Ismailians. As early as the Caliphate of Moktafi, one of 'Obaid Allah's missionaries, named Abu 'Abdallah, had succeeded in gaining numerous parti- sans in the province of Africa, then subject to the Aghlabites, and the victories of this missionary had wrested Eastern Africa from the family of Aghlab when Moktadir ascended the throne. 'Obaid Allah then repaired to his new realm (4.H. 303), and founded the city of Mahdfya, which he made his capital. He tried also, but without success, to seize Egypt; the conquest of that country was reserved for one of his successors, Mo'izz li-din-ill4h, 'Obaid Allah died two years after Moktadir, leaving to his son Kaéim an empire already sufficiently powerful to cause uneasiness to the 'Abbasids, to the Omayyads of Spain, and to all the Christian princes whose states bordered on the Mediterranean.*~~

~~*19. Kéhir billah, on being raised anew to the throne after the death of his brother Moktadir, still bore ill-will to his patrons, and tried to free himself from their guardianship. The emirs of his court dethroned him a second time and put out his eyes. One of his nephews was then proclaimed Caliph under the name of Radi*~~

~~*billh (Content through God). This prince, who was entirely governed by those about his person, created, in favour of a certain Abibekr Mohammed b. Raik, the office of Amir al-Omara, or Emir of the Emirs, which nearly corresponds to that of Mayor of the Palace among the Franks! The Amir al-Omard was charged with the administration of civil and military affairs. He also acted as the Caliph's deputy in sacerdotal functions, and was named next after him in the public prayers. Thenceforth the Caliphate was no longer anything but an empty shadow. During the reigns of Kahir and Radi, the Car- mathians became more audacious than ever. The Amir al-Omara was obliged to purchase from them the freedom of pilgrimage to Mecca at the price of a disgraceful treaty. Thus the Caliphate found itself almost reduced to the pro- vince of Baghdad. Khordsdn, Transoxiana, Kirman, and Persia were in the hands of independent sovereigns, the S4- manids, the Buyids, and a prince named Washimgir. The Hamdanites possessed Mesopotamia ; the Sdjites, Armenia; Egypt was under the rule of the*~~

~~*Ikhshidites; Arabia was held by the Carmathians; Africa, as we have seen, had become the prey of the Fatimites. The single transient success obtained by Radi was the capture of Mosul in a.u. 328 (A.D. 939-40) ; and even this success he owed to the Turk Bejkem, who had succeeded Mohammed b. Raik as Amir al-Omara.*~~

~~*Radi died in the following year, and was succeeded by Mottaki.*~~

~~*Mottaki lill4h (He who fears God). From his very accession, this prince saw himself exposed to the attacks of a certain Al-Barfdi, who had carved out for himself a principality in Chaldzea, and who now laid siege to Baghdad. Nasir al-Daula, prince of Mosul, who had been reinstated in his government, offered an asylum to Mottak{; put his troops at his disposal, and succeeded in repelling Al- Baridi. In return he obtained the office of Amir al-Omara. But there were other competitors for that post. Turun, a former lieutenant of Bejkem, protested sword in hand against the choice of the Caliph, and threatened Bagh- dad. Ikhshid, sovereign of Egypt, offered Mottaki a refuge in his states; but Turun, fearing to see the Caliph obtain such powerful support, found means to entice him to his tent, and had his eyes put out, a.H. 333 (a.D. 944-945),*~~

~~*As successor to Mottaki, Turun chose Mostakfi billdh (He Mostakfi.*~~

~~*who places his whole trust in God). This prince, like his predecessors, was a mere puppet in the hands of his min- isters. A new Amir al-Omara, Zirak b. Shirzad, made himself so hateful to the people of Baghdad by his deeds of violence and rapacity that they besought the help of the Buyids. Ahmed, the third prince of that dynasty, entered Baghdad, overthrew Zirak, and took his place under the title of Mo'izz al-Daula. Mostakf{ soon had enough of this new master, and ventured to conspire against him. The plot was discovered, and Mo'lzz al-Daula had the eyes of the Caliph put out. There were now at Baghdad three Caliphs who had been dethroned and blinded—Kéhir, Mottaki, and Mostakff. Mo'izz al-Daula thought for a moment of restoring the illusory title of Caliph to the descendants of 'Ali. He feared, however, lest this should lead to the recovery by the Caliphs of their former supremacy, and his choice fell on a son of*~~

~~*Moktadir under the name of Moti' lilla4h (He who obeys Mott'.*~~

~~God). Reserving to himself all the powers and revenues of the Caliph, he allowed Moti‘ merely a secretary and a moderate pension. The prince of Mosul, who began to think his possessions threatened by the neighbourhood of Mo‘izz, entered on a struggle with him and tried to wrest Baghdad from him; but he failed, and was obliged to~~

~~1 See Defrémery, Afémotre sur les Emirs al-Oméra, Paris, 1848,~~

~~Tai”.~~

~~Kaim.~~

~~Moktadf.~~

~~588~~

~~submit to the payment of tribute. We have said above that Mo‘izz al-Daula professed a great veneration for the house of ‘Ali. HIs preference showed itself in public acts. He caused the most terrible imprecations against the Omayyads to be posted up at the doors of the mosques. This step irritated men’s minds; and a general insurrec- tion was imminent at Baghd4d, when Mo‘izz died (a.u. 356), leaving his power to his son ‘Izz al-Daula.~~

~~While the ‘Abbasid family was thus dying out in shame and degradation, the Fatimites, in the person of Mo‘izz li-din-illah, were reaching the highest degree of power and glory (see Eeypr, vol. vii. p. 750 sqg.) Jauhar, a general of Mo‘izz li-din-ill4h, conquered Egypt for his master, and Arabia acknowledged the sovereignty of the Fatimites. The Carmathians, who had so long contended against the ‘Abbasids, now came to better terms with Moti‘, and their general made the Caliph the offer of driving back the Fatimites, on condition of his granting him the government of Egypt. Moti‘ preferred to stand neutral in the struggle ; and the Carmathian general, who with the support of Moti‘ might perhaps have triumphed over Mo‘izz, was beaten by his powerful rival. Mott’, having been struck by paralysis, was obliged to abdicate in the year 363 (a.D. 973-974), and left the empty title of Caliph to his son Tai‘ li-amr-ill4h (Obedient to the command of God). The new Caliph lived at first in peace, for it was now the office of Amir al-Omara which provoked ill-will, Under the reign of Tai‘ the Buyid~~

~~*princes contended furiously with one another for the office of Emir, and one of them, 'Adod al-Daula, having con- quered 'Izz al-Daula, took the title, never before employed, of Shahinshah, or king of kings. On his death he trans- mitted his office to his three sons, who held it successively, under the names of Shams al-Daula, Sharaf al-Daula, and Baha al-Daula. The last, who was as avaricious as he was ambitious, took offence at the Caliph Tai' for having disposed of certain sums of money, of which he wished to reserve the management to himself, compelled him to abdicate in A.H. 381, and replaced him by a grandson of Moktadir, who took the name of Kadir bill4h (Powerful through God), and reigned forty one years under the tutelage of the Buyids. Meanwhile events were pre- paring the fall of the Buyids. In Persia, Mahmud of Ghazni was founding the powerful empire of the Ghaz- nevids, which extended to the Indus, and the Seljuk Turks were already invading Khordsin. It was under the successor of Kadir billah that that sanguinary revolu- tion took place, which was to give over the government of Baghdad to the Seljuks.*~~

~~*Kadir bill4h died in a.nH. 422 (a.v. 1030-31), and was succeeded by Kaéim bi-amr-illah (He who is charged with the business of God). The new Caliph, groaning under the iron hand of his Amir al-Omard, called to his aid the Seljuk Toghril Beg, who entered Baghdad in the month of Ramadan in the year 447 (a.p. 1055- 1056), overthrew the Buyids, and took their place. Some years later, Toghril married the daughter of the Caliph. At his death, Toghril left to his nephew Alp Arslan the title of Sultan, a flourishing empire, and uncon- trolled power. As for Kdim, he enjoyed the Caliphate in peace under the tutelage of Alp Arslan and of his successor Malik Shah, till his death in a.w. 467. His grandson, Moktadi bi-amr-ill4h (He who obeys the orders of God), who succeeded him, owed to the power of Malik Shah the honour of recovering his supremacy in Arabia. At Medina and Mecca his name was substituted in the public prayers for those of the Fatimite Caliphs. This was, after all, a mere gratification to his vanity, for Malik Sh4h was the real sovereign, and the Caliph thought himself highly honoured in marrying the daughter of his*~~

~~*MOHAM™MMWEDANIS®*~~

~~*['ABBASIDS.*~~

~~*powerful patron. This union, however, far from drawing closer the bonds of friendship between Malik Shah and Moktadi, became on the contrary a cause of strife. The Caliph having put away his wife, who had wearied him by her peevish humours, was compelled by Malik Shah to appoint the child whom he had had by her as his successor, to the prejudice of his eldest son. Malik Shah also exiled his son-in-law to Basra. Just, however, as this order was about to be carried out, Malik Shah died. Moktadi survived him only a few months. It was during the reign of his successor Mostazhir billah (a.H. 487-512) that the first crusade took place. We need not here enter into the details of those wars. It is sufficient to say that from the date of the first crusade Baghdad ceases, so to speak, to have any special history. The successors of Mostazhir billah (He who seeks to triumph through God) were —Mostarshid billah (He who asks guidance from God), A.u. 512-529; Rashid bill4h (Just through God), a.H. 529- 530; Moktafi li-amr-ill4h (He who follows the orders of God), a.H. 530-555; Mostanjid billah (He who invokes help from God), a.H. 555-566 ; and Mostad?' bi-amr-illah (He who seeks enlightenment in the orders of God), A.H. 566-575. Under this last, the Fatimite dynasty was at length destroyed, and Egypt fell again under the spiritual authority of the Caliphs of Baghdad. It was one of the generals of the Emir Nur al-din, the celebrated Salah al- din (Saladin), who made this important conquest in A.H. 567 (A.D. 1171-1172). He maintained himself in Egypt as Sultan, founded a new dynasty, that of the Ayyubites, and in some sort compelled Nasir li-din-ill4h (He who helps the religion of God), the successor of Mostadi' (a.H. 575-622), to acknowledge his title and to ratify his usurpation.*~~

~~*A still more formidable danger was now threatening Baghdad. 'The terrible Jinghiz Khan was issuing from the depths of Asia at the head of his Mongols, and was beginning to invade Transoxiana. Under Nasir li-din-ill4h's successors, Zahir billdh (Victorious through God), A.B. 622-623, and Mostansir bill4h (He who asks help from God), a.H. 623-640, the Mongol invasion advanced with immense strides; and when, after them, Mosta'sim billah (He who seeks his defence in God) was named Caliph in the year 640 (a.p. 1242-1243), the last days of the Caliphate had arrived. Huldgu, who was then sove- reign of the Mongols, determined to make himself master of the whole of Western Asia. He placed himself at the head of his immense hordes, swept everything before him on his march, and arrived under the*~~

~~*walls of Baghdad. In vain did Mosta'sim sue for peace. The siege was actively pursued, and on the 29th of Moharram 656 (5th February 1258), the Mongols forced their way into Baghd4d and planted the standard of Huldégu on the highest of its towers. The city was given up to fire and slaughter ; Mosta'sim was thrown into prison, and died there a few days after; and with him expired the Eastern Caliphate, which had lasted 626 years, from the death of Mohammed.*~~

~~*In vain, three years later, did a scion of the race of the 'Abbasids, who had taken refuge in Egypt, make an effort to restore a dynasty which was now for ever extinct. At the head of a few followers, he marched against Baghdad, but was repulsed by the governor of that city, and died fighting. At a later period, another descendant of the 'Abbasids also sought an asylum in Egypt. The Sultan Baibars, after a judicial investigation of his origin, pro- claimed him Caliph under the name of Hakim bi-amr-illah. His sons inherited this empty title, but, like their father, remained in Egypt, without power or influence. This shadow of sovereignty continued to exist till the conquest of Egypt by the Turks.*~~

~~*Mostaz- hir and the last Caliphs.*~~

~~*The Mongols,*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM 589*~~

~~*GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE 'ABBASID CALIPHS DOWN TO THE | study of philosophy led to the use of translations from the FALL OF BaGupAD. Greek, The institutions of Islam were developed, no "A DWEE, doubt, as new wants made themselves felt, in proportion ane to the extension of the empire ; but they were nevertheless eee founded on the first arrangements made by the Prophet, 'Alt. and handed down by him in the Koran. ee aes a _ Under the first four Caliphs these institutions continued Political —_ in a rudimentary state. The Caliph (Khalifa, substitute 2>4 i or successor) was elected by the Moslem community ; ee*~~

~~*and, after receiving from all its members the oath of tions,*~~

~~*INSTITUTIONS. |*~~

~~| | ie ton: 1, Abu ’l-‘Abbds. 2. Mansur.~~

~~| 8. Mahdi. |~~

~~| | 4, Hadi. 5. Harun al-Rashid. |~~

~~] | 6, Amin. 7 Ma’min. 8 Mo’tasim. |~~

~~] | 9. ae 10. Motawakkil. 14, Mohtadi. |~~

~~| 15. Mo‘tamid.~~

~~Mohammed,~~

~~12 Mosta’in, nine ube Sieaean 13. utaee, 16. Mo’tagi~~

~~| 18. Moktadir. 17. Moktafi.~~

~~| | 22. Mostakfi. | 23. Moti’.~~

~~| 19. Kéhir.~~

~~|] Ishak. | 21. Mottaki. 20. hsai, 24, Tai’. 25. Kadir.~~

~~| 26. Kaim. Mohammed Dhakhirat al-Din.~~

~~| 27. Moktadi.~~

~~| 28. Mostazhir. |~~

~~| 29, meerembic. 80. Rashid.~~

~~31. Moktaf, 32. Mostanjid. 33. Mostadi’. 34, Nisin,~~

~~35. Zahir,~~

~~36. vedetacie. 37. toaiisimn:~~

~~Sect, III.—Sxketon or tux INstrrurions anp CIVILIza-~~

~~*TION OF THE EASTERN CALIPHATE.*~~

~~*Mohammed had begun to bestow political unity on Arabia; but he had done still more: he had given her the Koran, as the starting-point and base of the future civilization of Islam. It was for the preservation and the better under- standing of the sacred text that the first believers were led to create grammar and lexicography, and to make col- lections of the poems of their own and former times, those "'witnesses of the meaning of words," as the Arabs call them. To elucidate questions of dogma they created theology. Jurisprudence, in like manner, issued from the Koran, and the historical sciences at first gathered around it. As early as the first century of the Flight, schools were founded in 'Trak, at Basra and at Cufa, in which all the questions to which the study of the Koran gave rise were stated, and answered in different ways. Natural science and mathematics were less directly concerned with the sacred book, and were consequently neglected during the whole period of the Omayyad dynasty. They only began to be cultivated when, under the 'Abbasids, the*~~

~~*fidelity (Bai'a) which they were bound to take, united the temporal and spiritual powers in his own hands. He was at the same time high priest, ruler, and judge. He was compelled, however, by the very extent of the empire to delegate his powers to those agents ('Amil, plural 'Ommal) whom he commissioned to represent him in the provinces, The State revenues, which entered the public treasury (Bait al-mdl), were composed—(1) of the tithe, or tax for the poor (Zakdt), which every Moslem was bound to pay ; (2) of the fifth, raised on all booty taken in war, the rest being divided among the warriors; (3) of the poll-tax (Jizya) and the land-tax (Khardj), which only affected non- Moslem subjects. The Caliph administered the revenues of the State at his own pleasure, applying them to the neces- sities of war, to public works, to the payment of officials, to the support of the poor, and to the distribution of the annual pensions, in which every Moslem had originally a right toshare. The State could possess landed property. Under 'Omar I. we find that the pasture land belonging to the State supported not less than forty thousand camels and horses. To 'Omar I. was due the regulation of the poll-tax by a fixed scale. The rich, whether Christians or Jews, paid four dinars (about thirty-two shillings) yearly ; people of the middle class, two dindrs; the poor, one dinar. Besides this*~~

~~*payment in money, the subject-races had to make contributions in kind, intended for the support of the troops. The land-tax consisted of a general rent in proportion to the extent, character, and fertility of the lands possessed by the conquered.*~~

~~*As the sums produced by these different imposts were The often very considerable, it became necessary, as early ag Diwan.*~~

~~*the Caliphate of 'Omar I, to create a special office, charged with the accounts of their expenditure. Its organization was borrowed by 'Omar from the Persians, and it retained its Persian name of Diwan, a term afterwards applied to all government offices. The Arabs at that time being too illiterate for such employment, the task of keeping the registers of the Diwan was entrusted to Greeks, Copts, and Persians. 'Omar also gave his attention to the apportionment of the individual pensions of the Faithful. Every one received a larger or smaller sum according to the greater or less nearness of his con- nexion with the family, or the tribe, of the Prophet. Thus 'Aisha, who had been the favourite wife of Mohammed, received a yearly pension of twelve thousand dirhems ;1 the other widows of the Prophet only received ten thousand. The Hashimites and Mottalibites, that is, the members of the Prophet's family, also received ten thousand dirhems. The Emigrants and the Defenders, or those citizens of Mecca and Medina who had been the first to embrace Islam, had five thousand dirhems; and that was the sum which 'Omar I. allotted to himself.? For every other Moslem of full age, the pension varied from 4000 to 300 dirhems. We can easily understand what an influence the hope of this pension must have exerted on the conquered races, and how much it must*~~

~~*1 The dirhem was equivalent to one franc.*~~

~~*2 His moderation was not imitated by his successor 'Othman, who made it his principal object to enrich all the members of his own family at the expense of the rest of the Moslems,*~~

~~*Military institu- tions.*~~

~~*Ceremo- nial.*~~

~~*Heredi- tary suc- cession.*~~

~~*Pro- vinces.*~~

~~*Prefects.*~~

~~*590*~~

~~*have contributed to their conversion. On accepting Islam they acquired a right to the pension, besides ceasing to pay the land-tax and the poll-tax.*~~

~~*Even in the earliest days of Islam the Arabs were not entirely devoid of military skill. Many of their tribes had been brought into relations with the Greeks and Persians, and had acquired from them some ideas of the art of war. Thus, in the time of Mohammed, the division of an army into a centre, right and left wings, vanguard and rearguard, was understood, and the art of defend- ing a camp or a city by entrenchments was also known. The Arabs fought on foot, on horseback, and mounted on camels. The arms of the infantry consisted of a spear, a sword, and a shield, and sometimes also of a bow and arrows. The horsemen fought chiefly with the lance. For defensive arms, besides the shield, the Arabs were acquainted with the helmet, the coat of mail, and the cuirass of leather covered with plates of iron, It was not till the period of the Omayyads that they began to employ military engines, such as the balista. The army was divided by tribes; and each tribe had its flag, which consisted of a piece of cloth fastened to a lance. As regards the recruitment of their armies, every man able to carry arms was originally bound to render military service. 'Omar I., to whom Islam owes so many of its institutions, was the first to divide his armies into distinct corps, and to assign to each corps a fixed station. These stations were the province of Cufa, that of Basra, and afterwards the provinces of Emesa, of the Jordan, and of Palestine. These provinces afterwards became military colonies, all the inhabitants of which were bound to render military service, as distinguished from the other provinces, where service was optional, or at all events regulated by the necessities of the moment.*~~

~~*With the accession of Mo'Awiya I. to the supreme power, the mechanism of the State was modified and became more complicated. Mo'swiya endeavoured to copy the cere- monial of foreign courts. He built himself a*~~

~~*palace at Damascus, and set up a throne in the audience-chamber, the door of which was kept by a chamberlain (Héjzb). When he attended the service at the mosque, he occupied a close pew with a grating in front (Makstira). When he left his palace, he was surrounded by a bodyguard (Shorta), commanded bya provost (Sdhib al-Shorta). Lastly, in his own lifetime, he caused his son Yazid to be acknow- ledged as his heir-presumptive, and thus established the principle of hereditary succession, which was opposed to the spirit of Islam, and was the source of every kind of calamity. As regards the administration of the State, Mo'Awiya acted at his own will and pleasure. Thus, in order to secure the services of 'Amr b. al-'As, the conqueror of Egypt, he gave up to him the revenues of that province, a part of which ought to have gone to the State. He also took an important step with regard to the annual pensions of the Faithful, which he reduced by about two and a half per cent. The administration of the public funds in the different provinces was left to their Prefects, who were expected to pay into the public treasury only the surplus of their respective revenues. The empire had been at first divided into ten provinces—1. Syria (subdivided into four Jond, or military districts); 2. Cufa, with Arabian 'Irak and Persian 'Trak; 3. Basra, with Persia, Sijistan, Khorasan, Bahrain, and 'Oman; 4. Armenia; 5. Mecca; 6. Medina; 7. The Indian Marches ; 8. Africa; 9. Egypt; 10. Yemen. Mo'awiya, however, subsequently thought proper to make Khords4n a separate province. Under his successors, and according to the necessities of the moment, it was some- times reunited to the government of 'Irak. In 'Trak itself, Mo'Awiya joined Basra and its dependencies to Cufa.*~~

~~*Under Mo'déwiya the Prefects had the most extensive*~~

~~*civil and military powers. They had even the right of the direct appointment of their Sub-Prefects. Mo'awiya, not- withstanding, thought it advisable to disconnect from their powers the offices of Judge (Addi) and of Religious Official (Imam), which were entrusted to special function- aries named directly by the Caliph. The Caliph was, however, always at liberty to modify these arrangements at his own pleasure. Under the successors of Mo'dwiya,*~~

~~*we find certain Prefects invested at the same time with the dignities of Cadi and Imam.*~~

~~*It was also to Mo'Awiya that the State owed the creation Chan- of a Chancery (Diwan al-akhtam, or Seals-office), in which ecery.*~~

~~*all decrees proceeding from the Caliph were registered ; so that, when once issued, these decrees could not be falsified.*~~

~~*Mo'dwiya also exerted himself to ensure rapidity of com- Posts.*~~

~~*munication throughout the empire, by instituting the courier-post (Barid), in imitation of the post of the Persians and Byzantines.*~~

~~*After Mo'dwiya we must come down to the time of 'Abd al-Melik to meet with any important innovations in Moslem institutions. Before the reign of that Caliph the books of the public offices were kept by Christians and Persians, and drawn up in Greek and Persian. 'Abd al-Melik ordered the exclusive employment of the Arabic language, and substituted Moslems for all the Christian and Persian clerks in the government offices. It was this same Caliph who founded the monetary system of Islam, and who was the first to strike dinars (pieces of gold worth about ten francs), and dirhems (pieces. of silver worth about a franc), with legends in Arabic. The postal system was also very much improved and developed under this prince. 'Abd al-Melik was powerfully seconded by the famous Hajj4j, who was able to re-establish in 'Irak the disputed principle of obligatory military service, and who also succeeded, by skilful management, in raising the condition of agriculture in that province. Walid, the successor of 'Abd al-Melik, especially distinguished himself*~~

~~*Money.*~~

~~*by the foundation of religious institutions. In his reign Religious the mosque of Damascus, half of which had hitherto founda- remained in the hands of the Christians, was appropriated tions.*~~

~~*exclusively to the Moslems, and considerably embellished. Hospitals were also established for lepers, the poor, the blind, and the sick. The pious*~~

~~*'Omar II. devoted all his efforts to the embellishment of the mosque of Damascus. An edict of 'Omar I. had forbidden Moslems to acquire landed property, agriculture being considered an occupa- tion unworthy of a free man. 'This law had fallen into disuse ; but 'Omar II. put it in force again, and declared null and void every purchase of land made by a Moslem subsequently to A.H. 100. The effects of this law might have been fatal to the empire; but it again became obsolete under the Caliphate of Hisham.*~~

~~*At the accession of the 'Abbasids the centre of the Institu- empire was displaced. Damascus fell from the rank of tions*~~

~~*its capital to that of a provincial town ; while Baghdad,*~~

~~*under the "Abba-*~~

~~*a small and unknown village, became the mistress of the gids,'*~~

~~*world. Under the first 'Abbasid the empire—not includ- ing the province of Baghd4d—was divided as follows :— 1. The province of Cufa ; 2. The province of Basra, with the district of the Tigris, Bahrain and 'Oman; 3. Hijaéz and Yamama; 4. Yemen; 5. Ahwaz; 6. Farsistan; 7. Khorasan; 8. The province of Mosul; 9. Mesopotamia, with Armenia and Azerbaijan; 10. Syria; 11. Egypt and the province of Africa (Spain being a dependency of Africa) ; 12. Sind. Al-Safféh afterwards made Palestine a distinct province, and separated Armenia and Azerbaijan from Mesopotamia. Still later, Hartin al-Rashid created a new province to the north of Syria, which received the name of "Awasim. Each newly-conquered province was always united to that one of the older provinces to which it was nearest.*~~

~~*Prime Minister.*~~

~~*Adininis- trative services.*~~

~~*Organi- zation of the State.*~~

~~*Caliph.*~~

~~*INSTITUTIONS. |*~~

~~*Simultaneously with the accession of the 'Abbasids, Persian influence began to preponderate. The Persian, Khalid b. Barmak, was entrusted with the administration of the finances (Diwan al-Khardj) by As-Saffih, who was also the first Caliph who transferred the burden of public affairs from himself to a Prime Minister (Wazir, whence, in European languages, the term Vizier). The title of Wazir was unknown to the Omayyads. The office of Prime Minister was of Persian origin. It existed till the time of the Caliph Radi, when that of Amir al-Omara was substituted for it. When the Caliphs had fallen under the tutelage of the Buyids, it was the latter who chose Viziers, leaving to the Caliphs only Secretaries (Rayis al-Ruwasd). Under the Seljuk Sultans the Caliphs were again permitted to choose their own Viziers.*~~

~~*The institution of the office of Vizier was not the least among the causes of the decadence of the Eastern Caliphate. The 'Abbasids gradually became unaccustomed to the exercise of power and the management of affairs, and thus lost all direct influence over their subjects. Besides the Minister of Finance and the Vizier, the 'Abbasids created another important office, that of Postmaster-General (Sahib al-Barid), whose duty it was to collect at a central office all the information which arrived from the provinces, and to transmit it to the Prime Minister. Thus the adminis- trative services were greatly extended under the 'Abbasids. They were subdivided as follows:— 1l. Diwdn al-Khardj, or Ministry of Finance; 2. Diwan al-Diyd, or Bureau of State property; 3. Déiwdn al-Zimdm, Registry Office or Exchequer Office ; 4. Déiwdn al-Jond, or Ministry of War ; 5. Nazar al-Mazdlim, or Court of Appeal; 6. Déwén al- Mawiélt wal-Ghilmdn, or Bureau of the freedmen and slaves of the Caliphs; 7. Diwdn Zimdm al-Nafakdt, or Office of Expenditure ; 8. Diwdn al-Barid, or Office of the Posts ; 9. Diwén al-Rasdil, or Office of Correspondence; 10. Diwin al-Taukt, or Office of the Imperial Seal, and of the registration of official documents. There were also offices for the despatch and reception of official documents, and for the inspection of weights and measures.*~~

~~*We cannot better conclude this brief summary of the institutions of the Caliphate than by giving a sketch of the organization of the State, according to the Moslem authors themselves.*~~

~~*The supreme chief received the title of Caliph, or of Commander of the Faithful (Amir al-Mo'minin). He united in his own person all the powers of the State; his Ministers and all public functionaries acted only by virtue*~~

~~*of a commission from him. They, like all other Moslems,*~~

~~*Minis- ters.*~~

~~*were at the mercy of the Caliph, who had power of life and death over them. As spiritual chief, the Caliph was also the supreme judge in questions of dogma. In theory he held his powers by the free choice of the majority of Moslems ; but, when he had once received their oath of allegiance, he became their absolute master. The first condition of eligibility to the Caliphate was to belong to the tribe of Koraish. In Moslem belief, the subjects of the Caliph owed him obedience and aid so long as he should fulfil his duties with exactness. These consisted in maintaining the principles of religion, in administering justice scrupulously, in defending the territory and assur- ing its safety, in carrying on war for the subjugation of the infidels, and in spending the public revenue in conformity to the law. If the Caliph failed in the performance of his duty, rebellion against him became lawful.*~~

~~*The Ministers might be absolute or dependent. If dependent, they simply executed the orders of their sovereign. If absolute, they took his place, and exercised all the powers of a Caliph except that they could not, at least in theory, designate any successor to the reigning*~~

~~*MOHAMM™MEDANISM*~~

~~*before the Cadi.*~~

~~Caliph. It was only to the Caliph himself that they were responsible for their actions.~~

~~The Prefects, when once appointed, whether by the Prefects.~~

~~Caliph or the Vizier, became so many petty sovereigns, and, legally, owed an account of their actions only to the Caliph, or to his Prime Minister, when the latter was absolute.~~

~~The Generals were appointed either by the Caliph or by Gene- the Vizier, or lastly by the Prefect, when only a local war Tals.~~

~~was in question. They were sometimes invested with very extensive powers, such as those of concluding treaties of peace, of administering justice, and of dividing the booty. The General, in his turn, appointed the officers (Nakibs) and under-officers ('Aréfs). It was a general order that infidels, before hostilities against them were opened, should be summoned to embrace the faith, or to submit by capitulation. The conversion of infidels was valid, even when effected sword in hand, on the field of battle, and the new convert became inviolable in person and property. On the other hand, every infidel taken prisoner was sold as a slave, with his wife and children. He might even be put to death. Apostates were never to be spared; they were put to death, and their property confiscated.~~

~~Justice was administered by Cadis, appointed either by Cadis.~~

~~the Caliph, by the Vizier, or by the Prefect. To be eligible as a Cadi (Kadi), it was requisite that a man should be—l. A male and of respectable age; 2. In full pos- session of his mental and physical faculties; 3. A free man; 4. A Moslem; 5. Of good moral character ; 6. Acquainted with the principles of the law and their application. The duties of the Cadi were to examine into the disputes and lawsuits brought before him ; to enforce the execution of his judgments; to name judicial councils for the administration of the goods of minors, madmen, etc.; to administer the mortmain property of mosques and schools (wakf, plural wokdf) ; to watch over the execution of wills; to~~

~~*inflict due legal penalties on those guilty of crimes or misdemeanours ;! and to inspect the highways and public buildings. When any locality possessed no Imam, or public officiator at the mosque, it was the Cadi who performed this duty. The assistants of the Cadi were Notaries (Shohid), Secretaries (Omand), and Deputies (Ndyibin). If the Cadi died, his subordinates lost their offices aso facto. On the other hand, the death of a Caliph did not nullify the powers of the Cadi; but it was necessary that he should be confirmed by the new sove- reign.*~~

~~*The Court of Appeal (Nazar al-Mazdlim) was instituted Court of to take cognizance of those causes in which the parties Appeal.*~~

~~*concerned appealed from the judgment of the Cadi. The sittings of this court were presided over by the Caliph in person. It was established by the Omayyad 'Abd al-Melik. The last Caliph who sat in public to examine appeal cases was Mohtadi. After him a special judge was appointed to the function of president of the Court of Appeal.*~~

~~*Besides the Judges there were Inspectors (Afohtaszb), Inspec- charged with the police of the markets and the care of tors.*~~

~~*morals. The Mohtasib's duty was to take care that weights and measures were not falsified, and that buyers were not deceived as to the quality of the goods sold. He had the power of inflicting summary punishment on delin- quents, but only in the case of flagrant offences. If the person charged denied the facts, he was to be brought As regards morals, the Mohtasib took care that widows and divorced women should not remarry before the expiration of the legal period prescribed by the*~~

~~*1 The principal offences were—apostasy, neglect of religious duties,*~~

~~*refusal to pay taxes, theft, adultery, outrages, and murder. The penalties were imprisonment, fines, corporal punishment, and death.*~~

~~*Koran. Slaves and beasts of burden were placed under | free-will in man. The Koran speaks only of paradise and*~~

~~his guardianship, and he protected them from ill-treatment | hell; Wasil admitted a purgatory. The sect founded by~~

~~on the part of their masters. The Mohtasib was also | Wasil received the name of Mo'tazilite (dissident), or Mo'tazi-~~

~~commissioned to prevent public scandals, such as the sale | Kadarite, that is to say, which recognizes in man a power lites.~~

~~of wine; to forbid Christians and Jews from building | (Kadar) over his own actions. Another sect, that of the~~

~~houses higher than those of the Faithful ; and to enforce | Jabarites (Partisans of constraint) agreed with the Mo'tazi- Jaba-~~

~~their wearing on their dress a distinctive mark (Ghiydr). | lites on the question of the attributes, but were diametri- rites. Besides the offices already described, there existed three | cally opposed to them on that of free-will, The Jabarites~~

~~others which require mention—those of the Marshals of the Nobility (Wekdbat al-Ashraf), of the Imams, and of the Emirs of the Pilgrimage.~~

~~Marshal The Marshals of the Nobility were appointed in the~~

~~ofthe different provinces either by the Caliph, by his represent-~~

~~Nobility. stives, or by the Grand Marshal. Their functions were to superintend the descendants of the family of the Prophet, who formed the nobility of Islam, and to keep a register of all the births and deaths which occurred in the families of the members of this nobility. In every pro- vince there were two Marshals, one for the family of 'Alf, the other for the 'Abbasids.~~

~~Imam. The duty of the Im4m was to recite the public prayers in the mosque. He was appointed by the Caliph or his representatives, and chose in his turn his Mo'edhdhans, who called the Faithful to prayer from the tops of~~

~~*the minarets. In the Friday prayers it was the duty of the Imam to invoke publicly the blessings of Heaven on the reigning Caliph.*~~

~~*Leaderof The leadership of the yearly pilgrimage to the temple*~~

~~*the Hajj. of Mecca was considered a great honour. It was almost always the Caliph himself or one of his near relatives who assumed the function of Amir al-Hajj. The duties of this leader of the pilgrimage were—1. To escort the pilgrims in safety on their journeys to Mecca and back ; 2. To direct the religious ceremonies during the sojourn of the pilgrims at the Holy City.*~~

~~*Such, briefly stated, was the organization of the Moslem State. Let us now say a few words on its religion.*~~

~~*Religion. We need not now recur to the subject of the doctrines of Mohammed, which are treated of in their own place ; but it is important to show what they became after the time of the Prophet, and what movements they aroused in Islam. The diversity of the conquered races was of itself sufficient to introduce, in the course of ages, serious modifications of the earlier religion.*~~

~~*But, from the very first, the Koran contained within itself the germs of discord. As long as men were content to adopt its teachings without discussion, orthodoxy might boast of maintaining itself unbroken. But as soon as they sought to examine deeply into its meaning, difficulties arose, which necessarily led the strongest minds into doubt and uncertainty. In particular, the conception of God, predestination, and free-will, as presented by the Koran, could not bear examination. As early as the first century of the Flight a theological school was founded at Basra, the most renowned master of which, Hasan al-*~~

~~*Critical Basrf, introduced the critical study of dogmas. His dis-*~~

~~*study of ciples, who were for the most part Persians, could not fail*~~

~~*dogma. soon to discover that the Koran often contradicted itself, and especially that it left many dogmatic difficulties unre- solved. One of the disciples of Hasan, Wasil b. 'Ata, set forth his scruples publicly, departing*~~

~~*on three points from the orthodox doctrine. The Koran affirms the attributes of God; Wasil b. "Ata denied them ; because, he says, if the attributes of God are eternal, they constitute in some sort so many deities. We ought not therefore to affirm the existence of an attribute—that of justice, for example—but simply to affirm that God is essentially just. The Koran admits the doctrine of predestination; Wasil rejected it, as incompatible with the theory of rewards and punishments in another life, which presumes absolute*~~

~~*denied to man the slightest share in his own actions, and believed the very smallest actions of men to be the effect of predestination. The Koran, not concerning itself with the contradiction involved, admits at the same time the responsibility of man and the absolute predestination of his actions. The Jabarites rejected all responsibility, and believed that man is predestined from all eternity to para- dise or to hell, for no other reason than that God has so*~~

~~*willed it. A third sect, that of the Sifatites (Partisans of Sifatites.*~~

~~*the Attributes), contended energetically against the two former. Keeping to the text of the sacred book, they alleged, for example, that when it is said in the Koran that God is seated on his throne, the expression must be taken literally. They thus fell into the grossest anthropo- morphism, a doctrine which was very far from the ideas of Mohammed. In the face of these heterodox sects, the orthodox made but a poor figure. Rejecting, in their commentaries on the Koran, the explanations alike of the Mo''tazilites, of the Jabarites, and of the Sifatites, but acknowledging their inability to refute them systemati- cally, they merely opposed to them a declaration that the Koran was neither to be explained allegorically nor always taken literally ; and they concluded that, where two con- tradictory expressions could not be reconciled, a mystery must be admitted to exist, which it would be vain to attempt to fathom. But they did not always keep within the limits of discussion. Under the reign of 'Abd al- Melik they succeeded in bringing about a persecution of the sectaries.*~~

~~*The Mo'tazilites, the Jabarites, and the Sifatites were dangerous only to the Church. Other sects arose, which put the State itself in peril. It will be remembered that, at the time of the dispute between "Ali and Mo'dwiya, twelve thousand of the partisans of the former deserted*~~

~~*him. ‘These revolters, or Kharijites, originated one of the Khari- most formidable sects which ever existed in Islam. The Jites.*~~

~~*Kharijites rejected in principle the Caliphate and the Imamate. At all events, they did not acknowledge the exclusive right of the Koraish to the Caliphate, but declared that, if it was absolutely necessary to elect a Caliph, his origin was of little consequence, provided he fulfilled his duties conscientiously and exactly. We have seen for what a length of time they kept the Omayyads in check, When they had been put down in Asia, they passed into Africa, and there made numerous proselytes among the Berbers, disposed as these were, by their independent character, to adopt with enthusiasm the principle of anarchy. The most terrible, however, of the militant sects which were formed in the bosom of Islam*~~

~~*was that of the Shf‘ites. Originally the Shf‘ites were Shi’ites.*~~

~~*simply the partisans of ‘Alf and of his descendants. In the course of time, when the whole of Persia had adopted the cause of the family of ‘Alf, Shf{‘ism became the recep- tacle of all the religious ideas of the Persians, and Dualism, Gnosticism, and Manicheism, were to be seen reflected in it. Even in the lifetime of ‘Alf, a converted Jew, named ‘Abdallah b. Sabd, had striven to introduce foreign elements into Islam. Thus, he alleged that ‘Alf was to be adored as an incarnation of the Deity. These ideas, though rejected with horror by ‘Alf himself, and by the greater part of the first Shi‘ites, gradually made way ; and all the direct descendants of ‘Alf became veritable deities in*~~

~~*SECTS.*~~ |

~~*the eyes of their respective partisans. interpretation.*~~

~~*Ismailian sect.*~~

~~*Under the ‘Abbasids it seemed for a moment that the*~~

~~*Shfite doctrines were about to triumph. We know, in*~~

~~*fact, that the founder of that dynasty gave himself out as*~~

~~*the heir of the house of ‘Ali. But reasons of State prevailed, and the ‘Abbasids, false to their first professions, on the whole supported orthodoxy. Under their reign were established the four orthodox sects — Malikite, Hanafite, Shafiite, and Hanbalite, which even at this day divide between them the whole Moslem world. They are named after their founders — Malik, Abu Hanifa, Shafi, and Ibn Hanbal. These sects only differ from each other on a few points of civil and religious jurisprudence. They agree on questions of dogma. It was not, however, without difficulty that orthodoxy succeeded in obtaining the victory. Under Ma’mun and other Caliphs several doctors, as we have seen, were persecuted for believing that the Koran was. the uncreated word of God. From the time of Motawakkil, however, orthodoxy regained the upper hand. Still, this reaction would not have lasted long, in face of the advance in science which marked the accession of Ma’mtn to power, if the orthodox had had no other defensive weapons than material force and the assent of the majority. As philosophy made its way in Islam, thanks to the translations from Greek authors, which were made principally during the Caliphate of Ma’mun, it called forth in men’s minds a movement of scientific curiosity which might have been fatal to orthodoxy. In the tenth century of our era a society of encyclopedists was formed at Basra, who, under the name of Ikhwan al-Safa, or Brothers of Purity, put forth a number of very curious treatises, in which all sorts of physical and metaphysical questions were discussed and resolved in a scientific manner.!_ There is no doubt that these lucid and attractive writings would have led to a great religious revolution, if the orthodox had not understood the danger of their position, and applied themselves also to the study of philosophy, for the pur- pose of employing it in the service of the faith. It was thus that, towards the middle of the tenth century, a certain Abu ’l-Hasan al-Ash‘arf, a descendant of that Abi Mus4 al-Ash‘arf who had formerly acted the part of arbitrator in the dispute between Mo‘awiya and ‘Alf, struck out a system in which religion appeared to be reconciled with philosophy; a system which was natur- ally sure to attract all commonplace minds—that is to say, the greater number. Ash‘arism, or philosophic theology (Kalam), was adopted with enthusiasm by the triumphant orthodox doctors, and thenceforth pure philosophy and the heterodox sects ceased to extend their influence.2*~~

~~*The creation, however, of this philosophical theology had not done away with all dangers for orthodoxy. We have seen above that the Shi'a were divided into several sects, each holding for one of the direct descendants of 'Alf, and paying him the reverence due to adeity. One of these sects, called the Ismailian, because it acknowledged Isma'il, the seventh Im4m or Pontiff of the posterity of 'Alf, as its chief, was the source of the greatest disorders in the Moslem empire, and was not far from being triumphant in Asia, as it was for a long time in Egypt.*~~

~~*ili- The Ismailians, like all the other Shitites, believed in the*~~

~~*1 The most important have been translated into German by Prof. Dieterici.*~~

- ~~*See Houtsma, De Strijd over het dogma in den Islém tot op el- Ash'art ; and Spitta, Zur Geschichte Abu 'l- Hasan al-ASs'arvs.*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*A further distinc- tion between the Shfites and other sects is, that they introduced the practice of giving the Koran an allegorical This system permitted them to see in the sacred book whatever meaning they chose, and was carried out at a later date, as we shall see, by the founder of the*~~

~~*593*~~

~~*coming of a Messiah, whom they called the Mahdi, and who, according to them, was one day to appear on earth, in order to establish the reign of justice and equity, and to take vengeance on the oppressors of the family of 'All. They also believed in a God of far more elevated character than the God of the Koran, one who was unapproachable by human reason, and who had created the universe, not directly, but by the intermediate action of a sublime being, the Universal Reason, produced by an act of God's will. The Universal Reason, in its turn, had produced the Universal Soul, which, on its part, had given birth to primitive Matter, to Space, and to Time. These five principles were the causes of the universe. Man, emanating from them, had a tendency to reascend towards his source. The chief end of his being was to attain to perfect union with the Universal Reason.3 But, left to himself, man would have been powerless to attain this end. The Universal*~~

~~*Reason and the Universal Soul therefore became incarnate among men, in order to guide them towards the light. These incarnations were no other than the prophets in all ages, and, in the last period, the Iméms of the posterity of 'Alf, In the second half of the ninth century, a Persian, born in Susiana and named 'Abdall4h b. Maimun al-Kaddah, nourished the dream of destroying Islam, and thought these doctrines, suitably modified, likely to be highly useful in carrying out his purpose. He devised a system at once religious, philosophical, political, and social, in which, as he thought, all beliefs were to meet and mingle, but—and in this consisted its originality—a system so graduated to suit different degrees of intelligence, that the whole world should become one vast Masonic association. The chief of the Ismailians, the Imam Isma'il, having died, 'Abdallah asserted that his son Mohammed b. Isma'il was to succeed him as the founder of this new religion, which it was 'Abdallah's mission to announce to the world. Since the creation of the world, as 'Abdallah asserted, there had been six religious periods, each marked by an incarnation of the Universal Reason in the person of a prophet. Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jesus, and Mohammed had been the prophets of these periods. Their mission had been to invite men to accept more and more perfect forms of religion. The seventh and last religion, and the most perfect of all, was that of Mohammed b. Isma'il, the true Messiah. The Ismailians, as may be imagined, readily embraced the theories of 'Abdallah. In addressing other sects and religions, "Abdallih used special arguments with each. With the philosophers he dwelt on the philosophical principles of his doctrine. The conversion of Christians, Moslems, or Jews, was a more difficult task. 'Abdallah had established several degrees of initia- tion, and it was only by slow degrees, and with the most minute precautions, that he gained a mastery over the mind of the future proselyte. His curiosity was first aroused by allegorical interpretations of the Old Testament, the Gospels, and the Koran, and by proposing to him reli- gious problems which could not be solved by any of the existing religions. The solution of these problems was not to be given to him till he should have signed a compact, and sworn never to reveal the mysteries with which he was made acquainted. If he took this pledge, he thence- forward belonged, body and soul, to the sect ; and woe to him if he made any attempt to withdraw himself from the authority of his chiefs! The compact signed, the newly- initiated disciple had to make a*~~

~~certain payment, which went to swell the treasury of the sect. The secret society~~

~~3 It need hardly be said that all these doctrines were borrowed from Gnosticism and from Neo-Platonism. See on the Ismailian sect Guyard, Fragments relatifs a la doctrine des Ismaéliens, and Un grand- maitre des Assassins au temps de Saladin.~~

~~XVI.—75~~

~~594~~

~~founded by 'Abdallah soon had a great number of mem- bers, and its missionaries spread themselves over the Moslem world. Towards 887 a.p. an Ismailian, Hamdan, surnamed Karmat, founded the branch sect of the Carma- thians, whose exploits have been recorded above. The Ismailian preachers also made numerous proselytes in Africa and in Egypt; and in a.p. 909, 'Obaid Allah, a descendant of the founder of the sect, but who passed as a member of the family of 'Ali, founded the Fatimite dynasty.~~

~~MOHAMMEDANISM~~

~~[LAW.~~

~~astically embraced by those who wished to give themselves up undisturbed to philosophical speculation. Thus, under the colour of Sufism, opinions entirely subversive of the faith of Islam were professed. In its first form Sufism was quite compatible with Moslem dogma. It was satis- fied to profess a contempt for life, and an exclusive love of God, and to extol ascetic practices, as the fittest means of procuring those states of ecstasy during which the soul was supposed to contemplate the Supreme Being face to face.~~

~~réti: Under the Fatimite Caliph Hakim, a new religion sprang | But by degrees, thanks to the adepts whom it drew from mites. out of Ismailism, that of the Druses, so called from its | the ranks of heterodoxy, Sufism departed from its original inventor, a certain Darazi or Dorzi. This religion differs | purpose, and entered on discussions respecting the Divine little~~

~~*from Ismailism, except that it introduces the dogma of | nature, which in some cases finally led to Pantheism. the incarnation of God himself on earth, under the form of | The principal argument of these Pantheistic Sufis was that the Caliph Hakim. This heresy did not survive the reign of | God being one, the creation must make a part of his Hakim in Egypt. When the Fatimite Caliph Mostansir | being; since otherwise it would exist externally to him, ascended the throne, he re-established the Ismailian belief ; | and would form a principle distinct from him; which and the Druses, driven from Egypt, took refuge in the | would be equivalent to looking on the universe as a deity Lebanon, where they still exist. As for the Egyptian | opposed to God. In the reign of Moktadir, a Persian Sufi Ismailians, they disappeared at the time of the conquest | named Hallaj, who taught publicly that every man is God, of that province by the pious and orthodox Ayyubite | was tortured and put to death. After this the Suffs showed Saladin. This, however, was not a final deliverance of | more caution, and veiled their teachings under oratorical Islam from that formidable heresy. A hundred years | phrases. Moreover, it was not all the Sufis who pushed before the return of Egypt to orthodoxy, a Persian named | logical results so far as to assert that man is God. They Hasan Sabbah, who had been initiated into Ismailism maintained that God is all, but not that all is God. Sufism at Cairo, in the household of the Caliph Mostansgir, had | exists in Persia even in our own day. founded at Alamut, on the southern shores of the Caspian It has been explained that, under the 'Abbasids, four Law. Sea, that Persian branch of the Ismailians known to all | orthodox sects were established, and that these sects Assas- the world under the name of the Assassins,! who held in | differed among themselves principally with regard to juris- sins. check the most powerful princes of Islam, till they were | prudence. The law of Islam is one of its most original destroyed by the Mongol invasion. From Persia, Hasan | creations, and can only be compared in history with the Sabbah succeeded in filling Syria with his Assassins, and | development of Roman law. The laws laid down by every one knows the part they played during the Crusades. Mohammed in the Koran might suffice for the Arabs as The Assassins of Syria have never entirely disappeared. | long as they were confined within the bounds of their Even at this day some are to be found in the Lebanon. | peninsula, When their empire was extended beyond these There are also some representatives of the sect in Persia, | limits, it was inevitable that this first code should*~~

~~*become in India, and even in Zanzibar ; but since the 13th century | insufficient for their wants. As early as the time of the they have become completely inoffensive. first four Caliphs it was necessary, in giving judgment To conclude this sketch of the development of religious | on the new cases which presented themselves, to have re- beliefs, it remains to say a few words on one of the most | course to analogy, and to draw inspiration from decisions remarkable manifestations of Islam—its mysticism, or | given by Mohammed, but not recorded in the Koran. The Stifism. Sufism. In principle, mysticism is rather a mode of | first fountains, therefore, of law were, besides the sacred*~~

~~*practising religion than a distinct religion ; it depends on the character of the believer's mind, and adapts itself to all dogmas.? It is the especial tendency of tender and dreamy spirits. Thus among the Moslems it is a woman who is considered to have founded mysticism. This woman, named Rabi'a, lived in the first century of the Hijra, and was buried at Jerusalem. Her doctrine was simply the theory of Divine love. She taught that God must be loved above all things, because he alone is worthy of love ; and that everything here below must be sacrificed in the hope of one day attaining to union with God. These views were too similar to the Neo-Platonic ideas respecting the union of the human intellect with the Universal Reason not to have an attraction for the Gnostics, who abounded in the Shf'ite sects. Mysticism therefore made great pro- gress in Persia, and assumed the character of a sect towards the year 200 of the Flight. A certain Abu Sa'id b. Abi'l- Khair was the first who advised his disciples to forsake the world and embrace a monastic life, in order to devote themselves exclusively to meditation and contemplation ; a practice which may very probably have been borrowed from India. The disciples of Abu Sa'id wore a garment of wool (Sif), whence they received the name of Sufis. Sufism spread more and more in Persia, and was enthusi-*~~

~~*book, the traditions of Mohammed, or Hadith, the collective The | body of which constitutes the Swnna, or custom. These Hada traditions were for a long time preserved only in the memory of the companions of Mohammed, and of those to whom they had been orally communicated. But at the beginning of the second century of the Flight the need*~~

~~was felt of fixing tradition in writing; and it was at Medina that the first collection of them was made, It~~

~~was due to the jurisconsult Malik b. Anas. He rejected Malik from his collection with the greatest care all traditions ™4 fe which appeared doubtful, and only preserved about seven- ae teen hundred, which he arranged in the order of their subjects. To this collection he gave the name of J/owatta,~~

~~or Beaten Path.? After him came the celebrated Bokhart, the compiler of the Sahth,* in which he brought together about seven thousand traditions, carefully chosen. The Sahih has continued to be the standard work on the subject~~

~~of tradition.~~

~~The traditions did not always supply the means of deciding difficult causes, The first four Caliphs were often obliged to have recourse to their own judgment in the administration of justice. Their decisions (‘Athdr) The were also collected at Medina, and helped to swell the Athir store of juridical matter. 1 From Hashishin, or eaters of [Zashish—that is, Cannabis Indica. 2 See Guyard, “‘Abd ar-Razzak et son traité de la prédestination et~~

~~du libre arbitre,” Journ. asiat., Feb.-Mar, 1873 ; Dozy, Het Islamisme, 2d ed. 1880.~~

~~3 Published at Tunis, in India, and at Cairo, a.H. 1280, with the commentary of Zarkani. 4 Krehl’s edition (Leyden) is still unfinished.~~

~~An edition, fully vocalised, in 8 vols., appeared at Bulak, a.H. 1296.~~

~~School of ‘Trak.~~

~~LITERATURE. |~~

~~In ‘Trak another school of law was formed, which is distinguished from that of Medina by a greater degree of independence. While the lawyers of Medina held strictly to the Koran, the traditions of the Prophet, and the~~

~~*'Athar, those of 'Irak admitted, in addition to these, the deductive or analogical method (Kiyds), according to which it was lawful to create precedents, provided there was no departure from the spirit of the sacred book, from the traditions of the Prophet, or from the corresponding decisions of the first four Oaliphs. Ibn Abf Laila, who filled the office of judge in 'Ir4k under the caliphate of Mansur, was one of the first to apply this system. His renown, however, was eclipsed by that of his con- temporary Abi Hanifa, who worked out a complete system of jurisprudence, with which his name has continued to be connected (Hanifite law). Fifty years after the death of Abt Hanffa, Shafi, a pupil of Malik, appeared at Baghdad, and founded in his turn an intermediate system, in which he endeavoured to hold an equal balance be- tween the purely traditional and the deductive methods. The fourth system reputed orthodox is that of Ibn Hanbal, a pupil of Shafi'i, Ibn Hanbal strove above all things to bring back religious observances to their primitive purity. His doctrine was a kind of puritanism. As may be sup- posed, each of these systems has been subsequently deve- loped and commented on in a multitude of works, even the names of which it is impossible to enumerate. In order, however, to give some idea of what a Moslem treatise on jurisprudence is, we shall point out the principal subjects contained in it. It treats successively—Il. Of Purification (ablutions commanded by the law, purification of women, circumcision, etc.) ; 2. Of Prayer as commanded by the law; 3. Of Funerals; 4. Of Tithe and Almsgiving ; 5. Of the legal Fast; 6. Of the Pilgrimage to Mecca ak Of Commercial and other transactions ; 8. Of Inheritance p 9. Of Marriage and Divorce; 10. Of the Faith; 11. Of Crimes and Misdemeanours; 12. Of Justice ; 13. Of the Imdmate or spiritual power, and of the Caliphate or tem- poral power. It is thus a complete code, religious, civil, penal, and governmental, that Moslem treatises on juris- prudence set before us ; a code which embraces and foresees all the circumstances both of public and private life.*~~

~~*The development of science and literature runs parallel with the development of law. Before the time of Mohammed the Arabs had been distinguished only by a rare poetical talent. Islam was the signal for the springing up of all the sciences and of literature. While the study of the dogmas and ordinances of the Koran was producing theology and jurisprudence, the necessity of preserving the exact text of the sacred book,*~~

~~*and of teaching the new converts the language of the Prophet, was giving birth to grammar and lexicography. The first school of grammar was established at Basra. The first attempts at grammar are generally attributed to a certain Abt ’l-Aswad al-Do’ali, who was tutor to the children of Ziyad, the brother of Mo‘dwiya. According, however, to some authors, the honour of having discovered the first elements of grammar ought to be attributed to a Persian, named ‘Abd al-Rahmdn b. Hormiuz. Be this as it may, a foreign influence must be recognized at the very commencement of this science. The vowel marks, for instance, were imitated from those of the Syriac. The division of the parts of speech into nouns, verbs, and particles was indirectly borrowed from Greek grammar. Yet the Moslems, once in possession of the principles of grammar, knew how to develop and apply them in an admirable manner. A_ perfect galaxy of grammarians arose in the track of Abt ’l-Aswad ; a rival school to that of Basra was established at Cufa, and grammar attained its highest degree of perfection under the first ‘Abbasids Z*~~

~~*as is shown by the voluminous treatise of Stbawaihi, known under the name of Xitdb,) or the Book par excellence.*~~

~~*In lexicography, the Arabs were at first content to ex- Lexico- plain the rarer words of the Koran, of the traditions, and staphy.*~~

~~*of the ancient poems ; and to collect lists of terms applying to the same object, as the camel, the horse, the sword, etc. Thus small collections were formed, which served afterwards for the composition of dictionaries. The first dictionary properly so called, composed in Arabic, appears to have been the Kttdb al-Ain of Khalil b. Ahmed al-Fardhidi, a contemporary of Harin al-Rashid. After him came J auhari, whose Sahdh may still be consulted with profit. The cele- brated Zamakhshari composed a dictionary of metaphors under the title of Asds al-Baldgha. Lastly, Tha*‘alibi, in the 11th century of our era, drew up his Likh al-Logha,? a work specially devoted to synonyms. The accessory branches of philology gave occasion to some important works, The ancient poems and proverbs were collected and*~~

~~commented on. Thus Abii Tammém formed his Antho- logy, called Hamdsa (q.v.), and Maidani his collection of proverbs (Kitdb amthdl al-'Arab). with special regard to its~~

~~the conception of prosody. He wrote the first treatise on that science, which served as a model to all subsequent writers on metre.* Pure literature remained confined to poetry. It was not that the Arabs were without any conception of the romance, the tale, or the novel. The adventures of Antar, the romances of Dhi 'l-Himma and of Saff al-Yazan, the Thousand and one N ights, and various collections of stories and novels, such as the Faraj ba'da "l-Shidda and the compilation of Bika', well known by the extracts which Kosegarten has given in his Chres- tomathy ;—all these show clearly that the Arabs were not devoid of imagination, at least if, as we believe, these tales and romances were not pure and simple imitations from the Persian. It must be acknowledged, however, that these few productions do not, any more than the Makdmdt of Hamadhant and of Hariri, constitute a very important literature. The drama, the epic, the romance of character, were absolutely unknown to the Arabs, Poetry, on the other hand, an endowment of the ancient Arabs, continued to live and flourish as long as the Eastern Caliphate lasted. We may count poets by the hundred, eminent in every department of that art: in descriptive, erotic, martial, and philosophic poetry; in odes, in satires, etc. The great collection entitled Kitdb al-Aghdni,> compiled by Isfahani, contains a choice of the finest poems, accompanied by very instructive notices of the poets, and of the circumstances under which they composed such and such pieces. Besides this, many Diwans, or complete editions of the works of poets, have come down to us. They bear the celebrated names of Nabigha, of 'Antara, of Tarafa, of Zohair, of 'Alkama, of Amraalkais, of Shanfara, of Labfd, in the pre- Islamic period (see Mo'arnaKdr); of Jarfr, Akhtal, and Farazdak,° in the Omayyad period ; and of Abi NowAs,? Abu '1-'Atéhiya, Moslim,? MoranaBsr' (q.v.), and Abt '1- 'Ala,® in the period of the 'Abbasids. And this list con- tains only the most illustrious names.~~

~~The first part of which has just been published by H. Derenbourg (Paris, 1882). 2 Published by Roshaid Dahdah.~~

~~3 Translated by Freytag (Bonn, 1838-43), with the Arabic text of the proverbs. 4 See Freytag, Arabische Verskunst.~~

~~° Published at Bulak, a.w. 1285 (20 vols.) See also Kosegarten, Ali Ispahanensis liber cantilenarum, tom. i. Greifswald, 1840.~~

~~8 See Caussin de Perceval in the Journal astatique, 2d ser., vols. X11. X1lv.~~

~~7 See Ahlwardt, Die Weingedichte des Abu Nuwas (Greifswald, 1861), and, for a Cairo edition, Z. D. M. G., xxi. 674.~~

~~8 Edited by De Goeje.~~

~~9 See Rieu, De Abul-Ale vita et carminibus, and Kremer in Z. D, M, G., xxix., xxx., xxxi.~~

~~The study of poetry, Poetry rhythm, led Khal{l b. Ahmed, and ro- already mentioned as a grammiarian and lexicographer, to ™#2°*~~

~~Transla- tions from the Greek.~~

~~History and geo- graphy.~~

~~596~~

~~With the accession of the 'Abbasids to power, Moslem culture entered on a path fruitful im scientific progress. The second Caliph of that family, Mansur, was surrounded by Syrian Christians of great learning, and equally well acquainted with the Greek, Syriac, and Arabic languages, and took advantage of their abilities to have a number of foreign books translated into Arabic. Thanks to him, the writings of Aristotle, Ptolemy, and Euclid spread a taste for science among the Moslems. The Caliph Ma'mun was one of those who most encouraged translations from the Greek. In this way the Moslems became acquainted with the most important productions of the ancient world. Plato, the works of the Alexandrian school, those of Hip- pocrates, Dioscorides, and Galen, were familiar to them. Through the Persians many Indian writings also became accessible to them, such as the fables of Bidpai,! and certain treatises on astronomy and~~

~~algebra. The study of philo- sophy in all its branches was at one time in fashion, and, to appreciate the success with which it was cultivated in Islam, we need only recall the great names of Al-Kindi, AlL-Farabi, Ibn Sind (Avicenna), Ibn Bajé (Avempace), and Ibn Roshd (Averroes), whose scientific teaching swayed the Middle Ages, and led to the revival of learning in the West.~~

~~In history and geography the Moslems distinguished themselves. The taste for history had been developed among them. by the necessity of collecting all traditions relating to the Prophet, and by that of preserving their own genealogies. The study of geography was a result of their conquests. One of their most ancient historical productions was the biography of Mohammed, composed by Mohammed b. Ishak under the caliphate of Mansur. Wakidt, another author of the 8th century of our era, compiled a history of the first Moslem conquests. At a later period, Baladhori wrote on the same subject his Kitdb Lotdh al-Boldén.? General history also soon became a subject of study, and, in the 9th century after Christ, Ibn Kotaiba compiled his Kitdb al-Ma'drif,3 a treatise on universal history. In the 10th century two great historians flourished, Tabari and Mas'udi, by the first of whom we have a very extensive chronicle,t and by the second a general history, entitled Morij al-Dhahab (see Mas'Upi). After them came a perfect galaxy of well-known historians and biographers, such as Hamza of Isfahan, Ibn al-Tiktaka, Nowairi, Makrizi, Abu '|-Fidd, Abu 'l-Faraj, Al-Makin, Ibn al-Athir, Soyuti, and Ibn Khaldun,5 not to speak of many others who compiled local chronicles and histories, such as those of Mecca, Medina, Damascus, and Baghdad. As biographers, Nawawi and Ibn Khallikan © are celebrated. The history of physicians and philosophers, by Ibn Abi Osaibiya, deserves to be placed in the first rank, side by side with the history of religions and sects by Shahrastani.'~~

~~The Moslems were not less active in the study of geo- graphy. In the 9th century, Ya'kubi wrote his Kuitdb al-Boldén, or Book of Countries, in which he described the principal cities of the Moslem empire. After him, Ibn Khordadhbeh composed his Avtdb al-Masdlik wal-~~

~~1 Translated from the Arabic by Knatchbull.~~

~~2 Edited by De Goeje (Leyden, 1866).~~

~~3 Edited by Wiistenfeld (Gottingen, 1850).~~

~~4 In course of publication at Leyden, edited by De Goeje, with the assistance of J. Barth, Th. Noldeke, P. de Jong, E. Prym, H. Thorbecke, 8. Frenkel, I. Guidi, D. H. Miiller, M. Th. Houtsma, 8. Guyard, and V. Rosen.~~

~~5 Most of these have been published by Gottwaldt, Ahlwardt, Reiske, Pocock, Erpenius, Tornberg.~~

~~6 The former has been edited by Wiistenfeld (G6ttingen, 1842-47), the latter translated into English by Mac Guckin de Slane (Lond.~~

~~1843-71).~~

~~7 Published by Cureton (Lond, 1842-46), and translated into German by Haarbriicker (Halle, 1850-51).~~

~~8 Edited by A. W. Th. Juynboll and De Goeje (Leyden, 1860-61).~~

~~Mamdlik, or Book of Roads and Provinces, in which his principal object is to point out the different routes, and to give an account of the revenues derived from every province.? His contemporary Kod4ma soon after published his treatise on the work of clerks, in which, after a notice of the various government offices, he gives a description of the provinces of the empire with an account of the post-routes, their stages and distances, and of the revenues of each province. Ahmed b. Abi Ya'kub al-Ya'kubi wrote a description of Asia Minor and Ifrikiya. Several of the writings of the historian Mas'udi also afford highly valuable information on geography. To Yakut we owe a great geographical dictionary under the title of Moyam al-Boldén. Lastly, Istakhri, Ibn Haukal, Mokaddast, Bértni, Bakri, Zamakhsharf, Edrisi, and Abu ')-Fida have left us important treatises, narratives of travels, and geographical dictionaries.1! Among the literature of voyages and travels we must also mention the curious Chain of Histories~~

~~associated with the name of the merchant Solaiman and the narratives of Nasiri Khosru,!? of Ibn Jobair,!? and of Inn Batura (q.v.).~~

~~The sciences connected with geography, such as astro- Astro- nomy and cosmography, were also cultivated by the nomy~~

~~Moslems. As early as the reign of Mansur, the Sanscrit **~~

~~treatise on astronomy entitled Siddhanta had been trans- graphy,~~

~~lated into Arabic. Under Ma'mun, two observatories were founded, one at Baghdad, the other at Damascus, and two degrees of the terrestrial meridian were measured by order of that Caliph. Al-Kharizmi, librarian to Ma'mutn, composed his Rasm al-Ard, or configuration of the earth, in which the name of every place was accompanied by its latitude and longitude. Astronomical tables were drawn up by Yahya, Habash, Abu Ma'shar (Abumazar), and Al-Battanf (Albategni), Treatises on astronomy were composed by Al- Farghani and Al-Kind{. Al-Battini, of whom we have just spoken, was the author of important works on the obliquity of the ecliptic and on the precession of the equi- noxes. We may mention in the last place the curious writings of Dimashk{ and Kazwint on general cosmography, embracing several physical sciences.1*~~

~~The study of mathematics was carried very far.~~

~~nometry, and algebra from the Greeks and Hindus, but themselves gave a further development to those sciences. The works of Al-Kharizm{ served as guides to those learned men in Europe who first turned their attention to algebra in the 16th century.~~

~~The sciences of physics and chemistry, on the other Physical hand, remained in their infancy. In physical science we §1en%®~~

~~can only mention a few works on Optics. As for Music, its study was limited to the practical, and though we may name the important treatise of Al-Farabi on the theory of Music—a treatise itself drawn entirely from Greek sources—we must acknowledge that Acoustics, properly so called, are not at all taken into consideration by him. Chemistry, considered as an exact~~

~~*science, continued unknown to the Moslems; yet they cultivated Alchemy with eagerness, in their search after the transmutation of metals, and Alchemy is the mother of Chemistry. Medicine, in the hands of the Arabs, remained such as they had borrowed it from the Greeks, As their religion forbade dissection, the Moslems were never able to rise above a rude empiri- cism. They contented themselves with adding to their*~~

~~*® Published and translated by Barbier de Meynard.*~~

~~*10 Edited by Wiistenfeld (Leipzig, 1866-70).*~~

~~*11 Published, and some translated, by De Goeje, Sachau, Wiistenfeld, De Grave, Jaubert, Dozy, Amari and Schiaparelli, Reinaud, and De Slane. The last volume of Abu '1-Fida's Geography is now in the press.*~~

~~*12 Published and translated by Schefer (Paris, 1881).*~~

~~*13 Bdited by W. Wright (Leyden, 1852).*~~

~~*14 Published and translated by Mehren, Wiistenfeld, and Ethé.*~~

~~*The Mathe- Moslems not only received arithmetic, geometry, trigo- matics.*~~

~~*Com- merce.*~~

~~*COMMERCE.*~~ |

~~*own prescriptions, which they pretended to have received from the Prophet, those of the Greek physicians. The works of Avicenna prove this ; and Ibn al-Baitar's treatise on the pharmacopceia also shows how smalla part observa- tion played in Arabian medicine! Zoology, botany, and mineralogy made no greater progress; but they were at least among the subjects which attracted the attention of learned Moslems. The great treatise by Damiri, entitled Hayat al-Hawwén, or Life of Animals, is of interest mainly from the legends it contains ;2 and the treatise on miner- alogy by Taifashi interests us principally by the details it gives on the origin of precious stones and the art of cutting them. It would be unjust to conclude this sketch without adding that the Moslems possess also a great number of technical treatises*~~

~~*on the art of war, on military engines, and the Greek fire, on falconry and hunting, and on certain industries, such as those of glass, pottery, and metals, They have also written on magic, on the inter- pretation of dreams, and on sleight of hand. These works have as yet been very little investigated. We shall no doubt find in them interesting revelations on the history of the industrial arts, and on the history of superstitions. With an empire so vast as that of the Moslems, we may easily conceive how extensive their commerce and industry must have been. Commerce had at all times been held in honour by the Arabs. Long before the days of Mohammed, the Koraish annually sent caravans, laden with all the products of Yemen, into Syria. Maritime commerce also was already flourishing in Chaldea in the 5th century of our era. 'The city of Hira was frequented by ships coming from the Red Sea, from India, and even from China. Obolla 'was the emporium for the merchandise of India. It was principally thither that teakwood was brought, which served for the construction of ships and houses. Thus the Arabs, when they conquered Chaldea, found maritime commerce in full activity there, and took advan- tage of it. Under the 'Abbasids, Basra supplanted Hira and Obolla, and became the principal port. The history*~~

~~*of Sindibaéd (Sinbad the Sailor) shows how active foreign.*~~

~~*commerce was under the 'Abbasids, and with what courage the Arab sailors confronted danger. Moslem colonies were established all along the coasts of Persia and India, and Moslem voyagers did not fear to venture as far as the China Seas, On the West, the commercial movement was not less active. Caravans laden with the products of Spain left Tangier, traversed the whole of Northern Africa, and reached Syria, Arabia, and Mesopotamia. Others passed through Asia Minor, Armenia, Persia, Khordsdn, and Turkestan, as far as the frontiers of China, while the route of others again was along the eastern coast of Africa, whence they brought back ivory and black slaves. Thus the silks of China, and the spices, camphor, steel, and*~~

~~*precious woods of India, were poured into the empire, while the Moslems exported their glass, their dates, their cotton stuffs, their refined sugar, and their wrought tools, to those countries.*~~

~~*was celebrated, and we know that flint-glass and enamels were also made at Baghdad. Dates were cultivated prin- cipally in the neighbourhood of Basra, and also in Persia and Khuzistén. Refined sugar also came from the coast of Persia. As regards steel, the manufacture of armour and weapons was the speciality of the people of 'Irak, of Bahrain, of 'Oman, and of Yemen, The Syrians had the credit of forging excellent sword-blades. In Syria too were made mirrors of polished steel. The weaving of various stuffs formed an important branch of industry. The striped stuffs of Yemen, and the tissues of Baghdad, Herat, Tawwaj, and Fas4, enjoyed a high repute. Damas- cus was renowned for the silk fabrics which have taken their name from that city. The silks of Yemen, of Egypt, and of Cufa, had also a high reputation. Tunis produced gauze, and muslin figured with gold. Egypt manufactured brocade, Armenia supplied satin. The carpet manufacture under the Caliphs had already reached the excellence which it has maintained to our own days. At that time the carpets most valued came from Farsistan and Tabaris- tan. Jewellery and trinkets found numerous outlets, as may be supposed. This traffic was principally carried on in the East by the Jews.*~~

~~*We know that the religion of the Prophet forbade any Art.*~~

~~*representation of the human figure. This prohibition does not appear to have been long observed, for we find that the walls of palaces and of the houses of the rich were covered with paintings. There was a school of painting at Basra, and a historian gives us the names of two painters of high celebrity in their art—Ibn 'Aziz and Kosair.*~~

~~*The manufacture of paper was carried on very extensively, a fact which is easily explained when we think of the liter- ary activity of the Moslems. The Arabs originally used parchment. For this, after the conquest of Egypt, they substituted papyrus, which was itself supplanted by paper, when the Arabs had opened communications with China. Paper mills were established in several of the provinces, and at Baghdad itself. Simultaneously with the appear- ance of this precious substance, the art of binding became one of*~~

~~*the most flourishing industries, as did also the trades of the shoemaker, the saddler, and the dyer, etc. etc. Retail commerce, lastly, undertook the distribution of the products of agriculture and industry. In almost all the cities of the empire markets were held, where the fruiterer and grocer (Bakkdl), the butcher (Jazér), the armourer (Satkal), the bookseller (Warrdk), and the druggist and perfumer ('Affdr), offered their wares for sale. (st. c.)*~~

~~*PART IIL—THE KORAN.*~~

~~*Tur Koran (Ko'rdn) is the foundation of Islam. It is the sacred book of more than a hundred millions of men, some of them nations of immemorial civilization, by all whom it is regarded as the immediate word of God. And since the use of the Koran in public worship, in schools and other- wise, is much more extensive than, for example, the reading of the Bible in most Christian countries, it has been truly described as the most widely-read book in existence. This circumstance alone is sufficient to give it an urgent claim on our attention, whether it suit our taste and fall in with our religious and philosophical views or not. Besides, it is the work of Mohammed, and as such is fitted to afford eee eee eS ee*~~

~~*1 The treatise has been translated into French by Dr. Leclerc. ? Printed at Bulak, a.H. 1292.*~~

~~*a clue to the spiritual development of that most successful of all prophets and religious personalities. It must be owned that the first perusal leaves on a European an im- pression of chaotic confusion,—not that the book is so very extensive, for it is not quite so large as the New Testament. This impression can in some degree be modified only by the application of a critical analysis with the assistance of Arabian tradition.*~~

~~*To the faith of the Moslems, as has been said, the Koran is the word of God, and such also is the claim which the book itself advances. For except in sur. ii—which is*~~

~~*3 For further information on Moslem civilization, see Kremer's important work, Culturgeschichte des Orients unter den Chalifen, Vienna, 1875-77.*~~

~~t The manufacture of glass was an Manu- industry of old standing among them. The glass of Syria factures.~~

~~598~~

~~a prayer for men—and some few passages where Moham- med (vi. 104, 114; xxvii. 93; xlii, 8), or the angels (xix. 65; xxxvii. 164 sqq.), speak in the first person without the intervention of the usual imperative "say" (sing. or pl.), the speaker throughout is God, either in the first person singular, or more commonly the plural of majesty 'Cwe." The same mode of address is familiar to us from the prophets of the Old Testament ; the human personality disappears, in the moment of inspiration, behind the God by whom it is filled. But all the greatest of the Hebrew prophets fall back speedily upon the unassuming human "J"; while in the Koran the divine "I" is the stereotyped~~

~~MOHAMMEDANISM~~

~~[KORAN.~~

~~sutras have to be severed out as originally independent ; even in the short ones parts are often found which cannot have been there at first. At the same time we must beware of carrying this sifting operation too far,—as Néldeke now believes himself to have done in his earlier works, and as Sprenger also sometimes seems to do. That some stiras were of considerable length from the first is seen, for example, from xii, which contains a short introduction, then the history of Joseph, and then a few concluding observations, and is therefore per- fectly homogeneous. In like manner, xx., which is mainly occupied with the history of Moses, forms a complete~~

~~Moham- form of address. Mohammed, however, really felt him- | whole. The same is true of xviii., which at first sight~~

~~med's self to be the instrument of God; this consciousness was | seems to fall into several pieces ; the history of the seven~~

~~*view of no doubt brighter at his first appearance than it afterwards | sleepers, the grotesque narrative about Moses, and that*~~

~~*— became, but it never entirely forsook him. We might | about Alexander “the Horned,” are all connected together,*~~

~~*therefore readily pardon him for giving out, not only the | and the same rhyme runs through the whole stra, Even*~~

~~*results of imaginative and emotional excitement, but also | in the separate narrations we may observe how readily the*~~

~~*many expositions or decrees which were the outcome of | Koran passes from one subject to another, how little care*~~

~~*cool calculation, as the word of God, if he had only | is taken to express all the transitions of thought, and how*~~

~~*attained the pure moral altitude which in an Isaiah or a | frequently clauses are omitted, which are almost indispens-*~~

~~*Jeremiah fills us with admiration after the lapse of ages. | able. Weare not at liberty, therefore, in every case where*~~

~~*The rationale of revelation is explained in the Koran itself | the connection in the Koran is obscure, to say that it is*~~

~~*as follows :—In heaven is the original text (“the mother | really broken, and set it down as the clumsy patchwork of*~~

~~*of the book,” xliii. 3; “a concealed book,” lv. 77 ; “a well- | a later hand. Even in the old Arabic poetry such abrupt*~~

~~*guarded tablet,” lxxxv. 22). By a process of “sending transitions are of very frequent occurrence. It is not*~~

~~*down” (tanzil), one piece after another was communicated | uncommon for the Koran, after a new subject has been*~~

~~to the Prophet. The mediator was an angel, who is called | entered on, to return gradually or suddenly to the former~~

~~sometimes the "Spirit" (xxvi. 193), sometimes the "holy | theme,—a proof that there at least separation is not to be~~

~~Spirit " (xvi. 104), and at a later time "Gabriel" (ii. 91). | thought of. In short, however imperfectly the Koran may~~

~~This angel dictates the revelation to the Prophet, who | have been redacted, in the majority of cases the present repeats it after him, and afterwards proclaims it to the | stiras are identical with the originals.~~

~~world (Ixxxvii. 6,etc.). Itis plain thatwe have here a some- How these revelations actually arose in Mohammed's~~

~~what crude attempt of the Prophet to represent to himself | mind is a question which it is almost as idle to discuss as~~

~~the more or less unconscious process by which his ideas | it would be to analyse the workings of the mind of a poet.~~

~~arose and gradually took shape in his mind. It is no | In his early career, sometimes perhaps in its later stages~~

~~wonder if in such confused imagery the details are not | also, many revelations must have burst from him in uncon-~~

~~always self-consistent. When, for example, this heavenly | trollable excitement, so that he could not possibly regard~~

~~archetype is said to be in the hands of an exalted "scribe" | them otherwise than as divine inspirations. We must~~

~~(Ixxx. 13 sqq.), this seems a transition to a quite different | bear in mind that he was no cold systematic thinker, but~~

~~set of ideas, namely, the books of fate, or the record of all | an Oriental visionary, brought up in crass superstition,~~

~~*human actions—conceptions which are actually found in | and without intellectual discipline ; a man whose nervous*~~

~~*the Koran. It is to be observed, at all events, that | temperament had been powerfully worked on by ascetic*~~

~~*Mohammed's transcendental idea of God, as a Being exalted | austerities, and who was all the more irritated by the*~~

~~*altogether above the world, excludes the thought of direct | opposition he encountered, because he had little of the*~~

~~*intercourse between the Prophet and God. heroic in his nature. Filled with his religious ideas and*~~

~~*Compon- It is an explicit statement of the Koran that the sacred | visions, he might well fancy he heard the angel bidding*~~

~~*ent parts book was revealed ("sent down") by God, not all at once, | him recite what was said to him. There may have been*~~

~~*youd but piecemeal and gradually (xxv. 34). This is evident | many a revelation of this kind which no one ever heard*~~

~~*from the actual composition of the book, and is confirmed by Moslem tradition. That is to say, Mohammed issued his revelations in fly-leaves of greater or less extent. A single piece of this kind was called either, like the entire collection, ko'rdn, 7.e. "recitation" or "reading;" or kitaéb, "writing ;" or stéra, which is the late-Hebrew shia, and means literally "series." The last became, in the lifetime of Mohammed, the regular designation of the individual sections as distinguished from the whole col- lection ; and accordingly it is the name given to the sepa- rate chapters of the existing Koran. These chapters are of very unequal length. Since many of the shorter ones are undoubtedly complete in themselves, it is natural to assume that the longer, which are sometimes very compre-*~~

~~*but himself, as he repeated it to himself in the silence of the night (lxxiii. 4). Indeed the Koran itself admits that he forgot some revelations (lxxxvii. 7).*~~

~~*But by far the greatest part of the book is undoubtedly the result of deli- beration, touched more or less with emotion, and animated by a certain rhetorical rather than poetical glow. Many passages are based upon purely intellectual reflection. It is said that Mohammed occasionally uttered such a passage im- mediately after one of those epileptic fits which not only his followers, but (for a time at least) he himself also, regarded as tokens of intercourse with the higher powers. If that is the case, it is impossible to say whether the trick was in the utterance of the revelation or in the fit itself.*~~

~~*How the various pieces of the Koran took literary form The*~~

~~*is uncertain. Mohammed himself, so far as we can dis- Koran cover, never wrote down anything. The question whether Witten. he could read and write has been much debated among Moslems, unfortunately more with dogmatic arguments*~~

~~*and spurious traditions than authentic proofs. At present,*~~

~~*one is inclined to say that he was not altogether ignorant*~~

~~*of these arts, but that from want of practice he found it*~~

~~*hensive, have arisen from the amalgamation of various originally distinct revelations. This supposition is favoured by the numerous traditions which give us the circumstances under which this or that short piece, now incorporated in a larger section, was revealed; and also by the fact that the connection of thought in the present stras often seems to be interrupted. And in reality many pieces of the long*~~

~~*convenient to employ some one else whenever he had any- thing to write. After the flight to Medina (a.p. 622) we are told that short pieces—chiefly legal decisions—were taken down-immediately after they were revealed, by an adherent whom he summoned for the purpose; so that nothing stood in the way of their publication. Hence it is probable that in Mecca, where the art of writing was commoner than in Medina, he had already begun to have his oracles committed to writing. That even long portions of the Koran*~~

~~*existed in written form from an early date may be pretty safely inferred from various indications ; especially from the fact that in Mecca the Prophet had caused insertions to be made, and pieces to be erased in his previous revelations. For we cannot suppose that he knew the longer stras by heart so perfectly that he was able after a time to lay his finger upon any particular passage. In some instances, indeed, he may have relied too much on his memory. For example, he seems to have occasionally dictated the same stra to different persons in slightly different terms. In such cases, no doubt, he may have partly intended to introduce improvements ; and so long as the difference was merely in expression, without affecting the sense, it could occasion no perplexity to his followers. None of them had literary pedantry enough*~~

~~*Moslems when it pleases him. Thus, for example, the Koran contains very different directions, suited to varying circumstances, as to the treatment which idolaters are to receive at the hands of believers. But Mohammed showed no anxiety to have these superseded enactments destroyed. Believers could be in no uncertainty as to which of two con- tradictory passages remained in force; and they might still find edification in that which had become obsolete. That later generations might not so easily distinguish the "abrogated" from the "abrogating" did not occur to Mohammed, whose vision, naturally enough, seldom ex- tended to the future of his religious community. Current events were invariably kept in view in the revelations. In Medina it called forth the admiration of the Faithful to observe how often God gave them the answer to a question whose settlement was urgently required at the moment. The same naiveté appears in a remark of the Caliph 'Othman about a doubtful case: "If the Apostle of God were still alive, methinks there had been a Koran passage revealed on this point." Not unfrequently the divine word was found to coincide with the advice which Mohammed had received from his most intimate disciples, "Omar was many a time of a certain Opinion," says one tradition, "and the Koran was then revealed accordingly."*~~

~~*to question the consistency of the divine revelation on that ground. In particular instances, however, the differ- ence of reading was too important to be overlooked.*~~

~~*The contents of the different parts of the Koran are Contents extremely varied. Many passages consist of theological or of the moral reflections. We are reminded of the greatness, the Kora.*~~

~~*Thus the Koran itself confesses that the unbelievers cast it up as a reproach to the Prophet that God sometimes substituted one verse for another (xvi. 103). On one occasion, when a dispute arose between two of his own followers as to the true reading of a passage which both had received from the Prophet himself, Mohammed is said to have explained that the Koran was revealed in seven forms. In this apparently genuine dictum seven stands, of course, as in many other cases, for an indefinite but limited number. But one may imagine what a world of trouble it has cost the Moslem theologians to explain the saying in accordance with their dogmatic beliefs. A great num- ber of explanations are current, some of which claim the authority of the Prophet himself; as, indeed, fictitious utterances of Mohammed play throughout a conspicuous part in the exegesis of the Koran. One very favourite, but utterly untenable interpretation is that the "seven forms" are seven different Arabic dialects.*~~

~~*When such discrepancies came to the cognisance of Mohammed it was doubtless his desire that only one of ' the conflicting texts should be considered authentic; only he never gave himself much trouble to have his wish carried into effect. Although in theory he was an up- holder of verbal inspiration, he did not push the doctrine to its extreme consequences ; his practical good sense did not take these things so strictly as the theologians of later centuries. Sometimes, however, he did suppress whole sections or verses, enjoining his followers to efface or forget them, and declaring them to be "abrogated." A very remarkable case is that of the two verses in liii,, when he had recognised three heathen goddesses as exalted beings, possessing influence with God. (Supra, p.549*~~

~~*3 much for abrogated readings ; the case is somewhat different when we come to the abrogation of laws and directions to the Moslems, which often occurs in the Koran. There is nothing in this at variance with Mohammed's*~~

~~*idea of God. God is to him an absolute despot, who declares a thing right or wrong from no inherent necessity but by his arbitrary fiat. This God varies his commands at pleasure, prescribes one law for the Christians, another for the Jews, and a third for the Moslems ; nay, he even changes his instructions to the*~~

~~*goodness, the righteousness of God as manifested in N ature, in history, and in revelation through the prophets, especially through Mohammed. God is magnified as the One, the All-powerful. Idolatry and all deification of created beings, such as the worship of Christ as the Son of God, are un-sparingly condemned. The joys of heaven and the pains of hell are depicted in vivid sensuous imagery, as is also the terror of the whole creation at the advent of the last day and the judgment of the world. Believers receive general moral instruction, as well as directions for special circumstances. The lukewarm are rebuked, the enemies threatened with terrible punishment, both temporal and eternal. To the sceptical the truth of Islam is held forth; and a certain, not very cogent, method of demonstration predominates. In many passages the sacred book falls into a diffuse preaching style, others seem more like proclama- tions or general orders. A great number contain ceremonial or civil laws, or even special commands to individuals down to such matters as the regulation of Mohammed's harem. In not a few, definite questions are answered which had actually been propounded to the Prophet by believers or infidels. Mohammed himself, too, repeatedly receives direct injunctions, and does not escape an occasional rebuke. One sura (i.) is a prayer, two (cxiii., cxiv.) are magical formulas. Many sutras treat of a single topic, others embrace several.*~~

~~*From the mass of material comprised in the Koran—and Narra- the account we have given is far from exhaustive—we tives.*~~

~~*should select the histories of the ancient prophets and saints as possessing a peculiar interest. The purpose of Mohammed is to show from these histories how God in former times had rewarded the righteous and punished their enemies. For the most part the old prophets only serve to introduce a little variety in point of form, for they are almost in every case facsimiles of Mohammed himself. They preach exactly like him, they have to bring the very same charges against their opponents, who on their part behave*~~

~~*exactly as the unbelieving inhabitants of Mecca. The Koran even goes so far as to make Noah contend against the worship of certain false gods, mentioned by name, who were worshipped by the Arabs of Mohammed's time. In an address which is put in the mouth of Abra- ham (xxvi. 75 sgq.) the reader quite forgets that it is Abraham, and not Mohammed (or God himself) who is*~~

~~*Relation to the Old and New Tes- taments.*~~

~~*Style.*~~

~~*600*~~

~~*speaking. Other narratives are intended rather for amuse- ment, although they are always well seasoned with edifying phrases. It is no wonder that the godless Koraishites thought these stories of the Koran not nearly so entertain- ing as those of Rostam and Ispandiar related by Nadr the son of Harith, who had learned on the Euphrates the heroic mythology of the Persians. But the Prophet was so exasperated by this rivalry that when Nadr fell into his power after the battle of Badr, he caused him to be executed ; although in all other cases he readily pardoned his fellow-countrymen.*~~

~~*These histories are chiefly about Scripture characters, especially those of the Old Testament. But the deviations from the Biblical narratives are very marked. Many of the alterations are found in the legendary anecdotes of the Jewish Haggada and the New Testament Apocrypha; but many more are due to misconceptions such as only a listener (not the reader of a book) could fall into. The most igno- rant Jew could never have mistaken Haman (the minister of Ahasuerus) for the minister of Pharaoh, or identified Miriam the sister of Moses with Mary (= Miriam) the mother of Christ. In addition to such misconceptions there are sundry capricious alterations, some of them very grotesque, due to Mohammed himself. For instance, in his ignorance of everything out of Arabia, he makes the fertility of Egypt—where rain is almost never seen and never missed—depend on rain instead of the inundations of the Nile (xii. 49). It was through the Jews also that he borrowed his account of Alexander "the Horned"; an epithet which is to be explained, after old Hottinger, from the great multitude of coins where*~~

~~*Alexander is represented with the ram's-horn of Ammon. Besides Jewish and Christian histories there are a few about old Arabian prophets. In these he seems to have handled his materials even more freely than in the others.*~~

~~*The opinion has already been expressed that Mohammed did not make use of written sources. Coincidences and divergences alike can always be accounted for by oral com- munications from Jews who knew a little and Christians who knew next to nothing. Even in the rare passages where we can trace direct resemblances to the text of the Old Testament (comp. xxi. 105 with Ps. xxxvii. 29; i. 5 with Ps, xxvii. 11) or the New (comp. vii. 48 with Luke xvi. 24 ; xlvi. 19 with Luke xvi. 25), there is nothing more than might readily have been picked up in conversation with any Jew or Christian. In Medina, where he had the opportunity of becoming acquainted with Jews of some culture, he learned some things out of the Mishna, e.g. v. 35 corresponds almost word for word with Mishna Sanh. iv. 5; compare also 11. 183 with Mishna Ber.i. 2. That these are only cases of oral communication will be admitted by any one with the slightest knowledge of the circum- stances. Otherwise we might even conclude that Moham- med had studied the Talmud; eg. the regulation as to ablution by rubbing with sand, where water cannot be obtained (iv. 46), corresponds to a talmudic ordinance (Ber. 15 a). Of Christianity he can have been able to learn very little even in Medina ; as may be seen from the absurd travesty of the institution of the Eucharist in v. 112 sgq. For the rest, it is highly improbable that before the Koran any real literary production—anything that could be strictly called a book—existed in the Arabic language.*~~

~~*In point of style and artistic effect, the different parts of the Koran are of very unequal value. An unprejudiced and critical reader will certainly find very few passages where his esthetic susceptibilities are thoroughly satisfied. But he will often be struck, especially in the older pieces, by a wild force of passion, and a vigorous, if not rich, imagination. Descriptions of heaven and hell, and allu- sions to God's working in Nature, not unfrequently show*~~

~~*a certain amount of poetic power. In other places also the style is sometimes lively and impressive ; though it is rarely indeed that we come across such strains of touching simplicity as in the middle of xciii. The greater part of the Koran is decidedly prosaic; much of it indeed is stiff in style. Of course, with such a variety of material, we cannot expect every part to be equally vivacious, or imaginative, or poetic. A decree about the right of inheritance, or a point of ritual, must necessarily be expressed in prose, if it is to be intelligible. No one complains of the civil laws in Exodus or the sacrificial ritual in Leviticus, because they want the fire of Isaiah or the tenderness of Deuter- onomy. But Mohammed's mistake consists in persistent and slavish adherence to the semi-poetic form which he had at first adopted in accordance with his own taste and that of his hearers. For instance, he employs rhyme in dealing with the most prosaic subjects, and thus produces the disagreeable effect of incongruity between style and matter. It has to be considered, however, that many of those sermonizing pieces which are so tedious to us, especi- ally when we read two or three in succession (perhaps in a very inadequate translation), must have had a quite different effect when recited under the burning sky and on the barren soil of Mecca. There, thoughts about God's greatness and man's duty, which are familiar to us from childhood, were all new to the hearers—it is hearers we have to think of in the first instance, not readers—to whom, at the same time, every allusion had a meaning which often escapes our notice. When Mohammed spoke of the goodness of the Lord in creating the clouds, and bringing them across the cheerless desert, and pouring them out on the earth to restore its rich vegetation, that must have been a picture of thrilling interest to the Arabs, who are accustomed to see from three to five years elapse before a copious shower comes to clothe the wilderness once more with luxuriant pastures. It requires an effort for us, under our clouded skies, to realize in some degree the intensity of that impression.*~~

~~*The fact that scraps of poetical phraseology are spe- cially numerous in the earlier stras, enables us to under- stand why the prosaic mercantile community of Mecca regarded their eccentric townsman as a "poet," or even a "possessed poet." Mohammed himself had to disclaim such titles, because he felt himself to be a divinely-inspired prophet ; but we too, from our standpoint, shall fully acquit him of poetic genius. Like many other predomi- nantly religious characters, he had no appreciation of poetic*~~

~~*beauty ; and if we may believe one anecdote related of him, at a time when every one made verses he affected ignorance of the most elementary rules of prosody. Hence the style of the Koran is not poetical but rhetorical ; and the powerful effect which some portions produce on us is gained by rhetorical means. Accordingly the sacred book has not even the artistic form of poetry ; which, among the Arabs, includes a stringent metre, as well as rhyme. The Koran is never metrical, and only a few exceptionally eloquent portions fall into a sort of spontaneous rhythm. On theother hand, the rhyme is regularly maintained ; although, especially in the later pieces, after a very slovenly fashion. Rhymed prose was a favourite form of composition among the Arabs of that day, and Mohammed adopted it; but if it imparts a certain sprightliness to some passages, it proves on the whole a burdensome yoke. The Moslems themselves have observed that the tyranny of the rhyme often makes itself apparent in derangement of the order of words, and in the choice of verbal forms which would not otherwise have been employed; e.g. an imperfect instead of a perfect. In one place, to save the rhyme, he calls Mount Sinai Sinin (xcv. 2) instead of Sind (xxiii. 20); in another Elijah is called /lydsin (xxxvii. 130) instead of*~~

~~*Rhetori- cal form and*~~

~~*rhyme,*~~

~~*Stylistic weak- nesses,*~~

~~*Dogma of the stylistic perfec- tion of the Koran.*~~

~~*KORAN. |*~~

~~*Ilyds (vi. 85; xxxvii. 123). The substance even is modi- fied to suit exigencies of rhyme. Thus the Prophet would scarcely have fixed on the unusual number of evght angels round the throne of God (Ixix. 17) if the word thamdniyah, "eight," had not happened to fall in so well with the rhyme. And when lv. speaks of two heavenly gardens, each with two fountains and two kinds of fruit, and again of two similar gardens, all this is simply because the dual termination (dn) corresponds to the syllable that controls the rhyme in that whole stra. In the later pieces, Mohammed often inserts edifying remarks, entirely out of keeping with the context, merely to*~~

~~*complete his rhyme. In Arabic it is such an easy thing to accumulate masses of words with the same termination, that the gross negli- gence of the rhyme in the Koran is doubly remarkable. One may say that this is another mark of the Prophet's want of mental training, and incapacity for introspective criticism.*~~

~~*On the whole, while many parts of the Koran un- doubtedly have considerable rhetorical power, even over an unbelieving reader, the book, esthetically considered, is by no means a first-rate performance. To begin with what we are most competent to criticize, let us look at some of the more extended narratives. It has already been noticed how vehement and abrupt they are where they ought to be characterized by epic repose. Indispens- able links, both in expression and in the sequence of events, are often omitted, so that to understand these histories is sometimes far easier for us than for those who heard them first, because we know most of them from better sources. Along with this, there is a great deal of superfluous verbiage ; and nowhere do we find a steady advance in the narration. Contrast in these respects the history of Joseph (xii.) and its glaring improprieties, with the admirably-conceived and admirably-executed story in Genesis. Similar faults are found in the non-narrative portions of the Koran. The connexion of ideas is extremely loose, and even the syntax betrays great awk- wardness. Anacolutha are of frequent occurrence, and cannot be explained as conscious literary devices. Many sentences begin with a "when" or "on the day when" which seems to hover in the air, so that the commentators are driven to supply a "think of this" or some such ellipsis, Again, there is no great literary skill evinced in the frequent and needless harping on the same words and phrases ; in xviii, for example, "till that" (hatté idhd) occurs no fewer than eight times. Mohammed, in short, is not in any sense a master of style. This opinion will be endorsed by any European who reads through the book with an impartial spirit and some knowledge of the language, without taking into account the tiresome effect of its endless iterations. But in the ears of every pious Moslem such a judgment will sound almost as shocking as downright atheism or polytheism. Among the Moslems, the Koran has always been looked on as the most perfect model of style and language. This feature of it ig in their dogmatic the greatest of all miracles, the incontest- able proof of its divine origin. Such a view on the part of men who knew Arabic infinitely better than the most*~~

accomplished European Arabist will ever do, may well startle us. In fact, the Koran boldly challenged its opponents to produce ten suras, or even a single one, like those of the sacred book, and they never did so. That, to be sure, on calm reflexion, is not so very surprising. Revelations of the kind which Mohammed uttered, no unbeliever could produce without making himself a laugh- ing-stock. However little real originality there is in Mohammed's doctrines, as against his own countrymen he was thoroughly original, even in the form of his oracles. To compose such revelations at will was beyond the power

of the most expert literary artist ; it would have required either a prophet, or a shameless impostor. And if such a character appeared after Mohammed, still he could never be anything but an imitator, like the false prophets who arose about the time of his death and afterwards. That the adversaries should produce any sample whatsoever of poetry or rhetoric equal to the Koran is not at all what the Prophet demands. In that case he would have been put to shame, even in the eyes of many of his own followers, by the first poem that came to hand. Never- theless, it is on a false interpretation of this challenge that the dogma of the incomparable excellence of the style and diction of the Koran is based. The rest has been accom- plished by dogmatic prejudice, which is quite capable of working other miracles besides turning a defective literary production into an unrivalled masterpiece in the eyes of believers. This view once accepted, the next step was to find everywhere evidence of the perfection of the style and language. And if here and there, as one can scarcely doubt, there was among the old Moslems a lover of poetry who had his difficulties about this dogma, he had to beware of uttering an opinion which might have cost him his head. We know of at least one rationalistic theologian who defined the dogma in such a way that we can see he did not believe it (Shahrastani, p. 39). The truth is, it would have been a miracle indeed if the style of the Koran had been perfect. For although there was at that time a recognized poetical style, already degenerating to mannerism, a prose style did not exist. All beginnings are difficult; and it can never be esteemed a serious

~~*charge against Mohammed that his book, the first prose work of a high order in the language, testifies to the awk- wardness of the beginner. And further, we must always remember that entertainment and esthetic effect were at most subsidiary objects. The great aim was persuasion and conversion ; and, say what we will, that aim has been realized on the most imposing scale.*~~

~~*Mohammed repeatedly calls attention to the fact that the Foreign Koran is not written, like other sacred books, in a strange words.*~~

~~*language, but in Arabic, and therefore is intelligible to all. At that time, along with foreign ideas, many foreign words had crept into the language ; especially Aramaic terms for religious conceptions of Jewish or Christian origin. Some of these had already passed into general use, while others were confined to a more limited circle. Mohammed, who could not fully express his new ideas in the common language of his countrymen, but had frequently to find out new terms for himself, made free use of such Jewish and Christian words, as was done, though perhaps to a smaller extent, by certain thinkers and poets of that age who had more or less risen above the level of heathenism. In Mohammed's case this is the less wonderful, because he was indebted to the instruction of Jews and Christians whose Arabic—as the Koran pretty clearly intimates with regard to one of them—was very defective. Nor is it very surprising to find that his use of these words is some- times as much at fault as his comprehension of the histories which he learned from the same people—that he applies Aramaic expressions as incorrectly as many unedu- cated persons now employ words derived from the French. Thus, forkdn means really "redemption," but Mohammed*~~

~~*(misled by the Arabic meaning of the root 5,5 "sever,"*~~

~~*decide") uses it for "revelation." Mella is properly "Word," but in the Koran "religion." dliyiin (Ixxxiii. 18, 19) is apparently the Hebrew name of God, Llyén, "the Most High" ; Mohammed uses it of a heavenly book (see 8. Fraenkel, De vocabulis in antiquis Arabum carmur tbus et in Corano peregrinis, Leyden, 1880, p. 23). So again the word mathdni is, as Geiger has conjectured, the XVI. — 76*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*earlier Meccan stras. We have in this list no genuine tradition, but rather the lucubrations of an undoubtedly conscientious Moslem critic, who may have lived about a century after the Flight.*~~

~~*Among the revelations put forth in Mecca there is a The considerable number of (for the most part) short suras, Meccan which strike every attentive reader as being the oldest. S"**~~

~~*602 [KORAN. regular plural of the Aramaic mathnithd, which is the same as the Hebrew Jishna, and denotes, in Jewish usage, a legal decision of some of the ancient Rabbins. But in the Koran "the seven Mathdni" (xv. 87) are probably the seven verses of stra i., so that Mohammed appears to*~~

~~*have understood it in the sense of '"'saying," or "sen*~~

~~*Date of the seve- ral parts.*~~

~~*tence" (comp. xxxix. 24). Words of Christian origin are less frequent in the Koran. It is an interesting fact that of these a few have come over from the Abyssinian ; such as hawdriyin, "apostles," mdida, "table," and two or three others; these all make their first appearance in suras of the Medina period. The word shaitdn, "Satan," which was likewise borrowed, at least in the first instance, from the Abyssinian, had probably been already introduced into the language. Sprenger has rightly observed that Mohammed makes a certain parade of these foreign terms, as of other peculiarly constructed expressions ; in this he followed a favourite practice of contemporary poets. It is the tendency of the imperfectly educated to delight in out-of-the-way expressions, and on such minds they readily produce a remarkably solemn and mysterious impression, This was exactly the kind of effect that Mohammed desired, and to secure it he seems even to have invented a few odd vocables, as ghislin (Ixix. 36), sijjin (Ixxxiii. 7, 8), tasnim (Ixxxiii. 27), and salsabil (Ixxvi. 18). But, of course, the necessity of enabling his hearers to understand ideas which they must have found sufficiently novel in themselves, imposed tolerably narrow limits on such eccentricities.*~~

~~*The constituents of our present Koran belong partly to the Mecca period (before 622 a.D.), partly to the period commencing with the flight to*~~

~~*Medina (from the autumn of 622 to 8th June 632). Mohammed's position in Medina was entirely different from that which he had occupied in his native town. In the former he was from the first the leader of a powerful party, and gradually became the autocratic ruler of Arabia; in the latter he was only the despised preacher of a small congregation. This difference, as was to be expected, appears in the Koran. The Medina pieces, whether entire stiras or isolated passages interpo- lated in Meccan stras, are accordingly pretty broadly dis- tinct, as to their contents, from those issued in Mecca. In the great majority of cases there can be no doubt what- ever whether a piece first saw the light in Mecca or in Medina; and for the most part the internal evidence is borne out by Moslem tradition. And since the revelations given in Medina frequently take notice of events about which we have pretty accurate information, and whose dates are at least approximately known, we are often in a position to fix their date with at any rate considerable certainty ; here again tradition renders valuable assistance. Even with regard to the Medina passages, however, a great deal remains uncertain, partly because the allusions to historical events and circumstances are generally rather obscure, partly because traditions about the occasion of the revelation of the various pieces are often fluctuating, and often rest on misunderstanding or arbitrary conjecture. But at all events it is far easier to arrange in some sort of chronological order the Medina suras than those composed in Mecca. 'There is, indeed, one tradition which professes to furnish a chronological list of all the stras. But not to mention that it occurs in several divergent forms, and that it takes no account of the fact that our present suras are partly composed of pieces of different dates, it contains so many suspicious or undoubtedly false statements, that it is impossible to attach any great importance to it. Besides, it is a priort unlikely that a contemporary of Mohammed should have drawn up such a list; and if any one had made the attempt, he would have found it almost impos- sible to obtain reliable information as to the order of the*~~

~~*They are in an altogether different strain from many others, and in their whole composition they show least resemblance to the Medina pieces. It is no doubt conceivable—as Sprenger supposes—that Mohammed might have returned at intervals to his earlier manner; but since this group possesses a remarkable similarity of style, and since the gradual formation of a different style is on the whole an unmistakable fact, the assumption has little*~~

~~*probability ; and we shall therefore abide by the opinion that these form a distinct group. At the opposite extreme from them stands another cluster, showing quite obvious affinities with the style of the Medina stras, which must therefore be assigned to the later part of the Prophet's work in Mecca. Between these two groups stand a number of other Meccan sutras, which in every respect mark the transition from the first period to the third. It need hardly be said that the three periods—which were first distinguished by Professor Weil—are not separated by sharp lines of division. With regard to some stras, it may be doubtful whether they ought to be reckoned amongst the middle group, or with one or other of the extremes. And it is altogether impossible, within these groups, to establish even a probable chronological arrangement of the individual revelations. In default of clear allusions to well-known events, or events whose date can be deter- mined, we might indeed endeavour to trace the psycholo- gical development of the Prophet by means of the Koran, and arrange its parts accordingly. But in such an under- taking one is always apt to take subjective assumptions or mere fancies for established data. Good traditions about the origin of the Meccan revelations are not very numerous. In fact the whole history of Mohammed previous to the Flight is so imperfectly related that we are not even sure in what year he appeared as a propliet. Probably it was in A.D. 610; it may have been somewhat earlier, but scarcely later. If, as one tradition says, xxx. 1 sg. ("The Romans are overcome in the nearest neigh- bouring land") refers to the defeat of the Byzantines by the Persians, not far from Damascus, about the spring of 614, it would follow that the third group, to which this passage belongs, covers the greater part of the Meccan period. And it is not in itself unlikely that the passionate vehemence which characterizes the first group was of short duration. Nor is the assumption contradicted by the tolerably well-attested, though far from incontestable state- ment, that when 'Omar was converted (a.D. 615 or 616), xx., which belongs to the second group, already existed in writing. But the reference of xxx. 1 sg. to this particu- lar battle is by no means so certain that positive conclu- sions can be drawn from it. It is the same with other allusions in the Meccan stiras to occurrences whose chrono- logy can be partially ascertained. It is better, therefore, to rest satisfied with a merely relative determination of the order of even the three great clusters of Meccan revelations.*~~

~~*In the pieces of the first period the convulsive excite- Oldest*~~

~~*ment of the Prophet often expresses itself with the utmost Meccan t suras.*~~

~~*vehemence. He is so carried away by his emotion tha he cannot choose his words; they seem rather to burst from him. Many of these pieces remind us of the oracles of the old heathen soothsayers, whose style is known to us from imitations, although we have perhaps not a single genuine specimen. Like those other oracles, the stras of this period, which are never very long, are composed of*~~

~~*The Fatiha.*~~

~~*KORAN. |*~~

~~*short sentences with tolerably pure but rapidly-changing rhymes. The oaths, too, with which many of them begin, were largely used by the soothsayers. Some of these oaths are very uncouth and hard to understand, some of them perhaps were not meant to be understood, for indeed all sorts of strange things are met with in these chapters. Here and there Mohammed speaks of visions, and appears even to see angels before him in bodily form. There are some intensely vivid descriptions of the resurrection and the last day which must have exercised a demonic power over men who were quite unfamiliar with such pictures. Other pieces paint in glowing colours the joys of heaven and the pains of hell. However, the suras of this period are not all so wild as these ; and those which are conceived in a calmer mood appear to be the oldest. Yet, one must repeat, it is exceedingly difficult to make out any strict chronological sequence. For instance, it is by no means certain whether the beginning of xcvi. is really, what a widely-circulated tradition calls it, the oldest part of the whole Koran. That tradition goes back to the Prophet's favourite wife 'Aisha; but as she was not born at the time when the revelation is said to have been made, it can only contain at the best what Mohammed told her years afterwards, from his own not very clear recollection, with or without fictitious additions. And, moreover, there are other pieces mentioned by others as the oldest. In any case xcvi. 1 sqqq. is certainly very early. Accord- ing to the traditional view, which appears to be correct, it treats of a vision in which the Prophet receives an injunction to recite a revelation conveyed to him by the angel. It is interesting to*~~

~~*observe that here already two things are brought forward as proofs of the omnipotence and care of God: one is the creation of man out of a seminal drop—an idea to which Mohammed often recurs ; the other is the then recently introduced art of writing, which the Prophet instinctively seizes on as a means of propagating his doctrines. It was only after Mohammed encountered obstinate resistance that the tone of the reve- lations became thoroughly passionate. In such cases he was not slow to utter terrible threats against those who ridiculed the preaching of the unity of God, of the resur- rection, and of the judgment. HIs own uncle Abu Lahab had rudely repelled him, and in a brief special sura (cxi.) he and his wife are consigned to hell. The stras of this period form almost exclusively the concluding portions of the present text. One is disposed to assume, however, that they were at one time more numerous, and that many of them were lost at an early period.*~~

~~*Since Mohammed's strength lay in his enthusiastic and fiery imagination rather than in the wealth of ideas and clearness of abstract thought on which exact reasoning depends, it follows that the older stras, in which the former qualities have free scope, must be more attractive to us than the later. In the suras of the second period the imaginative glow perceptibly diminishes ; there is still fire and animation, but the tone becomes gradually more prosaic. As the feverish restlessness subsides, the periods are drawn out, and the revelations as a whole become longer. The truth of the new doctrine is proved by accu- mulated instances of God's working in nature and in history ; the objections of opponents, whether advanced in good faith or in jest, are controverted by arguments ; but the demonstration is often confused or even weak. The histories of the earlier prophets, which had occasion- ally been briefly touched on in the first period, are now related, sometimes at great length. On the whole, the charm of the style is passing away.*~~

~~*There is one piece of the Koran, belonging to the begin- ning of this period, if not to the close of the former, which claims particular notice. This is i., the Lord's Prayer of*~~

~~*the Moslems, and beyond dispute the gem of the Koran. The words of this stra, which is known as al-fdtiha ("the opening one") are as follows :—*~~

~~*(1) In the name of God, the compassionate compassioner. (2) Praise be [literally "is"] to God, the Lord of the worlds, (3) the compassionate compassioner, (4) the Sovereign of the day of Judgment. (5) Thee do we worship and of Thee do we beg assist- ance. (6) Direct us in the right way ; (7) in the way of those to whom Thou hast been gracious, on whom there is no wrath, and who go not astray.*~~

~~*The thoughts are so simple as to need no explanation ; and yet the prayer is full of meaning. It is true that there is not a single original idea of Mohammed's in it. Several words and turns of expression are borrowed directly from the Jews, in particular the designation of God as the "'Compassioner," Lahmdn. Rahménd, which was a favourite name for God in the Talmudic period. Mohammed seems for a while to have entertained the thought of adopting al-Rahmdn as a proper name of God, in place of Ad/dh, which was already used by the heathens.1 This purpose he ultimately relinquished, but it is just in the sutras of the second period that the use of Rahmdn is specially frequent. It was probably in the first stra also that Mohammed first introduced the formula, "In the name of God," etc. It is to be regretted that this prayer must lose its effect through too frequent use, for every Moslem who says his five prayers regularly—as the most of them do—repeats it not less than twenty times a day.*~~

~~*The stras of the third Meccan period, which form a Latest pretty large part of our present Koran, are almost entirely Meccan*~~

~~*prosaic. Some of the revelations are of considerable extent, and the single verses also are much longer than in the older sutras. Only now and then a gleam of poetic power flashes out. A sermonizing tone predominates. The suras are very edifying for one who is already recon- ciled to their import, but to us at least they do not seem very well fitted to carry conviction to the minds of unbe- lievers. That impression, however, is not correct, for in reality the demonstrations of these longer Meccan suras appear to have been peculiarly influential for the propaga- tion of Islam. Mohammed's mission was not to Europeans, but to a people who, though quick-witted*~~

~~*and receptive, were not accustomed to logical thinking, while they had out-grown their ancient religion.*~~

~~*When we reach the Medina period it becomes, as has Medinan been indicated, much easier to understand the revelations suras.*~~

~~*in their historical relations, since our knowledge of the history of Mohammed in Medina is tolerably complete. In many cases the historical occasion is perfectly clear, in others we can at least recognize the general situation from which they arose, and thus approximately fix their time. There still remains, however, a remnant, of which we can only say that it belongs to Medina.*~~

~~*The style of this period bears a pretty close resemblance to that of the latest Meccan period. It is for the most part pure prose, enriched by occasional rhetorical embellish- ments. Yet even here there are many bright and impres- sive passages, especially in those sections which may be regarded as proclamations to the army of the faithful. For the Moslems, Mohammed has many different messages. At one time it is a summons to do battle for the faith; at another, a series of reflexions on recently experienced success or misfortune, or a rebuke for their weak faith ; or an ex- hortation to virtue, and soon. IIe often addresses himself +0 the "doubters," some of whom vacillate between faith and unbelief, others make a pretence of faith, while others*~~

~~*1 Since in Arabic also the root »>), signifies 'to have pity," the Arabs must have at once perceived the force of the new name.*~~

~~*This is simply the Jewish Rahman.*~~

~~*Mysteri- ous letters.*~~

~~*604*~~

~~*scarcely take the trouble even to do that. They are no consolidated party, but to Mohammed they are all equally vexatious, because, as soon as danger has to be encountered, or a contribution is levied, they all alike fallaway. There are frequent outbursts, ever increasing in bitterness, against*~~

~~*the Jews, who were very numerous in Medina and its neighbourhood when Mohammed arrived. He has much less to say against the Christians, with whom he never came closely in contact ; and as for the idolaters, there was little occasion in Medina to have many words with them. A part of the Medina pieces consists of formal laws belong- ing to the ceremonial, civil, and criminal codes ; or directions about certain temporary complications. The most objec- tionable parts of the whole Koran are those which treat of Mohammed's relations with women. The laws and regula- tions were generally very concise revelations, but most of them have been amalgamated with other pieces of similar or dissimilar import, and are now found in very long stras.*~~

~~*Such is an imperfect sketch of the composition and the internal history of the Koran, but it is probably sufficient to show that the book is a very heterogeneous collection. If only those passages had been preserved which had a permanent value for the theology, the ethics, or the juris- prudence of the Moslems, a few fragments would have been amply sufficient. Fortunately for knowledge, respect for the sacredness of the letter has led to the collection of all the revelations that could possibly be collected,—the "abro- gating" along with the "abrogated," passages referring to passing circumstances as well as those of lasting importance. Every one who takes up the book in the proper religious frame of mind, like most of the Moslems, reads pieces directed against long-obsolete absurd ctistoms of Mecca just as devoutly as the weightiest moral precepts,—perhaps even more devoutly, because he does not understand them so well,*~~

~~*At the head of twenty-nine of the stras stand certain initial letters, from which no clear sense can be obtained. Thus, before ii, iii, xxxi. xxxii. we find J) (Alif Lém Mim), before xl.-xlvi.*~~

~~*> (Hi Mim). Noldeke at one time suggested that these initials*~~

~~*did not belong to Mohammed's text, but might be the monograms of possessors of codices, which, through negligence on the part of the editors, were incorporated in the final form of the Koran ; he now deems it more probable that they are to be traced to the Prophet himself, as Sprenger, Loth, and others suppose. One can- not indeed admit the truth of Loth's statement that in the proper nage words of these suras we may generally*~~

~~find an allusion to the accompanying initials ; but it can scarcely be accidental that the first verse of the great majority of them (in iii. it is the second verse) contains the word " book," " revelation," or some equivalent. They usually begin with: "This is the book," or " Revelation ('down sending') of the book," or something similar. Of suras which commence in this way only a few (xviil. xxiv. xxv. xxxix.) want the initials, while only xxix. and xxx. have the initials and begin differently. These few exceptions may easily have proceeded from ancient corruptions ; at all events they cannot neutralize the evidence of the greater number. Mohammed seems to have meant these letters for a mystic reference to the archetypal text in heaven. Toa man who regarded the art of writing, of which at the best he had but a slight knowledge, as something supernatural, and who lived amongst illiterate people, an A B C may well have seemed more sig- nificant than to us who have been initiated into the mysteries of this art from our childhood. The Prophet himself can hardly have attached any particular meaning to these symbols : they served their purpose if they conveyed an impression of solemnity and enigmatical obscurity. In fact, the Koran admits that it contains many things which neither can be, nor were intended to be, understood (iii. 5). To regard these letters as ciphers is a precarious hypothesis, for the simple reason that cryptography is not to be looked for in the very infancy of Arabic writing. Ifthey are actually ciphers, the multipli- city of possible explanations at once precludes the hope of a plausible interpretation. None of the efforts in this direction, whether by Moslem scholars or by Europeans, have led to convincing results."~~

~~This remark applies even to the ingenious conjecture of Sprenger, that the letters jag (Kaf Hé Yé' Ain Sad) before xix. (which treats of John and Jesus, and, according to tradition, was sent to the Christian king of Abyssinia) stand for Jesus Nazarenus~~

~~MOHAMM™MEDANISM~~

~~[KORAN,~~

~~Rex Judzorum. Sprenger arrives at this explanation by a very artificial method ; and besides, Mohammed was not so simple as the Moslem~~

~~*traditionalists, who imagined that the Abyssinians could read a piece of the Arabic Koran. It need hardly be said that the Moslems have from of old applied themselves with great assiduity to the decipherment of these initials, and have sometimes found the deepest mysteries in them. Generally, however, they are content with the prudent conclusion, that God alone knows the meaning of these letters.*~~

~~*When Mohammed died, the separate pieces of the Koran, Trans- notwithstanding their theoretical sacredness, existed only mission in scattered copies ; they were consequently in great danger of the*~~

~~*of being partially or entirely destroyed. Many Moslems knew large portions by heart, but certainly no one knew the whole ; and a merely oral propagation would have left the door open to all kinds of deliberate and inadvertent alterations. Mohammed himself had never thought of an authentic collection of his revelations; he was usually concerned only with the object of the moment, and the idea that the revelations would be destroyed unless he made pro- vision for their safe preservation, did not enter his mind. A man destitute of literary culture has some difficulty in anticipating the fate of intellectual products. But now, after the death of the Prophet, most of the Arabs revolted against his successor, and had to be reduced to submission by force. Especially sanguinary was the contest against the prophet Maslama (Mubarrad, Kdmil 443, 5), an imi- tator of Mohammed, commonly known by the derisive diminutive Mosailima, At that time (4.p. 633) many of the most devoted Moslems fell, the very men who knew most Koran pieces by heart. 'Omar then began to fear that the Koran might be entirely forgotten, and he induced the Caliph Abubekr to undertake the collection of all its parts. Thabit, a native of Medina, then about twenty-two years of # age, who had often acted as amanuensis to the Prophet, in whose service he is even said to have learned the Jewish letters. The account of this collection of the Koran has reached us in several substantially identical forms, and goes back to Zaid himself. According to it, he collected the revelations from copies written on flat stones, pieces of leather, ribs of palm-leaves (not palm-leaves themselves), and such-like material, but chiefly "from the breasts of men," ze. from their memory. From these he wrote a fair copy, which he gave to Abtbekr, from whom it came to his successor 'Omar, who again bequeathed it to his daughter*~~

~~*Hafsa, one of the widows of the Prophet. This redaction, commonly called al-sohof ("the leaves"), had from the first no canonical authority ; and its internal arrangement can only be conjectured.*~~

~~*The Moslems were as far as ever from possessing a uni- form text of the Koran. The bravest of their warriors sometimes knewdeplorably little about it; distinction on that field they cheerfully accorded to pious men like Ibn Mas'ud. It was inevitable, however, that discrepancies should emerge between the texts of professed scholars, and as these men in their several localities were authorities on the reading of the Koran, quarrels began to break out between the levies from different districts about the true form of the sacred book. During a campaign in a.H. 30 (4.D. 650-1), Ho- dhaifa, the victor in the great and decisive battle of Neha- wand—which was to the empire of the Sdsdnids what Gaugamela was to that of the Achemenidee—perceived that such disputes might become dangerous, and therefore urged*~~

~~*Koran.*~~

~~*The Caliph laid the duty on Zaid, the son of Zaid's*~~

~~*Tr*~~

~~*st oran.*~~

~~*on the Caliph 'Othman the necessity for a universally bind- 'oth.*~~

~~*ing text.*~~

~~*The matter was entrusted to Zaid, who had made man's*~~

~~*the former collection, with three leading Koraishites, or"*~~

~~*These brought together as many copies as they could lay their hands on, and prepared an edition which was to be canonical for all Moslems. To prevent any further dis- putes, they burned all the other codices except that of*~~

~~*KORAN. |*~~

~~*Merwin, the governor of Medina. 'The destruction of the earlier codices was an irreparable loss to criticism ; but, for the essentially political object of putting an end to con- troversies by admitting only one form of the common book of religion and of law, this measure was necessary.*~~

~~*The result of these labours is in our hands; as to how they were conducted we have no trustworthy information, tradition being here too much under the influence of dog- matic presuppositions. The critical methods of a modern scientific commission will not be expected of an age when the highest literary education for an Arab consisted in ability to read and write. It now seems to me highly probable that this second redaction took this simple form: Zaid read off from the codex which he had previously written, and his associates, simultaneously or successively, wrote one copy each to his dictation. It certainly cannot have been by chance that, according to sure tradition, they wrote exactly four copies. Be that as it may, it is impos- sible now to distinguish in the present form of the book what belongs to the first redaction from what is due to the second.*~~

~~*In the arrangement of the separate sections, a classifica- tion according to contents was impracticable because of the variety of subjects often dealt with in one stra. A chrono- logical arrangement was out of the question, because the chronology of the older pieces must have been imperfectly known, and because in some cases passages of different dates had been joined together. Indeed, systematic prin- ciples of this kind were altogether disregarded at that period, The pieces were accordingly arranged in indiscri- minate order, the only rule observed being to place the long stras first and the shorter towards the end, and even that was far from strictly adhered to. The short opening stira is so placed on account of its superiority to the rest, and two magical formule are kept for a sort of protection at the end; these are the only special traces of design, The combination of pieces of different origin may proceed partly from the possessors of the codices from which Zaid compiled his first complete copy, partly from Zaid himself. The individual stras are separated simply by the super- scription—"Tn the name of God, the compassionate Com- passioner," which is wanting only in the ninth. The additional headings found in our texts (the name of the sura, the number of verses, etc.) were not in the original codices, and form no integral part of the Koran.*~~

~~*It is said that 'Othman directed Zaid and his associates, in cases of disagreement, to follow the Koraish dialect ; but, though well attested, this account can scarcely be correct. The extremely primitive writing of those days was quite incapable of rendering such minute differences as can have existed between the pronunciation of Mecca and that of Medina,*~~

~~*'Othman's Koran was not complete. Some passages are evidently fragmentary ; and a few detached pieces are still extant which were originally parts of the Koran, although they have been omitted by Zaid. Amongst these are some which there is no reason to suppose Mohammed desired to suppress, Zaid may easily have overlooked a few stray fragments, but that he purposely omitted anything which he believed to belong to the Koran is very unlikely. It has been conjectured that in deference to his superiors he kept out of the book the names of Mohammed's enemies, if they or their families came afterwards to be respected. But it must be remembered that it was never Mohammed's practice to refer explicitly to contemporary persons and affairs in the Koran. Only a single friend, his adopted son Zaid (xxxiii. 37), and a single enemy, his uncle Abi Lahab (cxi.) —and these for very special reasons—are men- tioned by name ; and the namie of the latter has been left*~~

~~*Hafsa, which, however, was soon afterwards destroyed by*~~

~~*in the Koran with a fearful curse annexed to it, although his son had embraced Islam before the death of Mohammed, So, on the other hand, there is no single verse or clause which can be plausibly made out to be an interpolation by Zaid at the instance of Abubekr, 'Omar, or 'Othman. Slight clerical errors there may have been, but the Koran of 'Othman contains none but genuine elements, —though sometimes in very strange order,*~~

~~*Of the four exemplars of 'Othman's Koran, one was kept in Medina, and one was sent to each of the three metro- politan cities, Cufa, Basra, and Damascus. It can still be pretty clearly shown in detail that these four codices deviated from one another in points of orthography, in the insertion*~~

~~*or omission of a wa ("and"), and such-like minutie ; but these variations nowhere affect the sense. All later manuscripts are derived from these four originals.*~~

~~*At the same time, the other forms of the Koran did Other not at once become extinct. In particular we have editions, some information about the codex of Obay. If the list which gives the order of its stras is correct, it must have contained substantially the same materials as our text : in that case Obay must have used the original collection of Zaid. The same is true of the codex of Tbn Mas'ud, of which we have also a catalogue. It appears that the principle of putting the longer stras before the shorter was more consistently carried out by him than by Zaid. He*~~

~~*omits i, and the magical formule of exiii, exiv. Obay, on the other hand, had embodied two additional short prayers, which we may regard as Mohammed's. One*~~

~~*can easily understand that differences of opinion may have existed as to whether and how far formularies of this kind belonged to the Koran. Some of the divergent readings of both these texts have been preserved, as well as a con- siderable number of other ancient variants. Most of them are decidedly inferior to the received readings, but some are quite as good, and a few deserve preference.*~~

~~*The only man who appears to have seriously opposed Ibn the general introduction of 'Othman's text is Tbn Mas'ud, Mas'td. He was one of the oldest disciples of the Prophet, and had often rendered him personal service ; but he was a man of contracted views, although he is one of the pillars of Mos- lem theology. His opposition had no effect. Now when we consider that at that time there were many Moslems who had heard the Koran from the mouth of the Prophet, that other measures of the imbecile 'Othmd4n met with the most vehement resistance on the part of the bigoted champions of the faith, that these were still further incited against him by some of his ambitious old comrades until at last they murdered him, and finally that in the civil wars after his death the several parties were glad of any pretext for branding their opponents as infidels ;—when we consider all this, we must regard it as a strong testi- mony in favour of 'Othman's Koran that no party, not even that of 'All, found fault with his conduct in this matter, or*~~

~~*repudiated the text formed by Zaid, who was one of the most devoted adherents of 'Othman and his family.*~~

~~*But this redaction is not the close of the textual history of the Later Koran. The ancient Arabic alphabet was very imperfect ; it not history only wanted marks for the short, and in part even for the long of the vowels, but it often expressed several consonants by the same sign. text. Hence there were many words which could be read in very different ways. This variety of possible readings was at first very great, and many readers seem to have actually made it their object to discover pronunciations which were new, provided they were at all appro- priate to the ambiguous text. There was also a dialectic license in grammatical forms, which had uot as yet been greatly restricted.*~~

~~*An effort was made by many to establish a more refined pronuncia- tion for the Koran than was usual in common life or in secular literature. The various schools of " readers" differed very widely from one another ; although for the most part there was no im- portant divergence as to the sense of words. A few of them gradu-*~~

~~*Manu- scripts.*~~

~~*Commen- tators.*~~

~~*606*~~

~~*ally rose to special authority, and the rest disappeared. Seven readers are generally reckoned chief authorities, but for practical purposes this number was continually reduced in process of time ; so that at present only two "reading-styles" are 1n actual nse,— the common style of Hafs, and that of Nafi', which prevails in Africa to the west of Egypt. There is, however, a very comprehen- sive massoretic literature in which a number of other styles are indi- cated. The invention of vowel-signs, of diacritic points to dis- tinguish similarly formed consonants, and of other orthographic*~~

~~*signs, soon put a stop to arbitrary conjectures on the part of the readers. Many zealots objected to the introduction of these inno- vations in the sacred text, but theological consisteucy had to yield to practical necessity. In accurate codices, indeed, all such addi- tions, as well as the titles of the sura, etc., are written in coloured ink, while the black characters profess to*~~

~~*represent exactly the original of 'Othman. But there is probably no copy quite faithful in this respect. '*~~

~~*In European libraries, besides innumerable modern manuscripts of the Koran, there are also codices, or fragments, of high anti- quity, some of them probably dating from the Ist century of the Flight. For the restoration of the text, however, the works of ancient scholars on its readings and modes of writing are more important than the manuscripts ; which, however elegantly they may be written and ornamented, proceed from irresponsible copyists. The original, written by 'Othman himself, has indeed been exhibited in various parts of the Mohammedan world. The library of the India Office contains one such manuscript, bearing the subscription : 'Written by 'Othman the son of 'Affan." These, of course, are barefaced forgeries, although of very ancient date ; so are those which profess to be from the hand of 'Ali, one of which is preserved in the same library. In recent times the Koran has been often printed and lithographed, both in the East and the West.*~~

~~*Shortly after Mohammed's death certain individuals applied themselves to the exposition of the Koran. Much of it was obscure from the beginning, other sections were unintelligible apart from a knowledge of the circumstances of their origin. Unfortunately, those who took possession of this field were not very honourable. Ibn 'Abbas, a cousin of Mohammed's, and the chief source of the traditional exegesis of the Koran, has, on theological and other grounds, given currency to a number of falsehoods ; and at least some of his pupils have emulated his example. These earliest expositions dealt more with the sense and connexion of whole verses than with the separate words. Afterwards, as the know- ledge of the old language declined, and the study of philolog arose, more attention began to be paid to the explanation of vocables. A good many fragments of this older theological and philological exegesis have survived from the first two centuries of the Flight, although we have no complete commentary of this period. Most of the expository material will perhaps be found in the very large commentary of the celebrated Tabari (A.D. 839-923), of which an almost complete copy is in the Viceregal library at Cairo. Another very famous commentary is that of Zamakhshari (a.p. 1075-1144), edited by*~~

~~*Nassau-Lees, Calcutta, 1859; but this scholar, with his great insight and still greater subtlety, is too*~~

~~*MOHAMMEDANISM*~~

~~*[KORAN.*~~

~~*apt to read his own scholastic ideas into the Koran, The favourite commentary of Baiddwi (ob. A.D. 1286), edited by Fleischer, Leipsic, 1846-1848, is little more than an abridgment of Zamakh- shari's. Thousands of commentaries on the Koran, some of them of prodigious size, have been written by Moslems ; and even the number of those still extant in manuscript is byno meanssmall. Although these works all contain much that is useless or false, yet they are invaluable aids to our understanding of the sacred book. An un- biassed European can, no doubt, see many things at a glance more clearly than a good Moslem who is under the influence of religious prejudice ; but we should still be helpless without the exegetical literature of the Mohammedans. Nevertheless, a great deal remains to be accomplished by European scholarship for the correct inter- pretation of the Koran. We want, for example, an exhaustive classification and discussion of all the Jewish elements in the Koran; a praiseworthy beginning has already been made in Geiger's youthful essay: Was hat Mahomet aus dem Judenthum aufgenommen? (Bonn, 1833). We want especially a thorough commentary, executed with the methods and resources of modern*~~

~~*science. No European language, it would seem, can even boast Trans- of a translation which completely satisfies modern requirements. lations.*~~

~~*The best are in English; where we have the extremely para- phrastic, but for its time admirable translation of Sale (repeatedly printed), that of Rodwell (1861), which seeks to give the pieces in chronological order, and that of Palmer (1880), who wisely follows the traditional arrangements. The introduction which accompanies Palmer's translation is not in all respects abreast of the most recent scholarship. Considerable extracts from the Koran are well trans- lated in E. W. Lane's Selections from the Kur-an.*~~

~~Besides commentaries on the whole Koran, or on special parts and topics, the Moslems possess a whole literature bearing on their sacred book. There are works on the spelling and right pronun- ciation of the Koran, works on the beauty of its language, on the number of its verses, words and letters, etc. ; nay, there are even works which would nowadays be called "historical and critical introductions." Moreover, the origin of Arabic philology is intimately connected with the recitation and exegesis of the Koran. To exhibit the importance of the sacred book for the whole mental life of the Moslems would be simply to write the history of that life itself; for there is no department in which its all-pervading, but unfortunately not always salutary inflnence has not been felt.~~

~~The unbounded reverence of the Moslems for the Koran reaches Eternity its climax in the dogma that this book, as the divine word, 7.e. of the thought, is immanent in God, and consequently eternal and wn- Koran.~~

~~ercated. That dogma has been accepted by almost all Mohammedans since the beginning of the 3d century. Some theologians did indeed protest against it with great energy ; it was in fact too pre-~~

~~osterous to declare that a book composed of unstable words and etters, and full of variants, was absolutely divine. But what were the distinctions and sophisms of the theologians for, if they could not remove such contradictions, and convict their opponents of heresy ?~~

~~The following works may be specially consulted : Weil, Einleitwng in den Kordn, 2d ed., 1878; Th. Noldeke, Geschichte des Qordn's (Gottingen, 1860); and the Lives of Mohammed by Muir and Sprenger. (TH. N.)~~

~~INDEX.~~

~~'Abbas, 551, 5743 house | Bokhari, 565. Hegira. See Hijra.~~

~~of, 574 sq. Buyid dynasty, 587, 588. | Hieromax (battle), 562. 'Abbasid dynasty, 578- | Cadi, 591. Hijra, 545, 551. 8 Caliph, 561, 589, 591. Hira, 545, 562.~~

~~588.~~

~~*‘Abd al-Melik, 569. Abderame, 575, 576 sq. Abubekr, 548, 561 sy. Abt Hanifa, 595. Abu 1-‘Abbas, 577 sq. Abt Lahab, 550. Abt Moslim, 576, 578.*~~

~~*Carmathians, 586, 594. Comunerce, 597. Ctesiphon, 562.*~~

~~*Cufa (Kufa), 564, 570, &e. Dahhak, 569.*~~

~~*“ Defenders” (Ansar), 554, Diwan, 589, 591.*~~

~~*Hird, Mt., 547. Historians, 596. Hodaibiya (treaty), 557. Hosain b. ‘Ali, 567.*~~

~~*“ Hypocrites,” 554.*~~

~~*Ibn al-Ash‘ath, 572. Ibn Hanbal, 584, 595.*~~

~~*Mokhtar, 568 sqq. Money, 572, 590. Montasir, 585. Moslim b. ‘Okba, 568. Mosta‘in, 585. Mo‘tasim, 584. Mo‘tamid, 586. Motawakkil, 585.*~~

~~*Kerbela (battle), 568. Khadija, 546, 548, 550. Khaibar, 552, 557 sq. Khalid, 558, 562. Kharijites, 560, 564, 565,*~~

~~*569, 571, 592.*~~

~~*Koraish, 545, 559, 563. Koran, 597-606.*~~

~~*Science, 596.*~~

~~*Siffin (battle), 564.*~~

~~*Shafi’i, 595.*~~

~~*Shi’ites, 564, 568.*~~

~~*Solaiman, 574.*~~

~~*Sorra-man-ra’a, 585.*~~

~~*Spain conquered, 573 ; Ca- liphate, 579.*~~

~~*Abu Talib, 546, 548, 549.*~~

~~*Africa conquered, 567, 572; revolts, 579.*~~

~~*Aghlabites, 579, 587.*~~

~~*‘All, 548, 563, 566; housc of, 574, 579, 584.*~~

~~*Amin, 583.*~~

~~*Amir al-Omara, 587.*~~

~~*‘Amr b. al-‘Ag (Amrou),*~~

~~*558, 565, 567.*~~

~~*Arab heathenism, 546.*~~

~~*Ash‘ari, 593.*~~

~~*Assassins, 594.*~~

~~*Baghdad founded, 579.*~~

~~*Banu Kainoka, 555.*~~

~~*Banti Nadir, 556.*~~

~~*Barmecides, 581.*~~

~~*Basra, 562, 590; school*~~

~~*of, 592. Bedr (battle), 555.*~~

~~*Duunat al-Jandal, 565.*~~

~~*“Emigrants’(Mohajirin),*~~

~~*554, 563.*~~

~~*Fatima, 546.*~~

~~*Fatimites, 587, 594.*~~

~~*Fatra, 548.*~~

~~*Fosse, War of tlie, 556.*~~

~~*Ghassan, 545, 562.*~~

~~*Grammarians, 595.*~~

~~*Greeks, wars with, 567,*~~

~~*570, 572, 574, 580, 582, 584, 585.*~~

~~*Hadi, 581.*~~

~~*Hajjaj, 569, 571 sqq.*~~

~~*Hamdanite dynasty, 587.*~~

~~*Hamza, 550, 556.*~~

~~*Hanifs, 547.*~~

~~*Harin al-Rashid, 581.*~~

~~*Hasan b. ‘Ali, 566.*~~

~~*Hashimites, 545.*~~

~~*Ibn Mas‘ud, 601. Ibn Obay, 552, 554. Ibn Zobair, 567, 568, 570*~~

~~*sqq.*~~

~~*Ibrahim (Caliph), 576.*~~

~~*Ikhshidites, 587.*~~

~~*Imams, 592; of house of*~~

~~*, Ali, 593.*~~

~~*‘Isd b. Musd, 579 sq.*~~

~~*Islam, 547; chief pre- cepts, 553.*~~

~~*Ismailians, 593.*~~

~~*Jabarites, 592.*~~

~~*Ja‘far, 581, 582.*~~

~~*Jews, 547, 550, 552, 553,*~~

~~*555.*~~

~~*Ji‘rana, 559.*~~

~~*Kadarites, 592.*~~

~~*Kadisiya (battle), 562.*~~

~~*Kairawan, 567.*~~

~~*Koraiza, 556. Mo‘tazilites, 592. Sufism, 594. Kotaiba b. Moslim, 573, | Musa, 572 sq. Sunna, 553, 594. 574. Nehawend (battle), 562. | Tabuk, 561. Law, 594. Obaid Allah, 568. ‘PAif, 545, 550, 559, 560. Mahdi (Caliph), 580; Mo- | Obay, 605. Tarik, 573. hammed the, 579. Ohod (battle), 556. Theology, 592. Malatiya, 579. ‘Okba, 567. Tradition (Hadith), 564,*~~

~~*Malik b. Anas, 565, 593,*~~

~~*594,*~~

~~*Ma’mun, 583.*~~

~~*Mansur, 578 sq.*~~

~~*Martel, Charles, 576.*~~

~~*Maslama, 574, 576.*~~

~~*Mecca, 545 sqq., 559, 569,*~~

~~*571.*~~

~~*Medina, 546, 551 sqq., 588.*~~

~~*Merwan I., 569; M. II.,*~~

~~*576.*~~

~~*Mo‘awiya I., 563, 565 sq.; M. IL, 569.*~~

~~*Mohallab, 569 sqq.*~~

~~*Mohammed, 545-561; M. b. Hanafiya, 569.*~~

~~*‘Omar I., 550, 563; ‘O. IL.,*~~

~~*574,*~~

~~*Omayyads, 545, 560, 563; dynasty, 565-576; in Spain, 579.*~~

~~*Orthodox sects, 593.*~~

~~*‘Othman, 548, 549, 563; Koran, 605.*~~

~~*Poets, 595.*~~

~~*Provinces, 590.*~~

~~*Ramadan, 553.*~~

~~*Rawandi sect, 579.*~~

~~*Revenues, 589.*~~

~~*Saffarid dynasty, 586.*~~

~~*Samarkand, 567.*~~

~~*594.*~~

~~*Tulinid dynasty, 586.*~~

~~*Turks, 585 sq.*~~

~~*Turun, 587.*~~

~~*Vizier, 591.*~~

~~*Wakidi, 564, 596.*~~

~~*Walid I, 573; W. 11,*~~

~~*576.*~~

~~*Wathik, 585.*~~

~~*Yahya b. Abdallah, 582.*~~

~~*Yazid I., 567 sq.; Y. 11., PQ G ALR, BIOS Sho 10; Mohallab, 574, 575.*~~

~~*Zaid b. ‘All, 575.*~~

~~*Ziyad, 566, 567.*~~

~~*: Note.—Arabic has ouly three short vowels, ranging between the short sounds of a and e, e and i, o and w respectively. In the transcription adopted these are given by a or e, i and o respectively. The corresponding long vowels are 4, 4,%. The latter two have the sound of English ee and 00, and are so written by some*~~

~~*English scholars. equivalent ;*~~

~~*In the transcription of consonants th is as the th in thin, dh the th in the; dots are put under hard letters which have no exact English*~~

~~*kh (often written ch) is nearly the Scottish or German ch; 'isa deep breathing, seldom pronounced by Europeans ; gh a guttural something like*~~

~~*niodern Greek y or the Northumberland burr. In a few names the conventional spelling is used. In proper names 0. stands for ibn, "son of."*~~

~~*MOH—MOH*~~

~~*MOHL, Juxes (1800-1876), Orientalist, was born at Stuttgart 25th October 1800, and educated for the Lutheran Church at Tiibingen ; but his inclinations carried him from theology through Hebrew to Oriental studies, and in 1823 he betook himself to Paris, at that time under De Sacy the great European school of Eastern letters. He soon ac- quired reputation, and from 1826 to 1833 was nominally professor at Titibingen, with permission to continue his studies in France, but he never entered on the duties of this office, Paris having become his second home. In 1826 he was charged by the French Government with the preparation of an edition of the Skdk Ndmeh, the first volume of which appeared in 1838, while the seventh and last was left unfinished at his death; in 1844 he was nominated to the Institut, and in 1847 he became pro- fessor of Persian at the Collége de France. But his know- ledge and interest extended to all departments of Oriental learning, and this catholicity of taste, united to a singular impartiality of judgment and breadth of view, gave him a quite remarkable personal influence on the course of East- ern learning in France. The chief sphere of this influence was the Société Asiatique, which he served for many years as secretary-adjunct, as secretary, and finally as president. His annual reports on Oriental science, presented to the society from 1840 to 1867, and tollected after his death (4th January 1876, at Paris) under the title Vingt-sept Ans des Etudes Orientales (Paris, 1879), are an admirable history of the progress of Eastern learning during these years, and justify the high esteem in which he was held by scholars.*~~

~~*MOHLER, Jonann Apam (1796-1838), Roman Catholic theologian, was born at the village of Igersheim in Wiir- temberg on 6th May 1796, and, after studying philosophy and theology in the Lyceum at Ellwangen, entered*~~

~~*the Wilhelmstift in the university of Tiibingen in 1817. Ordained to the priesthood in 1819, he was appointed to a curacy at Riedlingen, but speedily returned as "repetent" to Tiibingen, where he became privat-docent in 1822, ex- traordinary professor of theology in 1826, and ordinary in 1828. The controversies excited by his Symbolik (1832) proved so unpleasant that in 1835 he accepted a call to the university of Munich. In 1838 he was appointed to the deanery of Wiirzburg, but died shortly afterwards*~~

~~*(12th April 1838).*~~

~~*Mohler wrote Die Einheit in der Kirche (Tiibingen, 1825) ; Athanasius der Grosse u. d. Kirche seiner Zeit im Kampfe m. d. Arianismus (2 vols., Mainz, 1827) ; Symbolik, oder Darstellung der dogmatisehen Gegensitze der Katholiken u. Protestanten naeh thren éffentlichen Bekenntnisssehr iften (Mainz, 1832; 8th ed., 1871-72; Eng. transl. by J. B. Robertson, 1843) ; and Neue Untersuehungen der Lehrgegensitze zwischen den Katholiken uw. Protestanten (1834). HIs Gesdmmelte Sehriften u. Aufsitze were edited by Déllinger in 1839 ; his Patrologie by Reithmayr, also in 1839 ; and a Biographie by Worner was published at Ratisbon in 1866. It is with the Symbolik that his name is chiefly associated ; the interest excited by it in Protestant circles is shown by the fact that within two years of its appearance it had elicited three replies of considerable importance, those namely of Baur, Marheineke, and Nitzsch. But, although characterized by abundant learning and acuteness, as well as by considerable breadth of spiritual sympathy, and thus a stimula- tive and suggestive work, it cannot be said to have been accepted by Catholics themselves as embodying an accurate objective view of the actual doctrine of their church. The liberal school of thought of which Mohler was a prominent exponent was dis-couraged in official circles, while Protestants, on the other hand, complain that the author has failed to grasp the vast significance of the Reformation as a great movement in the spiritual history of mankind, while expending needless pains on an exposition of the doctrinal shortcomings, inconsistencies, and contradictions of the individuals who were its leaders.*~~

~~*MOHR, Karu Friepricu (1806-1879), a philosopher whose greatest claims to scientific distinction are as yet, though indubitable, only partially*~~

~~admitted, was the son of a well-to-do druggist in Coblentz, and was born 4th November 1806. Being a delicate child, he received much~~

~~of his early education at home, in great part in his father's~~

~~laboratory. To this may be traced much of the skill he showed in devising instruments and methods of analysis which are still in common use in chemical and pharmaceu- tical laboratories. At the age of 21 he studied chemistry under Gmelin, and, after five years spent in Heidelberg, Berlin, and Bonn, returned with the degree of Ph.D. to join his father's establishment. On the death of his father in 1840 he succeeded to the business, retiring from it for scien- tific leisure in 1857. Serious pecuniary losses led him at the age of 57 to become a privat-docent in Bonn, where he . was soon after appointed, by the direct influence of the emperor, extraordinary professor of pharmacy. In pri- vate and domestic life he was a man of singularly winning manners, intensely fond of music and poetry, for the latter of which he showed wonderful memory. But his uncom- promising spirit—perhaps we might even in some cases say his wrongheadedness—in matters of scientific and theo- logical authority had raised such a host of enemies that even royal influence could not secure his further advance- ment. Although he stood at the very head of the scien- tific pharmacists of Germany, his name was deliberately omitted from the list of the commission entrusted with the preparation of the Pharmacopawia Germanica. Yet in that work many of his ideas and processes were incor- porated by the very men who had previously denounced them. He died in October 1879.~~

~~Mohr's best-known work is his Lehrbuch der chemiseh-analytisehen Titrirmethode (1855), which has already run through inany editions, and which was specially commended by Liebig. His improvements in methods of chemical analysis occupy a long series of papers extending over some fifty years. He also published a number of physical papers on subjects such as Hail, St. Elmo's Fire, Ground-ice, &e., and a curious notice of the carliest mention of Ozone. He shows that Homer, on four different occasions, mentions the sul- phurous smell produced by lightning, and employs the very word from which the name of Ozone was long afterwards coined. In~~

~~*1866 appeared his Geschichte der Erde, eine Geologie auf neuer Grundlage, which has obtained a wide circulation.*~~

~~*But he will be remembered in future times mainly on account of a paper, Ueber die Natur der Warme, published in 1837, which unfortunately has not yet appeared in full in an English translation. The history of this paper is remarkable. It was refused admission into Poggendorf's Annalen, and was then sent to Baumgartner of Vienna, in whose Zeitschrift fiir Physik, &c.,it was at once published. As no proof-sheets reached Mohr, he concluded that his paper had been lost or rejected, and contented himself with publishing a short analysis in the Annalen der Pharmacie, of which he was an editor. This analysis, it is only fair to say, though probably prepared by the author himself, gives a very inadequate idea of the scope and merit of the paper. In 1864 Dr. Akin unearthed the paper from the forgotten pages of the Zeitschrift, and the author was enabled to reprint it, with notes, while the recent discussions as to the history of Conservation of Energy were still being carried on. Along with it he issued a number of other papers of greatly inferior merit.*~~

~~*Unless some still earlier author should be discovered, there can be no doubt that Mohr is to be recognized as the first to enunciate in its generality what we now call "conservation of energy." The thesis of his paper must be stated in his own words,—" Besides the 54 known chemical elements, there is in the physical world one agent only, and this is called Kraft (energy).! It may appear, according to circumstances, as motion, chemical affinity, cohesion, electricity, light, and magnetism; and from any one of these forms it can be transformed into any of the others." Even now, after nearly half a century of rapid advance in science, it would be difficult to improve this statement except by inserting, as regards transformation of energy, some such guarding expression as "in whole or in part." But if Mohr had inserted this, he might have had claims tothe 'dissipation of energy" also. Mohr's starting-point appears to have been the discovery (by Forbes) of the polarization of radiant heat. He goes through the whole of the then range of physics, pointing out the explanation of each experimental result as a transformation of energy, mentioning even the electric currents produced by electro-magnetic induction as a transformation of the energy required to draw the coil from the magnet—one of the earlier methods used by Joule*~~

~~*for quantitative determinations. His nu- merical results, based on data quoted from various books, are, it is*~~

~~*1 Tt is to be remembered that even the most accurate authorities in Germany—as, for instance, Von Helmholtz in his Essay of 1847—used till quite recently the word Kraft in the sense of Energy.*~~

~~*true, very inaccurate ; the correct experimental determinations we owe to Joule. But it must be remembered that these speculations, daring as they were and accurate (on the whole) as they have been found to be, required the confirmation which they received from the experimental work of Colding and Joule, or from the Essay of Von Helmholtz, whose basis also is wholly experimental, being the fact that 'perpetual motion" is recognized as unattainable.*~~

~~*MOIR, Davi Maczetu (1798-1851), the "Delta" of Blackwood's Magazine, one of its most popular contributors in its early days, was born at Musselburgh 5th January 1798, and was a physician in active practice there from his manhood to his death (6th July 1851). He seems to have been a man of winning manners and noble integrity of character, and the intrinsic value of his poetry has been in consequence somewhat over-estimated by critics of repute who enjoyed his personal acquaintance. He had no inde- pendent vein as a writer of serious verse, and his technical qualities as a poet do not bear examination. But his verses were undoubtedly popular with the readers of the magazine at the time. A collection of them was edited by Thomas Aird in 1852. Asa kindly humourist "Delta" had a more original turn. His Autobiography of Mansie Wauch, pub- lished separately in 1828, is a Scotch classic. And some of his satirical squibs on passing events were written with great freshness and spirit. His Outlines of the Ancient History of Medicine (1831) evidence his industry and ver- satility of talent. His Sketch of the poetical literature of the past Half Century (1851) is more remarkable for the grace of its rhetorical ornaments than for depth or fresh- ness of insight.*~~

~~*MOIR, Grorce (1800-1870), author of the treatises on "Poetry" and "Romance" in the seventh edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica, and born*~~

~~at Aberdeen in 1800, was an Edinburgh lawyer of very varied accomplishments. He was appointed professor of rhetoric in 1835, professor of Scots law in 1864; he had a considerable success at the Scottish Bar, was successively sheriff of Ross and sheriff of Stirling, and was a frequent contributor to Blackwood's Magazne. tions of Edinburgh law. He was a man of very wide reading, catholic sympathy, and fastidious taste, alive to very various degrees and kinds of excellence in literature, but too critical and hard to please to do justice to his own wealth of ideas. He died in 1870.~~

~~MOISSAC, chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Tarn-et-Garonne, France, is situated on the right bank of the Tarn, and on the railway line from Bor- deaux to Cette, 17 miles west-north-west of Montauban. The church of St Peter, belonging to the 15th century, has a doorway of the 12th century, remarkable for its elaborate and beautiful sculpture, representing Scriptural scenes. Connected with the choir of the church is a cloister dating from the beginning of the 12th century, and one of the finest specimens of this kind of building in France ; the pointed arches are supported by small columns with sculptured capitals. The town has a large trade in corn and flour, and the mills afford employment to a considerable number of persons. The population in 1881 was 9202.~~

~~The town owes its origin to an abbey founded between 630 and 640 by St Amand, the friend of Dagobert. After being devastated by the Saracens, the abbey was restored by Louis of Aquitaine, son of Charlemagne. Subsequently it was made de- pendent on Cluny, but in 1618 it was secularized by Pope Paul Y., and replaced by a house of Augustinian monks, which was suppressed at the Revolution. The town, which was erected into~~

~~a commune in the 15th century, was taken by Richard Cceur-de Lion, and by Simon de Montfort.~~

~~MOKADDAS!. Shams al-Din Abt Abdallah Moham- med ibn Ahmad al-Mokaddasf, 7.¢., of Jerusalem, also called al-Bashshari, was the author of a famous description of the lands of Islam, which much surpasses the earlier works of the same kind. His paternal grandfather was an architect of eminence, who constructed many public works in Pales-~~

~~*Moir honourably maintained the literary tradi- |*~~

~~*MOI—MOL*~~

~~*tine, and his mother's family was opulent. He was himself a well-educated and talented man, with an exorbitant idea of his own qualities, and some curious affectations, such as that of imitating for each region the dialect of its inhabit- ants. His descriptions rest on very extensive travels continued through a long series of years. His first pilgrim- age was made at the age of twenty, but his book was not published till a.u. 375 (985-6 a.D.), when he was forty years old. The two MSS. (at Berlin and Constantinople) represent a later recension (A.H. 378). The book became known in Europe through the copy brought from India by Sprenger, and was edited by De Goeje in 1877 as the third part of his Biblioth. Geographorum Arabicorum.*~~

~~*MOKANNA (Al-Mokanna', "the veiled") was, as explained above, p. 580, the surname given to Hakim, or 'Até, a man of unknown parentage, originally a fuller in Merv, who posed as an incarnation of Deity, and headed a revolt in Khorasan against the caliph Mahdi. Much is related of his magical arts, especially of a moonlike light visible for an enormous distance which he made to rise from a pit near Nakhshab. He died by poison in a.H. 163 (779-80 A.D.).*~~

~~*MOKSHAN, a town of Russia, situated in the govern- ment of Penza, 27 miles to the north-west of the capital of the province, and 18 miles from the Ranzay railway station. It has 14,500 inhabitants, who are engaged in agriculture, or work in flour-mills, oil-works, tanneries, and potash- works. A few merchants export corn and flour. Mokshan, which was built in 1535 as a fort to protect the country from the raids of the Tatars and Kalmuks, is supposed to occupy the site of the town of Mescheryaks, Murundza, mentioned as early as the 9th century. It has begun rapidly to increase since the railway between Moscow and Penza was made.*~~

~~*MOLA, or Mota pi Bazi, a seaport town of Italy, in the province of Bari, 13 miles from Bari on the railway to Brindisi. It is an old-fashioned place with irregular streets, but outside of the walls several new districts have grown up. The foreign, and to some extent also the coasting, trade has considerably declined since 1863, and the com- munal population has*~~

~~decreased from 12,574 in 1861 to 12,435 in 1881. Little is known about the early history of Mola ; it was sold by Alphonso I. to Landolfo Maramoldo in 1436, and ten years afterwards to Niccolo Tovaldo.~~

~~MOLASSES. See Sucar.~~

~~MOLAY, JAcQUES DE, a native of Burgundy, became grand-master of the order of the Temple in 1298, and was the last who held that dignity. HIe was burned at the stake in 1314. See TEMPLARS.~~

~~MOLDAVIA. See Roumania.~~

~~MOLE (contracted form of mould-warp, 7.¢., mould- caster), a term restricted in England to the common mole (Talpa europea), a small, soft-furred, burrowing mammal, with minute eyes, and broad fossorial fore feet, belonging to the order Jnsectivora and family Z'alpidz, but generally applied elsewhere to any underground burrowing animal of the class Mammalia. Thus, in North America we find, representing the same family, the star-nosed moles (Con- dylura), and the shrew moles (Scalops and Scapanus) ; in South Africa, the golden moles of the far-removed family Chrysochloride ; and in South-East Europe, Asia, and South Africa, the rhizophagous rodent moles of the order Rodentia and families Spalacide and Muride (see Mam- MALIA, vol. xv. pp. 405, 419, figs. 64 and 96).~~

~~Talpa europea, the Common Mole, type of the genus Talpa,) is about six inches in length, of which the tail measures somewhat more than an inch; the body is long~~

~~1 Eight species may be recognized, and arranged, according to their dentition, as follows :—~~

~~MOLE~~

~~and cylindrical, and, owing to the very anterior position of the forelimbs, the head appears to rest between the shoulders ; the muzzle is long and obtusely pointed, ter- minated by the nostrils, which are close together in front ; the minute eye is almost hidden by the fur; the ear is without a conch, opening on a level with the surrounding integument ; the forelimbs~~

~~*are rather short and very mus- cular, terminating in broad, naked, shovel-shaped feet, the palms normally directed outwards, each with five subequal digits armed with strong flattened claws; the hind-feet, on the contrary, are long and narrow, and the toes are provided with slender claws. The body is densely covered with soft, erect, velvety fur,—the hairs uniform in length and thickness, except on the muzzle and short tail, the former having some straight vibrisse on its sides, whilst the latter is clothed with longer and coarser hairs. The fur is generally black, with a more or less greyish tinge, or brownish-black, but various paler shades up to pure white have been observed.*~~

~~*The food of the mole consists chiefly of the common earth-worm, in pursuit of which it forms its well-known underground excavations. Its habits, so difficult to observe, were many years ago most patiently studied and described by M. Henri le Court. Like many other mammals the mole has a lair or fortress to which it may retire for security. This is constructed with much ingenuity. It consists of a central nest formed under a hillock which is placed in some protected situation, as under a bank, or between the roots of trees. The nest, which is lined with dried grass or leaves, communicates with the main-run by four passages, one of which only joins it directly, leading downwards for a short distance and then ascending again ; the other three are directed upwards and communicate at regular intervals with a circular gallery constructed in the upper part of the hillock, which in turn communicates by five passages leading downwards and outwards with another much larger gallery placed lower down on a level with the central nest, from which passages proceed outwards in different directions, one only communicating directly with the main-run, while the others, curving round, soon join, or end in culs-de-sac. The main-run is somewhat wider than the animal's body, its walls are smooth, and formed of closely compressed earth, its depth varying according to the nature of the soil, but ordinarily from four to six inches. Along this tunnel the animal passes backwards and forwards several times daily, and here traps are laid by mole-catchers for its capture. From the main-run numerous passages are formed on each side, along which the animal hunts its prey, throwing out the soil in the form of mole- hills, The mole is the most voracious of mammals, and, if deprived of food, is said to succumb in from ten to twelve hours. Almost any kind of flesh is eagerly devoured by captive moles, which*~~

~~*have been seen by various observers, as if maddened by hunger, to attack animals nearly as large as themselves, such as birds, lizards, frogs, and even snakes ; toads, however, they will not touch, and no form of vegetable food attracts their notice. If two moles be confined together without food, the weaker is invariably devoured by the stronger. They take readily to the water—in this respect, as well as in external form, resembling their*~~

~~*(A.) i. $, c. 4, prm. 4, m. 3 × 2 (7. wogura). (B.) i. 3, c. 4, prm. $, m. 3 × 2 (7. europea, cxea, longirostris, micrurn).*~~

~~*(C.) i. 3, c. 4, prm. 3, m. 3 × 2 (7. leucrura, leptura). (D.) i. 3, c. 4, prm. 3, m. 3 × 2 (7. moschata).*~~

~~*Except in 7. europwa, the eyes are covered by a membrane. In T. micrura the short tail is concealed by the fur. 7. ewropwa ex- tends from England to Japan. 7. caca is found south of the Alps, the remaining species are all Asiatic, and of them two only—T7. micrura and 7. leucrwra—occur south of the Himalayas, (See Dobson, Mono- graph of the Insectivora, Part ii., 1883.)*~~

~~*609*~~

~~*representatives on the North American continent. Bruce, writing in 1793, remarks that he saw a mole paddling towards a small island in the Loch of Clunie, 180 yards from land, on which he noticed molehills,*~~

~~*The sexes come together about the second week in March, and the young—generally from four to six in number—which are brought forth in about six weeks, quickly attain their full size.*~~

~~*The mole exhibits in its whole organization the most perfect adaptation to its peculiar mode of life. In the structure of the skeleton very striking departures from the typical mammalian forms are noticeable. The first sternal bone is so much produced anteriorly as to extend forward as far as a vertical line let down from the second cervi- eal vertebra, carrying with it the very short almost quadrate cla- vicles, which are arti- culated with its an- terior extremity and distally with the hu- meri, being also con- nected ligamentously withthe scapula. The forelimbs are thus brought opposite the*~~

~~*sides of the neck, and from this position a threefold advantage is derived :— in the first place, as this is the narrowest part of the body, they add but little to the general width, which, if in- creased, would lessen the power of move- ment in a confined space ; secondly, this position allows of a longer forelimb than would otherwise be possible, and so in— creases its lever power; and, thirdly, although the entire limb is rela- tively very short, its anterior position en- ables the animal, when burrowing, to thrust the claws so far for- ward as to be in a line with the end of the*~~

~~*Skeleton of Mole x % (lower jaw removed to show base of skull).*~~

~~*c, ealcaneum ; c¢.h., clavicular articulation of the humerus; cl., clavicle ; e.c, external condyle of hu- merus; j., femur; /0, fibula; fc, falciform bone (radial sesamoid); h, humerus; i.c, internal condyle of humerus; il, left iliac bone; i.p, — of te*~~

~~*; ilium and pubis ; is., ischium ; /.d, ridge of insertion muzzle, theimportance of latissimus dorsi 'muscle ; Lt, lesser trochanter ; of which is evident. m, manubrium sterni; 0, fourth hypapophysial se- Posteriorly, we find the pen omsale perio ; Py im bone mudely*~~

~~*i i imilarly Separa rom that of the opposite side ; pa., patella ; ee es aa ».m., ridge for insertion of pectoralis major muscle ;*~~

~~*P 3 pt., pectineal eminence; 1, radius; 78, first rib; s, way by approximation plantar sesamoid ossicle corresponding to the radial of the hip = joints to sesamoid (os falciform) in the manus; sc., scapula; the centre line of the s.h., scapular articulation of the humerus; ¢, tibia;*~~

~~*body. This is effected var*~~

~~*by inward curvature of the innominate bones at the acetabula to such an extent that they almost meet in the centre, while the pubic bones are widely separated behind.? The shortness of the*~~

~~*1 It is most interesting to observe how, in the golden moles (Chrysochloridz) of South Africa, the necessary modifications of the corresponding parts of the body and limbs fitting them for fossorial action and underground*~~

~~*progression have been brought about in a totally different manner. In them the manubrium sterni is. not anteriorly elongated, neither are the clavicles shortened ; but this is made up for by a deep hollowing out of the antero-lateral walls of the thorax, the ribs in these parts and the sternum being convex inwards, the long clavicles have their distal extremities pushed forward, and the concavities on the sides and inferior surface of the thorax lodge the thick muscular arms. ; / f*~~

~~*2 In Jacobs's Talpx# Europes Anatome (Jena, 1816) this part of the pelvic wall (marked pt in the fig.) was identified with the symphysis*~~

~~*XVI. — 77*~~

~~*610*~~

~~*forelimb is due to the humerus, which, like, the clavicle, is so much reduced in length as to present the appearance of a flattened X-shaped bone, with prominent ridges and deep depres- sions for the attachments and origins of the powerful muscles connected with it. Its proximal extremity presents two rounded prominences: the smaller, the true head of the bone, articulates as usual with the scapule ; the larger, which is really the external tuberosity rounded eff, forms a separate synovial joint with the end of the clavicle. This double articulation gives to a naturally loose joint the rigidity necessary to support the great lateral pressure sustained by the forelimb in excavating. The forearm bones are normal, but those of the forefeet are much flattened and laterally expanded. The great width of the forefoot is also partly due to | the presence of a peculiar falciform bone, lying on the inner side of the palm and articulating by its proximal extremity with the wrist. Into the radial side and under surface of this bone is inserted a tendon derived from that of the palmaris longus muscle, which, acting upon it as an abductor, separates it from the side of the palm, and so increases the width of the latter, at the same time rendering the palmar integument tense.*~~

~~*The muscles acting on these remarkably modified limbs are all homologous with those of the cursorial insectivora, differing only in their relative development. The tendon of the biceps traverses a long osseous tunnel, formed by the great expansion of the margin of the bicipital groove for the*~~

~~*insertion of the large pectoralis major muscle; the anterior division of the latter muscle is unconnected with the sternum, extending across as a muscular band between the humeri, and co-ordinating the motions of the forelimbs. The teres major and latissimus dorsi muscles are of immense size, probably relatively larger than in any other mammal, and are inserted to- gether into the prominent ridge below the pectoral attachment ; they are the principal agents in the excavating action of the limb. The cervical muscles connecting the slender scapule, and through them the forelimbs, with the centre line of the neck and with the occiput are large, and the ligamentum nuche between them is ossified (as in all true moles); the latter condition appears to be*~~

~~*MOLE*~~

~~*N the conception of the atomic as opposed to the con- | tinuous and infinitely divisible constitution of matter, it is supposed that portions of matter called atoms exist, which are separated, or are capable of being separated, from each other by empty space. (See ATom). It may be the ease that each atom has unchangeable shape and volume as well as unchangeable mass, but such a conception of | an atom is not essential to the hypothesis. It is not even necessary, as explained in the article Atom (vol. iii., pp. 37, 38), to maintain that no part of space can be in two atoms at the same time. But one attribute of the atom upon which its permanence, or, so to speak, its personal identity, depends, is its constituent mass, and this remains the same, unchanged and unchangeable, through all time. Boscovich, indeed, goes so far as to regard the atom as a mere centre of force, the result of whose existence is that no two atoms or centres can approach each other within a certain distance, while other physicists regard the atomic volume as a distinct portion of space occupied by that atom to the exclusion of every other, and comprising | within it matter ideally infinitely divisible, but the parts of which in fact never have been, and never can be, separated from each other. In this latter mode of viewing the subject, all the conclusions of mechanics which are based on the conception of the continuity and infinite divi- sibility of matter may be applied to the equilibrium or motion of each individual atom, the atomic theory merely introducing the additional hypothesis that, in fact, these per- sistent entities called atoms do exist, and that out of them all substances which affect our*~~

~~*senses are constructed. The theory of universal gravitation requires us to believe in the existence of forces or actions between every portion*~~

~~*pubis, whereas the true pubic bones are widely separated (as shown at). In this mistake he has been followed by most comparative anato- mists ; and hence the mole is generally believed to present the unique peculiarity that the outlets of the urinary, generative, and digestive organs do not pass through the arch of the pelvis.*~~

~~*MO L—*~~

~~*MOL*~~

~~*due to the prolongation forwards of the sternum (described above), preventing all flexion of the head downwards; and, accordingly, the normal oftice of the ligament being lost, it ossifies, and so alfords a more fixed point for the origins of the superficial cervical muscles. The skull is long, with slender zygomatic arches ; the nasal bones are strong and early become united, and in front of them the nostrils are continued forwards in tubes formed of thick cartilage, the sep- tum between which becomes partially or wholly ossified beneath. There are 7 cervical, 138 dorsal, 6 luinbar, 6 sacral, and 10-12 caudal vertebre ; of the dorsal and lumbar there may be one vertebra more or less. The sacral vertebre are united by their greatly ex- panded and laterally compressed spinous processes, and all the others, with the exception of the cervical, are very closely and solidly articulated together, so as to support the powerful propulsive and fossorial actions of the Jimbs. Dentition : i. , c. 4, prm. 4, m. 3, x 2= 44 teeth. The upper incisors are simple chisel-edged teeth ;*~~

~~*| the canine is long and two-rooted; then follow three subequal*~~

~~*conical premolars, and a fourth, much larger, and like a canine; these are succeeded by three molars with W-shaped cusps. In the lower jaw the three incisors on each side are slightly smaller, and slant more forwards ; close behind them, is a tooth which, though quite like them, must, from its position in front of the upper canines when the jaws are closed, be considered as the canine ; behind it, but separated by an interval, is a large double-rooted conical tooth, the first premolar ; the three following*~~

~~*premolars are like the corre- sponding teeth above, but smaller, and are succeeded, as above, by three molars.*~~

~~*The geographical distribution of the common mole may be said to exceed that of all the other known species of the genus to which it belongs taken together. It extends from England to Japan, and from the Dovre-Fjeld Mountains in Scandinavia and the Middle Dwina region in Russia to southern Europe and the southern slopes of the Himalayas, where it occurs at an elevation of 10,000 feet. In Great Britain it is found as far north as Caithness, but in Ireland and in the Western Isles of Scotland (except Mull) it is altogether unknown. (G. E. D.)*~~

~~*CULE*~~

~~*of matter and every other portion, determinate in magni- tude and direction, and such that, when on the infinitely divisible hypothesis the volumes of these portions are indefinitely diminished, these mutual forces are inversely proportional to the square of the distance between the por- tions (the distance between any two points, one in the volume of each portion, being in this case taken as the distance between the portions), and directly proportional to the products of the masses, or quantities of the two portions of matter,—such forces being regarded provision- ally as ultimate facts, while inviting further analysis and explanation. Chemical and chemico-physical investigations indicate the existence of other actions between portions of matter, following other and for the most part unknown laws, and rapidly becoming inappreciable as the distance between the reacting portions is increased. All these hypotheses are to be retained on the hypothesis of discrete atoms as above enunciated, the mutual actions between atoms being the resultant of the actions between the various portions of their constituent matter. The volumes of the*~~

~~*_atoms are so small that, for any sensible distances apart,*~~

~~*the line of the resultant mutual action between them may be taken as coincident with the line joining any point in the volume of one to any point in the volume of the other, but, for distances or parts comparable with the linear dimensions of the atoms, the size and shape of their bound- ing surfaces must be taken into consideration, and perhaps also the law of*~~

~~*distribution of their constituent matter within that surface. In all respects, unless we accept the Boscovichian hypothesis, we simply regard the atom as made up, so to speak, of infinitely divisible matter, while substances, as we know them, are built up of indestructible and unchangeable atoms.*~~

~~*With this conception of an atom, as thus explained, we might be content to rest, confessing our total ignorance of the mode in which such atoms are built up into actual substances, being satisfied to regard such substances as*~~

~~*MOLECULE*~~

~~*composed of these distinct portions of matter separated, or capable of being separated, by empty space from other portions. But the molecular hypothesis of the constitution of different kinds of substances aims at analysing this process by which such substances are built up out of their constituent atoms. The molecule of any substance is, by some chemists, defined as being the smallest portion of that substance to which can be attributed all the chemical pro- perties of the substance ; by others, as the smallest portion which, so long as the substance is chemically unchanged, keeps together without complete separation of its parts. In the language of Clausius's theorem, if the parts.of the molecule have internal motion, the kinetic energy of such internal motion is equal to the virial of the mutual attrac- tive forces of the parts. Thus the formation of the mole- cule of each particular substance is viewed as an essential step in the process of building up that substance out of its constituent atoms. The molecule is first built up out of atoms arranged in its formation according to a definite type, and then the substance itself is constituted of these molecules. Of course molecules may be, and in fact in many particular substances are, supposed to be mon- atomic; that is to say, the intermediate step of building up the molecule out of the atoms has, in these particular substances, been omitted, the atoms and molecules becom- ing then identical. The particular arrangement of the formed molecules in the building up of the substance de- termines the physical state of that substance,—that is, its fluid, solid, gaseous, crystalline, or amorphous state ;*~~

~~*but the chemical properties of the substance depend upon | As the investigations |*~~

~~*the constitution of the molecule. and theories of chemistry appear to indicate irresistibly the existence of permanent atoms, so do they also lead almost as necessarily to the conception of the molecule as an entity which bears the same relation to special substances that the atoms bear to matter generally. So long as the molecule endures, the substance of which it is the molecule retains its chemical properties; with the dissolution of the molecule, the substance, as that special substance, perishes ; the atoms alone continue, and are free to enter into other combinations, The permanence of the molecule is relative, that of the atom absolute. This con- ception of the molecular constitution of substances sug- gests physical questions of great interest, such as the shape, volume, and mass of the constituent molecules, and the relative motions of which their parts are susceptible ; and the answers to these questions cannot fail to. be of great value in chemical and chemico-physical investigations, as well as in the theories of light and electricity. :*~~

~~*Now, whatever differences may exist between the proper- ties of different substances in the solid and liquid states, there are certain properties which, in the gaseous state, manifest themselves with no variation whatever in all sub- stances alike. Hence the explanation of these common properties—or gaseous laws, as they are called—has long possessed a peculiar fascination for physicists. The tend- ency to expand or fill all accessible space, manifested by all gases, proves that on the molecular hypothesis their compound atoms or molecules must be continually tending to fly apart. We must conceive gases as constituted of mole- cules, not only separable but actually separated by space void of the matter of which these gases consist ; and it may be most reasonably expected, therefore, that any general laws to which substances in this state conform may afford us a valuable insight into the constitution of these separate molecules.*~~

~~*Now the general laws to which all gases conform are: (1) Boyle's law—that, in a given mass of any gas kept at constant temperature, the pressure per unit of area upon the containing surface increases in the same proportion as*~~

~~*the volume occupied by the gas is diminished, or at least with very slight deviation from exact proportionality ; (2) Charles's law—that, if the temperature be varied while the pressure upon the gas remains the same, the gas increases by ztsd of its volume at zero centigrade for every degree of centigrade added to the temperature, pr, which in com- bination with Boyle's law is the same thing, that if the density be constant, the pressure is directly proportional to the temperature measured from the point — 273° centigrade, this point being called the zero of absolute temperature ; (3) Avogadro's law—which asserts that all gases at the same temperature and pressure contain the same number of molecules in the same volume ; and (4) Dalton's law—that in a mixture of different gases, when there is equilibrium, each gas behaves as a vacuum to all the rest.*~~

~~*It was at one time considered that these phenomena might be explained on the hypothesis of mutual repulsive forces between the parts of which the gas is composed, whether they were regarded as constituted of molecules or of infinitely divisible continuous matter,! but it has been shown in the article Arom (vol. iii, p. 39 sq.) that there are at least two absolutely conclusive reasons why this ex- planation cannot be accepted. These objections, together with the experimental fact proved by Joule that gases, or at any rate atmospheric air, expand into vacuum with scarcely any appreciable change of temperature, must be considered fatal to any mutual-force theory of gaseous action, and, accordingly, physicists have been driven to seek for other methods of explaining these laws. The explanation which has been more developed than any other is that known as the kinetic theory of gases, which regards the intrinsic energy of a gaseous mass as residing, not in the potential energy of intermolecular forces, but mainly in the kinetic energy of the molecules themselves, which are assumed to be in a state of continual relative velocity, admitting at the same time a possible small intermolecular potential energy, and it may be also an interatomic energy, between the atoms of the individual molecules. That some such persistent relative motion does exist in every gaseous mass is evident from the rapidity with which odours penetrate the stillest air where no breath of wind—that is, of absolute motion of translation of the mass as a whole or any portion of finite size—is perceptible. It becomes an interesting question whether the laws of mechanics admit of a mass thus constituted ever arriving at a state of permanence ; that is to say, whether, consistently with the hypothesis of*~~

~~*infinite irregularities in the directions and magnitudes of velocities of individual molecules, there may be found any properties of the mass in the aggregate which remain*~~

~~*1 An argument in favour of the molecular constitution of gases, to which attention was first called by Professor Osborne Reynolds (Memoir "On some Dimensional Properties of Matter in the Gaseous State," Phil. Trans., 1879), is derived from certain phenomena observed in highly-rarefied gases, and in the transpiration of gases through porous plates. If, according to this argument, we had in a gas to do with a continuous plenum, such that every portion must possess the same properties, then these properties must exist inde- pendently of the amount of gas contained in any space, although their sensible effects might be increased or diminished by a variation in that amount. If, then, we can find properties of a gas depending on the size of the space in which it is enclosed, and on the quantity of gas enclosed in this space, we have proof that gas is not continuous—in other words, possesses dimensional structure. Such properties we do find in highly-rarefied gases, as, for instance, in the pheno- mena of Crooke's radiometer. The motion of the vanes when one side is heated by incident rays appears to depend on the distance between the vane and the containing walls of the vessel bearing some not very high ratio to the distance between the particles or molecules of the gas. At least no satisfactory explanation of the phenomena consistent with the gas being continuous has yet been suggested.*~~

~~*Again, Professor 0. Reynolds, from his experiments on the trans- piration of gases through a porous plate, finds a relation between the gas and the coarseness or fineness of the plate, which would not exist were the gas continuous.*~~

~~*612*~~

~~*constant, and in agreement with the accepted laws common to all gases. Now the physical theory of heat compels us to regard the intrinsic energy of any gaseous mass as de- pendent entirely or almost entirely upon the temperature. If, therefore, this intrinsic energy is to be sought for in the kinetic energy of the moving molecules, it follows that the average value of the kinetic energy of the mole- cules taken throughout the mass must be also a function of the temperature.*~~

~~*We will proceed to investigate the condition of per- manence of a number of molecules moving about irregu- larly in any bounded space ; and, for simplicity's sake, we shall first of all restrict ourselves to the case of monatomic molecules.*~~

~~*We know nothing of the size or shape of these atoms, except that the volume of each one must be incomparably smaller than that of the containing region. In shape we shall, as the simplest hypothesis, regard them as spherical. We shall suppose that there are no intermolecular forces between any two such atoms, except of such a nature as to be practically insensible when the atoms are not geo- metrically in contact, and similarly as regards the forces between the atoms and the material bounding surface, such forces being of the nature called "conservative." So that in point of fact we are investigating the mechanical properties of an infinitely large number of infinitely small and perfectly elastic spheres moving about in a given region and subject to frequent collisions.*~~

~~*ProsLeM. —A very large number of smooth elastic spheres, equal in every respect, are in motion within a region of space of given volume, and therefore occasionally impinge upon each other with various degrees of relative velocity and in various relative directions ; re- quired to find the law of distribution of velocities in order that such distribution may be permanent.*~~

~~*Let WV be the total number of spheres, and let*~~

~~*x (u, v, w) du dv dw*~~

~~*be the number of spheres whose component velocities, parallel to the axes, are intermediate between wu and u + du, v and v + dv, wand w + dw respectively.*~~

~~*If c be the resultant velocity of any of these last-mentioned spheres, and if @ be the inclination of c to the axis of z, and ¢ that of the plane cz to the plane xz, the last-mentioned expression will become, by changes of the independent variables from , y, 2 to 6, ~, and c,*~~

~~*x (uw, v, w) c sind dé d¢ de,*~~

~~*Let a spherical surface of radius unity be described about any origin as centre, and let do be written for the element sin 0 d0 dd on this surface, then the last-written expression becomes*~~

~~*x (wu, v, w) c? de do. _ Since for the same magnitude of the resultant velocities all direc- tions of motion must be equally probable, it follows that the co- efficient of de do in the last-written expression must be a function*~~

~~*of c only, and therefore the number of spheres having component*~~

~~*velocities between w and wu + du, v and v + dv, w and w + dw, must be*~~

~~*w © du dv dw.*~~

~~*It is required to find the form of y in order that the value of this expression may be unaffected by collisions. The solution is, that the number of spheres with component velocities between the limits wand w + du, v and v + dv, w and w + dw must be*~~

~~*Ae“? dy dv dw; or Ae~h? & de de,*~~

~~*employing the notation already used. Integrating with respect to do from 0 to 47, we find for the number of spheres with velocities between c and c + de the expression*~~

~~*dn Ae” do,*~~

~~*Again, since the number with component velocities between w and u + du, vand v + dv, w and w + dw is j*~~

~~*Ac hut + + ©) da dv dw, or (5) Ae ds). (F/ide 8° dv) (/Ac~™ dw),*~~

~~*it follows that the number of spheres having velocities intermediate between w and w + duw parallel to the x axis is*~~

~~*MOLECULE*~~

~~*eo ao Ae~ me? auf eke al e~ hw dy ; co oO that is, 54 eW ? dy,*~~

~~*where A is to be determined by the equations*~~

~~*or A ee Ns hi Nhi therefore A= 7 3 us*~~

~~*that is to say, the number of spheres having velocities between c and c+ dcis*~~

~~*3*~~

~~*~ Ne-* de, T Multiplying this expression by c, and integrating the product with regard to c from 0 to ©, and dividing by N, the mean velocity for all the spheres becomes*~~

~~*se te*~~

~~*Vath' and multiplying by ¢? instead of by ¢, we find the mean square of all the velocities to be*~~

~~*3*~~

~~*on In the preceding investigation no account has been taken of*~~

~~*collisions between the spheres and the enclosing boundary of the region in which they are contained, because in every such collision the magnitude of the velocity of each sphere is unaltered and its direction is changed according to the ordinary law of reflexion, whence it is evident that the distribution is unaffected by such*~~

~~*. collisions. Also, the investigation has been confined to the cases*~~

~~*of spheres colliding in pairs, but since there need be no limit to the smallness of the interval between any pair of collisions the result really embraces the cases of simultaneous collisions between three or more spheres ; for if a sphere 4 collides with another B, and immediately afterwards with a third C, the resultant velocity of 4 after this second collision must be the same as if it had col- lided with B and C simultaneously.*~~

~~*The foregoing investigation has been given in some detail because the principles upon which it proceeds are essentially the same as those by which all questions of the distribution of energy among a great number of moving bodies are determined, although it may be found, as well as the detailed investigations of the results imme- diately following, in published memoirs and systematic treatises ou the kinetic theory of gases.*~~

~~*If the spheres be not all of equal mass, but if there be within the region V spheres of mass m, NV' of mass m', and so on, then it may be proved, by reasoning exactly similar to the foregoing, that when the permanent or stable state of motion has been attained the number of spheres of the WV set with component velocities between uand u + du, vand v + dv, wand w + dw is*~~

~~*_ hime? Ae 2 dudvdwu, and the number of the WV' set having component velocities between wu' and w' + duw', v and v' + dv, w' and w' + dw', is _hm'c'2 Ae 2 dw dv dw, where 2=w?+v?+w?, c2=u2+v2+w", hk is a constant the same for both sets, and*~~

~~*N (mht N' (mh FO bos ae et by x CT sl rt 2 and so on if there be any other sets.*~~

~~*The mean velocity and mean square velocity of each sphere of the NV set are*~~

~~*2 2*~~

~~*Pt — and — respectively, and the mean kinetic energy of each of such spheres is*~~

~~=~~

~~*2h'*~~

~~*the last result being common to all the sets.*~~

~~*If the spheres in the given region be acted on by any given forces tending to fixed centres, and functions of the distances of the centres of the spheres from the centres of force, we may not in such case assume, @ priori, that*~~

~~the chances of velocities in all directions are the same ; but we may assume that the number of spheres of any set (NV) with coordinates of their centres intermediate between~~

~~MOLE~~

~~wand x + dzx, yand y + dy, z and z + dz, and component velocities intermediate between wu and w + du, vand v + dv, w and w + du, is W (a, Y, 2, U, v, w) dx dy dz du dv dw.~~

~~In the state of permanence the form of y must be independent of the time (¢), so long as the sphere is moving free from collisions with any other.~~

~~From the last-mentioned condition it must follow that, if ¢,=a,, $o=%, &c., be any equations among the variables determining the position and motion of any sphere obtained by the elimination of ¢~~

~~rom the equations of motion of that sphere, then y must be of the form y (¢,, $2, &c.). With the assumption, then, that the number of spheres of the given set with variables between the above-mentioned~~

~~limits is y (dy, $o-.-) dx…dw, we find for the form of y, by reasoning like the foregoing,~~

~~me2 wer" (x + 55) , where x is the potential energy of the sphere in the position x, y, z, and ?=u? + v? + w?, and h is a constant, the same for all the sets.~~

~~me?~~

~~If we integrate the expression Ae ' (x + 2) dx dy dz du dv dw for all values of x, y, 2 within the given region, we find for the number of spheres of any set with component velocities between wand w + du, v and v + dv, wand w + du,~~

~~hme2~~

~~Be 2 du dv dw,~~

~~*whence we easily see that the chances of velocities in all directions are the same, and that the mean velocity and mean square velocity*~~

~~*of any sphere of this set are z ss Vimh kinetic energy of any such sphere is = and therefore the same for*~~

~~*all the sets. Furthermore, if we integrate the expression*~~

~~*ooh (xt)*~~

~~*and = respectively, andthe mean*~~

~~*A dz dy dz du dv dw*~~

~~*for all values of w, v, and w from — © to + © respectively, we obtain a result of the form Ce~"'X dx dy dz, and therefore the number of spheres of the set in question with centres within the elementary volume dx dy dz, or, what is the same thing with the exception of a constant factor, the chance of the centre of any sphere of that set being within that elementary volume, is Ce-"'X dx dy dz, so that the density of the WV set of matter in the neighbourhood of the point x, ¥, zis mCe~*X,*~~

~~*We are now in a position to compare the physical properties of a medium composed of monatomic molecules in motion, and free from any intermolecular or interatomic forces with those of ordinary gases, so long at least as the atoms are spherical.*~~

~~*Consider two contiguous portions of such a medium separated by any plane parallel to that of yz, and, since the distribution and motion of each set of spheres is independent of all the other sets, let us confine our attention to the spheres of the WV set. Suppose that there are V such spheres per unit volume in the neighbour- hood of the point x, y, z, whose component velocities parallel to the axis of x are between uw and u+du. The number of these spheres which cross the elementary area dy dz in time dé will be*~~

~~*the same as the number of the dN spheres whose centres are.*~~

~~*situated within the elementary parallelepiped dx dy dz, in which da is equal to wdt, and this number is*~~

~~*Nu dy dz dt.*~~

~~*Each of these spheres carries across with it a momentum parallel to x equal to mw; the total momentum parallel to x transferred across dy dz in time dt is therefore*~~

~~*mNu* dy dz dt.*~~

~~*If u be positive, this is positive momentum transferred from the negative to the positive side of the plane yz; and if ~ be negative, this is negative momentum similarly transferred from the positive to the negative side of that plane. In either case it follows that by the mere motion of these spheres across the area dy dz the positive momentum parallel to the axis of x is diminished by the quantity mNu? dy dz dt on the negative side of the plane y z, and increased by the same quantity on the positive side of that plane in the time dé; m being, as before, the mass of each sphere. Hence, on the whole, there isa transference of positive x momentum*~~

~~*in the time dé across the area dy dz equal to mdy dz dt = * ON ; that is, equal to a dy dz dt pu?, where p is the density of the NV matter at the point x, y, z, and 2? is the mean square of the x velocities. But either by integration or general reasoning it is easily seen*~~

~~*613*~~

~~*aR 2 ah oo that u?= 7, where v? is the mean square of the resultant yelo-*~~

~~*CULE*~~

~~*cities of the NV spheres, and is equal, as we have proved, to*~~

~~*se*~~

~~*mh Therefore, there is a transference of positive momentum from the negative to the positive side of the plane y z across the area dy dz in time dt equal to*~~

~~p dy dz dt mh~~

~~Each separate sphere whose component velocities are wv, v, and w carrics across the same area y and z momenta equal to mv and mw respectively, so that in the time dé there are carried across the area dy dzy and z momenta equal to Zmuv dy dz dt and Xmuw dy dz dt, respectively. By symmetry it is clear that Zmauv and Xmww are separately zero. Therefore, the resultant mutual actions of the two portions of the medium under consideration in the time df is the transference across the elementary area dy dz of a quantity of x~~

~~2~~

~~momentum equal to pdy dz dt + from the negative to the positive~~

~~side of the bounding plane. If this mutual action, or, as it is gener- ally called, " pressure" when referred to unit of surface, be denoted by the symbol p, we get the equation~~

~~a p dy dz dt=p dy dz dt,~~

~~or p=) = ee~~

~~Since the momenta parallel to y and z remain unaltered, it follows that the mutual action or pressure between contiguous por- tions of the medium in the neighbourhood of any point is normal to the bounding surface at that point. Since also the expression~~

~~for p or = is independent of the direction of the x axis, it fol-~~

~~mM. lows that the pressure at any point of the medium is the same in all directions,~~

~~If the contiguous portions of the medium be separated by a material instead of an ideal plane, it will be necessary for the main- tenance of equilibrium that there should be an action between this plane and the adjacent medium, equivalent to the transference of momentum estimated above; but action measured by the rate per unit of time at which momentum is generated~~

~~constitutes moving force or statical pressure. Hence the force or pressure between the plane and medium is normal to the plane, independent of the direction of the plane through the point, and equal to the value of~~

~~p mh~~

~~When several sets of spheres are present together in the region under consideration, the distribution of the centres and of the velocities of each set is, as we have seen, independent of the co- existence of the other sets. If therefore p,, pp, &c., be the densities of the matter of the different sets in the neighbourhood of the point x, y, % and if p,, p,, &c., be the pressures at that point defined as above, and if m,, m., &c., be the masses of the spheres of each of the sets, and p the total pressure, we get~~

~~P=P, + po + &c.~~

~~oo EE. eee a mh Mah~~

~~at the point.~~

~~Hence we arrive at the following conclusions :—(1) there is one physical quantity having the same value for every set of spheres—~~

~~3 .~~

~~oh? let this~~

~~quantity be called + ; (2) the distribution of the positions and velocities of the spheres of each set is independent of the coexist- euce of the remaining sets, and is in all respects the same as if that particular sct existed alone in the region considered ; (3) the pressure at any point referred to unit of surface at any point of~~

~~namely, the mean kinetic energy of each sphere, or~~

~~‘ . 2 the medium arising from the action of any one of the sets is yf?~~

~~where p is the density of that particular set at the point in question, and 7 is the physical quantity above referred to as common to all the sets.~~

~~This third inference may be expanded into the following three laws :—(a) if + be kept constant, then the pressure arising from each set varies as the density of that set; (8) if p be kept constant, then the pressure from each set varies as 7; (y) if the pressures~~

~~for all the sets be the same, then £ is also the same, or the num-~~

~~ber of spheres per unit volume is the same. ;~~

~~Now suppose there is a mixture of any number of gases in auy region ; when there is equilibrium there is one physical quantity, namely, temperature, which is the same for all; the intrinsic~~

~~614 MOLE~~

~~energy of this mixtwre depends, as we know, upon its temperature, and the energy of these moving spheres is entirely kinetie, and may be conceived, therefore, to be a function of the mean vis viva. Let us then assume that in this medium of moving spheres we have a representation of a mass of gases, and that what is called the temperature of the gaseous mass is nothing else than the 7 or mean kinetic energy of each moving sphere. Then, with this assumption, the three parts (a, 8, y) of inference (8) above correspond to the gaseous laws connected with the names of Boyle, Charles, and Avogadro respectively, and inference (2) corresponds with the law of Dalton coneerning gaseous mixtures. We may also deduce the ordinary hydrostatical equations of equilibrium from the formule which we have obtained. For, since these equations give us pa and p=mBe·· wea we get , F F ya dx _ pa pX, and dn mX, and similarly~~

~~where X, Y, and Z are the component impressed forces, or the negatives of the space variations of x along the coordinate axes.~~

~~So far, therefore, the physical properties of a perfect gas or mixture of such gases correspond, in all respects, with the physical properties of a medium consisting of a set of elastic spheres, or of a mixture of sets of such spheres, with the sole assumption that the physical property termed temperature, in the case of the gas, corresponds to, or is represented by, the mean kinetic~~

~~energy of each of the spheres, and that each sphere represents the chemical atom.~~

~~There are, however, physical properties of gases which this theory fails to explain. The most important of these is the ratio of the specific heats at constant volume and constant temperature respect- ively. The specific heat of gas expanding while being heated under a constant pressure is greater than that of gas heated with a con- stant volume, as when it is contained in a rigid vessel, for the obvious physical reason that in the former case a portion of the heat is converted into mechanical work, namely, that performed by the expansion under the constant pressure. This ratio of the specific heat of gas under constant pressure to the specific heat with con- stant volume has been determined for many gases with great ac- curacy, chiefly from observations of the velocity of sound in such gases, in which velocity the value of this ratio bears a very im- portant part.~~

~~Now, on the assumption of the gas being constituted of a number of elastic spheres in rapid but irregular motion among each other, and the phemaal property of temperature being represented or measured by the mean vis viva of each sphere, the ratio of these specific heats must be exactly 14. ~ For, if v be the volume occupied by a unit of mass of this movin Fe medium, and 7 the number of spheres to the unit mass, an if p be the density, it follows that~~

~~rm=pv=1,~~

~~Also we know that p, the pressure referred to unit surface, is given by the equation~~

~~:~~

~~py= = 17;~~

~~where 7 is the mean wis viva. If now 7 increase from 7 to 7+ 67, while v remains constant, the increase of intrinsic energy must be, from definition, r57. Also if there be a similar change 1n 7 without the restriction of v being constant, but supposing p to be constant, there is external mechanical work performed equal to pév, where év is the increase of volume. Also~~

~~: 2~~

~~pov = = ror ; and therefore the whole energy required to be supplied from without must be in this case ror + 2 ror.~~

~~Or the ratio of the energies to be supplied from without, in order that the mean vis viva of the moving sphere medium should be increased by the same amount in the two cases respectively, becomes~~

~~2~~

~~T + " 8 , or 1%,~~

~~If therefore the gaseous mass be adequately represented by the moving sphere medium, the ratio of the specific heats must be 13.~~

~~Mercury vapour is the only gas for which the ratio has so large a value as this. Several of the more permanent gases have the ratio equal to 1°408, while in others it falls as low as 1°26. The value for mercury vapour, as determined by Kundt and Warburg~~

~~CULE~~

~~(Poggendorff, clvii. 353), is between 1'695 and 1°631, the mean of all the observations being somewhat under 1°6. If any value above 1°6 be insisted on it will be impossible to retain the theory as above enunciated. In point of fact we may say, in anticipation of what has yet to come, that there is no modification of the kinetie theory as hitherto treated which could give a higher value for the ratio in question than 14.~~

~~It follows from what has been proved that either all known gases and vapours, except the vapour of mercury, and perhaps cadmium, must be polyatomic, or else that the attempts to explain the consti- tution of gases by the kinetic theory must be abandoned. We must therefore proceed further to investigate the physical pro- perties of a medium consisting of compound atoms or molecules built up of atoms in any definite arrangement, such molecules being in a condition of irregular motion among themselves, such~~

~~*as we have supposed in the cases of the spherical atoms hitherto con- sidered.*~~

~~*It will be observed, on reference to the cases of the spheres hitherto — investigated, that, whether there be forces to fixed centres in action on the medium or not, the chance of any sphere having the coordi- nates of its centre and its component velocities between x and # + dz, yand y + dy, z and z + dz, u and u + du, v and v + dv, wand w + du,*~~

~~*is proportional to e~ # dedydzdu dvdw,where £ is the total energy, kinetic and potential, of the sphere in the state of position and motion defined by 2, y, 2, %, ¥, W.*~~

~~*We may generalize this proposition, and prove that when the sphere is replaced by a molecule of any shape and constitution, so as to be defined as to position aud motion by r generalized coordi- nates ,...¢, With their corresponding monienta 7…p,, the chances of the molecule having its defining variables between the limits q, and 1 + 4Qq,..p, and p, + dp,, or, What is the same thing, the number of such molecules at any time with variables thus limited, whether there be forces to fixed centres or not, and whether interatomic forces or intermolecular forces are or are not in action on the mole cular aggregate, is proportional to*~~

~~*oT MEr dqy.. dps*~~

~~*where # is a constant, the same for all molecules, and £, is the total energy, kinetic and potential, of the molecule in the free state as to position and motion, the potential energy being that of the fixed centre forces on the molecule, together with that of its inter- atomic forces, in the given position.*~~

~~*The problem before us may be stated thus :—*~~

~~*A number of similar molecules possessing in the whole n degrees of freedom, where x is very large, are in motion in a region of space bounded by a material envelope, under the action either of forces to fixed centres (called external forces) or of forces between different molecules and different parts of the same molecule, as well as by forces between the fixed boundary and the contained molecules, all of them conservative, so that the*~~

~~total energy, kinetic and potential, of the aggregate remains always the same; it is required to find the chance of a group of any one or more molecules possessing in the whole v degrees of freedom, defined by the coordinates q,...9, and momenta p,..-~,, Where r is small compared with n, having its variables between the limits g, and 9,+4dq…p, and p,+dp,.~~

~~We might start with the assumption made above in the case of the spheres under central forces, that this chance must be of the~~

~~form Y (Py Pe &c.) dqy…dpys~~

~~where ¢,=%, ¢: =, &c., are obtained by the elimination of t between the equations of motion of the r group under the fixed centre and boundary forces and those between its component atoms, because there is nothing in the conception of a molecule beyond that of a system with a number of mi of freedom, and under | internal forces ; and in this case, considering the generality of the assumption as to the external forces, it would be impossible to con- ceive the existence of any general equation, independent of the time, between the variables, except that of the conservation of energy, so that the chance in question becomes~~

~~p (Z,) dqy..-Dyp~~

~~where £, is above defined, and it remains to determine the form of y.~~

~~If we considered a second group of one or more molecules con- taining s degrees of freedom (where s may or may not be equal to r, but, like 7, is much smaller than 7), and defined by the coordinates and momenta @,41. —9,to Prti—Ppt» then the two groups together contain r+s degrees of freedom defined by the variables 9)...2,+y and since r+s is small compared with », the chance of this group having its variables between g, and ¢,+q)...p,4, and p,1,4p,,~~

~~must be Y (E,+,) dqy.—OpPyty~~

~~But this chance must be equal to the chance of the r group being fixed in the state q, ¢,+4).—Py ~,+4p,, multiplied by the chance of the remaining s~~

~~group being in the state q,4), %+1+4¢,11: Privo Prts+ P,+, Where the r group are so fixed.~~

~~MOLECULE~~

~~Now to find this latter chance we observe that it is the chance of~~

~~the s group being in their required limits of position and motion,~~

~~when the internal forces between the 7 and s group become forces~~

~~between the s group and fixed centres. If the total kinetic energy of the r group in their given state be~~

~~T,, and that of the r+s group be 7,.,, the total kinetic energy of~~

~~the s group must be 7, — 7,.~~

~~Also if the total potential energy of the r+s group under the influence of all forces be x,4, this is made up of—~~

~~(1) x,, the potential energy of the r group to fixed centres, and of~~

~~its internal forces ; (2) x, similarly taken for the s group; and (3) .xX» the potential energy of the r and s group forces. And when the 7 group is fixed the potential energy of the s group is reduced to (2) and (3), or is X,1,-X« Therefore the chance of the s group having its variables.within the required limits when the r group is fixed must be~~

~~Y (Zit, — Z,) Uppy. CPt y Therefore~~

~~Y(L,) y C4 2,) dqy…dp,.. = y (£45) AQ. AD pty or y L,) y (Hay = 2) = v (E,+0): Therefore W (x)=c = c~h* suppose.~~

~~And the chances of the r group having its variables between the limits q and g,+dq)...p, and p,+dp, must, in the state of per- manent or stable motion, be proportional to~~

~~eT si dq. : OP, which was to be proved.~~

~~Supposing now that the aggregate of molecules under considera- tion consists of a number of sets of similar molecules, the number of molecules in one of these sets being NV, where V is very large, and suppose that each of these NV molecules possesses o degrees of freedom defined by the coordinates g,...¢, with the momenta P}---Po, and that its mass ism. Three of these coordinates may be taken as the rectangular coordinates of its centre of mass, in which case the corresponding momenta will be mu, mv, mw, where u, v, and w are the component velocities of translation of that centre of mass. Then in this case, if 94-+-Yo, P4:.Pg be the remaining coordinates and momenta of the molecule, the chance of the mole- cule's variables being within the limits x and e+dz…p, and Po + dp, will be proportional to~~

~~ht) — ht (u2-+v2-+22)~~

~~dx dy dz dq,...dp, ¢ du dv dw…(1), where 7, the kinetic energy of the molecule, is equal to~~

~~m a (w+ +0) +7,~~

~~where fis a quadratic function of the p's, having as coefficients known functions of the q's. If we integrate the expression (I) for all possible values of fh Onc {4:+-Io, P4-»-Pg, We obtain an expression of the form m~~

~~oe i , (II),~~

~~where B is independent of w, v, and w, and @=u2+e2+w?, From the form of (II) it follows, exactly as in the casesof the elastic spheres, that the chances of all directions of the velocity of translation of a molecule are equal, that the mean velocity and mean square velocity of translation of each molecule are~~

~~oe V7 and per Vinh mh,~~

~~respectively, and that the mean kinetic energy of translation is — ,~~

~~and the same for a molecule of any set. Again, if 7 be the mean total kinetic energy of the molecule, then~~

~~*pal lL. Pe OF? de…ddg © || .e-* OED dee,..dpg*~~

~~*and if we evaluate this expression, paying attention to the form of T as a quadratic function of the p's mentioned above, we shall find*~~

~~*for (III) the expression oR*~~

~~*It follows from this result that each additional degree of freedom of the molecule increases the mean total kinetic energy of the mole-*~~

~~*cule by the quantity iy, which is the mean kinetic energy of trans-*~~

~~*2h lation parallel to any one of the axes, and that the total kinetic energy is proportional to the number of such degrees of freedom. f, again, we integrate the expression (I) for all values of the momenta, we obtain an expression of the form Ce-"X dx dy dz Oe « SOQ Pe as ee de See (IV),*~~

~~*where x is the potential energy of the molecule due to fixed centre*~~

~~*615*~~

~~*and to interatomic forces in the position defined by x, y, =, Y4-+-Io. The dimensions of the molecule are so small that we may regard forces from each fixed centre on different parts of the molecule as parallel and equal and functions of the distance of the centre of mass from that fixed centre, so that, if the part of x arising from these fixed centre forees be called Xa X; Will be a function of 2, y, 2, and of these variables only, the remaining part of x (arising from interatomie forces), which may be ealled x2, will be a function of the o — 8 variables Ga. Ge*~~

~~*If in (IV) we write x, +X, for x, and then integrate for all values of 94… ¢g,we obtain an expression of the form*~~

~~*De Gade… secs cases ccc (V),*~~

~~*where D is independent of x, y, z, and therefore p the density of the NV molecule matter in the neighbourhood of the point 2, y, 2, is*~~

~~mDe~· "Xi, From these results all the propositions proved above with reference to the aggregate of elastic spheres or monatomic molecules, as to the correspondence of the physical properties of such an aggregate with those of gases as indicated by the gaseous laws, may be deduced also for this aggregate of polyatomic molecules. So that if 7 be equal to ay? ot the mean kinetic energy of agitation of any one of the aggregate of moving molecules, if v be the volume occupied by unit of mass, 7 the number of molecules in unit of volume, and i the mass of each molecule, we have, exactly as in the case referred to, mr=1, py=1,~~

~~and p= = rT'. We also get the ordinary hydrostatical equations~~

~~aP _ ox~~

~~dp dp~~

~~=e — L=pV. yy~~

~~from this expression for p combined with the equation p=mDe- hx,~~

~~remembering that ax — mX, 9a. — mY, aX, mdZ, : dy dz whence the coincidence of the physical properties of this ageregate of polyatomic moving molecules with those of a gas, on the assump tion that the temperature represents the mean kinetic energy of agitation, is at once apparent.~~

~~It can be shown also that the aggregate of moving molecules, such as we conceive a gas to be, possesses another very important physical property which, by its analogy to the second law of thermo- dynamics, affords additional evidence of the relation between the Eats of heat and those of aggregates in some kind of motion, — the property in question being that, if in any ageregate of moving molecules the mean kinetic energy of any one of them be called 7, and if 6Q be an increment of energy imparted to the ageregate~~

~~from without, then ag is a perfect differential. ZF~~

~~If to this aggregate we apply a certain small quantity 6Q of heat or energy from without, and if 67 be the increase of the mean kinetic energy of agitation when the volume is unaltered, then this constancy of volume prevents any of the energy 6Q from being absorbed in doing external work ; but it is conceivable that the increase of + may cause such a change in the average state of the molecule as to produce a variation dy in the mean potential energy of the molecule, 5x being proportional to 67.~~

~~Therefore s05; { aT an ax. }. Sr. dr dr Dis i Bs therefore sg=r { sel 5 erefor Wasp) pitas if~~

~~If the volume vary by 5», the pressure being coustant, then we must add external work, or pév, to the energy absorbed, so that ifthe whole external energy now applied be 8'Q, and the increase of tempera- ture dr be the same in both cases, we have~~

~~o , ax~~

~~— + -") dr + piv ae dee) ee. 6G o , ax~~

~~r(atZ) a~~

~~6Q But if p be constant, then as before~~

~~piv=2 s or,~~

~~616~~

~~and therefore the ratio of 6'Q to 6Q, or of the two specific heats at~~

~~constant pressure and constant volume respectively, becomes~~

~~te is unknown in all respects except that it must be positive ; also ar we know that o must be integral and not less than 3; if we denote~~

~~3 x by e we have for the ratio te~~

~~o+2+e~~

~~*or 1+*~~

~~*which, with the necessary limitations of o and e, cannot be greater*~~

~~*than 1% or 1°6, and in this limiting case the gas must be mon- atomic. ;*~~

~~*If, therefore, any value above 1°6 of the ratio for mercury vapour be insisted upon, the theory must be abandoned so far as present investigations are concerned. If, however, the difference between 16 and any higher value given by the observations be regarded as within reasonable limits of experimental error, this value for mercury vapour, a gas which on chemical grounds is regarded as monatomic, may be viewed as confirming the theory, at least pro tanto.*~~

~~*If two spherical atoms were united by a rigid rod to form a mole- cule, such a molecule would have five degrees of freedom and the specific heat ratio would in this case be 13, for ¢ would then be zero. This value has a plausible approximation to the observed value 1°408 of the ratio in a great number of two-atom gases, such as hydrogen, nitrogen, oxygen, and others, but all observations agree so completely in the ratio 1°408, or from 1°405 to 1°408, that it hardly seems reasonable to regard the difference 008 as within the limits of experimental error, unless, indeed, we had grounds for suspecting a tendency to excess in all the methods employed for the determination of the ratio. But there are other difficulties more formidable still, arising from the spectroscopic properties of heated gases. 'The light emitted by such gases, so long as they are of no great density, never presents a continuous spectrum, but a spectrum consisting of bright lines with intervening dark spaces. Thus the spectrum of hydrogen gives thirty-two bright lines, that of mercury vapour six lines, that of nitrogen eighteen, and so on. So long as light is regarded as an energy intercommunicable with heat, and light of definite refrangibility is referred to vibrations of given period, we must regard these discontinuous spectra as con- nected with, and arising from, vibrations of determinate periods in the molecule of the heated gas. And if a gas such as hydrogen or nitrogen be constituted, as we are supposing, of an indefinite repe- tition of similar molecules, it must follow that such molecules must be capable, at any rate when not too closely packed together, of as many independent vibrations as there are bright lines in the spec- trum ; that is to say, in addition to the three degrees*~~

~~*of freedom arising from motion of translation in solid space, each molecule must possess as many additional degrees of freedom or possible relative motion of its parts as are indicated by the number of spec- trum lines. The degrees of freedom corresponding to motion of translation cannot well contribute anything to these luminous vibrations owing to their assumed irregularity and independence of any law ; but it is otherwise with the internal or relative degrees of freedom of each molecule, for, unless the gas be very dense, we may easily conceive a sufficient interval of time between one encounter and the next of any molecule with another for very many vibra- tions, each according to its own law, to take place in the relative positions of different parts of the molecule. At each encounter the whole molecule would be roughly shaken, and when the encounters increased in frequency the vibrations would become irregular and the spectrum would degenerate into a general diffused light of no definite refrangibility, just as music degenerates into ordinary noise. And this is exactly what occurs in the spectra of dense gases.*~~

~~*To bring the theory, therefore, into agreement with observed phenomena, we require very many more degrees of freedom in each molecule than could possibly be assigned to it in accordance with the observed value of the ratios of the specific heats,—mercury vapour, for example, admitting with difficulty the minimum number of three such degrees, as we have just now seen, while its spectrum would require at least nine. And the difficulty increases as we pass to hydrogen and other gases.*~~

~~*We might perhaps conceive, with the view of possibly explaining this difficulty, that there were in all gases a number of composite molecules with many degrees of freedom mixed up with the other molecules with three or five such degrees, but in so small a propor- tion to these molecules that their presence produces no appreciable effect upon the specific heats ; or, since we have no experimental de- termination of the specific heats of gases at light-giving temperature,*~~

~~*MOLECULE*~~

~~*we might, at least until such experimental determination has been arrived at, conceive that our atoms may change their constitution under increased temperature, and become themselves capable of vibration. There is nothing*~~

~~*in the conception of an atom as we are considering it which is really inconsistent with such an hypothesis.*~~

~~*Certain observed phenomena accompanying dissociation and com- bination give rise to other difficulties in the way of the acceptance of the kinetic theory in addition to those arising from the equal distribution of mean kinetic energy just now discussed. For when nitrogen and hydrogen, for example, are mixed in proportion to form ammonia it is observed (1) that at ordinary temperatures they do not exhibit the slightest tendency to combine directly with each other, while, on the other hand, (2)ammonia at ordinary temperatures does not exhibit the slightest tendency to decompose into nitrogen or hydrogen. But ammonia when subjected to certain very high temperatures becomes partially decomposed—that is, becomes a mixture of so many parts of ammonia and of so many other parts of nitrogen and hydrogen in the proportions to form ammonia ; and if the temperature be high enough the decomposition may be com- plete. But, in accordance with the kinetic theory, the conditions, whatever they may be, which at high temperature cause the ammonia to decompose, must sometimes occur to individnal molecules at ordinary temperature, because temperature, as we understand it, merely indicates a certain quantity ot kinetic energy, and therefore in a gas, however cold, there will be always some molecules in a state for dissociation ; and this dissociation having taken place can by (1) never be compensated by recombination ; therefore dissocia- tion should be going on in ammonia at all temperatures, and this result is contrary to the observed phenomena (2). Itmight ossibly be conceived, as a way of meeting this last-mentioned difficulty, that the dissociation attendant upon high temperature—that is, upon an average large molecular velocity of translation—requires that there should be a fairly rapid repetition of encounters among molecules moving with dissociation velocity to ensure the production of dis- sociation, and that in the case of a gas at low temperature, or small average velocity, the chance of two molecules encountering one another at high velocities is small, and the chance of any molecule meeting with any rapid succession of such encounters is practically insensible, and therefore that the dissociation spoken of really never takes place.*~~

~~*'As above stated, we conceive that in any gas at ordinary pressure and temperature the intermolecular forces are very small in the aggregate—that is, in Clausius's language, have a very small virial,— by which is understood, not that the forces themselves, where acting, are small, but that, considering the whole aggregate of molecules at any instant, there are very few pairs near enough to each other to exert any appreciable force on each other. Or, if we could watch any individual molecule for any time, we should find that during by far the greater portion of the time it was sensibly free from any action by surrounding molecules. The distance traversed by the type molecule between the instant when it passes out of the sphere of action of one molecule and the instant when it passes into the sphere of action of the next—that is, from one encounter to another—is called its free path.*~~

~~*We may find the chance that a molecule starting from any point with velocity w in a uniform gas shall have free path between x and « + dz from that point.*~~

~~*If a be the chance for such a molecule of free path at least unity, then a? is the chance of a free path at least 2. Hence the chance of free path at least 2 must be of the form a.*~~

~~*Following the method employed by O. E. Meyer,! let us write this in the form*~~

~~*x e 0 where therefore ie i ~· log a' then the chance of free path x+dz is*~~
~~*_a+du e L*~~

~~*The chance that such a molecule shall have its first encounter between a and x+dma is the difference of these two expressions ; that is, oe*~~

~~*pamee l This is the chance of a free path between x and x+ dx. The mean free path for such a molecule must then be*~~

~~*ee) x ie) x 1 | oT tae | e T—de=l. 0 U 0*~~

~~*Hi*~~

~~*é*~~

~~This is the meaning of the constant 7 in e t, Bntifwe denote by B the number of encounters which a molecule moving through space with velocity w experiences on the average per unit of time,~~

~~ee~~

~~1 Kinetische Theorie der Gase, Breslau, 1877.~~

~~mol ECU LE~~

~~Hence the chance for such a molecule of free path between x and « + dz is~~

~~with the above definition of B. The chance of a molecule whose velocity is w having free path # is of course the same as the chance of its free path having the~~

~~duration". If¢ =", the chance of duration between ¢ and ¢ + dé Ww Ww~~

~~is thus B i, e~· Bt wdt: or Be~Bt de,~~

~~Meyer determines the value of B, if the molecules be spheres, in the form~~

~~. i ai oe he wiVersee le = ee 47,2 * Te "io s.5°" * capella 1 Rea 4 ee ae = [ew tat' ie 1~~

~~2~~

~~where Q= a? and s is the sum of the radii of two molecules. TT~~

~~It will be observed that the series converges very rapidly if wh is less than unity, the successive coefficients being~~

~~a; @ 2 a Fl~~

~~B"° 80° 2" Toig' " isd'~~

~~Having found B for the number of encounters experienced per unit of time bya molecule having velocity w, we have for the average number of~~

~~*encounters experienced by any molecule per unit of time, which we denote by C,*~~

~~*&c.*~~

~~*ro) gw 2 Pd,*~~

~~*θ*~~

~~*= OV2, Nrs*. Hence the mean value of the free path for all molecules, irrespec-*~~

~~*: ae Q 1 tive of velocity, is L O/B'*~~

~~*Thus the kinetic theory of gases presents to us the conception of apparently perfect rest, as the result of motion irregular in detail but permanent and stable on the average. Whatever difficulty may be felt at first sight in the acceptance of this theory in the case of a medium at rest is greatly enhanced when we pass to the contemplation of a disturbed medium like a mass of gas throngh which a wave of sound is passing. In our ordinary investigations of such a disturbance the gas is treated as a continuous body, sub- jected to small relative motions of its parts, accompanied by corre- sponding variations of internal pressure. When a disturbance or a local condensation or rarefaction is set up in any portion of this gas we calculate the resulting effects by the well-known equations of sound motion. But on this kinetic theory the medium is supposed to consist of a number of discrete masses—elastic spheres or the like—which preserve the physical properties of the medium merely by the recurrence of their mutual collisions, such collisions obeying no law in individual cases, but preserving a certain average uni- formity in the motion of the whole aggregate ; and we need some further investigation to assure ourselves of the applicability of the ordinary treatment of wave motion to such a medium.*~~

~~*Now we observe that the physical properties of our medium, so far as the relation between pressure, density, and temperature is concerned, merely require that the temperature be measured by the mean total kinetic energy of translation, and that the mean kinetic energy of translation parallel to any fixed line be equal to one-third of the mean total energy of translation.*~~

~~If the molecules constitut- ing any portion of this medium were animated by a common velocity or acceleration, the physical properties of this portion would be similarly determined by the velocities and kinetic energies relative to the common motion. When the distribution of such relative velo- cities is stable or permanent, the average relative kinetic energy in any fixed direction is one-third of the average relative total kinetic energy, such property constituting normal distribution.~~

~~Suppose that in any portion of a medium, consisting of equal elastic spheres, this distribution has been disturbed—that is, Smu2, 2mv, and Bmw? are unequal. If V were the relative velo- city of any pair of spheres after such disturbance and before they collide, and @ the angle between V and the common normal at the point of impact, then the normal and tangential relative velocities~~

~~617~~

~~before impact are Vcos~~ ~~and Vsin 6, and after impact they become ~ Vcos 6 and Vsin~~ ~~respectively. The relative velocity after im- pact, resolved in the direction of relative velocity before impact, is therefore — PV cos? 6+ V sin? 6, or — V'cos 20; and the chance of~~ ~~being between and 0+d6 is sin 20 dd, Therefore the average square relative velocity resolved in the~~

~~original direction becomes after impact T~~

~~= Hees V2 Ve i cos? 26 sin 26 dé, or = ;~~

~~θ~~

~~The relative velocity after impact in the plane of V, and the normal perpendicular to the direction of V before impact is V sin~~ ~~cos 0+ V sin cos @, or V sin 26. And, if fixed line be taken in the plane perpendicular to V, the~~

~~average value of the square of the relative velocity after impact, resolved parallel to this line, is~~

~~y2 20 us ee m V2 ah [sin' 26 cos? ¢ dé dd, or 5 as before.~~

~~_Hence we conclude that, in whatever manner the distribution is disturbed in any portion of the medium at any instant, it will, for all those pairs of spheres which within any given interval encounter each other, have assumed the normal distribution after that in terval.~~

~~If r denote the average time between two collisions for any given sphere, the chance that this sphere shall continue for any time ¢ t free from collisions is, as we have seen, e 7. If, therefore, D be the number of spheres within any region whose total relative velocity is between w and w + dw, but so distributed that the mean square of their relative velocities along any fixed~~

~~. . 2~~

~~line is not > then after a time ¢ considerably greater than 7, say~~

~~ten times 7, the number of the D spheres which have escaped col- lision will be utterly inconsiderable, and the distribution will have become normal throughout the region. Suppose, for instance, that a sound wave is passing along a tube filled with air, C jaa 6 R~~

~~0)~~

~~the air in the tube is, at any instant, ina state of alternate com- pression and rarefaction, as at C, R, C, R above.~~

~~If the note sounded be (say) 500 vibrations per second, the length of the wave CR is about ¥%,°,° feet, and the time taken by the wave in traversing that distance is about 545th of a second.~~

~~The air in any section of the tube near P has alternately a small positive inomentum and an equal small negative momentum, the reversal taking place in every ;45th of a second; also the same cause which produces the average momentum in either case disturbs the distribution of energy among the 2, y, and z directions, i¢., it is always producing an excess or defect in mu? above or below that of mv" and mw*, By what has been proved above, this abnormal distribution of energy becomes inappreciable, owing to molecular collisions in a time considerably less than ;;/55th of a second—in fact, in about gsaaoooath of a second, when the value of 7 for atmospheric~~

~~*air is considered. It is therefore legitimate, in calcu- lating the velocity of sound in air (at least on the elastic sphere hypothesis), to regard the distribution as always normal in any section of the tube, the air in that section or in any elementary portion of it possessing, as a whole, any given velocity or accelera- tion, estimated as if we were dealing with a continuous mass.*~~

~~*DIFFUSION oF GASES.*~~

~~*If any further light is to be thrown on the physical nature of a molecule from investigations, experimental or analytical, concerning gases, it will most probably be by means of experiments on the diffusion of gases, or else on the internal friction or viscosity of gases, and the com- parison of these results with those obtained analytically by the methods of the kinetic theory. Such investiga- tions have been undertaken experimentally by Graham, Loschmidt, Maxwell, O. E. Meyer, and others. An ac- count of them will be found in O. E. Meyer's work above referred to. The same problems have also been discussed analytically by Maxwell,! and by Stefan, O. E. Meyer, and Boltzmann in the treatises referred to below. We pro- ceed to give a short account of Meyer's results.*~~

~~*1 Phil. Mag., July 1860, and Feb. and March 1868. XVI. — 78*~~

~~*The term "diffusion" has sometimes been applied to the process by which a gas passes through a porous diaphragm. This, however, is now generally denominated transpiration. Tt has also been applied to the expansion of a gas into vacuum, as on the removal of a diaphragm separating the gas from an exhausted receiver. This is now generally denominated free expansion. We shall understand, as is now usual, by the term diffusion the process by which, when two or more gases are mixed throughout any space in different proportions at different points; but so that if all molecules were of the same gas the whole would be in equilibrium, the different gases pass through each other and tend to equalize the proportions at all points in the space.*~~

~~*Suppose, for instance, a tube containing a mixture of two gases, 4 and B, at constant temperature and constant pressure of the com- bined gases*~~

~~throughout the tube and subject to no forces, but the density of gas A increasing and that of B diminishing from one end of the tube to the other. Let the axis of the tube be taken for the axis of x. If NM, be the number of molecules of gas A, and NV, the number of molecules of gas B in unit volume, we have, owing to the constant pressure and temperature at all points of the tube, N,+N,=4N, a constant. But at a given instant V, and , at any point are severally functions of x It will be found that under these circumstances more molecules of gas A pass through any sec- tion of the tube, which may be in the plane of yz, in one direction, say from left to right, than in the opposite direction. On the other hand, more molecules of gas B pass from right to left than from left to right. And this will go on till the mixture becomes uniform throughout the tube.~~

~~The investigation of the rate at which the unequal distribution tends to equalize itself in this simple case—that is, the excess of the number of molecules of gas A which cross a section of the tube from left to right over the number crossing in the same time from right~~

~~to left—is the problem of diffusion. We give the results obtained by—~~

~~O. E. Meyer as follows :—if the molecules of the two gases had the same mass and dimensions (to put an ideal case), then the excess of molecules of either gas passing through the section in one direction—~~

~~Va that is, the stream velocity—would be-3 ae wl, where J denotes~~

~~the mean free path for a molecule having velocity w, and wl is the average value of that function for all molecules of the gas.~~

~~When we come to deal with two gases, the molecules of one not being of the same size and dimensions with those of the other, we shall find that, in the absence of any common velocity of the two gases at the plane of yz, more, or fewer, molecules of gas A would cross the plane per unit of time from left to right than of gas B from right to left, hecause, assuming constant pressure and tem- perature of the mixture at every point in the tube, the number of molecules of the two gases combined must be the same at every~~

~~point—that is, V,+N,=WN, where Vis constant. HIence = — aN, daz dx"~~

~~Now the excess of molecules of gas A coming from left to right per unit of time is ~· ane wl,, and similarly the excess of mole-~~

~~cules of gas B crossing from right to left per unit of time is 1 aN, ~·—7 . . . = de 4% if we now distinguish by suffixes a and 4 quantities~~

~~relating to the two gases respectively. Here J, and J, are mean free paths for velocity w of the two kinds of molecules through the mixed gases, and wi, is not generally equal to wi, Hence the total number of molecules crossing the plane from left to right ex- : é Wey ceeds the number coming from right to left by ist ace (wl, — wl).~~

~~Meyer here assumes that the combined gases have a common~~

~~i The GUO a velocity — 3 oe (wl, —l,), and that such common velocity~~

~~will not affect the relative motion of the molecules. On that hypo- thesis the rate of diffusion can be calculated as follows. The pro- portion of the stream of the combined gases which consists of mole- cules of gas A is~~

~~Hence the total surplus number of molecules of gas A passing through unit area of the plane per unit of time is~~

~~De, UN Ne ~· 8 de \V,+N, ome ole }~~

~~ee oe ae = = SUG) de" {M, wl, + N, ol, } »~~

~~MOLECULE~~

~~or GUN go Pri aN dn (Mo ela N, whe) The expression 1 a — ay (No ela t Na why)~~

~~is defined to be the " coefficient of diffusion" of gas A into gas B, It is evidently the same as that of gas B into gas A.~~

~~The Relation of the Coefficient of Diffusion to Density.—It can be shown that J, the mean free path for a molecule having velo-~~

~~*city w, is for any single gas inversely proportional to the density, and for any mixture of gases inversely proportional to , the ag- gregate volume occupied by matter in unit space. Hence, in the*~~

~~*ee 6 Se ; ; expression —> wl re wl is inversely proportional to the density,*~~

~~*or to A, as the case may be. 1g*~~

~~*Sean wl.*~~

~~*Hence, given the absolute increase of density of a gas per unit of d*~~

~~*az' versely as the density of the combined gases.*~~

~~*Now the rate of diffusion on this theory depends upon*~~

~~*length, that is, given the rate of diffusion ought to vary in-*~~

~~*On the other hand, given the proportional increase of the density, or ¥ | the rate of diffusion ought to be independent of the density, because in that case*~~

~~*an ae qq Varies directly, and wl inversely, as V. The analytical result,*~~

~~*that at given temperatures, and given the absolute value of the rate of diffusion is inversely proportional to the density of the gases agrees with the experimental results obtained by Loschmidt for carbonic acid gas and air, carbonic acid gas and hydrogen, hydrogen and oxygen.}*~~

~~*Relation of the Coefficient of Diffusion to Temperature. —The coefficient of diffusion varies directly as the square root of the abso- lute temperature, for*~~

~~*— ww wWl=F and ~ woVh Baan Ne (eee due#\ 2 Vh wh J 9*~~

~~*or, if wVA=y, paone N® { e /h*~~

~~*Hence*~~

~~*where y denotes a certain function, and Pra) Py is 4 (a) icc Al dw —*~~

~~1~~

~~ra) yt 1 1 oe) ch dy e-¥ =e ar dy e~¥* ary oc ——, [, ht B a/. na) a/h~~

~~This analytical result also agrees fairly with Loschmidt's experi- ments above referred to.~~

~~FRICTION OR Viscosity oF GASES.~~

~~Suppose two layers of gas separated by an imaginary plane, similar in all respects except that the molecules of one have a small common momentum in a certain direction parallel to the plane. We may take the imaginary plane for that of yz, and the average direction of motion of the molecules on one side of the plane, ¢.g., the left-hand side, for the axis of y, the molecules on the right-hand side of the plane having no average momentum. Then the mole- cules crossing from the left to the right side carry with them an average momentum in the direction y, and so tend to impress the right-hand stratum of gas with that mo- mentum. On the other hand, the molecules of the right- hand stratum crossing the plane into the left-hand one have, relatively to the molecules in the latter, an average momentum in the opposite direction, and therefore tend to diminish the average momentum of the left-hand stratum.~~

~~1 Sitzungsberichte, 1870, Bd. 1xi. 8. 380. 2 See Meyer's Kin. Theorie, p. 295.~~

~~nor Cw bf i~~

~~Hence, if we attempt to cause one stratum of gas to pass over another in parallel planes, we experience a resistance due to the interchange of molecules between the portions of gas separated by the plane. This is in some respects analogous to sliding friction between solid bodies, and is called by German writers the "friction" (Reibung), by Max- well and others the "viscosity," of the gas, Meyer ! investi- gates this effect of friction in a manner somewhat similar to that employed in case of diffusion, and obtains for the~~

~~coefficient of viscosity + mol. Relation of the Coefficient of Viscosity to Density and Tempera- twre.—The viscosity of a gas is independent of the density, being,~~

~~according to O. E. Meyer, mx wl. Now, for any one gas, l,, is, as~~

~~we have seen, inversely proportional to the density, and therefore wt is inversely proportional to the density. On the other hand, V is directly proportional to the density. Hence the viscosity is in- dependent of the density. This agrees with the result obtained by Maxwell from the kinetic theory in 1860, and with the results of experiments by Maxwell? and O. E. Meyer.? Also, experiments by O. E. Meyer and Springmiihl 4 on the ¢ranspiration of gases show that the times in which two different gases under similar circum- stances flow through a tube maintain the same constant ratio to~~

~~one another. As in the case of the coefficient of diffusion, w/ is inversely proportional to the square root of the absolute temperature. As both the coefficient of diffusion and that of viscosity depend~~

~~on the same function w/, it should be possible from experiments on viscosity to determine the rate of diffusion. Experiments with this object have been conducted by Stefan with very satisfactory results, his calculated values for the coellicient of diffusion agreeing very closely with those determined by Loschmidt's direct experiment. §~~

~~We have given the above results for the coefficients of diffusion and viscosity from O. E. Meyer's work, because his method has met with very general acceptance. It has been shown, however, by Boltzmann,' that the method is incomplete. Meyer's results can only be obtained on the assumption that the molecules of a gas undergoing diffusion or internal friction, which have any given velo- city, as7, are moving with that velocity in all directions indifferently. We may calculate the number of molecules having velocity w that pass through a given plane during a short time dé, starting from encounters at any given distance from the plane. If we assume that thé molecules, issuing from such encounters with velocity w, move indifferently in all directions, we obtain Meyer's result. This assumption is true only of a gas at rest—that is, having no velocity of translation—so that~~

~~*our result so obtained would express, in case of diffusion, the rate at which two gases begin to diffuse, if given at any instant both at rest—that is, with no stream velocity—but mixed in unequal proportions in different parts of space. In any actual case of diffusion, either of the two diffusing gases acquires a small velocity of translation. If we take this velocity into account in calculating the number of molecules of the gas ag: through a plane, according to Meyer's method, we shall*~~

~~*nd that it introduces two new terms, one of which, when the motion becomes steady, is equal and opposite to the result obtained by Meyer. This is proved by Boltzmann in the case of viscosity in the treatise above referred to. The same proof is easily applied in the case of diffusion.*~~

~~*Stefan's Method.—Stefan® regards the two diffusing gascs as having small velocities of translation, or stream velocities, w, and Mo, in opposite directions, so that the molecules of one gas, of mass ™,, have an average momentum m,1, in direction from left to right, and those of the other gas, of mass m,., an average mo- mentum m,t. from right to left. By virtue of encounters between the two sets of molecules, each gas is always imparting to the other a portion of its own average momentum, and receiving from the other a corresponding momentum in the opposite direc- tion. The momentum so transferred or interchanged is what Stefan calls the resistance which one gas offers to the other's diffusion. In this investigation Stefan assumes that all classes of molecules of one gas, whatever their molecular velocity in space, have the same average velocity in the direction of diffusion—that is, the same stream velocity—so that the motion of the molecules of a diffusing gas would be exactly represented by considering the molecules of a gas at rest—that is, with only its molecular velocity—at the same*~~

~~*1 See pp. 311-325 of the work above referred to.*~~

~~*2 Proceedings of the Royal Society, 8th' February 1866.*~~

~~*3 Poggendorf's Annalen, 1871, cxliii. 14.*~~

~~*4 Pogg. Aun., 1873, exlviii. 1 and 526.*~~

~~5 Sitzwngsber. d. k.-k. Akad., 1872, Ixv. 328.~~

~~6 For a full account of these and other experiments on diffusion and vis- cosity, see O. E. Meyer, Kinetische Theorie d. Gase, under the heads " Reibung" and " Diffusion."~~

~~7 " Zur Gas-Reibung," in the Sitzwngsber. d. k.-k. Akad., 1881.~~

~~8 Oia "On the Dynamical Theory of Diffusion" (Sitzwngsber. a. k.-k. Akad., lxv.~~

~~619~~

~~temperature and pressure, and then giving to each molecule the additional common velocity w in the direction of diffusion. Boltz- mann, however, shows that, in order correctly to represent the motion of the diffusing gas, we must impart to molecules having different molecular velocities independent of direction different. common velocities in the direction of diffusion. And it will be found that the resistance of the gases is sensibly modified by this property.?~~

~~_ The complete solution of the problem,—that is, the determina- tion of w as a function of w, on the hypothesis that the molecules are clastic spheres,—is difficult.~~

~~If we assume molecules to be centres of force varying inversely as~~

~~the nth power of the distance, so that the force at distance r is =.~~

~~where u is constant, we obtain the following result. We assume the molecules of gas 4 whose absolute velocities are between wand w + dw to have an average stream velocity w in direction of the tube, where w is a function of 2. Then, if the terminal con- dition at the ends of the tube be maintained constant, we obtain an equation of the form~~

~~pdNy_4n-8/, _mym, ___ NN; N dz 8n-3~· * m + m, unit volume~~

~~pace eee by the average value for all molecules of N-~~

~~gas A of~~

~~wV™-1 whereV is the relative velocity of two molecules, one taken from each gas, and Cis a constant, and M, M, the masses of the molecules of gas 4 and gas B respectively.~~

~~By making infinite we obtain the result for elastic spheres: in n—5~~

~~a case V”-1— 1, and the problem is to find the average valuc of wv.~~

~~Since p varies as the absolute temperature, and the average value of V varies as the square root of the absolute temperature, we may infer that the average value of w—that is, the stream velocity—will vary approximately as the square root of the temperature, as it appears to do from experimental evidence. If, on the other hand,~~

~~, 4n— ‘ n=5, V disappears, and gongs. In this case th analytical de- termination of « presents no difficulty ; but in the result the stream velocity varies as the absolute temperature, which accords less satis- factorily with experiments.~~

~~On Motecutar DIMENSIONS.~~

~~Many attempts have been made in recent years to form an estimate or conjecture, more or less accurate, of the numerical value of the dimensions of a molecule and the absolute force between molecules.”~~

~~In accordance with the view of the subject considered in this article, we are here concerned with such specula- tions only in so far as they are founded upon the kinetic theory of gases, or supported by it. The phenomena of diffusion and viscosity especially have afforded grounds for estimates of molecular dimensions,~~

~~It is first necessary to define what is meant by the dimensions of a molecule. Regarded as an elastic sphere, it has dimensions with the conception of which we are familiar. It is not, of course, seriously contended by any physicists that the molecules of a gas are actually hard elastic spheres, exerting no force on each other at any dis- tance greater than that of actual~~

~~contact, and then an infinite force. It is necessary to conceive the forces as finite, although they may diminish so rapidly with the dis- tance as that the motions of molecules in the aggregate differ little from what they would be if the molecules were ideal elastic spheres. Nevertheless, they must be finite forces ; and, that being the case, it is difficult, if not im- possible, to frame a definition of the boundary of a mole- cule, except as a certain surface at which the forces acting between the molecule in question and other molecules~~

~~attain a certain value. If, for instance, we were to regard a molecule as a centre of force,~~

~~® For Boltzmann's own treatment, of the subject we cannot, within the limits of this article, do more than refer tle reader to the memoir above mentioned, "Zur Gas-Reibung," and another as yet unfinished nemoir "On Diffusion," in the Sitzwngsber. d. k.-k. Akad., 1882. ; ;~~

~~10 An account of these will be found in O. E. Meyer's Kin. Theorie d. Gase, in Professor Tait's Recent Advances in Physical Science, lect. xii., and in the following memoirs :—Phil. Mag., July 1879, " On the Size of Molecules," by N. . D. C. Hodges; Phil. Mag., March 1880, "On the Mean Free Path of Molecules, by the same author. See also, lecture delivered by Sir W. Thomson at the Royal Institution, 2d Feb. 1883.~~

;

~~: : be , : no Gaia exerting an attractive force (4 aud a repulsive force 7, we might~~

;

~~: a define the molecule to be a sphere of radius a, such that (7=77.~~

~~In like manner, regarding a molecule as a centre of force, repelling according to the law of the inverse fifth power of the distance, we might define the magnitude of a molecule as a sphere of radius equal to the least~~

~~*distance to which two molecules, whose relative velocity is equal to the mean velocity of the centres of force, approach each other in a direct encounter.*~~

~~*If on any hypothesis concerning the nature of a molecule, or the law of force which acts during encounters, we can calculate the co- efficient of viscosity or diffusion analytically, a comparison of the analytical result with results obtained by experiment may afford the means of determining the absolute numerical value of the con- stants used in the analysis. For example, if we consider the mole- cules as elastic spheres, and if we consider for a moment Meyer's results as correct, or approximately correct, the awe of*~~

~~*i—*~~

~~*viscosity for any single gas can be put in the form —9~ oly,*~~

~~*where WV is the number of molecules in unit of volume, m the mass of a molecule. Now, for every value of wi,,, the mean free path*~~

~~*a . of a molecule with that velocity is equal to \/h aa, where s is*~~

~~*twice the radius of a molecule multiplied by a numerical factor which can be determined to any required degree of accuracy. Also at given temperature and pressure the numerical value of /h is known. It follows that we can calculate the numerical value of the coefficient of viscosity by analytical methods in terms of N7s**~~

~~*F ¢ P to any required degree of accuracy. Let it be Nast If by experi-*~~

~~*ments on viscosity we can determine the numerical value of the same coefficient in the form C,, when C, is a mere numerical quan-*~~

~~*, f : ; C (Of tity, we have immediately the equation C)}= Naw oF Nr? = a:*~~

~~*This gives in absolute numerical measure the value of WV7s?, or four times the sum of the great circle areas of all the molecules in unit of volume, supposing them to be spherical. If we attempt to use the coefficient of*~~

~~*diffusion instead of viscosity in this method, we are met by the difficulty that the analytical result contains now two unknown quantities instead of one—namely, the radii of the respective molecules of the two gases in question. If this difficulty be got over by a comparison of results obtained in different ex- periments, the greater certainty attending the observations on dif- fusion might perhaps compensate for the additional mathematical difficulty, and render diffusion at least equally trustworthy with viscosity as a method for estimating molecular dimensions. Again, on the hypothesis of repulsion between molecules according to the law of the inverse fifth power of the distance, we can calculate analytically the rate of diffusion between two reservoirs connected by a tube as above described, the result containing only one unknown constant, viz., #4, the constant of absolute force. Com- paring the analytical result with the results of experiments on diffusion through such a tube as above described, if we find them capable of being harmonized by attributing any numerical value to #, we should have good reason for concluding that the law of force assumed is toa certain extent at least the true law, and that the particular value of » is that which harmonizes the analytical with the experimental results. And the determination of u, the absolute force, corresponds to, or indeed 7s, the determination of the size of the molecule,*~~

~~*Until all the mathematical hypotheses have been fully developed, no very great reliance can be placed on the results of such com- parisons, even assuming that the experimental results themselves are to be depended upon. However valuable the experiments may be for other purposes, they are not valuable for the purpose of determining molecular dimensions until our mathematical analysis is sufficiently advanced to enable us to interpret the experiment. At present it is perhaps impossible to deduce from the experiments any other result bearing on this question than that the coefficients of diffusion and viscosity increase with increasing temperature, and probably contain an important term proportional to the square root of the absolute temperature. If, indeed, it can be shown that that is the only term, and if it can be also shown that the density of one of two diffusing gases in a tube through which steady diffusion is going on tends to vary in geometrical progression, then the analysis will lead us to the conclusion that molecules of gases behave in their physical relations to each other as if they were elastic spheres,*~~

~~The following method has also been suggested for estimating the magnitude of molecules of mercury. Mercury is regarded by most chemists as monatomic. Let us assume that its molecules are con- ducting spheres; on that assumption we may calculate the specific~~

~~bes wale capacity of mercury vapour on Faraday's hynothesis to be + Sena: ; Y—x> Where A is the ratio which the aggregate volume of all the~~

~~CULE~~

~~spherical molecules in unit volume bears to unit volume. If now K, the specific inductive capacity of mercury vapour, can be deter-~~

~~: 1+2A mined experimentally, the equation A= 7) affords a ground~~

~~for estimating the value of A,—that is, the aggregate volume of the molecules.~~

~~Another method, originally proposed by Van der Waals, is founded on the small deviations from Boyle's law observed in all gases. Suppose a vessel of volume V containing a number J, of elastic spheres, each of mass m, moving with a certain average kinetic energy. Let », be the pressure. Let a second class of elastic spheres, in number N,, each of the same mass m as the former class and having the same average kinetic energy, be introduced into the vessel. If the second class of spheres could freely penetrate the first, and vice versa, so that there should be no restrictions on a sphere of the first class and a sphere of the second being in the same place at the same time, then the pressure on the walls of the N, +N,~~

~~vessel would be increased in the exact proportion . Boyle's~~

~~law would be exactly fulfilled. But if the spheres cannot pene- trate each other, the volume occupied by the second class of spheres~~

~~4~~

~~is not V, but V- 3 Myr, if » be the radius of a sphere of the~~

~~*first class. Consequently, the pressure due to the second class of spheres is rather greater than it should be, and there is a small deviation from Boyle's law. Van der Waals treats the pressure as proportional to the number of encounters, and therefore inversely Se ee to the mean free path, which is evidently diminished*~~

~~*y any increase in the magnitude of the spheres, and diminished more than in proportion by any increase in the number.*~~

~~*(H. W. W.—S8. H. B.)*~~

~~*CHEMICAL ASPECT.*~~

~~*The word Molecule is used by chemists to express the unit of a pure substance, that quantity of it which its formula ought to represent. What this quantity is, in any particular case, must be ascertained by studying the chemical actions by which the substance is produced and the chemical changes which it undergoes. We may give one or two illustrations to show how this can be done, as well as to indicate the limits within which these methods can be applied.*~~

~~*The formula usually assigned to acetic acid is C,H,O,. This agrees with almost all the chemical actions in which it takes part. Thus, one quarter of the hydrogen is replaceable by other metals, as in C,H,KO,, &c.; and one, two, or three quarters of the hydrogen can be replaced by chlorine. There must, therefore, be four (or a multiple of four) atoms of hydrogen in the molecule. Similarly, half of the oxygen can be replaced by sulphur, and one-half of the oxygen along with one-quarter of the hydrogen can be replaced by chlorine. There must, therefore, be two (or a multiple of two) atoms of oxygen in the molecule. Again, the formation of marsh gas and carbonate of soda, when acetate of soda is heated with caustic soda, and the formation of aceto-nitrile from cyanide of potassium and iodide of methyl, show that the carbon in acetic acid is divisible by two, or that the molecule contains two (or a multiple of two) atoms of carbon. O,H,O, is the simplest formula which fulfils these conditions, but the existence of an acid acetate of potash and an acid acetate of ammonia, the formule of which are usually written C,H,KO,, C,H,0, and C,H,(NH,)O,, C,H,O,, as if these were com- pounds derived from two molecules of acetic acid, might lead us to C,H,O, as this shows that the hydrogen is divisible by eight. In the same way, we can easily satisfy ourselves that C,H,,O;, or some multiple of it, is the formula of starch ; that C,H;NO, or some multiple of 1, is the formula of indigo blue, and so on. But it is not easy to determine by purely chemical methods whether these formule themselves, or multiples of them, really represent the molecule. A simple formula may suffice for a great many of the reactions of a substance, and may enable us to represent a great many of its derivatives, and yet reactions and derivatives may be discovered which require a multiple of that simple formula. This has already been indicated in reference to acetic acid, and a very striking*~~

~~*Ou ns CU Ls*~~

~~*illustration is supplied by mellitic acid. For a long time the formula C,H,O, was used for this acid, and by means of it all the then known derivatives were repre- sented. But later investigations by Baeyer proved that this formula must be multiplied by three, the new deriva- tives obtained by him not being capable of representation with any formula simpler than C,,H,O,.. Very many ex- amples of the same kind might be adduced, but those given*~~

~~*may serve to show the nature of the difficulty of settling the formula and with it the molecular weight of a sub- stance. It need scarcely be said that the multiple formula represents everything which the simple formula represents and something more, and that chemists as a rule take the simplest formula which will answer the purpose. These chemical methods of determining the formula and mole- cular weight apply equally to all pure substances, but they do not give us absolute values, only numbers to which the molecular weights are proportional. And for purely chemical purposes these are all that we require. Thus, when a chemist speaks of acting on a molecule of suc- cinic acid with two molecules of pentachloride of phos- phorus, he means that he mixes them in the proportion of 118 parts of the former to 2× 177-5 of the latter. For the sake of precision we sometimes speak of a mole- cule of water (or other substance) in grammes, or even of a gramme-molecule, agrain-molecule, &c. Thus, in the case just mentioned a gramme-molecule of succinic acid means 118 grammes of succinic acid, &c.*~~

~~*But, while for practical purposes these proportional numbers are quite sufficient, we cannot leave out of view their relation to the actual constitution of matter. There is good reason to believe that matter consists of discrete particles, and that every pure substance is made up of small portions of matter, all alike, so that one of them, if we could examine it, would give us a complete idea of the chemical composition, constitution, and character of the substance. These small portions, of which the smallest quantity of the substance which we can examine contains many millions, we may call molecules. From the character which we have supposed this molecule to possess—viz., that it fully represents all the chemical properties of the sub- stance—it will be seen that these real, ultimate molecules must be proportional to the molecular weights ascertained by chemical means ; so that, while for practical laboratory or manufacturing purposes we use the gramme, the pound, or the ton as our unit, and speak of 18 grammes, pounds, or tons, as the case may be, of water, as a molecule (or gramme- molecule, ton-molecule, &c.), in dealing with the actual constitution of matter we should use as our unit the mass of a single atom of hydrogen, and our gramme- molecule would then be a definite, very large, but not yet accurately ascertained, number of real molecules.*~~

~~*It has been already shown above that, on the kinetic theory of gas, a gas consists of a number of particles moving about in straight lines in all directions, and that in a homogeneous gas which follows Boyle's and Charles's laws these particles are all alike. The masses of the particles of different gases are therefore to one another in the same proportion as the densities of the gases, tempera- ture and pressure being the same. Thus, in gases, the in- dependently moving particles of the kinetic theory are the molecules of which the chemist is in search, and it becomes important that we should compare our chemically found molecular weights with the densities. Theoretically accu- rate results could be obtained only in the case of a perfect gas; but small deviations from Boyle's and Charles's laws do not interfere with the application of this method. Chemical methods, as we have already seen, lead us to a particular number, or a multiple of zt, so that our choice is as a rule limited to two or three numbers widely differing*~~

~~*from one another. We find that if we do not exceed the limits of chemical stability a gas approaches the state of a perfect gas as the temperature increases, or as the pres- sure diminishes. Now if one of the numbers rendered probable by chemical evidence nearly coincides with that given by comparison of gas densities, under conditions where the substance sensibly deviates from Boyle's and Charles's laws, we find that by diminishing the pressure or increasing the temperature within the limits of chemical stability, and thus bringing the substance nearer the state of a perfect gas, the correspondence between these two numbers becomes closer. This has already been pointed out and illustrated in the article CuEmisTRY, vol. v. p. 469.*~~

~~*We can now compare the results, in the case of gases, of the chemical and of the physical determination of molecular weight, by giving some examples, placing side by side the formula and molecular weight adopted by chemists, and the mass, in grammes, of the gas occupying the volume of 22°33 × 760/p x (273 + 1)/273 litres. This volume is that which one gramme of an ideal gas having the molecular weight 1, and perfectly following Boyle's and Charles's laws, would occupy at pressure p millimetres of mercury and temperature ¢° C. If, then, w be the mole- cular weight of any gas, «*~~

~~grammes of it should occupy this volume, and slight deviation from this would indicate slight deviation from Boyle's and Charles's laws. In the annexed table wis the molecular weight and m the mass contained in 22°33 × 760/p x (273 + t)/273 litres. Where the temperature is not specially stated, the determinations were made under the usual atmospheric conditions.~~

~~Name. Formula. W. Me Sulphuretted hydrogen …) H,S 34 | 34°04 Nittomgioxide ……100…+. NO 44 | 44:08 2005)110) 0 he NH, il ile:~~

~~Carbonic acid ……..1…0..5 co, 44 44°14 BYBAS oe.eee sss eee een aes CH, 16 16°13 QloGaat Gas ……..ee000s C,H, 28 | 28°44 TMOG eea esss.0asaveeene labs Z 2 ODN eseas yes -01etisee sarees 0, 32 32 CIMGTIG Pe… iaseasesoesaes Cl, 71 71°27) at 100° C. PROGBWORRSW... 6.00 eidseeeee P, 124 | 125°9 500° C UR PMAI Ce cis 4 gives 0s SUR 0s As, 300 | 294°5 860° C S 192 | 194 |°° 500°C Sulphur pleiplsieihisin'nieis ajevaisleveveiacereibrete | (S) 64 63°5 ,1000° C Bromide of aluminium …| Al,Brg | 584 | 537°5 | ,, 440°C Henmeichiloridems…e.e.s.0.03 Fe,Cl, 325 | 328°8),, 440°C Sal-AaMMOnae ….00…0.000s NH,Cl | 53°5 | 29°6 | at 350° C. Onlfor Wael. eds eee ors H,SO, 98 50°24 |,, 440°C Pentachloride of phos- . 140 |,, 200°C TOMOVNER eeontannoceneeenrs PCl, ees) 105°4 300° C | Sulphide of ammonium …|(NH,),S| 68 PETS | 5 KO?~~

~~A comparison of the values of w and m leads to the following conclusions : —'~~

~~(1) In the case of a very great number of substances, of which only a few specimens are given in the table, the two determinations agree, the slight differences often observed being evidently due to deviation of the sub-stance from the state of a perfect gas. (2) In a consider- able number of substances, physical evidence leads to a multiple of the simplest number satisfying the chemical conditions. This cannot be looked upon as a disagreement between the methods, because, if a particular formula satis-fies the chemical conditions, any multiple of it will neces- sarily do so; and indeed, in many of the cases we are now considering, it is possible from chemical considerations to justify the higher molecular weight after it has been sug- gested, although such chemical considerations might not in all~~

~~cases have warranted its adoption without external support. Thus, we are not without chemical evidence in~~

~~favour of the formule H_2, Cl_2, O_2, or even Al, Br, and Fe_2Cl_6, although chemists would probably have contented them- selves with H, Cl, O, $AlBr_3$, and $FeCl_3$, had it not been for the evidence of gas and vapour-density, and certainly with- out the latter no one would have thought of P_4, As_4, or S_8.1 (3) There are a number of substances in the case of which there is an apparent disagreement between thie results of the two ways of determining molecular weight. Such substances are said to have an anomalous gas or vapour-density. The expression anomalous vapour-density is sometimes applied to the case of such substances as phosphorus and arsenic, but not very accurately. It would be better to say that these substances have an unexpected vapour-density, because their complex molecular formule, while not clearly indicated by their chemical character, are not at variance with any established law.~~

~~We shall therefore reserve the term "anomalous vapour-density" for those substances the molecular weight of which as given by their vapour-density is not reconcilable with any formula which is chemically admissible. In the case of some substances, such as the oxides of chlorine, it has been shown that the discrepancy was due to errors of observation, impure specimens having been used in the experiments; but there still remain many substances having, in the sense above indicated, an anomalous vapour-density. These substances have therefore been examined with special care, with the result of completely vindicating the kinetic theory, and of disclosing a very interesting and theoretically important kind of chemical change. We shall take, as instances of such anomalous vapour-densities, the substances in the last division of the table, and show how the anomaly has in these cases been explained.~~

~~Sal-ammoniac has the composition represented by the formula NH_4Cl. This formula agrees with all the chemical actions of the substance and of all the substances in any way related to it, but it does not agree with the results of vapour-density determinations. When sal-ammoniac is heated it is converted into vapour or gas, and this vapour or gas is reconverted into~~

~~solid sal-ammoniac when it is cooled. This looks exactly like the process of sublimation, and it was universally supposed that the vapour given off when sal-ammoniac is heated was 'really sal-ammoniac vapour. But its vapour density corresponds, not to the for- mula NH,Cl and the molecular weight 53°5, but to the half of this. Now this formula does not admit of divi- sion, and the explanation at once suggests itself, that the vapour examined was not really the vapour of sal- ammoniac, but of hydrochloric acid and ammonia gases, the products of the decomposition of sal-ammoniac.~~

~~This would of course completely explain the apparent anomaly ; each molecule NH,Cl dividing into two mole- cules NH, and HCl, the gas from a given weight of sal- ammoniac would of course contain twice as many molecules and occupy twice the space which it would do if no such decomposition had occurred. On this supposition the mixed gases would remain uncombined as long as the temperature was above the decomposing point of sal- ammoniac ; if the temperature fell below this point they~~

~~1 It is important as a matter of scientific history to note that this agreement of gas density and chemical molecular weight was first indicated by Gay-Lussae, who showed that the ratio of the densities of two gases stood in a very simple arithmetical relation to the ratio of their chemical equivalents. Avogadro in 1811 brought forward his famous hypothesis, that the number of molecules in a given volume of gas is independent of the nature of the gas, or that the densities of gases (temperature and pressure being the same) are to one another as the masses of their molecules. This hypothesis is now shown to be in accordance with the kinetic theory of gas, and is known as " Avogadro's law.' See Atom, vol. iii. p. 40, where a slight con- fusion has been caused by using the word " equivalent" instead of "molecule," and by not sufficiently distinguishing between the discovery of Gay-Lussae and the hypothesis of Avogadro.~~

~~MOLE Cw~~

~~would unite and reproduce sal-anmmoniac. It was neces- sary, however, to prove that this decomposition occurs.~~

~~As has been shown above (p. 618), the rate of diffusion of a gas depends upon its density. In this case the two gases into which the substance may be~~

~~supposed to break up at the moment of volatilization differ considerably in density ; we ought, therefore, to be able to effect partial separation by means of diffusion, and it has been shown that such partial separation actually does occur. Thus, if we have hydrogen gas on one side of a porous dia- phragm and volatilized sal-ammoniac on the other side, we find after a time that, mixed with the hydrogen on the one side, we have what we may for shortness call sal- ammoniac vapour—that is, a vapour which when cooled forms solid sal-ammoniac—vwith an excess of ammonia, which, being less dense than hydrochloric acid gas, has diffused faster ; while on the other side, also mixed with hydrogen which has diffused through the diaphragm, we have sal-ammoniac vapour with excess of hydrochloric acid, the denser and more slowly diffusing gas. This of course proves that the decomposition has occurred, but it does not prove that the vapour of sal-ammoniac consists entirely of hydrochloric acid and ammonia mixed with one another. That this in fact is not the case has been shown by an ingenious experiment. The two gases were separately raised to a temperature higher than that at which sal-am- moniac volatilizes, and were then allowed to mix ina vessel kept at the same temperature as the two gases. In this vessel a delicate thermometer was placed, and it was found that the mixing of the two gases was accompanied by a small but very decided evolution of heat. This proves that some chemical combination takes place, and that the mixed gases must contain some vapour of NH,Cl. More- over, careful determinations of the vapour density of sal- ammoniac prove that it is a little more than the mean of the densities of ammonia and hydrochloric acid (as compared with air at the same temperature and pres- sure, 1‘01 instead of 0°9255 at 350°C.); and this increase of density on mixing the hot gases is easily explained by supposing that a small proportion is in the condition of NH,Cl, while the most of the gas consists of separate NH, and HCl molecules.~~

~~In a similar way it has been shown that the vapour of oil of vitriol is a mixture of two vapours,—that of water, H,O, and that of sulphuric anhydride, SO,; and that sulphide of ammonium when volatilized breaks up into two volumes of ammonia and one of sulphuretted hy- drogen, (NH,),S =2NH,+H,S. We find, therefore, that in the former case, as in that of sal-ammoniac, w= 2m, and in the latter, w= 3m.~~

~~This peculiar kind of decomposition is now known by the name "' dissociation." (See vol. v. pp. 475, 476.) In the cases we have mentioned the substances undergo nearly complete dissociation at the temperature at which they volatilize, and recombination takes place when they are cooled and again assume the solid, or, as in the case of oil of vitriol, the liquid state. These substances are therefore not suited for the illustration of the whole course of dissociation. This has been carefully studied in the case of some compounds, in which the dissociation is far from complete, at the boiling point of the substance, with the result that, if 4B be the compound dissociating into the separate molecules 4 and B, we may represent the amount of dissociation as the ratio of the num- ber of pairs of separate 4 and B molecules to the total number of pairs of 4 and B, both separate and conibined. This ratio we may call R, so that when dissociation is complete R=1.~~

~~(1) R increases as the temperature rises. (2) dR/dt (where ¢ is temperature) isa maximum when R=4. (8) The presence of excess of either A or B diminishes the value of &. For instance, PCI, is nearly completely dissociated into PCl, and Cl, at 300° C.; butifa large excess of PCl, is mixed with the vapour.it is found to contain scarcely any Cl,, so that dissociation is greatly diminished by the presence of excess of PCl,. These experimental results are capable of explanation on the kinetic theory of gas, if we adopt Pfaundler's hypothesis. This is, that for each case of dissociation there is a~~

~~MOL—MOL~~

~~limiting value for the internal kinetic energy} of a molecule of AB, If a molecule of AB, by encounters with other molecules or with the wall of the vessel containing the gas, acquires a greater amount of internal kinetic energy than this limit, it at once breaks up into A-and JS, so that in the gaseous mixture there are no molecules of AB having more internal kinetic energy than the limit. Further, if two molecules, one of 4 and one of B, meet one another with such a velocity and with such an amount of internal kinetic energy that together the internal kinetic energy is less than the limit, they will unite to form a molecule of 4B. Thus the molecules with great internal kinetic energy will be separate molecules of A and £8; those with~~

small internal kinetic energy will mostly be united as AB, This hypothesis has been to a considerable extent worked out and applied by Pfaundler and by Naumann, and the deductions from it agree fairly well with the results of experiment ; but in some points the theory has not been fully developed, and in some it does not seem altogether to accord with observed facts. Some of these difficulties have been mentioned above. We know enough of the nature of dissociation to see that it belongs to the class of balanced chemical actions, in which a chemical change is reversible, and equili- brium is kept up, with constant external conditions, by the two opposite chemical changes taking place to an equal extent in a given time. We can see that all such cases are explicable by the statistical method, but we cannot apply this method mathematically until we know more of the intimate nature of the molecules and of the way in which they act upon one another. In this discussion of dissocia- tion we have looked specially at the cases in which 4, B, and AB are all gaseous, because it was the question of anomalous vapour densities which led us to treat of the subject. Dissociation also occurs where one or two of the substances are solid or quid.

We now see with what restrictions the method of vapour density is applicable to the determination of molecular weight, and we can understand more fully the example given in the article CHEMIsTRY, vol. v. p. 469. It is there shown that acetic acid vapour does not conform to the laws of Boyle and Charles until the temperature is raised to about 250°, at the ordinary barometric pressure. At and above that temperature the vapour density corresponds to the formula C,H,0. At lower temperatures the density corresponds to a higher molecular weight. Now Playfair and Wanklyn determined the vapour density at much lower temperatures than the ordinary boil- ing point of acetic acid, by greatly diminishing the pressure of the

MOLESKIN is a stout heavy cotton fabric of leathery consistence woven as a satin twill on a strong warp. It is finished generally either as a bleached white or as a slaty drab colour, but occasionally it is printed in imitation of tweed patterns. Being an exceedingly durable and econo- mical texture, it was formerly much more worn by working- men, especially outdoor labourers, than is now the case. It is also used for gun-cases, carriage-

~~*covers, and several pur- poses in which a fabric capable of resisting rough usage is desirable.*~~

~~*MOLESWORTH, Sir WitttaM (1810-1855), the eighth baronet, was. born in London, 23d May 1810, and succeeded to the extensive family estates in Devon and Cornwall in 1823. On the passing of the Reform Act of 1832 he was re- turned to parliament, though only twenty-two years old, for the eastern division of the county of Cornwall, to support the ministry of Lord Grey. For some time he took little part in the debates of the House of Commons; but in April 1835 he founded, in conjunction with Mr. Roebuck, the London Review, as an organ of the politicians known to the world as "Philosophic Radicals." After the publication of two volumes he purchased the Westminster Review, and for some time the united magazines were edited by him and J. S. Mill. From 1837 to 1841 Sir William Molesworth sat for the borough of Leeds, and during those years acquired con- siderable influence in the House of Commons by his speeches and by his tact in presiding over the select committee on Transportation. From 1841 to 1845 he remained in private life, occupying his leisure time in editing the works in Latin and English of Thomas Hobbes of Malmesbury, a recreation which cost him no less than £6000. In the latter year he*~~

~~*1 By internal kinetic energy is meant the kinetic energy of motion of the parts of the molecule relatively to one another, in contradis- tinction to the kinetic energy of motion of the molecule as a whole.*~~

~~*acetic acid vapour. This they accomplished by mixing it with a large quantity of hydrogen, so that the pressure due to acetic acid vapour formed only a small fraction of the total pressure. The vapour density of acetic acid at the low temperatures at which they worked was found to correspond very nearly with the formula C4H,0,, and, by comparing this result with what has been said (p. 620) of the chemical evidence as to the molecular weight of acetic acid, we may reasonably conclude that the molecule of acetic acid at low temperatures is C,H,O,, and that as the temperature is raised it undergoes dissociation, each molecule dividing into two of C.H,0, This is then a case where A'and B are equal, and 4.4 divides into4+A, Another instance of the same kind is probably to be found in peroxide of nitrogen*~~

~~(CHEMISTRY, p. 518), where N,0, divides into NO, + NO,. Similarly, sulphur vapour has, at temperatures below 500° C., a density corresponding to the formula Se. This dissociates as the temperature rises until, about 1000° C the density corresponds to the formula S, (CHEMISTRY, p. 498). We have now seen that chemistry receives great assistance in the determination of molecular weight from physics, but this assistance is almost entirely confined to the case of gases, or of substances which can be volatilized. The phenomena of the diffusion of liquids show us that there also there are independently moving particles ;~~

~~Ss)~~

~~| but the laws of liquid-diffusion have not been sufficiently gener-~~

~~alized to give us much help in the determination of the relative masses of these particles. In liquids it is probable that the par- ticles are very near each other, and that their shape and their mutual action, as well as their mass and the temperature, detcr- mine their rate of motion.~~

~~In solids we have no independently travelling particles, and it is perhaps scarcely correct to speak of a molecular structure of solids at all. Solids are no doubt composed of atoms, and those atoms are evidently arranged in what may be called a tactical order. When the solid is fused or dissolved or volatilized, it breaks into molecules, each repetition of the pattern, if we may use the expres- sion, being ready to become an independent thing under favourable circumstances. But, while these potential molecules of solids can- not perhaps be properly called molecules in a physical sense,? for chemical purposes we may call them so, for they are the smallest portions of the substance which fully represent it chemically, and, as we have seen, this is the chemical molecule, the quantity which should be represented by the formula. (A. CoiBa)~~

~~was returned for the borough of Southwark, and retained that seat until his death. On his return to parliament he devoted special attention to the condition of the colonies, and delivered many speeches in favour of a reduction in colonial expenditure and on their better administration. His arguments on these questions changed the opinions of the members of the House of Commons; and the criticisms of the daily press, aided by the~~

~~*printing of his speeches, led to the gradual acceptance of his views by the electors at large. It was not, however, until many years afterwards that he was allowed full opportunity for working out the difficult problems connected with the government of Great Britain. Office was conferred upon him in December 1852 by Lord Aberdeen, but it was the minor post of directing the public improvements and crown lands of his own country, and the chief work by which his name was brought into prominence at this time was the construction of the new Westminster Bridge. At last, in July 1855, he was called to preside over the Colonial Office, but unfortunately its duties were no sooner entrusted to his care than he was cut off by death (22d October 1855), to the universal regret of his countrymen, for he had lived down the animosities of his youth, and had attracted to himself the sympathies of all thoughtful men. The influence which his views had acquired, and still retain, may be judged from the fact that in 1878 the delegates of the Transvaal Government put forward, as the chief argument for the withdrawal of the English from the Transvaal, the substance of his speech on the abandonment of the Orange River Territory in 1854. A full pedigree of the Molesworth family is printed in Sir John Maclean's Trigg Minor, vol. i.; the titles of his speeches and works*~~

~~*2 It may be urged that the cleavage of crystals indicates that they possess a molecular structure, but a tactical or pattern-like arrangement of atoms may easily be supposed to present planes of easier separation, without the assumption of really independent molecules.*~~

~~*may be found in the Bibl. Cornubiensis, vols. i. and iii. The name of Sir William Molesworth is frequently mentioned in the biographies of Mill, Cobden, Carlyle, Grote, and Panizzi.*~~

~~*MOLFETTA, a city and seaport of Italy, in the province of Bari, 16 miles by rail north-north-west of Bari. From the sea it presents a fine appearance with its white stone houses and the remains of its turreted walls; and there are several buildings of considerable pretensions. The castle was in the 14th century the prison of Otho, duke of Brunswick. The cathedral is dedicated to St Conrad. Molfetta has well-frequented markets, a small foreign trade (6000 tons in 1881), and such industries as cotton and net*~~

~~*weaving, soap-boiling, and rope-spinning. The population was 26,516 in 1871.*~~

~~*Molfetta (Melficta or Malfitum) was given by Charles V. to the duke of Termoli in 1522, and during his lordship it was grievously sacked by the French under Lautrec. In 1631 Cesare Gonzaga took the title of duke of Gnastalla and prince of Molfetta ; but in 1640 the fief was sold to the Spinola family, and in 1798 incorporated with the royal domain. The bishopric holds directly of the papal see.*~~

~~*MOLIERE (1622-1673), to give Jean Baptiste Poquelin the stage name which he chose, for some undiscovered reason, to assume, was born in Paris, probably in January 1622. The baptismal certificate which is usually, and almost with absolute certainty, accepted as his is dated 15th January 1622, but it is not possible to infer that he was born on the day of his christening. The exact place of his birth is also disputed, but it seems tolerably certain that he saw the light in a house of the Rue St Honoré. His father was Jean Poquelin, an upholsterer, who, in 1631, succeeded his own uncle as "valet tapissier de chambre du roi." The family of Poquelin came from Beauvais, where for some centuries they had been prosperous tradesmen. The legend of their Scotch descent seems to have been finally disproved by the researches of M. E. Révérend du Mesnil. The mother of Moliére was Marie Cressé; and on his father's side he was connected with the family of Mazuel, musicians attached to the court of France. In 1632 Moliére lost his mother ; his father married again in 1633. The father possessed certain shops in the covered Halle de la Foire, Saint Germain des Prés, and the biographers have imagined that Moliére might have received his first bent towards the stage from the spectacles offered to the holi- day people at the fair. Of his early education little is known ; but it is certain that his mother possessed a Bible and Plutarch's Lives, books which an intelligent child would not fail to study. In spite of a persistent tradition, there is no reason to believe that the later education of Moliére was neglected. 'Il fit ses humanitez au Collége de Clermont," says the brief life of the comedian published by his friend and fellow-actor, La Grange, in the edition of his works printed in 1682. La Grange adds that Moliére "eut l'advantage de suivre M. le Prince de Conti dans toutes ses classes." As Conti was seven years younger than Moliére, it is not easy to understand*~~

~~how Moliere came to be the school contemporary of the prince. Among more serious studies the Jesuit fathers encouraged their pupils to take part in ballets, and in later life Moliére was a distinguished master of this sort of enter- tainment. According to Grimarest, the first writer who published a life of Moliére in any detail (1705), he not only acquired "his humanities," but finished his " philo- sophy " in five years. He left the Collége de Clermont in 1641, the year when Gassendi, a great contemner of Aris- totle, arrived in Paris. The Logic and Lthics of Aristotle, with his Physics and Metaphysics, were the chief philoso- phical text-books at the Collége de Clermont. But when he became the pupil of Gassendi (in company with Cyrano de Bergerac, Chapelle, and Hesnaut), Moliére was taught to appreciate the atomic philosophy as taught by Lucretius. There seems no doubt that Moliére began, and almost or~~

~~quite finished, a translation of the De Natura Rerum. According to a manuscript note of Trallage, published by M. Paul Lacroix, the manuscript was sold by Moliére's widow to a bookseller. His philosophic studies left a deep mark on the genius of Moliére. In the Jugement de Pluton sur les deux Parties des Nouveaux Dialogues des Morts (1684), the verdict is "que Moliére ne parleroit point de Philosophie." To "talk philosophy" was a favourite exer- cise of his during his life, and his ideas are indicated with sufficient clearness in several of his plays. There seems no connexion between them and the opinions of '" Moliére le Critique" in a dialogue of that name, published in Hol- land in 1709. From his 'study of philosophy, too, he gained his knowledge of the ways of contemporary pedants, —of Pancrace the Aristotelian, of Marphorius the Carte- sian, of Trissotin, "qui s'attache pour lordre au Péripa- tétisme ", of Philaminte, who loves Platonism, of Belise, who relishes "les petits corps," and Armande, who loves "les tourbillons." Grimarest has an amusing anecdote of a controversy in which Moliére, defending Descartes, chose a lay-brother of a begging order for umpire, while Chapelle appealed to the same expert in favour of Gassendi. His college education over, Moliére studied law, and there is even evidence—that of tradition in Grimarest, and of Le Boulanger de Chalussay, the libellous author of a play called Elomire Hypochondre—to prove that he was actually called to the bar. More trustworthy is the pass-~~

~~*ing remark in La Grange's short biography (1682), "au sortir des écoles de droit, il choisit la profession de comé- dien." Before joining a troop of half-amateur comedians, however, Moliére had some experience in his father's busi- ness. In 1637 his father had obtained for him the right to succeed to his own office as "valet tapissier de chambre du roi." The document is mentioned in the inventory of Moliére's effects, taken after his death. When the king travelled the valet tapissier accompanied him to arrange the furniture of the royal quarters. There is very good reason to believe (Loiseleur, Points Obscurs, p. 94) that Moliére accompanied Louis XIII. as his valet tapissier to Provence in 1642. It is even not impossible that Moliére was the young valet de chambre who concealed Cinq Mars just before his arrest at Narbonne, 13th June 1642. But this is part of the romance rather than of the history of Moliére. Our next glimpse of the comedian we get in a document of 6th January 1643. Moliére acknowledges the receipt of money due to him from his deceased mother's estate, and gives up his claim to succeed his father as 'valet de chambre du roi." On 28th December of the same year we learn, again from documentary evidence, that Jean Baptiste Poquelin, with Joseph Béjard, Madeleine Béjard, Geneviéve Béjard, and others, have hired a tennis-court, and fitted it up as a stage for dramatic performances. The company called themselves L'Illustre Théatre, //ustre being then almost a slang word, very freely employed by the writers of the period.*~~

~~*We now reach a very important point in the private history of Moliére, which it is necessary to discuss at some length in defence of the much maligned character of a great writer and a good man. Moliére's connection with the family of Béjard brought him much unhappiness. The father of this family, Joseph Béjard the elder, was a needy man with eleven children at least. His wife's name was Marie Hervé. The most noted of his children, com- panions of Moliére, were Joseph, Madeleine, Genevieve, and Armande. Of these, Madeleine was a woman of great talent as an actress, and Moliére's friend, or perhaps mis- tress, through all the years of his wanderings. Now, on ° 14th February 1662 (for we must here leave the chrono- logical order of events), Moliére married Armande Claire Elisabeth Grésinde Béjard. His enemies at that time,*~~

~~*won T Tf BE*~~

~~*and a number of his biographers in our own day, have attempted to prove that Armande Béjard was not the sister, but the daughter of Madeleine, and even that Moliére's wife may have been his own daughter by Madeleine Béjard. The arguments of M. Arsene Houssaye in sup- port of this abominable theory are based on reckless and ignorant confusions, and do not deserve criticism. But the system of M. Loiseleur is more serious, and he goes no further than the idea that Madeleine was the mother of Armande. This, certainly, was the opinion of tradition, an opinion based on the slanders of Montfleury, a rival of Moliére's, on the authority of the spiteful and anonymous author of La Fameuse Comédienne (1688), and on the no less libellous play, Llomire Hypochondre. In 1821 tradition received a shock, for Beffara then discovered Moliére's "'acte de mariage," in which Armande, the bride,*~~

~~*is spoken of as the sister of Madeleine Béjard, by the same'*~~

~~*father and mother. The old scandal, or part of it, was revived by M. Fournier and M. Bazin, but received another blow in 1863, M. Soulié then discovered a legal document of 10th March 1643, in which the widow of Joseph Béjard renounced, in the name of herself and her children, his inheritance, chiefly a collection of unpaid bills. Now in this document all the children are described as minors, and among them is "une petite non encore baptisée." This little girl, still not christened in March 1643, is universally recognized as the Armande Béjard afterwards married by Moliere. We reach this point, then, that when Armande was an infant she was acknowledged as the sister, not as the daughter, of Madeleine Béjard. M. Loiseleur refuses, how- ever, to accept this evidence. already become the mother, in 1638, of a daughter by Esprit Raymond de Moirmoron, comte de Modéne, and chamberlain of Gaston duc d'Orléans, brother of Louis XII. In 1642 Modéne, who had been exiled for political reasons, "was certain to return, for Richelieu had just died, and Louis XIII. was likely to follow him." Now Madeleine was again—this is M. Loiseleur's hypothesis— about to become a mother, and if Modéne returned, and learned this fact, he would not continue the liaison, still less would he marry her,—which, by the way, he could not do, as his wife was still alive. Madeleine, therefore, induced her mother to acknowledge the little girl as her own child. In the first place, all this is pure unsupported hypothesis. In the second place, it*~~

~~*has always been denied that Béjard's wife could have been a mother in 1643, owing to her advanced age, probably fifty-three. But M. Loise- leur himself says that Marie Hervé was young enough to make the story "sufficiently probable." If it was probable, much more was it possible. M. Loiseleur supports his contention by pointing out that two of the other children, described as legally minors, were over twenty-five, and that their age was understated to make the account of Armande's birth more probable. Nothing is less likely than that Modéne would have consulted this document to ascertain the truth about the parentage of Armande, yet M. Loise leur's whole theory rests on that extreme improbability. It must also be observed that the date of the birth of Joseph Béjard is unknown, and he may have been, and according to M. Jal (Dictionnaire Critique, p. 178) must have been, a minor when he was so described in the docu- ment of 10th March 1643, while Madeleine had only passed her twenty-fifth birthday, her legal majority, by two months. This view of Joseph's age is supported by Bouquet (Afoliére & Rouen, p. 77). M. Loiseleur's only other proof is that Marie Hervé gave Armande a respectable dowry, and that, as we do not know whence the money came, it must have come from Madeleine. 'The tradition in Grimarest, which makes Madeleine behave en femme furteuse, when she heard of the marriage, is based on a juster appreciation of the*~~

~~*Madeleine, says he, had |*~~

~~*625*~~

~~*character of women. It will be' admitted, probably, that the reasons for supposing that Moliére espoused the daughter of a woman who had been his mistress (if she had been his mistress) are flimsy and inadequate. The affair of the dowry is insisted on by M. Livet (La Fameuse Comédienne, reprint of 1877, p. 143). But M. Livet explains the dowry by the hypothesis that Armande was the daughter of Madeleine and the comte de Modéne, which exactly con- tradicts the theory of M. Loiseleur, and is itself contra- dicted by dates, at least as understood by M. Loiseleur. Such are the conjectures by which the foul calumnies of Moliére's enemies are supported in the essays of modern French critics,*~~

~~*To return to the order of events, Moliére passed the year 1643 in playing with, and helping to manage, the Théatre lustre. The company acted in various tennis- courts, with very little success. Molitre was actually arrested by the tradesman who supplied candles, and the company had to borrow money from one Aubrey to release their leader from the Grand Chatelet (13th August 1645). The process of turning a tennis-court into a theatre was somewhat expensive, even though no seats were provided in the pit. The troupe was for a short time under the protection of the duc d'Orléans, but his favours were not lucrative. The duc de Guise, according to some verses printed in 1646, made Moliére a present of his cast-off wardrobe. But costume was not enough to draw the public to the tennis-court theatre of the Croix Noire, and empty houses at last obliged the Théatre Ilustre to leave Paris at the end of 1646.*~~

~~*"Nul animal vivant n'entra dans nétre salle," says the author of the scurrilous play on Moliére, Llomire Hypo- chondre. But at that time some dozen travelling companies found means to exist in the provinces, and Moliére deter- mined to play among the rural towns. 'The career of a strolling player is much the same at all times and in all countries. The Roman Comique of Scarron gives a vivid picture of the adventures and misadventures, the difficulty of transport, the queer cavalcade of horses, mules, and lumbering carts that drag the wardrobe and properties, the sudden metamorphosis of the tennis-court, where the balls have just been rattling, into a stage, the quarrels with local squires, the disturbed nights in crowded country inns, all the loves and wars of a troupe on the march. Perrault tells us what the arrangements of the theatre were in Moliére's early time. Tapestries were hung round the stage, and entrances and exits were made by struggling through the heavy curtains, which often knocked off the hat of the comedian, or gave a strange cock to the helmet of a warrior or a god. The lights were candles stuck in tin sconces at the back and sides, but luxury sometimes went so far that a chandelier of four candles was suspended from the roof. At intervals the candles were let down by a rope and pulley, and any one within easy reach snuffed them with his fingers. A flute and tambour, or two fiddlers, supplied the music. The highest prices were paid for seats in the dedans (cost of admission fivepence) ; for the privilege of standing up in the pit twopence-halfpenny*~~

~~*was the charge. The doors were opened at one o'clock, the curtain rose at two.*~~

~~*The nominal director of the Théatre Illustre in the provinces was Du Fresne; the most noted actors were Moliére, the Béjards, and Du Parc, called Gros René. It is extremely difficult to follow exactly the line of march of the company. They played at Bordeaux, for example, but the date of this performance, when Moliére (according to Montesquieu) failed in tragedy and was pelted, is variously given as 1644-45 (Trallage), 1647 (Loiseleur), 1648-58 (Lacroix). Perhaps the theatre prospered' better else- where than in Paris, where the streets were barricaded in*~~

~~*SOWIE esac)*~~

~~*626*~~

~~*these early days of the war of the Fronde. We find Moliére at Nantes in 1648, at Fontenay-le-Compte, and in the spring of 1649 at Agen, Toulouse, and probably at Angouléme and Limoges. In January 1650 they played at Narbonne, and between 1650 and 1653 Lyons was the headquarters of the troupe. In January 1653, or perhaps 1655, Moliére gave L'Ztourdi at Lyons, the first of his finished pieces, as contrasted with the slight farces with which he generally diverted a country audience. It would be interesting to have the precise date of this piece, but La Grange (1682) says that "in 1653 Moliére went to Lyons, where he gave his first comedy, L'Etourdi," while in his Registre La Grange enters the year as 1655. At Lyons De Brie and his wife, the famous Mlle. de Brie, entered the troupe, and Du Parc married marquise de Gorla, better known as Mlle. du Parc. The libellous author of La Fameuse Comédienne reports that Moliére's heart was the shuttlecock of the beautiful Du Pare and De Brie, and the tradition has a persistent life. Moliére's own opinion of the ladies and men of his company may be read be- tween the lines of his Impromptu de Versailles. In 1653 Prince de Conti, after many political adventures, was residing at La Grange, near Pézénas, in Languedoc, and chance brought him into relations with his old school-fellow Moliére. Conti had for first gentleman of his bed- chamber the abbé Daniel de Cosnac, whose memoirs now throw light for a moment on the fortunes of the wander- ing troupe. Cosnac engaged the company " of Moliére and of La Béjart;" but another company, that of Cormier, nearly*~~

~~*intercepted the favour of the prince. Thanks to the resolu- tion of Cosnac, Moliére was given one chance of appearing on the private theatre of La Grange. The excellence of his acting, the splendour of the costumes, and the insist- ence of Cosnac, and of Sarrasin, Conti's secretary, gained the day for Moliére, and a pension was assigned to his company (Cosnac, Afémoires, i. 128, Paris, 1852), As Cosnac proposed to pay Moliére a thousand crowns of his own money to recompense him in case he was supplanted by Cormier, it is obvious that his profession had become sufficiently lucrative. In 1654, during the session of the estates of Languedoc, Moliére and his company played at Montpellier, Here Moliére danced in a ballet (Le Ballet des Incompatibles) in which a uumber of men of rank took part, according to the fashion of the time. Moliére's own voles were those of the Poet and the Fishwife. The sport of the little piece is to introduce opposite characters, dancing and singing together. Silence dances with six women, Truth with four courtiers, Money with a poet, and so forth. Whether the ballet, or any parts of it, are by Moliere, is still disputed (Za Jeunesse de Moliére, suivie du Ballet des Incompatibles, P. L. Jacob, Paris, 1858). In April 1655 it is certain that the troupe was at Lyons, where they met and hospitably entertained a profligate butfoon, Charles d'Assoucy, who informs the ages that Moliére kept open house, and "ane table bien garnie." November 1655 found Moliere at Pézénas, where the estates of Languedoc were convened, and where local tradition points out the barber's chair in which the poet used to sit and study character. The longest of Moliére's extant autographs is a receipt, dated at Pézénas, 4th Feb- ruary 1656, for 6000 livres, granted by the estates of Languedoc. This year was notable for the earliest repre- sentation, at Béziers, of Moliére's second finished comedy, the Dépit Amoureux. Conti now withdrew to Paris, and began to "make his soul," as the Irish say. Almost his first act of penitence was to discard Moliére's troupe (1657), which consequently found that the liberality of the estates of Languedoc was dried up for ever. Conti's relations with Moliére must have definitively closed long before 1666, when the now pious prince wrote a treatise against the*~~

~~*stage, and especially charged his old schoolfellow with keeping a new school, a school of atheism (Traité de la Comédie, p. 24, Paris, 1666).*~~

~~*Moliere was now (1657) independent of princes and their favour. He went ona new circuit to Nismes, Orange, and Avignon, where he met another old class-mate, Chapelle, and also encountered the friend of his later life, the painter Mignard. After a later stay at Lyons, ending with a piece given for the benefit of the poor on 27th February 1658, Moliére passed to Grenoble, returned to Lyons, and is next found in Rouen, where, we should have said, the Théatre Illustre had played in 1643 (F. Bouquet, La Troupe de Moliére & Rouen, p. 90, Paris, 1880). At Rouen Moliére must have made or renewed the acquaintance of Pierre and Thomas Cor- neille. His company had played pieces by Corneille at Lyons and elsewhere. The real business of the comedian in Rouen was to prepare his return to Paris. 'After several secret journeys thither he was fortunate enough to secure the patronage of Monsieur, the king's only brother, who granted him his protection, and permitted the company to take his name, presenting them as his servants to the king and the queen-mother" (Preface to La Grange's edition of 1682). The troupe appeared for the first time before Louis XIV. in a theatre arranged in the old Louvre (24th October 1658).*~~

~~*Moliére was now thirty-six years ofage. He had gained all the experience that fifteen years of practice could give. He had seen men and cities, and noted all the humours of rural and civic France. He was at the head of a company which, as La Grange, his friend and comrade, says, "sin- cerely loved him." He had the unlucrative patronage of a great prince to back him, and the jealousy of all play- wrights, and of the old theatres of the Hétel de Bourgogne . and the Marais, to contend against. In this struggle we can follow him by aid of the Registre of La Grange (a brief diary of receipts and payments), and by the help of notices in the rhymed chronicles of Loret.*~~

~~*The first appearance of Moliére before the king was all but a failure. Nicoméde, by the elder Corneille, was the piece, and we may believe that the actors of the Hotel de Bourgogne, who were present, found much to criticize. When the play was over, Moliére came forward and asked the king's permission to act "one of the little pieces with which he had been used to regale the provinces." The Docteur Amoureux, one of several slight comedies admitting of much "gag," was then performed, and 'diverted as much as it surprised the audience." The king commanded that the troupe*~~

~~*should establish itself in Paris (Preface, ed. 1682). The theatre assigned to the company was a salle in the Petit Bourbon, in a line with the present Rue du Louvre. Some Italian players already occupied the house on Tuesdays, Fridays, and Sundays; the company of Moliére played on the other days. The first piece played in the new house (3d Nov. 1658) was L'Etowrd:. La Grange says the comedy had a great success, producing seventy pistoles for each actor. The success is admitted even by the spiteful author of Llomire Hypochondre (Paris, BN ee Je jouai l'Etourdi, qui fat une merveille."*~~

~~*The success, however, is attributed to the farcical element in the play and the acting—the cuckoo cry of Moliére's detractors. The original of Z'Ltourd: is the Italian comedy (1629) L'Inavvertito, by Nicold Barbieri detto Beltrame ; Moliére pushed rather far his right to "take his own wherever he found it." Had he written nothing more original, the contemporary critic of the Irestin de Pierre might have said, not untruly, that he only excelled im stealing pieces from the Italians. The piece is conventional : the stock characters of the prodigal son, the impudent valet, the old father occupy the stage. But the dialogue*~~

~~*MOLT ER E 627*~~

~~*has amazing rapidity, and the vivacity of M. Coquelin in Mascarille still makes Z'HItourdi a favourite on the stage, though it cannot be read with very much pleasure. The next piece, new in Paris, though not in the provinces, was the Dépit Amoureux (first acted at Béziers, 1656). The play was not less successful than L'Etourdi. It has two parts, one an Italian imbroglio; the other, which alone keeps the stage, is the original work of Moliére, though, of course, the idea of amantium ire is as old as literature. 'Nothing so good," says Mr. Saintsbury, "had yet been seen on the French stage, as the quarrels and reconciliations of the quartette of master, mistress, valet, and soubrette." Even the hostile Le Boulanger de Chalussay (Zlomire Hypochondre) admits that the audience was much of this opinion — ** Et de tous les cdtés chacun cria tout haut, 'Cest la faire et jouer les piéces comme il faut.' "*~~

~~*The same praise was given, perhaps even more deservedly, to Les Précieuses eidicules(18th November 1659). Doubtshave been raised as to whether this famous piece, the first true comic satire of contemporary*~~

~~*foibles on the French stage, was a new play. La Grange calls it piéce nouvelle in his Registre, but, as he enters it as the third piece nowvelle, he may only mean that, like L'Ltourdi, it was new to Paris. The short life of 1682, produced under La Grange's care, and probably written by Marcel the actor, says the Précieuses was "made" in 1659. There is another contro- versy as to whether the ladies of the Hétel Rambouillet, or merely their bowrgeoises and rustic imitators, were laughed at. Ménage, in later years at least, professed to recognize an attack on the over-refinement and affectation of the original and, in most ways, honourable précieuses of the Hotel Ram- . bouillet. But Chapelle and Bachaumont had discovered provincial précceuses, hyper-esthetic literary ladies, at Mont- pellier before Moliére's return to Paris; and Furetiére, in the Roman Bourgeois (1666), found Paris full of middle- class précteuses, who had survived, or, like their modern counterparts, had thriven on ridicule. Another question is—Did Molitre copy from the earlier Précieuses of the abbé de Pure? This charge of plagiarism is brought by Somaize, in the preface to his Véritables Précieuses. De Pure's work was a novel (1656), from which the Italian actors had put together an acting piece in their manner, that is, a thing of "gag," and improvized speeches. The reproach is interesting only because it proves how early Moliére found enemies who, like Thomas Corneille in 1659, accused him of being skilled only in farce, or, like Somaizc, charged him with literary larceny. These were the stock criticisms of Moliére's opponents as long as he lived. The success of the Précieuses Ridicules was immense; on one famous occasion the king was a spectator, leaning against the great chair of the dying Cardinal Mazarin. The play can never cease to please while literary affectation exists, and it has a comic force of deathless energy. Yet a modern reader may spare some sympathy for the poor heroines, who do not wish, in courtship, to "begin with marriage," but prefer first to have some less formidable acquaintance with their wooers. Moliére's next piece was less important, and more purely farcical, Sganarelle ; ou le Cocu Imagin- aire (28th May 1660). The public taste preferred a work of this light nature, and Sganarelle was played every year as long as Moliére lived. The play was pirated by a man who pretended to have retained all the words in his memory. The counterfeit copy was published by Ribou, a double injury to Moliére, as, once printed, any company might act the play. With his habitual good-nature, Moliére not*~~

~~*only allowed Ribou to publish later works of his, but actually lent money to that knave (Soulié, Mecherches, p. 287).*~~

~~*On llth October 1660 the Théatre du Petit Bourbon was demolished by the superintendent of works, without*~~

~~*notice given to the company. The king gave Moliére the Salle du Palais Royal, but the machinery of the old theatre was maliciously destroyed. Meanwhile the older companies of the Marais and the Hotel de Bourgogne attempted to lure away Moliére's troupe, but, as La Grange declares (Registre, p. 26), "all the actors loved their chief, who united to extraordinary genius an honourable character and charming manner, which compelled them all to protest that they would never leave him, but always share his for- tunes." While the new theatre was being put-in order, the company played in the houses of the great, and before the king at the Louvre. In their new house (originally built by Richelieu) Moliére began to play on 20th J anuary 1661. Moliére now gratified his rivals by a failure. Don Garcie de Navarre, a heavy tragi-comedy, which had long lain among his papers, was first represented on 4th February 1661. Either Moliére was a poor actor outside comedy, or his manner was not sufficiently "stagy," and, as he says, "'demoniac," for the taste of the day. His opponents were determined that he could not act in tragi-comedy, and he, in turn, burlesqued their pretentious and exaggerated manner in a later piece. In the Préciewses (sc. ix.) Molidre had already rallied "les grands comédiens" of the Hotel Bourgogne. "Les autres," he makes Mascarille say about his own troupe, "sont des ignorants qui récitent comme l'on parle, ils ne savent pas faire ronfler les vers." All this was likely to irritate the grands comédiens, and their friends, who avenged themselves on that unfortunate jealous prince, Don Garcic de Navarre. The subject of this unsuccessful drama is one of many examples which show how Moliére's mind was engaged with the serious or comic aspects of jealousy, a passion which he had soon cause to know most intimately. Meantime the everyday life of the stage went on, and the doorkeeper of the Théatre St. Germain was wounded by some revellers who tried to force their way into the house (La Grange, Registre). A year later, an Italian actor was stabbed in front of Moliére's house, where he had sought to take shelter (Campardon, Vouwvelles Piéces, p. 20). To these dangers actors were peculiarly subject : Mohire himself*~~

~~was frequently threatened by the marquises and others whose class he ridiculed on the stage, and there seems even reason to believe that there is some truth in the story of the angry marquis who rubbed the poet's head against his buttons, thereby cutting his face severely. The story comes late (1725) into his biography, but is supported by a passage in the contemporary play, Zélinde (Paris, 1663, scene viiil.). Before Easter, Moliére asked for two shares in the profits of his company, one for himself, and one for his wife, if he married. That fatal step was already contemplated (La Grange). On 24th June he brought out for the first time L' Ecole des Maris. The general idea of the piece is as old as Menander, and Molitre was promptly accused of pilfering from the Adelphi of Terence. One of the jficelles of the comedy is borrowed from a story as old, at least, as Boccaccio, and still amusing in a novel by Charles de Bernard. It is significant of Moliére's talent that the grotesque and baffled paternal wooer, Sganarelle, like several other butts in Moliére's comedy, does to a certain extent win our sympathy and pity as well as our laughter. The next new piece was Les Mascheux, a comédie- ballet, the Comedy of Bores, played before the king at Fouquet's house at Vaux le Vicomte (August 15-20, 1661). The comedians, without knowing it, were perhaps the real "fascheux" on this occasion, for Fouquet was absorbed in the schemes of his insatiable ambition (Quo non ascendam ? says his motto), and the king was organizing the arrest and fall of Fouquet, his rival in the affections of La Vallitre. The author of the prologue to Les Fascheus, Pellisson, a friend of Fouquet's, was arrested along with the superintendent of finance. Pellisson's prologue and~~

~~628~~

~~name were retained in later editions. In the dedication to the king Moliére says that Louis suggested one scene (that of the Sportsman), and in another place he mentions that the piece was written, rehearsed, and played in a fortnight. The fundamental idea of the play, the inter- ruptions by bores, is suggested by a satire of Régnier's, and that by a satire of Horace. Perhaps it may have been the acknowledged suggestions of the king which made gossips declare that Moliére habitually worked up hints and mémotres given him by persons of quality (ouvelles Nouvelles, 1663).~~

~~*In February 1662 Moliére married Armande Béjard. The date is given thus in the Registre of La Grange: "Mardy 14, Les Visionnaires, L'Ecol des M.*~~

~~*Part. Visite chez M* d'Equeuilly."*~~

~~*And on the margin he has painted a blue circle, his way of recording a happy event, with the words, "mariage de M. de Moliére au sortir de la Visite." M. Loiseleur gives the date in one passage as 29th February, in another as 20th February. But La Grange elsewhere mentions the date as "Shrove Tuesday," which was, it seems, 14th February. Elsewhere M. Loiseleur makes the date of the marriage a vague day "in January." The truth is that the marriage contract is dated 23d January 1662 (Soulié, Documents, p. 203). Where it is so difficult to establish the date of the marriage, a simple fact, it must be infinitely harder to dis- cover the truth as to the conduct of Madame Moliere. The abominable assertions of the anonymous libel, Les Intragues de Moliére et celles de sa Femme; ou la Fameuse Comédienne (1688), have found their way into tradition, and are accepted by many biographers. But M. Livet and M. Bazin have proved that the alleged lovers of Madame Moliere were actually absent from France, or from the court, at the time when they are reported, in the libel, to have conquered her heart. A conversation between Chapelle and Moliére, in which the comedian is made to tell the story of his wrongs, is plainly a mere fiction, and is answered in Grimarest byanother dialogue between Moliére and Rohault, in which Moliére only complains of a jealousy which he knows to be unfounded. It is noticed, too, that the con- temporary assailants of Moliére counted him among jealous, but not among deceived, husbands. The hideous accusation brought by the actor Montfleury, that Moliére had married his own daughter, Louis XIV. answered by becoming the godfather of Moliére's child. The king, indeed, was a firm friend of the actor, and, when Moliére was accused of impiety on the production of Don Juan (1665), Louis gave him a pension. We need not try to make Madame Moliere a vertu, as French ladies of the theatre say, but it is certain that the charges against her are unsubstantiated. It is generally thought that Moliére drew her portrait in Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme, acte iii. sc. ix., "elle est capri- cieuse, mais on souffre tout des Belles."*~~

~~*From 1662 onwards Moliére suffered the increasing hatred of his rival actors. La Grange mentions the visit of Floridor and Montfleury to the queen-mother, and their attempt to obtain equal favour, "la troupe de Moliére leur donnant beaucoup de jalouzie" (12th August 1662). On 26th December was played for the first time the admirable Hcole des Femmes, which provoked a literary war, and caused a shower of "paper bullets of the brain." The innocence of Agnes was called indecency ; the sermon of Arnolphe was a deliberate attack on Christian mysteries. We have not the space to discuss the religious ideas of Moliére ; but both in Z'Ecole des Femmes and in Don Juan he does display a bold contempt for the creed of " boiling chaldrons" and of a physical hell. A brief list of the plays and pamphlets provoked by L'Zcole des Femmes is all we can offer in this place.*~~

~~*December 26, 1662,—Ecole des Femmes.*~~

~~*MOLIERE*~~

~~*February 9, 1663.—Nowvelles Nowvelles, by De Vise. Moliere is*~~

~~*accused of pilfering from Straparola.*~~

~~*June 1, 1663.—Moliere's own piece, Critique de V Ecole des Femmes. In this play Moliere retorts on the critics, and especially on his favourite butt, the critical marquis.*~~

~~*August 1663.—Zélinde, a play by De Visé, is printed. The scene is in the shop of a seller of lace, where persons of quality meet, and attack the reputation of "Hlomire," that is, Moliére. He steals from the Italian, the Spanish, from Fureti¢re's Franeion, 'il lit tous les vieux bouquins," he insults the nodlesse, he insults Christianity, and so forth.*~~

~~*November 17, 1663.—Portrait du Peintre is printed,—an attack on Moliére by Boursault. This piece is a detailed eritieism, by several persons, of L'Eeole des Femmes. It is pronouneed dull, vulgar, farcical, obscene, and (what chiefly vexed Moliére, who knew the danger of the accusation) impious. Perhaps the only biograph- ieal matter we gain from Boursault's play is the interesting faet that Moliére was a tennis-player. On 4th November 1663 Moliere replied with Z'Impromptu de Versailles, a witty*~~

~~*and merciless attack on his critics, in which Boursault was mentioned by name. The actors of the Hétel de Bourgogne were parodied on the stage, and their art was ridiculed.*~~

~~*The next scenes in this comedy of comedians were :—*~~

~~*November 30.—The Panégyrique del' Ecole des Femmes, by Robinet.*~~

~~*December 7.—Réponse & Impromptu; ow la Vengeance des Mar- quis, by De Visé.*~~

~~*January 19, 1664.—L' Impromptu de 0 H6tel de Condé. reply by a son of Montfleury. 6*~~

~~*March 17, 1664.—La Guerre Comigue ; ow Défense de ' Ecole des Femmes.*~~

~~*1664.—Lettre sur les Affaires du Thédtre, published in Diversités Galantes, by the author of Zélinde.*~~

~~*In all those quarrels the influence of Corneille was opposed to Moliére, while his cause was espoused by Boileau, a useful ally, when "les comédiens et les auteurs, depuis le cédre [Corneille ?] jusqu'a Vhysope, sont diable- ment animés contre lui" (Impromptu de Versailles, scéne v.).*~~

~~*Moliére's next piece was Le Mariage Forcé (15th Feb- ruary 1664), a farce with a ballet. The comic character of the reluctant bridegroom excites contemptuous pity, as well as laughter. From the end of April till 22d May the troupe was at Versailles, acting among the picturesque pleasures of that great festival of the king's. The Princesse ad' Elide was acted for the first time, and the three first acts of Z'artujfe were given. Moliére's natural hatred of hypocrisy had not been diminished by the charges of blas- phemy which were showered on him after the "cole des Femmes. Tartuffe made enemies everywhere. Jansenists and Jesuits, like the two marquises in L'Impromptu de Versailles, each thought the others were aimed at. Five years passed before Moliére got permission to play the whole piece in public. In the interval it was acted before Madame, Condé, the legate, and was frequently read by Moliére in private houses. The Gazette of 17th May*~~

~~1664 (a paper hostile to Molitre) says that the king thought the piece inimical to religion. Louis was not at that time on good terms with the dévots, whom his amours scandal- ized; but, not impossibly, the queen-mother (then suffering from her fatal malady) disliked the play. A most violent attack on Moliére, 'that demon clad in human flesh," was written by one Pierre Roullé (Le Roy Glorieux au Monde, Paris, 1664). This fierce pamphlet was suppressed, but the king's own copy, in red morocco with the royal arms, remains to testify to the bigotry of the author, who was curé of Saint Barthélemy. According to Roullé, Moliére deserved to be sent through earthly to eternal fires. The play was prohibited, as we have seen, but in August 1665 the king adopted Moliére's troupe as his servants, and gave them the title of "'troupe duroy." This, however, did not cause Moliére to relax his efforts to obtain permission for Tartuffe (or Tartufe, or Tartufle, as it was variously spelled), and his perseverance was at length successful. That his thoughts were busy with contemporary hypocrisy is proved by certain scenes in one of his greatest pieces, the Mestun de Pierre, or Don Juan (15th February 1665). The legend of Don Juan was familiar already on the Spanish, Italian,~~

~~It is a~~

~~and French stages. Moliére made it a new thing: terrible | got the king's promise that he would reconsider the matter~~

~~and roniantic in its portrait of wn grand seigneur mauwvais homme, modern in its suggested substitution of la humanité for religion, comic, even among his comedies, by the mirth- ful character of Sganarelle. The piece filled the theatre, but was stopped, probably by authority, after Easter. It was not printed by Moliére, and even in 1682 the publi- cation of the full text was not permitted. Happily the copy of De la Regnie, the chief of the police, escaped obliterations, and gave us the full scene of Don Juan and the Beggar. The piece provoked a virulent criticism (Observations sur le Festin de Pierre, 1665). It is allowed that Moliére has some farcical talent, and is not unskilled as a plagiarist, but he "attacks the interests of~~

~~*Heaven," "keeps a school of infidelity," "insults the king," "cor- rupts virtue," 'offends the queen-mother," and so forth. Two replies were published, one of which is by some critics believed to show traces of the hand of Moliére. The king's reply, as has been shown, was to adopt Moliére's company as his servants, and to pension them. JL'Amour Médecin, a light comedy, appeared 22d September 1665. In this piece Moliére, for the second time, attacked physicians. In December there was a quarrel with Racine about his play of Alexandre, which he treacherously transferred to the Hétel de Bourgogne. June 4, 1666 saw the first repre- sentation of that famous play, Le Misanthrope (ou L'Atra- biliavre Amoureur, as the original second title ran). This piece, perhaps the masterpiece of Moliére, was more suc- cessful with the critics, with the court, and with posterity than with the public. The rival comedians called it "a new style of comedy," and so it was. The eternal passions and sentiments of human nature, modified by the influence of the utmost refinement of civilization, were the matter of the piece. The school for scandal kept by Céliméne, with its hasty judgments on all characters, gave the artist a wide canvas. The perpetual strife between the sensible optimism of a kindly man of the world (Philinte) and the seva rndignatio of a noble nature soured (Alceste) sup- plies the intellectual action. The humours of the joyously severe Céliméne and of her court, especially of that death- less minor poet Oronte, supply the lighter comedy. Boileau, Lessing, Goethe have combined to give this piece the highest rank even among the comedies of Moliére. As to the "keys" to the characters, and the guesses about the original from whom Alceste was drawn, they are as value- less as other contemporary tattle.*~~

~~*A briefer summary must be given of the remaining years of the life of Moliére. The attractions of Le Misanthrope were reinforced (6th August) by those of the Médecin Malgré Lui, an amusing farce founded on an old fabliau. In December the court and the comedians went to Saint Germain, where, among other diversions, the pieces called Meélwerte, La Pastorale Comique (of which Moliére is said to have destroyed the MS.), and the charming little piece Le Sicilien, were performed. A cold and fatigue seem to have injured the health of Moliere, and we now hear of the consumptive tendency which was cruelly ridiculed in Elomire Hypochondre. Moliére was doubtless obliged to see too much of the distracted or pedantic physicians*~~

~~*of an age when medicine was the battlefield of tradition, super- stition, and nascent chemical science. On 17th April 1667 Robinet, the rhyming gazetteer, says that the life of Moliére was thought to be in danger. On the 10th of June, however, he played in Le Stcilien before the town. In the earlier months of 1667 Louis XIV. was with the army in Flanders. There were embassies sent from the comedy to the camp, and on 5th August it was apparent that Molitre had overcome the royal scruples. Tartuffe was played, but Lamoignon stopped it after the first night. La Grange and La Torilliere hastened to the camp, and*~~

~~*on his return. Moliére's next piece (13th January 1668) was Amphitryon, a free—a very free—adaptation from Plautus, who then seems to have engaged his attention, for not long afterwards he again borrowed from the ancient writer in Z'Avare. There is a controversy as to whether Amphitryon was meant to ridicule M. de Montespan, the husband of the new mistress of Louis XIV. Michelet has a kind of romance based on this probably groundless hypo- thesis. The king still saw the piece occasionally, after he had purged himself and forsworn sack under Madame de Maintenon, and probably neither he nor that devout lady detected any personal references in the coarse and witty comedy, As usual, Moliére was accused of plagiarizing, this time from Rotrou, who had also imitated Plautus. The next play was the immortal George Dandin (10th July), first played at a festival at Versailles. Probably the piece was a rapid palimpsest on the ground of one of his old farces, but the addition of these typical members of a county family, the De Sotenville, raises the work from farce to satiric comedy. The story is borrowed from Boccaccio, but is of unknown age, and always new, —Adolphus Crosbie in The Small House at Allington being a kind of modern George Dandin. Though the sad fortunes of this peasant with social ambition do not fail to make us pity him some- what, it is being too refined to regard George Dandin as a comedy with a concealed tragic intention. Moliére must have been at work on L'Avare before George Dandin appeared, for the new comedy after Plautus was first acted on 9th September. There is a tradition that the piece almost failed ; but, if unpopular in the first year of its pro- duction, it certainly gained favour before the death of its author. Jf. de Pourceaugnac (17th September 1669) was first acted at Chambord, for the amusement of the king. It is a rattling farce. The physicians, as usual, bore the brunt of Moliére's raillery, some of*~~

~~which is still applicable. Earlier in 1669 (5th February) Zartuffe was played at last, with extraordinary success. Les Amants Magnifiques, a comedy-ballet, was acted first at Saint Germain (10th February 1670). The king might have been expected to dance in the ballet, but from Racine's Britannicus (138th December 1669) the majestical monarch learned that Nero was blamed for exhibitions of this kind, and he did not wish to out-Nero Nero. Astrology this time took the place of medicine as a butt, but the satire has become obsolete, except, perhaps, in Turkey, where astrology is still a power. The Bourgeois Gentilhomme, too familiar to require analysis, was first played on 23d October 1770. The lively Fourberies de Scapin 'saw the footlights" (if footlights there were) on 24th May 1671, and on 7th May we read in La Grange, "'les Repetitions de Spsyche ont commancé." La Grange says the theatre was newly decorated and fitted with machines. A "concert of twelve violins" was also provided, the company being resolute to have everything handsome about them. New singers were introduced, who did not refuse to sing un- masked on the stage. Quinault composed the words for the music, which was by Lulli; Moliére and Pierre Corneille collaborated in the dialogue of this magnificent opera, the name of which (Psyche) La Grange eventually learned how to spell. The Comtesse d'Escarbagnas (2d February 1672) was another piece for the amusement of the court, and made part of an entertainment called Le Ballet des Ballets. In this play, a study of provincial manners, Moliére attacked the financiers of the time in the person of M. Harpin. The comedy has little importance compared with Les Femmes Savantes (11th February), a severer Pré-cieuses, in which are satirized the vanity and affectation of sciolists, pedants, and the women who admire them. The satire is never out of date, and finds its modern form in~~

~~Le Monde o% Von s'ennuie, by M. Pailleron. On the 17th February Madeleine Béjard died, and was buried at St Paul. She did not go long before her old friend or lover, Moliére. His Jfariage Forcé, founded, perhaps, on a famous anecdote of De Gramont, was played on 8th July. On 7th August La Grange notes that Moliére was indisposed, and there was no comedy. Moliére's son died on the 11th October. On 22d November the preparations for the Malade Imaginaire were begun. On 10th Feb- ruary~~

~~*1673 the piece was acted for the first time. What occurred on 17th February we translate from the Registre of La Grange :—*~~

~~*"This same day, about ten o'clock at night, after the comedy, Monsieur de Moliére died in his house, Rue de Richelieu. He had played the part of the said Malade, suffering much from cold and inflammation, which caused a violent cough. In the violence of the cough he burst a vessel in his body, and did not live more than half an hour or three-quarters after the bursting of the vessel. His body is buried at St Joseph's, parish of St Eustache. There is a gravestone raised about a foot above the ground."*~~

~~*Moliére's funeral is thus described in a letter, said to be by an eye-witness, discovered by M. Benjamin Fillon :—*~~

~~*"Tuesday, 21st February, about nine in the evening, was buried Jean Baptiste Poquelin Moliere, tapissier valet du chambre, and a famous actor. There was no procession, except three ecclesiastics ; four priests bore the body in a wooden bier covered with a pall, six children in blue carried candles in silver holders, and there were lackeys with burning torches of wax. The body… was taken to St Joseph's churchyard, and buried at the foot of the cross. There was a great crowd, and some twelve hundred livres were distributed among the poor. The archbishop had given orders that Moliere should be interred without any ceremony, and had even forbidden the clergy of the diocese to do any service for him. Nevertheless a number of masses were commanded to be said for the deceased."*~~

~~*When an attempt was made to exhume the body of Moliére in 1792, the wrong tomb appears to have been opened. Unknown is the grave of Moliére.*~~

~~*Moliére, according to Mlle. Poisson, who had seen him in her extreme youth, was "neither too stout nor too thin, tall rather than short ; he had a noble carriage, a good leg, walked slowly, and had a very serious expression. His nose was thick, his mouth large with thick lips, his complexion brown, his eyebrows black and strongly marked, and it was his way of moving these that gave him his comic expression on the stage." " His eyes seemed to search the deeps of men's hearts," says the author of Zélinde. The inventories printed by M. Soulié prove that Moliére was fond*~~

~~of rich dress, splendid furniture, and old books. The charm of his conversation is attested by the names of his friends, who were all the wits of the age, and the greater their genius the greater their love of Molitre. As an actor, friends and enemies agreed in recognizing him as most successful in comedy. HIs ideas of tragic declamation were in advance of his time, for he set his face against the prevalent habit of ranting. HIs private character was remarkable for gentleness, probity, generosity, and delicacy, qualities attested not only by anecdotes but by the evidence of documents. HIe is probably (as Menander is lost) the greatest of all comic writers within the limits of social and refined as distinguished from romantic comedy, like that of Shakespeare, and of political comedy, like that of Aristo- phanes. HIe has the humour which is but a sense of the true value of life, and now takes the form of the most vivacious wit and the keenest observation, now of melan- choly, and pity, and wonder at the fortunes of mortal men. In the literature of France his is the greatest name, and in the literature of the modern drama the greatest after that of Shakespeare. Besides his contemplative genius he possessed an unerring knowledge of the theatre, the knowledge of a great actor and a great manager, and hence his plays can never cease to hold the stage, and to~~

~~charm, if possible, even more in the performance than in the reading.~~

~~There is no biography of Moliére on a level with the latest re- searches into his lite. The best is probably that of M. Taschereau, prefixed to an edition of his works (wvres Complétes, Paris, 1868). To this may be added Jules Loiseleur's Les Points Obseurs de la Vie de Moliére, Paris, 1877. We have seen that M. Loiseleur is not always accurate, but he is laborious. For other books it is enough to recominend the excellent Bibliographic Moliéresque ot M. Paul Lacroix (1875), which is an all but faultless guide. The best edition of Moliere's works for the purposes of the student is that published in Les Grands Eerivains de la Franee (HIachette, Paris, 1874-1882). The edition is still incomplete. It contains reprints of many contemporary tracts, and, with the Registre of La Grange, . and the Collection Moliéresque of M. Lacroix, is the chief source of the facts stated in this notice, in cases where the rarity of docu- ments has prevented the writer from studying them in the original~~

~~texts. Another valuable authority is the Zecherches sur Moliére et sur sa Famille of Ed. Soulié (1863). Lotheisen's Moliére, sein Leben und seine Werke (Frankfurt, 1880), is a respectable Ger- man compilation. Le Moliériste (Tresse, Paris, edited by M. Georges Monval) is a monthly serial, containing notes on Moliére and his plays, by a numberof contributors. The essays, biographies, plays, and poems on Moliére are extremely numerous. 'The best guide to these is the indispensable Bibliographie of M. Lacroix. The English biographies arc few and as a rule absolutely untrustworthy. (A. L.)~~

~~MOLINA, Luis (1535-1600), a Spanish Jesuit, whom Pascal's Lettres d'un Provincial have rendered immortal, was born at Cuenca in 1535, Having at the age of eighteen become a member of the Company of Jesus, he studied theology at Coimbra, and afterwards became professor in the university of Evora, Portugal. From this post he was called, at the end of twenty years, to the chair of moral theology in Madrid, where he died on 12th October 1600. Besides other works he wrote Libert arbitrit cum gratiz donis, divina prescientia, providentia, preedestinatione et reprobatione, concordia (4to, Lisbon, 1588); a com- mentary on the first part of the Swmma of Thomas Aquinas (2 vols., fol., Cuenca, 1593); and a treatise De Justitia et Jure (6 vols., 1593-1609). It is to the first of these that his fame is principally due. Jt was an attempt to reconcile, in words at least, the Augustinian doctrines of predestina- tion and grace with the Semipelagianism which, as shown by the recent condemnation of Basus (q.v.), had become prevalent in the Roman Catholic Church. Assuming that man is free to perform or not to perform any act whatever, Molina maintains that this circumstance renders the grace of God neither unnecessary nor impossible :—not impossible, for God never fails to bestow grace upon those who ask it with sincerity ; and not unnecessary, for grace, although not an efficient, is still a sufficient cause of salvation. Nor, in Molina's view, does his doctrine of free-will exclude predestination. The omniscient God, by means of His "scientia media" (the phrase is Molina's invention, though the idea is also to be found in his older contemporary Fonseca), or power of knowing future contingent events, foresees how we shall employ our own free-will and treat His proffered grace, and upon this foreknowledge He can found His predestinating decrees. These doctrines, although in harmony with the prevailing feeling of the Roman Catholic Church of the period, and further~~

~~recommended by their marked opposition to the teachings of Luther and Calvin, excited violent controversy in some quarters, especially on the part of the Dominicans, and at last rendered it necessary for the pope (Clement VIII.) to interfere. At first (1594) he simply enjoined silence on both parties so far as Spain was concerned ; but ultimately, in 1598, he appointed the "Congregatio de Auxiltis Gratize" for the settlement of the dispute, which became more and more a party one. After holding very numerous sessions, the "congregation" was able to decide nothing, and in 1607 its meetings were suspended by Paul V., who announced his intention of himself pronouncing judgment in due time. He contented himself, however, in 1611,~~

~~with prohibiting all further discussion of the question "de auxiliis," and studious efforts were made to control the publication even of commentaries on Aquinas. The Molinist subsequently passed into the Jansenist controversy, and it is as a champion of Jansenism that Pascal in the Provincial Letters attacks Molina and the scientia media (see JANSENISM).~~

~~MOLINE, a city of the United States, in Rock Island county, Illinois, is situated in a picturesque district on the left bank of the Mississippi, opposite the upper end of Rock Island. First settled in 1832, the town was organized as a city in 1872. It is noted for its water-power, developed and maintained by the Government, and for the number and importance of its manufacturing establishments. By means of a dam nearlya mile in length, from the Illinois shore to the island, an almost uniform head of 7 feet of water is obtained, which is used in driving the machinery of the Government arsenal on the island, and in supplying power to several factories. Beds of bituminous coal are mined in the neighbourhood, and three lines of railway pass through the city, affording with the river ample means of communi- cation. The most prominent manufactures are agricultural implements and machinery generally, waggons, organs, paper, and stoves. Moline has nine churches, a complete system of graded free schools, including a high school, and a free library. The population increased from 4066 in 1870 to 7805 in 1880, and with the suburbs the number is now estimated at 12,000.~~

~~*MOLINOS, Micuen pz (1627-c. 1696), a Spanish priest whose name is intimately associated with that type of religion known in Italy and Spain during the latter half of the 17th century as Quietism, was born of good family in the diocese of Saragossa, on 21st December 1627. Having entered the priesthood, he settled about his fortieth year in Rome, where he speedily rose to high repute as a father confessor, and gained many distinguished friends, among whom were several cardinals, including Odescalchi (afterwards Innocent XI., 1676). In 1675 he published at Rome a small duodecimo volume entitled Guida spirituale che disinvolge Vanima e la conduce per Vinterior camino all' acquisto della perfetta contemplazione e del ricco tesoro della pace interiore, which was soon afterwards followed by the Breve trattato della cottidiana communione, usually bound up with it in later editions. The work, which breathes a spirit of simple and earnest piety, is designed to show how inward peace may be found by what may be called con- templative or passive prayer, by obedience, by frequent communion, and by inward mortification ; it was widely circulated, and greatly increased the popularity of its author, whom Innocent XI. after his elevation provided with rooms in the Vatican, and is said to have also taken as his spiritual director. Its doctrine of the passivity of the highest contemplation and purest prayer does not appear to have raised the slightest discussion until after the publication, in 1681, of the Concordia tra la fatica e la quiete nell oratione, by the Jesuit preacher, Paolo Segneri. Although scrupulously refraining from any mention of the name of Molinos, and indeed displaying considerable moderation as a controversialist, Segneri by this tract and by another with which he followed it up brought upon himself much unpopularity ; and so great did the excitement become that a committee was at last appointed by the Inquisition to investigate his own views as well as to examine the writings of Molinos and of his friend Petrucci (author of La contemplazione mastica acquistata), The report (1682) was entirely favourable to the doctrines of the Guida Spirituale, the writings of Segneri being censured as scandalous and heretical; but in 1685, in consequence of representations made to the pope by Louis XIV., under the Jesuit influence of Pere La Chaise, both Petrucci and*~~

~~*Molinos were laid under arrest, and the papers of the latter, including a voluminous correspondence, seized. Petrucci was soon afterwards liberated, and relieved from further persecution by the gift of a cardinal's hat; but, after Molinos had languished in confinement for two years, suddenly 200 persons, many of them of high rank, were also apprehended by order of the Inquisition for what were then for the first time called "Quietist" opinions. In 1687 the pope signi- fied his approval of the condemnation pronounced by the Inquisition on sixty-eight doctrines imputed to Molinos. The "heretic" forthwith "abjured " these, and thus escaped the flames indeed, but did not regain his liberty. Of his later years nothing is known ; according to the most prob-*~~

~~*able accounts he languished in imprisonment until 28th December 1696.*~~

~~*The evidence on which certain charges of immorality against Molinos were based is unknown, and the degree of his responsibility for certain of the condemned propositions is obscure; but a perusal of the Guida Spirituale at least does not disclose to the candid reader any reason wherefore Molinos should not have been tolerated within a church which has canonized St Theresa. The explanation of the treatment to which he was subjected is most probably to be sought rather in the negative than in the positive aspects of his teaching, and still more in the passing exigencies of party politics, As Tholuck remarks, it was hardly to be expected that the Society of Jesus should regard as otherwise than highly dangerous a man who "declared confession and outward mortification to be work only for beginners, who himself abstained from confessing for twelve years on end, by whose advice countless monks and nuns had thrown aside chaplets, images, and reliques, that they might worship God in the spirit, and who, moreover, stood well with the fashionable world and with the pope himself." The Guida Spirituale was published in Spanish at Madrid in 1676, and fre- quently afterwards ; it was also translated into Latin (Manuductio Sptritualis, Leipsic, 1687) by A. H. Francke, the well-known German pietist and philanthropist, and an English version (The spiritual guide, which disentangles the soul and brings it by the inward way to the getting of perfeet contemplation and the rich treasure of eternal peace: with a brief treatise coneerning daily communion) appeared in 1688. The materials for a history of the Quietist controversy are very fully given in the third volume*~~

~~of Gottfried Arnold's Kirchen-wnd Ketzerhistorie. See also Heppe, Geschiehte der quietistisehen Mystik in der Katholischen Kirehe (Berlin, 1875); Tholuck's article on "Molinos" in Herzog's itealeneyklopddie ; and Bigelow, Molinos the Quietist, New York,~~

~~1882.~~

~~MOLISE, now Camposasso, a province of Italy, stretch- ing twenty miles along the coast of the Adriatic, and bounded by the Abruzzi (Chieti and Aquila), Terra di Lavoro (Caserta), Benevento, and Capitanata (Foggia). Most of it lies on the north-eastern side of the Apennines, and is watered by the Biferno, the Forlone, and the Trigno ; but it also includes the country on the other side which contains the head streams of the Volturno. About five-sixths of the surface may be described as mountainous or hilly, the loftiest range being the Matese on the borders towards Benevento, with its highest point in Monte Miletto, 6750 feet. The population, which increased from 346,007 in 1861 to 365,434 in 1881, is mainly dependent on pastoral and agricultural pursuits, neither manufactures nor trade being highly developed. According to the census of 1871, there were six places with more than 5000 inhabit- ants—Campobasso, 12,890; Riccia, 8123; Isernia, 7715 ; Agnone, 7147 ; Cascalende, 6217 ; and Larino, 5357 ; accord- ing to the census of 1881, 21 of the 133 communes had a population exceeding 4000.~~

~~The Molise territory was in ancient times part of the country of the Sabines and Samnites. Under the Lombards it was included in the duchy of Benevento; but the districts of Sepino, Boiano, and Isernia were cut off to form a domain for the Bulgarians who had come to assist King Grimoald. About two centuries later this became the countship of Boiano, and the name was soon after changed to countship of Molise, probably because the lordship was held by Ugone di Molisio, or Molise. Attached under Frederick II. to the Terra di Lavoro, and at a later date incorporated with Capitanata, the district did not again become an independent province till 1811. In 1861 it surrendered fifteen communes to Benevento, and received thirteen from Terra di Lavoro,~~

~~*HE Mollusca form one of the great "phyla," or sub- kingdoms of the Animal Pedigree or Kingdom.*~~

~~*Literary Ilstory of the Group.—The shell-bearing forms belonging to this group which were known to Linnzeus were placed by him (in 1748) in the third order of his class Vermes under the name "Testacea," whilst the Echino- derms, Hydroids, and Annelids, with the naked Molluscs, formed his second order, termed "Zoophyta." Ten years later he replaced the name "Zoophyta" by "Mollusca," which was thus in the first instance applied, not to the Mollusca at present so termed, but to a group consisting chiefly of other organisms. Gradually, however, the term Mollusca became used to include those Mollusca formerly placed among the "Testacea," as well as the naked Mollusca.*~~

~~*It is important to observe that the term paAdxva, of which Mollusca is merely a Latinized form, was used by Aristotle to indicate a group consisting of the Cuttle-fishes only.*~~

~~*The definite erection of the Mollusca into the position of one of the great primary groups of the animal kingdom is due to George Cuvier (1788-1800), who largely occupied himself with the dissection of representatives of this type (1). An independent anatomical investigation of the Mollusca had been carried on by the remarkable Neapolitan natur- alist Poli (1791), whose researches (2) were not published until after his death (1817), and were followed by the beautiful works of another Neapolitan zoologist, the illus- trious Delle Chiaje (8).*~~

~~*The "embranchement" or sub-kingdom Mollusca, as de- fined by Cuvier, included the following classes of shell-fish :— 1, the cuttles or poulps, under the name CEPHALOPODA; 2, the snails, whelks, and slugs, both terrestrial and marine, under the name GastTRopopa; 3, the sea-butterflies or winged-snails, under the name Prrropopa; 4, the clams, mussels, and oysters, under the name AcEPHALA; 5, the lamp-shells, under the name Bracuiopopa; 6, the sea- squirts or ascidians, under the name Nupa; and 7, the barnacles and sea-acorns, under the name CIRRHOPODA.*~~

~~*The main limitations of the sub-kingdom or phylum Mollusca, as laid down by Cuvier, and the chief divisions thus recognized within its limits by him,*~~

~~*hold good to the present day. At the same time, three of the classes con- sidered by him as Mollusca have been one by one removed from that association in consequence of improved know- ledge, and one additional class, incorporated since his day with the Mollusca with general approval, has, after more than forty years, been again detached and assigned an independent position owing to newly-acquired knowledge.*~~

~~*The first of Cuvier's classes to be removed from the Mol- lusca was that of the Cirrhopoda, Their affinities with the lower Crustacea were recognized by Cuvier and his contem- poraries, but it was one of the brilliant discoveries of that remarkable and too-little-honoured naturalist, J. Vaughan Thompson of Cork, which decided their position as Crus- tacea. The metamorphoses of the Cirrhopoda were described and figured by him in 1830 in a very complete manner, and the legitimate conclusion as to their affinities was for- mulated by him (4). Thus it is to Thompson (1830), and not to Burmeister (1834), as erroneously stated by Kefer- stein, that the merit of this discovery belongs. The next class to be removed from Cuvier's Mollusca was that of the Nuda, better known as Tunicata. In 1866 the Russian embryologist Kowalewsky startled the zoological world with a minute account of the developmental changes of Ascidia, one of the Tunicata (5), and it became evident that the*~~

~~*Fa figures refer to the bibliography at the end of the article, Daogas*~~

~~*affinities of that class were with the Vertebrata,whilst their structural agreements with Mollusca were only superficial. The last class which has been removed from the Cuvierian Mollusca is that of the Lamp-shells or Brachiopoda. The history of its dissociation is connected with that of the class, viz., the Polyzoa or Bryozoa, which has been both added to and again removed from the Mollusca between Cuvier's date and the present day. The name of J. Vaughan Thompson is again that which is primarily con- nected with the history of a Molluscan class. In 1830 he pointed out that among the numerous kinds of " polyps" at that time associated by naturalists with the Hydroids, there were many which had a peculiar and more elaborate type of organization, and for these he proposed the name Polyzoa (6). Subsequently (7) they were termed Bryozoa by Ehrenberg (1831).*~~

~~*Henri Milne-Edwards in 1844 demonstrated (8) the affi- nities of the Polyzoa with the Molluscan class Brachiopoda, and proposed to associate the three classes Brachiopoda, Polyzoa, and Tunicata in a large group "Molluscoidea," coordinate with the remaining classes of Cuvier's Mollusca, which formed a group retaining the name Mollusca. By subsequent writers the Polyzoa have in some cases been kept apart from the Mollusca and classed with the "'Vermes;" whilst by others (including the present writer) they have, together with the Brachiopoda, been regarded as true Mol- lusca. The recent investigation by Mr. Caldwell (1882) of the developmental history of Phoronis (9), together with other increase of knowledge, has now, however, estab- lished the conclusion that the agreement of structure supposed to obtain between Polyzoa and true Mollusca is delusive; and accordingly they, together with the Brachi- opoda, have to be removed from the Molluscan phylum. Further details in regard to this, the last revolution in Mol- luscan classification, will be found in the article Potyzoa.*~~

~~*As thus finally purified by successive advances of em- bryological research, the Mollusca are reduced to the Cuvierian classes of Cephalopoda, Pteropoda, Gastropoda, and Acephala. Certain modifications in the disposition of these classes are naturally enough rendered necessary by the vast accumulation of knowledge as to the anatomy and embryology of the forms comprised in them during fifty years. Foremost amongst those who have within that period laboured in this group are the French zoologists Henri Milne-Edwards (20) and Lacaze Duthiers (21), to the latter of whom we owe the most accurate dissections and beautiful illustrations of a number of different types. To Kolliker (22), Gegenbaur (23), and more recently Spengel (24), amongst German anatomists, we are indebted for epoch-making researches of the same kind. In England, Owen's anatomy of the Pearly Nautilus (10), Huxley's dis- cussion of the general morphology of the Mollusca (11), and Lankester's embryological investigations (12), have aided in advancing our knowledge of the group. Two remarkable works of a systematic character dealing with the Mollusca deserve mention here—the Jfanual of the Mollusca by the late Dr. 8. P. Woodward, a model of clear systematic exposition, and the exhaustive treatise on the Malacozoa or Weichthiere by the late Professor Keferstein of Gottingen, published as part of Bronn's Classen und Ordnungen des Thier-Reichs. The latter work is the most completely illustrated and most exhaustive survey of exist- ing*~~

~~*knowledge of a large division of the animal kingdom which has ever been produced, and, whilst forming a monu- ment to its lamented author, places the student of Mol- luscan morphology in a peculiarly favourable position,*~~

~~*wonLuSsS eA*~~

~~*Classes of the Mollusca.—The classes of the Mollusca which we recognize are as follows :—*~~

~~*Phylum Mortusca. Brancu A.—Glossophora. Brancu B.—Lipocephala (=Acephala, Cuvier). Class 1.—LAMELLIBRANCHTA (Syn. Conchifera). Examples—Oyster, Mussel, Clam, Cockle.*~~

~~*Class 1.—GASTROPODA, Br. a.—Tsoplewra. Examples —- Chiton, menia. Br. b.— Anisopleura. Examples—Limpet, Whelk, Snail, Slug. Class 2.—ScAPHOPODA. Example—Tooth-shell.*~~

~~*Class 3.—CEPHALOPODA. Br. a.—Pteropoda. Examples—Hyalea, Pneu- modermon. Br. 6.—Siphonopoda. Examples — Nautilus, Cut- tles, Poulp.*~~

~~*General Characters of the Mollusca.—The forms com- prised in the above groups, whilst exhibiting an extreme range of variety in shape, as may be seen on comparing an Oyster, a Cuttle-fish, and a Sea-slug such as Doris; whilst adapted, some to life on dry land, others to the depths of the sea, others to rushing streams ; whilst capable, some of swimming, others of burrowing, crawling, or jump- ing, some, on the other hand, fixed and immobile; some amongst the most formidable of carnivores, others feed- ing on vegetable mud, or on the minutest of microscopic organisms—yet all agree in possessing in common a very considerable number of structural details which are not possessed in common by any other animals.*~~

~~*The structural features which the Mollusca do possess in common with other animals belonging to other great phyla of the animal kingdom are those 'characteristic of the Coelomata, one of the two great grades (the other and lower being that of the Celentera) into which the higher animals, or Enterozoa as distinguished from the Protozoa, are divided (18). The Enterozoa all commence their indivi- dual existence as a single cell or plastid, which multiplies itself by transverse division. Unlike the cells of the*~~

~~*Proto- zoa,these embryonic cells of the Enterozoa do not remaineach like its neighbour and capable of independent life, but pro- ceed to arrange themselves in two layers, taking the form of a sac. The cavity of the two-cell-layered sac or Diblas- tula thus formed is the primitive gut or ARCH-ENTERON. In the Coelentera, whatever subsequent changes of shape the little sac may undergo as it grows up to be Polyp or Jelly-fish, the original arch-enteron remains as the one cavity pervading all regions of the body. In the Coelomata the arch-enteron becomes in the course of development divided into two totally distinct cavities shut off from one another—an axial cavity, the MET-ENTERON, which retains the function of a digestive gut; and a peri-axial cavity, the c@tom or body-cavity, which is essentially the blood- space, and receives the nutritive products of digestion and the waste products of tissue-change by osmosis. The Mollusca agree in being Coelomate with the phyla Verte- brata, Platyhelmia (Flat-worms), Echinoderma, Appendicu- lata (Insects, Ringed-worms, &c.), and others,—in fact, with all the Enterozoa except the Sponges, Corals, Polyps, and Medusz.*~~

~~*In common with all other Cclomata, the Mollusca are at one period of life possessed of a PROSTOMIUM or region in front of the mouth, which is the essential portion of the "head," and is connected with the property of forward locomotion in a definite direction and the steady carriage of the body (as opposed to rotation of the body on its long axis). As a result, the Coelomata, and with them the Mollusca, present (in the first instance) the general*~~

~~*Neo-*~~

~~*633*~~

~~*condition of body known as BILATERAL SYMMETRY; the dorsal is differentiated from the ventral surface, whilst a right and a left side similar to, or rather the complements of, one another are permanently established. In common with all other Ccelomata, the Mollusca have the mouth and first part of the alimentary canal which leads into the met-enteron formed by a special invagination of the outer layer of the primitive body-wall, not to be confounded with that which often, but not always, accompanies the ante-cedent formation of the arch-enteron ; this invagination is termed the*~~

~~*sromop zum. Similarly, an anal aperture is formed in connexion with a special invagination which meets the hinder part of the met-enteron, and is termed the PROocTODAUM.*~~

~~*In common with many (if not all) Coelomata, the Mol- lusca are provided with at least one pair of tube-like organs, which open each by one end into the coelom or body cavity, and by the other end to the exterior, usually in the neigh- bourhood of the anus. These are the NEPHRIDIA.*~~

~~*Like all other Coelomata, the Mollusca are also provided with special groups of éells forming usually paired or median growths upon the walls of the ccelomic cavity, the cells being specially possessed of reproductive power, and _dif- ferentiated as egg-cells and sperm-cells. These are the Gonaps. As in other Ceelomata, the cells of the gonads may escape to the exterior in one of two ways—either through the nephridia, or, on the other hand, by special apertures.*~~

~~*As in all other Calomata, the cells, which build up respectively the primary outer layer of the body, the lining layer of the met-enteron, and the lining layer of the ceelom, are multiplied and differentiated in a variety of ways in the course of growth from the early embryonic condition, TissuxEs are formed by the adhesion of a num- ber of similarly modified cells in definite tracts. As in all Ceelomata, there is a considerable variety of tissues char- acterized by, and differentiated in relation to, particular physiological activities of the organism. Not only the Celomata but also many Ccelentera show, in addition to the EPITHELIA (the name given to tissue which bounds a free surface, whether it be that of the outer body-wall, of the gut, or of a blood-space), also deeper lying tissues, of which the first to appear is MUSCULAR tissue, and the second NERVOUS tissue,*~~

~~*The epithelia are active in throwing off their constituent cells (blood- corpuscles from the wall of the ceelom), or in producing secretions (glands of body-wall and of gut), or in forming horny or calcareous plates, spines, and pro- cesses, known as CUTICULAR PRODUCTS (shells and bristles of the body-wall, teeth of the tongue, gizzard, dvc.).*~~

~~*In the Mollusca, as in all other Coelomata, in correspond- ence with the primary bilateral symmetry and in relation to the special mechanical*~~

~~conditions of the prostomium, the nervous.tissue which is in Ccelentera, and even in Flat- worms, diffused over the whole body in networks, tends to concentrate in paired lateral tracts, having a special enlargement in the prostomium. The earlier plexiform arrangement is retained in the nervous tissue of the walls of the alimentary canal of many Ccelomata, whilst a con- centration to form large nerve-masses (GANGLIA), to which numerous afferent and efferent fibres are attached, affects the nervous tissue of the body-wall.~~

~~In all Coelomata, including Mollusca, muscular tissue is developed in two chief layers, one subjacent to the deric or outer epithelium (SoMATIC MUSCULATURE), and a second sur- rounding the alimentary canal (sPLANCHINIC MUSCULATURE). Thus, primarily, in Coelomata the body has the character of two muscular sacs or tubes, placed one within the other and separated from one another by the ccelomic space. The somatic musculature is the more copious and develops~~

~~very generally an outer circular layer (.e., a layer in which the muscular fibres run in a direction transverse to the long axis of the body) and a deeper longitudinal layer ; to these oblique and radiating fibres may be added. The splanchnic musculature, though more delicate, exhibits a circular layer nearer the enteric epithelium, and a longi- tudinal layer nearer the coelomic surface.~~

~~In Coelomata and in many Ccelentera there are found distributed between the tracts of muscular tissue, bounding them and giving strength and consistency also to the walls of the body, of the alimentary canal, of the ccelom, and of the various organs and tissue-masses (such as nerve-centres, gonads, &c.) connected with these, tracts of tissue the function of which is skeletal. The SKELETAL TISSUE of Mollusca, in common with that of other Coelomata, exhibits a wide range of minute structure, and is of differing density in various parts ; it may be fibrous, membranous, or carti- laginous. The Mollusca, in common with the other Coelo- mata, exhibit a remarkable kind of association between the various forms of skeletal tissue and the~~

~~*epithelium which lines the coelomic cavity. The ccelomic cavity contains a liquid which is albuminous in chemical composition (BLooD- LYMPH or HAMOLYMPH), and into this liquid cells are shed from the ccelomic epithelium. They float therein and are known as BLOOD CORPUSCLES or LYMPH CORPUSCLES. The coelomic space with its contained hemolymph is not usually in Coelomata, and is not in Mollusca, a simple even-walled cavity, but is broken up into numerous passages and re- cesses by the outgrowths, both of the alimentary canal and of its own walls. By the adhesion of its opposite walls, and by an irregularity in the process of increase of its area during growth, the ccelom becomes to a very large extent a spongy system of intercommunicating LACUN or irregular spaces, filled with the coelomic fluid. At the same time, the coelomic space has a tendency to push its way in the form of narrow canalsand sinuses between the layers of skeletal tissue, and thus to permeate together with the skeletal tissue in the form of a spongy, or it may be a tubular, network all the apparently solid portions of the animal body. This association of the nutritive and skeletal functions is accom- panied by a complete identity of the tissues concerned in these functions. Not only is there complete gradation from one variety of skeletal tissue to another (¢.g., from membranous to fibrous, and from fibrous to cartilaginous) even in respect of the form of the cells and their intercellular substance, but the ccelomic epithelium, and consequently the hemolymph with its floating corpuscles derived from that epithelium, is brought into the same continuity. The skeletal and blood-containing and -producing tissues in fact form one widely-varying but continuous whole, which may be called the SKELETO-TROPHIC SYSTEM OF TISSUES.*~~

~~*In many Ccelomata not only do the skeletal tissues allow the coelomic space with its fluid and corpuscles to penetrate between their layers, but a special mode of extension of that space is found, which consists in the hollowing out of the solid substance of elongated cells having the form of fibres, which thus become tubular, and, admitting the nutritive fluid, serve as channels for its distribution. These are "capillary vessels," and it has yet to be shown that such are formed in the Mollusca, Larger vessels, however, concerned in guiding the move- ment of the coelomic fluid in special directions are very usually developed in the Mollusca, as in other Ccelomata, by the growth of skeletal tissue around what are at first ill-*~~

~~defined extensions of the coelomic space. In this way a portion of the coelomic space becomes converted into vessels, whilst a large part remains with irregular walls extending in every direction between the skeletal tissues and freely communicating with the system of vessels. As in many other Coelomata, muscular tissue grows around~~

~~MOLE UV eeu~~

~~[SCHEMATIC MOLLUSC.~~

~~the largest vessel formed from the primitive ccelom, which thus becomes a contractile organ for propelling the blood- lymph fluid. This "HEART" has in Mollusca, as in most other Coelomata in which it is developed, a dorsal position. A communication of the blood-lymph space with the exterior by means of a pore situated in the foot or else- where has been very generally asserted to be characteristic of Mollusca. It has been maintained that water is intro- duced by such a pore into the blood, or admitted into a special series of water-vessels. It has also been asserted that the blood-fiuid is expelled by the Mollusca from these same pores. Recent investigation (14) has, however, made it probable that the pores are the pores of secreting glands, and do not lead into the vascular system. There is, it there- fore appears, no admission or expulsion of water through such pores in connexion with the blood, although in some other Coelomata it is established that water is taken into the coelomic space through a pore (Echinoderms), whilst in some others there is no doubt that the coelomic hemolymph is occasionally discharged in quantity through pores of defi- nite size and character (Earthworm, éc.).~~

~~We have thus seen that the Mollusca possess, in common with the other Coelomata—1, a body composed of a vast number of cells or plastids, arranged so as to form a sac- like body-wall, and within that a second sac, the met-enteron, the wall of which is separated from the first by a calom or blood-lymph space; 2, a stomodxum and a proctodxum ; 3, a prostomium, together with a differentiated dorsal and ventral surface, and consequently right and left sides, 1.¢., bilateral symmetry; 4, a pair of nephridia; 5, gonads developed on the wall of the ccelom ; 6, dere epithelium (producing horny and calcareous deposits on its surface), enteric epithelium, and calomic epithelium; 7, laterally paired masses of nerve-tissue, especially~~

~~*large in the pro- stomial region (nerve-centres or ganglia); 8, muscular tissue, forming a somatic tunic and a splanchnic tunic; 9, skeleto-trophic tissues, consisting of membranous, fibrous, and cartilaginous supporting tissues, and of blood-vessels and the walls of blood-spaces, the caelomic epithelium, and the liquid tissue known as hemolymph (commonly blood).*~~

~~*Schematic Mollusc.—Starting from this basis of structural features common to them and the rest of the Cœlomata, we may now point out what are the peculiar developments of structure which characterize the Mollusca and lead to the inference that they are members of one peculiar branch or phylum of the animal pedigree. In attempting thus to set forth the dominating structural attributes of a great group of organisms it is not possible to make use of arbi- trary definitions. Of Mollusca, as of other great phyla, it is not possible categorically to enunciate a series of struc- tural peculiarities which will be found to be true in refer- ence to every member of the group. We have to remember that the process of adaptation in the course of long ages of development has removed in some cases one, in other cases another, of the original features characteristic of the ancestors from which the whole group may be supposed to have taken origin, and that it is possible (and actually is realized in fact) that some organisms may have lost all the primary characteristics of Molluscan organization, and yet be beyond all doubt definitely stamped as Mollusca by the retention of some secondary characteristic which is so peculiar as to prove their relationship with other Mollusca. An example in point is found in the curious fish-hke form Phyllirhoé (fig. 58), which has none of the primary char- acteristics of a Mollusc, and yet is indisputably proved to belong to the Molluscan phylum by possessing the peculiar and elaborate lingual apparatus present in one branch of the phylum, the Glossophora.*~~

~~*In order to exhibit concisely the peculiarities of organi- zation which characterize the Mollusca, we find it most*~~

~~convenient to construct a schematic Mollusc, which shall | Mollusc the representation of the actual Molluscan ancestor~~

~~possess in an unexaggerated form the various structural arrangements which are more or less specialized, exagger- ated, or even suppressed in particular members of the group. Such a schematic Mollusc is not to be regarded as an arche-~~

~~Fic, 1.—Schematie Mollusc. heart, pericardium, gonads,~~

~~A. Dorsal aspect. and nephridia shown in position. D. The nervous system; the reader is requested to note that the cord passing backwards from g.pe lies beneath, and does not in any way unite with the cord which~~

~~B. Ventral aspect. C. The~~

~~passes from g.ab to g.pl. E. Diagram in which the body-wall is represented as cut in the median antero-posterior plane, so as to show organs in position, —the shell-sac is seen in section, but the shell is omitted. f Letters in all the figures as follows :—a, cephalic tentacle ; b, head ; c, edge of the mantle-skirt or limbus pallialis; d, dotted line indicating the line of origin of the free mantle-skirt from the sides of the visceral hump; ¢, outline of the foot seen through the mantle-skirt in A, which is supposed to be trans-parent, allowing the position of this and of the various parts h, 1, k, l, m, to be seen through its substance; /, edge of the shell-follicle ; g, the shell; h, the osphradium, paired (Spengel's olfactory organ); t, the ctenidium, paired (gill-plume) ; &, aperture of the gonad, paired ; 1, aperture of one of the two nephridia ; m, anus; n, posterior region of the foot reaching farther back than the mass of viscera (dorsal hump) which it carries ; 0, mouth ; p, plantar surface of the foot; g, cut edge of the body-wall of the dorsal region ; vi ccelomnic space (blood-lymph space or body-cavity), mostly occupied by liver, but to some extent retained as blood-channels and lacune ; 8, pericardial cavity ; t, gonad (ovary or spermary), paired ; u, nephridium, paired ; v, ven- tricle of the heart receiving the right and the left auricles at its sides, and sending off anteriorly a large vessel, posteriorly a small one; w, the cephalic eye, paired ; x, dotted ring to show the position occupied by the cesophagus in relation to the nerve ganglia and cords; y, the otocyst, paired ; z.l, the digestive gland (so-called "'liver") of the left side; z.g, duct~~

~~*of the digestive gland of the right side; g.c, cerebral ganglion united by the cerebral com- missure to its fellow; g.pl, pleural ganglion united by the cerebro-pleural connective to the cerebral ganglion, and by the pleuro-pedal connective to the pedal ganglion ; g.pe, the pedal ganglion united to its fellow by the pedal commissure—the two sending off posteriorly the long ladder-like pair of pedal nerves ; g.v, the visceral ganglion (of the left side) united by the visceral loop or commissure to the similar ganglion on the right side, and by the viscero-pleural connective to the pleural ganglion ; g.ab, abdominal ganglion developed on the course of the visceral loop ; g.olf, olfactory ganglion placed near the osphradium on a nerve taking its origin froin the visceral ganglion.*~~

~~*type, in the sense which has been attributed to that word, nor as the embodiment of an idea present to a creating mind, nor even as an epitome of developmental laws. Were know- ledge sufficient, we should wish to make this schematic*~~

~~*from which the various living forms have sprung. To defi- nitely claim for our schematic form any such significance in the present state of knowledge would be premature, but it may be taken as more or less coinciding with what we are justified, under present conditions, in picturing to ourselves as the original Mollusc or archi-Mollusc (more correctly Archimalakion). After describing this schematic form, we shall proceed to show how far it is realized or justified in each class and order of Mollusca successively.*~~

~~*The schematic Molluse (fig. 1, A to E) is oblong in shape, bilaterally symmetrical, with strongly differentiated dorsal and ventral surface, and has a well-marked HEAD, consisting of the prostomium (b) and the region imme- diately behind the mouth. Upon the head we place a pair of short CEPHALIC TENTACLES (a), The mouth is placed in the median line anteriorly, and is overhung by the prostomium (B, 0); the anus is placed in the median line posteriorly, well raised on the dorsal surface (A, m). The apertures of a pair of NEPHIRIDIA are seen in the neighbourhood of the anus right and left (A, 1). Near the nephridial apertures, and in front of them, right and left, are the pair of apertures (&) appropriate to the ducts of the GonaDs (generative pores).*~~

~~*The most permanent and distinctive Molluscan organ is the roor (Podium). This is formed by an excessive development of the somatic musculature along the ventral surface, distinctly ceasing at the region of the head, below which it suddenly projects as a powerful muscular mass (B, p; E, p). It may be compared, and is probably genetic- ally identical, with the muscular ventral surface of the Planarians and with the suckers of Trematoda, but is more extensively developed than are those corresponding struc- tures. The muscular tissue of the foot, and of all other parts of the body of all Mollusca, is cellular and unstriated, as distinguished from the composite muscular fibre (con- sisting of cell-fusions instead of separable cells) which occurs in Arthropoda and in Vertebrata, and which has the further distinction of being composed of alternating bands of substance of differing refractive power (hence "striated"). The appearance of cross striation seen in the muscular cells of some Molluscs (odontophore of Haliotis, Patella, &c.) requires further investigation. It is by no means altogether the same thing as the mark- ing characteristic of striated muscular fibre.*~~

~~*Contrasting with the ventral foot is the thin-walled dorsal region of the body, which may be termed the anti- podial region. This thin-walled region is formed by soft viscera covered in by the comparatively delicate and non-muscular body-wall (fig. 1, E). As the ventral foot is clearly separate from the projecting head, so is this dorsal region, and it is conveniently spoken of as the VISCERAL HUMP or "dome" (cupola). Protecting the visceral dome is a SHELL (conchylium) consisting of a horny basis impreg- nated with carbonate of lime,! and secreted by the deric epithelium of this region of the body (g). The shell in our schematic Mollusc is single, cap-shaped, and sym- metrical. It does not lie entirely naked upon the surface of the visceral dome, but is embedded all round its margin, to a large extent in the body-wall. In fact, the integu- ment of the visceral dome forms an open flattened sac in which the shell lies. This is the PRIMARY SHELL- SAC, or FOLLICLE (A and E, f). The wall of the body pro- jects all round the visceral dome in the form of a flap or skirt, so as to overhang and conceal to some extent the head and the sides of the foot. This skirt, really an out-*~~

~~*1 As to the minute structure of the shell in various classes, see Carpenter's article " Shell" in the Cyclop. of Anat. and Physiol. The limits of our space do not permit us to deal with this or other histo- logical topics.*~~

growth of the dorsal body-wall, is called the MANTLE-FLAP (limbus pallialis), or more shortly the MANTLE or PALLIUM (c). The space between the overhanging mantle-flap and the sides and neck of the animal which it overhangs is called the SUB-PALLIAL SPACE or CHAMBER. Posteriorly in this space are placed the anus and the pair of nephridial aper- tures (see fig. 1, E),

The development of the mantle-skirt and its sub-pallial space appears to have a causal relation, in the way of pro- tection, to a pair of processes of the body-wall which spring, one on the right and one on the left, from the sides of the body, nearer the anus than the mouth, and are concealed by the mantle-flap to some extent (A, B, 7). These processes have an axis in which are two blood-vessels, and are beset with two rows of flattened filaments, like the teeth of a comb in double series. These are the CTENIDIA or gill-combs. Usually, as will be seen in the sequel, they play the part of gills, but since in many Molluscs (Lamelli- branchs) their function is not mainly respiratory, and since also other completely-formed gills are developed as special organs in some Molluscs to the exclusion of these pro- cesses, it is well not to speak of them simply as "gills" or "branchie," but to give them a non-physiological name such as that here proposed. Near the base of the stem of each ctenidium is a patch of the epithelium of the body- wall, peculiarly modified and supplied with a special nerve and ganglion. This is Spengel's olfactory organ, which tests the respiratory fluid, and is persistent in its position and nerve-supply throughout the group Mollusca. We propose to call it the oSsPHRADIUM.

Passing now to the internal organs, our schematic Mollusc is found to possess an ALIMENTARY CANAL, which passes from mouth to anus in the middle line, leaving between it and the muscular body-wall a more or less spongy, in parts a spacious, ceLom. The stomodxum is large and muscular, the proctodzum short; the bulk of the alimentary canal is therefore developed from the met- enteron or remnant of the arch-enteron after the ccelom has been pinched off from it. A paired outgrowth of the met-enteron forms the glandular diverticulum known as the digestive gland or (commonly) liver (E, 2g, /).

~~*Dorsally to the alimentary tract the ccelom is spacious. The space (C, E,~s) is termed the PERICARDIUM, since it is traversed by a vessel running fore and aft in the median line, which has contractile muscular walls and serves as a heart to propel the ccelomic blood-fluid. This pericardial space, although apparently derived from the original ccelom, is not in communication with the other spaces and blood- vessels derived from the ccelom ; it never (or perhaps in a very few instances) coritains in the adult the Molluscan blood or hemolymph, and is always in free communication with the exterior through the tubes called nephridia (renal organs). The HEART receives symmetrically on each side, right and left, a dilated vessel bringing aerated blood from the ctenidia. These dilated vessels are termed the auricles of the heart, whilst the median portion itself, at the point where these vessels join it, is termed the ventricle of the heart (C, v). The vessel passing fore and aft from the ventricle gives off a few trunks which open into spaces of the ccelom, the so-called lacunz ; these are excavated in every direction between the viscera and the various bundles of fibrous and muscular tissue, and may assume more or less the character of tube-like vessels with definite walls. Right and left opening into the pericardial ccelom is a coiled tube, the farther extremity of which opens to the exterior by the side of the anus. These two tubes (C, ~) are the symmetrically disposed NEPHIRIDIA (renal organs).*~~

~~*The GoNADs (ovaries or spermaries) are placed in the mid-dorsal region of the ccelom (C, ¢), and have their own apertures in the immediate neighbourhood of those of the*~~

~~*MOLLUS A*~~

~~*[SCHEMATIC MOLLUSC.*~~

~~*nephridia. The apertures are paired right and left, and so are the ducts into which they lead; but at present we have no ground for determining whether the gonad itself was primarily in Molluses a paired organ or a median organ, nor have we any well-founded conception as to the nature of the ducts when present, and their original relationship*~~

~~*Fia. 2,—Ctenidia of various Mollusca (original). A. Of Chiton; /t., fibrous tissue; a.b.v., afferent blood-vessel ; ¢.b.v., efferent blood-vessel ; g.l., later-*~~

~~ally paired lamelle. B. Of Sepia; lettersasin A. C. Of Fissurella; letters asin A. D. Of Nucula; d, position of axis with blood-vessels; a, inner; band ¢, outer row of lamellz. E. Of Paludina ; i, intestine running parallel with the axis of the ctenidium and ending in the anus a; br, rows of elongate processes corresponding to the two series of lamelle of the upper figures.~~

~~to the gonads. The genital ducts of some organisms are modified nephridia, but the nature of those of Mollusca, of Arthropoda, of Echinoderma, of Nematoidea, and of some Vertebrata has yet to be elucidated.~~

~~The disposition of the nerve-centres is highly character- istic. There are four long cords composed of both nerve- fibres and nerve-cells which are disposed in pairs, two right and left of the pedal area or foot, two more dorsally and tending to a deeper position than that occupied by the pedal cords, so as to lie freely within the coelomic space unattached to the body-wall. These are respectively the PEDAL NERVE-CORDS and the VISCERAL NERVE-CoRDS. The latter meet and join one another posteriorly. A right and left (D, g.v), and a median abdominal (g.ab) ganglion are placed on these cords, and from them are given off the osphradial nerves which have special ganglia (g.0/f). In the region of the prostomium the pedal nerve-cords are enlarged behind the mouth, forming the pedal ganglia (g.pe), and are united by nerve-fibres to one another. From this spot they are continued forward into the prostomium, where they enlarge to form the right and left cerebral ganglia (9.c), which are united to one another by nerve-fibres in front of~~

~~SCHEMATIC MOLLUSC.]~~

~~the mouth, just as the pedal ganglia are behind it. On their way forwards from the pedal ganglia to the cerebral ganglia the right and left pedal nerve-cords are joined by the right and left visceral cords respectively, the point of union being marked on either side by a swelling (9.p/) known as the pleural ganglion. Transverse fibres connect the right and left pleural ganglia behind the mouth. The visceral nerve-cord can be traced up on each side beyond the pleural ganglion to the cerebral ganglion. Thus we have a complete double nerve-ring formed around the ceso- phagus by the two pairs of nerve-cords which are in this region drawn, as it were, towards each other and away from their lateral position both behind and before the~~

~~*stomodzal invagination. Whilst the swollen parts of the nerve-tracts are termed ganglia, the connecting cords are conveniently distinguished either as connectives or as commissures. Com- missures connect two ganglia of the same pair. We have a cerebral commissure, a pedal commissure, a pleural com- missure, and a visceral commissure.. Connectives connect ganglia of dissimilar pairs, and we speak accordingly of the cerebro-pedal connective, the cerebro-pleural connective, the pleuro-pedal connective, and the viscero-pleural con- nective.*~~

~~*An ENTERIC NERVOUS sysTEM forming a plexus on the walls of the alimentary canal exists, but does not exhibit cords and ganglia visible to the naked eye except in the large Dibranchiate Cephalopods.*~~

~~*Our schematic Mollusc is provided with certain oRGANS OF SPECIAL SENSE. Tactile organs occur on the head in the form of short CEPHALIC TENTACLES (a). Deeply placed are*~~

~~*Kia. 8.—Development of the Pond-Snail, Limneus stagnalis (after Lankester, 15). dc, directive corpuscles (preseminal outcast cells); ch, egg-envelope or chorion ; or, oral end of the blastopore; 7, anal end of the blastopore. A. Formation of the Diblastula by the invagination of larger cells into the area of smaller cells (optical section). B. View of the same specimen from the surface of invagination ; the smaller cells are seen at the periphery ; by division they will multiply and extend themselves over the four larger cells. C. Fully-formed Diblastula, surface view to show the elongated form of the orifice of invagination or blastopore ; its middle portion closes up and coin- cides with the region of the foot; the extremity, or, coincides with the mouth and stomodum, the opposite extremity, r, with the anus. D. Optical section of an embryo a little older than A. E. Surface view of the same embryo.*~~

~~*a pair of closed vesicles containing each a calcareous con- cretion and acting as auditory organs ; these are known as ocrocysts (D, y). They are situated behind the mouth in the foremost portion of the foot. At the base of each cephalic tentacle is a pigmented eye-spot—the CEPHALIC EYE (D, w). The ospHRapIUM (h), or peculiar patch of olfactory epithelium at the base of the ctenidium, has already been mentioned.*~~

~~*To the scheme thus exhibited of the possible organization of the ancestral Mollusc we shall now add a sketch of the mode in which this form of body and series of internal organs are developed from the egg.*~~

~~*The egg-cell of Mollusca is either free from food material a simple protoplasmic corpuscle—or charged with food*~~

~~*material to a greater or less extent. Those cases which appear to be most typical—that is to say, which adhere to a*~~

~~*= \ * Y vs LA yy jj ae YY Pel' \ ae ey? * is ae eae*~~

~~*Fic. 4.—Development of the Pond-Snail, Limneus stagnalis (after Lankester, 15). 7, directive corpuscle; bl, blastopore; en, endoderm or enteric cell- layer ; ec, ectoderm or deric cell-layer ; v, velum; m, mouth; f, foot; ¢, ten- tacles ; fp, pore in the foot (belonging to the pedal gland ?); m/f, the mantile- flap or limbus pallialis ; sh, the shell; /, the bui>pelital space, here destined*~~

~~*A. First four cells resulting from the cleavage of the*~~

~~*original egg-cell. B. Side viewof the same. ©. Diblastula stage (see fig. 3),*~~

~~*showing the two cell-layers and the blastopore. D, E, F. Trochosphere*~~

~~*stage, D older than EorF. G. Three-quarter view of a Diblastula, to show the orifice of invagination of the endoderm or blastopore, bl. H, I. Veliger*~~

~~*stage later than D. (Compare fig. 70 and fig. 72***),*~~

~~*procedure which was probably common at one time to all then existing Mollusca, and which has been departed from*~~

~~*to become the lung.*~~

~~eS Se~~

~~*Fic. 5.—Early stages of division of the fertilized egg-cell in Nassa mutahilis (from Balfour, after Bobretzky). A. The egg-cell has divided into two spheres, of which the lower contains more food-material, whilst the upper is again incompletely divided into two smaller spheres. Resting on the dividing upper sphere are the eight-shaped "directive corpuscles," better called "preeseminal outcast cells or apoblasts," since they are the result of a cell-division which affects the egg-cell before it is impregnated, and are mere refuse, destined to disappear. B. One of the two smaller spheres is reuuited to the larger sphere. C. The single small sphere has divided into two, and the reunited mass has divided into two, of which one is oblong and practically double, asin B. D. Each of the four segment-cells gives rise by division to a sniall pellucid cell. E. The cap of small cells has increased in number by repeated formation of pellucid cells in the same way, and by division of those first formed. The cap will spread over and euclose the four segment-cells, as in fig. 3, A, B.*~~

~~*only in later and special lines of descent—show approxi-*~~

~~*638*~~

~~*mately the following history. By division of the egg-cell (fig. 3, A, B; fig. 4, A, B; and fig. 5) a mulberry-mass of embryonic-cells is formed (Morula), which dilates, forming a one-cell-layered sac (Blastula). By invagination one*~~

~~*Fig. 6.—Development of the Oyster, Ostrea edulis (modified from Horst, 16). A. Blastula stage (one-cell-layered sac), with commencing invagination of the wall of the sac at bl, the blastopore. B. Optical section of a somewhat later stage, in which a second invagination has commenced—namely, that of the shell-gland sk; bl, blastopore; en, invaginated endoderm (wall of the future arch-enteron); ec, ectoderm. C. Similar optical section at a little later stage. The invagination connected with the blastopore is now more contracted, d; and cells, me, forming the mesoblast from which the ecelom and muscular and skeleto-trophic tissues develop, are separated. D. Similar section of a later stage. The blastopore, bl, has closed; the anus will subsequently perforate the corresponding area. A new aperture, m, the mouth,*~~

~~*has eaten its way into the invaginated endodermal sac, and the cells pushed in with it constitute the stomodeum. The shell-gland, sk, is flattened out, and a delicate shell, s, appears on its surface. The ciliated velar ring is cut in the section, as shown by the two projecting cilia on the upper part of the figure. The embryo isnowa Trochosphere. E. Surface view of an embryo at a period aliost identical with that of D. F. Later embryo seen as a transparent object. m, mouth; ft, foot; a, anus; e, intestine ; st, stomach ; tp, velar area of the prostomium. The extent of the shell and commencing agers of the mantle-skirt is indicated by a line forming a curve from a*~~

~~*θ*~~

~~*N.B.—In this development, as in that of Pisidium (figs. 150, 151), no part of the blastopore persists either as mouth or as anus, but the aperture closes, — the pedicle of invagination, or narrow neck of the invaginated arch-enteron, becoming the intestine. The mouth and the anus are formed as independent in-pushings, the mouth with stomodzeum first, and the short anal proctodzeum much later. This interpretation of the appearances is contrary to that of Horst (16), from whom our drawings of the oyster's development are taken, The account given by the American naturalist Brooks (19) differs greatly as to se of fact from that of Horst, and appears to be erroneous in some respects.*~~

~~*portion of this sphere becomes tucked into the other—as in the preparation of a woven night-cap for the head (fig. 6, B; fig. 7, A). The orifice of invagination (blastopore) narrows, and we now have a two-cell-layered sac, —the Diblastula. The invaginated layer is the enteric cell-layer or endoderm ; the outer cell-layer is the deric cell-layer or ectoderm. The cavity communicating with the blastopore and lined by the endoderm is the arch-enteron. The blas- topore, together with the whole embryo, now elongates. The blastopore then closes along the middle portion of its extent, which corresponds with the later developed foot. At the same time the stomodeum or oral invagination forms around the anterior remnant of the blastopore, and the proctodeum or anal invagination forms around the posterior remnant of the blastopore. There are, however,*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~[SCHEMATIC MOLLUSC.~~

~~variations in regard to the relation of the blastopore to the mouth and to the anus which are probably modifications of the original process described above. An examination of figs. 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, and of others illustrative of the embryo- logy of particular forms which occur later in this article, is now recommended to the reader. The explanation of the figures has been made very full so as to avoid the~~

~~Fic. 7.—Development of the River-Snail, Paludina vivipara (after Lankester, 17). dc, directive corpuscle (outcast cell); ae, arch-enteron or cavity lined by the enteric cell-layer or endoderm; 0, blastopore; vr, velum or circlet of ciliated cells; dv, velar area or cephalic dome; sm, site of the as yet un- formed mouth ; f, foot; mes, rudiments of the skeleto-trophic tissues ; pi, the pedicle of invagination, the future rectum ; shgl, the primitive shell-sac or shell-gland ; m, mouth; an, anus. A. Diblastula phase (optical section). B. The Diblastula has become a Trochosphere by the development of the ciliated ring wr (optical section). C. Side view of the Trochosphere with commencing formation of the foot. D. Further advanced Trochosphere (optical section). E, The Trochosphere passing to the Veliger stage, dorsal view showing the formation of the primitive shell-sac. F. Side view of the same, showing foot, shell-sac (shgl), velum (vr), mouth, and anus.~~

~~N.B.—In this development the blastopore is not elongated ; it persists as the anus. The mouth and stomodeum form independently of the blastopore.~~

~~necessity of special descriptions in the text. Internally, by the nipping off of a pair of lateral outgrowths (forming part of the indefinable ‘“ mesoblast ”) from the enteric cell- layer the foundations of the coelomic cavity are laid. In some Coelomata these outgrowths are hollow and of large size. In Mollusca they are not hollow and large, which is probably the archaic condition, but they consist at first of a few cells only, adherent to one another ; these cells then diverge, applying themselves to the body-wall and to the gut-wall so as to form the lining layer of the ccelomic cavity. Muscular tissue develops from deep-lying cells, and the rudiments of the paired nerve-tracts from thickenings of the deric-cell layer or ectoderm.~~

~~The external form meanwhile passes through highly char-~~

~~*acteristic changes, which are on the whole fairly constant*~~

~~*throughout the Mollusca. A circlet of cilia forms when the embryo is still nearly spherical (fig. 4, F; fig. 6, E; fig. 7,*~~

~~*CLASSES AND ORDERS.*~~ |

~~*B), in an equatorial position. As growth proceeds, one hemisphere remains relatively small, the other elongates and enlarges. Both mouth and anus are placed in the larger area ; the smaller area is the prostomium simply ; the cili- ated band is therefore in front of the mouth. The larval form thus produced is known as the Trochosphere. It exactly agrees with the larval form of many Chetopod worms and other Ccelomata. Most remarkable is its agreement with the adult form of the Wheel animalcules or Rotifera, which retain the pre-oral ciliated band as their chief organ of locomotion and prehension throughout life. So far the young Mollusc has not reached a definitely Molluscan stage of development, being only in a condition common to it and other Coelomata. It now passes to the veliger phase, a definitely Molluscan form, in which the disproportion between the area in front of the ciliated circlet and that behind it is very greatly increased, so that the former is now simply an emarginated region of the head fringed with cilia (fig. 8; fig. 6, F; fig. 7, F; and fig. 60, A). It is termed the "velum," and is fre- quently drawn out into lobes and processes. As in the Rotifera, it serves the veliger larva as an organ of loco-*~~

~~*Fia. 8.—"Veliger" embryonic form of Mollusca (from Gegenbaur). v, velum; ¢, visceral dome with dependent mantile-skirt ; p, foot ; t, cephalic tentacles ; op, operculum.*~~

~~*motion. In a very few Molluscs, but notably in the Com-*~~

~~*mon Pond-Snail, the emarginated bilobed velum is re-*~~

~~*tained in full proportions in adult life (fig. 70), having lost its marginal fringe of specially long cilia and its locomotor function. The body of the Veliger is char- acterized by the development of the visceral hump on one surface, and by that of the foot on the other. Growth is greater in the vertical dorso-ventral axis than in the longitudinal oro-anal axis ;*~~

~~consequently the foot is rela- tively small and projects as a blunt process between mouth and anus, which are not widely distant from one another, whilst the antipedal area projects in the form of a great hump or dome. In the centre of this antipedal area there has appeared (often at a very early period) a gland-like~~

~~depression or follicle of the integument (fig. 6, C, sk; fig. 7,~~

~~E, F, shgl; fig. 60, B; fig. 68, sks; fig. 72***, ss). This is~~

~~the primitive shell-sac discovered by Lankester (18) in 1871,~~

~~and shown by him to precede the development of the perma-~~

~~nent shell in a variety of Molluscan types. The cavity of this small sac becomes filled by a horny substance, and then it very usually disappears, whilst a delicate shell, commenc-~~

~~aoOLL USC «z~~

~~639~~

~~ing from this spot as a centre, forms and spreads upon the surface of the visceral dome.~~

~~The embryonic shell-sac or shell-gland represents in a transient form, in the individual development of most Mollusca, that condition of the shell-forming area which we have sketched above in the schematic Mollusc, In very few instances (in Chiton, and probably in Limax), as we shall see below, the primitive shell-sac is retained and enlarged as the permanent shell-forming area. It is sup- planted in other Molluscs by a secondary shell-forming area, namely, that afforded by the free surface of the visceral hump, the shell-forming activity of which extends even to the surface of the depending mantle-skirt. Accord- ingly, in most Mollusca the primitive shell is represented only by the horny plug of the primitive shell-sac. The permanent shell is a new formation on a new area, and should be distinguished as a secondary shell.~~

~~*The ctenidia, it will be observed, have not yet been mentioned, and they are indeed the last of the charac- teristic Molluscan organs to make their appearance. Their possible relation to the pra-oral and post-oral ciliated bands of embryos similar to the Trochosphere will be discussed in the final section of this article dealing with the Polyzoa and Brachiopoda. The Veliger, as soon as its shell begins to assume definite shape, is no longer of a form common to various classes of Mollusca, but acquires characters peculiar to its class. At this point, therefore, we shall for the present leave it.*~~

~~*SysTEMATIC REVIEW OF THE CLASSES AND ORDERS oF Mo.uusca,*~~

~~*We are now in a position to pass systematically in review the various groups of Mollusca, showing in what way they conform to the organization of our schematic Mollusc, and in what special ways they have modified or even suppressed parts present in it, or phases in the repre- sentative embryonic history which has just been sketched. It will be found that the foot, the shell, the mantle-skirt, and the ctenidia, undergo the most remarkable changes of form and proportionate development in the various classes—changes which are correlated with extreme changes and elaboration in the respective functions of those parts.*~~

~~*Division of the Phylum into two Branches.—The Mollusca are sharply divided into two great lines of descent or branches, according as the prostomial region is atrophied on the one hand, or largely developed on the other.*~~

~~*The probabilities are in favour of any ancestral form— the hypothetical archi-Mollusc which connected the Mol- lusca with their non-Molluscan forefathers—having pos- sessed, as do all the more primitive forms of Ccelomata, a well-marked prostomium, and consequently a head. The one series of Mollusca descended from the primitive head- bearing Molluscs have acquired an organization in which the Molluscan characteristics have become modified in definite relation to a sessile inactive life. As the most prominent result of the adaptation to such sessile life they exhibit an atrophy of the cephalic region. They form the branch LIpocEPHALA—the mussels, oysters, cockles, and clams. The other series have retained an active, in many cases a highly aggressive, mode of life; they have, corre-*~~

spondingly, not only retained a well-developed head, but have developed a special aggressive organ in connexion with the mouth, which, on account of its remarkable nature and the peculiarities of the details of its mechanism, serves to indicate a very close genetic connexion between all such animals as possess it. This remarkable organ is the odon- tophore, consisting of a lingual ribbon, rasp, or radula, with its cushion and muscles. On account of the pos- session of this organ this great branch of the Molluscan phylum may be best designated GLossopHora. Any term

which merely points to the possession of a head is objec- | rasp (y). Anteriorly the ventral wall of the diverticulum

tionable, since this is common to them and the hypotheti- cal archi-Mollusca from which they descend. The term Odontophora, which has been applied to them, is also un- suitable, since the organ which characterizes them is not a tooth, but a tongue.

SSO ILL

y ii Dy) iN)

Fia. 9.—Odontophore of Glossophorous Mollusca.

A. Diagram showing mouth, cesophagus, and lingual apparatus of a Gastro- pod in section. au, upper lip; al, lower lip; b, calcareo-corneous jaw of left side ; c, outer surface of the snout; d, esophagus; e, fold in the wall of the cesophagus behind the radular sac (n); f, anterior tennina- tion of the radula and fts bed, the point at which it wears away ; g, base of the radular sac or recess of the pharynx ; h, cartilaginous piece developed in the floor of the pharynx beneath the radula, and serving for the attachment of numerous muscles, and for the support of the radula; i, anterior muscles ; k, posterior muscles attached to the carti- lage; J, muscle acting as a

~~*retractor of the buccal mass; m, muscle attached to the lower lip; n, posterior extremity of the radular sac o, the bed of the radula or layer of cells by which its lower surface is formed ; p, the horny radula or lingnal ribbon ; g, opening of the radular sac into the pharynx or buccal cavity; r, cells at the extreme end of the inner surface of the radular sac which produce as a "cuticular secretion" the rows of teeth of the upper surface of the radula.*~~

~~*B. Radula or lingual ribbon of Paludina vivipara, stripped from its bed,—a horny, cuticular product.*~~

~~*C. A single row of teeth from the radula of Trochus cinerarius. glossate ; formula, x.5.1.5.x.*~~

~~*D. Asingle row of teeth from the radula of Faultima fragilis. formula, x.0.x.*~~

~~*E. A single row of teeth from the radula of Chiton cinereus. for formulation.*~~

~~*F. Asingle row of teeth from the radula of Patella vulgata. Formula, 3.1.4.1.3.*~~

~~*G. A single row of teeth from the radula of Cyprea helvola. Tenioglossate ; formula, 3.1.3. '*~~

~~*H. A single row of teeth from the radula of Nassa annalata. formula, 1.1.1. The Common Whelk is similar to this.*~~

~~*Rhipido- Ptenoglossate ;*~~

~~*Too elaborate*~~

~~*Rachiglossate ;*~~

~~*The general structure of the odontophore (= tooth- bearer, in allusion to the rasp-like ribbon) of the glosso- phorous Mollusca may be conveniently described at once. Essentially it is a tube-like outgrowth—the radular sac (fig. 9, A, g, n)—in the median line of the ventral floor of the stomodeeum, upon the inner surface of which is formed a chitinous band (the radula) beset with minute teeth like a*~~

~~*is converted into cartilage (h), to which protractor and re- tractor muscles are attached (4, 2), so that by the action of the former the cartilage, with the anterior end of the ribbon resting firmly upon it, may be brought forward into the space between the lips of the oral aperture (au, al), and made to exert there a backward and forward rasping action by the alternate contraction of retractor and protractor muscles attached to the cartilage. But in many Glosso- phora (e.g., the Whelk) the apparatus is complicated by the fact that the diverticulum itself, with its contained radula, rests but loosely on the cartilage, and has special muscles attached to each end of it, arising from the body wall; these muscles pull the whole diverticulum or radular sac alternately backwards and forwards over the surface of the cartilage. This action, which is quite distinct from the movement of the cartilage itself, may be witnessed in a Whelk if the pharynx be opened whilst it is alive. It has also been seen in living transparent Gastropods. The chi- tinous ribbon is continuously growing forward from the tube-like diverticulum as a finger-nail does on its bed, and thus the wearing away of the part which rests on the car- tilage and is brought into active use, is made up for by the advance of the ribbon in the same way as the wearing down of the finger-nail is counterbalanced by its own for- ward: growth. And, just as the new substance of the finger-nail is formed in the concealed part, sunk posteriorly below a fold of skin, and yet is continually carried forward with the forward movement of the bed on which it rests, and which forms its undermost layers, so is the new sub- stance of the radula formed in the compressed extremity of the radular sac (n), and carried forward by the forward movement of the bed (0) on which it rests, and by which is formed its undermost layer. This forward-moving bed is not merely the ventral wall of the radular diverticulum, but includes also that portion of the floor of the oral cavity to which the radula adheres (as far forward as the point f in fig. 9, A). At the spot where the radula ceases, the for- ward growth-movement of the floor also ceases, just as in the case of the finger-nail the similar growth-movement ceases at the line where the nail becomes free.*~~

~~*The radula or cuticular product of the slowly-moving bed can be stripped off, and is then found to consist of a ribbon-like area, upon which are set numerous tooth-like processes of various form in transverse rows, which follow one another closely, and exactly resemble one another in the form of*~~

~~their teeth (fig. 9, B). The tooth-like processes in a single transverse row are of very different shape and num- ber in different members of the Glossophora, and it is pos- sible to use a formula for their description. Thus, when in each row there is a single median tooth with three teeth on each side of it more or less closely resembling one another, as in fig. 9, G, we write the formula 3.1.3. When there are additional lateral pieces of a different shape to those immediately adjoining the central tooth, we indi- cate them by the figure 0, repeated to represent their number, thus 0000.1.1.1.0000 is the formula for the lingual teeth of Chiton Stellerx. A single median tooth, an admedian series, and a lateral series may be thus dis- tinguished. In some Glossophora only median teeth are present, or large median teeth with a single small ad- median tooth on each side of it (fig. 9, H); these are termed Rachiglossa (formula, —.1.— or 1.1.1). In a large number of Glossophora we have three admedian on each side and one' median, no lateral pieces (fig. 9, G); these are termed Tzenioglossa (formula, 3.1.3). Those with nume- rous lateral pieces, four to six or more admedian pieces, and a median piece or tooth (fig. 9, C) are termed Rhipi doglossa (formula, x.6.1.6.x, where x stands for an inde- finite number of lateral pieces). The Toxoglossa have~~

~~MOLL~~

~~1.0.1, the central tooth being absent and the lateral teeth. peculiarly long and connected with muscles. The term Ptenoglossa (fig. 9, D) is applied to those Glossophora in which the radula presents no median tooth, but an indefinite and large number of admedian teeth, giving the formula x.0.x. When the admedian teeth are inde- finite (forty to fifty), and a median tooth is present, the term Myriaglossa is applied (formula, x.1.x). It must be understood that the pieces or teeth thus formulated may themselves vary much in form, being either flat plates, or denticulated, hooked, or spine-like bodies. We shall revert to the terms thus explained in the systematic descriptions of the groups of Glossophora.~~

~~The muscular development in connexion with the whole buccal mass, and with each part of the radular apparatus, is exceedingly complicated,—as many as twenty distinct muscles having been enumerated in connexion with this organ. In addition to the radula, and correlated with its development,~~

~~*we find almost universally present in the Glossophora a pair of horny jaws (usually calcified) de- veloped as cuticular productions upon the epidermis of the lips (fig. 9, A, 6). The radula and the shelly jaws of the Glossophora enable their possessors not only to voraciously attack vegetable food, but the radula is used in some in- stances for boring the shells of other Mollusca, and the jaws for crushing the shells of Crustacea, and for wound- ing even Vertebrata.*~~

~~*Puytum MOLLUSCA.*~~

~~*Brancw A.—GLOSSOPHORA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Mollusca with head-region more or less prominently developed ; always provided with a peculiar rasping-tongue—the odontophore—rising from the floor of the buccal cavity.*~~

~~*The Glossophora comprise three classes, chiefly distin- guished from one another by the modifications of the foot.*~~

~~*ISOPLEUROUS GASTROPODS.*~~ |

~~*Class L.—GASTROPODA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Glossophora in which (with special excep- tion of swimming forms) the Foot is simple, median in position, and flattened so as to form a broad sole-like sur- face, by the contractions of which the animal crawls, often divided into three successive regions—the pro-, meso-, and meta-podium—by lateral constrictions.*~~

~~*The Gastropoda exhibit two divergent lines of descent indicated by the term sub-class (see p. 649).*~~

~~*Sub-class 1.—GASTROPODA ISOPLEURA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Gastropoda in which not only the head and foot but also the visceral dome with its contents and the mantle retain the primitive BILATERAL SYMMETRY of the archi-Mollusc. The anus retains its position in the median line at the posterior end of the body. The whole visceral mass*~~

~~*together with the foot is elongated, so that the axis joining mouth and anus is relatively long, whilst the dorso-pedal axis at right angles to it is short. The CTENIDIA, the NEPHRIDIA, GENITAL DUCTS, and CIRCULA-TORY ORGANS are paired and bilaterally symmetrical. The pedal and visceral NERVE-coRDs are straight, parallel with one another, and all extend the whole length of the body ; the ganglionic enlargements are feebly or not at all deve- loped. The Isopleura comprise three orders.*~~

~~*Order 1.—Polyplacophora (the Chitons).*~~

~~*Characters.—Gastropoda Isopleura with a metameric re- petition of the shell to the number of eight. The shells of the primitive type are partially or wholly concealed in shell- sacs comparable to the single embryonic shell-sac of other Mollusca. On the surface of the mantle-flap numerous*~~

~~*Usgt¢ & 641*~~

~~*calcified spines and knobs are frequently developed. The ctenidia are of the typical form, small in size and meta- merically repeated along the sides of the body to the*~~

~~*SS*~~

~~*Lv zy iA, Z*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*Y*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*Z ZB Ky A,*~~

~~*Fig. 10.—Three views of Chiton. Midd., showing the eight shells.*~~

~~*A. Dorsal view of Chiton Wosnessenksii, h (After Middendorf.) B. View from the pedal surface of a species of Chiton from the Indian Ocean. p, foot; o, inouth (at the other end of the foot is seen the anus raised on a papilla); kr, oral fringe ; br, the numerous ctenidia (branchial plumes); spreading*~~

~~beyond these, and all round the animal, is the mantle-skirt. (After Cuvier.) C. The same species of Chiton, with the shells removed and the dorsal integument . reflected. 6, buccal mass; m, retractor muscles of the buccal MASS ; Ov, ovary; od, oviduct; i, coils of intestines; ao, aorta; ¢, left auricle; c, ventricle. number of sixteen or more; an osphradium or area of "olfactory epithelium" (Spengel) is found at the base of each ctenidium. The other organs are not subject to metameric repetition. The odontophore is highly devel- oped; the teeth of the lingual ribbon are varied in form,—several in each transverse row (fig. 9, E). Paired genital ducts distinct from the paired nephridia are present. The order Polyplacophora contains but one family, the Chitomde, with the genera: Chiton, Lin. (figs. 10, 15, &c.); Cryptochiton, Midd., 1847 ; and Cryptoplax (= Chitonellus),~~

~~Blainv., 1818. Order 2.—Neomeniz.~~

~~Characters.— Gastropoda Isopleura devoid of. a shell, which is replaced by innumerable microscopic calcified plates or spicules set in the dorsal epidermis; mantle-flap not lateral, but reduced to a small collar surrounding the~~

~~Fic. 11.—Neomenia carinata, Tullberg (after Tullberg). A. Lateral view. B. Ventral view. C. Dorsal view. D. Ventral view of a more extended speci- men. 4a, anterior; b, posterior extremity; c, furrow, in which the narrow foot is concealed.~~

~~anus; ctenidia represented by a symmetrical group of bran- chial filaments on either side of the anus; foot very narrow, sunk in a groove; odontophore feebly developed, but the radula many-toothed ; gonads placed in the pericardium discharging by the nephridia ; no special generative ducts.~~

~~The order Neomeniz contains the two genera Veomenia, Tullberg (Solenopus, Sars) (fig. 11); and Proneomenia, Hubrecht.~~

~~Order 3.—Cheztoderma.~~

~~Characters.— Gastropoda Isopleura devoid of a shell, which is replaced by numerous minute calcareous spines~~

~~*Fic. 12.—Chetoderma nitidulum, Loven (after Graff). The cephalic enlarge- ment is to the left, the anal chamber (reduced pallial chamber, containing the concealed pair of ctenidia) to the right.*~~

~~*standing up like hairs on the surface of the body; body XVI. — 81*~~

~~*642*~~

~~*much elongated so as to be vermiform; mantle-flap as in Neomeniz ; ctenidia in the form of a pair of branchial plumes, one on each side of the anus; foot aborted, its position being indicated by a longitudinal furrow ; odonto- phore greatly reduced, the radula only represented by a single tooth ; gonads and nephridia as in Neomenia.*~~

~~*The order Cheetoderma contains the single genus Che- toderma. (fig. 12).*~~

~~*MOLLUsocan&*~~

~~*[1SOPLEUROUS GASTROPODS.*~~

~~*cecum in Chetoderma. Salivary glands are present in Chiton and in Proneomenia. The radula is highly devel- oped in Chiton, and, though present in Proneomenia, has not been described in Neomenia. A single tooth in Che- toderma appears to represent the radula in a reduced state. The circulatory organs of Chiton alone are known with any degree of detail (fig. 10, C). There is a median dorsal blood-vessel—the aorta—which is enlarged to form a ventricle in the posterior region of the body. On either*~~

~~*Further remarks on the Isopleurous Gastropods.—The | side the ventricle is connected to a well-developed auricle,*~~

~~*union of the Chitons with the remarkable worm-like forms Neomenia and Chztoderma was rendered necessary by Hubrecht's discovery (25) in 1881 of a definitely consti- tuted radula and odontophore in his new genus Proneo- menia, founded on two specimens brought from the arctic regions by the Barents Dutch expedition.*~~

By some writers—e.g., Keferstein—the Chitons have been too intimately associated with the other Gastropoda, whilst, on the other hand, Gegenbaur seems to have gone a great deal too far in separating them altogether from the other Mollusca as a primary subdivision of that phylum, inas- much as they are inti- mately bound to the other Glossophora by the possession of a

0-.. oO

thoroughly typical and_ well – developed odontophore. They undoubtedly — stand

_.j nearer to the archi- Mollusca than any other Glossophora in having retained acom- plete bilateral sym- metry and the primi- tive shell-sac, though the metameric repe- tition of this organ and of the ctenidia is a complication of, and departure from, the primitive character. It is not improbable that in the calcareous spines and plates of the dorsal integument of Neomenia and Che- toderma, which occur

f Fic. 13.—Diagrams of the alimentary canal of also on the part o

Isopleura (from Hubrecht). 0, mouth; a, the dorsum uncovered

anus ; d, alimentary canal; 1, liver (digestive 4 A gland). 'he Neomenia and Proncomenia. B. by shell in Chiton, we have the retention of

Cheetoderma. ©. Chiton.

a condition preceding the development of the solid Mol- luscan shell, or a reversion to it. The minute calcareous bodies may have the same relation to a compact shell which the shagreen denticles of the sharks have to a continuous dermal bone.

The anatomy of the Gastropoda Isopleura has been largely elucidated within the past year by the researches of Hubrecht and of Sedgwick, who have been the first to apply the method of sections to the study of this group.

The leading points in the modifications of mantle-flap, foot, and ctenidia are set forth in the preceding summaries, and in the accompanying

~~*references to the figures. With regard to other organs, we have to note the form of the alimentary canal (fig. 13), which is simplest in Chetoderma, symmetrically sacculated in Neomenia, and wound upon itself, forming a few coils, in Chiton. The latter has a compact liver with arborescent duct, which is represented by the sacculi in Neomenia and by a single*~~

~~*which pours into it the aerated blood from the gills (ctenidia). The extent to which vascular trunks are developed has not been determined, but vessels to and from the ctenidia, and in the mid-line of the foot, are known. As in other Mollusca, the vessels do not extend far, but lead into lacune between the organs and tissues. Dorsal and ventral vessels have been detected in Neomenia and Chetoderma, but no specialized heart.*~~

~~*Fia. 14.—Diagrams of the excretory and reproductive organs of Isopleura (after Hubrecht). 0, ovary ; P, pericardium ; N, nephridium ; w, external aperture of nephridiuin ; g, external aperture of the genital duct of Chiton ; r, rectum ; Cl, cloacal or pallial chamber of Neomeniz and Chetoderma; Br, ctenidia —— plumes). A. Chetoderma. B. Neomenia. C. Proneomenia. D.*~~

~~*The heart of Chiton lies in a space which is to be regarded as a specialized part of the cœlom, and, as in other Molluscs, is termed the pericardium. In front of this space in Chiton lies the ovary (fig. 14, D). In the other Isopleura the genital bodies (gonads) lie in the peri- cardium, which has a longer form and extends dorsally above the intestine. Opening into the pericardium equally in all the Isopleura (fig. 14) is a pair of bent tubes which lead to the exterior. These are the nephridia, which in*~~

~~*Chiton are essentially renal in function. Their disposition*~~

~~*has been determined by Sedgwick (26), who has shown that*~~

~~*each nephridium is much bent on itself, so that, as in the*~~

~~*nephridia of Conchifera (organ of Bojanus), the internal | menia (seen also in Fissurella (fig. 36) and some other aperture lies near the external. From the folded stem of | Gastropods) are comparable to the transverse connexions the nephridium very numerous secreting cæca are given off,*~~

~~*—omitted in the dia- gram (fig. 14, D), but accurately drawn in fig. 15. The sexes in Chiton are distinct, and the ovary or testis, as the case may be, though lying in and filling a chamber of the original cœlom, does not discharge into the pericardium, but has its own ducts, which pass to the ex- terior just in front of those of the nephridia (fig. 14, D, g, and fig. 16). In this respect Chiton is less primi- tive than the other Iso- pleura, and even than some other Gastropods (the | Zygobranchia), and some Conchifera (Spondylus, &c.), which have no special genital apertures, but make use of the nephridia for*~~

~~*this purpose. In Chiton Fic. 15.—Dissection of the renal organs (neph-*~~

~~*discrepans, in which there are sixteen pairs of ctenidia, the orifices of the nephridia are coincident with the six- teenth pair of ctenidia, those of the genital*~~

~~*ridia) of Chiton siculus, after Haller (Arbeiten, Zool. Instit., Vienna, 1882). F, foot; L, edge of the mantle not removed in the front part of the specimen ; s.0., oesophagus ; af, anus; gg, genital duct; go, external opening of the same ; eg, stem of the nephridium leading to no, its external aperture ; nk, reflected portion of the nephridial stem; ng, fine czeca of the nephri- dium, which are seen ramifying transversely over the whole inner surface of the pedal mus- cular mass.*~~

~~*ducts with a point between the thirteenth and fourteenth*~~

~~*ctenidia.*~~

~~*In the Neomeniz and Chetoderma the nephridia are*~~

~~*short and wide (JW in fig. 14, A, B, C), and function as excretory ducts for the genital products, the gonads being lodged in the long pericardium. Their separate or united apertures open near the anus into the small*~~

~~*chamber formed by the restriction of the mantle-skirt to the immediate neighbourhood of the anus.*~~

~~*The nervous system of the Gas- tropoda Isopleura is represented in the diagram fig. 17. In all it is important to observe that nerve- ganglion cells are by no means limited to special swellings—the ganglia—but are abundant along the whole course of the four great longitudinal trunks. This is a pri- mitive character comparable to that*~~

~~*of the ventral nerve- cords of Chetopod worms and Arthro- pods. In the abund- ance of the nervous network connected with its longitudinal nerve-tracts, Chiton appears to retain some- thing of the early con- dition of the Ccelo- mate nervous system when it had the form of a sub-epidermic net-work or nerve-tunic (seen more clearly in Planarians and some Nemertines), and when the concentration into definitely compacted cords had not set in. Ganglia are, how- ever, distinguishable upon the nervous cords of Chiton (fig. 18). The cerebral ganglia are not distinguishable as such, but a pair of buccal ganglia (B in fig. 18) are developed on two connectives which pass forward from the cerebral re- gion to the great mus-cular mass of the mouth. These buccal ganglia are special de- velopments connected with the special mus- cularity of the lips and odontophore, and are found in all Glosso- phora, but not in the Lipocephala.*~~

~~*B*~~

~~*AAA*~~

~~*pe Fic. 17.—Diagrams of the nervous system of Isopleura (after Hubrecht, loc. cit.). , cere- bral ganglia; s, sublingual ganglia; v, pedal (ventral) nerve-cord ; 1, visceral (lateral) nerve- cord; pc, post-anal junction of the visceral nerve-cords. A. Proneomenia. B. Neomenia. C. Chetoderma. D. Chiton.*~~

~~*Such special ganglia related to special*~~

~~*organs (and not introduced in our schematic Mollusc, fig.*~~

~~*V*~~

~~1) we find in connexion with the siphons of the Lipoce- phala, and in various posi- tions upon the visceral nerve- cords of other Mollusca, both Glossophora and. Lipocephala. A pair of pedal ganglia but little developed (yp in fig. 18), and a special group of sub- lingual ganglia are present in Chiton. On the whole, the nervous system of the Iso- . pleura is exceedingly simple and archaic, whilst it does not well serve as a type with which to compare that of~~

~~Fio, 16.—Ovary and oviducts presented by the nerve-cords of Ne- of Chiton siculus (after Hal- 7 ‘ ley, lor. at) #b, Ab, anterior MOTUBE Worms, and of the Arthro iy posterior viene | of pod Peripatus. Higher differen-~~

~~e ovary; U, uterus (en- 4:, 4: : larged part of’ oviduct); a, tiation im other Mollusca leads to eeaner: predominance if not an exclusive presence of nerve-fibres in the cords, and of nerve-ganglion cells in the specialized ganglia. ‘The numerous transverse connexions of the pedal nerve-cords in Chiton and Neo-~~

~~Fie. 18.—Anterior part of the nervous system of Chiton cinereus, in more de- other Mollusca on account of tail(from Gegenbaur, Elements ofComp. f Anatomy). B, buccal ganglia ec. the small amount of concen- cerned with the odontophore); C. ; 7 i (ail boa 2 eal tration of its nerve ganglion glion and commencement of pedal cells into ganglia, such as we nerve-cord ; pl, visceral nerve-cord. :~~

~~The sublingual ganglia are not let- find well developed in other tered. forms.~~

~~The development of Neomenia and Chetoderma from~~

~~the egg is entirely unknown, that of Chiton only par- tially. Impregnation is effected when the eggs have been discharged and are lying beneath the mantle-skirt. A trochosphere larva is developed from the Diblastula of Chiton (Loven). .~~

~~*The Chitons are found in the littoral zone in all parts of the world, and are exclusively marine. Neomenia, Proneo- menia, and Cheetoderma have hitherto been dredged from considerable depths (100 fathoms and upwards) in the North Sea, Proneomenia also in the Mediterranean (Marion).*~~

~~*Sub-class 2—GASTROPODA ANISOPLEURA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Gastropoda in which, whilst the head and foot retain the bilateral symmetry of the archi-Mollusca, the visceral dome, including the mantle-flap dependent from it, and the region on which are placed the ctenidia, anus, generative and nephridial apertures, have been subjected to a ROTATION tending to bring the anus from its posterior median position, by a movement along the right side, forwards to a position above the right side of the animal's neck, or even to the middle line above the neck. This torsion is connected mechanically with the excessive vertical growth of the visceral hump and the development upon its surface of a heavy shell. The sHELL is not a plate en- closed in a shell-sac, but the primitive shell-sac appears and disappears in the course of embryonic development, and a relatively large nautiloid shell (with rare exceptions) develops over the whole surface of the visceral hump and mantle-skirt. Whilst such a shell might retain its median position in a swimming animal, it and the visceral hump necessarily fall to one side in a creeping animal which carries them uppermost.*~~

~~*The shell and visceral hump in the Anisopleura incline*~~

~~*fl a*~~

~~*Fa. 19.—Diagram to show the effect of torsion or rotation of the visceral hump in Gastropoda, when the visceral nerve commissure passes above the intestine ; 4, unrotated ancestral condition; B, quarter-rotation ; C, com- plete semi-rotation (the limit) ; L, left, R, right side of the animal; an, anus ; ln, rn, primarily left nephridium and primarily right nephridium ; lg, primarily left (subsequently the sub-intestinal) visceral ganglion eae primarily right (subsequently the sub-intestinal) visceral ganglion. The dotted circle indicates the basal area of the visceral hump which undergoes rotation,*~~

~~*normally to the right side of the animal. As mechanical*~~

~~*results, there arise a one-sided pressure and a one-sided*~~

~~*strain, together with a one-sided development of the muscular masses which are related to the shell and foot.*~~

~~*Both the TORSION THROUGH A SEMICIRCLE of the base of the*~~

~~*visceral dome and the continued leiotropic spiral growth*~~

~~*of the visceral dome itself, which is very usual in the*~~

~~*Anisopleura, appear to be traceable to these mechanical*~~

~~*conditions. ATRopHY of the representatives on one side*~~

~~*of the body of paired organs is very usual. Those placed priumitively on the left side of the rectum, which in virtue of the torsion becomes the right side, are the set which suffer*~~

~~*(see fig. 19). Some Anisopleura, after having thus acquired*~~

~~*a strongly-marked inequilateral character in regard to such*~~

~~*organs as the ctenidia, nephridia, genital ducts, heart, and*~~

~~*rectum, appear by further change of conditions of growth to have acquired a superficial bilateral symmetry, the second-*~~

~~*Ube &*~~

~~*[ANISOPLEUROUS GASTROPODS.*~~

~~*ary nature of which is revealed by anatomical examination (Opisthobranchia, Natantia).*~~

~~*In all groups of Anisopleura examples are numerous in which the shell is greatly developed, forming a "house" into which the whole animal can be*~~

~~*with- drawn, the entrance being often closed by a second shelly piece carried upon the foot (the operculum). The power of rapidly extending and of again contract- ing large regions of the body to an*~~

~~*Fic.20.—Nervous system*~~

~~*of Aplysia, as a type of ©*~~

~~*the long- looped Euthy- neurous condition. The*~~

~~*enormous degree is usual, as in the Li- pocephalous Mol- lusca. In spite of the theories which have been held on this matter, it ap- pears highly prob- able that no fluid from without is in- troduced into the blood, nor is any ex- pelled during these changes of form. A large mucous gland with a med- ian pore is usually developed on the ventral surface of the foot, compar- able to the similar gland and pore in Lipocephala, and in*~~

~~*Fic. 21.—Nervous system of Paludina as a type of the Streptoneurous con- dition. B, buccal (sub- cesophageal) ganglion ; C, cerebral ganglion; Co, pleural ganglion ; P, pe- dal ganglion with otocyst attached ; p, pedal nerve; A, abdominal ganglion at the extremity of the twisted visceral "loop" ;*~~

~~*sp, supra-intestinal visce- ral ganglion on the course of the right visceral cord ; sb, sub-intestinal ganglion on the course of the left visceral cord. (From Ge- genbaur, after Jhering.)*~~

~~*untwisted visceral loop SOMe Cases (6.9 ms ia*~~

~~*is lightly shaded. ce, ryla fig. 37, B) this*~~

~~*cerebral ganglion ; pl, ' :*~~

~~*pleural ganglion; pe, has been mistaken*~~

~~*pedal ganglion ; ab. sp, e*~~

~~*abdominal ganglion, for a water P Ore. 3*~~

~~*which represents also The leiotropic*~~

~~*ganglion. of "Strepts. torsion of the visceral dome has had*~~

~~*neura and gives off the Jess deep-seated effect in one series of*~~

~~*nerve to the osphra- 5 .*~~

~~*dium (olfactory organ) Anisopleura than in another. Accord-*~~

~~*o, and another toan un- :*~~

~~*lettered so-called "ge. gly, as the loop formed by the two*~~

~~*Tata)" ganglion. The VISCERAL NERVES (fig. 19) is or is not*~~

~~*buccal nerves and gan- : . h :*~~

~~*glia are omitted. (After caught, as it were, in the twist, we are*~~

~~*pongel.) able to distinguish one branch or line of descent with straight visceral nerves—the EUTHYNEURA*~~

~~*a]*~~

~~*Fig. 22.—Nervous system of the Pond-Snail, Limnaus stagnalis, as a type of the short-looped Euthyneurous condition. The short visceral "loop" with its three ganglia is lightly-shaded. ce, cerebral ganglion ; pe, pedal ganglion ; pl, pleural ganglion ; ab, abdominal ganglion; sp, visceral ganglion of the left side; opposite to it is the visceral ganglion of the right side, which gives off the long nerve to the olfactory ganglion and osphradium o. In Planorbis and in Auricula (Pulmonata, allied to Limneus) the olfactory organ is on the left side and receives its nerve from the left visceral ganglion. (After Spengel.)*~~

~~*(fig. 20)—from a second branch with the visceral nerves*~~

~~*ZYGOBRANCHIA.|*~~

~~*twisted into a figure-of-eight—the Srrepronrura (fig. 21), Probably the Euthyneura and the Streptoneura have de- veloped independently from the ancestral bilaterally sym- metrical Gastropods.- The escape of the visceral nerve-loop from the torsion depends on its having acquired a somewhat deeper position and shorter extent, previously to the com- mencement of the phenomenon of torsion, in the ancestors of the Euthyneura than in those of the Streptoneura. The junction of the two halves of the visceral loop in the Euthyneura is below the anus, and the loop is therefore not caught by the intestine. In the Streptoneura the junction is (as in the Isopleura) above the anus.*~~

~~*Branch a.—STREPTONEURA (Spengel, 1881).*~~

~~*Characters.—Gastropoda Anisopleura in which the visceral "loop" (the conterminous visceral nerves) em- braces the intestine and therefore shares in the torsion of the visceral hump, the right cord crossing above the left so as to form a figure-of-eight (see fig. 19).*~~

~~*The Streptoneura comprise two orders — the Zygo branchia and the Azygobranchia.*~~

~~*Order 1.—Zygobranchia.*~~

~~*Characters.—Streptoneura in which, whilst the visceral torsion is very complete so as to bring the anus into the middle line anteriorly or nearly so, the atrophy of the primitively left-side organs is not carried out. The right and left ctenidia, which have now become left and right respectively, are of equal size, and are placed symmetrically on either side of the neck in the pallial space. Related to them is a simple pair of osphradial patches. Both right*~~

~~*Fig. 23.—Haliotis tuberculata. d, foot; i, tentacular processes of the mantle. (From Owen, after Cuvier.)*~~

~~*and left nephridia are present, the actual right one being much larger than the left. Two auricles may be present right and left of a median ventricle (Haliotis), or only one (Patella). The Zygobranchia are further very definitely characterized by the archaic character of absence of special*~~

~~genital ducts. The generative products escape by the larger nephridium. The sexes are distinct, and there is no copulatory or other accessory generative apparatus. The teeth of the lingual ribbon are highly differentiated (Rhipidoglossate). The visceral dome lies close upon the oval sucker-like foot, and is coextensive with its prolonga- tion in the aboral direction.~~

~~The Zygobranchia comprise three families, arranged in two sub- orders.~~

~~Sub-order 1. Ctenidiobranchia.~~

~~Character.—Large paired ctenidia acting as gills. Family 1.—Haliotidez. : Genera: Haliotis (Ear-Shell, Ormer in Guernsey); mostly tropical ; Teinotis. Family 2.—Fissurellidx. , Genera: Fisswrella (Key-hole Limpet) (figs. 24, 36), Hmarginula, Parmophorus (fig. 25) ; mostly tropical.~~

~~Sub-order 2, Phyllidiobranchia. Characters. —Ctenidia reduced to wart-like papille; special sub-~~

~~pallial lamelle, similar to those of the Opisthobranch Pleuro- phyllidia, perform the function of gills, Family 3.—Patellide.~~

~~a: Patella (Limpet, figs. 26, &c.), Nacella (Bonnet-Limpet), ottia.~~

~~_ Further Remarks on Zygobranchia.—The Common Limpet 1s a specially interesting and abundant example of the remarkable order Zygobranchia. A complete and accurate account of its anatomy has yet to be written, Here we have only space for a brief outline. The foot of the Limpet is a nearly circular disc of muscular tissue 3 in front, projecting from and raised above it, are the head and neck (figs. 26, 30). The visceral hump forms a low conical dome above the sub- circular foot, and standing out all round the base of this dome so as to completely overlap the head and foot, is the circular mantle-skirt. The depth of free mantle-skirt is greatest in front, where the head and neck are covered in by it. Upon the surface of the visceral dome, and extending to the edge of the free mantle-skirt, is the~~

~~conical shell. When the shell is taken away (best effected by immersion in hot water) the surface of the vis- ceral dome is found to be covered by a black-coloured epithelium, which may be re- t moved, enabling the observer giniz' ger arene left) nephri- to note the position of some @rchaic right) aperture of nephri- organs lying below the trans- “”™”) ? snout (Original.) parent integument (fig. 27). The muscular columns © attaching the foot to the shell form a ring incomplete in or _— front, external to which is the free mantle-skirt. The limits of the large area formed by the flap over the head and neck (ecr) can be traced, and we note the anal papilla show- ing through and opening on the right shoulder, so to speak, of the animal into the large anterior region of the sub-pallial space. Close to this the small renal organ (7, mediad) and the larger renal organ (4, to the right and posteriorly) are seen; also the pericardium (2) and a coil of the in- testine (nt) embedded in the com- pact liver. On cutting away the anterior part of the mantle-skirt so as to expose the sub-pallial chamber in the region of the neck, we find the right and : left renal papillee (discovered by Lan- Miron the pedal surface… Kester (27) in 1867) on either side~~

~~Paty pty eA ten: the anal papilla (fig. 28), but no gills.~~

~~symmetrical gills placedon If a similar examination be made~~

~~theneck. (Original.) of the allied genus Fissurella (fig. 24, d), we find right and left of the two renal apertures a right and left gill-plume or ctenidium, which by their presence here and in Haliotis furnish the distinctive char- acter to which the name Zygobranchia refers. In Patella no such plumes exist, but right and left of the neck are seen a pair of minute oblong yellow bodies (fig. 28, a), which were originally described by Lankester as orifices possibly connected with the evacuation of the generative~~

~~ROD~~

~~WES vv 7a~~

~~KE~~

~~ft 1\~~

~~N \~~

~~ee. SSS~~

~~<2~~

~~kK~~

~~KS Sz~~

~~SX~~

~~Fic. 24.—Dorsal aspect of a specimen of Fissurella from which the shell has been removed, whilst the ante- rior area of the mantle-skirt has been longitudinally slit and its sides reflected. a, cephalic tentacle; b, foot; d, left (archaic right) gill- plume ; ¢, reflected mantle-flap ; fi, the fissure or hole in the mantle-flap traversed by the longitudinal inci-~~

~~N~~

~~646~~

~~products. On account of their position they were termed by him the "'capito-pedal orifices," being placed near the junction of head and foot. Spengel (24) has, however, in a most ingenious way shown that these bodies are the repre- sentatives of the typical pair of ctenidia, here reduced to a mere rudiment. Neartoeach rudimentary ctenidium Spengel~~

~~Fro, 26.—The Common Limpet (Patella vulgata)in its shell, seen from the pedal surface, a, y, the median antero-posterior axis; a, cephalic tentacle; b, plantar surface of the foot; ¢, free edge of the shell; d, the branchial effe- rent vessel carrying aerated blood to the auricle, and here interrupting the circlet of gill lamelle; e, margin of the mantle-skirt; f gill lamelle (not ctenidia, but special pallial growths, comparable to those of Pleurophyllidia); g, the branchial efferent vessel ; h, factor of the branchial advehent vessel ; 1, interspaces between the muscular bundles of the root of the foot, causing the separate arcs seen in fig. 27, «, (Original.)~~

~~*has discovered an olfactory patch or osphradium (consisting of modified epithelium) and an olfactory nerve-ganglion (fig. 32). It will be remembered that, according to Spengel, the osphra- dium of Mollusca is definitely and inti- mately related to the gill- plume or cteni- dium, being always placed near the base of that organ; further, Spengel has shown that the nerve-supply of this olfactory organ is always derived from the visceral loop. Ac- cordingly, the nerve- supply affords a means of testing the conclu- sion that we have in*~~

~~*Lankester's capito- Fio. 27.—Dorsal surface of the Limpet removed*~~

~~*3-4 from its shell and deprived of its black pig-*~~

~~*pedal bodies the rudi- rene epithelium ; the internal orice aes*~~

~~*ala seen through the transparent body-wall. c.*~~

~~*nientary ctenidia. The muscular bundles forming the root of the foot, accompanying dia- grams (figs. 34, 35) of*~~

~~*and adherent to the shell; e, free mantle-*~~

~~*skirt; em, tentaculiferous margin of the same ;*~~

~~*i, smaller (left) nephridium ; k, larger (right)*~~

~~*the nervous systems of nephridium ; 1, pericardium ; lx, fibrous septum, 'Patel ek Waliot; behind the pericardium; n, liver; int, intes- atella and 0 a lotis, tine; ecr, anterior area of the mantle-skirt over- as determined by Spen- hanging the head (cephalic hood), (Original.) gel, show the identity in the origin of the nerves passing from the visceral loop to Spengel's olfactory ganglion of the Limpet, and that of the nerves which pass from the visceral loop of Haliotis to the olfactory patch or osphra- dium, which lies in immediate relation on the right and on the left side to the right and the left gill-plumes (ctenidia) respectively. The same diagrams serve to de-*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*[ZYGOBRANCHIA.*~~

~~*monstrate the Streptoneurous condition of the visceral loop in Zygobranchia.*~~

~~*Thus, then, we find that the Limpet possesses a sym- metrically-disposed pair of ctenidia in a rudimentary con- dition, and justifies its position among Zygobranchia, At the same time it pos- sesses a totally dis- tinct series of func- tional gills, which are not derived from the modification of the typical Mollus- can ctenidium. These gills are in*~~

~~*the form of delicate Fic. 28.—Anterior portion of the same Limpet, with*~~

~~*he overhanging cephalic hood removed. a, ce- lamellze (fig. 26, f » phalic tentacle; , foot; ¢, muscular substance which form a series forming the root of the foot; d, the capito-pedal extending com-*~~

~~*organs of Lankester (=rudimentary ctenidia); e, mantle-skirt ; f, papilla of the larger nephridium ; pletely round the inner face of the*~~

~~*g, anus; h, papilla of the smaller nephridium; i, depending mantle-*~~

~~*smaller nephridium ; k, "vs nephridium ; J peri- cardium; m, cut edge of the mantle-skirt; n,*~~

~~*liver; p, snout. (Original.) skirt. This circlet of gill-lamelle led Cuvier to class the Limpets as Cyclobranchiata, and, by erroneous identifica- . tion of them with the series of meta- merically repeated ctenidia of Chiton, to associate the latter Molluse with the former. The gill-lamelle of Patella are processes of the mantle compar- able to the plait- like folds often*~~

~~*Fio. 29.—The mee Se et AEP a observed on the front, so as to show the sub- anal tract (ff) 0 e larger nephridium, by which it communicates with roof of the bran- the pericardium. 0, mouth; other letters asin fig. 28. ehial chamber in*~~

~~*other Gastropoda (e.g., Buccinum and Haliotis), They are termed pallial gills. The only other Molluscs in which they are exactly represented Tao*~~

are the curious Opistho- branchs Phyllidia and Pleurophyllidia (fig. 57). In these, as in Patella, the typical ctenidia are aborted, and the branchial function is assumed by close-set lamelliform processes ar- ranged in a series beneath the mantle-skirt on either side of the foot. In fig. 26, d the large branchial vein of Patella bringing blood from

ksi the gill-series to the heart Fi¢- 30.—Diagram of the two renal organs

(nephridia), to show their relation to the rectum and to the pericardium. jf, pa- pilla of the larger nephridium; g, anal papilla with rectum leading from it; h, papilla of the smaller nephridium, which is only represented by dotted outlines ; 1, pericardium indicated by a dotted out- line,—at its right side are seen the two reno-pericardial pores; jf, the sub-anal tract of the large nephridium given off near its papilla and seen through the unshaded smaller nephridium; ks.a, an- terior superior lobe of the large ne- phridium ; ks./, left lobe of same; ks.p, posterior lobe of same; ks.i, inferior sub-visceral lobe of sane, (Original.)

is seen; where it crosses the series of lamelle there is a short interval devoid of lamellz.

The heart in Patella con- sists of a single auricle (not two as in Haliotis and Fis- surella) and a ventricle; the former receives the blood from the branchial vein, the latter distributes it through a large aorta which soon leads into irregular blood-lacune.

ZYGOBRANCHEA.

The existence of two renal organs in Patella, and their relation to the pericardium (a portion of the ccelom), is

Fic. 31.—Diagram of a vertical antero-postero median section of a Limpet. Letters as in figs. 28, 29, with following additions: g, intestine in transverse section ; r, lingual sac (radular sac); rd, radula; s, lamellated stomach ; ¢, salivary gland ; u, duct of same; v, buccal cavity; w, gonad ; br.a, branchial advehent vessel (artery); br.v, branchial efferent vessel (vein); bv, blood-

~~vessel; odm, muscles and cartilage of the odontophore ; cor, heart within the pericardium. (Original.)~~

~~important. Each renal organ is a sac lined with glandular epithelium (ciliated cells with concretions) communicating~~

~~Fic. 82.—A. Section in a plane vertical to the surface of the neck of Patella through a, the rudimentary ctenidium (Lankester's organ), and }, the olfactory epithelium (osphradium); c, the olfactory (osphradial) ganglion. (After Spengel.) B. Surface view of a rudimentary ctenidium of Patella, excised and viewed as a transparent object. (Original.)~~

~~with the exterior by its papilla, and by a narrow passage with the pericardium. The connexion with the pericar-~~

~~Fic. 33,—Vertical section in a plane running right and left throngh the anterior part of the visceral hump of Patella, to show the two renal organs and their openings into the pericardium. a, large or external or right renal organ ; ab, narrow process of the same running below the intestine and lead- ing by k into the pericardium; 6, small or median renal organ; ¢, pericardium ; d, rectum ; e, liver; f, manyplies; g, epithelium of the dorsal surface ; h, renal epithelinm lining the renal sacs; 4, aperture connecting the small sac with the pericardium; k, aperture connecting the large sac with the pericardium. (From an original drawing by Mr J. T. Cunningham, Fellow of University College, Oxford.)~~

~~dium of the smaller of the two renal organs was demon- strated by Lankester in 1867, at a time when the fact~~

~~BAOoLLvUsca~~

~~647~~

~~that the renal organ of the Mollusca, as a rule, opens into the pericardium, and is therefore a typical nephridium,~~

~~was not known. Subsequent investigations (27) carried on under. the direction of the same~~

~~naturalist have shown that the larger as well as the smaller renal sac is in communication with the pericardium. The walls of the renal sacs are deeply plaited and thrown into ridges. Below the surface these walls are excavated with blood-vessels, so that the sac \ is practically a series of blood-ves- sels covered with renal epithelium, and forming a mesh-work within a space communicating with the exterior. The larger renal sac (re- markably enough, that which is aborted in other Anisopleura) ex- tends between the liver and the integument of the visceral dome Fre. 34.—Nervous system of Pa- very widely. It also bends round [fentiy Te aesera gor, is the liver as shown in fig. 30, and ganglia are omitted. ce, cere- forms a large sac on half of the~~

~~/~~

~~ce~~

~~pe~~

~~bral ganglia; c'e,cerebral com- missure ; pl, pleural ganglion ; upper surface of the muscular mass % Pedal ganglion ; p's, pedal E — nerve ; s, s', nerves (right and~~

~~of the foot. Here it lies close left) to the mantle ; 0, olfac- : ory ganglion, connected b~~

~~upon the genital body (ovary or nerve to the Streptoneurons testis), and in such intimate rela- visceral loop. (After Spengel.) tionship with it that, when ripe, the gonad bursts into the renal sac, and its products are carried to the exterior by the papilla on the right side of the anus (Robin, Dall). This fact led Cuvier erroneously to the belief that a duct existed leading from the gonad to this papilla. The position of the gonad, best seen in the diagrammatic~~

~~Fic, 35.—Nervous system of Haliotis; the visceral loop is Ughtly shaded ; the buccal ganglia are omitted. ce, cerebral ganglion ; pl.pe, the fused pleural and pedal ganglia; pe, the right pedal nerve ; ce.pl, the cerebro- pleural con- nective; ce.pe, the cerebro-pedal connective; s, s', right and left mantle nerves ; ab, abdominal ganglion or site of same ; 0, 0, right and~~

~~*left olfactory ganglia and osphradia receiving nerve from visceral loop. (After Spengel.)*~~

~~*section (fig. 31), is, as in other Zygobranchia, devoid of*~~

~~*a special duct communicating with the exterior. This*~~

~~*condition, probably an archaic one, distinguishes the Zygo-*~~

~~*branchia among all Glossophorous Mollusca. The digestive tract of Patella offers some interesting features. The odontophore is powerfully developed ; the*~~

~~*radular sac is extraordinarily long, lying coiled in a space*~~

~~*648*~~

~~*between the mass of the liver and the muscular foot. The radula has 160 rows of teeth with twelve teeth in each row. Two pairs of salivary ducts, each leading from a salivary gland, open into the buccal chamber. The cesophagus leads into a remarkable stomach, plaited like the manyplies of a sheep, and after this the intestine takes a very large num- ber of turns embedded in the yellow liver, until at last it passes between the two renal sacs to the anal papilla. A curious ridge (spiral? valve) which secretes a slimy cord is found upon the inner wall of the intestine. The general structure of the Molluscan intestine has not been suffi- ciently investigated to render any comparison of this struc- ture of Patella with that of other Mollusca possible. The eyes of the Limpet (28) deserve mention as examples of the most primitive kind of eye in the Molluscan series. They are found one on each cephalic tentacle, and are simply minute open pits or depressions of the ¢@ epidermis, the epidermic Ss cells lining them being \|i pigmented and connected with nerves (compare fig.*~~

~~*118).*~~

~~*The Limpet breeds upon the southern Eng- lish coast in the early part of April, but its de- velopment has not been followed. It has simply been traced as far as the formation of a Diblastula which acquires a ciliated band, and*~~

~~*becomes a nearly spherical Trocho- sphere. It is probable that the Limpet takes several years to attain full growth, and during that period it frequents the same spot, which becomes gradually sunk below the surrounding 5.4 96. surface, especially if the rock be carbonate of lime. At low tide the Limpet (being a strictly inter- tidal organism) is ex- posed to the air, and is to be found upon its spot of fixation ; but when the water again covers it, it (according to trustworthy observers) quits its attachment and walks away in search of food (minute encrusting algze), and then once more as the tide falls returns to the identical spot, not an inch in diameter, which belongs, as it were, to it. Several million Limpets—twelve million in Berwickshire alone—are annually used on the east coast of Britain as bait.*~~

~~*—Nervous system of Fissurella. pl, pallial nerve; p, pedal nerve; A, abdomi- nal ganglia in the Streptoneurous visceral commissure, with supra- and sub-intestine ganglion on each side; B, buccal ganglia ; C, C, cerebral ganglia ; es, cerebral commis- sure; 0, otocysts attached to the cerebro-pedal connectives. (From Gegenbaur, after Jhering.)*~~

~~*Order 2.—Azygobranchia.*~~

~~*Characters.—Streptoneura which, as a sequel to the torsion of the visceral hump, have lost by atrophy the originally left ctenidium and the originally left nephridium, retaining the right ctenidium as a comb-like gill-plume to the actual left of the rectum, and the right nephridium (that which is the smaller in the Zygobranchia) also to the actual left of the rectum, between it and the gill-plume. The right olfactory organ only is retained, and may assume the form of a comb-like ridge to the actual left of the ctenidium or branchial plume. It has been erroneously described as the second gill, and is known as the para- branchia, The rectum itself lies on the animal's right*~~

~~*shoulder. The presence of glandular plication of the surface of the mantle-flap (fig. 46, x) and an adrectal gland (purple- gland, fig. 47, gp) are frequently observed. The sexes are always distinct; a special genital duct (oviduct or sperm duct) unpaired is present, opening either by the side of*~~

~~*the anus or, in the males, on the right side of the neck in con- nexion with a large penis. The shell is usually large and spiral; often an operculum is developed on the upper sur- face of the hinder part of the foot. The dentition of the lingual ribbon is very varied. In most cases the visceral hump and the foot increase along axes at right angles to one another, so that the foot is extended far behind the visceral hump in the ab-oral direction, whilst the visceral hump is lofty and spirally twisted.*~~

~~*This is a very large group, and is conveniently divided into two sections, the Reptantia and the Natantia. The former, containing the immense majority of the group, breaks up into three sub-orders, the Holochlamyda, Pneu- monochlamyda, and Siphonochlamyda, characterized by the presence or absence of a trough-like prolongation of the margin of the mantle-flap, which conducts water to the respiratory chamber (sub-pallial space where the gill, anus, &c., are placed), and notches the mouth of the shell by its presence, or again by adaptation to aerial respira- tion. The sub-orders are divided into groups according to the characters of the lingual dentition. In some Azygo- branchia the mouth is placed at the end of a more or less elongated snout or rostrum which is not capable of intro- version (Rostrifera); in the others (Proboscidifera) the rostrum is partly invaginated and is often of great length. It is only everted when the animal is feeding, and is with- drawn (introverted) by the action of special muscles; the over-worked term "proboscis" is applied to the retractile form of snout. The term "introversible snout," or simply "introvert," would be preferable. The presence or absence of this arrangement does not seem to furnish so natural a division of the Reptant Azygobranchia as that afforded by the characters of the mantle-skirt.*~~

~~*Section a.—REPTANTIA,*~~

~~*Characters.—Azygobranchia adapted to a creeping life; foot either wholly or only the mesopodium in the form of a creeping disc.*~~

~~*Sub-order 1.—Holochlamyda.*~~

~~*Characters.—Reptant Azygobranchia with a simple margin to the mantle-skirt, and, accordingly, the lip of the shell unnotched ; mostly Rostrifera*~~

~~(7.c., with a non-introversible snout), and vege- tarian ; marine, brackish, fresh-water, terrestrial.~~

~~a. Rhipidoglossa (x.4 to 7.1.4 to 7.x).~~

~~Family 1.—Trochide. Genera: Turbo, Lin.; Phasianella, Lam.; Imperator, Monttf.; Trochus, Lin.; Rotella, Lam.; Euomphalus, Low. Family 2.—WNeritide. Genera: Nerita, L.; Neritina, Lam.; Pileolus, Low ; Navicella, Lam. Family 3.—Plewrotomaride. Genera: Pleurotomaria, Defr.; Anatomus, Montf.; Stomatia, Helbing. ; B. Ptenoglossa (x.0.x). Family 4.—Scalaride. Genus: Sealaria, Lam. Family 5.—Janthinide. Genera: Janthina, Lam. (fig. 44); Reeluzia, Petit.~~

~~y- Texnioglossa (3.1.3). Family 6.—Cerithide. Genera: Cerithium, Brug.; Potamides, Brong.; Nerinwa, Defr. Family 7.—Melanide. Genera: Melania, Lam.; Melanopsis, Fér.; Ancylotus, Lay. Family 8.—Pyramidellide. Genera: Pyramidella, Lam.; Stylina, Flem.; Aclis, Loveu. Family 9.—Turritellide. Genera: Turritella, Lam.; Cecwm, Flem.; Ve ermetus, Adans.; Siliquaria, Brug. Family 10.—Xenophoride. Genus: Phorus, Montf. (fig. 39).~~

~~AZYGOBRANCHIA. |~~

~~TABULAR VIEW OF THE SUBDIVISIONS OF THE CLASS~~

~~MCLLUSCA~~

~~649~~

~~GASTROPODA, ARRANGED sO AS TO SHOW THEIR SUPPOSED GENETIC~~

~~RELATIONSHIPS.~~

~~Class.—-GASTROPODA. (Archisopleurum.)~~

~~Sub-class 1.—ISOPLEURA.~~

~~Brauch a.—STREPTONEURA. (Archizygobranchium.)~~

~~Sub-class 2, —ANISOPLEURA. (Archieuthyneurwm.)~~

~~Brauch 6.—EUTHYNEURA. (Archiopisthobranchiwim.)~~

~~——— 2 9 > Order 1.—ZYGOBRANCHIA. Order 2. —AZYGOBRANCHIA. Order 1.—OPpiIsTHOBRANCHIA. Order 2.—PULMONATA. a ze e (Archiholochlamydum.) (Archipalliatum.) (Archibasommatum.) ce tf By en eo 4 5 | | | m 8 & Sect. a. Sect. 0. Sect. a. Sect. 0. g : 4 ial a i Non-Palliata. a og & | e B 8 ——— —_—”— ——— _~ ——— —_” a ps e ‘ z 5 e g ¢ eg oe. Ga ee . o ¢ >) Jae ke ae 7 a. eu = a om au iS} 8 g g a 5 moo Poe coat ot o> — ean T= moor “a aa i la ae [ie tel | | Ra yy ce fe @Ffe #88 S 3 seo 8 § e § 7 2 = > = & = = os = = ans 2. 3 S Ss Ss 3 3 = 2. a =e S) 8 eS FE ie. = = eee = iy =~~

~~= : ;~~

~~= = By: s 8 s 8 12 Bae Ss 8 ea & = _ * S ie ; : Ses = & = = s. g s s&s S § § 5 R ; : SI~~

~~Family 11.—Naticide. Genera: Natica, Lam.; Sigarctus, Lam.; Nerttopsis, Gratel. Family 12.—LHntoconchide.~~

~~The single genus and species Entoconcha mirabilis, discovered by Joh. Miiller in 1851, parasitic in Synapta digitata. The adult form is not known.~~

~~Family 13.—Marsenide. Genera: Marscnia, Leach ; Onchidiopsis, Family 14.—Acmexide. Genera: Aemea, Eschsch.; Lottia, Gr.; (probably these will be _ found to belong to the Zygobranchia). Family 15.—Capulide. ;~~

~~Genera: Capulus, Montf.; Calyptrea, Lam. (fig. 40); Zvochita,~~

~~Schum. Family 16.—Littorinide.~~

~~Genera: Littorina (the Periwinkles, fig. 46) ; Modulus, Gray ; Lacuna, Turt.; Rissoa, Frem.; Hydrobia, Hartm.; Assiminia, Leach.~~

~~Family 17.—Paludinide. ; Genera: Paludina (River-Snail) (figs. 7, 21); Bithynia, Gray ; Tanalia, Gray. Family 18.—Valvatidex. Genus: Valvata (fig. 45), fresh-water. Family 19.—Ampullaride.~~

~~*Genus: Ampullaria (can breathe air by means of the walls of the pallial chamber as well as water by the gill ; fresh-waters of tropical America, Africa, and East Indies).*~~

~~*Beck.*~~

~~*Sub-order 2.—Pnewmonochlamyda.*~~

~~*Characters.—Pallial chamber a lung-sac ; no gill; mouth ona rostrum, uot a retractile proboscis ; terrestrial habit.*~~

~~*Family 20.—Cyclostomide. ‘ Genera: Cyclostoma, Lam. ; Cyclophorus, Montf.; Ferussina, Gratel.; Pupina, Vignard. ; Family 21.—Helicinide (radula rhipidoglossate rather than teenio- glossate). Genera: Stoastoma, Adams ; Lam.; Proserpina, Guild. Family 22.—Aciculide. Genera: Acicula, Hartm.; Geomelania, Vesta,*~~

~~*Trochatella, Swains.; Helicina,*~~

~~*Sub-order 3.—Siphonochlamyda. Characters.—Reptant Azygobranchia with the margin of the mantle drawn out to form a trough-like siphon which notches the lip of the shell; shell always spiral ; usually an operculum, horny or lamelliform ; either a rostrum or a retractile proboscis ; exclusively marine ; mostly carnivorous.*~~

- ~~*Tenioglossa (3.1.3). Family 1.—Strombide. Genera: Strombus, L.; Pteroceras, (fig. 438). Family 2.—*~~

- ~~*Toxiglossa (1.0.1).*~~

~~*Lam.; Rostellaria, Lam.*~~

~~*Lam.; Fiewla,*~~

~~*Family 7.—Conide. Genus: Conus, L.*~~

~~*Family 8.—Terebride. Genus: Zerebra, Adans.*~~

~~*| Family 9.—Plewrotomide.*~~

~~*Genus: Plewrotoma, Lam. Family 10.—Cancellaridez. Genus: Cancellaria, Lam. * Rachiglossa (1.1.1 or .1.). Family 11.—Muricide. Genera: Murex, L.; Trophon, Montf. ; Fusus, Lam. (fig. 38); Turbinella, Lam. Family 12.—Buccinide. Genera: Buccinwm, L.; Nassa, Lam. (fig. 5); Purpura, Brug. (fig. 47); Concholepas, Lam.; Magilus, Montf. Family 13.—dMitride. Genus: Mitra, Lam.*~~

~~*Brug. ; Pyrula,*~~

~~*XVI.—92*~~

~~*650*~~

~~*Family 14.—Olivide. Genera: Oliva, Brug.; Ancilla, Lam.; Harpa, Lam. Family 15.—Volutide. Genera: Voluta, L.; Cymbiuwm, Montf.; Marginella, Lam.; Volvaria Lam.*~~

~~*Further Remarks on the Reptant Azygobranchia.—The very large assemblage of forms coming under this order comprise the most highly developed predaccous sea-snails, numerous — vegetarian species, a considerable number of*~~

~~*Fia. 87.—A. Triton variegatum, to show the proboscis or buccal introvert (e) in astate of eversion. a, siphonal notch of the shell occupied by the siphonal fold of the mantle-skirt (Siphonochlamyda) ; b, edge of the mantle-skirt rest- ing on the shell; ¢, cephalic eye; d, cephalic tentacle; e, everted buccal introvert (proboscis); jf, foot; g, operculum; h, penis; i, under surface of the mantle-skirt forming the roof of the sub-pallial chamber, B. Sole of the foot of Pyrula tuba, to show a, the pore usually said to be "aquiferous" but probably the orifice of a gland ; 6, median line of foot.*~~

~~*fresh-water, and some terrestrial forms. The partial dis- section of a male specimen of the Common Periwinkle,*~~

~~*Littorina littoralis, drawn in fig. 46, will serve to exhibit the disposition of viscera which prevails in the group.*~~

~~*Fic, 88,—Animal and shell of Pyrula laevigata.*~~

~~*The branchial chamber formed by the mantle-skirt over- hanging the head has been exposed by cutting along a line extending backward from the letters vd to the base of the coluniella muscle mc, and the whole roof of the chamber thus detached from the right side of the animal's neck has been thrown over to the left, showing the organs which lie upon the roof. No opening into the body-cavity has been made; the organs which lie in the coiled visceral hump show through its transparent walls. The head is seen in front resting on the foot and carrying a median non-retractile snout or rostrum, and a pair of cephalic tentacles at the base of each of which is an eye. In many Gastropoda the eyes are not thus sessile but raised upon special eye-tentacles (figs..43, 69). To the right of the head is seen the muscular penis p close to the termination of the vas deferens (sper- matic duct) vd. The testis ¢ occupies a median position in the coiled visceral mass. Behind the penis on the same side is the hooklike columella muscle, a development of the*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*a, siphon ; }, head-tentacles ; C, head, the letter placed near the right eye; d, the foot, expanded as in crawling; h, the mantle-skirt reflected over the sides of the shell,*~~

~~*| AZYGOBRANCHIA.*~~

~~*retractor muscle of the foot, which clings to the spiral column or columella of the shell (see fig. 42). This col- umella niuscle is the same thing as the muscular surface marked c in the figures of Patella, marked & in fig. 91 of Nautilus, and the posterior adductor of Lamellibranchs (fig. 131).*~~

~~*The surface of the neck is covered by integument forming the floor of the branchial cavity. It has not been cut into.*~~

~~*Fre. 89,—Animal and shell of Phorus erutus, a, snout (not introversible); 4, cephalic tentacles; ¢, right eye; d, pro- and meso-podium,—to the right of this is seen the metapodium bearing the sculptured operculum,*~~

~~*Of the organs lying on the reflected mantle-skirt, that which*~~

~~*in the natural state lay nearest to the vas deferens on the*~~

~~*right side of the median line of the roof of the branchial chamber is the rectum ¢', ending in the anus a. Itcan be traced back to the intestine 2 near the surface of the visceral hump, and it is found that the apex of the coil formed by the hump is occupied by the liver # and the stomach v. Pha- rynx and cesophagus are con- cealed in the head. The enlarged glandular structure of the walls of the rectum is frequent in the*~~

~~*Azygobranchia, as is also though*~~

~~*not universally the gland marked*~~

~~*y, next to the rectum. It is the*~~

~~*adrectal gland, and in the genera*~~

~~*Murex and Purpura secretes a*~~

~~*colourless liquid which turns*~~

~~*purple upon exposure to the at-*~~

~~*(From Owen, mosphere, and was used by the*~~

~~*ancients as a dye.*~~

~~*Near this, and less*~~

~~*advanced into the*~~

~~*branchial chamber, is the single renal organ or nephri- dium 7 with its opening to the ex- terior 7'. Internally this glandular sac presents a second slit or aperture which leads into the pericardium (as is now found to be the case in all Mol- lusea). The heart c lying in the pericardium is seen in close proximity to*~~

~~*Fis. 40.—Shell of Calyptreea, seen from below so as to show the inner whorl }, concealed by the cap- like outer whorl a. .*~~

~~*AZYGOBRANCHIA.* |~~

~~*the renal organ, and consists of a single auricle receiving blood from the gill, and of a single ventricle which pumps it through the body by an anterior and posterior aorta (see fig. 105). The surface « of the mantle between the rectum and the gill- plume is thrown into folds which in many sea-snails (Whelks, &c.) are very strongly deve- Ee oe f loped. The whole Pe,thaicer a foots h mantle-skirt, which is nati*~~

~~*rally carried in a reflected condition so as to cover in the sides of the shell.*~~

~~*of this surface ap- pears to be active in the secretion of a mucous-like substance. The single gill-plume br lies to the left of the median line in natural position. It corresponds to the right of the two primitive cten- idia in the untwisted archaic condition of the Molluscan body, and does not project freely into the branchial cavity, but its axis is attached (by concres- cence) to the mantle-skirt (roof of the branchial chamber). It is rare for the gill-plume of an Anisopleurous Gastropod to stand out freely as a plume, but occasionally this more ar- chaic condition is exhibited, as in Valvata (fig. 45). Next be- yond (to the left of) the gill- plume we find the so-called para-branchia, which is here simple, but sometimes lamellated as in Purpura (fig. 47). This organ has, without reason, been sup- posed to represent the second ctenidium of thetypical Molluse, which it cannot do on account of its position. It should be to the right of the anus were this the case. Recently Spengel has shown that the parabran- chia of Gastropods is the typical olfactory organ or osphradium Owen.)*~~

~~*in a highly-developed condition The minute structure of the epithelium which clothes it, as well as the origin of*~~

~~*See: 1 +,*~~

~~*Fic, 42,—Section of the shell of Tritoniui, Cuv. a, apex; a, Si phonal notch of the mouth of the shell ; ac to pe, mouth of the shell; w, w, whorls of the shell; s, s, su- tures. Occupying the axis, and exposed by the section, is seen the "eolumella" or spiral pillar. The upper whorls of the shell are seen to be divided into separate cham- bers by the formation of succes- sively formed "septa." (From*~~

~~*Fic. 43,—Animal and shell of Rostellaria rectirostris, a, snout or rostrum ; b, cephalic tentacle ; ¢, eye ; d, propodium and mesopodium ; e, metapodiuin ; f, operculum; h', prolonged siphonal notch of the shell occupied by the siphon, or trough-like process of the mantle-skirt. (From Owen.)*~~

~~*the nerve which is distributed to the parabranchia, proves it to be the same organ which is found universally in Mol-*~~

~~*MOLLUS CA*~~

~~*| gobranchia and Isopleura).*~~

~~*651*~~

~~*luses at the base of each gill-plume, and tests the indrawn current of water by the sense of smell. The nerve to this*~~

~~*Fic, 44,—Female Janthina, with egg-float (a) attached to the foot; b, egg: capsules ; c, ctenidium (gill-plume); d, cephalic tentacles.*~~

~~*organ is given off from the superior (original right, see fig. 19) visceral ganglion.*~~

~~*The figures which are here given of various Azygo- branchia are in most cases suffi- ciently explained by the refer- ences attached to them. As an excellent general type of the nervous system, attention may be directed to that of Paludina drawn in fig. 21. On the whole, the ganglia are strongly indivi- dualized in the Azygobranchia, nerve-cell tissue being concen- trated-in the ganglia and absent yo, 45.—Vatvata cristata, MUll. from the cords (contrast with Zy- % mouth; op, operculum ; br,*~~

~~*etenidium (branchial plume); 2, : .) At filiform appenda; e(? rudiment- the same time, the junction of abies os erties hen the visceral loop above the in- not having its axis fused to the testine prevents in all Strepto- {ne er Ge neura the shortening of the vis- 5s. ceral loop, and it is rare to find a fusion of the visceral ganglia with either pleural, pedal, or cerebral—a fusion which can and does take place where the visceral loop is not above but*~~

below the intestine, eg., in the Euthyneura (fig. 67), Cephalopoda(fig.112), and Lamellibranchia (fig. 144). As con- ;' trasted with the Zygo- ° branchia and the Iso- pleura, we find that in the Azygobranchia the pedal nerves are dis- tinctly nerves given off from the pedal ganglia, rather than cord-like nerve-tracts contain- ing both nerve-cells or ganglionic elements and nerve-fibres. Yet in some Azygobran-

chia (Paludina) a lad- Fic. 46.—Male of Littorina littoralis, Lin., re- a lik moved from its shell; the mantle-skirt cut along

er-like arrangement its right line of attachment and thrown over of the two pedal to the left side of the animal so as to expose the nervesand their lateral

organs on its inner face, a, anus ; i, intestine 5 r, nephridium (kidney); 7', aperture of the branches has been de- tected (30). The his-

nephridium; c, heart; br, ctenidium (gill- plume); por, parabranchia (=the osphradium tology of the nervous system of Mollusca

or olfactory patch); 2, glandular lamelle of the inner face of the mantle-skirt ; y, adrectal has yet to be seri- ously inquired into.

(purpuriparous) gland; , testis; vd,.vas de- ferens; p,penis; mc,columella muscle(muscular process grasping the shell), ; stomach ; h, liver. N.B. Note the simple snout or rostrum not in-

The alimentary canal of the Azygobranchia presents little diversity of character, except in so far as the buccal region is concerned. Salivary glands are present, and in some carnivorous forms (Dolium) these secrete free sul-

troverted as a " proboscis."

~~*phuric acid (as much as two per cent is present in the secretion), which assists the animal in boring holes by means of its rasping tongue through the shells of other Molluscs upon which it preys. A crop-like dilatation of the gut and a recurved intestine, embedded in the com- pact yellowish-brown liver, the ducts of which open into it, form the rest of the digestive tract and occupy a large bulk of the visceral hump. The buccal region presents a pair of shelly jaws placed laterally upon the lips, and a wide range of variation in the form of the denticles of the lingual ribbon or radula, the nature of which will be un- derstood by a reference to fig. 9, whilst the systematic list of families given above shows the particular form of den- tition characteristic of each division of the order.*~~

~~*The modification in the form of the snout upon which the mouth is placed, leading to the distinction of '" proboscidiferous " and " rostriferous" Gastropods, re- quires further notice. The condi- tion usually spoken of as a " pro- boscis " appears to be derived from the condition of a simple rostrum (having the mouth at its extrem- ity) by the process of incomplete introversion of that simple rostrum. There is no reason in the actual significance of the word why the term "proboscis" should be applied to an alternately introversible and eversible tube connected with an animal's body, and yet such is a very customary use of the term. The introversible tube may be completely closed, as in the " pro- boscis" of Nemertean worms, or it may have a passage in it leading into a non-eversible cesophagus, as in the present case, and in the case of the eversible pharynx of the predatory Chetopod worms. The diagrams here introduced (fig. 48) are intended to show certain important distinctions which obtain amongst the various 'introverts," or intro- and e-versible tubes so fre- quently met with in animal bodies. Supposing the tube to be completely introverted and to commence its ever- sion, we then find that eversion may take place, either by a forward movement of the side of the tube near its attached base, as in the proboscis of the Nemertine worms, the pharynx of Cheetopods, and the eye-tentacle of Gastro- pods, or, by a forward movement of the inverted apex of the tube, as in the proboscis of the Rhabdoccel Planar- ians, and in that of Gastropods here under consideration. The former case we call '"pleurecbolic" (fig. 48, A, B, C, H, I, K), the latter "acrecbolic" tubes or introverts (fig. 48, D, E, F, G). It is clear that, if we start from the*~~

~~condition of full eversion of the tube and watch the pro- cess of introversion, we shall find that the pleurecbolic variety is introverted by the apex of the tube sinking in- wards ; it may be called acrembolic, whilst conversely the acrecbolic tubes are pleurembolic. Further, it is obvious enough that the process either of introversion or of eversion of the tube may be arrested at any point, by the develop- ment of fibres connecting the wall of the introverted tube with the wall of the body, or with an axial structure such as the cesophagus ; on the other hand, the range of move- ment of the tubular introvert may be unlimited or complete. The acrembolic proboscis or frontal introvert of the Nemer- tine worms has a complete range. So has the acrembolic pharynx of Cheetopods, if we consider the organ as ter- minating at that point where the jaws are placed and the cesophagus commences. So too the acrembolic eye-tentacle of the snail has a complete range of movement, and also the~~

~~Fic. 47.—Female of Purpura la- pillus removed from its shell; the mantle-skirt cut along its left line of attachment and thrown over to the right side of the animal so as to expose the organs on its inner face, a, auus ; vg, vagina; gp, adrec- tal purpuriparous gland; 7', aperture of the nephridium (kid- ney); br, ctenidium (branchial plume); br', parabranchia (=the comb-like osphradium or olfac- tory organ).~~

~~MOLLV SCA~~

~~[AZYGOBRANCHIA.~~

~~pleurembolic proboscis of the Rhabdoccel prostoma. The introverted rostrum of the Azygobranch Gastropods pre- sents in contrast to these a limited range of movement. The "introvert" in these Gastropods is not the pharynx as in the Chetopod worms, but a pree-oral structure, its apical limit being formed by the true lips and jaws, whilst the apical limit of the Cheetopod's introvert is formed by the jaws placed at the junction of pharynx and cesophagus, so that the Cheetopod's introvert is part of the stomodzeum or fore-gut, whilst that of the Gastropod is external to the alimentary canal altogether, being in front of the mouth, not behind it, as is the Chzetopod's. Further, the Gastro- pod's introvert is pleurembolic (and therefore acrecbolic), and is limited both in eversion and in introversion ; it can-~~

~~*c. a*~~

~~*we: pd*~~

~~*d b € . "Ht Fig, 48.—Diagrams explanatory of the nature of so-called proboscides or "intro-*~~

~~*verts." A. Simple introvert completely introverted. B, The same, partially*~~

~~*everted by eversion of the sides, as in the Nemertine proboscis and Gastropod eye-tentacle=pleurecbolic. C. The same, fully everted, D, E. A similar simple introvert in course of eversion by the forward movement, not of its sides, but of its apex, as in the proboscidean Rhabdocoels=acrecbolic, F. Acrecbolic (= pleurembolic) introvert, formed by the snout of the proboscidi- ferous Gastropod. al, alimentary canal; d, the true mouth, The introvert is not a simple one with complete range both in eversion and introversion, but is arrested in introversion by the fibrous bands at c, and similarly in eversion by the fibrous bands at 6. G. The acrecbolic snout of a probos- cidiferous Gastropod, arrested short of complete eversion by the fibrous band bv. H. The acrembolic (=pleurecbolic) pharynx of a Cheetopod fully iutro verted. al, alimentary canal; at d, the jaws; at a, the mouth; therefore a to @ is stomodeum, whereas in the Gastropod (F) a to d is inverted body- surface. I. Partial eversion of H, K. Complete eversion of H. (Original.)*~~

~~*not be completely everted owing to the muscular bands (fig. 48, G), nor can it be fully introverted owing to the bands (fig. 48, I') which tie the axial pharynx to the adjacent wall of the apical part of the introvert. As in all such intro- and e-versible organs, eversion of the Gastropod proboscis is effected by pressure communicated by the muscular body-wall to the liquid contents (blood) of the body-space, accompanied by the relaxation of the muscles which directly pull upon either the sides or the apex of the tubular organ. The inversion of the proboscis is effected directly by the contraction of these muscles. In various members of the Azygobranchia the mouth-bearing cylinder is introversible (.¢., is a proboscis)—with rare exceptions these forms have a siphonate mantle-skirt. On the other hand, many which have a siphonate mantle-skirt are not provided with an introversible mouth-*~~

~~*bearing cylinder, but have a simple non-introversible rostrum, as it has been*~~

~~*AZYGOBRANCHIIA.* |~~

~~*termed, which is also the condition presented by the mouth- bearing recion in nearly all other Gastropoda. One of the best examples of the introversible mouth-cylinder or pro- boseis which can be found is that of the Common Whelk and its immediate allies, In fig. 37 the proboscis is seen in an everted state; it is only so carried when feeding, being withdrawn when the animal is at rest. Probably "ts use is to enable the animal to introduce its rasping and licking apparatus into very narrow apertures for the purpose of feeding, ¢.y., into a small hole bored in the shell of another Mollusc.*~~

~~*The foot of the Azygobranchia, unlike the simple mus- cular disc of the Isopleura and Zygobranchia, is very often divided into lobes, a fore, middle, and hind lobe (pro-, meso-, and meta-podium, see figs. 39 and 43). Very usually, but not universally, the meta-podium carries an operculum. The division of the foot into lobes is a simple case of that much greater elaboration or breaking up into processes and regions which it undergoes in the class Cephalopoda. Even among some Gastropoda (viz., the Opisthobranchia), we find the lobation of the foot still further carried out by the development of lateral lobes, the epipodia, whilst there are many Azygobranchia, on the other hand, in which the foot has a simple oblong form without any trace of lobes.*~~

~~*The development of the Azygobranchia from the egg has been followed in several examples, ¢.g., Paludina, Purpura, Nassa, Vermetus, Neritina. As in other Molluscan groups, we find a wide variation in the early process of the forma- tion of the first embryonic cells, and their arrangement as a Diblastula dependent on the greater or less amount of food-yelk which is present in the egg-cell when it com- mences its embryonic changes. In fig. 7, the early stages of Paludina vivipara are represented. There is but very little food-material in the egg of this Azygobranch, and consequently the Diblastula forms by invagination ; the blastopore or orifice of invagination coincides with the anus, and never closes entirely. A well-marked Trocho- sphere is formed by the development of an equatorial ciliated band; and*~~

~~*subsequently, by the disproportionate growth of the lower hemisphere, the Trochosphere becomes a Veliger. The primitive shell-sac or shell-gland is well marked at this stage, and the pharynx is seen as a new ingrowth (the stomodum), about to fuse with and open into the primitively invaginated arch-enteron (fig. 7, F).*~~

~~*In other Azygobranchs (and such variations are repre- sentative for all Mollusca, and not characteristic only of Azygobranchia), we find that there is a very unequal division of the egg-cell at the commencement of embryonic development, as in Nassa (fig. 5). Consequently there is strictly speaking no invagination (emboly), but an over- growth (epiboly) of the smaller cells to enclose the larger. The general features of this process and of the relation of the blastopore to mouth and anus have been explained above in treating of the development of Mollusca generally. In such cases the blastopore may entirely close, and both mouth and anus develop as new ingrowths (stomodzeum and proctodeum), whilst, according to the observations of Bobretzky, the closed blastopore may coincide in position with the mouth in some instances (Nassa, &c.), instead of with the anus. But in these epibolic forms, just as in the embolic Paludina, the embryo proceeds to develop its cili- ated band and shell-gland, passing through the earlier con- dition of a Trochosphere to that of the Veliger. In the veliger stage many Azygobranchia (Purpura, Nassa, &c.) exhibit, in the dorsal region behind the head, a contractile area of the body-wall. This acts as a larval heart, but ceases to pulsate after a time. Similar rhythmically con- tractile areas are found on the foot of the embryo Pulmo- nate Limax and on the yelk-sac (distended foot-surface) of the Cephalopod Loligo (see fig. ea),*~~

~~*The history of the shell in the development of Azygo- branchia (and other Gastropods) is important. Just as the primitive shell-sac aborts and gives place to a cap-like or boat-like shell, so in some cases (Marsenia, Krohn) has this first shell been observed to be shed, and a second shell of different shape is formed beneath it.*~~

~~*A detailed treatment of what is known of the histo- genesis in relation to the cell-layers in these Mollusca would take us far beyond the limits of this article, which aims at exposing only the well-ascertained characteristic features of the Mollusca and the various subordinate groups. There is still a great deficiency in our knowledge of the develop- ment of the Gastropoda, as indeed of all classes of animals. The development of the gill (ctenidium) as well as of the renal organ, and details as to the process of torsion of the visceral hump, are still quite insufficiently known.*~~

~~*One further feature of the development of the Azygobran- chia deserves special mention. Many Gastropoda deposit their eggs, after fertilization, enclosed in capsules; others, as Paludina, are viviparous; others, again, as the Zy gobranchia, agree with the Lamellibranch Conchifera (the Bivalves) in having simple exits for the ova without glandular walls, and therefore discharge their eggs unenclosed in capsules freely into the sea-water; such unencapsuled eggs are merely enclosed each in its own delicate chorion. When egg-capsules are formed they are often of large size, have tough walls, and in each capsule are several eggs floating in a viscid fluid. In some cases all the eggs in a capsule develop ; in other cases one egg only in a capsule (Neri- tina), or a small proportion (Purpura, Buccinum), advance in development ; the rest are arrested either after the first process of cell-division (cleavage) or before that process. The arrested embryos or eggs are then swallowed and digested by those in the same capsule which have advanced in development. The details of this history require renewed study, our present knowledge of it being derived from the works of Koren and Danielssen, Carpenter and Claparede. In any case it is clearly the same process in essence as that of the formation of a vitellogenous gland from part of the primitive ovary, or of the feeding of an ovarian egg by the absorption of neighbouring potential eggs; but here the period at which the sacrifice of one egg to another takes place is somewhat late. What it is that determines the arrest of some eggs and the progressive development of others in the same capsule is at present unknown.*~~

~~*Section b (of the Azygobranchia).—V.A TANTIA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Azygobranchiate Streptoneura which have the form and texture of the body adapted to a free-swimming pelagic habit. They appear*~~

~~*to be derived from holochlamydic forms of Reptant Azygobranchia. The foot takes the form of a swimming organ. The nervous system and sense-organs (eyes, otocysts, and osphradium) are highly developed. 'The odontophore also ig\ Te- markably developed, its admedian teeth being mobile, and it serves as an efficient organ for attacking other pelagic forms upon which the Natantia prey. The sexes are distinct as in all Streptoneura ; and genital ducts and accessory glands and pouches are present as in all Azygobranchia. The Natantia exhibit a series of modifica- tions of the form and proportions of the visceral mass and foot, leading from a condition readily comparable with that of a typical Azygobranch such as Rostellaria, with the three regions of the foot (pro-, meso-, and meta- podium) strongly marked, and a coiled visceral hump of the usual proportions, up toa condition in which the whole body is of a tapering cylindrical shape, the foot a plate- like vertical fin, and the visceral hump almost completely atrophied. Three steps of this modification may be distinguished as three sub- orders, the Atlantacea, the Carinariacea, and the Pterotracheacea.*~~

~~*Sub-order 1.—Atlaniacea.*~~

~~*Characters.—Natantia with a large spirally-wound visceral hump, covered by a hyaline spiral shell ; mantle-skirt large, overhanging a well-developed sub-pallial branchial chamber asin Azygobranchia, to the wall of which is attached the branchial ctenidium ; foot well developed, divisible into a mobile propodium, a mesopodium on which is formed a sucker, and a metapodium which, when the animal is expanded, extends backwards beyond the shell and visceral*~~

~~*654*~~

~~*hump; upon the upper surface of the metapodium is developed an*~~

~~*operculum. Genera: Atlanta, Oxygurus. fossils Bellerophon.*~~

~~*Sub-order 2.*~~

~~*Characters.—Visceral hump shell small, cap-like, hyaline ; ctenidium (branchial plume) projecting from the small sub- pallial chamber; body cylin- drical; of the foot-lobes only the mesopodium is prominent, provided*~~

~~with a sucker, and compressed laterally so as to form a vertical plate-like fin projecting from the ventral surface; the propodium forms simply the ventral surface of the anterior region of the cy- lindrical body whilst the me- tapodium forms its posterior region.~~

~~Genera: Carinaria, Cardio- poda.~~

~~Sub-order 3.—Pterotracheacea. * Characters.— Visceral hump still further reduced, forming a mere oval sac embedded in the posterior dorsal] region of the cylindrical body; no shell ; foot as in Carinariacea, except that the sucker is absent from the mesopodium in the females.~~

~~Genera: Pterotrachea, Firu- loides.~~

~~Further Remarks on the~~

~~MOLLUSTCA~~

~~| AZYGOBRANCHIA.~~

~~the visceral loop of the Natantia is Streptoneurous. Special~~

~~to the Natantia is the high elaboration of the lingual ribbon, and, as an agreement with some of the Opistho- branchiate Euthyneura but. as a difference from the Azygo- branchia, we find the otocysts closely attached to the cerebral ganglia.~~

~~Probably here belong the Paleozoic~~

~~—Carinariacea.~~

~~greatly reduced in relative size ; This is, however, less of a difference than it was~~

~~Fic. 50.—Carinaria mediterranea. A. The animal. B. The slicll removed. C, D. Two views of the shell of Cardiopoda. a, mouth and odontophore ; b, cephalic tentacles; ¢, eye; d, the fin-like mesopodium ; d', its sucker; e, metapodium ; f, salivary glands; h, border of the mantle-flap; i, ctenidium (gill-plume); m, stomach ; n, intestine; 0, anus; p, liver ; t, aorta, springing~~

~~*from the ventricle; u, cerebral ganglion ; v, pleural and pedal ganglion ; w, testis ; 7, visceral ganglion ;*~~

~~*a : ‘ y, vesicula seminalis ; z. penis, Natantia Azygobranchia.—*~~

~~*Logically the Natantia should stand as we have placed them, viz., as a special branch or section of the Azygobranchia, related to them somewhat as are the Birds to the Reptiles. They are true Azygobranchia which have taken to a pelagic life, and the peculiarities of structure which they exhibit*~~

~~*Fia. 49.—Atlanta (Oxygura) Keraudrenit (magnified 20 diameters). «a, mouth and odontophore ; 6, cephalic tentacles ; c, eye; d, propodium (B) and meso- odium ; ¢, metapodium; f, operculum; h, mantle-chamber ; i, ctenidium gill-plume) ; k, retractor muscle of foot; J, optic teritacle ; m, stomach; n, dorsal surface overhung by the mantle-skirt, the letter is close to the salivary gland; 0, rectum and anus; 9, liver; g, renal organ (nephridium)}; s, ven- tricle ; uv, the otocyst attached to the cerebral ganglion ; w, testis; x, auricle “of the heart ; y, vesicle on genital duct; z, penis. (From Owen.) are strictly adaptations of the structure common to them and the Azygobranchia consequent upon their changed mode of life. Such adaptations are the transparency and colourlessness of the tissues, and the modifications of the foot, which still shows in Atlanta the form common in Azygobranchia (compare fig. 49 and fig. 39). The cylindrical body of Pterotracheacea is paralleled by*~~

~~*the slug-like forms of Euthyneura. Spengel has shown that*~~

~~*_ corresponding position.*~~

~~*(From Owen.)*~~

~~*at one time supposed to be, for it has been shown by Lacaze Duthiers, and also by Leydig, that the otocysts of Azygo- branchia even when lying close upon the pedal ganglion (as in fig. 21) yet receive their special nerve (which can sometimes be readily isolated) from the cerebral ganglion (see fig. 36). Accordingly the difference is one of position of the otocyst and not of its nerve-supply. The Natantia are further remarkable for the high development of their cephalic eyes, and for the typical character of their*~~

osphradium (Spengel's olfactory organ). This is a groove, the edges of which are raised and ciliated, lying near the branchial plume in

_ the genera which possess that organ, whilst in Firuloides,

which has no branchial plume, the osphradium occupies a Beneath the ciliated groove is

Fia. 51.—Pterotrachea mutica. seen from the right side. a, pouch for reception of the snout when retracted ; c, pericardium ; ph, pharynx; oc, cephalic eye ; g, cerebral ganglion; g', pleuro-pedal ganglion; pr, foot (mesopodium) ; », stomach ; 7, intestine ; , so-called nucleus ; br, branchial plume (ctenidium) ; = osphradium ; mt, foot (metapodium); z, caudal appendage. (After Kefer- stein.)

placed an elongated ganglion (olfactory ganglion) connected by a nerve to the supra-intestinal (therefore the primitively dextral) ganglion of the long visceral nerve-loop, the strands of which cross one another,—this being characteristic of Streptoneura (Spengel).

The Natantia belong to the "pelagic fauna" occurring near the surface in the Mediterranean and great oceans in company with the Pteropoda, the Siphonophorous Hydrozoa, Salpee, Leptocephali, and other specially-modified trans- parent swimming representatives of various groups of the animal kingdom. In development they pass through the typical trochosphere and veliger stages provided with boat- like shell.

OPISTHOBRANCHIA. |

Branch).—HUTHYNEURA (Spengel, 1881).

Characters. — Gastropoda Anisopleura in which the visecral loop (the conterminous visceral nerves) does not share in the torsion of the visceral hump, but, being placed entirely below the intestine, remains straight and untwisted, the junction of the visceral cords being below, and not

*is · *

~~*Tia. 52.—Bulla verillum (Chemnitz), as seen crawling. 4d, oral hood (compare with Tethys, fig. 62, B), possibly a continuation of the epipodia ; 6, b', cephalic tentacles, (From Owen.)*~~

~~*above, the intestine as it is in Streptoneura. Although*~~

~~*the anus is not brought so far forward by the visceral*~~

~~*torsion as in the Streptoneura, and may even by secondary growth assume a posterior median position, yet, as fully developed, an asymmetry has resulted as in the Azygo- branchia, only the original right renal organ, right cteni- dium (if any), right osphradium, right side of the heart, and right genital ducts being retained. All the Euthy- neura are hermaphrodite. The lingual ribbon has very usually numerous fine denticles undifferentiated into series in each row. The shell is light and little calcified ; often it is not developed in the adult, though present in the embryo.*~~

~~*An operculum, often found in*~~

~~*the embryo, is never present in*~~

~~*the adult (except in Tornatella,*~~

~~*fig. 53). Many Euthyneura show a tendency to, or a*~~

~~*complete accomplishment of, the suppression of the mantle-*~~

~~*skirt as well as of the shell, also of the ctenidium, and ac- quire at the same time a more or less cylindrical (slug-like) form of body.*~~

~~*The Euthyneura comprise two orders, the Opistho- branchia and the Pulmonata.*~~

~~*Fic, 53.—Tornatella. h, shell; 2, oral hood; d, foot; f, operculum.*~~

~~*Order 1.—Opisthobranchia.*~~

~~*Marine Euthyneura the more archaic forms of which have a relatively large foot and a small visceral hump, from the base of which projects on the right*~~

~~*side a short mantle-skirt. The anus is placed in such forms far back*~~

~~*Fic, 54.—Umbrella mediterranea. a, mouth; b, cephalie tentaele; h, gill (ctenidium). The free edge of the mantle is seen just below the margin of the shell (compare with Aplysia, fig. 63). (From Owen.)*~~

~~*beyond the mantle-skirt. In front of the anus, and only*~~

~~*partially covered by the mantle-skirt, is the ctenidium with*~~

~~*its free end turned backwards. The heart lies in front of, instead of to the side of, the attachment of the ctenidium,*~~

~~*—hence Opisthobranchia as opposed to " Prosobranchia,"*~~

~~*which correspond to the Streptoneura. A shell is possessed in the adult state by but few Opisthobranchia, but all pass through a veliger larval stage with a nautiloid shell (fig. 60). Many Opisthobranchia have by a process of atrophy lost the typical ctenidium and the mantle-skirt, and have deve- &§ loped other organs in their [B@ place. As in some Azygo- branchia, the free margin of the mantle-skirt is frequently reflected over the shell when Pes a shell exists; and, as in some & Azygobranchia, broad lateral outgrowths of the foot (epi- \ podia) are often developed, which, asdoes not occur in Azy- gobranchia, may be thrown over the shell or naked dorsal surface of the body.*~~

~~*The variety of special deve- lopments of structure accom- panying the atrophy of typical organs in the Opisthobranchia and general degeneration of organization is very great, and renders their classification difficult. Two sections of the order may be distinguished, according as the typical Molluscan mantle-skirt (limbus pallialis) is or is not atro- phied, and within each section certain sub-orders.*~~

~~*Section a.—PALLIATA (= Teetibranchiata, Woodward)—the typical Molluscan mantle-skirt or pallium retained. Sub-order 1.—Ctenidiobranchia.*~~

~~*Characters.—Palliata in which the ctenidium is retained as the branchial organ ; with rare exceptions a delicate shell, which may be very small or completely enclosed by the reflected margin of the mantle; epipodia (lateral outgrowths of the foot) frequently present. Family 1.—Tornatellide.*~~

~~*Genera: Tornatella, Lam. (fig. 58); Cinwlia, Gray, &c.*~~

~~*Family 2.—Bullide.*~~

~~*Genera: Bulla, Lam. (fig. 52); Acera, Miiller ; Scaphander, Montf.; Bulla, Lam. ; Doridiwm, Meckel; Gastropteron, Meckel, &c.*~~

~~*Family 3.—Aplysiide.*~~

~~*Genera: Aplysia, Gmelin (the Sea-Hare)*~~

~~*Dolobella, Lam.; Lobiger, Krohn, &c. Family 4.—Plewrobranchide.*~~

~~*Genera: Pleurobranchus, Cuvier; Umbrella,*~~

~~*55); Runeina, Forbes, &c. Sub-order 2.—Phyllidiobranchia.*~~

~~*Characters.—Palliata in which the ctenidia have atrophied ; much as in Patellide among the Zygobranchiate Streptoneura their place is taken by laterally-placed lamelle, developed from the inner surface of the bilaterally-disposed mantle-skirt in two lateral rows.*~~

~~*Family 5.—Phyllidiade. Genera: Phyllidia, Cuiver ; Plewrophyllidia, Meck. (fig. 57).*~~

~~*Section b.—NON-PALLIATA.*~~

~~*Characters.—'The typical Molluscan mantle-skirt is atrophied in the adult. No shell is present in the adult, though the dorsal integument may be strengthened by calcareous spicules (Doris). The otocysts are not sessile on*~~

~~*the pedal ganglia as in other Gastropods, but, asin the Natantia Azygobranchia, lie close to the cerebral ganglia. In one sub-order (Pygobranchia) the typical ctenidium appears to be retained in a modified form ; in the others special developments of the body-wall take its place, or no special respiratory processes exist at all. The general form of the body is slug-like, the foot and visceral hump being coextensive, and a secondary bilateral symmetry is asserted by the usually median (sometimes right-sided) dorsal position of the anus on the hinder part of the body.*~~

~~*Sub-order 1.—Pygobranchia. Characters. —The ctenidium assumes the form of acirclet of pinnate processes surrounding the median dorsal anus ; a strongly-marked epipodial fold may occur all round the foot and simulate a mantle- skirt (see fig. 62, C, Doris); papille or "cerata" of the dorsal integu- ment may occur as well as the true ctenidium (fig. 61). Family 6.—Doridide. ; Genera: Doris, L.; Goniodoris, Forbes; Triopa, Johnst.; Agirus Loven ; Theeacera, Fleming ; Polyeera, Cuvier ; Idalia, Leuck- art ; Anecula, Loven; Ceratosoma, Adams; Onchidoris, Blainv.*~~

~~*Fia. 55,—Umbrella mediterranea, seen from above. h, mouth; i, cephalic tentaeles; k, penis-sheath. (After Keferstein.)*~~

~~*(figs. 20, 56, &c.);*~~

~~*Chemnitz (figs. 54,*~~

~~*656 MOLL*~~

~~*Sub-order 2.— Ceratonota.*~~

~~*Characters.—The typical Molluscan ctenidium is not developed ; upon the dorsal area is developed a more or less numerous series of eylindrieal or branched processes (the eerata) into each of which the intestine usually sends a process ; anus dorsal, median, or right-sided. Family 7.—T7ritoniade.*~~

~~*Genera: 7'ritonia, Cuvier; Scyllea, L.; Tethys, L. (fig. 62, B);*~~

~~*Dendronotus, A. and H.; Doto, Oken. Family 8.—Lolidx. Genera: Eolis, Cuvier (fig. 62, A); Glaweus, Forster ; Fiona, A. and H. (fig. 67); Embletonia, A. and H.; Proctonotus, A. and H.; Antiopa, A. and H.; Hermea, Loven; Alderia, Allman.*~~

~~*Sub-order 3.—Haplomorpha.*~~

~~*Characters.—No ctenidia, cerata, mantle-skirt, or other processes of the body-wall ; degenerate forms of small size. Family 9.—Phyllirhoide.*~~

~~*Genera: Phyllirhoé, Peron and Lesucur (fig. 58); Acura, Adams. Family 10.—Hlysiada.*~~

~~*Genera: Elysia, Risso (fig. 62, D, E); Acteonia, Quatref.; Cenia,*~~

~~*A. and H.; Limapontia, Johnston; Rhodope, Koll.*~~

~~*Further Remarks on the Opisthobranchia.—The Opis- thobranchia present the same wide range of superficial appearance as do the Azygobranchiate Streptoneura, forms*~~

~~*Fig. 56.—Three views of Aplysia sp., in various conditions of expansion and retraction. ¢, anterior cephalic tentacles ; £2, posterior cephalic tentacles ; e, eyes ; f, metapodium ; ep, epipodium ; g, gill-plume (ctenidium) ; m, mantle- flap reflected over the thin oval shell; os, s, orifice formed by the unclosed border of the reflected mantle-skirt, allowing the shell to show; pe, the sper- matic groove. (After Cuvier.)*~~

~~*carrying well-developed spiral shells and large mantle-*~~

~~*skirts being included in the group, together with flattened*~~

~~*or cylindrical slug- like forms. But in respect of the substi- tution of other parts for the mantle-skirt and for the gill which the more degenerate*~~

~~*Opisthobranchia ex-*~~

~~*hibit, this Order*~~

~~*stands alone. Some*~~

~~*Opisthobranchia are*~~

~~*striking examples of*~~

~~*degeneration (some*~~

~~*Haplomorpha), hav-*~~

~~*ing none of those re-*~~

~~*gions or processes of the body developed which distinguish the archaic Mollusca from such flat-worms as the Dendroccel Planarians. Indeed, were it not for their retention of the characteristic odontophore we should have little or no indication that such forms as Phyllirhoé and*~~

~~*Fia. 57.—Dorsal and ventral view of Plewrophylli- dia lineata (Otto), one of the Phyllidiobranchiate Palliate Opisthobranchs. 6, the mouth; J, the lamelliform sub-pallial gills, which (as in Patella) replace the typical Molluscan ctenidium. (After Keferstein.)*~~

~~*USCA*~~

~~*Limapontia really belong to the Mollusca at all.*~~

~~*[OPISTHOBRANCHIA.*~~

~~*The inter-*~~

~~*esting little Rhodope Veranyuw, which has no odontophore, has been associated by systematists both with these simpli- fied Opisthobranchs and with Rhabdoccel Planarians (29).*~~

~~*In many respects the Sea-Hare (Aply- sia) of which several species are known (some occurring on the English coast), serves aS a conven- ient example of the fullest development of the organization characteristic of*~~

~~iF Fig. 58.—Phyllirhoé bucephala, twice the natural size, a transparent pena hey pelagic Opistho-~~

~~branch. The internal organs are shown as seen by transmitted light. a, mouth; b, radular sac ; c, esophagus ; d, stomach ; c', intestine; /", anus ;~~

~~: : g, 9, 9', g", the four lobes of the liver; h, the Opisthobranc hia. heart (auricle and ventricle) ; 1, the renal sac (ne- The woodeut (fig. 56) phridium) ; /', the ciliated communication of the~~

~~. 3 renal sac with the pericardium ; m, the external givesa faithful repre- openy of the renal sac ; n, the cerebral ganglion ; : o, the cephalic tentacles; jf, the genital pore, sentation of the gr eat ¥, the ovo-testes ; w, the parasitic hydromedusa~~

~~mobility of the vari- — be tsk pre prmee attached in this position by fi . f in.~~

~~ous par ts of the bo dy. he aboral pole of its umbrella. (After Keferstein.)~~

~~The head is well marked and joined to the body by a some- what constricted neck. It carries two pairs of cephalic tentacles and a pair of sessile eyes. The visceral hump is low and not drawn out into a spire. The foot is long, carrying the oblong visceral mass upon it, and projecting (as metapodium) a little beyond it (f). Laterally the foot gives rise to a pair of mobile fleshy lobes, the epipodia (ep), which can be thrown up so as to cover in the dorsal~~

~~Fra. 59.——Acera bullata, A single row of teeth of the radula. (Formula, x.1.x.)~~

~~surface of the animal. Such epipodia are common, though by no means universal, among Opisthobranchia. The torsion of the visceral hump is not carried out very fully,~~

~~2 =~~

~~{ (5,0) 5 a c J)~~

~~oy~~

~~*Fig. 60.—A. Veliger-larva of an Opisthobranch (Polycera). f, foot ; op, oper- culum; mn, anal papilla; ry, dry, two portions of ,unabsorbed nutritive yelk on either side the intestine. The right otocyst is seen at the root of the foot. B. Trochosphere of an Opisthobranch (Pleurobranchidium) show- ing: shgr, the shell-gland or primitive shell-sac ; ¥, the cilia of the velum ; ph, the commencing stomodeum or oral invagination ; of, the left otocyst ; pg, red-coloured pigment spot. C., Diblastula of an Opisthobranch (Poly- cera) with elongated blastopore ot. (All from Lankester.)*~~

~~*the consequence being that the anus has a posterior posi- tion a little to the right of the median line above the metapodium, whilst the branchial chamber formed by the overhanging mantle-skirt faces the right side of the body instead of lying well to the front as in Streptoneura and. as in Pulmonate Euthyneura. 'The gill-plume which in Aplysia is the typical Molluscan ctenidium is seen in fig.*~~

~~*63 projecting from the branchial sub-pallial space.*~~

~~*The*~~

~~*relation of the delicate shell to the mantle is peculiar, since it occupies an oval area upon the visceral hump,*~~

~~*the extent of which is indicated in fig. 56, O, but may be better understood by a glance at the figures of the allied genus Umbrella (figs. 54, 55), in which the margin of the mantle-skirt coin- cides, just as it does in the Limpet, with the margin of the shell. But in Aplysia the mantle is reflected over the edge of the shell, and grows over its upper surface so as to completely enclose it, excepting at the small cen- tral area s where the naked shell is exposed. This enclosure of the shell is a permanent development of the arrangement seen in many Strepto- neura (e.g. Pyrula, Ovulum, see figs. 38 and 41), where the border of the mantle can be, and usually is, drawn over the shell, though it is withdrawn*~~

~~(as it cannot be in Aplysia) when they pro, 61 —Potycera cristata,~~

~~are irritated. From the fact that Aplysia commences its life as a free-swimming Veliger with a nautiloid shell not enclosed in any way by the border of the mantle, it is clear that the enclosure of the shell in the adult is a secondary process. Accordingly, the shell of Aplysia must not be con-founded with a primitive shell in its shell-sac, such as we find realized in the shells of Chiton and in the plugs which form in the remarkable tran-~~

~~one of the Pygobranchi- ate Opisthobranchs (dor- sal view). a, anus; dr, the ctenidium peculiarly modified so as to encircle theanus; t, cephalic ten-tacles. External to the branchial ctenidium are seen ten club-like pro-cesses of the dorsal wall, these are the "cerata" which are characteristic-~~

~~_ ally developed in another~~

~~sub-order of Opistho- pbranchs, the Ceratonota (see fig. 62, A). (From Gegenbaur, after Alder and Hancock.)~~

~~sitory "shell-sac" or "shell-gland" of Molluscan embryos~~

~~657~~

~~develops a primitive shell-sac in its trochosphere stage of development (fig. 68), which disappears and is succeeded This forms the nucleus of~~

~~by a nautiloid shell (fig. 60).~~

~~the adult shell, and, as the ani- mal grows, be- comes enclosed by a reflexion of the mantle-skirt. In reference to the possible com- parison of the enclosed shell of Aplysia and_ its allies with those of some Slugs and of Cuttle-fishes, the reader is re- ferred tothe para- graphs dealing especially with those Molluscs. When the shell of an Aplysia enclosed in its mantle is pushed well to the left, the sub-pallial space is fully ex- posed as in fig. 63, and the vari- ous apertures of the body are seen. Posteriorly we~~

~~Fic. 638.—A plysia leporina (camelus, Cuv.), with epipodia~~

~~*and mantle reflected away from the mid-line. a, an- terior cephalic tentacle; b, posterior do.; between a and 6, the eyes; ¢, right epipodium; d, left epipo- dium ; e, hinder part of visceral hump ; fp, posterior extremity of the foot; fa, anterior part of the foot underlying the head; g, the ctenidium (branchial plume); ', the mantle-skirt tightly spread over the horny shell and pushed with it towards the left side ; i, the spermatic groove; k, the common genital pore (male and female) ; 1, orifice of the grape-shaped (sup- posed poisonous) gland; m, the osphradium (olfac- tory organ of Spengel); n, outline of part of the renal sac (nephridium) below the surface ; 0, external aper- ture of the nephridium ; p, anus, (Original.)*~~

~~*have the anus, in front of this the lobate gill-plume, be- tween the two (hence corresponding in position to that of the Azygobranchia) we have the aperture of the renal*~~

~~*organ.*~~

~~*In front, near the anterior attachment of the gill-*~~

~~*plume, is the osphradium (olfactory organ) discovered by*~~

~~*Fia. 62.*~~

~~*A. Eolis papillosa (Lin.), dorsal view. tentacles ; B. Tethys leporina, dorsal view. c, neck; d, genital pore ;*~~

~~*c, the dorsal "cerata" (hence Ceratobranchia),*~~

~~*h, margin of the foot.*~~

~~*C. Doris (Actinocyclus) tuberculatus mouth: 6, margin of the head; Jf,*~~

~~*epipodium.*~~

~~*growths.*~~

~~*(After Keferstein.)*~~

~~*a, b, posterior and anterior cephalic*~~

~~*a, the cephalic hood ; 6, cephalic tentacles ; e, anus; f, large cerata; g, smaller cerata ;*~~

~~*(Cuy.), seen from the pedal surface. m, sole of the foot ; sp, the mantle-like*~~

~~*D, E. Dorsal and lateral view of Elysia (Actewon) viridis. ep, epipodial out-*~~

~~*(see figs. 7, 68, and 72***), Aplysia, like other Mollusca,*~~

~~*Spengel, yellowish in colour, in the typical position, and overly- ing an olfactory ganglion with typical nerve-connexion (see fig. 20). To the right of Spengel's osphradium is the opening of a peculiar gland which has, when dissected out, the form of a bunch of grapes ; its secretion is said to be poisonous. On the under side of the free edge of the mantle are situated the numerous small cu- taneous glands which, in the large Aplysia camelus (not in other species), form the purple secretion which was known to the ancients. In front of the osphradium is the single genital pore, the aperture of the common or hermaphrodite duct. From this point there stretches forward to the right side of the head a groove—the spermatic groove—down which the spermatic fluid passes. In other Euthyneura this groove may close up and form a canal. At*~~

~~*Fic. 64.—Gonad, and accessory glands and ducts of Aplysia. i, ovo-testis ; h, hermaphrodite duct ; g, albuminiparous gland ; f, vesicula seminalis ; k, open- ing of the albuminiparous gland into the hermaphrodite duct; e, hermaphrodite duct (uterine portion); b, vaginal portion of the uterine duct; c, sperma- theca; d, its duct; a, genital pore, (Original.)*~~

~~*its termination by the side of the head is the muscular*~~

~~*introverted penis.*~~

~~*In the hinder part of the foot (not*~~

~~*shown in any of the diagrams) is the opening of a large*~~

~~*mucous-forming gland very often foot.*~~

~~*found in the Molluscan*~~

~~With regard to internal organization we may commence with the disposition of the renal organ (nephridium), the external opening of which has already been noted. The position of this opening and other features of the renal organ have been determined recently by Mr. J. T. Cunning- ham, Fellow of University College, Oxford, who writes as follows from Naples, February 1883 :—~~

~~'There is considerable uncertainty with respect to the names of the species of Aplysia. There are two forms which are very common in the Gulf of Naples, and which I have used in studying the ana- tomy of the renal organ in the genus. One is quite black in colour, and measures when outstretched eight or nine inches in length. The other is light brown and somewhat smaller, its length usually not exceeding seven inches. The first is flaccid and sluggish in its movements, and has not much power of contraction ; its epipodial lobes are enormously developed and extend far forward along the body ; it gives out when handled an abundance of urple liquid, which is derived from cutaneous glands situated on the under side of the free edge of the mantle. In the Zoological Station this form is known as Ap. leporina ; but according to Blochmann it is iden- tical with 4. Camelus of Cuvier. The other species is 4. depilans ; it is firm to the touch, and contracts forcibly when irritated ; the secretion of the mantle-glands is not abundant, and is milky white in appearance. The kidney has similar relations in both genera, and is identical with the organ spoken of by many authors as the triangular gland. Its superficial extent is seen when the folds covering the shell are cut away and the shell removed ; the external surface forms a triangle with its base bordering the pericardium and its apex directed posteriorly and reaching to the left-hand posterior corner of the shell-chamber. The dorsal surface of the kidney extends to the left beyond the shell-chamber beneath the skin in the space between the shell-chamber and the left epipodium.~~

~~" When the animal is turned on its left-hand side and the mantle- chamber widely opened, the gill being turned over to the left, a part of the kidney is seen beneath the skin between the attachment of the gill and the right epipodium (fig. 63). On examination this is found to be the under surface of~~

~~*the posterior limb of the a the upper surface of which has just been described as lying*~~

~~*eneath the shell. In the posterior third of this portion, close to that edge which is adjacent to the base of the gill, is the external opening (fig. 63, 0).*~~
~~÷~~

~~*"When the pericardium is cut open from above in an animal otherwise entire, the anterior face of the kidney is seen forming the posterior wall of the pericardial chamber ; on the deep edge of this face, a little to the left of the attachment of the auricle to the floor of the pericardium, is seen a depression ; this depression con- tains the opening from the pericardium into the kidney.*~~

~~*"To complete the account of the relations of the organ : the right anterior corner can be seen superficially in the wall of the mantle- chamber above the gill. Thus the base of the gill passes in a slant- ing direction across the right-hand side of the kidney, the posterior end being dorsal to the apex of the gland, and the anterior end ventral to the right-hand corner.*~~

- ~~*As so great a part of the whole surface of the kidney lies adjacent to external surfaces of the body, the remaining part which faces the internal organs is small ; it consists of the left part of the under surface ; it is level with the floor of the pericardium, and lies over the globular mass formed by the liver and convoluted intestine.*~~

~~*'Mere dissection does not give sufficient evidence concerning such communications as these of the kidney in Aplysia. I studied the external opening by taking a series of sections through the sur- rounding region of the gland ; to demonstrate the internal aperture injected a solution of Berlin blue into the pericardium ; it did not fill the whole kidney easily, but ran down into the part adjacent to the base of the gill."*~~

~~*Thus the renal organ of Aplysia is shown to conform to the Molluscan type. The heart lying within the adjacent pericardium has the usual form, a single auricle and ven- tricle. The vascular system is not extensive, the arteries soon ending in the well-marked spongy tissue which builds up the muscular foot, epipodia, and dorsal body-wall.*~~

~~*The alimentary canal commences with the usual buccal mass ; the lips are cartilaginous, but not armed with horny jaws, though these are common in other Opisthobranchs ; the lingual ribbon is multidenticulate, and a pair of salivary glands pour in their secretion. The cesophagus expands into a curious gizzard, which is armed internally with large horny processes, some broad and thick, others spinous, fitted to act as crushing instruments. From this we pass to a stomach and a coil of intestine embedded in the lobes of a voluminous liver; a cecum of large size is given off near*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*"the commencement of the intestine.*~~

~~*[OPISTHOBRANCHIA.*~~

~~*The liver opens by two ducts into the digestive tract.*~~

~~*The generative organs lie close to the coil of intestine and liver, a little to the left side. When dissected out they appear as represented in fig. 64. The essential reproductive*~~

~~*Fic, 65,—Follicles of the hermaphrodite gonads of Euthyneurous Anisopleura.—A, of Helix; B, of Eolidia. «a, ova; 6, developing spermatozoids ; c, com- mon efferent duct.*~~

~~*organ or gonad consists of both ovarian and testicular cells (see fig. 65). It is an ovo-testis. From it passes a common or hermaphrodite duct, which very soon becomes entwined in the spire of a gland—the albuminiparous gland. The latter opens into the common duct at the point #, and here also is a small diverticulum of the duct y. Passing on, we find not far from the genital pore a glandular spherical body (the spermatheca a) opening by means of a longish duct into the common duct, and then we reach the pore (fig. 63, k). Here the female apparatus terminates. But when the male secretion of the ovo-testis is active, the seminal fluid passes from the genital pore along the spermatic groove (fig. 63,) to the penis, and is by the aid of that eversible muscular organ introduced into the genital pore of a second Aplysia, whence it passes into the spermatheca, there to await the activity of the fe- male element of the ovo-testis of this second Aplysia. After an*~~

~~interval of some days—possibly weeks—the ova of the second Aplysia commence to descend the hermaphrodite duct; they become enclosed in a viscid secre- Fic. 66. ~ Enteric canal of Holidia tion at the point where the al- Pith Bre ae uctages buminiparous gland opens into *; all of which are not a te the duct intertwined with it; Gegeuiens, after Alder and Han- and on reaching the point where °°)~~

~~the spermathecal duct debouches they are impregnated by~~

~~the spermatozoa which escape now from the spermatheca~~

~~and meet the ova.~~

~~The development of Aplysia from the egg presents many~~

~~points of interest from the point of view of comparative~~

~~embryology, but in relation to the morphology of the~~

~~Opisthobranchia it is sufficient to point to the occurrence~~

~~of a trochosphere and a veliger stage (fig. 60), and of a~~

~~shell-gland or primitive shell-sac (fig. 68, sks), which is suc-~~

~~ceeded by a nautiloid shell.~~

~~The nervous system of Aplysia will be found on com- parison of fig. 20, which represents it, with our schematic Mollusc (fig. 1, D) to present but little modification. It 1s in fact a nervous system in which the great ganglion-pairs are well developed and distinct. The Euthyneurous visceral loop is long, and presents only one ganglion (in Aplysia camelus, but two distinct ganglia joined to one another in~~

~~Aplysia hybrida of the English coast), placed at its extreme limit, representing both the right and left visceral ganglia and the third or abdominal ganglion, which are so often separately present. The diagram~~

~~*(fig. 20) shows the nerve connecting this abdomino- visceral ganglion with the olfactory ganglion of Spen- gel. It is also seen to be connected with a more re- mote ganglion—the genital. Such special irregularities in the development of gan- glia upon the visceral loop, and on one or more of the main nerves connected with it, are, as the figures of Molluscan nervous systems given in this article show, very frequent. Our figure of the nervous system of Aplysia does not give the small pair of buccal ganglia which are, as in all Glosso- phorous Molluscs, present upon the nerves passing from the cerebral region to the odontophore.*~~

~~*For a comparison of various Opisthobranchs, Aplysia will be found to present a convenient starting-point. It is one of the more typical Opisthobranchs, that is to say, it belongs to the section Palliata, but other members of the Palliata, namely, Bulla and Tornatella (figs. 52 and 53), are less abnormal than Aplysia in regard to their shells and the form of the visceral hump. They have naked spirally- twisted shells which may be concealed from view in the living animal by the expansion and reflexion of the epipodia,*~~

~~*Fic. 67,—Central nervous system of Fiona (one of the Ceratonotous Opistho- branchs), showing a tendency to fusion of the great ganglia. A, cerebral, pleu- ral, and visceral ganglia united; B, pe- dal ganglion; C, buccal ganglion; D, cesophageal ganglion connected with the puccal; a, nerve to superior cephalic tentacle ; b, nerves to inferior cephalic tentacles; c, nerve to generative organs; d, pedal nerve ; e, pedal commissure ; e', visceral loop or commissure (?). (From Gegenbaur, after Bergh.)*~~

~~*Fic. 68.—Young veliger larva of an Opisthobranch (Pleuro-branchidium). m, mouth; 2, ciliated band marking off the velum; 1g, cerebral ganglion de- veloping from epiblast, within the velar area; ot, otocyst also developing from epiblast ; f, foot; i, intestine; ry, residual nutritive yelk; shs, primi- tive shell-sac or shell-gland. (From Lankester.)*~~

~~*but are not enclosed by the mantle, whilst Tornatella is*~~

~~*remarkable amongst all Euthyneura for possessing an oper-*~~

~~*culum like that of so many Streptoneura.*~~

~~*The great development of the epipodia seen in Aplysia is usual in Palliate Opisthobranchs; it occurs also in Elysia (fig. 62, D) among Non-Palliata ; in Doris it seems prob- able that the mantle-like fold overhanging the foot is to be interpreted as epipodium, the mantle-skirt being alto- gether absent, as shown by the naked position of the gills and anus on the dorsal surface (figs. 61 and 62,C). The whole surface of the body becomes greatly modified in those Non-Palliate forms which have lost, not only the*~~

~~*mantle-skirt and the shell, but also the ctenidium. Many*~~

~~*of these (Ceratonota) have peculiar processes developed on the dorsal surface (fig. 62, A, B), or retain purely*~~

~~*negative characters (fig. 62, D). The chief modification of internal organization presented by these forms, as compared with Aplysia, is found in the condition of the alimentary canal. The liver is no longer a compact organ opening by a pair of ducts into the median digestive tract, but we find very numerous hepatic diverticula on a shortened axial tract (fig. 66). These diverticula extend usually one into each of the dorsal papill or "cerata" when these are present. They are not merely digestive glands, but are sufficiently wide to act as receptacles of food, and in them the digestion of food proceeds just as in the axial portion of the canal. A precisely similar modification of the liver or great digestive gland is found in the Scorpions, where the axial portion of the digestive canal is short and straight, and the lateral ducts sufficiently wide to admit food into the ramifications of the gland there to be digested ; whilst in the Spiders the gland is reduced to a series of simple ceca.*~~

~~*The typical character is retained by the heart, peri- cardium, and the communicating nephridium or renal organ in all Opisthobranchs. An interesting example of this is furnished by the fish-like transparent Phyllirhoé (fig. 58), in which it is possible. most satisfactorily to study in the living animal, by means of the microscope, the course of the blood-stream, and also the reno-pericardial communi- cation. With reference to*~~

~~*the existence of pores placing the vascular system in open communication with the surrounding water, see the paragraph as to Mollusca gener- ally. In a form closely allied to Aplysia (Pleurobranchus) such a pore leading outwards from the branchial vein has been precisely described by Lacaze Duthiers. No such pore has been detected in Aplysia. In many of the Non-Palliate Opisthobranchs the nervous system presents a concentra- tion of the ganglia (fig. 67), contrasting greatly with what we have seen in Aplysia. Not only are the pleural ganglia fused to the cerebral, but also the visceral to these (see in further illustration the condition attained by the Pulmonate Limneeus, fig. 22), and the visceral loop is astonishingly short and insignificant (fig. 67, e'). That the parts are rightly thus identified is probable from Spengel's observation of the os- phradium and its nerve-supply in these forms ; the nerve to that organ, which isplaced somewhat anteriorly—on the dor- sal surface—being given off from the hinder part (visceral) of the right compound ganglion—the fellow to that marked A in fig. 67. The Ceratonotous Opisthobranchs, amongst other specialities of structure, are stated to possess (in some.cases at any rate) apertures at the apices of the "'cerata" or dorsal papillz, which lead from the exterior into the hepatic ceca. This requires confirmation. Some amongst them (Tergipes, Eolis) are also remarkable for possessing peculiarly modified epidermic cells placed in sacs at the apices of these same papilla, which resemble the "thread- cells" of the Planarian Flatworms and of the Ccelentera. The existence of these thread-cells is sufficiently remark- able, seeing that the Non-Palliate Opisthobranchs resemble in general form and habit the Planarian worms, many of which also possess thread-cells. But it is not conceivable that their presence is an indication of genetic affinity between the two groups, rather they are instances of homoplasy. The development of many Opisthobranchia has been examined—e.g., Aplysia, Pleurobranchidium, Elysia, Poly- cera, Doris, Tergipes. All pass through trochosphere and veliger stages, and in alla nautiloid or boat-like shell is developed, preceded by a well-marked "shell-gland" (see figs. 60 and 68). The transition from the free-swimming veliger larva with its nautiloid shell (fig. 60) to the adult form has not been properly observed, and many interesting points as to the true nature of folds (whether epipodia or mantle or velum) have yet to be cleared up by a knowledge of such development in forms like Tethys, Doris, Phyllidia, ce.*~~

~~[PULMONATA.~~

~~As in other Molluscan groups, we find even in closely- | Pulmonata, into a lung, and the ctenidium or branchial allied genera (for instance, in Aplysia and Pleurobran- | plume aborted. The Pneumonochlamyda (represented in~~

~~chidium, greatest differences as to the amount of food-material by which the egg-shell is encumbered. Some form their Diblastula by emboly (fig. 7), others by epiboly (fig. 5) ; and in the later history of the further development of the enclosed cells (arch-enteron) very marked variations occur in closely-allied forms, due to the influence of a greater or less abundance of food-material mixed with the protoplasm of the egg.~~

~~Order 2 (of the Euthyneura).—Pulmonata.~~

~~Characters.—Euthyneurous Anisopleurous Gastropoda, probably derived from ancestral forms similar to the Palliate Opisthobranchia by adaptation to a terrestrial life. The ctenidium is atrophied, and the edge of the mantle-skirt is fused to the dorsal integument by concrescence, except at one point which forms the aperture of the mantle-chamber, thus converted into a nearly closed sac. Air is admitted to this sac for respiratory and hydrostatic purposes, and it thus becomes a lung. An operculum is never present; a contrast being thus afforded with the operculate Pulmonate Streptoneura (Cyclostoma, &c.), which differ in other essential features of structure from the Pulmonata. The Pulmonata are, like the other Euthyneura, hermaphrodite, with elaborately-developed copulatory organs and accessory glands. Like other Euthyneura, they have very numerous small denticles on the lingual ribbon. The ancestral Pulmonata appear to have retained both the right and the left osphradia (Spengel's olfactory organs), since in some (Planorbis, Auricularia) we find the single osphradium to be that of the original left side, whilst in others (Limnzus) it is that of the original right side.~~

~~*In some Pulmonata (Snails) the foot is extended at right angles to the visceral hump, which rises from it in the form of a coil as in Streptoneura ; in others the visceral hump is not elevated, but is extended with the foot, and the shell is small or absent (Slugs).*~~

~~*The Pulmonata are divided into two sub-orders according to the position of the cephalic eyes.*~~

~~*Sub-order 1.—Basommatophora.*~~

~~*Characters.—Eyes placed mediad of the cephalic tentacles at their base ; the embryonic velar area retained in adult life as a pair of cephalic lobes (fig. 70, v); male and female generative apertures separate, placed (as is typical in Anisopleura) on the right side of the neck; visceral hump well developed, with a well-developed shell; aquatic in habit.*~~

~~*Family 1.—Limnwidea. Genera: Limnaus, Lam. (figs. 3, 4, &c.); Chilinia, Gray; Physa, Draparn. ; Ancylus, Geoft. ; Planorbis, Miill., &c. Family 2.—Auriculide.*~~

~~*&c. Sub-order 2.— - Stylommatophora.*~~

~~*Characters.—Eyes placed on the summit of two hollow tentacles ; visceral hump well or not at all developed; shell large and coiled, or minute or absent ; almost exclusively terrestrial.*~~

~~*Family 1.—Helicide.*~~

~~*Genera: Helix, L. (figs. 69, A; 72”); Vitrina, Draparn. ; Suc- cinea, Draparn. ; Bulimus, Scopoli; Achatina, Lam. ; Pupa, Lam. ; Clausilia, Draparn., &c.*~~

~~*Family 2.—Limacide (Slugs).*~~

~~*Genera: Limaz, L.; Incilaria, Benson; Arion, Ferussac (fig.*~~

~~*69, D); Parmacella, Cuvier; Testacella, Cuvier (fig. 69, C), &c. Family 3.—Oncidiade.*~~

~~*Genera: Oncidiwm, Buchanan; Peronia, Blainv. (fig. 72) ;*~~

~~*Vaginulus, Ferussac, &c.*~~

~~*Further Remarks on Pulmonata.—The land-snails and slugs forming the group Pulmonata are widely distinguished from a small set of terrestrial Azygobranchia, the Pneumo- nochlamyda (see above), at one time associated with them on account of their mantle-chamber being converted, as in*~~

~~*Genera: Auricula, Lam. ; Conovulus, Lam. ; Pitharella, Wood.*~~

~~*and other genera observed by Lankester) the | England by the common genus Cyclostoma) have a twisted*~~

~~*Fic. 69.—A series of Stylommatophorous Pulmonata, showing transitional forms*~~

~~*between snail and slug,*~~

~~*A. Helix pomatia (from Keferstein).*~~

~~*B. Helicophanta brevipes (from Keferstein, after Pfeiffer).*~~

~~*C. Testacella haliotidea (from Keferstein),*~~

~~*D. Arion ater, the great Black Slug (from Keferstein). a, Shell in A, B, C, shell-sac (closed) in D; }, orifice leading into the*~~

~~*subpallial chamber (lung).*~~

~~*visceral nerve-loop, an operculum on the foot, a complex rhipidoglossate or tenioglossate radula, and are of distinct sexes; they are, in fact, Azygobranchiate Streptoneura. The Pulmonata have a straight visceral nerve-loop, never an operculum (even in the embryo), and a multidenticulate*~~

~~*) ni ria : f Fic. 70.—A, B, C. Three views of Limnzus stagnalis, in order to show the persistence of the larval velar area v, as the circum-oral lobes of*~~

~~*the adult, m, mouth; f, foot; v, velar area, the margin » corresponding with the ciliated band which demarcates the velar area or velum of the embryo Gas- tropod (see fig. 4, D, E, F, H, I, v). (Original.) radula, the teeth being equi-formal ; and they are hermaphro- dite. Some Pulmonata (Limnezus, &c.) live in fresh-waters although breathing air. The remarkable discovery has been made that in deep lakes such Limnzi do not breathe air, but admit water to the lung-sac and live at the bottom. The lung-sac serves undoubtedly as a hydrostatic apparatus in the aquatic Pulmonata, as well as assisting respiration.*~~

~~*'It is not improbable that here, and in other air-breathing*~~

~~*animals, the hydrostatic function was the primary one, and the respiratory a later development.*~~

~~*PULMONATA. |*~~

~~*The same general range of body-form is shown in Pul- monata as in the Natant Azygobranchia and in the Opis- thobranchia; at one extreme we have Snails with coiled visceral hump, at the other cylindrical or flattened Slugs (see fig. 69). Limpet-like forms are also an found (fig. 71, Ancylus). The foot is al- WS ways simple, with its flat crawling surface | WS extending from end to end, but in the KS embryo Limneus (fig. 4, H) it shows a "r5> bilobed character, which leads on to the ¥ condition characteristic of Pteropoda. et eer The adaptation of the Pulmonata to ter- form aquatic Pul- restrial life has entailed little modification scm) of the internal organization. The vascular system appears to be more complete in them than in other Gastropoda, fine vessels and even capillaries being present in place of lacune, in which arteries and veins find their meeting- point. The subject has not, however, been investigated by the proper methods of recent histology, and our know-*~~

~~*Fia, 72.—Peronia Tonga, a littoral Pulmonate, found on the shores of the Indian and Pacific Oceans (Mauritius, Japan).*~~

~~*ledge of it, as of the vascular system of Molluscs generally, ig most unsatisfactory. In one genus (Planorbis) the plasma of the blood is coloured red by hemoglobin, this being the only instance of the pre- sence of this*~~

~~*body in the blood of Glossophorous Mollusca, though it occurs in corpuscles in the blood of the bivalves Arca and Solen (Lankester, 31).*~~

~~*The generative apparatus of the Snail (Helix) may serve as an ex- ample of the hermaphrodite appa- ratus common to the Pulmonata and Opisthobranchia (fig. 72*). From the ovo-testis, which lies near the apex of the visceral coil, a common hermaphrodite duct v.¢ proceeds, which receives the duct of the compact white albumini- parous gland #.d., and then be- comes much enlarged, the addi- tional. width being due to the development of glandular folds, which are regarded as forming a uterus u. Where these folds cease the common duct splits into two portions, a male and a female. Fia.72*,—Hermaphroditerepro- tha anske deck vd becomes leaky te ere ee mils and muscular near its termination evo-testis; 7.2, hermaphro-*~~

~~*° : dite duct; E.d., albuminipar- at the genital pore, forming the ous gland; a, uterine dilata- penis p. Attached to it is a diver- ee ae ticulum jt. in which the sperma- glands on the female duct; tozoa which have descended from %3¢ page ne re ae one the ovo-testis are stored and mo- ne nid Ca apeed delled into sperm ropes or sperma- ing into the female duct; v.d, tophores. 'The female portion of the duct is more complex. Soon after quitting the uterus it is joined by a long duct leading from a glandular sac, the spermatheca (#,f). In this duct and sac the spermatophores received in copulation from*~~

~~*male duct (vas deferens); 7, penis; fi., flagellum, another snail are lodged. In Helix hortensis the sperma-*~~

~~*theca is simple. In other species of Helix a second duct (as large in Helix aspersa as the chief one) is given off from the spermathecal duct, and in the natural state is closely adherent to the wall of the uterus. This second duct has normally no spermathecal gland at its termination, which is simple and blunt. But in rare cases in Helix aspersa a second spermatheca is found at the end of this second duct. Tracing the widening female duct onwards we*~~

~~*now come to the openings of the digitate accessory glands d, d, which probably assist in the formation of the egg-capsule. Close to them is the remarkable dart-sac ps, a thick-walled sac, in the lumen of which a crystalline four-fluted rod or dart consisting of carbonate of lime is found. It is supposed to act in some way as a stimulant in copulation, but pos- sibly has to do with the calcareous covering of the egg- capsule. Other Pulmonata exhibit variations of secondary importance in the details of this hermaphrodite apparatus.*~~

~~*- The nervous system of Helix is not favourable as an example on account of the fusion of the ganglia to form an almost uniform ring of nervous matter around the cesophagus. 'The Pond-Snail (Limnzeus) furnishes, on the other hand, a very beautiful case of distinct ganglia and connecting cords (fig. 22). The demonstration which it affords of the extreme shortening of the Euthyneurous vis- ceral nerve-loop is most instructive and valuable for com- parison with and explanation of the condition of the nervous centres in Cephalopoda, as also of some Opisthobranchia. The figure (fig. 22) is sufficiently described in the letter- press attached to it; the pair of buccal ganglia joined by the connectives to the cerebrals are, as in most of our figures, omitted. Here we need only further draw attention to the osphradium, discovered by Lacaze Duthiers (82), and shown by Spengel to agree in its innervation with that organ in all other Gastropoda. On account of the shortness of the visceral loop and the proximity of the right visceral ganglion to the cesophageal nerve-ring, the nerve to the osphradium and olfactory ganglion is very long. The posi- tion of the osphradium corresponds more or less closely with that of the vanished right ctenidium, with which it is normally associated. In Helix and Limax the osphradium has not been described, and possibly its discovery might clear up the doubts which have been raised as to the nature of the mantle-chamber of those genera. In Planorbis, which is dexiotropic (as are a few other genera or exceptional varieties of various Anisopleurous Gastropods) instead of being leiotropic, the osphradium is on the left side, and receives its nerve from the left visceral ganglion, the whole series of unilateral organs being reversed. This is, as might be expected, what is found to be the case in all " reversed " Gastropods. It is also the case in the Pulmonate Auricula, which is leiotropic.*~~

~~*The shell of the Pulmonata, though always light and delicate, is in many cases a well-developed spiral "house," into which the creature can withdraw itself ; and, although the foot possesses no operculum, yet in Helix the aperture of the shell is closed in the winter by a complete lid, the "hybernaculum," more or Jess calcareous in nature, which is secreted by the foot. In Clausilia a peculiar modifica tion of this lid exists permanently in the adult, attached by an elastic stalk to the mouth of the shell, and known as the "clausilium." In Limnezus the permanent shell is preceded in the embryo by a well-marked shell-gland or primitive shell-sac (fig. 72***), at one time supposed to be the developing anus, but shown by Lankester to be identical with the "sliell-gland" discovered by him in other Mol- lusca (Pisidium, Pleurobranchidium, Neritina, &c.). As in other Gastropoda Anisopleura, this shell-sac may abnorm- ally develop a plug of chitonous matter, but normally it flattens out and disappears, whilst the cap-like rudiment of the permanent shell is shed out from the dome-like surface*~~

~~*of the visceral hump, in the centre of which the shell-sac existed for a brief period.*~~

~~*In Clausilia, according to the observations of Gegenbaur, the primitive shell-sac does not flatten out and disappear, but takes the form of a flattened closed sac. Within this closed sac a plate of calcareous matter is developed, and after a time the upper wall of the sac disappears, and the calcareous plate continues to grow as the nucleus of the permanent shell. In the slug Testacella (fig. 69, C) the shell-plate never attains a large size, though naked. In other slugs, namely, Limax and Arion, the shell-sac remains permanently closed over the shell-plate, which in the latter*~~

~~*genus consists of a granular mass of carbonate of lime. |*~~

~~*The permanence of the primitive shell-sac in these slugs is a point of considerable interest. It is clear enough that the sac is of a different origin from that of Aplysia (described in the section treating of Opisthobranchia), being primitive instead of secondary. It seems probable that it is identical with one of the open sacs in which each shell-plate of a Chiton is formed, and the series of plate-like imbrications which are placed behind the single*~~

~~*shell-sac on the dorsum of the curious slug, Plectrophorus, suggest the possibility of the formation of a series of shell-sacs on the back of that animal similar to those which we find in Chiton. Whether the closed primitive shell-sac of the slugs (and with it the transient embryonic shell-gland of all other Mollusca) is precisely the same thing as the closed sac in which the calcareous pen or shell of the Cephalopod Sepia*~~

~~*Fic, 72**,—Comparative diagrams of an embryo Slug, Limax (left), and an embryo Cuttle-fish, Loligo (right). sh, internal shell; pk, embryonic renal organ (Stiebel's canal) in Limax ; mt, edge of the mantle-flap in Loligo ; op, cephalic eye; t, cephalic tentacle; m, position of the mouth; Ft, the foot, Fu, the hinder part of the foot drawn out to form the funnel of Loligo ; con, the contractile yelk-sac or hernia-like protrusion of the mid-region of the foot, corresponding to the line of closure of the blastopore in Limneus. N.B.—The blastopore in the embryo of Loligo, which, like that of a bird, is much distorted by excess of food-yelk, does close at the extremity of the yelk-sac con. (Original.)*~~

~~*and its allies is formed, is a further question, which we*~~

~~*shall consider when dealing with the Cephalopoda. It*~~

~~*is important here to note that Clausilia furnishes, us with an exceptional instance of the continuity of the shell or secreted product of the primitive shell-sac with the adult shell. In most other Mollusca (Anisopleurous Gastropods, Pteropods, and Conchifera) there is a want of such continuity; the primitive shell-sac contributes no factor to the permanent shell, or only a very minute knob- like particle (Neritina and Paludina). It flattens out and disappears before the work of forming the permanent shell commences. And just as there is a break at this stage, so (as observed by Krohn in Marsenia = Echinospira) there may be a break at a later stage, the nautiloid shell formed on the larva being cast, and a new shell of a different form being formed afresh on the surface of the visceral hump. It is, then, in this sense that we may speak of primary, secondary, and tertiary shells in Mollusca, recognizing the fact that they may be merely phases fused by continuity of growth so as to form but one shell, or that in other cases they may be presented to us as separate individual things, in virtue of the non-development of the later phases,*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*[PULMONATA.*~~

~~*or in virtue of sudden changes in the activity of the mantle- surface causing the shedding or disappearance of one phase of shell-formation before a later one is entered upon.*~~

~~*The development of the aquatic Pulmonata from the egg offers considerable facilities for study, and that of Limnzeus has been elucidated by Lankester, whilst Rabl has with remarkable skill applied the method of sections to the study of the minute embryos of Planorbis. The chief features in the development of Limnezus are exhibited in the woodeuts (figs. 8, 4, and 72***), There is not a very large amount of food-material present in the egg of this snail, and accordingly the cells resulting from division are not so unequal as in many other cases. The four cells first formed are of equal size, and then four smaller cells are formed by division of these four so as to lie at one end of the first four (the pole corresponding to that at which the "directive corpuscles" de are extruded and remain). The smaller cells now divide and spread over the four larger cells (fig. 3) ; at the same time a space*~~

~~*Fig, 72***,—Embryo of Limneus stagnalis, at a stage when the Trochosphere is developing foot and shell-gland and becoming a Veliger, seen as a transparent object under slight pressure. ph, pharynx (stomodeal invagination); ¥, v, the ciliated band marking out the velum; ng, cerebral nerve-ganglion ; re,*~~

~~*_ Stiebel's canal (left side), probably an evanescent embryonic nephridium ; sh,*~~

~~*the primitive shell-sac or shell-gland ; pi, the rectal peduncle or pedicle of invagination, its attachment to the ectoderm is coincident with the hindmost extremity of the elongated blastopore of fig. 8, C; tge, mesoblastic (skeleto-trophic and muscular) cells investing gs, the bilobed arch-enteron or lateral vesicles of invaginated endoderm, which will develop into liver ; J, the foot (Original.) —the cleavage cavity or blastoccel—forms in the centre of the mulberry-like mass. Then the large cells recom- mence the process of*~~

~~division and sink into the hollow of the sphere, leaving an elongated groove, the blastopore, on the surface (fig. 3, C, and fig, 4, G). The invaginated cells (derived from the division of the four big cells) form the endoderm or arch-enteron ; the outer cells are the ecto- derm. 'The blastopore now closes along the middle part of its course, which coincides in position with the future "foot." One end of the blastopore becomes nearly closed, and an ingrowth of ectoderm takes place around it to form the stomodzeum or fore-gut and mouth. The other extreme end closes, but the invaginated endoderm cells remain in continuity with this extremity of the blastopore, and form the "rectal peduncle" or "pedicle of invagination" of Lankester (see also the account and figures (fig. 151, A) of the development of the bivalve Pisidium), although the endoderm cells retain no contact with the middle region of the now closed-up blastopore. The anal opening forms at a late period by a very short ingrowth or proctodeum coinciding with the blind termination of the rectal peduncle (fig. 72***, mi). The body-cavity and the muscular, fibrous, and vascular tissues are traced partly to two symmetrically-disposed~~

~~" "mesoblasts," which bud off from the invaginated arch- enteron, partly to cells derived from the ectoderm, which at a very early stage is connected by long processes with the invaginated endoderm, as shown in fig. 3, D. The ex- ternal form of the embryo goes through the same changes as in other Gastropods, and is not, as was held previously to Lankester's observations, exceptional, When the middle and hinder regions of the blastopore are closing in, an equatorial ridge of ciliated cells is formed, converting the embryo into a typical "Trochosphere" (fig. 4, E, F).~~

~~The foot now protrudes below the mouth (fig. 4), and the post-oral hemisphere of the Trochosphere grows more rapidly than the anterior or velar area. The young foot shows a bilobed form (fig. 4, D, 7). Within the velar area the eyes and the cephalic tentacles commence to rise up (fig. 4, D, ¢), and on the surface of the post-oral region is formed a cap- like shell and an encircling ridge, which gradually increases in prominence and becomes the freely depending mantle- skirt. The outline of the velar area becomes strongly emarginated and can be traced through the more mature~~

~~*embryos to the cephalic lobes or labial processes of the adult Limnzus (fig. 70).*~~

~~*This permanence of the distinction of the part known as the velar area through embryonic life to the adult state is exceptional among Mollusca, and is therefore a point of especial interest in Limneus. None of the figures of adult Limneeus in recent works on Zoology show properly the form of the head and these velar lobes, and accordingly the figures here given have been specially sketched for the present article. The increase of the visceral dome, its spiral twisting, and the gradual closure of the space over- hung by the mantle-skirt so as to convert it into a lung-sac with a small contractile aperture, belong to stages in the development later than any represented in our figures.*~~

~~*We may now revert briefly to the internal organization at a period when the Trochosphere is beginning to show a prominent foot growing out from the area where the mid- region of the elongated blastopore was situated, and having therefore at one end of it the mouth and at the other the anus. Fig. 72*** represents such an embryo under slight compression as seen by transmitted light. The ciliated band of the left side of the velar area is indicated by a line extending from v to v; the foot f is seen between the pharynx ph and the pedicle of invagination pz. The mass of the arch-enteron or invaginated endodermal sac has taken on a bilobed form (compare Pisidium, fig. 151), and its cells are swollen (gs and tge). This bilobed sac becomes entirely the liver in the adult ; the intestine and stomach are formed from the pedicle of invagination, whilst the pharynx, cesophagus, and crop form from the stomodzal invagination ph. To the right (in the figure) of the rectal peduncle is seen the deeply invaginated shell-gland ss, with a secretion sh protruding from it. The shell-gland is destined in Limneeus to become very rapidly stretched out, and to disappear. Farther up, within the velar area, the rudiments of the cerebral nerve-ganglion ng are seen separating from the ectoderm. A remarkable cord of cells having a position just below the integument occurs on each side of the head. In the figure the cord of the left side is seen, marked ve. This paired organ consists of a string of cells which are perforated by a duct. The opening of the duct at either end is not known. Such cannulated cells are characteristic of the nephridia of many worms, and it is held that the organs thus formed in the*~~

~~*embryo Limnzus are embryonic nephridia. 'The most important fact about them is that they disappear, and are in no way connected with the typical nephridium of the adult. In reference to their first observer they are conveniently called "Stiebel's canals." Other Pulmonata possess, when embryos, Stiebel's canals in a more fully-developed state, for instance, the*~~

~~*common slug Limax (fig. 72**, pk). Here too they disap- pear during embryonic life. Further knowledge concern- ing them is greatly needed. It is not clear whether there is anything equivalent to them in the embryos of marine Gastropoda or other Mollusca, the ectodermal cells called " embryonic renal organs" in some Gastropod embryos hav- ing only a remote resemblance to them. The three pairs of transient embryonic nephridia of the medicinal leech, the ciliated cephalic pits of Nemertines, and the anterior nephridia of Géphyreans, all suggest themselves for com- parison with these enigmatical canals.*~~

~~*Marine Pulmonata.—Whilst the Pulmonata are essen- tially a terrestrial and fresh-water group, there is one genus of slug-like Pulmonates which frequent the sea- coast (Peronia, fig. 72), whilst their immediate congeners (Onchidium) are found in marshes of brackish water. Sem- per (33) has shown that these slugs have, in addition to the usual pair of cephalic eyes, a number of eyes developed upon the dorsal integument. These dorsal eyes are very perfect in elaboration, possessing lens, retinal nerve-end cells, retinal pigment, and optic nerve. Curiously enough, however, they differ from the cephalic Molluscan eye (for an account of which see fig. 118) in the fact that, as in the vertebrate eye, the filaments of the optic nerve pene- trate the retina, and are connected with the surfaces of the nerve-end cells nearer the lens instead of with the opposite end, The significance of this arrangement is not known, but it is important to note, as shown by Hensen, Hickson, and others, that in the bivalves Pecten and Spondylus, which also have eyes upon the mantle quite distinct from typical cephalic eyes, there is the same relationship as in Onchidiadz of the optic nerve to the retinal cells (fig. 145). In both Onchidiade and Pecten the pallial eyes have prob- ably been developed by the modification of tentacles, such as coexist in an unmodified form with the eyes. The Onchidiadze are, according to Semper, pursued as food by the leaping fish Periophthalmus, and the dorsal eyes are of especial value to them in aiding them to escape from this enemy.*~~

~~*Class II.—SCAPHOPODA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Mollusca Glossophora with the roor adapted to a BURROWING life in sand (figs. 73; 74, f). The body,*~~

~~*Fic 73—Dentalium vulgare, Da C. (after Lacaze Duthiers), A. Ventral view of the animal removed from its shell. B. Dorsal view of the same. C. Lateral view of the same. D, The shell in section. I, Surface view of the shell with gill-tentacles exserted as in life, a, mantle; a', longitudinal muscle ; a", fringe surrounding the anterior opening of the mantle-chamber ; a", the posterior appendix of the mantle; b, anterior circular muscle of the mantle ; b', posterior do. ; ¢, ¢', longitudinal muscle of mantle; ¢, liver; Jf, gonad ; k, buccal mass (showing through the mantle); ¢, left nephridium; s', club-shaped extremity of the foot; w, w', longitudinal blood-sinus of the mantle.*~~

~~*and to a much greater extent the mantle-skirt and the foot, are elongated along the primitive antero-posterlor (oro-anal)*~~

~~*664*~~

~~*axis, and retain, both externally and in the disposition of internal organs, the archi-Molluscan BILATERAL SYMMETRY. The margins of the mantle-skirt of opposite sides (right and left) meet below the foot and fuse by concrescence ; only a small extent in front and a small extent behind of the mantle-margin is left unfused. Thus a CYLINDRICAL FORM is attained by the mantle, and on its surface a TUBU- LAR shell (incomplete along the ventral line in the youngest stages) is secreted (fig. 73, D). The roor is greatly elon- gated, and can be protruded from the anterior mantle-aperture. It has a characteristic clavate form (fig. 74, /).*~~

~~*The pair of typical cTENIDIA are symmetrically deve- loped in the form of numerous gill-filaments (fig. 74, A, 7)*~~

~~*Fic. 74.—Diagrams of the anatomy of Dentalium. A. The anterior portion of the tubular mantle is slit open along the median dorsal line, and its cut margins (a) reflected so as to expose the foot, snout, and gills. 3B. Lateral view with organs showing as though by transparency. ©. Similar lateral view to show the number and position of the nerve-ganglia and cords. a, the*~~

~~*mantle-skirt ; 6, anterior free margin of the same; ¢, hinder extension of the mantle-skirt ; d, the appendix of the mantle-skirt separated by a valve from the peri-anal portion of the sub-pallial chamber, h; e, the snout or oral process; f, the foot; g, the ctenidial filaments ; h, the peri-anal part of the sub-pallial chamber ; 7, the peri-oral yea of the same chamber; k, the anus; l, the left nephridium ; m, the mouth surrounded by pinnate tentacles; n, the buccal mass and odontophore; 0, cesophagus; p, the left lobe of the liver; g.p, pedal ganglion-pair; g.e, cerebral ganglion-pair; g.pl, pleural ganglion-pair; g.v, visceral ganglion-pair. Possibly further research will show that g.pl is the typical visceral ganglion-pair, and that g.v is a pair of olfactory ganglia placed on the visceral loop as in the Lipocephala according to Spengel.*~~

~~*placed at the base of the cylindrical cephalic prominence or snout (fig. 74, ¢). A pair of NEPHRiDtA (fig. 74, J) are present, opening near the anus (fig. 74, %). The, right serves as a genital duct, the left is apparently renal in function. The LIVER (p) is large and bilobed, the lobes divided into parallel lobules. The NERVE-GANGLIA are present (fig. 74, C) as well-marked cerebral, pleural, pedal, and visceral pairs the typical pleural pair being closely joined to the cerebral. The visceral loop or commissure is untwisted, that is to say, the Scaphopoda are EUTHYNEUR- ous. Hearr and distinct vEssELs are not developed; a colourless blood is contained in the sinuses and networks formed by the body-cavity. The Gonaps are either male or female, the sexes being distinct.*~~

~~*The embyro is remarkable for developing five ciliated rings posterior to the ciliated ring and tuft characteristic of the trochosphere larval condition of Molluscs generally. These rings are comparable to those of the larva of Pneu- modermon (fig. 84), and like them disappear.*~~

~~*The class Scaphopoda is not divisible into orders or families. It contains only three genera: Dentalium, L. (figs. 73, 74); Siphonodentalium, Sars.; and Entalium, Dfr.*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*[CEPHALOPODA.*~~

~~They inhabit exclusively the sand on the sea-coast in depths of from 10 to 100 fathoms.~~

~~It is worthy of remark that the Scaphopoda constitute among the Glossophora a parallel to the sand-boring forms so common among the Lipocephala (such as Solen and Mya). This parallelism is seen in the special mode of elongation of the body, in the form of the foot, and in the tubular form of the mantle brought about by the concrescence of its ventral margins, as in the Lipocephala mentioned. The cylindrical shell of Dentalium is also comparable to the two semi-cylindrical valves of the shell of Solen ; or, better, to the tubular shell of Aspergillum and Teredo. Nevertheless, it is necessary to consider the Scaphopoda as standing far apart from the Lipocephala, and as having no special genetic but only a homoplastic relationship to them, in consequence of their possessing a well-developed odonto- phore, the characteristic organ of the Glossophora never possessed by any Lipocephala.~~

~~Class IJI.—CEPHALOPODA.~~

~~Characters.—Mollusca Glossophora with the roor prim- arily adapted to a FREE-SWIMMING mode of life. The archi-Molluscan BILATERAL SYMMETRY predominates both in the external and internal organs generally, though in many cases (especially the smaller forms) a one-sided dis- placement of primitively median organs and a suppression of one of the primitively paired organs is to be noted.~~

~~An ANTERIOR, MEDIAN, and POSTERIOR region of the FooT can be distinguished (fig. 75, (4), (5), (6)), corre- sponding to but probably not derived from the pro-, meso-,~~

~~Fic. 75.—Diagrams of a series of Molluscs to show the form of the foot and its regions, and the relation of the visceral hump to the antero-posterior and dorso-ventralaxes. (1) A Chiton. (2) A Lamellibranch. (3) An Anisopleur- ous Gastropod. (4) A Thecosomatous Pteropod. (5) A Gymnosomatous Pteropod. (6) A Siphonopod (Cuttle). A, P, antero-posterior horizontal axis; D, V, dorso-ventral vertical axis at right angles to A, P; 0, mouth; a, anus; ms, edge of the mantle-skirt or flap; sp, sub-pallial chamber or space ; ff,~~

~~*fore-foot; m/f, mid-foot ; hf, hind-foot; ¢, cephalic eyes ; ed, centro- dorsal point (in 6 only).*~~

~~*and meta-podium of Gastropoda. The fore-foot invariably has the HEAD MERGED into it, and grows up on each side (right and left) of that part so as to surround the mouth, the two upgrowths of the fore-foot meeting on the dorsal aspect of the snout,—whence the name Cephalopoda. In the more typical forms of both branches of the class, the peri-oral portion of the foot is drawn out into paired arm-*~~

~~*PTEROPODA. |*~~

~~*like processes, either very short and conical (Clio, Eurybia), or lengthy (Pneumodermon, Octopus) ; these may be beset with suckers or hooks, or both. The mid-foot (fig. 75, m/) is expanded into a pair of muscular lobes right and left, which either are used for striking the water like the wings of a butterfly (Pteropoda), or are bent round towards one another so that their free margins meet and constitute a short tube,—the siphon or funnel (Siphonopoda). The hind foot is either very small or absent.*~~

~~*A distinctive feature of the Cephalopoda is the ABSENCE of anything like the ToRston of the visceral mass seen in the Anisopleurous Gastropoda, although as an exception this torsion occurs in one family (the Limacinide).*~~

~~*The anus, although it may be a little displaced from the median line, is (except in Limacinidx) approximately median and posterior. The MANTLE-SKIRT may be aborted (Gymnosomatous Pteropoda) ; when present it is deeply produced posteriorly, forming a large sub-pallial chamber around the anus. As in our schematic Mollusc, by the side of the anus are placed the single or paired apertures of the NEPHRIDIA, the GENITAL APERTURES (paired only in Nau- tilus, in female Octopoda, female Ommastrephes, and male Eledone), and the paired crENrD1A (absent in all Pteropoda). The VISCERAL HUMP or dome is elevated, and may be very much elongated (see fig. 75, (4), (5), (6)) in a direction almost at right angles to the primary horizontal axis (A, P in fig. 75) of the foot.*~~

~~*A SHELL is frequently, but not invariably, secreted on the visceral hump and mantle-skirt of Cephalopoda ; but there are both Pteropoda and*~~

~~*Siphonopoda devoid of any shell, The shell is usually light in substance or lightened by air-chambers in correlation with the free-swimming habits of the Cephalopoda. It may be external, when it is box-like or boat-like, or internal, when it is plate-like. Very numerous minute pigmented sacs capable of expansion and contraction, and: known as CHROMATOPHORES, are usually present in the integument in both branches of the class. The GoNADs of both sexes are developed in one individual in some Cephalopoda (Pteropoda), in others the sexes are separate:*~~

~~*SENSE-ORGANS, especially the cephalic eyes and the oto- cysts, are very highly developed in the higher Cephalopoda. The osphradia have the typical form and position in the lower forms, but appear to be more or less completely replaced by other olfactory organs in the higher. The normal NERVE-GANGLIA are present, but the connectives are shortened, and the ganglia concentrated and fused in the cephalic region. Large special ganglia (optic, stellate, and aaa are developed in the higher forms (Siphono- poda).*~~

~~*The Cephalopoda exhibit a greater range from low to high organization than any other Molluscan class, and hence they are difficult to characterize in regard to several groups of organs; but they are definitely held together by the existence in all of the encroachment of the fore-foot so as*~~

~~*Dp*~~

~~*Fig. 77.*~~

~~*Fig, 76. Fic. 76.—Spirialis bulimoides, Soul., one of the Limacinide enlarged (from Owen), C€ C, pteropodial lobes of the mid-foot ; f, operculum carried on the hind-foot; g, spiral shell. Fic. 77. —Operculum of Spirialis enlarged.*~~

~~*to surround the head, and by the functionally important BILOBATION OF THE MID-FOOT.*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~Two very distinct branches of the Cephalopoda are to be recognized: the one, the Pteropoda, more archaic in~~

~~the condition of its bi- lobed mid-foot, including a number of minute, and in all probability degen- erate, oceanic forms of simplified and obscure organization ; the other, the Siphonopoda, con- taining the Pearly Nautilus and the Cuttles, which have for ages (as their fossil remains show) dominated among the in- habitants of the sea, be- ing more highly gifted in special sense, more varied in movement, more powerful in pro-~~

~~portion to size, and more Fia,~~

~~heavily equipped with owen).~~

~~"7a,—Cymbulia Peronii, Cuvier (from C, C, the expanded pteropodial~~

~~destructive weapons of lobes or wing-like fins of the mid-foot, offence than any other marine organisms. Branch a.—PTEROPODA.~~

~~Characters.—Cephalopoda in which the mid-region of the foot is (as compared with the Siphonopoda) in its more~~

~~primitive condition, being relatively largely developed and drawn out into a pair of wing-like muscular lobes (identical with the two halves of the siphon of the Siphon- opoda) which are used as paddles (see figs. 76-86). The hind-region of the foot is often aborted, but may carry an operculum (figs. 76, 77). The fore-region of the foot (that embracing the head) is also often rudimentary, but may be drawn out into one or more pairs of tentacles, simulating cephalic tentacles, and provided with suckers (figs. 84, 85).~~

~~Though the visceral hump is not twisted except in the Limacinide (fig. 76), there is a very general tendency to one-sided development of the viscera, and of their external apertures (as contrasted with Siphonopoda). The ctenidia are aborted, with the possible exception of the processes (fig. 85, c) at the end of the body of Pneumodermon. The vas- cular system resembles that of the Gastropoda. The ne- phridium is a single tubular body~~

corresponding to the right nephridium of the typi- cal pair of the archi- Mollusc. The anal aperture is usually placed a little to the left of to the right.

h

Fic. 78.—Styliola acicula, Rang. sp. en-

larged (from Owen). C, C, the wing- like lobes of the mid-foot; d, median fold of same; e¢, copulatory organ ; h,

ointed extremity of the shell; 4, an- itor margin of the shell; 1, stomach; 0, liver; u, hermaphrodite gonad.

the median line, more rarely

In the Limacinide it has an exceptional

position, owing to the torsion of the visceral mass, as In

Anisopleurous Gastropoda.

XVI.—84

666

Jaws and a lingual ribbon are present as in typical Glossophora, the dentition of the ribbon and the number of jaw-pieces presenting a certain range of variation. Sense-

Fig. 79. Fig. 80.

Fia. 79.—Cavolinia tridentata, Forsk. from the Mediterranean, magnified two diameters (from Owen), a, mouth; b, pair of cephalic tentacles; C, C, ptero- podial lobes of the mid-foot; d, median web connecting these ; é, e, processes of the mantle-skirt reflected over the surface of the shell; g, the shell en- closing the visceral hump; h, the median spine of the shell.

~~*Fig, 80.—Shell of Cavolinia tridentata, seen from the side. /f, postero-dorsal surface; g, antero-ventral surface; h, median dorsal spine ; 7, mouth of the shell.*~~

~~*organs are present in the form of cephalic eyes in very few forms (Cavolinia, Clione, and in an undescribed form dis- covered by Suhm during the "Challenger" Expedition) ; oto- cysts are universally present. The osphradia are present in typical form, although the ctenidia are aborted ; only one osphradium (the right of the typical pair) is present (fig. 87). The gonads are both male and female in the same individual. The genital aperture is single. Copulatory or- gans, often of consider- able size, are present (fig. 86, 2).*~~

~~*The mantle-skirt is present in one divi- sion of the Pteropoda (Thecosomata), and in these an extensive sub- pallial chamber is de- veloped, the walls of which in the absence of ctenidia have a branchial function. In asecond division (Gym- Fro, 81,—Embryo of Cavolinia tridentata (from nosomata), which com- Balouy afte 1), onus medion poysn prises forms highly de-*~~

~~*h, heart; 7, intestine ; ot, otocyst; q, shell; 7, veloped in regar d to nephridium ; s, cesophagus ; o, sac containing the processes of the*~~

~~*nutritive yelk; mb, mantle-skirt; me, sub-*~~

~~*pallial chamber; Kn, contractile sinus. fore-foot, the mantle-skirt is aborted. A shell is developed on the surface of the visceral hump and mantle-skirt of the Thecosomata, whilst in the Gymnosomata, which have no mantle-skirt, there is in the adult animal no shell. The embryo passes through a trochosphere and a veliger stage (fig. 81), provided with boat-like shell, except in some Gymnosomata in which the Trochosphere with its single velar ciliated band becomes metamorphosed into a larva which has three additional ciliated bands but no velum (resembling the larva of the Scaphopod Dentalium) ; this banded larva does not form a larval shell (fig. 84),*~~

~~*The Pteropoda are divided into two orders,*~~

~~*Order 1.—Thecosomata.*~~

~~*Characters.— Pteropoda provided with a mantle-skirt,*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*[SIPHONOPODA.*~~

~~*and with a delicate hyaline shell developed on the surface of the visceral hump and mantle-skirt ; visceral hump, and consequently the shell, spirally twisted in one family, the Limacinide ; shell often with con- tracted mouth and di- lated body, its walls sometimes drawn out into spine-like processes, which are covered by reflexions of the free margin of the mantle (Cavolinia, figs. 79, 80). Family 1.—Cymbuliide. Genera: Tiedemannia, Chj.; Halopsyche, The- ceurybia (figs. 82, 83), Cymbulia, P. and L. (fig. 77a). Family 2. — Conulartidz (fossil). Genus: Conularia, Mill. Family 3.— Tentaculitide*~~

~~*(fossil). =~ seg oe Let so*~~

~~*: ; om Owen). Much enlarged ; the body-wa es | 7 Poutacutanes, removed. a, the mouth; c, the pteropodial Schlth. ; Cornulites, jobes of the foot; f, the centrally-placed Schlth. ; Coleoprion, hind-foot; d, l, e, three pairs of tentacle-like Sandb. processes placed at the sides of the mouth,*~~

~~*and developed (in all probability) from the fore-foot; 0', anus; y, genital pore ; /, retractor muscles ; 0 and p, the liver ; u, ¥, w, genitalia.*~~

~~*Family 4.—Hyalcidex.*~~

~~*' Genera: Triptera, Q. and G.; Styliola, Les. (fig. 78); Balantium, Leh. ; Vaginella, Dand. ; Cleodora, P. and L.; Diacria, Gr.; Pleuwropus, Esch.; Cavolinia, Gioni. (figs.*~~

~~*79, 80, 81).*~~

~~*Family 5.—Thecide.*~~

~~*Genera: Theca, Low ; Pterotheca, Salt.*~~

~~*Family 6.—Limacinide.*~~

~~*Genera: Eccyliomphalus, Porti.; Heterofusus, Fg. ; Spirialis, E. 8. (fig. 76); Limacina, Cuv.*~~

~~*Order 2.—Gymnosomata.*~~

~~*Characters.—Pteropoda devoid of mantle- | skirt and shell; tentacular processes of the | forefoot well developed and provided with suckers,*~~

~~*Family 1.—Pterocymodoceidz.*~~

~~*Genus: Pterocymodoce, Kef. Fic. 83.—Shell*~~

~~*Family 2.—Clionide. Mi porns Genera: Cliodita, Q. and G.; Clionopsis, Trosch.; ensis; 'the*~~

~~*Clione, Pall. (fig. 86). Family 3.—Pnewmodermide. Genera: J'richocyclus, Esch. ; Spongobranchia, d'Orb.; Pnewmodermopsis, Kef.; Pneumodermon, Cuv. (fig. 85).*~~

~~*lower figure shows the na- tural size.*~~

~~*Branch 6.—STPHONOPODA.*~~

~~*Cephalopoda in which the two primarily divergent right | and left lobes of the mid-region of the foot have their free borders recurved towards the middle line, where they are either held in apposition (Tetrabranchiata), or fused with one another to form a complete cylinder open at each end (Dibranchiata). This fissured or completely closed tube is the siphon (fig. 75, (6), mf) characteristic of the Siphono- poda, and is used to guide the stream of water expelled by the contractions of the walls of the branchial chamber. The pallial skirt is accordingly well developed and muscular, subserving by its contractions not only respiration but locomotion. The visceral hump is never twisted, and ac- cordingly the main development of the pallial skirt and chamber is posterior, the excretory apertures, anus, and gills having a posterior position, as in the archi-Mollusc. At the same time the visceral hump is usually much elon- gated in a direction corresponding*~~

~~*to an oblique line be- tween the vertical dorso-ventral and the horizontal antero- posterior axes (see fig. 75, (6)).*~~

~~*SIPHONOPODA. | MOLLUSCA 667*~~

~~*The fore-part of the foot which surrounds the mouth, as in all Cephalopoda, is drawn out into four or five pairs of lobes, sometimes short, but usually elongated and even fili-*~~

~~*or through the nephridia. It has no connexion with the vascular system. The nephridia are always paired sacs, the walls of which invest the branchial advehent vessels (figs. 104, 108). They open each by a pore into the viscero-*~~

~~*mL HIN ¢ }*~~

~~*Fig. 84 Fig. 85.*~~

~~*Fic. 84.—Larve of Pneumodermon (from Balfour, after Gegenbaur). The pre-oral ciliated band of the trochosphere stage (velum) has atrophied. In A three post-oral circlets of cilia are present. The otocysts are seen, and the rudiments of a pair of processes growing from the head. In B the fore- most ciliated ring has disappeared ; the cephalic region is greatly developed, and, as compared with the adult (fig. 85), is large and free 5 the pair of hook- bearing processes on each side of the mouth are retractile, probably part of the fore-foot. At the base of the cephalic snout are seen the pair of arm- like processes (fore-foot) provided with suckers, and behind these the broad pteropodial lobes or wing-like fins of the mid-foot.*~~

~~*Fig, 85.—Pneumodermon violaceum, d'Orb, ; magnified five diameters. a, the sucker-bearing arms; 8, the fins of the mid-foot (in the middle line, between these, is seen the sucker-like median portion of the foot, by means of which the animal can crawl as a Gastropod); c, the four branchial processes. (After Keferstein.)*~~

~~*form. These lobes either carry peculiar sheathed tentacles (Nautilus), or, on the other hand, acetabuliform suckers, which may be associated with claw-like hooks (Dibranchiata). The hind-foot is probably represented by the valve which depends from the inner wall of the siphon in*~~

many cases. hu MYyYy? A shell (figs. 89, 100) AN EONS is very generally present WY WW wah affording protection to GINS. ct bev 7 the visceral mass and 7 Y YN & \ \ \ i ,

attachment for muscles. It may be external or en-

closed in dorsal upgrow- sa Brot, ee i magnified two ‘ iameters,—postero-ventral aspect. a, the ing folds of the mantle, cephalic region carrying a ikeee pairs of

which (except in Spirula) cephalic cones provided each with very nu-merous minute sucker-like processes, and

close up at anearlyperiod surrounded by a hood-like upgrowth,—

and b, the more elongated tentacles (the of. development, so as to retractile eye-tentacles are not seen, being

form a shut sac in which placed dorsally); ¢, the pteropodial fins ; the shell is secreted. The hus’ grthe vagina; s the penis. Crom ctenidia are well deve- Owen, after Eschricht.) loped as paired gill-plumes, serving as the efficient bran- chial organs (figs. 101, 103, and fig. 2, B).

The vascular system is very highly developed ; the heart consists of a pair of auricles and a ventricle (figs. 104, 105). Branchial hearts are formed on the advehent vessels of the branchie. It is not known to what extent Vs. the minute subdivision of the arteries extends, or ® osp. whether there is a_ true

: Fic. 87..—Enlarged diagram of the nerve capillary system. centres of sete agi (from Spen- : 7 \ _ gel, after Souleyet). CeR, right cere-

The pericardium mse bral ganglion; Pl.R, right pleural tended so as to form a very apg T. right weds pension; : is. R., right visceral ganglion ; Vis.L.*

large ’ sac passing among left visceral ganglion ; cpe, right cere- the viscera dorsal wards and __ bro-pedal connective ; cpl, right cere- . as bro-

~~*pleural connective ; Osp., osphra- sometimes containing the ium connected by a nerve with the*~~

~~*ovary or testis—the viscero- "ht visceral ganglion. pericardial sac—which opens to the exterior either directly*~~

~~*go oe URE lk*~~

~~*Fic, 88.—Male (upper) and female (lower) specimens of Nautilus pompilius as seen in the expanded condition, the observer looking down on to the buccal cone e; one-third the natural size linear. The drawings have been made from actual specimens by A. G. Bourne, B.Sc., and serve to show the natural disposition of the tentaculiferous lobes and tentacles of the circum-oral portion of the foot in the living state, as well as the great differences between the two sexes, a, theshell; 6, the owter ring-like expansion (annular lobe) of the circum-oral muscular mass of the fore-foot, carrying nineteen tentacles on each side—posteriorly this is enlarged to form the "hood" (marked v in fig. 89 and m. in figs. 90 and 91), giving off the pair of tentacles marked g in the present figure; c, the right and left inner lobes of the fore- foot, each carrying twelve tentacles in the female, in the male subdivided into p, the "'spadix" or hectocotylus on the left side, and q, the "anti-spadix," a group of four tentacles on the right side,—it is thus seen that the subdivided right and left inner lobes of the male correspond to the undivided right and left inner lobes of the female; d, the inner inferior lobe of the fore-foot, a bilateral structure in the female carrying two groups, each of fourteen tenta- cles, separated from one another by a lamellated organ , supposed to be olfactory in function—in the male the inner inferior lobe of the fore-foot is very much reduced, and has the form of a paired group of lamelle (d in the upper figure); e, the buccal cone, rising from the centre of the three inner lobes, and fringing the protruded calcareous beaks or jaws with a series of minute papille ; f, the tentacles of the outer circum-oral lobe or annular lobe of the fore-foot projecting from their sheaths ; g, the two most posterior tentacles of this series belonging to that part of the annular lobe which forms the hood (m. in figs. 90 and 91); i, superior ophthalinic tentacle; k, inferior ophthalmic tentacle; 1, eye; ™, aired laminated organ on each side of the pase of the inner inferior lobe Cd of the female, probably olfactory in func- tion; n, olfactory lamelle upon the inner*~~

inferior lobe (in the female); 0, the siphon (mid-foot) ; p, the spadix (in the male), the hectocotylized portion of the left inner lobe of the fore-foot representing four moditied tentacles, eight being left unmodified; q, the anti-spadix (in the male), being four of the twelve tentacles of the right inner lobe of the fore-foot isolated from the remaining eight, and representing on the right side the differentiated spadix of the left side. The four tentacles of the anti-spadix are set, three on one base and one on a separate base. ;

There are thus in the female, where they are most numerous, ninety-four tentacles, thirty-eight on the outer annular lobe, four ophthalmic (a pair to each eye), twelve on each of the right and left inner lobes, and twenty-eight on the inner inferior lobe.

pericardial sac except in Nautilus. The anal aperture is median and raised ona papilla. Jaws (fig. 88, e) and a lin- gual ribbon (fig. 107) are well developed. The jaws have the form of a pair of powerful beaks, either horny or calcified (Nautilus), and are capable of inflicting severe wounds.

668

Sense-organs are highly developed ; the eye exhibits a very special elaboration of structure in the Dibranchiata, and a remarkable archaic form in the Nautilus. Otocysts are present in all, The typical osphradium is not present,

Fic. 89.—Lateral view of the female Pearly Nautilus, contracted by spirit and lying in its shell,

MOLLUSCA

[SIPHONOPODA,

term hectocotylization is applied to this modification (see figs. 88, 95, 96). Elaborate spermatophores or sperm-ropes are formed by all Siphonopoda, and very usually the female possesses special capsule-forming and nidamental glands for providing envelopes to the eggs (fig. 101, g.n.). The egg of all Siphonopoda is large, and the development is much modified by

~~*the presence of an excessive amount of food-material diffused in the protoplasm of the egg-cell. Trochosphere and veliger stages of development are conse- quently not recognizable.*~~

~~*The Siphonopoda are divisible into two orders, the names of which (due to Owen) de- scribe the number of gill-plumes present ; but in fact there are several characters of as great importance as those derived from the gills by which the members of these two orders are separated from one another.*~~

~~*Order 1.—Tetrabranchiata (= Schizosiphona, Tentaculifera).*~~

~~*Characters. — Siphonopodous Cephalopods in which the inrolled lateral margins of the inid-foot are not fused, but form a siphon by apposition (fig. 101). The circum-oral lobes of the fore-foot carry numerous sheathed ten- tacles (not suckers) (fig. 88). There are two pairs of ctenidial gills (hence Tetrabranchiata), and two pairs of nephridia, consequently four nephridial apertures (fig. 101). 'The viscero-*~~

~~*tle right half of which is cut away (from Gegenbaur, after Owen). a, visceral hump ; 6, por- pericardial chamber opens by two independent tion of the free edge of the mantle-skirt reflected on to the shell,—the edge of the mantie-skirt apertures to the exterior and not into the*~~

~~*can be traced downwards and forwards around the base of the mid-foot or siphon 7;.1, J, super- fae ficial origin of the retractor muscle of the mid-foot (siphon), more or less firmly attached to the nephridial sacs.*~~

~~*There are two oviducts*~~

~~*shell, of which a small piece (s) is seen between the letters 1,1; s (farther back) points to the /,, : . siphuncular pedicle, which is broken off short and not continued, as in the perfect state, through (right and left) in the female and two sperm*~~

~~*the whole length of the siphuncle of the shell, also marked s and s'; 0 points to the right eye; d t is placed near the extremities of the contracted tentacles of the outer or annular lobe of the*~~

ucts in the male, the left duct in both

fore-foot,—the jointed tentacles are seen protruding a little from their long cylindrical sheaths ; v, SCX€S being rudimentary.

the dorsal "hood" formed by an enlargement in this region of the annular lobe of the fore- foot (m. in figs, 90, 91); V, a swelling of the mantle-skirt, indicating the position on its inner .

face of the nidamental] gland (sce fig. 101, g.7.).

A large external shell either coiled or straight is present, and is not enclosed by reflexions of

except in Nautilus, but other organs are present in the | the mantle-skirt, except such narrow-mouthed shells as

Fic, 90.—Spirit specimen of female Pearly Nautilus, removed from its shell, and seen from the antero-dorsal aspect (drawn from nature by A. G. Bourne). m., the dorsal "hood" formed by the enlargement of the outer or annular lobe of the fore-foot, and corresponding to the sheaths of two tentacles (g, g in fig. 88); ., tentacular sheaths of Jateral portion of the annular lobe; u., the left cye; b., the nuchal plate, continuous at its right and left posterior angles with the root of the mid-foot, and corresponding to the nuchal cartilage of Sepia; c., visceral hump; d., the free margin of the mantle-skirt, the middle letter d. points to that portion of the mantle-skirt which is reflected over a part of the shell as seen in fig. 89, 0; the cup-like fossa to which 0. and d. point in the present figure is occupied by the coil of the shell; g.a. points to the lateral continuation of the nuchal plate b. to join the root of the mid-foot or siphon.

cephalic region, to which an olfactory function is ascribed both in Nautilus and in the other Siphonopoda.

The gonads are always separated in male and female individuals. The genital aperture and duct is sometimes single, when it is the left; sometimes the typical pair is developed right and left of the anus. The males of nearly all Siphonopoda have been shown to be characterized by a peculiar

~~modification of the arm-like processes or lobes of the fore-foot, connected with the copulative function. The~~

~~that of Gomphoceras, which were probably enclosed by the a~~

~~Fic. 91.—Lateral view of the saine specimen as that drawn in fig. 90. Letters as in that figure with the following additions—e points to the concave margin of the mantile-skirt leading into the sub-pallial chamber ; 9, the mid-foot or siphon ; k, the superficial origin of its retractor muscles closely applied to the shell and serving to hold the animal in its place; J, the siphuncular pedicle of the visceral hump broken off short ; v, v, the superior and inferior ophtha}- mic tentacles.~~

~~mantle as in the Dibranch Spirula. The shell consists of a series of chambers, the last formed of which is occupied by the body of the animal, the hinder ones (successively deserted) containing gas (fig. 89).~~

~~The pair of cephalic eyes are hollow chambers (fig. 118, A) opening to the exterior by minute orifices (pinhole camera), and devoid of refractive structures. A pair of osphradia are present at the base of the gills (fig. 101, olf). Salivary glands are wanting. An ink-sac is not present. Branchial hearts are not developed on the branchial adve- hent vessels.~~

~~SIPHONOPODA. |~~

~~Family 1.—Nautilide.~~

~~Genera: [Orthoceras], Breyn.; [Cyrtoceras], Goldfuss ; [Gompho- ceras], Miinster ; [Phragmoceras], Brod. ; [Gyroceras], Meyer ; { Ascoceras], Barraude ; [Oncoceras], Hall ; [Litwites], Breyn.; {Trochoceras], Barraude ; Nazwtilus, L. (figs. 88, 89, 90, &c.) ; [Clymenia], Miinst. ; [Nothoceras], Barraude.~~

~~Family 2.—Ammonitidez.~~

~~Genera: [Bactrites], Sanderg.; [Goniatites], de Haan ; [Rhabdo- ceras], Hauer; {Clydonites], Hauer; [Cochloceras], Hamer ; [Baculina], d'Orb.; [Ceratites], de Haan ; [Baculites], Lam. ; [Toxoceras|, d'Orb.;~~

~~*[Crioceras], Leveillé ; [Ptychoceras],d'Orb. ; [HIamites], Parkinson; [Ancyloceras], d'Orb.; [Scaphites], Parkinson ; [Ammonites], Breyn.; [Twrrilites], Lam. ; [HIelio- ceras], d'Orb.; [HIeteroceras], d'Orb.*~~

~~*N.B.—The names in brackets are those of extinct genera.*~~

~~*Order 2.—Dibranchiata (= HIolosiphona, Acetabulifera).*~~

~~*Characters.—Siphonopodous Cephalopods in which the inflected lateral margins of the mid-foot are fused so as to form a complete tubular siphon (fig. 96, 7). The circum- oral lobes of the fore-foot carry suckers disposed upon them in rows (as in the Pteropod Pneumodermon), xot tentacles (see figs. 92, 95, 96). There is a single pair of typical ctenidia (fig. 103) acting as gills (hence Dibranchiata), and*~~

~~*Fig. 92.—Sepia officinalis, L., half the natural size, as seen when dead, the long prehensile arms being withdrawn from the pouches at the side of the head, in which they are carried during life when not actually in use. a, neck; b, lateral fin of the mantle-sac ; c, the eight shorter arms of the fore-foot; d, the two long prehensile arms ; ¢, the eyes.*~~

~~*a single pair of nephridia opening by apertures right and left of the median anus (fig. 103, r), and by similar internal pores into the pericardial chamber, which consequently does not open directly to the surface as in Nautilus. The ovi- ducts are sometimes paired right and left (Octopoda), sometimes that of one side only is developed (Decapoda, except Ommastrephes). The sperm-duct is always single except, according to Keferstein, in HIedone moschata.*~~

~~*A plate-like shell is developed in a closed sac formed by the mantle (figs. 98, 99), except in the Octopoda, which have none, and in Spirula (fig. 100, D) and the extinct Belemni- tide, which have a small chambered shell resembling that*~~

~~*of Nautilus with or without the addition of plate-like and cylindrical accessory developments (fig. 100, C).*~~

~~*The pair of cephalic eyes are highly-developed vesicles with a refractive lens (fig. 120), cornea, and lid-folds,—the vesicle being in the embryo an open sac like that of Nautilus (fig. 119). Osphradia are not present, but cephalic olfac- tory organs are recognized. One or two pairs of large salivary glands with long ducts are present. An ink-sac formed as a diverticulum of the rectum and opening near the anus is present in all Dibranchiata (fig. 103, ¢), and has been detected even in the fossil Belemnitide. Branchial hearts are developed on the two branchial advehent blood- vessels (fig. 104, vc', w).*~~

~~*The Dibranchiata are divisible into two sub-orders, accord- ing to the number and character of the arm-like sucker- bearing processes of the fore-foot.*~~

~~*Fic. 93.—Decapodous Siphonopods; one-fourth the natural size linear. A. Cheiroteuthis Veranyi, d'Orb. (from the Mediterranean). B. Thysanoteuthis rhombus, Troschel (from Messina). C. Loligopsis cyclura, Fér. and d'Orb. (from the Atlantic Ocean). Sub-order 1.—Decapoda. Characters.—Dibranchiata with the fore-foot drawn out into eight shorter and two longer arms (prehensile arms), the latter being placed right and left between the third and fourth shorter arms. The suckers are stalked and strengthened by a horny ne 3 The eyes are large and have a horizontal in place of a sphincter-like lid. The body is elongated and provided with lateral fins (lamelliform expansions of the mantle). The month has a buccal membrane. The mantle-margin is locked to the base of the siphon by a specially-developed cartilaginous apparatus. Numerous water-pores are pre- sent in the head and anterior region of the body, leading into re- cesses of the integument of unknown significance. The oviduct is single ; large nidamental glands are present. 'The viscero-pericar- dial space is large, and lodges the ovary (Sepia). There is always a shell present which is enclosed by the upgrowth of the mantle, so as to become " internal." Section a.—Decapoda Calciphora. Character.—Internal shell calcareous. Family 1.—Spirulide. Genus: Spirula, Lam. (fig. 100, D). Family 2.—Belemnitide.*~~

~~*Genera: [Spirulirostra], d'Orb. (fig. 100, C); [Beloptera], Desh. ; [Belemnosis], Edw. ; [Conoteuthis], d'Orb. (fig. 100, A); Acan thoteuthis], R. Wag.; [Belemnites], Lister, 1678 ; [Belemnitella], d'Orb.; [Xiphoteuthis], Huxley.*~~

~~*Family 3.—Sepiadz. , Genera: Sepia, L. (figs. 92, 98, &c.); [Belosepia], Voltz ; Cocco- teuthis, Owen. J*~~

~~*670*~~

~~*Section b.—Decapoda Chondrophora.*~~

~~*Character.—Internal shell horny.*~~

~~*Sub-section a.—Myopside (d'Orb.). Eye with closed cornea, so that the surrounding water does not touch the lens; mostly frequenters of the coast. Family 1.—Loligidz. .*~~

~~*Genera: Loligo, Schneid. (figs. 99, &c.); Loliolus, Steenstrup ; Sepioteuthis, Blv.; [T'cuthopsis], Desl. ; [Leptoteuthis], Meyer ; [Belemnosepia], Ag. ; [Beloteuthis], Mist.*~~

~~*Family 2.—Scpiolide. Genera: Scpiola, Schneid. ; Rossia, Owen.*~~

~~*Sub-section 8.—Oigopsidex (d'Orb.).*~~

~~*Eye with open cornea, so that the surrounding water bathes the anterior surface of the lens ; mostly pelagic animals. Family 3.—Cranchiade.*~~

~~*Genus: Cranchia, Leach (fig. 94, C). Family 4.—Loligopsidx.*~~

~~*Genus: Loligopsis, Lam. (fig. 93, C). Family 5.—Chetrotewthide, _*~~

~~*Genera: Chetrotewthis, d'Orb. (fig. 93, A); Histiotewthis, d'Orb. Family 6.—Thysanoteuthide.*~~

~~*Genus: Thysanoteuthis, Troschel (fig. 93, B). Family 7.—Onychoteuthide.*~~

~~*Genera: Gonatus, Gray; Onychoteuthis, Lichtenst. (fig. 97); Ouy- chia, Lesueur ; Enoploteuthis, d'Orb., Veranya, Krohn ; [Plesio- teuthis], A. Wag. ; [Celeno], Miinst. ; Dosidicus, Steenstrup ; Ommastrephes, a' Orb.*~~

~~*Sub-order 2.—Octopoda.*~~

~~*Characters.—Dibranchiata with the fore-foot drawn out into eight arms only; suckers sessile, devoid of horny ring; eyes small, the*~~

~~*Fic. 94.—Octopodous Siphonopods; one-fourth the natural size linear, A. Pinnoctopus cordiformis, Quoy and Gain (from New Zealand). B. Tremoc- topus violaceus, Ver. (from the Mediterranean). C. Cranchia scabra, Owen (from the Atlantic Ocean; one of the Decapoda). D. Cirrhoteuthis Miilleri, Esch. (from the Greenland coast).*~~

~~*outer skin can be closed over them by a sphincter-like movement. The body is short and rounded; the mantle has no cartilaginous locking apparatus, and is always fused to the head dorsally by a broad nuchal band. No buccal membrane surrounds the mouth. The siphon is devoid of valves. The oviducts are paired; there are no nidamental glands. The viscero- pericardial space is reduced to two narrow canals, passing from the nephridia to the capsule of the genital gland. There is no shell on or in the visceral hump. Family 1.—Cirrhoteuthidz.*~~

~~*Genus: Cirrhoteuthis, Esch. (Sciadephorus, Reinh.) (fig. 94, D). Family 2. —Octopodidex.*~~

~~*Genera: Pinnoctopus, d'Orb. (fig. 94, A); Octopus, Lam. (fig. 95) ;*~~

~~*Sceurgus, Trosch.; Eledone, Leach ; Bolitena, Steenstrup.*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*[CEPHALOPODA.*~~

~~*Family 3.—Philonexide.*~~

~~*Genera: Tremoctopus, Delle Chiaje (Philonexis, d'Orb.) (fig. 94, B); Parasira, Steenstrup (Octopus catenulatus, Fer., is the female, and Octopus*~~

~~*carena, Ver., is the male of the one species of this genus according to Steenstrup (fig. 96)) ; Argonauta, L. (the shell of this genus is formed only in the female by the expanded ends of the two large "arms"' of the fore-foot).*~~

~~*Fig. 95.—A. Male specimen of Octopus granlandicus, with the third arm of the right — hectocotylized. B. The extremity of the hectocotylized arm magnified.*~~

~~*Further Remarks on the Cephalopoda.—tin order to give a more precise conception of the organization of the Cephalo- poda in a concrete form we select the Pearly Nautilus fo further description, and in pass- * , ing its structure in review we \ shall take the opportunity of comparing here and there the peculiarities presented by that animal with those obtaining in allied forms. In the last edition of this work the Pearly Nautilus was made the subject of a de- tailed exposition by Professor | Owen, and it has seemed accord- | ingly appropriate that it should } be somewhat fully treated on / the present occasion also. The figures which illustrate the pre- sent description are (excepting fig. 89) original, and prepared from dissections (made under the direction of the writer) of a male and female Nautilus pompilius, lately purchased for the Museum of University College, London.*~~

~~*Visceral Hump and Shell.— The visceral hump of Nautilus (if we exclude from considera- tion the fine siphuncular pedicle Fie. 96.—Male of Parasira catenu- which it trails, as it were, behind emigre Sipe nm ter it) is very little, if at all, affected arm. a, 2, 4, 4, the first, second, by the coiled form of the shell {te aA ne bush: & Wee which it carries, since the animal penis ee ee dar always slips forward in the shell ylizec as it grows, and inhabits a cham- ™ent Wren ont Sig aie tog ber which is practically cylindri- 4, the siphon. (From Gegenbaur.) of being accumulated behind the inhabited chamber as a coiled series of air-chambers, we should have a more correct indication in the shell of the extent and form of the animal's*~~

~~*Bs*~~

~~*ASI*~~

~~2)~~

~~Ces! 2) > es~~

~~bon cig~~

~~(3)~~

~~No~~

~~Aoulelelolooss: Age Cora Q)~~

~~sore os~~

~~<9)~~

~~%~~

~~—&~~

~~hectocotylized arm; y, the fila- cal (fig. 89). Were the deserted chambers thrown off instead~~

~~CEPHALOPODA. |~~

~~body. Amongst Gastropods it is not very unusual to find the animal slipping forward in its shell as growth advances and leaving an unoccupied chamber in the apex of the shell. This may indeed become shut off from the occupied cavity by a transverse septum, and a series of such septa may be formed (fig. 42), but in no Gastropod are these apical chambers known to contain a ae~~

~~gas during the life of the aL animal in whose shell they occur. A further peculiarity of the Nautilus shell and of that of the allied extinct Am- monites, Scaphites, Orthoceras, &c., and of the living Spirula, is that the series of deserted air-chambers are traversed by a cord-like pedicle extending from the centro-dorsal area of the visceral hump to the small- est and first-formed chamber of the series. No structure com- parable to this siphuncular pedicle is known in any other Mollusca. Its closest repre-~~

~~sentative is found in the so- called "contractile cord" of the remarkable form Rhabdo- pleura, referred according to present knowledge to the Poly- zoa. There appears to be no doubt that the deserted cham- bers of the Nautilus shell con- tain in the healthy living animal a gas which serves to lessen the specific gravity of the whole organism. The gas is said to be of the same com- position as the atmosphere, with a larger proportion of nitrogen. With regard to its origin we have only conjec- tures. Each septum shutting off an air-containing chamber is formed during a period of quiescence, probably after the reproductive act, when the vis- ceral mass of the Nautilus may be slightly shrunk, and gas is secreted from the dorsal inte- gument so as to fill up the space previously occupied by the animal, A certain stage is reached in the growth of the animal when no new cham- bers are formed. The whole process of the loosening of the animal in its chamber and of its slipping forward when a new septum is formed, as well as the mode in which the air-chambers may be used as a hydrostatic apparatus, and the relation to this use, if any, of the siphuncular pedicle, is involved in obscurity, and is the subject of much in- genious speculation. In connexion with the secretion of gas by the animal, besides the parallel cases ranging from the Protozoon Arcella to the Physoclistic Fishes, from the Hydroid Siphonophora to the insect-larva Corethra, we have the identical phenomenon observed in the closely- allied Sepia when recently hatched. Here, in the pores of the internal rudimentary shell, gas is observable, which has necessarily been liberated by the tissues which secrete~~

~~Fic. 97.Head and circum-oral pro- cesses of the fore-foot of Onycho- teuthis (from Owen), a, neck; }, eye; c, the eight short arms; d, long prehensile arms, the clavate extre- mities of which are provided with suckers at e, and with a double row of hooks beyond at f. The tempo- rary conjunction of the arms by means of the suckers enables them to act in combination.~~

~~the shell, and not derived from any external source~~

~~(Huxley).~~

The coiled shell of Nautilus, and by analogy that of the Ammonites, is peculiar in its relation to the body of the animal, inasmuch as the curvature of the coil proceeding

:

N f

i\ "hy,

*a) *

ca ba)

Ome

Fig. 98. Fig. 99.

Fic. 98.—The calcareous internal shell of Sepia officinalis, the so-called cuttle- bone. a, lateral expansion; b, anterior cancellated region; ¢, laminated region, the lamine enclosing air.

Fig. 99.—The horny internal shell or gladius or pen of Loligo.

from the centro-dorsal area is towards the head or forward, instead of away from the head and backwards as in other discoid coiled shells such as Planorbis; the coil is in fact absolutely reversed in the two cases. Amongst the extinct allies of the Nauti-

lus (Tetrabranch- iata) we find shells of a variety of

shapes, open coils such as Scaphites, leading on to per-

— SES

fectly cylindrical GY shells with chaniber We

: YG succeeding cham- We ber in a_ straight ' line (Orthoceras),

~~*whence again we may pass to the cork-screw spires formed by the shell*~~

~~*of Turrilites.*~~

~~*Fic. 100.—Internal shells of Cephalopoda Siphono-*~~

~~*oda. A. Shell of Conoteuthis dupiniana, d'Orb. Whilst the Tetra- (from the Heocoudan s peace : al -|*~~

~~*: Sepia orbigniana, Fér. (Mediterranean). ©. she branchiata, so far as of Spirulirostra 'Bellardii, d'Orb. (from the Mio- we can recognize cene of Turin). The specimen is cut so as to show*~~

~~*jn section the chambered shell and the laminated*~~

~~*their remains, are "guard" deposited upon its surface. D. Shell of*~~

~~*characterized by Spirula levis, Gray (New Zealand).*~~

~~*these large chambered shells, which, as in Nautilus, were with the exception of some narrow-mouthed forms such as Gomphoceras but very partially covered by reflexions of the mantle-skirt (fig. 89, 5), the Dibranchiata present an interesting series of gradations, in which we trace— a) the diminution in relative size of the chambered shell; (6) its complete investiture by reflected folds of the mantle (Spirula, fig. 100, D); (c) the concrescence*~~

~~*672 MOLL*~~

~~*of the folds of the mantle to form a definitely-closed shell-sac; (d) the secretion by these mantle-folds or walls of the shell-sac of additional laminz of calcareous shell- substance, which invest the original shell and completely alter its appearance (Spirulirostra, fig. 100, C; Belemnites) ; (c) the gradual dwindling and total disappearance of the original chambered shell, and survival alone of the calcare- ous laminz deposited by the inner walls of the sac (Sepia, fig. 100, B); (f) the disappearance of all calcareous sub- stance from the pen or plate which now represents the contents of the shell-sac, and its persistence as a horny body simply (Loligo, fig. 99); (g)*~~

~~*the total disappearance of the shell-sac itself, and consequently of its pen or plate, nevertheless the rudiments of the shell-sac appearing in the embryo and then evanescing (Octopus). The early appearance of the sac of the mantle in which the shell is enclosed, in Dibranchiata, has led to an erroneous identifi- cation of this sac with the primitive shell-sac of the archi- Molluse (fig. 1), of Chiton (fig. 10, A), of Arion (fig. 69, D, a), and of the normally-developing Molluscan embryo (figs. 68 and 72***, sh). The first appearance of the shell- sac of Dibranchiata is seen in figs. 121 and 122, its forma- tion as an open upgrowth of the centro-dorsal area of the embryo having been demonstrated by Lankester (34) in 1873, who subsequently showed (85) that the same shell-sac appears and disappears without closing up in Argonauta and Octopus, and pointed out the distinctness of this sac and the primitive shell-gland. The shell of the female Argonauta is not formed by the visceral hump, but by the enlarged arms of the foot, which are in life always closely applied to it.*~~

~~*The shell of such Pteropoda as have shells (the Thecoso- mata) is excessively light, and fits close to the animal, no air-chambers being formed. It is important to note that in this division of the Cephalopoda there is the same tend- ency, which is carried so far in the Dibranchiate Siphono- pods, for the mantle-skirt to be reflected over and closely applied to the shell (¢.g., Cavolinia, figs. 79 and 80). But in Pteropoda there is no complete formation of a closed sac by the reflected mantle, no thickening of the enclosed shell, no dwindling of the original shell and substitution for it of a laminated plate. The variety of form of the glass-like shells of Pteropoda is a peculiarity of that*~~

~~*roup.*~~

~~*: eo, Foot, Mantle-skirt, and Sub-pallial Chamber.—In the Pearly Nautilus the ovoid visceral hump is completely encircled by the free flap of integument known as mantle- skirt (fig. 91, d, e). In the antero-dorsal region this flap is enlarged so as to be reflected a little over the coil of the shell which rests on it. In the postero-ventral region the flap is deepest, forming an extensive sub-pallial chamber, at the entrance of which e is placed in fig. 91. A view of the interior of the sub-pallial chamber, as seen when the mantle-skirt is retroverted and the observer faces in the direction indicated*~~

~~*by the reference line passing from e in fig. 91, is given in fig. 101. With this should be com- pared the similar view of the sub-pallial chamber of the Dibranchiate Sepia (fig. 103). It should be noted as a difference between Nautilus and the Dibranchiates that in the former the nidamental gland (in the female) lies on that surface of the pallial chamber formed by the dependent mantle-flap (figs. 101, g.n.; 89,7), whilst in the latter it lies on the surface formed by the body-wall; in fact in the former the base of the fold forming the mantle-skirt com- prises in its area a part of what is unreflected visceral hump in the latter.*~~

~~*The apertures of the two pairs of nephridia, of the vis- cero-pericardial sac, of the genital ducts, and of the anus are shown in position on the body-wall of the pallial cham- ber of Nautilus in figs. 101, 102. There are nine apertures*~~

~~*USCA*~~

~~*in all, one median (the anus), and four paired. Besides these apertures we notice two pairs of gill-plumes which*~~

~~*[CEPHALOPODA.*~~

~~*are undoubtedly typical ctenidia, and a short papilla (the*~~

~~\« ‘.~~

~~:~~

~~*\ITp*~~

-

~~*Was*~~

~~*(BB = Cw” WF, 2 = ‘, : an S _Z : \ neph..p 1 : yise bod bg*~~

~~*Fra. 101.—View of the postero-ventral surface of a female Pearly Nautilus, the mantle-skirt © being completely reflected so as to show the inner wall of the sub-pallial chamber (drawn from nature by A. G. Bourne). a, muscu- lar*~~

~~band passing from the mid-foot to the integument; b, the valve on the surface of the funnel-like mid-foot, partially concealed by the inrolled lateral margin of the latter; c, the mantle-skirt retroverted ; an, the median anus ; x, post-anal papilla of unknown significance ; g.n., nidamental gland ; 7.0v., aperture of the right oviduct; l.ov., aperture of the rudimentary left oviduct (pyriform sac of Owen); neph.a., aperture of the left anterior nephridium ; neph.p, aperture of the left posterior nephridium ; visceper., left aperture of the viscero-pericardial sac; olf, the left osphradium placed near the base of the anterior gill-plume. The four gill-plumes (ctenidia) are not lettered,~~

~~osphradium) between each anterior and posterior gill-plume (see figs. 101, 102, and explanation). As compared with this in a Dibranchiate, we find (fig. 103) only four aper-~~

~~etn < = Z~~

~~G Hy i 7 // | / \ ; \ " [/ ue | ee | 'Y Y \ ) ;] Si ae Pal : nye rag ~V aa 3 te ey SN Mick) ~ == Zam SS ES Be : Ce et S2> . CZ E , \ neph.p- an. x ViSCPR~~

~~Fic. 102.—View of the postero-yentral surface of a male Pearly Nautilus, the mantle-skirt © being completely reflected so as to show the inner wall of the sub-pallial chamber, and the four ctenidia and the foot cut short (drawn from nature by A. G. Bourne). pe., penis, being the enlarged termination of the right spermatic duct; L.sp., aperture of the rudimentary left spermatic duct (pyriform sac of Owen). Other letters as in fig. 101.~~

~~tures, viz., the median anus with adjacent orifice of the ink-sac, the single pair of nephridial apertures, and one asymmetrical genital aperture (on the left side), except in female Octopoda and a few others where the genital ducts and their apertures are paired. No viscero-peri- cardial pores are present on the surface of the pallial chamber, since in the Dibranchiata the viscero-pericardial~~

~~sac opens by a pore into each nephridium instead of directly to the surface. A single pair of ctenidia (gill- plumes) is present instead of the two pairs in~~

~~*Nautilus. The existence of two pairs of ctenidia and of two pairs of nephridia in Nautilus, placed one behind the other, is highly remarkable. The interest of this arrangement is in relation to the general morphology of the Mollusca, for it is impossible to view this repetition of organs in a linear series as anything else than an instance of metameric seg- mentation, comparable to the segmentation of the ringed worms and Arthropods. The only other example which we have of this metamerism in the Mollusca is presented by the Chitons. There we find not two pairs of ctenidia merely, but sixteen pairs (in some species more) accom-*~~

~~*Fig. 103.—View of the postero-ventral surface of a male Sepia, obtained by cutting longitudinally the firm mantile-skirt and drawing the divided halves apart. This figure is strictly comparable with fig. 101. C, the head ; J, the mid-foot or siphon, which has been cut open so as to display the valve i; R, the glandular tissue of the left nephridium or renal-sac, which has been cut open (see fig. 108); P, P, the lateral fins of the mantile-skirt ; Br, the single pair of branchie (ctenidia); a, the anus,—immediately below it is the open- ing of the ink-bag ; ¢, cartilaginous socket in the siphon to receive c', the cartilaginous knob of the mantle-skirt,— the two constituting the "pallial hinge apparatus" characteristic of Decapoda, not found in Octopoda ; g, the azygos genital papilla and aperture ; 44, valve of the siphon (possibly the rudi- mentary hind-foot); m, muscular band connected with the fore-foot and mid-foot (siphon) and identical with the muscular mass k in fig. 915 7, renal*~~

~~*apille, carrying the apertures of the nephridia; v.br, branchial efferent i odoeel : v.07', bulbous enlargements of the branchial blood- vessels (see figs. 104, 108); ¢, ink-bag. (From Gegenbaur.)*~~

~~*panied by a similar metamerism of the dorsal integument, which carries eight shells. In Chiton the nephridia are not affected by the metamerism as they are in Nautilus. It is impossible on the present occasion to discuss in the way which their importance demands the significance of these two instances among Mollusca of incomplete or partial metamerism ; but it would be wrong to pass them by with- out insisting upon the great importance which the occur- rence of these isolated instances of metameric segmentation in a group of otherwise unsegmented organisms possesses,*~~

~~*and the light which they may be made to throw upon the nature of metameric segmentation in general.*~~

~~*The foot and head of Nautilus are in the adult inex- tricably grown together, the eye being the only part belong- ing primarily to the head which projects from the all- embracing foot. The fore-foot or front portion of the foot*~~

~~*in Nautilus has the form of a number of lobes carrying tentacles and completely surrounding the mouth (figs. 88, 89,91). The mid-foot is a broad median muscular process which exhibits in the most interesting manner a curling in of its margins so as to form an incomplete siphon (fig. 101), a condition which is completed and rendered per- manent in the tubular funnel, which is the form presented by the corresponding part of Dibranchiata (fig. 96). The hind-foot possibly is represented by the valvular fold on the surface of the siphon-like mid-foot. In the Pteropoda the wing-like swimming lobes (epipodia or pteropodia) corre- spond to the two halves of the siphon, and are much the largest element of the foot. The forefoot surrounding the head is often quite small, but in Clione and Pneumo- dermon carries lobes and suckers. A hind-foot is in Ptero- poda often distinctly present; it is open to doubt as to whether the corresponding region of the foot in Siphono- poda is developed at all. .*~~

~~*The lobes of the fore-foot of Nautilus and of the other Siphonopoda require further description. It has been doubted whether these lobes were rightly referred (by Huxley) to the fore-foot, and it has been maintained by some zoologists (Grenacher, Jhering) that they are truly processes of the head. It appears to the present writer to be im- possible to doubt that the lobes in question are the fore- portion of the foot when their development is examined (see fig. 121, and especially fig. 72**), further, when the fact is considered that they are innervated by the pedal ganglion, and, lastly, when the comparison of such a Siphonopod as Sepia is made with such a Pteropod as Pneumodermon in its larval (fig. 84) aswell as in its adult condition (fig. 85). The*~~

~~yi~~

~~van~~

~~Lys teak hae~~

~~a»~~

~~Fic. 104.—Circulatory and excretory organs of Sepia (from Gegenbaur, after John Hunter). br, branchie (ctenidia); ¢, ventricle of the heart; a, anterior artery (aorta); a', posterior artery; v, the right and left auricles (enlarge- ments of the efferent branchial veins); v', efferent branchial vein on the free face of the gill-plume; v.c, vena cava ; vi, ve', advehent branchial vessels (branches of the vena cava, see fig. 108) ; ve', abdominal veins ; 2, branchial hearts and appendages; re, e, glandular substance of the nephridia developed on the wall of the great veins on their way to the gills. The arrows indicate the direction of the blood-current.~~

~~larval Pneumodermon shows clearly that the sucker-bearing~~

~~processes of that Mollusc are originally far removed from~~

~~the head and close in position to the pteropodial lobes of the foot. By differential growth they gradually embrace and obliterate the head, as do the similar sucker-bearing processes of Sepia. In both cases the sucker-bearing pro- cesses are "fore-foot." The fore-foot of Nautilus completely surrounds the buccal cone (fig. 88, ¢), so as to present an appearance with its expanded tentacles similar to that of the dise of a sea-anemone (Actinia). No figure has hitherto been published exhibiting this cireum-oral disc with its tentacles in natural position as when the animal 1s alive and swimming, the small figure of Valenciennes being deficient in detail. All the published figures represent the actual appearance of the contracted spirit-specimens. Mr A. G. XVI.—85~~

~~674~~

~~Bourne, B.Sc., of University College, has prepared from actual specimens the drawings of this part in the male and female Nautilus reproduced in fig.~~

~~88, and has restored the parts to their natural form when expanded. The drawings show very strikingly the difference between male and female. In the female (lower figure), we observe in the centre of the disc the buccal cone e carrying the beak-like pair of jaws which project from the finely papillate buccalmembrane. Three tentaculiferous lobes of the fore-foot are in immediate contact with this buccal cone; they are the right and left (c, c) inner lobes, as we propose to call them, and the in- ferior inner lobe (d),—called inferior because it really lies ventralwards of the mouth. This inner inferior lobe is clearly a double one, representing a right and left inner inferior lobe fused into one. A lamellated organ on its sur- face, probably olfactory in function (n),marks the separation of the constituent halves of this double lobe. Each half carries a group of fourteen tentacles. The right and the left inner lobes (c, c) each carry twelve tentacles. Hx-~~

~~{ B Ct D a E eee ee dee ee ba. A ae Dee Z al '2 a x ae v Ea ae v ee YS Fe ¥ i ¦~~

~~Fic. 105.—Diagram to show the relations of the heart in the Mollusca (from Gegenbaur). A. Part of the dorsal vascular trunk and transverse trunks of awormn, 2. Ventricle and auricles of Nautilus. C. Of a Lamellibranch, of Chiton, or of Loligo. D. Of Octopus. EH, Of a Gastropod. a, auricle; »v, ventricle ; ac, arteria cephalica (aorta); ai, arteria abdominalis, The arrows show the direction of the blood-current.~~

~~ternal to these three lobes the muscular substance of the mouth-embracing foot is raised into a wide ring, which becomes especially thick and large in the dorsal region where it is notably modified in form, offering a concavity into which the coil of the shell is received, and furnish- ing a protective roof to the retracted mass of tentacles. This part of the external annular lobe of the fore-foot is called the "hood" (figs. 90, 91, m.). The median antero-posterior line traversing this hood exactly corresponds to the line of concrescence of the two halves of the fore-foot, which primitively grew forward one on each side of the head, and finally fused together along this line in front of the mouth. The tentacles carried by the great annular lobe are nineteen on each side, thirty-eight in all. They are somewhat larger than the tentacles carried on the three inner lobes. The dorsalmost pair of tentacles (marked g in fig. 88) are the only ones which actually belong to~~

~~that part of the disc which forms the great dorsal hood m. The hood is, in fact, to a large extent formed by the enlarged sheaths of these two tentacles. In the Ammonites (fossil Tetrabranchiata allied to Nautilus) the dorsal surface of the hood secreted a shelly plate in two pieces, known to palzontologists as Trigonellites and Aptychus. Possibly, however, this double plate was carried on the surface of the bilobed nidamental gland with the form and sculptur- ing of which, in Nautilus, it closely agrees. All the ten- tacles of the circum-oral disc are set in remarkable tubular sheaths, into which they can be drawn. The sheaths of some of those belonging to the external or annular lobe are seen in fig. 91, marked ». The sheaths are muscular as well as the tentacles, and are simply tubes from the base of which the solid tentacle grows. The functional signifi- cance of this sheathing arrangement is as obscure as its morphological origin. With reference to the latter, it appears highly probable that the tubular sheath represents~~

~~the cup of a sucker such as is found on the fore-foot of the | variations in for~~

~~MOLD 8. 4~~

~~{CEPHALOPODA.~~

~~Dibranchiata. In any case, it seems to the writer impos- sible to doubt that each tentacle, and its sheath on a lobe of the circum-oral disc of Nautilus, corresponds to a sucker on such a lobe of a Dibranchiate. Keferstein follows Owen in strongly opposing this identification, and in regarding such tentacle as the equivalent of a whole lobe or arm of a Decapod or Octopod Dibranch. We find in the details of these structures, especially in the facts concerning the hectocotylus and spadix, the most conclusive reasons for dissenting from Owen's view. We have so far enumer- ated in the female Nautilus ninety tentacles. Four more remain which have a very peculiar position, and almost lead to the suggestion that the eye itself is a modified tentacle. These remaining tentacles are placed one above (before) and one below (behind) each eye, and bring up the total to ninety-four (fig. 91, v, v). They must be con- sidered as also belonging to the fore-foot which thus sur- rounds the eye.~~

~~*In the adult male Nautilus we find the following im- portant differences in the tentaculiferous disc as compared with the female (see upper drawing in fig. 88). The inner inferior lobe is rudimentary, and carries no tentacles. It is represented by three groups of lamellz (d), which are not fully exposed in the drawing. The right and left inner lobes are subdivided each into two portions, The right shows a larger portion carrying eight tentacles, and smaller detached groups (q) of four tentacles, of which three have their sheaths united whilst one stands alone. These four tentacles may be called the ‘“‘anti-spadix.” The left inner lobe shows a similar larger portion carrying eight tentacles, and a curious conical body in front of it corresponding to the anti-spadix. This is the “spadix” of Van der Hoeven (36). It carries no tentacles, but is terminated by imbri- cated lamelle. These lamelle appear to represent the four tentacles of the anti-spadix of the right internal lobe, and are generally regarded as corresponding to that modification of the sucker-bearing arms of male Dibranchiate Siphono- pods to which the name “hectocotylus” is applied. The spadix is in fact the hectocotylized portion of the fore- foot of the male Nautilus. The hectocotylized arm or lobe of male Dibranchiata is connected with the process of copu- lation, and in the male Nautilus the spadix has probably a similar significance, though it is not possible to suggest how it acts in this relation. It is important to observe that the modification of the fore-foot in the male as com- pared with the female Nautilus is not confined to the existence of the spadix. The anti-spadix and the reduction of the inner inferior lobe are also male peculiarities. The external annular lobe in the male does not differ from that of the female ; it carries nineteen tentacles on each side. The four ophthalmic tentacles are also present. Thus in the male Nautilus we find altogether sixty-two tentacles, the thirty-two additional tentacles of the female being repre- sented by lamelliform structures.*~~

~~*If we now compare the fore-foot of the Dibranchiata with that of Nautilus, we find in the first place a more simple arrangement of its lobes, which are either four or five pairs of tapering processes (called “ arms”) arranged in a series around the buccal cone, and a substitution of suckers for tentacles on the surface of these lobes (figs. 92, 95, 96). The most dorsally-placed pair of arms, corresponding to the two sides of the hood of Nautilus, are in reality the most anterior (see fig. 75, (6)), and are termed the first pair. In the Octopoda there are four pairs of these arms (figs. 94, 95), in the*~~

~~*Decapoda five pairs, of which the fourth is greatly elongated (figs. 92, 93). In Sepia and other Deca- poda (not all) each of these long arms is withdrawn into a pouch beside the head, and is only ejected for the purpose of prehension. The figures referred to show some of the m which these arms may assume. In the*~~

~~*Octopoda they are not unfrequently connected by a web, and form an efficient swimming-bell. The suckers are placed on the ad-oral surface of the arms, and may be in one, two, or four rows, and very numerous. In place of suckers in some genera we find on certain arms or parts of the arms horny hooks ; in other cases a hook rises from the centre of each sucker. The hooks on the long arms of Onychoteuthis are drawn in fig. 97. The fore-foot, with its apparatus of suckers and hooks, is in the Dibranchiata essentially a prehensile apparatus, though the whole series of arms in the Octopoda serve as swimming organs, and in many (eg., the Common Octopus or Poulp) the sucker- bearing surface is used as a crawling organ.*~~

~~*In the males of the Dibranchiata one of the arms is more or less modified in connexion with the reproductive function, and is called the "hectocotylized arm." This name is derived from the condition assumed by the arm in those cases in which its modification is carried out to the greatest extent. These cases are those of the Octo- pods Argonauta argo and Parasira catenulata (fig. 96). In the males of these the third arm (on the left side in Argonauta, on the right side in Parasira) is found before the breeding season to be represented by a globular sac of integument. This sac bursts, and from it issues an arm larger than its neighbours, having a small sac at its extremity in Parasira (fig. 96, #), from which subsequently a long filament issues. Before copulation the male charges this arm with the spermatophores or packets of spermatozoa removed from its generative orifice beneath the mantle-skirt, and during coitus the arm becomes detached and is left adhering to the female by means of its suckers. A new arm is formed at the cicatrix before the next breeding season. The female, being much larger than the male, swims away with the detached arm lodged beneath her mantle-skirt. There, in a way which is not understood, the fertilization of the*~~

eggs is effected. Specimens of the female Parasira with the detached arm adherent were examined by Cuvier, who mistook the arm for a parasitic worm and gave to it the name Hectocotylus. Accordingly, the correspondingly modified arms of other Siphonopoda are said to be hecto-cotylized. Steenstrup has determined the hectocotylized condition of one or other of the arms in a number of male Dibranchs as follows :—in all, excepting Argonauta and Parasira, the modification of the arm is slight, consisting in a small enlargement of part or the whole of the arm, and the obliteration of some of its suckers, as shown in fig. 95, A, B; in Octopus and Eledone the third right arm is hectocotylized; in Rossia the first left arm is hectocotylized along its whole length, and the first right arm also in the middle only ; in Sepiola only the first left arm along its whole length; in Sepia it is the fourth left arm which is modified, and at its base only ; in Sepioteuthis, the same at its apex ; in Loligo, the same also at its apex; in Loliolus, the same along its whole length; in Ommastrephes, Onychoteuthis, and Loligopsis no hectocotylized arm has hitherto been observed.

In the females of several Dibranchs (Sepia, &c.) the packets of spermatozoa or spermatophores received from the male have been observed adhering to the smaller arms. How they are passed in this case by the female to the ova in order to fertilize them is unknown.

Musculature, Fins, and Cartilaginous Skeleton.—W ithout 'entering into a detailed account of the musculature of Nautilus, we may point out that the great muscular masses of the fore-foot and of the mid-foot (siphon) are ultimately traceable to a large transverse mass of muscular tissue, the ends of which are visible through the integument on the right and left surfaces of the body dorsal of the free flap of the mantle-skirt (fig. 89, J, /, and fig. 91, &). These muscular ares have a certain adhesion to the shell,

moe i Use Al

675

and serve both to hold the animal in its shell and as the

fixed supports for the various movements of the tentaculi-

ferous lobes and the siphon. They are to be identified with the ring-like area of adhesion by which the foot-muscle of the Limpet is attached to the shell of that animal (see fig. 27). Inthe Dibranchs a similar origin of the muscular masses of the fore-foot and mid-foot from the sides of the shell—modified, as this is, in position and relations—can be traced.

In Nautilus there are no fin-like expansions of the integu- ment, whereas such occur in the Decapod Dibranchs along the sides of the visceral hump (figs. 92, 93). As an excep- tion among Octopoda lateral fins occur in Pinnoctopus (fig. 94, A), and in Cirrhoteuthis (fig. 94, D). In the Ptero-podous division of the Cephalopoda such fin-like expansions of the dorsal integument do not occur, which is to be con- nected with the fact that another region, the mid-foot, which in Siphonopods is converted into a siphon, is in them expanded as a pair of fins.

In Nautilus there is a curious plate-like expansion of integument in the mid-dorsal region just behind the hood, lying between that structure and the portion of mantle- skirt which is reflected over the shell. This is shown in fig. 90, 6. If we trace out the margin of this plate we find that it becomes continuous on each side with the sides of the siphon or mid-foot. In Sepia and other Deca- pods (not in Octopods) a closely similar plate exists in an exactly corresponding position (see 6 in figs. 110,111). In Sepia a cartilaginous development occurs here immediately below the integument forming the so-called "nuchal plate," drawn in fig. 116, D. The morphological significance of this nuchal lamella, as seen both in Nautilus and in Sepia, is not obvious. Cartilage having the structure shown in fig. 117 occurs in various regions of the body of Siphono- poda. Inall Glossophorous Mollusca the lingual apparatus is supported by internal skeletal pieces, having the char- acter of cartilage ; but in the Siphonopodous Cephalopoda such cartilage has a wider range.

In Nautilus a large H-shaped piece of cartilage is found forming the axis of the mid-foot or siphon (fig. 116, A, B). Its hinder part extends up into the head and supports the peri-cesophageal nerve-mass (a), whilst its two anterior rami extend into the tongue-like siphon. In Sepia, and Dibranchs generally, the cartilage takes a different form, as shown in fig. 116, C. The processes of this cartilage cannot be identified in any way with those of the

~~capito- pedal cartilage of Nautilus. The lower larger portion of this cartilage in Sepia is called the cephalic cartilage, and forms a complete ring round the cesophagus ; it completely invests also the ganglionic nerve-collar, so that all the nerves from the latter have to pass through foramina in the cartilage. The outer angles of this cartilage spread out on each side so as to form a cup-like receptacle for the eyes. The two processes springing right and left from this large cartilage in the median line (fig. 116, C) are the " pree-orbital cartilages ;" in front of these, again, there is seen a piece like an inverted T, which forms a support to the base of the "arms" of the fore-foot, and is the " basi- brachial" cartilage. The Decapod Dibranchs have, further, the "nuchal cartilage" already mentioned, and in Sepia, a thin plate-like "sub-ostracal " or (so-called) dorsal cartilage, the anterior end of which rests on and fits into the concave nuchal cartilage. In Octopoda there is no nuchal cartilage, but two band-like "dorsal cartilages." In Decapods there are also two cartilaginous sockets on the sides of the funnel—"siphon-hinge cartilages ""—into which fleshy knobs of the mantle-skirt are loosely fitted. In Sepia, along the whole base-line of each lateral fin of the mantle (fig. 92), is a "basi-pterygial cartilage." It is worthy of remark that we have, thus developed, in Dibranch Siphonopods a more~~

~~complete internal cartilaginous skeleton than is to be found in some of the lower Vertebrates. There are other instances of cartilaginous endo-skeleton in groups other than the Vertebrata. Thus in some capito-branchiate Chzetopods cartilage forms a skeletal support for the gill-plumes, whilst in the Arachnids (Mygale, Scorpio) and in Limulus a large internal cartilaginous plate—the ento-sternité—is devel- oped as a support for a large series of muscles. ;~~

~~Alimentary Tract.—The buccal cone of Nautilus is ter- minated by a villous margin (buccal membrane) surround- ing the pair of beak-like jaws. These are very strong and dense in Nautilus, being calcified. Fossilized beaks of Tetra- branchiata are known under the name of Rhyncholites. In Dibranchs the beaks are horny, but similar in shape to those of Nautilus. They resemble in general those of a parrot, the lower beak being the , larger, and~~

~~*overlapping the upper or dorsal beak. The lingual ribbon and odontophoral apparatus has the struc- ture which is typical for Glosso- phorous Mollusca. In fig. 107, A is represented a single row of teeth from the lingual ribbon of Nautilus, and in fig. 107, B, C, of other Si- phonopoda.*~~

~~*In Nautilus a long and wide crop or dilated cesophagus (cr, fig. 110) passes from the muscular buccal mass, and at the apex of the visceral hump passes into a highly muscular stom- ach, resembling the gizzard of a bird (gizz, fig. 110). A nearly straight intestine passes from the muscular stomach to the anus, near which it develops a small cecum. In other ue Siphonopods the cesophagus is usually ric, 106,—Alimentary canal narrower (fig. 106, oe), and the mus- : Sek Wie ee cular stomach more capacious (fig. is omitted. oe, esophagus; 106, v); whilst a very important PP epee ag ng ri feature in the alimentary tract is through the gv ¢, formed by the cecum. In all but cum; ¢, its spiral portion ; Nautilus the cxcum lies near the stomach, and may be very capacious —much larger than the stomach in*~~

~~*i, intestine ; a, ink-bag; b, its opening into the rectum, elongated into a spiral coil, as in fig.*~~

~~*A*~~

~~*Loligo vulgaris —or 106, e.*~~

~~*The simple*~~

~~*Fic. 107.—Lingual dentition of Siphonopoda. A. A single row of lingual teeth*~~

~~of Nautilus pompilius (after Keferstein). B. Two rows of li 1 teeth~~

~~yd —" (after Troschel). C. Lingual teeth of Slisdone atbvdoon fatter~~

~~oven). U-shaped flexure of the alimentary tract as seen in fig. 106, and in fig. 110, is the only important one which it exhibits in the Cephalopoda,— the Pteropoda (except the~~

~~Limacinida) agreeing with the Siphonopoda in this sim-~~

~~plicity in consequence of their visceral hump being un- twisted. The acini of the large liver of Nautilus are compacted into a solid reddish-brown mass by a firm membrane, as also is the case in the Dibranchiata. The liver has four paired lobes in Nautilus, which open by two bile-ducts into the alimentary canal at the com- mencement of the intestine. The bile-ducts unite before entering the intestine. In Dibranchiata the two large lobes of the liver are placed antero-dorsally (beneath the shell in Decapoda), and the bile-ducts open into the cecum. Upon the bile-ducts in Dibranchiata are deve- loped yellowish glandular diverticula, which are known as " pancreas," though neither physiologically nor morpho- logically is there any ground for considering either the so- called liver or the so-called pancreas as strictly equivalent to the glands so denominated in the Vertebrata. In Nauti- lus the equivalents of the pancreatic diverticula of the Dibranchs can be traced upon the relatively shorter bile- ducts.~~

~~Salivary Glands are not developed in Nautilus unless a pair of glandular masses lying on the buccal cavity are to be considered as such. In the Dibranchs, on the contrary, one (Sepia, Loligo) or two pairs of large salivary glands are present, an anterior and a posterior (Octopus, Eledone, Onychoteuthis). Each pair of salivary glands has its~~

~~paired ducts united to form a single duct, which runs forward from the glands and opens into the buccal cavity~~

~~*n ip*~~

~~*Fic. 108.—Diagram of the nephridial sacs, and the veins which run through them, in Sepia officinalis (after Vigelius), The nephridial sacs are supposed to have their upper walls removed. v.c, vena cava; 7.d.v.c, right descending branch of the same; r.s.v.c, left descending branch of the same; v.b.a., vein from the ink-bag; v.m, mesenteric vein; v.g, genital vein; v.a.d, right abdominal vein ; v.a.s, left abdominal vein; v.p.d, right pallial vein ; v.p.s, left pallial vein ; c.b, branchial heart ; 2, appendage of the same; c.v, capsule of the branchial heart ; np, external aperture of the right nephridial sac; y, reno-pericardial orifice placing the left renal sac or nephridium in communi- cation with the viscero-pericardial sac, the course of which below the nephri- dial sac is indicated by dotted lines; y', the similar orifice of the right side ; a.r, glandular renal outgrowths; w.k, viscero-pericardial sac (dotted outline).*~~

~~*near the radula. The anterior pair of glands when present lie in the head near the buccal mass, the posterior pair lie much farther back beneath the liver, at the sides of the cesophagus. It is the posterior pair which alone are pre- sent in Sepia and Loligo. The ink-bag is to be considered as an appendage of the rectum. It is not developed in Nautilus, nor in the Pteropoda; in all Dibranchiata (even in the fossil Belemnites) it is present (fig. 106, a; fig. 103, 2), and has been observed to develop as a diverticulum of the rectum, with spirally plaited walls which very early secrete ablack pigment. The spiral plaitings of the walls diminish*~~

~~*in relative size as the volume of the sac increases. Its outer surface acquires a metallic iridescence similar to that of the integuments of many fishes. The opening of the ink-sac is in the adult sometimes distinct from but near to*~~

~~*vent*~~

~~*Fia. 109.—Diagram to show the relations of the four nephridial sacs, the viscero- pericardial sac, and the heart and large vessels in Nautilus (drawn by A. G. Bourne). neph, neph, on the right side point to the two nephridia of that side (the two of the opposite side are not lettered),—each is seen to*~~

have an independent aperture ; x is the viscero-pericardial sac, the dotted line indicat- ing its backward extension ; vise.per.apert marks an arrow introduced into the right aperture of the viscero-pericardial sac; 7.¢., r.e., point to the glandular enlarged walls of the advehent branchial vessels,— two small glandular bodies of the kind are seen to project into each nephridial sac, whilst a larger body of the same kind depends from each of the four branchial advehent vessels into the viscero-pericardial sac; v.c., vena cava; vent, ventricle of the heart; ao., cephalic aorta (the small abdominal aorta not drawn); a.b.v, advehent branchial vessel ; ¢.v.6., efferent branchial vessel.

the anus (Sepia) ; in other cases it opens into the rectum near the anus. The ink-bag of Dibranch Siphonopoda is possibly to be identified with the adrectal (purpuriparous) gland of some Gastropoda.

Colom, Blood-vascular System, and Excretory Organs.— Nautilus and the other Siphonopoda conform to the

ee ee

ole hin 4 nn

Fic. 110.—Djagram representing a vertical approximately median antero posterior section of Nautilus pompilius (from a drawing by A. G. Bourne). The parts which are quite black are the cut muscular surfaces of the foot and buccal mass. a, the shell; 6, the nuchal plate identical with the nuchal cartilage of Sepia (see fig. 90, b); ¢, the integument covering the visceral hump; d, the mantle flap or skirt in the dorsal region where it rests against the coil of the shell ; e, the inferior margin of the mantle-skirt resting on the lip of the shell represented by the dotted line; f the pallial chamber with two of the four gills; g, the vertically cut median pcrtion of the mid-foot (siphon); h, the capito-pedal cartilage (see fig. 116); 4, the valve of the siphon ; J, the siphuncular pedicle (cut short); m, the hood or dorsal enlarge- ment of the annular lobe of the fore-foot ; n, tentacles of the annular lobe; py, tentacles of the inner inferior lobe; g, buccal membrane; 7, upper jaw or beak ; s, lower jaw or beak ; #, lingual ribbon ; x, the viscero-pericardial sac ; n.c, nerve-collar ; oe, esophagus ; cr, crop; gizz, gizzard; int, intestine; an, anus; ni, nidamental gland; nept, aperture of a

nephridial sac; 7.e, renal glandular masses on the walls of the afferent branchial veins (see fig. 109); a.b.v., afferent branchial vessel ; ¢.b.v, efferent branchial vessel ; vt, ventricle of the heart.

general Molluscan characters in regard to these organs. Whilst the general body-cavity or ccelom forms a lacunar

blood-system or series of narrow spaces, connected with the trunks of a well-developed vascular system, that part of the original ccelom surrounding the heart and known as the Molluscan pericardium becomes shut off from this general blood-lymph system, and communicates, directly in Nautilus, in the rest through the nephridia, with the exte- rior. In the Siphonopoda this specialized pericardial cavity is particularly large, and has been recognized as distinct from the blood-carrying spaces, even by anatomists who have not considered the pericardial space of other Mollusca to be thus isolated. The enlarged pericardium, which may even take the form of a pair of sacs, has been variously named, but is best known as the viscero-pericardial sac or chamber. In Nautilus this sac occupies the whole of the postero-dorsal surface and a part of the antero-dorsal (see fig. 110,), investing the genital and other viscera which lie below it, and having the ventricle of the heart sus- pended in it. Certain membranes forming incomplete septa, and a curious muscular band—the pallio-cardiac band—traverse the sac. The four branchial advehent veins, which in traversing the walls of the four nephridial sacs give off, as it were, glandular diverticula into those sacs, also give off at the same points four much larger glandular

Fia, 111.—Diagrain representing a vertical approximately median antero-posterior section of Sepia officinalis (from a drawing by A. G. Bourne), The lettering corresponds with that of fig. 110, with which this drawing is intended to be compared. a, shell (here enclosed by a growth of the mantle); b, the nuchal plate (here a cartilage); ¢ (the reference line should be continued through the black area representing the shell to the outline below it), the integument covering the visceral hump; d, the reflected portion of the mantle-skirt forming the sac which encloses the shell; ¢, the inferior

margin of the mantle-skirt (mouth of the pallial chamber); jf, the pallial chainber ; g, the vertically cut median portion of the mid-foot (siphon); 7, the valve of the siphon ; m, the two upper lobes of the fore-foot; n, the long prehensile arms of the sane; 0, the fifth or lowermost lobe of the fore-foot ; p, the third lobe of the fore-foot ; g, the buccal membrane; v, the upper beak or jaw; s, the lower beak or jaw ; t, the lingual ribbon; x, the viscero-pericardial sac ; n.¢c, the nerve-collar ; er., the crop; gizz., the gizzard ; an, the anus; c.t., the left ctenidium or gill-plume; vent, ventricle of the heart; a.b.v., afferent branchial vessel ; e.b.v, efferent branchial vessel; re, renal glandular mass ; n.n.a, left nephridial aperture ; visc.per.apert., viscero-pericardial aperture ~ fig. 108); 6r.b., branchial heart; app., appendage of the same; 1.s., ink-

8.

masses, which hang freely into the viscero-pericardial chamber (fig. 109, r.e). In Nautilus the viscero-pericardial sac opens to the exterior directly by a pair of apertures, one placed close to the right and one close to the left posterior nephridial aperture (fig. 101, wsceper.). This direct opening of the pericardial sac to the exterior is an exception to what occurs in all other Mollusca. In all other Molluscs the pericardial sac opens into the nephridia, and through them or the one nephridium to the exterior. In Nautilus there is no opening from the viscero-pericardial sac into the nephridia. Therefore the external pore of the viscero-peri- cardial sac may possibly be regarded as a shifting of the reno-pericardial orifice from the actual wall of the nephridial sac to a position alongside of its orifice. Parallel cases of such shifting are seen in the varying position of the orifice of the ink-bag in Dibranchiata, and in the orifice of the genital ducts of Mollusca, which in some few cases

(e.g., Spondylus) open into the nephridia, whilst in other

cases they open close by the side of the nephridia on the

surface of the body. The viscero-pericardial sac of the

~~*Dibranchs is very large also, and extends into the dorsal region. It varies in shape—that is to say, in the extensions of its area right and left between the various viscera—in different genera, but in the Decapods is largest. In an ex- tension of this chamber is placed the ovary of Sepia, whilst the ventricle of the heart and the branchial hearts and their appendages also lie in it. It is probable that water is drawn into this chamber through the nephridia, since sand and other foreign matters are found in it. In all it opens into the pair of nephridial sacs by an orifice on the wall of each, not far from the external orifice (fig. 108, y, 7'). There does not seem any room for doubting that each orifice corresponds to the reno-pericardial orifice which we have seen in the Gastropoda, and shall find again in the Lamelli- pranchia. The single tubelike nephridium and the peri- cardium of the Pteropoda also communicate by an aperture.*~~

~~*The circulatory organs, blood-vessels, and blood of Nauti- lus do not differ greatly from those of Gastropoda. The ventricle of the heart is a four-cornered body, receiving a dilated branchial efferent vessel (auricle) at each corner (fig. 109). It gives off a cephalic aorta anteriorly, and a smaller abdominal aorta posteriorly. The diagram, fig. 105, serves to show how this simple form of heart is related to the dorsal vessel of a worm or of an Arthropod, and how by a simple flexure of the ventricle (D) and a subsequent suppression of one auricle, following on the suppression of one branchia, one may obtain the form of heart charac- teristic of the Anisopleurous Gastropoda (excepting the Zygobranchia). The flexed condition of the heart is seen in Octopus, and is to some extent approached by Nautilus, the median vessels not presenting that perfect parallelism which is shown in the figure (B). The most remarkable feature presented by the heart of Nautilus is the possession of four instead of two auricles, a feature which is simply related to the metamerism of the branchie. By the left side of the heart of Nautilus, attached to it by a membrane, and hanging loosely in the viscero-pericardial chamber, is the pyriform sac of Owen. This has recently been shown to be the rudimentary left oviduct or sperm-duct, as the case may be (Lankester and Bourne, 37), the functional right ovi-sac and its duct being attached by a membrane to the opposite side of the heart.*~~

~~*The cephalic and abdominal aortz of Nautilus appear, after running to the anterior and posterior extremes of the animal respectively, to open into sinus-like spaces surround- ing the viscera, muscular masses, &c. These spaces are not large, but confined and shallow. Capillaries are stated to occur in the integument. In the Dibranchs the arterial system is very much more complete; it appears in some cases to end in irregular lacune or sinuses, in other cases in true capillaries which lead on into veins, An investiga- tion of these capillaries in the light of modern histological knowledge is much needed. From the sinuses and capil- laries the veins take origin, collecting into a large median trunk (the vena cava), which in the Dibranchs as well as in Nautilus has a ventral (postero-ventral) position, and runs parallel to the long axis of the animal. In Nautilus this vena cava gives off at the level of the gills four branchial advehent veins (fig. 109, v.c.), which pass into the four gills without dilating. In the Dibranchs at a similar posi- tion the vena cava gives off a right and a left branchial advehent vein (fig. 108, 7.s.v.c, r.d.v.c), each of which, traversing the wall of the corresponding nephridial sac and receiving additional factors (fig. 108, v.9, v.p.d, v.a.d, v.b.a), dilates at the base of the corresponding branchial plume, forming there a pulsating sac—the branchial heart (fig.104, x; and fig 108, c.b). Attached to each branchial heart is a curious glandular body, which may possibly be related to the larger masses (r.e in fig. 109) which depend into the viscero-pericardial cavity from the branchial advehent veins*~~

~~*MOLLUS «A*~~

~~*[CEPHALOPODA.*~~

~~*of Nautilus. From the dilated branchial heart the bran- chial advehent vessel proceeds, running up the ad-pallial face of the gill-plume (v7, 2c', fig. 104). From each gill- plume the blood passes by the branchial efferent vessels (v', fig. 104) to the heart, the two auricles being formed by the dilatation of these vessels (v, v in fig. 104).*~~

~~*The blood of Siphonopoda contains theusual amceboid cor- puscles, and a diffused colouring matter—the hemocyanin of Fredericque—which has been found also in the blood of Helix, and in that of the Arthropods*~~

~~*Homarus and Limulus. It is colourless in the oxidized, blue in the deoxidized state, and contains copper as a chemical constituent.*~~

~~*The nephridial sacs and renal glandular tissue are closely connected with the branchial advehent vessels in Nautilus and in the other Siphonopoda. The arrangement is such as to render the typical relations and form of a nephridium difficult to trace. In accordance with the metamerism of Nautilus already noticed, there are two pairs of nephridia. Each nephridium assumes the form of a sac opening by a pore to the exterior. As is usual in nephridia, a glandular and a non-glandular portion are distinguished in each sac ; these portions, however, are not successive parts of a tube, as happens in other cases, but theyare localized ares of the wall of the sac. The glandular renal tissue is, in fact, confined to a tract extending along that part of the sac's wall which immediately invests the great branchial advehent vein. The vein in this region gives off directly from its wall a complete herbage of little venules, which branch and ana- stomose with one another, and are clothed by the glandular epithelium of the nephridial sac. The secretion is accumu- lated in the sac and passed by its aperture to the exterior. Probably the nitrogenous excretory product is very rapidly discharged ; in Nautilus a pink-coloured powder is found accumulated in the nephridial sacs, consisting of calcium phosphate. The presence of this y phosphatic calculus by no means \ proves that such was the sole ex- cretion of the renal glandular tis- sue. In Nautilus a glandular 7, yy growth like that rising from the \\ wall of the branchial vessel into its corresponding nepliridial sac, but larger in size, depends from each branchial advehent vessel into the viscero-pericardial sac,—prob- ably identical with the 'append- age" of the branchial hearts of Dibranchs.*~~

~~*The chief difference, other than that of number between the ne- phridia of the Dibranchs and those of Nautilus, is the absence of the accessory growths depending into the viscero-pericardial space just mentioned, and, of more import- ance, the presence in the former of a pore leading from the nephridial sac into the viscero-pericardial sac (y, y' in fig. 108). The external orifices of the nephridia are also more prominent in Dibranchs than in Nautilus, being raised on papillee (np in fig. 108; 7 in fig. 103). In Sepia, according to Vigelius (38), the two nephridia give off each a diverticulum dorsalwards, which unites with its fellows and forms a great*~~

~~*median renal chamber, lying between the ventral portions of the nephridia and the viscero-pericardial chamber. In Loligo the fusion*~~

~~*f Vi IIf*~~

~~*Fic. 112.—Nervous system of Nautilus pompilius (from Ge- genbaur, after Owen). ft, 4, ganglion-like enlargements on nerves passing from the pedal ganglion to the inner series of tentacles; ¢', nerves to the ten- tacles of the outer or annular lobe; b, pedal ganglion-pair ; a, cerebral ganglion-pair); ¢, pleuro — visceral _ ganglionic band (fused pleural and visce- ral ganglion-pairs); d, genital ganglion placed on the course of the large visceral nerve, just before it gives off its branchial and its osphradial branches ; m, nerves from the pleural ganglion to the mantle-skirt.*~~

~~*of the two nephridia to form one sac is still more obvious, since the ventral portions are united. In Octopus the nephridia are quite separate.*~~

~~*Tegumental pores have not been described in Nautilus, but exist in Dibranchiata, and have been (probably erroneously, but further investigation is needed) supposed to introduce water into the vascular system. A pair of*~~

~~*Fig. 114.*~~

~~*Fics, 113, 114.—Nerve-centres of Octopus. Figure 118 gives a view from the dorsal aspect, figure 114 one from the ventral aspect. 6uc, the buccal mass ; ped, pedal ganglion ; opt, optic ganglion ; cer, cerebral ganglion ; pl, pleural ganglion ; visc, visceral ganglion ; ws, cesophagus; f, foramen in the nerve- rosea se by pedal, pleural, and visceral ganglion-pairs, traversed by a*~~

~~*ood-vessel.*~~

~~*such pores leading into sub-tegumental spaces of consider- able area, the nature of which is imperfectly known, exist on the back of the head in Philonexis, Tremoctopus, and Argonauta. At the base of the arms and mouth*~~

~~*four such pores are found in Histioteuthis and Ommastrephes, six in Sepia, Loligo, Onychoteuthis. Lastly, a pair of such pores are found in the Decapoda at the base of the long arms, lead- ing into an extensive sub-tegumental pouch on each side of the head into which the long arms can be, and usually are, withdrawn. In Sepia, Sepiola, and Ros- sia the whole arm is coiled up in these sacs ; in Loligo only a part of it is so; in Histio- teuthis, Ommastrephes, and Onychoteuthis, the sacs are quite small and do not admit the*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*arms. GANG, wtell. | Nervous System. — yi*~~

~~*Nautilus, like the other Ag*~~

~~*Cephalopoda (e.g., Pneu-*~~

~~*modermon, fig. 87;*~~

~~*Octopus, fig. 113), ex- hibits a great concentra- tion of the typical Mol- luscan ganglia, as shown in fig. 112. The gan- glia take on a band-like form, and are but little differentiated from their commissures and con- nectives,—-an archaic condition reminding us of Chiton. The special optic out- growth of the cerebral ganglion, the optic ganglion (fig. 112, 0), is characteristic of the big-eyed Siphonopoda. The cerebral ganglion-pair (a) lying above the cesophagus*~~

~~*Fic. 115.—Lateral view of the nervous centres and nerves of the right side of Octopus vul- garis (from a drawing by A. G. Bourne). bg, buccal ganglion; cer., cerebral ganglion; ped., pedal ganglion; pl., pleural, and visc., visceral region of the pleuro-visceral ganglion; gang. stell., the right stellate ganglion of the mantle connected by a nerve to the pleural portion; n.visc., the right visceral nerve; nolf., its (probably) olfactory branches; n.br., its branchial branches,*~~

~~*BOLLUBS CA*~~

~~*is connected with two sub-cesophageal ganglion-pairs of band-like form. The anterior of these is the pedal 8, 6, and supplies the fore-foot with nerves 7', t, as also the mid-foot (siphon). The hinder band is the visceral and pleural pair fused (compare fig. 112 with fig. 87, and especially with the typical Euthyneurous nervous system of Limnzeus, fig. 22) ; from its pleural portion nerves pass to the mantle, from its visceral portion nerves to the branchie and genital ganglion (d in fig. 112), and in immediate connexion with the latter is a nerve to the osphradium or olfactory papilla. No buccal ganglia have been observed in Nautilus, nor has an enteric nervous system been described in this animal, though both attain a special development in the Dibranchiata. The figures (114 and 115) representing the nerve-centres of Octopus serve to exhibit the disposition of these parts in the Dibranchiata. The ganglia are more distinctly swollen than in Nautilus. In Octopus an infra-buccal ganglion-pair are present cor- responding to the buccal ganglion-pair of Gastropoda. In Decapoda a supra-buccal ganglion-pair connected with these are also developed. Instead of the numerous radi- ating pallial nerves of Nautilus, we have in the Dibran- chiata on each side (right and left) a large pleural erve passing from the pleural portion of the pleuro- visceral ganglion to the mantle, where it enlarges to form the stellate ganglion. From each stellate ganglion nerves radiate to supply the powerful muscles of the mantle-skirt. The nerves from the visceral portion of the pleuro-visceral ganglion have the same course as in Nautilus, but no osphradial papilla is present. An enteric nervous system is richly developed in the Dibranchiata, connected with the somatic nervous centres through the buccal ganglia, as in the Arthropoda through the stomato-gastric ganglia, and anastomosing with deep branches of the vis- ceral nerves of the viscero-pleural ganglion-pair. It has been especially described by Hancock (39) in Omma- strephes. Upon the stomach it forms a single large and readily-detected gastric ganglion. It is questionable as to how far this and the "caval ganglion" formed in some Decapoda by branches of the visceral nerves which accom- pany the vena cava are to be considered as the equivalents of the 'abdominal ganglion," which in a typical Gastropod nervous system lies in the middle of the visceral nerve-loop or commissure, having the right and left visceral ganglia on either side of it, separated by a greater or less length of visceral nerve-cord (see figs. 20, 21, 22). There can be little doubt that the enteric nervous system is much more developed in the Dibranchiata than in other Mollusca, and that*~~

~~*it effects a fusion with the typical "visceral" cords more extensive than obtains even in Gastropoda, where such a fusion no doubt must also be admitted.*~~

~~*Special Sense-Organs.—Nautilus possesses a pair of osphradial papillz (fig. 101, off) corresponding in position and innervation to Spengel's organ placed at the base of the ctenidia (branchiz) in all classes of Mollusca. This organ has not been detected in other Siphonopoda. In Ptero- poda it is well developed as a single ciliated pit, although the ctenidia are in that group aborted (fig. 87, Osp.). Nautilus possesses other olfactory organs in the region of the head. Just below the eye is a small triangular process (not seen in our figures), having the structure of a shortened and highly-modified tentacle and sheath. By Valenciennes, who is followed by Keferstein, this is regarded as an olfactory organ. The large nerve which runs to this organ originates from the point of juncture of the pedal with the optic ganglion. The lamelliform organ upon the inner inferior tentacular lobe of Nautilus is possibly also olfactory in function. In Dibranchs behind the eye is a pit or open canal supplied by a nerve corresponding in origin to the olfactory nerve of Nautilus above mentioned.*~~

~~*Possibly the sense of taste resides in certain processes within the mouth of Nautilus and other Siphonopoda.*~~

~~*Fria. 116,—Cartilaginous skeleton of Siphonopoda (after Keferstein). A. Capito- pedal cartilage of Nautilus pompilius; a points to the ridge which supports the pedal portion of the nerve-centre. B. Lateral view of the same, —the large anterior processes are sunk in the muscular substance of the siphon. C. Cephalic cartilages of Sepia officinalis. D, Nuchal cartilage of Sepia offci- nalis,*~~

~~*The otocysts of Nautilus were discovered by Macdonald (40). Each lies at the side of the head, ventral of the eye, resting on the capito-pedal cartilage, and supported by the large auditory nerve which arises from the pedal gan- glion. It has the form of a small sac, 1 to 2 mm. in dia- meter, and contains whetstone—shaped crystals, such as are known to form the*~~

~~otoliths of other Mol- lusca. The otocysts of Dibranchiata are larger and deeply sunk in the cephalic~~

~~cartilage. It has ric. 117,—Minute Si Sa of — rine of~~

~~-. Loligo (from Gegenbaur, after Furbringer). a been shown by Lan simple, 6, dividing, cells; c, canaliculi; d, an kester that they de- empty cartilage capsule with its pores ; e, canali- velop as open pits~~

~~culi in section. (fig. 121, (5), (6), 0), which gradually close up, the com- munication with the exterior becoming narrowed into a fine canal, which is reflected over one end of the sac, and finally has its external opening obliterated. A single otolith only is found in all Dibranchiata.~~

~~The eye of Nautilus is among the most interesting struc- tures of that remarkable animal. No other animal which has the same bulk and general elaboration of organization has so simple an eye as that of Nautilus. When looked at from the surface no metallic lustre, no transparent coverings, are presented by it. It is simply a slightly pro- jecting hemispherical box like a kettle-drum, half an inch in diameter, its surface looking like that of the surrounding integument, whilst in the middle of the drum-membrane is a minute hole (fig. 91, ~). Owen very naturally thought that some membrane had covered this hole in life, and had been ruptured in the specimen studied by him. It, how- ever, appears from the researches of HIensen (41) that the hole is a normal aperture leading into the globe of the eye, which is accordingly filled by sea-water during life. There is no dioptric apparatus in Nautilus, and in place of refract- ing lens and cornea we have actually here an arrangement for forming an image on the principle of "the pin-hole camera." There is no other eye known in the whole animal kingdom which is so constructed. The wall of the eye-~~

~~globe is tough, and the cavity is lined solely by the naked retina, which is bathed by sea-water on one surface and receives the fibres of the optic nerve on the other (see fig. 118, A). As in other Siphonopods (eg., fig. 120,~~

~~*Au, Re, p), the retina consists of two layers of cells separated by a layer of dark pigment. The most interesting consideration connected with this eye of Nautilus is found when the further facts are noted—(1) that the elaborate lens-bearing eyes of Dibranchiata pass through a stage of development in which they have the same structure as the eye of Nautilus—namely, are open sacs (fig. 119); and (2), that amongst other Mollusca examples of cephalic eyes can be found which in the adult condition are, like the eye of Nautilus and the developing eye of Dibranchs, simple pits of the integument, the cells of which are surrounded by pigment and connected with the filaments of an optic nerve. Such is the structure*~~

~~*Np Fic. 118.—Diagrams of sections of the eyes of Mollusca. A. Nautilus (and Patella). B. Gastropod (Limax or Helix). C, Dibranchiate Siphonopod (Oigopsid). Pal, eyelid (outermost fold); Co, cornea (second fold); Ir, iris (third fold); Intl, 2, 3, 4, different parts of the integument; 1, deep portion of the lens; J, outer portion of the lens; Co.ep, ciliary body; R, retina ; N.op, optic nerve; G.op, optic ganglion; 2, inner layer of the retina; N.S, nervous stratum of the retina. (From Balfour, after Grenacher.) of the eye of the Limpet (Patella); and in such a simple eye we obtain the clearest demonstration of the fact that the retina of the Molluscan cephalic eye, like that of the Arthropod cephalic eye and unlike that of the Vertebrate myelonic eye, is essentially a modified area of the general epiderm, and that the sensitiveness of its cells to the action of light and their relation to nerve-filaments is only a specialization and intensifying of a property common to the whole epiderm of the surface of the body. What, however, strikes us as especially remarkable is that the simple form of a pit, which in Patella serves to accumulate a secretion which acts as a refractive body, should in Nautilus be glorified and raised to the dignity of an efficient optical apparatus. Natural selection has had an altogether excep- tional opportunity in the ancestors of Nautilus. In all other Mollusca, starting as we may suppose from the follicular or pit-like condition, the eye has proceeded to acquire the form of a closed sac, the cavity of the closed vesicle being then filled partially or completely by a refractive body (lens) secreted by its walls (fig. 118, B). This is the condition attained in most Gastropoda. It presents a striking contrast to the simple Arthropod eye, where, in consequence of the existence of a dense exterior cuticle, the eye does not form a vesicle, and the lens is always part of that cuticle.*~~

~~*In the Dibranchiate division of the Siphonopoda the greatest elaboration of the dioptric apparatus of the eye is attained, so that we have in one sub-class the extremes of the two lines of development of the Molluscan eye, those two lines being the punctigerous and the lentigerous. The structure of the Dibranchiate's eye is shown in section in fig. 118, C, and in fig. 120, and its development in fig. 119 and fig. 123. The open sac which forms the retina of the young Dibranchiate closes up, and constitutes the posterior chamber of the eye, or primitive optic vesicle (fig. 123, A, poc). The*~~

~~*_ lens forms as a structureless growth, projecting inwards from the front wall of this vesicle (fig. 123, B, 7). The integument around the primitive optic vesicle which has sunk below*~~

~~*Fic. 119,—Diagrams of sections showing the early stage of development of the eye of Loligo when it is, like the permanent eye of Nautilus and of Patella, an open sac, A. First appearance of the eye as a ring-like upgrowth. B. Ingrowth of the ring-like wall so as to form a sac, the primitive optic vesicle of Loligo. (From Lankester.)*~~

~~*the surface now rises up and forms firstly nearest the axis of the eye the iridian folds (7f in B, fig. 123 ; kin fig. 120; Zr in fig. 118), and then secondly an outer circular fold grows up like a wall and completely closes over the iridian folds and the axis of the primitive vesicle (fig. 120, C). This covering is transparent, and is the cornea. In the oceanic Decapoda the cornea does not completely close, but leaves a central aperture traversed by the optic axis. These forms are termed Oigopside by d'Orbigny (42), whilst the Decapoda with closed cornea are termed Myopside. In the Octopoda the cornea is closed, and there is yet another fold thrown over the eye. The skin surrounding the cornea presents a free circular margin, and can be drawn over the surface of the cornea by a sphincter muscle. It thus acts as an adjustable diaphragm, exactly similar in*~~

~~*Ws*~~

~~*Wy* \~~

~~t ‘~~

~~wn AW~~

~~WY AW~~

~~Re~~

~~SS~~

~~JY)~~

~~G/U CG~~

~~re~~

~~*Fia, 120,—Horizontal section of the eye of Sepia (Myopsid). KK, cephalic cartilages (see fig. 116); C, cornea (closed); L, lens; ci, ciliary body; Ri, internal layer of the retina; Re, external layer of the retina; p, pigment between these ; 0, optic nerve ; go, optic ganglion ; kand k’, capsular cartilage ; ik, cartilage of the iris; w, white body; ae, argentine integument. (From Gegenbaur, after Hensen.)*~~

~~*movement to the iris of Vertebrates. Sepia and allied Deca-*~~

~~*pods have a horizontal lower eyelid, that is to say, only*~~

~~*one-half of the sphincter-like fold of integument is movable.*~~

~~*The exact history of the later growth of the lens in the*~~

~~*Dibranchs’ eye is not clear. Asseen in fig. 120, it appears,*~~

~~*after attaining a certain size, to push through the front*~~

~~*wall of the primitive optic vesicle at the point correspond- ing to its centre of closure, and to project a little into the anterior chamber formed by the cornea. The wall of the*~~

~~*primitive optic vesicle adjacent to the embedded lens (L) now becomes modified, forming a so-called "ciliary body," in which muscular tissue is present, serving to regulate the focus of the lens (ci in fig. 120). Bobretzky (48) differs from Lankester, whose view is above given, in assigning a distinct origin to the protruding anterior segment of the lens (/1 in fig. 118), The optic ganglion, as well as the other large ganglia of the Dibranchiata, originate in the mesoblast of the embryo. The connexion between the cells of the retina and the nerve-fibres proceeding from the optic ganglion must therefore be a secondary one.*~~

~~*Chromatophores.—In Nautilus these remarkable struc- tures, which we mention here as being intimately asso- ciated with the nervous system, appear to be absent. In Dibranchiata they play an important part in the economy, enabling their possessor, in conjunction with the discharge of the contents of the ink-bag, to elude the observation of either prey or foe. They consist of large vesicular cells (true nucleated cells converted into vesicles), arranged in a layer immediately below the epidermis. Each chroma- tophore-cell has from six to ten muscular bands attached to its walls, radiating from it star-wise. The contraction of these fibres causes the chromatophore-cell to widen out; it returns to its spherical resting state by its own elasticity. In the spherical resting state such a cell may measure '01 mm., whilst when fully stretched by its radiat- ing muscles it covers an area of '5 mm. The substance of the chromatophore-cells is intensely coloured with one of the following colours—scarlet, yellow, blue, brown— which are usually of the greatest purity and brilliance. The action of the chromatophores may be watched most readily in young Loligo, either under the microscope or with the naked eye. The chromatophores are suddenly expanded, and more slowly retracted with rapidly-recurring alter- nation. All the blue, or all the red, or all the yellow may be expanded and the other colours left quiescent. Thus the animal can assume any particular hue, and change its appearance in a dazzling way with extraordinary rapidity. There is a definite adaptation of the colour assumed in the case of Sepia and others to the colour of the surrounding rock and bottom.*~~

~~*Gonads and Genital Ducts.—In Nautilus it has recently been shown by Lankester and Bourne (37) that the genital ducts of both sexes are paired right and left, the left duct being rudimentary and forming the "pyriform appendage," described by Owen as adhering by membranous attach- ment to the ventricle of the heart, and shown by Kefer- stein to communicate by a pore with the exterior. Thus the Cephalopoda agree with our archi-Mollusc in having bilaterally symmetrical genital ducts in the case of the most archaic member of the class. The ovary (female gonad) or the testis (male gonad) lies in Nautilus as in the Dibranchs in a distinct cavity walled off from the other viscera, near the centro-dorsal region. This chamber is formed by the ccelomic or peritoneal wall; the space enclosed is originally part of the ccelom, and in Sepia and Loligo is, in the adult, part of the viscero-pericardial chamber. In Octopus it is this genital chamber which communicates by a right and a left canal with the nephrid- ium, and is the only representative of pericardium. The ovary or testis is itself a growth from the inner wall of this chamber, which it only partly fills. In Nautilus the right genital duct, which is functional, is a simple continuation to the pore on the postero-dorsal surface of the membran- ous walls of the capsule in which lies the ovary or the testis, as the case may be. The gonad itself appears to represent a single median or bilateral organ.*~~

~~*The true morphological nature of the genital ducts of the Cephalopoda and of other Mollusca is a subject which invites*~~

~~*speculation and inquiry. In all the cases in which such ° XVI. — 86*~~

~~*ducts continuous with the tunic of the gonad itself occur— viz., in Nematoid worms, in Arthropoda, and in Teleostean fishes, besides Mollusca—there is an absence of definite knowledge as to the mode of development of the duct. Tt seems, however, from such facts as have been ascer- tained that the gonad lies at first freely in the ccelom, and that the duct develops in connexion with the genital pore, and attaches itself to the embryonic gonad, or to the capsule which grows around it. The question then arises as to the nature of the pore. In other groups of animals we find that the pore, and funnel or tube connected with it by which the genital products are conveyed to the exterior, is a modified nephridium (usually a pair, one right and one*~~

~~*left). Is it possible that this is also the case where the duct very early becomes united to the gonad, and even gives rise to the appearance of a tubular ovary or testis? Probably this is the case in Teleostean fishes (see Huxley's observations on the oviducts of the smelt, 44); but it seems to be a tenable position that in other cases, including the Mollusca, the genital pore is a simple opening in the body-wall leading into the body-cavity or ccelom, such as we find on the dorsal surface of the earth-worm, which has become specialized for the extrusion of the genital products. Possibly, as in Nemertine and Cheetopod worms, the condition preceding the development of these definite genital pores was one in which a temporary rupture of the body-wall occurred at the breeding season, and this temporary aperture has gradually become perma- nent. The absence of genital pores in Patella, and some Lamellibranchs which make use of the nephridia for the extrusion of their genital products, suggests that the very earliest Mollusca or their forefathers were devoid of genital ducts and pores. In no Mollusca, however, is the nephrid- ium used in the same way as a genital duct as it is in the Cheetopoda, the Gephyrza, and the Vertebrata; for the open mouth of the nephridium in Mollusca leads into the pericardial space, and it is not through this space and this mouth that the genital products of any Mollusca enter the nephridium (except perhaps in Neomenia), although it is by this mouth that the genital products enter the nephridium in the former classes above named. Hence the arrangement in Patella, d&c., is to be looked upon as a special development from the simpler condition when the Mollusca brought forth by rupture (= schizodinic, from @dés, travail), and not as derived from the common arrangement of adaptation of a nephridium to the genital efferent func- tion (=nephrodinic).1*~~

~~*The functional oviduct of Nautilus forms an albumini- parous gland as a diverticulum, which appears to corre- spond to a dilatation in the male duct, which succeeds the testis itself, and is called the "accessory gland." The male duct has a second dilatation (Needham's sac), and then is produced in the form of a large papilla. In Dibranchs the genital ducts are but little more elaborated. They are ciliated internally. In female Octopoda, in Ommastrephes, and in one male Octopod (Hledone moschata) the genital ducts are paired, opening right and left of the anus. But in all other Dibranchs a single genital duct only is deve- loped, viz., that of the left side, and leads from the genital capsule or chamber of the gonad to an*~~

~~asymmetrically-placed pore. In the male Dibranchs the genital duct is coiled and provided with a series of glandular dilatations and~~

~~1 Celomate animals are, according to this nomenclature, either Schizodinic or Porodinic. The Porodinic group is divisible into Ne- phrodinic and Idiodinic, in the former the nephridium serving as a pore, in the latter a special (?6:os) pore being developed. In each of these latter groups the pore may be—(1) devoid of a duct, (2) provided with a duct which is unattached to the gonad and opens into the body- cavity, (3) provided with a duct which fuses with the gonad. The genital ducts of Idiodinic forms may be called Idiogonaducts, as dis- tinguished from the Nephrogonaducts of nephrodinic forms.~~

~~MOLL Ss ce~~

~~[| CEPHALOPODA.,~~

~~receptacles. These are connected with the formation of the spermatophores. In the Siphonopoda the spermatic fluid does not flow as a liquid from the genital pore, but the spermatozoa are made up into little packets before extrusion. In other Mollusca (Pulmonata) and in other animals (Cheetopoda) this formation of '" sperm-ropes" is known, but in the Siphonopoda it attains its highest development. Exceedingly complicated structures of a cylindrical form (sometimes an inch in length) are formed in the male genital duct by a secretion which embeds and cements together the spermatozoa. They are formed in Nautilus as well as in Dibranchs, the actual manner in which their complicated structure is produced being not easily con- jectured. Accessory glands not forming part of the oviduct, but furnishing the material for enclosing the eggs inan elastic envelope, are found as paired structures, opening some way behind the anus in Nautilus (101, g.n.) and in the Di- branchs. They are known as the nidamental glands. In the female Sepia they are particularly large and prominent, and are accompanied by a second smaller pair. Reproduction and Development. —The details of sexual congress and of the actual fertilization of the egg are quite unknown in Nautilus, and imperfectly in the Dibranchs and the Pteropoda. Allusion has already been made to the subject in connexion with the hectocotylized arm. The mature eggs of Nautilus are unknown, as well as the appear- ance which they present when deposited. In the Dibranchs~~

~~*the eggs are always very large; in some cases the amount of food-yelk infused into the original egg-cell is so great as to give it the size of a large pea. This results in that mode of development which is only known outside this class among the Vertebrata ; it is discoblastic. The proto- plasm of the fertilized egg-cell segregates to one pole of the egg, and there undergoes cell-division, resulting in the formation of a disc of cleavage cells (fig. 121, (1)) resem- bling the cicatricula of the hen's egg, which subsequently spreads over and invests the whole egg (fig. 121, (2)). For details of this process we must refer the reader to other works (45, 46); but it may here be noted that in addition to the layer of cleavage cells, which consists of more than one stratum of cells in the future embryonic area as opposed to the yelk-sac area, additional cells are formed in the mass of residual yelk apparently by an independent process of segregation, each cell having a separate origin, whence they are termed "autoplasts." The autoplasts eventually form a layer of fusiform cells (fig. 121, (7), 2; fig. 122, m; and fig. 123, ps),—the "'yelk-membrane" which everywhere rests upon and encloses the residual yelk. The cleavage cells form a single layer on the yelk-sac area and two layers on the embryonic area, an outer layer one cell deep (fig. 122, ep), and an inner—the middle layer of the three—which is often thick and many cells deep (fig. 122, m). There is great difficulty here in identifying the layers with the three typical layers of other animal embryos, except in regard to the outermost, which corresponds with the epiblast of Vertebrates in many respects. The middle layer, however, gives rise to the nerve-ganglia as well as to the muscles, ccelom, and skeleto- trophic tissues, and to the mid-portion of the alimentary canal with its hepatic diverticula, the liver (see fig. 121, (7) and explanation, where the origin of the mid-gut as a vesicle r isseen). It is clearly, therefore, something more than the mesoblast of the Vertebrate, giving rise, as it does, to important organs formed both by epiblast and hypoblast in other animals, Tastly, the yelk- membrane, though corresponding to the Vertebrate hypo- blast in position and structure, furnishes no part of the alimentary tract, but disappears when the yelk is com- pletely absorbed. In fact, the developmental phenomena in Sepia, Loligo, and Octopus are profoundly perturbed by the excessive proportion of food-yelk. Balfour has shown*~~

~~that in the chick the orifice of closure of the overspreading | a structure corresponding to the primitive streak of the~~

~~blastoderm does not represent the whole of the blastopore,~~

~~Fic. 121.—Development of Loligo. (1) View of the cleavage of the egg during the first formation of embryonic cells. (2) Lateral view of the egg ata little later stage. a, limit to which the layer of cleavage-cells has spread over the egg; b,portion of the egg (shaded) as yet uncovered by cleavage-cells; ap, the autoplasts ; kp, cleavage-pole where first cells were formed. (3) Later stage, the limit @ now extended so as to leave but little of the egg-surface ae unen- closed. The eyes (d), mouth (e), and mantle-sac (vw) have appeared. (4) Later stage, anterior surface, the embryo is becoming nipped off from the yelk sac (g). (5) View of an embryo similar to (3) from the cleavage-pole or centro-dorsal area. (6) Later stage, posterior surface. (7) Section in a median dorso-ventral and antero-posterior plane of an embryo of the same age as (4). (8) View of the anterior face of anolder embryo. (9) View of the posterior face of an embryo of the same age as (8). Letters in (3) to (9):—«, lateral fins of the mantle; 6, mantle-skirt; c, supra-ocular invagination to form the " white body" ; d, the eye; e, the mouth ; /1, 2, 3, 4, 5, the five paired processes of the fore-foot; g, rhythmically contractile area of the yelk-sac, which is itself a hernia-like protrusion of the median portion of the fore-foot (see fig. 72**); h, dotted line showing internal area occupied by yelk (food- material of the egg); k, first rudiment of the mid-foot (paired ridges which unite to form the siphon or funnel); J, sac of the radula or lingual ribbon ; m, stomach ; n, rudiments of the gills (paired ctenidia); 0, the otocysts,—a pair of invaginations of the surface of the mid-foot; p, the optic ganglion ; a the distal portion of the ridges which form the siphon or mid-foot, & being~~

~~he basal portion of the same structure; 1, the vesicle-like rudiment of the in-testine formed independently of the parts connected with the mouth, s, k, m, and without invagination ; s, rudiment of the salivary glands; ¢ in (7), the Shell-sac at an earlier stage open (see fig. 122), now closed up; u, the open~~

~~*shell-sac formed by an uprising ring-like growth of the centro-dorsal area; w in (5), the mantle-skirt commencing to be raised up around the area of the shell-sac. In (7) mes points to the middle cell-layer of the embryo, ep to the outer layer, and h to the deep layer of fusiform cells which separates every- where the embryo from the yelk or food-material lying within it. (Original.)*~~

~~*but that this is in part to be sought in the widely-separated primitive streak. The present writer has little doubt that*~~

~~*chick, and lying near the klastic pole, will be found in Sepia and Loligo, and the strange vesicular origin of the mid-gut will be traced to and explained by it.*~~

~~*Leaving this difficult question of the cell-layers of the embryo, we would draw the reader's attention to the series of sketches representing the semi-transparent embryo of Loligo, drawn in fig. 121. When the cleavage cells have nearly enclosed the yelk, the upper or embryonic area shows the rudiments of the centro-dorsal mantle-sac or pen-sac, the mouth, the paired optic pits, and the paired*~~

~~*Fic, 122.—Section through the stil] open shell-sac occupying the centro-dorsal area of an embryo of Loligo; the position is inverted as compared with fig.*~~

~~*121 (3) and (7). ep, outer cell-layer; m, middle cell-layer; m', deep cell-layer of fusiform cells; y, the granular yelk or food-material of the egg; shs, the still open shell-sac. (From Lankester.)*~~

~~*otic pits (fig. 121, (3), (5)). The eye-pits close up (fig. 119), the orifice of the mantle-sac narrows, and its margin becomes raised and freely produced as mantle-skirt ; at the same time an hour-glass-like pinching in of the whole embryo commences, separating the embryo proper from the so-called yelk-sac (fig. 121, (4)). Around the "waist" of constriction, pair by pair, ten lobes arise (fig. 121, (8)),—the arms of the fore-foot. It now becomes obvious that the yelk-sac is but the median surface of the fore-foot bulged out inordinately by food-yelk, just as the hind region of the foot is in the embryo slug (see fig. 72**, and explanation). Just as in the slug, this dilated*~~

~~*yelk- holding foot is rhythmically contractile, and pulsates steadily over the area g in fig. 121, (4). At this stage, and long subsequently, the mouth of the young Cephalopod is in no way surrounded by the fore-foot, but lies well above its nascent lobes (e in fig. 121). Subsequently it sinks, as it were, between the right and left most anterior pair of the series, which grow towards one another and fuse above it, and leave no trace of their original position and relations. Fig. 121, (6) gives a view of the postero- dorsal surface of an embryo, in which the important fact is seen of the formation of the funnel or siphon by the union of two pieces (¢), which grow up each independently, one right and one left, like the sides of the siphon of Nautilus or the swimming lobes of a Pteropod, and subse- quently come together, as shown in (9), where the same letter g indicates the same part. The explanations of figs. 121 and 123 are given very full, and here, therefore, we shall only allude to two additional points. A curious mass of tissue of unknown significance occurs in the orbit of Dibranchs, known as the white body (w in fig. 120). A strongly-marked invagination just above the orbit is a very prominent feature in the embryo of: Loligo, Sepia, and Octopus, and appears to give rise to this so-called white body. This invaginated portion of the outer cell-layer is seen in fig. 121, (8) and (9), lettered c; in fig. 123, A and B, it is lettered wb. Lastly, in fig. 123, A, the origin of the optic nerve-ganglion ng from the cells of the middle layer should be especially noticed. In some other Molluscs the nerve- ganglia have been definitely traced to the outer cell-layer,*~~

~~*684*~~

~~*whilst in some Gastropods, according to Bobretzky, they originate, as here shown, for Loligo. ,*~~

~~*The egg-coverings of the Dibranchiate are very complete. Argonauta and Octopus deposit each egg in a firm oval case, thin and transparent, which has a long stalk by which (in Octopus) the egg is fixed in company with two or three hundred others to some foreign object. Sepia encloses each egg in a thick envelope of many layers resembling india-rubber. Loligo encloses many rows of eggs in a copious tough jelly, and affixes a dozen or twenty such egg-strings to one spot. Sepia and Loligo desert their eggs when laid. The female Octopus most jealously*~~

~~He TPN eV Cy V7~~

~~7~~

~~Ma: eoGoonoDeood~~

~~laa ita) a) abana te) ’ ~· ‘a yy~~

~~Fic. 123.—Right and left sections through embryos of Loligo. A. Same stage as fig. 121). B. Same stage as fig. 121 (8); only the left side of the sections is drawn, and the food-material which occupies the space internal to the membrane ym is omitted. al, rectum; is, ink-sac; ep, outer cell-layer; mes, middle cell-layer; ym, deep cell-layer of fusiforin cells (yelk-membrane); 7g, optic nerve-ganglion ; ot, otocyst ; wb, the “ white body” of the adult ocular capsule forming as an invagination of the outer cell-layer; mtf, mantle-skirt ; g, gill; ys, pen-sac or shell-sac, now closed ; dg, dorsal groove ; poc, primitive optic vesicle, now closed (see fig. 119); 7, lens; 7, retina; soc, second or anterior optic chamber still open ; if, iridean folds. C, The primitive invagination to form one of the otocysts, as seen in fig, 121 (5) and (6). (After Lankester.)~~

~~guards them, building a nest of stones and incubating.~~

~~Argonauta carries hers with her in a special brood-holding~~

~~shell.~~

~~The development of the Pteropoda, so far as is known, presents no points of contact with that of the Siphonopoda rather than with that of the Gastropoda, owing to the fact that in them the egg has not an excess of food-yelk. Con- sequently, we find typical trochosphere and veliger larvee among the Thecosomata (fig. 8, C, and fig. 81), whilst the isolated observation of Gegenbaur has made known very remarkable larve referable to the Gymnosomata, and with little doubt to Pneumodermon (fig. 84). The former set of larvee are sufficient to demolish once for all the view which has been entertained by some zoologists, viz., that the velar disc of the veliger larva is the same thing as the ptero- podial lobes of the mid-foot of Pteropoda. The latter larvee are of importance in showing that, as in~~

~~*embryo Siphonopods so in embryo Pteropods, the sucker-bearing lobes of the fore-foot are truly podial structures, and only embrace the head and surround the mouth as the result of late embryonic growth.*~~

~~*Branou B.—LIPOCEPHALA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Mollusca with the head region undeveloped. No cephalic eyes are present ; the buccal cavity is devoid*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*| LAMELLIBRANCHIA.*~~

~~*of biting, rasping, or prehensile organs. The animal is sessile, or endowed with very feeble locomotive powers. The Lipocephala comprise but one class, the Lamelli- branchia, also known as Elatobranchia and Conchifera.*~~

~~*Class LAMELLIBRANCHITA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Lipocephala in which the archaic BILA- TERAL SYMMETRY of the Mollusca is usually fully retained, and raised to a dominant feature of the organization by the lateral compression of the body and the development of the shell as two bilaterally symmetrical plates or valves cover- ing each one side of the animal. The Foor is commonly a simple cylindrical or ploughshare-shaped organ, used for boring in sand and mud, and more rarely presents a crawl- ing disc similar to that of Gastropoda ; in some forms it is aborted. The paired cTENIDIA are very greatly developed right and left of the elongated body, and form the most prominent organ of the group. Their function is chiefly not respiratory but nutritive, since it is by the currents produced by their ciliated surface that food-particles are brought to the feebly-developed mouth and buccal cavity.*~~

~~*The Lamellibranchia present as a whole a somewhat uniform structure, so that, although they are very numerous, it is not possible to divide them into well-marked sub-classes or sections, and orders. The chief points in which they vary are—(1) in the structure of the ctenidia or branchial plates ; (2) in the presence of one or of two chief muscles, the fibres of which run across the animal's body from one valve of the shell to the other (adductors) ; (3)*~~

~~*in the greater or less elaboration of the posterior portion of the mantle-skirt so as to form a pair of tubes, by one of which water is introduced into the sub-pallial chamber, whilst by the other it is expelled ; (4) in the perfect or deficient symmetry of the two valves of the shell and the connected soft parts, as compared with one another ; (5) in the development of the foot asa disc-like crawling organ (Arca, Nucula, Pectun- culus, Trigonia, Lepton, Galeomma), as a simple plough- like or tongue-shaped organ (Unionacea, &c.), as a re-curved saltatory organ (Cardium, &c.), as a long burrowing cylin- der (Solenacea, &c.), or its partial (Mytilacea) or even com- plete abortion (Ostracea).*~~

~~*The essential Molluscan organs are, with these excep- tions, uniformly well developed. The MANTLE-SKIRT is always long, and hides the rest of the animal from view, its dependent margins meeting in the middle line below the ventral surface when the animal is retracted; it is, as it were, slit in the median line before and behind so as to form two flaps, a right and a left; on these the right and the left calcareous valves of the shell are borne respectively, connected by an uncalcified part of the shell called the ligament. In many embryo Lamellibranchs a centro-dorsal PRIMITIVE SHELL-GLAND or follicle has been detected (figs. 8and 151). The mouru lies in the median line anteriorly, the ANUS in the median line posteriorly.*~~

~~*Both crenrpia right and left are invariably present, the axis of each taking origin from the side of the body as in the schematic archi-Molluse (see fig. 1 and fig. 131). A pair of NEPHIRIDIA opening right and left, rather far forward on the sides of the body, are always present. Each opens by its internal extremity into the pericardium. A pair of GENITAL APERTURES, connected by genital ducts with the paired gonads, are found right and left near the nephridial pores, except in a few cases where the genital duct joins that of the nephridium (Spondylus). The sexes are often, but not always, distinct. No accessory glands or copulatory organs are ever present in Lamellibranchs. The ctenidia often act as brood-pouches.*~~

~~*A dorsal contractile HEART, with symmetrical right and left auricles (fig. 143, A) receiving aerated blood from the ctenidia and mantle-skirt, is present, being unequally de-*~~

~~*LAMELLIBRANCHIA.*~~ |

veloped only in those few forms which are inequivalve. The typical PERICARDIUM is well developed. It appears, as in other Mollusca, not to be a blood-space although developed from the cœlom, and it communicates with the exterior by the pair of nephridia. As in Cephalopoda (and possibly other Mollusca) water can be introduced through the nephridia into this space. The ALIMENTARY CANAL keeps very nearly to the median vertical plane whilst ex- hibiting a number of flexures and loopings in this plane. A pair of large glandular outgrowths, the so-called "liver" or great digestive gland, exists as in other Molluscs. A pair of pedal orocysts, and a pair of OSPHIRADIA at the base of the gills, appear to be always present. A typical NERVOUS SYSTEM is present (fig. 144), consisting of a cerebro-pleuro-visceral ganglion-pair, united by connectives to a pedal ganglion-pair and an osphradial ganglion-pair (parieto-splanchnic).

A special czeccum connected with the pharynx is some- times found, containing a tough flexible cylinder of trans- parent cartilaginous appearance and unknown significance, called the "crystalline style" (Mactra), which possibly represents the radular sac of Glossophora. In many Lamelli- branchs a gland is found on the hinder surface of the foot in the mid line, which secretes a substance which sets into the form of threads —the so-called " byssus "—by means of which the animal can fix itself. Sometimes this gland is found in the young and not in the adult (Anodon, Unio, Cyclas). In some Lamellibranchs (Pecten, Spondylus, Pholas, Mactra, Tellina, Pectunculus, Galeomma, &c.), although cephalic eyes are always absent, special eyes are developed on the free margin of the mantle-skirt, apparently by the modification of tentacles which are commonly found there (fig. 145). The existence of pores in the foot and elsewhere in Lamellibranchia by which liquid can pass into and out of the vascular system, although asserted as in the case of other Mollusca, appears to be improbable. It has yet to be shown by satisfactory micro- scopic sections that the supposed pores are anything but epidermal glands.

The Lamellibranchia live chiefly in the sea, some in fresh waters. A very few have the power of swimming by opening and shutting the valves of the shell (Pecten, Lima) ; most can slowly crawl or rapidly burrow; others are, when adult, permanently fixed to stones or rocks either by the shell or the byssus. In development some Lamellibranchia pass through a free-

~~swimming trochosphere stage with pre- oral ciliated band ; other fresh-water forms which carry the young in brood-pouches formed by the ctenidia have sup- pressed this larval phase.~~

~~The following classification and enumeration of genera are based primarily upon the characters of the adductor muscles. The Heteromya and Monomya must be conceived of as derived from forms resembling such Gastropodous Isomya as Nucula and Trigonia, which undoubtedly are the nearest living representatives of the ancestral Lipo- cephala, and bring us nearest to the other branch of the Mollusca, the Glossophora.~~

~~Order 1.—Isomya.~~

~~Character.—Anterior and posterior adductor muscles of approxi- mately equal size.~~

~~Sub-order 1.—Jntegripallia.~~

~~Characters.—Marginal attachment of the mantle to the shell not inflected to form a sinus; siphons not developed in some, present in most.~~

~~Family 1.—Arcacea.~~

~~Genera: Area, L. (fig. 132); Cucullwa, Lam. ; Peetuneulus, Lam. ; Limopsis, Sassi; Nueula, Lam. (fig. 134) ; Zsoarea, Miinster ; Leda, Schu.; Yoldia, Moll. ; Solenella, Sowerby, &c.~~

~~Family 2.—Trigoniacea. Genera: Trigonia, Brug. ; Axinus, Sow. ; Iyrodesma, Conrad.~~

~~Family 3.—Unionacea.~~

~~Genera: Unio, Retz. ; Castalia, Lam. ; Anodon, Ouv. (figs. 124,~~

~~&c.) ; Iridina, Lam. ; Myeetopus, d'Orb., &c. Family 4.—Lueinacea.~~

~~*Genera : Lucina, Brug. ; Corbis, Cuv.; Diplodonta, Brown ; Kellia, Turton ; Montaeuta, Turton ; Lepton, Turton ; Gaic- omma, Turton ; Astarte, Sow. ; Crassatella, Lam. ; Cardinia, Ag. ; Cardita, Brug., &c.*~~

~~*Family 5.—Cyprinacea.*~~

~~*Genera : Tridaena, Da C. ; Chama, L. ; Dimya, Ron. ; Diceras, Lk. ; Isocardia, Lam. ; Hippopodium, Sow. ; Cardium, L. ; Corbicula, Meg.; Cyrena, Lk.; Cyclas, Brug. (fig. 146) ; Pisid- tum, Pfr. (figs. 148-158) ; Cyprina, Lam., &c.*~~

~~*Sub-order 2.—Stnupallia.*~~

~~*Characters.—Marginal attachment of the mantle to the shell in- flected so as to form a sinus into which the pallial siphons can be withdrawn ; siphons always present, and large.*~~

~~*Family 6.—Veneracea.*~~

~~*Genera: Cyprieardia, Lam. ; Tapes, Megl. ; Cyelina, Desh. ; Cytherea, Lain. (figs. 125, &c.); Chione, Megl.; Venus, L. ; Lucinopsis, ¥F. H. ; Sanguinolaria, Lam. ; Psammobia, Lam. (fig. 130); Tellina, L.; Donax, L.; Serobicularia, Schu. ; Cumingia, Sow. ; Rangia, Dsml. ; Maetra, L. (fig. 140); Lrigo- nella, Da C. ; Vaganella, Gr. ; Lntraria, Lam.*~~

~~*Family 7.—Myaeea.*~~

~~*Genera: Myochama, Stb. ; Chamostrea, Rois; Pandora, Sol. ; Dhracia, Leach ; Thetis, Sow. ; Pholadomya, Sow. ; Corbulu, Brug. ; Mya, Lam. ; Saxicava, Fleur; Panopewa, Ad. ; Glyei- meris, Lam. ; Siliqua, Mhif., &c. ; Solen, L.*~~

~~*Family 8.—Pholadacea.*~~

~~*Genera: Clavagella, Lam. ; Aspergillum, Lam. (figs. 128, 129) ; Humphreyia, Gr. ; Pholas, L. ; Pholadidea, Turt.; Teredo, L. ; Teredina, Lam. ; Furcella, Oken, &c.*~~

~~*Order 2.—Heteromya.*~~

~~*Characters.—Anterior adductor (pallial adductor) much smaller than the posterior adductor (pedal adductor) ; siphons rarely present. Family 1.—Jytilacea.*~~

~~*Genera: Mytilus, L. (fig. 188); Modiola, Lam.; Crenella, Brown ; Lithodomus, Cuv.; Dreissena, Ben. (fig. 1386); Modiolarea, Gr., &c.*~~

~~*Family 2,—Mulleriacea. Genera: Aetheria, Lam. ; Maulleria, Fer. Order 3.—Monomya. Characters,—Anterior adductor absent in the adult; siphons never developed. Family 1.—Aviewlacea, Genera: Cardiola, Brdp. ; Aviewla, Kl.; Matlews, Lam. ; Jno- ceramus, Sow. ; Crenatula, Lam. ; Perna, Brug., &c. Family 2.—Ostracea.*~~

~~*Genera: Ostrea, L. (fig. 6); Anomia, L.; Spondylus, L.; Plicatula, Lam. ; Vuilsella, Lam. ; Lima, Brug. ; Pecten, L. ; Hiwnites, Dir, &c.*~~

~~*Further Remarks on the Lamellibranchia.—The Lamelli- branchia are the only members of the Lipocephalous branch of Mollusca existing at the present day; and we must suppose that, whilst on the one hand the earliest Glosso- phorous forms were developing from the archi-Mollusca by the elaboration of the buccal apparatus, the bivalved sessile Lamellibranchs were developing in another direction from univalve cephalophorous ancestors. The large bilobed mantle-flap with its pair of shells covering in the whole animal, the current-producing largely-expanded ctenidia, and the reduced cephalic region are characters which go hand in hand, and were simultaneously acquired, each being related to the development of the others. Unless the "crystalline style" of Lamellibranchs is to be considered as the rudiment of the "radular sac" of Glossophora, as suggested by Balfour, there is no indication whatever that the ancestors of the Lamellibranchia had acquired a repre- sentative of the buccal apparatus—so highly developed in Glossophora—before diverging from the archi-Mollusca ; that is to say, the common ancestors of the two great branches of Mollusca presented the distinctive character of neither branch—they had not an aborted cephalic region, and they had not a lingual ribbon.*~~

~~*As an example of the organization of a Lamellibranch, we shall review the structure of the Common Pond-Mussel (Anodonta cygnea), comparing its structure with those of*~~

[LAMELLIBRANCHIA.

686

other Lamellibranchia. The Swan Mussel has superficially a perfectly-developed bilateral symmetry. The left side of the animal is seen as when removed from its shell in fig. 124 (1). The valves of the shell have been removed by severing their adhesions to the muscular arez h, 2, k, 1, m, w.

MOLLUSCA 3

and so to form a more or less completely closed bag, as in the Scaphopoda (Dentalium). In this way the notches d, e of the hinder part of the mantle-skirt of Anodon are in the Siphonate forms converted into two separate holes, the edges of the mantle being elsewhere fused together along this hinder margin. Further than this, the part of the mantle-skirt bounding the two holes is frequently drawn out go as to form a pair of tubes which project from the shell (figs. 130, 141). In such Lamellibranchs as the oysters, scallops, and many others which have the edges of the mantle-skirt quite free, there are numerous tentacles upon those edges. In Anodon these pallial tentacles are confined to a small area surrounding the inferior siphonal notch (fig. 124, (3), ¢).

The centro-dorsal point a of the animal of Anodonta (fig. 124, (1)) is called the umbonal area ; the great anterior muscular surface A is that of the anterior adductor muscle, the posterior similar surface 7 is that of the posterior adductor muscle; the long line of attachment uw is the simple "pallial muscle,"—a thickened ridge which is seen to run parallel to the margin of the mantle-skirt in this Lamellibranch. In some of the Siphonate Isomya, which are hence termed "Sinupallia," the pallial muscle is not simple but deeply incurved at the posterior region so as to allow of the large pallial siphons being retracted within the shell or expanded at will (fig. 127, and figs. 140, 141).

It is the approximate equality in the size of the anterior and posterior adductor muscles which has led to the name Isoyma for the group to which Anodon be- longs. The hinder adductor muscle may be considered as re-presenting morphologically the transverse fibres of the root of the foot of

~~*Nautilus by which it adheres to its shell (fig. 91, £), the annular muscular area of Patella (fig.27,c), and the columella muscle of the Gastropods generally. It is always large in Lamellibranchs, but the anterior adductor may be very small (Heteromya), or Fig, 225*~~

~~*Fic, 124.—Diagrams of the external form and anatomy of Anodonta cygnea, the Pond-Mussel; in all the figures the animal is seen from the left side, the centro-dorsal region uppermost, as in the drawings of fig. 75, which compare. (1) Animal removed from its shell, a probe g passed into the sub-pallial chamber through the excurrent siphonal notch. (2) View from the ventral surface of an Anodon with its foot expanded and issuing from between the gaping shells. (3) The left mantle-flap reflected upwards so as to expose the sides of the body. (4) Diagrammatic section of Anodon to show the course of the alimentary canal. (5) The two gill-plates ofthe left side reflected upwards so as to expose the fissure between foot and gill where the probe g passes. (6) Diagram to show the positions of the nerve-ganglia, heart, and nephridia.*~~

~~*Letters in all the figures as follows :—a, centro-dorsal area; b, margin of the left mantle-flap ; c, margin of the right mantle-flap ; d, excurrent siphonal notch of the mantle margin; e, incurrent siphonal notch of the mantle margin; f, foot; g, probe passed into the superior division of the sub-pallial chamber through the excurrent siphonal notch, and issuing by the side of the foot into the inferior division of the sub-pallial chamber; h, anterior (pallial) adductor muscle of the shells; i, anterior retractor muscle of the foot; k, protractor muscle of the foot; 1, posterior (pedal) adductor muscle of the shells; m, posterior retractor muscle of the foot; », anterior labial tentacle; 0, posterior labial tentacle ; p, base-line of origin of the reflected mantle-flap from the side of the body; g, left external gill-plate; r, left in- ternal gill-plate; rr, inner lamella of the right inner gill-plate ; rg, right outer gill-plate ; s, line of concrescence of the outer lamella of the left outer gill- plate with the left mantile-flap ; t, pallial tentacles ; u, the thickened mus- cular pallial margin which adheres to the shell and forms the pallial line of the left side; v, that of the right side; w, the mouth; 2, aperture of the left organ of Bojanus (nephridium) exposed by cutting the attachment of the inner lamella of the inner gill-plate ; y, aperture of the genital duct; z, fissure between the free edge of the inner lamella of the*~~

~~*inner gill-plate and the side of the foot, through which the probe g passes into the upper division of the sub-pallial space; aa, line of concrescence of the inner lamella of the right inner gill-plate with the inner lamella of the left inner gill-plate; ab, ac, ad, three pit-like depressions in the median line of the foot supposed by some writers to be pores admitting water into the vascular system ; ae, left shell valve ; af, space occupied by liver ; ag, space occupied by gonad ; ah, muscular substance of the foot; ai, duct of the liver on the wail of the stomach ; ak, stomach ; al, rectum traversing the ventricle of the heart; am, pericardium ; i an, glandular portion of the left nephridium ; ap, ventricle of the heart ; aq, Pe aperture by which the left auricle joined the ventricle; ar, non-glandular por- tion of the left nephridium ; as, anus; at, pore leading from the pericardium into the glandular sac of the left nephridium ; au, pore leading from the glandular into the non-glandular portion of the left nephridium ; av, internal pore lead- ing from the non-glandular portion of the left nephridium to the external pore ; aw, left cerebro-pleuro-visceral ganglion ; ax, left pedal ganglion ; ay, left otocyst; az, left olfactory ganglion (parieto-splanchnic) ; bb, floor of*~~

~~*the pericardium separating that space from the non-glandular portion of the nephridia.*~~

~~*The free edge of the left half of the mantle-skirt b is repre-*~~

~~*O07 ety,*~~

~~*sof*~~

~~*Wan onqses enmwens? 5 i tral orinfervor bo*~~

~~*sented as a little contracted in order to show the exactly simi- lar free edge of the right half of the mantle-skirtc. These edges are not attached to, although they touch, one another 5 each flap (right or left) can be freely thrown back in the way which has been carried out in fig. 124, (3) for that of the left side. This is not always the case with Lamellibranchs; there is in the group a tendency for the corresponding edges of the mantle-skirt to fuse together by concrescence,*~~

~~*Fic. 126.—Right valve of the same shell from the outer face.*~~

~~*in Heteromya and Isomya. Amongst those Lamelli- branchs which have only a posterior adductor (Monomya), it is remarkable that the oyster has been found (by Huxley) to possess, when the young shells and muscles first develop, a well-marked anterior adductor as well as a posterior one. Accordingly there is ground for supposing*~~

~~*that the Monomya have been developed from Isomya- like ancestors, and have lost by atrophy their anterior adductor. The single adductor muscle of the Monomya is separated by a difference of fibre into two portions, but neither of these can be regarded as possibly represent*~~

~~*ligamen! f i. _1umbo*~~

~~*ing the anterior adductor of the other Lamelli- branchs. One of*~~

~~*these portions is more ligamentous, and serves to keep the two shells con- stantly attached to one another, whilst Fic. 127.—Left valve of the same shell from the inner the more fleshy por- face. (Figs. 125, 126, 127 from Owen.) tion serves to close the shell rapidly when it has been gaping. In removing the valves of the shell from an Anodon, it is necessary not only to cut through the muscular attach- ments of the body-wall to the shell but to sever also a strong elastic ligament, or spring resembling india-rubber, joining the two shells about the umbonal area. The shell of Anodon does not present these parts in the most strongly marked condition, and accordingly our figures (figs. 125, 126, 127) represent the valves of the Sinupalliate genus Cytherea. The corresponding parts are recognizable in Anodon. Referring to the figures (125, 126) for an ex- planation of terms applicable to the parts of the valve and the markings on its inner surface—corresponding to the muscular area which we have already noted on the surface of the animal's body—we must specially note here the posi- tion of that denticulated thickening of the dorsal margin of the valve which is called the hinge (fig. 127). By this hinge one valve is closely fitted to the other. Below this hinge each shell becomes concave, above it each shell rises a little to form the umbo, and it is into this ridge-likeupgrowth of each*~~

~~*valve that the elastic ligament or spring is fixed (fig. 127). As shown in the diagram (fig. h 127*) representing a transverse sec- tion of the two valves of a Lamelli- branch, the two shells form a double lever, of which the toothed-hinged is the fulcrum. The adductor muscles placed in the concavity of the shells act upon the long arms of the lever at a mechanical advantage ; their con- traction keeps the shells shut, and stretches the ligament or spring A. On the other hand, the ligament 2 acts upon the short arm formed by the umbonal ridge of the shells; when- ever the adductors relax, the elastic substance of the ligament contracts, and the shells gape. It is on this account that the valves of a dead La-*~~

~~*A*~~

~~*Fia.127*.—Diagram of asec- tion of a Lamellibranch's shells, ligament, and ad-*~~

~~*mellibranch always gape; the elastic ligament is no longer counteracted by the effort of the adductors. The state of closure of the valves of the shell is not, therefore, one of rest ; when it is*~~

~~*ductor muscle. a, b, right and left valves of the shell; c, d, the umbones or short arms of the lever ; e, f, the long arms of the lever; g, the hinge; h, the ligament ; 7, the adductor*~~

~~*at rest—that is, when there is no muscle.*~~

~~*muscular effort—the valves of a Lamellibranch are slightly gaping, and are closed by the action of the adductors when the animal is disturbed. The ligament is simple in Anodon ; in many Lamellibranchs it is separated into two layers, an outer and an inner (thicker and denser). That the condition*~~

~~*of gaping of the shell-valves is essential to the life of the Lamellibranch appears from the fact that food to nourish it, water to aerate its blood, and spermatozoa to fertilize its eggs, are all introduced into this gaping*~~

~~*chamber by currents of water, which are set going by the highly- developed ctenidia. The current of water enters into the sub-pallial space at the spot marked ¢ in fig. 124, (1), and, after passing as far forward as the mouth w in fig. 124, (5), takes an outward course and leaves the sub-pallial space by the upper notch d. These notches are known in Anodon as the afferent and efferent siphonal notches respectively, and correspond to the long tube-like afferent inferior and efferent superior "siphons" formed by the mantle in many other Lamellibranchs (fig. 130).*~~

~~*Whilst the valves of the shell are equal in Anodon we find in many Lamellibranchs (Ostreea, Chama, Corbula, é&c.) one valve larger, and the other smaller and sometimes flat, whilst the larger shell may be fixed to rock or to stones (Ostreea, &c.). A further variation consists in the develop- ment of additional shelly plates upon the dorsal line be- tween the two large valves (Pholadide). In Pholas dactylus we find a pair of umbonal plates, a dors-umbonal plate and a dorsal plate. It is to be remembered that the whole of the cuticular hard product produced on the dorsal surface and on the mantle-flaps is to be regarded as the "shell," of which a median band-like area, the ligament, usually remains uncalcified, so as to result in the production of two valves united by the elastic ligament. But the shelly substance does not always in boring forms adhere to this form after its first growth. In Aspergillum the whole of the tubular mantle area secretes a continuous shelly tube, although in the young condition two valves were present. These are seen (fig. fi. 129) set in the firm substance of the adult*~~

~~*? tubular shell, which has even replaced the ligament, so that the tube is complete. In Teredo a similar tube is formed as the animal elongates (boring in wood), the original shell- valves not adhering to it but remaining mov- able and provided with a special muscular apparatus in place of a ligament.*~~

~~*Let us now examine the organs which lie beneath the mantle-skirt of Anodon, and are bathed by the current of water which cir-*~~

~~*Fig. 128. Fig. 129.* «~~

~~*Fic, 128.—Shell of Aspergillum vaginiferum (from Owen). Fra, 129.—Shell of Aspergillum vaginiferum to show the original valves a, now embedded in*~~

~~*a continuous calcification of tubular form (from Owen).*~~

~~*culates through it. This can be done by lifting up and throwing back the left half of the mantle-skirt as is re- presented in fig. 124, (3). We thus expose the plough- like foot (7), the two left labial tentacles, and the two left gill-plates or left ctenidium. In fig. 124, (5), one of the labial tentacles x is also thrown back so as to show*~~

~~*the mouth w, and the two left gill-plates are reflected so as to show the gill-plates of the right side (77, 77) pro- jecting behind the foot, the inner or median plate of each side being united by concrescence to its fellow of the opposite side along a continuous line (aa). The left inner gill-plate is also snipped so as to show the subjacent orifices of the left nephridium «, and of the genital gland (testis or ovary) y. 'The foot thus exposed in Anodon is a simple muscular tongue-like organ. It can be protruded between the flaps of the mantle (fig. 124, (1), (2)) so as to issue from the shell, and by its action the Anodon can slowly crawl, or burrow in soft mud or sand. It has been sup- posed that water is taken into the blood-vessels of the Anodon through pores in the foot, and in spite of opposi- tion this view is still maintained (Griesbach, 47). In fig. 124, (2) the letters ab, ac, ad, point to three pit-like depres- sions, supposed by Griesbach to be pores leading into the blood-system. According to Carriére (48) these pits are nothing but irregularities of the surface; in some cases they are the entrances to ramified glands. Other Lamelli- branchs may have a larger foot relatively than has Anodon. In Arca it has a sole-like surface. In Arca too and many others it carries a byssus-forming gland and a byssus- cementing gland. In the Cockles, in Cardium, and in Trigonia, it is capable of a sudden stroke, which causes*~~

~~*the animal to jump when out of the water, in the latter*~~

~~*<9! — iit a y, *~~

~~*and the posterior a continuation of the inner gill-plate. There is no embryological evidence to support this sug- gested connexion, and, as will*~~

~~appear immediately, the history of the gill-plates in various forms of Lamelli- branchs does not directly favour it. Yet it is very prob- able that the labial tentacles and gill-plates are modi- fications of a double horseshoe-shaped area of ciliated filamentous processes which existed in ancestral Mollusca much as in Phoronis and the Polyzoa, and is to be com- pared with the continuous pre- and post-oral ciliated band of the Echinid larva Pluteus and of Tornaria (49).~~

~~The gill-plates have a structure very different from that of the labial tentacles, and one which in Anodon is singu- larly complicated as compared with the condition presented by these organs in some other Lamellibranchs, and with what must have been their original condition in the ances- tors of the whole series of living Lamellibranchia. The phenomenon of "concrescence" which we have already had to note as showing itself so importantly in regard to the free edges of the mantle-skirt and the formation of the siphons, is what, above all things, has complicated the structure of the Lamellibranch ctenidium. Our present knowledge of the interesting series of modifications through which the Lamellibranch gill-plates have developed to their most complicated form is due to R. Holman Peck (50) and to Mitsukuri (51). The Molluscan ctenidium is typi- cally, as shown in fig. 2, a plume-like struc- ture, consisting of a vascular axis, on each side of which is set a row of numerous la- melliform or filamentous processes. These processes are hollow, and receive the venous blood from, and return it again aerated into, the hollow axis, in which an afferent and an efferent blood-vessel may be differentiated. In the genus Nucula (fig. 134), one of the~~

~~é Fra. 130.—Psammobdia florida, right side, showing expanded foot e, and g incurrent and g' excurrent Arcacee, we have an example of a Lamelli-~~

~~siphons (from Owen).~~

~~genus to a height of four feet. In Mytilus the foot is reduced to little more than a tubercle carrying the aper- tures of these glands. In the Oyster it is absent alto- gether.~~

~~The labial tentacles of Anodon (n, 0 in fig. 124, (3), (5)) are highly vascular I flat processes richly q I c supplied with nerves. 4 oan The left~~

~~anterior ten- a: tacle (seen in the figure) is joined at i= its base in front of He oe. | the mouth (w) to the $4 : right anterior ten- tacle, and similarly the left (0) and right posterior tentacles are joined behind the~~

~~mouth. Those of p.4. 131 Diagram of a view from the left side of Sam & : _ m of a view from the i Arca (4, kin fig. 132) the animal of Anodonta cygnea, from Waid ths show this relation to mantle-skirt, the labial tentacles, and the gill- filaments have been entirely removed so as to the mouth (a). These — ute Fepeens of oe ~~ of = gill-plumes r ctenidia g, h. a, centro-dorsal area; 6, ante- organs are character- rior adductor muscle ; ¢, posterior adductor istic of all Lamelli- ton'ot the axis of left ctenlatam; >, axis of : i e ctenidium; h, axis o: branchs 5 they do not oy oe ae portion of the axis of the var x * s eft ctenidium which is fused with the base of ary except IM SIZ, the foot, the two dotted lines indicating the b eling some times epee 9 ag pbs of gill-filaments ; m, line 3 of origin o e anterior labial tentacle; — drawn ; out : to phridial aperture; 0, genital eneclns tiie late streamer-like dimen- of 69 of the posterior labial tentacle, (Ori-~~

~~s i ginal.~~

~~sions. Their appear-~~

~~ance and position suggest that they are in some way related morphologically to the gill-plates, the anterior labial tentacle being a continuation of the outer gill-plate,~~

~~e~~

~~nr~~

~~branch retaining this plume-like form of gill. In other Arcacez (e.g., Arca and Pectunculus) the lateral processes which are set on the axis of the ctenidium are not lamellz, but are slightly-flattened, very long tubes or hol- low filaments. These fila- ments are so fine and are set so closely together that they appear to form a continuous membrane until examined with a lens. The microscope shows that the neighbour- ing filaments are held to- gether by patches of cilia, called "ciliated junc- tions," which interlock with one another just as two brushes may be made to do. In fig. 133, A a~~

~~*portion of four filaments of a ctenidium of the Sea- Mussel (Mytilus) is repre- sented, having precisely Fia. 132.—View from the ventral (pedal) as-*~~

~~*the same structure as __pectofthe animal of Arca Now, the mantle-*~~

~~*flapand gill-filaments having been cut away.*~~

~~*those of Arca. ‘< The fila- a, mouth; b, anus; ¢, free spirally turned ments of the gill (cteni- extremity of the gill-axis or ctenidial axis di fi of the right side; d, do. of the left side; ium) of Mytilus and e, f, anterior portions of —_ a — Ar by concrescence to the wall of the y; ca thus form two g, anterior adductor muscle; h, posterior closely set rows which adductor; i, anterior labial Oat bi D osterior labial tentacle ; 1, base line of the*~~

~~*depend from the axis of oot; m, sole of the foot; 7, callosity.*~~

~~*the gill like two paralle] (Original.)*~~

~~*plates. Further, their structure is profoundly modified by the curious condition of the free ends of the depending filaments. These are actually reflected at a sharp angle—*~~

~~*LAMELLIBRANCHIA. |*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*689*~~

~~*doubled on themselves in fact—and thus form an additional | in the trellis-work formed by the united gill-filaments*~~

~~*row of filaments (see fig. 133, B). Consequently, each primi- | (fig. 138, A, B).*~~

~~*tive filament has a descending and an ascending ramus, and instead of each row forming a simple plate, the plate is double, consisting of a descending and an ascending lamella. As the axis of the ctenidium lies by the side of the body, and is very frequently connate with the body, as so often happens in Gastropods also, we find it convenient to speak of the two plate-like*~~

~~structures formed on each ctenidial axis as the outer and the inner gill-plate ; each of these is~~

~~Base~~

~~Fia. 183.—Filaments of the ctenidium of Mytilus edulis (after HIolman Peck). A. Part of four filaments seen from the outer face in order to show the ciliated junctions ¢j. B. Diagram of the posterior face of a single complete filament with descending ramus and ascending ramus ending in a hook-like process. ep., ep., the ciliated junctions ; il.j., inter-lamellar junction. C. Transverse section of a filament taken so as to cut neither a ciliated junction nor an inter-lamellar junction. fe., frontal epithelium ; l.fie'., l.fe'., the two rows of latero-frontal epithelial cells with long cilia ; ch, chitonous tubular lining of the filament ; lac., blood lacuna traversed by a few processes of connective tissue cells; b.c., blood-corpuscle.~~

~~composed of two lamella, an outer (the reflected) and an~~

~~adaxial in the case of the outer gill-plate, and an adaxial and~~

~~an inner (the reflected) in the case of the inner gill-plate.~~

~~This is the condition seen in Arca and Mytilus, the so-~~

~~called plates dividing upon the slightest touch into their~~

~~constituent filaments, which are but loosely conjoined by their "ciliated junctions." Complications follow upon this in other forms. Even in Mytilus and Arca a con- nexion is here and there formed between the ascending and descending rami of a filament by hollow extensible outgrowths called "interlamellar junctions" (2,7 in B, fig.~~

~~133). Nevertheless the filament is a complete tube formed~~

~~of chitonous substance and clothed externally by ciliated~~

~~epithelium, internally by endothelium and lacunar tissue—~~

~~a form of connective tissue—as shown in fig. 133, C.~~

~~*Now let us suppose, as happens in the genus Dreissena—*~~

~~*a genus not far removed from Mytilus—that the ciliated*~~

~~*inter-filamentar junctions (fig. 136) give place to solid*~~

~~*permanent inter-filamentar junctions, so that the filaments are converted, as it were, into a trellis-work. Then let us suppose that the inter-lamellar junctions which we have already noted in Mytilus become very numerous, large, and irregular; by them the two trellis-works of filaments would be united so as to leave only a sponge-like set of spaces between them. Within the trabecule of the sponge-work blood circulates, and between the trabeculze the water passes, having entered by the apertures left*~~

~~*The larger the intra-lamellar spongy*~~

~~*tj,*~~

~~*Fic. 134.—Structnre of the ctenidia of Nucula (after Mitsukuri); see also fig. 2. A. Section across the axis of a ctenidinin with a pair of plates—flattened and shortened filaments—attached. 4, j, k, g are placed on or near the membrane which attaches the axis of the ctenidium to the side of the body; a, b, free extremities of the plates (filaments); d, mid-line of the inferior border; e, surface of the plate; ¢, its upper border; h, chitonous lining of the plate; r, dilated blood-space ; u, fibrous tract; 0, upper blood-vessel of the axis ; , lower blood-vessel of the axis; s, chitonous framework of the axis ; ep, canal in the same; A, B, line along which the cross-section C of the plate is taken. B. Animal of a male Nucula proxvima, Say, as seen when the left valve of the shell and the left half of the mantle-skirt are re-moved. «.a., anterior adductor muscle; p.a., posterior adductor muscle; v.m, visceral mass; f, foot; g, gill; J, labial tentacle; J.a., filamentous appendage of the labial tentacle; Jb, hood-like appendage of the labial ten-tacle ; m, membrane suspending the gill and attached to the body along the line 2, y, 2, w; p, posterior end of the gill (ctenidium), C. Section across one of the gill-plates (A, B, in A) comparable with fig. 133, C. i.a., outer border; d.a., axial border; U.f,, latero-frontal epithelium ; e, epithelium of general surface ; 7, dilated blood-space ; h, chitonous lining (compare A),*~~

~~*growth becomes, the more do the original gill-filaments*~~

~~*lose the character of blood-holding tubes and tend to become dense elastic rods for the simple purpose of sup- porting the spongy growth. This is seen both in the section of Dreissena gill (fig. 136) and in those of Anodon*~~

~~*(fig. 137, A, B, C). In the drawing of Dreissena the*~~

~~*individual filaments /, f, f are cut across in one lamella at*~~

~~*the horizon of an inter-filamentar junction, in the other*~~

~~*(lower in the figure) at a point where they are free. The*~~

~~*chitonous substance ch is observed to be greatly thickened*~~

~~*as compared with what it is in fig. 133, C, tending in fact to obliterate altogether the lumen of the filament.*~~

~~*And in Anodon (fig. 137, C) this obliteration is effected. In*~~

~~*Anodon, besides being thickened, the skeletal substance of*~~

~~*the filament develops a specially dense rod-like body on*~~

~~*each side of each filament. Although the structure of the ctenidium is thus highly complicated in Anodon, it is yet more so in some of the Siphonate genera of Lamellibranchs.*~~

~~*The filaments take on a secondary grouping, the surface of*~~

~~*the lamella being thrown into a series of half-cylindrical*~~

~~*ridges, each consisting of ten or twenty filaments; a filament XVI. — 87*~~

~~*690*~~

~~*of much greater strength and thickness than the others may be placed between each pair of groups. In Anodon, as In*~~

jr

w

Fic. 135.—Diagrams of transverse sections of a Lamellibranch to show the adhesion, by concrescence, of the gill-lamellz to the mantle-flaps, to the foot,

and to one another. A shows two conditions with free gill-axis; B, condition at foremost region in Anodon; C, hind region of foot in Anodon; D, region altogether posterior to the foot in Anodon. a, visceral mass ; }, foot ; c, mantle flap; d, axis of gill or ctenidium ; c¢, adaxial lamella of outer gill-plate; er, reflected lamella of outer gill-plate; f, adaxial lamella of inner gill-plate ; fr, reflected lamella of inner gill-plate ; g, line of concrescence of the reflected lamella of the two inner gill-plates ; h, rectum ; 7, supra-branchial space of the sub-pallial chamber. (Original.)

many other Lamellibranchs, the ova and hatched embryos are carried for a time in the ctenidia or gill apparatus, and in this particular case the space between the two lamell

f ie Be Hy «stiles Wc dy, J 3 say JDJ é YY WIN) SW YING AR SUA i Y e) NOX NV ‘ 6) IN es Yl [eles / (Ve ‘sie Sie & AV Ayes \ Fa dal | ‘\SE Cal | 3 GC \ 4 4 ie fo” Roam H > MeV mel AS mm UN A Se aie Sue BU Sills (ome) ame Nc ay oe NC

aS,

d la 3 4 = oa\ 2 if ic Se 2 ies) [ar 3 \e ie) ia): ia) a) es i ass). We)

Fia. 186.—Transverse section of the outer gill-plate of Dreissena polymorpha (after Holman Peck). /, constituent gill-filaments ; ff, fibrous pes ae fin tissue ; ch, chitonous substance of the filaments; nch, cells related to the chitonous substance; lac, lacunar tissue; pig, pigment-cells; be, blood- corpuscles ; Se, frontal epithelium ; lfe’, Life’, two rows of latero-frontal epi- thelial cells with long cilia; Uf, fibrous, possibly muscular, substance of the inter-filamenter junctions.

~~*of the outer gill-plate is that which serves to receive the ova (fig. 137, A). The young are nourished bya substance*~~

~~*MOLLUSCGA*~~

~~*[LAMELLIBRANCHIA.*~~

~~*formed by the cells which cover the spongy inter-lamellar outgrowths.*~~

~~*There are certain other points in the modification of the typical ctenidium which must be noted in order to under- stand the ctenidium of Anodon. The axis of each ctenid- ium, right and left, starts from a point well forward near the labial tentacles, but it is at first only a ridge, and does not project as a free cylindrical axis until the back part of*~~

~~*ch chr*~~

~~*Fic. 137.—Transverse sections of gill-plates of Anodon (after Peck). A. Outer late. B. Inner gill-plate. C. A portion of B more highly magnified.*~~

~~*ill-p aL outer lamella; i.J, inner lamella; v, blood-vessel ; /, constituent fila-*~~

~~*ments; lac, lacunar tissue; ch, chitonous substance of the filament; chr, chitonous rod embedded in the softer substance ch.*~~

~~*the foot is reached. This is difficult to see at all in Ano- don, but if the mantle-skirt be entirely cleared away, and if the dependent lamelle which spring from the ctenidial axis be carefully cropped away so as to leave the axis itself intact, we obtain the form shown in fig. 131, where g and h are respectively the left and the right ctenidial axes pro- jecting freely beyond the body. In Arca this can be seen with far less trouble, for the filaments are more easily re- moved than are the consolidated lamellae' formed by the filaments of Anodon, and in Arca the free axes of the ctenidia are large and firm in texture (fig. 132, ¢, d).*~~

~~*If we were to make a vertical section across the long axis of a Lamellibranch which had the axis of its ctenidium free from its origin onwards, we should find such relations as are shown in the diagram fig. 135, A. The gill axis d is seen lying in the sub-pallial chamber between the foot 6 and the mantle c. From it depend the gill-filaments or lamellee—formed by united filaments—drawn as black lines f. On the left side these lamellz are represented as hav- ing only a small reflected growth, on the right side the reflected ramus or lamella is complete (fr and er). The actual condition in Anodon at the region where the gills commence anteriorly is shown in fig. 135, B. The axis of the ctenidium is seen to be adherent to, or fused by con- crescence with, the body-wall, and moreover on each side the outer lamella of the outer gill-plate is fused to the mantle, whilst the inner lamella of the inner gill-plate is fused to the foot. If we pass a little backwards and take another section nearer the hinder margin of the foot, we*~~

~~*LAMELLIBRANCHIA. |*~~

~~*get the arrangement shown diagrammatically in fig. 135, C, and. more correctly i in fig. 142. In this region the inner lamellee of the inner gill-plates are no longer affixed to the foot. Passing still further back behind the foot, we find*~~

~~*i af 4*~~

~~*'i q*~~

~~*Fig, 138,—Gill-lamelle of Anodon (after Peck). A. Fragment of the outer lamella of an inner gill-plate torn from the connected inner lamella, the sub- filamentar tissue also partly cut away round the edges so as to expose the filaments, their transverse junctions tr, and the " windows" left in the lattice- work ; aft, internal surface of the lamella; v, vessel. B. Diagram of a block cut from the outer lamella of the outer gill- plate and seen from the inter- lamellar surface coe Peck). /, constituent filaments; tr/, fibrous tissue of the transverse inter-filamentar junctions ; v, blood-vessel ;*~~

~~*ally by the transverse inter-filamentar junctions.*~~

~~*in Anodon the condition shown in the section D, fig. 135. The axes 7 are now free; the outer lamelle of the outer gill-plates (e7) still adhere by concrescence to the mantle- skirt, whilst the inner lamelle of the inner gill-plates meet one another and B*~~

~~*fuse by concres- cence at g. In the lateral view of én, the animal with reflected mantle- skirt and gill- plates, the line of concrescence of the inner lamelle of the inner gill- plates is readily seen; it is marked aa in fig. 124, (5). In the same figure the free part of the inner lamella of the inner gill-plate resting on the foot is marked 2, whilst the attached part—the most anterior—has been snipped with scissors so as to show the genital and nephnidial apertures and y. The concrescence, then, of the free edge of the reflected lamelle of the gill-plates of Anodon is very extensive. It is important, because such a concrescence is by no means universal, and does not occur, for example, in Mytilus or in Arca; further, because*~~

~~*br…*~~

~~*8*~~

~~*Fig. 130.—Transverse sections of A, a Lamellibranch, and B, an Isopleurous Gastropod (Chiton), to show the relations of p, the foot; br, the branchie; and m, the mantle. (From Gegenbaur.)*~~

~~*BOVLLELUSCA*~~

when its occurrence is once appreciated, the reduction of the gill-plates of Anodon to the plume-type of the simplest ctenidium presents no difficulty; and, lastly, it has import- ance in reference to its physio- logical significance. The me- chanical result of the concres- ,, cence of the outer lamellz to the mantle-flap, and of the inner lamelle to one another as shown in section D, fig. 135, is that the sub-pallial space is divided into two

_ Spaces by a horizontal Sep- Fic. 140.—Lateral view of a Mactra,

the right valve of the shell and right mantle-flap removed, and the si- phons retracted. br, br', outer and inner gill-plates ; ¢, labial tentacle ; ta, tr, upper and lower siphons ; ms, siphonal muscle of the mantle-flap 3 ma, anterior adductor muscle ; mp, posterior adductor muscle ; p, foot ; c,umbo, (From Gegenbaur.)

tum. The upper space (7) communicates with the outer world by the excurrent or su- perior siphonal notch of the mantle (fig. 124, d); the lower space communicates by the lower siphonal notch (e in fig. 124). The only communica- tion between the two spaces, excepting through the trellis-work of the gill-plates, is by the slit (z in fig. 124, (5)) left by the non-concrescence of a part of the inner lamella of the inner gill-plate with the foot. A probe (g) is introduced through this slit-like passage, and it is seen to pass out by the excurrent siphonal notch. It is through this passage, or indirectly through the pores of the gill-plates, that the water introduced into the lower sub-pallial space must pass on its way to the excurrent siphonal notch. Such a subdivision of the pallial chamber, and direction of the

Fia. 141. —The same animal as fig. 140, with its foot and siphons expanded. Letters asin fig. 140, (From Gegenbaur.)

currents set up within it do not exist in a number of Lamellibranchs which have the gill-lamellee comparatively free (Mytilus, Arca, Trigonia, &c.), and it is in these forms that there is least modification by concrescence of the pri- mary filamentous elements of the lamella. Probably the gill-structure of Lamellibranchs will ultimately furnish some classificatory

~~characters of value when they have been thoroughly investigated throughout the class.~~

~~The alimentary canal of Anodon is shown in fig. 124, (4). The mouth is placed between the anterior adductor and the foot ; the anus opens on a median papilla overlying the posterior adductor, and discharges into the superior pallial chamber along which the excurrent stream passes. The coil of the intestine in Anodon is similar to that of other Lamellibranchs, but the crystalline style and its diverticulum are not present here. The rectum traverses the pericardium, and has the ventricle of the heart wrapped, as it were, around it. This is not an unusual arrangement in Lamellibranchs, and a similar disposition occurs in some Gastropoda (Haliotis). A pair of ducts (az) lead from the first enlargement of the alimentary tract called stomach into a pair of large digestive glands, the so-called liver, the branches of which are closely packed in this region (af). The food of the Anodon, as of other Lamellibranchs, consists of microscopic animal and vegetable organisms, which are brought to the mouth by the stream which sets into the sub-pallial chamber at the lower siphonal notch (ein fig. 124). Probably a straining of water from solid~~

~~particles is effected by the lattice-work of the ctenidia or gill-plates. :~~

~~_ The heart of Anodon consists of a median ventricle em- bracing the rectum (fig. 143, A), and giving off an anterior and a posterior artery, and of two auricles which open into the ventricle by orifices protected by valves.~~

~~The blood is colourless, and has colourless amœboid corpuscles floating in it. In two Lamellibranchs, Solen (Ceratisolen) legumen and Arca Nox, the blood is crimson, owing to the presence of corpuscles impregnated with hemoglobin (Lankester, 31). In Anodon the blood is driven by the ventricle through the arteries into vessel- like spaces, which soon become irregular lacunze surround- ing the viscera, but in parts—e.g., the labial tentacles and walls of the gut—very fine vessels with endothelial cell- lining are found. The blood makes its way by large veins to a venous sinus which lies in the middle line be- low the heart, having the paired renal organs (nephridia) placed between it and that organ. Hence it passes through the~~

vessels of the glandular walls of the nephridia right and left into the gill-lamelle, whence it returns through many openings into the widely-stretched auricles. A great deal more pre- cision has been given to accounts of the structure of arteries, veins, and capillaries in Anodon than the facts warrant. The course of the blood- streain can only be some- what vaguely inferred ex- cept in its largest out- lines. Distinct arterial and venous channels can- not be distinguished in the gill-lamellz, in spite of what Langer (52) has written on the subject, though it is highly prob- able that there is some kind of circulation in the gills. In the filaments of the gill of Mytilus the tubular cavity is divided by a more or less complete fibrous septum into two channels, presumably for an ascending and a descend- ing blood-current. The ventricle and auricles of Anodon lie in a pericardium which is clothed with a pave- ment endothelium (d, fig. 143). Veins are said by Keber and others to open anteriorly into it, but this appears to be an error. It does not contain blood or communicate directly with the blood-system ; this isolation of the peri- cardium we have noted already in Gastropods and Cephalo- pods. A good case for the examination of the question as to whether blood enters the pericardium of Lamellibranchs, or escapes from the foot, or by the renal organs when the animal suddenly contracts, is furnished by the Solen legu- men, which has red blood-corpuscles. According to ob- servations made by Penrose (58) on an uninjured Solen legumen, no red corpuscles are to be seen in the pericardial space, although the heart is filled with them, and no such corpuscles are ever discharged by the animal when it is irritated.

The pair of nephridia of Anodon, called in Lamelli- branchs the organ of Bojanus, lie below the membranous floor of the pericardium, and open into it by two well- marked apertures (e and f in fig. 143). Each nephridium, after being bent upon itself as shown in fig. 143, ©, D, opens to the exterior by a pore placed at the point marked win fig. 124, (5), (6). It is no doubt possible, as in the

Fig. 142.—Vertical section through an Ano- donta, about the mid-region of the foot. m, mantle-flap; br, outer, b'r', inner gill-plate —each composed of two lamelle ; f, foot; v, ventricle of the heart; a, auricle; p, 7', pericardial cavity ; 4, intestine.

~~USCA~~

~~Gastropoda and Cephalopoda, for water to enter from the exterior by the nephridia into' the pericardium, but that it ever does so is as yet not proved. — What is certain from the set of the ciliary currents is that liquid generally~~

~~[LAMELLIBRANCHIA.~~

~~∀~~

~~Fic. 143.—Diagrams showing the relations of pericardium and nephridiain a Lamellibranch such as Anodon. A. Pericardium opened dorsally so as to expose the heart and the floor of the pericardial chamber d. 3B. HIeart removed and floor of the pericardium cut away on the left side so as to open the non-glandular sac of the nephridium, exposing the glandular sac 0, which is also cut into so as to show the get jf. ©. Ideal pericardium and nephridium viewed laterally. D. Lateral view showing the actual relation of the glandular and non-glandular sacs of the nephridium. The arrows indicate the course of fluid from the pericardium outwards. a, ventricle of the heart; b, auricle; bb, cut remnant of the auricle; c, dorsal wall of the pericardium cut and reflected; ¢, reno-pericardial orifice; f, probe introduced into the left reno-pericardial orifice ; g, non-glandular sa¢ of the left nephridium ; h, glandular sac of the left nephridium ; 4, pore leading from the glandular into the non-glandular sac of the left nephridium; k, pore leading from the non-glandular sac to the exterior ; ac, anterior, ab, posterior, cut remnants of the intestine and ventricle.~~

~~passes out of the pericardium by the nephridia. One half~~

~~of each nephridium is of a dark-green colour and glandular~~

~~(A in fig. 143). This opens into the reflected portion which~~

~~overlies it as shown in the diagram fig. 143, D,7; the latter~~

~~has non-glandular walls, and opens by the pore & to the exterior. The nephridia may be more ramified in other~~

~~*Lamellibranchs than they are in Anodon. In some they*~~

~~*are difficult to discover. That of the common oyster*~~

~~*has recently (1882) been detected by Hoek (54). Hach nephridium in the oyster is a pyriform sac, which commu- nicates by a narrow canal with the urino-genital groove*~~

~~*placed to the front of the great adductor muscle; by a*~~

~~*second narrow canal it communicates with the pericardium.*~~

~~*From all parts of the pyriform sac narrow stalk-like tubes*~~

~~*are given off, ending in abundant widely-spread branching*~~

~~*glandular cæca, which form the essential renal secreting apparatus. The genital duct opens by a pore into the urino-genital groove of the oyster (the same arrangement being repeated on each side of the body) close to but distinct from the aperture of the nephridial canal. Hence, except for the formation of a urino-genital groove, the apertures are placed as they are in Anodon, Previously to Hoek's discovery a brown-coloured investment of the auricles of the heart of the oyster had been supposed to represent the nephridia in a rudimentary state. This investment, which occurs also in Mytilus but not in Anodon, may pos- sibly consist of secreting cells, and may be comparable to the pericardial accessory glandular growths of Cephalopoda.*~~

~~*Nervous System and Sense-organs.—In Anodon there are three well-developed pairs of nerve-ganglia (fig. 144, B and fig. 124, (6)). An anterior pair, lying one on each side of the*~~

~~*mouth (fig. 144, B, a) and connected in front of it by a commissure, are the representatives of the cerebral, pleural, and visceral ganglia of the typical Mollusc, which are not here differentiated as they are in Gastropods (compare, however, fig. 67). A pair placed close together in the foot (fig.*~~

~~144, B, 6, and fig. C B A 124, (6), ax) are the typ- ical A am: nes 'ey are joined to the cerebro- = a pleuro- visceral ganglia ¢@ @ by connectives.~~

~~Posteriorly beneath the posterior adductors, and covered only by a thin layer of elongated epidermal cells, are the olfactory ganglia, their epidermal clothing con- stituting the pair of os- phradia, which are thus seen in Lamellibranchs to occupy their typical position and to have the A~~

~~typical innervation,—the 1a. 144,—Nerve-ganglia and cords of three~~

~~F nerve to each osphrad- Lamellibranchs (from Gegenbaur): 4, of ium being given off by Teredo; B, of Anodonta; C, of Pecten. a,~~

~~° 6 cerebral ganglion-pair (=cerebro-pleuro- the visceral ganglion — visceral); 6, pedal ganglion-pair; c, olfac-~~

~~that is to say, by the tory (osphradial) ganglion-pair.~~

~~undifferentiated cerebro-pleuro-visceral ganglion of its proper side. This identification of the posterior ganglion- Other~~

~~pair of Lamellibranchs is due to Spengel (11).~~

~~Fic. 145.—Pallial eye of Spondylus (from Hickson). a, pree-corneal epithe- lium ; 0b, cellular lens; c, retinal body; d, tapetum; ¢, pigment; f, retinal nerve; g, complementary nerve; h, epithelial cells filled with pigment; k, tentacle <~~

~~anatomists have considered this ganglion-pair as corre-~~

~~sponding to either the pleural or the visceral of Gastropoda,~~

~~or to both, and very usually it is termed "the parieto- splanchnic " (Huxley).~~

~~The sense-organs of Anodon other than the osphradia consist of a pair of otocysts attached to the pedal ganglia (fig. 124, (6), ay). The otocysts of Cyclas are peculiarly favourable for study on account of the transparency of the small foot in which they lie, and may be taken as typical of those of~~

~~*Lamellibranchs generally. The structure of one is exhibited in fig. 146. A single otolith is present as in the veliger embryos of Opisthobranchia. In adult Gastropoda there are frequently a large number of rod-like otoliths instead of one.*~~

~~*Anodon has no eyes of any sort, and the tentacles on the mantle edge are limited to its posterior border. This deficiency is very usual in the class; at the same time, many Lamellibranchs have tentacles on the edge of the mantle supplied by a pair of large well-developed nerves, which are given off from the cerebro-pleuro-visceral ganglion-pair,*~~

~~*and very frequently some of these tentacles have undergone a special metamorphosis converting them into highly- organized eyes. Such eyes on the mantle-edge are found in Pecten, Spondylus, Lima, Ostrea (1), Pinna, Pectunculus, Modiola, Mytilus (?), Cardium, : Tellina, ¢ | Mactra, Venus, Solen, Pholas, and Ga*~~

~~*leomma. They are totally distinct from the cephalic eyes of typical Mollusca, and have a different structure and historical de- velopment. They have not originated as pits but as tentacles. They agree with the dorsal eyes of Onchidium (Pulmonata) in the curious fact that the optic nerve pene- trates the capsule of the eye and passes in front of the retinal body (fig. 145), so that its fibres join the anterior faces of the nerve-end cells as in Vertebrates, instead of their posterior faces as in the cephalic eyes of Mollusca and Arthropoda; moreover, the lens is not a cuticular product but a cellular structure, which, again, is a feature of agreement with the Vertebrate eye. It must, however, be distinctly borne in mind that there is a fundamental difference between the eye of Verte- brates and of all other groups in the fact that in the Vertebrata the retinal body is itself a part of the central nervous system, and not a separate modification of the epidermis—myelonic as opposed to epidermic. The struc- ture of the reputed eyes of several of the above-named genera has not been carefully examined. In Pecten and Spondylus, however, they have been fully studied (see fig. 145, and explanation).*~~

~~The gonads of Anodon are placed in distinct male and female individuals. In some Lamellibranchs—for instance, the European Oyster and the Pisidium pusillum—the sexes are united in the same individual; but here, as in most hermaphrodite animals, the two sexual elements are not ripe in the same individual at the same moment. It has been conclusively shown that the Ostrea edulis does not fertilize itself. The American Oyster (0. virginiana) and the Portuguese Oyster (O. angulata) have the sexes separate, and fertilization is effected in the open water after the discharge of the ova and the spermatozoa from the females and males respectively. In the Ostrea edulis fertil- ization of the eggs is effected at the moment of their escape from the uro-genital groove, or even before, by means of spermatozoa drawn into the sub-pallial chamber by the in- current ciliary stream, and the embryos pass through the early stages of development whilst entangled between the gill-lamellee of the female parent (fig. 6). In Anodon the eggs pass into the space between the two lamelle of the outer gill-plate, and are there fertilized, and advance whilst~~

~~Fic. 146.—Otocyst of Cyclas (from Gegenbaur). C, capsule; e,ciliated cells lining the same ; 0, otolith.~~

~~Fie. 147.—Two stages in the development of Anodonta (from Balfour). Both figures represent the glochidium stage. A, when free swimming, shows the two dentigerous valves widely open. B, a later stage, after fixture to the fin ofafish. sh, shell; ad, adductor muscle; s, teeth of the shell; by, byssus ; a.ad, anterior adductor ; p.ad, posterior adductor ; mt, mantle-flap ; J, foot ; br, branchial filaments ; au.v, otocyst; al, alimentary canal.~~

~~still in this position to the glochidium phase of develop- ment (fig. 147). They may be found here in thousands in the summer and autumn months. The gonads them-~~

~~selves are extremely simple arborescent glands which open to the exterior by two simple ducts, one right and one~~

~~left. continuous with the wall of the tubular branches of the gland (fig. 124, (5), (6); 9). In no Lamellibranch is there a divergence from this structure,~~

~~*excepting that in some (Ostrea) the contiguous nephridial and the genital aperture are sunk in a urino-genital groove, which in other cases (Spondylus?) may partially close up so as to con- stitute a single pore for the nephridial and genital ducts. No accessory genital glands are present. The development of Anodon is remarkable for the curious*~~

~~*larval form knownasGlochidium (fig. 147). The Glochidium*~~

~~*<> Wy 6 De o's SO-p Oxo + eto dt*~~

~~*Fig. 148.—Embryos of Pisidium pusillum (after Lankester). A. Only four embryonic cells are present, still enclosed in the egg envelope. B. The cells have multiplied and commenced to invaginate, forming a blastopore or orifice of invagination, bl.*~~

~~*quits the gill-pouch of its parent and swims by alternate opening and shutting of the valves of its shell, as do adult Pecten and Lima, trailing at the same time a long*~~

~~*Fia. 149.—Embryo of Pisidiwm pusillum in the diblastula stage, surface view (after Lankester). The embryo has increased in size by accumulation of moa between the outer and the invaginated cells. The blastopore has closed.*~~

~~*Fic. 150.—B. Same embryo as fig. 149, in optical median section, showing the invaginated cells hy which form the arch-enteron, and the mesoblastic cells me which are budded off from the surface of the mass hy, and apply them- selves to the inner surface of the deric or epiblastic cell-layer ep. C. The same embryo focused so as to show the mesoblastic cells which immediately underlie the outer cell-layer.*~~

~~*byssus thread. By this it is brought into contact with the fin of a fish, such as Perch, Stickleback, or others, and effects*~~

~~*MOLLUSCA*~~

~~*a hold thereon by means of the toothed edge of its shells. HIere it becomes encysted, and is nourished by the exuda- tions of the fish. organs has been*~~

~~*traced by the late Professor Balfour, but no one has followed it to the moment at which it drops from the fish's fin and assumes the form of shell characteristic of the parent. sphere larva which becomes a Veliger, differing only from the Gastropod's and Pteropod's Veliger in having bilateral shell-calcifications instead of a single central one; or, like Anodon, they may develop within the gill-plates of the mother, though without presenting such a specialized larva as the Glochidium. An example of the former is seen in the*~~

~~*| LAMELLIBRANCHIA.*~~

~~*A distinct development of its internal*~~

~~*Other Lamellibranchs exhibit either a trocho-*~~

~~*T Fic. 151.—Further stages in the development of Pisidiwm pusillum (after Lankester). A. Optical section of an embryo in which the foot has begun to develop. B. The same embryo focused to its surface plane to show the mouth o. C. Later embryo, showing the shell-gland sh. D. Lateral view of the same embryo. E. Later stage, with rudiments of the mantle-flap, lateral view. F. Still later stage, with shell-valves and branchial filaments. ep, epiblast ; me, mesoblast ; al, met-enteron ; rp, rectal peduncle or pedicle of*~~

~~*invagination connecting the met-enteron with the cicatrix of the blastopore ; o, mouth; ph, pharynx; sh, shell-gland; mn, mantle-flap; br, branchial filaments ; y, granular cells of doub significance ; v, vesicular structure of unknown significance. development of the European Oyster, to the figure of which and its explanation the reader is specially referred (fig. 6). An example of the latter is seen in a common little fresh-water bivalve, the Pisidiwm pusillum, which has been studied by Lankester (12). The successive stages of the development of this Lamellibranch are illustrated in the woodcuts figs. 148 to 153 inclusive. These should be compared with the figures of Gastropod development (figs. 3, 4, 5, 7, and 72***), Fig, 148 shows the cleavage of the egg-cell into four (A), and at a later stage the tucking in of some of the cells to form an invaginated series (B).*~~

~~*MOL—MOL*~~

~~The embryonic cells continue to divide, and form an oval vesicle containing liquid (fig. 149); within this, at one pole, is seen the mass of invaginated cells (fig. 150, hy). These invaginated cells are the arch-enteron ; they proliferate and give off branching cells, which apply themselves (fig. 150, C) to the inner face of the vesicle, thus forming the meso-~~

~~Fic. 152.—Diagram of embryo of Pisidium in the same stage as E in fig. 151. m, mouth; jf, foot; ph, pharynx; gs, met-enteron; pi, rectal peduncle or pedicle of invagination ; shs, shell-gland. (From Lankester.)~~

~~blast or coelomic outgrowths. The outer single layer of cells which constitutes the surface of the vesicle (fig. 147) is the ectoderm or epiblast or deric cell-layer. The little mass of hypoblast or enteric cell-mass now en- larges, but remains con- nected with the cicatrix of the blastopore or orifice of invagination by a stalk, the rectal peduncle (fig. 151, A, rp). The enteron itself be- comes bilobed and is joined by a new invagination, that of the mouth and stomo- deum, ph. Fig. 151, B® shows the origin of the mouth o, being a deeper view of the same specimen Fic. 153.—Diagram of embryo of Pisidium, in the same position which ister)' n snouth ; % anus; foot; br, is drawn in fig. 151, A. banchlal haments: mn, nigrpin of he The mesoblast multiplies phridium). The unshaded area gives its cells, which become the position of the shell-valve.~~

~~partly muscular and partly skeleto-trophic. Centro-dor- sally now appears the embryonic shell-gland (fig. 151, ©, sh). The pharynx or stomodeum is still small, the foot not yet prominent. A later stage is seen in fig. 152, where the pharynx is widely open and the foot pro- minent. No ciliated velum or pre-oral (cephalic) lobe ever develops. The shell-gland disappears, the mantle- skirt is raised as a ridge (fig. 151, E, mn), the paired shell-valves are secreted, the anus opens by a proctodeal ingrowth into the rectal peduncle, and the rudiments of the gills (6r) and of the nephridia (B) appear (figs. 151, F, and 153, dorsal and lateral views of same stage), and thus the chief organs and general form of the adult are~~

~~acquired. Later changes, not drawn here, consist in the growth of the shell-valves over the whole area of the mantle-flaps, and in the multiplication of~~

~~*the gill-fila- ments and their consolidation to form gill-plates. It is important to note that the gill-filaments are formed one by one posteriorly. The labial tentacles are formed late. In the allied genus Cyclas, a byssus gland is formed in the foot and subsequently disappears, but no such gland occurs in Pisidium. The nerve-ganglia and the otocysts probably form from thickenings of the epiblast, but detailed observation on this and other points of histogenesis in the Lamellibranchia is still wanting.*~~

~~*List of Memoirs, &c., referred to by numbers in the preceding article.—{1) G. Cuvier, Mémoires pour servir a U'histoire et & Vanatomie des Mollusques, Paris, 1816. | (2) J. Poli, Testacea utriusque Siciliz, eorumque historia et anatome, tabulis aeneis 49 illustrata, vols. i.-iii., fol., Parma, 1791-1795 and 1826-1827. (3) St delle Chiaje, Memorie sulla storia e notomia degli animali senza vertebre del regno di Napoli, Naples, 1823-1829; new edit. with 172 plates, fol., 1843. (4) J. Vaughan Thompson, Zoological Researches, Cork, 1830; memoir iv., "On the Cirripedes or Barnacles, demonstrating their deceptive character." (5) A. Kowalewsky, "Entwickelungsgeschichte der einfachen Ascidien," in Mém. de UAcad. des Sciences de St Pétersbourg, 1866, and 'Entwickelungsgeschichte des Anphioxus lanceolatus," ibid., 1867. (6) J. Vaughan Thompson, Zoological Researches, Cork, 1830; memoir v., "Polyzoa, a new animal discovered as an inhabitant of some Zoophytes." (7) C. G. Ehrenberg, Die Korallenthiere des Rothen Meeres, Berlin, 1834 (Abhand. d. k. Akad. d. Wissenschaften in Berlin, 1832). (8) H. Milne-Edwards, Recherches anatomiques physiologiques et zoolo- giques sur les Polypiers de France, Paris, 1841-1844. (9) W. H. Caldwell, 'On the development of Phoronis," Proc. Roy. Soc., 1882. (10) Richard Owen, Memoir on the Pearly Nautilus, London, 1832. (11) T. H. Huxley, "On the morphology of the cephalous Mollusca," Phil. Trans., 1858. (12) E. Ray Lankester, "Con- tributions to the developmental history of the Mollusca," Phil. Trans., 1875. (13) E. Ray Lankester, "Notes on Embryology and Classification," Quart. Journ. Microsc. Sc., 1877. (14) J. Carriére,"Das Wassergefass-System d. Lamelli-branchiaten u. Gastropoden," Zoolog. Anzeiger, 1881, No. 90. (15) E. Ray Lankester, " Development of the Pond-Snail," Quart. Journ. Microsc. Sc., 1874, and "Shell-gland of Cyclas and Planula of Limneus," ibid., 1876. (16) R. Horst, "Development of the European Oyster," Quart. Journ. Microsc. Sc., 1882, p. 341. (17) E. Ray Lankester, "Coincidence of the*~~

~~*blastopore and anus in Paludina," Quart. Journ. Microsc. Sc., 1876. (18) Id., " Zoological Observations made at Naples," Annals and Mag. Nat. Hist., February, 1873. (19) W. K. Brooks, "Development of the American Oyster," Report of the Commissioners of Fisheries of Maryland, 1880. (20) Henri Milne-Edwards, Papers in the Annales des Sciences Natwrelles, 1841-1860. (21) H. de Lacaze Duthiers, Papers in the Annales des Sciences Natwrelles, e.g., '*' Anomia" (1854), ** Mytilus" (1856), " Dentalium " (1856, 1857), " Purpura " (1859), " Haliotis " (1859), " Vermetus" (1860). (22) A. Kolliker, Entwickelungsgeschichte der Cephalopoden, Zurich, 1844. (23) C. Gegenbaur, Untersuchungen viber Pteropoden und Hetero- poden, Leipsic, 1855. (24) J. W. Spengel, " Dic Geruchsorgane und das Nerven-system der Mollusken," Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., 1881. (25) A. A. W. Hubrecht, "On Proneomenia Shuteri nov. gen. et sp., with remarks upon the anatomy and histology of the Amphineura," Niederldndisches Archiv fiir Zoologie, supple- ment volume, 1881. (26) Adam Sedgwick, "On certain points in the anatomy of Chiton," Proc. Roy. Soc. Lond., 1881. (27) E. Ray Lankester, "On some undescribed points in the anatomy of the Limpet," Annals and Mag. Nat. History, 1867; J. T. Cunningham, "The Renal Organs of Patella," Quart. Journ. Microsc. Sc., 1888. (28) P. Fraisse, " Veber Molluskenaugen mit embryonalem Typus," Zettschr. f. wiss. Zool., 1881. (29) L. v. Graff, " Veber Rhodope Veranti, KOll.," Morpholog. Jahrb., vol. viii. (80) H. Simroth, " Das Fussnervensystem der Paludina vivipara," Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., 1881. (81) E. Ray Lankester, '*A contribution to the knowledge of Hemoglobin," Proc. Roy. Soc. Lond., 1873. (32) H. de Lacaze Duthiers, "Du systeme nerveux des Mollusques Gasteropodes Pulmonés aquatiques et d'un nouvel organe d'innervation," Arch. de Zoologie expérimentale, vol. i. (33) C. Semper, Animal Life (for eye of Onchidium, 'p. 371), International Scientific series, 1881. (34) Same as number 18. (85) E. Ray Lankester, "' Observations on the development of the Cephalo- poda," Quart. Jowrn. Microsc. Sc., 1875. (36) J. van der Hoeven, " Bijdrage tot de outleedkundige kennis aangaaende Nautilus pompilius," Verhandl. d. K. Akad. v. Wet. Naturk., Amsterdam, 1856. (87) E. Ray Lankester and A. G. Bourne, "On the existence of Spengel's olfactory organ and of paired genital ducts in the Pearly Nautilus," Quart. Journ. Microsc. Sc., 1883. (88) J. W. Vigelius, "Ueber das Excretions-System der Cephalopoden," Niederldndisches Archiv fiir Zoologie, bd. v., 1880. (89) Albany Hancock, "On the nervous system of Ommastrephes todarus," Annals and Mag. Nat.*~~

~~*Hist., 1852. (40) J. D. slacdonald, 'On the anatomy of Nautilus wmbilicatus," Phil. Trans. of Roy. Soc. Lond., 1855. (41) V. Hensen, " Ueber das Auge einiger Cephalopoden," Zettschr. f. wiss. Zool., 1865. (42) A. d'Orbigny, Mollusques vivants et fossiles, t. 1. (Cephalopodes acétabuliferes), Paris, 1845 (with 36 plates). (43) Bobretzky, "On the development of the Cephalopoda," Trans. of Soc. of Friends of Nat. Hist. of Moscow, vol. xxiv. (Russian). (44) T. H. Huxley, "Oviducts of the Smelt," Proc. Zool. Soc. Lond., 1883. (45) Same as 35. (46) F. M. Balfour, Comparative Embryology, vols. i. and ii., London, 1881-1882. (47) H. Gries- bach, *' Ueber das Gefass-System und die Wasseraufnahme bei den Najaden und Mytiliden," Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., 1883. (48) Same as 14. (49) Same as 13. (50) R. Holman Peck, "The structure of the Lamellibranchiate gill," Quart. Journ. of Microsc. Sc., 1876. (51) K. Mitsukuri, "Structure and significance of some aberrant forms of Lamellibranchiate gills," Quart. Journ. Microsc. Sc., 1881. (52) K. Langer, "Das Gefass-System der Teichmussel," Denk. kais. Akad. d. Wissensch., Vienna, 1855-1856. (53) J. Penrose, in " Report of the Committee on the Zoological Station of Naples," British Assoc. Report, 1882. (54) P. P. C. Hoek, " Les organes de la génération de l'huitre," Journ. de la Soc. Néerlandaise de Zool., 1883, (E. R. L.)*~~

~~*MOLLUSCOIDS. See Bracuiopops and PoLyzoa. MOLOCH, or Moteen—in Hebrew, with the doubtful*~~

~~*exception of 1 Kings xi. 7, always 70 with the article— is the name or title of the divinity which the men of Judah*~~

~~*in the last ages of the kingdom were wont to propitiate by the sacrifice of their own children. The phrase employed in speaking of these sacrifices is "to make one's son or daughter pass through fire to the Moloch" (2 Kings xxiii.*~~

~~*696*~~

~~*10; Jer. xxxii. 35, and so without the words "through fire" Lev. xviii. 21); but it appears from Ezek. xvi. 20, 21 that this phrase denotes a human holocaust,' and not, as sometimes has been thought, a mere consecration to Moloch by passing through or between fires, as in the Roman Palilia and*~~

~~similar rites elsewhere. HIuman sacrificcs were com- mon in Semitic heathenism, and at least the idea of such sacrifices was not unknown to Israel in early times (Isaac, Jephthah's daughter), though in the sunny days of the nation, when religion was a joyous thing, there is no reason to think that they were actually practised.? It was otherwise in the neighbouring nations, and in par- ticular we learn from 2 Kings iii. 27 that the piacular sacrifice of his son and heir was the last offering which the king of Moab made to deliver his country. Even the HIebrew historian ascribes to this act the effect of rousing divine indignation against the invading host of Israel ; it is not, therefore, surprising that under the miseries brought on Palestine by the westward march of the Assyrian power, when the old gladness of Israel's faith was swallowed up in a crushing sense of divine anger, the idea of the sacrifice of one's own son, as the most powerful of atoning rites, should have taken hold of those kings of Judah (Ahaz and Manasseh, 2 Kings xvi. 3, xxi. 6) who were otherwise prone, in their hopelessness of help from the old religion (Isa. vii. 12), to seek to strange peoples and their rites. Ahaz's sacrifice of his son (which indeed rests on a somewhat late authority) must have been an isolated act of despair; human sacrifices are not among the corruptions of the popular religion spoken of by Isaiah and Micah. But in the 7th century, when the old worship had sustained rude shocks, and all religion was transformed into servile fear (Micah vi. 1 sg. belongs to this period; see Mrcan), the example of Manasseh spread to his people ; and Jeremiah and Ezekiel make frequent and indignant reference to the "high places" for the sacrifice of children by their parents which rose beneath the very walls of the temple from the gloomy ravine of HInnom or Tophet*® (Jer. vii. 31, xix., xxxii. 35; Ezek. xvi. 20, xxiii, 37). It is with these sacrifices that the name of "the Moloch" is always connected; sometimes "the Baal" (lord) appears as a synonym. At the same time, the horrid ritual was so closely associated with Jehovah worship (Ezek. xxiii. 39) that Jeremiah more than once finds it necessary to protest that it is not of Jehovah's institution (vii. 31, xix. 5). So too it is the idea of sacrificing the firstborn to Jehovah that is discussed and rejected in Micah vi. It is indeed plain that such a sacrifice—for we have here to do, not with human victims in general, but with the sacrifice of the dearest earthly thing—could only be paid to the supreme deity; and Manasseh and his people never ceased to acknowledge Jehovah as the God of Israel, though they sought to make~~

~~their worship more efficacious by the adoption of foreign rites. Thus the way in which Jeremiah, and after him~~

~~1 Tn 2 Chron. xxviii. 3 (parallel to 2 Kings xvi. 3) a single letter is transposed in thephrase, changing the sense from "caused to pass through the fire" to " caused to burn with fire." Geiger (Urschrift und Ueber-setzung, p. 805) very unnecessarily supposes that this is everywhere the original reading, and has been changed to soften the enormity ascribed to the ancient Hebrews. The phrase "to give one's seed to Moloch," Lev. xx. 2 sg., and the fact that these victims were (like other sacrifices) regarded as food for the deity (Ezek. xvi. 20) explain and justify the common reading.~~

~~2 In Hosea xiii. 2 the interpretation "they that sacrifice men" ig improbable, and 2 Kings xvii. 17 and Lev. xviii., xx. are of too late date to prove the immolation of children to Moloch in old Israel. The "ban » (BIN), which was a religious execution of criminals or enemies, was common to Israel with its heathen neighbours (stone of Mesha), but lacked the distinctive character of a sacrifice in which the pos is the food of the deity, conveyed to him through fire.~~

~~The etymology of the word Tophet is obscure; its meaning appears from tophteh, "pyre," Isa, xxx. 33.~~

~~MOL—MOL~~

~~the legislation of Leviticus and the author of Kings, seem to mark out the Moloch or Baal as a false god, distinct from Jehovah, is precisely parallel to the way in which Hosea speaks of the golden calves or Baalim. In each case the people thought themselves to be worshipping Jehovah under the title of Moloch or Baal; but the prophet refuses to admit that this is so, because the worship itself is of heathenish origin and character. "The Moloch," in fact, like 'the Baal," is not the proper name of a deity, but a honorific title, as appears from the use of the article with it. According to the Hebrew consonants, it might simply be read "the king," which is a common appellation for the supreme deity of a Semitic state or tribe. And so the LXX., except in 2 Kings xxiii. 10, and perhaps Jer. xxxii. 35, actually treat the name as an appellative ("ruler," "rulers"). The traditional pronuncia- tion, which goes back as far as the LXX. version of Kings~~

~~(Mod6x), appears to mean "the kingship"—an unsuitable sense, which lends probability to the conjecture that the old form was simply "the king," and that the later Jews gave it the vowels of NWa, the contemptuous name for Baal (G. Hoffman in 7. f. AT.W., 1883, p. 124).~~

~~From these arguments it would appear that the rise of Moloch worship does not imply the introduction into the religion of Judah of an altogether new deity, but only a heathenish development of Jehovah worship, in the familiar fashion of religious syncretism, and under that sense of the inadequacy of the old popular ritual to divert the wrath of the Godhead which was inspired by the calamities of the nation in the 7th century B.c., and led to more than one new development of atoning ritual. The key to the phenomenon is to be found in Micah vi., not in any vein of mythological speculation as to the forces of nature, such as is supposed in Movers's theory that Moloch represents the fiery destructive power of the sun. Moloch, in fact, in the Old Testament has no more to do with fire than any other deity. The children offered to him were not burned alive ; they were slain and burned like any other holocaust (Ezek. ut supra; Isa. lvii. 5); their blood was shed at the sanctuary (Jer. xix. 4; Ps. cvi. 38). Thus the late Rabbinical picture of the calf-headed brazen image of Moloch within which children were burned alive is pure fable, and with it falls the favourite comparison between Moloch and the Carthaginian idol from whose brazen arms children were rolled into an abyss of fire, and whom Diodorus (xix. 14) naturally identifies with the child-eater Kronos, thus leading many moderns to make Moloch the planet Saturn. On the other hand, the Massoretic text of 1 Kings xi. 7 makes Moloch (without the article) the name of the god of the Ammonites, elsewhere called Milcom or Malecam. But in this place the LXX. translators certainly found the longer form orb in their MSS. (as the Hebrew still reads in verse 33), while it is plain from 2 Kings xxiii. 10, 13 that the worship of Milcom at the shrine set up by Solomon was distinct from the much later Moloch worship of Tophet. In the usual printed text of the LXX., indeed, this distinction is not made in 2 Kings xxiii.; but this is an error of the Roman edition, the Vatican MS. really reading MOAXOA in verse 13.~~

~~(Ww. RB. 8.)~~

~~*MOLUCCAS, Motuwecos, or Spice Isutanps, THE, com- prise, in the wider use of the term, all the islands of the East Indian Archipelago between Celebes on the west, the Papuan Islands and New Guinea on the east, Timor on the south, and the open Pacific on the north. They are*~~

~~*4 Compare the Tyrian Melkart (king of the city) and the two names compounded with melek, "king," in 2 Kings xvii. 31. These latter cases are specially instructive, because Adrammelech and Anna- melech were also worshipped by the sacrifice of children.*~~

~~*thus distributed over an area measuring about 450 miles from east to west, and about 800 from north to south, and include—(1) the Moluccas proper or Ternate group, of which Jilolo is the largest and Ternate the capital; (2) the Bat- chian, Obi, and Sula groups ; (3) the Ambon or Amboyna group, of which Ceram (Serang) and Buru are the largest ; (4) the Banda Islands (the spice or nutmeg islands par excellence), of which Lantoir or Great Banda is the largest, and Neira politically the most important; (5) the south- eastern islands, comprising Tenimber or Timor-Laut, Larat, &c.; (6) the Kei Islands and the Aru Islands, of which the former are sometimes attached to the south- eastern group; and (7) the south-western islands or the Babber, Sermatta, Letti, Wetter, Roma, and Damme groups. At the close of the 16th century this part of the archi- pélago was divided among four rulers settled at Ternate, Tidore, Jilolo, and Batchian. The northern portion be- longs to the Dutch residentship of Ternate, the southern portion to that of Amboyna.*~~

~~*The name Moluccas seems to be probably derived from the Arabic for "king." Argensola (1609) uses the forms aslas Malucas, Maluco, and el Maluco; Coronel (1623), islas del Moluco; and Camoens, Afaluco.*~~

~~*Compare the articles on INDIAN ARCHIPELAGO, Aru IsLANDs, JILOLO, TERNATE, &c., and J. J. de Hollander, Handleiding bij de Beoefening der Land- en Volkenkunde von Ned. Oost. Indié, Breda, 1877 and 1882.*~~

~~*MOLYBDENUM, one of the rarer metallic elements (symbol for atomic weight, Mo=96; H=1), occurs in nature chiefly in the two forms of Yellow Lead Ore (PbOMoO,) and Molybdenite (MoS,). The latter mineral is very*~~

~~similar in appearance and in mechanical properties to graphite or black lead, and, in fact, was long confounded with it chemically, until Scheele in 1778 and 1779 proved their difference by showing that only the mineral now called molybdenite yields a white earth on oxidation. The metallic radical of the earth, after its discovery by HIjelm, was called molybdenum, from pdAvfdos, lead.~~

~~By heating molybdenite in a combustion tube in a current of air, we obtain the trioxide MoO, (molybdic acid) as a white crystalline sublimate. This substance, when heated to redness in close vessels, fuses without much volatilization into a yellow liquid, which, on cooling, freezes into a crystalline radiated mass of 4°39 specific gravity. It dissolves in 500 parts of cold, and in 960 of hot water. It dissolves readily in aqueous ammonia or alkalies, form- ing molybdates. Like silica, it combines with bases in a great variety of proportions. Of these many salts, an ammonia salt of the composition 3(NH,),0.7Mo0,+4H,O (known in laboratory parlance simply as molybdate of ammonia) is the most important, affording, as it does, the most delicate, characteristic, and widely applicable precipitant for ortho-phosphoric acid. To detect phos- phoric acid in any substance soluble in water or nitric acid, add first toa solution of molybdate of ammonia an excess of nitric acid, and then (not too much) of the nitric solution of the phosphate, and keep the mixture at 40° C.; the whole of the phosphoric acid gradually separates out in the shape of a canary-yellow crystalline precipitate of "phospho-molybdate of ammonia," of the composition~~

~~24MoO,. P,O,. 8(NH,),0 BAO. P,0.. ONTO. oj e~~

~~(according to Gibbs), which is insoluble in the reagent, even in the presence of dilute nitric acid, but soluble in excess of phosphoric acid. By treatment of this complex ammonia salt with aqua regia we can eliminate its acid 24MoO,. P,O;.3H.O as a substance soluble in water and crystallizing from this solution with 59 molecules of water,~~

~~This phospho-molybdic acid plays a great part in chemical toxi- cology, being a generically characteristic precipitant for all (organic) alkaloids, which combine with it, pretty much as ammonia does, into precipitates insoluble in dilute mineral acids. A solution of the acid sufficient for this purpose may be obtained by saturating carbonate of soda solution with~~

~~molybdic acid, adding phosphate of soda, one part for every five of MoO;, evaporating to dryness, fusing, dissolving in water, filtering, and adding nitric acid until the liquid becomes yellow.~~

~~Metallic molybdenum is obtained by reduction of the trioxide in hydrogen gas at very high temperatures. It is thus obtained in small crystalline granules which are infusible even in the oxy- hydrogen flame. An alloy of the metal with four or five per cent.~~

~~of carbon (formerly accepted as molybdenum) fuses in the oxy- hydrogen flame into a silver-white metal, of 8°6 specific gravity, which is harder than topaz (Debray).~~

~~Analysis.—Molybdenum in all its forms is readily converted into molybdic acid by oxidizing agents, such as nitric acid ; or if in non- volatile forms into alkaline molybdate by fusion with carbonate of alkali and nitre. Alkaline molybdate is soluble in water; the solution, on a gradual addition of hydrochloric acid, gives first a white precipitate, which then dissolves in the excess of acid. When a piece of zinc is added to such a solution, the latter, through gradual reduction of its MoO, to lower oxides, assumes first a blue, then a green, and lastly a deep blackish-brown colour. Molybdic acid colours the blowpipe flame yellowish green. It dissolves in fused borax, forming a head which in the oxidizing flame becomes yellow in the heat, but almost colourless on cooling ; the reducing flame colours it dark brown, and may cause the separation of brown flakes of MoO,. Compare Cuumisrky, vol. v. pp. 541, 542.~~

~~MOMBASA, or less correctly Momsas, the Jwita of the Sawahili, a town on the east coast of Africa, in 4° 4' S. lat., with the best harbour on all the Zanzibar mainland. The coralline island of which it occupies the eastern portion is 3 miles long by 23 broad, and lies in the middle of adouble inlet of the sea stretching northward into Port Tudor (so called after the English officer who surveyed it) and westward into Port Reitz (after the English resident who died while exploring the Pangani river in 1823). Except at the western end, the coast of the island consists of cliffs from 40 to 60 feet high. In the vicinity of the town palms, mangoes, guavas, baobabs, and~~

~~*cinnamon-trees flourish abundantly, and farther to the west are stretches of virgin forest, the haunt of monkeys, wild hogs, and hyenas. The citadel, originally constructed by Xeixas and Cabrera in 1635, still remains in good condition, "a picturesque yellow pile with long buttressed curtains," but has preserved little of its Portuguese architecture. Of the twenty Portuguese churches which Mombasa once contained, only two or three can be identified. A few of the houses are built of stone, but most of them are mere thatched huts. The population in 1844 was, according to Dr Krapf, from 8000 to 10,000, mostly Wasawahili, but with a considerable number of Arabs and some thirty or forty Banyans. In 1857 Burton estimated the inhabitants at 8000 to 9000, and in 1883 they numbered about 20,000. The Arabs, the Wamwita, and the Wakilindini (the two divisions of the Wasawahili residents, of which the former is the original stock) have each their own chief. In 1875-76 the Church Missionary Society, which made Mombasa one of its stations in 1844, established a settlement for liberated slaves at Freretown (Kisauni) on the mainland, opposite Mombasa. By 1881 it consisted of about 450 persons, of whom about one-fourth were children attending school. The pupils are taught to read both English and Sawahili (Ch. Miss. Intelligencer, 1875-76 and 1881), A branch station at Rabbai numbers 600 inhabitants.*~~

~~*Mombasa takes its name from. Mombasa in Oman. It is men- tioned by Ibn Battta in 1331 as a large place, and at the time of Vasco da Gaina's visit it was the residence of Calicut Banyans and Christians of St Thomas, and the seat of considerable commerce. The "king" of the city, however, tried to entrap Da Gama, and with this began a series of troubles which give full force to the native name JJwita (war). The principal incidents are the capture and burning of the place by Almeyda (1505), Nuno da Cunha (1529), and Duarte de Menezes (1587)—this last as a revenge for its submission to the sultan of Constantinople—the building of the Portuguese fort (1594), the revolt of Yusuf ibn Ahmed (1631), the erection of the Portuguese citadel (1635), the five years' siege by the imani of Oman (1660-65), and the final expulsion of the Portuguese (1698). In 1823 the Mazara family, who had ruled in Mombasa from the early part of the 18th century, placed the city under British protection ; but Britain soon withdrew, and left the place to be bombarded and captured by Sayyid Said*~~

~~of Zanzibar, who was obliged to make repeated attacks between 1829 and 1833, and only got possession in 1834 by treachery. A revolt against Zanzi-~~

~~bar in 1875 was put down by British assistance.~~

~~See Capt. W. F. W. Owen, Narrative, &c. (1833); Capt. Thomas Boteler, Narrative, &c. (1835); Guillain, Voyage, (Paris, 1856); Krapf, Travels, (1860) ; Burton, Zanzibar, (1872).~~

~~XVI. — 88~~

~~HE word Monachism, or Monasticism, primarily mean- ing the act of "dwelling alone" (povaxds, povagery, pévos), has come, by an easy and natural transition, to denote the corporate life of religious communities living a life of poverty, celibacy, and obedience, under a fixed rule of discipline. The root-idea of monachism, in all its varieties of age, creed, and country, is the same— namely, retirement from society in search of some ideal of life which society cannot supply, but which is thought attainable by abnegation of self and withdrawal from the world. 'This definition applies to all the forms of monachism which have left their mark on history, whether amongst Brahmans, Buddhists, Jews, Christians, Moslems, or the communistic societies of the present day, even when theoretically anti-theological.~~

~~This broad general conception of monachism is differ- enced in the following ways :—It may take the form of absolute separation, so far as practicable, from all human intercourse, so as to give the whole life to solitary con- templation—the anchoretic type ; or, contrariwise, it may seek fellowship with kindred spirits in a new association for the same common end—the ccenobitic type; it may abandon society as incurably corrupt, as a City of De struction out of which the fugitive must flee absolutely— the Oriental view, for the most part; or it may consider itself as having a mission to influence and regenerate society—which has been, on the whole, and with minor exceptions, the Western theory of the monastic life.~~

~~*The question has been warmly debated whether mona- chism be an evil or a good,—whether a natural, perhaps a necessary, part of Christianity (as being, indeed, the strict logical issue of the triple vow of baptism, literally construed), or a foreign element introduced into it with unfortunate results, and rather an excrescence on its system than an orderly and healthy development. Unlike many other institutions which have needed the lapse of centuries and the gradual approach of decay and degeneracy to show their weak places, monachism in its Christian form displays some of its most unlovely features while yet almost in its cradle, whereas not a few of its best achieve- ments belong to a late period in its history; and it has throughout displayed a singular elasticity and power of taking a fresh departure, after seeming to have exhausted its energies. Its champions and its opponents have thus always had ample materials for their briefs, and there is little probability of the controversy ever coming to an end. But the most philosophical mode of viewing its relation to Christianity is to recognize that monachism has made a part of every creed which has attained a certain stage of ethical and theosophical development ; that there is a class of minds for which it has always had a powerful attrac- tion, and which can otherwise find no satisfaction ; and consequently that Christianity, if it is to make good its claim to be a universal religion, must provide expression for a principle which is as deeply seated in human nature as domesticity itself, albeit limited to a much smaller sec- tion of mankind.*~~

~~*Three main factors combined to produce the phenomenon of monachism in early Christianity, each of them set in motion by the general dissolution of morals in the pagan society of the time, of which we get a sufficient glimpse from the Christian standpoint in the first chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, and from the pagan standpoint in the sixth Satire of Juvenal. These three factors were—(1) the Oriental tendency towards retirement, contemplation, and asceticism, influencing the infant Christian church through the agency of those Jewish ascetics, the Essenes*~~

~~*and Therapeute, who had begun long before the gospel times both the solitary and the common life in Palestine and Egypt, and who probably contributed many converts to Christianity, and became practically merged therein, as they disappear from history in the first century of the Christian era; (2) the Hellenic teaching of the Alexandrine Neo-Platonists on the*~~

~~*purification of the intellect by absten- tion from physical indulgence ; and (3), perhaps a more powerful influence than either, that old Roman spirit of austerity and discipline which, while looking back regret- fully to the memories of the simpler habits of republican times, could find nothing amidst the social luxury and administrative weakness of the decaying empire which pre- sented its ideal, save the monastic system with its rigid proscription of luxury, and even of comfort, in every form. The first-named of these three factors was, however, neces- sarily the earliest to operate. The Scriptures attest clearly the existence of a body of ascetics in the persons of the Nazarites, leading always for a certain period, and sometimes for life, a stricter existence than the ordinary Jew; Elijah and John the Baptist furnished examples of the solitary hermit type; the Schools of the Prophets at least seem to have been celibate and ccenobitic communities, living by a fixed ascetic rule ; and it is familiar to all that such was the actual discipline of the Essenes (see EssENES). The sect of the Therapeuts, known to us only from the book De Vita Contemplativa (ascribed to Philo), and described as chiefly, though not exclusively, established in Egypt, bore much resemblance to the Essenes, differing from them for the most part by greater austerity in the matter of food, and by their preference for the solitary life over the common fellowship of the Essenes ; for their custom was that each member confined himself to his lonely dwelling (called by the afterwards famous name of povacriptov) throughout the week, while all assembled on the Sabbath for joint worship, and for instruction from the senior of the society. So closely does this polity resemble that of several of the earliest Christian societies of the kind that Eusebius de- votes a chapter of his Ecclesiastical HIstory (ii. 17) to as- serting their identity, holding that Philo could have been speaking of none save Christian ascetics, a view in which he is followed by Sozomen and Cassian in ancient times, as also by many moderns. This view has been rendered much more probable by recent inquirers, who seem to have made out that the De Vit. Cont. is spurious, and was written about 300 a.p.;! for there isa general agreement amongst the fathers that the monastic life did not begin till nearly two hundred years after Philo lived ; and Ter- tullian (160-240 a.p.) declares explicitly that Christians in his time did not withdraw from society,—" We are not Indian Brahmans or Gymnosophists, dwellers in woods, and exiles from life; ... we sojourn with you in the world" (Apol., xlii.). Yet there is no reason to doubt that the leaven of*~~

~~*Essenism was at work in the church from the earliest time, and helped to form the temper which issued in monachism. Still, the process was slow and gradual, passing through very much the same stages as can be traced by careful inquiry in the case of the Essenes. That is to say, the new converts to Christianity, being for the most part dwellers in cities, were in necessary and daily contact with the heathen society around, whose relaxation was such as to induce an even greater recoil from habits of self-indulgence than the stricter morality of their new creed enjoined, so that a body known by the name of ' Ascetics " sprang up very soon within the church, and*~~

~~*1 See especially Lucius, Die Therapeuten, 1879.*~~

~~*were urged on to still greater severity of life when the rapid progress of Christianity brought large numbers of merely nominal converts in, whose practice fell too conspicuously below their profession.. The desire of protest against such a state of things led to the gradual separation of the devotees into a kind of order within the main body, and to their actual withdrawal from habitual intercourse with their less strict fellows, which led in turn to their departure from the towns into more secluded places, even before any formal conception of the monastic life had shaped itself in their minds. But the first glimpse obtainable of the "common life," and that only an indistinct one, is in the New Testament, and applies to women alone. There is mention in the pastoral epistles (1 Tim. v. 9-12) of a class of widows, apparently not as mere recipients of relief, but as constituting an ecclesiastical grade; while in Acts ix. 39 it appears as if a number of women belonging to this order were united in some kind of community under the headship of Dorcas, for the narrative rather implies that they were her assistants in making clothing for the poor than themselves the objects of her bounty. This conjecture receives some confirmation from the mention of "the virgins who are called widows" (ras rapOevous Tas Aeyoménvas yfpas) in the shorter recension of the Ignatian Epistle to the Smyrneans, and from the statement of Athanasius, that Anthony, when himself about to begin the solitary life which he is regarded as having instituted, first placed his sister in a convent of virgins (7ap0evova),—facts*~~

~~*which prove the organization of women at an earlier date in com- munity life than of men, and lend some probability to the notion that it may have begun very soon indeed, especially when the prominence given to the virgins as a separate and seemingly long-established order in the church by such early writers as Tertullian and Cyprian is borne in mind.*~~

~~*Two other causes must be taken into account as tend- ing to stimulate monachism when once it began. First is the theological opinion, early formulated, and never since without many advocates, that two distinct standards of life and holiness are set forth in the gospel: that of pre- cept, and that of "counsels of perfection,'"—the former binding all Christians without exception, the latter being voluntary, and merely offered for acceptance to such as aim at especial sanctity. The second, and even more powerful, agent was Gnosticism, not only in its earlier forms and in the kindred spirit of Montanism, but still more in its Manichzean development, when its dualism led to exaggeration of the antagonism between flesh and spirit, and the human body was regarded no longer as a servant to be trained, but as an enemy to be crushed and beaten down with unrelenting hostility. But in every age of monachism, from the earliest to the latest, social disorders and insecurity have proved the chief feeders of the cloister, never widely popular in times of healthy and orderly national life, but eagerly resorted to as a place of shelter from social turbulence.*~~

~~*There are five main classes of monastic institutions, each of which approximately marks a new departure in the history of Western monachism (for the East has never had more than the first), as they succeed one another in chrono- logical order, without in any instance involving the aban- donmentof the previous foundations. They are—(1) Monks; (2) Canons Regular ; (3) Military Orders ; (4) Friars ; (5) Clerks Regular. All of these have communities of women, either actually affiliated to them, or formed on similar lines. .*~~

~~*There is no doubt as to the time and the person, when, and by whom, the first decisive step was taken which left a marked interval for all time between those ascetics who continued to live in family life, if not really part of it, or who at least dwelt close to some ordinary church, to which they*~~

~~resorted habitually, and the seekers after some more retired and separate mode of life, whether singly or in communities. During the stress of the Decian persecution (249-250 A.D.) Paul, a native of the Lower Thebaid, born of wealthy parents about 228, was denounced by his brother-in-law to the authorities as a Christian, and fled for safety in- to the desert, where he established himself in a cavern, shaded by a palm-tree, and with a spring of water close by. There he remained till extreme old age, dying, if we may accept Jerome's chronology, in his hundred and thirteenth year, about 342. Although he did not collect any band of disciples around him, nor even, so far as is re- corded, attract any casual visitors, except his more famous successor, Anthony, who is alleged, in a narrative con- taining many legendary details, to have had an interview with him when himself a very old man, the day before Paul's death ; yet there seems reason to believe that the fame of his example spread sufficiently to induce imitation of it, and that anchoretic cells began to be set up sparsely in the deserts even before Anthony adopted that mode of life. Anthony's career differed in various respects from that of his precursor. In the first place, it was voluntary choice, not fear of persecution, which sent him into solitude. He was born. about 250 at Coma in Upper Egypt, of wealthy Christian parents, and was left at eighteen years of age in possession of a large fortune and of the guardian- ship of a younger sister. He had received what was prob- ably a fair vernacular education, but distaste for study, or perhaps more probably that difficulty which contempla- tive intellects experience in the acquisition of languages, left him unacquainted with Greek or Latin; yet the intimate knowledge of Scripture which he afterwards displayed cannot be satisfactorily accounted for in any other way than as the result of attentive perusal, since no mere listening to the lections in church would suffice to con- vey it; and we must therefore take Athanasius's statement of his ignorance of letters to denote the absence of culture, not as implying actual illiteracy. Oneday, hearing the gospel read, "'Go and sell that thou hast, and give tothe poor… and come, and follow Me," he took it as a direct address to himself, and at once returned home, distributed his pro- perty amongst his neighbours, reserving only a small sum for the support of his sister whom he placed in charge of some Christian virgins, and then betook himself to a solitary life, first visiting the most eminent ascetics and anchorets he could find, in order that he might learn the peculiar merit of each, and imitate it. He fixed his dwell- ing first in a tomb, then in a ruined~~

~~fort near the Nile, where he remained for twenty years, leaving it but once, in 311, to encourage the Christians of Alexandria during the persecution of Maximin ; and lastly ina small grove of date-palms, a few miles west of the western coast of the Red Sea, near the base of Mount Kolzim, where he made an enclosure and planted it as a garden. He quitted this retirement but once in his remaining life, when he again visited Alexandria in 335, at the request of Athan- asius, to preach against the Arians. Yet his fame drew not only frequent visitors to his cell, but numerous disciples and imitators around him, attracted not alone by his pious austerities, but by his cheerful and courteous manners and shrewd practical judgment. He made the solitary life honourable and popular, fully justifying Jerome's plirase in comparing him with Paul, " Hujus vite auctor Paulus, illustrator etiam Antonius." When Anthony died in 365, aged one hundred and five, the desert was already studded with hermitages in every direction, and the second great step in the development of monachism had been long taken by Pachomius, who stands out in history at once as the founder of the ccenobitic life amongst Christians and as the author of the first formal monastic rule. Born about 292,~~

~~and converted to Christianity in early manhood while serving in the army, he was baptized on obtaining his dis- charge, and at once adopted the ascetic life under the direction of the hermit Palemon, with whom he retired to Tabenne, an island in the Nile, between Farshoot and Dendarah. Here he began his new institute, whose dis- tinguishing features were as follows. The monks were distributed into cells, each of which contained three inmates, known in this relation as syncelli (the usual number in other Egyptian foundations was two in each cell, while in Syria the tenant had no partner). A large number of such cells clustered near each other formed a laura, and each such laura had but one common place for meals and other assemblies. Work and food were apportioned to each inmate according to his physical strength, and such as were permitted exceptional strictness in fasting were not to undertake the heavier tasks of bodily labour. Their dress was to be a close linen tunic, with a white goatskin by way of upper garment, which they were not to lay aside at meals or in bed, but only when they assembled for the eucharist, when they wore their hoods only in~~

~~*addition to the tunic. 'They were divided into twenty-four groups or classes numbered according to the letters of the Greek alphabet, into which they were distributed according to their intellectual and spiritual proficiency, the least intelli- gent being placed in class 4, the letter of simplest form, and the ablest in class é, the most complicated. Each group was subdivided into bands of ten and a hundred under decurions and centurions, and all subject to the Abbot, who was himself in turn, when the institution spread and ramified, subject to the Superior (or Archi- mandrite) of the mother-house ; while the finance of each house was managed by a steward (oikovdpos), who was simi- larly accountable to the treasurer or steward at 'Tabenne. Their usual food was bread and water ; their luxuries, oil, salt, and a few occasional fruits or vegetables, chiefly pulse ; frugal meals which they ate in strict silence— sometimes broken by the voice of a reader, appointed to recite lections from the Bible—each man so wearing his hood or cowl as to hide his face from his companions. They assembled twice daily for common prayer, and met further for communion on Saturdays and Sundays. A strict probation of three years was imposed on postulants for admission, during which they were confined to simple tasks of labour, and were not permitted to enter upon actual study till they had satisfactorily passed through this term. Their work was tillage for their own immediate wants, and weaving mats or baskets for sale, to procure such necessaries as their direct labour was insufficient to provide; and, as time went on, other handicrafts were practised in the cloisters, such as those of smiths, tailors, boat-builders, tanners, and so forth. Pachomius induced his sister to found a convent of nuns governed by very similar rules,.and subject to the authority of a visitor appointed by himself, as superior of the whole institute. Such was the success of the Pachomian rule that before the founder died (between 348 and 360) he had no fewer than fourteen hundred monks in his own coenobium, and seven thousand altogether under his authority. Nor was its influence confined to Tabennz and its dependencies. Ammon carried the rule into the Nitrian desert, where five thousand monks were soon collected ; Hilarion bore it into Syria and Palestine, Eustathius of Sebaste into Armenia, Ephraem Syrus into Mesopotamia, Basil the Great into Cappadocia and Pontus (though a rule of his own framing supplanted it later) ; and, above all, it was brought by Athanasius himself into Italy, whence it spread over the West till modified in various ways by subsequent*~~

~~*legis- lation, and finally displaced by the Benedictine institute. And such was its popularity, meeting as it did a need of*~~

~~*MONACHISM*~~

~~*the time, that its votaries in Egypt alone amounted by the 5th century to more than a hundred thousand, of whom three-fourths were men. This rule has come down to us in two very different forms: an earlier and probably ari- ginal. one, preserved for us in the HIstoria Lausiaca of Palladius, bishop of Helenopolis (367-480)—a great store- house of details on Egyptian monachism, which is 'very brief, and has been summarized above —and a much longer recension, extending to 194 heads or chapters, pre- served in a translation by Jerome, in whose time the monks governed by it had increased to fifty thousand. It had not, however, a complete monopoly, for there were also similar rules in local use, going by the names of famous ascetics such as Paphnutius, Macarius, and Serapion; nor was it uncommon to find communities wherein two or three different rules were followed simultaneously by the various inmates. The rule of Basil, however, proved to the East what that of Benedict did to the West, in that it practically absorbed or supplanted all its predecessors, while, unlike the great Western reform, it has had no sub- sequent competitors, and remains to this day the single monastic code of the Oriental Church. This rule is embodied in the Ascetic Sermons of Basil, and also in two recensions, a longer and a shorter one, of the actual provisions of his code, which are marked with not a little of the shrewd practical sense, as well as lofty piety, which characterized the founder,—being especially noticeable for their discouragement of the solitary mode of life, and for their recommendation of labour. The development of Orien- tal monachism thus ceases with the Basilian rule, and there are only two seeming exceptions to this fact: the institu- tion of the Accemcti (dxotynrot), or 'sleepless" monks in the 5th century, for the purpose of keeping up unbroken prayer day and night—a system copied much later in the West by the communities founded for " perpetual adora- tion ;" and the erection, for these very monks, of the great monastery of the Studium at Constantinople (named from Studius, its founder), which was the Cluny of its time and country, as a centre of the more intellectual monastic life, and as the model of stateliness in ecclesiastical ceremonial. Greek monachism, as an institute, has no history*~~

~~*later than the 5th century. The monks indeed constantly appear as factors in the controversies of the centuries which followed, at once the polemical and the political disputes showing them equally fierce and eager partisans (notably in the TIconoclastic controversy, which found them the most ardent champions of images); but they cannot be said to have exerted much influence upon society till a very late period of their history, when they were instrumental in keeping the national spirit and the national religion alive in Russia when suffering under the Tatar yoke, and they performed a like service for Greece during the centuries of Turkish oppression. It may further be added that, however low the intellectual life of Eastern monasteries may appear when judged by a Western standard, the clergy who are trained in them, technically known as the " Black clergy," stand much higher in character, acquirements, and general influence than the secular or "White clergy" of the parishes, whether in Greece or in Russia.*~~

~~*It has been already mentioned that the bad side of Irregular*~~

~~*monachism appears almost as early as its good side.*~~

~~*1 This great abbey, at the height of its prosperity, contained more than a thousand monks, and the following list of its staff of office- bearers, due to Theodore the Studite, may be usefully compared with the Western monastic hierarchy :—'Hyotpevos (abbot), tmoraxrixés (prior), olkovéuos (treasnrer), émeornwovdpxys (ceremoniarius), émir7- pnts (inspector), eavovdpxns (precentor), ragidpxns (seneschal), Ked- hapirns (cellarer), dpisrntdpros (refectioner), Beoridpios (sacrist), dduruaris (evigilator), vocoxduos (infirmarer). One or two of the offices do not quite correspond in East and West, but the general reseniblance is close.*~~

~~*MONACHIS™M™*~~

~~*While the system won the admiration of all the most emi- nent Christian teachers of the age which saw its birth and early growth, and while we are met by a still more remark- able fact that from the time when monachism was fairly established till we enter on the Middle Ages there are but two or three names of distinction amongst the clergy, whether as writers or administrators, to be found outside the ranks of monachism, amongst whom the most famous are Ambrose and Leo the Great, nevertheless, there is a*~~

~~heavy account on the other side. Not only did the institute speedily find itself caricatured by the Messalians, Euchites, Gyrovagi, Sarabaites or Remoboth, Circumcel- liones, and other companies of professed ascetics, wild in doctrine, vagrant in habits, and turbulent in conduct, but the more genuine societies had scarcely fewer faults in too many cases. Lay in their origin, and for the greater part of their earlier history having but rarely ecclesiastics amongst them (a single priest ordained for each monastery to minister to its inmates being the utmost allowed for a considerable time), they were not subject to the saine strict inspection and discipline as the clergy, in case a whole community chose to disregard its rule ; though of course it was easy to deal with an offender who had the tone of his monastery against him. The clergy were subject to the direct control of the bishops, and many disciplinary canons of councils laid down rules for their conduct ; but this was not the case with the monks for a considerable time—nor indeed ever effectively in the East—and their lay character gave them practical independence of any authority external to their abbot. And, although the stringency of the mon- astic rule itself, which, even before actual vows began to be introduced (probably on the recommendation of Basil), always involved during compliance with it the three engagements to the observance of poverty, chastity, and obedience, which make up the staple of the monastic principle, and though pains were taken to exclude unfit applicants (such as criminals, slaves who had fled for rea- sons other than ill-treatment, or persons who had kindred dependent on them), while a long probation was exacted from all who were accepted, yet it was impossible that more than a small proportion of the many thousands who flocked in during the first enthusiasm for the new move- ment should have had any real sympathy with the re- straints and aspirations of such a mode of life. Severe asceticism operates differently on different natures, and while there are some whom it does but discipline and refine there are more whom it tends to coarsen and to brutalize, even apart from the many whom it is apt to affect with morbidness, if not actual insanity. And it is unquestionable that vast numbers of those who entered on the monastic life came from the poorer classes, in search of some less toilsome mode of existence than they had previously led, preferring the contemplative societies, wherein almost no labour, certainly none of a severe and trying cast, was practised, to those where agriculture and other active employments, requiring more energy than mat and basket weaving, were enjoined. Such men, unedu- cated and~~

~~*undisciplined, were liable to be thrown entirely out of gear by the complete revolution in their mode of life,—especially when the community they joined was not*~~

~~*701*~~

~~*less and nearly naked, as Sozomen and Evagrius tell us, in the mountains and deserts, grovelling on the earth, and browsing like cattle on the herbs they casually found ; and to those fierce bands of Nitrian and Syrian ascetics who, reared in the narrowest of schools, treated any divergence from their own standard of opinion as a crime which they were entitled to punish in their own riotous fashion, two instances of which have left an indelible brand on their history—the murder of Hypatia in Alexandria, and that of the patriarch Flavian at the Robber Synod of Ephesus. An equally singular, but more sporadic and temporary, form of asceticism was that of the Stylites or Pillar-hermits (orvAirat, 'ktovitar), who followed a fashion first set by Simeon, a Syrian monk who spent almost half of the 5th century on the summit of a column 60 feet in height. This unwonted kind of austerity at first gave rise to strong objections, even from hermits themselves, and a messenger was sent to Simeon, bidding him in the name of a synod of bishops to descend from his pillar, but with instruc- tions to permit him to remain if he showed himself ready tocomply. Such proved to be the case; and, having thus assured themselves that he was not influenced by spiritual pride, they left him to follow his own devices. And we have the direct personal testimony of the wise and tem- perate Theodoret that he exercised a strong and salutary influence over the nomadic Saracen tribes, converting many hundreds and even thousands to Christianity, besides being the shrewd and trusted adviser, not only of the peasants who flocked to him for counsel, but of Arab princes, Per- sian kings, and even Roman emperors. He cannot be judged, therefore, by ordinary standards, and it is more than likely that a less extraordinary mode of life would have given him less power for good; but he is the only eminent figure in the class to which he belongs, and the fashion he set may be said to have died out with his name- sake, the younger Simeon, a century later. Even when the healthier side of monachism as it appeared in Egypt and Syria is dwelt upon, and the fullest weight is allowed to the contemporary pictures drawn by great Christian writers of the monasteries as schools of a philosophy truer and purer than*~~

~~*that of the Porch or the Academy, as places where the equality and brotherhood, merely dreamed of as unrealizable fancies in the outer world, could be seen in living action—where children, deserted by their parents or otherwise orphaned, were carefully reared—where the sick were lovingly tended—where calmness, piety, and self-for- getfulness were the rule of all, —it must be confessed that the complaint of the Government, embodied in the hostile legislation of the emperor Valens in 3738, subjecting monks to the conscription (which drew forth an indignant protest from Chrysostom), that monachism was injurious to society and to the healthy condition of civil life by draining off so large a fraction of the population into the backwater of the cloister, was perfectly well founded. And no small part of the overthrow of Christianity in Egypt and Syria by Islam is due to the practical with- drawal of all the devout from family and public life, leaving no spiritual energy to cope with the Koran in the towns and villages whither the conquering Arabs came to settle and proselytize.*~~

~~*The history of monachism in the West is far more varied, Propaga-*~~

~~*only contemplative, but situated in some place where the Tops chequered, and interesting than in the East. It takes Hon ™*~~

~~*ungrateful soil made tillage nearly impracticable, and the the West.*~~

~~*vast numbers crowded together were far too numerous for any tasks which could be assigned them. From the bosom of such societies came not only single examples of exagger- ated spiritual pride, bitter fanaticism, avaricious greed of the scanty articles whose usufruct was permitted, fierce sensuality, and wild religious delusions, but they gave birth to companies like the Bocxoé, or " grazing monks," of Mesopotamia and Palestine, who roved about, shelter-*~~

~~*its beginning from the visit of Athanasius to Rome in 340, during his second term of exile, when he brought with him his Life of St Anthony, and pressed his example on the Roman Christians who mourned as patriots, not less than as devotees, over the lax and enervated habits of society. The popular imagination was caught at once, and not only was the basis of monachism successfully laid in Rome itself, but Eusebius of Vercelli introduced it*~~

~~by the illustrious Ambrose at Milan.~~

~~contemplation or severe self-torture, such as is equally common to many of the Egyptian or Syrian ascetics and to the Yogis of Hindustan. Hard work, with due inter- vals for food and recreation, occupied all that part of a Western monk's time which was not devoted to prayer or study, and a careful apportionment of his duties through- out the day gave each hour its appointed task to be ful- filled, leaving very few loose ends of time to be wasted. Tt is true that the Basilian rule aimed at this same end, and that a very minute time-table forms a part of other early Eastern codes; but, as already remarked, the work was neither hard enough nor abundant enough to provide really healthy labour, or to occupy the mind sufficiently to keep it from vague speculation or morbid brooding dur- ing the hours of so-called toil. From this fundamental unlikeness springs the broad distinction between the two types of the monastic life, in that the West did not merely provide shelter for such as felt unable to endure the storms of the world, leaving secular society to take care of itself as best it could, but, contrariwise, employed the cloister far more as a training-school for the strong, as the stand- point whence to work the lever which moved a world. Even the more remotely secluded monasteries of the West, instead of serving as refuges wherein the inmates might effectually cut themselves off from all intercourse from without, were rather military outposts and frontier forts of civilization, which taught the arts of peace, the pro- cesses of agriculture, and at least the rudiments of social morality, to the rude and almost nomadic hunters and forayers, of whom many of the wilder tribes in outlying districts consisted. And if such was the case even where the conditions seemed least favourable, it may readily be understood what an ample field for exertion the more settled regions provided.~~

~~It would seem that it was some modification of the Pachomian rule which first made its way into Europe, but the interest excited by the movement led to variety of choice on the part of the teachers who aimed at spreading its influence in Italy. Thus, Urseus, abbot of Pinetum (probably near Ravenna), translated the Basilian rule into Latin, and it soon took root in southern Italy, where it continued to hold its ground for a considerable time. But a~~

~~*far more important part in the propagation of the monastic Institute in the West was taken by Jerome, who, 'after spending a considerable time, beginning in 374, first as a hermit in the desert of Chalcis, and later at Constantinople, returned to Rome in 382, where he was secretary to Pope Damasus. He acquired much influence over a distinguished group of Roman ladies of high social position, the most celebrated of whom are Paula, and her daughters Blesilla and Eustochium, and employed that influence in urging the adoption of the monastic life upon them. Blesilla died early, it was said and believed in consequence of austerities pressed upon her which her constitution was unable to bear; and the unpopularity which this report brought upon Jerome, co-operating with the death of his patron Damasus and other causes, drove him back to the East, whither Paula and Eustochium also betook themselves, finally settling down in Bethlehem, where the elder lady built three con- vents, of one of which she was superior, while Jerome, who similarly erected a monastery for monks in the immediate vicinity, acted as chaplain and director to the community.*~~

~~*MONACHISM*~~

~~*into northern Italy, where it was fostered a little later From the very beginning a marked difference shows itself in the spirit of Western monachism as compared with the parent institute inthe East. Partly from dissimilarity of climate, but still more from that of racial and national temperament, there has always been less tendency in the West to either abstract*~~

~~*As the taste for pilgrimages had already become deeply rooted, the convent at Bethlehem was ere long a favourite resort of pilgrims, and exerted considerable influence in prompting the erection of similar foundations in the West. Quite another impulse was given to the further- ance of monachism by Augustine. While, amongst the many documents which have been ascribed to him, the only one which is of the nature of a monastic code is his 109th Epistle, addressed in terms of severe reproval to the nuns of a convent he had himself founded at Hippo, but which had fallen away from discipline, his personal example gave rise to a new type of the common life, in that he formed a sort of college of priests, who shared the episcopal house with him, ate at a common table, and copied in other particulars the*~~

~~*observances of monasteries, but with- out losing their secular character. This was the origin of the institute afterwards famous as the Austin Canons, a foundation of the 11th century. It is true that Eusebius of Vercelli had anticipated Augustine by collecting the clergy of his cathedral: (and, as it would seem, the remain- ing ecclesiastics of the city) into a common dwelling, but the difference in his case was that he obliged them to adopt the habit and style of monks, and thus was in no sense the originator of a new institute. Another important contri- bution of Augustine's to the history of the common life is his treatise De Opere Monachorum, wherein he sets forth the imperative need of making hard work an invariable factor of the monastic profession, notably on the ground that most of the monks in Africa came from the lower ranks of society, such as freedmen, farm-labourers, and artisans, who were spiritually injured by being raised into a grade viewed with more general respect than that from which they had sprung, while they were actually subject to fewer privations and lighter employment than they had been accustomed to. And he adds that amongst other evil consequences of this idleness was that they were found tramping the country selling sham relics, which they palmed off on the unwary, extorting money in other fashions also, and bringing discredit on their profession by their hypocrisy and vices—a picture only too faith- fully repeated by the Mendicants a thousand years after the date of this treatise. The 5th century was one of rapid progress in the spread of monachism in the West. Chief amongst those who helped to popularize it stands the name of John Cassian (350-433), a monk of Bethlehem, who made a long and careful study of the Egyptian forms of monachism, of which he has bequeathed us valu- able details in his De Institutione Cenobiorum and Col- lationes Patrum, the former of which is a treatise on the monastic life, and indeed virtually a rule, though a some- what prolix one, mainly derived from Macarius, while the latter is a record of the teachings of some hermits of the desert of Scete. Both of these works exercised a powerful influence in their own day, and the second retained its repute much longer, having been warmly approved and recommended for study by Benedict, Bruno, Dominic, and Ignatius Loyola, all four founders of celebrated orders. Cassian fixed himself at Marseilles, where he founded a famous monastery of which he was probably abbot, and which was the centre whence monachism, uniting the peculiarities of East and West, was propagated in southern Gaul, and notably planted in the island of Lerins, which became the seat of one of the most eminent*~~

~~*monasteries of the early Middle Ages. Northern Gaul had received the institute earlier through the agency of Martin, bishop of Tours (316-397), who founded monasteries near Poitiers and in his own diocese, which were soon thronged, so that his funeral was attended by two thousand monks. Spain was even earlier in the field than Gaul, but there is some obscurity as to the history*~~

~~*MONACHISM*~~

~~*of the introduction of monachism there, all that is certain being that it had made its footing good before 380, the date of a council of Saragossa (Casaraugusta) which for- bade priests to assume the monkish habit. Still more obscurity hangs over the first establishment of monachism in Britain, as to which no trustworthy records have come down to us, though all probability points to its importation from Gaul in some variety of the Pachomian rule ; while Germany did not receive the institute till the following century.*~~

~~*It must not be supposed, however, that the principle of monachism met with no opposition in the course of its progress. Apart from the opposition of those who disliked it precisely for its merits, for its protest against the dissolute morals and enervated habits of a luxurious and rotting society, and for the manner in which it won to itself many of the noblest and most promising of the young and ardent of both sexes, and without taking into account the more reasonable objections of statesmen, there were not lacking warnings of the dangers attending exaggerations of the principle of monachism, uttered by some of its most eminent upholders. Augustine's sharp censures have been already mentioned, and to them may be added the decrees of the council of Gangra in 363, or thereabouts, which anathematize those who adopt a celibate life on the ground that marriage is evil, who wear a peculiar dress as a mark of holiness, condemning such as use ordinary clothing, or who desert their parents or children dependent on them under the plea of desiring to lead an ascetic life. So, too, the great Chrysostom, him- self a warm advocate of monachism, found himself obliged to teach his flock the sanctity of Christian family life, and the truth that there was often as much selfishness as piety in retirement to a hermitage from the cares and duties of society. These arguments and*~~

~~decisions were, however, aimed only at abuses and exaggerations of the monastic idea. Itremained for Jovinian and Vigilantius to assail the actual principle. Their writings have not survived, and we can judge of their arguments only from the account given of them by their chief opponent Jerome, whose eminent gifts, however, did not include either moderation or controversial fairness, so that it is not safe to assume that we have all their case before us. As regards Vigilantius, he accurately represents the Puritan type of mind protesting against the external part of the popular religion of his day, often with good reason, but also show- ing equal intolerance for harmless, if not useful, practices ; so that his condemnation of monachism is only part of his general objection to the temper of his time. But Jovinian's objections seem to have gone deeper. He had been him- self a monk (and indeed never resumed secular life), but he disputed absolutely the thesis that any merit lay in monachism, celibacy, fasting, and asceticism considered in themselves, save in so far as they contributed to foster the Christian temper and life, which might and did flourish equally, he urged, under quite different conditions, while it was by no means unfrequent for spiritual pride, if not Manichean error, to lay hold of those who devoted them- selves to the ascetic profession. This was, in fact, going very little further than Chrysostom had done, or than Nilus did a short time later. But Jovinian's divergence from the standard of his day was not confined to practical questions ; it extended to theological doctrines also, and accordingly his strictures on monachism, probably more incisive and less qualified than those of its other critics, were involved in his condemnation as a heretic by synods at Rome and Milan in 390. The reaction, of which he may be regarded as the mouthpiece rather than as the sole representative, was thus effectually crushed, and that for centuries. And though Jovinian is undoubtedly niore~~

~~in accord than his opponents with the modern temper on the subject of monachism, and while it may be allowed that his teaching might have been a useful corrective in Eastern Christendom, where family life was all but over- borne by asceticism, yet the impartial historian must admit that his success would have been an irreparable misfortune for civilization in the West. Such a dispas- sionate estimate of asceticism as his, if widely~~

~~*entertained, would have been fatal to the spread of monachism, and thus one of the most important conservative and statical forces in the preservation of the older culture, one of the most powerful dynamical forces in reducing the chaotic materials of early medieval society to order and coherence, would have been lost to Europe; nor is it easy to conjecture what effectual substitute could have taken its place. As it was, the movement was not checked for a moment by this partial reaction; and not only did the older com- munities thrive and spread during the 5th and early 6th centuries, but new ones were established,—chief among which stand those of Cesarius of Arles and of Donatus of Besangon in southern Gaul, that of Isidore of Seville in Spain, and the early Celtic code, of which only tradi- tional fragments survive, but which seems in Britain to have been strongly affected by tribal influences, so that a monastery was often recruited from a single clan, and the abbacy became hereditary in the family of the chief- tain, a fact which is noticeable even in the succession of the abbots of Iona, who for ten elections after Columba were of his family in the tribe of Conall Gulban.!*~~

~~*But, swiftly as monachism spread in Europe during the breaking-up of the Western empire, some of the causes which hastened its progress also tended to its rapid de- cay. The disturbed state of society, and, in particular, the prevalence of petty warfare, drove many thousands of persons to seek a quiet refuge in the cloister without any more directly religious motive. When once there, they found in every place some rule in force which was either imported directly from Egypt or Syria, or else, like that of Ceesarius, modelled on Eastern lines, and therefore ill suited to the severer climate of Europe and the more active habits of the people. The austerities were thus too oppressive for general observance, and the result was a widespread neglect of rules which continued nominally in force, while at the same time the very monks who had ceased to keep them laid claim to special sanctity on the pretence of their strict way of life. The time was ripe for a reform, or rather for a wholly new departure in the shape of a rule devised to meet Western needs, and not merely adapted more or less clumsily from Oriental asceticism. The fitting man to accomplish this difficult task appeared in the person of Benedict of Nursia, author of the most famous of all monastic codes. Born of a respectable family about 480, he adopted the ascetic life at fourteen in a cave near Subiaco, not far from Rome, where he remained for*~~

~~*three years, at the expiration of which he was chosen abbot of a neighbouring con- vent, then in a very relaxed state. His rule proved too stern for his new subjects, who attempted to poison him, whereupon he resigned his office.and returned to Subiaco, around which he soon erected twelve monas- teries, each peopled by an abbot and twelve monks. Fresh attempts on his life and on the discipline of his society drove him out again in the year 528, when he fixed his dwelling at Monte Cassino, the place where his cele- brated rule was drafted in the following year, and which has ever since prided itself on its rank as the cradle of the Benedictine Order and the premier abbey of Western Christendom. The famous institute which he devised*~~

~~*1 Adamnan, Vit. Colwmb., ed. Reeves.*~~

~~*Rule of Bene- dict.*~~

~~*704*~~

~~*has a great surface likeness to the rule of Basil, which alone has rivalled it in permanence, though far below it in diffusion and, it may be added, in services to humanity. Superior in flexibility and in the power of adapting itself in new conditions of circumstance and society to any rule which preceded it (and indeed to most of those devised later), the effect it produced in its own immediate day and for several centuries afterwards is almost incalculable. Obedience, silence, humility ; worship, study, and work; such are the ideas and employments with which this code of seventy- three chapters is occupied. It opens with a sermonet or hortatory preface, and then proceeds to define the existing classes of monks, as divided into Ccenobites, Anchorets, Sarabaites, living by twos and threes together without any fixed rule or lawful superior, and Gyrovagi, vagrant tramps who, even at that time, as more than a century earlier, continued to bring discredit on the monastic profession. it was one great aim of the Benedictine reform to extirpate these two latter classes, and the method adopted was the addition of a fourth vow, that of stability," to the three usual pledges. This fourth vow bound the monk to continuance in his profession, and even to residence for life at the monastery in which he was professed, unless temporary absence or permanent transfer were permitted by the authorities, and thus struck directly against the temper of restless- ness and desire for*~~

~~*change which were such powerful factors in generating the irregular and wandering classes just named, Chapter ii. describes the qualities of an abbot, and also decrees that no dis- tinctions of worldly rank or station are to be recognized amongst the inmates of the monastery. Chapter iii. is one of those which best enable us to estimate the foresight and good sense of Bene- dict. It enacts that the abbot is to call the entire body of the brethren together to deliberate on any weighty matter, and not to decide it till he has heard the counsel of even the very youngest ; while in matters of less moment consultation with the elder members suffices. Chapter iv. enumerates the instruments of good works, summed up in seventy-two pithy maxims, mainly Scriptural in letter or spirit. Chapter v. is on the obedience of disciples. Chapter vi. is on silence, recommending spareness and wholesomeness of speech, but not laying down any hard-and-fast rules such as those of the Trappists of a later day. Chapter vii. treats of humility, including injunctions to the monk to confess his secret faults and thoughts to the abbot, to do nothing but what the common rule or the example of his seniors teaches, and to exhibit lowliness and meekness in out- ward bearing as well as in the inward spirit. Chapters ix.-xx. are occupied with directions about the performance of Divine service, so far as relates to the recitation of the Canonical Hours, seven of the day and one of the night. Chapter xxi. provides for the appointment of deans (officers over ten monks) in large monasteries, to be chosen by merit, and not by mere seniority. Chapter xxii. prescribes rules for the dormitory, each monk to have a separate bed with suitable coverings, and to sleep in his habit, and girded, so as to be ready to rise at a moment's notice, and a light is to be kept burning in the dormitory till morning. Eight chapters (xxiii. – xxx.) then deal with offenders, a graduated scale of penalties being provided: first, private admonition; next, separation from the brethren at meals and recreation ; then scourging; and, finally, ex- pulsion in the case of hardened offenders, but not until the abbot has used every means to soften and reclaim them. ven in this last event, the outcast may be received again, and that thrice, on the condition of forfeiting his seniority and descending to the lowest place. After the third expulsion, return was finally barred. Chapter xxx. is on the character and duties of the cellarer, an important officer in monasteries ; who was steward, and had the charge of all the stores, and the responsibility of serving them out as needed ; while the next chapter provides for the appointment of inferior officers to take charge of the tools, clothes, and other goods belong- ing to*~~

~~*the monastery. Chapter xxxiii. prohibits any monk to give, receive, or keep aught as his own without leave of the abbot, who is, however, bound to supply him with all necessaries. Murmuring at anything in the manner of distribution is censured in the next chapter as a very grave offence. Chapter xxxv. ordains that the brethren are to serve in the kitchen by turns, unless excused by reason of sickness or some more important occupation, and that who- ever is on duty on Saturday is to clean up for the week, and to deliver all the cloths and utensils to the cellarer in good condition for his successor in office. Chapter xxxvi., while warning the sick not to be impatient or exacting, gives careful directions for their comfort. They are to be placed in an infirmary and to be com- mitted to the care of a competent attendant, are to be allowed baths as often as is expedient, and a flesh diet to promote their recovery though against the rule for those in health. Old men and children are also to be dispensed from the rigour of the rule, and they may have their meals before the usual hours, instead of waiting for the others. Chapter xxxviii. directs that reading aloud during meals is to be practised, and that no conversation, even about the subject of the reading, is to be carried on by the brethren, who are to keep*~~

~~*silence, using signs if they need anything. The reader is to be appointed for a week, and to enter upon his dutieson Sunday. He*~~

~~*is to be allowed a little food before beginning his task, lest he should become faint, and is to finish his meal afterwards along with the kitcheners and waiters. And the readers are not to take turns of duty in order, but only such persons are to be appointed as can dis-*~~

~~*charge the office satisfactorily. Chapters xxxix. and xl. prescribe the*~~

~~*daily rations of food and drink, Two meals are allowed, consisting of two cooked dishes (pulmentaria), to permit a choice of food, lest one or other dish should be unsuitable to any one, and a third dish' of fruit or young vegetables is granted as an occasional addition.*~~

~~*A pound of bread is to be served out daily for each, though the abbot is empowered to increase the rations of such as had extra hard work to do;*~~

~~*while the rations of children are to be proportionably diminished, and flesh-meat is forbidden to all except the sick and weak, but there is no prohibition of any flesh save that of four-footed beasts, thus leaving the use of poultry, eggs, and fish optional.*~~

~~*One pint of wine daily is allowed to each monk, but the hesitation with which this is conceded is noteworthy ; and, while the prior is empowered to increase the allowance if he judge it well, the brethren*~~

~~*are told that voluntary abstinence is the best course, and that where a house is too poor to provide wine those debarred from it are not tomurmur. Chapter xli. prescribes the hours for meals at different seasons of the year, care being taken that both meals shall be taken by daylight, without need oflamps. Chapter xlii. directs the monks to assemble in the evening for a reading, preferably of the Collations of Cassian, followed by compline, after which silence is to be strictly observed, save for some necessary cause. Chapters xliii.xlvi. im pose penalties for minor breaches of rule, such as coming late to prayers or meals, Chapter xlvii. gives some further directions as to Divine service, throwing on the abbot or his deputy the responsi- bility of notifying the hour for it, and provides that no incompetent person shall be set to chant or read. Chapter xlviii., although brief, is one of the most important and characteristic in the rule.*~~

~~*It is on daily manual labour, and begins with the pithy axiom,*~~

~~*'"Tdleness is an enemy of the soul" (Otiositas inimica est anime).*~~

~~*It proceeds to enjoin that the brethren are to distribute the time not already taken up with prayer, meals, and sleep, into periods of manual labour or devout reading. From Easter till the 1st October they are to work from prime till the fourth hour. From the fourth till nearly the sixth hour they are to read. On rising from meal- time after the sixth hour they are to rest in silence on their beds— the familiar siesta of warm countries—but those who prefer to read may do so, provided they disturb no one. Nones are to be said about the middle of the eighth hour (2.30 p.m.), and then work is to be resumed till evening. From the 1st October till the beginning of Lent they are to read till the second hour, then to say terce,*~~

~~*after which to work till the ninth hour. At the ninth hour they are to leave off work, and after their meal to read spiritual books or the Psalms. In Lent they are to read from the morning till the third hour, then to work till the end of the tenth hour. And every one is to have a book given out to him from the library at the be- ginning of Lent, which he is to read through ; while two senior brethren are to go the rounds during reading hours to see that the monks are actually reading, and neither lounging nor gossiping.*~~

~~*On Sundays all are to read throughout the day, except such as have special duties to discharge ; and if there be any who either cannot or will not read or meditate, some task to keep them from idling is to be assigned them. Sickly and delicate brethren are to be given light work, suitable to their health. Chapter xlix. suggests, with- out commanding, the adoption of some voluntary self-denial during Lent, to be undertaken with the abbot's approval only,—austerities without such sanction being denounced as vainglorious. Chapter l. directs that brethren who work at a distance, so as to be unable to attend common prayer, are to recite the office where they may happen to be. Chapter li. preseribes that monks sent on an errand, and expecting to return the same day, are not to eat while out,*~~

~~*unless they have special leave from the abbot. Chapter lii. gives a few directions as to behaviour in the oratory. Chapter liii. contains rules for the entertainment of guests. The most noteworthy pro- visions are that the abbot is licensed to break his fast with the guests, unless on a church fast-day, in order to bear them company at meal-times ; that the kitchen for the abbot and guests is to be separate from the general kitchen, and served by the same two brethren for a year, to insure that no additional labour may fall on the ordinary kitcheners through the unexpected arrivals of strangers needing to be fed; that the guest-room be entrusted to a brother (the hospitaller), and that no monk shall speak to or mix with the guests unless by special appointment—a very salutary regulation,*~~

~~*in view of the miscellaneous rout of visitors likely to apply for food and shelter. Chapter liv. forbids monks to receive letters, tokens, or gifts, even from their nearest kin, without the abbot's permis- sion, or to give any such things to another; and the abbot is em- powered to transfer presents to some person other than him for whom they were intended. Chapter lv.*~~

~~*prescribes the dress, and, with Benedict's usual good sense, leaves it wholly in the abbot's dis- cretion to provide clothing suitable to the climate and locality;*~~

~~*MONACHISM*~~

~~*merely ruling that in temperate places a cowl and tunic, thick in winter and thin in summer, with a scapular (a sleeveless woollen garment passed over the head, and falling down over the breast and back) for work hours, as also shoes and stockings, all of the ordinary country make and cheapest kind, shall suffice. Each monk is to have a change of these garments, to allow of washing, and yet another for use when sent on a journey, to be of rather better materials, and to be kept in the general wardrobe when not in actual wear. The old clothes are to be given up when new ones are served out, and are to be laid by in the wardrobe for the poor. A straw mattress, blanket, quilt, and pillow are to be furnished for each bed ; and in addition the abbot is to give every monk a knife, a pen, a needle, a handkerchief, and tablets. Chapter lvi. rules that the abbot is to take lis meals with the guests and strangers, with the privilege, if guests be few, of inviting any of the brethren he eliooses, so long as some seuiors are left in charge. Chapter lvii. prescribes that craftsmen amongst the brethren are to work with the abbot's permission, and if their work is to be for sale, those who are entrusted with making the bargains are to deal honestly with pur- chasers, and to sell rather below the current trade price. Chapter lviii. lays down the rules for the admission of new members. It is not to be made too easy. The postulant is to be allowed to knock for entrance in vain for four or five days, then to be brought into the guest-room for a few days more, and so be transferred to the novice-house, where he is to remain under the charge of a senior monk for two months. If he persevere at the end of this time, the rule is to be read over to him, and the option of departing or remain- ing is to be offered. If he persevere, he is returned to the novice- house for six months' further probation, after which the rule is again read to him as before, and yet a third time after a further term of four months. Not till he has surmounted this final ordeal can he be admitted into the community, and before that is done he must divest himself of his property, either giving it to the poor, or mak- ing a deed of gift to the monastery. Then he is allowed to sign the act of profession, including the vow of stability, which he is to lay*~~

~~*with his own hand on the altar. Chapter lix. provides for the dedication of young children, noble or poor, by their parents to the monastic life, and requires a promise from the latter never to endow the oblate with any property, directly or in trust, though they may give to the monastery if they please and reserve the life-income to themselves, Chapter lx. regulates the position of priests who desire to live in the monastery. They are to enjoy no relaxations or priority in virtue of their ecclesiastical rank, though the abbot may assign clerical functions to them ; and a somewhat like rule is laid down for clerks in minor orders. Chapter lxi. provides for the reception of strange monks as guests, and for their admission if desir- ing to join the community. The abbot is enjoined to listen to any criticisms such a guest may offer, and is empowered to give him, if accepted as a new member, higher standing than that of his entrance, but is forbidden so to admit a monk of any known monastery with- out the consent or letters commendatory of its abbot. Chapter lxii. rules that the abbot may choose a monk for ordination as priest or deacon ; but the ordinee is to rank in the house from the date of his admission, except when officiating, or if the community and the abbot single him out for promotion by merit. If he misbehave, he is to be reported to the bishop, and if continuing to misconduct himself, shall be expelled,—only, however, in case of obstinate dis- obedience to therule. Chapter lxiii. lays down rules for the gradation of rank in the community, and warns the abbot against arbitrary government. Chapter lxiv. allows the abbot to be chosen either by the common consent of the whole community, or by a select electoral committee ; and the lowest in standing may be chosen, if fit. In the event of a bad choice, the bishop of the diocese, the neighbour- ing abbots, or even the neighbouring laity, if having reason to think the election made for the purpose of keeping up abuses, may annul it and appoint another superior. Chapter lxv. speaks of the mis- chief occasioned in many monasteries by the rivalry of the provost or prior with the abbot, and advises that no such officer be appointed ; yet, if the circumstances of the place need one, the abbot may name a brother to the post, but he is to be as entirely subject to the abbot as any other monk, and may be admonished, deposed, or expelled for misconduct. Chapter xvi. directs the appointment of a porter to answer at the gate, and further recommends that every house shall have its own well, mill, garden, bakery, and handicraftsmen, to avoid the need of intercourse with the outer world. Chapter lxvii. directs that no monk shall quit the cloister without leave of*~~

~~the abbot, and that, on the return of any from a journey, they are to beg the prayers of the community for any faults they have committed during their absence, and are forbidden to speak of what they have~~

~~be subject to discipline from all the monks; but any who shall chastise those above fifteen without the abbot's leave, or be unduly severe towards the younger, shall be himself punishable by rule. Chapter lxxi. lays down that the prineiple of obedience is to prevail throughout the community, not only towards the abbot, or his officers, but from the juniors towards their seniors. Chapter lxxii. is a brief exhortation to zeal ; and chapter Lxxiii. a note to the effect that the Benedictine rule is not offered as an ideal of perfection, or even as equal to the teachings of Cassian and Basil, but for mere be- ginners in the spiritual life, who may thence proceed further.~~

~~It has been necessary to make this detailed analysis of the rule, because no mere summary of its general scope conveys an adequate notion of it; and it plays so import- ant a part in the history of European civilization that it is expedient to obtain a clear idea of its details as well as of its main outlines. The first peculiarity in it meriting attention is the absence of any severe austerities. Plain and bare as the food and lodging appear if tested by modern notions, yet it is to be remembered that what is called "comfort" is a wholly recent idea, and even still scarcely fantiliar, it may almost be said, out of Great Britain and its colonies. The scale of living appointed by the rule secures a greater abundance of the necessaries of life, not only than was at all common amongst the Italian poor of the 6th century, but than is to be found amongst the humbler peasantry of any European country at the present day ; while even the excluded superfluities entered but little into the habits of any save the very wealthy. Next, high thinking—the highest thought of the time—was united with this plain living, as the considerable stress laid upon reading attests. To this part of the code is due the great service performed by the Benedictines, both in the erection of schools, and in the preservation of almost all the remains of ancient Latin literature which have come down to us. It made it not only possible but easy for them to become a learned order, and it is a very imperfect estimate of the stride forward in this provision which Milman makes, when he views the~~

~~*injunctions as to reading in the mere light of expedients to fill up time somehow. If it were so, the hours for reading would have been fewer, shorter, and more occasional, merely rounding off the intervals between times of labour; but they are just' as prominent and nearly as long as these. It is true that Benedict, whose own education had been abruptly broken off by his early retreat from Rome, did not speci- fically enjoin the pursuit of learning on his monks; but they borrowed the idea at once from his contemporary, the celebrated Cassiodorus, the real founder of monastic learning, of which his monastery of Viviers in Bruttium is the first known school. But the most valuable feature of the rule is the position of dignity which it assigns to work. It is scarcely possible to realize at the present day the dishonour into which toil of all kinds had sunk in the days of Benedict. Not only had the institution of slavery degraded many kinds of occupation, but the gradual disappearance from Italy of the yeoman class, ruined and exiled by the concentration of great estates (latifundia), or slain in the ceaseless battles of competitors for empire or of barbarian invaders, left few save serfs and bondsmen to till the soil, while the military habits of the invading tribes led them to contemn any life except that of a warrior. It is the special glory of Benedict that he taught the men of his day that work, sanctified by prayer, is the best thing which man can do, and the lesson has never been wholly lost sight of since.*~~

~~*The new institute spread with even more astonishing Spread rapidity than the earlier monachism which it practically ae —s é : : * fluence of supplanted in the West, and its history thenceforward 15, ine Rene with one important exception, that of Western conventual dictine life for some centuries. Moreover, besides marking the order. close of the first or tentative era of monachism, when all*~~

~~*kinds of crude essays and experiments were being made, XVI. — 89*~~

~~*heard or seen outside. Chapter lxviii. bids a monk who has received a hard or impossible command to undertake it patiently and obedi- ently. If he find it beyond his powers, he may mention the cause quietly to his superior ; and, if the command is still persisted in, he must obey as best he can. Chapter lxix. forbids monks to uphold or defend one another in the monastery, even their nearest of kin. Chapter lxx. forbids striking or*~~

~~*excommunicating another, without the abbot's authority, and provides that children, until fifteen, shall*~~

~~*706*~~

~~*and being itself the beginning of a new and settled order, ‹t has the distinction of giving greater dignity and weight to the female side of monachism than had been the rule previously. Numerous and crowded as convents for women were in the early church, there is little evidence of their exercising any powerful influence as a factor in the practical religious life of the time, and though a few 'ndividual women of eminence, a Euphrosyne or a Macrina, illustrate the annals of the common life in the East, yet as a class the Basilian nuns do not play at all so important a part in ecclesiastical history as the spiritual descendants of Scholastica, sister of Benedict; for the same flexibility and comparative gentleness of his rule which made it healthier for men than its precursors were still more effective when dealing with the more sensitive organization of women. Accordingly, the Benedictine nuns offer a far greater variety of type than their Eastern sisters, and exerted a much more visible influence upon society, even before those newer forms of the organization of women's work in the church were devised which have given it much additional importance. Further, whereas the most serious and well-founded objection alleged against mona- chism is that by parting large companies of men and women irrevocably from each other, and treating this severance as an indispensable condition of the highest kind of life, it has tended to throw discredit on marriage and the family, and so to weaken society, which is based on family life alone, a strong counter-plea can be put in for the Benedictines. Not merely are they free, as already remarked, from the anti-social tendencies of Oriental monachism, which actually did disintegrate society in Egypt, but their institute was the one corrective in the early Middle Ages of those habits and ideas which tended to degrade the position of women. The cloister was not alone the single secure shelter for women who had no strong arm to rely on; but it provided the only alternative profession to marriage, and that one recognized by public opinion as of even higher distinction, and opening to women positions of substantial rank and authority, less precarious than the possession of temporal estates, which might only serve to attract cupidity, and so invite attack. The abbess of a great Benedictine house was more than*~~

~~*the equal of the wife of any save a very great noble ; and, as single women were thus not obliged to look to wedlock as the only path to safety and consequence, they were enabled to mate on more equal terms, and were less likely to be viewed as the mere toys or servants of the stronger Sex,*~~

~~*But the special eminence of the Benedictines, in which they were without even the semblance of rivalry till the Jesuits arose, is that they were a missionary, civilizing, and educational body. It is true that the first successful efforts to convert the barbarian conquerors of the empire somewhat precede their entrance on that field of labour, and Ulfila amongst the Mceso-Goths, Valentinus in Bavaria, and Sever- inus in Austria had achieved much even before Benedict was born; but their work needed to be taken up on a larger scale, and by a permanent organization not liable to be imperilled by the death of any one missionary or group of missionaries. And the task of laying the very foundations of civilized society, apart from the question of religious conversion, was as yet quite unessayed. It was as teachers of what for those times was scientific agriculture, as drainers of fens and morasses, as clearers of forests, as makers of roads, as tillers of the reclaimed soil, as archi- tects of durable and even stately buildings, as exhibiting a visible type of orderly government, as establishing the superiority of peace over war as the normal condition of life, as students in the library which the rule set up in every monastery, as the masters in schools open not*~~

~~*uicrely to their own postulants but to the children of secular families also, that they won their high place in history as benefactors of mankind. No doubt there was another side to this picture, even before the order began to deteriorate collectively ; but the good actually effected far exceeded the evils which may have accompanied it. The Benedictine institute was carried to Sicily by Placidus in 534; to France by Maurus, Simplicius, and their companions in 543; to Spain at a somewhat later and uncertain date; but did not touch any of the Teutonic countries till the very end of the century. That work was chiefly accomplished by another agency, that of the Celtic monks, themselves disciples of a Christianity presumably carried to Ireland from Gaul, and following a rule seemingly adapted from that of Pachomius.*~~

~~*The early history and constitution of Irish and Scottish monachism are too obscure to be set down with any con- fidence, but it is at least clear that it was mainly tribal in organization, and even less subject to episcopal authority than the Eastern and Italian forms. The same holds good of the Welsh communities which survived the Saxon invasions of Britain. Legend is abundant, trustworthy record is scanty, and only a few facts can be rescued from oblivion. Amongst them may be included the introduc- tion into Scotland of a species of monachism resembling that of Augustine, by Ninian, first missionary of the southern Picts, who borrowed his institute from Martin of Tours, 'and set up a cathedral, a house of canons, and a school of learning at Whithorn (Candida Casa) in Galloway before the close of the 4th century, himself dying, it is thought, about 432 (Ailred, Vit. Vin.). The foundation of the second model of Welsh monachism (the first has gone below the horizon of history) is ascribed to the bishops Germanus of Auxerre and Lupus of Troyes, who visited Britain in 429 to combat the prevalent Pelagianism, itself a form of opinion due to a British monk. They are alleged to have been, directly or through their disciples, founders of great monasteries and schools at Hentland on the Wye, at Llantwit, Llancarvan, Docwinni, Bangor, Whitland, &c. ; while among the more famous names connected with these and similar houses may be mentioned Asaph, David, Illtut, Dubric, Cadoc, Gildas the Wise, and Kentigern, the last-named being a zealous missionary. But Ireland was the true stronghold of Celtic monachism, and before the close of the 5th century was already thickly planted with religious houses. Armagh, Clonard, Aran, Lismore, Cluain-ednech, Clonfert, and, above all, Benchor or Bangor, the famous abbey of Comgall, on the coast of Down, near the entrance of Belfast Lough, are some of the more conspicuous founda- tions; and there are numberless stories recorded of the learning, the austerities, and the miracles of their inmates. The chief interest they have for the student of ecclesiastical history lies rather, however, in the colonies they sent forth than in their home operations, and it is to the great foundation of Columba (521-597) at Iona, the hive of missions and home of Western learning, more than to any Irish monastery, except Bangor, that the Celtic raid on heathenism is mainly due. The rule of Columba! resembles the Benedictine in prescribing three kinds of employment—prayer, work, and reading ; while under the last-named head not only Scripture but all attainable secular learning was included, and it is also certain that the work of*~~

~~copying MSS. in a careful and beautiful fashion, which became so important a part of monastic occupation, reached maturity first at Iona. It remains only to say in this connexion that the discipline of Iona, apparently borrowed from Irish use, made the abbot supreme, not~~

~~u Published by Dean Reeves in Colton's Visitation of Derry, p. 109, and in another form by Haddan and Stubbs, Councils, &c., ii. p. 119.~~

~~The Cel- tic move-~~

~~ment.~~

~~MONACH IS@~~

~~merely over his monks, as in other rules, but over bishops also, whose office was simply that of ordaining such as were to be promoted to holy orders;! they had no territorial jurisdiction as rulers, because the monastery,~~

~~707~~

~~and the 8th century was a time of deterioration amongst both the seculars and the regulars. To amend the former, Monastic Chrodegang, bishop of Metz, instituted in 760 an order reform-~~

~~of Canons Regular, living by a rule carefully based on and ° 8th century.~~

~~not the diocese, was the primary local unit in Celtic Chris- tianity, and thus a great founder or abbot was of more account and power than a bishop. Another famous pupil of Irish monachism, Columbanus, trained at Benchor along with his companion Gallus, exercised a powerful influence on the religious life of his time (543-615), not only as the founder of important monasteries at Luxeuil, Fontenay, and Bobbio, and as scholar and missionary, but also as the author of a rule, more severe both in its pro- visions and in its penalties than the Benedictine, with which it disputed for a considerable time the first place, and which it might very probably have displaced, had not the Benedictine institute, as of Italian origin, found that favour at Rome which a Celtic code, bearing more than one trace of divergence from Latin usages, could scarcely expect. With the mention of~~

~~another prominent name in the list of distinguished Celtic reformers and mission- aries, that of Fursey, abbot of Lagny near Paris (c. 650), we close this sketch of the Celtic movement in the 6th and 7th centuries, merely adding that its extent and influence may be partly estimated from the number of monasteries founded in England and various parts of the Continent by Irish monks, and the list of Celtic saints recoverable from the different martyrologies and similar records. The former amount to more than one hundred ; the latter to nearly three hundred.~~

~~Returning to the Benedictines, the most important event in their history after the consolidation of their institute was the favour they received from Gregory the Great, himself once a monk, who set himself to reform monastic discipline, then at a very low ebb save where the new foundation was at work. He enacted several regulations for the better government of monasteries, such as pro- hibiting the admission of any persons under eighteen, exacting two years' novitiate, enforcing inclosure, visiting relinquishment of monachism with imprisonment for life, and finally, in the Lateran synod of 601, exempting monasteries in all cases from the jurisdiction of bishops (a measure due, it appears, to episcopal misconduct and oppression rather than to monastic ambition), thereby abolishing the measure of control which the eighth canon of Chalcedon and the legislation of Justinian I. in 535 had left in the hands of the diocesan, and leaving only the still surviving check, that the bishop's consent was required for the erection of any new monastery. The mission of the monk Augustine to England in 596 was, however, destined to produce more immediate and for- tunate results than this piece of legislation. It brought Latin monachism into a part of Britain whence Welsh monachism had been long extirpated, and though little success attended the original foundation at Canterbury, yet two other houses were destined to be the cradles of great things. Jarrow-on-Tyne, founded by Benedict Biscop, trained the illustrious Bede, to whom is due the monastic school of York, which in its turn sent out Alcuin to recon- stitute European learning under the fostering hand of Charlemagne; Nutcell in Hampshire reared Boniface to be the apostle of Germany, and founder of one of the most celebrated and powerful monasteries of the Middle Ages, that of Fulda. Nevertheless, decline set in very soon,~~

~~*1 So Bede tells us: '*'Habere autem solet ipsa insula rectorem semper abbatem presbyterum, cujus juri et omnis provincia et ipsi etiam episcopi, ordine inusitato, debeant esse subjecti, juxta exemplum primi doctoris illius, qui non episcopus sed presbyter extitit et mona- chus" (list. Eccl., iii. 4); though, after all, the principle is precisely that of the Benedictine rule as applied to priests.*~~

~~*adapted from the Benedictine, with the bishop as abbot, the archdeacon as prior, and with a general likeness in all the details of community life, except that there was no obligation to poverty, and the canons were allowed to enjoy any private property and such fees as they might receive for the performance of religious rites. This rule became extremely popular, was sanctioned by the coun- cil of Aix-la-Chapelle in 816, and was adopted in most cathedrals of France, Germany, and Italy within fifty years after, besides making some way in England also. It prevailed till the institute of the Austin Canons was substituted for it. And, as regards the laxity amongst regulars at this time, there is extant a very interesting letter from Bede addressed to Ecgberht, archbishop of York, calling his attention to the excessive number of monasteries in northern England which were conducted without a rule, and were often merely fictitious institutions, founded by laymen with the object of obtaining charters of privilege which would exempt them from civil and military burdens,—such laymen then assuming, without warrant, the title and powers of abbots, and filling their houses either with monks expelled from their own societies, or with lay retainers induced to receive the tonsure and promise obedience. Bede calls on the archbishop to con- vene a synod and institute a visitation for the correction of these abuses. The cause of the decline of the monasteries is to be sought in their popularity, which brought them great estates and other kinds of wealth, leading to the relaxation of the vow of poverty, which was interpreted as merely forbidding individual property; in the growth of pluralities ; and in yet another cause which at first does not seem to lead in the same direction—the growing custom of ordaining monks, hitherto laymen, to fit them better for missionary work. But this led, not only to much more intercourse with the society of a lax and turbulent age than suited with claustral rules, but to ambition, as it became customary to fill several sees with monks from certain abbeys. The declension, notably in the habits of the superiors of wealthy houses, had become very marked, when a*~~

~~reformer arose in the person of a second Benedict, of Aniane in the modern department of the Hérault (750-821), who, in gratitude for an escape from drowning in the Ticino in 774, adopted the mon- astic life, and changed his name Witiza to that of the great Nursian monk. But he accounted the Benedictine rule too easy, and adopted instead the severest practices of Eastern monachism. He quitted the house of Seine, where he had been professed, and betook himself with a couple of companions to Aniane, where by 782 he had built a monastery for a thousand monks, with depend- ent cells, and collected a considerable library, paying special attention to the acquisition of the rules of the different monastic bodies both of East and West. He was transferred by his warm patron, the emperor Louis the Pious, to an abbey built for him near Aix-la-Chapelle, whence he acted as in some sense a superior-general and inspector of all the Benedictine houses, and drew up a harmony of all the rules he had collected to aid him in the task of reform. What he actually effected was the practical abolition of most of the competing codes, so as to leave the Benedictine in nearly sole possession, and to procure the enactment of a large body of canons in the council of Aix-la-Chapelle before mentioned, which laid down detailed provisions for the government of monasteries, whose very minuteness made them vexatious and ulti- mately intolerable, so that the reform lasted scarcely two~~

~~generations from its inception. Parallel with the time of de- clension and partial reform just described was the rise and decay of the noble and far-sighted school-system projected by Charlemagne, and entrusted to the superintendence of Alcuin. Its relation to monachism as distinguished from the history of education, is that one of its main features was the capitulary of 789, which directed that, besides the primary school attached to each monastery, all the more important houses were to found and open secondary ones also, with a higher range of subjects, even if such schools were interior or claustral, and only for the junior monks and novices, not exterior and free to the general public. Several of these schools rose to consider- able efficiency and repute, notably those of Fulda, St Gall, Tours, and Rheims, discharging to some extent the functions of universities. But the weakness of the later Carolings involved this plan in the troubles which ended in the break-up of the empire of the Franks, and the 10th century saw~~

~~*the end of it. In England monachism shared the common destiny of decay. It had been marked during the period known as the Heptarchy by a degree of royal favour unparalleled elsewhere ; for it may almost be said that the number of kings, queens, and persons of royal race who here betook themselves voluntarily to the cloister—and not under political compulsion, as often in con- temporary France—exceeds the aggregate of those in all other countries. Yet it is likely that the fashion set in this wise helped to hasten decay, by inducing many persons to adopt the monastic life with little taste for its restric- tions; and it is certain that secularity (chiefly manifesting itself in costly dress), riotousness, and drinking had become frequent amongst the English monks of the 8th and the early part of the 9th century. The decay was further precipitated by the spread of the institute of Chrodegang, which thinned the supply of recruits to monachism proper, as the easier life of canons regular was preferred. The game cause affected the convents of nuns, for an order of canonesses was established about this time on similar lines. The one bright spot in the history of 9th century mona- chism is the conversion of Sweden by Anskar, a monk trained in the famous house of Old Corbie in Picardy, which, albeit Benedictine, had been mainly planted by a colony from the stricter Columbanian house of Luxeuil, and had thus kept the traditions of a purer time almost unimpaired.*~~

~~*The 10th century—emphatically the "Dark Age" or "Age of Lead"—was the time when monachism, both in East and West, touched its lowest point. Three causes contributed to this in the West :—first may be placed the raids of the Northmen; next, the growth of the feudal system, converting abbots into secular lords in virtue of*~~

~~*the lands held by their monasteries being chargeable with |*~~

~~*feudal obligations ; and lastly, the seizure and impropria- tion of monastic revenues by kings, princes, and bishops. The last of these causes was at work in the East also, further complicated, as we learn from the decrees of a council held at Constantinople in 861, by the founda- tion of monasteries intended from the first merely as sources of pecuniary advantage to the founders; although the success of Greek monks in the conversion of Bul- garia, Moravia, and, somewhat later, southern Russia, showed that the*~~

~~*cloister had not become quite effete even under the conditions of the Byzantine empire in that era.*~~

~~*What the state of things was in the West, even at the outset of the 10th century, may be learned from the language of the council of Trosley, near Soissons, in 909. It speaks of the ruin of many abbeys by the heathen, and of the disorderly condition of many which survived. Monks abandon their profession ; married lay*~~

~~*MONACHISM*~~

~~*abbots, with guards and hunting retinue, occupy the cloisters of monks, canons, and nuns; and the rules are universally disregarded. But, as constantly before, so then, reformers were at hand. Berno first abbot of Cluny in France, Dunstan in England, and, somewhat later, Anno archbishop of Cologne in Germany, undertook, and to a considerable extent effected, the work of reform. Only the first of these, however, calls for special notice here; and it will suffice to say that Berno, after having been abbot of Beaume, was set by William the Pious, duke of Aquitaine, over his new foundation of Cluny in 910, where he speedily initiated a reform of the Bene- dictine rule, whose very name, and even the memory of the reforms of Benedict of Aniane, had been forgotten in nearly all the so-called religious houses of the time. This new rule is the first example of the establishment of an order within an already existing order, of which it still formed part, many subsequent instances of which occur later. It was stricter than the original code in several particulars, notably as regards fasting and silence ; and it laid especial stress on liturgical splendour. Cluny became the head of a large number of dependent houses, and, under the government of Berno's successors, Odo, Aymard, Majolus (who refused the papacy), Odilo, and Hugh L, rose to great eminence, but was nearly brought to ruin by Pontius, abbot in 1109, who was soon deposed, and succeeded by Hugh IL, and then by Peter the Venerable, who completed the work of drafting the statutes of the new order, begun long before, but not finished, by his pre- decessors. In his time (1093-1156) the Cluniacs spread over not only the whole of France, but had houses in Italy, Spain, England, Palestine, and in Constantinople itself, and the "Arch-Abbot," as he was called, had more than 300 churches, colleges, and monasteries under his authority. It is*~~

~~*enough to say, with regard to Dunstan's reforms in England, that they were directed to two objects: the substitution of monks for secular canons, and the introduction of the Benedictine rule, till then practically unknown in England, into the monasteries,—for the mona chism introduced by Augustine belonged to an earlier type. The 11th century is noticeable for several events in the history of monachism; first of which stands the foundation of the Order of Camaldoli by Romuald, early in the 11th century, a strict community of hermits, living by the system of an Eastern laura of detached cells; but this society has never been of much importance. The Order of Vallombrosa, founded by John Gualbert in 1039, is more remarkable, as being the first to introduce the grade of "lay-brothers," which plays so large a part in later monastic annals,—the object being at once to open the cloister to a class previously barred by the obligation to recite the office in choir, which necessitated a certain degree of education, and to lighten the strain on the choir-brethren by relegating the rough work of the monas- tery to an inferior grade of inmates, thus securing more time for reading and meditation for the cultured monks. A series of struggles between bishops and abbots in this century in respect of monastic jurisdiction—the practice having constantly vacillated in despite of Gregory the Great's decision 400 years earlier—issued mainly, though not wholly, in favour of exemption, and the reforms pushed everywhere rehabilitated monachism in popularity. The great stimulus given to the spirit of ecclesiastical dis- cipline and energy by the Hildebrandine movement con- tinued not only during the reign of Gregory VII., but for a considerable time after: amongst its results were the Order of Grammont, founded in 1074, but not transferred to the place whence it is named till 1124; the far more celebrated and influential Carthusians, a peculiarly ascetic*~~

~~*New orders,*~~

~~*ith cen-*~~

~~*tury.*~~

~~*Military orders.*~~

~~*Mm OTNrA Coll 1% Bf*~~

~~*community, established by Bruno at the Chartreuse, near Grenoble, in 1084, which still boasts that it is the only order which has never been reformed on the ground of deviation from its original institute; and the Order of Fontevraud, founded for both monks and nuns (more strictly, canons and canonesses) by Robert of Arbrissel in 1100. Regarding the last named two remarkable facts may be cited: that the founder in 1115 entrusted the superior-generalship of the whole institute to the abbess of the nuns; and that he provided that new abbesses should always be elected from secular women, as having more practical knowledge of affairs and capacity for ad- ministration than women trained in a cloister. There is yet one order more belonging to this period of new foundations, of higher note than most —that of the Cister- cians, founded by Robert of Molesme in 1098 at Citeaux, near Dijon. This society, chiefly famous as that to which Bernard of Clairvaux belonged, carried its asceticism into a region whence the other monastic bodies had banished it, that of Divine service. The barest simplicity in build- ings, church furniture, and worship was enjoined by the rule: plain linen or fustian vestments, iron chandeliers, brass or iron censers, no plate save a chalice and a tube (and those of silver rather than of gold), no pictures, stained glass, or images, and only a few crosses of painted wood, and the most rigid simplicity in chanting,—such was the ceremonial code with which they challenged the costly ritual of Cluny. A more durable innovation was the institution of "General Chapters," to which every abbot of a Cistercian house had a right to be summoned to share in the delibera- tions held at the chief establishment, and which he was even bound to attend, that, while each dependent house thus obtained a representation in the parliament of the order, it could be called on to render to the central authority an account of its own doings. The Austin Canons, already mentioned, were probably founded at Avignon about 1061, and the Order of Prémontré by Norbert in 1120. This society was simply a stricter body of Austin Canons, stand- ing towards them much as Cluny did to the Benedictines. But there are yet two other institutes of this active period which differ from all previous foundations. So far, the new orders are merely modifications, more or less sweeping, of the original Egyptian system, but the crusades gave birth to two entirely unprecedented forms of monachism : —the Mili- tary Orders, of which the most celebrated are the Templars, the Hospitallers, and the Teutonic Knights ; and convents of women, affiliated to these orders, who were appointed to serve in the lazar-houses, hospitals,*~~

~~*and similar institutions attached to them, and whose rule, for the first time in monastic history, was drawn up on a distinctly active and not a contemplative basis. Work of the sort had been done long before, but only as a casual accident, not as the primary object of a community.*~~

~~*The military orders arose in a more accidental fashion than any other variety of monachism, being due to the desire felt to lessen the perils which attended pilgrimage to Jerusalem, then almost as much part of the religious craving of Christendom as the hajj to Mecca is with devout Moslems. The Templars were at first designed only as an armed escort to protect the visitors from attack, and the idea of permanent guardianship of the Holy Places did not shape itself till later; while the Hospitallers (afterwards famous as Knights of Rhodes and of Malta, as the main bulwark of Christendom against the Turks, and as main- taining the police of the Mediterranean against all pirates and rovers), borrowed the first idea of their institute from the knightly order of St Anthony of Vienne, founded in Dauphiné about 1095, and devoted themselves originally to tending sick pilgrims at Jerusalem. The Teutonic Knights date from the third crusade, and owe their foundation to*~~

~~*709*~~

~~*the sufferings of the duke of Swabia's army at the siege of Acre, as it would seem that the Hospitallers were either unable or unwilling to supply the needed assistance. These knights, when at last the Eastern crusades were abandoned, turned their arms against the heathen of Prussia, which they conquered, as also Livonia, Courland, and Pomerania, besides keeping the Slavonic enemies of Germany in check by frequent raids into Lithuania and Poland, holding their ground as a sovereign order for three centuries, till the Reformation brought about their fall. The common char- acteristic of all these orders was the union of the seemingly incompatible qualities of the monk and the soldier in the same persons, of the convent and the barrack in the same house. But the contrast was not so sharp to medieval eyes as it would be to modern ones ; for while knighthood was surrounded with religious ceremonies and sanctions on the one hand, and on the other the feudal rank of bishops and abbots made them in some sense military chiefs, occa- sionally even taking the field in person, there was no great difficulty*~~

~~*in accepting the permanent combination of what was often found casually united. The military orders passed away when their work was ended: the Templars, as the victims of a great crime, closed by a ghastly tragedy ; the Hospitallers, and those Spanish and Portuguese orders which were enrolled as regiments against the Arab invaders of the Peninsula, though titularly still existing, yet really ceased to be more than a name when the Moslem power in Europe was finally broken. But the active organization of women was a more fruitful germ, and has never since ceased to put forth new developments, varying with the noticed wants of each period. To this epoch belongs also the beginning of that policy of the Roman see of utilizing the monastic orders, won over by special privileges and exemptions, as a body of supporters—almost a militia—more to be relied on than the secular clergy, and thereby the seed of conflict between seculars and regulars, destined to work much evil later, was sown, and also the beginning made of that dena- tionalization of monachism which tended from the first to its unpopularity and decay.*~~

~~*It was found that a new order was the best safety-valve for enthusiasm which might become dangerous if dis- couraged, but which could be made a valuable ally if allowed to take shape in a fresh society, hoping to surpass all its precursors ; and it is worth remarking that the one occasion when this wise policy was departed from, when Peter Waldo vainly sought in 1179 recognition and sanction from Pope Alexander III. for his proposed institute of mission preachers, gave rise to a sect (the Waldenses) which is still existing, and which has given trouble to the Roman Church quite disproportionate to its numbers and influence. The Carmelites, founded by Berthold of Calabria on Mount Carmel about 1180, and incorporated under rule by Albert, Latin patriarch of Jerusalem in 1209, were the last order of importance which sprang up at this time; for the Gilbertines, an English order founded at Sempringham in Lincolnshire in 1148, curious chiefly for their double monasteries for men and women; the Beguines, c. 1170 (who are, however, notable for their semi-secular and parochial organization, whence many later active bodies have borrowed hints); the Humiliati, ec. 1196; and the Trinitarians, for the ransom of captives amongst the Moors and Saracens, founded by John de Matha and Felix de Valois in 1197, never rose to great influence or popularity, though the Servites, an order of the year 1223, became powerful in Italy. This period of rapid multiplication*~~

~~was quickly followed by one of equally rapid decay, the first to show clear tokens of degeneracy being the once rigid Cistercians, who never recovered their old moral foot- ing, and who, it may be mentioned, were accountable for much of that hatred of the Church of the Pale in Ireland~~

~~Mendi- cant Orders, or Friars.~~

~~by the natives, which, given fresh fuel by the Reformation, has lasted to the present day.!~~

~~Yet another fresh departure in the history of monachism, in some respects the most momentous of all, was taken in the 13th century by the institution of the Mendicant Orders, or Friars. Pope Innocent IIL, in the 13th of the 70 constitutions or canons he promulgated at the Lateran council in 1215, had expressly forbidden the foundation of any new orders, bidding all who desired to embrace the monastic life join some approved community, and similarly directing that such as desired to found new houses should take their rule and constitution from one of the recognized societies. But circumstances were too strong for him, and this very pope was destined himself to sanction two of the most remarkable societies which the Latin Church has ever produced. 'The time was an anxious one. The speculative activity of the age, coupled with the abuses in the church, was multiplying sects, formidable in numbers, and still more from the contrast their austere mode of life presented, not only to that of the secular society of the day, but to that of the ecclesiastics, notably those of rank, whose pomp and luxury gave rise to the first faint stirrings of a revolutionary spirit amongst the commons, which the great pope, who was then the most conspicuous figure in Europe, did not fail to observe. No effectual weapon of resistance seemed at hand; the parochial clergy, yielding to the difficulties which an isolated rural life throws in the way of intellectual effort (far graver then than even now), had almost everywhere sunk into sloth and incapacity ; the monastic orders were content, in the better instances, with maintaining their own internal discipline, and had no surplus energy for external work, while in the worse examples (as in that of the Cistercians, just referred to) they served rather as beacons of warning than as patterns for imitation ; and, in~~

~~*short, there was an ever-increasing mass of home mission work to be done, and no one to do it.*~~

~~*But the two men who were to do it were already at hand in the persons of Francis Bernardone of Assisi and Dominic Guzman of Osma. The ruling idea in the mind of the former was the elevation of poverty to the first place amongst Christian graces, as the most obvious way of conforming the life of a Christian to that of the founder of his faith; the more intellectual Spaniard dreamed of an aggressive body of skilfully-trained preachers, able at once to grapple with the subtle dialectic of the enemies of the established creed, and to appeal in clear and homely language to the uneducated, amongst whom the Albigenses and other sectaries were making considerable conquests. Francis, the poet and devotee, in renouncing even the scantiest provision which the strictest orders of his time secured for their members, and bidding his followers to live on alms daily begged, taking, in the most literal sense,*~~

~~*1 There is a very curious letter from Arnulf, bishop of Lisieux, to Pope Alexander ITI. (1159-1181), asking him to dissolve the Benedictine abbey of Grestain in that diocese, and to draft its inmates into other houses, which illustrates both the kind of abuses which were sometimes found and the desire of the authorities to suppress them. He charges the monks with lack of charity and hospitality, in that they reserved even the broken scraps from the common table as perquisites for their private friends ; that they habitually quarrelled, and wounded one another with their knives, being prevented from homicide only by the knife-blades having no point; that one monk had actually murdered the cook, who had complained of his visits to the cook's wife; that the abbot did not provide for the daily wants of the community, but allowed the monks to roam abroad, picking up food for themselves as best they might ; that some of them had caused the death of a sick woman by plunging her into ice-cold water under pretext of working a miraculous cure ; that the abbot was frequently absent on pretence of business but really living a loose life; that he had been thus two years in England, till recalled by the bishop, who was forced to send him away again, after appointing a deputy ; that this deputy, when drunk, had wounded two of the monks, who thereupon murdered him ; so that the house was practically past reformation, and ought to be dissolved.*~~

~~*no thought for the morrow, appealed to the popular imagination, always ready to kindle at the sight of genuine self-sacrifice ; Dominic, with not less insight as a thinker whose first care was for doctrinal orthodoxy, as that of Francis was for personal piety, saw that there was a demand ready to spring up for more exact and intelligent religious teaching than could then be had, save in a few great cities. The occasion which urged him to the task he undertook is noteworthy. He had long been a canon of Osma, the strictest and sternest member of an ascetic community, when in 1203 he had to go on a journey with his bishop, which brought them into the very midst of the Albigenses in the county of Toulouse, where they saw how powerless the clergy were to contend against their rivals. On their road home the bishop and Dominic met the three papal legates returning discomfited from Languedoc, but attended with as much pomp as a triumphal progress would have justified. Dominic rebuked them sternly, tell- ing them that it was not by splendid retinues and costly garb that the heretics won their converts, but by zealous preaching, by humility, by austerity, and by at least seeming holiness. Both the new founders sought and obtained at Rome, after some difficulty, the approval of their new institutes, and that in the very year 1215 which had seen the formal prohibition of all fresh orders. Francis speedily returned to his home, but Dominic, whose idea had by this time expanded from that of converting merely the Albigenses of Provence and Languedoc to that of influencing the whole world of nominal Christians and outer heathen, settled himself in Rome, where the pope appointed him to the important office of Master of the Sacred Palace, which has ever since been held by a Dominican, and carries with it the authority of chief censorship of the press. The two new foundations borrowed from each other, Francis copying Dominic's scheme of itinerant preachers, and Dominic imposing on his disciples the mendicant poverty of Assisi. These two particulars, the total absence—at any rate at first—of such endowments as had proved a snare to the older societies, and the substitution of itinerancy for inclosure, are the features which distinguish the friars from the monks who preceded them. The Franciscan institute was a bold attempt to democratize the church; Dominic's Friar Preachers, though recruited freely from men of a humble grade, have always had somewhat more of an aristocratic tone about them, due to their intellectual calling ; they have held a high place in*~~

~~*Christian art, counting amongst them such names as Fra Angelico and Baccio della Porta ; and their reputation for orthodoxy and for a purer type of moral theology than the Jesuit one has always stood high. They also count amongst their members the two most eminent divines of the Middle Ages, Albertus Magnus and Thomas Aquinas, and they have been fruitful in producing zealous missionaries ; but the one great blot on their career is that they have been the directors and officials of the Inquisition ever since the formal constitu- tion of that tribunal as a permanent organization. The Franciscans, less distinguished for mental triumphs than their competitors, have yet some famous names, chief of which are Duns Scotus and Roger Bacon—for Bonaven- tura, though set by the Franciscans as the '"Seraphic Doctor" in competition with Aquinas, the " Angelic Doctor" of the Doniinicans, is scarcely entitled to very high intellectual rank—and at one time they seemed likely to establish as firm a hold on the university of Oxford as the Dominicans did on that of Paris. The swiftest success and popularity attended the two new orders; privileges and exemptions were showered on them from Rome ; wealth, in despite of their vow of mendicancy, was emulously thrust upon them by the laity ; and, above all,*~~

~~*MONACHISM*~~

~~*a remarkable and widespread religious revival, a dead-lift to ministerial efficiency in every direction, repaid their early labours, while they had between them almost a monopoly of the popedom for nearly two hundred years. And one peculiarity of their organization gave them a degree of strength which no other orders possessed. Each monastery of the older societies was practically isolated and independent of all others, unless it were itself a dependent priory or cell belonging to a greater house. Some societies had, it is true, general chapters, but these were rare, and at best only effectual in establishing a certain uniformity of practice in all houses of the same rule. But the Friars, like the Templars and Hospitallers of an earlier day, and like the Jesuits of a later one, were enrolled in something of military fashion, under a superior- general, with wide powers, who directed and controlled their actions from one central point. Every group of neighbouring friaries was formed into a congregation, under a local head or provincial, and he was always in direct communication with the general, so that a common government united the whole body into a compact mass.*~~

~~*But their very success was fatal to their character. The vow of poverty was the first part of their institute to break down. Even before they began to be counted amongst the richest orders of Christendom, there is indisputable evidence—that of Bonaventura, himself general of the Franciscans—that the mendicant system was working nothing but mischief. He tells us, writing while the order was still very young, and within fifty years of the founder's death, that it was even more en- tangled in money cares and business concerns than the endowed communities, precisely because there were no funds available to fall back on in emergencies; that the brethren, discouraged from work by mendicancy, were habitually idle; that they roamed about in disorderly fashion under pretext of questing; that they were such brazen and shameless beggars as to make a Franciscan as much dreaded by travellers as a highwayman; that they made undesirable acquaintances, thus giving rise to evil reports and scandal; that conventual offices had to be en- trusted to untried, unspiritual, and incompetent brethren ; that vast sums were lavished on costly buildings; and that the friars were greedy in the pursuit of burial fees and of legacies, so that they encroached upon the rights of the parochial clergy. If such were the mischiefs at work before the first zeal had begun to cool, it may readily be gathered how entire was the failure at a later time. Indeed, as regards the Franciscans, not only did they endeavour to evade the stringency of their institute even in their founder's lifetime, but the whole society was soon divided into two hostile camps, one of which desired to adhere closely to the original rule, while the other was content to fall in with the habits of the "possessioners," as they had been wont contemptuously to name the endowed orders. And what is very curious in this connexion is that the friars who were loyal to the principle of poverty broke away for the most part from the church, forming new sects, such as the Fratricelli, or attaching themselves to elder ones, like the Beghards and the Apostolici, which handed on in secret the Gnostic traditions of the third century, apparently stamped out in the crusade against the Albigenses, while those who openly disregarded the will of their founder remained steadfastly in the Latin church. No order, except the Benedictines, has had so many branches and reforms as the Franciscans ; amongst which it will suffice to name the Capuchins, the Minims, the Observants, and the Recollects; while the Poor Clares, the nuns of the institute, have also divided into Clarissines and*~~

~~Urbanists. The institution of Tertiaries, seculars affiliated to the order as honorary members, while~~

~~711~~

~~continuing to live in the world, and adopting a certain modified daily rule, was a powerful factor in the success and strength of the order, and was adopted, but with less conspicuous results, by the Dominicans, The rivalry of these two great bodies with each other, prolonged with much bitterness for centuries, and their disputes with the parochial clergy, whom they long displaced in general repute and influence, belong rather to general church history than to the annals of monachism, and may be passed by with this brief allusion ; while it suffices to say that all the support they, and the other less important communities of the same kind, such as the Carmelite and Austin Friars, received from the popes, whose most effective allies they were in every country where their houses were found, was not able to avert their decline in general estimation; and there is no figure in later medizval literature on which the vials of contempt and indignation are so freely poured as on: the begging friar, and that, it must be said, deservedly.~~

~~As the 13th century is the apogee of later monachism, Decline so the decline begins steadily at the very outset of the of mona-~~

~~14th (which is also the date of ordination becoming the normal custom for choir-monks, instead of the exception, as formerly), continuing down to the crash of the Reforma- tion! The great schism of the West, the rise of the Wickliffites and Lollards in England, and of the body later known as Hussites in Bohemia, could not fail to act injuriously on the monastic orders; and, though the creation of fresh ones continued, none of those founded during this era were influential, and few durable. It will suffice to name some of the more prominent :—the Olivetans in 1313, who were rigid Benedictines; the nuns of Bridget of Sweden in 1363, who followed a rule compiled from those of Basil and Augustine; the Hieronymite monks in 1374; the Brethren of the Common Life, founded by Gerard Groot in 1376, who did much for education and in home mission work, but are chiefly famous now in virtue of one member of their society, Thomas a Kempis; the Hieronymite Hermits in 1373-1377 ; the Minims in 1435; the Barnabites, a preaching and edu- cational order, in 1484; the Theatins (a body of Clerks~~

~~*Regular who aimed at little more than raising the tone of clerical life, made but slight pretension to austerity, and are, indeed, mainly noticeable as having suggested to Igna- tius Loyola several points which he adopted in regulating the mode of life to be pursued by the members of his institute) in 1524; and the Capuchins in 1525.*~~

~~*In the Reformation era itself the monastic bodies had sunk so low in the estimation of even the rulers of the church that one clause in the report of the committee of cardinals appointed by Pope Paul III. (a body composed of Sadolet, Contarini, Reginald Pole, Giberti, Fregoso, Badia, Aleandro, and Caraffa, afterwards Paul IV.), delivered in 1538, was worded as follows :—*~~

~~*'* Another abuse which needs correction is in the religious orders, beeause they have deteriorated to such an extent that they are a grave scandal to seculars, and do the greatest harm by their example. We are of opinion that they should be all abolished,*~~

~~*not so as toinjure [the vested interests of] any one, but by forbidding them to receive novices ; for in this wise they can be quickly done*~~

~~*1 The language of Nicolas de Clamenges (1360-1440)—reetor of the university of Paris, known as the " Doctor Theologus "—in his treatise De Corrupto Ecclesie Statu, paints the moral decay of the monastic bodies, and especially of the Mendicants, in the very darkest colours. He not only charges them with waste, idleness, gluttony, drunkenness, and profligacy, but alleges the condition of convents of nuns to be such that there was little practical difference between allowing a girl to take the veil and openly consigning her to a life of public vice. And the Revelations of Bridget of Sweden (1802-1878), approved by the coun- cils of Constance and Basel, and by Popes Urban VI., Martin V., and Paul V., fully confirm the darkest features of this testimony as regards the religious houses of the 14th century.*~~

~~*712*~~

~~*away with without wrong to any oue, and good religious can be put in their place. At present we think the best thing to be done is to disiniss all the*~~

~~*unprofessed youths from their monasteries."*~~

~~*As this formal document showed the current of high ecclesiastical opinion, so the lay view took expression in the Epistole Obscurorum Virorum of Ulrich von Hutten, which was to the Dominicans of the 16th century almost what the Provinciales of Pascal were to the Jesuits of the 17th; while they came also under the more delicate scalpel of Erasmus's wit. Not that the objections were wholly new, for it is evident from Thomas Aquinas's defence of monachism against its detractors that they were nearly all used in the 13th century. The interests involved were, however, too vast and complicated, the supposed impolicy of an admission on so large a scale of the charges alleged against monachism by the men of the New Learning too serious, to allow of any such sweeping measure of reform as that proposed by the cardinals being carried out. A certain amount of discouragement shown towards the older societies; the enactment of some partial corrections by the council of Trent, not touching any principle whatever, but apparently saying something because public feeling looked for something to be said ; and, above all, the crea- tion of a new type of order, the famous Company of the Jusurrs (1534), represent the total action taken by the Roman Church during the actual crisis of the Refor- mation. Apart from such direct revolts from the Latin obedience as those in Bern, Zurich, Denmark, and Sweden, which at once involved the monasteries in the general overthrow of the old system of things religious, the most remarkable proceedings in the reaction against monachism were those taken in England, at a time when no breach with the Roman Curia was thought of. So far back as the 13th century Kings John and Edward I, and yet again in 1837 Edward IIL, had confiscated the 'alien priories," as those houses were called which were depend- encies of foreign monasteries, and the last named let out their lands and tenements until the peace with France in 1361, when he restored their estates; and similar raids were made on them both in his reign and in that of Richard IT. Henry IV. showed them more favour; but in 1410 the House of Commons proposed the confiscation of all the temporalities held by bishops, abbots, and priors, petition- ing the crown to employ their revenues in paying a standing army of knights and soldiers, in augmenting the incomes of some of the nobles and gentry, in endowing a hundred hospitals, and in making small yearly payments to the secular clergy. This fact attests the unpopularity of the church and the*~~

~~*religious orders at the time, and, though the large scheme was dropped, yet in 1416 parlia- ment dissolved all the alien priories, and vested their estates in the crown. They were for the most part applied to ecclesiastical purposes; but some portion, at any rate, passed into private hands, and was permanently alienated. Hence there was nothing to create surprise, much less opposition, when Cardinal Wolsey in 1523 obtained bulls from the pope authorizing the suppression of forty small monasteries and the application of their revenues to educational foundations, on the plea that these lesser houses were quite useless, and not homes of either religion or learning, whereas a learned clergy was imperatively needed to combat the new religious opinions which were making rapid way. And that the monasteries had been subject to serious vicissitudes all along appears from the fact that only about one half of all the founda- tions known to have been made in England were in existence at the date of the dissolution. There is little reason to trust the charges of immorality brought against the monks when Henry VIII. had once resolved on the pillage of the monasteries, seeing how the path opened*~~

~~*by Wolsey could be followed up. The characters of the king himself, of Cromwell, his chief agent in the disso- lution, and of Layton, Legh, and others of the visitors appointed to inquire into the condition of the houses, are such as to deprive their statements of all credit; and, besides, the earlier Act of dissolution, granting the smaller monasteries to the king, limits the charges of misconduct to them, expressly acquitting the larger houses. Never- theless, when the appetite for plunder had increased with the first taste of booty, accusations of precisely the same sort were brought up against the great monasteries, though in no instance has any verifiable proof been pre- served.! But there can be no reasonable doubt (especially in view of the visitations of Archbishop Warham and other pre-Reformation prelates), that the religious houses, viewed simply as corporate estates, had been very badly managed for a considerable time, were heavily encumbered, and a weight round the neck of financial progress in England ; and that, as spiritual agencies, they had mainly outlived their usefulness, so that, lamentable as were the circum- stances of their destruction, and scandalous as was the waste of the property seized, there is little reason to*~~

~~*sup- pose that any practical benefit would have flowed from their continuance, whatever might have been the advantages of an honest and economical measure of reform, or even of transfer to other purposes on the principle of cy prés.? The negative evidence of the effeteness of the older orders supplied by their very small share in the counter- Reformation, which lay virtually in the hands of the Jesuits alone, is reinforced by the reports made by the emissaries of the new company to their superiors, which attest that the accusations of the German reformers against both the secular and regular clergy on the score of ignor- ance and dissoluteness were only too well founded.*~~

~~*Accordingly several new societies were instituted during Later the latter half of the 16th century, aiming at putting new Societies.*~~

~~*wine into the old bottles of the Carmelites, Cistercians, Augustinians, Dominicans, and Benedictines ; but none of them proved of much importance. A larger measure of success attended some established on an active basis, such as the Fathers of Christian Doctrine, a catechizing order erected by Pius V. in 1571; two communities for tending the sick, one founded in Italy by Camillo de' Lelli in 1584, the other, the Brothers of Charity, by John of God at Granada in 1538, but not formally sanctioned till 1572; and still more prosperity attended the Ursuline Nuns, a community chiefly devoted to the education of young girls, founded at Brescia by Angela de' Merici in 1537, and confirmed by Paul III. in 1544. Yet, with the single exception of the Jesuits, no new society could be said to have laid hold in any degree of the popular mind, nor were the attempts to revivify the elder bodies continued. It remained for two newer still to rehabilitate the waning respect for monachism of all kinds, and that by borrowing one chief feature of the Jesuit organization, the abandon- ment of that principle of isolation from the outer world which lies at the root of true monachism.? Of these the*~~

~~*Te EEE 1 A full examination of the case against the monasteries will be ae in Dixon, History of the Church of England, vol. i. pp. 324-*~~

~~*3.*~~

~~2 The number of houses suppressed and overthrown by the two Acts of 1536 and 1538 was as follows :—186 Benedictine houses, 173 Augus- tinians, 101 Cistercians, 33 Dominican, Franciscan, Carmelite, and Austin friaries, 32 Premonstratensians, 28 Knights Hospitallers, 25 Gilbertines, 20 Cluniacs, 9 Carthusians, 3 Fontevraud, 3 Minoresses, 2 Bonhommes, 1 Brigittine ; total, 616. Their aggregate revenues were valued at £142,914, 12s, 9d. annually.~~

~~3 Soon after the Jesuits rose into note and popularity, a very curious and little known extension of their institute was made in Flanders. Two English ladies, acting with the sympathy and counsel if not at the recommendation of F. Gerard, rector of the Jesuit college at Liége, founded a community which they named Jesuitesses, adopting~~

~~first was the Oratory, founded by Philip Neri in 1558, but not approved by authority till 1577, and copied inde- pendently by Cardinal de Berulle at Paris in 1611. There were no vows imposed on the members of this society, though they lived under rule, and they employed them- selves in doing all kinds of clerical work under episcopal supervision. The Italian house is chiefly celebrated as having included the famous Cardinal Baronius amongst its earliest recruits ; but the French one held a high place in the religious revival of the 17th century, well-nigh rivalling the Benedictines of St Maur in learning (with such representatives as Simon, Thomassin, Morin, and Malebranche), and the reformed Cistercians of Port-Royal in piety, though sharing with the latter the reproach of Jansenism. But the second was far more influential, and has been fruitful ever since in the works of its copyists as well as in its own. It was the institute of the Sisters of Charity, established by Vincent de Paul in 1634, on the lines of the ancient community of the Hospitaller Nuns of St Augustine, but with some remarkable modi- fications, not only in respect of the vows, which were only yearly and inward, but in the spirit of their discipline, as formulated in his own memorable words,—" Your convent must be the houses of the sick ; your cell, the chamber of suffering ; your chapel, the parish church; your cloister, the streets of the city, or the wards of the hospital; your rule, the general vow of obedience; your grille, the fear of God; your veil to shut out~~

~~*the world, holy modesty." The original scheme of Francis de Sales for the Nuns of the Visitation, founded in 1610, was almost identical ; but the opposition was then far too strong, and he was forced to make them a cloistered community. Vincent's order of Mission Priests, more commonly known as Lazar- ists, was also a successful and useful institute, though not vying in the extent of its influence with the other,*~~

~~*713*~~

~~*the convents—of whose real character we get at least one trustworthy glimpse in the account of the abbey of Mau- buisson which Angélique Arnauld reformed—came home to all the Huguenots and their friends, because both before and after the legal continuance of the edict of Nantes they were used (according to a very early application of monastic houses not yet obsolete) as prisons, where Huguenot women and girls were shut up in order to bring about their conver- sion, forcibly if necessary, but somehow in any case. And there is evidence to show that the Huguenots resented this policy most bitterly, not only on polemical grounds, but be- cause they were firmly persuaded that the morals of their wives, daughters, and sisters were in no less peril than their faith in such places. When to this sentiment is added the hostility of the Jansenists to the school of opinion which had persecuted them, razed their famous house of Port- Royal, and literally flung the bones of its deceased members to the dogs, it will be easy to judge how powerful were the forces mustering for the overthrow of monachism, and how little even such stern reforms as De Rancé's at La Trappe, which has always had a marked attraction for soldiers, could do towards abating the danger. Nor were there wanting public scandals and cases before the law- courts which helped to fan the rising flames of hatred. Another cause which contributed much to the decay of discipline and of practical religion in monasteries of both sexes was the custom which prevailed throughout the 16th, 17th, and 18th centuries, of disposing of the younger members of poor but noble families in the cloister as a safe and reputable provision, without any regard to the vocation of those so dedicated, and merely because the sum which sufficed to secure permanent admission was much smaller than that necessary to purchase a commis- sion or public office for a son, or to provide an adequate dowry for a daughter.?*~~

~~At the Revolution, the religious Suppres- houses, amounting (without reckoning various minor colleges sion of and dependent establishments) to 820 abbeys of men and Soe, 255 of women, with aggregate revenues of 95,000,000 livres, monas-~~

~~were suppressed by the laws of 13th February 1790 and teries.~~

~~which, as has been implied, has powerfully affected the organization of many of the active communities which have since been formed. No religious body did more to enable French monachism to bear up against the general~~

~~obloquy it encountered during the 16th, 17th, and early 18th centuries,—a temper on the part of the public due to more than one cause. In the first place, the wars of religion had done much to harden and coarsen the feelings on both sides, and rigid adherence to the extreme positions of Catholics or Huguenots, as the case might be, was set far above any gentler and higher ideas. Next, the monas- teries of both sexes had all but universally fallen into the patronage of the crown (in virtue of the concordat of Bologna, between Pope Leo X. and Francis I.), and were jobbed away as apanages for a dissolute nobility, who squandered the revenues, and suffered discipline to become relaxed, often to the generation of serious scandals. This malversation operated in two ways. It made the monas- teries hard and bad landlords, grasping closely all the feudal privileges and monopolies which they continued to enjoy, a proceeding which bore hard on the tenants and labourers, so that the monks shared to the full the unpopu- larity of the nobles (precisely as was the case in Germany, during the Peasants' War of 1525); and the evil repute of~~

~~the rule and organization of the famous company, and taking the three usual vows, but, with a bold disregard of precedent, not only omitting the customary vow of inclosure, but actually sending the members of the society out as itinerant preachers. Their object was to train a body of emissaries for the Roman Catholic mission in England, who might obtain entrance and escape the incidence of the penal laws in a manner impracticable for men. They had considerable success for a time, and Mrs Ward, their projector, obtained some degree of papal approval, and became " mother-general"' over more than 200 of these female preachers in the various colleges of the~~

~~*society. But after an existence of about eighty years it was suppressed by Pope Urban VIII. in 1680.*~~

~~*18th August 1792. In Germany the storm had broken somewhat earlier, if not quite so violently. The Thirty Years' War had wrought much mischief to not a few of the religious houses, without taking into account the great number which had been destroyed in the territories of the Protestant princes ; and when the death of Maria Theresa in 1780 left her son Joseph II. free to act as he pleased, he dissolved the Mendicant orders, and suppressed, in despite of the personal remonstrances of Pius VI., the greater number of monasteries and convents in his dominions. In Italy, despite the multiplication of new institutes, the process of decay continued throughout the 17th century, and one most remarkable testimony to the fact appears in the report of the Venetian ambassadors at Rome in 1650 to their government of an interview they had with Pope Alexander VII.*~~

~~*1 One of these is interesting, as settling a point which has been often disputed,—the existence of those monastic dungeons known by the name of "in-pace," familiar to the readers of Marmion. It is the condemnation of the abbot of Clairvaux by the parlement of Paris in 1763 to a fine of 40,000 crowns for causing the death of a prisoner in an "in-pace."*~~

~~*2 This worked much evil in France, but produced perhaps even greater mischief in Germany, where what were styled "Noble Abbeys" were not uncommon, entrance to which, save in the inferior capacity of lay-members, was barred against all who could not prove patrician descent and a certain number of armorial quarterings. A relic of this survives in a few secular Stiftungen (Protestant and Catholic) for noble canonesses in Germany; and the notion was at any rate as respectable as that which holds good in some communities even now, where women who can pay a certain sum at entrance are admitted as choir-sisters, while those who cannot do so must accept the humbler position of lay- sisters.*~~

~~*XVI.—go*~~

~~*"The Pontiff. . . began by saying that for some time past the Apostolic See, considering not the abundance only, but the super- fluity of religious institutes, had become convinced that some of them, degenerating from the first design of their founders, had lapsed into a total relaxation of discipline, and that it was just as advisable for the church as for the laity to adopt the expedients used by wise husbandmen when they see that the multitude of branches has impoverished their vines instead of making them more fruitful. That a beginning had been made in that matter by sup- pressing some orders; but this was not enough. ... A great number of very small convents had been suppressed, . . . and it was proposed to continue the work by proceeding to the final abolition of certain others which, by their licentious mode of life, fJled the world with scandal and murmurs. . . . That he proceeded slowly, because he desired, in a matter of so much importance, to obtain the good-will of the secular princes. . " The remarks closed with a recommendation to the republic of Venice to suppress the canons of San Spirito and the Cruciferi in their city, and to apply their revenues towards defraying the cost of the war in Candia. (Ranke, Die Rom. Pdpste, App. No. 129.)*~~

~~*But the policy thus indicated was not carried out by Alexander VII.'s successors, and there is evidence that things did not mend as time went on. The emperor Francis L., in his character of grand-duke of Tuscany, caused an edict to be published at Florence in 1751, forbidding the clergy to acquire property in mortmain, and issued together with it a paper of instructions pointing out the grave social disadvantages of enriching artificial families, such as convents, colleges, and the like, at the ex- pense of natural families. And the menace implied in these documents was carried into operation by the suppression of several convents of nuns, for which the reluctant con- sent of the pope (Benedict XIV.) was extorted. When Francis died in 1765, and was succeeded in Tuscany by his brother Peter Leopold, the latter began his reign with what may be styled a formal act of war against the Roman Curia, by declaring the bull Jn Cana Domini null and void in Tuscany, and forbidding its recognition or publi- cation there. At once he was beset with appeals from priests and nuns, calling his attention to several grave abuses in the church, and notably to moral scandals of the most serious kind in the convents of nuns, especially those under the direction of the Dominicans, accusations which were fortified with full*~~

~~*details of time and place. The result was that Leopold caused a scheme of ecclesiastical reform to be drawn up in 1770, containing stringent enactments for the abatement of monachism, for the suppression of all small convents of mendicants, and for the exclusion of monks and friars from the direction of nunneries, which were to be subject in all spiritual matters to the ordinaries only. And the Jansenist bishop of Pistoia and Prato, Scipio de' Ricci, upon entering on his diocese in 1780, at once began to inquire into the scandals which raged in the Dominican nunneries of his jurisdiction, especially in Pistoia,! the result being that he excommunicated the Dominican friars, and prohibited them from officiating. The pope at that time was Pius VI., an ardent devotee, warmly in favour of mona- chism generally, and of the lately suppressed Jesuits in particular, so that he took up the cause of the friars (though their evil repute had prevailed for 150 years), and issued a brief of censure against Ricci. He laid it before the grand-duke, who wrote a strong remon- strance, accompanied with proofs furnished by Ricci, and informed the pope that unless the brief were promptly withdrawn, and the convents obliged to submit to the ordinary's jurisdiction, he would himself reform at his own discretion every religious house in Tuscany. Accordingly, the brief was retracted, and Ricci was given full liberty to repress the disorders complained of. There is not any similar evidence forthcoming as to the condition*~~

~~*1 As to which documentary evidence will be found in the Appendix to De Potter's Life of Scipio de' Ricct.*~~

~~*of the monasteries in other parts of Italy; but Tuscany is likely, from local causes, to have been above, rather than below, the average moral level. Against this general tendency to monastic decay may be set the foundation of the Passionists in 1725, and of the Redemptorists or Liguorians in 1732; but these two institutes, though pious and respectable, have never exerted much influence.*~~

~~*There is little to chronicle in regard to the later annals of monachism in Spain and Portugal. Peter of Alcantara, as reformer of the Franciscans of the latter country in the middle of the 16th century, and his more famous contemporary, Teresa, as reformer of the Carmelites in Spain, are eminent*~~

~~*figures in the annals of their time; but they cannot be said to have produced any permanent effect on the fortunes and tone of their several institutes, far less upon the common life in general. The stamping out of all varieties of opinion, at any rate in respect of outward expression, by the Inquisition in the Peninsula makes the evidence scanty and vague; but the fact that Portugal took the lead in 1759 in striking at the Jesuits, then the most eminent and powerful of the orders, though far surpassed in mere wealth and numbers throughout Western Europe by the Franciscans, and that its policy in this respect was quickly followed by Spain, attests the growth of a hostile feeling by no means likely to have been limited to the great company. In fact, if popular rhymes and proverbs may be trusted, the charges current against the religious orders in Spain do not seem to have differed from those alleged elsewhere, whatever may have been the amount of truth in them. And the testimony of Blanco White, always to be trusted on matters within his experience, is decidedly adverse.*~~

~~*The terrible crash of the French Revolution, which affected, directly or indirectly, every country in Europe, was not least influential in its incidence on monachism. On the one hand, the actual destruction which it brought upon the religious houses of France was adopted as part of the revolutionary programme in all countries where such institutions were still intact ; and, on the other, there was a considerable measure of improvement brought about in not a few places by the fear of public opinion, while the uew institutes which continued to spring up were all but invariably active, both founders and the sanctioning authorities recognizing that any society seeking to make its footing good must needs first prove its capacity for practical usefulness. In France itself the laws which abolished all religious communities were relaxed by con- nivance in favour of the Sisters of Charity even under the Terror and the Directory ; while in 1801 a decree of the Consular Government, issued by the Minister of the Interior, authorized Citizeness Duleau, former superior of that society, to revive it by taking young women to train for hospital work ; and various other active communities were restored by Napoleon in 1807. Further revivals took place at the Restoration, the most celebrated of which was the Dominican, owing to the talents and elo- quence of Lacordaire and the group he gathered round him; but Benedictines, Carthusians, Trappists, and other societies of the older type were not slow to avail them- selves of the*~~

~~*opportunity to return and to found anew, amidst a poverty which recalls the original institution, their abbeys and priories. But they met with little favour under the Orleanist monarchy, and the Second Empire was their time of most security and progress. Since its fall, they have again been actively discouraged by a strong party in the Republic, and their position remains pre- carious, France has been, further, the chief seat of the many new societies founded for some especial department of charitable work, the most characteristic example of which is perhaps that of the Little Sisters of the Poor,*~~

~~*ie Orin' AOC HAs WT*~~

~~*who house and tend aged invalids. As a broad general rule, nearly every post-Reformation institute is styled, not an "Order," but a "Congregation"; but the only dis- tinction which can be drawn between these two names is that "order" is the wider, and may include several congregations within itself (as the Benedictine order, for example, includes the congregations of Cluny and of St Maur), while a "congregation" is a simple unit,*~~

~~*complete in itself, and neither dependent on another .*~~

~~*institute nor possessed of dependent varieties of its own. Another distinction drawn between the elder and younger societies is that the former are said to make 'solemn vows," the latter only "simple vows." The difference here is not in the matter of the vows, which are usually the same in all cases, nor even in the ceremonies attending their utterance, which may also be alike, but in the superior binding efficacy of the solemn vows in Roman canon law, which rules that they so bind the member to his society, and the society to each member, that neither can sever the connexion, so that only the pope can dissolve it, and that in rare and exceptional cases alone. And it may be added that the term "religious" is restricted in the Latin Church to communities whose institute has been formally approved by the Roman see, and whose vows are for life, and not merely renewable,—a principle which excludes the Sisters of Charity, for example, from the use of this title. By the laws of France, and of some other countries, life-vows are invalid and even prohibited, but when they make part of the original institute, such dis- approval by the civil power is not held to reduce them to the canonical level of temporary vows.*~~

~~*Returning to the history of Western monachism, the fall of the religious houses in Spain dates from the law of 21st June 1835, which suppressed nine hundred monasteries at a blow; and the remainder had but a short respite, as they were dissolved on 11th October of the same year. In Portugal, where a bias against the Roman Curia has been a traditional part of patriotism ever since the revolution of 1640, when the pope sided with Spain against the house of Braganza, there was little feeling to protect the monasteries when it happened that the crown wanted their possessions, and they were all suppressed by the decree of 28th May 1834. No European country had so many religious houses as Portugal in proportion to its population and area, and the number of the foundations dissolved in 1834 exceeded 500. In Switzerland, a con- siderable measure of suppression followed the war of the Sonderbund in 1847; while in Italy, the last country where monachism had remained almost unmolested, an Act was passed in the Sardinian Parliament on 7th July 1866 for the suppression of monasteries within the Piedmontese dominions, and for the confiscation of their property. The measure was extended to the whole of Italy after the unification of the kingdom ; the orders were expropriated in 1873; their houses were declared national property, and were put to secular uses, no exception being made in*~~

~~*715*~~

~~*favour of San Marco at Florence, of Assisi, of Vallom- brosa, or even of Monte Cassino itself.!*~~

~~*On the other hand, several Roman Catholic societies have attained considerable success in the United States and Canada, thus in some degree recovering for the principle they represent part at least of the ground lost in Europe ; while in three religious communions outside the pale of the Latin obedience—the Evangelicals of Germany, the Reformed of France, and the Church of England—the organization of women for charitable and religious work on the lines of various old institutes has been actively carried out. The Deaconesses of Kaiserswerth, founded by Pastor Fliedner in 1836, derive part of their rule, and even of their dress, from the Dames de St Augustine, themselves lineal descendants of the first Hospitallers of the crusades, and have ramified into several countries ; the Strasburg and Miihlhausen*~~

~~*Deaconesses derive theirs partly from the Flemish Beguines and partly from some points in the Moravian organization, itself handed down from those seceding Franciscans to whom the Unitas Fratrum really owes its origin; while the various Anglican communities, of which there are several, have borrowed freely from different sources, according to the preference and knowledge of each founder. Some attempts at reviving the common life for men also have likewise been made, but none on any large scale; only one has as yet exhibited any signs of vitality, a preaching order at Cowley, near Oxford, which has obtained some footing in England, and has even been able to spread to America.*~~

~~*Bibliography.—The bibliography of Monachism is excessively copious, and it is impracticable to indicate more than a few of the most important and trustworthy books, General:—Hospinianus, De Monachis Libri Sex (Geneva, 1659), bitterly hostile, but a copious and trustworthy record of facts; Helyot, Histoire des Ordres Reli- gieux (8 vols., Paris, 1714-1721), and again (as Dictionnaire des Ordres Religieux), with continuation by Badiche (4 vols., Paris, Migne, 1860),—this book has itself a copious catalogue of works on its subject prefixed; Alteserra, Asceficén, sive Originum Ket Monasticew Libri Decem (Paris, 1674); Holstenius, Codex Regularum (3 vols., Rome, 1661); Montalembert, Moines d' Occident (7 vols., Paris, 1860-1877) ; Dugdale, Monasticon Anglicanum (edited by Caley, Ellis, and Bandinel, 8 vols., London, 1846) ; Rosweyde, Vite Patrum (Lyons, 1617). Special :—Benedictines—Mabillon, Acta SS. Ordi- nis S. Benedicti (9 vols., Venice, 1783) ; Cluniacs—Marrier, Bzblio- theca Cluniacensis (Paris, 1614) ; Cistercians—Gaillardin, Les Trap- pistes (Paris, 1844); Besoigne, Histoire de [Abbaye de Port-Royal (8 vols., Cologne, 1752-56); Dominicans—Touron, Histoire des Hommes Illustres de V Ordre de Saint Dominique (6 vols., Paris, 1743-49); Franciscans—Sedulius, Historia Seraphica (Antwerp, 1613) ; Wadding, Annales Minorum (20 vols., Rome, ene*~~

~~*(BR. F. L.)*~~

~~*1 The total number of monasteries, &c., suppressed in Italy down to the close of 1882 was 2255, involving an enormous displacement of property and dispersion of inmates. And yet there is some reason to think that the*~~

~~*state did but do roughly and harshly what the church should have done more gradually and wisely ; for the judgment passed on the dissolution by Pius IX. himself, in speaking to an English Roman Catholic bishop, was: "It was the devil's work; but the good God will turn it into a blessing, since their destruction was the only reform possible to them." (Cited by Rev. R. R. Suffield in Modern Review, vol. ii. p. 359, April 1881.)*~~

~~*CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE oF Monastic FOUNDATIONS.*~~

~~*Tus religious communities which have been formed at various times in the Western Church amount to many hundreds, and receive fresh accessions almost yearly, while some among them have been suppressed, absorbed, or suffered to die out. No official list of those actually in existence and recognized by authority is published ; it is thus impracticable to enumerate them accurately, especially as many of them are only local varieties or branches of identical rules and institutes, and there are not a few cases where a once celebrated and powerful*~~

~~*order has practically disappeared from view, though, as still lingering in one or two houses, not definitely extinct.*~~

~~*The following table,*~~

~~*however, gives the more remarkable foundations in chronological order, some of the earlier dates being only approximate, and even a few later ones uncertain, for the historians often vary as to the exact year, sometimes giving that of the first attempt at organization, and*~~

~~*sometimes that of the final approval by authority.*~~

~~*Date. Name. Founder. Place. Date. Name. Founder. Place. 250 | Monks of the Thebaid ….| Paulthe Hermit ….| Upper Egypt. 395 | Austin Canons (original) ..| Augustine …….. Hippo Regius, BUG) [Miva] oenjviMssic Googodmyasasar IPACHOMINS eer. -= «1-1.*~~

~~*Basil the Great*~~

~~*Basilian Monks*~~

~~*363*~~

~~*Nile. Mataza, Pontus. |*~~

~~*Monks*~~

~~*716*~~

~~*Date.*~~

~~*420. 529*~~

~~*540-570 | Welsh Monks*~~

~~*MONACHISM*~~

~~*- Name.*~~

~~*Monks of Lerins*~~

~~*Benedictines, or*~~

~~*Monks*~~

~~*Founder.*~~

~~*Honoratus of Arles .. Benedict of Nursia*~~

~~*Dubric, Iltut, David*~~

~~*..| Monte Cassino,*~~

~~*Place.*~~

~~*I.*~~

~~*of Lerins, France.*~~

~~*Italy. Wales. Iona, Scotland.*~~

~~*563 Monks of Iona …….. + - (Gules; Saponnacoose*~~

~~*590 | Monks of Luxeuil …..... Columbanus!) ©... Anegray, France.*~~

~~*641 | Nuns (later Canonesses) of | Ituberga, wife of Pip- Nivelles, Flan-*~~

~~*Nivelles pin of Landen ders. |*~~

~~*760 | Canons Regular …….. Chrodegang…….. Metz. :*~~

~~*910 | Benedictines of Cluny ….} Berno ……. Cluny, France.*~~

~~*1012 | Order of Camaldoli…..... Romuald (62. . + + Camaldoli, Italy.*~~

~~*1039 | Order of Vallombrosa…... John Gualbert …... Vallombrosa, Tuscany.*~~

~~*1061(?)} Austin or Black Canons F Avignon (7).*~~

~~*1074 | Order of Grammont …... Stephene ge.) s esis cer Mount Moret, | Limoges.*~~

~~*1084 | Carthusians ……- TSA YD Wrencos GOnsoone Near Grenoble. |*~~
~~*1095 | Order of St Anthony of| Gaston ……. Vienne, Dau- | Vienne phiné.*~~

~~*TOSS | Ciscercianss. <6 cece cscesse Robert …... Bia tazs Molesme, Bur-*~~

~~gunay. | 1100(2)| Cruciferi (suppressed, 1656) | (2) ..... sees cere ees Jerusalem (7). | 1100 | Order of Fontevraud …... Robert d'Arbrissel…. ibs Poi- iers. 1104 | Knights Hospitallers of St | Gerard (Raymond du | Jerusalem. John Puy, first Grand Master) 1118 ae (suppressed inj Hugh de Payens ….| Jerusalem.~~

~~1813~~

~~1119(?)| Knights of St Lazarus ….| (2%) ..... hood d …..| Jerusalem. : 1120 | Canons Regular of Pré| Norbert …….- Prémontré, Pi- | | montré cardy. 1140 | Trappists …... Drtentereeeinrs Rotrou II., count of; La Trappe, Perche France. 1148 | Gilbertines….. ago Do ooBECE Gilbert of Sempring- | Sempringham, ham Lincolnshire. 1156 | Kniglits of Aleantara…... Snero, and Gomez, de | St Julian, Ciudad Barrientos Rodrigo. 1156 | Hermits of St William, or | William de Malaval ..| Pescara, Italy. White-Mantles 1158 | Knights of Calatrava….. .| Sancho IfI., of Castile] Calatrava, Spain. 1162 | KnightsofSt Bennetof Aviz| Alfonso I., of Portugal, Evora, Portugal. 1170 | Knights of Santiago of the | Ferdinand II., of Leon| Compostella, Sword Galicia. 1173 | Beguines …….| Bega, or Lambert le | Liége. Bégue 1191 | Teutonic Knights ……..| Heinrich Walpot ….| Acre, Syria. 1196(7)| Humiliati(suppressed, 1570)) (7) ..... ⁺.1-e seen eee Milan. 1197 | Trinitarians ……|John de Matha and | Meaux, Paris. Felix de Valois … 1198 | Knights Hospitallers ofthe] Guy of Montpellier ..| Montpellier, Holy Spirit France. 1200(2)| Penitents of St Mary Mag- |] (2) ....esssseseeeeaeee Gerniany. dalene 1208 | Franciscans ……| Francis Bernardone ..| Assisi. 209° Wi@armelitesi.. ..1jm6 2c = Albert, titular patri- | Mount Carmel, arch of Jerusalem Palestine. 1212 | Nuns of St Clare , Francis and Clara ….| Assisi, Italy. 1212 | Order of Val- des-Ecoliers ..| William of Paris ….| Chaumont, France. 1214 | Canons Regular of the Holy | Theodore de Celles ..| Clair-Lieu, Bel- Cross giun. 1214(?)| Hermits of St Augustine ..| Giovanni Bono …... Cesena, Italy. 1215 | Dominicans ……| Dominic Guzman ….| Bologna. 1215 | Hermits of St Paul……..| Eusebius, archbp. of | Buda-Pesth. Strigonia 1218 | Order of St Mary of Mercy, | Jayme I., of Aragon..} Barcelona. or Mercedarians 1221 | Francisean Tertiaries……| Francis……..00. Assisi. 1223 | (Servitesis.c. 6s niodoDe …| Buonfiglio Monaldi ..| Florence. 1231 | Sylvestrines ……| Sylvester de' Gozzolini | Osimo, Italy. 1241 | Canons~~

~~Regular of St Mark| Alberto Spinola…… Mantua, 1251 aren Brothers of Peni | Innocent IV. …….. Marseilles. ence 1271 | Cclestines …….| Pietro Morone (Pope | Sulmona, Italy. Celestine V.) 1290 | Grey Sisters (Hospitallers) | (2) …….0..00000005 Franceand Flan- ders. 1296 | Hospitallers of the Charity | Guy de Joinville ….) Paris. of our Lady US13:) | OLUVGRANS W210). /5.6..0.01616 0/0106 steele Tolomei of | Siena (?), Italy. iena 1350(?)| Cellites, or Alexian Brothers] (7) ……..00.0008 Aix-la-Chapelle(?) 1855 | Jesuates.……. Giovanni Colombini ..| Siena. 1363 | Brigittine Nuns, or Order | Bridget of Sweden.…| Wadstena, of St Saviour Sweden. 1st one yee Rauanie ater eye Bridget of Sweden… .! (2). 68(7 servants, or Franciscans | Paoletto de Foligno ..| Bruli of the Strict Observance “ poeneeey 1373 | Hieronymite Monks …… Pedro Ferrando Pecha | Villaescuda, : de Guadalajara Castile. 1378-77 | Ifermits of St Jerome | Pietro Gambacorti or } Pisa. Gambacurta 1376 | Brothers of Common Life..} Gerard Groot …….. Deventer, A Holland. 1380 | Fesulan Mendicants of St} Carlo de Montegraneli | Fiesole, Italy. Jerome (suppressed, 1668) 1390(7)} Hieronymite Nuns.…….. Maria Garcias.……. Toledo. 1395 | Congregation ofthe Lateran | Bartolommeo Colonna | Rome. 1408 | Congregation of St Justina, | Ludovico Barbo.…… Padua. or Reform of Monte Cassino 1408 | Canons Regular of St Stephen Cioniof Siena | Iiceto, Siena. Saviour 1426 | MBermardins) seeesic sect «is Martin Vasga …….. Near Toledo. 1429 | Order of Bursfeld, or Ger | Johann Rodius~~

~~man Benedictine Reform~~

~~Abbey of St Mat- thias, Treves.~~

~~Date.~~

~~1481~~

~~Name.~~

~~Mitigated Carmelites, or~~

~~‘s Billettes ”~~

~~1433(?)| Congregation ofSt Ambrose~~

~~*1433 1435*~~

~~*1443 1444*~~

~~*1453 1484*~~

~~*1493 1503 1524 1525*~~

~~*1531*~~

~~*1532 1533 1534 1537 1538*~~

~~*1554(?)*~~

~~*1558 1568 1571 1877 1578 1579 1584*~~

~~*1588 1588*~~

~~*1594 1595 1596 1608 1609 1610 1611 1611 1615 1617 1617*~~

~~*1618 1621*~~

~~*1624 1624 1624*~~

~~*1625 1629*~~

~~*1633 1639 1640*~~

~~*1641 1641 1643 1643 1645 1650*~~

~~*1653*~~

~~*1655 1660 1661 1663 1678 1679*~~

~~*1684 1686*~~

~~*ad Nemus Oblate Nuns Minims, or Hermits of St Francis Daughters of St Martha (Hospitallers) Augustins of the Lombard Congregation*~~

~~*Madelonettes Barnabites, or Clerks Regu- lar Filles Repenties Annonciades Theatins*~~

~~*eee eect ee eens*~~

~~*eee e tere sere esos*~~

~~*Capuchins, or Reformed Franciscans*~~

~~*Clerks Regular of St Ma- jolus of Pavia, or "So- maschi"*~~

~~*Recollects, or Strict Fran- ciscans*~~

~~*Barnabites of St Paul*~~

~~*Jesuits*~~

~~*Ursulines Brothers of Charity Jesuitesses (suppressed,*~~

~~*1631)*~~

~~*Oratorians Discalced Carmelites Fathers of Christian Doc- trine Feuillants ….. Saiseg ietaters*~~

~~*Oblates of St Ambrose ….*~~

~~*Latin Monks of St Basil ..*~~

~~*Clerks Regular, Ministers of the Sick*~~

~~*Clerks Minor …. eit*~~

~~*Discalced Augustinians…*~~

~~*i ee ee ee*~~

~~*ete.*~~

~~*Congregation of Picpus…. Discalced Trinitarians ….*~~

~~*Notre Dame de St Paul…*~~

~~*Jacobins, or Reformed Do-*~~

~~*minicans English Institute of B. V.*~~

~~*Mary Nuns of the Visitation ….*~~

~~*French Ursulines*~~

~~*French Oratorians ……..*~~

~~*Canons Regular of St Saviour*~~

~~*Hospitaller Nuns of St Charles*~~

~~*Pauline Congregation of the Mother of God*~~

~~*Nuns of Calvary*~~

~~*Congregation of Benedic- tines of St Maur*~~

~~*Hospitaller Nuns of the Charity of Our Lady ….*~~

~~*seca eee*~~

~~*ILETAVOE MS oogpegsnocanae o. Nuns of Our Lady of Refuge*~~

~~*Religieuses de la Croix …. Sisters of Charity.*~~

~~*eee eeeree*~~

~~*OnderiofyMercy see. —16*~~

~~*Sisters of the Blessed Sacra- ment*~~

~~*Bartholomites, or Clerks Secular of Common Life*~~

~~*Nuns of the Good Shepherd*~~

~~*| Order of Our Lady of Char- ity and Refuge*~~

~~*Eudists, or Mission Priests*~~

~~*| Daughters of Providence ..*~~

~~*| Sulpicians:-s…asjace ener*~~

~~*Sisters of St Joseph*~~

~~*| Benedictine Nuns of Per- petual Adoration*~~

~~*Bethlehemites*~~

~~*Hospitaller Nuns of St Thomas of Villanova Union Chrétienne ….....*~~
~~*Reformed Trappists …... | Brothers and Sisters of the | _ Child Jesus |*~~
~~*Daughters of Providence ..*~~

~~*Sisters of the Presentation Ladies of St Cyr*~~

~~*i t*~~

~~*..| Philip Neri*~~

~~*Founder.*~~

~~*.| Rome (2).*~~

~~*Pope Eugenius IV.*~~

~~*Frances of Rome …. Francis de Paola ….*~~

~~*Nicolas Rolin, chan- cellor of Burgundy Gregorio Rocchi…... Bishop de Boppart .. Pope Innocent VIII.*~~

~~*Jean Tisserand …... Queen Jeanne de Valois Giovanni Pietro Ca- raffa(Pope Paul IV.) Matteo di Bassi*~~

~~*....| Giacopo Antonio Mo-*~~

~~*rigia Ignatius Loyola…... Angela de' Merici .. John of God …..... An Englishwoman, named Ward Mheress…....0c64e 00*~~

~~*Jean de la Barriére ..*~~

~~*Carlo Borromeo…... Pope Gregory XIII... Camillo de' Lelli ….*~~

~~*Agostino Adorno … Thomas d'Andrada (Thomas de Jesus)*~~

~~*Vincent Mussart*~~

~~*Juan Baptista Garcias*~~

~~*Madeleine d'Escou- bleau de Sourdis Jean Michaelis*~~

~~*Mary Wards… s.ccss:*~~

~~*Jeanne Frangoise de Chantal*~~

~~*Marie Lhuillier ….…*~~

~~*Cardinal de Berulle ..*~~

~~*Fourrier de Matain-*~~

~~*court*~~

~~*Joseph Calasanza …*~~

~~*Antoinette d'Orléans Didier de la Cour .*~~

~~*Simone Gauguin (Mother Frances of the Cross)*~~

~~*Vincent de Paul…...*~~

~~*Marie Elizabeth de Ranfain*~~

~~*iW" Gueriny oc seiscuaires*~~

~~*Vincent de Paul and Louise Legras*~~

~~*Antoine Yvan and Madeleine Martin*~~

~~*Antoine Lequien*~~

~~*Bartholomew Holz- hauser*~~

~~*Madeleine Lamy ….*~~

~~*Jean Hudes …….*~~

~~*Jean Eudes.…….*~~

~~*Madame de Polallion*~~

~~*Jean Jacques Olier ..*~~

~~*Henri Maupas du Tour*~~

~~*Catherine de Barré (Mechtilde du St- Sacrement)*~~

~~*Pierre de Betancourt*~~

~~*Ange Le Proust*~~

~~*Pére Vachet Armand de Rancé…. Nicolas Barré*~~

~~*Madame Morel ….…*~~

~~*Marie Poussepin*~~

~~*Madamede Maintenon and Louis XIV.*~~

~~*Place.*~~

~~*Milan.*~~

~~*Rome. Vincennes, Paris.*~~

~~*Beaune, France. Pavia.*~~

~~*Metz. Rome.*~~

~~*Paris.*~~

~~*Bourges, France,*~~

~~*Theate or Chieti, Italy.*~~

~~*Pisa,*~~

~~*Pavia.*~~

~~*Spain (7). Milan.*~~

~~*Montmartre, Paris.*~~

~~*.| Brescia, Italy.*~~

~~*Granada, Flanders.*~~

~~*Rome. Avila, Spain. Rome.*~~

~~*Feuillans, France. Milan. Rome. Rome.*~~

~~*.| Genoa.*~~

~~*Talavera.*~~

~~*.| Franconville-*~~

~~*sous-bois, Paris. Val de Pefias, Spain. St Paul, France. Paris. St Omer, France. Annecy, Savoy. Paris. Paris. Lorraine.*~~

~~*Nancy.*~~

~~*.| Rome.*~~

~~*Poitiers.*~~

~~*.| Verdun, France.*~~

~~*Paris, Paris. Nancy.*~~

~~*Roye, Picardy. Paris.*~~

~~*Aix, Provence.*~~

~~*.| Marseilles.*~~

~~*Salzburg.*~~

~~*Caen, France. Caen.*~~

~~*Caen.*~~

~~*Paris.*~~

~~*Paris.*~~

~~*Le Puy en Velay, France.*~~

~~*Paris.*~~

~~-~~

~~*Guatemala, C. Alnerica. Lamballe, France. Charonne, Paris. La Trappe. Paris.*~~

~~*Charleville, France.*~~

~~*.| Sainville, France.*~~

~~*Versailles.*~~

~~*MON—MON*~~

~~*717*~~

~~*Date. Name. Founder. Place. 1686 | Daughters of the Good | Madame deCombe ..| Paris. Shepherd 1704 | Sisters of Charity of St Paul | Louis*~~

~~*Chauvet …... Levéville-la-Che- the Apostie nard, France. 1712 | Congregation of the Good | Elizabeth de Surville | St — Lo, Nor- Saviour mandy. 1713 | Religious of Most Blessed | Pére Vigne ……..... Bousseaux-le-Sacrament Roy, France. 1716 | Daughters of Wisdom .| Marie Louise Trichet | La Rochelle. and Grignon de Montfort VAS | PABBIGHISES) «oo: isis s e's. :5:0%0 Paul of the Cross ….| Rome. 1732 | Redemptorists, or Ligu- | Alfonso de' Liguori ..| Scala, Italy. orians 1785 | Society of the Christian} Antoine Sylvestre | Fontenelles, Retreat Receveur France, 1800 | Ladies of the Sacred Heart | Madame Barat …... Amiens. 1801 | Dames de St André …... Scraphine Hauvarlet | Tournay, Bel- giuin, 1815 | Marist Fathers.……..... Jean C. M. Colin ….! Lyons. 1815 ss = ms of Mary Immacu- | M. de Mazenod …... Aix. ate 1816 | Sisters of Jesus and Mary..} Pére Coindre …..... monet, yons. 1817 | Marist Brothers ……..... Abbé Champagnat ..| Lyons. 1820 | Sisters of Notre Dame …./ Julie Billiart …..... Amiens. 1820 | Sceurs de l'Espérance…... Abbé Noailles…..... Bordeaux. 1822 | Brothers of Christian In- | Abbé Lamennais ….} St Brieuc, France struction 1822 — Companions of | Madame d'Houet ….| Amiens. esus 1822 | Society of Nazareth …... Pierre Roger …....| Montmirail, France. 1824 | Sisters of Bon Secours ….] Madame de Montale..| Paris. 1824 | Marist Sisters ……..... Jean Claude Colin….| Belley, France. 1827 | Sisters of Mercy ……..... Catherine McAuley ..! Dublin. 1828 —_—* Union des Sacrés | Abbé Debrabant .| Douai, France. ceurs 1828 | Institute of Charity, or | Antonio Rosmini-Ser- | Monte Calvario, | Rosminian Fathers bati Italy. 1833 | School Sisters of Notre | Bishop Michael Wiss- | Nuremberg, Dame mann Bavaria. 1833 | Daughters of the Cross ….| Canon J. G. Habets | Liége. and Jeanne Haze 1836 | Deaconesses (Lutheran) ..| Theodor Fliedner ….} Kaiserswerth, Disseldorf. 1837 | Xaverian Brothers …..... Theodore Ryken ….| Bruges, Belgium. 1840 | Deaconesses (French Re- | M. Vermeil and Mdlle. | Paris. formed Malvesin 1840 | Little Sisters of the Poor ..} Abbé le Pailleur…... St Malo. 1842 | Deaconesses of Strasburg | Pastor Harter…....| Strasburg.*~~

~~*(Luth.)*~~

~~*MONACO (French Monegue), the smallest of the sove- reign principalities of Europe, with an area of 8°34 square miles, a population (1878) of 7049,*~~

~~*and an army of 72 men, is situated on the coast of the Mediterranean, 9 miles east of Nice, and bounded on all sides by the French*~~

~~*department of the Maritime Alps. Previous to 1861, when the communes of Mentone (Menton) and Roccabruna (Roquebrun) were sold to France for 4,000,000 francs, the area was about a third larger; but the population, which with those portions again included would now be 15,000, was only about 8000. Monaco has long had the reputa- tion of being one of the most beautiful and sheltered spots on all the Franco-Italian coast : non Corus in tlum Jus habet aut Zephyrus ; solus sua littora turbat Circius, said Lucan ; and a luxuriant growth of aloes and prickly pears (introduced in 1537), palm-trees, eucalyptus, lemon- trees, and geraniums gives a warmer colour to the scene than Lucan can have known. The town occupies the level summit of a rocky headland, rising about 195 feet from the shore, and still surrounded with ramparts. Though largely modernized, the palace is a fine specimen of Re- naissance architecture ; the new "cathedral" (French Re- naissance style), the new church of St Charles, and the museum may also be mentioned. Behind the rock, between Mont Téte de Chien and Mont de la Justice, the high grounds rise towards Turbie, the village on the hill which takes its name from the tropxa with which Augustus marked the boundary between Gaul and Italy. On the eastern side lies the little port or bay of Monaco ; along the lower ground at the head of the bay stretches the vil- lage of Condamine with orange-gardens, manufactures of perfumes and liqueurs, and the chapel of Ste Dévote, the patron saint of Monaco ; farther to the east, on the rocky*~~

~~*Date. Name. Founder. Place. 1842 | Deaconesses of St Loup|M.Germond …..... Echellens, (Swiss Refd.) France. 1843 | Notre Dame de Sion …... PP. Theodore and M. | Paris. A. Ratisbonne 1846 a of the Holy Child | Cornelia Connelly ….) Derby, England. esus 1847 | Society of Holy Trinity of | Priscilla Lydia Sellon | Plymouth. Devonport (Angl.) 1848 on of the Poor Child | Clara Fey ……..... Aix-la-Chapelle. esus 1849 | Poor Handmaids of Jesus | Katharina Kaspar….| Dermbach, Ger- Christ many. 1849 | Sisters of St Mary the] Miss Lockhart …... Wantage, Berks. Virgin (Angl.) 1850 | Sisters of the Most Holy | F. Gaudentius …... Manchester. Cross and Passion 1851 | Sisters of Nazareth…..... Cardinal Wiseman….| Hammersinith, London. 1851 | Sisterhood of All Saints| Rev. W. Upton |*~~

~~London. (Angl.) Richards 1852 | French Oratorians(revived) | Abbé Pététot …..... Paris. 1852 | Deaconesses of Riehen| M. Spittler …..... near Basel. (Swiss Refd.) 1854 | Society of St John Baptist | Hon. Mrs. Charles | Clewer, Windsor. (Angl.) Monsell 1855 | Nursing Sisters of St Mar- | Dr John Mason Neale | East Grinstead, garet (Angl.) Sussex. 1856 | Helpers of the Holy Souls | Eugénie Suret …... Paris. 1861 | Deaconesses (Angl.) .....| Rev. T. Pelham Dale | London. and Elizabeth Cathe- rine Ferard 1861 | Sisterhood of St Peter | Rosamira Lancaster..| Brompton, (Angl.) London. 1861 | Congregation of the Finding | Mary Lefevre …..... London (now of Jesus in the Temple Clifton Wood, Bristol). 1864 | Little Sisters of the As-]} Augustinians of the | Paris. sumption Assumption 1865 errs of St Mary | Rev. Dr Morgan Dix..} New York. Angl. 1865 Mission Priests of St John | Rev. R. M. Benson ..} Cowley St John, the Evangelist (Angl.) Oxford. 1866 | Servants of the Sacred | P. Peter Victor Braun | Paris. Heart of Jesus 1866 | Sisters of Bethany (Angl.) | Etheldreda A. Benett ir eo a ondon. 1869 | Sisterhood of the Good | Bishop Horatio Potter | New York. Shepherd (Angl.) 1870 be rer = the Church | Emily Ayckbowm.…] Kilburn, London. (Angl. 1870 | Little Company of Mary ..| Mary Potter …....|Hyson Green, Nottingham.~~

~~slopes of the Spélugues (Spelunce) are grouped the various buildings of the Casino of Monte Carlo and the numerous villas and hotels which it has called into existence. Previous to 1828 the Spélugues were mere barren rocks; but after~~

~~Reference 1 Palace -Moneco~~

~~2 Cathedral~~

~~5 Baths~~

~~4 Chapelle de $“ Devote 5 Casino- Monte Carlo 6 Hotel de Paris~~

~~ys Enalis h Mile i?~~

~~MEDITERRANEAN SEA Plan of Monaco,~~

~~they were traversed by the new road to Mentone, Count Rey caused them to be covered with soil by Italian convicts ; and since 1858, when the first stone of the Casino was laid, the process of artificial embellishment has been carried~~

~~out on the most magnificent scale. The gaming establish- ment is now in the hands of a joint-stock company with a capital of 15,000,000 francs. None of the inhabitants of Monaco have access to the tables ; and their interest in the maintenance of the status quo is secured by their complete exemption from taxation, and the large prices paid for their lands. Gambling-tables were set up at Monaco in 1856; but it was not till 1860, when M. Blanc, expelled from Homburg, took possession of the place, that Monte Carlo began to be famous.~~

~~A temple of Heracles Monœcus was built on the Monaco head- land at a very early date, probably by the Greeks of Massilia. Monœci Portus or Portus Herculis is frequently mentioned by the later Latin writers. From the 10th century the place was associated with the Grimaldi, a powerful Genoese family who held high offices under the republic and the emperors; but not till a much later date did it become their permanent possession and residence. In the beginning of the 14th century it was notorious for its piracies. Charles I. (a man of considerable mark, who, after doing great ser- vice by sea and land to Philip of Valois in his English wars, was severely wounded at Crecy) purchased Mentone and Roccabruna, and bought up the claims of the Spinola to Monaco. The princes of Monaco continued true to France till 1524, when Augustin Grimaldi threw in his lot with Charles V. Honoré I., Augustin's successor, was made marquis of Campagna and count of Canosa, and people as well as rulers were accorded various important privileges. The right to exact toll from vessels ssing the port continued to be exercised till the close of the 18th century. Honoré II., who re- newed the alliance with France in 1641, was compensated for the loss of Canosa, &c., with the duchy and peerage of Valentinois and various lesser lordships ; and duke of Valentinois long continued to be the title of the heir-apparent of the principality. The Na- tional Convention annexed the principality to France in 1793; restored to~~

~~*the Goyon Grimaldis by the Treaty of Paris in 1814, it was placed by that of Vienna under the protection of Sardinia. King Albert of Sardinia took the opportunity of disturbances that occurred in 1848 to annex Mentone and Roccabruna; but this high-handed proceeding was condemned by the protocol of 1856, and Charles it. (born 1818) entered upon his full rights. With the transference of Nice to France in 1860 the principality passed*~~

~~*again under French protection. See Charles de Venasques, Genealogica et historica Grimaldix gentis arbor (really the work of Honoré I1.).*~~

~~*MONAGHAN, an inland county of Ireland in the province of Ulster, is bounded E. by Armagh, S.E. by Louth, 8. by Meath, S.W. by Cavan, W. by Fermanagh, and N. by Tyrone. The area is 318,806 acres, or 498 sq. miles. The north-western part of the county is included in the great central plain of Ireland ; but in the south-east there is an uprising of Lower Silurian rocks. The surface is irregular, although none of the hills are of great elevation. The principal range is that of Slievebeagh, a rugged and barren tract extending into Fermanagh, its highest summit being 1254 feet above sea-level. Formerly much of the country was under forest, but it is now very bare of trees, except in the many demesnes of the nobility and gentry. The scenery is redeemed from monotony by the large num- ber of small lakes and streams. The lakes number in all nearly 200. The principal rivers are the Finn, which rises near the centre of the county and passes into Fermanagh, and the Blackwater, which forms the boundary with Tyrone. The Ulster Canal passes the towns of Monaghan and Clones, affording communication between Lough Neagh and Lough Erne. LEskers occur at several places. There are seams of unworkable coal in the south-west of the county. The limestone is not only abundant and good, but from the position of the rocks it can be obtained at very small expense in working. Freestone and slates are quarried in considerable quantities. The other minerals include lead ore, antimony, fuller's earth, marble, and manganese; but the quantities obtained are inconsiderable. _ Climate and Agricultwre.—Partly owing to the large proportion*~~

~~*of bog and water the climate is somewhat moist. The soil in the more level portions of the county is very fertile where it rests on limestone, and there isalso a mixed soil of deep clay, which is capa-*~~

~~ble of high cultivation ; but in the hilly regions a strong retentive clay prevails, which could be made productive only by careful drain-~~

~~ing and culture. Spade husbandry generally prevails. . The most comnion manure is a compost of lime and burned turf mould. Marl is abundant, but is little used, and gypsum also is found. The number of holdings in 1881 was 17,849, of which as many as 10,784 did not exceed 15 acres in extent, and 2870 of these did not exceed 5 acres; 6454 ranged between 15 and 50 acres, and only 24 were above 200 acres. The area of arable land was 278,755 acres, or 87 per cent. of the whole, while 5258 were under plantations, 7580 bog and marsh, 5239 barren mountain land, and 21,582 water, roads,~~

~~and fences. The following table shows the areas under the differ- ent crops in 1850 and 1882 :— ner, eee r=] uo) g a | 8 | gis e % ne | 2 se | 5a 38) 3 a 23| 8 8 | oo se 3 E 3 55 5 5 |e 3 $6 i) Oo. Oo} By eH | Oo a5 = 1850 | 5,861 | 80,946 | 7,467 | 22,105 | 7,190 | 2,548 10,157 | 11,399 | 147,668 1882 | 1,228 | 53,997 | 1,665 | 21,321 | 7,562 | 1,583 | 12,848 | 31,480 | 131,184 |~~

~~a~~

~~Horses numbered 10,229 in 1872, and 10,666 in 1882. In the same years mules numbered 300 and 469, and asses 4314 and 3476. The number of cattle in 1872 was 81,333, and in 1882 only 72,266, an average of 25°9 to every 100 acres under cultivation, the average for Ireland being 25°8. Sheep between 1872 and 1882 declined from 17,964 to 9858, a very inconsiderable number ; pigs increased from 26,008 to 29,972; goats from 8873 to 12,391; and poultry from 341,874 to 434,260.~~

~~According to the latest return, the land was divided among 1470 proprietors, who possessed 311,440 acres,with a total annual value of £261,382. The average size of the properties was 211 acres, and the average value per statute acre 17 shillings. The following seven proprietors possessed upwards of 10,000 acres: E. P. Shirley, 26,386 ; marquis of Bath, 22,762; earl of Dartrey, 17,345 ; Lord Rossmore, 14,839 ; Sir John Leslie, 13,621 ; Viscount Templetown, 12,845; A. A. Hope, 11,700.~~

~~*Manufactures.—The only manufacture of consequence is linen, which of late years has been on the increase. The number of scutching mills in 1881 was 55, of which 45 were wrought by water, 8 by steam, and 2 by water and steam.*~~

~~*Administration.—The county includes 5 baronies, 23 parishes, and 1850 town lands. Assizesare held at Monaghan, and quarter- sessions at Carrickmacross, Castleblayney, Clones, and Monaghan. There are 8 petty sessional districts within the county, and part of another. It includes the poor-law unions of Carrickmacross and Monaghan, and portions of Castleblayney, Clogher, Clones, Coote- hill, and Dundalk. It is in the Belfast military district, sub- district of Armagh. There is a barrack station at Monaghan. In the Irish parliament two members were returned for the county and two for the town of Monaghan, but at the Union Monaghan was disfranchised.*~~

~~*Population.—The population in 1841 was 200,442; but in 1851 it had diminished to 141,823, in 1871 to 114,969, and in 1881 to 102,748, of whom 50,077 were males and 52,671 females, At the last census 78 per cent. of the inhabitants were Roman Catholics, 13 per cent. Episcopalians, and 11 per cent. Presbyterians. The number of emigrants from 1st May 1851 to 31st December 1881 was 56,408, or about 1840 persons per annum ; while during the twenty years ending 31st March 1881 the annual rate of emigration was 13°8 per 1000 of the population. The death-rate to every thousand of the population for the ten years ending 1881 was 16°9, the birth- rate 23°4, and the marriage-rate 3°6. The towns possessing more than 1000 inhabitants are—Monaghan 3369, Clones 2216, Carrick-macross 2002, Castleblayney 1810, and Ballyblay 1654. Monaghan, the county town, received its name Muinechan (the town of monks) from a monastery founded there at a very earlyperiod. The town was incorporated by James I., but it was little more than a hamlet till towards the closeoflast century. Besides the usual county buildings, it contains a Roman Catholic college, and National model schools.*~~

~~*History and Antiquities.—In the time of Ptolemy, Monaghan formed part of the territory of the Scoti. Subsequently included in the district of Oriel or*~~

~~*Orgial, and long known as Macmahon's country, it became shire ground in the reign of Elizabeth.*~~

~~*The antiquarian remains of Monaghan are comparatively unim- portant. At Clones there is a round tower in good preservation, but very rude in its masonry; another at Inniskeen is very dilapidated. 'Near Clones there are two large raths. Although there are several old Danish forts, there are no medizval castles of importance. The only monastic structure of which any vestiges remain is the abbey of Clones, which was also the seat of a bishopric. The abbey dates from the 6th century, but was rebuilt in the 14th century after destruction by fire. On the site of the Franciscan abbey at Monaghan a castle was erected, which was in a ruinous condition in the time of James I.*~~

~~*MONARCHIANISM, in its technical Christological sense, designates the view taken by those Christians who,*~~

~~*MON—MON*~~

~~*within the church, towards the end of the 2d century and during the 3d, opposed the doctrine of a hypostatic Logos (hypostasianism) or of an independent personal sub- sistence of the Divine Word. It is usual (and convenient) to speak of two kinds of monarchianism,—the dynamistic and the modalistic. By monarchians of the former class Christ was held to be a mere man, miraculously conceived indeed, but constituted the Son of God simply by the in- finitely high degree in which he had been filled with Divine wisdom and power. This view was represented in Asia Minor about the year 170 by the anti-Montanistic Alogi, so called by Epiphanius on account of their rejection of the Fourth Gospel ; it was also taught at Rome about the end of the 2d century by Theodotus of Byzantium, a currier, who was excommunicated by Bishop Victor, and at a later date by Artemon, excommunicated by Zephyrinus. About the year 260 it was again propounded within the church by Pau of Samosata (¢.v.), who held that, by his unique excellency, the man Jesus gradually rose to the Divine dignity, so as to be worthy of the name of God. Modalistic monarchianism, conceiving that the whole fulness of the Godhead dwelt in Christ, took exception to the "subordi- natianism" of some church writers, and maintained that the names Father and Son were only two different designations of the same*~~

~~subject, the one God, who "with reference to the relations in which He had previously stood to the world is called the Father, but in reference to His appearance in humanity is called the Son." It was first taught, in the interests of the "monarchia" of God, by Praxeas, a con- fessor from Asia Minor,in Rome about 190, and was opposed by Tertullian in his well-known controversial tract. The same view—the " patripassian " as it was also called, because it implied that God the Father had suffered on the cross—obtained fresh support in Rome about 215 from certain disciples of Noetus of Smyrna, who received a modified support from Bishop Callistus. It was on this account that Hippolytus, the champion of hypostasian subordinatian- ism, along with his adherents, withdrew from the obedience of Callistus, and formed a separate community. A new and conciliatory phase of patripassianism was expounded at a somewhat later date by Beryllus of Bostra, who, while hold- ing the divinity of Christ not to be té/a, or proper to Him- self, but zatpixy (belonging to the Father), yet recognized in His personality a new tpocw7ov or form of manifestation on the part of God. Beryllus, however, was convinced of the wrongness of this view by ORIGEN (¢.v.), and recanted at the synod which had been called together in 244 to discuss it. For the subsequent history of modalistic mon- archianism, see SABELLIUS.~~

~~MONASTICISM. See Monacuism.~~

~~MONASTIR, Brrotra, or Tort Monastir, a city of Macedonia, now the chief town of the Turkish vilayet of Roumelia, is situated at a height of 1880 feet above the sea, in a western inlet of the beautiful, fertile, and many- villaged plain which, with a breadth of about 10 miles, stretches for 40 miles eastward from Mount Peristeri (7714 feet high) to the Babuna chain. It is embosomed in rich masses of foliage, and crossed by a rough-channeled mountain stream, the Drahor, which joins the Czerna or Karasu, a tributary of the Vardar. The military advan- tages of its position at the meeting-place of roads from Salonica, Durazzo, Uskiub, and Adrianople led the Turks about 1820 to make Monastir the headquarters of the Roumelian corps d@armée. Since then its general and commercial importance has greatly increased. A consider- able amount of gold and silver work (especially clasps and~~

~~*filigree) is made by the local craftsmen, The population*~~

~~*is about 40,000.*~~

~~*Monastir—so called from the monastery of Bukova (The Beeches),*~~

~~*some hundred feet up the slope of Peristeri—is identified with the |*~~

~~*719*~~

~~*ancient Heraclea Lyncestis on the Egnatian Way ; and its bishopric is still called the bishopric of Pelagonia from the ancient name of the plain. In 1838 the town was the scene of the massacre of the Albanian beys.*~~

~~*MONBODDO, James Burnett, Lorp (1714-1799), author of works on the Origin and Progress of Language (published in 1773), and Ancient Metaphysics (1779), was one of the most marked characters in Scottish literary circles in the 18th century. He was born in 1714 at Monboddo in Kincardineshire, studied at Aberdeen and Groningen, and quickly took a leading position at the Edinburgh bar, being made one of the Lords of Session in 1767. Many of his eccentricities, both of conduct and opinion, appear less eccentric to the present generation than they did to his contemporaries; though he seems to have heightened the impression of them by his humorous sallies in their defence. He may have had other reasons than the practice of the ancients for dining late and _per- forming his journeys on horseback instead of in a carriage. His views about the origin of society and language and the faculties by which man is distinguished from the brutes afforded endless matter for jest to the wags of his day; but readers of this generation are more likely to be sur- prised by the scientific character of his method and the acuteness of his conclusions than amused by his eccentri- city. These conclusions have many curious points of con- tact with Darwinism and Neo-Kantism. His idea of studying man as one of the animals, and of collecting facts about savage tribes to throw light on the problems of civilization, bring him into contact with the one, and his intimate knowledge of Greek philosophy with the other. In both respects Monboddo was far in advance of his neighbours. His happy turn of Virgil's line—*~~

“‘Tante molis erat humanam condere gentem ”’—

might be adopted as a motto by the Evolutionists ; and Neo-Kantians would find it hard to believe that he published his criticism of Locke in 1773. His studied abstinence from fine writing—from ‘the rhetorical and poetical style fashionable among writers of the present day ”—on such subjects as lhe handled confirmed the idea of his con- temporaries that he was only an eccentric concocter of supremely absurd paradoxes. He died, 26th May 1799, at the advanced age of eighty-five.

MONCTON, a town of the Dominion of Canada, in Westmoreland, New Brunswick, 89 miles by rail north- east of St John, is a port at the head of navigation on the Petitcodiac, and the seat of the workshops and general offices of the Intercolonial Railway. The population, about 1200 in 1871, was 5032 in 1881; the growth of the place has been favoured by the establishment of sugar- refining factories, and factories for cotton and brass and iron wares since the Canadian Parliament in 1879 adopted a policy of protection. For the year 1881-82 the exports amounted to_$64,817, and the imports to $252,571.

MONDONEDO, an ancient city of Spain, 27 miles north-north-east from Lugo, in the province of that name, is situated on the Sixto, a small tributary of the Masma, on the Atlantic side of the Cantabrian chain, ina sheltered site surrounded on all sides by considerable hills. The population in 1878 was 10,112. The principal buildings are the cathedral, a Corinthian structure of the 17th century, an ex-convent of Franciscan friars of Alcantara, which is now used for a theatre and a public school, and the civil hospital. The industries, which are unimportant, include lace-making, linen-weaving, and leather manu- facture.

According to local tradition, the bishopric of Dumium, near Braga, was transferred to San Martin de Mondoiiedo (three leagues from Mondojiedo) in the 8th century ; it was brought to Mondoitedo

itself by Dota Urraca in the beginning of the 12th century ; for about sixty years prior to 1238 the see was at Ribadeo. After having

~~been for nearly a century and a half in the hands of the Moors, Mondotiedo was recaptured by Ordofio L. in 858 ; and the Christian possession was made permanent by Alphonso III. in 870. It was taken by surprise by the French in 1809.~~

~~MONDOVI, a city of Italy, in the province of Cuneo, 15 miles east of Cuneo and about 55 west of Genoa by rail, was formerly the chief town of the Sardinian province of Mondovi, and between 1560 and 1719 the seat of a Piedmontese.university. The central quarter occupies the summit of a hill 1670 feet high, and contains the hexa- gonal piazza, a citadel erected in 1573 by Emanuel Phili- bert, the cathedral of St Donatus, a spacious episcopal palace, and the statue of Beccaria, who was a native of the town. At the foot of the hill along the banks of the~~

~~MON—MON~~

~~Ellero (a tributary of the Po) lie the industrial and commercial suburbs of Breo, Borgatto, Pian della Valle, and Carassone, with their potteries, tanneries, marble- works, &c. The mansion of Count San Quintino in Pian della Valle was the seat of the printing-press which from 1472 issued books with the imprint Mons Regalis ; and in modern times the Ducal press founded by Emanuel Phili- bert has acquired a great reputation. The population of the town was 9637 in 1871, with the suburbs 11,958; that of the commune 17,726 in 1861, and 17,902 in 1881.~~

~~Breo is identified with a certain Colonia Bredolensis ; but Mon- dovi proper —Mons Vici, Mons Regalis (Monteregale), or Vicodunum~~

~~—probably did not take its rise till about 1000 a.p. The bishopric dates from 1388.~~

~~MONEY~~

~~1. Definition and Functions of Money.—The precise definition of Money is a question presenting no small difficulty, and it has been complicated by the attempts of some writers to define the term so as to lend support to their favourite theories. The real difficulties of the subject are, however, chiefly connected with paper-money, and as that side of the question has been dealt~~

~~*with in the article BANKING (g.v.) it will here be sufficient to adopt the clear and careful description of money given by a distinguished American economist as being 'that which passes freely from hand to hand throughout the community in final dis- charge of debts and full payment for commodities, being accepted equally without reference to the character or credit of the person who offers it and without the intention of the person who receives it to consume it or enjoy it or apply it to any other use than in turn to tender it to others in dis- charge of debts or payment for commodities." ? In this passage the essential features of money are plainly set forth, though, as is frequently the case in economics, particular cases hard to bring within the description may be found.*?~~

~~*The functions which money discharges in the social organism are—at least in the opinion of all writers worth noticing here—clearly manifest. The most important is that of facilitating exchanges. It is not necessary to dwell on the great importance of this office. The mere consider- ation of industrial organization shows that it is based on the division of employments; but the earliest economic writers saw clearly that division of employments was rendered possible only by the use of a medium of exchange. They saw that the result of increasing specialization of labour was to bring about a state of things in which each individual produced little or nothing directly adapted to satisfy his own wants, and that each one was to live by exchanging his products for those of others. They saw, moreover, that this was not feasible without some object which all would be willing to accept for their peculiar pro- ducts, for otherwise, the difficulty of getting those together whose wants were reciprocal would be a complete hindrance to the development of exchange, which alone made division of labour possible. A second function hardly inferior in importance to the one just mentioned is that of affording a ready means of estimating the comparative value of dif- ferent commodities. Without some common commodity as a standard of comparison this would be almost impossible. "Tf a tailor had only coats and wanted to buy bread or a horse, it would be very troublesome to ascertain how much bread he ought to obtain for a coat or how many coats he*~~

~~*1 F, A. Walker, Money, Trade, and Industry, p. 4.*~~

~~2 For further information as to the discussions relative to the proper definition of " Money," the reader may consult J. 8. Mill, Prin. of Pol. Econ., B. iii. ch. 12, § 7; Jevons, Money, pp. 248 sq.; B. de Laveleye, Marché Monétaire, pp. 226 sq.; and especially Mr H. Sidgwick's article 'What is Money?" in the Wortnightly Review (April 1879), also his Principles of Political Economy, pp. 281 sq.~~

~~should give for a horse;"*® and as the number of com- modities to be dealt with increased the problem would be- come harder, "for each commodity would have to be quoted in terms of every other commodity." Indeed it may be reasonably maintained that the idea of general value could not be formed without the existence of money, and all that is known of savage races tends to bear out this view.* The adoption of some one commodity renders the comparison of values easy. 'The chosen commodity becomes a common denominator or common measure of value in terms of which we estimate the values of all other goods," ° and thus money, which in its primary function renders exchanges possible by acting as an intermediate term in each exchange, also makes exchanges easier by making them definite. Another func- tion of money comes into being with the progress of society. One of the most distinctive features of advancing civiliza- tion is the increasing tendency of people to trust each other. Thus there is a continual increase in relations of contract, as may be seen by examining the development of any legal system. Now a contract implies something to be done in the future, and for estimating the value of that future act a standard is required ; and here money, which already acts as a medium of exchange and as a measure of value at a given time, performs a third function, by affording an approximate means of estimating the present value of the future act, and in this respect may be regarded as a standard of value, or, if the phrase be preferred, of deferred payments. Some writers attribute a fourth function to money, inas- much as they regard it as being a means of easily storing up value. Doubtless it does supply this need, which is a specially pressing one in early civilizations owing to the insecurity which then exists, but with the progress of settled government the need becomes less extreme. Other forms of investment grow up, and the habit of hoarding money becomes unusual. It is therefore better to regard the functions of money as being only three in number, viz., to furnish—(1) the common medium by which exchanges are rendered possible, (2) the common~~

measure by which the comparative values of those exchanges are estimated, and (3) the standard by which future obligations are determined.

2. Causes which Determine the Value of Money. Quantity of Money needed by a Nation.—The problem of the deter- mining causes of the value of money is a particular case of the general problem of values, but there are circumstances which render the inquiry more than usually complicated. Before considering these it will be well to deal with a use of the phrase "value of money" which has led to much con-

3 Mill, Prin., B. iii. ch. 7, § 1.

4 W. Bagehot, Hconomic Studies, pp. 42-48. 5 Jevons, Money, p. 5.

6 For an ingenious argument against the use of the terms " measure : and "standard " of value, see F. A. Walker, Money, pp. 4 sq., 12, and

Money, Trade, and Industry, pp. 27 sq., 60 sq. The shorter title is uniformly used here for his larger treatise.

MONEY ;

fusion. In mercantile phraseology the value of money means the interest charged for the use of loanable capital. Thus, when the market rate of interest is high money is said to be dear, when it is low money is regarded as cheap. Whatever may be the force of the reasons in favour of this use, it is only mentioned here for the purpose of excluding it. For our present subject, "the value of a thing is what it will exchange for; the value of money is what money will exchange for, or its purchasing power. If prices are low, money will buy much of other things, and is of high value ; if prices are high, it will buy little of other things, and is of low value. The value of money is inversely as general prices, falling as they rise and rising as they fall.") 'Now in the general theory of value it appears that the proximate condition which determines it is the equation between supply and demand ; and this is clearly the case with reference to money. These terms, supply and demand, need, however, some elucidation. Let us consider what is meant by the supply of, and demand for, money. The supply of a commodity means the quantity of it which is offered for sale. But in what shape does the

~~*sale of money take place? By being offered for goods. 'The supply of money, then, is the quantity of it which people are wanting to lay out;" or, to put the point more concisely, it is "all the mouey in circulation at the time." Again, to take the case of demand,—the demand for a commodity is the pur- chasing power offered for it.2 Demand in the special case of money consists of all the goods offered for sale. There is, however, a peculiar feature in the case of money which arises from its position as the medium of exchange, viz., that money is, so to say, in a "constant state of supply and demand," since its principal service is to act as the means of purchasing commodities.2 From this it follows that the factors which determine the value of money within a given time are: (1) the amount of money in circulation, and (2) the amount of goods to be sold. On closer exami- nation it will, however, appear that there are other elements to be taken into account. In the first place, the quantity of money is not by itself the sole element on the supply side. In some instances a coin will not circulate more than two or three times in a year, while another coin may make hundreds of purchases. In determining the value of money these varying rates of circulation have to be con- sidered, and by taking an average we may establish the existence of a fresh element to be estimated, namely, the average rapidity with which money does its work, or, to use Mill's expression, "the efficiency of money." On the side of demand, again, it is not the quantity of commo- dities that is the determining element, but the amount of sales, and the same article may, and generally does, pass through several hands before it reaches the consumer. From this it follows that (if the consideration of credit in its various forms be omitted) the value of money is inversely as its quantity multiplied by its efficiency, the amount of transactions being assumed to be constant. This formula requires, however, some further explanations before it can be accepted as a full expression of the truth on the subject. It must be noticed that it is not commodities only that are exchanged for money. Services of all kinds constitute a large portion of the demand, while the payment of interest on the various forms of obligation requires a large amount of the circulating medium. The potent influence of credit also must be dwelt on. This latter force is the main element to be considered in dealing with variations of prices ; but*~~

~~2 For a clear statement of this, see J. E. Cairnes, Leading Principles, part i. ch. 2.~~

~~3 The leading exception to this is in the case of money which is hoarded for an indefinite period, and is therefore withdrawn from cir- culation.~~

~~so far as it is based on a deposit of metallic money it may be looked on as a means of increasing the efficiency of money, and therefore as coming within the formula given above. In its other aspects it lies outside the range of this article. Some interesting conclusions may be deduced from the results we have arrived at. One of these is that the "increased development of trade," or 'expansion of commerce," of itself tends to lower not to raise prices ; for, by increasing the work which money has to do while the amount remains the same, it raises its value. Another consequence is that a large addition may be made to the money in a country without any effect being produced on prices. 'This is evident, since money only acts on prices by being brought into circulation ; therefore, if the money which is added to the national stock is not used in this way, prices will remain unaffected.~~

~~We have now sufficiently considered the proximate con- ditions which determine the value of money ; the next step is to inquire: What is the ultimate regulator of its value ? The value of freely-produced commodities is—according to the ordinary theory of economists—determined by their 'cost of production," or, where the article is produced at different costs, by the cost of production of the most costly portion. We have now to consider how far this theory applies to the special case of money. Gold and silver, the principal materials of money, are the products of mines, and are produced at different costs; therefore the cost of the part produced at greatest cost ought to determine their value. This theory is, however, true only under certain conditions—namely, that competition is perfectly free, and that there are accurate data for computing the cost of pro- duction, and even then it is true only "in the long run." Moreover, cost only operates on value by affecting supply. "The latent influence," says Mill,® "by which the values of things are made to conform in the long run to the cost of production is the variation that would otherwise take place in the supply of the commodity." From these con- siderations it follows that cost of production~~

does not so influentially affect the value of money as some writers have supposed. In former periods it was a common proceeding on the part of the state to either restrict or stimulate coin- age and mining for the precious metals. At all times the working of gold and silver mines has been rather a hazard- ous speculation than a legitimate business. " When any person undertakes to work a new mine in Peru," says Adam Smith,® 'he is universally looked upon as a man destined to bankruptcy and ruin, and is upon that account shunned and avoided by everybody. Mining, it seems, is considered there in the same light as here, as a lottery, in which the prizes do not compensate the blanks ;" and all subse- quent experience confirms this view. With regard to the adjustment of supply to meet an altered cost of production, the difficulties are, if possible, still greater. The supply of money is so large compared with the annual production, that any change can operate but slowly on its value. The total stoppage of fresh supplies from the mines would not be felt for some years in the increased value; and an in- creased amount of production, though more rapid in its operation, takes some time to produce an effect. " Hence the effects of all changes in the conditions of production of the precious metals are at first, and continue to be for many years, questions of quantity only, with little reference to cost of production." On these grounds it is apparent that cost of production is not, for short periods, the controlling force which governs the value of money, and even for long

4 This view, which seems to most persons a paradox, is well put by Adam Smith, Wealth of Nations, p. 81 (ed. M'Culloch) ; also by J. E. Cairnes, Essays on Political Economy, p. 4.

SePrin, Byiliichs 3, § 2.

6 Wealth of Nations, p. 78 (ed. M'Culloch).

XVI. — gI!

722

periods the speculative nature of the industries connected with the production of money renders the cost of produc- tion an clement very hard to ascertain. Another considera- tion which gives a peculiar feature to the

~~*problem of money- value is that in the case of other commodities a change in cost of production affects value without any actual change in the supply. The knowledge that a commodity can be produced at a lower cost will cause a reduction in its value. This is not true of money. Hither the quantity or the efficiency of money must be altered to change its value. This is, of course, a result of its position as the circulating medium, When all these circumstances are taken into account it becomes clear that the most correct way to regard the question of money-value is that which looks on supply and demand, as interpreted above, as the regu- lator of its value for a limited time, while regarding cost of production as a force exercising an influence of uncer- tain amount on its fluctuations during long periods. Where the coinage of a state is artificially limited, the value of its money plainly depends on supply and demand as we have interpreted it.*~~

~~*The next question which arises is: What quantity of money does a nation require? What amount of the circu- lating medium is necessary for the proper working of the industrial organism? To this puzzling problem the earlier economists gave answers in the shape of definite formule. Thus, Sir W. Petty was of opinion that the amount of coin required by a country was one-half the rent of land, one- fourth the amount of building rent, and one fifty-second part of the annual wages of labour. Locke's view was that one-fiftieth of labourers' wages, one-fourth landowners' revenue, and one-twentieth of traders' yearly returns, was the properamount. Modern statisticians, however, though having command of much greater resources, decline to attempt a quantitative answer, and content themselves with indicating the conditions which the problem involves. In fact we must first examine the work which money has to perform, and this depends on several conditions. The first of these is the population ; ceteris paribus, twice as many people will want twice as much money. The second is the amount of transactions; for, if the amount of busi- ness done is doubled, the amount of money must be also doubled, unless at the same time some improvement in credit is introduced. The efficiency of money is a third element which affects the quantity needed, and this is largely dependent on the habits of the people and the facilities for communication. Other elements which can be only briefly indicated are—' the degree in which credit exists between man and man ; the amount of travelling which takes place ; and the commercial and banking organization which exists." 1 Another factor which requires to*~~

~~*be estimated is the extent to which habits of hoarding exist ; for all money hoarded is withdrawn from circulation, and therefore increases the total amount needed. The habits of saving in the rural districts of France remarkably exemplify this element in the question. Again, the existence of barter does away with the use of so much money as would be required to*~~

~~*carry on the exchanges effected by barter. The custom of paying wages in kind has a similar effect. This bare statement shows how insoluble the question is. When we*~~

~~*contemplate the matter from an international point of view, the amount needed, after allowance is made for the cost of transporting goods, is plainly that which will keep a country's prices at a level with those of the countries with which it has commercial relations.2 For otherwise the country would have an excess either of importation or of exportation, which would necessitate a flow of money to the country whose prices were lower than the general level.*~~

~~*1 F, A. Walker, Afoney, p. 73. er li oS BE*~~

~~*MONEY*~~

~~*This, then, is the condition which determines comparative prices between different countries; and, prices being so determined, the quantity of money needed to keep up those prices depends on the conditions above indicated. In the case of England reliable statistics tend to show that the gold in circulation was, in 1872, about £105,000,000, and the note circulation £43,000,000. In any Continental country the amount would probably be proportionally much greater, owing to the fact that there is in England a greater development of credit.*~~

~~*3. Early Forms of Currency.—Up to the present we have considered money as being fully established and properly adapted to fulfil its various functions. We have now to trace the steps by which a suitable system of currency was evolved from a state of barter. It is important for a right understanding of the question to grasp the fact that ex- changes took place originally between groups, and_ not between individuals. This explains the slow growth of exchanges, as each group produced most of the articles*~~

~~*necessary for itself, and such acts of barter as took place were rather reciprocal presents than mercantile exchanges. Such is actually the case at present among modern savages. "Tt is instructive to see trade in its lowest form among such tribes as the Australians. The tough greenstone valuable for making hatchets is carried hundreds of miles by natives, who receive from other tribes in return the prized products of their districts, such as red ochre to paint their bodies with; they have even got so far as to let peaceful traders pass unharmed through tribes at war, so that trains of youths might be met, each lad with a slab of sandstone on his head to be carried to his distant home and shaped into a seed-crusher. When strangers visit a tribe they are received at a friendly gathering or cor- robboree, and presents are given on both sides, No doubt there is a general sense that the gifts are to be fair exchanges, and if either side is not satisfied there will be grumbling and quarrelling ; but in this roughest kind of barter we do not yet find that clear notion of a unit of value which is the great step in trading."® This vivid description of what is going on at present among lower races enables us to realize the way in which money came into existence. When any commodity becomes an object of desire, not merely from its use to the persons desiring it, but from their wanting it as being readily exchangeable for other things, then that article may be regarded as rudi- mentary money. Thus the greenstone and ochre are on their way to being promoted to the position of currency, and the idea of a "unit of value" is all that is needed to complete the invention. "This higher stage is found among the Indians of British Columbia, whose strings of haiqua- shells worn as ornamental borders to their dresses serve them also as currency to trade with,—a string of ordinary quality being reckoned as worth one beaver's skin."* These shells, therefore, are in reality money, inasmuch as they discharge its functions.*~~

~~*On a review of existing savage tribes and ancient races of more or less civilization we are surprised at the great variety of objects which have been used to supply the need of a circulating medium. Skins, for instance, seem to be one of the earliest forms of money. They are to be found at present among the Indians of Alaska® dis- charging this service, while accounts of leather money seem to show that their use was formerly more general. As the hunting stage gives place to the pastoral, and animals become domesticated, the animal itself, instead of its skin, becomes the principal*~~

~~form of cur- rency. There is a great mass of evidence to show that, in the most distant regions and at very different times, cattle formed a currency for pastoral and early agricultural nations. Alike among existing barbarous tribes and in the survivals discovered among classical nations, sheep and oxen both appear as units of value. Thus we~~

~~find that at Rome, and through the Italian tribes generally, " oxen and sheep formed the oldest medium of exchange, ten sheep being~~

~~3 EK. B. Tylor, Anthropology, pp. 281-282. 4 Tylor, loc. cit. > Whymper, Alaska, p. 285.~~

~~MON EY~~

~~reckoned equivalent to one ox. The recognition of these objects as universal legal representatives of value, or, in other words, as money, may be traced back to the epoch of a purely pastoral economy." 1 The Icelandic law bears witness to a similar state of things ; while the various fines in the different Teutonic codes are estimated in cattle. The Latin word pecwnia (pecus) isan evidence of the earliest Roman money being composed of cattle. The English fee and the famous term feudal, according to its most probable etymology, are derived from the same root. Ina well-known passage of the /liad? the value of two different sets of armour is estimated in terms of oxen. The Irish law tracts bear evidence as to the use of cattle as one of the measures of value in early Irish civilization. Within the last few years it has been prominently brought before the public that oxen form the principal wealth and the circulating medium among the Zulus and Kaffres. On the testimony of an eye-witness we are assured that, "as cattle constitute the sole wealth of the people, so they are their only medium of such transactions as involve exchange, payment, or reward."4 We find that cattle-rents are paid by the pastoral Indian tribes to the United States Government.5 From the prominence of slavery in early societies it is natural to suppose that slaves would be adopted as a medium of exchange, and one of the measures of value in the Irish law tracts, cwmhal, is said to have originally meant a female slave. They are at present applied to this purpose in Central Africa, and also in New Guinea. On passing to the agricultural stage a greater number of objects are found capable of being applied to currency purposes. Among these are corn—used even at present~~

~~*in Norway—maize, olive oil, cocoa- nuts, and tea. The most remarkable instance of an agricultural product being used as currency is to be found in the case of tobacco, which was adopted as legal tender by the English colonists in North America. Another class of articles used for money consists of ornaments, which among all uncivilized tribes serve this purpose. The haiqua-shells mentioned before are an instance, cowries in India, whales' teeth among the Fijians, red feathers among some South Sea Island tribes, and finally, any attractive kinds of stone which can be easily worked. Mineral products, so far as they do not come under the preceding head, furnish another class. Thus salt was used in Abyssinia and Mexico, while the metals—a pheno- menon which will require a more careful examination—have suc- ceeded in finally driving all their inferior competitors out of the field, and have become the sole substances for money at present.*~~

~~*4. Metallic Forms of Money. Their Superiority over other Substances. Special Advantages of Silver and Gold.— The use of metals as a form of money can be traced far back in the history of civilization, but, as it is not possible to ascertain the historical order of their respective adoptions for this purpose, we will take them in the order of their value, beginning with the lowest. Iron, judging from the statement of Aristotle, was extensively employed ascurrency. One remarkable instance of this which at once occurs to the mind is the Spartan money, which is clearly a survival of the older system that had died out among the other Greeks, though by modern writers it has been attributed to ascetic policy. In conjunction with copper, iron formed an early Chinese currency, and till recently it was a subsidiary coinage in Japan. Iron spikes are used in Central Africa, while Adam Smith notices the use of nails for money in Scotland. Lead has also served as money, as it does at present in Burmah. Copper has been more widely employed than either of the previously-mentioned metals. Its use in China as a parallel standard with iron has just been men- tioned. The early Hebrew coins were chiefly composed of it, while down to 269 3.c. the sole Roman coinage was an alloy of copper. 'Tull a very recent period it formed the principal money of some poorer European states (asSweden), and was the subsidiary coinage of the United Kingdom till the present bronze fractional currency was introduced. Tin was not so favourite a material for money as copper, but the early English coinages were composed of it,*~~

~~*probably on account of the fertile tin mines of Cornwall, and in later times halfpence and farthings of tin have been struck. The*~~

~~*1 Mommsen, Hist. of Rome (Eng. trans.), i. p. 203.*~~

~~*2 The episode between Diomede and Glaucus in the 6th book.*~~

~~*3 Maine, Early History of Institutions, Lect. vi.; Brehon Law Tracts (ed. by Drs Hancock and Richey).*~~

~~*4 Rev, H. Dugmore, quoted by Maine, op. cit., p. 143.*~~

~~*5 F, A. Walker, Money, Trade, and Industry, p. 22.*~~

~~*& Wealth of Nations, p. 11.*~~

~~*723*~~

~~*next metal which comes into notice is silver, which up to the last few years was the principal form of money, and even still is able to dispute the field with its most formidable rival. It formed the main basis of Greek coins, and was introduced at Rome in 269 B.c. The medizval money was principally composed of silver, and its position in recent times will have to be subsequently noticed more at length. Gold, which is the most valuable of the metals widely used for monetary purposes, has been steadily gaining ground with the growth of commerce. The earliest trace of its use in common with that of silver is to be found "in the pictures of the ancient Egyptians weighing in scales heaps of rings of gold and silver." ? The only other metals used for money—platinum and nickel—may be easily disposed of. The former of these was coined for a short time by the Russian Government, and then given up as unsuitable. The latter is only used as an alloy.*~~

~~*The examination of the forms of currency, both metallic and non-metallic, in which we have been engaged leads to certain definite conclusions as to the course which the evolution of currency is pursuing. It appears (1) that the metals tend to supersede all other forms of money among progressive peoples, and (2) that certain metals tend to supersede the others. From this we are led to consider the qualities which are desirable in the material of money, and to conclude that the presence or absence of those qualities is the reason of the adoption or rejection of any given substance.*~~

~~*(1) In the first place, it is necessary that the material of money should be desirable, or, in other words, possess value ; and to this condition all the commodities we have reviewed conform, for otherwise they would never have attained the position of being a medium of exchange. This quality, then, is not the reason for the preference of some forms over others. (2) The second requisite clearly is that the value of the article shall be high in proportion to its weight or bulk, or, to put the same truth in another way, it is requisite that it shall be portable. Want of this quality has been a fatal obstacle to many early forms of money retaining their place. Skins, corn, and tobacco were found very difficult to transfer from place to place. Iron and copper too suffered from the same defect, while sheep and oxen, though moving themselves, were expensive to transfer. (3) It is further desirable that the material of money shall be the same throughout, and that one unit shall be equal in value to another. This is a reason for rejecting the widespread currency composed of cattle, as the difference between one and another head is of course often considerable. The metals possess a particular advantage in this respect, as, after being refined, they are almost exactly homogeneous. (4) A fourth requisite is that the substance used as money can without damage be divided and, if needed, united again; here also the desired quality is peculiarly possessed by the metals, as they are easily fusible, while skins or precious stones suffer greatly in value by division, and it need hardly be added that the same is the case with regard to animals. (5) Money must also be durable. This at once removes from the articles suitable for money all animal and many vegetable substances. Eggs or oil will not keep, and conse- quently soon lose their value. Iron, too, is liable to rust, which, combined with its low value, is a reason for its dis- use as currency. (6) Money should be easily distinguishable, and there should*~~

~~*be no trouble in ascertaining its value. This condition is one of the reasons why precious stones have never been much used as money, their value being hard to estimate. The same objection applies to most non- metallic currencies, and is only obviated even in their case by the process of assaying. (7) The last condition which*~~

~~*7 Tylor, p. 283.*~~

~~*724*~~

~~*appears desirable for the money material is, that its value shall be steady. This, however, is of but slight importance in early societies, and it is only as deferred payments become a prominent feature of industrial life that this requisite 1s much needed. It is enough for the other purposes of money that it shall not vary within short periods, which is found to be a feature of metals, and especially of silver and gold, while corn especially varies widely in value from season to season. From the foregoing examination of the requisites desirable in the material of money it is easy to deduce the empirical laws which the history of money discloses, since metals, as compared with non-metallic substances, evidently possess those requisites in a great degree. They are all durable, homogeneous, divisible, and recognizable, and in virtue of these superior advantages they are the only substances now used for money by advanced nations. Nor is the case different when the decision has to be made between the different metals. Iron has been rejected because of its low value and its liability to rust, lead from its extreme softness, and tin from its tendency to break. Both these metals, as well as copper also, are unsuitable from their low value, which hinders their speedy transmission so as to adjust inequalities of local prices.*~~

~~*The elimination of these metals leaves silver and gold as the only suitablematerialsfor forming the principal currency. Of late years there has been a movement towards the adoption of the latter as the sole monetary standard, silver being regarded as suitable only for a subsidiary coinage. Indeed this question, which is reserved for subsequent discussion, may be regarded as the principal matter of controversy in the field of metallic currency. The special features of gold and silver which render them the most suitable materials for currency may here be noted. 'The value of these*~~

~~metals changes only by slow degrees ; they are readily divisible into any number of parts which may be reunited by means of fusion without loss; they do not deteriorate by being kept; their firm and compact texture makes them difficult to wear; their cost of pro- duction, especially of gold, is so considerable that they possess great value in small bulk, and can of course be transported with comparative facility ; and their identity is perfect."! (The possession by both these metals of all the qualities needed in money is more briefly but forcibly put by Cantillon when he says that " gold and silver alone are of small volume, of equal goodness, easy of transport, divisible without loss, easily guarded, beautiful and brilliant, and durable almost to eternity."? This view has even been pushed to an extreme form in the proposition of Turgot, that they became universal money by the nature and force of things, independently of all convention and law, from which the deduction has been drawn that to proscribe silver by law is a violation of the nature of things. .~~

~~5. Coinage: its Advantages, and the Principal Questions connected therewith.—The development of monetary systems has now been traced down to the establishment of metallic currencies, These, in the early stages of their existence, passed by weight. The Hebrew records bear witness to this fact, as also do the Greek writers. Aristotle, for ex- ample, after indicating the circumstances which led to the invention of currency, proceeds to point out that it was "afterwards determined in value by men putting a stamp upon it, in order that it may save them from the trouble of weighing it."* There are two distinct stages in the~~

~~1 Ency. Brit. (8th ed.), art. " Money," vol. xv. p. 417.~~

~~2 W.S. Jevons in the Contemporary Review, January 1881. See also Lord Liverpool, Coins of the Realm (Bank of England reprint), p. 10.~~

~~3 See Cairnes, Logical Method of Pol. Econ., p. 131, note; and for an application of the argument to Bimetallism, see EK. de Laveleye, Fort. Rev., July 1881.~~

~~4 Pol., i. 9, 8. The whole passage is worthy of quotation, as showing how clearly Aristotle conceived the primary function of~~

~~*introduction of coining. In the first, only the quality or fineness of the metal is denoted by the stamp, no attempt being made to fix the weight. In other words, the stamp acts as a kind of hall-mark. The Chinese cubes of gold may have been the earliest money. Herodotus attributes the first use of coined gold and silver to the Lydians,° while in another passage he mentions that the first Greek coinage was at /Mgina, by Pheidon of Argos.° The second step was to certify the weight as well as the fineness of the metal, thus completing the invention. The necessity of preventing any interference with the coin after it had been stamped led to the adoption of a regular form, and, though hexagonal or octagonal coins are to be found, the received shape of a coin is that of a flat circle, each side of which is stamped, as well as in many cases the edge. By this con- trivance all persons into whose hands the coin came had a guarantee as to its quality and quantity, and we may reason- ably infer that the great improvement in coinage among the Grecian colonies was the effect, and also in some degree the cause, of the expansion of their commerce in the 6th century B.c. From Greece the art of coining spread to Italy, being introduced by the Greek colonists in Lower Italy. Since then coinage as an art has always existed in the more advanced societies. The progress of invention, however, does not end with the introduction of the art of coining, since a number of practical questions arise with reference to the best system to be adopted, which for a protracted period present great difficulties to those who are called upon to solve them. One of these, before touched on, is: What is the best shape for coins? The answer has finally been in favour of the circular, but square and oblong pieces are also to be found.' Closely allied with this is the question of the most suitable limits of size. The in- ferior limit is plainly fixed by the convenience of those using the coins. They ought not to be so small "that they can be easily lost, or can with difficulty be picked up."8 Instances of violations of this principle occur in the case of the English threepenny piece and the American one-dollar gold piece. The superior limit is a more difficult point. Its determination turns partly on the difficulty of coining large pieces, and partly on the facilities which such large coins as the American gold double-eagle give for im- proper treatment. It is an easy process to drill holes, which can be concealed by hammering, while in some cases the coin has been sawn in two, and the*~~

~~*interior gold removed, the outside surfaces being soldered together, while platinum is put in the midst to maintain the weight. As a general rule it may be laid down that no gold coin much larger than the English sovereign, or silver one at all larger than the half-crown, should be issued. Another considera- tion to be borne in mind when determining the proper size of coins is the relative amount of wear which takes place. Experience proves that large coins are less worn than small ones. " According to experiments made at the mint in 1833, the loss per cent. per annum on half-crowns is about 2s. 6d., on shillings, 4s., and on sixpences, 7s. 6d." This result has been confirmed by other inquiries. From this it follows that the larger coins are less expensive, but their size is limited by the fear of their being tampered with. Again, the character of the stamp to be impressed money: 5d mpos Tas dddAayds Towdrév 7. ouvébevTo mpds opis abrovs didévar kat apBdvew, 8 Tov xpyolmwy ard dv elxe Thy xpelav edueraxelporov mpds Td fv, olov cidypos Kal dpyupos, Kay ef 71 Towodrov erepov, Td pev mpGTov amAGs opicbev peyeGe Kat oTaOuw, 7d be TeAevratov kal xapaxrijpa émiBaddévrwv, iva dmodtan THs mEeTpHTEWS auTous.*~~

~~*> Herodotus, i. 94.*~~

~~*6 7b., vi. 127. See also for a discussion of Pheidon's coinage, Grote, Hist. of Greece, ii. pp. 319 sq. (Cabinet ed.).*~~

~~*7 An instance of the latter is the itzibw of the Japanese coinage,*~~

~~*which is an oblong flat piece of silver. 8 Jevons, Money, p. 155.*~~

~~*MO NE ¥*~~

~~*is a matter requiring much care. The objects aimed at in imposing the stamp are (1) to prevent the coin being counterfeited, and (2) to prevent any of the metal being abstracted. The former of these objects can be best at- tained by making the device such as can be obtained only by powerful and expensive machinery. The most improved methods must be adopted, and the greatest pains taken to have the device perfectly executed. The latest improve- ment in the process of coining is the introduction of the knee-joint press. The latter difficulty is best obviated by using special care in marking the edges of the coins. Ancient coins were issued with unstamped edges*~~

~~*which presented no impediment to clipping, but modern coins, at least those of any size, are protected by the edge being milled or by a legend being inscribed round it. The combination of milled edges with a raised legend would be a still more effectual means of protecting the coinage from interference.*~~

~~*Another matter of importance in the process of coining is the nature and proportion of alloy to be used. The necessity for some mixture arises from the fact that gold and silver are both naturally soft, and, to obviate this, cop- per has been mixed with them, so as to produce a harder substance. The Austrian ducat is the nearest approach to purity among the principal coins of Europe, being com- posed of seventy-one parts of pure gold to one of alloy. The English gold coins are eleven-twelfths pure gold, while the silver ones are thirty-seven-fortieths pure silver. The origin of the difference is purely historical. The general gold proportion is nine-tenths gold to one-tenth alloy, while in some coinages the proportion of silver to alloy is nearly five to one, the countries composing the Latin Union having adopted that proportion in order to reduce their smaller silver coins to tokens. Copper is the usual material for alloying, but the Melbourne mint used silver for some time. It is this silvery alloy that accounts for the yellow appearance of many Australian sovereigns. They, however, are rapidly disappearing, as it is profitable to melt them down. It has been mentioned above that the wear of small coins is greater than that of large ones, and it may be added here that the wear of coins in general is an important question in connexion with their legal circula- tion. The English sovereign is believed to remain above the least current weight for from fifteen to twenty years. For the technical processes of coining, &c., reference may be made to the article Mrnr.*~~

~~*The next topic to be considered is: Who should issue money? In the earlier stages of currency the question was not so prominent, but the establishment of coining brought it forward. In Greece each city being autono- mous claimed and exercised the right of freely coining as it desired, the coins being, of course, received in other cities only at their real value. The consequences of this system * were generally beneficial. The Greek coins were usually up to their nominal value, as debased coinage was unable to circulate beyond the place of issue, and therefore ex- tremely inconvenient to the members of the state issuing it.1 Under the Roman republic private*~~

~~*persons were probably allowed to bring metal to be coined, though the coins seem generally to have had the name of one of the consuls for the year on them. Under the empire the doctrine became established that the right of coming be- longed exclusively to the emperor, and till the fall of the Western empire this was acted on. After the establish- ment of the various barbarian kingdoms, each sovereign assumed the privilege of coining, a right which in France was extended to or rather usurped by the principal nobles.? In England the king alone coined silver. At present the*~~

~~*1 See Lenormant, Contemp. Rev., February 1879. 2 Hallam, Aliddle Ages, i. pp. 205-206. 3 Lord Liverpool, Coins of the Realm, ch. v.*~~

~~*control of the operations of the mint is completely in the hands of the executive ; and, until recently, no question on theoretical grounds as to the propriety of this method has ever been raised.**~~

~~*In close connexion with the right of coining comes the consideration as to the proper persons to bear the expense of the process. At first sight the answer seems plain enough. Coins are a manufactured article quite as much as plate, and are rendered more valuable by being assayed, weighed, and certified. It appears there- fore quite proper that those who bring metal to be coined should bear the expense of the coinage, or, in other words, should give up a part of the metal to the mint, thus paying for the service rendered to them in the same manner as those sending letters pay the postal de- partment for their transmission. This course has been usually adopted. England, however, has taken a different line. In order to encourage the coining of the precious metals, no charge was made at the mint beyond that in- volved in the necessary delay in the operation ; and this is at present the case with gold. Though this arrangement was originally introduced in obedience to the prejudices of the mercantile system which regarded gold and silver as being peculiarly wealth, it may be defended on reasonable grounds: for (1) the expense of the mint is very small compared with the amount of coin turned out, and (2) the coins produced are used by the nation, and therefore their expense may quite fairly be defrayed from the national revenue. Again, as the profit on the silver coinage (owing to circumstances to be subsequently discussed) is large, that may be set off*~~

~~*against the free coinage of gold. The charge levied on coining, if confined to the expenses in- curred, is called brassage ; if it is anything above that cost it is known as seigniorage, which latter term is also used to denote both kinds of charge. The effect of seigniorage (using the term in its more extended sense) on the value of coins is to lower them, in fact, as Tooke has put it, seigniorage is always a kind of debasement, unless accom- panied with limitation.> If the same quantity of metal be in circulation there will be a greater number of coins, and therefore nominal prices will be higher. It is, however, possible that the increased prices may check the produc- tion of the precious metals, thus making the value of the metal higher than it would otherwise be. Whether this will happen or not depends on the actual conditions of production, and is incapable of being predicted. One advantage which undoubtedly results from a charge on coinage is that it checks the tendency to melt coin when exported, for where a seigniorage is imposed coins are more valuable than the uncoined metal by the amount of the seigniorage. It therefore becomes the interest of the holder not to melt down the coins, as in doing so he loses the extra value given by the coining. Another factor in the expense of currency is the loss which arises from the wear and tear which money undergoes, and the consequent cost of replacing the light or missing pieces. The last and largest item is the interest on the total amount of money in use. To take the case of England, the value of the metallic currency is estimated at about £130,000,000. The interest*~~

~~*4 'We may take as an example the function (which is a monopoly too) of coining money. . . . Noone, even of those most jealous of state interference, has objected to this as an improper exercise of the powers of government." Mill, Princ., B. v. ch.1,§2. Butsee, for objections, H. Spencer, Social Statics, pp. 400-402, and J, L. Shadwell, System of Pol. Econ., p. 264.*~~

~~*5 Tooke, Hist. of Prices, i. 121 sg. It is impossible, however, to agree with Tooke that uncoined bullion would be higher in value than coin when a seigniorage is charged on the latter. He seems to ignore the fact that the value of the precious metals is partly depend- ent on their use as currency, and that the seigniorage represents a tax levied on the extra value resulting from the use of the metal as money.*~~

~~on this at 5 per cent. wouldamount to £6,500,000. This ap- parently heavy charge is justified by the fact that it is desir- able to have a currency possessing, or at least based on, value. The expense of a metallic currency is, however, combined with its weight, a strong reason for the great developments of representative money and credit in modern times, with the result that gold and silver are hardly ever used in large domestic transactions, all such payments being made by cheques, which are cleared off against one another. For a full account of the modern organization of credit, see the article BANKING.~~

~~6. HIistorical Outline of Depreciations.—The earliest sys- tems of currency whose progressive debasements it is possible in any degree to trace are those of the various Greek states, though even here many details remain in obscurity. The Roman currency system is comparatively better known ; while for the medizval currencies from the time of Charle- magne (800 A.D.) elaborate materials are available, which naturally increase in bulk and precision as we approach~~

~~more modern times. he general treatment of the history~~

~~of coins belongs to Numismatics (q.v.); but the history of monetary depreciations is important in connexion with the theory of money as illustrating the value of sound economic knowledge.~~

~~Until coinage became a state function a continued debase- ment was impossible, since it was open td any one to refuse the money offered in payment if it was not up to the proper standard. When, however, coinage became a function of government strong motives for debasement soon presented themselves. (1) The cost of coinage falling on the state, and being generally defrayed by a seigniorage, led to the idea that this seigniorage could be made more profitable by making it larger, while the existence of any deduction veiled the injustice of a charge exceeding the expense incurred in the operation of coming. (2) The position of most Governments was that of debtors, and as a debasement favoured all debtors at the expense of all creditors it was only natural that rulers, ignorant of the ultimately ruinous effects of a series of debasements, should seek to relieve~~

~~*themselves without exciting the odium incurred by the levy of heavy taxes. A more pressing case than the foregoing, and one where more justification exists, is that of a severe social crisis, when large numbers of the community are burdened with debt, and a depreciation of the monetary standard seems the simplest mode of escaping from so critical a situation. Whatever may be the inducements to enter on the perilous course of tampering with the monetary standard, a long experience has incontestably proved its disastrous effects. One of the great causes of the weakness of France during the "' hundred years' war" was the extremely debased state of its currency, and the dread of further reductions in the value of the coins.} Lord Macaulay has given a graphic picture of the evils which England suffered from its depreciated silver currency towards the end of the 17th century.2. And a debasement brought about by design possesses a further element of evil by creating a belief that similar devices will soon be again resorted to. So manifest are the evils that result froin debasement that it may be reasonably hoped that all civil- ized Governments have abandoned the practice for ever ; though, unfortunately, similar bad effects are produced by the over-issue of inconvertible paper currencies, and this is still an expedient adopted under the pressure of difficulties. "It is proper to observe that coins may be debased in three different ways—(1) by diminishing the quantity or weight of the metal of a certain standard of which any coin of a given denomination is made; (2) by raising the nominal value of coins of a given weight and made of a*~~

~~*1 J, E. T. Rogers, Historical Gleanings, i. p. 97. 2 TWist. of Eng., ch. xxi.*~~

~~*metal of a certain standard, that is, by making them current or legal tender at a higher rate than that at which they passed before ; (3) by lowering the standard or fineness of the metal of which coins of a given weight and denomina- tion are made, that is, by diminishing the quantity of pure metal and proportionally increasing the quantity of alloy." The last of these methods is the most dangerous, since the detection of it is more difficult, as it is so much easier to discover the weight than the fineness of the metal in a coin ; but all of them produce the same results and are adopted for the same reasons.*~~

~~*Greek Depreciations.—The first debasement of coinage known tous on good evidence is that of the Athenian coinage by Solon in 594 B.c.4 In order to obviate the severe distress of that period in Attica, he reduced the quantity of silver in the coins more than 25 per cent., so that 138 new drachme (the standard Athenian coin) were only equiva- lent to 100 pieces of the older coinage. This proceeding was perhaps justified by the critical state of things previously existing, and was a decided success. It is probable that another debasement of the gold coinage took place at Athens in 408 B.c. during the strain of the Peloponnesian War, though doubts have been cast on the reality of this debasement.5 It may, however, be said that generally the Greek cities fairly maintained the standard of money, though some states were notorious for dishonesty in this respect. The existence of an electrum coinage is no proof of a tendency to debasement, since it was regarded as a separate substance, and issued at its cost value, allowing for the expense of coining. As remarked before, this comparative honesty in relation to the coinage may be partly explained by the small extent of the Greek states, so that a debased coinage was unable to circulate beyond the boundaries of the issuing state. The keen perceptions of the more advanced Greek thinkers and their teachings on this subject may have also con- tributed to the same result.®*~~

~~*Roman Depreciations.—The earliest Roman coinage was com- posed of an alloy of copper (#s), and this continued unaltered up to the time of the First Punic War. Silver was introduced in 269 B.c., the proportion between it and the older copper being fixed at 250:1.? The copper currency was first debased during the Punic wars at the most critical period of the Hannibalic inva- sion—"the Romans had debased the silver and copper coin, raised the legal value of the silver currency more than a third, and issued a gold coinage far above the value of the metal."® Soon after this period the copper money, whose successive debasements are recorded by Pliny,® seems to have been reduced to the position of a sub- sidiary currency, so that it is not really a case of debasement of the standard. The silver denarius which at first was yd of a Roman pound, had been debased to gyth of a pound. In 91 B.c. a number of plated denarii were issued at the rate of one for every seven silver pieces issued. This proceeding, which was simply for political purposes, was proposed by Drusus, but in 84 B.c. a proposal for calling in these plated pieces was passed, and was extremely popular. It*~~

~~*is probable that a slight debasement took place under Sulla, and one of the Cornelian laws seems to state the so-called fiat theory of money.!° The denarius was lowered under Nero.to gisth of a pound, while the later period of the empire is a scene of continual tampering with the currency. The gold awrews was at first z;th of a pound, but at the time of Augustus it was only ath, while under Constantine it had come to be only 7yd. The com- parison of Hellenic with Roman monetary history seems to show that a considerable number of small states, all issuing coins, are less likely to meddle with the standard than the mint of a single large empire. It also proves the value of an acquaintance with monetary theory, if we can judge by contrasting the views of the — Greek thinkers with those of the Roman lawyers." A few words of caution may here be added against the danger of a careless com- parison of values, as expressed in ancient or even medizval money with those of modern times. It is extremely hard to accept the*~~

~~*3 Lord Liverpool, Coins of the Realm, p. 37.*~~

~~*4 Grote, Hist. of Greece, part ii. ch. 11.*~~

~~*5 7b., vol. iii. p. 116, note 1.*~~

~~*6 For a full discussion of this point, see Lenormant in Contemp. Rev., February 1879.*~~

~~*7 Mommsen, Hist. of Rom. (Eng. trans.), i. p. 458.*~~

~~*3 70., tgp. do.*~~

~~*SH, N., xxx. Cli Los*~~

~~*10 Mommsen, iii. pp. 418-414 ; Lenormant, op. cit.*~~

~~*11 Compare, for instance, the passage previously cited from Aristotle with the following :—" Quia non semper nec facile concurrebat ut, cum tu haberes quod ego desiderarem, invicem haberem quod tu accipere velles, electa materia est cujus publica ac perpetua estimatio difficul- tatibus permutationum equalitate quantitatis subveniret; eaque*~~

~~*"materia forma publica percussa usum dominiumque non tam ex*~~

~~*substantia prebet quam ex quantitate."'—Paulus, Dig., xviii. 1, 1.*~~

~~*MON EY*~~

~~*prices given by any ancient writer, since the varying factors neces- sary to be estimated are so many, viz., (1) the weight of the coin, (2) its purity, (8) the value of the monetary metal at the time, (4) the value of the commodity sold in relation to other things, (5) the question whether the commodity was in its normal state as regards supply and demand ; to all these may be added (6) the difficulty of determining whether the figures have not been altered.) After the fall of the Western empire, the various barbarian sove- reigns adopted silver as their principal coinage, combined with the greatest diversity in the systems adopted. On the revival of the empire under Charlemagne an effort was made by him to estab- lish a general system of currency, based on the silver pound as a unit, and thus corresponding to the unit of weight. This system was introduced into England, and thence into Scotland, but the rapid decay of the Carlovingian empire prevented any uniformity being: preserved in these different countries, while the different debasements in each produced widely divergent systems, which will require separate notice,*~~

~~*English Depreciations.—The first dcbasement undergone by the English silver coinage was in 1300, when Edward I. reduced the amount of metal in the coins by 14? per cent., or, in other words, 20 shillings and 3 pence were coined out of the Tower pound instead of 20 shillings as previously.2 This was the prelude to a series of changes which were carried out during the next three cen- turies, and which terminated in 1600, when the pound troy of silver was coined into 62 shillings ; since that time the silver coinage has not been debased, the reduction carried out in 1816, by which 66 shillings were coined from the troy pound, being accompanied by a limitation of its use in discharging debts to a maximum amount of £2, as well as by the abolition of the public right of coining silver at the mint. The period extending from 34th Henry VIII. to 6th Edward VI. (1548-1552) has been specially noted by Lord Liverpool as a time of peculiar interference with the fineness of the metal. The old proportion of 11 oz. 2 dwts. of metal to 18 dwts. of alloy, was altered to 10 oz. of metal per pound, then to 6 oz. or one-*~~

~~*half, 4 oz. or one-third, and finally in 1551 to 3 oz. of pure metal and 9 oz. of alloy. A tendency to reformation began under Edward VI., and was finally carried out under Eliza- beth in the recoinage of 1560, which has been fully described by Mr Froude.* Various proposals to depreciate the silver currency have been made since then, and one of these, as above mentioned, was accepted in 1600. The most remarkable of the unsuccessful schemes for debasing the standard was that of Lowndes, which was advanced in 1695, when the discussions preparatory to the recoinage of 1696 were being carried on. Lowndes's plan was to coin the pound troy of standard silver into 77s. 6d., thus debas- ing it 25 per cent. He was resisted by Locke, who, in his Further Considerations concerning Raising the Value of Money, contri- buted materially to the development of monetary theory; and the recoinage was, mainly in consequence of his efforts, in combina- tion with those of Newton and Montague, based on thoroughly sound principles.® The first English gold coinage, so far as has been clearly proved, was that of 1257, in the reign of Henry III., when a small number of gold pennies were coined at the ratio of 10 to 1 to the existing silver coins. Previously to this date the need of gold for business transactions could not have been felt, as the commerce of the country was necessarily limited. It is prob- able that for the few transactions of foreign trade a species of gold coins issued by the Greek emperors at Constantinople, and thence called byzants, were used.6 Another gold coin, known as a florence, from the place where it was first coined, was also used after 1250. The regular series of English gold coinage begins in 1344, when Edward ITI. coined, in imitation of the foreign coin just mentioned, a large number of florins at the rate of 50 to the Tower pound. The gold coinage was, however, for a long period a secondary part of the monetary system, and suffered a series of changes, the last of which took place in 1717.7 The present English coinage system is regulated by the Coinage Act of 1870,8 which amends and consolidates previous Acts on the subject. The schedule to that Act, which is reproduced at p. 484 of the present volume, gives full information as to existing coins, their weight, fineness, "remedy," &c.*~~

~~*Scotch Depreciations.—The coinage of Scotland was derived from the primitive Carlovingian system through the medium of England, and for a long period remained the same as at first. The pressure*~~

~~*1 As to the various elements requisite for a proper estimate of medixval prices, see Cibrario, Della Economia Politica del Medio Evo, 1. iii. c. 8.*~~

~~*2 The Tower pound, which was three-quarters of an oz. troy less than the troy pound, was used in England until the 18th of Henry VIII. (1527), when it was replaced by the troy weight. This should be always remembered in con- sidering the precise amount of depreciation at any given tiie.*~~

~~*3 Coins of the Realm, ch. xiii. 4 Hist. of Eng., vii. p. 2.*~~

~~*5 Macaulay's account of this recoinage, which is written in his typical man- ner, has made this episode of English monetary history very generally known.*~~

~~*6 Lord Liverpool, Coins of the Realm, p. 47.*~~

~~*7 The third great English recoinage was that of the gold coin, which took place in 1773-1775. It is commonly known as the recoinage of 1774,*~~

~~*8 38 & 84 Vic. c. 10.*~~

~~*727*~~

~~*under which the resources of Scotland suffered during the constant wars with England, as well as perhaps the example of their close ally France, led the Scottish sovereigns to debase their coins out of all proportion to the English system. This was the reason for the prohibition of Scotch coins as currency by tale in England, the variation in course of time being so great that in 1600 the pound of silver, which coutained about three pounds sterling English, was made into thirty-six pounds Scotch, the latter being thus twelve times as much debased. After the union of the crowns in 1603 no steps were taken to assimilate the two systems, which con- tinued as before till the complete union of the two countries in 1707. At the latter date a complete recoinage on the basis of the English system was carried out, thus rendering the coinage of both coun- tries exactly similar. This most valuable reform was at first viewed with suspicion by the Scotch people, and a large amount of the old Scotch currency was hoarded or exported.*~~

Lrish Depreciations.—No coined money existed in Ireland before the English invasion in 1170. The English colony, as a matter of course, used the same coinage as the mother-country, but on several occasions inferior money was introduced, as being good enough for a subject country. At the recoinage of 1560 it was pro- posed to send the bad coins that were called in to Treland, but to this Elizabeth refused to assent. From 1689 to 1825 the nominal value of the coinage was 84 per cent. higher in Ireland than in England. In the latter year Irish money was reduced to the English standard,® from which time the United Kingdom has pos- sessed a perfectly uniform system of metallic money.

French Deprecciations.—The monetary system established by Charlemagne throughout his dominions soon disappeared in Italy and the German provinces. It continued to exist in France proper. The general state of confusion, however, and the weakness of the central authority, led to local issues by the various feudal lords. " At the accession of Hugh Capet as many as a hundred and fifty are said to have exercised this power." !° The increase of the power of the Capetian kings enabled them to restrict this freedom of coinage, and to reserve to themselves this profitable function, the seigniorage on the process of coining being a special branch of the royal revenue. They were unfortunately not inclined to confine their gains to this legitimate source. 'The French coinage was recklessly debased during the many centuries from Philip I. (ob. 1108) to Louis XV. (0b. 1774). The management of fle minut under Louis IX. was always regarded as a model for imitation,! but even in his time the livre, originally a pound, was debased to less than one-fourth of its primitive valuc. The dealings with the currency were still more unscrupulous during the protracted wars with England, the result being that at the accession of Louis XI. (1461), when the English had been finally expelled from France, the livre was only about one-fifteenth of its original value. Nor did the depreciation of the currency rest here. The period of something over a century, extending from 1497 to 1602, presents a remarkable series of changes in a downward direction, no less than nineteen depreciations having taken place, many of them consisting of changes in the fineness of the metal.!? Thereis in this respect a remarkable analogy between this epoch ot French coinage and the English period from 1543 to 1552.

~~*The history of French depreciations did not terminate, as that of the English ones did, with the close of the 16th century ; under Louis XIV. the livre was only one-half of what it had been under Henry IV. The final result was that in 1789 the livre had come to be only one seyenty-eighth of its weight in the time of Charle- magne. At the Revolution it was converted into the franc, at the rate of 81 livres to 80 francs.43 It is not, however, to be supposed that the changes in the French currency were always towards debasement. The terrible evils arising from the debased coinage led to a general outcry, which in some cases was so strong as to force the king of the time to reform the monetary standard ; one striking instance occurred in the reign of Philip IV.,!4 whose dealings with the currency led to his receiving the epithet of "le faux monnoyeur."*~~

~~*Depreciations in other Countries.—The very brief notice of the depreciations in the originally uniform currencies of England and France which has just been given is sufficient to establish the general tendency, and throws light enough on the resulting conse- quences ; a similar course was followed in the other countries of Europe, but the details are too unconnected to be conveniently pre- sented. A few facts will suffice. Thus, the German forin "was originally a gold coin of the value of about 10 shillings of our present money; it is now become a silver coin of the value of*~~

~~*9 A survival of this older system is to be found in many charges on Irish lands, which are reduced to English money by deducting one-thirteenth from the nominal amount.*~~

~~*10 Hallain, Middle Ages, i. p. 206.*~~

~~*ll Stephen, Lectures on French History, i. p. 459. .*~~

~~*12 Tooke and Newmarch, Hist. of Prices, vol. vi. p. 374. The views there given are based on those of M. Levasseur, who had specially studied the question.—*~~

~~*13 The silver franc was made to weigh exactly 5 grammes.*~~

~~*14 Stephen, Lect. on French Hist., i. p. 482.*~~

~~only 20d."1 Similar depreciations took place in the cases of the Spanish maravedi and the Portuguese ret. At the present these coins are so subordinate, where they have not been abolished, as to possess little practical interest.~~

~~It is well to notice before concluding the question of depreciations that it is the poorer classes who especially suffer from a change in the coinage. The reasons of this are very plain, for from their ignorance they are less able to understand the nature of the alteration, and, even if it were not so, the absence of available resources places them at a disadvantage in comparison with others. Masters and dealers are quick to discount—so to speak—the nominal value of the depreciated money, and prices are much more speedily adjusted to the new state than wages, so that it may be confidently asserted that a debased coinage is especially injurious to the more helpless classes of society. The same remark applies to an over-issue of inconvertible paper."~~

~~7, Economic Aspects of the Production of the Precious Metals.—In considering various monetary questions it is essential to have some acquaintance with the economic aspects of the production of gold and silver. The technical matters connected with the processes of preparing those metals for use are to be found in the articles GotD and Stiver (q.v.). The first point to which we will here direct attention is the field over which production extends. At one time or other these two metals have been found in every continent. Asia Minor in early times possessed its gold fields, or rather auriferous sands.' Ceylon also undoubtedly contained gold mines. China and India both produced silver to a considerable extent. Egyptian remains show that gold was commonly known in that country, probably procured from Nubia and Abyssinia. On the opposite side of Africa, too, the name of Gold Coast shows that that metal was thence exported. Neither Asia nor Africa, however, has been the main contributor to the stock of money in more modern times. The mines of Laurium in Attica were a source of supply to the Greeks, and were worked as a state monopoly. At an earlier date the Babylonian and Assyrian empires had each large accumulated stores of gold. The Phoenician importations of gold from the Red Sea coasts~~

~~(Ophir) are known from Scripture. The Persian kings from the time of Darius levied tribute on all their provinces,—in gold from India, in silver from the remaining districts; and the larger part of this was stored up in the royal treasuries.° This tendency of sovereigns to accumulate had all through ancient history important effects on the economic structure of society. At present it is quite natural to assume that the materials of money are distributed by means of international trade, and tend to keep at an equal level all the world over,—-an assumption which is in general well grounded, though an important exception exists. Ancient history presents a widely different set of forces in operation. Gold and silver were produced by slaves under the pressure of fear, and were drawn towards the ruling parts of the great empires ; in a word, war, not commerce, was the distribut- ing agency. From this condition of affairs it is easy to see that whatever may be the reasons for assigning to cost of production a potent influence over the value of money in modern times (and grounds have been already advanced for the belief that this influence has been exaggerated), no such reasons then existed. The production of the precious~~

~~1 Lord Liverpool, Coins of the Realm, p. 125.~~

~~2 Readers requiring full details on the subject of the various currency changes may consult Lenormant, Monnaie dans U Antiquité, for ancient times ; Lord Liverpool, Coins of the Realm, for England ; and the works of Le Blanc and Paucton for France.~~

~~3 The Pactolus in Lydia was widely famed for its " golden sands."~~

~~4 1 Kings ix. 28.~~

~~5 See Herodotus, iii. c. 96; also Grote, Hist.,iv. pp. 162 sq.~~

~~metals was carried on, as the great buildings and other works of those periods, on non-economic grounds, and therefore produced quite different effects. The whole his- tory of the Persian monarchy to its overthrow by Alexander (330 3.c.) shows that the mass of the precious metals hoarded up continued constantly to increase. On the cap- ture of Persepolis by the~~

~~*Grecian army an enormous treasure was found there, some estimates placing it as high as 120,000 talents of gold and silver (£27,600,000).° All the temples, too, were receptacles for the precious metals, so that the stock accumulated at about 300 B.c. must have been very great. The only causes which tended to diminish the store were the losses arising from wars, when the various treasuries were liable to be plundered and their contents dis- persed." There was therefore a more unequal distribution of the material of money than at present. The growth of the Roman dominion led to important results, since under their rule the Spanish mines were developed and became a leading. source of supply. The great masses of treasure set towards Rome, so that it became the monetary centre of the world. The overthrow of the Republican government and the peace which followed also affected the conditions of pro- duction. 'The inefficiency of the Roman administration made it advantageous to let out the mines to farmers, who worked them in a wasteful and improvident manner, while the supply of slaves was reduced, thus depriving the lessees of their principal agency for carrying on production. The result was a continuous decline in the store of money. Mr Jacob has made an attempt to estimate the amount at the death of Augustus (14 a.p.), and he arrives at the conclu- sion that it was £358,000,000.8 Without placing much value on this necessarily conjectural estimate, it is safe to assume that this period marked the highest point of accu- mulation.*~~

~~*The succeeding centuries exhibit a steady decline, though it is of course impossible to attach any value to even the most carefully-guarded numerical estimates. The pheno- menon which has since so often attracted notice—the drain of the precious metals to the East—began at this time, and was a subject of complaint to the Roman writers," while the stock of gold and silver being thrown into more general circulation suffered more from abrasion, and was more likely to be lost than when stored up in the royal treasure-houses and temples. These causes tended to depress the scale of prices, while the barbarian inva- sions produced a strong effect on the supply by drawing off the mining population and damaging the various erec- tions used for working the mines. The conjectural esti- mate is, that about 800 a.p. the total supply had been reduced to £33,000,000 (or about one-eleventh of what it had been at the death of Augustus).!° A new period in the history of gold and silver production may be fixed at this date. The*~~

Moors, now firmly established in Spain, began to reopen the mines in that country which had been allowed to fall into disuse. Other European mines also were opened. The international system of currency based on the pound of silver as a unit which was introduced by Charlemagne must have tended to economize the wear of the metals. We may therefore conclude that from this date (800 .D.) the supply was sufficient to coun-

6 Grote, xi. p. 499, note 3.

7 A commercial agency which existed for the distribution of gold and silver was the Pheenician system of trading, which extended all over the Mediterranean.

ania Production and Consumption of the Precious Metals, i. p. —

9 See Pliny, HW. WN., xii. c. 18. 10 Jacob, i. p. 237.

11 It was at this time that the most productive European mines were discovered, namely, those of Saxony and the Harz Mountains, as well as the Austrian mines, which were the chief sources of supply during the Middle Ages.

MONEY

teract the loss by wear and exportation,! and accordingly regard the metallic supply as fixed in amount until the next change in the conditions of production, which was the result of the discovery of America. Though 1492 is the date of the first landing, yet for some time no im- portant additions were made to the supply of money. The conquest of Mexico (1519) gave opportunities of working the silver mines of that country, while the first mines of Chili and Peru were almost simultaneously discovered, and in 1545 those of Potosi were laid open. From this latter date we may regard the American supply

TABLE I.—Estimated production of gold and silver from 1498.

a . Value in Millions | Ratio of n Kilos. jzvatlo O Perioa, | No- of Jationetnals of Francs. i Value of ete Years. / Gold to Gold. Silver. Gold.

~~Silver. | Silver. 1493-1520 28 162,400 1,316,000 560 292 11°3~~

~~1521-1544 24 171,800 2,165,000 592 481 11:2~~

~~1545-1580 36 273,000 10,976,000 940 2,439 11°5 1581-1600 20 147,600 8,378,000 508 1,862 11°9 1601-1620 20 170,400 8,458, 000 587 1,880 13°0 1621-1640 20 166,000 7,872,000 572 1,749 13°4 1641-1660 20 175,400 7,326,000 604 1,628 13°8 1661-1680 20 185,200 6,740,000 638 1,498 14°7 1681-1700 20 215,300 6,838,000 742 1,520 15°0 1701-1720 20 256,400 7,112,000 883 1,580 15°2~~

~~1721-1740 20 381,600 8,624,000 1,314 1,916 151~~

~~1741-1760 | 20 492, 200 10,663,000 1,695 2,370 14°8~~

~~1761-1780 20 414,100 13,055,000 1,426 2,900 14‘8 1781-1800 20 355,800 17,581,000 1,226 3,906 15:1~~

~~1801-1810 | 10 177,800 8,942,000 612 1,987 15°6 1811~1820 10 114,400 5, 408,000 394 1,202 15°5 1821-1830 | 10 142,200 4,606,000 490 1,023 158 1831-1840 10 202,900 5,964,000 699 1,325 15°7 1841-1850 10 547,600 7,804, 000 1,886 1,734 15°8 1851-1855 5 987,600 4,431,000 3,402 985 15°4 1856-1860 5 1,030,000 4,525,000 3,549 1,006 15°3 1861-1865 a 925,600 5,506,000 3,188 1,223 15°4~~

~~1866-1870 5 959,500 6,695,000 3,305 1,488 156~~

~~1871-1875 5 853,400 9,847,000 2,940 2,188 16°0 1876 1 171,700 2,365,000 591°5 525°5} 17°8 1877 i 182,800 2,428,000 629°8 539°5| 17°19 1878 1 183,700 2,603,000 632°6 578°3| 17°96 1879 1 156,900 2,557,000 540°3 568°2| 18°39 1876-1879 4 695, 100 9,953,000 2,394 2,211 17°40 1493-1850 358 4,752,100 149,828,000 16,368 33,292 14°05 1851-1879 | 29 | 5,451,200 40,957,000 | 18,778 9,101 15°85 1493-1879 | 387 | 10,203,300 190,785,000 35, 146 42,393 3~~

~~as an influential factor in the matter,? and look upon the stock of money as increasing. The annual addition to the store of money has been estimated as £2,100,000 for the period from 1545 to 1600. At this date the Brazilian~~

~~supply began. The course of distribution of these fresh masses of the precious metals is an interesting point, which has been studied by Mr Cliffe Leslie.2 The flow of the new supplies was first towards Spain and Portugal, and from thence they passed to the larger commercial centres of the other European countries, the effect being that prices were raised in and about the chief towns, while the value of money in the country districts remained unaltered. The additions to the supply of both gold and silver during the two centuries 1600-1800 continued to be very consider- able ; but, if Adam Smith's view be correct, the full effect on prices was produced by 1640,' and the increased amount of money was from that time counterbalanced by the wider extension of trade.6 At the commencement of this cen- tury, the annual production of gold has been estimated as being from £2,500,000 to £3,000,000. The year 1809 seems to mark an epoch in the production of these metals, since the outbreak of the revolts of the various Spanish~~

~~1 Jacob, i. p, 311.~~

~~2 Adam Smith assumes 1570 as the date when prices were affected in England, Wealth of Nations, p. 88. Humboldt estimated the total production (1492-1545) as being about £17,000,000; but see Table I., which contains Dr Sdtbeer's estimates, based on the best available data.~~

~~3 Essays in Pol. and Mor. Phil., Essay xx.~~

~~4 Wealth of Nations, p. 88.~~

~~5 The total production is roughly computed at over £1,200,000,000 for the two centuries 1600-1800; but see Table I. for more precise estimates,~~

~~dependencies in South America tended to check the usual supply from those countries, and a marked increase in the value of money was the consequence. During the period 1809-1849 the value of gold and silver rose to about two and a half times their former level, notwithstanding fresh discoveries in Asiatic Russia.® The annual yield in 1849 was estimated at £8,000,000. The next important date for our present purpose is the year 1848, when the Californian mines were opened, while in 1851 the~~

~~*Australian discoveries took place. By these events an enormous mass of gold was added to the world's supply. The most careful estimates fix the addition during the years 1851-1871 at £500,000,000, or an amount nearly equal to the former stock in existence. The problems raised by this pheno- menon have received the most careful study by several distinguished economists,' to whose writings those desiring more extensive information may refer. The main features of interest may be briefly summed up. (1) The additional supply was almost entirely of gold, thus tending to produce a distinction between the two principal monetary metals and an alteration in the currency of bimetallic countries. Under this influence France, from being a silver-using, became a gold-using, country. (2) The contempora- neous development of the Continental railway systems, and the partial adoption of free trade, with the con- sequent facilities for freer circulation of commodities, led to the course of distribution being different from that of the 16th century. The more backward districts were the principal gainers, and a more general equalization of prices combined with a slight elevation in value was the outcome. (3) The increased supply of gold rendered a general currency reform possible, and made the use of a gold monometallic standard appear feasible. The movements for currency reform, as will be seen, all arose after these discoveries. (4) The change in the value of money, which may for the period 1849-1869 be fixed at 20 per cent., enabled a general increase of wages to be carried out, thus improving the condition of the classes living on manual labour. It may be added that the difficulty of tracing the effects of this great addition to the money stock is a most striking proof of the complexity of modern economic development. (5) The last point to be noticed is the very small influence exercised on the value of silver by the new gold.8 Hardly had the gold discoveries of 1848-1851 ceased to produce a decided effect when new silver mines of unusual fertility came into working. During the period immediately succeeding the gold discoveries the produc- tion of silver remained at an annual amount of from £8,000,000 to £9,000,000. This amount suddenly, about 1870, increased to £15,000,000,9 and remained at that amount for the next five years. More than half of the supply came from new mines opened in Nevada. This increased supply was accompanied by a marked depreciation in the gold price of silver, though the prices of commodities in countries having a silver standard did not rise. The result of the close investigations to which all aspects of the question were subjected was to show that the*~~

~~*increased production of silver was only a minor element in causing its depreciation. The policy pursued by various states—viz., (1) Germany and the Scandinavian*~~

~~*6 The Russian supply became important after 1823.*~~

~~*? The following may be specially consulted :—Chevalier, Depreciation of Gold (trans. by Cobden); Tooke and Newmarch, Hist. of Prices, vol. vi., pp. 135-236 (Part vii.) ; article "Precious Metals," Hncy. Brit. (8th Ed.); J. E. Cairnes, Essays in Pol. Econ., pp. 1-165; T. E. C. Leslie, Essays, pp. 264-374 ; W. S. Jevons, Serious Fall in the Value of Gold.*~~

~~*8 The price of silver in London rose from 593d. per oz. to 624d. per oz., or 22d. per oz.—that is, only 3 to 4 per cent.*~~

~~*9 See Report of Select Committee on the Silver Question, 1876 ; and for another estimate see Table I.*~~

~~*XVI.—92*~~

~~*730*~~

~~*states in adopting a single gold standard, (2) the*~~

~~*countries composing the Latin Union in limiting the*~~

~~*comage of silver, (3) the Indian Government by adopting a new method of drawing bills—proved to be the really influential causes for the decline silver as contrasted with gold.'*~~

~~*Before closing this notice of the economical aspects of gold and silver production, the consumption of those metals must be con- sidered. It may be classed roughly under three heads, viz., (1) their use as merchandise, (2) their use as money, (3) the export to the East. With regard to the first of these, while it is impossible to give precise data, it may be still held with some confidence that the demand for this purpose tends, after society has passed a certain not very advanced stage, to decline. The desire for personal adorn- ment is with most civilized persons not a strong one. It is,*~~

~~*so far as it exists, gratified by other articles than those made of silver or gold. Their use as manufactured goods continues to be large, and is one of the principal forms of use at present. The second head with which we have here to deal is the one by which prices are affected. The laws regulating the value of the metals as money have been considered above, p. 721, the primary one being "that the value of money varies inversely as its quantity multiplied by its efficiency," though this proposition needs limitation and explana- tion. Under the third head a remarkable exception occurs to the general theory of the tendency to equal diffusion of the precious metals. For a period extending over nearly 2000 years the move- ment of silver from West to East has been noticed. Humboldt has made the ingenious remark that these metals move in the opposite direction to civilization, and history bears out his view. During the Middle Ages the chief Eastern products used in Europe were silks and spices, and to pay for these commodities silver was sent from Europe. The discovery of the passage round the Cape of Good Hope increased the Eastern trade, and added to the drain of silver. Humboldt and Sétbeer have given copious details. In more recent times the flow has continued, the amount of silver which passed to Asia by the Isthmus of Suez during the twelve years from 1851 to 1862 being £110,000,000.? There are two points requiring some further notice with reference to the form and the reason for this drain. Silver is the metal which is exported from Europe, since gold is not used for currency purposes in the East, and even as merchandise silver possesses a higher relative value than it does in Europe. Those European countries that had a double standard were the natural source of supply for exportation, their silver currency being replaced by gold. 'The unceasing drain of the precious metals to the East may further be explained by the fact that the greater part of the new metal is used for ornamental and not for currency purposes, and thus the demand is not checked by a rise of prices, Another reason, not generally noticed, is that Eastern prices are very much influenced by custom, and thus do not depend on supply and demand. But it is this tendency of an increased quantity of money to raise prices which forms the basis of the economical theory of the distribution of the precious metals.? This explains the otherwise unaccountable phenomenon of a con- tinual drain of the money material towards those countries where custom has remained most powerful in regard to commercial trans- onuen® or, in other words, the backward countries of India and*~~

~~*ina.*~~

~~*One of the technical features of the production of the precious metals may sometimes produce remarkable economic effects,— namely, the fact that gold is generally found near the surface, while silver is obtained by deep mining. It follows from this that the production of the former metal depends more on accidental circum- stances, while the production of silver is affected chiefly by the state of mechanical skill. In the Nevada mines gold and silver are found together, and their value in a given mass is nearly equal.*~~

~~*8. Miscellaneous Questions regarding Metallic Money.— The recent discussions of matters relating to currency, and the increased intercourse among the more advanced nations, have led to the raising of some questions with regard to the proper constitution of monetary systems. Each country possessing any claim to enlightenment has directed its attention to its own monetary arrangements, and compared them with those of others, while the effect which the cur- rency system of any nation exercises on its neighbours leads to the exciting of a lively interest in its monetary legisla- tion. The principal problems may be summed up under*~~

~~*1 See, for details, the Report of Mr Gosehen's Committee, 1876, and W. Bagehot, Papers on the Depreciation of Silver. ge A. Sétbeer in the Vierteljahrschr. fiir Volkswirthsch., iii.,*~~

~~*3 See Ricardo, Principles of Pol. Econ., p. 79 (ed. M'Culloch).*~~

~~*in the value of*~~

~~*MONBY*~~

~~*three heads: (1) The proper standard to use, the discussion of which in practice turns on the comparative merits of a single standard of gold or silver and of a double standard of gold and silver at a fixed ratio; (2) the system of sub- dividing the currency, which is generally discussed under the title of proposals for decimal coinage ; (3) proposals made in many quarters to assimilate the various currency systems of the world. These take one of two forms. It is either desired that a group of nations shall assimilate*~~

~~*their currencies, in which case the coinage may be called an international one; or a wider view is taken, and a single system is advocated for all states. This may be styled universal coinage. 'The question of the proper standard may be deferred for the present, as it is of a more complex nature than the others. Before discussing even the simpler of these questions it is desirable to state some elementary facts involved in all such points. Every currency system must be based on a standard unit of value which consists of a "fixed quantity of some concrete substance defined by reference to the units of weight or space." Thus the English unit is the pound, which consists of a definite quantity of gold (12327447 grs. standard fineness), while the French unit is the franc (composed of 5 grammes of silver soths fine). It is not, however, necessary that the standard unit shall be a coin. All that is needful is that the current coins shall be multiples or submultiples of the unit, or at all events easily reducible to it. The Portu- guese rei is too small to be coined, and the pound of silver which formed the unit of the early French and English currency was too large. Distinct from both the actual coins and the unit of value is the money of account, though in practice it is usually identical with one of them. In Russia in early times the 7ouble was an imaginary money of account not coined, while the copper copeck was the unit of value. Another distinction must be pointed out, namely, that between standard and token money, the former being of the same value as the metal it is made of, while the latter is rated at a nominal value higher than that of its material. The silver and copper coins in England and the smaller silver coins in the Latin Union are merely tokens, being in the case of the English silver coins about 30 per cent. below their nominal value. The French coins are of inferior fineness (835 per 1000). Token coins are only admissible in small payments, as otherwise—in accordance with an ele- mentary principle to be presently explained—the standard coins would be driven out of circulation. The maximum amount in payment for which they are legal tender is in England 40s. One of the functions of money being to afford a standard for estimating deferred payments,* it is generally used as the means of discharging obligations when they become due, and in this aspect is styled legal tender. The principal coinage of any country is legal tender to an unlimited amount, and, when offered, discharges any pecuniary obligation. It is only the standard coinage which possesses this property, or rather the standard coinage is that which does possess it.*~~

~~*In discussing monetary questions it is also important to remember that a metallic currency has to circulate among the most diverse classes of society, and must be suited to the wants, and even to the prejudices, of the population using it. Many curious instances of the preference of a community for some particular coin could be given. The Austrian Maria Theresa dollar is a special favourite on the coast of Africa, and is still coined exactly as it was in 1780. The inhabitants of California refused to accept the green- backs issued during the American civil war, and conse- quently gold was always used in payments in that State. Many apparently well-devised reforms have miscarried*~~

~~*4 See p. 720, above.*~~

~~*MONEY*~~

~~*owing to the habits of the people not having been attended to. Sonie writers have, however, misconceived the prin- ciples of currency and extended this influence to cases where it does not apply. Thus it has been sought to explain the adoption of gold as the principal English coinage after 1696 by assuming that the English deliberately preferred that metal.' The fact of different nations possessing dif- ferent currencies, as the prevalence of gold in England and of silver in France during the 18th century, is to be other- wise accounted for. The great mass of a population, it is true, take and give money without particularly observing it, It is enough if the coin conforms to the usual type. There exists, however, in all mercantile communities a class of dealers in money? who make a profit by selecting the best coins for exportation, or, if two metals are in concurrent use, the coins of that metal which is undervalued in the proportion fixed. The mode in which self- interest thus operates produces an effect which may be briefly formulated by saying that bad money drives out good money. It is often now called " Gresham's law," from a former master of the English mint,? who observed it. The illustrations of its working are numerous. Under its action the gold which was overvalued relatively to silver in England in 1696 became the main English coinage, as above stated. And in order to meet the want of silver coins, Sir I. Newton advocated, and secured, the reduction of the guinea from 21s. 6d. to 21s. The exportation of metallic money when an over-issue of inconvertible paper takes place is another case of the theorem.*~~

~~*By means of this principle we can easily explain the tendency of currency to depreciation, for when once, either by wear or by the issue of inferior coins, a currency has become debased, no reformation is possible unless the debased coins are removed from circulation, as otherwise they will be preferred for payments by dealers, and will not be melted down or exported. All demands for foreign trade will be met from the best part of the coinage. An argument in favour of state coinage has been founded on Gresham's law. It is argued that private coinage would lead to the issue of depreciated money.' It is, however, overlooked in this argument that the action of the law arises from the fact that the depreciated currency is legal tender ; were it not so, coins less than the proper weight would be at once rejected. It may be added that Greek monetary history bears out this view.®*~~

~~*Having disposed of these elementary questions, the general groups into which all currency systems fall may now be stated. The simplest form of currency seems to be that in which the state coins ingots of different metals, and allows them to circulate freely, without any ratio being fixed. This, which is the lowest form of currency proper,® has arisen in many countries through the introduction of coins of various other nations. Turkey is a European example. Many of the South American republics possess a currency of this description. A theoretical form of this system has been advocated in France. It is proposed to issue coins of one, two, five, and ten grammes of gold, and to allow the present silver coins which are multiples of the gramme to circulate along with them. The difficulties of this plan are so obvious that there is no likelihood of its being adopted. The arguments in its favour are of little*~~

~~*1 R. Giffen, Hssays in Finanee, p. 308. ;*~~

~~*2 The Jewish and Lombard merchants discharged this function in the medieval period ; Hallam, Afiddle Ages, iii. p. 369, note ¢.*~~

~~*3 Aristophanes (Ran. 719-733) appears to recognize this principle. Grote (vol. iii. 116 note) has misunderstood him, and seems to deny the principle stated.*~~

~~*4 Jevons, Money, p. 82. 5 See p.. 726, above.*~~

~~§ In his discussion of this subject Prof. Jevons, on whose excellent work much of this section is based, mentions currency by weight as the simplest form, but it is hardly correct to regard this as a currency system ; it is rather a primitive stage, closely akin to barter.~~

~~731~~

~~force, since it is hardly correct to contend that it is a natural system, when it has never been willingly adopted by any country. The next system to be noticed is that of a single metal being fixed as legal tender. This in early times is the really natural arrangement, and has been widely adopted. It is needless to recapitulate the instances which have already been given in dealing with other matters. There is, however, a difficulty which soon arises under this system. If the metal chosen is not very valuable, it is too cumbrous for large payments; if, on the other hand, it possesses a high value, it is hard to coin pieces suitable for small transactions. Thus, even silver would be too bulky for such payments as frequently occur. £100 in silver at its present value would weigh nearly 40 tb, while it would be impossible to coin gold pieces of the value of a penny or evena shilling. This system thus naturally leads to the use of other metals besides the standard one, and when the state fixes the ratio between these metals a new system has come into existence, which has been called the multiple tender system. In it the ratios between the metals are fixed, either once for all, or until changed by state authority. This system was in force in England from 1257 (or rather 1344) to 1664, the ratio between gold and silver being fixed from time to time by proclamation. France, too, adopted it during the Revolution, the ratio of 154 to 1 being that fixed between gold and silver. The fluctuation of currencies arranged on this method, owing to the action of Gresham's law, has led in England and Germany to a modified system, which seeks to combine any advantages of the multiple standard with the principle of the single standard. By this method one metal is fixed as the principal legal tender, while the smaller coins are made of a less valuable material, and circulated at a nominal value somewhat above their real one, or, in other words, as token coins, but they are only legal tender to a limited amount. This has been called the composite legal tender system."~~

~~*For further details reference may be made to Tables II. and III., and the notes appended. Every currency system requires the exist- ence of subsidiary coins, and, as stated before, this want is met by using a less valuable metal, generally silver, and for smaller payments copper or bronze. But, apart from the question of the material of the smaller coius, it is important to determine the best ratio between them, The simplest of all would be the binary. In it each coin would be the half ofthe next highest one, and double the one imme- diately below it. Nothing, apparently, is plainer or simpler than this scale, but the objection to it is the great number of coins that would be required, as well as the want of conformity with the general arithmetical scale. In a modified form it does prevail in many countries. Thus in England we have the penny, half-penny, and farthing. Ata higher stage we have the florin, shilling, six- penny piece, and threepenny piece, and, again, the sovereign, half- sovereign, five-shilling piece,' and half-crown. The coinages of the Latin and Scandinavian Unions, as also those of Germany and the United States, have several binary series in their coins.? There is, however, no completely binary system known. The old English scale was partly duodecimal, and the arguments in favour of this arrangement are by no meats weak. At present the shilling is duodecimally divided. It is urged in favour of this scale that the main divisions of time (year and month, day and hour, are duo- decimally related, and that time is one of the elements in all questions of value. Another argument is that 12 is capable of being resolved into several factors (2 and 6, 3 and 4), and therefore*~~

~~*? This system came into existence in England accidentally, through silver being overvalued by the mint regulations, but its theoretical basis was given by the often-quoted work of Lord Liverpool, Coins of the Realm (1805), which contains even now the best explanation of its principles.*~~

~~*8 This piece is now almost extinct.*~~

~~*® For instance, the 20-franc, 10-franc, and 6-frane pieces, and, again, 2-franc, 1-franc, and 50-centime pieces in France, &c.; 20-kroner and 10-kroner pieces, and 4-kroner, 2-kroner, 1-krone, 50-dre, and 25-6re pieces in Denmark, &c.; 20-, 10-, and 5-mark pieces, and 2-mark, 1-mark, and 50-*~~

~~*pfennige pieces in Germany ; while the United States have eagle, half-eagle, and quarter-eagle, and also dollar, half-dollar, and quarter-dollar.*~~

~~*0 See S, Laing, Notes of a Traveller, pp. 57-59.*~~

~~*enables a large series of coins to be formed.' The main reason, | weighing and measuring." For the purposes of currency this scale however, for the adoption of a duodecimal system appears to have | is not very convenient, as 10 can be only resolved into two factors been the preference for the number 12 so frequently shown by early (2 and 5), and one of these is a rather high number. This dis- societies ; thus, among the Semitic races, the Jews were organized | advantage has retarded the adoption of decimal coinage, and is the in 12 tribes, and in Italy the Etruscan league consisted of two | base of the objections made to it. It has been contended that it is groups, each of 12 cities. In connexion with this it may be noted | unsuitable for small purchases, and for such fractions as one-third.? that a duodecimal system of currency prevailed south of the Apen- | France adopted the decimal system of coinage in 1799, and it has nines. At Rome the as was divided into 12 wneiw. The modern | now extended over all the countries of the Latin Union (see Table tendency, however, has been to adopt a decimal scale. This method | II.)._ It is also in use in Germany, Denmark, Sweden and Norway, of notation, which is found very widely in use among savage tribes, | the Netherlands, and Finland, as well as in the United States. But is undoubtedly derived from the ten fingers of the human hands. | none of these countries has a decimal coinage pure and simple. In- Though the base 10 is not so convenient as 12, it is firmly established as the only system of counting, and is in process of extension to*~~

~~*2 Tylor, Anthropology, pp. 311-312. 3 Laing and M'Culloch, as quoted above. The former unfortunately pro- phesies that " the decimal division never will come into general use in France ~*~~

~~*1 J. R. M'Culloch in Ency. Brit., art. "Money," vol. xv. p. 431 (Sth ed.). or anywhere else."*~~

~~*TABLE II.—The Coinage Systems of Continental Europe, exhibiting the gold and silver coins, their weight, fineness, remedy, and approximate value in English and United States money. SU nif eUNR* _____.~~

~~*Rem..| Approximate Rem. | Approximate vi =|. ./p.1000} Money Value. vw | — . |p.1000} Money Value. a a) EI £ uh | SS = = ‘a a] E £8 A ee Ge |aerel., #1 S8| B24, , Coins. 2 oe | S5/2ie| 4 Za Coins. S$ | se] 8 (8le| 4 bo s Ed |S8] 0) i 22 S Eo | SS | S| P| $2 a S| S|) ew ‘as = Se | 8) 0 oy es A LAr Dn Ai jelEel § Dn ais als | eck. | ae pete fe | AustTRia-Hunaary* **1— £s. d., $c. || NETHERLANDSS— 2s. di i Sc. 100 Kreutzer 8 Gulden piece} Gold | 6°45161 | 900: ‘2° |2:5/0 15 10 | 3 86 || 100 Cents=1 10 Guilder piece | Gold | 6°720 [900° {1°5‘2:|016 6/4 2 =1Gulden 4 4, 4, 5, | 3°22580 | 900° 2° [2-510 7 11 | 1 93 Guilder. 5 . » | 3°360 [900° 15° (0 8 8/2 1 2 4, 5, _ | Silver |24°6914 | 900° /2- |2°510 3 114) 0 96 2} ¥ Silver (25° 945° 25/250 4 2/1 0 Wigs yy |12°3457 | 900° |2° |2°5]0 1 114) 0 48 1 a », (10° [945 |2°5/9-5}0 1 8 | 0 40 ie ty 5, | 5°8419 |520°/2° |2°510 0 53] 0 12 3 % » | 5° [945° [25/2510 0 10 | 0 20 20 Kreutzer ,, 5» | 2°666 |500°!2 |2510 0 43! 0 10 Ob) Gents nen », | 3°575 [640° [2-5/2:5‘0 0 5 | 0 10 1) Ay y, | 1666 | 400° 12° [2510 0 28/0 5 10, geet eee », | 1:400 [640° |2°512-510 0 2/0 4 . ge cademie », | 0°685 |640° |2°5/25‘0 0 1/0 2 miei ‘sed Beaker. Norway. See DENMARK. PortTuGaL6— ‘ oe, 1000 Reis=1 Crown or $10°000} Gold /17°735 |916°6662" |2° 2 4 5 10 80 100 Ore=1 20 Kroner piece | Gold | 8:960572, 900: |1:51°5]1 2 1] 5 36 Milret. alf-Crown or $5°000| ,, | 8-867 |916-660‘2° |2- 1 2 24) 5 40 Krone. OMNES eas »> | 4°480286| 900: |1°5/2° |0 11 03] 2 68 One-fifth Crown or $2:000] ,, | 3°547 |916-666/2° [2° 0 8 10} 2 16 2 ate 1 {Silver 16-000 | 800-)8- js: 0 2 94) 0 58 One-tenth Crowner $1080) 4, || Nis BiG aaa > Ae ee 0 2 23) 0 54 “ » weed 2 | 4000 | 600° |3: [3+ fo 0 54/ 0 10 200% 0 Meee e 1 | 5°000 |916-666/2" |3- (0 0 104) 0 21 25 1 seeel gy | 2420 600° |3- [3* 10 0 34) 0 OB 100 2. eee 5 | 2°500 |916°666/2" |3° 0 0 53! 0 11 Oy rene] gg | E450 AOON Be IS” 10) OTRO” ae Uae eae », | 1:250 [916-666/2" [3° lo 0 agi o 5 Roumania. See FRANCE. FRANCE3— Russia 7— 100 Centimes 100 Franc piece | Gold |32:25806 | 900-|2- |1° 3 19 3}19 30 || 100 Copecks Iinperialor At =1 Franc. 50 7 ,, {16712908 |900:|2: [1 {119 7919 65 || =1 Rouble, 10 Rouble piece} Gold |13-088 |916°666)nil\2° |1 11 8 | 7 72 20 if », | 6°45161 | 900° j2° |2: |0 15 10 | 3 86 Half Imperial or : 10 »> | 3°22580 | 900° |2- 2: 10 7 11 | 1 93 5 Rouble piece} ,, | 6-544 1916-666) ,, [2° (0 15 10 | 3 86 ” 1 |*~~

~~1°61290 | 900° 2: (3° (0 3 114) 0 96 3 9 »» | 3°926 |916°666|„ |2" }O 9 6] 2 31 5 , Silver |25° 900: j2: |3: |0 3 114) 0 96 1 F : ; : ” a less me fio feos: > 1 0 38 yf Biiven i r900r868-0561 (2 lo 1 7/0 88 sens tee 835° |8- |5 |0 0 9}| 0 19 } fs ” 15-183 868-056) 5, [2° [0 0 941 0 19 IIa entimes…., „ | 25 835”|..|.. |0 0 43) 0 10 20 Copecks ….| „ | 4°146 /750°0 |„ 2° |0 O 74! 0 15 ys ‘call cane pal 835°|..|.. (0 0 2/0 4 10}, sees] 4, | SORT 15, 12510 8o aoa? 5 ey, cee) ss | JP IROST BOZO” ose ONO mem ROMA GERMANY 4— Srervia. See FRANCE. ; 100 Pfennige 20 Mark piece ..! Gold | 7-964954) 900-|.. |.. 019 7 | 4 76 || SPAIN.S See FRANCE. | =1 Mark. 10 „ ..| 4, | 3°982477/900”!.. |: Jo 9 93! 2 38 || SWEDEN. See DenmaRK. | 5 i ae 1991239] 900: 0 4 103] 119 SWITZERLAND. See FRANCE. 5 c eee: TURKEY 9— a. ” —| Silver (27°7777 | 900" |.. |.. (0 4 103] 119 || 100 Piastres © MedjidieorLira| Gold | 7-216 |916-666|2° |2° |0 18 0 | 4 40 | 2 ys gy ITLL] 900°]..]‘.. 0 1119) 0 48 || =1 Medjidie 4 „ » | 3608 |916-666)2" |2° [0 9 0| 2 20 2 eer 5°5555 | 900°|..|.. |0 0 119] 0 24 : aagle: |o- Pe ae ” sa (eee fe Ks ee 3 8 »» | 1:804 1916°666/2" |2° 0 4 6] 1 10 20 nee 11111 | 900- 0 20 Piastres …./ Silver |24°055 |830° {3° |8° 10 3 7 | 0 88 ae or ee ee GREECE See F : Pee 520)| 5) ; ee Tein, ree 2 4, ..2 | 4, | 2°405 [830° [8° 3° (0 0 4/0 9~~

- ~~Inconvertible paper currency.~~

~~A ; : ; Present system introduced in 1870, in place of system of 1857; 8-gulden piece equivalent to 20 francs; silver not freely coined. The Maria Theresa dollar~~

~~(28-0644 grammes, $ths fine) is coined as commercial money.~~

~~2 The system i i i i ; , ante Ae cere ae use in the Scandinavian Union (Denmark, Sweden, and Norway) came into force 1st January 1875. It is a monometallic gold standard~~

~~3 The coinage system of France came into force 6th May 179 France 9. Switzerland) by the convention of 1865, and has since been adapted~~

~~4 The substitution of the mark for the older thaler came i . : ; i i~~

~~not yet complet ely settle a, owing ys the lange aniathdiby ge rerreema genes y 1875. The German coinage law is modelled on the English system, but is ch standard has been several times changed. In 1847 a silver standard di i i it bei i i~~

~~June 1875 the free coinage of cold i=) Z 3 ard was adopted, and continued till 1872, the unit being the silver guilder. Tn~~

~~6 The single gold standard is in force in Portugal. The Engli ign i : ns : ; 1 5 glish sovereign is legal tender for 4500 reis.~~

~~_ ae coins of the Russian mint are exceptionally good. They pass as commercial money at varying prices. Finland has a decimal system reseinbling the rench since 1877, the mark in gold and silver being equivalent to the franc. i! Z~~

~~8 The Spanish coinage was assimilated to the Latin Union in 1871. Spai i 1ish coir ! t I 71. Spain, however, coins a 25- iece; i i 9 The Medjidie coinage was introduced in 1844. English sovereigns circulate at 125 'piastres, oO Naira onTeeeee ala~~

~~MONEY foe~~

~~termediate coins are introduced, ¢.g., in France, 2-franc and 6-franc | can be obtained. One of the schemes advanced takes the present pieces. In fact, most modern currencies are a combination of the Jarthing as its base; then 10 Jfarthings=1 doit (24d.) ; 10 doits=1 decimal and binary systems, England alone adhering to a modified | florin (2s. 1d.); 10 florins=1 pound (20s. 10d.). The advantages duodecimal scale. A decimal comage has for the last sixty years | of this plan are: (1) that the smaller coins nowin use could be been proposed for England, and it is almost certain that if any one | preserved (the penny being 4 farthings), (2) retail prices, which are for scheme could be pointed out as much preferable to any other it | the smaller articles estimated in pence, need not be altered, (3) nor would be accepted. As it is, there are two or three proposals, each | need those which affect postage, tolls, and mileage charges. Against commanding some support, while many advocates of the decimal | these may be set the loss of the unit of value, the pound, which system prefer to~~

~~wait till an international agreement for its adoption | should be raised to 20s. 10d., so that all accounts, and all large~~

~~Taste III.—Currencies of the more important non-European States.~~

~~: Rem. | Approximate Rem. | Approximate ; @ | q „|P: 1000.) Money Value. , % |=. P. 1000.| Money Value. re > : } ms . n —_———_—_- g BE 8a) a 3 28 | ESS . > fel 9) = Rn 5 . “ a om vo: KA ry Coins. 2 3 E 3 3 2 rf a Se Coins. s oe B3 $ = r 34 tt Eo |e gies oI IIR Ss Bo |e] 2 | & Ki hap} A a |aFi 2/2 EY AS a S| 8 | 3) as £ BE g Dn B= BF) § Da ee S |e A. NORTH AMERICA. STATEs OF COLOMBIA 7— £5. d./$ ec. Repent coasnonet — 100 Centavos 20 Peso piece ..) Gold |32°258 | 900° 819 34/19 30 100 Cents=1 Dollar. ae abies 16129 | 900 119 8/965 Mexico 2— Bs. ajc. 5 Peso piece…) 7” | 8-065 | 900°| -. | 2:10 19 10 | 4 82 100 Cents 16 Dollar piece | Gold |27:067 | 875° -|3 4 9 |15 74 2; nal Oy 3°225 | 900°], .. | .. 10 7 113) 1 98 =1 Dollar, 8 »» _[18°588. | 875° . {112 43) 7 87 4 ins | 6767 | 875° . 10 16 24] 393 icee .. Silver |25°0 |! 900°! ..}.. 0 3 114! 0 96 2 a » | 3°888 e ; 0 8 L 1 mS 20 Centavos….| „ | 5:0 |885°|..]..]0 0 93/019 1 ss » | 1692 : . 10 4 08] 0 98 | TO: |e elope liens .10 0 5|010 5 1°25 = =|‘885″ -10 0 2310 5 1 . Silver |27-067 | 900: .|0 4 08] 0 98 . ‘ i 50 Cent piece ..} „ |18°583 | 900° -j/0 2 0) 0 49 | 25 — of 6767 | 900°] ..|.. 10 1 0] 0 24 || Peru *8— UNITED STATEs 3— 100 Centesimos 20 Sol piece….| Gold |32°258 | 900- . |B 19 34/19 30 100 Cents 20 Dollar piece =1 Sol. 10 55 tefeiel|! | sq) (LOS LeO 1900; Pap tae Got 2) =1 Dollar. eee Eagle)} Gold /33°436 | 900°} 2°| 1:]4 2 6 i OS ABCA NM mocrs 8‘065 | 900° — 0 19 10 } 4 82 10 Dollar piece 2 ane 3°225 | 900° . 10 7 113! 1 93 (Eagle) ..... » {16-718 |900°| 2°| 2]2 1 3 1 3 I} 1 1-613 | 900: ‘10 foe 0 96 5 Dollar piece ee 8‘359 | 900°} 2°) 2°11 0 74 3 Pe » | 5015 {900°} 2°} 2-|0 12 44] °° 1 „ ....| Silver [25-0 | 900 . 10 3 113! 0 96 2) Oe or 4179 | 900° e rg (OPO) aay” 50 Centesimos..| „ |12°5 | 900° . }0 1 11}] 0 48 1 ‘ jp tele [aos 21 3°10 4 aah 20, » | 5°0 | 900° . (0 0 94] 019 a 10 A 25 900° -|0 0 49 0 10 aes ach. Silver |26-729 |900-| 3° | 5: h 4 1} oy | 1-25 | 900° 10 0 20 5 50 Cent piece ..| „ |12°500 | 900°] 3°] 5°0 2 0 25 7 » | 6:250 |900°| 8°| 5°10 1 0 10 oF 3 2°500 | 900°} 3°/...0 0 5 VENEZUELA. Sce CoLomBia. 5 ” ss | 1:250 {900°| 8°} ../0 0 23 8 ” » | 0802 }750‘1 8°|..10 0 14 . C. ASIA, B. SOUTH AMERICA. Inp14 (BritisH) 9— ARGENTINE REPUBLIC * 4— : Es ; : OE ye WPMesowpiees:. .)) Gold. |25:838 |000 “ff 1 8/1094 |) Peicemi ana,~~

~~*(Donthe Monen)| Gold ps8 latod| ..|.. s 0 0 4 ss =1 Dollar 49 me » |16°666 | 900: -;2 010) 9 97 | 116 Anas=1 Rupee. 15 Rupee piece : (Peso). ; 5 Fy . 8:33 | 900° .|1 0 5] 4 98 (Mohur) ..../ , '(11°66 J916°6) .. | .. 11 10 0 | 7 29 10 Rupee piece 59 i ae ' ail, 10:10 IIe 1 f Silver |27:11 | 900° 0 4 1/099 5 » | 8886 [916°] ../.. 010 0 | 243, Braziy * 5— 1000 Reis 20 Milreis piece | Gold [17-927 |916°6| .. 2 4 103/10 91 1 = Silver |11°665 |916°6] ..|.. 10 2 0] 0 48 =1 Milrei. 10 mi »» | 8963 |916°6} .. 1 OS || Be i i i ee ae ok ee ; : 0 oe : BiG Gl). (|. 6 1 2 < Silver |25:500 9166] ..|..]0 4 51/1 9 ee » | 1458 19166] «1/1 0 0 8]0 6 1 ie yy) |12°250 |916-6) .. | .. |0 2 23! 0 55 $ oF Ke 6'375 |916°6] ..| .. |0 1 1] 0 27 || Japan* l0—*~~

~~*CIHLI *6— 100Sen=1Yen. 20 Yen piece ..} Gold |33:333 | 900° 14 2 0119 94 100 Centavos 10 Peso piece 10 4 —| 5) {16°668 | 900° a2 SOeoeey =1 Peso. (Condor) ....| Gold |15:253 | 900: 1 17 6 | 9 10 5 8°333 | 900° 1 0 61498 5 Peso piece…) ,, | 7°626 | 900° 018 9} 455 " Pil Be mer : :*~~

~~*2 ~·~ ws{gg,——« | 87051 | 900° (Say 3 |i 1 Se : " a ed sen red "te : : 1 Ts gl : "| 0 1 ,,___..| Silver 12500 j900°]..]..'0 3 9/091 + ms 50 Centavos piece » (12:50 }900°) . . 0 1 103) 0 45 50 Sen piece ..| Silver }10: 800° — 0 2 03) 0 50 20 ' » | 500 |900°|..]..0 0 9/1018 20 ~«, Boll lle 800° . 10 010] 0 20 10 x > | 2°50 |900'|..]..10 0 43/0 9 i) boll vere pee 800° .(0 0 5|010 5 i » | 1:25 |900°|..'..|0 0 2/0 4 RR ee 1 800° .10 0 20 5*~~

- ~~*Inconvertible paper currency.*~~

~~*Remarks.—The currencies of such of the non-European States as were capable of being presented in tabular form have been given above, but a brief outline of the currencies of less-advanced countries where a settled coinage does not prevail may be here added. The systems of the various European colonies in America are, as a rule, similar to their mother-countries. Some of the English possessions acquired by conquest preserve their original currency. In Cayenne the pre- Revolution French money is retained. In Paraguay and Uruguay a much-depreciated paper currency circulates. The Central American states reckon in dollars. The Australian colonies have a currency identical with that of England ; the same currency exists in South Africa. In Mauritius the Indian system has been recently introduced. The various Turkish vassal states possess peculiar coinages. In Egypt, the coins of various European nations form the chief*~~

~~*money. The Asiatic currencies are generally composed of silver. Ceylon has the Indian rupees. The money of Java has since 1877 been assimilated to the latest form of the Dutch monetary system. In China the cash forms the unit, and is made of copper, iron, and tin; silver passes by weight—a fael, which varies from place to place, being the unit; while the silver sycee is the usual medium of exchange. The other Asiatic currencies do not require particular notice.*~~

~~*1 There is no currency issued in Canada ; English and American coins circulate. The standard is gold (£1=$4'80). There were formerly different methods of counting, viz., English sterling, Halifax currency, and Canadian sterling, the respective ratios being 100: 120: 108.*~~

~~*2 The decimal coinage has existed in Mexico since 1867. The gold coins are practically commercial money, and command a premium.*~~

~~*3 The dollar was introduced in 1786 as the unit. In 1794 the ratio of gold to silver was fixed at 1 to 15. This valuation underrated gold, consequently silver becaine the standard. In 1834 the ratio was altered to 1 to 16, and it was again changed in 1837. In these changes gold was overrated, and silver was driven out of circulation. This led, in 1853, to the reduction of the metal in the silver coins, which therefore became a token-currency. The suspension of cash payments took place in 1861. In 1873 silver was demonetized, and gold became the standard. In 1878 the "Bland Bill" was passed, making the silver dollar a legal tender, but confining its coinage to the executive, and fixing the amount at from two to four million dollars per month. These silver dollars have not got into circulation. The United States coin a trade dollar of 420 grs. (27-212 grammes), to compete with the Mexican dollar.*~~

~~*4 The Argentine Confederation professes to have a gold standard. The old South American onza weighed 27 grammes, was 875: fine, and worth £3, 4s. 6d.*~~

~~*5 The Brazilian system is a depreciated form of the Portuguese.*~~

~~*6 Chili has nominally a double valuation at 1 to 163. Gold coins are no longer struck.*~~

~~? The Colombian States have the Latin Union system, with a ratio of 1 to 15}.~~

~~8 When Peru returns to cash payments the system will be almost identical with that of Colombia.~~

~~9 British India has a single silver standard, as the gold coins are only commercial money. The price of the rupee varies ; generally in recent years it has been about ls. 8d. (=40 cents).~~

~~10 The old Japanese coinage consisted of gold cobangs and silver itzibus, with a ratio of 1 to 4. The system was recast in 1871, and the present decimal coinage adopted, the ratio being 1 to 16°17. The standard is now practically silver. In 1875 a trade dollar exactly similar to the Ainerican trade dollar was introduced.~~

~~price quotations, would have to be altered, while the new unit of the farthing would not be assimilated to any other unit. This plan has therefore no chance of acceptance. Another proposal starts from the present pound as unit. It is to be divided into 10 florins (2s.), which would contain 100 mils (or farthings reduced 4 per cent.). A new coin, 10 mils (2s. 4d.), would probably have to be introduced. The advantages of this plan are: (1) the pound would be preserved as unit, (2) the forin and shilling would also be retained—the latter being 50 mils, (3) accounts for large amounts need not be altered. The objections are such as follow—(1) the copper coins, which are those most used by the poor, would all be changed, thus causing great confusion, (2) all charges expressed in pence would be altered to the loss of one of the parties. Still, this scheme is much to be preferred to the one first mentioned. A third plan is based on the fact that 8s. in English money is only $d. more than 10 francs. Having regard to this link between the English and French systems, it is proposed to coin a 10-frane piece in gold to serve as a token for 8s. If the penny were then reduced by 4 per cent. this piece would contain 100 pence, and, by coining a frane or tenpenny piece in silver, a perfect decimal currency would be obtained. This arrangement would involve the abolition of the pownd as well as of most of the present English coins. In fact, it is as yet~~

~~*premature to expect a system which will be international as well as decimal, and the most that can be hoped for is some progress towards that ultimate end. All that can be said at present is that all schemes for the introduction of the decimal system should be considered with regard to their tendency to help towards the assimilation of the English system to other currencies. The problem of international money has during the last twenty years acquired much prominence. In previous historic periods the idea was partially realized. Thus the drachme was an international Hellenic coin, though it had three different values.) Under the Roman hegemony and the succeeding empire the denarius became the coin of the west, the drachme that of the east.2. The next currency which can be called international was the frequently-mentioned Carlovingian system. The growth of the different European nationalities, and their frequent wars, prevented any common coinage system being adopted by them. Each state debased its own coin at different times, so that any original resemblances disappeared. The question of unification of the various monetary systems was thus left open for the present century, when increased facilities for intercourse have led to more complex international relations. An association for promoting unity in weights, measures, and coins was founded in Paris in 1855, and actively advocated its principles. In pursuance of this object a series of conferences and congresses were held on the subject, the first of them in 1860. The congress of 1863 was held at Berlin, and adopted a series of important resolutions. Its report advocates the superior convenience of a gold system with a subsidiary coinage of silver ; the millesimal scale of 900 as to fineness of the higher coins was also approved of, as well as the definition of the weights of coins on the metric system. The first practical outcome of the movement was in the monetary convention of 1865, which founded the so- called Latin Union, by which France, Belgium, Italy, and Switzer- land became a single monetary region, with the franc or lira as unit. The subsequent accessions to the Union are given in the note to the French coinage system (Table II.). In 1867 a monetary conference was held at the same time as the Exhibition of that year, when the idea ofa universal coinage was advocated, and three leading principles were laid down as necessary to that result, viz.—(1) the universal adoption of a single gold standard, (2) the general use of the decimal scale for this coinage, (3) that all coinages should be co-ordinated with the French system. Owing to the*~~

~~*accidents of historical development, certain points of connexion existed between the lead- ing European systems. Thus, the franc being regarded as a unit, the Austrian florin was as 2°47, the American gold dollar as 5:18, and the English pound as 25°22. Very slight changes would bring these coins into a series of 1: 24:5: 25, and it was proposed by the congress of 1863 that, when thus modified, they should lave inter- national currency in all countries where any of the four units pre- vailed. All outside nations were recommended to select whichever of these units they preferred. The subsequent monetary changes in the various European systems have, however, ended rather in the formation of international systems without any tendency towards the establishment of a universal one. Thus, of the three principles laid down by the conference of 1867, two only have been adopted in recent currency reforms. On the creation of a united Germany after the Franco-German war of 1870-1871, it was the aim of the rulers of that country to develop as much as possible all outward expressions of that unity, and, in accordance with that conception a German currency was devised which was monometallic and decimal (see Table II.), but which was not easy to assimilate to the French system, thus rejecting the third principle laid down by the Paris conference, and rendering future progress more difficult. The*~~

~~*1 The Attic, Euboic, and Mginetan ; see Smith, Dict. Gr. and Rom. Ant., s. v. "Drachma." : ee*~~

~~*2 Mommsen, Hist. of Rome, iii. p. 415.*~~

~~*3 See E. de Parieu in Journal des Economistes (Feb. 1, 1878).*~~

~~*MONEY*~~

~~*Scandinavian Union proceeded on very much the same lines as the German reform, and was, in fact, mainly caused by it. The Dutch Government, under the pressure of circumstances, have abandoned the silver standard and coined some gold, but their position is still undecided. The Austrian Government have made a slight step by issuing as gold coins 8- and 4-gulden pieces, which are the same as the 20- and 10-franc coins. In one part of the Russian dominions, Finland, the French system has been introduced, the new mark being equivalent to the franc. The*~~

~~*main Russian system has not been changed, nor have any alterations been made by England, Turkey, or Portugal.4 The question of universal coinage has become implicated with the question of the proper standard, and the strong ground taken up in 1867 has certainly to some extent been abandoned. It may, however, be considered that the present systems of coinage are capable of being assimilated. A comparison of the amount of pure metal in English, French, German, United States, and even Japanese coin shows how small is the difference.® An ingenious proposal was made in 1868 to the English commission on the question, by which the sovereign would be made identical with the French 25-franc piece (if that were coined). It was based on the fact that the sovereign contained only about 1 grain more of gold than the amount in 25 francs. It was proposed to deduct this small amount from the bullion brought for coinage as seignior- age, so that nochange need be made. The advocates of this scheme contended that prices would not be affected by the alteration. This reasoning did not commend itself to the commission. They accepted the view put forward by Newmarch, who argued that all con- tracts would have to be altered to allow for the depreciation caused by the change, and this position seems impregnable, so long as metallic currency alone is considered. Another ingenious plan was that of Bagehot to assimilate the English and American systems, as a step towards a wider change.® At the present moment the great monetary systems of (1) France and her allies, (2) England and the larger part of her colonies, and (3) the United States are so firmly established in their several countries, and the advantages of each system are so equal, that it is hard to see which is to give way. The wide area of the Latin Union, and the perfect decimal division of its coinage, are arguments in favour of the franc; the greater value of the pound, and the immense extent of the English colonies and English trade, are in favour of the British unit of value ; while the dollar, from its convenient size and the prospect of the future growth of the United States, has claims to be con- sidered in the discussion. The most probable conclusion, however, seems to be that the future unit will not be any of these coins, but the result of a compromise, which will lead to a new system being established. The difficultics which arise when universal coinage schemes are brought forward ought not to conceal from us the solid advantages which such an institution would confer on the world. The arguments urged in its favour are various, and*~~

~~are regarded as being of different relative importance by their advocates. They may, however, all be stated as follows. (1) Increased facility of travelling. Though there is a tendency to under-estimate this element of the question, it seems impossible to doubt that the saving of trouble to travellers by any universal coinage system would be very great. The abolition even of the local currencies of Germany and Italy, and their replacement by uniform national systems, has been a great boon to tourists, but an arrangement which would obviate the necessity for procuring any different money whatever would be a still greater advance. In the interests of peace, which is greatly promoted by extended international communication, it is very desirable to remove any obstacle which retards increased intercourse among persons of different countries. (2) Greater ease in adjusting the foreign exchanges. This argument has been sometimes pushed too far. It has been apparently held that, were a universal currency adopted, the problems of the foreign exchanges would no longer exist. There are, however, other factors in the question, namely, those of time and place, which could not be eliminated by the adoption of a single coinage system." Still, the removal of even one complicating element would simplify exchange dealings. The question of mint pars would no longer arise, and the specie points would be stated more simply. The friction which sometimes arises from the necessity of recoining the exported gold would also be removed, and the profits of those dealers who gain by 4 As Austria, Russia, and Turkey possess inconvertible paper currencies, and various foreign coins circulate in the last-named country, the question ° does not possess uch importance for them. Portugal is closely connected with England, and will probably follow her example. It may also be noticed~~

~~that the gold coins of all these countries have a fineness of }4ths. 5 Sovereign=7'32 grammes fine gold.~~

~~25 francs=7'26 79 " U. 8. half-eagle=7°52 a German 20 mnark=7°16 9 "~~

~~Japanese 5 yen=7°50 0 ap~~

~~6 See his pamphlet reprinted from the Economist. It is nearly the same as the first proposal mentioned above, but it differs in contemplating the~~

~~assimila- tion of American money, the 5-dollar piece being equivalent to the new pound.~~

~~7 See, for this, Goschen, Foreign Exchanges, p. 5, and the article BxcHANGE (vol. viii. p. 784 sq.). A practical illustration is the case of Australia, where, though the currency is identical with that of England, bills on England are at a preinium.~~

~~their special knowledge would be saved to ordinary traders. (3) The improvement of the currencics of backward states. Many countries still possess those mixed currencies which were once com- mon all over Europe, and much confusion consequently arises. The commercial coins have been introduced for international circulation,! and a universal currency would perform their function more satis- factorily. (4) Greater facility in comparing price-lists, &c. This advantage, which is reserved for the last, has been regarded by competent judges as the greatest.? It hasa practical and a theo- retical interest : the former, since trade with foreign countries would be rendered easier and safer; the latter, since statistical inquiries would be very much facilitated. At present, it is quite impossible for an ordinary trader to understand a set of foreign price-lists, each perhaps expressed in terms ofa different currency from the others, — a difficulty which is enhanced by the variations of gold and silver values, not to add the case of an inconvertible paper currency. The existence of a common monetary language would remove these diffi- culties, and the premium on gold could be allowed for in the case of depreciated paper. A much wider development of smaller trading transactions would become possible, and would add to the world's wealth. Nor would the greater case of statistical inquiry be unim- portant ; the rates of wages in different countries, and the profits on different transactions, would be readily compared, and the move- ments of labour and capital to the most advantageous points rendered more rapid. Against these great gains can be set only a certain and a possible disadvantage—namely, the loss and trouble involved in change, which would, of course, for the time be con- siderable, but would soon be over, and the chance that some states might issue a depreciated currency, which would expel the other and better~~

~~*coins. In the case of a universal coinage this case would hardly arise, since there would be no field of employment for the purer coins, and they would consequently remain in circulation, but the whole currency would become depreciated. Proper mint regulations, however, would obviate this danger, and could surely be devised. It may be said that the principal hindrance to one coinage system for all civilized states is the as yet unsettled qucs- tion of the standard to be employed. Till the debate on this problem is closed it is vain to expect monetary unification. The establishment of a universal system based on gold seemed quite feasible to the conference of 1867, but doubtful to that of 1878, while a double standard was the proposal discussed in 1881.*~~

~~*9. Considerations on the Questions arising from the Con- jlict of Standards.—In the preceding section the various possible monetary systems were set forth, but no discussion was entered into with respect to their comparative merits. Only three of these systems need be here examined, namely, the single standard system, the multiple standard system, and, lastly, the composite system. Nor even is there any need for examining the various possible single or multiple standards. The single silver standard is the only one of the former, as the double gold and silver standard is the only one of the latter, which need be taken into account. It is true, historical inquiry has shown that the problem of the proper proportion between two different metals when used together presented itself to the Chinese with regard to their iron and copper coinages ; but the course of mone- tary evolution, as discussed in section 3, has resulted in the rejection of the less valuable metals and in confining the material of the principal coins to silver and gold. The use of silver as a principal coinage was, as we have seen, widely diffused. The Hellenic coins were composed of that metal, gold being afterwards introduced as a variable commercial money; and copper was brought in still later as a token currency. 'Though copper preceded silver as money in Rome, the latter, soon after its introduction, succeeded in displacing it, the ratio first fixed being 1 to 250. A regular gold coinage did not exist at Rome till the empire, but gold in bars passed, the legal ratio being 1 to 11°91. Still the questions connected with the use of a double standard do not seein to have arisen. The various European mon- archies had silver as their*~~

~~principal money (see p. 726 sq., above), gold where it was used being, as in Greece, a~~

~~1 The principal of these are—the Austrian Maria Theresa dollar, the Mexican dollar, and the United States trade dollar, which is 74 grs. heavier than the national coin of the same name. See also Tables iI. and III.~~

~~2 H.g., Bagehot and Prof. Jevons. The former dwells on the com- mercial aspect; the latter naturally plaees the scientifie side first.~~

~~3 See Mommsen, Uist. of Rome, ii. p. 382 and iv. p. 553.~~

~~commercial money. The advance of gold to a position parallel to silver was commenced in the 13th and continued in the 14th century, the method of regulating the mixed gold and silver currencies being by proclamation, which fixed the varying ratios from time to time. In England this course was followed from the first introduction of gold coins (1257) to 1663.4 From 1663 to 1717 silver was the standard, and the gold coins passed at thcir mar- ket value. As the silver coins were very much debased, the gold guinea sometimes was deemed equivalent to 30s. After the recoinage of 1696 the guinea passcd at 21s. 6d. At this ratio silver was underrated, and was accordingly exported to Continental Europe and to India. 'The loss of the silver coins aroused the public attention, and the matter was submitted to Sir I. Newton, whose answer was given in his Third Representation. IIe proposed to reduce the guinea from 21s. 6d. to 21s. as an experimental measure.® The proper reduction for the object in view would have been to 20s. 8d. 'The silver drain, therefore, continued, and England came to have a gold currency. An opposite arrangement gave France a silver coinage. The recent facts of French monetary history, as well as those of the United States, illustrate the same condition of affairs. The difficulty of constituting a double standard system on a secure basis is thus made clear, so far at least as regards a single country. For the continuance of the two metals in the currency depends on the market ratio and the legal ratio between gold and silver being the same. The slightest examination of the history of these metals will show how~~

~~*variable they have been. Without accepting the estimates which regard silver as being morc valuable than gold,$ the well-attested variations of the precious metals have been very considerable. Thus, Herodotus estimates the ratio as 1 to 13, Plato 1 to 12, Menander 1 to 10, and in Cxsar's time the ratio was 1 to 9.7 Table I. contains the varia- tions since the discovery of America. In the 14th century the value of gold rose remarkably, and the gradual move- ment has ever since been towards an appreciation of gold relatively to silver. Another point, previously noticed, is the tendency, as wealth increases, to adopt a more valuable form of currency. Greece, Rome, and England all afford illustrations of this movement. The experience of the evils of a mixed currency led the earlier writers on coinage in England to regard a single standard system as the best, and silver as the most suitable metal for the standard. Locke, Petty, and Harris all advocated this view. 'hie earlier Italian writers proposed to combine gold and silver at a ratio of 1 to 12, which they conceived to be the actual pro- portion. The theory of a composite system was, as before mentioned, first given by Lord Liverpool. This method*~~

~~*4 The various changes made can be estimated from the Tables given in James's Essays on Money, &e. 3 seealso Ency. Brit., 8th ed., article '*Moncy." A careful statement will be found in Lord Liverpool's work, ch. xi.*~~

~~*5 Newton's report will be found in Select Tracts on Money, edited by J. R. MCulloch for the Political Economy Club (1856). One passage is worth quoting. 'The demand for exportation arises from the higher price of silver in other places than in England in propor- tion to gold, . . . and may therefore be diminished by lowering the value of gold in proportion to silver. If gold in England, or silver in East India, could be brought down so low as to bear the same propor- tion to one another in both places, there would be here no greater demand for silver than for gold to be exported to India. And if gold were lowered only so as to have the same proportion to the silver money in England which it hath to silver in the rest of Europe, there would be no temptation to export silver rather than gold to any other part of Europe" (p. 277). The italics are in the original pass- age, which has been much diseussed in reeent controversies.*~~

~~8 Del Mar, JJist. of the Precious Metals, p. 221. According to this writer, the variation has been 200 degrees—i.e., from silver being 10 times as valuable as gold, gold has come to be 20 times more valuable than silver.~~

~~7 See Smith, Dict. of Ant. s. v. "' Argentum."~~

~~8 See above, p. 731.~~

~~of regulating the metallic currency was established in England, as it were, accidentally, and deliberately adopted only in 1816. The practical good results which followed made all English economists of that period warm advo- cates of the composite system. Thus, M'Culloch and Tooke agree in supporting the English system, as also does J. S. Mill! On the Continent the weight of authority was more divided, and the existence of the French bi- metallic system gave support to the advocates of a double standard. The result of the gold discoveries in Australia and California was to greatly increase the supply of that metal, and, under the action of Gresham's law, to change the French currency from silver to gold, while Holland, to avoid the evils which were anticipated from the reduced value of that metal, adopted silver as the standard. The movements in favour of a universal currency described above, combined with the course of events, brought the standard question into greater prominence. The proposal of the Paris conference of 1867 for a single gold standard, and a universal coinage on that basis, raised the question to great prominence. Wolowski and Courcelle Seneuil strongly opposed the recommendation, the former predict- ing that a disastrous appreciation of gold would follow. This view seems borne out by the result, for, although a universal coinage was not created, yet Germany and the Scandinavian Union both changed from a silver to a gold standard, while Holland and the United States both made movements in the same direction by demonetizing silver and making preparations for adopting gold. The Latin Union at the same time restricted their silver coinage, which had nearly the same effect as the adoption of a gold stand- ard.2 The result of these extensive changes was to cause much confusion. The more ardent advocates of a double standard, too, attributed most of the continued trade de- pression to this cause. The altered condition of opinion on the question was seen at the~~

~~*monetary conference held at Paris in 1878, where the universal demonetization of silver was considered to be dangerous. The "Bland Act" of the United States, which theoretically decreed the double standard (1878), was another instance of reaction. The great depreciation of silver, which resulted mainly from its having ceased to be money over a large part of the civilized world, severely affected the Indian finances,' and thus the advocates of a double standard were able to command some attention in England. The conference held in Paris in 1881 reflected these changed views. The supporters of the double standard took the initiative and proposed a treaty based on the double standard at a fixed ratio, but no conclusion was arrived at—England, Germany, and the Scandinavian Union upholding the gold standard.*~~

~~*Such, in brief, has been the recent history of the standard question, and it now becomes desirable to examine more closely the conflicting arguments in the various shapes they have taken. The older English advocates of the gold standard have found their best representatives in Lord Liverpool and Tooke. The former of these adopted the argument used by Petty, Locke, and Harris, that only one metal can be the standard of value at a given time, but he held that the advance of England in wealth rendered gold a more suitable material than silver for the principal money. He added that by law the power lay in the sovereign to settle the standard, and, as a matter of fact, he contended that gold was actually at that time (1805) the English standard in common estimation. These arguments were*~~

~~*1 Lord Ashburton was the only person of influence who advocated the double standard. 2 The amounts decreed to be coined each year were as follows :—Frs.*~~

~~*1874=120,000,000 1875 =150, 000, 000 1876 =120,000,000 1877= 65,000,000 1878= 9,000,000*~~

~~*- 1879= 20,000,000 } For Italy only. 3 See, for a full discussion, W. Bagehot, Depreciation of Silver.*~~

~~*MII O NEY*~~

~~supported by a mass of historical examples. Tooke, who dealt with the subject in his History of Prices, severely criticizes the double standard. He points out that it would be impossible to keep both metals in circulation, and that it would be the inferior one which would remain. Hcalso indicates a more refined objection, namely, the difficulty of constituting a bank reserve under the double standard. Thus, if silver were the more valuable, and the reserve consisted mainly of it, there would be an inducement to make a run on the reserve, so as to drain out the small quantity of gold and then get the more valuable silver.> The silver standard was preferred by Ricardo, who fully accepted the arguments against the double standard as conclusive ; his view was, that silver was steadier in value than gold, and was the standard money in other countries, while the objection to it ou account of its greater bulk was, he thought, obviated by the use of paper money for circulation.® J. S. Mill pronounces no opinion as to the comparative merits of gold and silver, but he objects to the double standard on the usual ground that the cheaper metal is the only one used in payments, and that therefore the fluctuations arc more frequent under a double standard régime. The advocates of the concurrent use of the two metals, prominent among whom were Wolowski on the Continent and Scyd in England, contended that these objections were ill- founded, for (1) the double standard, though it produced (z.c., admitting the assumption of their opponents) more frequent fluctuations, still did not vary so widely from the mean, since in each case it was the cheaper metal which determined the valuc,' and (2) the action of Gresham's law would produce a compensatory action. Thus, if silver be undervalued in a double-standard system, a drain sets in to other countries where it is more valuable. The quantity of silver is thus reduced and its value raiscd, while gold is imported, its quantity increased, and its value lowered. Were gold the under- valued metal, the converse process would take place. The sound- ness of this position is illustrated by the case of the great transforma- tion of the French currency (1849-1860). During the rapid increase of the gold supplies the value of silver only rose about 3 per cent. ; in fact the depreciation was spread over the two metals, and not confined to gold. In addition to the above arguments, it was urged by Wolowski that any attempts to establish a universal gold standard as contemplated by the Paris conference of 1867 would cause a great appreciation of gold, which would be disastrous to commercial interests,~~

~~*while silver would lose most of its value. The services which the double-standard countries rendered by acting as intermediaries between gold and silver standard countries was also dwelt on, the ease with which the mass of silver needed for exporta- tion to the East was supplied from France during the years 1853-56 being an instance in point. The monetary difficulties, as indicated above, which followed the adoption of gold by Germany and the Scandinavian Union, as well as the embarrassment of the Indian Government, from the resulting depreciation of silver, revived the double-standard advocates. Cernuschi and De Laveleye came forward as supporters of what the former called bimetallism, that is to say, the establishment of a universal, or at all events a large international, currency, based on the concurrent circulation of the two metals gold and silver at a fixed ratio. This plan has gained many supporters, though the tendency among English economists was at first to decline even to consider it; and not even yet does the question appear to have received that careful examination by monometallists which would be desirable.®*~~

~~*The bimetallists start with a discussion as to the causes which determine the value of money. They point out that there are two extreme theories: one that the value of money depends on the will of the sovereign (the fiat theory); the other that the value of money is entirely independent of state control, and determined by economic conditions (the free trade theory). Neither of these is accepted by the bimetallists. They take up a middle ground and hold that, by its power of deciding what substance shall be deemed legal tender and discharge all obligations, the state is able to deter- mine, within limits, what substances shall be money and what the*~~

~~*4 Coins of the Realm, pp. 128-165.*~~

~~*5 This objection to the double standard is also urged by Prof. Thorold Rogers and by Bagehot. Actual instances of the difficulty occurred in 1860, and again in 1876, with the Bank of France.*~~

~~*6 "¢Proposals for an Economical and Secure Currency," Works (ed. M'Culloch), p. 403.*~~

~~*7 The superposition of two curves, each representing the variations of one metal, and the formation of a third curve representing the lowest*~~

~~*concurrent points of each, will make this clear. See Jevons, Money, p. 138.*~~

~~*8 See J. E. Cairnes, Essays in Pol. Econ., pp. 140-148.*~~

~~*9 Mr A. J. Wilson has collected a series of articles on Reciprocity, Bimetallism, and Land Tenure Reform, and Prof. Bonamy Price dealt with Bimetallism and Fair Trade in his address to the Social Science Congress in 1882. But there is no fair reason for placing H. de Laveleye, Luzzati, Cernuschi, Dana Horton, and other supporters of bimetallism — and we may add Prof. F. A. Walker—in the same category with the advocates of (so-called) ‘ Reciprocity.”*~~

~~*value of those substances shall be. They argue from history that several metals have been successively demonetized, that different ratios have been fixed between metals circulating together, that in- convertible paper currencies have been kept in circulation by the will of the state.! The doctrine of cost of production as determining the value of money is also assailed by them. They hold that it is the quantity of money which governs its value,? and that cost of production has little or no influence in the matter. The next step in the bimetallic argument is to contend that their proposed ratio for gold to silver (1 to 154) can be maintained by the legal regulations to that effect. The common objection to bimetallism is, that which- ever metal was undervalued would be exported. They answer that the same ratio existing over all, or a great part of, the world, there would be no inducement to export either metal, and in support of their argument they appeal to the passage from Newton quoted above, and claim him as the inventor of modern bimetallism.® Thirdly, a greater stability as regards value is claimed for the two metals combined than for either singly, since the fluctuations are distributed over a wider field, and, the conditions of production of gold and silver being somewhat different, fluctuations in them tend to counterbalance each other.*~~

~~*1 See Dana Horton’s paper on the Position of Law in the Doctrine of Money, presented to the monetary conference of 1881 (Appendix ix. C).*~~

~~2 On p. 721, above, the theory of money value has been stated, and the objec- tions to the cost of production theory given. It is strange to find Jevons arguing (in common with Bagehot and Prof. Price) that the value of money ultimately depends on cost of production, when his examination of that doc- trine in general is considered. Compare Contemp. Rev, (May 1881) with Jevons's Theory of Pol. Econ., p. 201 sq. . ; :~~

~~3 Modern bimetallists freely admit that two different bimetallic systems—i.e., having different ratios—could not exist, for each would drain the other of one metal.~~

~~forming a universal bimetallic league which would not be liable to be broken up by war, or impaired by some of the states which com- posed it issuing inconvertible paper. On the other hand, the various international conventions for postal purposes, extradition, com- mercial arrangements, and other matters of interest, are considered by bimetallists as evidences of the feasibility of their plan.~~

~~The above summary gives the main arguments on each side of the discussion as given by the advocates of the contending principles. A short consideration will show that the controversy may be suitably divided into three heads, viz.—(1) the possibility of constructing a universal bimetallic system which shall be in accordance with sound economic principle ; (2), if the first question be answered in the affirmative, the comparative merits of this system as opposed to the present variety of systems, or a future universal gold-standard system ; and (8) the expediency under present circumstances of nations in general, and England in parti- cular, joining in the proposed convention. Each of these topics calls for some remark. (1) The possibility of a bimetallic system can hardly be denied. Under all the difficulties attending its existence in a single country, it was retained in practical work- ing in France during the early part of the 18th century, and it is plain that a widely-extended league would afford a better field for its action. It is quite possible that national preferences for one metal or the other would be displayed, but this would be no~~

~~- hindrance, since the exchanges would be regulated by the legal rate,~~

~~*and prices would depend on the total quantity of both metals (the amount of gold being multiplied by the legal ratio, and added to the amount of silver).? The objection which denies the power of Governments to fix the relative values of gold and silver, and which is supported by the instance of the extreme case of silver being made equal in value to gold, may be set aside by the consideration that the use of the precious metals takes two forms—(a) their use as commodities, (b) their use as money. Since the state can influence the demand for these metals as money, and since therefore it can raise the value of either of them by this increased demand, it follows that, within assignable limits, it can fix the ratios between them, and that these limits are "the ratio which would subsist between their values if gold were demonetized, and that which would subsist if silver were demonetized."® The possibility of bi- metallism, if all nations were agreed, is allowed by some mono- metallists (e.g., Professor Jevons), and an unconscious argument to this effect was given by the proposal of Chevalier, at the time of the Australian gold discoveries, to adopt silver as the standard and demonetize gold, which is a clear recognition of the force of law in monetary questions. It is therefore reasonable to answer in the bimetallists' favour the question first raised. (2) The considerations to be taken into account under the second head are far more com- plex, and do not admit of accurate determination. The present currency systems of England and the Scandinavian Union are based on the composite system, and afford the greatest satisfaction to the inhabitants of those countries. The bimetallic system of the Latin Union has been suspended, the introduction of silver as the principal money not being desired by the various peoples concerned. Germany has lost considerably by the sales of depre- ciated silver, and, were a gold standard once firmly established, it is not likely that any wish for change would be manifested. With silver countries the case is different. They have to receive masses of depreciated silver and to give commodities in exchange, while their purchasing power is reduccd owing to the greater relative value of gold to silver. It would therefore be clearly advantageous for silver-using countries that a system should be adopted which would raise the value of their money, and save them from the necessity of importing large quantities of silver to produce a proper adjustment. The ultimate consequences of the complete demone- tization of silver as regards silver-using countries are not so clear. The supply of gold might suffice for all*~~

~~*wants, and might furnish a better currency than the heavier silver. The preservation of two separate monometallic systems, of gold for the more advanced countries of Europe aud the United States, of silver for Russia and India, would, when the superfluous stock of silver had passed to the East, present little difficulty after equilibrium was attained. The new ratio between silver and gold would become established, and silver prices in silver-using countries would be higher in pro- portion to the fall in the value of silver. It is therefore plain that a suitable adjustment would be reached under any variety of currency systems, and it may therefore be concluded that the comparative merits of the competing standards are not capable of*~~

~~*4 The principal sources for the above summary, besides works before cited, are the pamphlets of Seyd, Cernuschi, and De Laveleye, on the bimetallist side, as well as the articles of the latter in the Fort. and Contemp. Reviews. The monometallist arguments are given by Prof. Jevons (Contemp., May 1881), Mr R. Giffen (Essays in Finance, pp. 286-310), and Lord Sherbrooke (Nineteenth Century, April 1882). See also the Report of the Paris conference, 1881, and Mr T. H. Farrer, The State in its Relation to Trade, pp. 49-52.*~~

~~*5 It is assumed that the other factors which influence the value of money (see p. 722, above) remain constant, eat*~~

~~*6 Mr J. J. Murphy in Dublin Statistical Jowrnal, vol. vili. p. 282. See also M. Walras, Journal des Economistes, May 1881, 'Théorie Mathématique du*~~

~~*bimétallisme." XVI. — 93*~~

~~*738*~~

~~*being decided at present. The immediate introduction of a universal gold currency is by the admission of all parties eminently undesirable, and this is the only settled point in the controversy. (3) The last head which the bimetallic question embraces is the practical expediency of joining in a bimetallic league with a ratio of 1 to 154. With regard to this aspect of the question the answer, for England at least, ought to be a negative one. The*~~

~~*present English monetary system has worked well. It is firmly rooted in English habits, and is not therefore to be lightly aban- doned. Again, the interests of English creditors are plainly opposed to any movement calculated to raise the value of silver relatively to gold, and to depreciate prices in general. The threat of some bi- metallists, that all nations will be driven to adopt a gold standard, and thus produce a crisis in the English money market by the resulting gold drain, is of no weight ; any drain of English gold will have to be paid for at a high price, and the simple expedient of raising the bank-rate will restore as much bullion as is needed in England. The interests of other countries cannot be so clearly determined. A state like Germany, holding a large store of depre- ciated silver, may desire other states to become bimetallic, but will hardly desire to do so herself. The interests of India and other silver-standard countries have been considered before. When all these aspects of the question have been examined the most probable conclusion is, that the chances of a bimetallic league in the imme-*~~

~~*diate future are very small, and that future monetary evolution will*~~

~~*be ruled rather by the course of events, and the pressure of circum- stances in each separate state, than by the conscious deliberations of an international conference.*~~

~~*Bibliography.—The literature of the various questions connected with money is very extensive, and only a brief notice of it can be given here. The principal authority among the Greeks is Aristotle, who in two passages (Nic. Eth., v. 5; Pol., i. 9) has discussed the qualities of money, and pointed out its functions with great clear- ness. Xenophon also, in his work On the Athenian State, dealt with the value of the precious metals, though his views are partially erroneous. The only passages worth noticing in Latin literature are those of Pliny, who seems to have held a form of the mercantile theory, and Paulus, who, in a fragment preserved in the Digest, has treated of the origin of money. The medieval literature embraces several works dealing specially with the queen of changes in the standard of money, which were condemned by the theologians, The first treatise professedly on the special subject of money is a work by Nicholas Oresme, bishop of Lisieux (0d. 1882), entitled De Origine, Natura, Jure,*~~

~~*et Mutationibus Monetarwm, reprinted in 1864 (Paris) by Wolowski, and even now worth reading. The next work to be noticed is the De Monetarwm Potestate simul et Utilitate libellus (Nuremberg, 1542), a fragment of a larger treatise on economics, of Gabriel Biel (0b. 1495). It has been remarked that "the favourite subject of the economists of the 16th century was that of money." The first of these works to be noticed is De Monetew Cudendx Ratione by Copernicus, reprinted along with the work of Oresme above mentioned. Ata later date the Jesuit Mariana discussed the varia- tions in prices under the title De Monet# Mutatione. In the same century an anonymous work appeared in German, with the title Gemeine Stimmen von der Muntze (1530). In 1588 Davanzati issued Lezione delle Monete, advocating a bimetallic system. The problem of the elevation of prices caused by the American mines led to the issue of several works, one of the most remarkable being the Dialogues of William Stafford (1581).*~~

~~*In the 17th century Sir W. Petty dealt with money in a tract,*~~

~~*MONFERRATO, or MontTFERRAT, an ancient marquisate of North Italy, in the valley of the Tanaro, the name of which still survives in the fuller title (Casale Monferrato) of the town of Casale. The princes of Monferrato were among the most powerful Italian families of the Middle Ages. Among them were several famous crusaders: Conrad, prince of Tyre from 1187 to 1192, the valiant opponent of Saladin; and Boniface, king of Thessalonica from 1183 to 1207. In 1305, on the extinction of the male line, the marquisate passed to Theodore Paleologus through his mother, the empress Irene. The Palzologi became extinct in 1533. The duchy was subsequently attached to Mantua, and ultimately absorbed in Savoy in the beginning of last century.*~~

~~*MONGE, GasparRp (1746-1818), French mathemati- cian, the inventor of descriptive geometry, was born at Beaune on the 10th May 1746. IIe was educated first at the college of the Oratorians at Beaune, and then in their college at Lyons,—where, at sixteen, the year after he had*~~

~~*Quantulumeumguc (1682). The recoinage of 1696 called forth Lowndes's Essay for the Amendment of the Silver Coins, and Locke's Further Considerations concerning raising the Value of Money. In the 18th century the Reports of Sir I. Newton, as Master of the Mint, are valuable. Cantillon's Hssai (Paris, 1755) contains in its 2d and 3d parts a sound account of currency. Harris's Essay on Money and Coins (1757) is also useful. An earlier tract by Rice Vaughan, Discourse of Coin and Coinage (1675), is brief, but correct in prin- ciple. Adam Smith's Wealth of Nations (London, 1776) discusses the subject of money in B. i. chs. 4 and 5, while seigniorage is examined in B. iv. ch. 6. The treatise, The Coins of the Realm (London, 1805), by the first earl of Liverpool, elaborately discussed the question of the proper standard, and has powerfully influenced monetary legislation in England and Germany. Ricardo's pam- phlets on the bullion question added to the knowledge of the laws which regulated a depreciated currency. Senior, in his Lectures on the Cost of obtaining Money (London, 1829), developed the theory of the international distribution of the precious metals.*~~

~~*The last half century has been a time of active discussion regard- ing monetary questions,—the gold discoveries, international coin- age, decimal coinage, bimetallism, the resumption of specie pay- ments in countries where an inconvertible currency has existed, each of these topics having had its special literature. Some of these works have been mentioned when dealing with the special questions they refer to, and these, in turn, refer to many others. It will suffice here to mention more general works. The theory of money is dealt with by the leading English economists in their systematic works (Mill, Principles, B. iii. chs. 7-10, 19, 21; Fawcett, Manual, B. iii. chs. 5, 6, 15, 16; Shadwell, System, B. iii. chs. 1-3 and 8), also by Cherbuliez (Précis, B. ii. ch. 8, vol. i. and B. ii. ch. 3, vol. ii.). Chevalier has devoted the third volume of his Cowrs (Paris, 1842-50) to the subject, with the title of "La Monnaie." The late Professor W. 8. Jevons's valuable work, Money and the Mechanism of Exchange, and Professor Hussey Walsh's concise T'reatise on Metallic Currency (Dublin, 1858) may also be used. More elaborate than either of these is F. A. Walker's Money, the most comprehensive work on the subject in English ; his smaller work, Money in its Relation to Trade and Industry, is likewise very good. Wolowski's L'Or et V Argent contains much*~~

~~*information, as does also Knies's Das Geld. . Seyd's Bullion and Foreign Exchanges is serviceable, but the changes since its publication (1869) deprive it of most of its value. The various editions of Tate's Cambist give the most accurate (though often imperfect) statements as to the facts of currency. Jacob's work on The Production and Consumption of the Precious Metals gives many interesting details, though the conclusions are often fanciful, and the authorities relied on not trustworthy. The recent work of Del Mar, History of the Precious Metals (London, 1880), furnishes a criticism and continuation of Jacob, and supplies many new details. His criticism of the "' cost of production" theory as applied to gold and silver is especi- ally useful. Some of his views on the moral aspects of the question need qualification. Professor Sumner's History of the American Currency may be relied upon for its facts. The Reports of the various conferences also supply abundant information on their special topics. Among these may be mentioned the Proceedings of the Paris con- ferences of 1867, 1878, and 1881; the Decimal Coinage Commission (1868) ; the French Enquéte Monétacre (1870) ; and the Report of the Committee of the House of Commons on the Depreciation of Silver (1876). The Reports of the (English) Jfint furnish information as to the coinage changes of each preceding year. (C. F. B.)*~~

~~*been learning physics, he was made a teacher of it. Returning to Beaune for a vacation, he made, on a large scale, a plan of the town, inventing the methods of obser- vation and constructing the necessary instruments; the plan was presented to the town, and preserved in their library. An officer of engineers seeing it wrote to recom- mend Monge to the commandant of the military school at Méziéres, and he was received as draftsman and pupil in the practical school attached to that institution; the school itself was of too aristocratic a character to allow of his admission to it. His manual skill was duly appreci- ated: "I was a thousand times tempted," he said long afterwards, "'to tear up my drawings in disgust at the esteem in which they were held, as if I had been good for nothing better." An opportunity, however, presented itself: being required to work out from data supplied to him the "'défilement" of a proposed fortress (an operation then only performed by a long arithmetical process), Monge, substituting for this a geometrical method, obtained the*~~

~~*result so quickly that the commandant at first refused to receive it—the time necessary for the work had not been taken ; but upon examination the value of the discovery was recognized, and the method was adopted. And Monge, continuing his researches, arrived at that general method of the application of geometry to the arts of construc- tion which is now called descriptive geometry. But such was the system in France before the Revolution that the officers instructed in the method were strictly forbidden to communicate it even to those engaged in other branches of the public service; and it was not until many years after- wards that an account of it was published. The method consists, as is well known, in the use of the two halves of a sheet of paper to represent say the planes of xy and xz at right angles to each other, and the consequent repre- sentation of points, lines, and figures in space by means of their plan and elevation, placed in a determinate relative position.*~~

~~*In 1768 Monge became professor of mathematics, and in 1771 professor of physics, at Méziéres; in 1778 he married Madame Horbon, a young widow whom he had previously defended in a very spirited manner from an unfounded charge; in 1780 he was appointed to a chair of hydraulics at the Lyceum in Paris (held by him together with his appointments at Méziéres), and was received as a member of the Academy; his intimate friendship with Berthollet began at this time. In 1783, quitting Mézieres, he was, on the death of Bezout, appointed examiner of naval candidates. Although pressed by the minister to prepare for them a complete course of mathematics, he declined to do so, on the ground that it would deprive Madame Bezout of her only income, arising from the sale of the works of her late husband; he wrote, however (1786), his Tratté élémentaire de la Statique.*~~

~~*Monge contributed (1770-1790) to the Memozrs of the Academy of Turin, the Mémoires des Savants Etrangers of the Academy of Paris, the Mémoires of the same Academy, and the Annales de Chimie, various mathematical and physical papers. Among these may be noticed the memoir "Sur la théorie des déblais et des remblais" (Mdém. de lV' Acad, de Paris, 1781), which, while giving a remarkably elegant investigation in*~~

~~regard to the problem of earth- evork referred to in the title, establishes in connexion with it his capital discovery of the curves of curvature of a surface. Euler, in his paper on curvature in the Berlin Memoirs for 1760, had considered, not the normals of the surface, but the normals of the plane sections through a particular normal, so that the question of the intersection of successive normals of the surface had never presented itself to him. Monge's memoir just referred to gives the ordinary differential equation of the curves of curvature, and establishes the general theory in a very satisfactory manner ; but the application to the interesting particular case of the ellipsoid was first made by him in a later paper in 1795. A memoir in the volume for 1783 relates to the production of water by the combustion of hydrogen ; but Monge's results in this matter had been anticipated by Watts and Cavendish.~~

~~In 1792, on the creation by the Legislative Assembly of an executive council, Monge accepted the office of minister of the marine, but retained it only until April 1793. When the Committee of Public Safety made an appeal to the savants to assist in producing the matériel required for the defence of the republic, he applied him- self wholly to these operations, and distinguished himself by his indefatigable activity therein; he wrote at this time his Description de Vart de fabriquer les canons, and his Avis aux ouvriers en fer sur la fabrication de lacier. He took a very active part in the measures for the establishment of the Normal School (which existed only~~

~~during the first four months of the year 1795), and of the School for Public Works, afterwards the Polytechnic School, and was at each of them professor for descriptive geometry ; his methods in that science were first pub- lished in the form in which the shorthand writers took down his lessons given at the Normial School in 1795, and again in 1798-99. In 1796 Monge was sent into Italy with Berthollet and some artists to receive the pictures and statues levied from several Italian towns, and made there the acquaintance of General Bonaparte. Two years afterwards he was sent to Rome on a political mission, which terminated in the establishment, under Massena, of the shortlived Roman republic ; and he~~

~~thence joined the expedition to Egypt, taking part with his friend Berthollet as well in various operations of the war as in the scientific labours of the Egyptian Institute of Sciences and Arts ; they accompanied Bonaparte to Syria, and returned with him in 1798 to France. Monge was appointed president of the Egyptian commission, and he resumed his connexion with the Polytechnic School. His later mathematical papers are published (1794-1816) in the Journal and the Correspondance of the Polytechnic School. On the forma- tion of the Senate he was appointed a member of that body, with an ample provision and the title of count of Pelusium ; but on the fall of Napoleon he was deprived of all his honours, and even excluded from the list of mem- bers of the reconstituted Institute. He died at Paris on the 28th July 1818.~~

~~For further information see B. Brisson, JWotice historique sur Gaspard Monge; Dupin, Essai historique sur les services et les tra- vaux scientifiques de Gaspard Monge, Paris, 1819, which contains (pp. 162-166) a list of Monge's memoirs and works; and the bio- graphy by Arago (Zuvres, t. ii., 1854).~~

~~Monge's various mathematical papers are to a considerable extent reproduced in the Application de l Analyse a la Géométrie, 4th edition (last revised by the author), Paris, 1819—the pure text of this is reproduced in the 5th edition (revue, corrigée et annotée par M. Liouville), Paris, 1850,which contains also Gauss's Memoir, "'Disquisitiones generales circa superficies curvas," and some valu- able notes by the editor. The other principal separate works are Traité élémentatre de la Statique, 8¢ edition, conformée a la précé- dente, par M. Hachette, et suivie d'une Note etc., par M. Cauchy, Paris, 1846; and the Géométrie Deseriptive (originating, as mentioned above, in the lessons given at the Normal School). The 4th edition, published shortly after the author's death, seems to have been sub- stantially the same as the 7th (@éométrie Descriptive par G. Monge, sutvie d'une théorie des Ombres et de la Perspective, extraite des papiers de Vauteur, par M. Brisson, Paris, 1847). (A. CA.)~~

~~MONGHYR, or Monair, a district in the lieutenant- governorship of Bengal, lying between 24° 22' and 25° 49' N. lat., and 85° 40' and 86° 52'~~

~~E. long., is bounded on the N. by Darbhangah and Bhagalpur, on the E. by Bhagal- pur, on the S. by the Santal Parganas and Hazaribagh, and on the W. by Gaya, Patna, and Darbhangah, with an area of 3922 square miles. The Ganges divides the district into two portions. The northern, intersected by the Buri Gandak and Tiljugd4, two important tributaries of the Ganges, is always liable to inundation during the rainy season, and is a rich, flat, wheat and rice country, support- ing a large population. A considerable area, immedi- ately bordering the banks of the great rivers, is devoted to permanent pasture. Immense quantities of buffaloes are sent every hot season to graze on these marshy prairies ; and the ghi, or clarified butter, made from their milk forms an important article of export to Calcutta. To the south of the Ganges the country is dry, much less fertile, and broken up by fragmentary ridges. The soil consists of quartz, mixed in varying proportions with mica. Ranges of hills intersect this part of the district, and in the extreme south form conical peaks, densely covered with jungle, but of no great height. Irrigation is necessary throughout the section lying on the south of the Ganges.~~

~~In 1872 the population of Monghyr was 1,812,986 (males, 897,074; females 915,912): Hindus, 1,613,546 ; Mohammedans,~~

~~182,269 ; the remainder, consisting mainly of aboriginal tribes and hill races, profess primitive forms of faith. There are also a few Buddhists and Christians. Seven towns contained upwards of 5000 inhabitants in 1872— Monghyr, 59,698 ; Shaikhpura, 11,536 ; Jamalpur, 10,453 ; Barhiya, 10,405 ; Surajgarha, 7935 ; Barbigha, 6362; and Jami, 5197. No trustworthy statistics of the area under cultivation exist since the revenue survey in 1847, when it was returned at 1,311,768 acres ; it is known, however, that cultiva- tion has largely extended since then. The land is held principally under the tenure known as bhdoli-jot, by which the tenant pays rent, either in money or in kind, according to the out-turn of his crops in each year. It is of ancient standing, and popular with the tenantry. Monghyr is famous for its manufactures of iron: firearms, swords, and iron articles of every kind are produced in abundance, but~~

~~*are oted for cheapness rather than quality. The art of inlaying sword-hilts and other articles with gold and silver affords employment to a few families. The most important manu- facture, however, is that of indigo, conducted by means of Euro- pean capital and under European supervision. The total arca under indigo is estimated at about 10,000 acres, with an average out-turn of 2900 cwts. of dye. Minor industries include weaving, dyeing, cabinet-making, boot-making, soap-boiling, and pottery. The principal exports, sent to Calcutta both by rail and river, are oil-seeds, wheat, rice, indigo, gram and pulse, hides, and tobacco ; and the chief imports consist of European piece goods, salt, and sugar. The value of the former in 1876-77 was £430,000, and of the latter £314,000. Education is making fair progress, and in 1874- 75 there were 229 Government and aided schools, attended by 6675*~~

~~*pupils. The climate is dry and healthy. The temperature is high*~~ |

|||

~~*MON—MON*~~

~~*in the hot weather, reaching 107° Fahr. in May; but the cold weather is cool and pleasant. 'The average annual rainfall is 463 inches. Malarial fever is comparatively uncommon, but epidemics of cholera occur frequently.*~~

~~*Monghyr was one of the principal centres of the Mohammedan administration in Bengal. In the early years of British rule, Monghyr formed a part of Bhagalpur, and was not created a separate district till 1832.*~~

~~*Moncuyr, chief town and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated on the south bank of the Ganges (25° 22' N. lat., 86° 30' E. long.). The population in 1872 was 59,698: viz., Hindus, 44,900; Mohammedans, 14,346 ; Buddhists, 33; Christians, 305; '" others," 24.*~~

~~*In 1195 Monghyr, a fortress of great natural strength, appears to have been taken by Muhammad Bakhtyar Khilji, the first Moslem conqueror of Bengal. Henceforth it is often mentioned by the Mohammedan*~~

~~chroniclers as a place of military importance, and was frequently chosen as the seat of the local government. After 1590, when Akbar established his supremacy over the Afghan chicfs of Bengal, Monghyr was long the headquarters of his general, Todar Mall; and it also figures prominently during the rebellion of Sultan Shujd against his brother, Aurangzeb. In more recent times Nawab Mir Kasim, in his war with the English, selected it as his residence and the centre of his military preparations. The fame of Monghyr armourers is said to date from the arsenal which he established. The town is now purely a civil station. and in some respects one of the most picturesque in Bengal.~~

~~MONGOLS~~

~~HE early history of the Mongols, like that of all central-Asian tribes, is extremely obscure. Even the meaning of the name " Mongol" is a disputed point, though a general consent is now given to Schott's etymology of the word from "mong," meaning brave. From the earliest and very scanty notice we have of the Mongols in the history of the T'ang dynasty of China (a.p. 619-90) and in works of later times, it appears that their original camping-grounds were along the courses of the Kerulon, Upper Nonni, and Argun rivers. But in the absence of all historical particulars of their origin, legend, as is usual, has been busy with their early years. The Mongol historian Ssanang Ssetzen gives currency to the myth that they sprang from a blue wolf; and the soberest story on record is that their ancestor Budantsar was miraculously conceived of a Mongol widow. By craft and violence Budantsar gained the chieftainship over a tribe living in the neighbourhood of his mother's tent, and thus left a heritage to his son. Varying fortunes attended the descendants of Budantsar, but on the whole their power gradually increased, until Yesukai, the father of Jenghiz Khan, who was eighth in descent from Budantsar, made his authority felt over a considerable area. How this dominion was extended under the rule of Jenghiz Khan has already been shown (see JENGHIZ Kuan), and when that great conqueror was laid to rest in the valley of Keleen in 1227 he left to his sons an empire which stretched from the China Sea to the banks of the Dnieper.~~

~~*Over the whole of this vast region Jenghiz Khan set his second surviving son Oghotai or Ogdai as khakan, or chief khan, while to the family of his deceased eldest son Juchi he assigned the country from Kayalik and Kharezm to the borders of Bulgar and Saksin "where'er the hoofs of Mongol horses had tramped ;" to Jagatai, his eldest sur- viving son, the territory from the borders of the Uigur country to Bokhara; while Tulé, the youngest, received charge of the home country of the Mongols, the care of the imperial encampment and family, and of the archives of the state. The appointment of Ogdai as his successor, be- ing contrary to the usual Mongol custom of primogeniture, gave rise to some bitterness of feeling among the followers of Jagatai. But the commands of Jenghiz Khan subdued these murmurs, and Ogdai was finally led to the throne*~~

~~*by his dispossessed brother amid the plaudits of the assembled Mongols. The ceremony was completed by Ogdai making three solemn genuflexions to the sun, and by the princes taking an oath by which they swore "that so long as there remained of his posterity a morsel of flesh which thrown upon the grass would prevent the cows from eating, or which put in the fat would prevent the dogs from taking it, they would not place on the throne a prince of any other branch." In accordance with Mongol customs, Ogdai signalized his accession to the throne by distribut- ing among his grandees presents from his father's treasures, and to his father's spirit he sacrificed forty maidens and numerous horses. Once fairly on the throne, he set himself vigorously to follow up the conquests won by his father. At the head of a large army he marched southwards into China to complete the ruin of the Kin dynasty, which had already been so rudely shaken, while at the same time Tulé advanced into the province of Honan fromtheside of Shense. Against this combined attack the Kin troops made a vigor- ous stand, but the skill and courage of the Mongols bore down every opposition, and over a hecatomb of slaughtered foes they captured Kai-fung Foo, the capital of their ene- mies. From Kai-fung Foo the emperor fled to Joo-ning Foo, whither the Mongols quickly followed. After sus- taining a siege for some weeks, and enduring all the horrors of starvation, the garrison submitted to the Mongols, and at the same time the emperor committed suicide by hang- ing. Thus fell in 1234 the Kin or "Golden" dynasty, which had ruled over the northern portion of China for more than a century.*~~

~~*But though Ogdai's first care was to extend his empire in the rich and fertile provinces of China, he was not forgetful of the obligation under which Jenghiz Khan's conquests in western Asia had laid him to maintain his supremacy over the kingdom of Kharezm. This was the more incumbent on him since Jelal al-din, who had been driven by Jenghiz into India, had returned, reinforced by the support of the sultan of Delhi, whose daughter he had married, and, having reconquered his hereditary domains, had advanced westward as far as Tiflis and Khelat. Once more to dispossess the young sultan, Ogdai sent a force of 300,000 men into Kharezm. With such amazing ra- pidity did this army march in pursuit of its foe that the*~~

~~*mON GOLS*~~

~~*advanced Mongol guards reached Amid (Diarbekr), whither Jelal al-din had retreated, before that unfortunate sovereign had any idea of their approach. Accompanied by a few followers, Jelal al-din fled to the Kurdish mountains, where he was basely murdered bya peasant. The primary object of the Mongol invasion was thus accomplished; but, with the instinct of their race, they made this conquest but a stepping-stone to another, and without a moment's delay pushed on still farther westward. Unchecked and almost unopposed, they overran the districts of Diarbekr, Meso- potamia, Erbil, and Khelat, and then advanced upon Azerbijan. So great was the terror with which these fierce warriors inspired the people of the provinces they attacked that single Mongols are said to have slain the inhabitants of entire villages without a hand having been raised against them. In the following year (1236) they invaded Georgia and Great Armenia, committing frightful atrocities, sparing neither man nor woman, young nor old, with the exception of those whom they saved to minister to their wants or passions. 'Tiflis was among the cities captured by assault, and Kars was surrendered at their approach in the vain hope that submission would gain clemency from the victors. Meanwhile, in 1235, Ogdai, whose troops were as numerous as their thirst for conquest was devouring, despatched three armies in as many direc- tions. One was directed against Corea, one against the Sung dynasty, which ruled over the provinces of China south of the Yang-tsze Keang, and the third was sent west- ward into eastern Europe. 'This last force was commanded by*~~

~~*Batu, the son of Juchi, Ogdai's deceased eldest brother, who took with him the celebrated Sabutai Bahddur as his chief adviser. Bulgar, the capital city of the Bulgars, fell before the force under Sabutai, while Batu pushed on over the Volga. With irresistible vigour and astonishing speed the Mongols made their way through the forests of Penza and Tamboff, and appeared before the "beautiful city" of Niazan. For five days they discharged a ccaseless storm of shot from their balistas, and, having made a breach in the defences, carried the city by assault on the 21st of December 1237. 'The prince, with his mother, wife, sons, the boyars, and the inhabitants, without regard to age or sex, were slaughtered with the savage cruelty of Mongol revenge ; some were impaled, some shot at with arrows for sport, others were flayed or had nails or splinters of wood driven under their nails. Priests were roasted alive, and nuns and maidens ravished in the churches before their relatives. 'No eye remained open to weep for the dead.'" Moscow, at this time a place of little importance, next fell into the hands of the invaders, who then advanced against Vladimir. After having held out for several days against the Mongol attacks, the city at length succumbed, and the horrors of Riazan were repeated. The imperial family, with a vast crowd of fugitives, sought shelter in the cathedral, only to perish by the swords of the conquerors or by the flames which reduced it to ashes. If possible, a more dire fate overtook the inhabitants of Kozelsk, near Kaluga, where, in revenge fora partial defeat inflicted on a Mongol force, the followers of Batu held so terrible a "carnival of death" that the city was renamed by its captors Mobalig, 'the city of woe." With the tide of victory thus strong in their favour the Mongols advanced against Kieff, "the mother of cities," and carried it by assault. The inevitable massacre followed, and the city was razed to the ground. While the scene of blood- shed was at its height a catastrophe occurred which at any other time would have been considered of supreme horror. Under the weight of a vast crowd of fugitives the flat roof of the metropolitan church fell in, burying all, young and old, in a vast hecatomb.*~~

~~*Victorious and always advancing, the Mongols, having*~~

~~*7Al*~~

~~*desolated this portion of Russia, moved on in two divisions, one under Batu into Hungary, and the other under Baidar and Kaidu into Poland. Without a check, Batu marched to the neighbourhood of Pesth, where the whole force of the kingdom was arrayed to resist him. The Hungarian army was posted on the wide heath of Mohi, which is bounded by 'the vine-clad hills of Tokay," the mountains of Lomnitz, and the woods of Diosgyor. To an army thus hemmed in on all sides defeat meant ruin, and Batu instantly recognized the dangerous position in which his enemies had placed themselves. To add to his chances of success he determined to deliver his attack by night, and while the careless Hungarians were sleeping he launched his battalions into their midst. Panic-stricken and help- less, they fled in all directions, followed by their merciless foes. Two archbishops, three bishops, and many of the — nobility were among the slain, and the roads for two days' journey from the field of battle were strewn with corpses. The king, Béla IV., was saved by the fleetness of his horse, though closely pursued by a body of Mongols, who followed at his heels as far as the coast of the Adriatic, burning and destroying everything in their way. Mean- while Batu captured Pesth, and on Christmas Day 1241, having crossed the Danube on the ice, took Gran by assault. While Batu had been thus triumphing, the force under Baidar and Kaidu had carried fire and sword into Poland. At their approach the inhabitants of Cracow deserted the city, after having given it over to the flames. Disappointed at the loss of their expected spoil, the Mongols advanced to Wahlstatt in the neighbourhood of Liegnitz, where the Polish army under Duke Henry II. of Silesia awaited their onslaught. With savage impetuosity, the troops of Baidar rushed to the attack, and completely defeated the Poles. As usual, no quarter was given. The massacre was fright- ful, and Duke Henry himself was amongst the slain. It was a Mongol habit to cut off an ear from each corpse of their slaughtered foes, and on this occasion it is said that they filled nine sacks with these ghastly trophies. Follow- ing the example of the inhabitants of Cracow, the people of Liegnitz left but the blackened walls of what had once been the town as a prey for the Mongols, who without delay pushed south-eastward into Moravia as far as the vicinity of Troppau. While laying waste the country in the neighbourhood of that town, they received the an- nouncement of the death of Ogdai, and at the same time a summons for Batu to return eastwards into Mongolia.*~~

~~*While his heutenants had been thus carrying his arms in all directions, Ogdai had been giving himself up to ignoble ease and licentiousness. Like many Mongols, he was much given to drink, and it was to a disease produced by this cause that he finally succumbed on the 11th of December 1241. HIe was succeeded by his son Kuyuk, who reigned only seven years. Little of his character is known, but it is noticeable that his two ministers to whom he left the entire conduct of affairs were Christians, as also were his doctors, and that a Christian chapel stood before his tent. This leaning towards Christianity, however, brought no peaceful tendencies with it. On the contrary, we hear of an advance against the sultan of Rum (Asia Minor), and of an expedition into Syria, by which that country was made tributary to the Great Mongol empire, of a fresh campaign against Corea, and of another attack on the Sung dynasty of China. On the death of Kuyuk dissensions which had been for a long time smouldering between the houses of Ogdai and Jagatai broke out into open war, and after the short and disputed reigns of Kaidu and Chapai, grand- sons of Ogdai, the lordship passed away from the house of Ogdai for ever.*~~

~~*On the Ist of July 1251 Mangu, the eldest son of Mangu With Khan.*~~

~~*Tulé, and nephew to Ogdai, was elected khakan.*~~

~~*Hulagu.*~~

~~*742*~~

~~*perfect impartiality, Mangu allowed the light of his coun- tenance to fall upon the Christians, Mohammedans, and Buddhists among his subjects, although Shamanism was recognized as the state religion. T'wo years after his accession his court was visited by Rubruquis and other Christian monks, who were hospitably received. The de- scription given by Rubruquis of the khakan's palace at Karakorum shows how wide was the interval which sepa- rated him from the nomad, tent-living life of his fore- fathers. It was "surrounded by brick walls… . Its southern side had three doors. Its central hall was like a church, and consisted of a nave and two aisles, separated by columns. HIere the court sat on great occasions. In front of the throne was placed a silver tree, having at its base four lions,*~~

~~*from whose mouths there spouted into four silver basins wine, kumiss, hydromel, and terasine. At the top of the tree a silver angel sounded a trumpet when the reservoirs that supplied the four fountains wanted replenishing." On his accession complaints reached Mangu that dissensions had broken out in the province of Persia, and he therefore sent a force under the command of his brother Hulagu to punish the Ismailites or Assassins, who were held to be the cause of the disorder. Marching by Samarkand and Kesh, Hulagu crossed the Oxus and advanced by way of Balkh into the province of Kohistan. The terror of the Mongol name induced Rokn al-din, the chief of the Assassins, to deprecate the wrath of Hulagu by offers of submission, and he was so far successful that he was able to purchase a temporary immunity from massacre by dismantling fifty of the principal fortresses in Kohistan. But when once the country had thus been left at the mercy of the invaders, their belief in the old saying "Stone dead hath no fellow" sharpened their battle-axes, and, sparing neither man, woman, nor child, they exterminated the unhappy people. Hulagu then marched across the snowy mountains in the direction of Baghdad. On arriving before the town he demanded its surrender. This being refused, he laid siege to the walls in the usual destruc- tive Mongol fashion, and at length, finding resistance hope- less, the caliph was induced to give himself up and to open the gates to his enemies. On the 15th of February 1263 the Mongols entered the walls, and, following their in- stincts, sacked the city. For seven days it was given up to pillage, fire, and the sword, and the number of killed was said to have reached the enormous sum of 800,000. For the moment the caliph's life was spared, and he was allowed to carry away 100 wives out of 700 who lived in his harem, as being those upon whom "neither the sun nor moon had shone." But his fate soon overtook him. Accounts differ as to the circumstances of his death, some saying that he was sewn up in a sack and trodden to death by horses, others that he was starved to death. To the Moslem world his loss was a religious catastrophe, as by it Islam lost its spiritual head. While at Baghdad Hulagu gave his astronomer, Nasir al-din, permission to build an observatory. The town of Maragha was the site chosen, and, under the superintendence of Nasir al-din and four western Asiatic astronomers who were associated with him, a handsome observatory was built, and furnished with "'armillary spheres and astrolabes, and with a beautifully- executed terrestrial globe*~~

~~showing the five climates." One terrible result of the Mongol invasion was a fearful famine, which desolated the provinces of Irak-Arabi, Mesopotamia, Syria, and Rim. But, though the inhabitants starved, the Mongols had strength and energy left to continue their onward march into Syria. Aleppo was stormed and sacked, Damascus surrendered, and Hulagu was meditating the capture of Jerusalem with the object of restoring it to the Christians when he received the news of Mangu's death, and, as in duty bound, at once set out on his return to~~

~~Mongolia, leaving Kitubuka in command of the Mongol forces in Syria. As a reward for his services, Hulagu received the investiture of his conquests, and established there the empire of the Ikhans.~~

~~While Hulagu was prosecuting these conquests in western Asia, Mangu and his next brother Kublai were pursuing a like course in southern China. Southward they even advanced into Tong-king, and westward they carried their arms over the frontier into Tibet. But in one respect there was a vast difference between the two campaigns. Under the wise command of Kublai all indiscriminate massacres were forbidden, and probably for the first time in Mongol history the inhabitants and garrisons of captured cities were treated with humanity. While carrying on the war in the province of Sze-ch'uen Mangu was seized with an attack of dysentery, which proved fatal after a few days' illness. His body was carried into Mongolia on the backs of two asses, and, in pursuance of the custom of slaughter- ing every one encountered on the way, 20,000 persons were, according to Marco Polo, put to the sword.~~

~~At the Kuriltai, or assembly of notables, which was held at Shang-tu after the death of Mangu, his brother Ku- blai (see Kupiat Kuan) was elected khakan. For thirty-five years he sat on the Mongol throne, and at his death in 1294, in his seventy-ninth year, he was succeeded by his son Timur Khan, or, as he was otherwise called, Uldsheitu Khan. The reign of this sovereign was chiefly remarkable for the healing of the division which had for thirty years separated the families of Ogdai and Jagatai from that of the ruling khakan. Uldsheitu was succeeded by his nephew Khaissan. In accordance with the usual ceremony, on the election being~~

~~*announced four of the princes of the blood raised the new khakan aloft on a piece of white felt, two others supported him, while a seventh offered him the cup. ‘ Meanwhile, while Shaman offered up prayers for his prosperity and saluted him by the title of Kuluk Khan, carts full of gold pieces and rich tissues were brought out and distributed. So many pearls were spread on the ground that it resembled the sky. The feast lasted a week, during each day of which 40 oxen and 4000 sheep were consumed. Libations of milk from 700 sacred cows and 7000 ewes were sprinkled on the ground.” With that tolerance which so markedly char- acterized the Mongols at this period, Kuluk worshipped indiscriminately at the temples of the Chinese Shang-te and before the Buddhist shrines, while at the same time he lent a favourable countenance to John of Montecorvino, who, during the whole of his reign, was archbishop of Peking. Unfortunately the archbishop was not so tolerant as the khakan, and carried on as fierce a dispute with the Nestorian Christians of his day as that which divided the Dominicans and Jesuits in China three centuries later. After a short reign, and at the early age of thirty-one, Kuluk was gathered to his fathers in February 1311. His nephew and successor, Buyantu, was a man of considerable culture, and substantially patronized Chinese literature. Among other benefits which he conferred on letters, he rescued the celebrated inscription-bearing “stone drums,” which are commonly said to be of the Chow period (B.c, 1122- 255), from the decay and ruin to which they were left by the last emperor of the Kin dynasty, and placed them in the gateway of the temple of Confucius at Peking, where they now stand. After a reign of nine years Buyantu was succeeded by his son Gegen, who perished in 1323 by the knife of an assassin,—the first occasion on which a reigning descendant of Jenghiz Khan thus met his fate. Yissun Timur, who was the next sovereign, devoted himself mainly to the administration of his empire. He divided China, which until that time had been apportioned into twelve*~~

~~*| provinces, into eighteen provinces, and rearranged the*~~

~~*Toghon Timur Khan.*~~

~~*MONGOLS*~~

~~*system of state granaries, which had fallen into disorder. His court was visited by Friar Odoric, who gives a minute description of the palace and its inhabitants. Speaking of the palace this writer says—*~~

~~*'Its basement was raised about two paces from the ground, and within there were twenty-four columns of gold, and all the walls were hung with skins of red leather, said to be the finest in the world. In the midst of the palace was a great jar more than two paces in height, made of a certain precious stone called merdacas (jade) ; its price exceeded the value of four large towns. . . . Into this vessel drink was conducted by certain conduits from the court of the palace, and beside it were many golden goblets, from which those drank who listed. . . . When the khakan sat on his throne, the queen was on his left hand, and a step lower two others of his women, while at the bottom of the steps stood the other ladies of his family. All those who were married wore upon their heads the foot of a man as it were a cubit and a half in length, and at the top of the foot there were certain cranes' feathers, the whole foot being set with great pearls, so that if there were in the whole world any fine and large pearls they were to be found in the decoration of those ladies."*~~

~~*The following years were years of great natural and political convulsions. Devastating floods swept over China, carrying death and ruin to thousands of homes ; earthquakes made desolate whole districts ; and in more than one part of the empire the banners of revolt were unfurled. The khakans who now successively occupied the throne, instead of striving to stem the tide of discontent and disorder, gave themselves up to every kind of debauchery. As a natural consequence, the conduct of affairs fell entirely into the hands of their ministers, who but too often reflected the vices of their sovereigns. A comet which appeared in the reign of Toghon Timur Khan, and which was believed to be the precursor of fresh disasters to the reigning house, justified the prediction by being almost immediately fol- lowed by an earthquake, which overthrew the temple of the Imperial Ancestors, from the altars of which, as if to complete the misfortune, the silver tablets of the emperors were in the consequent confusion stolen. It was not long before the popular discontent found vent. In order to prevent the recurrence of the periodical inundations caused by the overflow of the Yellow river, the emperor*~~

ordered a levy of 70,000 men to excavate a new channel for its dangerous stream, and imposed a heavy tax to meet the necessary expenses. These oppressive edicts overstrained the patience of the people, and they broke into open re- bellion. Under various leaders the rebels captured a number of cities in the provinces of Keang-nan and Honan, and took possession of Hang-chow, the capital of the Sung emperors. At the same time pirates ravaged the coasts and swept the imperial vessels off the sea. While these combined disorders were disturbing the country, the emperor, under the guidance of Tibetan Lamas, was being initiated into the sensual enjoyments peculiar to the warmer climates of Asia.

In 1355 a Buddhist priest named Choo Yuen-chang became so impressed with the misery of his countrymen that he threw off his vestments and enrolled himself in the rebel army. His military genius soon raised him to the position of a leader, and with extraordinary success he overcame with his rude levies the trained legions of the Mongol emperor. While unable to defeat or check the rebels in the central provinces Toghon Timur was also called upon to face a rebellion in Corea. Nor were his arms more fortunate in the north than in the south. An

khakan will lose his empire." The fulfilment followed closely on the prophecy. By a subterfuge, the rebels, after having gained possession of most of the central provinces of the empire, captured Peking. But Toghon Timur by a hasty flight escaped from his enemies, and sought safety on the shores of the Dolonor in Mongolia. For a time the western provinces of China continued to hold out against the rebels, but with the flight of Toghon Timur the Mon- gol troops lost heart, and in 1368 the ex-Buddhist priest ascended the throne as the first sovereign of the Ming or "Bright" dynasty, under the title of Hung-woo.

Thus ended the sovereignty of the house of Jenghiz Khan in China, nor need we look far to find the cause of its fall. Brave and hardy the Mongols have always shown themselves to be; but the capacity for consolidating the fruits of victory, for establishing a settled form of govern- ment, and for gaining the allegiance of the conquered peoples, have invariably been wanting in them. For a time their prowess and the

~~*exceptional ability of some of the first emperors of their line held the people of China in a bondage which was only outwardly peaceful, and, when the hands which held the reins lost their nervous power, and the troops, enervated by the softer climate of China, lost much of their hardihood, the long pent-up hatred of a foreign yoke broke out and with gathering strength drove the invaders back to their Mongolian pasture-grounds.*~~

~~*Not content with having recovered China, the emperor Hung-woo sent an army of 400,000 men into Mongolia in pursuit of the forces which yet remained to the khakan. Even on their own ground the disheartened Mongols failed in their resistance to the Chinese, and at all points suffered disaster. Meanwhile Toghon Timur, who did not long survive his defeat, was succeeded in the khakanate by Biliktu Khan, who again in 1379 was followed by Ussakhal Khan. During the reign of this last prince the Chinese again invaded Mongolia, and inflicted a crushing defeat on the khan's forces in the neighbour- hood of Lake Buyur. Besides the slain, 2994 officers and 77,000 soldiers are said to have been taken prisoners, and an immense booty to have been secured. This defeat was the final ruin of the eastern branch of the Mongols, who from this time surrendered the supremacy to the western division of the tribe. At first the Keraits or Torgod, as in the early days before Jenghiz Khan rose to power, exercised lordship over the eastern Mongols, but from these before long the supremacy passed to the Oirad, who for fifty years treated them as vassals. Not- withstanding their subjection, however, the Keraits still preserved the imperial line, and khakan after khakan assumed the nominal sovereignty of the tribe, while the real power rested with the descendants of Toghon, the Oirad chief, who had originally attached them to his sceptre. Gradually, however, the Mongol tribes broke away from all governing centres, and established scattered communities with as many chiefs over the whole of eastern Mongolia. The discredit of having finally disin- tegrated the tribe is generally attached to Lingdan Khan (1604-1634), of whom, in reference to his arrogant and brutal character, has been quoted the Mongolian proverb : "A raging khakan disturbs the state, and a raging saghan (elephant) overthrows his keepers."*~~

~~*At this time the Mongols, though scattered and in The*~~

~~*army which was sent to suppress the revolt was cut to isolated bodies, had recovered somewhat from the shock Cha-*~~

~~*pieces almost to a man. These events made a dream Fret Khars.*~~

~~*which the emperor dreamt about this time of easy inter- pretation. He saw in his sleep "a wild boar with iron tusks rush into the city and wound the people, who were driven hither and thither without finding shelter. Mean-while the sun and the moon rushed together and perished." "This dream," said the diviner, "is a prophecy that the*~~

~~*of the disaster which they suffered at the hand of the Ming sovereign of China. When first driven northwards, they betook themselves to the banks of the Kerulon, from whence they had originally started on their victorious career; but gradually, as the Chinese power became weaker among the frontier tribes, they again pushed southwards,*~~

~~and at this time had established colonies in the Ordus country, within the northern bend of the Yellow river. The Mongol royal family and their immediate surroundings occupied the Chakhar country to the north-west of the Ordus territory, where they became eventually subjugated by the Manchus on the overthrow of the Ming dynasty in 1644 by the present rulers of China. Possibly out of~~

~~China which sprang up after the wars of Altan, began to effect a change in the manner of life of the people. By degrees the pastoral habits of the inhabitants became more agricultural, and at the present day, asin Manchuria, Chinese immigrants have so stamped their mark on the fields and markets, on the towns and villages, that the country has become to all intents and purposes part of China proper.~~

~~Passing now from the inner division of the Mongols—that The is to say, the Chakhars and the 49 banners who live in the Khal- southern and eastern portions of the desert—we come to the aii~~

~~consideration for the royal descent of their chiefs, the Chinese emperors have invariably placed these Mongols in a privileged position, and have incorporated the eight~~

~~banners or military divisions of the Chakhars as one of the eight banners of the imperial Manchu army. The remaining Mongols who submitted to the Manchus were divided into 135 banners, 49 representing all those on the south-east of the desert, and 86 the Khalkhas, whose territory stretched along the north of the desert from the neighbourhood of Barkhul on the west to the Dalai- nor on the north-east. From and before this period the history of the eastern Mongols has been that of all the nomad tribes of central Asia, about which nothing can be more certainly said than that that which appears most improbable is most likely to happen, and that that which might naturally be expected rarely occurs. Each tribe, as its fortunes varied, either rose to power or sank into~~

~~*insignificance. At times the old vigour and strength which had nerved the arm of Jenghiz Khan seemed to return to the tribe, and we read of successful expeditions being made by the Ordu Mongols into Tibet, and even of invasions into China. The relations with Tibet thus inaugurated brought about a rapid spread of Buddhism among the Mongolians, and in the beginning of the 17th century the honour of having a Dalai Lama born among them was vouchsafed to them. In 1625 Toba, one of the sons of Bushuktu Jinung Khan, went on a pilgrimage to the Dalai Lama, and brought back with him a copy of the Tanjur to be translated into Mongolian, as the Kanjur had already been. But though the prowess of the Ordu Mongols was still unsubdued, their mode of living was as barren and rugged as the steppes and rocky hills which make up their territory. Their flocks and herds, on which they are entirely dependent for food and clothing, are not numerous, and, like their masters, are neither well fed nor well favoured. But though living in this miserable condi- tion their princes yet keep up a certain amount of barbaric state, and the people have at least the reputation of being honest. Several of the tribes who had originally migrated with those who finally settled in the Ordu territory, finding the country to be so inhospitable, moved farther eastward into richer pastures. Among these were the Tumeds, one of whose chiefs, Altan Khan, is famous in later Mongol his- tory for the power he acquired. For many years during the 16th century he carried on a not altogether unsuccessful war with China, and finally, when peace was made (1571), the Chinese were fain to create him a prince of the empire and to confer a golden seal of authority upon him. In Tibet his arms were as successful as in China; but, as has often happened in history, the physical conquerors became the mental subjects of the conquered. Lamaism has always had a great attraction in the eyes of the Mongols, and, through the instrumentality of some Lamaist prisoners whom Altan brought back in his train, the religion spread at this time rapidly among the Tumeds. Altan himself embraced the faith, and received at his court the Bogda Sodnam Gyamtso Khutuktu, on whom he lavished every token of honour. One immediate effect of the introduction of Buddhism among the Tumeds was to put an end to the sacrifices which were commonly made at the grave of their chieftains. In 1584 Altan died, and was succeeded by his son Senge Dugureng Timur. The rich territory occupied by the Tumeds, together with the increased intercourse with*~~

~~*outer division, which is divided into 86 banners, and occupies the territory to the north of the desert. Of these the chief are the Khalkhas, who are divided into the West- ern and Eastern Khalkhas. These people form the link of communication between Europe and eastern Asia. Early in the 17th century the Russians sent an embassy to the court of the Golden Khan with the object of persuading the Mongol khan to acknowledge allegiance to the czar. This he did without much hesitation or inquiry, and he fur- ther despatched envoys to Moscow on the return of the Russian embassy. But the allegiance thus lightly acknow- ledged was lightly thrown off, and in a quarrel which broke out between the Khirghiz and the Russians the Khalkhas took the side of the former. The breach, however, was soon healed over, and we find the Golden Khan sending an envoy again to Moscow, asking on behalf of his master for presents of jewels, arms, a telescope, a clock, and ‘“‘a monk who had been to Jerusalem that he might teach the Khalkhas how the Christians prayed.” Their submission to Russia on the north did not save them, however, from the Chinese attacks on the south. In central Asia, as the recent history of Russia in that part of the world shows, the depredations of a tribe on the property of its neighbours supply a ready cause of quarrel at any moment, and the Chinese had no difficulty, therefore, in justifying an invasion of the Khalkha territory. At that time the present Manchu dynasty ruled in China, and to the then reigning sovereign the Khalkhas gave in their submission. For some time the Chinese yoke sat lightly on their consciences, but difficulties having arisen with the Kal- muks, they were ready enough to claim the protection of China. To cement the alliance the emperor K’ang-he invited all the Khalkha chiefs to meet him at the plain of Dolonor. This ceremony brought the separate history of the Khalkhas to a close, since from that time they have been engulfed in the Chinese empire.*~~

~~*Another important branch of the great Mongolian family is the tribe of the Koshod or Eleuths. These claim that their chieftains have maintained unbroken the direct descent from Khassar, a brother of Jenghiz Khan. Their home is in the neighbourhood of the K6k6-n6r, and in the country to the north of the narrow strip of the Kansuh province which separates that district from Mongolia proper. The pasture in the territories thus indicated is rich and abund- ant, and the Eleuths have therefore had*~~

~~fewer temptations to wander than most of their cognate tribes. Being thus stationary and within a short distance of the Chinese fron- tier, they easily fell under the dominion of that empire, and in the year 1725 were incorporated into 29 imperial banners.~~

~~During the Kin dynasty of China the Keraits, as has been pointed out, were for a time supreme in Mongolia, and it was during that period that one of the earliest recognized sovereigns, Merghus Buyuruk Khan, sat on the throne. In an engagement with a neighbouring Tatar tribe their khan was captured and sent as a propitia- tory present to the Kin emperor, who put him to death by nailing him on a wooden ass. On the treacherous Tatar chief the widow determined to avenge herself, and chose the occasion of a feast as a fitting opportunity. With well-disguised friendship she sent him a present of~~

~~ten oxen, a hundred sheep, and a hundred sacks of kumiss. These last, however, instead of being filled with skins of the liquor which Mongolians love so well, contained armed men, who, when the Tatar was feasted, rushed from their concealment and killed him. A grandson of Merghus was the celebrated Wang Khan,who was sometimes the ally and sometimes the enemy of Jenghiz Khan, and has also been identified as the Prester John of early Western writers. In war he was almost invariably unfortunate, and it was with no great difficulty, therefore, that his brother Ki Wang detached the greater part of the Kerait tribes from his banner, and founded the Torgod chieftainship, named probably from * the country where they-settled themselves. The unrest peculiar to the dwellers in the Mongolian desert disturbed the Torgod as much as their neighbours. Their history for several centuries consists of nothing but a succession of wars with the tribes on either side of them, and it was not until 1672, when Ayuka Khan opened relations with the Russians, that the country obtained an even temporarily settled existence. Its position, indeed, at this time made it necessary that Ayuka should ally himself either with the Russians or with his southern neighbours the Turks, though at the same time it was obvious that his alliance with the one would bring him into collision with the other. HIs northern neighbours,~~

~~*the Cossacks of the Yaik and the Bashkirs, both subject to Russia, had the not uncommon propensity for invading his borders and harassing his sub- jects. This gave rise to complaints of the czar's govern- ment and a disposition to open friendly relations with the Krim khan. A rupture with Russia followed, and Ayuka carried his arms as far as Kasan, burning and laying waste thevillages and towns on his route and carrying off prisoners and spoils, Satisfied with this vengeance, he advanced no farther, but made a peace with the Russians, which was confirmed in 1722 at an audience which Peter the Great gave him at Astrakhan. On Ayuka's death shortly after this event, he was succeeded by his son Cheren Donduk, who received from the Dalai Lama a patent to the throne. But this spiritual support availed him little against the plots of his nephew Donduk Ombo, who so completely gained the suffrages of the people that Cheren Donduk fled before him to St Petersburg, where he died, leaving his nephew in possession. With consummate impartiality the Russians, when they found that Donduk' Ombo had not only seized the throne but was governing the country with vigour and wisdom, formally invested him with the khanate. At his death he was succeeded by Donduk Taishi, who, we are told, went to Moscow to attend the coronation of the empress Elizabeth, and to swear fealty to the Russians. After a short reign he died, and his throne was occupied by his son Ubasha. The position of the Torgod at this time, hemmed in as they were between the Russians and Turks, was rapidly becoming unbearable, and the question of migrating "bag and baggage" was very generally mooted. In the war between his two power- ful neighbours in 1769 and 1770, Ubasha gave valuable assistance to the Russians. HIs troops took part in the siege of Otchakoff, and gained a decided victory on the Kalans. Flushed with these successes, he was in no mood to listen patiently to the taunts of the governor of Astrakhan, who likened him to a "bear fastened to a chain," and he made up his mind to break away once and for all from a tutelage which was as galling as it was oppressive. HIe determined, therefore, to migrate eastward with his people, and on the 5th of January 1771 he began his march with 70,000 families. In vain the Russians attempted to recall the fugitives, who, in spite of infinite hardships, after a journey of eight months reached the province of Ili, where they were welcomed by the Chinese authorities. Food for a year's consumption was supplied to each family ;*~~

and land, money, and cattle were freely distributed. How many lost their lives on the toilsome march it is impos- sible to say, but it is believed that 300,000 persons sur- vived to receive the hospitality of the Chinese. This migration is interesting as illustrating the many displace- ments of tribes and peoples which have taken place on

the continent of Asia at different periods of history. Such

another migration occurred between four and five thousand years ago, when the Chinese crossed from western Asia into their present empire ; such, again, was the movement which carried the Osmanli Turks from north-eastern Asia into Asia Minor, and eventually across the Bosphorus. By this desperate venture the Torgod escaped, it is true, the oppression of the Russians, but. they fell into the hands of other masters, who, if not so exacting, were equally de- termined to be supreme. The Chinese, flattered by the compliment implied by the transference of allegiance, settled them on lands in the province of Ili, in the neigh- bourhood of the Altai Mountains, and to the west of the desert of Gobi. But the price they were made to pay for this liberality was absorption in the Chinese empire. Like the other Chinese-subdued Mongols, the Torgod were divided into banners, and from that time forth they lost their individuality.

Among the Mongol chiefs who rose to fame during the rule of the Ming dynasty of China was Toghon, the Kal- muk khan, who, taking advantage of the state of confusion which reigned among the tribes of Mongolia, established for himself an empire in north-western Asia. Death carried him off in 1444, and his throne devolved upon his son Ye-seen, who was no degenerate offspring. Being without individual foes in Mongolia for the same reason that Narvaez had no enemies—namely, that he had killed them all—he turned his arms against China, which through all history has been the happy hunting-ground of the northern tribes, and had the unexampled good fortune to take prisoner the Chinese emperor Ching- tung. But victory did not always decide in his favour, and, after having suf- fered reverses at the hands of the Chinese, he deemed it wise to open negotiations for the restoration of his imperial prisoner. Thus, after a captivity of seven years, Ching- tung re-entered his capital in 1457, not

~~*altogether to the general satisfaction of his subjects. On the death of Ye-seen, shortly after this event, the Kalmuks lost much of their power in eastern Asia, but retained enough in other por- tions of their territory to annoy the Russians by raids within the Russian frontier, and by constant acts of pillage. In the 17th century their authority was partly restored by*~~

~~*Galdan, a Lama, who succeeded by the usual combination Galdan of wile and violence to the throne of his brother Senghé, Khan.*~~

~~*Having been partly educated at Lhasa, he was well versed in Asiatic politics, and, taking advantage of a quarrel be- tween the Black and White Mountaineers of Kashgar, he overran Little Bokhara, and left a viceroy to rule over the province with his capital at Yarkand. At the same time he opened relations with China, and exchanged presents with the emperor. Having thus secured his powerful southern neighbour, as he thought, he turned his arms against the Khalkhas, whose chief ground of offence was their attachment to the cause of his brothers. But his rest- less ambition created alarm at Peking, and the emperor K'ang-he determined to protect the Khalkhas against their enemy. Great preparations were made for the campaign. The emperor, in person commanding one of the two forces, marched into Mongolia. After enduring incredible hard- ships during the march through the desert of Gobi the im- perial army encountered the Kalmuks at Chao-modo. The engagement was fiercely contested, but ended in the com- plete victory of the Chinese, who pursued the Kalmuks for 10 miles, and completely dispersed their forces. Immense XVI — 94*~~

~~=~~

~~*746*~~

~~*numbers were slain, among whom was Galdan's wife, and many thousands surrendered themselves to the victors. Galdan, with his son, daughter, and a few followers, fled westward and escaped ; and thus collapsed a power which had threatened at one time to overshadow the whole of Cen- tral Asia. For a time Galdan still maintained a semblance of resistance to his powerful enemy, and death overtook him while yet in the field against the Chinese. The news of his death was received with*~~

~~*great rejoicings at Peking. Theemperor held a special service of thanksgiving to Heaven for the deliverance vouchsafed, and ordered that the ashes of his enemy, whose body had been burned, should be brought to the capital and there scattered to the four winds. The fear which had been thus inspired was no idle terror. Galdan was a man to be feared. The conqueror of Samarkand, Bokhara, Urgenj, Kashgar, Hami, and twelve hundred other towns, might well be considered a formidable foe, and Heaven a merciful deliverer in ridding Asia of so restless and dangerous a chieftain.*~~

~~*But though Galdan was dead the Chinese did not enjoy that complete immunity from war at the hand of his suc- cessor that they had looked for. Tse-wang Arabtan was, however, but the shadow of his brother and predecessor, and a dispute which arose with the Russians during his reign weakened his power in other directions. Little Bok- hara was said to be rich in gold mines, and therefore be- came a coveted region in the eyes of the Russians. Under the vigorous administration of Peter the Great an expedi- tion was despatched to force a passage into the desired province. To oppose this invasion the Kalmuks assembled in force, and after a protracted and undecided engagement the Russians were glad to agree to retire down the Irtish and to give up all further advance.*~~

~~*To Tse-wang Arabtan succeeded Amursama owing to the support he received from the Chinese emperor K'een- lung, who nominated him khan of the Kalmuks and chief of Sungaria. But, though to the ear these titles were as high-sounding as those of his predecessors, in reality the power they represented was curtailed by the presence of Chinese commissioners, in whose hands rested the real authority. The galling weight of this state of dependence drove Amursama before long into revolt. He dispersed the Chinese garrisons stationed in Ili, killed the generals, and advanced his own forces as far as Palikun on the river Ili. To punish this revolt, K'een-lung sent a large force into the rebellious province, As on the previous occa- sion, the Chinese were everywhere victorious, and Amursama fled into Siberia, where he died of smallpox after a short illness. The Chinese demanded his body, but the Russians refused to give it up, though they allowed the Chinese commissioners to identify it. On the death of Amursama, K'een-lung determined to abolish*~~

~~*the khanate, and' in place of it he nominated four Hans to rule over the Sungars, the Torgod, the Khoshod, and the Dorbéd. But this divided authority proved quite as unmanageable as that which had been wielded by the khan, and the new rulers soon at- tempted to throw off the yoke imposed upon them from Peking. Again a Chinese army marched into Ih, and this time a severe measure of repression was meted out to the rebels and their sympathizers. A general massacre of the Kalmuks was ordered, and was faithfully carried out. The province which had been as a fruitful field was utterly wrecked, and the place of the Sungars was taken by exiled criminals from China.*~~

~~*But while China was thus absorbing the Mongols within her reach, Russia was gathering within her borders those with whom she came into contact. Among these were the Buriats, who occupied a large territory on both sides of the Baikal Lake. As usual in such cases, disputes arose out of disturbances on the frontier, and were ended by*~~

~~*M ON' G"O8L*~~

~~*the Buriats and the neighbouring Mongol tribes becom- ing one and all tributary to Russia.*~~

~~*Of the Mongol tribes who became entirely subject to The Russia the principal are those of the Crimea, of Kasan, and Golden of Astrakhan ; of these the Tatars of Kasan are the truest Higule.*~~

~~*representatives of the Golden Horde or Kipchaks, who originally formed the subjects of Batu and Orda. Batu, whose victorious campaign in Russia has already been sketched, was finally awarded as his fief the vast steppes which stretch from the Carpathian Mountains to the Balkash Lake. Over these vast plains the Mongols followed their flocks and herds, while the more settled among them established themselves along the banks of the rivers which flow through that region. Batu himself fixed his head- quarters on the Volga, and there set up his Golden Tent from which the horde acquired the name of the Golden Horde. In 1255 Batu died and was succeeded by his brother Bereke Khan. During the reign of this sovereign the exactions which were demanded from the Russian Christians by the Mongols aroused the Christian world against the*~~

~~barbarian conquerors, and at the command of Pope Alexander IV. a general crusade was preached against them. But though the rage of the Christians was great, they lacked that united energy which might have availed them against their enemies ; and, while they were yet breathing out denuncia- tions, a Tatar host, led by Nogai and Tulabagha, appeared in Poland. After a rapid and triumphant march, the in- vaders took and destroyed Cracow, and from thence ad- vanced as far as Bythom in Oppeln, from which point they eventually retired, carrying with them a crowd of Christian slaves. From this time the Mongols became for a season an important factor in European politics. They corresponded and treated with the European sovereigns, and intermarried with royal families. Hulagu, the famous general, married a daughter of Michael Paleologus ; Toktu Khan took as his wife Maria, the daughter of Andronicus IT. ; and to Nogai Michael betrothed his daughter Irene. But Bereke's in- fluence extended beyond Europe into Egypt, from which country, as well as from Constantinople, he secured the services of artisans to build him dwellings of a more substantial nature than that of his Golden Tent. But his widely extending intercourse with foreign nations brought in its train a consequence which tended fatally to under- mine the existence of the horde. His conversion to Islam introduced a strongly disintegrating influence into the com- munity, and with it were sown the seeds of its final dis- ruption. Bereke was succeeded on his death in 1265 by his grandson Mangu Timur, who throughout his reign was con- stantly engaged in hostilities with the Russians and his other European neighbours. The Genoese alone found under his patronage a means of advancing their possessions. For some time these people had held large colonies in southern Russia, and in the Crimea had divided the trade with the Venetians. By the support of Mangu Timur these last were driven out of the field, and the Genoese were left in the enjoyment of a monopoly of the commerce. The reigns of the khans who succeeded Mangu Timur were no less stormy than his had been; but even in these troublous times the influences which surrounded the Mongols led them onward in the path of civilization. Toktu, the next khan but one to Mangu Timur, is the first Mongol ruler whom we hear of as having struck coins. Those issued during his reign bear the mint marks of Sarai, New Sarai, Bulgar, Ukek, Kharezm, Krim, Jullad, and Madjarui, and vary in date from 1291 to 1312.~~

~~*The adoption of Islam by the rulers of the Golden Horde had as one result the drawing closer of the relations of the Mongols with Constantinople and Egypt. Embassies passed between the three courts, and so important was the alliance with the Mongols deemed by the sultan Nasir,*~~

~~*| Eastern | Kipchak.*~~

~~*mONGO LS*~~

~~*ruler of Egypt, that he sent to demand in marriage a princess of the house of Jenghiz Khan. At first his request was refused by the proud Mongols, but the present of a million gold dinars, besides a number of horses and suits of armour, changed the refusal into an acquiescence, and in October 1319 the princess landed at Alexandria in regal state. Her reception at Cairo was accompanied with feasting and rejoicing, and the members of her escort were sent back laden with presents. With that religious toleration common to his race, Uzbeg Khan, having married one princess to Nasir, gave another in marriage to George the prince of Moscow, whose cause he espoused in a quarrel existing between that prince and his uncle, the grand- prince Michael. Assuming the attitude of a judge in the dispute, Uzbeg Khan summoned Michael to appear before him, and, having given his decision against him, ordered his execution. The sentence was carried out with aggravated cruelty in sight of his nephew and accuser. From this time Uzbeg's sympathies turned towards Christianity. He protected the Russian churches within his frontiers, and put his seal to his new religious views by marrying a daughter of the Greek emperor, Andronicus III. He died in 1340, after a reign of twenty-eight years. His coins were struck at Sarai, Kharezm, Mokshi, Bulgar, Azak, and Krim, and are dated from 1313 to 1340. His son and successor, Tinibeg Khan, after a reign of only a few months, was murdered byhis brother Janibeg Khan, who usurped his throne, and, according to the historian Ibn Haidar, proved himself to be 'just, God-fearing, and the patron of the meritorious." These excellent qualities did not, however, prevent his making a raid into Poland, which was conducted in the usual Mongol manner, nor did they save his country- men from being decimated by the black plague, which for the first time in 1345 swept over*~~

~~*Asia and Europe, from the confines of China to Parisand London. With all their love of war the Mongols had a keen eye to monetary advantage, and Janibeg, who was no exception to the rule, concluded treaties with the merchant-princes of Venice and Genoa, in which the minute acquaintance displayed with shipping dues and customs charges shows how great were the advances the Mongols had made in their knowledge of European commerce since the days of Jenghiz Khan. The throne Janibeg had seized by violence was, in 1357, snatched from him by violence. As he lay ill on his return from a successful expedition against Persia he was murdered by*~~

~~*his son Berdibeg, who in his turn was, after a short reign,*~~

~~*murdered by dis son Kulpa. With the death of Berdibeg the fortunes of the Golden Horde began rapidly to decline. As the Uzbeg proverb says, —"The hump of the camel was cut off in the person of Berdibeg."*~~

~~*But while the power of the Golden Horde was dwin- dling away, the White Horde or Eastern Kipchak, which was the inheritance of the elder branck of the family of Juchi, remained prosperous and full of vitality. The descendants .of Orda, Batu's elder brother, being far re- moved from the dangerous influences of European courts, maintained much of the simplicity and vigour of their nomad ancestors, and the throne descended from father to son with undiminished authority until the reign of Urus Khan (1360), when complications arose which changed the fortunes of the tribe. Like many other opponents of the Mongol rulers, Khan Tuli Khoja paid with his life for his temerity in opposing the political schemes of his connexion Urus Khan. Toktamish, the son of the murdered man, fled at the news of his father's death and sought refuge at the court of the famous Timur-i-leng (Tamerlane), who received him with honour and at once agreed to espouse his cause. With this intention he despatched a force against Urus Khan, and gained some advantage over him, but, while fitting out another army to make a fresh attack,*~~

~~*news reached him of the death of Urus. Only at Sighnak are coins known to have been struck during the reign of Urus, and these bear date from*~~

~~*1372 to 1375.*~~

~~*He was followed on the throne by his two sons, Tuk-Tok- takia and Timur Malik, each in turn; the first reigned but tamish.*~~

~~*for a few weeks, and the second was killed in a battle against Toktamish, the son of his father's enemy. Tok- tamish now seized the throne, not only of Eastern Kipchak but also of the Golden Horde, over which his arms had at the same time proved victorious. His demands for trib- ute from the Russian princes met with evasions from men who had grown accustomed to the diminished power of the later rulers of the Golden Horde, and Toktamish therefore at once marched an army into Russia. Having captured Serpukhoff, he advanced on Moscow. On the 23d August 1382 his troops appeared before the doomed city. For some days the inhabitants bravely withstood the constant attacks on the walls, but failed in their resistance to the stratagems which were so common a phase in Mongolian warfare. With astonishing credulity they opened the gates to the Mongols, who declared themselves the enemies of the grand-prince alone, and not of the people. The usual result followed. The Russian general, who was invited to Toktamish's tent, was there slain, and at the same time the signal was given for a general slaughter. Without dis- criminating age or sex, the Mongol troops butchered the wretched inhabitants without mercy, and, having made the streets desolate and the houses tenantless, they first*~~

~~*plundered the city and then gave it over to the flames.*~~

~~*The same pitiless fate overtook Vladimir, Zvenigorod, Yurieff, Mozhaisk, and Dimitroff. With better fortune, the inhabitants of Pereslavl and Kolomna escaped with their lives from the troops of Toktamish, but at the expense of their cities, which were burned to the ground. Satisfied with his conquests, the khan returned homewards, travers- ing and plundering the principality of Riazan on his way. Flushed with success, Toktamish demanded from his patron Timur the restoration of Kharezm, which had fallen into the hands of the latter at a period when disorder reigned in the Golden Horde. Such a request was not likely to be well received by Timur, and, in answer to his positive refusal to yield the city, Toktamish marched an army of 90,000 men against Tabriz. After a siege of eight days the city was taken by assault and ruthlessly ravaged. Meanwhile Timur was*~~

~~collecting forces to punish his rebellious protégé. When his plans were fully matured, he advanced upon Old Urgenj and captured it. More merci- ful than Toktamish, he transported the inhabitants to Samarkand, but in order to mark his anger against the rebellious city he levelled it with the ground and sowed barley on the site where it had stood. On the banks of the Oxus he encountered his enemy, and after a bloody battle completely routed the Kipchaks, who fled in confu- sion. A lull followed this victory, but in 1390 Timur again took the field. To each man was given "a bow, with thirty arrows, a quiver, and a buckler. Thearmy was mounted, and a spare horse was supplied to every two men, while a tent was furnished for every ten, and with this were two spades, a pickaxe, a sickle, a saw, an axe, an awl, a hundred needles, 84 ib of cord, an ox's hide, and a strong pan." Thus equipped the army set forth on its march. After a considerable delay owing to an illness which over- took Timur his troops arrived at Kara Saman. Here envoys arrived from Toktamish bearing presents and a message asking pardon for his past conduct; but Timur was inexorable, and, though he treated the messengers with consideration, he paid no attention to their prayer. In face of innumerable difficulties, as well as of cold, hunger, and weariness, Timur marched forward month after month through the Kipchak country in pursuit of Toktamish. At~~

~~last, on the 18th of June, he overtook him at Kandurcha, in the country of the Bulgars, and at once forced him to an engagement. For three days the battle lasted, and after inclining now to this side and now to that victory finally de- cided in favour of Timur. The Kipchaks were completely routed and fied in all directions, while it is said as many as 100,000 corpses testified to the severity of the fighting. Timur pursued his flying enemy as far as the Volga, slaughtering all who fell into his hands, and ravaged and destroyed the towns of Sarai, Saraichuk, and Astrakhan. Having inflicted this terrible blow on the Golden Horde, Timur distributed rewards to his chieftains, and presided at a series of banquets in celebration of his victory. These rejoicings over, he returned to Samarkand laden with spoils and trophies. But Toktamish, though defeated, was not subdued, and in 1395 Timur found it necessary again to undertake a campaign against~~

~~*him. This time the armies met upon the Terek, and after a fiercely-contested battle the Kipchaks again fled in confusion. When the victory was gained, Timur, we are told, knelt down on the field and returned thanks to Heaven for his success. The pur- suit along the Volga was vigorously undertaken, and the slaughter among the fugitives was terrible. The hurried advance of Timur's horsemen threw the Russians into a state of wild alarm, and the grand-prince of Moscow ordered that an ancient image of the Virgin which was believed to possess miraculous power should be taken to Moscow to save that city from the destroyer. Success appeared to attend this measure, for Timur, threatened by the advancing autumn, gave up all further pursuit, and retired with a vast booty of gold ingots, silver bars, pieces of Antioch linen and of the embroidered cloth of Russia, &c. On his homeward march southwards he arrived before Azak, which was then the entrepdt where the merchants of the east and west exchanged their wares. In vain the natives, with the Egyptian, Venetian, Genoese, Catalan, and Basque inhabitants, besought him to spare the city. His answer was a command to the Moslems to separate themselves from the rest of the people, whom he put to the sword, and then gave the city over to the flames. Circassia and Georgia next felt his iron heel, and the fastnesses of the central Caucasus were one and all destroyed. After these successes Timur gave himself up for a time to feasting and rejoicing, accompanied by every manifestation of Oriental luxury. " His tent of audience was hung with silk, its poles were golden, or probably covered with golden plates, the nails being silver ; his throne was of gold, enriched with precious stones; the floor was sprinkled with rose water." But his vengeance was not satisfied, and, having refreshed his troops by this halt, he marched northwards against Astrakhan, which he utterly destroyed. The inhabitants were driven out into the country to perish with the cold, while the commander of the city was killed by being forced beneath the ice of the Volga. Sarai next shared the same fate, and Timur, having thus crushed for the second time the empire of Toktamish, set out on his return home by way of Derbend and Azerbijan. The defeated khan succeeded shortly afterwards in recapturing Sarai; but, being again driven out, he retired in 1398 to Kieff, a fugitive from his king- dom. During his reign, which lasted for twenty-four years, he struck coins at Kharezm, Krim, New Krim, Azak, Sarai, New Sarai, Saraichuk, and Astrakhan. The power in the hands of the successors of Toktamish*~~

~~never revived after the last campaign of Timur. They were constantly engaged in wars with the Russians and the Krim Tatars, with whom the Russians had allied themselves, and by degrees their empire decayed, until, on the seizure and death of Ahmed Khan at the beginning of the 16th cen- tury, the domination of the Golden Horde came to an end.~~

~~MONGOUS~~

~~One solitary fragment of the Golden Horde, the khanate of Astrakhan, maintained for a time an existence after the fall of the central power. But even this last remnant ceased to be a Mongol apanage in 1554, when it was captured by the Russians and converted into a Russian province. 'The fate which thus overtook the Golden Horde was destined to be shared by all the western branches of the great Mongol family. The khans of Kasan and Kasimoff had already in 1552 succumbed to the growing power of Russia, and the fall under the same yoke. the Krim Tatars first appear as an independent power, they attempted to strengthen their position by allying themselves with the Russians, to whom they looked for help against the attacks of the Golden Horde. But while they were in this state of dependence another power arose in eastern Asia which modified the political events of that region. In 1453 Constantinople was taken by the Osmanli Turks, who, having quarrelled with the Genoese merchants who monopolized the trade on the Euxine, sent an expedition into the Crimea to punish the presumptuous traders. The power which had captured Constantinople was not likely to be held in check by any forces at the disposal of the Genoese, and without any serious opposi- tion Kaffa, Sudak, Balaclava, and Inkerman fell before the troops of the sultan Mohammed. It was plain that, situated as the Crimea was between the two great powers of Russia and Turkey, it must of necessity fall under the direction of one of them. Which it should be was decided by the invasion of the Turks, who restored Mengli Girai, the deposed khan, to the throne, and virtually converted the khanate into a dependency of Constanti- nople. But though under the tutelage of Turkey, Mengli Girai, whose leading policy seems to have been the desire to strengthen himself against the khans of the Golden Horde, formed a close alliance with the grand-prince Ivan of Russia. One result of this friendship was that the Mongols were enabled, and encouraged, to indulge their predatory habits~~

~~*at the expense of the enemies of Russia, and in this way both Lithuania and Poland suffered terribly from their incursions. It was destined, however, that in their turn the Russians should not escape from the marauding tendencies of their allies, for, on pretext of a quarrel with reference to the succession to the Kasan throne, Mohammed Girai Khan in 1521 marched an army northwards until, after having devastated the country, massacred the people, and desecrated the churches on his route, he arrived at the heights of Vorobieff overlooking Moscow. 'The terror of the unfortunate inhabitants at the sight once again of the dreaded Mongols was extreme ; but the horrors which had accompanied similar past visitations were happily averted by a treaty, by which the grand-prince Vasili undertook to pay a perpetual trib- ute to the Krim khans. This, however, proved but a truce. It was impossible that an aggressive state like Russia should live in friendship with a marauding power like that of the — Krim Tatars. The primary cause of contention was the khanate of Kasan, which was recovered by the Mongols, and lost again to Russia with that of Astrakhan in 1555. The sultan, however, declined to accept this condition of things as final, and instigated Devlet Girai, the Krim khan, to attempt their recovery. With this object the latter marched an army northwards, where, finding the road to Moscow unprotected, he pushed on in the direction of that ill-starred city. On arriving before its walls he found a large Russian force occupying the suburbs. With these, however, he was saved from an encounter, for just as his foremost men approached the town a fire broke out, which, in consequence of the high wind blowing at the time, spread with frightful rapidity, and in the space*~~

~~*Krim Tatars were next to The In the 15th century, when Krim*~~

~~*MONGOLS*~~

~~*of six hours destroyed all the churches, palaces, and houses, with the exception of the Kremlin, within a compass of 30 miles. Thousands of the inhabitants perished in the flames. 'The river and ditches about Moscow," says Horsey, "' were stopped and filled with the multitudes of people, laden with gold, silver, jewels, chains, ear-rings, and treasures. So many thousands were there burned and drowned that the river could not be cleaned for twelve months afterwards." Satisfied with the destruction he*~~

~~*had indirectly caused, and unwilling to attack the Kremlin, the khan withdrew to the Crimea, ravaging the country as he went. Another invasion of Russia, a few years later (1572), was not so fortunate for the Mongols, who suffered a severe defeat near Molody, 50 versts from Moscow. A campaign against Persia made a diversion in the wars which were constantly waged between the Krim khan and the Russians, Cossacks, and Poles. So hardly were these last pressed by their per-tinacious enemies in 1649 that they bound themselves by treaty to pay an annual subsidy to the khan. But the fortunes of war were not always on the side of the Tatars, and with the advent of Peter the Great to the Russian throne the power of the Krim Mongols began to decline. In 1696 the czar, supported by a large Cossack force under Mazeppa, took the field against Selim Girai Khan, and gained such successes that the latter was compelled to cede Azoff to him. By a turn of the wheel of fortune the khan had the satisfaction in 1710 of having it restored to him by treaty ; but this was the last real success that attended the Tatar arms. In 1735 the Russians in their turn invaded the Crimea, captured the celebrated lines of Perekop, and ravaged Baghchi Serai, the capital. The inevitable fate which was hanging over the Krim Tatars was now being rapidly accomplished. In 1783 the Krim, together with the eastern portion of the land of the Nogais, became absorbed into the Russian province of Taurida.*~~

~~*Another branch of the Mongol family which requires mention is that of the Kazaks (see Kireuiz, vol. xiv. pp. 95, 96), whose ancient capital was Sighnak, which, as we have seen, passed into the hands of the great Timur. It will now only be necessary to refer briefly to the Uzbegs, who, on the destruction of the Golden Horde, assumed an important position on the east of the Caspian Sea. The founder of their greatness was the khan Abulkhair, who reigned in the 15th century, and who, like another Jenghiz Khan, consolidated a power out of a number of small clans, and added lustre to it by his successful wars. Sheibani Khan, his grandson, proved himself a worthy successor, and a doughty antagonist of the great Moghul emperor Baber. In 1500 he inflicted a severe defeat on Baber's forces, and captured Samarkand, Herat, and Kandahar. By these and other conquests he became possessed of all the country be- tween the Oxus and the Jaxartes, of Ferghana, Kharezm, and Hissar, as well as of*~~

~~*the territory of Tashkend from Kashgar to the frontiers of China. In the following year, by a dashing exploit, Baber recovered Samarkand, but only to lose it again a few months later. During several succeed- ing years Sheibani's arms proved victorious in many fields of battle, and but for an indiscreet outrage on the terri- tories of the shah of Persia he might have left behind him a powerful empire. The anger, however, of Shah Ismael roused against him a force before which he was destined to fall. The two armies met in the neighbourhood of Merv, where, after a desperate encounter, the Uzbegs were completely defeated. Sheibani, with a few followers, sought refuge in a cattle-pound. But, finding no exit on the farther side, the refugees tried to leap their horses over the wall. In this attempt Sheibani was killed. When his body was recognized by his exultant enemies*~~

~~*they cut off the head and presented it to the shah, who caused the skull to be mounted in gold and to be converted intoa drinking-cup. After this defeat the Uzbegs withdrew across the Oxus and abandoned Khorasan. Farther east the news aroused Baber to renewed activity, and before long he reoccupied Samarkand and the province " Beyond the River," which had been dominated by the Uzbegs for nine years. But though the Uzbegs were defeated, they were by no means crushed, and ere long we find their khans reigning, now at Samarkand, and now at Bokhara. As time advanced and European powers began to encroach more and more into Asia, the history of the khanates ceases to be confined to the internecine struggles of rival khans. Even Bokhara was not beyond the reach of Russian ambition and English diplomacy. Several European envoys found their way thither during the first half of the present century, and the murder of Stoddart and Connolly in 1842 forms a melancholy episode in British relations with that fanatical capital. With the absorption of the khanate of Bokhara and the capture of Khiva by the Russians the individual history of the Mongol tribes in Central Asia comes to an end, and their name has left its imprint only on the dreary stretch of Chinese-owned country from Manchuria to the Altai Mountains, and to the equally unattractive country in the neighbourhood of the K6k6-ndr. (R. K. D.)*~~

~~*Language and Literatwre.—The Mongol tongue is a member of the great stock which recent scholars designate as Finno-T'ataric or Ural-Altaic, which comprehends also the languages of the Tungoos (Manchu), Turko-Tatars, Finns, and Samoyeds. The members of this group are not so closely related to one another as those of the Indo-European stock ; but they are all bound together by the com- mon principle of agglutinative formation, especially the so-called harmony of vowels, by their grammatical structure, and also by certain common elements in the stock of roots which run through them all, or through particular more closely-connected families within the group.!*~~

~~*The fatherland proper of the Mongols is the so-called Mongolia. It stretches from Siberia in the north towards the Great Wall of China in the south, from Dauria and Manchuria in the east to the Altai and the sources of the Irtish, Thian-shan (7.¢., heaven moun- tains), and East Turkestan in the west. In the centre of this country is the desert of Gobi (Chinese Sha-mo, i.¢., sand-sea). The Mongolian population, however, extends in the south over the Great Wall to the basin of the Kok6-n6r (blue lake), and thence extends due west over Tangut and the northern border of Tibet. Crossing the political frontier, we find Mongols in the Russian province Turkestan, in the territories of Semiryetshensk (land of the seven streams), Alatau, and Semipalatinsk in the west, in the south of the province of Tomsk, with a more populous region due north in Siberia, round the Baikal Lake. The country north of the Gobi, from the Altai, Tangnu, and the Saian mountains in the west to Manchuria in the east, is called Khalkha, with the chief districts Urga (Kiiré), Uliassutai, Khobdo (Kobdo). In a north-westerly direction from Gobi, between Thian-shan and the Altai, is Sungaria. The sum total of the Mongol population under Chinese government is calculated at between two and three millions.*~~

~~*Generally the whole Mongol tribe may be divided into three branches: East Mongols, West Mongols, and Buriats.*~~

~~*(1) The East Mongols are divided into the Khalkhas in the borders just mentioned, the Shara Mongols south of the Gobi along the Great Wall north-eastward to Manchuria, and lastly the Shir- aigol or Sharaigol in Tangut and in northern Tibet.*~~

~~*(2) On the signification and employment of the different names of the West Mongols (Kalmuks, Oeléd, Oirad or Dorbon Oirad = the four Oirad, Mongol Oirad), and also as regards the subdivision of the tribes, there is much uncertainty. The name Kalmuk, so generally employed among us, is in fact only used by the Volga Kalmuks (Khalimak), but even with them the name is not common, and almost a byname. It is of foreign origin, and most likely a Tataric word which has yet to be explained. O*vrad means the "near ones," the "related." The usual explanation given is that the single tribes consider themselves as being related to each other,—hence Mongol Oirad, "the Mongol related tribe." This is the favourite name among Kalmuks. Dérbon Oirad, or the four related tribes, comprise (1) Sungars, (2) Torgod, (3) Khoshod, (4) Dorbéd.*~~

~~*1 Compare W. Sehott, Versuch iiber die tatarischen Sprachen (Berl., 1836), Ueber das altai'sche oder finnisch-tatarische Sprachengeschlecht (Berl., 1849), Altajische Studien, Parts i.-v. (Berl., 1860-1870); and A. Castrén, Ethnologische Vorlesungen iiber die Altat'schen Volker ; edited by A. Schiefner (Petersb., 1857).*~~

~~*750*~~

~~*The signification of the name Oeléd, in the East Mongolian Ocgeled, now the most widely spread among the tribes living in China, is likewise very doubtful. Some assert that * Oeléd" is nothing but the Chinese transcription of Oirad, as the ordinary Chinese language does not possess the sound 7, We have, however, to bear in mind that we have a Mongolian root dgelekii, with the sense ""to be in- imical," "to bear hatred, ill-will," &c. The main population of the Kalmuks live, or rather drag out, their existence after the usual fashion of nomad tribes in Sungaria, in the eastern part of the Thian- shan, on the south border of the Gobi, on Koké-nor, and in the province of Kan-suh. All these are under the Chinese Government. In consequence, however, of the extension of the Russian empire in Thian-shan and Alatau, many hordes have come under the Rus- sian sway. According to an approximate account we may reckon in the territory Semiryetshensk (Kuldja) and Sentipalatinsk 34,000 Kalmuks, while in the southern part of the government Tomsk, on the Altai, the Kalmuk population amounted formerly to 19,000. Besides these*~~

~~*we find a section of Kalmuk population far in the west, on the banks of the Volga (near Astrakhan). From their original seats in Sungaria they turned in their migrations to the north, crossed the steppe of the Kirghiz, and thus gradually reached the Emba and the Or. Between these two rivers and the Ural the Torgod settled in 1616; thence they crossed the Volga in 1650, and took possession of the now'so-called steppe of the Kalmuks, being followed in 1673 by the Dérbéd, and in 1675 by the Khoshod. In 1771 a considerable number returned to the Chinese empire. At the present time there is a not unimportant population in the so-called steppe of the Kalmuks, which extends between the Caspian and the Volga in the east and the Don in the west, and from the town of Sarepta in the north to the Kuina and the Manytch in the south. According to modern statistical accounts, this popula- tion amounts to 75,630. To these we have to add 24,603 more on the borders of the Cossacks of the Don, and lastly 7298 in the bordering provinces of Orenburg and Saratoff. The sum total of the so-called Volga Kalmuks is therefore 107,531.*~~

~~*(3) In the southern part of the Russian province of Irkutsk, in a wide circle round the Baikal Lake, lies the heirdom proper of the Buriats, which they also call the "Holy Sea;" the country east of the lake is commonly called Transbaikalia, Their country practically extends from the Chinese frontier on the south within almost parallel lines to the north, to the town Kirensk on the Lena, and from the Onon in the east to the Oka, a tributary of the Angara, in the west, and still farther west towards Nijni-Udinsk. 'They are most numerous beyond the Baikal Lake, in the valleys along the Uda, the Onon, and the Selenga, and in Nertchinsk. These Trans-Baikalian Buriats came to these parts only towards the end of the 17th century from the Khalkhas. While Mongols and Kal- muks generally continue to live after the usual fashion of nomads, we find here agricultural pursuits, most likely, however, due mainly to Russian influence. Christianity is also making its way. The sum total of the Buriats amounts at present to about 250,000.*~~

~~*Another tribe separated from the rest of the Mongols is the so- called Hazara (the thousand), and the four Aimak (7.¢., tribes), who wander about as herdsmen in Afghanistan, between Herat and Kabul. In external characteristics they are Mongols, and in all probability they are the*~~

~~*remains of a tribe from the time of the Mongol dynasty. Their language, which shows, of course, Persian influence, is strictly Mongolian, more particularly West Mongolian or Kalmuk, as has been proved by H. C. von der Gabelentz.!*~~

~~*Agreeably with this threefold division of the Mongols we have also a threefold division of their respective languages: (1) East Mongolian or Mongolian proper, (2) West Mongolian or Kalmuk, (3) Buriatie.*~~

~~*The dialects just mentioned are found to be in close relation to each other when we examine their roots, inflexions, and graminatical structure. The difference between them is indeed so slight that whoever understands one of them understands all. Phonetically a characteristic of them all is the "harmony of vowels," which are divided into two chief classes: the hard a, 0, w; and the soft e, 6, i; between which 2 is in the middle. All vowels of the same word must necessarily belong to the same class, so that the nature of the first or root-vowel determines the nature of the other or inflexion- vowels ; now and then a sort of retrogressive harmony takes place, so that a later vowel determines the nature of the former. The consonants preceding the vowels are equally under their influence.*~~

~~*The Mongolian characters, which in a slightly altered form are also in use among the Manchus, are written perpendicularly from above downward, and the lines follow from left to right, the alpha- bet having signs for seven vowels a, ¢, 7, 0, u, 6, u%, and diphthongs derived from them ao, at, et, 11, 01, ut, Gi, ii, and for seventeen con- sonants n, b, kh, gh, k, g, m, l, r (never initial), t, d, y, s (ds), ts, ss, sh, w. All these are modified in shape according to their position, in the beginning, middle, or end of a word, and also by certain orthographic rules. In Mongolian and Manchu writing the syllable (i.e., the consonant together with the vowel) is considered as a unit,*~~

~~*1 See his essay, "Ueber die Sprache der Hazaras und Aimaks," in the Zeit- ' schrift der deutschen morgenldndischen Gesellschaft, vol. xx. pp. 326-335.*~~

~~*MONGOLS*~~

~~*in other words, a syllabarium rather than an alphabet. The exist- ing characters are lineal descendants of the original Uigurian forms, which were themselves derived from the Syriac, having been brought to the Uigurs by Nestorian missionaries. An Indian and Tibetan influence may also be noticed, while the arrangement of the char- acters in perpendicular lines is common to the Chinese. The writ- ing was brought into its present shape by the learned Lamas Sa- skya Pandita, Phags-pa Lama, and "shoitshi Odser in the 13th century,! but is exceedingly imperfect. To express the frequently- occurring letters borrowed from Sanskrit and Tibetan, which are wanting in the Mongol alphabet, a special alphabet called Galik is employed. Every one who has tried to read Mongolian knows how many difficulties have to be overcome, arising from the ambi- guity of certain letters, or from the fact that the same sign is to be pronounced differently according to its position in the word. Thus, there are no means for distinguishing the o and w, 6 and i, the consonants g and &, tand d, yand s (ds). A and e, o (wu) and & (ui), a (e) and n, g and kh, t (d) and on, are liable to be mistaken for each other. Other changes will be noticed and avoided by advanced students. It isa great defect that such common words as ada (a fury) and ende (here), ende (here) and nada (me), aldan (fathom) and altan (gold), ordu (court-residence) and wrtw (long), onokhu (to seize) and wnwkhu (to ride), tere (this) and dere (pillow), gebe (said) and kebe (made), gem (evil) and em (measure), ger (house) and ker (how), naran (sun) and nere (name), yagou (what) and dsagon (hundred), should be written exactly alike. This list might be largely increased. These defects apply equally to the Mongohan and Buriatic alphabets.*~~

~~*In 1648 the Saya Pandita composed a new alphabet (the Kalmuk), in which these ambiguities are avoided, though the graphic differences between the two alphabets are only slight. The Kalmuk alphabet avoids the angular and clumsy shapes of the Mongolian, and has, on the contrary, a rounded and pleasing shape. The Kalmuk alphabet has also this great advantage, that every sound has its distinct graphic character ; a mistake between two characters can scarcely occur. The Kalmuk words once mastered, they can be easily recognized in their Mongolian shape. The dialectical differ- ences are also very slight.*~~

~~*The Kalmuk, therefore, is the key of the Mongolian, and should form the groundwork of Mongolian studies. The Kalmuk and East Mongolian dialectsdonot differ much, at least in thespoken language ; but the Kalmuks write according to their pronunciation, while the Mongols do not. For example, sén (dsén), '"hundred," is pronounced alike by the Kalmuks and the East Mongolians ; but according to Mongolian orthography the word appears in the form dsagon. The dialectic difference between the two dialects very frequently lies only in a different pronunciation of some letters. Thus East Mon- golian ds is in Kalmuk soft s, &c. The chief difference between the two dialects lies in the fact that in Kalmuk the soft guttural g be- tween two vowels is omitted, while, through the joining of the two vowels, a long vowel is produced. In the pronunciation of common East Mongolian the g is likewise omitted, but it is written, while in Kalmuk, as just now mentioned, the guttural can only be traced through the lengthening of the syllable. Thus we find: Mongol khagan, "prince," Kalmuk khan; M. dagon, " voice, sound," K, don, dun; M. dologan, "seven," K. dolén; M. agola, "mountain," K. 6la, ala; M. nagor, "lake," K. nér, niir ; M. ulagan, "red," K. ulan; M. yagon, "what," K. yon (yan) ; M. dabagan, "mountain- ridge," K. daban ; M. ssanagan, *' thought," K. ssandn ; M. baragon, 'on the right," K. barn, barun ; M. shibagon, bird," K. show6n ; M. chilagon, stone," K. chilén (chulun) ; M. jirgogan, Mey be 1 surgan; M. degere, 'high, above," K. dére; M. ugukhu, "to drink," K. akhu; M. togodshi, "history," K. tédshi, tudshi; M. egiden, "door," K. éden; M. dsegiin, "'left," K. son; M. dgede, **in the height," K. dds; M. égeled, "the Kalmuks," K. oléd ; M. iitleged, 'if one has done," K. wiléd; M. kobegiin, "son," K. kéwon; M. gegiin, "'mare," K. gun; M. kegiir, " corpse," K. kur; M. kharigad, "returned," K. kharéd, &c.*~~

~~*The Buriatic, in these peculiarities, is almost always found with East Mongolian, with which it is in every respect closely allied. In the pronunciation of some letters the transition of East Mongolian tsa, tse into Buriatic ss is noticeable ; for instance: Mong. ¢setseh,, '*~~

~~*The noun is declined by the help of appended particles, some of which are independent post-positions, viz., Gen. yin, wu, un ; Dat. dur, a; Acc. yi, 7; Ablat. etse; Instrum. ber, yer; Associative, luga, lage. The dative and*~~

~~*accusative have also special forms which have at the same time a possessive sense, viz., Dat. dagan, degen ; Accus. ben, yen. The plural is expressed by affixes (war, ner, od, ss, d), or frequently by words of plurality, "all," "many," ¢9., kitmiin nogod (man, many=men). 'The oblique cases have the*~~

~~*1 Cf. H. C. von der Gabelentz, in the Zeitschrift f. d. Kunde d. Morgenlandes Gottingen, 1838, vol. ii. pp. 1-21, " Versuch tiber emealte mongolische Inschrift.'*~~

~~*same endings in singular and plural. Gender is not indicated. The adjective is uninflected both as attribute and as predicate ; there is no comparative form, this idea being expressed by the con- struction or by the use of certain particles. The personal pronouns are bi, 1; tchi, thou ; bida, we; ta, ye; their genitives serve as pos- sessives. The demonstratives are ene, tere (this, that), plural ede, tede ; interrogative ken, who? The relative is lacking, and its place is supplied by circumlocutions. The numerals are: 1, nigen; 2, khoyar ; 3, gurban; 4, dérben; 5, tabun; 6, jirgugan ; 7, dologan; 8, naman; 9, yisun; 10, arban; 100, dsagon; 1000, minggan. The ordinals are formed by appending tugar, tiger. The theme of the verb is seen in the imperative, as bari, grasp. The conjugation is rich in forms for tense and mood, but person and number are with few exceptions unexpressed. The present is formed from the theme by adding mut (barimui), the preterite by bai or luga (baribai, bari- luga), the future by sswgat or ssu (barissugai, barissu). The preterite has also in the third person the terminations dsugui and run; the future has in the third person yw, and in the first ya. The con- ditional ends in bassw (baribassu), the precative in tugai, tiger, the potential in sa (barimuisa), the imperative plural in ktwn, the gerund in the present in 7, dsu (barin, baridsu) or tala, 'while, till" (baritala, 'inter capiendum"'), in the preterite it is formed in gad (barigad) ; the present part. has ktchi (bariktchi), the past part. kssan (barikssan); the supine ends in ra, the infinitive in khw (bartkhit, or when used substantively barikhii). There is but one perfectly regular conjugation, and derivative forms, derived from the theme by infixes, are conjugated on the same scheme. Thus the*~~

~~*passive has infixed ta or kda (barikdakhu, to be grasped), the causative gul (bariguikhu, to cause to grasp), the co-operative or sociative ltsa or lda (bariltsakhu, to grasp together).*~~

~~*There are no prepositions, only post-positions. Adverbs are either simple particles (affirmative, negative, interrogative, modal, &c.), or are formed by suffixes from other parts of speech. There are very few conjunctions ; the relations of clauses and sentences are mainly indicated by the verbal forms (part., sup., conditional, but mainly by the gerund).*~~

~~*The order of words and sentences in construction is pretty much the opposite of that which we follow. In a simple sentence the indication of time and place, whether given by an adverb or a sub- stantive with a post-position, always conies first; then comes the subject, always preceded by its adjective or genitive, then the object and other cases depending on the verb, last of all the verb itself preceded by any adverbs that belong to it. So in the structure of a period all causal, hypothetical, concessive clauses, which can be conceived as preceding the main predication in point of time, or even as contemporary with it, or as in any way modifying it, must come first; the finite verb appears only at the end of the main*~~

~~*redication or apodosis. The periods are longer than in other anguages ; a single one may fill several pages.*~~

~~*Grammars and dictionaries may be divided according to the three dialects. For East Mongolian, I. J. Schmidt gave the first grammar (Petersb., 1831), and a Mongolian-German-Russian dictionary (Petersb., 1835). Next Jos. Kowalewski published in Russian a Mongolian grammar (Kasan, 1835), a chrestomathy (2 vols., Kasan, 1836, 1837), and his great Dictionnaire mongol-russe-francais (3 vols., Kasan, 1844, 1846, 1849). We name also R. Yuille, Short Mongolian Grammar (in Mongolian), xylographed at the mission press near Sselenginsk beyond Lake Baikal (1838). A. Bobrownikow's Russian Grammar of the Mongolian-Kalmuk Igviquage (Kasan, 1849) is also very good. An abridgment of Schmidt's work *;.2 Puini, Elementi della grammatica mongolica (Florence, 1878). A. Popow's ., *golian Chrestomathy appeared in 2 vols. at Kasan (1836). For the Kalmuk we have grammars by Popow (Kasan, 1847), Bobrownikow as above, and H. A. Zwick (s. l. et a.), autographed at*~~

~~*Donaueschingen (1851). Zwick's autographed Kalmuk and German dictionary with a printed German index appeared (s. l. et a.)in 1852; B. Jiilg's edition of the tales of Siddhi-kir (Leips., 1866) gives a complete glossary to these stories. There are small Russian and Kalmuk vocabularies by P. Smirnow (Kasan, 1857) and C. Golstunskyi (Petersb., 1860).*~~

~~*MONGOOS, or Muncoos. See IcuNEUMON.*~~

~~*MONITION, in the practice of the English ecclesiastical courts, is an order requiring or admonishing the person complained of to do something specified in the monition, "under pain of the law and penalty thereof." It is the lightest form of ecclesiastical censure, but disobedience to it, after it has been duly and regularly served, entails the penalties of contempt of court. See Phillimore, Lccles:- astical Law (London, 1873).*~~

~~*MONK, Gzorce (1608-1669), English general, was the second son of Sir Thomas Monk, a gentleman of good family but in embarrassed circumstances, and was born at Potheridge, near Torrington in Devonshire, on 6th De- cember 1608. An exploit which brought him within the reach of the law compelled him to begin his career as a soldier of fortune at the age of seventeen. He acted under Sir R. Grenville as a volunteer in the expedition to*~~

~~*751*~~

~~*For the Buriatic we have Castrén, Versuch einer Burjdtischen Sprachlehre, edited by Schiefner (1857), and A. Orlow's Russian grammar of the Mongol-Buri- atic colloquial language (Kasan, 1878).*~~

~~*Literature.—A clear distinction must be drawn between the higher and nobler written or book-language and the common or conversational language of every- day life. The difference between the two is very considerable, and may be fairly compared to that between the Modern High German book-language and the different dialects. All grammars and dictionaries as yet published treat only of the book-language; and so also, with a few exceptions, the published literary documents are written in this higher style. The exceptions are the Gesser-Khan, and the Siddhi-*~~

~~*kiir and Djangariad (the last two published by Golstunskyi). The popular or conversational language has only quite lately been fixed in writing by A. Pozdnyeyew in his Russian work, Specimens of the Popular Literature of the Mongolian Tribes, part i., " Popular Songs" (Petersb., 1880), which contains rich material for the study of the popular literature.*~~

~~*'The literature known at present consists mostly of translations from the Tibetan, the holy language of Buddhism, which is still the language of the learned. The Tibetan Buddhist literature is itself translated from the Sanskrit ; hence, now and then, through Mongols and Kalmuks we get acquaiuted with Indian works the originals of which are not known in Sanskrit. Such is the case, for instance, with the tales of Siddhi-kiir. Many books have also been translated from the Chinese. Most of the writings are of a religious, historical, philosophical, medical, astronomical, or astrological character. Favourite sub- jects are folk-lore and fairy tales. Among the religious books, perhaps the most important is that containing the legends entitled wliger tin dalai, "ocean of coinparisons" (edited by the late I. Jacob Schmidt under the title, Der Wetse and der Thor, in Tibetan and German, Petersb., 1843). To this may be added the boddhi mér, or "the holy path," the altan gerel, "gleaming of gold," the nant gambo, and yertiintcht yin toli, 'mirror of the world." What was known of poetical literature before Pozdnyeyew is scarcely worth mentioning. In some parts of the historical and narrative literature we find, wherever tlie nar- rative takes a higher flight, an admixture of poetical diction. The poetry appears in a certain parallelism of the phrases, with a return either of the same endings (rhyme) or of the same words (refrain). Frequently we find, besides the rhyme or refrain, alliteration. The essay of H.C. yon der Gabelentz in Z. f. d. Kunde des Morgenlandes, vol. i. pp. 20-37, " Biniges tiher Mongolische Poesie," has been superseded by the work of Pozdnyeyew.*~~

~~*Among historical works a high place is due to that composed by the tribal prince, Ssanang Ssetsen, in the middle of the 17th century (Geschichte der Ost- Mongolen und thres Fiirstenhauses, Mong. and Germ., by I. J. Schmidt, Petersb., 1829), and to the Altan tobtchi, i.e., 'Golden knob" or " precious contents" (text and Russian translation by the Lama Galsang Gomboyew, Petersb., 1858). Of folk-lore and fairy tales, we have the*~~

~~*legend of the hero Gesser- Khan (text ed. by I. J. Schmidt, Petersb., 1836, and German version, 1839; comp. Schott, Ueber die Sage v. Geser-Khan, Berl., 1851, and B. J lilgin the Transactions of the Wiirzburger Philol. Versam. of 1868, pp. 58 sqq., Leips., 1869); and the tales about Ardshi Bordshi (Russian version by Galsang Gomboyew, Petersb., 1858; text and German trans. by B. Jtilg, Innsbr., 1867, 1868). A favourite book is the tales of Siddhi-ktr based on the Sanskrit Vetdla panchavincati (Russian trans. by Galsang Gomboyew, Petersb., 1865; nine of the tales in Mongolian and German by B. Jtilg, Innsbr., 1868). The fuller collection of these tales in Kalmuk first became known by the Gerinan trans. of B. Bergmann in vol. i. of his Nomadische Streifereien unter d. Kalmiken (4 vols., Riga, 1804, 1805); an autographed edition in the vulgar dialect was published by C. Golstunskyi (Petersb., 1864; text and German trans. with glossary by B. Jiilg, Leips., 1866). A poetic heroic story is the Djangariad, extracts from which were given by Bergmann (op. cit., iv. 181 sqq.); a complete Russian version by A. Bobrownikow (Petersb., 1854); a German version by F. v. Erdmann in Z.D.M.G., 1857 (Kalmuk text by Golstunskyi, Petersb., 1864). A similar poem is the history of Ubashi Khuntaidshi and his war with the Oirad, Kalmuk text and Russian trans. by G. Gomboyew in his Altan tobtchi as above, and text alone autographed by Golstunskyi (Petersb., 1864). Some books of religion for the Christian Buriats (transcribed in Russian characters) represent the Buriatic dialect. The Russian and English Bible Societies have given us a translation of the whole Bible. I. J. Schmidt translated the Gospels and the Acts into Mongolian and Kalmuk for the Russian Bible Society (8 vols., Petersb., 1819-1821),—a masterly work. The English missionaries, E. Stallybrass and W. Swan, and afterwards R. Yuille, translated the whole Old Testament into Mongolian (1836-1840). This work was printed at a mission press erected at great cost for the purpose near Sselenginsk, beyond Lake Baikal in Siberia. In 1846 the New Testament by the same hands appeared at London.*~~

~~*The richest collections of Mongolian and Kalmuk printed books and MSS. are in the Asiatic museum of the Petersburg Academy, and in the libraries of Kasan and Irkutsk; there is also a good collection in the royal library at Dres- den. Consult in general, besides the already-cited works of Bergmann and Po- zdnyeyew, P. 8. Pallas, Sammlungen historischer*~~

~~*Nachrichten wu. d. Mongolischen Volkerschaften (2 vols., Petersb., 1776-1801); I. J. Schmidt, Forschungen im Gebiete der dlteren . . . Bildungsgeschichte der Volker Mittelasiens, vorz. d. Mongolen und Tibeter (Petersb. and Leips., 1824); B. Jtilg, "On the Present State of Mongolian Researches," Journ. R. As. Soc., xiv. (1882), pp. 42-65. (B. J.)*~~

~~*Cadiz, and the next year did notable service at the Isle of Rhé.*~~

~~*In 1629 Monk went to the Low Countries, the training ground for military men, where in Oxford's and in Goring's regiments he obtained a high reputation for courage and for a thorough knowledge of his trade. In 1638 he threw up his commission in consequence of a quarrel with*~~

~~*.the Dutch civil authorities, came to England, and obtained*~~

~~*the lieutenant-coloneley of Newport's regiment during the operations on the Scottish border. Here he showed his skill and coolness in the dispositions by which he saved the English artillery at Newborn, though himself destitute of ammunition ; and in the councils of war he confidently voted with Strafford for fighting, and against retreat or composition. One of Monk's biographers relates that he now thought of joining the adventurers who proposed to colonize Madagascar. The Irish rebellion, however, offered*~~

~~*752*~~

~~*more congenial employment, and in February 1641 he landed at Dublin as colonel of Lord Leicester's regiment. Here he greatly increased his reputation. Under the most difficult circumstances he was ever cool, patient, vigorous. A rigid disciplinarian, he was always attentive to the wants of his men, and completely won their confidence and affec- tion. All the qualities for which he was noted through life, the calculating selfishness which kept him ever on the winning side and by which he accomplished his great historic success, the imperturbable temper and impene- trable secrecy, were fully displayed in this employment. He had but one interest, that of George Monk; and to secure that interest he laboured, while retaining his free- dom from party ties, to make himself indispensable as a soldier. The govérnorship of Dublin was vacant, and*~~

~~*Monk was appointed by Leicester. But Charles I. overruled the appointment in favour of Lord Lambert, and Monk, with great shrewdness, gave up his claims. Ormond, however, who viewed him with suspicion as one of the two officers who refused the oath to support the royal cause in Eng- land, sent him under guard to Bristol. He now deemed it safest to affect Royalist views. His value caused him to be received at once into Charles's confidence ; he was appointed major-general of the Irish brigade, and served under Byron at the siege of Nantwich. Here he was taken prisoner by Fairfax, on 25th January 1644, in one of the most skilful operations of the war. After a short captivity in Hull he was placed in the Tower, where he remained for three years (during which his father died), beguiling his imprisonment by writing his Observations on Military and Political Affairs. '*~~

~~*So long as the war lasted Monk could not be released. Charles, however, became a prisoner; the troubles in Ireland made the parliament anxious to secure Monk's services, and he was told that if he would take the Cove- nant he might have an important command. With some show of hesitation the terms were accepted, and, after a service of two months in Lord Lisle's abortive expedition, Monk was placed in command of the British forces in the north of Ireland. Compelled in 1649 to conclude a pacifi- cation with the rebel O'Neill, he returned to England after the king's execution. In the same year he succeeded, by his elder brother's death, to the family estate. His idleness lasted but a short while. Cromwell gave him a regiment and the command of the ordnance in the Scotch war of 1650, and after the battle of Dunbar, in which he led the attack, he was left with 6000 men to subdue the country, which, after taking Edinburgh, Tantallon, and Stirling castles, he did most completely in a few weeks. In 1651 he was seized with fever, but recovered at Bath, and in the same year was appointed on the commission for pro- moting the Union. In 1653, with Admiral Dean, he commanded the British fleet against the Dutch, and on 2d and 3d June and 29th July fought two of the most sanguinary naval battles on record, in which both his colleague and Van Tromp were slain. A peace on very humiliating terms to the Dutch was concluded, but policy shortly led Cromwell to allow milder conditions,—a conces- sion against which Monk strongly remonstrated. On his return he married his mistress, Anne Clarges, a woman of the lowest extraction, "ever a plain*~~

~~*homely dowdy," says Pepys, who, like other writers who mention her, is usually still less complimentary. Monk was now sent to quell the revolt headed by Middleton in Scotland, and, when this service was over, settled down to a steady government of the country for the next five years. For fanaticism in any shape he had no sympathy, and he set himself to diminish the influence of the Presbyterian clergy—Cromwell's chief opponents,—taking from them the power of excommuni- cation and their general assemblies, but allowing them to*~~

~~*MONK*~~

~~*retain their presbyteries. Equal repression was exercised against the nobility and gentry. 'The timely discovery of a plot fomented by Overton for killing Monk on New Year's Day gave him an excuse for thoroughly purging his army of all Anabaptists, Fifth Monarchy men, and other danger- ous enthusiasts. It is doubtful whether at this time Monk had proposed to himself the restoration of the king. He probably had it always in his mind as a possibility, but he would run no risks, His very reticence, however, caused alarm on one side and hope on the other. In 1655 he received a letter from Charles II., a copy of which he at once sent to Cromwell, whom, however, we find writing to him in 1657 in the following terms: "There be that tell me that there is a certain cunning fellow in Scotland called George Monk, who is said to lye in wait there to introduce Charles Stuart ; I pray you, use your diligence to appre- hend him, and send him up to me."*~~

~~*During the confusion which followed Cromwell's death Monk remained silent and watchful at Edinburgh, careful only to secure his hold on his troops. In July 1659 direct and tempting proposals were again made to him by the king. His brother Nicholas, a clergyman, was em- ployed by Sir J. Grenvil to bring to him the substance of Charles's letter. No bribe, however, could induce him to act one moment before the right time. He bade his brother go back to his books, and refused to entertain any proposal. But when Booth rose in Cheshire for the king, so tempting did the opportunity seem that he was on the point of joining forces with him; and a letter was written to the Rump parliament threatening force if it did not at once fill up its numbers. His habitual caution, however, induced*~~

him to wait until the next post from England, and the next post brought news of Booth's defeat. On 17th October he heard of Lambert's coup @état. From that moment his plan of action seems to have been settled. In most vehement language he dis- carded the idea of restoring Charles, and, with admirable perception of the state of English feeling, took for his principles that in all cases the army must obey the civil government, and that the civil government must be parliamentary. At present the Rump was crushed by the military party; the first thing, therefore, to be done was to free it. His army underwent a second purging of dis- affection, and he then issued a declaration embodying the principles mentioned above, and wrote to Lenthall the speaker, and to the military party to the same effect. In a treaty with the Committee.of Safety his commissioners, who were to treat only on the basis of the restoration of parliament, were outwitted. Monk at once refused to accept the terms proposed, and marched to Berwick, having received an offer from Fairfax of assistance if he would promise that the secluded members should be restored. Meanwhile Lambert had marched northwards to oppose his advance.

Monk's action gave fresh heart to the adherents of the parliament. The old council of state met, and named him general of all the forces; the fleet and the Irish army, hitherto hostile, came round to his side, and so did Whetham at Portsmouth. Monk now, in the depth of winter, crossed the Tweed at Coldstream and marched by Morpeth to Newcastle, receiving letters on his way from the lord mayor and corporation of London urging him to declare for a free parliament. On his approach Lambert's army fell away from their general, and no obstacle re- mained on the path to London. At York, when urged by Fairfax, he refused to declare for the king, and is said to have caned an officer who affirmed that such was his design. The parliament now ordered him to come to London. Fleetwood's army which occupied the city was, however, a great obstacle ; and it was not until the parlia-

ment, in accordance with his desire, had arranged for its dispersion that he would enter with his troops. Even now his intentions were strictly concealed ; the spies set upon him by the various anxious parties were

~~*baffled by his impenetrable reserve. He was careful to appear only as the servant of parliament, but when he was desired to take the oath of abjuration he skilfully evaded the request. The city, always jealous of the Rump, now refused to pay taxes except at the orders of a free parliament. Monk, in consequence, was ordered to march his troops into the city, take down the chains and posts, and unhinge the gates. He obeyed these unpleasant orders to the letter on 10th February, thus permitting the hatred against the Rump to rise to the height, while he showed how unwilling an instrument of its will he was. On the 11th, however, he threw off the mask, and wrote to the Rump, peremp- torily ordering them to admit the secluded members, and to arrange for the dissolution of parliament by 6th May. On 21st February he conducted the secluded members to their seats. At the same time he refused to restore the Lords, and issued an order disowning Charles Stuart to all officers commanding garrisons. Every day brought him fresh opportunities for tact or evasion. His partisans urged him to take the protectorate himself; another party pressed upon him to accomplish the restoration by the army alone ; a body of his officers sent him a declaration*~~

~~*expressing their fears that his action would lead to the*~~

~~*restoration of monarchy; the parliament tried to make him their own by the offer of Hampton Court. His trained habits of dissimulation and evasion, assisted now and again by downright lying, carried him triumphantly through all these dangers, and at length the dissolution of parliament on 17th March removed his greatest difficulties.*~~

~~*It was now that, with the utmost secrecy, he gave an interview for the first time to the king's agent Grenvil, and by him sent to Charles the conditions of his restoration, afterwards embodied in the Declaration of Breda. For himself at present he would accept nothing but a royal commission as captain-general, which he carefully kept to himself. All parties were anxious to gain the credit of the now certain restoration. The Presbyterians in parti- cular, fearful of the king being restored without terms, did their best to discredit Monk and to impose the old Isle of Wight conditions ; but in vain. The new parliament was elected, and the House of Lords restored ; an insurrection by Lambert, who had escaped from the*~~

~~*Tower, was quelled by Monk's prompt measures, and on the 25th of April he received the solemn thanks of both Houses, and the title of captain-general of the land forces. Even yet the farce was kept up. Monk received with feigned surprise the king's official letter from Grenvil, denied all knowledge of its contents, and handed it over sealed to the council, who decided to defer opening it until the meeting of parliament on the Ist of May.*~~

~~*With the Restoration the historic interest of Monk's career ceases. The rude soldier of fortune had played the game with incomparable dexterity, and had won the stakes. He was made gentleman of the bedchamber, knight of the Garter, master of the horse, commander-in-chief, and duke of Albemarle, and had a pension of £7000 a year allotted him. His utmost desires were satisfied, and he made no attempt to compete further in a society in which neither he nor his vulgar wife could ever be at home, and which he heartily despised. As long as the army existed of which he was the idol, and of which the last service was to suppress Venner's revolt, he was a person not to be displeased. But he entirely concurred in the measure for disbanding it, and thenceforward his influence was small, though men's eyes turned naturally to him in emergency. In the trial of the regicides he was on the side of moderation, and his*~~

~~*interposition saved Hazelrig's life; but his action at the time of Argyll's trial will always be regarded as the most dishonourable episode in his career. In 1664 he had charge of the admiralty when James was in command of the fleet, and when in 1665 London was deserted on' account of the plague, Monk, with all the readiness of a man accustomed to obey without thinking of risk, remained in charge of the government of the city. Once more, at the end of this year, he was called upon to fight, having a joint commission with Prince Rupert against the Dutch. The whole burden of the preparations fell upon him. On 23d April 1666 the admirals joined the fleet, and on the Ist of June began a battle near Dunkirk which lasted four days, followed by another on 23d July, in which Monk showed all his old coolness and skill, and a reckless daring which had seemed hitherto foreign to his character. His last service was*~~

~~*in 1667, when the Dutch fleet sailed up the Thames, and Monk, ill as he was, hastened to Chatham to oppose their further progress. From that time he lived much in privacy, and died of dropsy on the 3d of December*~~

~~*1669.*~~

~~*See the Lives of Monk by Dr Gumble, his chaplain (London, 1671), and Dr Skinner (London, 1724), and Guizot's Essar , which contain all necessary information concerning his life up to the Restoration.*~~

~~*The numerous and amusing notices of him in the court of Charles in Pepys's Diary should on no aecount be omitted. (O, A.)*~~

~~*MONKEY. See Apr,*~~

~~*MONMOUTH, a maritime county of England, is bounded Plate*~~

~~*E. by Gloucester, N.E. by Hereford, N.W. by Brecknock, W. and 8.W. by Glamorgan, and S. by the Bristol Channel. Its greatest length from north to south is about 35 miles, and its greatest breadth about 28 miles. The area is 368,399 acres, or about 572 square miles.*~~

~~*The surface of Monmouth is very varied, and in many districts picturesque, especially along the valley of the Wye, and between that river and the Usk. In the west and north the hills rise to a considerable height, and this mountain region encircles a finely undulating country. The highest summits are Sugar Loaf (1954 feet), Blorenge (1908), and Skyridd Vawr (1601). Along the shore on both sides of the Usk are two extensive tracts of marsh land, called the Caldicot and Wentllooge levels, stretching from Cardiff to Portskewett, and protected from inunda- tions by strong embankments.*~~

~~*The principal rivers are: the Wye, which forms the eastern boundary of the county with Gloucester, and falls into the Severn; the Monnow, which forms a portion of its boundary with Hereford, and falls into the Wye at the town of Monmouth ; the Usk, which rises in Brecknock, and flows southward through the centre of the county to the Bristol Channel ; the Ebbw, which rises in the north-west, and enters the estuary of the Usk at*~~

~~*Newport; and the Rumney, which rises in Brecknock, and, after forming the boundary between Monmouth and Glamorgan, enters the Bristol Channel a little to the east of Cardiff. Salmon abound especially in the Wye and the Usk, and trout are plentiful in all the streams. The Monmouthshire canal extends from Newport to Pontypool, where it is joined by the Brecknockshire canal, which enters the county near Abergavenny. The Crumlin canal also joins it a little north of Newport.*~~

~~*Geology and Minerals.—The geological formation is principally Old Red Sandstone and Carboniferous,—the Old Red forming the larger and eastern half of the county, from a line drawn between Abergavenny and Newport, and varying in thickness from between 8000 and 10,000 feet in the north to about 4000 feet in the south. In the centre of the county adjoining the Usk there is an outcrop of Silurian rocks, extending to a distance of about 8 miles north and south and 4 miles east and west, with a thickness of 1500 feet. Towards the east the Old Sandstone rocks dip beneath the Moun- tain Limestone, which enters the county from the Forest of Dean coal-field, and gives its peculiar character to the fine scenery along the banks of the Wye. The formation varies in thickness from*~~

~~*a of*~~

~~*754*~~

~~*500 to 700 feet. The Carboniferous rocks connected with the great coal-field of South Wales, which occupy the western half of the county, include —(1) the Coal-measures, consisting of shales and ironstones, sandstones and coal-beds, of which there are about twenty-five beds more than 2 feet thick—total thickness of the strata 11,650 feet; (2) Millstone Grit, thickness 330 feet; (3) Carboniferous Limestone surrounding the coal-field, thickness 1000 feet; (4) Old Red Sandstone, thickness 600 feet; and (5) Devonian beds, consisting of red and brown sandstone, marls, &c., thickness about 6000 feet. The coal-field'of Monmouth has an area of about 90,000 acres. The beds are very rich and easily wrought, the most common way of reaching them being by excavating pas- sages in the sides of the hills instead of by perpendicular shafts. The number of collieries in operation in 1881 was 124, and the quantity of coal obtained 5,412,840*~~

~~*tons. The ironstone of Mon- mouth occurs both in beds and in large detached masses, the yield of iron being 18 to 55 per cent. 'The ore is the common clay iron- stone. 'The iron industry was proseeuted successfully at Ponty- pool in the 16th century by a family of the name of Grant, who were succeeded by the Hanburys. In 1740 Monmouth contained, however, only two furnaces, which made together about 900 tons annually ; but during the present century they have increased with great rapidity. In 1881 the number of furnaces built was 52, of which 35 were in operation ; the amount of pig-iron made was 527,277 tons. The works are situated chiefly in the neighbourhood of Pontypool, and oecupy the valleys running in the direction of Merthyr-Tydfil in Glamorganshire. The following were the Mon- mouth ironworks in 1881: Abersychan, Pontypool, Pontnewynydd, Ebbw Vale, Victoria, Blaenavon, Cwmbran, Nantyglo, Oakfields, Blaina, Rhymney, and Tredegar. In all, there were 258 puddling furnaces and 42 rolling mills in operation. The tinplate manufacture is extensively carried on, the number of mills in the Monmouth and Gloucester district in 1881 being 95, the majority of which are in Monmouth. Fireclay is extensively dug ; 57,680 tons were obtained in 1881.*~~

~~*Soil and Agriculture.—Along the seashore the soil is deep and loamy, and admirably suited for the growth of trees. The most fertile land is that resting on Red Sandstone, especially along the banks of the Usk, where wheat is raised of a very fine quality. In the more mountainons regions there is very little land that is cap- able of cultivation, the soil being generally thin and peaty. More attention is paid to grazing than to the raising of crops. There are a considerable number of dairy-farms, but sheep-farming is much more largely followed. Of the 5241 holdings existing in 1880—the latest year in regard to which there is information —3661 were under 50 acres, 1521 between 50 and 300 aeres, and only 59 above 300 acres. Aecording to the agricultural returns for 1882 there were 243,068 acres, or almost exactly two-thirds of the total area, under cultivation. Of this, 176,137 acres were permanent pasture, and 14,729 rotation grasses. Of the 35,038 aeres under corn erops, 16,151 were under wheat, 8596 under barley, and 8711 under oats. Turnips occupied 7486 acres, and potatoes only 1777. 'The area under woods was 29,856, and under orchards 3921. The total num- ber of horses in 1882 was 11,631; of*~~

~~*which the number used solely for agricultural purposes was 6449. Of the 44,168 cattle, 16,500 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf. Sheep numbered 134,682, and pigs 17,621. Aecording to the latest return there were 7811 proprietors possessing 296,971 acres, with a gross annual rental of £837,254, Of the owners, 4970, or 68 per cent., possessed less than 1 acre, 17 possessed between 1000 and 2000 aeres, and 15 betweeu 2000 and 5000. The following four proprietors possessed over 5000 acres each: Lady Llanover, 6312; the executors of C. H. Leigh, 10,211 ; Lord Tredegar, 25,229; and the duke of Beaufort, 27,299.*~~

~~*Railways.—The South Wales Railway passes along the eoast, and many branch lines cross the county in various directions, the majority of them being connected either with the Great Western Railway or with the London and North-Western.*~~

~~*Administration and Population.—Monmouth comprises six hun- dreds, and the municipal boroughs of Monmouth (6111) and Newport (38,427). In addition to these two boroughs there are fifteen urban sanitary districts, viz., Abergavenny (6941), Abersychan (18,496), Abertillery (6003), Blaenavon (9451), Caerleon (1099), Chepstow (8591), Christehnrch (3114), Ebbw Vale (14,700), Llanvrechva (4177), Panteg (8321), Pontypool (5244), Rhymney (8663), Risca (5540), Tredegar (18,771), Usk (1470). With the exception of Abergavenny, Cacrleon, Chepstow, Pontypool, and Usk, these towns are all of modern growth, and: owe their rise chiefly to the iron manufacture,—some, however, being partly dependent on that of tinplate. 'lhe county returns two members to parliament ; and Monmouth, Newport, and Usk, with a united population in 1881 of 46,033, constitute the Monmouth distriet of boroughs, which returns one member. The county has one court of quarter sessions, and is divided into twelve petty sessional divisions. It is within the diocese of Llandaff, and contains 147 civil parishes, townships, or places. The population, which in 1801 was 45,568, had increased in 1841 to 134,368, in 1871 to 195,448, and in 1881 to 211,267 (of whom 108,262 were males, and 103,005 females).*~~

~~*MONM*~~

~~*Onur n t*~~

~~*History and Antiquities.—At the time of the Romans, Mon- mouthshire formed part of the territory of the Silures, whose princi- pal seat was at Caerwent, and who were finally subdued by Julius Frontinus in the year 78. The old Roman road, the Via Julia, leading from the mouth of the Severn to Caerwent, Caerleon, and onwards to Neath in Glamorgan, can still be traced. The Romans made Caerwent, under the name of Venta Silurwm, one of their principal stations. Tesselated pavements, pottery, coins, and the remains of a Roman villa, have been found, and portions of the walls still exist. The great station of the Romans was, however, Tsea Silwrum, now Caerleon (Caer legionis), so called from the fact that it was the headquarters of the second imperial legion. By Richard of Cirencester it is called a colonia, being the only station of that dignity in Wales. The mound of the old fortress still remains, as well as portions of an amphitheatre. Other less important stations were those of Gobanniwm (Abergavenny), Blestiwm (Mon- mouth), and Burrium (probably Usk). Monmouthshire is closely associated with Arthurian legends. In one of the Welsh tales Arthur is represented as holding his court at Caerleon during Easter and Pentecost; and an oval bank near the town is pointed out as Arthur's Round Table. When Wales was subdivided into three king- doms on the death of Rhodri the Great, Monmouth and Glamorgan were placed under a separate government distinct from either of these. In the 9th and 10th centuries Monmouth was frequently invaded by the Danes. Edward the Confessor, after various vic- tories in Wales, is said to have established a palace at Porth-is-coed (Portskewett). At the Norman Conquest the district was delivered over to certain Norman nobles called the " Lords of the Marches," who held the lands which they conquered per barontam, with the right of administering justice. Frequent contests took place between the lords of the marches and the Welsh princes, until, in 1535, the jurisdiction of the lords of the marches was abolished by Henry VIII., and Monmouth was included among the English counties. Monmouth was the scene of frequent contests during the Civil War.*~~

~~*Of Norman fortresses in Monmouth, either built or taken possession of by the lords of the marches, there are remains of no less than twenty-five. The more interesting and important are: Caldicot, the seat of the De Bohuns, still entire; Chepstow, one of the finest examples of the old Norman fortress extant, built by Fitz Osborn in the 11th century, in an*~~

~~*imposing situation on a cliff above the Wye ; Newport, now used as a brewery ; Abergavenny, now partly occu- pied as a private house ; the gateway and hall of Grosmont, once the residence of the dukes of Lancaster ; and Usk Castle, rebuilt by the Clares in the time of Edward IV. Raglan Castle, begun in the reign of Henry V., is a very extensive ruin, still in good preser- vation, and contains examples of several styles of architecture. Charles I. resided in it after the battle of Naseby. In 1646 it was delivered up to the parliament.*~~

~~*At the Reformation there were in Monmouth two hospitals and fifteen other religious houses ; but of these there are now important remains of only two—Llanthony Abbey and Tintern Abbey. Llan- thony Abbey in the Black mountains was founded by William de Lacy for Cistercians in 1103, and is one of the earliest examples in England of the Pointed style. The ruins consist of portions of the nave, transept, central tower, and choir. Tintern Abbey, belong- ing to the same order, and founded by Walter de Clare in 1131, occupies a position of great beauty on the Wye. The building, which is Early English to Decorated, is almost entire, with the exception of the roof, and may be ranked as among the finest of the monastic ruins in England. Of the churches, those chiefly worthy of mention are Abergavenny, belonging to a Benedictine priory, and containing a number of old tombs ; Chepstow, partly Norman, and possessing a richly-moulded doorway ; St Woolos church, Newport, also Norman; the Norman church of St Thomas, Monmouth ; Christ Church, principally Norman ; Matherne, Early English, with a tablet to Tewdris, king of Gwent ; and Usk, formerly attached to a Bene- dictine priory.*~~

~~*Monmovts (Welsh Aynwy), a parliamentary and muni- cipal borough of England, and the county town of Mon- mouthshire, is picturesquely situated at the confluence of the Wye and Monnow, in a valley almost surrounded by hills, 18 miles south of Hereford, and 128 west of London. By means of the Wye it has water communication with Bristol and with Hereford, but the former trade by barges has now ceased. Portions of the old walls and of the four gates still remain; but there are only insignificant ruins of the old castle in which Henry V. was born, and which was originally a Saxon fortress. After the Norman Conquest it was placed in the hands of William Fitz Osborn, whose descendant, John lord*~~

~~*of Monmouth, rebuilt it on a more extensive scale. Subsequently it came into the possession of John of Gaunt, and thus becaine attached to the house*~~

~~*of Lancaster. In 1646 it was taken by the parliamentary*~~

~~*MONM*~~

~~*forces. Besides the churches—the new church of St Mary, completed in 1882, and the church of St Thomas, an Old Norman structure—the principal public buildings are the market-house, the town-hall, and Jones's free grammar school in the Tudor style, which dates from 1614. The manufactures of the town are unimportant. The fine scenery of the Wye attracts a large number of tourists.*~~

~~*Monmouth was one of the strongholds of the Saxons; and under the name of Blestium formed one of the stations of the Romans. It was incorporated by Edward VI., and received additional privileges from Queen Mary, James I., and Charles II. It has sent members to parliament since the 27th of Henry VIIL., and, along with New- port and Usk, forms the Monmouth district of boroughs. he area of the municipal and parliamentary borough is 4983 acres, with a population in 1871 of 5879, and in 1881 of 6111.*~~

~~*MONMOUTH, a small manufacturing city of the United States, in Warren county, Illinois, 180 miles south- west of Chicago by the main line of the Chicago, Burling- ton, and Quincy Railroad, and 182 miles north of St Louis, by the St Louis division of the same railway. The Iowa Central Railway passes through the city. An opera- house and Monmouth College are among the principal buildings. The population increased from 4662 in 1870 to 5000 in 1880. 'The city charter dates from 1852.*~~

~~*MONMOUTH, James, Doxe oF (1649-1685), was the son of Lucy Walters, "a brown, beautiful, bold, but insipid creature," who became the mistress of Charles II. during his exile at the Hague. He was born at Rotterdam on 9th April 1649. That Charles was his father is more than doubtful, for Lucy Walters had previously lived with Robert Sidney, brother of Algernon, and the boy resem- bled him very closely. Charles,*~~

~~*however, always recog- nized him as his son, and lavished on him an almost doting affection. Until the Restoration he was placed under the care, first of Lord Crofts, and then of the queen-dowager, receiving his education to the age of nine from Roman Catholics, but thenceforward from Protestant tutors. In July 1662 he was sent for by Charles, and at thirteen was placed under the protection of Lady Castlemaine and in the full tide of the worst influences of the court. No formal acknowledgment of his relation to the king was made until his betrothal to Anne Scott, daughter of the earl of Buccleuch, and the wealthiest heiress of Scotland, whom he married in 1665. During 1663 he was made duke of Orkney, duke of Monmouth, and knight of the Garter, and received honorary degrees at both universities. At court he was treated asa prince of the blood. In 1665 he served with credit under the duke of York in the san- guinary naval battle off Lowestoft. A captaincy in the Life Guards was given him, and in 1670, on the death of Monk, he was made captain-general of the king's forces. Offices of wealth also were showered upon him, and he was admitted to the privy council. In 1670 Monmouth was with the court at Dover, and it is affirmed by Reresby that the mysterious death of Charles's sister, the duchess of Orleans, was due to her husband's revenge on the dis- covery of her intrigue with the duke. It is certain, from an entry by Pepys, that as early as 1666 he had estab- lished a character for vice and profligacy. He was the direct author of the attack in December 1670 on Sir John Coventry, and only a few months later received the royal pardon for his share in the wanton murder of a street watchman. De Gramont, in his vivid sketch of Mon- mouth, after describing the beauty and bodily prowess for which he was celebrated, notices the fatal emptiness and poverty of his mind: "Tous les avantages du corps par- loient pour lui; mais son esprit ne disait pas un petit mot en sa faveur. Il n'avait de sentimens que ce qu'on lui en inspirait." F*~~

~~*Hitherto Monmouth had been but the spoiled child of a wicked court. Now, however, by no act or will of his*~~

~~*OU Tl a 755*~~

~~*own, he began to be a person politically important. As early as 1662 the king's excessive fondness for him had caused anxiety. Even then the fear*~~

~~*of a "difference" between Monmouth and James, duke of York, exercised men's minds ; and every caress or promotion kept the fear alive. Who could tell but that, in default of legitimate issue from his queen, Charles might declare Monmouth himself his lawful son? A civil war would be the certain consequence. Soon after 1670 the matter took a more serious aspect. The anti-popery spirit was rapidly becoming a frenzy, and the succession of James a probability and a terror. Charles was urged to legitimize Monmouth by a declara- tion of his marriage with Lucy Walters. He returned answer that, much as he loved the duke, he would rather see him hanged at Tyburn than own him for his legiti- mate son. Every attempt, however, was henceforth made, especially by Shaftesbury, to accustom people to this idea. He was taught to regard himself as the representative of the Protestant interest, and his position was emphasized by James's second marriage with the Roman Catholic princess Mary of Modena. From this time his popular title was "the Protestant duke." Charles was induced to confer many proniinent employments upon him. The influence of James, however, was strong enough to prevent his obtaining the lord-lieutenancy of Ireland ; but he received the command of the 6000 troops who assisted the French in the second Dutch war, and, though without any claims to generalship, behaved with courage in the field. In 1674 he was made "'commander-in-chief ;" and, in connexion with this, another unsuccessful attempt, graphically described in Clarke's Infe of James, was made to gain from Charles. a tacit admission of his legitimacy. At Shaftesbury's instance he was placed in command of the army employed in 1675 against the Scottish Covenanters, and was present at Both- well Bridge (22d June 1679). He was also, at the king's request, elected chancellor of the university of Cambridge. In 1678, when Charles was driven into war with Louis, Monmouth took the command of the English contingent, and again gained credit for personal courage at the battle of St Denis. On his return to London England was in the throes of the popish terror. The idea of securing the Protestant succession by legitimizing Monmouth again took shape and was eagerly pressed on by Shaftesbury ; at the time it seemed possible that success would wait on the audacity.*~~

~~*The Pensionary parliament was dissolved in January 1678-79, and was succeeded by one still more determined in its anti-popery spirit. To avoid*~~

~~*the storm, and to save, if possible, his brother's interests, Charles instructed him to leave the country. James retired to Brussels, the king having previously signed a declaration that he "never was married, nor gave contract to any woman whatsoever but to my wife Queen Catherine." In spite of this, Mon- mouth might naturally now nourish ambitious views. His rival was off the stage ; Shaftesbury, his chief supporter, was president of the remodelled privy council; and he himself was the favourite of the city. In the summer of 1679 the king suddenly fell ill, and the dangers of a dis- puted succession became terribly apparent. The party opposed to Monmouth, or rather to Shaftesbury, easily prevailed upon Charles to consent to his brother's tem- porary return. When, after the king's recovery, James went back to Brussels, he received a promise that Mon- mouth too should be removed from favour and ordered to leave the country. Accordingly, in September 1679, the latter repaired to Utrecht, while shortly afterwards James's friends so far gained ground as to obtain for him permission to reside at Edinburgh instead of at Brussels. Within two months of his arrival at Utrecht, Monmouth secretly returned to England, arriving in London on 27th*~~

~~*November. Shaftesbury had assiduously kept alive the anti-popery agitation, and Monmouth, as the champion of Protestantism, was received with every sign of popular delight. The king appeared to be greatly incensed, deprived him of all his offices, and ordered him to leave the kingdom at once. This he refused to do, and the only notice taken of the disobedience was that Charles forbade him to appear at court.*~~

~~*It was at this time that the Appeal from the Country to the City, written by Ferguson, was published, in which the legitimacy was tacitly given up, and in which it was urged that "he that hath the worst title will make the best king." Now it was too that the exclusionists, who, in the absence of parliament, were deprived of their best basis for agitation, developed the system of petitioning. So promptly and successfully was this answered by the "abhorrers" that Charles, feeling the ground safer under him, recalled James to London,—a step immediately fol- lowed by the resignation of the chief Whigs in the council.*~~

~~*Once more, however, a desperate attempt was made, by the fable of the "black box," to establish Monmouth's claims ; and once more these claims were met by Charles's public declarations in the Gazette that he had never been married but to the queen. Still acting under Shaftesbury's advice, Monmouth now went upon the first of his progresses in the west of England, visiting the chief members of the country party, and gaining by his open and engaging manner much popularity among the people. In August 1680 James returned to Edinburgh, his right to the suc- cession being again formally acknowledged by Charles. Monmouth at once threw himself more vehemently than ever into the plans of the exclusionists. He spoke and voted for exclusion in the House of Lords, and used lan- guage not likely to be forgotten by James when an oppor- tunity should come for resenting it. He was ostenta- tiously feasted by the city, the stronghold of Shaftesbury's influence ; and it was observed as he drove to dinner that the mark of illegitimacy had been removed from the arms on his coach.*~~

~~*The year 1681 seemed likely to witness another civil war. The parliament finished a session of hysterical pas- sion by passing a series of resolutions of extreme violence, of which one was that Monmouth should be restored to all his offices and commands; and when Charles summoned afresh parliament to meet at Oxford the leaders of the exclusionists went thither with troops of armed men. Not until the dissolution of this last parliament on 27th March 1681 did the weakness of Monmouth's cause appear. In a moment the ground was cut from under the feet of his supporters; their basis for agitation was gone; pamphlets and broadsheets could ill supply the place of a determined and unscrupulous majority of the House of Commons, The deep-seated respect for legitimate descent asserted itself, and a great reaction took place. In November Dryden published Absalom and Achitophel. Shaftesbury was attacked, but was saved for the time by a favouring jury. Monmouth himself did not escape insult in the street and from the pulpit. He thought it wise to try to make his peace with the king, but he did so in terms which incensed Charles the more. He was forbidden to hold communication with the court ; and, when he went in September 1682 on a second progress through the western and north-western counties, his proceedings were narrowly watched, and he was at length arrested at Staf- ford. Severity and extreme lenity were strangely mingled in the treatment he received. He was released on bail, and in*~~

~~*February 1683, after the flight and death of Shaftes- bury, he openly broke the implied conditions of his bail by paying a third visit to Chichester with Lord Grey and others on pretence of a hunting expedition.*~~

~~*MONMOUT?TSE*~~

~~*It is probable that Monmouth never went so far as to think of armed rebellion ; but there is little doubt that he had talked over schemes likely to lead to this, and that Shaftesbury had gone further still. The Rye HIouse plot gave an excuse for arresting the Whig leaders; Russell and Sidney were judicially murdered ; Monmouth retired to Toddington in Bedfordshire, and was left untouched. Court intrigue favouring him, he succeeded, by the betrayal of his comrades and by two submissive letters, in reconciling himself with the help of HIalifax both to the king and to James, though he had the humiliation of seeing his con- fessions and declarations of penitence published at length in the Gazette. HIis character for pettishness and folly was now amply illustrated. HIe denied that he had given evidence ; he then wrote a recantation of the denial. HIe managed by importunity to get from the king the paper of recantation ; and lastly, by the advice of his wife, he offered again to sign the paper which he had withdrawn. Charles heartily despised him, and yet appears to have retained affection for him. HIis partial return to favour raised the hopes of his partisans ; to check these, Algernon Sidney was executed. Monmouth was now subpcenaed to give evidence at the trial of young HIampden. To escape from the difficulties thus opened before him he fled to HIolland, probably with Charles's connivance, and though he once more, in November 1684, visited England, it is doubtful whether he ever again saw the king. From that time till the king's death he lived with HIenrietta Went- worth, his mistress, in HIolland and at Brussels.*~~

~~*The quiet accession of James II. soon brought Monmouth to the crisis of his fate. Though at first desirous of retire- ment, his character was too weak to withstand the urgency of more determined men. Within two months of Charles's death he had yielded to the impetuosity of Argyll and others of the exiles, and to vague invitations from England. It is curious, as showing the light in which his claims were viewed by his fellow-*~~

~~conspirators, that one of the terms of the compact between them was that, though \ionmouth should lead the expedition, he should not assume the title of king without their consent, and should, if the rebellion were successful, resign it and accept whatever rank the nation might offer. Now, as always, he was but a puppet in other men's hands.~~

~~On the 2d of May Argyll sailed with three ships to raise the west of Scotland; and three weeks later, with a following of only eighty-two persons, of whom Lord Grey, Fletcher of Saltoun, Wade, and Ferguson, the author of the Appeal from the Country to the City, were the chief, Monmouth him- self set out for the west of England, where, as the strong-hold of Protestant dissent and as the scene of his former pro- gresses, he could alone hope for immediate support. Even here, however, there was no movement ; and when on 11th June Monmouth's three ships, having eluded the royal fleet, arrived off Lyme Regis, he landed amid the curiosity rather than the sympathy of the inhabitants. In the market-place his "declaration," drawn up by Ferguson, was read aloud. In this document James was painted in the blackest colours. Not only was he declared to be the murderer of Essex, but he was directly charged with having poisoned Charles to obtain his crown. Monmouth soon collected an undisci- plined body of some 1500 men, with whom he seized Axminster, and entered 'Taunton. Meanwhile the parlia- ment had declared it treason to assert Monmouth's legiti- macy, or his title to the crown; a reward of £5000 was offered for him dead or alive, and an act of attainder was passed in unusual haste. Troops had been hurriedly sent to meet him, and when he reached Bridgwater Albemarle was already in his rear. From Bridgwater the army marched through Glastonbury to attack Bristol, into which Lord Feversham had hastily thrown a regiment of foot-~~

~~guards. The attempt, however, miscarried; and, after summoning Bath in vain, Monmouth, with a disordered force, began his retrograde march through Philips-Norton and Frome, continually harassed by Feversham's soldiers. At the latter place he heard of Argyll's total rout in the western Highlands. He was now anxious to give up the enterprise, but was~~

~~*overruled by Grey, Wade, and others. On the 3d of July he reached Bridgwater again, with an army little better than a rabble, living at free quarters and behaving with reckless violence. On Sunday the 5th Feversham entered Sedgemoor in pursuit ; Monmouth the same night attempted a surprise, but his troops were hope- lessly routed. He himself, with Grey and a few others, fled over the Mendip Hills to the New Forest, hoping to reach the coast and escape by sea. The whole country, however, was on the alert, and at midnight on the 8th, within a month of their landing, James heard that the revolt, desperate from the first, was over, and that his rival had been captured close to Ringwood, in Hampshire.*~~

~~*The poor strain in Monmouth's character was now shown. On the day of his capture he wrote to James in terms of the most unmanly contrition, ascribing his wrong- doings to the action of others, and imploring an interview. On the 13th the prisoners reached the Tower, and on the next day Monmouth was allowed to see James. The accounts of this interview are difficult to reconcile in some points, but all agree that Monmouth's behaviour was un- manly in the extreme. No mercy was shown him, nor did he in the least deserve mercy ; he had wantonly attacked the peace of the country, and had cruelly libelled James. The king had not, even in his own mind, any family tie to restrain him from exercising just severity, for he had never believed Monmouth to be the son of any one but Robert Sidney. Two painful interviews followed with the wife for whom he bore no love, and who for him could feel no respect ; another imploring letter was sent to the king, and abject protestations and beseechings were made to all whom he saw. He offered, as the last hope, to become a Roman Catholic, and this might possibly have proved successful, but the priests sent by James to ascertain the sincerity of Ins "conversion" declared that he cared only for his life and not for his soul.*~~

~~*He met his death on the scaffold with calmness and dignity. In the paper which he left signed, and to which he referred in answer to the questions wherewith the busy bishops plied him, he expressed his sorrow for having assumed the royal style, and at the last moment confessed that Charles had denied to him privately, as he had publicly, that he was ever married to Lucy Walters. He died at the age of thirty-six, on the 15th of July 1685. 'Thus ended," says Evelyn, "this quondam duke, darling of his father and*~~

~~the ladies, being extremely handsome and adroit ; an excellent souldier and dancer, a favourite of the people, of an easy nature, debauched by lusts, seduced by crafty knaves, who would have set him up only to make a pro- perty, and took the opportunity of the king being of another religion to gather a party of discontented men. He failed and perished."~~

~~Authorities for Monmouth's career are, besides the known modern histories, Roberts's Life (1844), Evelyn's and Pepys's Diaries, Old- mixon's History (1724), James II.'s A/cmoirs, Clarke's Life of James, Reresby's Memoirs, Sidney's Diary (1843), Scott's notes to Absalom~~

~~and Achitophel, and The Heroic Life, &c. (1683). For the rebellion, Lord Grey's Secret History should be consulted. (O. A.)~~

~~MONMOUTH, Grorrrey or. See GEOFFREY or Mon- MOUTH..~~

~~MONOPHYSITES. CHURCH.~~

~~MONOPOLI, a city of Italy, in the province of Bari, is situated on the coast of the Adriatic, 25 miles by rail south-east of Bari. It is a bishop's see, is surrounded by~~

~~See Evtrycues and JAcoBITE~~

~~757~~

~~ancient walls, and possesses a castle built by Charles V. in 1552, a cathedral, and a hospital dating from 1368. The harbour is neither large nor well protected, but a certain amount of trade is carried on in the export of local pro- ducts. The population was about 12,000 in the 17th century ; 12,377 in 1861; and 13,000 in 1871, that of the commune being 20,918. Monopoli probably grew up after the destruction of Egnatia (5th century), the ruins of which lie a few miles to the south.~~

~~MONOPOLY (povorwia, exclusive sale). Though still used in the sense of the original Greek, the term is more accurately applied only to grants from the crown or from parliament, the private act of an individual whereby he obtains control over the supply of any particular article being~~

~~*properly defined as "engrossing." It was from the practice of the sovereign granting to a favourite, or as a reward for good service, a monopoly in the sale or manu- facture of some particular class of goods that the system of protecting inventions arose, and this fact lends additional interest to the history of monopolies (see Parents). When the practice of making such grants first arose it does not appear easy to say. Sir Edward Coke laid it down that by the ancient common law the king could grant to an inventor, or to the importer of an invention from abroad, a temporary monopoly in his invention, but that grants in restraint of trade were illegal. Such, too, was the law laid down in the first recorded case, Darcy v. Allin (the case of monopolies, 1602), and this decision was never overruled, though the law was frequently evaded. The patent rolls of the Plantagenets show few instances of grants of mono- polies (the earliest known is temp. Edw. III.), and we come down to the reign of Henry VIII. before we find much evidence of this exercise of the prerogative in the case of either new inventions or known articles of trade. Elizabeth, as is well known, granted patents of monopoly so freely that the practice became a grave abuse, and on several occasions gave rise to serious complaints in the House of Commons. Lists prepared at the time show that many of the commonest necessaries of life were the subjects of monopolies, by which their price was grievously enhanced. That the queen did not assume the right of making these grants entirely at her pleasure is shown, not only by her own statements in answer to addresses from the House, but by the fact that the preambles to the instruments convey- ing the grants always set forth some public benefit to be derived from their action. Thus a grant of a monopoly to sell playing- cards is made, because "divers subjects of able bodies, which might go to plough, did employ them- selves in the art of making of cards"; and one for the sale of starch is justified on the ground that it would prevent wheat being wasted for the purpose. Accounts of the angry debates in 1565 and 1601 are given in Hume and elsewhere. The former debate produced a promise from the queen that she would be careful in exercising her privileges ; the latter a proclamation which, received with great joy by the House, really had but little effect in stopping the abuses complained of. A few grants were cancelled, others limited, and others again left to the action: of the ordinary law courts (instead of the privy council). In speaking of the results of the proclamation, previous writers seem to have*~~

~~been misled by the promises made in the queen's speech, promises by no means carried out in the text of the document itself, a copy of which still exists in the British Museum.~~

~~'In the first partament of James I. a "committee of grievances " was appointed, of which Sir Edward Coke was chairman. Numerous monopoly patents were brought up before them, and were cancelled. Many more, however, were granted by the king, and there grew up a race of "'purveyors," who made use of the privileges granted them~~

~~under the great seal for various purposes of extortion, One~~

~~of the most notorious of these was Sir Giles Mompesson, who fled the country to avoid trial in 1621.~~

~~promises, the Statute of Monopolies was passed in 1623.~~

~~This made all monopolies illegal, except such as might be granted by parliament, or were in respect of new manu- Upon this excepting clause is built up the entire English system of letters patent for inven-~~

~~factures or inventions.~~

~~tions, the statute itself (amended by later Acts) being still in force. The Act was strictly enforced, and by its aid the evil system of monopolies was eventually abolished. This result was not indeed immediately achieved, for even during the Protectorate cases of monopoly patents were brought up, and the patents cancelled as grievances. Parliament has, of course, never exercised its power of granting to any individual exclusive privileges of dealing in any articles of trade, such as the privileges of the Elizabethan monopolists ; but the licences required to be taken out by dealers in wine, spirits, tobacco, &c., are lineal descendants of the old monopoly grants, while the quasi-monopolies enjoyed by railways, canals, gas and water companies, &c., under Acts of Parliament, are also representative of the ancient practice.~~

MONOTHELITES (povodeAfjra:, monothelite) was the name given to those who, in the 7th century, while other- wise orthodox, fell into the heresy of maintaining that Christ had only one will. The monothelite controversy had its origin in the efforts of the emperor Heraclius to win back for the church and the empire the excommuni- cated and persecuted Monophysites or Eutychians of Egypt and Syria. It seems to have been while in Armenia in 622 that, in an interview with Paul, the head of the Severians (Monophysites) there, he first broached the doc- trine of the pia évépyeva of Christ, ze, the doctrine that the divine and human natures, while quite distinct in His one person, had but one activity and operation.' At a somewhat later date he wrote to Arcadius of Cyprus, com- manding that "two energies" should not be spoken of ; and in 626, while in Lazistan (Colchis), he had a meeting with the metropolitan, Cyrus of Phasis, during which this command was discussed, and Cyrus was at last bidden seek further instruction on the subject from Sergius, patriarch of Constantinople, a strong upholder of the pia évepyera, and the emperor's counsellor with regard to it. So well did he profit by the teaching he received in this quarter that, in 630 or 631, Cyrus was appointed to the vacant patriarchate of Alexandria, and in 633 succeeded in recon- ciling the Severians of his province on the basis of pia Deavdpixi) évépyeva (one divine-human energy). He was, however, opposed by Sophronius, a monk from Palestine, who, after vainly appealing to Cyrus, actually went to Con- stantinople to remonstrate with Sergius himself. Shortly afterwards Sergius wrote to Pope Honorius, and received a friendly reply. Sophronius, however, who meanwhile had been made patriarch of Jerusalem (634), refused to be silenced, and in his Epistola Synodica strongly insisted on the "two energies." So intense did the controversy now become that at last, towards the end of 638, Heraclius published his Zcthesis, or Exposition of the Faith, which prohibited the use of the phrase "one energy," because of its disquieting effects on some minds, as seeming to militate against the doctrine of the two natures; while, on the other hand, the expression " two energies" was interdicted because

1 According to some church historians, it was Paul who introduced the doctrine; but this statement seems to rest on a misinterpretation of the authorities. See Hefele, Conciliengesch., iii. p. 124 sg. (1877), who also traces the previous history of the expressions pia évépyea, Oeavdpixy

~~*evépyera, especially as found in the writings of the Pseudo- Dionysius Areopagita.*~~

~~*After the introduction of sevcral bills, and several attempts by James to compromise the matter by orders in council and*~~

~~*it seemed to imply that Christ had two wills. That Christ had but one will was declared to be the only orthodox doctrine, and all the faithful were enjoined to hold and teach it without addition or deduction. The document was not acceptable, however, to Popes Severinus and John IV., the immediate successors of Honorius ; and Maximus, the confessor, succeeded in stirring up such violent opposi- tion in North Africa and Italy that, in 648, Constans IT. judged it expedient to withdraw his grandfather's offensive edict, and to substitute for it his own Typus (TUmos rept miorews), forbidding all discussion of the questions of the duality or singleness of either the energy or the will of Christ. The scheme of doctrine of the first four general councils, in all its vagueness as to these points, was to be maintained; so far as the controversy had gone, the dis- putants on either side were to be held free from censure, but to resuine it would involve penal consequences. The reply of the Western Church was promptly given in the unambiguously dyothelite decrees of the Lateran synod held by Martin I. in 649; but the cruel persecutions to which both Martin and Maximus were exposed, and finally succumbed, secured for the imperial 7'ypus the assent at least of silence. With the accession of Constantine Pogo- natus in 668 the controversy once more revived, and the new emperor resolved to summon a general council. It met at Constantinople in 680, having been preceded in 679 by a brilliant synod under Pope Agatho at Rome, where it had been agreed to depart in nothing from the decrees of the Lateran synod. At Constantinople the condemnation of the monothelite heresy was explicit and complete, Pope Honorius being anathematized by name along with the others who had supported it. Beyond the limits of the empire, monothelism survived for some centuries in Lebanon among the Maronitzs (¢.v.), who did not abjure their heresies until 1182.*~~

~~*Sce the church historians, and especially Hefele (op. cit.), whose*~~

~~*obvious partisanship can only slightly affect the reader's apprecia- tion of his full and accurate Icarning.*~~

~~*MONREALE, a contraction of '"monte-reale," was so called from a palace built there by the Norman Roger L, king of Sicily. It is now a town of about 16,300 inhabit- ants, situated 5 miles inland from Palermo, on the slope of Mount Caputo overlooking the beautiful and very fer- tile valley called 'La Concha d'Oro" (the Golden Shell), famed for its orange, olive, and almond trees, the produce of which is exported in large quantities. The town, which for long was a mere village, owed its origin to the found- ing of a large Benedictine monastery, with its church, the seat of the metropolitan archbishop of Sicily.!. This, the greatest of all the monuments of the wealth and artistic taste of the Norman kings in northern Sicily, who in 1072 expelled the Mohammedans and established themselves there with Palermo as their capital, was begun about 1170 by William IT., and in 1182 the church, dedicated to the Assumption of the Virgin Mary, was, by a bull of Pope Lucius III., elevated to the rank of a metropolitan cathe- dral. It was, and is even now, one of the most magni- ficent buildings in the world, and Pope Lucius in no way exaggerated its splendour when he said in his bull, "ut simile opus per aliquem regem factum non fuerit a diebus antiquis."*~~

~~*The archiepiscopal palace and monastic buildings on the south side were of great size and magnificence, and were surrounded by a massive precinct wall, crowned at intervals by twelve towers. This has been mostly rebuilt, and but little now remains except ruins of some of the towers, a great part of the monks' dormitory and frater, and the very splendid cloister, completed about 1200. This latter is well*~~

~~*1 An earlier church appears to have existed at Monreale since the 6th century, but no traces of it now remain.*~~

~~*preserved, and is one of the finest cloisters both for size and beauty of detail that now exists anywhere. It is about 170 feet square, with pointed arches covered with marble inlay, supported on pairs of columns in white marble, 216*~~

~~*SOUTH AISLE OF CHOIR*~~

~~*3) WWietiame*~~

~~*AAAAANAT — cms _ S ~ fey S omy*~~

~~*9*~~

~~*100 FEET*~~

~~*” (e) oe 4 Wl a). @ — = i e (| Oo ay Bt = NAVE v) {e| — 40 zo x 4 30 {e) iC) Wu YO 20 a) fo) 10 s*~~

~~*» |e*~~

~~*{*~~

~~*Plan of the cathedral of Monreale, as built in the 12th century, omitting later additions.*~~

~~*(NOW DESTROYED.)*~~

~~*1, 1. Stairs to towers, now altered. 11. High altar and baldacchino. 2. Chapel under the south ambo. 12, Altar in northern apse. 3. Stairs to ambo. 13. Altar in southern apse. 4, Holy-water stoup. 14. Altar at tomb of William I. 5, 5. *Pulpitum” or choir-screen, 15. Archbishop’s throne. now destroyed. 16, 16. Seats for clergy. — 6,6. Screens behind stalls, now 17. Door to great cloister. destroyed. 18, Door to chapter house. 7, 7. Stalls, now destroyed. 19. Door to sacristy. 8. King’s throne. 20, 20. Doors to royal palace. 9. Archbishop’s throne. 21. Bronze door by Barisanos. 10, 10. Sanctuary screen. 22, Bronze door by Bonannus.*~~

~~*in all, which are sumptuously decorated either by rich sur- face carving or by bands of patterns in gold, silver, and colours, made of glass tesseree, arranged either spirally or vertically from end to end of each shaft. The marble caps are each richly carved with figures and foliage executed with great skill and wonderful fertility of invention—no two being alike. At one angle, a square pillared projection*~~

contains the marble fountain or monks' lavatory, evidently the work of Moslem sculptors.

The chief feature of the place—the church—tike the main cloister, is fortunately well preserved. In plan it is a curious mixture of Eastern and Western arrangement (sce fig.). The nave is like an Italian basilica, while the large triple-apsed choir is like one of the early three-apsed churches, of which so many examples still exist in Syria and other Eastern countries (see De Vogué, Syrie Cen-

trale). It is, in fact, like two quite different churches put together endwise. The basilican nave is wide, with narrow aisles. Monolithic columns of Oriental granite (except

one, which is of cipollino), evidently the spoils of older buildings, on each side support eight pointed arches much stilted. There is no triforium, but a high clerestory with wide two-light windows, with simple tracery like those in the nave-aisles and throughout the church. The other half, Eastern in two senses, is both wider and higher than the nave. It also is divided into a central space with two aisles, each of the divisions ending at the east with an apse. The roofs throughout are of open woodwork very low in pitch, constructionally plain, but richly decorated with colour, now mostly restored. At the west end of the nave are two projecting towers, with narthex-entrance between them. A large open atrium, which once existed at the west, is now completely destroyed. The outside of the church is plain, except the aisle walls and three eastern apses, which are decorated with intersecting pointed arches and other ornaments inlaid in marble. The outsides of the principal doorways and their pointed arches are magni- ficently enriched with carving and inlay, a curious com- bination of three styles—Norman-French, Byzantine, and Arab.

It is, however, the enormous extent (80,630 square feet) and glittering splendour of the glass mosaics covering the interior, which make this church so marvellously splendid (see Mosaic). With the exception of a high dado, itself very beautiful, made of marble slabs enriched with bands of mosaic, the whole interior surface of the walls, including soffits and

~~jambs of all the arches, is covered with minute mosaic-pictures in brilliant colours on a gold ground, This gorgeous method of decoration takes the place of all purely architectural detail, such as mouldings and panelling. The mosaic covers even the edges of the arches and jambs, which are slightly rounded off, so as to allow them to be covered by the glass tesseree. This device gives apparent softness to all the edges, and greatly enhances the richness of effect produced by the gleaming gold grounds. The only carving inside is on the sculptured caps of the nave arcade, mostly Corinthian in style. The mosaic pictures are arranged in tiers, divided by horizontal and vertical bands of elaborate flowing mosaic ornament. In parts of the choir there are five of these tiers of subjects or single figures one above another. The half dome of the central apse has a colossal half-length figure of Christ, with a seated Virgin and Child below ; the other apses have full- length colossal figures of St Peter and St Paul. Inscrip- tions on each picture explain the subject or saint repre- sented; these are in Latin, except some few which are in Greek. The subjects are partly from the Old Testa- ment types of Christ and His scheme of redemption, with figures of those who prophesied and prepared for His coming. Towards the east are subjects from the New Testament, chiefly representing Christ's miracles and suffer- ing, with apostles, evangelists, and other saints. The design, execution, and choice of subjects all appear to be of Byzantine origin, the subjects being selected from the Menologium drawn up by the emperor Basilius Porphyro- genitus in the 10th century.~~

~~No other mosaics perhaps so closely resemble the Mon-~~

~~reale ones as those over the nave columns in the Church of the Nativity at Bethlehem. They are alike, not only in design and treatment, but also in the curious mixture of Latin and Greek in the inscriptions (see De Vogué, Eglises de la Terre Sainte, 1860). This similarity is easily accounted for by the fact that these two sets of mosaics, though so far apart, were executed about the same date and under the same conditions, viz., by the hands of Byzantine artists, working for Norman-French kings.~~

~~*In the central apse at Monreale, behind the high altar, is a fine marble throne for the archbishop. This position of the throne is a survival of the early basilican arrange- ment, when the apse and altar were at the west end. In that case the celebrant stood behind the altar at mass, and looked over it eastwards towards the people. This posi- tion of the throne was frequently reproduced in churches which, like this, have the apse at the east. On the north side, in front of the high altar, is another somewhat similar throne for the use of the king. The tomb of William I., the founder's father—a magnificent porphyry sarcophagus contemporary with the church, under a marble pillared canopy—and the founder William II.'s tomb, erected in 1575, were both shattered by a fire, which in 1811 broke out in the choir, injuring some of the mosaics, and destroying all the fine walnut choir-fittings, the organs, and most of the choir roof. The tombs were rebuilt, and the whole of the injured part of the church restored, mostly very clumsily, a few years after the fire. On the north of the choir are the tombs of Margaret, wife of William I, and her two sons Roger and Henry, together with an urn containing the viscera of St Louis of France, who died in 1270. The pavement of the triple choir, though much restored, is a very magnificent specimen of marble and porphyry mosaic in "opus Alexandrinum," with signs of Arab influence in its main lines.*~~

~~*Two bronze doors, those on the north and west of the church, are of great interest in the history of art. They are both divided into a number of square panels with sub- jects and single figures, chiefly from Bible history, cast in relief. That on the north is by Barisanos of Trani in southern Italy, an artist probably of Greek origin. It is inscribed BARISANUS TRAN. ME FECIT. The cathedrals at Trani and Ravello also have bronze doors by the same sculptor. The western door at Monreale, inferior to the northern one both in richness of design and in workmanship, is by Bonannus of Pisa, for the cathedral of which place he cast the still existing bronze door on the south, opposite the leaning tower. The one at Monreale is inscribed A.D, MCLXXXVI IND. III. BONANNUS CIVIS PISANVS ME FECIT. It is superior in execution to the Pisan one. The door by Barisanos is probably of about the same time, as other examples of his work with inscribed dates show that he was a contemporary of Bonannus. (See MrTAL-work.) The monastic library*~~

~~*contains some valuable MSS., especi- ally a number of bilingual documents in Greek and Arabic, the earliest being dated 1144. The archbishop now occu- pies the eastern part of the monastic buildings, the original palace being destroyed.*~~

~~*See Serradifalco, Duomo di Monreale, &c., 1838 ; Gravina, Duomo di Monreale, the best work on the subject, 1859 sg. ; Testa, Vita del Re Guglielmo II., 1765; Tarallo, I Reali Sepolert di Mon- reale, 1826; Hittorf et Zanth, Architecture de la Sicile, 1835; Gally Knight, Saracenic and Norman Remains in Sicily, London, 1840 ; W. Burges, Notes on Medizxval Mosaic, 1863; M. D, Wyatt, Mosaics of Middle Ages, London, 1849 ; Hessemer, Arabische wnd Alt-Italienische Bau-Verzierungen, 1853 ; Garrucci, Arte Cristiana, 1882. (J. H. M.)*~~

~~*MONROE, James (1758-1831), fifth president of the United States, was born 28th April 1758, in the county of Westmoreland, Virginia. According to the family tradition, their ancestors are traced back to a family of*~~

~~*Scottish cavaliers descended from Hector Monroe, an officer of Charles I. At the outbreak of the Revolutionary war, James Monroe was a student at the College of William and Mary, but left his studies in 1776 to join the continental army. He took part as lieutenant in the New Jersey campaign of that year, and was wounded at the battle of Trenton. The next year he served with the rank of captain on the staff of General William Alexander ("Lord Stirling"), but, thus being out of the line of promotion, he soon found himself without military employment. In 1780 he began the study of the law under the direction of Jefferson, then governor of Virginia. His intimacy with Jefferson at this time had probably a controlling influence upon his subse- quent political career. Hecontinued through all vicissitudes to possess the friendship and support of both Jefferson and Madison.*~~

~~*In 1782 Monroe was in the State legislature, and from 1783 to 1786 was a member of Congress. On retiring from Congress he entered upon the practice of the law at Fredericksburg, and was again elected to the legislature. In the Virginia convention of 1788 for the ratification of the*~~

constitution, he was among the opponents of that instrument ; but his course was approved by the legisla- ture of his State, who elected him United States senator in 1790 to fill the vacancy caused by the death of William Grayson. As senator he was a decided opponent of the Federalist administration. Nevertheless he was selected by Washington in 1794 as minister to France in place of Gouverneur Morris, a Federalist, recalled upon the request of the French Government. Being of the party who sym- pathized with the revolutionary struggle in France, it was expected that his appointment would be flattering to the Government of that country, and would also conciliate the French partyat home. The Governmentof the National Con- vention received Monroe with open signs of favour, and on his part he expressed his own and his country's sympathy with the French Republic with so much enthusiasm that Washington deemed his language not in keeping with the neutral policy which the administration had recently pro- claimed. At about the same time John Jay had negotiated a treaty of amity and commerce with England which gave great umbrage to France. It was alleged that the earlier treaty of 1778 with France was violated by the stipulations of the Jay treaty ; and the Directory seemed disposed to make of this a casus belli. In this emergency it was believed by Washington and his advisers that Monroe failed to represent properly the policy of the Government, and he was therefore recalled in 1796. In justification of his diplomatic conduct, he published the next year his View, a pamphlet of 500 pages. In 1799 he became governor of Virginia, and was twice re-elected. In the meantime the Republican party had come into power, with Jefferson as president, and Monroe was again called upon to fill an important diplomatic station. He was com- missioned on 10th January 1803 to act with Livingston, resident minister at Paris, in negotiating the purchase of New Orleans and the territory embracing the mouth of the Mississippi, which formed a part of the province of Louisiana, recently ceded by Spain to France. In view of the anticipated renewal of hostilities between England and France in 1803, Napoleon was anxious, for a consideration, to part with his new acquisition, which in the event of a war with England he would probably lose by conquest. The American commissioners met therefore with little difficulty in the accomplishment of their object. But, in the absence of instructions, they assumed the responsibility of negotiating the purchase not only of New Orleans but of the entire territory of Louisiana—an event

~~*that is hardly second in importance to any in the history of the country. Monroe was next commissioned as minister to England,*~~

~~*MON—MON*~~

~~*to succeed Rufus King, who had resigned. In 1804 he undertook a mission to Madrid, with the object of negotiating the purchase of the Floridas; but in this he was unsuccessful, and returned to London in 1805. next year he was joined in a commission with William Pinkney to negotiate a treaty with England to take the place of the Jay treaty, which expired in that year. Lords Auckland and Howick having been appointed on the part of England, a treaty was concluded on the last day of the year, which was perhaps more favourable to the United States than the Jay treaty ; but, like the latter, it contained no provision against the impressment of Ameri- can seamen. For this reason President Jefferson refused to subinit it to the Senate for ratification, but sent it back for revision. In the meantime Canning had become foreign secretary in place of Fox, and refused to re- open the negotiation. Monroe returned to the United States in 1807, and, as in the case of his first French mission, he drew up a defence of his diplomatic conduct in England. In 1808 certain disaffected Republicans attempted to put Monroe forward as the candidate for the presidency, but as Virginia declared in favour of Madison Monroe withdrew his name. In 1810 he was again in the legislature of his native State, and the next year its governor. But in this year he was called from the state to the national councils, superseding Robert Smith as secretary of state in Madison's cabinet, and took an active part in precipitating the war against England in 1812. On the retirement of Armstrong, after the capture of Washington in 1814, Monroe assumed the duties of the war department in addition to those of the state depart- ment, and by his energy and decision infused something of vigour into the conduct of the war. He was elected president in 1816, and was re-elected in 1820 without opposition. The period of his administration (1817-25) has been called "the era of good feeling," for the reason that the party issues of the past were mostly dead, and new issues had not yet arisen. In the formation of his cabinet Monroe showed the soundness of his judg- ment, selecting for the leading positions J. Q. Adams, J. C. Calhoun, W. H. Crawford, and William Wirt. With these*~~

~~*able advisers he devoted himself to the economic development of the country, which had been so long retarded by foreign complications. As president, more- over, he was able to accomplish in 1819 the acquisi- tion of the Floridas, which as minister to Spain he had failed to do in 1804, and to define the boundary of Louis- iana, which he had been the agent in purchasing in 1803. But Monroe is best known to later generations as the author of the so-called "Monroe doctrine," a declaration inserted in his seventh annual message, 2d December 1823. It was the formulation of the sentiment, then beginning to prevail, that America was for Americans. One of the principles of the neutral policy of the country, which had been established with much difficulty, had been that the United States would not interfere in European politics ; and now this policy was held to include the converse as a necessary corollary—that is, that Europe should not inter- fere in American politics, whether in North America or South America. The occasion of proclaiming this doctrine was the rumoured intervention of the Holy Alliance to aid Spain in the reconquest of her American colonies. President Monroe believed that such a policy entered upon by the allied continental powers of Europe would be dangerous to the peace and safety of the United States ; he therefore declared that "we would not view any intervention for the purpose of oppressing them (the Spanish American states) or controlling in any manner their destiny, by any European power, in any other light than as the manifesta- tion of an unfriendly disposition towards the United*~~

~~*The.*~~

~~*761*~~

~~*States." This declaration, together with the known hos- tility of England to such a project, was sufficient to prevent further action on the part of the Alliance.*~~

~~*_ On the expiration of his presidential term Monroe re- tired to Oak Hill, his residence in London county, Vir- ginia ; but at the time of his death, 4th July 1831, he was residing in New York. He was married about 1786, and left two daughters. He was a man of spotless character ; and, though not possessing ability of the first order, he ranks high as a wise and prudent statesman. His Infe has been written by D. C. Gilman. (F. SN.)*~~

~~*MONROE, a city of the United States, county seat of Monroe county, Michigan, lies 32 miles south-south-west of Detroit, on both banks of the Raisin river, 3 miles inland from Lake Erie, with which it has been connected by a ship-canal since 1843. It is a station on the Canada Southern, the Flint and Pére Marquette, and the Detroit division of the Lake Shore and Michigan Southern Rail- ways. Agricultural implement factories, a spoke and hub factory, foundries and engineering-works, carriage-works, grist-mills, paper-mills, and fruit-drying establishments are in operation. From 400 to 500 tons of grapes are shipped yearly from the neighbouring vineyards, and over 100,000 gallons of wine are made here. The population in 1880 was 4928. Settled as Frenchtown by a body of Canadians in 1784, Monroe received its present name, in honour of President Monroe, in 1817. Its city charter dates from 1837. It was the scene of the battle of the river Raisin, 22d January 1813.*~~

~~*MONROVIA. See Liperza, vol. xiv. p. 508.*~~

~~*MONS, a town of Belgium, the capital of the province of Hainault, on the rivers Haine and Trouille, and 31 miles south-west of Brussels. The population in 1880 was 25,600. Mons is divided by the river Trouille into an upper and lower town, the first built on rising ground in the shape of an amphitheatre, the second extending into the plain ; four bridges connect the two. The place is pleasing and cheerful of aspect, having broad well-paved streets and handsome squares. The fortifications, once among the strongest of the Continent, have quite recently been razed, their site being now occupied by an extensive avenue or boulevard. Among the monuments worthy of mention are—the church of St Waudru, one of the best types of original architecture to be found in Belgium ; the church of St Elizabeth, a combination of the Gothic style and the Corinthian ; the town-hall, erected in 1458; and the belfry tower, next to which formerly rose the old castle of the counts of Hainault, the demolition of which led, a few years ago, to the discovery of some curious mural paintings belonging to the 12th century. Mons possesses a military arsenal, a school of engineering, and a public library of importance; the administration of law and government for the province is concentrated there. It contains manufactures of cotton, velvet, cloth, muslin, soap, and clay pipes; also brass-foundries, tan-yards, and breweries, and a market*~~

~~*of some note for agricultural produce, cattle, horses, and tobacco. The main source of the wealth and prosperity of Mons is derived from the collieries which exist in its vicinity, and yield annually between two and three million tons of first-class coal, the greater part of which is carried into France ; in the imme- diate neighbourhood of the town are the large and important villages of Jemmapes, Quaregnon, Frameries, Paturages, Wasmes, and Dour, each with a population of from ten to twelve thousand inhabitants; these localities, together with many others somewhat less peopled, form an agglomeration called the Borinage, rich in coal-mines, in iron-foundries, in stone and marble quarries, and may be considered as one*~~

~~*of the busiest centres in the world. Mons is built on the site of a Roman camp erected by Julius*~~

~~*XVI. —96*~~

~~*762*~~

~~*occupied by a brother of Cicero, who was cre Spee of the Eburones. In the 8th cen- tury a lady of the name of Waudru or Waltrud, countess of Hain- ault, founded a convent, which became the centre of Hs town. In 804 Charlemagne made it the capital of the county of Hainault ; it was fortified in 1148. Baldwin VI., afterwards Latih emperor of Constantinople, was very active in promoting the interests of Mons, and endowed it with a celebrated charter in the year 1200. After being reduced by nearly one half by the plague, Mons received within its walls the Jews whom Philip the Long had expelled from France. The city attained its highest degree of prosperity under Charles V., but its greatness was arrested during the government of the duke of Alva by civic disturbances, which lasted until the reign of Albert and Isabella. In more recent times Mons has had to pay tribute to the warlike spirit of its neighbours ; it was taken by Louis XIV. in 1691, given back in 1697, and retaken in 1701 and again in 1709. In 1748 it fell into the hands of Austria; the Belgian insurgents stormed it in 1789; the French in 1792, when Dumouriez won the battle of Jemmapes under its walls; in 1814 it belonged to the Netherlands, and has formed part of the Belgian kingdom since 1830.*~~

~~*MONSOON. INDIAN OCEAN,*~~

~~*MONSTER. Monsters or monstrous births are the sub- ject of Animal Teratology, a department of morphological science treating of deviations from the normal development of the embryo. The term "embryo" is conventionally limited, in human anatomy, to the ovum in the first three months of its intra-uterine existence, while it is still develop- ing or acquiring the rudiments of its form, the term "fostus" being applied to it in the subsequent months during which the organism grows on the lines of development already laid down. It is mostly in the first or embryonic period that those deviations from the normal occur which present themselves as monstrosities at the time of birth ; these early traces of deviation within the embryo may be slight, but they "grow with its growth and strengthen with its strength," until they amount to irreparable defects or accretions, often incompatible with extra-uterine life. The name of '"teratology," introduced by Etienne Geoffroy St- Hilaire (1822), is derived from répas, the equivalent of monstrum ; teratology is a term new enough to have none but scientific associations, while the Latin word has a long record of superstitions identified with it. The myths of siren, satyr, Janus, cyclops, and the like, with the cor- responding figures in Northern mythology, find a remote anatomical basis in monstrosities which have, for the most part, no life except in the foetal state. The mythology of giants and dwarfs is, of course, better founded. The term monster was originally used in the same sense as portent : Cicero(De Div.,i.) says, "Jfonstra, ostenta, portenta, prodigia appellantur, quoniam monstrant, ostendunt, portendunt, et predicunt." Luther! speaks of the birth of a monstrous calf, evidently the subject of contemporary talk, as pointing to some great impending change, and he expresses the hope that the catastrophe might be the Last Day itself. The rise of more scientific views will be sketched at the close of the article.*~~

~~*Although monstrosities, both in the human species and in other animals, tend to repeat certain definite types of erroneous development, they do not fall readily into classes. It is remarked by Vrolik that a scientific classification is impracticable from being too cumbrous, and that a con- venient grouping is all that need be attempted. The most usual grouping (originally suggested by Buffon, 1800) is into monstra per excessum,*~~

~~*monstra per defectum, and monstra per fabricam alienam. It seems useful, however, to place the more simple cases of excess and of defect side by side; and it is necessary, above all, to separate the double monsters from the single, the theory of the former being a distinct chapter in teratology.*~~

~~*See METEOROLOGY, supra, p. 148 sq., and*~~

~~*1 Tn a passage quoted by Bischoff from the 19th volume of Luther's works, Halle ed., p. 2416.*~~

~~*MON—MON*~~

~~*1. Monstrosities in a Single Body.—The abnormality may extend to the body throughout, as in well-proportioned giants and dwarfs; or it may affect a certain region or member, as—to take the simplest case—when there is a finger or toe too many or too few. It is: very common for one malformation to be correlated with several others, as in the extreme case of acardiac monsters, in which the non-development of the heart is associated with the non- development of the head, and with other radical defects.*~~

~~*Giants are conventionally limited to persons over 7 feet in height. The normal proportions of the frame are adhered to more or less closely, except in the skull, which is relatively small; but accurate measurements, even in the best-proportioned cases, prove, when reduced to a scale, that other parts besides the skull, notably the thigh-bone and tlie foot, may be undersized though overgrown." In persons who are merely very tall, the great stature depends often on the inordinate length of the lower limbs ; but in persons over 7 feet the lower limbs are not markedly disproportionate. In many cases the muscles and viscera are not sufficient for the overgrown frame, and the individuals are usually, but not always, of feeble intelligence and languid disposition, and short-lived. The brain-case especially is undersized—the Irish giant in the museum of Trinity College, Dublin, is the single exception to this rule—but the bones of the face, and especially the lower jaw, are on a large scale. Giants are never born of gigantic parents; in fact, sterility usually goes with this monstrosity. Their size is some- times excessive at birth, but more often*~~

~~*the indications of great stature do not appear till later, it may be as late as the ninth year; they attain their full height before the twenty-first year. They have been more frequently male than female ; the German giantess lately exhibited (1882) was as tall as any authentic case in the male sex.*~~

~~*Dwarfs are conventionally limited to persons under 4 feet. They are more likely than giants to have the modu- lus of the body perfect. "In the true dwarf, as far as I have been able to ascertain, the proportions between the several parts of the frame are good, corresponding, or nearly corresponding, with those of the normal adult ; and the diminutive stature depends, accordingly, not upon re- latively imperfect growth of any particular segments, or even upon the permanence of a feetal or childlike con- dition, but upon the whole frame being undersized" (Humphry). Where disproportion occurs in the true dwarf it takes the form of a large-sized head, broad shoulders and capacious chest, and undersized lower limbs. Dwarfs with rickets are perhaps to be distinguished from true dwarfs ; these are cases in which the spine is curved, and sometimes the bones of the limbs bent and the pelvis deformed. As in the case of giants, dwarfs are seldom the progeny of dwarfs, who are, in fact, usually sterile ; the unnatural smallness may be obvious at birth, but is more likely to make itself manifest in the years of growth. Dwarfs are much more easily brought up than giants, and are stronger and longer-lived; they have usually also strong passions and acute intelligence. The legends of the dwarfs and giants are on the whole well based on fact (see DwaRF and GANT).*~~

~~*Redundancy and Defect in Single Parts.—The simplest case of this redundancy is a sixth digit, well formed, and provided with muscles (or tendons), nerves, and _blood- vessels like the others ; it is usually a repetition of the little finger or toe, and it may be present on one or both hands, or on one or both feet, or in all four extremities, as in the giant of Gath. The want of one, two, or more digits on hand or foot, or on both, is another simple anomaly ; and,*~~

~~*? See the tables in Humphry's Treatise on the Human Skeleton, p. 109.*~~

~~*MONSTER*~~

~~*like the redundancy, it is apt to repeat itself in the same family. Meckel saw a girl who had an extra digit on each extremity, while a sister wanted four of the fingers of one hand. Where the supernumerary digits are more than one on each extremity, the whole set are apt to be rudimentary or stunted ; they look as if two or more of the embryonic buds had been subject to cleavage down the middle, and to arrest of longitudinal growth. There are two or three authentic instances of a whole lower limb ap- pearing at birth as two withered halves, as if from embry- onic cleavage. Other redundancies of the skeleton are extra vertebrae (sometimes the coccygeal, giving the ap- pearance of a rudimentary tail), or an extra rib. A double row of teeth is occasionally met with; the most interesting case of this anomaly is that in which the rudiments of a double row exist from the first, but the phenomenon is sometimes produced by the milk teeth persisting along with the second set. One or more extra teeth are occasionally met with in line with the rest. Among redundancies of the soft parts, by far the most frequent is an extra nipple, or pair of nipples. It is only the nipple, or the most external mechanical adjunct of the mammary apparatus, that is repeated, and very seldom, if ever, the breast structure itself. The nipple, although it is the latest addition to the mechanism of lactation, is in the individual mammal developed on the skin before the gland is formed underneath ; and that facility, which applies to the development of external characters generally, appears to be the reason why there may be one or more extra nipples but no redundant gland. In the same connexion, it is interesting to observe that the supernumerary nipple has been shown by statistics on a large scale to be twice as common in men as in women, although in the male the mammary function never comes to maturity, and even the structure retrogrades after puberty. Traces of an additional nipple, or pair of them, in more or less symmetrical position below the normal ones, are not very uncommon when care- fully looked for. Among the sense organs there is a remarkable instance recorded of doubling of the appendages of the left eye, but not of the eyeball itself ; the left half of the frontal bone is double, making two eye-sockets on that side, and the extra orbit has an eyebrow and eyelid." The external ear (pinna) has also been found double on one side. Doubling of any of the internal organs is extremely rare, and is probably always traceable to a more or less complete fissuring or lobation. The ducts or vessels con- nected with organs, and playing a*~~

~~purely mechanical part, are not unfrequently doubled ; thus each kidney may have two ureters, and a similar variation may occur in veins and arteries.~~

~~Monstrosities from Defective Closure in the Middle Line.—Under this head come some of the commonest congenital malformations, including slight deficiencies such as harelip, and serious defects such as a gap in the crown of the head with absence of the brain. The embryo is originally a circular flattened disc spread out on one pole of the yolk, and itis formedintoa cylindrical body (with four appendages) by the free margins of the disc, or rather its ventral lamina, folding inwards to meet in the middle line and so close in the pelvic, abdominal, thoracic, pharyngeal, and oral cavities. Meanwhile, and indeed rather earlier, two longitudinal parallel ridges on the top or along the back of the disc have grown up and united in the middle line to form the second barrel of the body—the neural canal—of small and uniform width in the lower three-fourths or spinal region, but expanding into a wide chamber for the brain. This division into neural (dorsal) and hemal (ventral) canals~~

~~1 See Forster's Alas, Taf. viii., figs. 13 and 14.~~

~~2 See preparation in the Wiirzburg Museum, figured by Forster, Taf. viii., figs. 9-12.~~

~~underlies all vertebrate development. Imperfect closure along either of those embryonic lines of junction may pro- duce various degrees of monstrosity. The simplest and commonest form, hardly to be reckoned in the present cate- gory, is harelip with or without cleft palate, which results from defective closure of the ventral laminz at their extreme upper end. Another simple form, but of much more serious import, is a gap left in the neural canal at its lower end : usually the arches of the lumbar vertebre are deficient, and the fluid that surrounds the spinal cord bulges out in its membranes, producing a soft tumour under the skin at the lower part of the back. This is the condition known as hydrorhachis, depending on the osseous defect known as spina bifida. Children born with this defect are difficult to rear, and are very likely to die in a few days or weeks. More~~

~~*rarely the gap in the arches of the vertebra is in the region of the neck. If it extend all along the back, it will probably involve the skull also. Deficiency of the crown of the head, and in the spine as well, may be not always traceable to want of formative power to close the canal in the middle line ; an over-distended condition of the central water-canal and water-spaces of the cord and brain may prevent the closure of the bones, and ultimately lead to the disruption of the nervous organs themselves ; and injuries to the mother, with inflammation set up in the foetus and its appendages, may be the more remote cause. But it is by defect in the middle line that the mischief manifests itself, and it is in that anatomical category that the malformations are included. The osseous deficiency at the crown of the head is usually accompanied by want of the scalp, as well as of the brain and membranes. The bones of the face may be well developed and the features regular, except that the eyeballs bulge forward under the closed lids ; but there is an abrupt horizontal line above the orbits where the bones cease, the skin of the brow joining on to a spongy kind of tissue that occupies the sides and floor of the cranium. 'This is the commonest form of an anencephalous or brainless monster. There are generally mere traces of the brain, although, in some rare and curious instances, the hemispheres are developed in an exposed position on the back of the neck. The cranial nerves are usually perfect, with the exception sometimes of the optic (and retina). Vegetative existence is not im- possible, and a brainless monster has been known to survive sixty-five days. The child is usually a very large one.*~~

~~*Closely allied, as we have seen, to the anencephalous condition is the condition of congenital hydrocephalus. The nervous system at its beginning is a neural canal, not only as regards its bony covering, but in its interior; a wide space lined by ciliated epithelium and filled with water extends. along the axis of the spinal cord, and expands into a series of water-chambers in the brain. As development proceeds, the walls thicken at the expense of the internal water-spaces, the original tubular or chambered plan of the central nervous system is departed from, and those organs assume the practically solid form in which we familiarly know them. If, however, the water-spaces persist in their embryonic proportions notwithstanding the thickening of the nervous substance forming their walls, there results an enormous brain which is more than half occupied*~~

~~*inside with water, contained in spaces that correspond on the whole to the ventricles of the brain as normally bounded. A hydrocephalic foetus may sur- vive its birth, and will be more apt to be affected in its nutrition than in its intelligence. In many cases the hydrocephalic condition does not come on till after the child is born. The microcephalous condition, where it is not a part of cretinism, is not usually a congenital defect in the strict sense, but more often a consequence of the*~~

~~*premature union of the bones of the skull along their sutures*~~

~~*or lines of growth. Returning to the ventral middle line,*~~

~~*breast-bone (fissure of the sternum),*~~

~~*or two above the pubes. At that point in the embryo there issues the allantois, a balloon-like expansion from the ventral cavity, which carries on its outer surface blood-vessels from the embryo to interdigitate with those of the mother on the uterine surface. Having served its temporary purpose of carrying the blood-vessels across a space, the balloon-like allantois collapses, and rolls up into the rounded stem-like umbilical cord through most of its extent; but a portion of the sac within the body of the foetus is retained as the permanent urinary bladder. That economical adaptation of a portion of a vesicular organ, originally formed for purposes of communication between the embryo and the mother, appears to entail sometimes a defect in the wall of the abdomen just above the pubes, and a defect in the anterior wall of the bladder itself.*~~

~~*This is the distressing congenital condition of fissure of —*~~

~~*the urinary bladder, in which its interior is exposed through an opening in the skin; the pubic bones are separated by an interval, and the reproductive organs are ill formed; the urachus is wanting, and the umbilicus is always placed exactly at the upper end of the gap in the skin. A monstrosity recalling the cloacal arrangement of the bird is met with as a more extreme defect in the same parts. .*~~

~~*Hermaphroditism.—Although this anomalous condition does not fall under defective closure in the middle line, it may be said to be due to a similar failure of purpose, or to an uncertainty in the nisus formativus at a corresponding stage of development. There is a point of time, falling about the eighth week, up to which the embryo may de- velop either the reproductive organs of the male or the reproductive organs of the female ; in the vast majority of cases the future development and growth are carried out on one line or the other, but in a small number there is an ambiguous development leading to various degrees of hermaphroditism or doubtful sex. The primary indecision, so to speak, affects only the ovary or testis respectively, or rather the common germinal ridge out of which either may develop; the uncertainty in this embryonic sexual ridge sometime' leads actually to the formation of a pair of ovaries and a pair of small testes, or to an ovary on one side and a testis on the other ; but even when there is no such double sex in the essential organs (as in the majority of hermaphrodites) there isa great deal of doubling and ambiguity entailed in the secondary or external organs and parts of generation. Those parts which are rudimentary or obsolete in the male but highly developed in the female, and those parts which are rudimentary in the female but highly developed in the male tend in the hermaphrodite to be developed equally, and all of them badly. In some cases the external organs of one sex go with the internal organs of the opposite sex. It has been observed that when middle life is reached or passed the predominance in features, voice, and disposition leans distinctly towards the masculine side. The mythological or classical notions of hermaphroditism, like so much else in the traditions of teratology, are exaggerated.*~~

~~*Cyclops, Siren, &c.—The same feebleness of the forma- tive energy (the Bildungstrieb of Blumenbach) which gives rise to some at least of the cases of defective closure in the middle line, and to the cases of undecided sex, leads also to imperfect separation of symmetrical parts. 'The most*~~

~~*there may be defects of closure below the lips and palate, as in the at the navel (the last point to close in any case), and along the middle line of the abdomen generally. The commonest point for a gap in the middle line of the belly is at its lower part, an inch*~~

~~*MONSTER*~~

~~*remarkable case of the kind is the cyclops monster. At a point corresponding to the root of the nose there is found a single orbital cavity, sometimes of small size and with no eyeball in it, at other times of the usual size of the orbit and containing an eyeball more or less complete. In still other cases, which indicate the nature of the anomaly, the orbital cavity extends for some distance on each side of the middle line, and contains two eyeballs lying close together. The usual nose is wanting, but above the single orbital cavity there is often a nasal process on the forehead, with which nasal bones may be articulated, and cartilages joined to the latter; these form the framework of a short fleshy protuberance like a small proboscis. The lower jaw is sometimes wanting in cyclopeans; the cheek-bones are apt to be small, and the mouth a small round hole, or altogether absent ; the rest of the body may be well developed. The key to the cyclopean condition is found in the state of the brain. The olfactory nerves or lobes are usually described as absent, although Vrolik has found them in some instances ; the brain is very imper- fectly divided into hemispheres, and appears as a somewhat pear-shaped sac with thick walls, the longitudinal partition of dura mater (falx cerebri) being wanting, the surface almost unconvoluted, the corpus callosum deficient, the basal ganglia rudimentary or fused. The optic chiasma and nerves are usually replaced by a single mesial nerve, but sometimes the chiasma and pair of nerves are present. The origin of this monstrosity dates back to an early period of development, to the time when the future hemispheres were being formed as protrusions from the anterior cerebral vesicle or fore-brain ; it may be conceived that, instead of two distinct buds from that vesicle, there was only a single outgrowth with imperfect traces of cleav- age. That initial defect would carry with it naturally the undivided state of the cerebrum, and with the latter there would be the absence of olfactory lobes and of a nose, and a single eyeball placed where the nose should have been. A cyclops has been known to live for several days. The monstrosity is not uncommon among the domestic animals, and is especially frequent in the pig. There is another congenital malformation, in which an eyeball is wanting from one of the sockets ; but in that case there is no defect of development in the bones, and the brain and nose are normal.*~~

~~*Another curious result of defective separation of sym- metrical parts is the siren form of foetus, in which the lower limbs occur as a single tapering prolongation of the trunk like the hinder part of a dolphin, at the end of which a foot (or both feet) may or may not be visible. The defects in the bones underlying this siren form are very various : in some cases there is only one limb (thigh and leg-bones) in the middle line ; in others all the bones of each limb are present.in more or less rudimentary condition, but adhering at prominent points of the ad- jacent surfaces. The pelvis and pelvic viscera share in the abnormality, A much more common and harmless case of unseparated symmetrical parts is where the hand or foot has two, three, or more digits fused together. This syn- dactylous anomaly runs in families.*~~

~~*Limbs Absent or Stunted.—Allied to these fused or un- separated states of the extremities, or of parts of them, are the class of deformities in which whole limbs are absent, or represented only by stumps. The trunk (and head) may be well formed, and the individual healthy ; all four extremities may be reduced to short stumps either wanting hands and feet entirely, or with the latter fairly well developed ; or the legs only may be rudimentary or wanting, or the arms only, or one extremity only. Al- though some of these cases doubtless depend upon aber- rant or deficient formative power in the particular direc-*~~

~~*tions, there are others of them referable to the effects of mechanical pressure, and even to direct amputation of parts within the uterus.*~~

~~*Acardiac and Acranial Monsters.—It sometimes happens in a twin pregnancy that one of the embryos fails to develop a heart and a complete vascular system of its own, depending for its nourishment upon blood derived from the placenta of its well-formed twin by means of its umbilical vessels. It grows into a more or less shapeless mass, in which all traces of the human form may be lost. Other viscera besides the heart will be wanting, and no head distinguishable ; the most likely parts to keep the line of development are the lumbar region (with the kidneys), the pelvis, and the lower limbs. The twin of this monster may be a healthy infant.*~~

~~*Reversed Position of the Viscera.—This is a develop- mental error depending on the retention of the right aortic arch as in birds, instead of the left as is usual in mammals. The position of all the unsymmetrical viscera is transposed, the spleen and cardiac end of the stomach going to the right side, the liver to the left, the caecum resting on the left iliac fossa, and the sigmoid flexure of the colon being attached to the right. This condition of situs inversus viscerum need cause no inconvenience ; and it will probably remain undetected until the occasion should arise for a physical diagnosis or post-mortem inspection. There are numerous other anomalies in the development of the great vessels. In the heart itself there may be an imperfect septum ventriculorum, and there is more frequently a patency of the foetal communication between the auricles, permitting the venous blood to pass into the arterial system, and producing the livid appearance of the face known as cyanosis.*~~

~~*The causes of congenital anomalies are difficult to specify. There is no doubt that, in some cases, they are present in the sperm or germ of the parent; the same anomalies recur in several children of a family, and it has been found possible, through a variation of the circumstances, to trace the influence in some cases to the father alone, and in other cases to the mother alone. The remarkable thing in this parental influence is that the malformation in the child may not have been manifested in the body of either parent, or in the grandparents. More often the malformation is acquired by the embryo and fœtus in the course of development and growth, either through the mother or in itself independently. Maternal impressions during pregnancy have often been alleged as a cause, and this causation has been discussed at great length by the best authorities. The general opinion seems to be that it is impossible to set aside the influence of subjective states of the mother altogether. The doctrine of maternal impres- sions has often been resorted to when any other explana- tion was either difficult or inconvenient; thus, Hippocrates is said to have saved the virtue of a woman who gave birth to a black child by pointing out that there was a picture of a negro on the wall of her chamber. Injuries to the mother during pregnancy have been unquestion- ably the cause of certain malformations, especially of congenital hydrocephalus. The embryo itself and its membranes may become the subject of inflammations, atrophies, hypertrophies, and the like; this*~~

~~*causation, to which Otto traced all malformations of the feetus, is doubtless accountable for a good many of them. But a very large residue of malformations must still be referred to no more definite cause than the erratic spontaneity of the embryonic cells and cell-groups. The nesus formativus of the fertilized ovum is always made subject to morpho-logical laws, but, just as in extra-uterine life, there may be deviations from the beaten track; and even a slight deviation at an early stage will carry with it far-reaching*~~

~~*consequences. This is particularly noticeable in double monsters.*~~

~~*2. Double Monsters.—Twins are the physiological analogy of double monsters, and some of the latter have come very near to being two separate individuals. Triple monsters are too rare to dwell upon, but their analogy would be triplets. The Siamese twins, who died in 1874 at the age of sixty, were joined only by a thick fleshy ligament from the lower end of the breast-bone (xiphoid cartilage), having the common navel on its lower border ; the anatom- ical examination showed, however, that a process of peri- toneum extended through the ligament from one abdominal cavity to the other, and that the blood-vessels of the two livers were in free communication across the same bridge. There are one or two cases on record in which such a liga- ment has been cut at birth, one, at least, of the twins surviving. From the most intelligible form of double monstrosity, like the Siamese twins, there are all grades of fantastic fusion of two individuals into one down to the truly marvellous condition of a small body or fragment parasitic upon a well-grown infant,—the condition known as foetus in foetu. These monstrosities are deviations, not from the usual kind of twin gestation, but from a certain rarer physiological type of dual development. In by far the majority of cases twins have separate uterine appendages, and have probably been developed from distinct ova; but in a small proportion of (recorded) cases there is evidence, in the placental and enclosing structures, that the twins had been developed from two rudiments arising side by side ona single blastoderm. It is to the latter physiological category that double monsters almost certainly belong ; and there is some direct embryological evidence*~~

~~*for this opinion. Allen Thomson observed in the blastoderm of a hen's egg at the sixteenth or eighteenth hour of incubation two "primitive traces" or rudiments of the backbone form- ing side by side ; and in a goose's egg incubated five days he found on one blastoderm two embryos, each with the rudi- ments of upper and lower extremities, crossing or cohering in the region of the future neck, and with only one heart between them. Somewhat similar observations had been previously published (four cases in all) by Wolff, Von Baer, and Reichert. Malformations in the earliest stages of the blastoderm have been more frequently observed of late, especially in the ova of the pike; and these point not so much to a symmetrical doubling of the primitive trace as to irregular budding from the margin of the germinal disc. In any case, the perfect physiological type appears to be two rudiments on one blastoderm, whose entirely separate de- velopment produces twins (under their rarer circumstances), whose nearly separate development produces such double monsters as the Siamese twins, and whose less separate development produces the various grotesque forms of two individuals in one body. There can be no question of a literal fusion of two embryos ; either the individuality of each was at no time complete, or, if there were two dis- tinct primitive traces, the uni-axial type was approximately reverted to in the process of development, as in the forma- tion of the abdominal and thoracic viscera, limbs, pelvis, or head. Double monsters are divided in the first instance into those in which the doubling is symmetrical and equal on the two sides, and those in which a small or fragment- ary foetus is attached to or enclosed in a fœtus of average development,—the latter class being the so-called cases of * parasitism."*~~

~~*Symmetrical Double Monsters are subdivided according to the part or region of the body where the union or fusion exists—head, thorax, umbilicus, or pelvis. One of the simplest cases is a Janus head upon a single body, or there may be two pairs of arms with the two faces. Again, there may be one head with two necks and two complete trunks*~~

~~*and pairs of extremities. Two distinct heads (with more or less of neck) may surmount a single trunk, broad at the shoulders but with only one*~~

~~*pair of arms. The fusion, again, may be from the middle of the thorax downwards, giving two heads and two pairs of shoulders and arms, but only one trunk and one pair of legs. In another variety, the body may be double down to the waist, but the pelvis and lower limbs single. The degree of union in the region of the head, abdomen, or pelvis may be so slight as to permit of two distinct organs or sets of organs in the respective cavities, or so great as to have the viscera in common ; and there is hardly ever an intermediate condition between those extremes. Thus, in the Janus head there may be two brains, or only one brain. The Siamese twins are an instance of union at the umbilical region, with the viscera distinct in every respect except a slight vascular anastomosis and a common process of peritoneum ; but it is more usual for union in that region to be more extensive, and to entail a single set of abdominal and thoracic viscera. The pelvis is one of the commonest regions for double monsters to be joined at, and, as in the head and abdomen, the junction may be slight or total, The Hungarian sisters Helena and Judith (1701-1723) were joined at the sacrum, but had the pelvic cavity and pelvic organs separate; the same condition obtained in the South Carolina negresses Millie and Christina, known as the ‘“two-headed nightingale,” and in the other recent case of the Bohemian sisters Rosalie and Josepha. More usually the union in the pelvic region is complete, and produces the most fantastic shapes of two trunks (each with head and arms) joining below at various angles, and with three or four lower limbs extending from the region of fusion, sometimes in a lateral direction, sometimes downwards. A very curious kind of double monster is produced by two otherwise distinct foetuses joining at the crown of the head and keeping the axis of their bodies in a line. It is only in rare instances that double monsters survive their birth, and the preserved specimens of them are mostly of foetal size.*~~

~~*Unequal Double Monsters, Foetus in Feetu.—There are some well-authenticated instances of this most curious of all anomalies. The most celebrated of these parasite- bearing monsters was a Genoese, Lazarus Johannes Baptista Colloredo, born in 1716, who was figured as a child by Licetus, and again by Bartholinus at the age of twenty- eight as a young man of average stature. The parasite adhered to the lower end of his breast-bone, and was a tolerably well-formed child, wanting only one leg;*~~

~~*it breathed, slept at intervals, and moved its body, but it had no separate nutritive functions. The parasite is more apt to be a miniature acardiac and acephalous fragment, as in the case of the one borne in front of the abdomen of a Chinaman figured by I. Geoffroy St-Hilaire. Some- times the parasite is contained in a pouch under the skin of the abdominal wall, and in another class (of which there is a specimen in the Hunterian Museum) it has actually been included, by the closure of the ventral lamine, within the abdominal cavity of the fcetus,—a true fetus im fetu. Shapeless parasitic fragments containing masses of bone, cartilage, and other tissue are found also in the space behind the breast-bone (mediastinal teratoma), or growing from the base of the skull and protruding through the mouth . epignathous teratoma," appearing to be seated on the jaw), and, most frequently of all, attached to the sacrum. These last pass by a most interesting transition into common forms of congenital sacral tumours (which may be of enormous size), consisting mainly of one kind of tissue having its physiological type in the curious gland- like body (coccygeal gland) in which the middle sacral artery comes to an.end. The congenital sacral tumours have a tendency to become cystic, and they are probably related to*~~

~~*the more perfect congenital cysts of the neck region, where there is another minute gland-like body of the same nature as the coccygeal at the point of bifurcation of the common carotid artery. Other tumours of the body, especially certain of the sarcomatous class, may be regarded from the point of view of monstra per excessum ; but such cases suggest not so much a question of aberrant development within the blastoderm as of the indwelling spontaneity of a single post-embryonic tissue; and they fall to be con- sidered more properly, along with tumours in general, in the article PATHOLOGY (¢.v.).*~~

~~*The scientific appreciation of monsters hardly began before the 18th century ; even so great a rationalist in surgical practice as Ambroise Paré (1517-1590), although he was attracted as a scholar in later life to the subject, did not advance in it materially beyond the fantastic and credulous standpoint of the timc, which is exem- plified in the claborate*~~

~~*treatise of Lycosthenes, Prodigiorwm ae osten- torum ehronieon, Basel, 1557. Throughout the 17th century fabulous monsters continued to be described along with actual specimens ; the embryological studies of Harvey (1651) were doubtless calculated to help in the growth of rational opinion about monsters, thougl: Harvey himself mentions them only casually. The first systematic discussion of them from a strictly objective or anatomical point of view occurs in various writings of Haller from 1735 to 1753, and the subject continued after that to engage a large amount of precise and philosophical thought on the part of Caspar Friedrich Wolff (1785-1794), who first stated the relation of monstrosities to em- bryonic deviations in words that even now hardly require to be altered, and of Blumenbach, Sémmering, Autenrieth, Tiedemann, and others. The engrossing interest of the subject in the early part of the 19th century is shown by the fact that J. F. Meckel's Handbuch der pathologisehen Anatomie (1817) was largely occupied with congenital malformations. Geoffroy St-Hilaire, the father, gave them a prominent place in his Philosophie Anatomique (Paris, 1822), and his son Isidore made them the subject of a special and very elaborate treatise in 3 vols. (Paris, 1832-37), illustrated by a small and inadequate atlas of plates. Monstrosities were at this period a prominent part of all text-books of morbid anatomy. From 1840 to 1850 may be regarded as the period in which human tera- tology reached its highest point ; in 1840-42 the special treatise of Vrolik was published (2 vols., Amsterdam), containing an introduc- tion on the normal development, and his sumptuous and incompar- able atlas to the same followed in 1849; in 1841 Otto published at Warsaw a description of 600 monsters with 80 folio plates ; and in 1842 the embryologist Bischoff contributed to Wagner's Handwort- erbuch der Physiologie, vol. i., an article on teratology as elucidated by the best information on mammalian development. An article by Allen Thomson in the London and Edinburgh Monthly Journal of Medical Science, July 1844, followed by a critical survey in the next number, is of the first importance for the theory of double monsters, and it is one of the few notable English contributions to animal teratology apart from museum catalogues,—the general article in Todd's Cyclopxdia of Anatomy and Physiology having been written by Vrolik, while the special subject of Hermaphroditism is treated of in a long and learned article by J. Y. Simpson (reprinted in his collected works). One of the latest important*~~

~~*works on monsters is that by Forster (Jeua, 1861), Die Missbildungen des Menschen systematisch dargestellt, with an atlas of 26 4to plates containing 524 figures (on a small scale), of which 162 were drawn from original specimens, mostly in the Wiirzburg Museum ; this work has a very great variety of illustrations from all sources, and most copious bibliographical references. The newest treatise is Ahlfeld's Afiss-bildungen des Menschen (Leipsic, 1880-82), with an extensive atlas of folio plates, as comprehensive as Forster's and on a larger scale. Monsters have of late been assigned a comparatively subordinate position in pathological teaching, owing, doubtless, to the more im- mediate interest of microscopic and experimental pathology. Among recent pathological text-books that of Perls (Stuttgart, 1877-79) may be named as containing an adequate treatment of the subject. The two most considerable contributors to teratology recently have been Panum (Berlin, 1860), and Dareste (Paris, 1877), both of whom have occupied themselves mainly with producing monstrosities arti- ficially in the bird's egg by varying the temperature in the hatching oven. See also L. Gerlach, Die Entstehungsweise der Doppelmissbil- dungen bet den hoheren Wirbelthieren, Stuttgart, 1888. (C. C.)*~~

~~*MONSTRELET, Encurrranp DE (0b. 1453) (who, rather owing to accident than to merit, held, until within the present century, the same position as chronicler of French affairs during the early part of the 15th century as Froissart deservedly holds with regard to the last half of the 14th), was born at an uncertain date, apparently not later than 1400, and died in July 1453. IIe was of*~~

~~*a noble family in the district of Boulogne. IIe held in 1436, and later, the office of lieutenant-gavenier (receiver of the gave, a kind of church rate) in the city of Cambray, and seems to have usually resided there. Besides this he was for some time bailiff of the chapter of that city, and later provost. IIe was married, and left children. But this almost exhausts the amount of our knowledge respect- ing him, except that he was present, not at the capture of the Maid of Orleans, but at her subsequent interview with the duke of Burgundy. As a subject of this latter prince he naturally*~~

~~*takes the Burgundian side in his history, which extends in the genuine part of it to two books, and covers the period from 1400 to 1444. At this time, as another chronicler Matthieu de Coucy informs us, Monstrelet ceased writing. But, according to a habit by no means uncommon in the Middle Ages, a clumsy sequel, extending to a period long subsequent to his death, was formed out of various other chronicles and tacked on to his work. The genuine part of this, dealing with the last half of the Hundred Years War, is valuable because it contains a large number of documents which are certainly, and reported speeches which are probably, authentic. It has, however, little colour or narrative merit, is dully, though clearly enough, written, and is strongly tinged with the pedantry of its century,—the most pedantic in French history. The best edition is that published for the Société de l'Histoire de France by M. Douet d'Arcq in 1856.*~~

~~*MONTAGU, Lapy Mary Wortiry (1690-1762), one of the most brilliant letter-writers of the 18th century, was the eldest daughter of Evelyn Pierrepont, duke of Kingston, and Lady Mary Fielding, daughter of the earl of Denbigh. Her near relationship with Fielding the novelist is worth remarking. She was born at Thoresby in Nottingham- shire in 1690. Her mother died when she was a child, and by some chance she received or gave herself an un- usually wide literary education, had the run of her father's library, was encouraged in her studies by Bishop Burnet, and while still a girl translated the Lnchiridion of Epic- tetus. After a courtship in which she showed a singular power of thinking for herself, she was married in 1712, against her father's wish, to Mr. E. Wortley Montagu, an accomplished and scholarly friend of the Queen Anne wits. At the new court of George I. her beauty and wit brought her much homage; Pope was among her most devoted worshippers, and she even gained and kept the friendship of the great duchess of Marlborough. Her husband being appointed ambassador to the Porte in 1716, she accompanied him to Constantinople, and wrote to her friends at home brilliant descriptions of Eastern life and scenery. These letters were not published till 1763, the year after her death ; but, copies being handed about in fashionable circles, their lively, witty style, graphic pictures of unfamiliar life, and shrewd and daring judg- ments gave the writer instant celebrity. In one of them she described the practice of inoculation for the smallpox, and announced her intention of trying it on her own*~~

son, and of introducing it in spite of the doctors into England. The most memorable incident in her life after her return from the East was her quarrel with Pope, caused, accord- ing to her account, by her laughing at him when he made love to her in earnest. He satirized her under the name of Sappho, and she teased him with superior ingenuity and hardly inferior wit. From 1739 to 1761 Lady Mary lived abroad, apart from her husband, maintaining an affectionate correspondence with her daughter Lady Bute, in which she set forth views of life largely coloured by the asceticism of her master Epictetus, and wearing an appearance of oddity and eccentricity from their contrast with conventional thought. The character of coldness and unwomanliness which Pope contrived to fasten on his

"

enemy was far from being deserved ; her letters show her to have been a very warm-hearted woman, though on principle she turned the hard side to the world. She died 21st August 1762. The best edition of her works is that of 1861, with a memoir by Moy Thomas. MONTAIGNE, Micuen pr (1533-1592), essayist, was born, as he himself tells us, between eleven o'clock and noon on 28th February 1533. The patronymic of the Montaigne family, who derived their title from the chateau at which the essayist was born and which had been bought by his grandfather, was Eyquem. It was believed to be of Eng- lish origin, and the long tenure of Gascony and Guienne by the English certainly provided abundant opportunity for the introduction of English colonists. But the elaborate re- searches of M. Malvézin have proved the existence of a family of Eyquems or Ayquems before the marriage of Eleanor of Aquitaine to Henry II. of England, though no connexion between this family, who were Sieurs de Lesparre, and the essayist's ancestors can be made out, Montaigne is not far from Bordeaux, and in Montaigne's time was in the province of Perigord. It is now in the arrondissement of Bergerac and the department of Dordogne. The Eyquem family had for some time been connected with Bordeaux. Indeed, though they possessed more than one estate in the district, they were of doubt- ful and certainly very recent

~~*nobility. Pierre Eyquem, Montaigne's father, had been engaged in commerce (a herring-merchant Scaliger calls him), had filled many municipal offices in Bordeaux, and had served under Francis I. in Italy as a soldier. The essayist was not the eldest son, but the third. By the death of his elder brothers, however, he became head of the family. He had also six younger brothers and sisters. His father appears, like many other men of the time, to have made a hobby of education. Michel was not a strong boy, indeed he was all his life a valetudinarian, and this may have especially prompted his father to take pains with him. At a time when the rod was the universal instru- ment of teaching it was almost entirely spared to Montaigne. He was, according to the French fashion common at all times, put out to nurse with a peasant woman. But Pierre Eyquem added to this the unusual fancy of choosing his son's sponsors from the same class, and of accustoming him to associate with it. He was taught Latin orally by servants who could speak no French, and many curious fancies were tried on him, as, for instance, that of waking him every morning by soft music. But he was by no means allowed to be idle. A plan of teaching him Greek, still more out of the common way than his Latin course, by some kind of mechanical arrangement, is not very intelligible, and was quite un- successful. These details of his education (which, like most else that is known about him, come from his own mouth) are not only interesting in themselves, but remind the reader how, not far from the same time, the other greatest writer of French during the Renaissance was also exercising himself, though not being exercised, in plans of education almost as fantastic. At six years old (for the father's reforming views in education do not seem to have disgusted him with the extremely early age at which it was then usual to begin school training) Montaigne was sent to the Collége de Guienne at Bordeaux, then at the height of its reputation, having more than double the number of scholars (two thousand) that even the largest English public school has usually boasted. Among its masters were Buchanan, afterwards the teacher of James I., and Muretus, one of the first scholars of the age. These, with their colleague Guérente, composed Latin plays for their pupils to act, and are held to have given no small impulse to the production of the classical French tragedy*~~

~~*of the Pléiade. Montaigne remained at school seven years, and, like almost all Frenchmen of all times, retained no pleasant or complimentary memory of it. At thirteen he left the Collége de Guienne and began to study law, it is not known where, but probably at Toulouse, the most famous university, despite its religious intolerance, of the south of France. Of his youth, early manhood, and middle life extremely little is known. Allusions to it in the Essays are frequent enough, but they are rarely precise. In 1548 he was at Bordeaux during one of the frequent riots caused by the gabelle, or salt tax. Six years afterwards, having attained his majority, he was made a counsellor in the Bordeaux parliament. In 1558 he was present at the siege of Thionville. Like his father, he certainly served in the army, for he has frequent allusions to military experiences. He was also much about the court, and he admits very frankly that in his youth he led a life of pleasure, if not exactly of excess. In 1566 he married Francoise de la Chassaigne, whose father was, like himself, a member of the Bordeaux parliament. Three years later his father died, and he succeeded to the family possessions. Finally, in 1571, as he tells us in an inscription still extant, he retired to Montaigne to take up his abode there. This was the turning-point of his life.*~~

~~*It has been said that his health was never strong, and it had been further weakened by the hard living (in both senses of that phrase) which was usual at the time. He resolved, accordingly, to retire to a life of study and con- templation, though he did not in the least seclude himself, and indulged in no asceticism except careful diet. Mon- taigne was a large country house unfortified (in which circumstance its astute possessor saw rather safety than danger from the turbulence of the religious wars), and its owner's revenues, without being large, appear to have been easy. He neither had nor professed any enthusiastic affection for his wife, but he lived on excellent terms with her, and bestowed some pains on the education of the only child (a daughter) who survived infancy. In his study, which he has minutely described, he read, wrote, dictated, meditated, inscribed moral sentences, which still remain on the walls and rafters, and in other ways gave himself up to learned ease. He was not new to literature. In his father's lifetime, and at his request, he had translated the Theologia Naturalis of Raymond de Sebonde, a Spanish*~~

~~*schoolman. On first coming to live at Montaigne he edited the works of his deceased friend Etienne de la Boétie, who had been the comrade of his youth, who died early, and who, with poems of real promise, had composed a declamatory and schoolboyish theme on republicanism, entitled the Contr' Un, which is one of the most over- estimated books in literature. But the years of his studious retirement were spent on a work of infinitely greater importance. Garrulous after a fashion, as Montaigne is, he gives us no clear idea of any original or definite impulse leading him to write the famous Zssays. It is very probable that if they were at first intended to have any special form at all it was that of a table-book or journal, such as was never more commonly kept than in the 16th century. But the author must have been more or less conscious of an order existing in the disorder of his thoughts, and this may have induced him to keep them apart in chapters, or at least under chapter-headings, and at the same time not to cut them up into mere pensées. It is certainly very noticeable that the earlier essays, those of the first two books, differ from the later in one most striking point, in that of length. Speaking generally, the essays of the third book average fully four times the length of those of the other two. This of itself would suggest a difference in the system of composition. For the present, however, we may confine ourselves to the first*~~

~~*two books. These appeared in 1580, when their author was forty-seven years old.*~~

~~*They contain, as at present published, no less than ninety-three essays, besides an exceedingly long apology for the already-men- tioned Raymond Sebonde, which amounts to about a quarter of the whole in bulk, and differs curiously from its companions in matter no less than in scale. The book begins with a short avis (address to the reader), opening with the well-known words, "C'est icy un livre de bon foy lecteur," and sketching in a few lively sentences the character of meditative egotism which is kept up throughout. HIs sole object, the author says, is to leave for his friends and relations a mental portrait of himself, defects and all; he cares neither for utility nor fame. The essays then begin without any*~~

~~attempt to explain or classify their subjects. Their titles are of the most diverse character. Sometimes they are proverbial sayings, or moral adages, such as: " Par divers moyens on arrive 4 pareille fin", "Quw'il ne faut juger de notre heur qu'apres la mort"', " Le profit de l'on est ledommage de l'aultre." Sometimes they are headed like the chapters of a treatise on ethics: " De la tristesse"', "De loisiveté", "De la peur", "De l'amitié." Sometimes a fact of some sort which has awaked a train of associations in the mind of the writer serves as a title, such as: "On est puni de s'opiniastrer 4 une place sans raison", "De la bataille de Dreux", &c. Occasionally the titles seem to be deliberately fantastic, as: " Des puces", " De l'usage de se vestir." Sometimes, though not very often, the sections are in no proper sense essays, but merely commonplace book entries of singular facts or quotations with hardly any comment. These point to the haphazard or indirect origin of them which has been already suggested. But generally the essay-character—that is to say, the discussion of a special point, it may be with wide digressions and divergences—displays itself. The digressions are indeed constant, and sometimes iar the appearance of being absolutely wilful. The nominal title, even when most strictly observed, is rarely more than a starting-point ; and, though the brevity of these first essays for the most part prevents the author from journeying very far, he contrives to get to the utmost range of his tether. Quotations are very frequent. These are the principal external characteristics of the book ; its internal spirit had better be treated when it can be spoken of completely.~~

~~Between the publication of the first two books of essays in 1580 and the publication of the third in 1588, Mon- taigne's life as distinguished from his writings becomes somewhat better known, and somewhat more interesting. He had, during the eight years of composition of his first volume, visited Paris occasionally and travelled for health or pleasure to Cauterets, Eaux Chaudes, and elsewhere. Charles IX., apparently, had made him one of his gentle- men in ordinary, and perhaps conferred on him the order of St Michael. The fiercest period of the religious wars, save that yet to come of the League, passed over him with- out harming him, though not without subjecting him to some risks. But his health grew worse and worse, and he was tormented by stone and gravel. He accordingly re- solved to journey to the baths of Lucca. Late in the 18th~~

~~century a journal was found in the chateau of Montaigne, giving an account of this journey, and it was published in 1774; part of it is written in Italian and part dictated in French, the latter being for the most part the work of a secretary or servant. Whatever may be the biographi- cal value of this work, which has rarely been reprinted with the Essays themselves, it is almost entirely destitute of literary interest. Written, moreover, according to its own showing merely for the author's own eye, it contains abundance of details as to the medicinal effect of the various baths which he visited, details which may be said to be superfluous to a medical reader, and disgusting to any other. The course of the journey was first north- wards to Plombiéres, then by Basel to Augsburg and Munich, then through Tyrol to Verona and Padua in Italy. Montaigne visited most of the famous cities of the north and centre, staying five months at Rome, and finally establishing himself at the baths of Lucca for nearly as long a time. There he received news of his election as mayor of Bordeaux, and after some time journeyed home- wards, The tour contains much minute information about roads, food, travelling, &c., but the singular condition in which it exists, and the absence of a really good critical~~

~~MONTAT GN FH~~

~~edition hitherto, make it rather difficult to use it as a document. The freak of writing part of it in a strange dog-Italian is not uncharacteristic of Montaigne, but the words of his last and best editors, MM. Courbet and Royer, who speak of the letters as "l'unique complément des essais," seem to indicate that they are not of those who accept the published Voyage as authentic. Of the fact of the journey there is no doubt whatever.~~

~~Montaigne (as was not unnatural in a man of his tempera- ment, who had for some years, if not for the greater part of his life, lived solely to please himself) was not altogether delighted at his election to the mayoralty, which promised him two years of responsible if not very hard work. The memory of his father, however, and the commands of the king, which seem to have been expressed in a manner rather stronger than a mere formal confirmation, induced him to accept it ; and he seems to have discharged it neither better nor worse than an average magistrate. Indeed,~~

~~*he gave sufficient satisfaction to the citizens to be re-elected at the close of his term, and it may be suspected that the honour of the position, which was really one of considerable dignity and importance, was not altogether indifferent to him. Unfortunately, it cannot be said that nothing in his office became him like the leaving of it, for it was at the close of his second tenure that he gave the only sign of the demoralizing effect which is sometimes alleged by severe moralists to come of the half epicurean, half sceptical philo- sophy which he undoubtedly professed, Itwas his business, if not exactly his duty, to preside at the formal election of his successor, the maréchal de Matignon ; but there was a severe pestilence in Bordeaux, and Montaigne writes to the jurats of that town, in one of the few undoubtedly authentic letters which we possess, to the effect that he will leave them to judge whether his presence at the election is so necessary as to make it worth his while to expose himself to the danger of going into the town in its then condition, "which is specially dangerous for men coming from a good air as he does." That is to say, the chief magistrate of one of the greatest towns in France not only declined to visit it because of sickness prevailing there, but had left it to itself at a time when nearly half the population perished, and when, according to the manners of the age, civil dis- turbance was almost sure to follow accordingly. Attempts have been made to justify Montaigne, and it may be at least said that he at no time pretended to unselfish heroism ; but it is to be feared that the facts and the inference drawn from them admit of no dispute, At the least, Montaigne's conduct must be allowed to contrast very little to his advantage with that of Rotrou in the next century under somewhat similar circumstances though in a position of much less responsibility. It may, however, be urged in Montaigne's favour that the general circumstances of the time, where they did not produce reckless and foolhardy daring, almost necessarily produced a somewhat excessive caution. The League was on the point of attaining its greatest power; the extreme Calvinist and Navarrese party, on the other side, was (as may be seen in Agrippa d'Aubigné) no less fanatical than the League itself, and the salvation of France seemed to lie in the third party of politiques, or trimmers, to which Montaigne belonged. 'The capital motto of this party was that of the Scotch saying, "Jouk and let the jaw gang by," and the continual habit of parry- ing and avoiding political dangers might be apt to extend itself to dangers other than political. However this may be,*~~

~~*Montaigne had difficulty enough during this turbulent period, all the more so from his neighbourhood to the chief haunts and possessions of Henry of Navarre. He was able, however, despite the occupations of his journey, his mayoralty, and the pressure of civil war and pestilence, which was not confined to the town, to continue his essay*~~

~~*writing, and in 1588, after a visit of some length to Paris, the third book of the Essays was published, together with the former ones considerably revised. The new essays, as has been remarked, differ strikingly from the older ones in respect of length; there being only one which confines itself to the average of those in the first two books. The whimsical unexpectedness of the titles, moreover, reappears in but two of them: "Des coches" and "Des boiteux." They are, however, identical with the earlier ones in spirit, and make with them a harmonious whole—a book which has erly been second in influence to any of the modern world.*~~

~~*This influence is almost equally remarkable in point of matter and in point of form, as regards the subsequent history of thought and as regards the subsequent history of literature. The latter aspect may be taken first. Montaigne is one of the few great writers who have not only perfected but have also invented a literary form. The essay as he gave it had no forerunner in modern literature, and no direct ancestor in the literature of classical times. It is indeed not improbable that it owes something to the body of tractates by different authors and of different dates, which goes under the name of Plutarch's Morals, and it also bears some resemblance to the miscellaneous work of Lucian. But the resemblance isin both cases at most that of suggestion. The peculiar desultoriness and tenta- tive character of the essay proper were alien to the orderly character of the Greek mind, as were also its garrulity and the tendency which it has rather to reveal the idiosyncrasy of the writer than to deal in a systematic manner with the peculiarities of the subject. It has been suggested that the form which the essays assumed was in a way accidental, and this of itself precludes the idea of a definite model even if such a model could be found. Beginning with the throwing together of a few stray thoughts and quotations linked by a community of subject, the*~~

~~*author by degrees acquires more and more certainty of hand, until he produces such masterpieces of apparent desultoriness and real unity as the essay " Sur des vers de*~~

~~*irgile." In matter of style and language Montaigne's position is equally important, but the ways which led him to it are more clearly traceable. His favourite author was beyond all doubt Plu- tarch, and his own explicit confession makes it undeniable that Plutarch's translator Amyot was his master in point of vocabulary, and (so far as he took any lessons in it) of style. Amyot was unquestionably one of the most remarkable writers of French in the 16th century, and to him more than to any one else is due the beauty of the prose style which marked the second half of that century, a style which, though unequal and requiring to be modified for general use, is at its best the very flower of the lan- guage. Montaigne, however, followed with the perfect independence that characterized him. He was a contemporary of Ronsard, and his first essays were published when the innovations of the Pléiade had fully established themselves. He adopted them to a great extent, but with much discrimination, and he used his own judg- ment in Latinizing when he pleased. In the same way he retained archaic and provincial words with a good deal of freedom, but by no means to excess. In the arrangement as in the selection of his language he is equally original. There is little or no trace in him of the interminable sentence which is the drawback of early prose in all languages when it has to deal with anything more difficult to manage than mere narrative. He has not the excessive classicism of style which mars even the fine prose of Calvin, and which makes that of some of Calvin's followers intolerably stiff. Asa rule he is careless of definitely rhythmical cadence, though his sentences are always pleasant to the ear. But the principal characteristic of Montaigne's prose style is its remarkable ease and flexibility. These peculiarities, calculated in themselves to exercise a salutary influ- ence on a language as yet somewhat undisciplined, acquired by accident an importance of an extraordinary kind. A few years after Montaigne's death a great revolution, as is generally known, passed over French. The criticism of Malherbe, followed by the establishment of the Academy, the minute grammatical censures of Vaugelas, and the severe literary censorship of Boileau turned French in less than three-quarters of a century from one*~~

~~of the freest languages in Europe to one of the most restricted. The Latinisms and Grecisms of the Pléiade were tabooed at the same time with the most picturesque expressions of the older tongue. The efforts of the reformers were directed above all things to weed and to refine, to impose additional difficulties in the way of writing exquisitely, at the same time that, by holding outa strictly-defined model, they assisted persons of little genius and imagination to write tolerably. During this revolution only two writers of older date held their ground, and those two were Rabelais and Montaigne,— Montaigne being of his nature more generally readable than Rabe- lais. The Essays, the popularity of which no academic censorship could touch, thus kept before the eyes of the 17th and 18th cen- turies a treasury of French in which every generation could behold~~

~~the riches of their ancestors. The study of them influenced all the great prose writers of France, and they could not fail to be influ- enced in the direction which it was most important that they should take by the racy phrase, the quaint and picturesque vocabulary, and the unconstrained constructions of Montaigne.~~

~~It would be impossible, however, for the stoutest defender of the importance of form in literature to assign the chief part in Mon- taigne's influence to style. It is the method or rather the manner of thinking of which that style is the garment which has in reality exercised influence on the world. Like all writers except Shake- speare, Montaigne thoroughly and completely exhibits the intellec- tual and oral complexion of his own time. When he reached man- hood the French Renaissance (which was perhaps on the whole the most characteristic example of that phenomenon, the religious element being neither in excess asit was in England and Germany, nor in defect as it had been in Italy) was at high water, and the turn of the tide was beginning. Rabelais, who died when Montaigne was still in early manhood, exhibits the earlier and rising spirit, though he needs to be completed on the poetical side. The Renaissance had, as all revolts against authority must have, a certain sceptical element, but it was not at first by any means eminently sceptical.~~

~~*Despite the half ironical, half warning termination of Pantagruel, an immense confidence and delight, as of the invader of a promised land, fills the pages of Rabelais. HIe rejoices in his strength, in his knowledge, in his freedom, in the pleasures of the flesh and the spirit. With Montaigne begins the age of disenchantment. By the time at least when he began to meditate his essays in the retirement of his country house it was tolerably certain that no golden age was about to return. The Reformation had brought not peace but a sword, and the Calvinists were as intolerant as the Catholics. The revival of learning had, whatever its benefits, merely changed the outward guise of pedants instead of extirpating pedantry. The art of printing had multiplied rubbish as well as valuable matter. The discovery of America had brought ruin to the discovered, and disease and discord to the discoverers. 'The horrors of a disputed succession were already aeenies: France. These things were enough to make thoughtful men dubious about the blessings of progress and reform ; but the extreme dissoluteness which charac- terized the private life of the time also brought about its natural result of satiety. Physical science had hardly yet emerged to occupy some active minds; scholasticism was dead, while Bacon and Des- cartes had not arisen; nothing like a theory of politics had been evolved, though Bodin anda few others were feeling after one. As the earlier Renaissance had peed occupied itself with the prac- tical business and pleasures of life, so the later Renaissance specially mused on the vanity of this business and these pleasures. The pre- disposing circumstances which affected Montaigne were thus likely to incline him to scepticism, to ethical musings on the vanity of life and the like. But toall this there had to be added the peculiarity of his own temperament. This was a decidedly complicated one, and neglect of it has led some readers to adopt a more positive idea of Montaigne's scepticism than is fully justified by all the facts. The municipality of Rome has put up a tablet on the house occupied by Montaigne during his visit there, which speaks of him as a "founder of the new philosophy." In Italian mouths at the present day this is equivalent to an assertion that Montaigne was an enemy of Christianity. No assumption can be more gratuitous or less borne out by the text of his works and the reasonable inferences to be drawn from them. The attitude which he assumed was no doubt ephectic and critical chiefly. HIe decorated his study at Montaigne with inscriptions (still, by dint of*~~

accidental preservation and restoration not accidental, legible there), most of which are of the most pessimist and sceptical character. Ecclesiastes, Ecclesiasticus, Horace, Lucretius, Sextus Empiricus, the fragments of the Greek dramatists and philosophers, are ransacked for epigraphs indicating the vanity of human reason, human wishes, human belief, human thoughts and actions of every kind. In one curious essay (if indeed it is to be called an essay), the " Apologie de Raymond Sebonde," he has apparently amused himself with gathering together, in the shape of quotations as well as of re- flexions, all that can be said against certainty in esthetics as well as in dogmatics. But the general tenor of the essays is in complete contrast with this sceptical attitude, at least in its more decided form, and it is worth notice that the motto " Que scai-je ?" does not appear on the title page till after the writer's death. The general disposition, moreover, manifested in these famous writings is very far from being determinedly Pyrrhonist or despairingly misanthro- pic. Montaigne is far too much occupied about all sorts of the ininutest details of human life to make it for a moment admissible that he regarded that life asa whole but as smoke and vapour. HIe is much too curious of the varieties of belief, and too keenly interested in following them out, to leave himself in peril of the charge that all belief was to hima matter of indifference. The reason of the misapprehension of him which is current is due very mainly to the fact that he was eminently a humorist in the midst of a people to whom, since his time, humour has been nearly un- kuown. But there is more than this. The humorist as a recog-

My ON Pegi W

nized genus almost always passes into the satirist. The temper which has been admirably defined as thinking in jest while feeling in carnest uaturally throws itself into opposition, though it may not always take the irreconcilable form of the opposition of Swift. Perhaps the only actual parallel to Montaigne in literature is Lamb. There are differences between them, arising naturally enough from differences of temperament and experience; but both agree in their attitude—an attitude which is sceptical without being negative, and humorist without being satiric. There is hardly any writer in whom the human comedy appears treated with such completeness as it is in Montaigne. There is discernible in his

~~*essays no attempt to map out a complete plan, and then to fill up its outlines. But in the desultory and haphazard fashion which distinguishes him there are few parts of life on which he does not touch. The exceptions are chiefly to be found in the higher and more poetical strains of feeling to which the humorist temperament lends itself with reluctance and distrust, though it by no means excludes them. The French disposition, by a change which has never been sufficiently accounted for, and of which the most accurate examination of documents fails fully to detect the reason, had become, after being strongly idealist in the earlier Middle Ages, absolutely positive in the later, and from this positiveness it has never since quite freed itself. This positiveness isalready notice- able in Rabelais ; it becomes more noticeable stillin Montaigne. He is always charming, but he is rarely inspiring, except in a very few passages where the sense of vanity and nothingness possesses him with unusual strength. Asa general rule, an agreeable grotesque of the affairs of life (a grotesque which never loses hold of good taste sufficiently to be called burlesque) occupies him. There is a kind of anticipation of the scientific spirit in the careful zeal with which he picks up odd aspects of mankind, and comments upon them as he places them in his museum. Such a beep rament is most pleasantly shown when it is least personal. The letter to the Bordeaux jurats does not, as has been said, show Montaigne in his best light, nor does another letter to his wife, in which he condoles with her on the death of one of their children in a strain which must have drawn from any woman of sensibility and spirit a torrent of indignant tears. But what is almost offensive in immediate and private relationships becomes not only toler- able but delightful in the impersonal and irresponsible relationship of author to reader. A dozen generations of men have rejoiced in the gentle irony with which Montaigne handles the Judicrwm hu- mani sxcult, in the quaint felicity of his selection of examples, and in the real though sometimes fantastic wisdom of his comment on his selections.*~~

~~*Montaigne did not very long survive the completion of his book. His sojourn at Paris for the purpose of getting it printed was by no means uneventful, and on his way he stayed for some time at Blois, where he met De Thou. In Paris itself he had a more disagreeable experience, being for a short time committed to the Bastille by the Leaguers, as a kind of*~~

~~hostage, it is said, for a member of their party who had been arrested at Rouen by Henry of Navarre. But he was in no real danger. He was well known to and favoured by both Catherine de' Medici and the Guises, and was very soon released. In Paris, too, at this time he made a whimsical but pleasant friendship. Marie le Jars, Demoiselle de Gournay, one of the most learned ladies of the 16th and 17th centuries, had conceived such a venera- tion for the author of the Zssays that, though a very young girl and connected with many noble families, she travelled to the capital on purpose to make his acquaint- ance. He gave her the title of his "fille d'alliance" (adopted daughter), which she bore proudly for the rest of her long life. She lived far into the 17th century, and became a character and something of a laughing-stock to the new generation; but her services to Montaigne's literary memory were, as will be seen, great. Of his other friends in these last years of his life the most important were Etienne Pasquier and Pierre Charron. 'The latter, indeed, was more than a friend, he was a disciple ; and Montaigne, just as he had constituted Mademoiselle de Gournay his "fille d'alliance," bestowed on Charron the rather curious compliment of desiring that he should take the arms of the family of Montaigne. It has been thought from these two facts, and from an expression in one of the later essays, that the marriage of his daughter Léonore had not turned out to hissatisfaction. But family affection, except towards his father, was by no means Montaigne's strongest point.~~

~~MON—MON~~

~~Not much is known of him in these later years, and indeed, despite the laborious researches of many bio- graphers, of whom one, Dr Payen, has never been excelled in persevering devotion, it cannot be said that the amount of available information about Montaigne is large at any time of his life. It would seem that the essayist had returned to his old life of study and meditation and working up his Hssays. No new ones were found after his death, but many alterations and insertions. His various maladies grew worse ; yet they were not the direct cause of his death. He was attacked with quinsy, which rapidly brought about paralysis of the tongue, and he died on the 11th of September 1592, under circumstances which, as Pasquier reports them, completely disprove any intention, at least on his part, of displaying anti-Christian or anti- Catholic leanings. Feeling~~

~~himself on the point of death, he summoned divers of his friends and neighbours to his chamber, had mass said before him, and endeavoured to raise himself and assume a devotional attitude at the elevation of the host, dying almost immediately afterwards, He was buried, though not till some months after his death, in a church in Bordeaux, which after some vicissi- tudes became the chapel of the Collége. During the Revolution the tomb and, as it was supposed, the coffin were transferred with much pomp to the town museum ; but it was discovered that the wrong coffin had been taken, and the whole was afterwards restored to its old position. Montaigne's widow survived him, and his daughter left pos- terity which became merged in the noble houses of Ségur and Lur-Saluces. But it does not appear that any male representative of the family survived, and the chateau is not now in the possession of any descendant of it.~~

~~When Mademoiselle de Gournay heard of the death of Mon- taigne she undertook with her mother a visit of ceremony and con- dolence to the widow, which had important results for literature. Madame de Montaigne gave her a copy of the edition of 1588, annotated copiously ; at the same time, apparently, she bestowed another copy, also annotated by the author, on the convent of the Feuillants in Bordeaux, to which the church in which his remains lay was attached. Mademoiselle de Gournay thereupon set to work to produce a new and final edition with a zeal and energy which would have done credit to any editor of any date. She herself worked with her own copy, inserting the additions, marking the alterations, and translating all the quotations. But when she had got this to press she sent the proofs to Bordeaux, where a poet of some note, Pierre de Brach, revised them with the other annotated copy. The edition thus produced has with justice passed as the standard even in preference to those which appeared in the author's lifetime. Unluckily, Mademoiselle de Gournay's original does not appear to exist, and her text was said, until the appearance of MM. Courbet and Royer's edition, to have been somewhat wantonly corrupted, especially in the important point of spelling. The Feuillants copy is in existence, being the only manuscript or partly manuscript authority for the text. It was edited in 1803 by Naigeon, the disciple of Diderot ; but, according to later inquiries, considerable liberties were taken with it. The first edition of 1580, with the various readings of two others which appeared during the author's lifetime, was~~

~~*reprinted by MM. Dezeimeris and Burck- hausen. Hitherto the edition of Le Clerc (3 vols., Paris, 1826-28) and in a more compact form that of Louandre (4 vols., Paris, 1854) have been the most useful. The edition, however, of MM. Courbet and Royer, which is based on that of 1595, will undoubtedly be the standard ; but, though the text is complete (Paris, Lemerre, 1873- 1877), the fifth volume, containing the biographyjand all the editorial apparatus, has unluckily yet (1883) to make its appearance. The editions of Montaigne in France and elsewhere, and the works upon him during the past three centuries, are innumerable. His influence upon his successors has already been hinted at, and cannot here be traced in detail. In one case, however,—that of Pascal—it is of sufficient importance to deserve mention. Pascal, who has left a special discourse on Montaigne, was evidently profoundly influenced by him, and the attitude towards his teacher is an interesting one. The sceptical method of the essayist is at once tempting and terrible to him. He accepts it in so far as it demolishes the claims of human reason and heathen philosophy, but evidently dreads it in so far as it is susceptible of being turned against religion itself. In England Montaigne was early popular. It was long supposed that the autograph of Shakespeare in a copy of Florio's translation showed his study of the Zssays. The autograph has been disputed,*~~

~~*7hA but divers passages, and especially one in The Tempest, show that at first or second hand the poet was acquainted with the essayist. Towards the latter end of the 17th century, Cotton, the friend of Isaac Walton, executed a complete translation, which, though not extraordinarily faithful, possesses a good deal of rough vigour. It has been frequently reprinted with additions and alterations. The most noteworthy critical handling of the subject in English is unquestionably Emerson's in Representative Men. (G. SA.)*~~

MONTALEMBERT, Cuartzs Forzes pr (1810-1870), historian, was born on 29th May 1810. The family was a very ancient one, belonging to Poitou, or rather to Angoumois. Direct descent is said to be provable to the 13th century, and charters and other documents carry the history of the house two centuries further back. For some generations before the historian the family had been dis- tinguished, not merely in the army, but for scientific attain- ments. Montalembert's father, René, emigrated, fought under Condé, and subsequently served in the English army. He married a Miss Forbes, and his eldest son Charles was born at London. At the Restoration René de Montalembert returned to France, was raised to the peerage in 1819, and became ambassador to Sweden (where Charles received much of his education) in 1826. He died a year after the overthrow of the legitimate monarchy. Charles de Montalembert was too young to take his seat as a peer (twenty-five being the necessary age), but he retained other rights ; and this, combined with his literary and intellectual activity, made him a person of some importance. He had eagerly entered into the somewhat undefined plans of Lamennais and Lacordaire for the establishment of a school of Liberal Catholicism, and he co-operated with them, both in the Avenir (see LamEn- NAIS, vol. xiv. pp. 239, 240) and in the practical endeavour, which absorbed some of the best energies of France at the time, to break through the trammels of the system of state-education. This latter scheme first brought Montalembert into notice, as he was formally charged with unlicensed teaching. He claimed the right of trial by his peers, and made a notable defence, of course with a deliberate intention of protest. His next most remarkable act was his participa- tion in the famous pilgrimage to Rome of his two friends. This step, as is well known, proved useless to mitigate the measures which private intrigues, and perhaps a not alto- gether injudicious instinct, prompted the Roman curia to take against the Avenir and the doctrines of its promoters. Montalembert, however, submitted dutifully to the ency- clical of June 1835, and only devoted himself more assiduously to the work on which he was engaged, the Life of St Elizabeth of Hungary. This appeared in 1836. It displayed Montalembert's constant literary characteristics, and, though inferior to Les Moines d'Occident in research and labour, is perhaps superior to it as a work of art. The famous speech by which Montalembert is best known, —" Nous sommes

~~*les fils des croisés et jamais nous ne re- culerons devant les fils de Voltaire", expresses, or at least indicates, his attitude not insufficiently. He was an ardent student of the Middle Ages, but his medizval enthusiasm was strongly tinctured with religious sentiment, and at the same time by no means connected with any affection for despotism. Montalembert still clung to his early liberalism, and he made himself conspicuous during the reign of Louis Philippe by his protests against the restrictions imposed on the liberty of the press, besides struggling for freedom in national education. The party which he represented, or rather which he strove to found, was by no means wholly Legitimist at heart, and at the downfall of Louis Philippe Montalembert had no difficulty in accepting the republic and taking, when elected, a seat in the assembly. He had not a little to do with the support given by France to the pope. As he had accepted the republic, he was not disinclined to accept the empire; but the measures which*~~

~~*followed the cowp d'état disgusted him, though he still sat in the chamber. A defeat in 1857 put an end to his parliamentary appearances. He was still, however, recog- nized as one of the most formidable of the moderate opponents of the empire, and he was repeatedly prosecuted for anti-imperialist letters and pamphlets. In the ten years between 1840 and 1850 he had written little but political pamphlets, but after the establishment of the empire, and especially after he lost his seat in the chamber, he became more prominent as an author. Even before this he had produced a volume on the Avenir Politique de ? Angleterre (1855), and another on Pie LX. et Lord Palmer- ston (1856), besides numerous articles and pamphlets, the chief of which were perhaps Une Nation [Poland] en Deuul, and L'Eglise Libre dans Etat Libre.*~~

~~*His great work, the fruit of many years' labour, did not appear till he was fifty years old, and ten years before his death, which occurred before its completion. Les Mownes d'Occident depuis St Bénoit jusqwa St Bernard has some of the peculiar drawbacks which have characterized almost all historical work of any literary pretensions during the present generation. It is planned on too large a scale, and executed with too much regard to*~~

~~*profusion of pictur- esque detail and abundance of fiuent argument on points which the writer has at heart. Its best passages are inferior to the best of a younger writer of very different opinions though not dissimilar style and temperament—M. Ernest Renan ; but it is a work of great interest and value.*~~

~~*Montalembert, who had married Mademoiselle de Merode, sister of one of Pius IX.'s ministers, but who had no male offspring, died in March 1870, the year so fatal to France. His health had long been very bad, and was understood to have suffered from the chagrins attending his exclusion from political life and the defeat of most of his plans. Since his death his works have appeared in a complete edition, They have, regarded from the literary point of view, many of the faults of their time. A voluminous and vigorous writer, Montalembert was more of a journalist, a pamphleteer, and an orator than of a man of letters properly so called. His talents were diffused rather than concen- trated, and they were much occupied on merely ephemeral topics. But of picturesque eloquence in a fluent and rather facile kind he was no inconsiderable representative.*~~

~~*MONTALVAN, Jovan Perez Dx (1602-1638), Spanish dramatist and writer of fiction, was the son of the king's bookseller, and was born at Madrid in 1602. At the early age of seventeen he became a licentiate in theology, and in 1626, after entering the priesthood, he received a notarial appointment in connexion with the Inquisition. His overtasked brain succumbed under the numerous literary labours he imposed on it, and he died when only thirty- six years old (25th June 1638).*~~

~~*In 1624 he published eight prose tales (Sucesos y prodigios en amor, en ocho novelas eyemplares), one of which, " The Disastrous Friendship," has been characterized by Ticknor as one of the best in the language. This, as well as a subsequent volume of stories (Para todos: Exemplos morales, hwmanos y divinos, 1633), was fre- quently reprinted. His last prose writing was a popular panegyric on his lately deceased friend and master Lope de Vega (Hama pés- twma de Lope de Vega, 1638), whom he almost rivalled in dramatic productiveness, and whose conventional manner, flimsiness in con- struction, and carelessness in execution he too closely followed. The first volume of his collected Comedias appeared in*~~

~~*1638, the second in 1639. On the Spanish stage they were in great request, and Montalvan's repute led inferior writers in some cases to borrow his name. His dramas are distinctly superior to his " Autos sacramentales," but even of the former the tragedy Los Amantes de*~~

~~*Terwel is the only one that has enjoyed permanent popularity. See Ticknor, Hist. of Span. Lit., vol. ii. (1868).*~~

~~*MONTANA, one of the north-western Territories of the United States, is limited on the N. by British Columbia, on the E. by Dakota, on the 8. by Wyoming and Idaho, and on the W. by Idaho. Its boundaries, as established*~~

~~*MON—MON*~~

~~*by statute, are as follows :—on the N., the 49th parallel ; on the E., the 27th meridian west of Washington, or the 104th west of Greenwich; on the 8. and W. the boun- dary follows the 45th parallel from the 27th meridian west to the 34th meridian west, then turns south along the latter meridian to its point of intersection with the conti- nental watershed, thence along the crest-line of this water- shed westward and north-westward until it reaches the Bitter-root Mountains; it then follows the crest of this range north-westward to the point where it is crossed by the 39th meridian west, which it follows north to the line of British Columbia. The total area is about 146,080 square miles—an approximate estimate, as the boundary along the continental watershed and the Bitter-root Mountains has not been exactly surveyed. The average elevation above sea-level has been estimated at 3900 feet.*~~

~~*Topographically, Montana may be separated into two great divisions—that of the plains comprising the eastern two-thirds, and that of the mountains comprising the western portion. The former, a monotonous rolling ex- panse, broken only by the beds of the few streams which traverse it, and by a few small groups of hills, extends over nine degrees of longitude in a gentle uniform slope, rising from 2000 feet above the sea at the eastern boundary to 4000 at the base of the Rocky Mountains. Except along the streams and upon the scattered groups of hills, this section is entirely devoid of forest-growth of any kind. Vegetation is*~~

~~*limited to the bunch grasses, artemisia, and cacti. The grasses are the most abundant and luxuriant near the mountains, where the rainfall is greatest. The mountain section, comprising the western third of the Territory, is composed, in general terms, of a succession of ranges and valleys running very uniformly somewhat in a north-west and south-east direction. The mountains vary in height from 8000 to 10,000, even in isolated cases reaching 11,000 feet, with mountain-passes 6000 to 8000 feet above the sea. Towards the north the ranges become almost continuous, forcing the streams into long and circuitous courses in order to disentangle themselves from the maze of mountains, while, on the other hand, the ranges of the south-western part of the Territory are much broken, afford- ing numerous low passes and water-gaps.*~~

~~*In the mountainous part of the Territory are the head- waters of the Missouri (Atlantic basin) and Clark's Fork of the Columbia (Pacific basin). The former rises in the south-west of the territory in three large branches, the Jefferson, Madison, and Gallatin, which meet at the foot of the Gallatin valley at a point known as the "Three Forks of the Missouri." Here the Missouri is a good-sized stream, fordable with difficulty even when the current is lowest. From this point to its mouth navigation is pos- sible when the stream is not below its mean height; it is interrupted only at the Great Falls of the Missouri, near Fort Benton, above which, however, it is practically little used for navigation. Its other principal tributaries in its upper course are the Sun, Teton, Marias, Musselshell, and Milk rivers, all of which vary much in size with the season,—the last two being nearly or quite dry near their mouths in the fall of the year. The Yellowstone, one of the most important tributaries of the Missouri, has nearly all its course in Montana, and is navigable for small steamers as far as the Crow Agency, except when the water is low. Clark's Fork of the Columbia is formed by the junction of the Flathead and the Missoula or Hellgate river. The former rises in the mountains of British Columbia and flows nearly south through Flathead Lake to its point of junction with the Missoula, The latter rises opposite the Jefferson river and flows north-westward, receiving on its way several large affluents. Below the point of junction of these streams, Clark's Fork flows north-west along the*~~

~~*base of the Bitter-root Mountains intoIdaho. This stream is very rapid, and is not navigable. Its course, as well as those of most of its tributaries, passes through narrow valleys, the surrounding country being well watered and covered with dense forests of Conifere.*~~

~~*Geology.—Most of the mountain area belongs to the Eozoic and Silurian formations. Along the base of the mountains is a Triassic belt of variable width. Succeeding this is a broad area of nearly horizontal Cretaceous beds, followed by the Tertiary formation, which covers nearly one-third of the Territory. These recent for- mations are interrupted here and there by volcanic upheavals.*~~

~~*Climate.—The climate of Montana differs almost as greatly in different parts of the Territory as that of California. In the north- west it resembles that of the Pacific coast. The westerly winds blowing off the Pacific do not meet with as formidable a barrier as farther south, and consequently are not chilled, or deprived of so large a proportion of their moisture. The result is that the north- western portion of Montana enjoysa mild temperature and a rainfall sufficient for the needs of agriculture. The valleys of the Kootenai, Flathead, Missoula, and Bitter-root can be cultivated without irriga-*~~

~~*clad from summit to base; and the narrower valleys are also covered, while the timber is of larger size and of much greater commercial value than elsewhere in the Territory,—the valuable timberconsisting entirely of the various species of Coniferz, pine, fir, cedar, &c. Of the broad-leaved speeies, willow, aspen, and cotton-wood are abundant.*~~

~~*Fauna.—The native fauna is not sharply distinguished from that of neighbouring States and Territories. The higher latitude is, however, indicated by the relatively greater abundance of species favouring a colder climate. The moose and the Roeky Mountain goat, though by no means abundant, still frequent chosen haunts in the mountains,—the former in the cool marshy valleys, the latter upon the most rugged*~~

~~*inaccessible elevations. The black-tailed and mule deer, the antelope, elk, and mountain sheep are abundant, and the bison still ranges the plains, though in sadly reduced numbers. Among Carnivorz, the black and grizzly bears, mountain lion, lynx, wild cat, and several species of wolves are still plentiful.*~~

~~*Agriculture and Industry.—Agriculture is dependent in most parts of Montana upon the supply of water furnished by the streams. Owing to this fact it is probable that not more than 8 per cent. of the total area of the Territory can ever, even under the most economical distribution of the water-supply, be brought under cultivation. In the drainage area of Clark's Fork are*~~

~~*Sketch Map of M*~~

~~*773*~~

~~*tion with little danger of loss from drought. Farther east and south the rainfall decreases. In the valleys of the upper Missouri, tho Jefferson, Madison, Gallatin, and the upper Yellowstone irrigation is almost everywhere required, as well as over the broad extent of the plains. Over most of the Territory the rainfall ranges from 10 to 15 inches annually ; in the north-western corner it rises to 25. The general temperature is comparatively mild for the latitude, the elevation above the sea being decidedly less than that of the average of the Rocky Mountain region. The mean annual temper- ature ranges from 40° to 50° Fahr., but the variations are very great and violent. Frosts and snowstorms are possible during every month of the year, so that agriculture and stock-raising are more or less hazardous. On the other hand, the ordinary extremes of temperature are not so great asin more arid portions of the country. forests.—Throughout the Territory, as everywhere else in the Cordilleran region, forests follow rainfall. The plains are treeless ; the mountain valleys about the heads of the Missouri are clothed only with grass and artemisia, many localities extending to a con- siderable height up the mountains, which are themselves timbered, though not heavily. In the north-western part, roughly defined as the drainage area of Clark's Fork, where the rainfall is somewhat greater, the forests become of importance. The mountains are forest- West 106 from Greenwich*~~

~~hi, ee ate A "ee a oF a)~~

~~oC te~~

~~ontana Territory.~~

~~several fine valleys containing a considerable extent of arable land, such as those of the Missoula, Bitter-root, Deer Lodge, Jocko, and Flathead. Upon the head-waters of the Missouri is also a large extent of arable land. The valleys of the Jefferson and Madison also deserve mention. Along the eastern base of the mountains, near the head-waters of the Sun, Teton, and Marias rivers, are consider- able areas susceptible of irrigation. Below the Forks the Missouri flows for 75 miles through a broad valley, much of which can be irri- gated ; below Fort Benton, however, the bluffs become higher and close in on the river. The Yellowstone, also, after leaving the moun- tains, flows through a similar kind of valley, which extends with a few minor breaks down to the point where the river turns from an east to a north-east course, when it enters a country of mawvatses terres, which, except as a mausoleum of fossil remains, is utterly valueless.~~

~~Owing to the comparatively isolated position of the Territory, agricultural pursuits have been limited by the demands of home consumption. The census of 1880 reported the area in farms to con- sist of 405,683 acres, with an average of 267 acres to each farm. The whole is less than one-half per cent. of the entire area of the Terri- tory. The improved land is reported as amounting to 262,611 acres. The following are the amounts of the principal agricultural products :—wheat, 469,688 bushels; maize, 5689 bushels; oats,~~

~~774~~

~~900,915 bushels ; barley, 39,970 bushels ; hay, 63,947 tons ; wool, 995,484 pounds ;—value of all farm products, $2,024,923. The live- stock interest is large, and is increasing rapidly. The great extent of pasture afforded by the plains and the broad valleys of the mountains would seem to promise an almost unlimited extension of this industry in the future. Both cattle and sheep owners, however, labour under disadvantages as~~

~~compared with the owners farther south. The lower temperature and heavier snows, and particularly the danger of great extremes of temperature, require that provision of shelter and food be made for a part or all of the winter season, otherwise the rancheman runs the risk of occasional severe losses. 'The census of 1880 furnishes the following statistics of live-stock : — horses, 35,114 ; mules and asses, 858 ; working oxen, 936; milch cows, 11,308 ; other cattle, 160,143; sheep, 184,277 ; swine, 10,278 ; — total value of live-stock, $5,151,554.~~

~~In mineral production Montana has never taken a leading place, although in the early days some of the placer ground yielded well. The rich placers of Little Prickly Pear, Bannack, and Alder Gulch were quickly exhausted. The produce of the latter has been reported variously at from $25,000,000 to $40,000,000, the greater part of which was extracted in a few months. In the year 1879-80 $1,805,767 worth of gold and $2,905,068 of silver were extracted, about three-fourths from deep mines and one-fourth from placers. For the year 1882 the total mineral production is reported at $8,004,000, of which about $1,000,000 was for copper and lead.~~

~~Population. — Owing largely to its remote position the population as well as the material prosperity of Montana have had a slow growth in comparison with other more favoured portions ofthe west. The population in 1880, as reported by the census, was 39,159 (28,177 males, and 10,982 females), — an increase of 90°1 per cent. over that in 1870. There were 27,638 natives, and 11,521 of foreign birth, while 35,385 werc whites, 346 negroes or of mixed negro blood, 1765 Chinese, and 1663 citizen Indians. By far the greater portion of the popula- tion is found in the western half, upon the head-waters of the Missouri and Clark's Fork. The eastern halfis as yet but very sparsely settled, and probably it will never sustain more than a small population.~~

~~The Territory is divided into eleven counties, which, with their population in 1880, were the following : — Beaverhead, 2712; Choteau, 3058; Custer, 2510; Dawson, 180 ; Deer Lodge, 8876 ; Gallatin, 3643 ; Jefferson, 2464 ; Lewis and Clark, 6521 , Madison, 3915 ; Meagher, 2743; Missoula, 2537. The principal settlements are—Helena, the capital~~

~~*(3624); Butte, a mining town (3363) ; and Bozeman, in the Gallatin valley upon the Northern Pacific Railway, which in 1880 had a population of 894 and has probably double that number at present (1883).*~~

~~*The total number of Indians in Montana is estimated by the Indian office at 19,764. These are nominally congregated at five agencies, although in reality they roam over the entire Territory. They are of various tribes, the principal of which are the Sioux, Crow, Blackfoot, Gros Ventre, Assinaboine, and Pend' d Oreille. Their reservations cover more than one-third of the Territory.*~~

~~*Government and Finance.—The government of Montana is similar to that of the other Territories. The governor, secretary, chief jus- tice, and two associate justices are appointed by the president of the United States. The treasnrer, auditor, and superintendent of public instruction are elected by the people of the Territory, as are also the members of the two houses of the legislature. Montana is repre- sented in Congress by a delegate, also elective, who has liberty to take part in debate but has no vote. The Territorial debt at the close of 1881 was but $70,000. The amount raised by Territorial taxation was $93,211.*~~

~~*History.—The Montana country was originally acquired by the United States under the Lonisiana purchase. It became successively a part of Louisiana Territory, of Missouri Territory, of Nebraska Territory, and of Dakota. On 26th May 1864 it was organized under a Territorial government ofits own, with practically its present boundaries. The exploration of this region commenced with the celebrated expedition of Lewis and Clark in 1803-1806. Between 1850 and 1855 it was traversed and mapped by a number of exploring partics, having in view the selection of trans-continental railroad routes. Since then numberless expeditions have examined it, and some systematic topographic work has been done under different branches of the United States Government. The first settlers entered the Territory in 1861, discovered placer gold on Little Prickly Pear Creek, and shortly after built the city of Helena. Later, the placers at Bannack were discovered, and a small "rush" to the Territory commenced. In 1863 the rich placers at Alder Gulch were brought to view, and miners and adventurers swarmed in from all parts. Then it was*~~

~~that the early social history of Cali- fornia was repeated on a smaller scale in Montana. The lawless elements assumed control, and for many months neither life nor property was safe. Indeed, for a time the community was in a state of blockade ; no one with money in his possession could get out of the Territory. Finally, the citizens organized a '* Vigilance Committee" for self-preservation, took the offensive, and after a short sharp struggle rid the community of its disturbing elcments. After the exhaustion of the placers, the population decreased, owing~~

~~to the migration of the floating mining class; but their place was soon taken by more permanent settlers. (. G7=)~~

~~MONTANISM is a somewhat misleading name for the movement in the 2d century which, along with Gnos- ticism, occupied the most critical period in the history of the early church. It was the overthrow of Gnosticism and Montanism that made the "Catholic" church. The credit of first discerning the true significance of the Montanistic movement belongs to Ritschl.!~~

~~In this article an account will be given of the general significance of Montanism in relation to the history of the church in the 2d century, followed by a sketch of its origin, development, and decline.~~

~~1. From the middle of the 2d century a change began to take place in the outward circumstances of Christianity. The Christian faith had hitherto been maintained in a few small congregations scattered over the Roman em- pire. These congregations were provided with only the most indispensable constitutional forms, neither stricter nor more numerous than were required by a religious bond resting on supernatural expectations, strict discipline, and brotherly love ('Corpus sumus de conscientia_re- ligionis, de unitate discipline, de spei federe"). This state of things passed away. The churches soon found numbers within their pale who stood in need of super- vision, instruction, and regular control. The enthusiasm for a life of holiness and separation from the world, the eager outlook for the end of the world, the glad surrender to the gospel message, were no longer the influences by which all minds were swayed.~~

~~*In many cases sober convictions or submissive assent supplied the want of spontaneous enthusiasm. There were many who did not become, but who were, and therefore remained, Christians,—too powerfully attracted by Christianity to abandon it, and yet not powerfully enough to have adopted it for themselves. Then, in addition to this, social distinctions asserted themselves amongst the breth- ren. Christians were already found in all ranks and occupations—in the imperial palace, among the officials, in the abodes of labour and the halls of learning, amongst slaves and freemen. Were all these to be left in their callings? Should the church take the decisive step into the world, consent to its arrangements, conform to its customs, acknowledge as far as possible its authorities, and satisfy its requirements? Or ought she, on the other hand, to remain, as she had been at first, a society of religious devotees, separated and shut out from the world by a rigorous discipline and working on it only through a direct propaganda? This was the dilemma that the church had to face in the second half of the 2d century : either she must commence a world-wide mission in the comprehensive sense by an effective entrance into Roman society—renouncing, of course, her original peculiarities and exclusiveness; or, retaining these peculiarities and clinging to the old modes of life, she must remain a small insigni- ficant sect, barely intelligible to one man in a thousand, and utterly incapable of saving and educating nations. That this was the question at issue ought to be obvious enough to us now, although it could not be clearly per- ceived at the time. It was natural that warning voices should then be raised in the church against secular tendencies, that the well-known counsels about the imita- tion of Christ should be held up in their literal strictness before worldly Christians, that demands should be made for a restoration of the old discipline and severity, and for a return to apostolic simplicity and purity. The church asa whole, however, under pressure of circumstances rather than by a spontaneous impulse, decided otherwise. She marched through the open door into the Roman state, and settled*~~

~~*1 Entstehung der Altkatholischen Kirche, 24 ed., Bonn, 1857.*~~

~~*MONTANISM*~~

~~*down there for a long career of activity, to Christianize the state along all its thoroughfares by imparting to it the word of the gospel, but at the same time leaving it everything ex- ceptits gods. On the other hand, she furnished herself with everything of value that could be taken over from the world without overstraining the elastic structure of the organiza- tion which she now adopted. With the aid of its philosophy she created her new Christian theology; its polity furnished her with the most exact constitutional forms; its juris- prudence, its trade and commerce, its art and industry, were all taken into her service; and she contrived to borrow some hints even from its religious worship. Thus we find the church in the 3d century endowed with all the resources which the state and its culture had to offer, entering into all the relationships of life, and ready for any compromise which did not affect the confession of her faith. With this equipment she undertook, and carried through, a world- mission on a grand scale. But what of those believers of the old school who protested in the name of the gospel against this secular church, and who wished to gather together a people prepared for their God regardless alike of numbers and circumstances? Why, they joined an enthusiastic movement which had originated amongst a small circle in a remote province, and had at first a merely local importance. There, in Phrygia, the cry for a strict Christian life was reinforced by the belief in a new and final outpouring of the Spirit,—a coincidence which has been observed elsewhere in church history, as, for instance, in the Irvingite movement. The wish was, as usual, father to the thought; and thus societies of "spiritual" Christians were formed, which served, especially in times of persecu- tion, as rallying-points for all those, far and near, who sighed for the end of the world and the excessus e sxculo, and who wished in these last days to lead a holy life. These zealots hailed the appearance of the Paraclete in Phrygia, and surrendered themselves to his guidance. In so doing, however, they had to withdraw from the church, to be known as ' Montanists," or '"' Kataphrygians," and thus to assume the character of a sect. Their enthusiasm and their prophesyings were denounced as demoniacal ; their expectation of a glorious earthly kingdom of Christ was stigmatized as Jewish, their passion for martyrdom as vainglorious, and their whole conduct as hypocritical. Nor did they escape the more serious imputation of heresy on important articles of faith ; indeed, there was a disposi- tion to put them on the same level with the Gnostics. The*~~

~~effect on themselves was what usually follows in such circumstances. After their separation from the church, they became narrower and pettier in their conception of Christianity. The strict rules of conduct which ina former age had been the genuine issue of high-strung religious emotion were now relied on as its source. Their asceticism degenerated into legalism, their claim to a monopoly of pure Christianity made them arrogant. As for the popular religion of the larger church, they scorned it as an adulter- ated, manipulated Christianity. But these views found very little acceptance in the 3d century, and in the course of the 4th they died out. Regardless of the scruples of her most conscientious members, and driving the most earnest Christians into secession and the conventicle, the church went on to prosecute her great mission in the world. And before she was able, as church of the state and of the empire, to call in the aid of the civil power to suppress her adversaries the Montanistic conventicles were almost extinct.~~

~~2. Such is, in brief, the position occupied by Montanism in the history of the ancient church. The rise and progress of the movement were as follows.~~

~~At the close of the reign of Antoninus Pius—probably in the year 156 (Epiphanius)—Montanus appeared at~~

~~Ardaban in Phrygia, bringing revelations of the "Spirit" to Christendom. It is unnecessary to seek an explanation of his appearance in the peculiarities of the Phrygian temperament. The Christian churches had always held that prophecy was to be continued till the return of Christ, although, as a matter of fact, prophets had not been parti- cularly numerous. Montanus claimed to have a prophetic calling in the very same sense as Agabus, Judas, Silas, the daughters of Philip, Quadratus, and Ammia, or as Hermas at Rome. Ata later time, when the validity of the Mon- tanistic prophecy was called in question in the interest of the church, the adherents of the new movement appealed explicitly to a sort of prophetic succession, in which their prophets had received the same gift which the daughters of Philip, for example, had exercised in that very country of Phrygia. The burden of the new prophecy was a more exacting~~

~~*standard of moral obligations, especially with regard to marriage, fasting, and martyrdom. But Mon- tanus had larger schemes in view. He wished to organize a special community of true Christians to wait for the coming of their Lord. The small Phrygian towns of Pepuza and Tymion were selected as the headquarters — the Jerusalem, as the prophet called them — of his church. He spared no effort to accomplish this union of believers. Funds were raised for the new organization, and from these the leaders and missionaries, who were to have nothing to do with worldly life, drew their pay. But the ecstasy of the prophet did not prove so contagious as his preaching. Only two women, Prisca and Maximilla, were moved by the Spirit ; ike Montanus, they uttered in a state of frenzy the commands of the Spirit, which spoke through them sometimes as God the Father, sometimes as the Son, and urged men to a strict and holy life. This does not mean that visions and significant dreams may not have been of frequent occurrence in Montanistic circles. But, as chosen and permanent organs of the Paraclete, only three persons were recognized — Montanus, Prisca, and Maximilla ; by their side, however, Alcibiades and Theo- dotus, from a very early date, played an active part as missionaries and organizers.*~~

~~*For twenty years this agitation appears to have been confined to Phrygia and the neighbouring provinces. How could it be otherwise? To assemble the whole of Christendom at Pepuza was a rather impracticable pro- posal. But after the year 177 a persecution of Christians, from some unexplained causes, broke out simultaneously in many provinces of the empire. Now in these days every persecution was regarded as the beginning of the end. It quickened the conscience, and gave more strength to eschatological hopes ; it was a call to observe the signs of the times and the intimations of God's presence. It would seem that before this time Montanus had disappeared from the scene ; but Maximilla, and probably also Prisca, were working with redoubled energy. And now, through- out the provinces of Asia Minor, in Rome, and even in Gaul, amidst the raging of persecution, attention was attracted to this remarkable movement. The desire for a sharper exercise of discipline, and a more decided renuncia- tion of the world, combined with a craving for some plain indication of God's will in these last critical times, had prepared many minds for an eager acceptance of the tidings from*~~

~~*Phrygia. There the Spirit, whom Christ had promised to His disciples, had begun His work ; there, at least, there were holy Christians and joyful martyrs. The oracles of the Phrygian prophets became household words in distant churches, and it was always the more serious- minded who received them with undisguised sympathy. And thus, within the large congregations where there was so much that was open to censure in doctrine and con- stitution and morals, conventicles were formed in order*~~

~~*that Christians might prepare themselves by strict discipline for the day of the Lord.*~~

~~*Meanwhile in Phrygia and its neighbourhood—especially in Galatia, and also in Thrace—a controversy was raging between the adherents and the opponents of the new prophecy. Between 150 and 176 the authority of the episcopate had been immensely strengthened, and along with it a settled order had been introduced into the churches. It need hardly be said that, as a rule, the bishops were the most resolute enemies of the Montanistic enthusiasm. It disturbed the peace and order of the con- gregations, and threatened their safety. Moreover, it made demands on individual Christians such as very few could comply with. But the disputation which Bishops Zoticus of Cumana and Julian of Apamea arranged with Maximilla and her following turned out most disastrously for its promoters. The "spirit" of Maximilla gained a signal victory, a certain Themison in particular having reduced the bishops to silence. Sotas bishop of Anchialus attempted to refute Prisca, but with no better success ; he too had to retire from the field in disgrace. These proceedings were never forgotten in Asia Minor, and the report of them spread far and wide. In after times the only way in which the discomfiture of the bishops could be explained was by asserting that they had been silenced by fraud or violence. This was the commencement of the excommunication or secession, whichever it may have been, of the Montanists in Asia Minor. "Iam pursued like a wolf," exclaimed the spirit that spoke through Maximilla; and her admonitions about the end became more emphatic than ever :—' After me there will come no other prophetess, but the end." Not only did an extreme party arise in Asia Minor rejecting all prophecy*~~

~~*and the Apocalypse of John along with it, but the majority of the churches and bishops in that district appear (c. 178) to have broken off all fellowship with the new prophets, while' books were written to show that the very form of the Montanistic prophecy was sufficient proof of its spuriousness.!*~~

~~*In Gaul and Rome the prospects of Montanism seemed for a while more favourable. The confessors of the Gallican Church were of opinion that communion ought to be maintained with the zealots of Asia and Phrygia; and they addressed a letter to this effect to the Roman bishop, Eleutherus. Whether this is the bishop of whom Ter- tullian (Adv. Prax., 1) relates that he was on the point of making peace with the churches of Asia and Phrygia— i.¢., the Montanistic communities—is not certain ; it was either he or his successor Victor. It is certain, at any- rate, that there was a momentary vacillation, even in Rome. Nor is this to be wondered at. The events in Phrygia could not appear new and unprecedented to the Roman Church. If we may believe Tertullian, it was Praxeas of Asia Minor, the relentless foe of Montanism, who succeeded in persuading the Roman bishop to with- hold his letters of conciliation.*~~

~~*Early in the last decade of the 2d century two consider- able works appeared in Asia Minor against the Kataphry- gians. The first, by a bishop or presbyter whose name is not known, is addressed to Abircius bishop of Hierapolis, and was written in the fourteenth year after the death of Maximilla, z.e., apparently about the year 193. The other was written by a certain Apollonius forty years after the appearance of Montanus, consequently about 196. From these treatises we learn that the adherents of the new prophecy were very numerous in Phrygia, Asia, and Galatia (Ancyra), that they had tried to defend them-*~~

~~*1 Miltiades, wept rod wh detv mpodirnv év éxaordoer adelv. At*~~

~~*the same time as Miltiades, if not earlier, Apollinaris of Hierapolis also wrote against the Montanists.*~~

~~*MONTA4ADISH*~~

~~*selves in writing from the charges brought against them (by Miltiades), that they possessed a fully-developed independent organization, that they could boast of many martyrs, and that they were still formidable to the church in Asia Minor. Many of the small congregations had gone completely over to Montanism, although in large towns, like Ephesus, the opposite party maintained the ascendency. Every bond of intercourse was broken, and in the Catholic churches the worst calumnies were retailed about the deceased prophets and the leaders of the societies they had founded.*~~

~~*In many churches outside of Asia Minor a different state of matters prevailed. Those who accepted the message of the new prophecy did not at once leave the Catholic Church in a body. They simply formed small conventicles within the church ; in many instances, indeed, their belief in the new prophecy may have remained a private opinion which did not affect their position as members of the larger congregation. Such, for example, appears to have been the case in Carthage (if we may judge from the Acts of the martyrs Perpetua and Felicitas) at the commencement of the persecution of Septimius Severus about the year 202. But even here it was impossible that an open rupture should be indefinitely postponed. The bishops and their flocks gave offence to the spiritualists on so many points that at last it could be endured no longer. The latter wished for more fasting, the prohibition of second marriages, a frank, courageous profession of Christianity in daily life, and entire separa- tion from the world; the bishops, on the other hand, sought in every way to make it as easy as possible to be a Christian, lest they should lose the greater part of their congregations. The spiritualists would have excluded from the church every one who had been guilty of mortal sin; the bishops were at that time specially anxious to relax the stringency of the old disciplinary laws. And lastly, the bishops were compelled more and more to take the control of discipline into their own hands, while the spiritualists, appealing to the old principle that God alone can remit or retain sins, insisted that God Himself—i.e. the Spirit—was the sole judge in the congregation, and that therefore all proceedings must be conducted according to the directions of the prophets. On this point especially a conflict was inevitable. It is true that there was no rivalry between the new organization and the old, as in Asia and Phrygia, for the Western*~~

~~*Montanists recognized in its main features the Catholic organization as it had been developed in the contest with Gnosticism ; but the demand that the "organs of the Spirit" should direct the whole discipline of the congregation contained implicitly a protest against the actual constitution of the church. Even before this latent antagonism was made plain, there were many minor matters which were sufficient to precipitate a rupture in particular congregations. In Carthage, for example, it would appear that the breach between the Catholic Church and the Montanistic con-venticle was caused by a disagreement on the question whether or not virgins ought to be veiled. For nearly five years (202-207) the Carthaginian Montanists strove to remain within the church, which was as dear to them as it was to their opponents. But at length they quitted it, and formed a congregation of their own, declaring that the Catholic Church was henceforth only a body of "psychic" Christians, because she would not acknowledge the Spirit whom God had at last poured out on His people.*~~

~~*It was at this juncture that Tertullian, the most famous theologian of the West, left the church of which he had been the most loyal son and the most powerful supporter, and whose cause he had so manfully upheld against pagans and heretics. He too had come to the conviction that the*~~

~~*church at large was given over to worldliness, that she had forsaken the old paths and entered on a way that must lead to destruction. The writings of Tertullian afford the clearest demonstration that what is called Mon-tanism was a reaction against secularism in the church, and an effort to conserve the privileges of primitive Chris- tianity. At the same time, they show no less clearly that Montanism in Carthage was a very different thing from the Montanism of Montanus. Western Montanism, at the beginning of the 3d century, admitted the legitimacy of almost every point of the Catholic system. It allowed that the bishops were the successors of the apostles, that the Catholic rule of faith was a complete and authoritative exposition of Christianity, and that the New Testament was the supreme rule of the Christian life. How, then, one may well ask, was it possible to separate from the Catholic Church? On what ground could the*~~

~~separation be justi- fied? How could it be said that a new era of the Spirit had come in when the Spirit had already given all neces- sary instructions in the Scriptures of the New Testament ? And what claim could be thought to exceed the legitimate rights of the successors of the apostles? Montanus himself and his first disciples had been in quite a different position. In his time there was no fixed, divinely-instituted congrega- tional organization, no canon of New Testament Scriptures, no anti- Gnostic theology, and no Catholic Church. There were simply certain communities of believers bound to- gether by a common hope, and by a free organization, which might be modified to any required extent. When Montanus proposed to summon all true Christians to Pepuza, in order to live a holy life and prepare for the day of the Lord, there was nothing whatever to prevent the execution of his plan except the inertia and lukewarmness of Chris- tendom. But this was not the case in the West at the beginning of the 3d century. At Rome and Carthage, and in all other places where sincere Montanists were found, they were confronted by the imposing edifice of the Catholic Church, and they had neither the courage nor the inclination to undermine her sacred foundations. This explains how the later Montanism never attained a posi- tion of influence. In accepting, with slight reservations, the results of the development which the church had undergone during the fifty years from 160 to 210 it reduced itself to the level of a sect. For, if the stand- point of the Catholic Church is once acknowledged, then Montanism is an innovation ; and if the canon of the New Testament is accepted the doctrine of a new era of the Spirit is heresy. 'Tertullian exhausted the resources of dialectic in the endeavour to define and vindicate the relation of the spiritualists to the "psychic" Christians ; but no one will say he has succeeded in clearing the Mon- tanistic position of its fundamental inconsistency.~~

~~Of the later history of Montanism very little is known. But it is at least a significant fact that prophecy could not be resuscitated. Montanus, Prisca, aud Maximilla were always recognized as the inspired authorities. At rare intervals a vision might perhaps be vouchsafed to some Montanistic old woman, or a brother might now and then have a dream that seemed to be of supernatural origin ; but the overmastering power of religious enthusiasm was a thing of which the Montanists knew as little as the Catho- lics. Their discipline was attended with equally disap-~~

~~*pointing results. In place of an intense moral earnestness binding itself by its own strict laws, we find in Tertullian a legal casuistry, a finical morality, from which no good could ever come. It was only in the land of its nativity that Montanism held its ground till the 4th century. It maintained itself there in a number of close communities, probably in places where no Catholic congregation had been formed ; and to these the Novatians at a later period*~~

~~*attached themselves. In Carthage there existed down to the year 400 a sect called Tertullianists; and in their comparatively late survival we have a striking testimony to the influence of the great Carthaginian teacher. On doctrinal questions there was no real difference between the Catholics and the Montanists. The early Montanists (the prophets themselves) used expressions which seem to indicate a Monarchian conception of the person of Christ. After the close of the 2d century we find two sections amongst the Western Montanists, just as amongst the Western Catholics, —there were some who adopted the Logos-Christology, and others who remained Monarchians.*~~

~~*Sources.—The materials for the history of Montanism, although plentiful, are fragmentary, and require a good deal of critical sifting. They may be divided into four groups. (1) The utterances of Montanus, Prisca, and Maximilla! are our most important sources, but unfortunately they cousist of only twenty-one short sayings, (2) The works written by Tertullian after he became a Montanist furnish the most copious information,—not, however, about the first stages of the movement, but only about its later phasc, after the Catholic Church was established. (8) The oldest polemical works of the 2d century, extracts from which have been preserved, especially by Eusebins (Hist, Eccles., bk. v.), form the next group. These must be used with the utmost caution, because even the earliest orthodox writers give currency to many misconceptions and calumnies. (4) The later lists of heretics, and the casual notices of church fathers from the 3d to the 5th century, though not con- taining much that is of value, yet contain a little.2*~~

~~*Literature.—Ritschl's investigations, referred to above, super- sede the older works of Tillemont, Wernsdorf, Mosheim, Walch, Neander, Baur, and Schwegler (Der Montanismus und die christ- liche Kirche des 2ten Jahrhunderts, Tiibingen, 1841), The later works, of which the best and most exhaustive is that of Bonwetsch, Die Geschichte des Montanismus, 1881, all follow the lines laid down by Ritschl. See also, Gottwald, De Montanismo Tertulliani, 1862 ; Réville, "Tertullien et le Montanisme" in the Revue des Deux Mondes, Ist November 1864 ; Stroelin, Essai swr le Montanisme, 1870 ; De Soyres, Montanism and the Primitive Church, London, 1878 ; W. Cunningham, The Churches of Asia, London, 1880; Renan, " Les Crises dn Catholicisme Naissant" in Rev. d. Dewx Mondes, 15th Feb- ruary 1881; Moller, art. "Montanismus" in Herzog's Theol. Realencyklop., 2d ed. Special points of importance in the history of Montanism have been quite recently investigated by Lipsius, Over- beck, Weizsicker (Theol. Lit.-Zeitung, Nr. 4, 1882), and Harnack (Das Ménchthum, seine Idcale und seine Geschichte, 2d ed., 1882, and 4. f. Kircheng., iii. pp. 369-408). Weizsacker's short essays are extremely valuable, aud have elncidated several important points hitherto overlooked. (A. HA.)*~~

~~*MONTARGIS, chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Loiret, France, lies 40 miles east-north-east of Orleans on the railway from Paris to Lyons. Traversed by the Loing, Montargis belongs to the basin of the Seine, but it communicates with the Loire by the Orleans and the Briare canals. It has a fine church (Ste Magdelaine), dating in part from the 12th century, a museum, and a public library ; and it still preserves portions of its once magnificent castle, which was capable of containing 6000 men, and, previous to the erection of Fontainebleau, was so favourite a residence of the royal family that it acquired the title of " Berceau des Enfans de la France." Paper-making (introduced in the beginning of the 18th century) and several other considerable industries are carried on. The population of both commune and town was 9175 in 1876.*~~

~~*Montargis (Afons Argi or Algi, M. Arginus, Montargiwm) was formerly the capital of the Gatinais (Pagus Vastinensis). Having passed in 1188 from the Courtenai family to Philip Angustus, it long formed part of the*~~

~~*royaldomain. In 1528 Francis I. mortgaged town, castle, and forest (this last a tract of great value) to Renée d'Este, daughter of Louis XII, the famous HInguenot princess; and in 1570 Charles IX. gave them in full property to her daughter Anne, through whom they descended to the dukes of Guise, but they were repurchased for the crown in 1612. Montargis was several times taken or attacked by the English in the 15th century, and is parti- cularly proud of the successful defence it made in 1427. Both Charles VII. and Charles VIII. held court in the town ; it was the latter who set the famous Dog of Montargis to fight a ducl with his master's murderer whom he had tracked and captured.*~~

~~*1 Collected by Miinter, and by Bonwetsch, Geschichte des Montan- ismus, p. 197 sq.*~~

~~*2 On the sources, see Bonwetsch, pp. 16-55.*~~

~~*XVI. — 98*~~

~~*778*~~

~~*MONTAUBAN, chief town of the department of Tarn- et-Garonne, France, is situated on a slight eminence be- tween the right bank of the Tarn and its tributary streams the Tescou and Lagarrigue, 128 miles by rail east-south- east of Bordeaux. It is connected with the suburb of Ville-Bourbon on the left bank of the Tarn by a remark- able brick bridge of the 14th century, which is 672 feet in length, and consists of seven pointed arches resting on piers, themselves pierced by pointed arches. The cathe- dral, built in 1739, contains the Vow of Louis XIIL., one of the finest paintings of Ingres, a native of Montauban, and at the end of the Carmelite walk a monument was erected to his memory in 1871. In the town-house, once occupied as a palace by the counts of Toulouse and by the Black Prince, are the paintings bequeathed by Ingres, an archeological collection, and a very curious library containing the bequests of several celebrated collectors. Montauban possesses a Protestant theological college. The town has some trade in corn, wine, and grapes. The manu- facture of corn-dressers, coarse cloth, pens, and earthen and china ware are the principal industries; and there are also corn and woollen mills. The population in 1881 was 28,335.*~~

Montauban was only a village in the time of the Romans. In the 8th century a monastery was founded there by the Benedictines, who exercised lordship over the neighbouring population. A considerable impetus was in the 12th century given to its prosperity by a decree of the counts of Toulouse offering freedom to all serfs taking up their residence in the town. Montauban was twice besieged by Simon de Montfort in the Albigensian wars, and was sacked in 1207. By the treaty of Bretigny (1860) it was ceded to the English ; but shortly afterwards they were expelled by the inhabitants. In 1560 the bishops and magistrates embraced Pro- testantism, expelled the monks, and demolished the cathedral. About ten years later it becaine one of the Huguenot strongholds, and formed a small independent republic. It was the headquarters of the Huguenot rebellion of 1621, and was vainly besieged by Louis XIII. for eighty-six days; nor did it submit until after the fall of Rochelle in 1629, when its fortifications were destroyed by Richelieu. In the same year the plague cut off over 6000 of its inhabitants.

MONTBELIARD, chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Doubs, France, is situated 1020 feet above the sea at the confluence of the Allaine and the Lusine, tributaries of the Doubs, and on the canal between the Rhine and the Rhone, about 40 miles north-east of Besangon. Once a fortified city, it still retains the old castle of the counts of Montbéliard. A bronze statue of Cuvier, the inost illustrious native of Montbéliard, and several fine foun- tains adorn the town, which also possesses a museum of natural history and antiquities, and a Protestant normal school. Since 1870 a considerable impetus has been given to its prosperity by the arrival of Alsatian immigrants. The industries embrace watchmaking, the manufacture of graving tools, iron wire, files, watch-springs, and pumps, cotton spinning and weaving, printing, and tanning. The chief exports are cheese, leather, and wood. The popu- lation in 1881 was 8784, of which the great majority were Protestants.

After belonging to the Burgundians and Franks, Montbéliard was, by the treaty of Verdun (843), added to Lorraine. In the 11th century it became the capital of a countship, which formed part of the second kingdom of Burgundy, and latterly of the German empire. From the end of the 14th century until 1793 it belonged to the house of Wiirtemberg. It resisted the

~~attacks of Charles the Bold, King Louis XIT., and the duke of Guise, but was taken in 1676 by Marshal Luxembourg, who razed its fortifications. In 1871 the~~

~~battle of Héricourt between the French and Germans had its com- mencement within its walls.~~

~~MONTE CARLO. See Monaco.~~

~~MONTE CASINO (orCasstno). The Benedictine monas- tery known as the abbey of Monte Cassino is a huge square building of three stories, built on the usual Benedictine plan (see ABBEY) on the summit of a picturesque isolated hill, about 34 miles,to the north-east of the town of Cassino~~

~~(Casinum) or San Germano (population about 5000), which lies midway between Rome and Naples in the valley of the Garigliano. The most prominent architectural feature is the large church (1727), richly decorated in the interior with marbles, mosaics, and paintings. The library and archivio have been spoken of elsewhere (vol. xiv. pp. 531, 548).~~

~~The date of Benedict's withdrawal from Subiaco to Cassino is 529. At that time Cassino was the site of a temple of Apollo and of a grove sacred to Venus. The result of the saint's preaching was that the natives demolished both, chapels to St Martin and John the Baptist being built in their stead, while farther up the hill a monastery began to risc. About 589 the monks were driven from it to Rome by the Lombards of Benevento, and it lay waste for more than a century, until resuscitated by Gregory II. (719). In 787 it received fresh privileges from Charlemagne ; in 884 it was burnt by the Saracens, and was not restored until about seventy years later. From 1322 to 1366 the abbot held episcopal rank ; under the house of Anjou he bore the title of Abbas abbatum, and ranked as first baron of the realm. In 1504 the abbey was sacked by the troops of Gonzalo de Cordova. In 1866 it shared the fate of all other religious houses in Italy ; it is now~~

~~*inhabited by a few monks, and used as a seminary, having about 200 pupils.*~~

~~*MONTECUCULI, Ratmonpo, Count or (1608-1680), a prince of the empire and duke of Melfi, a famous Austrian general, was born at the castle of Montecuculi in Modena, in 1608. At the age of nineteen he began his career in a regiment of infantry under his uncle, Ernest, count of Montecuculi; and during the Thirty Years' War he found many opportunities of displaying his military genius in the imperial service. In 1631, having been severely wounded, he was made prisoner while retreating after the battle of Breitenfeld. Soon after his release he was promoted to the rank of major; and he distinguished himself at the siege of Nérdlingen in 1634, and at the storming of Kaiserslautern in 1635. As colonel, he took part in much hard fighting in Pomerania and in Bohemia; and in 1639 at Melnik, where he tried to prevent the Swedes from crossing the Elbe, he was taken prisoner a second time, being compelled on this occasion to spend more than two years in Stettin. The time was not lost, for he devoted it to a thorough study of military science. In 1642 he was again at work in the imperial army, and for eminent services in Silesia he was made a major-general of cavalry. After a brief visit to Italy, during which he entered the service of the duke of Modena, he returned to Germany, and became councillor of war in 1644. In the following year he supported the archduke Leopold in a campaign against Prince Rakoczy of Transylvania, resisted Marshal Turenne in the Rhine country, and fought with the Swedes in Silesia and Bohemia. The victory at Triebel in Silesia, in 1647, was due chiefly to him, and he was rewarded by being raised to the rank of general of cavalry. After the peace of Westphalia in 1648 he occupied himself for some time with the work of the council of war; and in 1654 he undertook diplomatic missions to Christina, queen of Sweden, and to Cromwell. In 1657 he commanded an expedition against Prince Rakoczy and the Swedes, who had attacked the king of Poland, and Rakoczy was soon forced to withdraw from the Swedish alliance, and to accept terms of peace. As field-marshal he was sent to the aid of Denmark against Sweden; and this war he conducted so successfully that the peace of Oliva was concluded in 1660. In 1663 he resigned the command of an army with which, for about three years, he had been opposing the Turks; but in 1664 he was again made*~~

~~*commander-in-chief, and in the same year he defeated the Turks so decisively near the abbey of St Gotthard that they concluded an armistice for twenty years. He had to deal with more. formidable enemies in 1672, when, the emperor and the imperial diet having resolved to uphold the Dutch against Louis XIV., Monte- cuculi, who had been serving as president of the council of war and director of artillery, was appointed commander of the imperial forces. He took Bonn, and, although closely*~~

~~*watched by Turenne, contrived to effect a junction with the prince of Orange, thereby overthrowing all the calcula- tions of the French. When the elector of Brandenburg received the supreme command in 1674 Montecuculi with- drew from the army; but in 1675, being restored to his former position, he resumed operations against Turenne. The two commanders manceuvred so brilliantly that for about four months neither could do the other much injury ; but, Turenne having been killed by a cannon-ball on the 27th of July 1675, Montecuculi pursued the French into Alsace, and besieged Hagenau and Zabern, retiring from Alsace only when he found himself confronted by Condé. Montecuculi's last achievement in war was the siege of Philippsburg. During the rest of his life he was president of the council of war. In 1679 the emperor Leopold made him a prince of the empire, and shortly afterwards he received from the king of Naples the dukedom of Melfi. Having accompanied the emperor to Linz during the pestilence, he was injured by the fall of a beam wlien entering the castle, and died at Linz on the 16th of October 1680.*~~

~~*Montecuculi was an ardent lover of science, and wrote several important military works. The Opere conwlete di Montceuculi were published in two volumes, at Milan in 1807, at Turin in 1821; and there is a German translation (1786) of his Memorie della guerra ed istruzioni dun generale.*~~

~~*See Campori, Raimondo Montecuculi, la sua famiglia e 4 suot tempi (1877).*~~

~~*MONT-DORE-LES-BAINS, a village of France in the department of Puy de Déme, 17 miles as the crow flies south-west of Clermont Ferrand, 3432*~~

feet above the sea, on the right bank of the Dordogne not far from its source. The Monts Dore, from which it takes its name, close the valley towards the south ; their culminating peak, Puy de Sancy (6188 feet), is the highest eminence of central France. The mineral springs of Mont Dore were known to' the Romans. The eight now used yield 94,600 gallons in twenty-four hours. Bicarbonate of soda, iron, and arsenic are the principal ingredients of the water; to the two last it owes its efficacy in cases of pulmonary consumption, bronchitis, asthma, and nervous and rheumatic paralysis. From the elevation and exposure of the valley, which opens to the north and runs up towards mountains never quite free from snow, the climate of Mont-Dore-les-Bains is severe, and the season is consequently short. About 5000 patients visit the place between 15th June and 15th September, when a casino and theatre are opened. The chief building is the solid but sombre bath-house (hot baths). The surrounding country, with its fir woods, pastures, waterfalls, and mountains, is very attractive. In the "park" at Mont-Dore-les-Bains, which forms a little promenade along the Dordogne, relics from the old Roman baths have been collected, but the ancient establishment must have been on a larger scale than the present one. A pantheon erected about the time of Augustus existed till the 16th century. The population in 1881 was 1438.

MONTELEONE (usually called Monteleone of Cala- bria to distinguish it from Monteleone of Apulia in the province of Avellino, which gave its name to the medieval duchy of the Pignatelli family) is a city of Italy in the province of Catanzaro, on the western side of the Bruttian peninsula, and is beautifully situated on an eminence gently sloping towards the gulf of Sta Eufemia. It was almost totally destroyed by earthquake in 1783, and for many years afterwards consisted mainly of slight wooden erec- tions, but under the French occupation it was made the capital of a province and the headquarters of General Regnier, and it is now a well-built town. The castle was built by Roger, count of Sicily, whom tradition accuses of carrying off the ruins of the ancient temple of Proserpine to the cathedral of Mileto. The population of the town was 9244 in 1871, that of the commune 10,262 in 1861 and 12,047 in 1881.

~~*Monteleone is identified with the ancient Hipponium, a Greek city first mentioned in 389 B.c., when its inhabitants were removed to Syracuse by Dionysius. Restored by the Carthaginians (356), held for a time by Agathocles of Syracuse (294), and afterwards occupied by the Bruttians, Hipponium ultimately became as Vibo Valentia a flourishing Roman colony. Thc harbour established by Agathocles proved of great service as a naval station to Cxsar and Octavius in their wars with Pompeius Magnus and Sextus Pompeius, and remains of its massive mason-work still exist at the village of Bivona on the coast. In the town itself there are no traces of antiquity beyond a mosaic pavement in the church of St Heel (patron saint of Monteleone) and one or two Latin inscrip- 1011S.*~~

~~*MONTELIMAR, chief town of an arrondissement and canton in the department of Dréme, France, is situated near the left bank of the Rhone, 93 miles south of Lyons on the railway to Marseilles. The waters of the Roubion and Jabron, which unite at Montélimar, spread fertility over the plains surrounding the town. A well-planted park separates the town from the station, but within the four gates that still remain the streets are narrow and unin- viting. The ancient castle, one of the most interesting military remains of central France, is now used as a prison. Silk throwing and spinning, and the manufacture of flowered silks and of hats, are the principal industries ; there are also foundries, tool-shops, and tanneries, and agricultural implements and hydraulic lime are made. Montélimar is famed for its nougat, a cake composed of almonds and honey. The population of the town in 1881 was 12,894.*~~

~~*Montélimar was called by the Romans Acusium. At a later period it belouged to the family of Aymar or Adhémar, whence its present name. After coming into the possession of the counts of Valentinois, and then of the dauphins of Viennois, it was united by Louis XI. to the crown of France. It frequently changed hands during the religious wars, and, although it resisted Coligny, it was taken in 1589 by Lesdiguiéres.*~~

~~*MONTENEGRO, often pronounced and sometimes written MonTENERO (Montenegrin, 7.¢., Servian, Crnagora, Russian Z'chernogoriya, and Turkish Karadagh, all equi- valent to Black Mountain), one of the smallest of Euro- pean countries, lies on the*~~

~~*eastern side of the Adriatic, and is bounded by Dalinatia, Herzegovina, Bosnia, and Albania. Previous to 1878 it had an area variously estimated at 1669 square miles (Kaptsevitch), 1711 (Kiepert), and, including the Kutchi territory, 1796 (Behm). The enlargement to about 5272 square miles proposed by the San Stefano treaty (1878) would probably have swamped the Montenegrin nationality, and the Berlin congress brought the total area only up to 3680 miles, or almost exactly half the size of Wales.!*~~

~~*Apart from her new maritime district, Montenegro seems*~~

~~*1 Since 1870 several rectifications of frontier and exchanges of territory have been arranged between Montenegro and Turkey, but these have left the area practically undisturbed. All the figures are approximate estimates, as the only geodetic survey of the country, carried out by Russian officers, is still (1883) in progress. The old frontier line had the great disadvantage to the Montenegrins of leaving the fortress of Niksitch in the north-west, and that of Spuzh in the south-east in the hands of the Turks, who thus commanded the valley of the Zeta, and strategically almost cut the country in two, the distance from the frontier near Niksitch to the frontier near Spuzh being only some 15 miles. The present frontier includes not only these strong- holds, but also those of Podgoritza, Zhabliak (Jablac), and Lesendra, a great part of Lake Scutari, and the coast district with Antivari and Dulcigno. To get access to the sea had long been the ambition of Montenegro, which in her early days had possessed not only Dulcigno but Durazzo, and had surrendered them to purchase from Venice assistance in her struggle against the Turks. The Berlin con- gress gave her the coast from Cape Maria to Cape Kruci or Krutch, but Spizza, the harbour to the north, was retained by Austria, and Dulcigno, to the south, by Turkey. In the beginning of 1880, by the Corti compromise, the Kutchi territory and the plain of Podgoritza were accepted by Montenegro in lieu of Plava and Gussinye, assigned to her by the congress; but the exchange was deferred, and the terms ultimately modified by the congress so as to include Dulcigno in Montenegrin territory. The occupation of the district (November 1880) was only effected after a naval demonstration on the part of the great powers. '*~~

little better at first than a chaos of mountains, but on closer examination it appears that there are two distinct groups, an eastern and a western, divided by the Zeta- Moratcha valley. The loftiest summit is Dormitor, 8146 feet high, in the new territory near the north frontier, next come Kom Kutchi (8031), Kom Vassoyevitzki (7946), and Dormitor Schlime (7936).! Had the original frontier of the Berlin congress towards the south-east been retained it would have run along the still higher Prokletia range. Many of the mountain-tops remain white with snow for the greater part of the year, and from some of the dark ravines the snow never disappears. The south-western portion of the country consists of limestone, the north- eastern mainly of Paleozoic sandstones and schists with underlying trap.? In their general aspect the two regions are strikingly distinct. The former seems, as it were, one enormous mass of hard crystalline rock, bare and calcined, with its strata dipping to the south-west at an angle often of 70 degrees. Its whole surface has been split by atmo- spheric agencies into huge prismatic blocks, and the cracks

< Kovatch Planina o Nova Varosh a es > wren ic s ‘ Ra, . Zon, A a 34M Dormitor™ r=) w h f eet OMY pba Priepotia Y va bs ” a} Ay WwW Z f ty

SOHN SWRI eS

have been gradually worn into fissures several fathoms deep. In some places the process has resulted in clusters of im- mense sharp-pointed crags, the sides of which are furrowed by rain-channels, while in others there are countless funnels running down into the rock for 200 feet and more. In like manner the interior of the mass is hollowed out into immense galleries and caves, and during the rainy season subterranean landslips frequently produce local earthquakes, extending over an area of 10 or 12 miles. The sandstone region, on the other hand, presents lofty but rounded forms, clothed for the most part with virgin forest or rich alpine pasture, broken here and there by dolomitic peaks.

1 Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr., Paris, 1881.

~~2 Dr Tietze, whose full report was to appear in the Jahrb. der Reichsan-stalt for 1883, informed the writer that the existence of the following formations in Montenegro has been clearly ascertained :—(1) Paleozoic schists, (2) Wirfen strata of Lower Trias, (3) Trap of the Palxozoic and Wirfen strata, (4) Triassic limestone, (5) Jurassic limestone, (6) Cretaceous limestone, (7) Flysch, in part certainly Eocene, and (8)~~

~~Neogenic or younger Tertiary formations. The existence of nummulitic limestone is still doubtful.~~

~~MONTENEGRO~~

~~The watershed between the Adriatic and the Black Sea crosses the country from west to east in a very irregular line, the southern districts being drained by the Zeta- Moratcha river system, which finds its way to the Adriatic by Lake Scutari and the Boyanna, while the streams of the northern districts form the head-waters of the Drina, which reaches the Danube by way of the Save. The Zeta, rising in Lake Slano, is remarkable for its subterranean passage beneath a mountain range 1000 feet high. Ata place called Ponor the water plunges into a deep chasm, seeming almost to lose itself in foam, but at a distance of several miles it reappears on the other side of the mountains. Its whole course to its junction with the Moratcha is about 30 miles. Rising in the Yavorye Planina, the Moratcha sweeps through the mountain gorges as a foam- ing torrent till it reaches the plain of Podgoritza; then, for a space, it almost disappears among the pebbles and other alluvial deposits, nor does it again show a current of any considerable volume till it approaches Lake Scutari. In the neighbourhood of Duklea* and Leskopolye it flows through a precipitous ravine from 50 to 100 feet high. In the dry season it is navigable to Zhabliak. The whole course is about 60 miles. Of the left-hand tributaries of the Moratcha the Sem or Tsievna deserves to be mentioned for the magnificent caiion through which it flows between Most Tamarui and Dinosha. On the one side rise the mountains of the Kutchi territory, on the other the immense flanks of the Prokletia range,—the walls of the gorge varying from 2000 to 4000 feet of vertical height. Lower down the stream the rocky banks approach so close that it is possible to leap across without trouble. The Ryeka issues full-formed from an immense cave~~

~~south- east of Cettinye (Tsettinye) and falls into Lake Scutari. The three tributaries of the Drina which belong in part to Montenegro are the Piva, the Tara, and the Lim, respect- ively 55, 95, and 140 miles in length. The Tara forms the northern boundary of the principality for more than 50 miles, but the Lim leaves the country altogether after the first 30 miles of its course. Great alterations have taken place on Lake Scutari in recent times. The river Drin, which previous to 1830 entered the Adriatic to the south of Alesia near S. Giovanni di Medua, subsequently changed its course so as to join the Boyanna just below its exit from the lake; one of the chief results has been to raise the level of the lake, and so to flood the lower valleys of the tributary streams. When the International Frontier Com- mission was at Scutari in April 1879, the water stood 8 feet deep in some of the principal streets, and the inundation of city and suburbs lasted that year eight months. A few small lakes are scattered among the mountains, and it is evident that their number was formerly much greater. The plain or hollow of Cettinye was doubtless filled with water at no very distant (geological) date, and even now, when the sudden rains cannot escape fast enough by the ordinary subterranean outlet, the royal village suffers from a flood.~~

~~If the new territory be left out of view, there is but little farming land in Montenegro; the peasant is glad to enclose and protect the veriest patches of fertile soil retained by the hollows in the mountain sides, and one may see "flourishing little crops not a yard square." "The largest landed proprietor is the holder of 60 acres" (Denton, Montenegro, p. 143); the other freehold estates vary from 2 to 20 acres, and it is usually not to the individual but to the house or family that the ownership belongs. Woods and pastures are the common property of the clan (pleme). The people live in small stone-built cottages, grouped for the most part in little villages, and their whole life is~~

~~3 Duklea is the name still borne by the ruins of the Roman Doclea, often, but wrongly, called Dioclea from its association with the family of Diocletian.~~

~~MO N—~~

~~*marked by extreme simplicity. Chastity is a national virtue, and in time of war the women and children of the Turks have often found their safest asylum among their hereditary foes. The main stock of the people is of Servian descent ; and, though the purity of both blood and language has been to some extent affected by foreign elements, mostly Albanian and Turkish, the national unity has not been im- paired. The curious Gipsy colony, which, though speaking Servian, never intermarries with the Montenegrins, is numerically of little importance.! The great mass of the people belong to the Orthodox Greek Church, only some 7000 being Roman Catholics, and 3000 Mohammedans. According to Kaptsevitch, the population was 10,700 in 1838, 120,000 in 1849, 124,000 in 1852, and 170,000 in 1877, but in 1879 it was found that, inclusive of the new territory, the number could not exceed 150,000; since then about 15,000 have been added with Dulcigno. The official returns for 1882 (not based on a census, however) give 236,000 as the total, of whom some 23,000 live in the so-called towns.*~~

~~*Fauna.—Bears are still found in the higher forests, and wolves, and especially foxes, over a much wider arca. A few chamois roam on the loftiest summits, the roebuck is not infrequent in the backwoods, the wild boar may be met with in the same district, and the hare is abundant wherever the ground is covered with herbage. There are one or two species of snakes in the country, including the poisonous Illyrian viper. Esculent frogs, tree frogs, the common tortoise, and various kinds of lizards are all common. The list of birds observed by Baron Kaulbars includes golden eagles and vul- tures, 12 species of falcons, several species of owls, nightingales, larks, buntings, hoopocs, partridges, herons, pelicans, ducks (10 species), goatsuckers, &c. 'he abundance of fish in Lake Scutari and the Tower course of the Ryeka is extraordinary, the shoals of bleak (scor- antza, Leuciscus alburnus) that come up the river formiug almost solid masses. Both trout and salmon are caught in the Moratcha.*~~

~~*Flora.—The flora of Montenegro is comparatively scanty. In the forest districts the beech is the prevailing tree up to a height of 5000 or 5500 feet, and then its place is taken by the pine. 'I'he chestnut forms little groves in the country between the sea and Lake Scutari, but never*~~

ascends more than 1000 feet, and the olive also is mainly confined to the neighbourhood of the Adriatic. Pomegranate bushes grow wild, and in many parts of the south cover the foot of the hills with dense thickets, the rich blossoms of which are one of the special charms of the spring landscape. Wheat, rye, barley, maize, capsicums, and a little tobacco are grown in the north, and in the south, vines, figs, peaches, apples, cherries, citrons, oranges, &c. The potato, introduced in 1786, is cultivated considerably beyond the local demand ; the planting of mulberry trees and the rearing of silk-worms is of growing econoniical importance.

Towns.—CETTINYE (q.v.), With about 2000 inhabitants, is the capital of the country. Podgoritza (about 6000 or 7000 in 1879, since reduced to 4000) is the principal trading town ; it lies at the foot of the mountains (as its name imports), at the junction of the Ruibnitza with the Moratcha, and in Turkish hands was one of the strongest of their fortresses towards Montenegro. Dulcigno (see vol. vii. p. 520) has 3000 inhabitants (before the transfer 5000 to 7000). Niksitch, a fortified place on a slight eminence in the midst of a plain, is about the same size. Antivari (see vol. ii. p. 138), so called from its position opposite Bari in Italy, suffered greatly in the war 1879-80, and lost half of its 5000 inhabitants. Danilovgrad, with 2000, lies on the north side of the Zeta valley ; in the vicinity is Orialuka, the prince's palace with its mulberry uurseries, and the monasteries of Zhdrebanik (burnt by the Turks in 1877, but since rebuilt), while Tcheliya, Moratcha (the most ancient in the principality), and Ostrog (visited annually by about 10,000 pilgrims) are not far off. Spuzh (Spouge), a little lower on the same side of the stream, is a fortified post with about 1000 inhabit- ants. Nyegush or Nyegosh (1200), about three hours distant from Cettinye on the road to Cattaro, is the native seat of the reigning family, which originally came thither from Nyegush in Herzegovina. Zhabliak (1200) was once the "capital," and has been a fortified post since the time of the Venetian power. Ryeka (1500), on the river of that name, is next to Podgoritza in commercial importance ; the prince has two residences in the town. Grahovo (2000) is famous for the great battles of 1851 and 1876.

Montenegro is an absolute hereditary monarchy, vested accord- ing to the principle of primogeniture in the family of Petrovitch Nyegush. The

~~*prince bears the title " Prince of Montencgro and the Berda (mountains) '" — Montenegro here meaning the old Mon- tenegrin nahias (provinces) of Katunska, Tzrmitza, Ryetchka, and*~~

~~*1 See Bogisié in Das Ausland, 1874.*~~

~~*Lyeshanska, and Berda the territory added in the 18th century, or the provinces Byelopavlitchska, Piperska, Moratchska, Vasoye- vitchska, and Kutska. A responsible ministry was introduced in 1877, and there are uow separate departments of justice, foreign affairs, war, and finance and education. The highest administra- tive body is the council of state, instituted in 1879, and consisting of eight members appointed by the prince. Justice in ordinary cases is rendered in primitive fashion. Formal codes were drawn up by Peter I. (1798) and by Danilo (1855), but the real statute book is national custom. A great court, consisting of the minister of justice, and five members named by the prince, is held in the capital, and there are inferior courts in cach of the captaincies (86 in 1879). While formerly the very president of the senate, Mirko Petrovitch (0b. 1865), whose songs are the delight of his countrymen, could neither read nor write, primary education has been widely diffused during the reign of Prince Nicholas (Nikita). In 1851 there was only one school, but before the recent war they had increased to 58, nearly every clan having one for girls as well as for boys. The female Montenegrin Institute (founded and sup- ported by the empress of Russia) attracts pupils from beyond the frontier. It was from the printing-presses of Cettinye and Ryeka that the first books in the Slavonic languages were issued between 1483 and 1493, under the patronage especially of Ivan Beg and George (IV.) Crnoyevitch, "' waywodes of the Zeta," but this pro- mise of literary productiveness was soon cut off by wars with the Turks. Peter Petrovitch Nyegush (1813-1851), who was called to rule in 1830, is recognized as perhaps the greatest of all Serviau poets, —his Gorski Viyenac, or " Mountain Wreath," giving dramatic expression to the " very soul of the Serbian people." Though the press which he established in 1834 was destroyed in the war of 1852-53, another was soon obtained, and under Prince Nicholas, himself a poet, his memory has proved a potent stimulus to*~~

~~*intellectual culture. The first Montenegrin newspaper, Crnogorac, now Glas Crnogorca, began to appear in 1870; the first book-shop was opened in 1879.7*~~

~~*The Montenegrins, however, have had more to do with the sword than with the pen. " Every man, dressed in the picturesque costume of luis tribe, carries his pistol and yataghan in his girdle." Nominally the age of military service is between sixteen and sixty-five, but when war breaks out schoolboy and superannuated veteran are equally eager for the fray. When Prince Nicholas tried to prevent an old man of eighty from joining his forces, the insulted warrior drew his pistol and shot himself. War with the Turks, indeed, is the essence of Montenegrin history. On the death of the Servian king Stephen Dushan, Prince Balsha became independent lord of the province of the Zeta; and when the Servian power was shattered by the Turks in the battle of Kossovo (1389) his territory formed the asylum of all those who determined to make another stand for freedom. In 1485 Ivan Crnoyevitch, finding Zhabliak untenable, fixed his " capital" at Cettinye. In 1516 his son George, who had succeeded him, left his country to its fate; but the people chose their bishop as their chief. Prince-bishops or vladykas, elected by the people, continued to lead them with success against the common foe of Christendom till 1697, when the authority was handed over to Petrovitch Nyegush, with the right of appointing his successors, subject to national approval. At length, in 1851, Danilo, nephew and nominee of the previous vladyka Peter II., prevailed on the "skuptchina"' to declare Mon- tenegro a secular state with the hereditary government of a prince. HIs nephew Nicholas succeeded to the throne in 1860, and at the close of the war 1876-78 Montenegro was declared a sovereign 'principality. For an account of the defeats and victories (the latter by far the more numerous) which have marked the national struggle for existence during its four centuries, the reader is referred to*~~

~~*Denton's Montenegro (Lond., 1877).*~~

~~*See Observations on Montenegro (St Pet., 1881), by Baron Kaulbars, Russian member of the International Commission; Wilkinson's Dalmatia and Montenegro (1848); Wingfield, Tour in Dalmatia, &c. (1859);*~~

~~*Viscountess Strangford, The Eastern Shores of the Adriatic (1864); A. J. Evans, Illyrian Letters (1878) ; W. E. Gladstone in the Nineteenth Century, i.; Freeman, in Macmillan's Mag., 1876; Schwarz, Montenegro (1882). See also the bibliographies in Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr. (Paris, 1865) and Valentinelli, Bib. della Dalmazia (Agram, 1855).)*~~

~~*H. A. W.*~~

~~*MONTEREY, a city of the United States, the capital of California up to 1847, is situated on Monterey Bay, 125 miles south from San Francisco by the southern division of the Southern Pacific Railroad. Originally founded in 1770 as a mission station and presidio (garrison) by Junipero Serra, it is still in the main a Spanish-looking town, with Spanish talked in its streets and painted on its signboards. At the meeting of the first constitutional convention of California Monterey was a port of entry with a flourishing trade and a promising future; but it soon suffered from the rivalry of San Francisco, and it is*~~

~~*2 Cf. Pypin and Spasoviteh, Hist. of Slav. Literatures, vol. i.*~~

~~*now a sleepy place, straggling and dirty, with many of its adobe buildings abandoned to decay. The flourishing Mou- terey whaling company (chiefly Portuguese from the Azores) has its station under the old fort ; and, the Southern Pacific Railroad Company having erected (1881) a magnificent hotel, the place bids fair to become one of the leading water-ing-places on the Californian coast. The mission church of San Carlos, about four miles from the town, is a curious and striking ruin. Population is now (1883) about 1400.*~~

~~*See Franc. Palou, Vida del ven. padre fray J. Serra, Mexico, 1787; Lady Duffus Gordon, Through Cities and Prairie-lands, 1882 ; and Harper's Monthly Magazine, October 1882.*~~

~~*MONTEREY, a city of Mexico, capital of the state of Nuevo Leon, lies 1600 feet above the sea on a sub-tributary of the Rio Grande del Norte, 150 miles south-south-west of Nuevo Laredo, and 190 west-south-west of*~~

~~*Matamoras. A handsome and well-planned city, with a cathedral and a number of good public buildings, Monterey is also in com- mercial and manufacturing activity the most important place in the northern parts of the republic, and one of the principal stations on the railway opened in 1882 between the city of Mexico and the United States frontier (at Matamoras and Nuevo Laredo). The population was about 37,000 in 1880. 'The city was founded in 1596, became a bishopric in 1777, and was captured by the United States forces under General Taylor in September 1846.*~~

~~*MONTE SAN GIULIANO, a city of Sicily, in the pro- vince of Trapani and 12 miles north-east of the town of Trapani, occupies the summit of the mountain from which it takes its name. Rising in the midst of an undulating plain, this magnificent and conspicuous peak (the Eryx of the ancients) has, whether seen from sea or land, such an appearance of altitude that, while it really does not exceed 2464 feet, it has for ages been popularly considered the culminating point of western Sicily, and second only to Mount Etna. By the Phoenicians it was early chosen as the site of a temple, which continued down to the time of the Roman empire to be one of the most celebrated of all the shrines of Venus (Venus Erycina). The ancient city of Eryx, situated lower down the mountain side, disappears from history after the establishment of the Roman power in Sicily,—the inhabitants having probably taken advan- tage of the protection afforded by the sanctity, fortifica- tions, and garrison of the temple-enclosure. In the modern town, the population of which has recently decreased to about 3000 by the migration of considerable numbers to the plain, the chief points of interest are the cathedral, internally restored in 1865, the castle, which occupies the site of the temple, and the three so-called torr del Balio, which probably represent the propylea. Remains of Phoenician masonry are still seen on the north side of the town. The great rock-hewn cistern in the garden of the castle is very like one of the cisterns of the Haram at Jerusalem.*~~

~~*The antiquities of Monte San Giuliano have been carefully in- vestigated by Giuseppe Polizzi (I Monumenti d' Antichita della Provincia di Trapani), and by Professor Salinas (Archivio Storico Siciliano, i., &c.).*~~

~~*Compare Renan, Mélanges d'Histoire et de Voyages; and Sayce in Academy, 30th December 1882.*~~

~~*MONTE SANT' ANGELO, a city of Italy in the pro- vince of Foggia (Capitanata), 10 miles north of Manfre- donia, stands on an offshoot of Monte Gargano 2824 feet high. In 491 the archangel Michael pointed out the place to St Laurentius, archbishop of Sipontum (Man- fredonia), and the chapel, which was built over the cave, to which he drew more particular attention, soon became a famous place of pilgrimage. Though plundered by the Lombards in 657, and by the Saracens in 869, St Michael's was already a wealthy sanctuary in the 11th century, and its prosperity continued till the time of the French occupation. The canons (Canontci Garganici, as*~~

~~*they are usually called) maintained a prolonged contest with the Sipontine archbishops for episcopal independence. According to Ughelli (/talia Sacra, vol. vii. p. 816), a marble statue of the saint by Michelangelo Buonarroti took the place of a silver image. The bronze doors still preserved are fine pieces of Byzantine work, made, as an inscription bears witness, in Constantinople in 1076. The town of Sant'? Angelo, which had only about 3000 inhabitants in the 17th century, numbered 14,759 in 1861, and 13,902 in 1871. Besides the festival of the saint celebrated on the 9th of May, there is a great fair on the 29th of September.*~~

~~*MONTESQUIEU, CHartes LoviIs DE SECONDAT, BARON DE LA BrepE ET DE (1689-1755), philosophical his- torian, was born at the chateau of La Brede, about 10 miles to the south-east of Bordeaux, in January 1689 (the exact date being unknown), and was baptized on the 18th of that month. HIs mother was Marie Francoise de Penel, the heiress of a Gascon-English family. She had brought La Bréde as a dowry to his father, Jacques de Secondat, a mem- ber of a good if not extremely ancient house, which seems first to have risen to importance in the early days of the 16th century. The title of Montesquieu came from his uncle, Jean Baptiste de Secondat, "président & mortier" in the parliament of Bordeaux,—an important office, which, as well as his title, he left to his nephew. Montesquieu was in his youth known as M. de la Bréde. HIs*~~

~~*mother died when he was seven years old, and when he was eleven he was sent to the Oratorian school of Juilly, near Meaux, where he stayed exactly five years, and where, as well as afterwards at Bor- deaux, he was thoroughly educated. The family had long been connected with the law, and Montesquieu was destined for that profession. He was made to work hard at it not- withstanding his prospects (for his uncle's office was his by reversion); but, as in his later life, he seems to have tempered much study with not a little society. His father died in 1713, and a year later Montesquieu, or, as he should at this time strictly be called, La Brede, was admitted coun- sellor of the parliament. In little more than another twelve- month he married Jeanne Lartigue, an heiress and the daughter of a knight of the order of St Louis, but plain, somewhat ill-educated, and a Protestant. Montesquieu does not seem to have made the slightest pretence of affection or fidelity towards his wife—things which, indeed, the times did not demand ; but there is every reason to believe that they lived on perfectly good terms. Like the three previous years, 1716 was an eventful one to him ; for his uncle died, leaving him his name, his important judicial office, and his whole fortune. He thus became one of the richest and most influential men in the district. He continued to hold his presidency for twelve years, in the course of which he had much judicial work to perform, as well as the nonde- script administrative functions which under the old régeme fell to the provincial parliaments. He was none the less addicted to society, and he took no small part in the pro- ceedings of the Bordeaux Academy, to which he contributed papers on philosophy, politics, and natural science. He also wrote much less serious things, and it was during the earlier years of his presidency that he finished, if he did not begin, the Lettres Persanes. They were completed before 1721, and appeared in that year anonymously, with Cologne on the title-page, but they were really printed and published at Amsterdam. This celebrated book (the original notion of which is generally set down to a work of Dufresny, the comic author, but which is practically original) would have been surprising enough as coming from a magistrate of the highest dignity in any other time than in the regency of the duke of Orleans, and even as it was it rather scandalized the graver among Montesquieu's contemporaries. In the guise of letters written by and to two Persians of distinction*~~

~~*SOM TE SOU i EU*~~

~~*travelling in Europe, Montesquieu not only satirized un- mercifully the social, political, ecclesiastical, and literary follies of his dayin France, but indulged in a great deal of the free writing (so free as very nearly to deserve the term licentious) which was characteristic of the tale-tellers of the time. But what scandalized grave and precise readers naturally attracted the majority, and the Lettres Persanes were very popular, passing, it is said, through four editions within the year, besides piracies. Then the vogue suddenly ceased, or at least editions ceased for nearly nine years to appear. It is said that a formal ministerial prohibition was the cause of this, and it is not improbable ; for, though the regent and Dubois must have enjoyed the book thoroughly, they were both shrewd enough to perceive that underneath its playful exterior there lay a spirit of very inconvenient criticism of abuses in church and state. The fact is that the Lettres Persanes is the first book of what is called the Philosophe movement. The criticism is scarcely yet aggressive, much less destructive, and in Montesquieu's hands it never became so; but what it might become in the hands of others was obvious enough. It is this pre- cursorship in his own special line which in all probability made Voltaire so jealous of Montesquieu, as well as the advantage which a wealthy and well-born noble of high official position had over himself. It is amusing to find Voltaire describing the Lettres as a "trumpery book," a "book which anybody might have written easily." It is not certain that, in its peculiar mixture of light badinage with not merely serious purpose but gentlemanlike modera- tion, Voltaire could have written it himself, and it is certain that no one else at that time could. The reputa- tion acquired by this book brought Montesquieu much into the literary society of the capital, and he composed for, or at any rate contributed to, one of the coteries of the day the clever but rather rhetorical Dialogue de Sylla et d Eucrate, in which the dictator gives an apology for his conduct. For Mademoiselle de Clermont, a lady of royal blood, a great beauty and a favourite queen of society, he wrote the curious prose poem of the Temple de Gnide. This is half a narrative, half an allegory, in the semi-classical or rather pseudo-classical taste of the time, decidedly frivolous and dubiously moral, but of no small elegance in its peculiar style. A later jeu d'esprit of the same kind, which is almost but not quite certainly*~~

~~*Montesquieu's, is the Voyage a Paphos, in which his warmest admirers have found little to praise. In 1725 Montesquieu was elected a member of the Academy, but an almost obsolete rule requiring residence in Paris was appealed to, and the election was annulled. It is doubtful whether a hankering after Parisian society, or an ambition to belong to the Academy, or a desire to devote himself to literary pursuits of greater importance, or simple weariness of not wholly congenial work determined him to give up his Bordeaux office ; it is certain that he continued to hold it but a short time after this. It is tolerably clear that he had already begun his great work, and the character of some papers which, about this time, he read at the Bor- deaux Academy is graver and less purely curious than his earlier contributions. In 1726 he sold the life tenure of his office, reserving the reversion for his son, aud went to live in the capital, returning, however, for half of each year to La Bréde. There was now no further formal obstacle to his reception in the Académie Frangaise, but a new one arose. Tll-wishers had brought the Lettres Persanes specially under the minister Fleury's attention, and Fleury, a precisian in many ways, was shocked by them. There are various accounts of the way in which the difficulty was got over, but all seem to agree that Montesquieu made concessions which were more effectual than dignified. He was elected and received in January 1728. Almost immediately after- wards he started on a tour through Europe to observe*~~

~~*men, things, and constitutions. He travelled through Austria to Hungary, but was unable to visit Turkey as he had proposed. Then he made for Italy, where he met Chesterfield. They sojourned together at Venice for some time, and a curious story is told of the way in which either a piece of mischief on Chesterfield's part, or Montesquieu's own nervousness and somewhat inordinate belief in his own importance, made the latter sacrifice his Venetian notes. At Venice, and elsewhere in Italy, he remained nearly a year, and then journeyed by way of Piedmont and the Rhine to England. Here he stayed for some eighteen months, and acquired an admiration for English character and polity which never afterwards deserted him. He returned, not to Paris, but to La Bréde, and to outward appearance might have seemed to be settling down as a squire.*~~

~~*He altered his park in the English fashion, made sedulous inquiries into his own genealogy, arranged an entail, asserted, though not harshly, his seignorial rights, kept poachers in awe, and so forth. Nor did he neglect his fortune, but, on the contrary, improved his estates in every way, though he met with much opposition, partly from the dislike of his tenants to new-fangled ways, and partly from the insane economic regulations of the time, which actually prohibited the planting of fresh vineyards.*~~

~~*Although, however, Montesquieu was enough of a grand seigneur to be laughed at, and enough of a careful steward of his goods to be reviled for avarice, by those of his con- temporaries who did not like him, these matters by no means engrossed or even chiefly occupied his thoughts. In his great study at La Bréde (a hall rather than a study, some 60 feet long by 40 wide) he was constantly dic- tating, making abstracts, revising essays, and in other ways preparing his great book. Like some other men of letters, though perhaps no other has had the experience in quite the same degree, he found himself a little hampered by his earlier work. He may have thought it wise to soften the transition from the Lettres Persanes to the Esprit des Lois, by interposing a publication graver than the former and less elaborate than the latter. He had always, as indeed was the case with most Frenchmen of his century, been interested in ancient Rome and her history ; and he had composed not a few minor tractates on the subject, of which many titles and some examples remain, besides the already-mentioned dialogue on Sylla. All these now took form in the Considérations sur les Causes de la Grandeur et la Décadence des Romains, which appeared in 1734 at Amsterdam, without the author's name. This, however, was perfectly well known; indeed, Montesquieu formally presented a copy to the French Academy. Anony- mity of title-pages was a fashion of the day which meant nothing. The book was not extraordinarily popular in France at the time. The author's reputation as a jester stuck to him, and the salons affected to consider the Lettres Persanes and the new book respectively as the " grandeur " and the "décadence de M. de Montesquieu ;" but more serious readers at once perceived its extraordinary merit, and it was eagerly read abroad. A copy of it exists or existed which had the singular fortune to be annotated by Frederick the Great, and to be abstracted from the Potsdam library by Napoleon. It is said, moreover, by competent authorities to have been the*~~

~~most enduringly popular and the most widely read of all its author's works in his own country, and it has certainly been the most frequently and carefully edited. Its merits are indeed undeniable. Merely scholastic criticism may of course object to it, as to every other book of the time, the absence of the exactness of modern critical inquiry into the facts of history; but this is only a new example of a frequent ignoratio elenchi. The virtue of Montesquieu's book is not in its facts but in its views. It is (putting Bossuet and Vico aside) almost~~

~~the first important essay in the philosophy of history. The point of view is entirely different from that of Bossuet, and it seems entirely improbable that Montesquieu knew anything of Vico. In the Grandeur et Décadence the characteristics of the Lsprit des Lois appear with the neces- sary subordination to a narrower subject. Two things are especially noticeable in it: a peculiarity of style, and a peculiarity of thought. The style has a superficial defect which must strike every one, and which was not overlooked by those who were jealous of Montesquieu at the time. The page is broken up into short paragraphs of but a few lines each, which look very ugly, which irritate the reader by breaking the sense, and which prepare him to expect an undue and ostentatious sententiousness. The blemish, however, is chiefly mechanical, and, though no editor has hitherto had the perhaps improper audacity so to do, it would be perfectly possible to obliterate it without changing a word. On the other hand, the merits of the expression are very great. It is grave and destitute of ornament, but extraordinarily luminous and full of what would be called epigram, if the word epigram had not a certain connotation of flippancy about it. It isa very short book ; for, printed in large type with tolerably abundant notes, it fills but two hundred pages in the last edition of Montesquieu's works. But no work of the century, except Turgot's second Sorbonne Discourse, contains, in proportion to its size, more weighty and original thought on historical subjects, while Montesquieu has over Turgot the immense advantage of style.~~

~~*Although, however, this ballon d'essai, in the style of his great work, may be said to have been successful, and though much of that work was, as we have seen, in all probability already composed, Montesquieu was in no hurry to publish it. He went on "cultivating the garden" diligently both as a student and as an improving landowner. He had lawsuits, sometimes on his own account, sometimes on that of others, and in one case he won from the city of Bordeaux no less than eleven hundred arpents of, it is true, the un- productive dandes of the country. He is said to have begun a history of Louis XI, and there is a story that it was completed but burnt by mistake. He wrote the sketch of Lysimaque for Stanislaus Leczinski; he published new and final editions of the Z"emple de Gide, of the Lettres Persanes, of Sylla et Eucrate (which indeed had never been published, properly speaking). After allowing the Grandeur et Décadence to be reprinted without alterations some half dozen times, he revised and corrected it. He also took great pains with the education of his son Charles and his daughter Denise, of whom he was extremely fond. He frequently visited Paris, where his favourite resorts were the salons of Madame de Tencin and Madame d'Aiguillon. But all the time he must have been steadily working at his book, indeed, a contemporary accuses him of having only gone into society to pick up materials for it. But it seems that he did not begin the final task of composition till 1743. Two years of uninterrupted work at La Bréde finished the greater part of it, and two more the rest. It was finally published at Geneva in the autumn of 1748, in two volumes quarto. The publication was, however, pre- ceded by one of those odd incidents which in literature illus- trate Clive's well-known saying about courts-martial in war. Montesquieu summoned a committee of friends, according to a very common practice, to hear and give an opinion on his work. It was an imposing and certainly not an unfriendly one, consisting of Hénault, Helvétius, the financier Silhouette, the dramatist Saurin, Crébillon the younger, and lastly, Fontenelle,—in fact, all sorts and conditions of literary men. The members of this eminently competent tribunal unanimously, though for different reasons and in different forms of expression, advised the author not to*~~

~~*Le*~~

~~*MONTE SOY TEU*~~

~~*publish a book which has been recently described by a judge of certainly not less competence as "one of the most: important books ever written," and which, when importance of matter and excellence of manner are jointly considered, may be almost certainly ranked as the greatest book of the French 18th century.*~~

~~*Montesquieu, of course, did not take his friends'advice. In such cases no man ever does, and in this case it was certainly fortunate. The Esprit des Lois represents the reflexions of asixgularly clear, original, and comprehensive mind, cor- rected by forty years' study of men and books, arranged in accordance with a long deliberated plan, and couched in language of remarkable freshness and idiosyncrasy. The title has been somewhat cavilled at, and, like that of the Considérations, it gave a handle to the somewhat malicious frivolity of the salons. But if it had been preserved in full it would have escaped much of the criticism which it has received. In the original editions it runs L'L£sprit des Lois: ou du Rapport que les Lois doivent avoir avec la Constitution de chaque Gouvernement, les Moeurs, le Climat, la Religion, le Commerce, etc. It consists of thirty-one books, which in some editions are grouped in six parts. This division into parts is known to have entered into the author's original plan, but he seems to have changed his mind about it. Speaking summarily, the first part, containing eight books, deals with law in general and with forms of government; the second, containing five, with military arrangements, with taxation, &c. ; the third, containing six, with manners and customs, and their dependence on climatic conditions; the fourth, containing four, with eco- nomic matters; and the fifth, containing three, with religion. The last five books, forming a kind of supplement, deal specially with Roman, French, and feudal law. The most noteworthy peculiarity of the book to a cursory reader lies in the section dealing with effects of climate, and this indeed was almost the only characteristic which the vulgar took in, probably because it was easily susceptible of parody and reductio ad absurdum, But this theory is but the least part of the claims of the book to attention. Its vast and careful collection of facts, the novelty and prilliancy of the generalizations founded on them, the constructive spirit which penetrates it, its tolerance, its placid wisdom lighted up by vivacious epigram, could only escape the most careless reader. The singular spirit of moderation which distinguishes its views on*~~

~~*politics and religion was indeed rather against it than in its favour in France, and Helvétius, who was as outspoken as he was good-natured, had definitely assigned this as the reason of his unfavourable judgment. On the other hand, if not destructive it was sufficiently critical, and it thus raised enemies on more than one side. Montesquieu was thought too English in his ideas by some, the severe defenders of orthodoxy considered him latitudinarian, and one zealous Jansenist informed him that he was "a pig." It was long suspected, but is now positively known, that the book (not altogether with the goodwill of the pope) was put on the Index, and the Sorbonne projected, though it did not carry out, a regular censure. To all these ob- jectors the author replied in a masterly défense; and there seems to be no foundation for the late and scandalous stories which represent him as having used Madame de Pompadour's influence to suppress criticism. The fact was that, after the first snarlings of envy and incompetence had died away, he had little occasion to complain. Even Voltaire, who was his decided enemy, was forced at length to speak in public, if not in private, complimentarily of the Esprit, and from all parts of Europe the news of success arrived.*~~

~~*Montesquieu enjoyed his triumph rather at La Bréde than at Paris. He was becoming an old man, and, unlike Fonte-*~~

~~*nelle, he does not seem to have preserved in old age the passion for society which had marked his youth. A rather dubious description, published long after his death, repre- sents him as " wandering in his woods from morn to night with a white cotton nightcap on his head, and a vine prop on his shoulder." This, in the florid language of its time (the Republican period), is probably only an imaginative expression of his known interest in managing his estate. But he certainly spent much of his later years in the country, though he sometimes visited Paris, and on one visit had the opportunity, which he is likely to have en- joyed, of procuring the release of his admirer La Beaumelle from an imprisonment which La Beaumelle had suffered at. the instance of Voltaire. He is said also to have been instrumental in obtaining a pension for Piron. Indeed, indigent or unlucky men of letters found in him a constant protector, and*~~

~~*that not merely at the royal expense. Nor did he by any means neglect literary composition. The curious little romance of Arsace et Isménie, a short and unfinished treatise on Taste, many of his published Pensées, and much unpublished matter date from the period subsequent to the Lsprit des Lois. HIe did not, however, live many years after the appearance of his great work. At the end of 1754 he visited Paris, with the intention of getting rid of the lease of his house there and finally retiring to La Bréde. HIe was shortly after taken ill with an attack of fever, which seems to have affected the lungs, and in less than a fortnight he died, on 10th February 1755, aged sixty-six. HIe was buried in the church of Saint Sulpice with little pomp, and the Revolution obliterated all trace of his remains.*~~

~~*The literary and philosophical merits of Montesquieu and his position, actual and historical, in the literature of France and of Europe, form a subject of rather unusual interest in its kind. At the beginning of this century the vicomte de Bonald classed him with Racine and Bossuet, as the object of a 'religious veneration " among Frenchmen. But Bonald was not quite a suitable spokes- man for France, and it may be doubted whether the author of the Esprit des Lois lias ever really occupied any such position in his own country. Fora generation after his death he remained indeed the idol and the great authority of the moderate reforming party in France, and at such times as that party recovered power during the revolutionary period Montesquieu recovered vogue with it. But the tendency of the century and a quarter which have passed since his death has been to reduce the numbers and position of this party ever more and more, and Montesquieu is not often quot- able, or quoted, either by Republicans, Bonapartists, or Legitimists, at the present day. Again, his serious works contain citation of or allusion to a vast number of facts, and the exact (let it be hoped that posterity will not call it the pettifogging) criticism of our time challenges the accuracy of these facts. Although he was really the founder, or at least one of the founders, of the sciences of comparative politics and of the philosophy of history, his descend- ants and followers in these sciences think they have outgrown him. In France his popularity has always been dubious and con- tested. It isa singular thing that, until within the last decade, there has been no properly edited edition of his works, and nothing even approaching a complete biography of him, the place of the latter being occupied by the meagre and rhetorical*~~

~~£loges of the last century. HIe is, his chief admirers assert, hardly read at all in France to-day, and a tolerable familiarity with modern French literature enables its possessor to corroborate this by first-hand knowledge, to the effect that no writer of equal eminence is so little quoted. The admirers just mentioned attempt to explain the fact by confessing that Montesquieu, great as he is, is not altogether great according to French principles. It is not only that he is an Anglo-maniac, but that he is rather English than French in style and thought. HIs work, at least the Esprit, is lacking in the pro- portion and the almost ostentatious lucidity of arrangement which a Frenchman demands. HIs sentences are often enigmatical, and suggestive rather than clear. HIe is almost entirely dispassionate in politics, but he lacks the unswerving deductive consistency which Frenchmen love in that science. HIs wit, it is said, is quaint and alittle provincial, his style irregular and in no definite genre.~~

~~Some of these things may be allowed to exist and to be defects in Montesquieu, but they are balanced by merits which render them almost insignificant. Of the minor works, which are on the whole rather unworthy of their author, nothing need be said here. In the few Pensées, and in detached thoughts of the same kind~~

~~scattered about the tolerably numerous letters which have reached us, there is much acuteness and oint, as also in some of the best sentences of the Considérations and of the Esprit. But no one would put Montesquieu as a pensée, or maxim, writer beside La Roche- foucauld and Joubert, Pascal and Vauvenargues. It is on his three principal works that his fame does and must rest. Each one of these is a masterpiece in its kind. It is doubtful whether the Lettres Persanes yield at their best either in wit or in giving lively pictures of the time to the best of Voltaire's similar work, though they are more unequal. There is, moreover, the great difference between Montesquieu and Voltaire that the former is a rational reformer, and not a mere persiflewr or Jrondeur, to whom fault- finding is more convenient for showing off his wit than acquiescence. Of course this last description does not fully or always describe Voltaire, but it often does. It~~

~~*is seldom or never applicable to Montesquieu. Only one of Voltaire's own charges against the book and its author must be fully allowed. HIe is said to have replied to a friend who urged him to give up his habit of sneering at Montesquieu, "il est coupable de lése-poesie," and this is true. Not only are Montesquieu's remarks on poetry (he himself occasion- ally wrote verses, and very bad ones) childish, but he is never happy in purely literary appreciation. The Considérations are noteworthy, not only for the complete change of style (which from the light and mocking tone of the Lettres becomes grave, weighty, and sustained, with abundance of striking ex ression), but for the profundity and originality of the views, and for the completeness with which the author carries out his plan. These words—except, perhaps, the last clause—apply with increasing force to the Esprit des Lois. The book has been accused of desultoriness, but this arises, in part at least, from a misappreheusion of the author's design. At the same time, it is impossible to say that the equivocal meaning of the word "law," which has misled so many reasoners, has not sometimes misled Montesquieu himself. For the most: part, however, he kceps the promise of his sub-tit!e (given above) with fidelity, and applies it with exhaustive care. It is only in the last few books, which have been said to be a kind of appendix, that something of irrelevancy suggests itself, The real importance of the Esprit des Lois, how- ever, is not that of a formal treatise on law, or even on polity. It is that of anassemblage of the most fertile, original, and inspiriting views on legal and political subjects, put in language of singular sugges- tiveness and vigour, illustrated by examples which are always apt and luminous, permeated by the spirit of temperate and tolerant de- sire for human improvement and happiness, and almost unique in its entire freedom at once from doctrinairianism, from visionary enthusiasm, from egotism, and from an undue spirit of system. As for the style, no one who does not mistake the definition of that much used and much misused word can deny it to Montesquieu. HIe has in the Esprit little ornament, but his composition is wholly admirable. Every now and then there are reminiscences, perhaps a little more close than is necessary, of the badinage of the Lettres Per- sanes, but these are rare, and the author's wit is for the most used only to lighten his pages. Yet another great peculiarity of this book, as well as of the Considérations, has to be noticed. The genius of the author for generalization is so great, his instinct in political science so sure, that*~~

~~*even the falsity of his premises frequently fails to vitiate his conclusions. He has known wrong, but he has thought ri*~~

~~*at sole edition of Montesquien which need be mentioned here is that of Edouard Laboulaye (7 vols., Paris, 1875-1879), the sole biography that of Louis Vian (Paris, second edition, 1879). From the latter the facts of the above notice are principally drawn. The bibliography of Montesquieu's published works is not of any special interest, but in respect of anecdota he occupies a singular position. There is known to exist at La Bréde a great mass of MSS. materials for the Esprit des Lois, additional Lettres Persanes, essays and fragments of all kinds, diaries, letters, notebooks, and so forth. The present possessors, however, who represent Montesquieu, though not in the direct male line, have hitherto refused permission to examine these to all editors and critics, though the publication of some of them has been vaguely promised. At present they are chiefly known by a paper contributed nearly half a century ago to the Transactions of the Academy of Agen (1834).*~~

~~*G. SA,*~~

~~*MONTEVERDE, Craupio (1568-1643), the cncniay of the "free style" of musical composition, was born at Cre- mona in 1568; he was engaged at an early age as violist to the duke of Mantua, and studied composition with some success under Ingegneri, the duke's "maestro di capella," though without thoroughly mastering the difficulties of musical science. His knowledge of counterpoint was limited, and his ear imperfect, but he was a bold experimenter, and his undisguised empiricism led to discoveries which exercised a lasting influence upon the progress of art. He was the first composer who ventured to useunprepared dissonances,— employing them first in his madrigals, the beauty of which they utterly destroyed, but afterwards introducing them into music of another kind with such excellent effect that their value was universally recognized, and all opposition to their use effectually silenced. In 1603 he succeeded*~~

~~*Ingegneri as "maestro di capella ;" and in 1607 he produced, for the marriage of Francesco Gonzaga, his first opera, Ariana, in which he employed the newly-discovered dis- cords with irresistible effect. Though he did not invent the lyric drama—Peri's Huridice having been produced at Florence in 1600—he raised it to a level which distanced all contemporary competition. His second opera, Orfeo, composed in 1608, was even more successful than Ariana, and was based upon a principle which is held by some modern critics to embody the only law to which the dramatic composer owes obedience—that of accommodating the music to the exigencies of the scene. In 1613 Monte- verde was invited to Venice, as " maestro di capella" at St Mark's. Here he composed much sacred music, the greater part of which is lost,—acircumstance the less to be regretted, since his Vespers and Masses bear no comparison with those produced by his predecessors in office. In 1630 he wrote another grand opera, Proserpina rapita. In 1639 he pro- duced L'Adone, and in 1641 Le Nozze di Enea and Il ritorno dUlisse. These later works show him still greatly in advance of his age, notwithstanding the progress made by other composers since the production of Orfeo. Monteverde was ordained priest in 1633; and he died in 1643, uni- versally respected. Though his free employment of the dominant seventh and other unprepared discords put an end to the school of Palestrina, it led the way to the greatest achievements of modern music.*~~

~~*MONTEVIDEO, San Fetire y SANTIAGO DE, the capital of the republic of Uruguay (Banda Oriental) in South America, lies on the eastern side of a nearly semicircular bay on the northern shore of the estuary of the La Plata, 120 miles from Buenos Ayres, with which communication is maintained by a daily service of steamers. The small peninsula on which the city is built does not rise more than 95 feet above the level of the sea; but the headland of Cerro, 505 feet high, which forms the western side of the bay, is notable enough on that low-lying coast to justify the name Montevideo; it is crowned by a lighthouse, and by an old Spanish fort, once of considerable strength. About 620 acres is the area occupied by the city proper; the suburbs stretch for miles into the country. The plan both of the old and the new town is regular ; they are separated by the Calle de la Ciudadela on the line of the old ramparts. A somewhat Oriental appearance is produced by the low houses with their flat terraced roofs*~~

~~*and miradors or watch- towers, from which the merchants look out for ships. As a whole, the city is overbuilt, and immense wealth has been squandered in Italian marbles and other forms of archi- tectural decoration. The streets are for the most part well paved, and there is an extensive tramway system. Mare's grease was for some time employed to make gas for light- ing; but an epidemic having commenced at the gas-yard the works were for a time closed, and when they were re- opened coal-gas was substituted. Previous to 1870, when water was introduced from a distance of 40 miles, the whole supply was dependent on the rainfall. In the old town the principal square is the Plaza de la Constitucion, the south side of which contains the " cathedral," and the north side the cabildo (law-courts, senate-house, and prison). The cathedral (as it is usually called, though the bishop is a bishop in partibus, and takes his title from Megera in Asia Minor) is a somewhat imposing building, consecrated 21st October 1804, with a dome and two side towers 133 feet high, which form one of the best landmarks of the bay. In the line of the old ramparts formerly stood the old Spanish citadel, which was built by the seven years' forced labour of 2000 Guarani Indians. From 1835 to 1868 it served as the principal market in the city; in 1877 it was removed and the area united with the fine Plaza de la Independencia at the south-western end of the Calle del 18 Julio, a broad*~~

~~*town.*~~

~~*street which runs in a straight line right through the new The new market, covering 2 acres, was built in 1867 at a cost of £86,000, and there are besides the Port market (cost £55,320) and the Mercado Chico. The ex- change, constructed after the style of the house at Bordeaux,*~~

~~*dates from 1864, and cost £32,000. Of note also are the*~~

~~*custom-house, the post office (1866), the museum, the public library (founded in 1830 by Dr J. M. Perez Castellano), the*~~

~~*university (dating from 1849), the Solis theatre (1856), the British hospital (established in 1857, present building 1867),*~~

~~*the Hospital de Caridad (founded by Francisco A. Macil in 1825), having an average of 300 patients, the new lunatic*~~

~~*asylum (1877), the Basque church (1858), and the English church (1845), built on the site of a battery taken in 1807 by Sir Samuel Auchmuty's forces.*~~

~~*Since thé beginning of*~~

~~*Map of Montevideo.*~~

~~*the century the depth of water in the bay has been allowed to diminish 5 feet, and the area has been reduced by the construction (1868) of an embankment to carry the railway across it. Dredging has been tried from time to time, but on too limited a scale. The so-called harbour is a space of less than half a mile square off the north-west face of the town ; in 1870 it was reported to be yearly becoming smaller and less safe, and vessels are now obliged to anchor farther out. Among modern improvements in the port the most noteworthy are the Maua dry docks, opened in 1873, and the larger docks, erected in 1877 at a cost of 2,000,000 dollars, at the foot of the Cerro on the other side of the bay. The trade of Montevideo consists mainly in the ex- port of the raw products of the slaughter-house (horns, hides, hair, tallow, wool, bones), with a certain quantity of live stock and preserved meat, and in the import of European manufactures. During the five years 1877-1881 the average value of the exports was £2,303,061, and that of the imports £3,469,997. Of the 1044 vessels (tonnage 780,870) which entered in 1879, 285 were English, 157 Spanish, 145 Italian, 112 German, and 99 French. The population is largely of foreign origin, Italian, Spanish, Basque, and French. In 1874 the Italians, who had rapidly increased after the siege, were about 40,000 strong, and in several quarters of the city nothing was to be heard save North-Italian dialects. Even in 1880, after the exodus caused by the confiscations of 1875, they numbered 36,300. The greater proportion are engaged as petty traders. In 1879 the total population of the town was 73,879; it had been 92,260 in 1878, and 105,296 in 1871, and now (1883), including the environs, is 110,167.*~~

~~*Montevideo owes its origin not to the commercial advantages of its position but to the jealousy of the Spaniards towards the Portuguese, which led Zabala, viceroy of Buenos Ayres, to erect a*~~

~~*fort at this point in 1717. In 1726 the first settlers were intro- duced from the Canary Islands and Andalusia, and more than fifty*~~

~~*years passed before the settlement was declared a port; but by 1781 it had 6460 inhabitants, and by 1792 was importing to the value of 2,993,267 dollars, and exporting to the value of 4,150,523. In 1808 the governor of Montevideo was the first to revolt against the Spanish authorities, and to establish an independent junta; twenty years later, after much disastrous confusion and conflict, the city became the recognized capital of the newly-formed republic of Banda Oriental. Its population, which had been about 36,000 at the opening of the century, was reduced to 9000 by 1829; and it had hardly recovered its ground in this respect (31,189) when, in 1843, Rosas, dictator of Buenos Ayres, wishing to compel annexa- tion to Buenos Ayres, commenced the sicge which was irregularly maintained till 1852, and left the city and the country exhausted and almost ruined. By 1860, however, the population had in- ereasced to 49,548; and though the Brazilians blockaded the port in 1864-5 and reinstated ex-president Flores the prosperity of the lace was but little impaired. During the Paraguayan war, which asted till 1864, Montevideo grew rapidly rich, attracting a large share of the trade diverted from Buenos Ayres. Immigrants flocked from all quarters, and excessive investments were made in all kinds of real property. The valuation of the city and suburbs, which was 14,156,000 dollars in 1860, reached the sum of 74,000,000 dollars in 1872. Reckless speculation, political dis- sension, and the financial mismanagement of the Government have told heavily ; the value of house property has greatly diminished, and commercial activity has been grievously restricted. Since 1881, however, Montevideo has been rapidly recovering, and its natural advantages are so great that, with better political circumstances,*~~

~~*a future of yet higher prosperity may be anticipated.*~~

~~*Notices of Montevideo will be found in Bonelli, Travels in Bolivia, &c., 1854; Hadfield, Brazil, the River Plate, &c., 1854, and his supplemental volume, 1868 ; Mulhall, Handbook of the River Plate Republics, 1874; and Gallenga, South America, 1881. See also Brignardello, Delle vicende dell' America merid. e specialm. di Montevideo nell' Uruguay, Genoa, 1879; The Republic of Uruguay, 1883 ; the reports of the municipal junta, and Vaillant's statistical publications.*~~

~~*MONTEZUMA. See Corres and Mexico.*~~

~~*MONTFAUCON, Bernarp DE (1655-1741), critic and scholar, was born of a noble and ancient family at the chateau of Soulage (now Soulatgé, in the department of Aube, France), on 13th January 1655. Though destined for the army, he passed most of his time in the library of the castle of Roquetaillade (the usual residence of his family), devouring books in different languages and on almost every variety of subject, his studies being directed by a learned friend of his father, Pavillon, bishop of Aleth. In 1672 he entered the army, and in the two following years served as a volunteer in Germany under Turenne. But ill-health and the death of his parents brought him back to his studious life, and in 1675 he entered the cloister of the Congregation of St Maur, at La Daurade, Toulouse, taking the vows there on 13th May 1676. Apart from his vast literary labours, the remainder of his life presents little to record. He lived successively at various abbeys — at Soréze, where he specially studied Greek and examined the numerous MSS. of the convent library, at La Grasse, and at Bordeaux; and in 1687 he was removed to Saint Germain des Prés. From 1698 to 1701 he lived in Italy, chiefly in Rome. Returning to Saint Germain, he was made a member of the Académie des Inscriptions et Belles- Lettres in 1719. He died on 21st December 1741.*~~

~~*His first publication, in which he was assisted by Lopin and Pouget, was the first volume ofa never completed series of previously unpublished Analecta Greea (1688). In 1690 appeared his defence of the literally historical character of the book of Judith.*~~

~~*the Academy of Inscriptions, will be found in the Meuvelle Biographie Générale, s.v. “ Montfaucon.”*~~

~~*MONTFORT, Simon peg, Eart or LEtcester (c. 1200- 1265), a great political leader, and sometimes even re- ferred to as the “founder of the English House of Com- mons,” born in France about the beginning of the 13th century, was the fourth and youngest son of Simon IV. de Montfort and of Alice de Montmorency. Of his early life and education nothing is known, the first definitely recorded fact about him being that in April 1230 he was in England and had attached himself to the service of Henry III., who granted him a temporary pension of 400 marks, with a promise of the earldom which his father had held.1 In the following year he did homage for the honour of Leicester, and in 1232 the king confirmed to him all the land with appurtenances which had belonged to the late earl in England. But, though thus formally admitted to the ranks of the English baronage, he did not for several years succeed in making way against the strong dislike in which “aliens” were now held, and until 1236 most of his time was spent, in considerable poverty, abroad. In that year, however, he attended the king’s marriage to Eleanor of Provence as lord high steward, and thenceforward began to take part in the business of the royal council. Handsome, talented, and brave, he gained the love of Eleanor, widow of the earl of Pembroke, and sister of the king, to whom he was privately married at Westminster on 7th January 1238, Henry himself giving away the bride. When the fact became known, the indignation of the baronage and of the people had almost broken out in open rebellion, and, after Simon had with difficulty averted this by propitiating his brother- in-law, Richard, earl of Cornwall, he found it necessary to go to Rome to meet the objections which the church had raised on the ground of an alleged previous vow made by Eleanor. Having succeeded in obtaining (by bribery, it would seem) the papal sanction to his marriage, he re- turned to England in October, and early next year, still in the enjoyment of the royal favour, he had the earldom of Leicester formally conferred upon him in presence of the assembled barons. In June (1239) he assisted as god- father and high steward at the baptism of Prince Edward ; but the machinations of his enemies were soon afterwards successful in bringing about a change in the fickle humour of Henry, and when Simon came back to Westminster in August to attend*~~

~~the churching of the queen the king met him with the information that he was an excommuni- cated person, and ordered him to leave the church.? Along with his wife he forthwith went into voluntary exile in France; but in April 1240 he returned to England, and was received by the king on a footing of at least outward friendship. Of his private and public life during the~~

~~1 Simon IV. de Montfort, the well-known Albigensian crusader, in right of his mother, Amicia de Beaumont, sister and co-heiress of Robert Fitz-Pernell, earl of Leicester, succeeded to that earldom in 1204, and in 1207 was confirmed in the high stewardship of England, hereditary in connexion with the title. Soon afterwards he was deprived of his English possessions under some pretext, the real reason doubtless being his position as captain-general of the French forces against the Albigenses (1208). He received them again towards the end of Jolin's reign, their custody, however, being committed to his nephew, the earl of Chester. The long hostility between England and France during the early years of Henry III. made it practically impossible for the alien De Montforts to maintain any hold upon their English earldom on the death of Simou IV. in 1218; in 1231, after the peace, the eldest son Amaury (now constable of France) renounced all claim to it, thus leaving the field clear to his next surviving brother Simon.~~

~~2 There is no evidence that Simon actually had been excommuni- cated, but it seems clear that certain payments he had agreed to make to the Roman curia had not been punctually attended to, and that some annoyance had been in this way caused to the king. The charge of immoral] relations with Eleanor was probably only a conveniently coarse way of restating the ecclesiastical offence for which De Mout- fort had already purchased absolution.~~

~~next eight years very few facts have been preserved. There is some ground for believing that he went to the Holy Land in 1240, and a letter is still extant in which the nobility of the kingdom of Jerusalem ask Frederick II. (June 1241) to allow Simon de Montfort, earl of Leicester, to act as regent till the arrival of his son Conrad. In 1242 he accompanied Henry's~~

~~*unsuccessful expedition to France. In the parliamentary history of these years his name appears but seldom, but where he is mentioned he is invariably found on the side of the people, resisting alike the arbitrary wastefulness of the king and the rapacious exactions of the pope. In 1248 De Montfort was appointed for six years the king's "seneschal," or "locum-tenens," in Gascony. In this capacity he was very inadequately supported from home with either men or money; he more than once subdued the rebellious provinces, indeed, but meanwhile his enemies at home gained strength and encouraged the Gascons in repeated accusations and complaints against the seneschal. These re- sulted in one-sided inquiries, but ultimately in his acquittal, and led to a demand on his part for reparation, and a con- sequent quarrel with the king. Towards the end of 1252 De Montfort retired into France, where such was the reputation he enjoyed as a statesman that, on the death of the queen-regent and in the absence of Louis IX., he was offered the office of high steward and a place among the guardians of the crown. This, however, he declined, " being unwilling to prove a renegade;" and, after a partial recon- ciliation with Henry, he returned to England in 1254, In the following year he was sent on a secret mission into Scotland, and in 1257 he was one of the king's ambassadors to France ; but his chief activity between 1254 and 1258, if we are to judge by the prominent place he took in the revolution of the last-named year, must have been in the meetings of parliament. At the Westminster parliament in April 1258 it was significantly upon the earls of Glou- cester and Leicester that the king's half-brother, Wilham de Valence, laid the blame of all the evils under which the country was groaning, De Montfort in particular being called by him "an old traitor and a liar." At Leicester's suggestion the barons leagued for the defence of their rights, and presented themselves armed at the meeting, which extorted the appointment of the committee of twenty-four to meet at Oxford and proceed at once with the reform of the realm. The Provisions of Oxford having been signed (October 1258), De Montfort received the cus- tody of the castle of Winchester, where the parliament con- tinued its session, he meanwhile apparently holding the position of military commander-in-chief; and, after the removal of the barons to London, he was appointed member of an embassy to Scotland. In the early part of 1259 he was chiefly busied with the task of adjusting the terms of a peace with France, which was not settled until the end of*~~

~~*that year. From the date of the conclusion of that peace, owing to divisions in the reforming party, the king began to regain his lost power, and in 1262 he felt himself strong enough to repudiate the Provisions of Oxford, thus giving the signal for civil war. The successes of the barons, led by De Montfort, in the west, and his victorious entry into London again reduced the king to submission, but only to bring once more also into prominence the divided state of Leicester's supporters. Louis's one-sided Mise of Amiens (1264), however, rendered another appeal to arms on the part of the barons inevitable, and by the victory of Lewes (14th May 1264) De Montfort for the time became master of England. Taking Henry, his prisoner, along with him to London, he summoned thither the parliament, which met in June, and drew up the constitution or scheme of government associated with his name, of which the most striking feature is the new development it gives to the*~~

~~*MO N—*~~

~~*MON*~~

~~*representative system. A still further advance in the development took place in 1265, when borough members, as distinguished from county members, were for the first time summoned. Meanwhile troubles in the west required De Montfort's presence in the field, and, by the alliance of his rival Gloucester with Roger Mortimer, as well as by the escape of Prince Edward, who put himself at the head of the royalist opposition, the great parliamentary leader was placed in serious straits. At Evesham, where he had halted on his march to join his son at Kenilworth, he was surprised by the army of Prince Edward, and after a struggle of about two hours was slain on the field of battle (4th August 1265). As regards the personal character of De Montfort, it is not surprising to find that contemporary opinion was divided ; but of his determination, constancy, and energy there can be no question, while much is re- vealed by the fact that, though in an unauthorized way, his memory was revered in England as a saint and martyr, offices were drawn up in his honour, his intercession in- voked, and miraculous virtues attributed to his relics. The painstaking labours of recent investigators have tended to bring into clearer light the purity and nobleness of pur- pose of Simon de Montfort*~~

~~*as a consistent defender of the rights of the governed; on the other hand, it has also be- come obvious that the representative institutions of Eng- land, though largely helped forward by him, can hardly be claimed as his creation. Thus on both sides the statement of Hume that the House of Commons was planted by the inauspicious hand of this bold and artful conspirator must be rejected as inconsistent with the facts.*~~

~~*Compare ENGLAND, vol. viii. p. 810 sqq., and see the monographs of Pauli (Simon von Montfort, Graf von Leicester, Der Schépfer des*~~

~~*Hauses der Gemeinen, Tiibingen, 1867) and Prothero (The Life of Simon de Montfort, 1877), and the literature there referred to.*~~

~~*MONTGOMERY (Welsh, Sirydd Tre Faldwyn), an inland county of Wales, is bounded E. by Shropshire, N.E. by Denbigh, N.W. by Merioneth, 8.W. by Cardigan, and §. by Radnor. Its greatest length from south-east to north- west is about 40 miles, and its breadth from east to west about 35 miles. The area is.495,089 acres, or about 773: square miles. The surface is broken and undulating, but it is only round the borders of the county that the hills reach any great height, the highest summits of the different ranges being generally in the adjoining counties. To the north are the Berwyn chain, stretching into Denbigh- shire, in the east the Breidden hills, in the south the Kerry hills, and in the south-west Plinimmon, the highest summit of which is in Cardigan. These various mountain ranges form the watershed of the numerous rivers of Montgomery- shire. With the exception of the Dyfi, which rises near Bala Lake and falls into Cardigan Bay, and the Wye, which flows south into Radnorshire, all the principal rivers are tributaries of the Severn (Welsh, Hafren), which rises on the east side of Plinlimmon and traverses the whole length of the county from south-west to north-east. The principal of these tributaries are the Clywedog, the Taranon, the Rhiew, and the Vyrnwy. This fine succession of river- valleys broaden out as they reach the great vale of the Severn, and the beauty of the scenery is enhanced by an abundance of oak and other trees. The Montgomeryshire canal, which has a length of 27 miles, and passes the principal towns, is connected with the Ellesmere canal, thus affording water communication with Chester and Shrewsbury.*~~

~~*Montgomeryshire is occupied chiefly by Lower Silurian rocks. The boundary between it and Merioneth is formed by the Bala beds. In the centre and east, near Llanfair and Montgomery, Wenlock shales prevail. In the neigh- bourhood of Welshpool the Silurian rocks have been fre- quently dislocated by volcanic masses, one of the most*~~

~~*remarkable of which is Corndon Hill, rising to a height of 1700 feet. In some places the sedimentary rocks have been penetrated by trap mingled with shale or schist. Along the lines of dislocation there are frequent deposits of metallic lodes, carried there by the heated water rising from below. The lead mines of Montgomeryshire are of con- siderable importance, and at present the metal is wrought at seven different places. In 1881 the amount of lead ore obtained in the various mines was 3432 tons, yielding 2693 tons of lead and 25,432 oz. of silver, the total value being £36,495. There were also obtained 1414 tons of zinc ore, yielding 610 tons of zinc, of a total value of £3231.*~~

~~*Agriculture.—The climate is mild and genial, and the soil in the valleys remarkably fertile, especially along tlie banks of the Severn. A considerable portion on the borders of Merioneth is, however, occupied chiefly by heath and moss. The number of holdings has been rather decreasing of late years, the decrease being chiefly in those below 50 acres in extent, which in 1880 (the latest year regarding which there is information) numbered 3572, while there were 1650 between 50 and 300 acres, and 45 above 300 acres, of which 2 were above 1000. According to the agricultural returns of 1882, the total area of arable land was 256,084 acres, or nearly one- half of the whole. Of this 53,538 were under corn crops, 163,441 were permanent pasture, 23,882 rotation grasses, and only 11,107 green crops ; 457 acres were under orchards, 2 under market gardens; 37 under nursery grounds, and 22,744 under woods. Of the corn crops, wheat occupied 18,665 acres, and oats 23,937 acres. Cattle, which are chiefly Herefords and cross-breeds, though there are some Devons and a few of the old Montgomeryshire breed, numbered 62,033 in 1882, of which 21,912 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf. Horses in 1882 numbered 18,985, of which 7060 were used solely for agricultural*~~

~~purposes. The county was long famous for its hardy breed of small horses called merlins, which are still to be met with. Many good hunters and cart-horses are uow bred. The number of sheep in 1882 was 305,641. On some of the heath lands in the centre and west of the county a diminutive breed of sheep called eluns is pastured, but those kept in the better cultivated regions are principally Shropshire Downs. According to the latest return, the land was divided among 3241 proprietors, possessing 387,342 acres, with a gross annual rental of £378,512. Of these, 1314, or 40 per cent., possessed less than one acre, 32 possessed between 1000 and 2000 acres, and 25 between 2000 and 5000; the following possessed upwards of 5000 acres, viz.—Earl Powis, 83,545 ; Sir W. W. Wynn, 32,968 ; Lord Sudeley, 17,158; J. Naylor, 9275; and marquis of Londonderry, 7400.~~

~~Manufactures.—In all the towns the manufacture of woollen cloth, especially Welsh flannel, is carried on, and although the industry was lately on the decline it is now reviving.~~

~~Administration and Population.—Montgomeryshire comprises nine hundreds, and the municipal boroughs of Llanidloes (3421) and Welshpool (7107). lLilanfyllin, Llanidloes, Machynlleth, Mont- gomery, Newtown, and Welshpool form the Montgomery district of boroughs, with a total population in 1881 of 19,925, and return one member to parliament. One member isalso returned for the county. Montgomeryshire is partly in the dioceses of Bangor, Hereford, and St Asaph, and contains sixty-eight civil parishes, townships, or places, as well as parts of other parishes in adjoining counties. From 65,700 in 1831 the population had increased in 1851 to 67,335, and in 1871 to 67,623, but in 1881 it had diminished to 65,718, of whom 33,004 were males and 32,714 females.~~

~~History.—At the time of the Roman invasion, Montgomery was possessed by a tribe of the Cymri called Ordovices. Traces of several of the old British camps still remain, the principal being those at Dolarddyn, on Breidden Hill, and at Caereinion. There are also a large number of cairns and barrows. The county was tra- versed by the great Roman road, the Via Devana, which was joined by a number of others ; but the remains of Roman camps or stations are unimportant. After being vacated by the~~

~~*Romans, little is known of the history of Montgomery, until Wales was subdivided into three districts at the death of Rhodri the Great. Montgomery was then included under Powys, and formed the chief portion of Powys Gwenwynwyn, sometimes called Upper Powys. Powys or Powis Castle, the seat of the rulers of Upper Powys, was founded in 1108. Baldwyn, from which the county takes its Welsh name, was lieutenant of the marches ; and, for the purpose of holding the dis- trict in check, a castle was built about the end of the 11th century, which, after being captured by the natives, was retaken by Roger de Montgomery. He gave his name to the castle, and to the sur- rounding district of ancient Powys, which was made a county by Henry VIII. in 1533.*~~

~~*MontcomErY, the county town, is situated on the decli- vity of a well-wooded hill near the eastern bank of the Severn, 214 miles south by west of Shrewsbury, and 1872*~~

~~*789*~~

~~*by rail north-west by north of London. It is a clean and well-built town, but somewhat scattered and irregular. The principal buildings are the parish church of Saint Nicholas (an old cruciform structure) and the town-hall. The borough has returned members to parliament since the time of Henry VIII, but by the Reform Act of 1832 it was constituted one of the Montgomery district of boroughs, which together return one member. The population of the borough (area, 3323 acres) was 1194 in 1881.*~~

~~*There are only a few crumbling remains of the old fortress of Montgomery, originally founded in the time of William the Con- queror to overawe the Welsh, and held by Roger de Montgomery, from whom the town takes its name. The castle was greatly enlarged in the time of Henry IT1., when it was the scene of fre- quent contests between that monarch and Llewelyn the Great. In the 14th century it was held by the Mortimers, from whom it passed to the house of York. By the crown it was granted in the 15th century to the Herberts of Cherbury, but during the Civil War it was surrendered by Lord Herbert of Cherbury to the Parliamentary forces, by whom it was dismantled.*~~

~~*MONTGOMERY, a district in the lieutenant-governor- ship of the Punjab, lying between 29° 58' and 31° 33' N. lat., and between 72° 29' and 74° 10' E. long., is bounded on the N.E. by Lahore, on the S.E. by the river Sutlej, on the S.W. by Multan, and on the N.W. by Jhang. The area is 5573 square miles. ° Montgomery district, formerly known as Gugaira, occupies a wide extent of the Bari Dodb, or wedge of land between the Sutlej and the Ravi, besides stretching across the latter river into the adjoining Rechna Dodb. In the former tract a fringe of cultivated lowland skirts the bank of either river, but the whole interior upland consists of a desert plateau partially over- grown with brushwood and coarse grass, and in places with impenetrable jungle. On the farther side of the Ravi,*~~

~~*again, the country at once assumes the same desert aspect.*~~

~~*The census of 1868 returned the population at 359,437 (males 200,016, females 159,421), viz., HIndus, 69,805 ; Mohammedans, 277,291 ; Sikhs, 12,286 ; and "others," 55. The Jats, or pastoral tribe, form the most distinctive class in the district. They bear the name of " Great Ravi," in contradistinction to the purely agri- cultural classes, who are contemptuously styled "Little Ravi." They possess a fine physique, with handsome features, claim a Rajput ancestry, and despise all who handle the plough. In former days they exercised practical sovereignty over the agricul- tural tribes. Only two towns in the district contain over 5000 inhabitants, viz., Pak Pattan (6086) and Kamalia (5695). The town of Montgomery, the headquarters station, had a population of only 2416 in 1868.*~~

~~*Out of a total assessed area of 3,569,746 acres, only 538,240 are returned as under cultivation. In 1872-73 the rabé (or spring harvest) acreage was as follows :—wheat (the chief crop), 162,989 acres; barley, 30,134; gram, 21,416; mustard, 2077 ; and tobacco, 1303 acres. Inthe same year the kharif (or autumn harvest) acreage was :—jodr, 20,509 acres ; rice, 18,727; cotton, 16,916; ¢é, 12,457; kangni, 9493 ; and sugar-cane, 498 acres. Irrigation is practised from rivers, canals, and wells ; the total area irrigated by public works is 66,495 acres, and by private works, 158,709. The desert uplands afford after the rains a scanty pasturage for the scattered herds of the Great Ravi Jats, and yield an impure carbonate of*~~

soda (sajjt) from the alkaline plants with which they abound. The commercial staples include wheat, rice, gram, millets, cotton, wool, ghi, hides, and sajjt. Large numbers of camels are bred for exportation. The imports comprise sugar, salt, oil, English piece goods, metals, indigo, and fruits. The manufactures consist of country cloth, coarse striped silk, and lacquered wood-work. The Lahore and Multan railway intersects the district, which is also traversed in every direction by good unmetalled highways. The revenue of the district in 1871-72 amounted to £47,954, of which £42,355 was derived from the land-tax. Education iu 1871-72 was afforded by 59 aided and unaided schools, with a total of 1417 pupils. The average annual rainfall for the seven years ending 1872-73 was 9°6 inches.

From time immemorial the Rechna Doab has formed the home of a wild race of pastoral Jats, who have constantly maintained a sturdy independence against the successive rulers of northern India. The historians of Alexander's invasion mention a tribe called the Cathzans, who probably had their capital at Sangala in the Jhang district, and the Malli with their metropolis at Multan, as in possession of this part of the country. The sites of Kot Kamalia and Harappa in Montgomery contain large mounds of antique bricks and other ruins, while many other remains of ancient cities

or villages lie scattered along the river bank, or dot the now barren stretches of the central waste, clearly marking the former existence of a considerable population. The pastoral tribes of this barren expanse do not appear to have paid more than a nominal allegiance to the Moslem rulers, and even in later days, when Ranjit Sinh extended the Sikh supremacy as far as Multan, the country yielded little or no revenue, and the population for the most part re- mained in a chronic state of rebellion. British influence was first exercised in the district in 1847, when an officer was deputed to effect a summary settlement of the land revenue. Direct British rule was effected on the annexation of the Punjab in 1849. The only incident since then was a general rising of the wild clans dur- ing the

~~*mutiny of 1857, several actions being fought before the clans were defeated and dispersed and order restored.*~~

~~*MONTGOMERY, a city of the United States, the capital of Alabama, is built on a high bluff on the left bank of the Alabama river, 158 miles north-east of Mobile, with which it is connected by rail (180 miles) and by a steamboat service (330 miles). The State-house, rebuilt in 1851 at a cost of $75,000, occupies a commanding site on Capitol Hill. There are a city-hall, a court-house, and two theatres, a large flour-mill, a cotton-factory, two oil-mills, a fertilizer-factory, and several foundries and machine shops. The population was 16,713 in 1880; and, in consequence of the marked increase in commercial and industrial activity since that date, it is now (1883) esti- mated at 19,000. Founded in 1817, and named after General Richard Montgomery (1736-75), the town of Mont- gomery became in 1847 the seat of the State Government instead of Tuscaloosa. From February 1861 to May 1862 it was the capital of the Southern Confederation. In 1865 it was seized by the Federal forces under General Wilson.*~~

~~*MONTGOMERY, ALExanpDER, whose life fell between 1550 and 1610, was the last of the series of Scottish poets who flourished in the 16th century under the patronage of the Jameses. With the union of the crowns, and the transference of James VI. from Edinburgh to London, court favour was withdrawn from Lowland Scotch; it practically ceased to be a literary language, and no poetry of mark was written in the dialect, if we except that of Allan Ramsay's school, till it reappeared in literature as the instrument of the Ayrshire peasant. By a curious coincidence, Montgomery seems to have been, like Burns, a native of Ayrshire. A commendatory sonnet from his pen, extravagantly flattering, as was the custom of the time, was printed with King James's Essays of a Prentice in 1584; he received a pension from the crown a few years later, fell into disgrace apparently for a time, was reinstated in favour, and accompanied his patron to Eng- land. As might be expected from the poet of a court where the king himself was a keen critic, Montgomery's miscellaneous poems show a careful attention to form; he tried many metrical experiments, and managed many complicated staves with skill, The sonnet form, at that time a leading fashion in English verse, was also*~~

~~*cultivated at the Scottish court, and Montgomery's sonnets possess considerable merit. His most successful poem, published in 1597, and frequently reprinted in Scotland, was the allegory of The Cherry and the Slae. The poet, smitten by Cupid, conceives a longing for some cherries, beautiful fruit, but growing high up on a steep and dangerous bank, above a roaring waterfall. Shall he climb and win? Hope and courage and will urge him to try; dread and danger and despair counsel him to be content with the humbler fruit of the sloe, which grows within easy reach. Experience, reason, wit, and skill debate the question. In the end he resolves to venture for the cherry, with the active help of these last-named powers. The conflicting counsels of the poet's advisers are very pithily expressed in proverbs for and against the adventurous enterprise, and the description of the situation is strong and vivid. Mont- gomery was no unworthy successor to Henryson and*~~

~~*Dunbar in executive finish, but the want of originality in his poems shows that the old impulse was nearly ex- hausted. There are traces of Italian influence in his sonnets and love songs, but it was much less powerful with him than with his English contemporaries. MONTGOMERY, James (1771-1854), poet and jour- nalist, was justly described by Lord Byron, in a footnote to English Bards and Scotch Reviewers, as "a man of con- siderable genius," though it was going far beyond the mark to speak of his Wanderer of Switzerland (his first notable poem, published in 1806) as being worth a thousand "Tyrical Ballads." Montgomery was born 4th Novem- ber 1771, at Irvine in Ayrshire, Scotland. Part of his boy- hood was spent' in Ireland, but he received his education in Yorkshire, at the Moravian school of Fulneck, named after the original home of the Moravians, to which sect his father belonged. He drifted at an early age into journalism, and edited the Sheffield Jris for more than thirty years. When he began his career the position of a Dissenting jour- nalist was a difficult one, and he twice suffered imprisonment (in 1795 and 1796) on charges that now seem absurdly forced andunfair. His Wanderer was mercilessly ridiculed by the Edinburgh Review, but in spite of this Montgomery pub- lished many poems, which had a wide popularity :— The West Indies, 1810; The World Before the Flood, 1812; Greenland,*~~

~~1819; Songs of Zion, 1822; The Pelican Island, 1827. Onaccount of the religious character of his poetry, he is sometimes confounded with Robert Montgomery, very much to the injustice of hisreputation. The inspiring force of James Montgomery's poetry was the humanitarian senti- ment which has been such a power in the political changes of this century, and the pulse of this sentiment is nowhere felt beating more strongly than in his verse. His poetry has thus an historical interest altogether apart from its intrinsic value as poetry. But this value is far from con- temptible or commonplace. Strictly speaking, Montgomery was more of a rhetorician than a poet, but his imagination was bold, ardent, and fertile, and more than one of his greater contemporaries owed occasional debts to his vigorous inven- tion and even to his casual felicities of diction, while some passages from his poems keepa place in the literature that is universally read and quoted. At the close of his career as a journalist, when all parties agreed in paying him respect, he claimed for his poetry that it was at least not imitative, and the claim was just as regarded conception and choice of subjects; but as regards diction and imagery the influence of Campbell is very apparent in his earlier poems, and the influence of Shelley is supreme in the Pelican Island, his last and best work as a poet. His Lectures on Poetry and General Literature, published in 1833, show considerable breadth of sympathy and power of expression. Jfemoirs of him were published in seven volumes in 1856-8. They furnish valuable materials for the history of English provincial politics in the 19th century. He died at Sheffield 30th April 1854. MONTGOMERY, Rosert (1807-1855), author of Zhe Omnipresence of the Deity (1828), Satan (1830), and Zhe Messiah (1832), was the Montgomery ridiculed and de- nounced in Macaulay's famous essay. Asa poet, he deserved every word of Macaulay's severe censure; the marks of intellectual feebleness — tautologous epithets, absurdly mixed metaphors, and inapt lines introduced for the sake of rhyme—are visible in every page of his versification. It should be mentioned that Macaulay's "'trouncing" did not diminish the sale of lis so-called poems; one of the works expressly ridiculed reached its 28th edition in 1858. His real name is said to have been Gomery. MONTH. See Astronomy, vol. i. CALENDAR. MONTILLA, a small and unimportant city of Spain in**

p- 800, and

~~the province of Cordova, 32 miles to the south of the city of Cordova, on the Malaga railway, is strikingly situated on two hills which command a beautiful and extensive prospect of the surrounding country. The manufactures (princi- pally weaving) are unimportant, and the trade of the place is chiefly in agricultural produce. The oil of the surround- ing district is abundant and good; and it is the peculiar flavour of the pale dry light wine of Montilla that gives its name to the sherry known as Amontillado. The popu- lation in 1878 was 13,207. Montilla was the birthplace of "The Great Captain," and still shows the ruins of the castle of his father, Don Pedro Fernandez de Cordova.~~

~~MONTLUC, Buatsz pE LassERAN-MAssENCOME, SEIG- NEUR DE (c. 1503-1577), marshal of France, was born about 1503, at the family seat near Condom in the modern department of Gers. He was the eldest son, and his family was a good one, but it was large and poor, and, like most gentlemen of Gascony, he had to trust for endow- ment to hissword. He served first as a private archer and man-at-arms in Italy, with Bayard for his captain, fought all through the wars of Francis I., and was knighted on the field of Cérisoles (1538). Having apparently enjoyed no patronage, he was by this time a man of middle age. Thenceforward, however, his merits were recognized by his appointinent to various important posts. His chief feat was the famous defence of Siena (1555), which he has told so admirably. When the religious wars broke out in France, Montluc, a staunch royalist, held Guienne for the king, and exercised severe but impartial justice on Catholics and Protestants alike. He would have nothing to do with the Massacre of St Bartholomew. Henry III., however, made him marshal of France, an honour which he had earned by nearly half a century of service and by numerous wounds. He died at Estillac near Agen in 1577. Montluc's eminence above other soldiers of fortune in his day is due to his Commentaires (Bordeaux, 1592), in which he described his fifty years of service. This book, the "'soldier's Bible" (or "'breviary," according to others), as Henry IV. called it, is one of the most admirable of the many admirable books of memoirs produced by the unlearned gentry of France at that time. It is said to have been dictated, which may possibly account in some degree for~~

~~the singular vivacity and picturesqueness of the style. Hardly any author excels Montluc in the clearness with which he brings military operations before the reader. As with most of his con- temporaries, his work is didactic in purpose, and he often pauses to draw morals for the benefit of young commanders, but never tediously. The eloquence displayed in some of the speeches is remarkable. These Commentaires are to be found conveniently in the collection of Michaud and Poujoulat, but the standard edition is that of the Société de l Histoire de France, edited by M. de Ruble (5 vols.~~

~~1865-72).~~

~~MONTLUCON, the industrial capital of the centre of France, sometimes called the French Manchester, is the head of an arrondissement, and the largest town (26,079 inhabitants in 1881) of the department of Allier. The upper town consists of steep, narrow, winding streets, and preserves several buildings of the 15th and 16th centuries ; the lower town, traversed by the river Cher (there converted into a canal communicating with that along the Loire), is the seat of the manufacturing industries, which embrace glass, steel, and iron works, lime-kilns, saw-mills, and a wool-spinning factory. The Commentry coal-mines are only a few miles distant. There is railway connexion with Moulins (50 miles to the east-north-east), Bourges, Limoges, and Clermont-Ferrand, and a new line is about to be opened to Tours wa Chateauroux. Of the churches, Notre Dame is of the 15th century, St Pierre partly of the 12th, and St Paul modern. The town-hall, with a library, occupies the~~

~~site of an old Ursuline convent, and two other convents now~~

~~serve as college and hospital.~~

~~Montlugon, which existed as early as the 10th century, was taken by the English in 1171 and by Philippe Auguste in 1181; the English were beaten under its walls in the 14th century. The castle, rebuilt by Louis II., duke of Bourbon, was taken by Henry IV. during the religious wars ; at present it is occupied as a barracks.~~

~~*MONTMORENCY, the name of one of the oldest and*~~

~~*'most distinguished families in France, is derived from*~~

~~*Montmorency, now in the department of Seine-et-Oise, in the immediate neighbourhood of Enghien and St Denis, and about 9 miles to the north-north-west of Paris. The family, since its first appearance in history in the person of Boucnarp or Burcuarp LI., sire de Montmorencyin the 10th century, has furnished six constables and twelve marshals of France, several admirals and cardinals, numerous grand officers of the crown and grand masters of various knightly orders, and was declared by Henry IV. to be, after that of the Bourbons, the first house in Europe. Marrurev L, sire de Montmorency, received in 1138 the post of constable, and diedin 1160. His first wife was Aline, the natural daughter of Henry I. of England; his second, Adelaide or Alice of Savoy, widow of Louis VI. and mother of Louis VII. According to Duchesne, he shared the regency of France with Suger, during the absence of the latter king on the second crusade. Marruiev II. had an important share in the victory of Bouvines (1214), and was made grand constable in 1218. During the reign of Louis VIII. (1223-1226) he distinguished himself chiefly in the south of France (Niort, Rochelle, Bordeaux). On the accession of Louis IX. he was one of the chief supports of the queen- regent Blanche of Castile, and was successful in reducing all the vassals to obedience. Hediedin 1230. His younger son, Guy, in right of his mother, became head of the house of Montmorency-Laval. AnnE de Montmorency (1493-1567), so named, it is said, after his godmother Anne of Brittany, was the first to attain the ducal title. He was born at Chantilly in 1493, and was brought up with the dauphin, afterwards Francis I., whom he followed into Italy in 1515, distinguishing himself especially at Marignano. In 1516 he became governor of Novara; in 1520 he was present at the Field of Cloth of Gold, and afterwards had charge of important negotiations in England. Successful in the defence of Méziéres (1521), and as commander of the Swiss troops in the Italian campaign of the same year, he was made marshal of France in 1522, accompanied Francis into Italy in 1524, and was taken prisoner at Pavia in 1525, Released soon afterwards, he was one of the negotiators of the treaty of Madrid, and in 1530 reconducted the king's sons into France. On the renewal of the war by Charles V.'s*~~

~~invasion of France in 1536, Montmorency compelled the emperor to raise the siege of Marseilles ; he afterwards accompanied the king of France into Picardy, and on the termination of the Netherlands campaign marched to the relief of Turin. In 1538, on the ratification of the ten years' truce, he was rewarded with the office of constable, but in 1541 he fell into disgrace, and did not return to public life until the accession of Henry II. in 1547. In 1548 he repressed the insurrections in the south-west, particularly at Bordeaux, with great severity, and in 1549- 1550 conducted the war in the Boulonnais, negotiating the treaty for the surrender of Boulogne on 24th March 1550. In 1551 his barony was erected into a duchy. Soon after- wards his armies found employment in the north-east in connexion with the seizure of Metz, Toul, and Verdun by the French king. His attempt to relieve St Quentin issued in his defeat and captivity (10th August 1557), and he did not regain his liberty until the peace of Cateau-Cambrésis in 1559. Supplanted in the interval by the Guises, he was treated with coldness by the new king, Francis IL, and compelled to give up his mastership of the royal house-~~

~~hold,—his son, however, being appointed marshal by way of indemnity. On the accession of Charles IX. in 1560 he resumed his offices and dignities, and, uniting with his former enemies, the Guises, played an important part in the Huguenot war of 1562. Though the arms of his party were victorious at Dreux, he himself fell into the hands of the enemy, and was not liberated until the treaty of Amboise (19th March 1563). In 1567 he again triumphed at St Denis, but received the death-blow of which he died soon afterwards at Paris. His eldest son, FRaNcoIsE de Montmorency (1530-1579), was married to Diana, natural daughter of Henry II.; another son, Henri I. de Mont- morency (1534-1614), was constable of France from 1593. Henry II. (1595-1632), son of duke Henry I., succeeded to the title in 1614, having previously been raised by Louis XIII. to the office of grand admiral. In 1625 he defeated the French Protestant fleet under Soubise, and seized the islands of Rhé and Oleron, but the jealousy of Richelieu deprived him of the means of following up these advantages. In 1628-1629 he was allowed to command against the duke of Rohan in Languedoc; in 1630 he defeated the~~

~~*Piedmon- tese, and captured Prince Doria, at Avigliana, and took Saluces. In the same year he was created marshal. In 1632 he joined the party of Gaston, duke of Orleans, and placed himself at the head of the rebel army, which was defeated by Marshal Schomberg at Castelnaudary (1st September 1632); severely wounded, he fell into the enemy's hands, and, abandoned by Gaston, was executed as a traitor at Toulouse on 30th October. The title passed to his sister CHARLOTTE-MARGUERITE, princess of Condé.*~~

~~*MONTORO, a town of Spain, in the province of Cordova, 27 miles to the north-north-east of that city, on the Madrid railway, stands on a rocky peninsula on the south bank of the Guadalquivir, here crossed by a fine bridge of four arches dating from the 16th century. Its most conspicuous build- ing is a hospital, said to be one of the best in Andalucia. The most important article of commerce is the oil of the swrounding district. The population of the ayuntamiento was 13,293 in 1878.*~~

~~*MONTPELIER, a town of the United States, the capital of Vermont (since 1805), and the county seat of Washington county (since 1811), is situated in 44° 17' N, lat. and 72° 36' W. long., on the Winooski or Onion river, which falls into Lake Champlain. It has a station on the Central Vermont Railroad, and is the western terminus of the Montpelier and Wells River and the Montpelier and White River Railroads. The State-house, in the form of a Greek cross with a dome and Doric portico, was erected at a cost of $150,000, to replace the structure burned down in 1857. Under the portico stands a marble statue (by Larkin G. Mead) of Ethan Allen (1737-1789), the hero of Vermont. The State library contains 20,000 volumes. From 2411 in 1860 the population had increased to 3219 in 1880.*~~

~~*MONTPELLIER, chief town of the department of Heérault, France, is situated at the junction of several railway lines, on a small hill rising above the Lez, at its confluence with the Merdanson, about 480 miles south of Paris, and about 7 miles from the Mediterranean, from which it is separated by the lagoons of Pérols and |'Arnel. As the headquarters of the 16th corps d'armée, as the seat of a bishop, of a university, and of a court of appeal, Montpellier is the principal place of lower Languedoc. The Place du Peyrou, 575 feet in length by 410 in breadth, one of the*~~

~~*finest squares in France, occupies the highest part of the town, and terminates in a terrace, commanding a magnificent view of the coasts of the Mediterranean, and of a wide stretch of country reaching to the Cevennes on the north, to the spurs of the Pyrenees on the south-west, and to those of the Alps on the north-east. On the terrace is situated the reservoir of the town, the water being*~~

~~*brought from a distance of 5 or 6 miles by an aqueduct of two tiers of arches, about 70 feet in height. In the centre of the square is an equestrian statue of Louis XIV. To the right and left are promenades, on which the chief boulevards converge. The Boulevard Henri IV. to the north leads to the botanical garden, medical college, and cathedral; to the east the Rue Nationale leads to the palace of justice, the préfecture, and the citadel. The cathe- dral, which until 1536 was the church of a Benedictine monastery, suffered severely during the religious wars, but about thirty years ago it was restored in the style of the 13th century. It has four towers, and is one of the largest churches in southern France, being more than 300 feet in length, 92 in breadth, and 88 in height. The monastery, after being converted into the bishop's palace, has since 1795 being occupied by the famous medical school. The portrait of Rabelais hangs in the gallery of former professors. Connected with the medical school is an anatomical museum and a rich library. Montpellier also possesses a faculty of science, with several fine collections, a faculty of letters, a higher school of pharmacy, an agricultural college, and a sericultural institute. The museum contains more than 600 paintings, in addition to collections of marbles, bronzes, and antiquities. The botanical garden, more than 10 acres in extent, is the oldest in France, having been laid out in 1593. The esplanade, ornamented by fine old trees planted by the duc de Roquelaure, formerly governor of Languedoc, leads towards the citadel. The inner city has narrow and tortuous streets, but many good houses. Among the public buildings, the principal are the palace of justice —a modern structure, the facade adorned with statues of the statesman Cambacérés and of Cardinal Fleury—the barracks, several hospitals, the juvenile seminary, and the central prison for females. There are several learned societies, including an academy of science and letters, an*~~

~~*antiquarian society, several medical societies, and others for various separate branches of study, including the dialect of Languedoc. The Lez has been deepened and widened so as to connect Montpellier with the Canal du Midi and with the sea at Palavas. The town has a considerable trade in wine and brandy. The principal industrial establishment is a manufactory for wax-tapers, candles, and soap, doing business to the amount of £400,000 per annum. There are also chemical works, cooperages, distilleries, &c. The population in 1881 was 56,005. Montpellier first rose into importance after the destruction of Maguelone by Charles Martel in 737. Its prosperity dates from the beginning of the 12th century, when its school of medicine (see vol. xv. p. 807) first began to acquire fame. It had a school of law in 1160, and a university was founded by Pope Nicholas IV. in 1292. St Louis (Louis IX.) granted to the town the right of free trade with the whole of the kingdom, a privilege which greatly increased its prosperity. In 1204 Montpellier became a dependency of the house of Aragon, through marriage, and in 1350 it was sold to Philip of Valois. In the time of Charles VIII. it is said to have had 35,000 hearths. It took the place of the bishopric of Mague- lone in 1536. At the time of the Reformation it became one of the most important centres of Protestantism, but was taken by Louis XIII., who erected the citadel commanding the town. Several years afterwards Montpellier was partly depopulated by the plague. Of the old fortifications little now remains save the gate of Peyrou, a triumphal arch of date 1712, opposite the place*~~

~~*of the same name.*~~

~~*See Germain, Histoire du commerce de Montpellier antéricurement & Touverture du port de Cette (2 vols., 1861), and Histoire de la commune de Montpellier (3 vols., 1851); Aigrefeuille, Histoire de la ville de Montpellier (1877).*~~

~~*MONTPENSIER, ANNE Marie LovisE D'ORLEANS, DUCHESSE DE (1627-1693), one of the most remarkable names on the somewhat arbitrary list of royal and noble authors, was born at the Louvre on 29th May 1627. Her father was Gaston of Orleans, " Monsieur," the brother of Louis XIII., celebrated for the invariable ill fate which attended his*~~

~~*favourites and partisans. Her mother was Marie de Bourbon, heiress of the Montpensier family. Being*~~

~~*MON—MON*~~

~~*thus of the blood-royal of France on both sides, and an heiress to immense property, she appeared to be very early destined toa splendid marriage. It was perhaps the greatest misfortune of her life that "Mademoiselle" (as her courtesy title went) was encouraged or thought herself encouraged to look forward to the throne of France as the result of a marriage with Louis XIV., who was, however, eleven years her junior. Ill-luck, or her own wilfulness, frustrated numerous plans for marrying her to various persons of more or less exalted station, including Charles IJ. of England, then Prince of Wales. She was just of age when the Fronde broke out, and, attributing as she did her disappointments to Mazarin, she sympathized with it not a little. It was not, however, till the new or second Fronde that she dis- played in a very curious fashion a temper and courage as masculine and adventurous as those of her father Gaston had always been effeminate and timid. She not only took nominal command of one of the armies on the princes' side, but she literally and in her own person took Orleans by escalade, crossing the river, breaking a gate, and mount- ing the walls with the applause of the populace of the city, but in face of the refusal of the authorities to admit her. No good result, however, came to her party from this extraordinary act, and she had to retreat to Paris, where she practically commanded the Bastille and the adjoining part of the walls. On the 2d of July (1652) the battle of the Faubourg Saint Antoine, between the Frondeurs under Condé and the royal troops under Turenne, took place, and the former, being beaten, found themselves in an awkward situation, between their conquerors and the walls of a city, which, though not exactly hostile to them, was not nominally on their side, and had closed its gates against them. Mademoiselle saved them by giving orders not merely for the gates under her control to be opened but for the cannon of the Bastille to fire on the royalists, which was done. Her own residence (and indeed her pro- perty) was the Luxembourg, and here she found herself during the riots which followed the battle; but in the heat of the émeute she installed herself in the hétel de ville, and played the part of mediatrix between the opposed*~~

~~*parties. Her political importance lasted exactly six months, and did her little good, for it created a lifelong prejudice against her in the mind of her cousin, Louis XIV., who never forgave opposition to his sovereign power. Nor had she any support to look for from her pusillanimous father, who hastened to make terms for himself,—a matter the less difficult that his known faithlessness had pre- vented the chiefs of the Fronde from engaging him at all deeply in their schemes. Mademoiselle, on the other hand, was for some years in disgrace, and resided on her estates. It was not till, 1657 that she reappeared at court, but, though projects for marrying her were once more set on foot, she was now past her first youth. Her incurable self-will, moreover, still stood in her way, and suitor after suitor was rejected for reasons good or bad. She was nearly forty, and had already corresponded seriously with Madame de Motteville on the project of establishing a ladies' society "sans mariage et sans amour," when a young Gascon gentleman named Puyguilhem, afterwards celebrated as M. de Lauzun, attracted her atten- tion. It was some years before the affair came to a crisis, but at last, in 1670, Mademoiselle solemnly demanded the king's permission to marry Lauzun. Madame de Sévigné's letter on this occasion is one of the most famous of her collection. Louis, who liked Lauzun, and who had been educated by Mazarin in the idea that Mademoiselle ought not to be allowed to carry her vast estates and royal blood to any one who was himself of the blood-royal, or even to any foreign prince, gave his consent, but it was not imme- diately acted on. The pride of the other members of the*~~

~~*royal family, and the spite of the king's brother, Monsieur, who had, after the death of Henrietta of England, made offers to his cousin, prevailed with Louis to rescind his permission. Not long afterwards Lauzun, for another cause, was imprisoned in Pignerol, and it was years before Mademoiselle was able to buy his release from the king by settling no small portion of her estates on Louis's bastards. The elderly lovers (for in 1681, when Lauzun was released, he was nearly fifty, and Mademoiselle was fifty-four) were then secretly married, if indeed they had not gone througli the ceremony ten years previously. But Lauzun, a coarse and*~~

~~*brutal adventurer, tyrannized over his wife, and her spirit, which was yet unbroken, at length got the better of her passion. It is said that on one occasion he addressed her thus, " Louise d'Orléans, tire-moi mes bottes," and that she at once and finally separated from him, She lived, how- ever, for some years after he had achieved his last adven- ture (that of assisting the family of James II. to escape from England, and attempting to defend their cause in Ireland), gave herself to religious duties, and finished her Jlémotres, which extend to within seven years of her death (9th April 1693), and which she had begun when she was in disgrace thirty years earlier. These Mémoires (Amster- dam, 1729) are of very considerable merit and interest, though, or perhaps because, they are extremely egotistical and often extremely desultory. Mademoiselle writes with- out art, but with the hereditary ability of her family, and the strongly personal view which she takes of public events is rather an advantage than a disadvantage. They are to be found in the great collection of Michaud and Poujoulat, and have been frequently edited apart. (G, SA.) MONTREAL, the largest city in the Dominion of Canada, its chief seat of commerce and principal port of entry, is situated on an island of about 30 miles in length and 7 in breadth, at the confluence of the rivers Ottawa and St Lawrence, 45° 32' N, lat. and 73° 32' W. long. It stands at the head of ocean navigation, 160 miles above Quebec, and nearly 1000 miles (986) from the Atlantic Ocean, and lies at the foot of the great chain of river, lake, and canal navigation which extends westward through the great lakes. Montreal is built upon a series of terraces, the former levels of the river or of a more ancient sea. Behind those rises Mount Royal, a mass of trap-rock thrown up through the surrounding limestone strata to a height of 700 feet above the level of the river. From this rock the city derives its name, though its original founder, Paul de Chomedey, sire de Maisonneuve, in 1642, gave it the name of Ville-Marie, when it was dedicated with religious enthu- siasm, not as a centre of commercial enterprise, but as the seat of a mission which aimed specially at the conversion of the native Indians. The modern city of Montreal occupies an area of about eight square miles,—its principal streets running parallel with the river. On the north side of the Mountain the Trenton limestone approaches the surface, and is there quarried for building purposes. Of this grey limestone most of the public edifices and many of the better class of private dwellings are built. But both brick and wood are*~~

~~*largely used for workshops and private houses of a humbler class. The western slope of the Mountain is occupied by the Céte des Neiges (Roman Catholic) ceme- tery, and the Mount Royal (Protestant) cemetery. The upper portion of the Mountain, embracing an area of 430 acres, is now laid out as a public park, with fine drives shaded by well-grown trees. From its commanding site, and the wide expanse of the valley of the St Lawrence, the views on all sides are of great variety and beauty. A well-cultivated and wooded country, watered by the Ottawa and the St Lawrence, stretches away on either hand, being bounded on the west by the lakes of St Louis and the Two Mountains, and on the distant horizon by XVI.—100*~~

~~*794 MONT*~~

~~*the Laurentian Hills, the Adirondacks, and the Green Mountains of Vermont. On the east side the city occupies the slope towards the river St Lawrence, which has here a breadth of from one to two miles. Two islands, the Nun's and St Helen's Isles—the latter rising to a height of 150 feet, beautifully wooded, and laid out as a public park—occupy the bed of the river immediately below the Lachine Falls, and between them the river is spanned This wonderful triumph*~~

~~*AS*~~

~~*Plan of Montreal.*~~

~~*6. Notre Dame.*~~

~~*7. Champ de Mars.*~~

~~*8. Court House.*~~

~~*9. City Hall. 10. Bonsecours Market.*~~

~~*. M'Gill College.*~~

~~*. Christchurch Cathedral (Episcop.) . Church of the Gesu.*~~

~~*. St Peter's Cathedral.*~~

~~. Railway Station.~~

~~om ooh ee~~

~~piers are constructed with a view to resist the enormous pressure of the ice in spring. Near at hand the towers, spires, and domes of numerous churches and public build- ings rise from the general mass of houses, The wharves and docks are crowded with shipping during the season of navigation, for the St Lawrence is navigable to Montreal by the largest ocean steamers. But immediately above the city the river is impeded by a natural dyke of trap and limestone which here arrests the waters in their descent, forming the Lake St Louis at a height of 44 feet above the level of Montreal harbour. The river here forces its way through a channel of about half a mile wide, with a rapidity of about 18 miles an hour, forming the Lachine or St Louis Rapids. Owing to the immense volume of water concentrated in a narrow channel, steamers drawing ten feet of water are safely navigated down the rapids, but these necessarily present an insuperable barrier to the ascent of the river. This is accordingly surmounted by means of the Lachine Canal, which, commencing at the port of Montreal, passes round the falls by a series of locks, in a course of nine miles, to Lake St Louis, opposite the Indian village of Caughnawaga. The fall of water~~

~~REAL~~

~~in the canal furnishes water-power for saw-mills, boiler and engine works, sash, blind, door, edge-tool, and other factories, established on its banks. Sugar-refining has also been carried on here with great profit. Woollen and cotton mills, silk factories, a large rubber factory, rope and cordage works, boot and shoe factories, &c., are likewise organized on an extensive scale. The water supply of Montreal is derived from the river above the city; and, after passing along an open canal 5 miles in length, it is raised to a reservoir excavated out of the solid rock on the east slope of the Mountain, 205 feet above the level of the harbour.~~

~~The circumstances attendant on the foundation of Montreal, and the marked contrasts in its mixed population of French and English, give a peculiar character to its religions and benevolent institutions. This has led~~

~~*to the multiplication of churches, colleges, convents, and religious and charitable foundations, and to a rivalry in the zeal of their promoters, one result of which is seen in the scale and imposing character of many of their buildings. The Metropolitan Cathedral of St Peter, designed to reproduce on a reduced scale the chief features of St Peter's at Rome, was projected by Bishop Bourget after the destruction of his church mt 2 palace in the great fire of 1852. It occupies a prominent site in Dorchester Street, at the corner of Dominion Square ; and, when surmounted by the projected dome and finished in front with its classic fagade, it will form a striking feature in the general view of the city. The parish church of Notre-Dame, on the Place d'Armes, affords accommodation for 10,000 worshippers. The Jesuits' Church is another large church, elaborately painted in the interior. Near it is the College of St Mary. Christchurch Cathedral (Protestant) is a fine specimen of Decorated Gothic, built externally of the native limestone, but with the chief facings and carvings of the exterior and the whole of the interior of fine Caen stone. It was erected under the direction of Bishop Fulford, the first Anglican bishop of Montreal, to whose memory a memorial cross, after the mode! of the Queen Eleanor crosses, has been erected on the south side of the cathedral. The other churches of the various Protest- ant denominations include St George's, Anglican, St Andrew's and St Paul's (Presbyterian), St James Street Methodist Church, the Church of the Messiah, Unitarian, &c.*~~

~~*The Hétel Dien, founded in 1644 for the cure of the sick, now occupies a bnilding at the head of St Famille Street. A body of professed sisters and novices perform the duties of nursing and attendance, and upwards of 3000 sick persons are annually received into its wards. The order of the Grey Nuns, founded in 1737, have built a new hospital in Guy Street. The professed sisters of this religious community, numbering at present 310, receive under their care the aged and infirm and orphan and foundling children of the French Canadian population, They also undertake the care of varions asylums and schools in different parts of the city. Mont- real has also a General Hospital, founded in 1822; a Protestant House of Industry, the Mackay Institution for Deaf-Mutes, the Protestant Orphan Asylum, Infants' Home, &c. The curiously mixed character of the Pg aercenye of Montreal is further shown in its separate daily and weekly*~~

newspapers in the English and French langnages, and in its various national societies, of St George, St Andrew, St Patrick, St Jean Baptiste, and New England, — each confining its charitable operations to those of the nationality which it represents. There are two theatres in Montreal, but the Roman Catholic clergy have systematically discountenanced the stage, and the diverse languages have further tended to limit the nnmbers who patronize the {sae

Among the chief civic buildings is the city hall, built in the modern French style, with lofty mansard roofs, and a central pavilion. It affords accommodation for all the municipal offices, including the waterworks and fire alarm departments, the recorder's court, the police office, and for the meetings of the city corpora- tion, which consists of a mayor and twenty-seven aldermen. Three aldermen are elected by each of the nine wards, one of whom retires every year. The court house, situated close to the city hall, between the Champ de Mars and Jacques Cartier Square, is a hand- some classical building where all the law courts hold their sittings ; and accommodation is provided for the Advocates' Library, which numbers upwards of 10,000 vohimes, including a fine collection of books in the department of old French civil law. Bonsecours Market in St Panl Street is a large structure surmounted by a dome, which forms a prominent feature in every view of the city. When it is crowded with the peasants bringing in their country produce, and by the French Canadian city populace as purchasers, as is the case especially on Tnesdays and Fridays, the scene is very striking to a stranger.

Foremost among the educational institutions is the university of M'Gill College, fonnded by James M'Gill, a Scotchman, who in the later years of the 18th century engaged in the north-west fur trade,

MON—MON

and ultimately became one of the leading merchants iu Montreal. At his death In 1813 he left his property tor the founding of a col- lege. The most recent and liberal addition to it is the Peter Red- path Museum, valucd at upwards of $100,000, the gift of a wealthy citizen. The university embraces the faculties of arts, law, and medicine, and has also a department of practical science. The college buildings stand in a

~~*pleasant park fronting on Sherbrooke Street, at the base of the Mountain. Theological colleges in con- uection with the Church of England, the Presbyterian, Methodist, and Congregational Churches, occupy buildings in the vicinity, and their students attend the classes at M'Gill College for secular instruc- tion. The Seminary of St Sulpice is a theological training school for priests, where the larger portion of the Roman Catholic clergy of the province of Quebec have received their training, and also a college where a large number of the French Canadian youth obtain their education. This seminary is held in high esteem, and attracts inany Roman Catholic students from the United States. Laval University, which has its chief seat at Quebec, has also a branch at Montreal, with a large staff of professors, chiefly in theology, law, and medicine. The M'Gill and the Jacques Cartier Normal Schools for training teachers for the Protestant and Roman Catholic public schools are couducted under the Protestant and Roman Catholic boards of public instruction ; and model schools attached to them afford the requisite practical training for teachers. The principal public monuments are the column erected in honour of Lord Nelson, and a bronze statue of Queen Victoria, by the late Marshall Wood, which occupies a good site in Victoria Square.*~~

~~*The commerce of Montreal is well represented by the architec- tural character of its banking establishments and many of the large mercantile houses. It is also the seat of a large manufacturing industry. But the most substantial evidence of its importance as a commercial centre is its harbour. The solidly-built basins, wharves, quays, and canal locks extend for upwards of a mile and a half along the river-side. In 1849, at a period of depression, the total value of the imports and exports amounted to £2,013,478 sterling. In 1882 they had risen to £15,633,657 sterling, The business of the port at the saine date is thus expressed in Canadian culrency:—total value of exports $26, 334, 312, of imports$49, 749,461; customs duties collected estimated at $8,100,366. The number of sea-going vessels in port was 648, of which fully one-half were ocean steamers, in addition to which the inland vessels arriving at the port nuinbered 6543. The estimated value of real estate in Montreal 1s $65,978,930. The population in 1851 numbered 57,715; in 1881 it had increased to 140,747, of whom 78,684 were of French and 28,995 of Irish origin, and of the whole number, 103,579 were Roman Catholic.*~~

~~*The city returns three members to the Canadian HOuse of a and the same number to the provincial legislature of*~~

~~*uehec.*~~

~~*When the first French explorers landcd on the island of Montreal under the leadership of Jacques Cartier in 1535, a large Indian palisaded town existed a little to the west of Mount Royal, and not far from the present English cathedral. To this fortified town the Indians gave the name of Hochelaga, and Jacques Cartier describes it as surrounded by fields of grain and other evidences of a settled native population. The name is now applied to the eastern suburb of the modern city. Sixty years later, when Samuel de Champlain made his way up the St Lawrence, and climbed to the summit of Mount Royal, the populous native town had disappeared, and only two Indians were found from whom some obscure hints were derived of war between rival tribes, followed by the destruction of the town and the extermination or flight ofitsformer occupants. The enmity thus established between the Wyandotts or HIurons of Canada and the Iroquois sctttled in the valley of the HIudson and south of Lake Ontario was perpetuated throughout the whole period of French occupation. Champlain took the side of the HIurons, while the Troquois allied themselves with the Dutch and English settlers on the HIudson. Thus the early history of Montreal is largely occupied with incidents of Indian warfare. In 1665 the marquis de Tracy arrived from France, bringing with him a regiment of French soldiers, with whose aid the Indian assailants were driven off, and forts erected and garrisoned to repel their incursions; thus pro- tected, Montreal became the centre of the fur trade with the west, and entered on its history as a commercial city. In 1722 it was fortified with a bastioned wall and ditch, under the directions of De Lery ; and the citadel was erected on a height now laid out as Dalhousie Square. The taking of Quebec by the English under General Wolfe in 1759 was followed ere long by the surrender of Montreal. Since that date it has rapidly developed as an impor- tant centre of commercial and manufacturing enterprise. (D. W.)*~~

~~*MONTROSE, a royal and parliamentary borough and seaport of Forfarshire, Scotland, is situated on the German Ocean at the mouth of*~~

~~*the South Esk, on a branch of the Caledonian Railway, 30 miles east-north-east of Dundee, and 38 south-south-west of Aberdeen. Its harbour basin,*~~

~~*795*~~

~~*formed by the estuary of the South Esk, has an area of about 4 square miles, and is dry at ebb-tide, but at high water there is a depth of about 18 feet at the bar. The length of the quays and docks is about 14 miles. The South Esk is crossed by a suspension bridge erected in 1829 at a cost of £20,000, and having a length from the*~~

~~*| points of suspension of 422 feet (with its approaches 800*~~

~~*feet). On the links to the east of the town is one of the finest golfing greens in Scotland. In the High Street, which is of considerable width, and contains several very lofty houses, there are monuments to Sir Robert Peel and to Joseph Hume, formerly member for the Montrose boroughs. The principal buildings are the parish church—one of the largest churches in Scotland—the town-house, the infirmary, and the academy. There is a public library with 19,000 volumes, and a mechanics' library with 7000 volumes. Besides the staple industry of flax-spinning, there are manufactures of linen, sail-cloth, sheetings, starch, and soap. Jron-founding, tanning, and brewing are also carried on. The export trade is chiefly in manufactured goods, agricultural produce, and fish; the principal imports are timber and coal. In 1881 the number of ships that entered coastwise was 373 of 48,828 tons, the number that cleared 250 of 21,877 tons; the number engaged in the foreign and colonial trade in the same year was—entered 108 of 34,868 tons, cleared 42 of 10,359 tons. Montrose is also one of the principal fishing-stations in Scotland, the number of registered boats in 1881 being 342 of 4168 tons, giving constant employment to 697 persons, and occa- sional employment to 300. Montrose joins with Arbroath, Brechin, Forfar, and Inverbervie in returning one member to parliament. The population of the royal burgh in 1871 was 15,720, and 16,280 in 1881; the population of the parliamentary burgh in the same years was 14,452 and*~~

~~*14,975.*~~

~~*Montrose received a charter fron: David I. in the 12th century, and was made a royal burgh by David II. in 1852. The town was destroyed by fire in 1244. It was from the port of Montrose that Sir James Douglas in 1330 embarked for the Holy Land with the heart of Bruce, and that Prince James Stuart, "the Old Pretender," set sail in 1716 for France, after the failure of his cause in Scotland. The town is the birthplace of Andrew Melville, of the great marquis of Montrose, and of Joseph Hunie.*~~

~~*MONTROSE, James GraHAM, Marquis or (1612- 1650), born in 1612, became the fifth earl of Montrose by his father's death in 1626. He was educated at St Andrews; and in 1629, at the early age of seventeen, he married Magdalene Carnegie, daughter of the earlof Southesk. In 1636, on his way home from a prolonged visit to the Conti- nent, he sought an introduction to Charles I., but, as it is said, was frustrated in his hope of obtaining the king's favour by an intrigue of the marquis of Hamilton. Not long after the outbreak of the Scottish troubles in 1637 he joined the party of resistance, and was for some time its most energetic champion. He had nothing puritanical in his nature, but he shared in the ill feeling aroused in the Scottish nobility by the political authority given by Charles to the bishops, and in the general indignation at the king's ill-judged scheme of imposing upon Scotland a liturgy which had been drawn up at the instigation of the English court, and which had been corrected in England by that Archbishop Laud who now became known in Scot- land under the nickname of "the pope of Canterbury." Montrose's chivalrous enthusiasm eminently qualified him to be the champion of a national cause, and the resistance of Scotland was quite as much national as it was religious. He signed the Covenant, and became one of the foremost Covenanters. The part assigned to him was the suppres- sion of the opposition to the popular cause which arose around Aberdeen and in the country of the Gordons. Three times, in July 1638, and in March and June 1639, Montrose*~~

~~*entered Aberdcen, where he thoroughly succeeded in cffect- ing his object, on the second occasion carrying off the head of the Gordons, the marquis of Huntly, as a prisoner to Edinburgh.*~~

~~*In July 1639, after the signature of the treaty of Berwick, Montrose was one of the Covenanting leaders who visited Charles upon the borders. This change of policy on his part is frequently ascribed to the fascination of the king's conversation. In reality it arose from the nature of his own convictions. He wished to get rid of the bishops without making presbyters masters of the state. His was essentially a layman's view of the situa- tion. Taking no account of the real forces of the time, he aimed at an ideal form of society in which the clergy should confine themselves to their spiritual duties, and in which the king, after being enlightened by open communi- cation with the Scottish nation, should maintain law and order without respect of persons. In the Scottish parliament which met in September, Montrose attempted to carry out this policy, and found himself in opposition to Argyll, who had placed himself at the head of the Presbyterian and national party, which, by an alteration of the rules that had hitherto regulated the selection of the Lords of the Articles, gave supremacy in parliament to the representa- tives of the middle classes. Montrose, on the other hand, wished to bring the king's authority to bear upon parlia- ment to defeat this object, and offered him the support of a great number of the nobles, who were by this time as much opposed to the predominance of the Presbyterian clergy acting upon the middle classes as they had before been opposed to the predominance of the bishops. He failed, because Charles could not even then consent to abandon the bishops, and because no Scottish party of any weight could be formed unless Presbyterianism were estab- lished ecclesiastically. 7 '*~~

~~*Rather than give way, Charles prepared in 1640 to in- vade Scotland. As usual, he prepared difficulties for those who wished to support him. Montrose was of necessity driven to play something of a double part. In August 1640 he signed the Bond of Cumbernauld as a protest against the particular and direct practising of a few—in other words, against the ambition of Argyll. But he took his place amongst the defenders of his country, and in the same month he was the first to wade across the Tweed at the head of the invaders of England. After the invasion had been crowned with success, Montrose still continued to cherish his now hopeless policy. On 27th May 1641 he was summoned before the Committee of Estates charged with intrigues against Argyll, and on 11th June he was imprisoned in Edinburgh Castle. When Charles visited*~~

~~*Scotland to give his formal assent to the abolition of Episcopacy, Montrose communicated to him his belief that Hamilton was a traitor. It has indeed been alleged, on Clarendon's authority, that he proposed to murder Hamilton and Argyll ; but this is in all probability only one of Claren- don's many blunders. His letters to Charles, however, must be taken in connexion with this so-called incident. During the progress of the investigation of this plot, Mon- trose remained in custody, and upon the king's return to England he shared in the amnesty which was tacitly accorded to all Charles's partisans.*~~

~~*For a time Montrose retired, not voluntarily, from public life. Aftcr the Civil War in England began he constantly pressed Charles to allow him to make a diversion on Scot- land. At last in 1644, when the Scottish army entered England to take part against the king, Montrose, now created a marquis, was allowed to try what le could do. He set out to invade Scotland with about 1000 men. But his followers deserted, and his condition appeared hopeless. Genius, however, inspired him with courage. Disguised*~~

~~*as a groom, he, with only two gentlemen, started on 18th August to make his way to the Highlands. No enterprise might seem rasher. Highlanders had never before been known to combine together, but Montrose knew that most of the clans detested Argyll, not because they were royalist but because Argyll, as the head of the Campbells, was the chief of an aggressive and unscrupulous tribe. Montrose did not miscalculate his chances. The clans rallied to his summons. About 2000 Irish had crossed the sea to assist him. He won battle after battle. He defeated the Cove- nanters at Tippermuir on Ist September, and at the Bridge of Dee on 12th September. Rapidity of movement was the distinguishing feature of his generalship. He crossed the mountains deep with a winter's snow into the country of Argyll, burning and destroying as he rested for a time from more active operations. On 2d February 1645 he crushed the Campbells at Inverlochy, whilst the head of the house, who was no warrior, looked on at the disaster from a boat. The Scottish parliament declared Montrose to have forfeited his life and estate as a traitor, but it could not reach him*~~

~~*to execute the sentence. On 19th February he captured Elgin, through March he was ravaging Aber- deenshire and Kincardineshire, on 3d April he stormed Dundee, then on 9th May came the victory of Auldearn, on 2d July the victory of Alford, and on 15th August the great victory of Kilsyth. Never till after this battle had Mon- trose ventured far from the Highland hills. The High- landers had the habit of running home after a victory to secure their booty. Now, however, Montrose found himself apparently master of Scotland. In the name of the king, who now appointed him lord-lieutenant and captain-general of Scotland, he summoned a parliament to meet at Glasgow on 20th October, in which he no doubt hoped to reconcile loyal obedience to the king with the establishment of a non-political Presbyterian clergy. That parliament never met. In England Charles was in evil case. He had been defeated at Naseby on 14th June, and Montrose must come to his help if there was to be still a king to proclaim. He never had a chance of knowing what Montrose could do against the "new model" army. David Leslie, the best of the Scottish generals, was despatched against Montrose to anticipate the invasion. On 12th September he came upon Montrose, deserted by his Highlanders and guarded only by a little group of followers, at Philiphaugh. He won an easy victory. Montrose cut his way through to the Highlands; but he failed to reorganize an army. On 3d September 1646 he embarked for Norway.*~~

~~*Moutrose was to appear once more on the stage of Scot- tish history. In June 1649 he was restored by the exiled Charles II. to his nominal lieutenant-governorship of Scot- land. In March 1650 he landed in the Orkneys to take the command of a small force which he had sent on before him. Crossing to the mainland, he tried to raise the clans, but the clans would not rise, and on 27th April he was surprised and captured at Corbiesdale in Ross-shire. On 18th May he entered Edinburgh as a prisoner. On the 20th he was sentenced to death by the parliament, and he was hanged on the 21st, with Wishart's laudatory biography of him put round his neck. To the last he protested that he was a real Covenanter and a loyal subject. 'The Cove- nant which I took," he said, "I own it and adhere to it. Bishops, I care not for them; I never intended to advance their interest." Something, at least, of Montrose's dream, so impossible to realize at that time, has been realized in Scotland. Scotland has remained*~~

ecclesiastically Presby- terian. The political legality which Montrose wished to uphold against factions by mcans of the king has been upheld by means of the political ripeness of the Scottish nation itself. (sma: ©)

MONT ST MICHEL, a curious rocky islet, consisting

of a mass of granite about 3000 feet in compass and 165 fect in height, rises at a distance of nearly a mile from the shore in the bay of St Michel, near the mouth of the Couésnon, at the vertex of the angle formed by the coasts of Brittany and Normandy. The quicksands by which it is surrounded, and which stretch far to scaward, are ex- posed at low water, and highly dangerous to those who venture on them without a guide. Recently efforts at reclamation have been made, and amongst other works a causeway has been constructed connecting Mont St Michel with the nearest point of the mainland (near Moidrey) ; an unfortunate consequence of these operations has been that some portions of the ramparts of the island have been sapped by the altered tidal currents. The fortress-abbey, to which the rock owes its fame, stands upon the more precipitous side towards the north and west; the sloping portion towards the east and south is occupied by dwelling- houses. The strong machicolated and turreted wall by which the whole is surrounded is pierced only by a single gateway. The northward wall of the abbey (La Merveille), dating from the 13th century, is of remarkable boldness ; it is 246 feet in length and 108 feet in height, is sup- ported by twenty buttresses, and is pierced by a variety of openings. The single street of the island, leading from the one gateway up to the donjon of the fortress, is lined with houses, most of them used as lodging-houses by visitors and pilgrims; it contains an old parish church, and the house of Du Guesclin is also pointed out. The abbey consists principally of two parallel buildings of three stories each, that on the cast containing hospitium, refectory, and dormitory, and that on the west the cellar, knights' hall, and cloister. The knights' hall is a superb piece of Gothic architecture, measuring 85 feet by 59, with three rows of richly-ornamented pillars. The cloister is one of the purest and most graceful works of the 13th century (1228). The church has a number of imperfect turrets, and is

surmounted by a square tower of the 17th century, with a statue of St Michael, which was crowned in 1877. The nave, which dates from the 11th century, is Norman ; but the choir, which collapsed in 1421, has been rebuilt in the flamboyant style. Beneath is a fine crypt.

Mont St Michel was a sacred place even in the time of the Druids. It became a seat of Christian worship in the 8th century, when a monastery was founded upon it (with the usual miraculous accom- paniments) by St Aubert, bishop of Avranches. It soon became a favourite resort of pilgrims, not only from all parts of France, but also from Great Britain and Ireland, and even from Italy. It was plundered by the Normans; but Rollo, on his conversion, made restitution. At the time of the Conquest it supplied William of Normandy with six ships, and received a considerable share of the English spoils. Abont this time the monks began to give them- selves to learning and to collect a large library, and in the 12th century the establishment reached its highest prosperity. It was burnt by the troops of Philip Augustus, who afterwards furnished large sums for its restoration (La Mervecille). St Louis (Louis IX.) made a pilgrimage to Mont St Micliel, and was afterwards very liberal to it. During the hundred years' war it offered a memorable resist- ance to the English; and herc, on Ist August 1469, Louis XI. instituted the order of St Michel, and held a brilliant chapter. A similar celebration was held by Francis I. During the religious wars the Huguenots madc repeated unsuccessful attempts to seize the fortress ; it opened its gates to Henry IV. after his abjuration. About 1615 the Benedictine monks of Mont St Michel were re- placed by monks of the Congregation of St Maur ; after the Revolu- tion the abbey was used as a prison for political offenders. It is now an historical monument; it contains an orphanage, and is under- going repalrs.

MONTSERRAT, one of the Leeward Islands in the West Indies, situated 16° 45' N. lat. and 62° 7' W. long., is 12 miles long and 8 broad in its widest part, and has an area of 32 square miles. The uneven and rugged surface suggests possibly volcanic origin. Its general appearance is very picturesque, the most interesting natural feature being the Souffriére. The island was discovered by Columbus in 1493, and received its name either because

~~ray |~~

~~of its broken appearance or after the mountain in Spain. It was colonized by the English under Sir Thomas Warner in 1632, and was taken by the French in 1664, Restored to the English in 1668, it capitulated to the French in 1782, but was again restored in 1784. It is now a pre- sidency under the general government at Antigua, and has a legislative council, composed of officials and crown nomi- nees. The climate is the most healthy in the West Indies. The population (10,087) consists principally of negroes, with several hundred whites. The revenue and expendi- ture average £5600 per annum. Sugar exports range from 1200 to occasionally 2000 tons. An important industry is the cultivation of limes and the manufacture of juice. About 700 puncheons of raw lime juice, 300 hogsheads of concentrated juice, and an increasing quantity of fresh green limes are exported annually. For the three years ending 1880 the average value of imports was £26,390, of exports £32,963. The principal town is Plymouth, lying midway along the south-west coast.~~

~~MONTSERRAT. Thirty miles to the north-west of Barcelona in Spain there rises a very remarkable mountain of grey conglomerate, 24 miles in circumference, and at its loftiest point (San Geronimo) a little more than 4000 feet in height. From the comparative lowness of the surround- ing district, and from its extraordinary configuration, it is a conspicuous object for many miles around. The mountain consists of jagged pinnacles and spires rising abruptly from the base of the mass, which is cloven with many clefts, and abounds with steep precipices. It is the Mons Serratus of the Romans, the Jfonte Serrado of the Spaniards, and is thus named either in allusion to its jagged appearance, like the teeth of a saw, or because the eastern face is split, as if sawn,—which occurred, say the Spanish legends, at the time of the crucifixion, when the rocks were rent. The arms of the monastery represent a mountain with a saw resting upon it and penetrating some distance into its mass. Its pinnacles and pyramids and sharp angular masses resemnble a mountain of hard crystalline volcanic tuff which occurs between Akureyri and Kalmanstunga in Iceland. The effect of Montserrat may be realized faintly if we place ourselves upon the roof of Milan cathedral, and imagine the forest of spires magnified a thousandfold. The central spire will represent San~~

~~*Geronimo. The result of this varied contour in the case of Montserrat is to make it one of the most picturesque places in Europe. Paths wind along the faces of the precipices, ascending to bare grey summits, descending to sheltered valleys filled with evergreens and flowers. The Pyrenees are seen in one direction, the sea in another, while the Llobregat winds at the foot of the mountain through the village of Monistrol. Manresa and other villages are seen scattered over the plain; and hills covered with a warm red soil alternate with rich valleys. Street says of Montserrat, 'After much experience of mountains, it strikes me more each time that I see it as among' the very noblest of rocks."*~~

~~*The monastery, a great pile of buildings, stands upon a narrow platform on the edge of a vast chasm in the eastern face of the mountain. It owes its existence to an image of the Virgin, said to have been carved by St Luke, and brought to Barcelona by St Peter in 30 a.p. When the Moors invaded the province in 717, the image was taken to Montserrat and hidden ina cave. In 880 Gondemar, bishop of Vich, was attracted to the cave by sweet sounds and smells, and there found the image, which he determined to take to Manresa. But ata certain spot on the mountain the image refused to proceed farther; there it was conse- quently deposited, and a chapel was erected to contain it. A stone cross near the walls of the monastery still marks the spot where the image refused to move. Round the chapel a nunnery was built, and in 976 this was enlarged*~~

~~*and converted into a Benedictine monastery. Philip II. built the present church. In 1835 the monastery was suppressed and despoiled of the vast treasures which had accumulated during the Middle Ages. But the buildings were allowed to remain, as well as a few of the fathers to take charge of the Virgin's shrine. At present they number 19; a hundred years ago there were 76 monks, 28 lay- brothers, 25 singing boys, together with surgeon, physician, and servants. The possessions then consisted of numerous hamlets, besides great quantities of plate and jewels, includ- ing 85 silver lamps.*~~

~~*Nuestra Setiora de Montserrat, Patrona de Catalufia, is one of the most celebrated images in Spain, and her church is visited annually by more*~~

~~than 80,000 pilgrims. It is a small carved wooden itnage, 'yegularly handsome, but the colour of a negro woman," and pos- sesses magnificent robes and jewels. It has been visited by numbers of sovereigns and high ecclesiastics, and by millions of Catalonians. In September 1881 it was solemnly crowned by Leo XIIL., who sent a crown from Rome for that purpose. Quantities of ex votos are offered at the shrine: wax models of injured or diseased limbs, models of ships, pictures and clothes, jewels and silver hearts. As the celebrity and sanctity of Montscrrat increased, so did the number of devotees. Ignatius Loyola laid his sword upon the altar of the Virgin, and, placing himself undcr her protection, started from Montserrat to comineuce his new life. Many eminent Spaniards, weary of the world, have retired to this monastery to end their days. Some preferred solitary hermitages perched among the rocks. Of these there were fiftcen, eleven of which once formed a via sacra, ending at the summit of San Geronimo. They were destroyed by the French, but the ruins of some of them still remain. From all the view is magnificent; some are indced placed on the edges of preci- pices in almost inaccessible places. There are also caves in the moun- tain, some of which were formerly occupied by monks. The most celebrated of these are the cave of the Virgin, in which the Santa Imagen remained hidden until found by Gondemar, and the cave of Fray Juan Garin, a notorious sinner, who ended his days in the practice of revolting penances at Montserrat. At Collbato, on the south-east side of the mountain, near the base, there are also some very curious caves.~~

~~MONTUCLA, Jean-Errenne (1725-1799), a learned mathematician, was the son of a merchant, and was born at Lyons in 1725. IIe attended the college of the Jesuits in his native city, and was early distinguished for his tenacious memory and his aptitude for mathematics. At the age of sixteen he removed to Toulouse to prosecute the study of law; and after taking the usual degrees he re- paired to Paris. There his conversational powers, his solid information, and his acquirements as a linguist soon intro- duced him to the notice of the learned. In the society of D'Alembert and Lalande his taste for mathematical studies was confirmed and stimulated. After publishing two anony- mous treatises on the Quadrature of the Circle and on the Duplication of the Cube, he gave to the world in 1758 the first part of his great work, The IIistory of Mathematics. Not long after this his~~

~~*merits were recognized by the Government, and he was promoted to several important _ Offices. HHe was appointed intendant-secretary at Grenoble in 1758, secretary to the expedition for colonizing Cayenne in 1764, and " premier commis des batiments " and censor- royal for mathematical books in 1765. During the next twenty-five years his time was divided between his official duties and the study of his favourite science. The Revolu- tion then ensuing deprived him of his income, and left him in great destitution. The offer in 1795 of a mathematical chair in one of the schools of Paris was declined on account of his infirm health, and he was still in straitened circum- stances in 1798 when he published a second edition of the first part of his Zistory. HHe also enlarged Ozanam's Mathematical Recreations, afterwards published in English by Dr HHutton (4 vols., Lond., 1803). About four months before his death (December 1799) a pension of 2400 francs was conferred upon him. HHis LHistory of Mathematics was completed by Lalande, and published at Paris in 1799-1802 (4 vols. 4to).*~~

~~*Montucla's work was the first history of mathematics worthy of the*~~

~~*name. It is characterized alike by elegance of style and by breadth oftreatment. Montucla rarely fails in candour, and never in breadth of sympathy ; he lived at a time when it would have been pardon- able to treat mathematics "as a French science," yet he cannot with justice be accused of Chauvinism. The study of the history of mathematics has greatly revived of late years, especially in Germany, and numerous monograplis on special departments have appeared, in which, as was to be expected, many defects and some positive errors in Montucla's work have been pointed out, but, taken as a whole, it stands as yet unsuperseded, unrivalled, fit, as to itsadmirable style and endwiing quality, to be compared with Gibbon's Deeline and Fall of the Roman Empire.*~~

~~*MONZA (locally Monscia), a city of Italy in the pro- vince of Milan, at the branching of the railway for Lecco and Como, lies on the Lambro, a tributary of the Po, mainly on the right bank, in a healthy and attractive situation. Of the medieval fortifications little remains save the Porta d'Agrate. The cathedral of St John Baptist is the principal object of interest : Theodelinda's basilica was enlarged at the close of the 13th century by throwing the atrium into the main building, and the present marble facade was erected about the middle of the 14th by Matteo da Campione. On the left-hand side of the front rises an incongruous brick-built tower, 278 feet high, erected by Peregrini. Within the church are the iron crown of Lombardy (removed by Austria in 1859, and since restored) and the relics of Theodelinda, comprising her crown, fan and comb of gold, and the golden hen and seven chickens, representing Lombardy and her seven provinces. Next to the cathedral in artistic importance come the church of Santa Maria in Istrada, and the broletto or old palace of the commune, usually styled the Arengario: the former (founded in 1357) has a rich Bramantesque facade, reckoned one of the best pieces of terra-cotta work in Lombardy, and the latter is raised on a system of pointed arches, and has a tall square tower terminating in machicolations surrounding a sharp central cone. San Michele was the scene of the coronation of Conrad III. in 1128, and San Gerardo (formerly Sant' Ambrogio) is named after the patron saint of Monza, Gerardo de' Tintori, who founded the first local hospital in 1174. The royal palace of Monza*~~

~~(1777), with its exten- sive gardens and parks, lies not far from the town on the banks of the Lambro. Cotton goods and felt hats are the staple products of Monza industry ; then dyeing, organ- building, and a publishing trade. The population of the city was 15,450 in 1871, and that of the commune increased from 24,661 in 1861 to 28,012 in 1881.~~

~~Local antiquaries claim for Monza (Modicia or Modetia) the rank of a Roman colony, but it cannot have been a place of consequence till it attracted the discerning eye of Theodoric ; and, though it was a favourite residence with his immediate successors, its first im- portant associations are with Thcodelinda (see vol. xiv. p. 815). During the period of the republics Monza was sometimes inde- pendent, sometimes subject to Milan. The Visconti, who ulti- mately became masters of the city, built a castle in 1325 on the site now occupied by the Palazzo Durini. In the course of its history Monza has stood thirty-two sieges, and been repeatedly plun- dered, notably by the forces of Charles V. The countship (1499- 1796) was purchased in 1546 by the wealthy banker Durini, and remained in his family till the Revolution.~~

~~MOOLTAN. See Murray.~~

~~MOON, Tue. The subject of the moon divides itself into two separate branches, the one concerned with the con- stitution of the lunar globe, the other with its motions. For the first subject the reader is referred to the article Astronomy (vol. ii. p. 801 sq.) ; the present article is con- fined to the second, which is commonly called the Lunar Theory.~~

~~The lunar theory does not yet form a well-defined body of reasoning and doctrine, like other branches of mathematical science, but consists only of a series of researches, extending through twenty centuries or more, and incapable of being welded into a consistent whole.~~

~~nO 0 WN~~

~~This state of things arises from the inherent difficulties and complexities of the subject, and from the fact that no one method or system has yet been discovered by which all the difficulties can be surmounted and all the com- plexities disentangled. HIence each investigator, when he has~~

~~*desired to make any substantial advance beyond his predecessors, has been obliged to take up the subject from a new point of view, and to devise such method as might seem to him most suitable to the special object in hand. The historical treatment is therefore that best adapted to give a clear idea of the results of these investigations. The ancient and modern histories of the subject are quite distinct, the modern epoch commencing with Newton. The great epoch made by Copernicus did not extend to the case of the moon at all, because in every investigation of the moon's motion, modern as well as ancient, the motion is referred to the earth as a centre. Hence the heliocentric system introduced no new conception of this motion, except that of taking place round a moving earth instead of round a fixed one. This change did not affect the consideration of the relative motion of the earth and moon, with which alone the lunar theory is concerned. The two stages of the lunar theory are therefore—(1) that in which the treat- ment was purely empirical, (2) that in which it was founded rationally on the law of gravitation.*~~

~~*It is in the investigation of the moon's motion that the merits of ancient astronomy are seen to the best advan- tage. In the hands of Hipparchus (see Astronomy, vol. ii. p. 749) the theory was brought to a degree of precision which is really marvellous when we compare it, either with other branches of physical science in that age, or with the remarks and speculations of contemporary non- scientific writers. Whether this was wholly the work of Hipparchus, or whether he simply perfected a system already devised by his predecessors, it is now impossible to say ; but, so far as certain knowledge extends, the works of his predecessors did not embrace more than the deter- mination of the mean motion of the moon and its nodes. Although the general fact of a varying motion may have been ascertained, the circumstances of the variation had probably never been thoroughly investigated. The dis- coveries of Hipparchus were :—*~~

~~*1. The Eccentricity of the Moon's Orbit.—He found that the moon moved most rapidly near a certain point of its orbit, and most slowly near the opposite point. The law of this motion was such that the phenomena could be re- presented by supposing the motion to be actually circular and uniform, the apparent variations being explained by the hypothesis that the earth was not situated in the centre of the orbit, but was displaced*~~

~~*byan amount about equal to one- twentieth of the radius of the orbit. Then, bya well-known law of kinematics, the angular motion round the earth would be most rapid at the point nearest the earth—that is, at perigee—and slowest at the point most distant from the earth—that is, at apogee. Thus the apogee and perigee became two definite points of the orbit, indicated by the variations in the angular motion of the moon.*~~

~~*2. The Motion of the Perigee and Apogee.—As already defined, the perigee and apogee are at the ends of that diameter of the orbit which passes through the eccentrically situated earth, or, in other words, they are on that line which passes through the centre of the earth and the centre of the orbit. This line was called the line of apsides. On comparing observations made at different times, it was found that the line of apsides was not fixed, but made a complete revolution in the heavens, in the order of the signs of the zodiac, in about nine years.*~~

~~*3. The Numerical Determination of the Elements of the Moon's Motion.—In order that the two capital discoveries just mentioned should have the highest scientific value it*~~

~~*ioe*~~

~~*was essential that the numerical values of the elements involved in these complicated motions should be fixed with precision, This Hipparchus was enabled to do by lunar eclipses. Each eclipse gave a moment at which the longi- tude of the moon was 180° different from that of the sun, and the latter admitted of ready calculation. Assuming the mean motion of the moon to be known and the perigee to be fixed, three eclipses observed in different points of the orbit would give as many true longitudes of the moon, which longitudes could be employed to determine three unknown quantities—the mean longitude at a given epoch, the eccentricity, and the position of the perigee. By taking three eclipses separated at short intervals, both the mean motion and the motion of the perigee would be known beforehand, from other data, with sufficient accuracy to reduce all the observations to the same epoch, and thus to leave only the three elements already mentioned un- known. In the hands of a modern calculator the problem would be a very simple one, requiring little more than the solution of a system of three equations with as many un- known*~~

~~*quantities. But without algebra the solution was long and troublesome, and not entirely satisfactory. Still, it was probably correct within the necessary limits of the errors of the observations. The same three elements being again determined from a second triplet of eclipses at as remote an epoch as possible, the difference in the longitude of the perigee at the two epochs gave the annual motion of that element, and the difference of mean longitudes gave the mean motion. Such was the method of determining the elements of the moon's motion down to the time of Copernicus.*~~

~~*The determination of the eccentricity from eclipses, as above described, leads to an important error in the resulting value of the eccentricity, owing to the effect of the neglected evection. We*~~

~~*know from our modern theory that the two principal inequalities in the moon's true longitude are — 6°°29 sin g (Equation of centre) +1°-27 sin (2D-g) (Evection),*~~

~~*where g = mean anomaly, and D = mean angular distance of the moon from the sun. Now during a lunar eclipse we always have D = 180° very nearly, and 2D = 360°, Hence the evection is then — 1°27 sin g, and so has the same argument, g, as the equation of centre, and so is confounded with it. The value of the equation of centre derived from eclipses is thus (6°°29 — 1°27=5°-02) sin g.- Therefore the eccentricity found by Hipparchus and Ptolemy was only 5°, and was more than a degree less than its true value.*~~

~~*The next important step in advance was the discovery of the '"evection," which is described by Ptolemy (see AsTRONOMY, vol. ii. p. 750) as if made by himself. In view of the bad habit which Ptolemy had of making his own observations verify results previously arrived at, which were sometimes in error, we must view such a discovery by him as quite exceptional, and as best explainable by the large magnitude of the outstanding error. Although, as just shown, the erroneous eccentricity found by Hipparchus would always represent eclipses, so that the error could never be detected by eclipses, the case was entirely different when the moon was in quadratures. Comparing the in- equalities already*~~

~~*written with that found by Hipparchus, we see that the latter required the correction—*~~

~~*1°27 {sin g+sin (2D — g)} =*~~

~~*1°:27 {(1 — cos 2D) sin g + sin 2D cos g} . At quadratures we have D= +90°, 2D=180", and hence cos 2D=-1 and sin2D=0. The omitted inequalities at these points of the orbit have therefore the value 2°54 sin g, a quantity so large that it could not fail to be detected by careful observations with the astrolabe. Such an inequality as this, superposed upon the eccentric motion of the moon, was very troublesome to astronomers who had no way of representing the celestial motions except by geometrical construction. The construction proposed by Ptolemy was so different from those employed for the*~~

~~*motions of the planets, and withal so intricate, that little interest attaches to it.*~~

~~*The student of Arabian science may find much to interest him in the astronomical speculations of the Arabs, but this people do not seem to have furnished anything in the way of suggestive theory. In the fourth book of De Revolu- tionibus,: where we find the lunar theory of Copernicus, no writer later than Ptolemy is referred to. Moreover, as already intimated, the work of Copernicus in this particu- lar direction forms little more than an episode in the his- tory of the subject. The working hypothesis of the great founder of modern astronomy was borrowed from the ancients, and was that the celestial motions were all either circular or compounded of circular motions. The hypo- thesis of equal circular motions, though accepted by Ptolemy in name, was so strained by him in its applications that little was left of it in the Admagest (the Arabic translation of his Syntaxis), But, by taking the privilege of compound- ing circular motions indefinitely—in other words, of adding one epicycle to another—Copernicus was enabled to repre- sent the planetary and lunar inequalities on a uniform system, though his heavens were perhaps worse " scribbled o'er" than those of Ptolemy. To one epicycle representing the equation of the centre he added another for the*~~

~~evection, and thus represented the longitude of the moon both at quadratures and oppositions, But the third inequality, "variation," which attains its maxima at the octants and vanishes at all four quarters, was unknown to him, To Tycho Brahe is commonly and justly ascribed the discovery of the variation. Joseph Bertrand of Paris has indeed claimed the discovery for Abu 'l-Wefd, an Arabian astro- nomer, and has made it appear probable that Abu 'l-Wefd really detected inequalities in the moon's motion which we now know to have been the variation. But he has not shown, on the part of the Arabian, any such exact de- scription of the phenomena as is necessary to make clear his claim to the discovery. As regards Tycho, although he discovered the fact, he could add nothing in the way of suggestive theory. To the double epicycle of Copernicus he was obliged to add a motion of the centre of the whole lunar orbit round a circle whose circumference passed through the centre of the earth, two revolutions round this circle being made in each lunation. Kepler, by intro- ducing a moving ellipse having the earth as its focus, was enabled to make a nearer approach to the truth than any of his predecessors. But the geometrical hypotheses by which he represented the inequalities due to the action of the sun form no greater epoch in the progress of science than do the geometrical constructions of his predecessors. We may therefore dispose of the ancient history of the lunar theory by saying that the only real progress from Hipparchus to Newton consisted in the more exact deter- mination of the mean motions of the moon, its perigee and its line of nodes, and in the discovery of three new inequalities, the representation of which required geometri- cal constructions increasing in complexity with every step.~~

~~The modern lunar theory commenced with Newton, and consists in determining the motion of the moon deductively from the theory of gravitation. But the great founder of modern mechanics did not employ the method best adapted to lead to the desired result, and hence his efforts to con- struct a lunar theory are of more interest as illustrations of his wonderful power and correctness in mathematical reasoning than as germs of new methods of research. He succeeded perfectly in explaining the elliptic motion of two mutually attracting bodies round their common centre of gravity by geometrical constructions. But when the prob-~~

~~*1 The full title, De Revolutionibus Orbium Celestium Libri VI. (small folio, Nuremberg, 1543).*~~

~~*MOON*~~

~~*lem was one of determining the variations from the elliptic motion which would be produced by a third body, such constructions could lead only to approximate results. The path to modern methods was opened up by the Continental mathematicians, whose great work consisted in reducing the problem to one of pure algebra. The chasm between the laws of motion laid down by Newton and a problem of algebra seems so difficult to bridge over that it is worth while to show in what the real spirit of the modern method consists. We call to mind the statement of Newton's first two laws of motion: that a body uninfluenced by any force moves in a straight line and with uniform velocity for ever, and that the change of motion is proportional] to the force impressed upon the body and in the direction of such force. These two laws admit of being expressed in alge- braic language thus :—let us put m the mass of a material point; # its distance from any fixed plane whatever; ¢ the time; X the sum of the components of all the forces acting upon the point in the direction perpendicular to the fixed plane, it being supposed that each force is resolved into three mutually perpendicular components, one of which is perpendicular to the fixed plane; then the differential equation*~~

~~*expresses Newton's first two laws of motion with a com- pleteness and precision which is entirely wanting in all statements in ordinary language. The latter can be no- thing more than lame attempts to express the equation in language which may be understood by the non-mathe- matical reader, but which bear the same relation to the algebraic equation that a statement of the operations of the Bank of England in the symbolic language of a tribe of savages would bear to the bank statement in pounds, shillings, and pence. By taking two other planes, perpen- dicular to each other and to the first plane, we have three equations like the one last written. The law of gravitation and Newton's third law of motion enable us to substitute for X and the other forces the masses and coordinates of the various attracting bodies. Thus the data of the problem are expressed by a triplet of three equations for each attract- ing body.*~~

~~*The integration of these equations is a problem of pure algebra, which, when solved, leads to expressions that give the position of each body in terms of the time, which is what is wanted. The special form which it is necessary to give the equations has not been radically changed during the century and a half since this method of research was opened out. The end aimed at is the algebraic expression of all the quantities involved in the form of an infinite series of terms, each consisting of a constant coefficient multiplied by the sine or cosine of an angle increasing uniformly with the time. It is indeed a remarkable fact that, notwithstanding the great advances which modern mathematics has made in the discovery of functions more general than the old-fashioned sines and cosines of ele- mentary trigonometry, especially of elliptic functions, yet the form of development adopted by the mathematicians of the last century has remained without essential change.*~~

~~*It will be instructive to notice the general and simple property of the trigonometric functions to which is duc their great advan- tage in the problems of celestial mechanics. It may be expressed thus :—Jf we have any number of quantities, each of which ts ex- pressed in the form of a trigonometrie series in which the angles tnerease uniformly with the time, then all the powers and products of these quantities, and all their differentials and integrals with respect to the time, may be expressed in series of the same form. This*~~

~~*theorem needs only an illustration by an example. Let our quan- tities be XY and Y, and let us suppose them expressed in the form X=a cos 4+b cos B+e cos C+, &e. Y=da sin A'+0' sin B' e' sin C'4, &e., in which we may suppose that the quantities a, b,c, &c., converge towards zero. In forming their product, the first term will be*~~

~~*MO OO*~~

~~*aa' cos A sin A'. But we have cos 4 sin A'=4 sin (A'+A) +4 sin (A'—.A). Hence the product XY will be of the form*~~

~~*X Y=haa' sin(A'+A)+4 aa'sin(d'- A)+4}ab'sin(A+ B'+),&e., which is another series of the same general form. Moreover, if we suppose the*~~

~~*angles 4, B, &., to increase uniformly with the time—that is, to admit of expression in the form*~~

~~*A=atmt, A'=a'+ n't, Ke— we shall have, by integrating, aw ad! 2 ROW thi — 1008 2S em ae cos (A'— A), &e.,*~~

~~*which, again, is a trigonometric series of the same general form, which admits of being manipulated at pleasure in the same way as the original expressions X and Y. This property does not belong to the elliptic functions, and in consequence, notwith- standing the great length of the trigonometric series, no attempt to supersede them has been successful.*~~

~~*The efforts to express the moon's motion by integrating the differential equations of the dynamical theory may be divided into three classes. (1) Laplace and his immediate successors found the problem so complex that they sought to simplify it by reversing its form ; instead of trying from the beginning to express the moon's coordinates in terms of the time, they effected the integration by expressing the time in terms of the moon's true longitude. Then, by a reversal of the series, the longitude was expressed in terms of the time. Although it would be hazardous to say that this method is unworthy of further consideration, we must admit that its essential inelegance is such as to repel rather than attract study, and that it holds out no promise of further development. (2) By the second general method the moon's coordinates are obtained in terms of the time by the direct integration of the differential equations of motion, retaining the algebraic symbols which express the values of the various elements. Most of the elements are small numerical fractions : e, the eccentricity of the moon's orbit, about 0°055; ¢', the eccentricity of the earth's orbit, about 0°017; y, the sine of half the inclination of the moon's orbit, about 0°046; m, the ratio of the mean motions of the moon and earth, about 0°075 ; and the expressions for the longitude, latitude, and parallax appear as an infinite trigonometric series, in which the coefficients of the sines and cosines are themselves infinite series proceeding accord- ing to the powers of the above small numbers. This method was applied with success by Pontécoulant and Sir John W. Lubbock, and afterwards by Delaunay. It should be remarked that the solution by the first method appears in the same form as by this one after the true longitude is expressed in terms of*~~

~~*the mean longitude. (3) By the method just mentioned the series converge so slowly, and the final expressions for the moon's longitude are so long and complicated, that the series has never been carried far enough to insure the accuracy of all the terms. This is especially the case with the development in powers of m, the convergence of which has often been questioned. Hence, when numerical precision alone is aimed at, it has been found best to avoid this difficulty by using the numerical values of the elements instead of their algebraic symbols. This method has the advantage of leading to the more rapid and certain determination of the numerical values of the several coefficients of sines and cosines. It has the disadvantage of giving the solution of the problem only for a particular case, and of being inapplicable in researches in which the general equations of dynamics have to beapplied. It has been employed by Damoiseau, Hansen, and Airy.*~~

~~*The methods of the second general class are those most worthy of study. And among these we must assign the first rank to the method of Delaunay, developed in his Théorie du Mouvement de la Lune, because it contains a germ which may yet develop into the great desideratum of a general method in celestial mechanics. To explain it, we must call to mind the general method of "variation of*~~

~~*801*~~

~~*elements," due to Lagrange. This method is applicable to cases in which a problem of dynamics can be completely solved when any small forces which come into play are left out, but which does not admit of direct solution when these forces are included. Omitting the small forces, commonly called "disturbing forces," let us suppose the problem of the motion of a body under the influence of the "principal forces" completely solved. This will mean that we have found algebraic expressions for the coordi- nates which determine the position of the body in terms of the time, and (in the case of a material point) of six constant quantities, to which we may assign values at pleasure. Then Lagrange showed how, by supposing these constant quantities to become variable, the same expressions could be used for the case in which the effect of the disturbing forces was included. In other words, the effect of the disturbing*~~

~~*forces could be determined by assuming them to change the constants of the first approxi- mate solution into very slowly varying elements.*~~

~~*In the researches on the lunar theory before Delaunay the principal force was taken to be the attraction of the earth upon the moon, and the disturbing force was that due to the sun's attraction. When the action of the earth alone was included the moon would move in an ellipse, in accord- ance with Kepler's laws. The effect of the sun's action could be allowed for by supposing this ellipse to be mov- able and variable. But when it was required to express this variation the problem became excessively complicated, owing to the great number of terms required to express the sun's disturbing force. Now, instead of passing from the elliptic to the disturbed motion by one single difficult step, Delaunay effected the passage by a great number of easy steps. Out of several hundred periodic terms, the sum of which expressed the disturbing force of the sun, he first took one only, and determined the variations of the Keplerian ellipse on the supposition that this term was the only one. In the solution the variable elements of the ellipse would be expressed in terms of six new con- stants. He then showed how these new constants could be taken as variables instead of the elements of the original ellipse. Taking a second term of the disturbing force, he expressed the new constants in terms of a third set of con- stants, and so repeated the process until all the terms of the disturbing force were disposed of.*~~

~~*Among applications of the third or numerical method, the most successful yet completed is that of Hansen. His first work appeared in 1838, under the title /unda- menta nova investigationis orbitx vere quam luna perlustrat, and contained an exposition of his ingenious and peculiar methods of computation. During the twenty years follow- ing he devoted a large part of his energies to the numerical computation of the lunar inequalities, the re-determination of the elements of motion, and the preparation of new tables for computing the moon's position. In the latter branch of the work, he received material aid from the British Government which published his tables on their completion in 1857. The computations of Hansen were published some seven years later by the Saxon Royal Society of Sciences.*~~

~~*It is found on comparing the results of Hansen and Delaunay that there are some outstanding discrepancies, which, though too small to be of great practical importance, are of sufficient magnitude to demand the attention of those interested in the mathematical theory of the subject. It is therefore desirable that the numerical inequalities should be again determined by an entirely different method. This is the object of Sir G. B. Airy's Wumerical Lunar Theory, which is not yet completely published, but is sufficiently far advanced to give hopes of an early comple- tion, The essence of Sir George's method consists in*~~

~~*starting with a provisional approximate solution (that of Delaunay being accepted for the purpose), and substituting the expressions for the moon's coordinates in the funda- mental differential equations of the moon's motion as dis- turbed by the sun. If the theory were perfect, the two sides of each equation would come out equal. As they do not come out exactly equal, Sir George puts the problem in the form: What corrections must be applied to the expressions for the coordinates that the two sides may be made equal? He then shows how these corrections may*~~

~~*be found by solving a system of equations.*~~

~~*The several methods which we have described have for their immediate object the determination of the motion of the moon round the earth under the influence of the combined attractions of the earth and sun. In other words, the question is that of solving the celebrated "problem of three bodies" in the special case when one of the bodies, the sun, has a much greater mass than the other two, and is at a much greater distance from them than they are from each othcr. All methods lead to a solution of the same general form which we shall now describe. Let us put g the moon's mean anomaly ; g' the mean anomaly of the sun (or earth) ; w the angular distance of the lunar perigee from the moon's node on the ecliptic; w' the angular distance of the sun's perigee from the moon's node on the ecliptic. When no account is taken of the action of the sun the angles g and g' increase uniformly with the time, representing in fact*~~

~~the uniform motion of the moon round the earth and of the earth round the sun, while w and w' remain constant. When account is taken of the action of the sun all four of the angles change with a uniform progressive motion. In conse- quence, the mean orbit of the moon round the earth becomes a moving ellipse whose major axis makes a revolution round the earth in about nine years, and the line of whose nodes makes a revolution in about eighteen and a half years. All the other ele- ments of this ellipse —namely, its major axis, its eccentricity, and its inclination to the ecliptic —remain absolutely constant however long the motion may continue, unless some other disturbing force than that of the sun comes into play. But in the actual motion of the moon there are periodic deviations from this ellipse, which cal be represented by an infinite trigonometric series, each term of whic is of the form~~

~~e (sin or cos) (tg +7'¢ +jw+j'w'), in which the quantities c are absolutely constant coefficients, and a, v', j, and j' are integers which may take all combinations of values —positive, negative, or zero. The circular function is, a sine in the expression for longitude or latitude, a cosine in the expression for the parallax. Also, 7 and 7' must be both even or both odd in the expressions for longitude and parallax, but the one even and the other odd in the case of tle latitude. For example, if we sup- pose j, 7', and @ all zero, we shall have terms of the form ¢, sin g' +é, sin 29'¢, sin 3g/, &c. : To write other terms, suppose 7=1, then we have terms of the orm é, sin (g—g/) +¢, sin (g +g) +¢3 sin (g+29')+, &e.~~

~~Taking the case when j=2 and j'= —2, we shall have terms of~~

~~the form m, sin (g—g/ +2w—2w') +m, sin (g -29'2w—Qw'), &e.~~

~~As the indices 7, 7', 7, and 7' become larger, the coefficients c, e, m, &c., become smaller; but the number of terms included in the theories of Hansen and Delaunay amount to several hundreds. In the analytical theories, like that of Delaunay, each of the coeffi- cients é, é, m, &c., isa complicated infinite series, but in the numerical theories it is a constant number. And the principal problem of the modern theory of three bodies is to find the appropriate co- efficient for each of these hundreds of ternis.~~

~~*Action of the Planets on the Moon.—For nearly two centuries it has been known from observations that the mean motion of the moon round the earth is not absolutely constant, as it ought to be were there no disturbing body but the sun. The general fact that the motion has been accelerated since the time of Ptolemy was first pointed out by Halley, and the amount of the acceleration was found by Dunthorne. After vain efforts by the greatest mathe- maticians of the last century to find a physical cause for the acceleration, Laplace was successful in tracing it to the secular diminution of the eccentricity of the earth's orbit, produced by the action of the planets. He computed its amount to be 10" per century—that is, if the place of the moon were calculated forward on its mean motion at the beginning of any century, it would at the end of the century be 10" in advance of its computed place. This theoretical result of Laplace agreed so closely with the acceleration found by Lalande from the records of ancient and medieval eclipses that it was not questioned for nearly a century. In 1852 Mr John C. Adams showed that Laplace had failed to take account of a series of terms, the effect of which was to reduce*~~

~~*uO ON*~~

~~*the acceleration to 6" or less. The result was inconsistent with the accounts of ancient eclipses of the sun, and a cause for the discrepancy had to be sought for. A probable cause was pointed out, first by Ferrel, and afterwards by Delaunay. The former, in papers published in Gould's Astronomical Journal, and in the Proceedings of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, showed that the action of the moon on the tidal waves of the ocean would have the effect of increasing the time of the earth's axial rotation or the length of the day, which is necessarily taken as the unit of time. Since, as the days became longer, the moon would move farther in one day, though its absolute motion should remain unchanged, and hence an apparent acceleration would be the result. That this cause really acts there can be no doubt. But the data for determining its exact amount are discrepant. If we take only such data as are purely astronomical—namely, the eclipses recorded by Ptolemy between 720 B.c. and 150 a.D., and those observed by the Arabians between 800 and 1000 a.p.—the apparent excess of the observed acceleration to be accounted for by the tidal retarda- tion amounts to only 2" per century, and may be even*~~

less. But this small acceleration is entirely incompatible with conclusions drawn from certain supposed accounts of total eclipses of the sun, notably the eclipse associated with the name of Thales. This is the famous eclipse supposed to be alluded to by HIerodotus when he describes a battle as stopped by a sudden advent of darkness, which had been predicted by Thales. If the true value of the co- efficient resulting from the combinced effect of tidal retardation of the earth and secular acceleration of the moon is less than 10", then not only could the path of totality not have passed over the field of battle but the greatest eclipse could not have occurred till after sunset. In fact, to represent this and other supposed eclipses of the sun, the acceleration must be increased to about 12", which is near the value found by HIansen from theory, and adopted in his tables of the moon. But his theoretical computation is un- doubtedly incorrect, because in computing in what manner the eccentricity of the earth's orbit enters into the moon's motion he took account only of the first approximation, as Laplace had done. The following is a summary of the present state of the question :— The theoretical value of the acceleration, assuming the

day to be constant, is, according to Delaunay ……. 6176 HIansen's value, in his Z'ables de la Lune, iS …...ccccecccee 12°18 HIansen's revised but still theoretically erroneous result is 12°56 The value which best represents the supposed eclipses

(1) of Thales, (2) at Larissa, (3) at Stikkelstad, isabout 11:'7 The result from purely astronomical observations is…... 8°3 The result from Arabian and modern observations alone

DS WOM breentcte oe anwiesnsis(deeneecannt reine sedan sear 720

Inequalities of Long Period.—Combined with the question of the secular acceleration is another which is still entirely unsettled— namely, that of inequalities of long period in the mean motion of the moon round the earth. Laplace first showed that modern observations of the moon indicated that its mean motion was really less during the second half of the 18th century than during the first half, and hence inferred the existence of an inequality having a period of more than a century. All efforts to find a satisfactory explanation were, however, so unavailing that

~~Poisson, in 1835, disputed the reality of the inequality. But Airy, from his discussion of the Greenwich observations between 1750 and 1830, conclusively proved its existence. About the same time Hansen announced that he had found from theory two terms of long period arising from the action of Venus which fully corre- sponded to the inequalities indicated by the observations. These terms, as employed in his Tables de la Lune, are~~

~~15°34 sin (—g-169' +189" + 33° 36') +21"°47 sin (8g" — 13g' +4° 44'),~~

~~in which g, g', and g" represent the mean anomalies of the moon, the earth, and Venus respectively. During the first few years after the publication of Hansen's tables they represented observa- tions so well that their entire correctness was generally taken for granted. But doubt soon began to be thrown upon the inequalities of long period just mentioned. Indeed, Hansen himself admitted that the second and larger term was partly empiri- cal, being taken so as to satisfy observations between 1750 and 1850. Delaunay re-computed both terms, and found for the first term a result substantially identical with that of Hansen. But he found for the second or empirical one a coefficient of only 0:27, which would be quite insensible. With this smaller coefficient the obser- vations from 1750 could not be satisfied, so that, so far as observa- tions could go in deciding a purely mathematical question, the evidence was in favour of Hansen's result. But on comparing Hansen's tables with observations between 1650 and 1750 it was found that the supposed agreement with observation was entirely illusory. Moreover, since 1865 the moon has been steadily falling behind the tabular place. These inequalities of long period have not yet been satisfactorily explained. The most plausible supposi- tion is that they are due to the action of one or more of the larger planets. But the problem of the action of the planets on the meon~~

~~MOO—MOO~~

~~is the most difficult and intricate of celestial mechanics, and no satisfactory general method of attacking it has yet been found. The sources of difficulty are two in number. First, the disturbing action of the planets is modified by that of the sun in such a way that the ordinary equations of disturbed elliptic motion are no longer rigorous, and hence~~

new and more complicated ones must be constructed. And, secondly, the combination of the four bodies — moon, earth, sun, and planet — leads to terms so numerous and intricate that it has hardly been found possible to isolate them. The question has, indeed, been raised whether the rotation of the earth on its axis, and hence the unit of time, may not be subjcct to slow and irregular changes of a nature to produce apparent corre-sponding changes in the motion of the moon. But it has recently been found, from a discussion of the observed transits of Mercury since 1677, that, although such inequalities may exist, they cannot have the magnitude necessary to account for the observed changcs of long period in the moon's motion.

The following is a summary of the present state of the various branches of the lunar theory. (1) The numerical solution of the problem of the sun's action on the moon may be regarded as quite satisfactory, at least when Hansen's results shall have been verified by an independent method. (2) The analytic theory needs to be perfected by finding some remedy for the slow convergence of the series by which itis expressed, but its general form may be regarded as quite satisfactory. (8) Except in one or two special cases, the action of the plancts on the moon, when treated with the necessary rigour, is so intricate that no approach to a satisfactory solution has yet been attained. When this desideratum is reached, the mathematical theory will be coinplete. (4) The general discussion of ancient and modern observations with a view to finding what real or apparent inequalities of long period in the mean motion may exist is still to be finished. With it the astronomical theory will be complete. (S. N.)

MOORCROFT, Witxt1am (c. 1770-1825), traveller in Asia, was born in Lancashire, about 1770. HIe was edu- cated as a surgeon in Liverpool, but on completing his course he resolved to devote himself to veterinary surgery, and, after studying the subject in France, began its practice in London. In 1795 he published a pamphlet of directions for the medical treatment of horses, with special reference to India, and in 1800 a Cursory Account of the Methods of Shoeing HIorses. Waving been offered by the East India Company the inspectorship of their Bengal stud, Moorcroft left England for India in 1808. Under his care the stud rapidly improved ; in order to perfect the breed, he resolved to undertake a

~~*journey into Central Asia to obtain a stock of Turcoman horses. In company with Captain William Hearsay, and encumbered with a stock of merchandise for the purpose of establishing trade relations between India and Central Asia, Moorcroft left Josimath, well within the mountains, on 26th May 1812. Proceeding along the valley of the Dauli, they reached the summit of the frontier pass of Niti on lst July. Descending by the towns of Daba and Ghortope, Moorcroft struck the main upper branch of the Indus near its source, and on 5th August arrived at the sacred lake of Manasarowara. Returning by Bhutan, he was detained some time by the Gurkhas, and reached Calcutta in November. This journey only served to whet Moorcroft's appetite for more extensive travel, for which he prepared the way by sending out a young Hindustani, who succeeded in making very extensive explorations. In company with this young man and George Trebeck, Moor- croft set out on his second journey in October 1819. His enterprise was looked upon rather coldly by the directors, who merely allowed him his pay for a time, all the expenses being borne by Moorcroft himself. By way of Almord and Srinagar, Lahore was reached on 6th May 1820. On 14th August the source of the Biyah (Hyphasis) was discovered, and subsequently that of the Chenab. Leh, the capital of Ladak, was reached on 24th September, and here several months were spent in exploring the surrounding country. A commercial treaty was concluded with the Government of Lada&k, by which the whole of Central Asia was virtually opened to British trade. Kashmir was reached on 3d November 1822, and by the Pir Panjél mountains Jalalabad on 4th June 1824, Cabul on 20th June, and by*~~

~~*Khulm, Kunduz, and Balkh Moorcroft arrived at Bokhara on 25th February 1825. Everywhere he bought horses for the company, and endeavoured to establish trade relations. At Andkho in Cabul Moorcroft was seized with fever, of which he died on 27th August 1825, Trebeck surviving him only afew days. It wasnot till several years afterwards that his papers were obtained by the Asiatic Society, and published under the editorship of Horace Hayman Wilson in 1841 under the title of Travels in the Himalayan Provinces of Iindustan and the Punjab, in Ladakh and Kashmir, in Peshawur, Kabul, Kunduz, and Bokhara, from 1819 to 1825.*~~

~~*Though published so long after the traveller's death, the narrative was a valuable contribution to a knowledge of Central Asia, and still remains a classic. In vol. xii. of Asiatic Researches will be found an account by Moorcroft of his first journey, and in the Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society, vol. i., a paper on the Purik sheep.*~~

~~*MOORE, Epwarp (1712-1757), minor poet, dramatist, and miscellaneous writer, was the son of a dissenting minis- ter of Abingdon, where he was born in 1712. HIe was the author of the thrilling domestic tragedy of The Gamester, originally produced in 1753 with Garrick in the leading character, and still in the repertory of acting plays. It is perhaps the strongest lesson against gambling ever preached from stage or pulpit. The literary merit of the play is not great, but it is powerfully constructed and full of impressive incident, and the career of Beverley the gambler (a character modelled on Fielding's Captain Booth) affords great scope for the actor. Moore also wrote two comedies. As a poet he produced clever imitations of Gay and Gray, and with the assistance of Lyttelton, Chesterfield, and HIorace Walpole conducted The World (1753-57) during the great decade of the revival of periodical essay-writing. The World followed Johnson's Rambler, and was followed by The Idler ; it had as rivals The Adventurer and The Connoisseur. Moore died at London in 1757.*~~

~~*MOORE, Dr Joun (1730-1802), born at Stirling in 1730, was one of the most prominent writers of travels and novels in the latter part of the 18th century. HIs novel Zeluco (published in 1789) produced a powerful impression at the time, and indirectly, through the poetry of Byron, has left an abiding mark on literature. The novel would in these days be called a psychological novel ; it is a close analysis of the motives of a headstrong, passionate, thoroughly selfish and unprincipled profligate. It is full of incident, and the analysis is never prolonged into tedious reflexions, nor suffered to intercept the progress of the story, while the main plot is diversified with many interesting episodes. The character took a great hold of Byron's imagination, and probably influenced his life in some of its many moods, as well as his poetry. It is not too much to say that the common opinion that Byron intended Childe HIarold as a reflexion of himself cannot be cleared of its large mixture of falsehood*~~

~~without a study of Moore's Zeluco. Byron said that he intended the Childe to be "a poetical Zeluco," and the most striking features of the portrait were un- doubtedly taken from that character. At the same time it is obvious to everybody acquainted with Moore's novel and Byron's life that the moody and impressionable poet often adopted the character of Zeluco, fancied himself and felt himself to be a Zeluco, although he was at heart a very different man. Moore's other works have a less marked individuality, but his sketches of society and man- ners in France, Germany, Switzerland, Italy, and England furnish valuable materials for the social historian. Like his countrymen Burnett and Boswell, he was a sagacious, penetrating, and in the main unprejudiced observer, with something of a natural historian's interest in the human species ; and he had exceptional opportunities of observation.~~

~~[le was a doctor by profession, and the son of a Stirling- shire clergyman. After taking his medical degree at Glasgow, he served with the army in Flanders, then was attached to the household of the English ambassador at Paris, then practised for five years in Glasgow, next travelled on the Continent for five years with a young nobleman, settled for some years as a physician in Lon- don, accompanied Lord Lauderdale to Paris in 1792 and witnessed some of the principal scenes of the Revolution. All classes thus came under his observation, while his pro- fession preserved him in an unusual degree from flippant bias. His works attest great shrewdness and sagacity of judgment, and show no small skill in literary presentation. He died at London in 1802.~~

~~MOORE, Sm Joun (1761-1809), the only English general who has gained lasting fame by the conduct of a retreat, was the son of Dr Moore (the subject of the pre- ceding notice), and was born at Glasgow on 13th November 1761. It was his appointment as tutor to the young duke of Hamilton which procured for John Moore educational advantages by which he profited so much as to be called in after life the most cultivated officer in the army. It was then the fashion for young noblemen to travel from court to court, and Moore accompanied his father and the duke to all the chief capitals in Europe, until he was suddenly ordered in 1777 to~~

~~*join the 51st regiment, in which he had been appointed an ensign. He learned his drill at Minorca, and in 1779 was appointed lieutenant and paymaster in a new regiment recently raised by the duke of Hamilton, with which he served in America till the peace of 1783. In 1784 Moore, though but twenty-three years of age, was returned by the duke of Hamilton as member of parliament for the united boroughs of Selkirk, Peebles, and Linlithgow. In parliament he does not seem to have opened his mouth, though he always voted with the Govern- ment; but he made some useful friends, notably the duke of York and Pitt. In 1788 he was promoted to a majority in the 5lst regiment, and in 1790 he became lieutenant- colonel and resigned his seat in parliament. He soon got his regiment in fine order, and in 1792 sailed with it for the Mediterranean. He was too late to assist at Toulon, but was engaged throughout the operations in Corsica, and especially distinguished himself at the taking of Calvi. After the expulsion of the French, Moore became very in- timate with Paoli and many of the leading Corsican patriots, which intimacy was so obnoxious to Sir Gilbert Elliot, the viceroy, that Moore was ordered to leave the island in forty- eight hours. . Sir Gilbert's hasty conduct by no means met with approval in London, and Moore was gazetted briga- dier-general, and ordered to proceed with his brigade to the West Indies. In April 1796 he reached Barbados, and at once became the right hand of Sir Ralph Aber- cromby, the commander-in-chief. The first enterprise was the reconquest of the island of St Lucia, which was com- pletely occupied by an agent of Victor Hugues with a mixed force of Caribs, negroes, and Frenchmen. The key of the island was a fortified and almost impregnable height called the Morne Fortuné, which was at last stormed, though with great loss, by the valour of brigadier-generals Moore and Hope, who were to be comrades on a yet more memor- able field. After this success, Sir Ralph left the island, and appointed Moore governor and commander-in-chief. A difficult post he found his government, owing to the swarms of Caribs and negroes in the woods; but just as he was on the point of triumphing he fell ill of yellow fever, and was ordered home. In 1798 he was well and again eager to be on active service, and he accompanied his friend Abercromby over to Ireland, where he received the com- mand of the Bandon district. In the Irish rebellion of 1798 he distinguished himself by his activity in saving*~~

~~*Wexford from destruction after the battle of Vinegar Hill. His services were in universal request, and Abercromby insisted upon his serving with him in the expedition to the Helder in 1799, where he did creditably all that was credit- ably done in that ill-managed expedition. On his return from Holland he was made colonel of the 52d regiment, and in 1800 accompanied Abercromby to the Mediterranean as major-general.*~~

~~*Throughout the Egyptian expedition he commanded the reserve, and especially distinguished himself at the battle of Alexandria, when he was wounded in three places, and behaved with such distinction that he was recognized uni- versally as the greatest English general, now that Aber- cromby was gone. The short interval of the peace of Amiens did not injure Moore's prospects, and in 1803 he was appointed commandant of the camp at Shorncliffe. Here he proved his greatness as an organizer, for it was at this time that he organized those light regiments which were to form the reserve in his own campaign and the light division in the Peninsular War. While at Shorncliffe he renewed his intimacy with Pitt, who was then residing at Walmer Castle, and who on his return to office made Moore a knight of the Bath, and consulted him on every military project. Fox, when he succeeded to office, showed the same appreciation of Moore, and in May 1806 appointed him second-in-command to his brother, General Fox, who was ordered with a strong force to Sicily to supersede Sir John Stuart. Moore won but little credit at this time, for there was none to gain, but employed his time, according to Napier, in falling in love with Miss Fox, to whom, however, he never proposed, fearing to be accepted for his position and not for himself. In 1807 he was able to escape from the intrigues of the Sicilian court, and was ordered to Portugal, which he reached too late to make any defence of Lisbon, already in the possession of the French. He then went home, and had four months' rest, the last he ever had. In May 1808 he was ordered with a force of 11,000 men to Sweden to assist the king against the united forces of France and Russia. The mad conduct of the Swedish king, however, who even went so far as to declare Sir John Moore under arrest when he refused to acquiesce in his plans, ruined any chance of successful co-operation, and the English general made his escape and*~~

~~*returned to England. He was at once ordered to proceed with his division #6 Portugal, where Sir Arthur Wellesley had already landed; but the appointment of Dalrymple and Burrard to the chief commands was even more of a slight on' Moore as a general of European experience than on Wellesley, whose laurels had hitherto been won in India. He regarded himself as personally insulted by the ministers, and especially by Lord Castlereagh, but deemed it his duty to go where he was ordered. He met his reward; for when, after the excitement caused by the Convention of Cintra, Dalrymple and Burrard went home, he was left in com- mand of the largest English army since the commencement of the war. Wellesley had appreciated him, and in an interesting letter (published in the Wellington Despatches) had expressed his desire to use his own great political influence to reconcile him to the ministers and the ministers to him.*~~

~~*Now began the glorious three months on which Moore's reputation as a soldier and a statesman must rest. The Spaniards, flushed with their former success at Baylen, regarded Napoleon, who had in person crossed the Pyrenees, as another Dupont, and loudly summoned Moore to a share in their coming victories. Moore knew better what was the value of Napoleon's genius, but he had been commanded to assist the Spaniards, and therefore gave the order to advance. His army marched in four distinct divisions, and on 13th November 1808 he concentrated at Sala-*~~

~~*manca, where he waited to see what would happen. He heard that a subsidiary force under Sir David Baird had arrived at Corunna, and ordered it up to join him. At Salamanca he remained a whole month watching the triumphant successes of Napoleon and his lieutenants, and learning how little Spanish reports or Spanish valour were to be relied on. Though irritated by the menaces and abuse of Frere, the English minister to the junta, he waited till the 13th December, hearing daily of Spanish defeats, and then he determined to draw off upon his own small force the weight of Napoleon's power, and thus give Andalucia the winter in which to organize an army and prepare for another Baylen. With this intention he advanced through Toro and Mayorga, where Baird joined him, to*~~

~~*Sahagun. He judged rightly that Napoleon would never advance into Andalucia and leave the English behind him, but that he would turn all his power against them. Having once drawn Napoleon's attention to himself, he began his famous retreat and fell back quickly, fighting every day and invariably with success. He now could test the military spirit he had taught at Shorncliffe, for the reserve under Sir Edward Paget consisted entirely of his own light regiments. To detail each step of the retreat and every skirmish would be but to rewrite Napier ; suffice it to say that, with great loss of life and material, Moore reached Corunna on 12th January 1809. But the fleet to take the army home was not there ; and the English would have to fight Soult, whose army was even more weakened and demoralized than Moore's, before they could embark. It was on 16th January that Moore fought his last battle ; he fell early in the day, and knew at once that his wound was mortal. His last hours were cheered with the know- ledge of victory, but were spent in recommending his old friends, such as Graham and Colborne, to the notice of the Government. Sir H. Hardinge's description of these hours is in its way inimitable, and in it must be studied how a modern Bayard should die in battle, every thought being for others, none for himself.*~~

~~*It may be possible in the face of his heroic death to exaggerate Moore's actual military services, but his influence on the British army cannot be overrated. The true military spirit of discipline and of valour, both in officers and men, had become nearly extinct during the American war. Abercromby, who looked back to the traditions of Minden, was the first to attempt to revive it, and his work was carried on by Moore. The formation of the light regi- ments at Shorncliffe was the answer to the new Frencii tactics, and it was left to Wellington to show the success of the experiment. Moore's powers as a statesman are shown in his despatches written at Salamanca, and he had the truest gift of a great man, that of judging men. It may be noticed that, while Wellington perpetually grumbled at the bad qualities of his officers and formed no school, Moore's name is associated with the career of all who made their mark, Among generals, Hope, Graham, Sir E. Paget, Hill, and Craufurd, all felt and submitted to his ascendency, and of younger officers it was ever the proud boast of the Napiers, Colborne, the Beckwiths, and Barnard that they were the pupils of Moore, not of Wellington. Nay more, he inspired*~~

~~an historian. The description of Moore's retreat in Napier is perhaps the finest piece of military history in the English language, not only because the author was present, but because his heart was with the leader of that retreat ; and, if Napier felt towards Wellington as the soldiers of the tenth legion felt towards Cesar, he felt towards Moore the personal love and devotion of a cavalier towards Montrose.~~

~~The great authority for Moore's life is the Life of Sir John Moore, by his brother, J. C. Moore (1833); see also Narrative of the Campaign of Sir John Moore in Spain, by his brother, J. C. Moore (4to, with plans, 1809); Napier, Peninsular War, Bk. iv., and his Life of Sir Charles Napier. For views adverse to Moore's retreat, see Charmilly, Narrative (1810), and Sir Bartle Frere, Life of the Ri. Hon. J. H. Frere (published in vol. i. of his works). Consult also Wilson, Campaign in Egypt, for Moore's services there, and the Life of Gilbert Elliot, First Lord Minto, for the squabble in Corsica.~~

~~MOORE, Tuomas (1779-1852), born at Dublin on 28th May 1779, fairly shares with Lord Byron the honour of being the most popular poet of his generation. Whatever may be thought now of the intrinsic qualities of his verse, this much cannot be denied. The most trustworthy of all measures of popularity is the price put upon a writer's work~~

~~in the publishing market, aud when Moore's friend Perry, in negotiating the sale of the unwritten Lalla Lookh, claimed for the poet the highest price that had up to that time been paid for a poem the publisher at once assented. Moore was then in the heyday of his reputation, but twenty years later publishers were still willing to risk their thou- sands on his promise to produce. Much of Moore's success was due to his personal charm. This at least gave him the start on his road to popularity. There is not a more extraordinary incident in the history of our literature than the instantaneousness with which the son of a humble Dublin grocer just out of his teens, on his first visit to London, captivated the fashionable world and established himself in the course of a few months as one of its prime favourites. The youth crossed St George's Channel in 1799 to keep terms at the Middle Temple, carrying with him a translation of the Odes of~~

~~*Anacreon, which he wished to publish by subscription. In a very short time he had enrolled half the fashionable world among his subscribers, and had obtained the permission of the prince of Wales to dedicate the work to him. The mere power of writing graceful and fluent amatory verses would not alone have enabled the poet to work this miracle. Moore's social gifts were of the most engaging kind. He charmed all whom he met, and charmed them, though he was not a trained musician, with nothing more than with his singing of his own songs. The piano, and not the harp, was his instru- meht, but he came nearer than anybody else in modern times to Bishop Percy's romantic conception of the minstrel. To find a parallel to him we must go back to the palmy days of Provencal song, to such troubadours and jongleurs as Arnaud Daniel and Perdigon, whose varied powers of entertainment made them welcome guests wherever they went. It was not merely the fashionable world that the young adventurer captivated ; the landlady of his lodgings in London, a countrywoman of his own, offered to place at his disposal all the money of which she had the command.*~~

~~*The fragment of autobiography in which Moore draws a softly-coloured picture of his early life in Dublin lets us into the secret of the seeming miracle of his social con- quest. Externals apart, the spirit of his social surround- ings in Little Aungier Street had much in common with the society to which he was introduced in London. He was born in the proscribed sect of Catholics, whose exclu- sion from the society of the Castle produced a closer union among their various ranks, and thus, from the first, Moore was no stranger to the more refined gaieties of social inter- course. It was, upon the whole, a gay life in Catholic society, though the conspiracy of the United Irishmen was being quietly formed beneath the surface. Amateur theatricals was one of their favourite diversions, and gifts of reciting and singing were not likely to die for want of applause. Moore's schoolmaster was a leader in these entertainments, a writer of prologues and epilogues and incidental songs; and at a very early age Master Thomas Moore was one of his show-boys, ardently encouraged in all his exercises by a very affectionate mother at home. Before he left school he had acquired fame in his own circle as a song-writer, and had published, in the Anthologia Hibernica, verses "to Zelia on her charging the author with writing too much on love." This wasin*~~

~~*1793. In that year the prohibition against Catholics entering Trinity College was removed, and next year Moore took advantage of the new freedom. As one of the first Catholic entrants, he had an exceptional stimulus to work, and there industriously acquired that classical scholarship with which he won the hearts of such learned Whigs as Lansdowne and Holland, while he charmed fashionable ladies with the grace of his songs. Young Moore's social atmosphere was, of course, strongly charged with patriotism and hatred of the excesses of*~~

~~*English despotism. Some of his closest friends in Trinity were deep in the conspiracy of 1798. But even for his patriotism—a genuine passion which he never sought to disguise—Moore found plenty of sympathy among the Whig political leaders, when he made their acquaintance in the first years of the century.*~~

~~*Moore was fairly established in London society in the first year of the century, and from that time the hope of its applause was the ruling aspiration of his life and its judgment the standard of his work. In his letters to his mother, which are delightful prose lyrics and show the most charming side of Moore's character—he wrote to her constantly and with warm affection in his busiest weeks—we find him, even in 1800, declaring himself surfeited with duchesses and marchionesses, and professing his readiness at any moment to exchange all his fineries for Trish stew and salt fish. But he never did make the exchange, even for more potent attractions than the fare of his youth. He could not bear the shortest banishment from fashionable drawing-rooms without uneasy longings. The dignity and ease, the luxury, the gaiety, the bright- ness of fashionable life, wholly satisfied his joyous and self- indulgent nature. When men of rank courted his company, when princesses sang his songs and peeresses wept at them, Moore was too frank to affect indifference ; he was in the highest heaven of delight, and went home to record the incident to his relatives or transmit it to posterity in his diary. If prudence whispered that he was frittering away his time and dissipating his energies, he persuaded him- self that his conduct was thoroughly worthy of a solid man of business: that to get alucrative appointment from his*~~

~~*political friends he must keep himself in evidence, and that to make his songs sell he must give them a start with his own voice. But his mind was seemingly not much troubled either with sordid care or with sober prudence; he lived in the happy present, and he liked fashionable company for its own sake,—and no wonder, seeing how he was petted, caressed, and admired. Swift's saying that great men never reward in a more substantial way those whom they makethe companions of their pleasures was often in Moore's mind. It was verified to some extent in his own case. Through Lord Moira's influence he was appointed registrar of the admiralty court in Bermuda in 1803. He went there to take possession, but four or five months of West India society, jingling pianofortes, and dusky beauties bored him excessively, and he appointed a deputy and returned to London, after little more than a year's absence. The office continued to bring him about £400 a year for fourteen or fifteen years, but at the end of that time embezzlement by the deputy, for whom he was responsible, involved him in serious embarrassment. This was all that Moore received from his great political friends, ~—no great boon as things went in the days of patronage. He had hopes from Lord Moira in the Grenville ministry in 1806,—hopes of an Irish commissionership or something substantial, but the king's obstinacy about Catholic emancipation destroyed the ministry before anything worth having turned up. The poet's long-deferred hopes were finally extinguished in 1812, when Lord Moira, under the Liverpool administration, went out as governor-general to India without making any provision for him. From that time Moore set himself in earnest to make a living by literature, his responsibilities being increased by his marriage in 1811. From his boyhood to 1812 may be called the first period of Moore's poetical activity. He had formed the design of translating Anacreon while still at college, and several of the pieces published in 1801 under the nom de plume of "Thomas Little" were written before he was eighteen. The somewhat ostentatious scholarship of the notes to his Anacreon, the parade of learned authorities, he explained*~~

~~*by his habit of omnivorous reading in Trinity College library. Throughout his literary life he retained this habit of out-of-the-way reading and clever*~~

~~*display of it. Moore had really abundance of miscellaneous scholarship as well as great quickness in the analogical application of his knowledge ; and, though he made sad havoc of quantities when he tried to write in Greek, there was probably no scholar of his time who would have surpassed him in the interpretation of a difficult passage. He seems to have spent a good deal of time in the libraries of the great houses that he frequented; Moira, Lansdowne, and Holland were all scholarly men and book-collectors. It might be asked,— What had "' passion's warmest child," whose " only books were women's looks," to do with obscure medieval epigrammatists, theologians, and commentators? But it would seem that Moore took the hints for many of his lyrics from books, and, knowing the great wealth of fancy among medieval Latinists, turned often to them as likely quarters in which to find some happy word-play or image that might serve as a motive for his muse. The public, of course, were concerned with the product and not with the process of manufacture, and " Little's" songs at once became the rage in every drawing-room. He found his songs in Virginia when he landed there on his way to Bermuda. And not only were his songs sung but his poems were read, passing rapidly through many editions. The bulk of them were simple fancies, gracefully, fluently, and sometimes wittily expressed, the lyrist's models being the amatory poets of the 17th century from Carew to Rochester. Carew is the only eminent poet of that century with whom Moore will bear comparison. The highest praise that can be given to his amatory lyrics is that he knew his audience, wrote directly for them, and pleased them more than any of his competitors. His publication of 1806 was savagely reviewed in the Edin- burgh by Jeffrey, who accused him of a deliberate design to corrupt the minds of innocent maidens with his wanton fancies, and who had in consequence to figure in a ludicrous attempt at a duel—ludicrous in its circumstances, though Moore was ferociously in earnest. We may well acquit Moore of the diabolic intention attributed to him, but Jeffrey's criticism of his poetry as poetry was just enough. The only parts of the volume that Jeffrey praised were the satirical epistles. The vein essayed in these epistles Moore pursued afterwards in his Corruption, Intolerance (1808), and The Sceptic, a philosophical satire (1809) ; but as long as he kept to the heroic couplet and the manner of Pope he could not give full scope to his peculiar powers asa satirist. It may be remarked in passing that the result of the*~~

~~*hostile meeting with Jeffrey is a striking evidence of the impressiveness of Moore's personality ; in the course of a few minutes' conversation he changed a bitter critic into a lifelong friend. Of all the poetical enterprises that Moore undertook, either at this period or later, none was so exactly suited to his powers as the task proposed to him by the publisher Power of supplying fit words to a collection of Irish melodies. The first number appeared in 1807, and it was so successful that for twenty-seven years afterwards writing words to music was one of Moore's most regular occupations and his steadiest source of income, Power pay- ing him an annuity of £500. Six numbers of Irish melodies were published before 1815; then they turned to sacred songs and national airs, issuing also four more numbers of Irish melodies before 1834. Moore entered into this work with his best and most practised powers and with all his heart. From his boyhood he had been in training for it. The most characteristic moods of Irish feeling, grave and gay, plaintive and stirring, were embodied in those airs, and their variety touched the whole range of Moore's sensi- tive spirit, carrying him far beyond the shallows of his*~~

~~*MOORE*~~

~~*spurious Anacreontic sentiment, namby-pamby when not prurient ; he wrote with full inspiration, unreserved sin- cerity, and thoroughly roused faculty. Divorced from the music, many of them are insipid enough, but they were never meant to be divorced from tlie music; the music was meant, as Coleridge felt when he heard them sung by the poet himself, to twine round them and overtop them like the honeysuckle. Moore accomplished this with exquisite art. HIs most conspicuous failures may be traced to his habit of taking as his starting-point not an emotional incident but some unmanageable intellectual con- ceit. HIence arose intellectual discords, incongruous and imperfectly harmonized fancies, which even the music can hardly gloss over.*~~

~~*. The regent's desertion of the Whigs in 1812 cut them off from all hope of office for many years to come, and Moore from his last hope of a snug sinecure, when Lord Moira also was practically "oblivious" of him. There was at once a marked increase in his literary fertility, and he broke ground in a new field, which he cultivated with pre-eminent success—*~~

~~*political squib-writing. Moore was incapable of anything like rancour, but he felt the dis- appointment of his hopes enough to quicken his fancy and sharpen the edge of his wit. The prince regent, his old friend and patron, who was said to have begged all Lord Moira's appointments for personal favourites, was his first butt. The prince's defects and foibles, his fatness, his huge whiskers, his love for cutlets and curagoa, for aged mistresses and practical jokes, were ridiculed with the lightest of clever hands. Moore opened fire in the Morning Chronicle, and crowned his success next year (1813) with a thin volume of "'Intercepted Letters," The Twopenny Post Bag.*~~

~~*The disappointment of 1812, which started Moore on his career as a squib-writer, nerved him also to- a more sustained effort in serious verse than he had before at- tempted. Lalla Rookh would never have been written if the author's necessities had not compelled him to work. To keep himself at the oar, he contracted with the Long- mans to supply a metrical romance on an Eastern subject, which should contain at least as many lines as Scott's Rokeby, and for which the publishers bound themselves to pay three thousand guineas on delivery. The poem was not published till May 1817. Moore, as was his habit,*~~

~~*made most laborious preparation, reading himself slowly into familiarity with Eastern scenery and manners. He retired to a cottage in Derbyshire, near Lord Moira's library at Donington Park, that he might work uninterruptedly, safe from the distractions of London society ; and there, "amid the snows of a Derbyshire winter" as he. put it, he patiently elaborated his voluptuous pictures of flower- scented valleys, gorgeous gardens, tents, and palaces, and houris of ravishing beauty. The confidence of the publishers was fully justified. Moore's contemporaries were dazzled and enchanted with Lalla Rookh. It was indeed a wonderful tour de force. There was not a single image or allusion in it that an ordinary Englishman could understand without a foot-note. High testimonies were borne to the correctness of the local colouring, and the usual stories were circulated of Oriental natives who would not believe that Moore had never travelled in the East. Moore was less successful in*~~

~~*realizing Oriental character than he was in details of dress and vegetation. His fire-worshipper is an Irish patriot betrayed by an informer, his Zelica a plously nurtured Catholic maiden brooding over unpardoned sin, his Mokanna a melodramatic stage monster,—though they are so thickly covered with Oriental trappings that their identity is considerably disguised. Of the four tales put into the mouth of Feramorz, the " Veiled Prophet " was the least suited.to Moore's Turkey-carpet treatment. We can understand the enthusiasm with which Moore's Orien-talism was received as ""'the best that we have had yet," and we can honour the honest labour with which he achieved this success ; but such artificial finery, as the poet himself had the sense to suspect, could have onlya temporary reputation. He deliberately sacrificed the higher qualities of poetry for accuracy of costume and soft melody of rhyme and rhythm, and he had his reward. His next Orientalism, the Loves of the Angels, published in 1822, was hardly less popular than Lalla Rookh. The artificiality of the manufacture was shown by the ease with which, after a few editions, he changed his angels from Jews into Turks, to evade a charge of impiety which was supposed to impede the sale of the work. . Immediately after the completion of Lalla Rookhk Moore changed his residence to Sloperton Cottage in Wiltshire, to be near Lord Lansdowne and the library at Bowood, his next literary project being a life of Sheridan. His plans were inter- rupted by the consequences of the rascality of his deputy at Bermuda, which has been already mentioned. To avoid arrest for the sum embezzled, Moore retired to the Continent, and fixed his residence at Paris. He could not return till November 1822, when the affair was com- promised. His friends lamented that the attractions of Paris occupied so much of his time, but, though his diary contains almost daily records of visits to operas, fétes, and fashionable entertainments, it shows also that he was busier than he seemed. He wrote a goodly number of squibs during his exile, besides composing the Loves of the Angels and accumulating materials for his prose tale of the Epicurean—a fair amount of production consider- ing his slow and painstaking habits of composition. His alertness of mind, self-possession, and steadiness of purpose enabled him to work as few men could in the midst of diver- sions and distractions; and, although he himself took a brilliant part in conversation, we can see, from a compart- son of his diary with his published writings, that he kept his ears open for facts and*~~

~~*witticisms which he afterwards made his own. The darling of the drawing-room was as much bee as butterfly. On his return to England he resumed work steadily at his memoirs of Sheridan, writing Captain Rock as a jeu desprit by the way. The Sheridan triumphantly despatched in the autumn of 1825, Moore's next important work was the Life of Byron. The first*~~

~~*volume of this was published early in 1830, and the. second was ready by the end of the same year. In 1831 he com- pleted a memoir of Lord Edward Fitzgerald, for which he had been collecting materials for some time. Moore's biographies call for no comment, except that they were faithful and conscientious pieces of work. He spent much industry in the collection of characteristic anecdotes, for which his position in society gave him exceptional opportunity. His connexion with the burning of Byron's autobiography is too complicated a question to be dis- cussed here. His own version of the circumstances is given in his diary for May 1824.*~~

~~*Tt was a misfortune for the comfort of the last twenty years of Moore's life that he allowed himself to be drawn into a project for writing the "History of Treland" in Lardner's Cyclopedia. Scott and Mackintosh scribbled off the companion volumes on Scotland and England with very little trouble, but Moore had neither their historical training nor their despatch in writing. Laborious con- scientiousness and indecision are a fatal combination for a man who undertakes a new kind of task late in life. The history sat like a nightmare on Moore for fifteen years, and after all was left unfinished on the melancholy collapse of his powers in 1845, From the time that he burdened himself with it Moore did very little else, beyond a few occasional squibs and songs, the last flashes of his genius, and the Travels of an Irish Gentleman in Search of a Religion, although he had tempting offers of more lucrative and, it might have been thought, more congenial work. Moore's character had a deeper manliness and sincerity than he often gets credit for; and his tenacious persistence in this his last task was probably due to an honourable ambition to connect himself as a benefactor with the history of his country, by opening the*~~

~~*eyes of the English people to the misgovernment of Ireland, It was a misjudgment altogether ; the light irony of Captain Rock was much more effective than the minute carefully- weighed details of the history. Moore's last years were harassed by the weakness and misconduct of his sons, and by pecuniary embarrassments. An annual pension of £300 was conferred upon him in 1833, and he had always received large sums for his work ; but, while waiting for the sinecure which never came, he had contracted an unfortunate habit of drawing upon his publishers in advance. After the death of his last child in 1845, Moore became a total wreck, but he lingered on till 26th February 1852. The diary, which he seems to have kept chiefly that it might be the means of making some provision for his wife, and which contains so many touching expressions of his affection for her, was edited by Lord John Russell with his letters and a fragment of autobiography in 1853- 56. The charge of vanity has often been brought against this diary from the writer's industry in recording many of the compliments paid him by distinguished personages and public assemblies. It is only vanity that is annoyed by the display of vanity in others. (Ww. M.)*~~

~~*MOOR-HEN,! the name by which a bird, often called Water-hen and sometimes Gallinule, is most commonly known in England. An earlier name was Moat-hen, which was appropriate in the days when a moat was the ordinary adjunct of most considerable houses in the country. It is the Gallinula chloropus of ornithologists, and almost too well known to need description. About the size of a small Bantam-hen, but with the body much compressed (as is usual with members of the Family Rallidz, to which it belongs), its plumage above is of a deep olive-brown, so dark as to appear black at a short distance, and beneath*~~

~~*1 Not to be confounded with '* Moor-cock " or '* Moor-fowl," names formerly in general use for the Red Grouse (vol. xi. 221).*~~

~~*MIO36=—*~~

~~*MOO*~~

~~*iron-grey, relieved by some white stripes on the flanks, with the lower tail-coverts of pure white,—these last being very conspicuous as the bird*~~

~~swims. A scarlet frontlet, especially bright in the spring of the year, and a red garter on the tibia of the male render him very showy. Though often frequenting the neighbourhood of man, the Moor- hen seems unable to overcome the inherent stealthy habits of the Rallidx, and hastens to hide itself on the least alarm; but under exceptional circumstances it may be induced to feed, yet always suspiciously, with tame ducks and poultry. It appears to take wing with difficulty, and may be often caught by an active dog; but, in reality, it is capable of sustained flight, its longer excursions being chiefly performed by night, when the peculiar call-note it utters is frequently heard as the bird, itself invisible in the darkness, passes overhead. The nest is a mass of flags, reeds, or other aquatic plants, often arranged with much neatness, almost always near the water's edge, where a clump of rushes is generally chosen ; but should a mill-dam, sluice-gate, or boat-house afford a favourable site, advan- tage will be taken of it, and not unfrequently the bough of a tree at some height from the ground will furnish the place fora cradle. The eggs, from seven to eleven in number, resemble those of the Coot (vol. vi. p. 341), but are smaller, lighter, and brighter in colour, with spots or blotches of reddish-brown. Jn winter, when the inland waters are frozen, the majority of Moor-hens betake themselves to the tidal rivers, and many must leave the country entirely, though a few seem always able to maintain their existence however hard be the frost. The common Moor-hen is extensively spread throughout the Old World, being found also at the Cape of Good Hope, in India, and in Japan. In America it is represented by a very closely-allied form, G. galeata, so called from its rather larger frontal helm, and in Australia by another, G. tenebrosa, which generally wants the white flank-markings. Both closely resemble G. chlor- opus in general habits, as does also the G. pyrrhorrhoa of Madagascar, which has the lower tail-coverts buff instead of white. Celebes and Amboyna possess a smaller cognate species, G. hematopus, with red legs; tropical Africa has the smallest of all, G. angulata ; and some more that have been recognized as distinct are also found in other more or less isolated localities. One of the most remarkable of these is the G. nesiotis of Tristan da Cunha,? which has wholly lost the power of flight concomitantly with the shortening of its wings and a considerable modification of its external apparatus, as well as a strengthening of its pelvic girdle and legs.2 A more extreme development in this direction appears to be exhibited by the singular~~

~~*Habroptila wallacit of Jilolo,t and to some extent by the Pareudiastes pacificus of Samoa,® but at present little is known of either. Of other forms, such as the common Gallinula (Erythra) phenicura, and Gallirex cristata of India, as well as the. South-American species classed in the genus Porphyriops, there is not room to speak; but mention should be made of the remarkable Australian genus 7ribonyx, containing three species,® which seem to be more terrestrial than aquatic in their haunts and habits.*~~

~~*Allied to all these is the genus Porphyrio, including the bird so named by classical writers, and perhaps a dozen other species often called Sultanas and Purple Water- hens, for they all have a plumage of deep blue,—some becoming violet, green, or black in parts, but preserving the white lower tail-coverts, so generally characteristic 2 Proc. Zool. Society, 1861, p. 260, pl. xxx. Ss*~~

~~*3 A somewhat intermediate form seems to be presented by the Moor-hen of the island of St Denis, to the north of Madagascar (Proc, Zool. Society, 1867, p. 1036), hitherto undescribed.*~~

~~*4 Op. cit., 1860, p. 365, pl. clxxii.*~~

~~*5 Op. cil. 0871, Pp: es PleiL*~~

~~*8 Ann. Nat. History, ser. 3, xx. p. 128.*~~

~~*MOO—MOR*~~

~~*of the group; and their beauty is enhanced by their scarlet bill and legs. Two, P. alleni of the Ethiopian Region and the South-American P. parva, are of small size. Of the larger species, P. ceruleus is the " Porphyrio" of the an- cients, and inhabits certain localities on both sides of the Mediterranean, while the rest are widely dispersed within the tropics, and even beyond them, as in Australia and New Zealand. But this last country has produced a more exaggerated form, Votornis, which has an interesting and perhaps unique history. First described from a fossil skull by Prof. Owen,! and then thought to be extinct, an example was soon after taken alive,? the skin of which (with that of another procured like*~~

~~*the first by Mr Walter Mantell) may be seen in the British Museum. Other fossil remains were from time to time noted by Prof. Owen ®; but it began to be feared that the bird had ceased to exist,* until a third example was taken about the year 1879, the skin and most of the bones of which, after undergoing examination in New Zealand by Dr Buller and Prof. T. J. Parker,> found their way to the museum of Dresden, where Dr A. B. Meyer discovered the recent remains to be specifically distinct from the fossil, and while keeping for the latter the name NV. mantelli gives the former that of WV. hochstetteri. What seems to have been a third species of Motornis formerly inhabited Lord HIowe's Island, but is now extinct (see BiRDs, vol. iii. p. 732, note). Whether the genus Aptornis, of which Prof. Owen has described the remains from New Zealand, was most nearly allied to Votornis and Porphyrio caunot here be decided. Prof. T. J. Parker (doc. cit.) con- siders it a "development by degeneration of an ocydromine type" (see OcyDROME). (A. N.)*~~

~~*MOOSE. See DeEsrr, vol. vii. p. 24.*~~

~~*MORADABAD. See Murapapap.*~~

~~*MORAL PIHILOSOPHY. See Eruics, vol. viii. p. 574.*~~

~~*MORATIN, Leanpro FERNANDEZ bE (1760-1828), Spanish dramatist and poet, was the son of N. F. Moratin mentioned below, and was born at Madrid on 10th March 1760. HIis poetical and artistic tastes were early deve- loped, but his father, keenly alive to the difficulties of the literary calling, caused him to be apprenticed to a jeweller. At the age of eighteen Moratin surprised his friends by winning the second prize of the Academy for a heroic poem on the conquest of Granada, and two years afterwards he attracted still more general attention by a similar success of his Leccion Poetica, a satire upon the popular poets of the day. Through Jovellanos he was now appointed secre- tary to Cabarrus on his special mission to France in 1787, and during his stay there he diligently improved his oppor- tunities of becoming acquainted with the contemporary French drama, and of cultivating the acquaintance of men of letters. Of the literary friendships he then formed the most important was that with Goldoni; indeed, Moratin is much more correctly styled 'the Spanish Goldoni" than "the Spanish Moliére." On his return to Spain*~~

~~*Florida Blanca presented him to a sinecure benefice in the diocese of Burgos; and in 1790 his first play, Ill Viejo y la Nisa (The Old Husband and the Young Wife), a highly finished but somewhat dreary verse comedy in three acts, written in 1786, but delayed by objections of the actors,*~~

~~*1 Proe. Zool. Society, 1848, p. 7; Trans., iii. p. 386, pl. lvi.*~~

~~*2 Proce, 1850, pp. 209-214, pl. xxi.; Zrans., iv. pp. 69-74, pl. XXV.*~~

~~*3 Thus the leg-bones and what appeared to be the sternum were described and figured by him (Zrans., iv. pp. 12, 17, pls. ii. iv.), and the pelvis and another femur (vii. pp. 369, 373, pls. xlii. xliii.); but the supposed sternum subsequently proved not to be that of Notornis, and Professor Owen's attention being called to the fact he rectified the error (Proc., 1882, p. 689) which he had previously been "inclined to believe"' (Zrans., viii. p. 120) he had made.*~~

~~*4 Notwithstanding the evidence, which it must be allowed pre-*~~

~~*sented some incongruities, offered by Mr Mackay (Ibis, 1867, p. 144). 5 Trans. N. Zeal. Inst., xiv. pp. 238-258.*~~

~~*S09*~~

~~*was at length produced at the Teatro del Principe. Its success was only moderate. Ill Café or La Comedia Nueva, on the other hand, given at the same theatre two years afterwards, at once became deservedly popular, and had considerable influence in modifying the public taste. It is a short prose comedy in two acts, avowedly intended to expose the follies and absurdities of the contemporary dramatists—the school of Lope de Vega run to seed—who commanded the support of the masses ; and it is still read with pleasure for the simple ingenuity of its plot, the live- liness of its dialogue, and the easy grace of its style, while to the student of literature it throws much useful light on the contemporary state of the Spanish drama, and on the reforming aims of the author and his party. In the same year (1792) Florida Blanca was disgraced, but Moratin at once found another patron in Godoy, who provided him with a pension and the means for foreign travel ; he accord- ingly passed through France into*~~

~~*England, where he began the free and somewhat incorrect translation of Hamlet which was printed in 1798, but which has never been per- formed. From England he passed to the Low Countries, Germany, Switzerland, and Italy, and on his return to the Peninsula in 1796 he received a lucrative post at the Foreign Office. HIs next appearance in the drama did not take place until 1803, when £7 Baron was first publicly exhibited in its present form. It successfully weathered a determined attempt to damn it, and still keeps the stage. It was followed in 1804 by La Mogigata (The Female Hypo- crite), of which imperfect manuscript copies had begun to circulate as early as 1791. It was favourably received, as on the whole it deserved to be, by a public which was now at one with the author as to the canons of his art, and an attempt to suppress it by means of the Inquisition on alleged religious grounds (La Mogigata being an imitation, a somewhat feeble one, of Molitre's Zartuffe) was success- fully frustrated. Moratin's last and crowning triumph in the department of original comedy was achieved in 1806, when Zl Si de las Nifias (A Girl's Yes) was performed night after night to crowded houses, ran through several Spanish editions in a year, and was soon translated into several foreign languages. In 1808, on the fall of the Prince of the Peace, Moratin found it necessary to leave Spain, but shortly afterwards he returned and consented to accept the office of royal librarian under Joseph Bona- parte—a false step, which, as the event proved, permanently alienated from him the sympathies of his country, and compelled him to spend almost all the rest of his life in exile. In 1812 his Escuela de los Maridos, a translation and adaptation to the more dignified and stately Spanish standard of Moliére's Ecole des Maris, was produced at Madrid, and in 1814 E17 Medico a Palos (from Le Médecin Malgré Ini) at Barcelona. From 1814 to 1828 Moratin lived in France, principally at Paris, and devoted himself to the preparation of a learned work on the history of the Spanish drama (Origenes del Teatro Espaiiol), which unfor- tunately stops short of the period of Lope de Vega. HIe died at Paris on 21st June 1828.*~~

~~*An edition of his Obras Dramaticas y Liricas in three vols. was published at Paris in 1825. The lyrical works, consisting of odes, sonnets, aud ballads, are of comparatively little interest; they reflect the influence of his father and of the Italian Conti. The best edition of the Obras is that*~~

~~published by the Spanish Academy of History in four vols. at Madrid in 1830-1881 ; see also vol. u. of Biblioteca de Autores Espajioles (1846).~~

~~MORATIN, Niconas FERNANDEZ DE (1737-1780), Spanish poet, was descended from an old Biscayan family, and was born at Madrid in 1737. He was educated at the Jesuit college in Calatayud, and afterwards studied law at the university of Valladolid. He then received an appointment in the service of Queen Elizabeth, the widow of Philip V., which enabled him to see much of the society~~

~~Nearly 97 per cent. of the soil of Moravia is productive, arable land occupying 53, gardens and meadows 8°, pasturage 9, and forests 26 per cent. of the total. It is one of the chief corn-growing regions of the Austrian empire, and also produces excellent hemp, flax, potatoes, vegetables, and fruit, The following table shows the amount of the chief crops in 1881 :—~~

~~Wheat . . 454,480 qrs. Leguminous crops 27,850 ewt.~~

~~of leading statesmen, poets, and men of letters; and ultimately he became the leading spirit of the club of literary men which frequented the Fonda de San Sebastian and included Ayala, Cadahalso, Iriarte, Conti, and others. In 1772 he left the court, and was called to the bar ; four years afterwards he succeeded Ayala in the chair of poetry in the Imperial College. He died on 11th May 1780. Moratin became at an early period of his life a convert to the opinions of those who (such as Montiano and others) were attempt-~~

~~ing to drive the native romantic drama from the Spanish stage, and Ha et et " a (for sugar) TE " his first literary efforts were devoted to the cause of theatrical Ae eo 1.497 450 " Hem 2 ee " reform, In 1762 he published three small pamphlets entitled Maize ae: 8 tel ee Desengatio al Teatro Espatiol (The Truth told about the Spanish Potatoes . 1,271,850ewb Wine… 9369, 460 ' ay~~

~~Stage), in which he severely criticized the old drama generally, and particularly the still flourishing "auto sacramental." They were so far successful that the exhibition of " autos sacramentales " was prohibited by royal edict three years afterwards (June 1765). In 1762 he also published a play entitled La Petimetra (the Petite- Maitresse, or Female Fribble), the earliest original Spanish comedy formed avowedly on French models. It was preceded by a disserta- tion in which Lope de Vega and Calderon are very unfavourably criticized. Neither the Petimetra, however, nor the Luereeia, an original tragedy still more strictly in accordance with the conventions of the French stage, ever obtained the honour of a public repre- sentation. Two subsequent tragedies, Hormesinda (1770) and Guzman el Bueno (1777), were exhibited with partial success. In 1764 Moratin published a collection of short pieces, chiefly lyrical, under the title of Zl Poeta, and in 1765 a short didactic poem on the chase (Diana o Arte de la Caza). HIs "'epic canto" on the destruction of his ships by Cortes (Las Naves de Cortes Destruidas), written, but without success, for a prize offered by the Academy in 1777, was not published until after his death (1785). It is justly characterized by Ticknor as " the noblest poem of its class produced in Spain during the 18th century ;" it must be remembered, how- ever, that the historical epic in Spain is chiefly remarkable for its mass. A: volume of Obras Postwmas, with a life, was published at Barcelona in 1821, and reprinted at London in 1825. See also Biblioteca de Autores Espaioles, vol. ii. (1846).~~

~~MORAVIA (in German Maren), a margraviate and crownland in the Cisleithan part of the Austrian-HIungarian empire, lies between 15° 5' and 18° 45' E, long., and 48° 50' and 50° 10' N. lat. Its superficial extent is about 8580 square miles. Physically Moravia may be described as a mountainous plateau sloping from north to south, and bordered on three sides by mountain ranges of considerable elevation. On the north it is separated from Austrian and Prussian Silesia by the Sudetes, which attain a height of 4775 feet in the Altvater or Schneeberg, and sink gradually towards the west, where the valley of the Oder forms a break between the German mountains and the Carpathians. The latter are the dividing range between Moravia and HIungary, having here an average height of 3000 to 4000 feet. On the west are the so-called Bohemian-Moravian~~

~~*mountains, forming the elevated east margin of Bohemia and descending in terraces, but without clearly-defined ridges, to the river March. Branches of these different ranges intersect the whole country, making the surface very irregular, except towards the south, where it consists of fertile and extensive plains. Owing to this configuration of the soil the climate varies more than might be expected in so small an area, so that, while the vine and maize are cultivated successfully in the southern plains, the weather in the mountainous districts is somewhat rigorous. The mean average temperature at Briinn is 48° Fahr. The harvest amid the mountains is often four or five weeks later than that in the south. Almost the whole of Moravia belongs to the basin of the March or Morava, from which it derives its name, and which, after traversing the entire length of the country in a course of 140 miles and receiving numerous tributaries (Thaya, Hanna, &c.), enters the Dan- ube at Pressburg. The Oder rises among the mountains in the north-east of Moravia, but soon turns to the north and quits the country. With the exception of a stretch of the March none of the rivers are navigable. Moravia is destitute of lakes, but contains numerous large ponds. There are also several mineral springs.*~~

~~*Large quantities of hay and other fodder, besides hops, clover-seed, anise, fennel, &sc., are also raised. The forests on the slopes of the Sudetes produce abundance of excellent timber, The live-stock of Moravia in 1880 consisted of 122,858 horses, 677,807 cattle, 158,852 sheep, 205,976 swine, and 116,880 goats. The breed of sheep on the Carpathians is of an improved quality, and the horses bred in the fertile plain of the Hanna are highly esteemed. Geese and poultry are also reared. In 1880 Moravia contained 83,440 beehives, and the produce of wax and honey may be estimated at 3500 to 4000 cwts.*~~

~~*The mineral wealth of Moravia, consisting chiefly of coal and iron, is very considerable. In 1881 the produce included 392,625 tons of anthracite coal, 50,665 tons of lignite, 5700 tons of iron-ore, 1713 tons of graphite, and smaller quantities of alum, potter's clay, and roofing-slate. The mines give employment to 4500 persons, and the annual value of the raw minerals produced is about £370,000. The amount of raw and cast*~~

~~*iron produced by the ironworks and foundries in 1880 was 40,000 tons, and the value about £320,000.*~~

~~*In point of industry Moravia belongs to the foremost*~~

~~*provinces of the empire. The principal manufactures are woollen, cotton, linen, and cast-iron goods, beet-sugar, leather, and brandy. Its woollen cloths and flannels, the manufacture of which centres in Briinn, have long been celebrated. The linen manufacture is decreasing in importance as cotton manufactures develop. The quantity of sugar made from beetroot is steadily increasing ; in 1880 about 600,000 cwts. of sugar were produced in fifty- seven factories. About 10 per cent. of the total value of the manufactures of Austria, representing an annual amount of £13,000,000 to £15,000,000, falls to the share of Moravia. The trade of Moravia consists mainly in the exchange of the various raw and manufactured materials above men- tioned for colonial produce, salt, and raw manufacturing material. The lack of navigable rivers or canals is com- pensated by good roads and an extensive railway system. The most important commercial towns are Brinn for manu- factures and Olmiitz for live-stock. In educational matters Moravia compares favourably with most of the Austrian states. It contains 10 gymnasia, 10 real-gymnasia, 13 real-schools, numerous schools for special purposes, and nearly 2000 lower schools. The old university of Briinn is now represented by a technical academy anda theological seminary. Of children of school-going age 79 per cent. attend school regularly. In 1870 about 46 per cent. of the Moravian recruits could write their names, as compared with the extremes of 83} per cent. in Lower Austria and 1} per cent. in Dalmatia. Fully 95 per cent. of the inhabitants are Roman Catholics under the ecclesiastical jurisdiction of the archbishop of Olmiitz and the bishop of Briinn, while about 2 per cent. are Jews, and 3 per cent. Protestants.*~~

~~*Moravia sends 36 members to the Austrian reichstag, 9 of these representing the landed proprietors, 16 the towns and chambers of commerce, and 11 the peasantry.*~~

~~*Provincial affairs are managed by the landtag, consisting of the Roman Catholic archbishop and bishop, 30 repre- sentatives of the landed gentry, 37 representatives of the towns and chambers of commerce, and 31 representatives of the country districts. There are six courts of justice of the first instance in Moravia, and one of the second instance (at Briinn), whence appeal lies to the supreme court at Vienna. For military and judicial purposes Moravia is united with Austrian Silesia.*~~

~~*Moravia belongs to the group of old Slavonic states which have preserved their nationality while losing their political independence. Upwards of 70 per cent. of the inhabitants are Slavs, who are scarcely distinguishable from their Bohemian neighbours. The differences in dialect. between the two countries are very slight, and are being gradually lost in a common literary language. The name of Czech, however, is usually reserved for the Bohemians, while the Slavs of Moravia and West Hungary are called Moravians and Slovaks. The Czechs have lost sight of their ancient tribal names, but the Moravians are still divided into numerous secondary groups (Hovaks, Hanaks, &c.), differing slightly in costume and dialect. The peasants usually wear a national costume. In the south of Moravia are afew thousand Croats, still preserving their manners and language after three centuries' separation from their kinsmen in Croatia; and in the north-east are numerous Poles. The Germans form about 26 per cent. of the population, and are found mostly in the towns and in the border districts. The Jews are the best educated of the inhabitants, and in a few small towns form a full half of the population. Their sympathies generally lie with the Germans. In 1880 the population was 2,153,407, showing an increase of 136,133 since 1869. Moravia is oneof the most densely-populated parts of Austria-Hungary, the proportion being 252 persons per square mile. About 12 per cent. of the births are illegitimate. The chief towns are Briinn, the capital and industrial centre (82,660 inha- bitants), Olmiitz, a strong fortress defending the "' Moravian Gate" (20,176 inhabitants), Znaim, and Iglau.*~~

~~*History.—At the earliest period of which we have any record Moravia was occupied by the Boii, the Celtic race which has per- petuated its name in Bohemia. Afterwards it was inhabited by the Germanic Quadi, who accompanied the Vandals in their westward migration ; and they were*~~

~~*replaced in the 5th century by the Rugii and Heruli. The latter tribes were succeeded about the year 550 a.p. by the Lombards, and these in their turn were soon forced to retire before an overwhelming invasion of Slavs, who, on their settlement there, took the name of Moravians (German, Mehranen or Mahren) from theriver Morava. 'These new colonists became the permanent inhabitants of this district, and in spite of the hostility of the Avars on the east founded the kingdom of Great Moravia, which was considerably more extensive than the province now bearing*~~

~~*the name. 'Towards the end of the 8th century they aided Charle- magne in putting an end to the Avar kingdom, and were rewarded*~~

~~*by receiving part of it, corresponding to North Hungary, as a fief*~~

~~*of the German emperor, whose supremacy they also acknowledged more or less for their other possessions. After the death of Charlemagne the Moravian princes took advantage of the dissen- sions of his successors to enlarge their territories and assert their independence, and Rastislaus (cirea 850) even formed an alliance with the Bulgarians and the Byzantine emperor. The chief result of the alliance with the latter was the conversion of the Moravians to Christianity by two Greek monks, Cyril and Methodius, des- a on from Constantinople. Rastislaus finally fell into the*~~

~~*ands of Louis the German, who blinded him, and forced him to end his days as a monk ; but his successor, Suatopluk (0b. 890), was equally vigorous, and extended the kingdom of Great Moravia to the Oder on the west and the Gran on the east. At this period there seemed a strong probability of the junction of the north- western and south-eastern Slavs, and the formation of a great Slavonic power to the east of the German empire. This prospect, however, was dissipated by the invasions of the Magyar hordes in the 10th century, the brunt of which was borne by Moravia. The invaders were encouraged by the German monarchs and aided by the dissensions aud mismanagement of the successors of Suatopluk, and in a short time completely subdued the eastern part of Great Moravia. The name of Moravia was henceforth confined to the*~~

district to which it now applies. For about a century the posses- sion of this marchland was disputed by Hungary, Poland, and Bohemia, but in 1029 it was finally incorporated with Bohemia, and so became an integral part of the German empire. Towards the close of the 12th century Moravia was raised to the dignity of a margraviate, but with the proviso that it should be held as a fief of the crown of Bohemia. It henceforth shared the fortunes of this country, and was usually assigned as an apanage to younger menibers of the Bohemian royal house. In 1410 Jobst, margrave of Moravia, was made emperor of Germany, but died a few months after his election. In 1526, on the death of Louis II. of Hungary, Moravia came with the rest of that prince's possessions into the hands of the Austrian house. During the Thirty Years' War the depopulation of Moravia was so great that after the peace of West- phalia the states-general published an edict giving every man permission to take two wives, in order to "'repeople the country." After the Seven Years' War Moravia was united in one province with the remnant of Silesia, but in 1849 it was made a separate and independent crownland. The most noticeable feature of recent Moravian history has been the active sympathy ofits inhabitants with the anti-Teutonic home-rule agitation of the Bohemian Czechs (see BOHEMIA).

Authorities.—Dudik, Mahrens allgemeine Geschichte (Briinn, 1860-76); Wolny, Die Markgrafschaft Mahren, topographisch, statistisch, und historisch geschildert (Briinn, 1835-40); D'Elvert, Beitrdge zur Geschichte der Neugestaltung Mdhrens wm 1?ten Jahrhundert (1867); Trampler, Heimatskunde der Mark Mdhren (Vienna, 1877); Statistische Jahrbticher of the Imperial Statistical Commission (Vienna). (J. F. M.)

MORAVIAN BRETHREN, Taz, are a society of Chris- tians whose history can be traced back to the year 1457 and their origin found among the religious movements in Bohemia which followed the martyrdom of John Huss by the council of Constance. The beginnings of the Bohemian Brethren (for that was their earlier name) are somewhat obscure. The followers of Huss broke up into two factions, one of which, the Calixtines, was willing to acknowledge allegiance to Rome, provided the " compacts " of the council of Basel permitting the Lord's Supper sub utraque specie were maintained, and in the end it became the national church of

~~Bohemia; the other, the Taborites, refused all terms of reconciliation, and appealed to arms. Separate from both these were many pious people who were content to worship God in simple fashion, in quiet meetings for prayer and Scripture-reading, like the Gottesfreunde of Germany, and who called themselves Brethren. Bohemian historians have conclusively shown that the Brethren repre- sent the religious kernel of the Hussite movement, and do not come either from the German Waldenses or from the Taborites. Before 1457 many of these quiet Christians were known as the Brethren of Chelcic, and were the followers of Peter Chelcicky, a Bohemian, whose religious influence, strongly Puritan in its character, seems to have been inferior only to that of Huss. In that year the Calix- tine leader, Rokyzana, wishing to protect them, permitted his nephew Gregory to gather them together at Kunewald near Senftenberg, and form them into a community. This meeting was really the foundation of the Brethren or Unitas Fratrum, and its founder Gregory announced that he and his companions received and taught the rejection of oaths, of the military profession, of all official rank, titles, and endowments, and of a hierarchy. They did not profess communism, but they held that the rich should give of their riches to the poor, and that all Christians should live as nearly as possible in the fashion of the apostolic com- munity at Jerusalem. At the synod of Lhota near Reichenau, in 1467, they constituted themselves into a church separate from the Calixtine or national church of Bohemia. They appointed ministers of their own election and with the guidance of the "lot," and had an organiza- tion and discipline of their own ; at their head was a bishop, who, it is said, received ordination from the Austrian Waldenses, but apostolic succession among the Brethren is one of the most obscure parts of their history.~~

~~The constitution of the society was revised at a second synod held at Lhota under the direction of Luke of Prague, who may be regarded as their second founder. This re-~~

~~organization enabled the society to grow rapidly. In the earlier years of the 16th century the Unitas included nearly 400 congregations in~~

~~*Bohemia and Moravia with 150,000 members, and, including Poland, embraced three provinces Bohemia, Moravia, Poland. Each province had its own bishops and synods, but all were united in one church and governed by the general synod.*~~

~~*The Lutheran movement in Germany awakened lively interest among the Brethren, and some unsuccessful at- tempts were made under the leadership of Augusta to unite with the Lutheran Church (1528-1546) ; but when the Calvinist reformation reached Bohemia the Brethren found themselves more in sympathy with it than with the Lutheran. The Jesuit anti-Reformation, instigated by Rudolf and his brothers Matthias and Ferdinand, found the Brethren a prosperous church, but the pitiless persecu- tion which followed the unsuccessful attempt at revolution crushed the whole Protestantism of Bohemia, and in 1627 the Evangelical churches there had ceased to exist. About the same time the Polish branch of the Unity, in which many refugees from Bohemia and Moravia had found a home, was absorbed in the Reformed Church of Poland. A few families, however, especially in Moravia, held religious services in secret, preserved the traditions of their fathers, and, in spite of the vigilance of their enemies, maintained some correspondence with each other. In 1722 some of these left home and property to seek a place where they could worship in freedom. The first company, led by Christian David, a mechanic, settled by invitation from Count Zinzendorf on his estate at Berthelsdorf near Zittau, in Saxony. They were soon joined by others (about 300 coming within seven years), and built a town which they called Herrnhut. The small community at first adopted the constitution and teaching of the old Unitas. The epis- copate had been continued, and in 1735 David Nitschmann was consecrated first bishop of the Renewed Moravian Church. The new settlement was not, however, destined to be simply a revival of the organization of the Bohemian Brethren. Zinzendorf, who had given them an asylum, came with his wife, family, and chaplain to live among the refugees. He was a Lutheran who had accepted Spener's pietism, and he wished to form a society distinct from national churches and devoted to good works. After long negotiation a union was effected between the Lutheran element and the adherents of the ancient Unitas Pratrum. The emigrants at Herrnhut attended the parish church at Berthelsdorf, and were simply a Christian society within*~~

~~*the Lutheran Church (ecclesiola in ecclesia). This pecu- liarity is still to some extent preserved in the German branch of the church, and the Moravian Brethren regard themselves as a church within the church, or the Brethren's Congregation within the Evangelical Protestant churches, which enables them to do evangelistic work without pro- selytizing. The society adopted a code of rules in 1727, and ordained twelve elders to carry on pastoral work. This was the revival of the Unitas Fratrum as a church.*~~

~~*Constitution.—The Unity of Moravian Brethren at present em- braces three provinces—German, English, and American. Each province has its own government by synod and provincial elders' conferences ; but it forms with the other two one organic whole, and is therefore under the control of a general government also. The general synod, which governs the whole church, meets every ten years at Herrnhut, and is attended by delegates from all the pro- vinces and from the missions. The elders' conference of the Unity is an executive board, which superintends all the provinces and the missions. The present constitution dates from 1857, when the old organization of the Unitas Fratrum was remodelled.*~~

~~*Ministers and Worship.—The ministers are bishops, presbyters, and deacons. The bishops alone can ordain, but they are not diocesan. They are appointed by the general synod, or by the elders' conference of the Unity, and have official seats both in the*~~

~~*synods of the provinces where they preside, and in the general synod. Unordained assistants in the ministry, whether men or*~~

~~*women, are formally set apart as acolytes. The worship is litur- gical. Special services are used on the festivals of the ecclesiastical year, on the "Memorial Days" 1st March, 12th May, 17th and 25th June, 6th July, 13th and 21st August, 16th September, 31st October, and 13th November. Love-feasts are still held, but the feet-washing and the use of the lot in the election of ministers and in marriages have fallen into disuse. The use of the lot in marriages was abolished in 1818.*~~

~~*Doctrine.—The Moravian Church has no formal creed, but its doctrine, as found in the catechism, in the Easter morning litany, and in the Synodal Results, embraces the following points (settled by the synod of 1879) :—(1) that Scripture is the only rule of faith and practice, (2) the total depravity of human nature, (3) the love of God the Father, (4) the real Godhead and the real humanity of Jesus Christ, (5) our reconciliation unto God, and our justification before Him, through the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, (6) the doctrine of the Holy Ghost and the operations of His grace, (7) good works as the fruit of the Spirit, (8) the fellowship of believers one with another in Christ Jesus, (9) the second coming of the Lord in glory, and the resurrection of the dead unto life or unto condemnation.*~~

~~*Work.—(a) Home Work in the Three Provinces.—This embraces two divisions. (1) Besides congregational work, special home missions are carried on in each province. In the German province there is a peculiar home mission called the Diaspora, which dates from 1729. Its object is unsectarian. It seeks to excite and foster spiritual life by means additional to those provided by the estab- lished churches, and does not make proselytes nor strive to draw members from other Protestant churches. The work is carried on in Denmark, in Norway and Sweden, in the various parts of Germany, in the Baltic provinces of Russia, in Poland, cl in Switzerland. In the English province home mission work is conducted on the principle of establishing preaching-stations in populous places, which may ultimately become congregations connected with the church. There is also a society for propagating the gospel in Ireland. The work in the American province is of the same kind. (2) The Brethren have always paid special attention to education. Each province has a theological college, and there are in the three pro- vinces forty-seven boarding-schools for boys and girls not connected with the Moravian Chien. At these schools nearly 2500 pupils are educated.*~~

~~*(b) Foreign Missions,—The Moravian Church since its reorgani- zation by Zinzendorf has been the missionary church par excellence. The third jubilee of missions was celebrated in 1882. The first period began with 1732, when two men, Leonard Dover and David Nitschmann, were sent to preach to the negroes of St Thomas ; when it ended in 1782, the church*~~

~~*had 167 brethren and sisters occupying 27 stations. In 1832 the church had to record 40,000 converts under the direction of 209 missionaries at 41 stations. The latest statistics show 115 stations with 317 additional preach- ing-places, 7 normal schools with 70 scholars, 215 day schools with 15,616 pupils, 215 teachers, and 634 monitors, 94 Sunday schools with 18,355 pupils and 884 teachers, 312 missionaries (male and female), 1471 native assistants, and 76,646 converts.*~~

~~*(ce) The Bohemian Mission.—The Brethren early made missionary circuits from Herrnhut and Silesia through Bohemia and Moravia, and since 1862 this itinerating work was largely increased. In 1869 it was resolved to re-establish the church in these countries of its birth, and the first congregation was inaugurated in October 1870. It now contains four congregations, and in 1880 obtained legal sanction.*~~

~~*(d) The Leper Mission was begun in 1822 in South Africa, and carried on there till 1867, when the English Government appointed a chaplain to do the work. The Leper Home in Jerusalem was established in 1867, and formally taken over by the elders' confer- ence of the Unity in 1881.*~~

~~*Statistics,—*~~

~~*The Three Home Provinces. Foreign and Bohemian Missions. Bishops '. 10 Bishops : : 3 Presbyters and Deacons 291 Missionaries . 167 Communicants 18,871 Female Agents 110*~~

~~*Native Ministers and Assistants . : 35*~~

~~*Native Agents 1,524*~~

~~*Communicants 26,455*~~

~~*Literature.—Gindely, Geschichte der bohm. Briider, 2 vols., Prag., 1868 ; Goll, Geschichte d. béhm. Briider, Prag., 1882; Holmes, History of the United Brethren, 2 vols., London, 1825; Bost, Hist. de VEglise des Fréres, 2 vols., Paris, 1844 (also Eng. translation); Seifferth, Church Constitution of the Bohemian and Moravian Brethren. (I. M. L.)*~~

~~*MORAYSHIRE. See Exem, vol. viii. p. 129.*~~

~~*MORBIHAN, a department of western France, formed of part of Lower Brittany, lies on the Atlantic seaboard between 2° 2' and 3° 45' W. long., and between 47° 26' and 48° 12' N. lat., being bounded S.E. by the department of Loire-Inférieure, E. by that of Ille-et-Vilaine, N. by Cotes*~~

~~*du Nord, and W. by Finistere. Its chief town, Vannes, is 248 miles west-south-west of Paris in a direct line and 310 by rail. From the Montagnes Noires on the northern frontier the western portion of Morbihan slopes southward towards Finistére, watered by the Quimperlé, the Blavet with its affluent the Scorff, and the Auray; the eastern portion, on the other hand, dips towards the south-east in the direction of the course of the Oust and its feeders, which fall into the Vilaine. Though the Montagnes Noires con- tain the highest point (975 feet) in the department, the most striking orographic feature of Morbihan is the dreary, tree- less, streamless tract of moorland and marsh known as the Landes of Lanvaux, which extends (west-north-west to east- south-east) with a width of from 1 to 3 miles for a distance of 31 miles between the valley of the Claie and that of the Arz (affluents of the Oust), A striking contrast to this district is afforded by the various inlets of the sea, whose shores are clothed with vegetation of exceptional richness, large fig-trees, rose-laurels, and aloes growing as if in Algeria. The coast-line is exceedingly irregular: the mouth of the Vilaine (the longest river of the department), the peninsula of Ruis, the great gulf of Morbihan (Inner Sea), from which the department takes its name, and the mouth of the Auray, the long Quiberon peninsula attached to the mainland by the narrow isthmus of Fort Penthiévre, the deep-branching estuary of Etel, the mouths of the Blavet and the Scorff uniting to form the port of Lorient, and, finally, on the borders of Finistére the mouth of the Laita, follow each other in rapid succession. Off the coast lie the islands of Groix, Belle-isle, Houat, and Hoedik. Vessels drawing 13 feet can ascend the Vilaine as far as Redon; the Blavet is canalized throughout its course through the department ; and the Oust, as part of the canal from Nantes to Brest, forms a great waterway by Redon, Josselin, Rohan, and Pontivy. The climate of*~~

~~*Morbihan is characterized by great moisture and mildness, due to the influence of the Gulf Stream.*~~

~~*Of the 2625 square miles forming the department, nearly one half is occupied by moors (andes), arable soil forming little more than a third part of the whole, meadows a tenth, and woodlands a fifteenth. The horses number 36,000, horned cattle 285,000, sheep 92,000, pigs 60,000, goats 6000, and beehives 76,000. In 1882 the agricultural produce comprised 3,751,680 bushels of rye and 1,544,170 bushels of wheat; and considerable quantities of buckwheat, oats, potatoes, pease and beans, chestnuts, beetroot, hemp, colza, and flax are grown. A little wine also is made, but the usual liquor of the district is cider (manufactured to the extent of 11 to 13 million gallons per annum). 'The sea-ware gathered along the coast helps greatly to improve the soil. Outside of Lorient there is little industrial activity in Morbihan, though canvas, leather, preserved foods, paper, and chemical products derived from the sea are all manufactured. Salt marshes give employment to 400 hands, and yield on an average 9892 tons of salt; and slate, kaolin, iron-ore, and granite are also worked. The catching and curing of sardines and the breeding of oysters form the business of many of the inhabitants of the coast, who also fish for anchovies, lobsters, &c., for tinning. There are 154 miles of railway in the department, and it was intended (1883) that the line from Nantes to Brest should have branches from Auray to St Brieuc and to Quiberon, and from Questembert to Plocrmel. Morbihan is divided into four arrondissements,—Vannes, Lorient, Ploermel, and Pontivy—87 cantons, and 249 communes. The population in 1881 was 521,614.*~~

~~*Few departments contain so many localities interesting for their historical associations. Besides the megalithic monuments of Carnac (2800 inhabitants) (g.v.) and of Locmariaquer (2050), may be mentioned—Sarzeau (5720) with its castle of Sucinio, one of the ancient dukes of Brittany ; Josselin (2710) with the tomb of Olivier de Clisson, constable of France, and of his second wife Marguerite de Rohan ; the castle of the Rohans, and in the neighbour- hood a column in memory of the " Combat of the Thirty ;" Guéméné (1570) and the chateau of the Rohan Guéméné family ; Le Palais (4885), the chief place in Belle-isle, containing the chateau of Fouquet (Louis XIV.'s superintendent of*~~

~~*finance) and the hospital erected by his wife. Quiberon (2380) is associated with the disaster of the French émigrés ; Hennebont (6050) has a magnificent railway viaduct over the Blavet, and La Roche Bernard (1230) a suspension*~~

~~*nee over the Vilaine, 646 feet long and 108 feet above spring 1des.*~~

~~*MORDAUNT, Cuares. See PETERBOROUGH, EARL OF.*~~

~~*MORDVINIANS, more correctly Morpva or Morpvs, are a people numbering about one million, of Finnish origin, belonging to the Ural-Altaic family, who inhabit the middle Volga provinces of Russia and spread in small detached communities to the south and east of these. Their settlement in the basin of the Volga is of high antiquity. One of the two great branches into which they are divided, the Aorses (now Erzya), is mentioned by Ptolemy as dwelling between the Baltic Sea and the Ural mountains, whilst the Aorses of Asia occupied at the same time the country to the north-east of the Caspian between the Volga and the Jaxartes. Their king is said to have come with 200,000 horsemen to aid Mithradates in his wars. Strabo mentions also the Aorses as inhabit- ants of the country between the Don, the Caspian Sea, and the Caucasus. The name of Mordvs is mentioned for the first time by Jordanes, and they were known under the same name to the Russian annalist Nestor. The Russians made raids on the Mordvs in the 12th century, and after the fall of Kasan they rapidly invaded and colonized their abodes. The Mordvs now occupy the Russian provinces of Simbirsk, Penza, Samara, and Nijni- Novgorod, as well as those of Saratoff and Tamboff. But their villages are dispersed among those of the Russians, and they constitute only 10 to 12 per cent. of the popu- lation in the four first-named provinces, and from 5 to 6 per cent. in the last two. They are unequally distri- buted over this area in ethnographical islands, and con- stitute as much as 23 to 44 per cent. of the population of several districts of the governments of Tamboff, Simbirsk, Samara, and Saratoff, and only 2 or 3 per cent. in other districts of the same provinces. A small number of Mordvs are found also in the provinces of Ufa, Orenburg, Astrakhan, and even in Siberia as far east as the river Tom. They are divided into two*~~

~~*great branches, the Erzya and the Moksha, differing in their ethnological features and in their language. The southern branch, or the Moksha, have a darker skin and darker eyes and hair than the northern. A third branch, the Karatays, is due to mixture with Tatars, whilst a fourth branch, mentioned by several authors, is, according to Mainoff, but a local name for pure Mordvs. 'Their language is considered by M. Ahlqvist as the third branch of the Western Finnish family, the two other branches being the Laponian and the Baltic Finnish, which last embodies now the languages of the Karelians, the Tavastes, the Wotes, the Wespes, the Esthes, and the Lives. The Mordvs are for the most part completely Russified,—even the Mokshas who consider themselves as the only pure Mordvs,—yet they have well maintained their ethnological features, and can be easily distinguished even when living completely as Russians. They have nearly quite forgotten their own language, only a few women remembering it among the Mokshas; but they have maintained a good deal of their old national dress, especially the women, whose profusely embroidered skirts, original hair-dress, large earrings which sometimes are merely hare-tails, and numerous necklaces covering all the chest and consisting of all possible ornaments easily dis- tinguish them from Russian women. They have mostly dark hair, but blue eyes, generally small and rather narrow. The cephalic index of the Mordvs is very near to that of the Finns. They are brachycephalous, or sub-brachycepha- lous, and a few are mesaticephalous. They are finely built, rather tall and strong, and broad-chested. Their chief occu- pation is agriculture ; they work harder and (in the basin of the Moksha) are more prosperous than their Russian neighbours. 'Their capacities as carpenters were well*~~

~~*known in Old Russia, and Ivan the Terrible used them to build bridges and clear forests during his advance on Kasan. At present they manufacture in their villages great quantities of wooden ware of various sorts. They are also great masters of apiculture, and the commonwealth of bees often appears in their poetry and religious beliefs. All explorers are unanimous in recognizing their honesty, morality, and sympathetic character ; it is noticed also that they have remarkable linguistic capacities, and learn with great ease not only Russian but also several*~~

~~*Finnish and Turkish dialects. Nearly all are Christians; they received baptism in the reign of Elizabeth ; the Noncon- formists have recently made many fervent proselytes among them. But they still preserve very much of their own rich mythology, which they have adapted to a certain ex- tent to the Christian religion. They have preserved also, especially the less Russified Moksha, the practice of kid- napping brides, with the usual battles between the party of the bridegroom and that of the family of the bride. The worship of trees, water (especially of the water-divinity which favours marriage), the sun or Shkay, who is the chief divinity, the moon, the thunder, and the frost, and that devoted to the home-divinity Kardaz-serko can be seen in full force among them; and a small stone altar or flat stone covering a small pit to receive the blood of slaughtered animals can be found in very many houses. Their burial- customs are of a quite pagan character. On the fortieth day after the death of a kinsman the dead is not only supposed to return home but a member of his household, dressed in his dress, plays his part, and, coming from the grave, speaks in his name. The practice of animal sacrifice is still deep rooted among the Mokshas, who continue to drink the warm blood of immolated animals.*~~

~~*The Mordvs have always had a great attraction for Russian inquirers ; Strahlenberg, Georgi, Pallas, and especially Lepekhin have written about them. Melnikoff has published in several Russian periodicals interesting sketches of their religious beliefs. A great number of smaller sketches have appeared in periodicals ; these are enumerated by Mainoff in the Izvestia of the Russian Geo- graphical Society for 1877. Entrusted by the Geographical Society with the study of this race, Mainoff has recently made extensive anthropological measurements and studies of their customs and common-law. The results are published, but not yet in full, in the Izvestia of the Russian Geographical Society for 1878, and in the periodicals Slovo for 1879, and Old and New Russia for 1878, They were to appear in full in the Memoirs of the Society.*~~

~~*MORE, Hanwaw (1745-1833), who was born at Staple- ton near Bristol in 1745, may be said to have made three reputations in the course of her long life: first, as a clever verse-writer and witty converser in the circle of Johnson, Reynolds, and Garrick ; next, as an animated writer on moral and religious subjects on the Puritanic side; and lastly, as a practical*~~

~~*philanthropist. She was the youngest but one of the five daughters of Jacob More, a scion of a landed Norfolk family, who taught a school at Stapleton in Gloucestershire. The sisters established a boarding- school at Bristol in 1767. Hannah's first literary efforts were pastoral plays, suitable for young ladies to act, published in 1773 under the title of A Search after Happiness. Metastasio was one of her literary models; on his opera of Regulus she based a drama, The Inflexible Captive, published in 1774. An annuity from a wealthy admirer set the young lady free for literary pursuits. Some verses on Garrick's Lear led to an acquaintance ; Miss More was taken up by the great female Mecenas, Mrs Montague; and her unaffected enthusiasm, simplicity, vivacity, and wit won the hearts of the whole Johnson set, the great lexicographer himself being especially fasci- nated.. Miss More was petted, complimented, and en- couraged to write. Her ballad, Hldred of the Bower, was praised and quoted by the highest living authorities ; and she wrote for Garrick the tragedy Percy, which was*~~

~~*acted with great success in 1777. Another drama, The*~~

~~*Fatal Falsehood, produced in 1779 after Garrick's death, was less successful. In these dramas she borrows from Shakespeare situation, imagery, and phraseology with greater freedom than modern criticism would tolerate ; but they are written with great vigour, freshness, and effect. Her Sacred Dramas appeared in 1782. These and the sprightly octosyllabic poems Bas-Bleu and Florio (1786) mark her gradual transition to more serious views of life, which were fully expressed in prose in her Thoughts on the Manners of the Great (1788), and An Estimate of the Religion of the Fashionable World (1790). She had never been overpowered by the flattering reception given her in fashionable society ; she had received its attentions with misgivings and reservations, never touching cards, keeping Sunday strictly, and preferring company where she could*~~

~~*have serious conversation ; and finally, soon after Garrick's*~~

~~*death, she set herself against theatre-going under any pretence. There is great uniformity of tone and topic in her ethical books and tracts :—Strictures on Female Educa- tion (1799), Hints towards forming the Character of a Young Princess (1805), Caelebs in Search of a Wife (only nominally a story, 1809), Practical Piety (1811), Chros- tian Morals (1813), Character of St Paul (1815), Moral Sketches (1818). The tone is uniformly animated; the writing fresh and vivacious; her favourite subjects the minor immoralities, the thoughtless self-indulgences and infirmities which are rather indirectly than directly harmful. She was a rapid writer, and her work is consequently discursive and formless; but there was an originality and force in her way of putting commonplace sober sense and piety that fully accounts for her extraordinary popularity. 'An interesting episode in her literary life was her three years' labour in writing spirited rhymes and prose tales in the Cheap Repository series (1795-1798) to counteract the doctrines of Tom Paine and the influence of the French Revolution. Two millions of these rapid and telling sketches were circulated in one year, teaching the poor in rhetoric of most ingenious homeliness to rely upon the virtues of content, sobriety, humility, industry, reverence for the British constitution, hatred of the French, trust in God and in the kindness of the gentry. Perhaps the noblest testimony to Hannah More's sterling worth was her indefatigable philanthropic work—her long-continued exertions to improve the condition of the children in the benighted districts in the neighbourhood of her country residences at Cowslip Green and Barley Wood. She limited her aims strictly, as a good churchwoman and anti-Revolutionist, to teaching them to read good books and trying to raise their moral tone ; but no philanthropist ever laboured at greater self-sacrifice or with purer motives. In her serene old age, philanthropists from all parts of the world made pilgrimages to see the bright and amiable old lady, and she retained all her faculties till within two years of her death, dying at Clifton on 7th September 1833, at the mature age of eighty-seven.*~~

~~*MORE, Henry (1614-1687), one of the most remark- able and interesting of the "Cambridge Platonists," was born at Grantham in Lincolnshire in the year 1614. His father was "Alexander More, Esq., a gentleman of fair estate and fortune," highly spoken of by his son, who attributes to his father his own poetical tastes and generous love of learning from his*~~

~~*early youth. Both his father and mother, he further tells us, were "earnest followers of Calvin," but he himself "could never swallow that hard doctrine." As soon as he went to Eton he gave himself up to what he considered a more genial and encouraging train of religious thought. From his boyhood in the Eton playing-fields he was a philosophical and religious dreamer, and he describes his moods of religious reverie in a very*~~

~~*MOO Ry*~~

~~*interesting manner.! His communings and ecstasies have no morbid taint ; they are the natural carriage of a strangely gifted spirit. " From the beginning all things in a manner came flowing to him," and his mind, according to his own saying, "'was enlightened with a sense of the noblest theories in the morning of his days." In 1631 he went to Cambridge, and was admitted at Christ's College about the time Milton was leaving it. He immersed himself 'over head and ears in the study of philosophy," and fell for a time into a sort of scepticism, from which, however, he was delivered by a study of the " Platonic writers." He was fascinated especially by Neo-Platonism, and this fascination never left him. The Theologia Germanica also exerted a great and permanent influence over him. He entered upon a course of spiritual self-discipline which made all his previous studies seem of comparatively no value ; and gradually light as well as peace came to him. He got "into a most joyous and lucid state of mind," which he described in a Greek epigram, as he had formerly described his state of mental and spiritual darkness in the same manner. He took his bachelor's degree in 1635, his master's degree in 1639, and immediately afterwards was chosen fellow of his college. In this position he may be said to have remained all his life. Many offers of prefer- ment were made to him, but he refused them all, with one exception. Fifteen years after the Restoration, he accepted a prebend in Gloucester cathedral, but only to resign it in favour of his friend Dr. Edward Fowler, afterwards the well-knowft bishop of Gloucester. He had no ambition, and steadily declined all attempts to draw him towards public life. He would not even accept the mastership of his college, to which, it is understood, he would have been preferred in 1654, when Cudworth was appointed. He drew many young men of a refined and thoughtful turn of mind around*~~

~~him, but among all his pupils the most interesting was a young lady of noble family, a " heroine pupil," as his biographer (Ward) says, "of an extraordinary nature." This lady is supposed to have been a sister of Lord Finch, afterwards earl of Nottingham, a well-known statesman of the Restoration. She afterwards became Lady Conway, and at her country seat at Ragley in Warwickshire More continued at intervals to spend "a considerable part of his time." She and her husband both greatly appreciated him, and amidst the woods of this pleasant retreat he composed several of his books. There is reason to think that the spiritual enthusiasm of Lady Conway was a considerable factor in some of More's speculations, none the less that she at length passed from his religious pupilage into the ranks of the Quakers. Susceptible to all the excited impulses of her time, this lady became the friend not only of More and Penn but of Baron van Helmont and Valentine Greatrakes, mystical thaumaturgists who played a considerable part amid the teeming enthusiasms of the 17th century. Ragley became a centre not only of devotion but of wonder-working spirit- ualism.? "Many happy days," More says, he spent in this "paradise," and its fantastic mysticism had more allure- ments for him than he himself realized. His genius suffered in consequence, and the play of rationality which distin- guishes his earlier is much less conspicuous in his later works. He was a voluminous writer both in verse and prose, and the mere list of his works would occupy more space than we can give to it. Many of his productions are now unreadable; but the Divine Dialogues, published in 1668, may be still read with pleasure. It is animated and sometimes even brilliant, with less prolixity and~~

~~1 '¢Prefatio Generalissima" prefixed to his Opera Omnia, 1679.~~

~~2 The place and its religious marvels are glanced at in the romance of John Inglesant (chap. xv.).~~

~~the advantage for modern readers that it condenses his general view of philosophy and religion. Most of his characteristic principles may in fact be gathered from it.~~

~~*The year in which he composed the Diine Dialogues may be said to mark the highest point of his intellectual activity. HIs Manual of Metaphysics and elaborate treat- ises on Jacob Boehme and Spinoza were subsequent to this ; but the elasticity and freshness of his philosophical genius are less buoyant in these efforts, and the prophetico- mystical elements which were a weakness in his mental constitution from the first grew as his years advanced. HIe represents more than any other member of the school the mystical and theosophic side of the Cambridge move- ment. Its lofty rationality, the rationality of which he himself had spoken earlier in noble language, at length evaporates in him in intellectual reverie and dreams. The Neo-Platonic extravagances which lay hidden in the school from the first came in his writings to a head, and merged in pure phantasy,—a set of favourite ideas which not merely guided but dominated the reason. Withal HIenry More can never be spoken of save as a spiritual genius and significant figure in the history of British philosophy, less robust and manly and in some respects less learned than Cudworth but more interesting and fertile in thought, and more sweet, singular, and genial in character. From youth to age he describes himself as gifted with a most happy and buoyant temper. The presence of nature filled him with rapture ; he wished he could be always sub dio. ' Walk- ing abroad after his studies: his sallies towards nature would be often inexpressibly ravishing, beyond what he could convey to others." HIs own thoughts were to him a never-ending source of pleasurable excitement. HIs mind moved with great rapidity and at a lofty elevation, so that, as he says, he seemed "all the while to be in the air." This mystical glow and elevation were the chief features of his mind and character, a certain transport and radiancy of thought which carried him beyond the common life without raising him to any false or artificial height, for his humility and charity were not less conspicuous than his piety. The last ten years of his life are without any special record, and he died on the morning of 1st September 1687, and was buried in the chapel of the college he loved so well, where within less than a year his friend Cudworth was laid beside him.*~~

~~*Before his death More issued complete editions of his works, his Opera Theologica in 1675, and his Opera Philosophica in 1678. The chief authorities for his life are Ward's Life, 1710 ; the " Pre- fatio Generalissima" prefixed to his Opera Omnia, 1679 ; and also a general*~~

~~*account of the manner and scope of his writings in an Apology published in 1664. The collection of his Philosophical Poems, 1647, in which he has "compared his chief speculations and experiences," should also be consulted. An elaborate analy- sis of his life and works is given in Principal Tulloch's Rational Theology, vol. ii., 1874. (J. T.)*~~

~~*MORE, Tuomas (1478-1535), lord chancellor, and one of the most illustrious Englishmen of his century, was born in Milk Street in the City of London, 7th February 1478. He received the rudiments of education at St Anthony's School in Threadneedle Street, at that time under Nicolas Holt held to be the best in the city. He was early placed in the household of Cardinal Morton, archbishop of Canterbury. Admission to the cardinal's family was esteemed a high privilege, and was sought as a school of manners and as an introduction to the world by the sons of the best families in the kingdom. Young Thomas More obtained admission through the influence of his father, Sir Thomas, then a rising barrister and after- wards a justice of the Court of King's Bench. The usual prognostication of future distinction is attributed in the case of More to Cardinal Morton, "who would often tell the nobles sitting at table with him, where young Thomas waited on him, whosoever liveth to trie it shall see this*~~

~~*S16*~~

~~*child prove a notable and rare man."} At the proper age young More was sent to Oxford, where he is said vaguely to have had Colet, Grocyn, and Linacre for his tutors.? All More himself says is that he had Linacre for his master in Greek. Learning Greek was not the matter of course which it has since become. Greek was not as yet part of the arts curriculum, and to learn it voluntarily was ill looked upon by the authorities. Those who did so were suspected of an inclination towards novel and dangerous modes of thinking, then rife on the Continent and slowly finding their way to England. More's father, who intended his son to make a career in his own profession, took the alarm; he removed him from the university without a degree, and entered him at New Inn to commence at once the study of the law. The young man had been kept in a state of humiliating dependence in money matters, having had no allowance made him, and*~~

~~*having had to apply to his father even for a pair of new shoes when the old were worn out. This system was pursued by his parents not from niggardliness but on principle ; and Thomas More in later years often spoke with appro- bation of this severe discipline, as having been a ineans of keeping him from the vulgar dissipations in which his fellow-students indulged. After completing a two-years' course in New Inn, an Inn of Chancery, More was admitted in February 1496 at Lincoln's Inn, an Inn of Court. "At that time the Inns of Court and Chancery presented the discipline of a well-constituted university, and, through professors under the name of readers and exercises under the name of mootings, law was systematically taught " (Campbell). In his professional studies More early dis- tinguished himself, so that he was appointed reader-in-law in Furnival's Inn; but he would not relinquish the studies which had attracted him in Oxford. We find him deli- vering a lecture to audiences of "all the chief learned of the city of London."? The subject he chose was a com- promise between theology and the humanities, being St Augustine's De Civitate. In this lecture More sought less to expound the theology of his author than to set forth the philosophical and historical contents of the treatise. The lecture-room was a church, St Lawrence Jewry, placed at his disposal by Grocyn, the rector.*~~

~~*Somewhere about this period of More's life two things happened which gave in opposite directions the determin- ing impulse to his future career. More's was one of those highly susceptible natures which take more readily and more eagerly than common minds the impress of that which they encounter on their first contact with men. Two principal forms of thought and feeling were at this date in conflict, rather unconscious than declared, on Eng- lish soil. Under the denomination of the "old learning," the sentiment of the Middle Ages and the idea of church authority was established and in full possession of the religious houses, the universities, and the learned profes- sions. The foe that was advancing in the opposite direc- tion, though without the conscience of a hostile purpose, was the new power of human reason animated with the revived sentiment of classicism. In More's mind both these hostile influences found a congenial home. Each had its turn of supremacy, and in his early years it seemed as if the humanistic influence would gain the final victory. About the age of twenty he was seized with a violent access of*~~

~~*devotional rapture. He took a disgust to the world and its occupations, and experienced a longing to give himself over to an ascetic life. He took a lodging near the Charterhouse, and subjected himself to the disci- pline of a Carthusian monk. He wore a sharp shirt of hair next his skin, scourged himself every Friday and*~~

~~*1 Life by B. R. 2 Life by B. R. 3 Roper, Life.*~~

~~*MORE*~~

~~*other fasting days, lay upon the bare ground with a log under his head, and allowed himself but four or five hours' sleep. This access of the ascetic malady lasted but a short time, and More recovered to all outward appearance his balance of mind. But he never entirely emancipated himself from the sentiment of devotion, though in later life it exhibited itself in a more rational form. Even when he was chancellor he would take part in church services, walking in their processions with a surplice. This, however, was at a later time. For the moment the balance of his faculties seemed to be restored by a revival of the antagonistic sentiment of humanism which he had imbibed from the Oxford circle of friends, and specially from Erasmus. The dates as regards More's early life are uncertain, and we can only say that it is possible that the acquaintance with Erasmus might have begun during Erasmus's first visit to England in 1499. 'Tradition has dramatized their first meeting into the story given by Cresacre More,4—that the two happened to sit opposite each other at the lord mayor's table, that they got into an argument during dinner, and that, in mutual astonish- ment at each other's wit and readiness, Erasmus ex- claimed, "Aut tu es Morus, aut nullus," and the other replied, "Aut tu es Erasmus, aut diabolus!" Reject- ing this legend, which bears the stamp of fiction upon its face, we have certain evidence of acquaintance between the two men ina letter of Erasmus with the date "Oxford, 29th October 1499." If we must admit the correctness of the date of Hp. 14 in the collection of Erasmus's Epistolz, we should have to assume that their acquaintance had begun as early as 1497. Ten years More's senior, and master of the accomplishments which More was ambitious to acquire, Erasmus could not fail to exercise a powerful influence over the brilliant young Englishman. More's ingenuous demeanour, quick intelligence,*~~

~~and winning manners fascinated Erasmus from the first, and acquaint-ance rapidly ripened into warm attachment. This contact with the prince of letters revived in More the spirit of the "new learning," and he returned with ardour to the study of Greek, which had been begun at Oxford. The humanistic influence was sufficiently strong to save him from wrecking his life in monkish mortification, and even to keep him for a time on the side of the party of progress. He ac- quired no inconsiderable facility in the Greek language, from which he made and published some translations. His Latin style, though wanting the inimitable ease of Erasmus and often offending against idiom, is yet in copiousness and propriety much above the ordinary Latin of the English scholars of his time.~~

~~More's attention to the new studies was always subor- dinate to his resolution to rise in his profession, in which he was stimulated by his father's example. As early as 1502 he was appointed under-sheriff of the city of London, an office then judicial, and of considerable dignity. He first attracted public attention by his conduct in the parliament of 1504, by his daring opposition to the king's demand for money. Henry VII. was entitled, according to feudal laws, to a grant on occasion of his daughter's marriage. But he came to the House of Commons for a much larger sum than he intended to give with his daughter. The members, unwilling as they were to vote the money, were afraid to offend the king, till the silence was broken by More, whose speech is said to have moved the House to reduce the subsidy of three-fifteenths which the Govern- ment had demanded to £30,000. One of the chamberlains went and told his master that he had been thwarted by a beardless boy. Henry never forgave the audacity ; but, for the moment, the only revenge he could take was upon~~

~~4 Life, p. 93.~~

~~More's father, whom upon some pretext he threw into the Tower, and he only released him upon payment of a fine of £100. Thomas More even found it advisable to with- draw from public life into obscurity. During~~

~~*this period of retirement the old dilemma recurred. One while he devoted himself to the sciences, "perfecting himself in music, arithmetic, geometry, and astronomy, learning the French tongue, and recreating his tired spirits on the viol,"! or translating epigrams from the Greek anthology ; another while resolving to take priest's orders.*~~

~~*From dreams of clerical celibacy he was roused by making acquaintance with the family of John Colt of New Hall, in Essex. The "honest and sweet conversation" of the daughters attracted him, and though his inclination led him to prefer the second he married the eldest, not liking to put the affront upon her of passing her over in favour of her younger sister. The death of the old king in 1507 restored him to the practice of his profession, and to that public career for which his abilities specially fitted him. From this time there was scarce a cause of import- ance in which he was not engaged. His professional in- come amounted to £400 a year, equal to £4000 in present money, and, "considering the relative profits of the law and the value of money, probably indicated as high a station as £10,000 at the present day" (Campbell). It was not long before he attracted the attention of the young king and of Wolsey. The Latin verses which he pre- sented to Henry on the occasion of his coronation did not deserve particular notice amid the crowd of congratulatory odes. But the spirit with which he pleaded before the Star Chamber in a case of the Crown v. the Pope recom- mended him to the royal favour, and marked him out for employment. More obtained in this case judgment against the crown. Henry, who was present in person at the trial, had the good sense not to resent the defeat, but took the counsel to whose advocacy it was due into his service. In 1514 More was made master of the requests, knighted, and sworn a member of the privy council. He was repeatedly employed on embassies to the Low Countries, and was for a long time stationed at Calais as agent in the shifty nego- tiations carried on by Wolsey with the court of France. In 1519 he was compelled to resign his post of under-sheriff to the city and his private practice at the bar. In 1521 he was appointed treasurer of the exchequer, and in the parliament of 1523 he was elected speaker. The choice of this officer rested nominally with the House itself, but in practice was always dictated by the court. Sir Thomas More was pitched upon by the court on this occasion in order that his popularity with the Commons might be employed to carry the money*~~

~~grant for which Wolsey asked. 'To the great disappointment of the court More remained firm to the popular cause, and it was greatly owing to his influence that its demands were resisted. From this occurrence may be dated the jealousy which the cardinal began to exhibit towards More. Wolsey made an attempt to get him out of the way by sending him as ambassador to Spain. More defeated the design by a personal appeal to the king, alleging that the climate would be fatal to his health. Henry, who saw through the artifice, and was already looking round for a more popular successor to Wolsey, made the gracious answer that he would employ More otherwise. In 1525 More was appointed chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster, and no pains were spared to attach him to the court. The king frequently sent for him into his closet, and discoursed with him on astronomy, geometry, and points of divinity. This growing favour, by which many men would have been carried away, did not impose upon More. He dis-~~

~~1 Roper, Life.~~

~~couraged the king's advances, showed reluctance to go to the palace, and seemed constrained when there. Then the king began to come himself to More's house at Chelsea, and would dine with him without previous notice. Roper mentions one of these visits, when the king after dinner walked in the garden by the space of an hour, holding his arm round More's neck. Roper afterwards congratu- lated his father-in-law on the distinguished honour which had been shown him. "I thank our Lord," was the reply, "T find his grace my very good lord indeed ; and I believe he doth as singularly favour me as any subject within this realm. Howbeit, son Roper, I may tell thee I have no cause to be proud thereof, for if my head would win him a castle in France, it should not fail to go." As a last resource More tried the expedient of silence, dissembling his wit and affecting to be dull. This had the desired effect so far that he was less often sent for. But it did not alter the royal policy, and in 1529, when a successor had to be found for Wolsey, More was raised to the chancellorship. The selection was justified by More's high reputation, but it was also significant of the modification which the policy of the court~~

~~*was then undergoing. It was a concession to the rising popular party, to which it was supposed that More's politics inclined him. The public favour with which his appointment had been received was justified by his conduct as judge in the Court of Chancery. Having heard causes in the forenoon between eight and eleven, after dinner he sat again to receive petitions. The meaner the suppliant was the ore affably he would speak to him, and the more speedily he would despatch his case. In this respect he formed a great contrast to his predecessor, whose arrears he soon cleared off. One morning being told by the officer that there was not another cause before the court, he ordered the fact to be entered on record, as it had never happened before. He not only refused all gifts, such as had been usual, himself, but took measures to prevent any of his connexions from interfering with the course of justice. One of his sons-in-law, Heron, having a suit in the chan- cellor's court, and refusing to agree to any reasonable accommodation, because the judge "was the most affec- tionate father to his children that ever was in the world," More thereupon made a decree against him.*~~

~~*Unfortunately for Sir Thomas More, a lord chancellor is not merely a judge, but has high political functions to perform. In raising More to that eminent position, the king had not merely considered his professional distinction but had counted upon his avowed liberal and reforming tendencies. In the Utopia, which, though written earlier, More had allowed to be printed as late as 1516, he had spoken against the vices of power and declared for indif- ference of religious creed with a breadth of philosophical view of which there is no other example in any English- man of that age. At the same time, as he could not be suspected of any sympathy with Lutheran or Wickliffite heretics, he might fairly be regarded as qualified to lead the party which aimed at reform in state and church within the limits of Catholic orthodoxy. But in the king's mind the public questions of reform were entirely sunk in the personal one of the divorce. The divorce was a point upon which Sir Thomas would not yield. And, as he saw that the marriage with Anne Boleyn was determined upon, he petitioned the king to be allowed to resign the great seal, alleging failing health. With much reluctance, the royal permission. was given and the resignation accepted, 10th May 1532, with many gracious expressions of good will on the part of the king. The promise held out of future bounty*~~

~~was never fulfilled, and More left office, as he had entered it, a poor man. His necessitous condition was so notorious that the clergy in convocation voted him~~

~~XVI. —— 103~~

~~818~~

~~a present of £5000. This he peremptorily refused, either for himself or for his family, declaring that he " had rather see it all cast into the Thames." Yet the whole of his 'neome after resigning office did not exceed £100 a year.~~

~~Hitherto he had maintained a large establishment, not on the princely scale of Wolsey, but in the patriarchal fashion of having all his sons-in-law, with their families, under his roof. When he resigned the chancellorship he called his children and grandchildren together to explain his reduced circumstances. 'If we wish to live together," said he, "you must be content to be contributories together. But my counsel is that we fall not to the lowest fare first : we will not, therefore, descend to Oxford fare, nor to the fare of New Inn, but we will begin with Lincoln's Inn diet, where many right worshipful men of great account and good years do live full well; which if we find our- selves the first year not able to maintain, then we will in the next year come down to Oxford fare, where many great learned and ancient fathers and doctors are continu-ally conversant ; which if our purses stretch not to main- tain neither, then may we after, with bag and wallet, go a-begging together, hoping that for pity some good folks will give us their charity."~~

~~More was now able, as he writes to Erasmus, to return to the life which had always been his ambition, when, free from business and public affairs, he might give himself up to his favourite studies and to the practices of his devotion. Of the Chelsea interior Erasmus has drawn a charming picture, which may vie with Holbein's celebrated canvas, The Household of Sir Thomas More.~~

~~"More has built, near London, upon the Thames, a modest yet commodious mansion. 'There he lives surrounded by his numerous~~

~~*family, including his wife, his son, and his son's wife, his three daughters and their husbands, with eleven grandchildren. There is not any man living so affectionate to his children as he, and he loveth his old wife as if she were a girl of fifteen. Such is the excellence of his disposition that whatsoever happeneth that could not be helped, he is as cheerful and as well pleased as though the best thing possible had been done. In More's house, you would say that Plato's Academy was revived again, only, whereas in the Academy the discussions turned upon geometry and the power of numbers, the house at Chelsea is a veritable school of Christian religion. In itis none, man or woman, but readeth or studieth the liberal arts, yet is their chief care of piety. There is never any seen idle; the head of the house governs it not by a lofty carriage and oft rebukes, but by gentleness and amiable manners. Every member is busy in his place, performing his duty with alacrity ; nor is sober mirth wanting." }*~~

~~*But More was too conspicuous to be long allowed to enjoy the happiness of a retired life. A special invitation was sent him by the king to attend the coronation of Anne Boleyn, accompanied with the gracious offer of £20 to buy a new suit for the occasion! More refused to attend, and from that moment was marked out for vengeance. A first attempt made to bring him within the meshes of the law only recoiled with shame upon the head of the accusers. They were maladroit enough to attack him on his least vulnerable side, summoning him before the privy council to answer to a charge of receiving bribes in the administration of justice. One Parnell was put forward to complain of a decree pronounced against him in favour of the contending party Vaughan, who he said had pre- sented a gilt cup to the chancellor. Morestated that he had received a cup as a New Year's gift. Lord Wiltshire, the queen's father, exultingly cried out, 'So, did I not tell you, my lords, that you would find this matter true?" "But, my lords," continued More, "having pledged Mrs. Vaughan in the wine wherewith my butler had filled the cup, I restored the cup to her." Two other charges of a like nature were refuted as triumphantly. But the very futility of the accusations must have betrayed to More*~~

~~*1 Ep, 426, app.*~~

~~*MORE*~~

~~*the bitter determination of his enemies to compass his destruction. Foiled in their first ill-directed attempt, they were compelled to have recourse to that tremendous engine of regal tyranny, the law of treason. A bill was brought into parliament to attaint Elizabeth Barton, a nun, who was said to have held treasonable language. Barton turned out afterwards to have been an impostor, but she had duped More, who now lived in a superstitious atmosphere of convents and churches, and he had given his countenance to her supernatural pretensions. His name, with that of Fisher, was accordingly included in the bill as an accomplice. When he came before the council, it was at once apparent that the charge of treason could not be sustained, and the efforts of the court agents were directed to draw from More some approbation of the king's marriage. But to this neither cajolery nor threats could move him. The preposterous charge was urged that it was by his advice that the king had committed himself in his book against Luther to an assertion of the pope's authority, whereby the title of " Defender of the Faith " had been gained, but in reality a sword put into the pope's hand to fight against him. More was able to reply that he had warned the king that this very thing might happen, that upon some breach of amity between the crown of England and the pope Henry's too pronounced assertion of the papal authority might be turned against himself, "therefore it were best that place be amended, and his authority more slenderly touched." "Nay," replied the king, "that it shall not; we are so much bound to the see of Rome that we cannot do too much honour unto it. Whatsoever impediment be to the contrary, we will set forth that authority to the utmost; for we have received from that see our crown imperial," "which," added More, "till his grace with his own mouth so told me, I never heard before." Anything more defiant and exasperating than this could not well have been said. But it could not be laid hold of, and the charge of treason being too ridiculous to be proceeded with, More's name was struck out of the bill. When his daughter brought him the news, More calmly said, 'I' faith, Meg, quod differtur, non aufertur: that which is postponed is not dropt." At another time, having asked his daughter how the court went, and how Queen Anne did, he received for answer, "Never better; there is nothing else but dancing and sport- ing." To this More answered, "Alas, Meg, it pitieth me to remember unto what misery, poor soul, she will shortly come; these dances of hers will prove such dances that she will spurn our*~~

~~*heads off like footballs ; but it will not be long ere her head will dance the like dance."? So the speech runs in the Life by More's great-grandson ; but in the only trustworthy record, the life by his son-in-law Roper, More's reply ends with the words, "she will shortly come." Tn this, as in other instances, the later statement has the appear- ance of having been an imaginative extension of the earlier.*~~

~~*In 1534 the Act of Supremacy was passed, and the oath ordered to be tendered. More was sent for to Lambeth, where he offered to swear to the succession, but steadily refused the oath of supremacy as against his con- science. Thereupon he was given in charge to the abbot of Westminster, and, persisting in his refusal, was four days afterwards committed to the Tower. After a close and even cruel confinement (he was denied the use of pen and ink) of more than a year, he was brought to trial before a special commission and a packed jury. Even so More would have been acquitted, when at the last moment Rich, the solicitor-general, quitted the bar and presented himself as a witness for the crown. Being sworn, he detailed a confidential conversation he had had with the*~~

~~*2 Cresacre More, p. 231.*~~

~~*prisoner in the Tower. He affirmed that, having himself admitted in the course of this conversation "that there were things which no parliament could do,—e.g., no parlia- ment could make a law that God should not be God," Sir Thomas had replied, "No more could the parliament make the king supreme head of the church." By this act of perjury a verdict of "guilty" was procuredfromthe jury. The execu- tion of the sentence followed within the week, on 7th July 1535. The head was fixed upon London Bridge. The ven- geance of Henry was not satisfied by this judicial murder of his friend and servant ; he enforced the confiscation of what small property More had left, expelled Lady More from the house at Chelsea, and even set aside assignments which had been legally executed by More, who foresaw what would happen before the commission of the alleged treason. More's property was settled on Princess Elizabeth, afterwards queen, who kept possession of it till her death. At his death Sir Thomas More was in the fifty-eighth year of his age. He was twice*~~

~~*married, but had children only by his first wife. His eldest daughter Margaret, married to William Roper, is one of the foremost women in the annals of the country for her virtues, high intelli- gence, and various accomplishments. She read Latin and Greek, was a proficient in music, and in the sciences, so far as they were then accessible. Her devotion to her father is historical; she gave him not only the tender affection of a daughter but the high-minded sympathy of a soul great as his own.*~~

~~*It is unfortunate for More's reputation that he has been adopted as a champion of a party and a cause which is arrayed in hostility to the liberties and constitution of his country. Apart from the partisan use which is made of his name, we must rank him among the noblest minds of England, as one who became the victim of a tyrant whose policy he disapproved and whose servile instruments he despised. If his language towards the tyrant is often more servile than became a freeman, we must remember that such was the court style of the period, and that we must not construe liter- ally phrases of compliment. It is, however, impossible to deny that More's policy in later life did not bear out the more liberal convictions of his earlier years. His views and feelings contracted under the combined influences of his professional practice and of*~~

~~*ublic employment. In the Utopia, published in 1516, he not only Tenennedd the ordinary vices of power, but evinced an enlightenment of sentiment which went far beyond the most statesmanlike ideas to be found among his contemporaries, pronouncing not merely for toleration but rising even to the philosophical conception of the indifference of religious creed. It was to this superiority of view, and not merely to the satire on the administration of Henry VII., that we must ascribe the popularity of the work in the 16th cen- tury. For, as a romance, the Utopia has little interest either of incident or of character. It does not, as has been said, anticipate the economical doctrines of Adam Smith, and much of it is fanciful without being either witty or ingenious. Mackintosh says of it: 'Tt intimates a variety of doctrines, and exhibits a multiplicity of projects, which the writer regards with almost every possible degree of approbation and shade of assent, from the frontiers of serious and entire belief, through gradations of descending plausi- bility, where the lowest are scarcely more than exercises of ingenuity, and to which some wild*~~

~~*paradoxes are appended, either as a vehicle, or as an easy means, if necessary, of disavowing the serious inten- tion of the whole of this Platonic fiction."*~~

~~*The Epistola ad Dorpiwm at a later date exhibits More em- phatically on the side of the new learning. It contains a vindi- cation of the study of Greek, and of the desirability of printing the text of the Greek Testament, — views which at that date required an enlightened understanding to enter into, and which were con- demned by the party to which More afterwards attached himself. At the most, he can be doubtfully exculpated from the charge of having tortured men and children for heresy. It is admitted by himself that he inflicted punishment for religious opinion. Erasmus only ventures to say in his friend's defence "that while he was chancellor no man was put to death for these pestilent opinions, while so many suffered death in France and the Low Countries."*~~

~~*The Life of Sir Thomas More was written by his son-in-law Roper about the end of Mary's reign. It was preserved in MS. during the reign of Elizabeth, and handed about in copies, many of which were carelessly made. It was not given to the press till 1626, with the date of Paris. Reprints were made by Hearne (1716), by Lewis (1729, 1731), and by Singer (1817, 1822). Roper's life is the source of all the many subsequent biographies. More's Life in MS. (Harleian*~~

~~*6253), anonymous, but by Nicolas Harpsfield, was also written in Mary's reign. All that is material in this MS. is taken from Roper. Another anonymous Life,*~~

~~*written in 1599, printed in Wordsworth's Ecclesiastical Biography, ii. 43-185, is chiefly compiled from Roper and Harpsfield. The preface is signed B. R.*~~

~~*Stapleton (Tres Thome, s. res geste S. Thome apostoli, S. Thome archiepiscopt Cantuariensis, Thom# Mori, Douay, 1588, Cologne, 1612, and the Vita Thome Mori (separately), Gratz, 1689) translates Roper, interweaving what material he could find scattered through More's works*~~

~~*and letters and the notices of him in the writings of his contemporaries. Cresacre More, great-grandson of Sir Thomas, compiled a new life about the year 1627. It was printed without date, but, according to the editor, Hunter, in 1631. The title of this edition is—The Life of Sir Thos. More, Lord High Chancellour of England, 4to, s. 1. eta., and with new title-page, 1642, 1726, 1828. This life is cited by the subsequent biographers as an independent authority. But it is almost entirely borrowed from Roper and Stapleton. The additions made have sometimes the appearance of rhetorical amplifications of Roper's simple statements. At other times they are decor- ative miracles. The whole is couched in that strain of devotional exaggeration in which the lives of the saints are usually composed. The author seems to imply that he had received supernatural communications from the spirit of his ancestor. Already, only eighty years after More's execution, hagiography had taken possession of the facts, and was transmuting them into an edifying legend. Cresacre More's Life cannot be alleged as evidence for any facts which are not otherwise vouched. It has been remarked by Hunter that More's life and works have been all along manipulated for political purposes, and in the interest of the holy see. In Mary's reign, and in the tide of Catholic reaction, Roper and Harpsfield wrote lives of him; Ellis Heywood dedicated his J? Moro to Cardinal Pole, and Tottell reprinted the folio of his English works. Stapleton prepared his Tres Thome in 1588, when the recovery of England to the see of Rome was looked for by the Spanish invasion. In 1599, when there was a prospect of a disputed succession, the anonymous Life by B. R. was composed ; and soon after Charles had allied himself with a Catholic, the Life by Cresacre More issued from the press. Hunter might have added that Stapleton was being reprinted at Gratz at the time when the conversion of England was expected from James II. The later lives of Sir Thomas More have been numerous, but the only one which has any critical value is that by G. T. Rudhart Thomas Morus, aus den Quellen bearbeitet, Nuremberg, 1829. Other lives are by J. Hoddesdon, London, 1652, 1662; by Cayley, 2 vols., London, 1808; by Mackintosh, Lardner's Cab. Cyclop., London, 1831, 1844; and in More's Works, London, 1845 ; by Lord Campbell in Lives of the Chancellors, vol. i., 1848-50; by D. Nisard in Renaissance et Réforme ; by Baumstark, Freiburg, 1879. A biographical study on More's Latin poems is Philomorus by J. H. Marsden, 2d ed., London, 1878.*~~

~~*More's writings are numerous, and a complete bibliography of them would occupy several columns. His English Works were collected and published in one vol. folio by Rastall, London, 1530, and reprinted by Tottell, London, 1557. His Latin Works were also separately collected in one vol., Basel, 1563 ; Louvain, 1566; and, most complete, Frankfort and Leipsic, 1689, The Utopia has had numerous editions, the first is Louv., 1516. There are two English translations of the Utopia, by R. Robynson, London, 1551, 1556, 1624, and by Gilb. Burnet, 1688. The Latin poems, Progymnasmata, appeared in 1518, 1520, 1563. This last edition contains the Utopia and other prose Latin pieces. (M. P.)*~~

~~*MOREAU, Hi&cxusrppx, a minor lyric poet of disputed but considerable talent, was born at Paris on the 9th April 1810, and died in the hospital of La Charité on the 10th December 1838. In his early youth his parents, who were very ill-off, migrated to Provins, where the mother went into service and the father took the post of usher in a public school. Both died in the same refuge for the desti- tute which afterwards received their son. Hégésippe was fairly educated and was apprenticed to a printer, but he preferred the work (in France usually paid most miserably) of "maitre d'études" ina school. He went to Paris before 1830, and appears to have practised both his occupations there, though for the most part he either adopted by choice or was driven by ill-fortune to adopt the singular life of alternate hardship and cheap dissipation which is dignified in France by the name of Bohemianism. In Moreau's case there is no doubt that the hardships exceeded the dissipa- tion. He was habitually houseless, and is said to have exposed himself to the dangers of a cholera hospital in the great epidemic of 1832 simply to obtain shelter and food. Then he revisited Provins and published a kind of satirical serial called Diogéne. Some years of this life entirely ruined his health, and it was only just before his death that he succeeded in getting his collected poems published, selling the copyright for £4 sterling and eighty copies of the book. It was received not unfavourably, but, as has happened in other cases, the author's death, which happened soon in the circumstances mentioned, was required to excite an interest which was proportionately excessive. Moreau's work, like that of many other young poets, has a strong note of imitation, his model being especially Béranger; and his character, both moral and literary, is not improved by obvious affectation*~~

~~*in political, religious, and social matters. But some of his poems, such as La Voulzie and the charming La Fermiére, have great sweetness, and he had a faculty of writing both in prose and poetry which seems to show that with better fortune, or, to speak honestly, with more intelligence and more per- severance he might easily have saved himself from the miserable destitution which was his lot.*~~

~~*820*~~

~~*MOREAU, Jean Victor (1763-1813), the greatest general of the French republic after Napoleon and Hoche, 'vas born at Morlaix in Brittany in 1763. His father was an "avocat" in good practice, and instead of allowing iim to enter the army, as he wished, insisted on his studying law at the university of Rennes. Young Moreau showed no inclination for law, but revelled in the freedom of a student's life. Instead of taking his degree he con- tinued to live with the students as their hero and leader. In that capacity he became a person of political importance, and in the troubles of 1787 formed the law students into a sort of army, which he commanded as their provost. In 1789 he became yet more important, and commanded the students in the daily affrays which took place at Rennes between the young noblesse, who protested against the mode of election to the states-general, and the populace. Though he had hardly weight enough to be chosen a deputy, he was elected one of the committee of correspondence with the deputies at Paris. He was thus able to follow the course of events in the early days of the Revolution, and was early impressed with the conviction that no compromise with the court was possible, and a republic the only re- source. These opinions estranged him from his father, who belonged to the party of Breton independence and preferred Brittany to France. At last, in 1792, at the call for volunteers he organized a battalion, and was at once elected its commandant. With it he served under Dumouriez, and in 1793 the good order of his battalion, and his own martial character and republican principles secured his promotion as general of brigade. Carnot, who had an eye for the true qualities of a general, promoted him to be general of division in 1794, and gave him com- mand of the right wing of the army which, under Pichegru, was destined to drive the English and Austrians out of Flan- ders by separating the Austrians from the English. This wing was then to cover*~~

~~*the occupation of Holland by the main army under Pichegru. These operations established his military fame, and in 1795 he was given the command of the army of the Rhine and the Moselle, with which he crossed the Rhine and advanced into Germany. He was at first completely successful, and won several victories, but at last had to execute before the archduke Charles a retreat which only increased his fame, as he managed to bring back with him more than 5000 prisoners. In 1797 he again crossed the Rhine, but his operations were checked by the con- clusion of the preliminaries of Leoben between Bonaparte and the Austrians. It was at this time he found out the traitorous correspondence between his old comrade and commander Pichegru and the prince de Condé, which he foolishly concealed, and naturally has ever since been sus- pected of at least partial complicity. After Fructidor the Directory ceased to employ his service, until the absence of Bonaparte and the advance of Suwaroff made it necessary to have some great general in Italy. Yet it was only as chief of the staff that he served under Scherer and Joubert, and led back the French army after the latter's death at Novi. When Bonaparte returned from Egypt he found Moreau at Paris, greatly dissatisfied with the Directory both as a general and as a republican, and obtained his assistance in the coup @état of Brumaire, when Moreau commanded the force which occupied the Luxembourg. In reward, the first consul again gave him command of the army of the Rhine, with which he fought his last great campaign, that of Hohenlinden, when his success was due rather to the splendid military qualities of his generals and their troops, and his own tactical genius, than to any inspiration of victory. On his return to Paris he married Mdlle. Hullot, an ambitious woman, who gained a complete ascendency over him, and with the enormous fortune acquired during his campaigns he purchased a luxurious hotel in Paris and*~~

~~*also Barras's country-seat of Grosbois. His wife exercised an*~~

~~*evil influence over him, and collected around her all who were discontented with the aggrandizement of Napoleon. This "club Moreau" frightened Napoleon, and encouraged the royalists ; but Moreau, though*~~

~~*not unwilling to become a military dictator to restore the republic, would not intrigue for the restoration of Louis XVIII. All this was well known to Napoleon, who seized the conspirators. Moreau*~~

~~*he treated with real leniency, and permitted to retire first*~~

~~*to Spain, and then to America. Here the general lived in great content for seven years, when his wife, who could not allow him to rest, made him enter into negotiations with Bernadotte, his old comrade, who was now crown- prince of Sweden. At his suggestion Moreau entered the service of the czar Alexander; and with Bernadotte he planned the campaign of 1813. Fortunately for his fame asa patriot he did not live to invade France, but was mortally wounded while talking to the czar at the battle of Dresden on 27th August 1813, and died on 2d September. His wife received a pension from the czar, and was given the rank of maréchale by Louis XVIII.*~~

~~*Moreau's fame as a general stands very high, and from his mar- vellous coolness in conducting retreats he has been called the general of retreats. His combinations were splendid, and his temper always unruffled when most closely pressed ; but he lacked the sudden spirit of seizing a victory which distinguished Napoleon in his early cam- paigns. Moreau was a sincere republican, though his own father was guillotined in the Terror ; and the army of the Rhine was the hot- bed of republicanism, as that of Italy was the great support ofa military tyranny. Asa man, he was little given to personal ambi- tion till his marriage, and would probably not only have served Napoleon well but moderated his tendency to absolutism by his very existence, had uot his wife ruined any such hope by involving him in intrigues. He was fortunate in the moment of his death, though he would have been more so had he died in America. He seems by his final words, "Soyez tranquilles, messieurs ; c'est mon sort," not to have regretted being removed from his equivocal position as a general in arms against his country.*~~

~~*The literature on Moreau is copious, the best book being C. Jochmus, General Moreau—Abriss einer Geschichte seines Lebens und seiner Feldztige, Berlin, 1814. A more ordinary work is A. de Beauchamp, Vie politique, militaire, et privés du Général Moreau, translated by Philippart,*~~

~~London, 1814; and there is a curious tract on his death in Russian, translated into English under the title Some De-~~

~~tails concerning General Moreau and his Last Moments, by Paul Svinin, London, 1814. (H. M. 8.~~

~~MOREL or Morcuetia. See MusHRoom.~~

~~MORELIA, formerly VALLADOLID, a city of Mexico, capital of the state of Michoacan de Ocampo, is situated 125 miles west by north of Mexico, at a height of 6400 feet above the sea, in 19° 42' N. lat. and 101° W. long. The site is a rocky hill on the Guayangareo valley, and the western horizon is bounded by the great Quinceo mountain (11,000 feet). Since the middle of the centurya considerable extension of the city has taken place, especially towards the north: its streets, which run for the most part at right angles to each other, had increased from thirty in 1856 to ninety-nine in 1873. The principal square is the Plaza de los Martires (formerly de Armas), where Matamoros was shot by the Spaniards in 1814 ; its one side is occupied by the cathedral (1745), a large building with two towers about 200 fect high. The churches of the Carmelites (del Carmen) and San José are of some note, and of the nine convents, now for the most part in ruins, several were wealthy and extensive. That of the Capuchins is now used as a hospital, the old seminary has been turned into a, state-house, and the tobacco factory, ene of the most ancient buildings in the city, serves as municipal offices. An important institution, supported by the state, is the college of San Nicolas de Hidalgo, originally founded by Juan de San Miguel in the 16th century and rebuilt in 1868. The Ocampo theatre dates from 1869-1870. Water is brought from a distance of about 3 miles by a fine aqueduct, constructed in 1788 by D. Antonio de San Miguel, but the quality is often deteriorated by the pre- sence of vegetable matter. Morelia lies too far from any great natural route to have much commerce in the present~~

~~state of the country, and its manufactures are limited to the production, on a small scale, of cotton, woollen, and silk goods.~~

~~*In 1541 Mendoza chose the Guayangarco valley as the new site for the city of Michoacan, and in 1545 the place received the name of Valladolid. Iturbide and Morelos were both born within its pecinae ; and in 1828 the Government did this latter patriot the*~~

~~*onour of renaming the city Morelia. In 1863 it was madc the seat ofan archbishop. See Bol. Soc. de geogr. dela Rep. Mex., Mex. , 1873.*~~

~~*MORELLET, Anpré (1727-1819), economist and miscel- laneous writer, was born at Lyons on the 7th of March 1727. IIe was long regarded as almost the last survivor of the Philosophe school ; and in this character he figures in many memoirs,—for instance in Madame de Remusat's. IIe was educated by the Jesuits in his native town, then at a seminary in Paris, and finally at the Sorbonne; and he took holy orders, but his designation of abbé was the chief thing clerical about him. IIe early joined the Philosophe party, and was a frequenter of most of their salons, being something of a butt (especially to his fellow-abbé and rival in political economy, Galiani), but having the credit of a ready and biting pen. Voltaire called him "L'Abbé Mord-les." IIis work was chiefly occasional, and the most notable parts of it were a smart pamphlet in answer to Palissot's scurrilous play Les Philosophes (which procured him a short sojourn in the Bastille for an alleged libel on Palissot's patroness, the princesse de Robeck), and a reply to Galiani's Commerce des Blés (1770). Later, he made himself useful in quasi-diplomatic communications with English statesmen, and was pensioned, being, moreover, elected a member of the Academy in 1785. The outbreak of the Revolution (soon after which he was engaged in a con- troversy with Chamfort on the question of the advantages and deserts of the Academy) did not, as it did with many of his friends, drive him from the country or put his life in danger, but it put him in considerable straits of fortune. IIe maintained a kind of moderate liberal tone, and the return of something like order under the Consulate and the Empire restored him to prosperity and pensions. A year before his death, at the great age of ninety-two, on the 12th of January 1819 at Paris, he brought out a series of Mélanges, composed chiefly of selections from his former publications ; and after his death appeared his memoirs, which are of value for the Philosophe period. Morellet, though not a man of extraordinary ability or of specially*~~

~~amiable or estimable character, was in both respects a fair specimen of the man of letters of all work of the time. He was, in fact, a journalist with a special turn for econo- mical subjects.~~

~~MORERI, Lovis. See ENcycLop#p1, vol. viii. p. 194.~~

~~MORETO, Acustin (1618-1669), Spanish dramatist and playwright, was born at Madrid in 1618. Of his personal and even of his literary history little is known. He studied at Alcala between 1634 and 1639, and after- wards removed to Toledo, where he entered the household of the cardinal-archbishop and took holy orders. Ulti- mately he withdrew altogether from the world, and died a member of an ascetic religious brotherhood in 1669.~~

~~Moreto in his younger years was a prolific writer for the stage, and almost rivalled Calderon in popularity. Three volumes of his plays were printed between 1654 and 1681, and many dramas besides are attributed in whole or in part to him. He employed all the dramatic forms then in vogue. Of his religious plays, Los mas Dichosos Hermanos (The Most Fortunate Brothers), embody- ing the legend of the seven sleepers, may be mentioned as the least bombastic and absurd. Others are El Rosario Perseguido, turning on the persecutions connected with the introduction of the rosary~~

~~into Spain, and Maria Egypeiaca, a curious representation of the extraordinary legend of St Mary of Egypt. His heroic drama, El~~

~~Valiente Justiciero (The Brave Justiciary), a story of the times of Pedro the Cruel, is one of considerable power. His "comedias de figuron," or "character comedies," as they are called (compare vol. vii. p. 422), include Hl Lindo Don Diego (The Handsome Don Diego) and El Desden con el Desden (Disdain met with Disdain), the latter partly borrowed from Lope de Vega's Milagros del, Desprecio, and in turn imitated by Moliére (in his Princesse d'Elide), by Carlo Gozzi (Principessa Filosofa), and by Schreyvogel (Donna Diana). The Comedias Escogidas de Don Agustin~~

~~*Moreto y Cabaiia form the 39th volume of the Biblioteca de Autores Espa- foles (Madrid, 1856).*~~

~~*MORETTO, It ("The Blackamoor," a term which has not been particularly accounted for), is the name currently bestowed upon ALEssANDRO Bonvictno (1498-c.1560), acele- brated painter of Brescia, Venetian school. He was born at Rovato in the Brescian territory in 1498, and studied first under Fioravante Ferramola of Brescia, afterwards, still youthful, with Titian in Venice. His own earlier method, specially distinguished by excellent portrait-paint- ing, was naturally modelled on that of Titian. Afterwards he conceived a great enthusiasm for Raphael (though he does not appear to have ever gone to Rome), and his style became partially Raphaelesque. It was, however, novel in its combination of diverse elements, and highly attractive,— with fine pencilling, a rich yet not lavish use of perspective and decorative effects, and an elegant opposition of light and shade. The human figure is somewhat slender in Bonvicino's paintings, the expression earnestly religious, the flesh-tints varied, more so than was common in the Venetian school. The backgrounds are generally luminous, and the draperies well modified in red and yellow tints with little intermixture of blue. The depth of Bonvicino's talent, however, was hardly in proportion to its vigour and vivacity ; and he excelled more in sedate altar-pieces than in subjects of action, and more in oil-painting than in fresco, although some fine series of his frescos remain, especially that in the villa Martinengo at Novarino, near Brescia. Among his celebrated works in the city are—in the church of 8. Clemente, the Five Virgin Martyrs, and the Assumption of the Madonna (this latter may count as his masterpiece) ; in 8. Nazaro e Celso, the Coronation of the Madonna; in S. Maria delle Grazie, St Joseph ; in S. Maria de' Miracoli, St Nicholas of Bari. In the Vienna Gallery is a St Justina (once ascribed to Pordenone) ; in the Stadel Institute, Frankfort, the Madonna enthroned between Sts Anthony and Sebastian ; in the Berlin Museum, a colossal Adoration of the Shepherds, and a large votive picture (one of the master's best) of the Madonna and Child, with infant angels and other figures above the clouds, and below, amid a rich landscape, two priests ; in the London National Gallery, St Bernardin and other saints, and two impressive portraits. I] Moretto is stated to have been a man of childlike personal piety, preparing himself by prayer and*~~

fasting for any great act of sacred art, such as the painting of the Virgin-mother. HIs dated works extend from 1524 to 1554, and he was the master of the pre-eminent portrait-painter Moroni. HIs death took place towards 1560.

MORGAGNI, Griovannt Bartista (1682-1771), the founder of pathological anatomy, was born 25th February 1682 at Forli, an ancient and important town on the ZEmilian road southwards from Bologna. HIs parents were in comfortable circumstances, but not of the nobility; it appears from his letters to Lancisi that Morgagni was ambitious of gaining admission into that rank, and it may be inferred that he succeeded from the fact that he is described on a memorial tablet at Padua as "nobilis Forolensis." At school he was conspicuous for his talents, and he was especially noted for his readiness in classical

1 A statue of the illustrious citizen was erected at Forli in 1875, and the town library preserves fourteen MS. volumes of his writings.

study philosophy and medicine, and he graduated with

much éclat as doctor in both faculties three years later (1701). HIe acted as prosector to Valsalva (one of the distinguished pupils of Malpighi), who held the office of "demonstrator anatomicus" in the Bologna school. HIe assisted Valsalva more particularly in preparing his cele- brated work on the Anatomy and Diseases of the Lar, which came out in 1704. Many years after (1740), Morgagni edited a collected edition of Valsalva's writings, with im- portant additions to the treatise on the ear, and with a memoir of the author. When Valsalva was transferred to Parma Morgagni succeeded to his anatomical demon-

stratorship. At this period he enjoyed a high repute in Bologna; he was made president of the Academia Inquietorum when in his twenty-fourth year, and he

is said to have signalized his tenure of the presiden- tial chair by discouraging abstract speculations, and by setting the fashion towards

~~*exact anatomical observa-*~~

~~*tion and reasoning. He published the substance of his*~~

~~*communications to the Academy in 1706 under the title*~~

~~*of Adversaria Anatomica, the first of a series by which he became favourably known throughout Europe as an accurate anatomist; the book included 'Observations on the Larynx, the Lachrymal Apparatus, and the Pelvic Organs in the Female." After a time he gave up his post at Bologna, and occupied himself for the next two or three years at Padua and Venice with anatomical studies (of fishes at the latter city), as well as with chemistry and pharmacy, and with reading in the libraries. He then settled in practice in his native town, and soon attracted a large amount of business; there was hardly a case of much difficulty about which he was not consulted even by the older physicians, "adeo erat in observando attentus, in predicendo cautus, in curando felix." Such at least is the contemporary eulogy. After less than three years of this career, which he found fatiguing, he sought an opportunity of returning to more academical work. At Padua he had a friend in the elder Guglielmini, professor of medicine, but better known as a writer on physics and mathematics, whose works he afterwards edited (1719) with a biography. Guglielmini desired to see him settled as a teacher at Padua, and the unexpected death of Guglielmini himself made the project feasible, Vallisnieri being transferred to the vacant chair and Morgagni succeeding to the chair of theoretical medicine. He came to Padua in the spring of 1712, being then in his thirty-first year, and he taught medicine there with the most brilliant success until his death sixty years later (6th December 1771). When he had been three years in Padua an opportunity occurred for his promotion (by the Venetian senate) to the chair of anatomy, in which he became the successor of an illustrious line of scholars, including Vesalius, Fallopius, Fabricius, Gasserius, and Spigelius, and in which he enjoyed a stipend that was increased from time to time by vote of the senate until it reached twelve hundred gold ducats. Shortly after coming to Padua he married a lady of Forli, of noble parentage, who bore him three sons and twelve daughters ; of the daughters, four died in infancy, and the other eight took the veil as they*~~

~~*grew up; of the sons, one died in boyhood, one entered the Jesuit order, and the eldest settled at Forli, where he married and lived to the age of fifty-two, predeceasing his father by five years and leaving a family to his care. Morgagni enjoyed an unequalled popularity among all classes. He was of tall and dignified figure, with blonde hair and blue eyes, and with a frank and happy expression; his manners were polished, and he was noted for the elegance of his Latin style. He lived in harmony with his colleagues, who are said not even to have envied him his unprecedentedly large stipend; his house and lecture-theatre were frequented*~~

~~*"tanquam officina sapientie" by students of all ages*~~

~~*attracted from all parts of Europe ; he enjoyed the friend-*~~

~~*ship and favour of distinguished Venetian senators and of cardinals; successive popes conferred honours upon him ; and on two occasions when a hostile army occupied the Emilia his house was ordered to be treated with the same marked distinction that the great Emathian conqueror showed to the house of Pindar. Before he had been long in Padua the students of the German nation, of all the faculties there, elected him their patron, and he advised and assisted them in the purchase of a house to be a German library and club for all time. No person of any learning came to Padua without seeing and conversing with Morgagni, and no one ever left him without admiring equally his character and his teaching. One of his bio- graphers and editors, the celebrated Tissot of Lausanne, observes that he had met with several Englishmen re- turning from Italy who told with pleasure and gratitude "quam humaniter illos exceperat, et quantum ex illius colloquiis, doctis, variis, jucundis profecerant." He was elected into the Imperial Cxsareo-Leopoldina Academy in 1708 (originally located at Schweinfurth), and to a higher grade in 1732, into the Royal Society in 1724, into the Paris Academy of Sciences in 1731, the St Petersburg Academy in 1735, and the Berlin Academy in 1754. Among his more celebrated pupils were Scarpa (who died in 1832, connecting the school of Morgagni with the modern era), Cotunnius (Cotugno), and Caldani, the author of the*~~

~~*magnificent atlas of anatomical plates published in 4 vols. at Venice in 1801-1814.*~~

~~*Meanwhile he published on a variety of subjects. In his earlier years at Padua he moe out (1717-1719) five more series of the 'Adversaria Anatomica by which his reputation was first made ; but for more than twenty years after the last of these his strictly medical publications were few and casual (on gall-stones, varices of the vena cava, cases of stone, and several memoranda on medico-legal points drawn up at the request of the curia). Classical scholarship in those years occupied his pen more than anatomical observations ; and the reason of this appears to have been that he spent the summer months in the country for the sake of his health, and occupied his leisure with literary studies. HIs writings in this class include letters to Lancisi on the manner of Cleopatra's death, commentaries on Celsus and Sammonicus, notes on Prosper Alpinus, Varro, Vegetius, Columella, and Vitruvius, and antiquarian researches into the topography of the country round Ravenna and his own birthplace (Forum Livii). HIs edition of the works of Valsalva,*~~

~~*ublished in 1740 (in 2 vols. 4to) with platcs, occupied much of*~~

~~*is time, being enriched with a life and a commentary, and with many additional observations of his own. It was not until 1761, when he was in his eightieth year, that he brought out the great work which, once for all, made pathological anatomy a science, and diverted the course of medicine into new channels of exactness or precision—the De Sedibus et Causis Morborum per Anatomem tndagatis. HIe died on 6th December 1771. During the preceding ten years the De Sedibus, notwithstanding its bulk, was reprinted several times (thrice in four years) in its original Latin, and was translated into French (1765), English (1769, 3 vols. 4to), and German (1771). Some account of this remarkable work remains now to be given.*~~

~~*The only special treatise on pathological anatomy previous to that of Morgagni was the work of Théophile Bonet of Neuchatel, Sepul-ehretum: sive Anatomia practica ex cadaveribus morbo denatts, first published (Geneva, 2 vols. folio) in 1679, three years before Morgagni was born ; it was republished at Geneva (8 vols. folio) in 1700, and again*~~

~~at Leyden in 1709. Although the normal anatomy of the body had been comprehensively, and in some parts exhaustively written by Vesalius and Fallopius, it had not occurred to any one to examine and describe systematically the anatomy of diseased organs and parts. Harvey, a century after Vesalius, naively re- marks that therc is more to be learned from the dissection of one paueen who had died of consumption or other chronic malady, than rom the bodies of ten persons who had been hanged. Glisson indeed (1597-1677) shows, in a passage quoted by Bonet in the preface to the Scpulchrctum, that he was familiar with the idea, at least, of systematically comparing the state of the organs in a series of cadavera, and of noting those conditions which invariably accompanied a given set of symptoms. The work of Bonet was, however, the first attempt at a system of morbid anatomy, and, although it dwelt mostly upon curiosities and monstrosities, it~~

~~enjoyed much repute in its day; Haller speaks of it as "an im- mortal work, which may in itself serve for a pathological library." Morgagni, in the preface to his own work, discusses the defects and merits of the Sepulchretwm ; it was largely a compilation of other men's cases, well and ill authenticated; it was prolix, oftcn inaccurate and misleading from ignorance of the normal anatomy, and it was wanting in what would now be called objective impartiality,—a quality which was introduced as decisively into morbid anatomy by Morgagni as it had been introduced two centuries earlier into normal human anatomy by Vesalius. Morgagni has narrated the circumstances under which the De Scdibus took origin. Having finished his edition of Valsalva in 1740, he was taking a holiday in the country, spending much of his time in the company of a young friend who was curious in many branches of knowledge. The conversation turned upon the Sepulchretum of Bonet, and it was suggested to Morgagni by his dilettante friend that he should put on record his own observations. It was agreed that letters on the anatomy of diseased organs and parts should be written for the perusal of this favoured youth (whose name does not transpire) ; and they were continued from time to time until they numbered seventy. 'Those seventy letters constitute the De Sedibus et Causis Morborum, which was given to~~

~~*the world as a systematic treatise in 2 vols. folio, Venice, 1761, twenty years after the task of epis- tolary instruction was begun. The letters are arranged in five books, treating of the morbid conditions of the body a capite ad calcem. The five books are dedicated respectively to Trew, Brom- field, Senac, Schreiber, and Meckel, as representing the several learned societies of which Morgagni was a foreign member. The five books together contain, according to an enumeration by the present writer, the records of some 640 dissections. Some of these are given at great length, and with a precision of statement and ex- haustiveness of detail hardly surpassed in the so-called "protocols" of the Gernian pathological institutes of the present time ; others, again, are fragments brought in to clucidate some question that had arisen. The symptoms during the course of the malady and other antecedent circumstances are always prefixed with more or less ful- ness, and discussed from the point of view of the conditions found after death. Subjects in all ranks of life, including several cardinals, figure in this remarkable gallery of the dead. Many of the cases are taken from Morgagni's early experiences at Bologna, and from the records of his teachers Valsalva and Albertini not elsewhere published. Those six hundred or more cases are selected and arranged with method and purpose, and they are often (and some- what casually) made the occasion of a long excursus on general pathology and therapeutics. The range of Morgagni's scholarship, as evidenced by his references to early and contemporary literature, strikes one with astonishment. It has been contended that he was himself not free from prolixity, the besetting sin of the learned ; and certainly the form and arrangement of his treatise are such as to make it difficult to use in the present day, notwithstanding that it is well indexed in the rarer) edition, in that of Tissot (3 vols. 4to, Yverdun, 1779), and in more recent editions. It differs from modern treatises in so far as the symptoms determine the order and manner of presenting the anatomical facts. Although Morgagni was the first to understand and to demonstrate the absolute necessity of basing diagnosis, prognosis, and treatment on an exact and com- prehensive knowledge of anatomical conditions, he made no attempt (like that of the Vienna school sixty years later) to exalt pathological anatomy into a science disconnected from clinical medicine and remote from practical needs. His orderliness of anatomical method (implying his skill with the scalpel), his precision, his exhaustive- ness, and his freedom*~~

~~*from bias are his essentially modern or scientific qualities; his scholarship and high consideration for classical and foreign work, his sense of practical ends (or his common sense), and the breadth of his intellectual horizon prove him to have lived before medical science had become largely technical or mechanical. Itis clear that Morgagni's immense personal influence during his lifetime did not alone make his book famous; at a distance of two hundred years from his birth, and more than one hundred from his death, the opinion is unanimous that his treatise was the commencement of the era of steady or cumulative progress in pathology and in practical medicine. Symptoms from that time ceased to be made up into more or less conventional groups, each of which was a disease ; on the other hand, they began to be viewed as "the cry of the suffering organs," and it now became possible to develop Sydenham's grand conception of a natural history of disease in a catholie or scientific spirit. Laennec's application of the stetho- scope to detect the sounds given out in diseased states of the heart and lungs, and Bright's application of the test-tube and re-agents to reach the structural and functional conditions of the kidney through the state of the urine, were the direct results of Morgagni's endeavour to lay bare the seats and causes of disease by anatomy ; and those two means of diagnosis are the daily and hourly resource of every modern practitioner. In more general terms, Morgagni's work substituted localization for generalization and precision for vagueness.*~~

~~*A biography of Morgagni by Mosca was published at Naples in 1768. HIs*~~

~~*life may also be read in Fabroni's Vita illustr. Italor., and a convenient abridg- ment of Fabroni's memoir will be found prefixed to Tissot's edition of the De Sedibus, &c. A collected edition of his works was published at Venice in five vols. folio in 1765. (Cc. C.)*~~

~~*MORGAN, Sypney Owxnson, Lapy (177741859), novelist and miscellaneous describer and critic, was one of the most vivid and hotly-discussed literary personages of her generation. She was the daughter of an Irish actor, but it was one of her whims to keep the year of her birth a secret; "once upon a time" on Christmas day was her answer to inquiries.*~~

~~*She began her literary career with a precocious volume of poems. Her second venture, St Clair (1804), a novel of ill-judged marriage, ill-starred love, and impassioned nature-worship, in which the influence of Goethe and Rousseau was apparent, at once attracted attention. Another novel, The Novice of St Dominick (1806), was also praised for its qualities of copious imagina- tion and description, though the critics were inclined to nibble at the writer's grammar. But the book which made her reputation and brought her name into warm con- troversy was The Wild Irish Girl, also published in 1806. In this she appeared as the ardent champion of her native country, a politician rather than a novelist, extolling the beauty of Irish scenery, the richness of the natural wealth of Ireland, the noble traditions of its early history, and sketching types of the various classes with direct refer- ence to the misgovernment to which she traced their evil features. She followed this up with Patriotic Sketches and Metrical Fragments in 1807, fitting some Irish melodies with words ("Kate Kearney" among the number) in the same year in which Moore began a similar task. Miss Owen- son's politics and the favour shown her by the Whig aristocracy probably prompted the savage attack made upon her next novel, da, a Woman of Athens, in the first number of the Quarterly (1809). From first to last her style was open to the reproach of being made up too much of quotations, and her grammar was not always correct ; but exuberant humour, keen wit, and fertility in the inven- tion of striking and romantic incidents carry any unbiassed reader easily over all minor faults of composition. Her great ambition was to draw vivid pictures of the mingled "mirth and misery, ferocity and fun," of the Irish under English rule, and she succeeded. Her novels suffer as stories from this political purpose ; she drags in too many character-sketches, and, though they are always drawn with vivacity and sharp penetration, they are drawn with too much bias of romantic enthusiasm on the one side and satirical spite on the other. In 1812 she was married to Sir T. C. Morgan, but books still continued to flow from her facile pen. In 1814 she produced her best novel, O'Donnel, a decided advance on previous work. She published an elaborate study of France under the Bourbon restoration in 1817. This was attacked with outrageous fury in the Quarterly, the authoress being accused of Jacobinism, falsehood, licentiousness, and im- piety. She took her revenge indirectly in the novel of Florence Macarthy (1818), in which a Quarterly reviewer, Con Crawley, is insulted with supreme feminine*~~

ingenuity. Italy, a companion work to her France, was published in 1821; Lord Byron bears testimony to the justness of its pictures of life. The results of Italian historical studies were given in her Life and Times of Salvator Rosa (1824). Then she turned again to Irish manners and politics with a matter-of-fact book on Absenteeism (1825), and a highly stirring and romantic novel, The O'Briens and the O' Fla- hertys (1827). The Book of the Boudoir (1829) consisted of miscellaneous reflexions and reminiscences. Under the ministry of Lord Grey Lady Morgan obtained a pension of £300. During the last thirty years of her long life she broke no new ground, but to the last she was an entertam- ing writer, and sent some sprightly verses to the Atheneum

in January 1859, a few weeks before her death, protesting against being called old. The titles of her books in this period are :—France in 1829-30, Dramatic Scenes from Real Life (1833), The Princess (1835), Woman and her Master (1840), The Book without a Name (1841), Passages from my Autobiography (1859). More of her autobiography and many interesting letters were edited with a memoir by Hepworth Dixon in 1862. He respected her prejudice against disclosing her exact age. MORGANATIC MARRIAGE. See MarriaceE. MORGHEN, RarraELto Sanzio (1758-1833), a distin- guished engraver, was born at Naples on 19th June 1758. He received his earliest instructions from his father, him- self an engraver ; but, in order to be initiated more fully in the art, he was afterwards placed as a pupil under the celebrated Volpato. He assisted this master in engraving the famous pictures of Raphael in the Vatican, and the print which represents the miracle of Bolsena is inscribed with his name. He married Volpato's daughter, and, being invited to Florence to engrave the masterpieces of the Florentine gallery, he removed thither with his wife in 1782. His reputation now became so great as to induce the artists of Florence to recommend him to the grand-duke as a fit person to engrave the Last Supper of Leonardo da Vinci; apart, however, from the dilapidated statc of the picture itself, the drawing made for Morghen was unworthy of the original, and the print, in consequence, although an admirable production, fails to convey a correct idea of the style and merit of Leonardo. Morghen's fame, however, soon extended over Europe ; and

~~*the Institute of France, as a mark of their admiration of his talents, elected him an associate in 1803. In 1812 Napoleon invited him to Paris and paid him the most flattering attentions. IIe died at Florence on 8th April 1833. A list of the artist's works, published at Florence in 1810, com- prised 200 compositions ; the number was afterwards considerably inereased. Amongst the most remarkable, besides those already mentioned, may be noticed the Transfiguration from Raphael, a Magdalen from Murillo, a IIead of the Saviour from Da Vinci, the Car of Aurora from Guido, the IIours and the Repose in Egypt from Poussin, the Prize of Diana from Domenichino, the Monument of Clement XIII. from Canova, Theseus vanquishing the Minotaur, Francesco Moneado after Vandyke, portraits of Dante, Petrarch, Ariosto, Tasso, and a number of other eminent men. IIis prints have hardly maintained the reputation which they enjoyed during theartist's lifetime. Though carefully and delicately executed, they are somewhat mechanical and wanting in foree and spirit. MORIIOF, Dante, Grore (1639-1691), the learned author of a survey of universal literature entitled Polyhistor sive de auctorum notitia et rerum commentari, was born at Wismar in 1639, studied law at Rostock, and was appointed professor of poetry there in 1660. In 1665 he went to the new university of Kiel as professor of eloquence and poetry ; this chair he exchanged for that of history in 1673. IIe died at Liibeck in 1691. Of his numerous writings only the Polyhistor continues to be of value to the literary historian as a bibliographical work displaying judgment as well as knowledge. The first seven books (Polyhastor Interarius) appeared in 1688-1698 ; the publication of the two remaining parts (P. Philosophicus and P. Practicus) was completed by Moller in 1707. The best edition is that of A. Fabricius (2 vols. 4to, Leipsic, 1747). MORIAII. In 2 Chron. iii. 1 we read that Solomon built the Temple at Jerusalem on Mount Moriah (13 7719), This name for the Temple hill, the ancient Zion, is not found elsewhere in the Old Testament, and can hardly have been a current one. But a mountain in the "Jand of Moriah" was the place where Abraham was com- manded to sacrifice Isaac ; Josephus (Ant., i. 13, 2) assumes that this Maprov épos was the Temple hill, and the same view is expressed in the Targums, where it is exegetically based on the obscure verse, Gen. xxii. 14 (comp. Jerome,*~~

~~Quest. Heb. in Gen. xxii. 2). Probably this tradition already existcd in the time of the Chronicler, who appears to connect the name etymologically with Jehovah's mani- festation of himself, as is done in Gen. xxii. 14.1~~

~~Jerome repeatedly ealls the Temple hill Mount Moriah, but the curreney which the name has with modern writers is mainly due to the erroneous identification of Zion with the western hill beyond the Tyropwon. In Christian tradition the place of Isaac's sacrifice was identified with Calvary (see Theodosius, De Sitw Terre Sanctz), and it is now shown in a chapel adjoining the echurch of the Holy Sepulehre.~~

~~MORIER, James (1780-1849), traveller and author, was born in 1780. Through the influence of his uncle Admiral William Waldegrave, Baron Radstock, he at an early period entered the diplomatic service, and as secretary to Lord Elgin followed the grand vizier in the Egyptian cam- paign. An account of his Eastern experiences was pub- lished in 1812, under the title A Journey through Persia, Armenia, and Asia Minor to Constantinople in 1808-9. From 1810 to 1816 he was the English representative at the court of Persia, and after his return he published A Second Journey through Persia to Constantinople between the years 1810 and 1816. His knowledge of Eastern life and man- ners he algo turned to account in the composition of several entertaining romances, displaying some skill in the deline- ation of Oriental scenery and character, and considerable powers of wit and humour. The most popular of these were: —The Adventures of Hajji Baba of Ispahan, 1824 ; The Adventures of Hajji Baba of Ispahan in England, 1828; Zohrab the Hostage, 1832; and Ayesha the Maid of Kars, 1834. Morier died at Brighton, 23d March 1849.~~

~~MORILLON, a name commonly given by fowlers to the female or immature male of the GotpEN-EvE (vol. x. p. 757), the Clangula glaucion of modern ornithology, under the belief which still very generally obtains among them, as it once did among naturalists, that they formed a distinct species of Duck. The mistake no doubt originated in, and is partly excused by, the facts that the birds called Morillons were often of opposite sexes, and differed greatly fromthe adult male Golden-Eye, whosefull and~~

~~*beautiful plu- mage is not assumed until the second year. The word is used in French in precisely the same form, but is in that language applied to the Tufted Duck, Fuligula cristata, and is derived, according to Littré, from more, signifying black. (A. N.)*~~

~~*MORIN, Jay, or, in Latin, Joannes Morinus (1591- 1659), the most learned Catholic theologian of his time and one of the founders of Biblical criticism, was born in 1591 at Blois of Protestant parents, acquired Latin and Greek at Rochelle, and continued his studies at Leyden. Immersed in Biblical and patristic lore, he began to waver in his Protestantism, and moved to Paris, where he made many friends in literary circles, particularly Cardinal Du Perron, to whom his conversion to Catholicism is ascribed. In 1618 he joined the recently formed Parisian Oratory, where he could give himself to quiet study, and in due course took priest's orders. In 1625 he visited England in the train of Henrietta Maria, and in 1640 he was at Rome, on the invitation of Cardinal Barberini, and was received with special favour by Pope Urban VIII, who employed him on the commission for forwarding his pro- ject of union with the Eastern Church. He was, however, soon recalled to Paris by Richelieu, and the rest of his life was spent among books in incessant literary labour, his health, memory, and intellectual vigour remaining unim- paired even in old age. His pen sometimes brought him into trouble. The Histoire de la délivrance de U Eglise Chrétienne par Vemp, Constantin, et de la grandeur et souveraineté temporelle donnée a [Eglise Romaine par les rots de France (1630) gave great offence at Rome, and a*~~

~~*_ 1) The word Moriah, however, can hardly come from MN, "'see;" it is perhaps akin to Moreh, "revealer," "teacher."*~~

~~*MOR—MOR*~~

~~*Déclaration (1654), directed against faults in the adminis- tration of the Oratory and reflecting on the general (Father Bourgoing), was strictly suppressed. So, too, his great work on penance gave equal offence to the Jesuits and to Port- Royal, and even after his death (1659) the polemical vehemence of his Hercitationes Biblice, and the exaggera- tion of his assertion "apud neotericos Hereticos verba Scripturarum non esse integra, non superficiem, non folia, nedum sensum, medullam et radicem*~~

~~rationis" long led Protestants to treat his valuable contributions to the history~~

~~of the Hebrew text asa mere utterance of Popish prejudice. Morinus was a voluminous and prolix writer on ecclesiastical antiquities. His principal works in this field are Commentarius historicus de disciplina in administratione sacramenti penitentiz XITI primis sceulis in Eccl. Occid. ct hucusque in Orient. observata (1651), and Comm. de sacris Ecclesizw ordinationibus secundum antiquos ct recentiores Latinos, Grecos, Syros et Babylonios (1655). The second of these works expresses those irenical views on the subject of ordination which recommended Morinus to Urban VIII. The literary correspondence of Morinus appeared in 1682 under the title of Antiquitates Ecclesiw Orientalis (edited by R. Simon).~~

~~The chief fame of Morinus, however, now rests on his Biblical and critical labours. By his editio princeps of the Samaritan Penta- teuch and Targum, in the Paris Polyglott, he gave the first impulse in Europe to the study of this dialect, which he acquired without a teacher (framing a grammar for himself) by the study of MSS. then newly brought to Europe. Not unnaturally he formed a very exaggerated view of the value of the Samaritan tradition of the text, exalting it above the tradition of the Jews (Lzercttationes in utrum- que Samaritanorum Pentateuchum, 1631). A similar tone of ex- aggerated depreciation of the Hebrew text, coloured, as has been remarked above, by polemical bias against Protestantism, mars his greatest work, the posthumous Excrcitationes bibliew de Hebrexici Grecique textus sinceritate (1660), in which, following in the foot- steps of Cappellus, but with incomparably greater learning, he brings irrefragable arguments against the then current theory of the absolute integrity of the Hebrew text of the Old Testament, and the antiquity of the vowel points. The second part of this work is still valued as a copious storehouse of materials for the history of the Hebrew text collected by the most self-denying labour— mets ingratiis, as he said himself.~~

~~MORLAIX, the chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Finistére, France, lies 350 miles west of Paris on the railway from Paris to Brest, and at the con- fluence of two small streams, 7 miles distant from the sea. Its port has 13 feet of water at ordinary and 23 feet at spring~~

~~*tides. The entrance of the roadstead is defended by the Chateau du Taureau, which stands on a rock in the sea, and was built in 1542 to protect the town from the English. Morlaix still contains a considerable number of curious wooden houses of the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries; but the most striking piece of architecture in the town is the gigantic two-storied viaduct of the railway from Paris to Brest, 934 feet long and 207 feet above the quays. The old church of the Dominicans is now occupied by the town library. The hospital has beds for 500 patients, and can accommodate 300 female lunatics besides. A tobacco-factory, employing 400 men and 700 women, is the principal industrial establishment ; and there are also extensive paper-mills, a considerable flax-mill, canvas-factories, foundries, and saw-mills. A considerable trade is carried on in grain, yarn, canvas, leather, tallow, wax, and horses; anda large quantity of butter, cattle, and vegetables is exported from Roscoff, a village in the neighbourhood, which is also known for its sea-bathing and its zoological station. he population of Morlaix was 15,183 in 1876.*~~

~~*Judging by the numerous coins found on the spot, the site of Morlaix was probably occupied in the time of the Romans. The counts of Leon held the lordship in the 12th century, but the dukes of Brittany disputed possession with them, and in 1187 Henry II. of England, guardian of Arthur of Brittany, made himself master of the town after a siege of several weeks. During the War of the Hundred Years Morlaix was again captured and recaptured by the French and the English, and pillaged by the latter in 1522. Queen Mary of Scotland, on her way to be married to the Dauphin, made solemn entry into Morlaix in 1548. And finally, the town having joined the League, the castle was taken by storm in the name of Henry IV. in 1594.*~~

~~*MORLAND, Gerorcx (1763-1804), animal and subject painter, was born in London on the 26th of June 1763. HIe came of a race of artists. HIis father, a painter, mezzotint- engraver, and picture-dealer, gave him a careful art-training, and at an exceptionally early age he produced works of wonderful promise. At sixteen he exhibited sketches at the Royal Academy, and even before this his productions found ready purchasers, and some of them had been engraved, But already the taste for dissipation, which was stronger in Morland than even his love for art, had begun to manifest itself, and at seventeen he escaped from the over-strict discipline of his father's house, and began a career of reckless prodigality which has hardly a parallel in art-biography, gathering round him an entourage of the most abandoned associates, and supporting himself by the sale of the pictures—rustic subjects and scenes from low life—which he threw off with unexampled rapidity. About 1786 there appeared to be some prospect of amendment. HIe went to reside at Kensal Green, came under the influ- ence of better companions, and married a beautiful and virtuous girl, a sister of James Ward the animal-painter and William Ward the engraver. The subjects which Morland painted during this period reflect the change in his way of life. The Idle and Industrious Mechanic, and Letitia or Seduction, moralities in the style of HIogarth, were engraved and became exceedingly popular. But soon the force of old habit asserted itself, the desire for freedom and lawlessness returned to the artist with redoubled violence, and he again drifted into a career of riot and intemperance. The means of dissipation were not wanting ; the dealers were eager for his productions ; indeed, so greatly were they esteemed that skilled copyists were employed to make many transcripts from the pictures on which he was at work, which were sold as originals to an unsuspecting public. The finest of Morland's subjects date from 1790 to 1792. In 1791 was painted the Inside of a Stable, now in the National Gallery, probably the artist's masterpiece. In spite of his popularity and his industry his affairs became inextricably embarrassed. For a time he eluded the bailiffs with singular dexterity, but in November 1799 he was arrested. Obtaining the Rules of the Bench, he took a house within bounds, and con- tinued to practise both his art and his debauchery. HIe was released under the Insolvent Act of 1802, but his health was ruined and he was speedily stricken with palsy. Partially*~~

~~*recovering, he continued to paint, but before long he was again arrested for debt, and died in a sponging- house in Eyre Street, Coldbath Fields, on the 29th of October 1804. His wife survived him only some three days, and they were buried in one grave.*~~

~~*The most characteristic works of Morland are those which deal with rustic and homely life. They show much direct and instinct- ive feeling for nature, and admirable executive skill, but they have no elevation of subject, no great beauty of colour or truth of atmo- sphere. They suffer from the haste in which the artist habitually worked. Many of them have been admirably mezzotinted by J. R. Smith and his pupils, William Ward and John Young. Par- ticulars of Morland's life will be found in the biographies by J. Hassell (1804), G. Dawe (1807), and Blagton (1806), and in Memoirs of a Picture, by W. Collins, 1805.*~~

~~*MORMONS, or The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter- Day Saints, are a religious sect founded by Joseph Smith at Manchester, New York, in 1830, and for the last thirty- six years settled in Salt Lake City, Territory of Utah, United States. Smith was born 23d December 1805 at Sharon, Windsor county, Vermont, from which place ten years later his parents, a poor, ignorant, thriftless, and not too honest couple, removed to New York, where they settled on a small farm near Palmyra, Wayne county (then Ontario). Four years later, in 1809, they removed to Manchester, some 6 miles off; and it was at the latter place when fifteen years old that Joseph began to have*~~

~~*his alleged visions, in one of which on the night of 21st September 1823 the angel Moroni appeared to him three times, and told him that the Bible of the Western Continent, the supplement to the New Testament, was buried in a certain spot near Manchester. Thither, four years later and after due disciplinary probation, Smith went, and had delivered into his charge by an angel of the Lord a stone box, inwhich was a volume, 6 inches thick, made of thin gold plates 8 inches by 7, and fastened together by three gold rings. The plates were covered with small writing in the*~~

~~*“reformed Egyptian” tongue, and were accompanied by a pair of supernatural spectacles, consisting of two crystals set in a silver bow, and called “ Urim and Thummim ;” by aid of these the mystic characters could be read. Being himself unable to read or write fluently, Smith employed as amanuensis one Oliver Cowdery, to whom, from behind a curtain, he dictated a translation, which, with the aid of a farmer, Martin Harris, who had more money than wit, was printed and published in 1830 under the title of The Book of Mormon, and accompanied by the sworn statement of Oliver Cowdery, David Whitmer, and Martin Harris that an angel of God had shown them the plates of which the book was a translation. This testi- mony all three, on renouncing Mormonism some years later, denounced as false; but meanwhile it helped Smith to impose on the credulous, particularly in the absence of the gold plates themselves, which suddenly and mysteri- ously disappeared. The Book of Mormon, in which Joseph Smith was declared to be God’s “ prophet,” with all power and entitled to all obedience, professes to give the history of America from its first settlement by a colony of refugees from among the crowd dispersed by the confusion of tongues at the Tower of Babel down to the year 5 a.p. These settlers having in course of time destroyed one another, nothing of importance occurred until 600 3.c., when Lehi, his wife, and four sons, with ten friends, all from Jerusalem, landed on the coast of Chili, All went well until the death of Lehi, when the divine appointment to the leadership of Nephi, the youngest son, roused the resentment of his elder brothers, who were in consequence condemned to have dark skins and to be an idle mischievous race,—hence the North-American Indians. Between the Nephites and the bad Hebrews a fierce war was maintained for centuries, until finally, in spite of divine intervention in the person of the crucified Christ, the Nephites fell away from the true faith, and in 384 a.p. were nearly annihilated by their dark-skinned foes in a battle at the hill of Cumorah, in Ontario county, New York. Among the handful that escaped were Mormon and his son Moroni, the former of whom collected the sixteen books of records, kept by suc- cessive kings and priests, into one volume, which on his death was supplemented by his son with some personal reminiscences and by him buried in the hill of Cumorah,—he being divinely assured that the book would one day be discovered by God’s chosen prophet. This is Smith’s account of the book ; but in reality it was written in 1812 as an historical*~~

romance by one Solomon Spalding, a crack- brained preacher ; and the MS. falling into the hands of an unscrupulous compositor, Sidney Rigdon, was copied by him, and subsequently given to Joseph Smith. Armed with this book and with self-assumed divine authority, the latter soon began to attract followers. On 6th April 1830 the first conference of the new sect, called by their neighbours Mormons, but by themselves subsequently Latter-Day Saints of Jesus Christ, was held at Fayette, Seneca county, New York, and in the same year another revelation was received by Smith, proclaiming him "seer, translator, prophet, apostle of Jesus Christ, and elder of the church." Smith now began to baptize; but, his character, which was none of the best, being too well known in Fayette, he

MORN ODNS

found it convenient to remove with his followers, now thirty in number, to Kirtland, Ohio, which was to be the seat of the New Jerusalem. HIere he had another revelation, directing the saints to consecrate all their pro- perty to God and to start a bank. This being done and Smith appointed president of the bank, the country was soon flooded with worthless notes, which fact, added to other grievances, so enraged the neighbouring Christian settlers that on the night of 22d May 1832 a number of them dragged Smith and Rigdon from their beds and tarred and feathered them. One year later, the church was fairly organized, with three presidents, Smith, Rigdon, and Frederick G. Williams, who were styled the first presidency, and entrusted with the keys of the last

kingdom. About this time the licentiousness of Smith

might have led to the dissolution of the church but for the accession of Brigham Young, a Vermont painter and glazier, thirty years old, who turned up in Kirtland in 1832, and was immediately ordained elder. Young's indomitable will, per- suasive eloquence, executive ability, shrewdness, and zeal soon made their influence felt, and, when a further step was taken in 1835 towards the organization of a hierarchy by the institution of the quorum of the "twelve apostles," who were sent out as proselytizing missionaries among the " gen- tiles," Young was ordained one of the ""'twelve" and de- spatched to preach throughout the eastern

~~*States. In 1836 a large temple was consecrated in Kirtland, and in the follow- ing year Orson Hyde and Heber C. Kimball were sent off as missionaries to England, where, among the labouring masses in Manchester, Liverpool, Birmingham, Leeds, Glasgow, and the mining districts of South Wales they achieved a remarkable success. Early in 1838 the Kirtland bank failed, and Smith and Rigdon fled to Caldwell county, Missouri, where a large body of the saints, after having been driven successively from Jackson and Clay counties, had taken refuge and flourished. Smith's troubles, how- ever, continued to increase. His gross profligacy had repelled many of his leading supporters and bred internal dissensions, while from the outside the brethren were harassed and threatened by the steadily growing hostility of the native Missourians. To counteract the efforts of his enemies, a secret society was organized in Smith's favour in October 1838, called the Danites, with the avowed purpose of supporting Smith at all hazards, of upholding the authority of his revelation and decrees as superior to the laws of the land, and of helping him to get possession, first of the State, then of the United States, and ultimately of the world. To such a height did the inner dissensions and the conflicts with the "gentiles" grow that they assumed the proportions of a civil war, and necessitated the calling out of the State militia. Defying the legal officers, Smith fortified the town and armed the saints, but finally had to. succumb to superior numbers. Smith and Rigdon were arrested and imprisoned on a charge of treason, murder, and felony, and their followers to the number of 15,000 crossed over into Illinois and settled near Commerce, Han- cock county. Here they were shortly afterwards rejoined by Smith, who succeeded in escaping from prison, and, having obtained a charter, they founded the city of Nauvoo. Such were the powers granted them by this charter as to render the city practically independent of the State Government, and to give Smith all but unlimited civil power. He organized a military body called the Nauvoo legion, of which he constituted himself commander with the title of lieutenant-general, while he was also president of the church and mayor of the city. On 6th April 1841 the foundations of the new temple were laid, and the city continued to grow rapidly in prosperity and size. But Smith's vices were beginning to bear fruit. Some years*~~

~~*previously he had prevailed on several women to cohabit*~~

~~*with him, and in order to pacify his lawful wife and silence the objections of the saints he had a revelation on 12th July 1843 expressly establishing and approving polygamy. The proclamation of the new doctrine excited widespread indignation, which found special expression in the pages of the Hxpositor, a newspaper published by an old friend of Smith, one Dr Foster. Smith at once caused the Zv- positor printing-office to be razed and Foster expelled, on which the latter procured a warrant for the arrest of Smith, his brother Hyrum, and sixteen others, Smith resisted ; the militia was called out ; the Mormons armed themselves; and a civil war seemed imminent, when the governor of the State persuaded Smith to surrender and stand his trial. Accordingly, on 27th June 1844 he and Hyrum were imprisoned in Carthage jail; but that same night a mob broke into the prison and shot the two men dead. This shooting was the most fortunate thing that had ever happened to the Mormon cause, investing the murdered president with the halo of martyrdom, and effacing public recollection of his vices in the lustre of a glorious death. Of the confusion that followed Smith's "taking off" Brigham Young profited by procuring his own election to the pre- sidency by the council of the " twelve apostles,"—a position for which his splendid executive abilities well fitted him, as subsequent events abundantly proved. The following year witnessed what appeared to be the culmination of their misfortunes. The legislature of Illinois repealed the charter of Nauvoo, and so critical did the situation become that the leaders resolved to emigrate imme- diately, and preparations were begun for a general exodus westward. Early in 1846 a large number of the body met at Council Bluffs, Iowa, and those who had stayed behind soon found cause to regret that they too had not left Nauvoo, as in the September of the same year that city was cannonaded, and the Mormons were driven out. Meanwhile pioneers had been despatched to the Great Salt Lake valley, Utah, and, their report proving favourable, a large body of emigrants was marched with military discipline across the wilderness to the valley, where they immediately proceeded to found Salt Lake City, and where on 24th July 1847 they were joined by their chief, Brigham Young. In the May following the main body of the saints set out to rejoin their brethren, and in the autumn of that year reached Salt Lake City. Large tracts of land*~~

~~were at once put under cultivation, a great city sprang up as by magic, and the untiring industry, energy, and zeal of the emigrants turned a barren wilder- ness into a fertile and blooming garden. An emigration fund was organized, missionaries were sent out, and soon settlers began to pour in from all quarters of the globe, particularly from Great Britain, Sweden and Norway, and in less numbers from Germany, Switzerland, and France. Strangely enough, and the fact deserves emphasis, Ireland has furnished few if any recruits to the cause of Mormon- ism. In March 1849 a convention was held at Salt Lake City, and a State was organized under the name of Deseret, meaning "'the land of the honey-bee." A legislature was also elected, and a constitution framed, which was sent on to Washington. This Congress refused to recognize, and by way of compromise for declining to admit the proposed new State into the Union President Fillmore in 1850 organized the country occupied by the Mormons into the Territory of Utah, with Brigham Young as governor. District judges were also appointed by the Federal Govern- ment; but in 1851, a few months after their appointment, they were forced to leave by the aggressive tactics of Young. Such bold defiance of the Federal Government could not be ignored; Brigham was suspended from the governorship, and Colonel Steptoe of the United States army appointed in his stead. The new governor, backed~~

~~by a battalion of soldiers, arrived in Utah in August 1854 ; but so strong was the opposition which he met with that he dared not assume office, and was forced to content him- self with merely wintering in Salt Lake City, after which he withdrew his troops to California. Nor did the other civil officers appointed by the United States Government at the same time show any bolder front. In February 1856 a band of armed Mormons broke into the court- room of the United States district judge, and forced Judge Drummond to adjourn his court sine die. HIs surrender precipitated the flight of the other civil officers, and with the sole exception of the United States Indian agent they withdrew from Salt Lake City. These facts led President Buchanan to appoint a new governor in the person of Alfred Cumming, the superintendent of Indian affairs on the upper Missouri, who in 1857 went to Utah, accom- panied by Judge~~

~~*Eckels of Indiana as chief justice, and by a force of 2500 soldiers. Enraged by this aggressive action, Brigham Young boldly called the saints to arms. In September the United States army reached Utah, but on 5th and 6th October a band of mounted Mormons destroyed a number of its supply trains, and a few days later cut off 800 oxen from its rear and drove them into Salt Lake City. The result was that the United States army, now commanded by Colonel A. S. Johnston, was compelled—it being now mid-November—to go into winter quarters at Black's Forks, near Fort Bridger. In the same year a party of Mormons and Indians, instigated and led by a Mormon bishop named John D. Lee, attacked a train of 150 non-Mormon emigrants at Mountain Mea- dows, near Utah, and massacred every soul. Governor Cumming at once declared the Territory in a state of rebellion; but in the spring of 1858, through the inter- vention of Thomas L. Kane of Pennsylvania, armed with letters of authority from President Buchanan, the Mormons were induced to submit to the Federal authority, and accepted a free offer of pardon made to them by the United States Government as the condition of their submission. Matters being thus settled, the Federal troops encamped on the western shore of Lake Utah, some 40 miles from Salt Lake City, where they remained until withdrawn from the Territory in 1860. On the close of the American Civil War a Federal governor was again appointed, and in 1871 polygamy was declared to be a criminal offence, and Brigham Young was arrested. This action, however, on the part of the United States Government was merely spasmodic, and the Mormonscontinued to practise polygamy, and to increase in wealth and numbers until 29th August 1877, when Brigham Young died, leaving a fortune of $2,000,000 (£400,000) to 17 wives and 56 children. He was succeeded in office by John Taylor, an Englishman, although the actual leadership fell to George Q. Cannon, "'first coun- sellor" to the president, and one of the ablest men in the sect. The year 1877 was otherwise signalized in Mormon history by the trial, conviction, and execution of John D. Lee for the Mountain Valley massacre of 1857. Of late years the question of Mormonism has largely occupied public attention. In 1873 Mr Frelinghuysen introduced a bill severely censuring polygamy, and declaring that the wives of polygamists could claim relief by action for divorce. In 1874 the committee of the House of Representatives reported a bill which reduced Utah to the position of a province, placing the control*~~

~~of affairs in the hands of Federal officials, and practically abolishing polygamy. In the same year George Q. Cannon was elected a delegate from Utah, and though his election was contested it was confirmed by the House of Representatives. This decision, however, was accompanied by the passing of a resolution by a vote of 127 to 51, appointing a committee of investiga- tion into Delegate Cannon's alleged polygamy,—he having,~~

~~it was asserted, four wives.~~

~~Mormonism, passed the House in spite of the eloquent opposition of Cannon. Other steps in the same direction have since been taken, and bills passed, having for their~~

~~object the extirpation of polygamy, but all without imme- It is, however, a question of~~

~~diate and practical effect. time merely; polygamy is doomed. 'The secession, chiefly because of his opposition to the practice, of Brigham Young's son, a Christian preacher, and of a large body~~

~~of other anti-polygamists who claim to be the true Latter-~~

~~Day Saints, represents not an individual opinion but the~~

~~deep-rooted conviction of a great party, and the day is not~~

~~far distant when the Mormons who acknowledge John Taylor as chief prophet must consent to lop off polygamy or cease to exist as a corporate body of the United States. Already there are not wanting signs of approaching dis- solution, of which perhaps the most significant is the con- ference of the "Reorganized Church of Jesus Christ of Latter- Day Saints," held on 6th April 1883, at Kirtland, Lake county, Ohio. This sect originated in 1851, seven years after the death of Joseph Smith, when several officers of the church met and claimed to have received a revelation from God, directing them to repudiate Brigham Young, as not being the divinely-appointed and legitimate successor of Joseph Smith,~~

~~*and as being the promulgator of such false doctrines as polygamy, Adam-God worship, and the right to shed the blood of apostates. Nothing of special importance occurred, however, until 1860, when Joseph Smith jun., the eldest son of the founder of the faith, became identi- fied with the Reorganized Church as its president. Since then the seceders have prosecuted missionary work through- out the United States, Great Britain, Canada, Scandinavia, Switzerland, Australia, and the Society Islands, until their communicants are said to number over 27,000. Their headquarters are at Plano, Illinois, to which place they removed from Lamoni, Iowa, in 1881. The Reorganized Church holds that the legitimate successor to Joseph Smith was his eldest son, that the allegation that Smith intro- duced polygamy on the strength of divine revelation was an invention of Brigham Young, that the Utah Church has departed grievously from the faith and practices laid down in the Book of Mormon and subsequent revelations to Joseph Smith, and that the Reorganized Church is the only true and lawful continuation of, and successor to, the original church, and as such is legally entitled to all that church's property and rights. And it was to celebrate the decision of the United States Court of Ohio confirming this last claim, and vesting in them the right to the temple consecrated in Kirtland, Ohio, in 1836, and for nearly forty years disused owing to litigation, that the Reorganized Church met in that temple on the 6th of April 1883.*~~

~~*Returning to the main body, it may be added that the population of Utah is 147,000, of whom 123,000 are Mormons ; but as the saints are scattered over the globe it is difficult to arrive at a just estimate of their complete numerical strength. In Idaho, Arizona, Washington, Colorado, Montana, and Wyoming they have of late years made great progress, and their number in the United States outside of Utah cannot fall much under 27,000. In Europe they have also many adherents, and a careful study, based on recent official statistics, would place their entire number at 213,000.*~~

~~*Government.—At the head of the body is a president, who pos- sesses supreme authority, supported by two counsellors. These three are supposed to be the successors of Peter, James, and John, and constitute what is known as the "first presidency." Then comes the " patriarch,"*~~

~~*whose chief duty is to bless and lay on hands, and after him the " twelve apostles," forming a travelling high council, and receiving a salary of $1500 a year each. Of these the president is ex officio one, and endowed with authority equal to the other*~~

~~*Later in the same year the Utah Judiciary Bill, attacking the very foundation of*~~

~~*MOR—MOR*~~

~~*eleven. Their duticsare important. They ordain all other officers, elders, priests, teachers, and deacons, lead all religious meetings, and administer the rites of baptism and sacrament. Fourth come the seven presidents of the "seventies," each body comprising seventy elders; there are cighty seventies in Utah, each of which has seven presidents, and cvery seven one president. 'These seventies make annual reports, and are the missionaries and propagandists of the body. Fifth come the "high priests," whose chief duty is to officiate in all the offices of the church in the absence of any higher autho- rities. After them comes the presiding bishop, who superintends the collection of tithes, which amount to $1,100,000 annually. The church is made up of 28 stakes, each having a president, and is divided into wards, which are subdivided into districts, each of which has a certain number of teachers, a meeting-house, Sunday school, day school, and dramatic, debating, and literary societies.*~~

~~*Doctrine. —The Mormons no longer claim to be a Christian sect, any more than do the Mohammedans. A system of polytheism has been grafted on the original creed, according to which there are grades among the gods, the place of Supreme Ruler of all being 'taken by the primeval Adam of Genesis, who is the deity highest in spiritual rank, while Christ, Mohammed, Joseph Smith, and Brigham Young also partake of divinity. The business of these deities is the propagation of souls to people bodies begotten on earth, and the sexual rclation permeatcs every portion of the creed as thoroughly as it did that of ancient India or Egypt. The saints on leaving this world are deified, and their glory is in proportion to the number of their wives and children,—hence, the necessity and justification of polygamy, and the practice of having many wives sealed to one saint. Thcir distinguishing points of faith are :—religiously, a belief*~~

~~*in a continual divine revelation through the inspired medium of the prophct at the head of the church ; morally, polygamy, though this is expressly condemned in the Book of Mormon, and was grafted on the original faith by Smith ; and, socially, a complete hierarchical organization. They believe in the Bible as supplemented by the Book of Mormon and the Book of Doctrine ; in the gift of prophecy, miracles, and casting out devils ; in the imminent approach of the cnd of the world; in their own identity with the apocalyptic saints who shall reign with Christ in a temporal kingdom, cither in Missouri or Utah; in the literal resurrection of the body; in absolute liberty of private judgment in religious matters; and in the salvation of a man only if he believes in Christ's atonement, repents, is baptized by immersion by a Christ-appointed apostle, and receives the laying on of hands for the gift of the Holy Ghost by duly authorized apostles. Among their minor rules as laid down in 4 Word of Wisdom, supposed to have been revealed to Joseph Smith, 27th February 1838, are thesc recommendations :—that it is not good to drink wine or strong drink, except at the Lord's Supper (and even then it should be home-made grape-wine), or to use hot drinks or tobacco, —the former being meant for the washing of the body, and the latter for the healing of bruiscs and sick cattle; man's proper food is herbs and fruit, that for beasts and fowls, grain ; and, except in winter and in case of famine and severe cold, flesh should not be eaten by man. Infant baptism is also condemned, but the children of the saints who have reached their eighth year should be baptized. The deceased, also, can be baptized by proxy, and in this way Washington, Franklin, and others have been vicariously baptized into the church.*~~

~~*See Book of Mormon (1879); Book of Doctrine and Covenants(1876); John Hyde jun., Mormonism, its Leaders and Designs (1857); B. G. Ferris, Utah and the Mormons (1854); N. W. Green, Mormonism (1870); T. B. H. Stenhouse, Rocky Mountain Saints (1873); H. Mayhew, The Mormons ; Elder John Jaques, Cate-*~~

~~*chism for Children (1877); John W. Gunnison, Mormons, or Latter-Day Saints (1852); Hepworth Dixon, Spiritual Wives (1868); J. H. Beadle, Life in Utah (1870). (J. FR.)*~~

~~*MORNAY, Putxipre DE (1549-1623), Seigneur du Ples- sis-Marly, very generally known as Mornay Du Plessis or Du Plessis-Mornay, one of the most distinguished members of the Protestant party in France, was born at Buhy in Normandy on 5th November 1549. As a younger son he was destined for the church, and with this view was sent to the Collége de Lisieux in Paris, but in his eleventh year, along with the rest of his family, he abandoned Roman Catholicism, continuing, however, with zeal and success his studies not only in classical and general litera- ture but also in theology. In the autumn of 1567, on the outbreak of the second religious war, he joined the army of Condé, but was prevented from taking an active part in the campaign by a fall from his horse, which broke his leg. In the following year he went abroad, and, after spending the winter at Heidelberg, travelled extensively in Italy, Germany, the Low Countries, and England, learning the languages and acquiring the friendship of many of the distinguished men of all these countries. In*~~

~~*June 1572 he returned to France, and had begun to enter upon a diplomatic career (his earliest extant "mémoire," laid by Coligny before Charles IX., had reference to the duty of France to support the Low Countries in their struggle for independence) when the St Bartholomew mas- sacre, from which he escaped with difficulty, compelled him to take refuge across the Channel. There he rendered valuable services to William of Orange, and also to the duke of Alencgon-Anjou, as a semi-official political agent. Returning to France at the instance of La Noue towards the end of 1573, he took part with various success in numerous military enterprises, and was made prisoner at Dormans in 1575 (10th October), but not having been re- cognized he got off fora small ransom. Shortly afterwards he married Charlotte Arbaleste at Sedan, and at her re- quest wrote as a bridal present the Discours de la Vie et de la Mort (1576), which has been so often reprinted and translated. In 1577 Henry of Navarre made him a mem- ber of his council and sent him on a diplomatic mission to England, and during this visit, which lasted more than a year, he found time among his other pressing occupations to prepare for the press his Z'raité de ['Eglise o& Von traite des principales questions qui ont été mues sur ce point en nostre temps (1578), which at*~~

~~*once became popular. From July 1578 till his return to France in 1582 he was chiefly in the Low Countries, engaged in public business, and during this interval he wrote and published a considerable work in apologetical theology (Z'raité de la vérité de la religion chrétienne contre les Athées, Epicuriens, Payens, Juafs, etc, 1581). With the death of the duke of Anjou in 1584, by which Henry of Navarre was brought within sight of the throne of France, the period of Mornay's greatest political activity began; his importance in the Huguenot counsels was further increased in 1588 by the death of the prince of Condé, to whose influence he practi- cally succeeded. In April 1589 he was rewarded for the reconciliation of the two Henries with the governorship of Saumur, and he took active part in many of the military operations that followed the assassination of Henry ITI. in the following August. He was present at the siege of Dieppe, fought by the side of Henry IV. at Ivry, and was one of the besiegers of Rouen in 1591-92, until sent on a mission to the court of Elizabeth. A crisis in his political career was marked by Henry's abjuration of Protest- antism in July 1593, which gradually led to Mornay's withdrawal from the court. In this year it was that he founded the Protestant academy or university of Saumur, which had a distinguished history until its suppression by Louis XIV. in 1683. In 1598 he published a work on which he had long been engaged, entitled De [institution, usage, et doctrine du saint sacrement de [Hucharistie en V Eglise ancienne. It having reached his ears that Cardinal Du Perron had alleged that of the (thousands of) citations in this controversial work he could point out five hundred that were falsified or misunderstood, he challenged his assailant to a public discussion. This was at last arranged for by the good offices of the king, and took place at Fontainebleau on 4th May 1600. Only nine passages were discussed, but in each case the decision, one is not surprised in the circumstances to learn, went against the Protestant. Mornay, from whom every indication of the particular passages to be impugned had been persistently withheld, was forced by supervening illness to withdraw. Only once again did he appear at court, in 1607. He continued, however, to give his party the benefit of his counsel and active support to the end of his long and busy life. His last work, entitled ALystére diniquité, c'est a dire, Vhistoire de la Papauté, appeared in 1611. In 1618 he was chosen a deputy to represent the French Protest- ants at the synod of Dort. Prohibited by Louis XIH.*~~

~~from personally attending, he nevertheless contributed materially to the deliberations of that assembly by written communications. In 1621 he was deprived of his governor- ship; and his death took place at La Forét-sur-Sevre on llth November 1623.~~

~~Two volumes of Afémoires, from 1572 to 1589, appeared at La Forét in 1624, and a continuation, in two volumes, at Amsterdam in 1652; a more complete edition (Mémoires, correspondances, et vie) in twelve volumes, 8vo, was published at Paris in 1624-25. The~~

~~greater number of his works were translated into English during his lifetime.~~

~~MORNY, Cuaries Avucuste Louis Josepu, Duc DE (1811-1865), was the natural son of Hortense Beauharnais, queen of Holland, and of the comte de Flahaut, a leading dandy of the period, and was thus brother to Napoleon III. The secret of his birth (23d October 1811) was care- fully kept; he was acknowledged as son by the comte de Morny for a consideration, and was brought up by his paternal grandmother, Madame de Souza, a' writer of society novels, and a woman of great wit and high breeding. As a boy of nineteen he was declared after the revolution of 1830 a hero of July, and was entered at the staff college. In 1832 he was gazetted sub-lieutenant, and served in Algeria as aide-de-camp to General Oudinot ; he was pre- sent at Mascara and Constantine, and was made a chevalier of the Legion of Honour. In 1838 he returned to Paris, and began his career as dandy and speculator. In the first capacity he set the fashions both of dress and manners to the young men of Paris, and conceived the idea of the modern society journal, and in the second established a manufactory of beetroot sugar at Clermont-Ferrand. This last idea brought about his election for the department of the Puy-de-Déme. In the chamber he voted consistently with the ministers. The republic of 1848 marked the crisis in his fortunes, and by 1851 all his speculations had failed, and all his property was sold. In desperation he determined to play a part in politics, and was the heart and soul of the coup d'état of December 1851. The success of the coup d'état was certain, owing to the fear of the extreme republicans entertained by the great~~

~~*majority of the nation, and all that was needed was a head for intrigue and an utter absence of scruples to shed innocent blood. Morny and St Arnaud fulfilled these requisites. Morny was on the day of the cowp @état made minister of the interior, but he had no taste for the drudgery of adminis- tration, and in January 1852 found an excuse for resigning on the question of the property of the Orleanist princes. The empire established, he was again able to begin specu- lating, and used both the money of the state and his influence with his brother for the success of his schemes. HIe had been in 1852 re-elected deputy for Clermont-Ferrand, and was in 1854 elected president of the corps legislatif, an office which he held for the rest of his life. This office in every way suited him; he had large pay, and resided in a magnificent official residence, where he produced little plays to admiring audiences. The work was not hard, being chiefly to maintain the Government majority in a good humour by sumptuous entertainments, and to win over the Liberals by the same tactics. HIe still speculated in railways, pictures, mines, and even in a new watering-place, Deauville, and, being absolutely unscru- pulous and venal, amassed an immense fortune in spite of the utmost extravagance. In 1856 he was special ambassador at the coronation of Czar Alexander IT., when he spent immense sums, and married a wealthy Russian, Princess Troubetzkoy. In 1862 he was created a duke, and in 1865, after continuing to the last his career of dissi- pation, died of sheer anemia from the measures he took to keep himself fit for yet further excesses.*~~

~~*Of the duc de Morny little good can be said either as a statesman oraman. HIe looked upon everything from a purely selfish point*~~

~~*Plate X.*~~

~~*830*~~

~~*of view, and would not have denied it ; but he was shrewd enough to perceive that the empire rested on the prestige it. maintained for France not only in war but in fashion, and in assisting the empress to make Paris the centre of fashion for the whole civilized world he*~~

~~*knew he was not only pleasing himself but doing a service to the*~~

~~*empire. He was a thorough man of the world, and was witty as such, but the wit docs not appear at its brightest in his plays, published under the name of Saint-Remy, of which perhaps the most readable is If. Choufleury restera chez lu. He had great influence over the emperor, but could lay no claim to personal fidelity, as could his less able but equally unscrupulous colleague, M. de Persigny.*~~

~~*_For his life consult H. Castille, M. de Morny, 1859, and De la Gueronniére, Etudes et portraits politiques (1856); also Alton-Shee's Mémoires (1868-69). His char- acter is admirably sketched as the duc de Mora in A. Daudet's novel Le Nabab.*~~

~~*MORO, Arron: (c. 1512-1581), otherwise known as Sip ANTHONY Mors, an eminent portrait-painter, was born at Utrecht, in 1512 according to some, but in 1525 according to Van Mander in his Het Leven der Schilders. He studied his art under Jan Schoorel ; and after making a professional visit to Italy he commenced to paint por- traits in the style of Hans Holbein. His rise to eminence was rapid. In 1552 he was invited to Madrid by the emperor Charles V. to execute a likeness of Prince Philip. Two years afterwards he was in London painting the portrait of Queen Mary. For this picture an annual salary and, as some suppose, the honour of knighthood were conferred upon him. He was also employed to sketch the likenesses of several of the English nobility. On the death of Mary in 1558 Moro returned to Spain, and lived there for two years in great honour with Philip IL., executing, in addition to portraits, several copies after Titian. Having compromised himself with the Inquisition, he repaired to the Netherlands and was received into the service of the duke of Alva. His death took place at Antwerp about 1581. Among his figure-pictures Van Mander specifies the Circumcision of Christ, executed for Antwerp cathedral, as one of the most notable. His portraits are full of individuality, and characterized by firm and solid rendering of flesh. Several admirable examples are preserved in Madrid; among the rest the portrait of Queen Mary of England, which has been excellently etched by Milius (Z'Art, 8th December 1878). "Moro's style," says Stanley in his Dutch and Flemish Painters, "so much resembles that of Holbein as to fre- quently create a doubt to which of them a portrait is to be attributed ;*~~

~~*but he is not so clear and delicate in his colouring (perhaps from having painted so much in Spain) as that master."*~~

~~*MOROCCO, or Marocco, the term (corrupted from the name of the city Marrakush) used in English to designate the Maghrib al-Aks4 or extreme west of the Arabs, is the country at the north-western corner of the African continent, with the Mediterranean ou the north and the Atlantic on the west. Its landward limits can only be vaguely defined. The eastern frontier towards Algeria, determined by the treaty of 1844, is a purely conventional line starting from the mouth of a small stream called the Skis and running across country in a general south-south-east direction. The southern boundaries expand and contract according to the power and activity of the central authorities. Behm and Wagner (1882), who include Tafilelt, Kenatsa, Figig, Twat, Gurara, Tidikelt, the plateau of Tedmaid, &c., estimate the total area of the sultanate at 305,548 square miles; and this, which is about twice the size of Algeria, or five times that of England and Wales, may be taken as a maximum. The allegiance of many of the tribes within this compass is questionable and intermittent. Morocco isstill the portion of Northern Africa about which European information is most defective, and the ordinary maps are composed to a large extent of most unscientific material eked out by probabilities and conjecture. Since the middle of the present century a good deal has been done in the way of*~~

~~*exploration, mainly in the lowlands and steppes sloping towards the Atlantic—the country of the great historical cities of Tangiers, Fez, Meknes (Mequinez), and Morocco ; but even there what lies but a few miles east or west of some track traversed by Europeans for centuries remains matter of question.*~~

~~*Since the publication of Arlett's survey from Cape Spartel to Cape Bojador (1840-44) and of Vincendon- Dumoulin and Kerhallet's surveys from the Strait of Gib- raltar to the Algerian frontier (1853-57) the seaward aspect of Morocco has been known in detail. To the Mediter-*~~

~~ranean it presents for a distance of about 200 miles the rugged profile of the Rif hills (still unexplored), which generally end in lines of cliff broken at intervals by narrow sweeps of sandy beach, but occasionally open up into beau- tiful and fertile valleys, with abundant evidence of human occupancy and tillage. About 6 miles west of the Skis lies the mouth of the great river Muluya; and 10 miles farther on, opposite Cape del Agua (Ras Sidi Beshir), is a group of dry and barren islands known as the Zafarines, which form the best roadstead on the Rif coast. Be- tween Point Quiviana and Melilla runs a low and sandy shore in front of a great salt marsh, the Puerto Nuevo of the Spaniards. Melilla (Malila) is a fortified town, held by the Spaniards since 1653, built on a rocky peninsula and connected by lines of rampart with Fort Rosario on the heights behind. Near the village of Azanen is a wide open shore with the only sand-dunes on all this coast. The fine semicircular bay of Alhucemas is the seaward end of one of the most beautiful valleys in the Rif, clothed with verdure and dotted with hamlets. A Spanish presidto occupies one of the larger of the Alhucemas islands (Al- Mazemma), which are identified with the Ad Sex Insulas of the itineraries. Another Spanish fortress crowns the rocky island of San Antonio or Peiion de Velez; and in the valley off which it lies stood a town known to the Spaniards as Velez de Gomera, to the Arabs as Badis, which continued to be a place of importance in the 16th century. The so-called Bay of Tetuan (Tett4win)—the town is just visible from the sea—is little more than the straight stretch of coast between Cape Mazari on the south and Cape Negro or Negrete on the north ; but the prominence of these two headlands gives it an appearance of depth. From Cape Negro northwards to Ceuta the most notable object on the horizon is the summit of Jebel Musa, which, though situated on the Strait of Gibraltar, towers above the inter- vening hills. Ceuta (Sebta), the most important and flourishing of the Spanish settlements in Morocco, occupies a peninsula, —the head, Mt. Acho, standing about 4 miles out to sea, and the neck being low and narrow. It marks the eastern end of the strait. Westwards, the first point of interest is again Jebel Mus, the Elephas of Strabo, and the Apes' Hill of English charts; the truncated top is usually hid in clouds. About 20 miles farther along the coast lies the Bay of Tangiers (Tanja), by far the finest harbour in Morocco. West from Tangiers runs the Jebel Kebir (880 feet at its highest), the seaward extremity of which forms the celebrated Cape Spartel, the north-west angle of the African~~

~~*continent, known to the ancients as Ampelusia or Cotes Promontorium. The lighthouse, built in 1864 at the cost of the sultan of Morocco, and main- tained at the joint expense of England, France, Italy, and Spain, is the only one on the western coast.*~~

~~*The Atlantic coast of Morocco is remarkable for its regularity and sameness; not a single gulf or noteworthy*~~

~~*estuary occurs throughout its whole length; the capes*~~

~~*1 The name is derived from the Arab tribe of the Beni Ja'far, who settled on the neighbouring mainland at the conquest. Since 1848 the islands have belonged to Spain. They are identified with the Ad Tres Insulas of the Roman itineraries.*~~

~~*MOROCCO*~~

~~*are few and for the most part feebly marked. South- ward from Cape Spartel the shore sinks rapidly till it is within a few feet of the sea-level. In the low cliff which it forms about 44 miles from the lighthouse there is a great quarry, which from remote antiquity has yielded the hand-mills used in the Tangiers district. A stretch of low marshy ground along the Tahaddart—the estuary of the Wadi Kebir (W. Muharhar) and W. al-Kharrib—agrees with Scylax's Gulf of Cotes (Tissot). Three or four miles farther south lie the ruins of the town of Nebrosh, built by Moors from Andalusia ; and 4 or 5 miles more bring us to Azilé or Arzilla, the ancient Colonia Julia Constantia Zilis or Zéles. Since its bombardment by the Austrians in 1829 it has been a wretched little place, with a mixed Moorish and Jewish population of about 1200.1 For the next 16 miles, between Azil4 and Larash or Ex-AratsuH (g.v.) the coast has a tolerably bold background of hills, Jebel Sarsar near Fez forming an important landmark for the latter town, which, with its Phoenician, Roman, and medizval remains, is historically one of the most interesting places in Morocco. A line of reddish cliffs about 300 feet high runs south for about 10 miles from the W. Aulkos, at whose mouth the town is built ; then the coast sinks till it reaches Mula Bu Selham, an eminence 220 feet high. Between Mula Bu Selham (often wrongly called Old Mamura or Marmore) and a similar height crowned by the tomb of Sidi 'Abd Allah*~~

~~*Jelilf lies the outlet of the Blue Lake (Marja Zarka), 10 or 12 miles long. Farther south, and separated from the sea by an unbroken line of rounded hills (230-260 feet), is the much more extensive lagoon of Ras al-Dura, which in the dry season becomes a series of marshy meres, but in the rainy season fills up and discharges into the Sebi. Eastward it is connected with the Marjat al-Gharb, fed by the W. Meda. On the south side of the outlet of the Sebi lies Ma'mtra, probably founded by 'Abd al-Mumen, and originally named Mahdtya, after the Almohade Mahdi. Twenty miles farther is the mouth of the Bu Rakrak, with its cluster of interesting towns: Sallee (Salat) on the north side, long famous for its piracies and still one of the most fanatical places in the empire, and on the south side New Sallee (Rabat) with its conspicuous tower of Hasan, and Shella (Sella of Leo Africanus) with its inter- esting ruins. Onward for 100 miles to Point Azammur and the mouth of the Umm Rabf' rivera line of hills skirts the sea; the shore is for the most part low, and, with the exception of capes at Fadala (a small village) and Dar al- Baidé or Casa Blanca, it runs in a straight line west-south- west. Casa Blanca, the ancient Anfa, once a flourishing port, was ruined by the Portuguese (1468) in revenge for its piracies. It is now a place of 4000 inhabitants, and has a thriving export trade in maize, beans, and wool, and a European colony of about 100 persons. Azammur (that is, in Berber, "The Olives," viz., of the Sheikh Bu Shuaib), with 1000 inhabitants dependent on the shebbel fisheries in the river, stands on an eminence about 14 miles from the sea on the south side of the Umm Rabtf*. The bay of Mazagan (Mazighan), a few miles to the south, curves westward with a boldness of sweep unusual on this coast. The town of Mazagan was founded by the Portu- guese in 1506, and held by them till 1769.2. About 8 miles to the south and less than a mile inland lie the extensive ruins of Tit, a town which proved a thorn in the side of the people of Mazagan till they sallied forth*~~

~~*1 The absurd story that about the 9th century it was an English possession has its root in the visits of the Normans to this quarter. The modern town sprang from a fortress built to protect the coast against them (Dozy, Recherches, 3d ed., ii. 264 sq.).*~~

~~2 The Portuguese settlers, who had to leave it when Don José decided onsurrendering this last stronghold of his country in Morocco, were afterwards sent to Brazil, where they founded Villa Nova de Mazagan.~~

~~and destroyed it. At Cape Blanc (so called from its white cliffs) the coast, which bulged out at Cape Mazagan, again bends east to resume much the same general direction for 55 miles to Cape Cantin. On this stretch the only point of interest is Walidiya, formerly Al-Ghait ; the excellent harbour praised by Edrisi is formed by an extensive lagoon, and M. Tissot thinks that by a little dredging the place would again become the safest ship- ping station on the whole Morocco seaboard.2 Beyond Cape Cantin (300 feet high) the coast becomes bolder and more irregular, especially after the mouth of the Tensift is passed. About 18 miles farther lies Saffi (Asfi), "by far the most picturesque spot on the west coast," with the high walls and square towers of its Portuguese fortifications shown to advantage by the ruggedness of the site. South of Mocapor(q.v.),and onwards beyond the limits of Morocco, the coast, becoming ever more and more inaccessible and dangerous in winter, is emphatically known as the Iron Coast. From Cape Sim or Ossim (Ras Tagriwalt), 10 miles south of Mogador, the direction is due south to Cape Gir (Igir Ufrani), the termination of Jebel Ida u Tanan (Rabbi Mardochée), the last spur of the Atlas proper. Rounding this headland we reach Agadir (Agadir 'n Igir), the Santa Cruz Major or Santa Cruz de Berberia of the Spaniards, formerly known as the Gate of the Soudan.' It is a little town with white battlements three-quarters of a mile in circumference, on a steep eminence 600 feet high. In the 15th century it was seized by the Portuguese, and Don Manuel caused it to be fortified; but in 1536 it was captured by Muley (Mauldi) Ahmed al-Hasan. Its merchants were removed to Mogador in 1773. At the mouth of the Sus Leo places three little towns called Messa (Massa), with a mosque popularly reputed the scene of Jonah's restoration to terra firma. The port of this name,® regularly visited by the Genoese traders in the 16th century, who exported skins, gum, wax, gold, and indigo, is no doubt at the mouth of the W. Massa, 20 miles farther south.® Ifni, situated in 29°-23'N. lat., and Sidi Worzek, the Cape Non? of the Portuguese, are the only points calling for~~

~~*notice till the better known Cape Nun is reached, which lies 5 or 6 miles north of the W. Der'a. With the Der'a the Sahara may be said to begin.*~~

~~*On most maps the interior of Morocco is represented as extremely mountainous ; but, while it is traversed from east to west by more than one strongly-defined range, the greater part of the surface is really occupied by undulating steppe- like tracts diversified by low hills. The backbone of the country is the Great Atlas (Daran of the Berbers).§ At its western extremity the range averages from 4000 to 5000 feet in height ; after a slight falling off for a few miles it rises till it attains an elevation of 10,000 feet ; beyond the pass (about 60 miles from the sea) which leads from Morocco to Taértdant the summits seem to be between 11,000 and 11,500 feet ; about 40 miles farther east there is a second pass at an altitude of about 7000 feet; and beyond that the main ridge continues 30 miles at a height of about 12,000 feet, with a few peaks reaching to 13,000 or 13,500 feet. Snow lies on some of the summits as late*~~

~~*3 Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr., Paris, 1875.*~~

~~*4 This must not be confounded with Santa Cruz de Mar Pequefia, a post established in 1476 somewhere on this coast by Herrera, lord of the Canary Islands, and in modern times the subject of much geo- graphical disputation. After obtaining permission to reoccupy the site the Spanish Government was unable to identify it.*~~

~~*5 See Valentin Ferdinand, Beschreibung West Afrika's (Mem. of the Acad. of Munich, 3d Class, pt. viii.).*~~

~~*6 Ya'kubl, Descr. al-Maghridi, p. 126 ; Hist. des Berbdéres, ii. 279.*~~

~~*7 No, Non, Nor, Naum, Nao, are among the various readings. It was another Cape Non to the south of Cape Bojador which seems to have given rise to the proverb, Quem pasar o cabo de Ndo ou tornara ou ndéo. See Bol. de la Soc. Geogr., p. 316, Madrid, 1880.*~~

~~*8 Pliny says the natives called the Atlas " Dyrin."*~~

~~*as June, but it is probable that none of them retain it throughout the year. Taken as a whole, the Atlas has a mean elevation higher than that of any other range of equal length in Europe or in the African and Asiatic countries bordering on the Mediterranean. From the lowlands to the north it has a very fine appearance, rising, as it seems, in steep and almost abrupt ascent, though the real distance from foot to summit is a slope of 15 miles (compare the panorama prefixed to Hooker and Ball's Morocco).*~~

~~*What is the culminating point of the range is quite unknown; the Miltsin peak has no claim to that distinction. 'The English embassy of 1829-1830 advanced up the northern slope only a little beyond Tasseremut (3534 feet), and Davidson in 1836 merely reached the town, and then turned westwards. From Tasseremut eastwards the yange is altogether unexplored for 200 miles till we come to the route followed by Ahmed b. Hasan al-Mtuvi (1789), Caillié (1827), and Rohlfs (1863). The English expedition of 1871 (Hooker and Ball, &c.), besides visiting Tasseremut, went up the Urika valley to a height of 4000 fect, up the Ait Mesan valley to the Tagherot pass (11,484), and up the Amsziz valley to the summit of Jebel Tezah (11,972 feet). the party who reached the watershed ; but from Jebel Tezah a good view was obtained southward across the great valley of the Sus to the Anti-Atlas, which appeared to be from 9000 to 10,000 fect high. In 1880 Dr Lenz crossed the range by the ordinary route from Morocco to Taéridant. " First," he says, "is a chain of comparatively low and flat hills consisting of Cretaccous aud Tertiary rocks ; then follows a plateau with ranges of red, probably Triassic, saudstone ; and finally come the higher and steeper peaks of clay slate with great metallifcrous deposits. 'The pass where the descent towards Sus begins is called Bibauan, and lies 4000 fect above the sea. The route down to ' Emnislah' is steep, difficult, and at times dangerous." As to the relation of the Anti-Atlas to the Atlas proper at its western end nothing certain is known.*~~

~~*All the principal rivers of Morocco take their rise in the Atlas mountains, and the headwaters of the Multya, the Sebu, the Umm Rabi', the Der'a, and the Ziz are all to be placed in that part of the range which lies between 32° 20' and 32° 30' N. lat., and between 3° 30' and 5° W. long. In almost every instance the summer current is ' comparatively feeble, but*~~

~~*the wide beds and often high steep banks are sufficient of themselves to show the change produced by the rains of winter and the thaws of spring. The Muliya (Mulucha and Malva of Pliny, &c.) is mainly interesting as the river which the French have long wished to make the western boundary of Algeria. Its course is almost entirely unexplored. About 34° 20' N. lat. Captain Colvile found it some 200 yards wide but quite shallow ; about 25 miles east of its source where it is crossed by the route to Ziz it is already a powerful stream with a deep bed cut in the granite rock, and shortly afterwards it is joined by the W. Sgimmel, a still larger affluent (Rohlfs). Of the lesser streams which flow into the Mediterranean it is enough to mention the W. Martil or Martin (otherwise W. Bu Sfiha, W Ras, W. Mejeksa), which falls into the Bay of Tetuan, and is identified with the Tamuda of Pliny and Thaluda of Ptolemy. On the Atlantic seaboard north of the Sebu there are a number of comparatively small streams, the chief of which is the very winding W. Aulkos or Lokkos, with several tributaries. If Renou's statement that the Sebt (the Subur magnificus et navigabilis of Pliny) had a course not much inferior to that of the Seine be somewhat of an exaggeration, it may at least be compared to the Thames in length and width, though not in steadiness and depth of current. At Meshra'at al-Ksiri, about 70 miles from its mouth, it is about 10 feet deep in the month of May and more than 460 feet wide; and, though its banks are 21 feet high, extensive inundations occur from time to time. The tide ascends as far as Al-Kantara, 15 miles above Ma'mura, and steam barges with a small draught of water could make their way to the ford just mentioned, and possibly even as far as Fez (Trotter). Affluents of the Sebu are W. Mikkes and W. Al-Redem (90 miles long).*~~

~~*In the Tagherot pass Mr Maw was the only one of*~~

~~*MOROCCO*~~

~~*The swift and muddy current of W. Beht usually loses itself in a swamp before it reaches the main stream. The impetuous Umm Rabi', with a rocky bed and many rapids, is perhaps as large as the Sebi; but as there are no important cities in the country through which it flows its course is not so well known. W. al-Abiad, W. al-Akdur, and W. Tessaut seem to be the principal affluents. This last is separated by about 10 miles only from*~~

~~*the valley of the Tensift, the river which flows to the north of the city of Morocco; and, by the W. Nefis, the Asif al-Mil (Asif is Berber for "river"), the W. Usbi, and other smaller tributaries, receives the waters of about 180 miles of the Atlas range. The valley between the Atlas and the Anti-Atlas is traversed by the W. Sts, whose ever-flowing stream is sufficient to turn the whole district into a garden, The Massa or W. al-Ghas (Wholgras of Davidson, Oued Ouel R'as of Delaporte), though its headwaters drain only one or two of the lesser valleys at the south-west end of the Anti-Atlas, is "about 50 yards from bank to bank at the mouth, with a depth at high water and in the proper channel of something over a fathom." Farther south is the Assaka or W. al-Aks4, long known to European geographers by the name of W. Nun; and finally the famous W. Der'a is reached, which in length of course exceeds all the rivers of Morocco, but, except in spring when the snows are melting in the highlands, remains throughout all its lower reaches a dry sandy channel, hardly noticed by the traveller in the surrounding desert. In the upper valleys, on the contrary, innumerable streams from the south side of the main chain of the Atlas, the W. Dades from the east, and the Asif Marghen, W. al-Molah, or Warzazet from the west, flow through populous and fertile valleys, and uniting to form the Der'a cut their way southward through a gorge in the Jebel Soghér, which, as the name implies, is a lower range running parallel to the Atlas proper. For the next 130 miles the noble stream holds south-south-east, drained at every step by the irrigation canals which turn this region into a green oasis, till at last its dwindling current bends westward to the sebkha (salt marsh) of Debiaya. Fora few weeks once a year the thaw-floods fill this shallow but extensive basin and rush onwards to the Atlantic ; but in summer it dries up, and, like the bed of the river for some distance below, is covered with flourishing crops. From the south of the Atlas still farther east descend a number of other streams, the W. Zfz (with its tributaries the W. Todgha and W. Gheris), the W. Ghir, the W. Kenatsa, &c., which, after watering the oases of Medghara, Tafilelt (Sijilmésa), Kenatsa, &c., lose themselves in the sands of the Sahara. Besides the lakes and lagoons of the coast district already mentioned, there are several others, such as the Daya Sidi Ali Mohammed, which Rohlfs passed near the summit of the Atlas, but they do not form a feature of the country. The eastern frontier runs across the*~~

~~great Western Shatt, and south from that point lies the extensive Sebkha Tighri.~~

~~According to Dr Lenz, in his geological map of West Africa (1882), the stretch of country in the vicinity of Ceuta and Tetuan is Ju- rassic ; modern Tertiary and Eocene rocks cover all the rest of the great northern promontory for some distance south of Wazan, and extend in an irregular belt from the neighbourhood of Fez south- west to the province of Abda ; between these two areas there lies a district of Cretaceous formations which extends to the Atlantic, and skirts the whole African coast from Larash as far south as Cape Blanc (700 miles south of the Der'a) ; nearly all the rest of the north- western slope of the country is occupied by alluvium. The west- ward portion of the Atlas shows a belt of Cretaceous rocks, a broader Jurassic belt, and one still broader of Red Sandstone, porphyrites and porphyritic tuffs forming the backbone of the ridge. From Taridant eastward runs a strip of clay slates, possibly of Carbou- iferous origin, and from Anti-Atlas in the west and Figig in the~~

~~1 See Castries on the "Oued Dradi"' in Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr.,~~

~~1880.~~

~~east Devonian rocks stretch for hundreds of miles into the Sahara, The plain around the city of Morocco has a sheet-like covering of tufaceous crust rising over hill and valley and following all the undulations of the ground, the result probably of the intense heat of the sun rapidly drawing up water charged with soluble carbonate of lime from the calcareous strata, and drying it layer by layer on the surface till an accumulation several feet thick has been produced (Maw). This crust is extensively burned for lime, and it forms a natural strong roof for the matamores or underground cellars which the Moors excavate in the soft strata beneath. An enormous deposit of boulders occurs in the lateral valleys and along the escarpment of the Atlas, and the opinion that these are the pro- ducts of remote glacial action is supported by the existence of true moraines in the upper part of the glens. All along the west coast there are indications of an elevation of the land in the shape of raised beaches, at Tangiers 40,~~

~~*at the south of Cape Spartel 50, at Mogador 60 or 70 feet high ; but a number of other facts seem to show that at present a process of subsidence is in progress.**~~

~~*That mineral deposits of great value exist in Morocco there is little doubt. At Jebel Hadid or the Iron Mountain, the heights to the north of Mogador, old scoriz are found. In the Beni Madan hills near Tetuan are mines, closed, it is said, by the sultan 'Abd al-Rahman ; but whether they furnished copper or lead anthorities differ. On the road to Kenatsa, Rohlfs saw lead and antimony worked by the Beni Sithe. Antimony especially secms to be abun- dant to the south of the Atlas; Rohlfs found it in a very pure state near Tesna, and Dr Allen (whose account was not published when this article was written) informed the writer that he saw splendid veins of it north of the Der'a. That gold mines existed in Sus was long suspected ; Gatell proved it. Rock-salt occurs in the mouutains north of Fez, in the valley of the W. Martil, and probably in Jebel Zarhtin. In several places, as in the route from Saffi to Morocco, are brine lakes, from which the salt is collected and exported as far as Central Africa.*~~

~~*The general aspect of the lowlands of Morocco varies so much according to the season of the year that, while one stranger finds it arid and sunburnt and monotonous, another is delighted with the richness of its vegetation and the bright variety of its colours. In some of the Atlas valleys there is a wealth of timber, enormous conifers, 10 to 12 feet in girth of stem, oaks, &c.,? but the greater part of the couutry has been cleared of every vestige of woodland, and consequently depends for its appearance on herbage, brush- wood, and the lesser fruit-trees. Cultivation is confined to such comparatively narrow limits that the natural flora has full scope for its development. Cowan, writing more immediately of the country between Morocco and Mogador, speaks of "drifts of as- phodel, white lilies, blue convolvuli, white broom flowers, thyme and lavender, borage, marigold, purple thistles, colossal daisies and poppies ;" and Captain Trotter tells how for miles the undu- lating plateau of Kasr Ferd'tin was literally covered with wild flowers, whose varied colours, and the partiality with which each species confined itself to certain ground, gave to the landscape a brilliant and most unique appearance. Dark-blue, yellow, and red — iris, marigold, and poppy—*~~

~~occurred in patches an acre in SIZE ; farther on whole hills and valleys were of a delicate blue tint from convolvulus and borage. At times the traveller's tent is pitched on a carpet of mignonette, at times on a carpet of purple bugloss. In the country of the Beni Hasan squills are so abundant that the fibres of the bulbs are used instead of hair in making tent- cloth ; and in the north of Ksar al-Kebir the moors are covered for miles with a beautiful white heather. From such gorgeous com- binations of colour one can well imagine that the Moors drew the inspiration of their chromatic art ; but the season of floral splen- dour is brief, and under the hot African sun everything soon sinks into the monotony of straw.~~

~~The botany of Morocco has been explored by Balansa (1867), Hooker, Ball, and Maw (1871), Rein and Fritsch (1873), Ibrahim Ammeribt (a Berber collector, 1873-6), the Rabbi Mardochée Abi Serur (1872-3) ; and the results have been systematically arranged in Cosson's Compendium Flore Atlantice : ow Flore des Etats bar- baresques (Paris, 1881, &c.). From the presence of a large propor- tion of plants of central and northern Europe (none of the northern plants, however, being of alpine or arctic type) and the absence of southern types characteristic of the sub-tropical zone Ball concludes that "the mountain flora of Morocco is a southern extension of the European temperate flora, with little or no admixture of ex- traneous elements, but so long isolated from the neighbouring regions that a considerable number of new specific types have been developed." Of the individual plants none are more remarkable than the 'arér and the argan. The former (Callitris quadrivalvis, Thuja articulata of Shaw) is a cypress-like tree that grows on the~~

~~1 See Mourlon in Bull. de l' Acad. Roy. de Belgique, vol. xxx., 1870; Coquand, Bull. de la Soc. Géol. de France, vol. iv.; and especially Maw's paper appended to Hooker and Ball's Morocco.~~

~~2 Rohlfs says larches, but there is strong reason to doubt this.~~

~~3 Compare Drude, ' Floristische Erforschung Nord-Afrika's" in Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1882.~~

~~*and its beautiful and enduring timber has been identified with the alerce with which the Cordova cathedral (mosque) was roofed, and*~~

~~*with the citron-wood of the ancient Romans. The argan (Argania Sideroxylon) is confined even in Morocco to a tract of country extend- ing only about 150 miles along the coast, from the river Tensift almost to the river Sus, and about 30 miles in breadth ; and it is found nowhere else in the world. A gnarled trunk and wide- spreading contorted thorny branches give it a striking appearance. Large specimens have a height of from 20 to 30 feet, and a girth of 25 or 26 feet. The fruit, which ripens between May and August, is an olive-looking nut, greedily eaten by camels, mules, goats, sheep, and horned cattle (but not by horses) for the sake of the fleshy pericarp, and crushed by the natives to extract the oil from the kernel. Though "its strong and fulsome savour" renders it nauseous to the European palate, this oil is largely used in the cookery of southern Morocco. The prickly pear forms one of the features of the landscape from the coast up to the slopes of the mountains. The cork tree, common in the time of Addison, has lost ground enormously, though it probably forms the staple of the Ma'mura forest, which extends for some 20 miles between the Bu Rakrak and the Sebi. Though not so widespread as in Algeria or some districts of southern Europe, the palmetto is often locally very abundant. Citrons, lemons, limes (sweet and sour), shaddocks, mulberries, walnuts, and chestnuts are common in many parts. Tctuan is famous for oranges, Meknes for quinces, Morocco for pomegranates, Fez for figs, Tafilelt and Akka for dates, Sus for almonds, Dukalla for melons, Tagodast, Edantenan, and Rabat for grapes, and Tartdant for olives (Cowan). The grape is extensively cultivated ; the Jews manufacture crude but palatable wines. Sugar, once grown in Sits, to supply the demands of the whole of Morocco, has disappeared. Both hemp and tobacco are cultivated under the restrictions of an imperial monopoly,—the former (of prime quality) being largely used as hashish, the latter, though never smoked, as snuff. Barley is the most usual ccreal; but excellent crops of wheat, maize, millet, rye, beans, pease, chick-peas, and canary seed are also obtained. Potatoes are coming into favour in certain districts.*~~

~~*It is still true, as in the time of Addison, that the Moors " seldom reap more than will bring the year about," and the failure of a single harvest causes inevitable dearth. Captain Colvile calculates that not more than a hundredth part of the available land is culti- vated at all; and the cultivated portion possessed by each tribe is divided into three parts, one only of which is sown each year. With a plough of the most primitive description the Moorish peasant scarcely scratches the surface of the soil; and his harrow is a few branches of trees weighted with heavy stones. The corn is cut close to the ear with short curved knives, and the straw left standing. Underground granaries or matamores (matnuira) are constructed, sometimes capable of holding 2000 quarters; they preserve their contents in good condition for many years.*~~

~~*There is abundant space in the country for wild animals, even of the larger kind ; but the absence of woodland keeps them in check. Besides the lion, which exists only in very limited numbers, and, according to local proverbs, with diminished courage, the spotted leopard, the hyena, jackal, lynx, fox, and wild boar are the most important. The audad or wild sheep is found in the more inaccessible parts of the Atlas. Rabbits swarm in the country to the north of the Bu Rakrak, and since 1870 they have crossed this, which used to be their southern limit. A kind of ground-squirrel, the stdsib, occurs in the southern provinces. Monkeys of the same species as those of Gibraltar frequent the neighbourhood of Jebel Musé or Apes' Hill. The list of the ordinary wild birds includes blackbirds, goldfinches, linnets, greenfinches, robins, wagtails, skylarks, and crested larks, as well as turtle-doves, nightingales, and jays. The house-sparrow is not found ; between Morocco and Mogador its place is taken by a beautiful bird (Zmberiza striolata), locally called tabtb, or "the doctor" (Leared). The stranger is struck by the immense variety and number of hawks, and still more by the familiar terms on which they build their nests in the walls and rocks along with blue rock-pigeons and starlings. All through the country the red-legged partridge is the main resource of the sportsman, though he may also bag other varieties of partridge, bustards, and ducks and other water-fowl. Along the coasts thero is no lack of gulls, whimbrel, oyster-catchers, &c. Every town has its colony of storks. Lizards, chameleons, tortoises, and frogs are familiar objects; itis from Morocco that the small tortoises hawked about the*~~

~~*streets of London are usually obtained. The profusion of insect-life is one of the plagues of the country in the eyes of the European ; and even the Moor, who has got reconciled to his mosquitoes and fleas, considers the locust one of his deadliest enemies.*~~

~~*The camel is the great beast of burden in Morocco, though asses and mules are also employed. The horse, never reduced to such base uses, is usually a sturdy little animal, but far below the ancient reputation of the Barbary steed. Roughly broken when young, his mouth is soon spoiled by barbarous bits, and his feet by square shoes. The finest animals are said to be bred in Shiadina*~~

~~*XVI. — 105*~~

~~*834*~~

~~*and Abda. In form and size the mules are much superior, and*~~

~~*they usually fetch two or three times the price. The horned cattle are not unlike Alderneys; and the sheep, for the improve- ment of which nothing is done, have spiral horns (not unfrequently four), rounded foreheads, and long fine wool. Domestic fowls are kept in great uumbers; they are of the Spanish type, small and rolifie.*~~

~~*7 The mackerel fishery off the coast at Casa Blanca and Tangiers attracts fishers from Spain, Portugal, and other parts of Europe. Occasionally a small shoal may be found as far south as Mogador. Soles, turbot, bream, bass, conger ecl, and mullet are common along the coast, and a large fish called the aslimsah (rough scaled and resembling a cod). Lobsters and crayfish swarm in the rocky places, but the natives have no proper method of catching them. The tunny, pilchard, and sardine, and a kind of shad known as the 'Mogador herring," all prove at times of practical importance. "The catching of the shebbel or Barbary salmon, a species of shad, is a great industry on all the principal rivers of the coast, and vast numbers of the fish, which are often from 5 to 15 pounds in weight, are dried and salted." They ascend from the sea in spring. Bar- bels and a few other small fish swarm in the streams, but for the angler there is little real sport.* '*~~

~~*Of the population of Morocco only the vaguest estimate is pos- sible. Behm and Wagner give 6,410,000—probably too high a number. Ethnographically it consists of three main elements—Berbers or Shelluh, Arabs, and Jews—with a large infusion of Negro blood, and a sprinkling of Negro individuals. A distinction is sometimes drawn between the country Arab and the city "' Moor," as he is called par-excellence ; but the difference between them is one not so much of race (though the '"' Moor" has probably absorbed a greater variety of heterogeneous elements) as of wnethod of life, and the superficial physical results of the same. The Berbers are the original occupants of the country (as may be proved by the ancient words preserved by classical writers), and they still form not ouly the most numerous but the most industrious and civilizable section of the people. While the Arab is still by preference a dweller in tents, the Berber for the most part builds himself houses of stone or clay. On the whole, the Arabs are predominant in the lowlands and the Berbers in the hilly districts and mountains.*~~

~~*Greatly corrupted, even in the time of Ibn Khaldun, the Arabic of Morocco has now, with the complete decay of literature, reached a state of extreme degradation. Of the Schilha dialects very little is known, but everything goes to prove their general philological agreement with the better-investigated representative of the Ber- ber. The Jews are the great commercial class in the community. They are usually said to number about 150,000 to 200,000, but Rohlfs (Petermann's Mitth., 1883) shows reason to suppose that they do not exceed 62,800. Having come largely from Spain, they still use among themselves a corrupt Spanish."*~~

~~*That at onc time Morocco was a much morc populous country is evident from the description of Leo Africanus, though even in his time the number of ruined or decaying towns was very great. Besides Tangiers, Larash, Sallee, and the other places on the coast already described, there are only a few large cities in the country. Four of these—F rz (q.v.), Meknes or MEQuinez (q¢.v.), Wazan, and Teza—are in the basin of the Sebt. On the Zarhun range, north of Meknes, lies the town of Muley Edris or Zarhun, which no Christian is allowed to enter, though in 1801 Jackson did manage to pay a hurried visit. According to Captain Trotter, who got within three- quarters ofa mile, it isa place of apparently 1500 to*~~

~~2000 inhabitants, compact, and witli several large buildings. Wazan(Rohlfs's Wesan) is par excellence a sacred city, bcing the seat of a sherif, whose influence is even more widely acknowledged than that of the sultan. It was probably raised from a mere village by Muley 'Abd Allah al-Sherif (ob. 1675). At present it is one of the cleanest and best-kept placcs in the empire. Teza (Taza) is a considerable trading centre on the route between Fez and the Algerian frontiicr. Leo, Ali Bey, and Rohlfs agree in describing it as a place of grcat beauty, embowered in orchards, and the houses give evidence of wealth. The population, in Leo's time 20,000, is now 5000, of whom 800 are Jews. About 120 iniles east of Teza, and only 10 from the frontier, is Wajda (Ouchda of the French), clean and neat, in the midst of an orange grove. The only other inland town of importance is Kasr al-Kebir (see ALCAZAR Kusir), the Oppidum Novum of the Romans, which, except on market-days, wears a look of great decay. In all the country between the basin of the Sebu and the Tensift, a distance of upwards of 200 miles, there is nothing that a European would consider a town ; and Morocco itself is the only really large city of south Morocco. Tartdant, the capital of Sus, lies between the Atlas and the river ; it is a place of from 30,000 to 40,000 inhabit- ants, has recently been garrisoned and refortified by the sultan, and may be considered the frontiicr city of his empire. TIligh (Llir,~~

~~_ 1 Ascientific list of some thirty or forty fishes from Morocco will be found in Ber. Senck. Ges., 1874; an account of angling experiences in Payton, Mosses from a Rolling Stone.~~

~~2 The evidence for the existence of a tribe of warlike Jews in the interior leans on the whole to the positive side.~~

~~M O ROCCE 0~~

~~Illec, &c.), 100 miles south-south-east on a stream which joins the Massa, is the chief town of Tazerwalt or the state of Sidi Hisham,~~

~~an independent principality founded by Sidi Ahmed u Musa; and Auguilmin (Gulemin or Glimin), in like manner, is the chief town~~

~~*of the state of 'Abd Allah u Salem, or, as it is usually called by Europeans, Wad Nun. Tagawost (Tagaost of Ibn Khaldun), about 40 miles inland from Ifni, was formerly a large city, and*~~

~~*in the 16th century the seat of a Spanish factory trading in archil.*~~

~~*Throughout Morocco the nomenclature of ordinary maps gives a very misleading idea of the number of inhabited sites. Most of the seeming villages are either market-places, completely deserted except on market-days, or the tombs of saints, with possibly not a house in the vicinity, or stations for caravans, with a small com- pany of soldiers. The markets are named after the days of the week, as Suk al-Thalatha, Tuesday market ; the kubbas or saints' tombs are distinguished as Sidi (my master) so and so; and the stations are marked Nzéla, or some such corruption as Inzella.*~~

~~*The prehistoric antiquities of Morocco are of considerable interest. In a cave at Cape Spartel M. Tissot found regularly shaped arrow- heads, and in his travels through the north of the country he met with dolmens, barrows, and croinlechs, just as in Algeria or Tunis. The dolmens usually form a trapezium, and the dead body seems to have been buried with the knees drawn up to the chin. At Mzorah (Mazorah), a quaint little village of widely-scattered houses built of rough blocks of yellow soft sandstone, about 8 or 10 miles south- east from Azila, stands a group of megalithic monuments of ex- traordinary extent. They have been visited and described by Sir Arthur de Capell Brooke (1880), Davidson (1835), Farley (1860), Tissot, Watson, Trotter, &c. Watson's account is the most detailed. Round the base of a mound (15 feet high) of yellow sandstone lies a circle of sixty-seven large stones, one of which (at the west side) is more than 20 feet high. In the vicinity are several other groups, some of still larger blocks. Roman roads seem to have run from Tan- giers southwards to the neighbourhood of Meknes, and from Azila to the south of Rabat ; and Roman sites are in several instances marked by considerable remains of masonry. At Kasr Fara'in (Pharaoh's castle), on the western slope of J. Zarhun, are the ruins of Volubilis. The enceinte, constructed of large stones and flanked by round towers, is 12,000 feet in extent. Four gates are still recognizable, and a triumphal arch erected in 216 a.D. in honour*~~

~~*of Caracalla and Julia Domna. The stones of this site have been used for Meknes. Banasa (Colonia Alia, originally Valentia) is identified with the ruins of Sidi Ali Bu Jenun, and Thamusida with those of Sidi Ali b. Hamed. At Tchemmish, up the river from Larash, the city of Lixus (Trinx of Strabo) has left splendid specimens of Punic and Roman stone- work, and the similar remains on the headland of Mula Bu Selham probably belong to the Mudelacha of Polybius. Of early Moorish architecture good examples are comparatively few, and badly pre- served. Besides those in Fez, Meknes, and Morocco, it is sufficient to mention the mausoleum of the Bent-Merin (13th to 16th centuries) at Shella, which, with the adjoining mosque, is roofless and ruined, but possesses a number of valuable inscriptions (see Athenaeum, 1875).*~~

~~*The present state of Morocco is deplorable. The government is an Oriental despotism under an independent quasi-hereditary sultan ; there are no administrative functionaries with definite responsibility and regular salary ; the distribution of justice is utterly arbitrary, and the punishments often barbarous in the extreme ; education, in the European sense of the word, there is none ; foreign commerce is hampered by vexatious prohibitions and restrictions, internal trade by the almost complete absence of roads and bridges, and by the generally lawless state of the country (the very peasant has his gun beside him as he ploughs) ; the only substitute for a postal system isa class of running couriers; and even the army (in which the sultan does take an interest) is only just beginning to show signs of disci- pline and effectiveness under the supervision of Kaid M'Clean and other foreign officers. The last remnants of the once powerful Moorish fleet are rotting beyond recognition in the harbour of Larash. With good government and freedom of trade the country might soon be restored to a high state of prosperity: its climate, soil, products, and the qualities of its predominant population are full of promise; and the evident decrease of hostility towards the Christian, which may be observed since the beginning of the cen- tury, and especially within recent years, gives hope that European influence, apart from European conquest, may before long remove from Morocco the reproach of being "the China of the West," the most backward and barbarous of civilized nations.*~~

~~*History.—Morocco corresponds to the Roman Mauretania Tingi- tana (see MAuURETANIA). Conquered by the Vandals (429 a.D.), Mauretania was recovered to the Eastern Empire by Belisarius. The Arabs first penetrated into the country under 'Okba (supra, p. 567), but the Berbers opposed an obstinate resistance to Islam, and their conversion and subjection to the caliphate was only com- pleted in the reign of Walid by Musa b. Nosair, the conqueror of Spain (supra, p. 573). The dominion of the caliphs was of short duration ; the 'Abbasids had very little hold of the Berber countries, and in the 9th century, while the Aghlabites were practically inde- pendent at Kairaw4n, the regions west of the salt marsh of Sebkha*~~

~~*al-Hodna were autonomous under a number of indigenous or foreign princes. The chief of these principalities were that of the Idrisites at Fez (supra, p. 581), the kingdom of Tahart, and that of Nakur. In the first years of the 10th century the Fatimite caliphs, at the head of the powerful Berber tribe of Ketama, overthrew the Aghla- bites, thus putting an end for ever to Arab rule in North Africa, and rapidly extended their empire to the Atlantic. When the Fati- mites established themselves in Egypt, the Zirid dynasty reigned as their vassals in the west, and maintained themselves with varying fortunes till the rise of the great empire of the ALMORAVIDES (g.1.), who yielded in turn to the ALMOHADES (q.v.). The latter dynasty was extinguished by the princes of the Beni-Merin, whose chief, Ya'ktb b. 'Abd al-Hakk, captured Morocco in 1269 A.p. The sub- scquent history of Morocco and Fez under the Merinids and their successors presents little interest, being as full of internecine wars, contested successions, fratricides, general bloodshed, and barbarities as it is empty of all indications of an advance in civilization. As regards the relations of the country to Kuropean nations, four periods may be distinguished—(1) a period lasting down to the close of the 14th century, when the Moorish potentates were still the most pro- minent representatives of aggressive Mohammedanism ; (2) a period during which the Portuguese and Spaniards, having expelled their invaders, made vigorous reprisals and obtained possession of many towns on the coast of Morocco ; (8) a period in which these nations, disheartened by*~~

~~*the disastrous defeat in the Battle of the Three Kings (1579), allowed the Moors to recover much of the ground they had lost, and to become, by their piracies and defiance of inter- national law, an object if not of terror yet of apprehension and irritation ; and (4) a period in which the prestige of this after- glow of greatness has gradually died out.*~~

~~*The following are the more noteworthy events in the Moorish annals since the beginning of the 15th century.*~~

~~*1415. Ceuta captured by the Portuguese. 1436. First expedition against Tangiers by Don Duarte ; capture of Don Fernando, who died in exile in 1459 (it was proposed to ransom him by cession of Ceuta, but the pope objected). 1459. Capture of Alcazar Seguir. 1471. Capture of Tangiers. 1510-1540. Rise of the dynasty of the Sherifs. 1577. Edmond Hogan sent by Queen Elizabeth of England to Muley 'Abd al-Melek (see Report in Hakluyt). 1578. Defeat of King Sebastian (see Leared, Visit to Court of Morocco, appendix). 1585. Founding of the Company of Barbary Merchants (earls of War- wick, Leicester, &c.) in London ; Elizabeth's second ambassador Henry Roberts well received. 1610. The Moors from Spain settle partly at Rabat, &c., and prove troublesome. 1649. Muley Zidan sends to King Charles I. requesting him to attack Sallee by sea. About this time Ali Sherif of Yanbo, near Medina, is recognized as ruler of TAfilelt, and gradually of the rest of the empire except the city of Morocco; with him commences the dynasty of the Alides ; on his death his sons, Mohammed and Arshid, dispute the succes- sion. 1662. Tangiers (Portuguese since 1471) becomes an English possession as part of the dowry of Catherine of Braganza. 1664-1672. Reign of Arshid, a warlike, active, and cruel prince, who was the first to take the title of sultan. 1672-1727. Reign of Ishmael, who in ability and ferocity completely outdid his brother Arshid, and supported his throne by an enormous army of slaves from the Siidan. 1678. Great plague; ambassadors sent to Louis XIV. to ask the hand of Mademoiselle Blois, the king's natural daughter. 1682. The sultan sends two lions to the king of England. 1684. Sir Cloudesley Shovel defends British interests on the coast ; with- drawal of the English from Tangiers. 1687. Capture of Larash from the Spaniards. 1694. Siege of Ceuta. 1725. Thomas Betton, who had been a slave in Morocco, left £13,000, the half of his fortune, for the ransom of British captives in that*~~

~~*country. 1727-17380. Disputed succession. 1757-1789. Reign of Mohammed. 1778. Locusts. 1780. Great famine; Agadir opened to the Dutch. 1794- 1822. Reign of Soliman ; abolition of Christian slavery in Morocco ; suppression of piracy. 1822-1859. Reign of Abd er Rahman; rupture with Spain on account of the decapitation of Consul Darmon for the wounding of a Moor. 1844. Defeat of forces sent to assist 'Abd al-Kader in Algiers ; bombardment of Tangiers and Mogador by the prince de Joinville ; rout of the Moorish forces in the battle of Isly ; and peace of Tangiers. 1845. Naval demonstration at Tangiers and ratification of treaty ; surrender to Spain of disputed territory at Ceuta. 1853. Establishment of a customs line and regular military posts along the Algerian frontier. 1856. English commercial treaty by which no duty shall exceed 10 per cent. of the value of the wares. 1859-1873. Reign of Mohammed ; Spanish invasion. 1860. Decisive battle between General O'Donnell and the Moors near Tetuan (March). By the treaty of Tetuan Morocco was to pay 20,000,000 piastres to Spain, to surrender territory at Santa Cruz de Mar Pequeitia for a commercial establishment, and to allow the Spanish missionaries to have a house at Fez like that which they had at Tangiers. Money not being obtainable to pay the indemnity, the Spaniards obtained control of the customs for a term of years. 1864. Decree permitting Europeans to trade in any part of the empire. 1873. Accession of Hasan. 1880. English embassy for improvement of commercial relations ; conference at*~~

~~*Madrid to define the rights of European representatives in regard to the protection afforded by them to subjects of the sultan ; num- ber of protégés limited to three. 1882. Expedition to subdue Sid Hosein of Iligh. 1883. Protest of the English Government against the slave trade in Morocco.*~~

~~*Lists of works in regard to Morocco will be found in Renou, Descript. géogr. de Temp. de Maroc, Paris, 1846, forming part of L'explor. scient. de lV Algérie ; in Bol. de la Soc. geogr. de Madrid, 1877, 1878; and in Rivista Contemporanea, Madrid, 1881. Besides Renou's Description—a masterly criticism of all previous geographical material—the following may be mentioned :—Ibn Khaldun, Hist. des Berberes (tr. by Baron de Slane); Leo Africanus, Descript. Africe ; Diego de Torres, Origen y*~~

~~*sucesso de los Xarifes.. . de Marruecos, &c., 1585; Marmol, Deser. de lV Afrique, 1667 ; Faria y Sousa, Africa Portuguese, Lisbon, 1681; Addi- son, Account of West Barbary, 1671 (Pinkerton's Coll., xv.) ; Chenier, Rech. hist. sur les Mawres, 1787; Jackson, Account of the Emp. of Morocco, 1809, and Tim- buctoo and Mousa, 1820; Drummond Hay, Western Barbary, 1844; John David- son, Notes taken during Travels in Africa, 1839 ; De Aguirra, Expedicion al Rif, 1858; Mrs. E. Murray, Sixteen Yeurs in Morocco, Spain, &c., 1859; Richardson, Trav. in Morocco, 1860; Maltzan, Dret Jahren im Nordwesten von Afrika, 1868 (4 vols.); Rohlfs, Reise durch Marokko, Bremen, 1868; Fritsch in " Mittheil. d. Vereins fiir Erdk.," Halle, 1878 ; Leared, Morocco and the Moors, 1875, and Visit to the Court of Morocco, 1879; De Amici's Marocco, Milan, 1878—a very graphic sketch, which has been deservedly translated into English, French, Gerinan, &c.; Tissot, Rech. sur la géogr. comparée de la Maurétanie Tingitane, 1877 ; Cas- tellanos, Deser. hist. de Marruecos, Santiago, 1878; Hooker and Ball, Morocco and the Great Atlas, 1878; Gatell, Viajes por Marruecos, 1879; Payton, Mosses from a Rolling Stone, 1879; Liana y Rodrigafiez, El imp. de Marruecos, 1880 ; Watson, A Visit to Wazan, 1880; Trotter, Mission to the Court of Marocco, 1881 ; Cowan and Johnstone, Moorish Lotus Leaves, 1882.*~~

~~*Morocco, or Marocco (Marraékush), one of the quasi- capitals of the sultanate (Fez and Meknes being the other two), lies in a spacious plain about 15 miles from the northern underfalls of the Atlas, and 90 miles east-south- east of Saffi, at a height variously estimated as 1639 feet (Hooker and Ball), 1410 (Beaumier), and 1500 (Leared). Ranking during the early centuries of its exist- ence as one of the greatest and most flourishing cities of Islam, Morocco has long been in a state of grievous decay; and were it not for the exceptional beauty of its situation, the luxuriant groves and gardens by which it is encom- passed and interspersed, and the magnificent outlook which it enjoys towards the mountains, it would be altogether a very miserable place. The wall, 25 or 30 feet high, and relieved by square towers at intervals of 360 feet, 1s so dilapidated that foot-passengers, and in places even horse- men, can find their way in and out through the breaches. Open spaces of great extent are numerous enough within the walls, but for the most part they are defaced by mounds of rubbish and putrid refuse. With the exception of*~~

~~*the tower of the Kutubia Mosque and a certain archway which was brought in pieces from Spain, there is not, it is asserted, a single stone building in the city; and even bricks (though the local manufacture is of excellent quality) are sparingly employed. T'dbiya, or pounded clay, is the almost universal material, and the houses are consequently seldom raised more than two stories in height. The palace of the sultan covers an extensive area, and has its parks and gardens enclosed by walls similar to those of the city proper, but is architecturally quite insignificant. In the whole of Morocco the tower of the Kutubia alone is a worthy memorial of the constructive genius of the early Moors ; both ++ and the similar tower of Hasan at Rabat are after the type of the Giralda at Seville, and, if tradition may be trusted, all three were designed by the same architect Jabir. The mosque to which the tower belongs is a large brick build- ing erected by 'Abd al-Mumen ; the interior is adorned with marble pillars, and the whole of the crypt is occupied by avast cistern excavated by Manstr. Other mosques of some note are those of Ibn Yusuf, Al-Mansur, and Al-Mo'lzz; the chapel of Sidi Bel Abbas, in the extreme north of the city, possesses property to the value of £200,000, and serves as a great almshouse and asylum. As in most other towns throughout Morocco, there is a special Jews' quarter walled off from the rest. The general population is of a very mixed and turbulent kind; crimes of violence are extremely common, and there are countless varieties of the profes- sional thief. Almost the only manufacture extensively prosecuted is that of Morocco leather, mainly red and yellow, about 1500 men being employed as tanners and shoemakers. The city was founded in 1062 by Yusuf b.*~~

~~*Tashefin. Before it was more than a hundred years old it is said to have had 700,000 inhabitants, but at present tlic total number probably does not exceed 50,000 or 60,000. See Leo Africanus; Lambert's detailed description in Bul. de la Soe. de géogr., Paris, 1865; and Dr Leared's rifaeimento of Lam- bert. Lambert's plan of Morocco is reproduced with some additions by Dr Leared; and another may be found in Gatell. (H. A. W.)*~~

~~*MORON, or Moron DE LA FRonTERA, a town of Spain, in the province of Seville, about 32 miles to the south- east of that city, occupies an irregular site upon broken chalk hillocks at a distance of a mile and a half from the right bank of the Guadaira. It is connected by rail with Utrera on the Cadiz and Seville linc. On the highest elevation to the eastward are the ruins of the ancient castle, of considerable importance during the Moorish period, and afterwards used as a palace by the counts of Ureiia. In 1810-11 it was fortified by the French, but blown up by them in the following year. The chief public building of Moron is the large parish church, which dates from the 16th century, but presents no noteworthy features. The fine district between Moron and the Serrania de Ronda is largely occupied by olive plantations, and the trade in oil and other agricultural produce forms the chief industry of the town. Moron is also famous throughout Spain for its chalk (cal de Moron), from which the white- wash extensively used in the Peninsula is derived. The population of the town was 14,879 in 1878.*~~

~~*MORONI, Gramparrista (c. 1510-1578), an eminent portrait-painter of the Venetian school, was born at Albino near Bergamo about 1510, and became a pupil of Bonvicino named I] Moretto. Beyond the record of his works very few particulars regarding him have reached us. Titian, under whom also Moroni, while still very young, is said to have studied (but this appears hardly probable), had at any rate a high opinion of his powers; he said that Moroni made his portraits "living" or "actual" (ver). And if the magnates of Bergamo came to the great Vene- tian for their likenesses he advised them to go to their own countryman. In truthful and animated portraiture Moroni ranks near Titian himself. HIs portraits do not indeed attain to a majestic monumental character; but they are full of straightforward life and individuality, with genuine unforced choice of attitude, and excellent texture and arrangement of draperies. There is a certain tendency to a violet tint in the flesh, and the drawing and action of the hands are not first-rate. As leading samples of his portraits may be mentioned—in the Uffizi Gallery, Florence, the Nobleman pointing to a Flame, in- scribed "Et quid volo nisi ut ardeat?"; in the National Gallery, London, the portraits of a Tailor, a member of the Fenaroli family, Canon Ludovico de' Terzi, and others ; in the Berlin Gallery, his own portrait ; and in Stafford HIouse, the seated half-figure of the Jesuit Ercole Tasso,*~~

currently termed ""Titian's Schoolmaster "——not as indicat- ing any real connexion between the sitter and Titian, but only the consummate excellence of the work. Besides his portraits, Moroni painted, from youth to his latest days, the ordinary round of sacred compositions; but in these he falls below his master I] Moretto, and his design, which partakes more of the Lombard or Milanese style than of the Venetian, has at times some of the dryness of the quattrocento. One of the best is the Coronation of the Virgin in 8. Alessandro della Croce, Bergamo; also in the Cathedral of Verona, Sts Peter and Paul, and in the Brera of Milan, the Assumption of the Virgin. Moroni was engaged upon a Last Judgment in the church of Corlago when he died on 5th February 1578.

MOROSINI, the name of a noble Venetian family. According to the best authorities, Cappellari and Bar- baro, there would seem to have been two families of that

name, distinguishing themselves by the variation of their shield. The one came from Mantua at the time of Attila's invasion, and bore or, a fess azure. The other came from Illyria in the 7th century ; they bore or, a bend azure. However that may be, nothing authentic is known of the Morosini till we find them settled as one family in Venice during the 8th century. The Morosini belong to the Case Vecchie, or twenty-four families of Venetian nobility who were descended from the tribunes of the confederate islands before Venice became united in one centre at Rialto. The 10th century was a period of danger for the family. They became involved in a blood feud with another noble house, the Caloprini, who were Ghibelline in politics, and relied upon the emperor Otto for support. The Morosini, how- ever, proved the stronger, thanks to their popularity ; and the year 991 saw them victorious through the deposition of the doge Memo, who had favoured their enemies. The Morosini engaged in commerce with the East, and in the 14th century two brothers of the family, Alban and Marco, founded a house at Aleppo with branches in Damascus, Beyrttt, and elsewhere in Syria. The wealth and importance of the family may be gathered from the fact that in 1379 no less than fifty-nine Morosini subscribed towards the fund for carrying on the war of

~~*Chioggia. The house of Morosini gave four doges to Venice, and numbered among its honours two royal marriages, two cardinals, twenty-four procurators of St Mark, besides numerous generals of the republic. The Morosini continued to flourish till the opening of the last century, when the family began to decline ; it is now represented by one sur- viving member.*~~

~~*Among the more distinguished members of the house must be mentioned : —Giovanni, who in 982 founded the nionastic establishment on 8. Giorgio Maggiore after the order of St Benedict; Domenico, doge 1148-1156—in the third year of his reign Pola and Istria, which had rebelled, were reconquered; Marino, doge 1249-1252, during whose reign the Inquisition, in a modified form and under the surveillance of Venetian officers, was introduced into Venice for the first time. In this same century (1290) Tommasina Morosini, the sister of Albertino il Grande, married Stephen, prince of Hungary. Their son Andrew succeeded to the throne, and was directed in his govern- ment by his uncle Albertino, on whom he conferred the dukedom of Slavonia and the county of Morlacchia. A cousin of Tommasina, Costanza, married Ladislaus, king of Servia. In 1382 Michele Morosini was elected doge. He had acquired a large fortune and a reputation for astuteness by buying Venetian property while the Genoese were still in Chioggia ; and much was expected of him in the restoration of his country's finance when that war came to an end. But he died the year of his election. Andrea Morosini the historian was born in 1558. He studied at Padua, and on coming of age embarked on public life. He passed through the various offices of state, till in 1618 he was a candidate for the dogeship, but failed to secure it, and died the same year. On the death of the official historian Paolo Paruta, in 1598, Andrea was commissioned by the Council of Ten to con- tinue his work, and received authority to consult the state papers down to 1594. He wrote his history in Latin. It covers from 1521 to 1615, and was first published in Venice, 1623.*~~

~~*Andrea's other works, of which only the firsthas been edited, are:— (1) L'imprese ed espeditioni di Terra Santa e Vacquisto fatto del? Imperio di Costantinopoli dalla Serenissima Republiea di Venetia, Venice, 1627 ; (2) De vis que Veneta Respublica ad Istriw oras gessit adversus Othonem*~~

~~*Federici Imperatoris filium, in the Corner-Duodo collection of MSS. ; (3) De forma reipubliew Venetx, in the National*~~

~~*Library, Paris; (4) Raccolta delle Leggi del Cons. X., in the Archivio Generale at the Frari, Venice ; (5) De rebus gestis ae nece*~~

~~*MO R—*~~

~~*Franeisct Carmaniolz, in the Corner-Duodo collection. The life of | Andrea has been written by Luigi Lollin, bishop of Belluno (1623), by Niccolo Crasso (1621), and by Antonio Palazzoli (1620).*~~

~~*The most distinguished member of the house of Morosini was Francesco, the captain-general of the republic against the Turks and conqueror of the Morea. HIe was born in 1618. In 1666 he was in command during an unfortunate campaign in Candia. In 1687 he conquered Patras, and so opened the Morea to the Venetian arms. In the follow- ing year he was elected doge. After his return to Venice the republic suffered severely in Candia, and though now an old man Francesco took the field again in 1693, but died the next year at Nauplia, seventy-six years of age. A more detailed account of his exploits will be found in the article VENICE.*~~

~~*Authorities. —Barbaro, Gencalogie delle Famiglie Patrizie Venete, MS., clas. vii. cod. decccxxvii., in the Marcian Library, Venice ; Cappellari, Campidoglio Veneto, MS., clas. vii. cod. xvii., in the same library ; Romanin, Storia doewmentata di Venezia ; Freschot, La Nobilta Veneta ; Cicogna, Iscrizione Veneziane.*~~

~~*MORPETH, a municipal and parliamentary borough of Northumberland, England, is situated in a fine valley on the Wansbeck, and on the North-Eastern Railway, 50 miles south of Berwick and 16 north of Newcastle. The Wans- beck, which is crossed by a stone and two wooden bridges, winds round the town on the west, south, and east, and a small rivulet, the Cottingburn, bounds it on the north. Morpeth is irregularly built, but possesses a number of good shops. The parish church of the Blessed Virgin, a plain building of the 14th century, is situated on Kirk HIll, a short distance from the town. Among the other public buildings are the Edward VI.'s grammar school, reopened*~~

~~| ser term Morphology (yop¢7, form), introduced by~~

~~Goethe to denote the study of the unity of type in organic form (for which the Linnean term METAMORPHOSIS (g.v.) had formerly been employed), now usually covers the entire science of organic form, and will be employed in this more comprehensive sense in the present article.~~

~~§ 1. Historical Outline—If we disregard such vague likenesses as those expressed in the popular classifications of plants by size into herbs, shrubs, and trees, or of terrestrial animals by habit into beasts and creeping things, the history of morphology commences with Aris- totle. Founder of comparative anatomy and taxonomy, he established eight great divisions (to which are ap- pended certain minor groups) — Viviparous Quadrupeds, Birds, Oviparous Quadrupeds and Apoda, Fishes, Ma- lakia, Malacostraca, Entoma, and Ostracodermata — dis- tinguishing the first four groups as Enaima ("with blood") from the remaining four as Anaima ("blood- less"). In these two divisions we recognize the Ver- tebrata and Invertebrata of Lamarck, while the eight groups are identical with the Mammals, Birds, Reptiles, Fishes, the Cephalopods, Crustaceans, other Articulates, and Testaceans of recent zoology. Far, too, from com- mitting the mistake often attributed to him of reckoning Bats as Birds, or Cetaceans as Fishes, he discerned the true affinities of both, and erected the latter into a spe- cial yévos beside the Viviparous Quadrupeds, far more on account of their absence of limbs than of their aquatic habit. Not only is his method inductive, and, as in modern systems, his groups natural, z.e., founded on the aggregate of known characters, but he foreshadows such generalizations as those of the correlation of organs, and of the progress of development from a general to a special form, long afterwards established by Cuvier and Von Baer respectively. In the correspondence he suggests~~

~~in 1857 after a Chancery suit lasting 150 years ; the town- hall, erected in 1870 to supersede a building of 1714 by Vanbrugh ; and the county-hall and former gaol, in the baronial style, built in 1814. Nothing remains of~~

~~*the old castle except the gateway. Morpeth had at one time one of the largest cattle-markets in England. The industries of the town include tanning, brewing, malting, iron and brass founding, and the manufacture of flannels, agricultural implements, and bricks and tiles. The population of the municipal borough (231 acres) in 1871 was 4517, and in 1881 it was 4556. The population of the parliamentary borough (17,085 acres) in the same years was 30,239 and*~~

~~*33,459.*~~

~~*™ Morpeth (Morepath, i.e., the path over the moor) had attained gome size before the Norman Conquest, when it was granted to William de Merlay. From the De Merlays it passed through the Greystocks and Dacres to the Howards, carls of Carlisle. Soon after the Conquest it obtained the privilege of a market, and in 1552 arms were granted to it by Edward VI. It is a borough by prescription, and was incorporated by Charles II. By the Municipal Act of 1835 the government was placed in a mayor and burgesses, but there is a local board of health distinct from the corporation, having control over an area slightly larger than that of the municipal borough. From 1558 the borough sent two members to parliament, but since 1832 only one member has been returned, and in 1868 the area of the borough was increased.*~~

~~*MORPHEUS is a personification, apparently invented by Ovid (Metam., xi. 635), of the power that calls up shapes before the fancy of a dreamer. The name (from poppy) expresses this function ; Ovid translates it artifer simulatorque figure. Morpheus is naturally represented as the son of Sleep (Somnus).*~~

~~*MORPHIA. See Opium.*~~

~~*OLOGY*~~

~~*between the scales of Fishes and the feathers of Birds, or in that hinted at between the fins of Fishes and the limbs of Quadrupeds, the idea of homology too is nascent ; and from the compilation of his disciple Nicolaus of Damascus, who regards leaves as imperfectly-developed fruits, he seems almost to have anticipated the idea of the metamorphosis*~~

~~*of plants. In short, we find a knowledge of structural facts and a comparative freedom from the errors induced by physiological resemblance, of which his successors such as Theophrastus and Pliny, generally mere classifiers by habit, show little trace, and which the moderns have but slowly regained. Little indeed can be recorded until the 13th century, when the reappearance of Aristotle's works gave a new impulse to the study of organic nature. Of the works of this period that of Albertus Magnus is far the most important; but they are all no more than re- vivals of Aristotle, marking the reappearance of scientific method and the reawakening of interest in and sympathy with nature. Meanwhile leech and apothecary, alchemist and witch, were accumulating considerable knowledge of plants, which, after the invention of printing, became collected and extended in the descriptive and well-illus- trated folios of Gesner and his successors, Fuchs, Lobel, and others, as well as by the establishment of botanic gardens and scientific academies, while, as Sachs expresses it, "in the sharpest contrast to the naive empiricism of the German fathers of botany came their Italian contemporary Ceesalpinus, as the thinker of the vegetable world." Both made systematic efforts,—the Germans vaguely seeking for natural affinities in mere similarities of habit, the Italian with no inconsiderable success striving towards an intel- lectual basis of classification. Monographs on groups of plants and animals frequently appeared, those of Belon on Birds and Rondelet on Fishes being among the earliest ; and in the former of these (1555) we find a comparison of the*~~

~~*skeletons of Bird and Man in the same posture and as nearly as possible bone for bone,—an idea which, despite the contemporaneous renaissance of human anatomy Int tiated by Vesalius, disappeared for centuries, unappreciated save by the surgeon Ambroise Paré. Palissy, like Leonardo before him, discerned the true nature of fossils ; and such flashes of morphological insight continued to appear from time to time during the 17th century. Thus, J oachim Jung recognized "the distinction between root and stem, the difference between leaves and foliaceous branches, the transition from the ordinary leaves to the folia jlorts," and Harvey*~~

~~anticipated the generalizations of modern embryo- logy by his researches on development and his theory of epigenesis.~~

~~The encyclopedic period of which Gesner is the highest representative was continued by Aldrovandi, Jonston, and others in the 17th century, but, aided powerfully by the Baconian movement, then profoundly influencing all scientific minds, it developed rapidly into one of genuinely systematic aim. At this stage of progress by far the most important part was taken by John Ray, whose classificatory labours both among plants and animals were crowned with marvellous success. He first definitely expelled the fabulous monsters and prodigies of which the encyclopzedists had faithfully handed on the tradition from medieval times, and, like his predecessor Morison, classifying in a truly modern spirit by anatomical characters, he succeeded, particularly among plants, in distinguishing many natural groups, for which his very terms sometimes survive, €.9., Dicotyledons and Monocotyledons, Umbelliferze and Legu- minose. The true precursor of Linnzus, he introduced the idea of species in natural history, afterwards to become so rigid, and reformed the practice of definition and termino- logy. Of the many works which followed up Ray's systematic and monographic labours, though often, like those of Tournefort and Rivinus, Réaumur and Klein, of great importance, none can be even named until we come to those of his great successor Linnzeus, whose extraordinary grasp of logical method and unparalleled lucidity of thought and expression enabled him to reform and reorganize the~~

~~whole labours of his predecessors into a compact and-~~

~~definite "systema nature." The very genius of order, he established modern taxonomy (see Brotocy), not only by the introduction of the binomial nomenclature and the renovation of descriptive terminology and method, but by the subordination of the species—henceforth clearly defined—under the successive higher categories of genus, order, and class, so finally reconciling the analytic and synthetic tendencies of his predecessors. Although the classification of plants by the number of their essential organs (which vastly advanced not only the cultivation of botany but the knowledge of the flora of the globe, and by which he is popularly~~

~~*remembered) is highly artificial, it must be remembered that this artificiality is after all only a question of degree, and that he not only distinctly recognized its provisional character but collected and ex- tended those fragments of the natural system with which Jussieu soon afterwards commenced to build. HIs classi- fication of animals, too, was largely natural, and, though on the whole he unfortunately lent his authority to main- tain "that disastrous philosophic and scientific aberration " inherited from the alchemists through the last encyclopzdist of Gesner's school—the notion of three kingdoms of nature—he at least at one time discerned the fundamental unity of animals and vegetables, and united them in opposition to the non-living world as Organisata. At the same time he was still far more a scholastic naturalist than a modern in- vestigator, and his works represent little more than the full completion of the ancient era, and in the hands of fanatical followers served often to retard the commencement of the*~~

~~*whose names and labours are imperishable.*~~

~~*MOR PH Gal OG Y*~~

~~*modern one. So, too, his excessive systematicand descriptive precision, united as it was with comparative inattention to other than superficial characters, established a tendency, even yet not extinct, to rest contented with mere method and nomenclature instead of aiming at complete morpho- logical knowledge.*~~

~~*While the artificial system was at the zenith of its fame and usefulness, Bernard de Jussieu was arranging his garden on the lines afforded by the fragmentary natural system of Linneus. HIs ideas were elaborated by his nephew and successor Antoine de Jussieu, who for the first time published diagnoses of the natural orders, so giving the system its modern character. Its subsequent elaboration and definite establishment are due mainly to the labours of Pyrame de Candolle and Robert Brown. The former concentrated his own long life and that of his*~~

~~*son upon a new "systema nature," the colossal Prodromus .-*~~

~~*systematis naturalis (20 vols., 1818-1873), in which 80,000 species were described and arranged. Meanwhile the pene- trative genius of Brown enabled him to unravel such struc- tural complexities as those of Conifers and Cycads, Orchids and Proteacez, thus demonstrating the possibility of ascer- taining the systematic position of even the most highly modified floral types. Both Candolle and Brown were thus no mere systematists, but genuine morphologists of the modern school. The former, as we shall afterwards see, established the theory of floral symmetry on grounds of pure comparative anatomy, and distinguished with greater success than hitherto between fundamental unity of struc- tural type and mere superficial similarity of physiological adaptation. The latter (Humboldt's "facile princeps*~~

~~*botanicorum"), using the same ideas with even keener in- sight, made many memorable anatomical researches, such as those on the structure of the ovule and the seed, and*~~

~~*indeed by his demonstration of the affinities of the gym- nosperms almost anticipated the discoveries of Hofmeister, who stands pre-eminent among his modern successors on*~~

~~*account of his elucidation of the secret of phanerogamic*~~

~~*reproduction.*~~

~~*The labours of Bernard and Antoine de Jussieu initiated too a vast parallel advance in zoology, the joint memoir on the classification of mammals with which Cuvier and Geoffroy St-Hilaire almost commenced their career recelv- ing its dominant impulse from the " genera" of Antoine. Cuvier's works correspond. in zoology to those of the whole period from the Jussieus to Brown, and epitomize the results of that line of advance. Although in some respects preceded by Haller and Hunter, who compared, though mainly with physiological aim, the same parts in different organisms, and much more distinctly by Vicq d'Azyr, the only real comparative anatomist of the 18th cen- tury, he truly opens the era of detailed anatomical research united with exact comparison and clear generalization. The Régne Animal (1817) and the theory of types (verte- brate, molluscan, articulate, and radiate) are the results of this union of*~~

~~analysis and synthesis (although he himself, exasperated by the aberrations of the Naturphilosophie, was accustomed to proclaim the importance of detailed empiricism alone), and mark the reconstitution of taxonomy on a new basis, henceforth to be no longer a matter of superficial description and nomenclature but a complete expression of structural resemblances and differences. More even than Linneus he is the founder of a great school, In Germany, Bojanus, Meckel, Von Siebold, and the illustrious Johannes Miiller, with his many living pupils, have carried on the work ; in France, too, a succession of brilliant anatomists, such as De Quatrefages, Milne-Edwards, and Lacaze- Duthiers, are his intellectual heirs ; and in England he has been admirably represented by Owen.~~

~~mom Poa oO 1: OG ¥~~

~~The histological movement inaugurated by Bichat will be subsequently discussed ; the rise of embryology, how- ever, may be briefly noted, especially since it supplied the most obvious deficiency of the Cuvierian school. Here the principal figure is Von Baer, who established independently the four types of Cuvier on developmental grounds, so for the first time applying embryology as the touchstone of anatomical classifications, besides establishing his famous law of differentiation from a general towards a special form.~~

~~It is now necessary to return to Linnzus, whose more speculative writings contain, though encumbered by fan-~~

~~tastic hypotheses, the idea of floral metamorphosis (" Prin-'~~

~~cipium florum et foliorum idem est," &c.). About the same time, and quite independently, C. F. Wolff, the embryo- logist, stated the same theory with greater clearness, for the first time distinctly reducing the plant to an axis bearing appendages—the vegetative leaves—which become meta- morphosed into bud-scales or floral parts through diminu- tion of vegetative force. 'Thirty years later the same view was again independently developed by Goethe in his now well-known pamphlet (Versuch die Metamorphose der~~

~~*Pflanzen zu erkldéren, Gotha, 1790). In this brilliant essay'*~~

~~*the doctrine of the fundamental unity of floral and foliar parts is clearly enunciated, and supported by arguments from anatomy, development, and: teratology. All the organs of a plant are thus modifications of one funda- mental organ—the leaf—and all plants are in like manner to be viewed as modifications of a common type—the Urpflanze. The controversy as to the merits and import- ance of this essay, and of Goethe's morphological work in general, can scarcely be entered upon here. That Goethe discerned and proclaimed, and that more clearly than any of his predecessors or contemporaries, the fundamental idea of all morphology—the unity which underlies the multi- farious varieties of organic form—and that he systematically applied this idea to the interpretation of the most import- ant, most complex, and most varied animal and vegetable structures, is unquestionable. The difficulties arise when we seek to estimate the importance of his works in the chain of progress, and when we inquire whether, as some historians hold, his "urpflanze" was a mere ideal archetype, bringing forth as its fruit the innumerable metaphysical abstractions of the Naturphilosophie, and leading his countrymen, to their fall, into all the extravagances of that system ; or whether, as Haeckel maintains, it represented a concrete an- cestral form, soanticipating the view of modern evolutionists. That to him Schelling was largely indebted for the founda- tion upon which he erected his philosophic edifice, as also that Goethe largely shared the same ideas, is unquestion- able; but it must be remembered that he lived and made progress for forty years after the publication of this essay, that he was familiar with the whole scientific movement, and warmly sympathized with the evolutionary views of Lamarck and Geoffroy St-Hilaire ; it is not therefore to be wondered at that his writings should furnish evidence in favour of each and every interpretation of them. His other morphological labours must not be forgotten. Inde- pendently of Vieq d'Azyr, he discovered the human pre- maxillary bone ; independently of Oken, he proposed the vertebral theory of the skull; and before Savigny, he dis- cerned that the jaws of insects were the limbs of the head.*~~

~~*In 1813 A. P. de Candolle published his Théorce Ele- mentaire dela Botanique, which he developed into the classic Organographie Végétale*~~

~~(1827), Although at first unac- quainted with Goethe's essay, and not clearly discerning the homology of leaves and floral parts, he established his theory of symmetry, reducing all flowers to "symmetrical" groupings of appendages on an axis and accounting for their various forms by cohesion and adhesion, by arrested or excessive development. The next great advance was the~~

~~investigation by Schimper and Braun of phyllotaxis—the ascending spiral arrangement of foliar and floral organs—~~

~~thus further demonstrating their essential unity.~~

~~The term morphology was first introduced by Goethe in 1817, in a subsequent essay (Zur Naturwissenschaft tiberhaupt, besonders zur Morphologie). It did not come into use in botany until its popularization by Auguste de St-Hilaire in his admirable Morphologie Végétale (1841), and in zoology until later, although De Blainville, who also first employed the term type, had treated the external forms of animals under "morphologie." Though the Na- turphilosophie of Schelling and its countless modifications by his followers, its mystic theories of "polarization" and the like, its apparatus of assumption and abstraction, hy- pothesis and metaphor, cannot here be discussed, its un- doubted services must not be forgotten, since it not only stimulated innumerable reflective minds to the earnest study of natural science, but, by its incessant proclamation of the unity of nature and the free use of Platonic arche- types, gave a most powerful impulse to the study of com- parative anatomy, and nobly vindicated the claims of philo- sophie synthesis over those of merely analytic empiricism. Among its many adherents, some are of more distinctly theological type, others metaphysical, others mystical or poetic, others, again, more especially scientific ; but its most typical and picturesque figure is Lorenz Oken, who epitomizes alike the best and the worst features of the school, and among whose innumerable pseudo- morpholo- gical dreams there occasionally occurred suggestions of the greatest fruitfulness,—notably, for instance, the independ- ent statement of the vertebral theory of the skull.~~

~~*Although Lamarck shared in this movement, his great work (the Philosophie Zoologique, 1809), being etiolo- gical rather than morphological, scarcely claims discussion here. By far the most distinguished anatomist of the transcendental school is Geoffroy St-Hilaire, who being comparatively free from the extravagances of Oken, and uniting a depth of morphological insight scarcely inferior to that of Goethe with greater knowledge of facts and far wider influence and reputation in the scientific world (which affected to sneer at the poet as necessarily a mere amateur), had enormously greater influence on the progress of science than either. He started from the same studies of anatomi- cal detail as Cuvier, but, profoundly influenced by Buffon's view of unity of plan and by the evolutionary doctrines of Lamarck, he rapidly diverged into new lines, and again reached that idea of serial homology of which we have so frequently noted the independent origin. His greatest work, the Philosophie Anatomique (1818-1823), contains his principal doctrines. These are—(1) the theory of unity of organic composition, identical in spirit with that of Goethe ; (2) the theory of analogues, according to which the same parts, differing only in form and in degree of development, should occur in all animals; (3) the "principe des con- nexions," by which similar parts occur everywhere in similar relative positions ; and (4) the "principe du balancement des organes," upon which he founded the study of tera- tology, and according to which the high development of one organ is allied to diminution of another. The advance in morphological theory is here obvious ; unfortunately, how- ever, in eager pursuit of often deceptive homologies, he wandered into the transcendentalism of the Naturphilo- sophie, and seems utterly to have failed to appreciate either the type theory of Cuvier or the discoveries of Von Baer. He earnestly defended Buffon's and Bonnet's earlier view of unity of plan in nature ; and the controversy reached its climax in 1830, when he maintained the unity of structure in Cephalopods and Vertebrates against Cuvier before the Academy of Sciences. On the point of fact*~~

~~*he was of course utterly defeated; the type theory was*~~

~~*te*~~

thenceforward fully accepted and the Naturphilosophie received its deathblow, while a "second empiric period " of exact anatomical and embryological research seemed for ever to replace it. Such was the popular view ; only a few, like the aged Goethe, whose last literary effort was a masterly critique of the controversy, discerned that the very reverse interpretation was the deeper and essential one, that a veritable "scientific revolution" was in pro- gress, and that the supremacy of homological and synthetic over descriptive and analytic studies was thenceforward assured. The irreconcilable feud between the two leaders really involved a reconciliation for their followers ; theories of homological anatomy had thenceforward to be strictly subjected to anatomical and embryological verification, while anatomy and embryology acquired a homological aim. This union of the solid matter and rigorous method of Cuvier with the generalizing spirit and philosophic aims of Geoffroy is well illustrated in the works of Owen ; and, in short, the so-called Cuvierian school is in reality thenceforward also Geoffroyan.

The further evolution of the idea of homology is sketched below (§ 7), while the extent and rapidity of the subsequent progress of the knowledge of all the structural aspects of plants and animals alike make an historical survey impos- sible up to the appearance of the Origin of Species (1859) ; however, no further qualitative advance was possible, since, as Sachs has best pointed out, morphology necessarily contains, under the Linnean dogma of the constancy of species, the same two inconsistent and irreconcilable lines of thought which we saw represented by Cesalpinus and the early German botanists respectively,—on one side the want of strictly scientific classification, and on the other the vaguely felt existence of a natural relationship. Strict classification of forms supposed constant excludes in fact any natural relationship. The type theory, the theory of unity of organic composition, and the like, are susceptible indeed of two explanations—they may be regarded as either ex- pressing a creative plan, or taken as purely Platonic and archetypal ideas. Both are tenable on theological and metaphysical grounds respectively, but the fact must

~~not be disguised that of this unity of type no explanation in the least degree scientific, 7.¢., in terms of the pheno- mena of the natural world, does or can exist. The need- ful solution was effected by Darwin. The "urpflanze" of Goethe, the types of Cuvier, and the like, at once became intelligible as schematic representations of ancestral organ- isms, which, in various and varying environments, have undergone differentiation into the vast multitude of exist- ing forms. All the enigmas of structure become resolved ; "representative" and "aberrant," " progressive" and "degraded," ""'synthetic" and "isolated," 'persistent " and "prophetic" types no longer baffle comprehension ; conformity to type represented by differentiated or rudi- mentary organs in one organism is no longer contradicted by their entire disappearance in its near allies, while systematist and morphologist become related simply as specialist and generalizer, all through this escape from the Linnean dogma of the fixity of species. The phenomena of individual development receive interpretation in terms of ancestral history; and embryology thus becomes divided into ontogeny and phylogeny, the latter, too, coming into intimate relation with paleontology, while classification seeks henceforth the reconstruction of the genealogical tree. All these results were clearly developed in the most important work of the new period, HIaeckel's Generelle Morphologie (1866), while the valuable contemporaneous Principles of Biology of HIerbert Spencer also gave special attention to the relation of morphology to physiology.!~~

~~1 For bibliography see Carus, Geschichte der Zoologie ; Sachs, Ges-~~

~~MORPR OL@eS~~

~~§ 2. Results.—Though the preceding is but a meagre outline of the rise and progress of the science, no corre- sponding sketch of its results can be here attempted. A description of the refined applications of the doctrine of floral inetamorphosis, an inquiry into the morphology of the Cryptogams, or an account of such beautiful homo- logies as those presented by the Arthropods or the Echino- derms is alike impossible; least of all can we consider the splendid simplification of the supremely complex prob- lem of vertebrate structure by the elaboration of a new theory of the skull, and by such luminous discoveries as those of the~~

segmental organs, or of the origin and homo- logies of the spinal and cranial nerves. Jor these organo- logical conceptions the reader must study such articles as those on AMPHIBIA, Brrps, Hyprozoa, Motiusca, &c., and such works as those of Huxley, Gegenbaur and Haeckel, Balfour and Parker, Payer, Eichler, or Asa Gray, and (provided with the needful bibliographical equipment afforded by the various "' Jahresberichte" and the kindred English publications) must indeed also plunge into the current literature of the science. And there too must be sought the innumerable attempts at taxonomic synthesis which such organological progress is constantly originating (see AnIMAL Kincpom, Biooey, vol. iii. p. 690 sg., and VEGETABLE Kincpom). Embryological generalizations, such as Hneckel's "' gastreea theory," Lankester's rival " pla- nula theory," or the ingenious "ccelome theory" of Hert- wig, have been recently thoroughly criticized in Balfour's Embryology. The present article will be confined to a brief discussion of a few main problems, commencing with the cell theory and the problem of organic individuality — these being selected partly because of their special illus- trativeness and intrinsic importance, partly because they have somewhat less recently been summarized.

§ 3. Histology—Cell Theory.—Although the application of the simple microscope to the minute structure of plants and animals had been in progress since the end of the 17th century, the rise of modern histology really dates from the Anatomie Générale (1801) of Bichat, which analyses the organism into a series of simple tissues with definite structural characters. This new impulse, together with the improvement of optical appliances, led to much further rescarch. "Fibres" and "globules," 'lamine" and "nuclei," were described, and even "cells" by Mirbel in 1806, and in 1835 Johannes Miiller pointed out the existence of cells resembling those of plants in the vertebrate notochord. The cellu- lar and nucleated structure of epidermis and other tissues was soon demonstrated, while Robert Brown discovered the nucleus of the vegetable cell. In 1838 Schleiden referred all vegetable tissues to the cellular type, and traced back the plant embryo to a single nucleated cell, while in 1839 Schwann boldly extended this con- ceptiou of plant structure and development to the animal world, and so fully constituted thie "cell theory."

~~*Schwann's cells were essentially nucleated vesicles with fluid contents which originated in an intracellular substance ; but this view was soon abandoned. Dujardin had discovered that the bodies of Foraminifera were composed of a viscous granular contractile sarcode, and Von Mohl described independently in similar terms the contents of the vegetable cell as protoplasm. This was identi- fied by Max Schultze as Dujardin's sarcode, the newer name sur- viving ; and this living matter, and not the membrane, he showed to be the essential constituent of the cell, since which his amended definition of the cell as a unit-mass of nucleated protoplasm las been generally accepted. Prevost and Dumas had noticed the segmentation of the ovum into masses as early as 1824, and these were naturally identified as cells immediately after the publication of Schwann's work. In 1846 Kélliker showed that all tissues arise from these segmentation masses, and that the multiplication of animal and vegetable cells takes place by a continuation of the same process, —that of transverse division already observed in the Protozoa.*~~

~~*These points gained, the attention of histologists was withdrawn for a considerable time from the scrutiny of the minute structure of the cell itself to be concentrated on the modes of origin of these unit-masses, and their subsequent differentiation and aggregation into tissues and organs. The minute structure and histogenesis of*~~

~~*chichte d. Botanik ; Cuvier, Hist. d. Sci.; Is. G. St-Hilaire, Hist. Nat.*~~

~~*Gén.; Masters in Mféd.-Chir. Rev., 1858, &c.; also articles GOETHE, LINNZUs, OKEN, &c,*~~

~~*MORPHOLOGY*~~

~~*plants, as well as of at least the higher animals, have been studied with much and ever-increasing accuracy of detail. (See ANa- Tomy, Hisro.ocy, Emspryontocy.) Both vegetable and animal tissues have been simply classified both according to their adult forms and according to the embryonic layers from which they respectively arise. This scrutiny of plant and animal structure over and above the special generalizations of the botanist and the zoologist has afforded much result to general histology. The improvement of technical methods has of late years largely*~~

~~*aided the progress of discovery. A return from the study of the cell-aggregate to that of the cell has commenced, and the question of cell-structure may be said to be again paramount in histology. The process of transverse-division has of late been much elucidated, and, although its complex details cannot here be entered upon, the result has been to establish a minute and thorough correspond- ence in cases so widely dissimilar as pollen-grains from a flower-bud, the epidermis of a tadpole, or the cells of a tumour—a result which obviously enhances the morphological completeness of the cell theory. Minor modes of cell-multiplication also are not without their morphological interest. Gemmation, familiar in the yeast pee occurs in other low and simple organisms, and may probably*~~

~~*e identified with the formation of polar vesicles in ova as a modi- fication of transverse division. Schleiden had supposed all new cells to originate within pre-existing cells, and this process, known as free-cell-formation, may really be observed in various plant and animal tissues. The protoplasm groups itself round new nuclei, the new cells being in fact formed much as Schwann had in his turn supposed ; but these nuclei have repeatedly been shown to arise from segmentation of the original nucleus, and thus this pro- cess too seems a mere modification of the general one of transverse division. Conjugation, too—that coalescence of two similar cells which may be observed in many Algex, Fungi, and Protozoa—is to be considered as the undifferentiated forin of that fertilization which occurs in higher animals and plants, the two apparently similar masses having become respectively differentiated into ovum and spermatozoon, or into egg-cell and antherozoid. An indefinite number of amceboid cells sometimes flow together into a single mass,—a phenomenon regarded by some as multiple-conjugation, or perhaps more probably as an almost mechanical coalescence of exhausted cells, from which conjugation proper and finally fertili- zation may indeed have originated. The ameboid cells of higher animals similarly unite when drawn, and this formation of plas- modia, as these are termed, seems to be a deep-seated property of the amceboid cell. Similarly, too, the process of rejuvenescence which occurs in many of the lowest plants and animals, such as Protococcus and Amceba, where the protoplasm passes from a rest- ing and encysted to a naked and mobile stage, has many analogues*~~

~~*not only among the Protista but even in the tissues of higher animals, while the phases which the lowest organisms more or less exhibit—the encysted, the ciliated, the amceboid, and the plasmo- dial—may be regarded as the fundamental forms of a ** life-cycle," fully represented indeed only in such extremely low organisms as Protomyxa and Myxomycetes, yet nowhere completely sup ressed. The very highest plants and animals may thus be considered as aggregates of more or less differentiated and variously arranged encysted, ameeboid, and ciliated cells, while their development and subsequent changes, their variations normal and pathological, in reality exhibit phases more or less distinct of the ancestral life- cycle.*~~

~~*viThe exainination of the precise modes of cell-division, particularly in the hands of botanists (see BroLocy, and summary in Sachs's Vorlesungen tiber Pflanzen Physiologic, 1883), are also constantly throwing the most interesting light upon the structure of the adult organism. Thus then, in our own day as in those of Bichat or Schwann, the labours of the histologist, when inspired by higher aims than that of the mere multiplication of descriptive detail, are of supreme morphological importance, and result in the demonstra- tion of a unity of organic structure deeper even than any which we owe to Linneus or Cuvier, Goethe or Geoffroy.*~~

~~*§ 4. Individuality.—Probably no subject in the whole range of biology has been more extensively discussed than that of the nature of organic individuality. The history of the controversy is of interest, since besides leading up to solid results it serves, perhaps better than any other case, to illustrate the slow emergence of the natural sciences from the influence of scholastic thought. Starting from the obvious unity and indivisibleness of Man and other higher animals, and adopting some definition such as that of Mirbel (exceptionally unmetaphysical, however), " Tout être organisé, complet dans ses parties, distinct et séparé des autres étres, est un individu," it was attempted times without number to discover the same conception elsewhere in nature, or rather to impose it upon all other beings, plants and animals alike. The results of different inquirers were of course utterly discrepant. It seemed easy and natural to identify a tree or herb corresponding to the individual animal, yet difficulties at once arose.*~~

~~*Many apparently distinct plants may arise from a common root, or a single plant may be idlecomposed into branches, twigs, shoots, buds, or even leaves, all*~~

~~*841*~~

~~*often capable of separate existence. These, again, are decompos- able into tissues and cells, the cells into nucleus, &c., and ultimately into protoplasmic molecules, these finally into atoms,—the inquiry thus passing outside organic nature altogether and meeting the old dispute as to the ultimate divisibility of matter. In short, as Haeckel remarks, scarcely any part of the plant can be named which has not been taken by some one for the individual. It is necessary, therefore, briefly to notice some of the principal works oe subject, and these may conveniently be taken in descending order.*~~

~~*While Cassini practically agreed with Mirbel in attempting to regard separate plants as individuals, the widest interpretation of the individual is that of Gallesio (1816), who proposed to regard as an individual the entire product of a single seed, alike whether this developed into a uni-axial plant extended continuously like a Banyan, or multiplied asexually by natural or artificial means like the Weeping-willow or the Canadian Pondweed, of each of which, on this view, there is only a single individual in Britain, happily discontinuous.*~~

~~*At once the oldest and most frequently maintained view is that which regards the bud or shoot consisting of a single axis with appendages as the plant-individual, of which the tree represents a colony, like a branched hydroid Polyp. This conception, often attributed to Aristotle, but apparently without foundation, appears distinctly in the writings of Hippocrates and Theophrastus,—the latter saying, " The bud grows on the tree like a plant in the ground." The aphorism of Linnzus, "Gemme totidem herbe," is well known ; and in this view C. F. Wolff and Humboldt concurred, while Erasmus Darwin supported it by an appeal to the facts of anatomy and development. 'The most influential advocate of the bud theory during the first half of the present century was, however, Du Petit-Thouars, who, although starting much as usual with a "' principe unique d'existence," supported his theory on extensive though largely incorrect*~~

~~*observations on stem structure and growth. For him the tree isa colony of phytons, each being a bud with its axillant leaf and fraction of the stem and root. Passing over numerous minor authors, we come to the central work of Alex. Braun (1853), in which, as Sachs has clearly pointed out, the illegitimate com- bination of Naturphilosophie with inductive morphology reaches its extreme. He reviews, however, all preceding theories, admits the difficulty of fixing upon any as final, since the plant, physio- logically considered, is rather a dividwum than an individuum, and proposes as a compromise, or indeed as a partial cutting of the knot, the adoption of the shoot as the morphological in ividual, comparable to an animal, especially because, unlike the cell, leaf, &c., it includes all the representative characters of the species. Darwin and Spencer on the whole also accept the bud or shoot as at any rate the most definite individual.*~~

~~*The theory of metamorphosis naturally led Goethe, Oken, and others to regard the leaf as the individual, while Johannes Miiller, Steenstrup, and others adopted the same view on various physio- logical grounds. Gaudichaud elaborated a theory intermediate between this view and that of Du Petit-Thouars, according to which the plant was built up of individuals, each consisting of a leaf with its subjacent internode of stem, which was regarded as the leaf-base, and this was supported by Edward Forbes and others, while the nominally converse view—that of the leaf as a mere outward ex- pansion of the stem-segment—was proposed by Hochstetter.*~~

~~*Though sundry attempts at identifying various tissues, such as the fibro-vascular bundles, as the constituent individuals may be passed over, those associated with the cell theory are of great importance. Schwann decided in favour of the cell and regarded the plant as a cell-community, in which the separate elements were like the bees of a swarm,—a view virtually concurred in in all essential respects by Schleiden, Virchow, and other founders of the cell theory. Yet, although the structure and functions of the plant are ultimately and exclusively cellular, it is impossible to ignore the fact that, save in the very lowest organisms, these are subordi- nated and differentiated into larger aggregates, and form virtually but the bricks of a building, and hence the later theories outlined above. Of attempts to*~~

~~*find the individual in the nucleus or the protoplasm granules it is of course unnecessary to speak further.*~~

~~*So far the theories of absolute individuality. The conception of relative individuality is well traced by Fisch upwards froin the more or less vague suggestions in the writings of Goethe, Roeper, and the elder De Candolle to its clear expression in Alphonse de Candolle and Schleiden, both of whom take the cell, the shoot, and the multi-axial plant as forming three successive and subordinated categories. Nagelitoo recognized not only the necessity of establish- ing such a series (cell, organ, bud, leafy axis, multi-axial plant) but the distinction between morphological and physiological: in- dividualities afterwards enunciated by Haeckel.*~~

~~*Passing over the difficulties which arise even among the Protozoa (see FoRAMINIFERA), we find that a similar controversy (fully chronicled in Haeckel's Kalksehwamme) has raged over the in- dividuality of Sponges. While the older observers were content to regard each sponge-mass as an individual, aviewin which Lieberkuhn*~~

~~*Vi 160*~~

~~*842*~~

~~*and other monographers substantially concurred, the application of the microscope Ted to the view suggested by James Clark, and still stoutly supported by Saville Kent, that the Sponge is a city of amceboid or infusorian individuals. Carter looked upon the separate ampullaceous sacs as the true individuals, while Schmidt, defining the individual by the possession of a single exhalent aperture, dis- tinguishes Sponges into solitary and social. Later, however, he terms them Zoa impersonalia.*~~

~~*For the higher animals the problem, though perhaps really even more difficult, is less prominent. As Haeckel points out, the earlier discussions and even the comparatively late essay of Johannes Miller take an almost purely psychological or at least a physiological point of view; and the morphological aspect of the inquiry only came forward when the study of much lower forms, such as Cestoid Worms (see PLATYHELMINTHES) or Siphonophores (see Hyprozoa), had raised the difficulties with which*~~

~~*botanists had so long been familiar. With the rapid progress of embryology, too, arose new problems ; and in 1842 Steenstrup introduced the conception of an "alternationof generations" as a mode of origin of distinct individuals by two methods, for him fundamentally similar, the sexual from im- pregnated females and the asexual from unimpregnated " nurses, "'— a view adopted by Edward Forbes and many other naturalists, but keenly criticized by Carpenter and Huxley. In Leuckart's remark- able essay on polymorphism (1853) the Siphonophora were analysed into colonies, and their varied organs shown to be morphologically equivalent, while the alternate generations of Steenstrup were reduced to a case of polymorphism in development. Leuckart further partly distinguished individuals of different orders, as well as between morphological and physiological individuals. ;*~~

~~*In 1852 Huxley proposed the view which he still substantially maintains (see BioLocy). Starting from such an undoubted homo- logy as that of the egg-producing process of Hydra with a free- swimming Medusoid, he points out that the title of individual, if applied to the latter, must logically be due to the former also, and avoids this confusion between organ and individual by defining the individual animal, as Gallesio had done the plant, as the entire product of an impregnated ovum,—the swarm of Aphides or free Meduse which in this way might belong to a single individual being termed Zooids.*~~

~~*In Carus's System of Animal Morphology (1853) another theory was propounded, but the problem then seems to have fallen into abeyance until 1865, when it formed the subject of a prolonged and fruitful discussion in the Principles of Biology. Adopting the cell (defined as an aggregate of the lowest order, itself formed of physio- logical units) as the morphological unit, Spencer points out that these may either exist independently, or gradually exhibit unions into aggregates of the second order, like the lower Alge, of which the individnality may be more or less pronounced. The union of such secondary aggregates or compound units into individuals of a yet higher order is then traced through such intermediate forms as are represented by the higher seaweeds or the Liverworts, from the thallus of which the axes and appendages of Monocotyledons and Dicotyledons are ingeniously derived. The shoot of a*~~

~~*flowering- plant is thus an aggregate of the third order ; it branches into an ageregate of the fourth or higher order, and finally as a tree "acquires a degree of composition too complex to be any longer defined." Proceeding to animals, the same method is applied. The Protozoa are aggregates of the first order. These, like plants, exhibit transitions, of which Radiolarians, Foraminifera, and Sponges are taken as examples, to such definite compound wholes as Hydra; and such secondary aggregates multiply by gemmation into permanent aggregates of the third order, which may exhibit all degrees of integration up to that of the Siphonophora, where the individualities of the Polyps are almost lost in that of the aggregate form. The whole series of articulated animals are next interpreted as more or less integrated aggregates of the third order, of which the lower Annelids are the less developed forms, the Arthropods the more highlyintegrated and individualized. Molluscs and Vertebrates are regarded as aggregates of the second order.*~~

~~*In 1866 appeared the latest morphological classic, the Generelle Morphologie of Haeckel. Here pure morphology is distinguished into two sub-sciences,—the first purely structural, teetology, which regards the organism as composed of organic individuals of different orders; the second essentially stereometric, promorphology. 'To tectology, defined as the science of organic individuality, a large section of the work is devoted. Dismissing the theory of absolute individuality as a metaphysical figment, and starting from the view of Schleiden, De Candolle, and Nageli of several successive categories of relative individuals, he distinguishes more clearly than heretofore the ee individual (or bion), characterized by definiteness and independence of function, from the morphological individual (or morphon), characterized similarly by definiteness of form ; of the latter he establishes six categories, as follows :—*~~

~~*1. Plastides (cytodes and cells), or elementary organisms.*~~

~~*2. Organs (cell-stocks or cell-fusions), simple or homoplastic or-*~~

~~*gans (tissues), or heteroplastic organs. Organ-systems, organ-apparatuses,*~~

~~*MORPHOLOGY*~~

~~*3. Antimeres (opposite or symmetrical or homotypic parts), ¢.g., rays of radiate animals, " halves of bilaterally symmetrical animals."*~~

~~*4. Metameres (successive or homodynamous parts), eg., stem- segments of Phanerogams, segments or zoonites of Annelids or Vertebrates.*~~

~~*5. Persone, shoots or buds of plants, polyps of Ccelenterates, &c., "individuals" in the narrowest sense among the higher animals.*~~

~~*6. Corms (stocks or colonies), ¢.g., trees, chains of Salpx, polyp- stocks, &c.*~~

~~*In his subsequent monograph on calcareous Sponges, and in a final paper, he somewhat modifies these categories by substituting one category of extreme comprehensiveness, that of the idorgan, in place of the three separate orders of organs, antimeres, and meta- meres, The idorgan (of course clearly distinguished from the physiological organ or biorgan) is finally defined as a morphological unit consisting of two or more plastids, which does not possess the positive character of the person or stock. These are distinguished into homoplasts or homo-organs and alloplasts or alloe-organs, the former including, as subdivisions, plastid-aggregates and plastid- fusions, the latter idomeres, antimeres, and metameres. The former definition of the term antimere, as denoting at once each separate ray of a radiate, or the right and left halves of a bilaterally sym- metrical animal, is corrected by terming each ray a paramere, and its symmetrical halves the antimeres, Thus an ordinary Medusoid has four parameres and eight antimeres, a Star-fish five and ten. The con- ception of the persona is largely modified, not only by withdrawing the comparison of the animal with the vegetable shoot and by omit- ting the antimere and metamere as necessary constituents, but by taking the central embryonic form of all the Metazoa—the gastrula (fig. 1) and its assumed ancestral representative, the gastreea—as the simplest and oldest form of per- sona, The different morphological stages to which it may attain are clas- sified into three series: (1) Monax- onial} inarticulate persons, 7.¢., uni- axial and unsegmented without anti- meres or metameres, as in Sponges, or lowest Hydroids; (2) Stauraxonial? inarticulate persons with antimeres, but without metameres, ¢.g., Coral, Medusa, Turbellarian, Trematode, Bry- ozoon ; (3) Stauraxonial articulate per- sons with antimeres and*~~

~~metameres, e.g.,Annelids, Arthropods, Vertebrates. The colonies of Protozoa are mere idor- gans. True corms, composed of united persone, occur only among Sponges, Hydroids, Siphonophores, Corals, Bry- _ outer and innerlayers,ectoderm ozoa, Tunicates, and Echinoderms, of @2dendoderm. (After Haeckel.) which the apparent parameres are regarded as highly centralized per- sone of a radially-budded worm colony; and these can be classified according to the morphological rank of their constituent persone. They usually arise by gemmation from a single persona, yet in Sponges and Corals occasionally by fusion of several originally distinct~~

~~ersons or corms. The theory of successive subordinate orders of~~

~~individuality being thus not only derived from historical criticism of previous theories but brought into conformity with the actual facts of development and descent,—various groups of organisms being referred to their several categories,—the remaining problem of tectology, that of the relation of the morphological to the physio- logical individuality, is finally discussed. Of the latter, three cate- gories are proposed :—(1) the " actual bion or complete physiological individual," this being the completely developed organic form which has reached the highest grade of morphological individuality proper to it as a representative of, ¢.g., its species ; (2) the 'virtual bion or potential physiological individual," including any incompletely developed form of the former from the ovum upwards ; and (3) the "partial bion or apparent physiological individual," such frag- ments of the actual or virtual bion as may possess temporary inde- pendence without reproducing the species—this latter category having, however, inferior importance.?~~

~~Haeckel's theory, indeed in its earlier form, has been adopted by Gegenbaur and other morphologists, also in its later form by Jager, who, however, rejects the category of idorgan on the ground of the general morphological principle that every natural body which carries on any dewtical changes with its environment becomes differentiated into more or less concentric layers ; but the subject, especially as far as animals are concerned, is again recently dis- cussed in a large work by Perrier. Starting from the cell or plastid, he terms a permanent colony a méride,~~

~~*and these may remain isolated like Sagitta or Rotifer, or may multiply by gemmation to i a*~~

~~*Fic. 1.—Gastrula in optical sec- tion, showing primitive opening and digestive cavity (blasto- pore and arch-enteron), as also*~~

~~*1 For explanation of these terms see § 5, Promorphology, p. 844.*~~

~~*2 For criticism of this theory on the ground of its making physiological de- pend on morphological individuality, see Fisch, Aufedhlung und Kritik der verschiedenen Ansichten tiber das pflanzliche Individuum, p. 11.*~~

~~*form higher aggregates which he terms zoides. Such zoides may be irregular, radiate, or linear aggregates, of which the two former classes especially are termed démes. The organ—Haeckel's idorgan—is excluded, since tissues and organs result from division of labour in the anatomical elements of the mérides, aud so have only a secondary individuality, "carefully to be distinguished from the individuality of those parts whose direct grouping has formed the organism, and which live still, or have lived, isolated from one another." Perrier further points out that undifferentiated colonies are sessile, as Sponges and Corals, while a free state of existence is associated with the concentration and integration of the colony into an individual of a higher order.*~~

~~*So far the various theories of the subject; detailed criticism is impossible, but some synthesis and reconciliation must be attempted. Starting from the cell as the morphological unit, we find these forming homogeneous aggregates in some Protozoa and in the early development of the ovum. But integration into a whole, not merely aggregation into a mass, is essential to the idea of individu- ality ; the earliest secondary unit, therefore, is the gastrula or méride. This stage is permanently represented by an unbranched Hydra or Sponge or by a Planarian. These secondary units may, however, form aggregates either irregular as in most Sponges, in- definitely branched as in the Hydroids and Actinozoa, or linear as in such Planariansas Catenula. Such aggregations, colonies, or demes, not*~~

~~*being aggregated, do not fully reach individuality of the third order, This is attained, however, for the branched series by such forms as Siphonophores among Hydrozoa, or Renilla or Pennatula among Actinozoa; for linear aggregates again by the higher Worms, and still more fully by Arthropods and Vertebrates. Aggregates of a yet higher order may occur, though rarely. A longitudinally dividing Nais or laterally branched Syllis are obviously aggregates of these tertiary units, which, on Haeckel's view, become integrated in the Echinoderm, which would thus reach a complete indivi- duality of the fourth order. A chain of Salpz or a colony of Pyro- soma exhibits an approximation to the same rank, which is more nearly obtained by a radiate group of Botryllus around their central cloaca, while the entire colony of such an Ascidian would represent the individual of the fifth order in its incipient and unintegrated state, —these and the preceding intermediate forms being, of course, readily intelligible, and indeed, as Spencer has shown, inevitable on the theory of evolution.*~~

~~*The exclusion of tissues and organs from rank in this series is thus seen to necessarily follow. Ectoderm and endoderm cannot exist alone; they and the organs into which they differentiate arise merely, as Jager expresses it, from that concentric lamination, or, with Perrier, from that polymorphism of the members of the colony, which is associated with organic and social existence. The idea of the antimere is omitted, as being essentially a promorpho- logical conception (for a Medusoid or a Star-fish, though of widely distinct order of individuality, are equally so divisible) ; that of the metamere is convenient to denote the secondary units of a linear tertiary individual ; the term persona, however, seems un- likely to survive, not only on account of its inseparable psycho-logical connotations, but because it has been somewhat vaguely applied alike to aggregates of the second and third order ; and the term colony, corm, or deme may indifferently be applied to those aggregates of primary, secondary, tertiary, or quaternary order which are not, however, integrated into a whole, and do not reach the full individuality of the next higher order. The term zooid is also objectionable as involving the idea of individualized organs, a view natural while the medusoid gonophores of a Hydrozoon were looked at as evolved of its homologue in Hydra, whereas the latter is really a degenerate form of the latter. Passing to the vegetable*~~

~~*world, here as before the cell is the unit of the first order, while aggregates representing almost every stage in the insensible evolu- tion of a secondary unit are far more abundant than among animals. Complete unity of the second order can hardly be allowed to the thallus, which Spencer proposes to compound and integrate into tertiary aggregates— the i pies ; as in animals the embryo- logical method is preferable, both as avoiding gratuitous hypothesis and as leading to direct results. Such a unit is clearly presented by the embryo of higher plants in which the cell-aggregate is at once differentiated into parts and integrated into a whole. Such an embryo possesses axis and appendages as when fully developed (fig. 2). The latter, however, being as organs mere lateral expan- sions of the concentric layers into which the plant embryo, like the animal, is differentiated, and so neither stages of evolution nor capable of separate existence, are not entitled to individual rank. The embryo, the bud, shoot, or uni-axial plant, all thus belong to the second order of individuality, like the Hydroid they resemble. Like the lower Ccelenterates, too, aggregates of such axes are formed by branching out from their low degree of integration. Such colonies can hardly be termed individuals of the third, much less of higher order, at least without somewhat abandoning that unity of treatment of plants and animals without which philosophi- cal biology disappears. Individuality of the second order is most fully reached by the flower,—the most highly differentiated and*~~

~~*integrated form of axes and appendages.*~~

~~*843*~~

~~*Such a simple inflores- cence as a raceme or umbel approximates to unity of the third order, towhich acomposite flower-head must be admitted to have attained, while a compound inflorescence is on the way to a yet higher stage.*~~

~~*If, as seems probable, a nomencla- ture be indispensable for clear ex- pression, it may be simply arranged in conformity with this view. Start- ing from the unit of the first order, the plastid or monad, and terming any undifferentiated aggregate ademe, we have a monad-deme integrating into a secondary unit or dyad, this rising through dyad-demes into a triad, this forming triad-demes, and these when differentiated becoming tetrads,*~~

~~*the Botryllus-colony with which the evolution of compound individuality terminates being a tetrad-deme. The separate living form, whether monad, dyad, triad, or tetrad, requires also some dis- tinguishing name, for which persona will probably ultimately be found most appropriate, since such usage is most in harmony with its inevi- table physiological and psychological connotations, while the genea- logical individual of Gallesio and Huxley,common also to all the cate- gories, may be designated with Haeckel the ovwm-product or ovwm- cycle, the complete series of forms needed to represent the species being the species-cycle (though this coincides with the former save in cases where the sexes are separate, or polymorphism occurs). For such a peculiar case as Diplozoon paradoxwm, where two separate forms of the same species coalesce, and still more for such heterogeneous individuality as that of a Lichen, where a composite unit arises from the union of two altogether distinct forms—Fungus and Alga,—yet additional categories and terms are required.'*~~

~~*§ 5. Promorphology.—Just as the physiologist constantly seeks to interpret the phenomena of function in terms of mechanical, physical, and chemical laws, so the morphologist is tempted to inquire whether organic as well as mineral forms are not alike reducible to simple mathematical law. And just as the crystallo- grapher constructs an ideally perfect mathematical form from an imperfect or fragmentary crystal, so the morphologist has frequently attempted to reduce the complex-curved surfaces of organic beings to definite mathematical expression.? Canon Moseley (Phil. T'rans., 1838) succeeded in showing, by a combination of measurement and mathematical analysis, that the curved surface of any turbinated or discoid shell might be considered as generated by the revolution, about the axis of the shell, of a curve, which continually varied its dimensions according to the law of the logarithmic spiral. For Goodsir this logarithmic spiral, now carved on his tomb, seemed a fundamental expression of organic curvature and the dawn of a new epoch in natural science—that of the mathematical investiga- tion of organic form—and his own elaborate measurements of the body, its organs, and even its component cells seemed to yield, now the triangle, and again the tetrahedron, as the fundamental form. But such supposed results, savouring more of the Natur- philosophie than of sober*~~

~~*mathematics, could only serve to dis- courage further inquiry and interest in that direction. Thus wo find that even the best treatises on botany and zoology abandon the subject, satisfied with merely contrasting the simple geometrical ground-forms of crystals with the highly curved and hopelessly complicated lines and surfaces of the organism.*~~

~~*But there are other considerations which lead up to a mathe- matical conception of organic form, those namely of symmetry and regularity. These, however, are usually but little developed, botanists since Schleiden contenting themselves with throwing organisms into three groups—first, absolute or regular ; second, regular and radiate ; third, symmetrical bilaterally or zygomorphic—the last being capable of division into two halves only in a single plane, the second in two or more planes, the first in none at all. Burmeister, and more fully Bronn, introduced the fundamental improvement of defining the mathematical forms they sought not by the surfaces but by axes and their poles; and Haeckel has developed the subject with an elaborateness of detail and nomen- clature which seems unfortunately to have impeded its study and acceptance, but of which the main results may, with slight varia- tions chiefly due to Jager (Lehrb. d. Zool., i. 283), be briefly out- lined.*~~

~~*A. ANAXONIA—forms destitute of axes, and consequently wholly irregular in form, ¢.g., Amcebe and many Sponges.*~~

~~*'B. AXONIA—forms with definite axes.*~~

~~*1G. 2.—Embryo of Dicotyledon (after Sachs), showing incipient axis and appendages, as also the three concentric embryonic layers.*~~

~~*1 See Haeckel, Gen. Morph. i., Kalkschwamme i., and Jena. Zettschr. xX. ; also Sachs, Geschichte d. Bot.; Fisch, Aufzdhlung u. Kritik, &c., Rostock, 1880; Perrier, Les Colonies Animales, 1882, as from these all other references can be obtained. ,*~~

~~*2 The sciences of organic and mineral form would thus (as Haeckel points out) become thoroughly analogous, for, as promorphology develops the crystallo- graphy of organic form, so mineralogy,in the study of such*~~

~~phenomena as those of pseudomorphism or of mineral development, becomes parallel to morphology;~~

~~844~~

~~I. HomAxonrA—all axes equal.~~

~~(a) Spheres, where an indefinite number of equal axes can be drawn through the middle point, ¢.g., Spherozoum. (b) Polyhedra, with a definite number of like axes. Of these aconsiderable number occur in nature, for example, many Radiolarians (fig. 8), pollen-grains, &c., and they are aaa classifiable by the ANS) number and regularity of their faces. GOO YS II. ProraxontA, where all the parts O) oS VO these we distinguish— SII) 1. Monaxonia, with not more than one CIO definite axis. Here are distinguished (a) those with similar Lae spheroid (Coccodiscus) and cylinder (Pyrosoma) SS OW} cone (Conulina). S CL 2. Stawraxonia, where, besides the p,4 3 — Radiolarian (Ethmo- main axes, a definite number of second- gphera), an irregular endo- ary axes are placed at right angles, and spheric polyhedron with equi- the stereometric ground- form becomes #ngular faces. Type — em guished (a) those with poles similar, Stawraxonia homopola, where the stereometric form is the double pyramid (fig.4), and (b) those with poles dissimilar, Stawraxonia hetero- pola, where the stereometric form is the single pyramid, and where we distin- apical, aboral, or anal pole. The bases of these may be either regular or irre- gular polygons, and thus a new classi- fication into Homostawra and Hetero- staura naturally arises. may have either an even or an odd number of sides, and thus among the * Homostaura we have even-sided and odd-sided, single and double pyramids. In those Homostaura with an even radial and inter-radial axes have simi- lar poles; but in the series with an odd number of sides, like most Echi- noderms, each of the transverse axes is half radial and half semi-radial (fig. 5). mids the twelve-sided pollen-grain of as example of Stauraxonia ho- Passiflora (fig. 4) may be taken as an mopola. Ground-form a regu- example, having the ground-form of lr double pyramid of six sides. the hexagonal system, the hexagonal dodecahedron. Of the equal even-sided single pyramids (Heteropola homostaura), Alcyonium, amples of the eight-sided, six-sided, and four-sided pyramids, while those with an odd~~

~~number of sides may be illustrated by eo or Primula with five sides, and the flower of Lily or Rush with three In the highest and most complicated group, the Heterostaura, the basal poly- gon is no longer regular but amphithect (duplOnxros = double-edged). Such a 2 polygon has an even number of sides, and yyg 5,~~

~~are arranged round a main axis, and of ISI~~

~~and (b) those with dissimilar poles, ¢ a pyramid. Here, again, may be distin- —_ guish a basal, usually oral, pole from an~~

~~The simpler group, the Homostaura, number of sides, such as Meduse, the Of the group of regular double pyra- p44 pollenof Passion Flower, Geryonia, Aurelia may be taken as ex- sides, can be divided into symmetrical halves~~

~~—Starfish, an example s : ; of Heteropola homostaura. by each of two planes intersecting at right Ground-form a regular single~~

~~augles in the middle point,and thus divid- PYT#mid of five sides.~~

~~ing the whole figure into four congruent polygons. The longer of these axes may be termed lateral, the shorter the equatorial or dorso- ventral ; and these two axes, along with the main axes, always define the three dimensions of space. Ctenophores (fig. 6) furnish examples of eight-sided amphithect pyramids, some Madrepore Corals of six- sided, Crucifers, some Medusx, and Cestodes of four-sided amphi- thect pyramids.~~

~~_ In these forms the poles of the dorso-ventral and lateral axes are similar, and, as in the preceding Monaxonia and Stauraxonia, the centre of the body is defined by a line; and they are therefore termed Centraxonia, while the Protaxonia, which are defined by their central point, are called Centrostigma. There are, however, other forms, and these the most complicated, in which the poles of at least the dorso-ventral axis are unlike, and in which the body is thus defined not with reference to a line but to a median plane, and these have accordingly received the name of Centropipeda. Their ground-form is a polygon with an even number of sides, which can only be divided into two symmetrical halves~~

~~*by the one median plane. It can be obtained by halving an amphithect pyramid of double the number of sides, and is consequently termed a half amphithect pyramid (fig. 7). The whole amphithect pyramid may be most con-*~~

~~*venicntly obtained by the reduplication of the ground-form as if in a mirror. Of half amphithect pyramids there are again two forms, termed by Haeckel Amphipleura and Zygoplewra, the former in- cluding the " bilaterally symmetrical " or irregularly radiate forms of previous authors, such as Spatangus, Viola, Orchis, while the Zygopleura include forms bilaterally symmetrical in the strictest sense, in which not more than two radial planes, and these at right*~~

~~*Fig. 6. Fig. 7. Fia. a (Eucharis). Ground-form an eight-sided double amphithect Fi> 7.—Spatangus. Ground-form a fiye-sided half amphithect pyramid. angles to each other, are present. The stereometric ground-form isa half rhombic pyramid. Haeckel again divides these, according to the number of antimeres, into Tetraplewra and Dipleura,*~~

~~*Promorphology has thus shown that the reigning dogma of the fundamental difference of organic and mineral forms is false, and that a crystallography of organic forms is possible,—the form of the cell or the cell-aggregate differing from the crystal merely by its more or less viscous state of aggregation, its inherited peculi- arities, and its greater adaptability to the environment. The classification into bilateral and radiate forms which usually does duty for more precise promorphological conceptions must be aban- doned as hopelessly confusing essentially different forms, or at least must be rigidly restricted,—the term radial to regular and double pyramids, the term bilateral to the Centropipeda if not indeed to dipleural forms. Similarly, the topographical and relative terms, anterior and posterior, upper and under, horizontal and vertical, must be superseded by the terms above applied to the axes and their poles, oral and aboral, dorsal and ventral, right and left.*~~

~~*§ 6. Nature of Morphological Changes.—The main forms of organic structure being analysed and classified and their stage of individu- ality*~~

being ascertained, the question next arises, by what morpho- logical changes have they arisen, and into what categories can these modes of differentiation be grouped? They at first sight seem innumerable, yet in reality are few. Goethe somewhat vaguely generalized them for the flower as ascending and descending meta- morphosis, expansion and contraction of organs, &c. ; but the first attempt at careful enumeration seems to be that of Auguste de St- Hilaire, who recognized defects of development, adherences, excesses of production or "dédoublements," metamorphosis and displace- ment of organs. Subsequent authors have variously treated the subject ; thus Asa Gray enumerates as modifications of the flower — coalescence, adnation, irregularity, abortion, non-alternation or anteposition, multiplication, enation, unusual development of the axis, and other morphological modifications connected with fertili- zation. These are obviously too numerous, as may best be shown by a single comparison with the view of an animal morphologist. Thus Huxley, in discussing the arrangement of the Vertebrata, recognizes only three processes of modification, not only in the ancestral evolution of the Equide, but in the individual develop- ment of animals generally ; these are "(1) excess of development of some parts in relation to others, (2) partial or complete suppres- sion of certain parts, (3) coalescence of parts originally distinct." It is probable that this " threefold law of evolution" may include all observed cases of change, even in the flower ; thus Chorisis and Peloria may be regarded as peculiar forms of excess, while displace- ment is probably in all cases only apparent, and really due to adhesion or coalescence (see Brouoey, vol. iii. p. 681 sg.).

§ 7. Nature of Morphological Correspondence — Categories of Homology.— To indicate all the steps by which the idea of mor- phological has been distinguished from that of physiological resemblance would be to examine the whole history of morphology; it must suffice to discuss the terminology of the subject which has, as ever, served not only as an index but as an engine of progress. For these two distinct forms of resemblance the terms homology and analogy gradually became specialized, aud were finally estab- lished and clearly defined by Owen in 1843,—" the former as the same organ in different animals under every variety of form and function (e.g., fore-limbs of Draco volans and wings of Bird); the second as a part or organ in one animal which has the same function

~~1 Compare A. de St-Hilaire, Morphologie; Gray, Manual, p. 179 (1858); Huxley, Proc. Zool. Society, p. 619, Lond., 1880.~~

~~AP Ook, Prada © i QeG Y~~

~~as another part or organ in a different animal (¢.g., parachute of Draco and wings of Bird)." He further distinguishes three kinds of homology : —(1) special, being "that above defined, namely, the correspondence of a part or organ determined by its relative position and connexions with a part or organ in a different animal, the determination of which homology indicates that such animals are constituted on a common type," e.g., basilar process of human occipital with basi-occipital of fish ; (2) general, that "higher relation in which a part or series of parts stands to the fundamental or general type, involving a knowledge of the type on which the group in question is constituted," eg., the same human bone and centrum of the last cranial vertcbra ; (3) serial homology, "repre-sentative or repetitive relation in the segments of the same skeleton "~~

~~(demonstrated when general and special homologies have been'~~

~~determined); thus usually the basi-occipital and basi-sphenoid are "homotypes." These terms were henceforth accepted by naturalists; but the criterion of analogy and homology became for Agassiz and other embryologists developmental as well as comparative, reference to the ideal archetype becoming less and less frequent. Passing over the discussions of Agassiz and Bronn, of which the latter is criticized and partly incorporated by Haeckel, we find the last-named (1) placing serial under general homology ; (2) erecting categories of homology partially corre- sponding to those of individuality, —(a) homotypy (of antimeres), hence distinct from that of Owen, (b) homodynamy (of metameres), (c) homonomy (of parts arranged on transverse axes) ; (3) defining special homology in terms of identity of embryonic origin. In 1870 this latter point was more fully insisted upon by Ray Lan- kester, who, decomposing it into two others, proposed to supersede the term homology by homogeny, being the correspondence of common descent, and homoplasy, denoting any superinduced correspondence of position and structure in parts embryonically distinct. Thus, the fore-limb of a mammal is homogenous with that of a bird, but the right and left ventricles of the heart in both are~~

~~only homoplastic, these having arisen independently since the divergence of both groups from a uni-ventriculate ancestor in relation to similarity of physiological needs. Mivart uext pro- als to retain homology as a generic term, with homogeny and~~

~~omoplasy as two species under it, and carried the analysis into pet detail, distinguishing at first twenty-five, but later fifteen, inds of correspondence :—(1) parts similar in function only, ¢.g., legs of Lizard and Lobster ; (2) parts sunilar both in function and relative position, wings of Bat and Bird; (3) parts of common descent, fore-limb of HIorse and Rhinoceros ; (4) parts of similar embryonic origin, whatever be their racial genetic relations, ¢.9., occipitals of Panther and Perch ; (5) parts of dissimilar embryonic origin, whatever be their racial genetic relations, ¢.g., legs of Diptera; (6, 7, 8, 9, 10) laterally, vertically, serially, antero- posteriorly, and radially homologous parts ; (11) subordinate serial homologues, ¢.g., joints of antenna; (12 and 13) secondary and tertiary subordinate serial homologues ; (14 and 15) special and general homologies (in Owen's sense). In his Kalkschwamme HIaeckel proposed to term homophyly the truly phylogenetic homology in opposition to homomorphy, to which geuealogic basis is wanting ; and finally Von Jhering has published a repetition of Lankester's view.~~

~~In this discussion, as in that of individuality, it is evident that we are dealing with numerous logical cross-divisions largely corre- sponding, no doubt, to the complex web of inter-relations presented by nature, yet remaining in need of disentanglement. Though we must set aside analogies of functional activity, the resemblances in external shape or geometric ground-form which correspond to these, c.g., HIydrozoa and Bryozoa, Fishes and Cetaceans, mimetic organisms, are nevertheless, as our historic survey showed, the first which attract attention ; and these homoplastic or homomor- phic forms, as HIaeckel has shown, come as fairly within the province of the promorphologist as do isomorphic crystals within that of his an-organological colleague the erystallographer. HIere, too, would be considered "radial," " vertical," "lateral" homology, "homotypy of antimeres," and all questions of symmetry, for which HIaeckel's nomenclature of homaxonial, homopolic, &c., is distinctly preferable. Entering the field of tectology or morphology~~

~~*in the ordinary sense, we may next consider whether two organisms compared are of the same category of individuality—are homocategoric ; and under this serial homology, for instance, would come as a minor division, the correspondence between the units or parts of units of a linear dyad-deme or triad. From a third point of view, that of the embryologist, we trace the development of each multi- cellular organism (1) from the embryonic layers and systems into which the secondary unit (gastrula or plant embryo) differentiates, (2) from a unit-deme or unit of the inferior order or orders of individuality. The parts and units thus recognized by ontogenetic research, respectively or successively homodermic, homosystemic, and homodemic, may then conveniently be termed (indifferently save for considerations of priority) either " specially homologous," "homogenous," "" homophylic," or " homogenetic," in the language of phylogenetic theory. These three great classes of morphological*~~

~~*correspondence—promorphological, tectological, and embryological—may or may not coincide. But the completest homology, in which all forms of resemblance unite and from which they differentiate, is that expressed in the cell theory, or rather in that ovum theory which underlies it, and which Agassiz therefore not unjustly regarded as " the greatest discovery in the natural sciences of modern times." }*~~

~~*§ 8. Results to Taxonomy.—The advance and modification of classifications which follow each morphological advance have been pointed out above, and taxonomy thus never quite reaches a level with morphological knowledge. That it requires much reform at present is obvious. Although the dogma of the constancy of species is no longer maintained, its results survive, and perhaps a majority of groups have still to be remonographed in the generalizing spirit with which Haeckel has treated the calcareous Sponges, or Car- penter, Parker, and Brady the Foraminifera. The union of the Protophyta and Protozoa into the Protista (a generalization which research is constantly confirming) involves a final abandonment of the medieval figment of three kingdoms of nature, and a revival of the Organisata of Linneus. Physiological prejudices, too,*~~

~~*are not completely expelled ; hence, for instancc, the constant attempts to separate Animalia and Vegetabilia by physiological character- istics, which would be irrelevant even if in themselves valid. A strictly morphological standard must be applied to the construction of classifications and the pruning of genealogical trees ; organisms are " higher" or 'lower " not according to their stage of evolution in beauty or intelligence but (as Huxley has most clearly pointed out in the essay referred to under § 6) to the degree of morphological differentiation by excess, suppression, or coalescence which they exhibit. Thus the supreme position of Man in classification must be abandoned, since the Primates are simply one of the less special- ized, z.e., lower orders of Mammals, and the Mammals themselves are on the whole distinctly less specialized than the Birds, or per- haps even some of the higher Reptiles. The morphological import- ance of the 'vegetable kingdom" sinks when tested by such a standard. The Cormophytes are all nothing more than an axis with appendages, and as such may fairly be compared, not with the entire animal assemblage, but merely to that group which is homomorphic (or rather isomorphic) with them as reducible to axis and appendages too. Such a group we find in the Hydrome- duse, which we can easily model in imagination into all the special- izations of the floral world, a single genus like Clava or Tubularia affording a starting-point for countless 'natural orders."*~~

~~*§ 9. Relation of Morphology to Physiology.—Although the pure morphologist investigates laws of structure only, and rightly elimi- nates the conceptions of life, environment, and function, yet if kept permanently apart from physiological considerations his labours would be incomplete and his results inexplicable, if not indeed almost illusory. For, however deeply one penetrates through super- ficial and adaptive characters to an apparently permanent and fundamental morphological type, this is itself but an earlier adapta- tion, showing the fading traces of an earlier adaptation still. And, conversely, the most superficial of adaptive characters, if trans- mitted to numerous varying descendants, may attain high morpho- logical importance. The morphological aspect of an organism is merely statical, and, like that of an eddy or a vortex-ring, becomes only truly intelligible when viewed in its dynamic aspect; and thus, though the demonstration of the structural unity of the organic*~~

world is in itself a great result, yet the desire of a deeper explanation of form as determined by function and environment is thereby rendered all the more pressing. An example may be taken from botany. Thus Airy beautifully explains the pheno- mena of phyllotaxis as adaptations to bud-life. Or again, in a common flower, say the Dead-nettle, all the details of form are in- deed described by the systematist with equal minuteness (a pro- ceeding which, except in so far as serving for specific identification, is of no further scientific value), but receive separate interpretation from the two distinct standpoints of the toa leet and physio- logist. The latter, to whom form is important merely so far as explanatory of function, shows how the tough persistent calyx is protective against various dangers, how the corolla serves to lure the fertilizing bees, which find in its lip a landing stage and in each lateral process a hold-fast, while its Head at once protects the pollen against rain and determines the curvature of the stamens, — this curvature, as well as their didynamous arrangement, median position, and linearly arranged anther-lobes being all adaptations through the medium of the bee's hairy back to meet the similarly placed stigma of another flower, — and so on. The morphologist, on the other hand, analyses the calyx into its five constituent sepals, reduces the corolla to a regular pentamerous type, ascertains the position of the four stamens, and asserts the loss of a fifth posterior one, finds the ovary to be primitively two-celled, and thus reaches a schematic conception of a not archetypal but ancestral form. This ground-form itself, however, suggests a new train of considera-

1 For bibliography see Lankester, An. Mag. Nat. Hist., 1870, or Geddes, Jena. Zeitschr., 1883.

this primeval flower from a somewhat fern-like Cryptogam, of which the foliage-leaves, the envelopes of the spore-bearing leaves, the

micro- and macrosporangiosphores had become permanently differ- entiated in ascending order; of which the microspores, doubtless through the intervention of a spore-eating insect, had come to ger- minate upon the macrosporangium instead of upon the ground ; and in which this variation (evidently advantageous, since making ferti- lization at once

~~more certain and more economical) was aided to per- petuate itself by the contemporaneous evolution of those floral colours which are nascent even among the Thallophytes. And thus the mor- phologist, though excluding teleological and functional econsidera- tions fron his anatomical researches, has yet a physiological ideal, and enters sooner or later upon a new serics of inquiries—those of the interdependence of structure and function. Milne-Edwards's law of the physiological division of labour, Dohrn's principle of functional change, the speculations of Claude Bernard, Spencer, and Hacckel, experimental inquiries such as those of Semper, where organisms are subjected to special modifications of their environment, and the like, are all contributions to this newest and evolutionary department of morphology. Such ideas are even applied to the study of cellular morphology. Thus, Spencer points out the relation~~

~~MORRIS, Ropert (1734-1806), American statesman, was born at Liverpool, England, on 20th January 1734. At the age of thirteen he accompanied his father to America, and after serving in a counting-house at Philadelphia he became in 1754 partner in the business. From 1776 to 1778 he was delegate to the Continental Congress, and he was one of those who signed the Declaration of Inde- pendence. During the war he served on the committee of ways and means, and freely placed his immense wealth at the disposal of his country, his personal credit being at one time pledged to the amount of $1,400,000. He also in 1780 established the Bank of North America, and until 1784 acted as superintendent of finance. In 1786 he be- came a member of the Pennsylvania legislature, and he was one of the convention which framed the Federal constitu- tion in 1787. From 1786 to 1795 he was United States senator. On account of the disastrous result of some of his financial speculations Morris passed the later years of his life in a debt prison. He died at Philadelphia, 8th May 1806. Robert Morris had as his assistant-superin- tendent of finance Gouverneur Morris (1752-1816), with whom he engaged also in several mercantile enterprises. Gouverneur Morris, who rose to some eminence as a states- man and orator, was more fortunate in his speculations than his colleague, and latterly became celebrated for the munificence of his hospitality. He was the author of a series of essays on currency and finance, which are included in the Life, Correspondence, and Writings of Gouverneur Morris, 3 vols., edited by Jared Sparks, 1832.~~

~~*MORRIS-DANCE, or Morrice-DANCE, a performance for a long time associated with certain festive seasons in England, but now wholly discontinued. The origin of the name is doubtful ; and whether the dance was indigenous to England, or was introduced by John of Gaunt from Spain, or was borrowed from the French or Flemings, must be left to conjecture. That, as the name would seem to indicate, it was a development of the morisco- dance or Spanish fandango is not, however, invalidated by the fact that the morisco was for one person only, for, although latterly the morris-dance was represented by various characters, uniformity in this respect was not always observed, and the elements of the dance may have been borrowed from the morisco. There are few references to it earlier than the reign of Henry VII., but it would appear that in the reign of Henry VIII. it was an almost essential part of the principal village festivities. Although allusions to it in poems are very frequent in the 16th and 17th centuries, nothing more than fragmentary descriptions have been handed down to us, so that an accurate know- ledge of its characteristic features at even any particular period is impossible. In earlier times it was usually*~~

~~*of the shapes of cells to their environments; James ingeniously explains the oecurrence of cell-division by the rapid inerease of bulk over surface which the growth of a solid involves, and the corresponding inerease of difficulty of nutrition ; and the writer has attempted to explain the forms of free and united eells as specializations of a (protomyxoid) cyele in which variations of func- tional aetivity are accompanied by the assumption of corresponding forms, the whole series of changes depending npon the properties of protoplasin under the variations in the supply of energy from the environment. Rauber, His, and others have even attempted to explain embryological phenomena in terms of the simplest cellular mechanies, but as yet such speculations are somewhat erude.!*~~

~~*$10. Orientation and Subdivisions of Morphology.—The position of morphology in the classification of the sciences and the proper mode of subdividing it cannot be diseussed within these limits, although the latter*~~

~~*is especially the subject of much disagreement. The position above assumed, that of including under morphology the whole statical aspects of the organic world, is that of Haeckel, Spencer, Huxley, and most recent animal morphologists ; botanists frequently, however, still use the term under its earlier and more limited significance." (P. GE.)*~~

~~*danced by five men and a boy dressed in a girl's habit, who was called Maid Marian. There were also two musicians ; and, at least sometimes, one of the dancers, more gaily and richly dressed than the others, acted as "foreman of the morris." The garments of the dancers were ornamented with bells tuned to different notes so as to sound inharmony.? Robin Hood, Friar Tuck, and Little John were characters extraneous to the original dance, and were introduced when it came to be associated with the May-games. At Betley, in Staffordshire, there is a painted window of the time of Henry VIIL, or earlier, portraying the morris,—the characters including Maid Marian, Friar Tuck, the hobby-horse, the piper, the tabourer, the fool, and five other persons apparently representing various ranks or callings. The hobby-horse, which, latterly at least, was one of the principal characters of the dance, consisted of a wooden figure attached to the person of the actor, who was covered with trappings reaching to the ground, so as to conceal his feet. The morris-dance was abolished along with the May-games and other festivities by the Puritans, and, although revived at the Restoration, the pageant gradually degenerated in character and declined in importance. Maid Marian latterly was personated by a clown who was called Malkin. Though the dance is now wholly discontinued, it is probable that some of the original elements of it still survive in a country-dance which, under the same name, is still popular in the north of England. See Douce, " Dissertations on the Ancient Morris Dance," in his Illustrations of Shakspeare (1839); Strutt, Sports and Pastimes of the People of England ; and Brand, Popular Antiquities (1849). MORRISON, Rosert (1782-1834), the first Protestant missionary to China, was born of Scottish parents at Morpeth, Northumberland, on 5th January 1782. After receiving an elementary education in Newcastle, he was apprenticed to a lastmaker, but his spare hours were devoted to studies connected with theology, and in 1803 he was received into the Independent academy at Hoxton. In the following year he offered his services to the London Missionary Society, by which,*~~

~~after he had attended the mission college of Gosport and studied Chinese under a native teacher, he was sent to Canton in 1807. He was appointed translator to the East India Company's factory~~

~~1 See, Bronoey, vol. iii. p. 681 sg. ; Spencer, Principles of Biol. ; Haeckel, Gen. Morph. ; C. Bernard, Phénoménes d. 1. vie communs aux an. et aux vég.; Semper, Animal Life (1880); James, Edin. Med. Journal, 1883 ; Geddes, Zool. Anzeiger, 1883 ; Rauber, Morph. Jahrb., vi. ; Haeckel, Kalkschwamme, i. p. 481, &c.~~

~~2 See Haeckel, Gen. Morph., i. Introduction ; also Comte, Phil. Pos., iii. (1851-1854) ; Spencer, Prin. of Biol., i. ; Gegenbaur, Comp. Anat. ; Asa Gray, Manual; and the article BroLoay ; also Geddes, Jena Zeitsehr., 1883.~~

~~3 See Sir Walter Scott's Fair Maid of Perth, note on a dress pre- served by the glover incorporation of Perth.~~

~~there in 1808, and, in addition to his official duties con- nected with this post, laboured with intense application at a Chinese Grammar and a translation of the New Testament, both of which were published in 1814. In 1817 he published A View of China for Philological Pur- poses, and his translation of the entire Bible was completed~~

~~instantaneously any distance along a wire; and if it were interrupted a spark would appear. It now occurred to him that the spark might represent a part of speech, either a letter or a number; the absence of the spark, another part; and the duration of its absence, or of the spark itself, a third, so that an alphabet might be easily formed, and words indicated.~~

~~in the following year. His next enterprise was the estab- lishment of an Anglo-Chinese college at Malacca for "the reciprocal cultivation of Chinese and European literature," which was opened in 1820. In 1821 his Chinese Dictionary was published by the East India Company at an~~

~~*expense of £15,000. Leaving China at the close of 1823 he spent two years in England, where he advocated Chinese missions before large and enthusiastic audiences, and was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society. Returning to China in 1826 he set himself to promote education and to prepare a Chinese commentary on the Bible and other Christian literature. He died at Canton on lst August 1834. His Memoirs, compiled by his widow, were published in 1839 (2 vols. 8vo, London).*~~

~~*MORRISTOWN, a city of the United States, county seat of Morris county, New Jersey, lies on the Whippany river, 81 miles from New York by the Morris and Essex division of the Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western Rail- road. It was twice the headquarters of the American army during the War of Independence, and Washington's residence, owned by the Washington Association, assisted by the State, is a half-mile to the east. On Whatnong mountain, 3 miles distant, stands the State insane asylum, usually called Morristown Asylum, a vast granite building 1243 feet long, erected in 1874-1875, and capable of ac- commodating 1000 patients. The population in 1880 was 5418.*~~

~~*MORSE, Samuet Finney BREESE (1791-1872), artist and inventor, was born at the foot of Breed's Hill, Charles- town, Massachusetts, on 27th April 1791. His father was the Rev, Jedediah Morse, D.D., the author of Morse's Geography. At the age of fourteen Samuel Morse entered Yale College ; under the instruction of Professors Day and Silliman he received the first impulse towards those elec- trical studies with which his name is mainly identified. In 1811 Morse, whose tastes during his early years led him more strongly towards art than towards science, be- came the pupil of Washington Allston, then the greatest of American artists, and accompanied his master to England, where he remained four years. His success at this period was considerable; but on his return to America in 1815 he failed to obtain commissions for historical paintings, and after working on portraits for two years at Charleston, S.C., he removed first to Washington and afterwards to Albany, finally settling in New York. In 1825 he laid the foundations of the National Academy of Design, and was elected its first president, an office which he filled until 1845. The year 1827 marks the revival of Morse's interest in electricity. It was at that time that he learned from Professor J. F. Dana of Columbia College the ele-*~~

~~*mentary facts of electromagnetism. As yet, however, he was devoted to his art, and in 1829 he again went to Europe to study the old masters.*~~

~~*The year of his return, 1832, may be said to close the period of his artistic, and to open that of his scientific life. On board the packet-ship "Sully," which sailed from Havre Ist October 1832, while discussing one day with his fellow-passengers the properties of the electromagnet, he was led to remark: "If the presence of electricity can be made visible in any part of the circuit, I see no reason why intelligence may not be transmitted by electricity." Tt was not a novel proposition, but the process of formu-lating it started in his mind a train of new and momentous ideas. 'The current of electricity, he knew, would pass*~~

~~*In a few days he had*~~

~~*completed rough drafts of the necessary apparatus, which he displayed to his fellow-passengers.!_ During the twelve years that followed Morse was engaged in a painful struggle to perfect his invention and secure for it a proper presenta- tion to the public. mission him to paint one of the great historical pictures in the rotunda of the Capitol seemed to destroy all his old artistic ambition. prise, making his own models, moulds, and castings, deny- ing himself the common necessaries of life and encountering embarrassments and delays of the most disheartening kind. It was not until 1836 that he completed any apparatus that would work, his original idea having been supple- mented by his discovery in 1835 of the "relay," by means of which the electric current might be reinforced or renewed where it became weak through distance from its source. Finally, on 2d September 1837, the instrument was exhibited to a few friends at his room in the university building, New York, where a circuit of 1700 feet of copper wire had been set up, with such satisfactory results as to awaken the practical interest of the Messrs Vail, iron and brass workers in New Jersey, who thenceforth became asso- ciated with Morse in his undertaking. Morse's petition for a patent was dated 28th September 1837, and was soon followed by a petition to Congress for an appro-priation to defray the expense of subjecting the telegraph*~~

~~*The refusal of the Government to com-*~~

~~*In poverty he pursued his new enter-*~~

~~*to actual experiment over a length sufficient to establish its feasibility and demonstrate its value. The committee on commerce, to whom the petition was referred, reported favourably. Congress, however, adjourned without making the appropriation, and meanwhile Morse sailed for Europe to take out patents there. The trip was not a success. In England his application was refused, on the alleged ground that his invention had been already published ; and, while he obtained a patent in France, it was subse- quently appropriated by the French Government without compensation to himself. His negotiations also with Russia proved futile, and after a year's absence he returned to New York. On 23d February 1843 Congress passed the long-delayed appropriation, steps were at once taken to construct a telegraph from Baltimore to Washington, and on the 24th of May 1844 it was used for the first time. Morse's patents were already secured to him and his asso- ciates, and companies were soon formed for the erection of telegraph lines all over the United States. In the year 1847 Morse was compelled to defend his invention in the courts, and successfully vindicated his claim to be called the original inventor of the electromagnetic recording tele- graph. Thenceforward Morse's life was spent in witnessing the growth of his enterprise and in gathering the honours which an appreciative public bestowed upon him, As years went by he received from the various foreign Govern- ments their highest distinctions, while in 1858 the repre- sentatives of Austria, Belgium, France, the Netherlands, Piedmont, Russia, the Holy See, Sweden, Tuscany, and Turkey appropriated the sum of 400,000 francs in recog- nition of the use of his instruments in those countries. In the preparations for laying the first Atlantic cable he took an active part, though the attempt of 1857, in which he personally engaged, was not successful. He died 2d April*~~

~~*1 Five years later the captain of the ship identified under oath Morse's completed instrument with that which Morse had explained on board the "Sully" in 1882.*~~

~~*1872, at New York, where his statue in bronze now stands in the Central Park. His instrument and alphabet are now used on 95 per cent. of the telegraph wires of the world. (GE-ee)*~~

~~*MORSHANSK, a district town of Russia, situated in the government of Tamboff, 58 miles (187 miles by rail) to the north of the capital of the province on the Tsna river, a tributary of the Oka, and on the railway between Moscow and Orenburg. The village Morsha was founded only in the middle of the 17th century, and received municipal institutions in 1779 ; but a hundred years ago it was already a wealthy town, owing to its situation ina most fertile district. Since it was brought into railway communication with Riazhsk (on the railway between Moscow and Riazan) it has acquired still more importance, and has become the chief centre for trade in wheat raised in the governments of Tamboff, Penza, Saratoff, and in the eastern districts of the government of Riazan. Merchants from Moscow, Yaroslav, Vladimir, St Petersburg, and the Baltic ports come to Morshansk to make large purchases of grain, flour, hemp-seed, tallow, and potash. These are sent, either to the Shilovskaya loading-place, or by rail to Moscow. There are in Morshansk several steam flour- mills, distilleries, and large store-houses for grain; the town, though built of wood, is cleaner than most of the towns of the black-earth region. Morshansk has also some importance for the import of manufactured ware brought from the north and sent thence to the villages of the neigh- bouring districts. Population, 20,000.*~~

~~*MORTALITY TABLES. See INsuRANcE, vol. xili. p. 169 sq.*~~

~~*MORTGAGE. The general object of mortgage is to secure a money debt by making it a charge on land, so that, if the debt be not paid by a time agreed upon between the parties, the creditor may sell the land and pay himself out of the proceeds. In English law this is done by a conveyance of the land in absolute terms to the creditor, subject only to its being defeated if the debt should be paid at the time fixed—an arrangement to which the law has attached peculiar incidents designed to carry out its real object. An absolute conveyance, however, is by no means essential to the purposes of mortgage.*~~

~~*The history of mortgage transactions in Roman law shows three well-marked stages. In the beginning the estate was conveyed absolutely to the creditor, who made a covenant (fiducia) to reconvey it when the debt should be paid. All the interest, however, in the meantime passed from the debtor to the creditor, and should the latter refuse to reconvey there was no remedy to the original owner except a personal action. In the second stage (that of pignus) the property did not pass to the creditor ; he merely received possession of the thing pledged, together with certain rights of sale, &c., in the event of payment not being made at the time appointed. Lastly, without part- ing with the possession even of the pledge the debtor could create a lien or charge (hypotheca) over it in favour of the creditor, who acquired thereby a right on failure of payment to follow the thing by real action against the possessor, whosoever he might be, and to repay himself from the proceeds of his sale.*~~

~~*The mortgage of English law is the result of two dis- tinct influences, Its origin and form belong to the common law; the restrictions by which it is made to serve the purpose of a security only, and nothing more, belong to the courts of equity. In the eye of the common law the mortgagee was the owner of the estate conveyed in the mortgage; in equity the mortgager remains the real owner, and the mortgagee is merely an encumbrancer. A, the owner of land in freehold, conveys to B and his heirs, with a proviso that on repayment of money lent by B to A, on*~~

~~*a future day, with interest until payment, B or his heirs will reconvey the estate to A and his heirs, and that, until default be made in payment, A and his heirs may hold without interruption from B and his heirs. This is a common mortgage of land, and at law, after failure of payment, the land belonged absolutely to the mortgagee, while in the meantime, before payment, the legal estate was considered to be vested in him, subject only to being defeated by payment at the proper time. The Court of Chancery first interfered in the reign of James I. to decree a redemption after forfeiture, and a case in the reign of Charles I. decides that payment after forfeiture has the same effect as payment before. The right of the mortgager to redeem his estate after it has been forfeited, according to the terms of the deed, is called his equity of redemption. No agreement between the parties was suffered to oust the jurisdiction of the court, or to deprive the debtor of his equity of redemption. And this equity, at first regarded as a mere right of the debtor, became established in course of time as an estate in land which descended to the heirs of the mortgager. On the other hand, the interest of the mortgagee is part of his personal estate, and passes to his executor and not to his heir. In spite of the terms of the mortgage, the owner of the land is still the owner, and the mortgagee is a creditor for the money he advanced and the interest thereon. It may be a question whether a given deed is a conveyance or a mortgage, and the court, in deciding, will look at all the circumstances of the case, and will treat it as a mortgage when it was the real intention of the parties that it should operate as a security only. Thus, if the price was grossly inadequate, if the purchaser was not let into immediate possession, if he accounted for the rents to the grantor, retaining an amount equivalent to interest, if the expense of the deed was borne by the grantor, there would be reason to believe that the conveyance was only meant to be a mort- gage. And "once a mortgage, always a mortgage;" no subsequent agreements can change its character.*~~

~~*A mortgagee may, however, on default of payment file a bill of foreclosure requiring the mortgager to pay the amount of the debt with interests or costs by an appointed day, or submit to be deprived of his equity of redemption. The effect of failure to pay by the time appointed would be to make the mortgagee absolute owner of the estate ; but the court in any*~~

~~*foreclosure suit may, at the request of either side, order a sale instead of a foreclosure. And a power of sale is now implied as one of the incidents of the mortgage, unless forbidden or varied by express des- tination. The mortgagee is entitled to retain out of the proceeds of the sale the amount of his principal, interest, and costs, the surplus belonging to the mortgager. A mortgager cannot require the creditor to receive payment before the time appointed in the deed; and, on default of payment at the appointed time, he must give the creditor six months' notice of his intention to pay off the mortgage, so that the creditor may have time "to look out for a fresh security for his money."*~~

~~*When the same land is successively mortgaged to different persons, their rights take priority according to their chrono- logical order. But the operation of equitable doctrines in the formation of the law of mortgage leads to an im- portant modification of this rule. Of the successive mort- gagees, the first only takes the legal estate, and this, according to the maxim of the Court of Chancery, will turn the scale when there is an equality of equitable rights between two contracting parties. Thus, if the third mort- gagee had no notice at the time of making his advance of the existence of the second mortgagee, the equities of the two claimants are supposed to be equal, and if nothing else intervened priority of time would decide the order of*~~

~~*their rights. But if the third mortgagee gets an assign- ment of the first mortgage, he can tack his third mortgage to the first, and so postpone the second mortgagee. And if the first mortgagee himself makes an additional advance after the date of the second mortgage, but without notice of it, his whole debt will take precedence of the second mortgagee. A similar result of equitable rules is seen in the consolidation of securities. Two separate estates, mortgaged at different times and for different sums of money by the same mortgager to the same mortgagee, are regarded as consolidated, so that the whole of the land becomes security for the whole of the money, and the owner cannot redeem either mortgage without redeeming the other. So that, as Mr Justice Williams reasons, no person can safely lend money on a second mortgage, for, in addition to the risk of a third*~~

~~*mortgagee tacking, there is the danger that, if the mortgager should have mortgaged another estate for more than its value, the holder of the deficient security may buy in the first mortgage, consoli- date it with his own, and exclude the second mortgagee. An equitable mortgage is constituted simply by the deposit of title-deeds in security for money advanced. The enactment of the Statute of Frauds that no action shall be brought on "any contract or sale of lands," &c., or any interests in or concerning them unless the agreement be in writing and signed by the party to be charged, has been cited as incompatible with the recognition of equitable mortgages, but it is argued by Lord Abinger that the Act was never meant to affect such a transaction. 'The deeds which are the evidence of title could not be recovered in an action at law, and, if they were claimed in equity, the court would require the claimant to do equity by repaying the money borrowed on the deposit. Any subsequent legal mortgagee, having notice of the deposit, will be post- poned to the equitable mortgagee, and when the legal mortgagee has not inquired as to the title-deeds the court will impute to him such knowledge as he would have acquired if he had made inquiry. As to mortgages of personal property see PLEDGE. United States.—In the United States there is great diversity in the extent to which equitable principles have been formally substi- tuted for the rules of the common law in dealing with mortgages. Washburn (Law of Real Property, vol. ii.) arranges the States into three "pretty well-defined classes." In the first, the mortgage deed is held to createa seizin of and an estate in the premiscs, with all its common law incideuts, to be enforced if need be by eject- ment. In the second, the mortgagee's rights are limited to such as the rules of equity prescribe, and may not be enforced by a suit at law. In the third, the mortgagee's interest is not deemed an estate at all, but is here only to be enforced by the sale of the pre- mises as a means of paying the debt. In the first class come Massachusetts, Maine, Connecticut, New Hampshire, Rhode Island, Vermont, Indiana, Missouri, North Carolina, Mississippi, Minnesota ; in the second, Iowa, Illinois, Pennsylvania, Kentucky, Ohio, Wisconsin, and Texas ; in the third, California, Georgia, and New York, to which may be added Oregon. (E. R.) » MORTIFICATION, a term used in surgery signifying 2 local death. Any cause which interferes with the blood-supply of a portion of the body will, if sufficiently pro- longed or sufficiently severe, give rise to mortification. In some cases the death may*~~

~~be preceded by inflammation ; in others, as in old people with diseased vessels, the part may die in consequence simply of insufficient blood-supply without any previous inflammation. The part is said to mortify ; the process is termed gangrene ; the dead part is called a slough. A severe injury may end in mortifica- tion, Extreme heat as in severe burns, or extreme cold as in frost-bite, may give rise to the condition. Those parts of the body farthest from the centre of the circula- tion are most liable to mortification. Frost-bite, for ex- ample, may attack the toes or fingers as well as those parts which are most exposed to the cold, more particu- larly the point of the nose or the ears. The part affected~~

~~becomes pale, bloodless, cold, and' insensible. point to attend to is to restore the circulation gradually, using gentle friction. fire, or if any hot applications are used, then a rapid re-~~

~~followed by mortification.~~

~~849~~

~~The great~~

~~If the person is brought before a~~

~~action may issué in a severe inflammation, which may be Chilblain is a mild form of frost-bite occurring in young people with sluggish circula- tions, very often caused by sitting down before a strong fire with cold feet; any one suffering from cold feet or hands should take plenty of exercise, and if after a return from a sharp walk the feet remain cold the heat should be restored by rubbing with a rough towel.~~

~~MORTMAIN, Statutes or. The object and effect of these enactments are treated in the articles Cuarrry and CorPoRATION (q.v.). The following is a list of the Mort- main Acts :—~~

~~9 Henry III. c. 36 (Magna Charta); 7 Edward I. st. 2, ¢. 1 (De Religiosis) ; 18 Edward I. c. 32; 13 Edward I. ¢. 415 18 Ed- ward I. st. 1, c. 3; 27 Edward I. st. 2; 34 Edward I. st. 3; 18 Edward III. st. 3, c. 3; 15 Richard II. c. 5; 21 Henry VIII. c. 6, s. 5; 23 Henry VIII. c. 10; 1 and 2 Philip and~~

~~*Mary, c. 8, s. 51; 35 Elizabeth, c. 4; 21 James I. c. 1; 13 and 14 Charles II. ¢. 6, s. 10; 29 Charles II. c. 8; 7 and 8 William III. c. 37; 9 George II.*~~

~~*ce. 36; 43 George III. c. 108; 9 George IV. c. 85; and 2 and 3 William IV. c. 115.*~~

~~*MORTON, James Dovenas, fourth earl of (1530-1581), regent of Scotland, second son of Sir George Douglas of Pittendriech, was born at Dalkeith in 1530, Having married Elizabeth, daughter of the third earl of Morton, he through her succeeded in 1558 to the title and estates of his father-in-law. After the return of Queen Mary in 1561 he was chosen a privy councillor, and in 1563 he became lord high chancellor. Though his sympathies were Protestant, he took no part in the combination of Protestant barons in 1565, but he headed the armed force of 150 men who took possession of Holyrood Palace to effect the assas- sination of Rizzio, and it was to his house that the leading conspirators adjourned while a messenger was sent to obtain Mary's signature to the "bond of security." The queen, before complying with the request, escaped to Dunbar, and on her return to Edinburgh with an escort of 2000 men Morton and the other leaders fled to England. After her marriage with Bothwell, Morton returned, and with 600 men appeared before Borthwick Castle, where the queen, in dread of a rising, had taken refuge. He was present at the remarkable conference at Carberry Hill, and he also took an active part in obtaining the consent of the queen at Lochleven to an abdication. Thereupon he was reappointed lord high chancellor, and also succeeded Bothwell as lord high admiral. On the death of the earl of Mar he became regent (October 1572), Through his persistence in recovering the crown jewels from the countess of Argyll, widow of the earl of Moray, Morton awakened the bitter animosity of Argyll and Athole, who persuaded the young king James VI. to assume the government. Morton deemed it prudent to resign, and for a time retired to Lochleven, but shortly afterwards, with the assistance of his nephew, the earl of Mar, he obtained possession of Stirling Castle, where the king was residing, and thus for a time recovered his old influence. Suddenly, however, he was accused by James Stewart, earl of Arran, of having taken part in the murder of Darnley, the father of the king, and being tried by a jury of*~~

~~*sixteen peers, most of whom were his enemies, was condemned to death and be- headed on 2d June 1581.*~~

~~*MORVEAU. See Guyton DE MoRvVEAU.*~~

~~*MOSAIC (late Greek Yijpwous, from jos, a small stone; also povcetor, z.e., refined, delicate work ; hence the Latin opus musivum) is the fitting together of many, generally small, pieces of marble, opaque glass, coloured clays, or other substances, so as to form a pattern; the*~~

~~*design may be of various degrees of elaboration, from the simplest, almost monochromatic, geometrical pattern to the most elaborate picture, with figure-subjects represented in colours of countless gradations.*~~

~~*The earliest existing specimens of mosaic belong to one of the less important branches of the art — namely, the ornamentation on a small scale of jewellery, ivory thrones, and other furniture, or more rarely of some elaborate archi- tectural ornament. Most of this earliest sort of mosaic resembles in execution what are called clotsonnée enamels. In the Louvre and in the British Museum are preserved some very beautiful ivory carvings in low relief, some from Nineveh and others from Egypt, in which figures of deities, ornaments formed of the lotus and papyrus plants, and royal cartouches are enriched by small pieces of glass or lapis-lazuli and other gem-like stones, which are let into holes made in the ivory. Each minute piece is separated from the next by a thin wall or cloison of ivory, about as thick as cardboard, which thus forms a white outline, and sets off the brilliance of the coloured stones. The favourite pattern in this sort of work for decorating the larger sur- faces appears to have been suggested by the feathers on a bird's wing. See Ivory, vol. xiii. pl. vii. fig. 3.*~~

~~*Recent excavations at Tel al-Y4hudiya in Lower Egypt have brought to light some mosaics on a larger scale, but treated in the same way. These are caps of columns, wall tiles, and other objects, either of white*~~

~~*limestone or earthen- ware, in which designs, chiefly some forms of the papyrus, are formed by brilliantly-coloured bits of glass or enamelled earthenware, let into a sinking in the tile or column. This form of mosaic was employed by the Greeks: the Erechtheum at Athens, built in the middle of the 5th century B.c., had the bases of some of its white marble columns ornamented with a plait-like design, in which pieces of coloured glass were inserted to emphasize the main lines of the pattern.*~~

~~*Another, quite different sort of mosaic was known to the Egyptians of the Ptolemaic and Roman periods. This is made entirely of glass, and is extremely minute. The finest known specimen is in the British Museum: it is a small tablet about three-eighths of an inch square, apparently the bezel of a ring, on which is represented the sacred hawk,—every feather on the bird's wing being produced with a great number of colours and tints, each quite dis- tinct, and so minute that a strong magnifying glass is required to distinguish its details.*~~

~~*The way in which this wonderful little mosaic was pro- duced is extremely ingenious. Numbers of long sticks of various-coloured glass were arranged in such a way that their ends produced the figure of the hawk ; other sticks of blue glass were placed all round so as to form the ground. The whole bundle of sticks of glass when looked at endwise now presented the figure of the hawk with a blue background, immensely larger than it afterwards be- came. 'The bundle was then heated till the sticks melted together, and the whole thick rod, softened by fire, was then drawn out to a greatly-diminished thickness. In this process the relative positions of the sticks of coloured glass forming the design were not altered. A slice of the rod was then cut off, and its faces polished,—the design, much reduced in size, of course being equally visible at both sides of the slice ; and thus the microscopic minute- ness of the mosaic was produced, with astonishing delicacy and refinement; many slices, each showing the same mosaic, could be cut from the same rod.*~~

~~*The more important use of mosaic has been on a large scale either for pavements or for walls and vaulted ceil- ings. Mosaic for these purposes has by many writers, both ancient and modern, been divided on various systems into classes; perhapsthe simplest classification is the following:—*~~

~~*MOSATIC*~~

~~*I. For Pavements :—(a) Tesselated, in which the design is formed of small cubes, generally of marble, more rarely of glass or clay; (6) Sectile, formed of larger pieces of marble, shaped and cut so as to fit accurately one with another. Il. For Walls and Vaults:—Fictile or vermicu- lated ; pieces of opaque glass, in small cubes, arranged so as to form complicated pictures.*~~

~~*This classification is not altogether satisfactory, more than one method often being employed in the same mosaic ; as, ¢.g., in the "opus Alexandrinum" of medieval writers, which is often partly tesselated and partly sectile.*~~

~~*Until Roman times we know but little of these kinds of mosaic. There is some evidence (in Pliny and other writers) to show that elaborate mosaic pavements, Ac6o- atpwrov or AvGoAdynpa, were made by the Greeks in the 4th century B.c., or even earlier; but most of the nu- merous fine specimens of tesselated work still existing in Greece, such as those at Sparta and Athens, must be re- ferred to the time of the Roman occupation. The best examples of Hellenic mosaic are some pavements dis- covered during the recent excavations at Olympia (see fig. 1 and Ausgrabungen zu Olympia, 1877-82).*~~

~~*Among the Romans the use of mosaic, both of marble and opaque glass, was very extensive. According to Pliny (.N., xxxvi. 25), they derived this art from the Greeks, but not until the time of the Third Punic War, 146 B.c., while glass mosaics for walls, '"vitree parietes," were a recent invention in his time. Many of these have been found at Pompeii; most commonly they are used to decorate niches for fountains or statuettes, Judging from the description given by Vitruvius (vii. 1), and an examina- tion of numerous specimens of Roman tesselated mosaics,*~~

~~*ax*~~

~~*Fra. 1.—Greek Pavement from the Temple of Zeus at Olympia.*~~

~~*the process of manufacture was the following. The earth was first carefully rammed down to a firm and even surface , on this was laid a thick bed of stones, dry rubbish, and lime, called "rudus," from 6 to 9 inches deep, and above this another layer, 4 to 6 inches thick, called '" nucleus," of one part of lime to three of pounded brick, mixed with water ; on this, while still soft, the pattern could be sketched out with a wooden or metal point, and the tesseree or small bits of marble stuck into it, with their smoothest side upper- most. Lime, pounded white marble, and water were then mixed to the consistency of cream, forming a very hard- setting cement, called "marmoratum." This cement, while fluid, was poured over the marble surface, and well brushed into all the interstices between the tesserae, When the*~~

~~*MOSAIC*~~

~~*concrete and cement were both set, the surface of the pave- ment was rubbed down and polished. This kind of mosaic was largely used for floors of hypocausts ; the concrete bed was then supported on large tiles resting on numbers of short pillars,*~~

~~*If used for upper floors very strong joists were re- quired, and both Pliny (xxxvi. 25) and Vitruvius (vii. 1) recommend a double layer of boards, one crossing the other, on which the concrete and cement bedding was to be laid.*~~

~~*The usual Roman pavement was made of pieces of marble, averaging from a half to a quarter of an inch square, but rather irregular in shape. A few other, but quite exceptional, kinds of mosaic pavements have been found, such as that at the Isola Farnese, 9 miles from Rome, made of tile-like slabs of green glass, and a fine '"'sectile" pavement on the Palatine Hill, made of various-shaped pieces of glass, in black, white, and deep yellow. In some cases—e.g., in the " House of the Faun" at Pompeii—glass tesscre in small quantities have been mixed with the marble ones, for the sake of greater brilliance of colour. Pompeii is especially rich in its mosaics both on floor and walls, almost every house having at least its vestibule paved in this way.*~~

~~*In addition to graceful flowing patterns and geometrical de- signs, picture-like subjects of great elaboration frequently occur: of these the most important is the large and minutely-executed scene of the battle of Issus, found in the " House of the Faun." It is of special value as being the chief classical historical picture still existing. It is a well-designed though somewhat crowded com- position, representing the moment of Alexander's victorious charge against the cavalry of Darius, The expression of the faces and the characteristic dresses of the Greeks and Persians are repre- sented with great skill (see fig. 2). The tessere, as was always the case in this sort of work, arc not all the same size, the smallest (only about one-tenth of an inch square) being reserved for the faces, where greatest refinement of detail was required. This was a floor-mosaic, though generally these minutely-exccuted works were affixed to walls.*~~

~~*The most skilfully-executed of all existing mosaics of this pictorial kind is that known as "' Pliny's Doves," found in Hadrian's villa at Tivoli, and now in the Capitoline Museum. It may possibly be the one so highly praised by Pliny (xxxvi. 25) as the work of Sosus, for, although he describes it as being at Pergamum, yet it was a common practice with the Romans to transport these mosaics from one place to another, and this very celebrated one may well have been brought to Tivoli to adorn the emperor's villa. It is treated in a very realistic way: the light on the gold bowl, the plumage of the doves, and especially the reflexion in the water of the drinking dove, are represented with wonderful skill. It is, in fact, far too pictorial, and, like the late mosaics in St Peter's, Rome, is more remarkable for its technical skill than for any real artistic merit. This excessive realism, produced with great difficulty and cost, is a not uncommon fault of the more elaborate Roman mosaics, and was the inevitable result of the luxury and ostentation of imperial Rome, which made art the bond-slave of the wealthy, rather than the free and natural expression of a whole people, as it was among the earlier Greeks. om*~~

~~*Another interesting mosaic from the wall of a house at Pompeii, of extremely delicate work, is a rehearsal scene in a Greek theatre, where the choregus is instructing the actors: it is specially re- markable from its being signed as the work of Dioscorides of Samos. Other figure-subjects*~~

~~are not uncommon, such as various representations of the victory of Theseus over the Minotaur, others of Achilles in Scyros, many hunting seenes, and the like, ;~~

~~Throughout England, Germany, France, Spain, Asia Minor, and Northern Africa in no way have signs of Roman occupation been left so clearly and in so con- spicuous a form as by the numerous large and generally well-preserved mosaic pavements which have at various times been discovered in all these countries. In many cases, long after all traces of the walls of the buildings have disappeared, owing to their being dug up and re- moved for building purposes, the mosaics still remain to testify of the artistic power and mechanical skill of the Roman colonists.~~

~~Few countries are richer than England in these remains ; the great pavements of York, Woodchester, Cirencester, and many other places are as elaborate in design and as~~

~~851~~

~~skilfully executed as any that now exist even in Rome itself. In whatever country these mosaics are found, their style and method of treatment are always much the same; the materials only of which the tessere are made vary according to the stone or marble supplied by each country. In England, for instance, limestone or chalk often takes the place of the white marble so common in Italian and North African mosaics; while, instead of red marble, a fine sort of burnt clay or red sandstone is gene- rally used ; other makeshifts had to be resorted to, and many of the Anglo-Roman mosaics are made entirely with- out marble. It is perhaps partly owing to the great wealth of Northern Africa in marbles of many colours and of varying shades that the finest of all Roman mosaics have been found in Algeria and Tunis, especially those~~

~~\ My KO \ AMX A\N SRC~~

~~"ey Geta ae Sig y Ill aa Ay~~

~~I)~~

S=

i

ub Ik mn tly

wn

Fic. 2.—Part of a Persian's Head from the Battle of Issus ; full size.

from Carthage, some of which have been brought to the British Museum. See Archeologia, vol. xxxvili. p. 202. The range of colour in the marble tesserz is very great, and is made use of with wonderful taste and skill: there are three or four different shades of red, and an equal number of yellows and greens, the last colour in all its tints being almost peculiar to this part of Africa, and one of the most pleasant and harmonious in almost any com- bination. Deep black, browns, and bluish-greys are also abundant. 'The white marble which forms the ground of nearly all the designs is often not pure white, but slightly striated with grey, giving great softness and beauty of texture to the surface, and doing away with too great monotony of tone. The Roman practice, common to all their mosaics, of not fitting the tessere quite closely together, but allowing the cement joints to show freely, was also of great value in giving effect to the general texture of the surface—a point quite forgotten by some later mosaic-workers, who thought that the closer their tesserae were fitted together the better the mosaic would be. This remark does not apply to sectile mosaic, in which sufficient variety can be given by the markings and veins in each piece of marble. To return to the mosaics from Carthage, they are no less excellent in design than in the richness and beauty of their materials. Large spaces

852

are filled by grand sweeping curves of acanthus and other leaves, drawn with wonderful boldness and freedom of hand, and varied with great wealth of invention. With- out the use of very small tesserae, much richness of effect is given by gradations of tints, suggesting light and shade, without a painful attempt to represent actual relief. The colours of

~~*the marbles used here and elsewhere by the Romans are so quiet and harmonious that it would have been almost impossible to produce with them a harsh or glaring design, and when used with the skill and strong artistic feeling of the mosaic-workers at Carthage the result is a real masterpiece of decorative design, In Rome, and in the Roman colonies of Europe, this kind of marble tesselated mosaic was largely produced, with but little alteration in style or method of treatment, till the 4th century. In Syria and Asia Minor the art survived some centuries later.*~~

~~*Perhaps the latest existing example in Rome is that which deco- rates the vault of the ambulatory of the circular church of S. Costanza, built by Constantine the Great (320), outside the walls of Rome. This very interesting mosaic might from its style and materials have been executed in the 1st century, and is cqual in beauty to any work of the kind in Italy. It shows no trace what- ever of the Byzantine influence which, in the next century, intro- duced into Italy a novel style of mosaic, in materials of the most glittering splendour. These S. Costanza mosaics are almost unique in Italy as an application of the old classical marble mosaic to the decoration of a Otinatan church. On the main compartment of the vault the surface is covered by vine branches, laden with grapes, twining in graceful curves over the space. In the centre is a large medallion with life-sized male bust, and at the lower part are vintage scenes—oxen carts bringing the grapes, and boys treading them in avat. Other more geometrical designs, of circles framing busts and full-length figures, with graceful borders, cover other parts of the vault. Farther east this classical style of mosaic appears to have lasted till the 6th century. At Kabr-Hiram, near Tyre, M. Renan discovered among the ruins of a small three-apsed Christian church a fine mosaic pavement, covering the nave and aisles, thoroughly classical in style. The design, consisting of circles enclosing figures emblematic of the seasons, the months, and the winds, is almost the same as that of some mosaics discovered on the site of the Roman Italica near Seville, and others at Ephesus and Halicarnassus in Asia Minor. No trace of other than classical influence is visible, and yet it is pretty clear, from the evidence of an inscription, inlaid among the marble tessere, that the date of this pavement is not earlier than the latter part of the 6th century. A very similar mosaic, of about the same date, was discovered at Neby Yunas, near Sidon.*~~

~~*Medizval Mosaics.—These may be divided into four principal classes :—(1) those used to decorate walls and vaults, made of glass cubes ; (2) those for pavements, made of marble, partly in large shaped pieces, and partly in small tesseree ; (3) glass in small pieces, either rectangular or triangular, used to enrich marble pulpits, columns, and other architectural features ; (4) wood mosaics.*~~

~~*1. The wall mosaics were, in their origin, purely Byzan- tine, and appear to date from the beginning of the 5th century. They are made of coloured glass, rendered opaque by the addition of oxide of tin. The melted glass was cast into flat slabs, generally about half an inch thick, and then broken into small cubes. Every possible colour and grada- tion of tint was produced by the medieval glassmakers. Tesseree of gold (which were very largely used) and of silver were made thus :—the metal leaf was spread over one of the glass slabs, the colour of which did not matter, as it was hidden by the gold or silver; over this metal- coated slab a skin of colourless glass was fused, so as to protect the metal leaf from injury or tarnish; and then the slab was broken up into cubes, the y¥jdor ypiocor of Byzantine writers.*~~

~~*The method of putting together the mosaic was much the same as that employed by the Romans in their tesse- lated pavements. A thick coat of cement was applied to the wall or vault, the outline indicated with a metal point, and the cubes stuck one by one into the cement while it*~~

~~*wo Ss 2°10*~~

~~*was yet soft,—the main difference being that no rubbing down and polishing were required, the faces of the glass tessere showing the natural surface of the fracture, which was not quite level, and by this slight inequality of surface great additional lustre and brilliance of effect were given to the whole picture.*~~

~~*Owing to the intense conservatism of Byzantine art, no regular stages of progression can be traced in this class of mosaic. Some of the 5th century mosaics at Ravenna are, in every way, as fine as those of the 12th, and it was not till the end of the 13th century that any important change in style took place, when Cimabue, and more especially his pupils Jacopo da*~~

~~*Turrita and Taddeo Gaddi, applied their increased knowledge of the human form and of the harmonies of colour to the production of the most beau- tiful of all mosaics, such as those in the apse of 8. Maria Maggiore in Rome. It must not, however, be supposed that during all this time (from the 5th to the 14th century) one steady level of excellence was kept up. The mosaics of the 9th century are inferior in drawing and general treatment to those both of the earlier and later time, while in Italy at least this art was almost entirely extinct during the 10th and 11th centuries. Extreme splendour of colour and jewel-like brilliance combined with the most stately grandeur of form are the main characteristic of this sort of decoration. Its most frequent application is to the sanc- tuary arch and apse of the early basilicas.*~~

~~*A "majesty," or colossal central figure of Christ with saints standing on each side, is the most frequent motive. In many cases, especially in the 5th and 6th centuries, Christ was represented as a lamb, to whom the twelve apostles, in the form of sheep, are paying adoration. Christ, the Good Shepherd, is sometimes depicted asa beardless youth, seated among a circle of sheep—the treatment of the motive being obviously taken from pagan representations of Orpheus playing to the beasts. The tomb of Galla Placidia has a good example of this subject, with much of the old Roman grace in the drawing and composition. Frequently the Virgin Mary, or the patron saint of the church, occupies the central space in the apse, with ranges of other saints on each side.*~~

~~*The "Doom," or Last Judgment, is a favourite subject for domes and sanctuary arches ; the Florence baptistery has one of the grandest mosaic pictures of this subject, executed in the 13th century. 'The earlier baptisteries usually have the scene of Christ's baptism,—the river Jordan being sometimes personified in a very classical manner, as an old man with flowing beard, holding an urn from which a stream pours forth. S. Vitale at Ravenna has in the sanctuary a very interesting representation of Justinian and his empress Theo- dora (see fig. 8), attended by a numerous suite of courtiers and ladies ; these mosaics are certainly of the 6th century, and may be contemporary with Justinian, though the fact that he and Theodora are each represented with a circular nimbus appears to indicate that they were not then alive. Scenes from both Old*~~

~~*and New Testaments or the lives of the saints are also represented in almost endless variety,—generally on the walls of the body of the church, in square-shaped pictures, arranged in one or more tiers over the nave columns or arcade.*~~

~~*In mosaics of the best periods the treatment of the forms and draperies is broad and simple, a just amount of relief being expressed by delicate gradations of tints. In mosaics of the 9th century the drawing is very awkward, and the folds of the robes are rudely expressed in outline, with no suggestion of light and shade.*~~

~~*A further application of this work was to the decoration of broad bands over the columns of the nave, as at 8. Maria Maggiore in Rome, 5th century, and in the two churches of §. Apollinare at Ravenna, 6th century. In some cases almost the whole interior of the church was encrusted in this magnificent way, as at Monreale Cathedral, the Capella Palatina of Palermo, and §. Mark's at Venice, the magnificence of which no words can describe; it is quite unrivalled by that of any other buildings in the world. See MoNREALE.*~~

~~*In these churches the mosaics cover soffits and angles entirely, and give the effect of a mass of solid gold and colour producing the utmost conceivable splendour of*~~

~~*MOSAIC*~~

~~*decoration.! In many cases vaulted ceilings were covered with these mosaics, as the tomb of Galla Placidia, 450 A.D., and the two baptisteries at Ravenna, 5th and 6th centuries. For exteriors, the large use of mosaic was usually confined to the west facade, as at 5S. Miniato, Florence, 8. Maria Maggiore, Rome, and 8. Mark's, Venice. In almost all cases the figures are represented on a gold ground, and gold is freely used in the dresses and ornaments—rich jewels and embroidery being represented in gold, silver, sparkling reds, blues, and other colours, so as to give the utmost splendour of effect to the figures and their drapery.*~~

~~*The revival of the art of painting in Italy and the*~~

~~*Fia. 8.—Mosaic of Theodora and attendants, from S. Vitale, Ravenna; over life-size.*~~

~~*'ntroduction of fresco work in the 14th century gave the deathblow to the true art of wall-mosaics. Though at first the simple and archaic style of Cimabue and his*~~

~~*ee*~~

~~*i Unfortunately the world-wide fame of 8. Mark's and the other great churches of Italy has subjected these extraordinary works to the fatal process of " restoration," and wherever any sign of decay in the cement backing (the tessere themselves are quite indestructible) has given the least excuse the "restorers" have destroyed whole masses of ancient work, and supplied its place with worthless modern copies. The mosaics of the 8. Mark's baptistery, and of the apses at 8. Miniato, at Pisa, and many other places have in this way been wantonly renewed within the last few years.*~~

~~*853*~~

~~*pupils Jacopo da Turrita, Giotto, and Taddeo Gaddi was equally applicable to painting or mosaic, yet soon the development of art into greater realism and complexity required a method of expression unfettered by the necessl- ties and canons of mosaic-work. Pietro Cavallini, a Roman artist, was one of the last who worked according to the old traditions. His mosaic of the birth of the Virgin in S. Maria in Cosmedin, Rome, executed about the middle of the 14th century, is not without merit, though his superior knowledge of form has only caused his composi- tion to be somewhat feeble and insipid compared with the works of the earlier artists. Even in the 15th century a few good mosaics were produced at Venice and elsewhere. Since then many large pictures have been copied in glass mosaic, generally attempts to imitate oil paintings, executed with great skill and wonderful patience, but all utterly worthless as works of art, merely costly monuments of human folly and misapplied labour. The mosaics from Titian's pictures on the west end of S. Mark's at Venice, Raphael's in the Chigi Chapel in 8. Maria del Popolo, and many large pictures in §. Peter's in Rome, are the most striking examples of these.*~~

~~*The following list, in chronological order, comprises a selection*~~

~~*from among the most important medizval glass wall-mosaics during the period when mosaic-working was a real art :—*~~

~~*5th Century.*~~

~~*Ravenna. Orthodox Baptistery—vault. Tomb of Galla Placidia—vault, 450. Archbishop's Chapel—vault. Rome. S. Paolo fuori le mura—triumphal arch. 8. Maria Maggiore—square pictures over nave columns, and triumphal arch. Milan. S. Ambrogio, Chapel of 8. Satiro—vault. Fundi. Cathedral—apse. Nola. Cathedral—apse. 6th Century. Ravenna. Arian Baptistery—vault. 8. Apollinare Nuovo—apse and nave, with 9th century additions. 3. Vitale—apse and whole sanctuary, ctrea 547. 8. Apollinare in Classe—apse and nave, 549. Rome. 88. Cosmas and Damian—apse. Milan. 8. Lorenzo, Chapel of 8. Aquilinus—vault. Constantinople. 8. Sophia—walls and vault, circa 550. : Thessalonica. Church of St George—apse, dc. ; and 8. Sophia—dome and apse. Trebizond. 8. Sophia—apse. 7th Century. Rome. 8. Agnese fuori le mura—apse, 626. 8. Teodoro. Jerusalem, "Dome of the Rock "—arches of ambulatory, 68S. 8th Century. Rome. Baptistery of 8. Giovanni in Laterano.*~~

~~*8S. Nereus and Achilles. Mosque of Al-Aksa—on dome. Chapel of the Transfiguration.*~~

~~*9th Century.*~~

~~*Jerusalem. Mount Sinai.*~~

~~*Rome. S. Cecilia in Trastevere—apse S. Marco—apse. F S. Maria della Navicella—apse, and "Chapel of the Column.' S. Prassede—triumphal arch. S. Pudenziana, 884. Milan. §. Ambrogio—apse, 832. 10th Century. Cordova. Mihrab (sanctuary) of Mosque. llth Century. Jerusalem. "Dome of the Rack "—base of cupola, 1027. Constantinople. Church of 8. Saviour—walls and domes. 12th Century. Venice. S. Mark's—narthex, apse, and walls of nave and aisles. Caput. Cathedral—apse. Torcello. Cathedral—apse. Murano. Cathedral—apse. Salerno. Cathedral—apse.*~~

~~*Palermo. Capella Palatina, begun 1132—the whole walls. Church of La Martorana—vault. Monreale. Cathedral—the whole walls, 1170-90. Bethlehem. Churcl of the Nativity, 1169. Cefalu. Cathedral—apse, 1148. Rome. §. Clemente—apse. S. Francesca Romana—apse. S. Maria in Trastevere—apse. 13th Century. Florence. Baptistery vault, begun ¢. 1225 by Fra Jacopo. 8. Miniato—apse and west front. Rome. 8. Paolo fuori le mura—apse.*~~

~~*S. Clemente—triumphal arch, 1297. ;*~~

~~*§. Giovanni in Laterano—apse by Jacopo da Turrita, 1290.*~~

~~*§. Maria Maggiore—apse and west end by Jacopo da Turrita, 1292-1299, and Taddeo Gaddi.*~~

~~*854*~~

~~*14th Century.*~~

~~*Florence. Baptistery, finished by Andrea Weie Pisa. Cathedral—east apse by Cimabue, 1302, north and south apses by his pupils. Rome. g. Peter's—navicella, in atrium by Giotto. 8. Maria in Cosmedin—on walls by Pietro Cavallini, c. 1340. Venice. 8S. Giovanni e Paolo—in arch over effigy of Doge Morosini.*~~

~~*This list is by no means exhaustive, and only gives some of the best and most typical examples of the mosaic-work of each century.*~~

~~*The Byzantine origin of these great wall-mosaics, wherever they are found, is amply proved both by internal and documentary evidence. The gorgeous mosaics of 8. Sophia and S. Saviour's in Constantinople, 6th century, and the later ones in the monasteries of Mount Athos, at Salonica and at Daphne near Athens, are identical in style with those of Italy of the same date. Moreover, the even more beautiful mosaic-work in the " Dome of the Rock" at Jerusa- lem, 7th and 11th centuries, and that in the sanctuary of the great mosque of Cordova, of the 10th century, are known to be the work of Byzantine artists, in spite of their thoroughly*~~

~~*Oriental design. he same is the case with the rarer mosaics of Germany, such as those in S. Gereon at Cologne and at Parenzo.. ;*~~

~~*A very remarkable, almost unique, specimen of Byzantine mosaic is now preserved in the "Opera del Duomo," Florence. This is a diptych of the 11th century, of extremely minute, almost micro- scopic, work, in tessers of glass and metal, perhaps the only example of tesseree made of solid metal. It has figures of saints and inscrip- tions, each tessera being scarcely larger than a pin's head. This beautiful diptych originally belonged to the imperial chapel in Con- stantinople, and was brought to Florence in the 14th century.*~~

~~*2. The second medieval class, mosaic pavements, though of great beauty, are of less artistic importance.*~~

~~*This so-called "opus Alexandrinum " is very common throughout Italy and in the East, and came to greatest perfection in the 13th century. It is made partly of small marble tessere forming the main lines of the pattern, and partly of large pieces used as a ground or matrix. It is generally designed in large flowing bands which interlace and enclose circles, often of one stone sliced from a column. The finest example is that at S. Mark's, Venice, of the 12th century. The materials are mainly white marble, with green and red porphyry, and sometimes glass,*~~

~~*Besides the countless churches in Italy possessing these beautiful pavements, such as 8. Lorenzo, 8. Marco, 8. Maria Maggiore, and S. Maria in Trastevere, in Rome, we have, in the Chapel of the Confessor, and in front of the high altar at Westminster, very fine specimens of this work, executed about 1268 by a Roman artist called Odericus, who was brought to England by Abbot Ware, on the occasion of a visit made by the latter to Rome. Another inglish example is the mosaic pavement in front of the shrine of Becket at Canterbury ; this is probably the work of an English- man, though the materials are foreign, as it is partly inlaid with bronze, a peculiarity never found in Italy. There are also many fine examples of these pavements in the churches of the East, such as that in S. Sophia at Trebizond, of the most elaborate design and splendid materials, very like the S. Mark's pavement at Venice. Palermo and Monreale are especially rich in examples of sectile mosaic, used both for*~~

~~*pavements and walls,—in the latter case generally for the lower part of the walls, the upper part being covered with the glass mosaics. The designs of these Sicilian works, mostly executed under the Norman kings in the 12th cen- tury, are very Oriental in character, and in many cases were actually executed by Moslem workmen. Fig. 4 gives a specimen of this*~~

~~*Fic. 4.—Marble Mosaic at Monreale Cathedral.*~~

~~*mosaic from Monreale cathedral. Its chief characteristic is the absence of curved lines, so largely used in the splendid opus Alex- andrinum of Italy, arising from the fact that this class of Oriental design was mainly used for the delicate panelling in wood on their*~~

~~*MOSAIC*~~

~~*pulpits, doors, &c.,—wood being a matcrial quite unsuited for the production of large curves.*~~

~~*3. Glass mosaic, used to ornament ambones, pulpits, tombs, bishops' thrones, baldacchini columns, architraves, and other marble objects, is chiefly Italian. The designs, when it is used to enrich flat surfaces, such as panels or architraves, are very similar to those of the pavements last described. The white marble is used as a matrix, in which sinkings are made to hold the glass tessere ; twisted columns are frequently ornamented with a spiral band of this glass mosaic, or flutings are suggested by parallel bands on straight columns. The cloisters of §. Giovanni in Laterano and S. Paolo fuori le mura have splendid examples of these enriched shafts and architraves.*~~

~~*This style of work was largely employed from the 6th to the 14th centuries. One family in Italy, the Cosmati, during the whole of the 13th century, was especially skilled in this craft, and the various members of it produced an extraordinary amount of rich and beauti- ful work. The pulpit in S. Maria in Ara Cceli, Rome, is one of the finest specimens (see fig. 5), as are also the ambones in 8. Cle- mente and S. Lorenzo,and that in Salerno a , sone eens ;*~~

~~*omb of Henry III., a — = It dat i oo i the Confessor, 1269, at CN Westminster are the only ; Sard riihl TNA examples of this work \ in England. They were executed by '* Petrus civis Romanus," probably a pupil of the Cosmati.*~~

~~*In India, especially during the 17th century, many Mohammedan buildings were decorated with fine marble inlay of the class now called " Flor- entine." This is seetile mosaic, formed by shaped pieces of various-coloured marbles let into a marble matrix. A great deal of the Indian mosaic of this sort was executed by Ital- ian workmen ; the finest examples are at Agra,suchi as the Taj Mehal.*~~

~~*The modern so-called "Roman mosaic" is formed of short and slen- der sticks of coloured glass fixed in cement, the ends, which form the pattern, being finally rubbed down and polished.*~~

~~*Many not unsuccessful attempts have been ade lately to reproduce the Roman tesselated work for pavements; and at Mu- rano, near Venice, glass wall-mosaics are still pro- duced in imitation of the magnificent works of me- dival times.*~~

~~*4. Mosaies in wood are largely used in Moham- medan buildings, especially from the 14th to the 17th centuries. The finest specimens of this work are at Cairo and Damascus, and are used chiefly to decorate the magnificent pulpits and other woodwork in the mosques. The patterns are very Seliante and complicated, worked in inlay of small pieces of various-coloured woods, often further en- riched by bits of mother-of-pearl and minutely carved ivory. The general effect is extremely splendid from the combined beauties of the materials and workmanship, as well as from the marvellous grace and fancy of the designs. This art was also practised largely by the Copts of Egypt, and much used by them to ornament the magnificent iconostases and other screens in their churches.*~~

~~*Another application of wood to mosaic-work, called " intarsia- tura," was very common in Italy, especially in Tuscany and Lom- bardy, during the 15th and early 16th centuries. Its chief use was for the decoration of the stalls and lecterns in the church-choirs. Very small bits of various-coloured woods were used to produce geometrical patterns, while figure-*~~

~~*subjects, views of buildings with strong perspective effects, and even landscapes, were very skilfully produced by an inlay of larger pieces. Ambrogio Borgognone, Raphael, and other great painters often drew the designs for this sort of work. The mosaic figures in the panels of the stalls at the*~~

~~*Fia. 5.—Part of Marble Pulpit with glass mosaic, church of Ara Ceeli, Rome.*~~

~~*MOS—MOS*~~

~~*Certosa near Pavia were by Borgognone, and are extremely beauti- ful. The stalls in Siena cathedral and in S. Pietro de' Casinensi at Perugia, the latter from Raphael's designs, are among the finest works of this sort, which are very numerous in Italy. It has also been used on a smaller seale to ornament furniture, and especially the "Cassoni," or large trousseau coffers, on which the most eostly and elaborate decorations were often lavished. Some traditional skill in this art still lingers in Italy, especially in the city of Siena.*~~

~~*AutTHorIties.—Classical Mosaics.—Pliny, I. N., xxxvi.; Vitruvius ; Franks, Slade Collection of Ancient Glass, and Excavations at Carthage, 1860; Artaud, Histoire de la peinture en mosaique, 1835; Monumentos Arquitectonicos de Espatia ("Italica," '*Cordoba," and " Elche"), 1859-83 ; Laborde, Mosaitque d'Italica, pres de Seville, 1802; Ciampini, Vetera Monumenta, Rome, 1747; Von Minutoli, Mosaikfussboden, &c., 1835; Lysons, Mosaics of Horkstow, 1801, and Roman Antiquities of Woodchester, 1797; Mazois, Les ruines de Pompéi, Paris, 1812-38 ; Real Museo Borbonico, various dates; Roach Smith, Roman London, 1859; Ausgrabungen zu Olympia, 1877-82.*~~

~~*Christian.—Theophilus, Diversarwm Artium Schedula, ii. 15; S. Kensington Musewm Art Inventory, part i., 1870; Renan, Mission de Phénicie, 1875; Garrucci, Arte Cristiana, 1872-82, vol. iv. ; De Rossi, Musaict Cristiant di Roma, 1872-82 ; Parker, Archeology of Rome, and Mosaic Pictwres in Rome and Ravenna, 1866 ; Jouy, Les Mosaiques chrétiennes de Rome, 1857; Gravina, Duomo di Monreale, Palermo, 1859 sq. ; Serradifalco, Monreale ed altre chiese Siculo-Normanne, 1838 ;*~~

~~*Salazaro, Mon. dell' Arte Merid. d'Italia, 1882; M. D. Wyatt, Geometrical Mosaics, of the Middle Ages, 1849 ; Salzenberg, Alt-Christliche Baudenkmale von Constanti-*~~

~~*nopel, 1854; Pulgher, Fglises Byzantines de Constantinople, 1883; Texier and*~~

~~*Pullan, Byzantine Architecture, 1864; Quast, Alt-Christlichen Bawwerke von*~~

~~*Ravenna, 1842; De Vogué, Eglises de la Terre Sainte, 1860; Milanesi, Del Arte*~~

~~*del Vetro pel Musaico, 16th century (reprinted at Bologna in 1864); Rohault de*~~

~~*Fleury, Monuments de Pise, 1866; Kreutz, Basilica di S. Marco, Venezia, 1843 ;*~~

~~*Gally Knight, Ecclesiastical Architecture of Italy, 1842-4; Fossati, Aya Sophia, 1852; Didron, "La peinture en Mosaique," Gaz. des B. Arts, vol. xi., p. 442; Gerspach, La Mosaique, 1883.*~~

~~*Moslem.—Hessemer, Arabische wnd Alt-Italienische Bau-Verzierungen, 1853 ; Prisse d'Avennes, L'Art Arabe, 1874-1880; Prangey, Mosquée de Cordoue, 1830 ;*~~

~~*Owen Jones, Alhambra, 1842; De Vogue, Temple de Jérusalem, 1864; Texier, Asie Mineure, 1862, and L' Arménie et la Perse, 1842-52 ; Bourgoin, Les Arts Arabes,*~~

~~*1868 ; Coste, Monwments modernes de la Perse, 1867; Flandin and Coste, Voyage*~~

~~*en Perse, 1843-54,*~~

~~*Wood-Mosaic—Tarsia.—Ornati del Coro di S. Pietro Cassinense di Perugia, 1830; Caffi, various works on Rafaello da Brescia and other*~~

intarsiatori, 1851, &c.; Tarsie ed intagli di S. Lorenzo in Genova, 1878. (J. H. M.)

MOSCHELES, Icnaz (1794-1870), one of the most

refined and accomplished pianists of the present century, was born at Prague, 30th May 1794, and first studied music at the Conservatorium in that city under the direc- tion of Dionys Weber. At the age of fourteen he made his first appearance before the public in a pianoforte con- certo of his own composition with marked success. Soon after this he removed to Vienna, where he studied coun- terpoint under Albrechtsberger and composition under Salieri. In 1814 he prepared, with Beethoven's consent, the pianoforte arrangement of Jidelto, afterwards published by Messrs Artaria. In the following year he published his celebrated Variationen tiber den Alewandermarsch, a con- cert piece of great difficulty, which he played with so great effect that he was at once recognized as the most brilliant performer of the day. He then started on a tour, during the course of which he visited most of the great capitals of Europe, making his first appearance in London in 1822, and there securing the friendship of Muzio Clementi and John Cramer, the fathers of the English school of piano- forte playing. For a concert given by the latter he wrote his famous Hommage & Handel, a duet for two pianofortes, which afterwards became a lasting favourite with the public. His reception in England was sufficiently encouraging to justify his return in 1823, when he again met with a hearty welcome. During a visit to Berlin in 1824 he first became acquainted with Mendelssohn, then a boy of fifteen; anda friendship sprang up between them which was severed only by Mendelssohn's early death.

In 1826 Moscheles relinquished his wandering habits, and settled permanently in London, surrounding himself with a clientele fully capable of appreciating his talents as an artist and his social worth as a firm and loyal friend. His position was henceforth a more than ordinarily en- viable one. He was recognized from end to end of Europe as a virtuoso of the highest rank ; and his popularity both as a performer and as a teacher was based on grounds whicli effectually secured it from the caprice of changing fashion or ephemeral patronage. He was

~~*undoubtedly for some con- siderable time the greatest executant of his age; but, using his brilliant touch as a means and not as an end, he con- sistently devoted himself to the further development of the*~~

~~*true classical school, interpreting the works of the great masters with conscientious fidelity, and in his extempore performances, which were of quite exceptional excellence, exhibiting a fertility of invention which never failed to please the most fastidious taste.*~~

~~*In 1837 Moscheles conducted Beethoven's Ninth Sym- phony at the Philharmonic Society's concerts with extra- ordinary success; and on this and other occasions contri- buted not a little, by his skilful use of the baton, to the prosperity of the time-honoured association. During the course of his long residence in London he laboured inces- santly in the cause of art, playing at innumerable concerts, both public and private, and instructing a long line of pupils, who flocked to him, in unbroken succession, until the year 1848, when, at Mendelssohn's earnest solicitation, he removed to Leipsic, to carry on a similar work at the Conservatorium then recently founded in that city. In this new sphere he worked with unabated zeal for more than twenty years, dying 10th March 1870.*~~

~~*Moscheles's most important compositions are his Pianoforte Con- certos, Sonatas, and Studies; his Hommage & Handel ; and his three celebrated Allegri di Bravura.*~~

~~*MOSCHUS, of Syracuse, is one of the Greek bucolic poets ; he was a friend of the Alexandrian grammarian Aristarchus (about 200 B.c.). His chief work is the epi- taph of Bion of Smyrna, another of the bucolic poets, who seems to have lived in Sicily. It is probable that the miscellaneous collection of poems which we possess by the three poets Theocritus, Bion, and Moschus was known to Artemidorus in 200 B.c. His poetry is the work of a well- educated man with a trained artistic eye; he models his works on those of Bion, writing epigrammatic, epic, and idyllic or elegiac verses, all except a few lines being in hexameter verse; but he treats all his subjects ina de- scriptive, not in a narrative or an*~~

~~*epigrammatic style. Besides the epitaph of Bion, he wrote two little epic poems, "Buropa" and "Megara," and a pretty little epigram, "Love the Runaway ;" and a few short pieces of his are also preserved. They are written with much elegance, but the style is perhaps too refined and carefully wrought, and he has few of the higher qualities of a poet.*~~

~~*MOSCOW, a government of Central Russia, bounded by Tver on the N.W., Vladimir and Ryazan on the E., Tula and Kaluga on the S., and Smolensk on the W., and having an area of 12,858 square miles. The surface is undulating, with broad depressions occupied by the rivers, and varies in elevation from 500 to 850 feet. Moscow is situated in the centre of the so-called Moscow coal-basin, which extends into the neighbouring governments, and consists of limestones of the Upper and Lower Carboni- ferous, the latter containing beds of inferior coal, while the former contains several good quarries of marble. The Carboniferous formation is covered with Jurassic clays, sandstones, and sands, which yield a good china-clay at Gjeli, copperas, a sandstone much employed for building, and a white sand used for the manufacture of glass. The whole is thickly covered with boulder-clayand alluvial sands.*~~

~~*The government is watered by the Volga, which skirts it for a few miles on its northern boundary, by the navigable Sestra, which brings it in communication with the canals leading to St Peters- burg, by the Oka, and by the Moskva. This last takes its origin in Smolensk, and, after a course of 280 miles right across Moscow, reaches the Oka at Kolomna; it is navigable from the town of Moscow. The Oka and Moskva from a remote period have been important channels of trade, and continue to be so notwithstanding the development of railways. The Oka brings the government into water communication with the Volga, whose tributaries cover nearly the whole of middle and eastern Russia, and are separated by short land distances from the Northern Dwina and the Don. Large quantities of grain, metals, glass ware, skins, and other com- modities are shipped up and down the Moskva, whilst the Myach-*~~

~~*kovo stone quarries situated on its banks supply the capital with building stone. There are several marshes, mostly in the north,*~~

~~*where also, as well as in the north-east, notwithstanding the immense consumption of wood in manufactures and for use in the capital, extensive forests are still found. Very large supplies of timber are also imported by rail or river, especially from the adjoin- ing north-eastern provinces. The soil is somewhat unproductive, the average crops ranging from 3% to 43 returns; agriculture is carried on everywhere, but only two districts (Ruza and Volsko- lamsk) export corn, all the others being more or less dependent on extraneous supplies. 'The agricultural holdings of the peasants are very small, and their condition on the whole unsatisfactory.* Grass crops have some importance in several districts, and kitchen- gardening is an important source of wealth in Vereya, Dmitroff, and Zvenigorod. Cattle are not extensively reared, but the horse- breeding industry is somewhat important. ;*~~

~~*The population, 1,581,700 in 1864, numbered 1,913,700 in 1873, one-third being urban. They are nearly aJl Great-Russians, and belong to the Greek Church, or are nonconformists. Many are employed in factories, the number of which in 1879 was 1546, occupying about £20,000,000 sterling. 1 ing activity of Moscow to be greater than that of any other Russian government, while the value produced is upwards of one-fifth of the total for all Russia in Europe, including Poland. Cotton, woollen, and silk goods are the chief products. The sanitary condition of the factories is very bad; the number of children below fifteen years employed is as high as 16 per cent., the hours of daily-work are often 13 to 16, and the mortality is very great. The total income obtained by the population of the government from their manufacturing industry is estimated at £485,600. The chief income of the people is derived, however, from a variety of petty in- dustries, carried on in their villages by the peasants, who coutinue at the same time to cultivate the soil. Taxation during the last twenty years has been increasing rapidly, and in some parts of the government has reached an average of 12 roubles per house. The chief ceutres of trade are Moscow, Kolomna, Scrpukhoff, Bogorodsk, Serghievsk, and Pavlovsk. There are 125 fairs. Transport is much facilitated by railways, and by good highroads ra iating from the capital. Moscow is divided into thirteen districts, the chief towns with their respective populations being—Moscow (670,000), Bogorodsk (6600), Bronnitsy (3500), Ruza (4000), Kolomna (18,800), Serpukhoff (16,800), Podolsk (11,000), Zvenigorod*~~

~~*(7800), Mojaisk (4200), Volokolamsk (3000), Klin (6700), Dmitroff (7600), and Vereya (5500). In addition to these administrative centres may be men- tioned Voskresensk (6000), Serghievski Posad (27,500), in the neighbourhood of the monastery of Troitsa, a rich commercial and industrial town, and Pavlovski Posad (4500). Many of the villages are far more important from their industries and trade than the district towns.*~~

~~*MOSCOW (Russian, Jfoskva), the second capital of the Russian empire and chief town of the government and district of the same name, is situated in 55° 45' N. lat. and 37° 37' E. long., on both banks of the river Moskva, a tributary of the Oka, at its confluence with the rivulet Yauza. The popular idea is that Moscow is built on seven hills, and in fact the city covers several eminences, the altitudes of its different parts varying from 500 to 850 feet above the level of the sea. It is 400 miles from St Petersburg, 813 from Archangel, 900 from Ufa, 938 from Astrakhan, 933 from Odessa, and 811 from Warsaw. It lies to the north of the most densely-peopled parts of Russia (the "black-earth region"), whilst the country to the north of it is rather thinly peopled as far as the Volga, and very sparsely beyond that. The space between the middle Oka and the Volga, however, was the very cradle of the Great-Russian nationality (Novgorod and Pskov excluded) ; and four or five centuries ago Mos- cow had a quite central position with regard to this.*~~

~~*The present city measures 7 miles from north to south, and 9 miles from west-south-west to east-north-east, and covers an area of 32 square miles (about 40 when the suburbs are included). In the centre, on the left bank of the Moskva, stands the "Kreml" or Kremlin, occupying the Borovitsky hill, which in the 12th century was covered by a dense forest. To the east of the Kremlin is the Kitay-Gorod, formerly the Great Posad, the chief centre*~~

~~*; 1 According to recent investigations instituted by the Moscow pro- vincial assembly, 10 per cent. of the agricultural population (abont 20,000 households) have no land at all; 15 per cent., while holding land, are bankrupt; and 13 per cent. are without cattle or implements.*~~

~~*162,700 hands, and having.an annual production of These figures show the manufactur-*~~

~~*for trade. The Byelyi-Gorod, which was formerly enclosed by a stone wall (whence the name), surrounds the Kremlin and the Kitay-Gorod on the west, north, and north-east. A line of boulevards now occupies the place of its wall (destroyed in the 18th century), and forms a first circle of streets around the centre of Moscow. The Zemlanoy- Gorod (earthen enclosure) surrounds the Byelyi-Gorod, including the " Zamoskvoryechie" on the right bank of the Moskva. The earthen wall and palisade that formerly enclosed it no longer exist, their place being taken by a series of broad streets with gardens on both sides,—the Sadovaya, or Gardens Street. The fourth enclosure (the "Kamer-College earthen wall") was made during the reign of Catherine IL.; it is of irregular shape, and encloses the outer parts of Moscow, whilst the suburbs and the villages which have sprung up on the highways extend 4, 5, and 6 miles beyond. The general view obtained from the west or south is very picturesque, especially on account of the numerous churches, monasteries, and towers with characteristic architecture, and the many gardens and ponds scattered among clusters of houses. The Kremlin is an old fort of pentagonal (nearly triangular) shape, 98 acres in extent, occupying a hill about 100 feet above the level of the Moskva. It is enclosed by a high stone wall 2430 yards in length, restored during the present century, and having eighteen towers. Its five gates are surmounted by high towers. The Spasskiya (Saviour's Gate) was erected in 1491 by a Milanese architect, the Gothic tower that surmounts it having been added in 1626 by the English architect Holloway. A sacred picture of the Saviour was placed upon it in 1685, and all who pass through the gate must uncover. The towers surmount- ing the four other gates were erected by order of Ivan Ill. Of the sacred buildings of the Kremlin the most venerated is the Uspensky cathedral. The former church of this name was erected in 1326 by Ivan Kalita, but, on its falling into disrepair, a new one was built on the same place in 1475-1479, by Fioraventi, in the Lombardo- Byzantine style, with Indian cupolas. It was restored in the 18th century and in 1813. It contains the oldest and most venerated holy pictures in Russia, one of which is attributed to the metropolitan Peter, another to St Luke. This last was brought from Kieff to Vladimir in 1155, and thence to Moscow in 1395; its jewelled metallic cover is valued at £20,000. The*~~

~~*cathedral pos- sesses also a gate brought from Korsun, the throne of Vladimir I., and numerous relics of saints, some of which date from the 14th century. The Russian metro- politans and patriarchs were consecrated in this cathedral, as well as the czars after Ivan IV. The Arkhangelsk cathedral was originally built in 1333, and a new one was erected in its place in 1505. It has suffered very much from subsequent restorations and decorations. It contains the tombs of the czars from Simeon (1353) to Ivan Alexeevitch (1696), and possesses vast wealth. The Bla- govyeschensk cathedral, recalling the churches of Athos, was built in 1489; the remarkable pictures of Rubleff (1405), contained in the original structure of 1397-1416, have been preserved. It was the private chapel of the czars. Vestiges of a very old church, that of the Saviour in the Wood (Spas na bort), contemporaneous with the foundation of Moscow, still exist in the yard of the palace. A stone church took the place of the old wooden structure in 1330, and was rebuilt in 1527. Several other churches of the 15th century, with valuable archeological remains, are found within the walls of the Kremlin. The Vozne- sensky convent, erected in 1393, and recently restored with great judgment, is the burial-place of wives and sisters of the czars. The Chudoff monastery, erected in 1365, was the seat of theological instruction and a state*~~

~~*prison. Close by, the great campanile of Ivan Veliky, erected in the Lombardo-Byzantine style by Boris Godunoff in 1600, rises to the height of 271 feet (328 feet including the cross), and contains many bells, one of which weighs 1285 cwts. The view of Moscow from this campanile is really wonderful, and its gilded cupola is seen from a great distance. Close by is the well-known Tsar-Kolokol (Czar of the Bells), 60 feet in circumference round the rim, 19 feet high, and weighing 3850 cwts. It was cast in 1735, and broken during the fire of 1737 before being hung. The treasury of the patriarchs (riznitsa) contains not only such articles of value as the sakkos of the metropolitan Foty with 70,000 pearls, but also very remarkable monuments of Rus- sian archeology. The library has 500 Greek and 1000*~~

~~A is BY OE Hy) : BASS Nate Nd AS Ill Pee~~

~~857~~

~~very rare Russian MSS., including a Gospel of the 8th century. :~~

~~The great palace of the emperors, erected in 1849, is a fine building in white stone with a gilded cupola, It con- tains the terems, or rooms erected for the young princes in 1636 (restored in 1836-1849, their former character being maintained), a remarkable memorial of the domestic life of the czars in the 17th century. In the treasury of the czars, Granovitaya Palata and Orujeynaya Palata, now public museums, the richest stores connected with old Russian archeology are found—crowns, thrones, dresses, various articles of household furniture belonging to the czars, Russian and Mongolian arms, carriages, &c.~~

~~The four sides of the Senate Square are occupied by~~

~~Edy ANN Vas, acer~~

~~i= lad ih i [¢ ma |~~

~~Plan of Moscow.~~

~~buildings of various dates, from the 15th century onwards. The senate, now the law courts, was erected by Catherine II. Facing it is the arsenal, containing full ammunition for 200,000 men.~~

~~The Temple of the Saviour, begun in 1817 on the Vorobiovy hills, in commemoration of 1812, was abandoned in 1827, and a new one was built during the years 1838- 1881 on a hill on the bank of the Moskva, at a short dis- tance from the Kremlin. Its style is Lombardo-Byzantine, with modifications suggested by the military taste of Nicholas I. Its colossal white walls are well proportioned, and its gilded cupolas are seen from a great distance. The buildings that surround it are to be cleared away, and its wide squares adorned by obelisks, and by monu-~~

~~ments to Kutuzoff, Barclay de Tolly, Alexander I., and Nicholas I.~~

~~*The Kitay-Gorod, which covers 121 acres, and has 20,000 inhabitants, is the chief commercial quarter of Moscow. It contains the Gostinoy Dvor, consisting of several stone buildings divided into 1200 shops, where all kinds of manufactured articles are sold. The " Red Square," 900 yards long, whose stone tribunal was formerly the forum, and afterwards the place of execution, separates the Gostinoy Dvor from the Kremlin. At its lower end stands the fantastic Pokrovsky cathedral (usually known as Vasili Blajennyi), which is the wonder of all strangers visiting Moscow, on account of its towers, all differing from each other, and representing, in their variety of colours, pine-*~~

~~*apples, melons, and the like. It was built under Ivan the Terrible by an Italian. The exchange, built in 1838 and restored in 1873, is very lively, and its twenty-three "exchange artels" (associations of nearly 2000 brokers, possessing a capital of more than £100,000) are worthy of remark, Banks, houses of great commercial firms, streets full of old bookshops carrying on a very large trade, and finally the Tolkuchy rynok, the market of the poorest dealers in old clothes, occupy the Kitay-Gorod, side by side with restaurants of the highest class. In the Kitay-Gorod are also situated the house of the Romanoffs, rebuilt in 1859 in exact conformity with its former shape; a Greek monastery ; and the printing-office of the synod, containing about 600 MSS. and 10,000 very old printed books, to- gether with a museum of old typographical implements. At the entrance to the Kitay-Gorod stands the highly- venerated chapel of the Virgin of Iberia, which is a copy, made in 1648, of a holy picture placed on the chief gate of the monastery of Athos. Close by is the recently opened historical nuseum, which will contain collections respect-ively illustrating separate periods of Russian history.*~~

~~*The northern parts of the Byelyi-Gorod are also the centre of a lively trade. Here are situated the Okhotnyi Ryad (poultry market) and the narrow streets Tverskaya and Kuznetsky-Most, the rendezvous of the world of fashion. Here also are the theatres. In the south-west of the*~~

~~*Byelyi- Gorod, opposite the garden of the Kremlin, stand the uni- versity, the public museum, and the military riding school.*~~

~~*The Zemlyanoy-Gorod, which has arisen from villages that surrounded Moscow, exhibits a variety of characters. In the neighbourhood of the railway stations it is a busy centre of traffic; other parts of it are manufacturing centres, whilst others—as, for instance, the small quiet streets in the west of the boulevard of Prechistenka, called the old Konushennaya, with their wooden houses and spacious yards—are the true abodes of the families of the old, for the most part decayed, but still proud nobility. The Zamoskvoryechie, on the right bank of the Moskva, is the abode of the patriarchal merchant families. Each house is surrounded by a yard whose gate is rarely opened, and each house, with its dependencies and gardens, bears the character of a separate estate.*~~

~~*The climate of Moscow is cold and continental, but healthy. The average annual temperature is 40°°1 Fahr. (January, 14°; July, 66°°5). The summer is warm (64°‘2), and the winter cold and dry (15°°8), great masses of snow covering the streets. The spring, as is usually the case in cold continental climates, is beauti- ful. The prevailing winds are south-west and south. The river Moskva is frozen, on the average, for 153 days (from 12th Novem- ber to 13th April).*~~

~~*Besides the Moskva and the Yauza, Moscow is watered also by the Neglinnaya, which now flows in an underground channel under the walls of the Kremlin. The city has about 200 ponds. The Moskva is crossed by five bridges; a branch of it, or rather a channel, makes an elongated island in the centre of the town. Water of excellent quality, principally from the Mytischi springs and ponds, 11 miles distant, is led to fountains in different parts of the town, whence it is taken by watermen. But this supply amounts only to 1,865,000 gallons a day, and the great mass of the inhabitants make use of the contaminated water of the Moskva and even of the Yauza, or of private wells.*~~

~~*The population of Moscow, which is steadily increasing, is esti- mated at 670,000 ; but an accurate census has not yet been made. In the middle of the 18th century it was estimated at only 150,000 ; in 1812, at 250,000 in summer and 400,000 in winter. In 1864 it was estimated (probably under*~~

~~*the truth) at 365,000. The inhabit- ants are mostly Great-Russians, and only about 6000 are foreigners. They chiefly belong to the Greek Church, or are nonconformists, the number of Lutherans and Catholics being only 8000 to 9000. The mortality is very great: in 1879 and 1880 it reached 37°9 and 41°8 per thousand (men 39°3; women 43°9), and usually exceeds the birth-rate. Moscow, moreover, is often visited by epidemics which immensely increase the mortality, in consequence of the almost entire absence of sanitary regulations. Fires are very fre- quent ; within ten years (1870-1879) they numbered 2492, the loss being estimated at £2,865,300.*~~

~~*MOSCOW*~~

~~*Since the 14th century Moscow has been an important commer-. cial city. Its merchants carried on a brisk trade with Novgorod and Pskov, with Lithuania, Poland, Hungary, Constantinople, Azoff, and Astrakhan. About the end of the 15th century its princes transported to Moscow, Vladimir, and other Russian towns no fewer than 18,000 of the richest Novgorod merchant families, and took over the entire trade of that city, entering into direct relations with Narva and Livonia. The shops of the Gostinoy Dvors of Moscow astonished foreign visitors in the 16th century by their large supply of foreign wares, and by the low prices at which the products of western Europe were sold,—a circumstance explained by the barter character of the trade. The annexation of Kazan and the conquest of Siberia gave a new importance to Moscow, bringing it into direct commercial relations with Khiva, Bokhara, and China, and supplying it with Siberian furs. The fur-trade engrossed the minds of all European merchants in the 16th century, and an English company, "The Mystery," having received the monopoly of the Archangel trade, caused the traffic to be sent by the White Sea instead of the Baltic. Moscow thus became the centre for nearly the whole trade of Russia, and the czar himself engaged in large commercial operations. All boyars, and the church too, were traders; and the poorest Moscow mer- chants participated in the trade through their corporations. Persians, Greeks, Armenians, Swedes, English, Germans, and Lithuanians had each its own Gostinoy Dvor (or caravanserai). Situated at the junction of six important highways (along which communication was maintained by special yamshiks), Moscow was*~~

~~*the great storehouse and exchange-mart for the merchandise of Europe and Asia. The opening of the port at St Petersburg affected its commercial interest unfavourably at first; but the Asiatic and internal trade of Moscow has since then enormously increased. At present it is the chief centre of railway traffic. The revenue of its custom-house was in 1880 double that of St Petersburg (30,000,000 roubles, as against 15,620,000 at St Petersburg and 9,000,000 at Warsaw). But the home traffic is the most important branch of the Moscow trade. The city is the chief centre for the trade in grain, in hemp, and in oils, sent to the Baltic ports; in tea, brought both by Siberia and by St Petersburg ; in sugar, refined there in large quanti- ties ; in grocery wares for the supply of more than half Russia and all Siberia ; in tallow, skins, wool, metals, timber, wooden wares, and all other produce of the manufactures of middle Russia. No less than 10,000,000 cwts. of corn are annually brought to Moscow, half of which is sent to the Baltic ports. The yearly return of the Moscow trade was estimated at £9,000,000 in 1848,—probably only a half or a third of the real value, which is believed to have been at least trebled since that time, The quantity of goods carried by the six railways from Moscow to St Petersburg, Yaroslav, Nijni, Ryazan, Kursk, and Brest, amounted in 1878 to 162,343,500 cwts. (out of 635,740,000 for the whole of Russia) ; and the number of passengers was 8,637,890 (1,263,530 military) out of a total for all Russia of 37,580,800 (civil and military) in that year.*~~

~~*From the 15th century onwards the villages around Moscow were renowned for the variety of small trades they carried on ; the first large manufactures in cottons, woollen fabrics, silk, china, and glass in Great Russia appeared at Moscow in the 17th and 18th centuries. After 1830, in consequence of protection tariffs, the manufactories in the government of Moscow rapidly increased in number ; and at present two-thirds of them, or about 1000, annu- ally producing articles to the value of upwards of £10,000,000 (the real production is probably much higher), are concentrated in the capital, There are at Moscow about 170 cotton-mills, 90 manu- factories of woollens, and 70 of silks, the silk manufactured being chiefly Caucasian, although a good deal is also imported from the west ; there are also upwards of 20 large tanneries, 50 tobacco- factories, 15 large candle-works, 70 larger workshops in metals, 18 wax-candle works, 30 carriage manufactories, 20 watch manu- factories.*~~

~~*The income and expenditure of Moscow in 1882 were respectively 4,921,067 and 6,124,068 roubles, as compared with 4,730,724 and 5,490,433 in 1881.*~~

~~*Moscow has many educational institutions and scientific societies. The university, founded in 1755, exercised a powerful influence on the intellectual life of Russia during the years 1830-1848; and it still continues to be the most frequented Russian university. In 1882 it had 2430 students and a teaching staff of 334; the students are mostly poor, the sum of 107,588 roubles having been given in 1881 in scholarships to 854 of their number, and 14,000 roubles in the form of occasional assistance. The library contains nearly 200,000 volumes, and has rich collections in mineralogy, geology, and zoology. There is also an excellent higher technical school ; and an agricultural college is situated in the Petrovskoye suburb. Moscow has also a theological academy, a commercial academy, a school of topography, an institute (of Lazareff) for the study of Oriental languages, a musical conservatory, four institutes for women, a free university for women, seven colleges for boys and three for girls, three corps of military cadets, very numerous primary and technical schools, and many private schools, But*~~

~~*still these are insufficient for the population, and the municipal schools every year refuse admission to about 1500 boys and girls. The scientific societies are specially distinguished for their services in the exploration of the country. The following deserve parti- cular mention :—the society of naturalists (founded in 1805); the society of Russian history and antiquities, which has published many remarkable works ; the society of amateurs of Russian litera- ture ; the physical and medical society ; the mathematical society ; the society for the diffusion of useful books ; the very active archxo-*~~

~~*logical society, founded in 1864; a society of gardening and of*~~

~~*agriculture ; several technical, artistic, and musical societies ; and the very active young society of the friends of natural science, which already has published many useful volumes.*~~

~~*' Among the museums of Moscow, the museum, formerly Ruman- tseff's, now connected with the so-called " public museum," occupies the first rank. It contains a library of 150,000 volumes and 2300 MSS., remarkable collections of old pictures, sculptures, and prints, as well as a rich mineralogical collection, and an ethnographical*~~

~~*collection representing very accurately the various inhabitants of*~~

~~*Russia. The historical museum has already been mentioned. The*~~

~~*private museum of Prince Golitzyn contains a good collection of*~~

~~*paintings and MSS.; and great treasures of archeology are amassed in various private collections in Moscow and its suburbs.*~~

~~*The periodical press does not on the whole exercise great influ- ence; twenty-five periodicals are published, besides those of scientific societies. But Moscow publishes a far larger number of books for primary instruction and ofthe humblest kind of literature and prints for the use of peasants than any other Russian city.*~~

~~*The philanthropic institutions are numerous, the first rank being occupied by the immense Foundlings' Hospital, erected in 1764. The hospitals, municipal, military, aud private, are very large, but much below the standard of other capitals. The number of private philanthropic institutions is very considerable.*~~

~~*Though the drama was introduced into Russia at Kieff, Moscow was the place ofits development. The earliest stage representations*~~

~~*were made at Moscow in 1640, and the first comedy—a translation of*~~

~~*Moliére's Médecin Malgré Lwi—was played in the palace before Sophie, the sister of Peter I. It was only in 1759 that a theatre was erected. A large stone theatre was erected in 1776, and rebuilt in 1856 after a fire. It is for the Moscow stage that the best Russian drainas have been written, and it was in the "small theatre" that the best Russian actors—Schepkin,*~~

~~*Sadovsky, Shumsky, and Madame Vasi- lieff—exhibited the comedies of Gogol, Griboyedoff, and Ostrovsky.*~~

~~*Moscow, where the Great-Russian language is spoken in its greatest purity, was the birthplace of the two chief Russian poets, Pushkin and Lermontoff, as well as of Griboyedoff, Ostrovsky, and Herzen. A monument to Pushkin was erected in 1880, on the Tverskoy boulevard. Griboyedoff, in his remarkable comedy Goré ot uma, has given a lively picture of the higher Moscow society of the beginning of this century, which continued to hold good until within the last few years. His remark as to the unmistakable individuality of the Moscow type also maintainsits truth; although the physiognomy of Moscow has much changed since his day, it still has its special features that distinguish it from every other capital. The division of classes is much more felt at Moscow than elsewhere. The tendency towards originality, the love of grandiose undertakings, a kind of brag, together with little feeling of inde- pendence, a good deal of laziness, and much cordiality, still charac- terize the educated classes. The merchants live quite aloof from any political or even intellectual movement, under a rude patri- archal system, well described in the dramas of Ostrovsky. A large proportion of them are nonconformists. Their sons, the well- known kupecheskiye synki, " merchants' sons," when they leave this kind of life, astonish the capital with their extravagances and absurd display of wealth. But Moscow takes its present physiog- nomy chiefly from its busy lower classes. The streets are full of merchants and peasants, who continue to wear the old Russian garb, go on foot in the streets, drink tea in modest restaurants, and trans- act large business. From being a town of the aristocracy, Moscow is coming to be more and more a town of the wealthy middle classes, who persist in keeping the low educational level of the peasants in the villages, and have but one aspiration, to become in their turn "merchants" of the type described by Ostrovsky.*~~

~~*Suburbs.—Moscow is surrounded by beautiful parks and pictur- esque suburbs. Of theformerone of the most frequented isthe Petrov- sky Park, to the north-west. A little farther out is the Petrovskoye-Razumovskoye estate, with an agricultural academy and its de- pendencies (botanical garden, experimental farm, &c.)._ Another large park and wood*~~

~~surround an imperial palace in the village of Ostankino. 'The private estates of Kuzminki, Kuskovo, and Kuntzevo are also surrounded by parks; the last has remains of a very old graveyard, supposed to belong to the pagan period. Twenty-eight miles westward from the cityis the Savvin-Storojevsky monastery, situated, like so many other Russian monasteries, in avery fertile country, amidst beautiful forests; it has a pretty cathedral, avich treasury, and library. Farther westward still is the New Jerusalem monastery erected by the patriarch Nikon.~~

~~859~~

~~In the south-west, on the right bank of the Moskva, which here makes a great bend to the south, are the Vorobiovy hills, which are accessible by steamer from Moscow, and afford one of the best views of the capital. In the bend of the Moskva is situated the Novo-Dyevitchiy convent, erected in 1525, and connected with many events of Russian history. It is now the burial-place of the Moscow aristocracy, and one of the richest nunneries in Russia. The village Arkhangelskoye has also a good park and a palace built by Rastrelli. Iliynskoye, formerly a private estate, was purchased by the imperial family in 1864.~~

~~In the south, on the road to Serpukhoff, is the village of Kolomenskoye, the residence of Alexis Mikhailovitch, with a church built in 1531 (a striking monument of Russian architecture, restored in 1880). Diakovo has also a church built in the 16th and 17th centuries—a pure example of the architecture of Moscow, recalling the temple of Vasili Blajennyi. One of the best sites in the neighbourhood of Moscow is occupied by the park of Tsaritzyno (11 miles from the Kursk railway station), purchased by Catherine II., with an unfinished palace and a beautiful park. The monastery Nikolo-Ugryeshskiy, 12 miles from the city, between the Kursk and Ryazan railways, also occupies a beautiful site, and is much visited by Moscow merchants, to venerate a holy picture by which Dmitry Donskoy is said to have been blessed before going to fight the Mongols.~~

~~In the north, the forest of Sokolniki, covering 43 square miles, with its radial alleys and numerous summer residences, is the part of Moscow most frequented by the middle classes. Close by, towards the east, is situated the Preobrajenskoye suburb, the centre of the nonconformists,~~

~~*and farther south the village of Izmailovo, with a home for invalids and a model farm for apiculture. To the west of Sokolniki is situated the wood of Mariina, the favourite resort of the merchants and "' merchants' sons," who there spend fabulous sums of money on choirs of Gipsy singers.*~~

~~*History.—The Russian annals first mention Moscow in 1147 as a place where Yuri Dolgoruki met with Svyatoslav of Syeversk and his allies. The site was inhabited from a very remote antiquity by the Merya and Mordvinians, whose remains are numerous in the neighbourhood, and it was well peopled by Great-Russians in the 12th century. To the end of the 13th century Moscow re- mained a dependency of the princes of Vladimir, and had to suffer from the raids of the Mongols, who burned and plundered it in 1237 and 1293. It is only under the rule of Daniil, son of Alex- ander Nevsky (1261-1302), that the prince of Moscow acquired some importance for the part he took in the wars against the Lithuanians. He annexed to his principality Kolomna, situated at the confluence of the Moskva with the Oka. His son in 1302 annexed Pereyaslavl Zalessky, and next year Mojaisk (taking thus possession of the Moskva from its head to its mouth), and so inaugurated a policy which lasted for centuries, and consisted in the annexation by purchase and other means of the neighbouring towns and villages. In 1300 the Kremlin, or fort, was enclosed by a strong wall of earth and wood, offering a protection to nu- merous emigrants from the Tver and Ryazan principalities who went to settle around the new city. Under John Kalita (1825- 1341) the principality of Vladimir—where the princes of Kieff and the metropolitan of Russia had taken refuge after the wars that desolated south-western Russia—became united with Moscow ; and in 1325 the metropolitan Peter established his seat at Moscow, giving thus a new importance and a powerful support to the young principality. In 1367 the Kremlin was enclosed by stone walls, which soon proved strong enough to resist the Lithuanians under Olgerd (1368 and 1371). The son and grandson of Kalita steadily pursued the same policy. The latter (Dmitry Donskoy) annexed the dominions of Starodub and Rostoff, and took part in the re- nowned battle of Kulikovo (1380), where the Russians ventured for the first time to oppose the Mongols in a great pitched battle. The church, which strongly supported the princes of Moscow, ascribed the presumed victory to him and to the holy pictures of the Moscow monasteries.*~~

~~At this time Moscow occupied a wide area covered with villages. The Kremlin had three cathedrals—old, small, and dark buildings, having narrow windows filled with mica-plates—which were sur- rounded by the plain wooden houses of the prince and his boyars.+ To the east of the Kremlin was the posad, or city, also enclosed by a wall, and even then an important centre for trade. Different parts of the town belonged to different princes. In 1366 Moscow suf- fered from pestilence. Two years after the battle of Kulikovo it was taken and plundered (for the last time) by the khan (Toktamish).~~

~~The gradual increase of the principality continued during the first half of the 15th century, and at the death of Vasili IL. the Blind, in 1462, it included not only the whole of what is now the government of Moscow, but also large parts of the present govern- ments of Kaluga, Tula, Vladimir, Nijni- Novgorod, Kostroma, Vyatka, Vologda, Yaroslav, and Tver. Still the prince, although assuming, like several others, the title of Great Prince, had simply~~

~~Ce eS SS SS 1 The name of boyars, or bolars, was given to the descendants of the former military bands of the princes, who had become counsellors and landowners. ~~

~~860~~

~~a little more influence than other independent rulers in the affairs of north-eastern Russia, and was recognized as the eldest prince by the khans. The towns which recognized his supremacy were quite independent, and only paid to his representatives the judi- ciary taxes, in exchange for military protection. It is only under Ivan Il]. (called the Great by some Russian historians) that the~~

~~rince of Moscow asserted his claims on other parts of Russia, and called himself " Ruler of all Russia" (Hospodar vseya Htosit). At was about this time, when the wealth of Moscow was rapidly in-~~

~~creasing by the extension of its trade, that the embellishment of~~

~~*the town begau. In room of the old cathedral Uspeusky, a new structure was built by Fioraventi of Bologna, aided by N ovgorod masons. 'The cathedral Arkhangelsky was also rebuilt, and a third, Blagovyeschensky, was erected, as well as a stone palace and other buildings. The Kremlin was fortified by strong towers, and the houses and churches built close to the walls were destroyed. In 1520 Moscow was said to contain 45,000 houses and 100,000 in- habitants. Its trade was very active. Ivan IV. finally annexed Novgorod and Pskov to Moscow, and subdued Kazan and Astra- khan. But after this reign Moscow suffered for a long time a series of misfortunes, In 1547 two dreadful conflagrations destroyed nearly all the city, and a few days later the khan of the Crimea advanced against it with 100,000 men. He was compelled to retire from the banks of the Oka, but in 1571, taking advantage of the state into which Russia was brought by the extravagances of Ivan, he took Moscow and burned all the town outside the Kremlin. The gates of the Kremlin having been shut, thousands of people died in the flames, and the annals record that of the 200,000 who then formed the population of Moscow, only 30,000 remained. In 1591 the Mongols were again in Moscow and avenged their repulse from the Kremlin on the inhabitants of the open town.*~~

~~*By the end of the 16th century Moscow was a large city, not less than 14 miles in circumference. The " Great Posad," or city, containing several Gostinoy Dvors for merchants of all nationali- ties, was enclosed in 1534 by a trench and stone wall, which still exist. The '* White Town" which enclosed the Kremlin and Great Posad from west and north was also fortified, in 1586, by a stone wall (destroyed in the 18th century) ; and in 1588 a third enclosure, a palisaded carthen wall, the Zemlyanoy-Gorod, was begun, including all the town that surrounded the three former subdivi- sions ; it remained until the end of the 18th century. Foreigners who visited Moscow spoke with astonishment of its wealth and its beauty. But the internal affairs of the capital were in very bad case. During the century, owing to the increase of population, new annexations, and a lively trade, the power of the boyars had gradually increased. The peasants who settled on their lands, or on the estates of the prince given to boyars, had gradually become their serfs; and the Teele tendency of the boyars, supported by the wealthier middle classes (which had also a rapid develop- ment in the same century), was to become rulers of Russia, like*~~

~~*the noblesse of Poland. During the reign of Theodore, Boris Godunoff, the regent, ordered the murder of the heir to the throne, Demetrius, son of Ivan IV., and himself became czar of Russia. Moscow suffered severely in the struggle which ensued, especially when the populace rose and exterminated the Polish garrison, on which occasion the whole of the town outside the Kremlin was again burned and plundered. But in compensation it had acquired in the eyes of the nation a greatly-increased moral importance, as a stronghold against foreign invasions. The monastery of 'Troitsa, which the Poles besieged without taking, was invested with a higher sanctity. The town also by and by recovered its commercial importance, and this the more as other commercial cities were ruined, or fell into the hands of foreigners ; and thirty years after 1612 Moscow was again a wealthy city. Owing, however, to the ever-increasing concentration of power in the hands of the czars, and the steady development of autocracy, it lost much of its political importance, and assumed more and more, especially under Alexis Mikhailovitch, the character of a private estate of the czar, its suburbs becoming mere dependencies of his vast household.*~~

~~*During the whole of the 17th century Moscow continued to be the scene of many troubles and internal struggles. The people several times revolted against the favourites of the czar, and were subdued only by cruel executions, in which the streltzy—a class of citizens and merchants rendering hereditary military service— supported the czar. Afterwards appeared the raskol or noncon- formist movement, and in 1648, when the news spread that Stenka Razin was advancing on Moscow "' to settle his accounts with the boyars," the populace was kept from rising only by severe repres- sive measures and by the defeat of the invader. Later on, the streltzy themselves engaged in a series of rebellions, which led the youthful Peter I. to shed rivers of blood. The opposition encoun- tered at Moscow by his plans of reforming Russia according to his ideal of military autocracy, the conspiracies of the boyars and mer- chants, the distrust of the mass of the people, all compelled him afterwards to leave the city, and to seek, as his ancestors had done, for a new capital. This he founded on the very confines of the military empire he was trying to establish.*~~

~~*In the course of the 18th century Moscow became the seat of a passive and discontented opposition to the St Petersburg Govern- ment. Peter I., wishing to see Moscow like other capitals of western Europe, ordered that only stone houses should be built within the walls of the town, that the streets should be paved, and so on; but his orders were only — executed. In 1722 the Kremlin was restored. In 1739 the city became once more the prey of a great conflagration ; two others followed in 1748 and 1753, and gave an opportunity for enlarging some streets and squares. In 1755 the first Russian university was founded at Moscow. Catherine II. tried to conciliate the nobility, and applied herself to benefit the capital with new and useful buildings, such as the senate house, the foundlings' and several other hospitals, salt stores, &e. The cemeteries within the town were closed after the plague of 1771; several streets were enlarged, and the squares cleared of the small shops that encumbered them. Water was brought by an aqueduct from the Mytischi villages. In 1787 the city had 303 churches, 24 monasteries and convents, 8965 houses (of which 1595 were of stone), one printing-office, and 314 manufactories and larger workshops.*~~

~~*The last public disaster was experienced by Moscow in 1812. On 13th September, six days after the battle of Borodino, the Russian troops evacuated Moscow, leaving 11,000 wounded, and the next day the French occupied the Kremlin. The same night, while Napoleon was waiting for a deputation of Moscow notables, and received only a deputation of the rich raskolnik merchants, the capital was set on fire by its own inhabitants, the Gostinoy Dvor, with its stores of wine, spirits, and chemical stuffs, becoming the first prey of the flames. 'The inhabitants abandoned the city, and it was pillaged by the French troops, as well as by Russians them- selves, and the burning of Moscow became the signal of a general rising of the peasants against the French. The want of supplies and the impossibility of wintering in a ruined city, continually attacked by Cossacks and peasants, compelled Napoleon to leave Moscow on 19th October, after he had unsuccessfully tried to blow up certain parts of the Kremlin. (P. «A. K.)*~~

~~*MOSELLE. See Rarne.*~~

~~*MOSER, Jonann Jaxos (1701-1785), jurist, was born at Stuttgart on 18th January 1701. IIe studied at the university of Tiibingen, where, at the early age of nineteen, he became professor extraordinarius of law. A year later he resigned his chair, with the expectation of receiving an appointment at Vienna, but this was refused him on his declining to join the Catholic Church. From 1729 he for some years held an ordinary professorship of law at Tiibingen, and in 1736 he accepted a chair and directorship in the university of Frankfort-on-the-Oder. On account, however, of differences with King William I. of Prussia, he resigned these in 1739 and retired to Ebersdorf, a village in the principality of Reuss, where for several years he devoted himself wholly to study, and especially to the production of his Deutsches Staatsrecht. In 1751 he was called back to Wiirtemberg as '" landschaftsconsulent," and in 1759 was imprisoned at IIohentwiel on account of the steps he had taken in connexion with this office against certain tyrannical proceedings of the duke. In 1764 he received his liberty and was restored to office, but from that time took little part in political affairs. IIe died 30th September 1785.*~~

~~*Moser was the first to discuss in an adequate form the subject of European international law, and he is the most voluminous German writer on public law. In all, he wrote more than 500 volumes, his principal works being Deutsches Staatsrecht, 1737-1754 ; Newes Deutsches Staatsrecht, 1766-1775 ; Deutsches Staatsarchiv, 1751-1757 ; Grundriss der heutigen Staatsverfassung von Dertsehland, 1754.*~~

~~*See Schmid, Das Leben J. J. Moser's, 1868 ; Schulze, J. J. Moser, der Vater des Deutsehen Staatsrechts, 1869.*~~

~~*MOSES. Of the life of Moses we have few certain details, though the history of Israel bears witness to the importance of his work. To what has been said under TsRAEL there will here be added a brief summary of what has been handed down about him. IIis origin and the history of his childhood can be read in Exod. i, ii. (comp. vi. 16 sg.); the statements there given are enlarged and modified in the Jewish Midrash, particularly as we find it in Josephus and Philo.! The daughter of Pharaoh, we are*~~

~~*told, was called Thermutis (Ant, ii. 9, 5), or Merris (Euseb.,*~~

~~*1 Tn still more fantastic form in the Palestinian Targum on Exodus, the details of which need not be repeated here,*~~

~~*MOSES*~~

~~*Prep. Ev., ix. 27); she named the boy Mwioys, not because she used the Hebrew verb mtn to express the fact that he was drawn out of the water, but because the Egyptian word for water was po, and vons applies to those who have been delivered from it (Ant., ii. 9, 6; comp. Philo, ed. Mangey, ii, 83; Euseb., d.c., ix. 28), She took care to have him trained in all the wisdom of the Egyptians (Acts vii. 22) and in that of the Greeks, Assyrians, and Chaldeans as well (Philo, ii. 84). To his great intellectual endowments corresponded his personal beauty, of which Josephus speaks in extravagant terms (Ant., ii. 9, 6-7). It was on account of this beauty that, when on one occasion, as a young man, he led an Egyptian army against Meroe, the Ethiopian princess Tharbis opened the gates of the capital to him in oo to make him her husband (Anz., ii. 10; comp. Numb. a, 1h).*~~

~~*For reasons explained in Exod. ii. 11 sg., Moses left the land of Pharaoh and came to Midian to the Kenite priest Jethro (also called Hobab Ben Raguel and Raguel), whose daughter Zipporah he married, becoming by her the father of two sons, Gershom and Eliezer (Exod. ii. 21 sq.; xviii. 2 sq.). During his stay in Midian he received, at the foot of Sinai (Horeb), the divine revelation at the burning bush whereby he was called to become the liberator of Israel from Egyptian bondage. With much reluctance he at last accepted this vocation, and, already expected by his brother Aaron and the elders, returned to his people.' Arrived in Egypt, he associated Aaron with him as his interpreter, being himself no orator, but a man of counsel and action, and appeared before Pharaoh to demand of the king in Jehovah's name permission for the people to go with flocks and herds into the wilderness to celebrate there a festival (the spring festival of the Passover) in honour of their God. Jehovah gave emphasis to the demand by great signs and wonders,—the plagues of Egypt, which have their explanation for the most part in evils to which Egypt is periodically liable, but are treated by Israelite tradition as the*~~

~~*weapons of Jehovah in his ever-intensifying conflict with the king and the gods of Egypt. At length, by the slaying of the first-born, the stubbornness of Pharaoh was broken, so that he consented to, and even urged, the de- parture of the Hebrews. By and by, however, he changed his mind, and, setting out in pursuit of the Hebrews, over- took them at the Red Sea; but Jehovah fought for them, and annihilated Pharaoh's chariots and all his host. In order to present themselves in proper festal array at the celebration for the sake of which they were going into the wilderness, the Hebrew women had borrowed dresses and ornaments from those of Egypt; the Egyptians could now only blame themselves and their hostile conduct if those articles were not returned."*~~

~~*By the miracle wrought at the Red Sea Moses was pointed out to the Hebrews as the man of God, to whom accordingly they now committed the task of caring for their outward life as well as their spiritual guidance. He led them first to Sinai, where the law was revealed and the worship in connexion with the ark of the covenant insti- tuted. When he had communed face to face with the Godhead for forty days on the holy mountain, the skin of his face shone so that he had to wear a veil (hence the horns, properly rays, on his forehead). Driven from Sinai in consequence of their worship of the golden calf, the Israelites removed to Kadesh with the view of entering*~~

~~*1 On the road occurred the remarkable incident which, in the view of the narrator, led to the circumcision of infants being substituted*~~

~~*for that of the bridegroom (Exod. iv. OA, 255 pos pan), to mark the substitution,—compare the euphemism in Isa. vii. 20).*~~

~~*2 Quite contrary to the sense of the Biblical narrative, Justin (xxxvi. 2, 13) says, " Sacra ASgyptiorum furto abstulit ;" and still more per- verse is the gloss which Ewald, proceeding upon this expression of Justin, gives.*~~

~~*861*~~

~~*Palestine. But this plan was defeated by their unbelief and faintheartedness, and, as a punishment, they were compelled to sojourn*~~

~~*forty years in the wilderness of Kadesh (Paran, Sin). It was here and now that the people went to school with Moses; here, at the sanctuary of the camp, he declared law and judgment; and here, according to the view of the oldest tradition, the foundations of the Torah were laid (Exod. xviii.). The region of Kadesh was also the scene of almost all the miracles and other cir- cumstances we read about Moses. Here he showed himself to be at once the father and mother of the people, their judge, priest, and seer. It was not till towards the very close of his life that he led the Israelites from Kadesh into northern Moab, which he wrested from the Amorite king, Sihon of Heshbon. Here he died on Mount Pisgah or Nebo, after taking leave of the people in the great legisla- tive address of Deuteronomy. According to Deuteronomy xxxiv. 6, he "was buried in a valley in the land of Moab, _ . . but no man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day." * As his successor in the leadership, Moses had named Joshua ben Nun, but the real heirs to his position and influence were the priests at the sanctuary of the ark of the covenant. Of his personal character the Bible tells us nothing (for yy in Numb. xii. 3 means only " heavily burdened"); but later Judaism is all the more at liberty on this account to expatiate upon it (see especially J osephus, Ant., iv. 8, 49).*~~

~~*Such in brief réswmé are the accounts of Moses given in the Bible4 and the Midrash. In addition to these we have also the statements of Hellenistic writers, preserved chiefly in the Contra Apionem of Josephus. These are all of an Egyptian complexion, and probably embody no ancient and independent tradition, but, in all that relates to the Hebrews, where they do not rest upon pure conjec- ture, merely go back upon obscure rumours of Jewish origin and dress them up after the manner of the Midrash—only in a con- trary sense, with hatred and not with love—and then seek to fit them as well as may be into the Egyptian history and chronology as known from other sources. The great number of new proper names of places and persons which occur in the writings of Manetho and bis like cannot be urged against this view, for the Midrash also is full of them. 'The very name Osarsiph, given to Moses himself, moreover, suggests a suspicion of dependence on the Asaphsuph, "mixed multitude" of Numb. xi. 4 (comp. Exod. xii. 38); what is said in these places is known to have played a great part in the rise of the idle Egyptian tales about the origin of the Jews and of their lawgiver.*~~

~~*For literature, see the various commentaries on the Pentateuch, and especially Dillmann on Exodus. (J. WE.)*~~

~~*MOSES oF CHorENE was a native of Khor'ni ° in Tar6n, a district of the Armenian province of Turuberan. Accord- ing to the only trustworthy authority—the History of Armenia® which bears his name—he was a pupil of the two fathers of Armenian literature, the patriarch or catho- licos Sahak the Great and the vartabed Mesréb. Shortly after 431 he was sent by these men to Alexandria to study the Greek language and literature, and thus prepare him- self for the task of translating Greek writings into Armenian. Moses took his journey by Edessa and the sacred places of Palestine. After finishing his studies in the Egyptian capital he set sail for Greece ; but the ship was driven by contrary winds to Italy, and he seized the opportunity of paying a flying visit to Rome. He then visited Athens, and towards the end of winter (440) arrived in Constantinople, whence he set out on his homeward journey. On his arrival in Armenia he found that his patrons were both dead. The History of Armenia speaks of its author as an old, infirm man, constantly engaged in the work of translating.' In the later Armenian tradition*~~

~~*Se ee Tea ae 3 The legend of his assumption is of later growth ; see the apocryphal*~~

~~*Assumptio Moysis (APOCALYPTIC LITERATURE, vol. ii. p. 177), and*~~

~~*compare Luke ix. 30, 33; Jude 9. ;*~~

~~*4 Outside of the Hexateuch, however, he is almost never mentioned.*~~

~~*5 Of, Sukias Somal, Quadro della storia letteraria di Armenia, p.*~~

~~*94 sq. 6 iii, 61 sq., 68, 65.*~~

~~*7 On linguistic grounds, the Mechitarists ascribe to him the transla-*~~

~~*tion of Eusebius's Chronicle and of the Pseudo-Callisthenes.*~~

~~*we find other notices of this celebrated man,'—such as, that he was the nephew of Mesrdéb, that he was publicly complimented by the emperor Marcian, that he had been ordained bishop of Bagrewand by the patriarch Giut, and that he was buried in the church of the Apostolic Cloister at Mush in the district of Tarén ; but these accounts must be received with great caution. This remark applies especially to the statement of Thomas Ardsruni,? that Moses, like his Hebrew prototype, lived to the age of 120 years, and recorded his own death in a fourth book of his great work.? The same caution must be extended to another tradition, based on an arbitrary construction of a passage in Samuel of Ani,' which places his death in the year 489.*~~

~~*Of the works of Moses® the best known is the History of Armenia,§ or, as the more exact title runs, the Genealogi- cal Account of Great Armenia. It consists of three books, and reaches down to the death of Saint Mesr6éb, in the second year of Jazdegerd II. (17th February 440).'—It is dedicated to Sahak Bagratuni (who was afterwards chosen to lead the revolted Armenians in the year 481), as the man under whose auspices the work had been undertaken. This work, which in course of time acquired canonical authority among the Armenians, is partly compiled from sources which we yet possess, viz., the Life of Saint Gregory by Agathangelos, the Armenian translation of the Syriac Doctrine of the Apostle Addai, the Antiquities and the Jewish War of Josephus, and above all the History of Mar Abas Katina (still preserved in the extract from the book of Sebéos),8 who, however, did not. write, as Moses alleges, in Syriac and Greek, at Nisibis, about 131 B.c., but was a native of Medsurch, and wrote in Syriac alone about 383 A.D., or shortly thereafter. Besides these, Moses refers to a whole array of Greek authorities, which were known to him from his constant use of Eusebius, but which cannot possibly have related all that he makes them relate.® Although Moses assures us that he is going to rely entirely upon Greek authors, the contents of his work show that it is mainly drawn from native sources. He is chiefly indebted to the popular ballads and legends of Armenia, and it is to the use of such materials that the work owes its perma- nent value. Its importance for the history of religion and mythology is, in truth, very considerable, a fact which it is the great merit of Emin 1° and Dulaurier ! to have first pointed out. For political history,*~~

~~*on the other hand, it is of much less value than was formerly assumed. In particular, it is not a history of the people or of the country, but a history of the Armenian aristocracy, and, in*~~

~~*Collected by Langlois, Collection des historiens de U' Arménie, ii. 47 sq.*~~

~~*2 In Brosset, Collection d'historiens Arméniens, i. 68.*~~

~~*3 There is not the slightest allusion elsewhere to any such book,*~~

~~*4 In Brosset, ii. 387.*~~

~~*® Complete edition of the Mechitarists, Venice, 18483; new ed., 1865, 8vo.*~~

~~*6 The oldest MS, is that of S. Lazaro of the 12th century. Col- lations of MSS. of Etchmiadzin and Jerusalem are given by Agop Garinian, Tiflis, 1858, 4to. The book has been edited and translated by Whiston, London, 1736, 4to ; and by Le Vaillant de Florival, Venice and Paris, s.a. (1841), 2 vols. 8vo.*~~

~~*7 The commencement of this king's reign has been fixed by Néldeke (Geschichte der Sassaniden aus Tabari, p. 423) as 4th August 438 ; and this date has subsequently been established by documentary evidence from the fact of the martyrdom of Pethion (see Hoffmann, Ausziige aus Syrischen Akten persischer Martyrer, p. 67) ' 8 Translated in Langlois, i. 195 sq.*~~

~~*® For the following statements, the proofs may be found in the article ' Ueber die Glaubwiirdigkeit der Armenischen Geschichte des Moses von Khoren," by the present writer, in the Berichte der phil. ie Classe der Kénigl. Stichs. Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften, 1876, pe 1 sq. :*~~

~~*The Epic Songs of Ancient Armenia (Arm.), Moscow, 1850.*~~

~~*"1 " Etudes sur les chants historiques et les traditions populaires de Vancienne Arménie," in the Journ. Asiat., iv., sér. 19 (1852), p. 5 sq.*~~

~~*MOSES*~~

~~*opposition to the Mamikonian tendency which pervades the rest of the older Armenian historical literature, it is written in the interest of the rival Bagratunians. Down to the 3d century it is proved by the contemporary Graeco-Roman annals to be utterly untrustworthy ; but even for the times of Armenian Christianity it must be used far more cautiously than has been done, for example, by Gibbon. The worst feature is the confusion in the chronology, which, strange to say, is most hopeless in treating of the con- temporaries of Moses himself. What can be thought of a writer who assigns to Jazdegerd I. (399-420) the eleven years of his predecessor Bahrém IV., and the twenty-one years of Jazdegerd I. to his successor Bahram V. (420-439) 4 The present writer }* formerly attempted to explain this unhistorical character of the narrative from a tendency arising out of the peculiar ecclesiastical and political cir-*~~

~~*'cumstances of Armenia, situated as it was between the*~~

~~*eastern Roman and the Persian empires, circumstances which were substantially the same in the 5th as they were in the two following centuries. In the course of further investigations, however, he has come to the conclusion that, besides the many false statements which Moses of Khor'ni makes about his authorities, he gives a false account of himself. That is to say, the author of the History of Armenia is not the venerable translator of the 5th century, but some Armenian writing under his name during the years between 634 and 642. The proof is furnished on the one hand by the geographical and ethno- graphical nomenclature of a later period and similar anachronisms,!° which run through the whole book and are often closely incorporated with the narrative itself, and on the other hand by the identity of the author of the History with that of the Geography, a point on which all doubt is excluded by a number of individual affinities,!* not to speak of the similarity in geographical terminology. The critical decision as to the authorship of the Geography settles the question for the Hvstory also.*~~

~~*The Geography is a meagre sketch, based mainly on the Choro- graphy of Pappus of Alexandria (in the end of the 4th century), and indirectly on the work of Ptolemy. Only Armenia, the Persian empire, and the neighbouring regions of the East are independently described from local*~~

~~information, and on these sections the value of the little work depends. Since the first published text » contains names like “ Russians ” and “ Crimea,” Saint Martin in his edition * denied that it was written by Moses, and assigned its origin to the 10th century. It was shown, however, by L. Indjidjean!’ that these are interpolations, which are not found in better manuscripts. And in fact it is quite evident that a book which gives the division of the Sasanid empire into four spahbehships in pure old Persian names cannot possibly have been composed at a long interval after the time of the Sasanide. But of course it is equally clear that such a book cannot be a genuine work of Moses of Khor’ni; for that division of the empire dates from the early part of the reign of King Chosrau I. (581-579). Accordingly the latest editor, K. P. Patkanow,!® to whom we are indebted for the best text of the~~

~~12 ** Ueber die Glaubwiirdigkeit,” &c., p. 8 sq.~~

~~13 Instances of these may be found in i. 14, where the arrangement of Armenian provinces I., II., III., IV., introduced in the year 536, is carried back to Aram, an older contemporary of Ninus; and in the passage iii, 18, according to which Shapfir II. penetrated to Bithynia, although the Persians did not reach that till 608.~~

~~14 See the confusion, common to both books, between Cappadocia I. and Armenia I., in consequence of which Mazaka and Mount Argéus are transferred to the latter locality (Hist.,i. 14; Geogr., Saint Martin’s ed., li. p. 354); also the passages which treat of China and Dchenbakur (Hist., ii. 81; Geogr., ii. p. 876), &c.~~

~~15 Edition with translation by Whiston, London, 1736, 4to.~~

~~16 In the Mémoires historiques et géographiques sur 0 Arménie (Paris, 1819, 8vo), ii. p. 801 sq.~~

~~7 Antiquities of Armenia (Arm.), iii. p. 303 sq.~~

~~18 See Noldeke’s Tabari, p. 155 sq.~~

~~19 Armjanskaja gcographija vit. wika po r. Ch. (pripisiw awschajasja Moiseju Chorenskomu), St Petersburg, 1877, 8vo. Before him Kiepert (in the Mfonatsb. d. Berliner Akad., 1873, p. 599 sq.) had substantially arrived at the right conclusion when he 'assigned the portions of the Geography referring to Armenia to the time between Justinian and Maurice. : 6~~

~~Geography, is of opinion that we have in it a writing of the 7th century. In this judgment we must concur; and, if the limits within which the Geoyraphy was composed are to be more nearly defined, we may say that, from isolated traces of Arab rule? (which in Armenia dates from 651), it must have been written certainly after that year, and perhaps about the year 657."~~

~~Another extant work of Moses is a Manual of Rhetoric, in ten books, dedicated to his pupil Theodorus. It is drawn up after Greek models, in the taste of the rhetoric and sophistry of the later imperial period. The examples are taken from Hermogenes, Theon, Aphthonius, and Libanius ; although the author is also acquainted with lost writings, ¢.g., the Peliades, of Euripides. On account of the divergence of its style from that of the History of Armenia, Armenian scholars? have hesitated to ascribe the Rhetorie to Moses of Khor'ni; but, from what has been said above, this is rather to be regarded as a proof of its authenticity.~~

~~Smaller works bearing the same honoured name' are—the Letter to Sahak Arderuni; the History of the Holy Mother of God and her Image (in the cloister of Hogotsvanch in the district Andzevatsi of the province of Vaspurakan), which is also addressed to Sahak ; and the Panegyrie on Saint Rhipsime. Of the sacred poems attri- buted to him, there is only one 'short prayer, contained in the hymnal of Sharakan, which can really claim him as its author.~~

~~Of works passing under the name of Moses of Khor'ni, the follow- ing are regarded by the historians of Armenian literature as spurious : a History (distinct from the Pancgyrie) of the wanderings of Saint Rhipsime and her companions ; a Homily on the transfiguration of Christ ; a~~

~~*Discourse on Wisdom (i.e., the science of grammar) ; the Commentaries on grammar (an exposition of Dionysius Thrax). In the case of the grammatical writings, it has been suggested that there may have been some confusion between Moses of Khor'ni and a Moses of Siunich, who lived in the 7th century. (A. v. G.)*~~

~~*MOSHEIM, Jowann Lorenz von (c. 1694-1755), well known as a church historian, but also distinguished in his day as a master of eloquence, was born at Liibeck on the 9th of October. There is some uncertainty as to the year, but the probability is in favour of 1693 or 1694. HIe received a somewhat irregular education at the gymnasium of his native place, and afterwards entered the university of Kiel, where he took his master's degree in 1718. HIis first appearance in the field of literature was in a polemical tract against Toland, Vindicie antique Christianorum dis-ciplinz (1720), which was soon followed by a volume of Observationes sacre (1721). These works, along with the reputation he had acquired as a lecturer on philosophy, and also as a fervent and eloquent preacher while acting as assistant to Albrecht zum Felde, his teacher and future father-in-law, secured for him a call to a theological chair at HIelmstadt, in 1723. The Institutionum HIistoria Eccle- siastice Libri IV. appeared in 1726 (2 vols., 12mo), and in the same year he was appointed by the duke of Bruns- wick abbot of Marienthal, to which dignity and emolu- ment the abbacy of Michaelstein was added in the following year. Mosheim was much consulted by the authorities when the new university of Géttingen was being formed ; especially had he to do with the framing of the statutes of the theological faculty, and with the provisions for making the theologians independent of the ecclesiastical courts. But having signed in 1726 a promise to remain in HIelmstidt he was unable to accept the call to the Georgia Augusta which was urgently pressed upon him, until the year 1747, when the duke of Brunswick at last released him from his obligation. To enhance the dignity he already possessed as a learned and brilliant theological professor at Géttingen, a new office was specially created for him, that of chancellor, which, however, proved some- what burdensome, exciting the jealousy of the nobles whom he governed, HIe died at Géttingen on 9th September me eee Sr OPN ee i*~~

~~1 The passage about the trade of Basrah, which was founded in 635, is decisive on this point (Saint Martin's edition, ii. p. 368).~~

~~2 The peculiar interest which the author (Saint Martin, ii. p. 340) takes in the origin of the Slavs in Thrace is best explained by the war against them which called the emperor Constans II. away from the East in the year 657. In other respects the writer displays the most complete indifference, and even ignorance, with regard to the state of affairs in the West.~~

~~3 Cf. Langlois, ii, 49, 4 Cf, Langlois, /.e.~~

~~1755, shortly after the completion of a new and greatly improved edition of his Church History.~~

~~For Mosheim's place as an ecclesiastical historian, see CHURCH History, vol. v. p. 765. In this department of literature, in addition to the Jnstitutiones must be specially mentioned his De Rebus Christianorum ante Constantinum Magnum Commentarit (1753), and Gibbon's just criticism : "Less profound than Petavius, less independent than Le Clerc, less ingenious than Beausobre, the historian Mosheim is full, rational, correct, and moderate." His exegetical writings, characterized by learning and good sense, include Cogitationes in N. T. loc. select. (1726), and expositions of 1 Cor. (1741) and the two Epistles to Timothy (1755). In his sermons (Heilige Reden) considerable eloquence is shown, and a mastery of style which justifies the position he held as president of the German Society. There are two English versions of the Insti- tutes, that of Maclaine, published in 1764, and that of Murdock (1832), which is much more correct. The latter was revised and re-edited by Reid in 1848. An English translation of the De Rebus Christianorum, begun in 1813 by Vidal, was completed and edited by Murdock in 1851.~~

~~MOSQUE (Jémi', or more fully Masjid Jami', the place of congregational prayer). Owing to the almost complete absence of ritual in the Moslem worship, the mosque, at least in its earlier forms, is one of the simplest of all re- ligious buildings,—its normal arrangement being an open court (Sahn) surrounded by a covered cloister (Liwdn), in the centre~~

~~*of which is a cistern for the ablutions requisite before prayer (Mida'a) ;5 the side of the mosque which is towards Mecca is occupied by a roofed building (JJaksira), or place reserved for prayer, sometimes screened off from the court, but frequently quite open towards it. In the centre of this sanctuary is a niche (Jfhrdb or Kibla) showing the direction of Mecca; and by the side of the niche is a lofty pulpit (fimbar). In front of the pulpit is a raised platform (Dakka) from which certain exhortations are chanted, and near it one or more seats and lecterns combined from which chapters of the Koran are read to the people.*~~

~~*Minarets (Ma ddhin, sing. Ma'dhana) were not built*~~

~~*during the first half-century after the Flight, but now as*~~

~~*a rule no mosque is without at least one. From the upper gallery of this the Jfoedhdhin announces to the faithful the times for prayer,—five times during the day, and twice at night. Blind men are generally selected for this office, so that they may not overlook the neighbouring houses.*~~

~~*Most mosques have endowed property, which is admi- nistered by a warden (Wdzir), who also appoints the imams and other officials. The larger mosques have two iméms: one is called (in Arabia and Egypt) the Khatib, and he preaches the sermon on Fridays (the Moslem Sabbath) ; the other, the Rdtib, reads the Koran, and recites the five daily prayers, standing close to the Mthrdb, and \eading the congregation, who repeat the prayers with him, and closely follow his postures. The imams do not form a priestly sect ; they generally have other occupations, such as teaching in a school or keeping a shop, and may at any time be dismissed by the warden, in which case they lose the title of imam. Doorkeepers and attendants, to sweep the floor, trim the lamps, and perform other menial offices, are attached to each mosque, in numbers varying according to its size and endowment. Moslem women, as a rule, are expected to say their prayers at home, but in some few mosques they are admitted to one part specially screened off for them. 'This is the case in the mosque of Sitta Zainab in Cairo. In the Aks4 mosque at Jerusalem there is a latticed balcony for the women, who can see without being visible to the male worshippers below.*~~

~~*The greatest possible splendour both of material and workmanship is often lavished on the building and its*~~

~~*5 In mosques frequented by Turks or other members of the Hanafi sect running water is provided from a raised tank with flowing jets, called a hanafiya after the sect who require it. Other Sunnis are content to wash in a stagnant tank. _*~~

~~*fittings. The whole outside is frequently decorated with the most elaborate surface-carving in stone or marble,—the pavement of the richest marbles, inlaid in intricate patterns, the walls panelled in a similar way, or decorated with the most minute mosaics of glass, mother-of-pearl, agates and other costly stones. The central niche and the pulpit are of special magnificence ; and, if the latter is of wood, it is often covered with delicate ivory carvings, and inlay of pearl and ebony. Very beautiful surface-ornament, executed in hard stucco, and enriched with gold and colours, is used to decorate arches, wall surfaces, and the penden- tives of domes, which latter generally have the so-called "'stalactite" form of ornament—one of great beauty and complexity. The woodwork of doors, screens, and ceilings is frequently very gorgeous with carving, inlay, and ela-*~~

~~*borate painting ; the whole of the doors outside are often*~~

~~*covered with very delicate pierced and embossed work in bronze, or more rarely iron. The magnificent tiles from Persia, Damascus, and Rhodes, enamelled in brilliant blue, green, and red, on a white ground, are often used to cover the walls. Traceried windows in pierced marble or stucco work often occur; these are filled with brilliant coloured glass, always in very small pieces, forming a transparent mosaic of jewel-like richness.1 Lamps of enamelled glass, or of bronze inlaid with silver, were once common, but are now rapidly disappearing.*~~

~~*Some mosques, especially the Kartibin mosque at Fez in Morocco, possess a collection of magnificent illuminated MSS., chiefly copies of the Koran and other religious books ; in the large collection at Fez, MSS. of*~~

Aristotle's Natural History, with the works of Averroes and other commenta- tors, exist in considerable number ; some few of the MSS. are as early as the 10th century.

Plans of Mosques.—Considerable diversities exist in the plan and arrangement of mosques in various countries, either because the Moslem conquerors adopted to some extent the existing buildings and architecture of the conquered people, or on account of the new mosque being built on a site already cramped by surrounding buildings. The first of these causes influenced to some extent the mosques of India, and to a much greater extent those of European Turkey. The second cause, the cramped site, especially in Cairo, created a special type of plan. Nevertheless, when free from such disturbing influences, there is one normal plan adopted, at least in early times, by the Mos- lems in all countries—from India to Cordova, and from northern Syria to Egypt.2 This normal plan is a very simple one, and is the natural product of a country like Arabia, unskilled in architecture, where land was worth but little,.and timber very scarce. (See fig. 1.)

Though not the earliest, the great mosque of Cordova is the most magniticent, and in the main the best preserved, of this typical form.? It was begun in 784-5 by the caliph 'Abd al-Rahman I. (Abderame) and completed by his son Hisham in 793-4 ; thongh it was afterwards enlarged, and then to some extent injured by addi- tions—the work of the Christians, who made it into a cathedral—yet it still remains but little altered, except by the loss of its mag- nificent carved and inlaid wood ceiling and sumptuous Mimbar. It consists (omitting recent additions) of two main parts, a large cloistered _open court, with at one side a covered building for prayer. In one respect only it differs from the usual plan: the open court is generally much larger than the roofed space, whereas at Cordova it is smaller. For the sake of brevity this arrange- ment will, in the rest of the article, be referred to as the "' normal

plan." In spite of neglect and alterations this mosque is still one of the most imposing buildings in the world. The long ranges of

1 See Coste, Architecture Arabe, 1837-39; Bourgoin, Les Arts Arabes, 1868; Prisse d'Avennes, Art Arabe, 1874-80; and Texier, DT Arménie et

~~*la Perse, 1842-52.*~~

~~*? The great mosque of Mxcca (q.v.) is unique in plan. account of the mosque of Medina, see MEDINa.*~~

~~*3 Contreras, Arte Arabe en Espafia, 1875; Academy, 19th Novem- ber 1881, " Mosque of Cordoba," by J. H. Middleton ; Mon. Arqui. de Espatta ; and Prangey, Mosquée de Cordoue.*~~

~~*For an*~~

~~*MOSQUE*~~

~~*aisles, nineteen from east to west and thirty-one from north to south—on their marble columns the spoils of many a Greek and Roman temple—seem to stretch almost endlessly in every direction, and each range of pillars appears to lose itself in the gloom of distance, so that from no point can any idea be formed of what is the real size of the whole building. The side towards the court was quite open, and all over the court orange-trees were planted at regular intervals, continuing the lines of the columns within, and set at the same distances apart ; so that aisles of orange-trees in long ranges covered the open space, just as the marble columns did within. No words can describe the jewel-like splendour of the mosaics in the sanctuary, which in complicated Arabesque patterns, mixed with elaborate Cufic inscriptions, cover the walls and even the arches, which cross and recross each other in the most fanciful and daring way, forming a sort of aisle round three sides of the sanctuary. There is documentary evidence to show that these glass mosaics, though of thoroughly Oriental design, are, like those in the mosques of Jerusalem and Damascus, the work of Christian artists from Byzantium.*~~

~~*The most important early mosques were all built on this normal plan, with but very slight variations. The following are some of the finest examples of this type :—*~~

~~*Mosque of 'Amr, Old Cairo, begun in 642 a.p., but much en- larged at the end of the 7th century, and afterwards partly rebuilt (see fig. 1).*~~

~~*Mosque of Sidi-'Okba at Kairawan in Tunis, latter part of 7th century.*~~

~~*Mosque of Sidi-'Okba near Biskra in Algeria, about 684.*~~

~~*Mosque of Edris at Fez in Morocco, end of 8th century.*~~

~~*Great mosque of Damascus, 708.*~~

~~*Great mosque of Cordova, 784-794 (described above).*~~

~~*Mosque of Ibn Tulin, Cairo, 879.*~~

~~*Mosque of Al-Azhar, Cairo, begun about 970.*~~

~~*Great mosque at Old Delhi, 1196-1235.*~~

~~*The first of these, the mosque of 'Amr (see Coste, Architecture*~~

-

~~*vollincws*~~

~~*mM Fe i i 4 Af a MII i tka*~~

~~*OF*~~

~~*Sreet*~~

~~*GAARBAAAR Oo*~~

~~*Fic. 1.—Plan of Mosque of 'Amr, Old Cairo.*~~

~~*1. Kibla. 2. Mimbar. 8.Tombof'Amr. 4. Dakka. 5. Fountain for Ablu- tion. 6, 6. Rooms built later. 7. Minaret. 8. Latrines.*~~

~~*Arabe), is now ina partly ruined condition. Its east wall probably still retains some of the original work of 'Amr, who in 642 built a small mosque on the site of the present one. But little remains except its fine antiqne marble columns to tell of its former splendour in mosaic, stucco*~~

~~*reliefs enriched with painting, and magnificent inlaid wood ceilings and screens. According to Makrizi, it once contained 1290 MSS. of the Koran, and was lighted by 18,000 lamps. In general effect, like all mosques of this simple and extensive plan, it is very stately, from the vast size of its area, and its great number of closely-ranked columns and arches, the latter being of many forms—pointed, semicircular,*~~

~~*MOSQUE*~~

~~*and horse-shoe. Fig. 1 gives its plan as a good typical specimen of this normal type of mosque.*~~

~~*The mosque at Kairawan, Tunis, said to have been founded by 'Okba (see supra, p. 567), follows the normal plan, with 439 fine antique marble columns, horse-shoe arches, some pointed and others round, and flat ceiling of dark wood, once magnificently painted. Its sanctuary is ten aisles deep by seventeen wide. In the centre of the court is a marble fountain over the sacred well, said to communi- cate with the spring Zemzem at Mecca. Its minaret, a rather later addition, is very massive and stately ; it is square, in three stories, each battlemented, the walls battering considerably. The sanctuary is domed, and the Mihraéb is decorated with magnificent tiles. Adjoining the sanctuary is a small room for a library.*~~

~~*The other great mosque of Sidi-'Okba, built soon after his death in 682, and containing his tomb, is in Algeria near Biskra ; it much resembles the Kairawan mosque, but is less splendid, some of the columns being not of marble but of baked clay decorated with painting.*~~

~~*The great mosque of Fez, about the same date, is also very large and magnificent, with Mimbar and Mihrab richly ornamented with minute mosaics; it has also a fine inlaid and painted wood ceiling, and some elaborately-carved doors, It still possesses a fine library. (See Amici, Journey to Fez, 1878.)*~~

~~*The great mosque of Damascus was built on the site of a Christian basilica, erected by Theodosius in 395-408. From 636, when the Arabs conquered Damascus, until 708 this basilica was used jointly both by the*~~

~~*Christians and the Moslems. The basilica was then pulled down, and the present mosque built by the caliph Walid. It has the normal plan, and is 508 feet by 320 feet. Its sanctuary is only three aisles deep; it has a central dome on the south or Mecca side, and on the east and west a large porch. Sambhudi records that one of the conditions of peace con- cluded between the Byzantine emperor and Walid was that the emperor should furnish a certain number of workers in mosaic for the decoration of the mosques at Mecca, Medina, Jerusalem, and Damascus.*~~

~~*The mosque of Ahmed Ibn Tulin, in Cairo, completed in 879, has the normal plan, with the exceptional addition of an outer court, or wide passage, running round three sides of the rectangle, — probably to cut it off completely from the noise of the surrounding streets. It is built of brick, coated with delicate reliefs in stucco, once enriched with painting. The Mihradb has beautiful mosaics, and the Mimbar is a marvel of delicate carving and inlay. The pillars and arches are of brick enriched with elaborate stucco-work. It has a very remarkable minaret on the west side, with a spiral external staircase. The architect was a Copt, an Egyptian Chris- tian. It is perhaps the earliest important building in which the pointed arch is largely used.*~~

~~*The mosque Al-Azhar, " The Splendid," was built in the centre of New Cairo about 970 and, though frequently restored, has in the main been little altered. It is on the normal plan, with ranges of pointed and slightly horse-shoe arches, supported on more than 400 fine antique columns of marble and porphyry, chiefly from Roman buildings. Among its later decorations are magnificent wall-coverings of the most beautiful Persian tiles. It has a special interest in being the chief university of the Moslem world, con- taining some thousands of students (mujdwirin), for whom certain parts of the mosque (Riwék) are screened off, according to the country from which they come. Thus special parts are reserved for natives of the various provinces of Egypt, of Morocco, Syria, Arabia, India, Turkey, &c. Each student can, if he is too poor to hire lodgings, live, eat, and sleep in the mosque, Each has a large chest in which to keep his clothes and books; these are piled against the walls to a height of seven or eight feet. The students pay no fees, but the richer ones give presents to the lecturers, who sit on the matting in various parts of the sanctuary or*~~

~~*cloister, while the students sit round each lecturer in a circle. The usual course of study lasts for three years, though some students remain for much longer. The chief of the lecturers, called the Sheikh al-Azhar, receives about £100 a year, the others little or nothing, as regular pay. The Koran, sacred and secular law, logic, poetry, and arithmetic, with some medicine and geography, are the chief subjects of study.*~~

~~*Of mosques which are not built on the normal plan the earliest and most important are the two in the Hardm al-Sherif (High Sanctuary) at Jerusalem (see vol. xiii. p. 642).*~~

~~*The Kubbet al-Sakhra (Dome of the Rock), popularly, but wrongly, called the " Mosque of Omar," is not, strictly speaking, a mosque atall. It belongs rather to the class of " shrines,"—generally small square, circular, or octagonal buildings erected over some sacred spot or tomb. It is a very beautiful building, with high central dome, and double ambulatory round it,—the outer wall being octa- gonal, and the dome, with the pillars that carry it, circular in plan. It is decorated in a very sumptuous way by inlay of rich marbles and very splendid glass mosaics. The outer wall and most of the internal mosaics are later than the dome itself. Its windows of mosaic-like stained glass are very beautiful, and are almost the only*~~

~~*865*~~

~~*built in a crowded site with a wing for a tomb. In plan it is cruciform, the central part being open to the sky; the eastern arm of the cross is the sanctuary, and farther eastis the stately domed tomb of the sul- tan himself. All four arms of the cross are vaulted in stone with a plain waggon vault. Its inagnificent entrance on the north, with an en- ormously high arch, de- corated with stalactite reliefs in stone, is set somewhat askew to fol- low the line of the old street. It has two mi- narets, one of great height and grandeur. The Muristan Kalatin is a combination of hospital, tomb, and mosque,—an enormous G building covering avery large area. It was built by Sultan Kalaun at the beginning of the 14th century; his tomb, built 1320, which forms part of this great building, is a massive square edifice 1,2, Main entrance. 3. Court open to sky. with vory grand and 6, Boselag 66, Noh ang uty eid 7 ransepts edo € well-designe*~~

~~octagonal bar ag 8,9. Dakka. 10. Teron i. Mimbar. dome. Its wall-mosaics 12, Kibla. 13. Door to tomb. 14. Domed tomb- in pearl and precious chamber. 15, Tomb within screen. 16. Kibla. stones are unusually 17, 17. Minarets. 18, 19, 20. Various entrances to magnificent. mosque. 21. Small rooms connected with' service~~

~~: Even 4 of the mosque. 22. Sultan's private entrance. bare list of the mosques~~

~~of Cairo would occupy a large space; they are over four hundred in number, and are mostly remarkable for some beauty in design orrichness in their ornament and material.~~

~~The mosque of Ibrahim Agha should specially be noted for the splendid Persian tiles which cover the east wall of its sanctuary ; these are of the end of the 16th century, and are unrivalled in beauty both of drawing and colour. The tiles are 9 inches square, aud work into large designs with very graceful sweeping curves of foliage, drawn with the greatest skill, and painted in the most brilliant yet harmonious colours—perfect masterpieces of coloured decoration. See Mura, DECORATION,~~

~~The so-called " Tombs of the nag at " really tomb-mosques of Egyptian sultans, are a large group of very fine buildings, less than a mile outside the walls of Cairo. The largest is that of Sultan Barkuk, with a superb dome and two stately minarets. In addi- tion to an extensive open court, it has on each side of the sanctuary a mnagnificent tomb-chamber containing the bodies of the sultan himself, who died in 1899, and various members of his family.~~

~~The most beautiful and graceful of all these mosques is that which contains the tomb of Sultan K4it-Bey, who died in 1496; its dome is entirely covered externally with beautiful and delicate reliefs carved in stone. Its minaret is a masterpiece of invention and extreme grace of outline, combined with the richest and most exquisite detail; like most of the Cairo mosques, its exterlor 1s ornamented by bands of red stone alternating with the yellow Mokattam limestone. Inside, marble inlaid pavements and mosaic on the walls, with decorations in painted stucco and wood carved and inlaid give extreme splendour to the building. Fig. 3~~

~~*gives its plan as a typical example of the combined mosque and tomb,—the latter the more important. The mosque inside the walls of aoe ea eee*~~

~~*1 See De Vogué, Temple de Jérusalem, 1864; Texier, Asie Mineure, 1862.*~~

~~*Fra. 2.—Plan of Mosque of Sultan Hasan, Cairo.*~~

~~*Cairo, built by the same sultan, is also very beautiful, and re- markable for its carvings and mosaics.*~~

~~*It should be observed that the mm beg magnificent mosques of Egypt, jie as of other countries, owe little or nothing to the native archi tectural talentof the Arabs them- {J] ™. selves. Their own buildings at the time of the Prophet were of the simplest and rudest descrip- tion, but they were always ready to make use of the architectural skill and constructive power of the people they conquered.*~~

~~*The earlier buildings of Egypt are mainly the product of Coptic and Byzantine skill, while rather later the art of Persia, both inits general designs and details of workmanship, exercised a para- mount influence over the whole Moslem world. Another influ- ence must not be forgotten, that of French and English Gothic, a panes by the buildings erected Fra. 3—Mosque-tomb of Sultan Kait-*~~

~~*y the crusaders during their oc- ~ Bey, Cairo.*~~

~~*cupation of Palestine. Oneofthe 4 yyain entrance. 2. Lobby and cis- Cairo mosques, that of Kalatn, terns for ablution. 3. Great minaret. possesses a fine arched doorway, 4. Kibla. 5. Mimbar. 6, Sultan's tomb- taken from a Christian church Chamber. 7. The tomb within a screen. at Acre—a fine specimen of Early ~ é*~~

~~*English work, which would not be out of place in Salisbury Cathe- dral. Moslem translations of the clustered jamb-shafts and deep arch-*~~

~~*mouldings of this style often occur.*~~

~~*The rest of northern Africa contains many mosques of great size and splendour ; among these the most important, in addition to those alpaacly mentioned as having the normal plan, are—(1) the mosque- tomb of 'Abdallah b. Wadib in Kairawan, Tunis, a very large build- ing, containing several courts and cloisters, dating from the same early period as the other great mosque in Kairawdn ; its minaret is covered outside with fine blue and green tiles ; (2) the great mosque of Algiers, 10th century ; and (3) that of Tlemcen, in the extreme west of Algeria, built in the middle of the 12th century ; this has a very splendid pavement, partly composed of Algerian onyx, and a beautiful bronze chandelier, 8 feet in diameter, given by Sultan Yarmorak, 1248-83.*~~

~~*In Spain, at Zahra near Cordova, was one of the grandest of the early mosques, finished in 941; but nothing of it now exists. Several churches in Spain were originally built as mosques, such as S. Cristo de la Luz at Toledo, a small, nearly square building, roofed by dome-like vaulting on marble pillars.*~~

~~*In Persia but little now remains of the magnificent early mosques, built with such splendour, especially during the reign of Harin al- Rashid. At Erzeroum there is a fine mosque, combined with tomb and hospital, almost Early Gothic in style, dating from the 13th century.' At Tabriz there is another church-like mosque, evidently the work of Byzantine builders; according to Texier, this belongs to the 16th century, but it is probably two or three hundred years carlier.*~~

~~*The mosque of Houen, near Cesarea in Cilicia, is a fine large rectangular building, covered with low domes on square piers. It dates from the second half of the 12th century.*~~

~~*At Tchekirghe near Broussa is a very remarkable mosque—that of Murad I., built in the 13th century, almost in the style of con- temporary Italian Gothic. Its main facade bears an extraordinary resemblance to one of the earlier Sienese palaces.*~~

~~*The later capital of Persia—Ispahan—became the centre of the highest development of the Persian arts under Shah 'Abbas L, 1585-1629 ; to this period belongs the splendid mosque called Masjid Shah, a strangely-planned building of great size, enriched in the most sumptuous way, inside and out, by wall-coverings of the finest Persian enamelled tiles. The mosque of Sultan Hoscin, built as late as 1730, preserves much of the old beauty of design and decoration.*~~

~~*India is especially rich in mosques of great size and beauty. The earlier ones are much influenced by the still older Hindu architec- ture, and some of the larger mosques are built of materials from the old Jain temples. It is recorded that twenty-seven Hindu temples were destroyed to build the great mosque in Old Delhi, erected 1196 to 1285, which presents a curious mixture of the semi-barbarous Hindu carved work with the more refined and graceful decoration of the Moslem builders. This great mosque is on the normal plan, as is the 13th century mosque at Ajmir, also cl attest aml aay, et a a enc aca el a ae a*~~

~~*eS—*~~

~~*1 See Texier, L'Arménie et la Perse, 1842-52 ; Coste, Monuments*~~

~~*ce de la Perse, 1867; Flandin and Coste, Voyage en Perse,*~~

~~*built on the ruins of a Hindu temple. A whole volume would not suffice to describe the magnificent mosques of India, such as those at Ahmedabad, Mandu, Maldah, Bijapur, Fathipur, and countless others. The introduction in the 17th century of Florentine marble and mosaic workers produced a new and very splendid style of building, of which the 'pearl mosque" and the Taj Mehal at Agra are the finest specimens.*~~

~~*At Srinagar in Kashmir there is a large and very remarkable mosque of the normal plan, constructed entirely of wood logs, with numerous pillars of deodar pine ; it was built by Shah Hamadan, and isan extremely picturesque building. (See Cole, Ancient Build- ings in Kashmir, 1869.)*~~

~~*In Turkey the mosques are either old Christian basilicas, such as S. Sophia and S. Saviour's at Constantinople, and the numerous fine early churches of Thessalonica and Trebizond, or else are mostly copies, more or less accurate, of Justinian's splendid church of S. Sophia, a building which seems to have been enthusiastically ad- mired and appreciated by the Ottoman conquerors. The mosque of Solaiman the Magnificent, 1550-1555, is the finest of these Turkish reproductions of S. Sophia. Another, rather less close a copy, is the mosque of Sultan Ahmed, 1608. None of this latter class are of course earlier than the middle of the 16th century.?*~~

~~*In the present century Moslem art has produced but little of architectural importance. The great mosque of Mohammed Ali, on the citadel of Cairo, is the work of a German architect, and though built of rich materials is of small artistic value or interest ; it is a large but feebly designed building of the S. Sophia type. Unfor- tunately European influence seems now to be rapidly destroying the feeling for true art that still survives among Moslem nations.*~~

~~*Literature.—In addition to works referred to above see Monumentos Arquitec- tonicos de Espana, 1859-83; Murphy, Arabian Antiquities of Spain, 1813; Owen Jones, Alhambra, 1842; Antiguedades Arabes de Espafia, 1870; Hay's Views in Cairo, 1840; Roberts, Holy Land, Egypt, &c., 1842-9; Hessemer, Arabische Bau-Verzierungen, 1853; Castellani, Architettura Orientale; Launay and Mon- tani, Architecture Ottomane, 1873; Salzenberg, Alt-Christliche Baudenkmale*~~

~~*von Constantinopel, 1854; Lewis, Illustrations of Constantinople, 1837 ; Chardin, Voyage en Perse, 1735; Fergusson, Architecture of India, &c., 1876; Cole, Ancient i M*~~

~~*Delhi. J. H. M.*~~

~~*MOSQUITO (sometimes written "Mosquita"), Svasiih word signifying "little fly," is a name popularly applied to certain annoying dipterous insects, and, strictly speaking, it should probably be used only for species of Culicide (and for the genus Culew in particular), for which " gnat" is the English synonym; but in many countries it is by almost common consent applied to all small dipterous in- sects that suck human blood,*~~

~~and therefore includes what we know as "'sand-flies," "midges," é&c., of the genera Ceratopogon, Simulium, and others, By Englishmen a distinction is often falsely drawn between " mosquito " and "gnat," the former being supposed to represent an insect native chiefly of hot climates, whereas the latter is their own too-well-known pest. In effect the terms are really synonymous, and any actual difference can only be specific. In very hot seasons we not uncommonly hear alarming reports of mosquitoes having made their appear- ance in London and elsewhere in the British Isles, and means whereby they were imported are often suggested, — the real facts of the case being that extra heat may render the native species more annoying, or that it causes a bodily condition in which their bites are more severely felt. The "mosquitoes" of high northern latitudes may be species both of Culex and Simuliwm.~~

~~Accounts of the numbers of these insects in tropical countries and in high latitudes, and of their irritating attacks, are to be met with—seldom exaggerated—in most books of travel. Even in Britain the annoyance caused by gnats is very great, and in marshy districts often unen- durable, especially to new-comers, for it seems probable that the insects really attack a visitor more furiously than they do the natives of the district, but, on the other hand, the latter may be more indifferent to their assaults. In some subjects even the "piping" by which a hungry gnat announces its presence has most distressing effects. In~~

~~2 Texier and Pullan, Byzantine Churches, 1864; Pulgher, Eglises de Constantinople, 1882.~~

~~3 A few years ago a London hotel, popular with American visitors, was said to harbour mosquitoes, which some of the visitors had brought with them from the Southern States. An examination revealed the fact~~

~~that the cistern was uncovered and exposed, and was the breeding-place for hosts of gnats,~~

~~high latitudes they are driven off by anointing the body with fish-oil ; and in hot climates " mosquito curtains" are part of the ordinary bed-~~

~~furniture. It is only the female that bites ; and, as it is but a very small proportion of them that can ever taste human blood or that of any warm-blooded animal, blood would not appear to be essential to their wel- fare. It has been suggested that warm blood may have an influence on the ova, but it cannot be supposed that the eggs of those multitudes of individuals that never get a chance to taste blood are necessarily infertile ; everything tends to prove the opposite.~~

~~Of late mosquitoes have been accused of playing a hitherto unsuspected part in the dissemination of certain entozoic diseases. According to the researches of Drs Manson and Cobbold and others, it appears certain that the insects, in sucking the blood of persons who are hosts of the entozoon known as Filaria sanguis-hominis, take these parasites into their own system, and it is believed that they afterwards (by their death and otherwise) con- taminate drinking water with them, and thus convey the entozoa into the blood of persons previously unaffected.~~

~~Mosquitoes are aquatic in their early stages. The~~

~~£~~

~~B Fia. 1.—Mosquito (Culex), A, natural size; B, enlarged. (After Curtis.)~~

~~female deposits her eggs in boat-shaped masses on the surface of the water. The larve are very active, and have a peculiar jerking mo-~~

~~tion ; the last segment is furnished with a respiratory apparatus, the form of which pro- bably varies according to the species, but it is usually a long tube, the extremity of which can be exposed to the externalair. The pup are also active (contrary to the condition in most dipterous pupe), and are odd-looking creatures owing to the great development of the thoracic region; the respiratory ap- paratus is in the thorax in this state, the extremity of the body having two swimming-plates ; the pups do not eat, but their activity is very great.~~

~~No notice of the mosquito or gnat would be complete without an explanation of the mouth-parts by which it is enabled to cause such extreme irritation. When these parts are closed one upon the other the~~

~~*whole looks like a long proboscis ; but in reality this consists of seven distinct slender pieces separated to the base, viz.—the labium, two maxille, two mandibles, the lingua, and the labrum. The nomenclature of the mouth-parts varies with different authors. G. Dimmock (Anatomy of the Mouth-parts and of the Sucking-apparatus of some Diptera), the latest investigator of this complex apparatus, states that the labium has for function, for the most part, the protection of the fine sete which form the true piereing organ of Culex. In the female of Culex the protective sheath is formed by the labium alone. When the mosquito has found a place which suits it for piereing—for it often tries different places on our skin before deciding on one—it plants its labelle firmly upon the spot, and a moment later the labium is seen to be*~~

~~*Fia. 2.—A, larva of Culex; B, pupa. (After Packard.)*~~

~~*867*~~

~~*flexing backwards in its middle ; the sete, firmly grouped together, remain straight and enter the skin. When the sete have entered to nearly their full length, the labium is bent double beneath the body of the insect. When the mosquito wishes to withdraw the sete it probably first withdraws the two barbed maxille beyond the other sete, that is, so that their barbs or papille will be kept out of action by the mandibles and hypopharynx ; then it readily withdraws the sete, perhaps aiding their withdrawal by the muscles*~~

~~™*m*~~

~~*mr*~~

~~*Fia. 3.—Mouth-parts, &c., of female Culex (after Dimmock). a, antenne; c, clypeus; h, hypopharynx; lr-e, labrum-epipharynx; J, labium; m, mandibles ; mz, maxillz (with the tip of one of them enlarged),*~~

~~*of the labium, for during the process of extracting the sete from the skin, while they are slowly sinking back into the groove upon the upper side of the Sinem | labium, the mosquito keeps the labella pressed firmly upon the skin. The withdrawal of blood is effected by means of a pumping*~~

~~*apparatus at the base of the mouth-parts. As no investigator appears to have been able to detect a poison gland, it has been considered that the irri- tation caused by the bite of a mosquito was solely of mechanical origin ; but the extreme irritation and its duration have not caused this idea to be commonly accepted. Dimmock avows his belief that there is use made of a poisonous saliva. In the male of Culex the mouth-parts vary considerably from those of the female,—a conspicuous point of difference being that in this sex the mandibles are absent, aud the maxille are not barbed.*~~

~~*About 35 species of Culex (mosquito or gnat) have been deseribed as inhabiting Europe, and about 130 from the rest of the world, but their differentiation is involved in great difficulty and uncer- tainty, and it is probable that the number of true species may be very niuch less. A species from Cuba has received the name Culex mosquito ; but there is not one species that specially deserves the name more than another from a popular point of view, nor from a seientifie point of view is there any difference between a mosquito and a gnat.*~~

~~*MOSQUITO COAST. See Nicaracua.*~~

~~*MOSSES, or Musct, one of the two divisions of the botanical class Muscinexe, which includes also the Liver- worts or Hepatice. See MUScINEA.*~~

~~*MOSSLEY, a manufacturing town of Lancashire, England, is situated on the London and North-Western Railway and on the Huddersfield canal, near the west bank of the Tame, which here separates Lancashire from Cheshire, 3 miles north-east of Ashton-under-Lyne, and 10 east-north-east of Manchester. The houses are for the most part built of stone. To supersede the old church of St George, erected in 1757, a new building was begun in 1881. A mechanics' institute was erected in 1858. In the vicinity of the town is an eminence called Hartshead Pike, on which is a lofty circular tower surmounted by a spire rebuilt of stone in 1758. Mossley has risen into importance since the introduction of the cotton manufacture about fifty years ago. A fairisheld annually. The town was placed under the Local Government Act in 1864, the district to which its*~~

provisions extend including also part of Saddle- worth in Yorkshire. The total population was in 1871 10,578, and 13,372 in 1881.

MOSTAR, the chief town of Herzegovina, is built on both banks of the Narenta, about 35 miles from its mouth, and 40 miles south-west of Seraievo (Bosna Serai), the capital of Bosnia. Among the public buildings are a palace, two Greek churches, and forty mosques, in several cases with Roman or Byzantine tracery in their windows. The fine old bridge from which the town takes its name

(Most Star, Old Bridge) is probably Roman. The town has a good trade and manufactures excellent Damascus swords; and the grapes and wine of Mostar are celebrated throughout the south Slavonic countries. The population, 7300 in 1844, had increased to 10,848 by 1879.

Whether its aneient name was Saloniana, Sarsenterum, or An- dretium, there is little doubt that Mostar, or, to use the older Slavonie name, Vitriniteha, dates from the time of the Romans. It was enlarged in 1440 by Radivoi Gost, mayor of the palace to Stephen, first duke of St Sava. Immediately on their conquest of Herzegovina it was chosen by the Turks as their headquarters ; and it afterwards became the capital of the independent government of

Ahi Pasha and Stolac.

See Evans, Through Bosnia and Herzegovina, 1876 ; Wilkinson's Dalmutia and Montenegro, vol. ii. (view and plan at pp. 59-60); and Caix de Saint Aymour in Rev. des D. Mondes, February 1883.

MOSUL, an important town in Mesopotamia, on the right bank of the Tigris, in 36° 35' N. lat. and 43° 3' E. long. In Mosul, as in Baghdad, only part of the space within the walls is covered with buildings and the rest is occupied by cemeteries ; even the solid limestone walls of the ancient town are half in ruins, being serviceable only in the direc- tion of the river, where they check inundations. Of the town gates at present in use, five are on the south, two on the west, two on the north, and the great

~~*bridge gate on the east. Leaving Mosul by the last named, the traveller first crosses a stone bridge, 157 feet long; then a kind of island (140 feet), which is overflowed only in spring and summer by the Tigris; next a stretch of the river which, at such times as it is not fordable, is spanned by a bridge of boats, the bridge proper covering only one-sixth of the full width of the stream. During the season of low water excellent vegetables, particularly water-melons, are grown upon the islands and dry portions of the river-bed.*~~

~~*The interior of Mosul has an insignificant appearance, only a few of the older buildings being left, among which may be mentioned the Great Mosque, with its leaning minaret, formerly a church dedicated to St. Paul. The private houses are partly of brick and partly of stone, the district furnishing an excellent and easily- wrought building-stone resembling marble. HIandsome well-built halls (fwdns) may be seen in many houses; the underground dwellings also, to which the inhabitants retire during the day-time in the hot months of summer, are well and solidly built. The houses are high, and during three or four months of the year the inhabitants sleep on the flat roofs. The streets are for the most part badly paved and very narrow, a small square in the market- place, overlooked by airy eoffee-booths, being almost the only open space, The shops are few and poor. The industry, in comparison with former times, when the town had so considerable a manufac- ture in "muslin" as to give its name to that fabric, is very unim- portant ; trade also, which is almost exclusively in the hands of native merchants, has fallen off greatly. Gall nuts, gathered on the neighbouring Kurdish mountain slopes, are mostly exported, but are also made use of by native dyers ; and hides, wax, cotton, and gum are sold. Very few Europeans live in Mosul, though the market is abundantly supplied with European goods. The whole- sale trade, conducted by means of caravans, has greatly declined -from its former importance, owing not only to changes which have been taking place in commercial routes generally, but also to the dangers of the roads near Mosul ; for to the north and east of the town there are wild tribes of Kurds, some of whom continue to*~~

~~*assert their independence of the Osmanli rule, while the Yezidis, a Kurdish tribe who have never yet aeeepted Islam, dwell in the — Sinjar mountains, upon a northern spur of which the town stands. Seini-independent tribes of Bedouins also roam over the plains in the immediate vicinity. The wild hordes of the Shammar Bedouins have often plundered or threatened the citizens. Mosul, therefore, has a somewhat isolated position, and this perhaps is one reason why Christians and Mosleins have lived together on better terms here than elsewhere. Both are animated by an active local patriot- ism, and both honour the same patron saints, Jirjis (St George) and Jonah ; the grave of the latter is pointed out on an artificial mound on the left bank of the Tigris.*~~

~~*The language of the people of Mosul is a dialect of Arabic, partly influeneed by Kurdish and Syriac. The population is probably 25,000 to 30,000. It is stated that the town is divided into 32 quarters, of which one is Jewish and three are Christian, while the rest are Moslem. The Moslems eall themselves either Arabs or Kurds, but the prevalent type, very different from the true Arabian of Baghdad, proves the Aramzan origin of many of their number. Of the Christians the community of the Chaldeans, 7.e., those who have gone over from Nestorianism to Catholicism, seems to be the most important ; there are also Syrian Catholics and Jacobites. Mosul has for several centuries been a eentre of Catholic missionary activity, the Dominieans especially, by the foundation of schools and printing-offices, having made a marked impression upon an intelligent and teachable population. There are very few Protest- ants.*~~

~~*Mosul shares the severe alternations of temperature experienced by Upper Mesopotamia (see Mrsoporamra), The summer heat is extreme, and in winter frost is not unknown. Nevertheless the climate is considered healthy and agreeable ; copious rains fall in general in winter. The drinking water is got from the muddy Tigris. At the north-east corner of the town is a sulphur spring, and 4 leagues to the south there is a hot sulphur spring (Hammam 'Ali), much frequented by invalids.*~~

~~*Mosul probably oceupies the site of a southern suburb of aneient NINEVEH (q.v.), but it is very doubtful whether the older name of Mespila ean be traced in the modern Al-Mausil (Arab., the place of*~~

~~*connexion); it is, however, certain that a town with the Arabic name Al-Mausil stood here at the time of the Moslem conquest (636 A. D.). The town reached its greatest prosperity towards the beginning of the decline of the caliphate, when it was for a time an independent capital. The dynasty of the Hamdanids reigned in Mosul from 934, but the town was conquered by the Syrian Okailids in 990. In the 11th century it belonged to the Seljuks, and in the 12th, under the sway of the Atabeks, particularly of Zenki, it had a short period of splendour. Saladin besieged it unsuccessfully in 1182. Among the later rulers of Mosul the only conspicuous name is that of Lulu, in the first half of the 13th century. The town suffered severely from the Mongols under Hulagu ; under Turkish rule it became the capital of a small pashalik, bounded on the one side by the vilayet of Diarbekr, on the other by that of Baghdad. The Persians occupied Mosul for a short time in 1628, until it was, soon afterwards, recovered by Sultan Murad IV. It was visited by an earth- quake in 1667, and was unsuccessfully besieged by the Persians under Nadir Shah in 1743. The governorship of the pashalik was long hereditary in the originally Christian family of the 'Abd-al-Jalil, until the Porte, during the course of the present century, succeeded after a long and severe contest in establishing a more centralized system of government.*~~

~~*Compared with what it was in the Middle Ages the present town is much deteriorated, its decay having advanced steadily from the beginning of the Turkish dominion.*~~

~~*See Ritter, Asien, vol. vii. A map of the town accompanies Cernik's paper,*~~

~~*'"«Studienexpedition durch die Gebiete des Euphrat und Tigris," in Erginzungs- heft No. 45 of Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1876.*~~

~~*END OF VOLUME SIXTEENTH.*~~

~~*eee NEILL AND COMPANY, PRINTERS, EDINBURGU.*~~

~~*Prates, Vou. XVI.—Duirectioys ro Brxper.*~~

~~*When insertion throughout the text ts desired, the Plates to be placed opposite the Jollowing pages :—*~~

~~*Plate IJ. page 214 | Plate VI. page 521*~~

~~*s & 5° 36 0 WII oe Bem yy, 1, OR9 » VU „ 545 > Ie. „ 270 >» I „ w3 o vey ae | » $30*~~

~~*868*~~

~~*(Most Star, Old Bridge) is probably Roman. The town has a good trade and manufactures excellent Dainascus swords ; and the grapes and wine of Mostar are celebrated throughout the south Slavonic countries. The population, 7300 in 1844, had increased to 10,848 by 1879.*~~

~~*Whether its ancient name was Saloniana, Sarseuterum, or An- dretium, there is little doubt that Mostar, or, to use the older Slavonic name, Vitrinitcha, dates from the time of the Romans. It was enlarged in 1440 by Radivoi Gost, mayor of the palace to Stephen, first duke of St Sava. Immediately on their conquest of Herzegovina it was chosen by the Turks as their headquarters ; and it afterwards became the capital of the independent government of Ali Pasha and Stolae.*~~

~~*See Evans, Through Bosnia and Herzegovina, 1876; Wilkinson's Dalmatia and Montenegro, vol. ii. (view and plan at pp. 59-60) ; and Caix de Saint Aymour in Rev. des D, Mondes, February 1883.*~~

~~*MOSUL, an important town in Mesopotamia, on the right bank of the Tigris, in 36° 35' N. lat. and 43° 3° E. long. In Mosul, as in Baghdad, only part of the space within*~~

~~*. yt Lwildinea and the rest is occupied*~~

~~*Ula are —*~~

~~*portant ; trade also, WHICH Is"atmostevaviusreny*~~

~~*native merchants, has fallen off greatly. Gall nuts, gathered on the neighbouring Kurdish mountain slopes, are mostly exported, but are also made use of by native dyers ; and hides, wax, cotton, and gum are sold, Very few Europeans live in Mosul, though the market is abundantly*~~

~~supplied with European goods. The whole- sale trade, conducted by means of caravans, has greatly declined -from its former importance, owing not only to changes which have been taking place in commercial routes generally, but also to the dangers of the roads near Mosul ; for to the uortli and east of the town there are wild .tribes of Kurds, some of whom continue to~~

~~assert their independence of the Osmanli rule, while the Yezidis, a Kurdish tribe who have never yet accepted Islam, dwell in the — Sinjar mountains, upon a northern spur of which the town stands. Semi-independent tribes of Bedouins also roam over the plains in the immediate vicinity. The wild hordes of the Shammar Bedouins have often plundered or threatened the citizens. Mosul, therefore, has a somewhat isolated position, and this perhaps is one reason why Christians and Moslems have lived together on better terms here than elsewhere. Doth are animated by an active local patriot- ism, and both honour the same patron saints, Jirjis (St George) and Jonah ; the grave of the latter is pointed out on an artificial mound on the left bank of the Tigris.~~

~~The language of the people of Mosul is a dialect of Arabic, partly influenced by Kurdish and Syriac. The population is probably 25,000 to 30,000. It is stated that the town is divided into 32 quarters, of which one is Jewish and three are Christian, while the rest are Moslem. The Moslems call themselves cither Arabs or Kurds, but the prevalent type, very different from the true Arabian of Baghdad, proves the Aramean origin of many of their number. Of the Christians the community of the Chaldeans, 7.¢., those who have gone over from Nestorianism to Catholicism, seems to be the most important ; there are also Syrian Catholics and Jacobites.~~

- ~~~4|-~tae haan a centre of Catholic missionary~~

~~hereditary m vue vssgasey —~~

~~until the Porte, during the course of the present century, su after a long and severe contest in establishing a more centralized system of~~

~~*government.*~~

~~*Compared with what it was in the Middle Ages the present town is much deteriorated, its decay having advanced steadily from the beginning of the Turkish dominion.*~~

~~*See Ritter, Asien, vol. vii. A map of the town accompanies Cernik's paper,*~~

~~*" Studienexpedition durch die Gehiete des Euphrat und Tigris," in Erganzungs- heft No. 45 of Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1876.*~~

~~*END OF VOLUME SIXTEENTH.*~~

~~*NEILL AND COMPANY, PRINTERS, EDINBURGH.*~~

~~*20;*~~

~~*Cedros or Cerros I*~~

~~*J. Las Tres wae, . e Marries MadreYy ; Dag Aaland me San*~~

~~*e : ' Cleopha . ; i*~~

~~*English Miles, 66:5") degree Jaltemba B. aa wo 20 es two 200 y aS Kilometres, II]: 57] degree wo 50 0 100 200 300 400 ity*~~

~~*5. Benito I# "*~~

~~*OP uaiohigfan*~~

~~*mA.*~~

~~*neh Si ta ; } \ f ny*~~

~~*' dir] Aetopun,, leorgr*~~

~~*ANN oe D iy mols +*~~

~~*aes! a Nei pan pe' Gael g IIead fy let Wwree*~~

~~*Papantla >» ged Barra Tecolutla : ct ely, AE Taka “: hyd — i*~~

~~*a> &*~~

~~*Barre. de Nautla*~~

~~*E aw on J ot ty Rane Py hacky, vi ire*~~

~~*Ray ye * of Tegjyomu RA) is*~~

~~*The Revillagigedo Islands, belonging to the State of Colima, are situated about 260 Miles S. by W of Cape 3. Lucas, Lat. 19* ¥ long. I? W Pd*~~

⊢

~~*99 a oe eae 96 __, English Miles A Kilométre s EEE, wer ety) 0 re o SS ae Te SSR Ses*~~

~~*r ENCYCLOPADIA BRIT*~~

~~*Mobile o*~~

~~*AP Galveston brda | | G U L F oF Laguna — = = i: 1 |*~~

⊢⊢

~~*nowillas Carades*~~

~~*ad.*~~

~~*Austral O*~~

~~*= ~*~~

~~*Bermga lee*~~

~~*Nuevo Cay « e*~~

~~: : S1gMAa® 7; gimin Min! o ts saal _plixcokob Egpita “> oh? Jsarat — 1) xe , Valladolid.~~

~~Sota j 7) A j Juba]~~

~~Barra. de Tanhuy’o ° Tuexpan Reef pet Triangulas «- Celestut im /. Pear Bank~~

~~Ghosuce~~

~~byte? Sabancuy’~~

~~y Chighul S’s eat 2 Min tel N \gantonio wo fa~~

~~- Conkepanr Chiché ~ {~~

~~c a ; “ss | : | ; ‘ | \ 1~~

~~ey Crs Gy ge Ill cf , ‘hails om * rR wae | Yo WA ARS ; ; ? i}~~

~~Cobanhe~ 7 Laguna | = Dulce || i} | ake == ; i? i ad Nye De | Gyeenwie : 400 ES | ft | j | 7 : : 2 : | ONDURA®S a“ = ; : ||. J. Z y . % oGuatefnala | om me — | W.& AK Johnston, Edanburgh~~

~~, BRITBNICA NINTH EDITION~~

~~MICHIGAN PLATE UL~~

~~87 Longitude West 86 from Greenwich 85 — = $a — re~~

~~St~~

~~VOL. XVI.~~

~~2~~

~~S = ! ©. GargantaaY j ~~, ; \ | ST en Take Desert~~

~~Hcaniwou |.~~

~ Starumards Roel

pitaue? y +e <- ISLAND Seenst or Ex ep niene

if prmiel

. ‘ , ged 1 ’ “aa He ASMINGTON 1. &

NORTH Ls ei ou

a ons fh Green Bay

Grdat Ft an Sable, —— Eincoln : mi Luding?’ i a Marquette] je, s Bae

Lit Pbunt.an Sable

Janesville

9 oe

paserle

Ba MM sovioo.

Scale ot Miles

20 30 40

o County Towns .+,.Railroads bY oa ————

12

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA NINTH EDITION

‘NOILIGS IILNIN ‘VOINNVLIYS VIGHd019AON3

dep y] g

a

~~*Bs*~~

~~*mysye*~~

~~*ASHIGCCIW*~~

~~*Oa*~~

~~*Ysamnqurpy ‘coisayor yy yw. Aq posPssmy*~~

~~*NOIWICF-HININ “VOINNVLIYS VIG¥dO1IAING*~~

~~*— : se =] Facial ee her (a al aS E™s res | ee es Jaa boos sR SEAN TEC | say pren() tano’T*~~

~~*saxyehiog a7, sstatg ¥y ayTeaty auoysoUI’y ONT, aupysouey aug SIEp qm spaq oT] [PEED WETTER wor*~~

~~*SMOUNDI NVAVHOUV NVI WV NVMOTIS SQONSALNOTUVD AMVNUALVIO (44 QOOZ/ IMI ORMbsoR [pA OSLY WMT IC NPT _(j¢ OT) FIT HOM, igs ogame ere [gh OOZT) HOT UOsT [at OSL) FEDT qTUEgLOD es ——— Pr) v8 choqu/ wt OOOL TUN 20 |*~~

~~*ZTTIAGVAT*~~

~~*TITH oF ettogreD*~~

~~*(ITH wos]*~~

~~*yoruy sd)*~~

~~*yapooos oooF 000% GOOT 0007 ————*~~

~~*o TPUE T—}ay OOS gBs : THIS TRoTHIaA ¥Y [PTIOZLIOH*~~

~~**LOIMLSIGO ONINIW 371/A0W4371 4HL 40 LYWd SSOUDV NOILOIS LSIM ONY LSVI*~~

~~*pat*~~

~~*operpe’ 22-1eT10) ayisapuy urea ur anypsdory*~~

~~*arma*~~

~~*00%*~~

~~*MPUT [07 1993 OOF FTES*~~

- ~~*INIW AMUND ¥aTNOD LYdONDLNO FIIL MOTI 13934 1€ €“IGO1 AXOLSWOD FIIL JO LUWd 40 NOILIAS TWLNOZIYOII*~~

~~*AT MLV TL ONINIW TAX ‘TOA*~~

~~“.~~

~~*VOL. XVI. MINNESOTA PLATE V.*~~

~~*94. Longitude W. 93 from Greenwich 92*~~

~~*Scale of Miles 20 10 o 2 40 County Towns © = Railroads ———— Indian Reservations tinted pink*~~

~~*6:*~~

~~*CA? Speen)*~~

~~*en BP*~~

~~*peers si 4: a avn y Je 4 WOOD SEER KK mb Fol Ne Mtilond Baga SSS e° pee TO Tie*~~

~~*es*~~

~~*W&AX Johnston, Edinburgh ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.*~~

~~*VOL. XVI. MISSISSIPPI PLATE VI.*~~

~~*Secale of Miles ° 10 20 30*~~

~~*CountyTowns © Railroads*~~

~~*wi:*~~

~~*W.& AK Johnston. Edinburgh*~~

~~*ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION*~~

~~*PLATE Vif.*~~

~~*9*~~

~~*MISSOURI*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*YY*~~

~~*9 ° 3 'est from . = — : ff . t aK ' = ~) Bophans/" dover? shi j S oleh . on dote f Grunt Catv) ~ 1s yo Giles ' 1 be 4 ff Re@praruia 9} i oe a er ; Br incetbe aT iv : 14 ow ODaxtird se a qf {Caairtes a Wewe BS dt Meorywil zi ale Bbrraina Batlacld 2 s D 3 % E gh £ — 1» Bethany — R : : a Ps aru G wy ¥/ ? " a Kirksvyl Le rty" 6*~~

~~*<3*~~

~~*P ay*~~

~~*we Cr, Tray .*~~

~~*ł*~~

~~*johnston, Edimburgh*~~

~~*FM J x athe it GES = nfo <2 iG Ohi eo i r } g*~~

~~*BRITANNICA NINTH EDITION*~~

~~*ENCYCLOPADIA*~~

~~*NOULI09 HININ "VOINNVLIYS VIGYdOTIAING os*~~

~~*YPaupaip jo wey apuySwoT*~~

~~*spsonbuoo UaIV.L0E aye Jo sjauy ISOYLOV E33 gi*~~

~~*Be*~~

~~*Sot oot*~~

~~*seTy ysysuy ayo) easy? Isy. By) cepun sysanbug) oe | ; ' y we VIUAS aNv WV UL, 009 00% 00z o oot 3*~~

~~*"VINV LOIOS Hit Se WSTSug*~~

~~*Pprunmyor uaprun spsanbuoe)*~~

~~*GUld Wa NVGAWWVHOW*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*ere*~~

~~*=*~~

~~*ti -4*~~

~~*os*~~

~~*WA LV TL*~~

~~*TAX TOA*~~

~~*MONMOUTH*~~

~~*3*~~

~~*PLATE [IX*~~

~~*pawns "ha*~~

~~XT.~~

~~:~~

~~Granth 4) CR oY eee) nine Oe fp Rul~~

~~(lazscocd) Taki, ee D. “ 1h 9 aaa~~

•

~~‘ : =~~

~~andl~~

~~aX~~

~~=e “4 f a \ ee = ik y/St: 2 P (a Greenwich~~

~~Longitude West 3° from~~

~~ENCYCLOPAEDIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.~~

~~“NOILIGS IILNIN “VOINNVLIYS VIGHdO10A9N3~~

~~8~~

~~Be Cae ay OK OMY~~

~~V ¢ ; PReL, Ve SLD i ° a WDSuDYy jf Oo “apg sruyy je anwmeny, arbor ap~~

~~“te ueog Dunwy PIL, ‘ — seqqr neg 2) nes \ 266] 0 ‘ : wyossoye,, oumuan boon? :~~

~~ifs yeu 4 D~~

~~7° z ¥ epreaqips~~

~~X DLPTL OJOJ0N0K ‘ TAX “TOA.~~

~~*Pe erteer Srest ree*~~

~~*a Baits*~~

~~*“=*~~

~~*H*~~

-

~~*ty*~~

~~*+f ue*~~

~~*HH tH*~~

~~*ao*~~

~~*Titeat*~~

~~*eoeeees — s =*~~

~~*ster rer . erat errr et ee ot*~~

~~*= Tere ie ls elere sel eces=*~~

~~*TENTeie!*~~

~~*eee ere rare ree tester at, SOS pines [S53 Faset ote? ecstesese are sere eo 8 Ser*~~

~~*tSteteresetersieisie Sreeoreessres*~~

~~*: =*~~

~~*ss E : Rees o-oo Le SS : = = = + Ss 2: = me : z*~~

~~*rat*~~

- ~~*o= Seesesee- 4 seers*~~

~~*SS SS*~~

~~*SSS ease sas Sates a SR rm — = i Zo Fs 8 2. “ a ———— 2 nel eceters + es 2 88 nee – erere oe eyeI2*~~

Vol 17 (MOT-ORM)

Britannica 9th

Nat

|

L

Cc

-

Th

and

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

THE

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA

DICTIONARY

OF

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XVII

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXIV

[All Rights reserved. |

ENCYCLOPADIA

OTANABBI, or Motenepst. Abt ’l-Tayyib Ahmed

ibn al-Hosain of Cufa, called Al-Motanabbi (915/6-

965), is the most famous representative of the last period of Arabic poetry, though some Eastern critics place him below Abt Tammam. He was the son of a water-carrier, and is said to have picked up much of the literary knowledge for

which he was afterwards famous by haunting the book-

stalls of his native city. He spent, too, some years of his youth among the nomads of the Syro- Arabian desert, learning their purer dialect and becoming imbued with their self-reliant spirit. Thus he grew up a brave proud man, a gallant warrior as well as a poet, full of ambition, not easily satisfied either with wealth or honours, indifferent to the Koran and to the fasts and prayers of Islam, but untainted by the looseness of morals common to the poets of those days. Such a character was not well fitted for the part of a courtier, the only career that then lay open to a poet ; for, though no Arab poet deems himself humi- liated by the most extravagant praises of a generous patron, and none has written in this vein more extrava- gantly than Abt ’l-Tayyib, he was as exacting of due acknowledgment as prodigal of adulation, and was too

proud to endure a slight, even where it was dangerous to |

show resentment. At first he essayed a greater and more

perilous road to distinction, appearing in the character of |

a prophet in the desert between the Euphrates and Syria, where he formed a considerable party, but was arrested by the governor of Emesa. A prison and the pillory cooled his enthusiasm ; his prophetic pretensions indeed are hardly a proof of genuine religious fervour, for in the lands of Islam a

revolutionary popular leader almost necessarily seeks a supernatural sanction for his attempt. The name of Al-Motanabbi (he who plays the prophet) clung to him, however, and is that by which he is still commonly known. Regaining his liberty, he had to struggle for a time with poverty and neglect. But his poetical talents at length found him patrons, and in 337 a.n. (948/9 a.p.) he became attached to the court of that famous warrior and patron of letters, Saif al-Dawla, prince of Aleppo, to whom many of the best fruits of his muse were dedicated, and by whose side he approved his valour in the field. But he had rivals who knew how to inspire jealousy between him and the prince, and an angry scene with the grammarian Khala-

t

waih, in which the latter closed a philological dispute by striking Motanabbi on the face with a key which he had in his sleeve, in the very presence of the prince and with- out rebuke from him, led the poet to leave the court and seek a new career in the realm of the Ikhsh{dites. He now took as his patron and the object of his eulogies Kafur, the regent of Egypt—a hideous black eunuch whom it was indeed a humiliation to praise, but who knew how to open the poet's lips by great gifts and honours. Motanabbi, how- ever, sought a higher reward, the government of Sidon, and at length broke with Kafur, wrote satires against him, and had to fly for his life to Cufa. A curious anecdote relating to this part of his career will be found in Lane's Arabian Nights, chap. viii. note 18. His next great patron was 'Adud al-Dawla of Shiraz, and on a journey from Shiraz to Cufa he was waylaid and slain, fighting bravely, by a chieftain of the Asad named Fatik, whose kinsfolk he had satirized (Sept. 965).

The poetry of Motanabbi is to European taste much less attract- ive than the verses of the ancient Arab poets, being essentially artificial and generally unreal, though it has great technical merits and displays lively fancy and considerable inventive powcr. It is mainly court poetry, but the poet has the credit of never losing his self-respect in the presence of his patrons. Oriental taste, on the other hand, places him on a very high pedestal, as may be judged from the fact that more than four hundred commentaries were written on his Diwan (H. Khal., iii. 306). Dieterici's edition of the poet,

Berlin, 1858-61, gives the commentary of Wahidi; the Egyptian edition of 1870 has the commentary of ‘Okbari.

See Abulfeda, Ann. Mosl., ii. 482 sq.; Ibn Khallikan, ed. De Slane, p. 51 sq., and the notes to De Slane’s translation ; De Sacy, Chrest. Ar., vol. iii. ; Bohlen, Commentatio de Motenebbio, Bonn, 1824; Dieterici, Mutanebbi und Seifuddaula, Leipsic, 1847.

MOTHER-OF-PEARL. The shells of many molluscous animals display a brilliant pearly and iridescent lustre, resulting from the peculiar manner in which the layers of calcareous matter of which they are composed have been successively formed. Such shells, even when small in size, form bright and, specially to the untutored eye, attractive ornaments, and as such are used for necklaces and similar purposes. When the shells are of sufficient size to cut and shape for purposes of utility, they become an article of some commercial importance under the name of Mother- of-Pearl. This term, though applicable to all pearly shells, is in commerce principally applied to the shells of the bivalve pearl-mussel Meleagrina a which is

the principal source of the commercial product. The Meleagrina margaritifera is a native of tropical seas, and is found around the coasts of all the lands within the tropics. The shells vary in size, the largest reaching to

about the dimensions of a dessert plate, with a weight of

from 1 to 1} tb. They also vary in colour to a consider- able extent, some being dark and smoky round the outer edge with little iridescence, others dark but possessing a rich play of colours, and the greater part pearly white with varying iridescence. The principal sources of supply are the islands of the East Indian archipelago, the Pacific islands, the north-west Australian coast, the Persian and Red Seas, and the Gulf of Panama. The largest and steadiest consumption of mother-of-pearl is in the button trade, and much is also consumed by cutlers for handles of fruit and dessert knives and forks,

pocket-knives, &c. It is also used in the inlaying of Japanese and Chinese lacquers, European lacquered papier-maché work, trays, &ec., and as an ornamental inlay generally. In an innumerable variety of small and fancy articles mother-of-pearl is also employed, its use being limited only by the moderate dimensions and thickness of material obtainable, and its rather brittle nature. The carving of pilgrim shells and the elaboration of crucifixes and ornamental work in mother-of-pearl is a distinctive industry of the monks and other inhabitants of Bethlehem. Among the South Sea Islands the shell is largely fashioned into fishing-hooks, a purpose for which its brilliant conspicuous appearance appears to render it suitable without the addition of any bait or other lure. Among shells other than those of Meleagrina margaritifera used as mother-of-pearl may be mentioned the Green Ear or Ormer shell (aliotis tubercu- lata) and several other species of Haliotis, besides various species of Turbo.

The pearl-shell fishery is an important industry on the north and north-west coasts of Australia, producing about 800 tons yearly, valued at over £100,000, the Papuan islanders of Torres Straits being cmployed as divers under European supervision, with skilled appliances. The shell of the golden-tipped variety of Avicula found here is much more valuable than the dark-edged one of the South Seas. The value of the fisheries depends much more on the shell than on the occasional pearls found, which indeed are sometimes, along with the ‘‘fish,” a perquisite of the diver; but on the west coast, about Shark’s Bay, a smaller variety of the same mollusc pro- duces valuable pearls, their exciting cause being possibly present there in greater abundance. That the pearl itself is not due to disease, or to the presence of any irritating cause, seems clear from the fact that the mollusc can reject it at will, and often does so when taken (for which reason the diver, in seizing him, at once places his hand over the opening so as to close the shell) ; but it is believed now that the pearl is secreted and held ready to be dissolved by the powerful acid of the sac, and spread in uacreous layers over the spot irritated by the borer (Pholax sp.). Accordingly pearls are seldom found in the young ‘“‘fish,” whose shells are much harder outside, and not susceptible to such attacks. A mass of nacreous layers formed round a point of irritation or ‘‘ blister” can some- times be cut out of the shell, and might easily be mistaken for (and sold as) a pearl, but it is never quite perfect all round and is always hollow. Sometimes, after having secured the loose

pearls, the fisher- men deposit the mollusc again, unharmed, in a secure and accessible locality, and repeat the process for three and four years successively.

MOTHERWELL, a police burgh of Lanarkshire, Scot- land, is situated on the Caledonian Railway a short distance from the right bank of the Clyde, 2 miles north-east of Hamil- ton and 11 east-south-east of Glasgow. The village, which takes its name from an old well dedicated to the Virgin, contained only 900 inhabitants in 1851, and owes its rapid increase to the coal and iron mines in the neighbour- hood. It possesses one of the largest ironworks in Scotland, and also extensive engineering works. Motherwell was erected into a police burgh in 1865. The population in 1871 was 5746, and in 1881 it was 12,904.

MOTHERWELL, Wiittam (1797-1835), poet, anti- quary, and journalist, born in 1797, rendered service in the collection of fugitive border poetry and wrote one or

two very touching songs in the Scotch dialect, dying before he had fulfilled the promise of his earlier work. His short life was diversified by few incidents. The son of an iron- monger in Glasgow,he waseducated partly in Edinburgh and partly in Paisley. At the age of fifteen he was apprenticed in the office of the sheriff-clerk at Paisley, and appointed sheriff-clerk depute there in 1819. The impulse given by Scott to the pursuit of local ballads was still strongly in force, and the young law apprentice spent his leisure in collecting materials for a volume which he published in 1819 under the title of The Harp of Renfrewshire. In the course of the next eight years he extended his studies in the same field and published the results in 1827 in Min- strelsy Ancient and Modern, prefaced by a very thorough historical introduction. Meantime he made a reputation by casual poems in newspapers and magazines, of which Jeanie Morrison, My Heid is like to break, and Wearie’s Cauld Well have taken a fixed place in Scotch literature. These poems are his best work, but he gave most of the energy of his vigorous intellect to writing ballads and songs in English ; and he interpreted the martial spirit of the Norse sea-rovers with an enthusiasm and force which one would not expect from the plaintive character of his Scotch poems. His critical power and his learning were probably too great for his

executive faculty; but, what- ever may be thought of his promise as a poet, it was un- doubtedly quenched by his entrance into journalism and the fatiguing work of newspaper editing. He became editor of the Paisley Advertiser in 1828, of the Glasgow Courier in 1830, and died suddenly of apoplexy in 1835. A trying examination before a Parliamentary Committee was thought to have hastened his end; but Conservative journalism at the time of the Reform Bill was exciting and uphill work, and it is a fair inference from the sad tone of some of his later poems that a baffled longing to achieve enduring fame added to the poet's worries and increased the strain on his constitution. A small volume of his poems was published in 1832, and a larger volume with a memoir in 1849.

MOTHS. See Burrerrfiies.

MOTLEY, Joun Lorurop (1814-1877), the well-known historian of the Dutch Republic, was born on 15th April 1814 at Dorchester, now a part of Boston, Massachusetts, and from 1827 waseducated at Harvard, where he graduated in 1831. He then studied for two years at Gottingen and Berlin, and after a period of European travel, chiefly in Italy, returned to America in 1834, where he became a student of law, and ultimately was called to the bar. In 1837 he married, and two years afterwards he published anonymously his earliest literary work, a two- volume novel, entitled Morton's Hope, or the Memoirs of a Young Provincial, which attained, and indeed deserved, only a moderate success. In 1841 he received his first diplomatic appointment, being made secretary of legation to the Russian mission, but, finding the atmosphere of St Peters- burg uncongenial, he resigned his post within a few months and definitely resolved on a literary career. Besides con- tributing various historical and critical essays to the Worth American Review, he published in 1849, again anonymously, a second novel entitled Merry Mount, a Romance of the Massachusetts Colony. About the year 1846 the project of writing a history of Holland had begun to take shape in his mind, and he had already prepared a considerable quantity of MS., when; finding the materials at his dis- posal in the United States quite inadequate for the com- pletion of his work, he resolved to migrate to Europe along with his family in 1851. The next five years were spent at Berlin, Dresden, Brussels, and the Hague in laborious investigation

of the archives preserved in those capitals, and resulted in 1856 in the publication of The Rise of

MO T—

the Dutch Republic, a Ehstory (London and New York, 3 vols. 8vo). This work, which, after a large historical introduction, minutely follows the history of the Low Coun- tries from the abdication of Charles in 1555 down to the assassination of William the Silent in 1584, immediately becanie highly popular by its graphic manner and the warm and sympathetic spirit in which it was written, while at the same time it was frankly recognized by scholars as a painstaking and conscientious piece of original work. It speedily passed through many English editions, was trans- lated into French (with an introduction by Guizot) in 1859, and also into Dutch (with introduction and notes by Bakhuizen van den Brink, himself a distinguished historian), as well as into German and Russian. Pursuing his researches in England, France, Belgium, and Holland, Motley was able to publish in 1860 the first two volumes of the History of the United Netherlands, covering the period from the death of William the Silent in 1584 to shortly after the destruction of the Armada, by which the Spanish project for subjugating England and reconquering the Netherlands was finally defeated. This work, which was on a somewhat larger scale than the preceding, em- bodied the results of a still greater amount of original research, not only in the Dutch archives, in the copies of the Simancas archives, and in the portions of those archives still retained in Paris, but also in the London State Paper Office, and in the MS. department of the British Museum. By two new volumes published in 1868 the work was brought down to the twelve years' truce in 1609, and it was announced that the author was engaged in writing a con- tinuation which should embrace the history of the Thirty Years' War. Meanwhile Motley from the close of 1861 to 1867 had held the post of United States minister at Vienna ; in 1869 he was appointed to a similar position at the court of St James's, but was recalled in 1870. After a short visit to Holland he again took up his resi- dence in England, where The Life and Death of John Barneveld, Advocate of Holland, with a view of the primary Causes of the Thirty Years' War (2 vols.) appeared in 1874. Il] health now began to interfere with sustained literary work, and, after a

protracted period of failing vigour, he died at Kingston Russell House, near Dorchester, Dorset- shire, on 29th May 1877.

Motley was member of a number of learned societies in Europe and America, and held a variety of honorary degrees. Among minor works not noticed above may be mentioned a pamphlet on the Causes of the Civil War in America (1861), which originally appeared in the correspondence columns of the 7imes newspaper, and Democracy, a Historical Essay (1869), originally delivered as an address to the New York Historical Society. The merits of Motley as an historian are undeniably great ; he has told the story of a stirring period in the history of the world with full attention to the character of the actors and strict fidelity to the numerous vivid details of the action. But it may safely be said that his tale is best where most unvarnished, and probably no writer of the same rank has owed less to the mere sparkle of highly polished literary style.

See John Lothrop Motley, a Memoir, by Oliver Wendell Holmes (1878).

MOTMOT, according to Hernandez in his Historia Avium Nove Hispaniz (p. 52), published at Rome in 1651, was the Mexican name of a bird which he described well enough to leave no doubt as to what he meant; but the word being soon after printed Momot by Nieremberg and others gave rise to the Latinized Momotus, invented by Brisson as a generic term, which has since been generally adopted by ornithologists,! though Motmot has been re- tained as the English form. Linneus knew of only one species of Motmot, and referred it to his genus Ramphastos (properly Rhamphastus) under the name of R. momota. This is the Momotus brasiliensis of modern ornithologists,

1 Its barbarous origin induced Mliger to substitute for it the word

Prionites, and his example has been followed by some nomenclatural purists.

and from its geographical range cannot be the original Mfotmot of Hernandez, but is most likely the “ Guéra guai- numbr” of Marcgrave.

The Motmots have been for many years recognized as forming a distinct family, Momotide or Prionitidz, of the heterogeneous assemblage known as Picarix or Coccygo- morphe ; and the only question among systematists has been as to their position in that group. This has been discussed and illustrated with his usual assiduity by Dr Murie (Jbis, 1872, pp. 383-412, pls. xiii-xv.), who con- clusively showed that the Topy (¢.v.) was the Motmot's nearest existing relative, while he believed that both Momotide and Todide might be placed in one section (Serratirostres) with the Coraciidx (ROLLER, q.v.), Mero- pide, and Alcedinidx (cf. KincrisHEr, vol. xiv. p. 81). To the latter allocation Garrod (Proc. Zool. Society, 1878, pp. 100-102) has since partly demurred, though admitting the Kingfisher affinity, while upholding the former, and even declaring that Motmots and Todies form but a single family. As the conclusions of both these investigators are based on the sure ground of anatomical structure, they are of incomparably greater value than most of those arrived at by prior systematists who judged from external characters alone.

In outward appearance the Motmots have an undoubted resemblance to Bee-eaters, but, though beautiful birds, various shades of blue and green predominating in their plumage, they do not exhibit such decided and brilliant colours ; and, while the Bee-eaters are only found in the Old World, the Motmots are a purely Neotropical form, extending from southern Mexico to Paraguay, and the majority of species inhabit Central America. They are said to be solitary birds, or at most living in pairs, among the gloomy forests, where they sit on the underwood nearly motionless, or only jerking their long tail as the cry "houtou " (or something like it) is uttered. Their ordi- nary food is small reptiles, insects, and fruits. The nest of one species, as observed by Mr Robert Owen, is at the end of a hole bored in the bank of a watercourse, and the eggs are pure white and glossy (bis, 1861, p. 65). Little else has been recorded of their ways.

The AMomotidx form but a small group, containing, according to the latest enumeration of them in 1873 by Messrs Sclater and Salvin (Nomenclator, pp. 102, 103), but seventeen species,? distributed into six genera, of which last, however, Dr. Maurie (/.c.) would only recognize four—Momotus, Baryphthengus, Hylomanes, and Eumomota —the second including Urospatha, and the last Priono- rhynchus. The distinctions between these

groups would require more space to indicate than can here be allowed ; but it may be stated that, while all have a general resem- blance in the serrated edges of the bill and many other characters, Momotus has the normal number of twelve rectrices, while the rest have only ten, which in Hylomanes have the ordinary configuration, but in adult examples of all the others the shaft of the median pair is devoid of barbs for the space of about an inch a little above the extremity, so as to produce a spatulate appearance, such as is afforded by certain humming-birds known as “ Racquet- tails” (HumMinc-BirD, vol. xii. p. 357), Kingfishers of the genus Tangsiptera (KINGFISHER, vol. xiv. p. 82), and Parrots of the group Prioniturus. Waterton (Wanderings, Journey 2, chap. iii.), mentioning the species JL. brasiliensis by its native name “ Houtou,” long ago asserted that this peculiarity was produced by the Motmot itself nibbling off the barbs, and this extraordinary statement, though for

2 The same number was recognized by the first-named of these gentlemen in his review of the Family (Proc. Zool. Society, 1857, pp. 248-260), where they are all diagnosed, a species, subsequently described by Dr Cabanis (Mus. Heineanum, ii. p. 115), not being admitted.

a while doubted, has since been shown by Mr Salvin (Proc. Zool. Society, 1873, pp. 429-433), on Mr Bartlett’s authority, to be perfectly true. The object with which the operation is performed is wholly unknown. It is sometimes incompletely executed, and the tail has then an asymmetrical form. This must have been the case with the example that Hernandez described (/.c.), and brought on himself the criticism of Willughby (Ornithologia, p. 298) for so doing. Much of the bibliography of the family is given in Dr Murie’s paper already quoted ; and it may be remarked that in 1734 Seba, probably misled by wrong information, figured (Rerum Nat. Thesaur., tab. 67, fig. 2) under the name of “ Motmot” a bird which has been identified with a species of GUAN (vol. xi. p. 232), and is the Ortalis motmot of modern ornithology. (A. N.)

MOTRIL, a town of Spain in the province of Granada, is charmingly situated at the foot of an offshoot of the Sierra Nevada, on the edge of a rich alluvial plain about a mile from the Mediterranean and 40 miles south-

south- east from Granada, with which it is connected by a good carriage road. The town has no buildings of special archi- tectural or historical interest. The climate is semi-tropical, and the ‘“‘ vega” or plain of Motril has been found pecu- liarly adapted for the culture of the sugar-cane, of which the annual average yield has recently been estimated at 113,636 tons. In the district there are five sugar-factories, —two in the immediate vicinity of the town, and three at Salobrefia, a village about 3 miles to the westward at the mouth of the Rio Grande (Guadalfeo). Some cotton is also grown and manufactured. This neighbourhood is rich in lead, chiefly wrought by companies having very limited capital; the ore is for the most part smelted on the spot and afterwards sent to Malaga, or direct to England. Zinc and copper are also found, but in smaller quantities. Esparto grass is exported. The population of Motril in 1878 was 16,665. The harbour (El Puerto de Motril) lies about 64 miles to the south-eastward at the village of Calahonda.

MOTT, VauentiIne (1785-1865), an eminent American surgeon, was born at Long Island, New York, on the 20th August 1785. He graduated at Columbia College, studied under Sir Astley Cooper in London, and also spent a winter in Edinburgh. After acting as demonstrator of anatomy he was appointed professor of surgery in Columbia College in 1809. From 1811 to 1834 he was in very extensive practice as a surgeon, and most successful as a teacher and operator. He tied the innominate artery in 1818; the patient lived twenty-six days. He performed a similar operation on the carotid forty-six times with good results; and in 1827 he was also successful in the case of the common iliac. He is said to have performed one thousand amputations and one hundred and sixty-five lithotomies. After spending seven years in Europe (1834- 1841) Mott returned to New York and founded the university medical college of that city. He translated Velpeau’s Operative Surgery, and was foreign associate of the Imperial Academy of Medicine of Paris. His death occurred on the 26th of April 1865.

MOTTEVILLE, Francoise Bertraut, MapAME DE (1621-1689), was born in 1621. She was of fair family (the poet-bishop Jean Bertaut being her kinsman), and by her mother of Spanish blood. This circumstance attracted Anne of Austria to Madame Bertaut, and the child Francoise was made a member of the queen’s house- hold and pensioned at seven years old. The

influence of Richelieu, however, who constantly endeavoured to deprive the queen of confidantes, exiled mother and daughter to Normandy. There, at the age of eighteen, Francoise married Nicholas Langlois, Seigneur de Motteville, first president of the Chambre des Comptes. She was very soon

a widow, but she had before that date (1641) visited the court, renewed her relations with the queen, and been rewarded by a pension increased from 600 to 2000 livres. No sooner did Anne of Austria become her own mistress by the deaths of Richelieu and of her husband than she summoned Madame de Motteville to court and made her her most intimate friend. Through all the intrigues and troubles of the Fronde, Madame de Motteville preserved the honourable reputation of being devoted to her mistress without any party ties or interests. She was also on very intimate terms with Henrietta Maria of England during her residence in France. After Anne of Austria's death Madame de Motteville lived in retirement, but not in absolute seclusion, seeing especially Madame de Sévigné and Madame de la Fayette. She died on 29th December 1689. Some letters of hers are preserved, especially a curious correspondence with "La Grande Mademoiselle" on marriage, but her chief work is her Mémoires, which are in effect a history of Anne of Austria, written briefly till the date of Madame de Motteville's return to court, and then with fulness. The author is something of a partisan, but not an intentionally unfair one, and her judgment and power of observation are very considerable. The style of her book is not of the most peculiar or strik- ing, but it is simple, easy, and good. The J/émoures may be most conveniently read in Michaud and Poujoulat's Collection, vol. xxviii.

MOUKDEN. See Mancuurta, vol. xv. p. 466.

MOULINS, chief town of the French department of Allier, is situated 195 miles by rail south-south-east from Paris on the right bank of the Allier, which is here crossed by a remarkable bridge about 1000 feet in length, consisting of thirteen semicircular arches. The town, which stands at an altitude of about 740 feet above sea- level, is adorned with gardens and fine boulevards, and still contains several buildings of historical interest and many houses of the Middle Ages. The cathedral has a very beautiful choir, with richly-painted windows of the 15th and 16th centuries. The nave, in

the Pointed style, is of recent construction, as are the two towers with stone spires rising to the height of 312 feet. The white stone chiefly employed is happily contrasted with ornamental columns of black basalt. The chapel of the lyceum, which oceupies the site of an ancient convent of the Visitation, contains a richly-carved mausoleum to the memory of Duke Henry of Montmorency, who was beheaded in the reign of Louis XIII. Among other objects of interest in Moulins are some remains of the old chateau of the dukes of Bourbon, and the clock tower. The library of nearly 25,000 volumes contains a manuscript Bible of the 12th century which was used at the council of Constance in 1415. There are no industries of importance, except the manufacture of wire ropes for mines, and of sulphate of barium. The population in 1881 was 21,126.

The history of Moulins does not go farther back than the 10th century, and its importance dates from the 14th, when it became the residence of the dukes of Bourbon. After the constable de Bourbon's desertion to Charles V. the town, along with Bourbon- nais, fell into the hands of the king of France. In 1566 an assembly of the states-general was held in the town by Charles IX. and Catherine de Medici. Moulins has suffered frequently from epidemics and inundations, and the ducal palace was destroyed by fire in 1755.

MOULMEIN. See Mavutmarn. |

MOUNTAINS. For mountains in general see GEOLOGY, vol. x. p. 370sg. The more important groups of mountains are discussed under separate headings, as ALPs, HIMALAYA, ANDES, &c.

MOUNT VERNON, a city of the United States, county seat of Knox county, Ohio, and a railway junction on the Baltimore and Ohio and the Cleveland, Mount Vernon, and Columbus Railroads, 45 miles north-north-east of

Columbus. Settled in 1805, it had become a well-built flourishing place of 5249 inhabitants in 1880, engaged in various manufacturing industries.

MOURZUK, or Murzux. See Frzzay, vol. ix. p. 130.

MOUSE. The bright and active, though mischievous, little animal known to us by the name of Mouse and its close relative the Common Rat are the most familiar and also the most typical members of the Murine, a sub-family containing about 250 species assignable to no less than 18 distinct genera, all of which, however, are so super- ficially alike that one or other of the English names rat or mouse would be fairly appropriate to any of them. Together they form one, and that by far the largest and most important, of the 10 sub-families into which the Muridz or Rat family (order Rodentia) are divisible. Their nearest neighbours are the Tree-mice (Dendromyinz) and the Hamsters (Cricetinz), from which they differ by various cranial and dental characters. Among themselves they have for the most part very strong resemblances ; nearly all are of very rat-like exterior, of light and active build, with large ears, bright and well-developed eyes, long and

—— =

| Seat EA ee

Fig, 1.—The Australian Brown-footed Rat (Mus fuscipes, Waterh,) (After Gould.)

scaly tails, and nearly always of dull and inconspicuous coloration, as is suitable to their usually burrowing and nocturnal habits. The more important characteristics of the group, their anatomical, cranial, and dental peculiarities, have already been touched upon in the article MAMMALIA (vol. xv. p. 415 sq.), and therefore we may now pass to the division of the sub-family into smaller groups.

Primarily the Murine are divisible into the Mures, or those with their molar teeth, as in the Common Rat, and the Sigmodontes, or those with their molars, like those of the Rice-rat of America. Fig. 2 will explain this: A represents the upper molars of a Mus, and B the correspond- ing teeth of a Sigmodont. It will thus be seen that Mus has molars composed essentially of cusps arranged triserially —that is to say, with three series of cusps across each tooth—while in the

Sigmodontes the cusps are arranged bi- Fig. 2. serially in pairs along the teeth, To , Cader sutinen we the first of these groups, the Mures, be- Mus. 3B. Upper mo-

; igmodont. long the following genera :— vis inaiateits

I. Mus, L. Incisors narrow, not grooved. Molars small, their

structure as shown in fig. 2, A. Incisive foramina long. Coronoid process of lower jaw well developed. Eyes and ears large. Fur soft, though sometimes mixed with spines; pollex with a short nail instead of a claw. No cheek-pouches. Tail long, nearly naked, with rings of overlapping scales.

This, the typical genus of the family, is by far the largest of the order, and indeed of the whole class Mammalia, containing not less than 120 species spread over the whole of the Old World with the exception of Madagascar. Of these, about 30 belong to what is known as the Palearctic zoological region, 40 to the Oriental, 30 to the Ethiopian, and 20 to the Australian, the number of species being on the whole much more considerable in tropical than in temperate regions, while but very few are found where the climate is excessively cold. It is an interesting fact in connexion with climate that many of the species living in hot countries have their fur more or less mixed with flattened spines, and that these spines appear to be shed during the winter and to be replaced by hairs, the latter naturally affording a warmer covering for the animal than the former. °

The most important characters that have been used for the deter- mination of the various species of Mus are the size and proportions of the body, limbs, ears, and tail, the number of mamme, which ranges from 6 to 20, and various more or less important differences in the shape and proportions of the skull and teeth. Of the numer- ous species the following are those most worthy of note :—

Mus decumanus, Pall., the Common Brown or Norway Rat, dis- tinguished by its large size, brownish grey colour, short tail and ears, powerful skull, and the possession of from 10 to 12 mamme. It is extremely fierce and cunning, and easily overcomes in the struggle for existence all the other allied species with which it comes in contact. Its original home would seem

to have been some part of Central Asia, an indigenous species recently described from China, Mf. humiliatus, being in fact so extremely like it that in all probability the latter is the original race from which it has sprung. Thence it has spread to all parts of the world, driving out the house-haunting species everywhere, as it has in England all but exterminated the next species.

M. rattus, L., the old English Black Rat, readily distinguishable from the Brown Rat by its smaller size, longer ears and tail, and glossy black colour. It shares the roving habits of If. decumanus, frequenting ships, and from them passing to the land in various parts of the world. On this account it, or its tropical representa- tive M. alcxandrinus, Geof., is extremely common in many places to which M. decumanus has not yet penetrated, for instance in South America, where it has had only the far less highly-organized Sigmodontes to compete with, and where it has therefore gained a firm footing. It is extremely interesting to observe that this long- tailed rat, originally a native of India, would seem to have first penetrated to all parts of the world and to have overcome and nearly or quite exterminated the indigenous rats, and that then M. decumanus, a more recent and powerful development of the House-rat type, has followed, and in its turn has overcome and nearly exterminated it.

M. musculus, Linn., the Common House-mouse, is, like the last species, originally a native of India, whence it has spread to all the inhabited parts of the globe. Its habits and appearance are too well known to need any description.

M. sylvaticus, L.,the Wood or Long-tailed Field-mouse, is a species very common in many parts of England, often taking to barns and outhouses for shelter during the winter. It is of about the same size and proportions as Mf. musculus, but of a bright reddish grey colour, with a pure white belly. .

M. minutus, Pall., the Harvest-mouse, is the smallest of the European mice, seldom exceeding 24 or 8 inches in length. It is of a yellowish red colour, with comparatively short ears and tail. It lives entirely away from houses, commonly taking up its abode in wheat or hay fields, where it builds a round grass nest about the size of a cricket-ball, in which it brings up its young.

These five English species may be taken as types of the 120 species of Mus. None are much larger than M. decwmanus or smaller than M. minutus, and they all have habits generally similar to those of one or other of the English species, although there are some which either live in trees like squirrels, or in the water like the English Water-voles, among which latter is the species shown in fig. 1, M. fuscipes, Waterh., the Brown-footed Rat of western and southern Australia.

II. Nesokia, like Mus, but with the incisors and molars very much broader, and the transverse lamine of the latter more clearly defined.

This genus, so closely allied to Mus as to be barely worthy of separation, contains five or six species of clumsily-built rats spread over southern Asia from Palestine to Formosa, and from Cashmere to Ceylon. The most noteworthy member of the group is the Great Bandicoot or Pig-rat of the continent of India (N. bandicota, Bechs.), the largest of all the rat tribe, often considerably exceed- ing a foot in length. The other species vary in size between this and a brown rat. NV. bengalensis, Gr., the common Field-rat of

India, has no less than eighteen mamme, nearly the largest number found among the Muride.

III. Golunda, Gray, like Mus, but with a distinct groove down the front of the upper incisors. There are only two species, one from western India, and the other from eastern Africa.

IV. Uromys, Peters., differs from Jfus in having the scales of the tail not overlapping, but set edge to edge, so as to form a sort of mosaic work. There are about six species of Uromys, spread over the northern part of the Australian region from the Aru Islands to Queensland.

V. Hapalotis, Licht. Hind-limbs elongated. Incisive foramina very large. No coronoid process to the lower jaw. This genus is confined to Australia, where there are about fifteen species known. They are pretty little animals,

with long ears and tail, and in many respects resemble the Jerboas, whose place they seem to take on the sandy Australian deserts.

VI. Mastacomys, Thomas, like Afus, but with the molars remark- ably broadened, and with only four mamme. The single species in the genus is as yet only known from Tasmania, though it has been found fossil in New South Wales ; it is somewhat similar in size and general appearance to the English Water-vole, but has much longer and softer fur.

VII. Aeanthomys, Less. Fur almost entirely composed of flattened spines. Coronoid process very small. There are six species of Spiny-mice known, all of about the size of the Common Mouse. They are found in Syria, Palestine, and eastern Africa as far south as Mozambique.

VIII. Echinothriz, Gray, a very remarkable rat with an ex- tremely elongated muzzle, all the bones of the face being much produced. The incisors are faintly grooved. The only species is E. leucura, an animal of about the size of the Common Rat, with its fur thickly mixed with spines. It is found in Celebes.

The remaining genera belong to the Sigmodontes ; they are rather more numerous than those of the Mures, but, on the whole, present somewhat less strongly marked generic differences.

IX. Hypogeomys, Grand., a very peculiar form of large size, with long ears, feet, and tail. There is only one spccies, H. antimena, a fawn-coloured rat about 9 inches long.

X. Nesomys, Peters., contains two species of long-haired rats, more or less rufous in colour, about the size of the House-rat.

XI. Braehytarsomys, Giinther, contains only B. albicauda, a pretty velvety-haired fawn-coloured rat, with short feet and a long tail.

XII. Hallomys, Jent. The only species, H. audebertt, is very like a Nesomys, but has much longer hind-feet. This and the last three genera are confined to Madagascar.

XIII. Hesperomys, Waterh. Molar structure as shown in fig. 2, B. The Aus of the New World, containing the great mass of the rats and mice of America, and having no very special generic charac- ters common to all its members. This large genus is composed of at least seventy distinct species spread over all America from Canada to Cape Horn, of which none are quite as large as Afus decumanus, while several are considerably smaller than Aus musculus. They have been split up into ten sub-genera, of which perhaps the best marked is Rhipidomys, a small group containing about ten species, remarkably like Dormice in their habits and general appearance, having soft woolly fur and long hairy tails, and living entirely in trees, bushes, or in the roofs of houses. The other Hesperomys are all terrestrial in their habits, much as the Old-World rats and mice are. One only, H. spinosus, a native of Peru, has as yet been found with spines in its fur,—a rather remarkable circumstance when we remember how many of the tropical species of the allied genus Afus have more or less spiny fur.

XIV. Holocheilus, Brandt, like Hesperomys, but with the third upper molars proportionately larger and the skull more stoutly built. This genus, confined to Brazil, contains about six species, some of which are the largest indigenous rats of America. Two species are aquatic in their habits, and have therefore developed short webs between the toes of their hind-feet.

XV. Sigmodon, Say and Ord, differs from Hesperomys in the pattern of the molar teeth. It contains one species only, the Rice- rat, S. hispidus, which ranges from the United States to Ecuador.

XVI. and XVII. Reithrodon, Waterh., and Ochetodon, Coues., more or less like Hesperomys, but with grooved upper incisors. The first of these is a South-American genus, and contains four rat-like species, one from Venezuela and the other three from Patagonia. The second consists of three North American mice, of about the size and proportions of the English Wood-mouse, Mus sylvaticus.

XVIII. Neotoma, Say and Ord, a peculiar North – American group, in which the tceth have the prismatic appearance of those of the

From the ranges of the genera given above it will be

seen that all the first group, the Mures, are confined to the Old World, and that of the Sigmodontes four genera are found in Madagascar and the rest in America, thus giving us a very remarkable instance of the peculiar affinity that the fauna of Madagascar has with that of the New World. This affinity is usually explained by the fact that those animals which show it belong as a rule to groups formerly distributed over both the Old and New Worlds, and that since the isolation of Madagascar these, owing to the competition of more highly-organized forms, have been exterminated or strongly modified throughout the continents of the eastern hemisphere, while in the western they have been preserved to the present time. Thus in the present case it seems probable that the original ances- tors of the A/urinz, if not indeed of the whole family Muride, were Sigmodontes having molars with their cusps biserially arranged, and that these, being less powerful in the struggle for existence, as is shown by the manner in which roving members of the Mures rapidly multiply at the expense of the indigenous Sigmodontes of any place they may be introduced into, have gradually succumbed to the more recently developed Mures wherever the latter were able to penetrate, —Madagascar having previously become an island, and therefore inaccessible to them. Other groups, however, also probably descendants of Sigmodont Muride, have become so strongly modified either as to structure or habits as to have been able to avoid the rivalry of the Mures, and thus to exist side by side with the latter; such probably are the Hamsters (Cricetus) and the Voles (Arvicola), both of which have modifications of the biserial arrangement of the molars. As to the Murines from Australia—a region isolated from the rest of the world far earlier than Madagascar—with their very various degrees of specialization, it seems prob- able, as Mr Wallace has suggested,? that from very early times individual rats and mice have drifted on floating trees and other objects from island to island along the Indian archipelago down to Australia, and that the de- scendants of the earliest arrivals have become the most modified, and that others have been continually joining them, until we get the present state of affairs, namely, one or two genera very markedly different from Mus, others but slightly different, and finally numerous species not generically separable from the European and Asiatic rats and mice. Ort) MOUSE-BIRD (Dutch Muisvogel), the name by which in Cape Colony and Natal the members of the genus Colius* of Brisson are known—partly, it would seem, from their general coloration, but more probably from their singular habit of creeping

along the boughs of trees with the whole tarsus applied to the branch. By the earlier systematists, who had few opportunities of examining the internal structure of exotic forms, Colius was placed among the Fringillide ; but nearly all travellers who had seen one or another species of it in life demurred to that view. Still its position was doubtful till Dr Murie, in an elabo- rate treatise on its osteology ([bis, 1872, pp. 262-280), showed that it was no Passerine, and subsequently (iis, 1873, p. 190) proposed Pamprodactyle as the name of the group of which the Family Coliide is the sole type—this word being coined to indicate the obvious character of all the toes being ordinarily directed forwards, but by no means the only peculiar character these birds possess. A few years later most of Dr Murie's views were confirmed

1 The teeth of the extinct genus Cricetodon from the Miocene of France and Germany are in their essential structure quite similar to those of Hesperomys.

2 Australasia, p. 58, 1879.

3 Some other generic divisions have been suggested, but on grounds so slender as hardly to merit consideration.

by Garrod (Proc. Zool. Society, 1876, pp. 416-419), who added considerably to our knowledge of the general anatomy of the Family, which he considered to be related on the one hand to the Picidz, and on the other to the Alcedinidx (see KINGFISHER, vol. xiv. p. 81) and Bucerotidx (see Horn- BILL, vol, xii. p. 169). The Coliidz are small birds, with a

Mouse-Bird,

rather Finch-like bill, a more or less crested head, a very long tail, and generally of a dun or slate-coloured plumage that sometimes brightens into blue or is pleasingly diver- sified with white or chestnut. They feed almost wholly on fruits, but occasionally take insects, in quest of which they pass in bands of fifteen or twenty from tree to tree, and hang in all attitudes from the branches as they feed. It is even said that they sleep suspended by their

powerful and versatile toes. Seven species are believed to exist, all belonging to the Ethiopian Region (of which the Family is one of the most characteristic), and ranging from Abyssinia southwards. Three species inhabit Cape Colony. (A. N.) MOVERS, Franz Karu (1806-1856), a German Orien- talist, was born at Koesfeld 17th July 1806, studied at Minster, was consecrated priest in 1829, and was pro- fessor in the Catholic theological faculty at Breslau from

1839 to his death on 28th September 1856. He was one of

the most learned Catholics of Germany, and his elaborate work on Pheenicia? attained a high and in some respects an exaggerated reputation. It is a monument of great industry but of little judgment, and the progress of epi- graphic studies has superseded much of the author's mate- rial. The first volume in particular, which deals with the religion of the Phcenicians, may be viewed as quite out of date. Movers himself modified some of his views in his article "Phénizien" in Ersch and Gruber's Encyklopédie. Of his other writings two Biblical studies were of some importance, viz., his Kritische Untersuchungen wiber die ATliche Chronik (1834) and Latin essay on the two re- censions of the text of Jeremiah (1837).

MOZAMBIQUE, a colonial province of Portugal, ex- tending for about 1200 miles along the east coast of Africa from Cape Delgado (10° 41' 8. lat.) to Lorenzo Marques on the south side of Delagoa Bay (25° 58'S. lat.). On paper it forms an imposing territory of at least 38,000 Square miles without any definite limit towards the interior ; but in reality it consists of a few settlements and military posts feebly authoritative over the surrounding

} Die Phinizier: vol. i., Religion (1840); Alterthum (3 parts, 1849-50-56).

vol. ii., Das Phénizische

tribes. The Portuguese divide the province into the military districts of Mozambique, Cape Delgado, Angoche, Quilimane, Tete, Sofala, and Lorenzo Marques, with the presidential territory of Bazaruto. The small coral island of Mozambique, which gives its name to the province and contains the provincial capital, lies in 15° S. lat., about 3 miles off the coast of the peninsula Mossuril. It is defended by three forts, of which the

principal, St Se- bastian, is built entirely of stone brought from Portugal in 1510. The streets of the town (properly St Sebastian of Mozambique) are narrow and crooked, and the stone-built flat-roofed houses are for the most part dull and lifeless in spite of their being washed with pink, brown, and white. Its principal buildings are the palace of the governor- general, formerly a Jesuit college, the custom-house, the hospital, and three churches. The population includes, be- sides Portuguese and Africans, Banyans, Parsees, and Arabs. The district of Cape Delgado includes the archipelago of the Querimba Islands, and on the opposite mainland Mucimba, Pangane, Lumbo, Quissanga, Montepes, Arimba, besides the colony of Europeans founded in 1857 on the Bay of Pemba. The chief town is Ibo, with over 2000 inhabit- ants, situated on the island of the same name. Of the twenty-eight islands some are nearly deserted, although both their climate and that of the opposite coast is good. Ibo has a considerable trade, —the exports being sesame, calumba root, oil-seeds, ivory, and wax. Turtle fishing is carried on; but little has been done to develop the agricultural capabilities of the district. The district of Angoche extends nominally as far south as the Quirimbo river, and includes the Angoche and Primeira islands and a small settlement on the Angoche river. The trade is very limited. The district of Quilimane is the centre of the commerce of the Zambesi, and the town ranks next to Mozambique as a port. Near the village of St Marcal de Sena, the headquarters of the sub-military government of Sena, there are said to be very rich gold mines. Tete, to the north-west of Sena, is situated in the centre of an immense coal-basin. It includes a number of settlements on the Zambesi reaching as far as Zumbo, where a great native fair is held. The chief town is St Thiajo Major, about 250 miles from the mouth of the Zambesi. The climate is genial, and the soil is specially suitable for wheat, maize, tobacco, cotton, and sugar-cane. The chief town of the Sofala district is Sofala on the island of Chi- loane in the estuary of the Sofala river. It was the original capital of the colony, and still possesses a good harbour, which, however, is not always easily accessible, and requires good piloting. The district is rich in gold mines, and is supposed by some to be the Ophir with which King Solomon traded. Inhambane, opposite Gasa, is very much encroached upon by the Zulu tribes. The natural products are similar to those in the Zambesi valley. A species of oil-plant is very abundant, as well as amber and sarsaparilla, The district of Lorenzo Marques is almost wholly confined to the town of that name (¢.v.). The archipelago of Bazaruto

comprises the islands of Bazaruto, Benguerua, Xegine, Bango, and Santa Carolina. The soil and climate are both excellent, and there are important pear! fisheries.

Before the 12th century this portion of the east coast of Africa had been partly colonized by Arabs from the Red Sea, who were in possession of the island of Mozambique and other districts when in 1498 the island was sighted by the Portuguese. From that time the Portuguese armadas were in the habit of frequently touching this coast on their way to India, and in 1505 Albuquerque erected a stockade at the mouth of the Sofala river and established the first Portuguese settlement under the name of the captaincy of Sofala. The fortunes of the Portuguese have been frequently chequered with disasters, and in the earlier years of their settle- ment they had great difficulty in withstanding successive attacks of the Kaffres, the Turks, and the Arabs. The Banyan traders began

to frequent the Portuguese settlements in 1687, and were succeeded by the Battias from Hindustan. From Cape Delgado to Quilimane the native race on the coast is the Makua, who, notwithstanding the presence of Arabs, Banyans, and Battias, have preserved ina remarkable degree their purity of descent, although their language has undergone considerable change. The whole of the country

between the Rovuma and the Zambesi is thickly populated by

branches of this race governed by numerous petty independent despots. The Makua are divided into four families or groups—the Low Makua, the Lomwe or Upper Makua, the Maua, and the Medo. The Makololo, a powerful Basuto tribe who inhabited the valley of the Zambesi, were about twenty-five years ago not only con- quered but almost annihilated by the Manganja and Makua races. South of the Zambesi are the Landeens or Northern Zulus, who under Umzeila subdued Gasa, and press closely on the coast settle- ments of the Portuguese, which again are bounded on the south by Usibepu’s land.

Natural Features and Resources.—Though the climate of the Mozambique country is subject to sudden and great alterations, the mean annual temperature is high. The cool season lasts from April to August. In the rainy season, which begins in December and sometimes continues to March, the heat when rain is not falling, which is scarcely ever, is almost insupportable. On the rivers and the coast the mangrove swamps cause fever to Europeans, but the climate is not dangerous if moderate care is taken.

The whole of the country south from the Rovuma to the Zambesi possesses naturally great fertility, the richest portion, however, be- ing that between Angoche and Quilimane. The mountain ranges which flank Lake Shirwa are of great height and towards Quilimane extend almost to the coast. In the basin of the Zambesi thé soil is fertilized by the inundations of the river, and yields abundantly with almost no labour. The low coast land of the Gasa country is almost equally fruitful. The whole region of Mozambique is inter- sected by numerous rivers, some of which are navigable, while at several of the estuaries there are admirable natural harbours. Ebony, the gum-copal tree, the india-rubber climber, sandal-wood, and a large number of valuable timber trees are found in the extensive forests. In the interior elephants, antelopes, and buffaloes abound, as well as lions and leopards, and the rhinoceros and hippopotamus frequent certain regions. Game in immense variety is plentiful, and the pearl and other fisheries are valuable. The mineral resources of the country are of exceptional importance. There are immense deposits of coal in the neighbourhood of the Zambesi and of Delagoa Bay, and adjoining the coalfields ironstone of the best quality is very plentiful. Malachite and copper are found in the interior, north-west of Mozambique. The gold-mines of Manica, about 120 niles west of Sofala, are supposed to be the richest on the east coast of Africa.

Industry and Commerce.—Almost nothing has been done to develop the resources of the country, and the Portuguese have scarcely carried their discoveries beyond the regions where they have settled. Journeys througli the Makua country have lately been made by H. E. O’Neill and the Rev. Chauncey Maples.! The Zambesi valley and the districts round Lakes Nyassa and Shirwa have been explored by Kirk and Livingstone. The regions border- ing on the Transvaal have been visited by Carl Mauch and St Vincent Erskine. Although a great part of the country is admir- ably

adapted for the growth of cotton, coffee, and sugar, scarcely any attempt has been made to form plantations. The caju tree, which yields an intoxicating liquor, is, however, largely cultivated, and the cocoa-nut tree is also grown. The number of independent chiefs in the Makua country renders it almost inaccessible to traders, but ivory is sold in large quantities for the Indian market, the annual value being about £70,000. The other exports include bees- wax, corn, gums, india-rubber, and oil. The financial difficulties of the Portuguese Government have completely retarded the com- mercial enterprise of the settlements. The trade is almost entirely in the hands of the Banyans, who are supplied by French and Dutch houses with goods, chiefly cotton and silk cloths, brandy, wine, and old guns, which they barter for produce with the natives on the coast. The only river by which there is regular communi- cation with the interior is the Zambesi. On the coast of Mozam- bique there are several native ports of call, between which and Madagascar a large surreptitious trade in slaves was carried on until 1877. With this island, and also with Zanzibar, there is a large general coasting trade. The British India Company's steamers from Zanzibar in connexion with steamers from Aden and Lisbon also call every twenty-eight days at Mozambique, and a monthly steamer from Natal calls at Delagoa Bay, Inhambane, Quilimane, aud Mozambique. The general shipping trade is carried on by about 400 vessels, of which about one-half are coasters. English vessels in 1877 were said to number 79 of 30,000 tons, French 72 of 18,000 tons, Portuguese 41, Arab 19, Dutch 8, and German 9.

For the Portuguese settlements see the report by Consul Elton in Accounts and Papers, 1876, and L. de B., Les Colonies Portugaises: court exposé de leur

1 See Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1882.

situation actuelle, Lisbon, 1878. For the region in general see the ve of a

travellers referred to.

MOZARAB, Spanish Mozdrabe, is a corruption of the Arabic Musta'rib, coll. Musta'riba, which denotes persons not Arab by race who have assimilated themselves to the Arabs. This name was applied by the Moslems in Spain to the Christian communities existing among them, in

Cordova, Seville, Toledo, and other large cities, in the exercise of their own laws and religion. The ancient liturgy (see vol. xiv. p. 707) used by the Christians of Toledo, the first great body of this kind who were freed from the Moslem yoke, is commonly known as Mozarabic.

MOZART, Worrcane AmaApEus? (1756-1791), one of the greatest musicians the world has ever produced, was born at Salzburg, 27th January 1756. He was educated by his father, Leopold Mozart, a violinist of high repute, in the service of the archbishop of Salzburg. _ When only three years old he shared the harpsichord lessons of his sister Maria, five years his senior.

2 Tn the baptismal register his name stands, Joannes Chrysostomus Wolfgangus Theophilus (Lat. Amadeus, Germ. Gottlieb). 3 The German diminutive of Wolfgang.

third set of sonatas, dedicated: to the queen ; and wrote an anthem for four voices entitled God is our Refuge, for presentation to the British Museum.) In July 1764 he played at Tunbridge Wells, and soon afterwards Leopold Mozart caught a severe illness, during the continuance of

which he stayed with Dr Randall in Five Fields Row,

now Lower Ebury Street, Chelsea. On 12th February 1765 the children gave a concert at the Little Theatre in the Haymarket, and another on 13th May at Hickford’s Room. After this they gave private performances at the Swan and Hoop Tavern, Cornhill; and on 17th September the family left England for the Hague, where they remained some time, and where in March 1766 the young composer made his first attempt at an oratorio, commanding in Holland a success as great as that he had already attained in London, and astonishing his hearers at Haarlem by performing on the then largest organ in the world. It would be impossible within the limits of a sketch like the present to follow the history of this gifted boy through all its extraordinary details. Towards the close of 1766 we find him at home in Salzburg, diligently studying Fux’s Gradus ad Parnassum. In Septem- ber 1767 he paid a second visit to Vienna, and at the suggestion of the emperor Joseph II.

composed an opera buffa, La Pinta Semplice, which, though acknowledged by the company for which it was written to be “fan incom- parable work,” was suppressed by a miserable cabal. The archbishop of Salzburg hearing of this commanded a representation of the rejected work in his palace, and appointed the young composer his ‘‘maestro di capella.” The office, however, was merely an honorary one, and, since it did not involve compulsory residence, Leopold Mozart determined to complete his son’s education in Italy, to which country he himself accompanied him in December 1769.

Wolfgang, now nearly fourteen years old, was already an accomplished musician, needing experience rather than instruction, and gaining it every day. His talent was universally acknowledged. At Milan he received a com- mission to write an opera for the following Christmas. At Bologna he found firm friends in the venerable Padre Martini and the still more famous sopranist Fari- nelli. At Florence he became so tenderly attached to Thomas Linley, a boy of extraordinary promise and ex- actly his own age, that he parted from him with tears, which seemed almost prophetic—for Linley was drowned in England at the early age of twenty-two. Arriving in Rome on the Wednesday in Holy Week, he went at once to the Sistine Chapel to hear the celebrated Miserere of regorio Allegri, which, on returning to his hotel, he wrote down from memory note for note—a feat which created an immense sensation, for at that time the singers were forbidden to transcribe the music on pain of excommuni- cation. In May he played at the Conservatorio della Pieta, in Naples, where the audience, attributing his power to the magical effect of a ring, insisted upon its removal from his finger. Returning to Rome towards the end of June, he was invested by the pope with the order of “The Golden Spur,” of which he was made a cavaliere,? an honour which he prized the more highly because, not many years before, it had been conferred upon Gluck. In July he paid a second visit to Bologna, when the Acca- demia Filarmonica, after subjecting him to a severe examina- tion, admitted him to the rank of “compositore,” notwith- standing a statute restricting this preferment to candidates of at least twenty years old. The exercise which gained him this distinction is a four-part composition in strict

1 The original autograph of this is now numbered ‘‘Select case C, iL (ole 2 Auratz militie eques.

counterpoint on the antiphon Querite primum, written in the severe ecclesiastical style of the 16th century and abounding in points of ingenious imitation and device.®

In October 1770 Wolfgang and his father returned to

Milan for the completion and production of the new opera. The libretto, entitled Mitridate, Re di Ponto, was furnished by an obscure poet from Turin, to the great disappointment of the young maestro, who had hoped to set a drama by Metastasio. The progress of the work was interrupted from time to time by the miserable intrigues which seem inseparable from the lyric stage, exacerbated in this particular case by the jealousy of the resident professors, who refused to believe either that an Italian opera could be written by a native of Germany, or that a boy of four- teen could manage the orchestra of La Scala, at that time the largest in Europe. Fortunately the detractors were effectively silenced at the first-full rehearsal; and on the 26th of December Wolfgang took his seat at the harpsichord and directed his work amidst a storm of genuine applause. The success of the piece was unprecedented. It had a continuous run of twenty nights, and delighted even the most captious critics. _ Wolfgang’s triumph was now complete. After playing with his usual success in Turin, Verona, Venice, Padua, and other Italian cities, he returned with his father to Salzburg in March 1771, commissioned to compose a grand dramatic serenata for the approaching marriage of the archduke Ferdinand, and an opera for La Scala, to be performed during the season of 1773. The wedding took place at Milan on 21st October; and the serenata, Ascanio in Alba, was produced with an effect which com- pletely eclipsed Hasse’s new opera, Ruggiero, composed for the same festivity. The empress Maria Theresa was so delighted with it that in addition to his fee she pre- sented Wolfgang with a watch set with diamonds and enamelled with her portrait ; and Hasse, forgetful of his own defeat, generously uttered the often-quoted prophecy, “This boy will cause us all to be forgotten.”

During the absence of Wolfgang and his father the good archbishop of Salzburg died; and in the spring of the year 1772 Hieronymus, count of

Colloredo, was elected in his stead, to the horror of all who were acquainted with his real character. The Mozart family did their best to propitiate their new lord, for whose installation Wolfgang, after his return from Milan, composed an opera, Jd Sogno di Scipione ; but the newly-elected prelate had no taste for art, and was utterly incapable of appreciating the charm of any intellectual pursuit whatever. For the present, however, things went on smoothly. In October the father and son once more visited Milan for the preparation and production of the new opera, Lucio Silla, which was produced at Christmas with a success quite equal to that of Mitridate, and ran between twenty and thirty nights. Unfortunately, however, these artistic triumphs were far from profitable in their pecuniary aspect. The family grew poorer and poorer ; and the archbishop Hieronymus was not the man to rescue them from penury.

In the meantime Wolfgang continued to produce new works with incredible rapidity. In 1775 he composed an opera for Munich, La inta Giardiniera, produced on 13th January. In the following March he set to music Metastasio's dramatic cantata, /7 Re Pastore. Concertos, masses, symphonies, sonatas, and other important works, both vocal and instrumental, followed each other without a pause. And this fertility of invention, instead of ex-

3 An exact copy of this most interesting production, transcribed from the original autograph still preserved among the archives of the Accademia, will be found in the appendix to Holmes's Life of Mozart (London, 1845).

1. ◦ Questo ragazzo ci fara dimenticar tutti."

hausting his genius, seemed only to stimulate it to still more indefatigable exertions. But the pecuniary return was so inconsiderable that in 1777 Leopold Mozart asked the archbishop for leave of absence for the purpose of making a professional tour. This was refused on the ground of the prelate's dislike to "that system of begging." Wolfgang then requested permission to resign his appoint- ment, which was only an honorary one,

for the purpose of making the tour with his mother. The archbishop was furious; but the plan was carried out at last, and on the 23d September the mother and son started for Munich. The results were not encouraging. Leopold hoped that his son, now twenty-one years old, might obtain some pro- fitable court appointment ; but in this he was disappointed. And, worse still, poor Wolfgang fell in love at Mannheim with a promising young vocalist named Aloysia Weber, whose father, the prompter of the theatre, was very nearly penniless. On hearing of this Leopold ordered his wife and son to start instantly for Paris, where they arrived on 23d March 1778. Wolfgang's usual success, however, seemed on this occasion to have deserted him. His recep- tion was a cold one; and, to add to his misery, his mother fell seriously ill. He wrote home in unspeakable distress ; but the worst had not yet come. On 3d July the parent to whom he was so tenderly attached expired in his arms. Reduced almost to despair by this new trouble, he left Paris in September, rested for a while on his way home in Mannheim and Munich, was received by Aloysia Weber with coldness almost amounting to contempt ; and in June 1779 he returned to Salzburg, hoping against hope that he might make some better terms with the archbishop, who re- lented so far as to attach a salary of 500 florins (about £50) tohis " concertmeister's" appointment, with leave of absence in case he should be engaged to write an opera elsewhere.

Two years later the desired opportunity presented itself. He was engaged to compose an opera for Munich for the carnival of 1781. The libretto was furnished by the abbate Varesco, court chaplain at Salzburg, a truly sympa- thetic collaborateur. On 29th January 1781 the work was produced under the title of Zdomeneo, Re di Creta with triumphant success, and thenceforth Mozart's position as an artist was assured; for this was not only the finest work he had ever written but incontestably the finest opera that had ever yet been placed upon the stage in any age or country. It marked an era in the history of art, and raised the lyric drama to a level till then unknown.

And now the archbishop's character exhibited itself in its true colours. Art for its own sake he utterly dis. dained ; but it flattered his vanity to retain a famous artist in his service with the power of insulting him at will. On hearing of the success of Jdomeneo he instantly summoned the composer to Vienna, where he was spending the season. Mozart lost not a moment in

presenting him- self, but he soon found his position intolerable. That he should be condemned to dine with his patron's servants was the fault of the age, but the open disrespect with which the lowest menials treated him was due to the arch- bishop's example. Though received as an honoured guest in the houses of the haute noblesse of Vienna, he was uni- formly addressed by the archbishop in the third person singular, a form used in Germany to express the utmost possible contempt. His salary was reduced from 500 to 400 florins, he was left to pay his own travelling ex- penses, and he was not permitted to add to his means by giving a concert on his own account or to play anywhere but at the archiepiscopal palace ; indeed it was only at the instance of a large number of the nobility that he obtained leave to take part, gratuitously, in a concert given for the poor. Archbishop Hieronymus was hated at court, and most of all by the emperor Joseph, who, on

AW Tf

retiring to Laxenburg for the summer, did not place his name on the list of invited guests. This offended him so deeply that he left Vienna in disgust. The household were sent on to Salzburg, but Mozart was left to find lodgings at lis own expense. Thereupon he sent in his resignation ; and for this act 'of contumacy was insulted by the archbishop in terms too vulgar for translation. He persevered, however, in his resolution, taking lodgings in a house rented by his old friends the Webers, and vainly hoping for pupils, since Vienna at this season was per- fectly empty. Happily he had a sincere though not a_ generous well-wisher in the emperor, and a firm friend in the archduke Maximilian, who, in common with many noblemen of rank, were disgusted with the archbishop's behaviour. By the emperor's command he wrote a German opera, Die Entfiihrung aus dem Serail, which on 16th July 1782 was received with acclamation, and not long afterwards was performed with equal success at Prague. This great work raised the national "singspiel" to a level commensurate with that which Jdomeneo had already attained for the Italian "opera seria." Gluck's great reform .of the lyric drama (based, not, as is sometimes erroneously supposed, on new principles invented by him- self, but on those enunciated by Peri and his associates as early as the year 1600, when the first Italian opera was produced at Florence) had already attracted immense atten- tion in Paris, and was everywhere producing good fruit. It was impossible that it should do

otherwise, for it was founded on pure dramatic truth. But what Gluck worked out in obedience to a carefully-elaborated theory Mozart effected by simple force of natural dramatic instinct. Moreover, with all his love for graceful melody, his power of expression, and dramatic force, Gluck was not great as a constructive musician, On the other hand, the erudi- tion which in 1770 had won Mozart's diploma from the Accademia at Bologna was no mere rusty exhibition of scholastic pedantry. It enabled him to cast his music into symmetrical and well-considered form, without sacrificing the demands of dramatic consistency ; to enchant the un- learned hearer with an endless flow of melody, while satis- fying the cultivated musician with the most ingenious part-writing that had ever been imagined in connexion with the stage ; to construct the grand finales that have made his operas the finest in the world ;—-and all this with equal reverence for the claims of legitimate art on the one side and those of passionate expression on the other. For the finales are no dead forms, but living scenes developing the action of the drama. And the impassioned utterances are no poor passages of "sound and fury, signifying nothing," but well-constructed music, shapely and beautiful,~~—music which Gluck himself, with all his genius, could no more hope to rival than Hasse could hope to rival the choruses in Israel in Egypt. For Gluck, though his taste was as refined and his intellect as highly cultivated as Mozart's, was, as Handel justly observed, no contrapuntist ; and works like Mozart's needed an intimate acquaintance with the mys~~ teries of counterpoint, no less than purity of taste and intellectual culture. And so it comes to pass that Mozart's operas still retain a stronger hold upon the affections, both of the general public and the initiated worshipper of art, than any other dramatic music that has ever been written.

The next great event in Mozart's life was a disastrous one. Though Aloysia Weber had long since rejected him, his renewed intimacy with the family led to a most unfor- tunate marriage with her younger sister, Constance, a woman who, neither his equal in intellect nor his superior in prudence, added little to the happiness of his life and less than nothing to its prosperity. The wedding took place at St Stephen's on 16th August 1782. By the end of the year the thriftless pair were deeply in debt. Mozart

composed incessantly, played at numberless concerts, and was in greater favour than ever at court and with the nobility; but to the last day of his life his purse was empty. He had, however, many kind friends, not the least affectionate of whom-was the veteran Haydn, who was sincerely attached to him. With Gluck he was on terms of courteous intercourse only. Salieri detested him, and made no secret of his dislike.

Mozart's next dramatic venture was a German singspiel

~~in one act, Der Schauspieldirektor, produced at Schén~~ brunn, 7th February 1786. Not quite three months later, on lst May, he produced his marvellous Le Wozze di Figaro, the libretto for which was adapted from Beaumarchais by the abbé Da Ponte. The reception of this magnificent work was enthusiastic. But Vienna was a hotbed of intrigue. Everything that could be done by jealous plotters to mar the composer's success was done, and that so effectively that Mozart declared he would never bring out another opera in the city which treated him so meanly. Fortu- nately, Figaro, like Die Entfiihrung, was repeated with brilliant success at Prague. Mozart went there to hear it, and received a commission to write an opera for the next season, with a fee of 100 ducats. Da Ponte furnished a libretto, founded on Tirso de Molina's tale, Zl Convidado de Predra, and entitled I Don Giovanni. By 28th October 1787 the whole was ready with the exception of the over- ture, not a note of which was written on the evening before the performance. This circumstance has led to the idea that it was composed in haste, but it is certain that Mozart knew it all by heart and transcribed it during the night from memory, while his wife told fairy tales to keep him awake. The opera was produced on 29th October with extraordinary effect, and the overture, though played with- out rehearsal, was as successful as the rest of the music.} Yet, when reproduced in Vienna, Don Giovanni pleased less than Salieri's comparatively worthless Tarare.

On returning to Vienna Mozart was appointed kammer- compositor to the emperor with a salary of 800 gulden (£80). He also conducted Baron van Swieten's concerts, and composed great quantities both of sacred and secular music, but continued miserably poor, while his wife had become a confirmed invalid. In April 1789 he accompanied Prince Lichnowski to Berlin, where King Frederick William II. offered him the post of "

kapellmeister” with a salary of 3000 thalers (£450). Though most unwilling to quit the emperors service, he informed him of the offer and re- quested leave to resign his appointment in Vienna. “Are you going to desert me, then?” asked the emperor; and Mozart, wounded by the reproach, remained to starve. The emperor now commissioned Mozart to compose another Italian opera, which was produced 26th January 1790 under the title of Cos? fan tutte. Though the libretto by Da Ponte was too stupid for criticism, the music was deli- cious, and the opera would probably have had a long run but for the emperor’s death on 7th February. The new em- peror, Leopold IT., was elected at Frankfort in September, and Mozart went thither in the hope of giving some con- certs, but he was obliged to sell his plate to pay the expenses of the journey, and returned in December. In March 1791 Mozart consented to write a German opera upon an entirely new plan for Schikaneder, the manager of the little theatre in the Wieden suburb. The piece was addressed especially to the Freemasons and contained cease- less allusions both in the words and music to the secrets of the brotherhood. Deeply interested in the affairs of a body of which he was himself a member,? Mozart excelled

1 Michael Kelly, in his Reminiscences, has left a delightful account of the circumstances.

? Freemasonry did not at that time involve the censure of the Catholic Church, or Mozart would certainly have renounced it.

himself in this new work, for the overture of which he in- vented a new art-form, that of the ‘‘symphonic fugue.” He was rewarded for his labours by a brilliant artistic success, but Schikaneder alone reaped the financial benefit of the speculation.

Before the completion of Die Zauberfléte a stranger called on Mozart, requesting him to compose a Requiem and offering to pay for it in advance. He began the work under the influence of superstitious fear, believing that the messenger had been sent from the other world to forewarn him of his own approaching death. Meanwhile he received a commission to compose an opera, La Clemenza di Tito, for the coronation of the emperor at Prague.

He worked incessantly, and far beyond his strength. The coronation took place on 6th September, and its splendours threw the opera very much into the shade. Die Zauberflite was pro- duced on 30th September and had a splendid run. But the Regwem still remained unfinished ; the stranger there-fore made another appointment, paying a further sum in advance. Mozartworked atit unremittingly, hoping to make it his greatest work. His sacred music, though less florid than Haydn's, was even more voluptuously beautiful,— perfect in its kind, though showing no trace of the stern grandeur of Handel, or the devotional purity of Palestrina. In the Mequiem he surpassed himself, but he was not permitted to finish it. When the stranger called the third time the composer wasnomore. The score of the Requiem was completed by Siissmayer, whose task, simplified by the instructions he had received from Mozart on his death-bed, was a purely mechanical one. Jt is now known that the work was commissioned by Count Walsegg, who wished to perform it as his own.

Mozart died 5th December 1791, apparently from fever, though he believed himself poisoned. His funeral was a disgrace to the court, the emperor, the public, society itself. On the afternoon of the 6th his body was hurried to a pauper's grave; and because it rained Van Swieten, Siissmayer, and three other "friends" turned back and left him to be carried to his last long home alone.

Mozart's compositions, whether for the church, the theatre, or the concert-room, are pervaded by an individuality of style which can never be mistaken. Of the truthful expression of his dramatic music we have already spoken. Apart from its innate beauty, its artistic strength cousists in its perfect adaptation to the situation for which it is designed. The same great quality charactcrizes his symphonies, his concertos, and his sonatas for the pianoforte and other solo instruments. Each work presents us with the logical and consistent development of a noble idea, of which we never lose sight for a moment. No trace of indecision or inconsequence is discernible in any part of the composition. Every note is fitted into its place with a definitc purpose, and takes its share in the arrangement of the design with a certainty which leaves no doubt as to the object for which it was introduced. The result of this well-considered symmetry is a degree of technical perfection which no composer, ancient or modern, has ever surpassed. But

tech- nical perfection does but supply the body into which true genius alone can breathe the living soul. And here it is that we must look for the inexpressible charm which Mozart's music never fails to exercise upon all who hearit. Its boundless wealth of melody is governed by a refinement of taste which excludes every subject, every phrase, every minutest cadence which is not both beautiful in itself and capable of enhancing the beauty of its fellow-phrases. Mozart himself has left us, in a letter to Baron V- , 2 memorable description of the loving care he exercised in the selection of his charming phrases. He tells us that his ideas flowed best when he was alone and feeling cheerful. Having once conceived an idea he subjected it to a process of mental elaboration which continued until the composition was complete. Then, and not till then, he com- mitted it to paper ; and hence it was that he was able to write out the overture to Don Giovanni on the day of its first performance.

_Von Kéchel's Chronologischthematisches Verzeichniss, 1862, contains a com- plete list of Mozart's works. (W. 8. R.)

MOZDOK, a Russian town in the government of the Caucasus and province of Stavropol, lies on the left bank of the Terek, 465 feet above the level of the sea, in 43° 41' N. lat. and 44° 39' E. long., 58 miles north of Vladi-

kavkas, with which it is connected by a highroad, and 364 miles east of the Prochladnaya station on the Rostoff- Vladikavkas railway. Built on the site of an oak-wood (moz, noz, thick or dark, dok, wood, in Kabardine) in 1763 by Kogorko-Kontchukin, prince of Kabarda, it soon be- came an important point in the Russian line towards the Caucasus, and was fortified with earthen rampart and ditch. In 1840 it was attacked by Schamyl and 5000 mountaineers. The population (8760 in 1863) numbered 11,008 in 1877, 52 per cent. being " Orthodox " (with very few sectaries), 29 per cent. Armenians, 15 per cent. Moham- medans, and 2 per cent. Catholics. Gardening and agri- culture are the main means of subsistence, scarcely fifty individuals living by trade. The melons and water-melons of Mozdok are widely famed ; and, though vine-growing was only begun in 1873, by 1876 there was a production of 563 casks of wine or 1,416,000 bottles. An

oil-mill, tanneries, and soapworks are among the industrial estab- lishments. Three fairs are held in the year.

MOZLEY, James Bow.ine (1813-1878), English theo- logian, a native of Lincolnshire, born in 1813, was edu- cated at Oriel College, Oxford, where he graduated in 1834. He was appointed to a fellowship at Magdalen College in 1837, was ordained deacon in 1838, priest in 1844, and became vicar of Shoreham in 1856. In 1869 he became canon of Worcester, and in 1871 regius professor of divinity at Oxford.. He died at Shoreham on 4th January 1878,

He wrote 4 Treatise on the Augustinian Doctrine of Predestination (1855); The Primitive Doetrine of Baptismal Regeneration (1856) ; «l Review of the Baptismal Controversy (1863) ; Subseription to the Articles: a Letter (1863) ; Lectures on Miracles, being the Bampton Lectures for 1865; University Sermons, 1876 ; and a volume on the Old Testament entitled Ruling Ideas in Early Ages (1877). In all these works he has advocated his views, those of a strongly- convinced English High-Churchman, with uprightness, Icarning, acuteness, and sagacity.

MTSENSK (popularly called Amchensk), a district town of Russia, situated in the government of Orel on the navigable Zusha river, 17 miles from its junction with the Oka, on the Moscow and Kursk railway, 32 miles to the north-east of Orel. It is mentioned in the Russian chronicles as early as 1147 as a town of the principality of Tchernigoff. Many battles were fought for its possession, and the plains around are dotted with grave-mounds. Though protected by a fort which occupied a strong posi- tion, the town was taken and plundered several times by the Tatars, the Russians, the Poles, and the Lithuanians. From 1320 to 1530 it was under the rule of Lithuania : in the latter year it was taken by Russia, and became one of her chief strongholds against the raids of the Tatars. It is now an important centre for trade in grain, hemp, hemp-seed oil, tobacco, and Wine-spirit, shipped on the Zusha, Oka, and Volga to and from Moscow, Nijni- Novgorod, and St Petersburg, or forwarded by rail to Moscow, Libau, and Riga, Population, 15,000.

MUCILAGE, a term which denotes a viscid or glutinous mixture of water and any gummy vegetable substance. The principal sources of mucilaginous matters are enu- merated under Gum (vol. xi. p. 276). A mucilage indi-

cates a physical condition or property rather than any definite chemical constitution, and consequently it may possess various characters, but as a rule the term is re- stricted to the bodies which swell into a kind of jelly with water, having the insoluble gum bassorin as their prin- cipal constituent. Such mucilages are useful in medicine as emollients and demulcents, and in the arts as thickeners (in calico-printing, dyeing, &c.). A remarkable variety of mucilage has been recently obtained by Stanford of Glasgow from certain of the commoner kinds of Algz, and called from its source algin. The Laminariz yield it

MO Z—

in abundance and in a comparatively colourless condition ; it is also found in uct, but darkly coloured. It is a sub- stance of considerable thickening character, and has the peculiar property of gelatizing on the addition of a dilute mineral acid. A solution containing only 2 per cent. of algin when thus treated sets into a solid jelly. Alcohol has the same effect upon it.

MUH

It is extracted from the plants by sodium carbonate, and as it can be obtained in large quantity it may become useful in the dressing of fabrics, or as a thickener in calico-printing. MUGGLETON, Lopowicx (1610-1698), the founder of the sect of the Muggletonians, was born in Bishopsgate Street, London, about the year 1610. His father was a farrier, but he himself was bred to be a tailor. In 1651 he began to have revelations by “a motional voice,” and to proclaim himself and a brother tailor, John Reeve, as the two witnesses mentioned in the Apocalypse, and as the “true prophets of the only high, immortal, glorious God, Jesus Christ.” An exposition of their doctrines was pub- lished in 1656 under the title of The Divine Looking-Glass. Among other views (besides the doctrine of the divine mission of the authors) this work taught that the distinc- tion of the three persons in the Trinity is merely nominal, that God has a real human body, and that He left Elijah as His vicegerent in heaven when He Himself descended to die on the cross, These opinions, strange to say, gained considerable currency, and naturally also called forth much opposition. William Penn’s book, The New Wetnesses

proved Old Heretics (1672),. was directed against them,

and in 1676 Muggleton was tried at the Old Bailey and convicted of blasphemy. Reeve died in 1658, but Muggle- ton survived till 1698. His collected works, including the posthumous Acts of the Witnesses, were published in 1756 ; and in 1832 some sixty Muggletonians subscribed to bring cut a new edition of The Works of J. Reeve and L, Muggleton (in 3 vols. 4to). Even as-late as 1846 The Dwine Looking-Glass was reprinted by members of the sect, which is now, however, believed to be extinct.

MUHLHAUSEN, a busy manufacturing town of Thuringia in the district of Erfurt, Prussia, is situated on the right bank of the Unstrut, 25 miles to the north- west of Gotha. It consists of a new and an old town surrounded by five suburbs, and with its numerous old churches and towers presents a quaint and picturesque appearance. The most interesting churches are those of the Blessed Virgin and St Blasius, dating respectively from the 14th and from the 12th century ; the town-house is also a fine medieval structure. Miihlhausen contains a gymnasium, a “real school,” a theatre, an orphanage, and two hospitals. Its chief industries are the spinning and weaving of woollens and cottons, in which about 50,000 spindles and 3000 looms are employed; but a list of its other manufactures includes the most varied articles, such as needles, machinery, cigars, soap, hosiery, and shoes. There are also numerous large establishments for dyeing, tanning, lime-burning, iron-making, brewing, and the pre- paration of liqueurs. The active trade of the town is mainly in grain, fruit, garden-stuff, wool, and cattle, and is fos- tered by the fertility of the surrounding country, which is remarkable for the abundance of its streams and water- courses. The great majority of the inhabitants, numbering 23,478 in 1880, are Protestants.

Muhlhausen is one of the oldest towns in Thuringia, and is said to have been fortified in 925. Its early importance is shown by the grant of imperial privileges made to it by the emperor Henry I., and by the diet held there in 1135. At the epoch of the Refor- mation Miihlhauscn became notorious as one of the chief seats of the Anabaptists. Thomas Miinzer, one of their leaders, was captured in the vicinity and executed in the town. Internal dissensions and injury received during the Thirty Years’ War and the Seven Years’

War afterwards reduced Mihlhausen to unimportance. In 1802 it lost its independence and passed to Prussia, in 1807 it was

attached to the kingdom of Westphalia, and in 1815 it again became Prussian. The Teutonic Order established itself at Mihl- hausen in 1200, and acquired considerable property there, which ultimately passed into the possession of the town.

MUIR, Joun (1810-1882), Sanskrit scholar, was born on 5th February 1810 in Glasgow, where his father, William Muir, was a merchant. He was educated at the grammar school of Irvine, the university of Glasgow, and the East India Company's college at Haileybury. He went to India in 1828, and served with distinction in various offices, as assistant secretary to the board of revenue, Allahabad, as magistrate and collector at Azimgarh, as principal of the Victoria College, Benares, and as civil and session judge at Futtehpoor. He was throughout remarkable for his zeal in cultivating and encouraging the study of San- skrit, in finding methods and furthering schemes for the enlightenment and amelioration of the Hindus. He was persuaded that the only way in which they could escape from the tyranny of caste, with all its attendant evils, was by being made to know how they had become what they were, and also how the freer and more civilized Western peoples believed and lived. He worked assidu- ously at the organization and development of the higher edu- cation of India, and endeavoured to stimulate the learned classes to the study of their own most ancient literature, and of the religious and philosophical literature of the West. He did while in India much work in both depart- ments, and was the occasion of still more being done both by Hindus and Europeans. In 1853 he retired from the service and settled in Edinburgh, where he may be said to have continued under more favourable conditions his Indian labours. In 1862 he endowed the chair of Sanskrit in the university of Edinburgh, and was the main agent in founding the Shaw fellowship in mental philosophy. He was a D.C.L. of Oxford, LL.D. of Edinburgh, and Ph.D. of Bonn. He died 7th March 1882.

In 1858 appeared vol. i. of his Original Sanskrit Texts (2d ed. 1868) ; it was on the origin of caste, an inquiry intended to show that it did not exist in the

Vedic age. Vol. ii. (Ist ed. 1860, 2d 1871) was concerned with the origin and racial affinities of the Hindus, exhibiting all the then available evidences of their con- nexion, their linguistic, social, and political kinship, with the other branches of the Indo-European stock. Vol. iii. (Ist ed. 1861, 2d 1868) was on the Vedas, a full and exhaustive inqniry as to the ideas of their origin, authority, and inspiration held both by the Vedic and later Indian writers. Vol. iv. (1st ed. 1868, 2d 1873) was a comparison of the Vedic with the later representations of the principal Indian deities, an exhibition of the process by which three gods hardly known to the Vedic hymns became the deities of the former Hindu Trimurti. Vol. v. (1870) was on the Vedic myth- ology. These texts form still our most exhaustive work on the Vedic age, and show better than any others the point from which the peculiar religious and political development of India started. Dr Muir was also the author of a volume of Metrical Translations from the Sanskrit, an anonymous work on Inspiration, several works in Sanskrit, and many essays in the Jowrnal of the Royal Asiatic Society and elsewhere.

MULA, a town of Spain, in the province of Murcia, is situated 22 miles to the westward of that town on the slope and summit of an eminence on the left bank of the Mula, a small tributary of the Segura, periodically liable to destructive floods. The Sierra Espuiia rises on the south to a height of nearly 5200 feet. The usual public buildings, grouped round the central square of the town, present no features of special interest. The ground of the neighbourhood is somewhat broken, but of the cultivable portion about one-half is occupied with olives and vines. ‘The industries and trade of the place are con- nected principally with agriculture. The population in 1877 was 10,597. About 34 miles to the eastward are two groups of houses known as the Bafios de Mula, with warm sulphurous springs of considerable local repute.

MULBERRY. The mulberry family (Moracex) is usually included, along with the closely-allied figs, bread-

fruits, nettles, hops, planes, and elms, in one vast alliance of monochlamydeous Exogens, the order Urticacex (or Ul- macex, as Baillon prefers to call it). The Moracex include three sub-families, of which the

typical genera are: Dor- stenia, which is almost a Fig; Broussonetia, the Paper Mulberry of Japan, the East Indies, and the South Sea Islands ; and Aforus, the Mulberry proper, of which the ten or twelve species are all native to temperate regions in Asia and America, or to hill regions in their tropics, but are readily cultivated in similar climates in Europe, Africa, and Australia.

The Black Mulberry (Morus nigra, L.) is mainly culti- vated for its purplish black compound fruit (a sorosis formed by the aggregated drupes of the whole female in- florescence), which is wholesome and palatable if eaten fresh from the tree before acetous fermentation has had time to set in. Save in syrup, and on account of its rich dark-red colouring matter, it has no longer any pharma- ceutical uses. (See HorticuLturg, vol. xii. p. 272.

The White Mulberry (Jf. alba, L.), so called from its nearly white fruit, is the one mainly employed in seri- culture. There are many varieties, among which the Philippine Mulberry (var. multicaulis) is perhaps most highly esteemed. The American and Indian species (1. americana and JZ. indica, the latter not to be confounded with Morinda crtrifolia, a cinchonaceous tree, sometimes also called Indian Mulberry) are also cultivated for the same purpose.

For systematic and descriptive purposes see ‘‘ Morus ” in Baillon, Hist. d. Plantes, vi.; or Luerssen, Aled. Pharm. Botanik, vol. ii. For history and economic uscs sce F. v. Miller, Seleet Plants for Culture in Victoria, Melbourne, 1876; and Hehn, Kulturpflanzen, &c., 3d ed., Berlin, 1877 ; also Sruk.

MULE, Though this term is not unfrequently applied to the produce of two creatures of different species, and is synonymous with hybrid, yet in its ordinary accepta- tion it is employed to designate the offspring or “cross” between the equine and asinine species. There are two kinds of mule—the Mule proper (Lquus Asinus, var. y ; Mulus ; Fr., Mulet or Grand Mulet; Ger., Grosser Maul- esel), which is the hybrid produce of a male ass with a mare, and the Hinny (Equus Asinus, var.6; Hinnus; Fr., Bardot or Petit Mulet; Ger., Kleiner Maulesel), the offspring of the stallion and female ass. The mule is the more valu- able of the two, and to its production the attention of breeders is entirely directed. Indeed, the hinny is so rarely

produced, owing to the antipathy of the stallion to the female ass, that many authorities deny its existence.

Intercourse between the mare and male ass is very sel- dom voluntary; indeed, horses will not associate with asses, and combats between them are often serious. The male ass will freely mate with the mare, but the latter has a Strong repugnance to him, as has also the stallion for the female ass. Hence in mule-breeding the mare has to be blindfolded and otherwise deceived, or secured in a travis or by ropes, before she will allow the ass to approach her. Fecundation is not so certain between the ass and horse species as between the male and female of either species, for, while of four mares three at least will be fecindated by the stallion, as a rule only two will be so by the ass.

Fecundation of the hybrid female by the male ass or the stallion is not very rare; but it is otherwise with the male hybrid, no instance being recorded in which he has been prolific, though physically the animal appears to be perfect, and often exhibits an intense ardour for the female. The female mule, when fecundated, seldom reaches the natural term of pregnancy, and rarely brings forth a living offspring. The duration of gestation in a mare impregnated by the ass is a little longer than in impregnation by the stallion, — the average being 375 days. Abortion readily occurs, and more care is necessary than in breeding horses or asses.

In breeding mules the choice in the male parent is limited so far as shape is concerned, as the best-formed asses have, relatively to their height, the head too large, short neck, sides too flat, low shoulders, narrow croup, thin arms and thighs, and very narrow hoofs. To obtain well-shaped mules, therefore, the selection of the mare is of the greatest importance in remedying the defects of the sire. Mares with a small head, round body, short back, wide chest and muscular croup, large thighs and arms, a long neck well set-on, and wide round hoofs are the best. Height is not of so much moment, but a mare measuring from 14 to 15 hands high is preferable. A good height for the male ass is between 13 and 14 hands. Mules inherit to an extraordinary degree the shape and peculiarities of the sire; from the mare they derive size, but rarely her bad shape or unsoundnesses. ‘This is for- tunate, for,

though it is always desirable to breed from sound well-formed stock, yet mares so unsound or defective in shape as to be disqualified for horse-breeding may be uti- lized for mule-breeding.

The mule foal is not so strong on its limbs as the horse foal, and it does not grow so quickly. It is longer in reaching maturity, for it is of little use under four years of age ; but it is useful for a longer period than the horse, often working until it is twenty, thirty, and even forty years of age. When full grown the mule is from 13 to 15, and sometimes 16 hands high; but those from 14 to 15 hands are generally preferred.

The mule is endowed with the chief characteristics of its parents. In its short thick head, long ears, thin limbs, small narrow hoofs, short mane, absence of chestnuts (horny growths) inside the hocks, and tail destitute of hair at the root it is asinine ; while in height and body, shape of neck and croup, uniformity of coat, and in teeth it is equine. It has the voice neither of the ass nor of the horse, however, but emits a feeble hoarse noise. The most common colour of the mule is a brown or bay-brown,—bay, or bright bay, or piebald being rare; a chestnut tint is sometimes noticed. It possesses the sobriety, patience, endurance, and sure-footedness of the ass, and the vigour, strength, and courage of the horse. As a beast of burden it is preferable to the horse, being less impatient under the pressure of heavy weights, while the skin being harder and less sensitive renders it more capable of resisting sun and rain. It is very frugal, easily fed, and equally good for carrying as for drawing loads; it walks well and steadily, easily traverses the worst roads or paths, will climb or descend a steep mountain, or pick its steps by the side of a precipice, with the surety and safety of a goat. For hot and dry countries, especially those which are mountainous, it is well adapted, though cold and wet regions are not suitable for it.

The mule, like the ass, enjoys an extraordinary immunity from disease. After the campaign in Egypt in 1882 the English horses suffered most extensively and severely from a kind of malarious fever, but the mules were entirely exempt. A similar exemption has been noticed during the prevalence of epizootic maladies at other times. Neverthe- less those diseases which attack the mule (and the asinine species) run their course with great rapidity ; for example, glanders, which often appears in a chronic

form in the horse, is most acute in the mule and ass. These are also very liable to tetanus from trifling injuries.

The mule has been in use from very early times; the inhabitants of Mysia and Paphlagonia are said to have been the first breeders. With the Greeks and Romans, the latter especially, the mule was much valued for its good qualities, being employed to draw carriages and carry loads. At the present day it is extensively used in nearly every part of the world, in some countries almost supplanting

the horse, while for military purposes it is undoubtedly the best transport animal.

The principal mule countries in Europe are the south of France, Spain, Portugal, and Italy, where they are used for pack and draught. The French mules are most numerous on the borders of the Pyrenees, in Gascony, and in Poitou. In Spain mules are used in the Catalan provinces, in the mountainous districts of Andalusia, and in the pro- vince of Alicante. Good draught-mules are bred in La Mancha and in the districts on the slopes of the Pyrenees, where they are employed to carry loads. But in Spain, Italy, and some other countries theyare also extensively used in carriages ; in Spain particularly, where large, fine mules are bred for this purpose, a pair of these animals will often cost more than a pair of horses. The mules of Asia Minor, Syria, Cyprus, Egypt, and Algeria, as well as those of the district between the Tigris and the Persian frontier and in North China, are good. In the Punjab provinces of British India many excellent mules are bred, breeding being largely promoted by the Government. Good mules are reared in North and South America, the principal districts for breeding them in the United States being Kentucky, Missouri, and Kansas. The Kentucky mules are well shaped and showy, being derived from nearly thoroughbred mares known as Kentucky trotters, while those reared in Missouri are hardy, and can endure much privation and hardship. The Mexican mule, bred by a male ass out of a mustang mare, is also a very hardy, strong, and useful animal.

France is perhaps the most important mule-raising country in Europe, four centres being more particularly devoted to this kind of industry : Poitou, the mountainous districts of central France, the Pyrenees, and Dauphiné, The mules of these different parts chiefly differ in height ; those of Poitou are large, powerful, and long in the body, and are mainly exported to the departments of Languedoc and Provence, as well as to Spain, Italy, and America i those of Dauphiné are of medium height, with a short, thick body; while those of the centre and the Pyrenees are lighter and smaller, but more active.

Mule-breeding in Poitou is one of the most important branches of industry, and is supposed to date from the time of Philip V. of Spain, when the particular breeds of horses and asses were imported into that region and Gascony. But there is evidence to show that so early as the 10th century the mules of Poitou were of excellent quality. Though this industry has for a number of years been in a most flourishing condition, this has not always been the case ; more than a century ago it was the object of violent attacks, and, had it not been for the great advantages the breeders derived from it and the com- paratively small expense incurred in carrying it on, it must have languished or ceased altogether. The Government could not understand why so many mares should be lost to horse production and kept to breed mules alone ; and in 1717 the intendant-general of the haras went so far as to prohibit male asses being put to mares measuring more than 12 hands from the withers to the top of the hoof under penalty of a fine and confiscation of the ass 3 and the minister Bertin issued a decree to the effect that all the male asses in Poitou were to be castrated. It was only at a recent period that the haras administration ceased to oppose mule-breeding, when it found that it could not be successfully suppressed ; for, while in the one depart- ment of Deux-Sévres 13,000 mares were employed in mule production in 1816, fifty years afterwards there were 23,000. Besides, it was discovered not only that this in- dustry added largely to the national wealth but that mules were extremely useful in the army as pack animals, as well as for draught, especially for mountain artillery.

The Poitou mules are large, and strong enough to be used for heavy draught; those produced elsewhére in France, especially in Gascony, are light and better adapted for weight carrying. In Poitou at the present time about 50,000 mares are kept for mule production ; of these it is estimated that 38,000 are bred from every year, and of the produce 18,000 are sold annually. In the fairs of Poitou some mules fetch the large price of 1300 to 1500 francs, and many are sold for 900 or 1000 francs. If the average price be fixed at only 600 francs, it will be seen that Poitou alone realizes annually from its mule- breeding no less than 10,800,000 francs. The statistics of 1840 give the number of mules in France at 373,841, of 1852 at 315,331, of 1862 at 330,987, and the census of 1866 at 345,243. The average price of a mule in 1840 was reckoned at 172 francs, in 1852 at 183 francs, and in 1862 at 278 francs. The total value of the mules in 1840 was estimated at 64,284,246 francs, in 1862 it had increased to 92,078,458 francs. The total amount of revenue derived from the trade in mules was: in 1840, 21,244,148 frances; in 1852, 87,548,310 francs; and in 1862, 162,341,162 frances. Since the last-mentioned date it is probable that there has been a further increase.

In the United Kingdom mules are seldom bred, and their services do not appear to be much appreciated ; hence their importation is almost nil. After the war in Egypt in 1882 a large number of mules which had been purchased by the British Government for that campaign were brought to England and sold by public auction, but the average price realized was probably not more than one- half the amount they had cost in the countries in which they were originally purchased.

Mules have in recent times been largely employed in British campaigns, as in the Crimea, India, Abyssinia, South Africa, and Egypt. In the Abyssinian campaign more than 10,000 pack-mules were obtained from Cyprus, Brindisi, Malta, Smyrna; Gibraltar, Alicante, Valencia, Scanderoon, and Beyrout. The order in which

these places are enumerated indicates the relative adaptability of

the mules for pack transport during that campaign.

During the Zulu war, South-African or Colonial, South-American, North-American, and French mules were employed ; but of these the South-African and South-American were found to be the most suitable.

In India mules form part of the permanent transport of the Pun- jab irregular force, and are used as pack animals in the mountain batterics. They have also been largely used for transport in the mahy expeditions which have taken place on the north-western frontier. During the recent Afghan war it was proved that for mountain warfare the mule was by far the best beast of burden; and the director of transport with the Indian division during the late Egyptian campaign reported highly of the work done by the Punjab mules, which are somewhat famed for undergoing a great amount of exertion on little food. The breeding of pack-mules, as also of those adapted for batteries of mountain artillery, too much neglected hitherto, is now much encouraged by the Govern- ment of India, which supplies many good male asses to different districts free of charge. These asses are chiefly Arab, Spanish, French, and Italian ; but very good animals are at times obtained from Bokhara. By stimulating the breeding of improved asses an increasing supply of good sires and mules is obtained.

The experience of British and other European armies in favour of the mule has been corroborated by that of the United States. In the quartermaster-general's report for 1865 it is stated: '*The experience of this (secession) war has convinced all officers of this department that for the army-trains mules are much superior to horses, and of late the horses have almost entirely disappeared from the trains, being transferred to the cavalry or artillery and replaced by mules."

Mules are well adapted for the sick or hospital transport of an army in the field as pack animals, being smaller, surer- footed, and shorter-paced than horses ; but they should be specially selected and trained for this purpose, animals of sufficicnt strength and docility being necessary. A loaded mule will walk a little more than 3 miles an hour, though the pace will much depend upon the roads. The pace is slow moving down hill, quick up hill. Mules sleep from three to four hours in the twenty-four, the soundest slecp being towards dawn. The male mule can carry more weight than the female,

though the latter is steadier for work, being more docile; male mules are often vicious and carry

loads badly, so that to render them more tractable they are some-

times castrated. For saddle purposes those which more resemble the horse than the ass are preferable.

The carrying power of the mule varies according to a variety of

circumstances from 100 tb to 300 tb, the average being about 200 ib including the pack-saddle.

: ; In a journey made in 1856 from the city of Del Norte to Chihuahua and Durango in Mexico, a distance

of about 500 miles, it was found that out of a train of seventy-five mules the most it was possible for any mule to carry was 275 tb; not more than twenty mules could convey more than 250 ib, the

average weight carried by the whole train being a little less than 200 tb. The distance per day was about 15 miles. In another

journey it was noted that some of the very best mules, out of a very superior description specially selected, which were loaded with

300 tb, gave out completely at the end of two weeks. In the

Abyssinian expedition the load had to be reduced to 100 Tb, not

including the pack-saddle. It has been stated that a good compact mule, when well trained, properly fitted and handled, will earry in ordinary field service 30 per cent. of its own weight. If the load is in proportion to the size of the animal, small mules have tho advantage. A 600 Ib mule is quite as good for a 200 tb load as a 900 Tb mule is for a 270 tb load.

During the Peninsular War mules were hired by the commissariat for a Spanish dollar a day and rations for the driver. The weight of the load was fixed at 200 tb, and the length of journey in a moun- tainous country with bad roads was from 10 to 12 miles loaded, 15 to 16 unloaded. The maximum price paid for mules purchased for the Bhutan (India) expedition was 180 rupees ; those purchased at Baghdad and Bushire for the Abyssinian expedition averaged 124 rupees 8 annas, in Syria about £20. The mules purchased in the Punjab for the same expedition cost 225 rupees each ; those procured in Egypt about £26 10s. per animal. The mules purchased in New York for the Zulu war cost £42 per head, though good serviceable mules can be bought at St Louis for from £25 to £30. A firm in London at the same time tendered to supply mules from Spain at £35 each for pack, and £37 10s for draught. The South-African mules bought during the Zulu war cost on an average £23 each.

It has been observed that large mules are not so durable as medium-sized ones, especially for military service. In Algeria it was rare to find a mule over 14 hands more than fifteen years of age, and those approaching 15 hands died younger, while those between 18 and 14 hands were frequently more than twenty yearsold. The older animals were very often mares. (G. FL.)

MULHAUSEN (in French Mulhouse), the chief town of a circle and the industrial centre of Upper Alsace, Germany, lies between the Ill, an affluent of the Rhine, and the Rhine-Rhone Canal, about 56 miles to the south of Stras- burg and 18 to the north-west of Basel. The old town, surrounded by arms of the Ill, has narrow and irregular streets, while to the south, on the canal, lie the handsome villas and fine promenades of the new town. Most of the older buildings have had to make way for manufactories, so that the town-house, dating from 1552, is an almost solitary witness to the town's medieval prosperity. The Roman Catholic church of St Stephen, the new Protest- ant church, the building of the Société Industrielle, and the new Musée are the most prominent modern buildings. The educational institutions include a gymnasium, modern schools, technical schools for the various handicrafts, and an academy in which designers are trained for the textile industries of the town. The most important interest of Milhausen centres in the making of cotton and muslin goods, and calico-printing. This industry was introduced in 1746, and has since steadily prospered in the hands of several wealthy families which are closely connected by intermarriage and lend each other a firm and powerful finan- cial support. From 20,000 to 24,000 hands in the town and upwards of 60,000 in the neighbourhood are engaged in textile manufactures, the products of which are exported to all parts of the world. The manufactures of machinery, locomotives and railway plant, chemicals, and hardware are also important. A very noteworthy feature connected with the rise of the commercial prosperity of the town is the attention paid by the manufacturers to the wellbeing of their workpeople. In 1853 John Dollfuss, mayor of the town, founded the " workman's quarter" to the north- east of the old town, which now consists of about 1000 model buildings, with public bath-, wash-, aud bake-houses,

library, &c. The houses are let on a system by which the occupant becomes the owner after the payment of a certain number of monthly instalments. Besides this more pro- minent effort, which has been the model for similar at- tempts in many other towns, a "Société Industrielle " for the encouragement of original discovery and invention among the workmen has existed since 1825, and there are various benevolent societies, including a

large institu- tion with 250 beds for the reception of aged workmen. Miilhausen also carries on an active trade in grain, wine, colonial produce, and timber, which is much facilitated by its fine river harbour. After the annexation of Alsace to Germany in 1871 the French sympathies of the inhabitants were shown by the extraordinary decrease in the number of its inhabitants. The population has now, however, re- gained its full proportions, amounting in 1880 to 63,629, of whom 47,395 were Roman Catholics.

Mentioned as early as 717, Miilhausen was raised to the rank of a free town of the empire in 1198, and received very extensive privileges from Rudolph of Hapsburg in 1273. It suffered con- siderably in the various wars of the Middle Ages, but generally managed to maintain its independence. In 1446 it expelled its nobles and formed an alliance with Switzerland, and this became a permanent union in 1515. By the peace of Westphalia (1648) it was recognized as an independent ally of the Swiss League. In 1798 it sought incorporation with France from motives of com- mercial policy, and in 1871 it passed to Germany.

Compare Metzger, La République de Mulhouse 717-1798 (1876); and Schall, Das Arbeiterquartier von Miilhausen (1876).

MULHEIM-AM-RHEIN, the chief town of a circle in the district of Cologne, Prussia, lies on the right bank of the Rhine, 2 miles below Cologne. It is a pretty and well-built town, with important manufactures of silk, velvet, ribbons, sail-cloth, belting for machinery, leather articles, yarn, and chemicals. It also contains a rolling- mill, boiler-works, telegraph-works, malt manufactories, several breweries, and a shipbuilding yard. Miilheim carries on a brisk trade by rail and river, serving as an outlet for the manufactures of Bensberg and Gladbach, and for the wines of the upper Rhine, Nahe, and Moselle. Its educational institutions include a flourishing weaving school and a “real school” of the first class. The most striking building is the modern Gothic church. Though of ancient foundation, Miilheim did not receive a muni- cipal charter till 1587. Its industrial prosperity is in great part due to the influx of Protestants expelled from Cologne at the beginning of the 17th century. The popu- lation in 1880 was 20,420.

MULHEIM-AN-DER-RUHR, the chief town of a circle in the district of Diisseldorf, Prussia, is situated on the Ruhr, an affluent of the Rhine, about 7 miles from Essen and at the intersection of several railways. Like most of the towns in this district, Miilheim finds its chief industry in iron-working, and contains numerous blast- furnaces, rolling-mills, foundries, and engine-works ; it also carries on manufactures of leather, wool, cotton, calico, tobacco, paper, and other miscellaneous goods. About 6,000,000 tons of the Ruhr coal are annually forwarded by river and rail from Miilheim, which also carries on a consider- able trade in timber and colonial produce. In the neigh- bourhood are important sandstone quarries, a large zinc foundry, glass-works, and a carpet manufactory. Miil- heim, which possesses a church of the 12th century, was formerly included in the duchy of Berg, and became a town in 1508. In 1880 it contained 22,146 inhabitants, about two-thirds of whom were Protestants.

MULL, an island of Scotland, county of Argyll, and the largest of the Inner Hebrides, is bounded W. by the Atlantic, N. by Loch Sunart, N.E. by the Sound of Mull, and 8.E. by the Firth of Lorn. Its area comprises about 235,000 acres, of which only about 13,000 are arable. It is triangular in shape, its greatest length being about 24

miles, and its greatest breadth about 30 miles. Lochs Na-Keal and Scridain form deep indentations on its western coast, and there are a large number of smaller inlets. The coast-line is rocky, and especially on the west there are numerous caverns and horizontal terraces of basalt. The prevailing rock is Old Red Sandstone, but the valleys are filled up with Miocene rocks, consisting chiefly of lava flows and ashes of great terrestrial volcanoes. ‘There is an intrusion of granite towards the south, and also a narrow belt of limestone. The surface is for the most part rugged and mountainous, Ben More rising to the height of 3185 feet. Sheep and black cattle are kept, and barley, oats, and potatoes are grown. Herring fishing is prosecuted at Tobermory, where is one of the best and safest of the western harbours of Scotland. There are several ancient. castles, the principal being those of Duart and Aros. The population of the island in 1881 was only 5229, MULLER, Joann (1436-1476). See Recromontanvs. MULLER, Jonann von

(1752-1809), an eminent Swiss historian, was born on 3d January 1752 at Schaffhausen, where his father was a clergyman and rector of the gymnasium. In 1769 he went to the university of Géttingen in order to study theology ; but, under the influence of Schlozer, he devoted himself chiefly to historical research. Having passed his theological examination, he was made professor of Greek at the Schaffhausen gymnasium in 1772; and in the same year he published his first work, Bellum Cimbricum. By the advice of Bonstetten, his most intimate friend, he went in 1774 to Geneva, where he acted for some time as a tutor in the house of a councillor of state. At Schaffhausen he had begun to study care- fully the sources of Swiss history, and at Geneva he con- tinued his investigations with increasing ardour. Lectures on universal history which he delivered during this period formed the basis of his Vierundzwanzig Bucher allgemeiner Geschichten, one of his most brilliant writings. In 1780 appeared the first volume of his Geschichte der Schweizer, a work which placed him immediately in the front rank of the historical writers of his day. During a visit to Berlin he had an interview with Frederick the Great, from whom he hoped to receive an appointment worthy of his genius and reputation. Disappointed in this expectation, he accepted the professorship of the science of statistics at Cassel, where he wrote his Reisen der Péipste. In 1786, having spent two years partly at Bonstetten's country seat and partly in Bern, he entered the service of the elector of Mainz, by whom he was rapidly promoted to important offices in the state. He was also ennobled and made a knight of the empire (Reichsritter), At Mainz he issued several books, besides the second volume of his History of the Swiss Confederation. When Mainz was occupied by the French in 1792 Miiller settled in Vienna, where he re- mained for twelve years, being connected with the imperial library from 1800. Failing to receive the promotion to which he thought he was entitled, and being forbidden after the appearance of the third volume of his Swiss History to continue the publication of the work, he went in 1804 to Berlin, where he became historiographer and a councillor of war. In Berlin he finished the fourth volume of his Geschichte der Schweizer, edited the works of Herder, and wrote various treatises for the Academy, in- cluding one Uber die Geschichte Friedrich's II. Up to this time Miiller had been an enthusiastic advocate of free

| institutions, but he now modified his convictions; and in

1807 he accepted from Napoleon the office of secretary of state in the kingdom of Westphalia. Early in 1808 he was transferred at his own request to the office of director- general of public instruction. On 29th May 1809 he died at Cassel.

The value of Miller’s contributions to history is marred by the

a0 — ee LL,

occasional extravagance and obscurity of his style, and by his in- adequate appreciation of the tests of historic credibility ; but his learning, his generous sympathies, his grasp of great principles, and his power of vividly presenting some aspects of character secure for his writings an enduring place in German literature. An edition of his Sémmtliche Werke, in 40 vols. (published origin- ally in 27 vols. in 1810 to 1819) was issued in 1831 to 1835. Bio- graphies of Miiller were compiled by Doring and other writers.

MULLER, Jonannes (1801-1858), one of the most distinguished physiologists of Germany, was born at Coblentz on 14th July 1801. He became a privat-docent in the university of Bonn in 1824. In 1826 he was appointed extraordinary professor of physiology in the same university, and he became the ordinary professor in 1830. Jn 1833 he was removed to the university of Berlin, where he filled the chair of anatomy and physiology with great distinction until his death on 28th April 1858. Miller made numerous researches in various departments of physiology, and in particular he extended knowledge as to the mechanism of voice and speech and of hearing, and as to the chemical and physical properties of lymph, chyle, and blood. It was, however, less as an original investigator than as a deep and far-seeing thinker that Miiller made his mark on physiological science. From about 1740, when Haller flourished, numerous contribu- tions to physiological science had been made by Whytt, Cullen, John Hunter, Spallanzani, Prochaska, Bichat, Charles Bell, Berzelius, Magendie, and others, but in 1830, when Miiller may be said to have begun his labours, it was necessary to reduce these facts to order, to educe general principles, and to direct physiologists into new lines of research indicated by the brilliant discoveries made in physics and in chemistry since the beginning of the century. This Miiller did, and he may therefore be regarded as the founder of modern physiology. The appearance of his Elements of

Physiology between 1837 and 1840 (translated into English by Dr William Baly, and published in London in 1842) was the beginning of a new period. In this work Miiller shows remarkable power both in marshalling facts and in philosophical reasoning. As a rule he not merely states and criticizes the labours of others but also contributes the results of his own observations. Whilst he is cautious in the accept- ance of theories, he always places them before the reader in an original and suggestive light. The most important portion of the work is that dealing with nervous action and with the mechanism of the senses. Here he states the fruitful principle, not before recognized, that the kind of sensation following irritation of a sensory nerve does not depend on the mode of irritation but upon the nature of the sense-organ. Thus light, pressure, or mechanical irritation acting on the retina and optic nerve invariably produce luminous impressions. This is sometimes termed the law of specific nervous energy. As a teacher Miiller exercised a powerful influence, and the great majority of the distinguished physiologists, such as Helmholtz, Du Bois Reymond, Ludwig, Volkmann, and Vierordt, who have made Germany famous in physiological science during the past thirty years, owe much to the germinating ideas of their great teacher.

Besides editing for many years a periodical entitled Archiv We Anatomie, Physiologie, u. wissenschaftl. Mediein, to which he also contributed papers, he published the text-book on physiology above alluded to, and various important memoirs. For a list of these see Poggendorff, Biog.-Litter. Handwérterbuch, vol. ii.

Two men of the same name, Johannes Miiller, have been cele- brated in science: (1) Jonn Miter (1699-1784), a professor of artillery and fortification at Woolwich, who wrote a mathematical treatise published in 1737 ; (2) Jonannes Miityer (born 1806), a writer on pharmacy and physiological chemistry, who published many memoirs from 1840 to 1850.

MULLER, Kart Orrrrep (1797-1 840), an eminent writer on ancient Greece, was born at Brieg in Silesia on 28th

ly August 1797. His father was a chaplain in the Prussian army. Miller was educated partly in Breslau, partly in Berlin, where his enthusiasm in the study of Greek litera- ture, art, and history was fostered by the influence of

Boeckh. In 1817, after the publication of his first work, Aigineticorum Liber, he received an appointment at the Magdaleneum in Breslau ; and in 1819 he was made a pro- fessor of the university of Géttingen, his subject being the archeology of art. His aim was to form a vivid con- ception of Greek life as a whole ; and for this object he carried on a series of profound researches, setting forth the results in his lectures, which produced a great impres- sion on his students, and in numerous works, which marked an epoch in the development of Hellenic studies. Miiller's position at Gottingen being rendered unpleasant by the political troubles which followed the accession of Ernest Augustus to the throne of Hanover in 1837, he applied for permission to travel ; and in 1839 he left Germany. In April of the following year he reached Greece, having spent the winter in Italy. He carefully investigated the remains of ancient Athens, Visited many places of interest in the Peloponnesus, and finally went to Delphi, where he began with his usual zeal to conduct excavations. While engaged in this work he was attacked by intermittent fever, of which he died at Athens on 1st August 1840.

Miillcr combined with astonishing industry a penetrating critical judgment and an almost unrivalled power of appreciating Greek modes of thought and feeling. Among his historical works the foremost place belongs to his Geschichte hellenischen Stémme und Staaten, which includes Orchomenos und die Minyer (1820), and Die Doricr (1824). He wrote also Uber die Wohnsitze, Abstam- mung, und altere Geschichte des macedonischen Volks (1825); and by his maps he introduced a new standard of accuracy in the treat- ment of the geography of ancient Greece. In 1828 he published Die Etrusker. Wis Prolegomenen zu einer wassenschaftlichen My- thologie (1825) prepared the way for the scientific investigation of myths ; and the study of ancient art he promoted by his Handbuch der Archiclogie der Kunst (1830), and by Denkméiler der alten Kunst (1832), which he wrote in association with Osterley. In 1840 appeared in England his Wistory of the Literature of Aneient Greece, and the original German work from which it had been translated—Geschichte der griechisehen Literatur bis auf das Zeit- alier Alexander's—was issued in Germany by the author's brother in 1841. Amid the labours to which Miiller especially devoted himself he found time to write an admirable translation of the Eumenides of Aischyltis (1838), to prepare new editions of Varro (1833) and Festus (1839), and to contribute

many articles to the Commentationes soctetatis regiz scientiarum Gottingensis, the Git- tinger gelehrien Anzeigen, and other periodicals. In 1841 the facts of his life were recorded by Liicke in Lrinnerungen an Otfried Miller,

MULLER, Wir11am James (1812-1845), English land- scape and figure painter, was born at Bristol on 28th June 1812, and was the son of a Prussian gentleman, a writer on scientific subjects and curator of the Bristol Museum. He re- ceived a careful education, being especially trained in botany and natural history, and it was intended that he should become an engineer ; but his leanings towards art were too definite to be resisted, and he was placed under J. B. Pyne to receive his first instructions as a painter. His early subjects deal mainly with the scenery of Gloucestershire and Wales, and he learned much from his study of Claude, Ruysdael, and the other earlier landscape-painters. In 1833 he figured for the first time in the Royal Academy with his Destruction of Old London Bridge—Morning, and next year he made a tour through France, Switzerland, and Italy. Four years later he visited Athens, extending his travels to Egypt, and in the sketches executed during this period and the paintings produced from them the power and individuality of the artist are first apparent. Shortly after his return he left Bristol and settled in London, where he exhibited regularly, and found purchasers, at moderate sums, for his pictures. In 1840 he again visited France, where he executed a series of sketches of Renais- sance architecture, twenty-five of which were lithographed

and published in 1841, in a folio entitled Zhe Age of Francis I. of France. He was anxious again to visit the East, and in 1843 he accompanied, at his own request and his own charges, the Government expedition to Lycia, where he produced an extensive collection of masterly sketches of scenes unfamiliar to the artvof his time. They were exhibited in London ; their merit was fully recognized by the British public, and the artist received numerous commissions for finished pictures. But his health was seriously impaired, he was suffering from heart-disease and from continued nasal

hemorrhage ; and, returning to his native city, he died there on 8th September 1845.

The works of Miiller are distinguished by much power and origin- ality, by great speed and directness of execution, by the vigour and emphasis which mark the born sketcher, and by brilliant power of splendid and sharply-contrasting colour. The qualities of tender- ness, gradation, and mystery, in which they are commonly wanting, might have been within the reach of the artist had his life been longer. Since his death, and especially since the Gillott sale of 1872, his works have commanded very large prices. The Chess- Players at Cairo, for which Miiller received £25, has since sold for upwards of £4000. The print room of the British Museum possesses, through the bequest of Mr John Henderson, a very rich collection of ie “ig sketches. His biography by N. Neal Solly was published in .

MULLET. This name is applied to two very different kinds of fishes, which are distinguished as Red Mullets and Grey Mullets. Red Mullets (genus Mullus, the name given by the ancient Romans) are marine fishes, with two short dorsal fins remote from each other: the first is com- posed of feeble spines, the second of branched rays; the anal fin is similar to the second dorsal. The body is covered with large thin scales. The form of the head is quite peculiar and characteristic; its anterior profile slopes downwards to the small mouth, which has but very small and feeble teeth, and from which two cylindrical barbels are suspended. These organs of touch are generally laid backwards and hidden in a groove between the branches of the lower jaw, but can be erected and called into action independently of each other. About forty different species of Red Mullets are known, chiefly from the tropical and sub-tropical parts of the Indo-Pacific Ocean. In the Atlantic the species are much less numerous, the most celebrated being the European JMullus barbatus (see vol. xii. p. 638, fig. 10), which is abundant in the Mediterra- nean, and tolerably common on the coasts of England and Ireland. Formerly a second species, Mullus surmuletus, was believed to exist in the European seas, but ichthyolo- gists now incline more and more to the belief that this is only the female of JZ. barbatus.

Red Mullets do not attain to any considerable size, the largest of the tropical species weighing only two or three pounds. ‘They are ground-feeders,

evidently using their barbels in discovering their food, which consists of ani- malcules, worms, and, in the larger species, of small fishes; that they feed on putrid flesh is not borne out by the evidence drawn from their feeble jaws and dentition, but it is very probable that they are attracted to a decomposing body by the presence of the small crustaceans which feast upon it. Although the colours of these fishes are very brilliant, they are simple and evanescent ; only a few of the tropical species exhibit ornamentations in the form of black spots or bands. In many, as also in the European species, red colour prevails, and its preservation after death is con- sidered to enhance the fitness of the fish for the table, and consequently its value for the market. To produce the intensity of this red colour, fishermen scale the red mullet immediately before its death, a process by which the red pigment-cells or chromatophores are excited to ex- pand ; fishes which are allowed to die in the water show but little red, and therefore red mullets caught by the trawl are less valuable than those obtained in a trammel-

net, by which the majority of the fish are secured alive. All the species of Red- Mullets seem to be esteemed as food ; but none equal in this respect the European species, which was held in exaggerated esteem by the gourmands of the corrupt period of the Roman empire. They ex- hibited the living fish and allowed them to die at the table immediately before they were consigned to the cook ; they kept them in large reservoirs until they were wanted, and paid fabulous prices for fishes somewhat above the average size. In our times red mullets have justly main- tained their value as a delicacy for the table; and from a commercial point of view their cultivation in suitable enclosed waters cannot be too strongly recommended to pisciculturists. Unfortunately, very little is known about their habits ; during the winter they retire into deep water, late in spring and during the summer they approach the coasts and enter even brackish water, but the state of their sexual organs shows clearly that these fishes do not come towards the shore in order to breed; in fact nothing is

known of their propagation.

The Grey Mullets, like the Red Mullets, belong to the spiny-rayed fishes, but form a widely-different and distinct family, Mugilide. They are not exclusively marine, but freely enter brackish water, live always close to the shore, and some of the tropical forms inhabit the pure fresh water of streams and rivulets, without, however, penetrating far inland. Their body is elegantly formed, wedge- shaped, and covered with scales of moderate size, firmly adherent to the skin. The two short dorsal fins are remote from each other, and the anterior is composed of four stiff spines. The anal fin is similar to the second dorsal; the caudal fin strong and bilobed. The form of the snout is very peculiar and characteristic ; the mouth narrow, transverse in the true Afugil, and without, or with but feeble, teeth.

About seventy different species are known, from almost every coast of the temperate and tropical zones; they swim in small schools and are abundant wherever they occur. Four species are found on the British coasts—Jlugil septentrionalis, Mugil capito, Mugil octoradiatus, and Mugil auratus, the first two being about equally and generally distributed, whilst the others are scarcer. Some of the freshwater Grey Mullets of the tropics, especially those of the West Indian and Indo-Pacific islands, have the mouth more lateral or have distinct, though very minute, teeth ; they therefore have been formed into separate genera, Agonostoma and AMyxus.

Grey Mullets, at least some of the species, grow to a weight of 10 or 12 tb; but the fish which usually come into the inarket rarely exceed halfthat weight. Those in which distinct teeth are developed feed principally on small aquatic animals, whilst the diet of those without teeth consists of animalcules or minute organic substances mixed with the mud or sand which they swallow in large quantities ; also confervoid growths to which small shells adhere are freely taken. To prevent the gills from being clogged by sand or mud, a peculiar apparatus separates these organs from the pharynx. Each branchial arch is provided on each side, in its whole length, with a series of closely-set gill-rakers, eacli series fitting into the series of the adjoin- ing arch ; they constitute together a sieve admirably fitted to permit the passage of the water, and to retain at the same time every other substance in the cavity destined for mastication. Also the structure of the intestinal tract is adapted in a remarkable manner to the peculiar diet of these fishes. One portion of the stomach is globular and surrounded by a

thick mass of muscles, the cavity being small and coated with a tough epithelium. In fact this structure reminds us of the stomach of birds, in which it also serves for the trituration of hard substances. The intestine itself is long, six or seven times as long as the fish. Grey Mullets are very plainly coloured, gene- rally greenish on the upper parts and more or less silvery on the side. They are wholesome food, well flavoured when taken out of clean water. As young fish bear transport easily, and rapidly grow to a marketable size in suitable enclosed waters, their cultivation deserves every attention on the part of pisciculturists. Indeed, in the fish- farrns of Western Italy, greymullets, besides eels,red mullets, flat-fish, are the principal fish cultivated.

MULLINGAR, a market-town of Ireland, capitalof West- meath, is situated near the Brosna and on the Royal canal, 44 miles west by north of Dublin. The principal buildings are the parish church with tower and spire, the Roman Catholic church, the court-house, the barracks, and the in- firmary. Tanning, brewing, and the manufacture of coarse woollens are carried on. The population in 1881 was 4787. Mullingar was one of the ancient palatinate towns. It

possessed an Augustine convent founded in 1227, and a

Dominican convent founded in 1239, but both were dis- solved by Elizabeth. The town was the headquarters of William III. before the siege of Athlone. It formerly returned two members to parliament, but was disfranchised at the Union.

MULREADY, Witt14m (1786-1863), subject painter, was born at Ennis, county Clare, on 30th April 1786. When he was about five years old his father, a leather-breeches maker by trade, removed to London, where the son received a tolerable education, chiefly under Catholic priests. He was fond of reading, furtively studying Pope’s Homer and other works at the book-stalls, and fonder still of drawing.) When eleven years old Mulready was employed by an artist named Graham as the model for a figure in his picture of Solomon Blessed by his Father David. The painter’s interest in the lad did much to confirm his artistic proclivities; and, having studied at

home for two years, Mulready applied for advice to Banks the sculptor, who sent him to a drawing-school and perniitted him to work in his own studio. In 1800 he was admitted a student of the Academy, and two years later he gained the silver palette of the Society of Arts. About this time he was associated with John Varley, the eccentric water-colour painter and drawing-master, whom he assisted in the tuition of his band of talented pupils, which included Cox, Fielding, Linnell, William Hunt, and Turner of Oxford. At eighteen he married a sister of Varley's, and at twenty-four he was the father of four sons. The marriage was a singularly unhappy one, and the pair separated before many years. With all these "hostages to fortune" he had a hard struggle, but he was blessed with unfailing energy and the power of steady application. He "tried his hand at everything," as he said, "from a miniature to a panorama." He painted portraits, taught drawing, and up till 1809 designed illustrations to a long series of children's penny books. His first pictures were classical and religious subjects of no great merit, and the early works which he sent to the Academy were mainly landscapes ; but he soon discovered his special aptitude for genre-painting, and in 1809 produced the Carpenter's Shop, and in 1811 the Barber's Shop, pictures influenced by the example of Wilkie and the Dutch painters. In 1813 he exhibited his Punch, a work more original and spontaneous in treatment, which brought the artist into notice, and two years later his Idle Boys procured his election as associate. Next year he received full academic honours, and the election was fully justified by the Fight Interrupted which he then exhibited. It was followed by the Wolf and the Lamb (1820), the Convalescent (1822), Interior of an English Cottage (1828), Dogs of Two Minds (1830), the Seven Ages (1838), and in 1839 and 1840 by the Sonnet and First Love, two of the most perfect and poetical of the artist's works. In 1840 he designed the well-known postal envelope for Rowland Hill, and a, set of illustrations to the Vicar of Wakefield, which were succeeded by his paintings of the Whistonian Con- troversy (1844), Choosing the Wedding Gown (1846), and Sophia and Burchell Haymaking (1849). His later works, like the Bathers (1849), Mother teaching her Children (1859), and the Toy Seller (1862) show declining powers, mainly attributable to failing health. The last evening of his life was spent at a meeting of the Academy, of which, for nearly fifty years, he had been a most active and effi- cient member. He died of heart-disease on the 7th July

1863.

In his way of work Mulready was most painstaking and con- scientious, executing for each picture very elaborate studies for the

1 Some reproductions of his early attempts in this direction are given, along with details of his life, in a scarce volume for the young, entitled The Looking Glass, written by William Godwin under the nom-de- plume of Theophilus Marcliffe, and published in 1805,

several parts, and many sketches for colour and effect. His pro- ductions are characterized by accuracy of drawing and richness of colouring ; but they want something of the force and fire which come of less considered and elaborate, but more instinctive and inspired, workmanship.

MULTAN, or Moorray, a district in the lieutenant- governorship of the Punjab, lying between 29° 22’ and 30° 45’ N. lat. and 71° 4’ and 72° 54’ E. long., is bounded on the N. by the Jhang district, on the E. by that of Montgomery, on the 8. by the Sutlej, and on the N.W. by the Chendb, and has an area of 5880 square miles. Along the banks of the Chendb, Sutlej, and Ravi extend fringes of cultivation varying in width from 3 to 20 miles, but the interior uplands have the same barren character as the district of Monrcomery (¢.v.). Midway between the boundary rivers, a high dorsal ridge enters from Montgomery, forming a part of the sterile region known as the bér. It dips into the lower plateau on either side by abrupt banks, which mark the ancient beds of the Ravi and the Beas (Bids). These two rivers once flowed much farther southward before joining the Chenab and the Sutlej, and their original course may still be distinctly traced, not only by the signs of former fluvial action, but also by the existence of dried-up canals. At the present day the Beas (Bias) is totally lost to the district, the Ravi merely waters a small corner, and the only rich cultivation is that which stretches along the Chendb and the Sutlej. The soil, though naturally good, requires abundant irrigation to bring it under efficient tillage. Numerous canals supply water from the Sutlej to the surrounding country, and pools or jhéls collect during the rainy weather in the hollows formed by the old watercourses.

The census of 1881 returned the population at 551,964 persons (males 304,517, females 247,447), Mohammedans numbering 435,901, Hindus 112,001, Sikhs 2085, Europeans 1709, Eurasians 110, native Christians 42, and ‘‘others” 116. Only one town had a population excecding 10,000—Multan, 68,674. Most of the people are grouped together in villages on the irrigated lowlands, only a scattered nomad population being found on the sterile up- land tract. In 1878-79 the area under Government assessment was 8,763,200 acres, of which 799,360 were cultivated, 245,760 uncul- tivable waste, 2,618,080 cultivable, and 100,000 grazing lands. Cultivation is, however, spreading steadily, though the character of the agriculture remains slovenly, as the Jat tribes who comprise the mass of the rural population have not yet lost their predatory and pastoral propensities. Near the city, however, capitalist farmers have brought their land into a high state of cultivation. The areas under crop in 1881-82 were as follows :—rice 15,998, wheat 209,183, great millet 53,605, spiked millet 13,254, Italian millet 724, barley 7460, gram 8303, peas 24,443, and tobacco 1624. Indigo forms the most important commercial staple. The chicf articles of trade are sugar and indigo from the lowlands, and wool and ght from the pasture lands of the bér. Silk and fine cotton fabrics are produced at Multan ; coarse cotton cloth for home con- sumption is woven in every village. The Sind, Punjab, and Delhi Railway connects the city with the Northern Punjab and with the East Indian line at Delhi, and the Indus Valley State Railway runs through a portion of the district. The total length of roads is 907 miles and of railways 130.

The total imperial revenue of the district in 1880-81 was 953,408 rupees, of which 561,052 were derived from the land revenue. A small provincial and local revenue is also raised. Education, especially among the Mohammedans, is in a backward state, and in 1872-73 only 3062 children attended school, of whom the Hindus contributed 46 per cent., although they only form 18% per cent. of the whole population. The climate is proverbial even among the hot and dusty Punjab plains for its heat and dust. The mean temperature in the shade for the six years ending 1876 was in January 54°°70 Fahr., in June 95°°78, in October 76°°68, the average annual rainfall for the same years being 7‘27 inches ; in 1881 it was only 3°7.

At the time of Alexander’s invasion Multan appears as the chief seat of the Malli; but the Greek power soon came to an end, and the country passed under the rule of the Gupta dynasty of Magadha. The early Arab geographers mention Multan as forming part of the kingdom of Sind, which was conquered for the caliphate by Mohammed Kasim in the middle of the 8th century. The whole province was conquered by Mahmud of Ghazni in 1005 a.p. It afterwards formed a part of the Mughal empire of Babar, and con- tinued so till the extinction of that power. The history of the

district during the latter half of the 18th century is a story of alternate invasion by Marhattas, Afghans, and Sikhs. At length, in 1779, Muzaffar Khan, of the Sadozai family, succeeded in obtain- ing the governorship of Multan. Ranjit Sinh after a long siege carried the capital by storm in 1818, and put Muzaffar Khan and five of his sons todeath. In 1829 he made over the administration of Multan with five neighbouring districts to the famous Sawan Mall, who raised the province to a state of prosperity by excavating canals and inducing new inhabitants to settle. After the establish- ment of the council of regency at Lahore, difficulties arose between Miulraj, son and successor of S&wan Mall, and the British officials, which led to his rebellion, and culminated in the second war and the annexation of the whole of the Punjab. The city of Multan, after a stubborn defence, was carried by storm in January 1849. The district at once passed under direct British rule, and order has not been disturbed since.

MUuUutTAN, or MootTAan, cityand headquarters of the above district, is situated 4 miles from the present left bank of the Chenab (30° 12’ N. lat., 71° 30’ E. long.). The total population in 1881 was 68,674. The town is enclosed on three sides by a wall, but open towards the south, where the dry bed of the’old Ravi intervenes between the town and citadel. Large and irregular suburbs have grown up out- side the wall since the annexation in 1849. Within the city proper, narrow and tortuous streets, often ending in culs- de-sac, fill almost the whole space; but one broad bazaar runs from endtoend. The principal buildings include the shrines of two Mohammedan saints and the remains of an ancient Hindu temple. The civil station contains a court- house and treasury, commissioner’s offices, jail, post-

office, telegraph-office, dispensary, and staging bungalow The Church Missionary Society maintains a station here. As a trade centre Multan possesses great importance, its chief imports being cotton and other piece-goods, while the main staples of export are sugar, cotton, indigo, and wool. Trade continues to develop slowly but steadily. The value of the imports for 1879, 1880, 1881 was 75, 84, and 87 lakhs of rupees, and of the exports 36, 37, and 40 lakhs respectively. Lately there has been a great revival of the indigo trade.

MULTIPLEPOINDING is the technical term for a form of action in Scotch law by which conflicting claims to the same fund or property are determined. The action is brought either by the holder or by a claimant in his name. All who have any claims in the fund or property in question are ordered to appear and give in their claims ; the court then prefers them according to their respective rights, and the holder of the fund or property in dispute on payment or delivery is absolved from any further claim in regard to it.

MUMMY. The origin of mummification in Egypt has given rise to much learned conjecture (see EMBALMING), now, however, superseded by positive knowledge,—a com- parative study of sepulchral texts having furnished Egypto- logists with convincing proof that the inviolate preservation of the body was deemed essential to the corporeal resurrec- tion of the “justified” dead. The living man consisted of a body, a soul, an intelligence, and an appearance or evdolon,—in Egyptian, a ka. Death dissociated these four parts, which must ultimately be reunited for all eternity. Between death on earth and life everlasting there inter- vened, however, a period varying from 3000 to 10,000 years, during which the intelligence wandered, luminous, through space, while the soul performed a painful pro- bationary pilgrimage through the mysterious under-world. The body, in order that it should await, intact, the return of the soul whose habitation it was, must meanwhile be guarded from corruption and every danger. Hence, and hence only, the extraordinary measures taken to ensure the preservation of the corpse and the inviolability of the sepulchre ; hence the huge pyramid, the secret pit, and the subterraneous labyrinth. The shadowy and impalpable ka —the mere aspect, be it remembered, of the man—was

supposed to dwell in the tomb with the mummied body. This fragile conception was not, however, indestructible, like the soul and the intelligence. Being an aspect, it must perforce be the aspect of something material ; and, if the body which it represented were destroyed or damaged, the ka was liable to the like mischance. In view of this danger, the Egyptian, by stocking his sepulchre with portrait statues, sought to provide the ka with other

chances of continuance, these statues being designed, in a strictly literal sense, to serve as supports or dummies for the ka. The funereal portrait statues of the ancient empire (Dynasties I. to VI.) are marvels of realistic art in basalt, diorite, limestone, and wood. As many as twenty duplicates have been found in a single tomb, and always secreted in hidden chambers constructed in the thickness of the walls of the sepulchre. The Bulak Museum is very rich in ka statues of the ancient empire; and the British Museum contains two in wood from the tomb of Seti L, of the period of Dynasty XIX.

For the processes of mummification, as narrated by Greek and Latin authors, see Empatminc. The details which follow are taken from original Egyptian sources.

The embalmment of a man of wealth, done in the costliest manner, consisted of —(1) the “going into the good abode,” (2) the Zeb, (3) the Kesau. The first of these was the process of evisceration, cleansing, &c., which occupied 15 or 16 days; the second was the salting or bituminizing, and took 19 or 20 days; the third was the spicing and bandaging, and took 34 or 35 days,—making 70 or 72 days in all. There were four special “rituals” for the guidance of the priestly operators and assistants—(1) that of ‘‘ going into the good abode,” which was a kind of surgical manual for the use of the paraschists, enu- merating the incisions to be made in the body; (2) that of “the Kesau,” a corresponding manual for the use of the taricheutes, containing lists of the necessary gums, resins, spices, &c., directions as to the number and nature of the bandages, and prayers to be

repeated while adjusting them ; (3) the “water ritual” or service-book of litanies, to be recited during the transport of the mummy to the cemetery, which was almost always done by boat; (4) the funereal ritual, performed on consigning the mummy to the tomb. No copy of the first of these documents is known, but its substance is summarized in the Rhind papyrus. Of the other three, contemporary copies written on papyrus exist in various museums. Establishments for the reception and mummification of the dead were attached to all the great cemeteries. These mortuary suburbs, by the Greeks called “memnonia” (pepvdvera), were inha- bited by a large population of embalmers, mummy-case makers, gilders, painters, scribes, priests, and the like;

and it has been calculated that from 500 to 800 corpses must always have been on hand in the workshops attached to the necropolis of Memphis. To prevent mistakes in delivering the mummies to their families, the bandagers were in the habit of marking the wrappings with the name and age of the deceased, sometimes adding the name and regnal year of the king in whose time he died. The ink in which these entries were written was made from nitrate of silver, like the marking-ink of the present day. The bandages were of linen only. The texture varied with the rank of the mummy, some being as fine as the finest India muslin, and some extremely coarse. The quantity used was enormous, and persons used to save their old linen for this purpose all their lives long. Each limb, finger, and toe was first separately swathed ; and finally the whole body was enveloped in numberless convolutions, the contours of the shrunken form being skilfully restored by means of padding. From 700 to 1250 yards of band- ages, in strips of 3 to 4 inches wide, have been found on mummies.

The processes of mummification varied in different parts of Egypt and at different periods). The mummies made at Memphis are black, dry, and brittle, whereas those of the best Theban epoch are yellowish, flexible, and so elastic that the flesh yields to the touch of the finger and the limbs may be bent without breaking. Champollion- Figeac attributes this exquisite softness and elasticity to the injection of costly chemical liquids into the veins, whereby the substance of the flesh was preserved. The natron

process, on the contrary, destroyed the flesh, leaving only the skin and the bones. By some schools of embalmers the cavity of the skull, after the withdrawal of the brain, was washed out by an injection of refined bitumen, the effect of which was to preserve the membranous covering which has frequently been found inside the brain-pan, dried and unimpaired. Mair is constantly found on the heads of mummies, sometimes plaited, sometimes frizzled,—thus showing that the fashion of wearing wigs was by no means universal. The under bandages of mummies were laid on wet, having probably been dipped in spirits. They some- times come off with the solidity of a pasteboard mask ; and life-like portraits of the dead have been reproduced by simply casting plaster into these masks as into a mould. When Syrian turpentine came into use the Theban mummies ceased to maintain their supremacy, and became even blacker than those of Memphis, the corpse and its bandages forming one solid mass almost as hard as stone. In Memphite mummies, especially of the Ramesside and Saitic periods, the cavity of the chest is found filled with scarabeei and amulets in mietra dura. The Theban mummies, on the other hand, from Dynasty XI. to Dy- nasty XXIII., were adorned with rings, pectoral orna- ments, collars, bracelets, &c., in exquisitely- wrought gold inlaid with lapis-lazuli, carnelian, green felspar, and other precious stones. Under the Greeks and Romans the art of mummification declined. Rudely-painted wooden coffins were substituted for the granite sarcophagi and richly- decorated mummy-cases of former times. The mummies became ashen-grey, or, being boiled in bitumen, were black, heavy, and shapeless. Those of Graeco-Roman tines are frequently found wrapped in painted shrouds, and sometimes with coarsely-daubed encaustic portraits on panel laid above the faces. Dr Birch gives 700 a.p., as the date at which mummification practically ceased. It was formerly supposed that the bodies of the dead were merely desiccated under the ancient empire, and that actual embalming was not practised before 2000 B.c. Recent ex- plorations among the ruined pyramids of Sakkarah have, however, brought to light the mummied corpse of King Merenra, and part of the mummy of King Pepi, his father,

both of Dynasty VI. Though denuded of its wrappings by ancient tomb-breakers, the mummy of Merenra is distinctly impressed in the usual

manner with marks of its former bandages ; and portions of the bandages and a “‘well-embalmed” hand were recovered from the débris of that of King Pepi. It is thus shown that mummifi- cation was an established rite towards the close of the ancient empire, and that the processes then in use were identical with those of later times, which compels us to ascribe a-very early date (possibly 3800 or 4000 B.c.) to the beginnings of the art.

The styles of sarcophagi and mummy-cases vary accord- ing to periods and places as much as do the styles of mummification. At Gizeh, Sakkarah, and Meydum, in tombs of the ancient empire (Dynasties I. to VI.), the dead are found in unpainted wooden coffins with carved human faces, these coffins being enclosed in massive rect- angular sarcophagi of black basalt, red granite, and lime- stone, Interments of the earliest Theban period (Dynasty XI.) yield cases shaped like the mummy within, and carved out of solid tree-trunks. The masks are painted yellow, white, or black, and on the breast Isis and Nephthys are depicted as if overshadowing the mummy- case With their wings. These cases are sometimes found enclosed in large rectangular wooden coffers with flat lids. With Dynasty XVII. (Theban) there appears the mummy- case with hands carved in relief and crossed upon the breast. The ground-colour of these cases is generally white or black, painted with transverse bands of hiero- glyphed inscriptions, the mask is red or gilded, and a vulture with extended wings is depicted on the breast. From Dynasty XIX. to Dynasty XXI. the coffins are highly ornamented in gay colours, figures being more abundant than inscriptions, and yellow varnishes much in favour. The mummy is frequently found enclosed in two, three, and even four such cases, each a size larger than the last. Cases with black grounds are succeeded by cases with brown grounds, and these again by white, resembling those of Dynasties XVII. and XVIII. The masks are now painted red, with richly-decorated head-dresses imitating wigs. Under the priest-king or Amenide domination these triple and quadruple “nests” of mummy-cases are found enclosed in gigantic rectangular outer sarcophagi of wood, highly painted and varnished. From Dynasty XXII. to Dynasty XXVI. the inscriptions are mostly painted in green on a white ground. At Memphis, meanwhile, the granite, basalt, or limestone sarcophagus—sometimes rect- angular with rounded corners, sometimes mummy-shaped with sculptured hands and feet, sometimes resembling a long bath—continued to hold its ground. The Saitic period (Dynasties XXVI. to XXX.) is distinguished by

the minute finish and artistic beauty of its sculptured sarcophagi in basalt and granite. Last of all, in the extreme decadence of the art, come squared wooden cofiins, unpainted, unvarnished, and rudely scrawled in ink with hieroglyphed legends so corrupt as to be almost illegible. According to the religious law of ancient Egypt, the rites of mummification were universal and compulsory, being performed, not only for every native in a style consistent with his rank in life, but also for all strangers and foreigners who died in the land, for all slaves and captives, and even for outcasts, criminals, and lepers.

The most ancient mummified—or, at all events, desic- cated—human remains, not being pre-historic, which are known to science are the fragments of the body of Menkara (Gr., Mycerinus), third king of Dynasty IV., and builder of the smallest of the three great pyramids of Gizeh. These fragments were found by Colonel Howard Vyse strewn on the floor of the upper chamber of that pyramid, together with the woollen wrappings and empty

cedar-wood coffin of this pharaoh. All these are now in the British Museum. The fragments consist of the ribs and vertebree and the bones of the legs and feet, the dried flesh upon the thighs being perfectly preserved. The date of these remains may be approximately assigned to 4000 Bc. Next in antiquity comes the mummy of King Merenra of Dynasty VI., now in the Bulak Museum, the date of which is about 3600 B.c. Most famous and most interesting of all, however, are the royal mummies of Dynasties XVII, XVIII, XIX., and XXL, found at Dair al-Baharf, near the great temple of Queen Hatshepsu, on the left bank of the Nile opposite Karnak, in July 1881. The circumstances of this, the most extraordinary archeo- logical discovery of any age, are too remarkable to be passed over in silence.

The so-called ‘‘Theban Arabs” are the busiest treasure-seekers and antiquity-vendors in Egypt. But not often, apparently, have they lighted upon a royal interment. The royal sepulchres in the Valley of.the Tombs of the Kings and the neighbourhood have tempted the cupidity of all ages ; and we have the direct evidence of two legal documents of the time of Rameses

IX., 7th pharaoh of Dynasty XX., to show that bands of organized tomb-breakers infested the cemeteries of Thebes at that comparatively early

eriod.

. It is now about twelve ycars since certain objects of great rarity and antiquity, mostly belonging to the period of the Amenide Dy- nasty (XXI.), began to find their way to Europe from Upper Egypt. Foremost in importance among the said relics were four funereal papyri (consisting of extracts from the Ritual or Book of the Dead) written for royal personages of the Amenide family. Concurrent testimony pointed to a family of Arab brothers named Abd er- Rasoul as the origina! holders of these papyri; it was therefore concluded that the tombs of Pinotem I. and of the Queens Notem- Maut and Hathor Hont-taui (for whom the papyri were written) had by them becn discovered and pillaged. The eldest brother was ultimately induced to reveal the secret, and pointed out a lonely spot at the foot of the cliffs not far from the ruins of the great temple of Hatshepsu, on the western bank of the Nile, where the bottom of a hidden shaft opened into a short corridor leading to a gallery 74 metres in length, at the end of which was a sepul- chral vault measuring 7 metres by 4. The whole of this gallery and vault were crowded with mummies and mortuary furniture, as sacred vessels, funereal statuettes, canopic and libation vases, and precious objects in alabaster, bronze, glass, acacia wood, and the like. The mummies were thirty-six in number, including upwards of twenty kings and queens from Dynasty XVII. to Dynasty XXI., besides princes, princesses, and high priests, all of which, together with four royal papyri and a miscellaneous treasure consisting of upwards of 6000 objects, are now in the Bulak Museum.

The door-jambs of the mortuary chamber at the end of this long gallery are inscribed with various attestations of burial. These entries refer to interments of meinbers of the Amenide line only. It is also to be observed that only members of that line were found inside the chamber, so proving that the sepulchre was the family vault of the descendants of the first priest-king. All the other royal mummies, and all the objects appertaining to those mummies (that is to say, to the representatives of Dynasties XVII., XVIII., and XIX.) were found in the long gallery outside. When these earlier kings,

queens, and priucesses were brought out into the light of day, and conveyed to the museuin of Bulak, it was discovered that the coffins of some, and the wrappings of others, were inscribed with short official entries written thereon at different times and in different places by successive inspectors of tombs. The dates of these visits of inspection are restricted to the period of Dynasty XXI., whence it is evident that the necessity for protecting the last homes of the illustrious dead was as urgent then as the ‘‘ Amherst” and ‘‘ Abbott” papyri prove it to have been in the reign of Rameses IX. The terms of these entries show that it was the duty of the said inspectors to enter the sepulchres of the ‘‘royal ancestors,” to report upon the condition of the mummies, to repair their wrappings and mummy-cases when requisite, and, if expedient, to remove them from their own tombs into any othcrs which might be regarded as more secure. The mummies and mummy-cases thus inscribed are five in number— namely, those of Amenhotep I., Thothmes II., Rameses I., Seti I., and Rameses II. Two eutries on the coffin-lid of Amenhotep I. show his tomb to have been inspected and his wrappings renewed in the 6th year of Pinotem II., fourth of the priest- king line, and again in the 16th year of the pontificate of Masahirti, his son and successor. In the 6th year of Pinotem I. the same was done for the mummy of Thothmes II. The three pharaohs of Dynasty XIX.—Rameses I., Seti I., and Rameses I].—seem, however, to

have been still more anxiously looked after. Either because their mummies were specially revered, or because their sepulchres had already been attacked by the tomb-breaking gangs of that period, we find them continually being removed from one tomb to another. In the 6th year of Her-Hor, the founder of the Amenide line, while they yet occupied their own splendid sepulchres in the Valley of the Tombs of the Kings, they were there examined by a Government inspector, who ‘‘renewed their funerary equip- ments” and made an entry of his visit on the coffins of Seti I. and Rameses II. After this Rameses I. and Rameses II. were removed to the tomb of Seti I. (the tomb known as Belzoni’s), whence, in the 16th year of Her-Hor, all three mummies, father, son, and grandson, were transferred to the tomb of Queen Ansera. This act of transfer is written, dated, signed, and witnessed on all three coffins. Again, in the 10th year of Pinotem I.,

grandson of Her-Hor, occur more entries showing them to have been conveyed from the tomb of Queen Ansera to the tomb of one of the Amen-hoteps. Finally, in bold hieratic characters, written with marking- ink upon the breast-bandages of Rameses II., we find the following memorandum recording how, ten years later still, the mummy of this illustrious pharaoh was again taken back to the tomb of his father Seti I. :—

“The year 16, the third month of Pert (z.e., seed-time), the sixth day, being the day of carrying the defunct King Ra-user-Ma Sotep- en-Ra, for the renewal of his funerary appointments, into the tomb of the defunct King Ra-men-Ma Seti, by the first prophet of Amen, Pinotem.”’

At what precise date these and the earlier royal mummies were brought into the Dair al- Bahari vault does not appear; but, as that vault was finally closed on the burial of Queen Isi-em-Kheb, we may conclude that, as a last resource against possible depreda- tion, the ‘‘ royal ancestors” were deposited therein at or about that time. This would be in the reign of King Menkheperra (brother and successor of Masahirti, and husband of Isi-em-Kheb), whose seal, impressed on clay, was found upon the shattered door of the mortuary chamber. The condition of the various mummies and mumniy-cases thus hospitably sheltered gives every indication that their original sepulchres had been previously violated. The coffins of Thothmes III. and Rameses I. are much damaged. That of Rameses II. was probably destroyed, since the one in which his mummy now reposes is of Dynasty XXI. workmanship. The mummy of Rameses I. is doubtful, that of Thothmes I. is miss- ing, as are also the coffins of Queen Ansera, Queen Merit-Amen, and Queen Sitka. The mummy of Thothmes III.—greatest of all Egyptian pharaohs— greater than even Seti I. or Rameses II. —is broken in three picces. All this is.apparently the work of ancient marauders.

For these identifications, see especially two articles on Dynasty XXI. (Manethonian) in the Zeit. f. Aigyp. Sp., 1882, by Dr R. Lepsius and Dr A. Wiedeniann ; also in Recueil des Travaux, vol. iii., 1883, an article on ‘ Relics from the Tomb of the Priest-Kings at Dayr el-Baharee,” by Amelia B. Edwards.

GENERAL BIBLIOGRAPHY.—G. Maspero, Sur la Cachette découverte & Dér el-Ba- hari; Verhandlungen des Fiinften Orientalisten-Congresses,

Berlin, 1881; G. Maspero, La Trouvaille de Deir el-Bahari, Cairo, 1881; A. Rhoné, ‘‘ Découverte des Momies Royales de Thébes,” in Gazette des Beaux Arts, 1883; A. B. Ed- wards, ‘‘Lying in State in Cairo,” in Harper’s Monthly Magazine, July 1882; H. Villiers Stuart, The Funeral Tent of an Egyptian Queen, London, 1882; Colonel Howard Vyse, Operations carried on.at the Pyramids of Gheezeh, &c., 1840-2; Sir J. G. Wilkinson, Manners and Customs of the Ancient Egyptians, new ed., London, 1878; Records of the Past, edited by Birch; EH. Ledrain, Les Momies Gréco-Fgyptiennes, Paris, 1877; T. J. Pettigrew, History of Egyptian Mummies, London, 1840; A. H. Rhind, Thebes, tts Tombs and their Tenants, London, 1862.

MUMPS (syn. Cynanche parotidea, parotitis, also “ The Branks”), a contagious disease characterized by inflam- matory swelling of the parotid and other salivary glands, frequently occurring as an epidemic, and affecting mostly young persons. The disease generally sets in with symp- toms of a cold or catarrh accompanied with slight febrile dis- turbance, but soon the nature of the ailment is announced by the occurrence of swelling and stiffening in the region of the parotid gland in front of the ear. The swelling speedily increases in size and spreads downwards towards the neck and under the jaw, involving the numerous glands in that locality. The effect is to produce much disfigure-

‘ment, which becomes still greater should the inflammation

spread, as often happens, to the glands on the other side of the face and neck. Pain is present in the swollen parts, but it is seldom very severe, nor is there much redness or any tendency to suppuration. There is, however, con- siderable interference with the acts of mastication and swallowing. After continuing for four or five days the swelling and other symptoms abate, and the parts are soon restored to their normal condition. During the period of convalescence there occasionally occur some swelling and

tenderness in other glands, such as the testicles in males, and the mamme or ovaries in females, but these are of short duration and of no serious significance. That this com- plaint is highly contagious is shown by the readiness with which it spreads among children in schools, &c. The nature

of the infecting agent is unknown, but the medium of communication is most probably the breath or secre- tions of the mouth. Mumps is in general a mild disease, and requires but little treatment beyond a gentle laxative, the application of warm fomentations to the swollen and painful parts, and the use of soft food.

MUNCHAUSEN, Baron, the modern Philopseudes, “of whom Ferdinand Mendez Pinto was but a type,” is commonly identified with Hieronymus Karl Friedrich von Miinchausen, of Bodenswerder in Hanover, who, having entered the Russian service and served in several campaigns against the Turks, amused himself in his retirement by relating extraordinary instances of his prowess as soldier and sportsman. He died in 1797. In 1785 a little book of 48 pages, Baron Munchausen’s Narrative of his Marvel- lous Travels and Campaigns in Russia, was published in London. A second edition was printed at Oxford next year ; an enlarged London edition speedily followed, and the book had gone through five editions before, in 1787, it was introduced to the German public in a translation, with a preface by the poet Birger. Birger very naturally passed in Germany for the writer; and it was not until 1824 that a communication from his editor Karl von Reinhard to the Gesellschafter fixed the authorship upon Rudolf Erich Raspe. Raspe, a man of versatile talent, the author of some works on natural history and painting and of a poem entitled Hermin and Gunilde, was born at Hanover in 1737, and had been professor of archeology and curator of the museum at Cassel, which appointments he lost upon a charge of stealing medals. He fled to England, where he had already been elected an honorary

_ fellow of the Royal Society, though his name was sub-

sequently expunged. From 1782 to about 1788 he was assay-master and storekeeper at Dolcoath mine in Corn- wall, where his ingenuity was still remembered in the middle of the present century. In 1794 he accepted a similar situation at Muckross in Ireland, but died there before entering upon his post. His authorship of Mun- chausen rests entirely upon the testimony of Von Reinhard, but the fact was in all probability communicated to the latter by Biirger ; it has never been disputed, and is con- firmed by the appearance of the book in London during Raspe’s residence in England. The father of Adolf Ellisen, a recent German editor, visited Baron

Miinchausen himself in 1795, two years before his death, and found him very uncommunicative. He was convinced, however, by the evidence of acquaintances that the baron had in his younger days fully entitled himself to the distinction thrust upon him by Herr Raspe.

It would be superfluous to descant on the qualities of a work so universally known,whose name has become a house- hold word. It is to be observed, however, that the typical Munchausen is chiefly to be encountered in the 48 pages originally published by Raspe, and that the subsequent accessions, while quadrupling the dimensions of the book, are far from adding proportionably to its merit. There is hardly such another instance in literature of eleven buckram-men growing out of two. The most important of these additions is entitled “A Journey to the Moon and Dog Star,” and is mainly borrowed from Lucian’s True History. A very inferior appendix, published in 1793, represents the baron in conflict with the French revolutionists and Tippoo Saib; and there are several un- disguised imitations. The family likeness of the stories published by Raspe himself renders it probable that they

were actually derived by him from Miinchausen, of whom he speaks respectfully in his preface, attributing to his inventions the moral purpose of “awakening and shaming the common sense of those who have lost it by prejudice or habit.” It is nevertheless likely that Miinchausen shone rather as a narrator than an inventor, some of his marvels having been traced to Bebel’s Facetiz, to Lange’s Mendacia Ridicula, to Castiglione’s Cortegiano, and even to a Portuguese magazine.

The best English edition is that by Teignmouth Shore (1872), with illustrations by Gustave Doré and additions by Théophile Gautier ; the best German edition that by Ellisen (1849), to which is prefixed a valuable essay upon the literature of pseudology in general, The English edition of 1809 has plates by Rowlandson.

MUNCIE, a city of the United States, county seat of Delaware county, Indiana, 54 miles north-east of Indian- apolis. It is a flourishing pleasant-

looking place of 5219 inhabitants (census 1880), with city-hall, court-house, public library, and considerable industrial activity.

MUNDAY, Antony (1553-1633), was one of the most versatile miscellaneous writers of the Shakespearean age. In the introduction to his comedy John a Green and John a Cumber, reprinted for the Shakespeare Society, Collier enumerates 47 works of which Munday was whole or part author, the subjects being very various—pastoral poems, journalistic tracts and pamphlets, translations of romances, plays, pageants. The most interesting remnant of this miscellaneous work is a pamphlet reprinted in the Harleian Miscellany, the Hnglish Romayne Life, a lively account of adventures among Roman Catholic refugees in France and Italy. Munday's experiences were the result of a youthful escapade. Born in 1553, and the son of a London citizen of the Drapers' Company, he had early shown a restless dis- position: he took to the stage for some time, tried steady business for a year or two as apprentice to a stationer, tired of it, put all his wealth in his purse, and set out with a companion for the Continent, moved by "a desire to see strange countries as also affection to learn the languages." According to his own account, he was robbed on the way to Amiens, drifted into the company of Popish refugees, and was by them forwarded to Rome, where he obtained admission as a pope's scholar to the English seminary. Returning to England about 1581, and using the knowledge thus gained of designs against the English Government, he was a prominent witness in the trials of Campion and other English Jesuits; and, probably as a reward, was appointed one of the "Messengers of Her Majesty's Chamber." Thereafter he wrote steadily for the booksellers and the theatres, compiling religious publica- tions, putting words to popular airs, translating French romances, and so forth. Webbe in 1586 praised him for his pastorals—only the title is now extant, Sweet Sobs and Amorous Complaints of Shepherds and Nymphs ;—and in 1598 Meres mentioned him honourably among dramatic writers as "our best plotter." Critical Ben Jonson was less complimentary, and in Zhe Case is altered ridiculed Munday severely as 'Antonio Balladino, pageant poet." Judging from the plays on the subject of Robin Hood reprinted in Collier's Supplement to Dodsley's Old Plays, the joint work of Munday and Chettle, his literary faculty was of a very commonplace description, and deserved Jonson's taunts about "stale stuff" and want of character. Still Munday seems to have

been in great request as a collaborator in the last years of Elizabeth's reign, and afterwards he wrote many of the city "pageants." He obtained repute also as an antiquary, and published an enlarged edition of Stow's Survey of London in 1618. This last work was the only literary achievement inscribed on his monument in St Stephen's church. He died 10th August 1633.

MUNGO, Str. See KENTIGERN, vol. xiv. p. 40.

24

MUNGOOS, or Moncoos. p. 629.

MUNICH (in German, Miinchen), the capital of the kingdom of Bavaria and the fourth largest town in the German empire, is situated in an elevated and barren plain to the north of the Bavarian Alps, in 48° 8' N. lat. and 11° 35′ E. long. Owing to its lofty site (1700 feet above the sea) and the proximity of the Alps the climate is rather changeable, and its mean annual temperature, 49° to 50 Fahr., is little higher than that of many places much farther to the north. The annual rainfall is stated at nearly 30 inches. The situation of Munich is devoid of physical advantages, and the surrounding district is In no way remarkable for its wealth, but the construction of roads and railways has counterbalanced the lack of natural highways, while the central position of the town makes it easy of access from all parts of Europe.

Munich is divided into nineteen municipal districts, fourteen of which, including the old town, lie on the left bank of the small river Isar, while the suburban districts of Au, Haidhausen, Giesing, and Ramersdorf are on the opposite bank. The old town, still containing many narrow and irregular streets, forms a semicircle with its diameter towards the river, while round its periphery has sprung up the greater part of modern Munich, including the hand- some Maximilian and Ludwig districts. The wall with which Munich was formerly surrounded has been pulled down, but some of the gates have been left standing. The most interesting of these is the Isar Thor, restored in 1835 and adorned with modern frescos. The Sieges Thor or gate of victory is a modern imitation of the arch of Constantine at Rome, while the stately Propylea is a reproduction of the gates of the Athenian Acropolis.

At the beginning of the present century Munich was in no way distinguishable from the crowd of second-rate German towns, but since the accession of Louis I. in 1825 it has undergone a metamorphosis of the most remarkable character. This splendour-loving prince devoted himself heart and soul to the embellishment of his “residence,” and his successors have followed in his footsteps with such zeal that Munich is now almost unrivalled for archi- tectural magnificence among the smaller capitals of Europe, while its collections of art entitle it to rank alongside of Dresden and Berlin. Most of the modern buildings have been erected after celebrated prototypes of other countries and eras, so that, as has been said by Carriére, a walk through Munich affords a picture of the architecture and art of two thousand years. The want of local colouring is perhaps a blemish in this ‘‘museum of architecture,” and it has also been objected that the prevailing uniformity of surface in the buildings does not produce sufficient contrast of light and shade. In carrying out his plans Louis I. was ably seconded by the architect Klenze, while the external decorations of painting and sculpture were mainly designed by Cornelius, Kaulbach, and Schwanthaler.

A large proportion of the most notable buildings in Munich are in two streets, the Ludwigstrasse and the Maximilianstrasse, the creations of the monarchs whose names they bear. The former, three-quarters of a mile long and 60 yards wide, chiefly contains buildings in the Re- naissance style by Gartner. The most striking of these are the palaces of Duke Max and Prince Luitpold; the Odeon, a large building for concerts, adorned with frescos and marble busts ; the war office; the royal library, in the Florentine Pala- tial style ; the blind asylum ; the Ludwigskirche, a success- ful reproduction of the Italian Romanesque style, containing a huge fresco of the Last Judgment by Cornelius; and, lastly, the university. At one end this street is terminated by the above-mentioned Sieges Thor, while at the other is the Feldherrnhalle or hall of the marshals, a copy of the

See IcuHNEUMON, vol. xii.

Loggia dei Lanzi at Florence, containing statues of Tilly and Wrede. Adjacent is the church of the Theatines, an imposing though somewhat over-ornamented example of the Italian Rococo style; it contains the royal

burial-vaults. In the Maximilianstrasse, which extends from Haid- hausen on the right bank of the Isar to the Max-Joseph Platz, King Maximilian II. tried to introduce an entirely novel style of domestic architecture, formed by the com- bination of older forms. At the east end it is closed by the Maximilianeum, an extensive and imposing edifice for the instruction of civil servants, adorned externally with large sculptural groups and internally with huge paintings representing the chief scenes in the history of the world. Descending the street towards the west we pass in succes- sion the national museum, the new gymnasium, the pro- vincial government buildings for Upper Bavaria (in which the composite styleof Maximilian has been most consistently carried out), and the mint. On the north side of the Max- Joseph Platz lies the royal palace, an extensive building, consisting of the Alte Residenz, the Konigsbau, and the Festsaalbau. The old palace, dating from 1601 to 1616, was designed by Peter Candid, and was formerly considered a very fine building. The apartments are handsomely fitted up in the Rococo style, and the private chapel and the trea- sury contain numerous interesting and valuable objects. The Festsaalbau, erected by Klenze in the Italian Renaissance style, is profusely adorned with mural paintings and sculptures, while the Kénigsbau, a reduced copy of the Pitti Palace, contains a series of admirable frescos from the Wiebelungenlied by Schnorr. Adjoining the palace are two theatres, the Residenz or private theatre, and the handsome Hoftheater, the largest theatre in Germany, accommodating 2500 spectators. The Allerheiligen-Hof- kirche or court-church is a tasteful little edifice in tlie Byzantine style with a Romanesque facade, somewhat recalling St Mark’s at Venice.

The Ludwigstrasse and the Maximilianstrasse both — end at no great distance from the Marien Platz in the ~ centre of the old town. Here stands the Frauenkirche, the cathedral-church of the archbishop of Munich-Freising, with its lofty cupola-capped towers dominating the whole town. Though scarcely a pleasing piece of architecture, it is imposing from its size, and interesting as one of the few examples of indigenous Munich art. On other sides of this square are the old town-house, restored in 1865, and the new town-house, the latter a handsome modern Gothic erection, freely embellished with statues, frescos, and stained-glass windows. The column in the centre of the square was erected to commemorate the defeat of the Protestants near Prague in the Thirty Years’ War (1638).

Among the other churches of Munich—the town con- tains about forty in all—the chief place is perhaps due to St Boniface's, an admirable copy of an early Christian basilica. It is adorned with a cycle of religious paintings by Hess, and the dome is supported by sixty-four mono- liths of grey Tyrolese marble. The new parish church of Au, in the Early Gothic style, contains gigantic stained- glass windows and some excellent wood-carving ; and the church of St John in Haidhausen is another fine Gothic structure. St Michael's, in the Renaissance style, erected for the Jesuits in 1583 to 1595, contains the monument of Eugéne Beauharnais by Thorwaldsen. The facade is divided into stories, and the general effect is by no means ecclesiastical. St Peter's is interesting as the oldest church in Munich (12th century), though no trace of the original basilica remains. One of the two Protestant churches is also a tasteful Gothic building.

The valuable collections of Munich, in virtue of which it ranks among the art-centres of Europe, are enshrined in handsome and appropriate buildings, most of them in

MYM NIC A 25

the new Maximilian suburb on the north side of the town. The old Pinakothek, erected by Klenze in 1826-1836 and somewhat resembling the Vatican, is embellished exter- nally with frescos by Cornelius and statues of twenty- four celebrated painters by Schwanthaler. It contains a very valuable and extensive collection of pictures by the earlier masters, the chief treasures being the early German and Flemish works and the unusually numerous examples of Rubens. It also affords accommodation to 300,000 engravings, 10,000 draw- ings, and a large collec- tion of vases. Opposite stands the new Pina- kothek, the frescos on which, designed by Kaulbach, already show the effects of wind and weather. It is devoted to works by painters of the present century, among which Rottmann's Greek landscapes are per- haps the most important. The Glyptothek, a build- ing by Klenze in the Tonic style and adorned with several groups and single statues, contains a valuable series of sculp- tures, extending from Assyrian and Egyptian monuments down _ to works by Rauch, Thor- | waldsen, and other mo- dern masters. The cele- brated Aiginetan marbles preserved here, found in the island of A'gina in 1811, are perhaps the most important

remains of archaic Greek sculp- ture. Opposite the Glyp- tothek stands the exhibi- tion building, in the Corinthian style, used for periodic exhibitions ofart. Munich also con- tains several important private galleries, among which is Count Schack's unequalled collection of modern German pic- & tures. The Kaulbach museum contains a selec- tion of the pictures and sketches left by the painter of that name ; and a collection has also been made of the models of Schwanthaler's works. The scientific collections of Munich are on a par with its galleries of art. The immense collection in the above- mentioned Bavarian national museum, illustrative of the march of progress from the Roman period down to the present day, is superior in completeness and proportion to the similar collections at South Kensington and the Hétel de Cluny. On the walls is a series of well-executed frescos of scenes from Bavarian history, occupying a space of 16,000 square feet. The ethnographical museum, the museum of plaster casts, the cabinet of coins, and the collections of fossils, minerals, and physical and optical instruments are also worthy of mention. The art union, the oldest and most extensive in Germany, possesses good collections of

Z Z Y " —

%

Dy ete hae lity ~ Sena, rR : L Sy Ai r d é ea i if med yak 73 YY Yi.g ZY,

4

Ly

NSE

1. Theatinerkirche. 2. Feldherrnhalle,

8. Allerheiligen Church. 4, Residenztheater.

modern works. The chief place among the scientific insti- tutions is due to the Academy of Science, founded in 1759, to which some of the above- mentioned collections belong. The royal library, containing 1,000,000 printed volumes and numerous valuable manuscripts, occupies the third

place among the libraries of the world. The antiquarium is a collection of Egyptian, Greek, and Roman antiquities in the old palace. The observatory is admirably equipped with fine instruments by the celebrated Fraunhofer.

iy

4

Plan of Munich.

5. Hoftheater. 6. St Michael’s Church.

7. Frauenkirche, 8. St Peter’s Church.

At the head of the educational institutions of Munich stands the university, founded at Ingolstadt in 1472, removed to Landshut in 1800, and transferred thence to Munich in 1826. It has a staff of about 130 professors and lecturers, and in 1882 was attended by 2183 students. In addition to the four usual faculties there is a fifth, of political economy. In connexion with the university are medical and other schools, a priests’ seminary, and a library of 200,000 volumes. The polytechnic institute, contained in a handsome brick edifice, adorned with medallions of celebrated architects, mathematicians, and naturalists, is also attended by a large number of students. Munich contains three gymnasia or grammar-schools, a real-gymnasium, a military academy, a veterinary college, two industrial schools, a commercial school, a school for

XVIL — 4

26

architects and builders, several normal schools, a con- servatory of music, a dramatic training school, and about twenty-five elementary schools. Among the numerous benevolent institutions the most prominent are the asylums for the blind, the deaf and dumb, and the insane, and the general hospital. The general prison in the suburb of Au is considered a model of its kind; and a large military prison has just been erected. Amongst the other public buildings which call for mention are the crystal palace, 765 feet in length,

erected for the great exhibition of 1854; the slaughter-houses, covering 9 acres of ground ; the Wittelsbach palace, in the Early English Pointed style ; the post-office ; the arsenal, containing a military museum; the new railway station, the art-industrial in- stitution, the Maximilian barracks, the corn hall, and the aquarium. Among the numerous monuments with which the squares and streets are adorned, the most important are the colossal statue of Maximilian II. in the Maximilianstrasse, the equestrian statues of Louis I. and the elector Maximilian, and the obelisk erected to the 30,000 Bavarians who perished in Napoleon's expedi- tion to Moscow.

Munich is well supplied with public parks. The Eng- lish garden, to the north-east of the town, is 600 acres in extent, and was laid out by the celebrated Count Rumford in imitation of an English park. On the opposite bank of the Isar, above and below the Maximilianeum, extend the Gasteig promenades, commanding fine views of the town. To the south-west of the town is the Theresienwiese, a large common where the popular festivals are celebrated. Here is situated the Ruhmeshalle or hall of fame, a Doric colonnade containing busts of eminent Bavarians. In front of it is a colossal bronze statue of Bavaria, 170 feet high, designed by Schwanthaler. An admirable view is obtained from its summit. The finest of the cemeteries of Munich is the southern cemetery, outside the Sendlinger Thor. The dead-houses in the cemeteries are used for the strange custom of keeping the corpses several days before interment, dressed in their usual attire and exposed to public view. The botanical garden, with its large palm- house, and the Hofgarten, surrounded with arcades con- taining fine frescos of Greek landscapes by Rottmann, complete the list of public parks.

The population of Munich amounted at the census of 1880 to 230,023 inhabitants, of whom 110,033 were males and 119,990 females. These lived in 8791 dwelling- houses, and formed 53,457 households. The garrison numbers about 7000 men. Only 37 per cent. of the in- habitants are born in Munich, most of the remainder coming from the country districts of Bavaria (53 per cent.) and other parts of Germany (53 per cent.). Another census was taken in 1882 to elicit the occupations of the inhabitants, when it was found that 148,913 persons, or considerably more than half the population (64 per cent.), were supported by trading and manufacturing, while of the remainder 27,592 (12 per cent.) belonged to the official, military, and

professional classes, 30,038 (13 per cent.) had no profession and 24,237 (10°5 percent.) were engaged in domestic ser- vice. The population has been quintupled since 1801, when it was only 48,885. In 1680 it was 20,000, in 1783 it was 38,000. The annual death-rate is high, exceeding 30 per thousand. ‘This is, however, mainly accounted for by the abnormal mortality among children, after allowance for which the rate is not over 20 per thousand. About 85 per vent. of the inhabitants are Roman Catholics, and many of Munich’s most characteristic features are due to the fact that it is the centre of Roman Catholicism in southern Germany. Since the census of 1875 the number of Pro- testants in Munich has increased by 32 per cent., while the Roman Catholics have increased by 135 per cent. only.

MUNICH

Munich is the seat of the archbishop of Munich-Freising, and of the general Protestant consistory for Bavaria. About thirty newspapers are published here, including the prin- cipal Ultramontane sheets of south Germany. Some of the festivals of the Roman Church are celebrated with con- siderable pomp; and the people also cling to various national fétes, such as the Metzgersprung, the Schifilertanz (occurring septennially), and the great October festival in the Theresienwiese. The popular life of Munich may be said to revolve round its breweries and beer-gardens, where the manners and customs of the people may be conveniently studied.

The commerce and manufactures of Munich are scarcely commensurate with its artistic importance, though it has lately begun to take rank among the great industrial centres. It has long been celebrated for its artistic handicrafts, such as bronze-founding, glass-staining, silver- smith’s work, and wood-carving, while the astronomical instruments of Fraunhofer and the mathematical instru- ments of Ertl are also widely known. Lithography, which was invented at Munich at the end of last century, is still extensively practised here. The other industrial products include wall-paper, railway plant, machinery, gloves, and artificial flowers. Perhaps the most charac- teristic industry, however, is the preparation of the national beverage. In 1879 upwards of 28 million gal- lons of beer were brewed in Munich, only one-fifth of which was sent to other parts of Bavaria or exported. This represents an annual consumption of at least 125 gallons per head of

population, while the rate in England is only 40 gallons per head. ‘Trade, especially in grain and artistic goods, is now rapidly growing. Four important markets are held at Munich annually.

History.—The history of Munich, as distinct from that of Bavaria, has been very uncventful. The Villa Munichen or Forum ad Monachos, so called from the monkish owners of the ground on which it lay, was first called into prominence by Duke Henry the Lion, who established a mint here in 1158, and made it the em- porium for the salt of Hallcin and Reichenhall. The dukes of the Wittelsbach house occasionally resided at Munich, and in 1255 Louis the Severe made it his capital, having previously surrounded it with walls and a moat. The town was almost entirely destroyed by fire in 1327, after which the emperor Louis the Bavarian, in recognition of the devoted loyalty of the citizens, rebuilt it very much on the scale it retained down to the beginning of the present century. Among the following rulers those who did most for the town in the erection of handsome buildings and the foundation of schools and scientific institutions were Albert V. (1550-1579), William V. (1579-1596), Maximilian J. (1597-1651), Max Joseph _ (1745-1777), and Charles Theodore (1778-1799). _In 1632 Munich was occupied by Gustavus Adolphus, and from 1705 to 1715, and again in 1742, it was in possession of the Austrians. In 1791 the fortifications were razed, and room thus made for the enormous development the city has since experienced. The modern history of Munich may be dated from the accession of King Louis I. in 1825, since which, as already indicated, nearly all the most handsome streets and buildings of the town have been constructed. Like the Bavarians in general, the citizens of Munich are naturally inclined to adhere to the traditionary both in politics and in religion, but a late the population has become permeated with more advanced ideas.

Munich’s importance in the history of art is entirely of modern growth, and may be dated from the acquisition of the Hginetan marbles by Lonis I., then crown prince, in 1812. Among the emi- nent artists of this period whose names are more or less identified with Munich were Klenze, Ohlmiiller, Gartner, and Ziebland, the architects ; Cornelius, Kaulbach, Schnorr, and Rottmann, the painters ; and Schwanthaler, the sculptor. The art of fresco-painting may be said to have been resuscitated in Munich during this reign,

and the artistic handicrafts of bronze-founding and glass-staining were also practised with a success previously noknown i modern days. Munich is still the leading school of painting in Germany, but the romanticism of the earlier masters has been abandoned for drawing and colouring of a thoroughly realistic char- acter. Piloty and W. Diez stand at the head of this school.

_ Authorities.—Mittheilungen des statistischen Bureaus der Stadt AMiinchen, vols. i.-v., 1875-1882; Soltl, Munchen mit seinen Umgebungen, 1854; Reber, Bau- technischer Fiihrer durch die Stadt Miinchen, 1876; Trautwein, Fuhrer durch Mtnchen, 12th ed., 1881; Daniel, Handbuch der Geographie, new ed., 1882- 1883. (J. F. M.)

me wi iP ALI TY

MUNICIPALITY. A municipality is an organization for the self-government of a city or town by means of a corporation empowered generally to maintain peace and order, and to manage the affairs of the inhabitants. Such a corporation consists of a head as a mayor or provost, and of superior members as aldermen and councillors, together with the simple corporators who are represented by the governing body ; it acts as a person by its common seal and has a perpetual succession with power to hold lands subject to the restrictions of the Mortmain Laws, and it can sue or be sued or be indicted, although there are of course many personal matters which do not come within the functions and liabilities of such bodies politic. Where necessary for its primary objects, every corporation has power to make byelaws and to enforce them by penalties, provided they are not unjust or unreasonable or otherwise inconsistent with the objects of the incorporation or char- ter or other instrument of foundation ; and in the case of a municipality such byelaws will be binding even upon strangers within the district.

Great Britain has no general system of self-government. A certain number of cities and towns have been from time to time incorporated by the crown, or have successfully claimed the privilege as existing from time immemorial, either because in fact they have governed theniselves from very ancient times, or because they have had such a repre- sentation in parliament as led to a presumption of their having been incorporated like

the rest. The other urban districts have been regarded as mere “upland towns” or populous townships, with nothing but a parochial organiza- tion, or the faint semblance of municipal institutions which grew out of the administration of fairs and markets. These are now comprised in the various local government districts existing under the Public Health Acts, “lighting and watching districts” constituted under an Act passed for the purpose in 1833, and improvement districts governed under the powers given by a number of local Acts. Pro- vision has been made by the Acts which regulate these corporations for the grant of powers of self-government to new municipal boroughs subject to the approval of the committee of the privy council. The making of corporations, however, is regarded as one of the highest prerogatives of the crown, and the legislature has always been careful to avoid unnecessary interference with the right; the func- tions of the committee are therefore confined to the allow- ance or refusal of municipal powers as constituted by statute, the right of the crown to make corporations of other kinds being left in theory untouched.

The term “municipal borough” was introduced when the larger corporations were reformed in 1835 to denote a place to which the new powers of self-government were applied, whether such a place were a parliamentary borough or not. It has now become nearly equivalent to ‘‘munici- pality” owing to the provisions of the Act of 1883 for extinguishing the less important of the small unreformed municipalities, and for bringing the rest within the purview of the Municipal Corporations Act, 1882, by which the provisions of the statute of 1835 and its forty-two amend- ing Acts were consolidated. The meaning of the word “borough” has undergone many changes. It seems at first to have denoted a walled town or city, but it was soon applied especially to such of them as possessed some kind of organization for the transaction of the local business. At a later period the term implied the right to be repre- sented in parliament. This may be illustrated by the proceedings in the case of Torrington in the reign of Edward III. This place, whether a “burgh” or a mere “‘vill,” had in fact sent burgesses to parliament, but after it was determined that such representation was improper the town was omitted from the category of boroughs. In

summoning the commons to parliament each sheriff was directed to procure the election of two citizens from every city and two burgesses from every borough in his bailiwick. But it soon became the practice to omit places which had been represented, and to include others with no title to the privilege except. their situation on the royal demesnes, or their political or commercial importance. It resulted that the word “borough” came to denote only those places

. which were usually represented in parliament, whether they

were walled towns or not, and whether they had or had not received charters of incorporation ; and in course of time it was taken for granted that every parliamentary borough must have been incorporated at some ancient time, or in other words was entitled to the privileges of a borough by prescription. The first Reform Act changed the meaning of the word again by depriving the smaller boroughs of their parliamentaryfunctions and reducing them to the same position as those districts which were known as boroughs in a popular sense, as having originally had a representation which had been lost, or as being important places enjoying municipal rights under charters like those which had been granted to the parliamentary boroughs.

We shall now proceed to describe the ordinary constitu- tion of an English municipal borough, omitting the small municipalitics which are now in course of extinguishment, and for other reasons omitting the city of London, which, on account of its singular importance and its peculiar cir- cumstances, will probably become without much delay the subject of separate legislation (see Lonpon).

These boroughs are governed by corporations composed in each case of a mayor, aldermen, and burgesses, acting by a council elected by the general body of qualified cor- porators. If the borough is a city, the burgesses are de- scribed as the “citizens.” With a few exceptions arising under local Acts, the following description applies to all the municipal boroughs in England and Wales, similar provi- sions having been made for the boroughs of Scotland and Ireland (see vol. iv. p. 63) by Acts of Parliament passed for those parts of the United Kingdom. The powers and duties of the council are defined by the Municipal Corpora- tions Act, 1882, which forms a

complete municipal code. The number of councillors varies from twelve to forty-eight according to the size of the borough, and in the case of a new incorporation the number is fixed by a provision in the charter. The qualification of a councillor is to be an enrolled resident burgess, or, if not resident within the district, residing within 15 miles of the borough and having in either case the property qualification required by the Act, provided that he is not a clergyman or a regular dissenting minister, or interested in any office, place, or contract with which the corporation is concerned. The qualification of a burgess is to be enrolled on the burgess-roll as the rate-paying occupier of a house or other building in the borough or within 7 miles distance from it. Women may be burgesses, but are not qualified for corporate office. In many boroughs there are ancient classes of freemen qualified as such by birth, servitude, or marriage (and formerly in many cases qualified by gift or purchase) ; but these freemen as such have not the rights of burgesses, though they are entitled to the parliamentary franchise and to their share in the charities and corporation property under titles accruing to their class before the reform of 1835, The qualification, of an alderman is the same as that of a councillor, and' the mayor is chosen from the aldermen, or councillors, or persons qualificd for such positions.

The councillors hold office for three years, one-third of their number being annually renewed by ballot. If the borough is divided into wards, an alderman acts as return- ing-officer for the elections in each ward ; if not, the mayor

acts as the returning-officer for the borough. Municipal elections fall within the provisions of the Corrupt Practices Act, 1883. The aldermen hold office for six years, one-half of their number retiring every three years in rotation. The mayor holds office for one year. His election is the first business at the quarterly meeting held on the 9th day of November, when the amount of his remuneration is fixed by the council. He is the only member of the corporation who receives a salary. The council chooses the mayor and aldermen and appoints the officers of the corporation, as the town-clerk and treasurer, the sheriff when the borough is a county of itself, and the coroner and clerk of the peace when it has separate quarter-sessions. The council

appoints such general and special committees as may be required, and has the general management of the corporate property, subject to the supervision of the treasury; it makes all necessary byelaws, subject to disallowance by the privy council if necessary. With exceptions arising from the provisions of local Acts, the council regulates the police force, the lighting and watching of the borough, the management of markets and burial-grounds, and the execution of the laws relat- ing to public health. The expenses are defrayed out of the borough fund, which includes the income of the general corporate estate, supplemented by a borough- rate paid out of the poor-rate or assessed upon a similar basis. A watch-rate, if required, may be levied on the whole borough or on a selected portion of the district. When expenditure is required for objects of a permanent character, the council is empowered to raise the amount by loans, charged on the rates and repayable by instal- ments, subject to the approval of the treasury or other public department entrusted with the control of the matter, according to the nature of the improvement required, The whole of the accounts are audited by borough auditors, of whom one must be a councillor appointed by the mayor, and the other two elected by the burgesses from persons qualified to be councillors. A return is made to the Local Government Board of the receipts and expenditure for the year, and an abstract of all these returns is laid every year before parliament. Some con- trol over the expenditure is also reserved to the High Court of Justice by a provision that all orders for payment must be signed by three councillors and the town-clerk, and that any such order may be moved by certiorari into the Queen’s Bench Division. The aldermen have no greater powers than other councillors, excepting that they may act as the returning-officers for wards as above mentioned, and that an alderman may act for the mayor if he is temporarily unable to discharge his duty and has not appointed a deputy. The mayor is the head of the cor- poration, and is ex officio a magistrate for the borough and a member of the watch committee. He is the return- ing-officer at parliamentary elections, and acts with two elected revising assessors as the revising officer if the borough is not represented in parliament. His office is vacated by death or bankruptcy, and must be filled up with all convenient speed after any such vacancy occurs. The last ex-mayor is also ex officio a magistrate for the borough.

Where the borough has a separate commission of the peace, the borough justices, with the last-mentioned excep- tions, are appointed by the crown. A separate commission does not of itself exempt the borough from the concurrent jurisdiction of the county justices. A stipendiary magis- trate may be appointed bya secretary of state on the appli- cation of the council, and when appointed he is ex officio a Justice for the borough. When the borough has a separate court of quarter-sessions the recorder is the judge, but in certain cases may appoint an assistant or deputy ; the recorder must be a barrister of five years' standing, and

is appointed by the crown on the recommendation of the home secretary; the recorder is also ex officio a justice for the borough. When the borough has such a court it ceases to be liable to the county-rate, but must contribute to the expenses arising from prosecution and conviction of prisoners from the borough at the assizes. In the case of boroughs which were liable before 1832 to contribute to the county-rate, a contribution to the expenses of the county is still required. Subject to an exception as to judges and assessors appointed before 1835, and to the provisions of various local Acts, the recorder is the judge of any civil court existing in the borough by prescription.

We shall now discuss more generally the origin of these municipalities upon the Continent as well as in the United Kingdom. The conception of the borough as it now exists has obviously been copied from the Roman munici- pium. As to England, however, the coincidence is in one sense accidental, inasmuch as it had a municipal system before the lawyers adopted the notion of a corporation from the civilians, though it may be true that no such system could grow up without being influenced by ideas which were familiar to the churchmen. In some parts of the West the Roman system appears to have lived on without an actual breach of continuity. The "curia" seems to have continued in the cities of Provence until the outbreak of the great revolution. At Treves and Cologne "the Roman language perished, but the institu- tions survived ;" and the libertas Romana or full body of municipal privileges was extended gradually to other cities on the Rhine and the trading communities of Holland and Brabant. It is possible also that some relics of the

| Imperial administration may have continued in southern

Italy and in a few of the Lombard cities. One element at least in the corporation of Paris can be traced back to the Nautzx Parisiaci, a college of merchants established in the first period of the empire. But the English munici- palities are in no sense a legacy from the.imperial times, or a continuation of the system which prevailed in the cities of Britain, even in the few instances, as in London, York, and Exeter, where there may have been an unbroken succession of occupancy. Almost all the towns were destroyed in the course of the English conquest, and some which became important again, as Bath, Cambridge, and Chester, are known to have lain waste for centuries. In other instances the English kings soon learned to hold their courts in the fortresses, and to set up their farmsteads in the desolated palaces, or elsewhere a Roman camp may have been taken as a convenient point fora garrison, which in time became a “civil centre” and the site of a muni- cipal borough.

The French municipalities can be traced to several dis-: The chief activity was in the north ; the southern cities kept their Roman traditions or’

tinct sources of origin.

imitated the Italian model, as those in the east endeavoured. to secure the same privileges as the mercantile communities: on the Rhine; in the central provinces the towns for the most part retained the organization of the parish, and were rather bourgeoisies or privileged market-towns than communes with powers of self-government. The rise of the communes began under Philip I., and they became general in the 13th century. The first charter was granted

to Le Mans in 1072, and another to Cambray in 1076;

these were followed by grants to Laon, Beauvais, Amiens, Soissons, and many other places; and similar privileges were granted in the 12th century by the counts of Flanders, the dukes of Burgundy, and other princes,—the general effect of the grants being to fix the lord’s rent or tribute, to commute the military service, and to give jurisdiction to magistrates either

freely elected or chosen by the townsnien in conjunction with their feudal lords. Speci

pee A 2h TY

mens of these charters can be seen in the Ordonnances des Rois, Kemble's Anglo-Saxons, and Bouthors's Coutwmes locales du Baillage d Amiens. They show us a political revolution directed against the feudal lord by townsmen associated in merchant-guilds or sworn into a new sort of brotherhood. To break the oath of loyalty to the com- mune is a crime of the gravest kind. "If any of us aid or comfort our enemies he is guilty of lése-commune, and we will pull down his house, if we can. . . . Whoever wounds with weapon any of his fellows shall lose his fist or pay nine livres" (Amiens). 'The men shall take what wives they please, first asking leave ; if their lord refuse, and a man take a wife from another lordship, he shall pay but five sous for a fine. Every one living within the dis- trict shall take the communal oath or answer with house or goods" (Soissons). These charters are important because the communa of London was founded under Richard I. in direct imitation of the French example, and soon became the type of the independence which the other boroughs continually struggled to attain ; and, as in France, the great men deplored the revolt as tumor plebis, tumor regis, tepor sacerdotu, while the kings for their own pur- poses encouraged the popular movement. And in the same way Philip Augustus and his successors were so ready to protect the communes that they eventually claimed and obtained an immediate seigniory over all the chartered boroughs to the exclusion of any private lords to whom the towns had formerly belonged. Another point of importance lies in the fact that the lords not only settled the local laws of inheritance and other customs "running with the land," but sometimes changed them at the townsmen's request, as if it were merely an affair between lord and tenant. There are English examples of the same practice, which seems to have been not entirely discontinued until the reign of Edward I. A prerogative of this nature was exercised by the archbishop in Kent, and Simon de Montfort in 1255, at the request of his burgesses of Leicester, abolished the custom of descent to the youngest son. Fitzosberne appears by Domesday Book to have granted a separate set of customs to his "Frenchmen" in Hereford, and a difference of the same kind which existed at Stafford and Nottingham

must have been caused by similar grants; in the latter place it was found on a trial in the reign of Edward III. that there were two districts in the town, the one called the “French “borough” and the other the “English borough,” where descent was to the youngest son, a circumstance which gave its name to the custom of “‘ borough-English.” Municipal freedom was granted in Spain at an earlier date and on an ampler scale, as beseemed the poverty of the kings, the weakness of the nobles, and the constant danger from the Moors. The Visigothic laws were imbued with the principles of the Theodosian code, and it was easy for the Spaniards to regard the incorporated cities as bodies politic of the highest importance. The first instance of the erection of such a community was the grant in 1020 of a code of privileges to Leon. Such grants were treaties between the king and the chartered towns, by which the latter obtained fixed laws, extensive territories, and the choice of their own magistrates in return for a tribute and universal service in the militia. The king appointed a governor to take charge of the fortified places, but in almost every other respect the inhabitants governed them- selves. This democratic constitution was after a time impaired by the claims of the knights or “caballeros” to a monopoly of office ; but what actually led to its destruc- tion was the increase in the power of the crown. The disorders inseparable from popular elections were declared, as in England under the Tudors, to be a reason for vesting the government in a small and close corporation, which

was soon found to be quite amenable to the influence and dictation of the court.

The municipalities of every country have a separate history of their own, and it is difficult to find any general law for determining their methods of development. Ac- cording to their opportunities the oppressed wear out their conquerors’ patience and too often become oppressors in their turn: as the state becomes more complex the old confederacies are broken up, and the scattered communities are reduced to order by a central government, and as privilege begins to disappear the towns are regulated by a common set of rules, or the whole country, as in France, is parcelled out again into a new series of communes or corporate districts. In Spain, as we have seen,

the needs of the state gave immediate freedom to its defenders. In Italy the cities grew too soon into a crowd of independent republics. The history of Lincoln and Exeter and the cities of the Danelagh shows that ‘the tendency of the great cities of England was towards a more than muni- cipal independence” (Freeman, Engl. Towns, p. 206). If these movements had not been checked by the Norman Conquest, English history might have been “like that of the imperial kingdoms.” But, as this event turned out, there is little in the record of the German cities which bears upon that of English municipalities, excepting some slight resemblances between the powers acquired by the city of London and those of the Hanse towns and the mercantile principalities of Nuremberg and Augsburg. The free cities of Germany were at first divided between the emperors and their immediate vassals, the former ruling through the bishops as imperial vicars ; in the 12th century the citizens began to elect councils and to administer a concurrent jurisdiction ; in the next century they either purchased full powers or drove out the vicars and bailiffs by force; the revolutions which followed the fall of the Hohenstauffen family enabled the cities to free themselves from the mediate lords and to hold directly of the empire, and they were soon afterwards admitted to the diet on equal terms with the rest of its sovereign constituents.

The borough when it appears in English history is essentially a place of defence, and the definition includes the powerful city which formed the metropolis of an ancient kingdom, the border-fortress, the walled seaport, the “burh” erected in a disaffected province, and the fortified village on the private demesne of the king. There is another sense of the word “borough,” as used in Kent and the neighbouring counties, to denote the small rural division which is elsewhere called a “ tithing,” the constable or tithing-man being the same officer as the “ borsholder ” or “borough-elder ” of the eastern counties; but the verbal similarity is accidental, the rural “borough” having been the district of the “ frank-pledges” or neighbours under a pledge or “borh” to act as bail for each other. The borough or “ burh” was confined to the precinct of the walls, though the town or city might extend to a greater distance, or the burgesses might be joint-owners of estates outside the lines of defence. There might even be two “burhs” side by side if the nature of the locality required it. We read in the Chronicle, for instance, of the con- struction of the “northern burh” at Hertford in 913, and

of “burhs” being built five years later on both sides of the river at Buckingham ; and many other examples will be found collected in Kemble’s list of the towns.

Little is known of the civil constitution of the boroughs before the Norman Conquest, and even the Domesday survey fails to give much information as to their internal affairs where the king’s rights were not immediately con- cerned. It appears indeed that Lincoln and the other cities of the Danelagh were almost independent ; an aristo- cratic commonwealth in each case was governed by twelve

hereditary judges, and the same kind of organization, but with a less degree of independence, appeared at Chester and Ipswich. The size and the wealth or power of places like Canterbury, Taunton, and Sandwich entitled them to be treated as separate “hundreds,” and the constitution of London must have been based on that ofa shire ; but, speak- ing generally, it may be said that the ordinary boroughs were without any powefts of self-government. Each borough was administered as if it were a township or cluster of, town- ships, intersected in most cases by a number of separate jurisdictions and subject to the obligations of tenure which bound many of the burgesses to lordships outside the walls. The borough-courts were held by the reeve or bailiff, who may have been in many cases elected, but was always answerable to an external authority. If the place was of mercantile importance it was called a port (from “ porta,” the city-gate), and the court and its president, as in London, Canterbury, and Bath, were styled the “port- mote” and “nort-reeve.” In the smaller boroughs the reeve’s func- tions must have resembled those of the steward in the ordinary manorial courts. When municipal rights were granted by the Plantagenet kings this officer was replaced by the “mayor,” whose appearance is always the sign of the establishment of an independent commune. The first steps toward self- government were taken when the burgesses became the owners, as at Oxford and Colchester, of pro- perty which they managed in common. But a more important source of municipal privilege is to be found in the institution of the guilds, which in time acquired the control and monopoly of the local commerce, so that in the reign of Henry II. the possession of a

merchant-guild, or “hanse” as it was called in the north, became ‘the token of municipal independence,” the guild being in fact (if not in theory) the governing body of the town. The courts in later times have accordingly held, as in the case of Totnes, that the grant of gilda mercatoria implies the incorporation of the borough. The guilds appear first in a religious form, and date in all probability from the times when the neighbours met to drink at the pagan festivals or the feasts in honour of the dead. Other voluntary associations of the same kind were formed as clubs and friendly societies for mutual insurance and defence. The “frith-gild” of London, as it existed in the reign of Athelstane, and the later “knighten-guild,” the “thanes’ guild” at Cambridge, and the guilds of Canterbury and Exeter were all fraternities of this kind. The “chapman- guild” (“hanse”- or merchant-guild) was an association on the same model but on a larger scale, comprising all the traders in the town, and assuming the power to make by- laws to regulate all the local business which did not fall within the jurisdiction of the regular courts. The London knighten-guild, until it was suppressed by Henry I, had a legal jurisdiction in the district of Portsoken Ward. The ancient descriptions of Winchester mention two knighten-guilds where the “ probi homines” were wont. to drink their guild (“ potabant gildani suam ”). The “ gild- halla” of the men of Dover is mentioned in Domesday Book. When the boroughs were enfranchised as communes upon the French model care was taken to confirm and establish these trading fraternities as forming the most important members of the new corporations. Thus in 1200 King John granted to the burgesses of N ottingham “a merchant-guild with all the liberties and free customs which ought to pertain thereto,” and the grant to Ipswich in the same reign, besides preserving and extending the jurisdiction of the twelve “portmen” or capital burgesses, provides that the common council shall elect a fit man to be alderman of the merchant-guild. The same king granted to Dublin the right of having guilds “as in Bristol.” York and Beverley had the right to havea “hans-hus”

MoU NerC TP errs

some time before, in the latter case by the grant of Arch- bishop Thurstan in the reign of Henry I.

Another valuable franchise was obtained when the boroughs procured a separate assessment of their dues to the crown. Except in the case of the most important cities, the boroughs were regarded as parts of the counties in which they were situate and as answerable accordingly to the sheriff. It was of the highest importance to the burgesses that their share of the county-dues should be ascertained, and even before the Norman Conquest it became the practice for the borough to answer for its own dues under the name of jirma burgi. The Domesday survey shows that Dover, Sandwich, Bath, Huntingdon, and many other boroughs had obtained a privilege of this kind. A borough paying its fixed assessment to the king or other lord, through the reeve or alderman of the mer- chant-guild, was regarded as a single tenant holding the borough for years or at will or in perpetuity, according to the nature of the contract. When its dues and services were assessed in perpetuity the borough was said to be "affirmed" or held in fee-farm, and the burgesses were thenceforth treated as freeholders by a burgage tenure. The only rights remaining to complete their municipal independence were attained when the sheriff's jurisdiction was ousted and the burgesses were allowed to elect their own magistrates to administer justice in the local courts, In the reign of Henry IIT. the great lords began to enfranchise their boroughs in imitation of the royal example. The statute of Quo Warranto in 1290 led to the confirmation of these charters by the crown, and the doctrine was soon established that none but the king had authority to erect a commune. The Scottish boroughs obtained complete self-government at an earlier date, King David I. (1124- 1153) having been anxious to attract commerce, and the walled towns having soon been filled with "a crowd of willing settlers from southern Britain and Flanders." Edinburgh, Stirling, Roxburgh, and Berwick formed an important commercial league, "to which the other burghs conformed as they came into existence" (Robertson, Harly Kings, i. 298). Both in England and Scotland the boroughs, whether founded by the crown or by private lords, were important elements in the state, and in England both classes were summoned to parliament indifferently; in 1298 a writ was issued for Northallerton, which belonged to the bishop of Durham, though by a curious anomaly his city of Durham only acquired the franchise by an Act passed in 1673. The introduction of the metaphysical idea of a corporation may be ascribed to the influence of Bracton, who wrote under Henry III. (De Legibus, 57 ; Fleta, vi. 13). We find Edward J. in 1284 granting

franchises to the burgesses and community of Nottingham and their ‘‘ successors,” the old form being ‘‘to the burgesses and their heirs.” The practice varied according as the feudal or the ecclesiastical way of regarding such grants prevailed, until in 1440 the town of Kingston-upon-Hull was incor- porated as a body politic according to the modern form. The government of the boroughs soon fell to close govern- ing bodies, constituted by restraining ordinances, and the Stuarts made incessant attempts to obtain the nomination even of these smaller bodies. After the fall of the corpora- tion of London in 1681 the provincial boroughs lost or surrendered their privileges; and, though the charters were revived at the Revolution, the narrow and corrupt system remained. The commissioners of 1835 reported a general and just dissatisfaction with the state of the municipal institutions, great distrust of the self-elected councils, and discontent under the burden of local taxation for purposes which were regarded with suspicion. The reform in England followed swiftly on the famous report, and by acts passed soon afterwards the Scotch and Irish boroughs,

which had long been subject to the same evils, were recon- structed under similar schemes.

The privileges of the cities in the United States illustrate the proposition that the history of every country must determine the type of its municipalities. In almost all parts of Europe the civic franchises arose out of some treaty or contract between the lord and his dependents ; in France, however, the character of the corporations was gradually modified as the communal system was extended to the rural districts. In the United States the French model has been followed with the addition of many improvements ; and where self-government has been impartially granted to the county, the township, and the village the purely muni- cipal organization has lost its special significance. It is regarded in the American courts as a revocable agency established by the State (without contract or consideration for the grant) for the purpose of carrying out the necessary details of civil government among the inhabitants of an urban district. It is considered to have no vested right to any of its powers or franchises, which are only

allowed to exist in furtherance of the design for which the munici- pality was constituted, that object being the exercise in subordination to the legislature of certain minor powers of government over part of the territory of the State (see Philadelphia v. Fox, Supreme Court of Pennsylvama Rep., vol, xiv.). Each city has the general powers of a corpora- tion and no others, in the absence of special laws. It has executive functions and powers of legislation for civic pur- poses, which are vested in the mayor and his subordinate officers, but it is not in any other way entrusted with judicial authority (see Zhe Polstical Code of New York, titles 4, 5, ss. 947-8).

Besides the authors cited above and the ordinary historical text-books, see Gneist, Self-Government ; and the work on Local Government by M. D. Chalmers, and the Memoranda by R.S. Wright there cited. For France, see Thierry, Lettres sur Uhistoire de France; Leber, Pouvoir municipal, 1829; Clos, Régime municipal dans le Midi, 1853; Riviere, Biens communaua, &c., 1856; Béchard, Drott muni- cipal; Savary, Origine du droit municipal,1868. For Spain, consult Marina, Teoria de las Cortes, and Ensayo historico-critico, and compare the review on the latter work, Edinb. Rev., No. 43. For Germany and Italy, see Wilda, Gildenwesen, 1831 ; Hiillmann, Siddtewesen, 1828 ; Bethmann-Hollweg, Ursprung der Lombard. Stddte- Sreiheit, 1846 ; Lambert, Die Entwickelung der Deutschen Stadteverfassung, 1865 ; Gaupp, Deutsche Stadtrechte, 1851; Horneyer, Stadtbicher des Mittelalters, 1860 ; Gengler, Codex Juris Municipalis, 1867; and Maurer, Gesch. der Stddteverfassung in Deutschland, 1870-1871. (C. I. E.)

MUNSTER. See IRELAND.

MUNSTER, the chief town of the province of West- phalia in Prussia and formerly the capital of the important bishopric of its own name, lies in a sandy plain about half- way between Cologne and Bremen on the Aa, an insigni- ficant affluent of the Ems. It is one of the best-preserved old towns in Germany, its quaint medizval character being most strongly impressed on the “ prinzipal-markt,” with its lofty gabled houses, its arcades, the town-house, a fine Gothic building of the 14th century, and many churches. Of the latter the most important is the cathedral, one of the most original and striking structures in Germany, though much disfigured by modern

decoration, rebuilt after a fire in the 13th and 14th centuries, and exhibiting a combination of Romanesque and Gothic forms ; the church of St Ludgerus, originally erected in the Romanesque style in 1170, was extended in the Gothic style in 1383, with a tower terminating in a picturesque lantern; the Lieb- frauenkirche is of the 14th century ; the old church of St Maurice, founded about 1070, was rebuilt in 1859-1862. The room in the town-house in which the peace of West- phalia was signed in 1648 contains portraits of the am- bassadors present at the ceremony. On the tower of St Lambert's church (14th century), the upper part of which has recently been pulled down as insecure, were hung three lron cages in which the bodies of John of Leyden and two of his followers were exposed in 1536 (see ANABAPTISTS). The old Stadtkeller contains a collection of early German pamtings. The university of Miinster, founded after the

Seven Years' War and closed at the beginning of this cen- tury, is now represented by an academy with the rank of a university, possessing faculties of philosophy and theology (Roman Catholic). In connexion with it are botanical and zoological gardens, several scientific collections, and a library. The private houses of Minster afford an ad- mirable picture of German domestic architecture in the 16th, 17th, and 18th centuries,—Gothic, Renaissance, and Rococo. |

Miinster is the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop, of the headquarters of an army corps, and of the administrative and judicial authorities of Westphalia. The Westphalian Society of Antiquaries and several other learned bodies also have their headquarters here. The population in 1880 was 40,434, including about 6000 Protestants, The rela- tive industrial importance of Miinster is no longer main- tained, but manufactures of cotton, linen, and woollens, candles, leather, &c., are still carried on, and it is the centre of a tolerably brisk trade in these products, as well as in cattle, Westphalian hams, grain, and books.

History.—The first historical mention of Miinster takes us back to the close of the 8th century, when Charlemagne fixed ‘‘ Mime- gardevoord ” as the residence of the newly-appointed bishop of the Saxons. The growth of the settlement round the ‘‘ Monasterium ” was slow, owing to its distance from

any navigable river or im- portant highway, and it was not till 1180 that it received a municipal charter. The name Miinster had supplanted the original one about a century earlier. During the 13th century Miinster was one of the most important members of the Hanseatic League. At the time of the Rcformation the citizens were inclined to adopt Protestantism, but the excesses of the ANABAPTISTS (q.¥.) led to the armed intervention of the bishop and the forcible suppres- sion of all divergence from the ancient faith. The Thirty Years' War, during which Miinster suffered most from the Protestant armies, – was terminated by the peace of Westphalia or Miinster, signed in the town-hall here on 24th October 1648. The authority of the bishops, who seldom resided at Miinster, was usually somewhat limited, but in 1661 Bishop Bernhard von Galen took the town by force, built a citadel, and deprived the citizens of most of their privileges. In the Seven Years' War Miinster was occupied both by the French and by the allied troops. Towards the close of last century Miinster was recognized as one of the intellectual centres of Germany, being the home of Hemsterhuis, Princess Gallitzin, F. von Stolberg, Fiirstenberg, and other notabilities.

The bishopric of Miinster, which possessed the freedom of the empire, embraced an area of 2500 square miles and contained about 350,000 inhabitants. In the 17th century Bishop Galen was of such importance—he supported an army of 20,000 men—that his alliance was sought by the English in 1665 in the war against Holland. The bishopric was secularized and annexed to Prussia in 1803.

Comp. Geisberg, Merkwiirdigkeiten der Stadt Minster (6th ed., 1877); Erhard, Geschichte Munsters (1837).

MUNSTER, Serpastran (1489-1552), Hebraist, geo- grapher, and mathematician, was born at Ingelheim in the Palatinate in 1489. After studying at Heidelberg and Tiibingen, he entered the Franciscan order, but abandoned it for Lutheranism about 1529. Shortly afterwards he was appointed court preacher at Heidelberg, where also he lectured in Hebrew and Old Testament exegesis, From 1536 he taught at Basel, where he died of the plague on 23d May 1552. He was described on his tombstone as the Ezra and the Strabo of the Germans.

Minster, a disciple of Elias Levita, was the first German to edit the Hebrew Bible (2 vols. fol., Basel, 1534-1535) ; this edition was accompanied by a new Latin translation and a large number of annotations. He published more than one Hebrew grammar, and was the first to prepare a Grammatica Chaldaica (Basel, 1527). His lexicographical labours included a Dictionariwm Chaldaicwm (1527) and a Dictionarium Trilingue (Latin, Greek, and Hebrew, 1530). One of Miinster's best-known works was a geography book (Cosmo- graphia Universalis, fol., Basel, 1544), which was often reprinted in Latin and frequently translated into German. Among his other writings (for which see the Biogr. Générale) are a treatise on dialling (Horologiographia, Basel, 1531), one on the planetary motions (Organum Uranicum, 1536), and a volume entitled Rudimenta Mathematica (Basel, 1551). The notes on the Old Testament are incorporated in the Critict Sacri.

MUNTJAK, one of the native names, now generally

adopted in European languages, for a small group of Deer, the members of which are indigenous to the southern and eastern parts of Asia and the adjacent islands, and which are separated by very marked characters from all their allies. They are also called " Kijang" or " Kidjang," and constitute the genus Cervulus of Blainville and most zoolo- gists, Stylocerus of Hamilton Smith, and Prox of Ogilby. They are all of small size compared with the majority of Deer, and have long bodies and rather short limbs and neck. The antlers, which as in most Deer are present in the male only, are small and simple, and the main stem or beam after giving off a very short brow-antler inclines back- wards and upwards, is unbranched and pointed, and when fully developed curves inwards and somewhat downwards at the tip. These small antlers are supported upon pedicles or permanent processes of the frontal bones, longer than in any other Deer, and the front edges of which are continued downwards as strong ridges passing along the

sides of the face above the orbits, and serving to protect the large frontal cutaneous glands which lie on their inner sides. The lacrymal pit of the skull, in which is lodged the large anteorbital gland or crumen, is of great

depth and extent. The upper canine teeth of the males are strongly developed and sharp, curving downwards, back- wards, and outwards, projecting visibly outside the mouth as tusks, and loosely implanted in their sockets. In the females they are very much smaller. The limbs exhibit several structural peculiarities not found in other Deer. The lateral digits of both fore and hind feet are very little developed, the hoofs alone being present and their bony supports (found in all other Deer) wanting. In the tarsus the navicular, cuboid, and ectocuneiform bones are united.

The Muntjaks are solitary animals, very rarely even two being seen together. They are fond of hilly ground covered with forests, in the dense thickets of which they pass most of their time, only coming to the skirts of the woods at morning and evening to graze. They carry the head and neck low and the hind-quarters high, their action in running being peculiar and not very elegant, somewhat resembling the pace of a sheep, hence in southern India they bear the popular but erroneous name of “jungle sheep.” Though with no power of sustained speed or ex- tensive leap, they are remarkable for flexibility of body and facility of creeping through tangled underwood. Another popular name with Indian sportsmen is “ barking deer,” which is given on account of their alarm-cry, a kind of short shrill bark, like that of a fox but louder, which

may often be heard in the jungles they frequent both by day and by night. When attacked by dogs the males use their sharp canine teeth with great vigour, inflicting upon their opponents deep and even dangerous wounds.

There is some difference of opinion among zoologists as to the number of species of the genus Cervulus. Sir Victor Brooke, who investigated this question in 1878 (see Proceedings of the Zoological Society of London for that year, p. 898), came to the conclusion that there are certainly three which are quite well marked.

1. C. muntjae, found in British India, Burmah, the Malay Pen- insula, Sumatra, Java, Hainan, Banca, and Borneo. The general colour is a bright yellowish red, darker in the upper parts of the back ; the fore-legs from the shoulder downwards and the lower part of the hind legs, dark bluish brown

; anterior parts of the face from the muzzle to between the eyes, brown—a blackish line running up the inside of each frontal pedestal; chin, throat, inside of hind legs, and under surface of tail, white. The female has a black bristly tuft of hair on the spot from which the pedicles of the antlers of the male grow. The average length of the male, according to Jerdon, is 34 feet, tail 7 inches, height 26 to 28 inches. The female is a little smaller. The specimens from Java, Sumatra, and Borneo are of larger size than those from the mainland, and may possibly be of distinct species or race.

2. C. laerymans of Milne-Edwards, or Sclater's Muntjak of Swin- hoe, from Moupin, and near Hangchow, China.

3. C. reevesi, a very small species from southern China.

Although the limbs of the modern genus Cervulus have attained a considerable degree of specialization, the characters of the cranium, antlers, and teeth are primitive, and almost exactly reproduce those of an extinct deer of the middle Miocene period, the remains of which are found abundantly at Sansan in the south of France and Steinheim in Wirtemberg, which has been described under the names of Dierocerus elegans and Cervus fureatus (see Die Fauna von Steinheim, by Oscar Fraas, Stuttgart, 1870).

MUNZER, TuomAs(1490-1525),was born of poor parents at Stolberg in the Harz in 1490, was educated at Halle and Leipsic, where he graduated in 1515, was a teacher in the Martini gymnasium in Brunswick in 1517, and was appointed in the beginning of 1520 preacher in the church of St Mary at Zwickau. There he became the opponent of the friars on the one hand and of the humanist reformers on the other, while his eloquence, combined with his Christian socialism, gave him great power over the people. The weavers in Zwickau, who formed the most important trade in the town, were greatly influenced by Nicolas Storch, a man whose views were not unlike those of Miinzer, and who had been in close communication with those various communities in Bohemia who represented the Taborites, the Waldenses, and the Bohemian Brethren. Along with Storch, Miinzer formed a society governed by twelve apostles and seventy-two disciples, and in secret conventicles proclaimed the revelations of the Holy Spirit which he and some of his disciples claimed to possess. When the society became known

conflicts arose with the civil and ecclesi- astical authorities, but Miinzer and Storch seem to have maintained their position. In September 1521 Miinzer and several of his disciples began making preaching tours. Storch went to Wittenberg (see LuTHER), while Miinzer went through Bohemia, then by Silesia to Brandenburg and Saxony. He and his followers were fiercely opposed by Luther, who often asked the princes of the lands in which they appeared to banish them from their territories. In 1524 Miinzer was in Thuringia and in south Germany. Wherever he went his Christian socialism was welcomed by the oppressed peasantry, who were encouraged to rise in the insurrection (Peasants' War) which ended so disastrously: for them at Miihlhausen, 1525. After the battle Miinzer was taken prisoner and executed.

Miinzer was a successor in the 16th century of those enthusiastic sectaries the medieval disciples of St Francis of Assisi, who combined intense sympathy with the lot of the poor with strange semi-pantheist notions and ideas of a visible theocracy.

See Seidemann, Thomas Miinzer, eine Biographie, Dresden, 1842 ;

Ranke, Deutsche Geschichte im Zeitalter der Reformation, ii. ; Jorg, Deutschland in der Revolutionsperiode von 1522-26.

from the Himalayas.

MUN—MUR

MUNZINGER, WERNER (1832-1875), African traveller and linguist, was born at Olten in Switzerland, 4th April 1832. After studying at Bern, Munich, and Paris, he went to Egypt in 1852 and spent a year in Cairo studying the language. Entering a French mercantile house, he went as leader of a trading expedition to various parts of the Red Sea, fixing his quarters at Massowah in 1854 to 1855, where he acted as French consul. In 1855 he removed to Keren, the chief town of the Bogos, in the north of Abyssinia, which country he explored in all directions during the next six years. In 1861 he joined the expedi- tion under Heuglin to Central Africa, but separated from it in November in northern Abyssinia, proceeding along the Gash and Atbara to Khartim, and thence in 1862 to Kordofan, failing,

however, in his attempt to reach Darfur and Wadai, having meantime succeeded Heuglin as leader of the German African expedition. After a short stay in Europe in 1863, Munzinger returned to the north and north-east borderlands of Abyssinia, and in 1865 was appointed British consul at Massowah, rendering valuable aid to the English Abyssinian expedition in 1867, among other things exploring the almost unknown Afar country. In acknowledgment of his services he received the honour of C.B. In 1868 he was appointed French consul, and in 1871 by the khedive governor of Massowah with the title of “bey.” In 1870, with Captain Miles, Munzinger visited the interior of southern Arabia. As governor of Massowah he annexed to Egypt a part of northern Abyssinia, and in 1872 was made pasha and governor- general of the eastern Sudan. In an expedition from Tajurra Bay to the kingdom of Shoa, Munzinger was killed, along with his wife and many of his companions, in an attack by a body of Gallas on 14th November 1875, in the neighbourhood of Lake Assal.

Munzinger’s contributions to our knowledge of the country, people, and languages of north-eastern Africa are of solid value. See Proe. R. G. S., vol. xiii.; Jl. R. G. S., vols. xxxix., xli., and xlvi. (obituary notice) ; Petermann’s Mittheilungen for 1858, 1867, 1872, et sg.; Dietschi and Weber, Werner Munzinger, ein Lebensbild (1875). Munzinger published the following works :— Sitten und Reeht der Bogos (1859) ; Ostafrikanisehe Studien (1864) ; Die deutsehe Expedition in Ostafrika (1865); Vocabulaire de la Langue de Tigré (1865), besides papers in the geographical serials referred to, and a memoir on the northern borders of Abyssinia in the Zeitschrift fiir allgemeine Erdkunde, new series, iti.

MURADABAD, or Morapazan, a district in the lieu- tenant-governorship of the North-Western Provinces of India, lying between 28° 13’ and 29° 15’ N. lat. and 78° 7 and 79° 2’ E. long., is bounded on the N. by Bijnaur and the Tarai, on the E. by Rampur state, on the 8. by Budaun, and on the W. by the Ganges. The area is 2284 square miles. It lies within the great Gangetic plain, and is demarcated into three subdivisions by the rivers Ram- gangi and Sét. The eastern tract consists of a submontane country, with an elevation slightly greater than the plain below, and is traversed by numerous streams descending The central portion consists of a level central plain descending at each end into the valleys of the Ramganga and Sét. The

western section has a gentle slope towards the Ganges, with a rapid dip into the low- lands a few miles from the bank of the great river. The district is well wooded throughout, and mango groves abound in the neighbourhood of the flourishing villages which cluster thickly over its whole surface. Cultivation has spread over almost every part, patches of jungle rarely occurring, and only a few stray pieces of sandy soil or usar waste being found among the uplands. Shallow lakes (jhéls) are found at intervals, and are in every case utilized for irrigation. The district as a whole consists of a well- tilled and somewhat monotonous alluvial plain, unrelieved

by any striking natural features. The census of 1881 returned the population of the district, ex-

/

33

clusive of non- Asiatics, at 1,155,173 (males 610,291, females 544,882), Hindus numbering 767,844, Mohammedans 384,713, and native Christians 1877. Muradabad contains five municipal towns, viz., Muradabad, 67,387; Amroha, 36,145; Sambhal, 35,196; Chan- dausi, 27,521 ; Dhanaura, 5204. The total area under cultivation in 1881-82 amounted to 1291 square miles, the staple crops being millets, wheat, pulses, and sugar-cane. As a whole the people are well off and live better than the peasantry in other districts. The labourers too have prospered, wages having risen considerably of late years. About two-sevenths of the cultivators possess hereditary rights, the remainder hold as tenants-at-will. Floods upon the Ganges and Ramganga cause much damage to the crops, and the district is liable to famine caused by drought. The last famine in 1868-69 was due to the failure of the raintall, but with the aid of Govern- ment relicf the difficulty was tided over without serious losses. The chief exports are grain and sugar-cane. The main line of the Oudh and Rohilkhand railway crosses the district ; there are also 654 miles of good road. The total revenue of Muradabad in 1881-82 amounted to 1,775,303 rupees, of which 1,399,450 were derived from the land-tax. Education was carried on in 1881 by means of 181 schools, with an aggregate of 5496 pupils. The climate is gen- erally healthy, except in the submontane tract bordering on the Tarai and in the lowlands of the Ganges and Sét. The average annual rainfall in the ten years ending 1870 was 37°6

inches. The annual mean temperature is 74°°5 Fahr., the lowest monthly mean being 56° in January, and the highest 86° in June.

For the early history of Muradabad sce BARELI. It passed into the possession of the British in 1801, and in 1857 joined in the general rebellion of that year. Order was restored early in May 1858.

MurApDABAD, town and headquarters of the above dis- trict, is situated on the right bank of the Ramganga river (28° 49’ N. lat., 78° 49’ E. long.), with a population in 1881 of 67,387, of whom 34,584 were males, and 32,803 females. It was founded in 1625 by Rustam Khan, who built the fort which overhangs the river bank. The town forms a large centre of trade in country produce. The engraved metal-ware of Muradabad has lately attracted much attention, the total value of the annual output being about 34 lakhs of rupees.

MURAENA is the name of an eel common in the Mediterranean, and highly esteemed by the ancient Romans ; it was afterwards applied to the whole genus of fishes to which the Mediterranean species belongs, and which is abundantly represented in tropical and sub- tropical seas, especially in rocky parts or on coral reefs. Some ninety species are known. In the majority a long

aes

Murena pieta, from the Indo-Pacific.

fin runs from the head along the back, round the tail to the vent, but all are destitute of pectoral and ventral fins. The skin is scaleless and perfectly smooth, in many species ornamented with a pretty pattern of very varied and bright colours, so that these fishes are frequently mistaken for snakes. The mouth is wide, the jaws strong and armed with formidable, generally sharply-pointed, teeth, which enable the Murena not only to seize its prey (which chiefly con- sists of other fishes) but also to inflict serious, and even sometimes dangerous, wounds on its enemies. It readily attacks persons who approach its places of concealment in shallow water, and is therefore justly feared by fishermen.

Plate I.

Some of the tropical Murenas exceed a length of 10 feet, but most of the species, among them the Mediter- ranean species, attain to only half that length. The latter, the “Morena” of the Italians and the Murexna helena of ichthyologists, was considered by the ancient Romans to be one of the greatest delicacies, and was kept in large

MURAL DE

HERE is scarcely one of the numerous branches of

decorative art which has not at some time or other

been applied to the ornamenting of wall-surfaces. Tt will

be convenient to classify the various methods under dif- ferent heads.

1. Reliefs sculptured in Marble or Stone.—This is the oldest method of wall-decoration, of which numerous ex- amples still exist. The tombs and temples of Egypt are very rich in this kind of mural ornament of various dates, extending over the enormous period of nearly 5000 years. These sculptures are, as a rule, carved in very low relief ; in many cases they are “counter-sunk,” that is, the most projecting parts of the figures do not extend beyond the

flat surface of the ground. Some unfinished reliefs dis-

covered in the rock-cut tombs of Thebes show the manner in which the sculptor set to work. The plain surface of the stone was marked out by red lines into a number of squares of equal size. The use of this was probably twofold: first, as a guide in enlarging the design from a small drawing, a method still commonly practised ; second, to help the artist to draw his figures with just proportions, following the very strict canons which were laid down by the Egyptians. No excessive realism or indi- viduality of style arising from a careful study of the life- model was permitted.2 When the

surface had been covered with these squares, the artist drew with a brush dipped in red the outlines of his relief, and then cut round them with his chisel.

When the relief was finished, it was, as a rule, entirely painted over with much minuteness and great variety of colours. More rarely the ground was left the natural tint of the stone or marble, and only the figures and hiero- glyphs painted. In the case of sculpture in hard basalt or granite the painting appears often to have been omitted altogether. The utter absence of perspective effects and the severe self-restraint of the sculptors in the matter of composition show a keen sense of artistic fitness in this kind of decoration, That the stern rigidity of these sculptured pictures did not in any way arise from want of skill or observation of nature on the part of the artists is at once apparent when we examine their representations of birds and animals; with the most unerring skill and precision the special characteristics of each creature and species were caught by the ancient Egyptian and repro- duced in stone or colour, not literally, but in a half-symbolic way, suggesting exactly those peculiarities of form, plum- age, or movement which are the essence and “ differentia ” of each, all other ideas bearing less directly on the point being carefully eliminated.

The subjects of these great mural sculptures are endless

life here or beyond the grave is reproduced with the closest attention to detail. The tomb of Tih at Sakkarah (about 4500 B.c.) has some of the finest and earliest specimens of these mural sculptures, especially rich in illustrations of the every-day domestic life and occupations of the Egyptians. The later tombs, as a rule, have sculptures

1 See also Fresco, Mosaic, KAsuf, and Tapestry.

? During the earliest times—more than 4000 years before our era |

there appear to have been exceptions to this rule.

; j ; ; human figures. in their variety ; almost every possible incident in man's | –

ponds and aquaria, It is not confined to the coasts of southern Europe, but is spread over the Indian Ocean, and is not uncommon on the coasts of Australia. Its body is generally of a rich brown, beautifully marked with large yellowish spots, each of which contains smaller brown spots.

depicting the religious ritual and belief of the people, and the temples combine these hieratic subjects with the history of the reigns and victories of the Egyptian kings.

The above remarks as to style and manner of execution may be applied also to the wall-sculptures from the royal palaces of Nineveh and Babylon, the finest of which are shown by inscriptions to date from the time of Sennacherib to that of Sardanapalus (from 705 to 625 n.c.). These are carved in very low relief with almost gem-like delicacy of detail on enormous slabs of white marble. The sacred sub- jects, generally representing the king worshipping one of the numerous Assyrian gods, are mostly large, often colossal in scale. The other subjects, illustrating the life and amuse-

ments of the king, his prowess in war or hunting, or long processions of prisoners and tribute-bearers coming to do him homage, are generally smaller and in some cases very minute in scale (fig. 1).

The arrangement of these

smu AT arm Tul in eeeaevi T . H

Fic. 1.—Assyrian Relief, on a marble Wall-slab from the Palace of Sardanapalus at Nineveh.

MEHITT hae

reliefs in long horizontal bands, and their reserved con- ventional treatment are somewhat similar to those of ancient Egypt, but they show a closer attention to anatomical truth and a greater love for strong dramatic effect than any of the Egyptian reliefs. As in the art of Egypt, birds and animals are treated with far greater realism than The plastic art of no period or country has ever surpassed in skill and life-like truth the Assyrian

reliefs of horses, mules, hounds, goats, lions, and many

other animals. A relief in the British Museum, represent- ing a lioness wounded by an arrow in her spine and dragging helplessly her paralysed hind legs, affords an example of wonderful truth and pathos. Very remarkable

technical skill is shown in all these sculptures by the way

in which the sculptors have obtained the utmost amount of effect with the smallest possible amount of relief (see

| BaBYLoNtIA, vol. iii. p. 190), in this respect calling strongly

meet Pe CORATION

to mind a similar peculiarity in the work of the Florentine Donatello.

The palace at Mashita on the hajj road in Moab, built by the Sasanian Chosroes IT. (614-627 a.p.), is ornamented on the exterior with very beautiful surface sculpture in stone. The designs of this are of peculiar interest as forming an evident link between Assyrian and Byzantine art, and they are not remotely connected with the decora- tion on Moslem buildings of comparatively modern date.!

Especially in Italy during the Middle Ages a similar treatment of marble in low relief was frequently used for wall-decoration. The most notable example is the beauti- ful series of reliefs on the west front of Orvieto cathedral, the work of Giovanni Pisano and his pupils in the early part of the 14th century. These are small reliefs, illustra- tive of the Oldand New Testaments, of most graceful design and skilful execution. A growth of branching foliage serves to unite and frame the tiers of subjects.

Of a widely different class, but of considerable import- ance in the history of mural decoration, are the very beautiful reliefs, sculptured in stone and marble, with which Moslem buildings in many parts of the world are ornamented. These are mostly geometrical patterns of great intricacy and beauty, which cover large surfaces, fre- quently broken up into panels by bands of more flowing ornament or Arabic inscriptions. The mosques of Cairo, India, and Persia, and the domestic Moslem buildings of Spain are extremely rich in this magnificent method of decoration. In western Europe, especially during the 15th century, stone panelled-work with rich tracery formed a large part of the scheme of decoration in all the more splendid buildings. Akin to this, though without actual relief, is the very sumptuous stone tracery,—inlaid flush into rough flint walls,—which was a mode of ornament largely used for enriching the exteriors of churches in the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk. It is almost peculiar to that district, and is an admirable example of the skill and taste with which the medizval builders adapted their method of ornamentation to the materials which came naturally to hand.?

2. Marble Veneer.—Another widely-used method of mural decoration has been the application of thin marble linings to wall-surfaces, the decorative effect being pro- duced by the natural beauty of the marble itself and not by sculptured reliefs. One of the oldest buildings in the world, the so-called

“‘Temple of the Sphinx” among the Gizeh pyramids, is built of great blocks of granite, the inside of the rooms being lined with slabs of beautiful semi-transparent African alabaster about 3 inches thick. In the Ist century very thin veneers of richly-coloured marbles were largely used by the Romans to decorate brick and stone walls. Pliny (ZF. W., xxxvi. 6) speaks of this practice as being a new and degenerate invention in his time. Many examples exist at Pompeii and in other Roman buildings. Numerous Byzantine churches, such as St Saviour’s at Coustantinople, and St George’s, Thes- salonica, have the lower part of the internal walls richly

1 Among the Mashita carvings occurs that oldest and most widely spread of all forms of Aryan ornament—the sacred tree between two animals, The sculptured slab over the ‘‘lion-gate” at Mycene has the other common variety of this motive—the fire-altar between the beasts. These designs, occasionally varied by figures of human wor- shippers instead of the beasts, survived in a most extraordinary way long after their meaning had been forgotten ; even down to the present day in some form or other they frequently appear on carpets and other textiles of Oriental manufacture.

? Wilkinson, Anc. Egypt. (1847); Descr. de V Egypte (Paris, 1809, et sq.); Layard, Monuments of Nineveh (1849-53); Botta, Mon. de Ninive (1847-50) ; Texier, L’Arménie, la Perse, &c. (1840-52) ; Gruner, Die Bas-reliefs . . . zu Orvieto (1858); Champollion, Mon. de V Egypte (1835-45) ; Mariette, Descr. de Denderah (1878-75) ; Ros- sellino, Monwmenti ad’ Egitto, 1826.

ornamented in this way. It was commonly used to form a dado, the upper part of the building being covered with mosaic. The cathedral of Monreale and other Siculo- Norman buildings owe a great deal of their splendour to these linings of richly-variegated marbles. In most cases the main surface is of light-coloured marble or alabaster, inlaid bands of darker tint or coloured mosaic being used to divide the surface into panels. The peculiar Italian-Gothic of northern and central Italy during the 14th and 15th centuries, and at Venice some centuries earlier, relied greatly for its effects on this treatment of marble. St Mark’s at Venice and the cathedral of Florence are mag- nificent examples of this work used externally. It is in every case a mere skin, and is in no way connected with the stability of the structure.

Both inside and out most of the richest examples of Moslem architecture owe much to this method of decoration ; the mosques and palaces of India and Persia are in many cases completely lined with the most lustrous and brilliant sorts of marble, of con- trasting tints arranged and fitted together with consummate skill and knowledge of harmony.

3. Wall-Linings of Glazed Bricks or Tiles.—This is a very important class of decoration, and from its almost imperishable nature, its richness of colour, and its brilliance of surface is capable of producing a splendour of effect that can only be rivalled by glass mosaics. In the less important form —that of bricks modelled or stamped in relief with figures and inscriptions, and then coated with a brilliant colour in siliceous enamel—it was largely used by the ancient Egyptians and Assyrians as well as by the later Sasanians of Persia. In the 11th and 12th centuries the Moslems of Persia brought this art to great perfection, and used it on a large scale, chiefly, though not invariably, for internal walls. The main surfaces were covered by thick earthenware tiles, overlaid with a white enamel. These were not rectangular, but of various shapes, mostly some form of a star, arranged so as to fit closely together. Very delicate and minute patterns were then painted on the tiles, after the first firing, in a copper-like colour with strong metallic lustre, produced by the deoxidization of a metallic salt in the process of the second firing. Bands and friezes with Arabic inscriptions, modelled boldly in high relief, were used to break up the monotony of the surface. In these, as a rule, the projecting letters were painted blue, and the flat ground enriched with very minute patterns in the lustre-colour. This combination of bold relief and delicate painting produces great vigour and richness of effect, equally telling whether viewed in the mass or closely examined tile by tile. In the 15th century lustre-colours, though still largely employed for plates, vases, and other vessels, especially in Spain, were but little used for tiles; and another class of ware, rich in the variety and brilliance of its colours, was extensively used by Moslem builders all over the Mohammedan world. The most sumptuous sorts of tiles used for wall coverings are those of the so-called “‘ Rhodian” and Damascus wares, the work of Persian potters at many places. Those made at Rhodes are coarsely executed in comparison with the produce of the older potteries at Ispahan and Damascus (see Pottery). These are rectangular tiles of earthenware, covered with a white “slip” and painted in the most brilliant colours with

slightly conventionalized representa- tions of various flowers, especially the rose, the hyacinth, and the carnation. The red used isa very rich harmonious colour, applied in considerable body, so as to stand out in slight relief. Another class of design is more geometrical, forming regular repeats; but the most beautiful composi- tions are those in which the natural growth of trees and flowers is imitated, the branches and blossoms spreading freely over a large surface covered by hundreds of tiles

without any repetition. One of the finest examples is the “Mecca wall” in the mosque of Ibrahim Agha, Cairo; and other Egyptian mosques are adorned in the same magnifi- cent way (fig. 2). Another variety, the special production

Cairo. 10 inches square.

of Damascus, has the design almost entirely executed in blue. It was about the year 1600 a.p., in the reign of Shah Abbas I., that this class of pottery was brought to greatest perfection, and it is in Persia that the most magni- ficent examples of its use are to be found. Nothing can surpass the splendour of effect produced by these tile- coverings, varieties of which, dating from the 12th to the 17th centuries, were largely used in all the chief buildings of Persia. The most remarkable examples for beauty of design and extent of surface covered by these tiles are the mosque at Tabriz, built by Ali Khoja in the 12th century, the ruined tomb of Sultan Khodabend (1303-1316 a.p.) at Sultanieh, the palace of Shah Abbas I. and the tomb of Abbas II. (0b. 1666 a.p.) at Ispahan, all of which buildings are covered almost entirely inside and out with this magnificent sort of decoration.

Another important class of wall-tiles are those manu- factured by the Spanish Moors, called “azulejos,” especially during the 14th century. These are in a very different style, being designed to suggest or imitate mosaic. They have intricate interlacing geometrical patterns marked out by lines in slight relief; brilliant enamel colours were then burned into the tile, the projecting lines forming boundaries for the pigments. A very rich effect is pro- duced by this combination of relief and colour. They are mainly used for dados about 4 feet high, often surmounted by a band of tiles with

painted inscriptions. The Alham- bra and Generalife palaces at Granada, begun in the 13th century, but mainly built and decorated by Yusuf I. and Mohammed V. (1333-1391 a.p.), andthe Alcazar at Seville have the most beautiful examples of these “azulejos.” The latter building chiefly owes its decorations to Pedro the Cruel (1364 a.p.), who employed Moorish workmen for its tile-coverings and other ornaments. Many other buildings in southern Spain are enriched in the same way, some as late as the 16th century.

Almost peculiar to Spain are a variety of wall-tile the work of Italians in the 16th and 17th centuries. These are effective, though rather coarsely painted, and have a rich yellow as the predominant colour. The Casa de

Pilatos and Isabel’s chapel in the Alcazar palace, both at Seville, have the best specimens of these, dating about the year 1500. In other Western countries tiles have been used more for pavements than for wall-decoration.1

4, Wall-Coverings of Hard Stucco, frequently enriched with Reliefs.—The Greeks and Romans possessed the secret of making a very beautiful hard kind of stucco, creamy in colour, and capable of receiving a polish like that of marble ; it would stand exposure to the weather. Those of the early Greek temples which were built, not of marble, but of stone, such as the Doric temples at Avgina, Phiga- leia, Peestum, and Agrigentum, were all entirely coated inside and out with this beautiful material—itself pleasant both in texture and hue, and an admirable surface for the further polychromatic decoration with which all Greek buildings seem to have been ornamented. Another highly artistic use of stucco among the Greeks and Romans for the interiors of buildings consisted in covering the walls and vaults with a smooth coat, on which while still wet the outlines of figures, groups, and other ornaments were sketched with a point; more stucco was then applied in lumps and rapidly modelled into delicate reliefs before it had time to set. Some tombs in Magna Grecia of the 4th century B.c. are decorated in this way with figures of nymphs, cupids, animals, and wreaths, all of which are models of grace and elegance, both in form and action, and extremely

remarkable for the dexterous way in which a few rapid touches of the modelling tool or thumb have

\

\

nm |

p

.<

Fia. 3.—Modelled Stucco Wall-Relief, from a Tomb in Magna Grecia.

About half full-size.

produced a work of the highest artistic beauty and spirit (fig. 3). Roman specimens of this sort of decoration are very common, fine examples have been found in the baths of Titus and numerous tombs near Rome, as well

1 See Layard, Nineveh ; Texier, L' Arménie, &c.; Prisse d'Avennes and Bourgoin, L' Art Arabe (1869-77); Hessemer, Arabische Bau- Verzierungen (1853); Owen Jones, Alhambra (1842); Murphy, Arabian Antiquities of Spain (1818) ; Monumentos Arquitectonicos de Espaita (1859-82), article '' Alhambra"; Parvillée, Architect. et décor. Turques, xv' Siecle (1874) ; Coste, Mon. mod. de la Perse (1867).

AW bh AL

as in many of the houses of Pompeii. executed with great skill and frequently with good taste, though in some cases, especially at Pompeii, elaborate architectural compositions with awkward attempts at effects of violent perspective, modelled in slight relief on flat wall-surfaces, produce a very unpleasing effect. Other Pompeian examples, where the surface is divided into flat panels, each containing a figure or group, have great merit for their delicate richness of effect, without offending against the canons of wall-decoration, one of the first conditions of which is that no attempt

should be made to disguise the fact of its being a solid wall and a flat surface.

The Moslem architects of the Middle Ages, who excelled in almost all possible methods of mural decoration, made great use of stucco ornament in the most elaborate and magnificent way, both for external and internal walls. The stucco is modelled in high or low relief in great variety of geometrical patterns, of wonderful beauty and richness, alternating with bands of more flowing ornament, or long Arabic inscriptions. Many of their buildings, such as the mosque of Tultin at Cairo (879 a.p.), owe nearly all their beauty to this fine stucco work, the purely architectural shell of the structure being often quite simple and devoid of ornament. These stucco reliefs were, as a rule, further decorated with delicate painting in gold and colours, pro- ducing an effect of indescribable beauty and splendour. The Moorish tower at Segovia in Spain is a good example

wey oe e

of this class of ornament used externally. With the exception of a few bands of brick and the stone quoins at the angles, the whole exterior of the tower is covered with a network of stucco reliefs in simple geometrical patterns. The Alhambra at Granada and the Alcazar at Seville have the richest examples of this work, both in the delicate intricacy of the designs and in the brilliant colours with which they are painted. The lower part of the walls 1s lined with marble or tiles to a height of about 4 feet, and above that in many cases the whole surface is encrusted with these reliefs, the varied surface of which, by pro- ducing’ endless gradations of shadow, takes away any

DECORATION

These are mostly | possible harshness or over-gaudiness from the brilliance of

| were well tanned and cut into rectangular shapes. | were then covered with silver leaf, which was varnished

the gold and colours (fig. 4).}

During the 16th century, and even earlier, stucco wall- reliefs were used with considerable skill and decorative effect in Italy, England, and other Western countries. Per- haps the most graceful examples are the reliefs with which Vasari in the 16th century encrusted pillars and other parts of the court in the Florentine Palazzo Vecchio, built of plain stone by Michelozzi in 1454. These are very beau- tiful reliefs, some of flowing vines and other plants winding spirally round the columns. The English examples of this work are very effectively designed, though coarser in exe- cution. The outside of an old half-timbered house in the market-place at Newark-upon-Trent has high reliefs in stucco of canopied figures, dating from the end of the 15th century. The counties of Essex and Suffolk are very rich in examples of this work used externally ; and many 16th- century houses in England have fine internal stucco de- coration, especially Hardwicke Hall (Derbyshire), one of the rooms of which has the upper part of the wall en- riched with life-sized stucco figures in high relief, forming a deep frieze all round. The best English stucco work of this sort is very remarkable for its freedom and spirit of design, as well as for certain grace of line, which is a sur- vival of the old medizval sense of beauty, then rapidly passing away.

5. Sgraffito.—This is a variety of stucco work used chiefly in Italy from the 16th century downwards, and employed only for exteriors of buildings, especially the palaces of Tuscany and northern Italy. The process is this. The wall is covered with a coat of stucco made black by an admixture of charcoal; over this a second very thin coat of white stucco is laid. When it is all hard the design is ©

| produced by cutting and scratching away the white skin,

so as to show the black under-coat. Thus the drawing appears in black ona white ground. This work is effective at a distance, as it requires a bold style of handling, in which the shadows are indicated by cross-hatched lines more or less near together.2, Flowing arabesques mixed with grotesque figures occur most frequently in sgraffito. It is still largely practised in northern Italy, and has been used with success in the external decoration of the South Kensington Academy of Music.

6. Stamped Leather.—This was a very magnificent and expensive form of wall-hanging, chiefly used during the 16th and 17th centuries. Skins, generally of goats or calves, They

with a transparent yellow lacquer, making the silver look like gold. The skins were then stamped or embossed with patterns in relief, forméd by heavy pressure from metal dies, one in relief and the other sunk. The reliefs were then painted by hand in many colours, generally brilliant in tone. Italy and Spain (especially Cordova) were important seats of this manufacture ; and in the 17th century a large quantity was produced in France. Fig. 5 gives a good example of Italian stamped leather of the 16th century. In England, chiefly at Norwich, this manufacture was carried on in the 17th and 18th centuries, in many cases of very excellent design. In durability and richness of effect stamped leather surpasses most other forms of movable wall-decoration.

7. Painted Cloth.—Another form of wall-hanging, used most largely during the 15th and 16th centuries, and in a less extensive way a good deal earlier, is canvas painted to imitate tapestry. English medizval inventories both

1 Tt is unfortunate that the otherwise valuable work of Owen Jones on the Alhambra gives a very false and unpleasing notion of the colouring of the place.

2 A good description of the process is given by Vasari, Tre Arti del Disegno, cap. Xxvi.

of ecclesiastical and domestic goods frequently contain items such as these: ‘“stayned cloths for hangings,” “ paynted , of q) .

is Ww

1c. 5.—Italian Stamped Leather ; 16th century cloths with stories and batailes,” or “paynted cloths of beyond sea work,” or “of Flaunder’s work.” Many good artists working at Ghent and Bruges during the first half of the 15th century produced very fine work of this class, as well as designs for

real tapestry. Several of the great Italian artists devoted their utmost skill in composition and invention to the painting of these wall-hangings. The most important existing example is the magnificent series of paintings of the triumph of Julius Czesar executed by Andrea Mantegna (1485-1492) for Ludovico Gonzaga, duke of Mantua, and now at Hampton Court. These are usually, but wrongly, called “cartoons,” as if they were designs meant to be executed in tapestry; this is not the case, as the paintings themselves were used as wall-hangings. They are nine in number, and each compartment, 9 feet square, was separated from the next by a pilaster. They form a continuous procession, with life-sized figures of unrivalled grace and beauty, remarkable alike for their com- position, drawing, and delicate colouring,—the latter un- fortunately much disguised by the most coarse and tasteless “restoration.” Like most of these painted wall-hangings, they are executed in tempera, and rather thinly painted, so that the pigment might not crack off through the cloth falling slightly into folds.) Another remarkable series of painted cloth hangings are those at Rheims cathedral, admirable for their noble breadth of design and rich colour- ing.? In some cases actual dyes were used for this sort of work, A MS. of the 15th century® gives receipts for “painted cloth,” showing that sometimes they were dyed in a manner similar to those Indian stuffs which were afterwards printed, and are now called chintzes. These receipts are for real dyes, not for pigments, and among them is the earliest known description of the process called

1 See Crowe and Cavalcaselle, Painting in North Italy, i. p. 404, 1871; and Waagen, Art Treasures, 1854.

2 Leberthais, Toiles peintes de Reims (Paris).

3 Merrifield, Treatises on Painting, 1849.

“setting” the woad or indigo vat, as well as a receipt for removing or “discharging” the colour from a cloth already dyed. Another method employed was a sort of ‘ encaustic ” process ; the cloth was rubbed all over with wax, and then painted in tempera; heat was then applied so that the

colours sank into the melting wax, and were thus firmly fixed upon the cloth.

8. Printed Hangings and Wall-Papers.—The printing of various textiles with dye-colours and mordants is probably one of the most ancient of the arts. Pliny (1. WV., xxxv.) clearly describes a dyeing process employed by the ancient Egyptians, in which the pattern was probably formed by printing from blocks. Various methods have been used for this work — wood blocks in relief, engraved metal plates, stencil plates, and even hand-painting ; frequently two or more of these methods have been employed for the same pattern. The use of printed stuffs is of great antiquity among the Hindus and Chinese, and was cer- tainly practised in western Europe in the 13th century, and perhaps earlier. The South Kensington Museum has 13th-century specimens of block-printed silk made in Sicily, of very beautiful design. Towards the end of the 14th century a great deal of block-printed linen was made in Flanders, and largely imported into England.

Wall-papers did not come into common use in Europe till the 18th century, though they appear to have been used much earlier by the Chinese. A few rare examples exist in England which may be as early as the 16th cen- tury; these are imitations, generally in flock, of the fine old Florentine and Genoese cut velvets, and hence the style of the design in no way shows the date of the wall- paper, the same traditional patterns being reproduced for many years with little or no change. Machinery enabling paper to be made in long strips was not invented till the end of the last century, and up to that time wall-papers were printed on small square pieces of hand-made paper, difficult to hang, disfigured by numerous joints, and com- paratively costly ; on these accounts wall-papers were slow in superseding the older and more magnificent modes of mural decoration, such as wood-panelling, painting, tapestry, stamped leather, and painted cloth. A little work by Jackson of Battersea, printed in London in 1744, throws some light on the use of wall-papers at that time. He gives reduced copies of his designs, mostly taken from Italian pictures or antique sculpture during his residence in Venice. Instead of flowing patterns covering the wall, his designs are all pictures— landscapes, architectural scenes, or statues——treated as panels, with plain paper or painting between. They are all printed in oil, with wooden blocks worked with a rolling press, apparently an invention of his

own. They are all in the worst possible taste, and yet are offered as great improvements on the Chinese papers which he says were then in fashion.

The method of printing wall-papers of the better sort is probably the same now that it has always been. Wooden blocks with the design cut in relief, one for each colour, are applied by hand, after being dipped in an elastic cloth sieve charged with wet tempera pig- ment, great care being taken to lay each block exactly on the right place, so that the various colours may ‘‘register” or fit together. In order to suit the productions of the paper-mills these blocks are made, in England 21 inches wide, and in France 18 inches wide ‘ the length of the block is limited to what the workman can easily lift with one hand,—2 feet being about the limit, as the blocks are necessarily thick, and in many cases made heavier by being inlaid with copper, especially the thin outlines, which, if made of wood, would not stand the wear and tear of printing. In “flock” and gold or silver printing the design is first printed in strong size ; the flock (finely cut wool of the required colour), or metallic powder is then sprinkled by hand all over the paper ; it adheres only to the wet size, and is easily shaken off the ground or unsized part. If the pattern is required to stand out in some relief this process 1s repeated several times, and the whole paper then rolled to com- press the flock. Cheaper sorts of paper are printed by machinery, the design being cut on the surface of wooden rollers, under which

the paper passes. The chief drawback to this process is that all the colours are applied rapidly onc after the other, without allow- ing each to dry separately, as is done in hand printing. A some- what blurred appearance is the usual result.

Though at first wall-papers were a mere makeshift and feeble imitation of rich textiles, yet, with a good feeling for the harmonies of colour and a regard for the technical necessities of the process, very rich and beautiful effects may be produced at a comparatively small cost if hand- printing be adopted. Imitations of stamped leather are now produced with great success, though of inferior dura- bility. Very thick tough paper is used for this, and

treated in the same way as the real skins mentioned above. Fig. 6 is a good English example of 18th-century wall-

aja le 1 os Ny Sj= {4 SP, :

Wo

~

Vv

Water Nese Vs SS 5 ec y DINE UI oN ky 3s SAV LDN * x S ~> “) =\

oO

i ~— }} PL = a lA

Fic. 6.—Early 18th-century Wall-Paper.

22 inches wide.

paper printed on squares of stout hand-made paper 22 inches wide. The design is apparently copied from an Indian chintz.

PAINTING.

This is naturally the most important and the most widely used of all forms of wall-decoration, as well as perhaps the earliest.

Egyptian Paintings—Egypt is the chief storehouse of ancient specimens of this, as of almost all the arts. Owing to the intimate connexion between the sculpture and paint: ing of early times, the remarks above both as to subjects and treatment under the head of Egyptian wall-sculpture will to a great extent apply also to the paintings. It is a very important fact, and one which testifies clearly to the enormous antiquity of Egyptian civilization, that the earliest paintings, dating more than 4000 years before our era, are also the cleverest both in drawing and execution. In later times the influence of Egyptian art, especially in painting, was very important among even very distant

nations. In the 6th century B.c. Egyptian colonists, in- troduced by Cambyses into Persepolis, largely influenced the painting and sculpture of the great Persian empire and throughout the valley of the Euphrates. In a lesser degree the art of Babylon and-Nineveh had felt consider- able Egyptian influence several centuries earlier. The same influence affected the early art of the Greeks and the Etrurians, and it was not till the middle of the 5th century B.c. that the further development and perfecting of art in Greece obliterated the old traces of Egyptian mannerism. After the death of Alexander the Great, when Egypt came into the possession of the Lagide (320 B.C.), the tide of influence flowed the other way, and Greek art modified though it did not seriously alter the charac- teristics of Egyptian painting and sculpture, which still retained much of their early formalism and severity. And yet the increased sense of beauty, especially in the human face, derived from the Greeks was counterbalanced by loss of vigour and force; art under the Ptolemies ceased to have a real life and became a mere dull copyism of earlier traditions,

The general scheme of mural painting in the buildings of ancient Egypt was very complete and magnificent. Columns, mouldings, and other architectural features were enriched with patterns in brilliant colours; the flat wall- spaces were covered with figure-subjects, generally in horizontal bands, and the ceilings were richly ornamented with sacred symbols, such as the vulture, or painted blue and studded with gold stars to symbolize the sky. The wall-paintings are executed in tempera on a thin skin of fine lime, laid over the brick, stone, or marble to form a smooth and slightly absorbent coat to receive the pigments, which were most brilliant in tone and of great variety of tint. Not employing fresco, the Egyptian artists were not restricted to “earth colours,” but occasionally used purples, pinks, and greens which would have been destroyed by fresh lime. The blue used is a very beautiful colour,

and is generally laid on in considerable body—it is fre- quently a “‘smalt” or deep-blue glass, coloured by copper oxide, finely powdered. Red and yellow ochre, carbon- black, and powdered chalk-white are most largely used. Though in the paintings of animals and birds considerable realism is often seen (fig. 7), yet for human figures certain

Fic. 7.—Egyptian Wall-Painting of the Ancient Empire, in the Bulak Museum, ‘Taken from Loftie’s Ride in Egypt.

conventional colours are employed, ¢.g., white for females’ flesh, red for the males, or black to indicate people of negro race. Heads are painted in profile, and little or no shading is used. Considerable knowledge of harmony is shown in the arrangement of the colours; and otherwise harsh combinations of tints are skilfully softened and brought into keeping by thin separating lines of white or yellow. Though at first sight the general colouring, if seen in a museum, may appear crude and gaudy, yet it should be remembered that the internal paintings were much softened by the very dim light that was sparingly

admitted into Egyptian buildings, and those outside were |

subdued by contrast with the brilliant blue sky and glowing sunshine under which they were always seen.!

Etruscan Painting. —The rock-cut sepulchres of the Etrurians (see Erruria, vol. viii. p. 645) supply the only existing specimens of their mural painting ; and, un- like the tombs of Egypt, only a small proportion appear to have been decorated in this way. The actual dates of these paintings are very uncertain, but they range possibly from about the 8th century s.c. down to almost the Christian era. The tombs which possess these paintings are mostly square-shaped rooms, with slightly-arched or gabled roofs, excavated in soft sandstone or tufa hillsides. The earlier ones show distinct Egyptian influence alike in drawing and in composition: they are very broadly designed with flat unshaded tints, the faces in profile, except the eyes, which are drawn as if seen in front. Colours, as in Egypt, are used conventionally—male flesh red, white or pale yellow for the females, black for demons. In one respect these paintings differ from those of the Egyptians ; very few colours are used—red, brown, and yellow ochres, carbon-black, lime or chalk-white, and occasionally blue are the only pigments. The rock-walls are prepared by being covered with a thin skin of lime stucco, and hme or chalk is mixed in small quantities with all the colours ; hence the restriction to “earth pigments,” made doubly necessary

by the constant dampness of these sub- terranean chambers. The process employed was in fact a kind of fresco, though the stucco ground was not applied in small patches only sufficient for the day's work; the dampness of the rock was enough to keep the stucco skin moist, and so allow the necessary infiltration of colour from the surface. Many of these paintings when first dis- covered were quite fresh in tint and uninjured by time, but they are soon dulled by exposure to light. In the course of centuries great changes of style naturally took place ; the early Egyptian influence, probably brought to Etruria through the Phoenician traders, was succeeded by an even more strongly-marked Greek influence—at first archaic and stiff, then developing into great beauty of drawing, and finally yielding to the Roman spirit, as the degradation of Greek art advanced under their powerful but inartistic Roman conquerors.

- Throughout this succession of styles—Egyptian, Greek, and Greco-Roman—there runs a distinct undercurrent of individuality due to the Etruscans themselves. This appears not only in the drawing but also in the choice of subjects. In addition to pictures of banquets with musicians and dancers, hunting and racing scenes, the workshops of different craftsmen and other domestic sub- jects, all thoroughly Hellenic in sentiment, other paintings occur which are very un-Greek in feeling. These repre- sent the judgment and punishment of souls in a future life. Mantus, Charun, and other infernal deities of the Rasena, hideous in aspect and armed with hammers, or furies, depicted as black bearded demons winged and brandishing live snakes, terrify or torture shrinking human souls. Others, and not the earliest in date, represent human sacrifices, such as those at the tomb of Patroclus— a class of subjects which, though Homeric, appears but rarely to have been selected by Greek painters. The con- stant import into Etruria of large quantities of fine Greek painted vases appears to have largely contributed to keep up the supremacy of Hellenic influence during many cen-

1 See Champollion, Panthéon Egyptien (1825); De Joannis, Pein- tures murales . . . des Kgyptiens; Biechy,, La Peinture chez les Egyptiens (1868); Lenormant,

turies, and by their artistic superiority to have prevented the development of a more original and native school of art. Though we now know Etruscan painting only from the tombs, yet Pliny mentions (//. W., xxxv. 3) that fine wall-paintings existed in his time, with colours yet fresh, on the walls of ruined temples at Ardea and Lanuvium, executed, he says, before the founding of Rome. As before mentioned, the actual dates of the existing paint- ings are very uncertain. It cannot therefore be positively asserted that any existing specimens are much older than 600 B.c., though some, especially at Veli, certainly appear to have the characteristics of more remote antiquity. The most important of these paintings have been discovered in the cemeteries of Veii, Cere, Tarquinii, Vulci, Cervetri, and other Etruscan cities."

Greek Painting.—This is a very obscure subject, for, although Strabo, Pliny, Pausanias, and others have left us minute descriptions of Greek paintings and ample accounts of painters and styles, yet of the pictures themselves almost nothing now remains. Even in Egypt the use of colour does not appear to have been more universal than it was among the Greeks, who applied it freely to their marble statues and reliefs, the whole of their buildings inside and out, as well as for the decoration of flat wall-surfaces. They appear to have cared but little for pure form, and not to have valued the delicate ivory-like tint and beautiful texture of their fine Pentelic and Parian marbles, except as a ground for coloured ornament. A whole class of artists, called dyadpdrwv éyxavorai, were occupied in colouring marble sculpture, and their services were very highly valued. In some cases, probably for the sake of hiding the joints and getting a more absorbent surface, the marble, however pure and fine in texture, was covered with a thin skin of stucco made of mixed linie and pow- dered marble. Among the extremely rare specimens of Greek painting still existing, the most important is an alabaster sarcophagus, found in a tomb near Corneto, and now in the Etruscan museum at Florence.* This is decorated outside with very beautiful and purely Greek paintings, executed on a stucco skin as hard and smooth as the alabaster itself. The pictures represent combats of the Greeks and Amazons, drawn with marvellous beauty of outline and grace of movement and composition. The colouring, though rather brilliant, is very simply treated, and the figures are kept strictly to one plane without any attempt at complicated perspective. Other most valuable specimens of

Greek art, found at Herculaneum and now in the Naples museum, are some small paintings, one of girls playing with dice, another of Theseus and the Minotaur. These are painted with miniature-like delicacy on the bare surface of marble slabs ; they are almost mono- chromatic, and are of the highest beauty both in drawmg and in their skilfully-modelled gradations of shadow— quite unlike any of the Greek vase-paintings. The first-mentioned painting is signed AAESANAPOS AOHNAIOZ. It is probable that the strictly archaic paintings of the Greeks, such as those of Polygnotus in the 5th century B.c., executed with few and simple colours, had much resemblance to those on vases, but Pliny is certainly wrong when he asserts that, till the time of Apelles (c. 350-310 B.c.), the Greek painters only used black, white, red, and

2 See Dennis, Cities and Cemeteries of Etruria (1878) ; Golini, Pitture murali Etrusche; Micali, Mon. inediti; Mon. and Ann. d. Inst. Arch. (Rome, various years); Canina, L'entica Etruria (1846, et sq.) 3 Bartoli, Sepolchri Rom. ed Etrus. (1727); Miiller, Htrusker, and other works ; Helbig, Pitture Cornetane (1863); Inghirami, Afon. Etruschi (1821-26) ; Byres, Sepulchral Caverns of Tarquinia (1842) ; eigaom Rochette, Mon. d' Antiquité Grecque, Etrusque, et Romaine

3 This process, cireumlitio, is mentioned by Pliny (ZZ. V., xxxv. 40).

4 See Afon. Inst. .irch., Rome, ix. plate 60.

yellow.! Judging from the peculiar way in which the Yreeks and their imitators the Romans used the names of colours, it appears that they paid more attention to tones and relations of colour than to actual hues. Thus most Greek and Latin colour-names are now quite untranslatable. Homer's "wine-like sea" (oivow), Sophocles's " wine- coloured ivy" (Gd. Col.), and Horace's " purpureus olor" probably refer less to what we should call colour than to the chromatic strength of the various objects and their more or less strong powers of reflecting light, either in motion or when at rest. Nor have we any word like Virgil's "flavus," which could be applied both to a lady's hair and to the leaf of an olive-tree.?

During the best periods of Greek art the favourite classes of subjects were scenes from poetry, especially Homer, and contemporary history. The names rwaxobjKy and rod roxéAn were given to many public buildings from their walls being covered with paintings. Additional interest was given to the historical subjects by the intro- duction of portraits ; ¢.g.,in the great picture of the battle of Marathon (490 B.c.), on the walls of the oroa qorKxiAy in Athens, portraits were given of the Greek generals Miltiades, Callimachus, and others. This picture was painted about forty years after the battle by Polygnotus and Micon. One of the earliest pictures recorded by Pliny (xxxv. 8) represented a battle of the Magnesians (c. 716 B.c.); it was painted by Bularchus, a Lydian artist, and bought at a high price by King Candaules. Many other important Greek historical paintings are men- tioned by Pausanias and earlier writers. The Pompeian mosaic of the defeat of the Persians by Alexander is probably a Romanized copy from some celebrated Greek painting ; it obviously was not designed for mosaic work.

Landscape painting appears to have been unknown among the Greeks, even as a background to figure subjects. The poems especially of Homer and Sophocles show that this was not through want of appreciation of the beauties of nature, but partly, probably, because the main object of Greek painting was to tell some definite story, and also from their just sense of artistic fitness, which prevented them from attempting in their mural decorations to dis- guise the flat solidity of the walls by necessarily delusive effects of aerial perspective and distance.

It is interesting to note that even in the time of Alex- ander the Great the somewhat archaic works of the earlier painters were still highly appreciated. In particular Aris- totle gives high praise to Polygnotus, both for his power of combining truth with idealization in his portraits and for his skill in depicting men’s mental characteristics ; on this account he calls him 6 7}Ooypados. Lucian too is no less enthusiastic, and praises Polygnotus alike for his grace, drawing, and colouring. Later painters, such as Zeuxis and Apelles, appear to have produced easel pictures more than mural paintings, and these, being easy to move, were mostly carried off to Rome by the early emperors. Hence Pausanias, who visited Greece in the time of Hadrian, mentions but few works of the later artists. Owing to the lack of existing specimens of Greek painting it would be idle to attempt an account

of their technical methods, but no doubt those employed by the Romans described below were derived with the rest of their art from the Greeks. Speaking of their stucco, Pliny refers its superiority over that made by the Romans to the fact

1 Pliny's remarks on subjects such as this should be received with caution. He was neither a scientific archeologist nor a practical artist.

2 So also a meaning unlike ours is attached to Greek technical words —by révos they meant, not ''tone," but the gradations of light and shade, and by &puoy7 the relations of colour. See Pliny, 1. '., xxxv. 5; and Ruskin, Afod. Painters, pt. iv. cap. 18.

the Ancients, deliv. at Univ. Coll. Lon. (1882) ; Hermann,

Al

that it was always made of lime at least three years old, and that it was well mixed and pounded in a mortar before being laid on the wall; he is here speaking of the thick stucco in many coats, not of the thin skin mentioned above as being laid on marble.

Greek mural painting, like their sculpture, was chiefly used to decorate temples and public buildings, and com- paratively rarely either for tombs ® or private buildings,— at least in the days of their early republican simplicity. They were in the true sense of the word works of monu- mental art, and were no doubt designed and executed with that strict self-restraint and due subordination to their architectural surroundings which we see so strongly marked in all Greek sculpture of the best periods.*

Roman Painting.—A very large number of Roman mural paintings now exist, of which by far the greatest quantity was discovered in the private houses and baths of Pompeii, nearly all dating between 63 a.D., when the city was ruined by an earthquake, and 79 a.p., when it was buried by Vesuvius. A catalogue of these and simi- lar paintings from Herculaneum and Stabiz, compiled by Professor Helbig, comprises 1966 specimens. The ex- cavations in the baths of Titus and other ancient build- ings in Rome, made in the early part of the 16th century, excited the keenest interest and

admiration among the painters of that time, and very largely influenced the later art of the Renaissance. These paintings, especially the “grotesques” or fanciful patterns of scroll-work and pilasters mixed with semi-realistic foliage and figures of boys, animals, and birds, designed with great freedom of touch and inventive power, seem to have thoroughly fasci- nated Raphael during his later period, and many of his pupils and contemporaries. The “loggie” of the Vatican and of the Farnesina palace are full of carefully-studied 16th-century reproductions of these highly-decorative paint- ings. Of late years the excavations on the Palatine and in the garden of the Farnesina in Rome have brought to light some mural paintings of the 1st century of our era, perhaps superior in execution even to the best of the Pompeian series.

The range of subjects found in Roman mural paintings is very large—mythology, religious ceremonies, genre, still life, and even landscape (the latter generally on a small scale, and treated in an artificial and purely decora- tive way), and lastly history. Pliny mentions several large and important historical paintings, such as those with which Valerius Maximus Messala decorated the walls of the Curia Hostilia, to commemorate his own victory over Hiero II. and the Carthaginians in Sicily in the 3d century B.c. The earliest Roman painting recorded by Pliny was by Fabius, surnamed Pictor, on the walls of

3 One instance only of a tomb-painting is mentioned by Pausanias (vii. 22). Some fine specimens have recently been discovered in the Crimea, but not of a very early date; see Stephani, Compte rendu, &C., St Petersburg, 1878, &c.

4 Some of the following works contain accounts of the painting of the Romans as well as of the Greeks :—Letronne, La Peint. histor. murale (1835); Hittorf, L’Arch. polychrome chez les Grecs (1851) ; Wornun, Ifist. of Painting (1847) ; Newton, Lect. on the Painting of Die Poly- gnotischen Gemélde ; Lenormant, Les Peintures de Polygnote (1864) ; Winckelmann, Storia dell’ Arti (1784) ; Miller, Handbuch d. Archiol. der Kunst, &c. (1830) ; Pliny, I. N., Books xxxv., xxxvi.; Pausanias, x. 25-31, — description of paintings in the Lesche at Delphi, — and various other passages throughout his work ; Artaud de Montor, Peintres primitifs (1841-

48) ; Humphrey Davy, “Colours used by the Ancients,” Trans. Roy. Soc. (1815, pp. 97-124) ; Bluemner, Gewerbe u. Kunst bei Griechen u. Romern (1879); Brunn, Gesch. der Griech. Kunstler (1853-56) ; Durand, Iist. de la Peinture Ancienne (1725) ; Meyer, Gesch. der bildenden Kiunste (1824); Raoul Rochette, La Peinture des Grecs (1840), and Mon. @ Antig. (1833) ; Poynter, Deco- rative Art, series of lectures published by the Society for the Protection of Ancient Buildings (1882).

the temple of Salus, executed about 300 Bc. (H. &,, xxxv. 4).

Unfortunately no existing Roman paintings seem to be earlier in date than the Christian era, and all belong to a period of decline in art. Pliny (xxxv. 1) laments the fact that the wealthy Romans of his time preferred the costly splendours of marble and porphyry wall-linings to the more artistic decoration of paintings by good artists. Historical painting seems then to have gone out of fashion ; among the numerous specimens now existing very few from

TTT Ali NU | | |

Fig. 8.—One Figure from a Pompeian Wall-Painting—Ariadne and Dionysus. Now in the Naples Museum.

Pompeii represent historical subjects; one has the scene of Masinissa and Sophonisba before Scipio, and another of a riot between the people of Pompeii and Nocera, which happened 59 a.p.

Mythological scenes, chiefly from Greek sources, occur most frequently: the myths of Eros and Dionysus are especial favourites. Only five or six relate to purely Roman mythology. We have reason to think that some at least of the Pompeian pictures are copies, probably at

third or fourth hand, from celebrated Greek originals. The frequently repeated subjects of Medea meditating the murder of her children and Iphigenia at the shrine of the Tauric Artemis suggest that the motive and composition were taken from the celebrated originals of these subjects by Timanthes. Those of Io and Argus, the finest example of which is in the Palatine "'villa of Livia," and of Andro- meda and Perseus, often repeated on Pompeian walls, may be from the originals by Nicias.!

In many cases these mural paintings are of high artistic merit, though they are probably not the work of the most distinguished painters of the time, but rather of a humbler class of decorators, who reproduced, without much original invention, stock designs out of some pattern-book. They are, however, all remarkable for the rapid skill and extreme "verve" and freedom of hand with which the designs are, as it were, flung on to the walls with few but very effective touches. Though in some cases the motive and composi- tion are superior to the execution, yet many of the paint- ings are remarkable both for their realistic truth and technical skill. The great painting of Ceres from Pompeii, now in the Naples museum, is a work of the highest merit—the simple grandeur of the drawing and the delicate modelling of the flesh, executed in the easiest and most direct manner possible, are alike admirable. The round juiciness of the fruit in her basket, rapidly painted with a few telling strokes of the brush, recalls to mind in effect, though not in execution, the startling realism of the Dutch painters of still life, who laboured painfully to gain the effect produced with such rapidity and ease by the Roman artist. Fig. 8, from a Pompeian picture, is a fine example of good modelling of flesh.

In the usual scheme of decoration the broad wall-surfaces are broken up into a series of panels by pilasters, columns, or other architectural forms. Some of the panels contain pictures with figure-subjects; others have conventional ornament, or hanging festoons of fruit and flowers. The lower part of the wall is painted one plain colour, forming a dado; the upper part sometimes has a well-designed frieze of flowing ornaments. In the better class of painted walls the whole is kept flat in treatment, and is free from too great subdivision, but in many cases great want of taste is shown by the introduction of violent effects of architectural perspective, and the space is broken up in a disagreeable way by complicated schemes of design, studded

with pictures in varying scales which have but little relation to their surroundings. The colouring is on the whole very pleasant and harmonious —quite unlike the usual chromolithographic copies. Black, yellow, or a rich deep red' are the favourite colours for the main ground of the walls, the pictures in the panels being treated separately, each with its own background.

Technical Methods of the Romans.—Much has been written on this subject, and the most varying opinions have been expressed. The real fact appears to be that several methods were employed in each painting. First, the ground of the required colour was laid on while the stucco was still moist. This ground therefore was true fresco or "'fresco buono." On this, when dry, the various pictures and ornaments were painted in tempera. That the pictures themselves were not in true fresco is shown: (1) because the coloured ground always exists wnder the pictures ; (2) by the wide distances apart of the " fresco edges " or joinings in the stucco, showing that a much larger area of stucco was applied at once than could have been covered with the frequently elaborate paintings before the stucco was dry ; (3) by the fact that many of the brilliant pigments were not such as could have been used upon moist stucco. The next point is how these tempera paintings on the fresco ground were fixed so as to last for nearly eighteen hundred years uninjured by the damp which necessarily soaked through into the soil and ashes in which they were buried. This was probably effected by the "'encaustic" process (@yxavors). When the painting was finished and dry, hot melted wax was brushed all over it; and then a red-

- See Newton, Lect. on Painting of the Ancients, 1882.

hot iron or brazier of burning charcoal was held near the face of the wall till, bit by bit, all the wax disappeared from the surface and soaked thoroughly into the absorbent stucco,—thus fixing the pig- ments with a vehicle that could stand the effects of damp. 'This application of hot wax appears to have been repeated more than once. 'The extreme smoothness of the fresco ground under the tempera pictures seems to show that the ground itself was both waxed and polished before the pictures were painted over it. By another method of encaustic the pigments themselves were mixed with

hot wax, probably rendered more fluid and easy to work by the addition of some mineral spirit or essential oil. The final application of heat to the painted surface blended the colours together and fixed them on and into the absorbent stucco ground. Vitruvius (vii. 9) describes the former process, in which the wax was applied after the colours were laid on the wall. According to him this was necessary in order to prevent the painted surface becoming patchy, especially in the case of the red ground made of vermilion, an oxide of mercury. This, as well as the evidence of the paintings themselves, shows that Pliny is mistaken in assert- ing that encaustic work could not be used for walls.1 Vitruvius (vii.) also gives an interesting account of the great care that was needed in preparing stucco for painting. Three coats of old slaked lime and ra were first to be laid, and then three more coats mixed with pounded white marble, each coat of more finely powdered marble than the one beneath ; the last coat was to be polished till it gave a reflexion like a mirror. Damp or external walls were to be built hollow, and the cavity ventilated; this was sometimes done, ¢.g., in the Palatine villa, by facing the wall inside with hollow bricks or tiles, on which the stucco was laid. Vitruvius, who probably died shortly before the Christian era, laments the decay of taste in his time, much as Pliny does ; he specially depre- cates the use of gaudy red lead, and the sham architectural paint- ings in which candelabra, reeds, and other incongruities are made to support heavy cornices and roofs of buildings. He complains also-of the novel taste for expensive but inartistic colours, such as purple and azurc.?

arly Christian Mural Paintings in Italy.——A very interesting series of these exists in various catacombs, especially those of Rome and Naples. They are of great value, both as an important link in the history of art and also as throwing considerable light on the mental state of the early Christians, which was distinctly influenced by the older faith. Thus in the earlier paintings of about the 4th century we find Christ represented as a beardless youth, beautiful as the artist could make him, with a lingering tradition of Greek idealization, in no degree like the “Man of Sorrows” of medieval painters, but rather a kind of genius of Christianity in whose fair outward form the peace and purity of the new faith were visibly sym- bolized, just as certain distinct attributes were typified in the persons of the gods of ancient Greece. The favour- ite early subject, Christ the Good Shepherd (fig. 9), is represented as Orpheus playing on his lyre to a circle

of beasts, the pagan origin of the picture being shown unmistakably by the Phrygian cap and by the presence of lions, panthers, and other incongruous animals among the listening sheep. In other cases Christ is depicted standing with a sheep borne on his shoulders like Hermes Criophoros or Hermes Psychopompos—favourite Greek subjects, especially the former, a statue of which Pausanias (ix, 22) mentions as existing at Tanagra in Beeotia. Here again the pagan origin of the type is shown by the presence in the catacomb paintings of the pan-pipes and

4 His remarks on the subject (xxxv. 11) are quite unintelligible.

*“ Gell and Gandy, Pompeiana (1817-19 and 1835); Herculaneum et Pompei, Recueil des Peintures, &c., Paris (1870-72); Jorio, Deser. des Peintures antiques (1825); Renier et Perrot, Les .Peintures du Palatin (1870); Hittorf, Arabesques of the Ancients; Real Museo Bor- bonico (1824 et seg.) ; Mau, Gesch. der Decorativen in Pompet (1882) ; Donner and Helbig, Wandgemiéilde der vom Vesuv verschiitteten Stadte (1868); Ann. and Bull. dell’ Inst. di Cor. arch. di Roma (various years); Ternite and Miiller, Wandgemélde aus Pompei ; Zahn, Gemdlde aus Pompei (1828); Rochette, Peintures de Pompei (1844-59); Mazois, Ruines de Pompei (1824); Overbeck, Pompei, &c. (1856); Revue Archéol., vol. ii. (1845); Le Pitture antiche d’ Ercolano (1757-79) ; Fiorelli, Pomp. ant. Hist. (1860-4) ; Sogliano, Le Pitture murali Cam- pane (1880); Paderni, Dipinti, &c., di Pompei, Ercolano, &c. (1865) ; Caylus, La Peinture & 0 Encaustique (1755); and Minervini, Bull. arch. Napol. (1852-59), See also the list of works on Greek painting.

pedum, special attributes of Hermes, but quite foreign to the notion of Christ. Though in a degraded form, a good deal survives in some of these paintings, especially in the

=f Gee? Rs

;

In the centre Orpheus, to represent Christ the Good. Shepherd, and round are smaller paintings of various types of Christ.

earlier ones, of the old classical grace of composition and beauty of drawing, notably in the above-mentioned repre- sentations where old models were copied without any adaptation to their new meaning. Those of the 5th and 6th centuries still follow the classical lines, though in a rapidly deteriorating style, until the introduction of a foreign—the Byzantine—element, which created a fresh starting-point on quite different lines. The old naturalism and survival of classical freedom of drawing is replaced by stiff, conventionally hieratic types, very superior in dignity and strength to the feeble and spiritless compositions pro- duced by the extreme degradation into which the native art of Rome had fallen. The designs of this second period of Christian art are very similar to those of the mosaics, such as many at Ravenna, and also to the magnificently illuminated MSS. on which the utmost skill and labour of the time were lavished. For some centuries there was but little change or development in this Byzantine style of art, so that it is impossible in most cases to be sure from mere internal evidence of the date of any painting. This to some extent applies also to the works of the earlier or pagan school, though, roughly speaking, it may be said that the least meritorious pictures are the latest in date. These catacomb paintings range over a long space of time; some may possibly be of the Ist or 2d century, e.g., those in the cemetery of Domitilla, Rome; others are as late as the 9th century, eg., some full-length figures of St Cornelius and St Cyprian in the catacomb of St Callixtus, under which earlier paintings may be traced. In execution they somewhat resemble the Etruscan tomb-paintings; the walls of the catacomb passages and chambers, excavated in soft tufa, are covered with a thin skin of white stucco, and on that the mural and ceiling paintings are simply executed in earth colours. The favourite sub- jects of the earliest paintings are scenes from the Old Testament which were supposed to typify events in the life of Christ, such as the sacrifice of Isaac (Christ’s death), Jonah and the whale (the resurrection), Moses striking the rock, or pointing to the manna (Christ the water of life, and the Eucharist), and many others. The later paintings deal more with later subjects, either events

in Christ’s life or figures of saints and the miracles they performed. A very fine series of these exists in the lower church of 8. Clemente in Rome, apparently dating from the 6th to the 10th centuries ; among these are representa- tions of the passion and death of Christ—subjects never chosen by the earlier Christians, except as dimly fore- shadowed by the Old Testament types. When Christ Himself is depicted in the early catacomb paintings it is in glory and power, not in His human weakness and suffering.

Other early Italian paintings exist on the walls of the church of the Tre Fontane near Rome, and in the Capella di 8. Urbano alla Caffarella, executed in the early part of the 11th century. The atrium of §8. Lorenzo fuori le mura, Rome, aad the church of the Quattro Santi Incoro- nati have mural paintings of the first half of the 13th century, which show no artistic improvement over those at S. Clemente four or five centuries older.

It was not in fact till the second half of the 13th century that stiff traditional Byzantine forms and colouring began to be superseded by the revival of native art in Italy by the painters of Florence, Pisa, and Siena (see Fresco). During the first thirteen centuries of the Christian era mural painting appears to have been for the most part confined to the representation of sacred subjects. It is remarkable that during the earlier centuries council after council of the Christian church forbade the painting of figure-subjects, and especially those of any Person of the Trinity; but it was quite in vain. The double desire, both for the artistic effect of painted walls and for the religious teaching afforded by the pictorial representation of sacred scenes and the celebration of the sacraments, was too strong. In spite of the zeal of bishops and others, who sometimes with their own hands defaced the pictures of Christ on the walls of the churches, in spite of threats of excommunication, the forbidden paintings by degrees be- came more numerous, till the walls of almost every church throughout Christendom were decorated with whole series of pictured stories. The useless prohibition was becoming obsolete when, towards the end of the 4th century, the learned Paulinus, bishop of Nola, ordered the two basilicas which he had built at Fondi and Nola to be adorned with wall-paintings of sacred subjects, with the special object, as he says, of instructing and refining the ignorant and drunken people. These painted histories were in fact the books of the unlearned, and we can now hardly realize their value

and importance as the chief mode of religious teach- ing in ages when none but the clergy could read or write.!

English Mural Painting.—During the Middle Ages, just as long before among the ancient Greeks, coloured decoration was used in the widest possible manner, not only for the adornment of fiat walls, but also for the enrichment of sculpture and all tne fittings and archi- tectural features of buildings, whether the material to be painted was plaster, stone, marble, or wood. It was only the damp and frosts of northern climates that to some

1 See Rossi, Roma sotterranea (1864-77) ; Northcote and Brownlow Subterranean Rome (1877); Bottari, Roma sotterr. (1737-54); Perret, Catacombes de Rome (1851-55) ; Bellermann, Katacomben zu Neapel f Garrucci, Arte Cristiana (1880) ; Mullooly, Paintings in S. Clemente, Rome (1868) ; Lord Lindsay, Christian Art (1847); Agincourt, Hist. de VArt, w*- xvi® siécle (1823-47) ; Theophilus, Div. Art. Schedula Hendrie's ed. (1847); Eraclius, De Art. Romanorum, MS. in Bibl. Roy., Paris, partly printed by Raspe; ‘‘ Mappa Clavicule ”—a 12th- century MS.—Archeologia, xxxii. pp. 183-244; Cennino Cennini Trattato della Pittura; Vasari, Tre Arti del Disegno, Milanesi's ed. (1882); Mrs Merrifield, Fresco Painting (1856); L. Batista Alberti De Re edificatoria; Richmond, Monumental Painting, Lectures on Art published by the Society for the Protection of Ancient Buildings (1882); Martigny, Dict. des Antiquités Chrétiennes (1877); Dionysius of Zagora, Eppnveta THs Swypadixjs (1853); Eastlake, Materials for Hist. of Painting, new ed. (1869) ; Wessely, Iconographie Gottes u. der Heili- gen (1874); Didron et Durand, Jeonographie Chrétienne (1845); Cave Thomas, Mural Decoration ; Bull. di Arch. Cristiana (1864-65).

“URAL DE-O'O RATIOS

a ——————— ———— ———

extent limited the external use of colour to the less exposed parts of the outsides of buildings. The varying tints and texture of smoothly-worked stone appear to have given no pleasure to the medieval eye; and in the rare cases in which the poverty of some country church prevented its walls from being adorned with painted ornaments or pictures the whole surface of the

stone-work inside, mould- ings and carving as well as flat wall-spaces, was covered with a thin coat of whitewash. Internal rough stone- work was invariably concealed by stucco, forming a smooth ground for possible future paintings. Unhappily the ignorant barbarity of the 19th century has in the case of most English cathedrals and parish churches stripped off the internal plaster, often laying bare rubble walls of the roughest description, never meant to be exposed, and has scraped and rubbed the surface of the masonry and mould- ings down to the bare stone. In this way a great proportion of mural paintings have been destroyed, though many in a more or less mutilated state still exist in England. It is difficult (and doubly so since the so-called “restoration ” of most old buildings) to realize the splendour of effect once possessed by every important medizval church. From the tiled floor to the roof all was one mass of gold and colour. ‘The brilliance of the mural paintings and richly- coloured sculpture and mouldings was in harmony with the splendour of the oak-work—screens, stalls, and roofs— all richly decorated with gilding and painting, while the light, passing through stained glass, softened and helped to combine the whole into one even mass of extreme decorative effect. Colour, and not in dull tints, was boldly applied everywhere, and thus the patchy effect was avoided which is so often the result of the modern timid and partial use of painted ornament. Even the figure-sculpture was painted in a strong and realistic manner, sometimes by a wax encaustic process, probably the same as the circumlatio of classical times. In the accounts for expenses in decor- ating Orvieto cathedral wax is a frequent item among the materials used for painting. In one place it is specially mentioned that wax was supplied to Andrea Pisano (in 1345) for the decoration of the beautiful reliefs in white marble on the lower part of the west front.

General Schemes of Mural Painting.—From the 11th to the 16th century the lower part of the walls, generally 6 to 8 feet from the floor, was painted with a dado—the favourite patterns till the 13th century being either a sort of sham masonry with a flower in each rectangular space (fig. 10), or a conven- KO] tional representation of a |-= curtain with regular folds |/< stiffly treated (Plate I.). Above this dado ranges of pictures with figure-sub- jects were painted in tiers one above the other, each picture frequently sur- rounded by a_ painted frame with arch and gable I/< sGa- of architectural design. Fic. 10.—Wall- Painting, of the 13th Painted bands of chevron

century. ‘‘ Masonry pattern.” or other geometrical ornament till the 13th century, and flowing ornament afterwards, usually divide the tiers of pictures horizontally and form the top and bottom bound- aries of the dado. In the case of a church, the end walls usually have figures to a larger scale. On the east wall of the nave over the chancel arch there was generally a large painting of the “Doom” or Last Judgment. One of the commonest subjects is a colossal figure of St Christopher (fig. 11), usually on the nave wall opposite the principal entrance,—selected because the sight of a picture of this saint was supposed to bring good luck for the rest of the

day. Figures were also often painted on the jambs of the windows and on the piers and soffit of the arches, especially that opening into the chancel.

Fic. 11.—Wall-Painting of St Christopher. Large life-size.

The little Norman church at Kempley in Gloucestershire (date about 1100) has perhaps the best-preserved specimen of the com- . plete early decoration of a chancel.! The north and south walls are occupicd by figures of the twelve apostles in architectural niches, six on each side. The east wall had single figures of saints at the sides of the central window, and the stone barrel vault is covered with a representation of St John’s apocalyptic vision — Christ in majesty surrounded by the evangelistic beasts, the seven candlesticks, and other figures. The chancel arch itself and the jambs and mouldings of the windows have stiff geometrical designs, and over the arch, towards the nave, is a large picture of the “Doom.” The whole scheme is very complete, no part of the internal plaster or stone-work being undecorated with colour. Though the drawing is rude, the figures and their drapery are treated broadly and with dignity. Simple earth colours are used, oye in tempera on a plain white ground, which covers alike

oth the plaster of the rough walls and the smooth stone of the arches and jambs.

In the 13th century the painters of England reached a very high point of artistic power and technical skill, so much so that at that time paintings were produced by native artists quite equal, if not superior, to those of the

same period anywhere on the Continent, not except- ing even Italy. The central paintings on the walls of the chapter-house and on the retable of the high altar of Westminster Abbey are not surpassed by any of the smaller works even of such men as Cimabue and Duccio di Buoninsegna, who were living when these Westminster paintings were executed. Unhappily, partly through the poverty and anarchy brought about by the French wars and the Wars of the Roses, the development of art in England made but little progress after the beginning of the 14th century, and it was not till a time when the renaissance of art in Italy had fallen into a state of degra- dation and decay that its influence reached the British shores, In the 15th century some very beautiful and noble work, somewhat affected by Flemish influence, was produced in England (fig. 12), chiefly in the form of figures painted on the oak panels of chancel and chapel screens, especially in Norfolk and Suffolk ; but, fine as many of these are, they cannot be said to rival in any sense the works of the Van Eycks and other painters of that time in Flanders. To return to the 13th century, the culminating period of English art in painting and sculpture, much was owed to Henry III.'s love for and

1 See Archexologia, vol. xlvi., 1880.

'patterns for the borders

patronage of the fine arts ; he employed a large number of painters to decorate his various castles and palaces, especi- ally the palace of Westminster, one large hall of which was known as the "painted chamber" from the rows of fine pictures with which its walls were covered. After the 13th century the "masonry pattern" was disused for the lower parts of walls, and the chevrony and other stiff

Fra. 12.—15th-century English Painting—St John the Evangelist.

were replaced by more flowing designs (Plate I.). The character of the painted figures became less monumental in style; greater freedom of drawing and treatment was adopted, and they cease in any way to recall the archaic majesty and grandeur of the Byzantine mosaics. A detailed description of the develop- ment of the successive styles of mural painting

would be almost a complete history of English art, which space does not allow here, but it may be noted that during the

AG MUGRAtys ORCORATIVOE

14th century wall-spaces unoccupied by figure-subjects were often covered by graceful flowing patterns, drawn with great freedom of hand and rather avoiding geome- trical repetition. Fig. 13, from the church of Stanley St Leonard's, Gloucestershire, is a p>—=s J –

good characteristic specimen of 14th-century decoration; it is on the walls of the chancel, fill- ing up the spaces between the painted figures ; the flowers are blue, and the lines red on a | white ground. In some cases the motive of the design is taken from encaustic tiles, as at Bengeo Church, Herts, where the wall is |\= : i : — G a divided into squares, each con- taining an heraldic lion. This Fic. 18.—Flowing Pattern ; imitative notion occurs during Si crela eumeli ba all periods—masonry, hanging == = ~ curtains, tiles, and architectural features such as niches and canopies being very frequently represented, though always in a simple decorative fashion with no attempt at actual deception,—not probably from any fixed prin- ciple that shams were wrong, but because the good taste of the medixval painters taught them that a flat unrealistic treatment gave the best and most decorative effect. Thus in the 15th and 16th centuries the com- monest forms of unpictorial wall-decoration were various patterns taken from the beautiful damasks and cut velvets of Sicily, Florence, Genoa, and other places in Italy, some form of the "pine-apple" or rather "arti- choke" pattern being the favourite (fig. 14), a design

which, developed partly from Oriental sources, and coming to perfection at the end of the 15th century, was copied and reproduced in textiles, printed stuffs, and wall-papers with but little change down to the present century,— a remarkable instance of survival in design. Fig. 15 is a specimen of 15th- century English decorative painting, copied from a 14th-century Sicilian silk damask. Diapers, powderings with flowers, sacred monograms, and sprays of blossom were frequently used to ornament large surfaces in @ simple way. Many of these are extremely beautiful (fig. 16).

Subjects of Medieval Wall-Paintings.—In churches and domestic

buildings alike the usual subjects represented on the walls were specially selected for their moral and religious teaching, cither stories from the Bible and Apocrypha, or from the lives of saints,

yi it 2

eu

A a ss cy [ays AN ns tetas, “Ww Vy

seen

~ I \ orb y Fy i Lin, ni) ; a

Fic. 15.—15th-century Wall-Painting, the design copied from a 13th-century Sicilian silk damask.

or, lastly, symbolical representations setting forth some important theological truth, such as figures of Virtues and Vices, or the Scala Humane Salvationis, showing the perils and temptations of the human soul in its struggle to escape hell and gain paradise—a rude foreshadowing of the great scheme worked out with such per- fection by Dante in his Commedia. A fine example of this subject exists on the walls of Chaldon Chureh, Sur- rey.! In the selection of saints for paintings in England, those of English origin are na- turally most frequently represented, and dif- ferent districts had cer- tain local favourites. St Thomas of Canter- bury was one of the most widely popular ; but few examples now remain,owing to Henry VIIL.’s special dislike to this saint and the strict orders that were issued for all pictures of him to be destroyed. For a similar reason most paintings of saintly popes were ob- literated.

Methods of Execu- tion. — Though Erac- lius, who probably wrote before the 10th century, mentions the use of an oil-medium, yet till about the 13th century mural paintings appear to have been executed in the most simple way, in tempera mainly with earth colours ap- plied on dry stucco ; even when a smooth stone surface was to be painted a thin coat of whitening or fine gesso was laid as a

Fic, 16.—Powderings used in 15th-century Wall-Painting.

1 See Collections of Surrey Archeol. Soc., vol. v. part ii, 1871. A useful though necessarily incomplete list of English medieval mural paintings has been published by the Science and Art Depart., S. Kens. Mus. Fresh wall-paintings are constantly being discovered under later coats of whitewash, so that any list needs frequent additions.

eround. No instance of true fresco has been discovered in Eng- jand. In the 13th century, and perhaps earlier, vil was commonly used both as a medium for the pigments and also to make a varnish to cover and fix tempera paintings. Vasari's statement as to the discovery of the use of oil-medium by the Van Eycks is certainly untrue, but it probably has a germ of truth. The Van Eyeks introduced the use of dryers of a better kind than had yet been used, and so largely extended the application of oil-painting. Before their time it seems to have been the custom to dry wall- paintings laboriously by the use of charcoal braziers, if they were in a position where the sun could not shine upon them. This is speeially recorded in the valuable series of aecounts for the expenses of wall-paintings in the royal palace of Westminster during the reign of Henry III., printed in Vetusta Monwmenta, vol. vi., 1842. All the materials used, including charcoal to dry the paintings and the wages paid to the artists, are given. The materials mentioned are plumbum album et rubewm, viridus, vermilio, synople, oere, azura, aurum, argentum, eollis, oleum, verniar.

Two foreign painters were employed—Peter of Spain and William of Florence—at sixpence a day, but the English painters seem to have done most of the work and received higher pay. William, an English monk in the adjoining Benedictine abbey of West- minster, received two shillings a day. Walter of Durham and various members of the Otho family, royal goldsmiths and moneyers, worked for many years on the adornment of Henry III.'s palace and were well paid for their skill. Some fragments of paintings from the royal chapel of St Stephen are now in the British Museum. 'They are very delicate and carefully-painted subjects from the Old Testament, in rich colours, each with explanatory inscription underneath. The scale is small, the figures being seareely a foot high. Their

method of execution is curious. First the smooth stone wall was covered with a coat of red, painted in oil, probably to keep back the damp ; on that a thin skin of fine gesso (stuceo) has been applied, and the outlines of the figures marked with a point; the whole of the background, crowns, borders of dresses, and other ornamental parts have then becn modelled and stamped with very minute patterns in slight relief, impressed on the surface of the gesso while it was yet soft. The figures have then been painted, apparently in tempera, gold leaf has been

= = — EO a, -* \

Fig. 17.—Pattern Plaster, decorated with gilding and transparent colours ; 15th-eentury work. Full size.

applied to the stamped reliefs, and the whole has been covered with an oil varnish. It is difficult to realize the amount of patience and labour required to cover large halls such as the above chapel and the "‘ painted chamber," the latter about 83 feet by 27, with this minute and gorgeous style of decoration.

In many cases the grounds were entirely covered with shining metal leaf, over which the paintings were executed ; those parts, such as the draperies, where the metallic lustre was wanted, were painted in oil with transparent colours, while the flesh was painted – Opaque tempera. The effect of the bright metal shining through a rieh colouring is very magnificent. This extreme minuteness 7 much of the medixval wall- decoration is very remarkable.

arge wall-surfaces and intricate mouldings were often completely

covered by elaborate gesso patterus in relief of almost microscopic delicacy (fig. 17). The cost of stamps for this is among the items in the Westminster aceounts. These patterns when set and dry were further adorned with gold and colours in the most laborious way. So also with the arehitectural painting ; the artist was not con- tent simply to pick out the various members of the mouldings in different colours, but he also frequently

covered each bead or fillet with painted flowers and other patterns, as delicate as those in an illuminated MS.,—so minute and highly-finished that they are almost invisible at a little distance, but yet add greatly to the general richness of effect. All this is completely neglected in modern reproductions of medieval painting, in which both touch and colour are alike coarse and harsh—mere caricatures of the old work, such as unhappily disfigure the Sainte Chapelle in Paris, and many cathedrals in Franee, Germany, and England. Gold was never used in large quantities without the ground on which it was laid being broken up by some such delicate reliefs as that shown in fig. 17, so its effect was never gaudy or dazzling.

Mural painting in England fell into disuse in the 16th century. For domestic purposes wood panelling, stamped leather, and tapestry were chiefly used as wall-coverings, In the reign of Henry VIII, probably in part through Holbein's influence, a rather coarse sort of tempera wall- painting, German in style, appears to have been common.!

A good example of arabesque painting of this period in black and white, rudely though boldly drawn and very Holbeinesque in character, was discovered in 1881 behind the panelling in one of the canons' houses at Westminster. Other examples exist at Haddon Hall (Derbyshire) and elsewhere.

Several attempts have been made in the present century to revive the art of monumental wall-decoration, but mostly, like those in the new Houses of Parliament, un- successful both in method and design. A large wall-painting by Sir Frederick Leighton of the Arts of War, on a wall in the South Kensington Museum, is much disfigured by the disagreeable gravelly surface of the stucco. The process employed is that invented by Mr Gambier Parry, and called by him "spirit fresco." A very fine series of mural paintings has been executed by Mr Madox Brown on the walls of the Manchester town-hall. These also are painted in Mr Parry's "spirit fresco," but on a smootli stucco surface, free from the unpleasant granular appearance of the South Kensington picture.

The Medizval Wall-Paintings of the Continent.—In the main the above remarks on English mural decoration apply equally to that of France, Germany, and Scandinavia. Though each of these countries had certain

peculiarities of style, mostly slight and unimportant, yet in method of execution, choice and arrangement of subjects, and division of the wall-spaces there is a very close similarity between them all. Italy, on the other hand, developed a style of her own, more purely pictorial, with less regard to the exigencies of architecture. In northern lands the mural paintings were strictly subordinate to the main features of the structure for which they were designed, while in Italy as a rule the architect did but little to decorate the interior of his buildings, and left the painter free to treat the walls as he pleased.

The very close similarity of the mural decoration in the churches of Sweden to those of England is very remarkable, and some of the Swedish churches have very magnificent and well-preserved schemes of decoration, covering walls and ceilings alike, of dates varying from the 13th to the 15th centuries, all of which have little or nothing to dis- tinguish them from contemporary work in England. Man- delgren's Monuments Scandinaves (1862) has well-executed reproductions of some of the best of these, especially the fine and complete specimens in the churches of Bjeresjoe,

1 Shakespeare, Henry JV., part ii., aet 2, sc. 1: " Falstaff. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the prodigal, or the German hunting in waterwork, is worth a thousand of these bed- hangings and these fly-bitten tapestries."

Ameneharads Rida, Risingé, and Floda. One of these, the north chancel wall of the church of Rada, 13th century, has been selected (Plate I.) as a good and characteristic example of the treatment of a large wall-space in the 14th century ; the dado of painted curtain-folds, the tiers of single life-size figures in architectural niches treated with great breadth and decorative skill, and the band below of subjects on a rather smaller scale give a good idea of a common scheme of ecclesiastic decoration. An inscription on one of these paintings gives the date of their execution as 1323. The lower subject represents the death of the Virgin, above are figures of the apostles, and highest of all, painted on the curved boarding of the waggon-vault, are a row of seated prophets under round arches. The other examples on the same plate, given as specimens of 15th-century flowing patterns, are from

the church of Kumbla, also in Sweden, and fully illustrated in Mandel-gren's valuable work. Oriental Painting.—In the churches and monasteries of

MURANO, the ancient Ammariuno, an island in the Venetian lagoon about 1 mile north of Venice, is 5 miles in circumference, a large part of which is occupied by gardens. It contains about 4000 inhabitants, but was once much more populous than it is at present, its inhabit- ants numbering 30,000. It was a favourite resort of the Venetian nobility before they began to build their villas on the mainland; and in the 15th and 16th centuries its gardens and casinos, of which some traces still remain, were famous. It was here that the literary clubs of the Vigilanti, the Studiosi, the Occulti, used to meet.

The town is built upon one broad main canal, where the tidal current runs with great force, and upon several smaller ones. 'The cathedral, S. Donato, is a fine basilica, probably of the 11th century. The pavement is as richly inlaid as that of St Mark's, and the mosaics of the tribune are remarkable. The exterior of the tribune is very beauti- ful, and has been successfully restored. The 15th-century church of St Peter the Martyr contains a fine picture by Gentile Bellini. Murano has from ancient times been cele- brated for its glass manufactories. When and how the art was introduced is wrapped in great obscurity, but there are notices of it as early as the llth century; and in 1250 Cristoforo Briani, encouraged by the accounts of the gems of Guinea which the traveller Marco Polo brought to Venice, attempted the imitation of agate and chalcedony. From the labours of his pupil Miotto sprang the whole of that branch of the glass trade which is concerned with the imitation of gems. In the 15th century the first crystals were made, and in the 17th the various gradations of coloured and iridescent glass were invented, together with the composition called "'aventurine"; the manufac- ture of beads is now a main branch of the trade. The art of the glass-workers was taken under the protection of the Government in 1275, and regulated by a special code of laws and privileges ; two fairs were held annually, and the export of all materials, such as alum and sand, which enter into the composition of glass was absolutely forbidden. With the decay of Venice the importance of the Murano glass-works declined; but at the present time there are signs of renewed activity.

As many as eight firms, em- ploying 2500 hands, are engaged in the trade, —the most renowned being "'The Venezia Murano Company" and Salviati. The municipal museum contains a collection of glass illustrating the history and progress of the art.

The island of Murano was first peopled by the inhabitants of Altino, when they fled before their barbarian invaders. It origin- ally enjoyed independence under the rule of its tribunes and judges, and was one of the twelve confederate islands of the lagoons. In

the Greeks mural painting is still practised very much as it was in the 12th or 13th centuries.1 Neither colouring, nor drawing, nor method has in the least altered during the last six hundred years. Everything is fixed by certain unchangeable hieratic rules, and the Greek painter-monk would think it impious to improve upon or deviate from the artistic canons for sacred subjects handed down from century to century. For this reason it is generally impos- sible, from internal evidence, to guess the date of the interesting wall-paintings with which many churches in eastern Europe, Egypt, and Asia Minor are decorated.

In India and Ceylon mural painting has been largely used from very early times, especially to decorate the walls of temples. Some of these appear to be executed in true fresco. Birth-stories of Buddha and other sacred subjects most frequently occur. As among the medieval and modern Greeks, the strong conservatism of the Hindu races makes it difficult to judge as to the dates of these paintings.? (Ww. Mo.—J. H. M.)

the 12th century the doge Vital Micheli II. incorporated Murano in Venice and attached it to the Sestiere of S. Croce. From that date it was governed by a Venetian nobleman with the title of podesta, whose office lasted sixteen months. Murano, however, still retained its original constitution of a greater and a lesser council for the transaction of municipal business, and also the right to coin gold and silver, as well as its judicial powers civil and criminal. The interests of the town were watched at the ducal palace by a nuncio and a solicitor; and this constitution remained in force till the fall of the republic.

Books. —Venezia e le Sue Lagune; Paoletti, Il Fiore dit Venezia; Bussolin, Se iil vetrarie di Murano; Romanin, Storia Docwmentata di Vene- MURAT, Joacutm (1768-1815), king of Naples and a celebrated French cavalry leader, was, according to most accounts, the younger son of an innkeeper at Bastide For- tuniére in the department of Lot, France, and was born in 1768, but by his own account his father was a well-to-do farmer in that village. This is most probably the truth, as after being educated at a seminary at Cahors he was entered at the university of Toulouse, where he studied canon law. He was intended for the priesthood, but led a reckless life ; and after spending all his money he enlisted in a cavalry regiment. He had attained the rank of “maréchal des logis” in 1789, and was the recognized leader of the young soldiers from his great prowess in all athletics and feats of daring. His influence was so great and so prejudicial to authority that he received unlimited leave of absence in 1790. In November 1791 he was elected by the department of Lot a member of the garde

1 See Byzantine MS. from Mt. Athos, quoted by Didron, Jconogr. Chrét.

2 Many books given under the head of ‘‘ Early Christian paintings in Italy” apply also to this last division, Plates and descriptions of medieval paintings are niostly scattered through the proceedings of various societies, such as those of the Society of Antiquaries (Arch#o- logia, Vet. Mon., and Proceedings), the Archeological Institute, the Archzological Association, and many other central and local societies in England and abroad. The ‘‘ List of English buildings with mural decoration” (Science and Art Depart., 8. Kens. Mus., 1872) gives references to illustrations of most of the paintings catalogued. See also Merrifield, Original Treatises on Painting, 12th to 18th century (1849); Latilla, Treatise on Fresco, Encaustic, and Tempera (1842) ; Woltmann and Woermann, Hist. of Painting, vol. i. (1880); Blackburn, Decorative Painting (1847); Collins, Gothic Ornaments (1850); Meri- mée, Peintures del’ Hglise de S. Savin (1845) ; Straub, Peint. mur. en Alsace; Voisin, Peint. mur. dela Cathédral de Tournay; Fleury, Peznt. mur, du Laonnois (1860); Galembert, Peint. mur. de St Mesme de Chinon (1855); Gaucherel, Decoration appliquéal’ Architecture; David, Hist. de la Peinture au Moyen Age (1868); Hotho, Gesch. d. christ- lichen Malerei (1872); Zahn, Ornamente aller klassischen Kunstepochen (1848-48); Salazaro, Mon. dell’ Italia Meridionale, 4to al 13mo sec. (1872-80);

Racinet, Polychromatic Ornament (1878); Owen Jones, Grammar of Ornament (1842-45); Gailhabaud, L’ Architecture du v. a xvit. siécle (1869-72); Forster, Gesch. der Ital. Kunst ; Dohme, Kunst a. Kiinstler d. Mittelalters (1877); Ridolfi, Maraviglie dell’ Arte.

constitutionelle of the king. In May 1792 the garde was disbanded, but Murat had shown such military qualities and such advanced principles that he was at once appointed 4 sub-lieutenant in the chasseurs-4-cheval, and on the out- break of war aide-de-camp to General Hué. He was rapidly promoted to be captain and major in the 21st chasseurs, but after Thermidor found himself looked upon with sus- picion on account of his former advanced republican senti- ments. He was recalled from the front, and happened to be wandering about Paris in the spring and summer of 1795, like another unemployed officer, Napoleon Bonaparte, whose acquaintance he made, and whose friendship he won. When Bonaparte was requested by Barras to undertake the defence of the convention in Vendémiaire 1795 he at once called Murat to his side and commissioned him to bring up from Sévres the artillery with which the sections were shot down. His services on this occasion were re- cognized by his receiving the lieutenant-colonelcy of the 21st chasseurs and the appointment of first aide-de-camp to General Bonaparte in Italy. In the first battles of the famous campaign of 1796, Montenotte, Ceva, Dego, and Mondovi, Murat so greatly distinguished himself that he was chosen to carry the flags taken from the enemy to Paris. He was promoted to be general of brigade, and re- turned to Italy in time to be of essential service to Bona- parte at Bassano and Corona and Fort St Georges, where he was wounded. He then was sent on a diplomatic mis- sion to Genoa, but returned in time to be present at Rivoli. In the advance into Tyrol in the summer of 1797 he commanded the vanguard, and by his passage of the Tag- liamento hurried on the preliminaries of Leoben. In 1798 he was for a short time commandant at Rome, and then accompanied Bonaparte to Egypt. At the battle of the Pyramids he led his first famous cavalry charge, and so dis- tinguished himself in Syria that he was made general of division. He returned to France with Bonaparte, and on the 18th Brumaire led into the orangery of Saint Cloud the sixty grenadiers whose appearance broke up the Council of Five Hundred. He was, after the

success of the coup détat, made commandant of the consular guard, and in January 1800 married Marie Annonciade Caroline Bona- parte, the youngest sister of the first consul. He com- manded the French cavalry at the battle of Marengo, and was afterwards made governor in the Cisalpine Republic. He was made a marshal of France in 1804; he was titular governor of Paris, was invested with the grand eagle of the Legion of Honour, and appointed grand admiral of France with the title of prince in 1805. He commanded the cavalry of the grand army in the German campaign of 1805, and was so conspicuous at Austerlitz that Napoleon made him grand-duke of Berg and Cleves. He commanded the cavalry at Jena, Hylau, and Friedland, and in 1808 was made general-in-chief of the French armies in Spain. He entered Madrid on 25th March, and did much to hurry on the Spanish policy of Napoleon. The inhabitants of Madrid showed their hatred for the French by murdering on 2d May all the isolated or wounded Frenchmen they could find. Murat vigorously put down the riot, but not cruelly, for only 158 Spaniards fell to 500 Frenchmen; and he hoped for the throne of Spain as his reward. But the throne of Spain was given to Joseph Bonaparte, and Murat received Joseph's former kingdom of Naples.

King Joachim Napoleon, as he called himself, entered Naples in September 1808, and soon won great popularity by his handsome presence and his gaiety of manner. He took Capri from the English, and organized a Neapolitan army of 80,000 infantry and 10,000 cavalry. But his attention was not confined to military matters ; he effected other great reforms in finally abolishing all relics of feud- alism and putting down brigandism. Unfortunately much

injustice was done by General Manhés in this last reform, which seriously affected Murat's popularity in Calabria. He was not present at Aspern or Wagram, but once more commanded the cavalry of the grand army in the Russian campaign of 1812. He manifested his usual headlong valour in the disastrous retreat, but, being offended by Napoleon, he suddenly threw up his command and left for Naples. He then began an intrigue with Austria. Whether it was that he hoped to escape from a doubtful cause or that he was

really offended by Napoleon’s preference for Eugéne Beauharnais is not known, but in March 1813 he sent Prince Cariati to Vienna to declare that he would surrender his claims to Sicily if Austria would guarantee Naples to him. In January 1814 the alliance with Austria was de- clared by Murat’s seizing the principality of Benevento, while Austria promised him Ancona for a force of 30,000 men. At the congress of Vienna his independence was attacked by Talleyrand, who was his personal enemy, and it was as much from distrust of Austria as anything else that he declared in March 1815 that he intended to restore the unity and independence of Italy. He had hoped that Lord William Bentinck, the English general, would have supported him, but in vain. The Austrians steadily ad- vanced, and on 2d May he suffered a disastrous defeat at the battle of Tolentino. With difficulty he escaped, and reached France on 27th May. He offered his sword to Napoleon, who indignantly refused his offer, and he then hid in seclusion near Toulon with a price upon his head. After Waterloo he was refused an asylum in England, and went to Corsica, where he was joined by a few rash spirits, who urged him to strike another blow for his kingdom of Naples. He refused an offer of asylum from Metternich, and started with six ships. Bya great mistake he landed in Calabria, where he was hated for the cruelty of Manhés, on 6th October ; his ships deserted him, and he was taken prisoner by a captain named Trenta-Capilli, whose brother had been executed by Manhés. He was imprisoned in the fort of Pizzo, and on 13th October 1815 was tried by court-martial, under a law of his own, for disturbing the public peace and was sentenced to be shot in half an hour. After writing a touching letter of farewell to his wife and children, he bravely met his fate, and was buried at Pizzo.

As a king much good can be said of him; by his valour he had risen from nothing to royalty, and instead of being careless of the good of his adopted country he showed himself a truly wise king. Asa general he was the most dashing cavalry leader of the age, and, as he himself said, his presence at Waterloo would have given more concentrated power to the French cavalry charges, and possibly success. As a man he was rash, hot-tempered, and impetuously brave ; he was adored by his troopers, who followed their idol, the “golden eagle,” into the most terrible fire and against the most terrible odds.

For the life of Murat and his rule in Naples consult Vie de Joachim Murat, by M* * **, 1815; A{cmorie sulla condotta politica e milttare tenuta da Gioacchino Murat, 1815; Gioacchino Murat, o Storia del Reame di Napoli dal 1800 al 1815, Milan, 1839 ; Cam- pagnes des Autrichicns contre Murat en 1815, by V** * C* * de Br., Brussels, 1821; and particularly Freiherr von Helfert, Joachim Murat, seine lctzten Kéimpfe und scine Ende, Vienna, 1878. For his daring attempt in 1815 and his death see A. de Beauchamp, Catastrophe de Murat, 1815; Francis Macirone, Interesting facts relating to the fall and death of Joachim Murat, King of Naples, London, 1817 ; P. Colletta, Pochi fatti su Gioacchino Murat, Naples, 1820, correcting Macirone, and translated by L. Gallois, Paris, 1828 ; Galvani, Mémoires sur les Evénements qui out précédé la mort dc Joachim, roi des Deux Siciles, Paris, 1843; and Jean de la Rocca, Le Rot Murat ct ses dernicrs jours, from the papers of Multedo, who accompanied the king, Paris, 1868. (H. M. 8.)

MURATORI, Lupovico Anron1o(1672-1750), a learned Italian scholar, historian, and antiquary, was born at Vig- nola in the duchy of Modena 21st October 1672. Whilst still young he attracted the attention of Father Bacchini,

the librarian of the duke of Modena, by whom he was inspired with a taste for historical and antiquarian research, and introduced to the study of MSS. Having taken minor orders in 1688, Muratori proceeded to his degree of doctor a utroque jure before 1694, in which year he was appointed by Count Carlo Borromeo one of the doctors of the Ambrosian library at Milan. From manuscripts now placed under his charge, and which had been hitherto neglected, he made a selection of materials for several volumes (Anecdota), which he published with critical and explanatory notes. The reputation he in consequence acquired was such that the duke of Modena offered him the situation of keeper of the public archives of the duchy. Muratori hesitated, until the offer of the additional post of librarian, on the resignation of Father Bacchini, determined him in 1700 to return to Modena. The remainder of his life was an almost uninterrupted course of ardent and indefatigable

intellectual labour. The preparation of numerous valuable tracts on the history of Italy during the Middle Ages, and of dissertations and discussions on obscure points of his- torical and antiquarian interest, as well as the publication of his various philosophical, theological, legal, poetical, and other works absorbed the greater part of his time and attention. These as they successively appeared added to his growing reputation, and brought him into communica- tion with the most distinguished scholars of Italy, France, and Germany. But they also exposed him in his later years to the machinations of the envious. His enemies spread abroad the rumour that the pope, Benedict XIV., had discovered in his writings passages strongly savouring of heresy, even of atheism. Muratori appealed to the pope, repudiating the accusation. His Holiness assured him of his protection, and, without expressing his appro- bation of the opinions in question of the learned anti- quary, freed him from the imputations of his enemies. Muratori died, after a lengthened illness, on 23d January 1750, and was buried with much pomp in the church of Santa Maria di Pomposa, in connexion with which he had laboured as a diligent parish priest for many years. His remains were afterwards, in the year 1774, removed to the church of St Augustin.

The most important of the works of Muratori, which amounted altogether to upwards of sixty-four, are: Aneedota ex Ambrosianz Bibliotheew Codd., Milan, 1697, 1698; Padua, 17138, 2 vols. 4to ; Ancedota Greca, Padua, 1709, 3 vols. 4to;

MURCHISON, Sir Roperick Impey (1792-1871), geologist, was descended from a small clan or sept which for many generations lived in the west of Ross-shire, furnish- ing factors for some of the greater lairds, occupants of farms among the western sea-lochs, and even occasionally a parish minister. His father, educated as a medical man, acquired a competent fortune in India, and while still in the prime of life returned to Scotland, where, marrying one of the Mackenzies of Fairburn, he purchased the estate of Tarradale in eastern Ross and settled for a few years as a resident Highland landlord. At Tarradale his eldest son, the subject of this notice, was born on 19th February 1792. Young Murchison left the Highlands when only three years old, and at the age of seven was sent to the grammar school of

Durham, where during six years he received the only connected general education he ever

obtained. He was then placed at the military college, Great Marlow, to be trained for the army. With some difficulty he succeeded in passing the not very stringent examinations of the time, and at the age of fifteen was gazetted ensign in the 36th regiment. A year later (1808) he landed with Wellesley in Galicia, and was present at the actions of Roriga and Vimiera. Subsequently under Sir John Moore he took part in the retreat to Corunna and the final battle there. These six months of active service formed the only part of his military career in which he was exposed to the hardships and dangers of actual warfare. The defeat of Napoleon at Waterloo seeming to close the prospect of advancement in the military pro- fession, Murchison, after eight years of service, quitted the army, and married the daughter of General Hugonin, of Nursted House, Hampshire. With her he then spent rather more than two years on the Continent, particularly in Italy, where her cultivated tastes were of signal influence in guiding his pursuits. He threw himself with all the enthusiasm of his character into the study of art and antiquities, and for the first time in his life tasted the pleasures of truly intellectual pursuits.

Returning to England in 1818, he sold his paternal property in Ross-shire and settled in England, where, find- ing art studies no longer practicable, he took heart and soul to field-sports. He soon became one of the greatest fox-hunters in the northern counties; but at last, getting weary of such pursuits and meeting Sir Humphrey Davy, who urged him to turn his energy to science, he was in- duced to attend lectures at the Royal Institution. This change in the current of his occupations was much helped by the sympathy of his wife, who, besides her artistic acquirements, took much interest in some branches of natural history. Eager and enthusiastic in whatever he undertook, he was soon fascinated by the young science of geology, and threw himself heartily into its prosecution. He joined the Geological Society of London and soon showed himself one of its most active members, having as his colleagues there such men as Sedgwick, Lyell, Buck- land, Herschel, Whewell, and Babbage. Exploring with his wife the geology of the south of England, he devoted special attention to the rocks of the north-west of Sussex and the adjoining parts of Hants and Surrey, on which he wrote his first scientific paper, read to the Society towards the close of 1825. From that early period on to the end of his long life his industry and enthusiasm

remained pre- eminent. Though he had reached the age of thirty-two before he took any interest in science, he developed his taste and increased his knowledge so rapidly by unwearied dili- gence that in the first three years of his scientific career he had explored large parts of England and Scotland, had obtained materials for three important memoirs, as well as for two more written in conjunction with Sedgwick, and from the position of a mere beginner had risen to bea prominent member of the Geological Society and one of its two secretaries.

Turning his attention for a little to Continental geology, he explored with Lyell the volcanic region of Auvergne, parts of southern France, northern Italy, Tyrol, and Switzerland. A little later, with Sedgwick as his com- panion, he attacked the difficult problem of the geological structure of the Alps, and their joint paper giving the results of their study will always be regarded as one of the classics in the literature of Alpine geology.

It was in the year 1831 that Murchison found the field in which the chief work of his life was to be accom- plished. Acting on a suggestion made to him by Buck- land he betook himself to the borders of Wales, with the view of endeavouring to discover whether the greywacke rocks underlying the Old Red Sandstone could be grouped

into a definite order of succession, as the Secondary rocks of England had been made to tell their story by William Smith. For several years he continued to work vigorously in that region. The result was the establishment of the Silurian system,—a definite section of the geological record, bringing into notice for the first time a remarkable series of formations, each replete with distinctive organic remains older than and very different from those of the other rocks of England. The full import of his discoveries! was not at first perceived ; but as years passed on the types of existence brought to light by him from the rocks of the border counties of England and Wales were ascertained to belong to a geological period of which there are recog- nizable traces in almost all parts of the globe. Thus the term “Silurian,” derived from the name of the old British tribe Silures, soon passed into the familiar vocabulary of geologists in every country.

The establishment of the Silurian system was followed by that of the Devonian system, an investigation in which Sedgwick and Murchison were fellow-labourers, both in the south-west of England and in the Rhinelands. Soon after- wards Murchison projected an important geological cam- paign in Russia with the view of extending to that part of the Continent the classification he had succeeded in elaborating for the older rocks of western Europe. He was accompanied by De Verneuil and Keyserling, in con- junction with whom he produced a magnificent work on Russia and the Ural Mountains. The publication of this monograph in 1845 completes the first and most active half of Murchison's scientific career.

In 1846 he was knighted, and later in the same year he presided over the meeting of the British Association at Southampton. During the later years of his life a large part of his time was devoted to the affairs of the Royal Geographical Society, of which he became president. So constant and active were his exertions on behalf of geo- graphical exploration that to a large section of the con- temporary public he was known rather as a geographer than as a geologist. He particularly identified himself with the fortunes of David Livingstone in Africa, and did much to raise and keep alive the sympathy of his fellow- countrymen in the fate of that great explorer. The chief geological investigation of the last decade of his life was devoted to the Highlands of Scotland, where he suc- ceeded in showing that the vast masses of crystalline schists, previously supposed to be part of what used to be termed the Primitive formations, were really not older than the Silurian period, for that underneath them lay beds of limestone and quartzite containing Lower Silurian fossils. By this important discovery he not only changed at once the accepted views of the structure of half a king- dom but furnished a gigantic example of regional meta- morphism, the true significance of which in regard to theories of metamorphism is not yet adequately appreciated.

In the year 1855 Murchison was appointed director- general of the geological survey and director of the Royal School of Mines and Geological Museum, Jermyn Street, London, in succession to Sir Henry de la Beche, who had been the first to hold these offices. Official routine now Occupied much of his time, but he found opportunity for the Highland researches just alluded to, and also for pre- paring successive editions of his work Siluria,

which was meant to present the main features of the original Silurian System together with a digest of subsequent discoveries, particularly of those which showed the extension of the Silurian classification into other countries. His official position gave him still further opportunity for the exercise

ue The results of these researches were embodied in a massive quarto volume entitled The Silurian System (London, 1839).

of those social functions for which he had always been distinguished, and which a considerable fortune inherited from near relatives on his mother's side enabled him to display on a greater scale. His house was one of the great centres where science, art, literature, politics, and social eminence were brought together in friendly inter- course. In 1863 he was made a K.C.B., and three years later was raised to the dignity of a baronet. The learned societies of his own country bestowed their highest rewards upon him: the Royal Society gave him the Copley medal, the Geological Society its Wollaston medal, and the Royal Society of Edinburgh its Brisbane medal. There was hardly a foreign scientific society of note which had not his name enrolled among its honorary members. The French Academy of Sciences awarded to him the Prix Cuvier, and elected him one of its eight foreign members in succession to Faraday.

One of the closing public acts of Murchison's life was the founding of a chair of geology and mineralogy in the university of Edinburgh, for which he gave the sum of £6000, an annual sum of £200 being likewise provided by a vote in parliament for the endowment of the pro- fessorship. While the negotiations with the Government in regard to this subject were still in progress, Murchison was seized with a paralytic affection on 21st November 1870. At first his life was in danger, but he eventually rallied, and was able to see his friends, read, and take in- terest in current affairs until the early autumn of the fol- lowing year, when his malady began to make rapid progress. At last after a brief attack of bronchitis he died on 22d October 1871.

The chief work for which Murchison will always hold a high place in the annals of geology is the investigation of the older Paleozoic rocks, which culminated in the establishment and subse- quent development of the Silurian system of formations. He added a new chapter to geological history, and one of peculiar interest, because it contains the story of almost the earliest appearance of living things upon this planet. From the year 1825, when his first paper was read, down to the year of his death he continued to augment the literature of his favourite science with papers and memoirs. These, upwards of 150 in number, were published in the transactions of scientific societies at home and abroad. His Szlu- rian System, Russia and the Ural Mountains, and Siluria were the most voluminous and important of his independent works. Asa careful original observer, a sympathetic and liberal friend of scientific progress, and a man of wealth and good social position Murchison enjoyed a peculiar eminence among the scientific men of his day, and occupied a place which none of his surviving compcers could wholly fill. See Murchison's Life by A. Geikie, 1875. (A. GE.)

MURCIA, a maritime province of south-eastern Spain, is bounded on the E. and 8. by Alicante and the Mediter- ranean, on the W. by Almeria and Granada, and on the N. by Albacete, and has an area of 4478 square miles. The total extent of coast is about 75 miles; from Cape Palos westwards to Villaricos Point (where Almeria begins) it is fringed by hills reaching their greatest elevation immediately to the east of Cartagena; northwards from Cape Palos to the Alicante boundary a low and sandy tongue of land encloses the shallow lagoon called Mar Menor. Eastward from the Mar Menor and northward from Cartagena stretches the plain known as E] Campo de Cartagena, but the surface of the rest of the province is diversified by ranges of hills of which the general direction, connecting the mountains of Almeria and Granada with those of Alicante, is from south-west to north-east, and which reach their highest point (5150 feet) on the Sierra de Espuiia, between the Mula and Sangonera valleys. They belong to the Nevada system, and their geology will be best treated in connexion with that of Spain generally ; they are rich in iron, copper, and argentiferous lead, and also yield large quantities of alum, sulphur, and salt- petre; and important mineral springs occur at Mula, Archena (hot sulphur), and Alhama (hot chalybeate).

The greater part of the province drains into the Mediter- ranean, chiefly by the Segura, which enters it in the north- west below Hellin in Albacete, and leaves it a little above Orihuela in Alicante; within the province it receives on the left the Arroyo del Jua, and on the right the Cara- vaca, Quipar, Mula, and Sangonera. The insignificant “arroyos” of Nogalte and Albujon fall directly into the Mediterranean and the Mar Menor respectively. The climate is hot and dry, and agriculture is largely dependent on irrigation, which, where practicable, has been carried on since the time of the Moors with great success. Besides the usual cereals (wheat, barley, maize), hemp, oil, and wine (the latter somewhat rough in quality) are produced ; fruit, especially the orange, is abundant along the course of the Segura; mulberries for sericulture are extensively grown around the capital; and the number of bees kept throughout the province is exceptionally large. Esparto grass is gathered on the sandy tracts suited to its growth. The live stock consists chiefly of asses, mules, goats, and pigs, horses and sheep being relatively few. Apart from agriculture, the principal industry is that of mining, which has its centre near Cartagena; next comes the culture of the silkworm, the greater part of the crop being exported for manufacture in France. Large quantities of lead and esparto, as well as of zinc, iron, and copper ores and sulphur, are exported from Cartagena ; from Aguilas the chief exports are esparto and agricultural produce ; the port of Mazarron has some trade in alum as well. The province is traversed by a railway line which connects Albacete with Cieza, Archena, Murcia, Orihuela, and Cartagena ; the capital is also connected with Lorca and Alicante by good high roads. The communications other- wise are somewhat defective. The canal to connect Huescar in Granada with Cartagena remains only a project. The population of the province in 1877 was 451,611. Besides the cities of Murcia, Cartagena, and Lorca, the following towns in that year had a population exceeding 5000 :— Abanilla, Aguilas, Alhama, Bullas, Caravaca, Cehegin, Cieza, Fortuna, Fuente-Alamo, Jumilla, Mazarron, Molina, Mora- talla, Mula, Torre-Pacheco, Totana, La Union, Yecla.

The province of Murcia was the first Spanish possession of the Carthaginians, by whom Nova Carthago was founded. The Romans included it in Hispania Tarraconensis. Under the Arabs the province was

known as Todmir, which included, according to Edrisi, the cities Murcia, Orihuela, Cartagena, Lorca, Mula, and Chinchilla. The kingdom of Murcia, which came into independent existence after the fall of the Omayvads, included the present Albacete as well as

Murcia. It became subject to the crown of Castile in the 13th century. Until 1833 the modern province also included Albacete.

Morcta, a city of Spain, capital of the above province, stands on the Segura, nearly in the centre of the beautiful and fertile valley known as the “huerta” or garden of Murcia, which is sheltered on the south by the eastward continuation of the Sierras Alcaraz and Segura, and on the north by the low hills of the Sierras de Molina. The main part of the town stands on the left bank of the river, and is connected with the suburb of San Benito on the right by a very fine stone bridge of two arches. The streets are mostly broad, straight, and well paved ; the chief shops are in the narrow Calles de Plateria and Traperia, which are also a favourite resort with loungers, being shaded with awnings of canvas in hot weather. The chief square is the Plaza de la Constitucion, which is planted with orange and other trees; other promenades are the Paseos del Carmen and de Florida Blanca. Of public buildings the most prominent is the cathedral, a late Gothic (1388- 1467) structure with a Corinthian facade in the taste of the 17th century ; the tower is also composite, having been begun in 1521 and completed in 1766. Murcia has been the seat of the bishop of Cartagena since 1261; the present palace was erected in 1748-52. Near it are the

colleges of San Fulgencio and San Isidoro. Other con- spicuous public buildings are the hospital of San Juan de Dios, the silk and saltpetre factories, and the “alhondiga” or grain warehouse. The bull-ring is in San Benito. The manufactures of the town are not important ; the chief articles of commerce are the silk grown on the huerta, fruit, and agricultural produce. The population in 1877 was

91,805.

Murcia has been identified by some with the Roman Vergilia. In the time of Edrisi it was the populous and strongly-fortified capital of the country of Todmir. It was taken in 1240 by Don Alfonso (afterwards King Alfonso el Sabio), who by his own request lies buried here. The town was plundered by General Sebastiant, and in 1810 and again in 1812 suffered from the attack of a detach- ment of Soult's army. In 1829 an earthquake caused considerable injury, especially to the cathedral.

MURDER, MANSLAUGHTER. In the law of England the unlawful killing of a human being is either murder or manslaughter according as it is or is not accom- panied by circumstances constituting the element of malice aforethought. That, according to the old definition of Coke, is the criterion by which murder is distinguished from manslaughter.1 In like manner Blackstone lays it down as a "general rule" that all homicide is in the eye of the law malicious, and therefore murder, unless it is either justified by the command or permission of the law, excused on account of accident or self-preservation, or allemated into manslaughter by being the involuntary consequence of some act not strictly lawful, or occasioned by some sudden and sufficiently violent provocation. An exact account of these related offences can only be obtained by an examination of a vast number of judicial decisions, most of which are to be found in the ordinary text-books. (See, more particularly, Russell On Crimes and Misde- meanours.) The task of evolving exact definitions from this mass of material has been successfully undertaken by Mr Justice Stephen, and we cannot do better than present here the conclusions at which he has arrived. Art. 223 of his Digest of the Criminal Law is as follows :—" Man- slaughter is unlawful homicide without malice aforethought. Murder is unlawful homicide with malice aforethought. Malice aforethought means any one or more of the follow- ing states of mind preceding or coexisting with the act or omission by which death is caused, and it may exist when that act is unpremeditated : —(a) an intention to cause the death of, or grievous bodily harm to, any per- son, whether such person is the person actually killed or not; (6) knowledge that the act which causes death will probably cause the death of, or grievous bodily harm to, some person, whether such person is the person actually killed or not, although such knowledge is accompanied by indifference whether death or grievous bodily harm is caused or not, or by a wish that it may not be caused ; (c) an intent to commit any felony whatever ; (d) an in-

tent to oppose by force any officer of justice on his way to, on, or returning from the execution of the duty of arresting, keeping in custody, or imprisoning any person whom he is lawfully entitled to arrest, keep in custody, or imprison, or the duty of keepimg the peace or dispersing an unlawful assembly, provided that the offender has notice that the person killed is such an officer so employed." The expression 'officer of justice" in this clause includes every person who has a legal right to do any of the acts mentioned, whether he is an officer or a private person. Notice may be given either by word, by the production of a warrant or other legal authority, by the known official character of the person killed, or by the circumstances of the case. Art. 224 states that "homicide which would

1 "When a person of sound memory and discretion unlawfully

killeth any reasonable creature in being and under the king's peace with malice aforethought either express or implied" (Coke, 3 Jnst.).

otherwise be murder is not murder but manslaughter if the act by which death is caused is done in the heat of passion, caused by provocation," the acts amounting to which are enumerated. But provocation does not extenuate the offence "' unless the person provoked is at the time when he does the act deprived of the power of self-control by the pro- vocation which he has received, and in deciding the ques- tion whether this was or was not the case regard must be had to the nature of the act by which the offender caused death, to the time which elapsed between the provocation and the act which caused death, to the offender's conduct during that interval, and to all other circumstances tend- ing to show the state of his mind."

The law of the future is almost certainly to be found in the draft code presented by the Criminal Code Bill Com- missioners of 1879, and founded on Mr Justice Stephen's Digest above cited. The enactment of this measure being a mere question of time some of its provisions may usefully be stated here.

After defining homicide and culpable homicide, the code (sect. 74) declares culpable homicide to be murder in the following cases :—(a) if the offender means to cause the death of the person killed; (0) if the offender means to cause to the person killed any bodily injury which is known to the offender to be likely to cause death, and if the offender, whether he does or does not mean to cause death, is reckless whether death ensues or not; (c) if the offender means to cause death or such bodily injury as aforesaid to one person, so that if that person be killed the offender would be guilty of murder, and by accident or mistake the offender kills another person though he does not mean to hurt the person killed; (d) if the offender for any unlawful object does an act which he knows or ought to have known to be likely to cause death, and thereby kills any person, though he may have desired that his object should be effected without hurting any one.

Further (sect. 75), it is murder (whether the offender means or not death to ensue, or knows or not that death is likely to ensue) in the following cases : —“ (a) if he means to inflict grievous bodily injury for the purpose of facilitating the commission of any of the offences hereinafter mentioned, or the flight of the offender upon the commis- sion or attempted commission thereof, and death ensues from his violence; (0) if he administers any stupefying thing for either of the purposes aforesaid and death ensues from the effects thereof ; (c) if he by any means wilfully stops the breath of any person for either of the purposes aforesaid and death ensues from such stopping of the breath.” The following are the offences referred to :—‘“high treason and other offences against the queen’s authority, piracy and offences deemed to be piracy, escape or rescue from prison or lawful custody, resisting lawful appre- hension, murder, rape, forcible abduction, robbery, burglary, arson.” The code (sect. 76) reduces culpable homicide to manslaughter if the person who causes death does so “in the heat of passion caused by sudden provoca- tion ;” and “any wrongful act or insult of such a nature as to be sufficient to deprive any ordinary person of the power of self-control may be provocation if the offender acts upon it on the sudden, and before there has been time for his passion to cool.” Whether any particular wrongful act or Insult amounts to provocation and whether the offender was deprived of self-control shall be questions of fact ; but no one shall be deemed to give provocation by doing that Which he had a legal right to do, or which the offender incited him to do in order to provide an

excuse for killing him or doing grievous bodily harm. Further, “an arrest shall not necessarily reduce the offence from murder to manslaughter because an arrest was illegal, but if the ille-

a)

gality was known to the offender it may be evidence of provocation.” The “provocation” clause is not very happily expressed and will doubtless have to be recast. America.—The most notable difference between England and the United States in regard to the law on this subject is the recognition by recent State legislation of degrees in murder. English law treats all unlawful killing not reducible to manslaughter as of the same degree of guilt. American statutes seek to discriminate between the graver and the less serious forms of the crime. Thus an Act of the legislature of Pennsylvania (22d April 1794) declares all murder which shall be perpetrated by means of poison or by lying in wait or by any other kind of wilful, deliberate, and premeditated killing, or which shall be committed in the perpetration of or attempt to perpetrate any arson, rape, robbery, or burglary shall be deemed murder of the first degree ; and all other kinds of murder shall be deenied murder of the second degree. This statute, says Bishop (Commentaries on the Criminal Law, vol. ii. § 745), ‘‘is the parent of all the others.” In Michigan it has been enacted in exact words; and in most of the other States which have adopted this line of legislation the departure from the language of the Pennsylvania provision is not such as calls for the application of different prin- ciples of interpretation. It is pointed out by Bishop that the lan- guage used in these statutes to discriminate the degrees of murder is similar to that by which the common law distinction between murder and manslaughter is usually expressed. Thus in Massachu- setts murder committed with ‘“‘deliberately premeditated malice aforethought ” is in the first degree. In Indiana the expression used is ‘‘purposely and of deliberate and premeditated malice.” The technical interpretation of ‘‘malice aforethought”’ in English law is of course inapplicable to these phrases. There are also statutory degrees of manslaughter in the legislation of some of the States, but Bishop observes that ‘‘the books do not contain sufficient ad- judications to direct us into a profitable discussion of this subject.”

For some historical account of the law reference should be made to Mr Justice Stephen's History of the Criminal Law of England (London, 1883), vol. iii. c. 26. Stephen finds in the laws of Alfred the earliest and most important recog- nition of the properly criminal consequences of homicide as distinguished from the damages to be paid to the family of the deceased and the compensation to be made to the person whose peace had been broken, which are the prominent points of the early law of homicide.

MURDOCK, Wirt1am (1754-1839), inventor, was born near the village of Auchinleck in Ayrshire on 25th August 1754. His father, John Murdoch (as the name is spelt in Scotland), was a millwright and miller, and William was brought up in the same occupation until 1777, when, at the age of twenty-three, he entered the employment of Boulton and Watts in the Soho Works at Birmingham. Shortly afterwards he was sent to Corn- wall to superintend the fitting of Watts's engines, which had come to be in demand there. While staying at Red- ruth he had carried a series of experiments in the distil- lation of coal-gas so far that in 1792 he was able to apply the new invention to the purpose of lighting his cottage and offices; renewing his researches after his return to Birmingham (where he had become a partner in the firm), he made such progress in the discovery of practical methods for making, storing, and purifying the new illumi- nant that in 1802 the whole exterior of the factory was lighted with it in celebration of the peace of Amiens. Murdock was also the inventor of important improvements in the steam-engine; besides introducing the double D slide-valve, he was the first to devise an oscillating engine, and as early as 1784 he had constructed a model high- pressure engine torunon wheels. His inventive ingenuity was also directed to various applications of compressed air and of the exhausted air-tube ; and in 1803 he also con- structed a steam-gun. He retired from business in 1830, and died in 1839. His "Account of the Application of the Gas from Coal to Economical Purposes" appeared in the Phil. Trans. for 1808.

MURE, Wi11am (1799-1860), historian of Greek litera- ture, was born at the family seat near Caldwell, Ayrshire, Scotland, 9th July 1799. He was educated at West- minster school and Edinburgh, and he spent several years at the university of Bonn, where he laid the foundations of his classical

knowledge. From 1846 to 1855 he repre- sented the county of Renfrew in parliament in the Con- servative interest, and he was lord rector of Glasgow

university in 1847-48. For many years he devoted his leisure to Greek studies, and in 1850-57 he published five volumes of a Critical History of the Language and Lntera- ture of Ancient Greece, which, however, he did not live to complete. While C. O. Miiller's work, as translated and continued by Donaldson, is the best general history of Greek literature in English, Mure's treatment of the Homeric poems, of the lyric poets, and of the historians of the Attic period is the fullest in our language, and is everywhere marked by thorough knowledge, at first hand, of the Greek authors. Of the unity of the authorship of the Iliad and Odyssey he is a strenuous defender, attribut- ing both to the one person, Homer. Colonel Mure was for many years commandant of the Renfrewshire militia. He died at London on 1st April 1860. ~

His other works are—Remarks on the Chronology of the Egyptian Dynasties, 1829; Dissertation on the Calendar of the Zodiac of Aneient Egypt, Edinburgh, 1832 ; Journal of a Tour in Greeee and the Ionian Islands in 1838, Edinburgh, 1842. He also edited the Caldwell Papers, 3 vols., for the Maitland Club.

MURET, or Murerus, Marc Anrornz (1526-1585), French humanist, was born of respectable parentage at Muret near Limoges on 12th April 1526. Nothing is recorded of his early education, but at the age of eighteen he was already sufficiently accomplished to attract the notice of the elder Scaliger, and to be invited to prelect upon Cicero and 'Terence in the archiepiscopal college at Auch. He afterwards taught Latin at Villeneuve, and then at Bordeaux, where the youthful Montaigne was one of his pupils and played some of the principal parts in his Latin tragedies. Some time before 1552 he received a regency in the college of Cardinal Lemoine at Paris, and his brilliant lectures were largely attended, Henry II. and his queen being occasionally, it is recorded, among his hearers. His success seems to have excited more than the usual amount of envy; and in consequence of a dis- graceful charge—which, however, was never established— he was thrown into prison. Here he had begun to carry out a resolution to starve himself to

death, when the exer- tions of powerful friends procured lis release. Hardly had he resumed lecturing at Toulouse when his career was again cut short by a new charge similar to that which had proved so disastrous at Paris ; he saved his life by timely flight, but the records of the town bear that he was burned in effigy as a Huguenot and as shamefully immoral (1554). After a wandering and insecure life of some years in Italy, he received and accepted the invitation of the Cardinal dEste to settle in Rome in 1559. Henceforward his life was one of unclouded prosperity. He was even able to revisit France in 1561 as a member of the cardinal's suite at the colloquy of Poissy. The interest shown in his lec- tures on the Hthics of Aristotle, and on the Pandects, almost recalled his early successes in Paris, and in 1578 his services as a teacher of jurisprudence were sought by the "natio Germanorum" studying law at Padua, and also by the king of Poland for his new college at Cracow. Muretus, however, who about 1576 had taken holy orders, was induced by the liberality of the pope to remain in Rome, where he died on 4th June 1585.

The first collected edition of the works of Muretus appeared at Verona in 1727-1730 (5 vols. 8vo) ; a more complete edition was published by Ruhnken at Leyden in 1789 (4 vols. 8vo) ; there is also an edition by Frotscher and Koch (8 vols., Leipsic, 1834-41), and two volumes of Scripta selecta have been edited by Frey (Leipsic, 1871- 73). He annotated wholly or partially, in a learned and scholarly way that has proved more or less serviceable to subsequent editors, Terence, Horace, Catullus, Tibullus, Propertius, Tacitus, Sallust, Cicero, Aristotle, Xenophon. His other works include Juvenilia et poemata varia, Orationes, and Epistole. His merits as a stylist at one time secured for his Orationes a place among Latin school-books, but, although, according to his pupil Montaigne, he was recog- nized alike by France and Italy to be "' the best orator of his time," the modern judgment must rather be in substance that of a later

critic, that, if he ''appears to have had a more delicate ear than almost any of the moderns and his Latinity surpasses in elegance that of any of the Romans themselves, excepting Cicero and Cesar," he at the same time was ''conceited, fautastical, and weakly- minded" (Landor, Jm. Conv., ''

Chesterfield and Chatham ”). MURGER, Henry (1822-1861), French man-of-letters, was born in February 1822 at Paris. His father was a concierge, with which employment he combined the trade of tailoring. At the age of fifteen Murger was sent into a lawyer’s office, but the occupation was very uncongenial to him, and his father’s trade still more so. He thus incurred the paternal displeasure, and in his devotion to literature and liberty began to meet with not a few of the hardships which he afterwards described. He was, however, for a time saved from actual want by the employment of secretary to the Russian Count Tolstoy, which was procured for him by M. de Jouy (an old academician of the classical faction, but a very kind friend to youthful literary aspirants) in the year 1838. For the next ten years little positive is known of Murger’s life except that it probably provided the experi- ences, and certainly supplied him with the ideas, of his most famous book. He made his first independent appear- ance as an author in 1843 with a book entitled Via Dolorosa, but it made no mark. He also tried journalism, and the paper Ze Castor, which figures in the Vie de Bohéme, and which combined devotion to the interests of the hat trade with recondite philosophy and elegant litera- ture, is said to have been a fact, though a shortlived one, At length he was introduced to better work, either in the Corsaire, then a favourite organ of the second romantic generation, or in the Artiste; for both stories are told. In 1848 appeared the collected sketches called the Vie de Bohéme. This book, which is of its kind famous, describes the fortunes and misfortunes, the loves, studies, amuse- ments, and sufferings, of a group of impecunious students, artists, and men of letters, of whom Rodolphe represents Murger himself, while the others have been more or less positively identified. Murger, in fact, belonged to a set or clique of so-called Bohemians, the most remarkable of whom, besides hunself, were Privat d’Anglemont and Champfleury. The Scénes dela Vie de Bohéme have been very variously judged. Their very easy-going morality, and the supposed danger of their pictures in prompting to imitation have prejudiced some readers against the book. It is fair, however, to Murger to say that he neither holds up the Bohemian as a hero, nor in the least disguises the hardship and the folly of his ways. He was himself an instance of the dangers of Bohemianism. From the date above mentioned it was perfectly easy for him to make a comfortable living by journalism and general literature. He was introduced in 1851 to the Revue des Deux Mondes, and contributed to it for two or three years, and he never had any

difficulty in securing or keeping literary employment. But he was a slow, a fastidious, and a very capricious worker, and his years of hardship and dissipation had very seriously impaired his health. He continued, however, to produce work pretty regularly, publishing Claude et Marianne in 1851, Le Dernier Rendezvous and Le Pays Latin in 1852, Adeline Protat (one of the most graceful and innocent if not the most original of his tales) in 1853, and Les Buveurs d'Eau in 1854. This last, the most powerful of his books next to the Vie de Bohéme, exhibits a reverse side to the picture by tracing the fate of certain artists and students who, exaggerating their own powers and foolishly disdaining merely profitable work, come to an evil end not less rapidly if more respectably than by dissipation. Some years before his death, which took place in a maison de santé near Paris on 28th January 1861, Murger went to live at Marlotte, near Fontainebleau, and it was there that he wrote, and in 1859 published, an unequal book entitled Le Sabot Rouge,

in which the character of the French peasant is very uncom- plimentarily treated. Besides the books already mentioned, Murger's published works fill several volumes of prose and one of verse. The poems contained in the latter (Les Nuits @Hiver) are not very strong, but graceful and fre- quently pathetic. The prose volumes, with the exception of a novel of some scale, Les Rouertes de ' Ingénue (which the author left unfinished at his death), consist almost exclusively of short tales in the manner, and more or less on the subject, of the Vie de Bohéme. All exhibit the same characteristics—an excellent descriptive faculty, lively humour in drawing the follies of youth, frequently pathos, and not seldom a tender and poetical melancholy.

MURILLO, Barrotomé Esrrepan (1617-1682), the greatest ecclesiastical painter of Spain, was the son of Gaspar Esteban Murillo and Maria Perez, and was born at Seville in 1617, probably at the very end of the year, as he was baptized on 1st January 1618. Esteban-Murillo appears to have been the compound surname of the father, but some inquirers consider that, in accordance with a fre- quent Andalusian custom, the painter assumed the surname of his maternal grandmother, Elvira Murillo, in addition to that of his father. His parents (of whom nothing dis- tinct is known, save that they

were of a humble class), having been struck with the precocious sketches with which the unlettered boy was accustomed to adorn whatever available surface came in his way, wisely resolved to place him under the care of their distant relative, Juan del Castillo, the painter. Juan, a correct draughtsman and dry colourist, taught him all the mechanical parts of his profession with extreme care, and Murillo proved himself an apt and docile pupil. The artistic appliances of his master's studio were by no means abundant, and were often of the simplest kind. A few casts, some stray fragments of sculpture, and a lay figure formed the principal aids available in those days for the Sevillian student of art. A living model was a luxury generally beyond the means of the school, but on great occasions the youths would strip in turn and proffer an arm or a leg to be studied by their fellows. Objects of still life, however, were much studied by Murillo, and he early learned to hit off the ragged urchins of Seville pursuing their adventures in the market-place. Murillo in a few years painted as well as his master, and as stiffly. His two pictures of the Virgin, executed during this period, show how thoroughly he had mastered the style, with all its defects. Castillo was a very kind man, but his removal to Cadiz in 1639-40 threw lis favourite pupil entirely upon his own resources. The fine school of Zurbaran was too expensive for the poor lad ; his parents were cither dead or too poor to help him, and he was compelled to earn his bread by painting rough pictures for the "feria" or public fair of Seville. The religious daubs exposed at that mart were generally of as low an order as the prices paid for them by their rude purchasers. A "pintura de la feria" (a picture for the fair) was a proverbial expression for an execrably bad one; yet the street painters who thronged the market-place with their "clumsy saints and unripe Madonnas" not unfrequently rose to be able and even famous artists. This rough-and-ready practice, partly for the market-place, partly for converts in Mexico and Peru, for whom Madonnas and popular saints were produced and shipped off by the dozen, doubtless increased Murillo's manual dexterity ; but, if we may judge from the picture of the Virgin and Child still shown in the Murillo- Toom at Seville as belonging to this period, he made but little improvement in colouring or in general strength of design. Struck by the favourable change which travel had wrought upon the style of his brother artist Pedro de Moya, Murillo in 1642 resolved to make a journey to Flanders or Italy in quest of further insight into art. But how was

frio or cold style.

he, already struggling for existence and with a poor sister dependent on him, to raise the means necessary for such an expedition? Having bought a large quantity of canvas, he cut it into squares of different sizes, which he converted into pictures of a kind likely to sell, The American traders at once bought up his pieces, and he now found himself sufficiently rich to carry out his much-cherished design. He placed his sister under the care of some friends, and without divulging his plans to any one set out for Madrid. On reaching the capital he waited on Velazquez, his fellow- townsman, the great court-painter, then at the summit of his fortune, and, communicating to him his simple story, asked for some introduction to friends in Rome. The master liked what he saw of the manly youth, and in the noblest manner offered him lodging in his own house, and proposed to procure him admission to the royal galleries of the capital. Murillo accepted the offer, and here enjoyed the masterpieces of Italy and Flanders without travelling beyond the walls of Madrid. The next two years were chiefly spent in copying from Ribera, Vandyck, and Velazquez; and in 1644 he so greatly astonished the latter with some of his efforts that they were submitted to the inspection of the king and the court. His patron now urged him to go to Rome, and offered him letters to smooth his way; but Murillo, from whatever cause, preferred re- turning to his sister and his native Seville.

The friars of the convent of San Francisco in Seville had about this time piously determined to adorn the walls of their small cloister in a manner worthy of their patron saint. But the brotherhood had no money; and after endless begging they still found themselves incapable of employing an artist of name to execute the task. Murillo was needy, and offered his services ; after balancing their own poverty against his obscurity the friars bade him begin. Murillo covered the walls with eleven large pictures of remarkable power and beauty,—displaying by turns the strong colouring of Ribera, the life-like truthfulness of Velazquez, and the swectness of Vandyck. Among them were to be found representations of San Francisco, of San Diego, of Santa Clara, and of San Gil. These pictures were executed in his earliest style, commonly called his It was based chiefly on Ribera and

Caravaggio, and was dark with a decided outline. This rich collection is no longer to be met with in Seville ; Marshal Soult carried off ten of the works. The fame of these striking productions soon got abroad, and “El Claustro Chico ” swarmed daily with artists and critics. Af{urillo was no longer friendless and unknown. ‘The rich and the noble of Seville overwhelmed him with their commissions and their praises.

In 1648 Murillo married a wealthy lady of rank, Dona Beatriz de Cabrera y Sotomayor, of the neighbourhood of Seville, and his house soon became the favourite resort of artists and connoisseurs. About this time he was associated with the landscape-painter Yriarte—the two artists interchanging figures and landscapes for their respective works; but they did not finally agree, and the co-operation came to an end. Murillo now painted the well-known Flight into Egypt, and shortly afterwards changed his earliest style of painting for his calido or warm style. His drawing was still well defined, but his outlines became softer and his figures rounder, and his colouring gained in warmth and transparency. His first picture of this style, according to Cean Bermudez, was a representation of Our Lady of the Conception, and was painted in 1652 for the brotherhood of the True Cross; he received for it 2500 reals (£26). In 1655 he executed his two famous paint- ings of San Leandro and San Isidoro at the order of Don Juan Federigo, archdeacon of Carmona, which are now to be seen in the cathedral of Seville. These are two noble

portraits, finished with great care and admirable effect, but the critics complain of the figures being rather short. His next picture, the Nativity of the Virgin, painted for the chapter, is regarded as one of the most delightful speci- mens of his calido style. In the following year (1656) the same body gave him an order for a vast picture of San Antonio de Padua, for which he received 10,000 reals (£104). This is one of his most celebrated performances, and still hangs in the baptistery of the cathedral. It was “repaired” in 1833; the grandeur of the design, however, and the singular richness of the colouring may still be traced. The same year saw him engaged on four large pictures of a semicircular form, designed by his fast friend and patron Don Justino Neve y Yevenes, to adorn the walls of the

church of Santa Maria la Blanca. The first two were meant to illustrate the history of the festival of Our Lady of the Snow, or the foundation of the Roman basilica of Santa Maria Maggiore. The one represents the wealthy but childless Roman senator and his lady asleep and dreaming ; the other exhibits the devout pair relating their dream to Pope Liberius. Of these two noble paint- ings the Dream is the finer, and in it is to be noticed the commencement of Murillo's third and last style, known as the vaporoso or vapoury. It should be noted, however, that the three styles are not strictly separable into date- periods ; for the painter alternated the styles according to his subject-matter or the mood of his inspiration, the caledo being the most frequent. In the vaporoso method the well-marked outlines and careful drawing of his former styles disappear, the outlines are lost in the misty blend- ing of the light and shade, and the general finish betrays more haste than was usual with Murillo. After many changes of fortune, these two pictures now hang in the Academy of San Fernando at Madrid. The remaining pieces executed for this small church were a Virgin of the Conception and a figure of Faith. Soult laid his hands on these also, and they have not been recovered.

In 1658 Murillo undertook and consummated a task which had hitherto baffled all the artists of Spain, and even royalty itself. This was the establishing of a public academy of art. By superior tact and good temper he overcame the vanity of Valdes Leal and the presumption of the younger Herrera, and secured their co-operation. The Academy of Seville was accordingly opened for the first time in January 1660, and Murillo and the second Herrera were chosen presidents. The former continued to direct it during the following year ; but the calls of his studio induced him to leave it, now flourishing and pros- perous, in other hands.

Passing over some half-length pictures of saints and a dark-haired Madonna, painted in 1668 for the chapter- room of the cathedral of his native city, we enter upon the most splendid period of Murillo's career. In 1661 Don Miguel Mafiara Vicentelo de Leca, who had recently turned to a life of sanctity from one of the wildest profli- gacy, resolved to raise money for the restoration of the dilapidated Hospital de la Caridad, of whose pious guild he was himself a member. Majfiara commissioned his friend Murillo to paint eleven pictures for this edifice of San Jorge. Three of these pieces

represented the Annun- ciation of the Blessed Virgin, the Infant Saviour, and the Infant St John. The remaining eight are considered Murillo's masterpieces. They consist of Moses striking the Rock, the Return of the Prodigal, Abraham receiving the Three Angels, the Charity of San Juan de Dios, the Miracle of the Loaves and Fishes, Our Lord healing the Paralytic, St Peter released from Prison by the Angel, and St Eliza- beth of Hungary. These works occupied the artist four years, and in 1674 he received for his eight great pictures 78,115 reals or about £800. The Moses, the Loaves and

Fishes, and the San Juan are still to be found at Seville; but the French carried off the rest. On these pictures Murillo evidently expended all his strength, and he has left in them an enduring monument of his genius. For compass and vigour the Moses stands first; but the Pro- digal's Return and the St Elizabeth were considered by Bermudez the most perfect of all as works of art. The front of this famous hospital was also indebted to the genius of Murillo; five large designs in blue glazed tiles were executed from his drawings. He had scarcely com- pleted the undertakings for this edifice when his favourite Franciscans again solicited the aid of his pencil. He accordingly executed some twenty paintings for the hum- ble little church known as the Convent de los Capucinos. Seventeen of these Capuchin pictures are still preserved in the Museum of Seville. Of these the Charity of St Thomas of Villanueva is reckoned the best. Murillo him- self was wont to call it "su lienzo" (his own picture). Another little piece of extraordinary merit, which once hung in this church, is the Virgin of the Napkin, believed to have been painted on a "'servilleta" and presented to the cook of the Capuchin brotherhood as a memorial of the artist's pencil.

In 1670 Murillo is said to have declined an invitation to court, preferring to labour among the brown coats of Seville. Eight years afterwards his friend the canon Justino again employed him to paint three pieces for thie Hospital de los Venerables: the Mystery of the Immacu- late Conception, St Peter Weeping, and the Blessed Virgin. As a mark of esteem, Murillo next painted a full-length portrait of the canon, in which all the artist's skill is visible. The sleek spaniel reposing at the feet of the priest has been known before now to call forth a snarl from a living dog as he approached it. His portraits generally, though few, are of great beauty. Towards the close of his life Murillo executed a series of pictures illustrative of the life of "the glorious

doctor” for the Augustinian convent at Seville. This brings us to the last work of the artist. Mounting a scaffolding one day at Cadiz (whither he had gone in 1681) to execute the higher parts of a large picture of the Espousal of St Catherine, on which he was engaged for the Capuchins of that town, he stumbled, and fell so violently that he received a hurt from which he never recovered. The great picture was left unfinished, and the artist returned to his beloved Seville only to die. He died as he had lived, a humble, pious, brave man, on the 3d of April 1682 in the arms of the chevalier Pedro Nufiez de Villavicencio, an intimate friend and one of his best pupils. Another of his numerous pupils was Sebastian Gomez, named “ Murillo’s Mulatto.” Murillo left behind him two sons (one of them at first an indifferent painter, afterwards a priest) and a daughter,—his wife having died before him. His body was laid in the church of Santa Cruz, which he had greatly frequented during his last illness; and by his own desire it was covered with a stone slab bearing his name, a skeleton, and the words “ Vive moriturus.” Soult sacked this church, and nothing is to be seen of it now but a heap of rubbish.

Murillo has always been one of the most popular of painters—not in Spain alone. His works show great technical attainment with- out much style, and a strong feeling for ordinary nature and for truthful or sentimental expression without lofty beauty or ideal elevation. His cestasies of Madonnas and Saints,~~the themes of some of his most celebrated achievements, neither raise the mind nor seize upon the imagination ; but they stimulate sluggish per~~ ceptions and lukewarm devotceism, and are accepted as ravishingly pious by mobs of the fashionable and the unfashionable. Take as an example the Immaculate Conception (or Assumption of the Virgin, for the titles may, with reference to Murillo’s treatments of

this subject, almost be interchanged) in the Louvre, a picture for which, on its sale from the Soult collection, perhaps the largest

MU R—

price on record was given in 1852, some £24,600. His subjects may be broadly divided into two great groups—the scenes from low life (which were a new kind of experiment in Spanish art, so far as the subjects of

children are concerned), and the Scriptural, legendary, and religious works. The former, of which some salient specimens are in the Dulwich Gallery, are, although undoubtedly truthful, neither ingenious nor sympathetic ; sordid unsightliness and roguish squalor are their foundation. The children have little of the charm of childhood, and none of its auroral promise. The embodiments are accurate and knowing studies of ungainliness. Works of this class belong mostly to the earlier years of Murillo's practice. The subjects in which the painter most eminently excels are crowded compositions in which some act of saintliness, involving the ascetic or self-mortifying element, is being performed,—subjects which, while obtrusively repulsive in some of their details, emphasize at once the broadly human and the expressly Catholic conceptions of life. A famous example is the picture, now in the Madrid academy, of St Elizabeth of Hungary washing patients afflicted with the scab or itch, and hence commonly named E] Titioso. Technically con- sidered, it unites his three styles of painting, more especially the cold and the warm. His power of giving atmosphere to combined groups of figures is one of the marked characteristics of Murillo's art; aud he may be said to have excelled in this respect all his prede- ecssors or contemporaries of whatever school.

Seville must still be visited by persons who wish to study Murillo thoroughly, and to relish the full and native flavour of his art. A large number of the works which used to adorn this city have, however, been transported elsewhither. In the Royal Gallery at Madrid are forty-five specimens of Murillo—the Infant Christ and the Baptist (named Los Nijios della Concha), St Ildefonso vested with a Chasuble by the Madonna, &c. ; in the Museo della Trinidad, Christ and the Virgin appearing to St Francis in a Cavern, an immense composition, and various others. In the London National Gallery the chief example is the Holy Family ; this was one of the master's latest works, painted in Cadiz. Murillo, who was the last pre-eminent paintcr of Seville, was an indefatigable and most pro- lifie worker, hardly leaving his painting-room save for his assiduous devotions in church; he realized large prices according to the standard of his time, and made a great fortune. His character is recorded as very amiable and soft, yet not the less independent,

subject also to sudden impulses, not unmixed with gusts of passion. For further inforination see, especially, Stirling, Annals of the Artists of Spain,

3 vols., London, 1848; Richard Ford, Handbook for Spain, London, 1855; and

Curtis, Catalogue of the Works of Velazquez and Murillo (1883). (W. M. R.)

MUROM, a district town of Russia in the province of Vladimir, on the craggy left bank of the Oka close by its junction with the Tesha, 107 miles by rail south-east of Vladimir. Murom is the chief entrepdt for grain from the basin of the lower Oka and carries on an active trade with Moscow and Nijni-Novgorod, partly by the Oka, partly by rail, a branch line to Kovroff connecting it with the rail- way between the towns just mentioned. Murom is still famed, as in ancient times, for kitchen-gardens, raising especially cucumbers and seed for canary-birds. Its once famous tanneries have lost their importance, but the manu- facture of linen has greatly increased ; it has also steam flour-mills, distilleries, manufactories of soap, &c., and of iron implements. There are also several distilleries in the district. The population is 11,000.

MURPHY, Arravur (1727 -1805), dramatist, was the son of a Dublin merchant, and was born near Elphin in Roscommon in 1727. From 1740 to 1747 he was a student at St Omer (France). He then entered the counting-house of his uncle, a merchant at Cork. But four years afterwards he was in London, prosecuting litera- ture as a profession and publishing Zhe Gray’s Inn Journal, a periodical in the style of The Spectator. The

. drama was also occupying his attention. He produced the farce of The Apprentice, and appeared as an actor in the character of Othello. His dramas were more successful than his acting. After treading the stages of Covent Garden and Drury Lane for one season each, he aban- doned the profession. His next undertaking was the edit- Ing of a political periodical called The Test. In this, too,

© Was unsuccessful, He next turned his attention to the study of law, and was called to the bar by the Society a Lincoln’s Innin 1757. But the

smallness of his practice orced him to have recourse to his former vocation of writ- Ing for the stage. Among his many popular dramas, Zhe

Upholsterer, in 1758; The Way to Keep Him, in 1760; All in The Wrong, in 1761; The Grecian Daughter, in 1772 ; and Know Your Own Mind, in 1777, were very suc- cessful, and secured for their author both fame and wealth. Murphy is also notable as the first biographer of Fielding, and amidst the miscellaneous literary work of his later years he produced an ‘‘essay on the life and genius” of Johnson and translations of Sallust and Tacitus. Towards the close of his life the office of a commissioner of bank- rupts, and a pension of £200, were conferred upon him by Government. He died in June 1805.

MURPHY, Roperr (1806-1843), mathematician, was the son of a poor shoemaker, and was born at Mallow in Ireland in 1806. At the age of thirteen, while working as an apprentice in his father’s shop, he became known to certain gentlemen in the neighbourhood as a self-taught mathema- tician of wonderful precocity. Through their exertions, after attending a classical school in his native town, he was admitted to Caius College, Cambridge, in 1825. Third wrangler in 1829, he was elected in the same year a fellow of his college. But the temptations of prosperity were too strong for him. A course of extravagant dissipation soon led him into debt ; his fellowship was sequestered for the behoof of his creditors, and he was obliged to leave Cam- bridge in December 1832. After living for some time with his relations in Ireland, he repaired to London in 1836, a penniless literary adventurer. He had already contributed several mathematical papers to the Cambridge Philosophical Transactions, and had published Elementary principles of the theories of Electricity, &c., Camb., 1833. His pen was now employed in writing for the “Library of Useful Knowledge” a 7’reatise on the Theory of Algebraical Equations (Lond., 1839). He was labouring diligently to throw off the load of debt that still pressed heavily upon him when a disease of the lungs cut short his career in March 1843.

Murphy’s mathematical writings are remarkable for elegance and ingenuity, and parts of his work on the theory of equations and on the mathematical theory of electricity still retain their importance.

MURRAIN, a term usually restricted to extensive out- breaks of disease in cattle, but also applied to serious disorders among sheep and pigs, is taken in this article to cover general or infectious disorders of all the domesti- cated animals, and as synonymous with plague or epizooty.

It is now an established fact that murrains are all in- fectious, ¢.e., capable of transmission from diseased to healthy creatures of the same, or perhaps of many different species, the manner and degree of infectiousness varying somewhat in some of the disorders. It is also an established fact that several of them—and presumably all—owe their existence and spread to a micro-organism or germ, vegetable or animal in its nature, which, obtaining access to a healthy body disposed to its reception, grows and multiplies rapidly there, and produces characteristic morbid symptoms and alterations in tissues and organs. On the presence and dissemination of this germ or virulent agent these diseases depend for their continuance and extension; and _ this knowledge furnishes us with the indications for the sani- tary measures required to limit their spread, or to effect their extermination.

In previous ages the great outbreaks of murrains only occurred at comparatively rare intervals, in regions more or less remote from those to which they were native ; and then they generally owed their diffusion to the events of war, which sometimes carried them far beyond their ordinary boundaries. In modern times their extension has been greatly facilitated by the vastly improved means of communi- cation. The movement of large numbers of animals through the channels of commerce and their rapid transport from

one country to another, their concentration in markets, their incessant renewal, the mixing of native with foreign animals, a general indifference to the existence of con- tagious diseases and the losses they might inflict, the absence of anything like an organization to control and regulate this movement, carry out sanitary regulations, and investigate and suppress these murrains all these have operated in rendering some of the most harassing and destructive scourges more or less cosmopolitan, spread- ing

them from a very limited area in the middle of a continent to every quarter of the globe, where they flourish as vigorously and persistently as if indigenous to the soil.

The best-known murrains are discussed below.

1. Anthrax.—This is one of the most diffused and interesting of murrains, affecting, as it does, wild as well as domesticated animals. It prevails, in one or more of its forms, over the entire surface of the globe. It at times decimates the reindeer herds in Lapland and the Polar regions, and is only too well known in the tropics and in temperate latitudes. It has been observed and described in Russia, Siberia, Central Asia, China, Cochin China, Egypt, West Indies, Peru, Paraguay, Brazil, Mexico, and. other parts of North and South America, in Australia, and on different parts of the African continent, while for other European countries the writings which have been published with regard to its nature, its peculiar character- istics, and the injury it inflicts are innumerable. Countries in which are extensive marshes, or the subsoil of which is tenacious or impermeable, are usually those most frequently and seriously visited. Thus there are regions notorious for the prevalence of this murrain, such as the marshes of Sologne, Dombes, and Bresse in France ; certain parts of Germany, Hungary, and Poland; in Spain it is severely felt in the half-subinerged valleys and the maritime coasts of Catalonia, as well as in the Romagna and other marshy districts of Italy; while it is epizootic, and even panzootic, in the swampy regions of Esthonia, Livonia, Courland, and especially of Siberia, where it is known as the Stbor- skaja jaswa (Siberian boil-plague), and where it sometimes happens that, in order to suppress its ravages, battalions of soldiers must be sent to bury or burn the carcases of infected animals which float in the canals or lie in the swamps, rendering the air and the water pestilent. The records of the anthrax go back to a very ancient date. It is supposed to be the murrain of Exodus. Classical writers allude to the anthrax as if it were the only cattle disease worthy of mention (see Virgil, @eorg., iii.). It figures largely in the histories of the Early and Middle Ages as a devastating pestilence among animals, and through them to mankind; and our oldest Anglo-Saxon manuscripts contain many fantastic recipes, leechdoms, charms, and incantations for the prevention or cure of the “blacan blezene” (black blain) and the relief of the “elf- shot”

creatures. From these up to our own times it has attracted more and more attention, as even in the last and this century it has sometimes spread in an epizootic manner over the whole of Europe, from Siberia to France. It was in this malady that the presence of disease-producing germs (bacilli) was first discovered by Pollender and veteri- nary surgeon Brauell of Dorpat, and their real character afterwards verified by Davaine; and it has been in their experiments with this disease that Chauveau, Toussaint, and Pasteur have shown how to make the morbific poison its own antidote.

Symptoms.—These vary according as the disease runs its course as a general or localized affection. While death is usually rapid or sudden when the malady is general, constituting what is desig- uated splenic apoplexy or anthrax fever, in the local form, marked by the formation of carbuncles before general infection occurs, it is more protracted. In the apoplectic form there is apparently no local manifestation, and dissolution may take place so quickly (in

a few minutes) that there is no time to afford relief. One or more of the best-conditioned and perhaps robust animals in a herd or flock, which until then exhibited no sign of the disease, are sud- denly struck down as if shot while grazing, feeding in the stable, or travelling, and rise no more. Or they commence all at once to tremble and stagger; the breathing becomes hurried and the pulse very rapid, while the heart beats violently ; the internal tempera- ture of the body is high; blood flows from the nose, mouth, and anus; the visible mucous membranes are almost black in tint; and death soon supervenes, being immediately preceded by delirium, convulsions, or coma. In some cases the animal rallies from a first attack, but soon a second ensues, to which it speedily succumbs, the creature in the interval remaining drowsy and showing mus- cular tremors. In the carbuncular form the tumours may appear in any part of the body, being preceded or accompanied by fever. When the tongue is affected, the disease is usually known as blain of the tongue, tongue evil, or glossanthrax.

The tumours or malignant pustules are developed in the sub- cutaneous connective tissue, where this is loose and plentiful, in the interstices of the muscles, and in the lymphatic glands. In the various animals affected they

have their special affinities for certain regions, as between the branches of the lower jaw, upper part of the throat, lower portion of the neck, breast, behind the shoulders, back, flank, substance of the tongue, &c. If the part where an anthrax tumour is about to appear is covered with hair, this will be observed to become erect, and if the hand is passed over the part perhaps a slight crepitation will be felt ; there is also increased sensibility. In many cases there soon appears a nodosity, simple or multiple, about the size of a small nut and circular or irregular in outline. Ordinarily this is little sensitive in itself, the pain the animal experiences being due to the increased sensibility of the surrounding parts. In other instances the tumour suddenly com- mences in the appearance of a soft edematous swelling, crepitating and undefined. When the eruption takes this form the tumours are quickly developed, and in a few hours invade all the neighbour- ing parts, extending in every direction with equal rapidity,—the skin eovering them becoming tense and hard like parehment, and crackling on pressure. As they extend they become cold and in- sensible, a variable number of phlyctene arise on their surface, and these quiekly bursting give issue to a serous irritant fluid. Ifan ineision is made in the swelling at this stage there is no symptom of pain, and a black or reddish scrum escapes, extremely fcetid and corrosive, which produces a noise as it flows like the crackling of paper or the bubbling of boiling water. Sometimes passive heemor- rhage ensues after the incision is made, and continues until death.

In whatever form the tumours are developed, their course is always the same, being more rapid the earlier they appear. In from two to eight hours they attain a considerable size, and the tissues mortify as they are invaded. As they are developed the animal seems to become relieved, the fever abates, and the more urgent symptoms vanish. But, when they have attained certain proportions, general symptoms are manifested, and these vary aecording as the malady is to tcrminate favourably or otherwise. In some rare instances the matter which constitutes the tumours is suddenly absorbed, abundant sweats, an inereased flow of urine, or a serous feetid diarrlicea ensue, and the animal promptly recovers. In other eases, by surgieal intervention, the evolution of the tumours is limited to a certain extent ; they reach the sup pura stage, and finally disappear. In ordinary circumstances, however, it happens that after the interval which follows the eruption, the organism being incapable of eliminating the morbid element,

the tumours vanish; but this is only a transference, for the disease assumes all the grave characters of anthrax fever without local manifestations, the general symptoms reappear, and, running their course with marvellous rapidity, the animal perishes in a few hours.

A form of anthrax affects the horse more especially, and this by some authors has becn designated anthrax typhus. It manifests itself locally and generally, and is very fatal (Fleming, Veterinary Sanitary Seience and Police, vol. ii. p. 122).

In cattle there is a disease very fatal among young stock, and known to breeders and graziers by various names, the most com- mon of which is ‘‘ black quarter,” which had always been classed among the forms of anthrax until its nature was investigated by Arloing and Cornuvin, who have termed it symptomatic anthrax (Charbon symptomatique), while by others it has been named anthra- coid crysipelas, &c. ‘This is at first a local disease, affecting usually one hind quarter, and occurring among young animals more espe cially, particularly those fed on rich food and thriving rapidly. It also occurs very suddenly, runs its course in a very brief space, and nearly always terminates fatally unless surgical and medical treat- ment is promptly resorted to. It is caused also by a bacillus or bacterium somewhat different from that of ordinary anthrax.

In splenic fever or splenie apoplexy, the most marked alterations observed after death are—the effects of rapid decomposition, evidenced by the foul odour, disengagement of gas beneath the skim and in the tissues and eavities of the body, yellow or yellowish- red gelatinous exudation into and betwcen the muscles, effusion

ms I WN

of citron- or rust-coloured fluid in various cavities, extravasations of blood and local congestions throughout the body, the blood in the vessels generally being very dark and tar-like. The most notable feature, however, in the majority of cases is the enormous enlargement of the spleen, which is engorged with blood to such an extent that it often ruptures, while its tissue is changed into a violet or black fluid mass.

Inoculation. —Anthrax in all its forms is an inoculable disease, transmission being surely and promptly effected by this means, and it may be conveyed to nearly all animals either by inoculation or through the digestive organs. The abraded skin is often the channel for the introduction of the bacilli; and persons who handle diseased animals or their products—as flesh, skin, wool, or hair—often die from anthrax, which presents similar symptoms in mankind to those it exhibits in animals. The bacillus of anthrax, under certain con- ditions, retains its vitality for a long time, and rapidly grows when it finds a suitable fluid in which to develop, its mode of multi- plication being by scission and the formation of spores, and depend- ing, to a great extent at least, on the presence of oxygen. The morbid action of the bacillus is indeed said to be due to its affinity for oxygen ; by depriving the red corpuscles of the blood of that most essential gas, it renders the vital fluid unfit to sustain life. Others assert that the fatal lesions are produced by the enormous number of bacilli blocking up the minute blood-vessels, especially of the lungs, and thus inducing asphyxia.

It was by the cultivation of this micro-organism, or attenuation of the virus, that Pastcur has been enabled to produce a prophy- lactic remedy for anthrax, which has already been demonstrated to be very effective ; and his discovery is likely to lead to most im- portant results in procuring protective agents for other similar and fatal disorders in nan and beast. Though his discovery was first made with regard to the cholera of fowls, a most destructive dis- order which annually carries off great numbers of poultry, yet as applied to anthrax it has attracted most attention. This so-called attenuation or cultivation of the virus of the disease by Pasteur is effected by growing the bacillus in an albuminous fluid, the prefer- ence being given to chicken-broth which has been previously steril- ized by being raised to a temperature of 115°C. This broth is inoculated with a drop of anthrax blood which has been taken with antiseptic precautions from an animal about to die of the disease ; it is kept in pure air at a temperature of 42° to 43° C. ; at 45° the process of cultivation will not go on. After a certain time another quantity of broth is inoculated with a drop of the first, and kept under the same conditions; and so this cultivation is carried on until a sufficient number of generations of the bacilli have been grown and the required degree of attenuation ensured. This is attained by attention to the temperature, allowing a certain inter- val to elapse between each inoculation

of the broth and the number of generations cultivated. The resulting ‘‘ vaccine,” as it has been improperly designated, when inoculated into the body of an animal liable to anthrax, confers immunity from the disease, if certain rules are attended to.

Toussaint had, previous to Pasteur, attenuated the virus of anthrax by the action of heat; and Chauveau has more recently corroborated by numerous experiments the value of Toussaint’s method, demonstrating that, according to the degrce of heat to which the virus is subjected, so its innocuousness when trans- ferred toa healthy creature. The attenuation of heat, according to this method, is a safer and readier way to obtain a protective virus than Pasteur’s broth cultivations.

2. Cattle-Plague or Rinderpest.—The next disease is that which has, since the commencement of the last century, been generally described as “the murrain,” but which is now better known as the ‘“cattle-plague” or ‘“rinderpest” (German). animals attacked, the most universal of all diseases, being transmissible to nearly every living creature, including man- kind, cattle-plague is limited to ruminants (oxen, sheep, goats, camels, buffaloes, yaks, deer, &c.). It is an Asiatic malady, and prevails frequently and with great severity in southern Russia (imported), Central Asia, Mongolia, China (south, west, and north), Cochin China, Burmah, Hindu- stan, Persia, Ceylon, and the islands in the Indian and Malay Archipelagos. It is only known in Europe as an exotic and imported malady, it has not yet appeared on the American continent, in Australia, in New Zealand, or on the African continent, except in Egypt, into which it has been carried on several occasions, aud where, owing to the absence of sanitary measures, it now prevails constantly. It is one of the most infectious and fatal diseases of ani- mals—a specific fever which runs its course so rapidly,

While anthrax is, with regard to species of.

og

and attacks such a large percentage of ruminants when it is introduced into a country, that from the earliest times it has excited terror and dismay.

It has been noted that its irruptions into Europe in the earlier centuries of our era always coincided with invasions of barbarous tribes in the east of Europe; and even at a later period the disease accompanied the events of war, when troops with their commissariat moved from the east towards the west, or cattle, when they were carried in the same direction. One of the earliest recorded irruptions of cattleplague into western Europe occurred in the 5th century after the sanguinary invasion of the Huns under Attila, the expulsion of the Goths from Hungary, and the fierce internecine wars of the whole Germanic population. The disease appears then to have been carried from Hungary through Austria to Dalmatia, while by Brabant it obtained access to the Low Countries, Picardy, and so on to the other provinces of france. In the curious poem De Mortibus Bovum written by St Severus, who lived at that period, the course and destructiveness of the disease are specially alluded to. Many invasions of Europe are described, and in several of these Britain was visited by it —as in 809-810, 986-987, 1223-1225, 1513-1514, and notably in 1713, 1745, 1774, 1799. In 1865 and 1872 it was imported direct from Russia,

Symptoms.—Like some other general diseases, this does not offer any exclusive or pathognomonic symptoms, but is rather charac- terized by a group of functional and anatomical alterations. An exact knowledge of its symptoms and necroscopical appearances is of the utmost importance, as its extension and consequent ravages ean only be arrested through its timely recognition and the imme- diate adoption of the necessary sanitary measures. Intense fever, diarrhoea or dysentery, croupous inflammation of the mucous mem- branes in general, sometimes a cutaneous papular eruption, and great prostration mark the course of the affection, which is frequently most difficult to diagnose during life, especially if its presence is not suspected. Its introduction and mode of propagation can, im many instances, be ascertained only at a late period, and when great loss may already have been sustained. In the majority of cases the exantination of the carcase of an animal which has died or been purposely killed is the best way to arrive at a correct dia- gnosis. Indeed, this is practically the only certain means of con- cluding as to the presence of the malady, as in different invasions, and even in different countries and different individuals during the same invasion, there are obscrved considerable variations in the

chicf symptoms with regard to their intcnsity as well as in the secondary symptoms or epiphenomena.

Among cattle indigenous to the regions in which this malady may be said to be enzootic the symptoms are often comparatively slight, and the mortality not great. So much is this the case that veterinary surgeons who can readily distinguish the disease when it affects the cattle of western Europe, can only with difficulty diagnose it in animals from Hungary, Bessarabia, Moldavia, or other countries where it is always more or less prevalent. In these the indications of fever are usually of brief duration, and signs of lassitude and debility are, in some instances, the only marks of the presence of this virulent disorder in animals which may, neverthe- less, communicate the disease in its most deadly form to the cattle of other countries. Slight diarrhea may also be present, and a cutaneous eruption accompanied by gastric disturbance, shedding of tears, and infrequent cough. In the more malignant form the fever runs very high, sometimes to 107°6° Fahr., and all the char- acteristic symptoms of the disorder are well marked, the lesions during life being observed in the cheese-like deposits on the gums, the presence of petechie on the mucous membranes, discharges from the eyes, nosc, and mouth, eruption on the skin, cough and laboured breathing, certain nervous phenomena, and dysenteric dejections. Death generally occurs in four or five days, the course of the disorder being more rapid with animals kept in stables than with those living in the open air, and in summer than in winter. After death the chief alterations are found in the digestive canal, and consist in evidence of inflammation of a more or less acute kind, with ulceration, extravasation of blood, gangrene, &c. The mem- brane lining the air-passages offers similar alterations ; indced, all the mucous membranes of the body appear to be involved, and the malady might almost be considered as a malignant infectious catarrhal fever.

Protective inoculation has often been advocated and practised (particularly in Russia) for this disorder, but the advantages de- rived have not been sufficient to compensate for the danger attend-

ing it. Quite recently, Semmer of the Dorpat veterinary school has made experiments with cultivated or attenuated virus, and so far the results have

been encouraging.

3. Pleuro-Pneumonia or Lung-Plague.—The next murrain in importance, with regard to destructiveness, is the so-called “lung-plague” or contagious “pleuro-pneumonia” of cattle.

This disease is particularly interesting from the fact that within less than two centuries it has been spread from a very small area over nearly every part of the world. The earliest notices of it testify that it first prevailed in central Europe, and in the last century it was present in certain parts of southern Germany, Switzerland, and France, and had also appeared in upper Italy. Though Valentine described an epizooty occurring among cattle in 1693 in Hesse, yet doubts have been entertained as to whether it was this malady. It was not until 1769 that it was definitely described as prevailing in Franche-Comté by the name of “murie.” From that date down to 1789 it appears to have remained more or less limited to the Swiss mountains, the Jura, Dauphiné, the Vosges, Pied- mont, and upper Silesia; it showed itself in Champagne and Bourbonnais about the time of the Revolution, when its spread was greatly accelerated by the wars that followed, and the consequent demand for cattle for the commissariat parks of the contending armies. Since that time the continually increasing commercial relations be- tween various countries have carried it to the ends of the earth, the long duration of latency, and the some- what slow course of the disorder, eminently adapting it for conveyance to great distances. In this century its diffusion has been accurately determined. It invaded Prussia in 1802, and soon spread over North Germany. It was first described as existing in Russia in 1824; it reached Belgium in 1827, Holland in 1833, the United Kingdom in 1841, Sweden in 1847, Denmark in 1848, Finland in 1850, South Africa in 1854, the United States —Brooklyn in 1843, New Jersey in 1847, Brooklyn again in 1850, and Boston in 1850; it was also carried to Melbourne in 1858, and to New South Wales in 1860; New Zealand received it early in 1864. It has also been carried to Asia Minor, and has made its presence felt at Damascus. In Austria it is less prevalent than in some other European countries, being scarcely known except in Bohemia, Moravia, and a portion of Tyrol. In Hungary it appears to be almost unknown, in consequence of the minimum importation of foreign cattle; and in countries to which it has not been introduced by infected animals it is

not seen. In consequence of its insidious invasion, the subtlety of its contagion, and the great fatality attending it, there can be no doubt that it is one of the most disas- trous plagues that can afflict a cattle-producing country. Fortunately, unlike the two preceding murrains, it is con- fined entirely to the bovine species ; no well-authenticated instances of its transmission, either accidental or experi- mental, to other species have been recorded.

In its nature it is a specific infectious disease, generally affecting the lungs and the lining membrane of the chest, producing a particular form of lobar or lobular pleuro- pneumonia, and in the majority of cases, if not in all, it is transmitted through the medium of the inspired air,— hence its localization in the lungs. Inoculation with the fluid from the diseased lungs does not produce any effect on other than the bovine species ; but in this its action is most energetic. Producing, after a certain interval, char- acteristic lesions at the seat of inoculation, the morbid change or infective process soon involves parts beyond, and if not checked may cause most serious damage and even the death of the inoculated animal; though it does not develop the lung lesions always observed in accidental in- fection, yet there is a local anatomical similarity or identity.

MmU RRA

Symptoms.—The malady is slow and insidions in its course, last- ing from two to three weeks to as many months, the chief symptoms being fever, diminished appetite, a short cough of a peculiar and pathognomonic character, with quickened breathing and pulse, and physical indications of lung and chest disease. The progress of the malady is marked by exacerbation of the symptoms, and towards the end there is great debility and emaciation, death generally en- suing after hectic fever has set in. Recovery is somewhat rare.

The pathological changes are generally limited to the chest and its contents, and consist in a peculiar marbled-like appearance of the lungs on section, and fibrinous deposits on the plenral mem- brane, with oftentimes great effusion into the cavity of the thorax.

Willems of Hasselt (Belgium) in 1852 introduced and practised inoculation as a protective measure for this scourge, employing for this purpose the serum obtained from a diseased lung ; and his suc- cess was so marked that he made known his procedure. Since that time inoculation has been extensively resorted to, not only in Europe, but also in Australia and South Africa ; and its protective value has been generally recognized. When properly performed, and when certain precautions are adopted, it would appear to confer immunity from the disease. The usual seat of inocnlation is the extremity of the tail, the virus being introduced beneath the skin by means of a syringe or a worsted thread impregnated with the sernm. One or two drops are sufficient to cause the local and constitutional disturbance which mark successful prophylactic infection. A par- ticular micro-organism has been discovered in the diseased textures and fluids of animals affected with contagious pleuro-pneumonia, which is supposed to causc the malady. It has been cultivated, and inoculation experiments have been made with it. The intra- venous injection of the virns has been found to be a safer method of conferring immunity than inoculation beneath the skin, and quite as certain a method. ,

4. Foot-and-Mouth Disease (Epizootic Aphtha, Eczema epizootica), if we were to judge by the somewhat vague descriptions of different disorders by Greek and Roman writers, has been a European malady for more than 2000 years. But no reliance can be placed on this evidence, and it is not until we reach the 17th and 18th cen- turies that we can find trustworthy proof of its presence, when it was reported as frequently prevailing extensively in Germany, Italy, and France. During this century, owing to the vastly-extended commercial relations between every civilized country, it has, like the lung-plague, become widely diffused. In the Old World its effects are now experienced from the Caspian Sea to the Atlantic Ocean. It gradually extended towards Britain at the commence- ment of this century, after invading Holland and Belgium, and about 1839 appeared in England, where it was imme- diately recognized as a new disease; it quickly spread over the three kingdoms. From the observations of the best authorities it would appear to be an altogether exotic malady in the west of Europe, always invading it from the east; at least, this has been the course noted in all the principal invasions. It was introduced into Denmark in 1841, and into the United States of America from Canada, where it had been carried by

diseased cattle from England. It rapidly extended through cattle traffic from the State first invaded to adjoining States, but was extinguished, and does not now appear to be known on the American continent. It was twice introduced into Australia in 1872, but was stamped out on each occasion. It appears to be well known in India, Ceylon, Burmah, and the Straits Settlements. In 1870 it was introduced into the Andaman Islands, where it had not previously been seen, by cattle imported from Calcutta, where it was then prevailing. There is evidence that it is common in South Africa, and is frequently epizootic there, causing great inconvenience, owing to the bullocks used for draught purposes, which travel great distances, becoming unfit for work, by which traffic is much interfered with. These cattle also spread the contagion. It is not improbable that it also prevails in Central Africa, as Schweinfurth alludes to the cattle of the Dinkas suffering from a disease of the kind. Though not a fatal malady, and in the majority of cases readily amenable to treatment, yet it is a most serious scourge. It is transmissible to nearly all the

domestic animals, even mankind sometimes becoming infected, but its ravages are most severe among cattle, sheep, and pigs. Since it was introduced into the United Kingdom it has proved more disastrous on the whole, perhaps, than any other murrain, and has most injuriously affected agricultural interests. What makes it more serious ‘s the fact that one attack is not protective against another, an animal sometimes being affected a second time within a few months.

Symptoms. —This is an eruptive fever, characterized by vesicles or blisters in the mouth, sometimes in the nostrils, and on parts of the body where the skin is thin and least covered with hair, as on the udder and towards the feet. The animal cannot eat so well as usual, suffers much pain and inconvenience, loses condition, and, if a milk-yielding creature, gives less milk, or, if pregnant, may abort. Sometimes the feet become very much diseased, and the animal is so crippled that it has to be destroyed. It is often fatal to young creatures. It is transmitted more especially by the saliva and the discharges from the vesicles on the feet and udder, though all the

secretions and excretions are doubtless infective, as well asall articles soiled by them. The disease can be produced by injecting the saliva intravenously.

These are the best-known murrains affecting cattle ; but there are others which, though they cannot be noticed here, are of some moment. One in particular demands most serious consideration, the disease known as “consumption,” “pining,” and (from the appearance of the morbid growths in the chest) “ grapes,” and to the medical and veterinary pathologist as “tuberculosis.” It is a highly-infectious disorder in cattle, is becoming very common among the improved breeds, and causes heavy losses in dairy stock. It has been experimentally demonstrated that the tuber- culous matter, as well as milk and the juice of the flesh of diseased cows, when given to healthy animals or inocu- lated in them, will produce the malady, and this leads to the grave question as to the danger incurred by mankind through the consumption of the flesh and milk of tubercu- lous cows. ‘This is a pressing sanitary problem which demands early solution.

Prevention of Murrains.—The legislative measures necessary for prevention or suppression of murrains are based upon the fact that these diseases depend for their extension solely upon their contagious properties. The object is, therefore, either to prevent the admission of the contagious principle, z.¢., through diseased animals or articles which have become infective by contact with them, or to destroy it as quickly as possible. The necessity for this is abundantly evident on every page in the history of these scourges. It is almost impossible to realize the loss and embarrass- ment caused by cattle-plague, lung-plague, and foot-and-mouth disease only. By the first-named murrain it has becn estimated that the loss in Europe from 1711 to 1796 only was 200,000,000 head of cattle. And in this century the disease has not been less severe, though its opportunities for extension, much greater than before, have been much diminished by the progress made in veteri- nary science. From 1841 to 1844 Egypt lost 400,000 head of cattle ; and 1,000,000 perished in Russia in 1844-1845. From 1849 to 1863 the Austrian states lost 258,107. In Hungary from 1861 to 1867 this steppe murrain appeared in 680 communes having a bovine population of 908,209 ; 25 per cent. were attacked, and of these 145,474 or 63°9 per cent. were lost. In 1860-1861 Austria lost 4800 cattle; and in Russia 183,678 died in 1860. In 1865-1866 Great Britain is supposed to have lost 233,629 head,

valued at from five to eight millions of pounds, though this is probably far below the actual figure; and Holland, receiving the infection from England, at this time lost 115,000 cattle. In 1870 Germany reported 8122 as dead from rinderpest ; and during the Franco- German war, when the diseasc was introduced into France by the German troops, the Bas-Rhin dcpartment alone lost 6104 cattle and shecp at the pcriod of the invasion, and 582 cattle and 944 sheep when the troops returned, the amount of indemnity paid for cattle destroyed being 1,622,249 francs, while in Lorraine 5000 cattle and more than 3000 sheep, and in the Haut-Rhin 14,000 cattle perished, the compensation to cover this loss being estimated at 1,500,000 francs. In August 1873 thirteen governments in Russia were invaded by rinderpest, and it was computed that 18,000 animals were attacked, 14,000 of which died or were destroyed.

These figures give but a faint idea of the appalling destruction wrought by rinderpest ; and lung-plague, though its ravages are not so striking or immediate, has been scarcely less formidable. For Instance, in Holland in 230 parishes the average yearly loss has been

reckoned at 49,661. In 705 parishes in Wiirtemberg 1706 stables contained 10,214 cattle; of these 4200 were attacked, and 2583 were killed or died. In France, according to published statistics, the loss caused by this murrain in 217 communes of the department of the Nord during seven consecutive years was 11,200 in a bovine population of 280,000 —or a total in nineteen years of 218,000 head, the estimated value of which was fifty-two millions of francs. In the departments of Aveyron, Cantal, and Lozére the average loss for a long time was not less than 35 per cent. of the entire cattle. In Australia the losses caused by it during thirteen years were supposed to be at least 30 to 40 per cent. of the whole number of cattle, or about 1,404,097 head, which, if valued at only £6 each, would amount to about £8,500,000. Only a very imperfect notion can be formed of the destruction it has caused in Great Britain and Ireland since its introduction ; but for the six years ending with 1860 it has been calculated that there perished con- siderably more than a million of cattle in the United Kingdom, the value of which

must have amounted to more than twelve millions of pounds. From 1863 to 1866 the death-rate from the scourge was from 50 to 60 per cent. annually.

The deaths from foot-and-mouth disease vary in number at dif- ferent outbreaks, and are much less than in the invasions of steppe murrain and lung-plague. The most serious feature of this murrain is its affecting a large percentage (frequently nine-teuths) of the ruminants and pigs on a farm or ina district. In 1839, ina dis- trict in Wiirtemberg comprising about 8 square miles and con- taining 11,000 head of cattle, only 1300 or 12 per cent. escaped ; in the arrondissement of Miilhausen, Alsace, containing 32,000 animals, in 1862-3-4 only about 4000, or one in eight, were not attacked; in the department of the Nord in 1839 of 277,000 cattle 120,000 were affected, more than one-half of the sheep, and one-fifth of the pigs. In Baden in 1864 of 607,825 cattle 189,995 were infected. It is scarcely possible to arrive at anything like a correct estimate of the number of cattle affected during any par- ticular outbreak in Britain. Perhaps it would not be an exaggera- tion to assert that 150,000 or 200,000 suffered froin the disease in 1872, and from 1839 up to 1874 it was estimated that the money loss it caused the country was £13,000,000, but this is probably far below the mark. It has been calculated that the loss experienced from an outbreak in Baden in 1869 was no less than £103,000, and for the southern states of Germany £833,000. France is sup- posed to have lost from this disease, among cattle only, in twenty years £4,000,000.

When it is considered how rapidly animals lose condition, especi- ally fat stock; what losses occur when it appears among milch cows and those in calf, or amongst oxen used for draught, and among sheep, pigs, and poultry ; what embarrassment it may occasion to agriculture and the cattle and milk trade, not to speak of the expense of curative measures,—it will be secn what a serious mnwrain this is, even under the most favourable circumstances. It is still more so when it assumes a severe character, which it often does, and is likely to be accompanied by complications. The great rapidity with which it spreads greatly increases these losses. In a very few months it has been observed to enter the eastern frontiers and spread over a large portion of the continent of Europe, infecting Germany, Switzerland, France, Holland, and Belgium, and reaching England, always following the course of cattle traffic.

These examples and estimates afford after all only a very faint notion of the devastation, misery, embarrassment, and loss that murrains occasion, and it is this which has compelled enlightened Governments to adopt severe measures for their extinction, or at least limitation. These measures are successful in proportion as they are well deviscd and energetically carricd out, for all the mutrains or contagious diseases are perfectly amenable to con- trol, and may even be totally suppressed by international agreement and combined action. There is reason to hope that this most desirable result will be ultimately attained, but at present it isa long way off—some infected countries, in consequence of imperfect measures or the absence of any veterinary sanitary police, proving a standing menace to others which are cither free from infection, or are energetically endeavouring to get rid of it. The measures now in force may be briefly said to be interdiction of the import- ation of cattle from countries in which cattle-plague, foot-and-mouth discase, or contagious pleuro-pneumonia is prevalent, or compulsory slaughter at the ports of debarkation. In some of the infected countries, as in the United Kingdom, where foot-and- mouth disease and contagious pleuro-pucumonia are always more or less prevalent, infected cowsheds, farms, or districts are rigor- ously isolated, so far as the movement of animals from them is concerned, none being allowed to leave until the disease has been suppressed, and cattle-markets or fairs nay be closed for a certain period. In contagious pleuro-pneumonia, discased animals and those which have been in contact with them are slaughtered, and compensation allowed the owner for the latter by the local authori- ties, while measures of cleansing and disinfection are enforced. Mie movement of cattle in, into, and from the infected area is closcly watched to extinguish the contagion as specdily as possible

by prohibiting communication between sick and healthy animals susceptible to the malady, and so preventing the formation of new infectious centres. Evasion or infraction of the legislative orders in force for the suppression of contagious diseases in animals is punishable by fine or imprisonment. (G. FL.) MURRAY COD. Of the numerous freshwater Perches inhabiting the rivers and watercourses of Australia the Murray Cod (Oligorus macquariensis) is one of the largest, if not the largest, and the

most celebrated on account of the excellent flavour of its flesh. In conferring upon the fishes of the new country familiar names, the early colonists were evidently guided by the fancied resemblance in taste or appearance to some fish of their northern home rather than by a consideration of their taxonomic affinities. These, as far as the Murray Cod is concerned, lie in the direction of the Perch and not of the Cod family. The shape of the body is that of a Perch, and the dorsal fin consists of a

Murray Cod.

spinous and rayed portion, the number of spines being eleven. ‘The length of the spines varies with age, old individuals having shorter spines, that is, a lower dorsal fin. The form of the head and the dentition also resemble those of a Perch, but none of the bones of the head have a serrated margin. The scales are small. The colour varies in different localities; it is generally brownish, with a greenish tinge and numerous small dark green spots. As implied by the name, this fish has its headquarters in the Murray river and its tributaries, but it occurs also in the northern parts of New South Wales. It is the most im- portant food fish of these rivers, and is said to attain to a length of more than 3 feet, and to a weight of 120 hb. MURRAY RIVER, the largest river in Australia, rises in the Australian Alps about 36° 40’ S. lat. and 147° E. long., and, flowing north-westwards, skirts the borders of New South Wales and Victoria until it passes into South Australia, shortly after which it bends southward into Lake Alexandrina, a shallow lagoon, whence it makes its way to the sea at Encounter Bay by a narrow opening at 35° 35’ S. lat. and 138° 55’ E. long. Near its source, the Murray Gates, precipitous rocks, tower sheer above it to the height of 3000 feet ;. and the earlier part of its course is very tortuous, broken, and uneven. Farther on it in some parts loses so much by evaporation as to become merely a series of pools. Its length till it debouches into Lake Alexandrina is 1120 miles, its average breadth in summer is 240 feet, its average depth about 16; and it drains an area of about 270,000 square miles. For small steamers it is navigable as far as Albury. Periodically it overflows its banks, causing wide inundations. Opera- tions have lately been undertaken to render its mouth accessible for ships; but, owing to the force of the southern ocean, navigation is difficult and dangerous. The principal tributaries of the Murray are those from New South Wales, including the Edward river, the

united streams of the Murrumbidgee and Lachlan, and the Darling or Callewatta. It was in 1829 that Captain Sturt traced the Murrumbidgee river till it debouched in a magnificent stream 300 feet wide. This stream, the Murray river, he followed down to Lake Alexandrina, but was compelled, after enduring great hardships, to return without discovering its outlet to the sea. In 1831 Captain

Barker, while attempting to discover its outlet, was mur- dered by the natives. In 1836 the discovery was made by Major Mitchell that the Darling flowed into the Murray, (See AUSTRALIA, vol. iii. pp. 105, 107.)

MURRAY, or Moray, James Stuart, Seconp Earn or (1533-1570), regent of Scotland, was the illegitimate son of James V. by Margaret Erskine, daughter of the fourth Lord Erskine. While only in his fifth year he was appointed prior of the abbey of St Andrews in order that James V. might obtain possession of its funds. Under the tutorship of George Buchanan his intellectual training was carefully attended to, and as early as his fifteenth year he gave evidence of rare courage and decision by an impetuous attack on an English force which had made a descent on the Fife coast, and which he routed with great slaughter, In addition to the priory of St Andrews, he subsequently received those also of Pittenweem and of Mascon (France), but on reaching manhood he manifested no vocation for monasticism. The discourses of Knox, which he heard at Calder, won his high approval, and shortly after the return of the Reformer in 1559 Murray left the party of the queen-regent and joined the lords of the congregation, who resolved to adopt the bold measure of forcibly abolishing the Popish service. After the return of Queen Mary in 1561 he became her chief adviser, and his cautious firmness was for a time effectual in inducing her to adopt a policy of moderation and tolerance towards the Reformers. In 1562 he was created earl of Mar, and soon after married Lady Agnes Keith, daughter of the earl marischal. The earldom of Mar being claimed by Lord Erskine, he resigned the title and propertyand was created earl of Murray. After the defeat of Lord Huntly, leader of the Catholic party, who died soon afterwards, the policy of Murray met for a time with no obstacle or hindrance, but he awakened the displeasure of the queen by his efforts in behalf of Knox

when accused of high treason, and, as he was also strongly opposed to her marriage with Darnley, he was after that event declared an outlaw and compelled to take refuge in England. Returning after the death of Rizzio, he found the sentiments of the queen towards him very greatly altered, and received a full pardon. On the abdication of Queen Mary at Lochleven he was appointed regent. The position was full of temptation and difficulty, but his con- spicuous integrity and moderation, joined to unflinching courage and the utmost readiness of resource, proved to be adequate to what the circumstances demanded. When Mary made her escape from Lochleven, he occupied her attention with pretended negotiations until he had gathered his adherents in sufficient force, when he completely defeated her at Langside (13th May 1568) and compelled her to flee to England. Immediately afterwards he frustrated an attempt at insurrection by the duke of Chatelherault, whom he confined in the castle of Edinburgh. The dis— appointed partisans of the queen resolved to have revenge, and one of their number, Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh, shot him through the body at Linlithgow, 21st January 1570. The wound proved fatal, and he died the same evening.

MURRAY, Jonny, M.D. (1778-1820), lecturer on chemistry and materia medica, was born in Edinburgh in 1778 and died in 1820. He was a clear and popular lecturer, and his books well represent the chemistry of the time, but he will be chiefly remembered on account of his opposition to Davy's theory of chlorine. In support of the old view that chlorine is a compound of oxygen and anhydrous muriatic acid, he attempted to prove experi mentally that muriatic acid gas contains combined water, and that chlorine contains oxygen. Dr John Davy con- clusively proved that Murray's experiments were inac- curate, and that all the phenomena can be perfectly well explained without assuming the existence of the unknown

anhydrous muriatic acid or the compound nature of the ap- parently elementary chlorine. It is interesting to note that 'twas in the course of the experiments made with the view of disproving Murray's conclusions that Davy discovered phosgen, the compound of carbonic oxide and chlorine.

Murray wrote Elements of Chemistry, 2 vols. 8vo, Edinburgh, 1801 (fourth edition, 1816); Elements of Materia Medica and Pharmacy, 2 vols. 8vo, 1804 (new edition, 1810); 4 System of Chemistry, 4 vols. 8vo, 1806 (fourth edition, 1818) ; and numerous papers in the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh and Nicholson's Journal.

MURRAY, Sir Ropert (c. 1600-1673), one of the founders of the Royal Society, was the son of Sir Robert Murray of Craigie, Ayrshire, and was born about the be- gimiing of the 17th century. In early life he served for some years in the French army, and, winning the favour of Richelieu, he rose to the rank of colonel. On the outbreak of the civil war he returned to Scotland and was energetic in collecting recruits for the royal cause. The triumph of Cromwell compelled him for a time to return to France, but he took an active part in the Scottish insurrection in favour of Charles II. in 1650, and was named lord justice elerk and a privy councillor. These appointments, which on account of the overthrow of the royal cause proved to be at the time only nominal, were confirmed at the Restora- tion in 1660. Soon after this event Sir Robert Murray began to take a prominent part in the deliberations of a club instituted in London for the discussion of natural science, or, as it was then called, the 'new philosophy." When it was proposed to obtain a charter for the society he undertook to interest the king in the matter, the result being that on 15th July 1662 the club was incorporated by charter under the designation of the Royal Society. Sir Robert Murray was its first president, and during the remainder of his life exerted himself with great zeal and ability to extend its influence. He died in June 1673.

MURREE, or MaArrl, a sanatorium and hill station in the Rawal Pindi district, Punjab, is situated in 33° 54' N. lat. and 73° 26' E. long. It forms the great northern sanatorium for the Punjab, and is the ordinary summer resort of the local Government. The houses crown the summit and sides of an irregular ridge of the Murree hills, 7507 feet above sea-level, and command a magnificent view. The climate is admirably adapted to the constitution of Europeans ; the lowest recorded temperature is 21° Fahr., the highest 96°. The resident population in 1868 was 2346; but in the height of the season it probably amounts to 12,000 or 14,000, numbers of visitors

being attracted from Lahore, Rawal Pindi, Pesh4war, and the plains generally.

MURSHIDABAD, or MoorsHEDABAD, a district in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, lying between 23° 43’ and 24° 52’ N. lat. and 87° 43’ and 88° 47’ E. long,, is bounded along its whole fronticr from the extreme N. to the §.E. by the Ganges, separating it from the Nadiya and Rajshahi districts ; on the 8. by Nadiydé and Bardwan —the Jalangi river marking its boundary for a consider- able distance; and on the E. by Birbhum and the Santal Pargands district. The area is 2141 square miles. The district is divided into two nearly equal portions by the Bhagirathi, the ancient channel of the Ganges, which flows due north and south. The tract to the west, known as the Rarh, consists of hard clay and nodular limestone. The general level is high, but interspersed with bils or broad marshes and seamed by hill torrents. The Bagri or eastern half differs in no respect from the ordinary alluvial plains of eastern Bengal. There are few per- manent swamps; but the whole country is low-lying, and hable to annual inundation. In the north-west are a few small detached hillocks, said to be of basaltic formation. The river system is constituted by the Ganges or Padma, and its offshoots and tributaries the Bhagirathi, Bhairab,

Sidlmari, Jalangi, and Sing4,—the first mentioned being by far the most important river within Murshidabad, though only navigable during half the year. It is em- banked along the entire length of its left bank. There are no canals in the district.

The census of 1881 returned the population of the district at 1,226,790 (males 586,483, females 640,307),—Hindus numbering 634,796, Mohammedans 589,957, native Christians 250, and aborigines 836. The population eomprises Bengalis of the delta, hill tribes from Chutia Nagpur, and the peculiar Hindu castes of Behar, while the presence of the court has introdueed Rajputs from the north-west for railway serviee or trade, Afghans and Persians from beyond the frontier, and a bodyguard of Habshis from the east coast of Africa. The six following towns contained. in 1872 a population exceeding 5000,—Murshidabad, 46,182; Barhampur, 27,210; Kandi, 12,016; Jangipur, 11,361; Beldanga, 6037 ; and Margram, 5766.

Other places of some importance are the river marts of Azimganj and Jiaganj, situated opposite each other on the Bhagirathi, Bhagwangola and Dhulian on the Ganges, and the railway stations of Murarai and Nalhati. Sites of historieal interest include the now deserted Kasiimbazar, Badrihat, Rangamati, and the battlefield of Gheria.

Rice constitutes the staple crop, the éman or winter rice being prevalent in the western half of the district, and the aus or early rice in the eastern. A second or cold weather crop of wheat, barley, and many varieties of oil-seeds and pulses is also grown in this latter tract, jute is but little grown, and the cultivation of indigo and of mulberry for silkworms is on the decline. There is little that is peculiar in the land tenures of the district beyond the ramndés or deer parks, held revenue-free by the nawab, and the cultivating tenure known as wé-bandi, according to which the peasant pays rent, not for lis entire holding, but only for the land actually cultivated, the amount being determined by the nature of the crops grown, and being paid in kind. Silk is still manufactured, but the industry is rapidly losing its importance. At Murshidabad city and at Barhampur there are special industries of ivory-carving, bell-metal work, and gold and silver embroidery. The district is favourably situated for trade, both by river and rail. In 1876-77 the exports amounted to £1,020,124; the imports to £739,906. The principal exports consisted of riee, gram and pulses, wheat, silk, and indigo; the principal imports of European piece goods, salt, and raw cotton.

In 1881-82 the net revenue amounted to 1,803,828 rupees, of whieh 1,298,735 were derived from the land-tax. Education in 1876 was afforded by 506 seliools, attended by 14,664 pupils. The special educational institutions are the Barhampur College, founded in 1853; the Nizd4mat College, limited to the education of the relatives of the nawab; and the Nizimat free school in Murshidabad city. The climate does not differ from that common to Lower Bengal, except that it experiences to some extent the burning winds of Central India during the hot season. The average annual temperature is 78°°6 Fahr. In 1880-81 it was 59°82, and in 1881-82 it was 47°76. The average annual rainfall is 54°30 inches. The district has a low standard of health. The stagnant pools formed by the Bhagirathi during the dry season. constitute a perennial source of malaria, and cholera is rarely

absent from the city and suburbs. Elephantiasis and hydrocele are also endemic.

The history of the district centres round the city of Murshidabad, the latest Mohammedan capital of Bengal. In 1704 the nawab Murshid Kulia Khan changed the seat of government to the little town of Maksudabad, but when Ali Vardi Khan won the throne by conquest in 1740 he also adopted Murshidabad as his capital. The great family of Jagat Seth maintained their position as state bankers at Murshidabad from generation to generation. Even after the con- quest of Bengal by the British, Murshidabad remained for some time the seat of administration. Warren Hastings removed the supreme civil and criminal courts to Calcutta in 1772, but in 1775 the latter court was brought back to Murshidébad again. In 1790, under Lord Cornwallis, both the entire revenue and judicial stafls were ultimately fixed at Calcutta.

MursHIpABAD, principal city of the above district, is situated on the left bank of the Bhagirathi river, in 24° 1l’ N. lat. and 88° 18’ E. long. Its importance has entirely departed since it ceased to be the capital of Bengal, and its population has steadily diminished. In 1872 the population was 46,182 (Hindus 27,211, Moham- medans 18,824, Christians 38, “others” 109). It is still a great centre of trade and manufacture, and the Jain merchants of Murshidabad still rank as the wealthiest of their class in Bengal. Their dealings in gold and silver bullion are especially large, and some of their number almost monopolize the local traffic on the Brahmaputra as

far as the north-east frontier of Assam. The principal industries of the city are those fostered by the luxury of the native court. Carving in ivory, conducted with much skill and finish, is an old speciality of the city. The principal building is the new palace of the nawdb nazim, a large and imposing pile of buildings on the banks of the river, and nearly in the centre of the city.

MURZUK. See Ferzzan, vol. ix. p. 130.

MUS, the name of a family of the plebeian gens of the Decii. Two members of the family, a father and a son, crowned distinguished careers in the service of Rome by a singular act of self-devotion. The father, Publius Decius Mus, won his first laurels in the Samnite war, when in 343 B.c., while serving as tribune of the soldiers, he rescued the Roman main army from an apparently hope- less position. In 340 B.c. he was consul, and had, with his colleague Manlius Torquatus, the command in the Latin war. A decisive battle took place under Mt. Vesuvius ; the Romans wavered, and Decius, repeating after the chief pontiff a solemn formula by which he devoted “the legions and auxiliaries of the enemy along with himself to the Du Manes and the earth-goddess,” dashed into the ranks of the Latins and met a death which was followed by a crushing defeat of the enemy (Livy, viii. 9).

The son, who was also called Publius, was consul for the fourth time in 295 B.c., and devoted himself after the pattern of his father in the battle of Sentinum, when the left wing which he commanded was shaken by the Gauls (Livy, x. 28). The story of the elder Decius is regarded by Mommsen as an unhistorical “doublette” of what is related on better authority of the son.

MUSEUS is the name of three Greek poets. The first is an almost fabulous personage, who is said to have flourished in Attica, and to have been buried on the Museum Hill in Athens. The mystic and oracular verses and usages of Attica, and especially of Eleusis, attach them- selves to his name, and when this representative character is deducted nothing of his individuality remains.

The second Muszeus was an Ephesian who was attached to the court of the Pergamenian kings.

The third is of uncertain date, but probably belongs to the 5th century a.D., as the structure of his hexameters is evidently modelled after the canons of Nonnus. The poem in 340 lines which he wrote on the story of Hero and Leander is by far the most beautiful Greek poem of the age. He conveys the pathetic tale of love and death by selecting a few striking situations; he describes each of them in a telling manner, with no attempt to represent ethical char- acter or earnest thought, but with a good eye to the situa- tion,

the dramatic and rhetorical effect. The work shows the influence of the schools of rhetoric, and is evidently the forerunner of the love romances of the Byzantine period.

MUSAUS, J. K. A. (1735-1787), a German author. He studied theology at Jena, his birthplace, and would have become the pastor of a parish but for the resistance of some peasants, who objected that he had been known to dance. In 1760 to 1762 he published in three volumes his first work, Grandison der Zweite, afterwards (in 1781-82) rewritten and issued with a new title, Der deutsche Grandi- son. The object of this book was to show the comic aspects of Richardson's hero, who had many sentimental admirers in Germany. In 1763 Musius was made tutor of the court pages at Weimar, and in 1770 he became a professor at the Weimar gymnasium. His second book — Physiognomische Reisen—did not appear until 1778-79. It was directed against Lavater, and attracted much favour- able attention. In 1782 to 1786 he published his most famous work, Volksmdrchen der Deutschen. Even in this series of tales, the substance of which Musius collected among the people, he could not refrain from expressing

the satirical tone which had marked his previous writings. The stories, therefore, lack the unconscious simplicity which characterizes genuine folk-lore. Still, they are very brightly written, and retain at the present day some of their original popularity. In 1785 was issued Ireund Hein's Erscheinungen in Holbewn's Manier by J. R. Schellenberg, with explanations in prose and verse by Musius. A collec tion of stories entitled Straussfedern, of which a volume appeared in 1787, Musdus was prevented from completing by his death, which occurred on the 28th of October 1787. After his death appeared his Moralische Kinderklapper and Nachgelassene Schriften, the latter edited by his friend and relative Kotzebue. Musius was a man of cheerful and genial temperament, and this dominant characteristic is reproduced in his writings, in which, although satirical, he is never morose. His style is animated, light, and graceful.

See Miiller, Johann Karl August Musdéus (1867).

MUSCAT, or more correctly MasKat, the chief town of ‘Oman in Arabia, lies upon the sea-coast in 23° 40’ N. lat. and 58° 25’ E. long., at the extremity of a small cove in the gorges of a great pass leading iniand through dark mountain walls, scorched with the sun and utterly without vegetation, which rise almost right out of the sea to a height of from 300 to 500 feet on both sides of the cove. The town itself is built on a sloping shore, which affords space for some scanty patches of cultivated ground beyond the gates. The interior aspect of Muscat does not correspond to the extremely striking appearance it presents when approached from the sea. The ruins of the Portuguese cathedral, the palace, the minarets, and.a few other great buildings tower over narrow crowded streets and filthy bazaars, long rows of good houses now falling into decay, and a mass of mean dwellings of sun-dried brick or wretched huts of palm branches. ‘The whole aspect was described by Palgrave in 1863 as that of decay, but the town was still populous, and Palgrave estimated the inhabitants at 40,000, exclusive of the suburbs. Indeed the excellent harbour so admirably situated for the Indian and Persian Gulf trade, the strength of the whole position, which is defended by forts on the encircling rocks and might easily be rendered impregnable, together with the command of the passes to the fertile lands beyond, make it naturally the most important point on all the coast. The inhabitants and government are favourably spoken of ; the population is a mixture of the most varied nationalities, including very many Indians; but good order is maintained and equal justice administered to all creeds. The Mohammedan citizens have a consider- able strain of African blood, the slave trade having been very active before the convention of England with Zanzibar. The climate is not good; the summer heat in so confined a situation is very great, and epidemic fevers are common. The exports (salt, dates, fish, cotton, pearls, mother-of- pearl, &c.) and imports (rice, coffee, sugar, piece goods, &c.) are very considerable, amounting perhaps together to a million sterling per annum.

Round the cape which forms the north-west limit of the cove lies the prosperous and well-built town of Matrah, with 20,000 to 25,000 inhabitants, and a considerable production of ‘Oman stuffs. It may be regarded as a suburb of Muscat, though the land road over the cape is so rough that communication between the towns is con- ducted chiefly by boats.

Muscat is an ancient place, perhaps identical with the Moscha of the Periplus. In the 9th century of the Christian era ships trading from Sirdf to China took in water at Muscat from the well which still supplies the town ; but the place was then quite small, Sohar, farther up the gulf, being the chief place on the ‘Oman coast. The importance of Muscat appears to date from the Portuguese occupa- tion (1508-1658). In the first half of last century the contests of the rival imams of ‘Oman, Saif and Ibn Murshid, placed the town

in the hands of the Persians, who were expelled about 1749 by Ahmed b. Sa‘id. The residence of this prince was at Rustak, but

his grandson Sa‘id made Muscat the capital, and cultivated the friendship and commerce of the English in Bombay and of the United States, to the great advantage of the city. Under Sa‘id’s successor Thuaini family feuds and the intervention of the Wahha- bites impaired the prosperity of the state. Thuaini was murdered in 1867, but after some further troubles his son Turki was estab- lished on the throne by the aid of British influence. .

MUSCATINE, a city of the United States, the county seat of Muscatine county, Iowa, is built on a rocky bluff on the west bank of the Mississippi, at the apex of what is known as the Great Bend. It carries on a large busi- ness in lumber, milling, canning fruits and vegetables, &c. Settled in 1836, and incorporated as a city in 1853, it in- ereased its population from 5324 in 1860 to 8295 in 1880.

MUSCINEA. The Muscinez are a highly interesting class of plants on account of the important part they play in the economy of nature, and also from the remarkable conditions of their development and formation. In many parts of the world it is principally the mossy covering of forests which, by collecting the rainfall like a sponge, pre- yents the pouring down from mountains of violent and excessive torrents of water, while the Bog-moss (Sphagnum) plays an important part in the formation of peat; and many other Mosses which grow on rocks produce by the decay of their dead parts a thin layer of mould (humus) in which the seeds of higher plants are able to take root. The importance, however, of Mosses in a morphological

point of view proceeds from their position in the botanical system. ‘The Muscinee immediately follow the first divi- sion of the vegetable kingdom, the Thallophytes, under which are included the Alge and Fungi, because their vegetative body is a ‘“‘thallus,’—that is to say, is not divided into stem and leaf like that of higher plants, nor are they possessed of roots like those observed in higher plants (Ferns, Conifers, Monocotyledons, Dicotyledons, &e.). Their anatomical structure is also very simple, the individual essential tissue-elements being but little differen- tiated from each other.

The Muscineze agree in many of their conditions with the Thallophytes, in others again with the next higher division, the vascular Cryptogams (Pteridophytes), to which the Ferns, Equisetums, and Lycopodiums belong. In many Muscinez of the division of Liverworts (Hepa- tice) the vegetative body has still the form of a thallus (fig. 1), which is ribbon-shaped and grows in close con- tact with the substratum. There are, however, several gradual stages of transition from this ribbon-shaped thallus to a leaved stem, such as many Liverworts (Hepatic) and all Leaf-mosses (Musct frondosi) possess. Yet the struc- ture of the leaves and of the stem, even in the latter, is very simple. The leaves present for the most part a cell- surface of one layer, and that (if we leave out of sight those in the middle part of the leaf, which in Leaf-mosses form the “mid-rib”) is ordinarily composed of cells of uniform character. There is thus no epidermis as in higher plants, and the leaf itself attains but very trifling dimensions. The stem is also of simple structure; it possesses no ‘vascular bundles,” but consists only of simple cells, among which there is no differentiation, except that those which lie outside often have thicker walls, and thus form a firmer rind-layer, while the interior Ones are more elongated and serve for the storage and transmission of the plastic substances (albumen, hydro- carbons, é&c.). The roots also by which the stems are attached to the ground are of very simple organization. They are either hair-like tubules as in many Liverworts, or rows of cells as in the Leaf-mosses. To distinguish them from the roots of higher plants they have been termed “rhizoids.” In many cases the vegetative body scarcely attains one twenty-fifth of an inch in length, in others, however, it rises into a much-branched form of

-the female sexual organ, the archegonium.

from about 4 to about 12 inches or more. The duration of its life reaches in some small forms (Zphemerum, Phascum, &c.) only a few weeks or months; in most cases, how- ever, it is virtually unlimited, since the vegetative body continues to grow at its point while the older parts below are dying away. From this cause too the branches are isolated from each other, and become independent plants. In a peat-moor, for instance, the Bog-moss plants on the upper surface are the points and branches of the very same plants whose under-parts have long ago died away, and have principally contributed to the formation of the peat. This isolation of the branches through the dying away of the older parts which keep them together is at the same time a means of multiplication. Mosses also possess many other arrangements for asexual multiplica- tion, as through gemme, “innovations,” &c. In the Liver- worts, for instance, almost every cell is capable of giving origin to a new plant.

The most extensive propagation, however, of the Mosses is that by means of spores, small roundish cells which are formed in a peculiar capsule, the sporogonium. The forma- tion of these sporogonia is especially characteristic of the Muscinee. They originate, as a consequence of fertiliza- tion, from a cell—the ovum-cell—which is generated in These arche— gonia (fig. 6) have, when ready for fertilization, the form of a flask. They consist of an inferior and somewhat swollen portion, which contains the ovum-cell, and of a superior portion drawn out to some length, the neck. The neck forms a canal through which the male fertilizing bodies, the spermatozoids (fig. 5, D), enter to blend with the ovum-cell. In the immature condition the arche- gonium is closed, its neck portion is filled up with a string of cells and covered at the top by a layer of cells which closes it like a lid (fig. 6). At a later period, however, the membranes of the string of cells which fills up the neck (the canal-cells of the neck) are converted into a jelly, which on contact with water swells up greatly, forces open the apex of the neck portion, and thus pre- sents an open access to the ovum-cell. The mucilage which arises from the swelling up of the canal-cells of the neck is also so far of importance with regard to fertiliza- tion that by it

the freely-moving male fertilizing bodies are stopped when they reach the neck of the archegonium. The male fertilizing bodies are here, as in many Alge, in the vascular Cryptogams, and in most animals, termed spermatozoids, They are spirally-coiled filaments, thick- ened et the posterior extremity, finely pointed at the anterior, and bearing at this thin end two long fine cilia by means of which they can move in water. The sperma- tozoids are formed in the male sexual organs, the an- theridia (fig. 5, C), which are bodies with long or short stalks, and of spherical, oval, or club-shaped form, sur- rounded by a wall-stratum consisting of a simple layer of cells, and which possess in their interior a tissue formed of numerous small cells, in each of which one spermatozoid takes its origin. When the wall-layer of the antheridium is torn asunder the spermatozoids are set free at its apex, and move in water by means of their cilia, like Infusoria. Thus water is always necessary to fertilization ; it is only in water that the neck of the archegonium opens, and that the spermatozoids can move. Since either the Mosses grow in moist localities, or those which spring up in dry situa- tions always form little turfs so as to suck up every drop of rain like a sponge, their fertilization is always secured, provided the organs of both sexes are present.

Even before the opening of the archegonium-case the oosphere has formed itself in the inferior portion of the archegonium. Originally in this inferior ventricose por- tion of the archegonium is a large cell, the central cell

(fig. 6). From this a small cell is severed in an upward direction, which perishes at a later period, and is called the ventral canal-cell (fig. 6, 6), while the inferior cell becomes round and forms itself into the oosphere. When ready for fertilization the ovum-cell is a spherical por- tion of protoplasm with a cell-nucleus (fig. 6, ¢). Fer- tilization follows on the blending of one or perhaps several spermatozoids with the oosphere. The first result of fertilization is that the oosphere becomes surrounded by a membrane of cellulose, and then grows very notably, while correspondingly with this growth it becomes divided by cell-walls, and thus becomes a cellular body. From the fertilized oosphere proceeds the moss-fruit, the

sporogonium. The embryo which has proceeded from the fertilized oosphere lives at the expense of the vegetative body on which the archegonium is situated, like a para- site on the plant that nourishes it. The ventral portion of the archegonium grows along with the embryo. In Riccia, the lowest form of one subdivision of the Liver- worts, the sporogonium remains even during the whole lifetime of the plant shut up within the ventral portion of the archegonium, and the spores formed in the sporo- gonium are not set free until that part of the plant on which the archegonium is situated withers away. In

most other Liverworts also the sporogonium attains almost °

its entire development within the ventral portion of the archegonium, which grows contemporaneously with it, and it is not until the spores are mature that the stalk of the sporogonium extends itself considerably (fig. 3,(1), 4); then the ventral portion of the archegonium springs in pieces and the spore-capsule issues forth and scatters its spores,— an occurrence which is completed within a few days. The ventral portion of the archegonium, which increases con- siderably after fertilization and which surrounds the embryo like a sheath, is termed calyptra. In the case of the Liverworts this calyptra is burst open by the sporogonium ; in the Mosses, however, the elongated fusiform-embryo tears away the calyptra at its base and raises it up like a cap on its apex, and it is then found situated on the extremity of the sporogonium. In many Leaf-inosses (Polytrichum, Hypnum crista castrensis) the sporogonium requires more than a year for its development.

The function of the sporogonium is the production of spores. The simplest mode in which this takes place is seen in the species Riccia. Here the sporogonium is a spherical cell-body, consisting of a wall-layer-and an interior tissue. The cells of this latter are called the mother-cells of the spores, because each of them by division forms four spores. In the species, however, which stand higher we can distinguish in the sporogonium a foot, which fre- quently penetrates into the tissue of the vegetative body, and in many Liverworts and almost all Mosses prolongs itself into a stalk supporting the capsule in which the spores are formed (figs. 3, 7, 8). In the case of most Liverworts we find in this capsule, besides the spores, also a number of cells which do not become spores. These either act as “‘nutrient

cells” to the spore-forming cells, which gradually consume the matters stored up in them (Riella), or they form themselves into fusiform-cells with spiral thickenings of parts of the wall—the so-called elaters, which play a part in the dispersion of the spores. The sporogonia of Mosses do not possess elaters. They are rather complex structures, and attain a higher anatomical differentiation than the moss-stem itself. For example, at certain points in their epidermis they possess openings (stomata), which are entirely absent on the stem. In order to ensure the dispersion of the spores, special arrangements are found in the sporogonia of Mosses.

The course of development of the Muscinez divides itself into two sharply-defined stages. The vegetative

body, whether it be only a thallus as in many Liverworts, or a leafy stem, produces the sexual organs, the antheridia and the archegonia. From the fertilized oosphere of the archegonium arises a special structure, the sporogonium, which does not nourish itself independently, but lives like a parasite upon the moss-plant, and produces the spores only ina sexual way. The two stages—on the one hand the moss-plants that bear sexual organs, and on the other the sporogonium developed as the result of fertilization—are termed generations; accordingly in the Muscinez the course of development consists in a regular alternation of these two stages—in an alternation of generations. The one genera- tion possesses sexual organs, and is thus the sexual one. The other generation, the result of fertilization, possesses no sexual organs and is asexual, but produces the spores. Such alternation of generations is exhibited still more strikingly in Ferns. In this case, however, it is the proper leafy fern-plant which is the asexual generation, producing spores, but possessing no sexual organs. It arises out of a fertilized oosphere, and thus corresponds to the sporo- gonium of the Muscineze. The sexual generation of the Ferns is a small and insignificant expansion, the prothallium, which bears antheridia and archegonia, and thus corre- sponds to the sexual generation of the Muscinez, which is here represented by the proper moss-plant. The vege- tative body of the Mosses which bears the sexual organs is not, however, the immediate product of the

germination of the spore, from which there is produced in the first place a simple structure, a pro-embryo (specially developed in the Mosses proper, where it is termed “ protonema,” and where it assumes the appearance of a much-branched fila- mentous confervaceous Alga, fig. 15); it is from this pro- embryo that the leafy stems arise as lateral buds.

From a systematic point of view the Muscinez are divided into two sections —Liverworts (Hepatice) and Mosses (Musci frondosi). The two sections are closely related to each other, but in external characters they are separated by rather sharp boundary lines.

J. Liverworts (Lepaticz).

Liverworts stand below the Mosses proper in regard to the number both of species and of individuals. They are also of much more limited occurrence, for they are found, for the most part, only in damp and shady localities, and seldom occupy any large extent of ground. The most extensive growths are those of many Marchantiacex—as, for example, Fegatella conica, which often forms a con- tinuous covering on moist stones, walls, dc.

(1) The Organs of Vegetation.—With a few exceptions, the vege- tative body is closely united to the substratum on which it grows, and fastened to it by clasping-roots (rhizoids) composed of a single cell. The side turned ae towards the substratum is of different structure from the upper or dor- sal side. The Liver- worts thus belong, with the exception of two species, to the class of ,} dorsi-ventral plants, or those possessing two sides of different struc- ture, a dorsal side and a ventral side, as in vertebrate animals.

The vegetative body of the Liverworts is either a thallus or a Fic. 1.— Metzgeria furcata (magnified about 10 dia- leafy plant; and we meters). The anterior portion of a thallus, seen

h 1 on the right hand from above and on the left ave consequently to hand from below. m, mid-rib; s, s’, 9’, the grow-

distinguish between ing points; f, f, the wing-like expanded poe thallose and foliose Li- of the thallus, composed of a single layer of cells ; verworts to later If. f”, its development by ramification. (After

have already been snp

termed Hepatice frondose. ‘There occur, however, transitional

Naa

LIVERWORTS. |

forms between these two. Fig. 1 represents an example of a thallose Liverwort, showing the anterior portion of a plant of Metzgeria furceta. On the right hand is shown the upper, on the left the under side. The vegetative body is a ribbon-shaped thallus, on the under side of which the clasping-roots (rhizoids) spring out of the mid-rib. Here the mid-rib is sharply separated from the side portions, but in other cases (as Anewra and Pellia) it passes into them by a very gradual transition. In front, in an indentation of the growing point (s), are found the only organs which are formed upon it. These are hairs secreting mucilage (papille), and which stand on the under side. The mucilage which they secrete is prob- ably intended for the purpose of protecting the vegetative point against the effects of drought.

A peculiar exception appears in the growth of the genus Riella (fig. 2). In this case a membranous wing, about cw one-fifth of an inch in width, of the finest green rere and of extreme delicacy, turns regularly on a central rib or axis, so as to form with the axisa sort of screw or winding staircase, having the form of an invertcd cone with the apex down- wards. The length of the whole plant of Riella helicophylia is about 2 inches. This plant, which is decidedly one of the most remarkable forms in the vegetable kingdom, grows upright in water, and was discovered in Algiers. At its lower end it is attached to the ground by clasping- roots. This is the only thallose Liverwort that grows upright, and also one of the few that grow in water. There are likewise two species of Riccta which swim in water— Riccia natans and Riccia fiwitans ; but these also possess forms which live on land, and it is these forms which attain to the formation of sporogonia. It follows hence that these plants also were originally in every case land plants. A few others too, such as Pellia epiphylla and Marchantia polymorpha, have the power of vegetating in water, but this happens only exceptionally, and the plants are then sterile.

Returning to the thallose Liverworts that live on land, we have to remark that the differentia- \N tion of their tissues is a very simple one. The fin cells of the thallus, so far as they are not em- Ai ployed in the formation of clasping-roots or of Fic, 2,—Plant of sexual organs, are all homogeneous. Those only Riella helicophylla, of the mid-rib present a difference in Metzgeria, rom Algiers. Siyttia, and others by their lengthened form. From this simple form has arisen a further complication in the development of the vegetative body in two different series. In the Marchantiacex the vegetative body retains the form of a thallus, but its anatomical organization is of higher structure. In the Jungermanniacew® it is the external organization of the vegetative body which is the richer, and here the transition takes place in it to the foliose Liverworts, which possess a stem with leaves.

We may consider as representative of the Marchantiacex the very widely – spread Marchantia poly- morpha. Its ve- are body is a

road_ ribbon- shaped thallus, which has on its under side clasp- Ing-roots (single- celled tubules, which are either simple, or have on their inner side characteristic coni- cal or tubercular thickenings) and two rows of mem- branous lamelle, the uppermost of Which cover the growing point and p, form a protection to it. (See the section through Fegatella, an allied form, fig. 3,(1), Z.) The upper surface

G. 3.—(1) Longitudinal section through the growing- point (apex) of Fegatella conica, On the upper side of the thallus are formed the air- chambers, as depres- sions in the upper surface K. On the under side of the thallus are formed membranous scales L, which always proceed from one cell. (2) Surface-view of a young portion of the thallus; the stomata appear as gaps in the epidermis. They are surrounded by a few

MUSCINKE &

presents a division into small rhom- oidal spaces (ar- eole), and in the middle of hole.

concentric cells, of which the first are represented. (3), (4), (6) Marchantia polymorpha ; development of the air-chambers and stomata. In (5) a

number of cell- threads containing chlorophyll are seen sprouting from the bottom of the air-chamber.

each space is an opening, the stoma or breathing A section through the thallus shows a strongly-marked

epidermis broken through at definite spots by the stomata or breathing holes, which, however, in this case have a very different structure from that presented in the higher plants. In Marchantia (fig. 8, (5), Sp) they are of barrel-shaped figure, and consist of several rings or tiers of cells placed over one another. Their origin may be traced in fig. 8, (3) and (4). Below the epidermis we find chambers filled with air. These, however, are not empty; from their base sprout forth cellular threads (fig. 3, (5)), the cells of which contain a large quantity of chlorophyll. It is in these that the assimilation of the carbon takes place. Those cells of the thallus which lie beneath serve only for the storing up and transmission of the materials for construction. The individual chambers are separated from each other by flat layers of cells, and on these rest the rhomboidal areole of the upper surface which can be seen with the naked eye. In other Marchantiex the stomata are of a different structure. In Fegatella, for example, they are not barrel-shaped, but are bounded by several concentric circles of cells, which all lie on the upper surface of the thallus. Early stages of these are repre- sented in fig. 8, (2). The way in which the air-chambers and stomata attain their condition is very remarkable. Small depressions in the cell-layer of the upper surface are formed in large numbers behind the growing point (fig. 3, (1), UV). These widen considerably, and beconie, as it were, roofed over by the neighbouring parts, so that an epidermis (fig. 3, (1), #) grows in this manner over the hol- lows from the bottom of which at a later period the green cellular threads sprout forth. The strings of mucilage-cells which are found in the tissue of Fegatella, the brown threads which appear in that of Preissia, and the cells filled with a brown oily secretion which are found in Marchantia and other species must also be mentioned.

The second series, which comes next to the simple thallose forms, is that of the foliose or leafy Junyermannice. Forms intermediate between the thallose and the foliose are represented by the species Blasia and

Fossombronia. The former, which not unfrequently grows in the damp soil of forests, possesses a flat, thallus-like stem, which bears on its longitudinal axis two rows of leaves inserted parallel to each othcr, and has also on the under side two rows of toothed scales, the amphigastria. Fossombronia makes a nearer approach to the proper leafy forms ; it possesses two rows of leaves inserted obliquely to the longitudinal axis of the flattened stem. In the foliose Jungermanniew, in the narrower sense of the term, the stalk is thin and thread-like, and bears distinctly defined leaves. In this case also—with the exception of the upright growing Haplomitrium Hookeri—the stem grows in close connexion with the substratum. The leaves stand in three rows: two lateral, and one ventral towards the substratum. The ventral leaves are in this case also, as in Blasia, termed amphigastria or under leaves. They are smaller than the side leaves, and are sometimes reduced to the form of mere hairs, or even are entirely wanting, as in Jungermannia bicuspidata, where it is only in rare exceptional cases that they appear. The leaves of Liverworts consist of a single layer of cells without any mid-rib. They are commonly bifid at the apex, but in many forms this condition is only recognizable in early development, and disappears before maturity.

In general the leaves stand so thickly that they overlap each other with their margins, and quite cover the upper surface of the stem. ‘The way in which the leaves overlap has been employed as a systematic character. Overshot leaves (folia succuba) are those in which the anterior margin turned towards the vegetative point of the stem stands higher than the posterior one, and thus the anterior margin of each leaf overlaps the posterior margin of the leaf which stands before it, while its own posterior margin is overlapped by the anterior margin of the leaf which stands behind it. In the opposite case of wadershot leaves (folia incuba), the posterior margin of the leaf is higher than its anterior margin, and the anterior margin, inclining obliquely outwards, is overlapped by the posterior margin of the leaf which comes next before it, as in fig. 4. The mode in which the leaves overlap each other depends on a difference in the relative amount of growth of the upper or dorsal and the under or ventral side respectively. If the growth of the upper side preponderates, then we have the overshot, in the opposite case the undershot mode of covering. Originally the leaves do not stand obliquely to the longitudinal axis; it is only gradually that they are shifted out of their place. The position of the leaves is explained by their origin.

The apex of the stem is occupied by a cell which has the form of a three-sided pyramid with a vaulted base. The surface of one side of the pyramid is directed downwards, the two others are directed laterally. This apical cell is divided by walls which are parallel alternately to one of the side walls. Thus seg- ments are cut off from the apical cell and lie in three rows. From each of these segments arises a leaf. The leaves are thus necessarily likewise arranged in three rows, one of which is turned towards the substratum. ;

The anatomical structure of the stem is also a very simple one. Its exterior cells have their walls somewhat more strongly thickened, and thus form a firmer rind-layer. We must also notice the secre- tion of dark-brown oily corpuscles, which undergo no further con- version, and are met with in certain leaf-cells. In the thallose

forms the ramification is of a forked character (dichotomous) (fig. 1). Frequently too, on the older portions, ‘‘adventitious” shoots

Fia. 4.—A. A leafy (foliose) Jungermannia (Chiloscyphus polyanthos corda) with three sporogonia ; on the right above is one with the capsule open, while in the two others it is still closed. B. A ‘‘ perianthium,” with the perichetial leaves below.

are formed ; they may frequently be seen to spring from the margin and the mid-rib of the thallus of Metzgeria furcata. ‘The ramifica- tion of the foliose Liverworts is a very complex one, but is never of a really forked character. The branchlets commonly stand below the leaves on the sides of the stem.

The above-mentioned ‘‘adventitious” shoots serve the purpose of vegetative increase. ‘The same end is attained by the gemme, which are of many different forms. In Ancwra individual cells detach themselves from the thallus and grow up into new plants. In the Marchantice the gemme are formed in peculiar receptacles which stand on the upper side of the ribbon-shaped thallus. In Marchantia polymorpha these receptacles have the form of a basket open at the top, while in Lunularia the margin of the same recep- tacle is semieircular. The gemme, which are developed on the base of the receptacle, are flat upright cellular bodies, with two indentations at the

sides, out of whieh at a later period, at the time of germination, proceed two growing points. The gemma, however, are of similar structure on both sides. Which side is at the time of germination to become dorsal with stomata and air-chambers, and whieh ventral with root-hairs, is decided by its position with respect to the light. It is always the side turned towards the light which develops itself into that which bears stomata. This occurs even when gemme that swim on water receive light only from below. In that case the under side becomes that which possesses stomata and the air-chambers described above, while the upper side develops root-hairs (rhizoids). Blasta pusilla has also very pecu- liar receptacles for gemme, provided with a long channel leading outwards, while in many foliose Jungermanniew—for example, Jungermannia ventricosa, Scapania nemorosa, Jungermannia bicus- pidata, and others—gemme eonsisting of a few cells are formed on the leaves or the stem respectively.

(2) The Organs of Scx.—The antheridium in Liverworts is a spherical or ellipsoidal cellular body with a shorter or longer stalk (fig. 5, C), and consists of a wall-layer and an interior tissue, the mother-cells of the spermatozoids. In each of these cells a spermatozoid is formed, and, as it appears, in the following way :— the peripheral layer of the cell-nueleus becomes thickened, and splits up into a ribbon, either annular or rolled up spirally. The cilia by means of which the spermatozoid moves in water appear, on the other hand, to be formed from the protoplasm in which the cell- nucleus lies. The process, however, requires still closer investigation. Each antheridium is originally a simple cell, which grows by repeated subdivision and becomes the antheridial body. By the swelling up of the walls of the spermatozoid mother-cells, the cells of the antheridium-wall are forced asunder at the apex, and the spermatozoids, each imbedded in mucilage, are emitted in jets either free from one another or united into a pulp. This pulp 1s often ejected by an explosion of the antheridium, as may be easily observed in Frullania dilatata. In water the spermatozoids isolate themselves, and in the most favourable cases are carried over to the archegonia. Since very many spermatozoids are formed in one antheridium, and since one or very few of these suffice for the

MUSCINE &

fertilization of an archegonium, it is evident that an enormous number of them must perish.

The archegonia also proceed from one cell, through the division of which their construction is accomplished. They always take their origin from the cells of the upper surface, and the same is the case with those of Anthoceros, which, however, are sunk into the tissue of the thallus, so that their neck and ventral portions remain united with the tissue of the thallus and do not project freely over it.

The distribution of the organs of sex is either monccious or

Fic. 5.—Marchantia polymorpha. A. Anterior portion of a thallus, ¢, with two erect antheridial inflorescences hu. B, Longitudinal vertical section through a young antheridial inflorescence. The antheridia are situated in depressions of the upper surface. 6, scales; h, roots (rhizoids); 0, 0, the openings of the depressions in which the antheridia lie. C. A nearly mature antheri- dium ; st, its stalk; w, the wall. D. Two spermatozoids, magnified 800 dia- meters. Each possesses two fine cilia. (After Sachs.)

dicecious. In the latter case the antheridia and archegonia are found on different individual plants, as in Sphwrocarpus terrestris, where the male plant is smaller than the female. In the former case the antheridia and archegonia are found on the same plant. In the thallose forms they are always inserted on the dorsal side of the thallus, and commonly sunk into a cavity in it (fig. 5, B). In Anthoceros the antheridia even stand in closed cavities, which do not open till the antheridium is mature. The organs of sex stand either on ordinary branches, which at a later period vegetate and grow, or on special sexual shoots. These are of especially remarkable construction in the Marchanticx, of which Marchantia polymorpha may serve asanexample. In this species the antheridia are found on the upper side of a peltate radially-lobed disk, supported on a stalk (fig. 5, 4). The archegonia stand on the under side of a similar receptacle. These structures may be termed. ‘‘inflorescences.” They are not simple branches, but systems of branches which have arisen from the repeated bifurcation of a thallus-shoot. Each indentation in the disk of the “inflorescence ” corresponds to the

vegetative point of a braneh, and this explains the fact that the oldest antheridia are found in the centre of the disk ; and from this point to the periphery, where the vegetative points are found, are successive groups of antheridia of younger growth, for the youngest organs of sex always stand next to the vegetative point of the shoot. The stalk of the inflorescence is nothing else than the inferior portion of the branch-system greatly prolonged. In the leafy Jungermannicx the distribution of the organs of sex is also either moneecious or dicecious. The arche- gonia in this case stand either singly (Lejewnia, &c.) or in larger groups. ‘The first archegonium always arises from the apical cell of the shoot connected with it, so that with it the latter closes its longitudinal growth. This circumstance has been employed in the classification of the foliose Jungermannicx (with the exception of Haplomitriwm) as aerogynous in contradistinction to the anacrogy- nous, in which latter the archegonia never proceed from the apex of the shoot itself.

Whilst the archegonia of the thallose forms are protected by being lodged in an excavation of the thallus, or surrounded by @ luxuriant growth of its tissue, the archegonia of the foliose Junger- mannics# are enveloped by the leaves of the stem-bud, which on that account are termed perichetial leaves (/olia perichextialia), or, collectively, perichetium. Between these perichetial leaves and the archegonia there grows up in most forms a second involucre, of a goblet or pitcher shape, the ‘‘ perianthium ” (fig. 4, B). It springs up in the form of a circular fence, gradually growing up- wards. In many Jungermannice (Calypogeia) the archegonia are enclosed in a kind of sack-shaped structure, which forces its way into the ground, in which, in fact, it takes root. This ‘‘ fruit- sac” in the Jungermannicew geocalycee is the hollowed-out shoot from which the archegonia arise. Its extremity becomes thickened and forms a circular fence about the archegonia ; thus there arises a structure about two twenty-fifths of an inch long, whieh is con- stantly becoming deeper, and at the bottom of which the arche- gonia are placed. ‘here is always an endeavour to protect and envelop the archegonia. This is notably conspicuous in the Marchantiee, where round every archegonium there grows after

7)

fertilization a special goblet-shaped involucre, whilst every group of archegonia is also enveloped by two scales, which incline towards each other like the valves of a mussel-shell.

Fic. 6.—Marchantia polymorpha. Archegonia at different stages of development, in longitudinal section. (1) An archegonium not yet open; its neck portion is still covered at its point by the lid-cells d. In the ventral portion fies a large cell, which has divided into a small upper cell, the ‘ventral canal-cell,” b, and a lower one, the oosphere. In (2) the neck portion of the archegonium is open; the oosphere has assumed a spherical form; the ventral canal-cell is shrivelled up. (38) A fertilized archegonium ; the oosphere has become developed into an embryo, here consisting of eight cells, d is an involucre, which in Marchantia grows round the archegonium after fertilization. (After Sachs.)

(3) Development of the Asexual Generation of the Sporogonium.— Just as in the vegetative classification we are led in a continuous series from the simple thallose forms to the foliose forms, so in the perfecting of the fertilized oosphere into an embryo (here the sporo- gonium) there is a gradual advance from simple to more complex forms. The first result of fertilization always is that the oosphere becomes surrounded by a membrane, grows, and transforms itself by division into a cellular body. In the simplest ease, in iccia (fig. 7, 4), the only differentia- tion which takes

lace in this cel- ular body is that it forms a wall- layer which is soon reabsorbed, while the whole of the interior cells form spores

mm such a way

that by division

four spores pro- ceed from every mother-cell. In

Marchantia (fig.

7, 2) we find a Fra. 7.—Young embryos of Liverworts in longitudinal

Separation tak- section (semi-diagrammatic), The cells from the divi-

ing place in the sion of which the mother-cells of the spores proceed are

emb re shaded. A. A spherical embryo of Riccia, without stalk.

CMbryo, Nwhich B. Marchantia polymorpha; the upper part of the em

its inferior por- bryo Ka turns into the capsule, the lower part into the

tion (that be- stalk. ©, Pellia epiphylla; the cell a forms an append- neath the line i, 28° to the embryo; the stalk proceeds from the cells

- » marked by brackets, and from those above is formed the) ecomes the capsule, whose wall and internal mass are now distin-

short stalk of the Jag The whole inner portion of the capsule pro-

sporogon} ceeds from the division of four cells. D. Anthoceros

4 a and levis; col, columella. E. Jungermannia bicuspidata. : perlor por- F, Radula complanata, E shows the arrangement of the

tion becomes the

capsule. In the

Jungermannicx

cells of the embryo which is characteristic of the Jun- germanniee ; it is composed of a number of transverse disks, which always consist of four cells. (fig. 7, C, H, F) we find in the young embryo a group of cells from which proceed the mother-cells of the spores (shown by hatched | lines in the figures); they are covered by a layer of cells which at a later period becomes the wall of the spore-cap- sule. Lower down (distinguished by a bracket in fig. 7, C) Comes that part of the embryo out of which the stalk of

the Sporogonium is formed, while the cell a represents an appendage ofthe embryo. The inferior portion of the stalk often swells into a thickened foot, which frequently penetrates deeply into the tissue

of the fertile shoot (fig. 8). The upper part of the sporogonium, in which the spores and elaters are formed, swells into a sphere.

ots qn hy» ie CUS

MUSCINE A

.at their apex they are

69

In the Jungermanniew, when the sporogonium attains maturity, the stalk becomes very considerably lengthened, the ventral part of the archegonium, which had hitherto kept pace with it in growth, flies asunder, and the capsule emerges. This opens in various ways. In the Junger- manniex the wall breaks up into four valves (fig. 4). The sporogonia of Anthoceros behave in a very peculiar manner. The period occupied by their development is much longer than that of the Jungermannice. While they are dis- charging mature spores

still growing at their base, and forming new spores. The sporogon- ium dehisces by two valves, and is traversed in the middle line by a longitudinal string of cells not employed in the formation of spores. This persists till the maturation of the sporogonium as a little column, and is termed

Fic. 8.—Jungermannia bicuspidata, Longitudinal section of the immature sporogoniuin sg, sur- rounded by ar, the calyptra (the ventral por- tion of the archegonium which has kept pace with it in growth). In the sporogonium three parts are to be distinguished: the globular cap- sule in which lie the mother-cells of the spores and the elaters, the cylindrical stalk which at

the ‘‘columella” (see a later period lengthens very considerably, and fic. 7 D) The cells the swollen foot which has penetrated deeply 8: 4; g a into the tissue of the fruit-shoot.

ar’, arche- gonia which have remained unfertilized ; p, base cells of the spores pro- of the perianthium; st, stem (fruit-shoot); 0,

ceed have here the form Jeaf- (After Hofmeister.) of a dome and enclose an inner portion which becomes the columella, while the inferior portion of the embryo becomes its foot. In Dendroceros, a foreign form of Anthoceros, it drives tubules resem- bling roots into the tissue of the plant on which the sporogonium is seated. There is no want of transitional steps between this method of formation of the sporogonia and that of the Jungermannice. The species Notothylas is especially noteworthy in this respect. The spores, which proceed from one mother-cell by division into four parts, are enveloped by a membrane consisting of two layers— an outer one, which has the character of a cuticle in its great resistance to external agencies, and an inner one, which is composed of cellulose. The plants do not proceed directly from the germina- tion of the spores; there is a pro-embryo of simple structure, which, however, in most cases passes over at its end into the plant itself. In the foliose Jungermannice the first step in germination is the springing up of a row of cells in the cell at the end of which the growth of the shoot next takes place. The young germ-plant next develops leaves of very simple structure, and at first there generally appear on it only two rows of leaves at the sides. In Radula, however, and Frullania, both of them leafy forms, a cake- like cell-surface is first developed in germination ; and it is from one of the cells of the margin of this that the growth of the leafy plant proceeds.

from which te mother-

CLASSIFICATION OF LIVERWORTS A. Marchantiacce,

I. Riecice.—The vegetative body is a dichotomously branched thallus, on the dorsal side of which are air-chambers, either covered by an epidermis like the Marchantiew, or opening outwards in their whole breadth. On the under side of the thallus is a row of scale-shaped lamellz, which become split up at a later period. The sexual organs are scattered on the dorsal side of the ordinary shoots. In the spore-cavity are neither elatérs nor sterile cells .

ll. Corsinicw.—The organs of sex are united in groups, which stand in cavities on the dorsal side of the thallus. In the spore- space are stcrile cells, which in Boschia are transformed into elaters. The dorsal side of the thallus possesses stomata.

Ill. Marchanticwe.—The thallus is ribbon – shaped, and has a layer of air-chambers on the dorsal side opening outwards through a stoma. On the ventral side are two rows of scales. In the spore- space are elaters. The formation of the ‘‘inflorescences ” in the lowest forms agrees with those of Corsinia ; in the highest forms they appear as branch-systems.

B. Jungermanniacce.

I. Jungermannicw.—The vegetative body is a thallus without air-chambers, or isaleafystem. Between these are transitional forms. The sporogonium is differentiated into capsule, stalk, and foot ; the capsule dehisces by four valves. _ ; :

(a) Anacrogynous.—The apex is not employed in the formation

of the archegonium. To this division belong all the thal-

lose forms (including Blasia and Fossombronia), as well as Haplomitrium Hookeri. In Riella and Sphwrocarpus the capsule is without elaters, but possesses sterile cells mor- phologically corresponding to them. All the others have elaters.

(b) Acrogynous.—The apex or the apical cell itself is employed in the formation of the archegonium. All the forms are foliose, except Haplomitriuwm, which also, in the develop- ment of its leaves, does not correspond with the foliose forms, but with Fossombronia.

II. Anthocerotese.—Thallose forms. The archegonia, immediately on their first formation, are sunk into the tissue of the thallus. The antheridia stand in closed cavities. The formation of the sporogonium shows no distinction between stalk and capsule, but is pod-shaped and fixed by its swollen foot

into the thallus. At maturity the sporogonium opens with two valves, between which the columella becomes visible. At its base it possesses a long and permanent growth.

Il. Mosszs (Musci or Musci Frondost).

The Mosses proper play a much larger part in the economy of nature than the Liverworts ; they occur in much greater quantity and are more widely distributed, the con- ditions of their production not being confined within such narrow limits. While the Liverworts, for the most part, thrive only in localities that are not too dry, though some forms that grow upon bark, such as Radula and Frullania, can even endure drought, Mosses, on the other hand, have an almost ubiquitous character. Many grow in water (Conomitrium, Fontinalis, &c.), in swamps (various kinds of Hypnum and others), on dry rocks (Grimmia, Andreea), on roofs, in fields, and on trees, —in short, under favour- able circumstances, a growth of Mosses develops itself almost everywhere. This is connected with the fact that very many have the capacity of enduring drought, and of suspending their growth while it continues and resuming it again in moist weather. Besides, a few, such as Hypnum cupressiforme, Ceratodon, Barbula ruralts, can grow upon any kind of substratum. Others grow by preference on organic substrata: as Buxbaumia imdusiata on decayed trunks, Splachnum on old cowdung or on a damp humus- soil, Orthotrichum and the species of Weckera on the firm bark of trees, Phascum in manured fields, a great number like Grimmia and Andrea on rocks. As regards the chemical quality of the substratum, we can distinguish be- tween Mosses that live on chalk (Seligeria, the species of Gymnostomum, and some Hypna) and those that avoid chalk (Andreea, Dicranum). The species of Polytrichum and Thuidium abietinum are fond of sandy soils, Ephem- erum, Iissidens taxifolius, and others of loamy soils, while Archidium phascoides grows on muddy ground. This wide extension of the Leaf-mosses is rendered possible by their uncommonly great capacity for reproduction. Not only is the formation of spores in most species very extensively carried on, but we have to add to this the manifold pro- duction of asexual means of multiplication, such as gemme, &c. The sexual as well as the asexual generation of Mosses attains to a higher grade of perfection than that of Liverworts.

(1) The Sexual Generation.—The extent of the sexual generation of the Moss-plants proper varies within wide limits. While the stem of Hphemerum and some species of Phascum appears in the form of a small bud, often searcely visible to the naked eye, there are species of more than 4 inches in length, as Sphagnum, Fontinalis, and the tropical species Spzridens. In every case, however, we have here a really leafy stem ; no thallose forms exist.

The leaves are simple and always small. They either consist of one layer in their whole extent, or are traversed by a mid-rib of several layers, which is often of rather complex structure, and consists of thick-walled and thin-walled tissue-elements, of which the former give mechanical firmness to the leaf, while it is principally in the latter

that the conveyance to the stem of the matter formed in the leaf takes place. In the species of Polytrichum the middle nerve occupies the greatest part of the leaf, and is covered with lamellz, which consist of cells bearing chlorophyll. Instead of these lamellze, we find in some other Mosses simple rows of cells, as in Pharomitrium subsessile. A peculiar structure of the leaf is also found in Leucobryum glaucum and Sphagnum. The first-named Moss forms thick greenish-white turfs in damp spots. A transverse section through a leaf shows it to be composed of two (or three) layers of cells. Above and below is a layer of large cells devoid of contents, the membrane of which is per- forated in various places, so that the cavities of the individual cells communicate with each other; thus arises a system of capillary tubes which suck up water and retain it like a sponge. Between the angles of every two of these colourless cells we find inserted a cell containing chlorophyll. The colourless cells are filled with air instead of water, and thus the whole plant has a whitish appear- ance (Leucobryum), while the green hue comes out at the approach of moisture. The leaves of Sphagnum possess a similar structure. In these too are perforated cells devoid of contents, and surrounded by the meshes of cells contain- ing chlorophyll. The inner wall of the empty cells devoid of chlorophyll is for the most part set with peculiar thickenings of annular or spiral form (fig. 9, f), which give

Fie. 9.—Sphagnum acutifolium. A. A part of the surface of the leaf, seen from above. It consists of tubular cells containing chlorophyll cl, and large empty cells, which are thickened on their inner surface by spiral bands f, and pierced in some places with openings 7. B. Transverse section of the leaf ; cl, cells containing chlorophyl); ls, the large empty cells. (After Sachs.)

it the necessary firmness, as in the vessels of higher plants.

In this case too the empty perforated cells are intended

for the purpose of absorbing water; and the same end is

attained by cells of similar structure, which form the rind of the stem.

The stem of Mosses is distinguished by its slight but uniform thickness, which for the most part does not exceed that of a thick thread. Compared with this deli- cacy, the compact, firm, and tough quality of the corre- sponding forms in higher plants is so much the more strik- ing. It depends on the fact that the exterior layers of cells in the stem have thickened cell-walls, generally of a brown colour, while the central parts have thin walls. The differ- entiation of the tissues reaches its highest point in Polytri- chum, Hookeria, Splachnum, and others. Strings of sepa- rated cells pass from the leaves into the stem, and apply themselves to its central tissue, which is of different conformation from the rest of the tissue of the stem,—a circumstance which requires mention because this is the first indication of the fact of such extensive occurrence

among “ vascular” plants that the vascular bundles which run off from the leaf pass into the stem and there apply themselves to others. The stems are thickly set with leaves. It is but seldom that these stand in two rows on the sides, as in Fissidens, Conomitrium, and the sterile shoots of Schistostega. The last-named plant is of special interest as possessing two kinds of shoots of totally differ- ent appearance. ‘The fertile ones have their leaves placed on all sides of the stem in a spiral manner ; the sterile ones, on the other hand, have leaves placed on two sides, and have the appearance of a fern-

leaf. This position, however, only comes to pass through a shifting and twist- ing of the stem. Originally, in the bud, the leaves of the sterile stems stand in a spiral line. On examination of the end of the stem it is found that the growing point from which the leaves arise contains, as in the foliose Liverworts, an apical cell of the form of a three-sided pyra- mid with a vaulted base. By means of partition walls which are successively parallel to one of the side walls of the apical cell “segments” are cut off; and from each of these proceeds a leaf, as well as a part of the rind of the stem and of the inner tissue. On the direction of the partition walls in the apical cell depends likewise the arrangement of the leaves. The branches do not spring as in most phanerogamous plants from the axil of a leaf, but from the upper surface of the stem below a leaf, and only out of one of its cells, which becomes the apical cell of the branch.

In the relation of the ramification to the general struc-

CPST Seeee ~

Bam

Freautel

\ faltiss ‘ he

t) io \t \t

j

=

Fic, 10.—Longitudinal section through the summit of a small male plant of Funaria hygrometrica, with antheridia in various stages of development. @18a young antheridium—at its point is a “‘two-edged” apical cell; b, an antheridium, nearly mature ; ¢, paraphyses, hair-like structures which stand between the antheridia and of which the terminal cells are swollen into a ape form ; d, section of leaves through the mid-rib; e, section of leaves hrough the leaf-surface (lamina). Magnified 300 diameters. (After Sachs.)

ture of the moss-plant two leading classes have to be dis- tinguished—the

acrocarpous and pleurocarpous Mosses. In = former the growth of the stalk concludes with the ormation of a sporogonium ; for the archegonium, out of which the former springs, proceeds from the apical cell

itself. In the pleurocarpous Mosses the sporogonium

stands on the tip of a side-branch, and the growth of the principal stem is thus not interfered with by fructification. In many acrocarpous Mosses the stalk dies after fructifica- tion, and the Moss is then an annual, as in many Phasca- cee. In those acrocarpous Mosses which are perennial the further development is taken up by a side-branch, and a so-called “innovation ” is formed. By the dying away of the principal stem, these innovation-shoots become at a later period independent plants. The roots consist of simple rows of cells, spring- ing from the surface of the stem, especially at its base (see p. 72). | | (2) The sexual organs of the |j\} Leaf-mosses, the antheridia \\ and the archegonia, in their mature condition correspond in the main with those of the Liverworts, from which, how- ever, they differ somewhat in their development. They oc- cur generally in groups at the extremity of a shoot. Such groups containing, as the case may be, either solely anther- idia, or solely archegonia, or a mixture of the two, are termed “flower.” An ox. tt ores ‘o thor fhe snthenile ception to this condition of magnified. C. A mature motile sper- the antheridia is found in ™#0*ld- (After Schimper) Sphagnum (fig. 11,4). Here the antheridia do not stand in groups on the summit of the male branch, but are arranged along it, so as to stand beneath the leaves on the prolonged axis of the shoot. In the rest of the Mosses, with the excep- tion of Polytrichum, the first antheridium (or ar- chegonium) of a group proceeds from the apical cell itself; and thus the growth of the shoot con- nected with it is closed. The general character of the male “flowers” is very various, in the form of buds, heads, or disks. They are enveloped by a number of leaves, the “ nerigonium ” (fig. 11). The male plants of dice- cious Mosses are often considerably smaller than the female ones. This is the case with funaria hygrometrica, and to a remarkable extent with Dicranum undulatum and Leucobryum glaucum. Dicecious Mosses are fre- quently sterile on account cell of the shoot. of the absence of one of the

sexes. The female “ flowers ” (fig. 12) are in the shape of buds, enveloped by a number of leaves, which become smaller towards the inside. The archegonia have in general the same structure as those of Liverworts, but are distinguished by a very much developed stalk, diminishing towards the base in the form of a wedge

Fia. 11.—Sphagnum acutifolium,

Fic. 12.—Longitudinal section through the female “flower” of Sphagnum squarrosum, which shows four archegonia with long stalks. H, the neck portion; C, the ven- tral portion; St, the stalk ; B, ventral canal- cell; H, oosphere. The archegonium in the middle has proceeded from the apical

(fig. 12). single cell. (3) Lhe development of the fertilized oosphere into the sporogonium differs considerably from that of the Liver- worts, both as regards the external processes of growth and as regards the differentiation in the interior of the embryo. In the first of these points the greatest resem- blance to the Liverworts is exhibited by Sphagnum. Here the sporogonium continues almost till maturity to be en- closed by the ventral portion of the archegonium —the calyptra,—which keeps pace with it in growth, and which is irregularly ruptured by it at the period of maturity. Archidium, one of the Phascacee, behaves similarly. In all the other Mosses, however, the sporogonium at an early period bursts through the ventral portion of the arche- gonium, tearing off the calyptra at its base and raising it up as a cap. The sporogonium possesses a stalk which grows up gradually, but which in Sphagnum, Andreea, and Archi- dium is very short. In the two first-named genera the shortness of the stalk is made up for by a stalk- like elongation of that portion of the stem on which the archegonium is placed. Thus arises a false stalk, a “pseudopodium,” which is to be distinguished from the real stalk, which belongs to the sporogonium. The capsule is often of complex structure. In the Bryinex it pos- sesses a distinct epidermis, often provided with stomata, which is al- together wanting in the vegetative parts of Mosses.

—with the exception of Archidiwm, Fie. 13.—Longitudinal section

They originate, as do the antheridia, from a

MUSCINE A

which in this respect approaches the renee eee aero Pree Liverworts. The embryo, the young sporogonium, is originally fusiform (fig. 14, B, C), and is differentiated into capsule and stalk (seta). The latter commonly penetrates into the tissue of the fruit- shoot, which forms, outside the base of the sporo- gonium, an exuberant growth like a fence—the ‘“ vaginula”—on which we not unfrequently find archegonia that have miscarried (fig. 13, v). In Mosses, as in Liverworts, the spores proceed from the division of one mother-cell into four parts. The phenomena of their germination are very peculiar.

sporogonium of Phascum bry- oides. (The cells are not shown.) The sporogonium has torn away the ventral portion of the archegonium from its base and lifted the upper part of the archego- nium as a cap (calyptra; cal in fig.). Beneath the calyp- tra is the capsular portion of the sporogonium. Inits wall- layer there has been formed an annular intercellular space a, filled with air. The cells from which the mother-cells of the spores proceed (arche- sporium) are marked ¢; co, columella; 0, endotherium ; h, neck of archegonium ; 1, air-space; s, stalk of the sporogonium (seta); v, vagin- ula; f, leaves of the shoot that bears the archegonia. Mag- nified 60 diameters,

In the great majority of the Mosses there

arise from the germinating spore cellular filaments re- sembling Confervee. They have quite the appearance of Algee, and formerly were even confounded with them. They bear the name of protonema, and often form a thick green covering on the ground in forests. Such a proto- nema consists of two parts: one above and the other below the ground. Both are rows of cells, but those above the ground contain chlorophyll and have transverse walls placed rectangularly, while those belowtheground contain no chlorophyll and their transverse walls are placed obliquely. They serve as roots for the protonema, and of similar structure are the roots (rhizoids) which spring from the

[MOSSES,

surface of the leafy stem, especially from its base. On this protonema, and especially from the basal cells of the threads which are above ground, the moss-stem is formed. This originates from ; anoutward pouching of one of these cells, and this becomes the apical cell of a moss- stem. Several moss-plants may beformed on one and the same protonema, which has itself proceeded from one spore. The spores of the Bog- moss (Sphagnum) form quite another kind of pro-embryo when they germinate on dampearth. They then transform them- selves into an intri- cately ramified ex- pansion or cell-sur- face; and any cell of this surface may then become the api- cal cell of the stem. When they germi- nate in water the spores of Sphagnum form a thread-like pro-embryo. In some other Mosses too, especially An-

Fic. 14.—Funaria hygrometrica. A. Rudiment of the sporogonium or embryo f/’, in the ventral portion of the archegonium, The embryo is a cellular body, showing atits point a large ‘*‘two- edged” wedge-shaped apical cell, which forms segments on the right and left. B and C are

drexa, T’ etraphis, aa) oe – ae plone the sporogo- , : _ nium, and of the calyptrac., The inferior por-

and Dip hy RAR, Be tion of the embryo has penetrated into the tissue

markable forms of of the shoot. h, neck of the archegonium.

pro-embryo occur, which, however, can only be alluded to here. In no case does a moss-spore grow directly into a moss-stem.

Fia. 15.—Funaria hygrometrica. A. Germinating spores ; v, vacuole; w, root; s, exosporium, JB. Part of a developed protonema, about three weeks after germination ; h, a procumbent primary shoot with brown wall and oblique septa, out of which arise ascending branches of limited growth b; K, rudiment of a leaf-bearing axis with root w. .A is magnified 550, B about 90 diameters.

Mosses propagate themselves very extensively, not only by means of spores, but in a vegetative way. Every one of the hair-shaped roots (rhizoids) which spring out of the stem has the power, when exposed to the light, of forming protonema, and moss-buds upon this. On this depends the

fact that the Mosses which grow on tiled roofs (Grimmia and others) are hardly to be extirpated. Even if the turf is removed, the roots that have made their way

MUSC

into the pores of the tiles still survive, and develop pro- tonema, and new moss-plants upon this. In Phascum and Ephemerum, which are apparently annual Mosses, the pro- tonema is perennial, and forms new plants in the following year. Gemme also arise in abundance on the protonema (e.g., of the species of Barbula)—cellular bodies which are surrounded by a dark-coloured membrane, and whose cells are densely filled with a store of material. They are able to endure drought, and on germinating they either form moss-buds directly or protonema in the first place. Pro- tonema may also proceed directly from the cells of the leaves and stems of moss-plants, and thus subserve their multiplication. Portions even of the sporogonium may transform their cells back into protonema. If we cut off young sporogonia and place them in damp sand, there will arise from their interior cells (or the wall of the capsule) threads of protonema, on which new plants spring up. Many Mosses also possess special gemme. In Tetraphis pellucida they are stalked cellular bodies, enveloped by a leafy calyx, from which at a later period they fall away. In Aulacomnium androgynum they spring from the ex- tremity of a leafless prolongation of the stalk, in Grimmia Hartmanmi and Barbula papillosa from the leaves, &e.

CLASSIFICATION OF Mosszs. n

1, Sphagnacew.—The Turf-mosses are characterized as well by their anatomical structure as by the development of their sporo- gonia. The stem, which at first is unbranched, possesses roots only in its earliest stage. The stems then stand in a thickly-set turf, and receive water through the whole of their surface. The ramification is very abundant. Two kinds of branches are formed in the terminal buds—long whip-shaped ‘‘flagelle”’ which hang down, and whose duration is annual; and besides these there is formed every year, after the fruit has reached maturity, a side shoot called an ‘‘innovation,” which acts in the same way as the main stem, and at a later period becomes an independent plant. The sexual organs, antheridia and archegonia, are developed on the side branches. he peculiar structure of the

leaves has been already mentioned. That of the stem is analogous to it. The latter possesses a rind, formed out of cells with thin walls, whose protoplasmic contents have completely disappeared. Like the empty cells of the leaf, they are penetrated by openings, and thus form a system of narrow capillary tubes which stand in connexion with each other and open outwards, and through which the water mounts upwards.

The branches that bear the male ‘‘ flowers” make an approach to those of the Liverworts in the fact that the antheridia do not stand on the summit of the shoot, but singly close to its leaves. On the other hand, the archegonia agree in their position and deve- lopment with those of the other Mosses. The embryo—the young Sporogonium—is at first a pear-shaped body of cellular tissue, the basal portion of which penetrates deeply into the soft tissue of the fruit-branches on which the archegonium is seated. The sporo- gonium differs considerably from that of the other Mosses. Thoso eells which give origin to the mother-cells of the spores—termed col- lectively ‘‘archesporium ’—form a dome-shaped layer in the upper portion of the embryo ; thus they are not traversed by the sterile cellular tissue, the columella. Each mother-cell is divided as usual into four spores. The short stalk of the capsule extends itself at maturity only so far as to cause the sporogonium to break through the calyptra, the place of a stalk being practically supplied by the

“pseudopodium.”! The pro-embryo is a cell-surface.

2. The Andresacew are small blackish Mosses growing on rocks. Their antheridia resemble those of the other Mosses. The develop- ment of the embryo is anomalous. The archesporium is, as in Sphagnum,a dome-shaped layer of cells. On the extremity of the mature capsule is placed the calyptra, which has been torn away, as a delicate cap. The mode of dehiscence of the capsule here reminds us of the Liverworts. This takes place by four longitu- dinal clefts, which allow the exit of the spores, and are open in _ dry and closed in damp weather. In this group also the stalk of

the sporogonium remains short, its place being supplied by a

pseudopodium.”

3. The Phascacee, which are small and generally annual Mosses, are distinguished from the following division by the fact that the capsule does not open by separation of a lid, but remains closed, and the Spores are not set free till the wall of the capsule decays. A remarkably anomalous form is Archidium ; the development of ee ee

- The possession of an clastic stalk has this advantage for the sporo-

gonium, that it promotes the scattering abroad of the spores by means of the wind.

itsembryo reminds us of that of the Liverworts ; the mature. sporo- gonium also possesses no calyptra, but breaks through the ventral portion of the arehegonium like that of Sphagnum and that of the Liverworts. The Phascacex are termed ‘‘cleistocarpous” in con- tradistinction to the ‘‘stegocarpous” Mosses.

4. The Bryinew comprehend by far the greatest number of all the species of Mosses. They are characterized above all by the structure of their sporogonia. Here the parts of the latter are always the longer or shorter bristle-shaped stalk (seta), the eapsule, and the calyptra carried up on its summit. That part of the stalk where it passes into the capsule is termed apophysis; on its epidermis, as well as on that of the capsule, we almost always find stomata. As regards the structure of the capsule, at a very early period a space filled with air makes its appearance, which divides the interior mass from the wall, which is composed of several layers. This interior complex mass of tissue consists of those cells which give rise to the mother-cells of the spores (the archesporium), of a few layers of cells which surround these only externally, and of an inner mass of tissue, the columella. The latter, however, passes in this case through the cells of the archesporium ; these latter form, as in the Phascacex, a stratum of cells which has the form of a barrel, open above and below (fig. 13), and encloses the columella. The Bryinew are also char- acterized by the way in which the capsule opens. The upper part of the wall of the capsule is in this

case always thrown off as a lid (operculum). This happens in one of two ways: either a layer (or several layers of cells lying upon one another), placed between the inferior portion of the capsule and the operculum, forms a ring (annulus), the cell-walls of which become thickened and partially swollen, so that the annulus becomes loosened and thus causes separation of the operculum and the capsule from each other, or there remains simply a thin-walled annular zone of cells belonging to the wall of the capsule, which splits asunder in dry weather. When the operculum falls away the margin of the open capsule appears in most cases set round with a single or double ring of tooth-like formations, which are termed peristome. This is wanting in Gymnostomum and Hymenostomum. It occurs in its simplest form in Tetraphis. Here the epidermis of the upper conical portion falls off as an operculum, while the whole tissue that lies beneath splits crosswise into four valves, which form the peristome. In the other Mosses, with the exception of Poly- trichum, the teeth of the peristome have an essentially different origin. They are in faet nothing but the thickened portions of cell – membranes, whose unthickened portions have per- ished and been torn asunder. Fig. 16 shows a portion of a longitudinal section through the upper part of the capsule of Funaria hygromet- ried.

The capsule pos- sesses a brown epider- mis ¢, whose walls are greatly thickened ; se is the tissue that lies between the epi- dermis and the air-spaces h, ? of the cap- sule; sthemother-cells of the spores, and fartherinwards follows the columella. Im- mediatcly above the air-space rises the stratum of cells which forms the peri- stome, of one tooth of which a longitudinal section is given in fig. 16. Itarises from the great thickening of the outer side of the walls of a row of superposed cells. At . : maturity the upper Fic. 16.—Part of a longitudinal section through the

i upper part of a capsule of Funaria hygrometrica, _ eines – Ly om Ati -~ aare the teeth of the peristome ; ¢, pointed 0 Ss

(After Sachs.) off as an operculum, : the cells marked p disappear, and only the thickened parts of the cell- membranes remain as the teeth of the peristome. In Funaria and in other cases the peristome is double, for those cell-walls (fig. 16, 7)

cells.

which look inwards of the stratum of cells which forms the peri- stome have also in these cases become somewhat thickened, and continue as ‘‘cilia,” while the thin portions of membrane placed at right angles to them perish. In other cases (Fontinalis anti- pyretica) the peristome forms a lattice-work. The number of teeth in the peristome is always four, or a multiple of four. They are very hygroscopic ; their function is to close up the opening of the capsule in wet weather, and so to hinder the exit of the spores, which are scattered abroad by the wind. In the same way also any germination of the spores in the interior of the capsule is pre- vented. The columella shrivels up after the formation of the spores, so that at that time we find nothing in the capsule but the spore-dust. The Polytrichacew have special arrangements for the protection of the spores. Here the opening of the capsule is covered over by a kind of plate (‘‘cpiphragma”), which is supported by thirty-two or sixty-four teeth, consisting of fibre-like cells.

Retrospective View.— Comparing generally the Mosses with the Liverworts, we see that, however great the variety of the forms they comprehend, they still form two connected series. In several of the subdivisions of the Leaf-mosses conditions occur which remind us of the Liverworts. Such are, in Sphagnum, the form and posi- tion of the antheridia, the tearing open of the ventral portion of the archegonium, and the want of a “calyptra a on the sporogonium which proceeds from it. This last is also found in Andreea, in which the method of opening of the sporogonium likewise reminds us of the Liverworts. Among the Phascacex, the Archidium agrees with Liver- worts in the absence of a columella. Some few cells in the interior of the sporogonium are formed into mother- cells of spores, and push aside the rest of the tissue. Here, too, the calyptra is absent.

The simplest Liverworts make a near approach to the Alege. The sporogonium of Miccia is of scarcely higher organization than the mass of tissue which proceeds from the fertilized ovum-cell of Coleochete, a green freshwater Alga, Among plants of a higher order we find no group closely allied to the Muscinezx. It is true that the Ferns have a perfectly analogous

alternation of generations, but it is not a sporogonium which is produced from the fer- tilized oosphere, but the leafy fern-plant. No transitional forms occur between these two sections; the chasm which divides them is the widest with which we are acquainted in the whole vegetable kingdom. (K. E. G.)

MUSES, Tue, according to the view which prevailed among the Greek writers and has become a commonplace of modern literature, were nine goddesses who presided over the nine principal departments of letters: Calliope, Muse of epic poetry ; Euterpe, of lyric poetry ; Erato, of erotic poetry; Melpomene, of tragedy; Thalia, of comedy; Poly- hymnia, of the hymn as used in the worship of the gods; Terpsichore, of choral song and the dance which formed its hecessary accompaniment ; Clio, of history; and Urania, of astronomy. They are represented in ancient art as fully draped figures characterized by attitude, dress, and symbols appropriate to the departments over which they presided. In the simpler conception that prevails in earlier literature they were said to be daughters of Zeus and Mnemosyne, 2.é., memory personified. In chorus round thealtar of Zeus they sing the origin of the world, of gods, and of men, the might and the glorious deeds of Zeus. At the banquets of the gods their joyous music is heard. They honour also the great heroes; they sing at the marriage of Cad- mus and of Peleus; their mourning song at the death of Achilles drew tears from both gods and men. They know all things past and future and impart to their chosen poets the knowledge and the skill to write. They are usually maiden goddesses, but some of the mythic poets—Orpheus, Linus, Ialemus —are said to be sons of a Muse.

This conception of the number. and character of the Muses is as old as Hesiod and the Odyssey (xxiv. 60), yet it is far removed from the genuine religious stratum out of which the poets fashioned it. The religion of the Muses

had two chief seats, on the northern slope of Mount Olym- pus around Dion in Pieria, by the holy springs Leibethron and Pimpleia, and on the slope of Mount Helicon near Ascra and Thespiz.

Nothing is known of the cultus in itsolder form, but it appears to have been connected with the religion of Dionysus. The Muses must have been originally a variety of the Nymphs (see Nympus), the spirits of nature who live in the fountains and forests ; hence they are asso- ciated with Pegasus, the winged horse of the thunder-cloud, The half-mythic race called Thracian, which is specially associated with the two localities where the worship of the Muses had its seat, survived in Greek memory as a race of bards ; and this character of the race coloured its concep- tion of the spirit-life which it saw in nature. The spirits who know or who remember (Motoca = Movria, from man, to think) sang to them in the voice of the water and the trees. At first they gave no definite number or form to their conception of these spirits; the number nine is the invention of a later time and of a different order of thought, and some accounts speak of three Muses or of a single Muse,

MUSHROOM. There are few more useful, more easily recognized, or more delicious members of the vegetable king- dom than the common mushroom (Agaricus campestris, L.). It grows in short grass in the temperate regions of all parts of the world. Many edible Fungi depend upon minute and often obscure botanical characters for their determination, and may readily be confounded with worthless or poisonous species, but that is not the case with the Common Mush- room, for, although several other species of Agaricus some- what closely approach it in form and colour, yet the true mushroom, if sound and freshly gathered, may be distin- guished from all other Fungi with great ease. It almost invariably grows in rich, open, breezy pastures, in places where the grass is kept short by the grazing of horses, herds, and flocks. Although this plant is popularly termed the ‘meadow mushroom,” it never as a rule grows in meadows. It never grows in wet boggy places, never in woods, or on or about stumps of trees. An exceptional specimen or an uncommon variety may sometimes be seen in the above- mentioned abnormal places, but the best, the true, and common variety of our tables is the produce of short, up- land, wind-swept pastures. A true mushroom is never large in size; its cap very seldom exceeds 4, at most 5 inches in diameter. The large examples measuring from 6 to 9 or more inches across the cap belong to Agaricus arvensis (Sch.), called from its large size and coarse texture the Horse Mushroom, which grows in meadows and damp shady places, and though generally wholesome is

coarse and sometimes indigestible. The mushroom usually grown in gardens or hot-beds, in cellars, sheds, &c., is a distinet variety, known as Agaricus hortensis (Cke.). This is @ compact and inferior form of the true mushroom, or it may indeed be a hybrid or even a distinct species.

The parts of a mushroom consist chiefly of stem and cap; the stem is furnished with a clothy ring round its middle, and the cap is furnished underneath with numerous radiat- ing coloured gills. In the accompanying illustration (1) represents a section through an infant mushroom, (2) a mature example, and (3) a longitudinal section through 4 fully-developed mushroom. The cap p, £ is fleshy, firm, and white within, never thin and watery ; externally it Is pale brown, dry, often slightly silky or floccose, never vis- cid. The cuticle of a mushroom readily peels away from the flesh beneath, as shown at Fr. The cap has a narrow dependent margin or frill, as shown at a, and in section at 4; this dependent frill originates in the rupture of a delicate continuous wrapper, which in the infancy of the mushroom entirely wraps the young plant; it is shown in its continuous state at 4, and at the moment of rupture at | k. The gills underneath the cap 1, m, n are at first

|

MUBHROOM

white, then rose-coloured, at length brown-black. A point of great importance is to be noted in the attachment of the gills near the stem at o, P; the gills in the true mush- yoom are (as shown) usually more or less free from thé

Fic. 1.—Pasture Mushroom (Agaricus campestris, L.).

stem, they never grow boldly against it or run down m3 they may sometimes just touch the spot where the stem joins the bottom of the cap, but never more ; there is usually a slight channel, as at p, all round the top of the stem. When a mushroom is perfectly ripe and the gills are brown-black in colour, they throw down a thick dusty deposit of fine brown-black or purple-black spores ; it is essential to note the colour. The spores on germination make a white felted mat, more or less dense, of mycelium ;

this, when compacted with dry, half-decomposed dung, is the mush- room spawn of gardeners (see HorTIcULTURE, vol. xii. p. 284), The stem is firm, slightly pithy up the middle, but never hollow ; it is furnished with a floccose ring near its middle, as illustrated at 9, q; this ring originates by the rupture of the thin general wrapper k of the infant plant. On being cut or broken the flesh of a true mushroom re- mains white or nearly so, the flesh of the coarser Horse Mushroom changes to buff or sometimes to dark brown. To summarize the characters of a true mushroom :—it grows only in pastures ; it is of small size, dry, and with unchange- able flesh; the cap has a frill; the gills are free from the stem, the spores brown-black or deep purple-black in colour, and the stem solid or slightly pithy. When all these characters are taken together no other mushroom-like fungus—and nearly a thousand species grow in Britain— ean be confounded with it.

Like all widely-spread and much-cultivated plants, the edible mushroom has numerous varieties, and it differs in different places and under different modes of culture in much the same way as our kitchen-garden plants differ from the type they have been derived from, and from each other. In some instances these differences are so marked that they have led some botanists to regard as distinct species many forms usually esteemed by others as varieties ouly.

A small vaviety of the common mushroom found in pastures has been named A. pratensis (Vitt.); it differs from the type in having a pale reddish-brown scaly top, and the flesh on being cut or broken changes to pale rose-colour. A variety still more marked, with a

tker brown cap and the flesh changing to a deeper rose, and sometimes blood-red, has been described as 4. rufescens (Berk.). The well-known compact variety of mushroom-growers, with its white cap and dull purplish clay-coloured gills is 4. hortensts (Cke.). Two sub-varieties of this have been described under the names of A, Buchanani and A. elongatus, and other distinct forms are known to botanists. A variety also grows in woods named A. silvicola (Vitt.); this can only be distinguished from the Pasture Mushroom by its elongated bulbous stem and its externally smooth cap. There is also a fungus well known to botanists and cultivators which appears to be intermediate between the pasture variety and the wood

variety, named A. vaporarius (Otto). The large rank Horse Mushroom, now generally referred to as .4. arvensis (Sch.), is prob-

ably a variety of the Pasture Mushroom ; Sowerby has described jt under the name of 4. Georgii and Dr Badham as A. exquisitus ; it has also been published as A, edulis. It grows in rings in woody places and under trees and hedges in meadows ; it has a large scaly round cap, and the flesh quickly changes to buff or brown when cut or broken; the stem too is hollow. An unusually scaly form of this has been described as A. villaticus and another as 4. augustus. Dr Badham has also described a variety under the name of 4. anceps.

A species, described by Berkeley and Broome as distinct from both the Pasture Mushroom and Horse Mushroom, has been pub- lished under the name of A. elvensis. This grows under oaks, in clusters, —a most unusual character for the mushroom. The species is said to be excellent for the table. An allied fungus peculiar to woods, with a less fleshy cap than the true mushroom, with hollow stem, and strong odour, has been described as a close ally of the Pasture Mushroom under the name of A. silvaticus (Sch.); its qualities for the table have not been described.

Many instances are on record of symptoins of poisoning, and even death, having followed the consumption of plants which have passed as true mushrooms; these cases have probably arisen from the examples consumed being in a state of decay, or from some mistake as to the specieseaten. It should always be specially noted whether the fungi to be consumed are in a fresh and wholesome condition, otherwise they act as a poison in precisely the same way as does any other semi-putrid vegetable or putrid meat. Many instances are on record where mushroom-beds have been invaded by a growth of strange fungi and the true mushrooms have been ousted to the advantage of the new-comers ; such instances are very perplexing, but they tend to show that a proper supervision should be kept over fungi when used for food as over other vegetables, fruit, meat, and fish, When mushrooms are gathered for sale by persons unacquainted with the different species mistakes are of frequent occurrence. A very common spurious mushroom in mar- kets is A. velutinus (P.), a slender, ringless, hollow-stemmed, black-

gilled fungus, common in gardens and about dung and stumps; it is about the size of a mushroom, but thinner in all its parts and far more brittle; it has a black hairy fringe hanging round the edge of the cap when fresh. Another spurious mushroom, and equally common in dealers' baskets, is A. lacrymabundus (Fr.); this grows in the same positions as the last, and is somewhat fleshier and more like a true mushroom ; it has a hollow stem and a slight ring, the gills are black-brown mottled and generally studded with tear- like drops of moisture. In both these species the gills distinctly touch and grow on to the stem. Besides these there are numerous other black ~~gilled species which find a place in baskets,—some species far too small to bear any resemblance to a mushroom, others large and deliquescent, generally belonging to the stump~~ and dung- borne genus Coprinus. The true mushroom itself is to a great ex- tent a dung-borne species, therefore mushroom-beds are always liable to an invasion from other dung-borne forms. Thespores of all fungi are constantly floating about in the air, and when the spores of dung-infesting species alight on a mushroom-bed they find a nidus already prepared that exactly suits them ; and if the spawn of the new-comer becomes more profuse than that of the mushroom the stranger takes up his position at the expense of the mushroom. There is also a fungus named Xylaria vaporaria (B.), which some- times fixes itself on mushroom-beds and produces such an enormous quantity of string-like spawn that the entire destruction of the bed results. The spawn is sometimes so profuse that it is pulled out of the beds in enormous masses and carted away in barrows.

Sometimes cases of poisoning follow the consumption of what have really appeared to gardeners to be true bed-mushrooms, and to country folks as small Horse Mushrooms. The case is made more complicated by the fact that these highly-poisonous forms now and then appear upon mushroom-beds to the exclusion of the mush- rooms. This dangerous counterfeit is A. fastibilis (Fr.), or sometimes A. crustuliniformis (Bull.), a close ally if not indeed a mere variety of the first. A description of one will do for both, 4. fastibilis being a little the more slender of the two. Both have fleshy caps, whitish, moist, and clammy to the touch ; instead of a pleasant odour, they have a disagreeable one; the stems are ringless, or nearly so; and the gills, which are palish clay – brown, distinctly touch and grow on to the solid or pithy stem. These two fungi usually grow in woods, but sometimes in

hedges and in shad) places in meadows, or even, as has been said, as invaders on mush- room-beds. ‘The pale clay-coloured gills, offensive odour, and clammy or even viscid top are decisive characters. A reference to the accompanying illustration (fig. 2), which is about one-half natural size, will give a good idea of A. fastibilis ; the difference in the nature of the attachment of the gills near the stem is scen at R, the absence of a true ring at s, and of a pendent frill at T. The colour, with the exception of the gills, is not unlike that of the mushroom. In determining fungi no single character must be relied upon as con- clusive, but all the characters must be taken together. Sometimes a beautiful, somewhat slender, fungus peculiar to stumps in woods is mistaken for the mushroom in A. cervinus (Sch.); it has a tall, solid, white, ringless stem and somewhat thin brown cap, furnished

underneath with beautiful rose-coloured gills, which are free from the stem as in the mushroom, and which never turn black. ~ It is

MZ

Fic. 2.—Poisonous Mushroom (Agaricus fastibilis, Fr.)

probably a poisonous plant, belonging, as it does, to a dangerous cohort. Many other species of Agaricus more or less resemble .A. campestris, notably some of the plants found under the sub-genera Lepiota, Volvaria, Pholiota, and Psalliota, but when the characters are noted they may all with a little care be easily distinguished from each other. The better plan is to discard at once all fungi which have not been gathered from open pastures ; by this act alone more than nine-tenths of worthless and poisonous species will be excluded.

In cases of poisoning by mushrooms immediate medical advice should be secured. The dangerous principle is a narcotic, and the symptoms are usually great nausea, drowsiness, stupor, and pains in the joints. A good palliative is sweet oil; this will allay any corrosive irritation of the throat and stomach, and at the same time cause vomiting.

The mode of cultivating mushrooms artificially out of doors and in sheds is described under HorTICULTURE, vol. xii. p. 284. Paris mushrooms are cultivated in enormous quantities in dark under- ground caves at adepth of from 60 to 160 feet from the surface. The stable manure is taken into the tortuous passages of these caves, and the spawn introduced from masses of dry dung where it occurs naturally. In France mushroom – growers do not use the compact blocks or brieks of spawn so familiar in England, but much smaller flakes or ‘‘leaves”’ of dry dung in which the spawn or mycelium can be seen to exist. Less manure is used in these caves than we generally see in the mushroom-houscs of England, and the surface of each bed is covered with about an inch of fine white stony soil. The beds are kept artificially moist by the application of water brought from the surface, and the different galleries bear crops in succession. As one is exhausted another is in full bearing, so that by a systematic arrangement a single proprietor will send to the surface from 300 Ib to 3000 Ib of mushrooms per day. The passages sometimes extend over several miles, the beds sometimes occupying over 20 miles, and, as there are many proprietors of caves, the produce of mushrooms is so large that not only is Paris fully supplied, but vast quantities are forwarded to the different large towns of Europe ; the mushrooms are not allowed to reach the fully-expanded condition, but are gathered in a large button state, the whole growth of the mushroom being removed and the hole left in the manure covered with fine earth. The beds remain in bearing for six or eight months, and then the spent manure is taken to the surface again for garden and field purposes. The equable temperature of these caves and their freedom from draught is one cause of their great success; to this must be added the natural virgin spawn, for by continually using spawn taken from mushroom-producing beds the poteney for reproduetion is weak- ened. The beds produce mushrooms in about six weeks after this spawning.

The Fairy-ring Champignon.—This fungus, Marasmius Oreades (Fr.), is more universally used in France and Italy than in England, although it is well known and frequently used both in a fresh and ina dry state in England. It is totally different in appearance from the Pasture Mushroom, and, like it, its characters are so dis- tinct that there is hardly a possibility of making a mistake when its peculiarities are once comprehended. It has more than one advantage over the Meadow Mushroom in its extreme commonncss, its

profuse growth, the length of the season in which it may be gathered, the total absence of varietal forms, its adaptability for being dried and preserved for years, and its persistent delicious taste. It is by many esteemed as the best of all the edible fungi found in Great Britain. Like the mushroom, it grows in short open pastures and amongst the short grass of open roadsides ; some- times it appears on lawns, but it never occurs in woods or in damp shady places. Its natural habit is to grow in rings, and the grassy fairy-rings so frequent amongst the short grass of downs and pas- tures in the spring are generally caused by the nitrogenous manure applied to the soil in the previous autumn by the decay of a circle

of these fungi. Many other fungi in addition to the Fairy-ring Champignon grow in circles, so that this habit must merely be taken with its other characters in cases of doubt.

A glance at the illustration (fig. 3) will show howentirely the Fairy- ring Champignon differs from the mushroom. In the first place, itis about one-half the size of a mushroom, and whitish-buff in every part, the gills always retaining this colour and never becoming salmon-coloured, brown, or black. The stem is solid and corky, much more solid than the flesh of the cap, and perfectly smooth, never being furnished with the slightest trace of aring. The buff- gills are far apart (v), and in this they greatly differ from the some- what crowded gills of the mushroom ; the junction of the gills with the stem (Ww) also differs in character from the similar junction in the mushroom. The mushroom is a semi-deliquescent fungus which rapidly falls into putridity in decay, whilst the champignon dries up into a leathery substance in the sun, but speedily revives and takes its original form again after the first shower. To this character the fungus owes its generic name (Marasmius) as well as one of its most valuable qualities for the table, for examples may be gathered from June to November, and if carefully dried may be

Fic. 3.—The Fairy-ring Champignon (Marasmius Oreades, Fr.).

hung on strings for culinary purposes and preserved without deteri- oration for several years ; indeed, many persons assert that the rich flavour of these fungi increases with years. Champignonsare highly esteemed (and

especially is this the case abroad) for adding a most delicious flavour to stews, soups, and gravies.

A fungus which may carelessly be mistaken for the mushroom is M. peronatus (Fr.), but this grows in woods amongst dead leaves, and has a hairy base to the stem and a somewhat acrid taste. Another is MZ. wrens (Fr.); this also generally grows in woods, but the gills are not nearly so deep, they soon become brownish, the stem is downy, and the taste is acrid. An Agaricus named A. dryophilus (Bull.) has sometimes been gathered in mistake for the champignon, but this too grows in woods where the champignon never grows ; it has a hollow instead of a solid stcm, gills crowded together instead of far apart, and flesh very tender and brittle instead of tough. A small eseulent ally of the champignon, named M. seovodonius (Fr.), is sometimes found in pastures in Great Britain; this is largely consumed on the Continent, where it is esteemed for its powerful flavour of garlic. In England, where garlic is not used to a large extent, this fungus is not sought for. Another small and common species, Af. porreus (Fr.), is pervaded with a garlic flavour to an equal extent with the last. A third species, Af. alliaceus (Fr.), is also strongly impregnated with the scent and taste of onions or garlic. Two species, Af, impudicus (Fr.) and M. fetidus (Fr.), are in all stages of growth highly fetid. The curious little edible Agaricus esculentus (Jacq.), although placed under the sub-genus Collybia, is allied by its structure to Marasmius. It is a small bitter specics common in upland pastures and fir plantations early in the season. Although not gathered for the table in England, it is greatly prized in some parts of the Continent. Fries, the greatest authority on the higher Fungi, writes: ‘‘In Austria in cibariis magni estumatur.” The odour and taste in fungi when raw are often valuable characters in deciding species.

Morel.—This delicious edible fungus, AMorchella esculenta (Pers.), is more common in Britain than is generally supposed. It grows after warm rains in the spring or early summer in woody places and in orehards and gardens, often in placcs where the ground has been burnt. Like the champignon, the morel can be easily dried and kept suspended on strings in necklace fashion for winter use. It is generally 3 or 4 inches high, with a hollow stem and a hollow, irregularly globose, honeycombed head, pale buff in colour all over, and furnished with an agreeable odour. There is

more than one esculent species of morel: Af. semilibera (D.C.) is the next best known, but this is rare in Britain. A large species named J. eras- stipes (Pers.)—the Mf. smithiana of Cooke—attains a height of from 9to12inches. This is a fragrant and delicious species, but only suit- able for use in a fresh state; it cannot be readily dried. Another valuable edible species is Gyromitra esculenta (Fr.), recognized by its brownish-black globose head'; it grows amongst firs and is con- sidered rare. ' (W. G. SM.)

es

PART I.—HISTORY.

USIC! is the art which employs sounds as a medium of artistic expression for what is not in the pro- vince of literature, of sculpture, of painting, of acting, or of architecture. Whereas literature, whether in verse or prose, describes or states emotions, or perceptions, or im- pressions ; whereas sculpture imitates the outward forms of animated beings, and physiognomically, either in the face, or, to speak more broadly, in the moulding and attitude of the entire figure, displays personal character and the effect of passion upon it; whereas painting vitalizes with colour the forms of sculpture, and extends its range of subjects from animate to inanimate nature ; and whereas acting adds speech to the written words of the dramatist, and enforces or even qualifies their meaning by vocal inflexion, and illustrates it by changeful gesture, thus giving the mobility of life to the forms of sculpture and painting ;—music embodies the inward feelings of which all those other arts can but exhibit the effect. Those other arts are imitative in respect of their repro- ducing natural objects or circumstances; it is otherwise with architecture, which makes but conventional reference to nature, and wholly arbitrary application of the lines, the lights, and the shadows of the natural world; and in this particular music has an analogy to architecture which it has not to the other fine arts. In the matter of expression also, architecture may be compared with music in the earlier stages of its development, since represent- ing and also prompting a general idea of solemnity, or grandeur, or gaiety; but music left

architecture far behind when, in later times, it assumed the power of special, individual, and personal utterance of every variety of passion. The indefiniteness of musical expression furnishes no argument that music is inexpressive, but is one of the qualities that place it on the highest level of art-excel- lence, enabling it to suggest still more than it displays, and to stimulate the imagination of the witness as much as to exercise that of the artist. The musician is then a poet, whether we regard the term in its primary sense of “maker,” the exact translation of the Greek word by which versifiers were styled in early English, or in its ap- plied sense of one who expresses thought and feeling through the medium of highly-excited imagination. Music, then, is that one of the fine arts which appropriates the phenomena of sound to the purposes of poetry, and has a province of its own in many respects analogous to, but yet wholly distinct from, that of each of the other arts. It is common to style it “the universal language ;” but the definition is untrue, for in every age and in every clime there are varieties of musical idiom which are unsympa- thetic, if not unintelligible, to other generations than those among whom they are first current, and, still more, the very principles that govern it have been and are so variously developed in different times and places that music which 18 delightful at one period or to one people is repugnant at another epoch or to a different community. An attempt will here be made to sketch the progress of the art through Western civilization, to show how it has been changed from artificial or calculated into natural or spontaneous, and to describe some of the chief forms of its manifestation.2 i From the Greek wovotxy; but this included all arts and sciences over which the Muses presided—the encyclopedia of learning. The oo of sounds was particularly involved in that of the stars, and ce the word had special reference to these two in their relation to

numbers; and in its comprehensive sense it was employed to denote

the entire mental training of a Greek youth. In Latin the word had 4 more restricted meaning.

- William Chappell’s History of Music is the authority for the cor-

To define the special science, and the art which is its Harmony application, that is denoted by our word music, the Greek and language has two other

words, harmonia or harmonike ™¢l04y. and melodia,—harmonia implying the idea of “fitting,” and so being a term for propriety or general unity of parts in a whole, not in our limited technical sense of combined sounds, but with reference to the whole principle of orderly and not specially tonal regulation, melodia imply- ing the rising and falling of the voice in speech, and being applied only at a subsequent epoch to a succession of musical notes.® i

We thus owe our three chief musical terms to the Greeks, and in our prevailing system much more besides ; they themselves, however, owed all to earlier sources, for the essentials of their knowledge and practice are traced to Egypt.

It has been ingeniously suggested and well sustained by Origin. Mr. J. F. Rowbotham that in prehistoric times music passed through three stages of development, each charac- terized by a separate class of instrument, and the analogy of existing uses in barbarous nations tends to confirm the assumption. Instruments of percussion are supposed to be the oldest, wind instruments the next in order of time and of civilization, and string instruments the latest invention of every separate race. The clapping of hands and stamping of feet, let us say, in marking rhythm exemplify the first element of music, and the large family of drums and cymbals and bells is a development of the same principle. Untutored ears are quicker to perceive rhythmical accentuation than variations of pitch, so the organ of time makes earlier manifestation than the organ of tune, though, musical sound being a periodic succes- sion of vibrations, the operation of the latter is truly but a refinement on that of the former. The sighing of wind, eminently when passing over a bed of reeds, is Nature’s suggestion of instruments of breath; hence have been reached the four methods of producing sound through pipes : —by blowing at the end, as in the case of the English flute and the flageolet; at the side, as in that of the ordinary con- cert flute; through a double reed, as in that of the hautboy or oboe and bassoon ; and over a single reed, as in that of the clarionet—all of which date from oldest existing records ; and also upon the collection of multitudinous pipes in that colossal wind instrument, the organ. An Egyptian fable ascribes the invention of the lyre to the god Thoth; a different Greek fable gives the same credit to the god Hermes ; and both

refer it, though under different circum- stances, to the straining of the sinews of a tortoise across its shell,—whence can only be inferred that the origin of the highest advanced class of musical instruments is un- known. This class includes the lyre and the harp, which give but one note from each stretched string; the lute, which, having a neck or finger-board, admits of the pro- duction of several notes from each string by stopping it at different lengths with the fingers ; the viol, the addition of the bow to which gives capability of sustaining the tone ; and the dulcimer, finally matured into the pianoforte, wherein the extremes of instrumental fabrication meet, since this is at once a string instrument and an instrument rection of errors in the works wherein the history and theory of Greek music were first treated in modern times, errors that have been re- peated by intervening writers; and it is the authority for explanation of Greek technicalities that are misrepresented in Latin translations, and falsely understood in our own day.

3 Harmonia had a special signification with the disciples of Pytha-

goras, who used the word in place of enharmonia, of which more hereafter.

Inter- vals.

Analogy to astro- nomy.

of percussion, having the hammer of the drum to strike the string of the lyre.

Musical intervals are named numerically from any given note, say Cas the Ist, the note next to which is thus D the 2d, the one beyond is E the 3d, and so on to another C, the 8th. Beyond the 8th, numerical names are only used for the rare combinations of the 9th, the 11th, and the 13th. This is because the 8th is in some sense a reproduction of the lst, as all intervals beyond it are reproductions of the 8th below them—reproductions, that is, uniting identity and difference, the relation of tones in the higher octave being just what it is in the lower, while each tone is so or so much more acute than its under 8th, an analogy to which may be sought in the reduction of any visual object to half its size while all its propor- tions are preserved, the larger and

the smaller, as in the interval of the Sth, thus uniting identity with difference. When two voices or instruments produce the same sound they are in unison; the unison or Ist} is styled perfect ; so too is its reproduction, the 8th; the 8th is unequally divisible into a 5th anda 4th, and these two are classed with the Ist and 8th as perfect. There are many specialities that distinguish the four perfect intervals in music from every other. The two notes of which each is constituted are, save in one instance, of the same quality—as natural, or sharp, or flat; to raise or lower either of the two notes by a chromatic semitone? changes a perfect interval into a dis- cord, whereas the other intervals are elastic, that is, they may be major or minor from having a chromatic semitone more or less in their extent, and are not changed from concords to discords, or the reverse, by the modification. To invert a perfect interval by placing the higher note beneath the lower produces another perfect interval, whereas to invert any of the other intervals reverses its character of major or minor, The progression of two parts together from one to another 1st or 8th, from one to another 5th or 4th, has, save in excep- tional instances, the bad effect that all musical grammar forbids, whereas the progression of two parts in 3ds or 6ths with each other has a good effect. In the resolution of funda- mental discords the progression of perfect intervals is free, whereas that of the imperfect intervals is restricted ; and further, in the relation of subject and answer in a fugue, one perfect interval may be changed for another, but never for an imperfect interval. Many technicalities are antici- pated in the foregoing which can only be explained in the sequel, but present mention of them is unavoidable in reference to a position now to be stated. The Egyptians perceived the distinction of the perfect intervals from others, if not all the above specialities, and regarded them as typical of the seasons, spring bearing the proportion of a 4th to autumn, of a 5th to winter, and of an 8th to summer. The distinction, then, has been observed for many centuries, but neither ancients nor moderns have adduced any explanation of the phenomenon, and the wondrous fact that perfect intervals differ in constitution and treatment from other intervals appears to defy reason, and not even to incite speculation.

The anciently supposed affinity of music to astronomy was taught by Pythagoras (585 B.c.), who derived the notion from the Egyptians, and

exemplified it by com- parison of the lyre of seven strings with the planetary system. The Sun, then believed to rotate round the

1 Literally, the Ist is not a musical distance ; but, as it is a fre- quent combination in counterpoint, and as its repetition is not rare in melody, it is conveniently classed as an interval.

BAN chromatic or minor semitone is between two notes of the same alphabetical name, as C and 0, or D and bD ; a diatonic or major semitone is between two notes of different alphabetical names, as C and bD, or C and B; the ratio of the latter is +2, and that of the former varies with the place of the interval in the chromatic scale.

earth, was deemed the chief planet, next to which were, on the one side Mercury, Venus, and the Moon, and on the other side Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn. lyre, not the notes they sounded, were thus named :—Mesé

with our A on the fifth line with the bass clef, and likened to the Sun ; Paramesé (next to middle) or B flat, likened to

pitch) or C, likened to Venus ; and Neété or Neaté (lowest)

[HISTORY,

The strings of the

(middle), being the principal or keynote, corresponding

Mercury; Paranété (next to lowest, 2.¢., shortest = highest in

or D, likened to the Moon ; these constituted the upper tet- rachord or scale of four notes, to which the lower tetrachord was conjoined by having Mesé for its acutest note, which was the gravest of the other tetrachord ; next to it was Lichanos (forefinger string) or G, likened to Mars; then Parhypaté (next to highest, ¢.e., longest = lowest in pitch) or F, likened to Jupiter ; and lastly Hypaté (highest) or E, likened to Saturn. The Moon being of all the

planets the nearest to, and Saturn the farthest from, the earth, they are analogous to the shortest and the longest string. ;

The Greek lyre (see Lyrz, vol. xv. p. 113) had at first Greck four strings, to which subsequently were added the longest lyr. | three; then an 8th, corresponding with our E, tuned toan 8th above Hypaté ; then three below the latter, which took the scale down in pitch to B on the second line with the bass clef ; afterwards three above the former, which took the scale up to A in the second space with the treble clef; and finally Proslambanomenos, corresponding with our A in the first space with the bass clef, extended the " greater system" of fifteen notes to an 8th below Mesé and an 8th above it.?

Tradition has it that Pythagoras made his discovery of Pythe the ratios of the perfect intervals by listening to some' smiths who struck the iron on their anvil with hammers *" of different weights, and thus produced different notes from the metal. But the narrator of the tale has disregarded the obvious fact that, save for slight variation due to the greater or less heat of its different parts, a metallic bar, like a string, always sounds a note of the same pitch whatever be the weight of the instrument with which it is struck.4 The smithy wherein Pythagoras worked his musical problems was the land of Egypt, where he is said to have acquired and whence he imported his knowledge. His division of the Ist and 2d degrees and the 2d and 3d degrees of the tetrachord, counting downward in pitch into equal intervals of a major tone, left but a leimma (remnant), which was less than a semitone between the 3d and 4th degrees. Aristoxenus (300 B.c.), who has been called the father of temperament, discovered the difference between the major and minor tones, the first having the ratio 3, and the second having that of 42. His followers formed a school opposed to that of Pythagoras, and there was severe contention between the two. Subsequent theorists disputed whether the major or the minor tone should be above the other, and it was Claudius Ptolemy (c. 150 a.p.) who enunciated that the major tone should be below the minor, which is the pri ciple that directs the intonation of our present scale. This intonation may account for the difference between the effect in proceeding from the minor chord of the supertonic to the major chord of the tonic, and the effect in proceeding from the minor chord of the submediant to the major chord of the dominant, of

which the latter, at the interval of a minor tone, is acceptable and the former, at the interval of a major tone, is repugnant to cultivated ears.

3 Terpander (700 Bc.) was the first of whom it is said that “he added a new string to the lyre,” but the ascription to him was probably figurative and not literal, for the proverbial expression was applied to any one who discovered a novelty in science or excelled in art.

4 Not only was this manifest fiction repeated from age to age, but 1h was transferred from the ancient philosopher to Handel by a writer of

some sixty years since, who assumed that the composer derived a melody from the various sounds of smiths’ hammers on one piece of iron.

HISTORY. |

The Greeks had four modes or scales included in their “ greater system.” The Dorian comprised a, series of eight notes from D to D, of which)B was the 6th, and had its semitones between the 2d and 3d and the 5th and 6th degrees counting upward. The others were exact trans- positions of this, as all our modern scales are transpositions of the scale of C, the identity of intervals being induced by the various tuning of the lyre strings. The Phrygian mode lay between E and E, and had ¢F and §B, the Lydian between #F and $F had #G and $C, and the Mixo-Lydian between G and G had bBand bE. ‘These four were styled authentic, and were distinguished by having the dominant (or predominant note) at the interval of a 5th above the tonic. Each had a plagal or relative mode at the interval of a 4th below the authentic, distinguished by having the dominant a 4th below the tonic, and defined by the prefix “hypo ” to the name of the authentic mode, as Hypo-Dorian beginning on A, Hypo-Phrygian on B, &e. To each mode was assigned its special character of subject, which may be accounted for by the different qualities of voices that could sing in lower or higher keys, the majestic being fitted to a bass, who would sing in the Dorian, the tender to a tenor, who would sing in the Lydian, and so forth. In later but still classic times other modes were added to these, but on the same principle of precise notal trans- position. .

The tetrachords above described—having a semitone between the lowest note and that next above it, a tone between the 2d and 3d, anda tone between the 3d and 4th, the latter of which Ptolemy made smaller than the other, and so left a semitone between the 2d and Ist degrees—were called diatonic, as A, bB, C, D. To lower by a semitone the 2d note from the highest produced a chromatic tetrachord, as A, bB, (B, D. To tune the 2d string from the top yet a semitone lower reduced it to the same pitch as the 3d string, which was equivalent to its total rejection, and this form of tetrachord was the enhar- monic, the invention of which was ascribed to Olympus (640 z.c.). If we observe the two tetrachords that occur, for instance, in the Dorian mode—that from D down to A, and that from A down to E—with the addition of the tonic D below, it will be seen that our modern scale of D minor with the omission of the 4th and 7th degrees was in the enharmonic genus, and that the chromatic genus gave the minor and major 3d and the minor and major 6th with still the omission of the 4th and 7th:—enharmonic, D, E, F, A, bB, D; chromatic, D, E, F, #F, A, bB, OB, D; and the other authentic modes were transpositions of this. Inthe harmonic scale of nature the 7th from the generator is too flat, and the 11th (octave above the 4th) is too sharp, for accepted use; the rejection of these two notes indicates a refinement of ear that shrank from the natural and equally refused the artificial intonation of these degrees of the scale. Mr. Carl Engel proves the rejection of the said 4th and 7th from the keynote by nations of high civilization in remote parts of the world ; we call a scale that is so formed Scottish, but in China, Mexico, and other places than Great Britain the same ar- rangement is found to have prevailed in the remotest periods of which we have knowledge. An important principle is here involved which has affected all musical theory directly or indirectly, and is now seen to lie at the foundation of modern rules of harmony or the combining of musical sounds, The Pythagoreans advocated the use of the en- harmonic genus, and so received the appellation of Enhar- inonicists, or were as often called Harmonicists, and hence the twofold application of the term ‘“ harmonia.”

Anacreon (540 B.c.) sang to the accompaniment of the magadis (doubling bridge), an instrument imported from Egypt to Greece; it had a bridge, across which the strings

Mm US Iec

were drawn at one-third of their entire length, when of course the shorter division sounded the note an 8th higher than the longer. Aristotle (384 8B.c.) describes antiphon (16 avridwvov) as the singing of a melody by men an 8th lower than it is sung at the same time by boys—in other words, what is miscalled in modern church congregations “ singing in unison.” The same writer enunciates that the antiphon may not be at either of the other perfect intervals, the 5th or the 4th below a melody, and in this he anticipates a rule till lately deemed inflexible in modern music. Be- yond these two instances of the combination of the 8th, no allusion has been found in ancient writings to the use of harmony in the modern sense of the word, and the only three examples of ancient Greek music that are known to exist are melodies (notes in succession), and supposition assigns them to the 3d or 4th century a.D. They are hymns to Apollo, Nemesis, and Calliope, with the respective verses, and their translation into modern notation has only been possible through reference to the verbal accent, because there are no extant rules of that era for purely musical measure. Nevertheless we have Egyptian paintings of the period of Dynasty IV., and Greek sculptures of players on pipes of different lengths which must have produced notes of different pitches, and sometimes in the same party players on string instruments with necks whereon two strings, differently stopped and yet sounded together, would have yielded a combination of different notes; and this, though a speechless, is a strong evidence that the musicians so represented made at least a forecast of modern harmony. One cannot but marvel that, while copious treatises have come down to us upon niceties that have here been adduced, nothing has been brought to light but pictorial testimony as to ancient knowledge of chords ; and the three specimens

just mentioned are all that have been found of musical

composition in any form.

The classic Greeks used music in rhapsodizing or chant- Greek ing with vocal inflexions the epic poems; they employed applica- it in religious rites and to accompany military evolutions ; oe and prizes were awarded for its performance by voices and : on instruments (including, during the last two

centuries B.c., the organ) at their Olympic and other games. It belonged essentially to the drama, which had its origin in the dithyrambic hymns; these were gradually developed into the tragedy, which took its name from the tragos (goat) that was sacrificed to Dionysus during the perform- ance, Possibly Thespis (536 B.c.) may have spoken the recitations with which he was the first to intersperse the hymns; but some interpreters of Greek writings affirm, and others while doubting do not disprove, that in the mature drama all the characters sang or chanted, seemingly after the manner of the rhapsodists, and the impersonal chorus sang to instrumental accompaniment during their orchestric evolutions, from which motions or marchings the part of the theatre wherein the chorus were stationed between the audience and the proscenium was called the orchestra. Here, then, was the prototype of the modern opera, the main departure from which is the trans- planting of the chorus to the stage and giving to its members participation in the action. /Eschylus wrote the music to his own tragedies ; Sophocles accompanied on the cithara the performance of his Thamyris, if not of other of his plays; Euripides left the composition of the music for his works to another genius than his own, and such was the case with after dramatists.

In ancient Rome the choristers in tragedies were very Roman numerous, including female as well as male singers ; they oa were accompanied by a large number of instruments, aMONE | usic. which trumpets were conspicuous. This we learn from

Seneca, who employs the idea of multitudinous unity it pre-

sents to illustrate figuratively the organization of a state.

How or when the musical system of the Greeks fell into disuse is still untraced ; certainly it prevailed and engaged

The system of notation by letters of the Greek alphabet Nou. had fallen into disuse. A system by neumes (7vevya) ortion

[wIsToRy,) f

Ambro- sian music.

Errors of

Boetius. writers on music, but his voluminous treatise De Jnstitu- | the initial syllables—nonsense without the completion of tione Musica proves that the Greek principles of the art | the words—of six lines of a hymn to St John the Baptist had in his time become matter of antiquarianism ; nay, it | as names of the notes—Ut, Re, Mi, Fa, Sol, La. proves further that he did not understand the technical Hucbald (930 a.p.) invented a system, not of notation, Seale terms he professed to translate. For instance, he mistook | but of scales, wherein the semitone was always between the word for the shortest string of the lyre (Néte), which | in, 04 and 3d of a tetrachord, as G, A, bB, C, so the naturally gave the acutest sound, to signify the gravest | pp and #F of the second octave were in false relation to the note; and he mistook the word for the longest string | pp ang GF of the first two tetrachords. To this scale of (Hypaté) to signify the acutest note. It is not necessary a ; here to catalogue this author’s many verbal errors ;! but | four notes, G, A,pB, C, were subsequently added a note it is important to mention that he ignored the advance | below and a note above, which made the hexachord with made by Didymus and completed by Ptolemy in the tuning | the Seu) between the 3d and 4th both up and down, of the scale with the major and minor tones, and the | as F, G, A,bB, C, D. It was at a much later date that modern semitone of +s, counting upward, and returned to | the 7th, our leading note, was admitted into a key, and for the Pythagorean division of two major tones, inducing a | this the first two letters of the last line of the above-named discordant 3d, and the leimma 33§.2 The very eminence hymn, ‘‘Sanctus Johannes,” would have been used, save of Boetius makes it matter of regret that he ever wrote | for the notion that as the note Mi was at a semitone below upon music. His Latin book being accessible when those of | Fa, the same vowel should be heard at a semitone below Greek authors were not, it was established as a text-book | the upper Ut, and the syllable Si was substituted for Sa. on the art in the English universities, and musical degrees | Long afterwards the syllable Ut was replaced by Do in were granted for knowledge of the principles it

set forth ; | Italy, but it is still retained in France ; and in these two musical progress was thus seriously retarded, and the 18th | countries, with whatever others employ their nomenclature, century was far advanced before search for sound theory | the original Ut and the substituted Do stand for the sound dispelled reverence for his scholastic dogma. defined by the letter C in English and German termin-

Grego- As St Ambrose ordained a ritual for Milan which bore ology. The literal musical alphabet thus accords with the

rian his name, so also St Gregory the Great (590 ap.) : rN Cc D SF G

music. ordained one for Rome which was called Gregorian. The | °Y Habie : La, Si, UtorDo, Re, Mi, Fa, Sol in

the attention of philosophers for some centuries of the Christian era. The first notices of music in the Western Church refer to the manner but not to the matter of the performance. The name of St Ambrose (384 a.D.) is familarly associated with the music of his metropolitan church in Milan ; but all that is proved of his connexion with the art is that, advised by Flavian of Antioch, he adopted for the first time in the West the practice of dividing the verses of the Psalms between responsive choirs, an usage which has a natural connexion with the so-called ‘‘ paral- lelism” of Hebrew poetry, indicated in the English version of the Psalter by the colon that divides each verse. This practice has come to be falsely called antiphonal singing—falsely, because, according to the etymology of the word and to Aristotle’s definition, the Greeks used it for singing together, whereas the church uses it for singing in alterna- tion. St Ambrose regulated the order of the prayers, the ritual, and other matters in the service besides the music ; his ordinances prevailed in Milan, and were distinguished by his name; so the term Ambrosian denotes the “use of Milan” in all things in which that differs from the practice of other churches. No proof is given that the melodies so defined belong to the date of St Ambrose.

Boetius (475 A.D.) was the most copious of the Roman

terms Ambrosian and Gregorian are now erroneously applied to a system of music that came first into use centuries after the dates of the two bishops,

and they are applied even to melodies constructed upon that system. This sentence of St Isidore, the friend and survivor of Gregory, distinctly proves that no music of the time of the Roman pontiff was or could be preserved: ‘‘ Unless sounds are retained in the memory, they perish, because they cannot be written.” Whatever the age of the oldest church melodies, belief cannot associate them with the days of St Gregory. 1 See Chappell, op. cit.

2 The ratios of the three may thus be stated with reference to modern notation, the last being the temperament now in use :—

1D 1 FE : i Pithavsies 576 ©6648.—~=—(i‘v29”~=«#76B’ A system of modes had already been established for * Didymus . 576 640 720 768 ecclesiastical music which differed essentially from the a? Ptolemy 576 «= 648740 768 Greek modal system in having no notes inflected by sharps

pneumeter, of later date than St Gregory, employed signs over or under the syllables to indicate the rising or falling of the voice but not to define its extent, and, in the manner of modern punctuation, to show where breath should be taken. This was followed by, though for a time practised coincidently with, one in which the Roman letters stood for notes. Afterwards, something like our staff was em- ployed, of which the spaces only and not the lines were used, the syllables being placed in the higher or lower of them to denote to what extent the melody should rise or fall. Of earlier date than anything that has been found of like advance in other countries is a service-book which belonged to Winchester cathedral, and contains music written on the lines as well as in the spaces of a staff of four lines ; and this comprises a prayer for Ethelred II., who died in 1016. It has been stated and constantly repeated that staff notation was invented by Guido, a monk of Arezzo, who was alive in 1067, and whose book, Micrologus, refers only to writing in spaces, and who throughout his works professes no more than to describe established principles, and these far less advanced than what then prevailed in England. To him is falsely ascribed the first use of a red line for the note F, and a saffron for the note C, and to him, as unduly, the appropriation of

Germany, however, a remnant of Greek use prevails in having the note above A at the interval of a semitone, namely bB, as was the classical Paramesé above Mesé, and the Teutons employ the 8th letter H to denote

the sound we call {B, and the Italians and French $i. which, whenever instituted, did not pass out of use until the present century, regarded the hexachord and not the octachord, employed both letters and syllables, made the former invariable while changing the latter according to key relationship, and acknowledged only the three keys of G, C, and F; it took its name from having the Greek letter gamma with Ut for its lowest keynote, though the Latin letters with the corresponding syllables were applied to all the other notes.

The gamut, Gan)

i

HISTORY. |

or flats, and consequently a different distribution of tones and semitones in each mode from that in all the others. The sole exception from this was the permissible bB in the second octave, the toleration of which was for the sake of avoiding the interval of the augmented 4th between 9B and F below it, but the inflected note was admitted in the fifth mode only. Here the numbers of the modes must be explained and the later misapplication to them of the Greek names. The two classic forms of authentic and plagal were employed in the structure of melody, that having its dominant above the tonic or final, this having its dominant below it. The four authentic modes bore the uneven numbers—first beginning its scale from D, third from E, fifth from F, wherein the >B might be used, and seventh from G. The four plagal modes bore the even numbers, which showed their parallelism or rela- tion to their respective authentic modes—second beginning from A, fourth from B, sixth from C, and eighth from D. Inthe latter half of the 9th century, Notker, abbot of St Gall, applied the Greek names to these, regardless of the distinction that by use of inflected notes the classic modes had all the same disposition of tones and semitones, whereas by the omission of sharps and of flats the church modes varied from each other in the arrangement of inter- vals. The confusion of F for the church Lydian with $F for the Greek Lydian is obvious, and the reader may easily trace the discrepancies between the systems if he consider the diverse principles on which the two are based. Some centuries later, the ninth and tenth modes, /olian and Hypo-iolian, beginning respectively on A and E,

were added, and later still, the eleventh and twelfth, Ionian and Hypo-Ionian, beginning respectively on C and G. The mode or scale that comprised b)B was called mollis, and those which had 9B were each called dura, and hence the sign “b” to indicate a flat, the word bémol to define the same in French, the word be or its first letter to name a flat, and the terms moll and dur to express minor and majorin German. Lastly, as bearing on the aversion from the augmented 4th between F and B, and on the omission of the 4th and 7th in several characteristic national scales, it must be added that, whenever the 5th above or 4th below a tonic or final was B, C instead of this note was dominant of the mode.

Coincidently with the church practice of constructing unrhythmical melody in one or other of these unnatural and arbitrarily devised modes, and of singing the same without accompanying harmony, the people of Northern nations had the habit, as has been proved in many districts, – of singing tunes with the accompaniment of different parts performed by other voices. Among what tradition has pre- served of these tunes, some indeed are in one or other of the church modes, as was inevitable in the productions of people who had experience of this artificial system in the music of the daily service; but many approxi- mate far nearer to the scale of present use, and are thus susceptible of just harmonic treatment, which is in- compatible with the modal system. So devoted to their Song-tunes were the English people in the later Saxon times that churchmen, as is well attested, would often sing these to attract the public to divine worship, and alter the Norman settlement it was a frequent custom to wnite words of hymns to fit secular tunes, which tunes and their titles are preserved through this appropriation only, with the Latin words written under the notes.

The appropriation of popular tunes to church use was followed by the adoption of the harmonic practice or part-singing of the people in many English districts, and probably in other Northern lands. At the end of the [lth or beginning of the 12th century, a part added to another received the name of descant (dis-cantus, some-

im Wey IC

SI

thing apart from or extra to the song), and rules were gradually framed for its extemporaneous invention. It

was preceded by faburden (the singing of a single note or Fabur- drone throughout a given melody), and this latter term den.

was retained with a wider contrapuntal signification, whence difficulty has arisen as to its primary meaning. To “bear the burden” was to sing the bass below. either a single part or fuller harmony; when the bass was a single note, which was of course the tonic, this being generally F or Fa, it constituted the faburden or drone ; that the term is translated fawxbourdon and falsobordone in French and Italian may have referred at first to its being a single note or drone, and not a part changing with the changeful harmony.

The assertion that previously to the period now being pja- considered there prevailed a church custom of accompany- phony.

ing melodies with a transposition of the same at the interval of the 5th or 8th above or below is disproved by Aristotle’s injunction that the antiphon might be at the 8th below, but not at any other of the perfect intervals ; and the blundering of Boetius could not eradicate the fact, though it might obscure the rule. It is also dis- proved by the habit of the peoples of the North to sing in harmony, showing unschooled perception of the principles of combining sounds, and making it impossible that either they or their priests (who must casually have heard their natural performances) could have tolerated the cacophonous progression of parts at perfect intervals from each other. It is disproved by the identity of human perceptions to-day with those of a thousand years ago, and by the certainty that men of old positively could not have sung with satisfaction, or heard with respect, things that are in the highest degree offensive to us all, An explanation may be speculatively ventured, that the manuscripts wherein two parts appear to be written in 5ths or 4ths with each other are not scores showing what was to be sung in combination, but the parts for separate choirs, showing what was to be sung in response; thus, when

D

A + stand as the initials of three melodies, the top or

D the bottom may have been intended to be sung alone, the middle to follow, and the other to succeed. In this is to be seen the germ of the fugue, if we may suppose that the part which first held the cantus was continued in descant, when the cantus was sung a 5th higher by another part. Music written as here described is defined as diaphony,—a term at least as appropriate to the successive as to the simultaneous singing of a melody at the interval of a 5th above or below.

One of the most inscrutable things to the modern student Musical is the lateness at which notation was devised for defining measure.

the relative length of musical sounds. The rhythmical sense is the earliest of the musical faculties to be developed, and is often the strongest in its development among individuals and nations. Still, the ancients have left no record that they had signs of indication for the length of notes, and centuries rolled over Christendom before there was any chronicled attempt to find a principle for supply- ing this musical necessity. Here again conjecture will insist that the practice of singing longer and shorter notes with stronger and weaker accent must have prevailed before a system was framed for its regulation; and in this supposition offers that the instincts of the people must have given example for the canons of the school- men. Franco of Cologne, in the 12th century, is the first writer who codified the uses of ‘measured music,” and all he enunciates is expanded in the treatises of Walter Odington, a monk of Evesham who was appointed arch- bishop of Canterbury in 1228. At this period and after- ; XVII. — 11

Motet and an- them.

Counter- point.

82

wards, bar-lines were drawn across the whole or a portion of the staff to show the end of a musical phrase in accord- ance with that of the line or verse which was to be sung to it, and the number of notes between these bar-lines was more or less, according to the number of syllables in the verse. It was not, however, till more than three hundred years later that music was first divided into bars of equal length, and not until a still later

date that these were applied to their most valuable purpose of showing the points of strongest emphasis. Prior to this invention the distribution of accent was styled perfect or imperfect time, according to whether the strongest note was to be the first of three or the first of two, or according to whether three or two should follow during the continuance of one, corresponding with present division into triple or duple time. Our compound times were denoted by such directions as “imperfect of the first and perfect of the second,” which may be translated by

our sign Oe meaning that a bar is divisible into

two equal notes (dotted minims or dotted crotchets), and each of these into three equal notes (crotchets or quavers). It is not only that early music is, on account of this vague notation, difficult to interpret, but writers seem to have had undefined notions of where their accent should lie ; and hence we have varying versions of melodies, partly because the transcribers may have doubted how to express them, and partly because composers, when choosing them as themes against which to construct other parts, lengthened or shortened any of the notes at the prompting of their own fancy. It was not until the 18th century that the plan was fully accepted of having the strongest note on the first of every bar, and of having, with rarest excep- tions, the close or cadence or conclusion of every phrase on this note of strongest accent. To induce such termina- tion of a phrase many a strain must begin with a half bar, or with a shorter or longer fragment, and the excep- tions from the rule are so few as to be easily mastered, and so clear as to aid in strengthening the principle.

Descant, which has become a term of general use for disquisition on a stated subject, has been shown to owe its first meaning and musical application to the words dis- cantus. A like meaning belongs to the word motet, which seems to have come from motetus, to denote a florid or moving part against a fixed theme in longer notes.’ It may be supposed that the term anthem had reference originally, similarly to the word motet, to a free part constructed against or upon the plain-song. The word descant has passed out of use as a musical definition; motet now generally signifies a composition to Latin text for the Roman Church, and it is also applied to the works pro- duced in North Germany in the centuries next following the

Reformation which were elaborations of the choral melodies ; and anthem is applied to pieces designed for use in the Church of England.

When descant ceased to be improvised, and with the advance of notation the writing of a carefully-planned accompanying part became more and more practicable,. such a part was defined as counterpoint—point or note against note. Counterpoint is simple when each melody is in notes of the same length as those of an accompanying melody ; it is florid when one melody proceeds in longer or shorter notes than another melody. At first the use of perfect concords only was allowed in counterpoint, but of these

1 Among other grounds for this derivation a strong one is that in the 13th and 14th centuries the word motetus often defined a florid part next above that which was styled tenor, because it held the chief melody, the word motetus being subsequently changed for medius or mean when that part stood midway between the ¢enor and the third part above it or treble. Bass, or base of the harmonic column, was then designated the burden.

never two at the same interval, as two 5ths or two 8ths, in succession. 3ds and 6ths were afterwards introduced. Then discords were admitted under either of two condi- tions: (1) that they were approached and quitted by step and not by leap, and were always unaccented ; (2) that they were suspended from a note of a previously-sounded chord, or from a note without harmony, and that they were resolved by passing to a concord while the harmony lasted against which they were discordant. Subsequently one more class of discords was employed ; these were elements of the harmony, being added to, not substituted for, the notes of a chord, and they were resolved, with the change of the entire chord, upon notes of that chord whose root was at the interval of a 4th above the root of the discord. It is from the institution of the art of constructing counter- point that the history of the music we know, and the capa- bility to produce it, are truly to be dated. Throughout the period of transition from what must be regarded as an instinct of the people to what was truly a scholastic problem, there were English writers on music in such numbers as to prove the high

consideration in which it was held in Britain, and the great pains spent there to evolve principles for its regulation.2. John of Dunstable is especially to be noted, of whom Tinctor the Netherlander (c. 1460 a.D.) wrote, in discussing the art of counterpoint : ‘Of this new art, as I may call it, the fountain and source is said to have been among the English, of whom Dunstable was the chief.” Contemporaneous with Dunstable, but far behind him in esteem, was Egide Binchois, a musician of Picardy. The first essays at composition in harmony were in thes

form of canon—that is, in which successive parts have the ”

same melody, but begin each at a stated period after its precursor. When the first part completes a rhythmical sentence prior to the entry of the second part and con- tinues the melody as accompaniment to the second, and so on with regard to the third or fourth parts if there be so many, the composition has in England always been styled a round or catch, as distinguished from the closer canon, in which the successive parts enter without regard to the close of a phrase ; but elsewhere than in England no distinction is made between the catch and the canon. The term round refers to the return to the beginning by the first part, while the other parts respectively continue the melody. The term catch springs from each later part catching up the tune during its continuance by the others. The term canon relates to the problem of finding the one or more points in a melody whereat one or more successive parts should begin the same tune. Very early allusion is made to the singing of catches by the English people, which continued in practice until after the Restoration ; every trade had its characteristic catch ; there were many on pastoral subjects; those which engaged composers in the time of Charles II. are mostly of a bacchanalian cast; and the form was appropriated in the later Georgian era to sentimental subjects, when the practice of singing catches had passed from the people at large, but was pre- served in some convivial clubs that consisted of men of fortune, who paid and listened to, but took no part with, professional singers.

Quite distinct from the canon is the fugue (fuga). In¥ it a short complete melody /lzes (hence the name) from one part to another, while the original part is continued in counterpoint against it. To suit the different compass of high and low voices, this melody is transposed into the key of the dominant

(the 5th above or 4th below) when assigned to the second entering voice; in the first instance it is called the subject or dua, in the second it is called the

Ca

2 John Cotton (referred to as Johannes Anglicanus by the almost fabulous Guido) was the earliest to indicate the good effect of contrary motion between two simultaneous melodies.

DO},

und teh, ;

HISTORY. |

answer or comes, and they were formerly also distin- guished as masculine and feminine. A subject is real when it admits of exact transposition into the key of the dominant; it is zonal when it needs modification to be fitted for this change, and then, if authentic, its answer must be plagal, and, if the subject be plagal, the answer must be authentic. The copious rules of fugal develop- ment needed many years for their ripening, but the begin- ning of this art-form dates from very primitive times, and a speculation has been already offered as to its origin (p. 81).

The earliest piece of music for several voices that has

MUs IC

83

passion of the age there was generally provision for the teaching of music.!

In the 15th century and later, because musical erudi- tion was still applied entirely to the service of the church, and because Italy was the ecclesiastical centre, musicians of all lands went to Italy, and especially to Rome. It was, however, in England first, and it has been only in England until America adopted the practice, that academi- cal honours have been given to musicians. John Hamboys (c. 1470), author of some treatises on the art, is the reputed first doctor of music. The record exists that in 1463 the

university of Cambridge conferred the degrees of doctor Academi- and bachelor respectively on Thomas Seynt Just and Henry ¢@! de- Habyngton. Probably these degrees were granted on the ®”°**

g been found in any country is an English ‘‘six men’s song,” – contained in a manuscript which best judges assign to the period prior to 1240. It isa canon for four voices, with

independent parts for two more, which stand as a foot, or burden, or ground bass to support all the others. The original words are a description of summer; these are proof of the secular origin of the music, but there are also written to the notes the words of a Latin hymn, which prove the practice above noticed of utilizing the people’s songs for church purposes. The Arundel MS., which had lain unnoticed in the library of the Royal Society and has lately been transferred to that of the British Museum, comprises several compositions in two-part and three-part counterpoint, and it belongs to the year 1260—a new addition to the many proofs of the earlier and greater advance of music in England than in other countries. In the Parisian library are some pieces by Adam de la Hale, the Hunchback of Arras, which consist of a secular tune as bass with its original words, and two florid parts above it with sacred Latin words. The reputed author lived in the later half of the 13th century, but it is surmised that the contrapuntal parts may have been added to his tune at a subsequent period by another hand; if this be so, the English pieces are the first, and seem to be the only extant specimens of counterpoint of the period.

Thus far the advance of music was earlier and greater in England than elsewhere. In the 15th century Flanders produced the musicians of most esteem and greatest influ- ence. Early among these was Ockenheim or Ockeghem of Hainault (c. 1420-1513), who was surpassed in fame by his pupil Josse Després (more commonly known by what must have been his pet name of Josquin) of Hainault. He practised the art in his own country, in Italy, in France, and in Austria, and was everywhere regarded as its highest ornament. Though not credited with the origin- ation of principles, he is highly extolled for his practical application of those already acknowledged, and the renown of many of his scholars shows him to have been as good a teacher as he was a voluminous composer. In his works, however, the

artificiality of the prevailing style is obvious ; many of them have some secular song for “cantus fermus” which supports the florid melodies set to sacred texts that it was the musician’s highest aim to engraft upon them. Some of them are notable for a pleasantry or even a jest framed on a punning application of the names of the notes, or on the choice of a text that was pertinent to the occasion for which they were written. Others are distinguished for the multiplicity of their parts. All are of a character to elicit admiration of their ingenuity rather than Induce delight by their beauty.

Tinctor, already mentioned, founded in Naples the first musical conservatory, and coincidently Willaert, another Fleming, founded one in Venice, their object being, as implied in the definition, to conserve the art of music from corruption. Not only in these exclusively musical Schools and in similar institutions which sprang up in the same and other cities was the art cultivated, but in the academies of general learning that were established in all the Italian cities when study of the classics became the

strength of pedantic lore formally required. In the follow- ing century a musical composition also was exacted from candidates for graduation. It may seem an anomaly that art-excellence should be tested by academical regulation, since by some supposed to soar above rule; but, rise as it may, to be art it must be founded on principle, and, if in its working of to-day it overstep its limits of yesterday, it is for ever unfolding new exemplifications of those natural laws whereon it is based, and the greatest artist of any time is he who can most deeply probe, and is thus best able to apply, the phenomena; upon these grounds, then, it is not beyond the province of the schoolman to test and to declare the qualifications of an artist.

The knightly calling, in the age of chivalry, not only referred to heroic acts and deeds of arms, but regarded skill in verse and melody, in singing and accompaniment. Princes and nobles of highest rank practised these arts, and were then styled troubadours, who were sometimes attended and assisted by jongleurs to play to their singing. See TRouBADoURS. ‘Their music seems to have been rhythmi- cal, as was necessary to fit the verses, and the perfect, or ternary, or triple time is said to have prevailed in it more commonly than that which we should now write as two or four in a bar. A

similar race of knightly songsters in Germany were the minnesiinger (see vol. x. p. 525). They set great value on the invention of new metres, and he who produced one with a melody to suit it was called a meister (master), while he who cast his verses in a previously accepted metre or adapted them to a known melody was styled tondieb (tone thief). For the most part, their pieces comprised a fore-song, a far longer section in several stanzas, to each of which the same melody was repeated, and an after-song, all three divisions having their own separate melody. Their music is said to have been in the church style of the period, but was distinctly their own composition. The exercise of the gentle arts by the nobility declined with the decline of chivalry, and as it fell into disuse among them it was adopted by the burgher class in the guilds of meistersinger (see vol. x. p. 526). One of the most meritorious and by far the most prolific of the whole craft—his compositions being numbered by thousands —was Hans Sachs of Nuremberg (1494-1576). He was by trade a shoemaker, and all the members of the guild followed some such calling, and devoted themselves to the study and practice of song as recreation from their daily labour. They cultivated the arts of both composition and performance of

song in its twofold aspect of verse and tune, for which, ae 1 As belonging to this branch of the subject, the principal schools for musical education that have been instituted of late, and are now in existence, may here be named : —the Paris Conservatoire, 1795, and its five provincial branch schools ; the Conservatoire of Brussels ; the Conservatorio of Naples, an offspring of earlier institutions ; the Royal Academy of Music, London, 1822; the Conservatorium of Leipsic, instituted in 1848, mainly through the instrumentality of Mendelssohn ; the Conservatorium of Vienna, and like institutions in Dresden, Cologne, Stuttgart, Munich, and Frankfort, and also in Milan and Bologna; and the Hochschule fiir Musik, a branch of the Academy of Arts, Berlin.

Madri- gals and part- songs.

Roman school,

according to tradition, they enacted most rigid and perhaps pedantic laws. None of their work has come down to us, but the name they have left affords an instance of the aspira- tions of the common people to that intellectual condition which is not the exclusive prerogative of the church nor the privilege of the wealthy. Guilds of meistersinger were also established in other towns of North Germany. The title and its application generally declined until the 17th century, but lingered feebly in a few places until 1836, when the latest-lived guild was dissolved at Ulm.1

The dawn of the 16th century is marked by the appro- priation of musical scholarship to secular writing. It was about that time that the madrigal came into vogue. The etymology of the word is obscure, but the class of music to which it is applied is clearly distinguished. It is stamped with the imitative character of the canon, but is free from the rigid continuance of one melody by the successively entering voices; and it has as much resemblance yet un- likeness to the fugue in having the flight of a musical phrase from one to another of the vocal parts, but not being steadfast to one subject throughout its design,—nay, imitation sometimes ceases in the madrigal when particu- lar words need special emphasis. The villanella, villancico, chanson, or the part-song of the period is distinguished from madrigal by the definite rhythm, a quality excluded from this latter by the response in one part to the uncompleted phrase of another; and the lighter species of composition was so arranged as to suit a single voice with a lute accompaniment when a voice to each part was not avail- able for the performance. Still more marked in rhythm and more slight in structure was the ballet, so named be- cause it was sung as an accompaniment to dancing (ballata, from ballare), or the fal-la, so named because often set to these two syllables. All these classes of music were as often played as sung, and in English copies are generally de- scribed as “‘apt for voices or viols.” The Flemish masters have left as many and as admirable specimens of secular work as of church music; Italian musicians, who rose from the teaching of the Flemings, successfully emulated the two- fold example; but in England secular composition seems to have been the indigenous development of national intui- tion, and at its outset at least to have had a style of its own. This is exemplified in the pieces comprised in the Fayrefax MS., which are mostly of a pastoral and always of a tuneful character; of these, Dr. Robert Fayrefax the collector, Sir Thomas Phelyppes (a priest), Newark,

Theryngham, Turges, Tudor, Browne, Gilbert Bannister, Richard Davy, Cornyshe, and others were the composers.

The renowned Roman school, to which we must now pass, owed its existence to the precept as much as to the example of foreigners, chiefly from Flanders. Claude Goudimel (c. 1510-1572), known as a Fleming, though his birth be assigned to Avignon, was the first to open a seminary for musical tuition in Rome, and the most famous musicians of the century were its pupils— Pales- trina (0b. 1594), Orlando di Lasso (0d. 1594), the brothers Animuccia, the brothers Nanini, and many more. Lasso, Lassus, or Latres of Mons is signalized among these for the great number and great beauty of his works, and for the wide area over which he spread his labours. In his own land, in Rome, in France, in England, and chiefly in Bavaria, he was active as a choir-master and as a composer, and did as much to advance art by making his music express

1 Late in the 13th century a society somewhat similar in its object was established in London, consisting of the wealthier merchants. It was called the Puy (the name also given to the poetical festivals in honour of the Virgin in some Norman towns; see Littré, s.v.). Ad- mission to its ranks was possible only through manifestation of musical or poetic merit. Severe judgment decided on the claims of contesting ae for honours, which were great and public when desert was

ound.

the words to which it was set as by teaching the executants to realize this expression in performance. He is praised for breaking from the long previous practice of writing prolix florid passages to single syllables, a weakness mani- fest in the music of his countryman Despres and of inter- vening writers.

Several musical treatises by Spanish writers of this period Spanis, are extant, which are not regarded highly for the novelty writer, of their views, nor for more than usual perspicacity in the statement of them. It might have been supposed that Spain would have been as favourable to the production of musical talent as Italy has always been. That the con- trary is the fact is,

however, patent ; but the explanation lies with the ethnologist rather than with the musician.

Though the church from time to time appropriated the Purifa.| secular art-forms from their rise to their maturity, its chief Hoo | authorities were always jealous of these advances, and — issued edicts against them. So in 1322 Pope John XXII ~ denounced the encroachments of counterpoint, alleging that the voluptuous harmony of 3ds and 6ths was fit but for profane uses. So too the twelfth or Ionian mode—the modern scale of C major, the only one of the church modes, save under special conditions the fifth or Lydian mode, that accords with the tonality of present use—was stigmatized as “ lascivious” and proscribed from the sanc- tuary. More accordant with present views of propriety was the many-sided objection to the employment of tunes of the people in place of the church’s plain-song as bases on which to erect counterpoint, and the construction of this counterpoint in the most ornate of the several florid species. Enlarging on the primitive practice of adapting Latin words to popular tunes, the best approved masters, in the two centuries preceding the epoch now under notice, took tunes of this class, to which it is stated the original words were commonly sung by congregations at least, and even by some members of the authorized choir, while other of the singers had such extensive passages to execute that to make the sacred syllables distinct was impracticable. The whole custom of composition and performance was rigorously condemned by the council of Trent, in conse- quence of which Palestrina was commissioned in 1563 to write music for the mass that should be truthful to the spirit of devout declamation and aim at the utmost approach to musical beauty. To this end he made three experiments ; the first two were declared successful, and the third was accepted as the fulfilment of all that could be desired for religion and for art; it was named, after the preceding pope, “Missa Papze Marcelli.” This great work was set forth as the standard to which all ecclesiastical composi- tion was required to conform ; and so it did conform until a new musical idiom arose, until the popular ear thirsted for new forms of expression, and until musicians sought and found favour in meeting the general demand. In the three hundred years between that time and this, pontifis and conclaves have again and again enacted statutes to conserve the purity of ecclesiastical art, but art as often has run out of control and proved that every succeeding

———e a —— : = en Wy i i i i ee eee

purity of performance. A Treatise on Counterpoint by Stefano Vanneo of Recanati (1531), however, expressly states that the notes in the modes were subject to mM flexion, that accomplished singers necessarily knew what

msTORY. |

notes should be raised or lowered by sharps or flats, and that these signs were never written but for the direction of boys and other executants who had not attained to mastery of their art. The treachery of tradition is exemplified in the loss of the rules for this once generally under- stood practice of notal inflexion; but the inference is strong that, could these rules be recovered, many of the melodies now called Gregorian might resume a musical character of which they are robbed by strict adherence to their written notes.

In England during the 16th century choral music kept pace with the age. This is evidenced in the works of Tallis and Byrde (Bird, or Byrd), who wrote for the Roman ritual, and continued their labours for the Anglican service as modified by the Reformation, which exercised the genius of many another, of whom Orlando Gibbons was the crown- ing glory, for the few of his works that are accessible in comparison with what he is believed to have produced are classed among the masterpieces of their style and their period. The same musicians, or most of them, are as notable for their secular as for their sacred writings.

It was in the middle of the 16th century that the class of composition now ranked as the highest was originated. The oratorio dates its existence and its name from the meetings held by San Filippo Neri in the oratory of his church in Rome, at first in 1556, for religious exercise and pious edification, He was the confessor and friend of Giovanni Animuccia, whom he engaged to write music to be interspersed throughout his discourses. Originally this consisted of Jaudi or short hymns, the extent of which was afterwards enlarged; by and by the spoken matter was replaced by singing, and ultimately the class of work took the form in which it is cast by present composers. Such is the source of the didactic oratorio; the dramatic oratorio is an offshoot of the same, but-is distinguished by its representation of

personal characters and their involvement in acourse of action. The first instance of this kind of writing was the production of Emilio del Cavalieri, La Rappresentazione dell'? Anima e del Corpo, which, like its didactic precursor, was given in the oratory of a church in Rome (1600).

To the beginning of the 16th century is due a more significant matter than the secularization of studied music, ' than the reform of the music of the church, and even than the labours of those musicians of whose great names only the most notable have been cited. The matter in question refers not to art-forms nor to artists, but to the fact that music has its foundation in the natural laws of acoustics, and thus it lays open the principle for which Pagan philosophers and Christians had been vainly groping through centuries, while a veil of mathematical calculation hung between them and the truth. Jean Mouton of Holling in Lorraine (1475- 1522) is the earliest musician in whose works has been found an example of the phenomenal chord of the dominant 'th approached with the full freedom of present-day prac- tice. The discovery is usually ascribed to Claudio Monte- verde, of whom and of his great art services much will be said when treating of the ensuing century. Like others of the wonders of nature, the chord and its application seem not to have come suddenly into knowledge, much less into acceptance, but to have been experimented upon with less or more of hardihood by one musician after another, until good effect had silenced dispute and authorized the adoption of this beautiful harmony into the language of music. The discovery of the grounds of its justification is to be traced to a still later time. The speciality of the chord consists m its comprising between its 3d and 7th the interval of the diminished 5th, the two notes of our diatonic scale

mm te ee te

which are omitted by many primitive nations—the 4th and 7th from the keynote—and which perplexed the con- siderations of theorists and practitioners, as has in the foregoing been repeatedly shown. Speculation as to the new delight the first hearing of this combination must have occasioned is precarious ; the opposition with which it was encountered by the orthodox is certain.

Yet another prominent feature in musical history dates from the beginning of the 16th century, the practice of hymnody. Luther is said to have been the first to write metrical verses on sacred subjects in the language of the people, and his verses were adapted sometimes to ancient church melodies, sometimes to tunes of secular songs, and sometimes had music composed for them by himself and others. Many rhyming Latin hymns are of earlier date whose tunes are identified with them, some of which tunes, with the subject of their Latin text, are among the Reformer's appropriations ; but it was he who put the words of praise and prayer into the popular mouth, associated with rhythmical music which aided to imprint the words upon the memory and to enforce their enunciation. In conjunction with his friend Walther, Luther issued a collec- tion of poems for choral singing in 1524, which was followed by many others in North Germany. The English versions of the Psalms by Sternhold and Hopkins and their pre- decessors, and the French version by Marot and Beza were written with the same purpose of fitting sacred minstrelsy to the voice of the multitude. Goudimel in 1566 and Le Jeune in 1607 printed harmonizations of tunes that had then be- come standard for the Psalms, and in England several such publications appeared, culminating in Ravenscroft's famous collection (1621); in all of these the arrangements of the tunes were by various masters. The English practice of hymn-singing was much strengthened on the return of the exiled Reformers from Frankfort and Geneva, when it became so general that, according to Bishop Jewell, thousands of the populace who assembled at Paul's Cross to hear the preaching would join in the singing of psalms before and after the sermon.

The placing of the choral song of the church within the lips of the people had great religious and moral influ- ence; it has had also its great effect upon art, shown in the productions of the North German musicians ever since the first days of the Reformation, which abound in exercises of scholarship and imagination wrought upon the tunes of established acceptance. Some of these are accompaniments to the tunes with interludes between the several strains, and some are compositions for the organ or for orchestral instruments that consist of such elaboration of the themes as is displayed in accompaniments to voices, but of far more complicated and extended character.

reat fame by success in its practice, of whom Reinken (1623-1722), Pachelbel (1653-1706), Georg Boehm, and the great Bach are specially memorable. The hymnody of North Germany has for artistic treatment a strong advantage which is unpossessed by that of England, in that for the most part the same verses are associated with the same tunes, so that, whenever the text or the music is heard, either prompts recollection of the other, whereas in England tunes were always and are now often composed to metres and not to poems ; any tune in a given metre is available for every poem in the same, and hence there are various tunes to one poem, and various poems to one tune.2 In England a tune is named generally after

1 The Correspondence of this account with that of the rise of Greek tragedy is obvious.

2 The old tune for the 100th Psalm and Croft's tune for the 104th are almost the only exceptions, unless ''God save the King " may be

Hymns and chorals.

Elabora- tion of choral tunes.

Recita- tive and lyrical drama.

S6

some place—as '"' York," '" Windsor," '' Dundee,"—or by some other unsignifying word ; in North Germany a tune is mostly named by the initial words of the verses to which it is allied, and consequently, whenever it is heard, whether with words or without, it necessarily suggests to the hearer the whole subject of that hymn of which it is the musical moiety undivorceable from the literary half. Manifold as they are, knowledge of the choral tunes is included in the earliest schooling of every Lutheran and every Calvinist in Germany, which thus enables all to take part in performance of the tunes, and hence expressly the definition of "choral." Compositions grounded on the standard tune are then not merely school exercises but works of art which link the sympathies of the writer and the listener, and aim at expressing the feeling prompted by the hymn under treatment.

On the verge of the 17th century a novelty in music was originated that was as pregnant of consequence as anything that has yet been noticed; this was recitative with its special characteristics. Vincenzo Galilei was one of a band of Florentine nobles and gentry who devised the appropriation of music to free declamation, and they engaged. authors and productive and executive musicians to put the conception into practice. Galilei had already come promi- nently into public notice in a controversy with Giuseppe Zarlino, the most esteemed of all the writers on music in his age, who was the author of a treatise that expounded and justified the Ptolemaic division of the scale with the major and minor tones, and the former below the latter ; this was answered by Galilei in support of the Pythagorean doctrine of equal tones, which is confuted by the pheno- menon of harmonics, and Zarlino in turn replied to him. During two and a half centuries the art of music had been untouched by the New Learning, which had had the effect of regenerating all the other arts, and had wrought the intellectual change now known as the Renaissance. The members of the Florentine association thought it possible to apply ancient principles in modern practice, and so to re- produce the effect to which the newly-revealed writings of Greece testified, but of which these gave no such technical description as could be the groundwork of any reorganiza- tion. Obviously, the poetic power of Greek music must have lain in the force it gave to declamation ; in exalting speech into song it must have given to words a clearer yet more varied significance than they could else have had, and to the passions words embody it must have given an otherwise impossible medium of expression. There existed two classes of music at the time under notice. The music of the people consisted of concise rhythmical tunes that were either composed to accompany dancing, or so constructed that, though made for singing, they were applicable to that other use; and these tunes, being repeated again and again to the almost countless stanzas of some ballad poems, could have in themselves no quality of expression beyond a vague character of sadness or gaiety ; for, what might have been expressive of the pre- valent feeling at one stage of a long story would neces- sarily be fallacious in the subsequent diversities of the tale. The music of the schools consisted of ingenious con- trivances of wholly artificial nature, either to assign the same melody to several successive voices in canonic con- tinuance or fugal imitation, or else to multiply more and more the parts for simultaneous execution; in the former case definition of rhythm is annulled, as has been shown by the

entry of one part with a phrase while that phrase was uncompleted in another part, and in the latter case the manifold melodies so obscured the sound of one another

classed under hymnody. In Scotland, also, the tune for the 124th Psalm is associated with its proper text.

that none could be distinguished,—a fact that must be self- apparent if we think of the sound of twelve, or twenty- four, or so many as forty simultaneous currents of song, In this music there could neither be expression nor even articulation of the words, and hence, our Floren- tines assumed, the purpose of music was perverted and its inherent poetical essence was abused. Such combination of diverse melodies is now styled polyphony, a term that might better be applied to simple counterpoint in which the many sounds are onefold in accent than to the florid counterpoint it is employed to define, wherein the many parts have various movement. With the idea before them of the ancient rhapsodists the association proposed the setting of music to verses with the main, nay, only object of expressing the words. This music was not to be rhythmical, but was to consist of longer or shorter phrases in accordance with the literary sense; its intervals were not to be chosen with regard to their melodic interest, but in imitation or idealization rather than exaggeration of the rising and falling of the voice in ordinary speech, the speed being hurried or relaxed by the exigency of the passing sentiment ; and the accompaniment of the singer was to be on some unobtrusive instrument or, later, some combination of instruments, that should, as did the lyre of old, verify the intonation and, in the new era (what had not been in the classic), enhance the vocal expression by some pungent harmony. Applied solely to recitation, the new invention ~ was called recitativo (recitative), musica parlante, or stilo rappresentativo. The first instance of its composition is said to have been a cantata—that is, a piece for a single voice with instrumental accompaniment—ZJ/ Conte Ugolino, composed by Galilei, but of this no copy is known to exist. Doubt prevails as to whether 17 Combattimento a’ Apolline col Serpente by Giulio Caccini or ZZ Satiro by Emilio del Cavalieri was the earlier production;

they were both given to the world in 1590, were both in dramatic form, and both exemplified the new, if not the revived, classic style of music. Caccini was fitted to make the experiment by practice and excellence as a vocalist more than by con- trapuntal erudition, and he was soon associated with Jacopo Peri, a musician of his own class, in the composi- tion of Dafne, a more extensive work than the foregoing, indeed a complete lyrical drama, which was privately per- formed in the palace of one of the Florentine instigators of the experiment in 1597, or, according to some, in 1594. These two again worked together on the opera of Luridiee, which was publicly represented in Florence at the nuptials of Henry IV. of France with Maria dei Medici in 1600, its production having been preceded by that of Cavalieri's posthumous oratorio in Rome, La Rappresentazione dell' Anima e del Corpo, before noticed. That the first public performance of a dramatic oratorio and of a secular opera, both exemplifying the recently-devised declamatory power of music, should have occurred in the same year is a re- markable coincidence. That the first experiments in the novel art of lyrical declamation were confided to practised executants who brought their experience as vocalists to bear upon composition for a hitherto untried phase of vocal effect was excellent for the purpose of proving the proposition. The success of the experiment was, how- ever, to be established when a composer already renowned as such, one who had drawn exceptional attention by his then new views of harmony, gave the force of his genius and the weight of his name to the novel class of writing. Such was Monteverde (1568-1643), who in 1607 brought out at the court of Mantua his opera of Arianna, followed in 1608 by his Orfeo. In these works, and in those of the same nature that he subsequently produced at Venice, is anticipated the principle (and, so far as the resources of the time allowed, the practice also) which was revived by

Gluck some hundred and fifty years later, and of which the votaries of Richard Wagner in the present day assume their hero to have been the originator,—the principle, namely, that the exigencies of the action and the require- ments of the text should rule the musical design in a lyrical drama, and that the instrumental portions of the composition should, quite as much as those assigned to voices, illustrate the progress of the scene and the

signifi- cance of the words. The last speciality is exemplified in the harmonies and figures of accompaniment, and in the appropriation of particular instruments to the music of particular persons, so as to characterize every member of the action with special individuality. Such must be the true faith of the operatic composer ; it has again and again been opposed by the superstition that feats of vocal agility and other snares for popular applause were lawful elements of dramatic effect ; but it has ever inspired the thoughts of the greatest artists and revealed itself in their work, and no one writer more than another can claim to have devised or to have first acted upon this natural creed.

Monteverde had been attacked by Giovanni Battista Artusi for his use of what are now known as fundamental harmonies, which the composer might have learned from the music of Mouton (already named), but which he more

af. probably rediscovered for himself; he had defended the

practice, and his theoretical assailant had retorted. Pol- emics ran high as to the relative rights of contrapuntal legislation which had been developed through the course of ages, and the freedom of thought which had as yet neither rule nor tradition ; for every separate use of an unprepared discord was tentative as to effect and specula- tive as to reception by its hearers. It will presently be shown that the discovery (no lighter term will suffice) of Mouton and Monteverde has its base in the laws of nature ; here it is enough to say that it was a turning-point in the history of music, the throwing open the resources of the modern as opposed to the limitations of what may justly be called the archaic. The distinction of these two styles was not clearly defined till long afterwards; but a writer may here be named, Angelo Berardi, whose work (1687) more fully than any other sets forth the con- trapuntal code and enunciates the requirements in fugal writing, such as the affinity of subject to answer, and whatever else marks the style and the class of com- position.

The opera now became a fixed institution in Italy, its performance was no longer restricted to the palaces of princes and nobles, and it became the best-esteemed enter- taimment in public theatres. The dramatic oratorio was transferred from the church to the secular stage, becoming m every respect

a sacred opera, and only specimens of this a were suffered to be represented during the season of

ent,

Conspicuous, as much for the merit as the multitude of his productions, was Alessandro Scarlatti (1659-1725), who gave to the world 115 secular operas, many oratorios, and, besides these, which might well have been a long Iife's labour, a far greater quantity of ecclesiastical music, some of which is characterized as most dense and massive. He Js accredited with three novelties in his dramatic writing: the repetition, Da Capo, of the entire first part of an aria after the second part, of which, how- ever, Some specimens by earlier writers are said to exist ; the accompanied recitative, wherein orchestral interludes illustrate the declamation and figurative accompaniment enforces it, as distinguished from speaking recitative, wherein the accompaniment does little more than indicate the harmony whereon the vocal phrases are constructed ; and the sinfonia or overture which is often associated with his name, as distinguished in plan from that which

was first written by Lully, his being sometimes styled the French and Scarlatti's the Italian form of instrumental preface to an extensive work! Alessandro Scarlatti is little less famous as a teacher than as an artist ; he was at the head of all the three conservatories then flourishing in Naples, and the long list of his pupils includes his son Domenico and most of the other chief Italian notabilities of the next generation. Conspicuous among his contem- poraries were Cavalli and Cesti.

Opera was first introduced in France by Cardinal Maza- French rin, who imported a company of Italian performers for an pera.

occasion. 'he first French opera, Akebar, Row de Mogul (1646), was composed by the abbé Mailly for court per- formance. So was La Pastorale (1659), by Cambert, who built his work on the Florentine model, and,

encouraged by success, wrote several others, on the strength of which he, with his librettist Perrin, instituted the Académie Royale de Musique, and obtained a patent for the same in 1669, exclusively permitting the public performance of opera. Jean Battiste Lully ? (1633-1687) procured the transfer of this patent in 1672, and by it gained oppor- tunity not only for the exercise of his own genius but for the foundation of the French national lyrical drama, which to this day is wrought upon his model.

The ballet had been a favourite subject of court diver- Lully.

sion since Beaujoyeaulx produced in 1581 Le Ballet Comique de la Royne, a medley of dancing, choral singing, and musical dialogue. Lully, in his course to the summit of royal esteem, had composed several pieces of this order, which were performed chiefly by the courtiers, and in which the king himself often sustained a part; and, experienced in the taste of the palace, and indeed of the people, our musician incorporated the ballet as an essential in the opera, and so in France it still remains. It was not singly in the structural intermixture of dancing with singing that Lully's operas were, and those of his French successors are, unlike the works of the same order in other countries, he gave such care to and exerted so much skill in the recitative that he made it as interesting as the rhythmical matter, nay, varied it often with metrical vocal phrases and accompanied it constantly with the full band, whereas, until Rossini's Otello in 1818, speaking recitative (recitativo parlante, recitativo secco) was always a main element in the operas of Italy.

In Germany the seed of opera fell upon stony ground. German Heinrich Schtitz wrote music to a translation of Peri's °Pe!®-

Dafne, which was performed for a court wedding at Torgau in 1627; but only importations of Italian works with Italian singers came before the public until nearly the end of the century.

In England the lyrical drama found an early home, English The masques performed at Whitehall and at the Inns of °Per.

Court were of the nature of opera, and were largely infused with recitative. Eminent among others in their composition were Nicholas Laniere (c. 1588-

1664), born of an Italian father who settled in England in 1571 ; Giovanni Coperario, who during his sojourn in Rome had thus translated his patronymic of John Cooper ; Robert Johnson, who wrote the original music for Zhe Tempest; Dr Cam-

1 The Italian ‘‘sinfonia” mostly begins with an allegro, which is succeeded by a shorter adagio, and ends with a second quick movement that is sometimes the resumption of the first and is sometimes inde- pendent of it, and it is exemplified in the overtures to the Seraglio of Mozart, the Kuryanthe of Weber, and several of Auber. The French “ouverture” (the original form of the word, which still remains in France) generally begins with a majestic movement, which is followed by an allegro, often of a fugal character, and concludes with a march or gavotte or some other description of dance, and it is exemplified in the overtures of Purcell and nearly all of those of Handel.

2 This is the French form of his names Giovanni Battista Lulli, adopted after he was taken from Florence to Paris as a page.

Puritan infin- ence.

Cantata.

pion, Ives, and William and Henry Lawes. The name of Henry Purcell (1658-1695) figures brightly in this class of composition; but, except his Dido and Eneas, written when he was eighteen, his so-called operas are more properly spoken dramas interspersed with music—music of highly dramatic character, but episodical rather than elemental in the design. This is due to an axiom of Dryden, the principal and indeed the model dramatist of the day, that music is not the natural medium of speech, and hence may only be assigned in dramatic representation to preternatural beings, such as spirits, enchanters, and witches,—maniacs also, through the abnormality of their

condition, being admitted into the privileged category of –

those who may sing their conceits, their spells, their charms, and their ravings. The “frost scene” in King Arthur, the “incantation” in the Indian Queen, and the cantatas for Altisidora and Cardenio in Don Quixote are masterpieces of lyrical art that give warrant of the success that might have been achieved had Purcell’s librettists given range in the province of humanity for his vivid imagination.

Earlier in the history of English opera was the pro- duction of The Siege of Rhodes, an entirely musical com- position, the joint work of Dr Charles Colman, Captain Henry Cook, Henry Lawes, and George Hudson, which was performed at Rutland House in Charterhouse Square in 1656, under the express licence of Cromwell to Sir William Davenant, and retained the stage until some years after the Restoration ; the existence of its music is unknown, but a copy of its libretto in the British Museum amply details its construction. Separate mention is made of this remarkable historical incident as serving to refute the common supposition that Puritan influence impelled the decadence of music in England. In truth, this influence stirred the spirit of opposition in persons of a different tendency and was virtually the cause of a very powerful counteraction, and through this of many highly-significant things as to the perpetuation of our music of the past, if not of the continuance of our music in the future. It was during the Commonwealth that John Playford printed Ayres and Dialogues, a book that comprises with many pleasant pieces the first three that ever were defined by the word glee,—a term that later times have wontedly acknowledged and boasted as the designation of a class of music specially English. It was during the Common- wealth that the same publisher issued several editions of The Dancing Master, each being a variation of the fore- going; and this is the work to which we owe the preserva- tion of all the beautiful English ballad-tunes of earlier date that are, many of them, not to be found in previous print or manuscript. It was in that very opera, Zhe Srege of Rhodes, that Mrs Colman, daughter-in-law of one of the composers, sustained the character of Ianthe, she being the first female who ever took part in a public musical or dramatic performance in England.

Notice must not be omitted of the application of recita- tive to other than theatrical purpose. The cantata of Galilei has been cited; it was followed by many a piece under the same designation, dramatic monologues in which

the mainly prevailing declamation was relieved by occa- sional rhythmical strains, and in the composition of these Carissimi, Stradella, Clari, Purcell, and Blow have left admirable specimens. Later, the term acquired a widely-changed meaning, it having been applied in Germany to compositions comprising matter for solo voices and for chorus, expressly for church use, and in England to works equally extensive on sometimes sacred, sometimes secular subjects. Cantatas are sometimes didactic, sometimes narrative, and sometimes dramatic, though never designed for theatrical use.

M User

The music of the English Church might demand a Rpeiy, separate history, because of its importance by the side of the chuc\ art of other lands, because of the longer permanence of «| |

[HISTORY,

its examples thar of works in other branches, and because of its unbroken succession of contributors, covering a period of beyond three centuries, whose style has varied with the age in which they wrought, but who in this department have ever aimed to express themselves at their highest, Here, however, only the names of the most noted wniters, with an approximation to chronological order, can be given —Tallis, Byrde, Farrant, Orlando Gibbons, Dr Child, Dr Benjamin Rogers, Dean Aldrich (as distinguished in logic and in architecture as in music), Dr Blow, Michael Wise, Pelham Humphrey, Henry Purcell, Dr Croft, Dr Greene, Dr Boyce, Dr Nares, Dr Cooke, Battishill, after whom the art sank in character till it received new life from the in- fusion of the modern element by Attwood, coeval with whom was Samuel Wesley, and lastly are to be noted Sir John Goss, Dr 8S. S. Wesley, Dr Dykes (popular for his hymn- tunes), and Henry Smart, who bring the list down to recent personal remembrance. Well esteemed among living re- presentatives of this department of music are Barnby, J. B. Calkin, Sir G. J. Elvey, Gadsby, Dr Garrett, Dr Gladstone, Dr H. Hiles, Dr Hopkins, Dr E. G. Monk, Dr W. H. Monk, Sir F. A. G. Ouseley, Dr Stainer, Dr Steggall, Sir Arthur Sullivan, and E. H. Turpin, to which names many might be added. It must be owned, however, that the vast increase of facilities for publication within recent years have multi- plied church music almost immeasurably, and exercised the pens more than the wits of writers who

prove themselves to be amateurs less by love of music than by love of composing, and still more by love of notoriety, which is gratified in the circulation among their own connexions of works that gain no acceptance by the world at large. The style, in strictly technical sense, of music for the church is and always has been, in England and elsewhere, identical with that which characterizes contemporaneous music on lay subjects. Some English musicians have of late aimed at, or perhaps only spoken of, a distinction of styles for the church and for the chamber, and this under a supposition that to be archaic was to be sacred, a supposition seemingly founded on the present use of, and high respect for, more ecclesiastical music of early date than of secular music of like age. The supposition overlooks the facts, however, that the church appropriated the tunes of the people eight hundred years ago, while the people framed some of their tunes on the peculiar church modes, that harmony was practised by the people before it was employed by the church, that the style of madrigals appears coincidently in sacred writing, that recitative was first applied to the opera and to the oratorio in the same year, that Monteverde's innovations in musical combination were at once adopted by church composers, that Purcell, Handel, and Bach wrote in onefold style for both situations, that the glee-writing of the latter half of the 18th century is undistinguishable from the services and anthems of the period, that Attwood had no different phraseology for the cathedral and the theatre, and that even now, though disguised to the glance by the antiquated notation of minims instead of crotchets, the thoughts expressed and the idiom which is their medium belong not more or less to the one than to the other purpose. Though contention be strong for the contrary, this is true art, presenting the feelings of the time in the time's own language and not making the sanctuary walls a boundary between art and artifice.

Attention must now be directed to the natural as a el ,

opposed to the artificial basis of music. Marin Mersenn had great love and much practical knowledge of music; he directed his profound learning and rare mathematical attai- ments to the investigation of the phenomena of sound; and

HISTORY. |

his treatise Harmonie Universelle (1636) first enunciated the fact that a string yields other notes than that to which its entire length is tuned. The discovery was extended by William Noble and Thomas Pigot, respectively of Merton and Wadham Colleges, Oxford, to the perception of the mode in which a string vibrates in sections, each section sounding a different note. The ancient musicians tested by calculation the few phenomena of sound then discovered rather than by observation of the principles these exemplify. The measurement of major and minor tones was, after the distinction of perfect intervals, the subject dearest to their consideration, and it seems the furthest limit to which their knowledge attained. All the laws for melody, all the rules for counterpoint, werefounded on this mathematical method. The step or the leap of stated intervals was prescribed ; combinations of sounds were reckoned by intervals from a named note, as 5th, or 6th, or 3d, not as constituting com- plete chords traceable to a common source, and intervals which are discordant were permissible only if softened in effect by the previous sounding of their discordant note ; the canons for the progression of a single part and for the union of several parts were arbitrarily devised, peremptorily fixed, and rigidly enforced. Mouton and Monteverde found the good effect of musical combinations for which there was no account in the theory of their time, and employed them in their works ; the innovation was stigmatized by musical grammarians, but it gave delight to the public and was adopted by subsequent composers. No explanation was, however, given of the natural source of fundamental har- monies, as chords of this class are now defined, and their employment was still exceptional, still an act of daring. In 1673 the two Oxonians above named, simultaneously, but independently, noticed the beautiful fact that a stretched string yields a different sound at every one of its nodal divisions, and the same is true of a column of air passing through a tube. The sounds so generated received from

Sauveur! the name of harmonics, by which they were known for nearly two centuries, but they have of late been renamed partial tones or over-tones.” of the series :—

Here is a table of seventeen

The figures under the notes show the number of each harmonic, counting from the generator or prime as the Ist. The notes marked * differ in intonation from the corresponding notes in our tempered scale, the 7th and 14th, and also the 13th, and likewise the 17th being slightly flatter, and the 11th being slightly sharper than our con- ventional notes; but the matter of temperament must rest for later consideration. The 8th above any note is double the number of that note; thus every higher C is double the number of the C below it, namely, 1, 2, 4, 8, 16; and so with every higher G, namely, 3, 6, 12; again

the Fleming and the Italian with such good effect that the world accepted it under the conditions of accompani- ment with which those men employed it, and felt that a new element of beauty had been incorporated in the re- sources of the artist. The occurrence, in the harmonic series, of the two notes that are separated by this interval accounts for the discord they produce when sounded together, not needing the artifice of preparation which is required to mitigate the harshness of other discords ; they are brought into being when the generator is sounded, and their assign- ment to voices or instruments in performance is but to make more articulate, or, so to speak, to confirm what nature prepares—in fact, what is induced by the generator. As light comprises all the colours and every gradation between each colour and the next, but yet seems spotless, so every musical sound comprises all other sounds, but yet seems to be one single note; the blue, or the red, or the yellow, or any other ray is separated from its prismatic brotherhood and seems then a complete and independent object to the vision, and so any sound is separated from the harmonic column and then seems all in all to the sense of hearing. Let the reader observe in the musical example that the intervals become closer and closer as they rise, and that when the 8th or double of a note occurs, if there be any break in the numerical succession between such 8th and the note that would, by example of the lower octave, stand next below it, then some new harmonic appears whose number adjusts the broken order; between the lowest C and the next is no break; between this C and the one above it, 2 and 4, what would else

be a blank is filled by G, the third harmonic; between 4 © and 6 (G) what would be a blank is filled by E, the fifth harmonic, and so on throughout the series. No division of an interval is ever equal, the lower portion being always the larger ; the interval between 2 and 4 is divided into a 5th and a 4th, that between 4 and 6 is divided into a major 3d and a minor, that between 6 and 8 by an interval less than a minor 3d and a 2d, and that between 8 and 10 by a major tone and a minor tone. It may be well to pause at this point, as it is the natural justification of what Ptolemy calculated, but Pythagoras failed to perceive. Thus much having been noticed, readers may be left to trace the same principle of larger and smaller division throughout the series. Beyond the 17th harmonic (the note known as the minor 9th when forming part of a chord) the series continues on the same principle of ever lessening distance, ever finer gradation, until the intervals become so small as to be almost impossible of articulation and of perception. What has here been adduced of the natural preparation of the discord of the harmonic 7th applies as truly to the discords of the major 9th, the 11th, the major 13th, the minor 9th, and the minor 13th, which last is too high in the harmonic series for convenient exemplification by gradual ascent in this place, and these notes are now all used in combination by composers.

Scientific discovery has seldom been made singly. When Art the

with : i i Se higher E, namely, 5, 10; and with the higher time has been ripe for the revelation of a phenomenon, Precur-

DB, namely, 7, 14. The number of each harmonic is the sor of

same as that of its relative number of vibrations in any given time as compared with those of the variously- numbered harmonics, namely, the 8th above has two vibrations to each one of the note from which the interval 1s reckoned, the 5th has three vibrations to two, and so forth throughout the series. From bB to E, the 7th and 10th, is the interval of the augmented 4th, which was shunned in classic times, ignored by the Chinese, the Mexicans, and the Scots, ruled against by contrapuntists, and avoided in melody and harmony until employed by ee. 8

‘ See Poggendorff, Geschichte d. Physik, p. 808. See Helmholtz, Die Lehre von den Tonempfindungen.

several observers have coincidently witnessed its existence, and simultaneously or nearly so displayed if not explained it to the world. In the instance under consideration, art foreran science, and its votaries continued the employment of harmonies which as yet could alone be justified by their beautiful effect, and even musical theorists did not for ages to come perceive the important, the all-powerful bearing of the principle of harmonics upon the subject they treated. What Mouton first ventured to write must be styled the starting-point of the modern in music, and one cannot too much marvel at the strong insight into the beautiful which those after-minds possessed,—that, with no theory to guide, without star or compass, they XVII. — 12

Purcell.

Handel.

90

made wider and wider application of the principle he had exemplified, and displayed in their works its utmost power of expansion. ‘Three of the world’s greatest musicians may be cited to show the force owned by genius of piercing to the utmost depth of a natural law, while having but their own delicate sense of propriety to restrain them within its bounds. Henry Purcell and his two colossal successors, George Frederic Handel (1685-1759) and Johann Sebastian Bach (1685-1750), wrote every combination of musical notes that down to our own latest times has ever been employed with good effect ; and the more the works of these masters are studied the more are they found to foreshadow the supposed novelties in harmony employed by subsequent artists. Thisrefers but to the technical imaterials of which their music is wrought; it is impossible in the present article to discuss fully the form and excellence of their works.

Purcell’s voluminous and superb works for the church, his many compositions for the theatre, his countless con- vivial pieces, and his far less numerous instrumental writ- ings are now but little known, and the ignorance of the age is its loss. They have a wealth of expression that cannot be too highly esteemed, and a fluency of melody that proves the perfect ease of their production. The idiom of the period in which they were

written is perhaps a par- tial barrier to their present acceptance, and the different capabilities of instruments and of executants upon them of those days from the means at a modern musician's com- mand make the music written in the earlier age difficult sometimes to the verge of possibility, and yet weak in effect upon ears accustomed to later uses.1

Handel's music has never, since he wrote, been wholly unknown or unloved, at least in England. He was engaged to come hither as a dramatic composer because of his Con- tinental renown; this was immensely increased by the large number of Italian operas he wrote for the London stage, but, excellent of their kind as are these, the change of structure in the modern lyrical drama unfits the wonted witnesses of the works of the last hundred years to enjoy the com- plete performance of those of earher time, and hence we hear but detached excerpts from any of them. – It is upon Handel's oratorios and his secular works cast in the same mould that general knowledge of his mighty power rests, and these are a monument that cannot perish. The Messiah and Israel in Egypt are didactic oratorios, with which may be classed L' Allegro, al Penseroso, ed ul Mo- derato, and Alexander's Feast. The others were defined by himself each as an 'oratorio or sacred drama," and Acis and Galatea, Semele, and ITercules are similarly con- structed. Esther (his earliest English oratorio) and Acts and Galatea were composed for performance in the mansion of the duke of Chandos in 1720 and 1721, and were publicly produced with the author's sanction in 1732, but then, as was expressly notified, without dramatic action. Their success established the class of work and form of representation in Enghsh use, for, though Handel subse- quently wrote Itahan operas, he from time to time engaged a theatre for the performance of complete works in concert wise, and yearly composed some new piece for production in this manner. In 1741 he visited Dublin, taking the Messiah, which had been written with a view to the occa-

1 Here must be defined the chromatic genus in its modern applica- tion, which is signally exemplified in this master's music; it admits of notes foreign to the signature of the key, but which induce no modu- lation, or, in other words, change of tonality. Notes expressible only by accidentals are as essential to the chromatic scale of any prevailing kcy as are those elemental in the diatonic scale which are indicated by the key-signature. Chromatic

chords were used by Purcell and his nearest followers, chromatic passing-notes (notes that form no portion of chords) came little into use until after the middle of the 18th century.

MU Ss b €

[HISToRY,

sion, and this masterpiece was first heard on the 13th April 1742 in the Irish capital. The reverence with which the work is regarded in England all but equals that for its subject, and the countless repetitions of its performance have made.it so familar to all hearers that the unversed in musical knowledge, little less than the profoundest musicians, feel its sublimity and listen to it with such awe as no other work of art induces. No master has ever excelled Handel in verbal declamation (as at the descent on the last word of ‘‘sheds delicious death” in the air of Acis,-at that on the last word of “so mean a triumph I disdain” in the air of Harapha, and the extraordinary use of an almost toneless low note of the tenor voice on the last word of ‘‘He turned their waters into blood” in Israel in Egypt), in poetic expression (as in the choruses ‘“ He sent a.thick darkness” in Jsrael, and “Wretched lovers” in Acis and Galatea), or in dramatic

characterization (as in all the personages in Jephtha, who

are each distinguished from the others far better in their musical than their verbal phraseology) ; but the quality in his music which compels the epithet sublime is the broad, simple grandeur of the choral writing, which, rich in the

devices of counterpoint, never fails in clearness, never in .

the melodious flow of each of its parts, and is hence as

pleasant to executants as it is perspicuous to auditors. He

wrote under the sway of contrapuntal law, from which theorists had not yet defined the exceptions, but the force of his genius broke occasionally through its despotism, and

so, in his works as in Purcell’s, the principle of fundamen-

tal harmony and the application of the chromatic element are freely demonstrated.*

Bach was one of a very large family of musicians, who Bach. |

for two centuries practised the art, in many instances with great success; the family glory culminated in him, and was scattered among his many sons, in whom it became ex- tinct. Bach was a more assiduous student than either his predecessor or his contemporary who are here classed with him. It was later in life than they that he issued his earhest works, for his youthful renown was more as a player than as a producer. Having no theoretical instructor, he made searching study of all the music of earlier times and of his own.? Whatever Bach learned of the principles of counter-

2 A custom of the age is largely and, we now feel, sadly exempli- fied in Handel’s art legacies, namely, the writing in. many instances but an outline of the score which was to be filled up extemporaneously by a player on the organ or harpsichord with counterpoint that is necessary to the effect, and even essential to the idea. So long as the composer lived to make these improvisations, we know they added interest and we doubt not they added beauty to the music; but after- organists lack the ability or courage or both to supply the deficiency. Mendelssohn wrote for Zsrae/ such an organ part as he would have played in the performance of the oratorio, diffidently deliberating on what originally was trustcd to the fortune of the moment, and the like has rarely been done by other musicians for other works. Mozart wrote for the Messiah, Acis, Alexander’s Feast, and the Ode for St Cecilia’s Day wind-instrument parts comprising such matter as might have been played on the organ had one been in the hall wherein these pieces were first performed in. Vienna; but they modernize the char- acter and often alter the idea, while they complete and perhaps adorn the music. That these parts exist, and that their merit induces their adoption when the works are performed, have been a licence for the production of ‘‘ additional accompaniments” to many 4 masterpiece of Handel, when such genius as Mozart had has not inspired the writer. The former custom and the later licence are both to be deplored, particularly in our age, when with regard to

other arts the aim prevails to purify the works of older time from additions by strange hands that have accumulated to disfigure them.

3 Among the masters from whose example he deduced his own principles, some of the most famous are Girolamo Frescobaldi of Fer- rara (c. 1587), his pupil Johann Caspar Kerl (1628-1693), Dietrich Buxtehude (1637-1707), Johann Jacob Froberger, another pupil of Frescobaldi (0b. 1667), Georg Muffat (0b. 1704), whose son was even. more prolific and perhaps more noted than he, Johann Pachelbel, Georg Boehm, and most probably Johann Joseph Fux (1660-1741), whose work on counterpoint, Gradus ad Parnassum, was the text-book by which both Haydn and Mozart taught, and is still held in high respect.

point from profounder musicians, he owed his views of plan or design in the structure of a composition to his fami- _ liarity with the concertos of Antonio Vivaldi and Tomaso Albinoni, both Venetian violinists who visited Germany, and he gained this familiarity by arranging for the organ many of the concertos for several instruments, as also much that the same authors wrote for a single violin. His arrangement consisted in adding parts to the original, which he kept intact, and so retained the plan while en- riching the harmony. To his latest days he was wont to retouch his own music of former years, doubtless with the purpose of improvement, and he thus showed himself to be still a student to the very end of his career. A class of oratorio of which Luther had planted the earliest germ, the recitation of the Divine Passion, had grown into extensive use in North Germany prior to the period of Bach, and to this belongs his largest if not most important work. This is his setting of the portion of St Matthew’s Gospel which narrates the incidents, interspersed with re- flective passages, some taken from the chorals of .common use in the Lutheran and Calvinistic churches (the tunes proper to which have special harmonic treatment when ’ here appropriated), and some set in the form of airs, duets, and choruses to verses written for the occasion. Bach set also St ~~John’s version of the Passion, and others. He wrote likewise for church use cantatas peculiar to every Sunday’s requirement in the Lutheran service, and left five series of these, each for an entire year. He produced other sacred and many secular cantatas, a mass of~~

~~such colossal proportions that it is unavailable for the purpose of celebration, other pieces for the Roman Church, very much for the organ alone that has never been equalled in its intrinsic qualities or as a vehicle for executive display, many concertos and suites for the orchestra of the day, and a vast number of pieces for the harpsichord or clavecin. Among these last must be signalized Das wohltemperirte Clavier (1722), and a sequel to the same, XXIV. Pre~~ ludien und Fugen durch allen Tonarten, sowohl mut der grossen als kleinen Terz (1740).1 These two distinct works are now commonly classed together as Yorty-eight Preludes er- and Fugues. To describe their purpose reference must be made to the discrepancies between the tuning of intervals by 3ds, or by 8ths, or by 5ths. The Bg, which is reached by successive 3ds above C, has 250 vibrations in the same period that the C, which is reached by 8ths from the same starting note, has 256, and in the same period that the B4, which is reached by 5ths from the original C, has 259 and a fraction. The same is true of every other musical sound as of C, namely, that tuning by 3ds, or 8ths, or Dths, yields a different note from the other two. Hence. it results that notes which are in tune in one key are out of tune in other keys, and consequently musical composition was of old limited to those very few keys that have several notes in common with the key of C.2 The organ Handel presented to the chapel of the Foundling Hospital, London, had the raised or black keys divided, with each half to act On pipes different from the other half, and thus gave different notes: for C# and for Db, and the like; and other organs of the period were similarly constructed. Bach's Notion was so to temper the intonation that, while the tuning of no key-should be perfect, the discrepancies should be divided so nicely between all keys that no one would be Offensive to the hearer, and to illustrate this he wrote in his 38th year a series of pieces in every one of the keys Mm its major and minor form, calling it "The clavier with equal temperament." This bears on a supposition, once

RS : Supposed by some to have been completed in 1744. It is supposed that early organs were tuned with true 3ds and od 5ths (the ''mean tone" system of Zarlino and Salinas), and Mersenne enunciates, though obscurely, a rule for this division.

iM Wess k ©

oil

diffidently advanced and since confirmed by men who have soundly studied the subject, as much as by constant observa- tion of him who first conceived it, although disputed by others ; it is, that the ear receives tempered sounds as they should be, instead of as they are, perceiving a different effect from the note whose tonal surroundings prove it to be Gb from that which is yielded by the same string on a pianoforte when it is required to represent Fg. Such is the practical application in modern use of the term enharmonic with reference to keyed instruments when it means the giving different names to one note ; on the voice, however, and on bowed instruments the smallest gradations of pitch are producible, and so all notes in all keys can be justly tuned, which, among others, is one reason for the exceptional delight given by music that is represented by either of these means. The enharmonic organ and _har- monium of Mr Bosanquet are provided with a keyboard of a general nature in which the restriction to closed circles of 5ths is avoided. Systems reducible to series of 5ths of any character can therefore be placed on this keyboard. As the relative position of the keys determines the arrange- ment of the notes, the fingering is the same in all keys, and depends only on the intervals employed. The modern use of the word chromatic has already been stated, and it only remains to say of the other of the three Greek genera,

Enhar- monics.

diatonic, that the term now defines music consisting of Diatonic.

notes according to the signature of the prevailing key.* To return to Bach, his orchestration is completer than Handel’s, though yet needing the addition of an organ part that he did not write, but his scores are liable to misrepresentation in modern performance because several of the instruments are obsolete for which they were designed ; Bach’s orches- tral treatment differs from that of later days in having often a special selection of instruments for a single move- ment in a work, which are engaged throughout that piece with small variety of interchange, and likewise in having mostly the separate counterpoint for every instrument employed instead of combining instruments of different tone in one melody. But seldom Bach wrote in one or other of the ecclesiastical modes, as did

Handel more rarely, and he used more freely than his contemporary the extreme chromatic discords. He may indeed be regarded as a double mirror, reflecting the past in his contrapuntal writing and forecasting the future in his anticipation of modern harmonies.

Notice of these two extraordinary men would be incom- plete without an attempt to parallel if not compare them. Born within a month and within walking distance of each other, speaking the same tongue, professing the same religious tenets, devoting themselves to the same art and to the same productive and executive branches of that art with success that cannot be surpassed, they were as different in the character of their works as in their personal traits and their courses of life. The music of Handel for its simple, massive, perspicuous grandeur may be likened to a Grecian temple, and that of Bach to a Gothic edifice for its infinite involution of lines and intricacy of detail. The greater complexity of the one makes it the more diffi- cult of comprehension and more slow in impression, while the sublime majesty of the other displays itself to a single glance and is printed at once on the mental vision. Handel wrote for effect and produces it with certitude upon thousands ; Bach wrote as a pleasurable exercise for mastery, and gives kindred pleasure to those who study his work in the spirit that incited him to produce it.

Contemporary with the working of these two glorious Rameau.

Saxons were the labours of Jean Philippe Rameau (1683- SESE OS semi dadheiemmbadlal Rabbis ieee Sa

3 Some theorists use the generic terms in limited sense :—diatonic, proceeding by 2ds; chromatic, proceeding by semitones ; enharmonic, changing the name of a note. ‘

Chord of

the 11th.

Chord of the add- ed 6th.

Marcello.

1764), a native of Dijon, who made his mark on history. He wrote many operas and ballets which are held in less esteem than those of Lully, some cantatas and sacred pieces, and a large number of compositions for the organ and clavecin, but, notwithstanding the merit of these and their success, it is more as a theorist than as an artist that he is now regarded. He published several treatises, embracing principles of performance as well as rules of harmony and a system of composition, and the original views these enunciate have obtained high regard. He distinguishes what he styles the "basse continue" from what he names the "basse fondamentale" in tracing inverted chords to their roots, and differs in this from writers on counter-point who treated only of intervals from each actual bass note. Thus he looked in the direction of later theories of fundamental harmony, but scarcely obtained sight of the object. He speaks of a chord of the 11th apart from the suspension of the 4th; but his examples show this to be the double suspension of the 9th and 4th, to be resolved on the root and minor 3d of a chord of the prepared 7th, which further has to be resolved on a chord whose root stands at a 4th

above its own, We =a Steg Sea eS]

and so this chord, oe having nothing ee ee a exceptional in sae ee ee ee

structure or treat-

ment, needs no distinctive title. Another point is indeed original, and has obtained somewhat wide acceptance ; this is his theory of the chord he defines as the "great 6th," which is named the "added 6th" by his English followers. It consists of a common chord (usually of the subdominant) with a 6th added, and its resolution is on the chord whose root is at a 4th below that of the discord, the 5th in the former chord being retained as the root in the latter.

ee

Against this view it may be urged that all harmonic in- tervals are at uneven numbers from the generator, the even numbers standing for the octaves

above any of these, as

: – re or else for their inversions, as § : _ and hence

the 6th (D in the above example) is not an original but an inverted interval ; further, whatever note may be added in a column of harmony does not affect the concordance or discordance of the notes below it, but is itself the dis- cordant element in the chord, whereas the addition of the 6th to a common chord changes its concordant 5ths into a discord, and therefore the 6th must be otherwise traced. Other theorists have, more in the direction of truth, defined this chord as a first inversion, reckoning the 6th from the bass as the inverted root, but giving no account of its exceptional resolution. It was not till the following cen- tury that the theory for this chord was propounded with the seeming of truth, showing that the 7th below its given bass (G under the F in the above) is the real generator, and showing this to be an incomplete inversion of the chord of the 11th, of which Rameau invented but mis- applied the name. The subject will be more fully discussed when the period is treated to which this last theory belongs.

Benedetto Marcello (1686-1739) was a Venetian of wealthy parentage. He was pressed by his father into the pursuit of the law, and held lucrative appointments in his profession, but his love was for music, and in music he has some renown, partly for his compositions, the best known of which are the settings for one or more voices of fifty of the Psalms in an Italian version, and partly for his writ- ings on music, especially a satirical pamphlet, J7 Teatro alla moda (1720), as remarkable for the justice with which

”

it censures the corruptions that cankered dramatic art as for its humour. ‘This treatise quotes the principles of the Florentine assumed musical revival in 1600, and is regarded as the precursor of the practical reform effected by Gluck, —

The renowned Jean Jacques Rousseau (1712-1778) is Roy. often accredited as a musical theorist because of his severa]sem, ~ publications on the subject, especially his Dictionnaire de Musique, which was finished in

1764, licensed in 1765, but not published till 1768. Its repute must have been gained – by the grace of his language rather than by the soundness of his views, which are elegantly stated but rarely stable when they look to either side of the beaten track of accepted principles. He wrote violently against French music and the French language as a musical medium, being promi- | nent in the literary disputes known as, the “Guerre des Bouffons,” but recanted when Gluck’s genius was exercised on French opera. Rousseau produced some slight musical dramas, but proof has been adduced that they were the works of other hands.]

Padre Martini (1706-1784) worked to far higher purpose Marta, than the last named, and the deeper impression he made on music is due to the depth of his knowledge. He was a mathematician and a scholar in other branches of learn- ing, all of which he brought to bear upon his musical studies. He composed for the church and for the theatre vocal and instrumental chamber music, and pieces for the organ. He enunciated no new theory, but rendered great service by the collected publication of many art rarities exemplifying the musicianship of earlier times, and proving his ability to estimate their merit by the inclusion of a | large number of canons of his own, which latter are pre- sented in the enigmatic form of ancient use wherein the primary part or parts alone are given, and the reader has to discover the canon that fixes the period and the interval at which the response is toenter. He issued at different dates three volumes of a History of Music, and did not live tocom- plete the fourth, which would have brought the subject only down to the Middle Ages. He was revered by the musicians of all lands, and he is honoured by those of our own time for the penetration with which he discovered the excellence of the boy Mozart, and the encouragement that aided largely to confirm the self-reliance of this everlasting prodigy.

German opera owes its birth to Reinhard Keiser of of Weissenfels (1673-1739). His first dramatic effort, Jsmene, Ee | was produced at the court of Brunswick. Success induced prop, him. to further exertion in the same field, and its con- — tinuance enabled him to undertake the management of the Hamburg theatre, in which, between 1694 and 1734, he produced 116 operas. Even these were but a portion of his works, for he wrote several dramatic oratorios, and made more than one setting of Zhe Passion, which last preceded the compositions of the class by Handel and Bach. Little of

his music survived him, but his influence on the art of his country was enduring. Matthison dis- tinguished himself in Keiser's theatre, which also was the scene of the young Handel's first dramatic essays. Karl Heinrich Graun, a singer, and Johann Friedrich Agricola belong to the next generation of writers of German opera, both of whom won large renown.

It is now time to revert to dramatic music in Italy. Prost Giovanni Battista Buononcini (1672-1750) and his brother 4 * Mare Antonio were famed in and out of their own ; country. They both visited London, where the former opposed Handel, and the rivalry between the Italian and the German musician is notable in the history of the time. Nicola Antonio Porpora (1686-1767) owes his fame more to the success of his pupils in singing, of whom Farinelli and Caffarelli were the most distinguished, than to the merit of his numerous compositions. Leonardo Leo

operas, except the first, to Italian words for Italian singers,

and may therefore be best classed among the composers of

that country, where also he received his musical education. His excellence as a tenor singer, his skill as a clavecinist,

and his marriage to Faustina Bordogni, the renowned

vocalist, all helped to bring him and his music into note. His remark, when at the age of eighty he superintended the production of his last opera at Milan coincidently with Mozart's bringing out of his Ascanio in Alba when fourteen years old, that "this youngster will surpass us all," says as much for his penetration as for the diffidence of one who had passed a long life with success. Giovanni Battista Gesi (1710-1736), being born at Pergola, was called by his schoolmates Il Pergolese, and is known by all the world under this instead of his family name. Little acknow- ledged while he lived, he accomplished during his almost momentary career such work as places his name among those of the most famous of his countrymen. His comic opera La Serva Padrona, little noticed when first given in Naples, had such success when reproduced in Paris that it was shortly afterwards played in

every country in Europe. If this piece did not initiate it confirmed the application of music as much to subjects of real as of heroic life, and therefore, though slight in structure and brief in extent, it is historically conspicuous. This and his setting of the Stabat Mater for female voices, which occupied him during his last illness, are the compositions by which he is best remembered. Nicolo Jomelli (1714-1774) was born and died in the Neapolitan territory ; he pro- duced many operas in Naples, several in. Rome, Bologna, and Venice, and he held for fifteen years an engagement in Stuttgart, where his genius was active ; he is particularly esteemed for his expression of sentiment, in which quality some of his critics account him the forerunner of Mozart ; much as he wrote for the stage, his predilection was for church music, but the amount of his erudition or his power to apply it scarcely justified this preference. This com- poser may close the present list, as being the first to break through the example of Alessandro Scarlatti, and to write airs without the ““Da Capo” which general approval of that example had rendered conventional if not indispensable. The plan claims respect as proving and fulfilling design, but it is inconsistent with truthful treatment of a subject which naturally proceeds in a continuous course and does not admit of the plenary recapitulation of feeling that has already been developed after this has passed into a different direction ; as a matter of effect, the “Da Capo” is rarely charming and often tedious, it is less inappropriate in instrumental than vocal music, and even there some modified allusion to previously stated ideas is far more interesting than the unqualified restatement of what has already been set forth. One characteristic must be named that marks the whole period under present survey—the subordination of dramatic propriety to the display of vocal specialities ; these were classified in distinct orders, and custom became tyrannic in exacting that every singer in an opera should have an aria of each class, and that the story must be so conducted as to admit of their timely or untimely introduction. The entire action of the Italian opera of the period is conducted in

spoken recitative, with few exceptions of accompanied reci- tative in the most impassioned situations, and the arias or thythmical portions of the work are episodical, being The volu-

expatiative or reflective on the circumstances. bility that then was esteemed the main, if not the highest,

MUSIC

(1694-1746) wrote largely for the stage, but is most prized for his church music, which is of a character so different from his other productions that he is entitled to the twofold estimation of being a light and a severe com- poser. Johann Adolph Hasse (1699-1783), though born in the neighbourhood of Hamburg, wrote all his many

oe

qualification of a vocalist had its imperative exercise in all works for the stage, and the original purpose of dramatic music was thus foiled in making the business of the scene to wait upon the exhibition of the representative.

Tnstrumental music now began to assume the importance which at present it holds by universal suffrage. Composi- tions for the organ by Italian and German masters had been numerous, but executancy on bowed instruments was little advanced, and music written for them was accord- ingly limited in its style and construction. Vivaldi has been named as a pioneer in the art of design, and to the precedent set by him must be attributed the power of unfolding and arranging musical thought which gives to the orchestral and chamber works of after time a supreme position as intellectual and imaginative exercises. Ae name of Arcangelo Corelli (1653-1713) figures prominently Corelli. in the annals of violin playing, but, whatever the merit of his tone and his style, he employed but.a limited portion of his instrument’s compass; and this is proved by his writ- ings, wherein the parts for the violin never proceed above D on the first string, the highest note in the third position ; it is even said that he refused to play, as im- possible, a passage which extended to A in altissimo in the overture to Handel’s Zrionfo del Tempo, and took serious offence when the composer played the note in evidence of its practicability. His compositions are still highly esteemed ; they consist of concertos—a term which at the time defined concerted pieces for a band, not, as now, pieces for a solo player with orchestral accompani- ment——and sonatas, some for one, some for two violins with a bass; they are melodious, but their harmony is not always

pure, and, strange to say, though they were written in Italy, where the laws of rhythm and accent were first established, these are slighted in the music; indeed, the longevity of Corelli's works must be due to some other cause than their merit.

Giuseppe Tartini (1692-1770) greatly advanced the Tartini. art of the violinist, as is testified by his compositions for the instrument and his treatise on its capabilities, and is further proved by the eminence of many of his pupils. Tartini contributed to science as well as to art in his discovery (1714) of "resultant tones," often called "Tartini's tones," and yet some writers ascribe the first perception of the phenomenon to Storge, a German, who described it sixteen years later. The phenomenon is this :— when any two notes are produced steadily and with great intensity, a third note is heard, whose vibration nuniber is the difference of those of the two primary notes. It follows from this that any two consecutive members of a harmonic series have the fundamental of that series for

their difference tone—thus, je the fourth and fifth harmonic, produce C, the prime or generator, at the interval of two octaves under the lower of those two notes; 4 the third

and fifth harmonic, produce C, the second harmonic, at the interval of a Sth under the lower of those two notes. The discoverer was wont to tell his pupils that their double- stopping was not in tune unless they could hear the third note ; and our own distinguished player and teacher Henry Blagrove (1811-1872) gave the same admonition. The phenomenon has other than technical significance ; an ex- periment by the Rev. Sir F. A. G. Ouseley showed that two pipes, tuned by measurement to so acute a pitch as to render the notes of both inaudible by human ears, when blown together produce the difference tone of the inaudible primaries, and this verifies the fact of the infinite upward range of sound which transcends the perceptive power of human organs. The obverse of this fact is that of any sound being deepened by an 8th if the length of the strmg

Piano- forte.

Drama- tie con- certed music.

or pipe which produces it be doubled. The law is without exception throughout the compass in which our ears can distinguish pitch, and so, of necessity, a string of twice the length of that whose vibrations induce the deepest perceiv- able sound must stir the air at such a rate as to cause a tone at an 8th below that lowest audible note. It is hence manifest that, however limited our sense of the range of musical sound, this range extends upward and downward to infinity.

The pianoforte owes its invention to the period now under review. This instrument may be styled the voice of the musician, the only means whereby unaided he can give complete utterance to his thoughts, the only vehicle for the communication of musical ideas in their entirety. This is not said in depreciation of other in- struments of various excellence which have qualities im- possible to the pianoforte, but has reference to the totality of musical speech that is possible, and to the convenience with which this is produced on the instrument in question. The characteristic difference between this instrument and earlier ones of a similar class is that the strings of the pianoforte are struck by hammers impelled by the keys under the performer’s finger, and yield louder or softer tone according to the force he uses, whereas its prede- cessors yielded variety of loudness only by mechanical instead of personal means, and hence were not the living exponents as it is of the executant’s impulse. Whether one speak of the happiness kindled in the homestead by this most facile and most self-sufficient instrument, or of the fuel of such happiness, namely, the measure-less amount of music of every style and quality that has been written for the pianoforte, its existence is to be accounted as an influence all but infinite upon society as much as upon art. The term “pian e forte” is applied to a musical instrument by Paliarino or Pagliarini, a manufacturer of Modena, in 1598, but no particulars have reached us of its structure or effect. Some instru- ments which foreshadow the chief essentials of the modern pianoforte, made by Bartolomeo Cristofori, a Paduan then working in Florence, are described in letters of 1709, and must have been made some years earlier, and pianofortes by this ingenious inventor still exist bearing date 1720 and 1726. Marius, a Frenchman, submitted plans for an instrument with hammer action to the Académie Royale des Sciences in

1716, and Schroter, a German, claimed to have devised two models in 1717 and 1721; but the first pianofortes made away from Italy were by Gottfried Silbermann in 1726, who worked from the designs of Cristofori.

Let us now revert to the opera, in which vast modifica- tions were germinated towards the middle of the 18th century, and ripened before its close into noble maturity. Allusion has been made in the notice of Pergolese to the appropriation of the lyric element to comic subjects. At first wholly unregarded as a sphere for art uses, then admitted for interludial purposes in a fabrication styled untermezzo that was played between the acts of a serious composition, comedy became in course of time the basis of the most highly important, because the most comprehensive and truly the grandest, and further because the most especially musical, application of the art to dramatic ends. The class of writing here to be considered is that struc- ture of concerted vocal music through which a continuous action proceeds, involving the embodiment of the charac- teristics of the several persons concerned, with their opposi- tion and combination. Handel had been remarkably happy in uniting in one piece the utterances of three, four, and

1 These dates have been gathered and verified by Mr A. J. Hipkins,

to whose exhaustive papers on this class of instruments and their best esteemed makers readers are referred. See also PIANOFORTE,

MUSIC

| HISTORY,

even five distinct persons ; he did not, however, make these several individualities interchange speech in dialogue, but caused them to sing, as it were, somany monologues at once, each independent of the others, and Handel was not singular in his occasional practice though he was in his excellence, Nicolo Logroscino (1700-1763), a Neapolitan, who never would write but to the dialect of his own country, was so exclusively comic and so surpassingly successful as to gain the cognomen of “Tl Dio dell’ opera buffa.” It was he who first enchained a series of pieces (technically styled movements) in unbroken sequence, during which different persons entered or left the scene, discoursed in amity or disputation, or united either in the

outpouring of a common sentiment or in the declaration of their various passions. For some time this form of lyrical dramatic art was only applied to comic subjects; Paesiello is said to have been the first musician who introduced its use into serious opera; it reached perfection under the masterly, magical, nay, superhuman touch of Mozart, whose two finales in Figaro and two in Don Giovanni are models which should be the wonder of all time~and yet can never be approached. The spoken drama is limited to the onefold utterance of a single person, for, however rapid the colloquy, if any two spoke together, each would eclipse the other's voice—retort may be instantaneous, but cannot be simultaneous. In a painting the different char- acters and emotions of the persons presented are shown at once, but, as if under the glance of Medusa, they are fixed for ever in one attitude with one expression. In an opera finale the manifold passions of as many human beings, vivified by the voices of the same number of singers, come at once on our hearing with prolonged manifestation, and this is the wielding of a power that is not in the capability of any other of the fine arts.

Christoph Willibald Gluck (1714-1787) was a Bohemian Gluck.

by birth, and a wanderer by habit. He was a grand reformer, or rather restorer, of dramatico-musical art, yes, and a prophet, for he not only revived the principles enunciated in Florence on the threshold of the 17th century, which had been superseded by the vocalisms that had usurped the throne of truth, but he fully forestalled by this revival all that is good in what is nowadays denoted by the cant term "music of the future." As was the wont of his age, Gluck went to extend his art experience, perhaps to complete his education, to Italy, and there produced so many meritorious works in the style of the time as to establish a high reputation. This led to his engagement to write for the Italian Opera in London, whither he came in 1746. The work he composed for this occasion and one he then reproduced met with small favour, and a " pasticcio" from his previous works, Piramo e Tisbe, had no better fortune. The failure brought the conviction that, whatever the abstract merit of music, a piece that was appropriate to one character in one situation could not be fitted to dnother personage under different circumstances, and that admired pieces culled from different works could not be concocted into a whole with appearance of unity. Gluck therefore resolved to abandon the prevailing customs in writing for the

stage, and to devise a system of dramatic composition wherein the musical design should grow out of the action of the scene, being ever dependent upon and illustrative of it, and yet being always a design faithful to the principles of what may be named musical architec ture. As did Monteverde and his contemporaries, so did this composer aim to distinguish his dramatic persons by assigning music of different character to each; he required that the overture should announce the cast of feeling and thought that was to pervade the work, and he strove to make the whole of the music appropriate to the individuals, to the situations in which they were concerned, and to the

words they uttered. He did not reject the essential of rhythmical melody, which is ever necessary to a musical work, and which stands in relation to passages of pure declamation as metaphor in poetical speech stands in relation to circumstantial statement. An orator will pause in the disclosure of facts to enforce them by the mention of a similitude, or brighten them by reflexions from his own mind, and it is an application of the same art when 4 character in a drama stays to comment on the scene in which he is involved, and show in words the passion that is seething in his heart. Analogous to this is the occa- sional arrest of intercourse between the musical persons for the expression of the feeling by which one is swayed, and such is a song in an opera during which, if the action be stagnant, the character more than elsewhere proves its vitality. Plan in a musical work consists (1) in uniform or contrasted rhythm, (2) in the relationship and enchain- ment of keys, (3) in the development and elaboration of phrases, and (4) in their occasional recurrence. Some plans have by frequent appropriation become to a great extent conventional, and their philosophic basis accounts for and justifies the fact that much music is framed upon them ; it is the special province, however, of the writer for voices, and still more so of the writer for the stage, to ignore con- vention, though never to neglect design, and to construct his plans according to the situations they are to fill and to the materials with which he has to work. For sixteen years Gluck pondered the prevalent improprieties and the possible proprieties of dramatic art, and prepared himself by technical study and polite conversation to strike the blow which was to effect a revolution, the while,

strange to say, he wrote several operas in his old style for production in different towns of Italy, Germany, and other countries. At length in 1762 what he meant to be the representative work of his then matured principle, Orfeo ed Huridice, appeared in Vienna and made strong impression. Some lighter pieces filled the interim between this, which with- out exaggeration may be regarded as an event in musical history, and the production in the same city of Alceste (1767). The opera was published, as also was Paride ed Elena (1769), each with a statement of the artist's views ; and these two essays have since been regarded as constitut- ing a grammar of dramatic music. Gluck was not content with the Viennese reception of the works on his new model, and was less so with the accessories that city afforded for giving theatrical effect to his compositions. He went, therefore, to Paris, wrote music to an adaptation of Racine's Iphigénie en Aulide, which fulfils his purpose in a higher degree than his previous pieces, and brought it out with extraordinary success. Orphée (1774), Alceste (1776) (both rearranged from the Italian versions), Armide (1776), and lastly Iphigénie en Tauride (1779) rose each to a loftier level, and met with just acceptance.

It must be owned that other forces concurred with musical merit in Gluck's Parisian triumphs. He had taught singing to Marie Antoinette before she became dauphiness, and she now was an ardent partisan of her former instructor. Mme. Du Barry held a rival court to that of the young princess, her jealousy of whom and of her state was evinced by every possible means. Accord- ingly she invited to Paris Nicola Piccini (1728-1800), and strove to establish him in opposition to the German master. His Roland set toa libretto by Marmontel was brought out in 1777, anticipating the subject of Gluck's Armide ; It was followed by other French operas, and the contest ended with the production of his Iphigénie en Tauride (1781), Subsequently to that with the same title, the masterpiece of his opponent. This musical warfare much resembled that of some forty years earlier between Handel and Buononcini in London, when the king headed the

m US fac

partisans of the German and the Prince of Wales those of the Italian artist; but the Parisian feud was waged with far the greater violence, for, not only

were the courts of the two ladies involved in it, but every literatist of note sided with one or the other faction, and hurled poems, or pamphlets, or essays, or critiques at his antagonists, that were crammed with remorseless invective. It pre- tended to be a dispute as to national style, but was a quarrel between two leaders of fashion. Piccini's music is marked by the melodious grace for which his country claims pre-eminence, Gluck's by the graver thought by which the Teutonic muse is more distinguished. Gluck, however, was not profound, he was no contrapuntist, and his often grand and always expressive harmony sprang more from intuition than knowledge ; Piccini had dramatic power, and he advanced greatly Logroscino's invention of continuous concerted music conformable to the business of the scene, but applied this only to comic operas, and so turned it to no account in his compositions for Paris. His most successful production, La buona Figliuola (1760), passed from its birthplace, Rome, to every European capital, and is not even now forgotten.

The origin, development, and supreme importance of the Sym- symphony next claim our attention. The term is and always Phony.

has been used in Italy to define the instrumental preface, which elsewhere is called an overture, to a long vocal work. Handel and others, early in the 18th century, defined by it an instrumental piece incidental to such a work, gener- ally depicting some supposed action, such as a battle, or a multitudinous entry. The term is also applied to the prelude and interludes in a single vocal piece of however small extent. Its significance is far more comprehensive in the application now to be described. Its nearest analogy among earlier compositions is to what of old was called a concerto, and the two names, derived respectively from Greek and Latin, have at root the same meaning. Like the antecedent concerto, the symphony is a composi- tion, consisting of several movements or self-complete divisions, for a full band; unlike its predecessor, the plan of at least its first movement has in the course of years been so distinctly organized that musicians shrink from applying the definition symphony to any work wherein there is not the aim to fulfil this design. At first the term was loosely employed, for even so late as Haydn's visits to London in 1791 and 1794 the symphonies he wrote for first performance there were sometimes announced as such, sometimes as overtures, and sometimes as "full pieces." Its structural requirements

especially connect it with works for the chamber, which, if for one or two solo instruments, are styled sonatas, if for three or four or more, trios or quartets, or what not, according to the number of parts they comprise. The word “plan,” always used by that distinguished teacher Cipriani Potter (1792- 1871) as meaning musical design, happily, because posi- tively, expresses the arrangement of ideas according to a purpose, to which, being intangible and invisible, the word “form” is but metaphorically applicable. Sebastian Bach, Corelli earlier, and Purcell before them, designated com- positions as sonatas which, however, are not modelled on the plan of the modern symphony.! Bach in some of his later preludes and in other instances has the incipient germ from which the plan has been evolved, and sonatas by Domenico Scarlatti (1683-1757) comprise movements

1 The earliest use that has been traced of the term sonata or suonata is in its application to some pieces for the organ by the uncle and nephew Gabrieli, who wrote in Venice towards the end of the 16th century. They form portions of larger works of which the rest is vocal; they are brief, solemn, and slow, and are seemingly designed to pour sound in long continuance or in large masses. Similar pieces by early German masters have the same definition, and the next generation extended the plan by appending a quick movement.

wherein it is more developed. These musicians were by no means the first, however, to strike the vein of ore for which divination seems to have been carefully in search long prior to their labours. This justifies the belief that its source is in nature, that it was discovered, not created, by man’s genius; and the work of successive genera- tions of artists has been to rear and mature that which, having once been found, is the heirloom of the present and the future. The practice of all ages proves common consent that a musical composition must begin and end in one and the same key, and this statement refers not more to our own time than to that of the ancients, whose modes are comparable though not identical with the keys of modern establishment. Continuance of one key throughout a piece of considerable length would be monotonous; to relieve this, modulation is effected into other keys in the course of a composition. To obtain tonal variety without

violence, the choice of alternative keys must be made first and chiefly from those which have the nearest tonal relationship to the primary key. After the harmonic 8th (which is a miniature of the Ist) the harmonic 5th is next in prominence, from this note a chord rises as complete as that of the generator, from this chord a second key proceeds by natural evolution; the note, the chord, the key, are each named the dominant, since dominating, commanding, or defining the tonality of the fundamental note. The key of the dominant is hence the one most often chosen for the principal alternative to the primary key if the latter be major; but the key of the 3d and that of the 6th are occasionally selected instead by a further application of the harmonic system. If the primary key be minor, the choice of the chief alternative key is often made in the contrary direction; the tonic itself is assumed to be a harmonic 3d or else a 6th, and the chief modulation is made to the key at one of these inter- vals below the original keynote, having reference to the submediant or the mediant as the source whence the minor form of a key is derived. Besides the chief alternative, other keys, more or less frequent, more or less remote, according to the greater or less length of a piece, are also employed in the course of a composition. The distribution of keys constitutes the ground-plan and the elevation of a musical structure ; the style of harmony, whether diatonic or chromatic, whether contrapuntal or massive, is its material ; the ideas, or subjects, or themes, or phrases, or figures, or—as of late they have been whimsically named— motives, stand for the ornamentation, such as portico, frieze, statuary, and carving, which are sometimes essential in a design. This, then, is a brief summary of the plan of the first movement of a symphony—a first subject in the primary key, which consists of a single idea, or of several connected by tonal identity though melodically distinct ; a second subject in the chief alternative key, which also may be onefold or manifold in its matter ; and these first and second subjects complete the first part. Thus far has been but a simple statement of ideas, which is here followed by a working of the same matter, drawing from it what varieties of expression it may yield through compression or expansion by means of any or every re-source of the musician’s art; the second part is aptly often named the free fantasia, because unrestricted to a fixed course of modulation, the composer’s creative power being at full liberty as to course of keys and manner of development ; then for the first time the music reverts to the primary key for a retrospect of the entire matter of the first part, with,

however, all that belongs to the second subject transposed from the chief alternative key into that which is the origin and centre whence all the modulations radiate ; lastly, there is often, but by no means always, a coda, which is a summing up of the whole argument, or

a valediction to the hearer. The first movement, always cast in this mould, is succeeded generally by one in a slow tempo, sometimes planned like a first allegro, sometimes otherwise, according to outlines that cannot here be detailed, and this exhibits the sentiment of the artist, as did the preceding his scholarship and ingenuity. Then follows generally (again one must say, for there is no necessary prescription) a movement of lighter character than either of the foregoing, sometimes having the musical shape of a dance such as the minuet, sometimes having an arbitrary plan which still is based upon harmonic, and therefore natural, and consequently philosophical, principles. To con- clude, there is a movement that is sometimes constructed like the first and is sometimes as complicated, but in other instances has an arbitrary design. Such is the highest class of musical composition : firstly, because it is wholly musical, springing entirely from the artist’s imagination without the prompting of words, needing no words to express its meaning to the auditor, being in itself poetry; secondly, because it may comprise every means within the author’s power to wield melody,—counterpoint, harmony, modulation,—all that but for the symphony would be special to the fugue, orchestration, and, above all, the arrangement of ideas in a consistent logical method with reference to principles that are the very foundation of art. Let it be hoped that this outline of the elements, essence, and plan of the symphony justifies the use of the words supreme importance in reference to the class of composition at the outset of these remarks.

[HISTORY, —

|

Haydn (1732-1809) is commonly styled the father of Bayi:

the symphony. If truly, then Carl Philip Emanuel Bach (1714-1788), the second of the many sons of the great Sebastian, stands as grandfather in the

genealogy of that species of music; and its remoter ancestry may be traced to all but forgotten men in whose works is certainly a forecast of the plan above described. C. P. E. Bach wrote 18 symphonies, and upon these and upon the instru mental chamber music of the same author, Haydn avowedly modelled the plan of his compositions. The earlier writer had not the profundity of his father, nor the grace of Haydn, but his music represents the transition from one to another use in instrumental writing, and it fixed the plan which, however it may be expanded, can never be disestablished from the canons of art. Haydn produced the marvellous number of 125 symphonies (some of them, indeed, were overtures for theatrical use), besides 77 quartets for bowed instruments (the last one unfinished), 52 pianoforte sonatas, and pieces that are almost countless for various combinations of instruments ; and in these one knows not whether to wonder more at the infinite fluency of melody or at the artistic mastery. In summing up the enormous amount of his works regard must also be given to his 3 oratorios, his 14 masses, his operas, and his many detached pieces for one and several voices, and then it is hard to believe that all this can have been accomplished in a single life.

Next in chronology as a symphonist stands Mozart Mo

(1756-1791). Particular comparison must be made of these dates with those of Haydn, as illustrating the re lation of the mighty musicians to each other, and the influence each may be supposed to have exercised on his friend—for warmest friends they were and truest esti- mators of each other’s powers. If the young Mozart pro- fited by Haydn’s example, as doubtless he did, the old Haydn learned greatly from Mozart’s, for there is s0 obvious a rise in the character of his music from the beginning to the end of his long career as shows that he was under a continuous course of self-schooling. It is because his was self-schooling, and because he seems to have had no distinct principle of harmony, but to have

q

HISTORY. |

experimented without infallible success on every unusual combination he wrote, and because likewise in orchestra- tion his writing often appears to

have been tentative rather than proving intuition of an effect and a means for its production—it is for these reasons, in spite of his pro- digious command of counterpoint, that he may without disrespect be classed after the man whom circumstances compel us to regard as his rival. Mozart wrote 48 sym- phonies, some of them in the tenderest years of childhood, and repeated the design in many chamber works for several or for a single instrument. These differ in merit, mainly, it may be assumed, because some were written to meet the exigencies and the limitations of particular occasions; but, every one compelling admiration, the last three are con- spicuous among the music of all time for the excellence of each and for their difference in character from one another, and these were composed in less than seven weeks, between 96th June and 10th August 1788, during which interval several other lesser and larger pieces also were produced, some for voices and some for instruments. The symphony in E flat, No. 46, is notable for sweetness and playful grace ; that in G minor, No. 47, is a torrent of passionate fervour ; and that in C, No. 48 (in England named Jupiter), is a combination that has never been surpassed of all the means possible to a musician. In the final movement of this last, a fugue is wrought on the symphonic plan, which is also the case in the overture to the author's latest opera, Dve Zauberflite, a completer fusion than has elsewhere been made of the two most distinguishable art-forms, and the formalism is hidden under the beauty of the ideas.

History now steps on to the great name of Beethoven (1770-1827), who in his 9 symphonies, his 6 concertos (which are pieces on the same plan with the addition of a part for a solo instrument), and his priceless bequest of chamber music commands the world's adoration. It is the shallow practice of the present day to depreciate his two great predecessors, especially Mozart, in his favour; but comparative criticism is to ill purpose if it can only exalt one master by the dethronement of another. Beethoven enlarged the symphony, in some respects changed its character, and perhaps advanced its consideration ; above all, after writing for a while in the idiom of those two masters, he stamped his own individuality upon music. One finds, however, a prototype for each thing critics describe as particularly Beethovenish in the writings of Mozart, so that the manifest originality of the later musician lies in the new aspect given by happy expansion to prior existences more than in the creation of new forms of thought. Though he

often strove at fugal excellence, he was a child at counterpoint as compared with the two adults who preceded him, and he lost rather than gained fluency in this branch of art as his life proceeded. The ideas of a great artist bear the impress of his age, which is remarkably the case with the musical thoughts of Beethoven, and as his age was nearer to our own, so is his frame of mind more congenial with that of present hearers than are those of Haydn and Mozart. The figure may be reversed; the individuality of an artist is the Matrix in which the feelings and thoughts of his age, and still more of the age that next follows him, are moulded, but there must be affinity of temperament between the one and the many for this interchange of impressions to be possible. We of to-day have Beethoven and the con-Sequences of Beethoven, and the influences of these have been active in the interval between our time and the period previous to the French Revolution; and the polli- tical, moral, and artistic changes that have been wrought by the ones upon the many as much as by the many on the ones indispose us to the recognition of the beautiful under its earlier aspect. Let us delight in Beethoven—

who can fail?—but let us also love Mozart and revere Haydn. Two points are notable in Beethoven's instru- mental music—(1) the linking together of the several movements of a work which usually are separated by an interval of silence; but such union is in some of Mozart's early symphonies and some also of Emanuel Bach's; (2) the expression of feelings excited by subjects external to the music and entitling works accordingly, as Sinfonia Pastorale, and sonata, Les Adveux, l Absence, et le Retour; but Dietrich Buxtehude of Liibeck had a century earlier produced seven pieces characteristic of the seven planets, and Vivaldi had represented the four seasons in as many concertos, to say nothing of the chaos which opens Haydn's Creation. Beethoven's professed purpose in this last particular was to give utterance to impressions rather than to present pictures, and such is the legitimate scope of music, which is not an imitative but an expressive art.

Next in time came Spohr (1784-1859), whose delici- ously-phrased rich-toned symphonies have lost regard in late years, but not beauty. Of his seven symphonies, four bear titles which refer them to an objective purpose; but they are still subjective, for the personality of the writer is expressed in every bar. Mendelssohn (1809-1847) did less but achieved more than Spohr ; far less numerous, his instrumental writings for the concert-room and for the chamber have vitality and permanence which are not in those of the other master; they belong as much to here- after as to now, while those of Spohr are already of the past. Mendelssohn too made musical pictures, owning that ‘“‘as Beethoven had opened the road it was impossible not to follow ;” his two finest symphonies, those in A and in A minor, represent, though not so entitled by him, his im- pressions of Italy and Scotland, and his characteristic over- tures are translations into sound of the poems after which they are named. He also, in more than one instance, joined the several movements of a work, and he employed other devices—his own by felicity of appropriation more than by first use—for enforcing the relationship of the several portions of a musical structure. Schumann (1810-1856) has suffered through the persistence of his partisans in compar- ing him with another instead of displaying and extolling his own merit. Party spirit and the opposition it kindles has passed, and the delicacy, often subtle in its refinement, the grace, the deep feeling, the ingenuity, but rarely grandeur, that mark his symphonic and chamber music, are now fully perceived, Johannes Brahms is a living worker in this class of art who has already planted his foot in the future and given warrant for transmitting to the coming genera- tion the great model he received from the past, which, because of the masterpieces that have been cast in it, justly bears the name of classical. Cherubini (1760-1842) is the one Italian known to have written a symphony, and this work gives small reason for regret that it stands thus alone; he arranged the same as a violin quartet and wrote two original pieces of this class. Méhul (1763-1817) is the French representative of the symphonic art best known and best esteemed.

The Englishmen who have best succeeded in this highest form of music are Dr Crotch (1775-1847), Cipriani Potter, J. Henry Griesbach (1798-1875), Henry Westrop (1812-1879), and Sterndale Bennett (1816- 1875). The last-named cannot be passed with a mere mention. The wide recognition of Bennett’s genius at home and in Germany distinguishes him; far more so

does the quite individual charm of his music, and most of all does the tender age at which he wrote his best works and the facility with which he produced them. Three of his pianoforte concertos, one of his symphonies, and four of his concert overtures may be cited as repre- sentative pieces, wherein sometimes a ee always the

9 == WS

Subse- quent sym-

phonists.

English sym- phonists.

Instru- menta- tion,

98

phraseology, and, in those for the pianoforte, the treatment of the instrument are peculiar to the author in sweetness and elegance; the eternal riddle of the beautiful is pro- pounded in every cadence, and still defies analysis, still remains unsolved. As living writers in this department, Aguilar, Banister, J. F. Barnett, Cowen, Davenport, Wal- ter Macfarren, Hubert Parry, Prout, Stanford, Stephens, and Sullivan must be named.

To have spoken of orchestral music compels notice of instrumentation as an element of the art that has high significance. It is analogous to colouring with the painter, being extra to the composition or plan of his work, but essential in vivifying and varying its effect. Its root is the appropriation of passages to the capabilities of instru- ments for which they are designed, and this is planted in the earliest as much as the latest essays in composition. Its trunk and branches are the combinations of voices and instruments of the same or different qualities of tone, so as to give greatest prominence to the chiefest parts in a musical texture, so as to produce effects of sound which cannot be yielded by the means separately used, but are liable to infinite diversity from the manifold compounds in which they are clustered, and, most of all, so as to secure distinctness of every part in the complex woof which strikes the ear as onefold. Instrumentation may be styled the chemistry of sound, which by the synthesis of distinct tones produces new organisms; it is the blending of any of the rays of the musical prism which produces previously unheard colours. Mozart was the first to evince the very fine sense which perceives the parity and disparity of qualities, how some sounds will mix with and some will penetrate through others, how some instruments by pour- ing forth a stream of harmony may enrich or nourish a melody that floats on its surface in another quality of tone. Prior musicians had used instruments in alternation for variety of effect, or in combination for the sake of loud- ness ; but it was Mozart that both originated and perfected instrumentation as above described, and it has been prac- tised with more or less success in so far as his principles have been fulfilled, with more or less failure in so far as his principles have been abandoned. In two centuries instruments have undergone large modification, and their treatment has been modified accordingly. Writing for the harpsichord is widely different from that for the pianoforte, which also has been changed in character from generation to generation of composers, not only because of improve- ments in the manufacture of the instrument, but because of enlarged insight into its capabilities; hence the music of Emanuel Bach, Mozart, Dussek, Beethoven, Clementi, Cramer, Hummel, Moscheles, John Field, C. M. von Weber, Mendelssohn, Chopin, Schumann, Liszt, Thalberg, Stern- dale Bennett, and Anton Rubinstein forms a continuous scale of development in aptitude and diversity. The transformation of the viol of various sizes into the violin, violoncello, and

double bass of present use is a subject for special history, but its course is inseparably associated with the names of the great Cremonese manufacturers, Andrea Amati (1540), his two sons and his grandson, the family Guanarius, and Straduarius, who all practised their craft as an art more than as a trade, setting each the stamp of his own genius on the instruments he produced and leaving models that have never yet been equalled. The extended resources of bowed instruments have come wholly through extended skill of executants, especially of Viotti, Rudolphe Kreutzer, Rode, Baillot, Paganini, Spohr, De Beriot, Molique, Ernst, Blagrove, Sivori, Sainton, Vieuxtemps, Joachim, and Carrodus on the violin; of Crosdill, Cervetto, Lindley, and Piatti on the violoncello ; and of Dragonetti and Bot- tesini on the double bass. The entire construction of flutes and reed instruments was changed by Theobald

Boehm (1794-1881), and all makers now work upon his principle. Facilities have been increased on each of these classes of instruments, but on horns and trumpets modern use has in some respects diminished them ; that is, employ- ing only notes of the harmonic scale, players of the time of Purcell, Handel, and Bach practised so constantly in the upper register that they easily produced the 12th harmonie and above this sometimes notes up to the 18th, and these they executed with volubility akin to that displayed on fingered instruments ; it is now the custom to exercise the lips on the lower notes and on longer continued sounds, and hence the passages written by the elder masters are difficult to the verge of the impossible to present prac- titioners, and a totally different character distinguishes modern from earlier music for brass instruments. On the other hand, Charles Joseph Sax (1791-1865), and far more his still living son Adolphe, have devised such systematic changes in the fabrication of all brass instruments as to give them an entirely new place in the orchestral category; by means of the pistons of their sax-horns, cornets, and saxophones, these instruments yield the complete chromatic scale, which, superficially, appears to be an advantage ; but, save for military bands, the alteration is a serious evil and has an incalculably pernicious effect upon the orchestration of the day. This

strong but careful statement is justified by the beautiful effects in music written earlier than the use of valves, from the characterization, firstly, of particular keys in a musical composition ; secondly, of certain chords in the keys; and, thirdly, of special notes in each of these chords through appropriation to them of selected sounds from the limited harmonic series, whereas composers who apply Sax's invention to orchestral use reduce the band to a one-toned machine that has the same quality throughout its range. Let proof be drawn from example; in the andante in A flat in Beethoven's symphony in C minor, the horns and trumpets are crooked in C, they can therefore be used but for peculiar notes in the primary key of the piece, but they give especial tone to the key of C, into which the music thrice modulates, that distinguishes it from the entire context; in the finale of the same mas- ter's symphony in F the return to the primary key from the remote tonality of F sharp minor is marked by the tone of the F trumpet, whose keynote is the enharmonic of the E sharp of the foregoing harmony; and yet again, im the ''dona nobis" of the same master's mass in D, the phrases for the trumpets in B flat are distinguished from what surrounds by the tone and the key, and thus give technical significance to the author's purpose, '"'a prayer for peace in the midst of war." Inability to resist the tempta- tion of the semitonic scale, and so to use "sounding brass" as freely as instruments of more delicate tone and greater natural volubility, is exemplified in the writings of many a.living musician, and regretted by many of his admirers.

A class of opera, defined in French as opéra comique, Oper

dates ostensibly from 1715. The definition is unsound,

tragic nature. The separation of this from the grand opéra lies in the latter having music throughout, its rhythmical pieces being divided by accompanied recita- tive, while the opéra comique consists of music inter- spersed with spoken dialogue. The distinction arose from what was considered an infringement of the patent of the Parisian Opera House by a company who performed musical pieces at the Théatre de la Foire, and an agree- ment between the two establishments was authorized at the date above cited to the effect that the assumed intruder must have speaking in

every piece it presented. The name of Rameau is the earliest of note among composers of this class of work, and his success in L'Endriaque

because, whatever the subjects of the first pieces so styled, a

it is often applied to works of a romantic, serious, or eVeD opera.

;

HISTORY. |

(1721) and L'Enrolement d'Arlequin (1726), which were comical enough in plot to sanction the definition, procured hearing for his larger and graver dramatic efforts. Most conspicuous of those who later have gained fame as com- posers of opéras comiques are Monsigny, Dalayrac, Grétry, Méhul, Boieldieu, the profound Cherubini, Halévy, Auber, Ambroise Thomas, and Gounod, many of whom also pro- duced masterly pieces in the other class of opera. The singspiel is the German parallel to the opéra comique, and its examples comprise some of the greatest works that adorn the lyric stage. Among these are the Lntfihrung aus dem Serail and the Zauberfléte of Mozart, the /delio of Beethoven, which stands above comparison with all dramatic music save only the Figaro and the Don Gio- vanmi of Mozart, and suffers not in being placed side by side with these prodigies of genius and mastery, the aust and the Zemira und Azor of Spohr, the Frecschiitz of C. M. yon Weber, and Heimkehr aus der Fremde of Mendelssohn. It was a novelty of Weber to break from set forms in his dramatic monologues and frame from the promptings of the situation a special plan for each, which has frequent variations of tempo but always coherence of key, and which never fails to manifest a conceived and fulfilled design ; and this successful innovation, as much as their musical merit, gives historical importance to his works for the stage. Spohr, with Jessonda (1823), was the first to appropriate continuous music with full orchestra to the German stage, and he wrote in the journals to defend his innovation, which had been preceded in Italy by Rossini with Otello, wherein the " recitativo parlante" was for the first time in that country discarded. Spoken dramas profusely interspersed with music and called operas have had vogue in England since the time of Purcell, whose genius was cramped by the literary conceit that music was unfit for expression of human feelings on the stage. The

principle was superseded, but the form resulting from it was preserved in the ballad operas, which from 1727 for more than a century were the sole vehicles for music in our theatres; but these had the speciality that for the most part their music consists of the popularities of the day and rarely includes original composition. Dr Arne, Stephen Storace, Shield, Dibdin, and Sir H. R. Bishop wrote all the music for pieces of this class, and the last appropriated, or modified, or restored to its pristine form the glee in his dramatic works, and by specimens of this he is and will be chiefly remembered. In 1834a new impulse was given to English opera by the warm welcome of John Barnett's Mountain Sylph, which, though it has speaking, is far more essentially musical in structure than its predecessors, and it has been followed by many a work of merit by the same hand, by Balfe, E. J. Loder, Wallace, and others, several of these being wholly lyrical, according to the requirements of French grand opéra.

Side by side with the activity in other countries just reviewed was the progress of opera in Italy. Important contributors to this were Giovanni Paesiello (1741-1815) and Domenico Cimarosa (1749-1801), who both wrote extensively, succeeded greatly, and impressed the art with their specialities. Of vastly greater consequence in the future was Mozart, who produced many Italian operas, and, of all musicians that have ever composed for the theatre, brought dramatic music the most nearly to perfection in fitness to the scene, delineation of character, and technical design, The name of Rossini (1792-1868) is conspicuous in the history of opera from the once universal fashion to admire his writings, from the new manner of vocal flourishes he introduced, which strongly tended to revive the inconsistencies against which Gluck had striven, from the ardent imitators who at the time of his triumphs emu- lated his peculiarities, from his entire change of style in

his later productions, and from his all but ceasing to pro- duce during nearly forty years. The languishing Bellini (1802-1835) and the spirited and far more prolific Doni- zetti (1796-1848) proved their artistic strength by avoid- ing the Rossini idiom, but neither can be accredited with asserting a

style. Giuseppe Verdi has proved melodie creativeness equal to either of theirs, with a stronger power of characterization and a better regard for the exi- gencies of the scene.

A new species of composition has sprung into being Opéra within these thirty years, which in France is defined as bouffe.

opéra bouffe, and in England as comic opera, but is totally distinct from the opera buffa of Italy or the opéra comique of France, while less unlike the intermezzo of Italian use in the 18th century. It may be described as burlesque, sometimes of stories that have held mankind's respect for ages, sometimes of modern social absurdities, but having the ridiculous for its main quality, and extra- vagant in every essential. It consists of an intermixture of lightest and most frivolous music with spoken dialogue, and depends as much on its literary sprightliness as on its musical tunefulness, for success. It may be said to have been originated by Offenbach (1819-1882) of Cologne, who settled in Paris when young, where in 1855 he engaged a theatre for the production of his lyrical caricatures, initiated them with Les Deux Aveugles, and wrote in all sixty-nine pieces. He has several imitators in the country of his adoption, and is represented in England by Sir Arthur Sullivan.

Operatic history may be epitomized in a few sentences. The Greek tragedy was essentially lyrical, and it portrayed the characters and the incidents with which all who wit- nessed were intimate. It fell asleep with the other forms of classic art, to be awakened at the end of the 16th cen- tury ; but those who aimed at restoring it to the active world chose subjects from the antique which stirred the wonder more than the sympathy of their audiences. Re- gard for the gods and heroes of ancient myths, or for the figures of medieval chivalry, who were little less outside general familiarity, long gave an artificial air to theatrical writing. It was the comic branch of opera that first broke from the trammels of the pedagogue, and in repre- senting people of its own time applied the grandest attri- bute of music—the expression of passions common to us all under circumstances experienced by us all in phrase- ology familiar to us all. In the pieces for the Countess and the Count in Figaro Mozart rose to earnestness, and in those for Donna Anna, Ottavio, and the Commandant in Don Giovanni still higher to the

grandest tragedy, and always on the lips of persons in a period so near to our own that we recognize our own feelings in their utterances. The preternatural is also shown to be within the range of this art in the music of the Statue in Don Giovanni, which may confidently be compared for effect with the ghost scenes in Hamlet, in answer to those who raise quarrelsome questions as to the relative power of music and speech to embody analogous situations. All musicians since Mozart have chosen subjects, however serious, from modern history or from still later modern life, and the preternatural has exercised the imagination of Spohr, Weber, Marschner, and Barnett, to whom Mendelssohn must be added on account of the fragments of Loreley.

During the last thirty years Richard Wagner (181 3-1883) has striven to revolutionize the lyrical drama by his polem- ical writing, by his compositions for the theatre, of which he is the twofold author of words and notes, and by his extraordinary means of bringing these conspicuously before the public. His principles were all gathered from antece- dent reformers ; their application was his own. His works of art are, by himself and his supporters, professed to be

Sum-

mary of operatic history.

Wagner.

Oratorio.

neither dramas nor music, but this cannot exempt them from dramatic and musical censure. The very remarkable commotion he has made in the world of art might be com- pared with that excited by the rivalry between Buononcini and Handel in London and that between Piccini and Gluck in Paris, but that these were in each instance the conten- tion between one musician and another, whereas in the present case it is the opposition of one writer to all the musicians in the world, save the few members of the pro- fession who, believing in the man, his doctrine, and his power to apply it,

undertake propagandism as a duty, and endeavour to make proselytes to their faith. Wagner's recent death has left judgment free as to his theoretical and practical merit ; a few years will determine the perma- nence or evanescence of his productions, and an article on his name in the present work may be written far enough from now to chronicle the result.

Within the present century the oratorio has undergone large modification, somewhat in structure and more in style. Haydn's Creation is planned on the model of the several settings of music to the recitation of the Divine Passion which were frequent from the date of the Reformation till the 18th century was one-third advanced. Its text con- sists of a Bible narrative interspersed with reflective verses which have no pretension to be defined as poetry. The work was said to have been suggested to the composer by his hearing some of Handel's oratorios during his two visits to England, but it differs in character as widely from these as was natural in coming from a musician whose genius, however great, was wholly unlike that of his pre- decessor. The Seasons, by the same master, has a secular subject which is secularly treated, and in this, equally with the other, the manner of the author, as evinced in his instrumental music, is ever apparent. Beethoven's Jount of Olives is in dramatic form, though changed into narra- tive in several English versions. The portions of this that have most interest are those which are the least sacred— for instance, the chorus of the soldiers who come to seek and then to arrest the Accused of Iscariot. The Deluge, by Schneider, is also a drama by a modern hand. It and the Moses of Marx have sent only the reputation of their esteem into England. Spohr's three oratorios—especially Dre letzten Dinge, known here as the Last Judgment —bear so strongly the impress of his speciality in the constant prevalence of the chromatic element throughout them, and in the rich but always transparent orchestration, and they were so largely imitated by contemporaries, that they may be said to have opened an epoch which, however, was early closed. Far more important in themselves and in their influence are the two works of the class by Mendelssohn, with which may be associated the Lobgesang (Hymn of Praise), written to commemorate the 400th anniversary of the invention of printing. In these the dramatic, the narrative, and the didactic elements all appear, the first so conspicuously and so grandly in consonance with the spirit of the time that it specially distinguishes the works as they do the master who, through them, holds a

rank in England as a sacred writer all but parallel to that of Handel. The influence of Mendelssohn's oratorios is obvious in the works of other musicians, and public approval attests it to be an influence for good. Compositions styled oratorios have been produced by Liszt and Gounod which seem to aim largely at novelty, but a future generation must judge whether they have struck the mark. In England, Crotch's Palestine emulated Handelian precedent, and stood for long alone as a native production. Many years later Sir Stern- dale Bennett's Woman of Samaria won wider sympathy. The living writers who have courted and gained fame in England by longer or shorter oratorios are J. F. Barnett, Sir J. Benedict, Sir M. Costa, and Sir A. Sullivan.

mM as [°C

'of the system professed to have derived it from Miss

[HISTORY,

With some pleasure and some regret must be mentioned Toni, the active exertions of John Curwen (1816-1880), a Non-Sol-f, | conformist minister, with a large staff of adherents, in the promulgation of a professedly new musical system under the title of "Tonic Sol-fa": pleasure, because of the wide extension of musical study resulting from his indefatigable zeal ; regret, because perhaps a larger and certainly a better result would have rewarded like energy in the propagation of musical knowledge in the shape that has grown into maturity through eight centuries, and possesses the whole world's acceptance. He who is honoured as the founder

Glover of Norwich, whose method he but modified and expanded; but hers was based upon the ancient gamut already described, omitting the constant recital of the alphabetical name of each note, together with the arbitrary syllable that indicates its key relationship, and omitting too the recital of two or more of these syllables when the same note is common to as many keys, as ''C, Fa, Ut," meaning that the note C is the subdominant of G and the tonic of C. The notes are represented by the initials of the seven syllables still used in Italy and France as the fixed names of the seven notes; but in "Tonic Sol-fa" the seven letters refer to key relationship and not to pitch, Further, the system has a wholly different terminology from that in

universal use. It would be uncandid not to state that many men of greatest eminence outside the musical profession and many musicians support the system ; here may only its bare principles be stated and not its merits discussed. A somewhat analogous action has, at the same time, been busy with regard to musical notation in France. Emile Chevé (1804), a surgeon in the French marine service, having married Nanine, the sister of Aime Paris, learned from her the views of her brother (who had adopted them from Galin) as to another new system of musical notation, and he, Chevé, in 1844 applied himself to its dissemination. The system bears the name of ‘‘ Galin- Paris-Chevé,” and, like the other, refers the notes to key relationship and not to pitch, but employs the first seven numerals as their symbols, This invention, if so it may be called, was strongly discouraged by the most esteemed musicians of Paris, but its advocates persevere in its pro- pagation.

As a summary of all the precept and example that has Day’s been cited in this survey of the centuries let the writer “a state his convictions on musical theory, which are, that the goo Treatise on Harmony (1845) by Alfred Day (1810-1849) and div comprehends whatever is practically available, and recon- tinctio! ciles the previously apparent discrepancies between prin-% sty ciple and use. The laws of the primitive diatonic style had never been repealed ; the discovery by Noble and Pigot of generated harmonics had been held as belonging to science and not pertaining to art; composers had employed what may be classed as natural in distinction from arbitrary combinations, but each only on the prompting of his own genius and only with the justification of their effect. The author now cited was the first to classify the ancient, strict, uniform, diatonic, contrapuntal style, apart from the modern, free, exceptive, chromatic, massive style, to sepa- rate the principles that guide the one from the laws that control the other, and to place a subject that is at once sublime and beautiful in a light of unfailing clearness. He showed that one or another beautiful chord and the progressions thence were not capricious violations of rule, permissible to genius though unallowable to ordinary writers ; he showed that such things were acceptable not only because great masters had written them, and so small musicians might repeat the trespass; he proved this by demonstrating the self-perfection of the ancient canon and the also perfect modern system that rests on a basis totally

distinct from that of the other. He classed diatonic har- mony, with its uniform treatment of all the notes in a key, into concords which include not the 4th from the bass, and three species of discords, namely, passing notes of several varieties, suspensions resolved on a note of the harmony in which they are discordant, and essential or elemental discords resolved with the progression of the whole chord to a chord whose root is at a 4th above the root of the discord. In this style discordant notes have identical treatment according to the number of their interval (as 7th or 9th), unaffected by its quality (as major or minor). He traced all the notes of the scale available in the diatonic style to the tonic, the 5th below it, and the 5th above it, as their roots, having thus a minor tone between the domi- nant and submediant in the major form of akey. Present composers with ability for its‘ production may, by obser- vance of this ancient canon, make music in the style of the 16th century with as good likelihood of beauty as had the great masters of that period, but without imitating them, since working by their method and not necessarily by their example. Day showed that peculiar treatment of certain notes of the diatonic scale, together with the inclusion of the chromatic element which has crept into use during the later centuries, constitutes a style totally distinct from the other, and justly to be called exceptional. The basis of this system is the derivation of harmonics from specified fundamental notes or generators in every key. Thus exceptionally the 4th above the bass is a con- cord, when it is the root inverted above the 5th in the triads of the tonic, the subdominant, and the dominant. Thus exceptionally the 3d in the dominant triad has pecu- liar poignancy to which modern ears are sensitive, and the dominant triad is imitable on the supertonic by employ- ment of its chromatic major 3d that has the same special character as the 3d of the dominant. Thus exceptionally the 7th may be added to the dominant triad. This com- bination may also be imitated on the supertonic, and the addition likewise of a chromatic minor 7th to the tonic triad makes another chord consisting of the same intervals as the dominant 7th, namely, perfect 5th, major 3d, and minor 7th, the last two

being at a diminished 5th asunder. Again exceptionally the minor or the major 9th may be added to each of these chords of the 7th, the 11th to the chords of the 9th, and the minor or major 13th to the chords of the 11th, beyond which the ascent by 3ds_ pro- ceeds no more, as the 15th is the double octave of the root. The 9th, 11th, and 13th are susceptible of resolution each on a note of its own chord, which is not so with the 3d and 7th; or they may, like the 3d and 7th, be resolved on some note of another chord when the entire harmony changes. The chords of the 9th, still less of the 11th, and of the 13th least, rarely appear complete, the root being frequently, and other notes occasionally, omitted. In this style the discordant notes (3d, 7th, minor or major 9th, 11th, and minor or major 13th) are identical in quality to whichever of the three roots they belong ; but they vary in treatment according to their source; and in these two specialities they are distinguished from diatonic discords. Broadly it may be stated, but subject to amplification, that the natural resolution of dominant discords is upon the tonic concord, that the natural resolution of supertonic discords is either upon a tonic concord or upon a dominant discord, and that the natural resolution of tonic discords 1s either upon a dominant discord or upon a supertonic discord, the several elements of each harmony proceeding variously according to what note must follow it in the ensuing chord, The term fundamental discords is aptly applied to these which are traced to their harmonic generator, and their pertinence to one key is established by their all being resolvable on chords peculiar to the same

tonality.

The theory steps a degree further in proving

that the harmony of the augmented 6th s with its several

varieties of accompaniment consists of the primary and secondary harmonics of a common generator, and that the dominant and tonic are the notes in any key whence this harmony is derived, yielding respectively the augmented

6th on the minor 6th of the chromatic scale, and the augmented 6th on the minor 2d. The bold venture of Mouton, repeated by Monteverde and defended by the latter against the fierce disputation of the orthodox, is theoretically justified in this system on the principle of natural harmonics first enunciated in Oxford, and the ingenious searchings after truth by Rameau are shown in this system to have been on a false track and so to have passed round instead of to their mark. Day's Treatise, on its appearance, was denounced by the chief musicians in London, and a single believer for some time alone main- tained and taught its enlightened views. These have now the acquiescence of many more musicians than originally opposed them, they are upheld by-several eloquent sup- porters, and they are widely disseminated throughout England. They have not yet been promulgated beyond that country ; but the advance they have made there in thirty-eight years may be taken as augury of their ad- mission elsewhere when time and circumstance may be opportune for their presentation.

Music, in the modern special sense of the word, was Epitome.

with the early Greeks regulated declamation to the accom- paniment of instruments with stretched strings that were plucked or struck. With the Greeks it was also produced from pipes of metal or wood or horn, with reeds or with- out, as signals or incentives in war and for domestic amuse- ment. Far later, and in imperial Rome, it acquired a more definite form of what is now called melody. The transition of its principles from those which ruled in the classic ages to those which had been slowly developed in the course of after centuries is veiled with a mist like that which obscures the setting of paganism and the dawn- ing of Christianity. Many fallacies are still entertained as to the dated organization of music in the church, and none greater than its ascription to St Ambrose and St Gregory, and the credit given to Guido for the enunciation of its rules. From the end of the 10th century music was in England in advance of other nations until its rise in Flanders in the 15th, when still our forefathers kept abreast of their contemporaries. Throughout the ecclesi- astical reign of scholarship, the untutored people had a music of their own, which in its tonal and rhythmical affinity to that of later date commands present sympathy, and which, throughout the North, having the element of harmony or the combination of sounds, was the foundation of all to which science and art

have together attained. The Flemings planted schools in Rome, Naples, and Venice, and the rise of the art in Germany was due to their influ- ence. Adopted from the people by the church, the art of harmony was reduced to a system under the name of counterpoint. Its artificial ordinances were broken through at the end of the 16th century, against violent opposition but with permanent success. Coincident with this innova- tion of principles was another innovation in the form of applying them, which was intended as a revival of antique use, but which issued, working together with the first-named change, in the establishment of the modern in music; these two were the discovery of fundamental dis- cords and the originating of free musical recitation. The acoustical phenomenon whereon fundamental discords are grounded was first perceived in England, and this in the last quarter of the 17th century. Empirical rules drawn from the tentative practices of great musicians were from

Regu- larity.

Pitch defined by fre-

quency,

time to time enunciated ; but no theory till that described in the last foregoing paragraph probed the natural prin- ciples upon which, unknowingly, masters have wrought, nor distinguished between these and the ingenious artifices whereby in former times musical etymology and syntax were regulated. The development of plan or design in musical composition has been the fruition of the last two

centuries, and, in spite of all dispute as to its paramount necessity, hope points to it as the everlasting standard of genuineness in art.

To distinguish allusions to the present time in compari- son with former dates throughout this article, and to mark the period to which its narration reaches, statement must be made that it is completed in 1883. (¢. a. m.)

PART JI.—SCIENTIFIC BASIS.

Musical sounds reach our ears through the air. This is proved by showing that a sounding body placed in a space void of air, as under the receiver of an air-pump, is unable to emit sound. It will be sufficient for our present pur- pose to admit that musical sounds are transmitted through the air with substantially unchanged quality, even to great distances. The law according to which the apparent in- tensity of a musical sound diminishes as it spreads itself over an increasing surface of air is as yet uncertain ; we can only say with certainty that it does diminish.

The origin of musical sound consists in the regular periodic vibration of some surface in contact with air, whereby motion is imparted to the air, and thus transmitted to the ear. Experience tells us as follows :-—

1. Regular repetition is characteristic of those motions

which give rise to musical sounds.

2. The pitch of the note produced depends on the time in which the motion takes place.

3. The loudness or intensity of the note depends on the magnitude of the motion and on the pitch.

4. The quality of the note depends on the form or shape of the motion, that is to say, on the manner in which it is executed within the time in which it takes place.

1. Regular repetition characterizes musical notes 3 irre- gularity in the movements in successive periods charac- terizes unmusical noises. This is most usefully illustrated by cases in which false notes are obtained, Strings, for instance, sometimes cannot be tuned. In these cases the motion can frequently be seen to be irregular.

2. The time in which the motion takes place is defined conveniently by the number of times the whole motion is repeated in a second. The number which expresses this may be called the vibration number, or the frequency of the note. Pitch, then, is defined by frequency. Notes of different frequencies present sounds to the ear which are essentially different from one another, The physical ana- logy based on frequency would compare notes of different pitch to light of different colours ; this analogy does not, however, extend to the nature of the perceptions, The notes of a uniform instrument present a closer analogy with a definite colour in virtue of their uniform quality, so far as perception goes. And from this point of view there is nothing in the perception of colour analogous to the per- ception of difference of pitch in music, In speaking of the perception of combinations of notes we shall see that the ear possesses, in a more or less perfect form, the power of analysing combinations and hearing the notes Separately. If we admitted the physical analogy between pitch and colour this would correspond to a power of seeing com- pound colours analysed into their constituents, This of course does not exist. Though we may know by experi- ence what a compound colour consists of, no amount of experience will enable us to see the components separately in the same way in which we hear the notes of a combina- tion separately. The modes of perception are therefore wholly different in the two cases.

_ When one note is produced by a motion whose frequency 1s twice that of another, a relation subsists between the sounds of the two notes which appears not to be capable

of further explanation, They are said to form octaves with one another. It is easy to give some account of the formation of the octave regarded as a concord, but the in- explicable peculiarity of the relation consists in a sort of quasi-identity between the sounds of the two notes. Many persons cannot distinguish with certainty two notes an octave apart, particularly if the quality of tone employed be one in the use of which the observer is not practised, and this is the case even with ears of considerable acute- ness and cultivation ; but it does not apply to those ears of the highest class which possess the power of the recollec- tion of absolute pitch. Such ears can usually distinguish octaves with certainty. But in all cases the similarity of effect between notes differing in pitch by one or more octaves will be

admitted. It is a purely mental pheno- menon, and no explanation can be given of it. If fora moment we recur to the physical analogy of colour simply for the purpose of illustration, the whole range of visible colour corresponds to less than an octave. The musical phenomenon of the similarity of octaves is as if part of the invisible spectrum, say in the ultra-red, excited a sensation having some similarity to the sensation of its octave in the visible spectrum, the two sensations being such that there is a continuous change from the one to the other. Nothing of the kind actually exists in the case of light. The actual impression on the nervous system of the ear which is con- cerned with the perception of pitch is believed to be sub- stantially the same in different individuals. But the mental processes attached to this perception differ so widely that for all practical purposes the results are different in dif- ferent individuals. The chief difference appears to consist in the different development of the memory of the actual sound of definite notes, which we may speak of as the perception of absolute pitch. This is developed in all degrees: from almost complete absence, in which case we have a want of musical ear arising from the failure to retain the pitch of a note heard even for the shortest time, to that highest degree of perfection in which the memory retains permanently the sound of every note that is once heard. It is not believed that the possession of this memory is capable of cultivation to any considerable ex- tent. It appears rather to be a natural gift, as it usually appears at once in childhood where it is possessed at all. Roughly speaking, and in the absence of reliable statistics, we may say that the possession of the perception of ab- solute pitch is distributed as follows:—say 1 per cent. possess it, 1 per cent. are entirely destitute of it, so as to be said to have no ear, and the remaining 98 per cent. or SO possess it in a more or less modified form. Of this usual condition we may take as a type cases in which the mental effect of a musical note can be retained in the memory for some minutes.

We have to consider the musical perception of the class Percep-

possessing the power, and of the numerically much larger ti class who only possess it in a modified form. A simple tune or melody produces the same effect in all cases as far

as we know, except that those who have the perception of pitch.

absolute pitch know what notes are employed, while others are only conscious of the intervals, ¢.c., of the relative pitch. All the analytical perceptions are as a rule much better

developed in the case of those who possess the perception of absolute pitch than in other cases. In those whose perceptions fall below a certain mark the analysis of com- binations of notes by the ear fails more or less entirely. In this particular, however, cultivation is generally possible. And this agrees with the assumption that the mechanism of the ear is generally the same. For the perception of differences of pitch is conceived to be due to a mechanism universally present, which effects the analysis of combina- tions by the same means by which the pitch is distinguished. The phenomena which give rise to this belief may be stated as follows. If we sound two notes together and cause one of them to change its pitch, we can examine the sensations produced by all sorts of binary combinations. If the two notes have the same pitch at starting, then when they separate beats are’heard. Up to a certain point, which is not very far from the point where the two notes are half a semitone apart, the effect in the ear is as if one note was heard, having the alternations of intensity which constitute beats and a pitch generally intermediate between the constituent notes. At this distance of about half a semitone the ear begins to perceive the two separate notes beside the beats. As the distance between the constituent notes increases the two notes become more prominent, the beats grow fainter, and ultimately, when the constituent notes are a little more than a whole tone apart, the beats disappear and the two notes are recog- nized as separate and distinct sensations.

Now this observation is explained by Helmholtz’s hypo- thesis of the existence of a resonant mechanism in the ear. Just as a harp, or a piano with the dampers raised, will have the strings corresponding to any sound that reaches it set in vibration, so we suppose that there exists a collection of resonant bodies in the ear which respond to vibrations of pitch nearly coincident with their own. The question then arises, Is the range of

sympathy, the distance at which a certain response is excited in the vibrating mechanism of the ear, the same in all cases ?

It is easily seen that, if the above phenomena are sub- stantially the same in all cases, the character of the mechanism must also be the same. The interval at which the two notes of a binary combination begin to be separately distinguished can be observed with considerable accuracy, and is critical in the matter. So far as such observations have been hitherto attempted, this interval is very nearly the same in persons of the highest type of ear, who have the perception of absolute pitch in an advanced degree, and in persons occupying a position not high among those who only possess the power of relative per- ception. In all cases, moreover, where beats are observed, the beats are the same to all persons, so far as our present knowledge goes. And as some of these beats arise within the ear itself, they depend upon the properties of its mechanism. ‘The result is that, so far as ordinary obser- vation goes, the main features of the mechanism of the ear may be safely pronounced to be the same,—in the great Majority of cases, at all events. Some slight differences in this respect have been observed ; but there can be little doubt that the great differences which exist in the endow- ment of the ears of different persons do not arise from differences in the receptive mechanism, but have their source in the nervous or mental actions which lie behind the mechanism. In this we are not referring to the differences which exist between the range of hearing in different individuals. These undoubtedly arise from what may be spoken of as differences in the compass of the re- ceptive instrument in different individuals. These differ- ences exist both at the upper and lower extremities of the scale, Those in whom the upward range is defective fail to hear the noises of certain insects, and are also unable to

hear organ-pipes of very high pitch. The absence of the lower range of hearing is less well established.

The complete range of audible musical sounds comprises about nine octaves. taves below the lowest note of a bass voice, to somewhere about

three octaves above C in alt. The upper notes of this range are not audible to some persons. Organ-pipes are made having notes covering this whole range, except about the top half-octave. The position of notes is so frequently referred to the length of the corresponding organ- pipe that it is convenient here to give these lengths, with the usual notation for the notes to which they correspond. 2 octaves above.

i 2 inch. 8va, = == cv 1} inches. — itn = i or —— CY cinaltissimo. 3 inches. oe ——— o™ oin alt. 6 inches. —_—— —— c™ ¢ treble. 1 foot. —= C c middle. 2 feet. a C° a: tenor. 4 feet. ——— CG Great c. 8 feet. se

—— Cor 16 feet.

=

S == C or 32 feet.

la

2 octaves below.

N.B.—The letter notation is continued from each C upwards through the octave, and changes at the next C above.

The normal perception of pitch does not, however, cover all this range. Its extent varies much in different indivi- duals. We cannot assume that pitch can be completely perceived in the normal manner in either the uppermost octave or the lowest octave of the foregoing range. The lower half of the uppermost octave is easily examined, wherever an organ is available, by drawing the fifteenth alone and sounding the notes of the upper half octave of the keyboard. These notes will generally be heard as sounds, but if a bit of a melody be sounded on them, for instance a simple scale passage, it will generally be found unrecognizable. The same is the case with the lowest octave lying between the 16-foot and 32-foot notes. There has been considerable doubt as to the reality of the notes which profess to occupy this position. All instruments sound notes of a complex character, which include sounds of a higher pitch than the nominal note, in fact the harmonics, of which the nominal note is the fundamental. And doubts have

been raised, which have in some cases proved to be well founded, whether the deep notes in question really contain any of the nominal note or funda- mental at all, and do not rather consist entirely of har- monics, or of sounds whose real pitch is much higher than the nominal one.

Range of

It extends from the 32-foot C, two oc- musical

sounds,

Deter- mination of fre- queney.

104

These doubts have been settled in the case of the low notes of the organ by the process of analysis by beats. Where two notes differing slightly in pitch form beats, the number of beats in a second is equal to the difference of the frequencies. If, then, the frequencies of the notes sounded differ by one vibration per second nearly, there will be one beat per second ; if they differ by two or three per second there will be two or three beats. The frequencies of the two lowest notes of the 32-foot range are sufficiently nearly—
C.=1%

C= 18.

If, therefore, C and C¥ are true notes they should give about one beat per second. The octaves of these notes give about two beats per second, and the twelfths give about three beats per second. The notes of large-scale open 32-foot pipes when thus tested give one beat per second. The notes of stopped pipes vary very much ac- cording to the scale and voicing, but in these low notes no fundamental has as yet been detected. They always present the three beats characteristic of the twelfth.

This is contrary to the statement, long accepted on the authority of Helmholtz, that large-scale stopped pipes give nearly pure tones. It does not appear that that statement was ever verified, and it appears not to be correct. 32-foot stops are not very common, but these principles can be illustrated

with 16-foot stops. Here the fundamental beat is about two per second, the octave four, and the twelfth six for adjoining semitones at the bottom of the range. ‘The same results are easily found. As a rule the large open 16-foot stops of the pedal give their funda- mentals quite pure, while stopped pipes professing to speak the same notes almost invariably present the six beats of the twelfth, sometimes with and sometimes without funda- mental. The conclusion we may draw is that the enor- mous power laid on to the lower notes of the organ enables the test of audibility to be made under most favourable circumstances, and that under these circumstances the limit of audible sounds can be carried down to a point close to the 32-foot C, or to a frequency of about 17.

The determination of the frequency or vibration number of par- ticular notes was first effected by calculations depending on the mechanical theory of strings. Subsequently the method of beats was employed, and the first reliable determinations appear to have been made by this method, which was developed by Scheibler. The usual process consists of providing a series of notes each of which makes four beats with its next neighbour, whence every such pair has vibration numbers differing by four. The series extends over an octave, whence the total difference of frequency between the extreme notes which form the octave is known. And this number is equal to the frequeney of the lower note of the octave. This method, however, is diffieult of execution, and depends on a number of observations, each of which is liable to error.

The method deseribed in most of the books depends on the employment of the ‘‘siren.” This consists essentially of a circular plate, revolving on an axis through its centre at right angles to its plane. Series of holes are arranged in eircles, and puffs of air are sent through the holes as they move over fixed holes. In this way a known number of impulses is produced at each revolution. The revolutions are counted by a wheel work. With the more perfect forms of this instrument fair determinations of frequency could be effected by bringing the note of the instrument into coin- cidence with that to be determined, and counting the impulses de- livered during a certain time. But until quite recently there was great uncertainty as to the actual frequency of the notes in use. In particular, the forks sold some time ago as 512 for treble C were for the most part several vibrations higher. And the

various forks sold as philharmonic have at different times represented a great variety of pitches. The pitch of treble C has in recent times varied between the limits 512 and 540, being almost exactly a semitone. A few of the principal pitches may be summarized as follows :—

——*——= =512—old theoretical pitch. 518—equal temperament equivalent of French dia- pason normale. A=435. ale = 4 of Arts. Helmholtz's theoretical itch.

Pp 540—Modern concert pitch.

MUSIC

[SCIENTIFIC BASis,

There is a tendency in practice to keep the pitch rising. This appears to arise from the habit among musicians of considering flatness in the orchestra or in singing a more heinous offence than sharpness. Everybody tries, at all events, not to be flat. Wind instruments made to concert pitch force the piteh up at all public performances. A rise is easily made, but a fall only with great difficulty. It will be seen that the pitch of the French diapason normale is the best part of a semitone below modern concert pitch, and the difficulty of getting it adopted is well known.

Forks stamped with the numbers of vibrations are now issued privately by some of the principal musical firms, and they appear to be fairly accurate. Probably they are copied from certain series of forks beating four per second which have been constructed according to Scheibler's process, so as to furnish the vibration numbers.

The most easy and convenient way of settling the frequency of tuning-forks, or rather of adjusting any vibrating body to a standard note, appears to be by means of a uniform rotation machine con- . trolled by a clock so as to revolve exactly once per second. A disk is mounted on the machine, having say 135 radial slits spoke- wise. A light behind the disk then throws 135 flashes per second. If a tuning-fork or other vibrating body be placed in front of the disk and looked at against the illuminated background, it presents — a pattern which will be stationary if the fork be 135 or 270 or

405 or 540, or any other multiple of 135. If the fork is sharp the pattern moves one way, if flat the other. In this way the vibra- tion number of a vibrating body is referred directly to the clock, and the adjustment to the standard note is one easily made, and not requiring great delicacy of observation.

3. The loudness or intensity of notes undoubtedly in- Intensit

creases with the magnitude of the displacements of which the vibrations consist, or rather perhaps with the magni- tude of the changes of pressure which occur in the neigh- bourhood of the ear. It has been customary to speak of the energy of the vibration as affording a measure of in- tensity, and this is true from a mechanical point of view. But the subjective intensity or loudness is certainly not correctly measured by any of these quantities. Further, the same changes of pressure or the same mechanical intensity cause sounds which vary in loudness according to the pitch. Taking this last point first, it is easy to show that a given mechanical intensity produces a very much louder sound in the higher parts of the scale than in the lower. The simplest way of looking at this is to consider the work employed in exciting the pipes of an organ-stop. The upper pipes take only a small fraction of the wind, and consequently of the power, used by the lower ones, and yet the upper pipes appear quite as loud. It has been shown that with a particular stop the work consumed was proportional to the length of the pipe, and so inversely as the vibration number.

It has been maintained lately that the loudness of sound is measured by the amplitude of the motion, or by the changes of pressure, rather than by the mechanical inten- sity. The experiments on which this view is based consist of dropping weights from different heights. A weight m from a height A gives a certain loudness. Now let the weight be doubled, the question is whether the loudness remains the same when the height is halved, or when it is

divided by ./2. The experiments appear to prove that the latter is the case. The estimation of the loudness is difficult on account of the apparent change of timbre, but the experiments are carefully arranged and discussed, and appear to establish a prima facie case! The experiments are based upon Fechner’s law, and appear to afford proof of its applicability. Fechner’s law

may be stated thus :— equal differences of sensation are produced by changes which are equal fractions of the whole excitation. Thus we may take the change in the mechanical excitation to consist in doubling it; then every time that it is doubled a change will be made in the sensation which is in all cases equally recognizable. The general probability of the truth of this will be seen by enumerating ten different magnitudes under which sounds may be classified ; these represent fairly equal differences of sensation :—

1 Norr. Zeitschrift fir Biologie, 1879, p. 297.

If ho it

0)

SCIENTIFIC BASIS. |

Loud. Not loud. + ~~—_—_———_—_—_———[eee 4 op oe. 7 8. 9 . 10 tif If ff mf mp p pp ppp Magnitude | serves for sounds louder than those used in music, 10 for sounds softer than those used in music,— microscopic sounds, so to speak. It seems reasonable, without going into detail, to assume that the mechanical ratio of any two consecutive magnitudes is the same, The general expression of this law is, The measure of sensation is the logarithm of the mechanical excitation. It appears probable that the ratio of energy corresponding to one of the above differences of magnitude is somewhere about 2 or 3. The corresponding ratio depending on amplitude or compression would be from 1:4 to 1°7, but these quan~~ tities are not known with any a¢curacy. 4, The pitch depending on the period or frequency and the loudness on the amplitude or magnitude of the changes,

st0 there remains on the one hand the quality of tone, and on

the other the form of the vibration or the manner in which the motion takes place between the prescribed limits. These may be expected to correspond with each other, and in fact they do so. The peculiarities of form of vibration are most easily discussed in the case of a musical string whose vibrations are started or maintained in a given manner, The smoothest and purest quality of tone that can be produced is*known as a simple tone. When a string produces a simple tone its motion is such that its shape at any

moment is that of a curve of sines, and that every point of the string executes oscillations according to the pendulum law.

Simple tones are also produced by any vibrating surface which moves according to the pendulum law. The method for producing simple tones given by Helmholtz, and com- monly employed, is to use tuning-forks as the sources of sound, and present their extreme faces to the opening of a resonator or air-chamber arranged so as to vibrate to the same note as the fork. Resonators may be conveniently made from wide-mouthed bottles with flat corks having holes bored in them. ‘The dimensions are usually found by trial, though data exist for their calculation. Simple tones have also been produced by fitting a sort of organ- pipe mouthpiece into the corks of such bottles. The mouths require to be cut up much higher than usual; the notes produced are of an exceedingly full and pure char- acter. Such bottle-notes can be blown from an organ- bellows, and being easily manipulated are very suitable for experiments on the properties of simple tones.

The law of Ohm states that the simple tone or pendulum vibration is that to which the sensation of pitch is at- tached in its simplest form. If the motion which consti- tutes the vibration of a note be of any other type, it is capable of being analysed by the ear into a series of simple tones according to what is called Fourier’s Theorem. This 1s most simply described in connexion with stretched strings, assuming that the notes which are exhibited in the form of the string pass over into the air through the sound-board without essential alteration of quality, which appears to be true in a general way. TF ourier’s Theorem, as applied to a string, states that the motion of the string Is equivalent to the sum of the motions which would result if there were a curve of sines of the whole length, two curves of sines each of half the length, three each of one- third the length, and so on,—the amplitudes being deter- mined when the total motion to be represented is given. This equivalence is true mechanically ; the law of Ohm Says that it is also true for the ear. Hence a great Presumption that the ear acts by a receptive mechanism obeying the laws of mechanics.

The notes formed by the division of a string into two,

om WS oc

three, or more parts are commonly called harmonics. They are also called overtones; but this word includes such cases as those of bars, &c., where the notes produced by these divisions are not harmonious with the fundamental. Har- monics play an important part in the theory of consonant combinations, but the theory of consonance cannot be rested entirely upon the properties of harmonics.

CoNSONANCE AND DISSONANCE.

It was already known in ancient times that lengths of the same stretched string having the ratio of any two small whole numbers form consonant intervals, or perhaps we may more correctly say smooth combinations, since the interval of a fourth (3:4) is regarded as a dissonance in technical music, though it is a smooth combination. The question why smooth combinations are associated with small whole numbers is known as the Pythagorean ques- tion. The modern knowledge that the length of a given string is inversely as the vibration number refers the ques- tion more generally to vibration numbers rather than to lengths of string. This question has been answered by Helmholtz; we proceed to give a short account of his answer, with some slight modifications.

It has been long known that when two notes form an imperfect unison, or nearly form almost any smooth combination, flutterings or beats are heard. These have been already described in the case of imperfect unisons where two notes differ but little from each other in pitch. They exist also, in most cases, where two notes nearly, but not quite, form a smooth combination. According to Helmholtz, beats are the cause of the sensation of disson- ance, and to seek further for this cause we must seek the cause of beats. We may note that this must be taken with some limitation, since the fourth is regarded as a dissonance, though it presents no beats. In the case of imperfect unisons there is no difficulty. Such beats have been long explained as arising out of the alternate coin- cidences and oppositions of the motions or pressures arising from the two sets of vibrations.

In other cases, however, this explanation is not applic- able. Explanations similar in principle have been given by Smith, an English writer of the last

century; but these only amount to reckoning the recurrence of certain configurations arising from the superposition of the two sets of motions. No hypothesis is made as to the actual nature of the receptive mechanism of the ear, and no attempt is made to determine of what sounds the beats consist, nor how such sounds arise. We have already seen that the ear receives separately notes which are more than one or two semitones apart. They appear to be received on different parts of the aural mechanism. The production of the beats in the case of imperfect fifths, octaves, &e., where the impulses fall on different parts of the receptive mechanism, appears therefore to be due to secondary causes rather than to the direct superposition of the impulses.

Beats of Harmonics.—This class of beats arises from the fact that in compound notes containing harmonics a pair of notes representing two small whole numbers gives rise to the coincidence of a pair of harmonics forming a unison, and, if the interval be mistuned, the harmonics form an imperfect unison. Beats of this description are easily identified by the pitch of the harmonics. The imper- fect unison gives rise to alternations of sound and silence, or to variations of intensity, of a note having the pitch in question. With practice these variations can be heard with the unaided ear. But the employment of resonators, tuned to the pitch in question and connected with the ear, causes the beat to be heard with great intensity.

Beats of Combination Tones—When two notes are

sounded loudly at the same time they give rise to the | appearance of certain other notes within the ear, which are called combination tones. Call the vibration num- bers of the two notes p and g. Then the first combina- tion tone (Tartini tone, difference tone) has the frequency p-q. Other combination tones are also formed, whose fre- quencies are of the forms p —2g, »—3g, and so on. Each of these has its region of greatest intensity when its frequency is smallest consistently with its forming an audible sound. Thus the first difference tone (p—q) is most powerful when p and gq differ only by one or more semitones, though the note is still recognizable

by the beats it produces when p and q are a fifth or an octave apart. The beats of mistuned consonant intervals other than the beats of harmonics are produced by the formation of im- perfect unisons between combination tones and primaries, or among the combination tones themselves,

Intervals of the form h:1.—These comprise the inter- vals formed between fundamental and harmonics. The beats of mistuned consonances of the form 4:1, other than the beats of harmonics, consist of variations of in- tensity of the lower note of the pair. This rule has been established experimentally by the employment of the pure notes furnished by bottles blown from an organ-bellows.

Octave. Let the notes be 100: 201. p—g=101, which

with 100 gives one beat per second.

Twelfth. Let the notes be 100: 301. p-—2q¢=101, which

with 100 gives one beat per second.

Double octave. Let the notes be 100: 401. p—3g=101.

One beat per second as before, and so on.

These explanations satisfy the observation that the beats are on the lower notes of the combinations.

Other Consonant Intervals.—The chief remaining con- sonance which furnishes beats is the fifth. There is no doubt that the beats of the fifth, other than the beats of harmonics, are chiefly on the octave below the lower note. Hence the following explanation :—

MUS—MUS

Fifth. Let the notes be 200: 301, p-q=10l 2g—-p= 99

2 beats per second, an octave below the lower note of the pair.

Triad with Mistuned Third.—If a fifth be tuned per- fect and a third inserted, the note two octaves below the lowest note of the triad can generally be heard distinctly, If the third be mistuned, beats are heard on that note,

Let the notes be 400, 501, 600,

501 -400=101

600—-501— 99

2 beats per second, two octaves below the lowest note of the triad. There can be little doubt that the definition of con- sonances as intervals which can be tuned free from beats lies at the basis of almost all music. There can also be little doubt that the power of the perception or memory of absolute pitch, though sparely distributed, must ensure to those musicians who have it influence on the progress of the art. With these persons the influence of conson- ance or smoothness is generally subordinate to the recog- nition of the pitch of the notes used. Between these two elements scales of different kinds have been evolved in different parts of the world. These scales have almost invariably a basis of consonances, generally fifths. But when once developed the melodic effects almost invariably supersede the reference to the consonances in the ears of expert persons. The scales of different countries and systems, embodied in melodies, sound atrocious to those accustomed to other scales, quite independently of the consonant relations on which they are all founded in common, The subject of Temperament deals with the general theory of the construction of scales from slightly mistuned consonances, (R. H. M. B.)

MUSICAL-BOX, an instrument for producing by me- chanical meang tunes or pieces of music. The modern musical-box is an elaboration of the elegant toy musical snuff-box in vogue during the 18th century. The notes or musical sounds are produced by the vibration of steel teeth, or springs cut in a comb or flat plate of steel. The teeth are graduated in length from end to end of the comb or plate, the longer teeth giving the deeper notes ; and, where necessary, by filing or loading with lead the individual teeth are accurately attuned. Each tone and semitone in the scale is represented by three or four separate teeth in the comb, to permit of successive repetitions

of the same note when required by the music. The teeth are acted upon and musical vibrations produced by the revolution of a brass cylinder studded with projecting pins, which, as they move round, raise and release the proper teeth at due intervals according to the nature of the music. An entire revolution of the cylinder completes the performance of the special pieces of music for which the apparatus is set, but upon the same cylinder there may be inserted pins for performing as many as thirty-six separate airs. This is accomplished by making both the points of the teeth or springs and the projecting pins which touch them very fine, so that a very small change in the position of the cylinder is sufficient to bring an entirely distinct set of pins in contact with the note teeth. In the more elaborate musical-boxes the cylinders are removable, and may be replaced by others containing distinct sets of music. In these also there are combinations of bell, drum, cymbal, and triangle effects, &c. The revolving motion of the

cylinder is effected by a spring and clock-work, and the rate of revolution is regulated by a fly regulator. The head- quarters of the musical-box trade is Geneva, where the manufacture gives employment to upwards of a thousand persons.

The musical-box is a type of numerous instruments for produc- ing musical effects by mechanical means, in all of which a revolving cylinder or barrel studded with pins is the governing feature. The principle of the barrel operating by percussion or by wind on reeds, pipes, or strings governs carillons or music bells, barrel organs, mechanical flutes, celestial voices, harmoniphones, and the sometimes huge and complex orchestrions in which a combination of all orchestral effects is attempted. A principle of more recent introduction than the studded cylinder consists of sheets of perfo- rated paper or card, somewhat similar to the Jacquard apparatus for weaving. The perforations correspond in position and length to the pitch and duration of the note they represent, and as the web or long sheet of paper passes over the instrument, the perforated holes are brought in proper position and sequence under the influence af the suction or pressure of air from a bellows, and thereby the notes are either directly acted on, as in the case of reed instruments, or the opening and closing of valves set in motion levers or liber- ate springs which govern special notes. The United States

are the original home of the instruments controlled by perforated paper known as orguinettes, organinas, melodeons, &c. ;

MUSK, a substance of powerful and most enduring odour, is a secretion of the male Musk Drxr (q.v.). Three kinds of musk are distinguished in commerce, the most important and valuable being the Chinese or Tong-king musk, imported principally from Shanghai. It is put up in small tin-lined silk-covered caddies, each contain- ing from two to three dozen pods. These are generally adulterated to an enormous extent with dried blood, frag- ments of leather, leaden pellets, peas, &c., so that often

little more than the smell of the original tenant of the pod remains. The Chinese pods may vary in value accord- ing to quality and genuineness from 14s. to 40s. per oz. Musk collected from the western Himalayas is exported from India to the extent of from 3000 to 5000 oz. annually. It is much less prized than genuine Tong-king musk. The third variety, known as Kabardine or Siberian musk, is imported from Central Asia by way of Russia. It is in large pods, said to be yielded by a distinct species of deer, and is very inferior in point of odour.

Good musk is of a dark purplish colour, dry, smooth, and unctuous to the touch and bitter in taste. It dissolves in boiling water to the extent of about one-half, alcohol takes up one-third of the substance, and ether and chloroform dissolve still less. A grain of musk will distinctly scent millions of cubic feet of air without any appreciable loss of weight, and its scent is not only more pene- trating but more persistent than that of any other known sub- stance. Its chemical constitution has not been specially investi- gated; but in addition to its odoriferous principle it contains ammonia, cholestrin, fatty matter, a bittcr resinous substance and other animal principles. Asa material in perfumery it is of the first importance, its powerful and enduring odour giving strength and permanency to the vegetable essences, so that it is a principal ingredient in nearly all compounded perfumes. Musk, or some substance possessed of the musk odour, is also contained in glands in the jaw of alligators and crocodiles, whence it has been extracted for use in perfumery in India and Egypt. The musk-ox and the musk-rat (Indian and European) are, as their names

indicate, re- markable for a musk odour (sce below). Inthe vegetable kingdom also a musky smell pervades the seeds of Abelmoschus moschatus, the entire plant Mimulus moschatus, and the sumbul root (Luryangium Sumbul).

MUSK-DEER, an animal belonging to the genus J/os- chus, of the section Pecora, a division of the Artiodactyle Ungulates (see MAMMALIA, vol. xv. p. 430), and allied to the Deer (Cervidzx). In many respects it differs from the typical members of that group and stands by itself as an isolated zoological form, retaining characters belonging to the older and more generalized types of ruminants before they were distinctly separated into the horned and the antlered sections now dominant upon the earth. One of these characters is that both sexes are entirely devoid of any ‘ sort of frontal appendage. In this, however, it agrees with one genus of true deer (Hydropotes) ; and, as in that animal, the upper canine teeth of the males are remarkably deve- loped, long, slender, sharp-pointed, and gently curved, pro- jecting downwards out of the mouth with the ends turned somewhat backwards. Among the anatomical peculiarities in which it differs from all true deer is the presence of a gall-bladder.

Although, owing to variations of colour presented by different individuals in different localities and seasons, several nominal species have been described, zoologists are now generally agreed that there is but one, the Moschus moschiferus of Linnzeus. In size it is rather less than the Huropean roe-deer, being about 20 inches high at the shoulder. Its limbs, especially the hinder ones, are long. The feet are remarkable for the great development of the lateral pair of hoofs, and for the freedom of motion they all present, so that they appear to have the power of grasping Projecting rocky points,—a power which must be of great assistance to the animal in steadying it in its agile bounds among the crags of its native haunts. The ears are large, and the tail quite rudimentary. The hair covering the body 1s long, coarse, and of a peculiarly brittle and pith-like char- acter, breaking with the application of an extremely slight force ; it is generally of a greyish-brown colour, some- times inclined to yellowish red, and often variegated with lighter patches. The Musk-deer has a wide distribution over the highlands of central and eastern Asia, includ- Ing the greater part of southern Siberia, and extends to Kashmir on the south-west and Cochin-

China on the south- east, always, however, at great elevations,—being rarely found in summer below 8000 feet above the sea-level, and

ranging as high as the limits of the thickets of birch, rho- dodendron, and juniper, among which it mostly conceals itself in the day-time. It is a hardy, solitary, and retiring animal, chiefly nocturnal in its habits, and almost always found alone, rarely in pairs and never in herds. It is ex. ceedingly active and surefooted, having perhaps no equal in traversing rocks and precipitous ground; and it feeds on moss, grass, and leaves of the plants which grow on the mountains among which it makes its home.

Musk-deer.

Most of the animals of the group to which the Musk- deer belongs, in fact the large majority of mammals, have some portion of the cutaneous surface peculiarly modified and provided with glands secreting some odorous and oleaginous substance specially characteristic of the

species. This, correlated with the extraordinary develop- ment of the olfactory organs, appears to offer the principal means by which animals in a state of nature become aware of the presence of other individuals of their own species, or of those inimical to them, even at very great distances, and hence it is of extreme importance both to the wellbeing of the individual and to the continuance of the race. The situation of this specially modified portion of skin is extremely various, sometimes between the-toes, as in sheep, sometimes on the face in front of the eyes, as in many deer and antelopes. Sometimes it is in the form of a simple depression or shallow recess, often very deeply involuted, and in its most complete state of development it forms a distinct pouch or sac with a narrow tubular orifice. In this sac a considerable quantity of the secre- tion can accumulate until discharged by the action of a compressor muscle which surrounds it. This is the form taken by the special gland of the Musk-deer, which has made the animal so well known, and which has proved the cause of an unremitting persecution to its possessor. It is found in the male only, and is a sac about the size of a small orange, situated beneath the skin of the abdomen, the orifice being immediately in front of the preputial aperture. The secretion

with which the sac is filled is of dark-brown or chocolate colour, and when fresh described as being of the consistence of “moist gingerbread,” but becoming dry and granular after keeping. It has a peculiar and very powerful scent, which when properly diluted and treated forms the basis of many of our most admired perfumes. When the animal is killed the whole gland or “pod” is cut out and dried, and in this form reaches the market of the Western world, chiefly through China,

For further details on the anatomy and zoology of Moschus see Pallas, Spicilegia Zoologica, xiii. (1779); A. Milne- Edwards, ‘“‘ Recherches Anatomiques, Zoologiques, et Paleontologiques sur la Famille des Chevrotains,” in Annales des Sciences Naturelles, 5th ser., zool., ii. (1865); Brandt and Ratzeburg, Medieinische Zoologie, i. pp. 41-51 (1839); W. H. Flower, Proe, Zool. Soe. London, 1875, pp. 159-190; A. H. Garrod, ibid., 1877, pp. 287-292.

MUSKEGON, a city of the United States, the county seat of Muskegon county, Michigan, at the upper end of Muskegon Lake, a fine sheet of water formed by the Muskegon river before it falls into Lake Michigan. ~The staple trade is in lumber, which is floated down the river, worked up by its saw-mills and planing-mills, and exported by boat and rail. : The cut of lumber in the season of 1882 was 650,000,000 feet. There are also car, engine, and boiler works, and various manufactories of wooden ware. The population increased from 6002 in 1870 to 11,262 in 1880. Settled in 1836, and laid out in 1853, Muskegon was incorporated as a village in 1861 and as a city in 1870.

MUSKELUNGE. See Pix.

MUSK-OX. The animal commonly known by this name, though approaching in size the smaller varieties of oxen, is in structure and habits closely allied to the sheep, its affinities being well expressed by the generic name Ovbos bestowed upon it by De Blainville. The specific name Moschatus, as also the common English appellatives “musk-ox,” “musk-buffalo,” or “musk-sheep” applied to it by various authors, refer to the musky odour which the animal exhales. This does not appear to be due to

the secretion of a special gland, as in the case of the Musk-deer ; but it must be observed that, except as regards the osteology, very little is known of the anatomy of this species,

The Ovibos moschatus about equals in size the small

Musk-ox.

Welsh and Scotch cattle. The head is large and broad. The horns in the old males have extremely broad bases, meeting in the median line, and covering the brow and whole crown of the head. They are directed at first downwards by the side of the face and then turn upwards and forwards, ending in the same plane as the eye. Their basal halves are of a dull white colour, oval in section and coarsely fibrous ; their middle part smooth, shining, and round ; their tips black. In the females and young males the horns are smaller, and their bases are separated from each other by a space in the middle of the forehead. The ears are small, erect, and pointed, and nearly concealed in the hair. The space between the nostrils and the upper lip 1s covered with short close hair, as in sheep and goats, without any trace of the bare “muffle” of oxen. The greater part of the animal is covered with long brown hair, thick, matted, and curly on the shoulders, so as to give

the appearance of a hump, but elsewhere straight and hanging down,—that of the sides, back, and haunches reaching as far as the middle of the legs and entirely con- cealing the very short tail. There is also a thick woolly under-fur, shed in the summer. The hair on the lower jaw, throat, and chest is long and straight, and hangs down like a beard or dewlap, though there is no loose fold of skin in this situation as inoxen. The limbs are stout and short, terminating in unsymmetrical hoofs, the external being rounded, the internal pointed, and the sole partially covered with hair.

The Musk-ox is at the present day confined to the most northern parts of North America, where it ranges over the rocky barren grounds between the 60th parallel and the shores of the Arctic Sea, Its southern range is gradually contracting, and it appears that it is no longer met with west of the Mackenzic river, though formerly abundant as far as Eschscholtz Bay.

Northwards and eastwards it extends through the Parry Islands and Grinnell Land to north Greenland, reaching on the west coast as far south as Melville Bay ; and it was also met with in abundance by the German polar expedition of 1869-1870 at Sabine Island on the east coast. No trace of it has been found in Spitzbergen or Franz Joseph Land. As proved by the discovery of fossil remains, it ranged during the Pleistocene period over northern Siberia and the plains of Germany and France, its bones occurring very generally in river deposits along with those of the reindeer, mammoth, and woolly rhinoceros. It has also been found in ordinary Pleistocene gravels in several parts of England, as Maidenhead, Bromley, Freshfield near Bath, Barnwood near Gloucester, and also in the lower brick earth of the Thames valley at Crayford, Kent.

It is gregarious in habit, assembling in herds of twenty or thirty head, or, according to Hearne, sometimes eighty or a hundred, in which ‘there are seldom more than two or three full-grown males, They run with considerable speed, notwithstanding the shortness of their legs. Major H. W. Feilden, naturalist to the Arctic Expedition of 1875, says: ‘‘No person watching this animal ina state of nature could fail to see how essentially ovine are its actions. When alarmed they gather together like a flock of sheep herded by a collie dog, and the way in which they pack closely together and follow blindly the vacillating leadership of the old ram is unques- tionably sheep-like. When thoroughly frightened they take to the hills, ascending precipitous slopes and scaling rocks with great agility.” They feed chiefly on grass, but also on moss, lichens, and tender shoots of the willow and pine. The female brings forth one young one in the end of May or beginning of June after a gestation of nine months. According to Sir J, Richardson, ‘‘ when this animal is fat its flesh is well tasted, and resembles that of the caribou, but has a coarser grain. The flesh of the bulls is highly flavoured, and both bulls and cows when lean smell strongly of musk, their flesh at the same time being very dark and tough, and certainly far inferior to that of any other ruminating animal existing in North America.” The carcase of a Musk-ox weighs, exclusive of fat, above 3 cwt. On this subject Major Feilden says: ‘The causc of the disagreeable odour which frequently taints the flesh of these animals has received no elucidation from my observations. It does not appear to be confined to eithcr sex, or to any particular season of the year; for a young unweaned

animal, killed at its mother's side and transferred within an hour to the stew-pans, was as rank and objectionable as any. The flesh of some of these animals of which I have partaken was dark, tender, and as well flavoured as that of four-year old Southdown mutton" (Zoologist, September 1877).

See Richardson, Fauna Boreali-Americana (1829), and Zoology of H.M.S. Herald (1882); W. Boyd Dawkins, "'Ovibos moschatus," in British Pleistocene Mammalia, part v.; Memoirs of the Paleontographical Society (1872).

MUSK-RAT. A name commonly applied to an animal also called Musquasn (Fiber zibethicus), of the sub-family Arvicoline, family Muridzx.1 It is related in structure and habits to the English water-vole, but is of larger size, the head and body being about 12 inches in length and the tail but little less. It is rather a heavily-built animal, with a broad head, no distinct neck, and short limbs ; the eyes are small, and the ears project very little beyond the fur. The fore-limbs have four toes and a rudimentary thumb, all with claws ; the hind limbs are larger, with five distinct toes, united by short webs at their bases. The tail is laterally compressed, nearly naked, and scaly. The hair much resembles that of a beaver, but is shorter; it

' See Mamata, vol. xv. p. 419, where also an illustration (fig. 94, p. 418) of its skull and dentition is given.

consists of a thick soft under-fur, interspersed with longer | 1 foot in length by 3 feet in breadth, and having 104

stiff, glistening hairs, which overlie and conceal the former, on the upper surface and sides of the body. The general colour is dark umber-brown, almost black on the back and grey below. The tail and naked parts of the feet are black. The musky odour from which it derives its name is due to the secretion of a large gland situated in the inguinal region, and present in both sexes.

The Musk-rat is the only species of its genus and is peculiar to America, being extensively distributed in suit- able localities in the northern part of the continent, extend-

Musk-rat.

ing from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and from the Rio Grande to the barren grounds bordering the Arctic Seas. It is aquatic in its habits, living on the shores of lakes and rivers, swimming and diving with great facility, feed- ing on the roots, stems, and leaves of water-plants, or on fruits and vegetables which grow near the margin of the streams it inhabits. Musk-rats are most active at night, spending the greater part of the day concealed in their burrows dug out of the bank, consisting of a chamber with numerous passages, all of which open under the surface of the water. For winter quarters they build more elaborate houses of conical or dome-like form, composed of sedges, grasses, and similar materials plastered together with mud. As their fur is an important article of commerce, large numbers are annually killed, being either trapped or speared at the mouths of their holes.

The name Musk-rat is applied in India to a large species of Shrew (Sorex exruleseens or indieus) which frequents houses at night, hunting round rooms for cockroaches and other insects, occasion- ally uttering a sharp shrill cry. The strong musky odour of the animal arises from large glands beneath the skin of the side of the body, a short distance behind the fore- limbs. This odour is 80 powerful and penetrating that it is popularly believed in India that if the animal runs over a corked bottle of wine or beer it will Infect the fluid within. Jerdon says that certainly many bottles are met with quite undrinkable from the peculiar musky odour of their contents, but, rejecting the possibility of its passing through the glass, he attributes it to the corks having been infected pre- viously to bottling, stating in corroboration of this view that he has never found the odour in liquors bottled in England.

MUSLIN, a term embracing the thin delicate woven cotton fabrics, the lightest and most airy of all textures. The word is derived from Mosul; the original home of muslin-weaving is the East Indies, where even yet won- derful fabrics for airy lightness and delicacy continue to be woven with the aid of only the most rude and primitive appliances, The most delicate

muslins are made at Dacca, where webs have been woven of yarn calculated to be equal to 380° (that is, 380 hanks, each 840 yards in length, weigh 1 1b), Such a web measuring 10 yards

threads of warp and 100 of weft per inch, was found to weigh not more than 1565 grains. Figured, embroi- dered, colour-woven, and printed muslins are made at various places, principally in Madras province, and gold and silver printed muslins are made at Jeypore and Hy- derabad in India. The making of muslin in Europe was first attempted at Glasgow by Robert Monteith about the year 1780, but he had to procure Indian bird-nest yarn for his web. The improvements in machinery effected about that time, however, soon enabled spinners to produce yarn of high counts, and thereafter the muslin trade took firm hold in the west of Scotland. In recent times the perfection of combing machinery, &c., has enabled spinners to supply yarn of much greater tenuity than has ever been spun in India, and indeed vastly finer than is of any use for weaving purposes. A few yards of muslin have been woven with 700° cotton, but it is of use only to indicate the limit up to which it is possible to weave yarn. Fine muslin or tarlatan has been woven of 440° yarn by M. Thivel Michon of Tarare in France, but to the eye and touch it is less fine and delicate than Dacca ‘‘mulmul khas,” owing possibly to dressing with starch, and to the less degree of condensation in machine-spinning as compared with hand-spinning. The varieties of European muslins and their applications are numerous. Among plain mus- lins are included books, mulls (from ‘ mulmul ”), jacconets, tarlatans, Bishop and Victoria lawns, nainsooks, &c., chiefly distinguished by variety of finish, dressing, folding, dc. For window-curtains, hangings, &c., there are manufactured harness and book muslins, lenos, sprigs, spots, and lappets ; and for ladies’ dresses plain, striped, and figured grenadines, and saccarillas, besides which dyed and printed muslins are largely used. Sewed muslin, which was formerly an important Scottish industry, also continues to be a branch of the trade.

MUSSCHENBROEK, Preter van (1692-1761), natural philosopher, was born at Leyden in March 1692, and studied at the university of his native city. The teacher from whom he derived the most profit was the eminent mathematician Gravesande. A scientific partnership was formed in 1717 between the master and the pupil for the prosecution of natural philosophy

according to the prin- ciples of Newton, and in opposition to those of Descartes ; Gravesande concentrating his attention on the theoretical part of the study, while Musschenbroek conducted the experiments. The consequence was that the downfall of Cartesianism and the establishment of Newtonianism were very much accelerated in Holland. Graduating in 1715 with a dissertation, De aeris presentia in humoribus ant- malium, Musschenbroek was appointed professor at Duis- burg in 1719. In 1723 he was promoted to the chair of natural philosophy and mathematics at Utrecht. In 1731 he declined an invitation to Copenhagen, and was promoted in consequence to the chair of astronomy at Utrecht in 1732. The attempt of George II. of England in 1737 to

attract him to the newly-established university of Gottingen

was also unsuccessful. At length, however, the claims of his native city overcame his resolution to remain at Utrecht, and he took possession of the mathematical chair at Leyden in 1739, where, declining all offers from abroad, he con- tinued till his death in September 1761. His first important production was Epitome elementorum physico- mathematicorum, 12mo, Leyden, 1726,—a work which was after- wards gradually altered as it passed throngh several editions, and which appeared at length (posthumously, edited by Ludolf) in 1762, under the title of Introductio ad philosophiam naturalem. The Physic experimentales et geometrice dissertationes (1729) threw new light on magnetism, capillary attraction, and the cohesion of bodies. A Latin edition with notes (1731) of the Italian work Saggi di naturali esperienze fatte nell' Accademia del Cimento con- tained amid many other curious investigations a description of a

new instrument, the pyrometer, which Musschenbroek had invented, and of several experiments which he had made on the expansion of bodies by heat. Musschenbroek is also the author of Hlementa physica, 8vo, 1734 (English translation 1744 by Colson), and of papers in the Mémoires of the Paris and St Petersburg Academics, and in the London Philosophical Transactions.

MUSSEL, a term applied in England to two families of Lamellibranch Molluscs,—the marine Mytilacea, of which the Edible Mussel, Mytilus

edulis, is the representa- tive, and the fresh-water Unionacea, of which the River Mussel, Unio pictorum, and the Swan Mussel, Anodon eyg- neus, are the common British examples. It is not obvious why these fresh-water forms have been associated popularly with the Mytlacea under the name Mussel, unless it be on account of the frequently very dark colour of their shells. They are somewhat remote from the sea mussels in struc- ture, and have not even a conimon economic importance.

The Sea Mussel (Mytilus edulis) belongs to the second order of the class Lamellibranchia (see vol. xvi. pp. 685 sy.), namely, the Heteromya, in which the anterior or pallial adductor is much smaller than the pedal or posterior adductor. It and the other Afytilacea are remarkable for the comparatively free condition of the gill-filaments, which, whilst adhering to one another to form gill-plates (vol. xvi. p. 689, fig. 133), are yet not fused to one another by con- crescence. It is also remarkable for the small size of its foot and the large development of two glands in the foot— the byssus-forming and the byssus-cementing glands.

The byssus is a collection of horny threads by which the Sea Mussel (like many other Lamellibranch or Bivalve Molluscs) fixes itself to stones, rocks, or submerged wood, but is not a permanent means of attachment, since it can be discarded by the animal, which, after a certain amount of locomotion, again fixes itself by new secretion of byssus from the foot. Such movement is, however, very rare. Mytilus possesses no siphonal tube-like productions of the margin of the mantle-skirt, nor any notching of the same, representative of the siphons which are found in its fresh- water ally, the Dreissena polymorpha.

Mytilus edulis is an exceedingly abundant and widely distributed form. It occurs on both sides of the northern Atlantic and in the Mediterranean basin. It presents varieties of form and colour according to the depth of water and other circumstances of its habitat. Usually it is found on the British coast encrusting rocks exposed at low tides, or on the flat surfaces formed by sandbanks overlying clay, the latter kind of colonies being known locally as “scalps.” Under these conditions it forms con- tinuous masses of individuals closely packed together, sometimes extending over many acres of surface and numbering millions. The readiness with which

the young Mytilus attaches itself to wicker-work is made the means of artificially cultivating and securing these molluscs for the market both in the bay of Kiel in North Germany and at the mouth of the Somme and other spots on the coast of France.

Natural scalps are subject to extreme vicissitudes: an area of many acres may be destroyed by a local change of current producing a deposit of sand or shingle over the scalp, or by exposure to frost at low tide in winter, or by accumulation of decomposing vegetable matter. The chief localities of natural scalps on the British coast are Morecambe Bay in Lancashire and the flat eastern shores, especially that of the Wash of Lincoln, and similar shallow bays. These scalps are in some cases in the hands of private owners, but the English Government has not granted sufficiently definite rights to such individuals to enable them to protect their property from marauders, and to justify them in undertaking artificial cultivation.

The Sea Mussel is scarcely inferior in commercial value to the oyster. In 1878 the value of mussels exported from Antwerp alone

to Paris to be used as human food was £280,000. In Britain their chief consumption is in the deep-sea line fishery, where they are held to be the most killing of all baits. Twenty-eight boats en- gaged in haddock-fishing at Eyemouth used between October 1882 and May 1883 920 tons of mussels (about 47 million individuals), costing nearly £1800 to the fishermen, about one-half of which sum was expended on the carriage of the mussels. It is quite impossible to calculate the number of tons of mussels annually used in this way by British fishermen, but it amounts to some hundreds of thousands, and the supplying of the market would offer a lucrative investment for capital did the Government grant definite proprietary rights over the fore-shore and sea-bottom to those ready to enter upon such enterprise. Many thousand tons of mussels are waste- fully employed as manure by the farmers on lands adjoining scalp- producing coast, as in Lancashire and Norfolk, three half-pence a bushel being the price quoted in such cases. It is a curious fact, illustrative of the ignorant procedure and arbitrary fashions of fisher-folk, that on the Atlantic seaboard of the United States the Sea Mussel, Mytilus edulis, though common, is not uscd as bait

nor as food. Instead, the Soft Clam, Mya arenaria, a Lamellibranch not used by English or Norwegian fishermen, though abundant on their shores, is employed as bait by the fishermen to the extent of 1} million bushels per annum, valued at £120,000. At the mouth of the river Conway in North Wales the Sea Mussel is crushed in large quantities in order to extract pearls of an inferior quality which are occasionally found in these as in other Lamellibranch Molluses (Gwyn Jeffreys).

Mytilus edulis is considered of fair size for eating when it is 2 inches in length, which size is attained in three years after the spat or young mussel has fixed itself. Under favourable circumstances it will grow much larger than this, specimens being recorded of 9 inches in length. It is very tolerant of fresh water, fattening best, as does the oyster, in water of density 1014 (the density of the water of the North Sea being 1026). Experiments made by removing mussels from salt watcr to brackish, and finally to quite fresh water show that it is even more tolerant of fresh water than the oyster; of thirty mussels so transferred all were alive after fifteen days. Mytilus edulis is occasionally poisonous, owing to conditions not satisfactorily determined.

The fresh-water Mussels, Anodon cygneus, Unio picto- rum, and Unio margaritiferus belong to the order Isomya of Lamellibranch Molluscs, in which the anterior and posterior adductor muscles are equally developed. An account of the anatomy of Anodon is given in the article Mouuusca. Unio differs in no important point from Ano- don in internal structure. The family Unionacea, to which these genera belong, is of world-wide distribution, and its species occur only in ponds and rivers. A vast number of species arranged in several genera and sub-genera have been distinguished, but in the British Islands the three species above named are the only claimants to the title of

“fresh-water mussel.”

Anodon eygneus, the Pond Mussel or Swan Mussel, appears to be entircly without economic importance. Unio pictoruwm, the common River Mussel (Thames), appears to owe its name to the fact that the shells were used at one time for holding water-colour paints as now shells of this species and of the Sea Mussel are used for holding gold and silver paint sold by artists’

colourmen, but it has no other economic value. Unio margaritiferus, the Pearl Mussel, was at one time of considerable importance as a source of pearls, and the pearl mussel fishery is to this day carried on under peculiar state regulations in Sweden and Saxony, and other parts of the Continent. In Scotland and Ireland the pear! mussel fishery was also of import- ance, but has altogether dwindled into insignificance since the open- ing up of commercial intercourse with the East and with the islands of the Pacific Ocean, whence finer and more abundant pearls than those of Unio margaritiferus are derived.

In the last forty years of the last century pearls were exported from the Scotch fisheries to Paris to the value of £100,000 ; round pearls, the size of a pea, perfect in every respect, were worth £3 or £4. The Pearl Mussel is still used as bait in the Aberdeen cod fishery.

For an account of the anatomy of Mytilus edulis the reader is referred to the treatise by Sabatier on that subject (Paris, 1875). Its development from the egg has not been fully studied, but some very important facts as to the struc- ture of the free-swimming young or spat are to be found in the memoir by Lacaze Duthiers, Annales des Sciences Naturelles, 1856. The essay by Mr Charles Harding on Molluscs used for Food or Bait, published by the committee of the

London International Fisheries Exhibition, 1888, may be consulted as to the economic questions connected with the Sea Mussel. (B. R. L.)

MUSSELBURGH, a Scottish burgh of barony and re- gality, a municipal and parliamentary burgh in the parish of Inveresk and county of Midlothian, 54 miles east of Edinburgh. The burgh, which stretches about a mile

along the south shore of the Firth of Forth, is intersected by the river Esk and embraces the village of Fisherrow. In the town is Pinkie House, an ancient baronial resi- dence, formerly a seat of the abbot of Dunfermline, whose monastery held the lands and regality before the Reforma- tion, About a mile to the south-east the battle of Pinkie, so disastrous to the Scottish arms, was fought in 1547. Musselburgh is a place of great antiquity

; one of the two stone bridges over the Esk is said to represent an ancient Roman structure, and remains of Roman work have been found at Inveresk in the immediate vicinity. The town has an important factory for fishing-nets, a paper mill, breweries, and other manufactories, and there is a harbour, chiefly for fishermen, at Fisherrow. Loretto School here has its name from the old chapel of Loretto, founded in 1534 by Thomas Duthy, a hermit from Mount Sinai. The Musselburgh Links, east of the river, are much fre- quented by golfers, and upon the Links there is a good racecourse. The population of the burgh in 188] was

7866.

MUSSET, ALFRED bE (1810-1857), poet, play-writer, and novelist, was born on the 11th December 1810 in a house in the middle of old Paris, near the Hétel Cluny. His father, Victor de Musset, who in the course of his life held several ministerial posts of importance, traced his descent back as far as 1140. In Alfred's childhood there were various things which fostered his imaginative power. Heand his brother Paul, who afterwards wrote a biography of Alfred, delighted in reading old romances together, and in assuming the characters of the heroes of these romances. But it was not until about 1826 that Musset gave any definite sign of the mental force which afterwards distin- guished him. In the summer of 1827 he all but won a prix V@honneur by an essay on " The origin of our feelings," and in 1828, when Scribe, Mélesville, and the elder Brazier were in the habit of coming to Madame de Musset's house at Auteuil, where drawing-room plays and charades were constantly given, Musset, excited by this companionship, wrote his first poem, which, to judge from the extracts pre- served, was neither better nor worse than much other work of clever boys who may or may not afterwards turn out to be possessed of genius. Shortly after his first attempt in verse he was taken by Paul Foucher to Victor Hugo's house, where he met such men as Alfred de Vigny, Mérimée, and Sainte-Beuve. It was under Hugo's influence, no doubt, that he composed a play. The scene was laid in Spain, and some lines, showing a marked advance upon his first effort, are preserved. In 1828, when the war between the classical and the romantic school of literature was grow- ing daily more serious and exciting, Musset, who had pub- lished some verses in a country newspaper, boldly recited some of his work to Sainte-Beuve, who wrote of

it to a friend, “There is amongst us a boy full of genius.” At eighteen years old Musset produced a translation, with a few insertions of his own, of De Quincey’s Opium-Eater. This was published by Mame, attracted no attention, and has been long out of print. His first original volume was published in 1829 under the name of Contes Espagne et Itake, had an immediate and striking success, provoked bitter opposition, and produced many unworthy imitations. In December 1830 he was just twenty years old, and was already conscious of that curious double existence within him so frequently symbolized in his plays,—in Octave and Célio for instance (in Les Caprices de Mari- ne), who also stand for the two camps, the men of matter and the men of feeling,—which he has elsewhere described as characteristic of his generation. At this date his piece the Wwit Vénitienne was produced by Harel, manager of the Odéon. The exact causes of its failure might now be far to seek ; unlucky stage accidents had something to do

with it, but there seems reason to believe that there was a strongly-organized opposition. However this may be, the result was disastrous to the French stage; for it put a complete damper on the one poet who, as he afterwards showed both in theoretical and in practical writings, had the fine insight which took in at a glance the merits and defects both of the classical and the romantic schools. Thus he was strong and keen to weld together the merits of both schools in a new method which, but for the fact that there has been no successor to grasp the wand which its originator wielded, might well be called the school of Musset. The serious effect produced upon Musset by the failure of his Nuit Vénctienne is curiously illustrative of his character. A man of greater strength and with equal belief in his own genius might have gone on appealing to the public until he compelled them to hear him. Musset gave up the attempt in disgust, and waited until the public were eager to hear him without any invitation on his part. In the case of his finest plays this did not happen until after his death ; but long before that he was fully recog- nized as a poet of the first rank, and as an extraordinary master of character and language in prose-writing. In his complete disgust with the stage after the failure above referred to there was no doubt something of a not ignoble pride, but there was something also of weakness—of a kind of

weakness out of which it must be said sprang some of his most exquisite work, some of the poems which could. only have been written by a man who was face to face with difficulties which were old enough in the experience of mankind, though for the moment new and strange to him, and by which he felt himself to be overwhelmed.

In 1833 Musset published the volume called Un Spec- tacle dans un Fauteuil. One of the most striking pieces in this—Namouna—was written at the publisher's request to fill up some empty space; and this fact is noteworthy when taken in conjunction with the horror which Musset afterwards so often expressed of doing anything like writ- ing "to order,"—of writing, indeed, in any way or at any moment except when the inspiration or the fancy happened to seize him. The success of the volume seemed to be small in comparison with that of his Contes @ Espagne, but it led indirectly to Musset's being engaged as a contributor to the Revue des Deux Mondes. In this he published, in April 1833, André del Sarto, and he followed this six weeks later with Les Caprices de Marianne. This play, which now ranks as one of the classical pieces in the repertory of the Thé&tre Frangais, is a fine illustration of the method above referred to, a method of which Musset gave something like a definite explication five years later. This explication was also published in the Revwe des Deus Mondes, and it set forth that the war between the classical and the romantic schools could never end in a definite victory for either school, nor was it desirable that it should so end. 'It was time," Musset said, "for a third school which should unite the merits of each." And in Les Caprices de Marianne these merits are most curiously and happily combined. It so happens that, as the piece is generally given on the stage, with the omission of one change of scene, the classical unities are almost exactly preserved, while the whole play is impregnated with romanticism in the best sense of the word. It has perhaps more of the Shakespearean quality—the quality of artfully min gling the terrible, the grotesque, and the high comedy tones—which exists more or less in all Musset's longer and more serious plays than is found in any other of these. In Claudio, the husband, the terrible and the grotesque are strangely and powerfully allied; Tibia, his serving-man, is grotesque with a touch of grimness caught from his master ; Octave and Célio represent the two elements which were always warring in Musset's own heart—one is the careless half-

cynical man of the world and the other the wholly tender romantic lover ; Marianne is that type of the highest comedy to which events lend a touch of tragedy, while in Hermia, Célio's mother, is the very poetry of maternal love. The piece is called a comedy, and it owes this title to its ex- traordinary brilliance of dialogue, truth of characterization, and swiftness in action, under which there is ever latent a sense of impending fate. Many of the qualities indicated are found in others of Musset's dramatic works, and notably 'in On ne badine pas avec ' Amour, where the skill in insen- sibly preparing his hearers or readers through a succession of dazzling comedy scenes for the swift destruction of the end is very marked. But Les Caprices de Marianne is per- haps for this particular purpose of illustration the most compact and most typical of all. One other point in Musset's method may be noted in connexion with this play. Paul de Musset asked him where he had ever met a Marianne. He answered, 'Everywhere and nowhere ; she is not a woman, she is woman." The appearance of Les Caprices de Marianne in the Revue was followed by that of Rolla, a marked symptom of the 'maladie du siecle." Then came the unfortunate journey which Musset made to Italy with George Sand. It is well known that the rupture of what was for a time a most passionate attachment had a disastrous effect upon Musset, and brought out the weakest side of his moral character. He was at first absolutely and completely struck down by the blow. But it was not so well known until Paul de Musset pointed it out that the passion expressed in the Nwet de Décembre, written about twelve months after the journey to Italy, referred not to George Sand but to another and quite a different woman. The story of the Italian journey and its results are told under the guise of fiction from two points of view in the two volumes called respectively ile et Lui and Lui et Eile. During Musset's absence in Italy Fantasio was published in the Revue, and not long after his return On ne badine pas avec ' Amour appeared in the same way. In 1835 he produced Lucie, La Nuit de Mai, La Quenoutlle de Barberine, Le Chandelier, La Loi sur la Presse, La Nuit de Décembre, and La Confession @un Enfant du Stécle. The last-named work, a prose work, is exceptionally interesting as exhibiting the poet's frame of mind at the time, and the approach to a revulsion from the Bonapartist ideas amid which he had been brought up in his childhood. To the supreme power of Napoleon he in this work attri- buted that moral sickness of the time

which he described. ‘One man,” he wrote, “absorbed the whole life of Europe; the rest of the human race struggled to fill their lungs with the air that he had breathed.” When the emperor fell, “‘a ruined world was a resting-place for a genera- tion weighted with care.” The Confession is further im- portant, apart from its high literary merit, as exhibiting in many passages the poet’s tendency to shun or wildly protest against all that is disagreeable or difficult in human life— a tendency to which, however, much of his finest work was due. In 1836 appeared, amongst other things, I] ne faut Jurer de Rien, a comedy which holds, and is likely long to hold, the stage of the Théatre Francais, and the beginning of the brilliant letters of Dupuis and Cotonet on romanti- cism, 1 ne faut jurer de Rien is as typical of hiy comedy work as is Les Caprices de Marianne of the work in which a terrible fatality underlies the brilliant dialogue and light keen characterization. In 1839 were published the Caprice (which afterwards found its way to the Paris stage through, in the first instance, the accident of Madame Allan the actress hearing of it in a Russian translation) and some of the Vouvelles, In 1839 he began a romance called Le Poétte Déchu, of which the existing fragments are full of passion and insight. In 1840 he passed through a period of feel- ing that the public did not recognize his genius—as,

indeed, they did not—and wrote a very short but very strik- ing series of reflexions headed with the words “A trente Ans,” which Paul de Musset published in his Life. Tn 1841 there came out in the Revue de Paris Musset’s Le Rhin Allemand, an answer to Becker’s poem which appeared in the Revue des Deux Mondes. This fine war-song made a great deal of noise, and brought to the poet quantities of challenges from German officers. Between this date and 1845 he wrote comparatively little. In the last-named year the charming “‘‘proverbe” J/ faut qu’une Porte soit owverte ou fermée appeared. In 1847 Un Caprice was produced at the Thédtre Francais, and the employment in it of sucha word as “rebonsoir” shocked some of the old guard of the oldschool. In 1848 J/ ne faut jurer de Rien was played at the Théatre Francais, and the Chandelier at the Théatre Historique. Between this date and 1851 Betéine was pro- duced on the stage and Carmosine written ; and between this time and the date of his death,

from an affection of the heart, in May 1857, the poet produced no large work of importance.

Alfred de Musset now holds the rank which Sainte-Beuve first accorded, then denied, and then again accorded to him as a poet of the first rank. He had genius, though not genius of that strongest kind which its possessor can always keep in check. His own char- acter worked both for and against his success as a writer. His very weakness and his own consciousness of it produced such beautiful work as, to take one instance, the Nuit d'Octobre, but it too often prevented him, from one cause or another, from producing any work at all. His Nowvelles are. extraordinarily brilliant ; his poems are charged with passion, fancy, and fine satiric power ; in his plays he hit upon a method of his own, in which no one has dared or availed to follow him with any closeness. He was one of the first, most ori- ginal, and in the end most successful of the first-rate writers included in the phrase ''the 1880 period." The wildness of his life, though it cannot be denied, has probably been exaggerated ; and it has lately been suggested by M. Arsene Houssaye that the symptoms of the heart disease which caused his death may sometimes have been mistaken for the symptoms of intoxication. His brother Paul de Musset has given in his Biographie a striking testimony to the finer side of his character. In the later years of his life Musset was elected, not without some difficulty, a member of the French Aca- demy. Besides the works above referred to, the Nouvelles et Contes and the Guvres Posthawmes, in which there is much of interest concerning the great tragic actress Rachel, should be specially mentioned. Musset has had no successor in France either as a poet or as a dramatist. (W. H. Be

MUSTARD. The varieties of mustard-seed of com- merce are produced from several species of the Cruciferous genus Brassica. Of these the principal are the Black or Brown Mustard, Brassica nigra (Sinagis nigra, L.), the White Mustard, Brassica alba, and the Sarepta Mustard, B. juncea, The finest qualities of Black and White Mustard are cultivated in the eastern counties of England. The former is a plant requiring a rich soil and much care in its treatment, but its seeds, which are very minute, weigh- ing not more than one-fiftieth of a grain, are the most valuable for commercial purposes. The peculiar pungency and odour to which mustard owes much of its value are due to an essential oil developed by the action of water on

two peculiar chemical substances contained in the black seed. These. bodies are a compound termed by its dis- coverers myronate of potassium, but since called sinigrin, C,H, ,KNS,O,,, and an albuminoid body, myrosin. The latter substance in presence of water acts as a ferment on sinigrin, splitting it up into the essential oil of mustard, a potassium salt, and sugar. It is worthy of remark that this reaction does not take place in presence of boiling water, and therefore it is not proper to use very hot water in the preparation of mustard. Essential oil of mustard is in chemical constitution an iso-sulphocyanate of allyl C,H,NS. It is prepared artificially by a process, discovered by Zinzin, which consists in treating bromide of ally] with sulphocyanate of ammonium and distilling the resultant sulphocyanate of allyl. The seed of White Mustard con- tains in place of sinigrin a peculiar principle called sinalbin,

CypHyN.8,016 in several aspects analogous to sinigrin. In presence of water it is acted upon by myrosin, present also in White Mustard, splitting it up into sulphocyanate of acrinyl, sulphate of sinapine, and sugar. Sulphocyanate of acrinyl is a powerful rubefacient principle, whence White Mustard, although yielding no volatile oil, forms a valuable material for cataplasms. The seeds of Brassica juncea have the same constitution and properties as Black Mustard, as a substitute for which they are extensively cultivated in Russia. The mustard-seed imported from the East Indies is also largely composed of B. juncea.

Both as a table condiment and as a medicinal substance, mustard has been known from a very, remote period. Under the name of va7v it was used by Hippocrates in medicine. The form in which table mustard is now sold in the United Kingdom dates from 1720, about which time Mrs Clements of Durham hit on the idea of grinding the seed in a mill and sifting the flour from the husk. The bright yellow farina thereby produced under the name of “Durham mustard” pleased the taste of George I, and rapidly attained wide popularity. As it is now prepared mustard consists essentially of a mixture of black and white farina in certain proportions. Several grades of pure mustard are made containing nothing but the farina of mustard-seed, the lower qualities having larger amounts of the white cheaper mustard ; and

corresponding grades of a mixed preparation of equal price, but containing certain proportions of wheaten or starch flour, are also prepared and sold as “mustard condiment.” The mixture is free from the unmitigated bitterness and sharpness of flavour of pure mustard, and it keeps much better.

All varieties of mustard-seed contain from 25 to 35 per cent. of a bland inodorous yellow-coloured fixed oil, free from pungency and with little tendency to become rancid. It is extensively used in India for cooking and all ordinary purposes, and is one of the ordinary commercial oils of Western countries: The mustard papers commonly used as rubefacients and vesicants are made from mustard flour entirely deprived of its fixed oil.

MUTINY. This word, which primarily means a com- motion and then an insurrection or sedition, is in English military law applied to a sedition in any forces belonging to Her Majesty’s regular, reserve, or auxiliary forces, or mavy. Such offences are dealt with by courts-martial, which up to the year 1879 derived their authority from the annual Mutiny Act (Act for punishing Mutiny and Desertion and for the better payment of the Army and their Quarters), the maintenance of a standing army in time of peace being illegal without the consent of parlia- ment. For further details see Mmrrary Law and Court MARTIAL.

MUTTRA, a district in the lieutenant-governorship of the North-Western Provinces, India, lying between 27° 14 and 27° 58’ N. lat. and 77° 19’ and 78° 33’ E. long., is bounded on the N. by Aligarh and Gurgaon, on the E. by Aligarh, Mdinpuri, and Etah, on the 8. by Agra, and on the W. by Bhartpur state, with an area of 1453 square miles. The district consists of an irregular strip of terri- tory lying on both sides of the Jumna. The general level 1s only broken at the south-western angle by low ranges of limestone hills. The eastern half consists for the most part of a rich upland plain, abundantly irrigated by wells, rivers, and canals, while the western portion, though rich in mythological association and antiquarian remains, is comparatively unfavoured by nature. The crops are Scanty, and the larger forest trees are not found. For eight months of the year the Jumna shrinks to the dimen- sions of a mere rivulet, meandering through a waste of sand. During the rains, however, it swells to a mighty Stream, a mile or more in breadth. ‘Till

recently nearly the whole of Muttra consisted of pasture and woodland, but new roads constructed as relief works in 1837-38 have

thrown open many large tracts of country, and the task of reclamation has since proceeded rapidly.

The census of 1881 returned the population of Muttra at 671,690 (males 360,967, females 310,723), Hindus numbering 611,669 and Mohammedans 58,088. There were only 65 native Christians. The population of the three municipal towns in 1881 was as follows :—Muttra, 55,016; Brindaban, 21,467 ; and Kosi, 11,281. In 1881-82, 1048 square miles were rcturned as cultivated, 172 as cultivable, and 103 as uncultivable. Jodr and cotton form the principal staples for the autumn (kharif) harvest, while gram and barley are the chief grains grown for the spring (rab) harvest. Sugar-cane, tobacco, indigo, and vegetables are all but unknown. The mass of the population is fairly well off, and the peasantry are described as being in better circumstances than those of neighbour- ing districts. Great extremes of temperature occur, the cold of winter being comparatively excessive, while hot winds blow from the west with great violence during April, May, and June. The average rainfall for the ten years ending 1869 was 23°6 inches.

The central portion of Muttra district forms one of the most sacred spots in Hindu mythology. A circuit of 84 kos around Gokul and Brindaban bears the name of the Braj-Mandal, and carries with it many associations of the earliest Aryan times. Here Krishna and his brother Balarama fed their cattle upon the plain ; and numerous relics of antiquity in the towns of Muttra, Gobard- han, Gokul, Mahaban, and Brindaban still attest the sanctity with which this holy tract was invested. During the Buddhist period Muttra became a centre of the new faith. After the invasion of Mahmud of Ghazni the city fell into insignificance till the reign of Akbar ; and thenceforward its history merges in that of the Jats of Bhartpur, until it again acquired separate individuality under Sur4j Mall in the middle of the last century. The Bhartpur chiefs took an active part in the disturbances consequent on the declining power of the Mughal emperors, sometimes on the imperial side, and at others with the Mahrattas. The whole of Muttra passed under British rule in 1804.

Murrra, chief town and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated on the right bank of the Jumna, about 30 miles above Agra, in 27° 30’ N. lat. and 77° 43’ E. long., with a population (1881) of 55,016, viz., males 28,769, and females 26,247.

It is an ancient town, mentioned by Fa Hian as a centre of Buddhism about 400 A.p.; his successor Hiouen Thsang, about 650, states that it then contained twenty Buddhist monasteries and five Brahmanical temples. Muttra has suffered more from Mohammedan sack and plunder than most of the towns of northern India. It was sacked by Mahmud of Ghazni in 1017-18; about 1500 Sultan Sikandar Lodi utterly destroyed all the Hindu shrines, temples, and images ; and in 1636 Shah Jahan appointed a governor expressly to ‘“‘stamp out idolatry.” In 1669-70 Aurangzeb visited the city and continued the work of destruction. Muttra was again captured and plundered by Ahmad Shah with 25,000 Afghan cavalry in 1756. The town still forms a great centre of Hindu devo- tion, and large numbers of pilgrims flock annually to the festivals.

MUZAFFARGARH, a district in the lieutenant-gover- norship of the Punjab, India, lying between 29° 1’ and 30° 46’ N. lat. and 70° 33’ and 71° 49’ E. long., is bounded on the N. by Dera Ismail Khan and Jhang districts, on the E. and §.E. by the Chendb river, and on the W. by the Indus, with an area of 3136 square miles. It occupies the extreme southern apex of the Sind Sdgar Dodb, the wedge-shaped tract between the Indus and the Five Rivers or Panjnad. The district stretches northward from their confluence in a narrow ridge of land, gradually widening for about 120 miles, until at its northern border it is 55 miles broad. In the northern half of the district is the wild thal or central desert of the Sind Sagar Dodb, an arid elevated tract with a width of 40 miles in the extreme north, which gradually contracts until it disappears about 10 miles south of Muzaffargarh town. Although apparently a tableland, it is really composed of separate sandhills, with intermediate valleys lying at a lower level than that of the Indus, and at times flooded. Scattered amid this waste of sand-heaps are a few good plots of land, which the industry of the Jat cultivators has appropriated. The border strips fringing the thal towards the rivers are also for the most part under cultivation. South of the thal, the country consists of rich and

productive lands, out of the reach of excessive flooding and at the same time within

reach of easy irrigation. But in the extreme south the floods froni the two rivers spread at times over the whole intervening tract. On abating they leave luxuriant pastur- age ; and, if the subsidence takes place sufliciently early, magnificent crops of wheat, pease, and other grain are raised in the cultivated portion. The towns stand on high sites or are protected by embankments ; but the villages scattered over the lowlands are exposed to annual inundations, during which the people abandon their grass-built huts and take refuge on wooden platforms attached to each house. Throughout the cold weather large herds of camels, be- longing chiefly to the Povindah merchants of Afghanistan,

graze upon the sandy waste.

The census of 1881 returned the population at 338,605 (males, 184,510, females 154,095), viz., 292,476 Mohammedans, 43, 297 Hindus, 2788 Sikhs, 38 Christians, and 44 ‘‘others.” The district contains only one town with a population exceeding 5000—namely, Kot Adu or Parhar (5552). Muzatfargarh, the headquarters station, has only 3136 inhabitants. The area under cultivation in 1881 was returned at 397,529 acres, of which 279,108 were irrigated by government works, and 118,376 by private individuals. ‘The areas under the different crops in 1881-82 were rice 38,589 acres, wheat 193,749, great millet 15,915, spiked millet 15,431, barley 11,450, pease 382,388, gram 7959, masar 6882, and tobacco 655. Most of the land is cultivated by the proprietors themselves ; and the rents, where they exist, are almost universally paid in kind. Trade is mainly in the hands of Povindah merchants. The district is un- usually hot and dry, the average rainfall for the seven years ending 1872-73 being only 5-9 inches.

Muzaffargarh possesses hardly any distinct annals of its own, having always formed part of MULTAN (q.v.).

MUZAFFARNAGAR or MozurrerNuccEr, a district in the lieutenant-governorship of the North-Western Provinces, India, lying between 29° 11’ and 29° 45’ N. lat. and 77° 3’ and 78° 10’ E. long., is bounded on the N. by Saharanpur, on the E. by the Ganges, on the S. by Meerut, and on the W. by the Jumna, with an area of 1656 square miles. It lies near the northern extremity of the Doab or great alluvial plain between the Ganges and the Junina, and shares to a large extent in the general monotony of that level region. A great portion of the area is sandy and unfertile, but under irrigation the soil is rapidly improving, and in many places the villages have succeeded in introducing a high state of cultivation.

The census of 1881 returned the population at 758,444 (males 409,436, females 349,008). The excessive proportion of males is doubtless due to the practice of female infanticide, which Govern- ment has done all in its power to suppress. In 1874 no less than ninety-four villages were still on the ‘ proclaimed” list under the Infanticide Act. Hindus numbered °535,218, Mohammedans 218,842, Christians 54, and Buddhists 9330. The population of the four municipal towns in 1881 was as follows—Muzaffarnagar (the chief town and administrative headquarters), 15,080 ; Kairana, 18,374; Kandhla, 11,109; Shamli, 7359. Out of a total area of 1,059,910 acres in 1881-82, 707,394 were returned as under culti- vation. In the radi harvest the chief crops are wheat, barley, millet, and pulse. _ The kharif or autumn crops include the above grains, together with sugar-cane, cotton, and indigo. Irrigation was afforded in 1881-82 by one or other of the great canals to 219,121 acres. The condition of the peasantry is comfortable, and the village communities are prosperous and intelligent. Most of the land is cultivated by husbandmen with rights of occupancy ; the number of tenants-at-will is rapidly declining. Rents are more frequently paid in kind than in cash. Before the opening of the canals Muzaffarnagar was liable to famines caused by drought ; but the danger from this has been minimized by the spread of irriga- tion. Its trade is confined to the raw materials it produces. The climate of the district is comparatively cool owing to its proximity to the hills ; and the average rainfall is about 29 inches,

Hindu tradition represents Muzaffarnagar as having formed a portion of the Pandava kingdom of the Mahébhérata ; authentic history, however, dates from the time of the Moslem conquests in the 13th century, from which

time it remained a dependency of the various Mohammedan dynasties which ruled at Delhi until the practical downfall of the Mughal empire in the middle of the last century. In 1788 the district fell into the hands of the Mahrattas. After the fall of Aligarh, the whole Dodb as far north as the Siwalik hills passed into the hands of the British without a blow, and Mu-

zaffarnagar became part of Saharanpur. It was created a separate Jurisdiction in 1824,

MUZAFFARNAGAR, chief town and administrative head- quarters of the above district, is situated on the militar road from Meerut to Landaur in 29° 28’ N. lat. and 77° 44’ E. long. The population in 1881 was 15,080, of whom 8814 were males and 6266 females. It is a closely-built town, crowded with small lanes, and was founded in 1633, It is now a station on the Sind, Punjab, and Delhi Rail- way, and has a considerable trade in agricultural produce,

MUZAFFARPUR or Mozurrerrorg, a district in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, India, lying between 25° 30’ and 26° 51’ N. lat. and 84° 55’ and 85° 58’ E. long,, is bounded on the N. by Nepal, E. by Darbhangah, on the S. by Patnd, and W. by Saran and Champaran districts, with an area of 3004 square miles. It was formed in January 1875 out of the great district of Tirhut, which up to that time was the largest and most populous district of lower Bengal. Of its six subdivisions, the three eastern were in January 1875 formed into the new district of Darbhangah, and the three western—Muzaffarpur, Hajipur, aud Tajpur—ainto the district of Muzaffarpur.

The census of 1881 returned the inhabitants at 2,582,060 (males 1,265, 7381, feinales 1,316,329), viz., Hindus 2,265,380, Mohammedans 316,308, Europeans 140, mixed races 48, native Christians 179, The cultivated area amounts to 1,435,859 acres, of which 762,830

are under rice. Muzaffarpur suffered severely from the famines of 1866 and 1874.

MUZAFFARPUR, chief town and administrative head- quarters of the above district, is situated on the right or south bank of the Little Gandak river in 26° 7’ N. lat. and 85° 26’ E. long., with a population (1881) of 42,460. The town is clean, with many broad and well-kept streets; it has a good collectorate and court-houses, jail, dispensary, and several good schools. A large trade is carried on both by road and river. The town, however, is liable to inun- dation, and suffered severely from this cause in 1871.

MUZIANO, Grrotamo (1528-15901), an eminent Italian painter, was born at Acquafredda near Brescia in 1528, Under Romanino, an imitator of Titian, he studied his art, designing and colouring according to the principles of the Venetian school. But it was not until he had left his native place still in early youth, and had repaired to Rome about 1550, that he came into notice. There his pictures soon gained for him the surname of J/ Giovane de’ Paesi (“the young man of the landscapes”); chestnut- trees are predominant in these works. He next tried the more elevated style of historical painting. He imitated Michelangelo in giving great prominence to the anatomy of his figures, and became fond of painting persons ema- ciated by abstinence or even disease. His great picture of the Resurrection of Lazarus at once established his fame. Michelangelo praised it, and pronounced its author one of the first artists of that age. It was placed in the church of Santa Maria Maggiore, but was afterwards transferred to the Quirinal palace. Muziano, with dogged perseverance (at one time he shaved his head, so as not to be tempted to’ go out of doors), continued to proceed in the path on which he had entered. He grew excellent in depicting foreign and military costumes, and in introduc ing landscapes into his historical pieces after the manner of Titian. Mosaic working also occupied his attention while he was employed as superintendent at the Vatican ; and it became under his hands a perfect imitation of painting. His ability and industry soon gained for him a handsome fortune. Part of this he expended in assisting to found the Academy of St Luke in Rome. He died in 1590, or, according to another authority, in 1592, and was buried in the church of Santa Maria Maggiore.

Many of Muziano’s works are in the churches and palaces of Rome ; he also worked in Orvieto and Loreto. In Santa Maria

degli Angeli, Rome, is one of his chief works, St Jerome preaching to Monks in the Desert; his Circuincision is in the church of the

Gest, his Ascension in the Araceli, and his St Francis receiving the Stigmata in the church of the Conception. A picture by him, yepresenting Christ washing the feet of his disciples, is in the cathedral of Rheims.

MYCEN AZ, one of the most ancient cities of Greece, was situated in the north-eastern extremity of the fertile Argive plain—pixy “Apycos imroBdrow. Its situation is exceedingly strong, and it commands all the roads leading from Corinth and Achaia into the Argive plain ; this fact, combined.with its distance from the sea, shows that the city was founded by a race which came from the direction of Corinth and not by immigrants landing on the coast. The walls of Mycen are the greatest monument that remains of the Heroic age in Greece; part of them is similar in style and doubtless contemporary in date with the walls of the neighbouring town Tiryns, but other parts seem to be the work of a rather later time. There can therefore be little doubt that the two towns were the strongholds of a single race, Tiryns commanding the sea-coast and Mycenz the inner country. The city of Argos, on the other hand, has no remains to connect it with this early Mycenzan race ; and legend tells of the rivalry between the dynasties of the Pelopidee at Mycenz and of the Preetidee at Argos. The long warfare between the two cities lasted till 468 B.c., when Mycenee was dismantled and its inhabitants dispersed. The city never revived ; Strabo asserts that no trace of it remained in his time, but Pausanias describes the ruins.

Subjoined are the most important monuments. 1. The ‘‘ Trea- suries” of Atreus and his sons, as Pausanias calls them. They were subterranean buildings of beehive shape, in the side of the hill south- west of the city ; one of them is still almost perfect. A sloping passage, Spduos, led to the doorway, with its ornamented columns, at the base of the building. The great circular chamber inside was probably covered with plates of bronze ; a door in one side admitted toa second smaller chamber. Such buildings, which are found in other parts of Greece—e.g., Orchomenus, Sparta, Attica, lolcus, &.— were undoubtedly the sepulchres of noble families.

2. The graves discovered by Dr Schliemann in 1876 within the city wall. They are encloscd within a circular wep/Sodos with a single entrance, and the place was therefore a holy place in the ancient Mycenean time; on the other hand the part of the city wall which encloses them is a later addition to the original wall. At some period before 468 8.¢. this addition was built ; before that time the zepiSodo0s was outside the wall. Some heroes of the race were worshipped here by the ancient inhabitants, but their names are not recorded by any trustworthy authority. In the time of Pausanias, six centuries after Mycenz was destroyed, local legend Maintained that these were the graves of Atrcus, Agamemnon, Cassandra and her children, and Eurymedon ; but it is uncertain whether this was the original legend, or a later tale that grew under the influence of Greek literature.

8. The Lion-Gate. The principal entrance to the city is approached by a dpduos, flanked on each side by the city wall and leading up to a gateway. Over the entrance is placed a triangular slab of stone on which are carved two lions in relief; they are rampant, facing one another, but separated by an upright column. The art of this relief shows no resemblance to archaic Greek art ; it is foreign in character, the work of an immigrant racc, which brought with it a well-developed civilization.

Greek legend always maintains that the Pclopide of Mycenx came from Phrygia, and this is corroborated by the evidence of archeology. The objects found in excavations, and the sculptured ornament on the doorways of the ‘‘ Treasuries” and over the Lion- Gate, all point to foreign influence and particularly to Asia Minor. The same type of the two lions and the column has been recently found over the entrance to a colossal sepulchre in the rocks near the south-westcrn corner of the Sangarius valley in Phrygia. Legend and remains alike show that a rich and powerful dynasty of foreign origin ruled at Myccne ; the only early remains in the Greek world that equal thei in interest are the ruins of ancient Troy. It is precisely these two cities which are described in the Homeric poems as the two great cities of the Greek world.

MYDDLETON, Sir Hucu (c. 1555-1631), the projector of the New River scheme for supplying London with water, was the sixth son of Richard Myddleton, governor of Denbigh Castle in the reigns of Edward VI., Mary,

and Elizabeth. Hugh Myddleton became a goldsmith in London, occupying a shop in Bassihaw (now Basinghall)

Street, and he is also mentioned in the records of Denbigh, for which he was chosen M.P. in 1603, as a merchant adventurer. In the state papers there is an entry of £250 paid to him for a jewel supplied to the queen. In connexion with his business as goldsmith Myddleton worked silver and lead mines in Cardiganshire, and in this way obtained the practical knowledge of engineering which enabled him to put in operation his scheme for supply- ing London with water (see Lonpon, vol. xiv. p. 825). In recognition of his services he was created a baronet by James I. in 1622; but pecuniarily the enterprise was a complete failure. Myddleton died 10th December 1631, and was buried in the churchyard of St Matthew, Friday Street, London. See Pinks, History of Clerkenwell.

MYELITIS (pveAds, marrow) is a disease which by in- flammation induces destructive changes in the tissues com- posing the spinal cord. In the acute variety the nerve ele- ments in the affected part become disintegrated and softened, but repair may take place ; in the chronic form the change is slower, and the diseased area tends to become denser (sclerosed), the nerve-substance being replaced by connect- ive tissue. Myelitis may affect any portion of the spinal cord, and its symptoms and progress will vary accordingly. Its most frequent site is in the lower part, and its exist- ence there is marked by the sudden or gradual occurrence of weakness of motor power in the legs (which tends to pass into complete paralysis), impairment or loss of sensi- bility in the parts implicated, nutritive changes affecting the skin and giving rise to bed-sores, together with bladder and bowel derangements. In the acute form, in which there is at first pain in the region of the spine and much constitutional disturbance, death may take place rapidly from extension of the disease to those portions of the cord connected with the muscles of respiration and the heart, from an acute bed-sore which is very apt to form, or from some intercurrent disease. Recovery to a certain extent may, however, take place; or, again, the disease may pass into the chronic form. In the latter the progress is usually slow, the general health remaining tolerably good for a time, but gradually the strength fails,

the patient becomes more helpless, and ultimately sinks exhausted, or is cut off by some complication. The chief causes of myelitis are injuries or diseases affecting the spinal column, extension of inflammation from the membranes of the cord to its substance (see MENINGITIS), exposure to cold and damp, and occasionally some pre-existing constitutional morbid condition, such as a fever. Any debilitating cause or excess in mode of life will act powerfully in predisposing to this malady. The disease is most comnion in adults. The treatment for myelitis in its acute stage is similar to that for spinal meningitis. When the disease is chronic the most that can be hoped for is the relief of symptoms by careful nursing and attention to the condition of the body and its functions. Good is sometimes derived from the employment of electricity, and the use of baths and douches to the spine.

MYNPOOREE. See MArnpuRi.

MYRIAPODA. The Myriapoda or Centipedes are usually treated of in text-books as one of the classes of the group Arthropoda, being associated in that group with the Crustacea, Arachnida, and Insecta as equivalent divisions of the animal kingdom. In consequence, however, of recent evidence which points to a community of origin of all the Tracheate forms apart from that of the Crustacea, it is probably more natural to divide the Arthropoda (with the exception of certain minor groups of obscure affinities) into two classes, one consisting of the Crustacea, the other of the Tracheata. If this plan of classification be adopted, the Myriapoda form a sub-class of the Tracheata, It 1s necessary that the peculiar contrast in structure between

the remarkable genus Peripatus and all other Tracheata should be clearly indicated in any systematic arrangement. Perypatus, an account of which, in consequence of its im- portant relations to the Myriapoda, is given in the present article, has been variously placed by systematists as con- stituting a separate class of the Arthropoda, the ‘ Pro- tracheata,” or as worthy of higher or lower rank than indicated by such position. It will be regarded here as representing a special sub-group of the Tracheata—the Protracheata as opposed to the remaining Tracheates or Eutracheata—thus :—

Class— CRUSTACEA. Arthropoda. Group— Sub-class— Class— Protracheata. Peripatidea. TRACHEATA. Sub-class— Group— Myriapoda. Eutracheata. Insecta. Arachnida.

Linneus included the Myriapoda in his Insecta Aptera, together with the Crustacea and Arachnida. In 1779 Fabricius first separated the Myriapoda as a distinct order under the name Mitosata, but still retained several separate orders of Crustacea as equivalent. In 1796 Latreille divided the Aptera of Linnzeus into seven orders, one of which was constituted by the Myriapoda (so first named by him), but he included with them the Isopoda. In 1800 Cuvier and Lamarck first separated Linnzeus's Insecta into three primary natural classes, creating the Crustacea and retaining as the two others the Arachnida and Insecta. In 1825 Latreille, finally following Leach (1815), set up the Myriapoda as a fourth class, separating them from the Insécta connected with them. Subsequently the class Myriapoda was a constant source of controversy amongst naturalists, and many attempts were made to overthrow it altogether. Thus the Myriapoda were connected by Macleay with the Insecta, and also by Kirby in 1826, further by Burmeister in 1837, and by Von Siebold with Crustacea in 1848.

The Prorracuzata may be defined as—

Tracheata with imperfectly – jointed appendages, and numerous stigmata indefinite in number, scattered in various regions of the body; the first pair of post-oral appendages only modified to act as jaws; the second pair rudimentary, bearing the opening of the duct of a slime- gland ; remaining pairs numerous, all alike ; ambulatory legs, each provided with a pair of claws; no definite infra- cesophageal nerve-ganglion ; ventral nerve-cords imperfectly ganglionated, widely divaricated, united posteriorly dorsad of the rectum ; complicated segmental organs present, open- ing at the bases of the legs; arch-enteron in the embryo formed by invagination ; a wide slit-like blastopore formed in the embryo, which gives rise to the mouth anteriorly and anus posteriorly,

The sole representatives of this group of the Tracheataare the seven or eight known species of the genus Peripatus (fig. 1). These are soft-

SF _

AEA \ RE 110 TN ett rs a nn ensceegananans

pO XW 3 rere re tery te ty

Fic. 1.—Large adult example of Pertpatus capensis of natural size. (From Moseley.)

bodied animals very like lepidopterous caterpillars in form, ofa brown or blackish colour, with a series of pairs of short conical legs placed laterally at equal intervals along the entire length of the ventral surface behind the mouth. The legs in advanced embryos show a distinct division into five joints by transverse constrictions, but in the adults this jointing is much obscured. The skin not being protected by chitinous plates, but only by fine papille armed with chitine, no definite hinge-joints are formed comparable to those so usually present in other Tracheata. The terminal joint of each leg or foot is provided with a pair of curved claws. The num- ber of legs present varies in the different species. The head bears a

MYRIAPODA

pair of simple eyes and a pair of antennz composed of very numer. ous joints. The first pair of legs, which in the embryo closely resembles those developed behind it (fig. 2), becomes in the process of development g turned in in front of the mouth, and its claws become modified into a pair of sickle- shaped toothed jaws which work against one another in front of the mouth, and are completely enclosed in the adult in a wide buccal cavity. This cavity opens to the exterior ventrally on the under side of the head by the buccal aperture, which is oval in form and is surrounded by tumid lips, and has often been described as the mouth, although the true mouth lies within the buccal cavity underneath the jaws (figs.

3, 4

The second pair of appendages of the em- bryo becomes converted in the adult into a pair of short papille,—the oral papilla, which bear at their tips the openings of a pair of large glands secreting a viscid sub- stance. Respiration is effected in Pertpatus by means of an immense number of small tracheal tufts. Each of these tufts consists of a short tubular chamber

or sac, opening at one end, which is narrowed, to the ex- terior by a niinute simple aperture (stigma) in the cuticle, and provided at its opposite cnlarged extremity with a tuft of very fine Fic. 2.— arly embryo of air-tubes. In these fine tracheal tubes only ? le ges Bi ifoun Ps a very faint indication of an eee spiral sees = antennal thickening of the chitinous lining mem- ¢, procephalie lobe; @ brane can be detected. The tubes are, intestine; 0, mouth; 1, 2, with very rare exceptions, unbranched ; ha Post-oral 67a they are freely distributed to the various ; muscles, viscera, &c. These tracheal tufts closely resemble in structure those of the Diplopod Myriapoda, but their disposition differs from that occurring in all other Tracheata. Instead of a definite small number of stigmata only being present, placed in definite positions on the successive somites, an in- definite number is present in Peripatus. Certain of these are scattered irregularly over the whole body-surface, whilst others are concentrated more or less thickly in a double row on each side of the dorsal median line, in a correspond- ing double ‘vontral sow, and 7c, 8Vantl view of the he of ange further on the anterior and (from Balfour, after Moseley) é, mal G posterior aspects of the legs thickening of epiblast of procephalic lobe and round the bases of the

to form supra-cesophageal ganglion; m, legs. A series of segmental process from procephalic lobe growing organs is present, a pair for

over the first post- oral appendage ; 0, mouth ; 1 and 2, first and second pairs of each pair of legs. They are post-oral appendages, becoming later the coiled tubes opening at one Jaws and oral papille respectively. end into the body cavity and at the other to the exterior at the bases of the legs on their inner or ventral aspects.

The nervous sys- tem consists of a pair of supra-ceso- phageal ganglia fused together in the middle line, from which arise the ventral cords, which remain widely divaricated throughout the length of the body to its hinder ex- tremity, where they unite above the dorsal surface

of the rectum. The Fic. 4.—Ventral view of a head of an ya pen

. 4atan advanced stage of development (from Moseley). iit th «p The figure shows the jaws (the modified pair of claws pear at tirst with- of the first pair of appendages) turned in towards out ganglionic en- the mouth, the dark

spot between them, which to- largements but in gether with them is enclosed by the wall of the buc- reality wadin ari cal cavity. The second post-oral appendages or oral ary ganglionic

papille are seen to be distinctly five-jointed. swellings are present on them corresponding with the origins of the nerves for the jaws, oral papille, and all the legs. They

are connected by fine transverse commissures forming a so-called rope-ladder nerve-system. Visceral nerves are present, with an arrangement similar to that in Chetopods rather than that found im Arthropoda. A dorsal and a ventral blood-vessel are present. The dorsal vessel is, according to Gaffron, a true muscular heart provided with a pair of dorsally-placed valvular openings on each segment of the body, but without any trace of vessels in connexion with these. It lies as in other Tracheata in a pericardial sinus formed bya horizontally-stretched septum, and especially approaches in its general structure the corresponding organ of Diplopoda.

The ovary in the female is closely similar to that of Lithobius in structure. The animal is viviparous, and the pair of long oviducts function as uterus. In the male the spermatozoa are long and filiform, exactly like those of Lithobius. They are actively mobile, and perform exactly the same movements as those of Lithobius, and, as in that genus, are formed into rod-like spermatophores.

In its embryological development, which cannot here’be followed, conclusions as to the affinities of Peripatus with the Tracheates receive strong confirmation. Early embryos of Peripatus bear a yemarkable resemblance to those of scorpions, spiders, and Myria- pods, and the mode of formation of the procephalic lobes, nerve- system, and limbs is closely similar. The five-jointing of the limbs of the embryo of Peripatus is remarkably similar to that occurring in embryo spiders, such as Agelena. In one important respect the embryonic history of Peripatus differs most remarkably from that of all other Tracheata, as far as is known. A large, open, slit-like blastopore is, as discovered by Balfour, formed in the very carly embryo of P. capensis, This slit closes in its centre, and its ante- rior

extremity apparently remains permanently open as the mouth, whilst its posterior region persists as the anus. In the embryos of other Tracheates the only representative of this no doubt ancestral mode of development surviving is the so-called mesoblastic groove.

The species of Peripatus live in moist places, in hollows in de- eayed wood, and under stones and logs. The animals walk with a gait similar to that of caterpillars, with their bodies completely supported from the ground by their legs. When irritated they eject from their oral papille fine jets of the viscid slime secreted by their slime-glands. ‘These fine jets form networks of fine threads, looking like a spider’s web, which cling to the fingers with the tenacity of bird-lime. The New Zealand species is said to catch insects for food by means of these slime-jets. The animals roll themselves up like Julws when quiescent. They appear to be noc- turnal in habits. :

The group HurracnzaTé may be thus defined—

Tracheata of various form, usually with completely jointed appendages ; never bearing diffuse stigmata indefinite in number, but with not more than two pairs on each somite ; ventral nerve-cords closely approximated, with well-marked infra-cesophageal ganglion, never united posteriorly dorsad of the anus; no segmental organs present; no blasto- pore formed in the embryo; mouth and anus formed as a stomodeum and a proctodzum respectively.

The sub-class Myriapopa may be defined as follows—

Eutracheata with a head distinctly separate from the numerous closely similar posterior somites, with a pair of antenne and two pairs of jaws; with numerous similar jointed walking legs ; Malpighian tubes present.

The Myriapoda, like Peripatus, approach the Annelids in having elongate bodies, either cylindrical or more or less flattened, composed of numerous similar joints or somites. They bear numerous pairs of walking legs on the somites posterior to the head, and in this particular differ most markedly from all insects except some of the most primitive forms, such as the Campodeide, which approach them by the possession of rudimentary abdominal legs, and with which, as will be described, they are possibly

connected to some extent by such a form as Scolopendrella. Some forms (Glomeride) most remarkably resemble woodlice in shape, and hence Latreille's connexion, already referred to, of the Myriapoda with the Isopodous Crustacea. The head of Myriapoda is very like that of Insecta, and bears a single pair of antenne, the eyes when present, and two pairs of jaws. The first pair of jaws, the stout toothed mandibles, are, as in insects, always devoid of palps, but in nearly all cases they are jointed, a primitive condition not occurring in Insects. The second pair, the maxille, are fused together to form a sort of under-lip. In one aberrant family (Poly- zonidz) the mouth parts are formed into a tubular pricking

and sucking apparatus. The body behind the head is composed of distinctly separated similar segments, usually numerous (in Pauropus nine only). There is no division of the body into thoracic and abdominal regions. The ventral nerve-cord stretches the entire length of the body, and is provided with a ganglion more or less distinct for each somite. The first three of its ganglia are fused to- gether. Eyes are wanting in some forms, in others they are present on the sides of the head as simple ocelli or groups of ocelli. In one form only (Scutigera) are they compound and faceted. The structure of the ocelli differs remarkably from that of the simple eyes of spiders, in that the crystalline rods in each ocellus are so placed that their axes lie parallel to the plane of the equator of the simple lens, at right angles to the optic axis of the eye instead of in its direction. They are also not isolated by pigment. Grenacher hence concludes that it is impossible that any definite image can be formed on the rods, so as to convey any impression of it to the retinal cells with which they are in connexion. Hence these eyes must discrimi- nate only variations in intensity of light. In Scutigera the internal structure of the eyes, though closely simulating that of the compound eyes of insects in 'many details, is in reality very peculiar and different from that in all other Arthropods. The digestive canal is simple and straight, except in Glomeridx, and ends in a terminalanus. At the commencement of that portion which acts as a rectum, and which in the embryo is formed from the proctodzum, two or four long coiled urinary tubes (Malpighian tubes), homo- logous with those of insects, open into it. There is a dorsal tubular heart, divided into a series of chambers correspond- ing with the somites,

and, as in insects, contained within a blood sinus (pericardium), formed by a horizontal septum stretched across the body-cavity, and provided with a series of pairs of wing-like muscles (ale cords), by which the sinus- cavity is dilated. Respiration is effected by means of air- tubes or trachez as in insects. In the Diplopoda, except- ing the Glomeridex, in which they are ramified as in the Chilopoda, these are of essentially the same structure as in Peripatus, viz. tufts of unbranched tubes with feebly- developed spiral filaments springing from a common short sac-like chamber (fig. 5). Four of these sac-like chambers

Fic. 5.—Inner view of the sterna of a single segment of Julus lond inensis, much enlarged to show the structure and arrangement of the tracheal organs (after Voges). The two pairs of trachez are seen in situ, the posterior pair over- lapping the anterior. h, posterior margin of the body-ring (tergum); 7, anterior border ; between the two lie the two terga ; st, tubular chamber of trachex ; t, fine trachee given off from it; ms, respiratory muscle attached to tracheal sac ; m, ventral body muscle.

open on the ventral surface of the body by means of two pairs of stigmata on each somite. In the Chilopods wide tracheal tubes with well-developed spiral thickening of their lining membrane, springing directly from the stigmata, freely branching, and often anastomosing like those in in- sects, are always present. In all cases single pairsof laterally-

placed stigmata only are present on each somite. In the aberrant Scolopendrella possibly a single pair of stigmata only are present on the sides of the head, and in Scutigera there are only seven unpaired stigmata present in the middle dorsal line. In this latter form the trachez proceeding from the stigmata are very short ; they branch a few times dichotomously, and then terminate in blind enlargements. From these the air is conveyed throughout the body in connexion with the fat bodies and peculiar folds of mem- brane as far as into the tarsi, the arrangement thus approach- ing somewhat that of the tracheal lungs of Arachnida. Re- markable glandular structures provided with ducts opening to the exterior occur in various Myriapoda. In all the Diplopoda there are rows of apertures placed laterally one on each somite on either side of the body, known as foramina

repugnatoria, because each acts as the opening of the duct of a gland producing an acrid offensive fluid, which is dis- charged by the animal on irritation. In a species of Fontaria, one of the Polydesmidz, as has been recently discovered, this secretion contains a chemical body, probably benzol and petroleum ether, which readily breaks up into prussic acid, and another substance, probably benzaldehyde. The animal thus, when irritated, smells strongly of prussic acid. Similar glands are wanting in most Chilopods, but in Geophilus Gabrielis there are a series of glands opening to the exterior by means of a series of perforated chitinous plates placed ventrally in the median line, which discharge a red fluid, probably of a similar defensive nature.

The foramina repugnatoria of the Diplopods were by early observers mistaken for stigmata, as they correspond in position with the stigmata of the Chilopods. It is worthy of note that, if Moseley's hypothesis that tracheal organs have arisen in evolution as modifications of univer- sally scattered cutaneous glands is correct, the lateral fora- mina repugnatoria and glands of the Julide may be after all to some extent homologous with the lateral stigmata and trachez of the Scolopendridz, the ventral trachez of the Julidx with the ventral glands of Geophilus Gabrielis, whilst the dorsal stigmata of Scutigera represent the sur- vival of part of the dorsal trachese of an ancestral form, with scattered trachee like Peripatus. In some derived forms the glands have survived as trachee in one region of the body, in others in another region, in somite certain of them have remained as glands or reverted to that con- dition, in others they have developed into enlarged trachez.

The generative organs of the Myriapoda are usually elongate, unpaired, tubular organs, often with paired ducts, always provided with accessory glands, and in the female often with a receptaculum seminis. In the Chilopods the ducts open at the hinder extremity of the body; in the Diplopods on the ventral surface of the third somite pos- terior to the head.

The Myriapoda are usually divided into two orders— the Diplopoda and the Chilopoda. Of these the former appears to be the most ancient and primitive, as proved by its general structure, and especially by that of its

trachee, and by geological evidence go far as knowledge extends. They may be thus characterized.

Order Diplopoda (= Chilognatha).

Myriapoda with bodies circular or semicircular in section ; antenne short, of no more than seven joints; no append- ages acting as poison-claws; each somite in the middle and hinder region of the body bearing two pairs of legs ; a variable small number of anterior somites always bearing single pairs only; stigmata ventral, two pairs to each somite; tracheal organs tuft-shaped with sac-like main tube, not branching or anastomosing ; laterally – placed repugnatorial glands present ; a single pair of Malpighian tubes present ; generative organs opening on the third

MYREAPODA

post-cephalic somite ; larve at birth provided with only three pairs of functionally active legs.

In the genus Julus, the well-known Millepedes, which may be taken as types of this order, the body is nearly cylindrical, slightly flattened beneath, and composed of a series of chitinous rings, one to each somite, which are bevelled off at their posterior borders for a certain part of their breadth so as to fit each within the next succeeding ring (fig. 6). The rings (‘‘ terga’’) are not com- plete, but interrupted by a narrow in- terval corresponding with the ventral median line, which is closed in each ring by a pair of ventral plates (‘‘ ster- na”) placed one in front of the other. Each of these ventral plates, except in the first four post-oral somites, bears a pair of short jointed legs composed each of five joints and a single terminal claw, the bases of the legs of opposite sides being so closely approximated in the middle .line as to bé in contact. Just in front of the base of each leg is a simple stigma communicating with a tuft-shaped tracheal organ (fig. 5). There are thus two pairs of legs to all except the most anterior somites, and two pairs of trachee. The mandibles mostly have broad chewing surfaces : wales mastication of pégaiiia mat- gn 7 Disgaea ter, The maxille of the two sides are ozoic Diplopoda (after Scud- fused together to form a four-lobed der). 1, cross section of a plate acting as an wnder-lip. There ee See ee are no poison-claws as in the Chilo- ofa recent; 4, of a Paleozoic pods, but the leg-

shaped appendages Diplopod. In 1 and 8 the of the first post-cephalic somite, the SPace occupied by the sterna tergum of which is in most forms en-

3 4

is indicated by fine lines pro- larged and shield-like, are turned to- oe oe breed aa z. wards the mouth, ar | probablyassistin In 2 and 4 the posterior be- the process of feeding. In the males jCled eee the of some forms these appendages are the foramina repugnatoria are shaped into peculiar short blunt grasp- shown.

ing hooks, bearing spines on their bases (fig. 7). Of the succeeding three somites one (the third post-cephalic) is devoid of legs, and also of sternal plates ; the other two bear a single pair of legs each only. The remainder of the somites bear each two pairs of legs (hence the term Diplopoda), except the seventh post-oral in the male, on which a complicated paired copulatory organ, formed out of modifications

Fic. 7.—1, head and anterior somites of Siphonophora portoricensis (after Koch). 2, diagram of the arrangement of the anterior somites and appendages of the female Julus londinensis (original). a, modified tergum of first post-oral somite (dorsal-plate or collum); }, short single appendage of same somite, of four joints and a claw only, turned towards the mouth; ¢, single appendage of second somite of five joints and a claw like the remaining appendages ; d, third or generative somite devoid of appendages and sterna, but bearing the gener- ative apertures ; e, single appendage of fourth somite; f, g, dual appendages of succeeding somites. 3, hook-like first post-cephalic appendage of male of saine attached to its plate of support (= one-half of modified sternum’). 4, reper of same. 5, the four-lobed plate formed by the fused single pair of Inaxille.

of the sterna and other components of the normal somite, is pre: sent. The form of these copulatory organs varies very much in species and genera of Diplopoda, and is of great systematic value. In both male and female Judus the generative ducts open by a pair of apertures on the ventral surface of the third segment, just behind the bases of the second pair of legs, the

copulatory organs in the male being without internal connexion with the ducts of the testis.

The Julidx coil themselves up spirally when at rest or when attacked, like Peripatus, The whole of the Diplopods are vegetable

MYERLAP OD A

feeders. In the tropics very large representatives of the Julidw occur, especially species of the genus Spirobolus, which do consider- able damage in gardens by devouring leaves. In the Polyzonide (fig. 7) the mouth parts are formed into a pricking and sucking beak or tube. In the Polydesinidw the body is semi-cylindrical in section, with the lateral regions of each tergum broadened out into a pair of horizontal projecting plates. In sapag day, the Paleozoic Diplopoda, Lupherberia and its allies, the terga bore each six stout projecting spines, forming rows of spines along the body (fig. 6); the sterna en- closed one-third of the circuit of the body instead of only an insignificant ventral streak as in the Julide. In addition to the stigmata there are found on the ven- tral aspect of these fossil forms certain paired organs supposed by Scudder, who conjectures that these ancient Diplopoda may have been amphibious in habits, to have given support to gills. In the Glo- meridz the body is shortened, of twelve or thirteen somites only, and closely simu- lates that of the woodlouse in appearance. The males of Spherotherium, a genus of this family, possess a stridulating appara- tus at the hinder end of the body

Very important from a zoological point of view are the genera Polyxenus and Paw- ropus, the species of both of which are ex- tremely small. Polyxenus (fig. 8) is about one-twelfth of an inch in length, and has fourteen pairs of legs, only the first four ls 8.—Ventral ye of pairs of which are borne on the first four i ee gh eM = ost-cephalic somites. The body is covered with bundles of hairy scales. In Pauropus 1s i [(fig. 9) only nine pairs of legs arc present. of generpiive opomnee The antenne are branched at their tips; the first post-cephalic somite bears a single pair of legs, the second post-cephalic a single

= 0

= a Poo Cie

tual length a little over yath ofan inch. «, position

Fia. 9.—Enlarged view of Pawropus Huzleyt.

(After Lubbock.)

pair of legs, and the remaining somites, except the posterior which bears a single pair, two pairs each. Sir John Lubbock, the dis- eoverer of this form, which has many aberrant features besides those described above, referred it to a sepayate order of Myriapods,

Pauropoda. Order Chilopoda.

Myriapoda mostly of dorso-ventrally compressed form, with long multi-articulate antenne ; with the second pair of post-cephalic appendages applied to the mouth as poison-claws ; only one sternum and one pair of legs to each somite; stigmata lateral (in Scutigera dorsal); tracheal organs ramified, not tuft-shaped, often anastomosing ; generative openings posterior ; larvee born with more than three pairs of functionally active legs.

In Scolopendra (fig. 10) the body is band-like and flattened dorso- ventrally. The terga and sterna are nearly flat broad plates of chitinous material, connected laterally by more flexible softer skin, in which in each somite lies on either side a single stigma. The corresponding large ramified tracheal trunks, which are provided internally with well-developed spiral filaments, are connected on each side by lateral longitudinal anastomosing tubes. The antenne are many-jointed, long, and tapering; the head is followed by a second compound somite formed of four embryonic somites fused, termed the ‘‘ basilar somite,” which is covered by a single enlarged shield-like tergum. The legs are borne at the lateral margin of the ventral surface, their bases being wide apart ; one pair is present to every post-basilar somite. The mandibles are provided with sharp cutting teeth ; the maxille are fused together in the middle line as in Diplopods. They do not form a plate, but in the centre a small bilobed process only, and bear a pair of soft palps laterally (fig. 11). The basilar somite bears as the first pair of post-cephalic

appendages a pair of palp-like legs turned forwards in front of the mouth, and as the second a pair of large powerful limbs, the poison-claws, provided

with a pair of curved claws perforated at their extremities by the ducts of poison-glands embedded in the claws and their penultimate

joints. ‘The basilar somite may bear posteriorly in addition a pair ~ y of walking legs, but this pair is frequently ‘ aborted in the adult animal. The last pair of

legs at the hinder extremity of the body is elongated and directed backwards in the line * of the body posteriorly. The generative ducts open posteriorly beneath the anus.

The Chilopoda are all carnivorous, catching their prey and killing it by means of the poison- claws. ucorybas ecrotalus of 8. Africa makes 7)’ with its hind legs a rattling noise hke that of v the rattlesnake.

i > im =” 1} – NB ITY ~ « ~ =

So im) , u LAWS x PITT A ph MA

Fig. 11.

Fig. 10.—Scolopendra morsitans (after Buffon). «, cephalic tergite; b, basilar tergite; c, first post-cephalic appendage (=third post-oral); d, third post- cephalic ; e, antenna; f, second post-cephalie (=poison-claws) ; g, last pair of appendages enlarged and directed backwards.

Fic. 11.—Mouth pairs of Scolopendra morsitans (after Buffon), 1, the poison- claws or fourth post-oral appendages ; s, median cutting processes formed by the anterior edge of the basilar sterna; 2, one of the mandibles with its cutting edge to the left; 3, the maxille and third post-oral appendages a; ¢, palp-like maxilla ; 6, small process formed by their fused bases; 4, ventral view of head with jaws removed ; &, eyes; é, labrum.

Geophilide, which are without cyes, have very long worm-like

bodies, composed of very numerous segments. They live gregari-

ously in moist earth. In Lithobius, the commonest British Cen- tipede, the somites are unequal in size, there being nine larger and six smaller terga and fifteen legs composed each of six joints and

a claw. The genus Scwtigera and its allies form a remarkable

family, Seutigeride (fig. 12), in which the antenne are bristle-like

and as long as the body, and the legs are extremely long, increasing in length towards the hinder end of the body. The peculiarities

Ait i\ e——

EAA ATTN K RY = VA SOS f Wi\ KO

Fic. 12.—A. Scutigera rubrolineata (after Buffon). B. Tergum and part of a second of the same enlarged to show the position of the stigmata 0, 0; p, hinder margin of tergum.

of their eyes and respiratory organs have already been referred to

above. Most important is the aberrant genus Scolopendrelia, which

has lately been shown to have certain marked features indicating alliance to the primitive insects, Thysanwra. ‘The species of Seolo- pendrella are minute forms five or six mm. in length, appearing

(fig. 12), as indicated by the name, at first sight like small Seolo-

pendras (fig. 13). The head and antennx nearly resemble those of

Campodea. The body bears, according to Wood Mason, dorsally

fifteen tergites behind the head, the first of these being quite rudi-

mentary. Ventrally thirteen corresponding indications of somites only can be detected ; and these bear twelve pairs of functional appendages. Two of

the tergites appear to be devoid of sternites and appendages. ‘The first post-cephalic appendages (= third post- orals) are small anid turned towards the mouth ; the eleven following ventrally-indicated somites bear each, besides a pair of functional

ambulatory legs, a second pair of rudimentary appendages lying in- ternally to these latter. The legs are five-jointed and bear each a pair of claws as in Campodca and Peripatus instead of a single claw as in other Myriapoda (Zithobius sometimes bears a pair on the anal legs only). There is a pair of caudal stylets on the last somite per- forated by the ducts of silk glands. The arrangement of the stigmata is nucertain. Hasse finds only a single pair on the head, Wood Mason and , others many pairs on the body so- mites. Peculiar paired segmental organs are present on the ventral surface which may be excretory. It appears not impossible that Seolo- pendrella may have originally pos- sessed two pairs of appendages to each somite, and may thus represent to some extent a transition form be- tween the ancient Diplopoda and the more recent Chilopodous type ; but as theanatomy of Seolopendrelia is as yet imperfectly known, and nothing is known asto itsembryonic development, its place in elassifica- tion must remain for the present au open question. By Ryder a sepa- rate order (Symphyla) has been ‘ formed for it, whilst Packard has placed it amongst the Thysanura notwithstanding its numerous jointed legs, which constitute the most essential distinction of Myria- poda from Insecta.

Remains of representatives of the Chilopoda have not been found in Paleozoic strata. The earliest known are Secondary from the Solenhofen slate.

Fig. 13.—1, Scolopendrella immaculata highly magnified (slightly modified from Packard); a, caudal stylets ; b, b, first post-cephalic appendages ; c, antenne ; 2, one of the functional legs further enlarged (from Wood Mason), showing the five joints and terminal pair of claws ; 0, inner rudi- mentary leg of same somite.

Development of the Myriapoda.—Scolopendrais viviparous like Peripatus, Lithobius lays its eggs loosely amongst earth ; they are very hard to find

there, and nothing is thus known of its development.

The female Geophilus lays her

eggs in heaps and watches

over them; in the case of

Julus the process is similar.

Information as to the develop-

ment of the Myriapoda gener-

ally is at present very imper- fect. In no case as far as yet known is a blastopore formed asin Peripatus. The first struc- ture to appear in Strongylo- soma (Polydesmide) is a ventral

thickened plate. The append- pro 14.

ages are formed in succession G@uerinii just hatched. —

from before backwar ds, aia Balfour, after Metschnikoff.) the mouth and anus as stomodeum and proctodeum.

The embryo when hatched (fig. 14) has nine post-cephalic

somites, the second of which is without appendages, whilst

the first, third, and fourth each bear a functional pair of limbs, the fifth bears two pairs of rudimentary limbs be- neath the larval skin, and the sixth a single pair, which very soon becomes double. The young Strongylosoma is thus provided with three pairs of functionally active legs. The young Julus has a similar number, the third post-cephalic somite being apodous, and it was formerly considered that this fact established a connexion between the Myriapoda and the Insecta, the three pairs of larval legs of the Myriapod being supposed to correspond with the three pairs of legs of insects. Such, however, is not the case ; there being no second maxille in Myriapoda, the first pair of legs in the larva must correspond with the

second maxillz of insects ; and even if this could be shown to be incorrect, the three pairs of legs would still not corre-

Larva of Strongylosoma

(From

MY R—

MYR

spond with those of insects, because in the young Stron- gylosoma the second and in Julus the third post-cephalic somites are devoid of legs. Moreover, the larve are only apparently hexapodous, not in realityso. In Pawropus there is a hexapodous larval stage. In the Chilopoda no functional]

or real hexapodous larval stage occurs, as far as is known, Bibliography.—Newport, ‘‘ On the organs of Reproduction and Development of the Myriapoda,” in Phil. Trans., 1841; “On the Nervous and Circulatory Systems,” tbid., 1843; Koch, System der Myriapoden, 1847; Karsch, “‘ Zur For- menlehre der pentagonen Myriapoden,” Arch. f. Naturg., 47 Jahrg., pt, ple Kolrausch, ‘‘ Gattungen u. Arten der Scolopendriden,” ibid. ; Grenacher, ‘Uber die Augen einiger Myriapoden,” Arch. f. Mikr. Anat., vol. xviii.; Voges, “ Beitrige zur Kenntniss der Juliden,” Z. f. wiss. Zool., vol. xxxi.; Gulden Steeden-Egeling, ‘‘Hydrocyanic Acid of Fontaria,” in Arch. f. Physiologie, Pfltiger, vol. XXViii. ; Seudder, ‘‘ Archipolypoda, a subordinal Type of spined Myriapods from the Car. boniferous Formation,” in Trans. Bost. Soc. Nat. Hist., vol. iii.; Lubbock, “On Pauropus,” Trans. Linn. Soc., vol. xxvi.; Bode, ‘ Polyxenus lagurus, ein Beitrag zur Anat. &c.,” Zettschr. f. ges. Naturw., Halle, 1877; Ryder, ‘‘The Structure and Affinities and Species of Scolopendrella,” Proc. Acad. Nat. Soc. Philad,, 1881; Menge, ‘‘ Myriapoden der Umgegend v. Dantzig,” Neueste Zschr. d. Naturforsch, Gesell. in Danzig, iv., pt. 4; Packard, ‘*Scolopendrella and its Position in Nature,” Amer. Naturalist, vol. xv.; Wood Mason, ‘“‘Notes on the Structure, post-embryonic Developinent, and systematic Position of Seolopendrella,” Ann, and Mag. Nat. Hist.,1883; Moseley, ‘‘On the Structure and Development of Peri- patus capensis,” Phil. Trans., 1874; Gaffron, ‘‘

Beitrage zur Anatomie und His- tologie von Peripatus,” Zool. Beitrdge von A. Schneider; Balfour, ‘‘The Anatomy and Development of Peripatus capensis,” Quart. Journ. Micros. Sc., 1883, and A Treatise on Comparative Embryology, ch. xvii. (H. N. M.)

MYRISTICA. See Nutmzca.

MYROBALANS, See Lzaruer, vol. xiv. p. 382.

MYRON, one of the chief sculptors of the older Attic school, was born at Eleutherz on the borders of Boeotia and Attica, and flourished in the middle of the 5th century B.C. He was, like Phidias, a pupil of Ageladas of Argos. He worked almost exclusively in bronze; the only known exception is his wooden statue of Hecate at Augina. He made some statues of gods and heroes, but these were not the works on which his fame rested. The ancient critics, as quoted by Pliny, censured his inability to represent the feelings of the mind ; hence the lofty ideals of Phidias and the Attic school in general were beyond the scope of his art. His works seemed to live and move before the spec- tator; but he could make an athlete hurling the discus, not a Zeus hurling the thunder. His most famous works were the Cow, the runner Ladas, and the Discobolus. Of the first, which was esteemed his greatest work, no copy is known, and, though thirty-six epigrams celebrate the realism and the life of this animal, which might be mistaken for a living cow, none of them give any information as to the attitude in which it was represented. The statue of Ladas is also unrepresented in modern museums ; no imitation has yet been found. Ladas, an Argive runner, died from over-exerting himself in the long race at the Olympic games. To judge from two epigrams, Myron represented him in the moment of his supreme effort, with flanks con- tracted as if the last breath had gone out from them and was still hovering on the open lips. The copies that have been preserved of two other works of Myron make it easier to realize the qualities that the ancient critics praise in him. The Discobolus is known from several copies, the best being a life-size statue in the Massimi palace at Rome. The athlete is represented at the moment when, after swinging the discus (five pounds in weight) back to the full stretch of his arm, he is quickening every sinew to begin the forward motion, and to employ in delivering the discus the full strength of

every muscle and the whole weight of the body and the impetus acquired by the longest possible swing of the arm.

A similar moment, the critical point when one motion is suddenly transformed into its opposite, was seized in another work, of which several copies remain. Its discovery is due to the penetration of Brunn, and, thongh his ingenious combination has not yet found universal acceptance, it will probably be confirmed by future dis- covery. He compared arelief on the Acropolis of Athens, described by Pausanias without the artist's name with the words of Pliny, (Myron feet) Satyrum admirantem tibias et Minervam, and recog: nized imitations of this scene on an Attic coin, a vase-painting, and an Attic relief, in which Marsyas is represented starting back with outstretched arms before the goddess Athena. He also recognized the figure of Marsyas alone in a marble statue of the Lateran museum,

which has been restored as a dancing satyr ; and a bronze statue in the British Museum has since been recognized as a slight variation of the same subject. None of these works agree completely with the words of Pausanias or with one another, but the general resem- plance is so striking that they must be free imitations of a single work. Marsyas is surprised either by the sight of the flute which Athena has thrown away or by the threatening action of the god- dess ; his forward motion is suddenly checked, but he has not begun a retrograde motion. His hands, the parts which the mind com- mands most quickly, are thrown wide apart without any definite object in their motion, and the body is poised between the preced-

ing action and the new action that will begin immediately. Pliny mentions a competition between Myron and Pythagoras of Rheginm, in which the Pancratiast of the latter was adjudged superior.

MYREH is a gum-resin highly esteemed by the ancients as an unguent and perfume, used for incense in temples and also in embalming. The word is Semitic; it appears in the Old Testament as 719 (Exod. xxx. 23; Ps. xlv, 8; Cant. passim), in Arabic as "morr." In Exod. (/.c.) "pure myrth" should rather be "flowing myrrh," that is, the "myrrha stacte" of classical writers, —the finest myrrh, ac- cording to Pliny (xii. 35), exuding without incisions

in the bark. So Johnson! says that it exudes from cracks in the trunk near the root and flows freely on stones under- neath, the exudation being sometimes aided by bruising the bark with a stone. Myrrh was one of the gifts offered by the Magi, and a royal oblation of gold, frankincense, and myrrh is still annually presented by the queen on the feast of Epiphany in the Chapel Royal in London, this custom having been in existence certainly as early as the reign of Edward 1.2 Until the present century the botanical source of myrrh was enveloped in great obscurity. In 1826 Ehrenberg brought home specimens of the myrrh trees found at Jizdn on the east side of the Red Sea, in lat. 16° 40’ N., and also on the neighbouring mountains of Jara. The more recent investigations of Hildebrandt (1878) show that one of the plants brought home by Ehrenberg and named Balsamodendron Myrrha yields the true myrrh. It was found by Hildebrandt growing on sunny slopes of the Sarat mountains at an elevation of 1600 to 3200 feet. It forms a low tree, attaining a height of not more than 10 to 12 feet, with thorny branches and a light grey bark, bearing some resemblance to those of the hawthorn, The leaves are ternate, the two lateral leaflets being minute in comparison with the central one ; they are smooth, obovate, and denticulate. The fruit is about the size of a pea, oval and somewhat compressed. The tree grows interspersed among Acacix and Huphorbix in dwarfish thickets. The myrrh, according to Ehrenberg, when it first exudes is of an oily and then of a buttery con- sistence, and of a yellowish white colour, gradually assum- ing a golden and ultimately a reddish tinge as it hardens. Myrrh is chiefly collected, according to Vaughan,® in the Somali country and in the neighbourhood of Harar (9° 20! N., 42° 17’ E.) south-west of Zeila, in the months of July and August (Johnson, loc. cit.), and is brought to the great fair of Berbera held in November, December, and January. Thence it is transported to Aden and shipped to Bombay, where it is sorted, the inferior kinds being sent chiefly to China and the finer sorts to Europe. The Banians of India, who trade in myrrh, have their’ business houses at Bombay, but employ partners or agents, who reside at Makallah and Aden to attend the fair at Berbera, and ex- change Indian or English piece goods for myrrh, bdellium, and frankincense. Myrrh of the best quality is known as Turkey myrrh, and the inferior quality as East Indian myrrh, from being exported from Bombay. At the present time, however, all myrrh is imported either direct from Aden or from Bombay. The Somalis also cross over to

1 Travels in Abyssinia, i. 249.

- Liber quotidianus Contra-rotulatoris Garderobe Edw. I., Lond., 1787, pp. xxxii, and 27. 3 Pharm. Journ., (1), xii. p. 227.

the Arabian shore and collect this gum-resin on the hills about Shugra and Sureea to the east of Aden, where myrrh trees abound. The myrrh of this district differs slightly in appearance, and is less resinous than that of Somali Land, and in the opinion of Hanbury (Pharm., p. 143) is probably the produce of a distinct species of Balsamoden- dron. The difference between African and Arabian myrrh was known to the ancients, who considered the Troglodyte or African myrrh the best. At Bombay this difference is still recognized. Specimens of the Arabian myrrh tree collected by Wykeham Perry in 1878 were less spinous than those of the Somali plant, but were too imperfect to determine if they belonged to a distinct species. Balsamo- dendron Kua, R. Br., a small spiny Abyssinian species allied to B. Myrrha, as yet undescribed, was found by Salt to yield myrrh.

Myrrh is usually imported in chests containing from one to two cwt., and is mixed with other gum-resins obtained from different species of Balsamodendron. The principal of these are subjoined.

(1) Baisa Bol, Bhesa Bol, or Bissa Bol, probably the produce of Balsamodendron Kataf, Kunth, a tree which is known to the Somalis as hebbakhade, and which has much larger leaves than the myrrh tree. This gum-resin resembles myrrh in appearance, but has a disagreeable taste and is scarcely bitter. At Aden bissa bol is worth only 24 rupees per maund (28 ib), while myrrh sells for 9 rupees per maund. It is used in China, mixed with food, to give to milch cows to improve the quality and increase the quantity of milk, and when mixed with lime as a size to impart a gloss to walls. (2) Opaque bdellium, probably identical with the gum hotai described by Vaughan (oc. cit.), and produced by B. Playfair. When shaken with water it forms a slight but permanent lather, and on this account is used by the Somali women for cleansing their hair and by the men to whiten their shields. It is known as meena hdrma in Bombay, and is there used for the ex- traction of the guinea-worm. (8) African bdellium is the

produce of B. africanum, and is probably the tree described by Adanson as Wistoutt. The last two gum-resins are without the white streaks which are characteristic of myrrh and bissa bol; the former presents an opaque and the latter a resinous appearance, both being acrid, but having scarcely any bitterness or aroma. (4) Indian bdellium, probably identical with the Indian drug googul obtained in Scinde and Baluchistan from Balsamodendron Mukul and B. pubescens, Hook, has an acrid taste, an odour resembling cedar-wood, and softens in the hand. It is probably the produce of B. Afukul which has recently been found by Balfour in Socotra.

As met with in commerce true myrrh occurs in pieces of irregular size and shape, from half an inch to 2 or 3 inches in diameter, and of a reddish-brown colour. The transverse fracture has a resinous appearance with white streaks; the flavour is bitter and aromatic and the odour characteristic. It consists of a mixture of resin, gum, and essential oil in varying proportions from 23 to 44 per cent., the resin being present in good specimens to the extent of 27 per cent., and the oil from } to 3 per cent. The resin appears to. be a complex body, partly soluble in ether and partly in bisulphide of carbon. The gum is soluble in water and forms an adhesive mucilage. The odour of myrrh is due to the volatile oil, which is heavier than water. The bitterness is believed to be due to a glucoside, the chemical constitution of which has not been ascertained. It is obtained by treating with warm water the resin extracted by means of alcohol.

Myrrh is used in medicine at present chiefly as an auxiliary to

other drugs, such as iron and aloes, in order to strengthen and modify their action. It appears to have a special action on the

“10

mucous membrane, improving the quality of its secretions and diminishing them in quantity when excessive. When taken internally it produces a sensation of warmth extending over the whole abdomen. The appetite is increased and the digestive process much facilitated, especially in cases in which there is weakness and torpidity of the intestinal canal. As au

emmenagogue It 1s found especially useful where pulmonary complications exist. The tincture diluted with water is used as an application to spongy gums and the aphthous sore mouth of children. : ; mM The Hebrew Jét, erroneously translated myrrh in Genesis xxxvil. 25; xlili. 11 (Sept. craxry ; Vulg. staete), is generally identified with ladanwm (vol. xii. p. 718), which has been used as a medicine and perfume from the earliest times,! and is still an article of commerce in Turkey. An excellent account of the mode of collecting it is

iven by Tournefort (Voyage, i. 79). O Pllop ih. —Forsk®, Fl, Agypt. Arab., p. 80; Nees, Beschreib. Officin. Pflanzen, p. 357, 1829; Marehand, Adansonia, vil. p. 258 ; Pharmacographia, 2d ed., pp. 140-146; Bentley and Trimen, Medicinal Plants, p. 60; Pharmaceutical Journal, (1), xii. pp. 226, 227; (8), vi. p. 6615 (3), ix. p. 893 5 (3), x. pp. 80-845 xi. pp. 41, 42; Cooke, Report on Gum-Resins in the India Museum, 1874, p. 72; Hil-debrandt in Sitzungsbericht d, Gesellsch. naturforsch. Freunde, Berlin, November 1878, p. 196. CE. M. H.)

MYRTLE. The pipros of the Greeks, the myrtus of the Romans, and the Myrtle, Afyrtus communis, of botanists, as now found growing wild in many parts of the Mediterranean region, doubtless all belong to one and the same species. It is a low-growing evergreen shrub, with opposite leaves, varying 1n dimensions, but always small, simple, dark-green, thick in texture, and studded with numerous receptacles for oil. When the leaf is held up to the light it appears . as if perforated with pin-holes owing to the translucency of these oil-cysts. The fragrance of the plant depends upon the presence of this oil. Another peculiarity of the myrtle is the existence of a prominent vein running round the leaf within the margin. The flowers are borne on short stalks in the axils of the leaves. The flower-stalk is dilated at its upper end into a globose or ovoid receptacle enclos- ing the 2- to 4-partitioned ovary. From its margin proceed the five sepals, and within them the five rounded, spoon- shaped, spreading, white petals. The stamens spring from the receptacle within the petals and are extremely numer- ous, each consisting of a slender white filament and a small yellow two-lobed anther. The style surmounting the ovary is slender, terminating in a small button-like stigma. The fruit is a purplish berry, consisting of the receptacle and the ovary blended into one succulent investment enclosing very

numerous minute seeds destitute of perisperm. The embryo-plant within the seed is usually curved.

In cultivation many varieties arc known, dependent on variations in the size and shape of the leaves, the presence of so-called double flowers, &c. The common myrtle is the sole representative in Europe of a large genus which has its headquarters in extra-tropical South America, whilst other members are found in Australia and New Zealand. The genus Myrtus also gives its name to a very large natural order, the general floral strueture of which is like that of the myrtle above described, but there are great differences in the nature of the fruit or seed-vessel according as it is dry or capsular, dehiscent, indehiscent, or pulpy. Minor differences exist according to the way in which the stamens are arranged. The aromatic oil to which the myrtle owes its fragrance, and its use in medicine and the arts, is a very general attribute of the order, as may be inferred from the fact that the order includes, amongst other genera, the Eucalyptus, the Pimenta, and the Eugenia (cloves). Brazil nuts,

sapucaya nuts, and souari nuts are all produced by trecs belonging to this order.

MYSIA, in ancient geography, was the name given to a province in the north-west of Asia Minor, which was bounded by Lydia and Phrygia on the S., by Bithynia on the N.E., and by the Propontis and Aigean Sea on the N. and W. But its precise limits are very difficult to assign,—the frontier on the side of Phrygia being, as observed by Strabo himself, very vague and fluctuating, while the north-western corner of the province, adjoining the Hellespont, was usually separated from Mysia under the name of the Troad, a district which was sometimes included in the name of Mysia, sometimes not. The river Alsepus, according to Strabo, constituted

? Celsus, Hierobot, i. 280-286 ; Herod., iii. 112; Dioseorides, p. 128.

the boundary between the two, but on this subject also there was much discrepancy among ancient geographers,

The physical geography of Mysia (considered apart from that of the Troad) is characterized by two mountain- chains: that of Olympus in the north, which may be regarded as constituting the boundary between Mysia and Bithynia, and rises to a height of more than 6000 feet ; and that of Temnus in the south, which for some distance separates Mysia from Lydia, and is afterwards prolonged through the former province to the neighbourhood of the Gulf of Adramyttium. The only considerable rivers are the Rhyndacus and its tributary the Macestus in the northern part of the province, both of which have their sources in the high tableland of Phrygia, and, after diverging widely in their course through Mysia, ultimately unite their waters below the Lake of Apollonia at a dis. tance of only about 15 miles from the Propontis. The Caicus in the south takes its rise in Mount Temnus, and from thence flows westward to the Algean Sea, passing within a few miles of the city of Pergamum, and dis- charging its waters into the Elaitic Gulf. In the northern portion of the province are two considerable lakes: that of Apollonia, formed by the expansion of the waters of the Rhyndacus, and nearly 50 miles in circumference; and that of Miletopolis, about 30 miles round, the waters of which are discharged into the Macestus.

The most important cities of Mysia were Pergamum in the valley of the Caicus, about 20 miles from the sea, which under the successors of Alexander became the seat of a flourishing Greek monarchy (see PercaMumM), and Cyzicus on the shores of the Propontis, a Milesian colony, which attained to a high degree of wealth and prosperity. But the whole of the sea-coast from thence round to the Gulf of Adramyttium was studded with a series of Greek towns, extending along the south shore of the Propontis, as well as the Hellespont and the Troad, several of which were places of considerable importance, including Parium, Lampsacus, and Abydos. In like manner the whole sea- coast from the Gulf of Adramyttium to the mouth of the Caicus, and from thence to the Elaitic Gulf, was occupied by Greek colonies, many of them dating from a very early period, and for the most part of AMolian origin, from which circumstance the whole of this coast district was known by the name of ANolis, as the corresponding district between Lydia and the sea was called Ionia (Alonis).

The most considerable of these Greek towns were Assos and Adra-myttium, on the gulf that derived its name from the latter city, and farther south, on the Elaitic Gulf, Ela, Myrina, and Cyme.

Ancient writers all agree in describing the Mysians as a distinct people, like their neighbours the Lydians and Phrygians, though they never appear in history as an inde- pendent nation. Their ethnological relations, like those of the other tribes of western Asia, are rather obscure; but it appears from Herodotus and Strabo that they were a kindred race with the Lydians and Carians, a fact attested by their common participation in the sacred rites at the great temple of Zeus at Labranda, as well as by the state- ment of the historian Xanthus of Lydia (a competent authority upon such a point) that their language was a mixture of Lydian and Phrygian. Strabo was of opinion that they came originally from Thrace, and were a branch of the same people as the Mysians or Meesians who dwelt on the banks of the Danube, —a view not inconsistent with the preceding, as he considered the Phrygians and Lydians also as having migrated from Europe into Asia. According to a Carian tradition reported by Herodotus (i. 171) Lydus and Mysus were brothers of Car,—an idea which also points to the belief in a common origin of the three nations. The Mysians appear in the list of the ‘Trojan allies in

|

Homer ; but nothing else is known of their early history.

The story told by Herodotus (vii. 20) of their having invaded Europe in conjunction with the Teucrians before the Trojan War is probably a mere fiction ; and the first historical fact we learn concerning them is their subjuga-

tion, together with all the surrounding nations, by the Lydian king Croesus. After the fall of the Lydian monarchy they naturally passed under the Persian empire, and so continued until its overthrow by Alexander. After the death of the conqueror they were annexed to the Syrian monarchy, of which they continued to forma part until the defeat of Antiochus the Great

(190 B.c.), after which they were transferred by the Romans to the dominion of Eumenes, king of Pergamum, as a reward for his services during the war. After the extinction of the Pergamenian dynasty (130 B.c.) Mysia became a part of the Roman province of Asia, and from this time disappears from his-

tory. The inhabitants probably became gradually Hellen-

ized, but none of the towns of the interior, except Pergamum, ever attained to any importance.

The only relic of the Mysian language is a very short inscription found by Mr Frank Calvert in the acropolis of

Thymbria, and supposed by Professor Sayce to be in the Mysian dialect, but its evidence is very inconclusive. MYSORE or Maisur (i.c., Mahesh-asura, “ Buffalo- demon ”) is a native state in southern India, lying between 11° 40’ and 15° N. lat. and 74° 40’ and 78° 30’ E. long., and surrounded entirely by British territory, with an area of 24,723 square miles. The Mysore country above the Ghats, though frequently called “the tableland,” is by no means flat or a plain, but is in some parts mountainous and everywhere undulating. Deep ravines are situated in the angle where the Eastern and Western Ghats converge into the group of the Nilgiri hills. An interesting feature of the country is the large number of isolated rocks (drig, “difficult of access”) which often rear their heads as stupendous monoliths to the height of 4000 or 5000 feet above sea-level. Some of these rocks—in particular Nandidrig (4810 feet) and Savandrig (4024 feet)—have been the scene of many a hard-fought contest, while Kabaldrig obtained an evil fame as a state prison. The eight highest peaks in Mysore are Muldina-giri (6317 feet), Kuduri-mukha (6215), Babé Budan-giri (6214), Kalhatti (6155), Rudra-giri (5692), Pushpa-giri (5626), Merti-gudda (5451), and Wodin-gudda (5006 feet). Five of these are comprised in the Ba4b&é Budan or Chandradrona range, a magnificent horse-shoe-shaped cluster of mountains. My- sore is naturally divided into two regions of distinct character—the hill country called the Malndd, on the west, and the more open country known as the Maidan, comprising the greater part of the state, where the wide-spreading valleys and plains are covered with villages and populous towns. The drainage of the country, with a slight exception, finds its way into the

Bay of Bengal, and is divisible into three great river systems—that of the Krishna on the north, the Cauvery on the south, and the Pennair, Penar, and Palar on the east. A few minor streams flow west into the Arabian Sea. Owing to either rocky or shallow beds none of the Mysore rivers are navigable, but some are utilized for floating down timber at certain seasons. The main streams, especially the Cauvery and its tributaries, support an extensive system of irrigation by means of channels drawn from immense dams (anicuts), which retain the water at a high level and permit only the overflow to pass down stream. The streams which gather from the hill-sides and fertilize the valleys are embanked at every favourable point in such a Manner as to form a series of reservoirs or tanks, tlie out- flow from one at a higher level supplying the next lower, and so on, all down the course of the stream at short

h23

intervals. These tanks, varying in size from small ponds to extensive lakes, are dispersed throughout the country to the number of 20,000; the largest is the Sulukere Lake, 40 miles in circumference.

The census of 1881 returned the population of Mysore at 4,186,188 (males 2,085,842, females 2,100,846), viz., Hindus 3,956,336, Mohammedans 200,484, Christians 29,249, ‘‘others” 119. The population of the chicf towns in the exccutive districts was as follows:—Bangalore, 155,857 ; Mysore, 60,292; Shimoga, 12,040; Kolar, 11,172; Tumkdtr, 9909; Chikmagalur, 7088; Hassan, 5950; and Chitalchoog, 4271. In 1880-81 out of a total of 4,280,674 acres of cultivable land 3,139,560 were occupied by rdégi and other dry crops, 554,752 by rice, 21,058 by wheat, 147,464 by oil-secds, 24,076 by sugar cane, 20,893 by cotton, 159,165 by coffee, 185,542 by cocoa- nut and areca-nut, and the remainder by fibres, tobacco, vegetables, mulberry, pepper, and lac. Two cinchona plantations have becn recently established, and promise good results. In the Lal Bagh or Government garden at Bangalore, attempts have been made with some success to grow vanilla, cocoa, rhea, ipecacuanha, and various other exotic plants, while the culture of apples, peaches, straw- berries, and other fruits has been greatly improved.

The drought which affected all southern India in 1876-78 fell with especial severity upon Mysore. From October 1875 to October 1877 four successive monsoons failed to bring their full supply of rain. The harvest of 1875 was gencrally below the average, and remissions of revenue were found necessary ; but it was not till the close of 1876 that actual famine occurred. During tho wholo of 1877 famine was at work ; but in October of that year the monsoon broke with a fair rainfall, and cultivation at last became possible. It will, however, take many ycars before Mysore recovers its normal ~ condition of prosperity ; and it is estimated by competent authorities that one-fourth of the entire population of the state was swept away by starvation or disease, while the mortality among cattle was yet more heavy. In 1880-81 also 200,000 head of cattle perished. In September 1877, when affairs were at. their worst, no less than 280,000 persons were in receipt of relief. The total amount ex- pended on state relief, apart from loss of land revenue, was upwards of a million sterling.

The chicf manufacture of Mysore is iron-smelting at Bangalore. Gold-mining is pursued in Kolar and Bangalore (since 1881) dis- tricts. Jewellery is a speciality of Bangalore. Carpets, rugs, cotton textures, silk cloths, cumblics, &c., are also manufactured, the total estimated value being 6,281,651 rupees. Sandal-wood, which forms a state monopoly, yields an average annual income of about £15,000. The Madras railway runs through the state. An excellent net-work of provincial and district roads intersects the state, and great attention has been paid to the numerous passes through the Western Ghats to the low country beyond.

The total revenue for 1880-81 was 10,270,383 rupees. Local funds to the extent of 700,697 rupees were also levied for the main- tenance of district roads and tanks, and for the support of village schools. Municipalities have been established at all district head- quarters, and also in sixty-seven other towns. The system of judicial procedure, both civil and criminal, has been assimilated to that in force in British territory. Mysore pays a yearly subsidy to the British Government of 2,450,000 rupees for the maintenance of a force for the defence of its territory. Thero is also a local force. In 1880-81 the total number of schools of all classes in the state was 899 Government schools and 1881 aided schools, tho total number of scholars being 42,657.

There are in all 20 hospitals or dispensaries ; the average daily attendance in 1880-81 was 1500.

In the carliest historical times the northern part of Mysore was held by the Kadamba dynasty, whose capital, Banawasi, is men- tioned by Ptolemy; they reigned with more or less splendour during fourteen centuries, though latterly they became feudatorics of the Chalukyas. The Cheras were contemporaries with the Kadambas, and governed the southern part of Mysore till they were subverted by the Cholas in the 8th century. Another ancient race, the Pallavas, held a small portion of the eastern side of Mysore, but were overcome by the Chalukyas in the 7th century A.D. These were overthrown in the 12th century by the Ballalas, an enter- prising and warlike race professing the Jain faith. They ruled over the greater part of Mysore, and portions of the modern districts of Coimbatore, Salem, and Dharwar, with their capital at Dwara- samudra (the modern Halebid) ; but in 1810 the Ballala king was captured by Malik Kafur, the general of Ala-ud-din ; and seventeen years later the town was entirely destroyed by another force sent by Muhammad Tughlak. After the subversion of the Ballala dynasty, a new and powerful Hindu sovereignty arose at Vijaya- nagar on the Tungabhadra (see INDIA, vol. xi. p. 794). In 1565 a confederation of the Mohammedan kingdoms defeated the Vijaya- nagar sovereign, Raja Ram, at the battle of Talikot ; and his descendants ultimately became extinct as a ruling house. During the feeble reign of the last king, the petty local chiefs (paligars) asserted their independence. The most important of these was

the wodeyar (‘‘lord”) of Mysore, who in 1610 seized the fort of Seringapatam, and so laid the foundation of the present state. His fourth successor, Chikka Deva Raj, during a reign of thirty- four years, made his kingdom one of the most powerful in southern India. In the 18th century the famous Haidar Ali usurped the throne, and by his military prowess made himself one of the most powerful princes of India. His dynasty, however, was as brief as it was brilliant, and ended with the defeat and dcath of his son Tipu at Seringapatam in 1799. A representative of the ancient Hindu line was then replaced on the throne. Owing to his career of

misgovernment, the British administration assumed the authority in his name in 1831. He died in 1868, leaving an adopted son, Chikka Krishna Arasu, a minor, during whose pupilage and train- ing the state management was conducted by British officers. The full sovereignty of the state was handed over to him in March 1881. Mysore, the ancient capital of the above state, 1s situated 10 miles south-west of Seringapatam, in 12° 18’ N. lat. and 76° 41’ E. long., with a population of 60,292 in 1881. The town, which is spread over an area of about 3 square miles, lies at the foot of the Chdamundi hill, in a valley formed by two parallel ridges running north and south. The streets generally are broad and regular, except in the fort. The majority of the houses are tiled, and some of them are substantial buildings two or three stories high. Altogether, the town has a clean and prosperous look, and its sanitary condition has been greatly improved of late years. The fort stands in the south of the town, forming a quarter by itself; the ground-plan is quadrangular, each of the sides being about 450 yards long. In the interior is the palace of the maharaja, built in an extravagant style of Hindu architecture, and adorned inside with a few paintings by a European artist, the principal object of interest being the throne, which is said to have been presented to Chikka Deva Raj by the emperor Aurangzeb. A new palace has been erected at Bangalore for the young maharaj4. Opposite the western gate of the fort is a lofty and handsome building known as the Mohan Mahal, erected by the late maharaja for the entertainment of the European officers. The houses of the European residents are, for the most part, to the east of the town. The residency was built by Colonel Wilks in the beginning of this century. It has a handsome portico; and a room at the back, added by Sir John Malcolm, is said to be the largest in India. The building now used for the district offices was originally built by Colonel Wellesley (duke of Wellington) for his own occupation. Mysore was the capital of the state up till 1831, when on the British occupation the seat of adminis- tration was removed to Bangalore. (W. W. H.) MYSTERIES. This name was applied to certain cere- monies in Greek religion which were esteemed peculiarly sacred and might not be freely spoken about. The sub- ject is one of great difficulty on account of the absolute silence maintained with regard to it by many writers, and the guarded terms in which the few references to it are couched, The obligation to silence was not felt by the Christian writers, and it is to them that we owe most of our knowledge. Their testimony is of doubtful value, and it has been keenly debated whether any trust can be

placed in it; but it is in such perfect accord with the few refer- ences In pagan authors that this scepticism is unjustifiable. The Christian writers on whom we have to depend were arguing against pagan opponents, and their arguments would have lost all force if it had been possible to retort that the descriptions and facts were inaccurate. The Mysteries were the chief stronghold of those pagan con- troversialists who maintained that all the truths and the morality advocated by the Christian writers were contained in the Greek religion, and therefore the Christians directed their arguments chiefly against this strongest part of their opponents' case. It results from a study of the evidence that, on the whole, they stated the case in favour of the Mysteries with much clearness and fairness, admitting

the good points, but directing their polemic against the weak side.

Of the many Mysteries which existed in different parts of Greece, the Eleusinian were the most famous, the most widely popular, the most representative in every way. In several parts of Greece—e.g., at Phlius—there were Mys. teries directly adopted from Eleusis ; in other places, such as Lerna, Andania, &c., a genuine old mystic cultus was greatly modified by the same example.! The Christian writers therefore direct their polemic mainly against the Eleusinian Mysteries, and the material for study is far less scanty in their case than in any other. The following remarks, accordingly, will be almost entirely confined to them. Any discussion of the subject must be founded on Lobeck's great work Aglaophamus (1829), in which, with equal learning and acuteness, he destroyed once for all the a proort theories current before his time, that the Mysteries enshrined a primitive revelation of divine truth made to mankind, or contained a philosophic doctrine borrowed by the Greeks from the wisdom of the East and handed down unmodified from generation to generation.2 As a con- structive work, Lobeck's treatise is not so perfect. What we are in search of is not so much the objective facts of the Mysteries as the place which they held in the Greek mind. The effect of a religious institution like the Mys- teries depends chiefly on subjective considerations ; actions and rites in themselves quite commonplace may bear to the eye of faith the most sacred and impressive character. This point of view is not taken into account by

Lobeck. Again, the polemical character detracts from the value of his work as a final statement of the question; he is some- times satisfied with proving that ancient evidence does not bear out the theories which he combats, but he does not estimate duly its actual worth. Finally, additional evi- dence has been accumulated since his time ; inscriptions and works of art have afforded important corroborative evidence, and it is certain that statements which Lobeck set aside as not referring to the Eleusinian religion do really relate to it.?

There is no ancient authority to show that the ritual of the Mysteries differed essentially from that of the general religion of Greece. All ancient testimony tends to prove that the ritual was based on religious myths, similar to those which were common in Greece, and that the difference between mystic and exoteric rites lay chiefly in the accompaniments. Atheneus* says that the Mysteries were distinguished from the ordinary festivals by their peculiar magnificence and expense, and by the ““inystic paradosis” which took place at them, 2.¢., certain sacred things were exposed in a peculiarly impressive manner to the worship of the participants. Their magnti- ficence must have been very great. Painting, sculpture,

1 The contrast between the account given by Pausanias of the Mysteries of Andania in the 2d century after Christ and the account given in the great inscription 91 B.c. shows how the example of Eleusis had worked in the interval.

- The chief older theories of the Mysteries were those of Warburton, St Croix, and Creuzer.

3 The principal special authorities on the Mysteries since Lobeck are :—Sauppe, Mysterieninschr. von Andania ; Foucart’s commentary on this inscription in Le Bas, Voyage Archéol. (1847-77), Inser. de la Peloponn.; Foucart, ‘‘Inscr. d’Eleus.” in Bull. Corr. Hell,, 1880 ; id., Associations Relig. chez les Grecs ; C. Lenormant in Mém. de U Acad. a’Inscr. et de Belles Lettres, xxiv. 343 ; Guignaut, ‘‘ Myst. de Cer. et de Pros.,” ibid., xxi. 68; K. O. Miiller in Ersch and Gruber’s Allg. Lncyk., art. ‘‘Eleusinia ;” id. in Orchomenos, p. 453; Preller in Pauli’s Realencyklop., arts. ‘‘Eleusinia,” ‘* Mysteria,” ‘¢ Orpheus,””—the best statement of the subject ; id., Demet.

und Perseph.; Gerhard, Griech. Mystericnbilder ; id., Ueber d. Bilderkreis von El. (1863-65) ; Stephani in Compte Rendu, St Petersb., 1859 ; Millingen in Annali Inst. Arch, vol, xv.3 A. Mommsen, Heortologie (1864); F, Lenormant, Réch. Archéol. & El.; id., La Voie Sacrée Eleus.; id., ‘‘Eleus. Myst.” in Ninetcenth Century, 1881, May, J uly, September.

4 Athen., ii. p. 40 D.

ey Ss Pik | Es

architecture, music, dancing, &c., were combined with lavish

The strictest secrecy was enjoined and observed in regard to the Mysteries and everything connected with them ; put this secrecy was not that of a narrow cult, confined to a small number of participants. The Eleusinian Mysteries were open as early as the time of Herodotus to any of the Greeks who wished to be initiated.2 There was, therefore, no secret to keep inviolate from the uninitiated. Just as in the actual representation of the Mysteries a silence so strict as to be proverbial? was maintained, so it was a condition of their good effect that they should not here- after be lightly spoken of. Those who believed in the Mysteries kept in their heart, as a saving and sacred pos- session, the knowledge of what they had seen and heard and kissed and handled; the thought was too holy to be rashly spoken of, even to the initiated.® Numerous refer- ences prove that this mystic silence was generally very carefully observed. In the poets we sometimes find an affectation of observing silence about myths which are quite common property ; and writers of religious or super- stitious character frequently make a mystic secret of matters that less scrupulous writers speak freely about.® The degree to which silence was observed depended entirely on the individual conscience, and the fact that it was in general so strictly maintained is the best proof of the vitality and power of the Mysteries over the popular mind.

The saving and healthy effect of the Eleusinian Mysteries was believed in not only by the mass of the people but by many of the most thoughtful and educated intellects, Pindar, Sophocles, Isocrates, Plutarch, &c.’ Plato, who finds no language too strong to stigmatize the demoralizing effect of the Orphic Mysteries, speaks of the Eleusinia with great respect; he compares

the contemplation of the “ideas” by the disembodied souls to the contemplation of the “phasmata”® revealed in the Mysteries. This saving power is expressly connected with the future life; he that has been initiated has learned what will ensure his happiness hereafter. This point, which is ridiculed by Lobeck (pp. 70-1), must be examined carefully. The words of Pindar, Sophocles, Isocrates agree with the words of the Homeric Hymn (1. 480) that the initiated have peculiar advantages in the future world, and many other passages are equally clear and distinct. Lobeck maintains that they have no special meaning, inasmuch as Isocrates says the same about all men who live an upright life.® This argument misses the most important religious ques- tion with regard to the subject,—lIs the salvation in the future life, which is assured by initiation, attained by mere ritualistic observances, or does it depend on the effect produced by initiation on the life and character of the Initiated person? Plato condemns in the strongest terms the Orphic Mysteries, which promise salvation in return

! Inscription published by Foucart in Bull. Corr. Iell., 1880.

2 Herod., viii. 65. It was an accusation against Socrates that he alone of all the Athenians had not been initiated, Lucian, Dem., ix. 237 ; Lobeck, p. 21.

3 Philostr., Vit. Apoll., i. 15, 17, damep év uvornplots éowrwy, &c.; see Lobeck, p. 67.

: Strab., p. 357, 4 xpvyus 7 mvorikh ceuvorroret 7d Oetov.

‘ Macrob., Sat., i. 18, 286; Lobeck, p. 135.

; Theocr., iii. 50, and many passages in Herod. and Paus.

’ Pind., fr. 102; Soph., fr. 719, Daf. ; Isocr., Pan., vi. p. 59, § 28 ; Crinagoras in Jac., Anthol., ii. 382; Cic., Legg., ii. 14; Lobeck, § 11.

‘ Plat., Phedr., p. 250, Epin., p. 986.

Isocr., Symmach., xii, 266.

for mere ritualistic acts of purification and initiation ; if he respects the Eleusinian Mysteries, which also promise salvation as the reward of initiation, this can be only because he believes that they promise it on different grounds. ‘The reason is explained by Isocrates, who expressly says that this salvation in the future life, the reward of the initiated, is gained by all who live a pious and just life. In like manner, Diodorus says that the initiated are said to grow better; and Andocides makes a similar remark about the object of the Mysteries. Accord- ing to Sopater, initiation establishes a kinship of the soul with the divine nature; and Theon Smyrneus says that the final stage of initiation is the staté of bliss and divine favour which results from it.!°

These quotations prove the general belief that the aim of the Eleusinian Mysteries was high, and that a lasting effect was produced by them on the initiated. This im- plies a high stage of religious thought, such as no other ancient faith, except that of the Hebrews, attained ; but a passage in a Rhodian inscription of the 5th century B.c. shows that this idea was not wholly unfamiliar in Greek religion. The first and most important condition required of those who would enter the temple at Lindus is that they be pure in heart, and not conscious of any crime ; conditions of ceremonial purity are enumerated as secondary matters.!! Now, with regard to the profanation of the Mysteries by those persons who ridiculed them, it is easy to understand that the very simple character of the rites, the commonplace nature of the sacred things which were exposed as the crowning ceremony of the Mysteries to the adoration of the people, lent themselves readily to ridicule when contrasted with the solemn preparations that led up to the crowning act, and the great effects that were expected from the initiation. The people who had been initiated, who believed in the salutary effect of the admission to handle and kiss the sacred objects, were naturally both shocked and indignant at the ridicule thus cast on their holy sacra- ment by the pitiless analysis of a cold disbelieving intellect. They felt that more than met the eye existed in these sacred things. The Mysteries occupied a place among the ancients analogous to that of the Holy Sacrament in the Christian church. The intention was to admit all that were not notoriously wicked ; the disqualifying crime was unexpiated murder. The belief was entertained that the solemnity and impressiveness of the ceremony tended to produce a strong effect on the character of the initiated.

There is overwhelming proof in ancient writers that the effect of the Mysteries was not dependent on any dogmatic instruction. Even the doctrine of a future life, which is always associated in the old writers with the Mysteries, was not expressly inculcated in them, but left to the spec- tators to gather for themselves from the spectacle presented. to them.!2 On the other hand, ancient testimony shows a striking unanimity in describing the manner in which the Mysteries were believed to educate the people. One of the most important passages is that where Galen main- tains that the study of nature, if prosecuted with the con- centrated attention given to the Mysteries, is even more fitted than they are to reveal the power and wisdom of God, inasmuch as these truths are more obscurely expressed in the Mysteries than in nature. Plato compares the con- templation of the “ideas” with that of the Mysteries; Chry- sippus calls the discussion on the nature of the gods, which forms the last section of the Stoic physic, teAery.’® From

ee

10 Diod. Sic., Hist., v. 48; Andoc., De Myst., § 31; Sopat., Digwr. Zetem., p. 120, in Walz, Rhet. Gree. ; Theon Smyrn., Afathem., 1. p. 18, ed. Bull; see Lobeck, pp. 39, 189.

11 Inscription quoted by Foucart in Inscr. de la Peloponn., p. 171, in Le Bas, Voy. Archéol.

12 Lobeck, §§ 216-19.

13 Lobeck, §§ 19-20.

these passages we may infer the belief of the writers that important truths were cnigmatically! expressed in the Mysterics, and that the intellect wlich could pene- trate beneath the surface was able to apprehend them. Plutarch says that it required a philosophic training and a reverent religious frame of mind to comprehend the Mysteries. Similarly Aristotle expressly says that no 1n- struction was given to the ptoro, but that, while in a suitable state of receptivity, their emotions and character were acted upon. The testimony of the Christian writers is entirely to the same effect; while stigmatizing the

im- pure character of some of the rites, they always admit that the Mysteries were intcnded to lead the people up to a knowledge of religious truth? It is obvious that the essential point on which the effect of the ceremony depended was that the mind of the initiated should be wrought up to a pitch of eager, rapt expectancy and breathless attention. The attentive silence of the spectators at the Mysteries was proverbial. Many means contributed to produce this state. A certain amount of previous training and instruction was imparted by the pvataywyot to the candidates. It is true that all who had been initiated had the right to act as wroraywyot, that they were left legally free to introduce any one whom they thought fit, that the amount of instruction they could impart varied accord- ing to their character and education. Lobeck has em- phasized all these elements which tended to impair the character and lessen the effect of the Mysteries. But though this point is incapable of proof, the general char- acter of the Mysteries suggests that custom may have modified to some degree the freedom allowed by law, and that the Eleusinian officials tried to regulate the instruc- tion given. Moreover, the lesser Mysteries were a kind of preparation for the greater, and Clement mentions that in them, and in them alone, a certain amount of instruction was given to the piorau.? with the general belief of the people in the holiness and power of the Mysteries to produce in the mind of the pooras an expectant feeling and a disposition to look for some meaning in the spectacle.

The grades of admission to the Mysteries tended to pro- duce the same impression. The process of initiation was not a momentary one, completed in one act; it extended over an elaborate series of stages, and the ancients certainly associated these successive steps with a gradual increase of knowledge and insight. The candidate was initiated in the lesser Mysteries in Anthestcrion (February) at Athens ; he was admitted as a ptorns at Eleusis in the following Boedromion (September), but he could not attain the higher initiation as erdarys till at least one year more had elapsed. It was also believed that a higher order of initiation was reserved for those who were qualified for the offices of tepopavrns and Sgdodxos, in which the last knowledge of the cultus was imparted to them.4

Finally, the physical circumstances of the initiation were such as to produce an excited and high-strung nervous condition. The nine days’ fast, very

strictly observed,5 the long march from Athens to Eleusis and the frequent

} The word ‘‘enigma” is used by Sopater, Diwr. Zetem, L220) Clem. Alex., Stérom., p. 658, and Christian writers frequently ; Lobeck, pp. 148, 189.

? Plut., Zsid., Ixviii. ; Aristot. ap. Synes., Or, p. 48 (ed. Petav.) ; Cic., NM. D., i, 42, is important, rerum magis natura cognoscitur quam deorun,

3 Cl. Alex., Strom., v. 689 ; Lobeck, p. 140.

4 Theon Smyrn., Mfathem. , 1. p. 18, quoted by Lobeck, p. 39.

5 It is nowhere mentioned that the Horas fasted nine days, but the analogy of the nine days' fast of Demeter makes it quite safe to assume that this was the rule for her worshippers; see Hymn, 1. 47-9. The fast was perhaps, like the Mohammedan Ramadan, observed only while the sun was up; but, in addition to this, various kinds of food were wholly prohibited, see Lobeck, pp. 189-91.

'Phrygian rites.

These circumstances combined.

myYyorrkR TEs

religious ceremonies with which it was marked, the wander. ing by night around the shores and plain of Eleusis with torches in search of the lost Cora,—all tended to produce

a strained enthusiastic state. And the season of the year

and of the month—for the nights were dark—co-operated ;

Boedromion fell about the end of the hot season, when the bodily strength is usually low. Then came the actual Mysteries: the wvrrar were admitted to the holy building the splendid illumination seemed dazzlingly bright after the darkness outside ; the strange apparitions, the impressive voices, the gorgeous dresses of the actors, the magnificence of the sacred drama, to which the highly suggestive and symbolic art of Greece no doubt contributed largely,—all these they saw and heard in awestruck silence. Then came the crowning act of the ceremony: they had perhaps before this drunk the sacred draught with which the god- dess had refreshed herself after her long fast, but now the holy things which the goddess had herself shown to the daughters of Celeus were revealed to them. They were admitted one by one to touch, to kiss the holy things, to lift them from the cist, to put them into the basket, to taste them, to replace them in the cist, and to pronounce the sacred formula. The scene that takes place in every modern Greek church on the eve of Easter Sunday gives some faint idea of the character of this rapéSocts.

This state of enthusiasm was common to all Mysteries, especially to the Phrygian. It was susceptible of great abuses, ¢.g., the self-mutilation and the immorality of the But the spirit of Hellenism toned down the excesses, while it tried to preserve the fervour and self-forgetfulness of the Phrygian and Baccliic orgies, The relation of the state to the Mysteries contributed to regulate the excited fervour of the celebrants. While it never interfered with the established ritual, the state was the last judge in cases of misdemeanour ; it appointed officials to control the expenditure and conduct the public part of the ceremony. Inscriptions® have thrown much light on this point, but it is not possible here to dwell on it. The Mysteries of Eleusis were the one great attempt made by the Hellenic genius to construct for itself a religion that should keep pace with the growth of thought and civilization in Greece. The strained enthusiasm at- tendant upon them seems at first strange and unhellenic to a mind accustomed to the moderated chastened tone of Greek art and literature, and to the spectacular character of Greek cxoteric religion with its utter want of vitality and religious fervour. The public religion either became, like the Panathenaia, a purely political display of the power and splendour of Athens, or else, like much of the old ceremonial of the acropolis, was performed perfune- torily. It had no hold on the mind of the people; its simple antique ceremonies told nothing of the subjects which troubled men’s minds, the thoughts of sin, of a future life, and of punishment for guilt. But the Mysteries con- cerned themselves preciscly with these subjects: they pro- vided a series of preliminary purifications for their votaries; they turned men’s minds to the deeper problems of life and death, and gave them new views; they made some attempt to reach and touch the individual mind. Thus, while the public Hellenic religion sank into disrepute, the Mysteries became more and more important as time elapsed.

It is impossible to reconstruct the mystic ceremonial, but sufficient indications are given for us to understand its general character. It consisted of acts and words, Spodpeva, and Xeyopeva, which supplemented one another, and were both required to make an intelligible whole. en ee

6 See the inscription of Andania, and the important inscription of Eleusis published in Bull. Corr. Hell., 1880.

7 The case of the young man in Sopater’s imaginary trial proves this very clearly.

‘

;

i ys fe til es

The Acydpeva were obscurely- worded phrases and tradi- tional songs, whose sanctity was due to their antiquity. They had no didactic character, and were hardly intelligible without preparatory instruction. They were chanted by the hierophant, and that a fine voice was one of the requisites for this office several epigrams and inscriptions bear witness. The mythic ancestor of the family, in whom are embodied the requirements for the office, was called Eumolpus. The Spwpeva appear to have been a dramatic representa- tion of the life of the deities by whom the Mysteries had been instituted. These deities were presented on the stage in appropriate dresses, the parts being played by the minis- ters of the cultus. At Andania this is known to have been the case,! and Porphyry enumerates the parts played by the chief officials of Eleusis at one point in the mystic drama.” It is also certain that figures, probably of great size, were introduced by machinery. The terms fdcpara ay.a, evdai- pova, Geta, dppyra, are applied to the mystic sights.*

The Homeric Hymn to Demeter is a religious, not an historical myth. It does not relate the origin of agricul- ture, for the gift with which the goddess rewards her Eleusinian hosts is not the art of agriculture but the knowledge of the Mysteries (1. 273, 474). It springs directly from the cultus of Eleusis, and contains the tepos Adyos, the fortunes of the two goddesses, mother and daughter, the periodical representation of which formed the basis of the ritual. It is, of course, not a complete description of the ritual; it is an exoteric and poetic statement, in which the most holy of the rites and the most mysterious of the personages are alluded to only in an indirect way. The express statement of Clement,* that the whole myth of Cora was represented at Eleusis, con- firms the inference drawn from the Hymn. Many writers® refer to the appearance presented by the shores and bay of Eleusis on the dies lampadum, when the worshippers wandered in the

darkness with torches searching for the lost Cora. This ceremony took place in the open country, and was therefore not a part of the mystic ritual revealed to the pvora: in the teAcoTHpiov. It probably took place on Boedromion 21, on the night before the mystic rites proper began. The picra: waited outside the sacred en- closure in perfect darkness on the moonless eve of Boedro- mion 22, Suddenly the wportAaca were thrown open, and the light was seen streaming through the oatov in the roof of the reAcor#pcov and through the open door in which stood the dadotyos holding up the sacred torches. This scene is frequently alluded to.6 The scenes inside the te\eoTHptov are mentioned less frequently,' but the few references point to episodes in the myth of Demeter and Cora. The hymn refers in guarded terms to the rapddocrs Tov tepdy, the central act of the mystic ritual. Clement enumerates the simple objects that were displayed, and gives the formula in which each piorys replied as he received from the hierophant the holy objects: "I have fasted, and I have drunk the xvxewv; I have taken from

1 See 1. 24, dca de def Stackevdager Oa els OeGv SidBeotv, with Sauppe's and Foucart's commentaries.

2 Ap. Euseb., Prep. Hvang., iti. 12, p. 117.

- Themist., Or., xvi. p. 244, rip elpfunv elofyev Gomep ev redeTH aWopyri kai dmpaypovws ; Stob., Serm., exix. p. 604; Aristid., Or., xix. = &e, 4 Ol. Alex., Protrept., ii. p. 12.

Themist., Or., xx. p. 235 (p. 288, ed. Dind.); Lobeck, p. 52;

Claudian, De Rapt. Proserp., 1. 5-15; Lucian, Catapl., 22; Plut. ap. ee Serm., cxix. p. 604, and Plut., Prof. Virt. Sent., i. p. 312 (ed. yut),

® Ar., Ran, 340-52 ; Soph., Gid. Col., 1045; Eur., Zon, 1075 sq. ; 4isch., Fragm., quoted by schol. on Soph., l.e., &e.

a Procl. on Plat., Polit., p. 384, airijs rs weylorns Oedis lepo's Twas éy amoppyroas Ophvous ai Tederal mapadidodcr; Apollod. ap. sehol. Theocr. , i. 36, "AOqvyo. tov iepopdvTny tis Képns émixadoupévys émuxpovew 7d kaovpevov HxEtov 5 Hecate appeared on the stage (JZymn, 1. 52); Claud.,

Rapt. Pros., 15; Helios and Hermes (Hymn, 1. 74, 346) both appeared on the stage, see note 2 above.

the xiory ; after tasting I have deposited in the xéAa6os, and from the xéAa@os in the kiory.”® In these words he professed that he had fulfilled the sacred duties.

This whole myth bears most evidently the character of having been acted continuously at one time. It could not have been divided without losing its power over the atten- tion and emotions of the picra:. But it seems almost certain that there were two nights of mystic ceremonial, 22 and 23 Boedromion.® It is probable, therefore, that another play with a distinct subject was acted on one of these nights, and as the play just described is certainly the original and central point in the Eleusinian ritual it was probably acted on the first night. Again, it is certain that there was a distinction between piora: and éromrrai at Eleusis. As the piorae were not admitted to witness the ritual of éroyus, it is highly probable that the second night was devoted to the higher ceremonial. It would be exceedingly difficult to effect a change in the middle of the night from the piynors to the eroyts, and the good order and regularity for which the Eleusinia were famed could hardly have been maintained. The //ymn refers in covert terms to the holy child Iacchus, to his death and resurrection (262-4). There seems no place for Jacchus in the ritual as yet described. It is therefore a plausible conjecture that the éoyus was devoted more especially to the mystic child; and further examination will make this conjecture almost a certainty.

The development of the Eleusinian religion is a matter of speculation, but cannot be wholly passed over. Several elements must be distinguished.

1. Demeter always represents the productive and nourishing power of the earth. (ca) In the simplest form of her cultus the act by which tho earth-goddess is fertilized is conceived as an out- rage and a deed of violence. The goddess, enraged, hides herself in a eave; winter and death reign in the world. At last she is appeased ; sho bathes in the sacred stream ; her child is born, and the life of spring blooms on the earth. This cultus is most dis- tinctly seen in Arcadia. (6) The worship of Demeter Thesmophorus is the

rcligion of a more educated race; the goddess is the giver of all law, especially of the law of marriage, on which all society is founded. The worship of Demeter Thesmophorus is restricted more or less completely to women. It appears to have been the national religion of the Cadmcones, and the house of Cadmus at Thebes was the first temple of the goddess; but it spread carly into Attica, The Argolic Demeter is very similar, but her cultus has been affected by Eleusinian influence, The Thesmophoric rites are so obscure that no sure idea can be gained of the relation between them and the simpler Arcadian cultus. The anger of Demeter Achea or Achaia formed part of them, and the ritual has, as A. Mommsen observes, an Oriental character of vehement mourning ; but we know not how the wrath of the goddess was kindled and allayed, how the alternation of winterand summer was conceived. (c) Eleusis was apparently the original scat of a modified form of this cnltus, in which Demeter was associated with Cora. The modification. per- haps arose through the fusion of the religions of two races which united in the fertile Eleusinian plain.

2. The marriage of Cora is a form of the widespread idea that the marriage of the god and goddess each spring is the pledge and cause of the fertility of earth. The ‘‘holy marriage” was eele- brated in Samos, Argos, &c., with the rites of an earthly marriage, and vestiges of the primitive custom of marriage by capture can be traced in the ceremony. According to the lepds Adyos of Eleusis, the rape of Cora takes placo in the spring (Hymn, |. 6, 425); it is the holy marriage by capture. But the Eleusinian myth is marked as composite and not original by an important fact ; it does not explain the vicissitude of winter and summer. The abduction takes place once in the spring ; winter arises from the anger of Demeter ; but ever afterwards Cora goes to her husband in the autumn with her mother’s consent and returns in the spring. The myth has ecased to bo closely and obviously connected with the life of nature. The two cults cach lost something when they were amalgamated. Tho annual Theogamia, a central point in the original worship of Cora, becomes a mere disagreeable episode in the life of the two SC ES SET 1 LST aa tdci “tities sa SE

8 Protrept., p. 18; Arnob., v. 26, ‘qu rogati saerorum in aceep-

tionibus respondeant.”

9 Mommsen and Lenormant have given several reasons to think that there were two nights of Mysterics.

10 Heortol., under “Thesmophoria’’; cf. Plut., Solon, Ue,

1 At Nysa, Cyzieus, and elsewhere.

goddesses. Demeter ceases to be directly connectcd with the life of the year, and affects it only through the fortunes of her daughter. It is an important point that the vehement self-forgetting enthu- siasm characterizing devotees who fecl their complete dependence on their deities can be traced from the beginning in the worship of the mother of all earthly life. This enthusiasm was increased by the next stage in the development of the Mysteries, the fusion of the cults of Demeter-Persephone and of Dionysus. It is uncertain how and when this fusion began ; it is certain that it was not com- pleted till after the union of Eleusis and Athens.

3. The worship of Dionysus can be traced in two phases. The cultus of the wine-god with simple rural character, rude and gross symbolism, was the religion of uneducated peasants, its chief seat being in the borderland of Attica and Beotia. Another form of the religion of Dionysus with its orgiastic enthusiasm and its mystic character penetrated into Greece from Thrace, was accepted at Delphi alongside of the Apolline worship,! and established itself at Eleutherz and on Mount Parnassus, where the women of Phocis and Attica united in the rites and revels of the god every second winter. The Dionysus of Eleuthere was carried to Athens when the places were united, and the worship of Dionysus Eleuthercus was one of the most splendid and most impressive in the state ; under its shelter grew the Attic drama.

The unification of the Attic land required as its pledge and com- pletion the unification of the Attic religion. A common religion bound together every association in Greece; a people united poli- tically, yet divided religiously, was an unintelligible idea to the ancient mind. When, through the decay of the Megarian power, the Eleusinian valley was incorporated in the Attic state, the wor- ship of the Eleusinian goddess was established under the

Athenian acropolis, and the whole land united in her worship. Eleusis always occupied a peculiarly independent position in Attica; it retained its own cultus in its own hands, and it had, like Salamis, the right of issuing coins. It seems to have been only at a late date that the religious fusion was completed, and the relation be-

tween the Eleusinian and Attic religions was conceived in a very.

different style from the crude fictions by which at an earlier time

Poseidon and Apollo had been incorporated in the Attic state –

religion.? The political and religious system which produced peace among the warring sections of the Attic people was due to Solon. His friendship with the mystic Epimenides, an historical fact encrusted with much legend, shows the tone in which the religious part of the task was cxecuted. But the work of Solon would not have proved efficient if it had done more than formulate and legalize the actual tendencies of the country. Especially in religion the system was growing before Solon and continued to grow after him. To this period—i.e., the 6th century B.c.—and to the spirit of mysticism which was so strong in Attica and in Greece generally at ae time we must attribute the final moulding of the Eleusinian ritual.

According to the mystic theory, the multitude of deities are merely forms of the ultimate single divine nature dividing itself into male and female to become the origin of life on the earth. This theory was that of the Orphic theology, and many facts show that the Orphic theology moulded the Eleusinian ritual. Dionysus, under the mystic. name Iacchus, was identified with the son of ‘Demeter, Plutus, the prosperity that she bestows on the world. Elcusis and Athens were united in one mystic ritual, part of which was performed in Athens, part on the road from Athens to Eleusis, and the most important rites in Eleusis. The process by which the shrines along the Sacred Way became connected with the religion of Demeter and Iacchus was doubtless gradual ; but the outlines of the systcm were certainly complete before the battle of Salamis (Herod., viii. 65). Not only in the Eleusinian ritual, but throughout Attic religion, a tendency to mix the cult of Athena with that of Demeter can be traced. They are very often enshrined in the same temple. In the autumn the holy ploughings were

performed in the Rharian plain, at Sciron, and under the acropolis by the Bougvyns. Demeter in her anger wears the -yopyévecoy on her breast ; she was so represented in the colossal statue at Eleusis, a fragment of which is now in Cambridge. The religious thought which expressed itself in this way obviously identified Demeter with Athena. Again, we find through Attic art and literature in the 5th century B.c. a tendency to mix Apollo and Dionysus, to show an Apollo Cisseus, a Dionysus Melpomenus, to invoke Séorora pirddagve Bdxye mady ’Amédddov etAupe. Apollo and Dionysus shared the presidency of Delphi.4 The tendency which Gerhard has proved to represent Demeter and Cora as undistinguishable spfings from the same mystic system. The identification of Artemis

1 Apollo ruled at Delphi for nine months of the year, Dionysus for the other three.

2 Kohler in Mittheil. Inst. Ath., iv. 250.

e The god Toceddv Tarjoyos kat ’EpexGevs, a fiction of the state religion ; Apollo, a son of Athena and Hephestus in Attic legend; ef. Harpocr, on eds rarp@os with Cic., NV. D., iii. 22.

4 Eur., Zon, 1075 sq.

wal

and Persephone, which Aischylus makes, was probably taught at Eleusis (Hymn, 1. 440).

If material existed to study the ritual of the shrines along the Sacred Way, we should find abundant examples of the working of the mystic system. Pausanias tells that the cultus of Apollo in the pass of Dafni grew into a worship of Demeter, Cora, Athena, and Apollo. Again, in reference to the worship of the hero Cya. mites on the Sacred Way, he says that those who have been initiated at Hleusis, or who have read the Orphic books, will understand his religious silence. The same writer *® mentions that Orphic hymns were used in the Eleusinian ritual, and Preller has conclusively

proved the great influence exerted by Orphic teaching at Eleusis, Through this close connexion of Orphism with the Eleusinian Mysteries, we understand how, when the family of the Dadouchi died out in the 4th century B.c., the office was not filled up from the closely related family of the Ceryces, but given to the Lycomida, who held in their hands the Orphizing mystic cultus of Phlya, If there had not been a great similarity between the ritual of Eleusis and of Phlya, it is inconceivable that the high office of dadobyos should have becn given to a family unconnected with Eleusis, It is easy to trace the same mystic tendency in later time. In the Alexandrine period it was usual to identify Isis with Demeter, and even to maintain that the Eleusinian Mysteries were derived from Egypt. In later times the Neo-Platonic philosophy acquired influence at Eleusis, and hence we find that, according to Porphyry, the hierophant represented the ‘‘ demiurgos.”’

There is every reason to believe that the Bacchic rites can be traced through Thrace to Phrygian influence, and that the spirit of Orphism was that of the Oriental Phrygian cultus. Moreover, the most holy and perfect rite in the Eleusinian Mysteries was to show an ear of corn mowed down in silence,§ and this was a symbol of the Phrygian Atys. Now Clement describes in great detail a mystic ceremony, some parts of which he attributes to Phrygia, though the general tone of the passage rather refers it to Eleusis ; some of the grossest details of this ceremony are expressly referred to Hleusis by other Christian writers.’ These facts lead to the belief—(1) that Clement purposely mixes up two ceremonies which were similar to one another, Phrygian and Eleusinian Mysteries ; (2) that this scene was acted at Eleusis on the eve of Boedr. 23; (8) that it was intro- duced: under the influence of the Orphic mystic philosophy. Know- ing that the Phrygian rites were decried by many who praised the Eleusinian, Clement delights to emphasize points of resemblance between them. ‘The details given in the long account of Clement fully justify the invectives of the Christian writers. Itis, however, easy to understand the answer that the Neo-Platonic philosophers who admired the Mysteries would make to their assailants. Reli- gion places men face to face with the actual facts of life ; when the mind is exalted and ennobled by intense religious enthusiasm it is able to look with pure insight at phenomena of life in which the vulgar unpurified mind sees nothing but gross materialism. The language of religion is plainer

and more direct than the language of common life. Those who distinguished between the character of the Eleusinian and Phrygian rites might say that the same symbolism can be looked at with gross eyes or with idealized eyes, and might quote the contrast between the Aphrodite of Praxiteles and its rude Pheenician prototype ; the attitude, the position of the hands is the same, but the whole meaning is changed.

It is unnecessary to enter into the question whether the Mys- teries go back toa primitive “ Pelasgic” religion, or are borrowed from Oriental religion. All that gives elevation and ideality to them was added by the Hellenic genius. But that spirit of enthu- siastic self-abandonment which made the piora: forget themselves in the divine nature never belonged to the true Hellenic tempera- ment; the Mysteries were an attempt of the Hellenic genius to take into its service the spirit of Oriental religion.

It is impossible here to speak of the other Mysteries ; subjects of similar nature are referred to under MiTHRAS, ORPHEUS, PHRYGIA. The Eleusinian Mysteries were the most perfect example of the type in Greece ; but our scanty information leads to the belief that all Hellenic Mysteries tried more or less successfully to attain the same results. ‘Those non-Hellenic Mysteries which found their way into Greece from the 5th century B.c. onwards are of course excluded from this statement.® (W. M. RA.)

MYSTERY, or Mrractz Pray. See Drama, vol. vi. p. 413.

MYSTICISM is a phase of thought, or rather perhaps of feeling, which from its very nature is hardly suscep- tible of exact definition. It appears in connexion with the endeavour of the human mind to grasp the divine essence

or the ultimate reality of things, and to enjoy the blessed-

2 Tayi, 1, Whe ibe, D7,

8 Philosophumena, ed. Miller, v. 8, p. 115.

7 Cl., Protr., p. 113 see quotations in Lobeck, p. 199 sq.

8 On these non-Hellenic Mysteries see Foucart, Assoc. Relig.

e) ng

1G

a

y

cs.

ma _YSTrirecis M

ness of actual communion with the Highest. The first is the philosophic side of mysticism ; the second, its religious side. ‘The first effort is theoretical or speculative ; the second, practical. present with the mystic is that of a supreme, all-pervading, and indwelling power, in whom all things are one. Hence the speculative utterances of mysticism are always more or less pantheistic in character. On the practical side, mysticism maintains the possibility of direct intercourse with this Being of beings —intercourse, not through any external media such as an historical revelation, oracles, answers to prayer, and the like, but by a species of ecstatic transfusion or identification, in which the individual be- comes in very truth “partaker of the divine nature.” God ceases to be an object to him and becomes an experience. In the writings of the mystics, ingenuity exhausts itself in the invention of phrases to express the closeness of this union. Mysticism differs, therefore, from ordinary pan- theism in that its inmost motive is religious. Pantheism, considered merely as such, may be either an elevating or a degrading theory ; it expresses merely the resolution of all things into one metaphysical power or substance. But the mystic is animated not merely by the desire of intellectual harmony ; he seeks the deepest ground of his own being, in order that he may cast aside whatever separates him from the true life. This religious impulse is shown in the fact that, whereas pantheism, as such, seems to lead logically to passive acquiescence in things as they are—all things being already as divine as it is their nature to be—mysticism, on the contrary, is penetrated by the thought of alienation from the divine. Even where it preaches most our essential unity with God,

its constant and often painful effort is directed towards overcoming an admitted alienation. In other words, the identity with God which it teaches is not a mere natural identity, as in ordinary pantheism, but one which is the goal of achievement.

These considerations do not serve, however, to differen- tiate mysticism sufficiently from the general course of religious thought. Alienation from, and yet implicit one- ness with, the divine are the two poles on which all religious speculation and practice revolve. It follows from the above that mysticism is distinguished from other religious theories of the relation of man to God by the intensity with which it realizes the divine factor in the relation. The realization is so vivid that, though the theory takes its rise in the needs of the individual, the individual tends in the sequel to be lost altogether in the excess of the divine light. All relations tend to become unreal for the mystic except that between himself and God; his very sense of personality is weakened. The mystical ideal, therefore, is not a life of ethical energy among mankind; it is the eye turned wholly inwards, the life spent in contemplation and devout communion. The type of character to which mysticism is allied is passive, sensuous, and feminine, rather than inde- pendent, masculine, and ethically vigorous. In full-blown mysticism the individual may be said to be deprived of the rights which belong to him as an ethical personality.

The speculative bias, it will be seen, is much stronger in the mystic than in the generality of religious persons ; and his speculative insight, it may be added, is usually much finer than theirs, The ordinary man, in religious matters as in others, constantly speaks of the infinite in such a way as Virtually to make it finite. As Spinoza says, he passes confidently from finite to infinite and contrariwise, but never attempts to bring the two ideas together. Now mysticism does bring them together, but unfortunately in such a way as to paralyse the individual for action. Ultimately stated, the explanation of this result is to be found in the mistaken

categories under which the relation is conceived. The con- ception of a universal substance or ground of things is

The thought that is most intensely

naturally the first resort of the mind awakened to specu- lation ; and it is a form which constantly recurs when men are roused afresh to philosophical activity. Nevertheless, the conception is evidently rude. It expresses properly a relation existing between material things in space ; and, when applied elsewhere, is necessarily inadequate, analogical, metaphorical. But it is characteristic of mysticism that it does not distinguish between what is metaphorical and what is susceptible of a literal interpretation. Hence it is prone to treat a relation of ethical harmony as if it were one of substantial identity, or chemical fusion ; and, taking the sensuous language of religious feeling literally, it bids the individual aim at nothing less than an interpenetration of essence. And, as this goal is unattainable while reason and the consciousness of self remain, the mystic begins to consider these as impediments to be cast aside. Our consciousness of self is the condition under which we possess a world to know and to enjoy; but it likewise isolates us from all the world beside. Reason is the revealer of nature and of God; but, by its very act, reason seems to separate the things reasoned about. Hence mysticism demands a faculty above reason, by which the subject shall be placed in immediate and complete union with the object of his desire,—a union in which the consciousness of self has dis- appeared, and in which, therefore, subject and object are one. This is the intuition or ecstasy or mystical swoon which appears alike among the Hindus, the Neo-Platonists, and the medieval saints. And here it will be observed that the original acceptance of metaphor as speculative truth has terribly avenged itself ; for, with the renunciation of self- conscious reason, the divine has been degraded into an object of sense, and its highest realization has come to be placed either in a state of brutish torpor or in a moment of equally unnatural nervous excitation. Not that mysticism always appears in this extreme form, but such is the goal towards which it constantly tends. If the sensuous meta- phors of unsophisticated religious feeling be put forward as a metaphysical theory of the supersensuous, it is only to be expected that the practice deduced from such a theory will be a sophisticated or morbid development of sense, a strain put upon the bodily organs to make them yield a realization of the theory and achieve what is impossible to the sane and conscious reason. The morbid play of the nerves is objectified by the

over-driven brain and treated as a sensuous union of the created with the creative spirit, an actual seeing, nay, tasting, of the divine essence.

To sum up, then, we may say that, compared with pan- theism, mysticism is dependent upon a specifically religious impulse ; but, whereas religion is ordinarily occupied with a practical problem and develops its theory in an ethical reference, mysticism displays a predominatingly speculative bent, starting from the divine nature rather than from man and his surroundings, taking the symbolism of religious feeling as literally or metaphysically true, and straining after the present realization of an ineffable union. The union which sound religious teaching represents as realized +n the submission of the will and the ethical harmony of the whole life is then reduced to a passive experience, to some- thing which comes and goes in time, and which may be of only momentary duration.

From these general remarks it will be sufficiently apparent that mysticism is not a name applicable to any particular system. It may be the outgrowth of many differing modes of thought and feeling. Most frequently it appears historically, in relation to some definite system of belief, as a reaction of the spirit against the letter. When a religion begins to ossify into a system of formulas and observances, those who protest in the name of heart-religion are not unfrequently known by the name of mystics. At times they merely bring into prominence again the ever-

Eastern systenis,

fresh fact of personal religious experience ; at other times mysticism develops itself as a powerful solvent of definite dogmas.

A review of the historical appearances of mysticism will serve to show how far the above characteristics are to be found, separately or in combination, in its different phases.

In the East, mysticism is not so much a specific pheno- menon as a natural deduction from the dominant philosophic systems, and the normal expression of religious feeling in the lands in which it appears. Brahmanic pantheism and Buddhistic nihilism alike teach the unreality of the seeming world, and preach mystical absorption as the highest goal ; in both, the sense of the worth of human personality is lost. India consequently has always been the fertile mother of practical mystics and devotees. The climate itself en- courages to passivity, and the very luxuriance of vegetable and animal life tends to blunt the feeling of the value of life. Silent contemplation and the total deadening of consciousness by perseverance for years in unnatural atti- tudes are among the commonest forms assumed by this mystical asceticism. But the most revolting methods of self-torture and self-destruction are also practised as a means of rising in sanctity. The sense of sin can hardly be said to enter into these exercises ; that is, they are not undertaken as penance for personal transgression. They are a despite done to the principle of individual or separate existence.

The so-called mysticism of the Persian Sufis is less intense and practical, more airy and literary in character. Sufism (probably derived from codés) appears in the 9th century among the Mohammedans of Persia as a kind of reaction against the rigid monotheism and formalism of Islam (see MoHAMMEDANISM, vol. xvi. p. 594). It is doubtless to be regarded as a revival of ancient habits of thought and feeling among a people who had adopted the Koran, not by affinity, but by compulsion. Persian literature after that date, and especially Persian poetry, is full of an ardent natural pantheism, in which a mystic apprehension of the unity and divinity of all things heightens the delight in natural and in human beauty. Such is the poetry of Hafiz and Saadi, whose verses are chiefly devoted to the praises of wine and women. Even the most licentious of these have been fitted by Mohammedan theologians with a mystical interpretation. The delights of love are made to stand for the raptures of union with the divine, the tavern symbolizes an oratory, and intoxication is the be- wilderment of sense before the surpassing vision. Very often, if not most frequently, it cannot be doubted that the occult religious significance depends on an artificial exegesis ; but there are also poems of Hafiz, Saadi, and other writers, religious in their first intention. These are unequivocally pantheistic in tone, and the desire of the soul to escape and rest with God is expressed with all

the fervour of Eastern poetry. This speculative mood, in which nature and beauty and earthly satisfaction appear as a vain show, is the counterpart of the former mood of sensuous enjoyment.

For opposite reasons, neither the Greek nor the Jewish mind lent itself readily to mysticism,—the Greek, because of its clear and sunny naturalism ; the Jewish, because of its rigid monotheism and its turn towards worldly realism and statutory observance. It is only with the exhaustion of Greek and Jewish civilization that mysticism becomes a prominent factor in Western thought. It appears, there- fore, contemporaneously with Christianity, and is a sign of the world-weariness and deep religious need that mark the decay of the old world. Whereas Plato's main problem had been the organization of the perfect state, and Aris- totle's intellect had ranged with fresh interest over all departments of the knowable, political speculation had

become a mockery with the extinction of free political life, and knowledge as such had lost its freshness for the Greeks of the Roman empire. Knowledge is nothing to these men if it does not show them the infinite reality which is able to fill the aching void within. Accordingly, the last age of Greek philosophy is theosophical in character, and its ultimate end is a practical satisfaction. Neo-Platonism seeks this in the ecstatic intuition of the ineffable One, The systematic theosophy of Plotinus and his successors does not belong to the present article, except so far as it is the presupposition of their mysticism; but, inasmuch as the mysticism of the medizval church is directly de rived from Neo-Platonism through the speculations of the Pseudo-Dionysius, Neo-Platonic mysticism fills an import- ant section in any historical review of the subject.

Neo-Platonism owes its form to Plato, but its under- Neo.Ph. lying motive is the widespread feeling of self – despair tonism,

and the longing for divine illumination characteristic of the age in which it appears. Before the rise of Neo- Platonism proper we meet with various mystical or semi- mystical expressions of the same religious craving. The contemplative asceticism of the Essenes of Judsea may be mentioned, and,

somewhat later, the life of the Therapeute on the shores of Lake Meeris. In Philo, Alexandrian Judaism had already seized upon Plato as “the Attic Moses,” and done its best to combine his speculations with the teaching of his Jewish prototype. Philo’s God is described in terms of absolute transcendency ; his doctrine of the Logos or Divine Sophia is a theistical transformation of the Platonic world of ideas; his allegorical interpretation of the Old Testament represents the spiritualistic dissolu- tion of historical Judaism. Philo’s ethical ideal is renun- ciation, contemplation, complete surrender to the divine influence. Apollonius of Tyana and the so-called Neo-

-Pythagoreans drew similar ethical consequences from their

eclectic study of Plato. Wonder-workers like Alexander of Aboniteichos exhibit the grosser side of the longing for spiritual communion. The traits common to Neo-Platonism and all these speculations are well summed up by Zeller (Philos. der Groechen, iii. 2. 214) as consisting n—“ (1) the dualistic opposition of the divine and the earthly ; (2) an abstract conception of God, excluding all knowledge of the divine nature ; (3) contempt for the world of the senses, on the ground of the Platonic doctrines of matter and of the descent of the soul from.a superior world into the body; (4) the theory of intermediate potencies or beings, through whom God acts upon the world of phenomena ; (5) the re- quirement of an ascetic self-emancipation from the bondage of sense and faith in a higher revelation to man when in a state called enthusiasm,” Neo-Platonism appears in the first half of the 3d century, and has its greatest repre- sentative in Plotinus (204-269 a.p.). He develops the Platonic philosophy into an elaborate system by means of the doctrine of emanation. The One, the Good, and the Idea of the Good were identical in Plato’s mind, and the Good was therefore not deprived of intelligible essence. It was not separated from the world of ideas, of which it was represented as either the crown or the sum. By Plotinus, on the contrary, the One is explicitly exalted above the votds and the “ideas”; it transcends existence altogether (éréxewva tijs ovcias), and is not cognizable by reason. Remaining itself in repose, it rays out, as it were, from its own fulness an image of itself, which is called vots, and which constitutes the system of ideas or the intelligible world. The soul is in turn the image or product of the vots, and the soul by its motion begets corporeal matter. The

soul thus faces two ways—towards the vots, from which it springs, and towards the material life, which is its own product. Ethical endeavour consists in the repudiation of the sensible; material existence is

-

Tena

MYSTICISM

itself estrangement from God. (Porphyry tells us that Plotinus was unwilling to name his parents or his birth- place, and seemed ashamed of being in the body.) Be- yond the xabdpoes, or virtues which purify from sin, lies the further stage of complete identification with God (ovK ew dpaptias elvat, dAAG Oeodv eivat). To reach the ulti- mate goal, thought itself must be left behind ; for thought isa form of motion, and the desire of the soul is for the motionless rest which belongs to the One. The union with transcendent deity is not so much knowledge or vision as ecstasy, coalescence, contact (xotacus, arAwors, dd}, Ennead., vi. 9. 8-9). But in our present state of exist- ence the moments of this ecstatic union must be few and short ; “I myself,” says Plotinus simply, “have realized it but three times as yet, and Porphyry hitherto not once.”

It will be seen from the above that Neo-Platonism is not mystical as regards the faculty by which it claims to apprehend philosophic truth. It is first of all a system of complete rationalism ; it is assumed, in other words, that reason is capable of mapping out the whole system of things. But, inasmuch as a God is affirmed beyond reason, the mysticism becomes in a sense the necessary complement of the would-be all-embracing rationalism. The system culminates in a mystical act, and in the sequel, especially with Iamblichus and the Syrian Neo- Platonists, mystical practice tended more and more to overshadow the theoretical groundwork.

It was probably about the end of the 5th century, just as ancient philosophy was dying out in the schools of Athens, that the speculative mysticism of Neo-Platonism made a definite lodgment in Christian thought through the literary forgeries of the Pseudo-Dionysius. The doctrines of Christianity were by that time so firmly established that the church could look upon a

symbolical or mystical inter- pretation of them without anxiety. The author of the Theo- logia Mystica and the other works ascribed to the Areopa- gite proceeds, therefore, to develop the doctrines of Proclus with very little modification into a system of esoteric Chris- tianity. God is the nameless and supra-essential One, ele- vated above goodness itself. Hence “negative theology,” which ascends from the creature to God by dropping one after another every determinate predicate, leads us nearest to the truth. The return to God (évwors, Féwors) is the consummation of all things and the goal indicated by Christian teaching. The same doctrines were preached with more of churchly fervour by Maximus the Confessor (580-622). Maximus represents almost the last speculative activity of the Greek Church, but the influence of the Pseudo-Dionysian writings was transmitted to the West in the 9th century by Erigena, in whose speculative spirit both the scholasticism and the mysticism of the Middle Ages have their rise. Erigena translated Dionysius into Latin along with the commentaries of Maximus, and his system is essentially based upon theirs. The negative theology is adopted, and God is stated to be predicateless Being, above all categories, and therefore not improperly called Nothing. Out of this Nothing or incomprehensible essence the world of ideas or primordial causes is eternally created. This is the Word or Son of God, in whom all things exist, so far as they have substantial existence. All existence is a theophany, and as God is the beginning of all things, so also is He the end. Erigena teaches the restitution of all things under the form of the Dionysian adunatio or deificatio. These are the permanent outlines of what may be called the philosophy of mysticism in Christian times, and it is remarkable with how little variation they are repeated from age to age.

In Erigena mysticism has not yet separated itself in any way from the dogma of the church. There is no revulsion, as later, from dogma as such, nor is more stress

13]

laid upon one dogma than upon anotlier ; all are treated upon the same footing, and the whole dogmatic system is held, as it were, in solution by the philosophic medium in which it is presented. No distinction is drawn, indeed, between what is reached by reason and what is given by authority ;

the two are immediately identical for Erigena. In this he agrees with the speculative mystics everywhere, and differentiates himself from the scholastics who followed him, The distinguishing characteristic of scholasticism is the acceptance by reason of a given matter, the truth of which is independent of rational grounds, and which re- mains a presupposition even when it cannot be understood. Scholasticism aims, it is true, in its chief representatives, at demonstrating that the content of revelation and the teaching of reason are identical. But what was matter of immanent assumption with Erigena is in them an equat- ing of two things which have been dealt with on the hypothesis that they are separate, and which, therefore, still retain that external relation to one another. This externality of religious truth to the mind is fundamental in scholasticism, while the opposite view is equally funda- mental in mysticism. Mysticism is not the voluntary demission of reason and its subjection to an external authority. In that case, all who accept a revelation with- out professing to understand its content would require to be ranked as mystics ; the fierce sincerity of Tertullian's credo quia absurdum, Pascal's reconciliation of contra- dictions in Jesus Christ, and Bayle's half-sneering sub- ordination of reason to faith would all be marks of this standpoint. But such a temper of mind is much more akin to scepticism than to mysticism ; it is characteristic of those who either do not feel the need of philosophizing their beliefs, or who have failed in doing so and take refuge in sheer acceptance. Mysticism, on the other hand, is marked on its speculative side by even an overweening confidence in human reason. Nor need this be wondered at if we consider that the unity of the human mind with the divine is its underlying presupposition. Hence where reason is discarded by the mystic it is merely reason overleaping itself ; it occurs at the end and not at the beginning of his speculations. Even then there is no appeal to authority ; nothing is accepted from without. The appeal is still to the individual, who, if not by reason then by some higher faculty, claims to realize absolute truth and to taste absolute blessedness.

Mysticism first appears in the medieval church as the protest of practical religion against the predominance of the dialectical spirit. It is so with Bernard of Clair- Bernard vaux (1091-1153), who condemns Abelard's distinctions of Clat- and reasonings as externalizing and degrading the faith. aes Bernard's mysticisni is of a practical cast, dealing mainly with the

means by which man may attain to the know- ledge and enjoyment of God. Reason has three stages, in the highest of which the mind is able, by abstraction from earthly things, to rise to contemplatio or the vision of the divine. More exalted still, however, is the sudden ecstatic vision, such as was granted, for example, to Paul. This is the reward of those who are dead to the body and the world. Asceticism is thus the counterpart of medieval mysticism ; and, by his exaniple as well as by his teaching in such passages, Bernard unhappily encouraged practices which necessarily resulted in self-delusion. Love grows with the knowledge of its object, Bernard proceeds, and at the highest stage self-love is so merged in love to God that we love ourselves only for God's sake or because God has loved us. 'Te enim quodammodo perdere tanquan! qui non sis, et omnino non sentire te ipsum et a te 1pso exinaniri et pene annullari, celestis est conversations. – . Sie affici deificari est." "As the little water-drop poured into a large measure of wine seems to lose its own

The Vic-

torines,

Early German mystics.

132 mY Ft Ol ® i

nature entirely and to take on both the taste and the colour of the wine, or as iron heated red-hot loses its own appearance and glows like fire, or as air filled with sun- light is transformed into the same brightness so that it

does not so much appear to be illuminated as to be itself

light,—so must all human feeling towards the Holy One

be self-dissolved in unspeakable wise, and wholly transfused

into the will of God. For how shall God be all in all if anything of man remains in man? 'The substance will

indeed remain, but in another form, another glory, another |

power” (De diligendo Deo, c. 10). These are the favourite similes of mysticism, wherever it is found.

Mysticism was more systematically developed by Ber- nard’s contemporary Hugo of St Victor (1096-1141). The

Augustinian monastery of St Victor near Paris became the headquarters of mysticism during the 12th century. It had a wide influence in awakening popular piety, and

the works that issued from it formed the text-books of

mystical and pietistic minds in the centuries that followed. Hugo’s pupil, Richard of St Victor, declares, in opposition to dialectic scholasticism, that the objects of mystic con- templation are partly above reason, and partly, as in the intuition of the Trinity, contrary to reason. He enters at length into the conditions of ecstasy and the yearnings that precede it. Walter, the third of the Victorines,

carried on the polemic against the dialecticians. Bona- ventura (1221-74) was a diligent student of the Victor-

ines, and in his Itinerarium mentis ad Deum maps out the human faculties in a similar fashion. He introduces the terms “apex mentis” and “scintilla” (also “syn- deresis” or cvvrijpyots) to describe the faculty of mystic intuition. Bonaventura runs riot in: phrases to describe the union with God, and his devotional works were much drawn upon by mystical preachers. Fully a century later, when the system of scholasticism was gradually breaking up under the predominance of Occam’s nominalism, Pierre d’Ailly (1350-1425), and his more famous scholar John Gerson (1363-1429), chancellor of the university of Paris, are found endeavouring to combine the doctrines of the Victorines and Bonaventura with a nominalistic philo- sophy. They are the last representatives of mysticism within the limitations imposed by scholasticism. From the 12th and 13th centuries onward there is ob- servable in the different countries of Europe a widespread reaction against the growing formalism and worldliness of the church and the scandalous lives of many of the clergy. Men began to feel a desire for a theology of the heart and an unworldly simplicity of life. Thus there arose

in the Netherlands the Beguines and Beghards, in Italy the Waldenses (without, however, any mystical leaning), in the south of France and elsewhere the numerous sect or sects of the Cathari, and in Calabria the apocalyptic gospel of Joachim of Floris, all bearing witness to the commotion of the time. The lay societies of the Beghards and Beguines (for men and women respectively) date from the end of the 12th century, and soon became extremely popular both im the Low Countries and on the Rhine. They were free at the outset from any heretical taint, but were never much in favour with the church. In the beginning of the 13th century the foundation of the Dominican and Franciscan orders furnished a more ecclesiastical and regu- lar means of supplying the same wants, and numerous convents sprang up at once throughout Germany. The German mind was a peculiarly fruitful soil for mysticism, and, in connexion either with the Beguines or the church organization, a number of women appear about this time, combining a spirit of mystical piety and asceticism with sturdy reformatory zeal directed against the abuses of the time. Even before this we hear of the prophetic visions of Hildegard of Bingen (a contemporary of St Bernard)

and Elizabeth of Schonau. In the 13th century Elizabeth, of Hungary, the pious landgravine of Thuringia, assisted in the foundation of many convents in thenorth of Germany, For an account of the chief of these female saints the reader is referred to the first volume of Preger’s Geschichte der deutschen Mystik. Mechthild of Magdeburg appears to have been the most influential, and her book Das Jjliessende Licht der Gottheit is important as the oldest work of its kind in German. It proves that much of the terminology of German mysticism was current before Kckhart’s time. Mechthild’s clerico-political utterances show that she was acquainted with the “eternal gospel” of Joachim of Floris. Joachim had proclaimed the doctrine of three world-ages—the kingdom of the Father, of the Son, and of the Spirit. The reign of the Spirit was to begin with the year 1260, when the abuses of the world and the church were to be effectually cured by the general adoption of the monastic life of contemplation. Very similar to this in appearance is the teaching of Amalrich of Bena (0b, 1207); but, while the movements just men- tioned were reformatory without being heretical, this is very far from being the case with the mystical pantheism derived by Amalrich from the writings of Erigena. His followers held a progressive

revelation of God in the ages of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Just as the Mosaic dispensation came to an end with the appearance of Christ, so the sacraments of the new dispensation have lost their meaning and efficacy since the incarnation of God as Holy Spirit in the Amalricans. With this opposition to the church they combine a complete antinomianism, through the identification of all their desires with the impulses of the-divine Spirit. Amalrich's teaching was condemned by the church, and his heresies led to the public burning of Krigena's De divisione nature in 1225. The sect of the New Spirit, or of the Free Spirit as it was afterwards called, spread widely through the north of France and into Switzerland and Germany. They were especially numerous in the Rhineland in the end of the 13th and during the 14th century; and they seem to have corrupted the originally orthodox communities of Beghards, for Beghards and Brethren of the Free Spirit are used henceforward as convertible terms, and the same immoralities are related of both. Such was tle seed-ground in which what is speci- fically known as German mysticism sprang up.

In Meister Eckhart (1260-1329 ;—see Ecxuarr) the Beha. German mind definitively asserts its pre-eminence in the sphere of speculative mysticism. Eckhart was a dis- tinguished son of the church; but in reading his works we feel at once that we have passed into quite a different sphere of thought from that of the churchly mystics; we seem to leave the cloister behind and to breathe a freer atmosphere. The scholastic mysticism was, for the most part, practical and psychological in character. It was largely a devotional aid to the realization of present union with God ; and, so far as it was theoretical, it was a theory of the faculties by which such a union is attainable. Mysticism was pieced on somewhat incongruously to a scholastically accepted theology; the feelings and the intellect were not brought together. But in Eckhart the attitude of the churchman and traditionalist is entirely abandoned. Instead of systematizing dogmas, he appears to evolve a philosophy by the free exercise of reason. His system enables him to give a profound significance to the doctrines of the church ; but, instead of the system being accommodated to the doctrines, the doctrines—and especi- ally the historical facts—acquire a new sense in the system, and often become only a mythical representation of specu- lative truth. . The freedom with which Eckhart treats historical Christianity allies

him much more to the German idealists of the 19th century than to his scholastic prede-

|

my SPC is M

cessors. In his speculative depth as well as in the fond- ness for reconciling apparent contradictions which often lends an air of paradox to his statements Eckhart bears a striking resemblance to Hegel ; but in some determinations of his system, such as his doctrine of the Absolute, he approaches more nearly to Schelling. In view of these affinities, it has been customary to say that his interest is prevailingly intellectual, and that he is lacking in religious warmth. But this is largely due to the fusion of intellect and feeling which is often found in highly speculative natures. ckhart's system is in itself the expression or formulation of religious feeling, and the speculative state- ment possesses for him a rich spiritual unction of its own. In this he is the typical representative of: German, in op- position to what is often called Romanic, mysticism. The latter, both in scholastic times and in its later Catholic representatives, confines itself to the facts of religious feeling without showing itself attracted by ontological speculation.

Eckhart distinguishes between the godhead and God. The godhead is the absolute Essence (Wesen), unknowable not only by man but also by itself; it is darkness and absolute indeterminateness, " Nicht " in contrast to ''Icht" or definite and knowable existence. Yet it is the poten- tiality of all things, and its nature is, in a triadic process, to come to consciousness of itself as the triune God. Crea- tion is not a temporal act, but an eternal necessity of the divine nature. I am as necessary to God, Eckhart is fond of saying, as God is necessary tome. In my knowledge and love God knows and loves Himself. "The eye with which I see God is the same eye with which God sees me. My eye and God's eye are one eye, one vision, one recog- nition, one love." To know God, we must become ignorant of ourselves and of all creatures. '" Couldst thou annihilate thyself for a moment, thou wouldst possess all that God is in Himself." The complete renunciation of selfhood is called by Eckhart "decease ;" and when I am in this state God brings forth His Son in me. Or, conversely, it is I who beget God anew in my soul; "God has begotten me from eternity that I may be Father and beget Him

who begat me.” Our identity with God is recognized by the purely rational and uncreated activity of the soul, which Eckhart calls the “Fiinklein,” or spark. By this we press on beyond God into the abyss of the godhead, and Eckhart prays paradoxically “to be rid of God, that is, that God by His grace would bring him into the Essence—that Es- sence which is above God and above distinction.”

In spite of Eckhart’s daring assertions of the identity of the human and the divine, there is no reason to call in question his genuinely religious and Christian spirit. His spirit, however, was Christian in a wide sense rather than ecclesiastical ; it showed itself in zeal for the upbuilding of Christian life among the people. The condemnation of the church had its effect in later times in obscuring Eckhart’s importance, but it did not avail to check his powerful influ- ence upon his contemporaries. They constantly appeal to him as “the master,” the “wise,” the ‘“‘ divine” master, “from whom God concealed nothing.”

The political circumstances of Germany in the first half of the 14th century were in the last degree disas- trous. The war between the rival emperors, Frederick of Austria and Louis of Bavaria, and the interdict under which the latter was placed in 1324 inflicted extreme misery upon the unhappy people. From some places the interdict was not removed for twenty-six years. Men’s minds were pained and disquieted by the conflict of duties and the absence of spiritual consolation. The country was also visited by a succession of famines and _ floods, and in 1348 the Black Death swept over Europe like a terrible scourge. In the midst of these unhappy sur-

roundings religion became more inward in men of real piety, and the desire grew among them to draw closer the bonds that united them to one another. Thus arose the society of the Friends of God (ottesfreunde) in the south The and west of Germany, spreading as far as Switzerland on Gottes- the one side and the Netherlands on the other. They/’”* formed no exclusive sect. They often took opposite sides in politics, and they also differed in the type of their religious life; but they uniformly desired to strengthen one another in living intercourse with God. Among them chiefly the followers of Eckhart were to be found. Such were Heinrich Suso of Constance (1295-

1366) and John Tauler of Strasburg (1300-61), the two most cele- brated of his immediate disciples. Suso was a remarkable combination of self-torturing austerity with an inexhaust- ible play of poetic fancy. He has been called “the minnesinger of the love of God.” ‘Tauler’s eloquence may be said to have made him the centre of religious life in the south-west of Germany for more than quarter of a century. In his sermons, while the standpoint is the same as Eckhart’s, the speculative groundwork tends, as is natural, to be less insisted on, and more scope is given to its practical consequences and to direct religious ex- hortation. Nicolas of Basel, the mysterious layman from whose visit Tauler dates his true religious life, seems to have been the chief organizing force among the Gottes- freunde. He was known as “the great friend of God in the Oberland,” and Basel continued to be a quiet haven of reunion for the members of the society. Tauler and others retired thither at intervals from the political storms of the time. The society counted many members among the pious women in the convents of southern Germany. Such were Christina Ebner of Engelthal near Nuremberg, and Margaretha Ebner of Medingen in Swabia. Laymen also belonged to it, like Hermann von Fritzlar and Rulman Merswin, the rich banker of Strasburg (author of a mystical work, Buch der newn Felsen, on the nine rocks or upward steps of contemplation). Letters passed between the members, as well- as presents of books or relics. Some of them, like Heinrich von Nérdlingen, the friend of Margaretha Ebner, went much from place to place, and in that way helped to keep up a living connexion among the friends. It was doubtless one of their number who sent forth anonymously from the house of the Teutonic Order in Frankfort the famous handbook of mystical devotion called Hine deutsche Theologie. Shortly after the middle of the century most of the friends of whom anything is known drop out of sight. But the combina- tion of warm piety and spiritual freedom in Tauler’s sermons and the Deutsche Theologie exercised a continuous influence on the religious life of Germany till the time of Luther. As is well known, the Deutsche Theologie was first published in 1516 by Luther, who accompanied it by a pre- face expressing his own obligations to the “ noble book,” and ranking it inferior only to the Bible and St Augustine. The fact that the book was put into his hands by Staupitz, the vicar-general of the Augustinian order, shows that Luther’s high estimate was not singular at the time.

John Ruysbroeck (1293-1381), the father of mysticism Ruys- in the Netherlands, stood in connexion with the Friends of broeck. God, and Tauler is said to have visited him in his seclusion at Vauvert (Griinthal) near Brussels. He was decisively influenced by Eckhart, though there is noticeable occa- sionally a shrinking back from some of Eckhart's phrase- ology. The sect of the Free Spirit is the frequent object of his polemic, and this leads him into somewhat careful definitions of truth and error. For the rest, Ruysbroeck's mysticism is more of a practical than a speculative cast. He is chiefly occupied with the means whereby the unio mystica is to be attained, whereas Eckhart dwells on the

union as an ever-present fact, and dilates on its meta- physical implications. Towards the end of Ruysbroeck's life, in 1378, he was visited by the fervid lay-preacher Gerhard Groot (1340-84), who was so impressed by the life of the community at Vauvert that he conceived the idea of founding a Christian brotherhood bound by no monastic vows, but living together in simplicity and piety with all things in common, after the apostolic pattern. This was the origin of the Brethren of the Common Lot (or Common Life), The first house of the Brethren was founded at Deventer by Gerhard Groot and his youth- ful friend Florentius Radewyn. Similar brother-houses soon sprang up in different places throughout the Low Countries and Westphalia, and even Saxony. Thomas a Kempis (1380-1471), to whom the brotherhood chiefly owes its fame, forms the subject of a separate article.

It has been customary for Protestant writers to represent the mystics of Germany and Holland as precursors of the Reformation. In a sense this is true; and the direct influence of Tauler and the Deutsche Theologie upon Luther has already been referred to. But it conveys a false im- pression if it is understood to mean that these men pro- tested against the doctrines of the church in the way the Reformers felt themselves called upon to do. There is no sign that Tauler, for example, or Ruysbroeck, or Thomas a Kempis had felt the dogmatic teaching of the church jar in any single point upon their religious consciousness. Nevertheless, mysticism did prepare men in a very real way for a break with the traditional system. Mysticism instinctively recedes from formulas that have become stereotyped and mechanical into

the perennially fresh experience of the individual. In the first place, therefore, it brings into prominence only those broad and universal doctrines which it finds to be of vital and present moment for the inward life, while others, though they may have an important place in the churchly system, are (uncon- sciously) allowed to slip into temporary forgetfulness. It is thus we must explain that almost total absence of dis- tinctively Romish doctrine in Thomas a Kempis which makes the Imitation as acceptable to the Protestant as to the devout Catholic. In the second place, mysticism accustoms men to deal with their experience for themselves at first hand, and to test the doctrines presented to them by that standard. This growth of spiritual freedom is especially to be marked in the German mystics. It is to be noted, however, that mysticism affords in itself no founda- tion fora religious community. Its principle is pure inward- ness, but it possesses no norm by which the extravagances of the individual may be controlled. Thus, when the Reformers appeared to do their work, the mystics were found opposing the new authority of Scripture to the full as bitterly as they had opposed the old authority of the church. To the thoroughgoing mystic individualist the one standard is as external as the other. When Cellarius was called upon by Luther to substantiate his positions by reference to Scripture, he struck the table with his fist and declared it an insult to speak so to a man of God. A germ of reason may be discerned in this indignation, but none the less we must recognize that, while mysticism showed itself capable at the Reformation of dissolving society into anarchy and atomism, it showed itself per- fectly destitute of a reconstructive power. The same people who would claim the pre-Reformation mystics as Protestants in disguise are indignant at the way in which the later mystics oppose, or hold aloof from, the Reforma- tion movement. But the truth seems to be that, in both cases, mysticism was true to its principle. Without some fixed letter to attach itself to, it sinks away into utter form- lessness ; but its relation to the system is always more or less one of opposition to what it regards as external. —

Mystics and the Reformna- tion.

MY Ss TIC is tf

The wild doctrines of Thomas Miinzer and the Zwickay Later

prophets, merging eventually into the excesses of the Gem' Peasants' War and the doings of the Anabaptists jp Mste Miinster, first roused Luther to the dangerous possibilities of mysticism asa disintegrating force. He was also called upon to do battle for his principle against men like Schwenkfeld (1490-1561) and Sebastian Frank (1500-45), the latter of whom developed a system of pantheistic mysticism, and went so far in his opposition to the letter __ as to declare the whole of the historical element in Serip. ture to be but a mythical representation of eternal truth, Valentin Weigel (1533-88), who stands under manifold obligations to Frank, represents also the influence of the semi-mystical physical speculation that marked the transt tion from scholasticism to modern times. The final break- down of scholasticism as a rationalized system of dogma may be seen in Nicolaus of Cusa (1401-64), who received his education, like Thomas a Kempis, at Deventer, and after- wards rose to be a cardinal of the church. He distinguishes between the

Mysticism did not cease within the Catholic Church at Other the Reformation. In St Theresa (1515-82) and John fom of the Cross the counter-reformation can boast of saints second to none in the calendar for the austerity of their mortifications and the rapture of the visions to which they were admitted. But, as was to be expected, their mysticism moves in that comparatively narrow round, and consists simply in the heaping up of these sensuous ex- periences. The speculative character has entirely faded out of it, or rather has been crushed out by the tightness with which the directors of the Roman Church now held the reins of discipline. Their mysticism represents, there- fore, no widening or spiritualizing of their theology ; in all matters of belief they remain the docile children of their church, The gloom and harshness of these Spanish mystics are absent from the tender, contemplative spirit of Frangois de Sales (1567-1622); and in the quietism of Madame Guyon (1648-1717) and Miguel de Molinos (1627-96) there is again a sufficient implication of mys tical doctrine to rouse the suspicion of the ecclesiastical authorities. Quietism, name and thing, became the talk of all the world through the bitter and protracted controversy to which it gave rise between Fénelon and Bossuet.

In the 17th century mysticism is represented in the philosophical field by the so-called Cambridge Platonists, and especially by Henry More (1614-

87), in whom the

|

°

MY T—MYT

ology only serves to blur important distinctions. How- ever absolute a philosopher's idealism may be, he is errone- ously styled a mystic if he moves towards his conclusions

influence of the Kabbalah is combined with a species of Christianized Neo-Platonism. Pierre Poiret (1646-1719) exhibits a violent reaction against the mechanical philo- sophy of Descartes, and especially against its consequences in Spinoza. He was an ardent student of Tauler and Thomas a Kemplis, and became an adherent of the quiet- istic doctrines of Madame Bourignon. His philosophical works emphasize the passivity of the reason. The first influence of Boehme was in the direction of an obscure religious mysticism. J. G. Gichtel (1638-1710), the first editor of his complete works, became the founder of a sect called the Angel-Brethren. All Boehme's works were translated into English in the time of the Commonwealth, and regular societies of Behmenists were formed in England and Holland. Later in the century he was much studied

by the members of the Philadelphian Society, John Pordage,

Thomas Bromley, Jane Lead, and others. The mysticism of William Law (1686-1761) and of St Martin in France (17 43-1803), who were also students of Boehme, is of a much more elevated and spiritual type. The ' Cherubic Wanderer," and other poems, of Johann Schefiler (1624- 77), known as Angelus Silesius, are more closely related in style and thought to Eckhart than to Boehme.

The religiosity of the Quakers, with their doctrines of the "inner light" and the influence of the Spirit, has decided affinities with mysticism; and the quaint auto- biography of George Fox (1624-91), the founder of the sect, proceeds throughout on the assumption of supernatural guidance. Stripped

of its definitely miraculous character, the doctrine of the inner light may be regarded as the familiar mystical protest against formalism, literalism, and scripture-worship. Swedenborg, though selected by Emer- son in his Representative Men as the typical mystic, be- longs rather to the history of spiritualism than to that of mysticism as understood in this article. He possesses the cool temperament of the man of science rather than the fervid Godward aspiration of the mystic proper ; and the speculative impulse which lies at the root of this form of thought is almost entirely absent from his writings. Accordingly, his supernatural revelations resemble a course of lessons in celestial geography more than a description of the beatific vision.

Philosophy since the end of the last century has fre- quently shown a tendency to diverge into mysticism. This has been especially so in Germany. The term mysticism is, indeed, often extended by popular usage and philo- sophical partisanship to the whole activity of the post- Kantian idealists. In this usage the word would be equi- valent to the more recent and scarcely less abused term, transcendentalism, and as such it is used even by a sym- pathetic writer like Carlyle ; but this looseness of phrase-

only by the patient labour of the reason. Hegel there-

fore, to take an instance, can no more fitly be classed as a

mystic than Spinoza can. It would be much nearer the truth to take both as types of a thoroughgoing rationalism. In either case it is of course open to any one to maintain that the apparent completeness of synthesis really rests on the subtle intrusion of elements of feeling into the rational process. But in that case it might be difficult to find a systematic philosopher who would escape the charge of mysticism ; and it is better to remain by long-estab- lished and serviceable distinctions. Where philosophy despairs of itself, exults in its own overthrow, and yet revels in the “mysteries” of a speculative Christianity, as in J. G. Hamann (1730-88), the term mysticism may be fitly applied. So, again, it is in place where the move- ment of revulsion from a mechanical philosophy takes the form rather of immediate assertion than of reasoned demon- stration, and where the writers, after insisting generally on the spiritual basis of phenomena, either leave the

posi- tion without further definition, or expressly declare that the ultimate problems of philosophy cannot be reduced to articulate formulas. Examples of this are men like Novalis, Carlyle, and Emerson, in whom philosophy may be said to be impatient of its own task. Schelling's explicit appeal in the " Identitdts-philosophie" to an intellectual intuition of the Absolute, is of the essence of mysticism, both as an appeal to a supra-rational faculty and as a claim not merely to know but to realize God. The opposition of the reason to the understanding, as used by Coleridge, is not free from the first of these faults. The later philosophy of Schelling and the philosophy of Franz von Baader, both largely founded upon Boehme, belong rather to theosophy than to mysticism proper.

Authorities.—The authorities for the teaching of individual mystics will be found under their names. Besides the sections on mysticism in the general histories of philosophy by Erdmann and Ueberweg, and in works on church history and the history of dogma, reference may be made for the medieval period to Heinrich Schmid, Der Mysticismus in seiner Enistehungsperiode, Jena, 1824 ; Helfferich, Die christliche Mystik, Hamburg, 1842; Noack, Die christliche Mystik des Mittclalters, Konigsberg, 1858. On the German mystics the works are very numerous, but decidedly the best is the Geschichte der deutschen Mystik, in course of publication by W. Preger. 'The first volume, published at Leipsic in 1874, deals with Meister Eckhart and his precursors ; the second, which appeared in 1881, deals with Suso and the general development of mysticism in Eckhart's school, but without including Tauler. The works of Eckhart and his precursors are contained in Pfeiffer's Deutsche Mystiker des 14ten Jahrhunderts, vol. i. (1845), vol. i. (1857). The Theologia Germanica and a selection from Tauler's Sermons have been translated into English by Miss Susannah Winkworth. (A. SE.)

MUirnoLecyYy

eee (pvOodroyia) is the science which ex-

amines p30o1, or legends of cosmogony and of gods and heroes. Mythology is also used asa term for these legends themselves. Thus when we speak of "the mytho- logy of Greece" we mean the whole body of Greek divine and heroic and cosmogonic legends. When we speak of the "science of mythology" we refer to the various attempts which have been made to

explain these ancient narratives. Very early indeed in the history of human thought men awoke to the consciousness that their religious Stories were much in want of explanation. The myths of civilized peoples, as of Greeks and the Aryans of India, contain two elements, the rational and the irrational. The rational myths are those which represent the gods as beautiful and wise beings. The Artemis of the Odyssey

"taking her pastime in the chase of boars and swift deer, while with her the wild wood-nymphs disport them, and high over them all she rears her brow, and is easily to be known where all are fair," is a perfectly rational mythic representation of a divine being. We feel, even now, that the conception of a ‘‘ queen and huntress, chaste and fair," the lady warden of the woodlands, is a beautiful and natural fancy which requires no explanation. On the other hand, the Artemis of Arcadia, who is confused with the nymph Callisto, who, again, is said to have become a she-bear, and later a star, and the Brauronian Artemis, whose maiden ministers danced a bear-dance (dpxrevery ; compare Harpo- cration on this word), are goddesses whose legend seems unnatural, and is felt to need explanation. Or, again, there is nothing not explicable and natural in the con-

ception of the Olympian Zeus as represented by the great chryselephantine statue of Zeus at Olympia, or in the Homeric conception of Zeus as a god who "turns every- where his shining eyes" and beholds all things. But the Zeus whose grave was shown in Crete, or the Zeus who played Demeter an obscene trick by the aid of a ram, or the Zeus who, in the shape of a swan, became the father of Castor and Pollux, or the Zeus who was merely a rough stone, or the Zeus who deceived Hera by means of a feigned marriage with an inanimate object, or the Zeus who was afraid of Attes, is a being whose myth is felt to be un- natural and in great need of explanation. It is this irrational and unnatural element—as Mr Max Miiller says, "the silly, senseless, and savage element"—that makes mythology the puzzle which men have so long found it.

arly Explanations of Myths.—The earliest attempts at a crude science of mythology were efforts to reconcile the legends of the gods and heroes with the religious sentiment which recognized in these beings objects of worship

and respect. Closely as religion and myth are intertwined, it is necessary to hold them apart for the purposes of this discussion. Religion may here be defined as the conception of divine or at least supernatural powers, entertained by men in moments of gratitude or of need and distress, in hours of weakness, when, as Homer says, “all folk yearn after the gods.” Now this conception may ‘be rude enough, and it is nearly related to purely magical ideas, to efforts to secure supernatural aid by magical ceremonies, Still the roughest form of spiritual prayer has for its basis the hypothesis of beneficent beings, visible or invisible. The senseless stories or myths about the gods are soon felt to be at variance with this hypothesis. As an example we may take the instance of Qing, the Bushman hunter. Qing, when first he met white men, was asked about his religion. He began to explain, and mentioned Cagn. Mr Orpen, the chief magistrate of St John’s Territory, asked, “Is Cagn good or malicious? how do you pray to him?” Answer (in a low imploring tone), “‘O Cagn! O Cagn! are we not your children ? do you not see our hunger 9 give us food ;’ and he gives us both hands full” (Cape Monthly Maga- zine, July 1874). Here we see the religious view of Cagn, the Bushman god. But in the mythological account of Cagn given by Qing he appears as a kind of grasshopper, supernaturally endowed, the hero of a most absurd cycle of senseless adventures. Even religion is affected by these irrational notions, and the gods of savages and of many civilized peoples are worshipped with cruel, obscene, and irrational rites, But, on the whole, the religious sentiment strives to transcend the mythical conceptions of the gods, and is shocked and puzzled by the mythical narratives. As soon as this sense of perplexity is felt, by poets, by priests, or by most men in an age of nascent criticism, explana- tions of what is most crude and absurd in the myths are put forward, Men ask themselves why their gods are wor- shipped in the form of beasts, birds, and fishes 3 why their gods are said to have prosecuted their amours in bestial shapes ; why they are represented as lustful and passion- ate—thieves, robbers, murderers, and adulterous. The answers to these questions sometimes become myths them- selves. Thus both the Mangaians and the Egyptians have been puzzled by their own gods in the form of beasts. The Egyptians invented an explanation—itself a myth —that in some moment of danger the gods concealed themselves from their foes in the shapes of animals. The Mangaians, according to Mr Gill, hold that “the heavenly family had taken up their abode in these birds, fishes, and reptiles,”2

A people so curious and refined as the Greeks were

1 Plutarch, De Iside et Osiride. ° Myths and Songs from the South Pacific, p. 35, 1876,

certain to be greatly perplexed by even such comparatively pure mythical narratives as they found in Homer, still more by the coarser legends of Hesiod, and above all by the ancient local myths preserved by local priesthoods. Thus, in the 6th century before Christ, Xenophanes of Colophon severely blamed the poets for their unbecoming legends, and boldly called certain myths “the fables of men of old.”* Theagenes of Rhegium (520 B.c. 2), accord- ing to the scholiast on Iliad, xx. 67,4 was the author of a very ancient system of mythology. Admitting that the fable of the battle of the gods was “unbecoming,” if liter. ally understood, Theagenes represented it as an allegorical account of the war of the elements. Apollo, Helios, and Hepheestus were fire, Hera was air, Poseidon was water, Artemis was the moon, xal rd Aourd dspuolws. Or, by another system, the names of the gods represented moral and intellectual qualities. Heraclitus, too, disposed of the myth of the bondage of Hera as allegorical philosophy, Socrates, in the Cratylus of Plato, expounds “a philosophy which came to him all in an instant,” an explanation of the divine beings based on crude philological analyses of their names. Metrodorus, rivalling some recent flights of conjecture, resolved not only the gods but even heroes like Agamemnon, Hector, and Achilles “into elemental combina- tions and physical agencies.” Euripides makes Pentheus (but he was notoriously impious) advance a “ rationalistie” theory of the story that Dionysus was stitched up in the thigh of Zeus. When Christianity became powerful the heathen philosophers evaded its satire by making more and more use of the allegorical and non-natural system of explanation. That method has two faults. First (as Arnobius and Eusebius reminded their heathen opponents), the allegorical explanations are purely arbitrary, depend upon the fancy of their author, and are all equally plaus- ible and equally unsupported by evidence.® Secondly, there is no proof at all that, in the distant age when the myths were developed, men entertained the moral notious and physical philosophies which are supposed to be “wrapped up,”

as Cicero says, “in impious fables.” Another system of explanation is that associated with the name of Euemerus (316 3.c.). According to this author, the myths are history in disguise. All the gods were once men, whose real feats have been decorated and distorted by later fancy. This view suited Lactantius, St Augustine, and other early Christian writers very well. They were pleased to believe that Euemerus “ by historical research had ascertained that the gods were once but mortal men.” Precisely the same convenient line was taken by Sahagun in his account of Mexican religious myths. As there can be no doubt that the ghosts of dead men have been worshipped in many lands, and as the gods of many faiths are tricked out with attributes derived from ancestor-worship, the system of Euemerus retains

“some measure of plausibility. While we need not believe

with Euemerus and with Mr Herbert Spencer that the god of Greece or the god of the Hottentots was once a man, we cannot deny that the myths of both these gods have passed through and been coloured by the imaginations of men who practised the worship of real ancestors. For example, the Cretans showed the tomb of Zeus, and the Phocians (Pausanias, x. 5) daily poured blood of victims into the tomb of a hero, obviously by way of feeding his ghost. The Hottentots show many tombs of their god, Tsui-Goab, and tell tales about his death ; they also pray regularly for aid at the tombs of their own parents.’ We

3 Xenoph., Fr., i. 42. 4 Dindorf’s ed., vol. iv. p. 281.

° Grote, Hist. of Greece, i. 404, ed. 1869,

6 Cf. Lobeck, Aglaophamus, i. 151-152, on allegorical interpreta- tion of myths in the mysteries,

? Hahn, Tsuni-Goam, the Supreme Being of the Khoi-Khoi, p. 118.

me = ei GeO dr OvG Y

may therefore say that, while it is rather absurd to believe

that Zeus and Tsui-Goab were once real men, yet their myths are such as would be developed by people accus-

tomed, among other forms of religion, to. the worship of

dead men. Very probably portions of the legends of real men have been attracted into the mythic accounts of gods of another character, and this is the element Gt truvh ait the bottom of Euemerism. This is not the place to deal fully with the modern form of the system as set forth by Mr Herbert Spencer.

Later Explanations of Mythology.—The ancient systems of explaining what needed explanation in myths were, then, physical, ethical, religious, and historical. One student, like Theagenes, would see a physical philosophy underlying Homeric legends. Another, like Porphyry,

would imagine that the meaning was partly moral, partly.

of a dark theosophic and religious character. Another would detect moral allegory alone, and Aristotle expresses the opinion that the myths were the inventions of legis- lators "'to persuade the many, and to be used in support of law" (Met, xi. 8, 19). A fourth, lke Euemerus, would get rid of the supernatural element altogether, and find only an imaginative rendering of actual history. When Christians approached the problem of heathen mythology, they sometimes held, with St Augustine, a form of the doctrine of Euemerus.! In other words, they re- garded Zeus, Aphrodite, and the rest as real persons, dia- bolical not divine. Some later philosophers, especially of the 17th century, misled by the resemblance between Biblical narratives and ancient myths, came to the conclusion that the Bible contains a pure, the myths a distorted, form of an original revelation. The abbé Banier published a mythological compilation in which he systematically re- solved all the Greek myths into ordinary history.?- Bryant published (1774) A New System, or an Analysis of Ancient Mythology, wherein an Attempt is made to divest Tradition of Fable, in which he talked very learnedly of "that won- derful people, the descendants of Cush," and saw every- where symbols of the ark and traces of the Noachian deluge. Thomas Taylor, at the end of the 18th century, indulged in much mystical allegorizing of myths, as in the notes to his translation of Pausanias (1794). At an earlier date (1760) De

Brosses struck on the true line of interpretation in his little work Du Culte des Dieux Fétiches, ou Paralléle de Pancienne Religion de l Egypte avec la Religion actuelle de Nigritie. In this tract De Brosses explained the animal-worship of the Egyptians as a survival among a civilized people of ideas and practices springing from the intellectual condition of savages, and actually existing among negroes. A vast symbolical explanation of myths and mysteries was attempted by Friedrich Creuzer.?. The learning and sound sense of Lobeck, in his Aglaophamus, exploded the idea that the Eleusinian and other mysteries revealed or concealed matter of momentous religious importance. It ought not to be forgotten that Lafitau, a Jesuit missionary in North America, while inclined to take a mystical view of the secrets concealed by Iroquois myths, had also pointed out the savage element surviving in Greek mythology.‘

The Most Recent Mythological Systems.—Up to a very Tecent date students of mythology were hampered by orthodox traditions, and still more by ignorance of the ancient languages and of the natural history of man. Only recently have Sanskrit and the Egyptian and Chal-

1 De Civ. Det, vii. 18; viii. 26.

- La Mythologie et les Fables expliquées par U Histoire, Paris, 1788, 3 vols, dto,

® Symbolik und Mythologie der Alten Volker, Leipsic and Darm- Stadt, 1836-48,

- Meewrs des Sauvages, Paris, 1724.

dean languages become books not absolutely sealed. Again, the study of the evolution of human institutions from the lowest savagery to civilization is essentially a novel branch of research, though ideas derived from an unsystematic study of anthropology are at least as old as Aristotle. The new theories of mythology are based on the belief that “it is man, it is human thought and human language combined, which naturally and necessarily pro- duced the strange conglomerate of ancient fable.”® But, while there is

now universal agreement so far, modern mythologists differ essentially on one point. There isa school (with internal divisions) which regards ancient fable as almost entirely "'a disease of language," that is, as the result of confusions arising from misunderstood terms that have survived in speech after their original significance was lost. Another school (also somewhat divided against itself) believes that misunderstood language

played but a very slight part in the evolution of mythology, and that the irrational element in myths is merely the survival from a condition of thought which was once

common, if not universal, but is now only found among savages, and to a certain extent among children. The

former school considers that the state of thought out of which myths were developed was produced by decaying

language; the latter maintains that the corresponding

phenomena of language were the reflexion of thought.

For the sake of brevity we might call the former the "philological" system, as it rests chiefly on the study of language, while the latter might be styled the "historical"

or "anthropological" school, as it is based on the study of man in the sum of his manners, ideas, and institutions.

The System of Mr Max Miiller.—The most distinguished

and popular advocate of the philological school is Mr

Max Miiller, whose ideas must now be stated. Their

exposition is chiefly to be found in Mr Miiller's Selected Essays and in his Lectures on Language.

As the opposite system, the historical or anthropological system, is that

which will be adopted in the remainder of this article, our criticism of Mr Miiller's ideas must be accepted as that of an opponent. The problem set himself by Mr Miiller is to explain what he calls "the silly, savage, and senseless"

element in mythology (Sel. Ess., i. 578). (1.) Mr Miiller says (speaking of the Greeks), "their

poets had an instinctive aversion to everything excessive

or monstrous, yet they would relate of their gods what would make the most savage of Red Indians creep and shudder,"—stories, that is, of the cannibalism of Demeter, of the mutilation of Uranus, the cannibalism of Cronus, who swallowed his own children, and the like. "Among the lowest tribes of Africa and America we hardly find anything more hideous and revolting."

(2.) Mr Miiller refers the beginning of his system of mythology to the discovery of the connexion of the Indo- European or, as they are called, "Aryan " languages. Celts, Germans, speakers of Sanskrit and Zend, Latins and Greeks, all prove by their languages that their tongues may be traced to one family of speech. The comparison of the various words which, in different forms, are common to all Indo-European languages must inevitably throw much light on the original meaning of these words. Take, for example, the name of a god, Zeus, or Athene, or any other. The word may have no intelligible meaning In Greek, but its counterpart in the allied tongues, especially in Sanskrit or Zend, may reveal the original significance of the terms. "To understand the origin and meaning of the names of the Greek gods, and to enter into the original intention of the fables told of each, we must take into account the collateral evidence supplied by Latin, German, . _ aE eS

5 Max Miiller, Lectures on Language, 2d series, p. 410, 1864. XVII. — 18

Sanskrit, and Zend philology" (Lect. on Lang., 2d ser., p. 406). A name may be intelligible in Sanskrit which has no sense in Greek. Thus Athene is a

divine name with- out meaning in Greek, but Mr Miiller advances reasons for supposing that it is identical with akana, “the dawn,” in Sanskrit. It is his opinion, apparently, that whatever story is told of Athene must have originally been told of the dawn, and that we must keep this before us in attempting to understand the legends of Athene. Thus (op. cit., p. 410), he says, “we have a right to explain all that is told of him” (Agni, “ fire”) “as originally meant for fire.” To take another example, Mr Miiller proves by aid of Sanskrit philology that Zeus originally meant the sky, and, as a result, “there was nothing that could be told of the sky that was not in some form or other ascribed to Zeus.” Tf, then (to take an example of our own), we read that Zeus, to pacify the jealousy of Demeter, muti- lated a ram, and pretended to have mutilated himself, are we to suppose that this story had originally a meaning in reference to the sky? The system, at all events, is simply this: the original meaning of the names of gods must be ascertained by comparative philology. The names, as a rule, will be found to denote elemental phenomena. And the silly, savage, and senseless elements in the legends of the gods will be shown to have a natural significance, as descriptions of sky, storms, sunset, water, fire, dawn, twi- light, the life of earth, and other celestial and terrestrial existences. Stated in the barest form, these results do not differ greatly from the conclusions of Theagenes of Rhegium, who held that “ Hephestus was fire, Hera was air, Poseidon was water, Artemis was the moon, Kat ra Aowra époiws.” But Mr Miiller’s system is based on scien- tific philology, not on conjecture, and is supported by a theory, which we shall try to explain, of the various pro- cesses in the evolution of myths out of language.

(3.) The following is an abstract of Mr Miiller’s theory of one process by which myths were developed out of language. “The keenest eye of the antiquary and the philosopher” cannot see farther back, he says, than the period when expressions were coined for the most neces- sary ideas, and when a grammar began which was destitute of national peculiarities, but contained the germ of all the Turanian as well as the Aryan and Semitic forms of speech. This age Mr Miiller calls the Rhematic period (Sel. Ess., 1, 806). (As yet there were no myths, or none alluded to by Mr Miller.) This was followed by an age in which at least two families of language, the Aryan and Semitic, left “the nomadic stage of grammar,” and received once for all the peculiar impress of their formative system. There were as yet no

such tongues as the Greek, Sanskrit, and Latin we know, only the Aryan speech from which these languages differentiated themselves. This was the Dialectic period. (As yet we understand that there were no myths, or none which Mr Miiller takes into account.) We now come to the Mythopeic age. It was “half-way between the Dialectical period, presenting the human race gradually diverging into different families and languages, and the National period, exhibiting to us the earliest traces of nationalized language, and a nationalized litera- ture in India, Persia, Greece, Italy, and Germany ” (op. cit., 1, p. 811). The Mythopeic age, according to Mr Miiller (op. cut., 1. 308), came after the “unavoidable divergence of dialects and languages,” between that period and the age of “the establishment of laws and customs and the first beginnings of religion and poetry.” Mr Miiller’s next step is to examine the intellectual and social conditions of man in the Mythopeeic age. This he does by aid of Philology. He analyses the words which, being common to Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, and German, must have existed in Aryan speech before the nations that talked these

languages separated from the common stock. Although, as we have seen, the Mythopceic age came before “the earliest concentrations of political societies, the establish. ment of laws and customs,” yet Mr Miiller demonstrates that man, in the Mythcpeeic age, had political societies, and customs if not laws. Man, in the age called Mythopeeic, the age when myths were made, already possessed the modern, or at all events the patriarchal, form of the family. His life was ‘half nomadic, half pastoral.” He had abundance of domesticated animals, he practised agriculture, and had invented the plough. His political institutions included kingship. He was a builder of cities and a constructor of roads. He could weave, and work the metals, includ- ing iron. He possessed a system of decimal arithmetic, “which could only have been secured,” says Mr Miiller, ‘by the wear and tear of language in literary and practical use.” Thus, as he possessed a literature, his language must have been tolerably definite and, so to say, stereo- typed in meaning. “This earliest period, then, previous to any national separation, is what I call the Mythopeeie period, for every one of these common Aryan words is, in a certain sense, a myth” (op. cit, i. p. 355). It will be observed that, in the Mythopceic age, man was essentially

civilized, and that his language had passed through “ liter- ary wear and tear.”

(4.) Having thus defined the social, political, and literary status of men in the Mythopeeic age, Mr Miiller goes on to describe the style of their conversation, which in the long run was the source of their myths. In the language of that day (as we gather from an examination of Aryan words) a number of terms, which later became abstract, ‘expressed something substantial, something open to sensuous perceptions.” ‘In ancient languages every one of these words” (such as “day,” “night,” “earth,” ‘‘spring,” “ dawn ”) “had necessarily a termination expres- sive of gender, and this naturally produced the corre- sponding idea of sex, so that these names received not only an individual but a sexual character… . What must have been the result of this? As long as people thought in language it was simply impossible to speak of morning or evening, of spring and winter, without giving to these conceptions something of an individual, active, sexual, and at last personal character. They were either nothings, as they are nothings to our withered thought, or they were something ; and then they could not be conceived as mere powers, but as beings powerful.” Now let us take an example to show how, if the original sense of the names of those “powerful beings” were lost, while the names themselves survived in language as part of a traditional saying, a myth would arise where no myth was intended. Let us suppose that in the Mythopceic age some one said “the shining one pursues the burning one,” meaning the sun follows the dawn. Let it further be supposed that the word for “shining one” was an Aryan prototype of the Greek 2Avos, “the sun,” and that the word for the “burning one” was, similarly, an Aryan prototype of the Sanskrit ahana or dahana, “the dawn.” Then grant that the term for Helios came to be confused with Apollo (a god who has points in common with the sun), grant that the word for the “burning one” became, from some- thing like akana or dahana, Daphne, and admit that a certain tree was also called daphne, because its wood burned easily. When all these changes had happened and had been forgotten, Greeks would find in their language this expression, “Apollo pursues Daphne.” They would see that “ Apollo” was a masculine, “ Daphne” a feminine, word. And they would thus be led to suppose that Apollo was a young amorous god who chased a fair reluctant nymph Daphne, and that

Daphne, to avoid his pursuit, changed herself, or was changed, into a tree bearing the

mate OL OG Y

same name! “All this seems to me as clear as daylight,” gays Mr Miiller.

So far two linguistic influences have been exhibited in their effect on mythology. One is the existence of gender terminations, producing in the human mind the belief that inanimate things spoken of as sexual must be sexual living powers. The other process (illustrated to some extent by the change of a phrase meaning “sunrise follows dawn” into “Phoebus chases Daphne”) is the retention by a verb of its full original activity. The full theory of “auxiliary verbs” which originally possessed “a more material and expressive character” than they now retain will be found in Selected Essays, i. 365. Thus the Latin fui, “1 was,” corresponds to vw, and in Greek “still shows its original and material power of growing.” The theory

is, then, that both substantives and auxiliary verbs “ said”

more than they ought to say” in the Mythopeic age, and that this surplus of meaning, misunderstood, became the « Aberglaube,” the irrational surplus of faith, in the myths.

(5.) The philological processes in the evolution of mytho- logy are still unexhausted. It is plain that as long as every one knew that language “said more than it ought to say,” as long as it was discounted and understood at its true value, it would not produce much mythology. “Tt is,” says Mr Miiller, “the essential character of a true myth that it should no longer be intelligible by a refer- ence to spoken language.” For the full development of myths, then, the old rich overweighted terms must have gone on existing, stereotyped in phrases, but their original significance must have ceased to be intelligible. But how did spoken language retain the words and the sayings, while it utterly lost their meaning? The process must be explained in the words of Mr Miller himself.

“‘ Most nouns, as we have seen before, were originally appellatives or predicates expressive of what seemed at the moment the most characteristic

attribute of an object. But as most objects have more than one attribute, and as, under different aspects, one or the other attribute might seem more appropriate to form the name, it happened by necessity that most objects during the early period of language had more than one name, In the course of time the greater number of these names became useless, and they were mostly replaced in literary languages by one fixed name, which might be called the proper name of such objects. The more ancient a language, the richer it is insynonyms. Synonyms, again, if used constantly, must naturally give rise to a number of homonyms. If we may call the sun by fifty names expressive of different quali- ties, some of these names will be applicable to other objects also, which would happen to possess the same quality. These different objects would then be called by the same name, they would become homonyms." (Sel. Hss., i. 376-8.)

Thus, while one thing had many names, many things would have the same name. Again, '"'as the meanings of metaphors are forgotten, or the meanings of roots whence words were derived became dimmed and changed, many of these words would lose their radical as well as their poetical meaning. They would become mere names handed down in the conversation of a family ; understood, perhaps, by the grandfather, familiar to the father, but strange to the son, and misunderstood by the grandson." As an ex- ample, Mr Miiller gives Zevs, which, "originally a name of the sky, like the Sanskrit Dyaus," became gradually a proper name, which betrayed its appellative meaning only ina few proverbial expressions, such as Zevs vex (" Zeus, or the sky, rains"), or sub Jove frigido (" under the chill air"). In this example, it is true, we have neither homonyms nor synonyms presented to us, nor do we see why the grandfather should have talked of the sky as a thing, while the grandson was driven to the inference that the sky was & person, and a very remarkable person too.

1 This explanation of the myth of Daphne is compiled from Selected Essays, i. 398, 399, 607, 608. Meanwhile a well-known American Sanskrit scholar denies that ahana ever meant *¢ dawn," or that it could become dahana and daphne by any philological process.

river.

nyms."'

(6.) Mr Miiller's next step is to collect illustrations of the processes he has described, and to adduce proofs that these processes really existed and acted. He looks for his proofs and his examples in Sanskrit poetry, in the poetry of the sacred hymns or Vedas. Here is his evidence for the action (in the Mythopeeic age) of the processes he calls synonymy or polyonymy (many names for one thing) and homonymy (many things with one name):

'¢In the Veda the earth is called urvt (wide), prithvi (broad), mahi (great), and many more names of which the Nigantha mentions twenty-one. These twenty-one words would besynonyms. But urvi (wide) is not only given as a name of the earth, but also means a Prithvi (broad) means not only earth, but sky and dawn. Mahi (great, strong) is used for air and speech, as well as for earth. Hence earth, river, sky, dawn, air, and speech would become homo- (Sel. Ess., i. 371.)

It will therefore be evident that, if the great-grandsons of the people of the Vedic age did not know whether their

traditional expressions referred to earth, dawn, sky, air, or

speech, confusions would arise, and from the confusions myths. Mr Miiller ends by analysing and explaining some Greek stories.

We have now given as clear and distinct an account of Mr Miiller's system of mythology as is possible within our limited space. It will be observed that the explanation applies to people speaking Indo-European languages, is grounded on a view of their early history as elucidated by philology, and on the whole resolves itself into this, that "mythology is a disease of language," a result of misunderstood phrases and of the gender-terminations of words. We now approach the criticism of Mr Miller's system, and our criticism will lead up to a new examination of the problem of mythology.

(1.) Mr Miiller started with the wish to explain how the Greek poets, with their aversion to everything excessive or monstrous, came to ascribe the most abominable offences to their own gods. The gods were incestuous, were sinners of nameless sins. 'They disguised themselves in animal shapes

; they tasted human flesh ; they amused themselves with obscene jests; they died and were buried ; they were born, and their birth-places were known. The first objection to Mr Miiller's system is that it does not explain, but usually keeps clear of, the very horrors that need ex- planation. 'True, he easily shows that the sun can be regarded, now as the child, now as the bridegroom, of the dawn, and hence a story of incest may arise. The growing crop (to take an instance familiar to the early heathen apologists) may be regarded as the child of the showery sky, and again as its bride, and hence an unbecoming story, like the loves of Zeus and Persephone, might come to be credited. Once more, Zeus may be regarded as the father of all men, and hence the separate myths of his physical amours, whence spring the royal families of Hellas, might have originated. But, even if we accept all these explanations, we still must ask Mr Miiller the questions which the early Christians asked the heathen expositors of and apologists for the myths. How are the disgusting details, the "savage, silly, and senseless" details, to be explained? Zeus is the heaven, and woos the earth, or the lower air, but why does he take the form of a bull or a cuckoo, why does he deceive Hera by celebrating a false marriage with a log of wood? Why does he try to expiate his amour with Demeter by his conduct to the ram? Why, when conceived of as the father of noble houses, does he adopt the shape of an ant, a swan, an eagle, a pull, a serpent? What mean the amours and animal metamorphoses of the other gods? Grant that Procris 1s the dew, as Mr Miiller says it is, and how do you explain her unspeakable services to King Minos? Grant that Cronion only means " the ancient of days," and that, being misunderstood to mean 'son of Cronus," the name gave

rise to the myth of Cronus, and how do you explain that god's mutilation of his father, and his habit of swallowing down alive each of his own children, whom he afterwards Grant that Dionysus only means the vine and its influence, and how do you explain his unspeakable conduct as recorded in the mysteries at Halimus in Attica ? How, in short, as Arnobius asked the heathen, how, if the myths represent pure natural facts and phenomena, do they come to be crowded with the obscene details which disgusted philosophers six hundred years before Christ ? In what stage of society did this 'impure way of stating Mr Miller must fix the period at which such

details were invented, some time between his Mythopceic age and the age of Xenophanes and In the meantime his system does not explain and scarcely touches on the very facts that most call for Why did the Greek poets relate divine myths of which we find the parallels “among the lowest

disgorged ?

pure facts” win favour ?

Theagenes. explanation.

tribes of Africa and America” ?

(2.) Mr Miiller’s system is a result of the philological discoveries that establish the linguistic unity of the Indo- European peoples, and is founded on an analysis of their But myths precisely similar in irrational and repulsive character to those of the Aryan races exist among Australians, South Sea Islanders, Eskimo, Bushmen in Africa, among Solomon Islanders, Iroquois, and so forth. The facts being identical, an identical explanation should be sought, and, as the languages in which the myths exist are essentially different, an explanation founded on the Mr Miiller

language.

Aryan language is likely to prove too narrow. indeed, has ventured into Finnish philology and mythology,

‘but a wider examination is needed. Once more, even if we discover the original meaning of a god’s name, it does not follow that we can explain by aid of the significance of the name the myths about the god. For nothing is | more common than the attraction of a more ancient Myths of unknown antiquity, for example, have been attracted into the legend of Charlemagne, just as the bons mots of old

story into the legend of a later god or hero.

wits are transferred to living humorists. Therefore,

though we may ascertain that Zeus means “sky” and Agni “fire,” we cannot assert, with Mr Miiller, that all the myths about Agni and Zeus were criginally told of fire and sky. When these gods became popular they would inevitably inherit any current exploits of earlier heroes or gods. These exploits would therefore be explained

erroneously if regarded as originally myths of sky or fire.

We cannot convert Mr Miiller’s proposition “there was

nothing told of the sky that could not in some form

or other be ascribed to Zeus” into there was no- thing ascribed to Zeus that had not at some time or

other been told of the sky.” This is also, perhaps, the proper place to observe that names derived from natural phenomena—sky, clouds, dawn, and sun—are habitually assigned by Brazilians, Ojibways, Australians, and other savages to living men and women. Thus the story origin- ally told of a man or woman bearing the name “gun,” “dawn,” “cloud,” may be mixed up later with myths about the real celestial dawn, cloud, or sun. For all these reasons the information obtained from philological analysis of names is to be distrusted. We must also bear in mind that early men when they conceived, and savage men when they conceive, of the sun, moon, wind, earth, sky, and so forth, have no such ideas in their minds as we attach to these names. They think of sun, moon, wind, earth, and sky as of living human beings with bodily parts and passions, Thus, even when we discover an elemental meaning in a god’s name, that meaning may be all unlike what the word suggests to civilized men. A final objection is that philologists differ widely as to the true analysis and

re YD OL OG

real meaning of the divine names. Mr Miiller, for ox. ainple, connects xpévos with xpévos, “time”; Preller with kpaivw, “TI fulfil,” and so forth.

(3.) The objection to Mr Miiller’s doctrine of the Rhematic and Dialectic periods of language as bearing on mythology is that he either supposes man to have had no myths in these periods, or takes no account of the myths they may havehad. Yet it iscertain, and admitted by himself, that we do find myths in languages of al] known sorts. If man on his way to being Aryan or Semitic, if man in the Rhematic and Dialectic stages, possessed no myths, he must have differed from all men of whom we know anything. If he did possess myths these cannot have been produced by the conditions of Mr Miiller’s Mythopeic age, because that age had not yet been reached. And if man in the Rhematic and Dialectic periods had myths, and if they survived into the Mytho. peeic and later periods, they cannot be explained by Mr Miller’s Mythopceic theory. Especially if these earlier myths crystallized round a god or hero of later date will the effort to explain the earlier stories by analysis of the later names be fruitless. As to the Mythopceic period itself, as described by Mr Miiller, it was rather an age when the materials for myths were accumulated than when myths themselves were developed.

(4.) Mr Miiller attempts to show how the conversation of men in the Mythopweic age became the source of myths. Here he is endeavouring, really, to account for that universal attribution of life, sex, action, and thought to all phenomena which is, indubitably, the essential con- dition of mythology. He explains this “animism ” as an ‘erroneous condition of thought into which men essentially civilized were driven by the nature of language. In lan- guage all words denoted gender, hence (he thinks) men were led to suppose that gender and sex, with all that follows, were possessed by all objects. But it is scarcely necessary to reply (the truth being so obvious) that the gender-termina- tions of words reflected, and must have arisen from, a state of the human intellect in which all things were regarded as persons. The civilized men of the Mythopeic age were not compelled, as Mr Miller thinks, to believe that all phenomena were persons, because the words which denoted the phenomena had gender-terminations. On the other hand, the gender-terminations were survivals from an early stage of thought in which personal characteristics, including sex, had been attributed to all phenomena. This condition of thought is demonstrated to

be, and to have been, universal among savages, and it may notoriously be observed among children. Mr Miiller explains it as the result of reflexions on gender-terminations, but how does he explain these terminations themselves? His theory is that, somehow, gender-terminations arose in language. Then, when they had become a tradition of language, they "reacted on the mind with irresistible power," and men, who had previously been as sensible as ourselves, felt themselves obliged to animate and personify all pheno- mena. Mr Miiller remarks "there is some truth in this," (that is, in the contention that a belief in the personal character of phenomena reflected itself in gender-termina- tions), "but it only serves to confirm the right view of the influence of language on thought, for this tendency, though in its origin intentional, and therefore the result of thought, became soon a mere rule of tradition in language, and then it reacted on the mind with irresistible power" (Sel. Ess., 1, 604). Mr Miiller thinks that men first held nature to be animated and personal. This belief reflected itself in language, but it (apparently) produced no myths. Ina later and civilized age language brought back the old state of intellect, and myths were produced. This becomes 4 superfiuous hypothesis of degradation, for the original state

my Te Ow) Om

of intellect was enough for the genesis of myths, without the conjectured reaction of language.

(5.) The elaborate theory of the persistence of phrases without meaning in language is inconsistent with all that Mr Miiller has told us about the civilization of Mythopceic man. He belonged to a settled society, with a literature of its own. No proof is given that men so advanced in civilization would forget the meanings of ordinary phrases and yet retain the phrases in their language. How could a society with such shifting speech develop "by literary wear and tear" a system of decimal arithmetic? But Mr Miiller says that the rapid process of oblivion which begat myths might occur in four generations. ;

(6.) Again, no proof is given of the existence of the processes called homonymy and polyonymy. Mr Miiller, by way of proof, quotes the Vedas, —artificial poems pro- duced in a language which did not even exist in

what he calls the Mythopeeic age. An Englishman might as well illustrate the conversation of his ancestors by examples chosen from Hymns Ancient and Modern. Mr Miiller gives instances of homonymy and polyonymy in the Vedas, but he does not show that these processes made it impossible for the descendants of the Vedic poets to know what they were talking about. He says the descendants of Mytho- peic mendid not know what their traditional phrases meant, but he advances no proof that Mythopceic men used the processes called homonymy and polyonymy. Finally, when he looks for illustrations, he finds them, not in the Mytho- peeic period at all, but in the established national languages of the Greeks and of the Aryans of India. And in these illustrations the very points which most demand explana- tion—the "'silly, senseless, and savage" details—are left not only unexplained but almost untouched. Thus Mr Miiller's theory that myths are "'a disease of language " seems destitute of evidence, and inconsistent with what is histori- cally known about the relations between the language and the social, political, and literary condition of men.

Theory of Mr Herbert Spencer.—The system of Mr Herbert Spencer, as explained in Principles of Sociology, has many points in common with that of Mr Miiller. Mr Spencer attempts to account for the state of mind (the foundation of myths) in which man personifies and ani- mates all phenomena. According to his theory, too, this habit of mind may be regarded as the result of degenera- tion, for in his view, as in Mr Miiller's, it is not primary, bilt the result of misconceptions. But, while language is the chief cause of misconceptions with Mr Miiller, with Mr Spencer it is only one of several forces all working to the same result, Statements which originally had a different significance are misinterpreted, he thinks, and names of human beings are also misinterpreted in such a manner that early races are gradually led to believe in the person- ality of phenomena. He too notes "the defect in early speech" —that is, the "lack of words free from implica- tions of vitality "—as one of the causes which "favour per- sonalization." Here, of course, we have to ask Mr Spencer, seve asked Mr Miiller, why words in early languages

imply vitality." These words must reflect the thought of the men who use them before they react upon that thought and confirm it in its misconceptions. So far Mr Spencer seems at one with the philological

school of mytho- logists, but he warns us that the misconstructions of language in his system are “different in kind, and the erroneous course of thought is opposite in direction.” According to Mr Spencer (and his premises, at least, are correct), the names of human beings in an early state of Society are derived from incidents of the moment, and often refer to the period of the day, or the nature of the Weather. We find, among Australian natives, among

Abipones in South America, and among Ojibways in the

North, actual people named Dawn, Gold Flower of Day, Dark Cloud, Sun, and so forth. Mr Spencer’s argument is that, given a story about real people so named, in process of time and forgetfulness the anecdote which was once current about a man named Storm and a woman named Sunshine will be transferred to the meteorological phenomena of sun and tempest. Thus these purely natural agents will come to be “personalized” (Prin. Soc., 392), and to be credited with purely human origin and human adventures. Another misconception would arise when men had a tradition that they came to their actual seats from this mountain, or that lake or river, or from lands across the sea. They will mistake this tradition of local origin for one of actual parentage, and will come to believe that, like certain Homeric heroes, they are the sons of a river (now personified), or of a mountain, or, like a tribe mentioned by Garcilasso de la Vega, that they are descended from the sea. Once more, if their old legend told them that they came from the rising sun, they will hold, like many races, that they are actually the children of the sun. By this process of forgetfulness and misinterpretation, mountains, rivers, lakes, sun, and sea would receive human attributes, while men would degenerate from a more sen- sible condition into a belief in the personality and vitality of inanimate objects. As Mr Spencer thinks ancestor- worship the first form of religion, and as he holds that per- sons with such names as sun, moon, and the like became worshipped as ancestors, his theory results in the belief that nature-worship and the myths about natural pheno- mena —dawn, wind, sky, night, and the rest—are a kind of transmuted worship of ancestors and transmuted myths about real men and women. “Partly by confounding the parentage of the race with a conspicuous object marking

the natal region of the race, partly by literal interpretation of birth names, and partly by literal interpretation of names given in eulogy" (such as Sun and Bull, among the Egyptian kings), and also through "implicit belief in the statements of forefathers," there has been produced belief in descent from mountains, sea, dawn, from animals which have become constellations, and from persons once on earth who now appear as sun and moon.

The chief objection to these processes is that they require, as a necessary condition, a singular amount of memory on the one hand and of forgetfulness on the other. The lowest contemporary savages remember little or nothing of any ancestor farther back than the grandfather. But men in Mr Spencer's Mythopceic age had much longer memories. On the other hand, the most ordinary savage does not misunderstand so universal a custom as the imposition of names peculiar to animals or derived from atmospheric phenomena. He calls his own child Dawn or Cloud, his own name is Sitting Bull or Running Wolf, and he is not tempted to explain his great-grandfather's name of Bright Sun or Lively Raccoon on the hypothesis that the ancestor really was a raccoon or the sun. Moreover, savages do not worship ancestresses or retain lively memories of their great-grandmothers, yet it is through the female line in the majority of cases that the animal or other ancestral name is derived. The son of an Australian whose family

142 Mey PE OTL OG ©

name is Crane takes his mother's name, Swan or Cockatoo, or whatever it may be, and the same is the general rule in Africa and America among races who rarely remember their great-grandfathers. On the whole, then (though

degeneracy, as well as progress, is a force in human evolu- tion), we are not tempted to believe in so strange a com-

bination of forgetfulness with long memory, nor so excessive a degeneration from common sense into a belief in the personality of phenomena, as are required no less by Mr Spencer's system than by that of Mr Miiller.

A New Examination of Mythologies.—We have stated and criticized the more prominent modern theories of mythology. It is now necessary first to recapitulate the chief points in the problem, and then to attempt to explain them by a comparison of the myths of various races. ‘The difficulty of mythology is to account for the following among other apparently irrational elements in myths: the wild and senseless stories of the beginnings of things, of the origin of men, sun, stars, animals, death, and the world in general; the infamous and absurd adventures of the gods; why divine beings are regarded as incestuous, adulterous, murderous, thievish, cruel, cannibals, and addicted to wearing the shapes of animals; the myths of metamorphosis into plants, beasts, and stars ; the repulsive stories of the state of the dead; the descents of the gods into the place of the dead, and their return thence. It is extremely difficult to keep these different categories of myths separate from each other. If we investigate myths of the origin of the world, we often find gods in animal form active in the work of world-making. If we examine myths of human descent from animals, we find gods busy there, and if we try to investigate the myths of the origin of the gods, the subject gets mixed up with the mythical origins of things in general.

Our first question will be, Is there any stage of human society, and of the human intellect, in which facts that appear to us to be monstrous and irrational are accepted as ordinary occurrences of every-day life? Mr Lane, in his preface to the Arabian Nights, says that the Arabs have an advantage over us as story-tellers, They can introduce such incidents as the change of a man into a horse, or of a woman into a dog, or the intervention of an afreet, without any more scruple than our own novelists feel in describing a duel or the concealment of a will. Among the Arabs the actions of magic and of spirits are regarded as at least as probable and common as duels and concealments of wills in European society. It is obvious that we need look no farther for the explanation of the supernatural events in Arab romances, Now let us apply this system to mythology. It is admitted that Greeks, Romans, Aryans of India in the age of the Sans- krit commentators, Egyptians of the Ptolemaic and earlier ages, were as much puzzled as we are by the mythical adventures of their gods. But is there any known stage of the human intellect in which these divine adventures, and the metamorphoses of men into animals, trees, stars, and converse with the dead, and all else that puzzles us in the civilized mythologies, are regarded

as possible incidents of daily human life? Our answer is that every- thing in the civilized mythologies which we regard as irrational seems only part of the accepted and rational order of things to contemporary Savages, and in the past seemed equally rational and natural to savages concern- ing whom we have historical information, Our theory is, therefore, that the savage and senseless element in mythology is, for the most part, a legacy from ancestors of the civilized races who were in an intellectual state not higher than that of Australians, Bushmen, Red Indians, the lower races of South America, and other worse than barbaric peoples, As the ancestors of the Greeks, Aryans

of India, Egyptians, and others advanced in civilization, their religious thought was shocked and surprised by myths (originally dating from the period of savagery, and natural in that period) which were preserved down to the time of Pausanias by local priesthoods, or which were stereotyped in the ancient poems of Hesiod and Homer, or in the Brakhmanas and Vedas of India, or were retained in the popular religion of Egypt. This theory recommended itself to Lobeck. ‘‘We may believe that ancient and early tribes framed gods like themselves in action and in experience, and that the allegorical element in myths is the addition of later peoples who had attained to purer ideas of divinity, yet dared not reject the religion of their ancestors” (A glaoph., i. 153). The senseless element in the myths would by this theory be for the most part a “sur. vival.” And the age and condition of human thought from which it survived would be one in which our most ordinary ideas about the nature of things and the limits of possibility did not yet exist, when all things were con- ceived of in quite other fashion,—the age, that is, of savagery. It is universally admitted that “ survivals” of this kind do account for many anomalies in our institu. tions, in law, politics, society, even in dressand manners, If isolated fragments of an earlier age abide in these, it is still more probable that other fragments will survive in anything so closely connected as mythology with the conservative religious sentiment. Again, if this view of mythology can be proved, much will have been done to explain a problem which we have not yet touched, namely, the distribution of myths. The science of mythology has to account, if it can, not only for the existence of certain stories in

‘the legends of certain races, but also for the presence of

stories practically the same among almost all races. In the long history of mankind it is impossible to deny that stories may conceivably have spread from a single centre, and been handed on from races like the Indo-European and the Semitic to races as far removed from them in every way as the Zulus, the Australians, the Eskimo, the natives of the South Sea Islands. But, while the possi- bility of the diffusion of myths by borrowing and trans- mission must be allowed for, the hypothesis of the origin of myths in the savage state of the intellect supplies a ready explanation of their wide diffusion. Archeeologists are acquainted with objects of early art and craftsmanship, rude clay pipkins and stone weapons, which can only be classed as “human,” and which do not bear much impress of any one national taste and skill. Many myths may be called “human” in this sense. They are the rough pro- ducts of the early human mind, and are not yet characterized by the differentiations of race and culture. Such myths might spring up anywhere among untutored men, and anywhere night survive into civilized literature, There- fore where such myths are found among Greeks, Austral- lans, Egyptians, Mangaians, and others it is unnecessary to account for their wide diffusion by any hypothesis of borrowing, early or late. The Greek “key” pattern found on objects in Peruvian graves was not necessarily borrowed from Greece, nor did Greeks necessarily borrow from Aztecs the “wave” pattern which is common to both. The same explanation may be applied to Greek and Aztec myths of the deluge, to Australian and Greek myths of the original theft of fire. Borrowed they may have been, but they may as probably have been independent inventions. It is true that some philologists (among others Professor Sayce) deprecate as unscientific the comparison of myths which are found in languages not connected with each other. The objection rests on the theory that myths are a disease of language, a morbid offshoot of language, and that the

legends in unconnected languages must therefore be kept apart. But, as the theory which we are explaining does

not admit that language is more than a subordinate cause in the development of myths, as it seeks for the origin of myths in a given condition of thought through which all races have passed, we need do no

more than record the ob- jection of Professor Sayce. Our next step must be briefly to examine the intellectual condition of savages, that is, of races varying from the condition of the Andaman islanders to that of the Solomon Islanders and the ruder Red Men of the American continent.

The Intellectual Condition of Savages. Nature of our Evidence.—In a developed treatise on the subject of mythology it would be necessary to criticize, with a minuteness which is impossible here, our evidence for the very peculiar mental condition of the lower races. Mr Max Miiller has asked (when speaking of the mental con- dition of men when myths were developed), “was there a period of temporary madness through which the human mind had to pass, aud was it a madness identically the same in the south of India and the north of Iceland?” To this we may answer that the human mind had to pass through the savage stage of thought, that this stage was for all practical purposes “identically the same” everywhere, and that to civilized observers it does resemble “a temporary madness.” Many races are still abandoned to that tem- porary madness ; many others which have escaped from it were observed and described while still labouring under its delusions. Our evidence for the intellectual ideas of man in the period of savagery we derive partly from the reports of voyagers, historians, missionaries, partly from an examination of the customs, institutions, and laws in which the lower races gave expression to their notions. As to the first kind of evidence, we must be on our guard against several sources of error. Where religion is con- cerned, travellers in general and missionaries in particular are biased in several distinct ways. The missionary is sometimes anxious to prove’ that religion can only come by revelation, and that certain tribes, having received no revelation, have no religion or religious myths at all. Sometimes the missionary, on the other hand, is anxious to demonstrate that the myths of his heathen flock are a corrupted version of the Biblical narrative. In the former ease he neglects the study of savage myths; in the latter he unconsciously accommodates what he hears to what he calls “the truth.” The traveller who is not a missionary may either have the same prejudices, or he may bea sceptic about revealed religion. In the latter case he is perhaps unconsciously moved to put burlesque versions of Biblical stories into the mouths of his native informants, or to represent the savages as ridiculing the Scriptural traditions which he communicates to them. Yet again we must re- member that the

leading questions of a European inquirer may furnish a savage with a thread on which to string answers which the questions themselves have suggested. “Have you ever had a great flood?” “Yes.” ‘Was any one saved?” The question starts the invention of the Savage on a deluge-myth, of which, perhaps, the idea has never before entered his mind. There still remain the difficulties of all conversation between civilized men and unsophisticated savages, the tendency to hoax, and other sources of error and confusion. In receiving this kind of evidence, then, we need to know the character of our Informant, his means of communicating with the heathen, his power of testing evidence, and his good faith. His testimony will have additional weight if supported by the

uudesigned coincidences” of other evidence, ancient and modern. If Strabo and Herodotus and Pomponius Mela, for example, describe a custom, rite, or strange notion in the Old World, and if mariners and missionaries find the Same notion or custom or rite in Polynesia or Australia or Kamchatka, we can scarcely doubt the truth of the

reports. The evidence is best when given by ignorant men, who are astonished at meeting with an institution which ethnologists are familiar with in other parts of the world. Another method of obtaining evidence is by the comparative study of savage laws and institutions. Thus we find in Asia, Africa, America, and Australia that the marriage laws of the lower races are based on a belief in kinship with animals. The evidence for this belief is thus en- tirely beyond suspicion. We find, too, that political power, sway, and social influence are based on the ideas of magic, of metamorphosis, and of the power which certain men possess to talk with the dead and to visit the abodes of death. All these ideas are the stuff of which myths are made, and the evidence of savage institutions, in every part of the world, proves that these ideas are the universal inheritance of savages. As to the quantity of evidence, it is actually overpowering in amount.

Savage Ideas about the World.—We all “move about in worlds not realized,” though science is constantly occupied in winning over more material from the chaos of the un- known to the realm of rational knowledge. Savage men are like ourselves in curiosity and anxiety causas

cognoscere rerum, but with our curiosity they do not possess our powers of attention. They are as easily satisfied with an explanation of phenomena as they are eager to possess an explanation. Inevitably they furnish themselves with their philosophy out of their scanty stock of acquired ideas, and these ideas and general conceptions seem almost imbecile to civilized men. Curiosity and credulity, then, are the characteristics of the savage intellect. When a phenomenon presents itself the savage requires an explanation, and that explanation he makes for himself, or receives from tradition, in the shape of a myth. The basis of these myths, which are just as much a part of early conjectural science as of early religion, is naturally the experience of the savage as construed by himself. Man's craving to know "the reason why" is already "among rude savages an in- tellectual appetite," and "even to the Australian scientific speculation has its germ in actual experience."' How does he try to satisfy this craving? Mr Tylor replies, 'When the attention of a man in the myth-making stage of intellect is drawn to any phenomenon or custom which has to him no obvious reason, he invents and tells a story to account for it." Against this statement it has been urged that men in the lower stages of culture are not curious, but take all phenomena for granted. If there were no direct evidence in favour of Mr Tylor's opinion, it would be enough to point to the nature of savage myths themselves. It is not arguing in a circle to point out that almost all of them are nothing more than explanations of intellectual difficulties, answers to the question, How came this or that phenomenon to be what it is? Thus savage myths answer the questions,—What was the origin of the world, and of men, and of beasts? How came the stars by their arrangement and movements? How are the motions of sun and moon to be accounted for! Why has this tree a red flower, and this bird a black mark on the tail? What was the origin of the tribal dances, or of this or that law of custom or etiquette? Savage mytho- logy, which is also savage science, has a reply to all these aud all similar questions, and that reply is always found in the shape of a story. The answers cannot be accounted for without the previous existence of the questious.

We have now shown how savages come to have a mytho- logy. It is their way of satisfying the early form of scientific curiosity, their way of realizing the world in which they move. But they frame their stories, neces- sarily and naturally, in harmony with their general theory Ween ee

1 Tylor, Primitive Culture, i, 369, 1871.

of things, with what we may call ‘savage metaphysics.” Now early man, as Mr Miiller says, “not only did not think as we think, but did not think as we suppose he ought to have thought.” The chief distinction between his mode of conceiving the world and ours is his vast extension of the theory of personality. The history of thought is the history of the process of narrowing the range and intensifying the conception of personality. To civilized man only human beings seem personal. We scarcely regard each of the more intelligent lower creatures as “‘an J,” and we can hardly be said to attribute definite personality at all to the less intelligent creatures, such as fishes. It is only by the half-conscious survival of older thought in poetry that we attribute personality to the sun or the wind, or say, ‘“‘at one stride comes the Dark.” But to the savage, and apparently to men more backward than the most backward peoples we know, all nature was a congeries of ‘animated personalities. The savage’s notion of personality is more a universally diffused feeling than a reasoned conception, and this feeling of a personal self he impartially distributes all over the world as known to him. One of the Jesuit missionaries in North America thus describes the Red Man’s philosophy :! “Les sauvages se persuadent que non seulement les hommes et les autres animaux, mais aussi que toutes les autres choses sont animées.” Crevaux, in the Andes, found that the Indians believed that the beasts have piays (sorcerers and doctors) like themselves.? This opinion we may name personalism, and it is the necessary condition of savage (and, as will be seen, of civilized) mythology. The Jesuits could not under- stand how spherical bodies like sun and moon could be mistaken for human beings. Their catechumens put them off with the answer that the drawn bows of the heavenly bodies gave them their round appearance. ‘‘The wind was formerly a person; he became a bird,” say the Bush- men, and g‘60 ka/ kat, a respectable Bushman once saw the personal wind at Haarfontein.? The Egyptians, ac- cording to Herodotus (iii. 16), believed fire to be Onplov eupuxov, a live beast. The Bushman who saw the Wind meant to throwa stone at it, but it ran into a hill, From the wind as a person the Bhinyas in India (Dalton, p. 140) claim descent, and in Indian epic tradition the leader of the ape army was a son of the wind. The Wind, by certain mares, became

the father of wind-swift steeds men- tioned in the J2iad. The loves of Boreas are well known. These are examples of the animistic theory applied to what, in our minds, seems one of the least personal of natural phenomena. The sky (which appears to us even less personal) has been regarded as a personal being by Samoyeds, Red Indians, Zulus,4 and traces of this belief survive in Chinese, Greek, and Roman religion.

Thus the savage mind regards even the most abstract phenomena as persons, with human parts and passions, That idea alone will account for much that is strange in mythology. But we must remember that, to the savage, Sky, Sun, Sea, Wind are not only persons, but they are savage persons. Their conduct is not what civilized men would attribute to characters so august; it is what un- civilized men think probable and befitting among beings like themselves. Now savage man's view of his own place and his own powers in the world is so unlike our modern view of human relations to the universe that it requires a separate explanation.

Savage Theory of Man's Relations with the World.—It has already been shown that the savage regards even the most abstract phenomena (sky, earth, wind, and so forth) as animated and personal. It must be added that he has

1 Relations, 1636, p. 114. 2 Voyages, p. 159. 3 South African Folk-Lore Journal, May 1880. 4 Tylor, op. cit., ii. 256.

MaixTeOoOLoGcyY

the same opinion of the personality and human character of all animals. 'Ils tiennent les poissons raisonnables, comime aussi les cerfs," says a Jesuit father about the North-American Indians (Relations, loc. cit.). In Aus. tralia the natives believe that the wild dog has the power of speech, like the cat of the Coverley witch in the Spec. tator. The Breton peasants, according to M. Sébillot, credit all birds with language, which they even attempt to interpret. The old English and the Arab superstitions about the language of beasts are examples of this opinion surviving among civilized races. The bear in Norway is regarded as almost a man, and his dead body is addressed and his wrath deprecated by Samoyeds and Red Indians, "The native bear Kwr-bo-roo is the sage counsellor of the aborigines in all their difficulties, When

bent on a danger- ous expedition, the men will seek help from this clumsy creature, but in what way his opinions are made known is nowhere recorded.”> Schoolcraft mentions a Red Indian story explaining how “the bear does not die,” but this tale Mr Schoolcraft (like Herodotus in Egypt) “cannot bring himself to relate.” He also gives examples of Iowas conversing with serpents. These may serve as examples of the savage belief in the human intelligence of animals, Man is on an even footing with them, and with them can interchange his ideas. But savages carry this opinion much further. Man in their view is actually, and in no figurative sense, akin to the beasts. Certain tribes in Java “believe that women when delivered of a child are fre- quently delivered at the same time of a young crocodile.”6 The common European story of a queen accused of giving birth to puppies shows the survival of the belief in the possibility of such births among civilized races, while the Aztecs had the idea that women who saw the moon in certain circumstances would produce mice. But the chief evidence for the savage theory of man’s close kinship with the lower animals is found in the institution called totemism. This is not the place to discuss totemism in all its bearings. It is, roughly speaking, the belief that certain stocks of men in the various tribes are descended by blood descent from certain objects animate or inani- mate, but especially from beasts. The strength of the opinion is proved by its connexion with very stringent marriage laws. No man (according to the rigour of the custom) may marry a woman who bears the same family name as himself, that is, who is descended from the same inanimate object or animal. Nor may people (if they can possibly avoid it) eat the flesh of animals who are their kindred. We have only space to indicate briefly here the wide diffusion of this extraordinary belief. Among the Murri, or natives of Australia, the local tribes are divided into stocks which may not intermarry, and which regard themselves as being descended from kangaroos, cockatoos, emus, pelicans, and other animals. A man and a woman who both claim descent from the same animal consider themselves as “of one flesh,” brother and sister in the emu or kangaroo stock, and therefore may not inter- marry (Dawson, p. 26). As the cannibals of New Cale- donia do not eat their own tribesmen, so these stocks abstain from the flesh of their animal tribe-fellow. The Australians have a still more curious division of all nature into groups of kindred, so that one man may be descended, indeed, from the fish-hawk, but he also counts cousins with smoke and the honeysuckle tree. Again, the kangaroo and men-kangaroos

are akin to summer, the wind, and the shevak tree. “The South Australian savage looks upon the world as the Great Tribe, to one of whose divisions he himself belongs, and all things, animate or inanimate, which belong to his class are parts of the body corporate 5 Brough Smyth, Aborigines of Victoria, i. 446, 1878. § Hawkesworth, Voyages, iii. 756.

mn Vio 0G XY

whereof he himself is part.”!_ Turning from Australia to the west coast of Africa, we find similar ideas prevailing there. Among the Ashantees, as among the Australians, there are local divisions of the people, through which are

scattered stocks claiming descent from animals, plants, and

other natural objects.2_ As in Australia, the families may not eat the animals to which they are akin. The same notions prevail among the Basutos and other African tribes.® In America the amount of evidence for similar institutions grounded on similar creeds is too large to be dealt with here. The old missionaries, as Charlevoix and Bancroft, the old historian of the Peruvian tribes, Garcilasso de la Vega, the travels of Franklin, the collections of, Bancroft and Schoolcraft, bear irrefutable testimony to the American belief in descent from animals and from inanimate objects, the kinship being recognized, as in Australia, by marriage laws of the strictest character. In India the idea of animal kinship is just as powerful as elsewhere.* The Hos and Mundas exhibit this creed in their marriage law. “The Mundaris, like the Oraons, adopt as their tribal distinction the name of some animal, and the flesh of that animal is tabooed to them as food; for example, the eel and the tortoise” (Dalton, pp. 189, 254). Turner describes analo- gous institutions in his Polynesia (p. 196). The Samoans, like the Egyptians, refuse to eat their own tribal gods, but consume those of their neighbours. Siberian examples are given in Sir John Lubbock’s Origin of Civilization, under the head of the Jakuts. Among the Bonis (negroes relapsed into savagery out of slavery in Cayenne) one family reveres the red ape, another the cayman, a third the turtle.® The higher religion of the Bonis is a survival of Christianity. The language is a mixture of English, Dutch, and Creole patois. These instances from almost every quarter of the globe, from Siberia to Peru, from Bengal to Canada, from Ashantee to the

Cape, will suffice to indicate the strength and wide diffusion of the savage belief in animal kinship with men. Considerable proof of the survival of this sen- timent among the Semitic races is given by Professor Robertson Smith in " Animal Worship and Animal Tribes

among the Arabs and in the Old Testament," Jowrnal of

Philology, vol. ix. No. 17.6

Savage man, then, regards all objects as animate and personal, and himself as physically akin to plants, animals, and other animate and inanimate things. He also believes that many of his own tribe-fellows have the power of as- suming the shapes of animals, and that the souls of his dead kinsfolk revert to animal forms. Sir A. C. Lyal, writing from Hindustan, observes that "to those who live in a country where wicked people and witches are constantly taking the form of wild beasts the explanation of lycan- thropy by a confusion between Aevxds (white) and Avkos (a wolf) seems wanton." Our sense of the wantonness and in- adequacy of this etymological explanation is increased when we find phenomena like LycanrHropy (q. v.) believed in everywhere, whatever the language spoken by the believers. Mr Lane, in his introduction to the Arabian Nights (i. p. 58), says he found the belief in these transmigrations accepted solemnly in Cairo. Bancroft brings evidence to prove that the Mexicans supposed pregnant women would

1 Fison, Kamilaroi and Kurnat, p. 169. Sir George Grey's Travels and Mr G. 8. Lang's lecture on The Aborigines of Australia may also be consulted.

; Bowditch, Mission to Ashantee, pp. 180, 181, 1873.

: Casalis, p. 211; Livingstone, p. 13.

' Evidence will be found in Dalton, Ethnology of Bengal, pp. 63, 166.

: Crevaux, Voyage dans l Amérique du Sud, p. 59.

For similar survivals among Aryans see Famity (vol. ix. pp. 20, 21), and The Politics of Aristotle (Bolland and Lang), p. 96. The original observer of these institutions and ideas, Mr M'Lennan, printed his remarkable papers

on ‘‘The Worship of Plants and Animals ” in the Fortnightly Review, Nov. 1869, Feb. 1870.

turn into beasts, and sleeping children into mice, if things went wrong in the ritual of a certain solemn sacrifice. There is a well-known Scotch legend to the effect that a certain old witch was once fired at in her shape as a hare, and that where the hare was hit there the old woman was found to be wounded. Lafitau tells the same story as current among his Red Indian flock, except that the old witch and her son took the form of birds, not of hares. A Scandinavian witch does the same in the Egil saga. In Lafitau’s tale the birds were wounded by the magic arrows of a medicine man, and the arrow-heads were found in the bodies of the human culprits. In Japan’ people chiefly transform themselves into badgers. The sorcerers of Honduras (Bancroft, i. 740) “possessed the power of trans- forming men into wild beasts.” Regnard, the French dramatist, found in Lapland (1681) that witches could turn men into cats, and could themselves assume the forms of swans, crows, falcons, and geese. Among the Bushmen’ “sorcerers assume the form of beasts and

jackals.” Dobrizhofer, a missionary in Paraguay (1717-

1791), learned that “sorcerers arrogate to themselves the power of changing men into tigers” (Eng. transl., i. p. 63). He was present at a conversion of this sort, though the miracle beheld by the people was invisible to the missionary. Near Loanda Livingstone noted that “a chief may metamorphose himself into a lion, kill any one he chooses, and resume his proper form.” The same accomp- lishments distinguish the Barotse and Balonda.? Among the Mayas of Central America sorcerers could transform themselves “into dogs, pigs, aud other animals; their glance was death to a victim” (Bancroft, ii. 797 yale Thlinkeets hold that their shamans have the same powers.1° A bamboo in Sarawak is known to have been a man. Metamorphoses into stones are aS common among Red Indians and Australians as in Greek mythology. Com- pare the cases of Niobe and the victims of the Gorgon’s head.!! Zulus, Red Indians, Aztecs,!? Andaman Islanders, and other races believe that their dead assume the shapes of serpents and of other creatures, often reverting to the form of the animal from which they originally

descended. In ancient Egypt “the usual prayers demand for the deceased the power of going and coming from and to every- where under any form they like.” A trace of this opinion may be noticed in the 4ineid. The serpent that appeared at the sacrifice of Alneas was regarded as possibly a “manifestation” of the soul of Anchises (dneid, v. 84)— ‘« Dixerat hec, adytis quum lubricus anguis ab imis Septem ingens gyros, septena volumina, traxit,” and Aineas is ‘“Incertus, Geniumne loci, famulumne parentis Esse putet.”

On the death of Plotinus, as he gave up the ghost, a snake glided from under his bed into a hole in the wall. Com- pare Pliny } on the cave “in quo manes Scipionis Africani majoris custodire draco dicitur.”

Without further investigating the survivals of these ideas among civilized races (the most notorious examples are the Indian and Pythagorean theories of transmigration), enough has been said to prove the savage belief in man’s kinship with the animals and its survival in civilization. The last peculiarity in savage philosophy to which we need call attention here is the belief in spirits and in human 1n- tercourse with the shades of the dead. The topic has been

7 Mitford, Tales of Old Japan, 1871.

8 Bleek, Brief Account of Bushman Folk-Lore, pp. 15, 40.

9 Missionary Travels, pp. 615, 642.

10 Dall, Alaska, p. 423, 1870.

1 Dorman, Origin of Primitive Superstitions, 12 Sahagun, French Transl., p. 226.

13 Records of the Past, x. 10. 14 Plotini Vita, p. 2, 95.

pp. 130, 134,

1B oT, N., xv. 44, 85. XVII. — 19

so exhaustively treated by Mr Tylor in his Primitive Cul- ture, and the evidence so fully set forth, that we need do little more than set on record the general facts. With the savage natural death is not a universal and inevitable ordinance. ‘All men must die” is a generalization which he has scarcely reached ; in his philosophy the proposition is more like this, “all men who die die by violence.” a natural death is explained as the result of a sorcerer’s spirit- ual violence, and the disease is attributed to magic, or to the action of hostile spirits. After death the man survives as a spirit, sometimes taking an animal form, sometimes invisible, sometimes to be observed “in his habit as he lived.” As to the origin of the belief in the continued existence and activity of the dead, the current theories will be found in the article Apparitions. The philosophy is shortly put in the speech of Achilles (liad, xxiii. 103) after he has beheld the dead Patroclus in a dream: “ Ay me, there remaineth then even in the house of Hades a spirit and phantom of the dead, for all night long hath the ghost of hapless Patroclus stood over me, wailing and making moan.” It is almost superfluous to quote here the voluminous evidence for the intercourse with spirits which savage chiefs and medicine men are believed to maintain. They can call up ghosts, or can go to the ghosts, in Australia, New Caledonia, New Zealand, North America, Zulu- land, among the Eskimo, and generally in every quarter of the globe. The men who enjoy this power are the same as they who can change themselves and others into animals. They too command the weather, and, says an old French missionary, “are regarded as very Jupiters, having in their hands the lightning and the thunder” (Relations, loc. cit.). They make good or bad seasons, and control the vast animals who, among ancient Persians and Aryans of India, as among Zulus and Iroquois, are supposed to grant or withhold the rain, and to thunder with their enormous wings in the region of the clouds.

We are now in a position to sum up the ideas of savages about man’s relations to the world. We started on this inquiry because we found that savages regarded sky, wind,

sun, earth, and so forth as practically men, and we had then to ask, what sort of men, men with what powers?

The result of our examination, so far, is that in savage Opinion sky, wind, sun, sea, and many other phenomena have, being personal, all the powers attributed to real human persons. These powers and qualities are—(1) relationship to animals and ability to be transformed and to transform others into animals and other objects ; (2) magical accomplishments, as—(a) power to visit or to procure the visits of the dead, (6) other magical powers, such as control over the weather.

Once more, the great forces of nature, considered as persons, are involved in that inextricable confusion in which men, beasts, plants, Stones, stars, are all on one level of personality and animated existence. This is the philosophy of savage life, and it is on these principles that the savage constructs his myths, while these, again, are all the scientific explanations of the universe with which he has been able to supply himself.

Hxamples of Mythology.—Myths of the origin of the world and man are naturally most widely diffused. Man has everywhere asked himself whence things came and how, and his myths are his earliest extant form of answer to this question. So confused and inconsistent are the mythical answers that it is very difficult to classify them according to any system. If we try beginning with myths of creative gods, we find that the world is sometimes represented as pre-existent to the divine race. If we try beginning with myths of the origin of the world, we frequently find that it owes its origin to the activity of pre-existent supernatural beings. According to all modern

in myths, whether of civilized or savage races,

views of creation, the creative mind is prior to the universe

which it created. There is no such consistency of Opinion Perhaps the plan least open to objection is to begin with myths of the gods. But when we speak of gods, we must not give to the word a modern significance. As used here, gods merely mean non-natural and powerful beings, sometimes ‘magnified non-natural men,” sometimes beasts, birds, or insects, sometimes the larger forces and phenomena of the universe conceived of as endowed with human personality and passions. When Plutarch examined

the Osirian myth (De Isid., xxv.) he saw that the “gods” in the tale were really “demons,” “stronger than men, but having the divine part not wholly unalloyed,”——“ magnified non- natural men,” in short. And such are the gods of mytho- logy. In examining the myths of the gods we propose to begin with the conceptions of the most backward tribes, and to advance to the divine legends of the ancient civil- ized races. It will appear that, while the non-civilized gods are often theriomorphic, made in accordance with the ideas of non-civilized men, the civilized gods retain many characteristics of the savage gods, and these characteristics are the “irrational element” in the divine myths.

Myths of Gods. Savage ideas.—The Boo-noo-rong, an Australian coast-tribe, regard as an early creative god a being named Bun-jel or Pund-jel. He is the chief of a supernatural set of beings, earlier than men, with human relationships. He has a wife whose face (in accordance with a widely-diffused scruple of savage etiquette) he has never seen, any more than Urvasi in the Vedic myth was allowed to see Pururavas without his garments, “for such is the custom” (says the Veda) “of women.” The name Bunjel means “eagle-hawk,” and the eagle-hawk is a “totem,” or worshipful ancestral animal, among certain Australian tribes. Conceived as a supernatural bird-god, Pund-jel answers to the birds as they describe themselves in Aristophanes (Aves, 703)—

Bde pev eopev TOAD TperBiTaTot TAéVTWOVY paKkdpwr. He belongs to the age of birds, “altogether wiser and more skilful in all things than men,” “by far the most ancient of all gods.” In an anthropomorphic myth of the Kurnai, Pund-jel figures as “an old man who lives at the sources of the Yarra river” and is rich in cattle. The term Bun-jel is also used as a kind of title of honour be- stowed on the older men of the Kurnai and Briakolung, some of whom have magical powers. In the northern parts of Victoria the aborigines believe in Pund-jel in his bird-form as a creative Eagle. Pund-jel takes the part, not only of a creator, but of an instructor—a ‘‘culture-hero,” to use a fashionable compound term. He instructed man in the arts of life, taught the males how to spear kangaroos, and the women how to dig roots. Pund-jel disappeared from the world he had made when a rival power, the Jay, opened certain great bags of wind he possessed, and blew Pund-jel into the heavens. The Australians draw no very hard-and-fast line between their

“ birraarks,” or sorcerers, and their gods. The Kurnai give the name of Brewin to a powerful spirit, but the name was also conferred on a birraark who disappeared for many days, holding converse with the invisible. The native bear is a beast they adore, and they have given his name to a famous sorcerer. The West Wind is the name of a human sorcerer who happens to be able to make the west wind blow with violence. There is thus a come and go of titles, powers, and attributes be- tween sorcerers, totems, and vague powerful spirits, and in this medley of beliefs a god may have the form of a bird, a man the attributes of a god, so that every sort of irrational transformation is not only not unnatural but is inevitable in such a system. The basis of that system,

eee

m¥YTHOWOG Y

of course, is the belief in the equal personality and com- mon kindred of all things. Pund,jel, and his rivals the Crow and the Jay, appear to belong to the supernatural prehuman race of Nurrumbunguttias, or “old spirits,” answering to the divine races of Titans and gods in Greece, and to the Californian and Ovaherero ‘old ones in heaven.” }

Before leaving the Australian divine myths it should be remarked that the widely-spread dualistic myth is found among the Australians. “Why do things go wrong?” men ask, and answer, in Australia as in Persia, by the myth of the mischievous power who thwarted the maker of things. Among the Australians the Crow was always at war with the creative Eagle. The Eagle, by the way (like the elder brothers of Zeus), was once swallowed by a powerful god who afterwards became the moon, and was disgorged alive. The Eagle’s adventures as a creator will more properly be considered among cosmogonic myths. His share in the dispersion of mankind, and in causing the deluge, cannot but be regarded with some suspicion, though they bear but distant resemblances to the Biblical narratives.

The chief being among the supernatural characters of Bushman mythology is the insect called the Mantis. ? Cagn or Ikaggen, the Mantis, is sometimes regarded with religious respect as a benevolent god. But his adventures are the merest nightmares of puerile fancy. He has a wife, an adopted daughter,

whose real father is the “swallower” in Bushman swallowing-myths, and the daughter has a son, who is the Ichneumon. The Mantis made an eland out of the shoe of his son-in-law. The moon was also created by the Mantis out of his shoe, and it is red, because the shoe was covered with the red dust of Bushman-land. The Mantis is defeated in an encounter with a cat which happened to be singing a song about a lynx. The Mantis (like Poseidon, Hades, Metis, and other Greek gods) was once swallowed, but disgorged alive. The swallower was the monster Ilkhwdi-hemm. Like Heracles when he leaped into the belly of the monster which was about to swallow Hesione, the Mantis once jumped down the throat of a hostile elephant, and so destroyed him. The heavenly bodies are gods among the Bushmen, but their nature and adventures must be dis- cussed among other myths of sun, moon, and stars. As a creator, Cagn is sometimes said to have “given orders, and caused all things to appear and be made.” He struck snakes with his staff and turned them into men, as Zeus did with the ants in /Egina. But the Bushmen’s mythical theory of the origin of things must, as far as possible, be kept apart from the fables of the Mantis, the Ichneumon, and other divine beings. Though animals, these gods have human passions and character, and possess the usual magical powers attributed to sorcerers.

Concerning the mythology of the Hottentots and Namas, we have a great deal of information in a book named Tsuni-Goam, the Supreme Being of the Khoi-Khoi (1881), by Dr T. Hahn. This author has collected the old notices of Hottentot myths, and has added material from his own researches. The chief god of the Hottentots is a being named Tsuni-Goam, who is universally regarded by his worshippers as a deceased sorcerer. According to one old believer, “Tsui-Goab” (an alternative reading of the god’s name) “was a great powerful chief of the Khoi-Khoi—in fact, he was the first Khoi-Khoib from whom all the Khoi-Khoi tribes took their name.” He is

! The chief sources used here are Fison and Ridley’s Kamilaroi and

Kurnai, with Brough Smyth’s Aborigines of Victoria. Dawson’s work,

and Gason on the Dieyries, with Sir George Grey’s Travels, may also be consulted.

2 Accounts of the Mantis and of his performances will be found in

the Cape Monthly Magazine, July 1874, and in Dr Bleek's Brief

Account of Bushman Folk-Love.

always represented as at war (in the usual crude dualism

of savages) with "another chief" named Gaunab. The prayers addressed to Tsui-Goab are simple and natural in character, the "private ejaculations" of men in moments of need or distress. As usual, religion is more advanced than mythology. It appears that, by some accounts, Tsui-Goab lives in the red sky and Gaunab in the dark sky. The neighbouring race of Namas have another old chief for god, a being called Heitsi Eibib. His graves are shown in many places, like those of Osiris, which, says Plutarch, abounded in Egypt. He is propitiated by passers-by at his sepulchres. He has intimate relations in peace and war with a variety of animals whose habits are sometimes explained (like those of the serpent in Genesis) as the result of the curse of Heitsi Eibib. Heitsi Eibib was born in a mysterious way from a cow, as Indra in the Black Yajur-Veda entered into and was born from the womb of a being who also bore acow. The Aig-Veda (iv. 18, 1) remarks, "His mother, a cow, bore Indra, an unlicked calf,"—probably a metaphorical way of speaking. Heitsi Eibib, like countless other gods and heroes, is also said to have been the son of a virgin who tasted a parti- cular plant, and so became pregnant, as in the German and Gallophrygian marchen of the almond tree, given by Grimm and Pausanias. Incest is one of the feats of Heitsi Eibib. Tsui-Goab, in the opinion of his worshippers, as we have seen, is a deified dead sorcerer, whose name means Wounded Knee, the sorcerer having been injured in the knee by anenemy. Dr Hahn tries to prove (by philology's "artful aid") that the name really means "red dawn," and is a Hottentot way of speaking of the infinite. The philological arguments advanced are extremely weak, and by no means convincing. If we grant, however, for the sake of argument, that the early Hottentots worshipped the infinite under the figure of the dawn, and that, by forgetting their own meaning, they came to believe that the words which really meant 'red dawn" meant "sounded knee," we must still admit that the devout have

assigned to their deity all the attributes of an ancestral sorcerer, In short, their “Red Dawn,” if red dawn he be, is a person, and a savage person, adored exactly as the actual fathers and grandfathers of the Hottentots are adored, We must explain his legend, then, on these principles, and not as an allegory of the dawn as the dawn appears to civilized people. About Gaunab (the Ahriman to Tsui-Goab’s Ormuzd) Dr Hahn gives two dis- tinct opinions. ‘“ Gaunab was at first a ghost, a mischief- maker and evil-doer” (op. cit. p. 85). But Gaunab he declares to be “the night-sky” (p. 126). Whether we regard Gaunab, Heitsi Eibib, and Tsui-Goab as originally mythological representations of natural phenomena, or as deified dead men, it is plain that they are now venerated as non-natural human beings, possessing the customary attributes of sorcerers. Thus of Tsui-Goab it is said, “Fe could do wonderful things which no other man could do, because he was very wise. He could tell what would happen in future times. He died several times, and several times he rose again” (statement of old Kxarab in Hahn, p. 61).

The mythology of the Zulus as reported by Callaway (Unkulunkulu, 1868-70) is very thin and uninteresting. The Zulus are great worshippers of ancestors (who appear to men in the form of snakes), and they regard a being called Unkalunkdlu as their first ancestor, and sometimes as the creator, or at least as the maker of men. It does not appear they identify Unktfilunkflu, as a rule, with “the lord of heaven,” who, like Indra, causes the thunder. The word answering to our lord is also applied ‘‘even to beasts, as the lion and the boa.” The Zulus, like many distant races, sometimes attribute thunder to the “thunder-

bird,” which, as in North America, is occasionally seen and even killed by men. “It is said to have a red bill, red legs, and a short red tail like fire. The bird is boiled for the sake of the fat, which is used by the heaven- doctors to puif on their bodies, and to anoint their lightning-rods.” ‘The Zulus are so absorbed in propitiating the shades of their dead (who, though in serpentine bodies, have human dispositions) that they appear to take little pleasure in mythological narratives. At the same time, the Zulus have many “nursery tales,” the plots and inci- dents of which often bear the closest resemblance

to the heroic myths of Greece, and to the marchen of European peoples.' These indications will give a general idea of African divine myths. On the west coast the "ananzi" or spider takes the place of the mantis insect among the Bushmen. For some of his exploits Dasent's Tales from the Norse (2d ed., Appendix) may be consulted.

Turning from the natives of Australia, and from African races of various degrees of culture, to the Papuan inhabit- ants of Melanesia, we find that mythological ideas are scarcely on a higher level. 'There is an excellent account of the myths of the Banks Islanders and Solomon Islanders in Journ. Anthropol. Inst. (February 1881), by the Rev. R. H. Codrington. The article contains a critical descrip- tion of the difficulty with which missionaries obtain infor- mation about the prior creeds. The people of the Banks Islands are chiefly ancestor-worshippers, but they also believe in, and occasionally pray to, a being named I Qat, one of the prehuman race endowed with supernatural powers who here, as elsewhere, do duty as gods. Here is an example of a prayer to Qat,—the devotee is supposed to be in danger with his canoe. '"Qate! Marawa! look down on me, smooth the sea for us two that I may go safely on the sea. Beat down for me the crests of the tide- rip ; let the tide-rip settle down away from me, beat it down level that it may sink and roll away, and I may

come to a quiet landing-place." Compare the prayer of

Odysseus to the river, whose mouth he had reached after three days' swimming on the tempestuous sea: "' Hear me, O king, whosoever thou art, unto thee I am come as to one to whom prayer is made. . . nay, pity me, O king, for I avow myself thy suppliant.'? So spake he, and the god stayed his stream, and withheld his waves, and made the water smooth before him" (Odyssey, v. 450). The prayer of the Melanesian is on rather a higher religious level than that of the Homeric hero. The myths of Qat's adventures, however, are very crude, though not so wild as some of the Scandinavian myths about Odin and Loki, while they are less immoral than the adventures of Indra and Zeus. Qat was born in the isle of Vanua Levu ; his mother was either a stone at the time of his birth, or was turned into a stone afterwards, like Niobe. The mother of Apollo, according to A®lian, had the misfortune to be changed into a wolf. Qat had eleven brothers, not

much more reputable than the Osbaldistones in Rob Foy. The youngest brother was “ Tangaro Lologong, the Fool.” His pastime was to make wrong all that Qat made right, and he is sometimes the Ahriman to Qat’s Ormuzd. The creative achievements of Qat must be treated of in the next section. Here it may be mentioned that, like the hero in the Breton mirchen, Qat “ brought the dawn” by introducing birds whose notes proclaimed the coming of morning. Before Qat’s time there had been no night, but he purchased a sufficient allowance of darkness from I Qong, that is, night considered as a person in accordance With the law of savage thought already explained. Night

1 These are collected by Callaway, Zulu Nursery Tales, 1868. Simi- lar Kaffre stories, also closely resembling the popular fictions of Euro- pean races, have been published by Theal. Many other examples are published in the South African Folk- Love Journal, 1879, 1880.

is a person in Greek mythology, and in the fourteenth book of the Jéad we read that Zeus abstained from punishing Sleep ‘because he feared to offend swift Night.” Qat produced dawn, for the first time, by cutting the darknegs with a knife of red obsidian. Afterwards ‘the fowls and birds showed the morning.” On one occasion an evil power (Vui) slew all Qat’s brothers, and hid them in a food-chest. Asin the common “swallowing-myths ” which we have met among Bushmen and Australians, and wil] find among the Greeks, Qat restored his brethren to life, Qat is always accompanied by a powerful supernatural spider named Marawa. He first made Marawa’s acquaint- ance when he was cutting down a tree for a canoe. Every night (as in the common European story about bridge- building and church-building) the work was all undone by Marawa, whom Qat found means to conciliate. In all his future adventures the spider was as serviceable as the cat in Puss-in-Boots or the other grateful animals in European legend. Qat’s great enemy, Qasavara, was dashed against the hard sky, and was turned into stone, like the foes of Perseus. The stone is still shown in Vanua Levu, like the stone which was Zeus in Laconia. Qat, like so many other “culture-heroes,” disappeared mysteriously, and white men arriving in the island have been mistaken for Qat. His departure is sometimes connected with the myth of the deluge. In the New Hebrides, Tagar takes the réle of Qat, and Suge of the bad principle, Loki, Ahriman, Tangaro Loloqong, the Australian

Crow, and so forth. These are the best-known divine myths of the Melanesians, and it is obvious that such gods as exist there are magnified non-natural men or animals with the powers of sorcerers. So far there seems to be no good reason for connecting the gods (if gods they can be called) with the elemental phenomena.

It is “a far cry” from Vanua Levu to Vancouver’s Island, and, ethnologically, the Ahts of the latter region are extremely remote from the Papuans with their mixture of Malay and Polynesian blood. The Ahts, however, differ but little in their mythological beliefs from the races of the Banks Islands or of the New Hebrides. In Sproat’s Scenes from Savage Life (1868) there is a good account of Aht opinions by a settler who had won the confidence of the natives between 1860 and 1868. ‘There is no end to the stories which an old Indian will relate,” says Mr Sproat, when “one quite possesses his confidence.” ‘The first Indian who ever lived” is a divine being, something of a creator, something of a first father, like Unkdlunktlu among the Zulus. His name is Quawteaht. He married a pre-existent bird, the thunder-bird Tootah (we have met him among the Zulus), and by the bird he became the father of Indians. Wispohahp is the Aht Noah, who, with his wife, his two brothers, and their wives, escaped from the deluge in a canoe. Quawteaht is inferior as a deity to the Sun and Moon. He is the Yama of an Aht paradise, or home of the dead, where “everything is beautiful and abundant.” From all that is told of Quawteaht he seems to be an ideal and powerful Aht, imaginatively placed at the beginning of things, and quite capable of inter- marriage with a bird. His creative exploits must be con- sidered later. Quawteaht is the Aht Prometheus Purphoros, or fire-stealer.

Passing down the American continent from the north- west, we find Yehl the chief hero-god and mythical per- Sonage among the Thlinkeets. Like many other heroes or gods, Yehl had a miraculous birth. His mother, & Thlinkeet woman, whose sons had all been slain, met a friendly dolphin, which advised her to swallow a pebble and a little sea-water. The birth of Yehl was the result. In his youth he shot a supernatural crane, and can always fly about in its feathers, like Odin and Loki in Scandi-

navianmyth. He is usually, however, regarded as a raven, and holds the same relation to men and the world as the eagle-hawk Pund-jel does in Australia. His great opponent (for the eternal dualism comes in) is Khanukh, who is a wolf, and the ancestor or totem of the wolf-race of men as Yehl isof the raven. The opposition between the Crow and Eagle-hawk in Australia will be remembered. Both animals or men or gods take part in creation. Yehl is the Prometheus Purphoros of the Thlinkeets, but myths of the fire-stealer would form matter for a separate section. Yehl also stole water, in his bird-shape, exactly as Odin stole “Suttung’s mead” when in the shape of an eagle. Yehl’s powers of metamorphosis and of flying intothe air are the common accomplishments of sorcerers, and he is a rather crude form of first father, “culture-hero,” and creator.?

Among the Cahroc Indians we find the great hero and divine benefactor in the shape of, not a raven, nor an eagle- hawk, nor a mantis insect, nor a spider, but a coyote. Among both Cahrocs and Navajos the Coyote is the Pro- metheus Purphoros, or, as the Aryans of India call him, Matarisvan the fire-stealer. Among the Papagos, on the eastern side of the Gulf of California, the Coyote or Prairie Wolf is the creative hero and chief supernatural being. In Oregon the Coyote is also the “demiurge,” but most of the myths about him refer to his creative exploits, and will be more appropriately treated in the next section.

Moving up the Pacific coast to British Columbia, we find the Musk-rat taking the part played by Vishnu, when in his avatar as a boar he fished up the earth from the waters. Among the Tinnehs a miraculous dog, who, like an enchanted fairy prince, could assume the form of a handsome young man, is the chief divine being of the myths. He too is chiefly a creative or demiurgic being, answering to Purusha in the Rig-Veda, So far the peculiar mark of the wilder American tribe legends is the bestial character of the divine beings, which is also illustrated in Australia and Africa, while the bestial clothing, feathers or fur, drops but slowly off Indra, Zeus and the Egyptian Ammon, and the Scandinavian Odin. All these are more or less anthropomorphic, but retain, as will be seen, nume- rous relics of a theriomorphic condition.

Passing from the lower savage myths, of which space does not permit us to offer a larger selection, we turn to races in the upper strata of barbarism. Among these the Maoris of New Zealand, and the Polynesian people generally, are remarkable for a mythology largely intermixed with early attempts at more philosophical speculation. The Maoris and Mangaians, and other peoples, have had speculators among them not very far removed from the mental condition of the earliest Greek philosophers, Empedocles, Anaximander, and the rest. In fact the pro- cess from the view of nature which we call personalism to the crudest theories of the physicists was apparently begun in New Zealand before the arrival of Europeans. In Maori mythology it is more than usually difficult to keep apart the origin of the world and the origin and nature of the gods. Long traditional hymns give an account of the 'becoming out of nothing" which resulted in the evolution of the gods and the world. In the beginning (as in the Greek myths of Uranus and Gea), Heaven (Rangi, conceived of as a person) was indissolubly united to his wife Earth (Papa), and between them they begat gods which necessarily dwelt in darkness. These gods were some in vegetable, some in animal form ; some traditions place among these gods Tiki the demiurge, who (like Prometheus) made men out of clay. The off- spring of Rangi and Papa (kept in the dark as they were) held a council to determine how they should treat their

: Dasent, Bragi's Telling: Younger Edda, p. 94. " Bancroft, vol. iv.

parents, ''Shall we slay them, or shall we separate them?" In the Hesiodic fable, Cronus separates the heavenly pair by mutilating his oppressive father Uranus. Among the Maoris the god Tutenganahan cut the sinews which united Earth and Heaven, and Tane Mahuta wrenched them apart, and kept them eternally asunder. The new dynasty now had earth to themselves, but Tawhiramatea, the wind, abode aloft with his father. Some of the gods were in the forms of lizards and fishes; some went to the land, some to the water. As among the gods and Asuras of the Vedas, there were many wars in the divine race, and as the incantations of the Indian Brakmanas are derived from those old experiences of the Vedic gods, so are the incantations of the Maoris. The gods of New Zealand, the greater gods

at least, may be called “ departmental ;” each person who is an elementary force is also the god of that force. As Te Heu, a powerful chief, said, there is division of labour among men, and so there is among gods. ‘One made this, another that ; Tane made trees, Ru mountains, Tanga-roa fish, and so forth.” ? The “de- partmental” arrangement prevails among the polytheism of civilized peoples, and is familiar to all from the Greek examples. Leaving the high gods whose functions are so large, while their forms (as of lizard, fish, and tree) are often so mean, we come to Maui, the great divine hero of the supernatural race in Polynesia. Maui in some respects answers to the chief of the Adityas in Vedic mythology ; in others he answers to Qat, Quawteaht, and other savage divine personages. Like the son of the Vedic Aditi,* Maui is a rejected and abortive child of his mother, but after- wards attains to the highest reputation. As Qat brought the hitherto unknown night, so Maui settled the sun and moon in their proper courses. He induced the sun to move orderly by giving him a violent beating. A similar feat was performed by the Sun-trapper, a famous Red Indian chief. These tales belong properly to the depart- ment of solar myths. Maui himself is thought by Mr E. B. Tylor to be a myth of the sun, but the sun could hardly give the sun a drubbing. Maui slew monsters, invented barbs for fish-hooks, frequently adopted the form of various birds, acted as Prometheus Purphoros the fire-stealer, drew a whole island up from the bottom of the deep; he was a great sorcerer and magician. Had Maui succeeded in his attempt to pass through the body of Night (considered as a woman) men would have been immortal. But a little bird which sings at sunset wakened Night, she snapped up Maui, and men die. This has been called a myth of sun- set, but the sun does what Maui failed to do, he passes through the body of night unharmed. The adventure is one of the myths of the origin of death, which are almost universally diffused. Maui, though regarded as a god, is not often addressed in prayer.°

The whole system, as far as it can be called a system, of Maori mythology is obviously based on the savage con- ceptions of the world which have already been explained. The Polynesian system differs mainly in detail ; we have the separation of heaven and earth, the animal-shaped gods, the fire-stealing, the exploits of Maui, and scores of minor myths in Gill’s Myths and Songs of the South Pacific, in the researches of Ellis, of Williams, in Turner’s Polynesia, and in many other accessible works.

The Maoris and other Polynesian peoples are perhaps the best examples of a race which has risen far above

3 Taylor, New Zealand, p. 108.

4 Rig-Veda, x. 72, 1, 8; Muir, Sanskrit Texts, iv. 18, where the fable from the Satapatha-Brahmana is given.

5 The best authorities for the New Zealand myths are the old traditional priestly hymns, collected and translated in the works of

Sir George Grey, in Taylor's New Zealand, in Shortland's Traditions of New Zealand (1857), and in Bastian's Heilige Sage der Polynesier.

arrived at the stage in which great centralized monarchies appear. The Mexican and Peruvian civilizations were far ahead of Maori culture, in so far as they possessed the elements of a much more settled and highly-organized society. Their religion had its fine lucid intervals, but their mythology and ritual were little better than savage ideas, elaborately worked up by the imagination of a cruel and superstitious priesthood. In cruelty the Aztecs sur- passed perhaps all peoples of the Old World, except certain Semitic stocks, and their gods, of course, surpassed almost all other gods in bloodthirstiness. But in grotesque and savage points of faith the ancient Egyptians, the Greeks, and the Vedic Indians ran even the Aztecs pretty close. Bernal Diaz, the old "conquistador," has described the hideous aspect of the idols which Cortes destroyed, "idols in the shape of hideous dragons as big as calves," idols half in the form of men, half of dogs, and serpents which were worshipped as divine. The old contemporary missionary Sahagun has left one of the earliest detailed accounts of the natures and myths of these gods, but, though Sahagun took great pains in collecting facts, his speculations must be accepted with caution. He was convinced (like Caxton in his Destruction of Troy, and like St Augustine) that the heathen gods were only dead men worshipped. Ancestor- worship is a great force in early religion, and the qualities of dead chiefs and sorcerers are freely attributed to gods, but it does not follow that each god was once a real man, as Sahagun supposes. Euemerism cannot be judiciously carried so

far.as this. Of Huitzilopochtli, the famed god, Sahagun says that he was a necromancer, loved ‘“ shape- shifting,” like Odin, metamorphosed himself into animal

forms, was miraculously conceived, and, among animals, –

is confused with the humming-bird, whose feathers adorned his statues.! This humming-bird god should be compared with the Roman Picus (Servius, 189). That the humming- bird (Nuitziton), which was the god’s old shape, should become merely his attendant (like the owl of Pallas, the mouse of Apollo, the goose of Priapus, the cuckoo of Hera), when the god received anthropomorphic form, is an example of a process common in all mythologies. Plutarch observes that the Greeks, though accustomed to the con- ceptions of the animal attendants of their own gods, were amazed when they found animals worshipped as gods by the Egyptians. Miiller? mentions the view that the humming- bird, as the most beautiful flying thing, is a proper symbol of the heaven, and so of the heaven-god, Huitzilopochtli. This vein of symbolism is so easy to work that it must be regarded with distrust. Perhaps it is safer to attribute theriomorphic shapes of gods, not to symbolism (Zeus was a cuckoo), but to survivals from that quality of early thought which draws no line between man and god and beast and bird and fish. If spiders may be great gods, why not the more attractive humming-birds? Like many other gods, Huitzilopochtli slew his foes at his birth, and hence received names analogous to Aewuds and Pd Bos. Mr Tylor (Primitive Culture, ii. 307) calls Huitzilopochtli an “inextricable compound parthenogenetic god.” His sacrament, when paste idols of him were eaten by the com- municants, was at the winter solstice, whence it may, per- haps, be inferred that Huitzilopochtli was not only a war- god but a nature-god,—in both respects anthropomorphic, and in both bearing traces of the time when he was but a humming-bird, as Yehl was a raven (Miiller, op. cit., p. 595). As a humming-bird, Huitzilopochtli led the Aztecs to a new home, as a wolf led the Hirpini, and as a woodpecker led the Sabines. Quetzalcoatl, the Toltec deity, is as much a sparrow (or similar small bird) as Huitzilopochtli is a humming-bird. Acosta says he retained the sparrow’s head

1 See also Bancroft, iii. 288-290, and Acosta, pp. 352-361. * Geschichte der Amerikanischen Urreligionen, p. 592.

a“ _y rn on eur

in hig statue. For the composite character of Quetzalcoatl as a “culture-hero” (a more polished version of Qat), as a “nature-god,” and as a theriomorphic god see Miiller (op, cit., pp. 583-584), Miiller frankly recognizes that not only are animals symbols of deity and its attributes, not only are they companions and messengers of deity (as in the period of anthropomorphic religion), but they have been divine beings in and for themselves during the earlier stages of thought. The Mexican ‘‘departmental” gods answer to those of other polytheisms; there is an Aztec Ceres, an Aztec Lucina, an Aztec Vulcan, an Aztec Flora, an Aztec Venus. The creative myths and sun myths are crude and very early in character.

Egyptian Myths.—On a much larger and more magnifi- cent scale, and on a much more permanent basis, the society of ancient Egyptsomewhatresembled that of ancient Mexico, The divine myths of the two nations had points in common, but there are few topics more obscure than Egyptian mytho- logy. Writers are apt to speak of Egyptian religion as if it were a single phenomenon of which all the aspects could be observed at a given time. In point of fact Egyptian religion (conservative though it was) lasted through perhaps five thousand years, was subject to innumerable influences, historical, ethnological, philosophical, and was variously represented by various schools of priests. We cannot take the Platonic speculations of Iamblichus about the nature and manifestations of Egyptian godhead as evidence for the belief of the peoples who first worshipped the Egyptian gods an innumerable series of ages before Iamblichus and Plutarch. Nor can the esoteric and pantheistic theories of priests (according to which the various beast-gods were symbolic manifestations of the divine essence) be received as an historical account of the origin of the local animal- worships. It has already been shown that the lowest and least intellectual races indulge in local animal-worship, each stock having its parent bird, beast, fish, or even plant, or inanimate object. It has also been shown that these back- ward peoples recognize a non-natural race of men or

animals, or both, as the first fathers, heroes, and, in a sense, gods. Such ideas are consonant with, and may be traced to the confused and nebulous condition of, savage thought. Pre- cisely the same ideas are found at various periods among the ancient Egyptians. If we are to regard the Egyptian myths about the gods in animal shape, and about the non- natural superhuman heroes, and their wars and loves, as esoteric allegories devised by civilized priests, perhaps we should also explain Pund-jel, Qat, Quawteaht, the Mantis god, the Spider creator, the Coyote and Raven gods as priestly inventions, put forth in a civilized age, and retained by Australians, Bushmen, Hottentots, Ahts, Thlinkeets, Papuans, who preserve no other vestiges of high civilization. Or we may take the opposite view, and regard the story of Osiris and his war with Seth (who shut him up in a box and mutilated him) as a dualistic myth, originally on the level of the battle between Gaunab and Tsui-Goab, or between Tagar and Suge. We may regard the local beast- and plant-gods of Egypt as survivals of totems and totem-gods like those of Australia, India, America, Africa, Siberia, and other countries. In this article the latter view is adopted. The beast-gods and dualistic and creative myths of savages are looked on as the natural product of the savage reason and fancy. The same beast-gods and myths in civilized Egypt are looked on as survivals from the rude and early condition of thought to which such conceptions are natural.

_In the most ancient Egyptian records the gods are not pictorially represented, and we have not obtained from these records any descriptions of adoration and sacrifice. There is a prayer to the Sky on the coffin of the king of Dynasty IV., known as Mycerinus to the Greeks. The

wy PreoLocyY king describes himself as the child of Sky and Earth. He

also somewhat obscurely identifies himself with Osiris.

We thus find Osiris very near the beginning of what is This being is rather a culture-hero, a member of a non-natural race of men like

known about Egyptian religion.

Qat or Manabozho, than a god. His myth, to be after- wards narrated, is found pictorially represented in a tomb and in the late temple of Phile, is

frequently alluded to +n the litanies of the dead about 1400 B.c., is indicated with reverent awe by Herodotus, and after the Christian era +s described at full length by Plutarch. Whether the same myth was current in the far more distant days of Mycerinus, it is, of course, impossible to say with dogmatic certainty. The religious history of Egypt, from perhaps Dynasty X. to Dynasty XX., is interrupted by an invasion of Semitic conquerors and Semitic ideas. Prior to- that invasion the gods, when mentioned in monuments, are always repre- sented by animals, and these animals are the object of strictly local worship. The name of each god is spelled in hieroglyphs beside the beast or bird. The jackal stands for Anup, the hawk for Har, the frog for Hekt, the baboon for Tahuti, and Ptah, Asiri, Hesi, Nebhat, Hat-hor, Neit, Khnum, and Amun-hor are all written out phonetically, but never represented in pictures. Different cities had their different beast-gods. Pasht, the cat, was the god of Bubastis; Apis, the bull, of Memphis; Hapi, the wolf, of Sioot ; Ba, the goat, of Mendes. The evidence of Hero- dotus, Plutarch, and the other writers shows that the Egyptians of each district refused to eat the flesh of the animal they held sacred. So far the identity of custom with savage totemism isabsolute. Of all the explanations, then, of Egyptian animal-worship, that which regards the practice as a survival of totemism and of savagery seems the most satisfactory. So far Egyptian religion only re- presented her gods in theriomorphic shape. Beasts also appeared in the royal genealogies, as if the early Egyptians had filled up the measure of totemism by regarding them- selves as actually descended from animals.

With one or two exceptions, “the first (semi-anthropo- morphic) figures of gods known in the civilized parts of Egypt are on the granite obelisk of Bezig in the Fayyum, erected by Usertesen I. of Dynasty XII., and here we find the forms all full-blown at once. The first group of deities belongs to a period and a district in which Semitic influences had undoubtedly begun to work.”} From this period the mixed and monstrous figures, semi-theriomorphic, semi-anthropomorphic, hawk-headed and ram-headed and jackal-headed gods become common. ‘This may be attri- buted to Semitic influence, or we may suppose that the process of anthropomorphizing theriomorphic gods was naturally developing itself; for Mexico has shown us and Greece can show us abundant examples of these mixed figures, in which the anthropomorphic god retains traces of his theriomorphic past.

The heretical worship of the solar disk interrupted the course of Egyptian religion under some reforming kings, but the great and glorious Ramesside Dynasty (XIX.) restored “Orus and Isis and the dog Anubis” with the rest of the semi-theriomorphic deities. These survived even their defeat by the splendid human gods of Rome, and only “fled from the folding star of Bethlehem.”

Though Egypt was rich in gods, her literature is not fertile inmyths. The religious compositions which have sur- vived are, as a rule, hymns and litanies, the funereal service, the “Book of the Dead.” In these works the myths are taken for granted, are alluded to in the course of addresses to the divine beings, but, naturally, are not told in full. As in the case of the Vedas, hymns are poor sources for the

: 1 This extract, with much of what goes before, is from a paper read © the Royal Literary Society by Mr Flinders Petrie.

study of mythology, just as the hymns of the church would throw little light on the incidents of the gospel story or of the Old Testament. The “sacred legends” which the priests or temple servants freely communicated to Hero- dotus are lost through the pious reserve of the traveller. Herodotus constantly alludes to the most famous Egyptian myth, that of Osiris, and he recognizes the analogies between the Osirian myth and mysteries and those of Dionysus. But we have to turn to the very late authority of Plutarch (De Iside et Osiride) for an account, confessedly incomplete and expurgated, of what mythology had to tell about the great Egyptian “culture-hero,” “demon,” and god. Osiris, Horus, Typhon (Seth), Isis, and Nephthys were the children of Seb (whom the Greeks identified with Cronus) ; the myths of their birth were peculiarly savage and obscene. Osiris introduced civilization into Egypt, and then wandered over the world, making men acquainted with agriculture and the arts, as Pund-jel in his humbler way did in Australia. On his return Typhon laid a plot for him. He had a beautiful carved chest made which exactly fitted Osiris, and at an entertainment offered to give it to any one who could lie down in it. As soon as Osiris tried, Typhon had the box nailed up, and threw it into the Tanaite branch of the Nile. Isis wandered, mourn- ing, in search of the body, as Demeter

sought Persephone, and perhaps in Plutarch's late version some incidents may be borrowed from the Eleusinian legend. At length she found the chest, which in her absence was again discovered by Typhon. He mangled the body of Osiris (as so many gods of all races were mangled) and tossed the fragments about. Wherever Isis found a portion of Osiris she buried

it; hence Egypt was as rich in graves of Osiris as Nama-

qualand in graves of Heitsi Eibib. The phallus alone she did not find, but she consecrated a model thereof ; hence (says the myth) came the phallus-worship of Egypt. Afterwards Osiris returned from the shades, and (in the form of a wolf) urged his son Horus to revenge him on Typhon. 'The gods fought in animal shape (Birch, in Wilkinson, iii. 144). Plutarch purposely omits as "too

blasphemous" the legend of the mangling of Horus.

Though the graves of these non-natural beings are shown, the priests (De Is. et Os., xxi.) also show the stars into which they were metamorphosed, as the Eskimo and Aus- tralians and Aryans of India and Greeks have recognized in the constellations their ancient heroes. Plutarch re- marked the fact that the Greek myths of Cronus, of Dionysus, of Apollo and the Python, and of Demeter, "all the things that are shrouded in mystic ceremonies and are presented in rites," "do not fall short in absurdity of the legends about Osiris and Typhon." Plutarch natur- ally presumed that the myths which seem absurd shrouded some great moral or physical mystery. But we apply no such explanation to similar savage legends, and our theory is that the Osirian myth is only one of these retained to the time of Plutarch by the religious conservatism of a race which, to the time of Plutarch, preserved in full vigour most of the practices of totemism. As a slight confirma- tion of the possibility of this theory we may mention that Greek mysteries retained two of the features of savage mysteries. The first was the rite of daubing the initiated with clay.2 This custom prevails in African mysteries, in Guiana, among Australians, Papuans, and Andaman Islanders. The other custom is the use of the turndun, as the Australians call a little fish-shaped piece of wood tied to a string, and waved so as to produce a loud booming and whirring noise and keep away the profane, especially

women. It is employed in New Mexico, South Africa, New Zealand, and Australia. This instrument, the Kavos,

ee ee ee 2 Demosthenes, De Corona, p. 318, Kat Kadalpwr Tovs TeNoupevoUS kal droudrrwv T@ WAG Kat Tols miTVpors.

was also used in Greek mysteries.! Neither the use of the x@vos nor of the clay can very well be regarded as a civilized practice retained by savages. The hypothesis that the rites and the stories are savage inventions surviving into civilized religion seems better to meet the difficulty. That the Osirian myth (much as it was elaborated and allego- rized) originated in the same sort of fancy as the Tacullie story of the dismembered beaver out of whose body things were made is a conclusion not devoid of plausibility. Ty-phon's later career, "committing dreadful crimes out of envy and spite, and throwing all things into confusion," was parallel to the proceedings of most of the divine beings who put everything wrong, in opposition to the being who makes everything right. This is perhaps an early " dualistic" myth.

Among other mythic Egyptian figures we have Ra, who once destroyed men in his wrath with circumstances sug- gestive of the deluge ; Khnum, a demiurge, is represented at Phile as making man out of clay on a potter's wheel. Here the wheel is added to the Maori conception of the making of man. Khnum is said to have reconstructed the limbs of the dismembered Osiris. Ptah is the Egyptian Hephestus ; he is represented as a dwarf; men are said to have come out of his eye, gods out of his mouth,—a story like that of Purusha in the Aig-Veda. As creator of man, Ptah isa frog. Bubastis became a cat to avoid the wrath of Typhon. Ra, the sun, fought the big serpent Apap, a8 Indra fought Vrittra. Seb is a goose, called "the great cackler ;" he laid the creative egg."

Divine Myths of the Aryans of India. Indra.—The gods of the Vedas and Brahmanas (the ancient hymns and canonized ritual-books of Aryan India) are, on the whole, of the usual polytheistic type. More than many other gods they retain in their titles and attributes the character of elemental phenomena personified. That personification is, as a rule, anthropomorphic, but traces of theriomorphic personification are still very apparent. The ideas

which may be gathered about the gods from the hymns are (as is usual in heathen religions) without consistency. There is no strict orthodoxy. As each bard of each bardic family celebrates his favourite god he is apt to make him for the moment the pre-eminent deity of all. This way of thinking about the gods leads naturally in the direction of a pantheistic monotheism in which each divine being may be regarded as a manifestation of the one divine essence. No doubt this point of view was attained in centuries extremely remote by sages of the civilized Vedic world. It is easy, however, to detect certain peculiar characteristics of each god. As among races much less advanced in civilization than the Vedic Indians, each of the greater powers has his own separate department, how- ever much his worshippers may be inclined to regard him as an absolute premier with undisputed latitude of personal government. Thus Indra is mainly concerned with thunder and other atmospheric phenomena; but Vayu is the wind, the Maruts are wind-gods, Agni is fire or the god of fire, and so connected with lightning. Powerful as Indra is in the celestial world, Mitra and Varuna preside over night and day. Ushas is the dawn, and Tvashtri is the mechanic among the gods, corresponding to the Egyptian Ptah and the Greek Hephestus. Though lofty moral qualities and deep concern about the conduct of men are attributed

l Kavos évAdprov of c&jmrra 7d oraprlov, Kat ev rais rederais ébo- vetro ta poem. Quoted by Lobeck, Aglaophamus, i. 700, from Bas- tius ad Gregor., 241, and from other sources; cf. Arnobius, v. c. 19, where the word turbines is the Latin term.

- Wilkinson, iii. 62, see note by Dr. Birch. The authorities on Egyptian religion are given under Eaypr (vol. vii. pp. 714-719). Un- fortunately Egyptologists have rarely a wide knowledge of the myths a ie lower races, while anthropologists are seldom or never Egypto- ogists.

to the gods in the Vedic hymns, yet the hymns contajn traces (and these are amplified in the ritual books) of a divine chronique scandaleuse. In this chronique the gods, like other gods, are adventurous warriors, adulterers, in- cestuous, homicidal, given to animal transformations, cowardly, and in fact charged with all human vices, and credited with magical powers. It

would be difficult to speak too highly of the ethical nobility of many Vedic hymns. The “hunger and thirst after righteousness” of the sacred poet recalls the noblest aspirations and regrets of the Hebrew psalmist. But this aspect of the Vedic deities is essentially matter for the science of religion rather than of mythology, which is concerned with the stories told about the gods. Religion is always forgetting, or explaining away, or apologizing for these stories. Now the Vedic deities, so imposing when regarded as vast natural forces (as such forces seem to us), so benignant when appealed to as forgivers of sins, have also their mythological aspect. In this aspect they are natural phenomena still, but phenomena as originally conceived of by the personifying imagination of the savage, and eredited, like the gods of the Maori or the Australian, with all manner of freaks, adventures, and disguises. The Veda, it is true, does not usually dilate much on the worst of these adventures, The Veda contains devotional hymns; we can no more expect much narrative here than in the psalms of David. Again, the religious sentiment of the Veda is half-consciously hostile to the stories. As M. Barth says, ‘‘ Le sentiment religieux a écarté la plupart de ces mythes, mais il ne lesa écartés tous.” The Brahmanas, on the other hand, later compilations, canonized books for the direction of ritual and sacrifice, are rich in senseless and irrational myths. Sometimes these myths are prob- ably later than the Veda, mere explanations of ritual incidents devised by the priests. Sometimes a myth prob- ably older than the Vedas, and maintained in popular tradition, is reported in the Brakmanas. The gods in the Veda are by no means always regarded as equal in supre- macy. There were great and small, young and old gods (#.-V., i. 27, 13). Elsewhere this is flatly contradicted : ‘“‘None of you, oh gods, is small or young, ye are all great” (&.-V., viii. 30, 1). As to the immortality and the origin of the gods, there is no orthodox opinion in the Veda. Many of the myths of the origin of the divine beings are on a level with the Maori theory that Heaven and Earth begat them in the ordinary way. Again, the gods were represented as the children of Aditi. This may be taken either in a refined sense, as if Aditi were the “infinite” region from which the solar deities rise,4 or we may hold with the Taitterya-Brahmana® that Aditi was a female who, being desirous of offspring, cooked a brakmandana offering for the Sadhyas. Various other fathers and mothers of the gods are mentioned. Some gods, particu- larly Indra, are said to have won divine rank by “austere fervour” and asceticism, which is one of the processes that makes gods out of

mortals even now in India.6 The gods are not always even credited with inherent immortality. Like men, they were subject to death, which they over- came in various ways. Like most gods, they had struggles for pre-eminence with Titanic opponents, the Asuras, who partly answer to the Greek Titans and the Hawaiian foes of the divine race, or to the Scandinavian giants and the enemies who beset the savage creative beings. Early man, living in a state of endless warfare, naturally believes that

3 For examples of the lofty morality sometimes attributed to the gods, see Max Miller, Hibbert Lectures, p. 284; Rig-Veda, ii. 28; iv. 12, 4; viii. 93 sg.; Muir, Sanskrit Texts, v. 218.

4 Miiller, Hibbert Lectures, p. 230.

5 Muir, 8, 7… ogee 7.

® See Sir A. Lyal, Asiatic Studies, For Vedic examples, see R.-V., x. 167, 15 x. 159, 4; “Muir, 8. 7, v. 15.

My TaHOLOGY

his gods also have their battles. The chief foes of Indra are Vrittra and Ahi, serpents which swallow up the waters, pre- cisely as frogs do in Australian and Californian and An- It has already been shown that such

daman myths. creatures, thunder-birds, snakes, dragons, and what not, people the sky in the imagination of Zulus, Red Men, Chinese, Peruvians, and all the races who believe that beasts hunt the sun and moon and cause eclipses.? Though hostile to Asuras, Indra was once entangled in an intrigue with a woman of that race, according to the Atharva-Veda (Muir, S. T., v. 82). The gods were less numerous than the Asuras, but by a magical stratagem turned some bricks into gods (like a creation of new peers to carry a vote),—so says the Black Yajur-Veda.? Turning to separate gods, Indra first claims attention, for stories of Heaven and Earth are better studied under the heading of myths of the origin of things. Indra has this zoomorphic feature in common with Heitsi Eibib, the Namaqua god,’ that his mother, or one of his mothers, was acow (f.-V., iv. 18,1). This statement may be a mere way of speaking in the Veda, but it is a rather Hottentot

way.* Indra is also referred to as a ram in the Veda, and in one myth this ram could fly, like the Greek ram of the fleece of gold. He was certainly so far connected with sheep that he and sheep and the Kshatriya caste sprang from the breast and arms of Prajapati, a kind of creative being. Indra was a great drinker of soma juice ; a drinking-song by Indra, much bemused with soma, is in #2-V., x 10. On one occasion Indra got at the soma by assuming the shape of a quail. In the 7'aitt. Samh. (ii, 5g i. 1) Indira is said to "have been guilty of that most hideous crime, the killing of a Bréhmana."° Once, though uninvited, Indra drank some soma that had been prepared for another being. 'The soma disagreed with Indra; part of it which was not drunk up became Vrittra the serpent, Indra's enemy. Indra cut him in two, and made the moon out of half of his body. This serpent was a uni- versal devourer of everything and everybody, like Kwai Hemm, the all-devourer in Bushman mythology. If this invention is a late priestly one, the person who introduced it into the Satapatha-Brahmana must have reverted to the intellectual condition of Bushmen. In the fight with Vrittra, Indra lost his energy, which fell to the earth and produced plants and shrubs. In the same way plants, among the Iroquois, were made of pieces knocked off Chokanipok in his fight with Manabozho. Vines, in particular, are the entrails of Chokanipok. In Egypt, Wine was the blood of the enemies of the gods. The Aryan versions of this sensible legend will be found in Satapatha-Brahmana® 'The civilized mind soon wearies of this stuff, and perhaps enough has been said to prove that, in the traditions of Vedic devotees, Indra was not a god without an irrational element in his myth. Our argument is, that all these legends about Indra, of which only a sample is given, have no necessary connexion with the worship of a pure nature-god as a nature-god would now be constructed by men. The legends are survivals of a time in which natural phenomena were regarded, not as we regard them, but as persons, and savage persons, and became the centres of legends in the savage manner. Space does not permit us to recount the equally puerile and barbarous legends of Vishnu, Agni, the loves of Vivasvat in the form of a horse, the adventures of Soma, : See Tylor, Primitive Culture, i. 288, 329, 356. The chief authority for the constant strife between gods and Asuras is the Satapatha-Brahmana, of which one volume is translated in Saered Books of the East (vol. xii.).

3 Hahn, Tsuni-Goam, the Supreme Being of the Hottentots, p. 68.

4 z : : z og Muir, S. 7., v. 16, 17, for Indra’s peculiar achievements with a cow.

>» Sacred Books of the East, xii. 1, 48.

6 J,, xii. 176, 177.

nor the Vedic amours (paralleled in several savage mytho- logies) of Pururavas and Urvasi.’

Divine Myths of Greece.—If any ancient people was thoroughly civilized the Greeks were that people. Yet in the mythology and religion of Greece we find abundant survivals of savage manners and of savage myths. As to the religion, it is enough to point to the traces of human sacrifice and to the worship of rude fetich stones. The human sacrifices at Salamis in Cyprus and at Alos in Achaia Phthiotis may be said to have continued almost to the conversion of the empire (Grote, i. 125, ed. 1869). Pausanias seems to have found human sacrifices to Zeus still lingering in Arcadia in the 2d century of our era.

| «On this altar on the Lycaan hill they sacrifice to Zeus

ina manner that may not be spoken, and little liking had I to pry far into that sacrifice. But let it be as it is, and as it hath been from the beginning.” Now “from the beginning ” the sacrifice, according to Arcadian tradition, had been a human sacrifice. In other places there were manifest commutations of human sacrifice, as at the altar of Artemis the Implacable at Patree, where Pausanias saw the wild beasts being driven into the flames.® Many other exam- ples of human sacrifice are mentioned in Greek legend. Pausanias gives full and interesting details of the worship of rude stones, the oldest worship, he says, among the Greeks. Almost every temple had its fetich stone on a level with the pumice stone, which is the Poseidon of the Mangaians.® The Argives had a large stone called Zeus Cappotas. The oldest idol of the Thespians was a rude stone, Another has been found beneath the pedestal of Apollo in Delos. In Achxan Phare were thirty squared stones, each named by the name of a god. Among mon- strous

images of the gods which Pausanias, who saw them, regarded as the oldest idols, were the three-headed Artemis, each head being that of an animal, the Demeter with the

horse's head, the Artentis with the fish's tail, the Zeus with

three eyes, the ithyphallic Hermes, represented after the fashion of the Priapic figures in paintings on the walls of caves among the Bushmen. We also hear of the bull and the bull-footed Dionysus. Phallic and other obscene emblems were carried abroad in processions in Attica both

by women andmen. The Greek custom of daubing people all over with clay in the mysteries results as we saw in the mysteries of Negroes, Australians, and American races, while the Australian turndun was exhibited among the toys

at the mysteries of Dionysus. The survivals of rites, objects

of worship, and sacrifices like these prove that religious con-

servatism in Greece retained much of savage practice, and the Greek mythology is not less full of ideas familiar to the lowest races. 'The authorities for Greek mythology are numerous and various in character. The oldest sources as literary documents are the Homeric and Hesiodic poems. In the Jliad and Odyssey the gods and goddesses are beautiful, powerful, and immortal anthropomorphie beings. The name of Zeus (Skr. Dyaus) clearly indicates his con- nexion with the sky. But in Homer he has long ceased to be merely the sky conceived of as a person ; he is the a eS SS i ee

7 On the whole subject, Dr Muir's Ancient Sanskrit Texts, with translations, Ludwig's translation of the Rig- Veda, the version of the Satapatha-Brahmana already referred to, and the translation of the Aitareya-Brahmana by Haug, are the sources most open to English readers. Mr Max Miiller's translation of the Rig-V eda, unfortunately only deals with the hymns to the Maruts. The Indian epics and the Puranas belong to a much later date, and are full of deities either unknown to or undeveloped in the &ig- Veda and the Brahmanas. It is much to be regretted that the Atharva- Veda, which contains the magical formule and incantations of the Vedic Indians is still

untranslated, though, by the very nature of its theme, it must contain matter of extreme antiquity and interest.

8 Pansanias, iii, 16 3 vii. 18. Euman sacrifice to Dionysus, ance, vii. 21; Plutarch, De Ts. et Os.. 853 Porphyry, De AMiR%, Shia BE

9 Gill, Afyths and Songs from the South Pacific, p. 60.

chief personage in a society of immortals, organized on the type of contemporary human society. ‘There is a great deal of human nature” in his wife Hera (Skr. Svar, Heaven). It is to be remembered that philologists differ widely as to the origin and meaning of the names of almost all the Greek gods. Thus the light which the science of language throws on Greek myths is extremely uncertain. Hera is explained as “the feminine side of heaven” by some authorities. The quarrels of Hera with Zeus (which are a humorous anthropomorphic study in Homer) are represented as a way of speaking about winter and rough weather. The other chief Homeric deities are Apollo and Artemis, children of Zeus by Leto, a mortal mother raised to divinity. Apollo is clearly connected in some way with light, as his name PofGos seems to indicate, and with purity.2, Homer knows the legend that a giant sought to lay violent hands on Leto (Od., xi. 580). Smintheus, one of Apollo’s titles in Homer, is connected with the field-mouse (cpivOos), one of his many sacred animals. His names, Atxws, Avknyevis, were connected by antiquity with the wolf, by most modern writers with the light. According to some legends Leto had been a were-wolf.? The whole subject of the relations of Greek gods to animals is best set forth in the words of Plutarch (De Js. et Os., lxxi.), where he says that the Egyptians worship actual beasts, ‘“‘whereas the Greeks both speak and believe correctly, saying that the dove is the sacred animal of Aphrodite, the raven of Apollo, the dog of Artemis,” and so forth. Each Greek god had a small menagerie of sacred animals, and it may be conjectured that these animals were originally the totems of various stocks, subsumed into the worship of the anthropomorphic god. Apollo, in any case, is the young and beautiful archer-god of Homer ; Artemis, his sister, is the goddess of archery, who

takes her pastime in the chase. She holds no considerable place in the Iliad; in the Odyssey, Nausicaa is compared to her, as to the pure and lovely lady of maidenhood. Her name is commonly connected with dprepajs,—pure, unpol- luted. Her close relations (un-Homeric) with the bear and bear-worship have suggested a derivation from dpxtos—Apkrenis. In Homer her "gentle shafts" deal sudden and painless death; she is a beautiful Azrael. A much more important daughter of Zeus in Homer is Athene, the "grey-eyed" or (as some take yAavkdmus, rather improbably) the "owl-headed" goddess. Her birth from the head of Zeus is not explicitly alluded to in Homer. In Homer, Athene is a warlike maiden, the patron-goddess of wisdom and manly resolution. In the twenty-second book of the Odyssey she assumes the form of a swallow, and she can put on the shape of any man. She bears the aegis, the awful shield of Zeus, Another Homeric child of Zeus, or, according to Hesiod (This 92), of Hera alone, is Hepheestus, the lame craftsman and arti- ficer. In the Jtad® will be found some of the crudest Homeric myths. Zeus or Hera throws Hephestus or Ate out of heaven, as in the Iroquois myth of the tossing from heaven of Ataentsic. There is, as usual, no agreement as to the etymology of the name of Hephestus. Preller

1 Cf, Preller, Griechische Mythologie, i. 128, note 1, for this and other philological conjectures.

® The derivation of 'Awé\wy remains obscure. The derivation of Leto from \aetv, and the conclusion that her name means 'the con- cealer," that is, the night, whence the sun is born, is disputed by Cur- tius (Preller, i, 190, 191, note 4), but appears to be accepted by Mr Max Miiller (Selected Essays, i. 386), Latmos being derived from the same root as Leto, Latona, the night.

® Aristotle, H. An., 6; Alian, NV. A., 4, 4.

4 Her name, as usual, is variously interpreted by various etymolo- gists. Some connect 'AO#vn with aif, as in alOyjs. Mr Max Miiller connects it with ahana (Skr., dawn), but it is not universally admitted

that ahana does mean "dawn," nor that the derivation is correct, 5 xiv. 257; xviii, 395; xix. 91, 132,

inclines to a connexion with #$@a:, to kindle fire, but Mr Max Miiller differs from this theory. About the close relations of Hephestus with fire there can be no doubt. He is a rough, kind, good-humoured being in the tad. In the Odyssey he is naturally annoyed by the adultery of his wife, Aphrodite, with Ares. Ares is a god with whom Homer has no sympathy. He is a son of Hera, and detested by Zeus (Iliad, vy. 890). He is cowardly in war, and on one occasion was shut up for years in a huge brazen pot. This adventure was even more ignominious than that of Poseidon and Apollo when they were compelled to serve Laomedon for hire.

.The payment he refused, and threatened to “cut off

their ears with the sword” (diad, xxi. 455), Poseidon is to the sea what Zeus is to the air, and Hades to the underworld in Homer.® His own view of his social position may be stated in his own words (Iliad, xv. 183, 211).

‘Three brethren are we, and sons of Cronus, sons whom Rhea bare, even Zeus and myself, and Hades is the third, the ruler of the people in the underworld. And in three lots were all things divided, and each drew a lot of his own,’ and to me fell the hoary sea, and Hades drew the mirky darkness, and Zeus the wide heaven in clear air and clouds, but the earth and high Olympus are yet common to all.”

Zeus, however, is, as Poseidon admits, the elder-born, and therefore the revered head of the family. Thus Homer adopts the system of primogeniture, while Hesiod is all for the opposite and probably earlier custom of “jlingsten-recht,” and makes supreme Zeus the youngest of the sons of Cronus. Among the other gods Dionysus is but slightly alluded to in Homer as the son of Zeus and Semele, as the object of persecution, and as connected with the myth of Ariadne. The name of Hermes is derived from various sources, as from dépydv and spy}, or, by Mr Max Miiller, the name is connected with Sarameya (Sky). If he had originally an elemental character, it is now diffi- cult to distinguish, though interpreters connect him with the wind. He is the messenger of the gods, the bringer of good luck,

and the conductor of men's souls down the dark ways of death. In addition to the great Homeric gods, the poet knows a whole "Olympian consistory" of deities, nymphs, nerecids, sea-gods and goddesses, river- gods, Iris the rainbow goddess, Sleep, Demeter who lay with a mortal, Aphrodite the goddess of love, wife of Hephestus and leman of Ares, and so forth. As to the origin of the gods, Homer is not very explicit. He is acquainted with the existence of an older dynasty now deposed, the dynasty of Cronus and the Titans. In the Ztad (viii. 478) Zeus says to Hera, "For thine anger reck I not, not even though thou go to the nether- most bounds of earth and sea, where sit Iapetus and Cronus . . . and deep Tartarus is round about them." "The gods below that are with Cronus" are mentioned (ii., xiv. 274; xv. 225). Rumours of old divine wars echo in the iad, as (i, 400) where it is said that when the other immortals revolted against and bound Zeus, Thetis brought to his aid AZgzon of the hundred arms. The streams of Oceanus (J/., xiv. 246) are spoken of as the source of all the gods, and in the same book (290) "Oceanus and mother Tethys" are regarded as the parents of the immortals. Zeus is usually called Cronion and Cronides, which Homer certainly understood to mean "son of Cronus," yet it is expressly stated that Zeus " imprisoned Cronus beneath the earth and the unvintaged sea." The whole subject is only alluded to incidentally. On the whole it may be said that the Homeric deities are power- ful anthropomorphic beings, departmental rulers, united by the ordinary social and family ties of the Homeric

® The root of his name is sought in such words as wéros and rorapss. " We learn from the Odyssey (xiv. 209) that this was the custom of sons on the death of their father.

mY HO LOG Y

age, capable of pain and pleasure, living on heavenly food, but refreshed by the sacrifices of men (Od., v. 100, 102),

able to assume all forms at will, and to intermarry and Their

ast has been stormy, and their ruler has attained power after defeating and mediatizing a more ancient dynasty of

propagate the species with mortal men and women.

his own kindred.

From Hesiod we receive a much more elaborate, prob- ably a more ancient, certainly a more barbarous, story of In the beginning the gods (here used in a wide sense to denote an early non-natural race) were begotten by Earth and Heaven, conceived of as

the gods and their origin.

beings with human parts and passions (Hesiod, Theog., 45), This idea recurs in Maori, Vedic, and Chinese mytho- logy. Heaven and Earth, united in an endless embrace, produced children which never saw the light.

pair had to be sundered.! Hesiod enumerates the children whom Earth bore “when couched in love with Heaven.” They are Ocean, Cceus, Crius, Hyperion, Iapetus, Theia, Rhea, Themis, Mnemosyne, Phoebe, Tethys, and the youngest, Cronus, “and he hated his glorious father.” Others of this early race were the Cyclopes, Bronte, Sterope, and Arge, and three children of enormous strength, Cottus, Briareus (Aigeon), and Gyes, each with one hundred hands and fifty heads. Uranus detested his off- spring, and hid them in crannies of Earth. Earth excited Cronus to attack the father, whom he castrated with a sickle. From the blood of Cronus (this feature is common in Red Indian and Egyptian myths) were born furies, giants, ash-nymphs, and Aphrodite. A number of monsters, as Echidna, Geryon, and the hound of hell, were born of the loves of various elemental powers. The chief stock of the divine species was continued by the marriage of Rhea (probably another form of the Earth) with Cronus. Their children were Hestia, Demeter, Hera, Hades, and Poseidon. All these Cronus swallowed ; and this ‘‘swallow- myth” occurs in Australia, among the Bushmen, in Guiana, in Brittany (where Gargantua did the swallow trick), and elsewhere. At last Rhea bore Zeus, and gave Cronus a stone in swaddling bands, which he disposed of in the usual way. Zeus grew up, administered an emetic to Cronus (some say Metis did this), and had the satisfaction of seeing all his brothers and sisters disgorged alive. The stone came forth first, and Pausanias saw it at Delphi (Paus., x. 24). Then followed the wars between Zeus and the gods he had rescued from the maw of Cronus against the gods of the elder branch, the children of Uranus and Gza,—Heaven and Earth. The victory remained with the younger branch, the immortal

Olympians of Homer. The system of Hesiod is a medley of later physical specu- lation and of poetic allegory, with matter which we, at least, regard as savage survivals, like the mutilation of Heaven and the swallow-myth.? _Jn Homer and in Hesiod myths enter the region of literature, and become, as it were, national. But it is probable that the local myths of various cities and tem- ples, of the “sacred chapters” which were told by the priests to travellers and in the mysteries to the initiated, were older in form than the epic and national myths. Of these “sacred chapters” we have fragments and hints in

See Tylor, Prim. Cult., i. 826.

- Bleek, Bushman Folk-Lore, pp. 6-8. Mr Max Miiller suggests another theory (Selected Essays, i. 460): ‘‘Kpévos did not exist till yng after Zevs in Greece.” The name Kpoviwy, or Kpovléns, looks

e€ » patronymic. Mr Miiller, however, thinks it originally meant only “connected with time, existing through all time.” Very much later the name was mistaken for a genuine patronymic, and “* Zeus the ancient of days” became “ Zeus the son of Cronus.” Having thus bel a Cronus, the Greeks—and ‘‘the misunderstanding could have

appened in Greece only ’’—needed a myth of Cronus. They there-

In New Zealand, Chinese, Vedic, Indian, and Greek myths the

Herodotus, Pausanias, in the mythographers, like Apollo- dorus, in the tragic poets, and in the ancient scholia or notes on the classics. From these sources come almost all the more inhuman, bestial, and discreditable myths of the gods. In these we more distinctly perceive the savage element. The gods assume animal forms: Cronus becomes a horse, Rhea a mare; Zeus begets separate families of men in the shape of a bull, an ant, a serpent, a swan. His mistress from whom the Arcadians claim descent becomes a she-bear. It is usual with mythologists to say that Zeus is the “‘all-father,” and that his amours are only a poetic way of stating that he is the parent of men. But why does he assume so many animal shapes? Why did various royal

houses claim descent from the ant, the swan, the she-bear, the serpent, the horse, and so forth? We have already seen that this is the ordinary pedigree of savage stocks in Asia, Africa, Australia, and America, while animals appear among Irish tribes, and in Egyptian and ancient English genealogies? It is a plausible hypo- thesis that stocks which once claimed descent from animals, sans phrase, afterwards regarded the animals as avatars of Zeus. In the same way “the Minas, a non-Aryan tribe of Rajputana, used to worship the pig ; when the Brahmans got a turn at them, the pig became an avatar of Vishnu ” (Lyal, Asiatic Studies). The tales of divine cannibalism to which Pindar refers with awe, the mutilation of Dionysus Zagreus, the unspeakable abominations of Dionysus, the loves of Hera in the shape of a cuckoo, the divine powers of metamorphosing men and women into beasts and stars,—these tales come to us as echoes of the period of savage thought. Further evidence on this point will be given below in a classification of the principal mythic legends. The general conclusion is that many of the Greek deities were originally elemental, the elements being personified in accordance with the laws of savage imaginations. But we cannot explain each detail in the legends as a myth of this or that natural pheno- menon or process as understood by ourselves. Various stages of late and early fancy have contributed to the legends. Zeus is the sky, but not our sky ; he had origin- ally a personal character, and that a savage or barbarous character. He probably attracted into his legend stories that did not originally belong to him. He became anthro- pomorphic, and his myth was handled by local priests, by family bards, by national poets, by early philosophers. His legend is a complex embroidery on a very ancient tissue. The other divine myths are equally complex. Scandinavian Divine Myths—The Scandinavian myths of the gods are numerous and interesting, but the evidence on which they have reached us demands criticism for which we lack space. That there are in the Eddas and Sagas early ideas and later ideas tinged by Christian legend seems indubitable, but philological and historical learning has by no means settled the questions of relative purity and antiquity in the myths. The Hddic songs, according to Mr Powell, one of the editors of the Corpus Poeticum Sep- tentrionale (the best work on the subject), “cannot date earlier” in their present form “than the 9th century,” and may be vaguely placed between 800-1100 a.p. The collector of the Edda probably had the old poems recited to him in the 13th century, and where there was a break ee ee

fore invented or adapted the “ swallow-myth ” so familiar to Bushmen and Australians. This singular reversion to savagery itself needs some explanation. But the hypothesis that Cronus is a late derivation from Kpovidns and Kpovlwy is by no means universally accepted. Others derive Kpévos from kpalyw, and connect it with xpdvea, a kind of har- vest home festival. Schwartz (Prihistorisch-anthropologische Studien) readily proves Cronus to be the storm, swallowing the clouds. Perhaps we may say of Schwartz’s view, as he says of Preller s— ‘das ist Gedankenspiel, aber ninmermehr Mythologie.” 3 Elton, Origins of English Mistory, 298-301.

in the memory of the reciters the lacuna was filled up in prose. ‘As one goes through the poems, one is ever and anon face to face with a myth of the most childish and barbaric type,” which “carries one back to pre- Aryan days.” Side by side with these old stories come fragments of a different stratum of thought, Christian ideas, the belief in a supreme God, the notion of Dooms- day. The Scandinavian cosmogonic myth (with its par- allels among races savage and civilized) is given elsewhere. The most important god is Odin, the son of Bestla and Bor, the husband of Frigg, the father of Balder and many other sons, the head of the A‘sir stock of gods. Odin’s name is connected with that of Wuotan, and referred to the Old High German verb watan wuot=meare, cum empetu ferrt (Grimm, Teut. Myth., Engl. transl., i. 131). Odin would thus (if we admit the etymology) be the swift goer, the “ ganger,” and it seenis superfluous to make him (with Grimm) “the all-powerful, all-permeating being,” a very abstract and scarcely an early conception. Odin’s brethren (in Gylji’s Mocking) are Vile and Ve, who with him slew Ymir the giant, and made all things out of the fragments of his body. They also made man out of two stocks. In the Hava-Mal Odin claims for himself most of the attributes of the medicine-man. In Loka Senna, Loki, the evil god, says that ‘“‘Odin dealt in magic in Samsey.” The goddess Frigg remarks, “‘ Ye should never talk of your old doings before men, of what ye two Ausir went through in old times.” But many relics of these “old times,” many traces of the medicine-man and the “skin- shifter,” survive in the myth of Odin. When he stole Suttung’s mead (which answers somewhat to nectar and the Indian soma), he flew away in the shape of ‘an eagle. The hawk is sacred to Odin; one of his names is “the

Raven-god.” He was usually represented as one-eyed, having left an eye in pawn that he might purchase a draught from Mimir’s well. This one eye is often explained as the sun. Odin’s wife was Frigg; their sons were Thor (the thunder-god) and Balder, whose myth is well known in English poetry. The gods were divided into two, not always friendly, stocks, the A’sir and Vanir. Their relations are, on the whole, much more amicable than those of the Asuras and Devas in Indian mythology. Not necessarily immortal, the gods restored their vigour by eating the apples of Iduna. Asa Loki was a being of mixed race, half god, half giant, and wholly mischievous and evil. His legend includes animal metamorphoses of the most obscene character. In the shape of a mare he became the mother of the eight-legged horse of Odin. He borrowed the hawk-dress of Freya, when he recovered the apples of Iduna. Another Eddie god, Heene, is described in phrases from lost poems as “the long-legged one,” “lord of the ooze,” and his name is connected with that of the crane, The constant enemies of the gods, the giants, could also assume animal forms. Thus in Thiodolf’s H aust-long (com- posed after the settlement of Iceland) we read about a shield on which events from mythology were painted ; among these was the flight of “giant Thiazzi in an ancient eagle’s feathers.” The god Herindaland Loki once fought a battle in the shapes of seals. On the whole, the Scan- dinavian gods are a society on an early human model, of beings indifferently human, animal, and divine,—some of them derived from elemental forces personified, holding sway over the elements, and skilled in sorcery. Probably after the viking days came in the conceptions of the last

1 Indra was a hawk when, ‘‘ being well-winged, he carried to men the food tasted by the gods ” (R.-V., iv. 26, 4). Yehl, the Thlinkeet god-hero, Was a raven or a crane when he stole the water (Bancroft, ili, 100-102). The prevalence of animals, or of god-animals, in myths of the stealing of water, soma, and fire, is very remarkable. Among

the Andaman Islanders, a kingfisher steals fire for men from the god Puluga (Anthrop. Journal, November 1882).

war of gods, and the end of all, and the theory of Odin All-father as a kind of emperor in the heavenly world. The famous tree that lives through all the

world is regarded as “foreign, Christian, and confined to few poems.” There is, almost undoubtedly, a touch of the Christian dawn on the figure and myth of the pure and beloved and ill-fated god Balder, and his descent into hell. The whole subject is beset with critical difficulties, and we have chiefly noted features which can hardly be regarded as late, and which correspond with widely-distributed mythical ideas.?

It is now necessary to cast a hasty glance over the chief divisions of myths. These correspond to the chief problems which the world presents to the curiosity of untutored men. They ask themselves (and the answers are given in

myths) the following questions :—What is the Origin of

the World? The Origin of Man? Whence came the Arts of Life? Whence the Stars? Whence the Sun and Moon? What is the Origin of Death? How was Fire procured by Man? The question of the origin of the marks and characteristics of various animals and plants has also pro- duced a class of myths in which the marks are said to survive from some memorable adventure, or the plants and animals to be metamorphosed human beings. Examples of all these myths are found among savages and in the legends of the ancient civilizations. A few such examples may now be given.

Myths of the Origin of the World.—We have found it difficult to keep myths of the gods apart from myths of the origin of the world and of man, because gods arc frequently regardcd as creative powers. The origin of things is a problem which has cverywhere cxereised thought, and been rudely solved in myths. These vary in quality with the civilization of the races in which they are current, but the same ideas which we procecd to state pervade all cosmogonical myths, savage and civilized. All these legends waver between the theory of creation, or rather of manufacture, and the theory of evolution. The earth, as a rule, is supposed to have grown out of some original matter, perhaps an animal, perhaps an egg which floated on the waters, perhaps a fragment of soil fished up out of the floods by a beast ora god. But this conception does not exclude the idea that many of the things in the world, minerals, plants, people, and what not, are fragments of the frame of an animal or non-natural magnified man, or are excretions from the body of a god. We proceed to state briefly the various

forms of these ideas. The most backward races usually assume the prior existence of the earth.

The aborigines of the northern parts of Victoria (Australia) be- licve that the earth was made by Pund-jel, the bird-creator, who sliced the valleys with a knife. Another Australian theory is that the men of a previous race, the Nooralie (very old ones), made the earth.

The problem of the origin of the world secms scarcely to have troubled the Bushmen. They know about "'mcn who brought the sun," but their doctrines are revealed in mystcries, and Qing, the informant of Mr Orpen (Cape Monthly Magazine, July 1874), "did not dance that dance," that is, had not becn initiated into all the secret doctrines of his tribe. According to Qing, creation was the work of Cagn (the mantis insect), ''he gave orders and caused all things to appear." Elsewhere in the myth Cagn made or manufactured things by his skill.

As arule the most backward races, while rich in myths of the origin of men, animals, plants, stones, and stars, do not say much about the making of the world. Among people a little more ad- vanced, the earth is presumed to have grown out of the waters. In the Iroquois myth (Lafitau, Ifeurs des Sawvages, 1724), a heavenly woman was tossed out of heaven, and fell on a turtle, which developed into the world. Another North-Amcrican myth assumes a single

2 Dasent's Prose or Younger Edda (Stockholm, 1842), the Corpus Septentrionale already referred to, Mr Keary's Mythology of the Eddas, Pigott's Manual of Scandinavian Mythology (1888), and Laing's Karly Kings of Norway may be consulted by English students. For Germanic myths at large, Grimm's celebrated German Mythology, translated by Mr Stallybrass, may be studied, and Mr Keary's Outlines of Primitive Belief. German divine myths are necessarily scarce, owing to the early conversion of Germany before a pre-Christian literature, like the Hddas, was preserved. Obscure classical notices, and survivals in folk-lore, medizval and modern, are the ehief sources of information. The divine names, however, prove that the German was in form not alien to the Scandinavian mythology. The marchen in Grimm's and other collections belong rather to the heroic myths than to those con- cerned with gods.

island in the midst of the waters, and this island grew into the world. ‘The Navajosand the Digger Indians take earth for granted asa starting-point in their myths. The Winuebagos, not untouched by Christian doctrine, do not go farther back. The Great Manitou awoke and found himself alone. He took a piece of his body and a piece of earth and made aman. Here the existence of earth is assumed (Bancroft, iv. 228). Even in Guatemala, though the younger sons of a divine race succeed in making the earth where the elder gon (as usual) failed, they all had a supply of clay as first material. The Pimas, a Central-American tribe, say the earth was made by a powerful being, and at first appeared ‘‘like a spider’s web.” This reminds one of the Ananzi or spider creator of West Africa. The more metaphysical Tacullies of British Columbia say that in the beginning nought existed but water and a musk-rat. The musk- rat sought his food at the bottom of the water, and his mouth was frequently filled with mud. T his he kept spitting out, and so formed an island, which developed into the world. Among the Tinnehs, the frame of a dog (which could assume the form of a handsome young man) became the first material of most things. The dog, like Osiris, Dionysus, Purusha, and other gods, was torn to pieces by giants ; the fragments becaine many of the things in the world (Bancroft, i. 106). Even here the existence of earth for the dog to live in is assumed.

Coming to races more advanced in civilization, we find the New Zealanders in possession of ancient hymns in which the origin of things is traced back to nothing, to darkness, and to a metaphysical process from nothing to something, from being to becoming. The hymns may be read in Sir George Grey’s Polynesian Mythology, and in Taylor’s New Zealand. It has been suggested that these hymns Dear traces of Buddhist and Indian influence; in any case, they are yather metaphysical than mystical. Myth comes in when the Maoris represent Rangi and Papa, Heaven and Earth, as two vast beings, male and female, united in a secular embrace, and finally severed by their children, among whom Tane Mahuta takes the part of Cronus in the Greek myth. The gods were partly elemental, partly animal in character ; the lists of their titles show that every human crime was freely attributed to them. In the South Sea Islands, generally, the fable of the union and separation of

Heaven and Earth is current ; other forms will be found in Gill’s Myths and Songs from the South Pactfie.

The Greek cosmogonic myths have already becn alluded to in the passage on divine myths in Greece.

The cosmogonic myths of the Aryans of India are peculiarly inter- esting, as we find in the Vedas and Brahmanas and Puranas almost every fiction familiar to savages side by side with the most abstract metaphysical speculations. We have the theory that earth grew, as in the Iroquois story of the turtle, from a being named Uttanapad (Muir, v. 885). We find that Brahmanaspati ‘‘ blew the gods forth from his mouth,” and one of the gods, Tvashtri, the mechanie among the, deities, is credited with having fashioned the earth and the heayen (Muir, v. 354). The ‘‘ Purusha Sukta,” the 90th hymn of the tenth book of the Rig- Veda, gives us the Indian version of the theory that all things were made out of the mangled limbs of Purusha, a magnified non-natural man, who was sacrificed by the gods. As this hymn gives an account of the origin of the castes (which elsewhere are scarcely recognized in the Rig-Veda), it is sometimes regarded as a late addition. But we can searcely think the main conception late, as it is so widely scattered that it meets us in most mythologies, including those of Chaldea and Egypt, and various North-American tribes. Not satisfied with this myth, the Aryans of India accounted for the origin of species in the following barbaric style. A being named Purusha was alone in the world. He differentiated himself into two beings, husband and wife. The wife, regarding union with her producer as incest, fled from his embraces as Nemesis did from those of Zeus, and Rhea from Cronus, assuming various animal disguises. The husband pursued in the form of the male of each animal, and froin these unions sprang the various specics of beasts (Satapatha-Brahmana, xiv. 4, 2; Mur, i. 25). The myth of the cosmic egg from which all things were pro- duced is also current in the Brahmanas. In the Puranas we find the legend of many successive creations and destructions of the world a myth of world-wide distribution.

As a tule, destruction by a deluge (see Deuce) is the most favourite myth, but destructions by fire and wind and by the wrath of a god are commou in Australian, Peruvian, and Egyptian tradi- tion. The idea that a boar, or a god in the shape of a boar, fished up a bit of earth which subsequently became the world out of the waters, is very well known to the Aryans of India, and

recalls the feats of American musk-rats and coyotes already described. The tortoise from which all things sprang, in a myth of the Satapatha- Brahnana, reminds us of the Iroquois turtle. The Greek and Mangaian myth of the marriage of Heaven and Earth and its dis- solution is found in the Aitareya-Brahmana (Haug's trans., ii. 808 ; Rig-Veda, i. 1xii.).

So much for the Indian cosmogonic myths, which are a collection

of ideas familiar to savages, blended with sacerdotal theories and ritual mummeries. The philosophical theory of the origin of things, a hymn of remarkable stateliness, is in Aig-Veda, x. 129. The Scandinavian cosmogonic myth starts from the abyss, Ginnungagap, a chaos of ice, from which, as it thawed, was produced the giant Ymir. Ymir is the Scandinavian Purusha. A man and woman sprang from his armpit, like Athene from the head of Zeus. A cow licked the hoar-frost, whence rose Bur, whose children, Odin, Vile, and Ve, slew the giant Ymir. ''Of his flesh they formed the earth, of his blood seas and waters, of his bones mountains, of his teeth rocks and stones, of his hair all manner of plants." This is the story in the Prose Edda, derived from older songs, such as the Grimnersmal. However the distribution of this singular myth may be explained, its origin can scarcely be sought in the imagina- tion of races higher in culture than the Tinnehs and Tacullies, among whom dogs and beavers are the theriomorphic form of Purusha or Yimir.

Myths of the Origin of Man.—These partake of the conceptions of evolution and of creation. Man was made out of clay by a super- natural being. Australia: man was made by Pund-jel. New Zealand man was made by Tiki; 'he took red clay, and kneaded it with his own blood." MJangaia: the woman of the abyss made a child from a piece of flesh plucked out of her own side. Melanesia: '* man was made of clay, red from the marshy side of Vanua Levu ; " womall was made by Qat of willow twigs. Greece: men were wAGT MATE andod, figures baked in clay by Prometheus." India : men were made after many efforts, in which the experimental beings did not har- monize with their environment, by Prajapati. In another class of myths, man was evolved out of the lower animals,—lizards in Aus- tralia ; coyotes, beavers, apes, and other beasts in America. 'The Greck myths of the descent of the Arcadians, Myrmidons, children of the swan, the cow,

and so forth, may be compared. Yet again, men came out of trees or plants or rocks: as from the Australian wattle gum, the Zulu bed of reeds, the great tree of the Ovahereros, the rock of the tribes in Central Africa, the cave of Bushman and North-American and Peruvian myth, "'from tree or stone" (Odyssey, xix. 163). This view was common among the Greeks, who boasted of being autochthonous. The Cephisian marsh was one scene of man's birth according to a fragment of Pindar, who mentions Egyptian and Libyan legends of the same description.

Myths of the Arts of Life.—These are almost unanimously attri- buted to "culture-heroes," beings theriomorphic or anthropomorphic, who, like Pund-jel, Qat, Quawteaht, Prometheus, Manabozho, Quet- zalcoatl, Cagn, and the rest, taught men the use of the bow, the processes (where known) of pottery, agriculture (as Demeter), the due eourse of the mysteries, divination, and everything else they knew. Commonly the teacher disappears mysteriously. He is often regarded by modern mythologists as the suu.

Star Myths.—"'The stars came otherwise," says Mr Browning's Caliban. In savage and civilized myths they are usually meta- morphosed men, women, and beasts. In Australia, the Pleiades, as in Greece, were girls. Castorand Pollux in Greece, as in Australia, were young men. Our Bear was a bear, according to Charlevoix and Lafitau, among the North-American Indians; the Eskimo, according to Egede, who settled the Danish colony in Greenland, regarded the stars " very nonsensically," as "so many of their ancestors ;" the Egyptian priests showed Plutarch the stars that had been Isis and Osiris. Aristophanes, in the Pax, shows us that . the belief in the change of men into stars survived in his own day in Greece. The Bushmen (Bleek) have the same opinion. The Satapatha-Brahmana (Saered Books of the East, xii. 284) shows how Prajapati, in his incestuous love, turned himself into a roc- buck, his daughter into a doe, and how both became constellations. This is a thoroughly good example of the savage myths (as in Peru, according to Acosta) by which beasts and anthropomorphic gods and stars are all jumbled together.? The Rig-Veda eontains examples of the idea that the good become stars.

Solar and Lunar Myths.—These are universally found, and are too numerous to be examined here. The sun and moon, as in the Bulgarian ballad of the Sus Bride (a mortal girl), are looked on as living beings. In Mexico they were two men, or gods of a human character who were burned. The Eskimo know the moon as a man who visits earth, and, again, as a girl who had her face spotted by ashes which the Sun threw at her. The Khasias make the sun a woman, who daubs the face of the moon, a man. The Homeric hymn to Helios, as Mr Max Miiller observes, ‘‘ looks on the sun as a half-god, almost a hero, who had once lived on earth.” This is precisely the Bushman view ; the sun was a man who irradiated light from his armpit. In New Zealand and in North America the sun is a beast, whom adventurers have trapped and beaten. Medicine has been made with his blood. In the Andaman Islands the Sun is the wife of the Moon (Jour. of Anth. Soe., 1882). Among aboriginal tribes in India (Dalton, p. 186) the Moon is the Sun’s bride; she was faithless and he cut her in two, but occasionally

eee ee ee SS 2 Aristophanes, Aves, 686; Etym. Magn., s.v. Ixévioy, Pausanias saw the clay (Paus. x. iv.). The story is also quoted by Lactantius from Hesiod. 3 Sce also Vishnw Purana, i. 131.

1 Black Yajur-Veda and Satapatha-Brahmana ; Muir, i. 52.

lets her shine in full beauty. The Andaman Islanders account for the white brilliance of the moon by saying that he is daubing himself with white clay, a custom common in savage and Greek mysteries. The Red Men accounted to the Jesuits for the spherical forms of sun and moon by saying that their appearance was caused by their bended bows. The Moon in Greek myths loved Endy- mion, and was bribed to be the mistress of Pan by the present of a fleece, like the Dawn in Australia, whose unchastity was rewarded by a gift of a red cloak of opossum skin. Solar and lunar myths usually account for the observed phenomena of eclipse, waning and waxing, sunset, spots on the moon, and so forth, by various mythical adventures of the animated heavenly beings. In modern folk-lore the moon is a place to which bad people are sent, rather than a woman ora man. The mark of the hare in the moon _has struck the imagination of Germans, Mexicans, Hottentots, Cingalese, and produced myths among all these races.}

Myths of Death.—Few savage races regard death as a natural event. All natural deaths are supernatural with them. Men are assumed to be naturally immortal, hence a series of myths to account for the origin of death. Usually some custom or ‘‘ taboo” is represented as having been broken, when death has followed. In New Zealand, Maui was not properly baptized. In Australia, a woman was told not to go near a certain tree where a bat lived ; she infringed the prohibition, the bat fluttered out, and men died. The Ningphoos were dismissed from paradise, and became mortal, because one of them bathed in water which had been tabooed (Dalton, p. 13). In the Atharva-Veda, Yama, like Maui in New Zealand, first ‘‘spied out the path to the other world,” which all men after him have taken. In the Rig-Veda (x. 14), Yama “sought out a road for many.” In the Solomon Islands (Jour. Anth. Inst., Feb. 1881), ‘* Koevari was the author of death, by resuming her cast-off skin.” The same story is told in the Banks Islands. In the Greek myth (Hesiod, Works and Days, 90), men lived without ‘‘ill diseases that give death to men” till the cover was lifted from the forbidden box of Pandora. As to the myths of Hades, the place of the dead, they are far too many to be men- tioned in detail. In almost all the gates of hell are guarded by fierce beasts, and in Ojibway, Finnish, Greek, Papuan, and Japanese myths no mortal visitor may escape from Hades who has once tasted the food of the dead. ;

Myths of Fire-stealing.—Those current in North America (where an animal is commonly the thief) will be found in Bancroft, vol. iv. The Australian version, singularly like one Greek legend, is given by Brough Smyth. Stories of the theft of Prometheus are recorded by Hesiod, Aischylus, and their commentators. Muir and Kuhn may be consulted for Vedic fire-stealing.

Heroie and Romantic Myths.—In addition to myths which are clearly intended to explain facts of the universe, most nations have their heroic and romantic myths. Familiar examples are the stories of Perseus, Odysseus, Sigurd, the Indian epic stories, the adventures of Ilmarinen and Wainamoinen in the Kalewala, and so forth. To discuss these myths as far as they can be considered apart from divine and explanatory tales would demand more space than we have at our disposal. It will become evident to any student of the romantic myths that they consist of different arrange-

ments of a rather limited set of incidents. These incidents have been roughly classified by Von Hahn.2 We may modify his arrangement as follows.

There is (1) the story of a bride or bridegroom who transgresses a commandment of a mystic nature, and disappears as a result of the sin. The bride sins as in Eros and Psyche, Freja and Oddur, Pururavas and Urvasi.2 The sin of Urvasi and Psyche was seeing their husbands—naked in the latter case. The sin was against ‘“‘the manner of women.” Now the rule of etiquette which forbids seeing or naming the husband (especially the latter) is of the widest distribution. The offence in the Welsh form of the story is naming the partner—a thing forbidden among early Greeks and modern Zulus. Presumably the tale (with its example of the sanction) sur- vives the rule in many cases. (2) “ Penelope formula.” The man leaves the wife and returns after many years. A good example occurs in Chinese legend. (3) Formula of the attempt to avoid fate or the prophecy of an oracle. This incident takes numerous shapes, as in the story of the fatal birth of Perseus, Paris, the Egyptian prince shut np ina tower, the birth of Edipus. (4) Slaughter ofa monster. This is best known in the case of Andromeda and Perseus, (5) Flight, by aid of an animal usually, from cannibalism, human sacrifice, or incest. The Greek example is Phrixus, Helle, and the ram of the golden fleece. (6) Flight of a lady and her lover from a giant father or wizard father. Jason and Medea furnish the Greek example. (7) The youngest brother the successful adventurer, and the head of the family. We have seen the example of Greek mythic illus- ee oe

1 See Cornhill Magazine, ‘‘How the Stars got their Names” (1882, p. 35); hg is pome Solar and Lunar Myths ” (1882, p. 440); Max Miiller, Selected Essays, 2 Griechische und Albanestsche Mérchen, i. 45.

3 Tenth Book of Rig-Veda and “ Brahmana” of Yajur-Vede ; Miller, Selected Essays, i. 410.

trations of ‘‘jiingsten-reclit,” or supremacy of the youngest, in the

Hesiodic myth of Zeus, the youngest child of Cronus. (8) Bride

given to whoever will accomplish difficult adventures, or vanquish

girl in race. The custom of giving a bride without demanding bride-price, in reward for a great exploit, is several times alluded to in the JUiad. In Greek heroic myth Jason thus wins Medea, and (in the race) Milanion wins Atalanta. In the Kalewala much of the Jason cycle, including this part, recurs. The rider through the fire wins Brunhild but this may belong to another cycle of ideas. (9) The grateful beasts, who, having been aided by the hero, aid him in his adventures. Melampus and the snakes is a Greek example. This story is but one specimen of the personal human character of animals in myths, already referred to the intellectual condition of savages. (10) Story of the strong man and his adventures, and stories of the comrades Keen-eye, Quick- ear, and the rest. Jason has comrades like these, as had Ilmarinen and Heracles, the Greek ‘‘strong man.” (11) Adventure with an ogre, who is blinded and deceived by a pun of the hero’s, Odysseus and Polyphemusis the Greek example. (12) Descent into Hades of the hero. Heracles, Odysseus, Wainamoinen in the Kale. wala, are the best-known examples in epic literature. These are twelve specimens of the incidents, to which we may add (13) “the false bride,” as in the poem of Berte aua grans Piés, and (14) the legend of the bride said to produce beast-children. The belief in the latter phenomenon is very common in Africa, and in the Arabian Nights, and we have seen it in America.

Of these formule (chosen because illustrated by Greek heroic legends)-——(1) is a sanction of barbarous nuptial etiquette ; (2) is an obvious ordinary incident; (8) is moral, and both (3) and (1) may pair off with all the myths of the origin of death from the infringe- ment of a taboo or sacred command; (4) would naturally oceur wherever, as on the west coast of Africa, human victims have been offered to sharks or other beasts ; (5), the story of flight from a horrible crime, occurs in some stellar myths, and is an easy and natural invention ; (6), flight from wizard father or husband, is found in Bushman and Namaqua myth, where the husband is an elephant ; (7), success of youngest brother, may have been an ex- planation and sanction of “jiingsten-recht,”—Maui in New Zealand isan example, and Herodotus found the story among the Scythians; (8), the bride given to successful adventurer, is consonant with heroic manners as late as Homer; (9) is no less consonant with the belief that beasts have human sentiments

and supernatural powers ; (10), the ‘‘strong man,” is found among Eskimo and Zulus, and was an obvious invention when strength was the most admired of qualities; (11), the baffled ogre, is found among Basques and Irish, and turns on a form of punning which inspires an ‘‘ananzi” story in West Africa ; (12), descent into Hades, is the natural result of the savage conception of Hades, and the tale is told of actual living people in the Solomon Islands and in New Caledonia ; Eskimo Angekoks can and do descend into Hades,—it is the prerogative of the necro- mantic magician; (18), “the false bride”, found among the Zulus, does not permit of such easy explanation,—naturally, in Zululand, the false bride is an animal; (14), the bride accused of bearing beast-children, has already been disposed of ; the beliefis inevitable where no distinction worth mentioning is taken between men and animals. English folk-lore has its woman who bore rabbits.

The formule here summarized, with others, are familiar in the marchen of Samoyeds, Zulus, Bushmen, Hottentots, and Red Indians. For an argument intended to show that Greek heroic myths may be adorned and classified marchen, in themselves survivals of savage fancy, see Fortnightly Review, May 1872, ‘‘ Myths and Fairy Tales.” The usual explanation is that marchen are degenerate heroic myths. This does not explain the mirchen of African, and per- haps not of Siberian races.

In this sketch of mythology that of Rome is not included, be- cause its most picturesque parts are borrowed from or adapted into harmony with the mythology of Greece. Japanese, Chinese, and Persian matters are omitted from want of information, and because of the extreme obscurity of the subject. Greece, India, and Scandi- navia will supply a fair example of Aryan mythology (without entering on the difficult Slavonic and Celtic fields).

There is perhaps no single work which contains a good comparative view of civilized and savage mythologies. Tylor’s Primitive Cultwre comes nearest to what a reader interested in truly comparative mythology desires. As a rule, writers like Cox, Gubernatis, and other “elemental” mythologists lay little stress on non-Aryan stories. Gubernatis’s Zoological Mythology and Cox’s Mythology of the Aryan People must be consulted with caution. Schwartz, in his Der Ursprung der Mythologie, has got hold of a correct

idea (the belief in meteoric animals), but he works his idea too hard. The writings of Max Miiller, Muir's Ancient Sanskrit Texts, and other standard works have already been repeatedly quoted. The old writers, like Bryant, are useless, except for occa- sional references to ancient authorities. There are many useful references In Mr Brown's Great Dionysiak Myth, but the reasonings need not be adopted.

As a rule the German treatises adopt various forms of the "meteorological" and 'solar" hypotheses, (A. L.)

MYTILENE. See Lzszos. MZENSK, another form of Mrsznsx (¢.2.).

4 See Castrén, Callaway, Theal, Bleek, Schooleraft, whose Algic Researches must be read with caution.

N

denotes the dental nasal in all the languages in which N our alphabet is used. But the sound which we call the dental nasal varies slightly in different languages accord- ing to the position of the point of the tongue. This may be pressed against the back of the teeth ; and then we havea true "dental" sound. But the point of the tongue may also be placed not against the teeth but against the front part of the palate immediately behind the gums; and it is in this way that our English dentals are formed.

But this same letter N, either alone or together with another letter, or distinguished by some diacritical mark, can be used for a much wider range of nasal sounds. It has been already pointed out (see letter M) that there are in every language as many nasals as there are clearly distinguished classes of sound produced at different parts of the mouth, eg., guttural or back-palatal, front-palatal, dental, labial, and others less easily apprehended. Each of these classes will have its nasal, which will vary from the sonant of the class only by the different position of the uvula: for the sonant (as, for example, d) the uvula is pressed up so as to cover the passage through the pharynx into the nostrils, and the voice therefore escapes wholly through the mouth ; for the nasal (as for z) the uvula hangs down, so that the voice

passes partly behind it through the nose, partly through the mouth; in all other respects the position of the vocal organs for d and for m is just the game, and the material of the sound is the same, 2.¢., breath made gonant by the vibration of the glottis. In an im- proved alphabet, therefore, we ought in each language to have several symbols for the nasals, as in Sanskrit, which had five different symbols. But no European language has more than two simple symbols; and, of these two, m is confined to one class, viz., the labial; , simple or modified, denotes the other sounds, and therefore often differs in different languages, and sometimes in the same language. It may also be employed to denote a wholly different class of sounds, as the nasalized vowels of the French, which will be described below.

The guttural nasal is heard in ‘“‘anger,” “finger,” 4 hunger”; it is easy to note the difference of the n as heard in these words, and in “an,” “fin,” &c. In English, when the sound occurs at the end of a word, it is represented by ng, as “hang,” “sing,” &c., sometimes also when medial, as in the derivatives “hanger,” ‘“‘ singer.” convenient if, as has often been proposed, the superfiuous symbol g were employed for this nasal. The sound is heard in German as well as in English; but in French it is unknown. On the other hand, the front palatal nasal is heard in the French “Boulogne,” Italian “Campagna,” Spanish “afio,” “otoiio,” dc., the diacritical mark being always used in Spanish; it is not known with us; but its

position in the mouth is shown by that of the correspond- |

ing closed consonants, English ch and j, and of the frica- tive consonant of the same class, which is y. The peculiar class of sounds called “cerebral” in Sanskrit was formed by turning the point of the tongue a little backward toward the top of the palate; of these the nasal was by far the most frequent. Our English “ dental” lies between the cerebral and the true “dental,” for which (as in India) the tongue actually touches the teeth,—our dental being of the kind already mentioned, in which the tongue does not come farther forward than the front palate.

From what has been said, it will appear that the nasals might be called nasalized consonants. The guttural nasal 1S gy nasalized ; the dental nasal is d nasalized: part of

_ by a nasal. It would be |

the voice in each case is diverted from the mouth through the nostrils, and some nasal sound is already heard while the passage through the mouth is closed by the tongue, or by the lips for the production of the labial nasal ; but the complete nasal sound is not heard till the block of the tongue or of the lips is removed, exactly as in the produc- tion of g, or d, or &. But it is possible to nasalize vowels as well as to nasalize consonants. The position of the uvula can be altered when the mouth is set for sounding the vowel a just as well as when it is set for the sound of g; and then instead of the pure a-sound we get one of a nasal quality; as instead of the final consonant sound of “hag” we get the nasalized guttural in “hang.” These nasalized vowels are unknown to us in England; and this is the reason why we find so much difficulty in pronouncing them in French. An Englishman learning French will always begin by pronouncing “en” as if it were “eng,” and “on” as if it were “ong.” But the French “en” is not the vowel e plus the guttural nasal 7; it is the vowel ¢ nasalized.

It is probable, though not provable, that nasal vowels were used in Latin. ‘The evidence lies in the varying spelling of words like “censor” and “cesor,” “consul ” and “cosol,” &c.; neither is right, but each seems to be an attempt to avoid an error ; “censor” is a protest against sounding a nasal e as pure e; and “‘cesor” against sound- ing it as e + ». Again, the Latin has ‘con-ficere,” but “com-ponere”; now f and p are both labials, and there- fore we should expect the same treatment of the final 2 in “con” before each; probably the » marked a nasal vowel (used before a fricative consonant), whereas the m was a true nasal consonant before the closed consonant p. Cicero’s doctrine (Orat. 159) that the vowel ¢ is naturally long in “in-sanus,” “in-felix, ” é&c., but short in “in-doctus,” points to the same conclusion—that the 2 before s and f marked a long nasalized vowel. Lastly, we have the spelling of Greek words like Oycavpés as “thensaurus” in Latin ; it is improbable that the m here was the full consonant.

Tt is not unlikely that the appearance and non-appear- ance of the nasal in the dialects of the same language indicates an original nasalized vowel which has in one case disappeared, in the other has passed into a vowel followed Thus in German we find “ sanft” correspond- ing to English

“soft,” “gans” to ‘goose, ” &e. But the vowel has been modified in such cases in compensation for the loss of its original nasal quality.

The phenomenon of the so-called “ parasitic” nasal arises from careless pronunciation ; before sounding a closed consonant (like g) the uvula is not sufficiently raised, and so a nasal of the same class is heard before the g, as in “nightingale” (compare German ‘“nachtigal”). Yet more common is the development by the nasal itself of a parasitic closed consonant of its own class; many such have long been firmly established, as in the words “sound” (Middle English “soun,” like French ‘‘son,” Latin “ sonu-s”), “thunder” (A.S. ‘“ thunor »), still rightly pro- nounced in the north of England as “ thunner vat “ gownd,” “ sing-ging,” though familiar enough, have not yet made their way into polite speech. These parasitic sounds are also due to careless pronunciation ; if the passage through the nostrils be not kept open till the articulating organs of the mouth have separated, the nasal quality at the end of the sound is lost, and the closed con- sonant must follow. There has been an odd loss of n at the beginning of several English words which has often

been noted. It arises from our double form of the indefinite article ““a” and “an.” Sometimes the ‘a” has abstracted the “n” from the beginning of the noun: thus ‘‘a nadder ” has turned into ‘‘an adder,” ‘‘a napron ” into “an apron,” “a nauger” into “an auger.” On the other hand the letter has had one compensatory gain: ‘“‘an ewt” (eft) has turned into “a newt.” (5. P.)

NABATZZANS, a famous people of ancient Arabia, whose settlements in the time of Josephus (Ant., 1. 12, §4; comp. Jerome, Qu. in Gen. xxv.) gave the name of Nabatene to the border-land between Syria and Arabia from the Euphrates to the Red Sea. The language of Josephus suggests, and Jerome, apparently following him, directly affirms, that the name is identical with that of the Ishmaelite tribe of Nebaioth (1132, Gen. xxv. 13; Isa. lx. 7), which in later Old Testament times had a leading place among the northern Arabs, and is associated with Kedar much as Pliny v. 11 (12) associates Mabatxi and Cedret. ‘The identification is-still followed by many scholars, but is rendered uncertain by the fact that the name Nabatean is properly spelled with ¢ not ¢ (3w2) on the inscriptions, Arabic Nabat, Nabit, &c.).

Thus the history of this remarkable people cannot with certainty be carried back beyond 312 3.c., at which date they were attacked without success by Antigonus in their mountain fortress of Petra. They are described by Diodorus (xix. 94 sg.) as being at this time a strong tribe of some 10,000 warriors, pre- eminent among the nomadic Arabs, eschewing agriculture, fixed houses, and the use of wine (which were forbidden on pain of death), living on flesh and milk, and drinking water sweetened with manna, but adding to pastoral pursuits a considerable and profitable trade with the seaports in myrrh and spices from Arabia Felix, as well as a trade with Egypt in bitumen from the Dead Sea used in the preparation of mummies. Their arid country was the best safeguard of their cherished liberty ; for the bottle-shaped cisterns for rain-water which they excavated in the rocky or argillaceous soil were carefully concealed from invaders, Petra or Sela was the ancient capital of Edom; the Nabateans must have occupied the old Edomite country, and succeeded to its commerce, after the Edomites took advantage of the Babylonian captivity to press forward into southern Judea, This migration, the date of which cannot be determined, also made them masters of the shores of the Gulf of “Akaba and the important harbour of Elath. Here, according to Agatharchides (Geog. Gr. Mu., i. 178), they were for a time very troublesome, as wreckers and pirates, to the reopened commerce between Egypt and the East, till they were chastised by the Greek sovereigns of Alexandria.

Tenacious as they were of the nomad usages of their ancestors, the Nabatezans had already some tincture of foreign culture when they first appear in history. That culture was naturally Aramaic ; they wrote a letter to Antigonus “in Syriac letters,” and Syriac continued to be the language of their coins and inscriptions when the tribe grew into a kingdom, and profited by the decay of the Seleucids to extend its borders northward over the more fertile country east of the Jordan. They occupied the Hauran, and about 85 B.c. their king Aretas (Haritha) became lord of Damascus and Ccele Syria. Allies of the first Hasmoneans in their struggles against the Greeks, they became the rivals of the Judean dynasty in the period of its splendour, and a chief element in the disorders which invited Pompey’s intervention in Palestine. The Roman arms were not very successful against the sons of the desert (expedition of Scaurus, 63 B.c.); King Aretas retained his whole possessions, including Damascus, as a Roman vassal,

q Compare 2 Cor. xi, 82. The Nabatean Aretas or Alneas there mentioned reigned from 7 B.c. to 40 A.D. or thereby.

NA B—N AD

As “allies” of the Romans the Nabateeans continued to flourish throughout the first Christian century. Their power extended far into Arabia, particularly along the coast of the Red Sea; and Petra was a meeting-place of many nations, though the importance of its commerce was diminished by the rise of the Eastern trade-route from Myoshormus to Coptus on the Nile. Under the Roman peace they lost their warlike habits, and were a sober, acquisitive, orderly people, wholly intent on trade. They had now agriculture and houses of stone, and were not unacquainted with foreign luxuries and arts (Strabo, xvi. 4). Such a people might have long been a valuable bulwark between Rome and the wild hordes of the desert but for the short-sighted cupidity of Trajan, who reduced Petra and broke up the Nabataan nationality (105 a.p.).. The new Arab invaders who soon pressed forward into their seats found the remnants of the Nabatzans transformed into

fellahin, and speaking Aramaic like their neighbours.

Hence Nabateeans became the Arabic name for Arameans, whether in Syria or “Irak, a fact which was misinterpreted by Quatremére into a theory that the Nabateans were originally Aramzan immigrants from Babylonia. More recent inquiry has shown this view to be quite false. The Nabateeans were true Arabs—as the proper names on their inscriptions show—who came under the influence of Aramean civilization. See especially Néldeke in Z, D. DEO G., Rv. 00”89,, xx. WD seg,

For the inscriptions and coins of the Nabateans consult De Luynes in Revue Numism., 1858; Levy in Z. D. M. G., xiv. 363 sg.; De Vogué, dfé7. d’ Arch. Or., 1868, Syrie Centrale, 1866-77, and Inser, Sémitiques, 1868-77. The character of De Vogué’s inscriptions from the Hauran appcars to be the parent of the Cufic Arabic. The so-called Faléha Nabatiya, or ‘‘ Nabatean agricul- ture,” which professes to be an Arabic translation by Ibn-Wahshiya from an ancient Nabatezan source (MSS. in Leyden and elsewhere), is a

forgery of the 10th century. See Gutschmid in 7. D. I. G., xv. 1 sg.; and Noldeke, Zbid., xxix. 445 sq.

NABHA, or NaRBAL, one of the Cis-Sutlej states in the Punjab, India, lying between 30° 17’ and 30° 40’ N. lat., and between 75° 50’ and 76° 20’ E. long., has an area of 863 square miles, with a population in 1881 of 261,824. The first relations of the state with the British were in 1807-8, when the r4j& applied for and obtained protection against the threatened encroachments of Ranjit Sinh. During the mutiny in 1857 this chief showed distinguished loyalty, and was rewarded by grants of territory to the value of over £10,000. The rdjd is a Sikh of the Sidhu Jat tribe; he has full powers of life and death over his subjects, and has an estimated annual revenue of £65,000. The chief products of the state are sugar, cereals, cotton, and tobacco,

NABULUS, or Nasuits. See Sucre.

NADIM. Abulfaraj ibn Ishdk of Baghdad, known as Ibn abi Ya kub al-Nadim (0d. 995 a.p.), is the author of one of the most interesting works in Arabic literature, the Ithrist, or “list of the books of all nations that were to be found in Arabic,” with notices of the authors and other particulars, carried down to the year 377 a.n. (987-88 A.D.). A note in the Leyden MS, places the death of the author eight years later. Of his life we know nothing; the name Nadim belonged to a distinguished family of Persian origin. The oldest Arabic scholars, of whose works comparatively little has been preserved to us, had a much wider range of interest than their successors. Even then Islam and the Korén were the centre of all study; but curiosity was not limited by religious scruples; men were eager to know the wisdom and the literature of all nations and sects; the free thought which was afterwards so sternly suppressed in the reaction of orthodoxy towards the close of the 9th century lifted men above narrow pre- judices. The work of Al-Nadim gives us a complete picture of the most active intellectual period of the Arab

empire. He traces the rise and growth of philology and belles-lettres, of theology, orthodox and heretical, of law and history, of mathematics and

astronomy, of medicine and alchemy; he does not despise the histories of knights errant, the fables of Kalfla and Dimna, the facetis of the “boon companions,” the works of magic and divination. But to us no part of his work is more interesting than his account of the beliefs of sects and peoples beyond Islam. Here, fortunately, still more than in other parts of his work, he goes beyond the functions of the mere cataloguer ; he tells what he learned of China from a Christian missionary of Najran, of India from a description of its religion compiled for the Barmecide Yahya; his full accounts of the Sabians of Harrén and of the doctrines of Mani! are of the very first importance for the historian of Asiatic religions.

The Fihrist was much pillaged by later writers, but the author was sedulously ignored, and MSS. of his work are very scarce. Hottinger possessed one (now lost), and used it in his Historia Orientalis. There are others (all imperfect) at Paris, Leyden, and Vienna; a small part of the book is altogether lost. Fltigel pub- lished an abstract of the work in Z. D. M. G., xiii. (1859); his

edition, with notes, appeared posthumously (vol. i., text, Lcipsic, 1871; vol. ii., notes, 1872).

NADIR SHAH. See Persia.

NADIYA, or Nuppsa, a district in the leutenant- governorship of Bengal, lying between 22° 52’ 33” and 94° 11’N. lat., and between 88° 11’ and 89° 24’ 41″ E. long,, pounded on the N. by Rajshahi, on the E. by Pabnaé and Jessor, on the 8. by the 24 Parganas, and on the W. by Higli, Bardwan, Birbhum, and Murshidabad districts, with an area of 3404 square miles. It is emphatically a district of great rivers. Standing at the head of the Gangetic delta, its alluvial surface, though still liable to periodical inunda- tion, has been raised by ancient deposits of silt sufficiently high to be permanent dry land. Along the entire north- eastern boundary flows the wide stream of the Padma or Ganges ; and all the remaining rivers of the district are offshoots of the great river. ‘The Bhagirathi on the eastern border, and the Jalangi and the Matabhanga meandering through the centre of the district, are the chief of these offshoots, and are called distinctively the “ Nadiya rivers.” But the whole surface of the country is interlaced with a network of minor streams, communicating with one another by side channels. All the rivers are

navigable in the rainy season for boats of the largest burthen, but during the rest of the year they dwindle down to shallow streams, with dangerous sandbanks and bars.

In former times the Nadiyd rivers afforded the regular means of communication between the upper valley of the Ganges and the seaboard; and much of the trade of the district still comes down to Calcutta by this route during the height of the rainy season. But the lines of the East Indian and Eastern Bengal Railways, with the main stream of the Ganges and the Sundarbans route, now carry by far the larger portion of the traffic.

The census of 1881 returned the population at 2,017,847, of whom 1,146,603 were Mohammcdaus and 864,773 Hindus. Of the 6439 Christians, 6304 were natives. Krishnagar had 24,477 inhabitants in 1881; and six others had in 1872 a population exceeding 5000:—Santipur, 28,635; Kushtia, 9245; Ranaghat, 8871; Nadiyd, 8863; Mihrpur, 5562; and Kumarkhali, 5251. Nadiy4, the ancient capital, was formerly situated on the east bank of the Bhdgirathi (which has since changed its course). It has always been celebrated for the sanctity and learning of its pandits. The battlefield of Plassey was situated in this district, but the floods of the Bhagirathi have washed away the scene of that memorable engagement.

Rice is the staple crop, and there are four harvests in the year. Indigo is the chief export staple; but the district was the centre of the indigo riots in 1860, and the industry then reeeived a blow from which it has never recovered. A large proportion of the cul- tivable area of the district is held on utbandi tenure—that is, for a single season only, the rents being assessed according to the out- IE En en i en a

1 The former translated in Chwolson’s Ssabier und Ssabismus,

i the latter in Fliigel’s Mand, seine Lehre und seine Schriften,

turn of the crop. Floods are common, and frequently cause much damage.

The number of indigo factories is still considerable. Cotton- weaving is carried on, but is everywhere on the decline, especially at the town of Santipur, where, in the beginning of the century, the Company nsed to purchase muslin to the annual value of £150,000. Santipur muslin is still exported to a small extent. Raw date sugar is largely mannfactured. The chief exports are indigo, jute, linseed, wheat, pulses and gram, rice, chillies, sugar, and tobacco.

The only institutions in the district worthy of note are the éols or indigenous Sanskrit schools. In these smriti (Hindu social and religious law) and nydya (logic) are tanght by learned pandits to eager pupils. The ¢ols consist generally of a mere collection of mud hovels round a quadrangle, where the students live in the most primitive manner, each in his own hut, with his brass water- pot and mat, and seldom any other furniture. A student generally remains at the ¢ol for eight or ten years. No fees are charged, and the pandits depend for their livelihood on the presents which their fame as teachers ensures them at religious cerenionies. Most of the tols are in Nadiya town, but there are also a few in the surrounding villages. Their number is rapidly decreasing.

The district revenue in 1880-81 amounted to Rs. 1,654,818, Rs. 1,051,776 being derived from the land-tax. Education was afforded in 1877 by 897 schools, attended by 28,489 pupils. The principal educational institution is the Government college at Krishnagar. The average annual temperature is 77° Fahr.; the average anuual rainfall about 65 inches. Besides remittent and intermittent fevers, which cause very great mortality, small-pox, diarrhoea, dysentery, and cholera are prevalent. Cattle disease is common.

NAVIUS, Guaus, is the second in order of time among the creators of Latin literature. He had made his appear- ance as an author within five years after the first dramatic representation of Livius Andronicus ; he was some ten or fifteen years older than Plautus, and preceded Ennius by a generation. As distinguished from Livius he was a native Italian, not a Greek ; he was also a writer of original power, not a mere adapter or translator. If it was due to Livius that the forms of Latin literature were, from the first, moulded on those of Greek literature, it was due to Neevius that much of its spirit and substance was of native growth. Long before the formal recognition of

litera- ture in Rome, which dated from the year 240 B.c., there had existed various kinds of inartistic composition, written or spoken, in Saturnian verse. The most important of these were satiric and dramatic medleys, known by the name of sature, and commemorative verses in praise of eminent men, which were first sung at funeral banquets, and seem afterwards to have been preserved among family records. ‘The fact that Nevius wrote his most important poem in Saturnian verse, the disparaging reference made to him by Ennius as the writer of verses like those of the old native “Fauni and Vates,” the claim which he makes in his epitaph to be the last purely Latin poet, the political satire which he introduced into his comedies, the national and commemorative character of his epic poem, all point to him as a medium of connexion between the nameless authors of these satiric and commemorative verses and the recognized authors of Roman comedy, satire, and even epic poetry.

Though the fragments preserved from his numerous writings are few and inconsiderable, yet they corroborate the impression derived from ancient testimony that he was a man of originality and force of mind, and of a bold and vigorous character. The impulse which he sought to give to Latin literature was somewhat antagonistic to that actually given by Ennius ; and either the greater genius and richer culture of the latter or his greater adaptation to his times determined that his influence should be pre-dominant. Probably the genius of Ennius was the higher creative force; it was more in harmony with the serious Roman spirit, and with the grandeur of Roman institu- tions; it more naturally allied itself with the aristocratic ‘nfluence which was predominant in the state for two

generations after the death of Nevius; it was also more Ayal = 2

capable of assimilating the Greek culture, which was the formative element in the literary art of the Romans. Yet the racy popular spirit of Neevius gained for him admirers even in the Augustan age, and Cicero represents the great master of Latin oratory, Crassus, as the highest compli- ment he could pay to the pure idiomatic speech of his

mother-in-law, Lzelia, comparing it to the style of Neevius.

and Plautus. Though a richer vein of imaginative feeling was introduced into the Latin language and literature by Ennius, yet much was lost in their subsequent develop- ment by the partial suppression of the aggressive boldness and freedom of Neevius, as well as of the exuberant mirth and humour of Plautus.

There is great uncertainty in regard to the facts and dates of the life of Nevius. From the expression of Gellius characterizing his epitaph as written in a vein of ‘‘Campanian arrogance” it has been inferred that he was born in one of the Latin communities settled in Cam- pania. But the phrase “ Campanian arrogance” seems to have been used proverbially for ““gasconade”; and, as there was a plebeian Gens Vevia in Rome, it is quite as probable that he was by birth a Roman citizen. The strong political partisanship which he displayed in his plays is favourable to this supposition, as is also the active interference of the tribunes on his behalf. On the other side weight must be given to the remark of Mommsen, viz., “the hypothesis that he was not a Roman citizen, but possibly a citizen of Cales or of some other Latin town in Campania, renders the fact that the Roman police treated him so un- scrupulously the more easy of explanation.” He served either in the Roman army or among the socéd in the First Punic War, and thus must have reached manhood before the year 241 B.c. We learn from Cicero that he lived to a good old age, and that he died in exile about the end of the 3d century B.c. The date of his birth may be thus fixed with approximate probability about the year 265 B.c. No particulars of his military service are recorded. Sicily was the great battlefield of the combatants during the latter years of the war. No important Sicilian city was without its theatre, and it seems legitimate to connect the new taste for regular dramatic performances (and especially for tragedy, to which there was nothing corresponding among the Italian races) developed at Rome immediately after the conclusion of the First Punic War with the Sicilian ex- periences of the Roman and allied armies serving in the war. Another important influence in Roman literature and Roman belief which first appeared in the epic poem of Neevius also had its origin in Sicily, viz., the recognition of the mythical connexion of /Eneas and his Trojans with the foundation of Rome. The origin of this belief may probably be attributed to the Sicilian historian Timeus : but the contact of the Romans and Carthaginians in the neighbourhood of Mount Eryx may have

suggested that part of the legend which plays so large a part in the ined, which brings Aineas from Sicily to Carthage and back again' to the neighbourhood of Mount Eryx. The actual collision of Phcenician and Roman on the western shores of Sicily, of which Nevius may well have been a witness, if it did not originate, gave a living interest to the mythical origin of that antagonism in the relations of 4Eneas and Dido.

The career of Nevius as a dramatic author began with the exhibition of a drama in or about the year 235 B.c., and was carried on energetically for thirty years afterwards, Towards the close of this career he incurred the hostility of some of the nobility, especially, it is said, of the family of the Metelli, by the attacks which he made upon them on the stage, and at their instance he was imprisoned,—a circumstance to which Plautus alludes in a passage of the Miles Gloriosus (211). After writing two plays during his

NA VIUS

mee

imprisonment, in which he is said to have apologized for his former rudeness (Gellius, ii. 3, 15), he was liberated through the interference of the tribunes of the commons; but he had shortly afterwards to retire from Rome (in or about the year 204 B.c.) to Utica. The generally received accounts assigned his death to that year; but Cicero (Brutus, 15, 60) quotes Varro as an authority for the belief that his life was prolonged beyond that date. It may have been during his exile, when withdrawn from his active career asa dramatist, that he composed or completed his poem on the First Punic War.! Probably his latest composition was the epitaph already referred to, also written in Saturnian verse — '*Immortales mortales flere si foret fas,

Flerent dive Camene Neviuin poetam ;

Itaque postquam est Orcino traditus thesauro

Obliti sunt Romai loquier lingua Latina." ?

If, as has been supposed, these lines were dictated by a jealousy of the growing ascendency of Ennius, the life of Nevius must have been

prolonged considerably beyond the year 204 B.c., as it was only in that year that Ennius first settled, and began his career as an author, in Rome.

Like Livius, Nevius professed to adapt Greek tragedies and comedies to the Roman stage. Among the titles of his tragedies are igisthus, Lycurgus, Andromache or Hector Proficiscens, Equus Trojanus, &c. We find in the letters of Cicero a reference to a representation of the last-named play at the opening of the theatre of Pompey in 55 B.o.; but it seems to have retained its popularity so long not so much from its dramatic merits as from the scope it afforded for the gratification of the Roman taste for gorgeous spectacles. The few fragments preserved from the tragedies show the first rude beginnings of that artificial poetical phraseology and poetical word-formation which the impulse derived from Greek literature developed in the speech of Latium, and also the more native product of pithy sayings (such as the “laudari a laudato viro,” ‘‘sero sapiunt Phryges”) which had passed into proverbs in the age of Cicero. The national cast of his genius and temper was further shown by his deviating from his Greek originals, and producing at Icast two specimens of the fabula prasteata, onc founded on the childhood of Romulus and Remus (Romulus s. Alimonium fomuli et Remi), the other called Clastidiwm, which celebrated the contemporary victory in which Marcellus carried off the spolia optima.

But it was as a writer of comedy that he was most famous, most productive, and most original. ‘While he is never ranked as a writer of tragedy with Ennius, Pacuvius, or Accius, he is plaeed in the canon of the grammarian Volcatius Sedigitus third (immedi- ately after Cycilius and Plautus) in the rank of Roman comic authors. He is there characterized as ‘Nevius qui fervet,” a phrase expressive of his ardent, impetuous character aud style. He is also appealed to, along with Plautus and Ennius, as a master of his art in one of the prologues of Terence. His comedy, like that of Plautus, seems to have been rather a free adapta- tion of his originals than a rude copy of them, as those of Livius probably were, or an artistic copy like those of Terence. The titles of most of them, like those of Plantus, and unlike those of Cecilius and Terence, are Latin not Greek. Among the few lines preserved from them we find in one the ‘ Laurentines and Prenestines”” spoken of, just as we find mention of provineial Italian towns frequently in Plautus. He drew from the writers of the old political comedy of Athens, as

well as from the new comedy of manners, and he attempted to make the stage at Rome, as it had been at Athens, an arena of political and personal warfare. A strong spirit of partisanship is recognized in more than one of his fragments; and this spirit is thoroughly popular and adverse to the senatorian ascendency which became more and more confirmed with the progress of the Second Punic War. Besides his attack on the Metelli and other members of the aristocracy, the great Seipio (whose services and world-wide fame he acknowledges) is the object of a censorious criticism on account of a youthful escapade attri- buted to him. Among thc few lines still remaining from his lost comedies, we seem to recognize the idiomatic force and rapidity of movement characteristic of the style of Plautus. There is also found that love of alliteration which is a marked feature in all the older Latin poets down even to Lucretius. In one considerable comic fragment attributed to him,—the description of a coquette,— there is great truth and shrewdness of observation. But we find

? Cicero (De Sen., 14) speaks of it as the work of his old age.

_* “Tf it were permitted that immortals should weep for mortals, the divine Camene would weep for Nevius the poet ; for sinee he hath passed into the treasure-house of death men have forgotten at Rome how to speak in the Latin tongue. ”

no trace of the exuberant comic power and geniality of his great contemporary. His critical spirit and vehement temper dcclare his affinity rather to Lucilius than to Plautus.

He was not only the oldest native dramatist, but the first author of an epic poem,—which, by combining the representation of actual contemporary history with a mythical background, may be said to have created the Roman type of epic poetry. ‘The poem as he gave ‘+ to the world was one continuous work, and was divided into seven books by a grammarian of a later age. The earlier part of it treated of the mythical adventures of Aneas in Sicily, Carthage, and Italy, and borrowed from the interview of Zeus and Thetis in the first book of the Iliad the idea of the interview of Jupiter and Venus, which Virgil has made one of the cardinal passages in the Zineid.

The later part of the poem treated of the events of the First Punic War in the style of a metrical chronicle. The few remaining fragments produce the impression of vivid and rapid narrative, to which the flow of the native Saturnian verse, in con- tradistinction to the weighty and complex structure of the hexa- meter, was naturally adapted. Mommsen has noticed that in these fragments the story is told in the present tense. The dis- paraging criticism of Ennius—

- Scripsere alii rem Versibu' quos olim Fauni vatesque canebant, &¢."— applies to the rudeness of the versc, not to the spirit or substance of the work. Cicero speaks of it as giving pleasure, like a statue of Myron, and the grudging admission of Horace— " Nevius in manibus non est et mentibus heerct Pane reeens "—

attests the fresh pleasure with which it still could he read in the Augustan age.

The impression we get of the man is that, whether or not he actually enjoyed the full rights of Roman citizenship, he was a vigorous representative of the bold combative spirit of the ancient Roman commons, —of the political not, like Plautus, of the bour- geois type of the Roman plebcian. Energy of character and vitality of temperament are shown by the prolonged continuation

of his career as a writer, notwithstanding the discouragement of

his imprisonment, and, what was a greater trial than temporary imprisonment, his exile. The chief service which he rendered to Roman letters was that he was one of those who made the Latin language into a great organ of literature, and that with the new formative energy which he applied to it he transmitted the force of the best popular speech of his time. The phrases still quoted from him have nothing of an antiquated sound, while they have a genuinely idiomatic ring. As a dramatist he worked more in the spirit of Plautus than of Ennius, Pacuvius, Accius, or Terence; but the great Umbrian humorist is separated from his older con- temporary, not only by his breadth of comic power, but by his general attitude of moral and political indifference. Nevius was the more genuine Italian gift—the power of satiric criticism—the ''Italum acetum" which was employed in making

men ridiculous, not, like that of Plautus, in extracting amusement from the humours, follies, and eccentricities of life His more truly creative faculty seems to have shown itself, not only in rapid and animated narrative, but in pregnant invention which still lives in literature, owing to the recognition of its value by the receptive and reproductive genius of Virgil. Although our means of forming a fair estimate of Nevins are more scanty than in the case of the other makers of Roman literature whose work is only known to us in fragments, yet all that we do know of him leads to the con- clusion that he was far from being the least among them, and that with the loss of his writings there was lost a vein of national feeling and genius which reappears rarely in the writings of the later republican and the imperial times—the vein which probably was predominant in Cato, which may still be traced in the fragments of Lucilius and in the personal and political lampoons of Catullus, and may be detected under the rhetorical invective of Juvenal.

Collections of the Fragments have been made and commented on by Kluss- mann (1843) and Vahlen (1852). A short study of the life and writings of Nevius (De Cn. Nevii vita et scriptis) has been written by M. Berchem. (WwW. Y. 8.)

NAVUS, a term in surgery signifying that form of tumour which is almost entirely composed of enlarged blood-vessels. There are three principal varieties :—(1) the capillary nevus, consisting of enlarged capillaries, fre- quently of a purplish colour, hence the term “ port-wine stain”; (2) the venous nevus, in which the veins are en- larged, of a bluish colour; (3) the arterial nevus, in which there is distinct pulsation, it being composed of enlarged and tortuous arteries. The nevus can be lessened in size by pressure. It is generally met with in the skin or immediately under the skin; sometimes it lies in the mouth in connexion with the mucous membrane. It is often congenital, hence the term “mother’s mark,” or it may appear in early childhood. It often grows rapidly,

The power of

sometimes slowly, and sometimes growth is checked, and it may gradually diminish in size, losing its vascularity and becoming fibrous and non-vascular. This natural cure is followed by less deformity than a cure by artificial means. It is a good rule not to interfere unless the tumour is growing rapidly and at a rate out of proportion to the growth of the child. Various methods are used by surgeons when an operation is called for:—(1) the tumour may be excised ; (2) a ligature tightly tied may be applied to the base of the tumour; (3) inflammation may be set up in the growth by the injection of irritating agents,— in this way its vascularity may be checked and the forma- tion of fibrous tissue encouraged ; (4) the blood in the enlarged vessels may be coagulated by the injection of coagulating agents or by electrolysis. In large neevi the last method is very suitable, and the resulting cure most closely resembles the natural cure already described.

NAGA HILLS, a district in the south-eastern corner of the chief-commissionership of Assam, India, lies between 95° 13’ and 26° 32’ N. lat., and between 93° and 94° 13’

E. long., being a mountainous borderland between Now-

gong district and Manipur state, with an area of about 6400 square miles. It forms a wild expanse of forest, mountain, and stream. ‘The valleys and hills are covered with dense jungle, dotted with small lakes and marshes. Coal ig known to exist in many localities, as well as lime- stone, chalk, and slate. The chief rivers are the Dayang, Dhaneswari, and Jamuna, only navigable for small boats during the rainy season.

In 1870 the deputy-commissioner roughly estimated the strength of the different tribes as follows :—Assamese, 705; Aitaniyas, 355; Cacharis, 3505; Mikirs, 8820; Kukis, 2524; Nagas, 66,535; total, 82,444. The estimated population in 1881-82 was 93,000. Agriculture is conducted in a rude, nomadic fashion, the only im-

lements of tillage being the ddo or hill knife, and a koddli or hoe. Rice and millet are the main crops. In some places great skill is displayed in irrigation. The tea plant is indigenous, and a large number of natives are now employed in the tea-gardens. The manufactures embrace the production of the few rude articles re- quired for domestic use or as clothing, and the forging of ddos, koddlis, and spear-heads. ‘Trade is

generally conducted by means of barter, and has considerably increased of late years. The local products available for export comprise rice, cotton, cloth woven from nettle fibre, ivory, beeswax, and various dyes obtained from the jungle. Salt and iron are imported ; but the one great desire of every N4g4 is to have a gun. ‘The revenue is nominal. British administration was first introduced into the distriet in 1867 ; but it has not yet been surveyed, and it constitutes perhaps the least orderly portion of the Indian empire. It is inhabited by several wild aboriginal tribes, collectively known as the Nagas. Those within British territory are comparatively peaceful, but beyond the reach of British influence are several savage and predatory tribes, who are in the habit of raiding on the plains, and killing or carrying off inoffensive British subjects. Repeated expeditions have been despatched to chastise them in their native hills. In 1873 a survey party under Lieutenant Holcombe were treacherously massacred. In January 1875 a force escorting & survey party under Captain Butler was attacked by Nagas, but unsuccessfully ; later in the same year, however, he was cut off and killed. In 1879-80 the Nagas murdered the deputy-commissioner, Mr Damant, and, after receiving a sharp punishment, made a foray on the CAchar side, murdering a tea-planter and committing other ravages. For some time the district has been in a more settled condition. The construction of a road to Kohima, the principal town, and the settlement of a British governor there have pro- duced a salutary effect. The eastern Nagas are becoming rapidly civilized. NAGASAKI, or sometimes 1, th seaport on the western coasts of Japan, 1s situated in 39° 44’ N. lat. and 129° 52’ E. long., in the island of Kiu-shiu, and gives its name to a ken (province of Hizen or Hi-shiu). The harbour is formed by @ beautiful inlet of the sea, stretching northward for a distance of about 4 miles, with an average width of about a mile, enclosed on both sides by a delightful framework of hills (1500 feet), and adorned by a number of the most picturesque-looking

islands. The city lies near the upper end of the inlet on

Nancasaki, the leading

its eastern side, extending about a mile in length and 2 of a mile in breadth. Immediately to the south, and con- nected with the mainland by a bridge,

lies the half-artificial island of Desima (600 feet by 240), which, originally occupied by the Portuguese (1637-39), was for more than two hundred years (1641-1854) the trading post and prison-house of the Dutch traders. Southwards along the shore, on ground largely reclaimed from the sea, runs the foreign settlement, with the American, British, French, and Portuguese consulates on the hilly ground behind. The magnificent dock (460 feet long, 89 wide, and 28 deep), commenced by the prince of Hizen in 1865, and rebuilt in 1874-79, occupies a deep gorge between two hills at Tatagami, on the western side of the firth opposite the city ; a few hundred yards to the north of the dock are the engine-works of Akaonura (with an area of 7 acres) ; and at Koski there is a fine patent slip constructed for the prince of Satsuma (the prince of Hizen's rival). Nagasaki is laid out with great regularity and neatness, the streets crossing each other at right angles; beginning to climb the hills, they not infrequently end in stairs. Among the public buildings may be mentioned the hospital estab- lished in 1861, the oldest in Japan, and the great Govern- ment school, with its department for European languages and sciences, attended by hundreds of Japanese of all ages and ranks. Population about 80,000.

Tn 1825 the trade of the Dutch monopolists, who were allowed to have only two vessels, amounted to upwards of £100,000 (£31,154 imports and £72,373 exports). By 1871, twelve years after the opening of the port, this sum was multiplied more than sevenfold (£317,727 imports, £449, 855 exports), and since then there has been a slight additional increase—£755,180 being the average of the four years 1878-81. The principal exports are coal (£228,000 in 1881), camphor, rice (now largely sent to Australia), tea, tobacco, dried fish, and vegetable wax. Most of the coal, which makes excel- lent coke, and is freely used by men-of-war and merchant steamers, is brought from the Takashima mines about 6 miles distant, which give employment to 4000 workmen. The export of camphor has steadily increased from 2380 piculs in 1877 to 11,640 piculs (worth £42,928) in 1881. Of the 333 vessels which entered the port in 1881, 280 were British. Nagasaki has regular steamship communi- cation with Shanghai, and is the terminus of submarine telegraphs from that city and from Vladivostok.

NAGINA, a town in Bijnaur district, North-Western Provinces of India, is situated on the road from Hardwar to Muradabad, in 29° 27' 5" N. lat. and

78° 28’ 50″ E. long., with a population of 20,503 in 1881. The headquarters of the district were removed from it to Bijnaur town in 1824, It is celebrated for its ebony carvings. There are also manufactures of glassware, ropes, and matchlocks, and a large export of sugar.

NAGOYA, sometimes N: OGOYA, one of the largest and most active of the cities of Japan, the chief town of Aichi ken (province of Owari), and formerly the seat of the princes of Owari (one of the “three august families ” closely allied to the Tokugawa line of shoguns), lies at the head of the shallow Owari Bay, about 30 miles from Yokai-ichi, its port, with which it communicates by light- draught steamers. Nagoya is well known as one of the great seats of the pottery trade (though the master potters for the most part get their goods manufactured at Seto, about 13 miles distant, where the clay has been worked for wellnigh two thousand years) ; fans and enamels are also made in the city. The castle of N: agoya, occupying about 400 acres of ground at the north side of the city, erected in 1610, suffered comparatively little during the revolution of 1868, and is now the headquarters of the N; agoya muitary district, with extensive barracks and drill-grounds, The central keep of the citadel is a remarkable structure, covering close upon half an acre, but rapidly diminishing m each of its five stories till the top room is only about 12 yards square. Gabled roofs and hanging rafters break the almost pyramidal outline; and a pair of gold-plated

dolphins 8 feet high form a striking finial. Both were removed in 1872, and one of them was at the Vienna Exhibition in 1873; but they have been restored to their proper site. Among the religious buildings perhaps the most interesting is the Kenchiu-ji, a monastery of the Jo.do sect, containing the burial-place of the princes of Owari. A superior court, a middle school, a girls’ school, a normal school, the prefecture, the telegraph and post-office, and the hospital are the principal foreign-style buildings in Nagoya. The population is 325,000.

NAGPUR, a district in the division of the same name, in the Central Provinces of India, lying between 20° 36’ and 21° 43’ N. lat., and between 78° 17’ and 79° 42’ EB. long., bounded on the N. by Chhindwara and

Seoni, E. by Bhandara, 8. by Chanda and Wardha, and W. by Wardha and Elichpur, with an area of 3786 square miles. Nag- pur district lies immediately below the great table-land of the Sdtpura range. A second line of hills shuts in the district on the south-west, and a third runs from north to south, parting the country into two plains of unequal size. These hills are all offshoots of the SAtpuras, and nowhere attain any great elevation. Their heights are rocky and sterile, but the valleys and lowlands at their feet are fertile, yielding rich crops of corn and garden produce. The western plain slopes down to the river Wardha, is watered by the Jim and Madar rivers, tributaries of the Wardha, and contains the most highly-tilled land in the district, abounding in fruit trees, and the richest garden cultivation, The eastern plain (six times the larger), stretching away to the confines of Bhandara and Chanda, consists of a rich undulating country, luxuriant with mango groves, and dotted towards the east with countless small tanks. It is watered by the Kanhan, with its tributaries, which flows into the Wainganga beyond the district.

The population in 1881 was 697,356 (British-born, 1063 ; other Europeans and Americans, 383 ; Eurasians, 630; aborigines, 42,750; Hindus, 606,228; Mohammedans, 39,765; Buddhists and Jains, 3569). The most numerous of the aboriginal tribes are the Gonds (43,885). The population of the nine principal towns was as fol- lows :—Nagpur, 79,842; Kamthi, 36,364; Umrer, 12,784; Ramtek, 6978; Khapa, 6664; Narkher, 6498; Mohpa, 5256; Kalmeshwar, 4842; Saoner, 4739.

Of the area of 3786 square miles, 1863 were cultivated in 1882. Wheat in 1882 occupied 314,037 acres, rice 38,127, other food grains 489,111, oil-seeds 224,495, cotton 101,166, and sugar-cane 1545. During the last few years there has been a great increase in the manufacture of cotton in the Empress mills at Nagpur. There were 30,000 spindles in operation in 1882, the output of yam and cloth being 1,804,530 and 149,995 tb respectively. The Nagpur branch of the Great Indian Peninsula Railway runs through the district for a distance of 26 miles, The gross revenue in 1876-77 was 1,460,168 rupees.

NAcpur, the chief town of Nagpur district, and the administrative headquarters of the Central Provinces, India, is situated in the centre of the

district, on the banks of a small stream, the Nag, in 21° 9’ 30” N. lat., 79° 7’ E. long. The population was 79,842 in 1881. The muni- cipal limits include, besides the city proper, the suburb of Sitdbald{, and the European station of Sitabaldi, with Takli. In the centre stands SitAbaldi Hill, crowned with the fort, which commands a fine view of the country round. On the north and west lies the prettily wooded station of Sitabald{; beyond, to the north, are the military lines and bdzdrs, and, again, beyond these the suburb of Takli. Close under the southern side of the hill is the native suburb of Sitdbaldf. Below the eastern glacis of the fort is the railway terminus. Beyond this lies the broad sheet of water known as the Jam4 Taldo, and farther east is the city, completely hidden in a mass of foliage. Three great roads connect the city with the European station. Hand- some tanks and gardens, constructed by the Mahratta princes, lie outside the city. Many Hindu temples, elaborately carved in the best style of Mahratta archi-

tecture, ornament the town; but the palace, built of black basalt, profusely ornamented with wood carving, was burnt down in 1864, and only the great gateway now remains. The tombs of the Bhonsl4 kings lie to the south of the city.

Nagpur doesa large and increasing trade, the chief imports being

wheat and other grain, salt, country cloth, European piece goods, silk, and spices. export. are still, in spite of the competition of English stuffs, in great request. Most of the public offices are in the station of Sitabaldi.

NAGY-KOROS (.¢., Great Korés) is a town, or rather an overgrown village, in Hungary, in the district and 50 miles to the south-west of Pesth. It lies in the midst of a sandy plain, and is a station on the railway from Pesth to Temesvar. In 1880 it contained 22,769 inhabitants, chiefly Protestants, who are engaged in wine- culture and the rearing of cattle and sheep. Its gymnasium is esteemed one of the best schools in Hungary.

NAGY-VARAD. See GrosswaRDEIN.

NAHARRO, Bartrotomé DE Torres, a Spanish dra- matist of the period immediately preceding that of Cervantes and Lope de Vega, born at Torres in the neigh- pourhood of Badajoz, was for some time a captive in Algiers, and after receiving his freedom visited the court of Leo X. at Rome. Here his satirical pen excited such hostility that he was compelled to fly to Naples, where he lived for some time under the protection of Fabricio Colonna, and where he published his Propaladza in Ley. He died in poverty and obscurity ; the time and place are unknown. See Drama, vol. vii. p. 420.

NAHUM. “The book of the vision of Nahum the Elkoshite” (O1M2, “compassionate”), which stands seventh among the minor prophets, is entirely directed against Nineveh, and predicts the utter destruction of the bloody and rapacious city, its empire, and its gods by the tardy but sure and irresistible vengeance of Jehovah. The fall of Nineveh is the deliverance of Judah; Jehovah, so terrible to His adversaries, so unfailing in His righteous judgments, is a sure and gracious defender to them that take refuge with Him. It appears therefore that, when the prophet. wrote, the Judeans were still suffering from Assyrian oppression, perhaps even from present or recent invasion, for in i. 15 [ii. 1] he speaks of the annual feasts and the sacrifices of the sanctuary as disturbed by the “wicked one” passing through the land. It is not, how- ever, from a merely patriotic standpoint that Nahum regards the Assyrian harlot as Jehovah’s enemy ; she is the enemy of mankind, who sells all nations through her witcherafts and whoredoms—that is, in the strength of her heathenish religion (iii. 4),—and she shall perish with none to pity her, for all have suffered continually from the wickedness of the ruthless empire. ‘The exordium in chap. 1, which depicts Jehovah as the jealous and avenging God, isa noble utterance of faith in the righteousness which rules in the world’s history. The other two chapters are entirely occupied with the catastrophe of Nineveh ; the battle without and within the walls is described with great poetic force, not in finished pictures but with broad effec- tive strokes and daring imagery, and apparently with some local knowledge, though the latter is hardly so detailed as to justify the conclusion that the prophet had himself seen the imperial city. It might be argued on the same prin- ciple that he had also seen No-Ammon or Thebes, a description of the sack of which forms an episode in chap. iii. 8 sg. The reference here seems to be to the taking of No by Assurbanipal (G. Smith, Hist. of Assurbanipal, 55, 70; Schrader, KX. A. 7’, 2d ed., p. 450)

about 660 B.c. —an event only known from the Assyrian monuments. Nahum must have prophesied after this date, probably not

Cloth forms the chief article of manufacture and The finer fabrics of Nagpur have long bcen famous, and

165

long after, that is, in the troublous times of Manasseh, which agrees well with i, 15. To suppose that his pro- phecy was occasioned by the actual approach of the Medes to destroy Nineveh, or by one of the earlier campaigns which preceded their final success, is arbitrary; for the judgment is predicted on general principles of divine justice, and there is no indication that the prophet knew what nation was to execute it. His descriptions, though pictorially vivid, are historically quite vague. The details of the decadence of the Assyrian empire are in truth so obscure that to search for the immediate occasion of the prophecy is mere guesswork.

Thename Elkoshite OWPPY, in the LXX. ’EAneoatos—the pronun- ciation therefore is uncertain) denotes the prophet’s home or birth- place. Jerome’s mention of a ruined “‘viculus Elccsi” in Galilee stands quite alone; Hitzig supports the idea that the prophet was a Galilean by the name Capernaum, which probably means “ village of Nahum,” but of what Nahum we do not know. The confused account by R. Jos. Schwarz (D. Heil. Land, p. 149) of a grave shown as that of the prophet Nahum an hour north of Tiberias lacks confirmation. Internal evidence Jeads us rather to conclude that Nahum was a man of Judah, and John vii. 52 appears to show that he was not held to be a Galilean in the time of Christ, when the fashion of localizing tombs of prophets was already in full force (Matt. xxiii. 29). Later tradition associated Nahum with the region against which he prophesicd, and in the 12th century Benjamin of Tudela visited his synagogue at Mosul and histomb in Babylonia. It was probably under Christian influence that the site of this tomb was ultimately fixed at Alkésh, the seat of the later Nestorian patriarchs, near the convent of Rabban Hormizd, a few miles north of Mosul, where it is now reverenced by Christians, Moslems, and Jews. The sepulchre is a simple plaster box without signs of antiquity (Layard, Nineveh, i. 233). The history of this identification of Elkosh is obscure ; it is mentioned in the 16th century by Masius (ap. Asse- mani, B.

O., i. 525), as also in two Nestorian MSS. written at Alkésh by the same scribe in 1709 (Wright, Cat., 1068) and 1713 (Assem., iii. i. 852) ; it seems, moreover, to be implied in a gloss of Bar Ali, given by Payne Smith (Thes. Syr., 221), but not in Hoffmann's edition. On the other hand no very early notice either of the tomb or of the place has yet bcen found. Alkésh, but not the Nahum legend, is mentioncd in a poem of the 11th century in Cardahi, Liber Thesauri (Rome, 1875); the same author places one Israel of Alkésh in the 8th century, but the date is questionable (see Néldeke in Z. D. AL. G., xxxi. 165). The grave is undoubtedly a fabrication, and the evidence is not favourable to Ewald's con-

jecture that the name is ancient and the place really the city of

Nahum. His further conjecture that some difficult words in Nahum may be Assyrian has not been confirmed by students of the inscriptions.

Literature.—The commentaries on the minor prophets ; O. Strauss, Nahumt de Nino vatictnium, 1853. For alist of other books see Reuss, Gesch, d. A. T., p. 369. (WwW. R. S.)

NAIADS. See NYMPHS.

NAILS. A nail is a headed pin or spike of thetal, commonly of iron, The primary and principal use of nails is in wood work (joinery and carpentery), but they are also employed in upholstery, shoemaking, saddlery, slating, sheet-metal working, horse-shoeing, and numerous other trades. The consumption in all civilized communities is enormous, but it is exceptionally great where timber houses and wooden erections generally prevail, as in the United States of America, and in many British colonies. Size, form of head, nature of point, and special uses all give names to different classes of nails. Thus we have the names tacks, sprigs, and brads for very small nails ; rose, clasp, and clout, according to the form of head; and flat points or sharp points according to the taper of the spike. Arranged according to the manner in which they are manufactured, nails may fall into four principal classes : —(1) ordinary or hand-wrought nails; (2) machine-wrought and cut nails; (3) wire or French nails ; and (4) cast nails. The nailer handicraft was at one time a great industry in the country around Birmingham, and to this day in conjunction with chain-making it constitutes

an important though declining trade. It 1s essentially a family industry, carried on in the meanest of workshops, with a very few simple blacksmith’s tools and appliances. The nails are forged from nail-rods heated in a small

smith’s hearth, hammered on a low anvil, the nail length cut off on a chisel attached to the anvil, and the head formed by dropping the spike into a hole ina “ bolster ” of steel, from which enough of the spike is left projecting to form the head, which is variously flattened out. The head, in the case of clasp nails, is formed with two strokes of the hammer, while rose nails require four blows. The heads of the larger-sized nails are made with the aid of an “oliver” or mechanical hammer, and for ornamental or stamped heads ‘“‘swages” or dies are employed. The conditions of life and labour among the hand nailers in England are exceedingly unsatisfactory : married women and young children of both sexes are set to work long hours in small filthy sheds attached to their dwellings, and their employment is controlled by middle- men or nail-niasters, who supply them with the nail-rods and pay for work done, sometimes in money and sometimes in kind on the truck system. The handicraft is, however, an expiring industry, as machine-wrought and cut nails are rapidly supplanting most corresponding kinds of hand- made nails. Horse nails alone continue to be made in large measure by hand labour (at St Ninians near Stirling, as well as in the Birmingham district). These are made from the finest Swedish charcoal iron, hammered out to a fine sharp point. They must be tough and homogeneous throughout, so that there may be no danger of their breaking over and leaving portions sunk in the hoof. The credit of perfecting machinery for the making of nails belongs to American inventors, and by numerous stages the nail-making machines have arrived at a high degree of efliciency. Of late years mild steel, such as the plates employed for shipbuilding, has been largely used for machine-made nails. Without much detail it would be impossible to convey an idea of how the machine, fed with heated (to black heat only) strips of metal having a breadth and thickness sufficient for the nail to be made, shears off by means of its slicer the “nail blank,” which, falling down, is firmly clutched at the neck till a heading die moving with sufficient force strikes against its upper end and forms the head, and the nail

now completed is liberated, passing out through an inclined shoot. In the case of large nails the taper of the shank and point is secured by the sectional form to which the strips are rolled; brads, sprigs, and small nails, on the other hand, are cut from uniform strips in an angular direction from head to point, the strip being turned over after each blank is cut so that the points and heads are taken from Opposite sides alter- nately, and a uniform taper on two opposite sides of the nail, from head to point, is secured. The machines turn out nails with wonderful rapidity, varying with the size of the nails produced from about 100 to 1000 per minute. Wire or French nails are made from round wire, which is unwound, straightened, cut into lengths, and headed by a machine the same in principle as the pin-making apparatus (see Pins), but the pointing is accomplished by the pressure of dies in the same manner as the head is formed. Cast nails, which are cast in sand moulds by the ordinary pro- cess, are used principally for horticultural purposes, and the hob-nails or tackets of shoemakers are also cast. NAIN, Lz. The three brothers Le Nain, who have of late attracted much attention, occupy a peculiar position in the history of French art. Although they figure amongst the original members of the French Academy, their works show no trace of the influences which prevailed when that body was founded. Their sober execution and choice of colour recall characteristics of the Spanish school, and when the world of Paris was busy with mythological allegories, and the “heroic deeds” of the king, the three Le Nain devoted themselves chiefly to subjects of humble life such as Boys Playing Cards, The Forge, or The Peasants’

Noonday Meal. These three paintings, together with others, amongst which is the noble Procession in the Interior of a Church (erroneously attributed to the Le Nain), are now in the Louvre; various others may be found in loca] collections, and some fine drawings may be seen in the British Museum and in the Albertina; but their signature

is rare, and is never accompanied by initials which might

enable us to distinguish the work of one or other of the brothers. Their lives are lost in obscurity ; all that can be

affirmed is that they were born at Laon in Picardy early in the 17th century. In 1633 Antoine, the eldest, was admitted painter at Paris; in 1648 he and

his brothers Louis and Mathew were received into the Academy, and in the same year both Antoine and Louis died. Mathew lived on till 1677; he bore the title of chevalier, and painted many portraits. Mary of Medici and Mazarin were amongst his sitters, but these works (like his portrait

of the unfortunate Cinq Mars, sold by auction at the Palais

Royal in 1848) seem to have disappeared. Champfleury

has written two works on the brothers Le Nain (1850,

1865),

NAIRN, a small maritime county in the north-east of Scotland, is bounded W. and 8, by Inverness, E. by Elgin,

and N. by the Moray Firth. Its greatest length from

north to south is about 20 miles, and its greatest breadth about 15 miles; the area is 114,400 acres, or about 179 square miles,

The coast is low and sandy, and is skirted by sandbanks which render navigation dangerous. The eastern part of the seaboard district is formed of low sand-hills which extend into Morayshire. Parallel with the coast-line there is a great deposit of sand and gravel, which forms a terraced bank rising to the height of about 90 feet, and extends from 4 to 5 miles inward; it rests on Old Red Sandstone, which sometimes protrudes on the surface. This undulating plain is bordered by a hilly region which occupies two-thirds of the county. Where it joins the plain it is skirted by a strip of Devonian associated with coarse conglomerate. The hills, some of which reach a height of about 1500 feet, are formed of granite and grey gneiss, with occasional beds of primitive limestone. Free- stone is plentiful, and there is also a species of dark bluestone which is greatly valued for ornamental building. Shell-marl is obtained from several of the lochs. The only rivers are the Nairn and Findhorn, with their tributaries. The Nairn, after entering the county, flows north-east for a distance of about 30 miles, and falls into the Moray Firth at the town of Nairn. The Findhorn, which also rises in Inverness, flows north-east through the southern and hilly

district of the county into Morayshire. The soil of the alluvial plain on the coast is light and porous, and has been rendered very fertile by careful cultivation. There is also some rich land on the Findhorn. The most advanced methods of agriculture are in operation, but only a small proportion of the surface is capable of tillage, scarcely more than a fifth of the total area being under crops. The hills are for the most part covered with heath or pasture suitable for sheep, intermixed with fir and larch plantations.

The number of holdings in 1880 was only 392, and of these 214 did not exceed 50 acres in extent, 92 were between 50 and 100 acres, and 86 above 100 acres. According to the agricultural returns of 1882 there were 26,463 acres under cultivation, of which 9359 were under corn crops, 4871 under green crops, 10,081 under rotation grasses, and 2124 permanent pasture ; 12 acres were under orchards, and 18,241 under woods, Very little wheat is grown, the prin- cipal corn crops being barley or bere, 3156 acres, and oats, 5917 acres. Ofthe green crops 4201 acres were under turnips or swedes, and 617 under potatoes. Horses in 1882 numbered 1292, cattle

5992 (1801 being cows or heifers in milk or in calf), sheep 17,442, and pigs 981,

The valued rental of the county in 1674 was £15,162 Scots, or about £1268 sterling, Exclusive of railways, the valuation in 1881-82 was £36,217. According to the latest return the number

NAI~NAK

of proprietors was 537, possessing lands of a gross annual value of Of these 467 possessed less than 1 acre, and 5 more

£41,767. than 5000 acres, viz., earl of Cawdor, 46,176 acres ; James C. G.

Brodie, 22,378; N. J. M‘Gillivray, 12,600; earl of Leven and

Melville, 7805; and Hugh Davidson, 6363. There are several fine mansions in the county,

lodges. is Ee ood harbour at Nairn. The county possesses no special trade or manufacture, but there is a large distillery at a short distance from the county town.

Nairn includes three entire parishes, Nairn, and portions of the parishes of Cawdor, Croy, Dyke, Moy, Petty, Daviot, and Urquhart,—the last two being detached por- tions, lying within Inverness and Ross respectively, at considerable distances from the rest of the county. Since 1801, when it was 8322, the population has been slowly but steadily increasing, and sn 1881 numbered 10,455 (4979 males and 5476 females). There is one royal burgh, Nairn, and a burgh of barony, Auldearn. The county is under the same sheriffdom as Elgin and Banff, and unites with Elgin in returning a member to parliament. Anciently Nairn was included under the province of Moray, which was governed by ariormormaer. Roman coins have been found at a vitrified fort on the summit of a hill in the parish of Cawdor. There are numerous stone circles, including a very perfect one on the summit of Lethenbar Hill, one at Golford, and one at Moyness consisting of two concentric circles and a rocking stone. Cawdor Castle, a

fine baronial structure, in a very picturesque situation, 5 miles south of Nairn, is associated in unauthentic legend with the murder of King Duncan by Macbeth; but no part of the building is really older than the 15th century.

Naren, a royal and parliamentary burgh and county town, is pleasantly situated near the Moray Firth, on the left bank of the Nairn, and on the Highland Railway, 93 miles west-north-west of Aberdeen and 15 north-east of Inverness. ‘The principal buildings are the town and county hall (1818) surmounted by a spire, the hospital (1846) in the Italian style, the new public hall erected at a cost of £12,000, and the academy. Nairn is much frequented in summer for sea-bathing, and possesses very complete artificial baths. There is a commodious harbour with breakwater and pier. The principal exports are corn, eggs, potatoes, herrings, haddocks, freestone, and timber, and the principal imports coal, lime, and provisions. There are freestone quarries in the neighbourhood, and the town possesses rope and twine factories. There is also a salmon fishery. The burgh unites with Fortrose, Forres, and Inverness in returning a member to parliament.

The population of the parliamentary burgh in 1881 was 4161, and that of the royal burgh 4665.

The town, whose original name was Invernairn, stood at first at some distance from its present site. Its earliest extant charter, which bears, however, to be a renewal of one received from Alexander I. in the 12th century, was granted by James VI. in 1589. At that time the inhabitants of the western half of the town spoke only Gaelic, and until a late period the distinction between the two sections of the town inhabited by different races was very clearly marked.

NAIRNE, Caroune OxrpHant, Baroness (1766- 1845), the authoress of many fine Scotch songs, was born in the “auld hoose” of Gask, Perthshire, 16th August 1766. She was descended from an old family which had settled in Perthshire in the 13th century, and which could boast of kinship with the royal race of Scotland. Her father, Laurence Oliphant, was one of the foremost sup- porters of the Jacobite cause, and she was named Caroline in memory of Prince Charlie. In early childhood her health was extremely delicate, but a certain refined sensibility was the only trace of this which she retained in after years. In the schoolroom she was known as “pretty Miss Car,” and afterwards her striking beauty and pleasing manners earned for her the name of the “Flower of Strathearn.” Miss Oliphant was one of the earliest admirers of Robert Burns, and induced her brother Laurence to enter his name as subscriber to the first edition of his poems. It was the attempts of Burns in the Scots Musical Museum to adapt words of a more refined character to the old Scotch airs that suggested to her to undertake

in addition to a number of shooting The coast is skirted by the Highland Railway, and there

Ardclach, Auldearn, and

genuine

a similar enterprise. Her first effort was a new version of the “Pleughman,” which her brother introduced at an entertainment to the Gask tenantry, and

which soon met with great popularity throughout central Scotland. In June 1800 she married William Murray Nairne, whose rank as fifth Lord Nairne was in abeyance on account of attainder. He was then assistant inspector-general of barracks in Scotland. At the instigation of the Misses Hume, daughters of Baron Hume, she some time after her marriage undertook to bring out a collection of national airs set to appropriate words. To the collection she con- tributed a large number of original songs, adopting the signature “ B.B.”—“ Mrs Bogan of Bogan.” The music was edited by R. A. Smith, and the collection was published at Edinburgh under the name of the Scottish Minstrel (6 vols., 1821-24). Her husband was restored to his rank in 1824, but died 9th July 1830. After his death she took up her residence at Enniskerry, county Wicklow, but on account of the delicate health of her only son she went to the Continent, where she spent several years. The son died at Brussels in 1838. Lady Nairne returned to Gask in 1843, and died there 26th October 1845.

The songs of Lady Nairne may be classed under three heads :— (1) those illustrative of the characters and manners of the old Scotch gentry, such as ‘‘The Laird of Cockpen,” ‘‘The Fife Laird,” and “John Tod”; (2) Jacobite songs, composed for the most part to gratify her kinsman the aged chief of Strowan, among the best- known of which are perhaps ‘‘Wha’ll be King but Charlic,” “‘Oharlie is my Darling,” “The Hundred Pipers,” ‘‘He’s owre the Hills,” and ‘‘ Bonnie Charlie’s noo awa”; and (3) songs not included under the above heads, ranging over a varicty of subjects from ‘‘Caller Herrin’” to the ‘Land o’ the Leal.” For vivacity, athos, and bright wit her songs are surpassed only by those of Burns, and, although their note is less full and strong than his, it is perhaps in some respects morc mellow and tender.

Lays from Strathearn, by Caroline, Baroness Nairne, arranged with Symphonies and Accompanimenis for the Pianoforte by Finlay Dun, appeared without date some time after her death. Her poems were published in vol. i. of the Modern Scottish Minstrel, 1857; but the most eomplete eolleetion is that contained in Life and Songs of the Baroness Nairne, with a Memoir and Poems of Caroline Oliphant the Younger, edited by Rev. Charles Rogers, LL.D., 2d ed., 1869.

NAKHICHEVAN, or NaKHJEVAN, a city of Russian Armenia, the chief town of a circle in the government of Erivan, is situated in 39° 12’ N. lat. and 45° 25’ E. long., 100 miles south-east of Erivan and 267 miles from Tiflis. It occupies the brow of one of the last spurs of the Karabakh Mountains (Anti-Caucasus), 3015 feet above the sea, and looks out over the wide and beautiful valley of the Araxes. Built and rebuilt again and again, Nakhichevan is full of half-obliterated evidence of former periods of prosperity. The present houses have for the most part been quarried from ancient ruins; of the palace of the Atabeks of Azerbijan there still remains a gateway with a Persian inscription, flanked by two brick towers; and ata little distance stands the so-called Tower of the Khans, a richly decorated twelve-sided structure about 102 feet in circumference and 75 feet in height, dating, to judge by the marvellously executed inscription which runs round the cor- nice, from the 12th century. There are also ruins of a large mosque. Situated on the highroad to Tabriz and Teheran, Nakhichevan is the seat of a considerable transit trade. In the Persian period the city is said to have had 40,000 inhabitants; in 1863 there were only 6251, and in 1873 6877 (2157 Armenians, 4697 Tartars). At the latter date there were 1200 houses, one Russian Greek church, three Armenian churches, four mosques, and two caravanserals.

The origin of Nakhichevan (the Naxuanaof Ptolemy) is unknown. Armenian tradition claims Noah as its founder, and a mean mound of earth in the city is still visited by many pilgrims as his grave. Laid waste by the Persians in the 4th century, Nakhichevan sank into comparative insignificance, but by the 10th century had recovered its prosperity. In 1064 it was taken by Alp Arslan, and sn the 13th century it fell a prey to the followers of Jenghiz Khan. It afterwards suffered frequently during the wars between the Persians, Armenians, and Turks, and it finally passed into Russian possession by the peace of Turkmen-Chai in 1828.

NAKHICHEVAN-ON-THE-DON, a town of southern

Russia, situated in the government of Ekaterinoslaff, dis- trict of Rostoff, 6 miles by rail to the north-east of the latter town, on the right bank of the Don. It was founded in 1780 by Armenians who emigrated from the Crimea

and were allowed to settle on the banks of the Don, forming there an independent district between Azoff and the fort of St Demetrius, now Rostoff; they gave to the chief town of their new settlement the name of the older city in Caucasus. Owing to the fertility of the region, its advantageous situation for trade, and the privileges granted to the settlers, Nakhichevan soon became a wealthy place, and it still is the administrative centre of the ‘‘ Armenian district,” which extends as a narrow strip along the banks of the Don, with a population of upwards of 25,000, of whom 16,500—principally Armenians, with some 2000 Russians—are settled at Nakhichevan. The town has several tobacco and wadding factories, tallow-melting houses, soap-works, brick-works, and tanneries, with an aggregate annual production of about £100,000. The chief occupation of the Armenians, however, is trade, which they carry on throughout southern Russia, while the less wealthy of them are renowned as innkeepers on the Caucasus. The rural population depend mainly on cattle- breeding, and to some extent also on fishing. NAMAQUALAND, a vast region of south-western Africa, extending along the west coast for a distance of 600 miles from the south of Damaraland (22° 43’S. lat.) to the north of the county of Clanwilliam (30° 35’ 8. lat.), and stretching inland from 80 to 350 miles. It is divided by the lower course of the Orange River into two portions — Little Namaqualand to the south, and Great Namaqua- land to the north. Little Namaqualand, incorporated with Cape Colony since 1865, has an area of 20,635 square miles, and in 1875 had a population of 12,233, of whom 2675 were whites. The seat of magistracy is at Spring- bokfontein, on a branch of the Buffels River, about 60 miles from the coast, with which it communicates by a mule-railway (96 miles long) ending at Port Nolloth on Robbe or Seal Bay. Ookiep, 6 miles to the north of Springbokfontein, is, next to the diamond fields of Kimberley, the most important mining place in South Africa, its copper mines (worked by the Cape Copper Mining Company) giving employment to about 1500 people ; the output in 1882 was 16,311 tons of extremely rich ore. The European miners are mainly from Corn- wall and Mansfeld. Copper is also worked at Concordia, Spektakel, and (since 1853) Kodas. Great Namaqualand has an area of 987,000 square miles, about sixteen times the size of England; but its population does not exceed 20,000, mostly Namaquas and other Hottentots (see Horrentots). For 30, 40, or even 100 miles inland the country is a sandy waste, and on the eastern side it passes off into the great Kalahari desert.

The central portion is traversed from north to south by the Fish River or Oub and its tributaries, which ultimately reach the Orange River about 70 miles above its mouth 3 but, except after rain, they are mere dry beds. And the rains are periodical and partial,—the result almost always of thunderstorms. In a few minutes after the thunder- clouds have burst the country is flooded ; turbid currents half a mile wide roar through a ravine which has not shown a drop of water for years previously ; rivulets flow where one would think water had never run before (J. F. Wilson). The surface of the interior part of the country is covered with hills, irregularly distributed, but with a general tendency to run in lines parallel to the coast. Towards the south-east the Gei Kharas mountains reach a height of 6570 feet, and the smaller Khari Kharas group about 5200. The Nuaibeb mountains on the borders of

Damaraland are a little higher (6700 feet). The only Europeans as yet settled in Great Namaqualand are the Basel and the Wesleyan missionaries; but it has been decided to establish a regular German colony at Angra Pequefia, the only important bay on the whole coast. The country, like Little Namaqualand, has long been known to be rich in minerals. The proposal made about 1876 to annex it and Damaraland to Cape Colony fell through.

See Andersson, Lake Ngami, &c., London, 1856 ; Tindall, Lecture on Namaqualand, Cape Town; Carl Zerrenner, Reise des Ingenieurs A. Thies nach den Kupferbergwerken Namaqualands, Freiberg, 1860; Petermann’s Mittheilungen, 1865, p. 889-91; W. C. Pal- grave’s Report of Mission to Damaraland and Great Namaqualand in 1876, Cape Town, 1877; Cape Monthly Magazine, 1871 and 1880; Rev. Benjamin Ridsdale, Scenes and Adventures in Great Namaqua- land, 1883.

NAMES. Names, and the study of proper names of persons and places, are not without scientific and historical importance, but, on the whole, are perhaps rather matter of curious interest. It stands to reason that, even in the earliest societies of “articulate speaking men,” all known persons, places, and groups of human beings must have had names by which they could be spoken of and by which they were recognized. The study of these names and of their survival in civilization enables us in some cases to ascertain

what peoples inhabited districts now tenanted by persons of far different speech. Thus the names of mountains and rivers in many parts of England are Celtic, —for example, to take familiar instances, Usk, Esk, and Avon. There are also local names (such as Mona, Monmouth, Mynwy, and others) which seem to be relies of tribes even older than the Celtic stocks, and "vestiges of non-Aryan people, whom the Celts found in possession both on the Continent and in the British Isles."1 These are affairs of somewhat dubious conjecture, but it is certain enough that the Celtic names, with their mysterious and romantic sounds, do linger in English valleys like the last echoes of Arthur's horn among the hollows of the hills. And it is no less certain that the English name is some- times the mere translation, perhaps unconscious, of the earlier Celtic appellation, often added to the more ancient word. Penpole Point in Somerset is an obvious example of this redoubling of names. As to the meaning and nature of ancient local names, they are as a rule purely descriptive. A river is called by some word which merely signifies 'the water"; a hill has a name which means no more than "the point," "the peak," "the castle." Celtic names are often of a more romantic tone, as Ardna- murchan, "the promontory by the great ocean," an admirable description of the bold and steep headland which breasts the wash of the Atlantic. As a general rule the surviving Celtic names, chiefly in Ireland, Wales, and Scotland, all contain some wide meaning of poetic appropriateness. The English names, on the other hand, commonly state some very simple fact, and very frequently do no more than denote property, such and such a town or hamlet, "ton" or "ham," is the property of the Billings, Uffings, Tootings, or whoever the early English settlers in the district may have been. The same attachment to the idea of property is exhibited in even the local names of petty fields in English parishes. Occasionally one finds a bit of half humorous description, as when a sour, starved, and weedy plot is named "starvacre"; but more usually fields are known as "Thompson's great field," "Smith's small field," "the fouracre," or the like. The name of some farmer or peasant owner or squatter of ancient date survives for centuries, attached to what was once his pro- perty. Thus the science of local names has a double historical value. The names indicate the various races

Elton, Origins of English History, p. 165; Rhys, Lectures on Celtie Philology, 181, 182.

(Celtic, Roman, and English in Great Britain) who have set in the form of names the seal of their possession on the soil, Again, the meanings of the names illustrate the characters of the various races. The Romans have left us names connected with camps (castra, chesters) and inilitary roads; the English have used simple descriptions of the baldest kind, or have exhibited their attachment to the idea of property; the Celtic names (like those which the red men have left in America, or the blacks in Australia) are musical with poetic fancy, and filled with interest in the aspects and the sentiment of nature. Our race carries with it the ancient names of an older people into every continent, and titles perhaps originally given to places in the British Isles by men who had not yet learned to polish their weapons of flint may now be found in Australia, America, Africa, and the islands of the furthest Seas.

Local names were originally imposed in a handy local manner. The settler or the group of cave-men styled the neighbouring river “the water,” the neighbouring hill “the peak,” and these terms often still survive in relics of tongues which can only be construed by the learned. The history of personal names is longer and more complex, but proceeds from beginnings almost as simple. But in personal names the complexity of human character, and the gradual processes of tangling and disentangling the threads of varied human interest, soon come in, and personal names are not imposed once and for all. Each man in very early societies may have many names, in different characters and at different periods of his life. The oldest personal names which we need examine here are the names which indicate, not an individual, but a group, held together by the conscious sense or less conscious sentiment of kindred, or banded together for reasons of convenience. An examination of customs prevalent among the most widely separated races of Asia, Africa, Australia, and America proves that groups conceiving themselves to be originally of the same kin are generally styled by the name of some animal or other object (animate or inanimate) from which they claim descent. This object is known as the “totem,” from the Red-Indian word dodhaim. Of this topic it must here suffice to say that the earliest and most widely spread class and family names among uncivilized people are totemistic. The groups of supposed kin, however widely

scattered in local distribution, are known as wolves, bears, turtles, suns, moons, cockatoos, reeds, and what not, according as each group claims descent from this or that stock, and wears a badge representing this or that animal, plant, or natural object. Unmistak- able traces of the same habit of naming exist among Semitic and Teutonic races, and even among Greeks and Romans. The origin of this class of names cannot well be investigated in this place, but it may be observed that the names chosen are commonly those of objects which can be easily drawn in a rude yet recognizable way, and easily expressed in the language of gesture. In addition to the totem names (which indicate, in each example, supposed blood-kindred), local aggregates of men received local names. We hear of the “hill-men,” “the cave-men,” “the bush-men,” “the coast-men,” the ‘men of the plain,” precisely as in the old Attic divisions of Aktaioi, Pediaioi, and so forth. When a tribe comes to recognize its own unity, as a rule it calls itself by some term meaning simply “the men,” all other tribes being regarded as barbarous or inferior, Probably other neighbouring tribes also call themselves “the men” in another dialect or language, while the people in the neighbourhood are known by an opprobrious epithet, as Rakshasas among the early Aryan dwellers in India, or Eskimo (raw-eaters) in the far north of the American continent.

169

Leaving tribal for personal names, we find that, among most uncivilized races, a name (derived from some incident or natural object) is given at the time of birth by the parents of each new-born infant. Occasionally the name is imposed before the child is born, and the proud parents call themselves father and mother of such an one before the expected infant sees the light. In most cases tke name (the earliest name) denotes some phenomenon of nature ; thus Dobrizhofer met in the forests a young man styled “Gold flower of day,” that is, “Dawn,” his father having been named “Sun.” Similar names are commonly given by the natives of Australia, while no names are more common among North-American Indians than those derived from sun, moon, cloud, and wind. This simple historical fact is very damaging to the mythological theories which resolve into solar or elemental myths all legends where the names of the characters can be philologically twisted into descriptions of natural phenomena. It is concluded that these

myths originally described incidents in the life of clouds, winds, and tides, whereas names like those on which the theory depends are commonly applied by savage peoples to ordinary human beings. Marshal Saxe was not the sun because his mistress was named “Aurore,” and Cephalus and Procris were real persons to those who heard their story, although by a series of logical jumps their names may be interpreted as synonyms of the sun and the dew.

The names of savage persons are not permanent. The name first given is ordinarily changed (at the ceremony answering to confirmation in church) for some more appropriate and descriptive nickname, and that, again, is apt to be superseded by various “honour-giving names” derived from various exploits. The common superstition against being “named” has probably produced the custom by which each individual is addressed, when possible, by some wide term of kinship—‘“ brother,” “ father,” and the like. The bad luck which in Zulu customs as in Vedic myths attends the utterance of the real name is evaded by this system of addresses. Could we get a savage—an Iroquois, for example—to explain his titles, we would find that he is, say, “ Morning Cloud” (by birth-name), “Hungry Wolf” (by confirmation name), “He that raises the white fellow’s scalp” (by honour-giving name), of the Crane totem (by family and hereditary name, as under- stood by ourselves). When society grows so permanent that male kinship and paternity are recognized, the custom of patronymics is introduced. The totem name gives place to a gentile name, itself probably a patronymic in form; or, as in Greece, the gentile name gives place to a local name, derived from the deme. Thus a Roman is called Caius; Julius is his gentile name (of the Julian clan) ; Cesar isa kind of hereditary nickname. A Greek is Thucydides (the name usually derived from the grand- father), the son of Olorus, of the deme of Halimusia.

This system of names answered the purposes of Greek and Roman civilization. In Europe, among the Teutonic races, the stock-names (probably totemistic in origin) sur- vive in English local names, which speak of the “ton” or “ham” of the Billings or Tootings. An examination of these names, as collected in Kemble’s Anglo-Saaons, proves that they were originally derived, as a rule, from animals and plants. Our English ancestors had for personal names compound words, as ‘‘ Noble Wolf” (Ethelwulf),

“Wolf of War,” and so forth, and these names certainly testify to a somewhat primitive and fierce stage of society. Then came more vulgar nicknames and personal descriptions, as “Tong,” “ Brown,” “ White,” and so forth. Other names are directly derived from the occupation or craft (Smith, Fowler, Sadler) of the man to whom they were given, and

yet other names were derived from places. The noble and XVII. — 22

170

landowner was called “of” such and such a place (the German von, and French de), while the humbler man was called not “of” but “at” such a place, as in the name “ Attewell,” or merely by the local name without the particle. If we add to these patronymics formed by the addition of “son,” and terms derived from Biblical characters (the latter adopted after the Reformation as a reaction against the names of saints in the calendar), we have almost exhausted the sources of modern English and European names.

NAMUR, a province of Belgium, is bounded on the N. by South Brabant, on the E. by Li¢ge and Luxemburg, on the 8. by France, and on the W. by Hainault, having a maximum length from north to south of 55 miles; its greatest breadth is 45 muiles, and the area 1413 square miles. The surface is much varied by hill and dale, being traversed by the forest of Ardennes, which here attains a height of about 2100 feet; in some parts, especially in the valley of the Meuse between Dinant and Liége, the scenery is beautiful and romantic. The principal rivers are the Meuse and its tributary the Sambre, which joins it at Namur. Geologically the province belongs to the Carbon- iferous system; the iron mines are very rich, and along with the coal-pits employ a considerable proportion of the industry of the province. Lead mines are also worked to some extent; and building-stone, slate, and excellent marble are quarried. The soil in the arrondissement of Namur is a rich marl, fertile and well-cultivated ; about one-third of the entire province is occupied by wood, and in the arrondissement of Dinant there are considerable stretches of heath. The climate is, generally speaking, moist and cold, Wheat, rye, oats, barley, hemp, flax, and hops are the principal crops raised, but the vine is also grown, As regards live stock, sheep are preferred to horned cattle ; large numbers of horses, strong and of a good breed, are also reared. The special manufacture of Namur is cutlery, for

which the province is famed. Among the other industries may be mentioned porcelain and glass- making, paper-making, cotton-spinning, and tanning. At the census of 1876 the population was 315,796. There are three arrondissements,—Dinant, Namur, and Philippe- ville.

Namor (Flem., Vamen), capital of the above province, is picturesquely situated on both banks of the Sambre, at the point of its junction with the Meuse, 35 miles south- east from Brussels. The rivers are crossed by several stone bridges. The streets are broad and clean, and there are two or three good squares. There are almost no buildings of any considerable antiquity now standing, if the 1lth-century belfry and the palace of justice, dating from 1464 as the monastery of St Albinus, be excepted. The cathedral church of St Aubain or St Albin is a modern building (1751-72) in the Renaissance style, adorned in front with several statues in white marble. The interior has statues by Delvaux and Parmentier, a fine carved oak pulpit by Geerts, and the tomb of Don John of Austria, who died at his camp at Bouges, about a mile to the north-east of the town, in 1578. The church of St Loup is also a fine building, richly adorned in the interior with marble and stone carving. Besides several other churches, the town has a town-hall, a theatre, a seminary, a picture gallery, library, and archeological museum, various charitable institutions, barracks, de. The manufactures are considerable, cutlery being the specialty. Tanning is also extensively carried on, and a great number of the inhabitants are employed in the mines and quarries of the neighbourhood. The situation of

Namur gives it great advantages as a centre for trade, The population in 1875 was 27,068.

In Cesar’s time Namur was the capital of the Aduatuci, who, he tells us (B. G., ii. 29), after his defeat of the Nervii, leaving all their other strongholds betook themselves to this one town ‘‘eoregie natura munitum.” Defended by walls of considerable thickness, by well-constructed outworks on both sides of the rivers, and by the citadel on a rocky eminence at their junction, it was long a place of great strength in modern times also. It was taken by Louis XIV. in 1692, an event which was recorded by Racine and celebrated in verse by Boileau, but it was recovered in 1695 by the British and Dutch

under William IT1., after a siege of ten months, The fortifications were destroyed in 1784 by Joseph II. of Austria, restored and strengthened in 1817 under the inspection of Wellington, and finally razed in 1866.

NANAK. See Inp1a, vol. xii. p. 808.

NANA SAHIB is the common designation of Dandhu Panth, adopted son of the ex-peshwa of the Mahrattas, Baji Rao, who took a leading part in the great Indian mutiny, and was proclaimed peshwa by the mutineers. See Iyp1a, vol. xii. p. 810. Nana Sahib was responsible for the massacres at Cawnpore, and was engaged in the protracted campaigns in Oudh. In the closing days of 1859, when the last remnants of the rebels disappeared over the Nepalese frontier, the Nana was among the fugitives. His death was reported some time afterwards, but his real fate remains obscure. Compare NEPAL.

NANCY, the ancient capital of Lorraine, afterwards the chief town of the French department of Meurthe, and since 1872 that of the department of Meurthe-et-Moselle, is situated 219 miles east of Paris by railway, on the left bank of the Meurthe, 6 miles above its junction with the Moselle. It consists of two distinct portions: the old

town in the north-west, between the citadel and the streets and square which bear the name of Stanislas, is composed

a

Plan of Nancy.

of narrow and winding streets ; the Stanislas town in the south-east has, on the other hand, wide straight streets which cross each other at right angles and allow views of the hills around the city. Beyond the gates (several of which are preserved on account of their antiquarian interest, and still indicate the line of the old civic boundaries) long suburbs stretch out into the country. The railway from Paris to Strasburg skirts the city on the south-west side, and to the east and north lie the Meurthe

and the canal from the Marne to the Rhine. Other railways—to Metz, to Epinal by Mirecourt, to Chateau Salins—join the main line in the neighbourhood, and make the place an important junction. The Place Stanislas is worthy of a capital city: in the centre stands the statue of Stanislas Leczinski, ruler of Lorraine (who still remains the most popular personage in the town which he embel- lished), and on all sides rise imposing buildings in the 17th- century style—the town-hall, episcopal palace, theatre, &c. The streets opening into the square have railings of artistic workmanship. A fine triumphal arch known as the King's Gate leads from the Place Stanislas to the Place Carriére, which forms a beautiful tree-planted promenade, and at its further end contains the Government palace and the so- called Pepiniére (nursery), with fine clumps of trees, grass, and flowers. Other open spaces in the city are the Place ' Alliance (formed by Stanislas, with a fountain in memory of the alliance between Louis XV. and Maria Theresa in 1756), the Place de YAcadémie, the Cours Léopold, the Place St Epvre, the Place Dombasle, and the Place de la Gare. The town-hall contains a picture gallery. The cathedral, built in the 18th century, has a wide facade flanked by two dome-surmounted towers, and a somewhat frigid and sombre interior. Of particular interest is the church of the Franciscans (Cordeliers), in the old town, built by René II. to commemorate his victory over Charles the Bold in 1476. Pillaged during the Revolution period, but restored to religious uses in 1825, it contains the tombs of Antony of Lorraine and his wife Marie 'Harcourt, Philippe of Gueldres, second wife of René IL, the engraver Jacques Callot, Henry III, count of Vaudé-mont, and Isabella of Lorraine his wife, René IL. (a curious monument raised by his widow in 1515), and Cardinal de Vaudémont. Here also is a chapel built in the beginning of the 17th century to receive the tombs of the princes of the house of Lorraine. The church of St Epvre, rebuilt between 1864 and 1874 on the site of an old church in the style of the 13th, 14th, and 15th centuries, has a fine spire and belfry and good stained glass windows. Bonsecours Church, at the end of the St Pierre Faubourg, contains the mausoleums of Stanislas (by whom it was built) and his wife Catherine, and the heart of their daughter Marie, queen of France. Of the old ducal palace, begun in the 15th century by Duke Raoul and completed by René IL, there remains but a single wing, and of this a portion was destroyed by a great

fire in 1871, and has been replaced by an upper primary school built in the same 15th-century style as the rest of the building. The entrance to this wing is a delightful specimen of the late Gothic of the beginning of the 16th century. From the ground-floor gallery a fine staircase ascends to the Galerie des Cerfs, which accommo- dates the archeological museum of Lorraine ; one of the greatest treasures of the collection is a piece of tapestry 92 feet long and 13 feet broad, which was found in the tent of Charles the Bold after the battle of Nancy. At a short distance from the railway station a cross marks the spot where the duke's body was found. Of the old gates of Nancy the most remarkable is the Porte de la Craffe. Nancy is the seat of a bishop and of a court of appeal, and the headquarters of a military division dependent on the Chalons corps d'armée. It is also a university town, with the four faculties of medicine, literature, science, and law, and as an educational centre has risen in importance since 1871. It possesses a large library, archives of anti- quarian interest, a botanical garden, and a museum of natural history, an academy, a geographical society, and an important school of forestry (see vol. ix. p. 403). The first agricultural station founded in France (1822) is at Roville in the vicinity. Timber, grain, and hops (largely

grown in the district), rags for the paper-mills of the Vosges, and the embroidery which was its earliest industry have long been the objects of an extensive trade at Nancy; during the last fifty years the commercial and industrial importance of the place has been greatly increased by the construction of the railway and the canal from the Marne to the Rhine, now supplemented by the new eastern canal between the Meuse, the Moselle, and the Sadéne ; and since the Franco-German war the manufacturing class has been recruited by numerous immigrants from Alsace. Round about the city are now to be seen the chimneys of iron-works and foundries, cotton-mills, chemical-works, and glass-works ; and large numbers of the inhabitants are also employed in making straw-hats, artificial flowers, boots and shoes, and hosiery. A printing and publishing establish- ment of some importance has been transferred from Strasburg. The population was about 28,000 in the close of the 18th century, 43,000 in 1856, 52,000 in 1871, and 66,000 (73,225 as a commune) in 1881.

At the close of the 11th eentury Odelric of Nancy, brother of Gerard of Alsace, possessed at Nancy a castle which enabled him to defy the united assaults of the bishops of Metz and Treves and the count of Bar. In the course of the next century the town was surrounded with walls, and became the capital of the dukes of Lorraine ; but its real importance dates from the 15th century, when (in 1477) Charles the Bold and his schemes of conquest perished at its gates. Enlarged, embellished, and admirably reforti- fied by Charles III., it was taken by the French in 1633 (Louis XIII. ‘and Richelieu being personally present at the siege); and when in 1661 it was restored by Louis XIV. Charles was eompelled to raze its fortifications. After the peace of Ryswick in 1697 Duke Leopold, at length in quiet possession of his duchy, set himself to repair the disasters of the past. He founded academies, established manufactures, and set about the construction of the new town. But it was reserved for Stanislas Leczynski, to whom Lorraine and Bar were assigned in 1736, to carry out the plans of improvement and embellishment in a style which made Nancy one of the palatial cities of Europe, and rendered himself the most popular as he was the last of the dukes of Lorraine. The city, which became French in 1766, was occupied by the allies in 1814 and 1815, and put to ransom by the Prussians in 1870.

NANKING, or “the southern capital,” is the name by which Keang-ning, the chief city in the province of Keang- soo, in China, has been popularly known for several centuries. The present city, which stands in 32° 5’N. lat.

and 118° 47′ E. long., dates only from the beginning of the Ming dynasty (1368), although it is built on the site of

G T SZ ty wes yaN@ E826 KANG Y , Z === SSS

Plan of Nanking.

one which for more than two thousand years has figured under various names in the history of the empire. The more ancient city was originally known as Kin-ling ; under the Han dynasty (206 B.c. to 25 A.D.) its name was con- verted into Tan-yang; by the T’ang emperors (618-907

A.D.) it was styled Keang-nan and Shing Chow; by the first sovereign of the Ming dynasty (1368-1644 a.p.) it was created the “southern capital” (Nan-king), and was given the distinctive name of Ying-t’een; and since the accession to power of the present Manchu rulers it has been officially known as Keang-ning, though still popularly called Nan-king. Asa matter of fact it was the seat of the imperial court only during the reigns of the first two emperors of the Ming dynasty, and was deserted for Shun- t’een (Peking) by Yung-lo, the third sovereign of that line, who in 1403 captured the town and usurped the crown of his nephew, the reigning emperor. But even when speaking of the city rebuilt by the Ming emperors it is necessary to use the past tense. The Tai- ping rebels, who carried the town by assault in 1853, made a clean sweep of all the national monuments and most of the more conspicuous public buildings it contained, and destroyed or were the means of destroying the greater part of the magnificent wall which surrounded it. The following description, therefore, must be understood as referring to the town as it existed before it was invaded

by those ruthless destroyers.

The city is said by Chinese topographers to have been surrounded by a wall measuring 96 le, or 32 miles, in circumference. This computation has, however, been shown by more accurate calcula- tion to be a gross exaggeration, and it is probable that 60 le, or 20 miles, would be nearcr the actual dimensions. The wall, of which only small portions now remain, was about 70 feet in height, measured 30 fect in thickness at the base, and was pierced by thirteen gates. Encircling the north, east, and south sides of the city proper was a second wall which enclosed about double the space of the inner enclosure. The public buildings were on a scale befitting one of the foremost cities in the empire, which was and still is the permanent seat of the provincial government, and which for a time was the abode of the imperial court. The inner city, which is nominally inhabited by the Manchu garrison only, is crossed from north to south by four main thoroughfares, which are intersected by roads connecting the gatcs in the eastern and western walls. In the north-east corner of the town stood the imperial palace reared by Hung-woo, the imperial fonnder of the modern city. After suffering mutilation at the time of the overthrow of the Ming dynasty, this magnificent building was finally burnt to the ground on the recapture of the

city from the Taiping rebels in 1864. But beyond comparison the most conspicuous public build- ing at Nanking was the famous porcelain tower, which was designed by the emperor Yung-lo (1403-28) to commemorate the virtues of hismother. Twelve centuries previously an Indian priest deposited on the spot where this monument afterwards stood a relic of Buddha, and raised over the sacred object a small pagoda of threc stories in height. During the disturbed times which heralded the close of the Yuen dynasty (1868) this pagoda shared the fate of the surrounding buildings, and was utterly destroyed. It was doubt- less out of respect to the relic which then perished that Yung-lo chose this site for the erection of his “ token-of-gratitude” pagoda. At noon on the fifteenth day of the sixth month of the tenth year of the reign of this monarch (1413) the building was begun. But before it was finished Yung-lo had passed away, and it was reserved for his successor to see the final pinnacle fixed in its place, after nineteen years had been consumed in carrying out the designs of the imperial architect. In shape the pagoda was an octagon, and was about 260 feet in height, or, as the Chinese say, with that extra- ordinary love for inaccurate accuracy which is peculiar to them, 32 chang (a chang equals about 120 inches) 9 feet 4 inches and xy of an inch. The outer walls were cased with bricks of the finest white porcelain, and each of the nine stories into which the building was divided was marked by overhanging eaves composed of green glazed tiles of the same material. The summit was crowned with a gilt ball fixed on the top of an iron rod, which in its turn was encircled by nine iron rings, Hung on chains which stretched from this apex to the eaves of the roof were five large pearls of good augury for the safety of the city. One was supposed to avert floods, another to prevent fires, a third to keep dust-storms at a distance, a fourth to allay tempests, and a fifth to guard the cit against disturbances. From the eaves of the several stories there hung one hundred and fifty-two bells, and countless lanterns adorned the same coignes of vantage. The strange form and beauty of the edifice, which might have been expected to have preserved it from destruction, were, however, no arguments in its favour in the eyes of the Taiping rebels, who razed it to the ground when they made themselves masters of N anking.

Nanking is about 194 geographical miles to the west of

Shanghai, and is nearly equidistant between Canton and Peking. It is situated on the south bank of the Yang- tsze Keang, and has a population of 400,000 souls, In bygone days it was one of the chief literary centres of the empire, besides being famous for its manufacturing industries. Satin, crape, nankeen cloth, paper, pottery, and artificial flowers were among its chief products. Of late years, however, these peaceful industries have been superseded by the production of all kinds of warlike material. As at Fuh-chow, the arsenal at Nanking is superintended by Europeans, under whose guidance steam ships of war and cannon of the newest and most approved type are there manufactured. In the history of the political relations of England with China, Nanking principally figures as the city where, after its capture by British ships in 1842, Sir Henry Pottinger signed the " Nanking treaty." (R. K. D.) NANTES, a city of France, chief town of the department of Loire-Inférieure, is situated on the right bank of the Loire, 35 miles above its mouth, in 47° 13' N. lat. and 1° 33' W. long. In population (117,555 inhabitants in 1881) it is the first city of Brittany. At Nantes the Loire receives on the left hand the Savre Nantaise, and on the right the Erdre, which forms the outlet of the canal between Nantes and Brest; and a large number of bridges spanning the various branches of the different Streams join the several quarters of the city. Along the left bank of the Loire stretches an ever-extending line of factories and shipbuilding yards. [In all there are 6 miles of quays, 23 miles traversing the city in its greatest breadth from east to west along the main river, The

Environs of Nantes. largest vessels at present come no farther than St N. azalre, but a canal is being made on the left bank which will allow vessels drawing 16 feet to come up to the city. Nantes lies 264 miles west-south-west of Paris by the Angers and Le Mans Railway, and 40 miles from St Nazaire. Other lines connect it with Rennes via Chateaubriant, La Roche-sur-Yon, Paimbceuf, and Pornic.

The cathedral of Nantes, commenced in 1434 in the Gothic

style, is still unfinished. Its length will be, when completed, °

335 feet, and the nave is 85 feet wide and 123 feet in height, The towers are 205 feet high. There are two interesting monuments in the transept,—on the right Michel Colomb's tomb of Francis IL., duke of Brittany, and his second

wife Marguerite de Foix (1507), and on the left that of General Lamoriciére by Paul Dubois. The former consists of a white marble base covered by a black marble slab on which rest the two effigies, the four corners being occupied by upright figures of J ustice, Fortitude, Temperance, and Prudence. Of the other churches the more interesting are St Nicolas, a modern building in the style of the 13th century, Ste Croix, which occupies the site of an ~ pagan temple, and St Jacques on the left bank of the olre.

Between the cathedral and the Loire, from which it is separated only by the breadth of the quay, stands the castle of Nantes, founded in the 9th or 10th century. Re- built by Francis IT. and the duchess Anne, it was flanked by Mercceur in the time of the League with huge bastions decorated with the Lorraine cross. From being the resi-

dence of the dukes of Brittany it became a state prison (Cardinal de Retz, Fouquet, and the duchess of Berri were confined within its walls), and it is now occupied by the artillery headquarters. The chapel in which the marriage of Louis XII. with Anne of Brittany was cele- brated was destroyed by an explosion in 1800. Nantes possesses a fine theatre, a court-house, a prefecture, and an exchange, which includes both the tribunal and the chamber of commerce. The town-hall possesses a curious casket in gold and enamel which once, it is said, contained the heart of Anne of Brittany. The public library is in the old corn-market, and the museum of painting and sculpture finds scanty accommodation in the old cloth-market. Apart from the beautiful collection presented to the town by the duke of Feltre, the catalogue includes 1000 pictures and 130 statues. An archeological museum has its quarters in the old church of the Convent of the Oratory, where Fouché, afterwards duke of Otranto, taught before the Revolution; part of the old mint is occupied by the school of science and arts; and not far off is the museum of natural history, comprising a complete collection of the minerals of the department. The botanic garden consists

of a purely scientific portion and a landscape garden which forms one of the finest promenades of its kind. Between

Plan of Nantes.

1, Cathedral. 4. Picture Gallery. |

2. Hotel de Ville. 5, Bourse. 3. Palais de Justice. 6. Cours St André.

the Loire and the Erdre run Cours St Pierre and Cours St André, adorned at the two ends of the line by statues of Anne of Brittany and Arthur III, Du Guesclin and Olivier de Clisson, and separated by the Place Louis XVI., with a statue of that monarch on a column 92 feet high. The Place Royale, the great meeting-place of the principal thoroughfares of the city, contains 4 monumental foun- tain in blue Rennes granite, with a white marble statue of the town of Nantes and bronze statues of the Loire and four of its affluents —the Sévre, the Erdre, the Cher, and the Loir. A flight of steps at the west end of the town leads up from the quay to the colossal cast-iron statue of St Anne, whence a splendid view may be obtained over the valley of the Loire. Several old houses of the 15th and 16th centuries, the fish market, the railway station, and the Nalorges (a vast granite building now used as a bonded warehouse) are all of interest. Besides two great hospitals —st Jacques on the left bank of the Loire, with 1600 beds, and the Hétel-Dieu, recently rebuilt in Gloriette island, with 1200 beds—Nantes contains a deaf-mute institute, a secondary school of medicine and pharmacy, a hydrographic school, a drawing school, a branch establish- ment of the conservatoire at Paris, and a lyceum. It is the see of a bishop, and the headquarters of the 11th

7. Cours St Pierre. 8. Place de la Duchesse Anne.

corps @armée. As a seat of the sugar manufacture Nantes stands next to Paris and Marseilles. In city or suburbs there are vast establishments for the manufacture of iron, copper, and lead, shipbuilding yards, factories for agricultural and similar implements, oil-works, soap-works, a national tobacco factory employing 1800 hands, a stained- glass factory, manure works, and granite yards. Food- preserving is a rapidly growing industry in all the three departments of meat, fish, and vegetables (the last largely grown in the neighbourhood). Commercially Nantes does not occupy so high a position as formerly, being now only eleventh in the list of French ports, though its custom- house still ranks second in amount of receipts. It imports coal from England (duty free), wood from Scandinavia, colonial wares from the Antilles. Its shipowners, whose vessels are rather more numerous than those of Havre, keep possession of the greater part of the trade of the lower Loire and the coast fisheries. In 1875 they had 745 vessels, of 150,000 tons aggregate burden. The com- mercial movement of the port was 235,000 tons; and the value of the exports and imports amounted to £5,000,000. In 1880 the movement was upwards of 400,000 tons.

Previous to the Roman occupation, Nantcs (Condivicenum) was the chief town of the Nannctes, and under the conquerors it became a great commercial and administrative centre. In the middle of the 8d century Christianity was introduced by St Clair. Clotaire I. got possession of the city in 560, and placed it under the government of St Felix the bishop, who executed cnormous works to cause the Loire to flow under the walls of the castle. After being scveral times subdued by Charlemagne, Brittany revolted under his successors, and Nominoé, proclaimed king in 842, ordered the fortifications of Nantes to be razed because it had sided with Charles the Bald. The Normans held the town from 848 to 936. About this time began the rivalry between Nantes and Rennes. Pierre de Dreux, declared duke of Brittany by Philip Augustus, made Nantes his capital, surrounded it with fortifications, and defended it valiantly against John of England. During the Breton wars of succession Nantes took part first with Montfort, but afterwards with Charles of Blois, and did not open its gates to

Montfort till his success was assured and his English allies had retired. In 1560 Francis II. granted Nantes a communal constitution. In the course of the 15th and 16th centuries the city suffered from several epidemics. Averse to Protestantism, it joined the League along with Merceeur, governor of Brittany, who helped to raise the country into an independent duchy; and it was not till 1598 that it opened its gates to Henry IV., who here signed on May 2d of that year the famous edict which until its revocation by Louis XIV. in 1685 was the charter of Huguenot liberties in France (sec vol. ix. p 564, 579, and vol. xii p. 838-9). It was at Nantes that Count Chalais was punished for plotting against Richelieu, that Fouquet was arrested, and that the Cellamare conspirators were executed under the regent. Having warmly embraced the cause of the Revolution in 1789, the city was in 1798 treated with extremest rigour by Carrier, of noyade fame. Under the empire its foreign commerce was ruined. ‘The duchess of Berri was arrested at Nantes in 1882 while trying to stir up La Vendée against Louis Philippe. Anne of Brittany, Charles Errard, founder of the French Academy at Rome, Generals Cambronne and Lamoriciere, and Jules Verne were born in the city.

NANTEUIL, Roserr (1623-1678), a crayonist, and one of the most eminent of French line engravers, was born about 1623, or, as other authorities state, in 1630, the son of a merchant of Rheims. Having received an excel- lent classical education, he studied engraving under his brother-in-law, Nicholas Regnesson; and, his crayon portraits having attracted attention, he was pensioned by Louis XIV., and appointed designer and engraver of the cabinet to that monarch. It was mainly duc to his influ- ence that the king granted the edict of 1660, dated from St Jean de Luz, by which engraving was pronounced free and distinct from the mechanical arts, and its practitioners were declared entitled to the privileges of other artists. The plates of Nanteuil, several of them approaching the scale of life, number about three hundred. In his early practice he imitated the technique of his predecessors, working with straight lines, strengthened, but not crossed, in the shadows, in the style of Claude Mellan, and in other

prints cross-hatching like Regnesson, or stippling in the manner of Jean Boulanger; but he gradually asserted his full individuality, modelling the

faces of his portraits with the utmost precision and completeness, and employing various methods of touch for the draperies and other parts of his plates. Much of the beauty and artistic character of his prints is due to the fact that he was himself a skil- ful portraitist, accustomed to work much from the life, and that he commonly engraved from his own designs. His subjects are quiet, tender, and silvern in effect, but, compared with those of his great contemporary Edelinck, they are less rich and varied in the rendering of the rela- tive weights of colour. Among the finest works of his fully developed period may be named the portraits of Pomponne de Bellitvre, Gilles Ménage, Jean Loret, the Duc de la Meilleraye, and the Duchesse de Nemours. A list of his works will be found in Dumesnil's Le Peintre Graveur Francats, vol. iv. He died at Paris in 1678.

NANTUCKET, an island, county, and town of the United States, forming (since 1693) part of Massachusetts. The island, with an area of about 50 square miles, lies within the 10-fathom line, but is separated from the main- land by Nantucket Sound, which nieasures from 25 to 30 miles in breadth, and has a general depth of from 5 to 8 fathoms. With the exception of a few inconsiderable hills, the surface for the most part consists of open, breezy, and now almost treeless downs. The soil is generally sandy, but affords in some places good pasture. On the north or landward side of the island there is a large lagoon-like harbour formed by a long narrow tongue of land—the Coatue Beach—which, curving north-west, runs out into Great Point, the end of which is marked by a white light- house tower in 41° 23' 24" N. lat. and 70° 2' 24" W. long. Within the harbour the depth at low water is about 12 or 14 feet, but on the bar it is only between 6 and 7. The western end of the island shelves out in a broad submarine platform (Tuckernuck Bank), which supports the two considerable islands of Tuckernuck and Muskeget, both included in the county. Nantucket post-village, the prin- cipal settlement, lies at the south-west end of the harbour, —a quiet place, but beginning to attract attention as a summer residence. A library and museum are maintained in the Atheneum building.

Nantucket (Natocko on the map of 1630) was visited by Gosnold (1602), who found it covered with oaks and other trees, and in- habited by about 1500 Indians. Governor Mayhew, in 1659, granted nine-tenths of the island to ten men for £30 and two beaver hats, and shortly afterwards the first

settler, Thomas Macy, took posses- sion. The town of Nantucket (known as Sherburne from 1673 to 1795) was incorporated in 1671; the original site was at Maddequet, 5 or 6 miles west of the present position, to which it was removed in the following year. About the same time whaling operations were commenced, and Nantucket gradually became the greatest whaling station in the world. In 1775 it had 150 vessels engaged in the business ; but since the beginning of the century its pro- sperity has rapidly declined: in 1852 there were still 18,105 tons of its registered shipping employed in whale-fishing ; in 1868 there were only 3739; and the number has gradually sunk to zero. The last full-blood Indian in Nantucket died in 1821; the last half- breed in 1854. The population of the county was 4500 in 1775 9012 in 1840, 6094 in 1860, 4123 in 1870, and 3797 in 1880. ;

NANTWICH, a market-town of Cheshire, situated on two railway lines and on both sides of the Weaver, 20 miles south-east of Chester and 36 south-south-west of Manchester. There is water communication by the Grand Junction Canal, which near it joins the Ellesmere Canal. The town, which consists of three main streets, is some- what irregularly built. The principal buildings are the church of SS. Mary and Nicholas, in the Decorated Gothic style, with octagonal tower; the grammar school, founded in 1611; the town-hall, in the Gothic style; and the new market-hall, which replaced the old one in 1867. There are several almshouses and other charities. The ancient

castle, erected by the Normans, was in ruins before the time of Henry VII., and there are now no remains of it, The principal industry is the manufacture of boots and shoes; there are also several clothing factories. The population of the urban sanitary district in 1871 was 6673, and in 1881 it was 7495

Nantwieh, which is said to have existed in the time of the Romans, was originally called Halen Gwyn, the white salt town. In Domesday it is entered as the part possession of the king and Earl Edwin, to whom its numerous salt springs supplied a con- siderable revenue. It was erected into a barony by Hugh Lupus, first Norman earl of Chester. The town suficred severely from fire in 1438 and in 1583, from a kind of mad ague in 1587,

and from plague in 1604. In the reign of Henry VIII. it possessed three hundred salt-works, but, on account of the discovery of salt in 1624 at a district of the Vale of Weaver more convenient for water carriage, the industry rapidly declined, and is now wholly discontinued. Brine baths have bcen erected (1888) bchind the town-hall.

NAPHTALI, the son of Jacob by Bilhah, Rachel's maid, and uterine brother of Dan. The narrator of Gen. xxx. 8 explains the name "MD? by the verb DAD), "wrestle." The seats of the tribe lay in the eastern half of upper Galilee, a fertile mountainous country sloping down to the headwaters of Jordan and the Sea of Galilee (Josh. xix. 32-39), Within this country the Canaanites continued to hold Beth-shemesh and Beth-anath (Judg. i. 33). After the wars with Sisera, in which the tribe took a prominent part (Judg. iv.; v. 18), and with Midian (Judg. vii. 23), we hear little of Naphtali.' Dwelling near the settlements of the Arameans, the tribe was an early sufferer in the bloody conflicts of Damascus with Israel (1 Kings xv. 20), and it was depopulated in the first Assyrian captivity by Tiglath Pileser (2 Kings xv. 29; Isa. ix. 1 [viti. 23]).

NAPHTHA, a word originally applied to the limpid liquid portion of the petroleum which exudes abundantly at Baku, é&c., on the shores of the Caspian Sea. It is the védb6a of Dioscorides, and the naphtha or bitumen liquidum candidum of Pliny. Both in commerce and in science the term is now used somewhat vaguely, but more in a generic sense, to embrace several bodies having certain properties in common, than as a specific name for a particular sub- stance. Naphtha indeed has no distinct place or meaning in modern chemistry. By the alchemists the word was used principally to distinguish various highly volatile, mobile, and inflammable liquids, such as the ethers,— sulphuric ether and acetic ether having been known respectively as Maphtha sulphurict and Naphtha aceti. In recent times naphtha has been employed to indicate the volatile, limpid, inflammable hydrocarbons obtained by destructive distillation of organic substances artificially conducted, as well as those produced by similar agencies acting within the earth. In commerce the application of the term is still more restricted, and in general it embraces no more than the more volatile portion of the fluid hydro- carbons separated in the distillation of tay.

Under the name naphtha we thus find the subjoined serics of substances comprehcnded. (1) Coal-tar naphtha consists of the lightest and first separated portions of the hydrocarbons obtained in the distillation of gas-tar. It embraces the hydrocarbons having a specific gravity ranging from about 850° up to 950°, and is, especially in its lighter fractions, rich in benzole. (2) Shale naphtha is obtained in the purification of the crude oil got by the destructive distillation of shale and other carbonaceous minerals. The first fraction secured, having a specific gravity ranging from 640° to 680°, is termed gasoline; and coming between this and the ordinary burning oils is a light volatile and highly inflammable oil with a specific gravity of 700°-760°, known commonly as naphtha, but also more conveniently termed shale spirit. It is valuable as a solvent, and is also used to some extent for burning in open air. (See Pararrin.) (3) Native naphtha is the more fluid portion of the rock oil or petrolcum found in many parts of the world. (4) Wood naphtha, or methyl alcohol, has been already described under Mrrnyt, vol. xvi. p.195. (5) Caoutchouc naphtha : a series of hydrocarbons can be prepared by the distillation of india-rubber,

and may be separated by means of fractional distillation ; together, under the name of caoutchine, they form a most efficient solvent for india-rubber itself. (6) Bone naphtha, or bone oil, known also as Dippel’s animal oil, is a most offensively smelling product of the distillation of bones in the preparation of animal charcoal. The persistent and repulsive stench of this substance effectually precludes its industrial use among the naphthas.

NAPHTHALINE. See Tar.

NAPIER, a seaport and borough of New Zealand, on the south-east coast of North Island, is the chief town of the province of Hawke’s Bay, and is built on a peninsula (known as Scinde Island) about 12 miles from the southern end of the bay, in 39° 29’S. lat. and 176° 44’ E. long., about 200 miles by seafrom Wellington. It is a thriving place, the centre of a large agricultural and pastoral district. The main portion of the town, with the banks, churches, hotels, &c., stretches along the flat shore-land, while the suburban dwelling-houses of the wealthier inhabitants scatter themselves over the hills to the north. The stag- nant salt lagoons which formerly occupied the

southern boundary have been reclaimed. In 1881 the population was 5756; and the municipality, with its area of 879 acres, now contains about 1300 dwellings, with rateable property valued in 1882 at £57,866. An atheneum, a small hospital, a lunatic asylum, a philosophical society, and an acclimatization society are among the public institutions. The town (named after Sir Charles James Napier) is the seat of the bishop of Waiapu, and returns a member to the New Zcaland House of Representatives. A railway is now open as far as Makatuku (70 miles). The har- bour (Port Ahuriri), 1} miles to the west, is very unsatis- factory, and though there is good anchorage the road- stead is greatly exposed to easterly and southerly winds.

NAPIER, Sir Cuartzs (1786-1860), British admiral, was the second son of Captain the Hon. Charles Napier, R.N., and grandson of Francis, fifth Lord Napier, and thus cousin to the three famous Napiers, Sir Charles, Sir George, and Sir William, and was born at Merchiston Hall, near Falkirk, on March 6, 1786. He became a midshipman in 1800, was promoted lieutenant in 1805 and commander in 1807, and distinguished himself in the West Indies, where he fought his famous action with three French ships of the line, and took the “ Hautpoult,” seventy-four guns, into which the admiral promoted him captain. On his return to England his rank was confirmed, but he was put on half-pay. He spent some time at the university of Edinburgh, and then went to Portugal to visit his cousins in Wellington’s army. In 1811 he served in the Mediter- ranean, and in 1813 on the coast of America and in the expedition up the Potomac. The first years of his leisure he spent in Italy and in Paris, but speculated so much in a steamboat enterprise that by 1829 he was quite ruined. In that year he was appointed to the “Galatea,” forty-two, and was at the Azores when they were held by the Count de Villa Flor for the queen of Portugal. He so much impressed the constitutional leaders that they begged him to take command of the fleet, which offer he accepted in February 1833. With it he destroyed the Miguelite fleet off Cape St Vincent on July 5, and on the demand of France was struck off the English navy list. Continuing his Portuguese services, he commanded the land forces in the successful defence of Lisbon in 1834, when he was made Grand Commander of the Tower and Sword, and Count Cape St Vincent in the peerage of Portugal. On his return to England he was restored to his former rank in the navy in 1836, and received command of

the “Powerful,” eighty-four, in 1838. When troubles broke out in Syria he was appointed second in command, and distinguished himself by leading the storming column at Sidon on September 26, 1840, and by other services, for which he was made a K.C.B. He went on half-pay in

1841, and was in 1842 elected M.P. for Marylebone in the Liberal interest, but lost his seat in 1846. He was pro- moted rear-admiral the same year, and commanded the Channel fleet from 1846 to 1848. On the outbreak of the Russian War he received the command of the ficet destined to act in the Baltic, and hoisted his flag in February 1854. Ile refused to attack Cronstadt, and a great outcry was raised against him for not obeying the orders of the Admiralty and attempting to storm the key of St Petersburg; but his inaction has been thoroughly justified by posterity. On his return in December 1854 he was not again offered a command. He was elected M.P. for Southwark in February 1855, and maintained his seat, though broken in health, until his death on November

6, 1860.

Sce Major-General E. Napier’s Life and Correspondence of Admiral Sir Charles Napier, K.C.B., 2 vols., London, 1862; Napier’s own War in Syria, 2 vols., 1842; The Navy, its past and present state, in @ series of letters, edited by Sir W. F. P. Napier, 1851; and The History of the Baltie Campaign of 1854, from doewments and other materials furnished by Vice- Admiral Sir C. Napier, K.C.B., 1857. Sec also The Life and Exploits of Commodore Napier, 1841; and Life of Vice-Admiral Sir C. Napier, 1854.

NAPIER, Sm Cuartes James (1782-1853), the acknowledged hero of a family of heroes, was born at White- hall, London, in 1782, and was the eldest son of Colonel George Napier, of the Guards (a younger son of the fifth Lord Napier), and of his wife Lady Sarah Lennox—the Lady Sarah who had charmed King George HI. After the custom of those times Charles Napier had been gazetted an ensign in the 33d regiment in 1794, and in 1797 his father secured for him the appointment of aide- de-camp to Sir James Duff, the general commanding the Limerick district. Longing for more active service, Napier obtained a commission as lieutenant in

Manningham’s rifles in 1800. This newly formed corps was designed to supply a body of light troops for the English army fit to cope with the French voltigeurs and tirailleurs, and was specially trained at first under the eye of Colonel Manningham, and then in the famous camp at Shorncliffe, under the immediate supervision of Sir John Moore. Moore speedily perceived the military qualities of the Napiers, and inspired the three elder brothers—Charles, George, and William—with an enthusiasm which lasted all their lives; but, though happy in his general, Charles Napier quarrelled bitterly with William Stewart, the lieutenant-colonel, and in 1803 left the regiment to accompany General Fox to Ireland as aide-de-camp. The great influence of his uncle, the duke of Richmond, procured him in 1804 a captaincy in the staff corps, and in the beginning of 1806a majority in the Cape regiment. On his way to the Cape, however, he exchanged into the 50th regiment, with which he served +n the short Danish campaign under Lord Cathcart in 1807. Shortly after his return from Denmark the 50th was ordered to Portugal, and shared all the glories of the famous retreat to Corunna. At the battle of Corunna, one of the last sights of Sir John Moore before he was struck was the advance of his own old regiment under the command of Charles Napier and Edward Stanhope, and almost his last words were “ Well done, my majors !” Being badly supported from the right, the 50th were almost entirely cut to pieces, and both the majors left for dead upon the field. Napier’s life was saved by a French drummer named Guibert, who brought him safely to the headquarters of Marshal Soult, Soult treated him with the greatest kindness, and he was allowed by Ney to re- turn to England to his “old blind mother” instead of being interned. He had not been long in England when he heard that his exchange had been arranged, and, volunteering for the Peninsula, he joined the light division before Ciudad Rodrigo. As a voluntecr he served in the actions on the

Coa, and again at Busaco, where he was badly wounded in the face. He was ordered to England, but refused to go, and was present with the light division in all the actions which took place during Wellington’s pursuit of Masséna. His services were rewarded soon after by the leutenant- colonelcy of the 102d regiment, which had been entirely demoralized at Botany Bay,

and when he joined it at Guernscy was one of the worst regiments in the service ; when he left it in 1813 it was one of the best. He accompanied it in June 1812 from Guernsey to Bermuda, where he wrought a wonderful change in the spirit both of officers and mcn. By treating his men as friends he won their love and admiration, and became in a peculiar degree the hero of the British soldiers. In September 1813 he exchanged back into the 50th regiment, and in December 1814, believing all chance of active service to be at an end, retired on half-pay. He was gazetted one of the first C.B.'s on the extension of the order in 1814, and was present as a volunteer at the capture of Cambray, though he just missed the great battle of Waterloo. Though an officer of some experience and more than thirty years of age, he nowjoined the military college at Farnham, and completed his military education. In 1819 he was appointed inspecting field officer at Corfu. From Corfu he was moved in 1822 to Cephalonia, where he remained for eight years as governor and military resident. What he did there he has described in a book of his own, and how he loved the place is shown by his wish to the very end of his life to return and die there. He was the model of a despotic colonial governor, and showed all the qualities of a benevolent despot. He made good roads and founded great institutions, but everything must be done by him, and he showed himself averse to interference whether from the lord high commissioner of the Ionian Islands or fron the inhabitants of his own little colony. An interesting episode in his command was his communication with Lord Byron when he touched at Cephalonia on his way to his death at Missolonghi, and the insurrection of the Greeks, who would have called him to be their commander-in-chief had the Greek committee in London encouraged his pretensions. But at last his struggle with the authorities of the colonies grew to such a pitch that in 1830 he was obliged to leave Cephalonia. He retired to Normandy, where he published his work on the colonies, and also an historical romance on William the Conqueror. In 1834 he refused the governorship of Australia, still hoping for military employment. In 1837 he was promoted major-general with his brother George, and in 1838 was made a K.C.B.; but he was to wait till 1839 before he received an offer of employment. In that year he was made commanding officer in the northern district, and found his command no sinecure, owing to the turbulent state of the Chartists in the towns of Yorkshire and Lancashire. His behaviour during the tenure of his command is described by William Napier in his life of his brother, and his inability to

hold a command which did not carry supreme authority is plainly portrayed. In 1841, to the content of the Government, he resigned his command and went to India. He was stationed at Poona, and in September 1842, when troubles were expected there, was ordered to Sind.

His command in Sind from 1842 till August 1847 is the period of his life during which, according to his brother, he made good his title to fame, but his acts, more especially at first, have been most severely criticized. In fact there can be little doubt that from the moment he landed in the province he determined to conquer the ameers, and to seek the first opportunity of doing so. He was to be accompanied by Colonel Outram, who had been resident in Sind during the Afghan war, and who felt a

great admiration for him, but who had alsoa warm affection for the ameers, and believed that he could put off the day of their destruction. On February 17, 1843, while Outram was still absent engaged in negotiation, Napier attacked the Baluch army 30,000 strong with but 2800 men. With these 2800 men, including the 22d regiment, which would do anything for him, he succeeded in winning the victory of Meanee. It was a battle of the olden type, in which generals had to fight like privates. Sir Charles was in his element, and himself engaged in the fray. In the March following he finally destroyed the army of the amcers at the battle of Hyderabad. His success was received with enthusiasm both by the governor-general, Lord Ellen-borough, and by the English people, and he was at once made a G.C.B. The conqueror of Sind now had an opportunity to prove his administrative powers, and pro- ceeded to apply the same material means of civilization to Sind which had formerly been successful in Cephalonia. Whether or not the conquest of Sind at that particular period can be justified, there can be no doubt that Charles Napier was the best administrator who could be found for the province when conquered. Sind, when it came under English rule, was in a state of utter anarchy, for the Baluches had formed a military government not unlike that of the Mamelukes in Egypt, which had been extremely tyrannical to the native population. This native population was particularly protected by Sir Charles Napier, who completed the work of the destruction of the Baluch supremacy which he had commenced with the

victory of Meanee. The labour of administration was rendered more difficult by the necessity of repressing the hill tribes, which had been encouraged to acts of lawless- ness by the licence which followed the Afghan war. The later years of his administration were made very stormy by the attacks on the policy of the conquest which had been made in England. He left Sind, after quarrelling with every authority of the presidency of Bombay, and nearly every authority of the whole of India, in August 1847, and received a perfect ovation on his return from all the hero-worshippers of the Napiers, of whom there were many in England. His short stay in England was occupied with incessant struggles with the directors of the East India Company; but, however much the directors hated him, it was not long before they had to besecch him in humble terms to become their commander-in-chief. The news of the indecisive victory of Chillianwalla created a panic in England, and the East India Company was obliged by the force of public opinion to summon the greatest general to take the command of its armies. Sir Charles started almost at a moment's notice, but on reaching India found that the victory of Gujrat had been won and the Sikh war was over. No taint of envy was in his nature, and he rejoiced that he had not to supersede Lord Gough in the moment of defeat. His restless and imperious spirit was met by one equally imperious in the governor-general, Lord Dalhousie. From the very beginning of his com-mand the governor-general and the commander-in-chicf disagreed, and in April 1850 Sir Charles was reprimanded on some trifling point of discipline. The reprimand was reiterated by the duke of. Wellington, and in December 1850 Napier once more left for England. His constitution was undermined by the Indian climate, and especially by his fatiguing command in Sind, and on August 29, 1853, he died at Portsmouth.

Charles James Napier, recognized by his brothers as the greatest representative of the Napiers, though without the literary genius of his brother William, had all the restless energy which distinguished the whole family,—the same impatience of command and contra- diction, the same power of inspiring the people with a reverential

enthusiasm which impressed cven the dullest. At Meanee he showed himself to be a gallant general; but he was also a great soldier.

OF MERCHISTON. |

Possibly he had not the coolness which forms a Wellington, but he had the power of inspiring his soldiers with an enthusiastic love Besides being a great soldier he was avery great administrator, and both in Cephalonia and in Sind proved what work a man never fatigued The most discussed question in his life is the conquest of Sind. There can be no There can be no doubt that the conquest was disapproved by statesmen in England. Mr Gladstone's own testimony is to the effect that the conquest of Sind ''was disapproved unanimously by the cabinet of Sir Robert

and admiration which Wellington could never inspire.

and never afraid of responsibility could do.

doubt that he hurried on that conquest.

Pecl, of which I can speak, as I had just entered it at that time.

But the ministry were powerless inasmuch as the mischief of re- taining was less than the mischief of abandoning it, and it remains

an accomplished fact" (Contemporary Review, November 1876).

But that the mischief was not greater was due to Sir Charles's Many men havc been gallant generals, great soldiers, and even great administrators, but no man of the 19th century was a hero as well, and it is the heroic side of his character "which it is most difficult to analyse, and most easy to perceive. It appears all through Sir William Napier's life of his brother, but itis most clearly and trenchantly brought out in a letter of Carlyle to 'The fine and noble qualities of the man are very recognizable to me: his subtle piercing intellect turned all to the practical, giving him just insight into men and into things; his in- exhaustible adroit contrivances, his fiery valour, sharp promptitude A lynx-eyed fiery man, with the spirit of an old knight in him, more of a hero than

administrative power.

the biographer.

to seize the good moment that will not return.

any modern I have seen for a long time. :

The chicf authority for Sir Charles Napicr’s life is his Life and Opintons, by

his brother, 1857; consult also MacCall, Career and Character of 0. J. Napier,

1857; and M‘Dougall, General Sir C. J. Napier, Conqueror and Governor of His own works are Memoir of the Roads of Cephalonia, 1825; The

Scinde, 1860.

Colonies, 1833; Colonization, 1835 ; Remarks on Military Law and the Punish-

ment of Flogging, 1837; A Letter on the Defence of England by Corps of Volunteers

and Militia, 1852; A Letter to the Right Honourable Sir J. C. Hobhouse on the

Baggage of the Indian Army, 1849; Defects, Civil and Military, of the Indian Government, 1853; and William the Conqueror, a Historical Romance, edited by Sir W. Napicr, 1858. On Sind, consult primarily Sir W. Napier, The Conquest of Scinde, 1845; The Administration of Scinde, 1851; Compilation of General Orders issued by Sir C. Napier, 1850; and Outram, The Conquest of Scinde, a Commentary, 1846. For his command-in-chief, and the controversy about his resignation, consult J. Mawson, Records of the Indian Command of General Sir C.J. Napier, Calcutta, 1851; Minutes on the Resignation of the late General Sir C. Napier, by Field-Marshal the Duke of Wellington, &¢., 1854; Commenis by Sir W. Napier on a Memorandum of the Duke of Wellington, 1854; and Sir William Napicr, General Sir C. Napier and the Directors of the East India Com-pany, 1857. (H. M. 8.)

NAPIER, Joun (1550-1617), the inventor of log- arithms, was born at Merchiston near Edinburgh in 1550, and was the eighth Napier of Merchiston. The first Napier of Merchiston, ‘‘ Alexander Napare,” acquired the Merchiston estate before the year 1438, from James I. of Scotland. He was provost of Edinburgh in 1437, and was otherwise distinguished. His eldest son Alexander, who succeeded him in 1454, was provost of Edinburgh in 1455, 1457, and 1469; he was knighted and held various im- portant court offices under successive monarchs ; at the time of his death in 1473 he was master of the household to James III. His son, John Napier of Rusky, the third of Merchiston, belonged to the royal household in the life- time of his father. He also was provost of Edinburgh at various times, and it is a remarkable instance of the esteem in which the lairds of Merchiston were held that three of them in immediate lineal succession repeatedly filled so important an office during perhaps the most memorable period in the history of the city. He married a great- granddaughter of Duncan, eighth earl of Levenax (or Lennox), and besides this relationship by marriage the Napiers claimed a lineal male cadency from the ancient family of Levenax. His eldest son, Archibald Napier of Edinbellie, the fourth of Merchiston, belonged to the house- hold of James IV. He fought at Flodden and escaped with his life, but his eldest son Alexander (fifth of Merchis- ton) was killed. Alexander’s eldest son (Alexander, sixth of Merchiston) was born in 1513, and fell at the battle of Pinkie in 1547. His eldest son was Archibald, seventh of Merchiston, and the father of John Napier, the subject of this article. a

In 1549 Archibald Napier, at the early age of about fifteen, married Janet, daughter of Francis Bothwell, and in the following year John Napier was born. In the

siagiik criminal court of Scotland, the earl of Argyll, hereditary justice- general of the kingdom, sometimes presided in person, but more frequently he delegated his functions ; and it appears that in 1561 Archibald Napier was appointed one of the justice-deputes. In the register of the court, extending over 1563 and 1564, the justice-deputes named are “Archibald Naper of Merchistoune, Alexander Banna- tyne, burgess of Edinburgh,

James Stirling of Keir, and Mr Thomas Craig.” About 1565 he was knighted at the same time as James Stirling, his colleague, whose daughter John Napier subsequently married, In 1582 Sir Archibald was appointed master of the mint in Scotland, with the sole charge of superintending the mines and minerals within the realm, and this office he held till his death in 1608. His first wife died in 1563, and in 1572 he married a cousin, Elizabeth Mowbray, by whom he had three sons, the eldest of whom was named Alexander.!

As stated above, John Napier was born in 1550, the year in which the Reformation in Scotland may be said to have commenced. In 1563, the year in which his mother died, he matriculated at St Salvator’s College, St Andrews. He early became a Protestant champion, and the one solitary anecdote of his youth that is known to exist occurs in his address “to the Godly and Christian reader” prefixed to his Plaine Discovery. He writes :—

“In my tender yearcs, and barneage in Sanet-Androis at the Schooles, having, on the one parte, contracted a loving familiaritic with a certaine Gentleman, &c. a Papist ; And on the other part, being attentive to the sermons of that worthie man of God, Maister Christopher Goodman, teaching upon the A pocalyps, I was so mooved in admiration, against the blindnes of Papists, that could not most evidently see their seven hilled citie Rome, painted out there so lively by Saint John, as the mother of all spiritual whoredome, that not onely bursted I out in continual reasoning against my said familiar, but also from thenceforth, I determined with my selfe (by the assistance of Gods spirit) to employ my studie and diligence to search out the remanent mysteries of that holy Book: as to this houre (praised be the Lorde) I have bin doing at al such times as conveniently I might have occasion.”

The names of nearly all Napier’s classfellows can be traced as becoming determinantes in 1566 and masters of

arts in 1568; but his own name does not appear in the eee) eee eee ee

1 The descent of the first Napier of Merchiston has been traced to * Johan le Naper del Counte de Dunbretan,” who was one of those who swore fealty to Edward I. in 1296 and defended the castle of Stirling against him in

1304; but there is no authority for this genea- logy. The legend with regard to the origin of the name Napier was given by Sir Alexander Napier, eldest son of John Napier, in 1625, in these words:—‘‘ One of the ancient earls of Lennox in Scotland had issue three sons: the eldest, that succeeded him to the earldom of Lennox; the second, whose name was Donald ; and the third, named Gilchrist. The then king of Scotland having wars, did convocate his lieges to battle, amongst whom that was commanded was the earl of Lennox, who, keeping his eldest son at home, sent his two sons to serve for him with the forces that were under hiscommand. This battle went hard with the Scots; for the enemy pressing furiously upon them forced them to lose ground until it came to flat running away, which being perceived by Donald, he pulled his father’s standard from the bearer thereof, and valiantly encountering the foe, being well followed by the earl of Lennox’s men, he repulsed the enemy and changed the fortune of the day, whereby a great victory was got. After the battle, as the manner is, every one drawing and setting forth his own acts, the king said unto them, ye have all done valiantly, but there is one amongst you who hath Na-Peer [i.e., no equal]; and calling Donald into his pres- ence commanded him, in regard to his worthy service, and in angmen- tation of his honour, to change his name from Lennox to Napier, and gave him the lands of Gosford, and lands in Fife, and made him his own servant, which discourse is confirmed by evidences of mine, wherein we are called Lennox alias Napier.” Sir Archibald adds that this is ‘‘the origin of our name, as, by tradition from father to son, we have generally and without any doubt received the same.” This written statement of the legend was occasioned by the following circumstance. Robert Napier, a cousin of John Napier, had amassed riches abroad as a merchant; he was created a baronet in 1612, and in order to put his genealogy formally on record in the heralds’ books, he applied for an authentic certificate to Sir Archibald, afterwards Lord Napier, who resided at Merchiston, as the head of the family ; and Sir Archibald in reply wrote out in his own hand the document from which the preceding extract has been made.

lists. The necessary inference is that his stay at the university was short, and that only the groundwork of his education was laid there. Although there is no direct evidence of the fact, there can be no doubt that he left St Andrews to complete his education on the Continent, and that he probably studied at the university of Paris, and visited Italy and Germany. He did not, however, as has been supposed, spend the best years of his manhood abroad, for he was certainly at home in 1571, when, being just of age, the preliminaries of his marriage were arranged at Merchiston ; and for many years after that event he took an earnest interest in the affairs of the church, the most engrossing element in the politics of the time.

In 1572 John Napier married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir James Stirling of Keir, mentioned above. This mar- riage took place almost immediately after his father's second marriage. About the end of the year 1579 John Napier's wife died, leaving him one son, Archibald, the first Lord Napier, and one daughter, Jane.

On the 17th of October 1593 a convention of delegates was held at Edinburgh at which a committee was appointed to follow the king and lay before him in a personal inter- view certain instructions relating to the punishment of the rebellious Popish earls and the safety of the church. This committee consisted of six members, two barons, two ministers, and two burgesses—the two barons selected

being John Napier of Merchiston and James Maxwell of.

Calderwood. The delegates found the king at Jedburgh, and the mission, which was a dangerous one, was success- fully accomplished. Shortly afterwards another convention was held at Edinburgh, and it was resolved that the delegates sent to Jedburgh should again meet the king at Linlithgow and repeat their former instructions. This was done accordingly, the number of members of the committee being, however, doubled. These interviews took place in October 1593, and on the 29th of the following January Napier wrote to the king the letter which forms the dedica- tion of the Plaine Discovery.

The full title of this first work of Napier's is given be- low.' It was written in English instead of Latin in order that "hereby the simple of this land may

be instructed”; aud the author states that he “was constrained of com- passion, leaving the Latine, to haste out in English this present worke.” He apologizes also for the language and his own mode of expression in the following sentences :—

‘“Whatsoever therfore through hast, is here rudely and in base language set downe, I doubt not to be pardoned thereof by all good men, who, considering the necessitie of this time, will esteem it more meete to make hast to prevent the rising againe of Anti. christian darknes within this Iland, then to prolong the time in painting of language’; and ‘I graunt indeede, and am sure, that in the style of wordes and utterance of language, we shall greatlie differ, for therein I do judge my selfe inferiour to all men: so that scarcely in these high matters could I with long deliberation finde wordes to expresse my minde.” 2 ee ee

1A plaine discovery of the whule Revelation of Saint Iohn: set downe in two treatises: The one searching and proving the true inter- pretation thereof: The other applying the same paraphrastically and Historically to the text. Set foorth by John Napeir L. of Marchis- toun younger. Whereunto are annexed certaine Oracles of Sibylla, agreeing with the Revelation and other places of Scripture. Edin- burgh, printed by Robert Walde-grave, printer to the King’s Majestie, 1593. Cum privilegio Regali.

2 The work was translated into French by George Thomson, a naturalized Scotsman residing in La Rochelle, and published by him at that town in 1602, under the title Ouverture de tous les sccrets de ? Apocalypse, de. Par Jean Napier (c. a. d.) Nonpareil, Sieur de Merchiston, reveue par lui-meme, et mise en Francois par Georges Thomson, Escossois. There was a sccond edition of the translation in 1605, and a third edition in 1607. There was also a German transla- tion published at Frankfort, which reached its third edition in 1627.

MWA TER

[oF MERCHISTON,

It is not to be supposed that Napier’s Plaine Discovery was in any respect due to a visionary cloud passing over his mind, or toany temporary

infatuation; on the contrary, it is a serious and laborious work, to which he had devoted years of care and thought, and which is closely connected with the history of the times. In one sense it may be said to stand to theological literature in Scotland in some- thing of the same position as that occupied by the Canon Mirijicus with respect to the scientific literature, for it is the first published original work relating to theological interpretation, and is quite without a predecessor in its own field. In judging of the book, the circumstances of the time and the state of the country have to be. taken into account. Napier lived in the very midst of fiercely con- tending religious factions, and his home was situated in a district which was the scene of constant wars and disturb- ances ; there was but little theological teaching of any kind, and the work related to what were then the leading political and religious questions of the day.

After the publication of the Plaine Discovery, Napier seems to have occupied himself with the invention of secret instruments of war, for in the Bacon collection at Lambeth Palace there is a document, dated June 7, 1596, and signed by Napier, giving a list of his inventions for the defence of the country against the anticipated invasion by Philip of Spain. The document is entitled “Secrett Inventionis, proffitabill and necessary in theis dayes for defence of this Iland, and withstanding of strangers, enemies of God’s truth and religion,” * and the inventions consist of (1) a mirror for burning the enemies’ ships at any distance, (2) a piece of artillery destroying everything round an arc of a circle, and (3) a round metal chariot, so constructed that its occnpants could move it rapidly and easily, while firing out through small holes init. It has been asserted (by Sir Thomas Urquhart) that the piece of artillery was actually tried upon a plain in Scotland with complete success, a number of sheep and cattle being destroyed.

In 1614 appeared the work which in the history of British science can be placed as second only to Newton’s Princyia. The full title is as follows :— Mirifici Log- arithmorum Canonis descriptio, Ejusque usus, in utraque Trigonometria ; ut etiam in omni Logistica Mathematica, Amplissem, Facillimi, & expeditissimi explicatio. Auth- ore ac Inventore Loanne Nepero, Barone Merchistoniu, &c., Scoto. Edinburgi, ex officind Andrew Hart Bibliopole, CIO, DC. XIV, This is printed on an ornamental title-

page. The work is a small-sized quarto, containing fifty- seven pages of explanatory matter and ninety pages of tables.

The nature of logarithms is explained by reference to the motion of points in a straight line, and the principle upon which they are based is that of the correspondence of a geometrical and an arithmetical series of numbers. The table gives the logarithms of sines for every minute to seven figures ; it is arranged semi-quadrantally, so that the diferentix, which are the differences of the two logarithms in the same line, are the logarithms of the tangents. Napier’s logarithms are not the logarithms now termed

The second English edition appeared in 1611, and in the preface to it Napier states he intended to have published an edition in Latin soon after the original publication in 1593, but that, as the work had now been made public by the French and German translations, and as he was “advertised that our papistical adversaries wer to writc larglie against the said editions that are alreadie set out,” he defers the Latin edition ‘‘ till having first seene the adversaries objections, I may insert in the Latin edition an apologie of that which is rightly done, and an amends of whatsoever is aniisse.” No criticism on the work was ever published, and there was no Latin edition. in 1645,

3 A facsimile of this document is given by Mr Mark Napier in his Memoirs of John Napier.

A third cdition appeared

OF MERCHISTON. |

=2°7182818… system, the connexion being expressed by the equation—

log Nap. n=10,000,000 log (10,000,000) – 10,000,000 log. 2 ;

7

or log Nap. n=10’ loge(x) ,

n

A translation of the Canon Mérificus into English was made by Edward Wright, and published after his death by his son Samuel Wright, at London, in 1618, under the title 4 Description of the admirable Table of Logarithmes. Edward Wright, who was a fellow of Caius College, Cambridge, occupies a conspicuous place in the In 1599 he published Certaine errors in Navigation detected and corrected, and he was the author of other works; to him also is chiefly due the invention of the method known as Mercator's sailing. He at once saw the value of log- arithms as an aid to navigation, and lost no time in preparing a translation, which he submitted to Napier himself. The preface to Wricht's edition consists of a translation of the preface to the

history of navigation.

t=)

Canon Mirificus, together with the addition of the following sentences written by Napier himself:—‘‘ But now some of our Countreymen in this Island well affected to these studies, and the

more publique good, procured a most learned Mathematician to

translate the same into our vulgar English tongue, who after he had finished it, sent the Coppy of it to me, to bee seene and I having most willingly and gladly

considered on by myselfe. done the same, finde it to bee most exact and precisely conform- able to my minde and the originall.

Translator, with as much good will as we recommend it unto you.”

There is a short “ preface to the reader” by Brigys, and a descrip- tion of a triangular diagram invented by Wright for finding the proportional parts. The table is printed to one figure less than in the Canon Mirificus. Edward Wright died in 1615, and his son in

the preface states that his father ‘‘ gave much commendation of this

work (and often in my hearing) as of very great use for mariners” ; and with respect to the translation he says that ‘‘ shortly after he had it returned out of Scotland, it pleased God to call him away afore he could publish it.”

In 1617 Napier published his Rc ddologia,! a duodecimo of one hundred and fifty-four pag +s; there is prefixed to it as preface a dedicatory epistle to the high chancellor of Scotland. The method which Nap‘er terms “ Rabdologia ” consists in the use of certain numerating rods for the performance of multiplications and divisions. These rods, which were commonly called “Napier’s bones,” will be described further on. The second method, which he calls the “Promptuarium Multiplicationis” on account of its being the most expeditious of all for the performance of multi- plications, involves the use of a number of lamellee or little plates of metal disposed in a box. Im an appendix of forty-one pages he gives his third method, “ local arithmetic,” which is performed on a chess-board, and depends, in principle, on the expression of numbers in the scale of radix 2. In the Rabdologia he gives the chrono- logical order of his inventions. He speaks of the canon of logarithms as “a me longo tempore elaboratum.” The other three methods he devised for the sake of those who would prefer to work with natural numbers ; and he mentions that the promptuary was his latest invention. In the preface to the appendix containing the local arith- metic he states that, while devoting all his leisure to the invention of these abbreviations of calculation, and to examining by what methods the toil of calculation might be removed, in addition to the logarithms, rabdologia, and promptuary, he had hit upon a certain tabular arithmetic, whereby the more troublesome operations of common arith- metic are performed on an abacus or chess-board, and which may be regarded as an amusement rather than a labour, for, by means of it, addition, subtraction, multiplication, division, and even the extraction of roots are accomplished simply by the motion of counters. He adds that he has appended

1 Rabdologie, seu Numerationis per virgulas Libri duo: Cum Appendice de expeditissimo Multiplicationis Promptuario. Quibus aecessit & Arithmetice Localis Liber unus. Authore & Inventore Toanne Nepero, Barone Merchistonti, &e., Scoto.

Edinburgi, Hxcu- debat Andreas Hart, 1617. af

Napierian, that is to say, logarithms to the base e where e ; but they are closely related to this

Therefore it may please you who are inclined to these studies, to receive it from me and the

it to the Radbdologia, in addition to the promptuary, because he did not wish to bury it in silence, nor to publish so small a matter by itself. With respect to the calculating rods, Napier mentions in the dedication that they had already found so much favour as to be almost in common use, and even to have been carried to foreign countries; and that he has been advised to publish his little work relating to their mechanism and use, lest they should be put forth in some one else's name.

John Napier died on April 4, 1617, the same year as that in which the Rabdologia was published, so that his death must have taken place very soon after its appear- ance. His will, which is extant, was signed on the fourth day before his death. No particulars are known of his last illness, but it seems likely that death came upon him rather suddenly at last. In both the Canon Mirvicus and the Rabdologia, however, he makes reference to his ill-health. In the dedication of the former he refers to himself as "mihi jam morbis pen? confecto," and in the "Admonitio" at the end he speaks of his "infirma vale- tudo"; while in the latter he says he has been obliged to leave the calculation of the new canon of logarithms to others "ob infirmam corporis nostri valetudinem."

It is usually stated that John Napier was buried in St Giles's church, Edinburgh, and there can be no doubt that some of the family of Napier were buried there in the 16th or 17th century, but the late Professor Wallace, in a paper read before the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland in 1832, and quoted by Mr Mark Napier on pp. 425-427 of his Memoirs of John Napier of Merchiston, gives evidence for believing that he was buried in St Cuthbert's church. Professor Wallace's words are—

‘ My authority for this belief is unquestionable. It is a Treatise on Trigonometry, by a Scotsman, James Hume of Godscroft, Berwickshire, a place still in possession of the family of Hume. The work in question, which is rare, was printed at Paris, and has the date 1636 on the title-page, but the royal privilege which secured it to the author is dated in October 1635, and it may have been written several years earlier. In his treatise (page 116) Hume says, speaking of logarithms, ‘L’inuenteur estoit un Seigneur de grande condition, et duquel la posterité est aujour- d’huy en possession de grandes dignitéz dans le royaume, qui estant sur lage, et grandement trauaillé des gouttes ne pouvait faire autre chose que de s’adonner aux sciences, et principalment aux mathe- matiques et & la logistique, 4 quoy il se plaisoit infiniment, et auec estrange peine, a construict ses Tables des Logarymes, im- primees & Edinbourg en l’an 1614… . Il monrut lan 1616, et fut enterré hors la Porte Occidentale d’Edinbourg, dans l’Kglise de Sainct Cudbert.’”

There can be no doubt that Napier’s devotion to mathe- matics was not due to old age and the gout, and that he died in 1617 and notin 1616; still these sentences were written within eighteen years of Napier’s death, and their author seems to have had some special sources of information. Additional probability is given to Hume’s assertion by the fact that Merchiston is situated in St Cuthbert’s parish. It is nowhere else recorded that Napier suffered from the gout.

The Canon Mirificus contains only an explanation of the use of the logarithms without any account of the manner in which the canon was constructed. In an “ Admonitio” on the seventh page he states that, although in that place the mode of construction should be explained, he proceeds at once to the use of the logarithms, “ut prelibatis prius usu, et rei utilitate, czetera aut magis placeant posthac edenda, aut minus saltem displiceant silentio sepulta.” He awaits therefore the judgment and censure of the learned “ priusquam czetera in lucem temere prolata lividorum detrectationi exponantur”; and in an « Admonitio” on the last page of the book he states that he will publish the mode of construction of the canon “si huius inventi usum eruditis gratum fore intellexero.”

Napier, as we have seen, died in 1617, immediately after the appearance of the Rabdologia, and before he had

published the promised account of the method of construc- tion of the canon. This work was, however, issued by Robert Napier, his second son by his second marriage, in 1619. The Constructio consists of a preface of two pages, followed by sixty-seven pages of text. In the preface Robert Napier says that he has been assured from undoubted authority that the new invention is much thought of by the ablest mathematicians, and that nothing would delight them more than the publication of the mode of construc- tion of the canon. He therefore issues the work to satisfy their desires, although, he states, it is manifest that it would have seen the light in a far more perfect state if his father could have put the finishing touches to it; and he mentions that, in the opinion of the best judges, his father possessed, among other most excellent gifts, in the highest degree the power of explaining the most difficult matters by a certain and easy method in the fewest possible words.

It is important to notice that in the Constructio log- arithms are called artificial numbers; and Robert Napier states that the work was composed several years (aliquot annos) before Napier had invented the name logarithm. The Constructio therefore may have been written a good many years previous to the publication of the Descriptio in

1614.2

The Canon Mirificus, on its appearance in 1614, at once attracted the attention of perhaps the two most eminent English mathematicians then living—Edward Wright and Henry Briggs. The former, as we have seen, translated the work into English, but died in 1615 before he could publish his translation. The latter was concerned with Napier in the change of the logarithms from those originally invented to decimal or common logarithms, and it is to him that the original calculation of the logarithmic tables now in use is mainly due (see Brrees). He died on January 26, 1631, aged about seventy-four years, so that at the time of the publication of the Canon Mirificus he was about fifty-seven years of age. In a letter to Archbishop Ussher, dated Gresham House, March 10, 1615, Briggs wrote,

‘“Napper, lord of Markinston, hath set my head and hands a work with his new and admirable logarithms. I hope to see him this summer, if it please God, for I never saw book which pleased me better, or made me more wonder.’ I purpose to discourse with him

1 The full title was—Mirifict logarithmorum canonis constructio; Et eorum ad naturales ipsorum numeros habitudines; und cum Appen- dice, de alia eAque prestantiore Logarithmorum specie condenda. Quibus accessere Propositiones ad triangula spherica faciliore calculo resolvenda: Und cum Annotationibus aliquot doctissini D. Henrict Briggii, in eas & memoratam appendicem. Authore & Inventore foanne Nepero, Barone Merchistonii, &c. Scoto. Ldinburgi, Excude- bat Andreas Hart, Anno Domini 1619. There is also preceding this title-page an ornamental title-page, similar to that of the Canon Mirt- jicus of 1614; the words are different, however, and rnn—Mitrifici logarithmorum canonis descriptio . . . Accesserunt Opera Posthuma: Primo, Mirifici ipsius canonis constructio, & TLogarithmorum ad naturales ipsorum numeros habitudines. Secundd, A ppendiz de alia, edque prestantiore Logarithmorum specie construenda. Tertis, Pro- positiones quedam eminentissine, ad Triangula spherica mira factli- tate resolvenda. .... It would thus appear that the Canonis Descriptio and the Canonis Constructio were issued together in 161 g, or that at all events this was the intention.

- Both the Descriptio and Constructio were reprinted by Bartholomew Vincent at Lyons in 1620, and issued together under the title Logarith- morum Canonis Descriptio, seu

3 Dr Thomas Smith thus describes the ardour with which Briggs studied the Canon Miérijicus :—‘‘ Hunce in deliciis habuit, in sinu, in manibus, in pectore gestavit, oculisque avidissimis, et mente attentis- sima, iterum iterumque perlegit, . . .” Vite quorundam eruditisst- morum et illustrium virorum (London, 1707).

NAPIER

[OF MERCHISToN,

concerning eclipses, for what is there which we may not hope for at his hands” ; and he also states “ that he was wholly taken up and employed about the noble invention of logarithms, lately discovered.” In the summer of 1615 he went to Merchiston and stayed with Napier a whole month; he repeated his visit in 1616, and, as he states, he “would have been glad to make him a third visit, if it had pleased God to spare him so long.” William Lilly, the astrologer, in his Life and Times, 1721, gives the fol- lowing account of the meeting between Napier and Briggs on the occasion of the first visit :—

“*T will acquaint you with one memorable story, related unto me by Mr John Marr, an excellent mathematician and geometrician, whom I conccive you remember: he was servant to King James and Charles I. At first, when the Lord Napier, or Marchiston, first made publick his logarithms, Mr Briggs, then reader of the Astro- nomy Iccture at Gresham College in London, was so surprised with admiration of them that he could have no quictness in himself, until he had secn that noble person the Lord Marchiston whose only invention they were: he acquaints John Marr herewith, who went into Scotland before Mr Briggs, purposely to be there when these two so learned persons should meet. Mr Briggs appoints a certain day when to meet at Edinburgh: but failing thereof, the Lord Napier was doubtful he would not come. It happened one day as John Marrand the Lord Napier were speaking of Mr Briggs ; ‘Ah, John,’ saith Marchiston, ‘Mr Briggs will not now come’; at the very instant one knocks at the gate; John Marr hasted down and it proved Mr Briggs to his great contentment. He brings Mr Briggs up into my Lord’s chamber, where almost one quarter of an hour was spent, each beholding the other almost with admira- tion, before one word was spoke. At last Mr Briggs began— ‘My Lord, I have undertaken this long journey purposely to see your person, and to know by what engine of wit or ingenuity you came first to think of this most excellent help unto Astronomy, viz., the Logarithms; but my Lord, being by you found out, I wonder nobody else found it out before, when now known it is so easy.’ He was nobly entertained by the Lord Napier, and every summer after that, during the Lord’s being alive, this venerable man, Mr Briggs went purposely into Scotland to visit him.”

With respect to the change of the logarithms to decimal logarithms, the concluding paragraph of the ‘‘ Admonitio” which appears on the last page of the Canon of 1614 is “‘‘Verum si huius inventi usum eruditis gratum fore intel- lexero, dabo fortasse brevi (Deo aspirante) rationem ac methodum aut hunc canonem emendandi, aut emendatiorem de novo condendi, ut ita plurium Logistarum diligentia, limatior tandem et accuratior, quam unius opera fieri potuit, in lucem prodeat. Nihil in ortu perfectum.” In some copies, however, this “Admonitio” is absent. In Wright’s translation of 1616 Napier has added the sentence—“‘ But because the addition and subtraction of these former numbers may seeme somewhat painfull, I intend (if it shall please God) in a second Edition, to set out such Logarithmes as shall make those numbers above written to fall upon decimal numbers, such as 100,000,000, 200,000,000, 300,000,000, &c., which are easie to be added or abated to or from any other number” (p. 19); and in the dedication to the Rabdologia (1617) he wrote “ Quorum quidem Logarithmorum speciem aliam multd prestan- tiorem nunc etiam invenimus, & creandi methodum, und cum eorum usu (si Deus longiorem vite & valetudinis usuram concesserit) evulgare statuimus; ipsam autem novi canonis supputationem, ob infirmam corporis nostri valetudinem, viris in hoc studii genere versatis relin- quimus : imprimis verd doctissimo viro D. Henrico Briggio Londini publico Geometrizx Professori, et amico mihi longé charissimo.”

Briggs published in 1617, after Napier’s death, his Logarithmorum Chilias Prima, containing the decimal logarithms of the first thousand numbers to 14 places of decimals. This isthe first table of common (or Briggian) logarithms calculated or published. In 1624 he published his Arithmetica Logarithmica, containing the logarithms of the first 20,000 numbers and of the numbers from 90,000 to 100,000 to 14 places of decimals. In the short preface

to the Chilias (1617) Briggs states that the reason why his logarithms are different from those introduced by Napier “sperandum, ejus librum posthumum, abunde nobis propediem satisfacturum.” The “liber posthumus”

was the Constructio (1619), in the preface to which Robert

Napier states that he has added an appendix relating to another and more excellent species of logarithms referred to by the inventor himself in the Rabdologia, and in which the logarithm of unity is0. He also mentions that he has published some remarks upon the propositions in spherical trigonometry and upon the new species of logarithms by Henry Briggs, “qui novi hujus Canonis supputandi laborem gravissimum, pro singulari amicitia que illi cum Patre meo L. M. intercessit, animo libentissimo in se suscepit ; creandi methodo, et usuum explanatione Inventori relictis. Nunc autem ipso ex hac vita evocato, totius negotii onus doctis- simi Briggii humeris incumbere, et Sparta hee ornanda illi sorte quadam obtigisse videtur.” In the address pre- fixed to the Arithmetica Logarithmica (1625) Briggs bids the reader not to be surprised that these logarithms are different from those published in the Canon Mirificus :— “Fgo enim, cum meis auditoribus Londini, publice in Collegio Greshamensi horum doctrinam explicarem; animadverti multo futurum commodius, si Logarithmus sinus totius servaretur 0 (ut in Canone mirifico) Logarithmus autem partis decimz ejusdem sinus totius, nempe sinus 5 graduum, 44, m. 21, s., esset 10000000000. atque ea de re scripsi statim ad ipsum authorem, et quampriinum per anni tempus, et vacationem a publico docendi munere licuit, profectus sum Edinburgum; ubi humanissime ab eo acceptus hesi per integrum mensem. Cum autem inter nos de horum mutatione sermo haberetur ; ille se idem dudum sensisse, et cupivisse dicebat: veruntamen istos, quos jam paraverat edendos curasse, donec alios, si per negotia et valetudinem liceret, magis commodos confecisset. Istam autem mutationem ita faciendam censebat, ut 0 esset Log- arithmus unitatis, et 10000000000 sinus totius: quod ego longe commodissimum esse non potui nou agnoscere. Ccepi igitur, ejus hortatu, rejectis illis quos anted paraveram, de horum calculo serio cogitare; et sequenti xstate iterum profectus Edinburgum, horum

quos hic exhibeo precipuos, illi ostendi. idem etiam tertia estate

libentissime facturus, si Deus illum nobis tamdiu superstitem esse voluisset.”

There is also a reference to the change of the logarithms on the title-page of the work.1

These extracts contain all the original statements made by Napier, Robert Napier, and Briggs which have reference to the origin of decimal logarithms. It will be seen that they are all in perfect agreement. Briggs pointed out in his lectures at Gresham College that it would be more convenient that 0 should stand for the logarithm of the whole sine as in the Canon Mirificus, but that the logarithm of the tenth part of the whole sine (that is to say, of the sine of 5° 44’ 21”) should be 10,000,000,000. He wrote also to Napier at once; and as soon as he could he went to Edinburgh to visit him, where, as he was most hospitably received by him, he remained for a whole month. When they conversed about the change of system, Napier said that he had felt and desired the same thing, but that he had published the tables which he had already prepared, so that they might be used until he could con- struct others more convenient. But he considered that the change ought to be so made that 0 should be the logarithm of unity and 10,000,000,000 that of the whole sine, which Briggs could not but admit was by far the most convenient of all. Rejecting therefore those which he had prepared already, Briggs began, at Napier’s advice, to consider seriously the question of the calculation of new tables. In the following summer he went to Edinburgh and showed Napier the principal portion of the logarithms which he published in 1624. These probably included

1 . . ° ° ° –

: The title runs as follows :—Arithmetica Logarithmica, sive Log- arithmorum chiliades triginta. ... Hos numeros primus invenit clarissimus vir lohannes Neperus Baro Merchistonij ; eos autem ex

etusdem sententia mutavit, eorumque ortum et usum illustravit Henri- cus Briggius. .

the logarithms of the first chiliad which he published in

1617.

Unfortunately Hutton in his history of logarithms, which was prefixed to the early editions of his Mathematical Tables, and was also published as one of his Mathematical Tracts, has charged Napier with want of candour in not telling the world of Briggs's share in the change of system, and he expresses the suspicion that "' Napier was desirous that the world should ascribe to him alone the merit of this very useful improvement of the logarithms." Accord- ing to Hutton's view, the words "7 zs to be hoped that his posthumous work". . . . which occur in the preface to the Chilias, were a modest hint that the share Briggs had had in changing the logarithms should be mentioned, and that, as no attention was paid to it, he himself gave the account which appears in the Arithmetica of 1624. 'There seems, however, no ground whatever for supposing that Briggs meant to express anything beyond his hope that the reason for the alteration would be explained in the posthumous work ; and in his own account, written seven years after Napier's death and five years after the appearance of the work itself, he shows no injured feeling whatever, but even goes out of his way to explain that he abandoned his own proposed alteration in favour of Napier's, and, rejecting the tables he had already constructed, began to consider the calculation of new ones. The facts, as stated by Napier and Briggs, are in complete accordance, and the friendship existing between them was perfect and unbroken to the last. Briggs assisted Robert Napier in the editing of the "posthumous work," the Constructio, and in the account he gives of the alteration of the logarithms in the Arithmetica of 1624 he seems to have been more anxious that justice should be done to Napier than to himself; while on the other hand Napier received Briggs most hospitably and refers to him as "amico mihi longé charissimo."

Hutton's unfair suggestions are all the more to be regretted as they occur in a history which is the result of a good deal of investigation, and which has been referred to as an authority by many English and foreign writers. He seems to have felt a strong prejudice against Napier for some reason, and all his statements with regard to the origin of logarithms and Napier's connexion with them are untrustworthy. While speaking of the change of the logarithms, it should be noticed that the "« Admonitio" on the last page of the Canon Mirificus, containing the refer- ence to the new logarithms, does not occur in all the copies. It is printed on the back of the last page of the table itself, and so cannot have been torn out from the copies that are

without it. As there could have been no reason for omit- ting it after it had once appeared, we may assume that the copies which do not have it are those which were first issued. It is probable therefore that Briggs's copy con- tained no reference to the change, and it is even possible that the " Admonitio" may have been added after Briggs had communicated with Napier. As special attention has not been drawn to the fact that some copies have the "« Admonitio" and some have not, different writers have assumed that Briggs did or did not know of the promise contained in the '""Admonitio" according as it was present or absent in the copies they had themselves referred to, and this has given rise to some confusion. It ought also to be borne in mind that had Napier lived to publish the Constructio himself, he would probably have referred to Briggs in much warmer terms than those used by Robert Napier, who doubtless regarded it as due to his father's memory to simply state the facts as he knew them. The character of Briggs is very amiable and perfect ; he states with modesty and simplicity his own share in the improvement; and with complete loyalty to his friend, and

with great earnestness, he devoted the rest of his life to extend the utility of Napier's splendid invention.

Napier's original canon is a table of logarithms of sines, and it was clearly Briggs's original intention to calculate logarithms of sines also; it does not appear from the account he gives who it was who first suggested the tabulation of the logarithms of numbers instead of sines.

Kepler received the invention of logarithms with great enthusiasm. His first mention of them occurs in a letter to Schikhart dated March 11, 1618, in which he writes —"Extitit Scotus Baro, cujus nomen mihi excidit, qui preclari quid preestitit, necessitate omni multiplicationum et divisionum in meras additiones et subtractiones com- mutata, nec sinibus utitur: at tamen opus est ipsi tangentium canone: et varietas, crebritas, difficultasque additionum subtractionumque alicubi laborem multiplicandi et dividendi superat." This erroneous estimate was formed when he had seen the Canon Mirificus but had not read it ; and his opinion was very different when he became ac- quainted with the nature of logarithms. The dedication of his

Hphemercs for 1620 consists of a letter to Napier dated July 28, 1619, and he there congratulates him warmly on his invention and on the benefit he has conferred upon astronomy generally and also upon his own Rudolphine tables. He says that, although Napier's book had been pub- lished five years, he first saw it at Prague two years before; he was then unable to read it, but last year he had met with a little work by Benjamin Ursinus! containing the substance of the method, and he at once recognized the importance of what had been effected. He then explains how he verified the canon, and so found that there were no essential errors init, although there were a few inaccuracies near the begin- ning of the quadrant, and he proceeds, " Heec te obiter scire volui, ut quibus tu methodis incesseris, quas non dubito et plurimas et ingeniosissimas tibi in promptu esse, eas publici juris fieri, mihi saltem (puto et ceteris) scires fore gratis- simum ; eoque percepto, tua promissa folio 57, in debitum cecidisse intelligeres." This letter was written two years after Napier's death, of which Kepler was ignorant, and in the same year as that in which the Constructio was published. In 1624 Kepler published a table of N. apierian logarithms, with certain modifications and additions.

In a letter from Kepler to Petrus Cugerus there occurs the remarkable sentence—" Nihil autem supra N eperianam rationem esse puto: etsi quidem Scotus quidam literis ad Tychonem A. ciotoxcrv. scriptis jam spem fecit Canonis illus Mirifici." It is here distinctly stated that some Scotsman in the year 1594, in a letter to Tycho Brahe, gave him some hope of the logarithms; and as Kepler joined Tycho after his expulsion from the island of Huen, and had been so closely associated with him in his work, he would be likely to be correct in any assertion of this kind. In connexion with Kepler's statement the following

story, told by Anthony Wood in the Athene Oxonienses, should be noticed : —

''It must be now known, that one Dr Craig, a Scotchman. . . coming out of Denmark into his own country, called upon Joh. Neper, Baron of Mercheston, near Edinburgh, and told him, among other discourses, of a new invention in Denmark (by Longomontanus, as "tis said), to save the tedious multiplication and division in astro- nomical calculations. Neper

being solicitous to know farther of him concerning this matter, he could give no other account of it than that it was by Penne! numbers. Which hint Neper taking, he desired him at his return to call upon him again. Craig, after some weeks had passed, did so, and Neper then showed him

1 The title of this work is—Benjaminis Ursint . . . Cursus Mathe- matict Practict volumen Primum continens Illustr. & Generost Dn, Dn. Johannis Neperi Baronis Merchistontj de, Scott. Trigonometriam logarithmicam Usibus discentium accommodatam … Colonix gar Cl) IOC XIX. At the end, Napier's table is reprinted, but to two figures less. As this work was published in 1619, and Vincent's reprint of the Descriptio and Constructio not till 1620, it forms the earliest publication of logarithms on the Continent,

ITER

a rude draught of what he called Canon mirabilis Logarithmorum. Which draught, with some alterations, he printing in 1614, it came forthwith into the hands of our author Briggs, and into those of Will. Oughtred, from whom the relation of this matter came."

Longomontanus was Tycho's assistant, and this story, though obviously untrue in its facts, is of importance, as it connects Dr Craig with Napier and Longomontanus. In the early part of this article Thomas Craig was mentioned as one of the colleagues of Sir Archibald Napier, John Napier's father, in the office of justice-depute. He is well known as the author of a celebrated legal work De Feudis, and between his third son John Craig and John Napier a friendship sprang up which may have been due to their common taste for mathematics. There are extant three letters from Dr John Craig to Tycho Brahe, which show that he was on the most friendly terms with him. In the first letter, of which the date is not given, Craig says that Sir William Stewart has safely delivered to him, "about the beginning of last winter," the book which he sent him. Now Mr Mark Napier found in the library of the univer- sity of Edinburgh a mathematical work bearing a sentence in Latin of which the translation is "To Doctor John Craig of Edinburgh, in Scotland, a most illustrious man, highly gifted with various and excellent learning, professor of medicine, and exceedingly skilled in the mathematics, Tycho Brahe hath sent this gift, and with his own hand written

this at Uraniburg, 2d November 1588." As Sir William Stewart was sent to Denmark to arrange the pre- liminaries of King James's marriage, and returned to Edinburgh on November 15, 1588, there can be little doubt that this was the volume referred to by Craig. It appears from Craig's letter, to which we may therefore assign the date 1589, that, five years before, he had made an attempt to reach Uraniburg, but had been baffled by the storms and rocks of Norway, and that ever since then he had been longing to visit Tycho. Now John Craig was physician to the king, and in 1590 James VI. spent some days at Uraniburg before returning to Scotland from his matrimonial expedition. It seems not unlikely therefore that Craig may have accompanied the king in his visit to Uraniburg. In any case it is certain that Craig was a friend and correspondent of Tycho's, and there can be but little doubt that he was the "Scotus quidam."

It is therefore clear that as early as 1594 Napier must have communicated to Craig his hope of being able to effect the simplification of the processes of arithmetic. Everything tends to show that the invention of logarithms was the result of many years of labour and thought, under- taken with this special object, and it thus appears that Napier had seen some prospect of success nearly twenty years before the publication of the Canon Mirijicus. It is very evident that no mere hint with regard to the use of proportional numbers could have been of any service to Napier, but it is possible that the news brought by Craig of the difficulties placed in the progress of astronomy by the labour of the calculations may have stimulated him to persevere in his efforts.

The "new invention in Denmark" to which Anthony Wood refers as having given the hint to Napier was probably the method of calculation called prosthapheresis (often written in Greek letters tpooOadalpeois), which had its origin in the solution of spherical triangles2 The method consists in the use of the formula

sina sinb=}{cos(a-6)—cos(a+d)}, by means of which the multiplication of two sines is

[or mERcutstoy,

2 A careful examination of the history of the method is given by Scheibel in his Hinlettung zur mathematischen Biicherkenntniss, Stick vii. (Breslau, 1775), pp. 13-20; and there is also an account in Kastner's Geschichte der Mathematik, vol. i. (1796), pp. 566-569 ; in Montucla's Histoire des Mathématiques, vol. i. pp. 583-585 and 617- 619: and in Kliigel's Worterbuch (1808), article ‘‘ Prosthapheresis."

reduced to the addition or subtraction of two tabular results taken from a table of sines; and, as such products occur in the solution of spherical triangles, the method affords the solution of spherical triangles in certain cases by addition and subtraction only. It seems to be due to Wittich of Breslau, who was assistant for a short time to Tycho Brahe ; and it was used by them in their calcula- tions in 1582. Wittich in 1584 made known at Cassel the calculation of one case by this prosthapheresis ; and Justus Byrgius proved it in such a manner that from his proof the extension to the solution of all triangles could be deduced. Clavius generalized the method in his treatise De Astrolabio (1593), lib. i. lemma lili. The lemma com- mences as follows :—

"« Questiones omnes, que per sinus, tangentes, atgue secantes absolvi solent, per solam prosthaphzresim, id est, per solam additionem, sub- tractionem, sine laboriosa numerorum multiplicatione divisioneque expedire.

"Hdidit ante tres quatuorve annos Nicolaus Raymarus Ursus Dithmarsus libellum quendam, in quo preter alia proponit inven- tum sane acutum, et ingeniosum, quo per solam prosthapheeresim pleraque triangula spherica solvit. Sed quoniam id solum putat fieri posse, quando sinus in regula proportionum assumuntur, et sinus totus primum locum obtinet, conabimur nos eam doctrinam magis generalem eflicere, ita ut non solum locum habeat in sinibus, et quando sinus totus primum locum in regula proportionum obtinet, yerum etiam in tangentibus, sccantibus, sinibus versis et aliis numeris, et sive sinus totus sit in principio regule proportionum, sive in medio, sive denique nullo modo interveniat: que res nova omnino est, ac jucunditatis et voluptatis plena."

The work of Raymarus Ursus, referred to by Clavius, is his Pundamentum Astronomicum (1588). Longomontanus, in his Astronomia Danica (1622), gives an account of the method, stating that it is not to be found in the writings of the Arabs or Regiomontanus. As Longomontanus is mentioned in Anthony Wood's anecdote, and as Wittich as well as Longomontanus were assistants of Tycho, there seems little room for doubt that Wittich's prosthapheresis is the method referred to by Wood.

In 1610 Herwart ab Hohenburg published at Munich a multiplication table extending to 1000 × 1000, a huge folio volume of more than a thousand pages; and some writers, misled by the title,! have supposed that it contained logarithms. It appears from a correspondence between Kepler and Herwart,? which took place at the end of 1608, that Herwart used his table when in manuscript for the performance of multiplications in general, and that the occurrence of the word prosthapheresis on the title is due to Kepler, who pointed out that by means of the table spherical triangles could be solved more easily than by Wittich's prosthaphzeresis.

It is evident that Wittich's prosthapheresis could not be a good method of practically effecting multiplications unless the quantities to be multiplied were sines, on account of the labour of the interpolations. It satisfies the con- dition, however, equally with logarithms, of enabling multiplication to be performed by the aid of a table of Single entry ; and, analytically considered, it is not so different in principle from the logarithmic method. In fact, if we put ry = (X + Y), X being a function of x only and Y a function of y only, we can show that we must have X=Ac*, y=Be"; and if we put ay=¢(X+Y) ~$(X—Y), the solutions are d(X+Y)=}(x+y)%, and =sinX, y=sinY, $(X+Y)=—4cos(X+Y). The

) Tabule arithmetice mpocOadatperews universales, quarum sub- sidio humerus quilibet, ex multiplicatione producendus, per solam additionem ; et quotiens quilibet, e divisione eliciendus, per solam sub- tractionem, sine tediosd, & lubricd Multiplicationis, atque Divisionis Operatione, etiam ab eo, qui Arithmetices non admodum sit gnarus, ee, ecleriter & nullo negotio invenitur.

The correspondence is printed in Frisch's cdition of Kepler's works, ip. W. pp. 527-530. See also a paper ''On Multiplication by a ee of Single Entry,"

in the Philosophical Magazine for November

former solution gives a method known as that of quarter- squares ; the latter gives the method of prosthapheresis.

An account of the logarithmic table of Justus Byrgius is given in the article LocariTHms.

The more one considers the condition of science at the time, and the state of the country in which the discovery took place, the more wonderful does the invention of logarithms appear. When algebra had advanced to the point where exponents were introduced, nothing would be more natural than that their utility as a means of performing multiplications and divisions should be remarked ; but it is one of the surprises in the history of science that logarithms were invented as an arithmetical improvement years before their connexion with exponents was known. It is to be noticed also that the invention was not the result of any happy accident. Napier deliberately set himself to abbreviate multiplications and divisions,— operations of so fundamental a character that it might well have been thought that they were in rerum natura incapable of abbreviation; and he succeeded in devising, by the help of arithmetic and geometry alone, the one great simplifica- tion of which they were susceptible,—a simplification to which the following two hundred and seventy years have added nothing.

When Napier published the Canon Mirificus England had taken no part in the advance of science, and there is no British author of the time except Napier whose name can be placed in the same rank as those of Copernicus, Tycho Brahe, Kepler, Galileo, or Stevinus. In England, Robert Recorde had indeed published his mathematical treatises, but they were of trifling importance and without influence on the history of science. Scotland had produced nothing, and was perhaps the last country in Europe from which a great mathematical discovery would have been expected. Napier lived, too, not only in a wild country,

which was in a lawless and unsettled state during most of

his life, but also in a credulous and superstitious age. Like Kepler and all his contemporaries he believed in astrology, and he certainly also had some faith in the power of magic, for there is extant a deed written in his own handwriting containing a contract between himself and Robert Logan of Restalrig, a turbulent baron of des- perate character, by which Napier undertakes “to serche and sik out, and be al craft and ingyne that he dow, to tempt, trye, and find out” some buried treasure supposed to be hidden in Logan’s fortress at Fastcastle, in considera- tion of receiving one-third part of the treasure found by his aid. In the deed Logan also agrees to conduct Napier from Edinburgh to Fastcastle and back again, without his being despoiled of his third part or otherwise harmed, when the deed is to be cancelled and destroyed asa dis- charge in full. ‘And incaiss the said Jhone sal find na poiss to be thair eftir all tryall and utter diligens tane ; he referris the satisfactione of his trawell and painis to the discretione of the said Robert.” Of this singular contract, which is signed “Robert Logane of Restalrige” and “‘Jhone Neper, Fear of Merchiston,” and is dated July 1594, a facsimile is given in Mr Mark Napier’s Afemoirs.? As the deed was not destroyed, but is in existence now, it is to be presumed that the terms of it were not fulfilled ; but the fact that such a contract should have been drawn

3 Of the contract itself Mr Mark Napier writes: ‘*The singularity of his holding conference with one who had just been proclaimed an out- law, and whose lawless violence is alluded to and provided against by Napier himself, must be accounted for by the rude state of society, and the simplicity of our philosopher’s character. He took care to word the contract itself, however, and there is not an expression which indi- cates an idea beyond the most legitimate purpose ; but, under the shield of his own innocence, he never dreamed of contamination from his company, was fond of the romance of science, and not averse (nothing derogatory in his times) to the prospect of gold.” —Memoitrs, p. 223,

up by Napier himself affords a singular illustration of the state of society and the kind of events in the midst of which logarithms had their birth. Considering the time in which he lived, Napier is singularly free from

supersti- tion: his Plaine Discovery relates to a method of interpre- tation which belongs to a later age; he shows no trace of the extravagances which occur everywhere in the works of Kepler; and none of his writings contain any allusion to

astrology or magic. :

After Napier's death his manuscripts and notes came into the possession, not of his eldest son Archibald, but of his second son by his second marriage, Robert, who edited the Constructio ; and Colonel Milliken Napicr, Robert's lineal male representative, was still in the possession of many of these private papers at the close of the last century. On one occasion when Colonel Napier was called from home on foreign service, these papers, together with a portrait of John Napier and a Bible with his autograph, were deposited for safety in a room of the house at Milliken, in Renfrew- shire. During the owner's absenee the house was burned to the ground, and all the papers and relics were destroyed. The manu- scripts had'not been arranged or examined, so that the extent of the loss is unknown. Fortunately, however, Robert Napier had transcribed his father's manuscript De Arte Logistica, and the copy escaped the fate of the originals in the manner explained in the following note, written in the volume containing them by Francis, seventh Lord Napier:—" John Napier of Merchiston, inventor of the logarithms, left his manuscripts to his son Robert, who appears to have eaused the following pages to have been written out fair from his father's notes, for Mr Briggs, professor of geometry at Oxford. They were given to Francis, the fifth Lord Napier, by William Napier of Culcreugh, Esq., heir-male of the above-named Robert. Finding them in a neglected state, amongst my family papers, I have bound them together, in order to preserve them entire.—NAPIER, 7th March 1801."

An account of the contents of these manuscripts was given by Mr Mark Napier in the appendix to his Memoirs of John Napier, and the manuscripts themselves were edited in their entirety by him in 1889 under the title De Arte Logistica Jounnis Naperi Mer- chistonit Baronis Libri qui supersunt. Impressum Ldinburgi M.DCOO.XXX.Ix., as one of the publications of the Bannatyne Club. The treatise occupies one hundred and sixty-two pages,

and there is an introduction by Mr Mark Napier of ninety-four pages. The Arithmetic consists of three books, entitled—(1) De Compu- tationibus Quantitatum omnibus Logistics speciebus communium ; (2) De Logistica Arithmetica; (3) De Logistica Geometrica. At the end of this book occurs the note—‘‘I could find no more of this geometricall pairt amongst all his fragments.” The Algebra Joannis Naperi Merchistonti Baronis consists of two books :—(1) ‘‘De nominata Algebree parte; (2) De positiva sive cossica Algebre parte,” and concludes with the words, ‘There is no more of his algebra orderlie sett doun.” The transcripts are entirely in the handwriting of Robert Napier himself, and the two notes that have been quoted prove that they were made from Napier’s own papers. The title, which is written on the first leaf, and is‘also in Robert Napier’s writing, runs thus:—‘‘ The Baron of Merchiston his booke of Arithmeticke and Algebra. For Mr Henrie Briggs, Professor of Geometrie at Oxforde.”

These treatises were probably composed before Napier had invented the logarithms or any of the apparatuses described in the Rabdologia ; for they contain no allusion to the principle of loga- rithms, even where we should expect to find such a reference, and the one solitary sentence where the Rabdologia is mentioned (‘sive omnium facillime per ossa Rhabdologie nostre”) was no doubt added afterwards. It is worth while to notice that this reference occurs in a chapter “‘ De Multiplicationis et Partitionis compendiis miscellaneis,” which, supposing the treatise to have been written in Napier’s younger days, may have been his earliest production on a subjeet over which his subsequent labours were to exert so enormous an influence.

Napier uses abundantes and defective for positive and negative, defining them as meaning greater or less than nothing (‘ Abun- dantes sunt quantitates majores nihilo: defective sunt quantitates minores nihilo”). The same definitions oecur also in the Canon Mirificus (1614), p. 5:—‘‘ Logarithmos sinuum, qui semper majores nihilo sunt, abundantes vocamus, et hoc signo +, aut nullo preno- tamus. Logarithmos autem minores nihilo defectivos vocamus, prenotantes eis hoc signum —.” Napier may thus have been the first to use the expression ‘‘quantity less than nothing.” He uses ‘‘radicatum”’ for power ; for root, power, exponent, his words are radix, radicatum, index.

Apart from the interest attaching to these manuscripts as the work of Napier, they possess an independent value as affording evidence of the exact state of his algebraical knowledge at the time when logarithms were invented. There is nothing to show whether the transcripts were sent to Briggs as intended and returned by him,

NAPIER

Yo

[oF MERCHISTON, —

or whether they were not sent' to him. Among the Merchiston papers is a thin quarto volume in Robert Napier's writing contain- ing a digest of the principles of alchemy; it 1s addressed to his son, and on the first leaf there are directions that it is to remain in his charter-chest and be kept secret except from a few. This treatise and the transcripts seem to be the only manuscripts which have escaped destruction.

The principle of. '' Napier's bones" may be easily explained by

imagining ten rectangular slips of cardboard, each divided into nine squares. In the top squares of the slips the ten digits are written, and each slip contains in its nine squares the first nine multiples of the digit which appears in the top square. With the exception of the top squares, every square is divided into two parts by a diagonal, the units being written on one side and the tens on the other, so that when a multiple con- sists of two figures they are separated by the diagonal. Fig. 1 shows the slips corresponding to the numbers 2, 0, 8, 5 placed side by side in contact with one another, and next to them is placed an- other slip containing, in squares without diagonals, the first nine digits. The slips thus placed in contact give the multiples of the number 2085, the digits in each parallelogram being added to- gether; for example, corresponding to the number 6 on the right hand slip, we : have 0, 8+38, 044, 2, 1; whence we find Fig. 1. 0, 1,5, 2,1 as the digits, written backwards, of 6 × 2085. The use of the slips for the purpose of multiplication is now evident ; thus to multiply 2085 by 736 we take out in this manner the multiples corresponding to 6, 3,7, and set down the digits as they are ob- tained, from right to left, shifting them back one

place and adding up the columns as in ordinary multiplication, viz., the figures as written down are—

12510 6255 14595

1534560

Napier’s rods or bones consist of ten oblong pieces of wood or other material with square ends. Each of the four faces of each rod contains multiples of one of the nine digits, and is similar to one of the slips just described, the first rod containing the multiples of 0, 1, 9, 8, the second of 0, 2, 9, 7, the third of 0, 3, 9, 6, the fourth of 0, 4, 9, 5, the fifth of 1, 2, 8, 7, the sixth of 1, 3, 8, 6, the seventh of 1, 4, 8, 5, the eighth of 2, 3, 7, 6, the ninth of 2, 4, 7,5, and the tenth of 8, 4, 6, 5. Each rod therefore contains on two of its faces multiples of digits which are com- plementary to those on the other two faces; and the multiples of a digit and of its comple- ment are reversed in position. The arrange- ment of the numbers on the rods will be evident from fig. 2, which represents the four faces of the fifth bar. The set of ten rods is thus equivalent to four sets of slips as described above, and by their means we may multiply every number less than 11,111, and also any number (consisting of course of not more than ten digits) which can be formed by the top digits of the bars when placed side by side. Of course two sets of rods may be used, aud by their means we may multiply every number less than 111,111,111, and so on. It will be All 8 | 2) noticed that the rods only give the multiples Ki of the number which is to be multiplied, or of 1g. 2. the divisor, when they are used for division, and it is evident that they would be of little use to any one who knew the multiplication table as far as 9×9. In multiplications or divisions of any length it is generally convenient to begin by forming a table of the first nine multiples of the multiplicand or divisor, and Napier’s bones at best merely provide such a table, and in an incomplete form, for the additions of the two figures in the same parallelogram have to be performed each time the rods are used. The Rabdologia attracted more general attention than the logarithms, and there were several editions on the Continent. An Italian translation was published by Locatello at Verona in 1623, and a Dutch translation by De Decker at Gouda in 1626. Ursinus published his Rhabdologia Neperiana at Berlin in 1623, and the Rabdologia itself was reprinted. at Lyons in 1626. Nothing

shows more clearly the rude state of arithmetical knowledge at the beginning of the 17th century than the universal satisfaction with which Napier’s invention was wel- comed by all classes and regarded as a real aid to calculation.

AA VAVAVAVA bee

J

OF MERCIIISTON. |

Napier also describes in the Raddologia two sther larger rods to facilitate the extraction of square and cube roots. logia the rods above from the manuscript on arithmetic they are referred to as «bones ’” (ossa).

Besides the logarithms and the calculating rods or bones, Napier’s name is attached to certain rules and formule in spherical trigono- metry. ‘‘ Napier’s rules of circular parts,” which include the com- plete system of formule for the solution of right-angled triangles, may be enunciated as follows. Leaving the right angle out of con- sideration, the sides including the right angle, the complement of the hypotenuse, and the complements of the other angles are called the circular parts of the triangle. Thus there are five circular parts, a, b, 90°—A, 90°—c, 90°—B, and these are supposed to be arranged in this order (é.¢., the order in which they occur in the triangle) round a circle. Selecting any part and calling it the middle part, the two parts next it are called the adjacent parts, and the remaining two parts the opposite parts. The rules then are—

sine of the middle part = product of tangents of adjacent parts

= product of cosines of opposite parts.

These rules were published in the Canon Mirificus (1614), and Napier has there given a figure, and indicated a method, by means of which they may be proved directly. The rules are curious and interesting, but of very doubtful utility, as the formule are best remembered by the practical calculator in their unconnected form.

‘ Napier’s analogies” are the four formule—

cos$(a—b)

tan(A+B)= cota 5) oote” : tam (A — B)= ete cot bC tang(a+0) = SSP tamde, tan $(a—- 2) =e Bnd :

They were first published after his death in the Constructio among the formule in spherical trigonometry, which were the results of his latest work. Robert Napier says that these results would have been reduced to order and demonstrated consecutively but for his father’s death. Only one of the four analogies is actually given by Napier, the other three being added by Briggs in the remarks which are appended to Napier’s results. The work left by Napier is, however, rough and unfinished, and it is uncertain whether he knew of the other formule or not. They are, however, so simply deducible from the results he has given that all the four analogies may be properly called by his name. An analysis of the formule contained in the Deseriptio and Constructio is given by Delainbre in vol. i. of his Histoire de 1 Astronomie modcrne.

To Napier seems to be due the first use of the decimal point in arithmetic. Decimal fractions were first introduced by Stevinus in his tract Za Disme, published in 1585, but he used cumbrous exponents (numbers enclosed in cireles) to distinguish the different denominations, primes, seconds, thirds, &c. Thus, for example, he

would have written 123°456 as 123(0)4(1)5 (2)6@). In the Rab- dologia Napier gives an ‘‘ Admonitio pro Decimali Arithmetica,” in which he commends the fractions of Stevinus and gives an example of their use, the division of 861094 by 432. The quotient is written 1993,273 in the work, and 1993,2′7″3’” in the text. This single instance of the use of the decimal point in the midst of an arith- metical process, if it stood alone, would not suffice to establish a claim for its introduction, as the real introducer of the decimal point is the person who first saw that a point or line as separator was all that was required to distinguish between the integers and fractions, and used it asa permanent notation and not merely in the course of performing an arithmetical operation. The decimal point 1s, however, used systematically in the Constructio (1619), there being perhaps two hundred

decimal points altogether in the book. The decimal point is defined on p. 6 of the Constructio in the words :—‘‘In numeris periodo sic in se distinctis, quicquid post periodum notatur fractio est, cujus denominator est unitas cum tot cyphris post se, quot sunt figure post periodum. Ut 10000000-04 valet idem, quod 10000000,4,. Item 25-803, idem quod 25,8,03,. Item 9999998 ~~0005021, idem valet quod 9999998539245, & sic de ceteris.” On p. 8, 10502 is multiplied by 3°216, and the result found to be 33°774432; and on pp. 23 and 24 occur decimals not attached to integers, viz., ‘4999712 and 0004950. These examples show that Napier was in possession of all the conventions and attri~~ butes that enable the decimal point to complete so symmetrically our system of notation, viz., (1) he saw that a point or separatrix was quite enough to separate integers from decimals, and that no signs to indicate primes, seconds, &c., were required ; (2) he used ciphers after the decimal point and preceding the first significant figure ; and (3) he had no objection to a decimal standing by itself without ou Integer. Napier thus had complete command over decimal Tactions, and understood perfectly the nature of the decimal point.

NAPIER

In the Labdo- are ealled ‘‘virgule,” but in the passage quoted

Briggs also used decimals, but in a form not quite so convenient as Napier. Thus he prints 63:0957379 as 630957379, viz., he prints a bar under the decimals; this notation first appears without any explanation in his ‘‘ Lucubrationes” appended to the Construetto. Briggs used the notation all his life, but in writing it, as appears from manuscripts of his, he added also a small vertical line jnst high enough to fix distinctly which two figures it was intended to separate: thus he might have written 630957379. The vertical line was printed by Oughtred and some of Briggs’s successors. It was a long time before decimal arithmetic came into general use, and all through the 17th century exponential marks were in conimon use. There seems but little doubt that Napier was the first to make use of a decimal separator, and it is curious that the separator which he used, the point, should be that which has been ultimately adopted, and after a long period of partial disuse.

The hereditary office of king's poulterer (Pultrie Regis) was for many generations in the family of Merchiston, and descended to John Napier. The office, Mr Mark Napier states, is repeatedly mentioned in the family charters as appertaining to the ‘‘ pultre landis” near the village of Dene in the shire of Linlithgow. The duties were to be performed by the possessor or his deputy ; and the king was entitled to demand the yearly homage of a present of poultry from the feudal holder. The pultrelands and the office were sold by John Napier in 1610 for 1700 marks. It has been erroneously asserted that Napier dissipated his means; there is no truth in this statement. With the sole exception of the pultre- lands all the estates he inherited descended undiminished to his posterity.

With regard to the spelling of the name, Mr Mark Napier states that among the family papers there exist a great many documents signed by John Napier. His usual signature was “ Jhone mveper, but in a letter written in 1608, and in all deeds signed after that date, he wrote ‘‘ hone Nepair.” His letter to the king prefixed to the Plaine Discovery is signed ‘‘John Napeir.” His own chil- dren, who sign deeds along with him, use every mode except Napier, the form now adopted by the family, and which is comparatively modern. In Latin he always wrote his name ‘‘Neperus.” The form ‘‘Neper” is the oldest, as John, third Napier of Merchiston, so spelt it in the 15th century.

Napier frequently signed his name ‘‘Jhone Neper, Fear of Mer- chiston.” He was ‘‘ Fear of Merchiston” because, more majorum, he had been invested with the fee of his paternal barony during the lifetime of his father, who retained the liferent. He has been some- times erroneously called ‘‘ Peer of Merchiston,” and in the 1645 edition of the Plaine Discovery he is so styled, probably by a misprint (see Mr Mark Napier's Memoirs, pp. 9 aud 173, and Libri qui supersunt, p. Xciv).

Napier's home at Merchiston is thus described by Sir Walter Scott in his Provincial Antiquities of Scotland :—‘‘ This fortalice is situated upon the ascent, and nearly upon the summit of the eminence called the Borough-moor-head, within a mile and a half of the city walls. In form it is a square tower of the 14th or 15th century, with a projection on one side. The top is battlcmented, and within the battlements, by a fashion more common in

Scotland than in England, arises a small building with a steep roof, like a stone cottage erceted on the top of the tower. . . The celebrated John Napier of Merchiston was born in this weather-beaten tower ; and a small room in the summit is pointed outas the study in which he secluded himself while engaged in the mathematical researches which led to his great discovery. The battlements of Merchiston tower command an extensive view of great interest and beauty." There is a view of Merehiston tower in Mr Mark Napier's A/emoirs of John Napier, and in the Libri qui supersunt.

One well-known character of the time, Dr Richard Napier, was cousin to John Napier. The eldest son of Alexander, sixth Napier of Merchiston, was Archibald, the father of John Napier ; his second son, named Alexander, settled at Exeter, and married an English lady by whom he had two sons, the eldest of whom, Robert, was the merchant, mentioned in the note near the beginning of this article as having been created a baronet. The second son was a fellow of Exeter College, Oxford, and became rector of Lynford, Buckingham- shire. He was a friend and pupil of Dr Simon Forman, a well-known Rosicrucian adept of the time, and at his death became the possessor of his secret manuscripts. Dr Richard Napier, who was more of a physician than a divine, was a great pretender to astro- logy, necromancy, and magical cures. There is a portrait of him in the Ashmolean Museum, Oxford (engraved in Mr Mark Napier's Memoirs), which is interesting on account of the similarity of some of the features to those of John Napier. It does not appear that there was ever any friendship or correspondence between John Napier and Richard Napier.

In 1787 An Account of the Life, Writings, and Inventions of John Napier of Mer- chiston was published at Perth by David Stewart, earl of Buehan, and Walter Minto, LL.D. It is a quarto work of one hundred and thirty-four pages, only twelve of whieh relate to the life of Napier, the rest being devoted to a eareful explanation of the eontents of his works. The partieulars given of Napier's life are very seanty, but, sueh as they are, they form the souree from whieh nearly all the notices of Napier whieh have appeared sinee have been drawn, The work

vale = oe

has also given rise to the impression that there was but little chance of further information being obtained with respect to Napier's life. In 18384 Mr Mark Napier published his Memoirs of John Napier of Merchiston, his Life, Lineage, and Times, with a Ifistory of the Invention of Logarithms, a large quarto volume of five hundred and thirty-four pages. Mr Mark Napier, who had already devoted great attention to the history of Scotland with special reference to the families of Lennox and Napicr, had full access to all the charters and papers in the possession of the family, and he spared no pains in examining every document and investigating every point which seemed likely to throw light upon the life of Napier and the circumstances amidst which his life was passed. The

work contains a vast mass of general information relating to Napier and his rela-.

tives, and the people with whom he was brought into contact, besides much col- lateral matter which serves to illustrate the state of the country at the time. The facts relating to Napier's own life are so interwoven with the other contents of the volume, and the work is so large, that in the absence of an index it is very difficult to extract the comparatively small portion that relates to Napier himself. From this work, which is the sole authority upon the private events of Napier's life, all the facts given in this article with respect to his descent and personal history have been derived. 1n 1839 Mr Mark Napier completed his labonrs by editing Napier's uupublished manuscripts, of which he had only been able to give a résuméin the Memoirs, and to this he prefixed an introduction, the greater part of which, how- ever, is included inthe Memoirs. Three different portraits of Napier are known to be in existence; one was engraved as the frontispiece to the earl of Buchan's Account, and another forms the frontispiece to the Memoirs. There is also an engraving of Napier in Lilly's Life and Times (1822). Forau account of the con- tents of Napier's mathematical works and thcir place in the history of science, the reader is referred to Delambre's Histoire del' Astronomie moderne.

It may be useful to give, in conclusion, a list of Napicr's works with a brief state- ment of the contents of each. The works published in his lifetime are —(1) The Plaine Discovery (1593), containing an interpretation of the Book

of Revelation; (2) the Canonis Mirifici Logarithmorum Descriptio, containing the first annouuce- ment of the invention of logarithmsand a table of log sines, also the rules of circu- lar parts; (3) the Raddologia (1617), containing the description of Napier's bones, the promptuary, and the method of local arithmetic,—all three designed for the simplification of multiplications and divisions. The posthumous works are—(1) the Canonis Minyici Logarithmorum Constructio (1619), edited by his son Robert, con- taining an account of the mode of construction of the canon, and Napier's analogies ; this book is the first in which the decimal point was systematically employed ; (2) the treatise De Arte Logistica, edited by Mr Mark Napier in 1839, containing treatises on arithmetic and algebra, transcribed from Napier's notes by his son Robert, (J. W. L. G.)

NAPIER, Str WittraM Francis Patrick (1785-1860), the third son of Colonel and Lady Sarah Napier, and brother of Sir Charles and Sir George Napier, was born at Cellbridge, near Dublin, on the 17th of December 1785, He became an ensign in the Royal Irish Artillery in 1800, but at once exchanged into the 62d, and was put on half- pay in 1802. He was afterwards made a cornet in the Blues by his uncle the duke of Richmond, and exchanged into the 52d regiment. He obtained a company in a West India regiment, but exchanged again into the 43d when it was being trained at Shorncliffe under Sir John Moore, who took Napier into special favour, and won his ever- lasting gratitude. He served in Denmark, and was present at the engagement of Kioge, and, his regiment being shortly afterwards sent to Spain, he bore himself nobly through the retreat to Corunna, In 1809 he became aide-de-camp to his uncle in Ireland, but joined the 43d when ordered again to Spain. With the light brigade (the 43d, 52d, and 95th), under the command of General Craufurd, he marched to Talavera in the famous forced march which he has described in his //%story, and had a violent attack of pleurisy on the way. He, however, refused to leave Spain, was wounded on the Coa, and shot near the spine at Cazal Nova. His conduct was so conspicuous during the pur- suit of Masséna after he left the lines of Torres Vedras that he as well as his brother George was recommended for a brevet majority. He became brigade niajor, was present at Fuentes d'Onor, but had so bad an attack of ague that he was obliged to return to England. In England he fell in love with and married Caroline Fox, the daughter of General Henry Fox, with whom Moore had been in love in

Sicily. Three days after his marriage he again started for Spain, and was present at the storming of Badajoz, where his great friend Colonel M‘Leod was killed. In the absence of the new lieutenant-colonel he took command of the 43d regiment, and commanded it at the battle of Salamanca. After a short stay at home he again joined his regiment at the Pyrenees, and did his greatest military service at the battle of the Nivelle, where, with instinctive military insight, he secured the most strongly fortified part of Soult’s position, practically without orders. He served with his regiment at the battles of the Nive, Orthes, and Toulouse. For his services he was made brevet lieutenant-colonel, and one of the first C.B.’s. Like

his brother Charles he then entered the military college at Farnham. He commanded his regiment in the army of occupation in France until 1819, when he retired on half- pay. As it was impossible for him to live on his half-pay with a wife and family, he determined to become an artist, and took a house in Sloane Street, where he studied with George Jones, the academician. The years he had spent in France he had occupied in improving his general education, for it will hardly be believed that the author of the History of the War in the Peninsula could not spell or write respect- able English till that time. But his career was to be great in literature, not in art. The tendency appeared in an able review of Jomini in 1821, and in 1823 Mr Bicker- steth, afterwards Lord Langdale, suggested to him the expediency of writing a history of the Peninsular War. For some time he did not take kindly to the suggestion, but at last determined to become an author in order to defend the memory of Sir John Moore, and to prevent the glory of his old chief being overshadowed by that of Wellington. The duke of Wellington himself gave him much assistance, and handed over to him the whole of Joseph Bonaparte’s correspondence which had been taken at the battle of Vittoria ; this was all in cipher, but Mrs Napier, with great patience, discovered the keys. In 1828 the first volume of the History appeared, and it was at once seen that the great deeds of the Peninsular War were about to be fitly commemorated. The excitement which followed the publication of each volume is proved by the innumer- able pamphlets issued by thoge who believed themselves to be attacked, and by personal altercations with many distinguished officers. But the

success of the book was proved still more by the absence of competition than by these bitter controversies. The histories of Southey and Lord Londonderry fell still-born, and Sir George Murray, who had determined to produce the history, gave up the attempt in despair. This success was due to a combina tion of qualities which have justly secured for Napier the title of being the best military historian England has produced. The best military histories have always been written by eye-witnesses. It is impossible for a new generation to analyse the military combinations and under- stand the minute facts which account for the winning or losing of a battle, though it may often unravel political intrigues which were veiled to the eyes of contemporaries. Napier added to this qualification a wonderful insight into the nature of war, and was able to describe and understand the movements and feelings of the French as well as of the army in which he himself served. But neither contem- porary knowledge nor military ability could have made his History memorable without a peculiarly appropriate literary style. He knew well how to mingle passages relating to individuals with descriptions of military movements, and how to relieve the dryness of details by an occasional glance at more extended subjects. He possessed an enthusiastic admiration for nearly all the heroes whose deeds he touched on. His admiration for Napoleon was only second to that for Moore, and he could feel for Soult in defeat as well as for Wellington in the hour of victory. When in 1840 the last volume of the //istory was published, his fame not only in England but in France and Germany was safely established. His life during these years had been chiefly absorbed in his //story, but he had warmly sympathized with the movement for political reform which was agitating England. The Radicals of Bath pressed him to sit for their city, and it was commonly reported that if the re- formers had found it necessary to resort to force Colonel Napier would have been their commander-in-chief, In 1842 he was promoted major-general, and had given him the lieutenant-governorship of Guernsey. Here he found plenty of occupation in controlling the relations between

the soldiers and the inhabitants, and also found time to propound a complete scheme of reform for the govern- ment of the island. While he was at Guernsey his brother Charles had conquered Sind, and the attacks made on

the policy of that conquest brought William Napier again into the field of literature. In 1845 he published his History of the Conquest of Scinde, and in 1851 the corresponding History of the Administration of Scinde—books which in style and vigour rivalled the great History, but which, being written for controversial purposes, are not likely to maintain such an enduring popularity. In 1847 he re- signed his governorship, and in 1848 was made a K.C.B., and settled at Scinde House, Clapham Park. His time was fully occupied in defending his brother, in revising the numerous editions of his Hzstory which were being called for, and in writing letters to the 7%mes on every con- ceivable subject, whether military or literary. His energy is the more astonishing when it is remembered that he never recovered from the effects of the wound he had received at Cazal Nova, and that he often had to lie on his back for months together. His domestic life was shadowed by the incurable affliction of his only son, and when his brother Charles died in 1853 the world seemed to be darkening round him. He de- voted himself to writing the life of that brother, which appeared in 1857, and which is in many re- spects hismost characteristic book. In the end of 1853 his younger brother, Captain Henry Napier, R.N., the historian of Florence, died, and in 1855 his brother Sir George. Inspired by his work, he lived on till the year 1860, when, broken by trouble, fatigue, and ill-health, he died (on February 12) at Clapham.

As a military historian Sir William Napier is incomparably superior to any other English writer, and his true com-

eers are Thucydides, Cesar, and Davila. All four had been soldiers in the wars they describe; all four possessed a peculiar insight into the mainsprings of action both in war and peace ; and all four pos- sessed a peculiar and inimitable style. Napier always wrote as if he was burning with an inextinguishable desire to express what he was feeling, which gives his style a peculiar spontaneity, and yet he rewrote the first volume of his History no less than six times. His descriptions of sieges and of battles are admirable by them- selves, and his analyses of the peculiarly intricate Spanish intrigues are even more remarkable, while the descriptions and analyses are both lit up with flashes of political wisdom and military insight. It is to be noted that he displays the spirit of the partisan, even when most impartial, and defends his opinions, even when most undoubtedly true,

as if he were arguing some controverted question. If his style was modelled on anything, it was on Czsar’s comment- aries, and a thorough knowledge of the writings of the Roman general will often explain allusions in Napier. The portraits of Sir John Moore and Colonel M‘Leod, and the last paragraphs descriptive of the storming of Badajoz, may be taken as examples of the great natural eloquence which arose from the loving recol- lection of friends, or the deep impression made by a most terrible Scene upon his vivid imagination.

<* Sir William Napier’s life, see his Life and Letters, edited by the Right pag i. A. Bruce (now Lord Aberdare), 2 vols., 1862. The dates of his a S are given above. The edition of the History published in 1851 is the ae , and contains the answers to various criticisms which sum up the eontro- ah arising from statements in the work, The French translation is by Count athieu Dumas. (H. M.S.)

NAPLES (Ital. Vapoli, Gr. and Lat. Veapolis), formerly the capital of the kingdom of the Two Sicilies, and. since 1860 the chief town of a province in the kingdom of Italy, 18 the largest and most populous city in the country, and disputes with Constantinople the claim of occupying the

most beautiful site in Europe. It is situated on the northern shore of the Bay of Naples (Sinus Cumanus), in 40° 52’ N. lat. and 14° 15’ 45” E. long., as taken from the lighthouse on the mole. By railit is distant 161 miles from Rome.

No other place in the world combines within the same compass so much natural beauty with so many objects of interest to the antiquary, the historian, and the geologist as the Bay of Naples. Its circuit is about 35 miles from the Capo di Miseno on the north-west to the Punta della Campanella on the south-east, or more than 52 miles if the islands of Ischia, at the north-west, and of Capri, at the south entrance, be included. At its opening between these two islands it is 14 miles broad; and from the opening to its head at Portici the distance is 15 miles. It affords good anchorage, with nearly 7 fathoms water, and is well sheltered, except from winds which blow from

Environs of Naples. points between south-east and south-west. There is a perceptible tide of nearly 9 inches.

On the north-east shore of the bay, east of Naples, is an extensive flat, forming part of the ancient Campania Feliz, and watered by the small stream Sebeto and by the Sarno, which formerly flowed by Pompeii. From this fiat, between the sea and the range of the Apennines, rises Vesuvius, at the base of which, on or near the sea-shore, are the town-like villages of San Giovanni Teduccio, Portici, Resina, Torre del Greco, Torre dell’ Annunziata, d&c., and the classic sites of Herculaneum and Pompeii. At the south-east extremity of the plain, 3 miles beyond the outlet of the Sarno, a great offshoot of the Apennines, branching from the main range near Cava,

and projecting as a peninsula more than 12 miles west, divides the Bay of Naples from the Bay of Salerno (Sinus Pestanus), and ends in the bold promontory of the Punta della Campanella (Promontorium Minerve), which is separated by a strait of 4 miles from Capri. On the north slope of this peninsula, where the plain ends and the coast abruptly bends to the west, stands the town of Castellammare, near the site of Stabizw, at the foot of Monte Sant' Angelo, which rises suddenly from the sea to a height of 4722 feet. Farther west, and nearly opposite to Naples across the bay, are Vico, Meta, Sorrento, Massa, and many villages.

The north-west shore of the bay, to the west of Naples, is more broken and irregular. 'The promontory of Posillipo,

which projects due south, divides this part of the bay into two smaller bays —the eastern, with the city of Naples, and the western, or Bay of Baiw, which is sheltered from all winds. A tunnel through the promontory, 2244 feet long, 21 feet broad, and in some places as much as 70 feet high, possibly constructed by Marcus Agrippa in 27 B.c., forms the so-called grotto of Posillipo; at the Naples end stands the reputed tomb of Virgil. Beyond Posil- lipo is the small island of Nisida (Wests); and at a short distance inland are the extinct craters of Solfatara and Astroni, and the Lake of Agnano. Farther west, on a tongue of land, stands Pozzuoli (Puteoli); and beyond it, round the Bay of Bais, are Monte Nuovo, a

M7 Z = i? sty] Vilta'Gailo a, a

)

va Bice

an wCynred es

WW HW NGS AICI ND a Bal A Sa

Mh

Churches. 1, S. Maria del Carmine. 2. S. Annunziata.

3. Cathedral and S. Resti- tuta. 4, 8. Filippo Neri.

5. S, Domenico Maggiore. 8. 8. Chiara. 10. S. Martino.

crescents. The western crescent, known as the Chiaja ward, though merely a long and narrow strip between the sea and Vomero hill, is the fashionable quarter most affected by foreign residents and visitors. A fine broad street, the Riviera di Chiaja, commenced in the close of the 16th century by Count d'Olivares, and completed by the Duke de Medina Celi (1695-1700), runs for a mile and a half from east to west, ending in the quarter of Mergellina and Piedigrotta at the foot of the hill of Posillipo. In front lie the Villa Nazionale (Reale) public gardens, the chief promenade of the city, which were first laid out in 1780, and have been successively extended in 1807, in 1834, and under the new régime; and the whole edge of the bay

SS By

4

LES

hill thrown up in a single night in September 1538; the classic site of Baise; the Lucrine Lake; Lake Avernus; the Lake of Fusaro (Acherusia Palus); the Elysian Fields ; and the port and promontory of Misenum. Still farther to the south-west lie the islands of Procida (Pro- chyta) and Ischia! (Pithecusa, dinaria, or Inarime), which' divide the Bay of Naples from the extensive Bay of Gaeta.

The city of Naples is built at the base and on the slopes of a range of volcanic hills, and, rising from the shore like an amphitheatre, is seen to best advantage from the water. From the summit occupied by the castle of St Elmo a transverse ridge runs south to form the promontory of Pizzofalcone, and divides the city into two natural

Seale of 1 English Mile

Plan of Naples, 13, S. Franeesco di Paola. | 7. Teatro Mereadante.

12. Teatro S. Carlo. Nuovo. 14. ,, Sannazaro. » 8. Carlino.

Theatres. a: Ve; 6. Teatro Bellini. 11. from the Castel dell' Ovo to Posillipo is lined by a massive embankment and carriage-way, the Via Caracciolo, con- structed in 1875-81. The eastern crescent includes by far the largest as well as the oldest portion of Naples—the ports, the arsenal, the principal churches, &c. The main thoroughfare is the Toledo (as it is still popularly called, though the official name is Via di Roma), which runs almost due north from the Piazza (Largo) del Plebiscito in front of the Palazzo Reale, till, as Strada Nuova di Capodimonte,

1 Since the article Iscura (g.v.) was written the island has been visited by another severe shock of earthquake (July 28, 1883), which completely ruined Casamicciola, Forio, Lacco Ameno, and Serrara Fontana, and destroyed about 2800 people.

crossing the Ponte della Sanita (constructed by Murat across the valley between Santa Teresa and Capodimonte), it reaches the gates of the Capodimonte palace. A new drive, Corso Vittorio Emmanuele, winds along the slopes behind the city from the Str. di Piedi (at the west end of the Riv. di Chiaja) towards the continuation of the Toledo. The character of the shore of the eastern crescent is being rapidly altered by the new harbour works: about the middle of the curve lies the new Villa del Popolo, or People's Park, constructed on land reclaimed from the bay.

The streets of Naples are generally well-paved with lava or volcanic basalt, which, however, renders them both noisy and slippery for horses. Side-pavements, where they exist, are usually narrow. In the older districts there is a count- less varicty of narrow gloomy streets, many of them steep. The houses throughout the city are more remarkable for their size and the solidity of their construction than for taste and elegance. They are niostly five or six stories high, are covered with stucco made of a kind of pozzuo-Jana which hardens by exposure, and have large balconies and flat roofs frequently ornamented with flowers, shrubs, and small trees planted in

boxes filled with earth. The castle of St Elmo (St Ermo, St Erasmus), which dominates the whole city, had its origin in a fort (Belforte) erected by King Robert the Wise in 1343. The present building, with its rock-hewn fosses and massive ramparts, was con- structed by Don Pedro de Toledo at the command of Charles V. in 1535, and was long considered practically impregnable. Damaged by lightning in 1857, it was after- wards restored, but it is no longer used for defensive pur- poses, On a small island (I. del Salvatore, the Megaris of Pliny) now joined to the shore at the foot of the Pizzo- falcone by an arch-supported causeway 800 feet long, stands the Castel dell' Ovo (so called from its shape, though medieval legend associates the name with the enchanted egg on which the magician Virgil made the safety of the city to depend), which, dating from 1154, was for several centuries a place of great strength. The walls of its chapel were frescoed by Giotto; but the whole building was ruined by Ferdinand IT. in 1495, and had to be restored in the 16th century. Castel Nuovo, a very picturesque building constructed near the harbour in 1283 by Charles I. of Anjou, contains between the round towers of its facade the triumphal arch erected in 1470 to Alphonso L., and numbers among its chambers the Gothic hall of Giovanni Pisano in which Celestine V. abdicated the papal dignity. Castel del Carmine, founded by Ferdinand I. in 1484, was occupied by the populace in Masaniello's insurrection, was used as a prison for the patriots of 1796, and became municipal property in 1878. The royal palace, begun in 1600 by the Count de Lemos, from designs by Domenico Fontana, partly burned in 1837, and since repaired and enlarged by Ferdinand IL, is an enormous building with a sea frontage of 800 feet, and a main facade 554 feet long and 95 feet high, exhibiting the Doric, Ionic, and Composite orders in its three stories. On their visits to Naples, Kings Victor Emmanuel and Humbert have usually preferred the suburban palace of Capodimonte, begun by Charles III. and completed by Ferdinand II. Naples is the see of a Roman Catholic archbishop, always a cardinal. The cathedral has a chapter of thirty canons, and of the numerous religious houses formerly existing thirteen have in whole or in part Survived the suppression in 1868. The city is divided Into forty-seven parishes (the boundaries of which are administrative and not topographical, so that different Stories of the same house are sometimes in different parishes), and there are 257 Roman Catholic churches and 57 chapels. Most of the churches are remarkable rather for richness of internal decoration than for archi-

tectural beauty. The cathedral of St Januarius, occupy- ing the site of temples of Apollo and Neptune, and still containing some of their original granite columns, was designed by Nicola Pisano, and erected between 1272 and 1316. Owing to frequent restorations occasioned by earthquakes, it now presents an incongruous mixture of different styles. The general plan is that of a basilica with a nave and two (Gothic vaulted) aisles separated by pilasters. Beneath the high altar is a subterranean chapel containing the tomb of St Januarius (San Gennaro), the patron saint of the city ; in the right aisle there isa chapel (Cappella del Tesoro) built between 1608 and 1637 in popular recognition of his having saved Naples in 1527 “from famine, war, plague, and the fire of Vesuvius”; and in a silver tabernacle behind the high altar of this chapel are preserved two phials partially filled with his blood, the periodical liquefaction of which forms a prominent feature in the religious life of the city (see JANUARIUS). Acces- sible by a door in the left aisle of the cathedral is the church of Sta Restituta, a basilica of the 7th century, and the original cathedral. Santa Chiara (14th century) is interesting for a fresco ascribed to Giotto (at one time there were many more), and monuments to Robert the Wise, his queen Mary of Valois, and his daughter Mary, empress of Constantinople. San Domenico Maggiore, founded by Charles II. in 1285, but completely restored after 1445, has an effective interior particularly rich in Renaissance sculpture. In the neighbouring monastery is shown the cell of Thomas Aquinas. San Filippo Neri or dei Gerolomini, erected in the close of the 16th century, has a white marble facade and two campaniles, and contains the tombstone of Giambattista Vico. Sta Maria del Parto, in the Chiaja, occupies the site of the house of Sannazaro, and is named after his poem De Partu Virginis. San Francesco di Paola, opposite the royal palace, is an imita- tion of the Pantheon at Rome by Pietro Bianchi di Lugano (1815-37), and its dome is one of the boldest in Europe. The church of the Certosa (Carthusian monastery) of San Martino, on the hill below St Elmo’s castle, has now become in name, as so many of the churches are in reality, a museum. Dating from the 14th century, and restored by Fonsega in the 17th, it is a building of extraordinary rich- ness of decoration, with paintings and sculpture by Guido Reni, Lanfranco, Caravaggio, D’Arpino, Solimene, Luca Giordano, and notably a Descent from the Cross by Ribera. One of the

cloisters by Fonsega is particularly fine. A more ancient Christian monument than any of the convents or churches is the catacombs, which extend a great distance underground. The entrance is at the Ospizio dei Poveri di San Gennaro (see Schulze's monograph, Jena, 1877).

Of all the sccular institutions in Naples none is more remarkable than the national museum, better known‘as the Museo Borbonico. The building, begun in 1586 for cavalry barracks, and remodelled in 1615 for the university, received its present destination in 1790. Enriched by the Farnese collection, by all that was most valuable in Naples, and by everything that would bear removal from Herculaneum, Pompcii, Stabie, Puteoli, Pestum, &c., the museum is unique as a treasure-house of Roman and early Italian antiquities. The collection of Etruscan and Italo-Greek vases is unsurpassed. Nor is the variety of objects greater than the artistic value of some of the items—such as the Farnese Hercules, the Farnese Bull (Amphion and Zethus binding Dirce to its horns), the Dancing Faun (bronze), the statues of the Balbi (marble). For the rich librarics of Naples see vol. xiv. pp. 580, 548. The Club Alpino has a unique collection (25,000 volumes) of Vesuvian and seismo- graphical literature. ; :

The university of Naples is one of the oldest in Italy, having been founded by Frederick II. in the first half of the 13th century. It had fallen to insignificance under the Bourbons, but since 1860 it has rapidly recovered. It comprises five faculties (literature and philosophy, jurisprudence, mathematics, natural science, and medi- cine), and is well equipped with zoological, mineralogical, and geological museums, a physiological institute, a cabinet of anthro- pology, botanical gardens, and an observatory on Mount Vesuvius,

The students in 1882-3 numbered 3421. Originally erected in 1557 for the use of the Jesuits, the university buildings are regarded as the best work of Marco di Pino; the quadrangle, surrounded by a simple but effective peristyle, contains statues of Pietro della Vigna (Frederick's chancellor), Thomas Aquinas, Vico, aud Giordano Bruno. The famous zoological station at Naples, whose aquarium is the principal building in the Villa Nazionale, is not conneetcd with the university ; it was founded in 1872 by Dr Dohrn,

aud has become one of the greatest centres of biological research in Europe. Its Mitthetlungen began to be published in 1878, and a great work on the fauna and flora of the Gulf of Naples is in progress. The Royal Society of Naples, dating originally from 1756, was reconsti- tuted in 1861, and now comprises three ‘‘academies” or depart- ments, dealing respectively with the physical and mathematical

scienees, the moral and political sciences, and literature, archeology, _

and the fine arts. The famous Accademia Pontaniana, founded in 1471 by Ant. Panormita and J. J. Pontanus, was restored in 1809, and still exists. The royal school of Oriental languages (35 pupils in 1880) owes its existence to Matteo Ripa, who in 1732 estab- lished a college for Chinese missionaries with money which he had collected by visiting various European courts in company with ten or twelve young Chinamen. Since 1857 Ludovico da Casoria, relying on public subscriptions, has carried on a special college for the education of Africans (Coll. dei Mori a Capodimonte). The royal college of music, practically founded by Charles III. in 1760, and thus one of the oldest as it is one of the most celebrated insti- tutions of its class, was re-established in 1879. It has a teaching staff of nearly forty persons, takes in boarders (50 Italians gratui- tously), and carries on a free day school for males and females. A large and beautiful building in Strada Fuori Porta Medina, erectcd in a Pompeiau style by Francesco del Giudice, accommodates the royal institute for the encouragement of the natural and economical sciences, the royal technical institute (535 pupils), and the nautical institute (46 pupils); and in Str. del Salvatore there is a royal school of engineering with 250 pupils. Four technical schools are maintained by the municipality. The primary educa- tion of the people was so much neglected under the Bourbons that after twenty years of a better régime there were still 294,384 persons in Naples who could neither read nor write. That some progress had been made was shown in 1881 by the fact that the number of persons under thirty years of age who could both read and write had increased from 79,224 in 1871 to 101,277. In 1872 there were 14,461 children attending school; in 1879 there were 75,311. The educational expenditure of the commune was £64,972 in 1882 for the education of 30,000 children. About one-fourth of the children attending the infant schools are gratuitously supplied with soup at midday,

and the children of the working classes are taught free of charge. Among the various private educational enter- prises Mrs Salis Sehwabe's Froebel Institute, founded in 1873, the Jtalian Protestant schools, and the institution established by the Marquis Casanova in 1869 to take charge of boys leaving school and bring them up to some special trade, deserve special mention. There are three schools for the blind—notably Lady Strachan's (1865) and the "Prince of Naples," founded by Martuscelli (1873) —and as many for the deaf and dumb.

Charitable institutions are unusually numerous in Naples. The oldest civil hospital is S. Eligio, dating from 1270; but the largest is the Casa Santa degli Incurabili, founded in 1521 by Francesca Maria Longo. It is open to patients of both sexes and any rank, contains upwards of 1000 beds, and has an annual income of about £32,000. In 1877 an international hospital was established by the foreign residents. The Albergo dei Poveri (poorhouse) occupies a magnificent range of buildings, commenced in 1761 by Charles ITI. at the suggestion of Padre Rocco. Starting with an income of about £3000, it now disposes yearly of £48,000 ; and it has succes- sively absorbed various minor institutions such as the Conservatorio of St Francis of Sales (1816) and the deaf-mute school (1818). The great almshouse of St Januarius for old men (Ospiz. di S. Gennaro dei Poveri) dates from 1666. Besides the great provincial lunatic asylum (340 patients), now transferred to the convent of St Francis of Sales, there are three smaller asylums in the suburbs. Nothing perhaps is more characteristic of Naples than its so-called Arci-con- Sratermita, associations similar to our friendly and burial societies, but entering more into the life of all classes of society. There are about one hundred and thirty of them. The cldest which has kept the date of its origin is that of the Bianchi della Carita, founded in 1382; seven belong to the 15th century and twenty-seven to the 16th. Mutual benefit societies are also numerous.

There are about a score of theatres in Naples. The San Carlo opera-house, with its area of 5157 square yards, and its pit capable of containing one thousand spectators, is one of the largest in Europe. It was originally erected in 1737 under Charles III. after the designs of Giovanni Medrano, but had to be almost completely rebuilt after the fire of 1816. Though closely associated with the names of Rossini, Bellini, Donizetti, Mercadante, &c.,

San Carlo has always had to be subsidized—first by the Bourbon princes, and since 1860 by the municipality, which

also helps to support the Mercadante theatre. It is enough to mention the Teatro Nuovo, the Sannazaro, the Dei Fiorentini (de- voted to the Italian drama), and the Bellini (dating from 1876, and'second to none in the matter of decoration). The San Carlino, though mean and incommodiouns, is largely frequented by all classes from royalty downwards, its Pulcinella farces, always in the Nea- politan dialect, being a purely local institution, connected it may be with the Atellan plays.

At a very early date the original harbour at Naples, now known in its greatly reduced state as Porto Piccolo, and fit only for boats and lighters, became toosmall. In 1302 Charles II. of Anjou began the construction of the Porto Grande by forming the Molo Grande or San Gennaro, which stretched eastward into the bay, and was ter- minated by a lighthouse in the 15th century. By the addition of a new pier ruuning north-east from the lighthouse, and protected by a heavily armed battery, Charles II]. in 1740 added greatly to the safety of the harbour. In 1826 the open area to the south of the Porto Grande was formed into the Porto Militare by the con- struction of the Molo San Vincenzo, 1200 feet long. Shortly after the formation of the new kingdom of Italy attention was called to the insufficiency of the harbour for modern wants ; and new works were commenced in 1862. Besides the lengthening of the Molo San Vincenzo to a total of more than 5000 fect, the scheme as authorized in 1879 includes the formation of a new pier, which is to extend from the Castel del Carmine a distance of about 2460 feet, the con- struction of quays along the shore between the fort and the Porto Grande, the deepening of the enclosed area to about 25 feet, and the establishment of new bonded warehouses and a floating dock on the Clark-Stanfield system. The contract provides for the com- pletion of the works in 1885. The entrance to the harbour will then measure more than 2000 feet.

The port of Naples is second in the kingdom. The total tonnage of foreign and coasting trade (entrance and clearance) had increased from 1,812,138 register tons in 1863 to 4,128,057 in 1882. In the foreign trade the first

place belongs to French shipping, 956,171 tons; the second to British, 374,608 ; and the third to Italian, 93,424. Cotton, cereals, sugar, coffee, tobacco, wool, &c., are the chief imports; pastes, coral (to the value of £1,500,000), and jewellers' work, dried fruit, hats, tartar and wine lees, wine, and olive oil are the chief exports. The total value of imports and exports was £9,374,940 in 1881 and £8,055,798 in 1882. Coral, kid gloves, and macaroni are manufactured in the city on an extensive scale.

Naples has several good local springs (notably the Acqua del Leone at Mergellina) ; a covered channel brings the waters of Monte Somma (Vesuvius) to the lower parts of the town; an aqueduct, constructed in the 17th century at the cost of Criminello and Carmignano, taps the Isclero at Sant' Agata dei Goti, 30 miles distant; and a number of artesian wells have proved successful as far as quantity is concerned. But in spite of all these resources the water supply has long been far below the demand; and a city which from its position might be one of the best-drained, cleanest, and healthiest in the world has had an unenviable reputation for dirtiness and unwholesomeness. At present extensive works are in progress by which good drinking water is to be brought from Serino (nearly 50 miles distant) and laid on at three different high levels at the rate of 22,000,000 gallons daily for the use of the inhabitants and 1,000,000 for public purposes.

Naples, the most densely peopled city in Europe, is slowly but steadily increasing. The commune—which includes not only the urban districts (fraziond) of S. Ferdinand, Chiaja, S. Giuseppe, Monte Calvario, Avvocata, Stella, San Carlo all' Arena, Vicaria, S. Lorenzo, Mercato, Pendino, and Porto, but also the suburban districts of Vomero, Posillipo, Fuorigrotta, Miano-Mianella, and Piscinola-Marianella—has advanced from 404,000 inhabitants in 1788 to 493,115 in 1881, and the city proper (the first twelve dis- tricts) from 326,130 in 1812 to 461,962 in 1881. In the condition of the lower classes considerable improvement has been effected since 1860; the lazzaroni, who bulked so largely in the experience of the tourist in the early part of the century, no longer exist, their place being taken by the dock-labourer, the fisherman, and the artisan.

History.— All ancient writers agree in representing Naples as a Greek settlement, though its foundation is obscurely and differently narrated. It

seems that the oldest city on its site was founded by a colony from the neighbouring Greek town of Cume. They are said to have given it the name of Parthenope, from a legendary connection of the locality with the siren Parthenope, whose tomb was still shown at the time of Strabo. A number of Chalcidic and Athenian colonists are reported to have afterwards joined the original settlers, and to have built for themselves separate dwell- ings, which they called Neapolis, or the new city, in contra- distinction to the old settlement, which in consequence was styled Palzpolis, or the old city. All modern attempts to define the respective extent and situation of Palepolis and Neapolis have failed ; but Livy's testimony leaves no doubt that they were close to each other, and identical in language and government.

In the year 328 z.c., the Palepolitans having provoked the hostility of Rome by their incursions upon her Campauian allies,

NAWLES

the consul Publilius Philo marched against them, and, having taken his position between the old and the new city, laid regular siege to Palepolis. By the aid of a strong Samnite garrison which they received, the Palepolitans were long able to withstand the attacks of the consul ; but at length the city was betrayed into the hands of the Romans by two of her citizens. Neapolis possibly sur- rendered to the eonsul without any resistance, as it was received on favourable terms, had its liberties secured by a treaty, and obtained the chief authority, which previously seems to have been enjoyed by the older city. From that time Palepolis totally disappeared from history, and Neapolis became as an allied city—

federata civitas—a dependency of Rome, to whose alliance it re-

mained constantly faithful, even under most trying circumstatices. In 280 8.c. Pyrrhus unsuccessfully attacked its walls; and in the Second Punic War Haunibal was by their strength deterred from attempting to make himself master of the town. During the civil wars of Marius and Sulla, a body of partisans of the latter having entered it by treachery, 82 B.c., made a general massacre of the inhabitants ; but Neapolis soon recovered the blow, as it was again a flourishing city in the time of Cicero. It became a muntcipium after the passing of the lex Julia; under the empire it is noticed as a colonia,

but the time when it first obtained that rank is uncertain—possibly under Claudius.

Though a municipal town, Neapolis long retained its Greek culture and institutions; and even at the time of Strabo had gymnasia and quinquennial games, and was divided into phratriz, atter the Greek fashion. When the Romans became masters of the world, many of their upper classes, both before the close of the republic and under the empire, from a love of Greek manners and literature or from indolent and effeminate habits, resorted to Neapolis, either for education and the cultivation of gymnastic exercises or for the enjoyment of music and of a soft and luxurious climate. Hence we find Neapolis variously styled—by Horace as “otiosa Neapolis,” by Martial as ‘‘docta Parthenope,” by Ovid as ‘in otia natam Parthenopen.” It was the favourite residence of many of the emperors: Nero made his first appearance on the stage in one of its theatres ; Titus assumed the oftice of its archon; and Hadrian became its demarch. It was chiefly at Neapolis that Virgil composed his Georgics; and he was buried on the hill of Pausilypus, the modern Posillipo, in its neighbourhood. It was also the favourite residence of the poets Statius and Silius Italicus, the former of whom was a Neapolitan by birth.

After the fall of’the Roman empire, Neapolis suffered severely during the Gothic wars. Having espoused the Gothic cause in the year 536, it was taken, after a protracted siege, by Belisarius, who turned aside an aqueduct, marched by surprisc into the city through itschannel, and put many of the inhabitants to the sword. In 542 Totila besieged it and compelled it to surrender ; but, being soon after recovered by Narses, it remained long a dependency of the exarchate of Ravenna, under the immediate government of a duke, appointed by the Byzantine emperors. When the Lombards invaded Italy, and pushed their conquests in the southern provinces, the limits of the Neapolitan duchy were considerably narrowed. In the beginning of the 8th century, at the time of the Iconoclastic controversy, the emperor Leo the Isaurian having forced compliance to his edict against the worshipping of images, the Neapolitans, encouraged by Pope Gregory III., threw off their allegiance to the Eastern emperors, and established a republican form of government under a duke of their own appointment. Under this régime Neapolis retained her independence for nearly four hundred years, though

constantly struggling against the powerful Lombard dukes of Benevento, who twice unsuccessfully besieged it. In 1027, however, Pandulf IV., a Lombard prince of Capua, succeeded in making himself master of it ; but he was expelled in 1080 by Duke Sergius, chiefly through the aid of a few Norman adventurers. The Normans, in their turn, gradually superseded all powers, whether Greek, Lombard, or republican, which had previously divided the south of Italy, and furthermore checked the Saracens in the advances they were making through Apulia. .

For the consolidation of the Norman authority over Sicily and Naples, the reader is referred to the article Normans. It is sufhieient here to state that the leaders of the house of Hauteville m 1053 did homage to the pope for all conquests they had made or might make both in the island and upon the mainland, and that mm 1130 Count Roger of that family assumed the style of king. In this way the south of Italy, together with the adja- cent island of Sicily, was converted into one political body, which, Owing to the peculiar temper of its Norman rulers and their powerful organization, assumed a more feudal character than any other part of the peninsula. The ‘‘regno,” as it was called by the

aians, constituted a state apart, differing in social institutions,

orelgn relations, and type of home government from the common- Wealths and tyrannies of upper Italy. It should furthermore be hotieed that the indirect right acquired by the popes as lords uot over this vast section of Italian territory gave occasion i. et the most serious disturbances of Italy between the end of the

and the beginning of the 16th centuries, by the introduction

of the house of Anjou into Naples and the disputed succession of Angevine and Aragonese princes. From the date at which the south of Italy and Sicily werc subjugated by the Normans, the history of Naples ceases to be the history of a republie or a city, and merges itself, as the history of a kingdom, in that of the kingdom of tho Two Sicilies. Naples henceforth formed the metropolis of the Italian portion of that kingdom, owing this pre-eminence

to its advantageous position on the side of Italy towards Sicily, and to the favour of successive princes. Separated from Sicily between the years 1282 and 1442, reunited to Sicily between 1442 and 1458, again separated between 1458 and 1504, and finally reunited in the year 1504, the kingdom of Naples remained froin that date forward, with short interruptions, under one crown, together with Sicily, until 1861. Then both Sicily and Naples were absorbed in the Italian kingdom through the cession by Garibaldi of his conquest to the popularly sanctioned sceptre of the house of Savoy.

It is impossible to write the history of Naples in modern times apart from that of Sicily, or to separate it from that of the several dynasties which have held royal or vice-royal state in Naples as their capital. But an epitome of the main vicissitudes which it has undergone during the last seven centuries and a half may be supplied. The Norman dynasty controlled both Sicily and Naples until the year 1194, when their rights were transmitted, by failure of legitimate male issue, to Henry VI., emperor, and husband of Constance de Hauteville. The popes, in pursuance of their Guelf policy, persecuted the great imperial house of Hohenstaufen to extinction, subdued the Ghibelline party in southern Italy, and conferred the kingdom of the Two Sicilics upon Charles of Anjou after his victory at Grandella, in the year 1265. As a consequence of the Sicilian Vespers, Charles had to relinquish Sicily in 1282 ; but he continued to be king of Naples. It was then shown that, though the Normans had welded Sicily and the southern provinces of Italy into one substantial political whole, the island and the mainland had no strong bond of national cohe- sion. The subsequent history of the sister kingdoms makes this even more apparent. Scven prinecs of the house of Anjou ruled Naples after the death of Charles until the year 1442. Meanwhile Sicily obeyed the house of Aragon, whose rights wero derived from Constance, the daughter of Manfred, a bastard son of the emperor Frederick II]. In 1442 Alphonso V. of Aragon and Sicily, surnamed the Magnanimous, expelled René of Anjou from the kingdom of Naples, and reunited the Two Sicilies under his own rule. Upon his death in 1458, his brother John became king of Aragon and Sicily; while his natural son Ferdinand assumed the crown of Naples, which was bequeathed to him by Alphonso as being his own property by right of conquest. The bastard Aragonese dynasty thus founded continued to hold sway in Naples, separate from Sicily, through four successive princcs, until their line ended by the

expulsion of Frederiek, Alphonso's grandson, in 1501. Betrayed by his cousin Ferdinand of Spain, this prinee surrendered to a French army and died in captivity in France three years later. The French and Spaniards were at this epoch disput- ing the possession of Italy. Charles VIII. of France had already, in 1494, reasserted the claims of the Angevine line, and had con- quered the kingdom of Naples ; but he proved unable or unwilling to maintain his conquest more than a few months. His suc- cessor Louis XII. covenanted in 1500 to partition Naples with Ferdinand the Catholic of Spain, who was already king of Sicily. Ferdinand, however, having no intention of fulfilling his engage- ments with his French ally, succeeded in possessing himself of the whole kingdom of Naples, which he now reunited to that of Sicily, and governed together with Castile and Aragon. From 1504 until 1707 Naples and Sicily owed immiediate obedience to viceroys of the kings of Spain,—the only important episode in the history of the city throughout this period being the revolt of MAsANIELLO (g.v.) in 1647. After 1707, during the wars of the Spanish succes- sion, the Austrians made themselves masters of both Sicily and Naples; and, though Sicily was ceded by them in 17138 to the house of Savoy, and in 1718 conquered by Spain, they becamo again in 1720 possessors of both kingdoms. Naples was at this time of her history administered by Austrian, as previously by Spanish, viceroys. The war of the Polish succession gave monarchial independence once more to the Two Sicilies ; for in 1735 Don Carlos, a younger son of Philip V., of the Bourbon dynasty in Spain, after a successful campaign against the Austrians, was crowned sovereign of both kingdoms at Palermo. He founded the Bourbon line, which reigned in Sicily and Naples until the year 1861, interrupted only by the disturbances of the French Revoln- tion and by a brief French occupation (1806-15), during which Joseph Bonaparte bore the title of king of Naples for two years and Joachim Murat for seven years. Sicily throughout this period of French influence remained beneath the sway of her Bourbon princes. For the events which led to the expulsion of the Bourbons and the annexation of both Sicily and Naples to the crown of Italy, the reader is referred to the article IrALy ; see also MASANIELLO, NoRMANS, SICILY.

Date of Bona- parte's birth,

Military educa- tion.

NAPOLEON I.

HE family Bonaparte (written by Napoleon's father T' and by himself down to 1796 Buonaparte, though the other spelling occurs in early Italian documents) was of Tuscan origin. A branch of it was settled in Corsica at least as early as the 16th century, from which time the Bonapartes appear as influential citizens of Ajaccio. They had an ancient title of nobility from the Genoese republic, and Napoleon's grandfather obtained letters of nobility also from the grand-duke of Tuscany. They had therefore the right to sign De Buonaparte, but ordinarily dropped the preposition of honour. Charles Marie de Buonaparte (born in 1746, studied law at the university of Pisa, where he took his doctor's degree in 1769) married at the age of eighteen Letitia Ramolino, who was not quite fifteen. The lady had beauty, but apparently neither rank nor wealth. In the children of this marriage the father, a somewhat indolent Italian gentleman with a certain taste for literature, seems traceable in Joseph, Jerome, and partly also in Lucien ; the energy of which Lucien had a share, which Caroline also displayed, and which astonished the world in Napoleon, seems attributable to the Corsican blood of the mother. Thirteen children were born, of whom eight grew up. The list is as follows :-—Joseph (king, first of Naples, then of Spain), Mapoleon, Lucien, Eliza (Princess Bacciochi), Pauline (married, first to General Leclerc, afterwards to Prince Borghese), Caroline (married to Murat, became queen of Naples), Louis (king of Holland), Jerome (king of Westphalia). Of these the eldest was born in 1768, the youngest in 1784. See BoNAPARTE.

Besides his brothers and sisters, Napoleon raised to importance Joseph Fesch, half-brother of his mother, a Swiss on the father's side, who was afterwards known to the world as Cardinal Fesch.

The accepted opinion is that Napoleon was born at Ajaccio on August 15, 1769. This opinion rests indeed on the positive statement of Joseph Bonaparte, but it is certain from documents that on January 7, 1768, Madame Letitia bore a son at Corte, who was baptized by the name of Nabulione. And even in legal documents we find contradictory statements about the time and place of birth, not only of Napoleon, but also of Joseph.

All diffi- culties disappear at once if we suppose that Napoleon and Nabulione were one and the same, and that Joseph was really the second son, whom the parents found it con- venient to pass off as the first-born. This they may have found convenient when, in 1779, they gained admission for a son to the military school of Brienne. A son born in 1768 would at that date be inadmissible, as being above ten years of age. Thus it is conceivable that Napoleon was introduced by a fraud to that military career which changed the face of the world. Nevertheless it is certain from Lucien's memoir that of such a fraud nothing was known to the younger members of the family, who regarded Joseph as without doubt the eldest.

After passing two or three months in a school at Autun for the purpose of learning French—he had hitherto been a thorough Italian—Napoleon entered Brienne on April 23, 1779, where he remained for more than five years, and then in September 1784 passed, as " cadet-gentilhomme," into the military school of Paris. In the next year, 1785, he obtained his commission of lieutenant in the regiment La Feére, stationed at Valence. He had already lost his father, who, undertaking a journey to France on business, was entertained at Montpellier in the house of an old Corsican friend Madame Permon, mother of the celebrated

memoir-writer Madame Junot, and died there of the dis. ease which was afterwards fatal to Napoleon, on February 25, 1785, at the age of thirty-eight years.

The fact principally to be noticed about Napoleon's extraction and boyhood is that he was by birth a noble, needy and provincial, and that from his tenth year his education was exclusively military. Of all the great rulers of the world none has been by breeding so purely a military specialist. He could scarcely remember the time when he was not a soldier living among soldiers. The effects of this training showed themselves too evidently when he had risen to the head of affairs. At the same time poverty in a society of luxurious noblemen, and the consciousness of foreign birth and of ignorance of the French language, made his school life at times very unhappy. At one time he demands passionately to be taken away, at another time he sends in a memorial, in which he argues the ex- pediency of subjecting the cadets to a more Spartan diet, His character declared itself

earlier than his talents. He was reported as “taciturn, fond of solitude, capricious, haughty, extremely disposed to egoism, seldom speaking, energetic in his answers, ready and sharp in repartee, full of self-love, ambitious, and of unbounded aspirations.” So he appeared to his teachers, and an Englishman who re- membered him at Brienne makes him a complete Timon, living as a hermit, and perpetually at war with his school-fellows. His abilitiesdo not seem to have excited wonder, but he was studious, and in mathematics and geography made great progress. He never, however, so Carnot tells us, became a truly scientific man. He had neither taste nor talent for grammatical studies, but was fond of books, and books of a solid kind. Of the writers of the day he seems to have been chiefly influenced by Raynal and Rousseau.

He is now a lieutenant of artillery in the service of Louis XVI, The next years are spent mainly with his regiment at Valence, Lyons, Douai, Paris, Auxonne, Seurre, Auxonne again, But he takes long holidays with his family at Ajaccio, obtaining permission on the ground of ill-health. Thus he was at Ajaccio in 1787 from February to October, again from December 1787 to May 1788, again

from September 1789 to February 1791. During this Barly | period he is principally engaged in authorship, being con- author

sumed by the desire of distinction, and having as yet no*”™

other means of attaining it. He produces Letters on the LTistory of Corsica, which he proposes to dedicate first to Paoli, afterwards to Raynal; he competes for a prize offered by the academy of Lyons for the best essay written “to determine the truths and feelings which it is most important to inculcate on men for their happiness.” Among his smaller compositions is Zhe Narrative of the Masked Prophet. Of all these writings, which are to be distinguished from the pamphlets written by him with a practical object, it may be said that they show more character than literary ability. As the compositions of a boy they are indeed remarkable for their precocious seriousness, but what strikes the reader most in them is a sort of suppressed passion that marks the style, a fierce impatience, as if the writer knew already how much he had to get through in a short life. But his sentiments, love of liberty, of virtue, of domestic happiness, are hollow, and his

affectation of tenderness even ridiculous. The essay, aS a composition, is positively bad, and was natur- ally unsuccessful.

Meanwhile his active life had begun with the Revolution of 1789. The first chapter of it is separate from the rest,

a ee

yrsican srlod.

nN A we Oo

and leads to nothing. That astonishing career which has all the unity of a most thrilling drama does not begin till 1795. The six years which preceded it may be called his Corsican period, because for the greater part of it he may be thought to have regarded Corsica as the destined scene of his future life. It must be very summarily treated here.

In 1789 the Italian island of Corsica had been for twenty years a dependency of France. But France had acquired it in a most unscrupulous manner by purchasing the rights of the republic of Genoa over it. She did this in 1768, that is, when Corsica had contested those rights in a war of nearly forty years, and had been practically independent and happy for about thirteen years under the dictatorship of Pasquale Paoli. It was an act similar to the partition of Poland, and seems to mark a design on the part of France—which had just lost its American colonies—to extend its power by way of the Mediterranean into the East. Paoli was compelled to take refuge in England, where he was still living when the French Revolu- tion broke out. In the fall of Corsica a certain Matteo Buttafuoco played a disgraceful part. He had been sent by Paoli to treat as plenipotentiary with France, was won over by Choiseul, declared against the national cause, and appeared in the island as colonel of Louis XV.’s Corsican regiment. He too was still living when the states-general met, and represented there the noblesse of Corsica, while Salicetti, a name of no little prominence in the Revolution, was one of the representatives of the Corsican tiers état.

The Revolution was as dangerous an event to the rela- tion between France and Corsica as to that between France and St Domingo. Would the island

assert its independence, and, if so, could the assembly deny its right todoso? The islanders and the exiled Paoli at their head took a moderate view. France must guarantee a good deal of local freedom ; on such conditions, they thought, the relation might continue, if only to prevent the republic of Genoa from reviving its pretensions. Accordingly, on November 30, 1789, Corsica was declared by the National Assembly to be a province of France on the motion of Salicetti himself, and the protest against this decree made by Genoa was treated with contempt. Paoli left London, was received in France with an ovation, appeared before the National Assembly on April 22, 1790, where he received the honours of the sitting, and landed in Corsica on July 14th, after an absence of twenty-one years. Thus was Corsica reconciled to France by the Revolution of 1789; but the good work was undone by the Second Revolution of 1792.

Since 1769 the French power in the island had rested mainly on the noblesse and clergy. The Bonaparte family, as noble, had been on the unpatriotic side; Napoleon's father appears always as a courtier of the French governor Marbceuf and as a mendicant at Versailles ; Madame Letitia in soliciting a place for her son Louis styles herself " the widow of a man who always served the king in the administration of the affairs of the island of Corsica." It is therefore a remarkable fact that almost immediately after the taking of the Bastille Napoleon hurried to Ajaccio and placed himself at the head of the revolutionary party With all the decision characteristic of him. He devoted himself to the establishment of a National Guard, of which he might hope to be the La Fayette, and he published a letter to Buttafuoco which, properly understood, is a solemn desertion of the principles of his family, similar to that of Mirabeau. This letter has all the intensity of his other early writings, but far more effectiveness. It lashes Buttafuoco for his treason of 1768, describing him as a cynic, who had no belief in virtue, but supposed all men to be guided by selfish interest. The invective has lost its

edge for us who know that Bonaparte soon after openly professed this very creed. In declaring for the Revolution he obeyed the real inclination of his feelings at the time, as we may see from his writings, which are in the

revolu- tionary tone of Raynal. But had he not really, we may ask, an ulterior object, viz., to make Corsica independent of France, and to restore the old rule of Paoli, aiming himself at Paoli's succession? Probably he wished to see such a result, but he had always two strings to his bow. In his letter to Buttafuoco he carefully avoids separating Corsican liberty from the liberty offered by the French Revolution. Had the opportunity offered, he might no doubt have stood forth at this time as the liberator of Corsica ; but circum- stances did not prove favourable, and he drifted gradually in quite the opposite direction.

In October 1790 he met Paoli at Orezza, where Corsica constituted itself as a French department, Paoli being president, Salicetti procureur-général syndic, Arena and Pozzo di Borgo (also from Ajaccio) members of the Directorium. Paoli is said to have hailed Napoleon as 'one of Plutarch's men." As the only Corsican officer trained at a royal military school, Napoleon might aspire to become commander of a paid native guard which it was proposed to create for the island. But France had mis- givings about the use to which such a guard might be put, and the minister of war rejected the proposal. In the next year, however, he was successful in a second attempt to get the command of an armed force in Corsica, and betrayed in the course of this attempt how much more intent he was at this time upon Corsican than upon French affairs. It was decided to create four battalions of national volunteers for Corsica, and Napoleon became candidate for the post of lieutenant-colonel in the district of Ajaccio. The choice was in the hands of the'volunteers themselves, and in pursuing his canvass Napoleon did not hesitate to outstay his furlough, and thus forfeit his French commission by wilful absence from a great review of the whole French army which was appointed for the opening day of 1792. He was, however, elected, having, its said, executed the first of his many coups d'état by violently imprisoning a commissioner sent down to superintend the election. We can understand his eagerness when we remark that anarchy in Corsica was steadily increasing, so that he may have believed that the moment for some military stroke was at hand. He did not long delay. At the Easter festival of 1792 he tried to get possession of Ajaccio under cover of a tumult between the volunteers and the refractory clergy. The stroke failed, and he fled from the island. The European war was just breaking out, and at

Paris everything was in confusion ; otherwise he would probably have been tried by court-martial and shot.

A rebel in Corsica, a deserter in France, what was he to do? He went to Paris, where he arrived on May 21. The Second Revolution was at hand, and he could observe while no one had leisure to observe him. He witnessed the 10th of August and the downfall of the monarchy. To him this revolution was a fortunate event, for the new Government, attacked by all Europe, could not dispense with the few trained officers whom the emigration had left. On August 30th his name was restored to the army list with the rank of captain, a commission dated back to the 6th February, and arrears of pay. He was saved from the most desperate condition to which he was ever in his whole life reduced. On September 2d (terrible date!) he is engaged in withdrawing his sister Eliza from St Cyr (the House of St Louis having been suppressed). The next step he takes is remarkable. The great war which was to carry him to the pinnacle of fame was now in full progress. By undeserved good luck his military rank is XVI. — 25

restored to him. Will he not hurry to his regiment, eager to give proof of his military talents? No, his thoughts are still in Corsica. On the pretext of conducting his sister to her home he sets off without delay for Ajaccio, where he arrives on the 17th. The winter was spent in the unsuccessful expedition, which may be called Napoleon’s first campaign, made from Corsica against the island of Sardinia. On his return he found a new scene opened. The Second Revolution was beginning to produce its effect in Corsica, which was no mere province of France, and in which everything was modified by the presence of Paoli. Elsewhere the Convention was able by its Representatives in Mission to crush opposition, but they could not so erush Corsica and Paoli. There was thus a natural opposition between the Convention and Paoli, and the islanders began to fall into opposite parties, as adherents of the former or of the latter. It might have been expected that Bonaparte, who all his life had glorified Paoli, and whose early letters are full of hatred to France, would have been an enthusiastic Paolist. But a breach seems to have taken place between them soon after Napoleon’s return from Paris, perhaps in consequence of his escapade of Easter 1792.

The crisis came on April 2d, when Paoli was denounced before the Convention, among others by Marat, and it was decreed that he and Pozzo di Borgo should come to Paris and render an account of their conduct to the Convention. Paoli refused, but with the remarkable, perhaps excessive, moderation which char- acterized him offered to leave Corsica if his presence there appeared to the Convention undesirable. But the islanders rallied round him almost as one man.

There could be no reason why the horrors of the Second Revolution should extend to Corsica, even if we consider them to have been inevitable in France. For a Corsican patriot no fairer opportunity could offer of dissolving with universal approbation the connexion with France which had begun in 1769. Napoleon took the opposite side. He stood out with Salicetti as the leading champion of the French connexion and the bitterest opponent of Paoli. Was his motive envy, or the bitterness caused by a recent personal quarrel with Paoli? We cannot positively say, but we can form an estimate of the depth of that insular patriotism which fills the Letters on the History of Corsica. Paoli summoned a national consulta at the end of May, and the dissolution of the French connexion now began. The consulta denounced the Bonaparte family by name. Napoleon answered by desperate attempts to execute his old plan of getting possession of the citadel of Ajaccio. But he failed, and the whole Bonaparte family, with Madame Letitia and Fesch, pursued by the fury of the people, took refuge in France. With this Hijra the first period of Napoleon comes to an end.

Up to this time Napoleon has regarded the French nation with dislike, French ways and habits are strange and foreign, and he has more than once turned aside from a French career when it seemed open to him. Henceforth he has no other career to look for, unless indeed it may be possible, as for some time he continued to hope, to make his way back to Corsica by means of French arms. A certain change seems now to pass over his character. Up to this time his writings, along with their intensity, have had a highly moral and sentimental tone. He seems sincerely to have thought himself not only stronger and greater but better than other men. At school he found himself among school-fellows who were a hundred “fathoms below the noble sentiments which animated himself,” and again much later he pronounced that “the men among whom he lived had ways of thinking as differ- ent

from his own as moonlight is from sunlight.” Prob- ably he still felt that he had more vivid thoughts than

other men, but he ceases henceforth to be a moralist, His next pamphlet, Le Souper de Beaucaire, is entirely free from sentiment, and in a very short time he appears as a cynic, and even pushing cynicism to an extreme.

It was in June 1793 that the Bonaparte family found At themselves at Toulon in the midst of the Corsican emigra- Toulon, tion. France was in a condition not less disturbed than Corsica, for it was the moment of the fall of the Girondins, Plunged into this new party strife, Bonaparte could hardly avoid taking the side of the Mountain. Paoli had been in a manner the Girondin of Corsica, and Bonaparte had headed the opposition to him. In Le Souper de Beaucaire (published in August 1793), which is the mani- festo of this period as the Letter to Buttafuoco is of the earlier period, he himself compares the Girondins to Paoli, and professes to think that the safety of the state re— quires a deeper kind of republicanism than theirs. The immediate occasion of this pamphlet is the civil war of the south, into which he was now plunged. Marseilles had declared against the Convention, and had sent an army under Rousselet which had occupied Avignon, but had evacuated it speedily on being attacked by the troops of the Mountain under Carteaux. Bonaparte took part in the attack, commanding the artillery, but it seems an unfounded statement that he specially distinguished himself. This was in July, and a month later the pamphlet was written. It is a dialogue between inhabit- ants of Marseilles, Nimes, and Montpellier and a military man. It is highly characteristic, full of keen and sarcastic sagacity, of clear military views; but the temperature of its author’s mind has evidently fallen suddenly ; it has no warmth, but a remarkable cynical coldness. Among the Representatives in Mission recently arrived at Avignon was the younger Robespierre, with whom Salicetti was intimate. Bonaparte, introduced by Salicetti and recom- mended by this pamphlet, naturally rose high in his favour.

He is now a Jacobin. We must not be misled by the violence with which Bonaparte attacked this party some years later, and the horror he professed to feel for their crimes, so as to conclude that his connexion with the Jacobins, and especially the Robespierres, was purely accidental and

professional. What contemporary evidence we have exhibits Bonaparte at this time as holding the language of a terrorist, and we shall see how narrowly. he | escaped perishing with the Robespierres in Thermidor. | Of course it is not necessary to disbelieve Marmont when he says that the atrocities of the Robespierrists were not {

to Bonaparte's taste, and that he did much to check them within the sphere of lis influence.

Bonaparte marched with Carteaux into Marseilles late in August, and about the same time Toulon delivered itself into the hands of the English. Just at this moment he was promoted to the rank of chef de batadllon in the second regiment of artillery, which gave him practically the command of the artillery in the force which was now formed to besiege Toulon. The story of his relations with the generals who were sent successively to conduct the siege, Carteaux the painter, Doppet the physician, Dugommier the brave veteran, and of his discovery of the true way to take Toulon, are perhaps somewhat legendary, but he may probably have been eloquent and persuasive at the council of war held November 25th, in which the plan of the siege was laid down. That he distinguished himself in action is more certain, for Dugommier writes, "Among those who distinguished themselves most, and who most aided me to rally the troops and push them forward, are citizens Buona Parte, commanding the artillery, Arena and Cervoni, adjutants general" (A/oniteur, December 7, 1793). He was now named general of brigade.

artillery there. He left Marseilles for Paris on May 5, Ordered feeling that all the ground gained by his activity at Toulon, to the

1795.]

oinsthe Bonaparte now passes out of the civil into the foreign my of war. 'The military system of the Convention is by this

taly. army of

time in full operation. Distinct armies face each enemy, and the great military names of the Revolution are already in men's mouths. The army of the north has Jourdan, Leclerc, Vandamme, Brune, Mortier; that of the Moselle has Hoche, Bessiéres, Moreau ; that of the Rhine Pichegru, Schérer, Berthier ; that of the West Marceau and Kléber. Bonaparte joins the army of Italy as general of artillery and inspector-general; to the same army is attached Masséna as general of division; Dumerbion is general-in- chief. Itis now that for the first time we find Bonaparte's exceptional ability remarked. Restless pushing ambition he had shown all along, but that he was more than a mere intriguer seems to have been first discerned by the younger

'Robespierre, who in a letter of April 5, 1794, describes

him as "cf transcendent merit." In the brief campaign of the army of Italy which occupied the month of July 1794 he took no part, while Masséna commanded in the illness of Dumerbion. But in July he made his first essay in diplomacy. Genoa was among the earliest of the many

feeble neutral states which suffered in the conflict of the

Revolution with the great powers, and at the expense of which the revolutionary empire was founded. Bonaparte was sent by the younger Robespierre to remonstrate with the Genoese Governinent upon the use which they suffered the Coalition to make of their neutral territory. He was in Genoa from July 16 to July 23; he urged the French claim with success; he returned to Nice on July 28. But July 28, 1794, is the 9th Thermidor, on which Bonaparte's patron perished with his elder brother on the scaffold.

and by the admiration he had begun to inspire, was lost again, that his career was all to recommence, and in pecu- harly unfavourable circumstances.

This is the last ill turn he ever received from fortune. Tt has been attributed to the Girondist spite of a certain Aubry.against the Montagnard Bonaparte. The truth seems rather to be that the Committee of Public Safety felt that the Corsican element was too strong in the army of Italy; they remarked that "the patriotism of these refugees is less manifest than their disposition to

enrich themselves." Lacombe Saint Michel knew Corsica; and the new general of the army of Italy, Schérer, remarks of Bonaparte just at this moment that "he is a really good artillerist, but has rather too much ambition and intrigue for his advancement."

The anecdote told by Bonaparte himself of his ordering an attack of outposts in order to treat a lady to a.sight of real war, "how the French were successful, but necessarily no result could come out of it, the attack being a pure fancy, and yet some men were left on the field," belongs to the last months of his service in the army of Italy. It is worthy of notice, as showing his cynical insensibility, that he acted thus almost at the very beginning of his military career, and not when he had been hardened by

long familiarity with bloodshed. On his arrival at Paris Remains he avoids proceeding to the army of the west, and after ™ Paris.

a time obtains from Doulcet de Pontécoulant a post in the topographical section of the war office. Here he has an opportunity of resuming his old work, and we find him furnishing Doulcet, as he had before furnished

_Con- Probably the connexion of Bonaparte with the Robes- | Robespierre junior, with strategical plans for the conduct nexion pierres was closer than Bonaparte himself at a later time | of the war in Italy. Late in August he applies for a Mie liked to have it thought. ''He was their man, their plan- | commission from Government to go to Constantinople at pierres, Maker," writes Salicetti; "he had acquired an ascendency | the head of a party of artillerists in order to reform that

over the Representatives (?.¢., especially Robespierre junior) which it is impossible to describe," writes Marmont. Accordingly after Thermidor the Representatives in Mission who remained with the army of Italy, viz., Salicetti, Albitte, and Laporte, suspended Bonaparte from his functions, and placed him provisionally under arrest (August 6). He was imprisoned at the Fort Carré near Antibes, but fortu- nately for him was not sent to Paris. On the 20th he was set provisionally at liberty on the ground of "the possible utility of the military and local knowledge of the said Bonaparte."

His escape was due, according to Marmont, to Salicetti's favour and to the powerful help he himself succeeded in procuring ; "he moved heaven and earth." His power of attaching followers also now begins to appear ; Junot and Marmont, who had become acquainted with him at Toulon, were prepared, if he had been sent to Paris, to set him free by killing the gens d'armes and carrying him into the Genoese territory. Marmont has graphically described the influence exerted upon himself at this time by Bonaparte ; "there was so much future in his mind," he writes,

This was a passing check ; early in 1795 he suffered a greater misfortune. He had been engaged in a maritime expedition of which the object was to recover Corsica, now completely in the power of the English. On March 3d he embarked with his brother Louis, Marmont, and others on the brig " Amitié." On the 11th the fleet set sail. It fell in with the English, lost two ships, and returned defeated. The enterprise was abandoned, and by the end of the same month we find Lacombe Saint Michel, member of the Committee of Public Safety, sending orders to the Seneral of brigade Bonaparte to proceed immediately to the army of the west in order to take command of the

department of the Turkish service. He sends in a testimonial from Doulcet which describes him as "a, citizen who may be usefully employed whether in the artillery or in any other arm, and even in the department of foreign affairs." But at this moment occurs the crisis of his life. It coincides with a remarkable crisis in the history of France.

The Second Revolution (1792) had destroyed the mon- archy, but a republic, properly speaking, had not yet been established. Between 1792 and 1795 the government had been provisionally in the hands of the National Conven- tion, which had been summoned, not to govern, but to create a new constitution. Now at length, the danger from foreign enemies having been averted, the Convention could proceed to its proper work of establishing a definite republic.

But there was danger lest the country, when appealed to, should elect to undo the work of 1792 by recalling the Bourbons, or at least should avenge on the Mountain the atrocities of the Terror. To preserve the continuity of government an expedient was adopted. As under the new constitution the

assemblies were to be renewed periodically to the extent only of one-third at a time, it was decreed that the existing Convention should be treated as the first Corps Législatif under the new system. Thus, instead of being dissolved and making way for new assemblies, it was to form the nucleus of the new legislature, and to be renewed only to the extent of one-third. This additional law, which was promulgated along with the new constitu- tion, excited a rebellion in Paris. The sections (or wards) called into existence a revolutionary assembly, which met at the Odéon. This the Convention suppressed by military force, and the discontent of the individual sections was thereby increased. At the same time their confidence was

Checks revolt of the

’ sections.

Marriage.

Com-

mander of army of Italy.

heightened by a check they inflicted upon General Menou, who, in attempting to disarm the section Lepelletier, was imprisoned in the Rue Vivienne, and could only extricate himself by concluding a sort of capitulation with the insurgents. Thereupon the Convention, alarmed, put Menou under arrest, and gave the command of the armed force of Paris and of the army of the interior to Barras, a leading politician of the day, who had acquired a sort of military reputation by having held several times the post of Representative in Mission. Barras knew the army of Italy and the services which Bonaparte had rendered at Toulon, and nominated him second in command.

It does not seem that Bonaparte showed any remarkable firmness of character or originality of genius in meeting the revolt of the sections on the next day (Vendémiaire 13, z.e., 5th October) with grape shot. Menou was a warning that the Convention required de- cisive action, and the

invidiousness of the act fell upon Barras, not upon Bonaparte. Indeed in the official report drawn by Bonaparte himself his own name scarcely appears; instead of assuming courageously the responsi- bility of the deed, he took great pains to shirk it. He appeared in the matter merely as the instrument, as the skilful artillerist, by whom Barras and the Convention carried their resolute policy into effect. It will be observed that on this occasion he defends the cause of Jacobinism. This does not require to be explained, asat a later time he took much pains to explain it, by the consideration that, odious as Jacobinism was, on this particular occasion it was identified with “the great truths of our Revolution.” Bonaparte at this period appears uniformly as a Jacobin. He was at the moment an official in the Jacobin Govern- ment, and speaks in his letters of the party of the sections just as a Government official might be expected to do.

In this affair he produced an impression of real military capacity among the leading men of France, and placed Barras himself under a personal obligation. He was re- warded by being appointed in succession to Barras, who now resigned, commander of the army of the interior. In this position, political and military at the same time, he preluded to the part reserved for him later of First Consul and Emperor. He also strengthened his new position materially by his marriage with Josephine de Beauharnais, née Tascher. The Bonaparte legend tells of a youth call- ing upon him to claim the sword of his father, guillotined in the Terror, of Bonaparte treating the youth kindly, of his mother paying a visit of thanks to the general, of an attachment following. But even if Bonaparte was really attached to Josephine, we must not think of the match as one of mere unworldly affection. It was scarcely less splendid for the young general Bonaparte than his second match was for the emperor Napoleon. Josephine was prominent in Parisian society, and for the lonely Corsican, so completely without connexions in Paris, or even in France, such an alliance was of priceless value. She had not much either of character or intellect, but real sweet- ness of disposition. Her personal charm was not so much that of beauty as of grace, social tact, and taste in dress. The act of marriage is dated Ventose 19, year IV. (2.e., 9th March 1796). On this day Bonaparte had already been appointed to the command of the army of Italy. His great European career now begins. .

The fourth year of the Revolutionary War was opening. The peculiar characteristic of that war is that, having been for France, at the commencement, a national war of libera- tion on the grandest scale, it changed its character after two years and became an equally unprecedented national war of conquest. The conquest of Austrian Flanders had been made in 1794, that of Holland in the winter of the same year. The whole left bank of the Rhine was in

The disgrace of

NAPOLEON

[1795-

French occupation, and the war had passed over to the right bank. The question was no longer of the principles of the Revolution, but only of inducing the emperor and

the Germanic body to conclude treaties in which Belgium

and the left bank should be ceded. It was a war for territory similar to so many wars of the 18th century, but exceeding all of them in the energy with which it was conducted and the extent which it covered. Never had the warlike spirit been so predominant before in Europe. Bonaparte did not introduce, but found already intro- duced, the principle of conquest.

Prussia, with most of the North-German princes and Spain, had retired from the war early in 1795. Austria was now the great enemy of France by land. Accordingly the direct struggle was waged chiefly on the upper Rhine, where Austria had then extensive territories. But Austra could also be attacked on the side of Italy, where she possessed the duchy of Milan. On this side, however, a less important belligerent intervened, viz., Sardinia. It was natural to suppose that Sardinia, which since 1792 had lost Savoy and Nice, which since the military regeneration of France could not expect victory, and which had been in the habit of regarding Austria rather as a rival than as a friend, would gladly be quit of the war. Could she but be pushed aside, Austria might be attacked on the plains of Lombardy. Bonaparte had nursed this idea ever since he had been connected with the

army of Italy ; since Vendémiaire he had discussed it with Carnot, and it was Carnot, now one of the five Directors, who, as he himself tells us, procured Bonaparte's appointment to the Italian command.

But not only Austria could be attacked in Italy. The French Revolution, by undertaking a sort of crusade against monarchy, had furnished itself with a justification for attacking almost all states alike, for almost all were either monarchical or at least aristocratic. Italy was full of small states which could be attacked as Mainz or Holland had been attacked before. Tuscany had an Austrian prince; Rome was the patron of the prétres insermentés; Venice was aristocratic. Bonaparte instinctively saw that he had a charter for indiscriminate conquest and plunder. He announced this to the army without the least disguise: "Soldiers, you are naked and ill fed; I will lead you into the most fruitful plains in the world. Rich provinces, great cities will be in your power. There you will find honour and fame and wealth!" In this announcement is the key to the history of Europe for the next twenty years.

|

This order of the day was issued from Nice, where Italia|

Bonaparte had arrived on March 27th. began on April 10th. This, the first of Bonaparte's cam- paigns, has been compared to his last. As in 1815 he tried to separate Bliicher and Wellington, hoping to over- come them in turn, so now with more success he attacked first the Austrians under Beaulieu and then the Sardinians under Colli. Defeating the Austrians at Montenotte, Millesimo, and Dego, he turned on the 15th against Coll, defeated him at Ceva, then at Mondovi, and concluded the convention of Cherasco on the 28th. By this con- vention, which was soon after tumed into a treaty of peace, Sardinia was severed from the Coalition, and her principal fortresses put into the hands of France. What Bonaparte had so long dreamed of he accomplished in a single month, and turned himself at once to the conquest of Lombardy.

The month of May was devoted to the invasion. On the 7th he crossed the Po at Piacenza, stormed the bridge over the Adda at Lodi on the 11th, and,

as the archduke who governed Lombardy had quitted Milan on the 9th, retiring by Bergamo into Germany, Bonaparte entered

The campaign cami

1797.]

Milan on the 15th. That day Bonaparte told Marmont that his success hitherto was nothing to what was reserved for him. “In our days,” he added, “no one has con- ceived anything great; it falls to me to give the example.” June was spent in consolidating the conquest of Lombardy, in spoiling the country, and repressing the insurrections which broke out among the Italians, astonished to find From the

NAF CLE ON

197

existing Government we see that he has completely emanci- pated himself from it, and that his acts are those of an independent ruler, as had been those of Cesar in Gaul or of Pompey in the East while the Roman republic was still nominally standing. As early as June 1796 he said to Miot, ‘‘The commissioners of the Directory have no concern with my policy; I do what I please.”

themselves plundered by their “ liberators.” middle of July the war, as far as Austria is concerned, becomes a war for Mantua. Austria makes desperate and repeated efforts to raise the siege of this all-important

From the outset it had been contemplated to make the Levying invasion of Italy financially profitable. Contributions of con- were levied so rapaciously that in the duchy of Milan, ttibu- where the French had professed to appear as brothers and “°”*

fortress. On July 29 arrived Wiirmser at the head of 50,000 men, making his way through Tyrol from the Rhine. He advanced on both sides of the Lake of Garda, and threatened Bonaparte’s communications by occupying Brescia. Bonaparte abandoned the siege of Mantua, and brought his whole

force to meet the enemy. On this one occasion we find the young commander's resource and courage failing him. He called councils of war, and declared in favour of retreating across the Po. When Augereau resisted this determination, he left the room declaring that he would have nothing to do with the matter, and, when Augereau asked who was to give orders, answered "You!" The desperate course was rewarded with success. The Austrians were defeated at Castiglione on August 5th, and retired into Tyrol. But Mantua had been revictualled, and Bonaparte had suffered the loss of his slege-train.

Early in September Bonaparte, having received reinforce- ments from France, assumed the offensive against Wiirmser, and after defeating him at Bassano forced him to throw himself with the remainder of his army into Mantua (September 15).

At the end of October Austria had assembled a new army of 50,000 men, mostly, however, raw recruits. They were placed under the command of Alvinzi. Bonaparte was to be overwhelmed between this army and that of Wiirmser issuing from Mantua.

fell upon Alvinzi's rear at Arcola. The struggle lasted

through three days, during which Bonaparte's life was at _ one moment in great danger, and ended in a complete |

victory for the French (November 15-17). From Arcola he used ever afterwards to date his profound confidence in his own fortune. Mantua, however, still held out, and early in January (1797) a fourth and last attempt was made by Alvinzi to relieve it, but he was again completely defeated at Rivoli, and a whole Austrian corps @armée under Provera laid down its arms at Roverbella (January 16). On receiving the intelligence of this disaster Wiirmser concluded the capitulation by which the French were put In possession of Mantua.

Such was the campaign of Bonaparte against Austria, by which he raised his reputation at once above that of all the other generals of the republic, Jourdan, Moreau, or

But by a night march he |

liberators, a rebellion against them speedily broke out, which Bonaparte suppressed with the merciless cruelty he always showed in such cases. He kept the promise of his first proclamation: he made the army rich. “ From this moment,” writes Marmont, ‘‘the chief part of the pay and salaries was paid in coin. This led toa great change in the situation of the officers, and to a certain extent in their manners. The army of Italy was at that time the only one which had escaped from the unprecedented misery which all the armies had so long endured.” The amount of confiscation seems to have been enormous. Besides direct contributions levied in the conquered territory, the domains of dispossessed Governments, the revenues and property of churches and hospitals, were at Bonaparte’s disposal. There seems reason to think that but a small proportion of this plunder was ever accounted for. It went to the army chest, over which Bonaparte retained the control, and the pains that he took to corrupt his officers is attested in the narrative of Marmont, who relates that Bonaparte once caused a large sum to pass through his hands, and when he took great pains to render a full account of it, as the officers had then une fleur de délicatesse, Bona- parte blamed him for not having kept it for himself.

As he made himself financially independent of tle His Government, so he began to develop an independent policy. Italian Hitherto he has had no politics, but has been content to policy.

talk the Jacobinism of the ruling party ; now lhe takes a line, and it is not quite that of the Government. He had already, in June 1796, invaded the papal territory, and concluded a convention at Bologna by which he extorted 15 millions from the pope; immediately after the fall of Mantua he entered the States of the Church again, and concluded the treaty of Tolentino on February 19. We see how freely he combines diplomacy with war ; he writes without disguise to the Directory, October 5, “‘ You incur the greatest risk whenever your general in Italy is not the centre of everything.” But now in dealing with the pope he separates his policy from that of the Directory. He demands indeed the cession of Bologna, Ferrara, and the Romagna, besides Aviguon and the Venaissin, and the temporary cession of Ancona. But he recognizes the pope by treating with him, and

towards the Catholic religion and the priesthood he shows himself unexpectedly merciful.

es as Hoche. But he had acted by no means merely as a_ Religion is not to be altered in the ceded Legations, and pena general of the republic against Austria. He had assumed | Bonaparte extends his protection in the most ostentatious can from the beginning the part of an independent conqueror, | manner to the prétres insermentés, whom he found in large queror, Neither bound by the orders of his Government nor by any | numbers in the States of the Church. This was the more

rules of international law or morality.

The commander of a victorious army wields a force which only a Government long and firmly established can hold in check. A new Government, such as the Directory in France, having no root in the country, is powerless before a young victor such as Bonaparte. The danger had been early perceived : Hoche had been pronounced danger- ous by Robespierre ; it became imminent when Bonaparte with his unrestrained ambition pushed before the other generals, The coup d'état of Brumaire was in Bonaparte's mind before he had been many weeks at the head of the army of Italy. But long before he ventured to strike the

marked as they were at this time objects of the bitterest persecution in France. Here is the first indication of the policy of the Concordat, but it is also a mark of Bonaparte's independent position, the position rather of a prince than of a responsible official; nay, it marks a deliberate intention to set himself up as a rival of the Government. His manner of conducting the war was as unprecedented as his relation to the Government, and in like manner foreshadowed the Napoleonic period. It was not that of a civilized belligerent, but of a universal con- queror. The Revolution had put all international law into abeyance. Bonaparte in Italy, as in his later wars, knows

Advance on Austria.

nothing of neutrality. Thus Tuscany, the first of all states to conclude a treaty with the French republic, is not thereby saved from invasion. Bonaparte's troops march in, seize Leghorn, and take possession of all the English property found in that port. More remarkable still is the treatment of Venice. The. territory of the republic is turned unceremoniously into a field of battle between France and Austria, and at the end of the war the Venetian republic is blotted out of the map.

Further is to be remarked the curious development which was given tothe principle of plunder. The financial distress of France and the impoverishment of the army at the opening of the campaign might account for much simple spoliation. But Bonaparte introduced the practice of transferring pictures and statues from the Italian palaces and galleries to France. This singular revival of primitive barbaric modes of making war becomes more striking when we reflect that the spoiler of Italy was himself an Italian.

Altogether these campaigns brought to light a personality entirely without precedent in modern European history. True, the Revolution behind him and the circumstances around him were absolutely unprecedented. Marmont remarked at the time the rapid and continual development which just then showed itself in Bonaparte's character. "Every day," he writes, '""he seemed to see before him a new horizon." An ambitious man had suddenly become aware that a career entirely unparalleled was open to him, if only he could find audacity and unscrupulous energy to enter upon it. Add to this that he had lived for three years in the midst of disorders and horrors such as might well have dissipated all principles, beliefs, and restraints. Even as early as the 13th Vendémiaire we find him impressed with a fatalist belief in his own luck (IT received no hurt; Iam always lucky," he writes), and there are indications that his wonderful escape at Arcola greatly heightened this belief in a mind naturally some- what superstitious.

At this moment, as Bonaparte's private political views begin to appear, his Jacobinism, even his republicanism, slips from him like a robe. As early as May 1797 he said to Miot and Melzi, "Do you suppose that I triumph in Italy for the glory of the lawyers of the Directory, a Carnot or a Barras? Do you suppose I mean to found a republic? What an idea! a republic of thirty

millions of people! with our morals, our vices! how is such a thing possible? The nation wants a chief, a chief covered with glory, not theories of government, phrases, ideological essays that the French do not understand. They want some playthings ; that will be enough ; they will play with them and let themselves be led, always supposing they are cleverly prevented from seeing the goal towards which they are moving." His contempt for the French char- acter and his opinion of their unfitness for republican institutions was sincere ; it was the opinion of a Corsican accustomed to more primitive, more masculine ways of life; we meet with it in Bonaparte's earliest letters, written before the thought of himself ruling France had occurred to him.

When the fall of Mantua had established the French power in North Italy, Bonaparte's next thought was to strike at the heart of Austria from this new basis. Early in March, having secured his position in Italy by the treaty of Tolentino with Rome and by a treaty with Sardinia, he set his troops in motion. He sent Joubert with 18,000 men into Tyrol, while he prepared to march in person upon Vienna from Friuli through Carinthia and Styria. The archduke Charles had been called to the command of the troops opposed to him, but these were thoroughly demoralized. Bonaparte dislodged him from the line of

the Tagliamento, then from that of the Isonzo, and advanced steadily until he reached Leoben im Styria on April 7th. Here began negotiations.

not been properly understood. preliminaries containing conditions 10st triumphant for France, since they were won by an invasion which stopped little short of Vienna, and followed a series of victories most ruinous to the Austrian military power. But it was not France that imposed these conditions, it was Bonaparte, whose interest was not by any means identical with that of France. His object was not so much to vanquish Austria as to eclipse the French generals on the Rhine and wrest from them the honour of concluding the war. In order to do this it was necessary to surprise Austria by his modera- tion, and this he did in the preliminaries of Leoben. The

object of the war on the part of France had long been to obtain definitive possession of Belgium and the Rhine frontier; this might now have been obtained at the expense of Bonaparte's Italian conquests. At Leoben, however, no such arrangement was made. Belgium indeed, so far as it belonged to Austria, was ceded, and the emperor agreed to "recognize the limits of France as decreed by the laws of the republic." This expression afterwards was made to seem ambiguous, but at the time it appears to have been understood to refer almost exclusively to the Belgian terri- tories, which had been organized by the French into nine departments. It seems certainly not to have included that large territory limited by the Rhine which it was not com- petent to Austria to cede, since in the main it did not belong to Austria but to the Germanic empire. But what was to become of Bonaparte's conquests in Lombardy? Here we meet with a principle of action which, though not invented by him, was mainly instrumental in found- ing his empire. An independent republic was to be set up in Lombardy, and for this Austria was to receive as an indemnity the continental possessions of the Venetian republic as far as the Oglio, with Istria and Dalmatia. But how came this territory to be at the disposal of Bonaparte, since the Venetian republic was a neutral state ? The answer is that its neutrality had been utterly disre- garded by Bonaparte during the war, and that, as its territory had been freely trampled on by his troops, irrita- tion had necessarily arisen among the Venetians, thence quarrels with the French, thence on the side of the French an attack on the aristocratic government and the setting up of a democracy. Of all this the result was now found to be that the Venetian empire was a conquered territory, which in her next treaty France could cede in exchange for any desired advantage. 'This had been the principle of the partition of Poland; it was now to be the principle of a universal conquest.

The summer of 1797 was passed by Bonaparte at Montebello near Milan. Here he rehearsed in Italy the part of emperor, formed his court, and accustomed himself to all the functions of government. He was chiefly engaged at this time in accomplishing the dissolution of the Venetian republic. He had begun early in the spring by provoking insurrections in Brescia and Bergamo. In April the insolence of a French officer provoked a rising against the French at Salo, for which Junot, sent by Bonaparte, demanded satisfaction of the senate on the 15th. The French now attempted

to disarm all the Venetian garrisons that remained on the terra jirma, and this led to a rising at Verona in which some hundreds of French- men were massacred (April 17th). sea-captain, violating the customs of the port at the Lido, was fired upon from a Venetian fort. Bonaparte now declared that he would be a new Attila to Venice,

|

| There has been much misconception of the preliminaries Prelimin! of Leoben, because Bonaparte's position and objects have aries of : We expect to find these Leoben. |

; :

On the 19th a French Occupa-

1797.]

and issued a declaration of war. The feeble Government could only submit. A revolution took place at Venice, and French troops took possession of the town on May 16th. A treaty was now concluded by Bonaparte " establishing peace and friendship between the French republic and the republic of Venice," and providing that " the French occu- pation should cease as soon as the new Government should declare that it no longer needed foreign assistance." 'A principal object of this treaty," as Bonaparte candidly explained to the Directory, "was to obtain possession

NAP ont ON

To

probable that he would in any case have sided with the majority of the Directory, since anything which favoured the Bourbons was a hindrance to his ambition. And thus the armies of the republic stood united against the tendency of public opinion at home. Imperialism stood opposed to parliamentary government, believing itself—such was the bewilderment of the time—to be more in favour of the sovereignty of the people than the people itself, and not aware that it was paving the way for a military despot.

without hindrance of the city, the arsenal, and everything.” At the time that he was thus establishing friendship he was, as we know, ceding the territory of Venice, including

The catastrophe came on 18th Fructidor (September Coup 4, 1797), when Augereau, one of Bonaparte’s generals of @éat of

division, who had been sent by Bonaparte to Paris, sur- ae

at last the town, to Austria.

When we read the letters written by him at this period we see that already, only a year after he assumed for the first time the command of an army, he has fully conceived the utmost of what he afterwards realized. Had he been shown in vision at this time what he was to be at his zenith in 1812, when he was the astonisliment and terror of the world, he would probably have said that it fell short of his expectations.

One concession he had made in order to prevent Hoche and Moreau from sharing his laurels; at Leoben he had granted good terms to Austria. But the definitive treaty was not yet concluded, and it was still possible to with- draw this concession. This was the more possible as Austria might now be threatened with an attack from Bonaparte and Hoche at the same time. By virtue of the new principle she might also be bribed. The town of Venice might be ceded to her as well as the province, and in return for the left bank of the Rhine indemnity might be granted to her within the Germanic empire. The principle of ceding what is not one’s own is evidently capable of wide application. But Austria had still one hope, for it seemed impossible that France herself could sufier Bonaparte to run his headlong career without inter- ference, especially as she now had popular assemblies. The difficulty which Bonaparte had dissipated by his cannon in Vendémiaire had returned, as it could not fail todo. A Jacobinical regicide republic had to support itself in the midst of a nation which was by no means Jacobinical, and which had representative assemblies. These assem- blies, renewed by a third for the second time in the spring of 1797, placed Pichegru, suspected of royalism, in the chair of the Five Hundred, and Europe began to ask Whether the restoration of the Bourbons was about to follow. Bonaparte at Montebello found that the Austrian negotiators were bent upon delay.

The rising party was not perhaps mainly royalist ; its most conspicuous representative, Carnot, the Director, was himself a regicide. In the main it aimed only at respectable government and peace, but a minority were Open to some suspicion of royalism. This suspicion was fatal to the whole party, since royalism had at this time been thoroughly discredited by the follies of the émigrés. An outery is raised by the soldiers. We can measure the Steady progress which had been made by the military power since Vendémiaire; it had then been an instru- ment in the hands of the Government, now it gives the law and makes the Government its instrument. The armies of the Rhine, represented by Hoche, oppose the hew movement ; as to Bonaparte, he was driven into op- position by self-defence. Dumolard, a deputy, had called attention to his monstrous treatment of the Venetian re- public; he anticipated the judgment of history by com- paring it to the partition of Poland. Bonaparte had already divulged to a friend the secret that he despised republicanism, but this attack made him once more, for the last time, a republican and a Jacobin. It is, however,

rounded the Corps Législatif with twelve thousand men and arrested the most obnoxious representatives, while another force marched to the Luxembourg, arrested the Director Barthélemi, and would have arrested Carnot had he not received warning in time to make his escape. This stroke was followed by an outrageous proscription of the new party, of whom a large number, consisting partly of members of the Councils, partly of journalists, were transported to die at Cayenne, and the elections were annulled in forty-eight departments.

Such was Fructidor, which may be considered as the third of the revolutions which compose the complex event usually known as the French Revolution. In 1789 the absolute monarchy had given place to a constitutional monarchy, which was definitively established in 1791. In 1792 the constitutional monarchy fell, giving place to a republic which was definitively established in 1795. Since 1795 it had been understood that revolution was over, and that France was living under a constitution. But in Fructidor this constitution also fell, and govern- ment became revolutionary again. It was evident that a third constitution must be established ; it was evident also that this constitution must set up a military form of

government,—that is, an imperialism; but two more years passed before this was done.

The benefit of the change was reaped in the end by Bonaparte. Naturally he favoured it and took a great share in contriving it. But it seems an exaggeration to represent him as the exclusive or even the principal author of Fructidor. Hoche took the same side as Bonaparte; Augereau outran him (and yet Augereau at this time was by no means a mere echo of Bonaparte); the division of the army of Italy commanded by Bernadotte, which had been recently detached from the army of Sambre-et-Meuse, and stood somewhat aloof from Bonaparte's influence, sided with him in this instance. The truth is that the rising party of Moderates gave offence to the whole military world by making peace their watchword. Outside the armies too there was profound alarm in the whole repub- lican party, so that the circle of Madame de Staél was strongly Fructidorian, and this certainly was not guided by the influence of Bonaparte, though at this time Madame de Staél was among his warmest admirers. When the blow had been struck, Bonaparte knew how to reap the utmost advantage from it, and to exhibit it in its true light as mortal at the same time to the Moderates and to the republican Government itself, which now ceased to be legal and became once more revolutionary, and as favourable only to the military power and to the rising imperialism. He congratulated the armies on the fall of 'the enemies of the soldier and especially of the army of Italy," but accorded only the faintest approval to thie Directory.

The death of Hoche, occurring soon after, removed from Bonaparte's path his only rival in the affections of the already omnipotent soldiery. Hoche alone among the generals beside Bonaparte had shown political talents ;

had he lived longer, he might have played with success the part in which Moreau afterwards failed.

The revolution of Fructidor, being military, had an immediate effect on foreign affairs. It commences the period which was to last till the fall of Napoleon, a period of war pursued by France for its own sake, and as a kind of national business. As negotiations with England are at once violently

broken off, so a change comes over the negotiations with Austria. With the fall of the peace party Austria loses all hope of favourable terms. Bonaparte is now residing at Passeriano in a villa belonging to Doge Manin, and the negotiations take place at Udine in the neighbourhood. As at Leoben, Bonaparte 1s more pacific than the Directory. They are prepared to recommence the war; his ambition is to win from the other generals the distinction of terminating it. The struggle between them concerns the fate of Venice, the complete possession of which is a bribe sufficient to induce Austria to recede entirely from the preliminaries of Leoben, but which the Directory is unwilling to cede. Betwcen the beginning of September and the middle of October this

Treaty of struggle continued ; at length, on October 17th, the treaty

Campo Formio,

Returns to Paris.

was signed at the little village of Campo Formio (more correctly Campo Formido) close to Udine. Bonaparte took his own course, gave Venice, Istria, Dalmatia, and all Venetian territory beyond the Adige to Austria, founded the Cisalpine Republic, and reserved for France, besides Belgium, Corfu and the Ionian Islands. A congress was to open at Rastatt, and Austria bound herself by a secret article to do her best to procure for France from the Germanic body the left bank of the Rhine. By retaining the Ionian Islands Bonaparte gave the first intimation of his design of opening the Eastern question.

He uow left Italy, setting out from Milan on November 17th, made a flying visit to Rastatt, where the congress had already assembled, and reached Paris on December 5th. What next would be attempted by the man who at twenty-seven had conquered Italy and brought to an end the most memorable Continental war of modern times ? From a speech delivered by him on the occasion of his reception by the Directory it appears that he had two thoughts in his mind,—to make a revolution in France (“when the happiness of the French people shall be based on the best [or on better] organic laws, all Europe will be free”) and to emancipate Greece (“the two most beautiful parts of Europe, once so illustrious for arts, sciences, and the

great men of whom they were the cradle, see with the loftiest hopes the genius of liberty issue from the tombs of their ancestors”). He had now some months in which to arrange the execution of these plans. The Directory, seeing no safety but in giving him employment, now committed the war with England to his charge. He becomes “général en-chef de l’armée d’Angleterre.” His study of internal politics soon landed him in perplexity. Should he become a Director, procuring an exemption from the rule which required the Directors to: be more than forty years of age? He could decide on nothing, but felt himself unprepared to mingle in French party strife. He decided therefore that “the pear was not ripe,” and turned again to the military schemes which might raise his renown still higher during the year or two which the Directory would require to ruin itself. It seemed possible to com- bine war against England with the Oriental plan which had been suggested to him, it is said, by Monge at Passeriano. During the last war between Russia and Turkey some publi- cists (including Volney, an acquaintance of Bonaparte’s) had recommended France to abandon her ancient alliance with Turkey and seek rather to share with Russia in her spoils. Thus was suggested to Bonaparte in Italy the thought of seizing Greece. Now as head of the army of

England he fixed his eyes on Egypt also. In India the tgyp. |

game was not yet quite lost for France, but England had tian To save therefore °*Peti- what remained of her establishmentsin India, France must 7°”

now seized the Cape of Good Hope.

seize Egypt. She must not only conquer but colonize it (“if forty or fifty thousand European families fixed their industries, their laws, and their administration in Egypt, India would be presently lost to the English much more even by the force of events than by that of arms”). Such was the scheme, according to which Turkey was to be partitioned in the course of a war with England, as Venice had disappeared in the course of a war with Austria.

That such a scheme could scarcely fail to kindle a new European war more universal than that which Bonaparte had just brought to a close was probably its principal recom- mendation in hiseyes. He also instinctively saw that, while he conquered in the Hast, France, deprived of her best troops and generals, would suffer disasters at home, though he could not anticipate what actually happened—that she would be unfortunate both at home and in the East. But the European war showed signs of recommencing even before he could set sail. For the tide of militarism in France could not be arrested for a moment; scarcely a month passed but was marked by some new aggression and annexation. In the spring of 1798 the old constitution of Switzerland was overthrown, French troops entered Bern and seized a treasure of 40,000,000 francs; at the same time a quarrel was picked with the Papal Government ; it was overthrown, the treasury plundered, and the aged pope, Pius VI., carried into captivity. Thus, as Berthier said, money was furnished for the Egyptian campaign ; but on the other hand Europe was thoroughly roused ; England could meet the threatened attack by forming a new Coalition, and at the beginning of May, three weeks before Bonaparte set sail, the probability of a new Continental war was already so great that he writes, for the benefit of General Brune, a plan for defending Italy against an attack by a superior force of Austrians. It is asserted by Miot that at the last moment Bonaparte would gladly have abandoned his Eastern expedition, since it would have suited him as well to take the command again against Austria, but that the Directory, to be rid of him at all hazards, forced him to depart.

In any case the departure of Bonaparte for the Hast with 30,000 men and Generals Murat, Berthier, Desaix, Kléber, Lannes, and Marmont—Nelson in front of him and a European war behind—perhaps marks the moment of wildest confusion in the modern history of Europe. From his letters written on board “ L’Orient ” it would seem that he scarcely realized the terrible risk he ran; it is to be considered that the superiority of the English marine had not yet been clearly proved, and that the name of Nelson was not yet redoubtable. He set sail on May 19, having stimulated the zeal of his soldiers by promising that each should return rich enough to buy six “arpents” of land (the Directory were obliged to deny the genuineness of the proclamation), and, eluding Nelson, who had been driven by a storm to the island of St Pietro near Sardinia, arrived on June 9 at Malta, where a

squadron from Civita Vecchia and another from Ajaccio had preceded him. This island was in the possession of the Knights of St John of Jerusalem, who acknowledged the king of Naples as their feudal superior and the czar as their protector. To attack them was the direct way to involve France in war both with Naples and Russia. Bonaparte, demanding admission into the harbour for his fleet, and receiving answer that the treaties which guaranteed the neutrality of Malta permitted only the admission of four ships, attacked at once, as indeed he had been expressly com-

ERT TT ERE

ae

ivasion ~ Syria,

789. |

manded by the Directory to do (Nap. Corr., iv. 53). The people rose against the knights; the grand master Hompesch opened negotiations, and on the 12th Bonaparte entered La Valette. He is enthusiastic about the strength and importance of the position thus won. “It is the strongest place in Europe; those who would dislodge us must pay dear.” He spent some days in organizing a new Government for the island, and set sail again on the 19th. On July 2 he issues his first order in Alexandria.

During the passage we find him prosecuting his earlier scheme of the emancipation of Greece. Thus from Malta he sends Lavalette with a letter to Ali Pasha of Janina. His plan therefore seems to embrace Greece and Egypt at once, and thus to take for granted the command of the sea, almost as if no English fleet existed. The miscalcula- tion was soon made manifest. Bonaparte himself, after

occupying Alexandria, set out again on the 8th and

marched on Cairo; he defeated the Mamelukes first at Chebreiss and then at Embabeh within sight of the Pyramids, where the enemy lost 2000 and the French about 20 or 30 killed and 120 wounded. He is in Cairo on the 24th, where for the most part he remains till January of 1799. But a week after his

arrival in Cairo the fleet which had brought him from France, with its admiral Brueys, was destroyed by Nelson in Aboukir Bay. For the first time, in reporting this event to the Directory, it seems to flash on Bonaparte's mind that the English are masters of the sea. The grand design is ruined by this single stroke. France is left at war with almost all Europe, and with Turkey also (for Bonaparte's hope of deceiving the sultan by representing himself as asserting his cause against the Mamelukes was frustrated), and her best generals with a fine army are imprisoned in another continent.

It might still be possible to create a revolution in Turkey in Asia, if not in Turkey in Europe. The Turks were pre- paring an army in Syria, and in February 1799 Bonaparte anticipated their attack by invading Syria with about 12,000 men. He took El Arish on the 20th, then Gaza, and arrived at Jaffa on March 3. It was taken by assault, and a massacre commenced which, unfortunately for Bonaparte's reputation, was stopped by some officers. The consequence was that upwards of 2000 prisoners were taken. Bonaparte, unwilling either to spare food for them or to let them go, ordered the adjutant-general to take them to the sea-shore and there shoot them, taking precautions to prevent any from escaping. This was done. ' Now," writes Bonaparte, "there remains St Jean D'Acre." This fortress was the seat of the pasha, Jezzar. It is on the sea-shore, and accord- ingly England could intervene. Admiral Sir Sidney Smith, commanding a squadron on the coast, opened fire on the French as they approached the shore, and was surprised to find his fire answered only by musketry. In a moment he divined that the siege artillery was to come from Alexandria by sea, and very speedily he discovered the ships that carried it and took possession of them. On March 19 Bonaparte is before Acre, but the place receives supplies from the sea, and support from the English ships, while his artillery is lost. He is detained there for two whole months, and retires at last without success. This check, he said, changed the destiny of the world, for he calculated that the fall of Jezzar would have been followed by the adhesion of all the subject tribes, Druses and Christians, which would have given him an army ready for the con- quest of Asia.

The failure had been partially redeemed by a victory Won in April over an army which had marched from the mterior to the relief of Acre under

Abdallah Pasha, and which Bonaparte defeated on the plain of Esdraelon (the battle is usually named from Mount Tabor). In the muddle of May the retreat began, a counterpart on a small

scale of the retreat from Moscow, heat and pestilence taking the place of frost and the Cossacks. On the 24th he is again at Jaffa, from which he writes his report to the Directory explaining that he had deliberately abstained from entering Acre because of the plague which, as he heard, was ravaging the city. On June 14 his letters are again dated from Cairo. Hissecond stay in Egypt lasts two months, which were spent partly in hunting the dethroned chief of the Mamelukes, Murad Bey, partly in meeting a new Turkish army, which arrived in July in the Bay of Aboukir. He inflicted on it an annihilating defeat near its landing-place ; according to his own account ten or twelve thousand persons were drowned. This victory masked the final failure of the expedition. It was a failure such as would have ruined Bonaparte in a state enjoying publicity, where the responsibility could have been brought home to him and the facts could have been discussed. For a year of warfare, for the loss of the fleet, of 6000 soldiers, and of several distinguished officers (Brueys, Caffarelli, Cretin), for disastrous defeats suffered in Europe, which might have been averted by Bonaparte and his army, for the loss for an indefinite time of the army itself, which could only return to France by permission of the English, there was nothing to show. No progress was made in con- ciliating the people. Bonaparte had arrived with an inten- tion of appealing to the religious instinct of the Semitic races. He had imagined apparently that the rebellion of France against the Catholic religion might be presented to the Moslems as a victory of their faith. He had declared himself a Mussulman commissioned by the Most High to humble the cross. He had hoped at the same time to conciliate the sultan ; it had been arranged that Talleyrand should go to Constantinople for the purpose. But Talleyrand remained at Paris, the sultan was not con- ciliated, the people were not deluded by Bonaparte’s reli- gious appeals. Rebellion after rebellion had broken out,

and had been repressed with savage cruelty. It was time for him to extricate himself from so miserable a business.

It appears from the correspondence that he had promised to be back in France as early as October 1798, a fact which shows how completely all his calculations had been dis- appointed. Sir Sidney Smith now contrived that he should receive a packet of journals, by which he was informed of all that had passed recently in Europe and of the disasters that France had suffered. His resolution was immediately taken. On August 22 he wrote to Kléber announcing that he transferred to him the command of the expedition, and that he himself would return to Europe, taking with him Berthier, Lannes, Murat, Andréossi, Marmont, Monge, and Berthollet, and giving orders that Junot should follow in October and Desaix in November. After carefully spreading false accounts of his intentions, he set sail with two frigates in the night of the same day. He arrived after a voyage of more than six weeks, during which he revisited Corsica, in the harbour of Fréjus on October 9.

From this moment the tide of his fortune began to flow again. His reappearance seemed providential, and was hailed with delight throughout France. The system established in Fructidor was essentially military. It had led directly to the violent aggressions of 1798, and to a great law of military service introduced by General Jourdan, which was the basis of the Napoleonic armies; it had created a new European war. But it was evidently inconsistent with the form of government established in 1795. A Directory of civilians were not qualified to conduct a policy so systematically warlike. Hence the war of 1799 had been palpably mismanaged. The armies and the generals were there, but the presiding strategist

Return

to

France.

Revolu- tion of Bru- maire.

and statesman was wanting. In Italy conquest had been pushed too far. Half the troops were locked up in for- tresses or occupied in suppressing rebellions; hence Macdonald at the Trebbia and Joubert at Novi were defeated by Suwaroff, Mantua fell, and the work of Bonaparte in Italy was well-nigh undone. Government was shaken by these disasters. A kind of revolution took place in June. Four new members entered the Directory, of whom three—Gohier, Roger-Ducos, and General Moulin —represented on the whole the revival of the J acobinism of 1793, while the fourth, Sieyés, the most important politician of this crisis, represented the desire for some new con- stitutional experiment. The remedy which first suggested itself was to return to the warlike fury and terrorism of 1793. The Jacobin Club revived and held its sittings in the Salle du Manége. Many leading generals, especially Jourdan and Bernadotte, favoured it. But 1793 was not to be revived. Its passions had gone to sleep, and the memory of it was a nightmare. Nevertheless a sort of Terror began. The hardship of recruitment caused rebel- lions, particularly in the west. Chouannerie and Royalism revived, and the odious Law of Hostages was passed to meet them. After seven years of misery France in the autumn of 1799 was perhaps more miserable than ever.

Tf 1793 could not be revived, what alternative? Sieyés perceived that what was needed was a supreme general to direct the war. But, though he had ceased to believe in popular institutions, and had become a convert to a new kind of aristocracy, he did not wish his supreme general to control civil affairs. He looked for an officer who should be intelligent without being too ambitious. His choice fell upon Joubert, who was nominated commander of the army of Italy that he might acquire the necessary renown. But Joubert was killed at Novi in August. From this time Sieyés had remained uncertain. Advances were made in vain to Moreau. Who can say what might have happened in a few months? Some general of abilities not very commanding would have risen to a position in which he would have controlled the fate of France. Perhaps Masséna, whose reputation at this moment reached its highest point through the victories of Zurich, but who was not made either for an emperor or for a statesman, might have come forward to play the part of Monk.

Upon this perplexing gloom the reappearance of Bonaparte came like a tropical sunrise, too dazzling for Sieyés himself, who wanted a general, but a general he could control. On October 16 he arrived at his old Parisian house in the Rue de la Victoire, and on the 9th and 10th of November (Brumaire 18, 19) the revolution took place. Bonaparte had some difficulty at first in under- standing the position. He found a Jacobin party clamour- ing for strong measures and for a vigorous prosecution of the war ; at the head of this party he saw military men, par- ticularly Jourdan and Bernadotte. Asan old Robespierrist, a Fructidorian, and a soldier, he was at first attracted to this faction. Sieyés, the object of their most bitter attacks, he was at first disposed to regard as his principal enemy. Gradually he came to perceive that this time he was to rise not as a Jacobin but as the soldier of anti- Jacobinism, and that he must place his sword at the service of Sieyés. For his part Sieyés could not but perceive that Bonaparte was not precisely the war minister he sought, But by the efforts of Lucien and Joseph Bona- parte, of Roederer, and Talleyrand a coalition was at last effected between them, though Sieyés continued to predict that after the success Bonaparte would throw him off. The movement which now took place was the most respect- able, the most hopeful, as for a long time it seemed the most successful, effort that had been made since 1792 to lift France out of the slough. ‘Instead of reviving

Jaro. non

[1799-

Jacobinism it was resolved to organize a strong and skilled Government. A grand party of respectability rallied round Sieyés to put down Jacobinism. Ducos among the Direc- tors (he had been converted), the majority of the Council of Ancients, Moreau and Macdonald, the generals of purest reputation, Bonaparte and the generals personally attached to him, composed this party. On the other side the Jacobinical party consisted of the Directors Gohier and Moulin, the majority of the Council of Five Hundred, Gene- rals Jourdan and Bernadotte. Which party would be fol- lowed by the rank and file of the army was an anxious question.

It was determined to take advantage of a provision of the constitution which had been originally inserted by the Girondists as a safeguard against

aggressions from the municipality of Paris, and to cause the Council of Ancients to decree a meeting of the Councils outside Paris at the palace of St Cloud. At this meeting it was intended to propose a reform of the constitution. The proposal would be supported by a majority in the Council of Ancients, and by many, but probably not a majority, in the Council of Five Hundred. It was foreseen that the Jacobins might give trouble, and might need to be eliminated, as they had themselves eliminated the Girondins. With a view to this, when the decree was passed on November 9th, General Bonaparte, made commander of all the troops in Paris, was entrusted with the execution of it. It is carefully to be observed that he does not, like Cromwell, act of his own free will against the assembly, but is appointed by the assembly to act in its name. No one thought of destroying the republic ; the question was of introducing the famous perfect constitution of Sieyes. Bonaparte appeared, surrounded by the generals of his party, in the Council of Ancients, where he skilfully evaded taking the oath to the constitution. He then reviewed the troops, and it became apparent that he could count on them. From this moment Brumaire may be said to have been decided. The next step was that Sieyés and Ducos resigned their places on the Directory; Barras was in- duced to follow their example; but Gohier and Moulin were firm. Gohier was placed under ward of Moreau at the Luxembourg, while Moulin made his escape. It now only remained to deal with the Council of Five Hundred, the stronghold of Jacobinism.

The revolution was consummated on the next day at St Cloud. Bonaparte and Sieyés sat in a private room while the Councils began their deliberations; but, being informed that it was proposed to renew the oath to the existing constitution, Bonaparte determined to interfere. There seems to have been mismanagement here. Sieyés, not Bonaparte, should have interfered, but probably he was rendered helpless, as often happened to him, by timidity. Bonaparte then entered the Council of Ancients, where he delivered a confused harangue which did him little good, though the assembly was well-disposed to him. His position was a false one, though he urged very justly that the existing constitution had been practically destroyed by the illegalities of Fructidor, Floréal, and Prairial. He then passed to the hostile Council of Five Hundred, where he was received with

cries of Hors la lot / A bas le dictateur! He was seized by the collar and attempts were made to push him out of the hall.

He was now almost in despair, and no wonder! By the backwardness of Sieyés he had been pushed into the part of Cromwell. But Cromwell had soldiers devoted to him, and of theocratic rather than republican ideas ; the soldiers of Bonaparte had only just been put under his command, and they were fanatical republicans. The false step must be retrieved. The soldiers must be persuaded that Bonaparte was no Cromwell, but a staunch republican,

1800.]

and that they were not called upon to act against an assembly, but only against a traitorous minority, as at Fructidor. Lucien Bonaparte, who was president of the Five Hundred, performed this miracle. Bonaparte had sent grenadiers to rescue him. Lucien was at the tribune, where le was defending his brother amidst noisy interrup- tion. At the appearance of the grenadiers he threw off his official dress and retired under their escort. In the hall he mounted on horseback and addressed the troops who were employed to guard the legislature, declaring that the council was oppressed by assassins, brigands paid by England ; he charged the soldiers to deliver the majority from this oppression by clearing the hall. He brandished a sword and swore to stab his brother if ever he attacked the liberties of Frenchmen. On the clear understanding that no violence against the assembly was intended, and with the express sanction of its president, the soldiers then cleared the hall. In the evening at 9 o’clock Lucien reassembled a certain number of the members and proposed to them to nominate a committee which should report on the state of affairs. This committee was at once named, and speedily presented a report to the effect that Sieyés, Roger-Ducos, and Bonaparte should compose a provisional executive under the title of consuls, that the legislature should adjourn till February 20 (1 Ventose), a committee of twenty-five members from each Council being left to deliberate along with the consuls upon the changes to be made in the constitution; at the same time, as in Fructidor, a certain number of members (fifty-five) were to be expelled from the Councils.

Thus the original plan was on the whole carried into effect. But it had been sadly marred by the unseemly

Grand Elector, whose main function consisted in choosing two consuls, of whom one was to take the home and the other the foreign department. Here again Bonaparte ac- quiesced as far as he could. He adopted the consuls and the triple executive, even lowering apparently the grand elector of Sieyés by giving him the more republican title of First Consul. But he displayed signally and for the first time the adroitness, rapid and audacious, which was to be the characteristic of his diplomacy. He declaimed violently against the feebleness of the grand elector and the consuls in this scheme, feigning to overlook that it concentrated power intentionally in the Senate; then instead of sending back the scheme for revision he simply strengthened immensely the attributions of the first consul, leaving the other consuls and the assemblies as weak as before. By this stroke a strong aristocracy was turned into a strong despotism, and at the same time advantage was taken of the very peculiar character of Sieyés, who always when he met with opposition sank into an im- penetrable silence. Bonaparte boasted afterwards that he had sealed his victory over Sieyés by a handsome bribe at the expense of the public.

The provisional consulate of Sieyés, Ducos, and Bona- parte lasted only from November 10th to December 13th. Then through the promulgation of the new constitution it made way for the definitive consulate of Bonaparte, Cambacérés, and Lebrun, which lasted four years. By the constitution of 22 Frimaire, year VIII. (which was never debated in any assembly, but, after being devised by the two legislative committees meeting at the Luxem- bourg under the presidency of Bonaparte, and in the presence of the other consuls, and after being redacted by

Daunou, was introduced by a popular vote), Bonaparte Bona- became First Consul for ten years with a salary of half a parte million francs, with a sole power of nominating the council becomes

nae First of state, the ministers, ambassadors, officers of army and eee

appearance of Bonaparte and by his gasconades, in which he bade the Council remember that he “marched under the escort of the god of fortune and the god of war.” An

attempt was made to conceal these mistakes by publishing onsul,

in the JMoniteur a garbled report of his speech.

Brumaire taken by itself is the victory of Sieyés rather than of Bonaparte. It raised Sieyés to the position he had so long coveted of legislator for France. The con- stitution now introduced was really in great part his work, but his work so signally altered in one point that it resulted in the absolute supremacy of Bonaparte. We should especially notice that it is Sieyés, not Bonaparte, who practically suppresses representative institutions. The long-expected scheme of Sieyés was at last promulgated, and we see with astonishment that the man of 1789, the author of Quest ce que le Tiers Etat? himself condemns political liberty. In this scheme the assemblies, of which there are three, the Senate, the Tribunate, and the Corps Législatif, are not chosen by popular election at all. The two latter are nominated by the Senate, and the Senate is chosen at the outset in part by the provisional consuls and in part by co-optation. The Tribunate alone had the right of public debate, which was separated from the right of voting. This latter was assigned to the Corps Législatif. These arrangements, which caused the nullity of parlia- mentary institutions in the Napoleonic period, were devised not by Bonaparte but by Sieyés, who confined popular elec- fon to certain lists of notability out of which the assemblies were required to be chosen. By this scheme Sieyés, who Tetained all his hatred for the old régime and the old noblesse, passed sentence upon the whole constructive work of the Revolution; this sentence was only ratified by Bonaparte.

_But, while he absolutely condemned democracy, Sieyés did not want to set up despotism. The Senate was to be Supreme ; it was to be a kind of hereditary aristocracy, the depositary of the tradition of the Revolution ; above it, and capable of being deposed by it, was to be a doge called

fleet, and most of the judges and local officials, and with a power in nominal conjunction with the other consuls of initiating all legislation and deciding war and _ peace. Sieyés and Ducos retired, and under the new constitution the second and third consuls were Cambacérés, an eminent legist, and Lebrun, an old official of Louis XV.'s time. The party of Brumaire had intended to set up a republic, but this constitution created a strong monarchy under the thinnest disguise.

For the moment it was much that France renounced Jacobinism and ceased to tear herself to pieces. The civil war of the west and the foreign war were alike energetic- ally taken in hand. A proclamation to the imhabitants of the west (December 28th) breathed for the first time the spirit of tolerance, of respect for religion, and con- sideration for the clergy. It was a precursor of the Concordat, and attacked the civil war at its root. It was accompanied by the most imperious threats against the refractory, who are to be treated "like the Arabs of the desert," who are warned that they have to do with a man "accustomed to rigorous and energetic measures,"—an allusion apparently to the massacres of Jaffa and Cairo. This policy, accompanied by decisive military action, was speedily successful. By the end of February all was quiet in the west; Frotté, the most active leader in Normandy, had surrendered at discretion, and had been shot, though Bonaparte had expressly announced that if he surrendered he might count on the generosity of the Government. In preaching a religious peace at home Bonaparte was sincere; he was less so In announcing a policy of peace in Europe, for he well. knew that he needed a victory to cover his apostasy from republicanism. Nevertheless the announcement was necessary as part of the national renunciation of Jacobinism; and it was

His jealousy of Moreau.

harmless, for the Coalition was scarcely likely to accept peace when they had the military advantage. Indeed they could not consistently do so, since they had gone to war on the ground that peace with the Directory had appeared in 1798 to be less endurable than war, and the accession of Bonaparte could not but seem to them likely to make matters worse. In thinking thus they were substantially right, as the sequel proved, but they

did not sufficiently understand that Bonaparte was not now the “champion of Jacobinism,” as Pitt called him, but had become its enemy and destroyer. When England and Austria refused his overtures, Bonaparte had the good fortune of getting precisely what he wanted, viz., war, in precisely the way he wished, that is, as apparently forced upon him. This war is peculiar in the circumstance that throughout its course Bonaparte has a military rival with whom he is afraid to break, and who keeps pace with him in achievements —Moreau. To Moreau the success of Brumaire had been mainly due, and he had perhaps thought that the new constitution, as it did not seem to contemplate the First Consul commanding an army, had removed Bonaparte from the path of his ambition. He now held the command of the principal army, that of the Rhine, in which post Bonaparte could not venture to supersede him. The problem for Bonaparte throughout the war was to prevent Moreau, and in a less degree Masséna, who was now in command of the army of Italy, from eclipsing his own military reputation. Russia had now retired from the Coalition, so that, as in 1796, Austria and England were the only belligerents. Italy had been almost entirely lost, and Masséna, at the head of the army of Italy, opposed to General Melas, was almost where Bonaparte had been before his Italian campaign began. But France had retained the control of Switzerland, and Moreau with more ‘than 100,000 men arranged along the Rhine from the Lake of Constance to Alsace stood opposed to Kray, whose headquarters were at Donaueschingen. It seemed that the campaign would be conducted by Moreau and Masséna receiving instructions from Bonaparte at Paris. That the decisive campaign would have been in Bavaria seems so evident that the military writer Biilow conjectures that the French were afraid of alarming Europe by a too decisive victory, which would have brought them at once to the walls of Vienna, and that they therefore transferred the campaign to Italy. But where would Bonaparte have been had Moreau won Hohenlinden in the spring of 1800 while he remained ingloriously at Paris? While therefore in writing to Moreau he carefully adopts the language of one who, much to his own regret, has become a mere civilian, he plans the campaign so that both Moreau and Masséna are confined to the task of holding the enemy in play while an army of reserve descends from one of the Alpine passes into Italy. This army of reserve, which was so carefully concealed that few people believed in its existence, is to be commanded, he writes, by some general “to be named by the consuls” ; a little later Berthier

is nominated. As late as the end of March he told Miot that he did not mean to leave Paris. Moreau is also to detach 25,000 men under Lecourbe, who are to join Berthier in Ttaly ; in this way security was taken that Moreau should not be too successful. On April 24 the campaign in Germany began by the passage of the Rhine at a number of points at once. Up to May 10 Moreau is the hero of the war. He is victorious at Engen, at Mosskirchen, and forces Kray to retire to Ulm. But on May 9 Bonaparte is at Geneva, and it appears at once that he is commander, and Berthier only his chief of the staff. At the same time Carnot in person is sent with unusual formality to demand from Moreau the detachment of troops.

RPAPOhEH @ N

[1800-

The campaign of Marengo was astonishingly short.

before the end of June. Masséna had been struggling vainly against the superior forces of Melas; since the 21st he had been shut up in Genoa, where Austria and England could co-operate in the siege. In Italy the affairs of France looked darker than ever, when Bonaparte threw himself on the rear of Melas by passing the Great St Bernard between May 15 and 20. Other divisions passed the Little St Bernard and the Mont Cenis, while the detachment from Moreau's army (under Moncey, not Lecourbe) descended the St Gotthard. It seems that the Austrians had absolutely refused to believe, what nevertheless was openly discussed in the Paris journals, that Bonaparte intended to cross the Alps. Bonaparte had another surprise in store for them. Though Genoa was now suffering all the horrors of famine, he made no attempt to relieve it, but turned to the left, entered Milan, and took possession of the whole line of the Ticino and the Po. Meanwhile Genoa capitulated to General Ott. Melas was now at Alessandria, where Bonaparte sought him on the 13th. On the 14th Melas marched out, crossed the Bormida, and arrived at Marengo. The victory here won by Bonaparte, though in its consequences more decisive than any other, and marking in a certain sense the culmina- tion of his career, yet was due almost entirely to accident. A sudden charge of cavalry by Kellermann changed a great Austrian victory into a decisive Austrian defeat. On the next day Melas (having, as it seems, quite lost his head) signed a convention by which

Austria sacrificed almost all North Italy, restoring something like the position of Campo Formio. “Had he fought another battle,” says Marmont, “he would certainly have beaten us.” Bonaparte returns to Paris, victorious at once over Austria and over Moreau and Masséna. He did not, however, succeed in tearing from Moreau the honour of concluding the war. Marengo did not lead to peace; this was won, where naturally it could only be won, in Bavaria by Moreau’s victory of Hohenlinden (December 3d), a victory perhaps greater than any of which at that time Bonaparte could boast.

Never was Bonaparte more recklessly audacious, never was he more completely and undeservedly successful, than in this campaign. Brumaire had given him a very uncer- tain position. Sieyés and the republicans were on the watch for him on the one side; Moreau seemed on the point of eclipsing him on the other. His family felt their critical position: “had he fallen at Marengo,” writes Lucien, “we should have been all proscribed.” Perhaps nothing but a stroke so rapid and startling as that of Marengo could have saved him from these difficulties. But this did more, and developed the empire out of the consulate.

His appeal for peace after Brumaire had not been purely insincere, though he wanted victory before peace. He proposes to Rouget de l’Isle to write “a battle hymn which shall express the idea that with great nations peace comes after victory.” After Marengo he devotes himself to giving peace to the world; he did this by three great acts, so that in 1802 for the first time for ten years under the new Augustus “no war or battle sound was heard the world around.” These three acts are the treaty of Lunéville, February 1801, the Concordat, July 1801, the treaty of Amiens, March 1802. It is worth noticing that the negotiator of all of them is his brother J oseph, as if he especially desired to connect his family name with the pacification of the world.

1. The treaty of Lunéville gave peace. to the Continent. Treaty

It is to be observed that here Bonaparte shows himself at least less rapacious than the Directory. He surrenders

On Cam- May 11 Bonaparte left Geneva, and he is in Paris again Paign of Since the beginning of Apri] Marengo.

|

1802.] most of the usurpations of 1798,

after all it might not be possible to find a modus vivende

with the Government of Brumaire.

2. By the Concordat he professed to close the religious

ordat. yar. In reality he crushed the national Gallican Church,

which had been created by the Constitution Civile, and which had perhaps begun to take root, and restored the Papal Church, shorn of its endowments and dependent, so As part of the great pacifica- tion, the Concordat was perhaps mainly a stroke of stage- effect, though its influence upon the later history of France For Bonaparte himself it was important as severing the clerical party from the Bourbons and attaching it to himself, as giving him through the clergy an influence over the peasantry, upon whom he depended for his armies, also as in some degree welding together through the ubiquitous influence of the clergy the different

long as he lived, on the state.

has been great.

states which were already subject to his government. In

negotiating it with Cardinal Consalvi, Bonaparte had recourse more than once to the vulgar fraud and knavery

which earned for him the title of Jupiter-Scapin.

Treaty of 3. After the treaty of Lunéville, as after that of Campo

Amiens. Vormio, England was left to fight France alone; but Bonaparte had now a higher estimate than in 1798 of

England’s naval power. He was able, however, in 1801 to attack her in another way. By her conduct at Malta she had given offence to the czar Paul, and taking advant- age of this Bonaparte was able to revive against her the armed neutrality of 1780. Not only Russia but Prussia was thus brought for the first time, along with Sweden and Denmark, into the French alliance, and the system of Tilsit was for the first time sketched out. But it lasted only for a moment. At the beginning of April the announcement of the murder of Paul and the bombard- ment of Copenhagen by Nelson dissolved it. England and France were now alike disposed for peace, the former because she had lost the support of a European Coalition, the latter because she had lost all means of attack, and also because of Bonaparte’s grand plan of pacification. In the summer Bonaparte’s endeavours are confined to saving the French colony in Egypt from the English, and to snatching a little territory from England’s ally Portugal by means of Spain. But Cairo capitulated to the English in June, in which month also Spain made peace with Portugal. Accordingly in October the preliminaries of London were signed, and the treaty of Amiens followed in March. The allies of France paid for her naval defeats, Spain losing Trinidad and Holland Ceylon; but France, though she lost nothing, acquiesced by this treaty in the total failure of all her designs upon the East. _ The globe was now at peace, and thanked Bonaparte for it. The equilibrium which had been destroyed by the Revolution seemed at length to be restored. Meanwhile the legislative reconstruction of France proceeded rapidly. This is the glorious period of Bonaparte’s life, not, as has often been alleged, because he was as yet uncorrupted by power, but simply because a strong intelligent Government was the great need of France and repose the great need of Europe, and Bonaparte at this time satisfied both needs. oui The work of reconstruction which distinguishes the of French CouSUlate, though it was continued under the empire, is institu most enduring of all the achievements of Napoleon. tions, The Institutions of modern France date, not, as is often said, from the Revolution, but from the consulate. Not that Napoleon personally was endowed with a supreme legislative genius; his principal merit was to have given to France the first secure Government, the first Govern-

Recon-

the Roman and Parthenopean Republics, and returns in the main to the arrangements of Campo Formio,—a proof of moderation which must have led the cabinets to consider whether ‘he Con- i

ment capable of effective legislation, that she had had since the destruction of her ancient institutions. The task of reconstruction fell to him of necessity; his personal interference was in many respects, as we shall see, mis- chievous rather than beneficial; it is, however, also true that he appreciated the greatness of the work, urged it on with vigour, entered into it, impressed it with the stamp of his own personality, and left upon it the traces of his keen sagacity.

The institutions now created, and which form the organi- zation of modern France, are—(1) the restored Church, resting on the Concordat; (2) the University, resting on the law of 11 Floréal, An X. (May 1, 1802); (3) the judicial system, commenced by the law of 27 Ventose, An VIII. (March 18, 1800), and completed by other laws in 1810 ; (4) the Codes:—(a) Code Civil (commission nominated 24 Thermidor, An VIII., August 12, 1800; it received the name Code Napoléon on September 3, 1807), (b) Code de Commerce, promulgated on September 10, 1807, (c) Code Pénal, (d) Code d’Instruction Criminelle (came into force January 1, 1811); (5) the system of local government, resting on the law of 18 Pluviose, An VIII. (February 7, 1800) ; (6) the Bank of France, established 28 Nivose, An VIII. (January 18, 1800); (7) the Legion of Honour, ° established 29 Floréal, An X. (May 19, 1802). These institutions, along with the military system, have in the main continued to the present day after the downfall of all the Napoleonic institutions which were purely political. It is rather the fortune than the merit of Napoleon that no similar mass of legislation can be ascribed to any other sovereign, since no other sovereign has ruled securely over an ancient and civilized country which has been suddenly deprived of all its institutions. It is also a matter of course that much of this legislation has been beneficial, since a tabula rasa relieves the legis- lator of many hindrances. In several points, on the other hand, we can see that France was sacrificed to Napoleon’s personal interest. Thus the Concordat restored the

ancient Papal Church, shorn of its wealth, and receiving from the state a subsidy of about £2,000,000. It was right to restore religion, and the Constitution Civile, which was cancelled by the Concordat, had been an insane act, the principal cause of the miseries of France for ten years. Nevertheless a great opportunity was lost of trying some new experiment, which might have led to a genuine revival of religion; but for this Napoleon cared nothing so long as he could pose as a new Constantine, detach the church from the cause of the Bourbons, and have the pope at his beck. In like manner the freedom of local govern- ment was sacrificed to the exigencies of his despotism. Among the most remarkable of his institutions was the University. The twenty-one universities of old France, including the great mother university of Paris, had fallen victims in 1792 to the insanity of the Legislative Assembly ; nothing of the least efficiency had been established in their place, so that in March 1800 Lucien Bonaparte could write, " since the suppression of the teaching corporations instruc- tion has almost ceased to exist in France." By laws of May 1806 and March 1808 was founded the modern University, that is, the whole teaching profession formed into a corporation and endowed by the state, a kind of church of education. This remarkable institution still exists. It has far too much centralization, and is in no way equal to the old system when that is intelligently worked, as in Germany ; many learned men have severely condemned it ; still it was a great constructive effort, and gave Napoleon the occasion for some striking and original remarks.

From the time of the battle of Marengo the system of Brumaire began to take a development which perhaps

Gradual progress towards mon- archy.

Plot of Nivose.

had not been clearly foreseen. Sieyés had wished to confine Bonaparte to the war department, Moreau _per- haps had wished to keep him at Paris; in either case it had not been intended to create an august monarchy. But the fabulous success of Marengo, joined to the proofs Bonaparte gave of a really superior intelligence and com- manding character, turned the French

mind back into that monarchical groove in which it had so long run before the Revolution. Popular liberty had been already renounced by Sieyés, and the disastrous failure of republican institu- tions, which in four years, from 1795 to 1799, had brought the country to bankruptcy, civil war, and almost barbarism, inclined all public men to agree with him. The choice then could only lie between some form of aristocracy and the revival of monarchy either in the Bourbon family or in another. Napoleon's personal character decided this question. By the Concordat he wrested from the Bourbons the support of the church; by his military glory he seduced the noblesse, as is seen in the case of Ségur ; by the pacification of the world he half reconciled to himself the foreign cabinets. But no sooner did this new form of monarchy begin to appear than Bonaparte began to find himself surrounded by new dangers. He was exposed to the hatred of the republicans, who had hitherto been appeased by the title of consul, and were now thrown into coalition with the defeated Jacobins, and also to the despair of the royalists, who saw themselves disappointed of restoration at the moment of the failure of republicanism. Nearer his person at the same time court-parties began to spring up. His brothers and sisters with Corsican shame- lessness began to claim their share in the spoils. While he doubted what form his monarchy should take, and whether some character greater and more unique than that of a hereditary king could not be invented, they urged the claims of the family. Thus arose a standing feud between the Bonapartes and the Beauharnais, who in the interest of Josephine, already dreading divorce for her childlessness, opposed the principle of heredity.

In grappling with the defeated parties Bonaparte found a great advantage in his position. 'The constitution of Brumaire itself gave him great powers ; popular institutions had been destroyed, not by him, but by the nation itself, which was weary of them 3; under the Directory the public had grown accustomed to the suppression of journals and to periodic coups d@état of the most savage violence, Bonaparte therefore could establish a rigorous despotism under the forms of a consular republic, mutilate the assemblies, and silence public opinion ; he could venture occasionally upon acts of the most sweeping tyranny with- out shocking a people which had so lately seen Fructidor, not to say the Reign of Terror, and had been accustomed to call them liberty. The conspiracies began immediately after the return from Marengo, when the Corsicans Arena and Ceracchi, guilty apparently of

little more than wild talk, were arrested in October 1800 at the Théatre Frangais, But on December 24th of the same year, as he drove with Josephine to the opera, a sudden explosion took place in the Rue Saint-Nicaise, which killed and wounded several people and damaged about fifty houses; the carriage of Bonaparte escaped. He was still in the first fervour of his conversion from Jacobinism, and had not yet become alive to the danger to which he was exposed from royalisin. He could therefore see nothing but Jacobinism in this plot, and proposed to meet the danger by some general measure calculated to eradicate what remained of the Jacobin party. But before this measure could be taken Fouché convinced him that he had been in error, and that he was in the presence of a new enemy, royalism roused into new vigour by the recent change in public opinion. Upon this Bona- parte acted most characteristically. By a singular stretch

of Machiavelism he made use of the mistake into which he had himself led the public to crush the enemy which for the moment he feared most. He arrested and transported one hundred and thirty persons, whom he knew to be innocent of the plot, on the general ground of Jacobinism, substituting for all legal trial a resolution passed by the servile senate to the effect that “ the measure was conservative of the constitution.” This is Nivose, an act as enormous as Fructidor, and with a perfidy of its own.

Making use of victory was almost more Bonaparte’s talent than winning it. These plots, so far from impeding his ascent to monarchy, were converted by him into steps upon which he mounted. They were ‘so many argu- ments for heredity, which, in case Bonaparte should fall a prey to them, would furnish a successor. It had already been argued in the Paralléle entre César, Cromwell, et Bonaparte (October 1800) that heredity only could prevent the nation from falling again under the domina- tion of the assemblies, under the yoke of the § (not Sieyés surely but Soldats) or under that of the Bourbons. He also made the plot of Nivose the occasion of a constitutional innovation, The assemblies devised by Sieyés had hitherto been simply useless, so much idle machinery. But in Nivose the precedent was set of giving the Senate a con- stituent power. To guard the constitution was its

nominal function ; this was now converted into a function of sanctioning alterations in the constitution, since every Innovation became legal when the Senate declared it to be conservative of the constitution. In the hands of Bona: parte such a principle soon became fruitful enough.

The first open step towards monarchy was made at the conclusion of the treaty of Amiens. As pacificator of the globe, it was declared in the tribunate that Bonaparte deserved some mark of public gratitude. Upon this the Senate proposed to re-elect him First Consul for a further term of ten years. Bonaparte, disappointed, declared that he could only owe a prorogation of his magistracy to the people ; to them therefore the question was referred, but in the form, Shall Napoleon Bonaparte be elected consul for life? and in this form it was adopted. Before the final step was taken and the First Consul transformed himself into the Emperor Napoleon, a great and portentous change had

taken place in the spirit of his government. Before the year

1803 there was no fair reason to conclude that Bonaparte was too fond of war. For the two wars of the Revolution he had not been responsible: the first broke out when he was in Corsica, the second when he was in Egypt. But both wars had been brought to an end by him ; he had closed the Temple of Janus, he was the great pacificator. In construc- tive legislation he had shown such zeal that it was easy to imagine him, though a great commander, as one who was capable of feeling the blessedness of the peacemaker. These illusions began to vanish in 1803 at the rupture of the peace of Amiens. This year 1803 is the turning-point in his life, and a great turning-point in French history. It may be considered the first year of modern France. The Revolution is at last over ; the new organization begins to work regularly. The old noblesse is gone, and in place of the old Church there is the humbled Church of the Con- cordat. France is covered with an army of functionaries, servilely dependent on the Government ; astrange silence has settled on the country which under the old régime had been noisy with the debate—if for the most part fruitless debate—of parliaments and estates. The Government is tenfold more imperious than it had been before 1789. And now it: appears that Bonaparte had desired only the glory of having made peace, not peace itself, just as earlier, after making the

peace of Campo Formio, he had taken measures by the Egyptian expedition to embroil Europe

vith

|

f

Rupture again.

1804.]

What he wants is to complete his military success by humbling England. He had failed in 1798, when he

Ingland. pod controlled but a small part of the power of France,

a single army shut np in Egypt, when the French Govern- ment had been feeble and unintelligent, when England had been able to rally a European Coalition to her side. But surely he would succeed now, when the whole power of France, drawing after it Spain, Holland, Switzerland, and North Italy, was in his single hand, and when he could add the fleets of the other maritime powers to that of France; especially as coalitions against France seemed out of date, since Russia and Prussia had been united against England in 1801, and Germany was now suffering internal transformation under the united influence of France and Russia. But after so many years of war could he call on France for another effort? In the first place all the new institutions of France, having grown up in war, were adapted for war rather than for anything else; in the second place he hoped to spare the French all war-taxation by making the expense fall upon the allies.

From this memorable rupture flowed all the terrible events of the Napoleonic age. It is in one respect difficult to understand, because in the eleven years of the war with England Bonaparte was never able to strike a single blow at his enemy, while that enemy destroyed his fleets, con- quered his colonies, and by arming all Europe against him at length brought down his power. Why did Bonaparte engage in a war in which he was condemned

to be so purely passive? It seems that, as in 1798, he totally miscalcu- lated the English maritime power, and that in 1803, though to Lord Whitworth he spoke of the invasion of England as almost impossible, yet in reality he expected to achieve that impossibility, as he had achieved so many others. Thus the angry negotiation witl: Lord Whitworth, the stormy scene at the Tuileries, the violent detention of the English residents in France at the moment of the rupture, are to be regarded as studied contrivances by which he concealed the wantonness of his breach of the European peace and tried to throw the blame of it upon the English. That he was really bent upon forcing a war appears from his allowing S¢bastiani's report of his mission in the East, full of hints of the intention of France to re- occupy Egypt at the first opportunity, to appear in the JMomteur. This report, besides offending England, caused her to keep resolute possession of Malta, and, when Bonaparte appealed to the treaty of Amiens, England replied by pointing to the new annexations of France, which had just divided Piedmont into departments. "Ce sont des bagatelles," Lord Whitworth reports Bona- parte to have answered, but he adds in a parenthesis which

the last disguise and openly restoring monarchy. It was a step which required all his audacity and cunning. He had crushed Jacobinism, but two great parties remained. There was first the more moderate republicanism, which might be called Girondism, and was widely spread among all classes and particularly in the army Secondly, there was the old royalism, which after many years of helpless weakness had revived since Brumaire. These two parties, though hostile to each other, were forced into a sort of alliance by the new attitude of Bonaparte, who was hurry- ing France at once into a new revolution at home and into an abyss of war abroad. England too, after the rupture, favoured the efforts of these parties. Royalism from England began to open communications with moderate republicanism in France. Pichegru acted for the former, and the great representative of the latter was Moreau, who had helped to make Brumaire in the tacit expectation prob- ably of rising to the consulate in due course when Bonaparte's term should have expired, and was therefore hurt in his personal claims as well as in his

republican principles. Bonaparte watched the movement through his ubiquitous police, and with characteristic strategy deter- mined not merely to defeat it but to make it his stepping stone to monarchy. He would ruin Moreau by fastening on him the stigma of royalism ; he would persuade France to make him emperor in order to keep out the Bourbons. He achieved this with the peculiar mastery which he always showed in villainous intrigue. Moreau had in 1797 incurred blame by concealing his knowledge of Pichegru's dealings with the royalists. That he should now meet and hold conversation with Pichegru at a moment when Pichegru was engaged in contriving a royalist rebellion associated his name still more closely with royalism, and Pichegru brought with him wilder partisans such as Georges the Chouan. That Moreau would gladly have seen and gladly have helped an insurrection against Bonaparte is certain; any republican, and what is more any patriot, would at that moment have risked much to save France from the ruin that Bonaparte was bringing on her. But Bonaparte succeeded in associating him with royalist schemes and with schemes of assassination. Controlling the Senate, he was able to suppress the jury; controlling every avenue of publicity, he was able to suppress opinion ; and the army, Moreau's fortress, was won through its hatred of royalism. In this way Bonaparte's last personal rival was removed. There remained the royalists, and Bonaparte hoped to seize their leader, the Comte d'Artois, who was expected, as the police knew, soon to join Pichegru and Georges at Paris. What Bonaparte would have done with him we may judge from the course he took when the

Comte did not come. On March 15, 1804, the Duc Exeeu- d'Enghien, grandson of the Prince de Condé, residing at tion of Ettenheim in Baden, was seized at midnight bya party of oe dragoons, brought to Paris, where he arrived on the 20th, ghien,

has never been printed, "'The expression he made use of was too trivial and vulgar to find a place in a despatch or anywhere but in the mouth of a hackney coachman !"

By this rupture Europe relapsed into the fearful dis-

order from which Brumaire seemed to have rescued it; only in place of revolutionary fanaticism the disturbing cause was now the deliberate

calculating ambition of a great general and crafty politician, who already commanded the resources of a large part of Europe. This same year 1803 saw the first steps taken towards the subjugation of Germany. The annexation to France of the left bank of the Rhine led to a revolution in the Germanic system and to a complete transformation of the Diet, by which Austria lost the greater part of her influence over the minor German states ; this influence passed to France. As soon as the rupture with England took place Bonaparte took up @ position in the heart of Germany by seizing Hanover. All this was done while Bonaparte was still nominally only consul in the French republic. But the rupture with England furnished him with the occasion of throwing off

confined in the castle of Vincennes, brought before a military commission at 2 o'clock the next morning, asked whether he had not borne arms against the republic, which he acknowledged himself to have done, conducted to a staircase above the moat and there shot, and buried in the moat.

This deed was perfectly consistent with Bonaparte's pro- fessed principles, so that no misunderstanding or passing fit of passion is required to explain it. He had made, shortly before, a formal offer to the pretender through the king of Prussia, by which he had undertaken to pay him a handsome pension in return for the formal abdication of his rights. This had been refused, and Bonaparte felt free. That the best course was to strike at the heads of the family was a shrewd conclusion. Neither Louis nor Charles were precisely heroes; and then the whole re-

volutionary party in France would applaud a new tragedy like that of January 1793. (Accordingly Bernadotte and Curée were delighted with it.) That the Duc d'Enghien was innocent of the conspiracy was nothing to the purpose ; the act was political, not judicial ; accordingly he was not even charged with complicity. That the execution would strike horror into the cabinets, and perhaps bring about a new Coalition, belonged to a class of considerations which at this time Bonaparte systematically disregarded.

This affair led immediately to the thought of giving heredity to Bonaparte's power. The thought seems to have commended itself irresistibly even to strong republicans and to those who were most shocked by the murder. To make Bonaparte's position more secure seemed the only way of averting a new Reign of Terror or new convulsions. He himself felt some embarrassment. Like Cromwell, he was afraid of the republicanism of the army, and heredity pure and simple brought him face to face with the question of divorcing Josephine. To propitiate the army he chose from the titles suggested to him—consul, stadtholder, &e.— that of emperor, undoubtedly the most accurate, and having a sufficiently military sound. The other difficulty, after much furious dissension among the two families of Bonaparte and Beauharnais, was evaded by giving Napo- leon himself (but none of his successors) a power of adop- tion, and fixing the succession, in default of a direct heir natural or adoptive, first in Joseph and his descendants, then in Louisand his descendants. Except abstaining from the regal title, no attempt was made to conceal the abolition of republicanism. Bonaparte was to be called Napoleon, and "sire" and "majesté"; grand dignitaries with grand titles were appointed ; and "'citoyen" from this time gave way to '"'monsieur." The change was made by the con- stituent power of the Senate, and the senatus-consulte is dated May 18, 1804.

It required some impudence to condemn Moreau for royalism at the very moment that his rival was re-establish- ing monarchy. Yet his trial began on May 15th. The death of Pichegru, nominally by suicide, on April 6th had already furnished the rising sultanism with its first dark mystery. Moreau was condemned to two years' imprison- ment, but was allowed to retire to the United States.

These changes destroyed all that remained of the political life of France. Jacobinism had been eradicated in Nivose; republicanism and royalism were paralysed now. Hence- forth there was no power or person in France but Bona- parte, and over Europe there hung a danger more terrible than had ever threatened it before. The combined resources of several countries and an unparalleled military force were at the absolute disposal of a general and administrator of commanding ability, who had shown by the manner of his rupture with England that he was bent upon undertaking vast military

enterprises. This danger, which was clearly visible early in 1804, could tiot be averted. His scheme indeed failed. He did not conquer England, nor recover Malta and reoccupy Egypt. His forces were drawn in another direction. But, if England suffered less, Europe suffered far more than could have been feared in 1804. The wars which now begin are not, like those of the French Revolution, wars of principle, for the principles of the Revolution have been recanted and are held by no one in so much contempt as by Bonaparte. Nor are they armed litigations like the old wars of Europe, but unique experiments in which millions of lives are sacrificed to the ambition of an individual.

Throughout 1804 and the first part of 1805 the policy of Bonaparte is such as might be called insane, if he had had the ordinary objects of a ruler; it is explained by the consideration that he wants war, even if it should be war with all the world. He had acted in a similar way in 1798.

NAPOLEON

In thinking that he should profit by war he was not mis- Designs Had he only gone to war with the whole Continent against |

ngland!) mated his strength. But he was not, in the long run, a match a a for England and the Continent together; he made at starting nent,

[1804—

taken. at once, he would not, as the event proved, have overesti-

the irremediable mistake of not dividing these two enemies, He seems indeed to have set out with a monstrous miscal- culation which might have ruined him very speedily, for he had laid his plan for an invasion of England and a war in Europe at the same time. If we imagine the invasion suc- cessfully begun, we see France thrown back into the position of 1799, her best general and army cut off from her by the sea, while Austria, Russia, and perhaps Prussia pour their armies across the Rhine; but we see that the position would have been far worse than in 1799, since France without Bonaparte in 1805 would have been wholly par- alysed. As it was, the signal failure of his English enter- prise left room for a triumphant

campaign in Germany, and Ulm concealed Trafalgar from the view of the Continent. The European Coalition had been disarmed since Brumaire by the belief that Bonaparte's Government was less intolerably aggressive than that of the Directory; this belief gave place in 1803 to a conviction that he was quite as aggressive and much more dangerous. England therefore might hope to revive the Coalition, and in the spring of 1804 she recalled Pitt to the helm in order that he might do this. The violent proceedings of Bonaparte on the occasion of the rupture, his occupation of Hanover, his persecution of the English representatives in Germany, —Spencer Smith at Stuttgart, Drake at Munich, Sir G. Rumbold at Hamburg,—created an alarm in the cabinets greater than that of 1798, and the murder of D'Enghien shocked as much as it alarmed them. Positive conquest and annexation of territory too now went on as rapidly and as openly as in 1798. The new empire compared itself to that of Charlemagne, which extended over Italy and Germany, and on December 2, 1804, a parody of the famous transference of the empire took place in Notre

Dame, the pope (Pius VII.) appearing there to crown Napole|

|

Napoleon, who, however, took the crown from his hands a

and placed it himself upon his own head. Meanwhile the Italian republic was changed into a kingdom, which at first Bonaparte intended to give to his brother Joseph, but in the end accepted for himself. In the first months of 1805, fresh from the sacre in Notre Dame, he visited Italy and received the iron crown of the Lombard kings at Milan. Soon after the Ligurian republic was annexed, and a principality wasfoundfor his brother-in-law Bacciochi in Lucca and Piombino. By these acts he seemed to show himself not only ready but eager to fight with all Europe at once. It was not his fault that in the autumn of 1805, when he fought with Austria and Russia in Germany, he was not also maintaining a desperate struggle in the heart of England; it was not his fault that Prussia was not also at war with him, for his aggressions had driven Prussia almost to despair, and only once—that is, in the matter of Sir G. Rumbold—had he shown the smallest consideration for her. And yet at first fortune did not seem to favour him.

Had public opinion been less enslaved in France, had the frivolity of the nation been less skilfully amused by the operatic exhibitions of the new court and the sacre in Notre Dame, it would have been remarked that, after most needlessly involving France in war with England, Bonaparte had suffered half the year 1803, all the year 1804, and again more than half the year 1805 to pass without strik- ing a single blow, that after the most gigantic and costly preparations the scheme of invasion was given up, and that finally France suffered a crushing defeat at Trafalgar which paralysed her on the side of England for the rest of

the war. In order to understand in any degree the course he took, it seems necessary to suppose that the intoxication of the Marengo campaign still held him, that as then, con- trary to all expectation, he had passed the Alps, crushed his enemy, and instantly returned, so now he made no doubt of passing the Channel, signing peace in London, and return- ing in a month with a fabulous indemnity in his pocket to meet the Coalition in Germany. To conquer England it was worth while to wait two years, but his position was very critical when, after losing two years, he was obliged to confess himself foiled. He retrieved his position suddenly, and achieved a triumph which, though less complete than that which he had counted on, was still prodigious,—the greatest triumph of his life. At the moment when his English scheme was ending in deplorable failure, le pro- duced another, less gigantic but more solid, which he unfolded with a rapid precision and secrecy peculiar to himself. In the five years which had passed since Marengo his position for the purposes of a Continental war had improved vastly. Then he had no footing either in Germany or Italy, and his new office of First Consul gave him a very precarious control over the armies, which themselves were in a poor condition. Now his military authority was absolute, and the armies after five years of imperialism were in perfect organization; he had North Italy to the Adige; he had Hanover; and since the Germanic revolution of 1803 Bavaria, Wiirtemberg, and Baden had passed over to his side. Therefore as the Coalition consisted only of Austria, Russia, and England he might count upon success, and the more confidently

if he could strike Austria before the arrival of the Russian army. It is strange that in this estimate it should be umecessary to take Prussia into the account, since the Prussian army. (consisting of 250,000 men) was at that time supposed to be a match by itself for the French. At the last moment, and in the midst of the Austerlitz campaign, Napoleon might have been brought near to ruin by a sudden resolution on the part of the king of Prussia, and it is to be added that he did not escape this risk by any circumspection of his own. But for ten years Prussia had been rooted in the strangest system of immovable neutrality, and in this war both sides had to put up with the uncer- tainty whether the prodigious weight of the army of Frederick would not be thrown suddenly either into its own or into the opposite scale. It was at the end of August 1805 that Napoleon made his sudden. change of front. At the beginning of that month he had been still intent on the invasion of England; ever since March maritime manceuvres on an unparalleled scale had been carried on with the object of decoying the English fleets away from the Channel, and so giving an opportunity for the army of invasion to cross it in a flotilla under the pro- tection of French fleets. But in spite of all mancervres a great English fleet remained stationary at Brest, and Nelson, having been for a moment decoyed to Barbados, returned again. In the last days of August Admiral Villeneuve, issuing from Ferrol, took alarm at the news of the approach of an English fleet, and instead of sailing northward faced about and retired to Cadiz. Then for the first time Napoleon admitted the idea of failure, and saw the necessity of screening it by some great achievement m another quarter. He resolved to throw his whole force upon the Coalition, and to do it suddenly. Prussia was to be bribed by the very substantial present of Hanover. Five years had passed since Napoleon had taken the field when the second period of his military career began. He now begins to make war as a sovereign with a bound- less command of means. For five years from 1805 to 1809 he takes the field regularly, and in these campaigns he founds the great Napoleonic empire. By the first he

breaks up the Germanic system and attaches the minor German states to France, by the second he humbles Prussia, by the third he forces Russia into an alliance, by the fourth he reduces Spain to submission, by the fifth he

humbles Austria. Then follows a second pause, during which for three years Napoleon’s sword is in the sheath, and he is once more ruler, not soldier.

From the beginning of this second series of wars the principles of the Revolution are entirely forgotten by France, which is now a monarchy and even a propagator of monarchical principles.

Napoleon’s strategy always aims at an overwhelming Cam-

As in 1800, when all eyes were intent on Genoa, Paign against Austria

surprise. and from Genoa the Austrians hoped to penetrate into

France, he created an overwhelming confusion by throwing ana himself across the Alps and marching not upon Genoa but Russia.

upon Milan, so now he appeared not in front of the Austrians but behind them and between them and Vienna. The wavering faith of Bavaria had caused the Austrians to pass the Inn and to advance across the country to Ulm. It was intended that the Russians should join them here, and that the united host should invade France, taking Napoleon, as they fondly hoped, by surprise. So often unfortunate in their choice of generals, they had this time made the most unfortunate choice of all. Mack, who at Naples in 1799 had moved the impatient con- tempt of Nelson, now stood matched against Napoleon at the height of his power. He occupied the line of the Iller from Ulm to Memmingen, expecting the attack of Napoleon, who personally lingered at Strasburg, in front. Meanwhile the French armies swarmed from Hanover and down the Rhine, treating the small German states half as allies half as conquered dependants, and disregarding all neutrality, even that of Prussia, till they took up their positions along the Danube from Donauwérth to Ratisbon far in the rear of Mack. The surprise was so complete that Mack, who in the early days of October used the language of confident hope, on the 19th surrendered at

Ulm with about 26,000 men, while another division, that Capitu-

of Werneck, surrendered on the Nérdlingen, In a month the whole Austrian. army, con- sisting of 80,000 men, was entirely dissolved. Napoleon was

master of Bavaria, recalled the elector to Munich, and received the congratulations of the electors of Wiirtem- berg and Baden (they had just at this time the title of electors). It was the stroke of Marengo repeated, but without a doubtful battle and without undeserved good luck.

After Marengo it had been left to Moreau to win the decisive victory and to conclude the war; this time there was no Moreau to divide the laurels. The second part of the campaign begins at once; on October 28 Napoleon reports that a division of his army has crossed the Inn. He has now to deal with the Russians, of whom 40,000 men have arrived under Kutusoff. He reaches Linz on November 4, where Gyulai brought him the emperor's proposals for an armistice. He replies by demanding Venice and Tyrol and insisting upon the exclusion of Russia from the negotiations, conditions which, as he no doubt foresaw, Gyulai did not think himself authorized to accept. But Napoleon did not intend this time, as in 1797 and in 1800, to stop short of Vienna. Nothing now could resist his advance, for the other Austrian armies, that of the archduke John in Tyrol and that of the archduke Charles on the Adige, were held in play by Ney and Masséna, and compelled at last, instead of ad- vancing to the rescue, to retire through Carniola into Hungary. On November 14 he dates from the palace of Schénbrunn ; on the day before Murat had entered Vienna, which the Austrian emperor, from motives of humanity, had

18th to Murat at lation of

lm.

resolved not to defend, and the French also succeeded by an unscrupulous trick in getting possession of the bridges over the Danube. So far his progress had been triumphant, and yet his position was now extremely critical. The archduke Charles was approaching from Hungary with 80,000 Austrians ; another Russian army was entering Moravia to join Kutusoff, who had with great skill escaped from the pursuit of Murat after the capture of Vienna. Napoleon, though he had brought 200,000 men into Germany,

had not now, since he was obliged to keep open his communications down the valley of the Danube, a large army available for the field. But, what was much more serious, he had recklessly driven Prussia into the opposite camp. He had marched troops across her territory of Ansbach, violating her neutrality, and in consequence on November 3 (while Napoleon was at Linz) she had signed with Russia the treaty of Potsdam, which practically placed 180,000 of the most highly drilled troops in the world at the service of the Coalition. Such had been Napoleon's rashness, for his audacious daring was balanced indeed by infinite cunning and ingenuity, but was seldom tempered by prudence. In this position, it may be asked, how could he expect ever to make his way back to France? What he had done to Mack Prussia would now do to him. The army of Frederick would block the Danube between him and France, while the Russians and Austrians united under the archduke would seek him at Vienna.

As at Marengo, fortune favoured his desperate play. The allics had only to play a waiting game, but this the Russians and their young czar, who was now in the Moravian headquarters, would not consent to do. He was surrounded by young and rash counsellors, and the Russians, remembering the victories of Suwaroff in 1799, and remarking that almost all Napoleon's victories hitherto had been won over Austrians, had not yet learned to be afraid of him. Napoleon became aware of their sanguine confidence from Savary, whom he had sent to the czar with proposals ; he contrived to heighten it by exhibiting his army as ill-prepared to Dolgorouki, sent to him on the part of the czar. The end was that the Russians (80,000 men, aided by about 15,000 Austrians) rushed into the

Battle of battle of Austerlitz (December 2, 1805), which brought Auster- the third Coalition to an end, as that of Hohenlinden had

litz.

brought the second. Nowhere was Napoleon's superiority more manifest ; the Russians lost more than 20,000 men, the Austrians 6000. The former retired at once under a military convention, and before the year 1805 was out the treaty at Pressburg was concluded with Austria (December 26) and that of Schénbrunn with Prussia (December 15). It was a transformation-scene more bewildering than even that of Marengo, and completely altered

the position of Napoleon before Europe. To the French indeed Austerlitz was not, as a matter of exultation, equal to Marengo, for it did not deliver the state from danger, but only raised it from a perilous eminence to an eminence more perilous still. But asa military achievement it was far greater, exhibiting the army at the height of its valour and organization (the illusion of liberty not yet quite dis- sipated), and the commander at the height of his tactical skill; and in its historical results it is greater still, ranking among the great events of the world. For not only did it found the ephemeral Napoleonic empire by handing over Venetia to the Napoleonic monarchy of Italy, and Tyrol and Vorarlberg to Napoleon's new client Bavaria ; it also destroyed the Holy Roman Empire while it divided the remains of Hither Austria between Wiirtemberg and Baden. In the summer of 1806 the emperor of Austria (he had this title since 1804) solemnly abdicated the title of Roman emperor; the ancient diet of Ratisbon was dissolved, and a new organization was created under the

name of Confederation of the Rhine, in which the minor states of Germany were united under the protectorate of Napoleon. Bavaria and Wiirtemberg at the same time were raised into kingdoms. Inall the changes which have happened since, the Holy Roman Empire has never been revived, and this event remains the greatest in the modern history of Germany.

But Austerlitz was greater than Marengo in another way. That victory had a tranquillizing effect, and was soon followed by a peace which lasted more than four years. But the equilibrium established after Austerlitz was of the most unstable kind; it was but momentary, and was followed by a succession of the most appalling convulsions; the very report of the battle was fatal to William Pitt. A French ascendency had existed since 1797, and Napoleon's Government had at first promised to make it less intoler- able. Since 1803 this hope had vanished, but now suddenly the ascendency was converted into something like a universal monarchy. Europe could not settle down. The first half of 1806 was devoted to the internal recon- struction of Germany and to the negotiation of peace with the two great belligerents who remained after Austria and Prussia had retired, viz., England and Russia. But these negotiations failed, and in failing created suddenly a new

Coalition. In England, Fox showed unexpectedly all the firmness of Pitt; and the czar refused his ratification to the treaty which his representative at Paris, D'Oubril, had siened. But the negotiations had gone far enough to give Prussia deep offence. At a moment when she found herself almost shut out of the German world by the new Confederation, Napoleon was found coolly treating with England for the restoration of Hanover to George III. In

August 1806, just at the moment of the dissolution of the War

Holy Roman Empire and'the formation of the Confedera- pe TUSSIa.

tion of the Rhine, Prussia suddenly mobilized her army, and about the same time Russia rejected the treaty. This amounted practically to a new Coalition, or to a revival of the old one with Prussia in the place of Austria. No one knew so well as Napoleon the advantage given by sudden- ness and rapidity. The year before he had succeeded in crushing the Austrians before the Russians could come up ; against Prussia he had now the advantage that she had long been politically isolated, and could not immediately get help either from Russia or England,—for the moment only Saxony and Hesse-Cassel stood by her,—while his armies, to the number of 200,000 men, were already stationed in Bavaria and Swabia, whence in a few days they could arrive on the scene of action. The year before Austria had been ruined by the incapacity of Mack ; Prussia now suffered from an incapacity diffused through the higher ranks both of the military and civil service. Generals too old, such as Brunswick and Méllendorf, a military system corrupted by long peace, a policy without clearness, a diplo- macy without honour, had converted the great power founded by Frederick into a body without a soul. There began a new war of which the incidents are almost precisely parallel to those of the war which had so lately closed. As the Austrians at Ulm, so now Napoleon crushed the Prussians at Jena and Auerstiidt (October 14) before the appearance of the Russians; as he entered Vienna, so now he enters Berlin (October 27); as he fought a second war in Moravia, in which Austria played a second part to Russia, so now from November 1806 to June 1807 he fights in East Prussia against the Russians aided with smaller numbers by the Prussians; as he might then, after all his successes, have been ruined by the intervention of Prussia, so now, had Austria struck m, tre might have found much difficulty in making his way

‘back to France; as at Austerlitz, so at Friedland m June 1807 the Russians ran hastily into a decisive battle

|

i

NA PO

in which they ruined their ally but not themsclves; as Austria at Pressburg, so Prussia at Tilsit signed a most humiliating treaty, while Russia, as before, escaped, not this time by simply retiring from the scene, but by a treaty in which Napoleon admitted her to a share in the spoils of victory.

Here was a second catastrophe far more surprising and disastrous than that which it followed so closely. – The defeat of Austria in 1805 had been similar to her former defeats in 1800 and 1797; Ulm had been similar to Holenlinden, the treaty of Pressburg to that of Lunéville.

| But the double defeat of Jena and Auerstiidt, in which the

| duke of Brunswick, the old general not only of 1792 but

| of the Seven Years’ War, found his death, dissolved for

ever the army of the great Frederick; and it was followed

‘ by a general panic, surrender of fortresses, and submission

on the part of civil officials, which seemed almost to amount

to a dissolution of the Prussian state. The defence of

Colberg by Gneisenau and the conduct of the Prussian

troops under Lestocq at Eylau were almost the only re-

deeming achievements of the famous army which half a

century before had withstood for seven years the attack of three great powers at once. This downfall was expressed Treatyof in the treaty of Tilsit, which was vastly more disastrous Tikit. to Prussia than that of Pressburg had been to Austria. Prussia was partitioned between Saxony, Russia, and a newly established Napoleonic kingdom of Westphalia. Her population was reduced by one-half, her army from 250,000 to 42,000 (the number fixed a little later by the treaty of September 1808), and Napoleon contrived also by a trick to saddle her for some time with the support of a French army of 150,000 men. She was in fact, and continued till 1813 to be, a conquered state. Russia on the other hand came off with more credit, as well as with less loss, than in the former campaign. At Eylau in January 1807 she in part atoned for Austerlitz. It was perhaps the most murderous battle that had been fought since the wars began, and it was not a victory for Napoleon. Friedland too was well-contested.

In the two years between August 1805 and the treaty of Tilsit Napoleon had drifted far from his first plan of an invasion of England. But he seemed brought back to it now by another route, England had roused a Coalition against him, which he had not only dissolved, but seemed able now to make

impossible for the future. Austria was humbled, Prussia beneath his feet. Why should Russia for the future side with England against him? From the outset her interference in the wars had been somewhat unnecessary ; she had had little real interest in the questions of Malta, Naples, or Sardinia. The Russians themselves felt this so much that after Friedland they forced Alexander to make peace. But as Paul, when he left the Second Coalition, had actually joined France, Napoleon now saw the means of making Alexander do the same. England's tyranny of the seas had been attacked by the great Catherine and again by Paul ; on this subject therefore Russian policy might co-operate with Napoleon, and, if a bribe were needed, he would countenance her in robbing her ally Prussia, and he could promise her freedom in her eastern enterprises. Such was the basis of the treaty of Tisit, negotiated between Napoleon and Alexander on an island in the river Niemen, by which treaty the fate of Prussia was decided, and at the same time the foundation of the Napoleonic empire firmly laid. It was a coalition of France and Russia to humble England, chiefly by means of the Continental system, The invasion of England had failed, and England had destroyed at Trafalgar the allied fleets of France and Spain, a defeat which to the public eye had been lost in the splendid triumph of Ulm Feu Napoleon now returns to the attack upon England at the

1807.|

head of a universal confederacy which he has organized against her,

A pause occurs after Friedland during which Europe begins slowly to realize her position and to penetrate the character of Napoleon. It took sometime to wear out his reputation of peace-maker ; at his breach with England in 1803 he had appealed to that jealousy of England's maritime power which was widely spread; many thought the war was forced upon him, and as to the war of 1805 it could not be denied that Austria and Russia had attacked him. His absolute control over the French press enabled him almost to dictate public opinion.

But the conquest of Germany, achieved in little more Napoleon time than had sufficed to Bonaparte ten years before for 28 king the conquest of Italy,

put him in a new light. He had °! 28s already passed through many phases: he had been the invincible champion of liberty, then the destroyer of Jacobinism and champion of order, then the new Con- stantine and restorer of the church, then the pacificator of the world, then the founder of a new monarchy in France. Now suddenly, in 1807, he stands forth in the new character of head of a great European confederacy. It has been usual to contrast the consulate with the empire, but the great transformation was made by the wars of 1805-7, and the true contrast is between the man of Bruniaire and the man of Tilsit. The empire as founded in 1804 did not perhaps differ so much from the consulate after Marengo as both differed, alike in spirit and form, from the empire such as it began to appear after Press- burg and was consolidated after Tilsit. Between 1800 and 1805 Napoleon, under whatever title, was absolute ruler of France, including Belgium, the left bank of the Rhine, Savoy, and Nice, and practically also ruler of Holland, Switzerland, and North Italy to the Adige, which states had a republican form. ‘The title emperor meant in 1804 little more than military ruler. But now emperor has rather its medieval meaning of para- mount over a confederacy of princes. Napoleon has become a king of kings. This system had been com- menced in the consulate, when a kingdom of Etruria under the consul’s protection was created for the benefit of his ally, the king of Spain; it was carricd a stage further on the eve of the war of 1805, when the kingdom of Italy was created, of which Napolcon himself assumed the sceptre, but committed the government to Eugéne Beauharnais as viceroy. But now almost all Italy and a great part of Germany is subjected to this system. The Bonaparte family, which before had contended for the succession in France, so that Joseph actually refuses, as beneath him, the crown of Italy, now accept subordinate crowns. Joseph becomes king of Naples, the Bourbon dynasty having been expelled immediately after the peace of Pressburg ; Louis becomes king of Holland; Jcronie, the youngest brother, receives after Tilsit a kingdom in North Germany composed of territory taken from Prussia, of Hanover, and of the electorate of Hesse-Cassel, which had shared the fall of Prussia; somewhat earlier Murat, husband of the most ambitious of the Bonaparte sisters, Caroline, had received the grand-duchy of Berg. By the side of these Bonaparte princes there are the German princes who now look up to France, as under the Holy Roman Empire they had looked up to Austria. These are formed into a Confederation in which the archbishop of Mainz (Dalberg)

presides, as he had before presided in the empire. Two of the princes have now the title of kings, and, enriched as they are by the secularization of church lands, the mediatization of immediate nobles, and the subjugation of free cities, they have also the substantial power. A princess of Bavaria weds Eugéne Beauharnais, a princess of Wiirtemberg Jerome Bonaparte, At its

foundation in 1806 the Confederation had twelve mem- bers, but in the end it came to include almost all the states of Germany except Austria and Prussia.

A change seems to take place at the same time in Napoleon's personal relations. In 1804, though the divorce of Josephine was debated, yet it appears to be Napoleon's fixed intention to bequeath his crown by the method of adoption to the eldest son of Louis by Hortense Beauharnais. But this child died suddenly of croup in the spring of 1807, while Napoleon was absent in Germany, and the event occurring at the moment when he attained his position of king of kings probably decided him in his own mind to proceed to the divorce.

It was impossible to give crowns and principalities to the Bonaparte family without allowing a share of similar distinctions to the leading politicians and generals of France. He was therefore driven to revive titles of nobility. To do this was to abandon the revolutionary principle of equality, but Napoleon always bore in mind the necessity of bribing in the most splendid manner the party upon whose support ever since Brumaire he had depended, and which may be described shortly as the Senate. When in 1802 he received the life-consulate, he had proceeded instantly to create new dotations for the senators ; now he feels that he must devise for them still more splendid bribes. His first plan is to give them feudal lordships outside France. Thus Berthier, his most indis- pensable minister, becomes sovereign prince. of Neufchatel, Bernadotte sovereign prince of Pontccorvo, Talleyrand sovereign prince of Benevento. Especiaily out of the Venetian territory, given to France at Pressburg, are taken fiefs (not less than twelve in all), to which are attached the title of duke. These innovations fall in 1806, that is, in the middle of the period of transformation. But after Tilsit, when Napoleon felt more strongly both the power and the necessity of

rewarding his servants, he created formally a new noblesse and revived the majorat in defiance of the revolutionary code. In the end, besides the three sovereign princes just mentioned, he created four hereditary princes (Berthier is in both lists) and thirty-one hereditary dukes. There were also many counts and barons. The system was prodigiously wasteful. Of public money Berthier received more than £50,000 a year, Davoust about £30,000, nine other officials more than £10,000, and twenty-three others more than £4000.

After Marengo he had seen the importance of reconciling Europe to his greatness by making peace. After Tilsit it was still more urgently necessary that he should dispel the alarm which his conquests had now excited everywhere. But this time he made no attempt to do so; this time he can think of nothing but pushing his success to the de- struction of England ; and Europe gradually became aware that the evil so long dreaded of a'destruction of the balance of power had come in the very worst form conceivable, and that her destiny was in the hands of a man whose headlong ambition was as unprecedented as his energy and good fortune.

As in 1805 he had been drawn into the conquest of Germany in the course of a war with England, so now he assails all the neutral powers, and shortly afterwards violently annexes Spain, not so much from abstract love of conquest as in order to turn against England the forces of all the Continent at once. Ashe had left Boulogne for Germany, he now, as it were, returns to Boulogne. His successes had put into his hands two new instruments of war against England, instruments none the less welcome because the very act of using them made him master of the whole Continent. He had hinted at the first of these when the war with England began in 1803, by saying that in this war he did not intend that there should be

any neutrality; what he meant was explained in 1806 by the edict issued from Berlin. In addition to that limited right which the belligerent has by international law to prevent by blockade the trade of a neutral with the enemy and to punish the individual trader by confis- cation of ship and goods, Napoleon now assumed the right of preventing such commerce without blockade by controlling the neutral Governments. English goods

were to be seized everywhere, and the harbours of neutrals to be closed against English ships under penalty of war with France. Such a threat, involving a claim to criticize and judge the acts of neutral Governments and to inflict on them an enormous pecuniary fine, was almost equivalent to the annexation at one stroke of all the neutral states. The other imstrument had a similar character. The French fleet having been crippled at Trafalgar, he pro- posed now to reinforce it by all the other fleets in Europe, and to get possession of all the resources of all the maritime states. His eyes therefore become now fixed on Denmark, Portugal, and Spain.

Such is Napoleon as king of kings, and such are his views. ‘This unique phase of European history lasted five years, reckoning from the treaty of Tilsit to the breach with Russia. Europe consists now of a confederacy of monarchical states looking up to a paramount power (like India at the present day). The confederacy is held together by the war with England, which it puts under an ineffective commercial blockade, suffering itself in return a more effective one. But Napoleon feels that Spain and Portugal must be brought under his immediate administration, in order that their maritime resources may be properly turned against England. Austria also has by no means been sufficiently humbled, and Prussia is humbled so intolerably that she is forced into plans of insurrection, Throughout these five years a European party of insurrection is gradually forming. It has two great divisions, one scattered through Germany, at the head of which Austria places herself in 1809, the other in Spain and Portugal, which is aided by England. In Germany this movement is successfully repressed until 1813, but in the Peninsula it gains ground steadily from 1809. After 1812 both movements swell the great Anti- Napoleonic Revolution which then sets in.

Immediately after Tilsit Napoleon entered on his new course, which had been arranged with Russia in secret articles. In August he required the king of Denmark to declare war with England; but here England, seeing herself threatened by a coalition of all Europe at once, interfered with desperate resolution, She required Denmark to sur- render her fleet (consisting of twenty ships of the line and a number of frigates) in deposit, promising to restore it at the peace, and when she received a refusal took possession of it by force. At the same time an army is formed under Junot for the invasion

of Portugal, with which state, as the old ally of England, Napoleon used no ceremony. The feeble state consented to almost all his demands, agreed to enter the Continental system and to declare war against England; only the regent had a scruple which restrained him from confiscating the property of private Englishmen. From this moment Portugal is doomed, and negotiations are opened with Spain concerning the parti- tion of it. But out of these negotiations grew unexpected events.

For more than ten years Spain had been drawn in the wake of revolutionary France; to Napoleon from the beginning of his reign she had been as subservient as Holland or Switzerland ; she had made war and peace at his bidding, had surrendered Trinidad to make the treaty of Amiens, had given her fleet to destruction at Trafalgar. In other states equally subservient, such as Holland and

French army in Spain.

Popular

rising in

Spain,

1808.]

the Italian Republic, Napoleon had remodelled the govern- ment at his pleasure, and in the end had put his own family at the head of it. After Tilsit he thought him- self strong enough to make a similar change in Spain, and the occupation of Portugal seemed to afford the opportunity of doing this. By two conventions signed at Fontainebleau on October 27th the partition of Portugal was arranged with Spain. The Prince of the Peace was to become a sovereign prince of the Algarves, the king of Spain was to have Brazil with the title of emperor of the two Americas, &c.; but the main provision was that a French army was to stand on the threshold of Spain

ready to resist any intervention of England. ‘The occupation of Portugal took place soon after, Junot arriving at Lisbon on November 30, just as the royal family with a following of several thousands set sail for Brazil under protection of the English fleet. At the same time there commenced in defiance of all treaties a passage of French troops into Spain, which continued until 80,000 had arrived, and had taken quiet possession of a number of Spanish fortresses. At last Murat was appointed to the command of the army of Spain. He entered the country on March 1, 1808, and marched on Madrid, calculating that the king would take flight and take refuge at Seville or Cadiz. This act revealed to the world the nature of the power which had been created at Tilsit. The lawless acts of Napoleon’s earlier life were palliated by the name of the French Revolution, and since Brumaire he had established a character for comparative moderation. But here was naked violence without the excuse of fanaticism ; and on what a scale! One of the greater states of Europe was in the hands of a burglar, who would moreover, if successful, become king not only of Spain but of a boundless empire in the New World. The sequel was worse even than this commencement, although the course which events took seems to show that by means of a little delay he might have attained his end without such open defiance of law. The administration of Spain had long been in the contemptible hands of Manuel Godoy, supposed to be the queen’s lover, yet at the same time high in the favour of King Charles [V. Ferdinand, the heir apparent, headed an opposition, but in character he was not better than the trio he opposed, and he had lately been put under arrest on suspicion of designs upon his father’s life. To have fomented this opposition without taking either side, and to have rendered both sides equally contemptible to the Spanish people, was Napoleon’s game; the Spanish people, who profoundly admired him, might then have been induced to ask him for a king. Napoleon, however, perpetrated his crime before the scandal of the palace broke out. The march of Murat now brought it to a head. On March 17th a tumult broke out at Aranjuez, which led to the fall of the favourite, and then to the abdication of the king and the proclamation of Ferdinand amid universal truly Spanish enthusiasm. It was a fatal mistake to have forced on this popular explosion, and N apoleon has char- acteristically tried to conceal it by a supposititious letter, im which he tries to throw the blame upon Murat, to whom the letter professes to be addressed. It warns Murat against rousing the Spanish patriotism and creating an Opposition

which it will be impossible to put down; it predicts all that actually. happened; but it has all the marks of invention, and was certainly never received by Murat. The reign of Ferdinand having thus begun, all that the French could do was to decline to acknow- ledge him, and to encourage Charles to withdraw his abdication as given under duress. By this means it became doubtful who was king of Spain, and Napoleon, having carefully abstained from taking a side, now Presented himself as arbiter, Ferdinand was induced to

betake himself to Napoleon's presence at Bayonne, where he arrived on April 21st; his father and mother followed on the 30th. Violent scenes took place between father and son; news arrived of an insurrection at Madrid and of the stern suppression of it by Murat; in the end Napoleon succeeded in extorting the abdication both of Charles and Ferdinand. It was learned too late that the insurrection of Spain had not really been suppressed.

This crime, as clumsy as it was monstrous, brought on that great popular insurrection of Europe against the universal monarchy which has profoundly modified all subsequent history, and makes the Anti-Napoleonic Revolu- tion an event of the same order as the French Revolution. A rising unparalleled for its suddenness and sublime spontaneousness took place throughout Spain and speedily found a response in Germany. A new impulse was given, out of which grew the great nationality movement of the 19th century. Meanwhile Napoleon, having first offered the throne of Spain to his brother Louis, who refused it, named Joseph king, retaining, however, a reversion to himself and heirs in default of male heirs of Joseph, who had only daughters. The royal council first, afterwards a junta of nobles assembled at Bayonne, accepted him on July 7th. But it must have become clear to Napoleon almost at once that he had committed the most enormous of blunders. Instead of gaining Spain he had in fact lost it, for hitherto he had been master 'of its resources without trouble, but to support Joseph he was obliged in this same year to invade Spain in person with not less than 180,000 men. With Spain too he lost Portugal, which in June followed the Spanish example of insurrection, and had Spain henceforth for an ally and

not for an enemy. Hitherto he had had no conception of any kind of war not strictly professional. He had known popular risings in Italy, La Vendée, and Egypt, but had never found it at all difficult to crush them. The determined insurrection of a whole nation of 11,000,000 was a new experience to him. How serious it might be he learned as early as July, when Dupont with about 20,000 men surrendered at Baylen in Andalusia to the Spanish general Castafios. In August he might wake to another miscalculation of which he had been guilty. An English army landed in Portugal, defeated Junot at Vimeiro, and forced him to sign the convention of Cintra. By this he evacuated Portugal, in which country the insurrection had already left him much isolated. This occurrence brought to light a capital feature of the insurrection of the Peninsula, viz., that it was in free communication everywhere with the power and resources of England.

Thus the monarchy of Tilsit suffered within a year the Napoleon most terrible rebuff. Napoleon himself now appears upon in Spain.

the scene. His first step was to revive the memory of Tilsit by a theatrical meeting with Alexander, which was arranged at Erfurt in September. The power of the duumvirate was there displayed in the most imposing manner, and the alliance was strengthened by new engagements taken by Napoleon with respect to the Danubian principalities. At the same time he checked the rising spirit of resistance in Prussia by driving from office the great reforming minister Stein. At the beginning of November he was ready for the invasion of Spain. Joseph had retired to Vittoria, and the armies of the insurrection fronted him along the Ebro under the command of Blake, Castafios, and Palafox. Between November 7th and 11th the army of Blake was dissolved by Lefebvre, and Napoleon entered Burgos, which was mercilessly pillaged ; on the 23d Castafios was defeated at Tudela by Lannes; by December 2d Napo- leon, having forced the mountain passes, was before Madrid, and on the 4th he was in possession of the town, where, endeavouring somewhat late to conciliate the

First Ger- man War of Libera- tion,

liberalism of Europe, he proclaimed the abolition of the Inquisition and of feudalism, and the reduction of the number of convents to one-third. He remained in Spain till the middle of January 1809, but he was not allowed repose during the interval. Sir John Moore had advanced from Portugal as far as Salamanca, and determined in the middle of December to assist the insurrection by marching on Valladolid. Soult was at Carrion and was threatened by this advance, since the English force, after Moore had effected his junction with Baird, who arrived from Corunna, at Majorga, amounted to 25,000 men. Napoleon hoped to cut its communications, and so deal one of his crushing blows at the enemy with whom he was always at war yet whom he never, except at Waterloo, met in the field. He set out on the 22d with about 40,000 men, and marched 200 miles in ten days over mountains in the middle of winter. Moore saw the danger, retired to Benavente, and blew up the bridges over the Ezla. Napoleon advanced as far as Astorga ; but he had missed his mark, and professed to receive information which showed him that he was urgently wanted at Paris. He returned to Valladolid,

whence on January 19th he set out for France. The end of Moore's expedition belongs to English history. Another storm was indeed gathering. The down-

fall of Austria in 1805 had been out of all proportion to her military inferiority; it was impossible that she should acquiesce in it. The year that followed Tilsit had given her quite a new prospect. Spain, which before had given Napoleon help, now swallowed up 300,000 of his troops, so that in the autumn of 1808 he had been obliged to withdraw from Prussia the large army which he had kept for more than a year quartered on that- unhappy country. Napoleon could now spare only half his force, and there was now no doubt that Prussia would be as hostile to him as she dared. 'True, the army of Frederick had ceased to exist, but the country was full of soldiers who had belonged to it, full of skilled officers, and Spain had filled all minds with the thought of popular war. Stein and Scharnhorst had been preparing a levée en masse in Prussia and an insurrection in the new kingdom of Westphalia. Under such circumstances began the war of 1809, which may be called the First German War of Liberation, under the leadership of Austria. It was pro- voked rather by Napoleon, who wanted

new victories to retrieve his position, than by Austria, whose interest lay in gaining time, since time was likely to increase the ferment in Germany and weaken the alliance of N apoleon and Russia. Napoleon's superiority, though on the wane, was still enormous. Through the Confederation of the Rhine he had now a great German army at his disposal, which he placed under French generals. His frontier was most formidably advanced through the possession of Tyrol and Venetia. Russia was on his side, and, though she did not actively help him in the field, was of great use in holding down Prussia; England was against him, but could do little for an inland state such as Austria now was. In these circumstances the attitude of Austria had something heroic about it, like that of Spain, and the war throughout is like a somewhat pale copy of the Spanish insurrection. But Austria has what Spain had not, the advantage of organization and intelligence. Since Pressburg she had passed through a period of reform and shown some signs of moral regeneration, Stadion and the archduke Charles doing for her, though not so effectively, what Stein and Scharnhorst did for Prussia, Few wars have begun with less ostensible ground, or more evidently from an intolerable position. Napoleon accused Austria of arming, of wanting war; Austria expostulated, but in vain; and war began. It began early

in April, and the proclamation of the archduke Charles was addressed to the whole German nation. The watchword of Austria against France was now liberty and nationality, A good general conception of the war may be obtained by comparing it with that of 1805, which it resembles in certain large features. Again there is a short but decisive passage of arms in Bavaria; in a five days' struggle, cele- brated for Napoleon's masterly manceuvres, the Austrians are driven out of Ratisbon, and the way to Vienna is laid open. Again Napoleon enters Vienna (May 13th). But the war in Italy this time begins farther east, on the Piave. Eugéne Beauharnais, after an unfortunate commencement, when he was defeated at Sacile by the archduke John, makes a successful advance, and being joined by Marmont, who makes his way to him from Dalmatia by way of Fiume, drives the Austrian army into Hungary, defeats them at Raab, and effects a junction

with Napoleon at Bruck. Then, as before, the war is transferred from Vienna to the other side of the Danube. But the Austrian resist- ance is now far more obstinate than in 1805. From the island of Lobau Napoleon throws his troops across the river in the face of the archduke. A battle takes place which occupies two successive days, and is sometimes called the battle of the Marchfeld, but is sometimes named from the villages of Gross-Aspern and Essling. Like that of Eylau in 1807 it is among the most terrible and bloody battles of the period. In all perhaps 50,000 men fell, among whom was Marshal Lannes, and the French were driven back into their island. Five weeks passed in inaction before Napoleon could retrieve this check, five weeks during which the condition of Europe was indeed singular, since its whole destiny depended upon a single man, who, besides the ordinary risks of a campaign, was threatened by an able adversary who had recently brought him to the verge of destruction, and by outraged populations which might rise in insurrection round him. This is the moment of the glory of Hofer, the hero of the peasant-war in Tyrol. Once more, however, Napoleon's skill and for- tune prevailed. On the night of July 4th he succeeded, under cover of a false attack, in throwing six bridges from Lobau to the left bank of the Danube, over which more than 100,000 men passed before morning and were arrayed upon the Marchfeld.

became the subject of much controversy, the archduke John came too late to his brother's help. The Austrians were worsted, but by no means decisively, and retired in good order.

Austerlitz and Friedland had led at once to peace, because the principal belligerent, Russia, had little direct interest in the war; Wagram ought to have had no similar effect. Austria was engaged in a war of liberation; Tyrol was emulating Spain; there should therefore have been no nego- tiation with the invader. But Germany had as yet but half learnt the Spanish principle of war; in particular the Austrian Government and the archduke Charles himself be- longed to Old Austria rather than to New Germany. In the campaign the archduke had fallen much below his reputa- tion, having allowed it plainly to appear that Napoleon frightened him, and now, instead of appealing again to German patriotism, he signed at Znaim (July 11th) an armistice similar to that which Melas had so unaccount- ably concluded after Marengo. But it was by no means certain that all was yet over. North

Germany might rise as Spain had risen and as Tyrol had _ risen. The archduke Ferdinand had marched into Poland and threatened Thorn, with the intention of provoking such a movement in Prussia, and England was preparing a great armament which the patriots of North Germany, who now began to emulate the Spanish guerilla leaders,—Schill,

:

i { f i

.

i]

:

The obstinate battle of Battle of Wagram followed, in which, by a miscalculation which Wagram. |

1810.]

Dérnberg, Katt, Brunswick,—anxiously expected. There seems little doubt that, if this armament had made Germany its object, Germany would at once have sprung to arms and have attempted, perhaps prematurely, what in 1813 it accomplished. What was expected in Germany had happencd already in the Peninsula. Arthur Wellesley had landed at Lisbon on April 22d, and in less than a month had driven Soult in confusion out of Portugal. In July he undertook an invasion of Spain by the valley of the Tagus. Thus both the quantity and quality of resistance to Napoleon was greater than at any former time; but it was scattered, and the question was whether it could

attached to Josephine; this attachment had been an effective feature in the character of republican hero which he then sustained. Mme. de Staél had been profoundly struck, when, on being charged by her with not liking women, he had answered, “J’aime la mienne.” ‘It was such an answer,” she

said, “as Epaminondas would have given |” He is now equally striking in the part of an Oriental sultan, and when he discards his Josephine for ambition he requires to be publicly flattered for his self-sacrifice by the officials, by Josephine herself, and even by her son Eugéne Beauharnais !

The archduchess Marie Louise, who now ventured to

concentrate itself.

take the seat of Marie Antoinette, seems to have been of with But England was unfortunate this time in her interven-

amiable but quite insignificant character. Her letters are —

Treaty of

‘Schon- brunn,

War he could not thus discard Russia without making her an | persuading himself that it was not worth a serious effort, vith enemy, and accordingly the Russian war appears on the | He persisted in saying that the only serious element in the bi horizon at the very moment that the Austrian war is Spanish opposition was the English army ; this would fall i terminated. This transformation was accomplished by | with England herself ; and England, he thought, was on the first humbling Austria, and then, as it were, adopting her | point of yielding to the blockade of the Continental system. and giving her a favoured place in the European con- | He devotes himself henceforth therefore to heightening the federacy. She lost population to the amount of 3,500,000, | rigour of this blockade. From the beginning it had led to besides her access to the sea; she paid an indemnity of | continual annexations, because only Napoleon’s own admin- more than £3,000,000, and engaged to reduce her army | istration could be trusted to carry it into effect. Accord- to 150,000. But, thus humbled, a high and unique | ingly the two years 1810-11 witness a series of annexations honour was reserved for her. We cannot be quite certain | chiefly on the northern sea-coast of Europe, where it was Whether it was part of Napoleon’s original plan to claim | important to make the blockade more efficient. But on the hand of an archduchess, though this seems likely, since | this northern sea-coast lay

the chief interests of Russia. Napoleon would hardly break with Russia unless he felt | As therefore in 1805 he had brought Austria and Russia Secure of the alliance of Austria, and yet in the treaty of | on himself by attacking England, so in 1810 he presses his Schénbrunn he does not hesitate to offend Russia by rais- | hostility to England to the point that it breaks the alliance Ing the Polish question. What is certain is that after his of Tilsit and leads to a Russian war. return to France Napoleon proceeded at once to the divorce, The year 1810 is occupied with this heightening of the that at the same time he asked the czar for the hand of Continental system and the annexations which it involved. his sister, that upon this Austria, alarmed, and seeing her | That he had long contemplated the annexation of Holland Annexa- . own doom in the Russian match, gave him to understand appears from the offer of the crown of Spain which he ee } (as he may very well have calculated that she would do) | made to Louis in 1808, and the language he then used ("La i ' that he might have an archduchess, and that upon this | Hollande ne saura sortir de ses ruines"). He now took west. : he extricated himself from his engagement to the czar with | advantage of the resistance which Louis made to his ruin- phalia. . arudeness which might seem intended to make him an | ous exactions. Louis was driven to abdicate, and the fnemy. At the same time he refused to enter into an country was organized in nine French departments. In sg engagement not to raise the Polish question. August the troops of the king of Westphalia were forced we At an earlier period we saw Napoleon urged by his | to make way for French troops at the mouths of the Elbe bitin a brothers to divorce J osephine, but refusing steadfastly and | and Weser, and a few months later the whole coast between

tion. The armament did not set sail till August, when in Austria the war seemed to be at an end, and when Wellesley, after winning the battle of Talavera, had seen himself obliged to retire into Portugal, and it was directed not to Germany but against Antwerp. It was therefore a mere diversion, and as such it proved unsuccessful. It created indeed a great flutter of alarm in the administration at Paris, which saw France itself left unprotected while its armies occupied Vienna and Madrid, but by mismanage- ment and misfortune the great enterprise failed, and accomplished nothing but the capture of Flushing.

And so the last triumph of Napoleon was achieved, and the treaty of Schénbrunn was signed on October 20th. By this treaty, as by former treaties, he did not merely end a war or annex territory, but developed his empire and gave it a new character. He now brought to an end the duumvirate which had been established at Tilsit. Since Tilsit his greatness had been dependent on the concert of Russia. He had had the czar's permission to seize Spain, the czar's co-operation in humbling Austria. Schénbrunn made his empire self-dependent and self-sup- porting, and thus in a manner completed the edifice. But

apparently resolved upon adopting the eldest son of Louis and Hortense. He had now quite ceased to be influenced by his brothers, but at the same time he had risen to such greatness that he had himself come to think differently of the question. Fourteen years before he had been warmly

childlike. She became a complete Frenchwoman, but, owing to a certain reserve of manner, was never specially popular. On March 20, 1811, she bore a son, who took the title of King of Rome, by which in the Holy Roman Empire the successor had been designated. France had thus become once more as monarchical as in the proudest days of Versailles ; but the child of empire was reserved for what his father called "the saddest of fates, the fate of As- tyanax."

Arrived now at the pinnacle, Napoleon pauses, as he had paused after Marengo. We are disposed to ask, What . use will he now make of his boundless power? It was a question he never considered, because the object he had set before himself in 1803 was not yet attained; he was not in the least satiated, because, much as he had gained, he had not gained what he sought, that is, the humiliation of England. As after Tilsit, so after Schénbrunn, he only asks, How may the new resources be best directed against England? Yet he did not, as we might expect, devote himself to crushing the resistance of the Peninsula. This he seems to have regarded with a mixed feeling of con- tempt and despair, not knowing how to overcome it, and

the Rhine and the Elbe was annexed. At the same time Napoleon began to make war on neutral commerce, especially American, affirming that in

order to complete the destruction of English trade it was only necessary to prohibit it when it made use of neutral bottoms. So

Dissolu- tion of

the alli- ance of Tilsit.

Tnvasion of Russia.

thoroughly in earnest was he with his Continental system ; aud indeed it is beyond dispute that great distress and discontent, nay, at last a war with the United States, were inflicted upon England by this policy.

But the pressure of it was felt even more on the Continent, and the ultimate cause of the fall of Napoleon was this, that under the weight of the Continental sys- tem the alliance of Tilsit broke down sooner than the resistance of England. That alliance had been seriously weakened by the Austrian marriage, and by Napoleon's refusal to give the guarantees which Russia required that Poland should never be restored. Indeed Napoleon had seemed to take pleasure in weakening it, but perhaps he had only desired to make it less burdensome to himself without destroying it. At the end of 1810 measures were taken on both sides which conveyed the impression to Europe that it was practically at an end, Alexander refused to adopt Napoleon's policy towards neutrals ; Napoleon answered by annexing Oldenburg, ruled by a duke of the Russian house; Alexander rejoined by an ukase (December 31st) which modified the restrictions on colonial trade and heightened those on French trade.

In 1811 the alliance of Tilsit gradually dissolves. Napoleon's Russian expedition is hardly to be regarded as a freak of insane pride. He himself regarded it as the unfortunate effect of a fatality, and he betrayed throughout an unwonted reluctance and perplexity. The truth is, he could not now stop. Upon the Continental system he had staked everything. He had united all Europe in the crusade against England, and no state, least of all such a state as Russia, could withdraw from the system without practically joining England. Nevertheless we may wonder that, if he felt obliged to make war on Russia, he should have chosen to wage it in the manner he did, by an over- whelming invasion, Jor an ordinary war his resources were greatly

superior to those of Russia. A campaign on the Lithuanian frontier would no doubt have been unfavour- able to Alexander, and might have forced him to concede the points at issue. Napoleon had already experienced in Spain the danger of rousing national spirit. It seems, how- ever, that this lesson had been lost on him, and that he still lived in the ideas which the campaigns of 1805, 1806, and 1807 had awakened, when he had occupied Vienna and Berlin in succession, overthrown the Holy Roman Empire, and conquered Prussia. He makes a dispute about tariffs the ground of the greatest military expedition known to authentic history! In this we see a stroke of his favourite policy, which consisted in taking with great suddenness a measure far more decisive than had been expected ; but such policy seems here to have been wholly out of place. He was perhaps partly driven to it by the ill-success of his diplomacy. War with France meant for Russia sooner or later alliance with. England, but Napoleon was not able to get the help of Turkey, and Sweden joined Russia. Turkey had probably heard of the partition-schemes which were agitated at Tilsit, and was also influenced by the threats and promises of England. Sweden suffered grievously from the Continental system, and Bernadotte, who had lately become crown prince, and who felt that he could only secure his position by procur- ing for Sweden some compensation for the recent loss of Finland, offered his adhesion to the power which would help him in acquiring Norway. Napoleon declined to rob his ally, Denmark, but Alexander made the promise, and Sweden was won. Against Russia, Sweden, and England (a coalition which formed itself but tardily) Napoleon assembled the forces of France, Italy, and Germany, and hoped to win, as usual, by the rapid concentration of an overwhelming force. The army with which he invaded Russia consisted of somewhat more than 600,000 men,—

the French troops mainly commanded by Davoust, Oudinot, and Ney, the Italian troops by Prince Eugene, the Poles by Poniatowski, the Austrian contingent (33,000 men) by Schwarzenberg, the remaining German troops by Gouvion St Cyr, Reynier, Vandamme, Victor, Mac- donald (who had the Prussian contingent), and Augereau. When we consider that the war of the

Peninsula was at the same time at its height, and that England was now at war with the United States, we may form a notion of the calamitous condition of the world !

Russia had been easily defeated at Austerlitz and Friedland, where it fought far from home for a cause in which it was but slightly interested. Against an invasion it was as invincible as Spain, being strengthened by a profound national religion and perfect loyalty to the Government; in addition it had the strength of its vast extent, its rigorous climate, and the half-nomad habits of its people. By his prodigious preparations Napoleon provoked a new national war under the most difficult circumstances, and yet he appears to have desired peace and to have advanced most reluctantly. His campaign runs the same course as against Austria in 1805 and 1809. There is the successful advance, the capture of the fortress (Smolensk), the great victory (at Borodino), the entry into the capital (Moscow) ; but of all this no result. No negotiation follows, and Napoleon suddenly finds him- self helpless, as perhaps he would have done in 1805 and 1809, had the enemy shown the same firmness. On May 16, 1812, he arrived with Marie Louise at Dresden, where for the last time he appeared as king of kings,—the emperor of Austria, the king of Prussia, a multitude of German sovereigns, Metternich, and Hardenberg paying court to him. Onthe 28th he set out again and travelled by Glogau, Thorn, Dantzic, Konigsberg, Gumbinnen, to Wilkowyski, where he arrived on June 21st. On the 24th the mass of the army passed the Niemen at Kovno, and on the 28th Napoleon entered Vilna, which was evacuated by the Russians. Here he remained till July 16th. In this long delay, as well as in other circumstances, the unwonted perplexity of his mind appears. Alexander, who has by this time gained greatly in decision of character, refuses to negotiate while the enemy stands on Russian territory; Napoleon in conversation with Balacheff shows an almost pathetic desire for an amicable arrangement. He is embarrassed again when a deputation from Warsaw, where a diet had met, bids him only say that “ Poland ewists, since his decree would be for the world equivalent to the reality.” This word he declines to say, alleging his obligations to Austria. From his conversations with Narbonne (Villemain, Souvenirs) we find that he had deliberately considered and rejected what we may call the rational mode of waging war with Russia, that is, through the restoration of Poland. He admitted that he might indemnify Austria and, if necessary, Prussia else-

where, but he argued that he could not afford to open the floodgates of republicanism: ‘Poland must be a camp, not a forum.” He had in fact—perhaps mainly since his second marriage—come to regard himself as the representative of legitimacy against the Revolution. It was thus with his eyes open that he preferred the fatal course of striking at Moscow. His judgment was evidently bewildered by the successes of 1805 and 1806, and he indulges in chimerical imaginations of delivering Europe once for all from the danger of barbaric invasion. It is to be observed that he seems invariably to think of the Russians as Tartars!

In relating this war we have to beware of national exaggerations on both sides. On Napoleon’s side it is absurdly said that he was only vanquished by winter, whereas it is evident that he brought the winter upon

himself, first by beginning so late, then by repeated delays, | by Barclay of one position after another, created the at Vilna, at Vitebsk, and most of all at Moscow. On the greatest consternation among the Russians, as well they other side we must not admit absolutely the Russian | might. Barclay was a German, and might well seem . story that he was lured onward by a Parthian policy, and | another Melas or Mack. A ery arose for his dismissal, to that Moscow was sacrificed by a solemn universal act of | which the czar responded by putting old Kutusoff, who was patriotism. Wellington’s policy of retrograde movements | at least a Russian, at the head of all his armies. This had indeed come into fashion among specialists, and an | change necessarily brought on a great battle, which took entrenched camp was preparing at Drissa on the Dwina in | place on September 6th near the village of Borodino. Battle of imitation of Torres Vedras. But the nation and the army | More than 100,000 men and about six hundred pieces of Boro-were full of reckless confidence and impatience for battle ; artillery were engaged on each side. It ended in a victory, dino. only their preparations were by no means complete. The | but an almost fruitless victory, for the French. They lost long retreat to Moscow and beyond it was unintentional, | perhaps 30,000 men, including Generals Montbrun and and filled the Russians with despair, while at the same | Caulaincourt, the Russians nearly 50,000, including Prince time it agreed with the views of some of the more

en- | Bagration. Here again Napoleon displayed unwonted lightened strategists. indecision, He refused to let loose his guard, consisting As usual, Napoleon took the enemy by surprise, and | of 20,000 fresh troops, who might apparently have effected brought an overwhelming force to the critical point. | the complete dissolution of the hostile army, and materially When he crossed the Niemen the Russians were still | altered the whole sequel of the campaign. He said, “At 800 thinking of an offensive war, and rumours had also been | leagues from Paris one must not risk one’s last reserve.” spread that he would enter Volhynia. Hence their force This battle, the greatest after Leipsic of all the Napoleonic was divided into three armies: one, commanded by the | battles, was followed by the occupation of Moscow on Livonian Barclay de Tolly, had its headquarters at Vilna, | September 14, which, to Napoleon’s great disappointment, a second under Prince Bagration was further south at | was found almost entirely empty. After a council of war Volkowysk, the third under Tormaseff was in Volhynia. | held at Fili, Kutusoff had taken the resolution to abandon But the total of these armies scarcely amounted to 200,000 | the old capital, the loss of which was held not to be so men, and that of Barclay de Tolly opposed little more | irreparable as the loss of the army. But, as with Old than 100,000 to the main body of Napoleon’s host, which | Russian craft he had announced Borodino to the emperor amounted nearly to 300,000. Hence it evacuates Vilna | as a victory, the sensation produced upon the Russian and retires by Svenziany to the camp at Drissa. Barclay | public by the fall of Moscow was all the more overwhelm- arrives at Drissa on July 9th, and here for the first time | ing. Nor did the next occurrence, which immediately Burning the emperor and the generals seem to realize the extent of followed, at first bring any relief. Fires broke out in of the danger. Alexander issues an ukase calling out the | Moscow on the night after Napoleon’s entrance; on the Moscow. population in the proportion of five to every hundred males, | next night, by which time he was quartered in the Kremlin, and hurries to Moscow and thence to St Petersburg in order | the greater part of the city was in flames, and on the day to rouse the national enthusiasm. The Drissa camp is following he was forced by the progress of the conflagration also perceived to be untenable. It had been intended | to evacuate the Kremlin.again. But on the first intelli- to screen St Petersburg, and Napoleon is seen to look | gence of this catastrophe the destruction of Moscow was rather in the direction of Moscow. Barclay retires to |

attributed in Russia to the French themselves, and was Vitebsk, but is obliged, in order to effect his junction with | not by any means regarded as a crushing blow dealt at Bagration, to retreat still further, and Napoleon enters Napoleon by Russian patriotism. Vitebsk on the 28th. The road to Moscow passes between It is indeed not clear that this event had any decisive the Dwina, which flows northward, and the Dnieper, which | influence upon the result of the war. Nor does it seem flows southward, Vitebsk on the one river and Smolensk | to have been the deliberate work of the patriotism of on the other forming, as it were, the two doorposts. We | Moscow. The beginner of it was one man, Count expect to find Napoleon at this point cutting the hostile | Rostopchin, governor of Moscow, who is shown by many armies in two and compelling that of Bagration to a sur- | public utterances to have brooded for some time over the render; he has a great superiority of numbers, and he thought, and is proved to have made preparations for might have had the advantage of a friendly population. | carrying it into effect before leaving the town. It is, But his host seems unmanageable, and the people are | however, supposed that what was begun by him was com- estranged by the rapacity and cruelty to which it is driven | pleted by a rabble which had no object but plunder, and. by insufficient supplies. Barclay and Bagration effect | partly by French soldiers. The immediate effect of it was their junction at Smolensk on August 3d, and now have a | to deepen the alarm of the Russians, and, when this feeling compact army of at least 120,000 men. They evacuated | passed away, to deepen their hatred of the French. Now Smolensk also on the 18th, but only after an obstinate | came the critical moment. Would Alexander negotiate ? defence which left Napoleon master of nothing but a | That is, would he listen to certain timid courtiers about burning ruin, him, such as Romanzoff, or would he be inspired by the Both at Vitebsk and Smolensk he betrayed the extreme | patriotic ardour of his people and lean on his nobler embarrassment of his mind. Should he go into winter | counsellors, the German patriot Stein or Sir Robert Wilson ? quarters? should he press forward to Moscow? It was a | The pressure for a moment was great ; we can imagine choice of desperate courses. His army was dwindling | that had the Russian army been dissolved at Borodino it away ; he had forfeited the support of the Poles ; Germany | might have been irresistible. But he stood firm; he was full of discontent ; and yet a large part of his army | refused to negotiate ; and Napoleon suddenly found that was Polish or German ; how

could he delay? And yetif he | he had before him, not the simple problem he had solved advanced, since August was already running out, he must | so often in earlier life, but the insoluble puzzle he had first encounter the Russian winter. He determined to advance, | encountered in Spain. His failures in Egypt and in relying on the overwhelming effect that would be produced | Spain had been more or less disguised. He was now in y the occupation of Moscow. He would win, as after danger of a failure which could not be concealed, and on Austerlitz and Friedland, through the feebleness and fickle- | a far larger scale; but had he retreated forthwith and ness of Alexander. wintered in Vilna, where he might have arrived early in Meanwhile his unresisted progress, and the abandonment | November, the conquest of Russia Oe — seemed XVII. — 2

Retreat from Moscow.

218

only to be postponed for a year. Instead of this he delayed five weeks in Moscow, and then complained of the Russian winter! After planning a demonstration on St Petersburg, weighing Daru's scheme of wintering in Moscow (which he called " un conseil de lion "), and wait- ing in vain for the czar's submission, he set out on October 18th after blowing up the Kremlin. He marched south- ward to Kaluga, hoping to make his way through a richer and unexhausted country. But while his force had dwindled the Russian had increased. Peace with Sweden had released a Russian force in Finland ; peace with Turkey released the army of the Danube; meanwhile levies were proceeding through the whole empire. Napoleon's plan was frustrated by a check he received at Malojaro-

slavetz, and he had to turn northward again and return as"

he had come. He reached Smolensk on November 9th, when he might have been at Vilna. He marched by Oreza to the Berezina, which he struck near Borisoff. Here Tchitchagoff at the head of the Danube army con- fronted him, and two other Russian armies were approach- ing. Napoleon on his side was joined by what remained of the corps of Oudinot and Victor, who had held the line of the Dwina. But what was the army of Napoleon which was thus reinforced ? .

In July it had consisted of more than 250,000 men. It had suffered no decisive defeat, and yet it amounted now only to 12,000; in the retreat from Moscow alone about 90,000 had been lost. The force which now joined it amounted to 18,000, and Napoleon's star had still influ- ence enough to enable him to make his way across the Berezina, and so escape total ruin and captivity. But December came on, and the cold was more terrible than ever. On the evening of December 6th a miserable throng, like a crowd of beggars, tottered into Vilna.

The corps of Macdonald, Reynier, and Schwarzenberg (among whom were included the Austrian and Prussian contingents) had escaped destruction, having been posted partly on the Polish frontier partly in the Baltic provinces. For these we may deduct 100,000 from the total force ; it then appears that half a million had perished or dis- appeared. They had perished not by unexpected cold ; "the cold had but finished the work of dissolution and death almost accomplished by the enemy, by hardship, and especially by hunger" (Charras); nor is cold unusual in Russia in November! Napoleon's error was one which may be traced as clearly in the campaigns of 1805 and 1806, the error of making no provision whatever for the case of ill-success or even success less than complete. It was now the twentieth year that Europe was tearing itself to pieces. For some years past the pretence of Revolution- ary principles had been given up. There was now no pretext for war except the so-called maritime tyranny of England ; but yet the magnitude of wars had increased beyond all measurement. The campaign of 1812 left every- thing in civilized history far behind it. All the abuses of the old monarchy and all the atrocities of the Revolution put together were as nothing compared to this new plague, bred between the Revolution and the old monarchy, having the violence of the one and the vain- glory of the other, with a barbarous destructiveness peculiar to imperialism superadded.

But what was Napoleon's position? Any Government but the strongest would have sunk under such a blow, but Napoleon's Government was the strongest, and at its strongest moment. Opposition had long been dead; public opinion was paralysed; no immediate rising was to be feared. Should he then simply take the lesson home, and make peace with Alexander? This

was impossible ; he must efface the disaster by new triumphs. But, as this was evident to all, Alexander could not but perceive that he

NAPBOL EHO N

[1819—

must not lose a moment, but must hasten forward and rouse Germany before Napoleon should have had time to levy a new army. 1813 must be filled with a war in Germany, as 1812 with the war in Russia.

Napoleon left the wreck of his army at Smorgoni on December 5 (as he had left his Egyptian army thirteen years before), travelling in a carriage placed upon a sledge and accompanied by Caulaincourt and Duroc. He had an interview with Maret outside Vilna, and then travelled to Warsaw, where he saw his ambassador De Pradt, who has left an account of his confused talk. Here, as in the famous 29th bulletin, published a little after, we observe that he consoles himself for the loss of his army by reflect- ing that his own health was never better—he kept on repeating this. Then he said, “From the sublime to the ridiculous there is but a step”; for the retreat from Moscow strikes him as ridiculous! From Warsaw he passed to Dresden, where he saw his ally the king of Saxony, and wrote letters to the emperor of Austria and to the king of Prussia. He then made his way by Erfurt and Mainz to Paris, where he arrived on December 18th. The bulletin had appeared two days before.

He had said to De Pradt that he intended to raise Wars of

300,000 men and be on the Niemen again in the spring, 1818-1) qi

The first part of this intention he fulfilled, for in April he reappeared in the field with 300,000 men; but the campaign was fought not on the line of the Niemen, nor of the Vistula, nor of the Oder, and he had to fight a battle before he could even reach the Elbe. Fora great event took place less than a fortnight after his arrival in Paris, the defection of the Prussian contingent under York from the grand army; this event led to the rising of Prussia against Napoleon. York’s convention with the Russians is dated December 30th. On January 22, 1813, Stein appeared at K6nigsberg and procured the

assembling of the estates of East Prussia, in which assembly the Prussian landwehr was set on foot. On February 27th he con- cluded for the czar the treaty of Kalisch with Prussia, by which the old Coalition of 1806 may be said to have been revived. Prussia now rushed to arms in a wholly new spirit, emulating Spain and Russia in devotion, and adding to devotion an intelligence peculiar to herself. At the same time measures were taken to break up the Confedera- tion of the Rhine. Tettenborn cleared the French out of the northern departments in March ; Saxony too passed into the hands of the allies, and it was hoped that the king himself might be induced to follow the example of the king of Prussia. But April came, and Napoleon took the field again.

By rapidity and energy he was still able to take the offensive. Though Russia and Prussia were now as Spain, yet the process of calling out and drilling their population was only just begun, and it proceeded slowly. Their united available force at the opening of the campaign scarcely exceeded 100,000 men. Austria and the middle states did not abandon Napoleon. With tact and with judicious concession he might yet retrieve his position ; perhaps no one, as yet, had begun to think of his fall. He left Paris for Mainz on April 15th. His object was Saxony, where Dresden, the scene of his last display of omnipotence less than a year ago, was now the residence of the czar and the king of Prussia united against him. Eugene was maintaining himself on the lower Saale with an army of about 70,000 men, and Napoleon was to march by way of Erfurt to join him. Between Erfurt, Bamberg, and Mainz he had by this time about 150,000 men, troops indeed without discipline and with imperfect drill, youths, the last hope of France, but well officered and not wanting in the enthusiasm which his name still inspired. There was, however, a serious deficiency of cavalry. Meal-

i

:

]

|

1813.]

while Davoust, stationed on the Weser with 30,000 men, was holding down the insurrection of North Germany.

The war which now commenced ended not only to the disadvantage of Napoleon, but unlike any former war it ended in a complete defeat of France, nay, in the conquest of France, an event to which nothing parallel had been seen in modern Europe. Nor was this result attained by any political or revolutionary means, ¢.g., by exciting a republican or Bourbon party against Napoleon's authority, but by sheer military superiority. The causes of this remarkable result must be noted as we proceed. Mean- while we remark that the war, though technically one, is really three distinct wars. There is first the war with Russia and Prussia which occupies the month of May, and is concluded by an armistice on June 4th. There is next a war with Russia, Prussia, and Austria, which begins in August and is practically terminated in October by the expulsion of Napoleon from Germany. Thirdly, there is an invasion of France by the same allied powers. This began in January 1814, and ended in April with the fall of Napoleon.

In the first of these wars Napoleon maintained on the whole his old superiority. It has excited needless admiration that with his raw levies he should still have been able to win victories, since of his two enemies Russia had suffered as much as himself in 1812, and Prussia's army was at the beginning of the year actually to make. In the first days of May he advanced down the valley of the Saale, making for Leipsic by Naumburg, Weissenfels, and Liitzen. On the 2d was fought the battle commonly called from Liitzen, though the Germans usually name it from the village of Gross-Gérschen. By this battle, in which the great military reformer of Prussia, Scharnhorst, received the wound of which he died soon after, the allies were driven to retreat across the Elbe, and Dresden was restored to the king of Saxony. The Prussians attribute their ill-success partly to the insufficiency of the Russian commander Wittgenstein, under whom they fought. Napoleon soon pursued the allies across the Elbe, and another battle was fought on May 20 and 21 at Bautzen on the Spree. Here again Napoleon remained master of the field, though his loss seems to have been considerably greater than that of the enemy. The allies retired into Silesia, and a pause took place, which led to the armistice of Poischwitz, signed on

June 4th. During this armistice Napoleon formed the resolution which led to his downfall.

He might seem now to have almost retrieved his losses. If he could not revive the great army of the Revolution which lay buried (or unburied) in Russia, he had reasserted the ascendency of France. Politically he had suffered but one substantial loss, in the rebellion of Prussia. The blows of Liitzen and Bautzen had arrested the movement which threatened to dissolve the Confederation of the Rhine and to unite all Germany against him. They had also shaken the alliance of Prussia and Russia. Between the generals of the two armies there reigned much jealousy ; the old question, raised after Austerlitz and Friedland, Was beginning to be asked again by the Russians, Why Should they fight for others ?

_ At Tilsit Napoleon had dissolved the Coalition by form- mg as it were a partnership with Russia. It might seem possible now to form a similar partnership with Austria. This course had indeed been entered upon at the marriage of the archduchess. Napoleon seems to have taken this alliance seriously. He conceived it as the final suppression of the Revolution, as a complete adhesion on his own part to conservatism. The language of the bulletins at this time is ultra-conservative. Thus the enemy is described as “preaching anarchy and insurrection.” Stein is charged with “rousing the rabble against the proprietors.” But,

zie

though he had borrowed the Austrian tone, he had not yet enlisted Austrian interests on his side. It was evidently in his power to confer on Austria the greatest advantages, and, as it were, to divide his power with her. Less than this he could not offer, since the losses of France and Russia had given to Austria a decisive weight, but it might seem that he might offer it without much humiliation, as the alliance with Austria had sub- sisted since 1810 and had been cemented by marriage. If he did not thus win Austria, he might expect her to adhere to the other side, for in such a crisis neutrality was out of the question. Could Napoleon then hope to overcome a quadruple alliance of England, Russia, Prussia, and Austria ? Such a hope

was not justified by the victories of Liitzen and Bautzen. The force of Prussia increased every day, and the Spanish enthusiasm with which her new army fought had been displayed even on those fields ; the force of Austria had been impaired by no Russian campaign ; while France was evidently near the end of her resources. The legerdemain by which, in 1800, 1805, 1806, Napoleon had made conquests was now worn out ; his blows were no longer followed by abject submission and surrender ; he was not even able, for want of cavalry, to make his victories decisive. Thus ample concessions to Austria were indis- pensable ; but, these assumed, his position might seem good.

He took the momentous resolution to make no such con- cessions, saw Austria join the Coalition, and after a campaign of two months found himself driven in tumul- tuous ruin across the Rhine. This step is the counter- part of Tilsit, and destroyed the work of Tilsit. Was he simply blinded by passion? His language might lead us to think so. Austria was the state which he had oftenest defeated, and he seems to have been unable to regard it with the respect which he had shown to Russia at Tilsit. From the beginning of 1813 we find him calculating indeed on the help of Austria, and fully recognizing the im- portance of her alliance, yet indignant at the very thought of having to pay for it. He would prefer to make advances to his enemy Russia rather than give his ally Austria any equality with himself in the alliance. Austria on her part seems disposed to be faithful to him. She begins by adhering to the substance of her treaty of March 1812, but requiring certain modifications in it. Napoleon must withdraw from north-west Germany, dissolve the duchy of Warsaw, cede Illyria, perhaps also dissolve the Confedera- tion of the Rhine. But on the last point she might prob- ably have given way, so that Napoleon, already victorious against Russia and Prussia, might now, without yielding any substantial part of his power, have checkmated another Coalition by the help of Austria. Nevertheless it seems as if Napoleon, thoygh this course was open to him for several months, was not for a moment attracted by it, though the clamour for peace which his own army and his own marshals raised compelled him to profess to take it into considera- tion. He continued deliberately to contemplate in prefer- ence a war against Russia, Prussia, and Austria united, and regarded the armistice simply as a delay which would enable him to bring up new forces. Austria on her part was gradually

convinced that no concession was to be obtained from him, and drifted towards the decisive resolution which she could not avoid. Metternich has left us an account of the interview, lasting ten hours, which he had with Napoleon on June 28, in the Marcolini palace at Dresden. We see in it Napoleon's contempt for a power he has so often defeated, his inability to believe that it has still spirit to resist; at the same time we become aware that he believes himself to be necessary to the Austrian emperor, as being the bulwark of all thrones and of monarchy itself against

the Revolution. Metternich can hardly have imagined the famous dramatic trait where Napoleon, on being told that his troops were "not soldiers, but children," answered, turning pale—''You are no soldier; you do not know what passes in a soldier's mind; I grew up in the field, and a man like me troubles himself little about the life of a million of men" (the actual expression he used, adds Metternich, cannot be reported), and then flung his hat into a corner of the room. That this was a true description of his way of thinking had become visible to most since the Russian catastrophe, and the audacious frankness with which he blurts it out is quite in his characteristic manner.

When this interview took place, a treaty had just been signed at Reichenbach by which Austria had engaged, as mediating power, formally to offer conditions of peace to Napoleon and to declare war on him in case of refusal. She proceeded to offer the conditions above mentioned with the exception of that which refers to the Confederation of the Rhine. A congress met at Prague in the course of July, but Napoleon did not allow its deliberations to make serious progress. He paid no attention to an ultimatum presented on August 8th. On midnight of August 10-11 the armistice was declared to be at an end, and the doom of Napoleon was sealed. It was a strange decision on his part, but perhaps he judged rightly that he had no choice but between ruin and absolute, impossible victory!

Europe now plunges again into a struggle as desperate:

and as destructive as that of 1812. More evidently even than in 1812 is Napoleon responsible for this ruin of all civilization. He cannot any longer speak even of the liberty of the seas, for he is forced himself to admit that the Continental system is dead, and yet refuses to surrender that ascendency for which the Continental system had all along been the pretext. Infatuated France, however, has by this time furnished more than 400,000 men to perish in a contest where there might be chances, but could be no probabilities, of victory. His headquarters are now at Dresden, and his armies are arranged along the whole course of the Elbe from Bohemia to its mouth. This position has been somewhat weakened by the adhesion of Austria to the Coalition, for Austria masses her troops on the north-west of Bohemia, threatening Dresden and Napoleon's communications from the left side of the Elbe. The force of the allies (approaching 500,000 men) consists of three great armies, of which the first, principally Austrian, and commanded by Prince Schwarzenberg, is stationed on the Eger in Bohemia; the sovereigns are here. The old Prusso-Russian army, which had made the convention of Poischwitz, is still in Silesia. It contains more Russians than Prussians, but a Prussian officer is now put at the head of it. This is Bliicher, the dashing general of hussars, now an old man of seventy years ; on his staff are some of the leading theorists and enthusiasts of the new Prussian army, such as Gneisenau. But the bulk of the Prussian force is stationed in the mark of Brandenburg. In this final muster of the armies of Europe we see that the moral forces have passed over from France to the allies. In the French camp there reigns weariness and desire for peace, among the Prussians and Russians heroic ardour and devo- tion. But the old mismanagement reappears on the side of the allies. In the Bohemian camp Schwarzenberg's authority was almost annulled by the presence of the sovereigns ; in Silesia the heroic Prussian general is in command of an army mainly Russian. But in the mark perhaps the greatest blunder was made, for here the main Prussian force was put under the orders of the crown prince of Sweden, the Frenchman Bernadotte, wholly alien to the German cause, and bent upon propitiating French public opinion with a view to the succession of Napoleon.

NAPOLEON

[1813-

Bernadotte is not the only member of the old republican opposition who is seen in the allied camp now that Napoleon's fall begins to be thought of as possible, Moreau, the man who helped in 1799 to found the con- sulate, desiring probably to see France ruled by a series of Washingtons each holding office for a short term, appears in the Austrian camp. If Napoleon was to be dethroned, who had a better right to succeed him ?

The campaign opens with a blow aimed at Berlin, where perhaps Napoleon wished to extinguish the popular insur- rection at its source. Oudinot marches on it from Baruth, and is supported by a force from Magdeburg; Davoust sends another corps from Hamburg. Bernadotte proposes to retire and sacrifice Berlin, but in spite of him Bilow fights on August 23d the battle of Grossbeeren, within a few miles of the capital. Here first the landwehr dis- tinguished itself, and Berlin was saved. The attack from Magdeburg was defeated by Hirschfeld at Hagelberg on the 27th. Meanwhile Napoleon himself, at the head of 150,000 men, had marched against Bliicher on the Katzbach. Blticher retired before him, and he was com- pelled to return to the defence of Dresden, but he left Macdonald with perhaps 50,000 or 60,000 men to hold Bliicher in check. Almost immediately after his departure (August 26th) Macdonald was defeated by Bliicher in the battle of the Katzbach. Thus the campaign began with two Prussian victories. But when the great army of Bohemia moved upon Dresden Napoleon showed his old superiority. On August 27th he inflicted on it a terrible defeat. In this battle Moreau, the hero of Hohenlinden, was mortally wounded by a cannon-ball. It seemed for a moment likely that this battle, followed up with Napoleon's overwhelming rapidity, would decide the cam- paign. He prepared to cut off his enemy's retreat into Bohemia. But the news of Grossbeeren and Katzbach arrived ; Napoleon is also said to have been attacked by illness ; he altered his plan in the moment of execution. The grand stroke of the campaign failed, and, instead of cutting off the retreat of the grand army, Vandamme was taken prisoner at Kulm with 10,000 men after a battle in which he had lost half that number (August 30th). It was evident that the times of Marengo and Austerlitz were over. Napoleon's ability and authority were as great as ever ; he controlled larger armies ; he opposed a Coalition which was as unwieldy as former Coalitions; and yet he had suffered four defeats in a single week and had won but one victory. Within another week he suffered another blow. A new

advance was made on Berlin by Ney, who was defeated with great loss at Dennewitz by the Prussians under Biilow (September 6th).

Here then ends Napoleon’s ascendency ; henceforth he fights in self-defence or in despair. Yet the massacre was to continue with unabated fury for two months longer. He spent the greater part of September in restless marches from Dresden, now into Silesia, now into Bohemia, by which he wore out his strength without winning any sub- stantial advantage. Towards the end of the month a new phase of the war begins. From the beginning the allies had given each other rendezvous in the plain of Leipsic. Hitherto Napoleon had held the line of the Elbe, and had presented a single mass to the three separate armies of the Coalition. Now that his collapse begins to be visible, begins the converging advance on Leipsic. The Silesian army crossed the Elbe at Wartenburg on October 3d, and on the next days the northern army also crossed at several points. At the same moment the Confederation of the Rhine began rapidly to dissolve. A troop of Cossacks under Czernicheff upset the kingdom of Westphalia (October 1st). Bavaria abandoned Napoleon, and concluded the treaty of Ried with Austria (October 8th). But for

far On E ON

| 1814.]

sattle of form’s sake a final massacre was still necessary. It took

{ein place on a satisfactory scale between October 14th and

1 19th, and ended in the decisive defeat of Napoleon and

: the capture of Leipsic. Perhaps nearly half a million of

; men were engaged in these final battles. It is reckoned) | that in the last three days the Prussians lost sixteen, the | Russians twenty-one, and the Austrians fourteen thousand

| men—total, fifty-one thousand. Napoleon left twenty-

; three thousand behind him in the hospitals and fifteen

thousand prisoners; his dead may have been fifteen | thousand. He lost also three hundred pieces of artillery. | The sufferings of the wounded almost exceed anything told of the retreat from Moscow. It is a misfortune that the victors allowed him to cross the Rhine in safety ; had they pressed the pursuit vigorously, helped as they now were by the Bavarians, they might have brought his career to an end at this point. But for such a decisive measure perhaps even their political views were not yet ripe. However, as at the Berezina in 1812, so now, he had to clear his road by another battle. The Bavarians under Wrede met him at Hanau, eager to carn some merit with the victorious Coalition; but he broke his way through them and arrived at Frankfort. On November Ist and 2d he carried the remains of his army, some 70,000 men, across the Rhine at Mainz.

The work of eight years was undone; Napoleon was thrown back to the position he had occupied at the rupture of the peace of Amiens. The Russian disaster had cancelled Friedland; Leipsic had cancelled Austerlitz. But could Napoleon consent to humble himself? If he could not make concessions in the summer, still less could he do sonow. Could he return and reign quietly at Paris, a defeated general, his reputation crushed by the two greatest disasters of history? But he might by abdicating have spared France, already mortally exhausted, the burden of another war. It is among the most unpardonable even of his crimes to have dragged his unhappy country through yet another period of massacre, though nothing that could even appear to be a national interest was at stake. In November advances were made to him by the allies, in which peace was proposed on the basis of the “natural frontiers.” This would have secured to France the main fruits of the First Revolutionary War, that is, Belgium, the Left Bank, Savoy, and Nice. Such terms seem generous when we consider the prostration of France and the overwhelming superiority of the allies. But though the Prussian war-party loudly protested against them, and maintained the necessity of weakening France so as to render her harmless, Austria favoured them, being Jealous alike of Prussia and of the spirit of liberty which the war was rousing in the German population. A little compliance on the part of Napoleon might at this moment have made the general desire for peace irresistible. But he showed no such disposition. He first evaded

the pro- posal, and then, too late, accepted it with suspicious qualifications. After having been decimated, France must now be invaded and subjugated, for him.

7 On December Ist the allies issued their manifesto from by a Frankfort, in which they declare themselves at war not allies, With France but with Napoleon (an imitation of the Revolu- tionary principle “Peace with peoples, war with Govern- ments”), and the invasion followed with almost N apoleonic Tapidity. The three armies remain separate as they had been in Germany. The great army under Schwarzenberg passes through Switzerland, and makes its way to the plateau of Langres (the source of the Seine, Aube, and Marne), where lt begins to arrive about the middle of J anuary ; Bliicher’s Silesian army crosses the middle Rhine to Nancy ; the northern army, nominally under Bernadotte, passes through Holland. In the course of the march Switzerland and

Holland were swept into the Coalition, the resources of which were now become overwhelming. It would be difficult to state for what object Napoleon now called on France to fight another campaign, particularly as the allies guaranteed to her a larger territory than she had possessed under the old monarchy. His officers indeed wondered what personal object he could have. They were astonished to hear him talk of another campaign in Germany to be undertaken next spring, of being soon on the Vistula again, &c. He was no doubt a prey to illusions, his fortune having accustomed him to expect results ten times greater than the probabilities justified, but his confidence was founded on (1) the great force which still remained to him shut up in German fortresses, (2) the mutual jealousy of the allies, (3) his own connexion with the emperor of Austria, (4) the patriotism which would be roused among the French, as in 1792, by the invasion. But his calcula- tions were confounded by the rapidity of the invaders, who gave him no time to call out the nation. The Senate did indeed grant him 300,000 men, but to levy, drill, and arm them was impossible, and he had neglected to fortify Paris. In the armies which had returned from Germany there began desertion of all who were not French. The campaign opened at the end of

January and was over at the end of March. The scene of it was the country between the Marne, Aube, and Seine, partly also the department of Aisne, At first, though successful at Brienne, Napoleon seemed unable to resist the superior numbers of the enemy. He was defeated at La Rothiére. But the invaders were as yet irresolute ; they divided their forces. This gave him an opportunity. He attacked Blticher, and, though with greatly inferior forces, won four battles in four days, at Champaubert (February 10th), at Montmirail (11th), at Chateau-Thierry (12th), at Vauchamps (13th). For the moment this brilliant success gave the campaign quite another character ; the hopes and patriotic feelings of the French were roused. A congress had already been opened at Chatillon, and under the impression of these victories it would have been easy to conclude a peace, had not Napoleon's position made a reasonable peace inadmis- sible to him. He felt this, and fell back upon illusions and upon attempts to sever Austria from the Coalition. At the beginning of March the Coalition was strengthened by the treaty of Chaumont, in which each of the four powers bound themselves for twenty years to keep 150,000 men on foot. Directly afterwards Napoleon received a crushing blow from the fall of Soissons and the junction of Bliicher with the northern army under Biilow, which had entered France by way of Holland and Belgium. Their united force amounted to more than 100,000 men. The battles of Craonne and Laon followed, in which Napoleon, without suffering actual defeat, saw his resources dwindle away. On March 18th the conferences at Chatillon came to an end, the plenipotentiaries of the allies declaring Napoleon to have no intention but that of gaining time. About the 24th the allies came to the resolution to march on Paris. They had before them only Marmont and Mortier, for Napoleon himself had resolved to manceuvre in their rear, and had marched to St Dizier. The marshals, after an engagement at Fére Champenoise, made good their retreat to Paris, where the enemy followed them on the 29th. Joseph Bonaparte withdrew Marie Louise and the king of Rome to Tours. On the 30th the allies attacked in three divisions,—the Silesian army on the side of Montmartre, Prince Eugene of Wiirtemberg and Barclay de Tolly by Pantin and Romainville, the crown prince of Wiirtemberg and Giulay by Vincennes and Charenton. In the afternoon, after an obstinate resistance, the marshals offered a capitulation, and engaged to evacuate the town before seven o'clock in the morning. Napoleon, advancing

Napoleon abdi- cates.

by forced marches, was too late. The military struggle is over ; the political struggle begins,

Since 1804 there had been no independent political life in France. During the Russian expedition, indeed, a certain General Malet had spread a false report of Napoleon's death in Russia, and had produced a forged decree of the Senate restoring the republic. His attempt had for the moment had so much success that Napoleon had painfully felt the precariousness of his dynasty, the purely provisional character of the monarchy he had founded. Again, when Napoleon had made his last ap- peal for help to the Corps Législatif, Lainé of Bordeaux had conjured the emperor, while he defended the coun- try, to maintain the entire execution of the laws which guarantee to the French liberty, security, and property, and to the nation the free exercise of its political rights. Napoleon had replied with an outburst of indignation. But now at last it became necessary to take an independent resolution, for in the influential classes it began to be understood that Napoleon must fall, and in particular the generals asked themselves for what rational purpose troops were still levied and battles still fought. But not even the germs were visible of any authority that could replace that of Napoleon. Should he be succeeded by another general, or by a regency for his son, or by the Bourbons? The first course might have been possible had some Moreau been at hand ; even as it was, Bernadotte, who, like Napo- leon, was a Jacobin developed into a prince, made preten- sions which were favoured by the czar. Such a course would have been a revival of the consulate, but it would not have satisfied the republican party, while it would have been rejected by monarchists of every shade. In favour of the regency, as against the Bourbons, there was much to be said. It would not begin with a fantastic transformation-scene, and it would have a hold on the popular imagination. The decision fell out by a sort of accident. To a regency the natural road was by an abdication which would preserve the principle of inheritance. Such an abdication Napoleon gave. On April 4th he reviewed his troops at Fontainebleau, and announced his intention of attacking the allies in Paris. They received his words with enthu- siasm ; but

just at this point the mainstay of his power failed him. The military aristocracy, the marshals, refused to follow him, and Napoleon perceived in a moment that the end was come. Though in arguing with them he had said that a regency of Marie Louise, whom he called “a child,” was impossible, yet he now abdicated on condition that his son should succeed under the regency of the empress. Ney, Macdonald, and Caulaincourt set out for Paris to negotiate the establishment of the regency.

Napoleon’s power rested first on the support of the great military magnates, but secondly on the great civil digni- taries, lavishly enriched by him, whose organ was the Senate. While the marshals forced him to abdicate, his reign had been brought to an end ina wholly different way by the Senate. ‘Talleyrand, vice-president of this body, who had for some time been intriguing in favour of the Bourbons, pronounced openly in favour of them before the sovereigns when they entered Paris. ‘The regency,” he said, “was an intrigue; the Bourbons alone were a prin- ciple.” He convoked the Senate on April Ist, and on April 2d it voted the deposition of Napoleon and his family. This decision was ratified the next day by the Corps Législatif.

Then occurred the abdication in favour of his family, which had the support of the army. The instrument was brought to Paris by not less than three famous mar- shals, Ney and Macdonald having been joined on their way from Fontainebleau by Marmont. The two solutions were thus brought together before the allied sovereigns, of

whom Alexander was not favourably disposed to the Bour- bons, and Francis was the father of Marie Louise. Fora moment the balance trembled.

But Marmont had been brought in contact, during his defence of Paris, with Talleyrand, and had committed him- self to him before he knew of the view of the marshals. After evacuating Paris he had been stationed on the Essonne. Here he had entered into an engagement to place his corps at the service of the new provisional Government which the Senate had constituted ; the arrangement was that on April 5th the corps should quit its position and march into Normandy. But when the marshals passing through his camp from Fontainebleau told him of their commission, he had revealed

his secret with expressions of penitence; he had countermanded his orders to the inferior officers, and had gone with the marshals to Paris. In his absence, however, General Souham, influenced by a fear that the plot had become known to Napoleon, gave orders to the troops to march on Versailles. This appearance of division in the army was fatal to Napoleon's family. It decided Alexander to declare for the Bourbons, and Caulaincourt was instructed to demand from Napoleon an abdication pure and simple. In return he was to retain the title of emperor, and to have the island of Elba in sovereignty, while Marie Louise was to have a principality in Italy.

By an irony of fortune the Government founded at Brumaire, in which everything had been sacrificed to military efficiency, was the only one of the three Govern- ments of France since 1789 which actually succumbed before an invader. The total result of so many con- quests was that France, which, when Napoleon's name was first heard of, was in substantial possession of Bel- gium, the left bank of the Rhine, Savoy, and Nice, had now lost the first two acquisitions ; and we shall see what measures he took to deprive her of the other two. His fatal power of bewildering the popular mind was already at work again. This last campaign, the most unpatriotic he ever fought, had seemed to redeem his faults, and had given him the name of a heroic defender of his country. This view made way fast, as soon as he had the restored Bourbons for a foil.

In the meantime, however, all the hatred, long sup- pressed, of individuals and of parties broke loose upon him, For the moment he seems to have utterly lost heart. On the night of April 11th, after signing the unconditional abdication, he is said to have taken a dose of a poison which ever since the Russian campaign he had kept by him. But vomitings, we are told, came on and saved him. On the 20th, when he bade farewell to his soldiers, he had resolved to live in order "'to narrate to posterity the great deeds we have done together." He soon found another object for life; but a year later, after another downfall far more complete and ignominious, he clings to life, and he clings to it afterwards in captivity. The soldiers idolized him still, and his parting scene at Fontainebleau, when he kissed the eagle, was pathetic ; but when he reached the south of France he met with other demonstrations of feeling. At Avignon and Orgon the crowd attacked the carriages, and wanted to throw the tyrant into the Rhone. He was compelled to disguise

himself. was met by an English frigate which landed him on May 4th at Porto Ferraio, in Elba. It seems to have been arranged among the sovereigns that his wife and child were not to rejoin him, nor did he complain of this. Marie Louise set out on April 23d, and was at Schonbrunn again before the end of May. About the same time Josephine died at Malmaison, in the arms of her children Eugéne and Hortense.

It must have occurred to Napoleon very soon after his arrival in Elba that he was not yet driven to autobio-

[1814-

f q

At the coast he Here |

1815.]

| Disquiet graphy. Never was a great state in a position so untenable

in } France.

and monstrous as France after he quitted the helm. In twenty years of thrilling events, in the emotions first of tragedy and then of epic poetry, the French had forgotten the Bourbon court, when suddenly the old Comte de Provence (under the name of Louis XVIII.) and the Comte d'Artois, Condé and the Duc d'Angouléme, and the Orpheline du Temple reappeared and took possession of the country before even a royalist party had formed itself in France. Politically, indeed, they brought liberty, for they created a parliament where all assemblies had been mute and servile for fourteen years; but they un- settled all domestic affairs, the position of public men, the prospects of the army, the title of estates, in a manner so sudden and intolerable, and that at a moment when the country had suffered conquest from without, that some new convulsion seemed manifestly imminent. Disgraced, be- wildered, and alarmed at the same time, the French could think with regret even of the reign of Napoleon. The wholesale massacre of the last two years might have been expected to seem like a bad dream as soon as the spell was snapped, but it began to seem regrettable in

comparison with the present humiliation. Another event happened which was like a new revolution. The prisoners and the troops shut up in German fortresses returned to France under the treaty, perhaps not less than 300,000 men. What could be more evident than that if all these soldiers could take the field again, and under Napoleon, France might yet escape the humiliation of a Government imposed by foreigners, and perhaps also recover her lost frontiers. The congress of Vienna entered upon business in Septem- ber, and from this time a new chapter of politics opened. France ceased to be the general bugbear, and new alliances began to be formed in order to check the aggressive spirit of Russia. The European Coalition, once dissolved, might not be so easily reconstituted. Internal politics also had altered. A wild party of ultras had sprung up among the royalists; the church was beginning to give disquiet to the holders of national property; the army was enraged by seeing émigrés who had fought against France appointed in great numbers to the command of regiments.

It was not the first time that Napoleon had gone into a sort of exile. As he had disappeared in the East, and returned to make Brumaire, so he might come from Elba to rescue France. The situation was not less intolerable than in 1799. As then, so now, had he not returned, a revolution would, nevertheless, have taken place. Fouché was weaving a military plot, which would have carried

to power perhaps the duke of Orleans, perhaps the king of Rome. Se He entered upon the last of his thousand adventures on Da February 20, 1815, when he set sail from Porto Ferraio

with Generals Bertrand and Drouot and 1100 soldiers. On March Ist he reached the French coast between Cannes and Antibes. Twenty days after he entered the Tuileries In triumph.

He had judged the feeling of the army correctly, and also the effect which would be produced by his prodigious fame. These causes were more than enough to overthrow a Government so totally without root as that of the Bourbons. From the coast he took the way across the mountains of Provence by Sisteron and Gap to Grenoble. The soldiers sent from this town to stop him were dis- armed when he uncovered his breast and asked, Which of them would fire on his emperor? He was then joined by the

royalist La Bédoyére. Macdonald at Lyons stood firm, but was deserted by his soldiers. Ney, who commanded In the east, at first declared himself violently against his old chief, but the military feeling afterwards gained him, and he joined Napoleon at Auxerre. The king left the

Tuileries on the 19th, retiring northward, and on the next day Napoleon entered Paris.

At Brumaire he had put down Jacobinism, and given the nation order and repose. Now he was summoned, in the name of liberty, to protect the acquisitions of the Revolution and to defend the national honour against the triumphant foreigner. The Hundred Days are the period of popular or democratic imperialism. Those who sided with him told him frankly that he must turn over a new leaf, and he professed himself ready to do so. It would be rash to say that this was impossible. He was but forty-five; his return from Elba was an astonish- ing proof that he still possessed that elasticity of spirit, that power of grasping the future, which he had often shown so remarkably. Here then, as at a second Brumaire, might begin a third Napoleonic period. The mad crusade against England and the world-empire which sprang out of it were now to be forgotten ; he was to stand out as a hero of national independence and of modern ideas together, a representative of the free modern people against the Holy Alliance. This last and most surprising of his transforma- tions was already most prosperously begun. But at this point fortune deserted him once for all. Napoleon Liberator remained a poetical idea, transforming his past life into legend, and endowing French politics with a new illusion; the attempt to realize it came to an end ina hundred days (March 13 to June 22).

The ultimate cause of this failure seems to have been a change in Napoleon himself. It had long been remarked that the emperor Napoleon was wholly different from the general Bonaparte of the Italian campaigns. Bonaparte had been lean, shy, laconic, all fire and spirit, the very type of republican virtue imagined by Rousseau ; the emperor was fat and talkative, and had his fits, according to Marmont, of indolent ease. Once or twice there had

been attacks of illness, by which he had been temporarily incapacitated ; but this had been hushed up. On the whole he had never yet been wanting to himself. Inthe campaign of 1814 his activity had been prodigious, and the march to Paris in twenty days, with which he had opened 1815, had been a great display of vigour. But he could not maintain him- self at this level. A physical decay had begun in him, affecting through his body, not indeed his mind, but his will and his power of application. ‘Ido not know him again,” said Carnot. “He talks instead of acting, he the man of rapid decisions ; he asks opinions, he the imperious dictator, who seemed insulted by advice ; his mind wanders, though he used to have the power of attending to every- thing when and as he would ; he is sleepy, and he used to be able to sleep and wake at pleasure.” This last symptom was the most striking; in some of the most critical and terrible moments of the Waterloo campaign he seems to have been scarcely able to keep himself awake.

The constitutional history of the Hundred Days may be despatched summarily, since it led to nothing. On March 13 an imperial decree was issued from Lyons dissolving the two chambers established by the Bourbons, and convoking an extraordinary assembly in Field of May for the purpose “‘of correcting and modifying our constitutions and of assisting at the coronation of the empress, our dear and well-beloved spouse, and of our dear and well-beloved son.” But the prospect soon changed, and, as it was necessary that the empire, like the monarchy, should have its charter, it seemed impossible to wait till May. Napoleon had recourse to Benjamin Constant, that is, he marked his change of policy by sending for the leader of the opposi- tion. The “Acte Additionnel aux Constitutions de l Empire,” dated April 22, was drawn by Constant, examined by a committee, and then adopted by the council of state. The most remarkable feature of it isthe preamble,

in which he explains his change of attitude by saying that “formerly he had endeavoured to organize a grand federal system in Europe, which he had regarded as agreeable to the spirit of the age and favourable to the progress of civilization,” that ‘for this purpose he had adjourned the introduction of

free institutions," but that "henceforward he had no other object but to increase the prosperity of France by strengthening public liberty." _

This neat misrepresentation deserves notice as having imposed on many people. For the rest it is to be observed that this act creates an hereditary peerage. The Field of May was held, but not till June 1. Napoleon appeared in a grand costume and distributed flags, but the "well- beloved spouse and son" were not there; Europe had declared against him. On the 12th he set out for the campaign.

The great powers had issued, immediately on hearing of Napoleon's disembarkation (March 13th), a declaration putting him outside all civil and social relations, and con- signing him to public vengeance as 'an enemy and disturber of the peace of the world." On March 25th they recon- stituted the Coalition. Was this a disappointment to Napoleon? A war of liberation was perhaps necessary to him. To be freely accepted by the French people, and then to be rejected by Europe, gave him precisely the opportunity he sought of standing forth as the heroic champion of national independence. He had now all the soldiers who at the time of his first fall had been locked up in fortresses or foreign prisons. His position was there- fore such as it had been in 1813, not in 1814, and he proposed to defend not a vast empire but simply France, so that he had on his side patriotism and liberalism. All this, and his own genius! Would not so much suffice? Probably he remembered Brumaire, how low the fortune of France at that time had been, and how sud- denly Marengo had restoredall. For the moment, however, the inequality of numbers was great. In June the allies had in the field more than 700,000, Napoleon little more than 200,000, men. There were already English troops in Belgium, where they were engaged in establishing the new kingdom of the Netherlands, and there were Prussian troops in the Rhenish province which had just been given to Prussia. It was a question for Napoleon whether he should assume a defensive attitude and allow the allies to invade France—this in itself would have suited his new policy best —or carry the war into Belgium, a country long united with France, and attack the English and Prussians. He shrank from inflicting a new invasion upon France, especially on account of the strength of the royalist party in many regions, and thus it was that the scene of the campaign was laid in Belgium. The English had their headquarters at Brussels, the Prussians at

Liége. He formed the plan of dividing them and beating them in turn, as he had served the Austrians and Sardinians at the very beginning of his career. Many circumstances, however, were different. Wellington and Bliicher with Gneisenau were superior to Colli and Beaulieu; the Napoleon of 1815 was vastly inferior to the Bonaparte of

1796.

Of all the Napoleonic campaigns this was by far the most rapid and decisive. Even the Marengo campaign had lasted a month, but this was decided in three days. Leaving Paris on the 12th, Napoleon was in Paris again on the 21st, his own fate and that of his empire and that of France decided. Everything concurred to make this short struggle the most interesting military occurrence of modern history: its desperate intensity, its complete decisiveness, the presence for the first and last time of the English army in the front of the European contest, the presence of the three most renowned commanders, Napoleon,

WA OL 0 ®

[1815—

Wellington, and Bliicher. Accordingly it has been debated with infinite curiosity, and misrepresented on all sides with infinite partiality. Napoleon's army amounted to 122,401 men; it contained a large number of veterans, besides many who had seen the campaigns of 1813-14, and was perhaps the finest army he had ever com- manded. That of Wellington was composed of English- men, Hanoverians, Brunswickers, Nassauers, Germans, and Netherlanders ; the totalis stated at 105,950. But in the Netherlanders of the newly-established kingdom no con- fidence could be placed, and yet these amounted to nearly 30,000 ; the English too (about 35,000) were in great part raw recruits (the Peninsular veterans being mainly absent in America); altogether Wellington pronounced it "the worst army ever brought together." The army of Bliicher numbered 116,897 disciplined troops, animated by an intensely warlike spirit. Napoleon's opening was prosper- ous. He maintained so much secrecy and used so much rapidity that he succeeded in throwing himself between the two armies. On the 15th he advanced and occupied Charleroi. On the 16th he engaged the Prussians at

Ligny and the English at Quatrebras, desiring to block the cross- road between Quatrebras and Sombreffe, and so to sever the two armies. Napoleon personally commanded against the Prussians, and here he gained his last victory. The battle was very bloody ; about 12,000 Prussians fell, and Bliicher himself was wounded. At Quatrebras Ney met Wellington and was forced to retreat. But the defeat of Bliicher made it necessary for Wellington to retire on Brussels in order to effect a junction with the Prussians. The 17th was spent in this retrograde movement, and on the 18th Wellington accepted battle on the heights of St Jean, from which the French name it, while the English

give it the name of Waterloo, a village four miles nearer Battle of

to Brussels, where Wellington wrote his despatch. accepted battle in full reliance upon the help of the Prussians, who are not therefore to be considered as having saved him from defeat.

Military writers point out several errors, some of them considerable, committed by Wellington, but their criticism of Napoleon, which begins by sweeping away a mass of falsehood devised by himself and his admirers in order to throw the blame upon others, is so crushing that it seems to show us Napoleon after his brilliant commencement acting as an indolent and inefficient general. He first, through mere want of energy, allows the Prussians to escape him after Ligny, and then sends Marshal Grouchy with 33,000 men in the wrong direction in pursuit of them. Owing to this mismanagement Grouchy is at Wavre on the day of the battle of Waterloo, fighting a useless battle against the Prussian corps of Thielemann, while Bliicher is enabled to keep his engagement to Wellington. Everywhere during these days Napoleon appears negligent, inactive, inacces- sible, and rather a Darius than an Alexander, so that it has been plausibly maintained that he was physically incapaci- tated by illness. The battle itself was one of the most re- markable aid terrible ever fought, but it was perhaps on both sides rather a soldiers’ than a generals’ battle. It con- sisted of five distinct attacks on the English position :— (1) an attack on the English right by the division Reille, (2) an attack on the left by the division D’Erlon (here Picton was killed), (3) a grand cavalry attack, where the splendid French cavalry “foamed itself away” upon the English squares, (4) a successful attack by

Ney on La Haye Sainte (which Wellington is thought to have too much neglected ; it was after this that the French prospect seemed brightest), (5) the charge of the guard. In the middle of the third act of this drama the Prussians began to take part in the action. The battle seems to have begun about 11.30, and about 8 o'clock in the evening the ery "Sauve qui peut"

He Waterloc:!

The econd sbdica- ion,

surren- ler to

. dngland,

1821. |

rose from the guard. A general advance of the English decided the victory, and then the pursuit was very thoroughly accomplished by the Prussians under Gneisenau. Napoleon at first took refuge in a square. At Genappe he left this, and arrived at Charleroi about daybreak with an escort of about twenty horsemen.

He lost probably more than 30,000 out of 72,000 men, but the grand army was utterly dissolved. The whole loss of the allies was somewhat more than 22,000. Had Napoleon been victorious, he would but have opened the war prosperously, for half a million soldiers, in addition to those of Wellington and Bliicher, were on the march for France ; being completely defeated, he had no resource, but was ruined at once. France was conquered, as she had been conquered the year before; but her second fall appears far more humiliating and dismal than her first, when we consider how enthusiastically she had rallied to Napoleon and how instantaneously Napoleon and she had been struck down together. It was a moment of unrelieved despair for the public men who gathered round him on his return to Paris, and among these were several whose fame was of carlier date than his own. La Fayette, the man of 1789; Carnot, organizer of victory to the Convention ; Lucien, who had decided the revolution of Brumaire,—all these met in that comfortless deliberation. Carnot was for a dictatorship of public safety, that is, for renewing his great days of 1793; Lucien too liked

the Roman sound of the word dictator. “Dare!” he said to his brother, but the spring of that terrible will was broken at last. “I have dared too much already,” said Napoleon. Mean- while, in the Chamber of Representatives the word was not dictatorship but liberty. Here La Fayette caused the assembly to vote itself permanent, and to declare guilty of high treason whoever should attempt to dissolve it. He hinted that, if the word abdication were not soon pro- nounced on the other side, he would himself pronounce the word “dechéance.” The second abdication took place on June 22d. “TI offer myself a sacrifice to the hatred of the enemies of France. My public life is finished, and I proclaim my son emperor of the French.” On the 25th he retired to Malmaison, where Josephine had died the year before. He had by no means even yet ceased to hope. When his son was passed over by the Chamber of Repre- sentatives, who named an executive commission of five, he protested that he had not intended to make way fora new Directory ; and, as Carnot and Caulaincourt were on this commission, the circumstances of Brumaire seem to have flashed into his memory. He saw again two Directors supporting him, and the other three (Fouché, Grenier, and Quinette—a traitor and two babies, as he expressed it) might remind him of Barras, Moulin, and Gohier. On the 27th he went so far as to offer his services once more as general, ‘regarding myself still as the first soldier of the nation.” He was met by a refusal, and left Malmaison on the 29th for Rochefort.

France was by this time entering upon another Reign of Terror. Massacre had begun at Marseilles as early as the 25th. What should Napoleon do? He had been before the enemy of every nation, and now he was the worst enemy, if not of France, yet of the triumphant faction in France. He lingered some days at Rochefort, where he had arrived on July 3d, and then, finding it impossible to escape the vigilance of the English cruisers, went on the 15th on board the “ Bellerophon” and surrendered himself to Captain Maitland. It was explained to him that no conditions could be accepted, but that he would be “con- veyed to England to be received in such manner as the ptince regent should deem expedient.” He had written at Rochefort the following characteristic letter to the prince

NAPOLEON

divide my country and to the enmity of the greatest powers of Europe, I have terminated my public career, and I come, like Themistocles, to seat myself at the hearth of the British people. I place myself under the protection of its laws, which I claim from your royal highness as the most powerful, the most constant, and the most generous of my enemies.”

It was perhaps the only course open to him. In France his life could scarcely have been spared, and Bliicher talked of executing him on the spot where the Due d’Enghien had fallen. He therefore could do nothing but what he did. His reference to Themistocles shows that he was conscious of being the worst enemy that England had ever had. Perhaps he remembered that at the rupture of the treaty of Amiens he had studied to envenom the con- test by detaining the English residents in France. Still he might reflect, on the other hand, that England was the only country which had not been trampled down and covered with massacre by his soldiers. It would have been inexcusable if the English Government had given way to vindictive feelings, especially as they could well afford to be magnanimous, having just won the greatest of all vic- tories. But it was necessary to deprive him of the power of exciting new wars, and the experiment of Elba had shown that this involved depriving him of his liberty. The frenzy which had cost the lives of millions must be checked. This was the principle laid down in the dcclara- tion of March 15th, by which he had been excommuni- cated asa public enemy. It was therefore necessary to impose some restraint upon him. He must be separated: from his party and from all the revolutionary party in. Europe. So long as he remained in Europe this would involve positive imprisonment. The only arrangement therefore which would allow him tolerable personal com- fort and enjoyment of life was to send him out of Europe. From these ctnsiderations grew the decision of the Government to send him to St Helena. An Act of Parliament was passed “for the better detaining in custody Napoleon Bonaparte,” and another Act for subjecting St Helena to a special system of government.

He was kept on board the “ Bellerophon ” till August Exile in 4th, when he was transferred to the ‘ Northumberland.” StHelena.

On October 15th he arrived at St Helena, accompanied by Counts Montholon, Las Cases, and Bertrand, with their families, General Gourgaud, and a number of servants. In April 1816 arrived Sir Hudson Lowe, an officer who had been knighted for bringing the news of the capture of Paris in 1814, as governor.

The rest of his life, which continued till May 5, 1821, was occupied partly in quarrels with this governor, which have now lost their interest, partly in the task he had undertaken at the time of his first abdication, that of relating his past life. He did not himself write this narrative, nor does it appear that he even dictated it word

for word. Jt isa report made partly by General Gourgaud, Autobio- partly by Count Montholon, of Napoleon's impassioned s™phy.

recitals ; but they assure us that this report, as published, has been read and corrected throughout by him. It gives a tolerably complete account of the period between the siege of Toulon and the battle of Marengo. On the later periods there is little except a memoir on the campaign of 1815, to which the editors of the Correspondence have been able to add another on Elba and the Hundred Days.

These memoirs have often been compared to the Com- mentaries of Caesar, and their value would indeed be price- less if they related to a period imperfectly known, But an age which has abundance of information, and takes history very seriously, is struck particularly by the elabor- ate falsifications which they contain. A vast number of

regent :—" Royal Highness,—A prey to the factions which | misstatements, many of them evidently intentional, have

XVIT. — 29

Death.

been brought home to him, and in several cases he has tried to foist into history apocryphal documents.

Here, as throughout his life, he shows quite a peculiar talent for misrepresentation. He knows that nine readers out of ten take a lucid statement for a true one, and his statements are always lucid, precise, and direct. And thus it has been, and is, particularly difficult to eradicate the Napoleonic legend, which has grown up in the very midst of the 19th century, and would perhaps never have been seriously shaken but for the failure of the Second Empire. Its growth was helped by the accident that at the moment of quitting the scene he seemed to be fighting for a good cause. Look at Napoleon's career between 1803 and 1814, when it was shaped most freely by his own will; here everything is anti-popular, illiberal, and immoral, as well as ruinous beyond all precedent. In particular he stands out as the great enemy and oppressor of nationalities, so that the nationality movement, when it begins in Spain and Tyrol and spreads through North Germany, is a reaction against his tyranny. But in 1815 he succeeded in posing as a champion and martyr of the nationality principle against the Holy Alliance. The curtain fell upon this pose. It brought back the memory of that Bonaparte who at the end of the 18th century had seemed the antique republican hero dreamed of by Rousseau, and men forgot once more how completely he had disappointed their expectations. By looking only at the beginning and end of his career, and by disregarding all the middle of it, an imaginary Napoleon has been obtained who isa republican, not a despot, a lover of liberty, not an authoritarian, a champion of the Revolution, not the destroyer of the Revolution, a hero of independence, not a conqueror, a friend of the people, not a contemner of the people, a man of heart and virtue, not a ruthless militarist, cynic, and Machiavellian. This illusion led to the restoration of the Napoleonic dynasty in 1851.

He died of an ulcer in the stomach on May 5, 1821. In his will he declared himself a Catholic, wished his ashes to repose ‘‘on the banks of the Seine in the midst of the French people whom he had loved so well,” spoke tenderly of Marie Louise and his son, and of all his relatives except Louis, whom he “ pardoned” for the libel he published in 1820, disavowed the Manuscrit de Sainte-Héléne, a mysti- fication which had recently had much success, defended the execution of D'Enghien, imputed the two conquests of Hrance

to Marmont, Augereau, Talleyrand, and La Fayette, whom he “forgave,” and devoted the English oligarchy, to whom he ascribed his premature death, to the ven- geance of the English people. In a codicil he added a truly Corsican touch, bequeathing 10,000 francs to the

NAPOLEON IL. is the name given by Bonapartists to Frangois Charles Joseph, duke of Reichstadt, the son of Napoleon I. and Marie Louise, who was born at Paris 20th March 1811, and died of laryngeal phthisis at Schénbrunn, near Vienna, 22d July 1832. His empty imperial title is derived from his father’s two abdications in his favour in 1814 and 1815. He was created duke of Reichstadt in 1818 by his grandfather Francis I. of Austria, at whose court he resided after his father’s fall.

NAPOLEON III. (1808-1873). Louis Napoleon, emperor of the French, was the younger son of Louis, king of Holland (brother of Napoleon I.), and of Hortense, daughter of the empress Josephine by her first husband Beauharnais. He was thus both nephew and step-grandson of Napoleon I. His father and mother were on the worst terms, and rarely lived together. Louis was born at Paris on April 20, 1808, at the house belonging to his mother in

LEON

subaltern officer Cantillon, “who has undergone a trial upon the charge of having endeavoured to assassinate Lord Wellington, of which he was pronounced innocent. Cantillon had as much right to assassinate that oligarchist as the latter had to send me to perish upon the rock of St Helena.”

He was buried at Longwood in St Helena; but in the reign of Louis Philippe his remains were removed by per- mission of the English Government to the Invalides at Paris, where a stately dome was erected over the sarcophagus that contains them.

Posterity has not yet ceased to be perplexed by Napoleon’s Litera. He inflames national partialities more than any other ture,

career, personage, and his activity, by embracing many countries, tran- scends the field of view of the historians of each nation.~ Tilla recent time his life was written chiefly from French iemoirs,— when by French writers, with great ignorance of all affairs not French, when by English writers, with imperfect knowledge of all affairs not French or English, and by all writers alike, especially French writers, with extreme prejudice. Then came M. Thiers (1845), professing to write from official papers; but his untrust- worthiness in particular matters has long been demonstrated, and some recent investigators (sce, for instance, De Martal, Les Histo- riens Fantatsistes) profess to convict him of the most outrageous contempt for truth. The story is now being slowly transferred from the basis of memoirs to that of official papers and correspond- ence. The Correspondence of Napoleon himself in thirty-two volumes (which began to appear in 1858) is necessarily the corner- stone, though it has been edited in the most unsatisfactory way, many letters having been withheld and others mutilated, even if some have not been garbled. On this foundation M. Lanfrey based his history, which extends unfortunately only as far as 1811. It is the first essay towards a scrious estimate of the career ; what the writer chicfly wants is a first-hand knowledge of the affairs of forcign nations. It still remains to fuse together these materials with those equally rich that have been lately furnished by German research and by the opening of the different national archives. On German affairs the principal works are those of Ranke, Pertz, Oncken, and Treitschke. For the substance of them the English reader may refer to Professor Seeley's Life and Times of Stein. A good account (founded on original documents) of the Russian campaign by Bogdanovitch may be read in German. Colonel Jung in two works, Bonaparte et son Temps and Lucien Bonaparte et ses Ménoires, shows himself a true historical critic. The former work renders earlier books on the first period of Bonaparte (Coston, Libri, &c.) superfluous. Of military works, Riistow on the Italian campaigns, Charras on the campaign of 1815, and Charras's fragment on the campaign of 1818, with Mr Dorsey Gardner's volume on the campaign of 1815, may be recommended. Recent years have also brought valuable new memoirs, those of Marmont, of Miot de Melito, of Hardenberg (included in Ranke's Z¢fe), of Mme. de Rémusat, of Metternich. Mme. de Rémusat with the Duchesse d'Abrantes gives the best picture of his private life. This whole class of books should be used with caution. Marmont often excites distrust ; still more the earlier memoir-

writer Bour- ricnne. The reader must also be on lis guard against apocryphal works, such as Mémoires tirés des papiers d'un homme @ état, long attributed quite without ground to Hardenberg, and the Manuserié venu de Ste-Héléne. (J. BR. 8.)

the street that is now Rue Lafitte. He was brought up at Paris, and was occasionally taken to the Tuileries and noticed by the emperor, who gave him the cordon of the Legion of Honour. But it is impossible that the child could have remembered much of Napoleon I., who, from the beginning of the Russian campaign in 1812, was con- stantly away from Paris. When, in 1814, the allies entered the French capital, generosity towards the con- quered was the order of the day. Queen Hortense was courteously treated and visited by the czar Alexander, to whom her boy is said to have given a ring. The family continued to reside in France during the first restoration of the Bourbons, and were there when Napoleon returned from Elba. A story that when Napoleon was on the point of setting out for Waterloo the young Louis inter- rupted him in a conference with Marshal Soult, and begged him not to go to the war, is probably mythical. The

second restoration of the Bourbons was not effected in so gentle a spirit as the first. The family of the Bonapartes was banished from France. Hortense —who, like the rest of her kindred, had enriched herself out of public property —retired to Switzerland, and purchased the chateau of Arenenberg, overlooking the Lake of Constance. The next fifteen years were passed by the young Louis partly at Arenenberg and partly at Augsburg, which his mother chose as the place of his education. He grew upa gentle, studious, brooding youth, and the influence of his Augsburg schooling remained both in his habits of thought and in his German-like pronunciation, which was noticeable long afterwards. Until 1830 he attracted little attention from those around him, and none at all from the world, for he was as yet only one among several cadets of the Napoleonic house, Napoleon's own son, the duke of Reichstadt, being still alive. He seems, however, to have had dreams of a great future at an early age; and the instinct that some knowledge of military affairs would be useful to him led him to serve as an artillery volunteer in the Swiss camp of Thun under

Colonel Dufour. The revolution of 1830, which dethroned the Bourbons and awoke insurrectionary movements in so many countries, first launched Louis Napoleon upon his eventful career. Along with his elder brother he joined the Italian bands who were in revolt against the rule of the pope in Romagna. This revolt was put down by Austrian soldiers. The elder of the two brothers fell ill and died at Forli; Hortense, setting out torescue her sons from their danger, found one dead and the other ill with fever, and on the point of falling into the hands of the Austrians at Ancona. After nursing Louis through his illness she succeeded in carrying him away in disguise,and the mother and son, after a most perilous journey, reached France, which they had not seen for sixteen years. They arrived in Paris in April 1831; but the law banishing the Bonapartes was still in force, and the Government of Louis Philippe did not allow them to remain there more than twelve days. They were sent on, like other exiles, to England, and stayed for some weeks in London, from which they returned to Arenen-berg. Louis, now twenty-three years old, was beginning to form the political theories which the memory of the first empire and the actual state of affairs in France under Louis Philippe naturally suggested to a thoughtful and ambitious mind. A pamphlet called Political Reveries, containing the draft of a constitution for France, and an Lssay on Switzerland, Political and Military, were written by him in 1832-33. The first of these contains im a crude and superficial form the ideas elaborated by the author in his later works; the second gained for him the complimentary rank of captain of artillery from the authorities of Bern. Louis remained quiet for some years in Switzerland, but the death of the duke of Reichstadt in 1832 had made him presumptive head of the house of Bonaparte,—his uncle Joseph, the actual head, having no sons; and, in company with some adventurous friends, he formed the design of overthrowing Louis Philippe’s Government by presenting himself to the army. On the 28th October 1836 he came to Strasburg, and, after passing the next day in consultations with Colonel Vaudrey and a few officers who were in the plot, appeared at the quarters of the 4th artillery regiment, which Vaudrey ‘ommanded. This regiment welcomed him, and Louis then went on to the infantry barracks, where, however, the enterprise ended disastrously. He was arrested and imprisoned, and, after a short interval, sent to America by Louis Philippe without trial. He had not long been mn the United States when he received a letter from

his inother stating that she was about to undergo a dangerous operation. He returned to Switzerland in time to see

her before her death (October 5, 1837), denying, prob- ably with truth, that he had made any promise to Louis Philippe to remain absent from Europe. A pamphlet on the Strasburg affair, which was now published at his insti- gation by one of his companions, Lieutenant Laity, led the French ministry to demand his expulsion from Switzerland. The Swiss Government declining to expel him, and, diffi- culties with France becoming imminent, Louis voluntarily withdrew from the country and went to England, He lived there for the next two years, renting a house in Carlton Terrace, leading the life of a man of fashion, and associating with persons of prominence in society and on the turf. Among the gaieties of the time in which he took a part was Lord Eglinton's famous tournament. His real interests, however, were of a more serious char- acter, and in the autumn of 1839 he published the treatise Des Idées Napoléoniennes, a vigorous but sophistical account of Napoleon's work as an administrator and organizer, and of his foreign policy. He idealized the emperor, contrasting his internal government with that of his successors in a series of questions addressed to the existing rulers of France, and he exhibited his wars of conquest as struggles forced upon him by the English and other Governments in consequence of his efforts to spread civilization, and to unite the peoples of Europe in a federal tie. This work was intended by its author to prepare the way for a new attempt against Louis Philippe; and in August 1840, while the body of Napoleon was being brought back from St Helena, he made his second descent upon France. Above fifty persons assisted him on this occasion, the best-known being Count Montholon, a com- panion of Napoleon I. in his exile. A ship was chartered, and the conspirators landed at Boulogne, carrying with them a tame eagle. The enterprise had not even the gleam of success which attended the expedition to Strasburg. No one joined them, and within an hour or two those of the party who were not shot or drowned in attempting to escape were lodged in prison. Louis was now brought to trial before the Chamber of Peers, where he was defended by Berryer. He was condemned to perpetual imprison- ment, and the castle of Ham, on the Somme, was cliosen as the place of his captivity. For the next six years Louis remained

in confinement. He had the qualities which enable a man to bear imprisonment well,—patience, calm- ness, a low vitality and sluggish temperament, and the power of absorbing himself in work. The fortitude with which, during these six dreary years, he pursued the occupations which he had marked out for himself, and retained, with intervals of depression, the belief in his own future, had certainly something of nobility in it. ‘“ Happi- ness,” he wrote, “lies much more in the imagination than in the real world ; and as I carry my imaginary world with me, composed of memories and hopes, I feel as strong in solitude as in the crowd.” In later life he described the prison of Ham as the university where he had taken his honours; and it was no doubt within this prison that he made himself, so far as literary study and discipline ever made him, a statesman. He published at intervals during his confinement, besides numerous occasional papers, an essay on the sugar question, in which he advocated a policy of protection; a treatise on the Extinction of Pauperism, in which he proposed the colonization of waste lands, and the establishment of communities organized on a somewhat socialistic basis ; a scheme for cutting through the isthmus of Panama; and historical fragments on the English Revolu- tion of 1688. He was working also at a Zustory of Artillery, which was never finished. At the end of six years, after asking in vain for permission to visit his father, who was dying, Louis effected his escape, disguising him- self with the aid of his faithful friend and fellow-prisoner,

Dr Conneau, as a workman, and walking out of the gates of the castle with a plank over his shoulder (May 25, 1846). He went again to London, and it is characteristic of the life of exile and imprisonment which he had hitherto passed that he heard for the first time a French tragedy performed when Rachel played in London in July 1846. He was now again in the fashionable world, and he appears to have been compelled to raise very large suins of money from money-lenders. The house in which he lived was No. 10 King Street, St James’s. In February 1848 Louis Philippe lost his throne. Louis Napoleon at once set off for Paris, offering his services to the provisional Govern- ment. He was, however, requested to withdraw from France, and did so. In April 1848, during the Chartist disturbances, he was serving in London as a special con- stable. But his name was kept before the public in

France ; he was put up for election to the assembly, and was elected at Paris and in three departments. As a Bonapartist movement was now evidently beginning, the executive commission demanded authority to arrest Prince Louis as an avowed pretender. This, however, was refused by the assembly, and it was voted that he should take his seat. Louis, however, had the astuteness to remain in the background until the workmen's insurrection of June was over, declaring himself unwilling to be the cause of any disturbance. The insurrection was put down by Cavaignac ;. reaction set in, and Louis now appeared upon the scene as the candidate of order and the representative of authority. His first appearance in the assembly was on

September 26, 1848; and in December he was elected |

president of the republic by above 5,000,000 votes, Cavaignac, who was second on the list, receiving a million and a half, and Lamartine a few thousands. On assuming office he swore in the presence of God to remain faithful to the republic, and to fulfil the duties imposed on him by the constitution. From this time the political history of Louis Napoleon is the history of France (see article France). The principal foreign affair of his presidency was the expedition to Rome, in which, for the sake of anticipating the action of Austria, French troops put down the Roman republic by force, and restored the pope to his sovereignty. Abroad this gained for Louis Napoleon the bitter hostility of Italian patriots, who remembered him as a companion in insurrection against the pope in 1831; and it was one of the many inconsistencies of his position that he was at once a friend of Italian freedom in his heart and yet, as the "man of order" and the "saviour of society" in France, dependent to a great extent upon the support of the priesthood. On the 2d of December 1851 he executed the coup état, which made an end of constitutional government. Approved at first by an enormous majority of the French people, and even by English public men of the type of Palmerston, this act is now almost universally recognized as a disastrous crime. The sham constitution which was promulgated by the president immediately afterwards lasted less than twelve months. In the following November a plebiscite was taken upon the question whether the imperial dignity should be re-established in the person of Louis Napoleon, and an affirmative answer was given

by nearly 8,000,000 voters, against a dissentient minority of 250,000. The empire was inaugurated on the anniversary of the coup état, and for eighteen years Louis Napoleon was sovereign of France. The first ten years of his reign were successful, and in some respects brilliant. His marriage with Eugenie de Montijo, countess of Téba (January 30, 1853), placed beside him a figure which long charmed Paris and itsvisitors. Adhering to the alliance with England which, since 1830, had served France well against the three eastern courts, Napoleon ITI. entered into war against Russia. He had

always represented the restoration of Poland to be one of the tasks left by his uncle to France; and, had his army encountered fewer difficulties in the Crimea, or had the German powers shown any inclination to take part in the struggle against Russia, he would probably have made some serious attempt to restore at least the duchy of Warsaw. But he was no soldier himself; the war proved a serious and embarrassing matter, and in the end Napoleon was far more anxious to make peace than his English ally. The second nationality which associated itself with Napoleonic history, and which had been crushed by the treaties of 1815, was the Italian. Napoleon III. had warning that the cause of Italy could not be safely abandoned. In January 1858 Orsini attempted to take his life. Whether or not the act of Orsini and the letters which he wrote from prison had the effect of quickening the emperor’s determination to do some- thing for Italy may be disputed ; but the time had now come, and in the interviews which took place between Napoleon and Cavour at Plombiéres in the autumn of 1858 the alliance between France and Sardinia against Austria was arranged. In the spring of 1859 French armies entered northern Italy, and the emperor himself took command. On the 4th of June he witnessed the battle of Magenta, and on the next morning entered Milan in company with Victor Emmanuel. During the battle of Solferino on June 24th, he gave directions from the tower of the church of Castiglione. He met the emperor of Austria at Villafranca on July llth, and there agreed to those preliminaries of peace which so deeply disappointed the hopes that had been excited by his own words,—“ Italy free from the Alps to the Adriatic.” Venice was left to Austria; Lom- bardy west of the Mincio alone was liberated; and the subsequent union of the

peninsula under the house of Savoy was no work of Napoleon III., whose own plan was to form an Italian federation under the presidency of the pope, and in virtual dependence upon France. Never- theless the expulsion of Austria from Lombardy was in itself so great a blow that the later effects, though not foreseen by Napoleon, naturally resulted from it; and he has a better title to the gratitude of the Italians than they have generally acknowledged. The feelings with which Napoleon was regarded in Italy before and after the meet- ing of Villafranca are well exhibited in Mrs Browning's two poems, Napoleon in Italy and An August Voice. The annexation of Nice and Savoy to France excited great uneasiness in the British Government, but the treaty of commerce between France and England, which was signed in January 1860, gave the emperor a popularity in Eng- land which he retained even after his fall. With the termination of the Italian war and the inauguration of a policy of free trade the rule of Napoleon III. had reached its best. His ill-judged interference in the affairs of Mexico ended disastrously; the part played by France in reference to the Danish War of 1864 was weak and incon- sequent; and when the great struggle between Prussia and Austria was impending Napoleon appears to have been duped by Count Bismarck, and to have expected to gain Rhenish territory without taking up arms. Mean- while the splendour of the court, the continuous improve- ments in Paris, the rapid growth of wealth throughout France, the subservience of officials, deputies, and journalists, had veiled the decline of administrative energy and the progress of corruption and mismanagement. At length, after the establishment of a great North-German power in 1866, the prestige of the emperor unmistakably sank. He had to loosen the reins of government at home; and yet the grant of any degree of liberty appeared to jeopardize his own existence, Failing in health, in confidence, in reputation, he was hurried into the war of 1870 by the clerical party at court, and by advisers who saw no help

]

for his dynasty but in a successful war. He was present with his only child! at the bombardment of Saarbriicken on August 2d, and then retired into Metz, which he left on the 15th, the day between the battles of Courcelles

and Mars-la-Tour. The empress insisted on the relieving movement which was then undertaken by Macmahon, and the emperor, going with the army, was made prisoner with 90,000 men at Scdan on September 2d. He was sent to the castle of Wilhelmshohe, near Cassel, from which he subsequently retired to England. He lived with the empress at Chislehurst, and died there on January 9, 1873.

Napoleon III. was a thinker and man of letters rather than a statesman. Presuming on the accident of birth to seize absolute power and to direct the affairs of a great nation, he proved him- self totally incapable as an administrator, and allowed office, political and military, to fall into the most unfit hands. Far superior himself, as a man of ideas, to his conqueror the king of Prussia, he never chose and never possessed a minister or a general who could be compared with those selected by his rival. In private life he was kindly and amiable, and the worst acts of his reign were rather those of the adventurers who surrounded him than his

own. (C. A. F.) NAPOLEON, a round game of cards. Any number may play; about four or five makes the best game. When six play the dealer deals himself no hand, but pays or receives the same as the other players. A pack of fifty-two cards is required. The players cut for deal ; the lowest deals. The cards rank as at whist; and the deal goes afterwards in rotation to the left, as at whist. The ecards are shuffled, and cut to the dealer, who deals each player five cards by one at a time, as at whist. The deal being completed, the player to the dealer’s left looks at his hand, and declares how many tricks he will play for (called “standing”). Some players make it compulsory for the eldest hand to declare one trick at least; but if this rule is not in force the eldest hand may decline to play, when he says ‘‘T pass.” If the eldest hand passes, the next player to the left has a similar option of standing or passing, and so on all round. As soon as any one stands, the next player after him must either pass or stand for more tricks than the one before him, and so on all round. If all pass, the hand is not played, and the player to the dealer’s left deals. Some players compel the dealer to play for at least one trick. The stand-hand plays against all the others. He has the first lead, and the first card he leads makes the trump suit. Each player plays one card at a time in rotation, as at whist, except that the played cards remain face upwards on the table in front of the persons playing them. The

cards played one by each player constitute a “trick.” The players must follow suit if able. If unable to follow suit a player may play any card he pleases. No one is obliged to head the trick nor to tramp. If the stand-hand succeeds in making at least the number of tricks he stood for he wins; if not he loses. Tf he wins he receives from each of the other players the amount previously agreed on for each trick stood for; if he loses he similarly pays all the others. If any one declares “Nap,” 2.e., that he will playfor all five tricks, no subsequent Player can stand. The hand is played as before. If the Player declaring Nap wins he receives double stakes all round; if he loses he only pays single stakes all round. ‘ Rules of Play.—There is no misdeal, and consequently no penalty or errors in dealing. If a card is exposed in dealing, or the cards are wrongly dealt, there must be a fresh deal, even if the hand has een partly played. Any one, except the stand-hand, playing out of turn, or exposing a card after the deal is completed, or playing with the wrong number of cards, has to pay a fine of the valuc of three tricks to the stand-hand, in addition to what he may lose if the hand is played out ; and if the stand-hand loses the ‘offender mcelves nothing. If the stand-hand plays with the wrong number

A cards, and wins, he reccives nothing, and there is a fresh deal. a player, not the stand-hand, revokes he has to pay the value of ee E Sane-hand, revokes he has to pay the value of

” Napoleon Eugs ; — i gene Louis, born at Paris, March 16 In Zululand, June 1, 1879. ; ee

a0

five tricks to the stand-hand, in addition to what he may lose on the hand. The cards are played over again from the point at whieh the revoke was made, and if the stand-hand loses the revoker receives nothing. If the stand-hand revokes he loses what he declared to play for.

NARA, the oldest of the successive capitals of Japan, is situated in the north of Sakai ken (province of Yamato), about 65 miles east of Ozaka, in 34° 4’ N. lat. and 135° 49’ E. long., on the slope of a range of picturesque hills, beautifully wooded, with cryptomerias, evergreen oaks, the rare Podocarpus Nageia, &c. From 710, when it was chosen as her residence by Gemmei

Tenno, till 794, when Kioto was founded by Kuwammu Tenno, Nara was the chief seat of the mikados; and, as during that period Japanese art was in its early vigour, and was largely patron- ized by the Shinto and Buddhist religions, it rapidly became a great and sumptuous city. At present (though hardly a tenth of its former size) it has a population of about 21,500, living in 6000 houses; and in antiquarian interest it is hardly second to any place in the empire. The site of the old imperial palace, which stood about four miles from the town on the way to Ozaka, is now indicated only by a small Shinto temple ; but about a mile off are the tombs of Gemmei Tenno and Gen-cho Tenno. Of the many religious buildings still extant, two especially demand attention—the Shinto temple of Kusuga and the Buddhist To-dai-ji (Great Temple of the East), The former was founded in 767 in the time of Sho-to-ku Tenno ; and its Kami chapels with their rough red-painted log-work afford fine examples of primitive Japanese architecture. A rough wooden building constructed for storing the mikado's furniture in the 8th century is still extant, and among the articles accumulated within are many of those mentioned in the original inventory. In the temple-park are herds of tame deer (Cervus shika, Sieb.); and little images of deer and trinkets from deer's horn are the favourite charms purchased by the pilgrims. Within the enclosure stands a curious old trunk on which are growing the camellia, the cherry, the nandina, the wistaria, and what the Japanese call the seven-colour bush (nana-iro-iro ri) The To-dai-ji was begun by Shomu Tenno in the 8th century, and was last restored in the 18th. At present the buildings enclose a quadrangle 520 feet by 620,—the south side being mainly occupicd by the huge, ungainly, and no longer perpendicular hall containing the Dai Butsu, or colossal statue of Buddha. The casting of this wonderful piece of work was, after eight failures, accomplished in 749 by Takusho, an artist from Corea. On two occasions the head has been melted during the burning of the temple (1180 and 1567), and from 1567 to 1697 the statue stood exposed to the weather ; but in the main it is marvellously perfect. The height of the figure is 55 feet, the face is 13 feet long, the ears 8, the nose 3, and the great halo has a diameter of 80 feet. On a hill to the east of the temple stands a bell- house with a monster bell, cast in 732, 134 feet high, 9 feet across the mouth, and weighing 37 tons. Of the great Buddhist temple Ko-buku-ji, which was founded in 710, and burnt for the third time in 1717, there remains little save a five-storied pagoda 150 feet high, dating from 730.

NARBADA. See Nerspuppa.

NARBONNE, a city of France, chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Aude, lies 5 miles from the Mediterranean, on the Robine Canal, a branch of the Canal du Midi, which connects it with the port of La Nouvelle, and on the railway from Toulouse to Cette, 93 miles east-south-east of the former city, at the point where the line for Barcelona wa Perpignan breaks off. The Robine Canal divides Narbonne into two distinct portions,

the bowrg and the cité. The latter is one of the oldest and most interesting of French towns. The cathedral (St Just) is the third on the site, and dates from the close of the 13th century, when the choir (130 feet high) was built. Two towers were added in the 15th century. An unusual effect is produced by a double row of crenella- tion taking the place of balustrades on the roof of the choir chapels and connecting the pillars of the flying buttresses. Among the sepulchral monuments in the chancel may be noticed the alabaster tomb of Cardinal de Brigonnet, minister of state under Charles VIII. The chapter-house, of the 15th century, has a vaulted roof supported on four free pillars. From the top of the towers, 194 feet high, a magnificent view is obtained over the Narbonne plain, the valley of the Aude, the Montagne Noire, the Cevennes, the hills of La Clape, which lie between the city and the sea, the Canigou, and the Corbiéres. The apse of the cathedral was formerly joined to the fortifications of the archiepiscopal palace, and the two buildings are still connected by a mutilated cloister of the 14th and 15th centuries. On the front of the palace are three square towers of unequal height. Between the Tour des Télégraphes (1318), crenellated and turreted at the corners, and that of St Martial (1380), machicolated and pierced by Gothic openings, a new facade was erected in the style of the 15th century after the plans of Viollet- le-Duc. This portion of the building now serves as hétel de ville, and its upper stories are occupied by the Narbonne museum, one of the best outside of Paris, containing pictures, pottery, nearly three thousand medals, and (in the old guard-room) a rich variety of Greek, Carthaginian, and Roman antiquities. The palace garden also contains many fragments of Roman work once built into the now dismantled fortifications ; and the

Musée Lapidaire in the Lamourguier buildings (formerly a Benedictine convent) has six hundred and twenty bas-reliefs and three hundred and twenty-three ancient inscriptions. The church of St Paul, though partly Romanesque, is in the main a striking and for the south of France a rare example of a building of the first half of the 13th century in the Gothic style of the north. phaguses and fine Renaissance wood carving. Narbonne has a good trade, especially in wine and spirituous liquors,— the surrounding country growing (at the rate of 120 gallons per acre) strong alcoholic wines, largely in demand for “fortifying” weaker vintages. As a matter of course this gives employment to large numbers of coopers; and besides there are in the town several verdigris factories, a sulphur refinery, and tanneries. The honey of Narbonne is famed throughout Europe. The population in 1881 was 28,134.

Long before the Roman invasion of Gaul Narbonne was a flourishing city. It was there that the Romans in 118 z.c, founded their first colony in Gaul; and they constructed great works to protect the city from inundation and to improve its port. The seat of a proconsul and a station for the Roman fleet, Narbo Martius became the rival of Massilia. But in 150 A.v. it suffered greatly from a conflagration, and the division of Gallia Narbonensis into two provinces lessened its importance as a capital. Alans Suevi, Vandals, each held the city for a brief space, and at last, in 418, it was more permanently occupied by the Visigoths. In 719, after a siege of two years, it was captured by the Saracens, and by them its fortifications were restored and extended. Charles Martel, after the battle of Poitiers, and Pippin the Short, in 752, were both repulsed from its walls; but on a new attempt, after an investment of seven years, and by aid of a traitor, the Franks managed again to force their way into Narbonne. Charlemagne made the city the capital of the duchy of Gothia, and divided it into three lordships—one for the bishop, another for a Frankish lord, and the third for the Jews, who, occupying their own quarter, possessed schools, synagogues, and a university famous in the Middle Ages. The viscounts who succeeded the Frankish lord sometimes aeknowledged the authority of the counts of Toulouse, sometimes that of the counts of Barccloua. In the 13th century

It possesses some ancient Christian sarco- ,

the crusade against the Albigenses spared the city, but the arch- bishopric was seized by the pope's legate Amaury, who took the title of duke of Narbonne. Simon de Montfort, however, deprived

'him of this dignity, receiving from Philip Augustus the duchy of

Narbonne along with the county of Toulouse. By his expulsion of the Jews Philip the Fair hastencd the decay of the city; and about the same period the Aude, which had formerly been diverted by the Romans, ceased to flow towards Narbonne and the harbour was silted up, to the further disadvantage of the place. United to the French crown in 1507, Narbonne was enclosed by a new line of walls under Francis I., but having ceased to be a garrison town it had the last portions of its ramparts demolished in 1870.

NARBOROUGH, Sir Joun (0d. 1688), naval com- mander, was descended from an old Norfolk family. He received his commission in 1664, and in 1666 was promoted lieutenant for gallantry in the action with the Dutch fleet off the Downs in June of that year. After the peace he was chosen to conduct a voyage of exploration in the South Seas. He set sail from Deptford on the 26th November 1669, and entered the Straits of Magellan in October of the following year, but returned home in June 1671 without accomplishing his original purpose. A narrative of the expedition was published at London in 1694 under the title An Account of several late Voyages and Doscoveries to the South and North. During the second Dutch war Narborough was second captain of the lord high-admiral's ship the "Prince," and conducted himself with such conspicuous valour at the battle of Solebay (Southwold Bay) in May 1672 that he won special appro- bation, and shortly afterwards was made rear-admiral and knighted. In 1675 he was sent to suppress the Tripoline piracies, and by the bold expedient of despatching gun- boats into the harbour of Tripoli at midnight and burning the ships he induced the dey to agree toa treaty. Shortly after his return he undertook a similar expedition against the Algerines. In 1680 he was appointed commissioner of the navy, an office he held till his death in 1688. He was buried at Knowlton church, Kent, where a beautiful marble monument has been erected to his memory.

NARCISSUS, a genus of bulbous plants belonging to the family Amaryllidacee. There are twenty or thirty wild forms, natives of central Europe and the Mediterranean region, while one extends through Asia to Japan. From

, these, or rather from some of these, by cultivation and

hybridization, have arisen the very numerous forms which adorn our gardens in spring (see vol. xii. p. 257). The most interesting feature botanically is the “corona,” or “cup,” which springs from the base of the flower-segments. This gives the special character to the flower, and the

‘ members of the genus are classified according to the length

of this organ as compared with that of the segments. Much has been written as to the real nature of this cup, but the most probable supposition is. that it does not, as once supposed, represent one or more rows of modified stamens, but is simply an excrescence or “enation” from the mouth of the flower-tube, and probably is in some way connected with the fertilization of the flowers by insect agency. NARCOTICS are substances having the physiological action, in a healthy animal, of producing lethargy or stupor, which may pass into a state of profound coma or uncon- sciousness along with complete paralysis, terminating in death. Certain substances of this class are used in medicine for the relief of pain, and are then called anodynes, whilst another group produce profound sleep, and are consequently known as hypnotics. In one sense, anzesthetics, such as chloroform and ether, may be held to be narcotics, but, as they are usually volatile substances causing unconsciousness for a comparatively short time, they are conveniently separated from the true narcotics, the effects of which are much more lasting. These dis- tinctions are toa great extent artificial, as it is evident that a substance capable of producing partial insensibility

st

-~

to pain, or sleep, will mevitably m larger doses cause pro- found coma ending in death. Hence we find the same substances sometimes classed as

anodynes and at other For example, small doses of opium, or of one or other of its preparations, relieve pain, whilst larger doses act as hypnotics, causing deep sleep passing As examples of anodynes, we have optum and some of the alkaloids in it, Cannabis indica or Indian hemp, belladonna and its alkaloid atropia, hyoscyamus or

times as hypnotics.

Into coma.

Name of – Plant.

Name of Substance.

Inspissated juice of Papa- ver somnifer- um, or poppy.

Opium,

From opium.

Morphia. See above.

Alcoholic ex- tract of Canna- bis sativa, as it grows in India and in Ameriea.

Indian Ilemp.

Leaves and roots of Atropa Belladonna.

Atropa Bella- donna,

| Belladonna.

‘ Atropia,

Stramonium| Leaves and

Stramonium.

Hyoscyamus} Leaves and seeds of Hyos-

cyamus niger.

Tops. The dried strobilesofthe female plant of Humulus Lupulus.
Lactuearlum| Coner ete juice of Lac- L | tuca virosa,

Common Names,

Opium,

Morphia.

Indian hemp. Gunjah is the dricd plant sold in Cal- cutta bazaars for smoking ; Churrus is the resinous exudation of the epidermis; Hash- ish is an Arabian preparation.

Deadly shade.

night-

Atropine, .

Jamestown weed,

secds of Datura) thorn-apple.

Tlenbane.

The hop or hop- vine.

Juiee of lettuce,

In 100 parts of

NARCOTICS

Alkaloids.

fine opium I0 parts of morphia, 6 of narcotina, 1 of pa-

paverina, ‘15 of thebaia or para- morphia, ‘03 of

codeia, Ol of me- conia, ‘02 of nar- ceia, and 4 of me- conic acid,

Morphia,

Described in text.

Physiological Action.

classes of animals. May cause eon- vulsions from increased activity of reficx centres in the spinal cord, especially in animals having small brains. Causes slowing of heart’s action by stimulation of inhibitory nerves of heart. Destroys the action of the respiratory eentres in medulla. Stimulates oculo-motor centres, and henee eauscs eontrac- tion of pupil.

Similar to opium. Papaverina, narceia, meconia, eryptopia, codcia,

employed as hydro-| and thebaia or paramorphia have

chlorate of morphia or acetate of morphia.

No alkaloid has been separated. The resin is the active preparation.

Atropia.

Atropine, C,7Ho3NOz , employed as sul- phate of atropine.

Daturia, ldentieal with atropia.

Hyoseyamia. Ci5H23NO3.

Lupulina,

all actions of a narcotic character, but eodcia and thebaia have more of an exciting action and little of a narcotic action.

Exhilaration; great mental excite- ment, with pleasant and often gor- geous visions; a state of ecstasy, with loud laughter; loss of sense of time, or a feeling as if pleasurable sensations were infinitely pro- longed. Pupils dilated. Loss of strength, drowsiness, sleep, coma.

See Atropia.

See deseription in text. In- ereased frequency of pulse, with rise of artetial pressure. Fall of blood pressure with very large doses. Paralyses the inhibitory action of the vagus nerve, so that stimulation of this nerve dnr- ing atropine poisoning does not cause slowing of heart. Small doses cause contraction of capillary vessels, thus acting as a stimulant to vaso-motor centres. Destroys the excitability of motor nerves passing to muscles generally, thus producing inability to move. Weakens and finally abolishes the reflex excitability of the spinal cord. Large doses weaken action of motor nerves concerned in the movements of respiration. Sup- presses secretion of the mucous and salivary glands, probably by paralysing secretory nerves. Large doses lower the temperature of the body. Causes dilatation of pupil, lessened intra-ocular pressure, and paralysis of accommodation.

Saie as belladonna and atropia.

Almost identical with atropia. There is even greater excitement than in cases of belladonna poison- ing, indicating a stronger action on the cerebrum. The action of the heart is first stimulated as with atropia, but it is afterwards much depressed, as shown by the lessen- ing number of pulse beats. Pupil dilated. Mouth dry and parched.

A feeble nareotic, causing, when

{infusions are taken freely heavi-

Laetucinia.

ness, and perhaps slecp.

Very feeble narcotic. In very large doses, say half an ounee, has a soothing sedative cffect.

Acts on all

Poisonous Dose.

Varies according to habit. Opium caters ean take 20 to 30 grains with impunity. Ito3 grains produce well- marked symptoms in ordinary persons. Me- dicinal dose for adult is 3 to 2 grains.

Varies according to habit. 2 to 3 grains by stomach dangerous. 4 of a grain for an adult man or 7, for an adult woman isthe largest safe dose when injected under the skin.

Variesmuch with dif- ferent specimens of resin. 4 of a grain may cause marked effects. 2 to 3 grains dangerous.

80 grains of root have caused death. Somc- times the medicinal extract of belladonna is so weak that a dose of 2 draehms may not be fatal. y, or 7, of a grain of atropine may cause alarming

symptums, and half a grain would almost certainly be fatal.

Not aseertained. Children have been poisoned by eating the seeds,

dy of a grain of hyoscyamia will cause appreeiable effects. ge Of & grain causcs sleepiness, dryness of mouth, and dilatation of pupil. sf causes gnickening of heart’s action; and , will produce first quicken- ing and then slowing of the heart. The half of a grain would be dangerous.

Not regarded as a poison.

Not regarded as a poison,

231

| henbane and its alkaloid hyoscyamia, and the anesthetics properly so called, such as chloroform, ether, ethidene, &c. The hypnotics are such

substances as opium and its alka- loids, chloral hydrate, hyoscyamus, lactucarium (obtained from Lactuca virosa, the strong-scented lettuce), and pre- parations of Humulus Lupulus (the common hop), such as inhalations of the steam of infusions, or hop-pillows. In addition we may group as narcotics certain substances which cause not only narcotism, but also the specific effect

Treatment of Case of Poisoning.

Evacuate the stomach by an

emetic or by the stomach-pump. Give at once a large table-spoonful of imustard in a tumblerful of tepld water, and repeat in a quar- ter of an hour if necessary; to be followed by a powder containing 30 grains of sulphate of zinc and 20 grains of ipecacuanha powder. Keep up respiration by constantly inducing the patient to breathe veluntarily. Cause the patient to walk about, and endeavour to keep him awake. Give him very strong infusions of coffee or tea, especially green tea. In the last stages use artificial respiration. Same as for opium.

Seldom fatal, If a large dose has been taken, use emetic of inustard and water, or stomach- pump ; after this keep the patient quiet, allay excitement, and if symptoms of depression come on small doses of alcohol are useful.

Same treatment as for opium poisoning. The object aimed at is to prevent absorption of the poison by the free use of emetics. External stimulation by bathing the fret in mustard and water, by rubbing or kneading the skin, along with the free use of tannic acid suspended in watcr, are the best remedial measures. There is often retention of urine. This must be relieved by the eatheter.

Treatment the sameas for bella- donna and atropia.

Treatment the saine as for bclla- donna aud atropia.

of dilatation of the pupil of the eye, and disorder of the mechanism of focussing the eye for various distances, resulting in dimness and confusion of vision. Such are sometimes called mydriatics (uvdpidors, dimness of sight) ; they embrace belladonna, henbane, stramonium, cryptopia (one of the alkaloids in opium), and Indian hemp.

All of these substances act on the nervous system, and, although the physiological action of each is characteristic, there are many symptoms common to the whole group ; indeed the course of action of all shows three well-defined stages :—(1) there is first a period of apparent exaltation of function ; (2) this is followed by a period of diminution and perversion of functional activity; and (3) there is a time of loss of function, in which there is profound coma and paralysis. This is well illustrated by a description of the symptoms caused by opium. A small dose not unfre- quently acts as a stimulant; there is a sense of vigour, a capability of severe exertion, and an endurance of labour without fatigue.

A somewhat different mode of action is illustrated by the physiological effects of belladonna, or of its alkaloid atropine or atropia. A small dose causes dryness of the throat and mouth, dilatation of the pupils, dimness of vision except for distant objects, and often double vision. The pulse becomes quick, rising, in an adult, from 80 to 120 or 160 beats per minute ; and there is often a bright red flush over the skin. The intellectual powers are at first acute and strong, but they soon become confused. There is giddiness, confusion of thought, excitement, a peculiar talkative wakeful restiveness, in which the person shows that his mind is occupied by a train of fancies or is haunted by visions and spectres. Often there is violent delirium before sleep comes on. The sleep after a large dose deepens into stupor, with great muscular prostration or paralysis. During all the time the pupils are widely dilated. Death occurs from failure both of the heart’s action and of respiration.

NAR—-NAR

The chief facts regarding the true narcotics are briefly summarized in the accompanying table.

Conium or hemlock (the leaves and the fruit of Conium macu- latum) and its alkaloid conia are sometimes erroneously classed as narcotics. These substances act more in the way of depressing or weakening muscular aetivity, by influencing the motor nerves, or the nerve-endings in the muscles, and they have no effect on sensory nerves and sensory centres. Neither is aconite a true nareotic (see ACONITE).

Hydrate of chloral has since 1872, when it was introduced as a therapeutic agent by Dr Oscar Liebreich of Berlin, come into great favour as an anodyneand nareotic. Itis ethylic aldehyde in which a atoms of chlorine are substituted for 3 atoms of hydrogen; thus :— ;

C,H,O + 6Cl = C,HCI,O + 8HCl. Aldehyde. Chlorine. Chioral. Hydrochloric acid.

The formula for the hydrate is C,HCl,0.2HO,. In small doses, say 10 to 20 grains, chloral is a pure hypnotic, and the sleep obtained is quiet and refreshing. In larger doses it is narcotic, abolishing thought and motor power, with profound coma. Re- spiration is much enfeebled, and the pulse becomes small and weak. The pupils are widely dilated. It is not uniform in its action, so that occasionally death may occur after a comparatively small dose, even in persons who have been in the habit of taking the medicine. For this reason, the habit of taking chloral without medical advice, and of taking it frequently, is to be strongly deprecated. An allied substance called croton-chloral hydrate (CgH,C]l30..2HO) has no hypnotic properties, but is of use when applied externally for severe neuralgia of the face, due to affections of the fifth cranial nerve (tic dowlowrcuz).

Narcotics are used in medicine for various purposes. (1) Zo relieve pain. The best one for this purpose is opium, cither in the solid form or as laudanum (tincture of opium). It is most usefulin cases of spasmodic pain. (2) 7’o caase sicep. In some cases opium may be useful for this purpose; but it causes disorder of the digestive functions, and there is the further danger of producing the ‘‘opium habit,” a vice ruinous alike to body and mind. On the whole hydrate of chloral is the best and safest hypnotic, but it is not without its dangers, and it ought not to be taken except under medical advice. (3) Zo allay irritation. Where there is increased sensibility, with continued. irritating though not severe pain in any part, opium or

hyoscyamus inay be used with benefit. (4) Zo cause dilatation of pupil. For this purpose, solutions of atropine are in constant use by ophthalmic surgeons. A few drops of solution of atropine, or a soluble disk containing atropine, introduced into the eye, cause dilatation of the pupil and diminished tension in the eyeball, at the same time soothing pain. (5) Zo arrest secretion. For this purpose opium, or belladonna, and atropine are espeeially useful. Small doses of atropine are given to arrest secretion in cases of profuse salivation, and extract of belladonna applied to the skin is used for stopping the secretion of milk from the mam- mary gland. (J. G. M.)

NARD. See SPIKENARD.

NARSES, an officer in the household of Justinian, who was charged with the reconquest and government of Italy, is one of the most important historical figures of the 6th century. He was a eunuch, but we are nowhere distinctly informed that he was of servile origin. A native of Persarmenia (that is to say, of that portion of Armenia which was allotted to Persia by the partition of 384), he may have been prepared and educated by his parents for service in an Oriental court. If the statement that he died at the age of ninety-five be correct, he was born about the year 478. He was probably brought young to Con- stantinople, and attained a footing in the oficiwm of the grand chamberlain. From a subordinate place he rose in course of time to be one of the three (spectabiles) “chartularii,” a position implying some literary attain- ment, and involving the custody of the archives of the household. Hence, probably in middle life, he became ‘preepositus sacri cubiculi,” an “ illustris,” and entitled along with the preetorian prefects and the generals to the highest rank at the imperial court. In this capacity, in 530, he received into the emperor’s obedience another Narses, a fellow-countryman as well as namesake, together with his two brothers Aratius and Isaac. These Pers- armenian generals, having formerly fought under the standard of Persia, now in consequence of the successes of Belisarius transferred their allegiance to the emperor,

‘ ;) : ;

NARSES

came to Constantinople, and received costly gifts from the great minister.

In the year 532 the celebrated insurrection known as the Nika broke out in Constantinople, when for some hours the throne of Justinian seemed doomed to overthrow. It was saved partly by the courage of his wife, Theodora, and partly by the timely prodigality of Narses, who stole out into the capital, and with large sums of money bribed the leaders of the “blue” faction (which was aforetime loyal to the emperor) to shout as of old “J ustiniane Auguste Tu Vincas.”

The African and Italian wars followed (533-534, 535— 554; see JuSTINIAN, vol. xiii, p. 797). In the fourth year of the latter war the splendid successes of Belisarius, who with a handful of troops had conquered the better part of Italy, reoccupied Rome, and held it against 150,000 Goths, vainly besieging it for 374 days, had awakened both joy and fear in the heart of his master. Reinforcements amounting to 10,000 men were sent into Italy, and Narses the eunuch was placed at their head. Belisarius understood that Narses came to serve under him like any other officer of distinguished but subordinate rank, and he received a letter from Justinian which seemed to support this conclu- sion. But the friends of Narses continually plied him with suggestions that he, a great officer of the household, in the secrets of the emperor, had been sent to Italy, not to serve as a subaltern, but to hold independent command and win military glory for himself. The truth probably lay between the two. Justinian could not deprive his great general of the supreme command, yet he wished to have a very powerful emissary of the court constantly at his side. He would have him watched but not hampered.

The two generals met (538 A.D.) at Fermo on the Adriatic coast. The first interference of Narses with the plans of Belisarius was beneficial. John, one of the officers highest in rank under Belisarius, had pressed on to Rimini, contrary to the instructions of his chief, leaving in his rear the difficult fortress of Osimo untaken. His daring march had alarmed the Goths for Ravenna, and induced them to raise the siege of Rome; but he himself was now shut up in Rimini, and on the point of being forced by famine to surrender. Belisarius and his followers were prepared to let him pay the penalty of his rashness and disobedience. But his friend Narses so insisted

on the blow to the reputation of the imperial arms which would be produced by the surrender of Rimini that he carried the council of war with him, and Belisarius had to plan a brilliant march across the mountains, in conjunction with a@ movement by the fleet, whereby Rimini was relieved while Osimo was still untaken. When Belisarius and Jobn met, the latter ostentatiously thanked Narses and Narses alone for his preservation.

His next use of his authority was less fortunate. Milan, which was holding out for the Romans, was also hard pressed by famine. The two generals who were sent to relieve it loitered disgracefully over their march, and when Belisarius wished to despatch further reinforcements the commanders of these new troops refused to stir till Narses gave them orders. Belisarius wrote to the eunuch pointing out the necessity of unity of purpose in the imperial army. At length, grudgingly, Narses gave his consent, and issued the required orders ; but it was too late. Milan had been compelled by extremity of famine to surrender, and with it the whole province of Liguria fell into the hands of the enemy. This event forced Justinian to recognize the dangers of even a partially divided command, and he recalled Narses to Constantinople.

Twelve years elapsed before Narses returned to Italy. Meanwhile there had been great vicissitudes of fortune both for the Romans and the Goths, Italy, which appeared

to have been won by the sword of Belisarius, had been lost again by the exactions and misgovernment of Alexander. The young and gallant Totila had raised up a new army, had more than kept Belisarius at bay in five difficult campaigns (544-548), and now held nearly all the country. Belisarius, however, in this his second series of campaigns, had never been properly seconded by his master. In the spring of 552 Narses set sail from Salona on the Dalmatian coast with a large and well-appointed army. It was a Roman arniy only in name. Lombards, Heruli, Huns, Gepid, and even Persians followed the standard of Narses, men equal in physical strength and valour to the Goths, and ‘inspired by the liberal pay which they received and by the hope of plunder.

The eunuch seems to have led his army round the head of the Adriatic Gulf. By skilfully co-operating with his fleet he was able to cross the rivers of Venetia without fighting the Gothic general Teias, who intended to dispute their passage. Having mustered all his forces at Ravenna, he marched southward. He refused to be detained before Rimini, being determined to meet the Gothic king as soon as possible with his army undiminished. The occupation of the pass of Furlo (Petra Pertusa) by the Goths prevented his marching by the Via Flaminia, but, taking a short circuit, he rejoined the great road near Cagli. A little further on, upon the crest of the Apennines, he was met by Totila, who had advanced as far as Tadini (which Procopius calls Taginas). Parleys, messages, and harangues by each general followed. At length the line of battle was formed, and the Gothic army (probably greatly inferior in number to the Byzantine) was hopelessly routed, the king receiving a mortal wound as he was hurrying from the battlefield.

With Totila fell the last hopes of the Gothic kingdom of Italy. The brave young Teias, who was proclaimed his successor, protracted for a few months a desperate resistance in the rocky peninsula of Castellaniare, overlooking the Bay of Naples. At length want of provisions forced him into the plain, and there by the river Sarno, almost in sight of Pompeii, was fought (553) a battle which is generally named from the overlooking range of Mons Lactorius (Monte Lettere). The actual site of the battle, however, is about half a mile from the little town of Angri, and its memory is still vaguely preserved by the name Pozzo dew Goti (Well of the Goths). In this battle Teias was killed. He was the last king of the Ostrogoths.

The task of Narses, however, was not yet ended. By the invitation of the Goths an army of 75,000 warlike Alemanni and Franks, the subjects of King Theudibert, crossed the Alps under the command of two Alemannic nobles, the brothers Leuthar and Butilin (553). The great strategic talents of Narses were shown even more conspicuously in this than in his previous and more brilliant campaigns. Against the small but gallant bands of Totila and Teias he had adopted the policy of rapid marches and imperative challenges to battle. His strategy in dealing with the great host from Gaul was of the Fabian kind. He kept them as long as he could north of the Apennines, while he completed the reduction of the fortresses of Tuscany. At the approach of winter he gathered his troops into the chief cities and

declined operations in the field, while the Alemannic brothers marched through Italy killing and plundering. When the spring of 554 appeared, Leuthar with his half of the army insisted on marching back to Gaul, there to deposit in safety the plunder which they had reaped. In an unim- portant engagement near Pesaro he was worsted by the Roman generals, and this hastened his northward march. At Ceneda in Venetia he died of a raging fever. Pestilence broke out in his army, which if not absolutely annihilated thereby was so wasted as to be incapable of further opera-

tions in Italy. Meanwhile his brother Butilin, whose army was also suffering grievously from disease, partly induced by too free indulgence in the grapes of Campania, encamped at Casilinum, the site of modern Capua. Here, after a time, Narses accepted the offered battle. The barbarians, whose army was in the form of a wedge, pierced the Roman centre. But by a most skilful manceuvre Narses contrived to draw his lines into a curve, so that his mounted archers on each flank could aim their arrows at the backs of the troops who formed the other side of the Alemannic wedge. They thus fell in whole ranks by the hands of unseen antagonists. Soon the Roman centre, which had been belated in its march, arrived upon the field and completed the work of destruction. Butilin and his whole army were destroyed, though we need not accept the statement of the Greek historian (Agathias, ii. 9) that only five men out of the barbaric host of 30,000 escaped, and only eighty out of the Roman 18,000 perished (554).

The only other important military operation of Narses which is recorded—and that indistinctly—is his defeat of the Herulian king Sindual, who had served under him at Capua, but who subsequently revolted, was defeated, taken captive, and hanged by the eunuch's order (565). In the main the thirteen years after the battle of Capua (554— 567) were years of peace, and during them Narses ruled Italy from Ravenna with the title of prefect.1 He rebuilt Milan and other cities destroyed in the Gothic war; and two inscriptions on the Salarian bridge at Rome have pre- served to modern times the record of repairs effected by him in the year 564.2

His administration, however, was not popular. The effect of the imperial organization was to wring the last solidus out of the emaciated:and fever-stricken population of Italy, and the belief of his subjects was that no small portion of their contributions remained in the eunuch's private coffers. At the close of 565 Justinian died, and a deputation of Romans waited upon his successor Justin IT. , representing that they found "the Grecks" harder task-masters than the Goths, that Narses the eunuch was determined to reduce them all to slavery, and that unless he were removed they would transfer their allegiance to the barbarians. This deputation led to the recall of Narses, which took place in 567, and was accompanied, according to a somewhat late tradition, by an insulting message from the empress Sophia, who sent him a golden distaff, and bade him, as he was not a man, go and spin wool in the apart- ments of the women. "T will spin her such a hank," Narses is represented as saying, "that she shall not find the end of it in her lifetime "; and forthwith he sent mes- sengers to the Lombards in Pannonia, bearing some of the fruits of Italy, and inviting them to enter the land which bore such goodly produce. Hence came the invasion of Alboin (568), which wrested the greater part of Italy from the empire, and changed the destinies of the peninsula.®

1 Gibbon's statement that Narses was "the first and most powerful of the exarchs of Ravenna" is more correct in substance than in form. The title of exarch does not appear to be given to Narses by any contemporary writer. He is always ' Prefectus Italie," '* Patricins," or '* Dux Italiz," except when he bears the style of his former offices in the imperial household, '' Ex-Prepositus [Cubiculi]" or ''Chartularius" (compare Rubeus, Historia Ravennates, p. 175).

2 See Gruter, p. 161.

3 This celebrated story seems to be unknown to strictly contem- porary authors. We find no hint of it in Agathias (who wrote between 566 and 582), Marius (532-596), or Gregory of Tours (540-594), The possibly contemporary Liver Pontificalis and Isidore of Seville (560-636) hint at the invitation to the Lombards, Fredegarius (so- called), who probably wrote in the middle of the 7th century, and Paulus Diaconus, towards the close of the 8th, supply the saga-like details, which become more minute the further the

narrators are from the action. On the whole, the transaction, though it is too well vouched for to allow us to dismiss it as entirely fabulous, cannot take its place among the undoubted facts of history.

NAR—NAR

Narses, who had retired to Naples, was persuaded by the pope (John III.) to return to Rome. He died there about 573, and his body, enclosed in a leaden coffin, was carried to Constantinople and buried there. Several years after his death the secret of the hiding-place of his vast stores of wealth is said to have been revealed by an old man to the emperor Tiberius IT., for whose charities to the poor and the captives they furnished an opportune supply.

Narses was short in stature and lean in figure. His freehanded- ness and affability made him very popular with his soldiers. Evagrius tells us that he was very religious, and paid especial reverence to the Virgin, never engaging in battle till he conceived that she had given lim the signal. Our best authorities for his life are his contemporaries Procopius and Agathias. For the period after 555 we have to depend chiefly on fragincutary noticcs in the authors whose names have been mentioned above. (T. He)

NARSINHPUR, a district in the chief-commissioner- ship of the Central Provinces, India, lying between 22° 45’ and 23° 15’ N, lat. and between 78° 38’ and 79° 39’ E. long., bounded on the N. by Bhépdl state and by Sagar, Damoh, and Jabalpur districts, E. by Seoni, 8. by Chhind- ward, and W. by Hoshangabad. It forms a portion of the upper part of the Nerbudda valley. The first of those wide alluvial basins which, alternating with rocky gorges, give so varied a character to the river’s course opens out

just below the famous marble rocks in Jabalpur, and

extends westward for 225 miles, including the whole of Narsinhpur, together with the greater part of Hoshangé- bad. The Sdtpurd hills to the south are here a generally regular range, nowhere more than 500 feet above the plain, and running almost parallel to the river, at a distance of 15 or 20 miles. In the intervening valley, the rich level of black wheat land is seldom broken, except by occasional mounds of gravel or nodular limestone, which afford serviceable village sites. Along the foot of the boundary hills the

alluvium gives way to belts of red gravelly soil, rice and sugar-cane take the place of wheat, and forest trees that of mango groves.

The population in 1880 was 365,178, the Hindus numbering 805,562, and the Mohammedans only 13,425. The most numerons of the aboriginal tribes are the Gonds (46,645). Only two towns contained upwards of 5000 inhabitants—Narsinhpur (7816) and Gadarwara (6558). Of the area of 1916 square miles, 974 werc under cultivation in 1882. Wheat is the staple crop, occupying 280,898 acres ; other food grains took up 245,797 acres; cotton, 46,204 acres; and sugar-cane, 2271 acres. Rotation of crops is not practised, but when the soil shows signs of exhaustion grain or some other pulse is substitutcd for two or three years. Cultivators dare not leave their lands fallow, even for a single ycar, for the ground would be immediately occupied by rank kdns grass, which no exer- tions can eradicate till it has run its course of about ten years. The principal export is cotton. Coal mining is carried on at Moh- pani, Sihora, and Setarewa ; and iron-ore of excellent quality is smelted in large quantities at Tendikherd and elscwhere there being 38 mines in operation in 1882,

NARVAEZ, PAmrino pe (ec. 1480-1528), Spanish adventurer, was an hidalgo of Castile, born at Valladolid about 1480. He was one of the subordinates of Velazquez in the reduction of Cuba, and, after having held various posts under his governorship, was put at the head of the force sent to the Aztec coast to compel Cortes to renounce his command ; he was surprised and defeated, however, by his abler and more active compatriot at Cempoalla, and made prisoner with the loss of an eye (1520). After his return to Spain he obtained from Charles V. a grant of Florida as far as the River of Palms; sailing in 1527 with five ships and a force of about 600 men, he landed, probably near Tampa Bay, in April 1528, and, striking inland with some 300 of his followers, reached “Apalache” on June 25. The prospects of fabulous wealth which had sustained them in their difficult and perilous journey having

-proved illusory, a return to the coast was detcrmined, and

the Bahia de log Caballos, at or near St Mark’s, was = eee ee ee 2)

4 Narsinhpur is also the name of a petty native state in Orissa.

reached in the following month. Having built rude boats, the much reduced company sailed hence for Mexico on September 22, but the vessel which carried Narvaez was

driven to sea in a storm and perished. His lieutenant, |

Cabeza de Vaca, with three others who ultimately reached land, made his way across Texas to the Gulf of California.

NARVAEZ, Ramon Maria (1800-1868), Spanish soldier and statesman, was born at Loja, Granada, on August 4, 1800, entered the army at an early age, and saw active service under Mina in Catalonia in 1822. In 1823 the French invasion caused him to retire into private life, whence he re-emerged in 1832, speedily attaining the rank of colonel. He achieved great popularity by his victory over Gomez, the Carlist general, near Arcos, in November 1836, and after clearing La Mancha of brigands by a vigorous policy of suppression in 1838 he was appointed captain-general of Old Castile, and commander- in-chief of the army of reserve. In 1840, for the part he had taken at Seville in the insurrection against Espartero, he was compelled to take refuge in France, where, in con- junction with Maria Christina, he planned the expedition of 1843 which led to the overthrow of his adversary. In 1844 he became prime minister, and was created field- marshal and duke of Valencia, but his policy was too reactionary to be tolerated long, and he was compelled to quit office in February 1846. He now held the post of ambassador at Paris, until again called to preside over the council of ministers in 1847 ; but misunderstandings with Maria Christina led to his resignation in the following year. His ministry succeeded that of O’Donnell for a short time in 1856-57, and he again returned to power for a few months in 1864-65. He once more replaced O’Donnell in July 1866, and was still in office when he died at Madrid on April 23, 1868.

NARWHAL, an animal of the order Cetacea (see Mam- MALIA, vol. xv. p. 398), belonging to the genus Monodon, of which there is but one species known, M. monoceros of Linnzeus. It is included in the family Delphinide

or Dolphins, and closely resembles the Beluga or White Whale in all points of its structure except its dentition, which presents most anomalous characters. In the adult there are but two teeth present, both in the upper jaw. They lie horizontally side by side, and in the female they remain throughout life concealed in cavities of the bone, so that this sex is practically toothless. In the male the night tooth usually remains similarly concealed and abor- tive, but the left is immensely developed, attaining a length equal to more than half that of the entire animal. Ina narwhal 12 feet long, from snout to end of tail, the exserted portion of the tusk may measure 6 or 7 and occa- sionally 8 feet in length. It projects horizontally for- wards from the head in the form of a cylindrical or slightly tapering, pointed tusk, composed of ivory, with a central cavity reaching almost to the apex, without enamel, and with the surface marked by spiral grooves and ridges, running in a sinistral direction. Occasionally both left and right tusks are developed, in which case the direction of the grooves is not reversed, but the same in both. No instance has ever been met with of the complete develop- ment of the right tusk associated with a rudimentary con- dition of the left. In very young animals several small additional teeth, irregular in number and position, are present, but these usually disappear soon after birth.

The head is rather short and rounded; the fore limbs or paddles are small and broad compared with those of most dolphins 3 and (as in Beluga) the median dorsal fin, found in nearly all other members of the group, is wanting or replaced by a low ridge. The general colour of the surface is dark grey above and white below, but variously marbled and spotted with different shades of grey.

NAS 235

The narwhal is essentially an Arctic animal, frequenting the icy circumpolar seas, and but rarely seen south of 65° N. lat. Three instances have, however, been recorded of its occurrence on the British coasts, one in the Firth of Forth in 1648, one near Boston in Lincolnshire in 1800, while a third, which entangled itself among rocks in the Sound of Weesdale, Shetland, in September 1808, is described by Fleming in the Jemoirs of the Wernerian Society, vol. i. Like most other cetaceans it is gregarious in its habits, being

usually met with in “schools” or herds of fifteen or twenty individuals. Its food appears to be various species of cephalopods, small fishes, and crus- taceans. ‘The purpose served in the animal’s economy by the wonderfully developed asymmetrical tusk—or ‘‘ horn,” as it is commonly but erroneously called—is not known. As it is present only in the male sex, no function essential to the wellbeing of the individual, such as the procuring of sustenance, can be assigned to it, but it must be looked upon as belonging to the same category of organs as the antlers of deer, and perhaps may be applied to similar pur- poses, Very little is, however, known of the habits of narwhals. Scoresby describes them as “ extremely play- ful, frequently elevating their horns and crossing them with each other as in fencing.” They have never been known to charge and pierce the bottom of ships with their weapons, as the swordfish, a totally different animal, often does. The name “Sea Unicorn,” sometimes applied to the narwhal, refers to the resemblance of its tusk to the horn represented as projecting from the forehead of the fabled unicorn. The ivory of which the tusk is composed is of very good quality, but, owing to the central cavity, is only fitted for the manufacture of objects of small size. The entire tusks are sometimes used for decorative purposes, and are of considerable, though very fluctuating, commer- cial value. (wW. H. F.)

NASH, Ricuarp (1674-1761), better known as “ Beau Nash,” was born at Swansea, 18th October 1674. He was descended from an old family of good position, but his father from straitened means had become partner in a glass business. Young Nash was educated at Cacrmarthen grammar school and at Jesus College, Oxford. He obtained a commission in the army, which, however, he soon exchanged for the study of law at the Middle Tcmple. ‘““Here,” it is said, “he went to the very summit of second- class luxury,” and among “wits and men of pleasure” he came to be accepted as an authority in regard to dress, manners, and style. When the members of the Inns of Court entertained William III. after his accession, Nash was chosen to conduct the pageant. This duty he per- formed so much to the satisfaction of the king that he was offered knighthood, but he declined the honour, unless accompanied by a pension. As the king did not take the hint, Nash found it necessary to turn gamester. The pursuit of his calling led him in 1704 to Bath, where he had the good fortune almost immediately to succeed Captain Webster as master of the ceremonies. His qualli- fications for such

a position were unique, and under his conventional authority reforms were introduced which rapidly secured to Bath a leading position as a fashionable watering-place. He drew up a new code of rules for the regulation of balls and assemblies, abolished the habit of wearing swords in places of public amusement, induced gentlemen to adopt shoes and stockings in parades and assemblies instead of boots, reduced refractory chairmen to submission and civility, and introduced a tariff for lodgings. Through his exertions a handsome assembly- room was also erected, and the streets and public buildings were greatly improved. Nash adopted an outward state corresponding to his nominal dignity. He wore an immense white hat as a sign of office, and a dress adorned

with rich embroidery, and drove ina chariot with six greys, laced lackeys, and French horns. Notwithstanding his vanity and impertinence, the tact, energy, and superficial cleverness of Nash won him the patronage and notice of the great, while the success of his ceremonial rule, as shown in the increasing prosperity of the town, secured him the gratitude of the corporation and the people generally. When the Act of Parliament against gambling deprived him of an easy though uncertain means of subsistence, the corporation granted him a pension of six score guineas a year, which, with the sale of his snuff boxes and other trinkets, enabled him to support a certain faded splendour till his death on February 3, 1761. He was honoured with a public funeral at the expense of the town.

A Life of Richard Nash, by Goldsmith, was published anony- mously at London in 1762, has been frequently reprinted, and is now included in the editions of Goldsmith’s collected works. See also London Magazine, vol. xxxi., and a paper on ‘‘The Monarch of Bath” in Blackwood’s Magazine, vol. xlviii.

NASH, Tuomas (c. 1564-1601), poet, playwright, and pamphleteer, was one of the most notable literary celebrities in the brilliant last decade of the reign of Elizabeth. The exact years of his birth and death have not been ascertained ; but from the fact that he proceeded B.A. (St John’s, Cambridge) in 1585 it has been con- jectured that he was born about 1564, and his death was lamented in an epigram by Fitzgeoffrey in 1601. He tells

us himself that his birthplace was Lowestoft. It would seem from a passage in one of his pamphlets that he travelled in Italy after leaving Cambridge, and then he followed the example of Greene and Marlowe, his fellow Cantabs, in trying to make a living by literature in London. Nash was really a journalist born out of due time ; he frequently boasts of his power of writing ‘‘as fast as his hand can trot”; his style was brilliant and picturesque ; he had a keen sense of the ridiculous, was quick in argument, and not without abundance of mis- cellaneous learning. In the circumstances, there being no market for his gifts, he fared like the other university wits who made the same premature venture at the time to ‘distil ink into gold,” struggled brilliantly for some years, and succumbed. It was asa “notable railer” both against individuals and against the vices and the absurdities of the time, as a man than whom none “used better or more bitter gall in ink,” that Nash made his reputation. His first effort was a preface to Greene’s Menaphon, in 1587. In this he made boisterous ridicule, with the arrogance of youth and high spirits, of current literature, laughing especially at the bombast of Marlowe’s Tamburlaine, and promised to follow up his attack with an Anatomy of Absurditie, which appeared in 1589. Meantime the Marprelate tracts gave him another opening for ridicule, into which he rushed joyously, publishing in quick succes- sion Plaine Percevall, Martin’s Month’s Mind, Pasquil in England, An Almond for a Parrot, Pasquil’s Apology. Then he edited Sidney’s poems, with a preface, in 1591. Pierce Penilesse, His Supplication to the Devill, published in 1592, at once shows his power as a gaily humorous critic of national manners and lets us into the secret of the hardness of his struggle to live by the pen. It seems to Pierce a monstrous thing that cautious brainless drudges and knaves wax fat “when as the seven liberal sciences and a good leg will scarce get a scholar bread and cheese,” A patron was what the man of letters wanted, and Pierce humorously begs for a trial, undertaking to make it worth a patron’s while. Nash’s complaints of destitution in this tract are sometimes taken too literally ; it would seem that he had found a noble patron, and was living at his country seat in 1592, away from the plague in London, and writing his satirical masque Summer’s Last Will and Testament. In 1593 he tried his hand at a sermon, Christes Tears over

Jerusalem, a really eloquent composition. In the preface to this, “not basely fear-blasted, or constraintively over. ruled, but purely pacificatory,” he holds out the hand of friendship to Gabriel Harvey, with whom he had begun a match in personal abuse, recorded in D’Israeli’s Quarrels of Authors. The overture was not accepted, and Nash resumed his “humorous objurgation” of the enemy. After Marlowe’s death he put the unfinished tragedy of Dido in shape for the stage, but he had no portion of Marlowe’s genius. In 1597 he was in trouble with the authorities for a play called the Jsle of Dogs, which has not been preserved, The author retired to Yarmouth, and there wrote his last work Lenten Stuf? (1599), nominally ‘in praise of a red herring,” but really a description of Yarmouth which would now make the fortune of a special correspondent.

NASHUA, a city of the United States, in Hillsborough county, New Hampshire, on hilly ground at the confluence of the Merrimac and the Nashua, 40 miles north-north-west of Boston by the Boston, Lowell, and Nashua Railroads, In 1803 the site was “a sandy plain covered with pine trees” ; but after the formation of the Nashua Manufactur- ing Company in 1823 the village rapidly grew up, and by 1853 it was incorporated as a city. Its population increased from 10,543 in 1870 to 13,397 in 1880, The water-power of the Nashua river being rendered easily available by means of a canal 3 miles long and 8 feet deep, constructed in 1825-26, a great variety of industrial establishments are situated in the city. Besides the sheetings, shirtings, prints, and flannels manufactured by the original Nashua company and its younger rivals, iron goods, locks, edge tools, bedsteads, carpets, shuttles, bobbins, shoes, cards, glazed paper, are all produced on a large scale,

NASHVILLE, a city of the United States, capital and largest city of Tennessee, and seat of justice of Davidson county, stands on the Cumberland River (spanned there by a suspension bridge and a truss railway bridge with a “draw” 200 feet long), 200 miles above its junction with the Ohio, in 36° 10’ N. lat. and 86° 49’ W. long. Occupy- ing a site of considerable irregularity, and dominated by the hill (558 feet above the sca) on which the capitol is built, Nashville on the whole presents a picturesque and attractive appearance. The capitol is an imposing stone edifice, erected in 1845 at a cost of nearly $1,000,000, and surmounted by a central tower

206 feet in height. Other public buildings deserving mention are the court-house (1857), the market-house and city-hall (1855), the State penitentiary (1830), the State blind asylum (1850), the four universities, and two large female seminaries. Nashville University, incorporated as Davidson College in 1785, as Cumberland College in 1806, and under its present name in 1825, now embraces three distinct schools,— Montgomery Bell Academy, Nashville Medical College, one of the largest in the Southern States, and the Normal College, established and endowed by the trustees of the Peabody Fund. Vanderbilt University was founded in 1872 by six conferences of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, and in 1873 was named after Cornelius Vanderbilt of New York, who gave it $1,000,000. His son has given it about $250,000 additional. It has a fine group of buildings and 75 acres of land west of the city. In 1882 it had 51 instructors and 603 students, Fisk University, established in 1866 for the education of men of colour, and widely known through the Jubilee Singers, had 18 teachers and 424 students in 1882. The Tennessee Central (Methodist) College, likewise dating from 1866, is intended for coloured students, as is also the Roger Williams University (Baptist). The State library in the capitol had 27,000 volumes in 1882 3 and the Watkins

Institute library occupies a building erected in 1882 ata cost of $130,000. Being the natural centre of a wide productive region, and well served by river and rail, Nash- ville has an extensive and rapidly growing trade, especially in cotton and tobacco. Its manufacturing establishments comprise three large cotton factories (34,000 spindles, 700 hands in 1882), saw-mills, grist-mills, planing factories, carriage factories, extensive furniture factories, distilleries, paper-mills, cotton-seed-oil mills, and stove foundries. The population was 5566 in 1830, 10,165 in 1850, 16,988 in 1860, 25,865 in 1870, and 43,350 in 1880.

Settled in 1780, Nashville received incorporation as a town in 1784 and as a eity in 1806. It was not till 1843 that it became the eapital of the State, though, with the exeeption of the period from 1815 to 1826, the legislature had met there from 1812. In February 1862 Nashville was evacuated by the Confederate General A. 8. Johnston, and was held from that time by the

Federal forees. The attempt made in Deeember 1864 by the Confederate General Hood to reeover the now strongly-fortified town resulted in the

battle of Nashville," in whieh his army was completely routed by that of General G. H. Thomas,

NASIK, or Nasstck, a district in the Bombay presi-

dency, India, between 19° 34' and 20° 52' N. lat., and between 73° 21' and 75° 2' E. long., bounded on the N. by Khandesh, E. by the Nizam's Dominions, 8. by Ahmed- nagar, and W. by Thana (Tanna), with an area of 5940 square miles. With the exception of a few villages in the west, the whole district is situated on a table-land from 1300 to 2000 feet above sea-level. The western portion is lilly, and intersected by ravines, and only the simplest kind of cultivation is possible. The eastern tract is open, fertile, and well cultivated. The Sahyddri range stretches from north to south; the watershed is formed by the Chander range, which runs east and west. All the streams to the south of that range are tributaries of the Godavari. To the north of the watershed, the Girna and its tributary the Mosam flow through fertile valleys into the TApti. The district generally is destitute of trees, and the forests which formerly clothed the Sahyddri hills have nearly dis-appeared ; efforts are now being made to prevent further destruction, and to reclothe some of the slopes. The district contains several old hill forts, the scenes of many engagements during the Mahratta wars. Nasik district became British territory in 1818 on the overthrow of the peshwé. The population in 1881 was 781,206 (Hindus 683,579, Mohammedans 35,294). NAstx, the chief town of the district (population 22,436), Is situated on the Godavari, and is considered a place of great sanctity by Hindus, who make pilgrimages to its temples from all parts of India. Places of worship fringe both banks of the river, and even the bed of the stream is thickly dotted with temples and shrines. Nasik has brass and copper works, but commercially is of little more than local importance.

NASIR KHOSRAU. Abi Mu'in-ed-din Nasir b. Khosrau, the first great didactic poet of Persia, was a descendant of the imam 'Ali Rida, and was born, according to his own statement in one of his kasidas, 394 a.H. (1004 a.p.), at Kubédiyan, near Balkh in Khor4s4n. The first forty-two years of his life are obscure ; we learn from incidental remarks of his that he was a

Sunnite, probably according to the Hanafite rite, well versed in all the branches of natural science, in medicine, mathematics, astronomy, and astrology, in Greek philosophy, and the Interpretation of the Koran; that he had a comprehensive knowledge of many other philosophic systems and religious creeds professed in the East; and that he was, withal, much addicted to worldly pleasures, especially to excessive wine drinking, the renunciation of which forms a prominent topic in his later odes. He had studied Arabic, Turkish, Greek, the vernacular languages of India and Sind, and perhaps even Hebrew ; he had visited Multén and Lahore,

and been—probably in an official capacity—an eye-witness of the splendid Ghaznavide court under Sultén Mahmud, Firdousi's patron, and his son Mas'id. Later on he had chosen Merv for his residence, and was the owner of a house and garden there. When he first steps into the full light of history, in 437 a.H. (1045 a.p.), we see him in the position of a financial secretary and revenue collector of the Seljuk sultan Toghrulbeg, or rather of his brother Jaghirbeg, the emir of Khordsén, who had conquered Merv in 1037, The introductory passages of the Safarndma, together with a number of verses in the above-mentioned kasida, which belongs to the same period, clearly manifest the peculiar state of mind in which NAsir was at that time. Like Faust he had fathomed the depth of all human knowledge, like him he had passed through the whirlpool of passions and sensual pleasures, he had tried to drown his doubts and troubles in the wine cup, and yet he had only grown more and more dissatisfied with himself ; nothing could quench his ever-increasing thirst for a higher intelligence, for a more profound comprehen- sion of the Godhead, and the manifestations of the divine power in the universe. He had evidently reached the turning-point of his life, and, inspired by a heavenly voice (which he pretends to have heard in a dream), he abjured all the luxuries of life, and resolved upon a pilgrimage to the holy shrines of Mecca and Medina, hoping to find there the solution of all enigmas, and to return a thoroughly reformed man. The graphic description of this Journey is contained in the Safarndéma, a book that, quite apart from the personal interest we feel in the author, ranks high among the memoirs of travel as giving us the most authentic account of the state of the Mussulman world and the condition of Persia, Arabia, Syria,

Palestine, and Egypt in the middle of the 11th century. The minute sketches of Jerusalem and _ its environs, moreover, are of the highest practical value, even at the present day, for our explorations in the Holy Land. During the seven years of his journey (1045-52 A.D.) Nasir visited Mecca four times, and performed all the rites and observances of a zealous pilgrim; but the fascinating influence of the Holy City upon his mind was greatly outweighed by that of Cairo, the capital of Egypt, and the residence of the Fatimite sultan Mostansir billah, the great champion of the Shi'a, and the spiritual as well as political head of the house of 'Alf, which was just then waging a deadly war against the 'Abbaside caliph of Baghdad, and the great defender of the Sunnite creed, Toghrulbeg the Seljuk. At the very time of NAsir's visit to Cairo, the power of the Egyptian Fatimites was in its zenith; Syria, the Hijaz, Africa, and Sicily obeyed Mostansir's sway, and the utmost order, security, and prosperity reigned in Egypt. Cairo appeared as an earthly paradise in Nasir's eyes; he became, as his poems clearly indicate, thoroughly imbued there with Shi'a doctrines, and their successful introduction into his native country was henceforth the sole aim and object of his life. The hostilities he encountered in the propagation of these new religious ideas after his return to Khorasan in 1052 and Sunnite fanaticism compelled him at last to flee, and after many wanderings he found a refuge in Yumgan, in the mountains of Badakhshan, where he spent as a hermit the last decades of his life, and gathered round him a considerable number of devoted adherents, who have handed down his doctrines to many following generations. The Dabistan (translated by Shea and Troyer, Paris, 1843, vol. ii. p. 419 sg.) fixes his flight from Khorasin in 456 A.H. (1064 a.D.), but there is strong evidence in some of his kasidas that this event took place some four or five years before that date; and as his death occurred in 481] A.H. (1088 a.D.) he must have lived in his exile from

twenty-five to thirty years. "* Hujjat."

Most of Nasir's lyrical poems were eomposed in his retirement, and their chief topics are—an enthusiastic praise of 'Ali, his descendants, and Mostansir in particular; passionate outcries against Khorasan and its rulers, who had driven him from house and home; the highest satisfaction with the

quiet solitude of Yumgan; and utter despondency again in secing himself despised by his former associates, and for ever excluded from participation in the glorious contest of life. But scattered through all these alternate outbursts of hope and despair we find precious lessons of purest morality, and solemn warnings against the tricks and perfidy of the world, the vanity of all earthly splendour and greatness, the folly and injustice of men, and the hypocrisy, frivolity, and viciousness of fashionable society and princely courts in particular. It is the same strain which runs, although in a somewhat lower key, through his two larger mathnawis or double-rhymed poems, the Rushandindma, or ‘‘ book of enlightenment,” and the Sa‘ddat- ndma, or “book of felicity.” The former is divided into two sections : the first, of a metaphysical character, contains a sort of practical cosmography, chiefly based on Avicenna’s theories, but frequently intermixed both with the freer speculations of the well- known philosophical brotherhood of Basra, the Ikhwan-es-safé,} and purely Shiitie or Isma‘ilitie ideas; the second, or ethical seetion of the poem, abounds in moral maxims and ingenious

His “nom de plume” was

thoughts on man’s good and bad qualities, on the necessity of

shunning the company of fools and double-faced fricnds, on’ the

deceptive allurements of the world and the secret snares of

ambitious eraving for rank and wealth. It concludes with an imaginary vision of a beautiful world of spirits who have stripped off the fetters of earthly cares and sorrows and revel in the pure light of divine wisdom and love. If we compare this with a similar allegory in Nasir’s diwdn, which culminates in the praise of Mostansir, we are fairly entitled to look upon it as a covert allusion to the eminent men who revealed to the poet in Cairo the secrets of the Isma‘ilitic faith, and showed him what he con- sidered the ‘‘ heavenly ladder ” to superior knowledge and spiritual bliss. The passage, thus interpreted, lends additional weight to the correctness of Dr Ethé’s reconstruction of the date of the Rushandindma, viz., 440 A.H. (1049 A.D.), which, notwithstanding M. Schefer’s objections, is warranted both by the astronomical details and by the metrical requirements of the respective verses. That of course does not exclude the possibility of the bulk of the

poem having been composed at an carlier period; it only ascribes its completion or perhaps final revision to Nasir's sojourn in Egypt. A similar series of excellent teachings on practical wisdom and the blessings of a virtuous life, only of a severer and more uncom- promising character, is contained in the Sa'ddatndma; and, judging from the extreme bitterness of tone manifested in the '* reproaches of kings and emirs," we should be inclined to consider it a protest against the vile aspersions poured out upon Nasir's moral and religious attitude during those persecutions which drove him at last to Yumgin. Of all the other works of our author mentioned by Oriental writers there has as yet been found only one, the Zad-elimusi-firin (in the private possession of M. Schefer, Paris); and we ean very well dismiss the rest as being probably just as apocryphal as Nasir's famous autobiography (found in several Persian tadhkiras or biographies of poets), a mere forgery of the most extravagant description, which is mainly responsible for the confusion in names and dates in older accounts of our author.

See Sprenger's Catalogue of the Libraries of the King of Oudh, 1854; FH. Ethé, "Nasir Chusrau's Rushandindma," in Z. D, M. G., Xxxili., xxxiv., 1879-80; E lagnan, " Le livre de la félicité," in vol. xxxiv. of the same journal, 643-674; Ch, Schefer, Sefer Nameh, publié, traduit, etannoté, Paris, 1881; 11. Ethé, in Gottinger Nachrichten, 1882, pp. 124-152, and Z. D. M. G., 1882, pp. 478-508. Fagnan in Journ. As., 7th ser., vol. xiii. p. 164 sq.,and Rieu, Cat. Pers. MSS. in Br. Mus., concluded that the poet and the pilgrim were diffcrent persons. The opposite view was developed by Ethé. lI. E.)

NASMYTH, Avexanper (17 58-1840), oe and landscape painter, was born in Edinburgh on September 9, 1758. He studied at the Trustees' Academy under Runciman, and, having been apprenticed as an heraldic painter to a coachbuilder, he, at the age of sixteen, attracted the attention of Allan Ramsay, who took the youth with him to London, and employed him upon the subordinate portions of his works. Nasmyth returned to Edinburgh in 1778, and was soon largely patronized as a portrait painter. He also assisted Mr Miller of Dalswinton, as draughtsman, in his mechanical researches and experi- ments; and, this gentleman having generously offered the painter a

loan to enable him to pursue his studies abroad, he left in 1782 for Italy, where he remained two years,

2 Compare the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1848, vol. xvi, part 1, p. 501 sg., and part 2, p. 183 sq. ,

On his return he painted the excellent portrait of Burns,

now in the Scottish National Gallery, so well known through Walker's engraving. time ran high in Edinburgh, and Nasmyth's pronounced

Political feeling at that

Liberal opinions, which he was too outspoken and sincere to disguise, gave offence to many of his aristocratic patrons,

and led to the diminution of his practice as a portraitist.

In his later years, accordingly, he devoted himself mainly to landscape work, and did not disdain on occasion to set his hand to scene-painting for the theatres. He has been styled, not unjustly, the "father of Scottish landscape art." His subjects are carefully finished and coloured, but are wanting in boldness and freedom. Nasmyth was also largely employed by noblemen throughout the country in the improving and beautifying of their estates, in which his fine taste rendered him especially skilful ; and he was known as an architect, having designed the Dean Bridge, Edinburgh, and the graceful circular temple covering St Bernard's Well, which stands near it. Nasmyth died in his native city on 10th April 1840. His youngest son, James, is the well-known inventor of the steam-hammer, His six daughters all attained a certain local reputation as artists, but it was in his eldest son, Patrick, that the artistic skill of his family was most powerfully developed. For an interesting account of the Nasmyth family see James Nasmyth's Autobiography, 1883.

NASMYTH, Parrick (1787-1831), the eldest son of Alexander Nasmyth, was born at Edinburgh on January 7, 1787. Having studied under his father,

he went to London at the age of twenty, and soon attracted attention as a clever landscapist. _He was a diligent student of the works of Claude and Richard Wilson, and of Ruysdael and Hobbema, upon whom his own practice was mainly founded, His most characteristic paintings are of English domestic scenery, full of quiet tone and colour, and detailed and minute expression of foliage, and with considerable brilhancy of sky effect. They were executed with his left hand, his right having in early life been injured by an accident. He died at Lambeth, August 17, 1831, during a thunderstorm, which at his own request he had been raised in bed to contemplate.

NASSAU, now forming the bulk of the government district of Wiesbaden, in the Prussian province of Hesse- Nassau, was till 1866 an independent and sovereign duchy of Germany, consisting of a compact mass of territory, 1830 square miles in area, bounded on the S. and W. by the Main and Rhine, on the N. by Westphalia, and on the E. by Hesse. This territory is divided into two nearly equal parts by the river Lahn, which flows from east to west into the Rhine. The southern half is almost entirely occupied by the Taunus Mountains, which attain a height of 2900 feet in the Great Feldberg, while to the north of the Lahn is the barren Westerwald, culminating in the Salzburgerkopf (2000 feet). The valleys and low- lying districts, especially the Rheingau, are very fertile, producing abundance of grain, flax, hemp, and fruit; but by far the most valuable product of the soil is its wine, which includes several of the choicest Rhenish varieties (Johannisberger, Marcobrunner, Assmannshauser, &c.). Nassau is one of the most thickly wooded regions in Germany, about 42 per cent. of its surface being occupied by forests, which yield good timber and harbour large quantities of game. The rivers abound in fish,—the salmon fisheries on the Rhine being especially important. There are upwards of a hundred mineral springs in the district, most of which formerly belonged to the duke, and afforded him a considerable part of his revenue. The best-known are those of Wiesbaden, Ems, Soden, Schwalbach, Schlang- enbad, Geilnau, and Fachingen. The other mineral wealth of Nassau includes iron, lead, copper, building

EN pe

stone, coals, slate, a little silver, and.a bed of malachite. 1ts manufactures, including cotton and woollen goods, are unimportant, but a brisk trade is carried on by rail and river in wine, timber, grain, and fruit. There are few places of importance besides the above-named spas ; Hochst is the only manufacturing town. Wiesbaden, with 50,238 inhabitants, is the capital of the government district as it was of the duchy. In 1864 the duchy contained 468,311 inhabitants, of whom 242,000 were Protestants (including the reigning house), 215,000 Roman Catholics, and 7000 Jews. The ecclesiastical jurisdiction was in the hands of the Protestant bishop of Wiesbaden and the Roman Catholic bishop of Limburg. Education was amply pro- vided for in numerous higher and lower schools. The annual revenue of the dukedom was about 4,000,000 guldens (£400,000). It furnished a contingent of 6000 men to the army of the German Confederation.

During the Roman period the district enclosed by the Lahn, the Main, and the Rhine was at first occupied by the Mattiaci and then by the Alemanni. The latter were subdued by the Franks under Clovis in 496, and at the partition of Verdun in 843 the country became part of the Eastern or German empire. Christianity seems to have been introduced in the 4th century. The founder of the house of Nassau is usually recognized in Count Otho of Laurenburg, brother of King Conrad [., who flourished on the banks of the Lahn in the 10th century. His successors afterwards took the title of counts of Nassau, from a castle which they erected on a steep hill overlooking the Lahn, and in 1192 transferred their allegiance from the archbishop of Treves to the emperor of Germany. In 1255 Walram and Otho, the two sons of Count Henry the Rich, divided between them their paternal inhcritance, which had in the mean- time been steadily increasing, and founded the two Nassovian dynasties which have flourished down to our own times.

The fortunes of the Othonian or younger branch have been the more brilliant, but belong properly to the history of Holland. In 1564 Count William of Nassau, the hero of the Dutch war of inde- pendence, succeeded to the principality of Orange, which furnished the historical title of himself

and his descendants. The house is now represented by the king of the Netherlands.

Adolf of Nassau, the son of the founder of the elder or Walram line, and progenitor of the dukes of Nassau, became emperor of Germany in 1292, but was defeated and slain in 1298 by his rival Albert of Austria. In 1366 the head of the house was created a prince of the empire, and the Reformation was introduced in the second half of the 16th century. The territories of the house of Walram were frequently partitioned among various branch lines, few of which perpetuated themselves beyond a few generations. At the beginning of the 19th century we find two lines still flourishing—Nassau-Ufingen and N assau-Weilburg. Both these Joined the Rhenish Confederation in 1806, and the prince of Nassau- Ufingen, as head of his family, received the ducal title from the hands of Napoleon. After the battle of Leipsic both princes threw In their lot with the allies. In 1816 the duke of N assau-Ufingen died, and the prince of Weilburg succeeded to the whole of the Nassovian territory, with the title of duke of Nassau.

This prince had already, in 1814, granted his subjects a limited constitution, providing for two representative chambers on a landed- property basis, and this came into force in 1818. The estates, however, came almost at once into collision with the duke on the question of the ducal domains, and the dissensions arising from this ~Ource were not compromised till 1834. In1835 the duchy took an important step in the development of its material prosperity by Joming the Zollverein. In 1848 Duke Adolf was compelled to yield to the temper of the times and grant a more liberal constitution, with a single chamber elected by universal suffrage ; but the follow- ms years witnessed a series of reactionary measures which reduced matters to their former unsatisfactory condition. The duke adhered steadfastly to his Conservative principles, while his people showed their sympathies by returning one Liberal chamber after another. In 1866, though the chambers refused a vote of credit for military Purposes, the duke espoused the cause of Austria, and in doing So sealed the fate of his duchy. A little later he was a fugitive

efore the Prussian troops, and on October 3d, 1866, Nassau was formally Incorporated with the kingdom of Prussia.

The little town of N assau, on the right bank of the Lahn, 15 miles above Coblenz, is interesting as the birthplace of the cele- Paied Prussian statesman, Baron Stein. Adjacent are Burg Stein, Bat seat, and Burg Nassau, the cradle of the Nassovian

assau is said to have existed as early as the 8th century under the name of Nasonga. Population (1880) 1786.

See Sehliephake, Geschichte v p é on Nassau, 1866-76; Arnoldi, Geschichte von Ps oe eeaie the Annals of the “Verein fiir Nassauische Alterthumskunde ichtsforschung 3 Daniel, Z7andbuch der Geographie, 5th ed., 1881,

NASSAU, the capital of New Providence, and seat of government of the Bahama Islands, 25° 5’ 36” N. lat., 77° 21’ 15” W. long. At one time the town was. noted as a great rendezvous for pirates. Its harbour, admitting vessels drawing 12 feet, acquired much importance during the blockade of the southern ports in the American War. The population of Nassau, principally negroes and coloured people, is about 8000, out of the total island population of 11,653. Nassau extends for 34 miles along the north shore, It is a very pretty town, celebrated for its healthy climate, and resorted to for sea-bathing by visitors from America. It has a Government house, a plain stone cathe- dral, and several churches and chapels, and is a military station and a bishop’s see. Numbers of the inhabitants support themselves by looking after wrecks. Preserved fruit in tins is exported, also woods, fruit, sponges, salt, &e.

NASTURTIUM. Thecommon water-cress (J. officinale), so largely used as a salad, may be taken as a representative of this genus of Crucifere,—a genus characterized, for the most part, by pinnately divided foliage, white or yellow cruciform flowers, and long pods with a double row of seeds. The embryo root is folded up along the edges of the cotyledons, accumbent. Four species are British, but the only one cultivated is the WV. officinale. Its flavour is due to an essential oil containing sulphur, its antiscorbutic properties to the presence of iodine, iron, and phosphates. Although now so largely consumed, it does not appear to have been cultivated in England prior to the present century, though in Germany, especially near Erfurt, it had been grown long previously. The plants are grown in shallow water in rows parallel to the direc- tion of the current, and from 5 to 7 feet apart. It is

essential that the water be free from impurity, especially sewage. To avoid this latter contingency cresses are sometimes grown in a north border, the soil being kept constantly moist; or they may be grown in pots in a frame or greenhouse, the pots being placed in a saucer of water, and the plants frequently watered. This plan was introduced by Mr Shirley Hibberd, and when the requisite attention is given is highly successful when commercial considerations are not a matter of primary importance. The name Nasturtium is also applied in gardens, but in- correctly, to the species of Tropexolum.

NATAL, a British colony on the south-east coast of Africa, situated nearly between 29° and 31° S. lat. and 29° and 32° E. long., is bounded on the N.E. by Zululand and the Transvaal, on the 8.E. by the Indian Ocean, on the N.W. by the Orange Free State and the Transvaal, and on the §.W. by Basutoland, Griqualand East, and the country of the Pondas. It is of an irregular diamond shape, with a length of about 270 miles from north to south, and a breadth of 170 miles from east to west. The extent of sea-coast is about 150 miles, and its area is about 17,000 square miles, or 11,000,000 acres (one-third of the size of England).

For several miles northward from the Bluff at Durban the coast is low, but well wooded, and broken in several places by the mouths of rivers and streams; to the south of the Bluff it is of moderate elevation near the sea, the hills rising inland to a considerable height. Rich in verdure, and in the wet season clothed with bright green grass and clumps of trees and bushes, and diversified by numerous streams, the landscape indicates a country of great fertility of soil. From the coast to the western boundary of the colony the land rises by terraces or plateaus to an elevation of at least 4000 feet above the sea-level. For about 15 miles inland it is broken and hilly, and thickly covered with long grass, and in some parts studded with jungly bush and clumps of palm,

euphorbia, and mimosa. For some 30 miles farther inland the more elevated but less broken land loses all tropical character, and presents large tracts of good pasturage, but with scarcely any bush or wood. Beyond this district, at an ever-increasing elevation, the country, still hilly and undulating, opens

out in many places into more extensive grass plains, generally denuded of bush or wood, although in some localities and in the “kloofs” with a south-eastern aspect are dense clumps of forest trees netted over in many instances with ferns ; the western boundary of these rising lands is the Drakensberg mountain-range, which has an altitude of some 3000 or 4000 feet above the country at its base, and an absolute maximum altitude of 10,350 feet above sea-level. Apart from the Drakensberg range, the country, though hilly and much broken, has no mountains of note; many large hills, however, with flattened tops (table mountains) stand out singularly high

RA, “N.S i e: , 7 awe y WA >

29° T

yy a

Ni

“igus Manoa NUN

(ay

ORANGE

ay, sy

3°

FREE STATE FL lon,

Harrismith } ¢ S/2 tin eg Mg ay

J

&

A

WAL

A)

- .

ai S ole” a> wi =

sf

@ ui

<

Reenms {Ladysmifh a

Vie

CIR

B

d

Wig lly

@ \\ id WANS Ey: = °

.-)

%

¥ 4 TW é qui ff

SS ua wilulliica’ RO

a PSA IA gyre Hm? spcyasbelg – r (= =

Ni =, < PIETERMARITZBURG \S. ,

NY eae iN

%

i”

=

Q a ~@ S

%

[-}] a

GRIQUA == EAST ——— alee ay ’ ~ ot ag id (Hardin S t Scale of English Miles ©

9 20 20 30 40 50 \ ») a PONDO LAND 7 SSS te) yich 310° SS

STeenn

Map of Natal.

above the surrounding country, presenting a peculiar ap- pearance to one unaccustomed to South-African scenery. The colony is well watered throughout, but none of the streams are navigable, and all have bars at their entrances : attempts are being made to form harbours at the mouths of the Umkomanzi and the Umzimkulu to the south of Durban. The Umgeni, about 12 miles from Pietermaritz- burg, has a sheer fall of about 360 feet, and when it is flooded the rush of its waters is a magnificent spectacle, The harbour or port of Natal at Durban (strictly D’Urban), the only natural one in the colony, consists of an outer bay or roadstead, which has a fair anchorage, and an inner bay; at the entrance of the latter is a deepwater channel, where ships of large tonnage can be safely moored, but a sand bar at its entrance restricts the passage of large

NA DT ACL

ships to the highest tides, and in rough weather renders communication with the outer bay quite impracticable. This bar varies constantly throughout the year, and prob- ably is influenced by the Agulhas stream and other oceanic

currents. Much money has been spent on works for the removal of the bar, without any good result, but other plans are now being adopted, with every hope of success, When this obstacle is removed Natal will possess one of the best harbours on the south-east coast of Africa.

Climate.—The summer or hot rainy season lasts from October to March inclusive, and the six remaining months form the winter or cold dry season. The following are the average temperatures for the three hottest and three coldest months of the year, taken from observations at Durban, Pietermaritzburg, and Byrne extending over ten years:—

Highest. Lowest. Mean. December, January, and February…... 97°5 53°3 71°2 June, duly, and August .. 0.6.0. cece. 83°4 31°9 56°7

In the summer months cloudy afternoons with thunder- storms are frequent, and the accompanying rains are very cool and refreshing. Within 30 miles of the coast fires in dwellings are seldom required throughout the coldest months of the year. The rainfall averages 33-50 inches; it is heaviest in the summer months, but in June and July it frequently happens that there is no rain at all over a large portion of the colony. From July to December the upper districts are occasionally subject to hot winds, during which all vegetation droops as if dying, and languor and depression affect all animal life; but these seldom reach to within 20 miles of the coast. Violent hailstorms are not frequent, but hailstones have occasionally killed fowls, dogs, and goats, and in some instances have cut through iron roofing,

Geology.—Along the coast belt there are evidences of comparatively recent upheaval. The high land of the colony rests on granite, trap, and sandstone, the last of the Old Silurian type. Sandstone of a more recent epoch, well suited for building purposes, is sometimes met with. As arule these fundamental rocks are found under thick beds of shale, the surface being of the most varied descrip- tion, and never of the same quality over any very extensive area. The soil on the coast is mostly sandy loam, except where the valleys have alluvial deposits from disintegrated shales and erupted rocks. In the uplands the deep light, heavy black, and fine red loams are distributed over beds of clay, ironstone, or granite in areas of varying extent. Ironstone is to be met with in great quantities. Coal of several qualities exists in the Klip River county, with seams varying from 4 to 10

feet in thickness; analysis and experiment have shown it to be very suitable for loco- motive and general steam purposes. Some descriptions of it are well suited for gas, and nearly all of it will make good household coal. The area of the available coal-field is some 1350 square miles, and at a moderate computation the mines contain 2,000,000,000 tons of serviceable coal. In association with these seams of coal very valuable iron ore has been discovered. Vast deposits of fine white and yellow crystalline marbles have recently been found about 6 miles inland from the mouth of the Umzimkulu river. Slight indications of copper have been met with. In the extreme north are some mineral springs which have a temperature of about 130° Fahr., and are considered to possess medicinal qualities.

Flora.—The chief forms of plants peculiar to Natal are the liane and mimosa along the coast, and the orchid, aloe, pothos, liliaceous, and fern forms in the upland districts. The heaths and proteads common at the Cape of Good Hope are seldom if ever found in Natal, but almost any varieties of the flora of semi-tropical and temperate countries that are introduced attain perfection. The indigenous timber trees, mostly found in isolated clumps and in somewhat inaccessible situations, are principally the yellow wood (Podocarpus elongatus), sneczewood (Pteroxylon utile), stinkwood (Oreodaphne

bullata), black ironwood (Olea laurifolia), white ironwood (Vepris lanceolata), and the mangrove (Rhizophora); all are very useful woods, and the yellow wood, sneezewood, stinkwood, and ironwood when polished have grain and colour equal to maple, walnut, and ebony. The ‘‘rooibesje,’’ red pear, and milkwood trees are used for boatbuilding. The Australian Hucalyptus and Caswarina in great variety, and many other imported trees, including syringas, wattles, acacias, willows, pines, cypress, cork, and oak all thrive when properly planted and protected from grass fires.

Fauna.—The herds of elephants which roamed in the coast bushes in 1837 have disappeared, and the roar of the lion is no longer to be heard in the uplands. The hippopotamus is very scarce, and nearly all, if not all, the buffalo and quagga have crossed over into Zululand. Leopards or tigers and tiger cats (all called by the natives ‘‘ingwe”), aud hyenas and wild dogs

(Canis pictus) of different species, are still found in or about bush jungles and forest clumps; elands (Antilope orcas) are preserved on some estates, and there are at least ten distinct species of antelope. Ant-eaters (Orycteropus capensis), porcupines, rock rabbits, hares, and cane rats are common in different localities. Baboons (Cynocephalus por- carius) and monkeys of different kinds frequent the mountains and rocky kloofs and bush and timber lands. The birds of Natal are of many species; some have beautiful plumage, but none of them, with the exception of the canary, are to be considered as songsters. The erocodile is to be found at the mouths of all rivers, and fora certain distance inland from the sea. Of snakes there are about forty dis- tinct species or varicties. The most dreaded by the natives are ealled ‘‘imamba,” of which there are at least eight different kinds ; these snakes elevate and throw themselves forward, and have been known to pursue a horseman. One sort of imamba, named by the natives ‘‘indhlondhlo,” is crested, and its body is of a bright flame eolour. The sluggish puff-adder (Clotho arietans) is common aud verydangerous. A hooded snake (Naja hemachates), the ‘‘ imfezi” of the natives, is dangerous, and spits or ejects its poison ; and besides this there area few other varicties of the cobra species. The largest of the serpent tribe, however, is the python (Hortulia nata- lensis), called ‘‘inhlwati” by the natives; its usual haunts are by streams amongst rocky boulders and in jungles, and instances are recorded of its strangling and crushing adult hatives. Insects abound in great numbers, the most troublesome and destructive being the tick (Zxodes natalensis), which infests the pasturage, and the white ant (Zermes mordax). Occasionally vast armies of cater- pillars make a sudden appearance and advance over large tracts of country, devouring all vegetation in their line of march. The fish moth, a steel-grey slimy active fish-shaped insect, is found in every house, and is very destructive in the wardrobe and library. Fish of excellent quality and in great quantities abound on the coast. Prawns, crayfish, and oysters are also obtainable, and turtle (Chelonia mydas) are frequently captured. Little attention, how- ever, has been given to deep-sea fishing, and the only fishermen are the coolies, who use nets along the beach. The natives (Zulus) as a rule will not touch fish. Freshwater scale-fish are mostly full of bones, but fine eels and barbel are plentiful in the rivers.

Agricultwre.—The chief crop is maize, known in South Africa as “meallies,” its grain constituting the principal food of about seven- eighths of the population. Maize, indeed, and Kaffre corn (Sor- ghum Caffrorum), with pumpkins and sweet potatoes (Convolvulus Batatas), “imphee” or ‘‘imfi” (Sorghum saccharatum), and tobacco are about the only crops raised by the natives. The European farmers in the uplands, by irrigating the land in the winter months, produce wheat of very fair quality, but not in sufficient quantity to supply the demands of the colony. Oats, barley, and other grains grow readily ; and nearly all European vegetables yield fair crops in suitable localities. Arrowroot succeeds well on the coast, and is an article of export. Some years ago coffee and cotton had the attention of the planter, but both are now neglected. Rice has been cultivated by some farmers, but not to any great extent. Tobacco flourishes luxuriantly wherever there is good soil, but the difficulties im the way of curing and manufacturing it prevent its being at present an article of export. The cultivation and manufacture of sugar have attracted most attention of late ; sugar, indeed, with its products is the principal staple produced in and exported from Natal. The capsicum for cayenne pepper, and ground-nuts (Arachis hypogec) for oil, are also grown for exportation. Tea has been cul- tivated of late by some few planters on the coast, and promises ere long to be grown on a much larger scale. There are but few indigenous fruits, the principal being the Natal orange (a species of Strychnos), the Natal plum or “‘amatungula” (Arduinia grandi- flora), the Kei apple (Aberia caffra), Cape gooseberry (Physalis pubescens), and the Kaffre fig, the fruit of the Urostigma natalensis. Many subtropical fruits, however, and fruits of European culture thrive well in Natal.

Stock.—Previous to 1855 large and numerous herds of cattle pas- tured over the whole country, but in that year ‘“‘lung-sickness,” an epidemic of the nature of pleuro-pneumonia, broke out with great Virulence, and searcely 4 per cent. of the animals attacked recovered. Lung-sickness and ‘‘red water” still claim many victims annually,

and are the constant dread of the stock farmer. ‘‘ Horse sickness,”

a form of anthrax, is very fatal to horses, especially in wet summers.

The following figures give approximately the number of the several

oe of stock belonging to Kuropeans and natives respectively in 880 :—

Europeans. | Natives. Horned eattle……..... on «| 140,716 379,569 TEGTEOS ves vsiesees. cwases bed 17,261 15,915 Mules and donkeys… sie leh nil. ASTUSOTAN 6 GAD v0. siaslsen’a na’sleaicasaidlecicaaagsdandeasnsearinanawerde 70,589 nil, OGIEAR COREE. sect rode totes naawteate a een atin oti aacnaueian cetivesds 6,159 166,477 TNO ate cure th atetty cee « yet ha slo bare Sates vec ol weieMiars awa a aineilve we ese ees 10,809 5,554 Dineen (WoOl-beaning ix ccesateieteesete testes gsveuesare stoves 410,353 600

SMSSD (UO) WOOI-DERLINE)) <.<..

The cattle consist principally of the Zulu, Africander, and Father- land breeds, but recently some English shorthorns and other improved stock have beenintroduced. Ostriches also are farmed for the sake of their feathers, but as yet this industry has not succeeded so well in Natal as in the Cape Colony.

Commerce.—The staple productions of Natal have increased with the introduction of the sugar-cane, and sugar and rum arc thie principal articles of native produce exported. Wool, arrowroot, and feathers are also the outcome of local industry, but the exports of greatest value and importance are the wool and hides of the Transvaal and the Orange Free State, and feathers, ivory, and skins from the interior, which are shipped at Durban. The value of Natal sugar produced in 1856 was stated at £483, and in 1881 at £172,237. The principal imports in 1882 (total value £2,213,538) were clothing, cotton and woollen goods, haberdashery, leather manufactures, iron and ironmongery, spirits, oilman’s stores, and flour, and the chief exports (£731,809) were wool, sugar, hides, ostrich feathers, and Angora hair,—by far the greater part of the imports (£1,784,345) and exports (£595,744) being received from and shipped for the United Kingdom.

Revenue and Expenditure.—The increase in the revenue and expenditure in thirty years is shown as follows :—

Year. Revenue. Expenditure. 1852 £27,158 £24,876

1862 98,086 83,886 1872 180,498 132,978

1882 496,783 489,113

The revenue is principally derived from customs duties, native hut taxes, transfer dues on land sales, and excise: The public debt of the colony on the 31st December 1882 was £2,101,500, with a sinking fund towards its redemption of £153,597.

Roads and Telegraphs. — Until very recently all goods and produce were conveyed in ox-waggons carrying from 3 to 5 tons weight. These had to travel on roads sometimes little better than tracks worn by traffic, and frequently impassable during wet weather; and for some years before the breaking out of the Zulu War (1879) the average cost of carriage was as high as eighteen- pence per ton per mile. Now, however, three lines of railway have been opened,—one of 78 miles from the port at Durban to Pieter- maritzburg, another from Durban 20 miles.north to Verulam through the sugar lands in that district, and a third 7 miles south- ward to the sugar estates by the Isipingo river. These alone have cost the colony about £1,250,000.. An additional line, of 118 miles, to cost about £1,180,000, is in process of construction from Pietermaritzburg to Ladysmith, and will no doubt be at once carried on to connect with the railways of the Orange Free State. The telegraph between Natal and the Cape Colony was opened in 1878, and in the following year telegraphic communication by way of Lorenzo Marques was extended to England. Branches of telegraph arealso carried direct from Natal into the Transvaal and the Orange Free State.

Government.—The colony was annexed as a district to the Cape Colony in August 1845, but in November of the same year it was made a separate government, to be administered by a lieutenant- governor under the general control of the governor of the Cape Colony. At first the lieutenant-governor and an assistant council of four chief officials formed the executive, while the legislative council consisted of the liewtenant-governor and three principal officers. In 1856 Natal became wholly independent of the Cape, and the legislative council was made to consist of sixteen members, twelve elective and four non-elective. In 1869 the lieutenant-governor was empowered to nominate two elective members of the legislative council as members of the executive council. In 1873 the number of members was

increased to twenty, fifteen being elective and five non-elective, and in 1875 eight nominee members were added. The colony is now administered by a governor, the promotion from lieutenant-governor being made 28th January 1882; and by law No. 1, 1883, the legislative council consists of thirty members, twenty-three of whom are elective and seven non-elective, two of the latter holding office during the royal pleasure. The executive

council has been further increased by two nominees not officers of the Government. ‘Ihe qualification for voters is the possession of freehold property worth £50, the occupation of property at an annual rental of £10, or an income of £96 per annum after three years’ colonial residence. All voters are legally eligible as mem- bers. Boroughs or towns having 1000 inhabitants or upwards can form themselves into corporations for the supervision of their own municipal affairs, and townships or villages under certain conditions can frame local bye-laws.

Law and Justice.—The Roman-Dutch law by special enactment prevails within the colony, in addition to which are a number of ordinances and laws enacted by the local legislature, mostly founded upon imperial statute law. The law of evidence is the same as that ~~of the courts of England. It has not been thought practicable as yet to bring the native population under the sane laws as govern the colonists of European descent ; but in 1848 the natives had their own laws confirmed by letters patent, except so far as these might be repugnant to the general principles of humanity as recog~~ nized throughout the civilized world; and they were codified and reduced into writing in 1878. Crimes amongst natives, with some few exceptions, are, however, tried by the ordinary courts. Special laws also have been passed for the benefit of the coolie immigrants. The administration of justice is conducted by a supreme court, and by the courts of the resident magistrates. ‘he three judges of the supreme court, one of whom is chief-justice, sit in Pietermaritzburg tn banco every alternate month, and during the other months circuit courts are held at Durban and in other towns. ‘There is a vice-admiralty court, of which the chief-justice of the supreme court is judge and commissary. In addition to these are courts for the adjudication of

cases under native law with right of appeal to the native high court, which sits under its own special judge assisted. by assessors if need be; and from this high court appeal can be had toa court of which the chief-justice of the colony, the secretary for native affairs, and the judge of the native high court are judges. An appeal lies from all inferior courts to the supreme court, and in suits where the subject-mattcr in dispute is of the value of £500 an appeal ean be had from any final judgment of the supreme court to the privy council.

Education and Religion.—In 1861 there were two collegiate institutions endowed in Natal, the one for Pietermaritzburg and the other for Durban, but little more was done as regards educa- tion until the cducation laws came into force in 1878, when a council of education was created to administer funds voted by the legislative council for scholastic purposes and to control all matters connected with the establishment and working of the public schools of the colony. Most of the religious bodies have good schools in their several parishes or districts ; and public libraries and other literary institutions are to be found not only in Pietermaritzburg and Durban but in the principal towns and villages. Natal was erected into a see in 1858, with its cathedral in Pietermaritzburg, Proceedings were taken against Bishop Colenso (who died June 20, 1888) on certain charges of heresy, and judgment given against him by the South-African bishops in 1863 ; and this led eventually to the formation of a separate see in the colony. On the 25th Janu- ary 1869 the bishop of Maritzburg was consecrated at Cape Town; he is a suffragan of the bishop of Cape Town, and has his cathedral church also in Pietermaritzburg. The Wesleyan Church has a very strong staff of clergy and local preachers in the colony, whilst the Congregational Church, the Dutch Reformed Church, the Presby- terian Church, and the Roman Catholic Church are all represented. At the stations of the Berlin, Free Church of Seotland, American Zulu, Hanoverian, Norwegian, and Trappist missions, great efforts are made to evangelize and train the natives and coolics.

Population.—The total population is about 380,000, of whom about 30,000 are whites, 20,000 Indian coolies, and 330,000 natives, mostly descendants of early refugees from Zululand. Of the white population about one-fifth are of Dutch extraction, and are chiefly resident in the Umvoti, Weenen, Klip

River, and New- castle divisions. Most of thé coolics are located on the coast lands ainongst the planters, who without their assistance would find all field and manufacturing operations impossible, as the natives can- not be depended on for continuous or skilled work.

fistory.—The country was discovered by Vasco da Gama, who sighted the Bluff headland at the entrance to the bay forming the present port at Durban on Christmas Day in 1497, and so named the country Terra Natalis. From that date little is recorded until the survivors of the crew of the Dutch ship ‘‘Stavenisse,” wrecked on the coast in 1686, gave their report of the country and its inhabitants. In 1721 the Dutch formed a settlement, but it was soon abandoned. Subsequently, about 1810, it would seem that Chaka, chief of the Amazulu, swept with his warriors through the whole of Natal and the adjoining territories, destroying all males, and making booty of the cattle and women. One tribe, the Ama- tuli, however, after offering resistance to the invader, retreated into the dense bush near the Bluff and were amongst the few aborigines when the British took possession of the country. In 1824 Liecu- tenant Farewell and about twenty companions landed in Natal

| with the view of colonizing it, and for that purpose entered into a

treaty with Chaka. Some four ycars after their arrival, however, Chaka was murdered by his brother Dingaan, and the settlement was broken up. In 1885 another British officer, Captain Allen Gardner, got permission from Dingaan to introduce missionaries into the country, and at once formed the township of Durban, at the port where there were still a few English settlers. In 1837 several Dutch farmers made an exodus from the Cape Colony, and one of their leaders, Pieter Retief, with the assistance of the Rey. Mr Owen, who had been for some time a resident missionary at Dingaan’s own head kraal, obtained from Dingaan a cession of the whole territory of Natal. Immediately after the conclusion of the treaty Retief and his followers were treacherously murdered, and the attempt was made to extirpate the Boers throughout the length and breadth of the land. The latter with their firearms eventually proved move than a match for their numerous assailants, and joining Mpanda, who had rebelled against his brother Dingaan, utterly routed Dingaan’s army on the banks of the White Umvolozi in 1840, and

drove him to the Amaswazi country, where he was shortly after assassinated. Natal became a British colony on 8th August 1843, and, owing no doubt to the fame of the security and protection to be found under the British flag, large accessions were at once made to the native population by refugees from the several surrounding tribes. Since 1848 the colony has made rapid progress; the native tribes as a rule have been loyal, and, although occasional reports from Zululand have alarmed the colonists, it has very seldom been found necessary to send out the volunteer forces on commando. Any tendency to insubordination on the part of the resident natives has always beeu quickly suppressed, and a spirit of disaffection has never become general. ‘In 1879 the colony became the base of operations against the Zulu king Cetywayo, and in 1881 it was fora short time invaded by the Transvaal Boers in connexion with the fighting which arose out of the annexation of the Trans- vaal in 1877.

Authorities.—Holden, History of Natal: Reports of Grout and Fynn to Native

Commission, 1853; Cloete, Lectures, 1856; Shepstone, Wistoric Sketch of Natal, 1864; Brook, History of Natal, edited by Mann; Johnston, Health and Disease, Natal, 1860; Harvey and Sonder, Flora Capensis: Layard, Birds of South Africa; Smith, Zoology of South Africa; Drummond, Large Game of South Africa; African Pilot for South and East Coasts of Africa; Cadiz, Laws of Natal; Colenso, The Zulu War; Statham, Boers, Blacks, and British, Bird, Form of Government (Natal), 1869; Carter, Narrative of the Boer War. (J. W.T.)

NATAL, a city of Brazil, the capitat of the province of Rio Grande do Norte, is situated on the eastern bank of the river of that name, 2 miles above the mouth, with its fort in 5° 45’ S. lat. and 35° 13’ 12” W. long. Though the water on the bar is only 14 feet at low tide, Natal is the first port of any note to the south of Cape Roque, and trades in cotton, sugar, dye-wood, and other local produce. It was founded in 1597. The population is about 11,000.

NATCHEZ, a city and port of entry of the United Statcs, capital of Adams county, Mississippi, lies on the east bank of the Mississippi, 272 miles above New Orleans. Natchez-under-the-Hill, lying on a low alluvial bank,

con- tains the steamboat landing and a few business houses, The main city, Natchez-on-the-Hill, occupies the summit of a bluff which rises nearly 200 feet above the river, and affords a wide view over the cotton plantations of Louisiana. Among the more conspicuous buildings are the city-hall, the court-house, the market-house, the Roman Catholic cathedral, the Jewish synagogue, and a number of handsome churches. There are two large cotton factorics and other manufacturing establishments. Cotton dealing is the staple trade. The inhabitants numbered 4454 in 1850, 6612 in 1860, 9057 in 1870, and 7058 in 1880,— the city being in population the second in the State.

Fort Rosalie, erected on Natchez Bluff in 1716 by Bienville, and rebuilt in 1729 after its destruction by the Natchez Indians, con- tinued to be a French trading and military post till 1763, when it passed into British hands and received the name of Fort Panmure. Occupied by the Spaniards from 1779 till 1798, Natchez became

at the latter date the capital of the new Territory of Mississippi, retaining that rank till 1820. Its city charter dates from 1808.

NATHANAEL (O83, “he whom God gave,” equivalent to Nethaniah or the Greek Theodore), a common name in later Old Testament times. It appears in the Gospel of John (i. 45 sy., xxi. 2) as the name of a man of Cana of Galilee, one of the first disciples of Jesus. He is not named in the synoptical Gospels, and the fathers (Chrysostom, Augustine, &c.) do not number him among the apostles ;

but his position in the Fourth Gospel has given rise to a prevalent conjecture that Nathanael is the true name of the apostle whose patronymic was Bartholomew (son of Ptolemy). This indeed is mere conjecture, and recent writers have advanced rival hypotheses, ¢.g., that the name is another form for Mattaniah or Matthew (Hilgenfeld), or that Nathanael is identical with the beloved disciple of the Fourth Gospel (Spath) or even a mere symbol of Paulinism (Holtzmann).

NATICK, a town of the United States, in Middlesex county, Massachusetts, near the left bank of the Charles River, a few miles to the south-east of Cochituate Lake, and about 18 miles west-south-west of Boston by the railway between that city and Worcester. It is mainly engaged in the manufacture of boots and shoes, but also produces clothing, boxes, and carriages. The population in 1880 was 8480.

Natick (‘‘our land”) was in 1650 granted to John Eliot, the Indian “‘ Apostle,” for the occupancy of Indians converted to Chris- tianity ; and until 1721 the community was governed by a consti- tution modelled on that of Exodus xviii. Portions of the records, written in the Indian language, are extant. The site of the first Indian church is now occupied by the Unitarian church. Of the Natick Indians only four or five remain, all of mixed blood. The incorporation of the town dates from 1781.

NATIONAL DEBT. Details as to the national debts of individual countries are given under their respective headings, and for the economical principles of the subject the reader is referred to the articles FInaNcE and Powirica Economy. In the present article the subject will be con- sidered briefly in what may be regarded as its technical aspects,—including the special character of the institution, the different classes of debt, the various methods of raising loans, interest, funding systems, comparative statistics of national debts, methods of estimating the burden of debt, and other points.

National debt is so universal an institution that it has been described as the first stage of a nation towards civiliza- tion. A nation, so far as its finances are concerned, may be regarded as a corporate body or even as an individual. Like the one or the other it may borrow money at rates of Interest, and with securities, general or special, propor- tionate to its resources, credit, and stability. But, while in this respect there are certain points of analogy between a@ state and an individual, there are important points of difference so far as the question of debt is concerned. A State, for example, may be regarded as imperishable, and its debt as a permanent institution which it is not bound to liquidate at any definite period, the interest, unless specially stipulated, being thus of the nature of transferrible permanent annuities. While an individual who borrows engages to pay interest to the lender personally, and to reimburse the entire debt within a certain date, a state may have an entirely different set of creditors every six months, and may make no stipulation whatever with regard to the principal. A state, moreover, is the sole judge of its own solvency, and is not only at liberty either to repudiate its debts or compound with its creditors, but even when perfectly solvent may materially alter the con- ditions on which it originally borrowed. These distinctions explain many of the peculiarities of

national debts as con- trasted with those of individuals,—though a nation, like an individual, may by reckless bad faith utterly destroy its credit and exhaust its borrowing powers.

A well-organized state ought to have within itself the means of meeting all its ordinary expenses; where this is not the case, either through insufficiency of resources or maladministration, and where borrowing is resorted to for what may be regarded as current expenses, a state imperils, not only its credit, but, when any crisis occurs, its very existence ; in illustration of this we need only refer to the

cases of Turkey in Europe and some of the states of Central and South America. Even for meeting emer- gencies it is not always inevitable that a state should incur debt; its ordinary resources, from taxation or from state property, may so exceed its ordinary expenses as to enable it to accumulate a fund for extraordinary con- tingencies. This, it would seem, was a method commonly adopted in ancient states. The Athenians, for example, amassed 10,000 talents in the interval between the Persian and the Peloponnesian wars, and the Lacedzmonians are said to have done the same. At Susa and Ecbatana Alexander found a great treasure which had been accumu- lated by Cyrus. In the early days of Rome the revenue from certain sources was accumulated as a sacred treasure in the temple of Saturn ; and we know that when Pompey left Italy he made the mistake of leaving behind him the public treasury, which fell into the hands of Cesar. In later times, also, the more prudent emperors were in the habit of amassing a hoard. We find that the method of accumulating reserves prevailed among some of the early French kings, even down to the time of Henry IV. This system has long prevailed in Prussia, and even at the present day exists to some extent in reconstituted Germany. Frederick II., when he ascended the throne, found in the treasury a sum of 8,700,000 thalers, and it is estimated that at his death he left behind him a hoard of from 60 to 70 million thalers. And similarly, in our own time, of the five milliards of indemnity paid by France as a result of the Franco-German War, 150 millions were set apart to reconstitute the traditional war-treasury. The German empire, apart from the individual states which comprise it, had in 1882 a debt of about £24,000,000, while its invested funds amounted to £37,390,000, including a war-treasure of £6,000,000. The majority of economists disapprove of such an accumula-

tion of funds by a state as a bad financial policy, main- taining that the remission of a proportionate amount of taxation would be much more for the real good of the nation. At the same time the possession of a moderate war-fund, it must be admitted, could not but give a state a great advantage in the case of a sudden war. In the case of England, apart from the private hoardings of a few sovereigns, there does not seem to have existed any deliberately accumulated public treasure ; before the time of William and Mary English monarchs borrowed money occasionally from Jews and from the city of London, but emergencies were generally met by ‘‘benevolences” and increased imposts.

All modern states, it may be said, have been compelled to have recourse to loans, either to meet war expenses, to carry out great public undertakings, or to make up the recurrent deficits of a mismanaged revenue. Resources obtained in this way are what constitute national debt proper. Loans have been divided into forced and voluntary. Forced loans can, of course, only be raised within the bounds of the borrowing country; and, apart from the injustice which is sure to attend such an impost, it is always economically mischievous. The loans which the kings of England were wont to exact from the Jews were really of the character of forced loans, though the method has never been used in England in modern times so extensively as on the Continent. There the sum sought to be obtained in this way has never been anything like realized. In 1793, for example, a loan of this class was imposed in France, on the basis of income; and of the milliard (francs) which it was sought to raise only 100 millions were realized. In Austria and Spain, also, recourse has been had at various times to forced loans, but invariably with unsatisfactory results. Other methods of a more or less compulsory character have been and are

made use of in various states for obtaining money, which, as they involve the payment of interest, may be regarded as of the nature of loans; but the debt incurred by such methods is comparatively insignificant, and some of the methods adopted are peculiarly irritating and mischievous. On the other hand, it has occasionally been attempted to raise voluntary loans by appeals to a nation’s patriotism ; the method has been confined almost exclusively

to France. After the revolutions of 1830 and 1848 appeals were thus made to the patriotism of French capitalists to buy 5 per cents direct from the Government at par, at a time when the French 5 per cents were sclling at 80; but the results were quite insignificant. Even if the amount sought for by a Government could be obtained on the voluntary prin- ciple, the method itself is vicious, withdrawing as it does from the general working capital of the country a sum of serious dimensions. In short, the only economically sound method of meeting expenses which the ordinary resources of a state cannot meet is by borrowing in the open market on the most advantageous terms obtainable. On this normal method of borrowing, loans are divided into different categories, though there are really only two main classes, which may be designated perpetual and terminable. Borrowing in quasi-perpetuity has hitherto been the mode adopted by most states in the creation of the bulk of their debt. Not that any state ever borrows with the avowed intention of never paying off debts; but either no definite period for reimbursement is fixed, or the limit has been so extended as to be practically perpetual, or in actual practice the debt has been got rid of by the creation of another of equal amount under similar or slightly differing conditions as to interest. Of course a state is not bound to retain any part of its debt as a perpetual burden; it is at liberty to liquidate whenever it suits its convenience. This quasi-perpetuity of debt in the case of a state ina sound financial condition involves no hardship upon its creditors, who may at any moment realize their invested capital by selling their titles as creditors in the open money market, it may be at the price they paid, or it may bea little below or a little above it, according to the state of the market at the time. Loans, again, contracted on the terminable principle are of various classes; the chief of these are (1) life annuities, (2) terminable annuities, (3) loans repayable by instalments at certain intervals, (4) loans repayable entirely at a fixed date.

From the time of William III. life and terminable annuities have been a favourite mode in England either of borrowing money or of commuting, and thus gradually paying off, the existing funded debt. At first, and indeed until comparatively recent times, the system of life annuities resulted in serious loss to the country, owing to the calculation of the rate of annuity on too high a scale, a result arising from imperfect data on which to base estimates of the average duration of life. The system of life annuities was

sometimes combined in England with that of perpetual annuities, or interest on the permanent debt,—the life annuity forming a sort of additional induce- ment to lenders of limited means to invest their money. At one time the form of life annuities known as tontine was much in vogue both in England and France, the principle of the tontine being that the proceeds of the total amount invested by the contributors should be divided among the survivors, the last survivor receiving the whole interest or annuity. The results of this system were not, however, encouraging to the state. In England, at least, the terminable annuity has been a favourite mode of borrowing from the time of William III.; it has been generally conjoined with a low rate of permanent interest on the sum borrowed. Thus in 1700 the interest on the consolidated debt amounted to only £260 000, while the

NAS! TOL PE BT

terminable annuities payable amounted to £308,407. In 1780 a loan of 12 millions was raised at 4 per cent. at par, with the additional benefit of an annuity of £1, 16s. 3d. per cent. for eighty years. Even so late as the Crimean War in 1855, a loan of 16 millions at 3 per cent. at par was contracted, the contributors receiving in addition an annuity of 14s. 6d. per cent. for thirty years. however, this beneficiary system has been abandoned, though the system of terminable annuities has received increased favour, especially as a means of reducing the funded debt. Of the total debt of England in 1882, up-

wards of 354 millions were in terminable annuities, while

in 1883 the sum was only £29,492,125.

The third method of contracting terminable loans, that of gradual repayment or amortization within a certain limit of years, has been a favourite one among certain nations, and specially commends itself to those whose credit is at a low ebb—as Turkey, Russia, and Egypt. When the final term of repayment is fixed upon, a calculation is easily made as to how much is to be paid half-yearly until the expiry of the term, so that at the end the whole, princi- pal and interest, will have been paid. At first, of course, the amount paid will largely represent interest, but, as at each half-yearly drawing of the numbers of the bonds to be finally paid off the principal will be gradually

reduced, there will be more and more money set free from interest for the reduction of the actual debt. This method, as we have said, has its advantages, and when conjoined with stipulations as to liberty of conversion to debt bearing a lower rate of interest than that originally offered, and when the bonds are not issued at a figure much below par, might be the most satisfactory method of raising money for a state under certain emergencies. What is known as the “Morgan loan” of France in 1870 was contracted on such conditions.

The last form of temporary loan, that repayable in bulk at a fixed date, is one which, when the sum is of consider- able amount, is apt to be attended with serious disadvant- ages. The repayment may have to be made at a time when a state may not be in a position to meet it, and so to keep faith with its creditors may have to borrow at a higher rate in order to pay their claims. It has, however, worked well in the United States, most of the debt of which has been contracted on the principle of optional payment at the end of a short period, say five years, and compulsory payment at the end of a longer period, say twenty years. Thus the loan of 515 millions of dollars contracted in 1862 was issued on this principle, at 6 per eent., and so with other loans between that year and 1868. In European states, however, the risks of embarrassment are too great to permit of the application of this method on an extensive scale; and for loans of great amount the methods most likely to yield satisfactory results are loans bearing quasi-perpetual interest, or those repayable by instalments on the basis of half-yearly drawings within a certain period.

What are known as lottery loans are greatly favoured on the Continent, either as an independent means of raising money, or as an adjunct to any of the methods referred to above. These must not be confounded with the lottery pure and simple, in which the contributors run the risk of losing the whole of their investment. The lottery loan has been found to work well for small sums, when the interest is but little below what it would have been in an ordinary loan, and when the percentage thus set aside to form prizes of varying amounts forms but a small fraction of the whole interest payable. The principle is that each contributor to such a loan has a greater or less chance of drawing a prize of varying amount, over and above the repayment of his capital with interest.

Latterly, ©

NATIONAG DEBT

What are known as exchequer bills and treasury bills may be regarded as loans payable at a fixed period of short duration, from three months upwards, and bearing very insignificant interest, even so low as 4 per cent. They are a useful means of raising money for immediate wants and for local loans, and form handy investments for capitalists

who are reserving their funds for a special purpose.

Exchequer bonds are simply a special form of the funded debt, to be paid off generally within a certain period of years.

There are two principal methods of issuing or effecting a loan. Hither the state may appeal directly to capitalists and invite sub- scriptions, or it may delegate the negotiation to one or more bankers. The former method has been occasionally followed in France and Russia, but in practice it has been found to be attended with so many disadvantages to the borrowing state or city that the best financial authorities consider it unsound. The great banking- houses have such a command over the money-market that it is difficult to keep evena direct loan out of their hands. The majority of loaus, therefore, are negotiated by onc or more of thesc houses, and the name of Rothschild is familiar to every one in connexion with such transactions. By this method a borrowing state can assure itsclf of having the proceeds of the loan with the least pos- sible delay and with the minimum of trouble.

245

is at liberty at any time to pay off its debts, and, if it can borrow at 3 per cent. to pay off a 6 per cent. debt, it may with perfect justice offer its creditors the option of payment of the principal or of holding it at areduced interest. Government debts are, how- ever, sometimes reduccd after a fashion by no means so legitimate as this; we need only refer to Turkey, where both principal and interest have been enormously reduced on a debt on which little or no interest was ever paid. Other states have been even more un- principled, and have got rid of their debts at one sweep by the

simple method of repudiation; some of the States of the American Union are notorious examples of this easy method.

When a state has a variety of loans at varying rates of intercst, it may consolidate them into a single debt at a uniform interest. For example, in 1751 several descriptions of English debt were con- solidated into one fund bearing a uniform interest of 3 per cent., an operation which gave origin to the familiar term ‘‘consols” (‘‘cousolidated funds”). In the early days of the English national debt, a special tax or fund was appropriated to the pay- ment of the interest on each particular loan. This was the original meaning of ‘‘funds,” a term which has now come to signify the national debt generally. So also the origin of the term ‘funded ” as applied toa debt which has been recognized as at least quasi- permanent, and for the payment of the interest on which regular provision is made. Unfunded or floating debt, on the other hand, means strictly loans for which no permanent provision requires to be made, which have been obtained for temporary purposes with the intention of paying them off within a brief period. Exchequer and treasury bills are included in this category, and such other moneys in the hands of a Government as it may be required to reimburse at any nioment. Where a Government is the recipient of savings banks deposits, these may be included in its floating debt, and so also may the paper-money which is issued so largely by some Governments. The unfunded debt of England is comparatively small, while in Austria and some other states it has attained formid- able and embarrassing dimensions. A state with an excessive float- ing debt must be regarded as in a very critical financial condition.

National debt, again, is divided into external and internal, according as the loans have been raised within or withont the country,—some states, generally the smaller ones, having a con- siderable amount of exclusively internal debt, though it is obvious that the bulk of national debts are both external and internal.

We referred above to various ways of reducing the burden of a debt, and also to methods of contracting loans by which within a certain period they are amortized or extinguished. Most states, however, are burdened with enormous quasi-permanent debts, the reduction or extinction of which gives ample scope for the financial skill of statesmen. A favourite method of

accomplishing this is by the establishment of what is known as a sinking fund, formed by the setting aside of a certain amount of national revenue for the reduction of the principal of the debt. Unless carefully managed, a sinking fund is likely to prove a snare. Where it is the genuine result of surplus revenue, and not of money which is in reality borrowed, the only sure method of making it accomplish its pur- pose is to sink it yearly in the discharge of debt. Where it is allowed to accumulate ‘‘at compound interest,” as in Pitt’s famous experiment, there is great danger of its being diverted from its pur- pose, and the debt increased instead of diminished. In 1786a ‘‘new sinking fund” was established in England, and certain commis- siouers appointed to carry its object into effect. With certain modi- fications in 1829, the fund continued in force till 1875, when another ‘‘new sinking fund” was established by which ultimately almost 29 millions were set aside for the annual service of the debt, the difference between the sum actually required and this fixed amount being applied to purchase of stock. This fund was to continue in operation for ten years. Meantime Mr Childers, chancellor of the exchequer, has had an Act passed (1888) for the creation of a large amount of terminable annuities (from five to twenty years), by the operation of which £178,000,000 of stock will be cancelled in twenty years. The existing 28 millions (over 29 millions in 1883-4) will continue to be the yearly charge of the debt, but, as the annuities into which it is proposed to convert a large portion of the debt fall in, more and more of this sum will be set free for the reduction of the principal of the debt. In the United States the large surplus of revenue over expenditure is regularly applied to the reduction of the debt, so that the enormous liabilities incurred owing to the civil war are being reduced with unprecedented rapidity. The sinking fund also plays a prominent part in the new arrangements which have been made with the creditors of Turkey and Egypt.

Questions as to the policy of a state contracting debt belong Debts of properly to the general subjects of finance and political economy ; different here we shall briefly deal with actual facts, the progress of the countries.

leading national debts, and their present comparative magnitudes.

The debt of the United Kingdom at the Revolution in 1688 United amounted to only £664,268, with an annual charge of £39,855, Kingdom.

During the reign of William III. this increased to the comparatively large sum of £12,767,000, with an annual charge of £1,215,324, which at the acccssion of Gcorge I. had grown to £86,000,000 and

Franee.

Austria.

Germany.

246

£3,063,135 respectively. In 1727 the capital had increased to £53,979,000, while by reduction of intcrest the annual charge had diminished to £2,360,930. Partly by the operation of the sinking fund, the debt in 1739 had decreased by upwards of 7 millions, but the wars which followed left it at the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748 at the sum of £77,488,940. By the end of the Seven Years' War, however, in 1763, the debt had risen to £183, 287,940, besides terminable annuities, and the annual charge to £5,032,732. At the cominencement of the American War, 1775, the debt had fallen to £126, 842,800, but as a result of that war this was more than doubled, and the burden had grown to £273,000,000, including the capitalized value of terminable annuities. Aftcr a diminution of

about 10 millions during the nine years' peace, the long French |

wars, which terminated in 1815, left the country burdened with a debt of over 900 millions, at an annual charge of £32,645,618. With various fluctuations during the next forty years, the debt gradually diminished to a little over 800 millions. The two ycars of war with Russia cost upwards of 30 millions, and in 1857 the capital sum had risen to £838,900,000 and the annual charge to £28,681,177. In 1870 it had fallen again to 800 millions, which in 1883 had diminished to £756,376,519, with an annual charge of £29,678,672, including terminable annuities and the charge there- on, as wellas the sinking fund. As we have already pointed out, the actual capital of the British debt does not represent by any means the sums actually received by the state. During the past and the early years of the present century enormous sums were borrowed at a price far below par, the

difference adding many millions to the actual burden of the debt. At the same time some relief has been obtained from this burden by judicious conversions into lower- priced stock and the creation of terminable annuities. For the relations between the South Sea Company and the Bank of England and the British uational debt, we must refer to the articles BANK- Ing and Finance. In the above estimates we have taken no account of the indebtcdnesses of cities, counties, and other local divisions, which can scarcely be regarded as included in the debt of the nation as a whole. Were these sums added they would increase the total amount of the debt by about 150 millions.

One peculiarity of the national debt of France is that itis reckoned, not according to capital, but according to rente or interest; so that any estimatcs based on rente must be regarded as approximate. Another peculiarity is the minute distribution of the consolidated debt among a multitude of creditors, most of whom are French ; this arises from the fact that the shares in French debt may be subdivided into minute parts, and an investor may thus purchase a few francs' worth of rente. Thus in 1883 the number of holders of rente was over 4,000,000. The debt of France can be traced as far back as 1875, and at the death of Louis XIV. in 1715 it is estimated to have amounted to a capital of £124,000,000, though this was arbitrarily reduced in the following year to 80 millions. The republican Government of 1793 cancelled nearly the whole of the then existing debt, reducing it to a capital of £32,000,000, with a rente of £1,600,000. During the empire, notwithstanding Napo- leon's extensive wars, the debt had only grown to £70,645,000, including a floating debt of 20 millions. – Under the Bourbons, what with war-levies and constant deficits, it grew rapidly, and in 1830 stood at £141,770,000. To this the Orleans dynasty added 40 millions, leaving the debt in 1848 at 182 millions. During the four years of the republic this grew to £245,250,000, while the enormous deficits and the wars of the second empire raised it to £550,000,000 in December 1870. The further cost of the German war, with its enormous indemnity and the foreign occupation of 1870-73, added upwards of 300 millions to this. Since then the French debt has steadily grown, and in 1883 stood (capitalizing all classes of debt) at about £1,000,000,000, with an annual charge of £52,722, 300,—the largest in the world.

In 1763, at the end of the Seven Years' War, Austria had a debt of only £15,000,000; but, as it is a country of almost constant deficits, this sum has rapidly increased. In 1815 it was £82,500,000; in 1830, 108 millions; in 1848, 125 millions; in 1862, after the French war, £252,671,860, to which the war with Prussia added 40 millions in 1866. Since then it has grown apace, and in 1883 stood at £380,000,000, including floating debt, paper-money, and Austria's special liabilities, amounting to £105,700,000, but excluding the special debt of Hungary, which amounted to over 104 millions ; Hungary, besides, contributes three-tenths to the interest of the common debt, this intercst in 1883 amounting to £1 2,024,070, in addition to over 2 millions for Austria's special debt.

The debt of Prussia in 1800 was only £5,250,000, which as a result of the French wars grew by 1820 to 31 millions. By 1842 10 millions were paid off, but in 1866 it had risen to 42 millions, partly from deficits, partly from war preparations, and partly from money sunk in the construction of railways. The war with Austria, and the annexations in 1866, raised it by 1870 to £56,400,000. Since then it has ncarly doubled, and in 1882 had reached the sum of £102,984,071, with an annual charge of £4,381,032. Much of the debt of Prussia has, however, been contracted for railways and the development of the resources of the country, and is in fact

maT PONG DE BT

nearly covered by the revenue of the state-railways, domains, and miues. The German empire, as such, had no debt at the time of its re-establishment in 1870, though one has sincc been created ; in 1883 the total funded debt was £18,500,000 at 4 per cent. interest, There was also an unfunded debt consisting of state treasury bills amounting to £7,698,210. The expenscs of the French war were far more than covered by the indemnity, while the various invested funds of the empire amounted to £37,390,523. Besides Prussia, each of the German states has its own special debt. In all these amounted to about 170 millions, most of this sum having been borrowed for the construction of railways, so that the actual burden is comparatively small. Thus the total debt of the empire and of the states composing it is only a little over 300 millions.

It is difficult to obtain any trustworthy figures as to the debt of Russia,

Russia. The history of its financc is a history of almost continual deficits, largely covered since the time of Catherine II. by the issue of paper roubles, which at her death amounted to about 30 million pounds sterling, and in 1817 to 125 millions. The total debt was first stated for 1853, when it was given as 125 millions, including paper-money. In 1858, aftcr the Crimean War, it was 240 millions, and in 1869, including the floating debt, 300 millions. In 1880 it was estimated at 640 millions, one-third of which was paper roubles. Were the depreciated rouble taken at par, the sum would be nearly half as much again. The interest on the debt in 1880 amounted to 17 millions, and in the budget for 1882 the total charge of the debt was set down at over 28 millions.

In 1876 the debt of Turkey stood at 296 millions, but since then, by a process of reduction, it has been brought down to 150 millions, besides an internal debt estimated at 20 millions.

The united kingdom of Italy began in 1860 with a debt of 974 million pounds sterling, which, mainly through continual deficits, but partly by the construction of railways, had grown to 4464 millions in 1881, with a net interest of 17 millions, a heavy burden on one of the poorest countries of Europe.

Like Austria, Spain has been a country of constant deficits, combined with frequent repudiations and chronic inability to mcet the claims of creditors. Spain was deeply in debt so long ago as the 16th century ; the amount in 1745 was 9 millions sterling, which was repudiated by Ferdinand VI. A commission in 1822 reported the debt at 140 millions, but in 1822 a second junta reduced it to 52 millions. In 1851, with the floating debt, the amount was 113 millions, one half of which was declared passive, bearing no intercst. In twenty years this had more than doubled, being in 1870 £237,400,000, with an annual charge of £6,735,000. In 1881 the capital sum had increased to 512 millions, but by a pro- cess of conversion this was to be reduced to 240 millions, according to official statement, bearing an annual charge of £9, 500,000.

Portugal has for its size a large debt, the result also of vicious Portugal.

financial administration. It began in 1796 with £900,000, which in 1854 rose to 20 millions, in 1866 to 48 millions, in 1871° to

£64, 333,000, and in 1881 to £97,512,000, with au annual charge of

£3,065, 285.

Greece began her independence by becoming a debtor in 1824 for £800,000, and her borrowings since have loaded the little kingdom with a debt of 15 millions, the interest on which has never been regularly and fully paid. Part of the debt is guaran- teed by England, France, and Russia.

The debt of Holland began in the 16th and 17th ccnturics in her Holland.

struggle with Spain and wars with England, andin 1778 the Dutch were oppressed with a debt of 62 millions, which by 1814 had risen to 144 millions, the annual charge per head of population being over 30s. By 1851 the capital was reduced to 1024 millions, which has gone on steadily decreasing, and in 1882 the capital sum was £78, 442,370, with an annual interest of £2,419,222, being about 12s. per head, thongli the revenue of the state railways makes it somewhat less. A sinking fund of £833,000 is annually devoted to the redemption of the debt. millions taken over from Holland after 1830, which, after growing to 39 millions and again falling by the operation of the sinking fund to £24,400,000 in 1865, has since steadily grown to about 72 millions in 1882, including the railway purchases, the annuities granted for which represent about 13 millions. Most of the remainder of the debt is covered by the proceeds of thc various public works for which it has been raised.

The debt of Denmark was £4,150,000 in 1821.

Turkey.

ltaly.

Spain.

Greece,

The debt of Belgium began with 10 Belgium.

Partly through Den-

deficits, partly through war with Prussia, and partly owing to the mark.

construction of state railways, this grew to £14,862,465 in 1865. This declined to £9,629,257 in 1880, but subsequent loans raised it to over 11 millions in 1882, the annual charge being £554,400. So much of the debt, however, is causcd by productive investments that the annual burden is only 2s, a head: “Only £700,000 of the debt is external.

The existing debt of Sweden began with a railway loan of Swedet.

£1,228,575 in 1858, and nearly all her subsequent loans have been contracted for similar purposes, the total dcbt in 1882 being 125 millions. So much of this is covered by the procecds of the railways that the annual burden is Iess than 9d. per head of population.

| Norway.

jwitzer- and.

SA TY ORW AL’ DEBT

The debt of Norway, which has grown from £1,656,315 in 1871 to £5,806,222 in 1882, has also been largely contracted for railways, though the nct annual charge pcr head is 2s, 6d.

Switzerland in 1882 had a nominal debt of £1,477,881, more than covered by the “federal fortune” or property belonging to the state. The separate cantonal debts amounted in all to 12 millions sterling, in most cases also covered by the proceeds of cantonal property.

Outside Europe we can only refer to the progress of the debts of the United States and India. The former began their carcer as a federal republic with a debt of 15 millions sterling (1791), on which there was little increase till 1816, when it rcached 25 millions, which in 1835 was almost extinguished. The debt, however, rose again, but never exceeded 14 millions till 1860, the

year before the civil war, when it reached 18 millions. During the next four years the debt rose rapidly, and after the conclusion of the war in 1866 the country was saddled with a debt of £556,685,175. This has gone on decreasing since with wonderful rapidity, on account of the systematic application of the large surplus revenue to its reduction, and in 1882 it had sunk to £383, 662,598, being at the rate of over 10 millions a year. At this rate the debt would be

extinguished within forty years. Each of the States has, besides, a debt of its own, these amounting to about 57 millions sterling in

1882.

The debt of India, as might be expectcd from its peculiar con- India,

ditions, far exceeds that of any other British dependency. During the early years of the century there were considerable deficits in the revenue owing to the various wars, and these by 1820 had reached over 5 millions. In 1834, taking the nominal value of the rupec as 2s., there was a total debt of £41,350,952. When the administration was taken over by the imperial Government there was a debt of 81 millions (1859), which, with slight fluctuations, has gone on increas- ing, until in 1882 it had reached £156,820,614, with interest of about 45 millions. Were the Government guarantees of railway and other undertakings added, this would raise the liabilities of the country to about 250 millions. The large receipts from productive investments, however, considcrably reduce the net burden of the debt, which has fallen from 94d. a head in 1871 to about 5d. at the present time.

In the following table we give a list of the leading national debts (1882 and 1883), with various other items, by which some idea nay be formed of their comparative burdensomeuess :—

Table of Leading National Debts.

Per Head

Annual Debt 0 Population, | Charges. £ Ls: ids £ MEN GSAKGIMEAOM.....seseeverseeescevees 756,376,519 21 9 0 29,678,672 British Possessions— LJ \inns0000:. c 000 ESOC EEE EEE eee eee 156,820,614 015 9 4,558,100 PRPS Aer sscssccs ss cnvocseccessccaevas 95,988,682 338 17 7 4,552,000 PME MMI tence eaios os ROOIOMV sc. ccsucccssascssscesessenses 15,441,700 10 6 0 818,700 DEN er Re feces css sssecscvsseescevgesss 1,631,700 40 0 76,741 France. ....| 1000,000,000 2612 0 52,722,300 STOIGGIE.....ssseeees -| 640,000,000 6138 0 28,000,000 ‘Austria-Hungary. 474,759,955 12 10 11 22,027,805 ENV ye cso -.5ssese «+ 446,502,440 | 1514 0 19 748,071 United States…... 383, 662,598 7 ie) 10 17,775,482 BRUM css. 25.js.c00s vedo 03 240,000,000 14 9 0 9,500,000 DMM acces cccenseee saccesees 149,687,434 Gq ey 2,000,000 (?), 7 0 cross SUNOCO Ee – 109,016,350 1915 0 4,948,023 ROM ees ssc cc cscs occsecesevvessones 102,984,071 315 6 4,381,032 Re sce ccasccsccssosscasesesor 97,512,000 20 11 0 3,065,285 (0000010 :o99068000000000 OSCE eee Eee 85,355,660 810 8 4,850,000 Ben ioc cccsecccccssesecsustesss 78,442,370 19) “Al ¥ 2,419,299 ROMEO eect cc cessccxsc-cenes+seeccecccces 72,222,665 13 10 9 8,512,115 MEMO iss saycocccsietsaacesecee esses 70,168,418 i 19) 4 5,494,369 PMISEMUMS REPUDLIC.....ccsecesceeee 29,427,000 ll 11 8 2,594,000

down at about

The total debt of the British empire may be set 1080 millions sterling, or at the rate of about £4, 6s. per head of the population of the empire. The gross debt of all the states of the world is estimated at about 5200 millions in 1882, or about £6

per head. In some of the Central aud South American states it is seareely possible to obtain the actual amount and burden of the debt, as the interest has remaincd unpaid for years. For example, the debt of Costa Rica is equal to £22, 8s. per head, but as no in- terest has been paid for years, the actual burden is nil. In the case of Honduras, if the overduc interest were added to the outstanding debt, the burden per head would be something like £38. Most of those states, however, have been defaulters, and have sought to eseape the burden of thcir liabilities by not meeting them. The classification given by Mr Dudley Baxter in 1874 (Jour. Stat. Soc.) Is still (except as

regards the United States) essentially correct. Tle classified the boriowing states into four categories, according to the rate of interest on the market-price of their stocks:—(1) low Interest states, 3 and 4 per cent.—United Kingdom, Denmark, Molland, Belgium, Germany, India, Canada, Australasia, Sweden ; (2) moderate interest, 5 to 64 per cent.—Morocco, United States, Brazil, Russia, France, British African colonies, Chili, Argentine Republic ; (3) high intercst states, 6% to 10 per cent.—Portugal, Japan, Hungary, Austria, Colombia, Roumania, Uruguay, Italy, Cuba, Egypt, Pern, Ecuador, Turkey (states whose expenditure exceeds their income, and whose other circumstances show some Tisk to lenders); (4) excessive interest, 14 to 66 per cent.—Guatc- mala, Bolivia, Spain, Mexico, Costa Rica, Paraguay, Venezuela, San Domingo, Greece, Honduras (states of unsettled governments and finances, and threatened or actual default of interest). Most of the last class have been or are defaulting states, and among them, In this respect, should be classed Peru and Ecuador.

The above table cannot be said to represent the real relative amounts and burdens of the various national debts. For example, the interest per head of the British debt is 17s., while that of

Ussia 1s 5s. 10d., of the United States 7s., of Australasia 31s. 9d., and of Egypt 18s. 4d. But it is evident that these figures give ho adequate idea of the real burden, —that the average Englishinan ii more easily afford to pay his 17s. a year, the Australasian his 31s. 9d., and much more the average American his 7s., than the ai. Russian his 5s. 10d., or the poor Egyptian his 18s. 4d. It 1as been sought (Fenn’s Compendium) to show the real comparative

Imports and

Per Revenue |Expenditure| Imports Exports iamonts Population. per Head. | per Head. | per Head. per Head. per ae SS Bs Tl, aa 1S) ad. oo Sade 8 te ah £ s. d. £ s. od. 017 0 2 39) 2 810 ll 7 8 8 0 1915 0 0 0 5} OQ % 4 Or 7% 99 06 3 O 8 014 0 111 9 Ti oe 8) 614 1 19 0 0 17 8 0 36 8 0 0 8 8 ie 3a: BS ig % 417 5 4 611 G) we dl 010 11 3 4 6 316 6 G8) ip 216 3 819 8 (8) 1 5 6 1441 514 3 23 7 vi ie tt) 1 8 0 3 0 0 310 4 5 5 0 316 8 ols 0 5 10 019 4 Ls 38 014 9 015 9 110 G 011 8 2) 10) 40 Dy 3. 10 114 8 117 10 312 1 013 10 2 © 4 2) 108 ot ee 113 6 ay 7 Jt iO 7 0 112 0 10″

2 19 0 Sr a7 (Un 7 011 0 ik Wye i le 33 i as 8 IS & 216 1 0 2 0 014 0) O14 0@) i 2 20 10 0 pre AD) 018 4 i, 19 40 oF 10) LS 273 0 813 9 0 311 114 8 1lt 3 3 2) 38.67 «4 610 0 012 11 6 9 18 8 1p 8 019 5 BA VN 333 OREO, Eo i >) iL 6 116 0 2G 42 2 Ol 9 23 6 212 8 evs 1213 0 PAS Ne} 55 Orie ao) Be oo 20 2 6 GU 1116 2 is 21 411 03 °0 OW ih OMe vi Ons 1s 0 3 6 Oe 2 100 A iy 8 21S) 13 45 3 418 8)” Balin

indebtedness by readjusting the capital sums on a 5 per cent. basis. In this way the British debt would be represented by about 460 millions; that of France by 780 millions; Austria, 226 millions; Russia, 4854 millions ; Italy, 4324 millions; United States, 225 millions ; India, 1184 millions ; Belgium, 534 millions ; Holland, 50 millions ; Japan, 93 millions ; Egypt, 99 millions. If, moreover, from these sums be deducted the amount covered by the net earn- ings of reproductive investments, a considerable reduction would have to be made in some cases in the amounts to be provided for by taxation. In tlie case of Prussia, for example, the whole of the debt in 1882 was met by the proceeds of reproductive investments. The Cape Colony, on the 5 per cent. basis, had only half her nomi- nal debt to provide for by taxation, and so more or less with the Australian colonies ; the debt of India would thus be reduced by one-third, of Belgium by about one-half, Norway the same, Sweden by about nine-tenths. Perhaps the most satisfactory test, accord- ing to the above table, of the relative burden of the various debts, is a comparison between the interest per head and the annual value per head of exports. Compare, for cxample, Great Britain with 17s. per head of interest and £8, 8s. of exports, Australasia 31s, 9d. and £17, 8s., Canada 8s, 8d. and £4, 6s. 11d., the United States 7s. and £3, 1s. 7d., and Holland 11s. 9d. and £12, 13s. with France and its £1, 8s. of interest per head and £38, 16s. 8d. of exports, Russia 5s. 10d. and 15s. 9d., Austria-Hungary 11s. 8d. and £1,17s, 10d., Spain 11s. and £1, 8s. 5d., Egypt 18s. 4d. and £2, 8s., Portugal 12s. 11d. and 19s. 5d., Japan 8s. and 8s. 6d.,—and some idea will be obtained of the different conditions of the countries to meet their national liabilities. But even this comparison does not give anything like a complete idea of the real burden of national debt, and should be supplemented by reference to the total income of each nation from all sources and the total amount of its capital, supposing all its assets were realized. Estimates, which can only be regarded as roughly approximate, have been made of the value of national capital of the leading states and the amount of their national income.

Taking, then, the capital of the United Kingdom at 10,000 millions sterling, we find that the national debt, 756 inillions, bears to this the proportion of only a little over 73 per cent.; and even if we added the local debts the proportion would be only about 9 per cent. Taking again the national income at 1200 millions, we find that the annual charge of the debt is only 2} per cent. of this sum, and even if we added the charges of the local

,

debts the percentage would scarecly be above 8. The whole national and local debt conld be paid off by about two-thirds of a year's income ; as they could be also by the produce of three years' exports.

The national capital of France may be roughly estimated at 7500 millions sterling, to which the debt, 960 millions, bears the large proportion of 12°8 per cent., while if the local debts be included the proportion rises to 144 per cent. The incoine of France may be taken at 950 millions, to which the annual charge of the debt bears the proportion of 3°65 per cent., and that of the local debts would raise it to 4 at least. It would take nearly five years even of the procecds of the '' general exports" of France to pay off the national debt.

The national capital and income of the United States increase with unexampled rapidity. The former cannot be less at present than 7000 millions, and the latter 1500 millions (more than even that of the United Kingdom). The national debt is 5 per cent. of the former, and the total federal and State debts only 6 per cent., while the interest (including that of the Pacific Railway loans, for which there are reimbursements), £17,775,000, is only 1°2 per cent. of the rapidly increasing income. Onc-fourth of a year's income would pay off the whole of the debt.

If we take the total debts of the German empire and all the states at 300 millions, and the national capital at 4500 millions, we find the former only 6 per cent. of the latter. Belgium and Holland are equally favourably situated in this respect, while in the Scandinavian countries the proportion of debt to national capital is only about 2 per cent. Coming to Russia, we

find the debt bears the enormous proportion of 28 per cent. to the approxi- inate national eapital, while the interest is 5 per cent. of the national income. Estimating the latter at 560 millions, we sce that one year would not suffice to pay off the 640 millions of debt. Austria-Hungary is not quite so bad, as the debt is only 17 per cent. of the capital, and it could be nearly paid off by a year's income. Italy secms even in a worse state than Russia, as her debt is esti- mated at 27 per cent. of her capital, which it would take two ycars' income to pay off, while Spain and Portugal (even with the greatly reduced prineipal of the former) have a combined debt amounting to 29 per cent. of their united national capitals. India and the British colonies are nearly as favourably situated in this respect as the mother-country, while the rapid devclopment of the enormous resources of Canada and the Australian colonies tends constantly to diminish the proportion of debt to capital.

Other elements which ought to be taken into consideration in estiniating the real burden of national debt, besides the above and the increased development of the world's resources, are the increase of population and the depreciation of the precious metals. Thus, while the annual charge of the British debt per head was 34s. 8d. in 1815, it was only 16s. 10d. in 1882, and this not solely from the decrease of the debt, but even more largely by the increase of the population. Moreover, owing to the decreased value of money, 16s. 10d. in 1882 is in reality very considerably less than the half of 34s. 8d. in 1815. Thus even by the operation of the unearned in- crement, not to speak of the increasing value of reproductive investment, the natural tendency is for the actual burden of national debt to decrease every year, unless itis recklessly increased by fresh loans.

See Leroy-Beaulieu, Traité de la Science des Finances; Rau, Finanzwtssen- schaft; M'Cuiloch, On Taxation and the Funding System; Hamilton, Znquiry concerning the Rise and Progress of the English Debt; 'Saylor, iZistory of Taxation in England; Fenn, Compendium of English and Foreign Funds; A. Johnstone Wilson, The National Budget; Dudley Baxter, National Debts, and his paper in the Stat, Soc. Jour., 1874; The Statesman's Year- Book, 1883; M. Block, Annuaire dev Economie Politique et dela Statistique, 1883; Dictionnaire Général de Polt- tique; and Statistique de la France comparée avec les divers pays de UV Europe; Cohen, Compendium

of Finances; J. Garnier, Traité de Finances; papers by Leone Levi (1862), Hyde Clarke, and R. Giffen (1878), and others in Jour. of

Stat. Soc.; paper by Ernest Seyd, in Soc. of Arts Jour., 1878; the parliamentary reports on Public Income and Expenditure, 1688-1869. (J. S. IK.)

NATOLIA, or Anatotia. See Asta Minor.

NATRON. See Sopa.

NATURALIZATION. See ALrEn,

NAUDE, Gasrret (1600-1653), French librarian and scholar, was born at Paris in February 1600. An intense love for books caused him to accept, when only twenty years of age, the appointment of librarian to the president De Mesines, whom: he left in 1626 to finish his medical studies at Padua. On returning to Paris in 1628 he was chosen to deliver a panegyrical discourse on the medical school. The credit thus acquired brought him under the notice of Cardinal Bagni, who took him to Rome and gave him charge of his collection. On Bagni's death in 1641 he became librarian to Cardinal Barberini, under whose patronage he commenced a wearisome controversy with the Benedictines concerning the authorship of De Lmitatione

Christi. Richelieu, wishing to secure the services of Naude, recalled him to Paris in 1642, but, the great minister dying a few months later, Naudé accepted a similar offer on the part of Mazarin, and for the next ten years his unwearied energy was directed to the task of bringing together that noble assemblage of books since known as the Bibliothéque Mazarine (see LIBRARIES, vol. xiv. p. 525), making for the purpose expeditions to all parts of Europe. The troubles of the Fronde caused him to assent to the wish of Queen Christina that he should become her librarian at Stockholm. He was not happy in Sweden, however, and on Mazarin's appeal that he should reform his scattered library Naudé returned at once. But his health was altogether broken, and he died on the journey at Abbeville in July 1653.

The friend of Gui Patin, Gassendi, and all the liberal thinkers of his time, Naudé was no mere bookworm ; each of his books shows traces of the critical spirit which made him a worthy member of the company of humorists and scholars who prepared the way for the better known writers of the “siécle de Louis XIV.”

Ineluding works edited by him, a list of ninety-two pieces is given in the Naudwana. The chief are Le Marfore, ow discours contre les libelles, Paris, 1620, very rare, reprinted 1868; Jnstruetion & la Franee sur la vérité de Vhistoire des Freres de la Roze-Croiz, 1623, 1624, displaying their impostures ; Apologie pour tous les grands personnages faussement soupconnez de magtie, 1625, 1652, 1669, 1712,—Pythagoras, Socrates, Thomas Aquinas, and Solomon are ainong those defended ; Advis pour dresser une bibliothéque, 1627, 1644, 1676, translated by J. Evelyn, 1661, full of sound and liberal views on librarianship; Addition a Uhistoire de Louys XT., 1630 (this includes an account of the origin of printing) ; Bibliographia politiea, Venice, 1638, &c., in French 1642, a mere essay of no bibliographical value ; De studio liberali syntagma, 1632, 1645, a practical treatise fonnd in most collections of directions for studies; De studio militari syntagma, 1637, esteemed in its day ; Considéra- tions politiques sur les coups d’état, Rome [Paris], 1639, first edition rare, augmented by Dumay, 1752 (this contains an apology for the massacre of St Bartholomew) ; Biblioth. Cordesianz Catalogus, 1648, classified ; Jugement de tout ee que a été imprimé contre le Card. Mazarin [1649],;Naudé’s best work, and one of the ablest defences of Mazarin ; it is written in the form of a dialogue between Saint- Ange and Mascurat, and is usually known under the name of the latter.

Authorities. —L. Jacob, G. Naudzi tumulus, 1659; P. Hallé, Elogium Naudet, 1661 ; Niceron, Mémoires, vol. ix.; L. Jacob, Tratcté des plus belles bibliotheques, 1644; Gui Patin, Zetires, 1846; Naudxana et Patiniana, 1703; Saintc-Beuve, Portraits Litt., vol. ii.; Revue des Deux Mondes, 1886; A. Franklin, {Zistoire de la Bibl. Mazarine, 1860.

NAUMACHIA, the Greek word denoting a naval battle, was used by the Romans as the name for mimic sea-fights which were shown as a spectacle to the public. The first that is recorded was given by Julius Ceesar on an

artificial lake which he constructed in the Campus Martius. After this naumachie became a favourite spectacle for the emperors to give to the people. Claudius made a great one on the Lacus Fucinus, Nero another in the amphitheatre at Rome. Gladiators or condemned criminals fought in these battles ; in later times even volunteers took part in them. The combatants were often dressed in costume: Augustus showed a naumachia of Athenians and Persians ; Titus acted a sea-fight between Corinth and Corcyra.

NAUMBURG, the chief town of a circle in the district of Merseburg, Prussian Saxony, and the seat of the pro- vincial law courts, is pleasantly situated on the Saale, near its junction with the Unstrut, in the centre of an amphi theatre of vine-clad hills. The cathedral, an imposing building in the Romanesque Transition style (1207-42), has a Gothic choir at each end, and contains some interesting medizeval sculptures. There are also three other Protestant churches, a Roman Catholic church, a gymnasium, a real- school, an orphanage, and two or three hospitals. The town-hall was originally the residence of the bishop. The inhabitants, who in 1880 numbered 17,868, are chiefly employed in producing wine (12,000 gallons yearly), but also manufacture cotton and woollen fabrics, chemicals, combs, and leather. Trade, facilitated by the navigable river, is

mainly concerned with wine, grain, vegetables, and dried fruit. An annual fair, founded by the emperor Maximilian in 1514, is still held here, but is now of little importance. Near Naumburg are Késen, a favourite watering-place, and the celebrated school of Schulpforta, which has perhaps the strongest claim to the title of a German Eton.

In the 10th century Naumburg was a stronghold of the mar- graves of Meissen, who in 1029 transferred to it the bishopric of Zeitz for protection against the Wends. In Saxon history Naum- burg is memorable as the scene of various treaties; and in 1561 an assembly of Protestant princes was held there, which made a futile attempt to cenient the dissensions of the Protestants on doctrinal points. In 1564 the last bishop died, and the

bishopric fell to the elector of Saxony. In 1631 the town was taken by Tilly, and in 1632 by Gustavus Adolphus. It became Prussian in 1814. An annual festival, with a procession of children, is referred to an apocryphal siege of the town by the Hussites in 1432, but is prob- ably connected with an incident in the Brothers' War, between elector Frederick of Saxony and his brother Duke William (1447- 51). Lepsius the antiquary and his more distinguishcd son the Egyptologist were born at Naumburg.

NAUPACTUS. See Lepanro.

NAUPLIA, a town in the Peloponnesus, at the head of the Argolic Gulf. In the classical period it was a place of no importance, and when Pausanias lived, about 150 a.p., it was deserted. Ata very early time, however, it seems to have been of greater note, being the seaport of the plain in which Argos and Mycene are situated. A hero Nauplius took part in the Argonautic expedition; another was king of Eubcea. The mythic importance of the town revived in the Middle Ages, when it became one of the chief cities of the Morea. It was captured in 1211 by Godfrey Villehardouin with the help of Venetian ships; a French dynasty ruled in it for some time, and established the feudal system in the country. In 1388 the Venetians bought Argos and Nauplia. In the wars between Venice and the Turks it often changed masters. It was given to the Turks at the peace concluded in 1540; it was recap- tured by Venice in 1686, and Palamidhi on the hill over- hanging the town was made a great fortress. In 1715 it was taken by the Turks; in 1770 the Russians occupied it fora short time. The Greeks captured it during the war of independence on December 12, 1822, and it was the seat of the Greek administration till 1833, when Athens became the capital of the country. The population in 1879 was 4598.

NAUTILUS. For the Paper Nautilus (Argonauta argo) See vol. vi. p. 736; and for the Pearly Nautilus (V. pom- pilius) see vol. xvi. p. 670 sq.

NAVARINO, or Neocasrro, a seaport of the Morea, Greece, in the nomarchy of Messenia, stands on the south shore of the Bay of Navarino, in 36° 54' N, lat. and 21° 4\' E. long. It consists of a citadel, situated on a high rock, and a lower town,—the whole being surrounded bya wall. The population is under 2000. The bay, one of the best harbours in Greece, about 4 miles in length by 2 In breadth, with a depth ranging from 12 to 26

fathoms, 18 protected towards the west by the long and narrow island of Sphagia, the ancient Sphacteria, to the south-east of which lies the entrance, now nearly a mile wide, but anciently much narrower (Thucyd. iv. 8).

The word Navarino is explained as equivalent to Avarino, and is said to record an Avar settlement made here in the 6th century. The name Neocastro distinguishes the place from Paleocastro, the alleged site of the ancient Pylus, on the northern shore of the bay. Sphacteria was the scene of the famous blockade and defeat of the Spartans in 425 B.c.; and it was by the victory of the combined fleets of Great Britain, France, and Russia over those of Turkey and Egypt in the Bay of Navarino on October 27, 1827, that the inde- pendence of Greece was virtually secured.

NAVARRA, an inland province of northern Spain, lies between 41° 57’ and 43° 18’ N. lat., and between 40’ and Tl’ 15’ 50” W. long.,—its greatest length from north to South being 90 miles, its breadth from east to west 86

miles, and its area 4046 square miles. The population in 1877 was 304,184. It is bounded on the N. by France (Basses Pyrénées), on the E. by Huesca and Zaragoza, on the 8. by Zaragoza and Logrofio, and on the W. by Alava and Guipuzcoa. It is traversed from east to west by the Pyrenees and by the Cantabrian mountains, their continua- tion in the west; and almost the whole of the province is overrun by the ramifications of this great central cordillera, which on the north-east especially presents an almost impassable barrier, and encloses numberless secluded past- oral valleys. From Navarra there are only three practic- able roads for carriages into France,—those by the Puerta de Vera, the Puerta de Maya, and Roncesvalles. The highest summits in the province are those of Altoviscar (5380 feet) and Adi (5220 feet). Southward of a line drawn from Sanguesa by Tafalla to Estella the country presents a series of descending but comparatively level terraces, until the Ebro isreached. The chief river flowing towards the Atlantic is the Bidasoa, which rises near the Puerta de Maya, and after flowing southwards through the valley of Baztan takes a north-easterly course, and for a short distance above its outfall at Fuenterrabia constitutes the frontier between France and Spain (Guipuzcoa); by far the larger portion of the province has its drainage to the Mediterranean through the Ebro, whose main feeders

there are the Ega and the Aragon with its tributary the Arga. The geology of the province will be best explained in connexion with that of the Pyrenzan system and of the country as a whole. Gypsum, limestone, freestone, and marble are quarried ; there are also mines of copper (near Leiza), lead (Leiza and Vera), and iron (Goizueta and the valley of Aezcoa), employing a considerable popula- tion; and rock-salt is mined at Funes and Valtierra. There are numerous mineral and thermal springs, but none of more than local fame. The hilly districts are almost entirely appropriated to forests and pasture, the most common trees being the pine, beech, oak, and chestnut. Much of the lower part of the province is well adapted for agriculture, producing the various cereals in remunerative abundance ; the principal fruit grown is the apple, from which cider is made in some districts ; hemp, flax, and oil also occur, and the cultivation of the mulberry for the silk-worm is not unknown. Game, both large and small, is abundant in the mountains, not even the bear being wholly extinct ; and the streams abound with trout and other fish. The manufactures of the province, which are not important, include cloth and paper; wool, iron, salt, hides, and liquorice are the chief exports. Administra- tively Navarra is divided into five ‘“merindades” or departments,—those of Pamplona, Tafalla, Olite, Estella, and Sanguesa. The capital is Pamplona, with a popula- tion of 25,630. It is connected by rail on the west with Alsasua on the trunk line between Madrid and San Sebastian, and with the Ebro valley in the south. There are no Other railways in the province. Besides Pamplona, the only ayuntamiento with a population exceeding 10,000 is Tudela (10,086); Baztan comes next with 9931.

Navarra, or Navarre, along with Guipuzcoa, at the time of the Roman conquest formed the territory of the Vascones, which after- wards became part of Hispania Tarraconensis. Never thoroughly subjugated by the Romans, the Basques or Navarrese offered con- siderable resistance to the Visigothie kings in the 5th and 6th centuries, and afterwards in the 8th, with more success, to the Moors. In 778 Charlemagne succceded in imposing his yoke upon them, but with the assistance of their old enemies they soon after- wards asserted their independence of the Franks. Garcias Ximencz (860) is named as having been their first king. In the beginning of the 11th century Sancho III., el Mayor, had made himself sove- reign of Castile and Leon as well as of Sobrarve and Aragon, but before his death in 1035

divided his extensive dominions into four unequal parts, Navarre being assigned to his son Garcia III. Garcia's son Sancho IV. was overthrown in 1076 by a cousin, Sancho I. of Aragon, in whose line the two crowns remained united

until the clection of Garcia Ramirez on the death of Alphonso I. (VII. of Castile). In 1234 Theobald, third count of Champagne, was crowned at Pamplona as Theobald I., having been adopted as heir by Saneho VII., and through Joanna, the granddaughter of Theobald, who married Philip the Fair of France in 1284, the erowns of France and Navarre became united in the person of Louis X. They were again separated on the death of Charles IV. of Franee without male issue; Joanna II., the daughter of Louis X. and wife of Philip, count of Evreux, was crowned queen of Navarre at Pamplona in 1329. Her great-granddaughter Blanche was married first to Martin of Sicily and afterwards to John, son of Ferdinand of Aragon ; the second after her death made himself king of Navarre in spite of the claims of his son Charles, taking the title of John II]. He 'was followed in 1479 by his daughter Eleanor, the wife of Gaston de Foix, and after her death in the same year Francis Phebus, her grandson, succeeded, being crowned in 1482. At his death (1483) his sister Catherine, wife of Jean d'Albret, naturally succeeded, but, the latter having fallen under the papal ban, Ferdinand the Catholic in 1512 seized the whole of what is now Spanish Navarra, only the small portion of the king- dom on the French side of the Pyrenees being retained by Henry II., son of D'Albret (1516). Her grandson, Henry III. of Navarre, became king of France (Henry IV.) in 1589, and united non-Spanish Navarre to the French erown in 1607.

NAVARRETE, Juan Fernanpez (1526-1579), sur- named El Mudo (The Mute), an eminent Spanish painter of the Madrid school, was born at Logrofio in 1526. The illness which deprived him of his hearing occurred in early infancy, but at a very early age he began, it is said, to express his wants by sketching objects with a piece of charcoal. He received his first instructions in art from Fray Vicente de Santo Domingo, a Hieronymite monk at Estella, and afterwards he visited Naples, Rome, Florence, and

Milan. According to the ordinary account he was for a considerable time the pupil of Titian at Venice. In 1568 Philip II. summoned him to Madrid with the title of king's painter and a salary, and employed him to execute pictures for the Escorial. The most celebrated of the works he there produced are a Nativity (in which, as in the well-known work on the same subject by Correggio, the light emanates from the infant Saviour), a Baptism of Christ (now in the Madrid Picture Gallery), and Abraham Receiving the Three Angels (one of his last performances, dated 1576). He executed many other altarpieces, all characterized by boldness and freedom in design, and by

NA V—

'the rich warm colouring which has acquired for him the

NAV

surname of "the Spanish Titian." He died at Toledo in February 1579.

NAVARRETE, Martin Fernandez ve (1765-1844), Spanish historian, was born at Abalos, Logrofio, in 1765, received his early education at the seminary in Vergara, Guipuzcoa, and entered the navy asa midshipman in 17380, His ship was engaged in the unsuccessful operations against Gibraltar in 1782, and afterwards in the suppression of Algerine pirates. TIll-health compelled him for a time to withdraw from active service, but he was able to devote the leisure thus forced upon him to historical research, and in 1789 he was appointed by the crown to examine the national archives with a view to the publication of a series of documents relating to the maritime history of Spain. Rejoining the navy in 1793, he was present at the siege of Toulon, and afterwards received command of a frigate. From 1797 to 1808 he held in succession various important posts in the office of the minister of marine. In 1808 the French invasion led to his withdrawal to Andalusia, and the rest of his life was entirely devoted to literature. In 1819 appeared, as an appendix to the Academy's edition of Don Quijote, his Vida de Cervantes, the best biography of the great poet and humorist that has as yet been written, and in 1825 the first two volumes of the Coleccion de los Viajes y Descubrimientos que hicieron por Mar los Espatioles desde jines del Siglo XV.,—characterized by Humboldt as "one of the most important historical monu- ments of modern times,'—were

published. The third followed in 1829, and the fourth and fifth in 1837. After the publication of his Life of Cervantes, Navarrete's literary merits received ample recognition: various public posts were conferred on him, including that of director of the hydro- graphical institute, and in 1837 he was made a senator and director of the academy of history. At the time of his death, which occurred on October 8, 1844, he was assisting in the preparation of the Coleccion de Documentos Ineditos para la Historia de Espatia. The last two volumes of the Coleccion de Viajes were published posthumously, as also were a Disertacion sobre la Historia de la Nautica (1846) and the Biblioteca Maritima Espafiola (1851).

NAVIGATION

AVIGATION is the art of conducting a ship across the ocean. It is here treated to the exclusion of seamanship, which forms a distinct subject. The present article will give, first, a view of the history of the art from the time of the epoch-making voyages of Columbus and the Portuguese, with special reference to advances made in England, and then a sketch of practical: naviga- tion as the art now stands.

Up to the time of the Portuguese exploring expedi- tions, sent out by Prince Henry, which led to the dis- covery of the Azores in 1419, and the rediscovery of the Cape Verd Islands in 1447 and of Sierra Leone in 1460, navigation had been conducted in the most rude, uncer- tain, and dangerous manner it is possible to conceive, Thousands of years had passed without the least improve- ment being introduced, except the magnetic needle about the beginning of the 14th century (see Compass and Macnetism). Prince Henry did all in his power to bring together and systematize the knowledge then obtainable upon nautical affairs; he also established an observatory at Sagres (near Cape St Vincent) in order to obtain more accurate tables of the declination of the sun. John II., who ascended the throne in 1481, followed up the good work of his grand-uncle. He employed Roderick and Joseph, his physicians, with

Martin de Bohemia, from Fayal, to act as a committee on navigation. They calculated tables of the sun's declina- tion, and invented the astrolabe, or at least recommended it as more convenient than the cross-staff. The king established forts and settlements on the coast of Africa ; that at St George

de la Mina was on the Gold Coast, showing by the position a great geographical advance. The backward state of navigation at this time is best understood from a sketch of the few rude appliances which the mariner had. He had a compass, a cross-staff or astrolabe, a moderately good table of the sun's declina- tion, a correction for the altitude of the pole star, and occasionally a very incorrect chart. The first map or sea chart seen in England was brought by Bartholomew Columbus in 1489, and the first map of England was made in 1520. Decimal arithmetic was invented by Simon Stevin about the end of the 16th century. Watches were unknown till 1530, and immediately Gemma Frizon or Frisius seized the idea for the purpose of ascertaining the difference of longitude between two places. They were too rough to be of use, and their advocate proposed to correct them by water-clocks or sand-clocks. Almanacs were first published in Poland in 1470, and in London three years later. These contained tables of the sun's declina-

| tion and that of many of the stars, and tables for finding

NAVIGATION

the latitude by the pole star and the "'pointers." There was not till 1607 any means whatever of measuring a ship's progress through the water, and none in general use till twenty or thirty years later (see Log).

The " cross-staff" appears to have been used by astro- nomers at a very early period for measuring heights and distances, more recently by seamen for measuring alti- tudes. It was one of the few instruments possessed by Columbus and Vasco da Gama. The old cross-staff, called by the Spaniards "ballestilla," consisted of two light battens. The part we may call the staff was about an inch and a half square and 36 inches long. The cross was made to fit closely and to slide upon the staff at right

\ omen =}

oO;

ee ee

Fig, 1. angles; its length was a little over 26 inches, so as to allow the “pinules” or sights to be placed exactly 26 inches apart. A sight was also fixed on the end of the staff for the eye to peep through at the other two sights and objects

to be measured. It was made by describing the angles on a table, and laying the staff upon it (fig. 1). The scale of degrees was marked on the upper face. After- wards shorter crosses were introduced, so that smaller angles could be taken by the same instrument. These angles were marked on the sides of the staff.

Another primitive instrument in common use at the beginning of the 16th century was the astrolabe, which was more convenient than the cross-staff for taking altitudes, but was incapable of measuring distances. Fig. 2 represents an astrolabe as described by Martin Cortes. It was made of copper or tin, about one-fourth of an inch in thickness and 6 or 7 inches in diameter, and was per- fectly circular except at one place, where a projection was provided for a hole by which it was suspended. Weight was considered desirable in order to keep it steady when in use. The face of the metal having been well polished, a plumb line from the point of suspension marked the . & vertical line, which when carefully subdivided gave the horizontal line and centre. The upper left quadrant was divided into degrees. The second part Was a pointer pt of the same metal and same thickness as the circular

Fig. 2. plate, about 14 inches wide, and in length equal to the

diameter of the circle. The centre was bored, and a line was drawn across it the full length, which was called the line of confidence. On the ends of that line were fixed

. Plates s, s, having each a larger and a smaller hole, both

exactly over the line of confidence, as sights for the sun or stars. The pointer moved upon a centre the size of & goose quill. When the instrument was suspended the pointer was directed by hand to the object, and the angle read on the one quadrant only. Some years later the

other quadrant was also graduated, to give the benefit of a second reading.

Among the earliest writers who touched upon naviga- tion was John Werner of Nuremberg, who in 1514, in his notes upon Ptolemy's geography, describes the cross-staff as a very ancient instrument, but says that it was only then beginning to be introduced among seamen. He recommends measuring the distance between the moon and a star as a means of ascertaining the longitude.

Thirty-eight years after the discovery of America, when long voyages had become comparatively common, Gemma Frisius wrote upon astronomy and cosmogony, with the use of the globes. His book comprehended much valu- able information to mariners of that day, and was trans- lated into French fifty years later (1582) by Claude de Bossiére. The system adopted is that of Ptolemy. The following are some of the points of interest for the subject before us. There is a good description of the sphere and its circles; the obliquity of the ecliptic is given as 23° 30'. The distance between the meridians is to be measured on the equator, allowing 15° to an hour of time ; longitude is to be found by eclipses of the moon and con- junctions, and reckoned from the Fortunate Islands (Azores). Latitude should be measured from the equator, not from the ecliptic, ''as Clarean says." The use of globes is very thoroughly and correctly explained. The scale for measuring distances was placed on the equator, and 15 German leagues, or 60 Italian leagues, were to be considered equal to one degree. The Italian league was 8 stadia, or 1000 paces, therefore the degree is taken much too small. We are told that, on plane charts, mariners drew lines from various centres (?.e., compass courses), which were very useful since the virtue of the loadstone had become known; it must be remembered that parallel rulers were unknown. Such a confusion of lines has been continued upon sea charts till very recently. Frisius gives rules for finding the course and distance correctly, except that he treats difference of longitude as departure. For instance, if the difference of latitude and difference of longitude are equal, the course prescribed is between the two principal winds,—that is, 45°. He points out that the courses thus followed are not straight lines, but curved, because they do not follow the great circle, and that distances could be

more correctly measured on the globe. The tide is said to rise with the moon, high water being when it is on the meridian and nadir. From a table of latitudes and longitudes a few examples are here selected, by which it appears that even the latitude was much in error. The figures in brackets represent the positions according to modern tables, counting the longitude from the western extremity of St Michael. Flores is 5° 8’ farther west.

Alexandria…..... .81° 0’ N. (31° 13’) 60° 30’ E. (55° 55’) MORONS. aeons: 37 15 (37 58) 52 45 (49 46) Bab Bios dciescere ves ch 25 0 (32 82) 79 «#0 (70 25) Dantzic v0… 54 80 (54 21) 4415 (44 38) a 52 3 (51 31) 19 15 (25 54) TWD ever cieeiniet Gece cs 34 (0 (35 43) 88 45 (40 31) Reiney a… 41 50 (41 54) 36 20 (88 380)

In 1534 Gemma produced an “astronomical ring,” which he dedicated to the secretary of the king of Hungary. He admitted that it was not entirely his own invention, but asserted that it could accomplish all that has been said of quadrants, cylinders, and astrolabes,—also that it was a pretty ornament, worthy of a prince. As it displayed great ingenuity, and was followed by many similar contrivances during two centuries, a sketch is here given (fig. 3). The description must necessarily be brief.

The outer and principal sustaining eirele EPQm represents the meridian, and is about 6 inches in diameter; P, m are the poles. The upper quadrant is divided into degrees. It is suspended by ,

circle EQ is fixed at right angles to the first, and represents the equinoctial line. The upper side is divided into twenty-four parts, representing the hours from noon or midnight. On the inner side of that circle are marked the months and weeks. The third ring CC is attached to the first at the poles, and revolves frecly within it. On the interior are marked the months, and on another side the corresponding signs of the zodiac; another is graduated in degrees. Itis fitted with a groove which carries two movable sights. On the fourth side are twenty-four nnequal divisions (tangents) for measur- ing heights and dis- tances. Its use is illustrated by twenty problems ; it can do roughly all that any instrument for taking angles can. Thus, to find the

latitude, set the sights C, C to the place of the sun in the zodiac, and shut the cirele till it cor- responds with 12 o’clock. Peep through eaFE

the sights and alter Fig. 3.

the point of suspension till the greatest elevation is attained; that time will be noon, and the point of suspension will be the latitude. The figure is slung at lat. 40°, cither north or south. To find the hour of the day, the latitude and declination being known: the sights C, C being set to the declination as before, and the suspen- sion on the latitude, turn the ring CC freely till it points to the sun, when the index opposite the equinoctial circle will indicate the time, while the meridional circle will coincide with the meridian of the place. In this we may see the germ of the ‘‘ equatorial” now used in the principal observatories.

There is at present in the museum attached to the Royal Naval College at Greenwich an instrument, ticketed as Sir Francis Drake’s astrolabe, prior to 1570. It is not an astrolabe, but may be a combination of astronomical rings as invented by Gemma with other things, probably of a later date. It has the appearance of a large gold watch, about 24 inches in diameter, and contains several parts which fall back on hinges. One part is a sun-dial, the gnomion being in connexion with a graduated quadrant, by which it could be set to the latitude of the place. There are a small compass and an hour circle. It is very neat, but too small for actual use ; it may be simply an ornament representing a larger instrument. There is a table of latitudes engraved inside one lid; that given for London is 51° 34’, about three miles too much.

In 1537 Pedro Nuiiez”(Nonius), cosmographer to the king of Portugal, published a work on astronomy, charts, and some points of navigation. He recognized the errors in plane charts, and tried to rectify them. Among many astronomical problems is one for finding the latitude of a place by knowing the sun’s declination and the altitude when on two bearings, not less than 40° asunder. Gemma did a similar thing with two stars; therefore the problem

now known as a “double altitude” is a very old one..

They could do it by the globe within a degree. ‘Tio Nufiez has been erroneously attributed the present mode of reading the exact angle on a sextant, the scale of a barometer, and various other things, the credit of which is due to Vernier nearly a hundred years later. The mode of dividing the scale which Nuiiez published in 1542 was the following. The are of a large quadrant was furnished with forty-five concentric segments, or scales, the outer one graduated to 90°, the others to 89, 88, 87, ce., divisions. As the fine edge of the pointer attached to the sights passed among those numerous divisions it touched one of them, suppose the fifteenth division on the sixth

HaAawWreagTro nN

a fine cord or wire placed at the supposed latitude. The second | scale, then the angle was 15 of 90°=15° 52’ 56”.

This was a laborious method ; Tycho Brahe tried it, but aban- doned it in favour of the diagonal lines then in common use, and still found on all scales of equal parts.

In 1545 Dr Pedro de Medina published Zhe Art of Navigation at Valladolid, dedicated to Don Philippo, prince of Spain. This appears to be the first book ever published professedly on navigation. It was soon trans- lated into French and Italian, and many years after into English by John Frampton. Though this pretentious work came out two years after the death of Copernicus, the astronomy is still that of Ptolemy. The general appearance of the chart of the Mediterranean, Atlantic, and part of the Pacific is in its favour, but examination shows it to be very incorrect. A scale of equal parts, near the centre of the chart, extends from the equator to what is intended to represent 75° of latitude ; by this scale London would be in 55° instead of 514°, Lisbon in 372° instead of 38° 42’. The equator is made to pass along the coast of Guinea, instead of being over four degrees farther south, The Gulf of Guinea extends 14 degrees too far east, and Mexico is much too far west. Though there are many vertical lines on the chart at unequal distances they do not represent meridians ; there is no indication of longi- tude. A scale of 600 leagues is given (German leagues, fifteen to a degree), By this scale the distance between Lisbon and the city of Mexico is 1740 leagues, or 6960 miles ; by the vertical scale of degrees it would be

about the same; whereas the actual distance is 4820 miles, Here two great wants become apparent,—a knowledge of the actual length of any arc, and the means of represent- ing the surface of the globe on flat paper. There is a table of the sun's declination to minutes; on June 12th and December 11th (0.s.) it was 23° 33'. The directions for finding the latitude by the pole star and pointers appear good. For general astronomical information the book is inferior to that of Gemma.

In 1556 Martin Cortes published at Seville The Art of Nawgation. He gives a good drawing of the cross-staff and astrolabe, also a table of the sun's declination for four years (the greatest being 23° 33'), and a calendar of saints' days. The motions of the heavens are described accord- ing to the notions then prevalent, the earth being viewed as fixed. He recommends the height of the pole being found frequently, as the estimated distance run was imperfect. He devised an instrument whereby to tell the hour, the direction of the ship's head, and where the sun would set. A very correct table is given of the distances between the meridians at every degree of latitude, whereby a seaman could easily reduce the difference of longitude to departure. In the rules for finding the latitude by the pole star, the star is supposed to be then 3° from the pole; it is now (1883) 1° 18' 54". Martin Cortes attributes the tides entirely to the influence of the moon, and gives instruc- tions for finding the time of high water at Cadiz, when by means of a card with the moon's age on it, revolving within a circle showing the hours and minutes, the time of high water at the place for which it was set would be indicated. He deplores the loss of the earl of Niebla and other valiant captains of Spain, before Gibraltar, in 1436, because the mariners kept no account of the tides. In this instance it was more probably the effect of current. There is a chapter upon the signs which prognosticate fair or foul weather, from Pliny and Aristotle ; another upon "shining exhalations," the "fire of St Elmo," and other old superstitions. Directions are given for making a compass similar to those then in common use, also for ascertaining and allowing for the variation, The east is here spoken of as the principal point, and marked by a cross, after that the true north,

There is a table of difference of latitude and departure in proportion to the tangent of the course.

The third part of Martin Cortes's work is upon charts ; he laments that wise men do not produce some that are correct, and that pilots and mariners will use plane charts which are not true. In the Mediterranean and Channel of Flanders the want of good charts is (he says) less inconvenient, as there they do not navigate by the altitude of the pole.

As some subsequent writers have attributed to Cortes the credit of first thinking of the enlargement of the degrees of latitude on Mercator's principle, his precise words may be cited. In making a chart, it is recommended to choose a well-known place near the centre of the intended chart, such as Cape St Vincent, which call 37°, "and from thence towards the Arctic pole the degrees increase ; and from thence to the equinoctial line they go on decreasing, and from the line to the Antarctic pole increasing." It would appear at first sight that the degrees increased in size as well as being called by a higher nuinber, but a specimen chart in the book does not justify that conclusion. It is from 34° to 40°, and- the divisions are unequal, but evidently by accident, as the highest and lowest are the largest. He states that the Spanish scale was formed by counting the Great Berling as 3° from Cape St Vincent (it is under 24°). Twenty English leagues are equal to 174 Spanish or 25 French, and to 1° of latitude. Cortes was evidently ata loss to know the size of a degree, and consequently the circumference of the globe. The degrees of longitude are not laid down, but for a first meridian we are told to draw a vertical line "through the Azores, or nearer Spain, where the chart is less occupied." It is impossible under such circumstances to understand or check the longitudes assigned to places at that period. Martin Cortes's work was held in high estimation in England for many years, and appeared in several transla- tions. One by Richard Eden in 1609 gives an improved table of the sun's declination from 1609 to 1625—the greatest declination being 23° 30'. The declinations of the principal stars and the times of their passing the meridian, and other improved tables, are given, with a very poor traverse table for eight points. The cross-staff, he said, was in most common use; but he recommends Wright's sea quadraut.

William Cuningham published in 1559 a book called his Astronomical Glass, in which he teaches the making of charts by a central meridional line of latitude in equal parts, with other meridians on each side, distant at top and bottom in proportion to the departure at the highest and lowest latitude, for which purpose a table of departures is given very correctly to the third place of sexagesimals. The chart would be excellent were it not that the parallels are drawn straight instead of being curved. In another example, which is one-fourth of the sphere, the meridians and parallels are all curved ; 1t would be good were it not that the former are too long. The hemisphere is also shown upon a projection approaching the stereographic ; but the eighteen meridians cut the equator at equal distances, instead of being smaller towards the primitive. He gives the drawing of an instrument like an astrolabe placed horizontally, divided into 32 points and 360 degrees, and carrying a small magnetic needle to be used as a Prismatic compass, or even as a theodolite (fig. 4), A sketch 18 given of Ptolemy observing the sun with a primitive Instrument, likely from its great size to give good results after being correctly fixed, except for the amount of error caused by the shrinkage or expansion of the parts.

Gerhard Mercator’s great improvements in charts have

- “Y @alli hazia el polo artico los grados se augmentan: y d’alli

a la linea equinoccial van diminuyendo: y de la linea al polo antartico augmentando,”

been noticed in the article Map, where a sketch is given of his map of the world, of 1569 (vol. xv. p. 521). From facsimiles of his early charts in Jomard, Les Monuments de la Géographie, the following measurements have been made.

79°, is 2 feet long north and south, and 20 inches wide.

eu.

Another of the same date, from the equator to 60° south is 15°8 inches, The charts agree with each other, a slight allowance being made for remeasuring. As com- pared with Dr Inman’s table of meridional parts, the

spaces between the parallels are all too small. Between 0° and 10° the error is 8’; at 20° it is 5’; at 30°, 16’; at 40°, 30°; at) 50°,..61’; at 60°, 104’ » at 70%, 158’; and at 79°, 182’,—that is, over three degrees upon the whole chart. As the measures are always less than the truth itm 4 gp is the standard} SR is possible that Mercator was the radius bar and pointer, with afraid to give the whole. In vanes and pinules at the side; a chart of Sicily by Romoldus CD is a scale of chords which is Mercator in 1589. on which lifted up to touch the pointer and y ; indicate the angle from 90° near two equal degrees of latitude, g to zero near D. By the size of 36° to 38°, subtend 94 inches, the observer in the drawing the the degree of longitude is standard ST was 10 or 12 feet in quite correct at one-fourth 2sth. from the top; the lower part is a mile too large. One of the north of Scotland, published in 1595, by Romoldus, measures 104 inches from 58° 20’ to 61°; the divisions are quite equal and the lines parallel; it is correct at the centre only. A map of Norway, 1595, lat. 60° to 70° = 94 inches, has the parallels curved and equidistant, the meridians straight converging lines; the spaces be- tween the meridians at 60° and 70° are quite correct.

Norman’s discovery of the dip (1576) has been spoken of at vol. xv. p. 221. He mentions and condemns the practice of each country having compass cards set to their variation, and sailors using them indiscriminately in any part of the world.

In 1581 Michael Coignet of Antwerp published sea charts, and also a small treatise in French, wherein he exposes the errors of Medina. He was probably the first who said that rhumb lines form spirals round the pole. He published also tables of declination, and observed the gradual decrease in the obliquity of the ecliptic. He described a cross-staff with three transverse pieces, which was then in common use at sea. Coignet died in 1623.

The Dutch published charts made up as atlases as early as 1584, with a treatise on navigation as an introduction.

In 1585 Roderico Zamorano, who was then the lecturer at the naval college at Seville, published a concise and clearly-written compendium of navigation; he follows Cortes in the desire to obtain better charts. Andres Garcia de Cespedes, the successor of Zamorano at Seville, published a treatise on navigation at Madrid in 1606. In 1592 Petrus Plancius published

his universal map, con- taining the discoveries in the East and West Indies and towards the north pole. It possessed no particular merit ; the degrees of latitude are equal, but the distances between the meridians are noted. He made London appear in 51° 32’ N. (which is near enough) and long. 22°, by which his first meridian should have been more than 3° east of St Michael.

In 1594 Blundeville published a description of Mer-

cator’s charts and globes ; he confesses to not having known upon what rule the meridians were enlarged by Mercator, unless upon such a table as Wright had sent him (see below). Wright’s table of meridional parts is here pub- lished, also an excellent table of sines, tangents, and secants,—the former to seven places of figures, the latter to eight. These are the tables made originally by Regio- montanus, and improved by the Jesuit Clavius.

In 1594 the celebrated navigator John Davis published a pamphlet of eighty pages, in black letter, entitled The Seaman’s Secrets, in which he proposes to give all that is necessary for seamen—not for scholars on shore. He defines three kinds of sailing :—horizontal, paradoxical, and great circle. His horizontal sailing consists of short voyages which may be delineated upon a plain sheet of paper. The paradoxical or cosmographical embraces longi- tude, latitude, and distance,—the getting together many horizontal courses into one “infallible and true,” ¢.¢., what is now called traverse and Mercator’s sailings. His “ para- doxical course” he describes correctly as a rhumb line which is straight on the chart and a curve on the globe. He points out the errors of the common or plane chart, and promises if spared to publish a “ paradoxall chart.” It is not known whether such a chart appeared or not, but he assisted Wright in producing his chart a few years later. Great circle sailing is clearly described by Davis on a globe; and to render it more practicable he divides along distance into several short rhumb lines quite cor- rectly. His list of instruments necessary to a skilful sea- man comprises the sea compass, cross-staff, chart, quadrant, astrolabe, an “instrument magnetical” for finding the variation of the compass, a horizontal plane sphere, a globe, and a paradoxical compass. ‘The first three are sufficient for use at sea, the astrolabe and quadrant being uncertain for sea observations. The importance of knowing the time of the tides when

approaching tidal or barred harbours is clearly pointed out, also the mode of ascer- taining it by the moon's age. A table of the sun's decli- nation is given for noon each day during four years, 1593-97, from the ephemerides of Stadius. The greatest is 23° 28". Several courses and distances, with the resulting difference of latitude and departure, are correctly worked out. A specimen log-book provides one line only for each day, but the columns are arranged similarly to those of a modern log. Under the head of remarks after leaving Brazil, we read, "the compass varied 9°, the south point westward." He states that the first meridian passed through St Michael, because there was no variation at that place; the meridian passed through the magnetic pole as well as the pole of the earth. He makes no mention of Mercator's chart, nor of Cortes or other writers on navigation. Rules are given for finding the latitude by two altitudes of the sun and intermediate azimuth, also by two fixed stars, by the globe. There is a drawing of a quadrant, with a plumb line, for measuring the zenith distance, and one of a curious modification of a cross-staff with which the observer stands with his back to the sun, looking at the horizon through a sight on the end of the staff, while the shadow of the sun, from the top of a movable projection, falls on the sight box. This remained in common use till superseded by Hadley's quadrant. The eighth edition of Davis's work was printed in 1657.

Edward Wright, of Caius College, Cambridge, published in 1599 a valuable work entitled Certain Errors in Navi- gation Detected and Corrected. One part is a translation from Roderico Zamorano ; there is a chapter from Cortes, and one from Nuiiez. A year after appeared his chart of the world, upon which both capes and the recent discoveries in the East Indies and America are laid down truthfully and scientifically, as well as his knowledge of their latitude

and longitude would admit. Just the northern extremity of Australia is shown. Wright said of himself that he had striven beyond his ability to mend the errors in chart, compass, cross-staff, and declination of sun and stars. He considered that the instruments which had then recently come in use ""'could hardly be amended," as they were growing to " perfection,"— especially the sea chart and the compass, though he expresses a hope that

the latter may be “freed from that rude and gross manner of handling in the making.” He gives a table of magnetic declina- tions, and explains its geometrical construction. He states that Medina utterly denied the existence of variation, and attributed it to bad making and bad observations, Wright expresses a hope that a right understanding of the dip of the needle would lead to a knowledge of the latitude, “as the variation did of the longitude.” He gives a table of declinations for every minute of the ecliptic, and another for the use of English mariners during four years— the greatest being 23° 31’ 30”. The latitude of London he made 51° 32’. For these determinations a quadrant over 6 feet in radius was used. He also treats of the “dip” of the sea horizon, refraction, parallax, and the sun’s motions. With all this knowledge the earth is still considered as stationary,—although Wright alludes to Copernicus, and says that he omitted to allow for parallax. Wright ascertained the declination of thirty-two stars, and made many improvements or additions to the art of navi- gation, considering that all the problems could be per- formed arithmetically by the doctrine of triangles, without globe or chart. He devised sea rings for taking observa- tions, and a sea quadrant to be used by two persons, which is in some respects similar to that by Davis. While deploring the neglected state which navigation had been in, he rejoices that the worshipful society at the Trinity House, under the favour of the king (James L.), had removed “many gross and dangerous enormities.” He joins the brethren of the Trinity House in the desire that a lectureship should be established on navigation, as at Seville and Cadiz; also that a grand pilot should be appointed, as Sebastian Cabot had been in Spain, who examined pilots (ze, mates) and navigators. Wright’s desire was partially fulfilled in 1845, when an Act of Parliament paved the way for the compulsory qualification of masters and mates of merchant ships; but such was the opposition by shipowners that it was left voluntary for a few years. England was in this respect more than a century behind Holland. It has been said that Wright accompanied the earl of Cumberland to the Azores in 1589, and that he was allowed £50 a year by the East India Company as lecturer on navigation at Gresham College, Tower Street.

The great mark which Wright made in the world was the discovery of a correct and uniform method for dividing the meridional line and making charts which are still called after the name of Mercator. He considered his charts as true as the globe itself; and so they were for all practical purposes.

He commenced by constructing a meridional line, upon the proportion of the secants of the latitude, for every ten minutes of the arc, and in the edition of his work published in 1610 his calculations are for every minute. His calculations were based upon the discovery that the radius bears the same proportion to the secant of the latitude as the difference of longitude does to the meridional difference of latitude—a rule strictly correct for small arcs only. One minute is taken as the unit upon the arc and 10,000 as the corresponding secant, 2’ becomes 20,000, 3’=30,000, &e., increasing uniformly till 49’, which is equal to 490,001; 1° is 600,012. ‘The secant of 20° is 12,951,199, amd for 20° 1 « “ee 12,251,192 + 10,642,—practically the same as that used

| a

NAVIGATION

in modern tables. The principle is simply explained by fig. 5, where 6 is the pole and bf the meridian. At any point @ a minute of longitude :a niin, i of lat.::ea (the semi-diameter of the

parallel) : &f (the radius). Again ea ;: kf

:: Af : ki: : radius : sec. akf (sec. of lat.). a

To keep this proportion on the chart, the ©

points of latitude must increase in the

same proportion as the secants of the

arc contained between those points and

the equinoctial, which was then to be k z f done by the “canon of triangles,” ! Fig. 5.

Subsequent writers, including Gunter, Norwood, and Bond, give Wright the credit of having been the first to establish a correct proportion between the meridians and parallels for every part of the chart. This great improve- ment in the principle of constructing charts was adopted slowly by seamen, who,

putting it as they supposed to a practical test, found good reason to be disappointed. The positions of most places had been laid down erroneously, by very rough courses and estimated distances upon an entirely false scale, viz., the plane chart; from this they were transferred to the new projection.?

When Napier's Canon Mirificus appeared in 1614, Wright at once recognized the value of logarithms as an aid to navigation, and undertook a translation of the book, which he did not live to publish (see Naprzr). E. Gunter's tables (1620) made the application of the new discovery to navigation possible, and this was done by T. Addison in his Arithmetical Navigation (1625), as well as by Gunter in his tables of 1624 and 1636, which gave artificial sines and tangents, to a radius of 1,000,000, with directions for their use and application to astronomy and navigation, and also logarithms of numbers from 1 to 10,000. Several editions followed, and the work retained its reputation over a century. Gunter invented the sector, and introduced the meridional line upon it, in the just proportion of Mercator's projection.

The third edition of Gunter's work was published in 1653, and the fifth edition in 1673, amended by Henry Bond, a practitioner in the mathematies, in the Bulwark near the Tower—a thick octavo. A table of meridional parts is given, with instructions to construct it by the addition of secants as Wright did. The table has been

found upon examination to be very correct. The degree is divided into 1000 parts.

With the latitude left, course steered, and difference of longi- tude made good, Bond found the latitude of ship, by projection on the chart, by the sector, or by the following rule:—

tan of course x proportional diff. of lat. radius And conversely, suppose latitude left 50°, course 33° 45', difference of longitude 54°=330'; then cot 30° 45' x 380' radius

=diff. long.

=493°5, prop. diff. lat.,

which, added to the meridional parts corresponding to 50°, will give the number opposite 55°, and 55° is the latitude. Various problems in sailing according to Mercator are solved arithmetic- ally upon the tangents, without the table of meridional parts, Which may also be done geometrically upon the tangent line of the tross-staff. The following important proposition is in Bond's own Wwords:—'* First we must know that the logarithmic tangents from 45° upwards do increase in the same manner as the secants added together do, if we account every half degree above 45° to be a whole degree of Mercator's meridional line; and so the table of allie aint pinned delta mcipaailh

1 The works of Wright passed through at least ten editions; the last which the writer has seen was edited by Moxon in 1657.

2 Ww. Snellius, professor of mathematics at Leyden, published in 1624 a treatise on navigation, after Wright's plan. He mentions the Raine of Wright with others in the introduction, but, as he did not Say what part he took from each, the division of the meridional line to minutes up to 70° was attributed to him, though Wright had done it up to 89° 59' and published it in 1610. Justice was done to

Wright's memory in the Afémoires of the Academy of Sciences, Paris, 1753, p. 275,

logarithmic tangents is a table of meridional parts to every two minutes of the meridian line, leaving out the radius."

The way of using this proposition is as follows. The table begins at 45°, and every 80 minutes is reckoned a whole degree; therefore, when both latitudes are given, take the half of each increased by 45°, subtract the tangent of the lesser sum from that of the greater, and divide the remainder by the tangent of 45° 30/ (radius omitted); the quotient will be the equal, or equinoctial, degrees contained between the two latitudes. Or multiply the aforesaid remainder by ten and divide by half the tangent of 45° 30', and the quotient will be equal to the equinoctial leagues contained between the two latitudes. The logarithmic tangents are here treated as natural numbers, and the

division done by logarithms. Bound lays no stress on the above solution as being new ; it is merely used in lieu of a table of meridional parts.

The subsequent history of the problem of meridional parts may most conveniently be added here rather than in its chronological place. An important letter from Dr Wallis, professor of geometry at Oxford, is given with the Phil. Trans. for 1685, No. 176. The writer says that, the old inquiry about the sum or aggregate of secants having been of late renewed, he thought fit to trace it from its original, with such solutions as seemed proper to it. Archimedes and the ancients divided the curvilinear spaces as figs. 6 and 7. If they reckoned the first four it was too large; if the last four, too small. As the segments increased in number the error diminished. The degrees of longitude decrease as the cosine of the latitude (which is the semidiameter of such parallel) to the radius of the globe or equator. By the straight lines “each degree of longitude is increased above its due proportion, at such rate as the equator (or its radius) is greater than such parallel (or the radius thereof).” The old sea charts represented the degrees of Fic. 7 latitude and longitude all equal. ‘‘ Hereby, pa among other inconveniences (as Mr Edward Wright observed in 1599), the representation of places remote from the equator were distorted.”” Wright advised that the degrees of latitude should be protracted in like proportion with those of lougitude, “that is, everywhere in such proportion as is the respective secant of such latitude to the radius” (see Wright’s explanation of this part, and fig. 5). Fig. 8 represents one quarter of the globe, the surface of which is opened out till the parallel LA becomes a straight line ! as da, and each of the four meridians reaches P, P, P, P. The equator is re-presented by EE; so that the position ,’ of each parallel on the chart should b at such distance from the equator ‘‘as

Fig. 8. are all the secants (taken at equal distances in the arc) to so

many times the radius, . . . which is equivalent to a projection of the spherical surface on the concave surface of a cylinder, erected at right angles to the plane of the equator,” while each division of the meridian is equal to the secant of the latitude answering to such part, as fig. 9. This projection, if expanded

into a plane, will be the same

as a plane figure whose base

is equal to a quadrantal are

extended (or a portion thereof),

on which (as ordinates) are

erected perpeudiculars equal n

to the secants, answering to

the respective points of the s arc extended, as fig. 10. The

first answers to the equator, R

the last to the pole infinite.

“For finding this distance *

answering to each degree and

minute of latitude, Mr Wright \ ~ @ t “

added all the secants from the : Vig. 10

beginning to the position Fig.9. +

required. The sum of all except the greatest (answering to the figure inscribed) is too little. The sum of all except the least (answering to the circumscribed) is too great—which latter Mr Wright followed. It will be nearer the truth than either if we take the intermediate spaces; instead of minutes, take 4, 14, 24, &c., or the double of these, 1, 3, 5, 7, &c., which yet, because on the convex side of the curve, would be rather too little. Hither of these ways will be exact enough fora chart. If we would be more exact, Mr Oughtred directs, as did Mr Wright before him, to divide the arc into parts yet smaller than minutes, and calculate sccants thereto.” Wallis continued the subject and the doctrine of infinite

series; but more than suffieient has been quoted for the purposes of navigation. At the end he adds that the same may be obtained in like manner by taking the versed sines in arithmetical pro- portion.

The next writer who made his mark upon this problem was Dr E. Halley (Phil. Trans., No. 219, 1695). He states that the tangential proportion between the latitude and the divisions of the meridional line was diseovered by ehance, and first published by H. Bond, in Norwood's Epitome of Navigation. James Gregory furnished a demonstration in 1668; but it was long and tedious. Halley claimed for himself the honour of being the first to give a rule whereby the meridional parts between any two latitudes may be ealeulated at onee by the relation of the logarithmie tangents ; but it is practically the same as that published by Bond. Halley said that Wright's table nowhere exceeded the truth by half a mile. Sir Jonas Moore's system, he said, was nearer the truth, but the differenee is not appreciable till beyond navigable waters.

A rather curious paper was read before the Royal Soeiety, June 4, 1666, by Nieholas Mereator upon the meridional line ; he pro- poses to divide it into the hundred-thousandth part of a minute. Roger Cotes wrote upon the same subject an exhaustive paper in Latin, ealled ‘‘ Logometria,” Phil. Trans., No. 338, 1714. He gives an illustrative figure in whieh the rhumb line crosses the meridians at an angle of 45°. His demonstrations by the ratios arrive at similar eonelusions to those elearly expressed by Halley.

All these rules assume the earth to be truly spherical, instead of spheroidal. For the history of inquiry into the exact figure of the earth, see Eantu. It may be mentioned that a pamphlet on this subject by Murdoeh, published in 1741, in whieh meridional parts are adapted to a (very exaggerated) spheroid, shows that plane charts and the roughly-divided Mereator's charts were still used at that date. Plane eharts, indeed. are explained even later, as in Robertson's Navigation, 1755.

The power of taking observations correctly, either at sea or on shore, was greatly assisted by the invention which bears the name of Pierre Vernier, which was published in Brussels in 1631 (see VeRniER). As Vernier's

quadrant was divided into half degrees only, the sector, as he called it, spread over 14} degrees, and that space carried thirty equal divisions, numbered from 0 to 30. As each division of the sector contained 29 minutes of the arc, the vernier could be read to minutes. The verniers now commonly adapted to sextants can be read to 10 seconds. Shortly after the invention it was recommended by Bouguer and Jorge Juan, who describe it in a treatise entitled La Con- struction, dc., du quadrant nouveau. About this period Gascoigne applied the telescope to the quadrant (see MIcROMETER) ; and Hevelius invented the tangent screw, to give slow and steady motion when near the desired posi- tion. In 1635 Henry Gellibrand published his discovery of the change in variation of the needle, which was effected by his comparing the results of his own observations with those of Burrough and Gunter. The latter was his pre- decessor at Gresham College.

In 1637 Richard Norwood, a sailor, and reader in mathematics, published an account of his most laudable exertions to remove one of the greatest stumbling-blocks in the way of correct navigation, that of not knowing the actual size of a degree or nautical mile, in a pamphlet styled The Seaman's Practices. Norwood ascertained the latitude of a position near the Tower of London in June 1633, and of a place in the centre of York in June 1635, with a sextant of more than 5 feet radius, and, having care- fully corrected the declination, refraction, and parallax

2 e i 5) made the difference 2° 28'. He then measured the distance with a chain, taking horizontal angles of all windings, and he made a special table for correcting elevations and depressions. A few places which he was unable to measure he paced. His conclusion was that a degree contained 367,176 English feet ; this gives 2040 yards to a nautical mile,—only about 12 yards too much. Norwood's works went through numerous editions, and retained their popularity over a hundred years; the last which the writer has seen—a good book for the time, free from nonsense—is dated 1732. In it he says that, as there is no means of discovering the longitude, a

seaman must trust to his reckoning. He recommends the knots on the log-line to be placed 51 feet apart, as the just proportion to a mile when used

with the half- minute glass.

Dr Hooke read a paper at the Royal Society, in 1666, upon deep-sea sounding by means of a weight which be- came detached on striking the bottom, and allowed a float to ascend to the surface, while the time was carefully noted —basing his calculations upon performances in known depths. Ile was on the verge of a great success; he required Sir W. Thomson's piano-wire instead of the float.

In the same year a paper was read by Dr Wallis (who had previously published a discourse on tides) showing that the modern theory was not then generally accepted. This was followed by a paper by Sir Robert Moray, who recommended frequent and extended observations, and proposed to form a table which embraced every circum- stance that would appear to be desirable even at the present day. Sir Robert also spoke of the irregularities in the tides past the western islands of Scotland. In Phil. Trans., 1688, vol. xiii. No. 143, there is an account of Flamsteed's tide table for London Bridge, which gave each high tide every day in the year. He justly condemns the old almanacs for deriving the moon's age from the epact, and then allowing forty-eight minutes for every day. Brooker was the first to amend this reckoning, but in a rough manner. Henry Philips, well known by his works on navigation, was the first to bring the inequality toa rule, which was found more conformable to experience than was expected; but Flamsteed made corrections on his rule.

The necessity for having correct charts was equalled by the pressing need of obtaining the longitude by some simple and correct means available to seamen; and we have seen how many plans had already been thought of for this purpose. At one time it was hoped that the longitude might be directly discovered by the variation of the compass; in 1674 Charles II. actually appointed a commission to investigate the pretensions of a scheme of this sort devised by Bond,! and the same idca appears as late as 1777 in 8. Dunn's Epitome. But the only real way of ascertaining the longitude is by knowing the difference of time at two meridians; and till the invention and perfecting of chronometcrs this could only be done by finding at two places the apparent time of the same celestial phenomenon. The most obvious phenomena to select were the motions of the moon among the sun and stars,

which as we have seen were suggested as a means of finding the longitude by Werner in 1514, and continued to receive attention from later writers. But to make this idea practical it was necessary on the one hand to have better instruments for observation, and on the other to have such a theory of the moon's motions as should enable its place to be predicted with accuracy, and recorded before- hand in analmanac. The very principles of such a theory were unknown before Newton's great discovery, when the lunar problem begins to have a chief place in the history of navigation; the places of stars were derived from various and widely discrepant sources ; and almanacs gave little useful information beyond the declination of the sun, the age of the moon, and the time of high water.2_ Another class of phenomena whose comparative frequency recom- mended them for longitude observations, viz., the occulta- tions of Jupiter's satellites, became known through Galileo's discovery of these bodies (1610). Tables for we

1 Bond published in 1676 a quarto volume entitled The Longitude Found.

2 Wharton's Angelus Britannicus, 1662-1715, is a fair specimen of the almanacs of the period.

these were published by Dominic Cassini at Bologna in 1688, and were repeated in a more correct form at Paris in 1693 by his son, who was followed by Pound, Bradley, Wargentin, and many otherastronomers. But this method, though useful on land, is not suited to mariners; when Whiston, for example, in 1737 recommended that the satellites should be observed by a reflecting telescope, he did not sufficiently consider the difficulty of using a telescope at sea, or the infrequency of the occultations, and it is the lunar problem which will chiefly concern us in what follows.

The study of this problem was stimulated by the reward of 1000 crowns offered by Philip III. of Spain in 1598; the states-general followed with an offer of 10,000 florins. But for a long time nothing practical came of this; a pro- posal by J. Morin, submitted to Richelieu in 1633, was pronounced by commissioners appointed to judge of it to be incomplete through the

imperfection of the lunar tables, and in like manner when the question was raised in England in 1674 by a proposal of St Piere to find the longitude by using the altitudes of the moon and two stars to find the time each was from the meridian, and when the king was pressed by St Piere, Sir J. Moore, and Sir C. Wren to establish an observatory for the benefit of naviga- tion, and especially that the moon's exact position might be calculated a year in advance, Flamsteed gave his judg- ment that the lunar tables then in use were quite useless, and the positions of the stars erroneous. The result was that the king decided upon establishing an observatory in Greenwich Park, and Flamsteed was appointed astro- nomical observer on March 4, 1675, upon a salary of £100 a year, for which also he was to instruct two boys from Christ's Hospital. While the small building in the Park was in course of erection he resided in the Queen's House (now the central part of the Greenwich Hospital school), and removed to the house on the hill, July 10, 1676, which came to be known as "Flamsteed House." The institution was placed under the surveyor-general of ordnance,—perhaps because that office was then held by Sir Jonas Moore, himself an eminent mathematician. Though this was not the first observatory in Europe, it was destined to become the most useful, and has fulfilled the important duties for which it was established. It was established to meet the exigencies of navigation, as was clearly stated on the appointment of Flamsteed, and on several subsequent occasions ; and we see now what an ex- 'cellent foster-mother it has been to the higher branches of that science. This has been accomplished by much labour and patience; for, though the most suitable man in the kingdom was placed in charge, it was so starved and neglected that it was almost useless during many years. The Government did not provide a single instrument. Flamsteed entered upon his important duties with an iron sextant of 7 feet radius, a quadrant of 3 feet radius, two telescopes, and two clocks, the last given by Sir Jonas Moore. Tycho Brahe's catalogue of about a thousand Stars was his only guide. In 1681 he fitted a mural arc which proved a failure. Seven years after another mural arc was erected at a cost of £120, with which he set to work in earnest to verify the latitude, and to determine the equinoctial point, the obliquity of the ecliptic, the right ascension and declination of the stars, till he numbered two or three thousand which appeared in the "British catalogue." See FLaMsTEED and AsTRoNomy.

Flamsteed died in 1720, and was succeeded by Halley, who paid particular attention to the motions of the moon with a view to the longitude problem. A paper which he published in the Phil. Trans., 1731, No. 421, shows what had been accomplished up to that date, and proves that it was still impossible to find the longitude correctly by the

moon.'! He repeats what he had published twenty years before in an appendix to Street's Caroline tables, which contained observations made by him (Halley) in 1683-84 for ascertaining the moon's motion, which he thought to be the only practical method of "attaining " the longitude at sea. He found that it only needed a little patience to be able to manage a 5 or 6 foot telescope, capable of showing the occultations of the fixed stars by the moon, on shipboard in moderately fine weather (ships must have been very steady in his days). The Caroline tables of Street, though better than those before him, as well as those of Tycho, Kepler, Bullialdus, and Horrox, were uncertain; sometimes the equations would compensate one another; at other times when they fell the same way the result might be 100 leagues in error. He hopes that the tables will be so amended that an error may scarce ever exceed 3 minutes of motion (equal to 14° of longitude). Sir Isaac Newton's tables, corrected by himself (Halley) and others up to 1713, would admit of errors of 5 minutes, when the moon was in the third and fourth quarters. He blames Flamsteed for neglecting that portion of the work, as he was at the observatory more than two periods of eighteen years. He himself had at this time seen the whole period of the moon's apogee—less than nine years—during which period he observed the right ascension of the moon at her transit, with great exactness, almost fifteen hundred times, or as often as Tycho Brahe, Hevelius, and Flamsteed together. He hoped during 1731 and a few future years to com- pute the moon's position within 2 minutes of motion with certainty, which will be equal to 20 leagues at the equator and 15 in the Channel; and Hadley's quadrant might be applied to taking distances at sea with the desired accuracy."

The last remark calls us to consider this great improve- ment in the instrumental means for taking observations at sea. Up to this time all

instruments either depended on a plumb line or required the observer to look in two directions at once.

Their imperfections are clearly pointed out in a paper by Pierre Bouguer (1729) which received the prize of the Paris Academy of Sciences for the best method of taking the altitude of stars at sea. Bouguer himself pro- poses a modification Gennnma_ of what he calls the : English quadrant, pro- bably the one proposed by Wright and im- proved by Davis. Fig. 11 represents the in- strument as proposed, p capable of measuring fully 90° from E to N.

A fixed pinule was recommended to be placed at E, through which a ray from the

Hor”... (ee CN:

N

sun would pass to the :

sight C. The sight F Fig. 11.

was movable. The observer, standing with his back to the sun, Thus John

1This did not prevent many attempts being made. Jo Herne’s Longitude Unvailed, 1678, proposes to find the moon’s meridian passage at sea by equal altitudes with the cross-staff, and then compare apparent time at ship with London time. In 1717 Henry Kindon proposed both the magnet and meridional lunar distances ; Robert Browne attempted to calculate lunar tables, which he submitted to the board of longitude; while Francis Bodkin proposed.the use of telescopes upon the planets and their satellites. The proposals submitted to the board of longitude to find the longitude by the moon’s meridian passage are too numerous to be mentioned. –

2 Halley’s observations were published posthumously in 1742, and in 1765 the commissioners of longitude paid his daughter £100 for MS.

supposed to be useful to navigation. XVIL — 33

would look through F and C at the horizon, shifting the former up or down till the ray from the sun coincided with the horizon. The space from EK to F would represent the altitude, and the remaining part F to N the zenith distance. The English quadrant which this was to supersede differed in having about half the are from E towards N, and, instead of the pinule being fixed at EK, it was on a smaller arc represented by the dotted line ¢B, and movable. It was placed on an even number of degrees, considcrably less than the altitude; the remainder was measured on the larger arc, as described.!

Hadley's instrument, on the other hand, described to the Royal Society in May 1731 (Phil. Trans., Nos. 420 and 421), embodies Newton's idea of bringing the reflexion of one object to coincide with the other. He calls it an octant, as the arc is actually 45°, or the eighth part of a circle ; but, in consequence of the angles of incidence and reflexion both being changed by a movement of the index, it measures an angle of 90°, and is graduated accordingly ; the same instrument has therefore been called a quadrant. It was very slowly adopted, and no doubt there were numerous mechanical difficulties of centring, graduat- ing, &e., to be overcome before it reached perfection.? In August 1732, in pursuance of an order from the Admiralty, observations were made with Hadley's quadrant on board the "Chatham" yacht of 60 tons, below Sheerness, in rough weather, by persons—except the master attendant—unaccustomed to the motion ; still the results were very satisfactory. Two years later Hadley published (Phil. Trans., 1733) the description of an instrument for taking altitudes when the horizon is not visible. The sketch represents a curved tube or spirit- level, attached to the radius of the quadrant.

From the year 1714 the history of navigation in England is closely associated with that of the " commissioners for the discovery of longitude at sea," a body constituted by Act 13 Anne c. 14 (commonly called 12 Anne ec. 15), with power to grant sums not exceeding £2000 to assist experi- ments and reward minor discoveries, and also to judge on applications for much greater rewards which were offered to open competition. For a method of determining the longitude within 60 geographical miles, to be

tested by a voyage to the West Indies and back, the sum of £10,000 was offered; within 40 miles, £15,000; within 30, £20,000. £10,000 was also to be given for a method that came within 80 miles near the shores of greatest danger. No action seems to have been taken before 1737 ; the first grant made was in that year, and the last in 1815, but the board continued to exist till 1828, having disbursed in the course of its existence £101,000 in all. In the interval a number of other Acts had been passed, either dealing with the powers, constitution, and funds of the commissioners or encouraging nautical discovery ; thus the Act 18 George IT. (1745) offered £20,000 for the dis- covery by a British ship of the North-West Passage, and the Act 16 George III. (1776) offered the same reward for a passage to the Pacific either north-west or north-east, and £5000 to any one who should approach by sea within one degree of the North Pole. All these Acts were swept away in 1828, when the longitude problem had ceased to attract

1JTn 1731 M. Bouguer was awarded another prize by the Royal Academy of Sciences for his method of finding the variation of the compass at sea,

- Davis's quadrant was in common use till 1740; it is described in Robertson's Navigation (1755), and improvements on it are proposed in Phil. Trans., 1781 and 1734.

3 This total comprises the large sums awarded to Harrison and to the widow of Mayer, the cost of surveys and expeditions in various parts of the globe, large outlays on the Nautical Almanac and on subsidiary calculations and tables, rewards for new methods and solu- tions of problems, and many minor grants to watchmakers or for im- provements in instruments. Thus Ramsden. received in 1775 and later about £1600 for his improvements in graduation, and Massey in 1804 got £200 for his log (see Loa). A good deal of money was wasted, and large sums were paid to certain commissioners for attendance,

no TON

competitors, and voyages of discovery were nearly over, The suggestions and applications sent in to the commis- sioners were naturally very numerous and often very trifling ; but they sometimes furnish useful illustrations of the state of navigation. Thus, in a memorial by Captain H.

Lanoue (1736), which seems to be designed to commend a substitute for the log (a box with something, not fully explained, let into the sea), he records a number of recent casualties, which shows how carelessly the largest ships were then navigated. Several men-of-war off Plymouth in 1691 were wrecked through mistaking the Deadman for Berry Head. Admiral Wheeler's squadron in 1694, leaving the Mediterranean, ran on Gibraltar when they thought they had passed the Strait. Sir Cloudesley Shovel's squadron, in 1707, was lost on the rocks off Scilly, by erring in their latitude. Several transports, in 1711, were lost near the river St Lawrence, having erred 15 leagues in the reckoning during twenty-four hours. Lord Belhaven was lost on the Lizard in 1722, the same day on which he sailed from Plymouth.

One of the first points to which the attention of the commissioners was directed was the survey of the coasts of Great Britain, which was pressed on them by Whiston in 1737. He was appointed surveyor of coasts and head-lands, and in 1741 received a grant for instruments. An Act passed in 1740 enabled the commissioners to spend inoney on the survey of the coasts of Great Britain and the "plantations." Ata later date they bore part of the expenses of Cook's scientific voyages, and of the publica- tion of their results. Indeed it is to them that we owe all that was done by England for surveys of coasts, both at home and abroad, prior to the establishment of the hydro- graphic department of the Admiralty in 1795. But their chief work lay in the encouragement they gave on the one hand to the improvement of timepieces, and on the other to the perfecting of astronomical tables and methods, the latter issuing in the publication of the Nautical Almanac. Before we pass on to these two important topics we may with advantage take a view of the state of practical navi- gation in the middle of last century as shown in two of the principal treatises then current.

Robertson's Llements of Navigation passed through six editions between 1755 and 1796. It contains good teaching on arithmetic, geometry, spherics, astronomy, geography, winds and tides, also a small useful table for correcting the middle time between the equal altitudes of the sun,—all good, as is also the remark that 'the greater the moon's meridian altitude the greater the tides will be." He states that Lacaille recommends equal altitudes being observed and worked separately, in order to find the time

from noon, and the mean of the results taken as the truth. There is a sound article on chronology, the ancicnt and modern modes of reckoning time. A long list of latitudes, longitudes, and times of high water finishes vol. i. Thesccond volume is said by the author to treat of naviga- tion mechanical and theoretical ; by the former he means seaman- ship. He gives instructions for all imaginary kinds of sailings, for marine surveying and making Mercator's chart. There are two gootl traverse tables, one to quarter points, the other to every 15 minutes of the arc; the distance to each is 120 miles. There is a table of meridional parts to minutes, which is more minute than customary. Book ix., upon what is now called '"'the day's work," or dead- reckoning, appears to embrace all that is necessary. A great many methods, we are told, were then used for ineasuring a ship's rate of sailing, but among the English the log and line with a half-minute glass were generally used. Bouguer and Lacaille proposed a log with a diver to avoid the drift motion (1753 and 1760), Robertson's rule of computing the equation of equal altitudes is as good as any used at the present day. He gives also a description of an equal- altitude instrument, having three horizontal wires, probably such a one as was used at Portsmouth for testing Harrison's timekeeper. The mechanical difficulties must have been great in preserving a perpendicular stem and a truly horizontal sweep for the telescope. It gave place to the improved sextant and artificial horizon. The second edition of Robertson's work in 1764 contains an excellent dissertation on the rise and progress of modern navigation by Dr James Wilson, which has been greatly uscd by all subsequent writers.

Don Jorge Juan's Compendio de Navegacion, for the use of mide

¥

— ee

NAVIGATION

shipmen, was published at Cadiz in 1757. Chapter i. explains what pilotage is, practical and theoretical. He speaks of the change of variation, '' which sailors have not believed and do not believe now." He described the lead, log, and sand-glass, the latter corrected by a pendulum, charts plane and spherical. Supposing his readers to be versed in trigonometry, he will

explain what latitude and longi- tnde are, and show a method for finding the latter different from what has been tanght. He will show the error of middle latitude sailing, and show that the longitude found by it is always less than the truth. (It is strange that while reckoning was so rough and imperfect in many respects they should strain at such a trifle as that is in low latitudes.) He promised to find the difference of longitude without a departure (a similar rnle to that of Bond). After speaking of meridional parts, le offered to explain the English method, which was discovered by Edmund Halley, but omits the principles upon which Halley founded his theory, as it was too embarrassing. (He was not the first.) He gives instructions for currents and lee- way, tables of declination, a few stars, meridional parts, &c. It 1s wortlty of remark that, after giving a form for a log-book, he added that this had not been previously kept by any one, but he thought it shonld not be trusted to memory. He only required the knots, fathoms, course, wind, and leeway to be marked every two hours. Every hour is quite long enough, and that is often divided now. He gave a sketch of Hadley's quadrant, in shape like those in use fifty years back, but without a clamping screw or tangent screw. Back glasses were much valned in those days,—the force of habit, no doubt. The book is quite free from all extraneous rubbish.

The introduction of timekeepers by which Greenwich time can be carried to any part of the world, and the longitude found with ease, simplicity, and certainty, is due to the invention of John Harrison. The idea of keeping time at sea was no novelty. HuycENs (q.v.) made pendulum watches for the purpose prior to 1665, at which date Major Holmes communicated to the Royal Society (Phil. T'rans., i. 13) the fact of his having tried two of them on the coast of Guinea. He sailed from St Thomas, set his watches, sailed west 700 or 800 leagues, without changing course, then steered towards the coast of Africa N.N.E. 200 or 300 leagues. The masters of the other ships under his charge, fearing the want of water, wished to steer for Barbados. Holmes, on eom- paring the calculations, found them to differ from him from 80 to over 100 leagues. He considered that they were only 30 leagues from the Cape Verd Islands, where they arrived next afternoon. The vague manner of estimat- ing distance is worth notice. William Derham published a scientific description of various kinds of timekeepers in The Artificial Clock-Maker, in 1700, with a table of equations from Flamsteed to facilitate comparison with the sun-dial. In 1714 Henry Sully, an Englishman, pub-

lished a treatise at Vienna, on finding time artificially. He went to France, and spent the rest of his life in trying to make a timekeeper for the discovery of the longitude at sea. In 1716 he presented a watch of his own make to the Academy of Sciences, which was approved; and ten years later he went to Bordeaux to try his marine watches, and died before embarking. Julien le Roy was his scholar, and perfected many of his inventions in watchmaking.

Harrison's great invention was the principle of com- pensation through the unequal contraction of two metals, which he first applied in the invention of the eompensation pendulum, still in use, and then modified so as to fit it to & watch, devising at the same time a means by which the watch retains its motion while being wound up. To what has been said in the article Harrison on his successive attempts, and the success of the trial journey to Jamaica in 1761-62, it may be added that by the journal of the House of Commons we find that the error of the watch (as if there were only one) was ascertained by equal altitudes at Portsmouth and Barbados, the calculations being made by Short. The watch came greatly within the limits of the Act. At Jamaica it was only in error five Seconds (assuming that the longitude previously found by the transit of Mercury could be so closely depended on, which as we now know, was not the case; the observations

were too few in number, and taken with an untrustworthy instrument). Short found the whole error from Novem- ber 6, 1761, till April 2, 1762, to be 1™ 54°5=18 geographical miles in the latitude of Portsmouth. He considered that a position determined by a transit of Mercury was liable to an error of 30° only, and by Jupiter's best satellite to 8″ 448, During the passage home in the "Merlin" sloop-of-war the timekeeper was placed in the after part of the ship, because it was the dryest place, and there it received violent shocks which retarded its motion. It lost on the voyage home 1™ 49*=16 geographical miles.

One might have supposed that Harrison had now secured the prize; but there were powerful competitors who hoped to gain it by lunars, and a bill was passed through the House in 1763 which left an open chance for a lunarian during four years. A second West Indies trial of the watch took

place between November 1763 and March 1764, in a voyage to Barbados, which occupied four months; during which time it is said, in the preamble to Act 5 Geo. III. 1765, not to have erred 10 geographical miles in longitude. We only find in the public records the equal altitudes taken at Portsmouth and at Bridgetown, Barbados. William Harrison assumed an average rate of 18 a-day gaining, as he anticipated that it would go slower by 18 for every 10° increase in tempera- ture. The longitude of Bridgetown was dctermined by Maskelyne and Green by nine emersions of Jupiter's first satellite, against five of Bradley's and two at Greenwich Observatory, to be 34 54™ 208 west of Greenwich. In February 1765 the commissioners of longitude expressed an opinion that the trial was satisfactory, but required the principles to be disclosed and other watches made. Half the great reward was paid to Harrison under Act of Parliament in this year, and he and his son gave full de- scriptions and drawings, upon oath, to seven persons appointed by the commissioners of longitude.' The other half of the great reward was promised to Harrison when he had made other timekeepers to the satisfaction of the commissioners, and provided he gave up everything to them within six months. The second half was not paid till 1773, after trials had been made with five watches. These trials were partly made at Greenwich by Maskelyne, who, as we shall see, was a great advocate of lunars, and was not ready to admit more than a subsidiary value to the watch. A bitter controversy arose, and Harrison in 1767 published a book in which he charges Maskelyne with exposing his watch to unfair treatment. The feud between the astronomer-royal and the watchmakers con- tinued long after this date.

Even after Harrison had received his £20,000, doubts were felt as to the certainty of his achievement, and fresh rewards were offered in 1774 both for timekeepers and for improved lunar tables or other methods. But the tests proposed for timekeepers were very discouraging, and the watchmakers complained that this was due to Maskelyne. A fierce attack on the astronomer's treatment of himself and other watchmakers was made by Mudge in 1792, in A Narrative of Facts, addressed to the first lord of the Admiralty, and Maskelyne's reply does not convey the conviction that full justice was done to timekeepers. Maskelyne at this date still says that he would prefer an eclipse of a bright star by the moon and a number of cor- respondent observations by transits of the moon com- pared with those of

fixed stars, made by two astronomers at remote places, to any timekeeper. The details of these

1 The explanations and drawings are now at the British Museum; and two of his watches, one of which was used by Captain Cook in the "Resolution," are at Greenwich Observatory. In 1767 Harrison estimates that a watch could be made for £100, and ultimately for £70

or £80.

controversies, and of subsequent improvements in time- keepers, need not detain us here. In England the names of Arnold and Earnshaw are prominent, each of whom received, up to 1805, £3000 reward from the commis- sioners of longitude. It was Arnold who introduced the name chronometer.1 The French emulated the English efforts for the production of good timekeepers, and favour- able trials were made between 1768 and 1772 with watches by Le Roy and Berthoud.

Meantime the steady progress of astronomy both by the multiplication and increased accuracy of observations, and by corresponding advances in the theory, had made it possible to construct greatly improved tables. In observa- tions of the moon Greenwich still took the lead ; and it was here that Halley's successor Bradley made his two grand discoveries of aberration and nutation which have added so much to the precision of modern astronomy. Kepler's Rudolphine tables of 1627 and Street's tables of 1661, which had held their ground for almost a century, were rendered obsolete by the observations of Halley and his successor. At length, in 1753, in the second volume of the Commentarii of the Academy of Gottingen, Tobias Mayer printed his new solar and lunar tables, which were to have so great an influence on the history of navigation. Mayer afterwards constructed and submitted to the English Government in 1755 an improved body of MS. tables. Bradley found that the moon's place by these tables was generally correct within 1', so that the error ina longitude found by them would not be much more than halfa degree if the necessary observations could be taken accurately on shipboard. Thus the lunar problem seemed to have at length become a practical one for mariners, and

in England it was taken up with great energy by N. Maskelyne— “the father,” as he has been called, “of lunar observa- tions,”

In 1761 Maskelyne was sent to St Helena to observe the transit of Venus. On his voyage out and home he used Mayer’s printed tables for lunar determinations of the longitude, and from St Helena he wrote a letter to the Royal Society (Phil. T’rans., vol. lii. p. 558, 1762), in which he described his observations made with Hadley’s quadrant of 20 inches radius, made by Bird, and the glasses ground by Dollond. He took the observations both ways to avoid the errors. The arc and index were of brass, the frame mahogany ; the vernier was subdivided to minutes. The telescope was 6 inches long, magnified four times, and inverted. Very few seamen in that day possessed so good an instrument. He considered that ship’s time should be ascertained within twelve hours, as a good common watch will scarcely vary above a minute in that time. This shows that he must have intended the altitude of sun or star to be calculated—which would lead to new errors. He considered that his observations would each give the longitude within 1} degrees. On February 11th he took ten; the extremes were a little over one degree apart.

On his return to England Maskelyne prepared the British Mariner’s Guide (1763), in which he undertakes to furnish complete and easy instructions for finding the longitude at sea or on shore, within a degree, by observing the distance between the moon and sun, or a star, by Hadley’s quadrant. How far that promise was fulfilled, and the practicability of the instructions, are points worth consideration, as the book took a prominent place for some years. The errors which he said were inseparable from the dead-reckoning “even in the hands of the ablest and most skilful navigators,” amount- ing at times to 15 degrees, appear to be overestimated. ee ee eee ee

u A letter by Dalrymple in The Times (February 13, 1806) gives some Interesting details showing how slowly chronometers came into general use,

On the other hand, the lunar equations, which were from Mayer’s tables, would, he believed, always determine the longitude within a degree, and generally to half a degree, if applied to careful observations. He recommends the two altitudes and distance being taken simultaneously

when practicable. The probable error in a meridian altitude he estimated at one or two minutes, and in a lunar distance two minutes (equal to one degree of longitude). He then gave clear rules for finding the moon's position and distance by ten equations, too laborious for seamen to undertake. Admitting the requisite calculations for finding the moon's place to be difficult, he desired to see the moon's longitude and latitude computed for every twelve hours, and hence her distance from the sun and from a proper star on each side of her carefully calculated for every six hours, and published beforehand,

In 1765 Maskelyne became astronomer-royal, and was able-to give effect to his own suggestion by organizing the publication of the Nautical Almanac. The same Act of 1765 which gave Harrison his first £10,000 gave the commissioners authority and funds for this undertaking, Mayer's tables, with his MS. improvements up to his death in 1762, were bought from his widow for £3000; £300 was grantcd to the famous mathematician Eulcr, on whose theory of the moon Mayer's later tables were formed ; and the first Almanac, that for 1767, was pub- lished in the previous year, at the cost and under the authority of the commissioners of longitude. This was not the first almanac in the country, perhaps by a hundred, as that name was applied to small periodical works, frequently of a frivolous character,—though the later and better description gave the sun's declination and moon's meridional passage approximately. In 1696 the French nautical almanac for the following year appeared, an improvement on what had been before issued by private persons, but it did not attempt to give lunar distances,? In the English Nautical Almanac for 1767 we find every- thing necessary to render it worthy of confidence, and to satisfy every requirement at sea, The great aclticve- ment was that of giving the distance from the moon's centre to the sun, when suitable, and to about seven fixed stars, every three hours. The marincr has only to find the apparent time at ship, and clear his own measured distance from the effects of parallax and refraction (for which at the end of the book are given Lyon's and Dun- thorn's methods), and then by simple proportion, or pro- portional logarithms, find the time at Greenwich. The calculations respecting the sun and moon were made from Mayer's last manuscript tables under the inspection of Maskelyne, and were so continued till 1804.3 The calcu- lations respecting the planets are from Halley's tables,

2’The French nautical almanac is still published undet the title of Connaissance des Temps. It appeared under letters patent from the king, dated 24th March 1679—seventeen years before the first issue. The following is a liteval translation of its advertisement :—‘‘ This little book is a collection of holy days and festivals in each month. The rising and setting of the moon when it is visible, and of the sun every day. The aspects of the planets as with respect to each other, the moon, and the fixed stars. The lunations and eclipses. The difference of longitude between the meridian of Paris and the principal towns in France. The time of the sun’s entrance into the twelve signs of the zodiac, The true place of the planets every fifth day, and of the moon every day of the year, in longitude and latitude. The moon’s meridian passage, for finding the time of high water, ‘as well as for the use of dials by moonlight.’ A table of refraction. The equation of time [this table is strangely arranged, as thongh the clock were to be reset on the first of every month, and the explanation speaks of the ‘prentier mobile’]. The time of twilight at Paris. The sun’s vight ascension to hours and minutes. The sun’s declination at noon each day to seconds. The whole accompanied by necessary in- structions.”

3 Mayer’s tables were printed at London under Maskelyune’s super-intendence in 1770.

and those of Jupiter’s satellites from tables made by Wargentin and published by Lalande in 1759, except the fourth satellite. It will be seen by the following outline of contents that the first Almanac contained all the principal points of information which the seaman required; and greater accuracy at that time was not desirable, or at least would not have been appreciated.

Page 1 of each month gave the Sundays and holidays, four phases of the moon, and positions of sun, moon, and planets in the signs of the zodiac; page 2, sun’s longitude, right ascension in time, declination, and equation for noon each day; page 8, sun’s semidiameter, time of passing the meridian, hourly motion of the sun, logarithm of sun’s distance, and place of the moon’s node, for every sixth day; also eclipses of Jupiter’s satellites, time of immersion; page 4, the positions of the four principal planets for

every sixth day; page 5, the configuration of Jupiter's satellites at 11 p.m. of every day; page 6, the moon's longitude and latitude for noon and midnight of every day; page 7, the moon's age, passage over the incridian, right ascension, and declination at noon and midnight; page 8, the moon's semidiameter, horizontal parallax, and logistic logarithm-——each at noon and midnight; pages 9 to 12, the moon's centre from the sun and seven stars for every three hours, while within about 116 degrees. Then follow tables of refraction, moon's parallax in altitude, a catalogue of stars, with their right ascension and declination, table for the ''dip" of the sea horizon, and several other useful things, many of which are omitted in modern Nautical Almanacs, as they are included in and more properly belong to the permanent rules and require- ments of navigation.

Various useful rules and tables were appended to early volumes of the Almanac. Thus the volume for 1771 contains a method and table for determining the latitude by two altitudcs and the elapsed time first published by Cornelius Downes of Amsterdam in 1740.} At the end of the Almanac for 1772 Maskelyne and Whichell gave three special tables for clearing the lunar distance ; still their rule is neither short nor easily remembered. An improvement of Dunthorn's solution is also given, and a problem in Mercator's sailing by Halley solved by Israel Lyons,? viz., the latitude of the point of departure given, distance sailed, and change of longitude, —required the course steered. In the edition for 1773 a new table for cquations of equal altitudes is given by W. Whale. In those for 1797 and 1800 tables are added by John Brinkley for rendering the calculations for double altitudes casicr.

From 1777 to 1788 inclusive, the moon's place was calculated from improved tables by Charles Mason, founded on observations by Bradley, which were pub- lished in the Nautical Almanac for 1774. The difference then only amounted to 1" in longitude, the apogee 56", and the ascending node 45". From 1789 to 1804 the tables were further corrected by Mason, and calculated to tenths of a second. The distances between the moon and the stars were still further corrected by the use of Taylor's logarithms to seconds, and their places by Bradley's observations in 1756 and Maskelyne's in 1809. The places of the planets at that time were from Lalande's Astronomy (the 3d edition was published in 1792), more recently

from vol. iii. of Professor Vince's Astronomy. The places of the moon since the beginning of 1821 were calculated from Burckhardt's tables. They are now taken from Hansen's tables, completed with the aid of the English Government in 1857. The eclipses of Jupiter's Satellites for 1824 and following years were from De- NS eee

: This method, for which the author received £50 from the com- missioners of longitude in 1768, used logarithmic solar tables of Downes's owninvention. As he also used the latitude by dead reckon- ing, the calculation involved repetition and was long. Dr Pemberton, in # paper read to the Royal Society (Nov. 20, 1760), showed that the pro- blem could be worked without the new logarithmic solar tables ; but he also uses the dead reckoning. The problem was not new ; Nufiez had solved it on the globe; and solutions by the globe, disks of talc, or the like, which are useful only as illustrations, have since been repeated from time to time down to our own age. One such by R. Graham (1734) is givenin Phil. Trans. , xxviii. 435, with much boasting. The first discussion of double altitudes in which the motion of the ship between the observations was taken into account was in a pamphlet by N. F. Duillier in 1728.

a Lyons received £10 for his solution of this problem from the com- Mussioners in 1769; and in 1772 he and Dunthorn each got £50 for their improvements in " clearing the distance."'

261

lambre's new tables. In 1827 the positions of sixty of the principal stars were given for every tenth day, from the tables of Maskelyne and Dr Pearson. Since 1824 the work has been printed three and latterly four years in ad- vance. The price was 5s. till 1855; but the Almanacs for that and subsequent years have been issued at 2s, 6d.

A book of Tables Requisite to be Used with the Nautical Ephemeris was published byMaskelyne at the same time as the first Almanac, and ten thousand copies were quickly sold. A second edition, prepared by W. Wales, appeared in 1781, an octavo of 237 pages, in the preface of which it is stated, with apparent truth, that it contains everything necessary for computing the latitude and longi- tude by observation. There are in all

twenty-three tables, the traverse table and table of meridional parts alone being deficient as compared with modern works of the kind; dead-reckoning Maskelyne did not touch. He gave practical methods for working several problems; the lunar especi- ally is an improvement on those by Lyons and Dun- thorn, though a rule there given for clearing the dis- tance, called Dunthorn's improved method, is remarkably short. The half sum of three logarithms gives an arc, and the half sum of other two gives half the true distance. The objection is the use of special logarithms. Maskelyne's rule for finding the latitudes by two altitudes and the elapsed time is also good, but with the same objection. The third edition of the ables was issued in 1802. It has been said that Maskelyne neglected the planets; be that as it may, he established the positions of sixty of the principal stars, and completed many other things. He had but one assistant, whereas there are now eight, and the Nautical Almanac is under another department.

As the necessary calculations for clearing the lunar distance from the effects of parallax and refraction were considered difficult to seamen, many efforts were made to shorten the process. Among others Whichell, master of the Royal Naval Academy, Portsmouth, conceived a plan whereby it could be taken from a table by inspec- tion. In October 1765 the commissioners of longitude awarded him £100 to enable him to complete and print 1000 copies of his table. On the following April they gave him £200 more. The work was continued on the same plan by Shepherd, the Plumian professor of astronomy, Cambridge, with some additions by the astronomer-royal. The total cost of the ponderous 4to volume up to the time of publication in June 1772 was £3100, after which £200 more was paid to the Rev. Thomas Parkinson and Israel Lyons for examining the errata. It isa very large and expensive volume, — very ill-adapted for ship's use. Considerable sums were paid by the commissioners from time to time for othcr tables to facilitate navigation—not always very judiciously. It is sufficient to mention here the tables of Michael Taylor and the still esteemed tables of Mendoza, published in 1815. Here also may be mentioned a useful table by Stevens (1780) for finding the latitude by the altitude of the pole star, and Crosswell's tables for facilitating the computation of lunars—partly new and partly after Maskelyne. These appear to be the first tables in which half the logarithmie sine, &c., is given, to save the trouble of halving a sum of four or more logarithnis.

The plan of the Nautical Almanac was soon imitated by other nations. In France the Académie Royale de Marine had all the lunar distances translated from the British Nautical Almanac for 1773 and following years, retaining the Greenwich time for the three-hourly distances. The tables were considered excellent, and national pride was satisfied by their having been formed on the plan proposed by Lacaille. They did not imitate the mode given for clearing the distance, considering their own better. ;

Though the Spaniards were leaders in the art of navi- gation during the 16th and 17th centuries, it was not till November 4, 1791, that their first nautical almanac was printed at Madrid, having been previously calculated at Cadiz for the year 1792. They acknowledge borrowing from the English and French. The lunar distances were reduced from Greenwich meridian to that of Cadiz, by subtracting 25™ 9%. It is in larger and better print than the French almanac. In the book for 1803 the meridian

of the royal observatory at Isla de Leon is placed 24™ 4785 west of Grecnwieh. In the English almanac for 1883 it is given as 24™ 498-6; therefore they were very near the truth in 1791. The almanac for 1810, published at Madrid in 1807, was the first in which the lunar distances were reduced to the meridian of Isla de Leon—that is, giving the distance to the even hours 3, 6, 9, 12, &. The Spanish almanacs for 1813 to 1816 were published in Fleet Street, the first-named only one ycar in advance. From 1820 to 1832 they were good octavos and clear type. Soon after that time they appeared in folio, giving nearly all the information found in the English almanac, but not neglecting the saints' days and festivals. The excellent Berlin Astronomisches Jahrbuch began to appear in 1776, the American Ephemeris in 1849. These two epheme- rides and the French Connatssance des Temps are inde- pendent and valuable works, and for astronomers at least in some respects superior to the English Almanac.

After Maskelyne's death the correctness and reputation of the Nautical Almanac underwent a serious decline. The matter came before parliament in 1818, when the board of longitude was reconstructed, and the old Acts consolidated. Dr T. Young was appointed secretary to the commissioners, and superintendent of the Almanac. Ten years later, in 1828, the board was

swept away, the Almanac was placed under the Admiralty, and Young, with Faraday as a chemist and Sabine as a practical observer, were appointed scientific advisers to the Admiralty, which ever since has spent a certain annual sum on scientific research, The Almanac still gave cause for dissatisfac- tion ; a memorial to the House of Commons, dated January 28, 1829, states that the Nautical Almanac was for the good of astronomy as well as navigation, and that it is so declared in the first Almanac in 1767 ; that in 1818 fifty- eight errors were discovered, and a similar number in the Almanac for 1830, and that it had not kept pace with navigation or astronomy ; that it did not give the moon's distance from the four principal planets as the Portuguese and Danish ephemerides did, nor did it give the positions of those plancts ; that there was no list of the occultating stars which were ascertained to be visible in Halley's time, but were neglected after the invention of Hadley's sextant (they were in the Milan ephemerides); and that the tables of the sun were not correct. This was supported by a paper signed by J. F. W. Herschel, read at the board of longitude April 5, 1827, which stated that the moon's meridian passage was not given at all, that of the sun roughly to the nearest minute. The right ascension and declination of the larger planets were not given with accuracy, as they should have been, as thcir theory was perfect. The moon's right ascension in time and hourly motion should have been given, also the time of semi- diameter passing the meridian, for use with moon-culmin- ating stars. Young replied to this memorial and main- tained that the fifty-eight errors were exaggerated; forty of them were in reality only one in the moon's place, which would put a ship out 5 miles, and which was corrected in the next year's book, "which every accurate navigator is bound to consult, to guard against possible minute acci- dent." The errors of 1830 were, he says, of less import- ance: the French Connaissance des Temps of 1821 was corrected by the English Almanac; some errors were found in Taylor's logarithms ; the error in the solar tables, said to be 15 seconds, was really only one. The ultimate result of these controversies was the appearance of the new and reformed Nautical Almanac in 1834. It may be added that the last remnant of the old laws, the protection of the Almanac against competition by a penalty, was abolished by an Act passed August 6,1861. The number of copies of the Nautical Almanac (for 1851) printed in

1847-48 was 10,000, and the number sold (of various years) 8638, at 5s. each; the gross produce of sale was £2159, and the expense of preparation £3677. In 1882 15,071 copies were sold, of various years, extending to four years in advance ; the cost was £3368, and the gross produce of sale at 2s. 6d. each £1900. The sale of the Nautical Almanac has lately decreased on account of the amount of information given in private publica- tions.

Prior to 1795 the nautical portion of the British com- munity, including the royal navy, were entirely dependent upon private industry and enterprise for charts and _sail- ing directions. On August 12th of that year an order in council placed all such articles as were then in the posses- sion of the Admiralty in charge of Mr Dalrymple, an eminent publisher of such things, who had long been employed by the East India Company, and whose catalogue in 1786 contained 347 charts between England, the Cape, India, and China ;1 thus the germ of the hydrographic department was established. The expense was then limited to £650 a year, just one-tenth of what was allowed last year for drawing and engraving charts alone, besides £5500 for printing and mounting them. In 1881 there were 118,542 charts sold.

After the close of the long devastating war in 1815 both trade and science revived, and several Governments besides that of Great Britain saw the necessity of surveying the coasts in various parts of the globe; the greater portion of the work fell to the English hydrographical department, which took under its charge nearly every place where the inhabitants were not able to do it for themselves. The parts which received immediate attention were the shores of the United Kingdom, the lakes of Canada, Gulf of St Lawrence and Newfoundland, West India Islands, Sicily and the eastern part of the Mediterrancan, west coast of Africa, Australia, Tierra del Fuego and Straits of Magellan, Arabia, Persia, Bay of Bengal from the Hooghly to Malacca Strait, and the Red Sea. Similar good work was carried on by the Governments of France, Norway, Denmark, Sweden, and Russia; Portugal was an exception. Spain had for her own shores the excellent work of Admiral Vincent Tofifio, performed in the latter part of last century. The United States of America have surveyed both shores of that continent since 1832. Since 1837 the British surveyors have been continually employed in Australia and New Zealand, and since 1842 on China and Japan, and the whole west coast of America from Magcllan to Behring’s Straits. British

Columbia has been surveyed in detail, also the great barrier reef of Australia and Torres Strait, the coast of New Guinea and the Fiji group, coast of Arabia, and Persian Gulf. The Gulf of Suezand other parts of the Red Sea have been resurveyed. Fresh require- ments are continually springing up, and greater precision is expected in the surveys, which arc now continued, with the same zeal and unreniitting attention, under the present hydrographer Captain Sir Frederick Evans, K.C.B., to whose paper for the British Association (1881) the reader is referred. The first official catalogue of charts was issued in 1830; the total number was then 962. In 1880 the number had increased to 2699. The greatest increase was on the British coasts, from 51 to 368, the Arctic seas and north-east coast of America, from 57 to 302, and the Pacific Ocean islands, from 11 to 100.

The question of the accuracy with which the sea charts now represent a portion of the globe is entirely set at rest by the possession of a correct knowledge of the figure and

1 In 1783, in an excellent descriptive work of the nature of sail- ing directions, Dalrymple with clear prevision gave his opinion that chronometers would so change geography that new charts would be required,

nN a Ver G

size of the earth, as well as the means of ascertaining the latitude and longitude of innumerable places (see Eartu and GzocrapHy). They are now made as precisely as possible to represent the actual surface of the globe. The result of each survey is first plotted with the meridian lines inclined towards the pole, by which means all astronomical bearings coincide. It isafterwards opened proportionately to suit Mercator’s projection and the sailor’s use, as far as 70 or 80 degrees. For the polar regions a circular projection is used, which may comprise a radius of 30 or even 40 degrees. During 1882 sixty-one new plates of charts were engraved, and eighteen improved by the addi- tion of new plans ; 2700 plates received corrections by the engraver. ‘The number of charts printed for the royal navy, Government departments, and to meet the requirements of the general public, during 1882 amounted to 229,700. The Admiralty catalogue of charts and sailing directions now contains 2680 of the former and 83 of the

latter. The tide table for 1883 gives the time of high water at all the ports in Great Britain and Ireland, also for full and change days all over the globe,—upwards of 3200 in number. The cost of the hydrographic department was £43,145 last year, of which £20,958 was for surveys in various parts of the world, hire of vessels, wages, &e.

Many of the early writers and teachers of navigation regretted that no national care was bestowed upon the education of navigators ; they might be rejoiced could they know that the Royal Naval College at Greenwich is main- tained at a cost of £31,800; beside which there is the Naval College at Portsmouth, and the " Britannia" train- ing ship for naval cadets, which latter costs over £17,000 a year, one half being paid by the parents. There is also a school at Greenwich for a thousand boys, the sons of petty officers, seamen, and marines, all of whom (unless physically incapacitated) are destined for the sea. There are also several training vessels connected both with the royal navy and the mercantile marine. There can be no doubt that the educational qualification of seamen of all grades is well provided for, and as little doubt that the kindred qualification "seamanship" is neglected ; but the examination for a lieutenant in the navy will in future include a knowledge of Channel pilotage.

A meteorological conference was held in Brussels in 1853 for devising a uniform system of observations at sea, upon winds and currents; and a meteorological department was established in England soon after, under the Board of Trade and Admiral FitzRoy. In 1866 it was placed under a committee selected by the Royal Society. It is hoped that before long much useful information may result from that source. Wind and current charts are now compiled by the Admiralty, which are very valuable aids in long voyages.

At the commencement of the present century all watches designed for the discovery of the longitude were called "chronometers" ; they were but slowly coming into general use ; the Admiralty only supplied them to flagships, sur- veying ships, and exploring expeditions. Later every ship of war was allowed one, and an additional one if the captain possessed one of his own. The East India Company allowed their ships one each at an early date. Now flagships are allowed five, and ordinary ships of war three each.

Chronometers were soon recognized as a Certain and simple means of ascertaining the difference of longitude between two places ; Captain Cook and others used them in the last century. Between 1817 and 1824 Captain Smyth used five chronometers in the survey of the Mediterranean. Dr Tiarks, 1822-23, used twenty- “Ix to establish the longitude of Pendennis Castle, and for Funchal, Madeira, seventeen. Schubert in 1833 proceeded round the Baltic in a steam-vessel with fifty-six chrono-

meters, reckoning his longitude from Altona. In 1826 King carried eleven in the “Adventure” and “Beagle”; Foster in 1828, seventeen in the ‘“ Chanticleer” ; FitzRoy, 1831, twenty-two in the “Beagle.” In 1839 Lieutenant Raper proposed that eighteen “secondary meridians” should be established, and, these being well spread over the globe, the minor places should be referred to them, and not to each other as formerly. There are now fifty such secondary meridians, and the electric wire has taken the place of the timekeeper, as the time-signal is the most perfect thing which human ingenuity can devise. The elaborate chronometric expeditions of English, Continental, and American astronomers belong rather to the history of astronomy. When the Atlantic cable was laid to New- foundland in July 1866, and time-signals received direct from Greenwich Observatory to Heart’s Content, the Admiralty chart was found to be quite correct. In a similar manner all the principal places in North and South America and the West India Islands have been connected by time-signals with the United States observatories within the last seven years, and found to be fairly correct, the error seldom amounting to two seconds in time. The observatory at Lisbon was found to differ eight seconds of time. It may now be assumed that there is no place within the ordinary navigable parts of the ocean where an error in position exists of sufficient amount to affect a ship’s safety.

A reward was formerly given annually to the maker of the chronometer which stood the best test at the observa- tory; this was instituted in 1822, and discontinued after 1835; the recipients were Poole, Frodsham, Hutton, Hewett, Hiffe, and Dent. Since that time they are re- ceived at the observatory on trial during twenty-eight weeks, and those preserving the

most equal rate are chosen for the public service at a price named by an official in charge of the department, and something above the ordin- ary price. Prior to 1849 as much as £62 was paid for one; in 1883 about six are recommended for purchase at £45 to £38 each. On Dent's catalogue marine chrono- meters range froin 35 to 45 guineas.

The following list of some writers of navigation whose works have not been already inentioned may be found useful :—Thomas Addi- son, Arithmetical Navigation, 1625 (he was the first to apply logarithms); Antonio de Najera (Lisbon, 1628) follows Nufiez and Cespedes, but corrects the declination of sun and stars; Sir R. Dudley, L'areano del mare, 1630-46, 2d ed., Florence, 1661, too ponderous for the use of seamen ; Sir Jonas Moore (1681), one of the best books of the period ; William Jones (1702), a useful compendium containing trigonometry applied to the various sail- ings, the use of the log, and tables of logarithms; Pierre Jean Bouguer, Traité Complet de la Navigation, folio, 1698, good but too large; Manuel Pimental, L'arte de navegar, Lisbon, 1712; Pierre Bouguer, jun., Nowveau Traité de Navigation, 1758 (without tables), published at the request of the minister of marine, im- proved and shortened in 1769 under the superintendence of the astronomer Lacaille ; Nathaniel Colson, Zhe Mariner's New Calen- dar, 1735, a good book ; Seller, Practical Navigation, a book very popular in its time (there was an edition as late as 1739); Samucl Dunn published good star charts and tables of latitude and longitude (1787), and framed concise rules for many problems on navigation (published by the board of longitude); John H. Moore, The Practical Navigator and Seaman's New Daily Assistant, 1772, very popular, and generally used in the British navy, —the 18th and 19th editions (1810, 1814) were improved by J. Dession ; W. Wilson (Edinburgh, 1773), a treatise of good repute at the time ; Samuel Dunn, New Epitome of Practical Navigation, or Guide to the Indian Seas, 1777,—for the longitude he depends chiefly on a variation chart from observations on East Indiamen, and he still makes no mention of the Nautical Almanae or of parallel rulers ; Samuel Dunn (probably a son of the last named), 1781, is the last writer who gives instructions for the use of the astrolabe; he also wrote on ''lunars" (1783, 1793), a word which was generally adopted about this time, and published an exeellent traverse table (1785), and Daily Uses of the Nautical Seiences, 1790; Horsborough, Directory for Hast India Voyages, 1805; A. Maekay, The Complete

Navigator, about 1791, 2d ed. 1810,—there is no instruction for finding longitude by the time-

keeper; Kelly, Spherical Trigonometry and Nautical Astronomy, 1796, 4th ed. 1818, clear and simple; N. Bowditch, Practical Navigator, 1800, passed through many editions, and is still much used in the United States navy ; J. W. Norie, Epitome of Navigation, 1803, 21st ed. 1878, long a favourite in the mercantile marine from its simplicity, and because navigation can be learned from it without a teacher; T. Kerigan, The Young Navigator's Guide to Nautical Astronomy, 1821; Inman, Epitome of Navigation, 1821, with an excellent volume of tables—largely used in the British navy, 9th ed. 1854; E. Riddle, Navigation and Nautical Astronomy, 3d cd. 1824, 9thed., by Escott, 1871, still worthy ofits high reputation, — it does not include great circle sailing; J. T. Towson, Tables for Reduction of Ex-meridian Altitudes, 4th ed. 1854, very useful ; H. Raper, Practice of Navigation, 1840, 10th ed. 1870, an excellent book, perhaps the best; H. Evers, Navigation and Great Circle Sailing, 1850, other works on the same subject by Merrifield and Evers (1868), and Evers (1875); R. M. Inskip, Navigation and Nautical Astronomy, 1865, a useful book, without tables; T. H. Sumner, A Method of finding a Ship's Position by two Observations and Greenwich Time by Chrononeter,—this is set forth as a novelty, but was published by Captain R. Owen, R.N., early in the century, and practised by many officers; H. W. Jeans, Navigation and Nautical Astronomy, 1858, without tables, a good deal used in the British navy,—Jeans revised Inman's tables in 1873; Harbord, Glossary of Navigation, 1863, enlarged ed. 1883, a very excellent book of reference; W. C. Bergen, Practices and Theory of Navigztion, 1872; Sir W.-Thomson, Navigation, a Lecture, 1876, well worth reading.

PRACTICAL OR MODERN NAVIGATION.

The following outline of navigation, as commonly practised in 1883, is sufficient to enable a person to con- duct a ship from one port to another, or at least to show in plain simple terms the principle upon which it is done. There will be no tables or logarithms referred to which are not common to all works on navigation, and in all such books there are instructions for their use. Seamanship forms a separate subject, but there are a few points

wherein it is inseparable from this; no man can be a good navi- gator unless he possesses sound judgment in seamanship.

It is necessary that the ship should be provided with good compasses, in suitable places, an ordinary log and line, as well as any patent log which may be desired, hand leads, deep-sea leads and lines, log-book, work-book, chronometer, tables of logarithms, &c., Nautical Almanac, sextant, artificial horizon, large parallel rulers, a box of mathematical instruments, charts of the ocean, and enlarged plans of the places the ship is likely to visit.

Before the ship leaves her anchorage or other security, the helm should be moved hard over each way, to prove that it is clear, and a leadsman stationed on each side of the ship. When clear of the harbour and adjacent head- lands, the course is set towards her destination or to obtain an offing. At that time a bearing is taken of one known object and the distance estimated, or, two known objects being in a line, a bearing is taken of a third, or two cross bearings; the result in either case is entered in the log-book, with the exact time. This is called the departure (i.e, from the land), and should be secured before rain or fog intercept the view. Thereafter the rough or deck log- book should be marked every hour after the log has been hove (the hour being subdivided when necessary), and the estimated course steered, distance through the water, wind, and leeway (if there be any) carefully entered in their proper columns. The courses may be steered and expressed by degrees, if this is desired. The ship’s reckoning is in- variably made up from noon to noon of each day; all the principal events are entered in the ship’s log-book, which is a very important document.

That part of a ship’s reckoning which is independent of observations of sun, moon, or stars is called dead-reckoning (D.R.), while the position by celestial objects is designated observed (Obs.).

The following illustration of a ship’s log and day’s reckoning will include all the “ sailings” which are usually

treated under separate heads. The force of the wind and state of weather are expressed according to a scale, from 1 to 12, and by symbols which have been in general use about fifty years. Variation and local deviation of the compass must be here attended to; the mode of ascertain- ing the amount

will be explained further on. All problems in this part of navigation are solved by plane trigo- nometry, as if working on a plane, except in finding the proportion between difference of longitude and departure (the latter from the meridian in nautical miles).

The accompanying example of a ship's log represents the greater portion of a page, which would contain the record of what had occurred during two civil days, and therefore embraces one com- plete astronomical day. While the ship remains on the same course the entry should not be repeated; the open space shows more clearly the amount of distance due to each. The ‘‘ North Star" is here supposed to have been under way and clear of the harbour at noon, when the departure was taken from the Eddy- stone, the position of which is 50° 11' N. and 4°15' W. The courses are intended to comprise many varieties of circumstances. If a ship be under steam or has a fair wind, these will be but few; but leeway will always exist according to the strength of the wind, if on the side, though scarcely perceptible by the wake if the ship is going fast. It is supposed that a ship either sailing or steaming even 15 miles an hour, with her broadside to the breeze, will be carried the same distance ata right angle to her course as if she had been stopped during the same period—surface of hull, sails, &c., exposed being similar in each case. It is difficult to estimate the drift of a ship during a gale, but it-is very seldom overrated. Courses and distances within 50 miles are usually obtained by laying the edge of the parallel ruler on the two positions and run- ning it to the compass, which is drawn on the chart; then take the space between the places in the dividers and apply it to the scale of latitude opposite them: the number of miles there indicated will be the distance. Distant places on Mercator's chart, when so treated, will give the course and distance approximately.

To Work the Reckoning Arithmetieally from the Ship's Log.—The true bearing of the Eddystone is reversed and treated as a course. To correct the compass courses, westerly variation and deviation are both applied to the left of the course steered, that is, against the sun, the reverse when they are easterly. In the example the variation is taken as 21° westerly throughout the day's run. The deviation is taken from a table of corrections for a compass to which a magnet had been applied (see Compass and Magnetism). The first course on the ship's log is W. by S. 4S. orS. 73° 8°W.

Apply variation —21°; deviation (5° 30’) being easterly is +; leeway (5° 37’) as the wind is south is also +: result 8. 68°15’ W. Ina similar manner deal with the other courses, marking well the change of sign east or west, and the direction of the wind with regard to the leeway. The direction of the current being true is entered as 8. 79° W. After all the courses and distances for the day have been correctly entered in a traverse table, the correspoud- ing differences of latitude and departure are taken from the tra- verse table of the epitome, and placed in the proper columns. If the angle be less than 45°, read difference of latitude and departure at the top of the page; if greater than 45° it is reversed. As the table is arranged in decimals, 2°5 can be treated as 25 or 250, or conversely, so that large distances may be embraced. This process is called working by inspection, and is sufficiently accurate for the purpose of finding the course and distance made good, or the course aud distance, to places within 300 or 400 miles.

Traverse Table.

Magnetic Course, | True Course. | Distance.

8 7

N s Ss

4° W 9° W 63° W $ 30° W South. § 23° E. 8 53° E, West. West. N 67° W. N 64° W. S 43° W.

As the difference of latitude is south, it must be subtracted from the latitude left. Eddystone, 50° 110 N. 4° 15’ W.

-1 3-1 +2 27

“49 7°9 6 42

49 7:°9=49° 7/54”

|

NAVIGATION

|g Wind. sj 2 | 8 H. | Ke] Course sie 5 g 3 g | E3 5 way. P| ps & g gu Remarks, &c. Tuesday, May 9th, 1882. = cS é 3 a Direction. | Force.}| © S ie a 5 el avila | eS ls 1 2 ra ck) ae A.M, Pa oy) Moored in diel pas es an 3 Plymouth #80 on 300 a 4 Sound. Calm 0 or 29°86) 54 6 oss Vole 2 og see Sus rs 6. Unmoored, and shortened in on SB. to 30 fathoms. 7 «. | Single anchor. ae ae aes es eer 8 50 South 4 be 80°70 | 55 9 awe ae 009 ane 9.80, Made all plain sail, Weighed and worked out of Plymouth 10 we oe Sound. 11 Working out. Swes om ace 600 st 12 Vble. 6 bv 80°05 | 57 Noon. Tacked. i q Latitude. i : iati ; a _. _— =o – atitude Longitude oe True Bearings and Distance. an ade roug ae Good. | the Water. sis D.R. Current. = Obs. Obs. 20° 25’ Wly. Eddystone Lighthouse, § 34° E., 1 mile. ieee | 4 WDSiS. 3 |Southerly.| 6 be |53E 58 | ... | PM. 2 8 6 ore pee lee ete roe as ane 585 Tide set W. by S. (truc) 5 miles, during the afternoon. Bi 7 | 6 SW3s. 0 SSE. 6 ter ene. il). 4 6 4 beg es ike Ace con oon 30°0 58 4 Lizard Lighthouses, N,W., 12 miles. (Ship’s head S.W. by W.) 5 a al iss S>Wew. % 6©| Westerly. 5 oq 7E 2 Be Taken aback, by shift of wind. Braced round on the star- 6 7 2 ne coe soe “ sis aaa & board tack. 7 if 6 ree 8 7 8 ho SSE. } SW. 42 W. 11 7 8 ae ee wae a ate a vis 308 oe ube, Tacked. oe se |... W? N3N, Fi ee 7 beq | 2W.]2985| 54 | 45 | Midnight. Two sail in sight. Remarks, &c. Wednesday, May 10th, 1882, 1/38] 5 |° wengn, 3 SW. 7 be |2W. AM. 2 8 Ben WNW. 0 ae ee aa 2.20, Exchanged numbers with the s.s. “ Fox,” bound to London. 4 7 2 NW. 3 Wsw. 6 om {4 W. | 29°80} 50 6 7 ? neo ; ms 7 6 5 5 5 od 7. Variation by azimuth (head N.W.) 24°25 westerly. 9 5 oe Voie. oo 283 10 2 a ins ant Ge 3 or Res 10. Trimmed sails. 1] 7 5 SwWew. 0 SE. 6 be | 74E. sas ots is 12 | lo 2 -, whe 7 bev – 29°9 54 46 | Noon. Set port studding sails. Course ist : Latitude. Longitude. ae made good. atti my al reer Truc Bearings and Distance. $56}° W. Made | Through eveg ; sili Good. | the Water, | D—49°7’54”| D.R. 6-42 ; Current. Lees, Obs. 49° 8’ 13”! Obs, ae Entrance to Strait of Belle Isle. Do. By great circle sailing, bi 1141 174:8 20° 25’ W. N. 85° 9’ W.1858 miles. N. 66° W.—1824‘2 miles. 1 PM.

2 3

With middle latitude 49° 40’ and departure 95°1, enter the traverse table. ‘

Taking the complement of middle latitude as a course, and the departure in its column, the difference of longitude=147 is found in the distance column; which being west is added to the Eddy- stone’s westerly longitude.

Lo find the Course and Distance Made Good by Inspection.— Difference of latitude 63°1 and departure 95°1 will be found opposite 564° and under 114; thercfore it is S. 564° W. 114 miles from the Hddystone.

To do the same more exactly by logarithms, —the multiplication and division of the quantities being performed by the addition and subtraction of their logarithms.

First, required the difference of longitude.

dep. 95°1 x rad. cos mid. lat. 49° 40’

95°1 log+10… 11:978180

= diff. long.

49° 40’ log cos….. 9°811061 A Diff. long. 146°9- log……..... 2°167119 r dep. 95° ° 40’ ep. 95°1 x sec 49° 40 dif lenge rad, Bet Mess. cante 1978180

49°40’ logsec—10 0°188939

Diff long. 146-9 log……..... 2°167119

The proportious which sines, tangents, and secants bear to the course, distance, difference, latitude, and departure, and these to each other, form the principal points in plane trigonometry connected with navigation, which can be easily demonstrated by two figures. If the hypothenuse AB be made radius, as in fig. 12, the whole will be con- tained within the circle, and the sides are in proportion to the sines of their opposite angles; but if the base be made the radius, as in fig. 13, the other side BC is entirely without the circle, touching only at the point C; it is therefore a tangent subtending the angle A, and the hypothenuse AB be- comes the secant of the angle A. In

like manner BC may be made radius, then AC would become the tangent of angle B.

To find the course and distance made good by calculations.

Tangent

Radius

Fig. 13.

Making BC the radius, XVIL — 34

266

AC 95-1 log +10… 11°978180

rad. x dep. AC BO G21 “hogs sence 1800029 =e. a wall course, ;

diff. lat. BC ————

B 56° 26’ 7” log tan…. 10°178151

BC G8. low.,...0..0 1°800029

BC x sec B 56° 26’ 7” rad.

B 56° 26’ 7″ log sec – 10 0°257372

= distance. AB dist. T14°1, Tosca. 2°057401

It is not necessary to work out a course to seconds; scarcely so to minutes. Distances are invariably expressed in miles and decimal parts. we

To find the Course and Distance to the Place of Destination,— Suppose it be the Strait of Belle Isle. Choose a point of land, or assuine a position, near the entrance, say 51° 45’ N. and 55° 10’ W. A line drawn on a chart of the Atlantic from the ship’s position to the above will roughly indicate the course usually steered, which is a rhumb line cutting all the meridians at the

same angle, and forming on the globe a spiral curve towards the pole. The excep- tions arc if it be east or west, north or south ; in the former case it would be a small circle round the pole, and in the latter it would be on the meridian (which is 4 great circle) directly to one of the poles. The direction of the line on the chart is found by means of parallel rulers conveying it to the compass, or by a protractor placed on a mcridional line ; and the distance is measured on the scale of latitude at the side between the two places. Long distances are calculated by ‘‘middle latitude,” or ‘‘ Mercator’s sailing.” The former is most convenicnt in low latitudes and when the difference issmall, but the latter isatall times more correct. Middle latitude may be made nearly as good a method by measuring from the chart half way between the two latitudes ; or the same result may be obtained by taking the latitude corresponding to the mean of the meridian parts, as the table of these embodies the whole principle upon which Mercator’s charts are made.

Continuing the day’s work—

Lat. of ship 49° 8’ Near Belle Isle 51 45

2 37=157′ 2)7035°19 Mid. lat. 50° 27’ 30”. Mean 351759

which differs only one mile from the mean taken directly. To find the departure corresponding to the difference of longitude (55° 10’ — 6° 42’= 48° 28’ = 2908’) in mean latitude 50° 27’ 30”:-— diff. long. 2908 x cos 50° 27’ 30” rad. With difference of latitude and departure to find the course :— rad. x dep. 1851°3 sie eemae ie rad. x diff. lat. diff. lat. 157 85° 9’ 10”; dep. The course is evidently 85 degrees to the west of north. To find the distance :— dep. 1851°3 x rad. sin course 85° 9’ 10”

To find the course and distance by Mercator’s sailing. The differ- ence betwcen the meridional parts as above is 246°6, difference of longitude 2908 miles, and difference of latitude 157 ; whence

rad, x diff. long. diff. lat. x rad. merid. diff. lat. cos course

Merid. pts. 3394°29 3640°90

=dep. 1851°3 miles,

= cot course.

= 1858 miles.

= tan course = dist. 1858 miles. 85° 9′ 10”; The result is the same by both methods when the difference of latitude is small. It is obvious that if we subtract the logarithm corresponding to the meridional difference latitude from that of the difference longitude increased by ten in the index, the remainder will be the logarithmic tangent of the course. In like manner, if the logarithmic secant of the course be added to the logarithm of the true difference latitude, and ten in the index rejected, the sum will be the logarithm of the distance.

Under some circumstances, in high latitudes, the ordinary mode of reducing the ship’s run during the twenty-four hours, by taking the difference between the northing and southing as the difference of latitude, and the excess of easting or westing as the departure, would not be correct. For example, suppose that from a position off the west coast of Ireland, in 52° N. and 11° W., a ship were to sailin such a manner as to make during the first eight hours 96 miles on a true N. W. course, during the next eight hours a similar distance due north, and during the last eight hours N.E. 96 miles. Here we should have the two oblique courses producing 67°9 miles each, both of difference of latitude and departure, the departures apparently cancelling each other and leaving the ship on the same meridian. But in reality the ship would not be on the same meridian, as the latter departure was performed in a higher latitude than the former, and they are of opposite names. Therefore this peculiar ‘‘day’s work ” requires to be divided into two distinct parts ; each may be taken by inspection from the traverse table. The first

course N. 45° W. 96 miles will produce latitude 58° 7’ 54”, middle latitude 52° 34’, which with departure 67°9 will give difference longi- tude 111° 6’ W. ‘The second course simply adds 96 miles to the latitude; the third, like the first, increases the latitude by 67°9 miles making it 55° 51’ 48”, and the

middle latitude of the last section 55° 18’, which with departure 67°9 will give difference longitude 119°2; this being east, and preponderating over the former by 7°6 miles, the ship will be 7°6 miles east of the meridian she first sailed from, or in 10° 52’ 24” W.

Great Circle Sailing,—The course between the ship on May 10th and the Strait of Belle Isle, as ascertained by middle latitude and Mercator’s sailing, is a straight line on Mercator’s chart, but is in reality a curve upon the globe, and the nearer the positions are to either pole the greater the curvature and consequent increase of distance. The shortest distance between any two points on the globe is an arc of a great circle, the centre of which is also the centre of the sphere. The equator, ecliptic, and all meridians are great circles, between which an infinite number of others may be drawn in every conceivable direction, cach dividing the surface of the globe into two equal parts. It is only of late years that this subject has been revived, since ships have made long voyages entirely nndcr steam, thereby having the ability to steer any course desired. The practice of this mode of sailing requires but a smal] general knowledge of spherical trigonometry, and to that extent only will spherical problems be here introduced; though a clear understanding of the doctrine of the sphere is very desirable for all navigators. The formule by which spherical problems are solved must here be postulated. They will be proved in TRriGono- METRY. In all spherical triangles there are six parts, three sides and three angles, the sides as well as the angles being measured by degress; any three being given the remainder may be found. The angles measured between heavenly bodies, or their altitudes, are treated as spherical sides. When two places are on the same parallel of latitude, the shortest course is not east or west (except on the equator), as the parallels are small circles having the pole as their common 7 centre. In finding the true course and shortest distance, by calculating a segment of a great circle, the earth is treated as a sphere, ~~— this being sufficiently accurate for the purpose. The advantage of sailing on a great circle instead of a rhumb is best de~~ monstrated by stretch- ing a thread across a globe, cutting the two places under considera- tion; while by calcula- tion it can be found numerically. Returning to the day’s work on May 10th, let us suppose it desired to find the great circle course and distance to Belle Isle. The co-latitude of each place gives the two sides, and the difference of longitude expresses the angle between them at the pole.

Hence the two sides and included angle are given; required the third side and the angle at. ship, which will be the distance and course (see fig. 14). P represents the pole, 8 the ship, and B Belle Isle. It is necessary first to find the angles PSB and PBS. The formula is sin}diff. sides x cot § contained angle

sin § sum of the two sides eos$diff. sides x cot $ contained angle cos 4 sum of sides Instead of subtracting a sine or cosine, it is easier to add the co-secant or the secant and reject the index. The result is— sin $(PS — PB) [=1° 18’ 30”] x cot 4P{ = 24° 147] —tan 4° 33! 15”; sin $(PB+ BS)[=39° 33’ 30] cos $(PS- PB) xcot$P Sas ae con 4(PB + PS) tan 70° 51’ 30”.

Hence 70° 51’ 30” +4° 83’ 15=—75° 24’ 45” is the greater angle B, opposite the greater side ; and 70° 51’ 30” — 4° 33’ 15”—66 18″ 15 is angle S,—the ship’s course at commencing,—say, N. 66 W. At the termination it will be S. 75° W. Having all the angles, we find the third side by the rule that the sines of the angles are proportional to the sines of the opposite sides.

= tan } diff. of other two angles;

= tan 4 sum of other angles.

sin PS 40° 52’ x sin P 48° 28’ mary Pe: f ee 24′ 15″ = 1824-2 distance sin B 75° O4 45” ichae

sin PB38°15 x sin P48° 28’ sin 8 66° 18’ 15”

The distance by Mercator’s sailing was 1858, or 33°8 miles longer.

or =sin BS 30° 24‘15”.

a

NAVIGATION

Should the sum of any two sides exceed 180°, the supplement of each must be used, and the supplement of the angles found. Ifa side be over 90° the logarithm found will be sine of its supplement or the cosine of its excess

over 90°. It will be readily seen by the frequent alterations necessary in the course, to keep near the great circle, that the ship passes the pole, continually changing its bearing, as she would any other distant object on the globe. It is always desirable to ascertain the highest latitude a ship will pass when sail- ing on a great circle; this is done by imagining a perpendicular let fall upon the arc; the position is then found by right-angled spherical trigonometry, the rules for which are very brief. Exclud- ing the right angle, the triangle consists of five parts, three sides and two angles. Two of those parts at least must be given to find the rest. Ifthe two parts given and the one required are joined, the central one is called the ‘‘ middle part.” If they are not joined (that is, an angle omitted between two sides, or a side between two angles, forming part of the equation) the part which is quite separate from the other two is called the ‘‘ middle part.” The solution is then by ‘‘ Napier’s rules,” which have been embodied in the following rhymes :—

“ The product of radius and middle part’s sine

Equals that of the tangents of parts that combine, And also the cosines of those that disjoin.”

- Instead of the angles and hypothenuse Their difference from ninety or complements use.”

We know that the perpendicular will fall upon the are between B and 8, because both the angles already found are acute; thus the triangle is divided into two parts, each having one side and one angle known. ‘Take the hypothenuse PS and angle§S, to find the length of the perpendicular PR. Here are opposite sides and angles, therefore

§ a oO i 7 a ° , tt

sin PS 40″ 52′ x sin S 66°18″ 15 cone 18°15 =sin PR 36° 48’ 30”, which is the

ra

complement of 53° 11’30’’, the highest latitude the ship will attain. To ascertain the longitude of that point it is necessary to find the angle RPS, which may be done according to the above rules in three ways, by varying the side or angle which is made the mniddle part. Thus,

rad. +log cos PS =log cot PSR+log cotSPR ; rad. +log cos PSR=log cos PR +log sinSPR; rad. + log cos SPR=log tanPR +log cot PS.

As the part required is in each formula coupled with one which is known, the difference between that and the sum of the other two will give the angle SPR=30° 7’ 45”; which, added to the longitude at ship, will give 36° 49’ 45” as the longitude of the highest point. As the original oblique triangle BPS has been divided into two distinct right-angled triangles, having the perpendicular PR common to both, the parts which form BPR may be treated in a similar manner for the purpose of finding the angle BPR and perpendicu- lar PR, either in preference to the first, or as a proof. Other points on the arc may be found by taking a part of the angle at the pole, with the side and angle previously known, and thus forming another oblique spherical triangle, in which two angles and an in-

cluded side are given to find the rest ; or by assuming a distance |

on the are (in degrees and minutes) with the angle and side before

known. In that case two sides and an included angle will be

given to find the other side (co-latitude), and the part of the angle P to indicate the longitude of the assumed point.

= two angles and an included side, to find the other two

sides :— sin 3 diff. of angles x tan 4 side sin 4 sum of angles cos 4 diff. of angles x tan 4 side cos 4sum of angles

=tan4 diff. of other sides ;

=tan 4 sum of other sides.

The second case where two sides and an included angle are given has been done. When the polar angle (difference of longitude) does not much exceed 50°, especially in low latitudes, an approximate curve may be drawn on Mercator's chart by means of a pencil attached toa wire or batten making the curve to pass through three or four known points, after which it can be used from day to day as a guide to the ship's course ; she may not keep on it, but she can keep near it. This curve becomes very incorrect when the angle is large.

One other example of finding the course and distance by each |

method will be given. The position has been chosen to show the great distance an arc of a great circle would carry a ship to the southward of her ordinary course, and also as touching upon the difficulty always experienced in finding a side or angle which is near 90°, in consequence of the very slight change in the value of large sines and small cosines.

Aship off the Cape of Good Hope in 34° 29' S. and 18° 24' E. 1s bound to Portland in Victoria, Assume a position outside the latter port to be in 38° 20' S. and 141° 40' E. The difference of latitude is 8° 51/=231 miles, the meridional difference of latitude 287°14, and difference of longitude 123° 16'=7396.

rad. x diff. long. 7396 merid. diff. lat. 287°14 diff. lat. 231 x rad. cos course 87° 46' 37" diff. lat, 231 < < tiga as iff. la x sec course 87° 46' 37 =distance 5955-1. rad. These two statements produce similar. figures, becanse they are worked by the same course; an error of 10 seconds would produce over 7 miles in the distance, as the logarithm cosine and loga- rithm seeant (arithmetical complements of each other) change very rapidly in large angles.

When the ditference of latitude between two places is compara- tively small, it is better to find the departure and use that in find- ing the distance. The table of meridional parts can be used for that purpose in two ways.

true diff. lat. 231 x diff. long. 7396

merid. diff. lat. 287-14

For this the logarithms of numbers alone are used. The middle

latitude is best found by seeking the latitude corresponding to the

mean of the meridional parts, which in this instance will be 2350°13

and 36° 26’. The latter is the true central position on the chart,

between the two parallels of latitude, the same as if measured on the side of the chart. :

Radius bears the same proportion to the. difference of longitude as

the cosine of middle latitude does to the departure=5950°4. Then

rad. x dep. 5950°4 ote oe Tir lat o31 course 87° 46’ 36 ;

rad. x diff. lat. 231 “dep. 59004

dep. 5950°4 x rad. sin course 87° 46’ 36 ’ Having found by Mercator and middle latitude that a ship from the position off the Cape would, by steering S. 87° 46’E. for the

whole distance, traverse 5954-9 miles before reaching the assumed point near Portland, it is now required to find an arc of a great

=tan course 87° 46’ 37” ;

=distance 5955:1;

=dep. 5950°4.

or =cot course,

z= distance 5954°9.

and

circle passing threugh those points. The co-latitude of each place and the difference of longitude are given,—that is, two sides and an included angle; required the third side and angle C (fig. 15).

1st position 34° 29’: co-lat. =PC 55° 31’ 18° 24’ E od, 38°20″ 4, = PV 51°40″ 141° 40′ E O77 123° 16’=P Half sum 58° 35’ 30” 61° 38’=half P Soi

Half difference 1° 55’ 30”

sin 3 diff. sides 1°55’ 30” x cot 4P 61°38″ : FS, ee See isms of vides 68° $830″ tan 4 diff. of angles 1°17 28 cos 3 diff. of sides x cot 4P cos $ sum of sides

Consequently angle V is 48° 84’ 5” and angle C is 40° 59’ 9”, the larger angle being opposite the larger side. Having all the angles, the remaining side is found by the proportion which the sines of angles bear to their opposite sides; thus

= tan } sum of other two angles 42°16’ 37”.

sin PC x sin P sin vP x sin P sin VO 90° 12% sin V sin C

ig example has been chosen because the side VC is so near to oo Hint on only be treated with certainty by letting fall a perpendicular from P to the arc, as represented by the dotted line PH; which also gives the latitude of the highest point the ship would reach if she sailed on that arc. Thus the oblique-angled triangle, in which all the angles were known, is divided into two right-angled spherical triangles, each possessing one side and

one angle previously known, and the side PH common to both is to be found. First, to find the side (or segment) HC. ‘The angle at C is obviously the ‘‘middle part,” as it is between the known side and the one sought ; they are joined or combined. Therefore

rad. + log (co)sin C=log (co)tan PC + log tan HC;

rad. x cosC S ep

or cot PG =tan HC 47° 42’. tee rad. x cos V eee Similarly cot PV =tan VH 42° 30’.

The sum of the two segments will be 90° 12’, equal to the side VC, represeuting the distance of 5412 miles, which is 548 miles less than the rhumb line. Similar calculations must be made every day at sea to find the new course and remaining distance. It is necessary, before deciding upon a voyage following the are of a great circle, to ascertain the shape of the curve and the highest latitude it will attain ; for which purpose the side PH must be found (fig. 15) by eithcr of the segments as before explained; it will be 32° 43’ 30”, which is the complement of the latitude 57° 16’ 30”. To find the longitude of that point: by opposite sides and angles—

rad. x sin CH sin PC

which added to-the longitude of position off the Cape, 18° 24’, gives 82° 12’ 30” KE. A glance at the chart will show that such a course would run the ship among the icebergs; therefore a position three or four hundred miles farther from the pole should be chosen, according to the time of year, and the course divided in two parts. It is easy to make a pencil curve on the chart in a lower latitude: the saving of distance would still be great.

The are ofa great circle from a position off Rio de Janeiro, 28° 5’ 8. and 43° 4’ W., to the vicinity of Perth in Western Australia, 32° 2’ 8. and 115° 25’ E., would measure 7270 miles. The rhumb line by Mercator (if it were possible) would be 8437 miles, or 1167 more. The highest latitude would be 70° 28’, therefore impracticable. Such a curve as this could not be laid down on Mercator’s chart.

Soundings.—When approaching land in thick weather the pre- caution of taking frequent soundings should not be neglected, especially when the depth and nature of the bottom is clearly defined on the chart, as it is at the entrance of the English Channel. Loss of time should not be made an excuse for incur- ring a serious additional risk. Several ingenious devices have been provided by which the depth of 80 fathoms can be tested without stopping the ship, but the result is not so certain as the old plan of getting the line “up and down” and feeling the lead touch the bottom. If soundings

are taken at ten or more miles apart, and do not coincide with those on the chart, it isa good plan to write them up the edge ofa strip of paper, preserving the distances the ship has run, according to the scale of the chart; when two or three are thus marked the slip should be moved about the chart, with the edge of the paper parallel to the course steered, till it coincides.

Observations. The quadrant and sextant are practically the same instrument: the first is the eighth part of a circle, and by reflexion measures an angle of 90°; the second is the sixth part of a circle, and measures an angle of 120°. Both are fitted with verniers graduated in such a manner that the angle on the are of the quad- rant can be read to half a minute, and that on the sextant to ten or even six seconds. The handling of the instruments for five minutes will be better than a long description. The crrors and adjustments are similar. The large movable mirror must staud perpendicular to the plane of the instrument. This is tested by placing the radius bar near the centre of the are, and looking into the mirror at the reflexion of the uncovered part, which if all be right will continue in a straight line from the arc itself. If it appear broken, the screws must be moved. The error is difficult to remedy; therefore when practicable it is better to send the instrument toa maker. The fixed reflector, or horizon glass, has two adjustments. To make it perpendicular to the plane of the instrument, let the radius bar be placed near zero, and while the instrument is held quite vertical make the direct and reflected view of the horizon coincide, by moving the tangent screw. Then, if by sloping the instrument’on one side or the other that line becomes broken, the glass is not vertical, and the screw for that purpose must be slightly moved till the lines coincide even when the instrument is held sixty degrees on one side or the other of the perpendicular. Also the reflected image of the sun or a star will cover the direct rays from them if the glass be vertical. Ifan horizon be not available, a distant hill or any sharp outline will do as well. The second adjustment is to make it parallel with the movable reflector. If at the end of the adjustment or test just described the radius stands at zero, or within two minutes, no adjustment is necessary. If it be much beyond that amount the radius should be set exactly at zero; and while looking at the horizon, which will appear broken, let the screw under the horizon

=gsin CPH 68° 48’ 30”,

NAVIGATION

glass be turned gently till the two parts coincide. To find the amount of index error accurately, the best method is that of measuring the diameter of the sun many times, which will give a number of small angles on and off the arc, as it is commonly called: that is, on the positive and negative side of zero, the mean of which will be the correction, —+ if it be off the arc, and — if on, Thus 32’ 20” on and 30’ 40” off would give a mean of —50”. The observer can at the same time test his own accuracy: thus, in the above example, the sun’s diameter appears to be 31’ 30”; the Nautical Almanac will show if it were so on that day.

There is one error to which all sextants are liable that is seldom mentioned or attended to. It arises from the great difficulty of placing the centre of motion given to the radius bar and movable reflector exactly in the centre of the arc, or from the contraction or expansion of the metal. It has no connexion with the index error, and admits of no adjustment. Its existence and amount are not easily ascertained, but demand both time and patience. As it has no appreciable effect on small angles, it is advisable to use the artificial horizon, and take a set of altitudes, say ten, which will form a mean of about 100° on the arc, noting the time of each accurately by a trustworthy chronometer.. Take similar altitudes in the afternoon, and work each set independ- ently, as though to find the error of the chronometer (see below). Should the time so found coincide with the known rate of the chronometer, there is no error. Should the results differ several seconds of time, it may be assumed that the error of the instrument combined with personal error has caused it. By the rate at which the sun was rising or going down during the observations the amount of angle due to those scconds is easily found. Half that amount will be the error of the sextant upon that angle. As an example, suppose the true reflected altitude to be 100° while the instrument made it 100° 1’, the calculation wonld make it about three seconds later than the truth; in the afternoon a similar error would make it three scconds earlier. Thus a disagreement of six seconds arises for about one minute of altitude. By four or five such sets of altitudes at different parts of the arc sufficient data will be procured from

which to form a table of corrections for all altitudes. This can be done by calculation, but a simple graphic method will be found sufficiently correct. Describe an are of a circle with a radius of 6 or 8 inches. Leta line from the centre of projection indicate zero, from which lay off half the altitudes which have been observed, but give them the full numbers, e.g., mark 45° as 90°, to correspond with the motion of the radius bar and numbers on the sextant. From the points representing the altitudes lay off the errors towards the centre, from any convenient scale of equal parts, perhaps one hundred seconds to half an inch. Between zero and the centre of the are will be found the centre of a second and smaller are which will pass through all the points representing the corrections, or nearly so. The space between the two ares may be remeasured at every 5° or 10° for the table of corrections (plus or minus, as the case may be).

Meridian Altitudes.—The first astronomical observation at sea is usually a meridian altitude of the sun for the purpose of obtain- ing the latitude. The reflexion of the sun's lower limb having been bronght by a sextant or quadrant to the edge of the visible horizontal on May 10, 1882, commencing a few minutes before noon, the greatest altitude that could be obtained was 58° 20' 15". The index correction was + 1' 30", and the eccentric error due to 58 degrees was— 40", The Nautical Almanac shows the sun's semidiameter on that day to be 15' 52"; as the lower limb was observed it is plus. The height of the observer's eye above the sca was 20 feet, which on account of the spherical figure of the earth makes the altitude appear too great. The correction is taken from a small table for the ''dip of the sea horizon," which opposite 20 feet gives 4' 24'—always minus. The result will be the apparent altitude of the sun's centre, which must still be corrected for refraction and parallax, the former on account of the rays of light from any object beyond the earth's atmosphere being deflected upwards, and the latter because the sun does not appear to a person on the earth's surface so high as it is in reference to the centre of the earth; the horizontal parallax is only nine seconds in the winter of the northern hemisphere, when the earth is nearest the sun. A table is usually arranged for refraction, minus the sun's parallax; in one such table the altitude 58° 82' 33" requires a correction of 31 scconds—always minus. The result will be the sun's true altitude, which taken from 90° gives the sun's zenith distance 31° 27' 58", the sun being thus much south of the observer when

on the meridian. By the Nautical Almanac it will be seen that the sun's declination at apparent noon at Greenwich on May 10th was 17° 39' 57" N., increasing 39" honrly. As the ship is in 7° W. long. nearly, the meridian passage was 28™ later, and about 18" must be added. This is of importance when the difference of longitude is great, as Greenwich time must always be found within a few minutes. The observer having found the distance he is north of the sun, and also that the sun is 17° 40' 15" north of the equator, the sum, or 49° 8' 18", will obviously be his distance from the equator, which is the latitude.

NAVIGATION

Finding the latitude by a meridian altitude of a star differs from asimilar operation for the sun only in so far as there is no semi- diameter or parallax to be applied. Star observations are of great value after the sun has been obscured for one or more days, for which reason a navigator should know all the principal stars, so as to recognize them during a very partial clearance of the sky. The Nautical Almanac gives the positions ofall the principal fixed stars. The apparent right ascension of a heavenly body is its angular dis- tance from the true equinox,—expressed by the abbreviation R.A. Sidereal time, given in page il. of each month in the Nautical Almanac for mean noon each day, is the angular distance between the mean or imaginary position of the sun and the true cquinox. Declination is the distance from the equinoctial or celestial equator. Mean time is that shown by a good clock, regulated upon the sup- position that every day is of equal duration. Apparent time has reference to the time actually occupied by the sun between successive transits over any meridian. Equation of time is the difference between mean and apparent time. Sidereal time is measured by the transits of a star over any meridian. See ASTRONOMY. |

To find the time that any star will pass the meridian, subtract the sun's R.A. from that of the star ; or, in other words, find their distance apart as expressed in time by R.A. As an instance, on May 10, 1882, between 7 and 8 p.m. the sun's R.A. was 34 10™ and that of a Urse Majoris 106 56™ ; consequently the star will pass the meridian of the ship in 7° W. at 74 46™, The knowledge of the longitude is only nceessary for finding the Greenwich time (G.T.) and the sun's R.A. The same night, the R.A. of Vega (a Lyre)

being 185 33™ and that of the sun 8) 11™, the star was 15h 22m after the sun, and would pass the meridian about 35 22™ a.m. of next day. To know which suitable star will pass the meridian after a certain hour, add that hour to the sun's R.A., the sum will be the R.A. of the meridian (decreased by twenty-four hours if necessary); the star table will then show the stars of that or greater R.A. Thus, on October 2, 1882, in 160° E. long., which bright star will pass the meridian after 10 p.m.? The difference of longitude in time being 104 40 E.., when the sun has passed the meridian ten hours it will evidently be forty minutes before noon at Greenwich, therefore the sun's R. A. will be 12 334™ at the time named. As it will be 10 P.M. at ship, the R.A. of any star then on the meridian must be (12h 333™ + 10) 22h 334m, The first bright star found in the table having greater R.A. is Fomalhaut (a Pis. Aus.), the R.A. of which is 22 51™, which is seventeen minutes more than the time sought ; consequently that star will pass the meridian of the ship at 10.17 p.m., and Markab (a Pegasi) eight minutes later. Another ship on the same day being in 90°=6 hours west, the sun's R.A. at her 10 p.m. would be 128 36™, and Fomalhaut would pass her meridian at 10.15 p.m., two minutes earlier by apparent time; the difference is due entirely to the change in the sun's position. All doubt will be removed, when finding the approximate time of a star's transit, if it be remembered that the sun (from which we reckon apparent time) indicates a position the R.A. of which is known ; therefore by adding any time which it may have passed the meridian the R.A. of another meridian in the sky is obtained, called the R.A. of the meridian at that moment.

Having the true altitude of a star, and thus the Z.D. (zenith distance), we can determine the latitude without risk of mistake by remembering that the declination in the heavens corresponds with the latitude on the earth ; therefore astar will pass the zenith of every place whose latitude corresponds with its declination. Ifa star having north declination passes south of the observer, the zenith distance must be added to the declination, as the latitude is then the greater. If such a star pass north of the observer, his north latitude will be less than the star's declination, and the differ- ence will be the latitude. The reverse holds good if the star has south declination and the observer is north of the equator. An old tule is also useful and simple :—If the zenith distances be invariably marked north or south according as the observer is north or south of the object observed, and the

declination placed under it marked north or south, add like signs and take the difference of the unlike; the latitude will take the name of that which preponderates,

The oldest of all nautical observations is that of taking the height of the pole-star,—a star which everybody should know whether at sea oron shore. If it were exactly at the pole the corrected altitude Would be the latitude, but it is not so. During 1882 its mean declination has been 88° 41’, therefore it describes a diurnal circle Tound the pole with a radius of seventy-nine minutes. It was once far from the pole, and now advances nearly nineteen seconds annually. The mean R.A. has been during 1882 about 1» 16m, mcreasing about 28% annually. The time it passes the meridian above and below the pole can be found as has been before described ; and 1° 19’ being subtracted from the upper transit or added to the lower one will give the latitude. The great consideration attached to the pole star is in consequence of the facility it affords, with very little calculation, for finding the latitude at all times when the Star and horizon are visible. It is necessary to know the time at ship to the nearest minute. Apparent time is invariably kept on board ships at sea, corrected at noon each day. The change of

longitude since noon must be roughly worked up in order to find the correct apparent time at ship, also the Greenwich time within half an hour, for the purpose of finding from the Nawtical Almanac the sun’s R.A. at that time, which added to the time at ship will give the R.A. of the meridian, rejecting twenty-four hours if neces- sary. With all nautical tables there is one for finding the latitude by the pole star, in which the correction is given for every ten minutcs.

Enter the table with the year and R.A. of meridian. Opposite the latter, or by proportion, will be found a correction + or — to be applied to the true altitude ; the result will be the latitude.

The principle of this table is that when the R.A. of the meridian coincides with that of the star the whole mean distance of the star from the pole for that year must be subtracted, while if the two R.A.’s differ by exactly twelve hours the same distance must be added, as the star is then on the

meridian below the pole. If the star is six hours from the meridian on cither side no correction is necessary. At other points the correction varies as the cosine of the time angle between the pole star and the meridian. Thus the R.A. of the pole star being 14 16™ for 1882, and distance 79 minutes, the correction corresponding to five hours is thus found :

79 x cos 8h 44m rad.

(Multiply the decimals taken from the logarithms of numbers by six, to bring them into seconds.) As the star was less than six hours past the meridian the correction is —. A similar calculation having been made for every ten minutes of one quadrant, the result may be applied inversely to the one below it, and the remaining twelve hours written on the opposite side of the page with the sign + or — the reverse of the first column.

It is evident from the above that the table may be easily dis- pensed with; also, as annual tables must be founded on the mean position of the star during that period, greater accuracy would be obtained by taking the R.A. and declination for the day required from the Nautical Almanac, and finding the corrections as above.

A table for finding the latitude by the pole star when off the meridian is also given in the Nautical Almanac with instructions, It is used with sidereal and mean time ; also an allowance is made for the spheroidal figure of the earth. When the latitude found by any star observation at sea is within one mile of the truth it may be considered satisfactory.

Latitude by the meridian altitude of the moon is obtained in a manner similar to that applied to the sun, but not so simple. First it is necessary to ascertain the approximate time of transit, by reference to p. iv. of each month in the Nautical Almanac. It is there given in mean time both for Greenwich and the anti- podes ; to one of those periods apply the proportion due to the ship’s longitude in time. It is necessary to guard against a false horizon often produced by clouds under the moon. Having obtained the meridian altitude, correct for errors of instrument and dip. From Nautical Almanac, p. iii., take the moon’s semi- diameter (calculated from the centre of the carth) for the nearest noon or midnight, augmenting it by a table for the purpose, as it increases with the altitude (ose a few seconds) ; add it if

the lower limb were observed, and subtract the refraction due to that altitude, Take from the Almanac the horizontal parallax for the time of observation, correcting it for decrease in proportion to altitude by a table for the purpose, and add it to the apparent altitude. Tables generally give the parallax due to altitude, minus refraction, in one correction. Having P, the true altitude, take it from 90°, and mark the zenith distance N. or 8. as it is north or south of the moon. Take the declination for the nearest minute of Green- wich time. It is now given for every hour (mean time), and the change in ten minutes. Place the re- duced declination marked N. or 8. under the zenith distance ; add if the signs are like, or take the differ- ence if unlike, and the result will be the latitude. z

Ex-meridian Altitudes.—It is important to be able to get the latitude when the sun may have been obscured from a few minutes before noon till some minutes after. Such observations near the meridian are called ex-meridian altitudes. When the sky is cloudy the observer should keep the watch in hand in order to secure the apparent time with the altitude nearest the meridian. If the sun be rising fast or declining fast, it will be better to work the sight with two latitudes, and with the assistance of the chrono- meter, as described below. In a low latitude and less than half an hour from noon, the pamphlet by J. T. Towson, containing tables for the reduction of ex-meridian altitudes, will be found very useful, as the correction or allowance for what the sun would further rise (or had risen) can be taken out entirely by inspection, which saves the labour of working four propositions. The principle is illustrated by fig. 16, which is projected with double the angle at P in order to make it more

5b — jh 16m — 3h 44m, =44′ 10”,

“SU Ly +g

intelligible. PS represents the sun’s polar distance when observed, and M his position when he reaches the meridian. Consequently PS and PM are sides of an isosceles triangle, having the distance between the two positions as a base, and equal angles since the sides are equal. The thing sought is the length of ZM, or where PM is to be divided at noon; the lower part being

the true zenith distance and the remainder co-latitude. The data are the same as those in Towson's first example, which he there solves by his table only. Time from noon 28™ 148; sun's true altitude 24° 53' 53", and declination 18° 35' 16" S: to find the angles at the base we use the supplements of the legs, and get sec 71° 24' 44" (180° – 108° 35' 16") x cot $P[=14™ 78]=tan 88° 52' 25", the supplement of each angle at the base ; and

sin ZS 65° 6' 7" x sin PS 108° 35' 16"

sin P 28™ 148

As PZS is very obtuse, and the supplement is really required, it is taken out at once as the sine of 7° 22' 38", which is the angle MZS. The angle PSZ is next found; it is between two known

sides, and the other angles are known, but not the opposite side :— cos $ sum of sides x tan 4 sum of angles ee PSZ cos Fale sides isin alia

which is 5° 22' 12"; taking this from PSM 91° 7' 35", we have the angle ZSM 85° 45' 23". Finally,

sin ZS x sin ZSM sin ZMS

the true meridional zenith distance, which taken from the polar distance gives co-latitude 48° 47' 54", showing that the sum was 18' 45" higher when on the meridian. When the sun is on the equator, both the angles at the base are 90°, and the base MS will be the measure of the angle MPS. Norie's method is short,- but the latitude by dead-reckoning is used, which may cause the whole operation to be repeated. Also the use of a "'log-rising" and natural versed-sines is objectionable. No one possessing a copy of Towson's table need take the trouble to work the problem when in actual want of the latitude.

Double Altitudes. —Another mode of obtaining the latitude is by two altitudes of the sun or a star, with the interval between the observations carefully noted, or by P simultaneous altitudes of two stars having a suitable difference in bear- ing. These are called 'double alti- tudes.'" The principle is the same in each case. The elapsed time in the one and the difference

between the right ascensions in the other indicate the angular distance at the pole. Fig. 17 represents two observations of the sun on the same side of the meridiau,—the dark lines showing the parts which are given and the z dotted lines those which are to be found.

On October 2, 1882, the estimated latitude was 45° 10’ N. and longitude 35° 30’ W. The first altitude was taken about 8.13 A.M. apparent time, and when corrected for errors of instrument, dip, refraction, and parallax was 20°. The second alti- tude, corrected, was 39° 15’, taken . about 10.58 a.m. The elapsed time by a good watch was 2h 44m 338, which being mean time is reduced to apparent time by adding the proportionate increase in the equation taken from the Nautical Almanac, which for 27 hours will be two seconds additive. Therefore the change in apparent time was 2b 44m 358—SPs.

Each altitude taken from 90° will give a zenith distance, 70° and 50° 45 respectively=ZS and Zs. Having the apparent time at ship and the longitude, which converted into time will be 2h 22m, we take the declination of the sun from the Nautical Almanac for apparent noon and correct it for the Greenwich time of each obser. vation, obtaining 3° 36′ 56” S. and 8° 89’ 36” S, “Thoss amannnie added to 90° will give the sun’s polar distance at each period = PS and Ps, Thus four sides and one angle are known, which is all that is required to find the complement of the latitude PZ.

We shall work out this by the most simple method, in order to show the principle upon which it is done. First, in the triangle sPS two sides and the included angle are given, required the other two angles. Add together the sides Ps (93° 89’ 36”) and PS (98° 36’ 56”), and find their half sum and half difference :—

sin 4 sum eos $ diff. x cot 3P cos$sum

=sin PZS.

= sin ZM 64° 47’ 22”,

189 ‘6y “tt

= tan 3 diff. of other angles=0° 3’ 36”;

= tan $sum of other angles=88° 38’ 9”.

NHAYVEGCA TION

The half difference taken from the half sum gives the smaller of the two angles= 88° 34’ 33’, and the two added give the greater. Had there been no change in declination, the two sides including the elapsed time would with the side Ss form an isosceles triangle, and the first equation would be unnecessary,

As the two sides were each more than 90° the angles found are the supplements of those required. One is sufficient for the present purpose ; 180°-88° 34’ 33”=—91° 25’ 27”, which is PSs opposite the larger sidc. That angle includes the two angles PSZ and ZSs, which must be separated in order to obtain PSZ. The side Ss, which is the spherical distance between the two positions of the sun, is given by the equation

sin Ps x sin sPS sin PSs

In the second part of the problem three sides are given to find an angle, namely ZSs. Write under each other the values of the two sides (SZ and Ss) enclosing the required angle and also the opposite side Zs. Find the half sum of the three sides and the difference between it and the opposite side (Zs). Add together the logarithm cosecant of the first two and logarithm sine of the last two ; half the sum of those four logarithms (rejecting twenty from the index) will be the log. cosine of half the required angle. Thus ZSs = 52° 36’ 36”, which taken from PSs will leave 38° 48’ 51” as the angle PSZ, The third part is similar to the first, two sides and an included angle given, to find the rest, principally the side PZ :— sin 4(PS — ZS) x cot 4PSZ sin 4(PS + Zs) A similar statement using two cosines instead of sines will give the half suin of the angles—87° 3’ 51”. By subtracting the half difference the smaller angle is obtained, ZPS=56° 39’ 30”, which by the figure should evidently be placed opposite ZS. Finally,

sinZSxsinPSZ . eves Sao

~ “anes PZ 44° 49 58 ; which is the complement of the latitude 45° 10’ 2”. Ifthe first observation of the sun had been used to find the longitude by chronometer (the ship being stationary between the observations) the hour angle would coincide with the angle ZPS, and afford a test of its correctness. Simultaneous observations of two stars would be worked in a similar manner, with the advantage of having the difference of R.A., SPs, the spherical distance Ss, and the angles at S and s nearly permanent (requiring only a slight annual correc- tion), consequently that part of the calculation might be used many times. Kerigan’s tables have been mentioned as giving the dis- tances between the principal stars for this purpose. When two altitudes are taken of the same star, the interval by a watch keeping mean solar time must be reduced to sidereal time, as the stars pass the meridian quicker than the sun by 98°8 per hour.

The above illustration has been treated as if the ship were stationary, which at sea would seldom be the case. The bearing of the sun or star should be taken at the time of the first observation, and the run of the ship should be worked with reference to that bearing and also with regard to the change in longitude. Every mile which has been made good in a direct line towards the sun must be added to the first corrected altitude; if from the sun, it is subtracted. For every mile of longitude four seconds must be sub- tracted from the elapsed time if the ship ran west or added if she raneast. The result will then be the same as though the ship had been stationary at the place of the second observation.

Had the observations been taken on opposite sides of the meridian the calculations would be similar to the above, and the figure would differ only in having the triangle PsZ folded over, as it were, to the opposite side of the central line.

Other Double Observations. —The double altitude, though a very interesting problem in connexion with navigation, is at the present day of very little practical utility. When ships are provided with chronometers both latitude and longitude can be found more readily by two distinct observations of any of the heavenly bodies on different bearings. To find the longitude by means of a chrono- meter and also the variation of the compass should be one com- bined operation under ordinary circumstances,

therefore they will be described together. It is desirable that every navigator should accustom himself to act independently of an assistant. A pocket-watch with a distinct second hand being taken to the chronometer, the hours and minutes about to be shown by each may be noted in the "'deck-sight book," and if the observer then counts the half- second beats of the chronometer for five seconds previous to the even minute, the tenth beat will answer the purpose of the word "top" of the assistant, aud more correctly. Let a similar com- parison be made after the sights have been taken, and if there be any difference adopt the mean, or proportion. Take one or three bearings of the sun's centre with the azimuth or standard com-pass in its usual place, noting the time, and then take three or five altitudes of the sun's lower limb. The watch being held in the palm of the left hand, the fingers are free to move the tangent

=sin Ss 41° 8' 38",

= tan }(SZP – ZPS) 30° 24' 21".

ee

naVIGA TION

screw till the moment the contact is formed between the sun's reflected image and the edge of the horizon, when the eye is dropped from the telescope of the sextant to the face of the watch, and the second or even the half second noted ; the minntes should be written before commencing, and seen to be correct on finishing the set. Take bearings again of the sun as before, noting the time. Make the mean of the sun's bearings correspond with the mean of the time of sights (7.e., the sun's altitndes).

On October 17, 1882, about 8.24 A.M. apparent time, in 88° 15' N. and 6° 50' E., observations were taken to ascertain the longitude and variation of the compass. The mean of the times by watch when the altitudes were taken was 8 25m 358-5. The result of eomparison between the watch and chronometer was — 7™ 148, the negative sign meaning that the watch was faster than the chrono- meter. Therefore, both those amounts being subtracted, the mean time at Greenwieh was 75 42™ 188-5. The mcan of five observations of the sun's lower limb was 20° 42' 30". The corrections

were index error + 2’ ; eccentric error (in proportion to altitude) -15”; dip of the horizon corresponding to the height of eye, 24 feet, — 4’ 50”; sun’s semidiameter + 16’ 5”; refraction, minus parallax, ~ 2’ 22”; hence the true altitude of sun’s centre was 20° 53’ 8” and zenith distance 69° 6’ 52”. The sun’s declination is more conveniently taken from the Nautical Almanac for mean noon, as the mean Greenwich time is always known by the chronometer, but the hourly variation is given on the opposite page. Thus, on the day in question, 9° 19’ 29” S., having been corrected for 45 18™ before mean noon, gave 9° 15’ 33″ as the sun’s declination at the time of observation. We have now to find the hour angle and azimuth from three sides :—viz., co-latitude 51° 45’, co-declination or sun’s polar distance 99° 15’ 33”, and the zenith distance 69° 6’ 52” (fig. 18). For convenience let these be placed under each other as mentioned, take their sum and half sum (110° 3’ 49”); also the difference between the half sum and the side opposite the required angle, the zenith distance, = 40° 56’ 50”. Add to- gether the logarithm cosecant of the first two and logarithm sine of the last two, remembering that when the degrees exceed ninety the supplement must be used, or the amount over 90° with reverse term. Half the sum of those four logarithms, rejecting twenty from the index, will be the eosine of half the angle required (3h 35m 488-4), the time from noon. This is the principle upon which the angle is found, but it is rather quicker to use the latitude and declination direct. Write the lati- tude, deelination, and zenith distance under each other, matking the declination + if on the eontrary side of the equator to the latitnde, and —if they are on the same side. In the present in- stance the latitude being N. and declination S. the latter is addi- tive. Take the difference between the half sum and the zenith distance, that still being the side opposite the required angle. Add together the secant of latitude, secant of declination, sine of half sum, and sine of difference; the sum of those four logarithms, rejecting twenty from the index, will be the sine of half the hour angle, 1h 47m 548-2, That being doubled and taken from twelve hours shows that the apparent time at ship was 8h 24™ 115-6, The equation at mean noon was 14™ 358-1, the correction for four hours and eighteen minutes before noon was -— 28; leaving 14™ 338-1 to be subtracted from apparent time (as the sun was then in advance ofa mean clock). The result for ship mean time is 8h 9m 388°5, the difference between which and the Greenwich mean time as found by the chronometer, 27™ 208, is the longitude in time= 6° 50’, and it is east, because ship time

is the greater. The azimuth would in practice be partly sought at the same time as the hour angle ; as the sine of the polar distance or cosine of the declination ean be taken at the same opening of the tables where the cosecant or secant was found. We have then

sin Px sin PS sin ZS the sun’s azimuth or angle from north, observing that when the angle is more than 90° the supplement is found opposite the og. Sine, and the amount over 90° opposite the cosine. Thus sin P 3h 35m 488 x sin 80° 45’ (or cos 9° 15’), 58° 40″ sin ZS 69° 7’ =a which is the supplement of PZS, and therefore reckoned from the South, which in this instance is most convenient, as the mean of bearings taken of the sun, by the standard compass, immediately before and after the altitudes for time, was 8. 48° 30’ E., which taken from the sun’s true bearing 8. 58° 40’ E. showed an error of 15° 10’

Fig. 18.

=sin Z,

The latter was known to have been fast on that day 36™ 38, –

westerly,—that is, that the north point of the much to the westward of the true north. It is unnecessary to reckon seconds of angle in an azimuth. It is always necessary to note the direction of the ship’s head at the time of observation, as there is in general an amount of local deviation caused by the iron in the ship. In the instanee given the ship’s head was W.N. Ns on which point, as previously ascertained, the local deviation was 2° westerly; consequently the variation of the compass when freed from the ship’s influence was 13° 10’ westerly.

When it is desirable to take an azimuth without finding the hour angle as above, there appears no clearer or better mode than that of treating it as a spherical triangle in which the three sides are given to find the angle opposite the sun’s polar distance.

From the above exantple take the zenith distance, co-latitude, and polar distance; place the degrees and minutes only under each other in the above order ; take the difference between their half sum and the polar distance, which will be 10° 48’. Add together the logarithm cosecant of the first two terms and the logarithm sine of the last two; half the sum of those four logarithms will be the cosine of 4PZS, Thus PZS=60° 40’ x 2=121° 20’. This is evidently from north, consequently the supplement is S. 58° 40’ E. as before. It is some- times necessary to have recourse to this mode of finding the sun’s bearing even when the honr angle is known, as it may be difficult to decide which side of the east or west line the sun may be npon when the angle is near 90°. As the last method brings ont tho angle in two halves there can be no mistake.

Position by Cross-Bearings of the Sun.—The most practical method of obtaining the greatest amount of information and immediate benefit from observations similar to those just described is by laying off the position on the chart (especially if it be on a large scale), using the estimated latitude by which the sights were worked, and the longitude found by the chronometer, the accuracy of which depends on that of the latitude. Through that position draw a line at right angles with the sun’s bearing; in the above instance it would rnn N. 31° 20′ E. and S. 31° 20’W. Though the latitude were wrong by many miles, the ship would, if all else were correct, be somewhere on that Hine. For the line thus drawn cor- responds to a small arc ¢/ in fig. 18, drawn at right angles to ZS, and all positions for which the sun’s zenith distance=ZS lie on that are.

As an illustration, suppose that the above sights were worked by a dead-reckoning latitude, which the next observations about 108 14m will prove to be 17 miles too far south. The ship sailed during the interval W.N.W. 15 miles, wind south, leeway half a point, variation + 18° W., and local deviation—2° W. Hence the true eourse was N. 77° W., which by inspection, under distance 15, gives diff. lat. 3°4+, and dep. 14°6. The latter opposite the comple- ment of the latitude (38°) gives 185 in the distance column, which is the difference of longitude, subtractive as it was westing and the longitude was east. The latitude was then assumed to be 38° 18’ 24” and longitude 6° 31’ 30”. Draw the bearing taken at 8h 24m through the newly found point, which will represent the line the ship was on at 10h

14m, Five observations of the sun were then taken, and the mean of the times by watch was 10h 17m 398; the comparison showed — 7™ 168, and the error of chronometer (fast) ~~86™ 38. Greenwich mean time was 92 34m 208, The eqna~~ tion was at that time 14™ 348+to mean time, and the corrected declination was 9° 17’ 15” 8. The mean of the altitudes when corrected gave a trne zenith distance of the sun’s centre 53° 39’ 52”, All the data are thus given to find the hour angle as before described =1″ 46™ 208, and apparent time at ship, 102 13m 408; subtract the apparent time at Greenwich, 9) 48™ 548; the differ- ence, 24™ 468, is the longitude in time, =6° 11’ 30” E.

As the longitude carefully worked up from the former sights appeared to be 6° 31’ 80”, it is evident they have both been worked by an erroneous latitude, which is easily discovered.

The sun’s bearing was not taken at the time of the sccond set of observations, as it was too high for accuracy, but the true bearing was calculated as be- fore described and found to be 8. 33° 15’ E., a right angle to which was E. 33° 15’ N. If a chart on a sufficiently large scale be in use (or if one of similar latitude can be sub- stituted) the most simple mode is to lay down the two positions (as A and B, fig. 19) on the

compass was so

Fic. 19.—Cross bearings of the sun. same parallel and draw the two lines through them, as Aa and

Ba. The point of intersection will be the ship’s true position, which can be proved by working the second set of observations again with the corrected latitude. If the chart be too small,

the diagram can be made on a piece of paper, the difference between the two longitudes being laid off from any scale of equal parts ; ¢g,, BA is made to measure 20 and becomes the scale for the remainder of the figure. The lines at right angles from the sun’s bearing intersect at #, whence a perpendicular drawn with the protractor will give y on the base line. Then

By is the total error in longitude to be applied to that found by the second obser- vation, in this case 33’°3, which added to 6° 11’ 30” gives 6° 44’ 48”, The perpendicular zy represents the error in latitude, and would be correctly measured on the side of the chart as 17‘2. But from the plain paper the numerical measurement would be too great in the ratio of the difference of longitude to the departure.

The measurement of ay, on the scale BA=20, would be 21°8. By inspection (in traverse table) distance 21°8 opposite co-latitude 38° is found to give departure 17°2, which in this instance will represent the miles of latitude increased in size to suit the miles of longitude upon which the diagram is formed. That is the required correction to be added to the latitude assumed at the time of the second observation, and will give 38° 35’ 86” as the true latitude at that time. The same corrections may be found arithmetically by plane trigonometry, in which case it will be desirable to draw a rough figure showing how the lines cross, This mode of correcting the latitude admits of easy proof; by working the second set of sights with the latitude increased by 17’ 12”, the longitude will come out 6° 45’, Another good practical method is to work each set of sights by two latitudes, 10 or 20 miles apart. The logarithms can be taken out for the two with little more trouble than one, and they form a check on each other. When the two sets of sights are not worked by the same latitudes, but by latitudes in accord with each other by allowing for the run of the ship during the interval, and when the change of longitude due to 10 miles of latitude is known, the true position can be found by placing equiva- lent proportions under the first longitude brought forward and the second as found, till they agree.

By such double observations H.M.S. “ Devastation,” in January 1847, was enabled, after having been set by current 28 miles past Goree, to which she was bound, to alter course at 11 A.M. instead of increasing her distance by another hour’s steaming.

By this method the greatest accuracy of position may be main- tained throughout the day and night, if the horizon be clear. The one line is very useful though the other may never be obtained, which is not so with the double altitude, where nothing is known till the whole calculation is completed:

In high latitudes during the winter the sun is of little use in finding the longitude; bright stars and planets must be used, taken near twilight when the horizon is clear, and also when they are near east or west if longitude only is required, and with sixty to ninety degrees difference in bearing at other times.

The only difference in the treatment of stars and planets from the treatment of the sun when finding the longitude consists in ap- plying the difference of their right ascensions and that of the sun, reduced to the time of observation in order to obtain apparent time at ship, and from it mean time, to compare with that shown by the chronometer as Greenwich mean time.

Lunar Observation.—The moon is the least serviceable of all the heavenly bodies for the purpose of finding apparent time at ship and longitude by chronometer, in consequence of its rapid motion entailing more care in the corrections, though the Nautical Almanac gives its place with great accuracy for every hour, and the variation in ten minutes. That rapid and uniform motion rendcred it the most valuable and at sea the only means of ascertaining the longitude after the construction of almanacs, and before the present perfection of chronometers. In presence of the latter lunar observations have fallen into the shade, and like double altitudes are found principally in examination papers. As the moon passes the stars at the mean rate of 33” of angle in one minute of time, it is obvious that an error to that amouut in measuring the distance from a star would produce an error of 15 miles in longitude. As the moon’s motion with regard to the sun is nearly one degree a day less, a similar error in the distance would produce still more effect.

The Nautical Almanac gives the true distance between the centre of the moon and the sun while within range by the sextant, as it would be seen from the centre of the earth; and in like manner the distance from some of the principal fixed stars and planets, for every three hours of Greenwich mean timc, with the proportional logarithm of the change in that time. It is essential that the star from which the lunar distance is measured should be near the ecliptic, in order to obtain the greatest amount of change. If the star is quite in the path of the moon the distance may be small, when the measurement will require less steadiness.

We take a star lunar as an example, which will introduce the problem of finding the time at ship by a star (fig. 20). On November 18, 1882, about 9 P.M. apparent time, the ship was in 38° 10’ N. and 45° 15’ W. by dead-rcekoning ; height of the eye 20 feet. There was not a chronometer on board. An assistant was employed to show a light on the arc of the sextant, to take time, and to write down ; consequently the same sextant was used. An altitude of the moon’s lower limb was taken before and another after the other observations, and the mean was reduced by propor- tion to what it would have been if observed at the same instant as the mean of the distances, namely 35° 15’.. Two or more altitudes of Aldebaran were taken before the distances and as many after, the mean of which when reduced to the same instant was 85° 6’. The mean of several measurements of distance from the moon’s farthest limb was 94° 4018”. The index correction was +1’ 20”, eccentric error —2′ 9’, semidiameter at midnight was 16’ 9”, which was augmented by 9” (taken from a table) in consequence of the moon being nearer the observer as it approaches the zenith. As the farthest side of the moon was used, the augmented semidiameter was subtracted. The corrected observed distance was then 94° Zou”.

The observed altitude of Aldebaran was 85° 6’, index correction +1’ 20”, eccentric —25”, dip of the horizon — 4’ 24”; giving ap- parent altitude 35° 2’ 31” and Z.D. 54° 57’ 29”. Apply refraction — 1’ 23”; then the true altitude is 35° 1’ 8” and true Z. D, 54° 58’ 52”. Add the difference between latitude 88° 10’ N. and declination (from Nautical Almanac, p. 3827) 16° 16’ 21” N. to true Z.D. 54° 58! 52”, and note the difference betweeen the half sum and the true Z.D. Add together the logarithm secants of latitude and declination and logarithm sines of half sum and difference ; half the sum of the four logarithms will be the logarithm sine of half angle SPZ=8 51™ 438-8, which is the time the star was east of the meridian. By adding the longitude in time to the time at ship it will appear that Greenwich apparent time was about mid- night, when the sun’s right ascension was 155 37™ 68, That of the star being 45 29™ 148, it is evident that the star would pass the meridian 11) 7™ 59s before the sun, and 12) 52™ 88 after it. The latter is more suitable at present. Taking the time the star is from the meridian from the time it is after the sun, it is seen that the sun had passed the meridian 9% 0™ 248-2, therefore that is the true apparent time at ship, provided the latitude was correct by which it was found. Hence the

necessity of choosing a star when nearly east or west. The equation of time taken from the Almanac and reduced to apparent midnight was 14™ 328°5, and the result was ship mean time=8) 45™ 518-7,

The altitude of the moon's lower limb was 85° 15', index cor- rection +1' 20", eccentric error — 25", dip —4' 24", semidiameter +16' 9', augmentation 9" ; giving apparent altitude 35° 27' 49" and apparent Z.D, 54° 32′ 11". To the latter add the refraction 1' 22", and subtract the parallax due to altitude, 48'12". The result is true Z.D, =58° 45' 21". The horizontal parallax is the angle at the centre of the moon subtended by the semidiameter of the earth, and the parallax due to any altitude of the moon (that 1s, the amount by which the apparent altitude would increase if the observer were sunk to the centre of the earth) is given by the equation—

hor. parallax in seconds x cos of ap. alt. rad.

It must always be added to the apparent altitude. With all navi- gation tables there is one for reducing the parallax, sometimes to every two ininutes in altitude. The refraction is then included in the correction.

The most important part of this problem is finding the true distance between the star and centre of the moon at the moment of observation, from the data already obtained ; it is confined to the triangle ZSM (fig. 20). The two apparent zenith distances 54° 57' 29" and 54° 32' 11" with the apparent distance (that is, as measured) are drawn to scale, and from the three sides we find the angle MZS=127° 53' 54".

As the correction applied to the altitudes of moon and star on account of parallax and refraction were in a direction to or from the zenith, the angle betwcen the two zenith distances will be unaffected by any change in the length of those legs. We have therefore the true zenith distances Zm 53° 45' 21" and Zs 54° 58' 52 with the included angle just found, to find the third side—a pro- blem which has been already exemplified (see fig. 15 and the

= parallax in alt.

NAVIGATION

accompanying calculations)! The true distance being over 90° will come out as a small cosine, the change in which (at that angle) is only one unit in the sixth place of figures for seven seconds. It is desirable to avoid angles of this description, which can be done by dropping

a perpendicular from Z to the required side ms, which would then be found in scgments, by two right-angled spheri- cal triangles, as excmpli- fied with fig. 15. The sum of the two segments, 93° 48’ 36”, is ten seconds more than the result obtained directly from the oblique-angled tri- angle, and is more likcly to be correct.

Take the true distance as 93° 48’ 30”, and find in the Nautical Almanac M an approximate distance, which was 93° 40’ 45” at midnight of the 18th; the difference is 7’ 45”. As the moon was approaching the star the greater distance was before midnight. There are tables of proportional logarithms arranged for finding readily the proportion which three hours or three degrees bear to any part of either, or one part to another, The Nautical Almanac gives after each distance the logarithm due to the amount of change during the next three hours, to four places of figures. As the distance in the present instance is so close to one of the periods, namely midnight, it is necessary to take the mean of the two log- arithms before and after, which is ‘2314. The difference between it and the logarithm for 7’ 45” =1°3659 is 1 1345, =13™ 128°5; or it may be found by simple proportion. Greenwich mean time was therefore 11> 46™ 478-5, and ship mean time as found by the star 8h 45m 5185 ; difference 3h 0m 568 = 45° 14’ W. long.

There are various graphic methods for finding the correction to the distance due to parallax and refraction, for which space cannot here be spared, as they are at best but approximations, and belong rather to the progress of the art. See Kelly’s Spherics.

The moon is occasionally used for finding the longitude with the aid of a chronometer, and the method is then similar to that with a planet or star, except that the parallax is so great and the change in right ascension and declination so rapid that the greatest care is necessary in taking out the corrections to the nearest minute of Greenwich time. A star appears to be far preferable for the purpose. The horizon under the moon sometimes assumes a bright sharp appearance which appears tempting ; but caution is

necessary, as a bank of cloud below the moon sometimes cuts off the more distant part of the water and presents a false horizon.

It should be mentioned that extraordinary refractions some- times occur in the daytime which make the horizon appear many minutes of angle higher than it really is. That has been observed in a very remarkable manner in the Baltic. The results of apparently good observations of the sun for the chrono- meter were found to be very erroneous, and, a short time after, the island Gottsko Sandé was seen presenting a second water- line above what had previously appeared to have been the horizon. On another occasion, April 21, 1854, the low islands and land east of Stockholm were seen from a distance of 12 miles as if inverted on the sky, presenting the appearance of level table- land, with dark cliffs, about half a degree above the horizon. On approaching, the upper line gradually disappeared, leaving the low islands covered with fir trees, in their natural state. It was calm at the time, and there was much ice in the Gulf of Bothnia. Fortunately such a state of the atmosphere is not frequent. In the Standard of August 12, 1882, mention is made of an extra- ordinary mirage at Alexandria on the previous evening, which the forts about Aboukir Bay, distant 15 miles, to be plainly visible.

Artificial Horizon.—The artificial horizon is a most useful con- trivanee whereby the effects of mirage or fog are avoided, but unfor- tunately it can only be used on solid ground, though many attempts have been made to overcome the effect of the ship's motion. The artificial horizon in common use is composed of a wooden or copper trough 5 or 6 inches long by 3 to 34 inches broad and 4 inch deep. This being placed on a solid stone or hard ground, 100 yards from Vehicular traffic, and at least 20 yards from foot passengers, Mercury is poured into it from a small-necked bottle, till the bot- tom of the trough is covered. In pouring, the neck of the bottle should be kept well down in order to keep back the scum. A metal frame carrying two pieces of plate glass, which are fixed at 45° from

' The corrected positions of the moon and star in fig. 20, and the dotted line

japresenting the true distance, are not according to scale, as it would be mpossible to draw lines fine enough.

Fig. 20.

the horizon, and at right angles to each other, is placed as a screen over the trough and mercury, to keep off the wind.? By this ar- rangement of the glasses forming the screen, the refractions which a ray of light suffers when passing obliquely through the glasses destroy each other. The observer may be seated close to the hori- zon if the sun or star be high, and the whole disk of the sun will be seen; but with a low altitude the image passes into the box so obliquely that the observer must place himself at a distance and be content with seeing the upper half of the sun's reflected image, to which is brought by the sextant the reflexion of the sun's lower limb. An object with less altitude than 6° or 7° cannot be taken, nor a greater angle than 60°. By using suitable shades the two reflected disks will appear so sharp that a very accurate contact may be made, and repeated as desired.

Rating Chronometers.—Observations in port with the artificial horizon are used to rate chronometers. For this purpose a good watch should be compared with each before leaving the ship, and immediately on returning. The angle measured by the artificial horizon must be halved, after instrumental corrections have been made, and from the altitude thus obtained the mean time at the place can be found just as at sea. But in the present case the longitude is known, and Greenwich mean time will be found from the local mean time by adding or subtracting the longitude in time, according as the latter is W. or E. The difference between it and the time shown by each of the chronometers at the same instant will be their errors, which taken from the last error found and divided by the number of days and fractions of days will give the rate. The errors of chronometers should be ascertained at every port, and every ten days if a ship remains long at one port. "The results being tabulated, the character of a watch during a year can be seen at a glance.

Chronometers should be kept in a dry place and equal tem pera- ture, free from vibration, not too softly padded (for fear that the motion of the balance-wheel should be imparted to the body of the watch) ; and they should not be carried about for any purpose.

'* Equal altitudes" is a term which signifies a mode of obtaining the time by means of altitudes of the sun or a star taken at each side of the meridian ;

it is more accurate in result than any other method, as all crrors, personal or instrumental, are neutralized by the repetition, as are also crrors in latitude. If the object observed were perfectly stationary with regard to the celestial concave, as a star may be considered to be, one-half the elapsed time added to the time of the first observation would be the time of transit ; and, the difference between the star and sun in right ascension being applied to this, the apparent time at place would be obtained. The motions of the planets vary in amount, and must be treated accord- ingly. Jupiter's orbitual motion is so slow that the change during an interval of three or four hours may be disregarded, excepting where great accuracy is required,

When equal altitudes of the sun are observed, a considerable correction has usually to be made in consequence of the change of declination during the interval. Thus in the example illustrated by fig. 21, though the zenith distance was pre- cisely the same before and after noon, the sun in- creased its distance from the pole, and instead of passing by the upper dotted line from S to s it is found to join the curve representing the zenith distance farther south, say at d. During three or four days at each solstice the change in declination is very slight, and may therefore be dis- regarded; also when the sun bears nearly east or : west the change of a few Pig. 21. minutes in declination will not affect the hour angle. If when on the meridian the sun be nearly vertical, and a sca horizon available, an altitude correctly timed ten minutes before noon and ten after will give the time of transit without any calculation. :

In order to secure a set of observations which shall have their mean exactly on either side the meridian, it is customary to fix the arc of the sextant in positions five or ten minutes apart (according to the motion of the sun, and whether the artificial horizon is used or not) in anticipation of the contact, calling ‘‘’top" when it takes place, and to repeat a similar operation in the afternoon with the

2 The older form of the artificial horizon, as described in Robertson's Naviga- tion (1755), was a box placed on gimbals, containing 1 fb of quicksilver, with a parallel glass floating on it. It has been attempted to use a top with a polished plane surface rotating horizontally—which would remain steady on the principle of the gyroscope—as an artificial horizon on

shipboard. An instrument of this kind, the invention of a Mr Scrson, was described in 1752; and Brunel proposed a similar device to be used on the "‘ Great Eastern."

same altitudes, but in the inverse order. It is more convenient to take the first set of sights, five or more, in the ordinary manner, that is, leaving the observer free to use the tangent screw and cry stop when he secures the contact. In the afternoon it will be desirable to begin a minute or two before the time for the greatest altitude, and to continue observations till past the lowest altitude of the forenoon. In other words, take one more at each end, the mean of which is likely to correspond nearly with the mean of the forenoon set. If desirable cut off one of the extremes and rectify any small disagreement by simple proportion till the exact altitude is obtained, with the equivalent time.

Example (fig. 21).—September 9, 1882. On the Mole of Palermo, 38° 8’ 15” N., 13° 22’ 50” E.(=53™ 318°), at 10 A.M. apparetit time, the chronometer showed 9) 43™ 158-5 as a mean when the five alti- tudes of the sun were taken by the artificial horizon, which gave a mean (after all corrections) of 47° 20’ 22”. Precisely the same mean of altitudes was procured in the afternoon when the chronometer showed 15 42™ 518-2. The chronometer was supposed to have been 39™ 30s fast on Greenwich mean time, gaining 18°8 daily.

This last information is only useful for reducing the equa- tion of time and declination; it gives 9h 4m (nearest minute) Greenwich mean time for the first and 1 3™ p.m. for the second sight, or in Greenwich apparent time 10h-long. 53™=9h7™, and gh 53m—jh7m, The declination at apparent noon was 5° 15’ 52″ N., decreasing 56”°7 hourly, which for three hours less seven minutes before noon, gives a correction +2’ 43”; for one hour and seven minutes after noon itis —1’3”. The equation at apparent noon was 2™ 468-4 (to be subtracted from apparent time), increas- ing 08°85 hourly, which for the above periods gives — 28°4 and +18,

The latitude, the reduced declination (marked — because it is on the same side of the equator as the latitude), and the zenith dis- tauce can now be used as in the calculation with fig. 18 to find the hour angle, or time from apparent noon. For the forenoon it is exactly two hours (10 a.m.); for the afternoon, the declination being 3’ 46” less, the latitude and zenith distance the same as before, the hour angle will be 14 59™ 388-8.

In order to make the mode of arriving at the error of the chrono- meter perfectly clear, the figures will be given in full:—

Morning. Afternoon. BVOUE NAM NOE Tr . cceceneesavens 0a 1h 9m 38-8 APpParent TIME. ..0.6. 026.0606 10-0 9O NGHUIEIT ON tee valeaceiswen cece serves -~-0 2 44 -0 2 47-4 WMG ATIELITIIG 3,2: cessenee soe cecee: 10 57 16 1 56 51-4 THOM AWS os… .wascsscesces ee —-0 538 31°3 0 53 31:3 Greenwich mean time…..... 9° 3447 al Fe orl Chronometer No.1 showed 9 43 15°5 1 42 51-2 Chronometer fast…..... 0 39 308 0 39 31:1

Here there is a perfect agreement in the result; as the chrono- meter was supposed to be gaining 18°8 daily, four hours would show an increase of three-tenths. As the altitude and latitude were assumed, they are necessarily faultless ; but in actual practice such a result would rarely occur. The latitude of such a place as Palermo Molec, which was once used as a base from which to take chrono- metrical lines, is undoubted, but the error of one minute in the alti- tude would in this example produce a difference of fourteen seconds between the two results; the mean, however, would be quite correct.

There is no ambiguity in this mode of finding the errors of a dozen chronometers and of the sextant (if it has any) at the same time. The two separate sets of logarithms also afford a desirable check upon the work. The principal reason why ship’s chronometers are not always rated in this manner is that double the boat-work is required, perhaps from a distance. Various shorter methods have been devised: Norie’s is very short, but he uses a special table, with logarithms A and B, with rules respecting the correction being

+ or — ; Inman’s rule is very confusing.

Chronometers can be rated with greater ease by means of a transit Instrument, but that does not come within the reach of an ordinary navigator ; nor can telescopes be used ou board ship to find the longitude by Jupiter's satellites, by occultatious, or eclipses of sun or moon in @ practical and satisfactory manner.

Variation.—The variation of the compass has been slightly touched upon when speaking of the most desirable mode of acquir- ing the longitude, altitude, and variation by the same daily observa- tions. In addition to azimuths taken casually with reference to the direction of the ship's head, it is occasionally necessary to take a round of observations of some kind in order to test the change which altered circumstances have produced in the attraction of iron ae ship (compare METEOROLOGY, section on Terrestrial Mag- netism),

The standard compass by which the ship's course is governed should always be placed in a position which is least affected by the ship's iron, and whence azimuths and all other bearings can be con- veniently taken. Whenever an azimuth or amplitude is taken the direction of the ship's head should be noted and logecd with the variation. The most simple mode of obtaining the variation is by

amplitude—observing the bearing of the sun's centre when it is more than the whole diameter above the horizon, as the refraction will be thirty-four minutes, and the dip four or five more.

To find the true bearing at sunset or sunrise, add together the log. secant of lat. and log. sine of declination ; the sum will be the log. sine of the amplitude, that is, the number of degrees to the right or left of the east or west point according to the declination. Toan observer on the equator the declination is also the bearing. Under the true bearing, however found, place the compass bearing ; the difference will be the variation, which is called east or west accord- ing to the position of the north point, with regard to the meridian, or true north. By keeping that point in view mistakes will be avoided ; the same applies to local deviation. The true bearing may also be taken from the amplitude tables.

The best mode of ascertaining the amount of local attraction or deviation is by means of a second prismatic compass, placed on shore near the ship, free from guns or other metal. While the ship is slowly hove round by hawsers and stopped at each point, simultaneous bearings are taken, noted, and timed. The difference between the two compasses is attributed to error caused by the ship's influence while her head was on each successive point. If landing cannot be effected, the thing may be done by observing a distant object, or by a succession of azimuths. If the latter case it may be found more convenient to use apparent time only for finding the true bearing about every twenty minutes, and the intermediate bearings by simple proportion.

In a time azimuth the apparent time from noon, the co-latitude and co-declination are given to find the angle opposite the latter. As the change in hour angle is the chief thing affecting the azimuth, two or three minutes in declination may be disregarded, and the declination may be treated as constant for two or three hours. Accurate bearings cannot be taken when the sun is more than 25° or 30° above the horizon. Burdwood's azimuth tables are very use- ful; from them the true bearing can be taken out by inspection. When a round of azimuths have been taken for the purpose of ascertaining the deviation of the compass, the variation should also be obtained on shore, or taken from a recent authority, in order to separate the amount due to the ship. It has been found very con- venient to gum a diamond of paper about ;,ths of an inch broad on each point, bearing the number of degrees deviation to be allowed when the ship's head is in that direction, westerly devia- tion being marked in blue or black and easterly in red. There isa very simple graphic method, when the deviation has been found upon six or elght scattered points only, of deducing therefrom the amount due to the intermediate points. Draw a central line through the length of a sheet of foolscap as a datum line, and about forty lines at right angles to it, three-tenths of an inch apart, to represent the thirty-two points of a compass, and a few repeated at eachend. At the left side of the paper write on those lines the names of the points, commencing at north-west and so through north, east, south, and west to north and north- east. Lay off the amount of deviation found on any point npon the corresponding line, taking any convenient scale of equal parts, perhaps one or two tenths of an inch to a degree, according to the amount of deviation; there is no connexion

between this scale and that by which the points are represented. Place the easterly deviation on the right of the datum line and the westerly on the left, till all the points secured have been marked. With a pencil form curves which will pass through those marks, or between them if they are close together and disagree, attributing the difference to errorsin observation. Ultimatcly ink an approved curve and remeasure it, as the corrected scale of deviations. The result of this rough method will be found the same as that bya highly scientific calculation, which would be out of place here. See Admiralty Manual.

To insure the true bearing of a distant object it is necessary to take an angle from the sun (or astar) to the object, and find the bearing of the sun as above by amplitude or azimuth. If the former and the distant object be on the horizon, there is nothing to be done but apply the distance from the sun's centre. Also if the sun has considerable altitude and the distance be measured by a theodolite or standard compass are acting as such, or if the distance measured be 90° no correction is necessary. Otherwise the distance measured by the sextant is one side of a spherical triangle, the sun's zenith distance another, aud the distant object to the zenith the third; and from these the angle at the zenith must be found.

The position of a ship when in the vicinity of land is usually determined by cross-bearings; but if greater accuracy is required, and three objects are visible which are not in the circumference of a circle passing through the ship's position, sextant angles should be taken between them, and laid off on a piece of tracing paper a8 a substitute for a station-pointer. When the three lines are brought to coincide with the three positions prick the point of junction, which will be the ship's true position; or, without tracing paper or station-pointer, lay off the angle from 90° opposite each station towards the other which was observed with it; those lines will

cross in the centre of the circle upon which the ship was situated. Repeat the operation from the centre to the third object, and where the two circles cross will be the ship's position. shore can be ascertained by one such angle subtended by two known objects nearly abeam, which might be useful in keeping a ship outside or within a shoal. About 60° is a desirable spread.

The distance from an island, the extremities of which do not spread sufficiently to give cross-bearings by the compass alone, or the height of a lighthouse, tower, or cliff, may be made useful in like manner.

Tides.—Vhe ability to find the time of high water at any place during the interval between “ full and change.” was once highly estimated, but in the present day, when almanacy are so plentiful, the information can be had without trouble. As a fact a modern navigator never does calculate the time of high water, because the rule only gives a uniform rate of change for all places on the globe, which is more or lessincorrect ; and, knowing tliechange which has taken place at London Bridge since the new moon by the Alnanac, he has but to apply it to the standard of any other place.

The Nautical Almanac gives the mean tine of two tides daily at London Bridge throughout the year, and the apparent time of high water on full and change days at about two hundred placcs in the United Kingdom and on neighbouring coasts. A more full account of the tides is published annually by the Admiralty. The times predicted in the Almanac are but approximations, and are fre- quently half an hour too soon or too late. A ship under sail only, working up or down the British Channcl, will derive great assistance froin the tides by making sh¢rt tacks close to the head-lands and a line joining them in the greatest strength of the tide, during the time it is favourable, and standing out towards the centre of the channel during the adverse tide. —,

Winds and Currenis.—To make good passages a navigator should possess a general knowledge of the prevailing winds and principal currents which he is likely to encounter whether he be under sail or steam. When in the vicinity of land he should always be on his guard against unexpected effects from currents, for none are accurately known or free from change at certain or rather uncertain periods, The strength and direction of ocean currents can only be ascertained by comparing carefully kept dead-reckoning with the result of frequent observations, both of which are apt to be neglected when the navigator is free from land. A great impedi- ment to a better knowledge of the currents is the assumption that they are well known and that the same water circulates across and round the seas, as it would in an enamelled basin. There is decidedly an indraught on the north-west coast of Africa, in

the Bight of Biafra, and in many other places. A navigator should therefore be on the watch when steering parallel to a coast at night.

The advice here offered with regard to the choice of a track is intended for sailing ships only, steamships are more independent.

On leaving England for Gibraltar or Madeira the prevailing winds and currents will be found to set along the coast of Spain and Portugal; generally a passage to the south is easily effected. Westerly gales are frequently very strong; therefore ships should, while able, shape a course well outside of Cape Finisterre, towards which there is frequently an indraught. Should bad weather threaten from the south the ship (unless convenient to a port) should stand to the westward to gain an offing, before the force of the wind is felt or itturns tothe westward. She should then wear and heave to on the starboard tack, which will enable her to bow the sea as the wind changes to west and north-west. ‘This is an invariable rule when north of the equator ; the reverse is the rule in the southern hemi-

- sphere.

Ordinary heavy gales frequently give warning of their approach by causing a set of the sea in the direction of their course, accom- panied by a long swell, the day previous to the force of the wind being actually felt at the ship. The height of the waves from hollow to crest is sometimes over 40 fect.

Ships bound to the West Indies usually call at or pass near Madeira, thence continue south past the Canary Islands till they fairly catch the north-east trade wind, which may be expected in 30° N. lat., or sooner about the month of July. A fair wind and current will then be secured to the Vicinity of the West India Islands, Where it either falls calm, or a light wind from the shore @ oxperienced every night. When bound to ports in the United States 1t 1s necessary to keep to the southward in a similar manner, skirting the northern edge of the tradewind. From either of those places or the Gulf of Mexico the homeward track is the same, that 1s, close to the banks of N ewfoundland, in order to get the prevail- Ing westerly winds,

Ships bound up the English Channel should enter near the centre, avoiding Ushant and Scilly, especially in thick weather. Steam- ships are more under command, and should be more accurately navigated, but the advantage thus gained in point of safety is more than counterbalanced by the unreasonable things required of them, such as Communicating with the lighthouse on Bishop Rock, which on the loss of the “Schiller” and many lives a few years back.

he prevailing wind in the English Channel is south-west, and it

The distance off

275

will be found in the western half of the circle two days for every one in which it is in the eastern half.

Ships bound to Sierra Leone and the coast of Guinea should pass Madeira on either side, then outside or through the Canary Islands, and if it be about the month of March inside the Cape Verd Islands, where a strong north-east trade will be blowing. At other seasons pass outside these islands to avoid calms, thence close along shore with westerly and south-westerly winds. The current in this track will be found favourable from the Bay of Biscay to the Bight of Biafra, but not farther south. From Sierra Leone to Loando steer along the coast to Cape Palinas, then stretch across the south-east trade till able to return towards Africa on the opposite tack, which may be at 200 or 300 miles south of Ascension. It is especially necessary to keep well to the southward during July and August, when calms prevail near the shore. From Biafra to near the Cape of Good Hope the usual wind near the coast is from the south-west during the day, and either very light off shore or calm at night.

From England to South America the track will be similar to that to Sierra Leone as far as the Cape Verd Islands, when ships for the north-cast coast may bear away to the westward, but always allowing for the strong current which may set them to leeward of their port during the calms to which they will be liable. Those bound to the southward of Cape St Roque must be careful not to make much westing till they have crossed the equator; the

exact place most desirable for crossing has long been disputed, though the positions generally advocated lie between the meridians 18° and 26°. The argument in favour of the former is the certainty of weathering Cape St Roque, and for the latter less delay by calms between the two trade winds, 7.¢., in the space from about 10° north to the equator, or from 10° to 4° north while the sun is north of the equator; in this half of the ycar the 8.E. trade comes farther north, and on the coast of Brazil it then blows from south-east and south, so that it is advisable to cross the equator at about 20° W. During December and January the wind frequently draws along the south-east coast of Brazil, past Bahia, from the E.N.E. At that scason the line may be crossed in 25° or 26°, All these rules have their exceptions: when the wind deviates from the usual direction, and the deviation is unfavourable, it is unquestionably better to put the ship on the opposite tack till it returns to the usual direction.

From the United States to the South Atlantic the course should be east, keeping to the north of Bermuda (324°) till past 40° W., then south-easterly across the north-east trade, and joining the track of ships from Europe.

After passing the latitude of Cape St Roque, ships for Rio, Monte Video, or Cape Horn may steer dircct courses, but for St Hclena or Benguela they should keep to the port tack, standing to the south- ward till past the twentieth parallel, or a day longer if the wind should then be to the eastward of south-east. Ifbound to the Cape of Good Hope we must be content with making southing ouly till past the latitude of Rio; westerly winds may then be expected. The track indicated by an arc of a great circle from Rio to the Cape is not only the shortest, but about the best with regard to the wind.

When homeward bound from the Cape, ships should pass close to St Helena with a fair wind and current, and steer for about the western limit for crossing the line on the outward voyage, where they would meet the ships from the south-east coast of America, and running together across the centre of the Atlantic join the homeward bound West Indiamen between the Azores and New- foundland, according to the winds experienccd. From the Bight of Benin or any part of the Guinea coast it is necessary to stand south on the starboard tack to within a degree of the equator, then due west till

past the meridian of Cape Palmas, and north-west into the middle of the Atlantic.

In the Mediterranean the prevailing wind is west, therefore there is no difficulty in running up that sea. A slight current sets from all directions towards Cephalonia. Off the coast of Algeria, during westerly gales, heavy hollow waves are experienccd, running at the rate of 10 or 12 miles an hour. When making a passage out of the Mediterranean it is better to keep near the African coast while the wind is to the southward of west, to which it is sure to turn, and then stand over to the Spanish coast, where slielter can be found if required. :

The destructive circular storms or cycloncs in the West Indies called hurricanes are generally preceded by calm gloomy weather and a high barometer. It is very desirable that the electric state of the atmosphere and the earth should be known, which is not the case at present. Their immediate approach is indicated by the barometer falling rapidly ; which is the more remarkable, because the changes in the barometric readings are usually very slight within the tropics. If the ship be in a safe anchorage or harbour, the lower yards and topmasts should be struck and anchors laid out in the direction of the most probable danger. If the anchorage be not satisfactorily protected the sooner she 1s out of it the better. At sea it is necessary to get down the upper spars, and to run, if

there be sea room, across the direction of the wind, from the centre of the storm,—that is, with the wind on the starboard side in north latitude, and on the port side in the southern hemisphere. If it be necessary to scud, it shonld be done with the wind as much on the starboard or port quarter as the ship will bear, in order to avoid running round or into the centre. The wind does not run in parallel circles ronnd the centre, but rushes spirally towards it, especially when close (see fig. 22). : ; 7

There is one dangerons position in which a ship may be placed with respect to an advancing cyclone for which no certain rules have been given, such as at A or | D, or between those two posi- tions, near the track upon which it is advancing.

It is evident from the diagram that to run from A either before the wind, or with it on the starboard quarter, in the direction of the small arrow, would cause the ship to inter- cept the storm's centre. It would be advisable to carry sail with the wind abeam as long as pos- rena Aen Fra. 22.—Cyclone in 30° N. lat.

to on the starboard tack (in north latitude) till the barometer begins to rise and the wind turns more to the south and west.

As the centre of the storm is supposed to move at a rate varying from 12 to 30 miles an hour, a ship sailing 10 or 12 miles an hour in a direct line from the centre, but on the track, would be overtaken by it. The great hurricane of 1830 extended from the West India Islands to Newfoundland at a mean rate of 18 knots an hour, and by the average time occupied in passing in- termediate places (eighteen hours) it must have been about 330 nautical miles in diameter. The centre of the hurricane which devastated Barbados August 10, 1831, moved at a mean rate of about 14 knots an hour. It is evident from those quotations that a ship cannot depend upon running faster than the storm.

The navigator should be ready provided with a representation on tracing paper of a cyclone similar to fig. 22, of a radius equal to 150 miles on the scale of the chart upon which it is to be used. If made for one hemisphere it can be turned over to suit the other. By marking the ship's position on the chart, and placing the tracing over it with one of the arrows correctly corresponding with the direction of the wind at the ship, the direction of the storm's centre will be indicated with certainty, but the distance and track can only be conjectured, —the latter by assuming that it will be similar to those previously ascertained, which may be represented by a pencil line on the chart. If to the south of the 20° N. lat. it will be moving in a westerly direction, if about 30° to the north- west or north, and when about 35° and 40° to the north-east.

It is safer to assume the centre to be nearer than it really is than vice versa; the pencil line will run parallel to the storm's course unless the ship be on the track, as at D. It is evidently her duty to run to the west if there be room till the wind veers to the north- east against the sun, when it will be certain that she is to the west- ward of the storm's track. This is not likely to

happen in the North Atlantic when as far north as 30°, as the centre usually passes along the coast or over the continent of America; but when farther south, and when the storm's progress is to the westward, a ship may escape by running to the southward with the wind at north.

If the position with regard to the storm is supposed to be at B, she should run with the wind on the starboard quarter. Ifat C it will be optional either to run with the wind on starboard quarter or to heave to; for anything in that direction relative to the assumed track will have attained its nearest approach to the centre. When the direction of the wind remains unchanged, the force increasing and barometer falling, the centre must be advancing diréctly on the ship. When the centre begins to recede the wind will decrease in violence and change its direction, with the sun if the ship is east of the track and against the sun if the centre passed to the east- ward of the ship; the barometer will also rise rapidly.

Fig. 22, and the argument upon it, are for the northern hemi- sphere ; the typhoons and all circular storms south of the equator are similar, but the revolutions are reversed, and the track

of centre curves off from west to south-west, south, and south- east!

In ordinary heavy gales in the North Atlantic a ship should heave to on the starboard tack, as the wind generally changes from south to west and north-west. On that tack she will be constantly '*coming up" and bowing the sea as the wind veers, and will be less liable to be taken aback; and for similar reasons the third anchor for use should be carried on the starboard side. The reverse will hold good south of the equator.

The storm peculiar to the west coast of Africa is called a tornado. It is entirely different from a hurricane ; it is not circular; it is very local and of short duration, seldom lasting more than ten or twenty minntes. These storms give good warning by a black cloud first appearing on the horizon, rising quickly. When the cloud is about twenty degrees high a bright arch will be seen under it. The faster it rises and the more distinct the arch the niore severe will be the tornado, which bursts suddenly when at an angle of forty-five degrees. During its rise there will be ample time to shorten all sail and turn the ship's stern towards it; she will be driven violently for a short

time, when it will fall calm as suddenly as the wind came, and a deluge of rain will wash the decks.

Along the coast of California and the west coast of Mexico and Central America voyages can be made to the south-east with westerly and south-westerly winds and favourable current, except during the latter part of May, June, and July, when the trade winds are strongest through the West India Islands ; the wind is then off shore at the southern part of the track mentioned, and easterly, and passages along shore to the south-east are not easily accomplished. With the exception of the time last named, when ships are bound from Central America to California they must stand ont into the trade wind, run down the meridian, and then make northing.

Along the west coast of South America light southerly winds and northerly current prevail, therefore ships bound south from Central America should stand well out from the land. On the southern part of Chili south-west winds prevail. On the west side of North America, beyond the tropic, westerly winds are most frequent, as in a similar belt across the Atlantic.

Ships bound to the East Indies will find, after rounding the Cape of Good Hope, the south-west monsoon froin April till October giving them a fair wind and fine weather through the Mozambique to Bombay or Calcutta. The reverse is the case during the English winter months, that is, from October till April. In the Indian Ocean, as in the northern hemisphere, the most unsettled and stormy weather is about the time of each equinox, but more especially abont the end of September, when circular storms of incredible violence called typhoons are sometimes experienced. When south of the equator, ships should always receive them on the port side, or run with the wind on the port quarter, if there be sea room; if north of the equator, keep the wind on the starboard side, as described above.

Bad weather is frequent on the coast of Malabar during May, and in the Bay of Bengal during October. When running np the Bay of Bengal in May or June before a sonth-west gale, with heavy rain and falling barometer, there will be reason to fear being overtaken by the centre of a typhoon ; it will be advisable to heave to, or run to the eastward, till the barometer rises and weather improves.

In the Red Sea the wind is generally from the south, except dur- ing June, July, and August, when it is north, calm, or on shore by day, and off shore at night. ©

From the Cape of Good Hope to Australia and New Zealand ships have usually westerly winds and a favourable current, which is a good reason for returning to Europe by way of Cape Horn.

About 60 to 100 miles off the south-east extremity of Africa the Agulhas current sets to the westward, sometimes as much as 60 miles a day; its progress is not checked by a westerly gale, and con- sequently one of the most dangerous seas ever experienced is to be found there. About the year 1850, ships making long voyages were frequently navigated upon or approaching a great circle, which led the Australian ships into danger on account of the icebergs which were met in great numbers. In 1866 the Admiralty published ice-charts of the southern hemisphere for the guidance and warning of seamen. Every ship should be provided with wind and current charts for the sea to which she is going, and every officer should help to perfect these by means of careful observations. ;

When a ship is to leeward of her port, or a chase, it is advisable to work up on a direct line towards it, tacking as frequently as con- venient, as then all flaws and changes in the wind will be in her favour. By the contrary mode of action ships have been known to sail round an island, ¢.g., the Bermudas.

A useful graphic method has been devised for shaping a course which will intercept another ship with the least loss of time, or for shaping a course across a current the direction and velocity of which can be estimated (see fig. 28, which for use should be more than twice as large, with a circle for every mile).

1 For full description of circular storms, see Lieut.-Col. W. Reid, Law of Storms, 1850; Henry Piddington on Typhoons, Calcutta, 1840; and W. H. Rosser, The Law of Storms, &c., 1876,

°

j i |

Ez, 1.—A ship bore N.E. 13 miles, steering S.8.E. 10 knots. { then west, the boat will reach its

Being nearly on a wind, which was E. by N., she could not alter course from her pursuer without loss of speed; the pursuer being a steamship only able to go 94 knots, if he allows the chase to cross his bows she will escape.

Make a spot on the N.E. line, 13 miles from the centre, at A; place the parallel ruler to the course the chase is stecring, S.S.E., and, with the distance representing her speed (10 knots) in the compasses, mark where it will reach on that bearing, from the N.E. line to a position between the circles representing 94 knots,

Fig. 23.

which will be from ato 6. Then a line from the centre through 6 shows the course the pursuer must take, S.E. by E. 4E., which continued will cross the S.S.E. line from A in E, where the vesscls will meet. The distance and time of meeting may be measured on the diagram or calculated by trigonometry. The two ships will continue on the same relative bearings.

Ex. 2.—A point of destination bore W.S.W. 10 miles; a current tan 8. E. by S. 4 miles an hour; the boat can pull at the rate of 6 miles an hour. It is convenient to consider that the object is mov- ing in the opposite direction to the current and at the same speed. As the diagram is so small the proportionate speeds are doubled. Hight miles in the compasses will extend on a line parallel to S.E. by S. from the 12-mile circle at d to the W.S.W. bearing at f. A line from the centre through d@ will indicate the course to be stecred, W. by N.2N. From the point F on the 10 mile circle and 8.8. W. bearing, a line drawn N.W. by N. will cut the former line in D, the place the boat would have teached had there been no current, 16 miles from the centre, Occupying 2h 40m; while DF represents the space through which the water has passed = 104 miles in the same time. When adistant object can be seen in a line with the point steered for, and if the strength of the current be equal all the distance, the same bearing should be preserved. Asan example of crossing a river or channel where the tide will change at a

known time, we may take that part of the Bristol Channel where it is12 miles wide, fay north and south, and the tide runs 5 knots. Suppose the boat can only pull 5 knots. By leaving one shore at an hour and twelve minutes before high water, and steering directly north or south during 2h 24m, regardless of first being carried east and

NAVIGATION LAWS. These laws are a branch rather of municipal law than of the general maritime law (for which see Sra Laws). They are based upon the right of a state to regulate the navigation of its own waters and to protect its own commerce, and may be divided into two classes,

The first class includes all those laws, once so numerous, designed to secure a commercial monopoly to the state

destination, having passed through 12 miles of water only.

Though so much has been done to increase the efficiency of ships, In point both of size and of equipment, a sea voyage is still attended with considerable peril, both by stranding and collision. In the year ending April 1882 there were 4367 vesscls damaged, including 606 total wrecks, with the loss of 1097 lives, round the coast of Great Britain alone. The number entering or leaving British ports during the same period was 676,358, of 139,443,790 tons burthen. The number of vessels at the same time above 50 tons under the English flag was over 22,000. Ships on long voyages were formerly content to make good one degree a day; now steamships occasion – ally run 400 miles in one day. In September 1883 the ‘ Alaska” (Guion Line) made the voyage from Queenstown to New York insix days twenty-one and three-quarter hours, and returned insix days twenty-one hours. During the same month the ‘‘ Oregon” made 20 knots an hour during her trial trip on the Clyde. The “ Ionic” (White Star Line) arrived at Plymouth August 4, 1883, from New Zealand, through the Straits of Magellan, in forty-five days, includ- ing stoppages for coal. Her passage out, round the Cape of Good Hope, was performed in forty-three days. This voyage round the world is the quickest yet accomplished, having occupicd less than eighty-eight days at sea. In May 1888 the ‘‘ British King” returned from

performing a similar voyage, and discharging or receiving 6000 tons of cargo, in less than four months.

Of late years, with the hope of diminishing the number of collisions, an international code of regulations has been drawn up by the Board of Trade and Admiralty, under the authority of the privy council, and sauctioned by nearly all maritime nations. The following is an abridgment of the law as now in force:—

Art. 1. Every ship under sail only is eonsidered a suiling ship, but if any steam be used she is a steamship.

Art. 2. The lights hereafter mentioned, and none other, shall be earried from sunset to sunrise,

Art.3, A steamship under way shall earry a bright white light before the mast at least 20 feet above the deck, a green light on the starboard side, and a red light on the port side.

Art. 4. A steamship towing anything shall earry an extra bright light before the mast, é.e., two vertical lights.

Art. 5, A telegraph cable ship at work, or others not able to steer, to carry three red lights vertically, and by day three balls. Side lights with the above, only when making way through the water.

Art. 6. Sailing ship under way, or being towed, the green light on starboard side, and red on port side only.

Art. 7. Small vessels may earry portable lights similar to the above,

Art. 8. All ships at anchor shall earry a white light, not exceeding 20 feet above the deek.

Art. 9. Pilot vessels to earry a white light at the mast head only, and a flare-up every fifteen minutes.

In lieu of Art. 10. Open fishing boats or other open boats may earry one lantern, green one side and redthe other. Sneh boats when at anchor or fast

to nets to exhibit a bright white light.

Art. 12. Steamships must be provided with an efficient steam whistle, fog-horn, and bell; sailing ships with the last two. Turkish ships to earry a drum instead of a bell.

a. In fog, mist, or snow, by day or night, a steamship must make every two minutes or less a prolonged blast.

6. A sailing ship at similar intervals with fog-horn to make one blast on starboard tack, two on the port taek, and three if the wind be abait the the beam.

c, All ships at anehor in a fog, &e., shall ring a bell every two minutes or less.

Art. 13. Every ship in fog, &e., to “ go at a moderate speed.”

Art. 14. a, A ship running free shall make way for one whieh is close hauled.

6, Ships on the port tuek make way for those on the starboard taek.

c. Similarly if running free. :

d, When running free with the wind on the same side, the ship whieh is to windward shall keep out of the way.

e. A ship whieh has the wind aft shall keep out of the way of any other.

Art. 15, If two steamships are meeting nearly end on so as to involve risk, they shall botli alter eourse to starboard.

Art. 16. When two steamships are erossing, the one whieh has the other on her port side is to keep out of the way.

Art. 17, A steamship shall keep out of the way of a sailing ship.

Art. 18. Steamships shall slacken speed, stop, or reverse if necessary.

Art. 19. Optional signals by the steam whistle:—one short blast means, ‘‘T am altering eourse to starboard”; two short blasts, ‘‘I am going to port”; three short blasts, “I am going full speed astern.”

Art. 20. When one ship overtakes another, the faster ship is to keep out of the

way. Art. 21. In narrow ehannels ships shall keep on the starboard side. The books on navigation in general use are those of Norrie,

Inman (especially his tables), Riddle, Raper, Jeans, and Evers, and Harbord’s Glossary. (H. A. M.)

which enacted them. By laws of this kind trade with Goa was formerly confined to Portuguese subjects. In Great Britain the object was attained by the Navigation Acts, the earliest of which were the 5 Rich. II. stat. 1, c. 8, 14 Rich. II. c. 6, ordaining that no merchandise should be shipped out of the realm except in British ships on pain of forfeiture. The principal Navigation Act was the 12 Car. IL c. 18 (Scottish, 1661, c. 45). Up to 1854

coasting trade was wholly restricted to British ships, and a British ship must have been navigated by a master who was a British subject, and by a crew of whom a certain proportion must have been British subjects. The impolicy of such legislative restrictions, clearly shown by Adam Smith, was at last acknowledged by parliament, and since 1854 the only relics of such restrictions are to be found in the provisions of the 16 & 17 Vict. c. 107, § 324, by which, in order to secure reciprocity, prohibitions or restrictions may by order in council be imposed upon the ships of any country in which British ships are liable to similar prohibitions or restrictions. Subject to these exceptions, a foreign ship is in the same position as a British ship with regard to British trade. This right of foreign ships is expressly recognized by the Customs Law Consolidation Act, 1876; by § 141 of that Act foreign ships engaged in the coasting trade are not to be subject to higher rates than British ships. Any advantages which a British ship has, ¢.g., the right of claiming protection for her flag, the non-attachment to her of a maritime lien for necessaries supplied in a British port, are not directly con- nected

with the policy under which the Navigation Acts have become obsolete. These advantages are not secured toa British ship until she is registered. American law agrees with British in this respect. ‘‘The United States have imitated the policy of England and other commercial nations in conferring peculiar privileges upon American- built ships and owned by our own citizens. . . . The object of the Registry Acts is to encourage our own trade, navigation, and shipbuilding by granting peculiar or exclusive privileges of trade to the flag of the United States, and by prohibiting the communication of those im- munities to the shipping and mariners of other countries” (Kent, Comm., iti. 139). It may be noticed that an alien is generally incapable of becoming the owner of a ship. This incapacity is specially preserved in the case of British ships by the Naturalization Act, 1870.

The second class of navigation laws includes those which deal with the navigation of any waters over which a state has any control, and embraces all that is necessary for the due use of such waters, as rules of the road, management of harbours and lighthouses, and licensing and control of pilots. Such laws may deal with (1) the high seas, (2) tidal waters other than the high seas, (3) non-tidal waters.

1, The claims of various nations to dominion over parts of the high seas have now become matters of merely historical interest. Such claims have been at different times advanced by Great Britain, Holland, Spain, and Portugal, and were once sufficiently important to evoke the Mare Liberum of Grotius and the Mare Clausum of Selden. But, though such claims upon the high seas have long been relinquished, rules for the navigation of the high seas may still be promulgated by any Government. In Great Britain such rules have been made by order in council under the powers of the Merchant Shipping Act, 1862; the rules at present in force are those contained in the order of 14th August 1879. To these rules all the states of Europe except Turkey, and in America the United States, Chili, Brazil, and Ecuador, have assented, so that as far as the assenting states are concerned they are of universal validity. Japan and Turkey have assented to them with certain modifications. In the case of a state which has not assented to them, the only rules enforceable are the general rules of the sea, gradually ascertained by individual cases before courts of admiralty.

2. For the navigation of its tidal waters—so far as they are territorial—a state may legislate without the assent of other states. An example of such legislation is afforded by the Territorial Waters Jurisdiction Act, 1878, a measure passed in consequence of the celebrated case of the Queen

y. Keyn (the "Franconia" case) in 1876. Under the head of territorial waters would fall the "narrow seas" (as the Bristol Channel, Great Belt, or Straits of Messina), bays and harbours, estuaries and arms of the sea, navigable tidal rivers, and the sea for the distance of a marine league from the shore. Such waters being res publice, though not res communes as are the high seas, are prima facie subject to the jurisdiction of the state. In England the soil under such waters, or at least under all but the last kind, is prima facte vested in the crown, subject to the public rights of fishery and anchorage. For the distance of a marine league the crown has certainly jurisdiction for police and revenue purposes. This is a rule of general international law. In England the navigation of most of the principal tidal waters is governed by rules contained in Acts of Parliament and orders in council, the latter for the most part promulgated under the authority given by the Merchant Shipping Act, 1862. Thus the navigation of the Thames is governed by the order of 18th March 1880, of the Mersey by the Mersey Sea Channels Act, 1874, and the order of 5th January 1881, of the Tyne by the order of 12th December 1867, of the Tees by the order of 5th September 1870, of the Humber by the order of 23d December 1881, and of the dockyard ports by the order of 6th March 1868.

3. Non-tidal waters, even though navigable, are in Great Britain prima facie private waters, in which the right of navigation does not exist as a public franchise, but can only be acquired by prescription, founded on a presumed grant by an owner. In Roman law and in the Code Napoléon it is otherwise. Navigable rivers in those systems are always publict juris, whether tidal or non-tidal. Navigation of non-tidal waters in the United Kingdom, whether natural or artificial, is now almost entirely regu- lated by various Navigation and Conservancy Acts, e.g.,, the Thames Conservancy Acts, the Shannon, Trent, Lee, &c,, Navigation Acts, and the various Canal Acts. It may be noticed that the crown is empowered by the Merchant Shipping Act, 1862, to make rules for the navigation of inland waters, even when artificial, on the application of the proprietors. Examples of such rules are

the orders in council regulating the Mersey and Irwell navigation and the Bridgewater navigation, 18th May 1870. Such waters being private property, the application for the rules by the proprietors is recited in the order in council.

The distinction drawn in the United States between navigable and boatable rivers seems to be peculiar to that country, unless indeed it is analogous to the ‘‘fleuves et riviéres navigables ou flottables” of the Code Napoléon, § 538. It is at least unknown in Great Britain.

Remedies for Obstruction.—These may be either criminal or civil,—the criminal by indictment or information, the civil by action for damages or for an injunction, in addition to the criminal remedy, where’ special damage has been sustained. It seems to be a good defence that the obstruction was for the public benefit. This obviously leaves a considerable discretion in the hands of the court.

International Law.—The international law as to the navigation of the high seas has been sketched above. As to territorial waters, it is the general though not the universal opinion of jurists that the state to which the territorial waters belong has a right to forbid their navi- gation by foreigners. The free navigation of rivers has often been the subject of treaties, almost necessarily so where a river is the boundary between two states. In such a case, if a state were to maintain the strict letter of its rights, navigation would be almost impossible, as each state is proprietor down to the middle line of the bed of the river, the mediwm filum aque. By the treaty of Vienna in 1815 it was provided that the navigation of all rivers

separating or traversing the states that were parties thereto should be open for commercial purposes to the vessels of all nations, subject to a uniform system of police and tolls. The treaty of Paris, 1856, extended this principle to the Danube. In America the cases of the Mississippi and the St Lawrence are important. By the treaty of Versailles, 1783, it was provided that “‘the navigation of the Missis- sippi shall for ever remain free and open to the subjects of Great Britain and the citizens of the United States.” But the United States afterwards acquired Louisiana and Florida; and, the

stipulation as to British subjects not being renewed in the treaty of Ghent, 1814, the United States maintain that the right of navigating the Mississippi is vested exclusively in their citizens. As to the St Lawrence, after disputes for a long period between Great Britain and the United States, the right of free navigation for purposes of commerce was secured to the United States by the treaty of Washington, 1871. There are some waters, such as the Bosphorus and the Suez Canal, which are subject to peculiar engagements by treaty or agreement. But asa rule it may be said that in time of peace the territorial waters of a state are open to foreigners for commercial purposes, subject to observance of any rules as to police, pilotage, &c., imposed by thestate. For instance, a system of compulsory pilotage is in existence in many ports, and a vessel refusing to conform to the pilotage regulations might incur serious liabilities. Most of the general law of England on this subject is contained in Part V. of the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854. Tolls may be imposed by the state upon foreigners. This right is expressly recog-nized in most commercial treaties. A notable instance was the claim of Denmark to charge what were called the "Sound dues" from all vessels passing Elsinore, though the Sound was not strictly her territorial water. The right was not universally recognized, though it had prescription in its favour, and was invariably paid. In 1857 the dues were abolished, and compensation paid to Denmark for the loss of her alleged right. (J. w.t)

NAVIGATORS' ISLANDS, or Samoa, a group in the southern Pacific, 420 miles north-east of the Fiji Islands, lying between 13° 30' and 14° 20'S. lat., and between 169° and 173° W. long. It numbers in all thirteen islands, but most of these are little more than barren rocks, and

NA

'ae beginnings of the British navy may be traced back |

to the long-continued struggle of Alfred and his suc- cessors with Danish invaders and pirates. Alfred has been called the first English admiral, as he was, it is supposed, the first English sovereign who commanded his own fleet In battle ; and it was still to check these marauders, and protect the coasts of the kingdom, that William I., in 1066, established the Cinque Ports, and gave them certain privileges, on condition of their furnishing 52 ships, with 24 men in each, for fifteen days, in cases of emergency. We

should not, perhaps, be far amiss in dating the period of English naval architecture from the Conquest; but there is little to record of the navy till the period of the French wars. In these very numerous fleets were sometimes engaged. King John is said to have fitted out 500 ships in 1213 against Philip of France; and in 1293, in the reign of Edward L, a battle took place in mid Channel where both the French and English fleets met in force, and about 240 ships of the former were captured. In the reign of John a close approach was made to a regular naval establishment, and encouragement given to foreign commerce by a declaration of safe-conduct to all foreign merchants to pass to or repass from England.

three only—Sawaii (Pola), Upolu (Oyalava), and Tutuila (Mauna)—are large enough to be of any importance. Sawaii (700 square miles) is almost entirely occupied by lofty and barren mountains. It has no rivers or streams, the water filtering away through the porous soil; and there is but one harbour. Upolu (550-square miles) is also mountainous, but it is well-wooded and fertile, and possesses several considerable streams. Apia, the chief town, lies at the head of an oval bay on the north coast. Since 1879 it has been under a municipality directed by the consuls of Germany, Great Britain, and the United States. Tutuila (55 square miles, 17 miles long and 5 broad) is almost cut in two by the harbour of Pago-pago (Pango-pango), one of the best in the South Pacific. In general character the island is like Upolu. The Samoans are physically a fine race of men, and those on Upolu are all nominally Christian ; but they discover a great lack of industry and perseverance. Both Upolu and to some extent Tutuila have attracted a considerable number of American and European (mostly German) capitalists, and a large portion of the land has passed into the hands of foreign residents (who number about three hundred). The bulk of the foreign trade belongs to the successors of the famous Hamburg firm of J. C. Godeffroy & Son. Cotton, cocoa-nuts, and breadfruit are cultivated for export, and maize, sugar, coffee, &c., for local consumption. Copra or cobra (z.e., dried cocoa-nuts) is the most important article of trade. In 1881 the planters had about 1800 labourers from the Line Islands, New Britain, New Hebrides, d&c., the Samoans being too independent to hire themselves out. A series of petty wars, continued with little intermission from 1868, has

greatly interfered with the prosperity of the native population, whose numbers have decreased from 56,600 in 1840 to 35,000 in 1872 and 30,000 in 1880.

The Samoan group are possibly the Baumann's Islands of the Dutchman Roggeveen (1722); but it was Bougainville who made them definitely known and who called them Iles des Navigateurs, owing to the skill with which the natives managed their canoes. At Asu or Massacre Bay La Pérouse lost two of his assistants—De Lamanon and De Langle—and a boat's crew. Christianity was introduced by John Williams in 1830.

See Meade, New Zealand and the South Sea Islands (1870), which has views of Pango-Pango and Apia; Dr Forbes in Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1877; Journal des Museums Godefroy, Hamburg,

1871-74.

VY

There cannot be any doubt that the earlier fleets com- prised many private ships pressed into the king's service. A fleet of Edward the Confessor in 1049 consisted partly of ''king's ships," partly of "' people's ships." In the Black Book of the Admiralty (which is a collection of sea-laws and customs drawn up for the use of the judge of the Court of Admiralty) it is provided that "in case a man be indicted that he hath broken the arrest of his ship, arrested for the king's service, and be thereof convicted by twelve men, he shall lose his ship unless he obtaineth pardon of the king or the high admiral." Richard I. at Grimsby expressly combated by an ordinance the notion that ships were not liable to be pressed ; and in a mandate of Sir Thomas Beaufort, admiral of England, Ireland, and Aquitania, temp. Hen. IV., are to be found instructions to his lieutenant of the North to arrest twenty-four vessels for service abroad, "'upon certain weighty matters." Orders were sent at the same time to press mariners for one of the king's barges.

In an action with the French fleet off the harbour of Sluys (1340), Edward IIL. is said to have slain 30,000 of the enemy, and to have taken 200 great ships, "in one of which only there were 400 dead bodies." All writers

agree in describing the battle as one of the most sanguin- ary and desperate sea-fights ever known. The same monarch, at the siege of Calais, is stated to have blockaded that port with 730 sail, having on board 14,956 mariners, 25 only of which were of the royal navy, bearing 419 mariners, or about 17 men each.

The earlier and middle parts of the reign of Edward III. were particularly famous for the power of the English fleet, and for the dread which it inspired. After a splendid victory over the Spanish fleet in 1350, the title of "king of the sea" was bestowed on the sovereign. Towards the end of that reign, however, naval as well as other affairs were neglected, the seas were left unguarded, the coasts were insulted, and acts of piracy were committed in English waters which a few years before had been impossible. Complaints were loud and frequent. The duke of Lancaster, Edward's brother, was charged with having misspent a sum of money granted to him for the guardianship of the seas, and the anger of the Commons, unable to vent itself upon him, expended itself in a successful impeachment of some of the king's ministers. In the next reign attempts were made to improve niatters ; but, notwithstanding the levies from the Cinque Ports and other towns, the. naval force in 1378 was insufficient to keep even English waters free from pirates, and it was due to the private exertions of John Philpot, a London merchant, who fitted out a squadron at his own expense, that John Mercer, a celebrated Scottish pirate, was captured and his career ended. Plymouth and Hastings were burned, Winchelsea was attacked, and two descents were made, with much damage, upon the Isle of Wight. In one of these descents the French possessed themselves of most of the island, but were finally driven to their ships by Sir Hugh Tyrrel, governor of Carisbrooke, and ''a spur of incredible sharp- ness." Return expeditions were made to French and Spanish towns by the English, who, however, acted rather in the privateer capacity of men who had to take the law into their own hands than as authorized warriors of the English king.

Naval affairs improved under Henry IV., and the reign of Henry V. was most glorious in maintaining the naval superiority over the fleets of France. [rom a letter of this sovereign to his lord chancellor, dated 12th August

1417, discovered by Samuel Lysons among the records in the Tower, and of which the following is a copy, it would appear that there was something like an established royal navy in his reign, independently of the shipping furnished by the Cinque Ports and the merchants, for the king's own use, on occasion of any particular expedition. The letter appears to have been written nine days after the surrender of the castle of Touque, near Honfleur, in Normandy, whence it is dated.

- Aw revérend pere en Diew 1 Evesque de Duresme tire Chanceller d Angleterre. ** By the Kyng—

‘‘ Worshipful fader yn God We sende you closed within this letter a cedule eonteyning the names of eertein Maistres for owr owne grete Shippes Carrakes Barges and Balyngers to the whiehe Maistres We have granted annuitees sueh as is appointed upon eehe of hem in the same Cedule to take yerely of owre grante while that us lust at owr Exehequer of Westm”. at the termes of Miechelmasse and Ester by even poreions. Wherefore We wol and charge yow that unto eehe of the said Maistres ye do make under owr grete seel beyng in yowre warde owr letters patentes severales in forme after th’ effect and pourport of owr said grante. Yeven under owr signet atte owr Castle of Touque the xij. day of August.”

Extract from the Schedule contained in the preceding Letter.

vj. li. xiijs. iiijd. La Grande Nief appelle The [or ‘“‘Jehu’’] dont John Wil- : liam est Maistre vj. li. xiijs. iiijd. La Trinate Royale dont Steph’ Thomas est Maistre

vj. Mariners pot la sauf garde deinz Hannill.

vj. Mariners.

NAVY

yj. li. xiijs. iiijd. La Holy Gost dont Jor- dan Brownyng est Maistre

yj. li, xiijs. iiijd. La Carrake appellee le Petre dont John Gerard est Maistre

vj. Mariners.

. Mariners.

<

vj. Mariners.

vj i.

; Andrewe dont John Thornyng est Maistr’

vj. li. xiijs. iiijd. La Carrak appellee le

Xpofre dont Tendrell est Maistr’

xlijs. iiijd. La Carrak appellee le

Marie dout William Rieheman est

Maistr’

xiijs. iiijd. La Carrak appellee le

Marie dont William Hethe est

Maistre

xiijs. iiijd, Tua Carrak appellee le}. ars

George dont John Mersh ne Maistr’ 7

vj. Mariners.

yj. li. vj. Mariners.

J

J

J

vj. Mariners.

J

J

yj. li ; J

Marinezs.

xiijs. ilijd. La Carrak appellee le } | bs

Nap it

The remainder, to the masters of which pensions were thus granted, consist of 17 ‘“niefs, barges, and ballyn- gers,” some with three, and others two mariners only. But history informs us that about this time Henry embarked an army of 25,000 men at Dover’on board of 1500 sail of ships, two of which carried purple sails, embroidered with the arms of England and France,—one

styled the “ King’s Chamber,” the other his ‘ Saloon,” as

typical of his keeping his court at sea, which he considered |

as a part of his dominions. | The general orders for the admiral of a fleet, contained

in the Black Book of the Admiralty, lay it down that “the

admirall ought by his office to elect and order for the king’s person, if he be present, otherwise for his lieutenant, the best and most able shipp of the kingdome, which shall be called the chamber of the king or of his heutenant; and if the king be present then the Comptroller of his household is to make choice of some of the best shipps of the whole ffleete (that is to say) one shipp for the Hall, another for the Wardrobe, the third for the Larder, and the fourth for the Kitchen.” Froissart, writing of the battle of

L'Espagnols sur Mer, in 1350, speaks of a ship called "la Salle du Roi, ot tous ses hétels étoient." It would . appear from a very curious poem,! written in the early

part of the reign of Henry VI. (between 1426 and 1438),

that the navy of his predecessor was considerable, but that,

by neglect, it was then reduced to the same state in which

it had been during the preceding reigns.

Shortly after the time when this poem must have been | written, it appears from the parliament roll (20th Henry VI., 1442) that an armed naval force, consisting only of eight large ships, with smaller vessels to attend them, was to be collected from the ports of London, Bristol, Dart- mouth, Hull, Newcastle, Winchelsea, Plymouth, Falmouth, &e. ; and, of course, the royal ships of 1417, the names of which are contained in the foregoing schedule, were then either gone to decay or dispersed. We are not to judge of the size of the ships from the few mariners appointed to each. These were merely the ship-keepers, or harbour- duty men, placed on permanent pay, to keep the ships im a condition fit for sea when wanted.

The classes of ships and vessels mentioned in the records of what may be called the first period of the British navy are very numerous, varying with the use for which they were designed. Thus there were "cogs," oF large, swift vessels, sometimes of 250 tons, carrying 130 seamen besides archers and soldiers; "barges," oF small cogs, which carried 60 to 80 men; "balingers," oF boats resembling modern barges; "caraks," large vessels, chiefly used in Continental navies; "crayers," transport

1 "The English Policie, exhorting all England to keep the Sea, and namely the Narrow Sea; showing what profit cometh thereof, and also what worship and salvation to England and to all Englishmen"; it 18 printed in the first volume of Hakluyt's Collection of Voyages.

vessels, seldom over 60 tons; ‘‘doggers and lodeships,” fishing and pilot boats, with 30 nien, which were occa- sionally impressed into the king’s service; “fluves,” two- masted vessels, used for conveyance of troops (Edward III. commanded the burgesses of Kingston-upon-Hull to build him a “fluve”); “galleys” and “ galiots”; ‘ hoc- boats,” cargo or store ships. There were also “lynes,” “nersouers,” and “ pikards,” or large boats. ‘* Pinnaces,” with 35 men, figured at Sluys, and at the battle of L’Espagnols sur Mer in 1350; and in 1339 two “espi- naces” were given to Sir Richard Talbot for the defence of Southampton.

It is very probable that, until English merchants engaged in the Mediterranean trade, and the attention of the Govern- ment was turned, in the reign of Henry VII. (about 1496), to imitate Portugal in making foreign discovery, under the skilful seaman Sebastian Cabot, very little was added to the capacity or the power of British ships of war. In his reign was built a ship called the “Great Harry,” the first on record that deserved the name of a ship of war, if it was not the first exclusively appropriated to the service of the state. This is the ship which Camden called the “Henry Grace de Dieu,” but erroneously,—the vessel so named not having been built till the reign of Henry VIII. The “Great Harry” is stated to have cost £14,000; there is reason to suppose that she was renamed the “ Regent” on the accession of Henry VIII.

We now come to that period in which England might be truly said to possess a military marine. Some curious details have been preserved in the Pepysian collection at Magdalene College, Cambridge, from which papers it appears that in the thirteenth year of Henry VIII. the following constituted the royal navy :—

Tons Tons. Henry Grace de Dieu……. TIS OU! || SON OUCNET, «. cooepaancsoekeoses ane 800 fEbricl Royal……..6…..00 650 | Catherine Forteleza,..... 550 Se 600 | John Baptist …..... pope 400 eee eee eec cee eeeees 400 | Great Nicholas……. 400 Bee GLOTLC «0… see ec cee ZOO) || June? VAS. ceecasdoaencn6s oe 240 Henry Hampton……. W2Z0 | Great Wate ..c..cncccacven sa 250 mete Great Galley……. BOO | Meee Mey. sis ccevncsvedeess 180

There were besides two row-barges of 60 tons each, making in all 16 ships and vessels, measuring 7260 tons.

The “Henry Grace de Dieu” is stated in all other accounts, and with more probability, to have been only 1000 tons! This ship, the better-known “Great Harry,” appears to have been begun at Erith, in August or September 1512, to replace the “Regent,” which was burned in the former month in action with the French fleet, when carrying the flag of the lord high admiral. There is a drawing of the ship in the Pepysian papers. Nrom these papers it appears that she carried fourteen guns on the lower deck, twelve on the main deck, eighteen on the quarter-deck and poop, eighteen on the lofty forecastle, and ten in her stern-ports, making alto- gether seventy-two guns. Her regular establishment of men is said to have consisted of 349 soldiers, 301 Marmers, and 50 gunners, making altogether 700 men. The war ships of this period were awkward to manceuvre : on the appearance of the French fleet at St Helens, the

Great Harry,” the first ship built with two decks, had nearly been sunk; and the “ Mary Rose,” of 600 tons, with 500 or 600 men on board, was actually sunk at Spithead, as Raleigh informs us, in consequence of “a little Sway in casting the ship about, her ports being within 16 inches of the water.” On this occasion the fleets cannonaded each other for two hours; and it is remarked as something extraordinary that not less than three hundred cannon-shot were fired on both sides in the course of this

The rules for the measurement of tonnage were probably very linperfect,

action. From the drawings still extant it is quite surpris- ing how the vessels could be trusted on the sea at all, their enormous poops and forecastles making them appear loftier and more awkward than the large Chinese junks, to which, indeed, they bear a strong resemblance.

Henry VIII. may justly be said to have laid the founda- tion of the British navy as a permanent or standing force, He established the dockyards at Deptford, Woolwich, and Portsmouth; he appointed certain commissioners to superintend the civil affairs of the navy, and settled the rank and pay of

admirals, vice-adnirals, and inferior officers, thus creating a national navy, and raising the officers to a separate and distinct profession. The prin- cipal officers of the navy then were—the vice-admiral of England, master of the ordnance, surveyor of the marine causes, treasurer, comptroller, general surveyor of the victualling, clerk of the ships, and clerk of the stores. Each of these officers had his particular duties, but they met at their office on Tower Hill once a week, to consult, and make their reports to the lord high admiral. Henry also established the fraternities or guilds of the Trinity House at Deptford, Hull, and Newcastle for the improve- ment of navigation and the encouragement of commerce, and built the castles of Deal, Walmer, Sandgate, Hurst Castle, &c., for the protection of his fleet and of the coast.

At the death of Henry VIII. in 1547, the royal navy consisted of about 50 ships and vessels of different sizes, the former from 1000 to 150 tons, and the latter down to 20 tons, making in the whole about 12,000 tons, and manned by about 8000 mariners, soldiers, gunners, &c. Thus, as has been well said, “everything was leading up to a time when the perils of the seas should claim all that was most heroic in England’s most heroic age.” In the short reign of his son Edward little alteration seems to have taken place in the state and condition of the royal navy. But the regulations which had been made in the reign of his father for the civil government of naval affairs were revised, arranged, and turned into ordinances, which form the basis of all the subsequent instructions given to the commissioners for the management of the civil affairs of the navy. In the reign of Mary the tonnage of the navy was reduced to about 7000 tons; but her lord high admiral nobly maintained the title assumed by England of Sovereign of the Seas, by compelling Philip of Spain to strike his flag that was flying at the main-top-mast head, though on his way to England to marry Queen Mary, by firing a shot at the Spanish admiral. He also demanded that the whole fleet, consisting of 160 sail, should strike their colours and lower their top-sails, as a homage to the English flag, before he would permit his own squadron to salute the Spanish monarch.

Elizabeth not only increased the numerical force of the regular navy, but established many wise regulations for its preservation, and for securing adequate supplies of timber and other naval stores. She placed her naval

officers on a more respectable footing, and encouraged foreign trade and geographical discovery, so that she acquired justly the title of the Restorer of Naval Power, and Sovereign of the Northern Seas. The greatest naval force that had till then been called together was that which was assembled to oppose the Invincible Armada, and which, according to the notes of Pepys, consisted of 176 ships, with 14,992 men, but these were not all "Shippes Royall," but consisted largely of the contributions of the Cinque Ports and private persons. The number actually belonging to the navy is stated by the commissioners of 1618 in their report (several manuscript copies of which exist) to have been 34 ships of 12,190 tons, carrying 6225 men. Sir Edward Coke (4 Inst. 50) "thinks it matter of boast that the royal navy of England then consisted of 33

ships" (Blackstone). At the end of Elizabeth's reign, however, the navy had greatly increased, the list in 1603 consisting of 42 ships of various descriptions, amounting to 17,000 tons, and manned with 8346 men. Of these, two were of the burden of 1000 tons each, three of 900 tons, and ten of from 600 to 800 tons.

James I. was not inattentive to his navy. He warmly patronized Phineas Pctt, to whom we undoubtedly owe the first essential improvements in the form and construction of ships. The cumbrous top-works were first got rid of under his superintendence. "In my owne time," says Raleigh, "the shape of our English ships hath been greatly bettered ; in extremity we carry our ordnance better than we were wont ; we have added crosse pillars in our royall shippes, to strengthen them; we have given longer floors to our shippes than in older times," &. In 1610 Pett laid down a ship named the " Prince Royal"; her burden was 1400 tons, her keel 114 feet, and she was armed with sixty-four pieces of great ordnance, " being in all respects," says Stowe, "the greatest and goodliest ship that was ever built in England."

The state of the navy at the king's death is variously given by different writers; but on this subject the memoranda left by Pepys are most likely to be correct. From them we learn that in 1618 certain commissioners were

appointed to examine into the state of the navy, and by their report it appears there were then only 39 ships and vessels, whose tonnage amounted to 14,700 tons; while in 1624, on the same authority, the number had decreased to 32 or 33, but the tonnage increased to about 19,400 tons. The commissioners had, in fact, recommended many of the small craft to be broken up or sold, and more ships of the higher rates to be kept up.

Charles I. added upwards of 20 sail to the navy, generally of the smaller kind; but one of them, built by Pett, was of a description, both as to form and dimensions, far superior to any that had yet been launched. This ship was the celebrated "Sovereign of the Seas," launched at Woolwich in 1637. The length of her keel was 128 feet, the main breadth 48 feet, and the length from stem to stern 232 feet. In the description of this ship by Thomas Heywood it is said that she "bore five lanthorns, the biggest of which would hold ten persons upright; had three flush-decks, a forecastle, half-deck, quarter-deck, and round-house. Her lower tier had thirty ports for cannon and demi-cannon; middle tier, thirty for culverins and demi-culverins ; third tier, twenty-six for other ordnance ;

forecastle, twelve ; and two half-decks, thirteen or fourteen °

ports more within board, for murthering pieces ; besides ten pieces of chace ordnance forward, and ten right aft, and many loopholes in the cabins for musquet shot. She had eleven anchors, one of 4400 tb weight. She was of the burden of 1637 tons." It appears, however, that she was found, on trial, to be too high for a good service- able ship in all weathers, and was therefore cut down to a deck less. After this she became an excellent ship, and was in almost all the great actions with the Dutch; she was rebuilt in 1684, when the name was changed to that of 'Royal Sovereign," and was about to be rebuilt a second time at Chatham in 1696 when she was totally destroyed by fire. In this reign the ships of the navy were first classed, or divided into six rates, the first being from 100 to 60 guns, the second from 54 to 36, &e.

In 1642 the management of the navy was taken out of the king's hands, and in 1648 Prince Rupert carried away twenty-five ships, none of which ever returned ; and such, indeed, was the reduced state of the establishment that at the beginning of Cromwell's government he had only fourteen ships of

war of two decks, and some of these carried only 40 guns; but, under the careful management

NA WY

of very able men in different commissions which he appointed, such vigorous measures were pursued that, in five years, though engaged within that time in war with the greatest naval power in Europe, the fleet was increased to 150 sail (of which more than a third part had two decks, and many had been captured from the Dutch), while up- wards of 20,000 seamen were employed in the navy. The niilitary marine was, indeed, raised by Cromwell to a height which it had never before reached.

Though Cromwell found the navy divided into six rates or classes, it was under his government that these ratings were defined and established in the manner nearly in which they were till the middle of the present century; and it may also be remarked, that under his government were constructed a large number of frigates, or vessels designed specially for speed and having a peculiar sharpness of form. The first built in England was the ‘“ Constant Warwick.” “She was built,” says Pepys, “‘in 1640, by Mr Peter Pett (son of Phineas), for a privateer for the earl of Warwick, and was sold by him to the state. Mr Pett took his model of this ship from a French frigate which he had seen in the Thames.”

We know comparatively little about ships’ armaments up to this period. It appears, however, that they were furnished about the year 1337 with espringalds, haubergeons, bacinets, bows, arrows, jacks, doublets, targets, pavises (or large shields placed at the side, and serving the double purpose of protection against the sea and the enemy), lances, and ‘“‘ firing barrels.” It also appears that as early as 1338 cannon formed part of the armament of ships, and that about 1372 guns and gunpowder were commonly used. Among the stores belonging to the ‘‘ Christopher of the Tower” in June 1338 were three iron cannon with five chambers, a hand gun, and three old stone bags, probably for shot. The ‘‘ Mary of the Tower” had an iron cannon with two chambers, and one of brass with one chamber. The precise character and description of the earlicr guns are difficult to be found, but among the ‘‘crakys of war”? mentioned as most used on board ship are ‘‘ cannon-paviors,” or stone-shot throwers, and ‘‘murtherers,’” which were

smaller and threw any kind of shot. There were also in the first period of naval history basilisks, port pieces, stock-fowlers, sakers, and bom- bards. The last-named were large instruments of hammered iron, made of bars welded and bound together with iron bands. They threw stone shot of 140 Ib, and even of 195 Ib weight. A battery of these erected on a slip of land at the naval battle of Chioggia (1380), between the Venetians and the Genoese, did great damage. They were loaded over night and fired in the morning—one dis- charge per diem being considered enough for the gun, if not for the enemy. Froissart mentions a bombard at the siege of Oudenarde by Philip van Artevelde, that ‘“‘might be heard five leagues off in the daytime, and ten at night. The report of it was so loud that it seemed as if all the devils in hell had broken loose.” According to Lord Herbert, brass ordnance were first cast in England in the year 1535. They had various names, such as cannon, demi-cannon, culvcrins, demi-culverins, sakers, mynions, falcons, falconets, &e. What the calibre of each of these was is not accurately known, but the cannon are supposed to have been about 60-pounders, the demi-cannon 82, culverins 18, faleons 2, mynions 4, sakers 5, &e. Many of these pieces of different calibres were mounted on the same deck, which must have occasioned great confusion in action in finding for each its proper shot.

On the restoration of Charles IT. the duke of York was immediately appointed lord high admiral, and by his advice a committee was named to consider a plan, proposed by himself, for the future regulation of the affairs of the navy, at which the duke presided. By the advice and able assistance of Pepys as a principal officer of the navy, great progress was speedily made in the reparation and increase of the fleet. The duke remained lord high admiral till 1673, when, in consequence of the test required by parliament, to which he could not submit, he resigned, and that office was in part put in commission, and the rest retained by the king. Prince Rupert was put at the head of this commission, and Pepys appointed secretary of the Admiralty. By his able and judicious management there were in sea-pay, in the year 1679, and in excellent condi- tion, 76 ships of the line, all furnished with stores for six months, 8 fire-ships besides a numerous train of ketches,

smacks, yachts, &c., with more than 12,000 seamen ; and also 30 new ships building, and a good supply of stores in the dockyards. But this flourishing condition of the navy did not last long. In consequence of the dissipation of the king, and his pecuniary difficulties, he neglected the navy on account of the expenses; the duke was sent abroad, and Pepys to the Tower.

The first act on the duke's return was the reappoint- ment of Pepys as secretary of the Admiralty. In 1686, finding the principal officers unequal to the dutics required of them, he appointed a special commission to restore the navy to its former strength and Condition. Sir Anthony Deane, the most experienced of the shipbuilders then in England, was joined with the commissioncrs. He is said to have introduced important improvements in ships of the line, his model being the "Superbe," a French ship of 74 guns, from which he built the "Harwich" in 1664. Others, however, are of opinion that no advance was made on the model of the "Sovereign of the Seas" after she was cut down. The commissioners undertook, in three years, to complete the repair of the fleet, and furnish the dockyards with a proper supply of stores, on an estimate of £400,000 a year, to be issued in weekly payments; and in two years and a half they finished their task to the satisfaction of the king and the whole nation, 108 sail of the line being repaired and under repair, besides smaller vessels. At the time of the king's abdication, the list of the navy amounted to 173 sail, of 101,892 tons, carrying 6930 guns and 42,000 seamen.

The naval regulations were wisely left unaltered at the Revolution, and the business of the Admiralty continued to be carried on for a short time, under the immediate direction of King William, by Pepys, till the arrival of Admiral Herbert and Captain Russell from the fleet, into Whose hands, he says, "he silently let it fall." Upon the general principles of that system, thus established with his aid by the duke of York, the civil government of the British navy has been carried on ever since.

In the second year of William ITI. (1690), no less than 27 ships were ordered to be built, of 60 and 80 guns each; and in 1697 the king, in his speech to parliament, stated that the naval force of the kingdom was increased to nearly double what he found it at his acccs- sion. It was now partly composcd of various classes of French ships which had been

captured in the course of the war, amounting in number to more than 60, and in guns to 2300,—the losses by storms and captures being about half the tonnage and half the guns acquired, At the commencement of William's reign, the navy, as already stated, consisted of 173 ships, measuring 101,892 tons; at his death it had been extended to 272 ships, ee

- Up to this time merchantmen, hired and armed, but commanded by officers of the navy, formed more or less a part of every fleet sent out, Now, however, the navy became independent for fighting pur- Poses, while the development of commerce and colonial trade made

the establishment of a system of convoys and cruisers an absolute necessity,

measuring 159,020 tons, being an increase of more than one-half both in number and in tonnage. The ships of the line numbered then 130, and this continued to be the average number till the middle of the 18th century.

The accession of Queen Anne was immediately followed by a war with France and Spain, and in the second year of her reign she had the misfortune to lose no less than 13 of her ships by one of the most tremendous storms that was ever known; but every energy was used to repair this national calamity. In the course of this war there were taken or destroyed about 50 ships of war, mounting 3000 cannon; and about half that number were lost. At. the death of the queen, in 1714, the list of the navy was reduced in number to 247 ships, measuring 167,219 tons, being an increase in tonnage of 8199 tons.

George I. left the navy pretty nearly in the state in which he found it. At his death, in 1727, the list con- sisted of 233 ships, measuring 170,862 tons, being a decrease in number of 14, but an increase in tonnage of 3643 tons.

George IT. was engaged in a war with Spain in 1739, in consequence of which the size of ships of the line ordered to be built was considerably enlarged. On the restora- tion of peace in 1748 it was found that England's naval strength had prodigiously increased. The loss bad been little or nothing, while the English had taken and de- stroyed 20 French and 15

Spanish sail of the line, besides smaller vessels. The war with France of 1756 added considerably to the list, so that at the king's decease in 1760 it consisted of 412 ships, measuring 321,104 tons.

In the short war of 1762, George III. added no less than 20 sail of the line to the navy. At the conclusion of the American war in 1782, the list of the navy was increased to 600 sail; and at the signing of the prelimin- aries in 1783 it amounted to 617 sail, measuring upwards of 500,000 tons, being an increase of 185 ships and 157,000 tons and upwards since the year 1762. At the peace of Amiens the list of the fleet amounted to upwards of 700 sail, of which 144 were of the line. The number taken from the enemy, or destroyed, amounted nearly to 600, of which 90 were of the line, including 50-gun ships, and upwards of 200 were frigates; the English loss amounted to about 60, of which 6 were of the line and 12 frigates.

The recommencement and long continuance of the revolutionary war, the glorious successes of England in naval actions, and the protection required for the extended commerce, of which, in fact, Britain might be said to enjoy a monopoly, and for the security of the numerous colonies, contributed to raise the British navy to a magni- tude to which the accumulated navies of the whole world bore but a small proportion. From 1808 to 1813 there were seldom less than from 100 to 106 sail of the line in commission, and from 130 to 160 frigates, and upwards of 200 sloops, besides bombs, gun-brigs, cutters, schooners, &c., amounting in the whole to about 500 sail of effective ships and vessels, to which may be added 500 more in the ordinary, and as prison, hospital, and receiving ships,— making at least 1000 pennants, and measuring from 800,000 to 900,000 tons. The commissioners appointed to inquire into the state and condition of the woods, forests, and land revenues of the crown state, in their report to parliament, in the year 1792, that, "at the accession of his majesty (George III.) to the throne, the tonnage of the royal navy was 321,104 tons, and at the end of the year 1788 it had risen to no less than 413,467 tons." In 1808 it had amounted to the enormous total of 800,000 tons, having nearly doubled itself in twenty years. It must not, however, be supposed that the effective navy consisted of more than half this amount of tonnage.

Steam ships of war.

Tron- clads.

284

Since the conclusion of the war with France, it would appear that at least one-half of the ships had been sold or broken up as unfit for service; and as, by the list of the navy at the beginning of the year 1821, the number of ships and vessels of every description, in commission, in ordinary, building, repairing, and ordered to be built, had been reduced to 609 sail, we may take the greatest extent of the tonnage at 500,000 tons; but the greater part, if not the whole, of this tonnage was efficient, and in a state of progressive efficiency.

According to the printed list of the 1st January 1821, the 609 sail of ships and vessels appear to be as under :—

1st rates, from 120 to 100 GUMS,.....6..seee ceeeee ences 23 Oy ee Ry BON sg coeccecceteseseesoetenns terres 16 gg.gp gs OE gp se tratetncncsneecre cen saneeane 90 (TIN MS a ye 0) Syme) SR Aeeeieccepaen enseoouonunde. i 20 ET aR ye 0S Gham 20 IAS nepceesronronadresenncncccocr: 107 Goa Se 2B yg) stn etese cre cesee sence eswere 40 Sloops —,, — DZ gg 10 yy ceveeseevescseeseranenaceeeees 136

making a total of 432; gun-brigs, cutters, schooners, tenders, bombs, troop-ships, store-ships, yachts, de.

In the year 1836 the total number of ships of war, including every description mentioned in the above list, amounted to about 560 sail; of which 95 were ships of the line in a state of efficiency for any service, or capable of being speedily put into a fit state for sea ; and many of them were of a very superior class to any employed in the war. In 1846 there were 671 ships, including every description ; and in 1857 there were on the list of the royal navy 735 ships, exclusive of those appropriated to harbour service, and of the coastguard cruisers, making a grand total of 888 ships and vessels of all classes.

Soon after the commencement of Queen Victoria's reign stcam began to assert its superiority over sail-power for the propulsion of ships of war. It has now to a great extent usurped the place of manual labour also in ships, and it has been the main cause of the revolution which has been effected in their type.

The paddle-wheel was first adopted as the means of utilizing the power of steam for propulsion. The first ship of war of any importance fitted with the paddle was the 46-gun frigate ‘‘ Penc- lope.” In 1843 she was cut in two, lengthened, and furnished with engines of 650 horse-power. A number of ships were also built expressly for the paddle, of which class the ‘‘Terrible,” a powerful, frigate-built ship of 21 guns and 800 horse-power, may be taken as a type. The “ Valorous” is almost the only remaining example of it in 1888, and she has been relegated to dockyard service.

The suecess of the screw, however, as a means of propulsion soon made it evident that this must be the system of the future for war- ships. By its use the whole motive power could be protectcd by being placed below the water-line. It interfered much less than the paddle with the efficiency and handiness of the vessel under sail alone, and it enabled ships to be kept generally under sail. Great importance was attached to this, as the handling- of a ship under sail was justly thought an invaluable means of training both officers and men in ready resource, prompt action, and self-reliance. For this reason masts and sails have been retained long after they were admitted to be detrimental to the fighting qualities of battle ships.

The screw was therefore eagerly adopted, and rapid progress was made in the conversion of ships into screw steamers,—some being cut in two and lengthened, others being razécd or having decks removed, while new ships were building, so that the Russian war, which broke out in 1854, found Great Britain in possession of a powerful steam fleet. Of this fleet the three-decker ‘‘Duke of Wellington,” of 700 horse-power (nominal) and 131 guns, the two- decker ‘‘ Agamemnon,” of 600 horse-power (nominal) and 91 guns, and the frigate ‘‘Shannon,” of 600 horse-power (nominal) and 51 guns, may be taken as the finest examples; a powerful flotilla of steam gunboats was built for the occasion. Henceforth ships propelled only by sail were obsolete for war purposes.

In this war mechanical mines or torpedoes were used by the Russians for the defence of their harbours, but with not much effect.

The advance of gunnery, and the disastrous effect of explosive shells, which were new weapons since the great naval wars of forty years before, operated to the disadvantage of ships with wooden walls. The filcets were unable to do much more than blockade, and it became necessary to furnish means by which they miglit also attack.

The French were the first to apply in a practical shape the idea (which appears to have originated in the United States) of reviving

the use of armour, and placing it on the sides of ships. They con- structed five floating batteries clad with 4§ inches of iron, on an oak backing 8 inches thick. Of these the first was the 'Ton- nante,"' mounting 16 guns. She was launched at Brest in March 1855, and was quickly followed by the others. Three of them took part in the bombardment of Kinburn in the Black Sea onthe 17th October following.

The British Admiralty at once put in hand similar vessels, and with such diligence that the " Erebus" and " Terror" arrived at Kinburn on the 24th October. They were hastily constructed for work in shallow water, and were difficult to manage; but the results were sufficiently satisfactory to inducc the French to convert a wooden line-of-battle ship on the stocks into a frigate armoured all over with 4inches of iron. She was launched at Toulon under the name of " La Gloire" in November 1859, and was of 5600 tons displacement and 800 horse-power (nominal).

In December 1858 a committee was appointed under the ad- ministration of Lord Derby, because the attention of the cabinet had been drawn to the very serious increase which had taken place of late years in the navy estimates, while, at the same time, it was represented that the naval force of the country was far inferior to what it ought to be with reference to that of other powers, and especially of France, and that increased efforts and increased expenditure were impcratively called for to place it on a proper footing. One of the main causcs assigned for a prospective increase was the

comparative state of preparation of France, in respect of powerful screw steamers, and the expenditure which had taken place and was still going on in her dockyards.

The committee, in its report, January 6, 1859, directed its remarks principally to the increase in the estimates of 1858 as compared with those of 1852, and omitted the disturbed period between those dates. They say that in 1852 the navy estimates were revised and increased, and measures taken to supply what were supposed to be deficiencies in former years, and to adapt the navy to the altered state of things occasioned by the application of the screw to ships of war. They remark that no one probably in the year 1852 could have anticipated the wonderful progress which a few years had exhibited, superseding practically the use of sailing vessels in the navy, and introducing the use of screw steamers of immense size and power, and involving a more than commensurate additional expense. The total amounts voted were—in 1852, £5,835,588, and in 1858, £8,851,371. They say, at the outbreak of the French revolutionary war England possessed 145 sail of the line, France 77. These comparative numbers were reduced in 1850 to—England 86, and France 45. ‘‘ At this latter period the effective strength of the two navies in line-of-battle ships exclu- sively, and almost exclusively in frigates, consisted of sailing vessels; but, the French having subsequently decided on, and nearly carried out, the conversion of all their sailing ships that were fit for it into steamships, as sailing vessels could not be opposed to steamships with any chance of success, the latter must now be considcred as the only ships really effective for the purposes of war, and the following is at present the relative strength of the two navies in steam line-of-battle ships and frigates, including ships building and converting ”:—

Line-of-battle

5 Frigates. December 1858, sip

English,} French, English. French.

Complete, hull and ma- Screw, 17) Screw, 15) GUINCLY weanieeesestesercsss< \ ~ a Paddle, 9 5 a Paddle,19 § a Receiving engines… B 3 Convertingn….s—)-- 500 (1 Dullcivigy Gavesesesossoocsecessess 6 8 0 BL 46

Iron-plated ships building.. 2006 4 ont

It is curious to observe what happened as a consequence of this report and the circumstances of the time. The committee did not recommend building an iron-plated line-of-battle ship or frigate, although the “ Warrior” was commenced a few months later. They recommended converting 19 sailing ships of the line into steamships of the line and steam frigates. Two years later there were 67 wooden steamships of war building and converting for the royal navy, and navy estimates had gone np to twelve millions and a half; unhappily all these wooden line-of-battle ships and frigates were soon found to be no real addition to the force of the navy, and many of them were not completed. The four iron-plated slips appearing so ominously at the foot of the French list had com- pletely changed the situation.

At this date iron had been gradually encroaching on wood as @ material for the hulls of British merchant ships. It was thought at one time to be unsuitable for war-ships on account of the irregular holes made by shot passing through it, and the difficulty of plugging them, but the use of armour tended to prevent shot, or at least shell, from passing through. Iron presented also the advantage of permitting the use of water-tight bulkheads. (The

Ny 2s ay a

system of subdivision has been largely developed within the last few ycars by the use of double bottoms and of longitudinal as well as transverse bulkheads, and has added much to the security of ships against perils of the sea or acts of the queen’s enemies.) By the use of iron the country was, moreover, relieved from all anxiety on the score of the supply of timber of suitable dimensions and uality.

q fie Admiralty therefore determined to build their first sea-going ironclad ship, the “ Warrior,” of iron, and the decision has been amply justified by the event. Her displacement was 9200 tons, and the indicated horse-power 5470. The central part of the ship was protected by 44-inch armour from the upper deck to 5 feet below the water-line,—the main deck battery being enclosed at its foremost and after ends by armoured transverse bulkheads. She cost, including engines, £357,000, and was able to withstand the fire, at

200 yards, of the heaviest gun of the day, the 68- pounder of 95 cwts. Her own armament consisted of thirty-six of these guns. She was similar in appearance to the frigates of her day, on a large scale. She was launched in December 1860.

Much discussion ensued as to the relative merits of the rival ships ‘‘LaGloire” and ‘‘ Warrior.” The latter was the faster ship, but her great length (3880 feet between perpendiculars) had made it desirable to leave 85 feet at each end entirely unprotected, and, as she had only a single propeller, the steering gear was necessarily by this arrangement exposed to shot. Her length also limited her power of manceuvring.

In the meantime the ‘‘ Black Prince,” a sister ship, had been built; the ‘‘Defence” and ‘‘ Resistance” soon followed on a smaller scale. In 1861 elevenironclads were ordered ; five of them were converted from wooden ships on the stocks, and these no longer appear in the Navy List. The ‘‘ Hector” and ‘‘ Valiant” followed the ‘‘ Warrior,” but the armour on the main deck extended further. In the ‘‘ Achilles” the battery remained as in the “Warrior,” but the armour was extended as a belt, at the sugges- tion of Mr Reed, all round the water-line. The ‘‘ Minotaur,” ‘‘ Agincourt,” and ‘‘ Northumberland” were armoured from end to end, the thickness being increased to 54inches. This additional armour, with the desired fineness of form, involved a length of 400 feet, and a displacement of 10,690 tons. They had five masts. Like the ‘‘ Warrior” they were unhandy, and were thought liable to fall a prey to smaller and nimbler antagonists. The belt type of the ‘‘ Achilles” has survived except where it has been replaced by submerged armoured decks, as in the ‘‘Shannon,” ‘‘ Nelson,” *Inflexible,” and following ships.

During this time the comparative impotence of artillery had suggested recourse to a weapon of the galleys of the Middle Ages. The ram was revived, the French again setting the example. England followed, without however at first making it so prominent a feature as the French. The weapon has since become general, or at least the bows are strengthened to stand the shock of ramming.

After the Russian war torpedoes and submarine mines and counter-mines, mechanical and electrical, attracted much attention. Schools were

established for the instruction of officers and men in their use. For the British navy, the “ Vernon” was set apart for this purpose. In 1871 the secret of the celebrated Whitehead fish torpedo was purchased by the Adiniralty. It has since been acquired by nearly all foreign nations. It was designed to attack ships below water, since their batteries were deemed practically Tuvulnerable. At first it was only arranged to project the tor- pedoes from a submerged tube in the line of keel ahead, but it was found that they could be effectively projected from the broadside above water, and this plan has been extensively adopted. The Whitehead torpedo is projected by means of an impulse of com- pressed air or steam, and is propelled through the water by means of a screw and pair of engines actuated by compressed air, carried within it. The head carries the explosive, which is fired on con- tact, and a secret chamber contains the mechanism regulating the depth below the surface at which it is to travel. It now forms part of the armament of most war-ships.

Fast screw torpedo boats to use the Whitehead or the spar torpedo were introduced by Mr Thornycroft of Chiswick, and they Were at once aequired or copied by all foreign powers.

The superiority of the defence duc to armour was short-lived. Apart from the introduction of new weapons for attack, the artillery continued to advance in power and weight.

With the rivalry between guns and armour sprang up designs for the best mode of defence combined with the most powerful Means of attack. Captain Coles advocated for masted ships the turret system, and Mr Reed (now Sir Edward Reed) the broadside system, each striving to give the utmost protection armour could afford to the battery and other vital parts, whilst enabling the

argest guns to be worked safely under these defences. The broad- side system armoured the battery and the water-line, whilst the

sides and upper portions of the ships remained much as in the older frigates. The turrct aimed at lower sides as offering less target to the enemy, whilst a

deadly fighting power had all-round sway from behind armoured cover. In 1862 the "' Enterprise," *'Favourite,"' and ''Research" were adapted to Mr Reed's prin- ciple,—the belt and battery,—upon which also, with the addition of indented ports at the corners of the battery to give a wider range of fire, were built the '' Pallas," '' Penelope," '' Bellerophon," and **Hercules." In the ''Sultan" an upper deck battery was added with four guns. On the ''Sultan" pattern the '' Audacious' and several other vessels were built. As the guns increased in size, the batteries decreased and the guns became fewer, but the belt remained.

In 1862 also the first turret ship was produced in the shape of Turret the ''Royal Sovereign," a three-decker cut down and converted ; ships.

the ''Prince Albert," built of iron, followed. Both these ships were without sail-power, and calculated for coast defence only.

The ''Monarch," ordered in 1865, was designed as a sea-going rigged turret ship, having 7-inch armour, a free-board of 14 feet, and an armament of four 25-ton guns in two turrets plated with 10- and 8-inch armour. Then came the ''Captain"—a ship de- signed by Captain Coles and Messrs Laird in rivalry of the '*Monarch,"" and built by Messrs Laird at Birkenhead in 1869. She was intended to combine the low freeboard of the ' Royal Sovereign " with the qualities of a sailing frigate ; and for a time she was thought to give promise of such a combination. The calamity of her capsizing, on the night of the 6th of September 1870, with 500 men, of whom only 18 were saved, will not be for- gotten while the annals of the navy are preserved.

At this date (1870) a sea-going mastless turret ship type had been devised under the administration of Mr Childers, and there were three such ships building, the '' Devastation," '' Thunderer," and '' Fury," designed by Mr Reed for service as battle ships at sea. They were, after the loss of the '' Captain," strongly condemned by anticipation by most eminent naval men. But their design has since been fully approved by experience.

The important questions arising out of these changes in types Com- of ships, and especially as to the '' Devastation " class, were dis- mittee cussed in 1871 by a very distinguished committce, known as the on

Committee on Designs, They said in their report :—

‘* A perfect ship of war is a desideratum which has never yet been attained, and is now further than evcr removed from our reach. Any near approach to perfection in one dircction inevitably brings with it disadvantages in another. From the time when ships of war first carried artillery, and were thus cunverted from mere vehicles for the transport of armed men into engines of war, naval architects have been compelled, in designing them, to content themselves with a more or less satisfactory compromise. The difficulty, always great, of bringing into harmony the conflicting features which are desirable in a ship of war was much increased by the adoption of steam-power throughout the navy; the form of hull whicli was thought to be requisite for obtaining the best results undcr steam alone being very different from that most suitable for sailing. When to this was added the still more serious embarrassment arising from the intro- duction of armour-plating, the problem presented to naval architects became onc of extreme difficulty and complexity.

“For some time, indeed, after the necessity of using armour-plating had becn recognized, but before the penetrative power of artillery had reachcd its present stage of development, the question how to unite in one ship the powcr of sailing, steaming, and carrying both heavy guns and armour, although difficult, did not appear to be insoluble, and was met with remarkable ability, and a very large measure of success, by the constructive department of the navy. In the mean- timc, however, a rapid progressive increase in the power of artillery led to a corresponding augmeitation in the thickness and weight of the armour borne by ships, until the point had been reached at which it became impossible to com- bine in one vessel all the qualities which it is desirable a ship of war should possess, consistently with the attainment of a very high degree of efficiency in any of the more important of them.

“The necessity, in some cases at least, of altogether sacrificing some one desirable feature, in order that another may be secured in a higher degree than would otherwisc be possible, was recognized by their lordships when they adopted the design of the ‘ Devastation ‘ class, in which the power of sailing was entirely given up in favour of that of carrying thick armour and

very powerful guns, of moving under steam at a fair although not very high speed, and, finally, of carrying a sufficient quantity of coal to admit of voyages across the Atlantic being made without the aid of sails. Inthe 'Inconstant' class a compromise of a similar character, but in a different direction, had previously been sanctioned, the protection of armour being altogether abandoned in order to secure very high speed under steam, combined with as efficient sail-power as could be attained without interference with the essential feature of grcat specd under steam alone. Each of these types possesses valuable features which are totally wanting in the other. Each in our opinion mcets a part of the rcquirements of modern warfare, and must (subject to modification and improvement) continue to be represented in the British navy." .... ;

" After making every allowance for the disadvantages that attend the use of an enormous dead weight of very costly armour, which after all is not absolutely impenetrable to certain special guns, we cannot lose sight of the indisputable fact that in an action between an armour-clad and an unarmoured ship (assum- ing that they carry guns of equal power) the former has, and must have, an immense advantage in being able to penetrate the sides of her adversary at a distance at which she is herself impenetrable, and, further, in being able to use with effect those most destructive projectiles 'common' shells, which would fall harmless from her own armoured sides. Even assuming that absolute impene- trability to shot proves to be unattainable, it is still our opinion that the time has not come to throw off armour altogether, but that it is necessary that the first ranks of our ships of war should continue to carry armour of as great re- sisting power as possible.) '

"Before quitting this part of our subject, we desire to remark that, although, as before pointed out, there are serious difficulties in the way of increasing to any very material extent the thickness of armour applied in the usual manner to sea-going ships, viz., in the form of a complete belt round the ship, from stem to stern, at the water-line, besides loeal proteetion for guns, men, &e., it is not

by any means certain that some method may not be devised of securing the requisite reserve of buoyancy by other mcans than armour-plating, Were this accomplished, the area of the armour might be diminished, and its thickness increased in a corresponding degree. The ship would then comprise a very strongly plated central citadel, surrounded and supported by an unarmoured raft constructed on a cellular system, or containing some buoyant substance such as cork, which, without offering any material resistance to the passage of pro- jectiles, wonld not be deprived of its buoyancy by penctration." . ...

"At present we find ourselves compclicd to regard the attainment of a very high degree of offensive and defensive power united with real efficiency under sail as an insoluble problem; and we believe that onr transmarine possessions, and other important interests in distant parts of the world, will be more effi- ciently protected by the establishment, where requisite, of centres of naval power, from which vessels of the ' Devastation' class may operate, than by rely- ing upon cruising ships of such limited fighting power as the 'Monarch.' We think, however, that a class of vessel in many respects resembling the * Monarch, although much smaller and less costly, ought to form part of the British navy.

Nay Ye

loading guns in the turrets, and four 6-inch 4-ton guns on the superstructure. The ''Conqneror" is another steel ship, designed especially as a ram, having one turret for two 48-ton guns, and four 6-inch guns unprotected by armour.

The '' Collingwood," commenced in 1880, has a different arrange- Barbettp

ment. In the endeavour to increase the protection of the vital parts, and at the same time to increase the offensive power without going into extravagant dimensions, it was inevitable that the space to be covered should be reduced, and the armour concentrated, The guns being large, it was thought they would not suffer by being mounted ''en barbette," the loading being still done under cover. By these means the revolving turrets were got rid of, and the citadel was no longer required to protect the loading

apparatus. By placing the barbette towers some distance apart it First- In 1873 Italy was contemplating the construction of the ‘‘Duilio” | became possible to mount several broadside guns, not indeed class and ‘‘Dandolo,” large turret ships of the ‘‘ Devastation” type, | protected from the front, but sheltered from raking fire by an turret but intended to mount four very heavy guns which were being | armoured screen extending from the barbette towers to the ship’s ships. constructed by Sir William Armstrong & Co., to be protected by | sides. This then is the design of the ‘ Collingwood” class. The

armour 22 inches in thickness. It was necessary that England should not be behind, and the ‘‘ Inflexible”’ was laid down. She was to carry four 60-ton guns in two revolving turrets, similar to the ‘‘ Devastation,” except that, in order to obtain right-ahead fire of all four guns, and to meet the objections raised by naval officers and in parliament against the lowness of the npper deck of the ** Devastation” class, the turrets were placed ‘‘ en échelon,” the fore- most turret ou the port side and the after one on the starboard side, and a superstructure was erected between them along the centre of the ship. The belt also beyond the citadel was omitted, and a sub- merged armour deck, of 3 inches in thickness, replaced it at the ends. This deck descended forward and helped to strengthen the ram. The armour on the sides was to be 24 inches; before the ship was completed, however, compound armour had been intro- duced, which allowed the thickness on the turrets to be reduced to 16 inches. The total weight of armour was 3155 tons. To enable this great weight to be carried, to provide stability when injured, and to allow all the guns to fire in line of keel, the breadth, which had not before exceeded 60 feet in sea-going ships of war, was increased to 75 feet, the utmost which existing docks allowed, The length was 320 feet, and the displacement reached 11,880 tons. The horse-power was 8000, and this gave her, after she was launched in 1876, a speed of 143 knots, and when fully equipped at Malta 13°87 knots. She is rigged asa brig. This is, however, only an arrangement for peace time. In conseqnence of an important question having been raised in the press and in parliament as to her stability in the event of the unarmoured ends being badly damaged in action, a committee was appointed, who reported that ‘‘it cannot be said that the armoured citadel is invul- nerable, or that the unarmoured ends are indestructible, although the character of the risk they run is different. But in our opinion

the unprotected ends are as well able as the armoured citadel to bear the part assigned to them in encountering the various risks of naval warfare, and therefore we consider that a just balance has been maintained in the design, so that out of a given set of condi- tions a good result has been obtained."

It was subsequently laid down in parliament, by the responsible minister, as a guiding principle in such questions, that in a ship of war there should be the greatest possible offensive power, and the defensive arrangements should be such as to ensure her as far as possible, and in equal degrces, against all the various modes in which she may be disabled or destroyed. From this it would follow that it should not be in the power of the enemy to disable the ship by one single blow delivered by any means at his com- mand, if this could have been prevented by causing other defences, where he has not this power, to surrender a portion of their strength to succour the weak part.

Amplifying this principle, it may be said that there should be defence for the propelling power, for the steering power, and for the floating power against the gun, the ram, and the torpedo. To a very large extent the defence against the two last named must rest with the officer in command ; but to resist them he must retain command of speed and steering gear. He therefore requires that these and his floating power should be equally defended against the gun, which he cannotavoid. The avoidable weapons, the ram and the torpedo, are provided against in all ships, even in the

central belt, which rises but little above the water, has 18-inch compound armour, the barbette towers 12-inch, and the screen 6-inch, Communication is maintained by means of armoured vertical hollow cylinders between the towers and the protected part of the ship below, whence the supply of ammunition is derived. She will mount four 43-ton guns in the towers, six 4-ton guns in the broadside, and numerous lighter guns. The " Rodncy," '* Howe," '*Camperdown," ' Anson," and " Benbow" are similar to the " Collingwood," but they will carry 63-ton guns instead of 43-ton. Possibly the " Benbow" may have two exceeding 100 tons instead of the four 63-ton guns.

The cruising ironclads have also continued to advance. the ‘‘ Alexandra” was commenced, of the ‘‘ Sultan” type.

ahead, and two astern. She has thicker armonr than the “Sultan,” and a bulkhead was placed across the main battery, cutting off the two foremost guns from the rest. In the same year the ‘‘ Temeraire” was commenced. She differed from the ‘‘ Alexandra” in having barbette towers forward and aft, instead of the upper deck battery, the 25-ton guns mounted in them being made to descend, on being fired within the tower, for loading. The towers communicated with the protected part below by means of hollow armoured cylinders. She fires three heavy guns from her armoured batteries in line of keelahead. Then came the ‘‘Shannon,” a much smaller vessel, in which the water-line is protected by an armour belt to within 60 feet of the stem, whence a submerged armour deck extends forward; a bulkhead rises from the same point, which covers two guns firing ahead. ‘he remainder of the guns are unprotected, except from right-aliead fire. She was designed for an armoured cruiser, capable of engaging a second-class ironclad. The ‘‘Nelson” and ‘‘ Northampton” followed, but they have central belts and armoured decks at each end, and armour-covered guns for stern as well as bow fire, with cight broadside guns between.

In 1878, when Russia was threatening Constantinople, three ships then building in England were bought from the Ottoman Government,—the ‘‘ Belleisle” and ‘‘Orion,” belted ships with a central battery and a gun at each of the corners, and the “Superb,” broadside ironclad. At the same time the ‘‘ Neptune,” a masted turret ship like the ‘‘ Monarch,” building for Brazil, was bought.

The ‘‘ Impérieuse” and ‘‘ Warspite,” now building, of steel, are the latest type of ironclad cruisers. They are like the ‘‘ Nelson,” but with barbette towers of the French type forward and aft and amidships instead of the partial battery.

Recent ships are furnished with every appliance that modern science can devise to augment their efficiency and power. The turrets and the turn-tables of the barbctte ships are moved by hydraulic power; the guns are loaded and worked by the same power, and are fired by electricity if desired. Electricity is used to light the batteries and the ship generally, the old fighting lanthorn,

or indeed any other, being extinguished by the shock of discharge of modern artillery. The capstan, the steerage of the ship, the gun, the ram and torpedo, the pumps and ventilation, and electric light all require machinery in every direction, so that the ship has become a factory. A large proportion of the crew are relegated to the stokeholds, and but little is left that recalls the war-ship of our fathers.

In 1873 Cruising In this iron- vessel four powerful guns in the central batteries fire in line of keel clads.

‘*Inflexible,” far less than is the unavoidable weapon, the gun. The equality of defensive power in view of all three weapons is obtained by reckoning as part of the defence against the ram and the

The ‘‘Polyphemus” is the only other vessel to be here men- Expeti- tioned. She is hardly an ironclad ; she comes under the head of mental special ships, and is described in the Navy List as a double screw ships.

torpedo the skill and vigilance of the seaman.

The ‘‘ Ajax” and ‘‘ Agamemnon” were laid down in the year the ‘*Inflexible” was launched (1876). They are of the sanie type but smaller, carrying only 38-ton guns. Of this type also are the ‘‘ Colossus” and ‘‘ Edinburgh,” commenced in 1879, and now (1883) approaching completion. They are the same length as the ‘In- flexible,” but 7 feet narrower. As they are of later date than the ‘‘Iris” (the first war-vessel built entirely of steel), steel is employed almost entirely in their construction, and they have steel-faced armour, ‘They are to be armed with 43-ton brecch-

torpedo-ram of 2640 tons and 5500 horse-power. Her shape is cylindro-conical, of steel—the part above water being covered with 3 inches of steel. She is intended for ramming and to use the Whitehead torpedo. Her only other armament is the machine gun. These guns are mounted in revolving towers.

In this ship the first attempt was made in a sea-going vessel to use the locomotive boiler (working with fresh water) with closed stokeholes and forced draught. Mr Thornycroft and other torpedo- boat builders had used

one such boiler in boats with great succcss. As its weight was very considerably less than the ordinary type of

NA YY

boiler, the experiment seemed to be justified. Great difficulties were, however, found to attend the use of such boilers in numbers sufficient for a sea-going vessel, and while the experiments were in progress it was ascertained that, by using closed stokeholes and forced draught, the ordinary cylindrical marine boiler using salt water could be made as economical of weight as the locomotive type. The ordinary practice up to this date had required a total weight of machinery of about 4 ewt. for each indicated horse-power in a sea-going ship. The employment of foreed draught, and con- eurrent improvements in machinery, made it possible to get a horse-power in such ships with not more than from 2 to 24 ewt. total weight of engines and boilers, including the water in boilers

— SSS

Names of Material of tn) Armour, Armoured Ships, Hull. eecea : Thickness in Inches. First CLAss. Turret Ships, MIO SUDIE scicacaajsncnsceess Tron, 7, 16 to 24 Steel-faeed on turrets. Dreadnought…..... * FA 11 to 14 Devastation… & on | 10 ,, 14 Thunderer…... ” ” MO *Colossts…... Steel ™ L 14 ,, 18 { *Edinburght…...cc…00- – .) Steel-faced. Barbette Ships. aero Beanimnenteney Steel. av) E oto 18 (ene pie mk eoeceees tT) ” = ” >?) eees a amperdown…... on ODO W 2 sss com isiwcsnees ” sd t Pts Ri , PNDSOM cecccinecceeeee “ s) ‘ (Srconp Cass. Turret Ships. Agamemnon…….....6. Iron, T. 14 to 18 : Steel-faced on turrets. i Pees eee eeewereneee ” ” ”? ” *CONQUELOM.....2000 Steel : 8} to 12 Steel-faeed DOV. acesatsctscsssecass Tron. A 9 to 14 TREY ee costs cosiescos sae. = Es 8. gall

2) 5 10 ,, 14

Corvettes, Belleisle,..... Perea lron. T. 6 to 12 ha a ” Aa 7 ys 22 Tuirp Crags. Rigged Ships. Superb…... Be asi sascjeis Iron. s. 4 to M2. Neptune (turret) ..... fron, Slieathed. 4 9,, 13 Monarch, do. ..... Iron. e a 1D Hercules. % Cur 2 Sultan…..... . 6,, 9 Alexandra a 6), Le Temeraire +f 8,,

11 MEION|.. 55. Ce a5 ol Northampton… ” ” 6,, 9 PHOUIOOM ccc. eeoeccoss, « Ss. 6,, 9 Bellerophon… Tron. e 6 Penelope…..... a a 5to 6 *Impérieuse…....s.ecc000. Steel.Sheathed. a) 8 ,, 10 j *Warspite (barbette).... P – i Steel-faced. (Audacious ares EN aioe cles Tron. Sheathed. A 6 to 8 Invincible… Iron, = € ,, 8 Jron LO os ” 6 ,, 8 Swiftsure…..... ..{Iron. Sheathed, S: 6 5.8 Triumph…... ere ise one “mn ” 6 ,, 8 Special. Polyphemus…..... at Steel 1 2to 3 Fourtu Cxass, Hand aer Turret Ships. PE SIODBY. ...soesevenscceex ss Iron. TT 6 to i0 ane wit Hf os 6 45 10 ceate…., a0 3 Gi, 10 BETA. cose. eS – 6 10 Prince Albert. ii S. 4; ,, 10 OM ON esas ccsesecaea + = 43 ,, 5 BUN Ges eso ecnvcvses vee 4, 5 Gunboats eee isc T aps: lron. xX: 3 ..../ fron, Sheathed. A 3 Aree eno , lron. Hydraulic. 4} Firra Crass, Rigged Ships, ‘33. cies Iron. S 4} Black Prince… nt 2 41 Achilles…....., 7, a 43 Minotaur… o & 53 Agincourt … fo * ba orthumberland …..... . : 54 eet. od ” ” 44 aliant., – i 44 Defence… : 5 +6 4h erence a vs Fe 4h On arden… Wood. 1 3 Repulse …....., % z ‘ 7

287

and condensers. The locomotive boilers have therefore been given up in this ship.

The following extract (with slight variations and additions) from the Statesman’s Year-Book, 1883, gives a fair idea of the

present position and strength of the British ironclad fleet :— ‘*The most important division of the navy, the ironclad fleet of war, eonsisted at the end of 1882 of 74 ships afloat and building, of which unmber 55 were afloat

Strength of iron- elad fleet,

and described as efficient for sea or for coast defence, while 3 were not strictly –

British, being built solely for the defence of the colonies, 6 were on the stocks, and 10 had become inefficient for naval warfare. The following is a tabulated list of the ‘ so-called’ efficient ironelads, and of the ironclads still on the stocks, divided into five elasses according to the strength of armour

and armament and mode of eonstruction.! The ironclads marked with an asterisk were not eom-

pleted at the end of 1882,”

Guns,

eee ha Displace-

F Power wens Number. Weight. ;

4 80 ton. 8,0C0 11,880 4 BS oe 8,200 10,820

4 35, 6,650 9,330

4 Two 35 ton and two 88 ton. 6,270 9,330 9 Fonr 43 ,, five 89 ewt. 6,000 9,150 9 gh gh ead 6,000 9,150 10 Four 43 ton and six 89 ewt. 7,000 9,150 10 ees aa 7,500 9,600 10 a ee ee 7,500 9,600 10 na JGGP Ge i cigae & 7,500 10,000 12 Two 110 oe ven eo? .,, 7,500 10,000 10 Hour (3° 5, siz i69! 7,500 10,000 6 Four 38 ton and two 89 ewt. 6,000 8,500 6 aoe, kar ee 800 «t 6,000 8,500 6 Two 43 » fourso , 4,500 6,200 4 » 18 two tO .. 4,600 5,440 4 Tk – Ol % 3,060 4,010 2 25 ton. 2,870 4,910 4 25 ton, 3,200 4,870 4 Dye 4,040 41870 16 18 ton. 6,580 9,170 6 Four 88 ton and two 12 ton, 8,000 9,810 vi Four 25 ton, two 12 ton, and one 63 ton. 7,840 8,320 lt Eight 18 ,, U2 ey a, HOON = 6,750 8,680 12 ; Eight 18 ton and four 12 ton. 7,720 9,290 12 Two 26 , ten 68 8,610 9,490 8 Four 25 ,,, four th =. 7,520 8,540 12 » wy 4 eiaiti «. 6,640 7,630 12 jee ae 6,070 7,630 9 Two 18 ss seven]2 ,, 3,370 5,390 15 Ten 12 ,, ‘five —.64.,, 6,520 7,550 11 Eight 9 – ,, tliree 40-poundcers, 4,700 4,470 10 Four 18 ,, six 89 ewt. 8,000 7,390 10 eye, Ay ee ss 8,000 7,390 18 Ten 12, eight 22 ,, 4,830 6,010 14 a lees four ill ;, 4,830 6,010 14 rr et mare ly 4,270 6,010 18 le eight 22 ,, 4,910 6,910 14 » 22) Go Stour ail 5,110 6,640 Machine guns only, 5,500 2,640 4 18 ton. 1,660 3,480

4 18! 1,670 3,480

4 Ts 1,750 3,480 4 Ne 1,470 3,480 4 M2 4; 2,130 3,880

4 1, 4 1,450 2,750 4 9, 1,450 2,750

4 Two 6} ton and two 24-pounders (howitzers). 700 1,230 4 a ee es * 740 1,230 4 ” 63 ”? bd 24 bel » 730 1,280 32 Four 9 ton and twenty-eight 6} ton. 5,270 9,210 28 ae » twenty-four 63 ,, 5,770 9,210 16 Fourteen 12 ton and two 64 ton. 5,720 9,820 17 12 ton. 6,700 10,690 £7 Th) oy 6,870 10,690 27 Seven 12 ton and twenty 9 ton. 6,560 10,780 18 Two 9 ,, sixteen 62,, 3,260 6,710 18 a at ae 3,350 6,710 16 a 9 » fourteen 63 ,, 2,540 6,270 16 a 9 a > “63,, 2,430 6,270 18 Two 12 ton, fourteen 9 ton, and two 63 ton. 6,700 7,840 2 9 ton. 3,350 6,190

1 The elussitication is without authority, aud is open to question.

Un-

288

There are three other 18-ton turret ships of the fourth class, viz., the “Cerberus,” belonging to the Victorian Government, and stationed at Melbourne, and the ‘ Abyssinia” and ‘‘ Magdala,” belonging to the Indian Government, and stationed at Bombay.

From the expericnce of the American civil war and the cruise of

armoured the “ Alabama” was born the modern type of cruiser, the object

erisers.

Materials for ships of war.

of these being to overtake and capture the cruisers of the enemy and to destroy his commerce. It is not supposed that they would be charged with a convoy.

The “Inconstant,” commenced in 1866, was the first of this class. With a view to retain the advantages of copper sheathing in com- bination with the iron construction which was necessary in so long a ship, she was built of iron, of 5782 tons displacement, eased with wood in two thicknesses, and coppered. She was heavily armed, and attained a speed of 16 knots at full power. Her coal supply would last two and a quarter days at this speed, but

it sufficed without the use of sail for forty-one days at 5 knots an hour. The ‘ Active” and ‘‘ Volage” were laid down at the same time on a reduced scale, and their speed was 15 knots. The ‘‘Shah” and ‘‘Raleigh,” commenced in 1870, were of the same type as the ‘

The “Iris” was commenced in 1875. She is remarkable as the first war vessel constructed entirely of steel. She was intended for an armed despatch vessel, and in order to obtain the highest speed it was imperative to use the lightest, or, in other words, the strongest, material in her construction. There was at this time, moreover, a great difficulty in getting uniformly good iron even at extravagaut prices. On these grounds a mild steel was employed, which enabled her designers to put 7700 horse-power into a hull with a load displacement of only 3780 tons, and to attain the speed of 18°572 knots, with a length of only 300 feet. The sister ship, the ‘‘Mercury,” did even more, realizing 18°876 knots, or nearly 22 miles an hour.

The “Comus” was the first of nine vessels built in 1879, and called the C. class from the initial letter of their names. They have iron or steel bottoms, cased with wood, and irou or steel frames and internal fittings. The engines and boilers are protected by a 1$- inch steel deck over them, as well as by the coal as much as possible. They are smaller than the ‘‘ Active” class, and are intended for foreign service. They are variously armed ; the ‘‘Canada”’ carries ten 6-Inch gunson the broadside. The two foremost ones are mounted on central pivot carriages on sponsons or projections from the side. By this method they each cover half the horizon. The ‘‘Calliope” and ‘‘Calypso” are building on a somewhat larger scale. They will mount four 6-inch guns on sponsons, two forward and two aft, with ten 5- or 6-inch guns betwecn them on the broadside. All are coppered.

There are six of a class called the ‘‘Gems,” of which the ‘‘ Ruby ” is the type. They are composite vessels, with iron frames and wood planking, and sheathed with copper.

The next is a new class, built entirely of steel on the lines of the “Tris,” and described as second-class cruisers. All this class have twin screws, and thcir armanients are arrauged ina similar manner to that of the ‘‘Calliope,” and inan open battery. The ‘‘Leander” of this class is of 8750 tons, 5000 horse-power, carries 700 tons of coal, and will have a speed of 16 knots.

The ‘‘ Mersey” is rather smaller, being of 3550 tons, but she has 500 horse-power more, and is expected to steam 17 knots. She will mount fourteen 6-inch guus, and has a covered battery.

All the above-named vessels are protected by a steel turtle-back deek. In the ‘‘ Mersey” class this deck will be carried through- out the length. They will have the Whitehead torpedo and two second class torpedo boats.

There are, besides, numerous sloops and gun vessels, chiefly coim- posite. The floating gun-carriages of the ‘‘Stauuch” type, designed by Mr Rendel in 1867 to carry an 18-ton gun, are small, low, mastless boats, with a speed of about 8 knots. The gunboats forming the ** Mosquito ” fleet in 1854 have mostly disappeared.

The accompanying table gives a lst of English unarmoured ships. The vessels named in italics have a protecting deck—the “Mersey,” ‘‘ Severn,” and ‘‘ Thames” throughout, the others over machinery and magazines.

Materials of Construction.—Henccforward we have a new depar- ture as regards the material for ships of war. As the iron displaced the wooden walls, so now steel is displacing iron. All the new ships, whether armoured or not, are of steel.

A remarkable economy in cost has been effected by these means. The steel is so uniform in quality, and the manufacture is so precise, that there is fair competition, and therefore a nearly uniform rate all over the country, and this rate is only one-half of what was given for iron for the royal dockyards when the ‘‘ Iris” and ‘‘ Mercury” were commenced. At that date (1875) the contract price of Admiralty plates of a standard size was over £20 per tou. Iron plates supplied to the same specification, but not subject to tests, were supplied by different makers at prices differing from each

NAY

English Unarmoured Ships.

pis || a | 2 7 Name. place- ee = 3 ba Material of Iiull.) in t orse a 2 ult. knee ment.) power 8 eS ; Tons. ft. in.| ft. in. Ineonstant..| 5,780 | 7,360 |3887 4/50

3) 1868 Tron (sheathed | 16°20 with wood). Weleiehitec.ses 5,200 | 6,160 | 298 0/49 0 1873 × 15°32 itunes een ccee 6,250 | 7,480 |334 8|52 0 ef – 16°20 Mersey (T)..| 8,550 | 6,000 |300 0/46 0) Building. Steel. 17°00 Severn (T)..| 8,80 | 6,000 |800 0/46 0 EC . 17-00 Thames (T)..| 8,550 | 6,000 |300 0)46 0 a Pe 17:00 Active…..... 3,080 | 4,010 |270 0}42 0 1869 Tron (eased). 14°97 Amethyst…| 1,970 | 2,140 220 0}37 0 1873 Wood. 13°24 Bacehante…| 4,130 | 5,250 |280 0/45 6) 1876 Tron (@ased). 15°00 Boadicea…..| 4,140 | 5,290 | 280 0)45 0} 1875 lron (cased). 14°70 IBviSon <7. .<:- 1,860 | 2,150 |} 210 0;36 0 1869 Wood. 13°13 Canada wun. 2,880 | 2,3 225 0|44 6} Building.| Steel and tron | 13°00 eased with wood. Caroline…..| 1,420 | 1,500 | 200 0/38 0 3 Composite, 13-00 Carysfort….| 2,880 | 2,800 | 225 0/44 6 1878 Steel and iron | 13°00 cased with wood. Calliope… 2,770 | 3,000 |235 0/44 6| Building. 9 13°75 Calypso sss. 2,770 | 8,000 |235 0|44 6 # – 13°75 Cleopatra …| 2,880 | 2,300 |225 0)44 6) 1878 Steel and fron | 13°00 eased with wood. Champion…| 2,880 | 2,800 }225 0}44 6 AS 13°00 COMUS.....0. 2,380 | 2,300 |225 0/44 6 BS a 13-00 Conquest…..| 2,380 | 2,300 | 225 0/44 6 vs ‘5 eae St. Constance …| 2,880 | 2,800 |225 0/44 6 / Building. 0 Le Sb. Cordelia…..\ 2,380 | 2,800 | 225 0}44 6 e P 13°00 Curagoa…...| 2,380 | 2,300 225 0/44 6 1878 be 13°00 Diamond…..| 1,970 | 2,150 |220 0/387 0 1874 Wood. 12°56 DidOses.. cies 1,760 | 2,520 {212 0/36 0 1869 7 13°50 IDYAROG Beornacins 1,860 2,270 220 0/36 0 ” ” 12°90 Felipse…..... 1,760 | 1,950 }212 0/36 0] 1867 al 12°90 Emerald …..| 2,120 | 2,170 |220 0}40 0] 1876 Composite. 13°20 Enecounter..| 1,970 | 2,130 |220 0/37 0} 1873 Wood. 13°19 Euryalus….| 4,140 | 5,270 }280 0/45 6) 1877 Iron (eased). 1472 Garnet…....| 2,120 | 2,000 |220 0)40 0 29 Composite. 13-00 Heroine…...\ 1,420| 950 |200 0/88 0| 1878 – 13°10 Hyacinth…..| 1,420] 950 |200 0/38 0 a » 13°10 Juno….....| 2,240 | 1,880 |200 0}40 4 3867 Wood. 10°87 Modeste…... 1,970 | 2,180 }220 0/37 0 1873 mM 1209) Opal…....0008 2,120 | 2,120 |220 0/40 o| 1875 Composite. 13°37 Pylades w….. 1,420 | 1,500]200 0/38 0/| Building. a 13-00 Rapid …..... 1,420 | 1,500 ; 200 0/388 0 a x 13°00 Rover. ..| 8,460 | 4,960]2°0 0/43 6] 1874 Tron (eased),.| 14°53 Royalist…...| 1,420 | 1,500 | 200 0/38 0 Building. Composite. 13°00 Rudy .esseeeee 2,120 | 1,830 }220 0|40 0| 1876 = 12-28 Sapphire…..| 1,970 | 2,860 |220 0/37 0} 1874 Wood. 13°58 Satellite….. 1,420 950 |}200 0/38 0] 1879 Composite. 13°10 Tenedos…...| 1,760 | 2,040 | 212 0|36 0 1870 Wood, 12°80 Thaliak.<.—.- 2,240 | 1,600 |} 200 0/40 4 1869 " 11°14 TOE anosnce 1,860 | 2,270 |220 0/36 0} 1871 ‘as

13°39 Tourmaline.| 2,120 | 1,970 |220 0/40 0} 1875 Composite. 12°62 Turquoise…) 2,120 | 1,990 | 220 0) 40 0 1876 ee 12°32 iO laeres «cee 3,080 | 4,530 |270 0/42 0 1869 – Tron (cased). 15:08 Tris (T)..... 3,730 | 7,000 | 300 0/46 O| 1877 Steel. 18°00 Mercury (T)| 3,730 | 7.000 |300 0/46 0! 1878 a 18°00 Leander (T)| 3,748 | 5,000 | 300 0}46 6| Building. ss 16°00 | Phaeton (1) | 8,748 | 5,000 |300 0/46 0 a = 16°00 Arethusa(T)| 3,748 | 5,000 |300 0/46 0 = i 16-00 Amphion(T)| 3,750 | 5,000 | 300 0/46 0 – 5 16°00 Scout (T)....-| 1,430 | 8,200 | 220 0}34 0 7 io 16-00 Albatruss….| 940 840 |160 O}|31 4 1873 Composite. 10°61 (ANGI ieeccecss= 1,240 810 |160 0/31 11 1856 Wood. 7‘68 Cormorant..| 1,130 950 |170 0/36 0 1877 Composite. 11°31 1D} :vbU) peace 940 920 1160 0/81 4} 1880 np 10°64 Dragon ……| 1,140 | 1,010 |170 0/86 0] 1878 ” 1152 Dryad……...| 1,620 | 1,570 | 187 0/36 0 1866 Wood. 11°87 Egeria……...| 940] 1,010 |160 0;31 4} 1873 Composite. 11°80 Espidele……| 1,187] 900 |170 0|36 0] Building. 5 11°50 Fantome….. 940! 970 |160 0/31 4) 1878 i. 11°06 awiliteccsrese 1,050 480 1160 0| 31 10 1856 Wood. 9°36 Flying Fish.| 940} 840 [160 0/31 4] 18738 Composite. 10% Gannct,....., 1,180] 900 |170 0/36 0; 1878 ” 1153 Kingfisher…} 1,180} 900 |170 0|386 0; 1879 11°60 Miranda ….. 1,130; 900 [170 0}36 0 a0 on 11°50 Mutine…....| 1,187| 900 |170 0/36 0) Building. . a Osprey …....| 1,180} 1,010 |170 01/36 0} 1876 ae 112 Pegasus……] 1,130} 970 }170 0;36 0} 1878 * lie Peliean…..... 1,130 | 1,060 |170 0|86 0O| 1877 – 11°60 Penguin….. 1,130 760 |170 0)36 0 1876 om 10°00 Sappho…..... 940| 880 |160 0|31 4). 1878 10°59 Wild Swan..| 1,130} 800 |170 0/36 0} 1876 Composite. 10°38 Enchantress} 1,000} 1,820 }220 0/28 2] 1862 Wood. 14°02 Helicon …... 1,000 | 1,610 [220 0/28 2] 1865 ” 13°05 Vigilant……] 1,000 | 1,810 }220 0/28 2] 1871 2 ie HGCA asses 6,400 | 1,760 | 3891 73/388 93 Ese sia lron. 117 in 1s Vesuvius(T)} 244| 390 | 90 0/22 0) 1874 5 an Bittern (T)8| 805| 850 |170 0/29 0} 1869 Wood. ie Algerine 4…) 9835] 810 |157 0)29 6) 1880 Coinposite. we Flirt (T)5….] 603) 580 [155 0/25 O| 1867 59 9

1 Those marked (T) have twin serews. The ‘‘ Enchantress,” “ Helicon, and “ Vigilant have paddles. 4 7

2 These are speeds at measured mile, at load draught of water, either ascer- taincd or estimated.

3 In this class, of tonnage 805, there are 3 gun-vessels.

4 In this class, of tonnage 720 to 950, there arc 16 gun-vessels. v4

5 1n this elass, of tonnage 603 to 756, there are 9 gun-vessels, There are ¢ gunboats of tonnage from 180 to 560.

et

Mercan- tile marine,

Nay WY

a

other by more than 100 per cent., according as the makers and the particular brand were supposed to have credit in the market. The steel now in use is absolutely faultless as to surface, stronger and more ductile than iron, and very uniform in quality. That actually employed in the “Iris” and “Mercury,” being a new material (Siemens-Martin of special quality), was no cheaper than the highest quality of tested iron. Siuce then the extension of its use in all directions has brought it down to half the price given at first. Siemens-Martin and Bessemer steel are now employed almost indifferently. Between 1866 and 1876 only three small vessels were built of steel in the United Kingdom. It is now employed in all the shipbuilding establishments in the country. In this case the royal navy gave the start, and private shipbuilders followed, in a most important change in the use of materials of construction.

The use of steel in the navy has not been confined to shipbuild- ing. The guns took it up first for internal tubes, and now the whole gun is built of it. The armour has also adopted it, wholly or in part. In England a steel face is cast upon an iron back, the steel being about one-third of the thickness of the plate. The hard face has been found very efficacious in breaking up the

attack- ing projectiles. It has been found by experiment, for example, that flat plates of compound armour 12 inches thick are more effective against iron and steel projectiles, fired normally, at high velocity, from a 9-inch gun, than plates of iron 14 inches thick. But the most important point gained is that it has become impos- sible for iron shill to perforate armour as shell. The hard face of the armour breaks the shell to pieces.

Mercantile Marine. —There has never becn a time in British naval history when the merchant service has failed to supply ships and men for the national defence. For some years prior to 1853 it was the practice to insert in mail contracts clauses providing for the armament of the steamships employed in mail service.

Towards the end of 1852 a report was presented to the Board of Admiralty by a committee of four officers on the question of arming the mail contract steam-packets belonging to the Peninsular and Oriental and Royal West India Mail Packet Companies. Their recapitulation of their report is as follows :—

"That the two companies have 53 vessels (23 of iron); that 16 ply between Southampton and foreign ports; that 5 on an average are always at home and fit for sea; that 8 may be rendered available for war purposes on an emergency, if they cau be spared from the mail packet service within different periods extending altogether over sixty-six days; that they would not make efficient substitutes for regular men-of-war; that they might be fitted for armed packets and armed troop-ships; that it would be prudent in future that the fittings be executed beforehand ; that the fittings necessary to the nature of proposed armaments (including magazines and shell- rooms) would cost from £600 to £800 for first and second class vessels, if attended to while a vessel is in progress of building or undergoing a large repair, and proportionally less for smaller vessels; that guns of such calibre be used as are common in the royal navy (viz., 8-ineh guns of 65 ewt., and 32-pounders of 42 ewt.), to faci- litate the supplies and render fittings and ordnance stores transfer- able from ship to ship ; that a store of guns be kept at the port of Southampton (or Portsmouth), with a proper proportion of ordnance and gunners' stores laid apart ready for an immediate call ; that it would be advisable to introduce a clause in the contracts giving the

Admiralty a right of pre-emption, and possibly to prevent their sale (but with permission) to a foreign power.”

In a seeond report from the same committee, dated March 1858, upon the British and North American, the Pacific, the General Serew, the Australian, the South Western, and the African Companies, the report is summed up in thestatement that out of 91 vessels—belonging to eight distinct companies—employed in mail Contracts, there were only 16 which could be made available on an emergency for auxiliary war purposes. Iron vessels were excluded from those which might be considered, available ‘‘on account of the material used in their construction,” but the committee does not state why the material was considered unsuitable.

© go Into the reasons influencing their decision would make it necessary to refer to the experiments and the scientific and political controversies which had then been going on for ten years. During this time it had been decided to create a war navy of iron ships ; the ships were commenced ; then it was attempted to stop the building of them, but without success ; they were then transforrned mto troop- and store-ships. Of two great parties, one contended that iron had been proved to be unfit for fighting ships, and the other that there had been no such proof, and that in the end wood must be given up.

The ofticers coniposing this committee appear to have agreed with the former party ; and they do not seem to have thought it necessary to give any reason for their rejection of all the large and fine ships employed in the mail service which, at some small expenditure of money, were suitabie for receiving an armament in every particular, exeept that they were built of iron.

In March 1858 a Treasury minute was issucd calling attention

to the enormous cost of the mail packet service, and appointing Mail Among other things contracts,

a committee to consider the whole question. it is said in these instructions : —

“In reviewing the purposes and stipulations of the contracts, the committee will have to consider and report whether they can learn either that the prospect of a reserve of ships of war, which was at one time confidently entertained, has been realized in any sensible degree under these costly arrangements, or whether there is any probability that it can be realized hereafter compatibly with the paramount purpose for which the packcts have been constructed, viz., that of postal vessels. On this point the committee will consult a report which has been presented to the Board of Admiralty by a committee of naval and artillery officers.

“It will also be their duty to observe what provisions have been inserted in the contracts to secure the sufficiency of the ships for the purpose of naval war- fare; to ascertain whether the stipulations have been carefully fulfilled ; whether, in any cases where they have not been so fulfilled, permission to waive them has been regularly sought and obtained from the proper department of the Government; and whether, in consideration of such non-fulfilment, there has been any adequate remission, or any remission, of the price which the state engaged to pay, not for postal service merely, but for the double purpose of postal service, together with a reserve force in aid of the royal navy.”

In July 1853 the committee reported :—

‘The question which appears to us first in the order of consideration is, whether it is desirable to simplify such contracts as may in future be made, by omitting from them all provisions which do not directly bear upon the efficiency of the postal service. In arranging the terms of these contracts, the Govern- ment seized the opportunity of requiring that the vessels should be constructed in a manner that would render them as serviceable for national defence in war as steam packets belonging to the crown would havc been if employed in their stead. A provision to this cffect was first inserted in the contract with the Royal Mail Company in 1810, and in most of the existing contracts stipulations are to be found, requiring that the vessels should be of a construction and strength fit to carry such an armament as the Admiralty may think proper. In several cases they must be built of wood, and not of iron; and there are some contracts which confer on

the Admiralty the right of taking the ships at a valuation when it may be thought desirable to do so.

‘‘ The surveyor’s report upon most of these vessels, as regards their fitness for war purposes, is in the following terms :—‘ Not fitted for armament, but eapable of carrying guns when so fitted.” This report accords with the opinion expressed. by the committee of naval and artillery officers upon the vessels which have eome under their notice. It appears, however, from the statements of that committee that, although the packets they have examined are for the most part of sufficient strength to carry and fire a certain number of guns, the expense of the alterations which would be necessary before they could be got ready for service would be very considerable, and that, even when such alterations had been made, the efficiency of the vessels would be very small in proportion to their size, and that they could not encounter hostile vessels of equal tonnage without endangering the honour of the British flag.

‘“‘With reference to future contracts, we are decidedly of opinion that no ex- pense should be incurred for the sake of imposing conditions for giving a military character to the postal vessels. We believe the imposition of such conditions to be a measure of false economy. Should a war suddenly break out, the imme- diate demand for mail steamers would probably be greater than ever, and it might be exceedingly inconvenient to withdraw them at such a time from their legitimate use for the purpose of arming them for battle. Morcover, the high charge for the packct service has been borne with the greater readiness, because it has been supposed by some to include a provision, of large but unknown amount, for the defence of the country ; while, on the other hand, the naval estimates have sometimes been complained of as excessive, on the ground that the force provided for was in addition to the large reserve of postal war steamers,

“We accordingly recommend that for the future the contracts for the convey- ance of the mails should be wholly free from stipulations of the nature we have been describing, though it may be desirable in some cases to retain the power in the Government to take possession of the vessels in the event of national emergency.”

They add :—“ An erroneous impression appears to have prevailed among the public as to the efficiency of our postal steamers for direct purposes of warfare. We do not believe that those who are charged with the direction of the military atfairs of the country have ever regarded them as likely to be of any great service in an engagement, but their advantage as an auxiliary force will be very consider- able. They will be available, in the event of the breaking out of hostilities, for the rapid conveyance of despatches, of specie, and, to a certain extent, of troops and stores. Their speed will be such as probably to secure them from the risk of capture, and will render them highly valuable for procuring intelligence of hos- tile movements. Thcy may also be expected to furnish queen’s ships with men trained to steam navigation, and possessing an amount of local knowledge which cannot fail to be valuable in several ways.

“Again, it is not only in a military sense that rapidity of communication between all parts of the British empire tends to increase its security. While the mother country continues to exercise any control over the procecdings of the colonies, the inconveniences attending the delay of correspondence are severely felt, and speedy communication is of the highest consequence to the preserva- tion of satisfactory relations between them.”

Within the last few years all references to armament or fitness for warlike services have disappeared from the mail contracts, but there has been in some of them a clause providing that the Admiralty may in cases of great public emergency charter vessels of the company at rates to be agreed on, but in case of difference as to such rates, or dainages consequent upon. such purchase or hiring, the same is to be settled by arbitration.

Since 1852, when the committee refused to accept vessels built of iron, many changes have taken place. There are no wooden mail steamers left: irou or steel has completely displaced wood as a material of construction for such purposes. The great development of incendiary projectiles in war, such as percussion shell, red-hot shot, and hollow shot filled with molten iron, not only led to the adoption of iron arinour, and thus ineidentally to iron frames and skin as well, but showed also that wooden ships would be rapidly set on fire in an action. In the ironclad ship the objection raised to iron for the structure of war ships, viz.,‘that the plating and riveting could

be driven out in numerous and dangerous fragments by projectiles, does not hold. The experiments on the ‘‘Simoom” targets (1849-51) were doubtless in the minds of the officers who made the reports referred to above, and they must not be forgotten,

There are now many ships for fighting purposes built with iron frames and iron skin, and without armour ; but in most of these eases there is stout wooden planking wrought over this iron skin, with the express object of obliging projectiles passing right through the ship to punch a hole in the side by which they pass out, instead of driving off masses of plating by the breaking of the rivets. There can be no doubt also that plates are better, and riveting is sounder now, than they were apt to be twenty years ago. The iron ships in the merchant navy have not this protection. It is difficult to estimate the precise gravity of the defect, but there 1s no doubt that it is sufficiently important to make proper division Into com- partments imperative, so as to give time to cover a damage in the side under water. But, unfortunately, a proper subdivision into compartments, of which the divisional bulkheads rise a sufficient height above the water, is very rare in merchant ships, even in nail steamers. If the compartments are so large and the tops of the bulkhead so low that, by filling a compartment, the top of the bulkhead is brought below the level of the water outside the ship, the loss of the ship is inevitable. Moreover, thesc ships are, as a rule, very narrow in proportion to their displacement, and their risk of foundcring, by the filling of a compartment, is thereby greatly increased, because a narrow ship loses its stability rapidly under these circumstances, and will turn over.

Another disadvantage is the height of the engines and boilers. In ships of war of the size of the mail steamers, and indeed in nearly all, of whatever size, the engincs and boilers are kept below the water, and fairly out of the reach of shot. But in modern mail steamers the engines are worked with

their cylinders standing some feet above the load water-line. The advantage of this arrange- ment, in point of economy of working, is very great, but it involves serious risk in a fighting ship.

In 1856 a most important event occurred seriously affecting this question, viz., the signing of what is known as the Declaration of Paris, a sort of rider to the treaty of Paris of March 1856, by which declaration it was laid down that, ‘‘ whereas it was formerly legal to grant royal commissions to private owners to equip, arm, aud man private cruisers, to capture the eommerce of the enemy for their own profit, this shall no longer be legal; that, while the cruisers of the state may capture and destroy private slips be- longing to subjects of the hostile state, they may not, as of old, search neutral ships in the open seas to discover and confiscate hostile property contained in them, but only to verify their right to fly the neutral flag, and to discover and confiscate property lield to be contraband of war, destined for ports of the enemy.”

This was in fact a ratification in perpetuity of an order in council of the 25th of March 1854, by which, on the outbreak of war with Russia, Great Britain consented to ‘‘ waive her maritime rights” and allow enemies’ goods to be earried in neutral bottoms without liability to seizure.

All the parties to the treaty of Paris agreed to this declaration, and the rights it confers on neutrals are rights now common to all the European powers. Under its operation neutrals would doubt- less insist on exercising for their own profit the right of carriage into and out of those ports of a belligerent which were not effectively bloekaded by the enemy. Privateering being abolished, so far as the European powers are concerned, each maritime nation would seek, on the outbreak of war, to incorporate into the state navy the fastest and most powerful merchant ships it could obtain. Each war navy would become strengthened by the addition of merchant ships capable, at whatever risk to themselves, of mount- ing guns, of ramming, and of employing the torpedo. By this means the naval power would depend, not only on the strength of the war navy, but also upon the strength and excellence of the national mercantile marine. For this purpose only the fastest ships would be useful, and all the rest would fall a prey, in any encounter, to the fast ships in the hands of an enemy.

The great importance attached to the possession of such fast ships may be secn from the figures given below.

British registered merchant ships, sailing and steam (38,939)—esti- Tons. TMHAtealonOss COnMAMe HM TSSON, ...ccccasstesscisecsicacesesseesssesseasseesecetes 10,200,000 Of this the proportion of steamers (6903) WAS.....cccccssscsssecsseceeescescses 4,400,000

At the same date the whole number of British ships built and building having an average ocean speed of 12 knots and upwards did not exceed 400; and ships of this speed built and building for all other maritime powers taken together did not reach 100. The only powers possessing such ships were France, Germany, Holland, Spain, United States, Italy, and Belgium.

Between 1875 and 1882 the number of English merchant steamers of 13 knots ocean speed and upwards inereased from 25 to 65, of 14 knots and upwards from 10 to 35, and the maximum speed rose from 15 to 17 knots.

Since 1875 the Admiralty have been cngaged in forming a list of all ocean-going British ships which, being reasonably divided into eompartments, might be armed in the event of war. The number on this list having an average ocean speed of 12 knots and up- wards is, in 1883, 112, with a total gross register tonnage of 451,470 tons.

NAVY

The number of men and boys actually employed in 1880 in Mercan. registered British sea-going vessels was nearly 200,000, of which tile

nearly 12 per cent. were forcign and the rest British.

Sir Thomas Brasscy estimates that there are in the British mercantile marine 407,000 seamen, exclusive of men in British ships in the colonies and abroad. The total number includes—

Masters and mates, Certificated…....cscsecsrscssceesccescessceoseners 38,200

» not certificated… a 10,000 BISWEnMeM se… -scscesesser-seecee= 150,000 Other sailor men. 151,000 Firemen).-..... 14,000 Apprentices… -. 11,000 Boys in fishing DOatS…....ccscessceesseeceeensesceeaesecenssees cee eescenes 13,000

Naval Guns.—From time immemorial smooth-bore guns in cast iron, or bronze for the smaller ealibres, had been used for throwing spherical shot with charges not exceeding one-third the weight of the shot.

The first usc of rifled guns in the navy was in 1859-60, when Mr (now Sir William) Armstrong's breech-loading 40-pounder and 100- pounder guns were issued to the service. The elongated shot or shell and cartridge were entered from the rear, through a hollow screw. A breech piece in which the vent was formed was dropped through a slot in the breech of the gun, and, being tightened up by the hollow screw, closed the bore. The projectile was coated with lead to take the polygroove rifling. It fired much more aceurately than the smooth-bore; but in 1863, the method of closing the breech having proved inefficient on service in Japan, the manufac. ture was diseontinued.

In 1865 muzzle-loading guns were adopted, built on Armstrong's principle of welded wrought-iron coils round a stcel tube, rifled on the ''shunt" principle, in which a studded projectile was rammed down grooves in the bore, rather deeper than those by which it was afterwards driven out. The guns gradually increased in weight up to the 12-inch 38-ton gun and 16-inch 80-ton gun. In 1876 the 80-ton gun was fired with a projectile of 1700 Tb and a charge of 425 tb at a target composed of four 8-inch iron plates with 5-inch intervals filled with teak, and perforated it. The charge of this gun was afterwards inereased to 450 Ib of prismatic powder.

In 1873 the advantage of an increased diameter of the powder chamber was recognized and adopted in the 38-ton gun, but in order to utilize this chamber in a niuzzle-loading gun the cartridge had to be made small enough to pass through the bore and after- wards expand in the chamber. This involved an awkward cartridge. Breech-loading obviated this difficulty. The use of slow-burning powder required a considerably increased length of bore, and made muzzle-loading exceedingly difficult. Breeeh-loading also offered greater facility for closing the windage of the

shot. These causes have led to a return to breech-loading. The system adoptcd is the French intercepted screw. The plan of reinforcing the steel tube by wrought iron coils has been abandoned, and the approved system of construction is a steel tube, supported by a steel breech, which takes the breech screw and extends to the trunnions, reinforced by one or more layers of steel hoops shrunk on. These guns throw an elongated projectile of about three and a half calibres of the bore in length, with a charge nearly half the weight of the shot, which gives a velocity approaching 2000 feet per second. The powder pressure (17 or 18 tons on the square inch) is no higher than it used to be, but is longer sustained. A few only of these guns are yet afloat.

Boats' guns are similar in type, but of solid steel. The projectiles are the Palliser ehilled shell, or cored shot; the common shell, which contains about one-tenth of its weight of powder ; the shrapnel shell, which eontains bullets and a small cliarge to liberate the bullets ; and the case shot, which is a thin case containing small shot for short ranges.

These guns will be made of all ealibres and weights. Those already tried are the 12-inch 43-ton, 10°4-inch 26-ton, 9°2-inch 18- ton, 8-ineh 11-ton, 6-inch 4-ton, 5-inch 36-ewt., 4-inch 22-cwt.

The Gatling gun is ten-barrelled revolving. It throws bullets of the same size as the rifle. An improved feed has just been tried, and with it the gun is eapable of discharging 1000 rounds a minute. To guard against the attack of torpedo boats a rapid-firing gun of sufficient power to penetrate their sides was necessary, and for this purpose a four-barrel gun, invented by Mr Nordenfelt, was adopted, aud is now supplied to all ships. Quick-firing 6-pounder gums are now under trial capable of firing shot or shell.

personnel, .

{

Cost of the Navy.—Sir Thomas Brasscy says, 'In considering the Cost of

general question of our naval expenditure, it is necessary, in justice the to those to whom its administration has been entrusted, to look navy.

back over a serics of years, and to compare the fluctuations in that expenditure with the growth in the value of the trade for the protection of which our navy is maintaincd. In the year 1858-59 the effective expenditure for the navy was £7,106,100, and non- effective £1,334,000. In 1870-71 the effective expenditure was £7,308,000, while the non-effective had increased to £1,705,000. The estimates for the ensuing year (1881-82) provide for an effective expenditure of £8,434,000, while the non-effective expenditure amounts to £2,063,000. If we eompare the expenditure of the army in the same interval, we find that the effective expenditure

j

Compara- ‘ tive view – of navies.

J ae |

has grown from £9,337,000 to £12,797,000, with an increase of half a million in the non-effective expenditure.

“The increase in the foreign trade and tonnage of our merchant navy has been out of all proportion with the increase in our naval expenditure. The total tonnage of British merchant ships was 5,711,000 tons in 1860, 7,149,000 tons in 1870, and 8,462,000 tons according to our last returns. Reckoning the carrying power of steamships as fourfold that of sailing ships, we have half the mercantile tonnage of the globe.

“Germany, with a mercantile tonnage of 1,129,000, spends £890,000 on the maintenance and construction of her fleet. France, with 976,000 tons of merchant shipping, expends £2,893,000 on building and repairs, and employs 26,000 workmen in her dock- yards. England, with an excess of tonnage over the French mercantile marine of 7 million tons, employs only 16,000 men in her dockyards, at an expenditure, under votes 6 and 10, of £3,323,000. With these figures before us, it cannot be said that England is leading the way in an aggressive policy, or in the direction of extravagance.”

Comparative View of Navies.—A comparison of the matériel of modern navies would be very misleading if it only took into account the number and

power of the regular ships of war, because for some important services there is but little difference between the value of the ship built for war purposes and of that only adapted to such pur- poses at need. The increasing vulnerability of the ship of war, however carefully built, to weapons which the adapted merchant ship can employ is one of the most notable features in the modern aspect of maritime warfare. The statesman who desires to estimate the naval resources of empires or states will need to consider the quality and extent of their mercantile marine in fast steamships and trained men as well as the number and efficiency of their regular ships of war, and their actual war personnel. A comparison limited to armoured or ironclad ships is vitiated by the defect that it does not account for the protection afforded to what are called unarmoured ships by other means than that of armouring their sides. This is fast becoming so considerable that a new term has been intro- duced (protected ships) to distinguish such vessels from ordinary unarmoured fighting ships.

The fairest available approximate measure of the power of the ships is their displacement or total weight. It always represents power of some kind, although in many cases the distribution of the various elements of power in the ship may be badly suited for many phases of war. Taking this as a measure, and reckoning, not only com- pleted or practically completed ships, but also those in various stages of building, the maritime powers named stand as follows, first as to tonnage of armoured ships,

secondly as to unarmoured ships, and thirdly as to both taken together :—

Tons Displacement. a eS |

Armoured. | Unarmoured. Total. 425,0001] 291,000 | 716,000

127,000 70,000 197,000

105,000 | 72,000 | 177,000

104,000 74,000 178,000

73,000 38,000 111,000

67,000 aye 67,000 60,400 | 32,600 93,000

36,000 85,000 121,000 35,600 * 35,600

29,400 | 14,200 43,600

27,900 16,800 44,700 16,600 2 16,600 14,800 14,800

10,200 ae 10,200

9,000 7,000 16,000

7,300 5,700 13,000

4,100 8,500 12,600

2,500 ; 2,500

- Of this amount complete, z.¢., is building or completing.

183,000 tons is built ef wood, and 155,000 is in-

291

The following facts are noteworthy in connexion with the above figures. (1) Germany, which launched her first ironclad ship in 1864, has not launched one since 1880, and has not one on the slips. (2) The armoured tonnage launched by Italy (1876-88) is greater than that launched by Germany during the same period. (38) The French armoured ships launched before 1873 are, with insignificant exceptions, built of wood. Every armoured ship the French are now building or completing (1883) is of iron or steel. (4) France has in process of construction, z.¢., building or completing, an ironclad navy equal in tonnage to the entire ironclad navy of Germany or Italy built and building ; and equal also in tonnage to all the completed ships in her own navy launched during the previous ten years. (5) France expended in building and completing ships for sea in 1878-77 only one-half what was spent by England in those years. Since 1877 her expenditure on this service has usually equalled, and generally excecded, that of England.

A general survey shows that the great cost of maintain- ing a regular war navy is tending to limit its production and employment in states which either are not wealthy or are obliged to maintain large armies. This must be an increasing tendency for the following reasons. (1) There is a growing necessity for high speed. Commerce increases its speed, and war must at least equal it. High speeds and fair fuel endurance require large coal supplies. The ship with a high speed and large coal supply is already a large ship. To protect such a ship efficiently with armour demands the highest quality of protective material over considerable areas. There is then a further demand for powerful artillery for the purpose of dealing with such armour in an adversary. The attack is constantly develop- ing new methods, and demanding not only the adoption of its weapons but also the creation and adoption of corre- sponding defences against them. So it comes about that nothing but a large and costly ship can take first rank in a regular war navy. (2) The ships so produced need high training in officers and men, and the costly matériel must be accompanied by a correspondingly costly personnel. (3) The warlike usefulness of such ships is narrowed per- petually by the rapidly increasing power of fortresses, aided by torpedoes and torpedo boats, to protect harbours and towns against both attack and blockade. It is narrowed also by their inability to compete in speed and coal endurance with ships not protected or armed. (4) Lastly, and more generally, the occupation of the seas by shipping tends to increase, for economical reasons, in pro- portion as human labour is divided and specialized, and commodities interchanged. This growth in shipping and in the seafaring population will reduce the significance and importance of the single ship of war which it has cost so much to produce.

PERSONNEL OF THE Navy.

The personnel of the British navy is composed of two different bodies of men, the seamen and the marines, each of which has its appropriate officers, The latter body is the subject of a separate article (see MARINES).

Officers —The officers of the navy, exclusive of the marines, are divided into two distinct branches—the military and the civil.

1. The military, or executive, branch consists of the Military undermentioned officers, classed in the order of their Cees

rank:—flag-officers, commodores, captains, staff captains, commanders, staff commanders, lieutenants, navigating lieutenants, sub-lieutenants, chief gunners, chief boat- swains, chief carpenters, gunners, boatswains, carpenters, midshipmen, naval cadets.

Flag-officers are divided into three ranks, viz., rear- Flag- Formerly there were three officer.

admiral, vice-admiral, admiral. subdivisions of each grade, according as the officer belonged to the white, blue, or red squadrons, but this distinction has been abolished (see ADMIRAL). There is also the rank of admiral of the fleet: such an officer, if in com- mand, would carry the union flag at the main.

Captain of the fleet.

The civil powers and duties of the lord high admiral, or lords commissioners of the Admiralty, are treated of in the article Apmirat. Their military powers are more extensive and important. By their orders all ships are built, repaired, fitted for sea, or laid up in reserve, broken up, or sold, put in commission or out of commission, armed, stored, and provisioned, and employed on the home or foreign stations, or on voyages of discovery. All promotion in the several ranks emanates from them ; all honours bestowed for brilliant services, and all pensions, gratuities, and superannuations for wounds, infirmities, and long services are granted by them or on their recom- mendation. All returns from the fleet are sent to the Board of Admiralty, and everything that relates to the discipline and good order of every ship. All orders for the payment of naval moneys are issued to the accountant- general of the navy by the lords commissioners of the Admiralty ; and the annual estimate of the expenses of the navy is prepared by them, and laid before parliament for its sanction. All new inventions and experiments are tried by their orders before being introduced into the service ; all designs of ships must be approved by them ; all repairs, alterations, and improvements in the dockyards, and all new buildings of every description, must be sub- mitted for their decision before they are undertaken.

All flag-officers, commanders-in-chief, are considered as responsible for the conduct of the fleet or squadron under their command. They are bound to keep them in perfect condition for service ; to exercise them frequently in form- ing orders of sailing and lines of battle, and in performing all such evolutions as may occur in the presence of an enemy; to direct the commanders of squadrons and divisions to inspect the state of each ship under their com- mand ; to see that the established rules for good order, discipline, and cleanliness are observed ; and occasionally to inquire into these and other matters themselves. They are required to correspond with the secretary of the Admiralty, and report to him all their proceedings.

Every flag-officer serving in a fleet, but not commanding it, is required to superintend all the ships of the squadron or division placed under his orders, —to see that their crews are properly disciplined, that all orders are punctually attended to, that the stores, provisions, and water are kept as complete as circumstances will admit, that the seamen and marines are frequently exercised, and that every precaution is taken for preserving the health of their crews. When at sea, he is to take care that every ship in his division preserves her station, in whatever line or order of sailing the fleet may be formed ; and in battle he is to observe attentively the conduct of every ship near him, whether of the squadron or division under his immediate command or not; and at the end of the battle he is to report it to the commander-in-chief, in order that commendation or censure may be passed, as the case may appear to merit ; and he is empowered to send an officer to supersede any captain who may misbehave in battle, or whose ship is evidently avoiding the engagement. If any flag-officer be killed in battle his flag is to be kept flying, and signals to be repeated, in the same manner as if he were still alive, until the battle shall be ended; but the death of a flag-officer, or his being rendered incapable of attending to his duty, is to be conveyed as expeditiously as possible to the commander-in-chief.

The captain of the fleet is a temporary rank, where a commander-in-chief has ten or more ships of the line under his command ; it may be compared with that of adjutant- general in the army. He may either be a flag-officer or one of the senior captains; in the former case, he takes his rank with the flag-officers of the fleet ; in the latter, he ranks next to the junior rear-admiral, and is entitled to

the pay and allowance of a rear-admiral. All orders of the commander-in-chief are issued through him, all returns of the fleet are made through him to the commander-in- chief, and he keeps a journal of the proceedings of the fleet, which he transmits every three months to the Admiralty. He is appointed and can be removed from this situation only by the lords commissioners of the Admiralty.

A commodore is a temporary rank, and of two kinds,— Commo. the one having a captain under him in the same ship, and dore,

the other without a captain. The former has the rank, pay, and allowances of a rear-admiral, the latter the pay and allowances of a captain and special allowance as the lords of the Admiralty may direct. They both carry distinguishing pennants.

. When a captain is appointed to command a ship of war Captain,

he commissions the ship by hoisting his pennant; and if fresh out of the dock, and from the hands of the dockyard officers, he proceeds immediately to prepare her for sea, by demanding her stores, provisions, guns, and ammunition from the respective departments, according to her establish-ment. He enters such petty officers, leading seamen, able seamen, ordinary seamen, artificers, stokers, firemen, and boys as may be sent to him from the flag or receiving ship. If he be appointed to succeed the captain of a ship already in commission, he passes a receipt to the said captain for the ship's books, papers, and stores, and becomes respon- sible for the whole of the remaining stores and provisions; and, to enable him to keep a proper check upon the ship's accounts, he is allowed a clerk or assistant-clerk.

The duty of the captain of a ship, with regard to the several books and accounts, pay-books, entry, musters, dis- charges, &c., is regulated by various Acts of Parliament ; but the state of the internal discipline, the order, regularity, cleanliness, and the health of the crews will depend mainly on himself and his officers. In all these respects the general printed orders for his guidance contained in the Queen's Regulations and Admiralty Instructions are particularly precise and minute. And, for the informa- tion

of the ship’s company, he is directed to cause the articles of war, and abstracts of all Acts of Parliament for the encouragement of seamen, and all such orders and regulations for discipline as may be established, to be hung up in some public part of the ship, to which the men may at all times have access. He is also to direct that they be read to the ship’s company, all the officers being present, once at least in every month. He is desired to be particularly careful that the chaplain have shown to him the attention and respect due to his sacred office by all the officers and men, and that divine service be performed every Sunday. He is not authorized to inflict summary punishment on any commissioned or warrant-officer, but he may place them under arrest, and suspend any officer who shall misbehave, until an opportunity shall offer of trying such officer by a court-martial. He is enjoined to be very careful not to suffer the inferior officers or men to be treated with cruelty and oppression by their superiors. He is the authority who can order punishnient to be in- flicted, which he is never to do without sufficient cause, nor ever with greater severity than the offence may really deserve, nor until twenty-four hours after the crime has been committed, which must be specified in the warrant ordering the punishment. He may delegate this authority to a limited extent to certain officers. All the officers and the whole ship’s company are to be present at every punishment, which must be inserted in the log-book, and an abstract sent to the Admiralty every quarter.

The commander has the chief command in small vessels, Com- In larger vessels he is mander

such as sloops and gun-vessels. chief of the staff to the captain, and assists him in main- taining discipline, and in sailing and fighting the ship.

Lieu- tenant.

Navigat- ing officer.

Warrant- officers.

Gunner.

NA

The lieutenants take the watch by turns, and are at such times entrusted, in the absence of the captain, with the command of the ship. The one on duty is to inform the captain of all occurrences which take place during his watch,—as strange sails that may be in sight, signals from other ships in company, change of wind, &c. He is to see that the ship be properly steered, the log hove, and the course and distance entered on the log-board; and, in short, he is to see that the whole of the duties of the ship are carried on with the same punctuality as if the captain himself were present. In the absence of the captain, the commander or senior executive officer is responsible for everything done on board.

The navigating officer receives his orders from the captain or the senior executive officer. His more imme- diate duties are those of stowing the ship's hold and attending to her sailing qualities, of receiving and placing the provisions in the ship, so as most conveniently to come at those which may be wanted. He is to take care that the cables are properly coiled in the tiers. The keys of the spirit-room are in his custody, and he is directed to entrust them only to the officer authorized to use them. He has the charge of the store-rooms of the warrant- officers, which he is ordered frequently to visit ; and he is also entrusted, under the command of the captain, with the charge of navigating the ship, bringing her to anchor, ascertaining the latitude and longitude of her place at sea, surveying harbours, and making such nautical remarks and observations as may be useful to navigation in general. He keeps the ship's log-book and remark-book.

The warrant-officers of the navy may be compared with the non-commissioned officers of the army. They take rank as follows, viz., gunner, boatswain, carpenter ; and, compared with other officers, they take rank after sub-lieu- tenants and before midshipmen. They are charged with the duty of receiving on board from the dockyards, and examining, the stores of their respective departments, and keeping an account of the expenditure of them.

The gunner has the charge of the ship's artillery, and of the powder magazine. He is to see that the locks and carriages are kept in good order, and that the powder is preserved from damp; he is frequently to examine the

musketry and small arms, and to see that they are kept clean and fit for service ; and, in preparing for battle, it is

YW 293

his duty to take care that all the quarters are supplied with everything necessary for the service of the guns, and, during the action, that there be no want of ammunition served out. He is frequently to exercise the men at the guns, and to see that they perform this part of their duty with correctness. The armourer and his mates are under the immediate orders of the gunner in everything that relates to the great guns and small arms.

The boatswain is charged with all the stores belonging Boat- to his department, consisting chiefly of the ropes and rig- swain,

ging, the latter of which he is ordered to inspect daily, in order that any part of it chafed or likely to give way may be repaired without loss of time. He is always required to be on deck at such times as all hands are employed; he is bound to see that the men, when called, move quickly upon deck, and when there that they perform their duty with alacrity, and without noise or confusion. The sail- maker and the ropemaker are under his immediate orders.

The carpenter, when appointed to a ship, is carefully to Car- inspect the state of the masts and the yards, whether in penter.

the dockyard or on board of the ship, to see that they are perfectly sound and in good order. He is to examine every part of the ship's hull, magazine, store-rooms, and cabins. He is every day when at sea carefully to examine into the state of the masts and yards, and to report to the officer of the watch if any appear to be sprung, or in any way defective. He is to see that the ports are secure and properly lined, and that the pumps are kept in good order, as also the boats, ladders, and gratings. The caulker, carpenter's mates, and carpenter's crew are placed under his immediate orders.

The midshipmen are considered as the principal subor- Mid- dinate officers, but have no specific duties assigned to them. shipmen.

In the smaller vessels some of the senior ones are entrusted with the watch ; they attend parties of men sent on shore, pass the word of command on board, and see that the orders of their superiors are carried into effect ; in short, they are exercised in all the duties of their profession, so as, after five years' service as cadets and midshipmen, to qualify them to become lieutenants, and are then rated sub-lieu- tenants provided they have passed the requisite examina- tion, and are nineteen years of age.

2. The civil branch comprises the following officers, whose relative rank is stated against their names :—

Denominaticn of Civil Officer.

. 1, Inspector-gencral of hospitals and fleets… 2. Secretary to an admiral of the fleet…..... 8. Paymaster-in-chief…....sssesccoessererseevenes 4. Chief inspector of machinery…....seseceres 5. Deputy-inspector-general of hospitals and HOO eeeoeneneonebecceac osocans Scouberemoccadananon 6. Inspector Of Machinery…..cccecerscrereeee .---e| Of 8 years' service as such. 7. Sccretary to a commander-in-chief…..... | Of 5 years' service as such. 8. Inspector Of Machincry …....cccecseresceeerererees Under 8 years' service as such. 9. Secretary to a commander-in-chief ….... Under 5 years' service as such. 10. Fleet surgeon 506 10 oon 11. Paymaster…..... con cqnodeconacoguceendeDenbiqucebedsae Of 15 years' seniority. 12, Chief engineer … Of 10 years' seniority.

. Naval instructor …... cogdopenc cagaonesndaboosssanane

. Secretary toa junior flag-officcr,commodore of the 1st class, or captain of the fleet…..

. Staff surgeon.. pasneoocd

. Paymaster…....

- Naval instructor…....0.

BIOHICIMONEINGEL....00cc.ccons-ooecesson+orssentonssnes

. Secretary to a commodore of the 2d class…

Of 15 years' seniority

"| of Sand under 15 years' seniority .| Of 8 and under 15 years' seniority. Under 10 years' seniority.

OMA TVASEET. .0…..100s000000s aodotbarcunieboc gacencota: Under 8 years' senfority. 21. Naval instructor…….....+ Under 8 years' seniority. Ee BUDE COW scecsccas—nceseoese ne ses a8 5 23. Assistant-payMaster……..ss0+esseeesoeee .| Of 8 years' seniority. ENGI Myer. eessennc-s—cacoarsersrersneness ..| Of 8 years' seniority.

. Assistant-pay master PBEM SITIGEM, Wei .cercs ces ease . Chief carpenter ……. . Assistant-engineer… . Carpenter…

..| Under 8 years' seniority. ...| Under 8 years' seniority.

G Chaplains shall not hold any naval rank, but shall retain, w Yeenwich Hospital sliall be considered the head of the chaplains,

hen afloat, the

To rank with

Rear-admira!l, according to the date of commission. Captain of 8 years' seniority, according to the time served as suc secretary.

Captain of 3 ycars' seniority, according to date of commission.

Captain of 3 years, whose seniority will reckon from the completion of such 3 years in that rank; that of the inspector of machinery from the com-pletion of 8 years' service as such.

Captain under 3 years' seniority. The secretary to a commander-in-chief is to reckon his seniority from the date of completing 5 years' scrvice as such.

Commander, according to time served as secretary to a commander-in-chicf.

Commander, according to date of commission. The paymaster, chief engineer, and naval instructor to reckon their seniority from the date of completing 10 or 15 years' seniority in their several ranks respectively ; the ficet surgeon from the date of his commission,

Lieutenant above 8 years' seniority, according to date of commission, but the lieutenant, paymaster, and naval instructor are to reckon their seniority from the date of completing 8 years' seniority in their respective ranks.

With but after lieutenant of 8 ycars' seniority.

} | il

tristena under 8 years' seniority, according to date of commission,

bwith but after licutenant under 8 years' seniority. \ Sub-lieutenant, according to date of coramission.

: With but after sub-licutenant. With but after gunners and boatswains. Midshipman, according to date of passing, Naval cadet, according to date of entry.

position to which their office would cntitle them on shore; and the chaplain of

with the title of chaplain of the fleet.

Engineer,

Pay- The paymaster (formerly purser) has the charge of all pale : : caeoee. moneys belonging to the crown, the conduct of all cash the navy. 'Their numbers in the following five peace years were— officers, transactions, and the charge of all the ship's provisions, and of the serving them out for the use of the crew. The | |,ammais regulations and instructions for his guidance are minutely ioe detailed in the general printed instructions, with all the | | Captains various forms established for the keeping of his accounts | | Commanders. with the accountant-general of the navy, to whom he is immediately responsible. To assist him in the performance In the year 1857

there were on the active list of the navy 371 :; ery Heer le eny ys of his duties there are assistant paymasters and clerks. The | captains, 530 commanders, 1122 lieutenants, and on the retired captain. who is responsible for the strict performance of and reserved list 129 captains, 243 commanders with rank of captain b, x i eee ogee (besides 118 commanders on reserved half-pay), 254 lieutenants the duties of all the officers under his orders, acts as a check | with yank of retired commanders (besides 618 on reserved half-pay). on the paymaster in many parts of his duty regarding the | The total number of captains was therefore 743, commanders 897, slop-books, muster-books, &c. He has also to count at | lieutenants 1740. The warrant-officers increased from the average uncertain times the cash in charge of the paymaster, and of about 400 in 1793 and 700 in 1821 to upwards of 1000 in 1857. tomSée, Gidtuitmcorespendeeteh Eledbaliie. Wemacenn The total number of officers of the royal navy and royal marines in , pP lB * | 1857 was upwards of 7300, excluding mates and midshipmen, clerks, For store duties the paymaster has also a steward under warrant-officers, and engineers, who may be computed at 3000,— his immediate orders. making a grand total of 10,300 officers of all ranks. The duties of the medical inspectors of hospitals and The chronic disproportion between the number of officers on the Rules fleets, the medical officer of a ship and his assistants, the active list and the number for whom it was possible to find employ- for ? se mae? ment led to many difficulties. Promotion stagnated, and officers retire- secretary to the commander-in-chief, the chaplain, the | in the higher ranks remained in the service long after the time ment. naval instructor, and inspectors of machinery afloat are | when in the ordinary course of things they should have been too obvious to require specification. retired for = ee eae arene = le Pipe . . were propose remedy vil. r Childers, when first lord o ale The petty officers are very numerous ; they are classified the Admiralty in 1870, framed a scheme much of which remains * as chief petty officers and first and second class working | in force, although amcndments in it have been found necessary. petty officers. Full details are given in the Navy List, and a large body of in- Regula- The regulations under which candidates for the several branches LS eine eet fee gure ie The 2 tions for of officer are received into the navy will be found in the Navy List, p ad . a a re ae aber an “a fiikesiich we - A 5 admis- which is published quarterly under the authority of the lords com- fhe an oe Eye aur nesealOr the mary wandiurome a be ae f .

sion. missioners of the Admiralty. The limits of age vary with the line | °″ ie ed f Lae 5 me } ieee: f fic a owen... Cadts are euterad! betes ; regular flow of promotion by requiring t ne Tetirement of officers at . AA tale andern tered between the ages of twelve and thirteen certain specified ages, or after non-service afloat, irrespective of and a hali, and they must pass after entry two years in study on : : a board the “ Britannia” before final examination cath fienaeaeh eo ure e oieuier er years Tnpaved Sein ay to a sea-going training ship. Since the foundation and opening of . : ; Uae ; Greenwich Naval Coleg, on 1st Fobruary 187, very great allie | 00, eguasions stand at present admirals and vie admial ee a Roe ee ee naval toa : all sixty, or if their flag has not been hoisted for ten years ; captains arenes em PB ee ROE NON Tees SDE re Teatcdl atthe age of fifty-five, “or at any age if seven years z : ‘ : have elapsed since they last served” ; commanders at the age of Regula- By an order in council, the following regulations are estab- a ’ ‘ ; : ° tions for lished for the promotion of eoliniiesionel officers of the navy. ee ey five Te gut pa ENS yo tomo. Meena Been ee elapsed since they last served”; sub-lieutenants (by order in council p shipmen are required to serve five years as midshipmen or cadet ee on board seute of Nor Wicmmtyrsiien Go redder oF eile + 5th February 1872) are compulsorily retired at the age of forty. ‘ de SPS tO Teneer Ulem ven iwle’ tol | Pomaioadias been given to flag-officers, captains, commanders,

294

The engineer, when first appointed to a steam-vessel, carefully examines the engines, screw (or paddles), and the boilers, and reports to the commanding officer any defects he discovers. He takes charge of all the engineer’s stores and tools, and keeps account of receipts and expenditure. He is never to quit the engine-room during his watch, and visits it frequently at all times day and night. The engine- room artificers, leading stoker, and stokers are under his immediate control.

the rank and situation of lieutenant; and they must be nineteen years of age. To qualify an officer for sub-lieutenant, he must have served the time, and passed the examination, required to qualify for a lientenancy. No lieutenant can be promoted to the rank of commander except for gallantry in action

until he has served four years as lieutenant, three of them at sea; and no commander to the rank of captain except for gallantry in action until he has served two years as commander, one of them at sea. Captains become admirals in succession according to their seniority on the list, provided they shall have commanded four years in a rated ship during war, or six years during peace, or five years in war and peace combined. Appointmentsas navigating lieutenant (formerly master) are no longer made. The old list of masters, now sub- divided into staff captains, staff commanders, and navigating lieutenants, will gradually die out, and the duties will be per- formed by lieutenants and commanders. No person can be appointed gunner unless he shall have served seven years, one of them as gunner's mate or other petty officer, or seaman gunner, on board one or more of Her Majesty's ships; and he must produce a first class certificate in gunnery, and certificates of his good conduct, and undergo the necessary examination. No person can be appointed boatswain unless he shall have served seven years, —one complete year with the rating, and actually doing the duty, of a petty officer in Her Majesty's navy; and he must produce certifi- cates of good conduct, and undergo the necessary examination. No person can be appointed carpenter unless he has been six months a carpenter's mate or caulker, or twelve months with the rating of

fs Y

shipwright or carpentcr's crew, on board one or more of Her Majesty's ships. No person can be appointed chaplain to one of Her Majesty's ships until he has received priest's orders. No person can be appointed paymaster or assistant-paymaster unless he shall have been rated and have discharged the duties of a clerk for three complete years, and shall produce good certificates, Admission to this class is by limited competition for assistant-clerkships. Admission to the medical class is by open competition, Promotion from surgeon to staff surgeon is conferred on qualified officers twelve years from date of entry.

The long-continued wars towards the close of last century neces- Number

sarily created a prodigious increase of the commissioned officers of of

and lieutenants to retire some years sooner than the age of com- pulsory retirement, and arrangements have been made by which they may commute their retired pay, ora part of it, for a lump sum. Staff captains are retired at the age of sixty, ‘‘or at any age if they have not served seven years” ; staff commanders at fifty-five ; and navigating lieutenants at forty-five, or after five years’ non- service, Chief engineers are retired at fifty-five, or after five years’ non-service. Chaplains and naval instructors are retired at the age of sixty, or in case of non-service by the former after five years, by the latter after three years, Of medical officers, inspectors and deputy-inspectors of hospitals are retired at sixty, or after five years’ non-service ; fleet surgeons, staff surgeons, and surgeons at fifty- five, or in each case after five years’ non-service. Paymasters are retired at sixty. Permission is accorded to these officers also to retire five years sooner than the maximum age.

A maximum establishment of warrant-officers has been fixed, and ages specified at which retirement is compulsory. The object has been to favour promotion, the employment of none but vigorous men, and to reduce the list to the maximum number itis considered desirable to employ.

At present (1883) the total number of the officers of Present the royal navy and royal marines is about 7900. Of these number

0

upwards of 2100 are in the ranks of engineer officers, sub- offiea

lieutenants, midshipmen, naval cadets, clerks, &., an warrant-officers.

-niform.

Crew.

Admis- sion of boys.

Tmpregs- ment in time of war,

Nay ¥

All officers of the navy wear a uniform, which is

established in pursuance of the pleasure of the sovereign.

It consists of blue cloth, with white collars and cufis to The the officers of the civil branch of the service

the coats, and various embroidery and epaulets. epaulets of

are embroidered in gold and silver. The full dress, with

cocked hats, is worn on state occasions and at courts-martial The first naval uniform (blue and

by all naval officers. white) was established in 1748. The identical patterns then issued may now be seen in the United Service Institution.

the uniform was in 1856. at any time be ascertained by reference to the current number of the Navy List.

Men.—The crew of a ship of war consists of leading seamen, able seamen, ordinary seamen, engine-room artifi-

cers, other artificers, leading stokers, stokers, coal-trimmers, boys, and marines. The artificers and stokers and the marines are always entered voluntarily, the latter in the same manner as soldiers, by enlisting into the corps, the former at some rendezvous or on board particular ships. The supply of boys for the navy, from whom the seamen class of men and petty officers is recruited, is also obtained by voluntary entry. :

The conditions under which boys are entered in Her Majesty’s navy are as follows:—All entrants must understand that they are

bound to serve continuously for ten years from the time of their attaining the age of eighteen ; and they will be required to sign an engagement to that effect ; but no boy will be entered without

the written consent of his parents, guardians, or nearest relations. The age for entry is from fifteen to sixteen and a half, and the following are the

present standards as to height, &c., which, how- ever, are liable to alteration :—

g Measurement (without Shoes). | round the Chest.

Boys between 15 and 153…….....

16

30 in.

308 ,,

”

” ”

They must produce a certificate of birth, or a declaration made by their parents or guardians before a magistrate, to show they are of the proper age. They must also be of sound constitution, not subject to fits, free from any physical defects or malformation, and able to read and write. No boys will be received from reformatories or prisons, or if they have been committed by a magistrate ; but boys may be admitted from industrial school ships.

Able and ordinary seamen are seldom admitted direct into the navy, as the system of training boys proves very satisfactory. Volunteers are occasionally entered, especially from the naval reserve, and no doubt a large supply of men could be obtained if sought for. The wages given in the merchant service may be higher, but in all other respects the treatment is far superior in the navy: the men have better provisions, continuous employment, and leave on full pay, are subject to much less fatigue and exposure to the weather, are well taken care of in sick- ness, and are entitled to pensions after twenty years’ service or when disabled.

Merchant seamen are admitted into the royal naval reserve, receive an annual payment by way of retainer, perform drill on board Her Majesty’s ships, and are engaged to serve in the navy in case of war or emergency.

Including the fishermen and boys, who form the second and third classes of this reserve, it is to consist of about 20,000 men.

The speedy manning of the fleet, on the first breaking out of a war, is one of the most important duties that can fall on the naval administration. A variety of schemes have been brought forward for attaining this end, but all of them have heretofore failed of success, except the compulsory mode of raising men, under the authority of

press warrants, issued by the lords commissioners of

the Admiralty, by virtue of an order in council,

In the reign of William IV. the facings were for a short time changed to red. The last alteration of The existing regulations may

renewed from year to year. On the occasion of the war with Russia in 1855, however, the fleet was manned, for the first time, without recourse to impressment. There likewise issues, on the breaking out of a war, a proclama- tion from the sovereign, recalling all British seamen out of the service of foreign princes or states; and comnianders of all ships of war are directed to search foreign vessels for such seamen.

The impressment of seafaring men, however anomalous under a free constitution like that of Great Britain, is defensible on state necessity, until it can be shown that the fleet, on an emergency, is capable of being manned without resorting to that measure. In consequence of some doubts being raised on the legality of impressment in the year 1676, when the affairs of the Admiralty were managed immediately under the direction of the king and the great officers of state, a discussion was held on this point, when it was decided by the judges and crown lawyers, that the king had an indefeasible right to the services of his subjects when the state required them, and that the power of impressing seamen was inherent in the crown, seeing that without it the trade and safety of the nation could not be secured. In the Black Book of the Admiralty is an order by Sir Thomas Beaufort, high admiral to Henry IV., commanding the impressment of mariners for

service in the barge “E. de 8,” and punishments were provided for those who failed in service. The statute 2 Ric. II. c. 4 speaks of mariners being arrested and retained for the king’s service as of a thing well known and practised without dispute, and provides a remedy against their running away. By statute 2 & 3 Phil. and M. c. 16 any Thames waterman hiding during the execution of a commission of pressing for the royal service is liable to heavy penalties. By 5 Eliz. c. 5 fishermen are exempted from impressment. The subject of impressment is dealt with in many statutes down to the time of George III., and the power to impress in case of necessity is still conferred by the sovereign in the Admiralty patent. At the present stage of the world’s history, however, this power would not be enforced, except upon application of the maxim “salus populi suprema lex.” The first instance of impressing men in Ireland seems to have been in the year 1678, when the lord-lieutenant received directions from the privy council to raise 1000 seamen for the fleet. In 1690 the lords-justices of Ireland were directed to assist the officers of the navy in impress- ing men in that kingdom. In 1697 a register was taken of all the seafaring men in Ireland, which amounted to 4424 men, of whom it is noted 2654 were Catholics. On several occasions, during Queen Anne’s reign, the lords-justices of Ireland received directions to raise men to serve in the fleet.

In Scotland the mode of raising men by impressment was unknown before the Union; but in various instances the council of Scotland was directed to raise volunteers for the fleet, each man to have 40s. as bounty.

In 1706 an experiment was tried for the speedy manning of the fleet, by virtue of an Act of Parliament, which required the civil magistrates of all the counties to make diligent search for all seafaring men, and 20s. were allowed to the constables for each man taken up,—the seamen to have pay from the day of delivery to the naval officers stationed to receive them; if they deserted after that, they were to be considered as guilty of felony. By the same Act, insolvent debtors, fit for the service, and willing to enter it, were released, provided the debt did not ex- ceed £30; and no seaman in the fleet was to be arrested for any debt not exceeding £20. The whole proceeding under this Act incurred a very heavy expense, and totally failed.

Reserve,

Govern- ment and dis- cipline.

296

In the same year the queen referred to the prince of Denmark, then lord high admiral, an address from the House of Lords, relating to the three following points :— (1) the most effectual means for manning the fleet; (2) the encouragement and increase of the number of seamen ; (3) the restoring and preserving the discipline of the navy. His royal highness submitted these points to such of the flag-officers and other commanders as could be assembled, who made a report, recommending (1) that a general register should be kept of all seafaring men in England and Ireland, and that all marines qualified to act as sea- men should be discharged from the army; and (2) that not fewer than 20,000 seamen should be kept in employ in time of peace. With regard to the discipline of the navy, they observed that, no particular defect being specified,

they could pronounce no opinion on that head.

eserve.—In addition to the seamen and marines borne on the strength of the navy, there are four lines of reserves at the disposal of the Admiralty :—the coastguard, the seaman pensioner reserve, the royal naval reserve, and the royal naval artillery volunteers.

To qualify a seaman for admission to the coastguard he must be under thirty-seven years of age, have completed eight ycars' con- tinuous service in man's rating, or such period as the lords com-

missioners of the Admiralty may from time to time direct, be either,

a seaman gunner or trained man, be in possession of at least one good conduet badge, and be recommended by his captain.

Petty officers and seamen of Her Majesty's navy, on being pen- sioned for length of service, are eligible for enrolment in the seaman pensioner reserve provided they are eithcr seamen gunners or trained men, and are under forty-five years of age. Men in the scaman pensioner reserve are required to undergo fourteen days' training annually, and on attaining the age of fifty

they are granted the Greenwich Hospital age pension and exempted from further drill, provided they have attcnded drill every year, and not less than six periods of such drill.

The royal naval reserve comprises those officers and men of the mercantile marine and fishermen who are willing, in consideration of a small retaining salary, to undergo each year a certain number of days' training on board a ship of war or at a naval reserve battery. The regulations in force for the appointment of officers to the royal naval reserve are published in each issue of the Navy List. The inen are divided into three classes. (1) For enrolment in the first class a man must be under thirty years of age, and show proof of at least eight years' sea service in foreigu-going or regular coasting vessels within the ten ycars immediately preceding his application, and must have obtained and held the rating of A.B. three years prior to the expiration of such service, or have completed his indentures as an apprentice for a term of not less than four years, one year of which has been served in foreign-going or regular coasting vessels. Men who have been discharged from the royal navy as able seamen with good characters may be enrolled in the reserve if they are physically fit, provided they do not excecd thirty- five years of age. (2) Candidates for enrolment in the second class reserve must not be under nineteen nor above thirty years of age, and must have followed a seafaring life either in foreign-going, coasting, fishing, or other vessels for three years, of which six nionths at least must have been as ordinary seaman; they must know the compass, and be able to steer and to pull a good oar. (3) Boys who have been eighteen months under training in a mercantile training ship are eligible for enrolment in the third class reserve at the age of sixteen, provided they are under engagement to join a merchant ship for sea service, are 1 hysically and mentally fit, and can show satisfactory proficiency in gunnery drills, as well as in certain elementary subjects connected with navigation and seamanship. They arc eligible for promotion to the second class at the age of nineteen provided they have served six months at sea, and afterwards to the first-class reserve when in all respects qualified as above. Every enrolment in the royal naval reserve is for a period of five years, and on promotion from a lower to a higher class the man is required to re-enrol. The force was originated in 1859, and the officers and men are liable to be called out for general service in the fleet in the event of war.

The royal naval artillery volunteers are enrolled under conditions somewhat akin to those attaching to cnrolment in volunteer regiments. Brigades of this force have been formed at London, Liverpool, and Bristol, with batteries at Brighton, Hastings, Southport, Birkenhead, Carnarvon, Bangor, and Swansea.

The discipline of the navy, or the government of Her Majesty's ships, vessels, and forces by sea, is regulated by the Naval Discipline Act 29 & 30 Vict. c. 109. The Consolidation Act 22 Geo. IL ¢. 33 replaced the

i a Wy

first parliamentary enactment for the government of the fleet (13 Car. II. § 1, c. 9), and was passed after the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, "to remedy some defects which were of fatal consequence in conducting the preceding war." Previously to the statute of Charles IT. the government and discipline as well as the pay of the navy had depended, like the government and pay of the army, upon the quasi-household orders of the sovereign.

Under the Naval Discipline Act, the lords commissioners of the Admiralty are empowered to order courts-martial for all offences mentioned therein, and committed by any person in and belonging to the fleet and on full pay ; and also to delegate the same power to officers in command of fleets and squadrons on foreign stations, which power also may devolve on their successors in casc of death or recall. By this Act no court-martial can consist of more than nino or of less than five persons, to be composed of such flag-officers, captains, commanders, and lieutenants, then and there present, as are next in seniority to the officer who presides at the court-martial. Commanders. and lieutenants are not required to sit when four officers of higher rank, and junior to the president, can be assembled.

The former penalty of death for cowardice, or other neglect of duty, in time of action, and for not pursuing the enemy, was, by the 19th George IIL, so far mitigated as to authorize the court-martial "to pronounce sentence of death or to inflict such other punishment as the nature and degree of the offence shall be found to deserve." Under these articles thus mitigated, Admiral Byng would probably not have been condemned to death. The provisions of the present Act (29 & 30 Vict. c. 109) confine sentence of death,

without alternative, to cases of traitorous misconduct in the presence of the enemy, and murder. All other offences which were formerly capital may now be dealt with either by sentence of death or by such other punishment as the court may think fit to award under the provisions of the Act ; and penal servitude or imprison- ment, with dismissal from the service, are now the severest sentences awarded, flogging having been practically abolished.

The discipline of the navy is also maintained by a system of summary punishments, including short terms of imprisonment, which can be awarded by the captains of ships, under the regulations issued from time to time by the lords of the Admiralty.

The first regular code of printed instructions would appear to be that known as the Duke of York's Sailing and Inghting Instructions, bearing date about 1660, which formed the basis of all the subsequent ones. Much, how- ever, of the internal discipline of a ship of war depends upon the captain ; that officer being empowered to punish the men for minor offences, according to the usage of the service, courts-martial on seamen are rarely found ncces- sary In well-regulated ships. In 1853 a more uniform system, defining the nature and duration of minor punish- ments, was promulgated by the Board of Admiralty.

RE ae

By the general printed instructions, the captains of Training.

Her Majesty's ships are required to accustom the men to assemble at their proper quarters, to exercise them at the great guns, to teach them to point, fire, &c., under all circumstances of sea and weather. Practice in these respects is obviously much more necessary on board ships than on shore. :

At Portsmouth and Devonport regular instruction is given in the theory and practice of gunnery, in the principles which regulate projectiles, in the theory and manipulation of torpedoes, in the use of small arms, and in all the scientific departments of the art of war. Chemistry and electricity as applied to war and warlike stores are also

Hygiene.

NAY ¥

taught practically, and every inducement is given to officers to study and to qualify for the post of gunnery officers in the fleet. Extra rates of pay are given to gunnery lieu- tenants according to their proficiency. For the training of the men, who up to 1852 were almost devoid of special skill, there was created a class of "'seamen gunners" who act as instructors on board ship, under the orders of the gunnery officer. Examinations are held at stated times for the purpose of testing the progress made by officers under training. In the higher education of naval men at Greenwich College gunnery forms one of the principal features.

The necessity for this special training, and for special efforts to induce men to undergo it, will be evident upon comparison between the guns of thirty years ago and those of the present day. The cannon with which the greatest victories of the British navy were won were 12-, 16-, and 24-pounders. Out of 104 guns carried by Nelson's "Victory," 44 were 12-pounders, 30 were 24-pounders, and only 30 were 32's. In the Russian War, 56's and a few 68's constituted the armament of the large war-ships. Now ships go about with 2000-pounder guns—of most scientific make and character. For the proper handling and management of these refined engines of destruction it is clear that very special knowledge and very careful training are required. The issues involved in miss or hit are too momentous to be left to careless or ignorant hands.

The state of health on board of a ship of war is, generally speaking, not exceeded in the most favoured spot on shore; and the sea-scurvy may now be considered as unknown in the British navy, since the universal intro- duction of lemon juice, or citric acid, without an ample supply of which no ship is permitted to sail on a foreign voyage. From the official returns collected by Sir Gilbert Blane, M. Dupin, a French author well versed in naval subjects, drew out the following table, which exhibits at one view the progressive diminution of sickness, death, and desertion in the British navy, calculated on 100,000 men :—

gee Deaths. Desertions.

1779 40,815 2,654 1,424 1782 31,617 1) 993

1794 25,027 1,164 662 |

1804 11,978 1,606 914

1813 9,336 698 | 10 |

Hence it would appear that the diminution of sickness and of deaths was in the proportion of 4 to 1 nearly between the years 1799 and 1813. The diminution of desertions from the hospital in the same period is not less remarkable,

The following returns, of more recent date, show the advance of medical science in this department :—

Sick sent to Dead in Run from

llospitals. Hospitals. Hospitals.

1820 3,564 362 2 1830 3,187 187 2 1840 6,589 225 1

1850 9,743 309 E 1855 | 11,748 384 | 2

Annexed is a memorandum showing the invaliding and death-rates in the navy afloat, including the deaths In hospital, from 1856 to 1881. Comparison with the dead lists of former years, even those cited above, will show the wonderful decrease caused by greater medical knowledge and better sanitary arrangements on board ship, This will be the more apparent when it is borne in

mind that the old statistics show only the deaths in hospital, not those which occurred on board ship, through disease or the enemy. The high death-rate of 1870 is accounted for by the sad loss of the ‘‘Captain”; and those of 1878, 1880, and 1881 by the sinking of the “Eurydice” and “ Atalanta” and the blowing up of the “ Doterel.”

Average Invalided. Dead. Complements) | eolrected = | Ratio From | From Ratio for Time. | Number. Total. | per 1000. 1856 51,730 998 | 193 1857 42470 1,460 | 344 1858 43,120 1,763 | 40-9 1859 52,825 1,994 | 377 1860 64,1125 2344 | 444 1861 62,485 2,301 | 382 1862 58,870 1944 | 33: 1863 54,090 1903 | 351 52,500 as 1864 { Lae 1.881 | 35-4

, 50,660!

1865 451‘210f | 1,687 | 32:9

48-775

1866 104 3t 1,698 | 343

50,110 : ‘

1867 { 31000 | 1,492 | 29-2 432 | 155 587 | 115 |

50,390

1868 451/220 1,785 | 84-9 333 | 197 460 | 89

43,550 ‘. .

1869 49/8205 1,374 | 32-2 358 | 126 | 484] 99

43,350)

1870 terior | 1646 | 852 315 | 603 | 918| 196 (47,260 . ™ ” isl | {7 ae 1,528 | 92 302 | 102 | 404] 85 – 46,710 ; a 1872 467830; 1co9 | 34:3 206 | 119 | 385] 82 1873 45,440 1688 | 37-1 74 | 104 | 378 | 93 1874 44,530 1745 | 391 301 | 121 422 | 94 1875 44,360 i526 | 34-4 304 | 88 | 392] 88 1876 45,010 1.636 | 3634 | 270 | 146 | 416] 9-24 1877 44,940 1613 | 3589 | 221 | 96 | 317| 705 1878 46,400 1ee2 | 3581 | 247 | 429 | 669 | 14-41 1879 44,745 1475 | 32°96 | 279 | 105 | 384| 8-58 1880 44,770 1.393 | sll 207 | 356 | 563 | 12:57 1881 44,400 1.388 | 3126 | 234 | 252 | 4×6! 10-94 1272515 | eae ; 1 es ee Totals… | Tors’ogs | #4288 | 846 | 10,888 | 5.228 | 16,116 | 12:59

The encouragement given to the navy from its first regular Pay.

establishment has marked it asa favourite service. The sea-pay, the half-pay, and other emoluments have generally been superior to those enjoyed by the. army, but subject to great fluctuations in every reign, and to frequent changes in the same reign. From the Black Book of the Admiralty it appears that the pay of the navy was fixed as follows in the time of Richard II.:—‘‘ If the admirall bee knight batchellor hee shall have every day at sea four shillings for himselfe, and for each chevalier gooing in his company two shillings, and for every escuier arme twelvepence a day ; and shall have in consideration of thirty hommes d’armes, at the end of each quarter of a yeare, one hundred markes, and so hee shall have for every one. And shall also have for each archer sixpence a day. And soo everyone of his captains shall have theire wages of him. And if the admirall is a baron he shall have six shillings and eight- pence a day; and if hee is an earle hee shall have thirteen shillings and fourpence a day.” The admiral had also fourpence in the pound for all wages paid for his fleet ; but out of this he had ‘““in the night tyme, all the while that the fleet is at sea, to carry at the topp of his mast two lanthornes, to the end that all the masters of the ffleet my know and perceive by the light and the admirall’s course, what course they shall steer.” ‘‘As to the marriners wages upon the voyages of the king or the admirall, each master of a shipp shall have sixpence a day, and every constable (or gunner) of the ffleet shall have the same wages by the day. Each marriner shall have threepence halfpenny per diem, and each marriner shall have sixpence yer week for consideration” (or bounty), ‘‘and eacli sea boy shall have twopence halfpenny per diem.”

The establishment of half-pay was of slow growth. Though the navy, as we have seen, was put upon a regular establishment under the reign of Henry VIII., neither officers nor seamen received any pay or emolument in time of peace until the reign of Charles II., when in 1668 certain allowances were made to flag- officers and their captains out of the £200,000 a year voted for the whole naval service ; and in 1674 certain other allowances were granted, by order in council, to captains who had commanded ships of the first and second rates, and to the second captains to flag- officers, on the ground, as assigned.in the preamble, that they had undergone the brunt of the war, without sharing in the incident advantages of it, as prizes, convoys, and such like, which the com- manders of the small classes of ships had enjoyed. But the first regular establishment of half-pay for all flag-officers,

captains, first- lieutenants, and masters was by King William, in the year 1693,

MVIL =e 36

Prize- money.

Other rewards.

Cost and number of men.

208

rovided they had served a year in their respective qualities, or had been in a general engagement with the enemy. A regularly estab- lished half-pay was further sanctioned by an order in council of Qucen Anne in 1700, the conditions of which were, that no officer should enjoy the benefit thereof who had absented himself without permission of the lord high admiral or lords commissioners of the Admiralty, or who had been dismissed for any misdemeanour or by court-martial, or who had not behaved himself to the satis- faction of the lord high admiral, or who should have leisure to go out of His Majesty's dominions, if employed in the merchant service or otherwise, or who enjoyed the benefit of any public employment. Since the above pcriod the rate of half-pay to the several officers of the navy has undergone various modifications. It has included within its area of benefit a larger number of elasses of officers. It has also increased enormously in bulk as a non-effective service charge. So great was the increase in this respect, notwithstanding the subdivision of the half-pay list into 'retired? and "reserved" sections in addition to the ''active" half-pay list, that in the interest of the officers themselves, as well as of the country, it became necessary in 1869 to make a scheme of retirement, in accordance with which officers on the half-pay list, from whatever cause, for more than a prescribed number of years, were permanently retired, and allowed to drawa retired pay, or to commute for a capital sum the valuc of their pay. Half-pay is not given to officers below the rank of sub-lieutenant in the military branch, or of paymaster in the civil. For further details see the Navy List.

Prize-Money.—This additional incentive to exertion on the part of officers and seamen on board ships of war dates from the earliest time. At an early date rules and regulations were made for the due apportionment of prize of war, a large portion going to the king and his admiral. In 1793 precise regulations, in the present sense of the word, were first issued. By them the proceeds arising from eaptures from the enemy were divided into eight equal parts, and were distributed by order of ranks. These have been amended from time to time, and were the subject of special orders in March 1854, The existing orders are contained in a royal proclamation dated May 1871, and direct, subject to the under-mentioned provisos, that one-thirtieth part of the value of prizes shall go to the admiral in command of the capturing vessels (if two admirals they arc to divide the thirtieth, the senior taking two-thirds, the junior one- third), and of the remainder, or of the whole if no flag share is payable, the captain is entitled toa tenth of the entire proceeds. After these deductions the remainder of the net proceeds is to be distributed in ten classes, so that each officer, man, and boy assisting iu the capture of the prize shall receive shares, or a share, according to his class. Officers in the first class, including inspectors-general of hospitals afloat, inspectors of steam machinery, secretary to com- mander-in-chief, are to receive forty-five shares each ; in the second class, including senior lieutenant, staff surgeon, and certain pay- masters, thirty-five shares each ; in the third class, lieutenants, surgeons, captain of marines, and some others, thirty shares each ; in the fourth class, including lieutenants of marines, sub-lieutenants, and warrant-officers, twenty shares each. To the fifth class twelve shares each are assigned; to the sixth, ten shares each; to the seventh, seven shares ; to the eighth, including able seamen, four shares ; to the hinth, including ‘‘idlers,” two shares; and to the tenth, boys, one share. centage charged upon treasure, which, for security’s sake, may be conveyed in ships of war on merchants’ account.

Another great encouragement for young men to enter the naval service arises from the honours bestowed by the sovereign for any brilliant exploit. Exclusive of peerages and baronetcies, the honours bestowed for gallant conduct in the uaval service at present (1883) are the titles of knights grand-crosses of the military order of the Bath, and knights commanders and companions of the Bath, in addition to which there are the civil order of the Bath, and, for colonial services, the order of St Michael and St George.

Royal medals have also been granted of late years for various naval services, and distributed alike to the officers, seamen, and marines; and a number of officers, seamen, and marines have received the Victoria Cross. Good-service pensions are also awarded to a certain number of flag-officers, captains, and general and field-officers of marines. These are selected according to their standing, and length and nature of services, a statement of which is given, in each case, in the annual naval estimates presented to parliament. The amount of the good-service pension ranges from £100 to £300, according to rank and service. There are also naval and Greenwich Hospital pensions established for the relief of retired officers of long service, who are old, infirm, wounded, or disabled. Some of these pensions are allotted to each class of officers.

The cost of the British navy has necessarily varied with the times, with the materials used in the construction of ships, and with the number of men borne on the strength of the fleet. The highest number of men borne in the navy was in 1813—when 147,047 seamen and marines

Another source of emolument is the per-.

NAVY

were borne, and when the total charge was £21,212,012, and the year ended with a navy debt of £8,562,291, This was the largest charge ever made for the navy, except in 1855 (the year of war with Russia), when the charge was £21,394, 216.

Below is a statement showing the number of men voted, the number actually borne, and the charge, for typical years between 1690 and 1881 :—

Grant for » | Total borne on|., 4: Navy Debt at Roe Ships’ Books. Of ye ae End of Year.

1691 29,270 85,317 £1,640,760 se 1700 7,000 7,754 638,142 £1,334,282

1710 40,000 46,498 2,096,000 5,655,585 1720 13,500 21,188 1,321,572 1,503,687 1730 10,000 9,686 837,786 1,396,723 1740 35,000 37,181 1,938,704 1,801,525 1750 10,000 11,691 995,521 1,716,923 1760 70,000

86,626 4,926,680 5,228,695 1780 85,000 97,898 6,782,284 10,372,628 1800 110,538 123,527 11,366,579 8,705,886 1810 145,000 146,312 15,801,184 5,591,822 1820 23,000 28,985 6,340,771 1,193,455 18380 29,000 31,160 5,184,955 1,314,060

1840-41 37,456 37,665 5,742,871 abe

1850-51 39,000 39,098 5,772,652 1860-61 84,100 79,018 12,644,570 1868-69 66.770 66,278 10,806,690 1880-81 58,800 57,946 10,321,435

- Including marines, who first appear in 1702 to 1712, and disappear between 17138 and 1738.

¢ Including marines on shore.

¢ After excluding ordnance and conveyance of troops.

In reviewing her resources generally for manning the navy, England may, as Sir Thomas Brassey says, fairly look to the reserves, no less than to the number of men actually borne for fleet service. The coastguard on shore has been maintained for many years at an average strength of 4000 men. The naval reserves have averaged, between 1868 and 1881, 15,785 men. The same authority gave the following figures in 1882 :—pensioner reserve, 1560; first class royal naval reserve, 11,800; second class, 5600; third class, 150; and naval artillery volunteers, 1400. The total reserve for manning a war navy was considered by him to be not less than 40,000 men.

Personnel of Modern Navies Compared.

In any comparison of the personnel of modern navies, the question of the strength of the mercantile marine is more important than it is in relation to the matériel. Sir T. Brassey reminds us that, of the 140 English ships which were assembled to oppose the Spanish Armada, only 28 belonged to the royal navy, and that Drake, Hawkins, and Frobisher, who commanded the fleet under Lord Howard, were masters in the merchant navy; also that Howe’s victory of lst June 1794 was gained by the merchant sea- men of the kingdom. It is estimated by the same authority that, if the system of naval conscription existing in France were applied to England so as to

include, as it does in France, the crews of coasters, fishermen, boatmen, and the workmen in the private shipbuilding yards and the dockyards, there would be a roll of from 700,000 to 800,000 men.

France. —The system here was established under Louis XIV., and it comprises a term of compulsory service, by means of which France inscribes on her rolls some 170,000 men, of whom the great majority are fishermen.!

The personnel of the navy below the rank of officer is recruited, (1) by the men of the maritime inscription, (2) by voluntary engagements, and (3) in the case of an insufficiency of men of the first two categories, by a contingent from the general recruiting of the country told off for the navy.

1. Every individual, having completed eighteen years of age, who has made two long voyages (au long cours) either on Govern- ment or on merchant ships, or who can count eighteen months of

navigation or two years of coast fishing, and who declares his intention of continuing a scafaring life, is inscribed as a sailor, aud

1 See The Armed Strength of France, published (1877) under the superintendence of H.M. Stationery Office.

ean be levied for the service of the fleet. Every sailor who is in- seribed is ealled into aetive service on completing twenty years of age. During the month in whieh he aceomplishes his twentieth year, or during the month whieh follows his return to Franee, he is bound to present himself before a commissary of the maritime inseription. He is then enrolled, sent to a port whieh is the chief town of an arrondissement, and incorporated in a division of sailors of the fleet. If he be considered fit for service, he can, from the age of eighteen years, forestall his call to active service. The young sailor who joins at eighteen years of age performs his service in two periods. During the first, which lasts for five years, he may, when in France, be given renewable furlough without pay, and can then devote himself to navigation of any description. After this first period he remains for two

years longer in the same conditions, on renewable furlough. The time passed in this position of renewable furlough is counted as service to the state for every sailor who engages to navigate only in coasting voyages or in home fishing. After this latter period the sailor cannot again be called out except by deeree in case of emergency. After serving for three years, the sailor who has not been sent on furlough is entitled to an increase of 2d. to his daily pay. The levies of sailors for duty with the fleet are first made amongst those who have not hitherto rendered any service to the state, then, in case of insufficiency, amongst those who have the least service, or, in case of equal service, those are taken who have been longest on furlough. Inscribed sailors have alone the right of carrying on maritime navigation or coast fishing, and enjoy various other privileges and immunities. The minimum age for the engagement of naval apprentices is eighteen years, the privilege of making an engagement at sixteen years being reserved to young men leaving the school for ship boys, and to those specially selected by the minister. The maximum age for young men who have not rendered any service to the state is fixed at twenty-four years. This is increased to thirty for musicians, stokers, earpenters, sailmakers, and caulkers who can count at least five years' previous service since the age of sixteen. For pupils and quartermaster mechanicians (quartiers-mattres mécaniciens) and working mechanicians (owvriers mécanicicns) the minimum limit of age is eighteen and the maximum twenty-five, if they have not previously served the state, or thirty if they belong to either of the eallings above mentioned and have rendered previous service to the state.

2. Voluntary engagements are only allowed aeeording to the requirements of the service. They cannot be made in the colonies. The conditions are the same as for the army. The engagement is made for five years, Re-engagements can be made by sailors of the fleet for three, four, or five years. They are without conditions of age or service, provided only that their length would not retain warrant officers (officiers mariniers) in the service beyond the age of fifty-five, and quartermasters and sailors beyond fifty, if they can unite with this age a service of twenty-five years.

8. For men of the navy who do not belong to the maritime inseription, the time of service is five years and in the reserve four years. They then pass immediately into the reserve of the terri- torial army, in which they remain

until they attain forty years of age. The contingent is furnished in proper proportion from each eanton, and is eomposed of the young men comprised in the first part of the eantonal reeruiting list, to whom the lowest numbers have fallen when drawing lots.

The number of men obtained by the general recruiting was 6056 In 1873, 7040 in 1874, 6406 im 1875, and 4326 in 1876.

The sailors on shore are divided into five divisions, of which two (those at Brest and Toulon) are of the first class and three are of the seeond class. In each division there is a council of administra- tion, entrusted with clothing and pay duties, and, in fact, with all administrative questions. ach first class division consists of a staff and of depét companies, as follows:—one company of seamen gunners (matelots canonniers), one company of seamen fusiliers (matelots fusiliers), one company of mechanicians and stokers, three eompanies of sailors of the maritime inscription, one eom- pany of sailors from the general recruiting. The divisions of the second class are each composed of a staff and depdt companies as follows:—one company of special branches, two companies of sailors of the maritime inscription and from the general recruiting. Kaeh of these companies is divided into two sections. The division at Lorient comprises, in addition, an instruction battalion of fusilier apprentices. In each division there is an elementary school, a sehool for teaching bookkeeping to quartermaster-serjeants, a symnasium, a feneing school, and a swimming school. In the two first divisions there are also music schools. The first masters and second masters belonging to the different special branches and pro- fessions form the cadre of the warrant officers of the flect. When of equal grade, they are classed in the following order:—navigation, gunnery, musketry, steering, mechanicians, carpenters, sailmakers, and eaulkers. When not serving afloat or in the divisions, these masters are placed in disponibilité at their homes, with redueed pay, and are reealled to aetive service according to roster. The

udget for 1878 shows that eighty-nine offcicrs de vaisseau are to be

employed with the shore divisions of crews and with the establish- ment for pupils) The number of men provided for is as below (bandmasters, officers,

quartermasters, sailors, boys, and super- numeraries):—on shore, 8438; afloat, 25,063; reserve, 1607; total,

35,108.

The marine infantry is not employed inservice on board men-of- war in the samc manner as the marines of the British navy. Its duties are to garrison the five military ports and the colonies, and to take part in maritime and other wars. When necessary, it fur- nishes detachments on board ships belonging to the state.

Germany.1—The whole of the maritime population, inclusive of the technical personnel, are absolved from land duties, but arc liable to serve in the flect. The distribution of the annual levy is dependent upon the seafaring population, the quota contributed by each state being deducted from its whole liability for the land and seaforces. It used to be the practice to draw exclusively from the seafaring population of the provinces of Prussia, Pomerania, Hanover, Schleswig-Holstein, and other federal states, but it has been found necessary to draw upon the land population of the above provinces in order to make up the required quota.

The personnel of the navy ineludes the following offieers, non-eommissioned officers, and men :—1 ehief of the admiralty, 4 rear-admirals, 17 (23) captains, 36 (63) captains of corvette, 65 (165) captain lientenants, 104 (118) lieutenants, 86 (140) sub-lieutenants, and 100 (229) naval cadets, 83 (147) deck officers, 580 (1546) uon- commissioned offieers of seamen, 4290 (10,267) seamen, 330 (499) non-commissioned officers. Besides these there are 12 engineers, 90 (304) deck officers (engineers and masters), 110 (189) engineers' mates, 28 engineers' apprentices, 580 (2131) firemen, 154 (570) masters' mates, 450 (698) meehanics, 84 (154) staff sergeants for police purposes.

Every German (except in a few well-defined cases) is liable to service in the army or navy, and is not allowed to provide a sub- stitute nor to purchase exemption. Liability to service commenees with the completion of the seventecnth year, and lasts until the close of the forty-seeond year of age. Of this time, twelve years must be passed in the standing army and landwehr in the ease of a soldier, in the fleet and seewehr in the case of a

seaman. All men liable to service, who may not be ealled into the standing army, fleet, landwehr, or seewehr, are liable to be ealled ont in the Jandsturm in time of war. The estimated seafaring population of North Germany is about 80,000, ineluding fishermen and dock labourers.

Italy.2—The annual classifieation of all individuals fitted for sea service takes place according to fixed instructions. The men who are passed as fit and suited for the navy are divided into two categories by lot. Those of the first category are drawn into the service, and have to serve four years either on board or on shore (they pass the remaining six years on unlimited furlough). The men of the second category, however, are allowed to go at once on unlimited furlough, and are only called up in case of war or similar emergeucy. They are also liable for service for ten years. Volunteers aud boys trained at the various naval training establish- ments are obliged to serve eight years continuously. ‘The number of men per annum who reach the age rendering them liable for ser- viee is about 5050 on an average, of whom 2600 are fit or suited for the serviee. Of these, from 1500 to 1800 are plaeed in the first category (200 volunteers). Naval officers are ehiefly obtained from the naval sehools. Under-offieers seldom obtain the rank of officer, and only then after a searehing examination. The law on pro- motion of the year 1871 fixes the rules of promotion for all ranks.

The ‘‘corpo reale equipaggi” is divided into three divisions, each of which is under the command of a post-captain, and belongs to a ‘‘dipartimento.”? The total establishment was as follows in 1874 :—741 able seamen, 5526 (including 200 boys) seamen and gunners, 704 artificers, 360 employed in ‘‘administration,” 1187 engineers and stokers, 168 ‘‘guardiani,” 29 invalids; total 8715 men. A body of men has been lately formed for torpedo defenee. The estimated seafaring population of Italy is 225,000, chiefly fishermen.

Russia.*—The entire male population, without distinction of class, is liable to military service. The number of men required to com- plete the strength of the army and navy is fixed by the legislature every year on the recommendation of the minister of war, and promulgated to the senate by an imperial ukase. Admission to the service is determined by lot drawing, in which one class only of the population is annually called upon to take part, namely, that which ineludes all the males who have reached the age of

twenty years on the 1st January of the year in question. Persons who Have fulfilled certain educational conditions may relieve them-

1 See The Armed Strength of the German Empire (1876), published under the £uperintendence of H.M. Stationery Office. é 2 See The Armed Strength of Italy, published (1875) under the authority of H.M.

Stationery Office. 7 f 3 The coast-line of Italy is divided into three marittimi. , 4 See The Armed Strength of Russia, published (1882) under the authority of HLM. Stationery Office.

regions called dipartimenti

selves from lot drawing by enlisting as volunteers. In the naval forces the ordinary term of service is ten years, namely, seven with the fleet and three in the reserve. The total number of young men who had attained the age of twenty years in 1880 was 794,000. The contingent to join on the 1st (13th) January 1881 was fixed at 235,000, and of this number 231,961 were enrolled. According to the statutes the number of sailors in the navy should be about 50,000. Of these in time of peace there are scrving afloat 28,000, and employed ashore 12,000,—the remaining 10,000 being on un- limited furlough. In 1879 the appropriation of the conscripts actu- ally enrolled in the navy was 4504 for the Baltic fleet, 446 for the Black Sea fleet, 72 for the Caspian flotilla, and 418 for the Siberian flotilla, The effective was on January 1, 1880, 2303 below the establishment.

Austria-Tungary.1—The duty of military service is general, and must be fulfilled personally by every citizen capable of bearing arms. The term lasts for twelve years, of which three are spent in the standing army, seven in the reserve, and two in the landwehr; men who are incorporated in the landwehr at once serve in it for twelve years. In the navy the period of service is for ten years, of which three years are active and seven years reserve service. ‘The conscription is confined to Dalmatia and the coast districts. One- third of the whole complement of officers and men required to man the fleet in time of war is kept continuously afloat in peace ; the war complement is 8079 of all ranks, of whom 2700 are actively employed ; the war

complement comprises (besides rear-admiral and staif of the squadron)—officers, &c., 571; sailors and gunuers, 5428; navigating personnel, 362; naval police, 158; engine-room artificers, stokers, &c., 781; sanitary personnel, 58; tradesmen, 202; stewards, cooks, officers' servants, &c., 524, —-total, 8079. The peace effective of the corps of seamen is 6152, inclusive of the 400 boys in the training-ship ''Schwartzenberg." The total force on the war establishment is 11,532,

To show briefly the general result of all this organiza- tion of matériel and personnel, it is perhaps sufficient to state the number of ships in commission at a given date in the present year (1883), and the numbers of their crews.

Including stationary and harbour ships, tenders, training and drill ships, troop and surveying ships, there are from 230 to 240 ships and vessels in commission in the British navy, mounting about 1400 guns, and having a personnel, all told, of about 34,000 officers, men, and boys. Exclud- ing the vessels specially referred to above, and taking only those which may be regarded as fighting vessels, the number in commission falls to about 100, with about 800 guns, and 22,000 officers, men, and boys in the crews. Comparing this with foreign navies, the proportions may be fairly stated as follows :—

No. of Ships. | No. of Guns. | Complement.

POUT <2. 25 2s cac ae hese ccs 100 | 800 22,000 France nc RGnOUHBDReaeoUrrae. Ae a550nG 100 500 15,000 Soll aan ee i ned go | 320 8, 500 RUSSIA ese sCONRacIncUnGAGanEOE 60 260 8,300 ETA os te ae viv ax hasancteeee ees 30 230 6,800 Winters: 5. scpseis contac cs 30 250 5,400 UNO MING os wcrscndevna heen ee 40 280 4,800 | POM 0 van Ot 30 220 4,500 Tega va caccemeeeya as 24 100 4,200 IPO an Gpall salindeats Baeeucnademcacnne 20 100 2,500

Of works on British naval history, the following, amoug others, may be consulted :—Nicolas, History of the Navy from the Earliest Times to 1422, 2 vols., 1847; Campbell, Lives of the Admirals to 1727, 4 vols., 1750, and afterwards continued by Berkenhout and Yorke down to 1816 in 8 vols., the last edition being that of 1870; Southey, Lives of the British Admirals, 5

vols., 1833 (from. the Restoration); Lediard, Naval History of Lingland to 1784, 1735: Beatson, Naval and Military Memoirs of Great Britain from 17 27 to 1788, 1st edition, 3 vols., 1790; Brenton, Naval ITistory from 1783 to 1836, 2 vols., 1837; James, Naval History from 1798 to 1827, 6 vols., many editions; Schomberg, Naval Chronology to 1802, 5 vols., 1802; Naval Chronicle from 1799 to 1818, 40 vols. ; Allen, Battles of the British Navy from 1190 to 1840, 2 vols. , 1852; Yonge, History of British Navy from 700 to 1862, 2 vols., 1863. The following deal almost exclusively with the matériel of the navy:—Charnock, History of Naval Architecture, 3 vols., 1801; Derrick, Memoirs of the Navy, 1806; Perigal, Chart of Naval Iistory from the Earliest Period to 1859, 1860. (Gsig 163)

ee See a eee 1 See The Armed Strength of Austria, published (1874) under the authority of H.M. Stationery Office.

NA YY

NAVY OF THE UNITED STATES.

The American navy came into existence shortly after the Declara- tion of Independence. As early as October 1775 Congress author- ized the construction of two national cruisers, and, at the same time, appointed a marine committee to administer naval affairs, The first force, consisting of purchased vessels, badly fitted and built, and insufficiently equipped and manned, embraced two ships of 24 guns each, six brigs carrying from 10 to 12 guns, two schooners each with 8 guns, and four sloops, three of 10 guns and one of 4 guns. On December 22d a personnel of officers was selected, one of the lieutenants being the well-known Paul Jones. Ezekiel Hopkins was made commander-in-chief, but, having incurred the censure of Congress, he was dismissed early in 1777, and since then the title has never been revived except in the person of the president. In November 1776 the grades of admiral, vice-admiral, rear-admiral, and commodore were assimilated in rank and precedence to relative army titles, but they were never created by law until 1862. During the war a number of spirited engagements occurred, but there was a great lack of efficient, material at home, and agents abroad were not able to enlist the active sympathies of nations or rulers. Benjamin Franklin did manage to equip one good squadron, but this was rendered almost useless by internal dissensions, and

it required the victory of Paul Jones in the “ Bon Homme Richard” over the “Serapis” to bring about any tangible result for the risk taken. During the war 800 vessels of all classes were made prizes, but the navy lost by capture 11 vessels of war and a little squadron of gun- boats on the lakes ; and, with 18 ships destroyed to avoid capture by the British, 5 condemned, and 3 wrecked at sea, the country was practically without a naval force between 1780 and 1785.

Owing to the depredations upon commerce 6f the Barbary powers, Congress in 1794 ordered the construction of six frigates, prescribing that four of them should be armed with 44 guns and two with 36 guns; but, the Berbers having made peace, the number of vessels was reduced one half, and no additions were made until 1797, when the “ Constitution,” “ United States,” and “ Constella- tion” were built. Trouble with France from 1798 to 1801 resulted in the formation of four squadrons operating in the West Indies ; these numbered 21 vessels in all, and, besides capturing nearly one hundred prizes, they gained experience and prestige by mauy short and decisive single actions. No further increase was made until 1802, when the war with Tripoli was declared ; up to this time the navy had cost the country, including sites for navy yards, only £2,000,000. In 1808 the “ gunboat policy” was revived, but, though 188 vessels of this class were built, their service was un- important and their usefulness questionable.

At the breaking out of hostilities with Great Britain in June 1812, the naval force of the United States consisted of a number of gunboats fitted for the protection of rivers and inlets, and of 17 sea-going ships, 9 of which were below the frigate class. From the close of the war in 1815 until the beginning of hostilities with Mexico in 1846, the American navy was engaged in the suppression of the slave-trade and of piracy, and in voyages of exploration and discovery. In 1846 California, after being once relinquished, was seized, and during the war the United States vessels were employed in blockading or capturing the ports upon both seaboards of Mexico, and in co-operating with the army,—all hostilities ceasing in 1847 with the oecupation of the city of Mexico. In 1848 Lieutenant Lynch commanded an expedition engaged on the exploration of the Dead Sea and the river Jordan ; in 1856 the ‘* Advance ” and “ Rescue ” searched for Sir John Franklin, followed later by the expeditions of Kane and of Hartstene;

in 1854 Strain made a partial survey of the Isthmus of Panama ; and in 1855 Rear- Admiral John Rodgers, in the ‘‘ Vincennes,” went farther into the Arctic Ocean through Behring’s Strait than any previous navigator. In 1858 the Paraguay expedition successfully finished its work ; and for many years, earnestly aided by Great Britain, a squadron was employed on the coast of Africa and in the West Indies for the suppression of the slave-trade.

The civil war broke out in April 1861, and its naval character was marked by two leading features: the first was that, while one side had a small force of naval vessels, which were generally good of their kind, the other entered the contest with absolutely nothing that could be called a man-of-war ; the second was that, though certain developments in the character and construction of ships and weapons had been foreshadowed before the war, and had even bcen partially realized, it was during the progress of the struggle that those changes took place in marine warfare which amounted to a revolution. The effect of rifle and shell-fire, the employment of the ram, the destructive energy of torpedoes, the application of armour to the sides of vessels, and the superiority of iron-armoured ships—all taught in practice what theory had in vain asserted. At the commencement of hostilities the number of vessels of all kinds in commission was 76 ; 136 were purchased in 1861, making the total 264, while the roll of enlisted men increased from 7500 to 22,000. At the close of the war there were 51,500 seamen and 7000

officers of all grades, and over 600 vessels ; at the navy yards 6880 ‘ maintaining those at New York, Norfolk, and San Francisco (Mare

artisans were employed; 208 steamers were built, and 313 out of |

a total of 481 were purchasod, all at a cost of over £38,000,000 ; 340 were afterwards sold for £1,500,000. On the Ist of January 1865 there were 5278 volunteer officers in service, but in 1870 this number had been reduced to 111, excluding 64 out of 305 applicants who had been admitted to the

regular service. The Confoderate navy was modelled precisely upon that of the Federal States. In the autumn of 1864, when at a maximum, it consisted of 16 iron- clads, 3 of which were rated as floating batteries, of 50 wooden vessels, and of the rover ‘‘Shenandoah.” Abroad cruisers were of great assistance to the Confederacy, the most notable of these being the ‘‘Sumter,” ‘‘Alabama,”’ “‘Georgia,” ‘‘ Florida,” ‘‘ Rappahannock,” and ‘‘ Shenandoah.”

Since the close of the war the United States navy has been doing excellent service in the peaceful pathways of science and humanity, the only warlike demonstrations having been that against Formosa in 1867 and that against Corea in 1870. Expeditions have been sent to the Arctic Ocean; ships have been employed in the survey of every sea; deep-sea soundings have been made both in the Atlantic and the Pacifie ; and five expeditions have tried to solve the problem of the best route for a trans-isthmian and inter-oceanic canal; scientific observers have occupied stations, and with important results, in the transit observations, and to-day the chain of telegraphic measurements of longitude around the whole world is the work of American naval officers.

Administration and Condition.—During the revolutionary war Congress through its cominittees and agents managed naval affairs. In 1789 these duties were entrusted to the secretary of war, and it was not until 1798 that the ‘‘ department of the navy” was ostab- lished. In 1815 a ‘‘ board of commissioners for the navy’’ was constituted, but the Act provided that nothing in it shonld be con- strued to take from the secretary his control of marine affairs. In 1842 this law was repealed, and the bureau system, under which all the duties were divided specifically among five offices, was estab- lished; in 1862 there was a new division of responsibilities, and the eight bureaus now existing were created. Each of these is under the control of a naval officcr, nominated by the executive and con- firmed by the senate, all chiefs of bureaus having assigned them the temporary rank of commodore, actual or relativo, when their own grades are below this. The bureaus are—(1) navigation, which controls all matters relating to pilotage and navigation, with a direct superintendence of the naval observatory and of the hydrographic, signal, naval intclligence, Nautical Almanac, war record, compass, and detail offices,—this last having charge of the personnel of the

service; (2) ordnance, which administers all artillery, ordnance, and torpedo matters; (3) equipment and recruiting, which is in charge of outfits, equipments, stores, recruiting, and apprenticeships ; (4) yards and docks, which super- intends the construetion of docks, naval grounds, buildings, and all civil-engineering work ; (5) medicine and surgery ; (6) provi- sions and clothing, which is responsible for the supplies of food, water, and clothing, and manages the accounts, thns performing under one direction these duties relegated in the army to the quartermaster, commissary, and paymaster ; (7) steam engineering, which designs and has the care of engines and boilers ; and (8) con- struction and repair, which performs the same duties for ships. The first four bureaus are under the direction of line-officers of the navy.

There are no maritime districts in the United States, naval authority being limited strictly to the navy-yard government. At present there are seven navy yards and three naval stations, in which the general administration is entrusted to specific depart- ments, all under the direct command of a line-officer of high rank, and each corresponding to a bureau of the central control. It is the intention of the Government to close all but three of the yards,

Island), together with a repair arsenal at Washington.

The judge advocato's office and the Naval Academy are under tho special supervision of the secretary. The Naval Academy ranks among the bost institutions of the kind in the world. It is situated at Annapolis, Maryland, and is governed by a line-officer super- intendent, assisted by an academic board made up of the heads of the departments of disciplino and of studies, and with a corps of instructors drawn mainly from the line of tho navy, with a few engineer and civilian assistants. All appointments of naval cadets are made by the president upon the nominations of members of Congress ; each of the congressional districts, about three hundred in all, is entitled to one representative at the institution, admission after nomination being based upon a rigorous examination. The curriculum is for four years, supplemented by a two years' cruise before final graduation.

Corrosponding to Greenwich Hospital in its days of old pensioners is the Naval Asylum, situated at Philadelphia ; and at Newport, Rhode Island, are

the headquarters of the torpedo station and of the training system for apprentices. The naval experimental battery is at Annapolis, though not a part of the Naval Academy; and in all the large seaboard towns are rendezvous for the shipping of men, and branches of the hydrographic offico for the dissemina- tion of maritime information.

The personnol of the active lst includes 1410 commissioned officers (602 of whom are at sea and 808 on shore), 7500 men, and 700 apprentices ; there is also a corps of marineinfantry, with 1887 enlisted men and 75 officers. All enlistments of sailors are voluntary, and for a period of three years, with special inducements for re-enlistment within a fixed period, and with the certainty of a pension or of a billet at the Naval Asylum after twenty-one years' service. There is no reserve, the active list representing the available force. Yor officers who have attained sixty-two years of age, or who have seen service for a term varying from forty to forty- five years, there is a retired list which entitles them without delay to 75 per cent. of their highest sea pay. Upon this list also there are officers, and in the Naval Asylum there are men, who are inca- pacitated for active service by reason of physical or other causes. Apprentices are enlisted between the ages of fourteen and eighteen, with obligatory service until the age of twenty-one is attained.

There are five foreign stations, divided geographically,—the North Atlantic, South Atlantic, European, Pacific, and Asiatic. In January 1883 there were 140 vessels of all kinds on the register, 23 of which were in commission for general cruising, aud 5 were employed on special service. Three modern steel steamers are being built ata private yard, and Congress has under consideration a new construction plan; by an annual expenditure of $4,288,000 this will give in ten years a modern steel navy of 70 ships, in every way adequate to the demands of the country. The estimates for the fiscal year ending Juno 30, 1885, require for the ordinary purposes of the navy $16,319,367-62, and for the increase of the navy, including tho completion of four double-turreted monitors of the armoured fleet, $7,449,581°76, or a total of $23,768, 889°38. The present effective cruising force is composed of 1 first rate, 14 second rates, and 21 third rates, or 36 in all; the available armoured vessels are 13 monitors of the old single-turreted type and 6 double-tnrreted monitors, lately rebuilt.

The coast survey and lighthonse establishment, both mainly in charge of naval officers, the revenue marine, life-saving, steamboat inspection, and marine hospital services, are all a part of the treasury department; the transfer of their control to the navy department is asked of Congress by the secretary of the navy, who also recommends the establishment, under his administration, of a bureau of mercantilo marine, the duties of which will be analogous to those of the mercantile marine department of the Board of Trade. (J. D. J. K.)

NAWANAGAR, or N. OWANUGGUR, a native state lying along the southern shore of the Gulf of Cutch, Bombay Presidency, India, between 21° 44’ and 22° 54’ N. lat. and 68° 58’ and 71° E. long,, with an area of 3393 square miles and a population in 1881 of 316,147. The chief, who has the title of jam, is a Hindu of the Jareja Rajput caste, and has powers of life and death over his sub- jects. The gross revenue is about £182,000; a tribute of £12,000 a year is payable jointly to the British Govern- ment, the gaekwdr of Baroda, and the nawab of Jundgarh. The principal products of the state are grain and cotton, and cloth and silk are the chief manufactures. Nawdna- gar, the capital, isa flourishing seaport town, nearly 4 miles 1 circuit, with a large trade, and a population of 39,668.

NAWAWL Mohyi al-Din Abt Zakaryé Yahya b. Sharaf al-Nawawi, born at Nawa in Jauldn, October 1233, head of the Ashrafia academy at Damascus from 1267, died at Nawd 20th December 1277, where his grave is still visited as that of a saint. To this honour he has better claims than most Moslem sheikhs, for not only was his life one of the most intense and unselfish devotion to learning, but be had the rare courage to take open part for his oppressed countrymen against Sultan Bibars, and alone among the Syrian doctors refused to sanction the exactions of which the “ Holy War” was the pretext. “Thou hast a thousand mamelukes,” he said, “‘each of whom wears a golden girdle, and two hundred female slaves adorned with all manner of jewels. When thou hast spent all this, and

thy mamelukes have only girdles of cord and thy slave- girls only clothes without jewels, I will vote for the tax.” The angry sultan banished him from

Damascus, and, though public opinion compelled this sentence to be revoked, Nawawi refused to return while Bibars was in the city.

Forty-two works of Nawawi are catalogued by Wiistenfcld, Leben und Schriften des Scheich . . . el Nawawi, Gottingen, 1849. His biographical ‘‘ Dictionary of Illustrious Men chiefly at the Begin- ning of Islamism,” forming the first part of the Zahdhtb al-asmd. wal-loghdt (a sort of analytical index to six theological and juristic works), was published by the same scholar, Géttingen, 1842-47. An edition of his manual of Shafiite jurisprudence (Minhdj al- tdlibin), a book of great reputation in the East, has been com- menced by L. W. C. van den Berg (vol. i., Batavia, 1882, with French version and notes).

NAXOS, one of the Cyclades, a fertile island in the Egean Sea, a little to the east of Paros. It was rich in vines and famous for its wine, and in consequence became one of the chief seats of the worship of Bacchus. The god found Ariadne asleep on its shore, when she was deserted by Theseus. From its fertility and wealth Naxos was the most powerful of the Cyclades. A tyrant Lygdamis ruled there for some time during the 6th century B.c. In 501 a Persian fleet unsuccessfully attacked it, but in 490 it was captured and treated with great severity. Four Naxian ships took part in the great expedition of Xerxes, but deserted and fought on the Greek side at Salamis in 480. Naxos was a member of the Delian Con- federacy ; it revolted in 471, was captured by Athens, and remained in her possession till her empire was destroyed. The history of the island henceforth is obscure. The most remarkable event was its capture, in 1207 a.p., by the Venetian Marco Sanudo, who founded there a state and a dynasty that flourished till the Turks took the island in 1566. Since the War of Independence it has belonged to the Greek kingdom. The chief town occupies the site of the ancient city on the north-west coast. Naxos, Paros, Antiparos, and some little islets form an eparchza, with a total population of about 21,000.

NAXOS, the earliest Greek colony in Sicily, was founded from Chalcis in 735 B.c., on the east coast immediately south of the modern town of Taormina. Within a few years it became strong enough to found Leontini and Catana. It is impossible here to enter on the tangled history of its relations with the other Greek cities of Sicily, and with the tyrants

Hippocrates, Gelo, &c. Naxos was the warmest ally of Athens in the Sicilian expedition. In 403 B.c. it was completely destroyed by Dionysius, and was never rebuilt. Its place was supplied in 358 by Tauromenium, to which the Naxian exiles flocked.

NAYAGARH, or Nyvacur, a petty state in Orissa, Bengal, India, with an area of 588 square miles. The state is a valuable and well-cultivated territory, abound- ing in noble scenery, with a splendid range of hills from 2000 to 3000 feet in height running through its centre. The population in 1881 was 114,622, most of them Hindus. The chief receives an estimated annual re- venue of £5418, and pays a tribute of £552 to the British Government.

NAYLER, or Naytor, James (1618-1660), a Puritan fanatic, was born at Andersloe or Ardsley in Yorkshire, in 1618. When the civil war broke out in 1641 Nayler, who was then resident in the parish of Wakefield, joined the Parliamentary army, and served as quartermaster under Lambert. In 1651 he adopted Quakerism, and became a zealous advocate of the new principles both as a preacher and writer. Gradually his opinions became tinged with the wildest fanaticism, until he arrived at the seeming conviction that he was a new incarnation of Christ. He gathered around himself a small band of disciples, who followed him from place to place, paying him the homage

due to one gifted with supernatural endowments. In October 1655 he, in imitation of Christ's procession into Jerusalein, entered Bristol on horseback riding single—"a rawboned nude figure, with lank hair reaching below his cheeks,"—attended by seven followers, some on horseback, some on foot, he in silence and they singing '" Hosanna! Holy, holy! Lord God of Sabaoth!" The procession passed on to the High Cross of Bristol, where Nayler and his followers were apprehended by the authorities. His trial occupied the second parliament of Cromwell for several days, and on December 16, 1656, he was convicted of blasphemy and sentenced to be whipped from the Palace Yard to the Old Exchange, to be branded in the forehead, to have his tongue bored with a red-hot iron, to be whipped through the streets of Bristol, and to suffer imprisonment with hard labour for two years. These stern measures had the effect of convincing Nayler that his pretensions to supernatural powers were the result of delusion, and on

May 26, 1657, he, after recantation, received his freedom. He was readmitted into the communion of the Quakers. In October 1660 Nayler set out to visit his long-forsaken family in Yorkshire, but died on the journey in Hunting- donshire.

A collected edition of the Tracts of Nayler appeared in 1716; a Relation of the Life, Conversion, Examination, Confession, and Sentence of James Nayler in 1657; a Memoir of the Life, Ministry, Trial, and Sufferings of James Nayler in 1719; and a Refutation of some of the more Modern Misrepresentations of the Society of Friends

commonly called Quakers, with a Life of James Nayler, by Joseph Gurney Bevan, in 1800.

NAZARENES (Na€wpator), an obscure Jewish-Christian sect or ‘‘ heresy,” existing at the time of Epiphanius in Coele-Syria, Decapolis (Pella), and Basanitis (Cocabe). According to that authority (Pan., xxix. 7) they dated their settlement in Pella from the time of the flight of the Jewish Christians from Jerusalem, immediately before the siege in 70 a.D.; he characterizes them as neither more nor less than Jews pure and simple, but adds that they recognized the new covenant as well as the old, and believed in the resurrection, and in the one God and His son Jesus Christ. He is unable to say whether their christological views were identical with those of Cerinthus and the like, or whether they differed at all from his own. This lacuna is filled up by Jerome (Zp. 79, to Augustine), who expressly says that they believed in Christ the Son of God, born of the Virgin Mary, who suffered under Pontius Pilate, and rose again, but adds that, “‘desiring to be both Jews and Christians, they are neither the one nor the other.” They used the Aramaic recension of the Gospel according to Matthew, which they called the Gospel to the Hebrews, but, while themselves adhering as far as possible to the Mosaic economy as regarded circumcision, sabbaths, foods, and the like, they did not refuse to recognize the aposto- licity of Paul or the rights of heathen Christians (Jer., Comm. in Isa., ix. 1). These facts, taken along with the name (comp. Acts xxiv. 5) and geographical position of the sect, lead to the conclusion that the Nazarenes of the 4th century were the direct representatives of the Jerusalem Christians of the 1st, who owned the presidency of James. Probably they are intended also by Origen (Contra

Cels., v. 61) and Eusebius (#. Z,, iii. 27) when two classes of Ebionites are discriminated, one of which acknowledged the supernatural origin of Christ. Compare EBIONITES; and see Ritschl, Hntstchung d. altkath. Kirche, bk. 1. sec. 3,

NAZARETH, in Galilee, now al-Nasira, the city of Mary and Joseph, and the place where our Lord spent his youth, is pleasantly situated in a hollow on the south slope of the hills (J. al-Sikh) which bound the plain of Esdraelon on the north. Though it had a synagogue (Matt. xiii. 54; Luke iv. 16), and is called in the Gospels a city, Nazareth

WARNE A 303

must have been an obscure place! in the time of Jesus, for we find no mention of it outside of the New Testament till Eusebius and Jerome identify it with a “village” which undoubtedly occupied the place of the modern Nasgira. In Jerome’s time it was already visited by pilgrims, but as yet we hear nothing of relics or places associated with special incidents in the life of Jesus. The population was mainly Jewish,—exclusively so, we are told by Epiphanius, down to the time of Constantine,—and the Jews, after their manner in modern as in ancient times, seem to have been the inventors of various marvellous relics and identi- fications which were palmed off upon Christian pilgrims in the 6th century. Such at least is the natural inference from what Antoninus Martyr tells of these wonderfully friendly and communicative Hebrews, A century later Arculphus describes two great churches corresponding to the modern Greek church over the Virgin’s Well and the Latin church of the Franciscan monastery over the Grotto of the Annunciation. The place has since passed through various vicissitudes ; it was most flourishing in the time of the crusaders, who transferred to it the bishopric of Scythopolis. The Ottomans at length expelled the Christians; but the Franciscans established themselves under the protection of Fakhr al-Din in 1620. The town has now a Greek, a Latin, and a Moslem quarter, as well as a Protestant mission and orphanage. The population is variously estimated at from 6000 to 10,000.

The Virgin’s Well, just outside the town, must have been fre- quented by the women of ancient as of modern Nazareth; all the other traditional sites are highly dubious. But this hardly affccts the interest attaching to the town, for

the character of Nazareth must at all times have depended on its position and surroundings. It was a little country town of peasants aud handicraftsmen, nestling in olive groves and green meadows, separated and yet not distant from the busy life of the grcater Galilean cities, surrounded on all sides by the pleasantest landscapes of Canaan. The hill above the

‘town commands one of the finest views in Galilec, from Hermon to

Mount Carmel.

NAZARITE, or Nazirire (3), was the name among the Hebrews for a peculiar kind of devotee. The character- istic marks of a Nazarite were unshorn locks and abstinence from wine (Judg. xiii. 5; 1 Sam. i. 11; Amos ii. 11, 12); full regulations for the legal observance of the Nazarite vow are given in Numb. vi., where every product of the grape-vine is forbidden, and the Nazarite is further enjoined to abstain from approaching a dead body, even if it be that of his nearest relative. The law in question is not pre-exilic, and is plainly directed to the regulation of a known usage. It contemplates the assumption of the vow for a limited period, and gives particular details as to the atoning ceremonies at the sanctuary by which the vow must be recommenced if broken by accidental defilement, and the closing sacrifice, at which the Nazarite, on the expiry of his vow, cuts off his hair and burns it on the altar, thus return- ng to ordinary life. Among the later Jews the Nazarite vow of course corresponded with the legal ordinance, which was further developed by the scribes in their usual manner (Mishna, Vacir; comp. 1 Mac. iii. 49; Acts i. 23 sq.; Joseph., Ant., xix. 6,1; Id., B. J, ii. 15,1). On the other hand, in the earliest historical case, that of Samson, and in the similar case of Samuel (who, however, is not called a Nazarite), the head remains unshorn throughout life, and in these times the ceremonial observances as to uncleanness must have been less precise. Samson’s mother is forbidden to eat unclean things during pregnancy, but Samson him-

- Even the form of the name is uncertain, Na(upér, Naapéd, Na{apd. These variations are intelligible in a Hebrew or Syriac name with fem, termination, but hardly enable us to fix the original form. In Syriac and Arabic the ¢ is transcribed as sharp s; thus the root of the name Nazareth would be N-S-R, and so many ancients and moderns suppose

that in Matt. ii. 23 the prophecy referred to is that of the Branch (néser) in Isa. xi. 1.

self touches the carcase of a lion and is often in contact with the slain.?

In the cases of Samuel and Samson the unshorn locks are a mark of consecration to God (oondsy "13, Judg. xiii. 5) for a particular service,—in the one case the service of the sanctuary, in the other the deliverance of Israel from the Philistines. Since, moreover, the Hebrew root N-z-R is only dialectically different from N-p-R, "to vow," both corresponding to the same original Semitic root (Arabic N-DH-R), it would seem that the peculiar marks of the Nazarite are primarily no more than the usual sign that a man is under a vow of some kind. To leave the locks unshorn during an arduous undertaking in which the divine aid was specially implored, and to consecrate the hair after success, was a practice among various ancient nations, of which examples may be seen in Spencer, De Legibus Heb., iti. 1, cap. 6; but the closest parallel to the Hebrew custom is found in Arabia. There the vow was generally one of war or revenge (//amdsa, p. 167; 'Antara, Aoal., 1. 74; Moh. in Medina, p. 201), and till it was accom- plished the man who vowed left his hair unshorn and unkempt, and abstained from wine, women, ointment, and perfume. Such is the figure of Shanfara as described in his Ldémiya. The observances of the zkrdm belong to the same usage (see vol. xv. p. 674), and we find that at Tif it was customary to shear the hair at the sanctuary after a journey (Moh. in Medina, p. 381). The affinity between the Arabian usage and a case like that of Samson is obvious, and the consecration of Samuel has also its Arabic parallel in the dedication of an unborn child by its mother to the service of the Kaba (Ibn Hisham, p. 76; Azralk, p. 128); but we have not sufficient data to enable us to trace the further development of the Nazarite vow among the Hebrews. 'The spirit of warlike patriotism that character- ized the old religion of Israel could scarcely fail to encour- age such vows (comp. 2 Sam. xi. 11, and perhaps 1 Sam. xxi. 4, 5), and from the allusion in Amos we are led to suppose that at one time the Nazarites had an importance —perhaps even an organization—parallel to that of the prophets, while on the other hand the Canaanized popular religion of the 8th century B.c. made light of an institu- tion that belonged to a very different

religious type from Canaanite nature worship. ‘The Nazarites as they appear in Amos have another parallel in the Rechabites.

NEAL, Danren (1678-1743), author of the [History of the Puritans, was born in London in December 1678. He received his early education at Merchant Taylors’ School and at a Dissenting academy, after which he went to Holland and studied some time at the universities of Utrecht and Leyden. In 1704 he became assistant- minister of the Independent congregation of Aldersgate Street, London, and in 1706 sole pastor. In 1720 he published in two volumes a Jfistory of New England, which reached a second edition in 1747. His occasional printed sermons also assisted to increase his reputation among Nonconformists, and it was at the request of several influential co-religionists that he undertook to write a History of the Puritans, the first volume, which commenced with the Reformation in England, appearing in 1732, and the fourth, bringing the narrative down to the Act of Toleration of 1689, in 1738. The History was attacked for unfairness and misstatements by Bishop Maddox, to whom Neal replied in a pamphlet entitled A Review of the Principal Facts objected to the first volume of the History of the Puritans. The conscientious accuracy of Neal is indeed beyond praise, although he was undoubtedly strongly prepossessed in favour of his own side of the question, Luke i. 15. Compare also the tradition as to James the Just, vol. xiii, p. 553.

and it has been somewhat happily said of his representa- tions of the Puritans, that he “blanches them into a sweet

and almond whiteness.” He died in April 1743.

Neal’s History of the Puritans, accompanied with a life of the author, was edited by Toulmin in six volumes, 1793. This edition has been frequently reprinted, and an edition in two volumes, revised and enlarged by John O. Choules, appeared at New York in 1848.

NEALE, Joun Mason (1818-1866), ecclesiastical historian and hymnologist, was born in London, January 24, 1818, and was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge. He became incumbent of Crawley, Sussex, in

1842, and in 1846 warden of Sackville College, East Grimstead, an appointment which he held till his death, August 6, 1866.

Neale was strongly High Church in his sympathies, and in 1855 founded a sisterhood named St Margaret's. The most important of his publications is his History of the Eastern Church (1850-51). He occupies a high place as a hymnologist, but principally as a translator of ancient and modern hymns, his best-known transla- tions being probably " Brief life is here our portion," '' To thee, © dear, dear country," and '' Jerusalem the golden," which are in- cluded in the poem of Bernard of Cluny, De Contemptwu Mundi, translated by him in full. He also published Essays on Liturgiology, 1863 ; and among his other works are Medieval Preachers, 1857, and History of the so-called Junsenist Church of Holland, 1858.

NEANDER, Aveust (1789-1850), one of the most distinguished and influential of the modern theologians of Germany, was born, of Jewish parents, at Géttingen on January 17,1789. His father, Emmanuel Mendel, is said to have been a common Jewish pedlar ; but little seems to be really known of his circumstances and character. His mother was a woman of tender and noble disposition; and from the maternal side, as in so many other cases, the virtues and talents of the son appear to have sprung. While still very young, he removed with his mother to Hamburg ; and in the grammar school, or Johanneum, of that city he received his classical education. There, as throughout life, the simplicity of his personal appearance and the oddity of his manners attracted notice, but still more, under all outward peculiarities, his great industry and mental power. From the Johanneum young Mendel passed to the gymnasium, where he attended for a year the pre- lections in philology, philosophy, and theology. The study of Plato appears especially to have engrossed him at this time. One of his young friends, Wilhelm Neumann, writes of hini in 1806—" Plato is his idol—his constant watch- word. He sits day and night over him; and there are few who have so thoroughly, and in such purity, imbibed his wisdom. It is wonderful how entirely he has done this without any foreign impulse, merely through his own reflexion and downright study." Considerable interest attaches to his early companionship with the writer of this letter, and certain others, among whom were the afterwards well-known writer Varnhagen von Ense and the poet Chamisso. His letters to Chamisso are

singularly in- teresting. They breathe throughout the most simple and glowing enthusiasm, while the picture of a pure and affec- tionate nature, and the struggling comprehensiveness of a great spirit, are impressed on every page of them. These letters enable us to understand with some degree of clear- ness the great change which now took place in Neander's convictions. They reveal a course of spiritual training very much analogous to that which he has described in many cases in his Church History. He reached the gospel through Platonism. The influence of his teacher's idealism may be visibly traced in some of his conceptions of Christian doctrine. He was baptized on the 25th February 1806, when he adopted, instead of his Jewish name of David Mendel, that under which he was always afterwards known.

In the same year he went to Halle to study divinity. At Halle Schleiermacher was then lecturing in the first height of his fame as a teacher. Neander met in him the

very impulse which be needed, while Schleiermacher found a pupil of thoroughly congenial feeling, and one destined to carry out his views in a higher and more effective Christian form than he himself was capable of imparting to them. But before the year had closed the events of the Franco-Prussian war compelled his removal to the less congenial Gottingen. There, however, he continued his studies with ardour, made himself yet more master of Plato and Plutarch, and especially advanced in sacred learning under the venerable Planck. The impulse com- municated by Schleiermacher was confirmed by Planck, and he seems now to have realized that the original in- vestigation of Christian history was to form the great work of his life.

Having finished his university course, he returned to Hamburg, and passed his examination for the Christian ministry with great distinction. He was not fitted, how- ever, for the pulpit, and seems to have preached but seldom. After an interval of about eighteen months he definitively betook himself to an academic career, " habi- litating" in Heidelberg, where two vacancies had occurred in the theological faculty of the university, from the re- moval of Marheineke and De Wette to Berlin. He entered upon his work here as a

theological teacher in 1811; and in the year following an extraordinary professorship re- warded his learning and industry. In the same year (1812) he first appeared as an author by the publication of his monograph On the Emperor Julian. The fresh insight into the history of the church, and the vivid and striking power of delineation evinced by this work, —vague and sketchy, perhaps, as it now seems in the light of his maturer productions,— at once drew attention to its author, and marked him asa rising theologian. Accord- ingly, even before he had terminated the first year of his academical labours at Heidelberg, he was called to Berlin as the associate of De Wette and Schleiermacher—an illustrious band, whose labours have left an imeffaccable impress upon German theology.

In Berlin Neander's life was only varied by the succes- sive publications which appeared in such fertility from his pen. In the year following his appointment he published a second monograph On St Bernard and his Age, and then in 1818 his work on Gnosticism (Genetische Entwickelung der vornehmsten gnostischen Systeme). A still more extended and elaborate monograph than either of the preceding followed, On Chrysostom, and again, in 1825, another on Tertullian (Antignostikus). He had in the meantime, how- ever, begun his great work, to which these several efforts were only preparatory studies. The first volume of his General History of the Christian Religion and Church, embracing the history of the first three centuries, made its appearance in 1826. The others followed at intervals, — the fifth, which appeared in 1845, bringing down tlic narrative to the pontificate of Boniface VIII. A posthu- mous volume, edited by Schneider in 1852, carried it on to the period of the council of Basel. Besides this great work he published in 1832 his History of the Planting and Training of the Christian Church by the Apostles, and in 1837 his Lefe of Jesus Christ, in its Historical Connexion and Development, called forth by the famous Life of Strauss. In addition to all these labours, he gave to the public many miscellaneous sketches from the history of the church and of theological opinion; as, for example, his Memorabilia from the History of Christian Life (1822), his volume under the title of the Unity and Variety of the Christian Lafe, his papers on Plotinus, Thomas Aquinas, Theobald Thamer, Pascal, Newman, Blanco White, Arnold, &c., and other oc- casional pieces (Kleine Gelegenhettsschriften, 1829), mainly of a practical, exegetical, and

historical character. Since his death a succession of volumes, representing his various

courses of lectures, have appeared (1856-64), in addition to the Lectures on the History of Dogma, admirable in spirit and execution, which were edited by Jacobi in 1857. The life of Neander, as may be gathered from this mere enumeration, was one of unwearied work in his study and in his lecture-room. He lectured usually three times a day, his lectures embracing almost every branch of theology— exegetics, dogmatics, and ethics, as well as church history. He cherished a warm and affectionate interest in his students —his ungrudging self-denial and benefactions in their behalf forming one of the most kindly traditions which surround his name. He was of a very child-like and yet aspiring nature,—simple and affectionate, yet subtle and comprehensive in his views. He died on July 14, 1850, worn out and nearly blind with incessant study.

Neander's theological position can only be explained in connexion with Schleiermacher, aud the manner in which while adopting he modified and carried out the principles of his master. With a mind less restlessly speculative, less versatile, discriminating, and logical, he possessed, in higher union than Schleiermacher, depth of spiritual insight and purity of moral perception with profound philo- sophical capacity. Characteristically meditative, he rested with a secure footing on the great central truths of Christianity, and recog- nized strongly their essential reasonableness and harmony. Alive to the claims of criticism, he no less strongly asserted the rights of Christian feeling. '* Without it," he emphatically says, '' there can be no theology ; it can only thrive in the calmness of a soul consecrated to God." And exactly in the same spirit, and proceeding from the same strong recognition of the absolute necessity of this Christian element in all theology, was his favourite motto, —'' Pectus est quod theologum facit."

His Church History remains the greatest monument of his genius. Defective in graphic personal details, and in aclear exhibition of the political relations of the church, somewhat heavy in style, with a certain vagueness and want of pictorial life throughout, it is yet unrivalled in its union of vast learning and profound philosophic penetration, its varied comprehensiveness and

abundant store of materials, its insight into the living connexion of historical events, but ‘especially into the still more living and subtle nexus which binds together the growth aud development of human opinion,—in its display of such qualities, with the most simple-hearted Christian piety, the most lively appreciative intcrest in the ever-varying fortunes of the church, the finest discernment of all the manifold phases of the Christian life. the most genuine liberality and catholic sympathy.

See Krabbe, August Neander (1852), and a paper by Kling in the Stud. wu. Krit. for 1851. (J. T.)

NEANDER, Joacuim (c. 1650-1680), German hymn- writer, when about twenty years of age came under the influence of a Labadist preacher (see vol. xiv. 163) named Untereyk, in his native city of Bremen. After studying at Heidelberg and Frankfort, where he formed friendships with Spanheim and Spener, he settled at Diisseldorf as rector of the Latin school in connexion with the Reformed Church. His Labadist views were somewhat out of harmony with those of the rulers and of the church, and in 1676 he incurred church censure for abstaining and inducing others to abstain from joining in the celebration of the communion. It was during the term of his suspen- sion from his teaching office that many of his hymns were written. He ultimately renounced his connexion with the separatists, and in 1679 returned to Bremen as one of the preachers of St Martin’s church. In the same year he published the Bundeslieder and Dankpsalmen. He died in 1680. The Neanderthal near Diisseldorf takes its name a him. For his place in hymnology see vol. xii. p.

587.

NEARCHUS, son of Androtimus, one of the most dis- tinguished officers in the army of Alexander the Great, and admiral of his fleet, with which he made an important and interesting voyage of discovery in the Indian Ocean. He was a native of Crete, but settled at Amphipolis in Macedonia, and must have been at an early period of life a person of some consideration, as we find him attached to the court of Philip, where he became the friend and com- Panton of the young Alexander, and when the prince fell

into disgrace with his father Nearchus was banished, together with Ptolemy the son of Lagus, Harpalus, and others, for having participated in the intrigues of Olympias and her son against the old king. But after the death of Philip (336 B.c.) he was at once recalled, and rose to great favour with Alexander, which he appears to have fully merited by his abilities and judgment. He did not, how- ever, accompany him in his earlier campaigns into Asia, having been left behind in the government of Lycia and the adjoining provinces, where he remained for five years. But in 329 B.c. he joined the king with a force of Greek mercenaries at Zariaspa in Bactria, and from this time he held an important post in his army, and took an active part in his Indian campaigns. Hence when Alexander had assembled his fleet on the Hydaspes, with a view to descending that river and the Indus to the sea, he confided the chief command of it to Nearchus. This post must, however, have been one of comparatively little importance, so long as the king himself remained with the fleet; but when, after descending the Indus to its mouth, and making a short excursion upon the Indian Ocean, Alexander him- self undertook to conduct the army by land through the deserts of Gedrosia to Susa, while he confided the command of the fleet to Nearchus, with orders to conduct it to the head of the Persian Gulf, the position became one of great responsibility, and the success with which he accomplished the task rendered his name for ever famous in antiquity. He set out in the first instance from a naval station at some point in the delta of the Indus; but, finding, on reach- ing the mouth of that river, that the monsoon was still blowing with great violence, he remained for twenty-four days in a neighbouring port, to which he gave the name of the Port of Alexander. This is in all probability the same harbour which now forms the well-known seaport of Kurrachee. Sailing thence about the beginning of November (325 B.c.), he proceeded for five days along the coast to the westward as far as the mouth of the Arabis (now called the Poorally), and thence three days further, along the coast of the Oritz, to a place called Cocala, where he was able to communicate for the last time with the land army of Alexander, and lay in a fresh stock of provisions. From thence he still followed the coast of the Orit for three days, as far as a place called Malana, which still bears the name of Cape Malan. It was at this point that the most difficult part of his voyage began, as from hence to the headland of Badis, now called Cape Jask, a distance of above 400 geographical miles, his course lay along the barren and inhospitable shores of the Mekran,

inhabited by a very sparse population, who subsisted, as they do at the present day, almost wholly upon fish, for which reason they were termed by the Greeks Ichthyophagi. Hence the crews of the fleet suffered severely from the want of pro- visions, especially from that of corn or meal of any kind, of which they obtained no supply till their arrival at Badis. In other respects the navigation presented no real difficulties, the coast being free from reefs and other hidden dangers; and at a place called Mosarna they procured a pilot, after which they were able to proceed more rapidly. So slow and cautious had been their previous progress that they took twenty days to accomplish the distance from Malana to Badis, which Nearchus in consequence estimated at 10,000 stadia, or 1000 geographical miles, more than double the true distance. The remainder of the voyage presented comparatively little difficulty. After sighting from a distance the lofty headland of Maceta (Cape Mussendom), which marks the entrance to the Persian Gulf, the fleet put into the river Anamis in the fertile district of Harmozia (Ormuz), where they were agreeably surprised by the tidings that Alexander with his army was cncamped at no great distance in the interior.

XVII. — 39

After communicating with the king, Nearchus resumed his voyage along the northern coast of the Persian Gulf to the mouth of the Euphrates, and thence ascended the Pasitigris to Susa.

To conduct a large fleet, consisting principally of war galleys, along so great an extent of an unknown coast was undoubtedly an exploit requiring great prudence and ability on the part of its commander; but the voyage of Nearchus has acquired a much greater celebrity than it really deserves, both in ancient and modern times, from the circumstance that it stood entirely alone in antiquity, the similar expedition of Hanno along the west coast of Africa being almost unknown both to the Greeks and Romans, while in modern days it has attracted a greatly increased amount of attention from the accidental circum- stance that a complete and trustworthy record of it has been preserved. Nearchus himself wrote a detailed narra- tive of his expedition, of which a regular and full abstract was embodied by Arrian in

his work on India,—one of the most interesting geographical treatises that has been trans- mitted to us from antiquity.

The success with which Nearchus had accomplished this arduous enterprise led to his selection by Alexander for the more difficult task of circumnavigating the great peninsula of Arabia from the mouth of the Euphrates to the Isthmus of Suez. But this project was cut short by the illness and death of the king (323 B.c.). In the troubles that followed we hear little of Nearchus, who appears to have assumed no prominent position, but we learn that he attached himself to Antigonus, and probably therefore shared in the downfall of that monarch (301 B.C.).

at narrative of his voyage, as transmitted to us by Arrian, is contained in the editions of that author's works by Raphelius, Schmieder, and Kriiger, as well as in the more recent edition by Dr G. Muller (Paris, 1846), which forms part of Didot's Bidlio- theca Greea. But by far the most valuable edition of the original text is that published by the same author, with copious geographical notes, in the first volume of his Geographi Greci Minores (Didot, Paris, 1855). An English translation, with a very elaborate com- mentary, was published by Dr Vincent in his Commerce and Naviga- tion of the Ancients in the Indian Ocean (4to, London, 1807). But much of his geographical information is now obsolete. (E. H. B.)

NEATH, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of Glamorganshire, South Wales, is prettily situated near the mouth of the Neath, and on two railway lines, 8 miles north-east of Swansea and 39 west-north- west of Cardiff. The older streets are narrow and ill- paved; but there are several handsome villas on the slopes bordering the town. The principal buildings are the parish church of St Thomas, a large and plain structure with an ancient tower; the new church of St David's; the town-hall, with corn exchange in the basement story; and the new market-house. There are slight remains of the castle of Jestyn-ap-Gwrgan, situated about a mile from the town, and rebuilt in 1111 by Richard de Granville. Of the Cistercian abbey—Abbaty-Glyn-Nedd—which he also founded, and which was at one time the finest abbey in Wales, there still exist the external walls, with parts of the chapel, vaulted chapter-house, refectory, and abbot's house. The town is situated in the midst of an important mineral district,

and possesses very extensive tinplate works, as well as blast furnaces, iron foundries, steam- engine factories, copper-works, and chemical manufactures. In the neighbourhood there are large coal-mines. Vessels of 300 or 400 tons can reach the quays at high tide, and parliamentary powers have been secured to erect new docks. With Abernant and Swansea there is water coni- munication by means of canals. There isa large export trade in coal, copper, iron, and tin, the principal imports being timber and general merchandize. Neath is included in the Swansea parliamentary district of boroughs. The

population of the municipal borough (1486 acres) in 1871 was 9319, and in 1881 it was 10,409. That of the par- liamentary borough (1629 acres) in 1881 was 11,216. The town occupics the site of the ancient Nidus or Nidum of the Romans. It was given by Richard Fitz-Hamon to his brother Richard de Granville, the ancestor of the Granvilles, marquises of

Bath. It is a borough by prescription, and reccived its first charter from Edward II.

NEBRASKA, a central State of the American Union, Plate TI,

lies between 40° and 43° N. lat.; the Missouri flows along its eastern side, the most easterly point being 95° 25’ W. long,, and the boundary line separating it from Wyoming on the west is 104° W. long. It is bounded on the §. by Colorado and Kansas, on the E. by Missouri and Iowa, on the N. by Dakota, and on the W. by Wyoming and Colo- rado. The width of the State from north to south is 208} miles, the length from east to west 413 miles, and the area 76,647 square miles, or 49,054,080 acres.

The greater part of Nebraska is a plateau. point is at the mouth of the Nemaha, in the south-eastern part of the State, where the elevation is 880 feet; the highest spot is Scott’s Bluffs, in the extreme western part of the State (6000 feet). The eastern half of the State has an average elevation of 1400 feet ; and the whole State averages 2312 feet above the sea.

There are no mountains, but in the northern and western parts there are some ridges and a few lofty hills. Generally the slopes are gentle, but occasionally precipitous, and in rare cases there are cafions with

perpendicular sides. The lands of three-fourths of the State are gently rolling. The surface owes its present form mainly to erosion. Between all the forms of upland surface the transition is gradual, The bottom lands and valleys are the most con- spicuous modifying features of the surface. They are huge shallow troughs, varying in breadth from a quarter of a mile on the smaller streams to 23 miles on the Platte and the Missouri. Their numerous terraces, like broad steps, gradually lead to the bordering uplands, which in turn are varied in height and form. Occasionally it is hard to determine where the bottom ends and the bordering bluffs begin, but generally both forms are clearly outlined. The innumerable tributaries that creep quietly into the main bottoms greatly complicate and beautify the forms of land-scape. The number of these valleys is very great, the Republican alone having more than four hundred tribu- taries. Not less than 25 per cent. of the entire surface of the State is composed of well-watered valleys. The few destitute of water are regaining the streamlets of former times through the climatic changes brought on by the settlement of the State. Most of these bottom lands, though composed of the richest vegetable mould and alluvium modified by loess materials, are perfectly dry, and rarely subject to overflow. A clear conception of the topography can only be obtained by crossing the State at right angles to the courses of the valleys. The rolling lands bordering the valleys gradually disappear as the divide is approached which separates one drainage system from the next. Here the land swells out into a gently undulating plain that varies in extent from 1 to 30 miles. Some of these higher uplands have a great number of shallow basin-like depressions where soil and grasses closely resemble those of the bottom lands. They are the sites of small lakes that’ recently existed here, and some of them still retain this character, being filled with fresh water from 1 to 15 feet in depth. South of the valley of the Niobrara, and commencing in 100° W. long,, are the noted sand-hills. They vary in height from a few yards to several hundred feet. Almost every form of wind sculptur- ing is found, but the conical predominates. Though formerly naked, these hills have recently become covered with grasses which are fixing the sands, and preserving

The lowest Surface,

ares ee

Climate.

Neh AS KA

their curious crater-like forms. They extend to the head of the forks of the Loup river, covering an estimated area of 8000 square miles.

The average mean temperature of the summer months— June, July, and August—in eastern Nebraska is 73° Fahr. At the North Platte it is slightly higher. Excepting a small section in the north-western part, the whole State is included between the summer isotherms of 72° and 76°. The mean temperature of the autumn months—September, October, and November—is 49°. As excessive rains rarely fall during these months, the comparatively high mean temperature rendcrs the autumn season long and delight- fully mild. The isotherm of 20° during the winter months—December, January, and February—embraces all of Nebraska except the north-west corner, where the temperature is slightly lower, and the south-east corner, where it is slightly higher. The spring months— March, April, and May—have a mean of 47° Fahr. The mean of the whole year is in the southern half of the State 55°, in the northern half 524°. Rarely does the tempera- ture in midsummer rise to 100°. In twelve years the thermometer fell below zero on an average thirteen times a year. The lowest point ever reached was 32° below zero. The heat of summer is constantly modified by breezes. Owing to the dryness of the atmosphere the cold is not felt more when the thermometer registers — 20° than in moist regions when it marks only zero. In winter the prevailing winds are from the north-west, changing, as spring advances, to the south-west, from which direction they mainly blow through summer and autumn. During some winters there are occasional wind-storms of great severity, preceded by a fall of snow, and followed hy very low temperature. Such storms last from one to three days, and when they cease the temperature reaches the lowest point experienced in this region. The extreme cold continues for a few days only. Fortunately the severe types of such storms are rare even here, and the w.nters on the whole are remarkably adapted to continuous labour in the open air. The atmosphere is wonderfully clear and pure throughout the year; objects can be seen at a great distance, and clouds when formed are outlined with exceptional clearness.

The rainfall in eastern Nebraska is abundant. At the Missouri it averages 40 inches a year; 100 miles farther west 32 inches; 200 miles west of the eastern boundary 30 inches. Beyond this point it more rapidly lessens until the North Platte is reached in western Nebraska, where the average is only 20 inches. In the end of May, or in early June, when the “big rise” of the Missouri and the Platte occurs, a rainy season invariably commences which lasts from three to eight weeks. As this is the time when crops most need rain, destructive droughts are rare m eastern Nebraska. After the wet season rains still occur, but at longer intervals. During winter rain rarely falls, Snow ranges in depth from 1 to 10 inches. There are many facts that show a constantly increasing rain- fall in the State. One reason for this is believed to be the great depth of the soil, and the great increase of absorption produced by cultivation. The loess soils, of which the surface of Nebraska is largely composed, only need the native sod to be broken up to be transmuted into a huge sponge absorbing all the moisture that falls on it.

Nebraska is exceptionally healthy, especially for persons of consumptive tendency. This is owing to its elevation above the sea, the dryness of the atmosphere, and the great amount of ozone in it, the prevalence of winds, and the fine natural drainage of the State. The diseases incident to the climate are rheumatism, neuralgia, and in isolated spots malaria. With the progress of settlement, and a lessen- Ing exposure, these ailments are gradually disappearing. |

In striking contrast to past geological times, there are Lakes.’

now no large lakes in Nebraska. There are, however, a great number of small lakelets. Many of these have been formed by “cut offs” on the Missouri, Platte, Elkhorn, Blue, and other rivers. At the head of the Elkhorn river is a region containing over thirty small lakes, many of which are of great beauty, with pebbly bottoms, and water clear as crystal. A still more extensive region of small lakes is at and between the heads of the Loup rivers. At the head of Pine Creek, a tributary of the Niobrara, there are many saline lakelets and ponds. A large saline bog, fed by a vast number of saline springs, covers about 500 acres, 2 miles west of Lincoln. Many smallcr ones exist in the same vicinity. Salt has been manufactured here in

con- siderable quantity by solar evaporation. abundant along most of the river bluffs and on the rolling lands of eastern Nebraska. On the long reaches of nearly level land springs occur at longer intervals, and on the watersheds still more rarely. Even here water can readily be obtained by wells, from 15 to 50 feet deep, excepting in a few counties like Clay, Fillmore, Adams, and Phelps, where, owing to the great thickness of the superficial deposits in some localities, shafting must be much deeper. Artesian wells have been successful, the depth at which flowing water has been obtained varying from 500 to 1000 feet.} .

The name Nebraska signifies land of broad rivers. Rivers.

Chief of all is the Missouri, which flows in a tortuous course for 500 miles along its eastern boundary, and is navigable for 2000 miles above Omaha. Next in import- ance is the Platte, which flows through the whole length of the State from west to east. Rising in lakelets in the Rocky Mountains, fed by snows, its entire length approxi- mates 1200 miles, When it enters the State it is already a broad and rapid, though shallow, river, flowing over a sandy bed. At North Platte it forks, one branch being known as the South and the other as the North Platte. The Loup is the first large tributary. It rises among the sand-hills south of the Niobrara, ina group of small lakes. It has three main branches, known as the South, Middle, and North Loups, each of which in turn has many tribu- taries. The Middle Loup, whose main direction is south- east, is 250 miles long. The Elkhorn, which empties into the Platte a short distance above the latter's junction with the Missouri, is one of the most beautiful streams of the State. It too has its source ina region of small lakes near 99° 30' W. long. Hereit has a remarkably broad bottom, with low bordering uplands. It flows over a rocky bottom in a south-easterly direction about 250 miles. Its principal tributaries are the North Fork and the Logan, the latter having an extraordinary number of tributaries. Near the south line of the State the Republican river and its numerous affluents drain a large area. It rises in the Colorado plains, but flows 216 miles through the State. Near the northern boundary is the Niobrara river, which rises in Wyoming, and flows 263 miles through the State before uniting with the Missouri. It is the most rapid and turbulent stream in the State. In 102° 30' W. long,, where it is 80 yards wide, it enters a deep cafion with high and often perpendicular walls, which extend for 180

miles. After emerging from the cafion it remains a broad, rapid, and sandy river to its mouth. The most important of its numerous tributaries are the Keya Paha and the Verdigris. Many other rivers in Nebraska are remarkable for the beauty and fertility of the sections which they drain, the most important being the Bows, the Big and Little

1 An artesian well in the Government Square in Lincoln struck brine at 250 feet, and at 550 feet a heavy flow was encountered. ‘The source of the brine was the reddish sandstone of the Dakota group (Cretaceous), which here underlies the superficial deposits.

Springs are Springs.

Flora.

Fauna.

Geology.

Blue, the Great and Little Nemaha, and Salt Creek. The water-power of the State is enormous. Though the streams meander through broad bottoms, places can be found every few miles where the fall is from 3 to 10 feet to the mile.

Nebraska is the meeting-place of two rather distinet floras— that of dry regions from the west, and their relatives from the moister east. Even many native Rocky Mountain plants have crept down to the plains of Nebraska. Of plants indigenous to the State 2000 species have been collected; among these, 1671 species are flowering plants. The Composite are represented by the largest number of species, there being 244 within the State. The sedges are represcnted by 151 species, though there are comparatively few individuals. The grasses are the leading vegetable forms in the number of individuals, though as yet only 147 species have been detected. Originally the short buffalo grass (Buchloe dactyloides) was everywhere abundant, but it has almost entirely disappeared from the eastern half of the State and from large sections in its western portions, the taller blue-joint

(Andropogon fureatus, &c.) grasses taking its place. Nothing can surpass the beauty of the prairies during the summer season when covered with rank. grasses and myriad flowers. Of forest trees 71 species are native. The leading variety in the number of indi- viduals and forests is the cotton-wood (Populus monilifera), which grows luxuriantly on river bottoms and many uplands, The ash-leaved maple, soft maple, elms, various species of ash, lindens, and willows are in various parts of the State about equal in abund- ance. The most valuable tree is the noble black walnut, which is extremely hardy and grows luxuriantly. The red eedar is abun- dant in some sections, and grows well everywhere. Two species of spruce and two of pine are found on tributaries of the Niobrara and Loup, and in the extreme western part of the State. Shrubs are represented by 91 species. Wild fruits abound, among which plums and grapes are most conspicuous, the former represented by three species and an endless number of varieties. The grapes are limited to timber belts, where they sometimes grow so luxuriantly as to make an almost impenetrable thicket of vines. The smaller wild fruits are widely distributed over the State.

Before the advent of the white man Nebraska was a paradise for wild animals,—the buffalo, elk, deer, antelope, beaver, wolves, lynx, foxes, &c. The buffalo has been banished, but the rest are still found in the sparsely settled sections of the State. The bird fauna is well developed, being rieh in genera (156); the species number at least 261. Many species of fish, molluscs, and a few reptiles are present in the streams. During a few years, and notably in 1874, 1876, and 1877, the migrating locust (Caloptenus spretus), whose native habitat is beyond Nebraska, did considerable damage. It does not appear on the average more than once ina decade, and owing to the continually increasing area brought under cultivation the damage from its visitations is continually growing less. Com- paratively little damage has yet been experienced from other insect pests.

No Arehean rocks are found im situ in the State. The Palzozoie system is represented only by rocks of Carboniferous age, which are found in south-eastern Nebraska, and cover an area of about 2500 square miles. These represent only the Upper Carboniferous, and are mainly yellowish micaceous sandstone, drab, greenish, lead-coloured, ash-coloured, and brownish clays,

and indurated, hard, greyish and yellowish limestones. No thick ASE Oo oe %,

OOO UTD ,

Vise ss oat OUTTA ROTEL DITTO REL ONETR LTT: » ,

TERTIARY’ fe em

Z . . “ip

y, ee Ntobrany cae * MW lal ale ‘ ye

ZL Xs 4 Y, (=) ty ‘Oo f o ASO

Y 2 4

é Jy roan o ks = 4 %, C1 Ns S

y A O% pe b> @

MIOCENE TERTYARY

CLL ng

REO

PoATA *

bk

Geological Map of Nebraska,

beds of coal have yet been discovered. The lower coal horizon is about 800 feet below the surface along the Missouri as far south as Richardson county, where the upper strata indicate a possible lower level geologically than is exposed elsewhere in the State. Thin beds of coal, from 6 to 18 inches thick, are found near the surface in Cass, Otoe, Nemaha, Johnson, Pawnee, and Richardson counties; in the last occurs the best coal yet found in the State,

NEBRASKA

At Aspinwall and on the State boundary it is 24 inches thiek in places. In the south-western part of the county a bed occurs from 20 to 28 inches thiek, from whieh at least half a million bushels have been taken within two years to supply local demands. This bed has been traced from east to west about 20 miles, and from north to south 4 miles. The coal is of good quality. On the west side of the Carboniferous formation, and eommencing at the mouth of Salt Creek, is a narrow strip of Permian rocks which on the Kansas line is about 15 miles broad. The rocks are mainly variously-coloured magnesian limestone, full of geode cavities, the entire thickness ranging from 20 to 100 feet. The Jura Trias is entirely wanting in eastern Nebraska. Resting conformably on the Permian are the various strata of the basal members of the Cretaceous system. Variegated clays are overlaid by reddish brown conglomerates and sandstones which form the Dakota group, whose thickness ranges from 20 to 300 feet. Above this group occur blackish and ash-coloured shales ; then a yellowish limestone; then a layer of whitish limestone full of shells called the IJnoceramus bed; and then on top towards north-eastern Nebraska a great thickness of impure chalk rock varying in hne from greyish white to a blueish pink and yellow. These beds constitute the Colorado group, or the Fort Benton and Niobrara groups of Meek and Hayden, and vary in thickness from 100 to 500 feet. Next above oceur the shales containing selenite that constitute the Fort Pierre Cretaceous, which are only found in Nebraska in Holt county and on the upper Republican river. At the close of the Fort Pierre epoch Nebraska was again a dry land surface, and remained so through the Fox Hills (Upper Cretaceons) epoch. In extreme south-western Nebraska a small arca is covered in isolated spots by the shales and sandstones of the Laramie, or transition group between the Cretaccous and Tertiary. No Eocene beds exist in Nebraska. Miocene beds exist in the north-western part of the State, but during this period the remainder of Nebraska continued to be a land surface which supported a gigantic forest vegetation and an abundant mammalian animal life. The deposits in the Miocene section are mainly indurated grits, silicates of lime, sandstones, conglomerates, and tabular limestones. Towards the close of the Miocene a further subsidence of the region of the plains inaugurated the Pliocene epoch. The great lake now extended as far east as Columbus, covering at least three-fifths of the State and an immense

tract outside of its present boundaries. The Pliocene beds are made up of sandstones, conglomerates, marls, and variously-coloured clays. Between the Niobrara and the Loup rivers there are in many places immense quantities of loosely compaeted sands, which some geologists, from the abundance of the fossils, have called the Equus beds. On the Republican river curious beds of flour-like geyserite occur. During Pliocene times this was a great geyser region whose activity commenced in the

| Cretaceous and continued through the Tertiary into the Quaternary.

This flour-like material equals for polishing purposes the best tripoli. The thickness of the Pliocene beds in Nebraska ranges from 10 to 700 feet. There is evidence of increasing cold in the upper deposits of the epoch: warm-tempcrate were gradually dis- placed by cold-temperate vegetable forms. The lake itself was drained before the end of the Pliocene.

The memorials of the Glacial epoch are here undoubted. Along the lower Platte, and on the Missouri wherever hard limestone constitutes the surface rocks, they are worn smooth and crossed by glacial scratehes in a direetion averaging 17° east of south. On the surface rock oceur—(1) blue clay from 1 to 30 feet thiek; (2) modified drift, gravel, and clay from 1 to 9 feet thick; (8) gravel and boulders 1 to 6 feet thiek; (4) oecasionally black soil contain- ing large quantities of silicified wood; (5) gravel, sand, and drift boulders; (6) calcareous sand; (7) loess from 2 to 200 feet thick; (8) black surface soil from 1 to 80 feet thick. On the return of mild conditions at the close of ‘‘the Great Ice Age” a freshwater lake covered much of Nebraska and the adjoining region on the east and south-east. The sediments brought down by the Missouri in the course of ages filled it up. Thus originated the loess deposits which are the source of the great agricultural wealth of the State. The rising of the land or the removal of barriers effected the drainage of the loess lake. Through the old lake bed the present rivers eommeneed to cut channels which at first filled the whole of their present valleys. That the loess was a subaqueous deposit is evident from the vast number of freshwater shells entombed in it. It is composed of 81 per cent. of extremely fine siliceous matter, over 3 per cent. of ferric oxide, 10 per cent. of the carbonates and phosphates of lime, anda small amount of carbonates of magnesia, soda, and potash, clay, and organic matter. It forms one of the

best soils in the world, and can never be exhausted until the hills and valleys of which it is composed are worn away. The loess and alluvium of the river valleys have a larger amount of organic matter combined with them, especially at the top, where the black soil is frequently from 5 to 30 feet thick, than is found on the uplands, where it ranges from 2 to 5 feet. The source of this black soil is the swampy condition that prevailed here towards the elose of the loess age. The rivers often stood long at the same

Agricul- – ture.

Com- munica- tion.

Educa- tion.

Popnla- tion,

NE B—

1541, in July of which year the Spanish general and explorer History.

level before the upward movement was resumed, and thus the many terraces were formed that characterize the valleys.

that, as explained above, the soils of the State are among the best in the world, chemical analysis and experience alike confirm. Experience has not yet settled the question whether the alluvium of the valleys or the loess of the uplands is the more valuable. Grasses and corn (maize) are the principal products. Corn, especially, is a rarely failing crop. The root crops that grow in temperate latitudes thrive amazingly. Eastern Nebraska is eminently adapted to the growth of apples, which here attain a size, colour, and flavour rarely equalled elsewhere. Grapes, plums, and cherries do equally well. Peaches, though not so sure as the former, are successfully grown south of the Platte. The strawberry nowhere reaches a better size or more luscious flavour than here. Other small fruits do almost equally well. The spontaneous growth of nutritious grasses, the ease with which cultivated varieties are grown, and the enormous yield of corn render the State peculiarly adapted for the raising of cattle, horses, sheep, and hogs. The stock industry is growing rapidly, and is at present doing most to enrich the

people. No industry promises better results, however, than the planting of new forests, to which many people are devoting themselves with the most gratifying success.

The assessed valuation of the State in 1882 (being only one- third of the real value) was $98,537,475. The eereals produced in 1882 were—wheat, 16,405,500 bushels; maize, 82,995,146 ; oats, 18,487,950; barley, 1,919,880. The following amount of stock was reported (a few counties not being returned):—cattle, 815,988; sheep, 376,257; hogs, 821,049; horses, 282,942; mules, 31,314. Tree culture is reported thus :—fruit trees, 2,038,111; grape vines, 305,389; forest trees, 40,502,584. Many of the lesser products of the State are not included in this statement.

By the completion of the Union Pacifie Railroad in 1869 a high- way was made to the Pacific across Nebraska. The Burlington and Missouri River Railroad, begun in the same year, was coinpleted to its junction with the Union Pacific at Kearney in 1872. It extended its main line during 1882 through the Republican valley to Denver, Colorado. In connexion with both these main lines there are important branches; and in 1883 2000 miles of railway had been constructed in the State. Before the Union Pacific was made, freighting across the plains was a large and profitable business. Omaha was conspicuous for its energy in sccuring this traffic, and grew to be the first city in Nebraska, and has ever since led the State in commerce and in manufacturing enterprises.

A basis for a free school system was laid by Congress in the Act constituting Nebraska a Territory, by which two sections of land (1280 acres) in each township were set aside for this purpose. The State constitution of 1875 provided that all fines, penalties, and licence moneys arising under the general laws of the State should be transferred to the school fund, and that the legislature should provide for the free instruction in the common schools of the State of all persons between the ages of five and twenty-one years. The census of 1880 shows that only 2°5 per cent. of the population of Nebraska over ten years of age are unable to read—a smaller proportion of illiteracy than that of any State in the Union, with one exception (Lowa, 2°4 per cent.).

A State normal school was established at Peru in 1867, and a

State school for the deaf and dumb in Omaha in the same year. The State institution for the blind was established in Nebraska City in 1875; a regular course of study, extending from eight to ten years, is provided. A State university and agricultural college was established in 1869 at Lincoln, a building being erected at a cost of $150,000, and opened in September 1871, when the population of the State was only 133,000. It provides classical, scientific, and literary courses of instruction. Provision has just been made to open a medical department with a three years' course in October 1883. The higher State institutions of learning, as well as the common schools, are open to both sexes, and free. The Insane Hospital was opened at Lincoln in December 1870; the present building, exclusive of the wings approaching completion, cost $165,000. The State penitentiary, established at Lincoln in 1870, was erected at a cost uf $312,000. ' The population of the State in 1880 was 452,402 (249,241 males, 203,161 females). In 1870 it was 122,993; in 1860, 28,846. Of the population in 1880, 95,790 were born in Nebraska, 259,198 in other States of the Union, and 97,414 in other lands—the largest number of immigrants being from Canada, Bohemia, Scandinavia, and Germany. In 1860 the population per square mile was 0°4; in 1870, 1°6; in 1880, 5-9. The population has been increasing so Tapidly since 1880 that the lowest estimates do not make it less than 675,000 by the end of 1883.

The following are the chief towns and their populations in 1880: —Omaha, 30,518; Lincoln (the State capital), 13,088 ; Nebraska City, 4183 ; Plattsmouth, 4175; Beatrice, 3386; Grand Island, 3550 ; and Hastings, 2817. All these towns have greatly increased, Poe them, like Hastings, have doubled their populations

History. —Nebraska was probably first visited by Europeans in

Coronado penetrated from New Mexico to a eountry which he called Quivira, and described as lying about the 40th parallel, and abounding in buffalo, which corresponds with the region of the Platte. It was then occupied by powerful Indian tribes, whose chief ruler was Tatarax. It was subsequently revisited by Padilla, a Franeiscan friar who had accompanied Coronado, and who here ° lost his life. No more records of visits to this region are chronicled for two hundred years. About the middle of the 18th century French missionaries from Canada came to the Missouri, and still later a few traders found their way here. It constituted a portion of the Louisiana territory which was purchased by Jefferson from France in 1803. At that time Indian tribes still occupied the whole region. At some earlier period a more civilized race lived here who made pottery and skilful carvings, built houses and forti- fications, and reared mounds which often contain the ashes of their dead. When Nebraska eame into possession of the United States the Sioux Indians were most numerous. The Pawnees, Otoes, and Omahas were next in numbers and in importance. These power-

-ful tribes have all become reduced in numbers by disease, constant

wars, and privations. The Sioux, who early gained the ascendency over the other tribes, resided in north-eastern Nebraska. The eastern part of the South Platte region was occupied by the Otoes, and the western part by the Pawnees, between which tribes there were constant boundary disputes.

The first settlement by whites was made in 1847 at Bellevue on the Missouri, 9 miles south of Omaha. Here a trading post of the Ameriean Fur Company was conducted by Colonel Peter A. Sarpy, a Frenchman

distinguished by his knowledge of the Indians, his courage, and his enterprise. The Mormon emigration, begun in 1847, traversed several paths, one of which lay through Nebraska, which thus first became generally known throughout the country. During the overland traffic to California that commenced in 1849, depots of supply were established at Bellevue, Plattsmouth, Nebraska City, and in the interior at Fort Kearney.

The Act constituting Nebraska a distinet Territory, and open- ing its lands to settlement, was approved May 30, 1854. Its area then embraced 351,558 square miles, extending from the 40th par- allel to British America on the north, its eastern line connecting the Missouri river on the south-east with the Red River on the north, and its western line being the summit of the Rocky Moun- tains. In 1861 Nebraska was shorn of its extended territory by the cutting off of portions of it to form Dakota and Colorado Territories. In 1863 it was still further redueed by the forma- tion of Idaho Territory. These curtailments left Nebraska a purely prairie State. During the first five years after the organiza- tion of the Territory the settlements rapidly increased along the Missouri. Great numbers who rushed to Pike's Peak in 1859 when the gold excitement was at its height, on their return, disappointed and disgusted, stopped and opencd farms in the State. This had the effect of starting settlements in the interior. The bottom lands of the Missouri and its tributaries had first been occupied, and it was supposed that the uplands were of inferior fertility. Now, liowever, these so-called " bluff lands," composed of loess materials, began to be cultivated, cautiously at first, until experiment proved them to be of the choicest eharacter. Pioneers then began to push out from the rivers, at first only a few miles, but finally wherever lands could be obtained, without regard to the presence or absence of bottom lands. Iu 1863 the Union Pacific Railroad and in 1864 the Burlington and Missouri River Railroad began to sell portions of their lands in Nebraska, received from the general Government ; and this became a most potent factor in turning a tide of emigration into the State.

At the breaking out of the civil war in 1861 the population of the Territory comprised less than 30,000. Yet Nebraska furnished to the Union army during the war 3307 officers and men, includ- ing two companies of scouts, partly composed of Indians.

In 1866 the legislature prepared a constitution for a State government, which a vote of the people confirmed by a small majority, though the opponents of the measure claimed that it was obtained by fraud. The first legislature under the State consti- tution met July 4th, 1866. The bill to admit Nebraska as a State was passed over the president's veto, and proclaimed on March Ist,

1867.

The first capital of Nebraska was at Bellevue. It was removed to Omaha in 1855, where it remained until Nebraska became a State, when it was taken to Lancaster, a town of half a dozen houses, whose name was then changed to Lincoln,—now (1883) grown to be a city of 16,000 inhabitants. The present State eon- stitution was framed in 1875, and was ratified in the same year by the people. The first legislature under the new constitution met in January 1877. The house of representatives consists of eighty-four, and the senate of thirty members; and the legislature meets biennially. (8. A.)

NEBUCHADNEZZAR is the familiar form, transcribed from the Hebrew 788273133, of the name of the great Baby-

O10

lonian king who carried the Jews captive, and whose reign marks the highest point of the Chaldean empire. Another Biblical form of the word is Nebuchadrezzar (Jer. xlix. 28), and similarly Greek authors write NaBovxodpdcopos. These forms are nearer to the original name as it is found on the cuneiform monuments, viz., Nabu-kudurri-usur, "Nebo, defend the crown." To what has been said of Nebuchadnezzar in the article Bapytonta (vol. iil. p. 188 ; comp. Danret and Isrart) it may be added that a frag- ment of a cylinder with an inscription relating to a war with Egypt in the thirty-seventh year of his reign has been published by Schrader (Aegypt. Ztschr., 1879; K.A.7., 2d ed., p. 363 sq.), that an inscription of Nebuchadnezzar has been observed by Sayce on the north bank of Nahr al-Kalb near Beyrit (Proc. Soc. Bib. Arch., 1881), and that two large inscriptions have also been found by Pognon in Wadi Brissa, near Hermel, in the Lebanon (see Cl. Ganneau in The Times, December 29, 1883).

NEBULA. See Astronomy, vol. ii. p. 820.

NEBULAR THEORY. The nebular theory is a famous hypothesis which has been advanced with the view of accounting for the origin of the solar system. It is emphatically a speculation ; it cannot be demonstrated by observation or established by mathematical calculation. Yet the boldness and the splendour of the nebular theory have always given it a dignity not usually attached to a doctrine which has so little direct evidence in its favour. It will also be admitted that from the very nature of the case a theory of the origin of the solar system must be devoid of direct testimony. All we could expect to find would be features in that system whose existence the theory would account for; or possibly by looking at other systenis we might observe them in phases suggesting the early phases of our own system. It is hard to see what other kind of evidence would be attainable. Now asa matter of fact our system does present many most striking features which could be accounted for by the nebular theory, and the theory also derives as much corroboration from the study of other systems as we could reasonably expect. Hence, as all attainable evidence is on the whole in favour of the nebular theory (though here and there there are exceptional phenomena), astronomers have generally regarded this theory with considerable approval.

There are very remarkable features in the solar system which point unmistakably to some common origin of many of the different bodies which it contains. We must at once put the comets out of view. It does not appear that they bear any testimony on either side of the question. We do not know whether the comets are really indigenous to the solar system or whether they may not be merely imported into the system from the depths of space. Even if the comets be indigenous to the system, they may, as inany suppose, be merely ejections from the sun, or in any case their orbits are exposed to such tremendous perturba- tions from the planets that it is quite unsafe from the present orbit of a comet to attempt any estimate of what that orbit may have been countless agesago. On all these grounds we must put the comets on one side for the present, and discuss the nebular theory without any reference thereto. But even with this omission we still muster in the solar system from two to three hundred bodies, almost every one of which pronounces distinctly, though with varying emphasis, in favour of the

nebular theory. The first great fact to which we refer is the common direction in which the planets revolve around the sun. This is true not only of the great planets Mercury, Venus, the Earth, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, and Neptune; it is also true of the host of more than two hundred small planets. All these bodies perform their revolution in the same direction. It is also extremely

NE B—

remarkable that all the great planets and many of the small ones have their orbits very nearly in the same plane, and nearly circularinform. Viewed as a question in prob- abilities, we may ask what the chance is that out of two hundred and fifty bodies revolving around the sun all shall be moving in one direction. If the direction of movement were merely decided by chance, the probability against such an arrangement is of stupendous magnitude. It is represented by the ratio of unity to a number containing about sixty figures, and so we are at once forced to the conclusion that this remarkable feature of the planetary motions must have some physical explanation. Ina minor degree this conclusion is strengthened by observing the satellites. Discarding those of Uranus, in which the orbits of the satellites are highly inclined to the ecliptic, and in which manifestly some exceptional though unknown influences have been at work, we may say that the satellites revolve around the primaries also in the same direction ; while, to make the picture complete, we find that the planets, so far as they can be observed, rotate on their axes in the same manner.

The nebular theory here steps in and offers an explana- tion of this most remarkable uniformity. Laplace supposed that our sun had once a stupendous: nebulous atmosphere which extended so far out as to fill all the space at present occupied by the planets. This gigantic nebulous mass, of which the sun was only the central and somewhat more condensed portion, is supposed to have a niovement of rotation on its axis. There is no difficulty in conceiving how a nebula, quite independently of any internal motion of its parts, shall also have had as a whole a movement of rotation. In fact a little consideration will show from the law of probabilities that it is infinitely probable that such an object should really have some movement

of rotation, no matter by what causes the nebula may have originated. As this vast mass cooled it must by the laws of heat have contracted towards the centre, and as it contracted it must, according to a well-known law of dynamics, rotate more rapidly. The time would then conie when the centrifugal force on the outer parts of the mass would more tlian counterbalance the attraction of the centre, and thus we would have the outer parts left as a ring. The inner portion will still continue to contract, the same process will be repeated, and thus a second ring will be formed. We have thus grounds for believing that the original nebula will separate into a series of rings all revolving in the same direction with a central nebulous mass in the interior. The materials of each ring would continue to cool and to contract until they passed from the gaseous to the liquid condition. If the consolidation took place with compara- tive uniformity we might then anticipate the formation of a vast multitude of small planets such as those we actually do find in the region between the orbit of Mars and that of Jupiter. More usually, however, the ring might be expected not to be uniform, and therefore to condense in sorne parts more rapidly than in others. The effect of such contraction would be to draw into a single mass the materials of the ring, and thus we would have a planet formed, while the satellites of that planet would be developed from the still nascent planet in the same way as the planet itself originated from the sun. In this way we account most simply for the uniformity in the direction in which the planets revolve, and for the mutual proximity of the planes in which their orbits are contained. The rotation of the planets on their axes is also explained, for at the time of the first formation of the planet it must have participated in the rotation of the whole nebula, and by the subsequent contraction of the planet the speed with which the rotation was performed must have been accelerated.

Nie Uwe THE OR Y

There is quite a different method of approaching the subject, which leads in a very striking manner to eonclu- sions practically identical with those we have just sketched. We may commence by dealing with the sun as we find it at the present moment, and then reasoning back to what wnust have been the ease in the earlier epochs of the history of our system, ‘The stupendous daily outpour of heat from the sun at the present time is really, when

properly studied, a profound argument in support of the nebular theory. The amount of the sun's heat has been estimated. We receive on the earth less than one two-thousand- millionth part of the whole radiation. It would seem that the greater part of the rest of that torrent flows away to be be lost in space. Now what supplies this heat? We might at first suppose that the sun was really a mightily heated body radiating out its heat as white hot iron does, but this explanation cannot be admitted in face of the

notorious fact that there is no historical evidence that the

sun is growing colder. We have not the slightest reason to think that the radiation from the sun is measurably weaker now than it was a couple of thousand years ago, yet it can be shown that, if the sun were merely radiating heat as simply a hot body, then it would cool some degrees every year, and must have cooled many thousands of degrees within the time covered by historical reeords. We there- fore conclude that the sun has some other source of heat than that due simply to incandescence. We ean also con- ceive that the heat of the sun might be supplied by some- thing analogous to combustion. It would take 20 tons of coal a day burned on each square foot of the sun's surface to supply the daily radiation. Even if the sun were made of one mass of fuel as efficient as coal, that mass must be entirely expended in a few thousand years. We cannot therefore admit that the source of the heat in the sun is to be found in any chemical combination taking place in its mass. Where then can we find an adequate supply of heat? Only one external source can be named : the falling of meteors into the sun must yield some heat just as the flash of a shooting star yields some heat to our atmosphere, but the question is whether the quantity of heat obtainable from the shooting stars is at all adequate for the purpose. It can be shown that unless a quantity of meteors in collective mass equal to our moon were to plunge into the sun every year the supply of heat could not be sustained from this source. Now there is no reason to believe that meteors in anything like this quantity can be supplied to the sun, and therefore we must reject this source as also inadequate.

The truth about the sun's heat appears to be that the sun is really an incandescent body losing heat, but that the operation of cooling is immensely retarded owing to a curious circumstance due jointly to the

stupendous mass of the sun and to a remarkable law of heat. It is of course well known that if energy disappears in one form it feappears in another, and this principle applied to the sun will explain the famous difficulty.

As the sun loses heat it contracts, and every pair of particles in the sun are nearer to each other after the contraction than they were before. The energy due to their separation is thus less in the contracted state than in the original state, and as that energy cannot be lost it must reappear in heat. The sun is thus slowly contract- ing; but as it contracts it gains heat by the operation of the law just referred to, and thus the further cooling and further contraction of the sun is protracted until the additional heat obtained is radiated away. In this way we can reconcile the fact that the sun is certainly losing heat with the fact that the change in temperature has

“ce been large enough to be perceived within historic imes,

oll

It can be shown that the sun is at present contracting, so that its diameter diminishes four miles every century. This is of course an inappreciable distance when compared with the diameter of the sun, which is nearly a million of miles, but the signifieance for our present purpose depends upon the fact that this contraction is always taking place. A thousand years ago the sun must have had a diameter 40 miles greater than at present, ten thousand years ago that diameter must have been 400 miles more than it is now, and soon. We eannot perhaps assert that the same rate is to be continued for very many centuries, but it is plain that the further we look back into past time the greater must the sun have been.

Dealing then siinply with the laws of nature as we know them, we can see no boundary to the growth of the sun as we look back. We must conceive a time when the sun was swollen to such an extent that it filled up the entire space girdled by the orbit of Mercury. Earlier still the sun must have reached to the Earth. Larlier still the sun must have reached to where Neptune now revolves on the confines of our system, but the mass of the sun could not undergo an expansion so prodigious without being made vastly more rarefied than at present, and hence we are led by this mode of

reasoning to the conception of the primeval nebula from which our system has originated.

Considering that our sun is but a star, or but one of the millions of stars, it becomes a question of great interest to see whether any other systems present indication of a nebulous origin analogous to that which Laplace proposed for the solar system. In one of his most memorable papers, Sir W. Herschel marshals the evidenee which ean be eollected on this point. He arranges in this paper a selection from his observations on the nebulz in such a way as to give great plausibility to his view of the gradual transmutation of nebulze into stars. Herschel begins by showing us that there are regions in the heavens where a faint diffused nebulosity is all that can be detected by the telescope. There are other nebule in which a nucleus ean be just discerned, others again in which the nucleus is easily seen, and still others where the nucleus is a brilliant star-like point. The transition from an object of this kind to a nebulous star is very natural, while the nebulous stars pass into the ordinary stars by a few graduated stages. It is thus possible to enumerate a series of objects beginning at one end with the most diffused nebulosity and ending at the other with an ordinary fixed star or group of stars. Each object in the series differs but slightly from the object just before it and the object just after it. It seemed to Herschel that he was thus able to view the actual changes by which masses of phosphorescent or. glowing vapour became actually eondensed down into stars. The eonden- sation of a nebula could be followed in the same manner as we ean study the growth of the trees in the forest, by comparing the trees of various ages which the forest eon- tains at the same time. In attempting to pronounce on the evidence with regard to Herschel's theory, we must at once admit that the transmutation of a nebula into a star has never been seen. It is indeed very doubtful whether any changes of a nebula have ever been seen which are of the same character as the changes Herschel's theory would require. It seems, however, most likely that the periods of time required for such changes are so stupendous that the changes accomplished in a eentury or two are absolutely inappreciable.

The nebular theory is a noble speculation supported by plausible argument, and the verdict of science on the whole subject eannot be better expressed than in the words of Newcomb :—" At the present time we ean only say

that the nebular hypothesis is indicated by the general tend- encies of the laws of nature, that it has not been proved

ol2

to be inconsistent with any fact, that it is almost a necessary consequence of the only theory by which we can account for the origin and conservation of the sun's heat, but that it rests on the assumption that this conservation is to be explained by the laws of nature as we now see them in operation. Should any one be sceptical as to the sufficiency of these laws to account for the present state of things, science can furnish no evidence strong enough to overthrow his doubts until the sun shall be found growing smaller by actual measurement, or the nebulz be actually seen to condense into stars and systems." (R. 8. B.)

NECHO, the Biblical form (2 Kings xxii. 29; Jerem. xlvi. 2) of the name Neku; see Eeyprt, vol. vii. p. 743, and IsRAEL, vol. xill. p. 416.

NECKER, Jacques (1732-1804), finance minister of Louis XVL, and convener of the states-general of 1789, was born at Geneva in 1732. His father was a native of Ciistrin in Pomerania, and had, after the publication of some works on international law, been elected professor of public law at Geneva. Jacques Necker had been sent to Paris in 1747 to become a clerk in the bank of a friend of his father, M. Vernet. He soon afterwards established, with another Genevese, the famous bank of Thelusson & Necker. Thelusson superintended the bank in London (his grandson was made a peer as Lord Rendlesham), while Necker was managing partner in Paris. Between them the bank prospered, and both partners became very rich. He chiefly occupied himself in his bank, but in 1763 fell in love with Madame de Verméneux, the widow of a French officer. Shecould not make up her mind to marry any one who was not noble, and, while considering his offer, she went on a visit to Geneva, where she met Suzanne Curchod, the daughter of a pastor near Lausanne, to whom Gibbon had been engaged, and took such a fancy to her that she brought her back as her companion to Paris in 1764. There Necker, transferring his love from the widow to the poor Swiss girl, married Suzanne before the end of the year. She was extremely ambitious, and encouraged her husband to try and make himself a public position. He accordingly became a syndic or director of the French

East India Company, and, after showing his financial ability in its management, defended it in an able memoir against the attacks of Morellet in 1769. He had also made interest with the French Government by lending it money, and was appointed resident at Paris by the republic of Geneva. Madame Necker assisted his ambi- tious views by entertaining largely the chief leaders of the political, financial, and literary worlds of Paris, and her Fridays became as greatly frequented as the Mondays of Madame Geofifrin, or the Tuesdays of Madame Helvetius. In 1773 Necker won the prize of the Académie Frangaise for an éloge on Colbert, and in 1775 published his Fssai sur la législation et le commerce des grains, in which he attacked the free-trade policy of Turgot. His wife now believed he could get into office as a great financier, and made him give up his share in the bank, which he trans- ferred to his brother Louis. She was right, and in October 1776 Necker was made finance minister of France, though with the title only of director of the treasury, which, how- ever, he changed in 1777 for that of director-general of the finances. He did great good in regulating the finances by attempting to divide the taille or poll tax more equally, by abolishing the "vingtiéme d'industrie," and establishing "'monts du piété." But his greatest financial measures were his attempt to fund the French debt and his establish- ment of annuities under the guarantee of the state. The operation of funding was too difficult in regard to the com- plicated French debt to be suddenly accomplished, and Necker rather pointed out the right line to be followed than completed the operation. In all this he treated French

finance rather as a banker than as a profound political econoniist, and thus fell far short of Turgot, who was the very greatest economist of his day. Politically he did not do much to stave off the coming Revolution, and his establishment of provincial assemblies in the '' pays d'élec- tion" only tended to keep France disunited. In 1781] he published his famous Compte Rendu, in which he drew the balance sheet of France, and was dismissed from his office, Yet his dismissal was not really due to his book, but to the influence of Marie Antoinette, whose schemes for bene- fiting the Duc de

Guines he had thwarted. In retirement he occupied himself with literature, and with his daughter, Mdlle Necker, who was his only child, and would bea wealthy heiress. He first attempted to procure the young English statesman Mr Pitt for her husband, but eventually chose the Swedish Baron Erik Magnus von Staél-Holstein, on condition that his master made hii Swedish ambassador at Paris. Gustavus III. was quite willing, and in 1786 Mdlle Necker became Madame de Staél. But neither M. nor Madame Necker cared to remain out of office, and in 1787 Necker was banished by "lettre de cachet" 40 leagues from Paris for attacking Calonne. In 1788 the country, which had at the bidding of the literary guests of Madame Necker come to believe that Necker was the only minister who could "stop the deficit," as they said, demanded Necker's recall, and in September 1788 he became once more director-general of the finances. He entered office at a critical moment: Dauphiné was in actual rebellion, and France was crying out for the summons of the states-general. Necker put a stop to the rebellion in Dauphiné by legalizing its assembly, and then set to work to arrange for the summons of the states-general. Throughout the early months of 1789 Necker was regarded as the saviour of France, but his conduct at the meeting of the states-general sufficiently proved that he was not a great statesman, and showed that he regarded the states- general merely as an assembly which should grant money, not organize reforms. The same want of statesmanship appeared in his vacillating conduct with regard to the reunion of the three orders, when he allowed the king to be forced by the assembly instead of taking the lead in ordering the reunion. He was nevertheless regarded as the cause of the Revolution by the court, and on July 11, while at dinner, received the abrupt order to leave France at once. But Necker's dismissal brought about the taking of the Bastille, which induced the king to recall his old minister. His return was an absolute ovation, and he was received with joy in every city he traversed. But at Paris he again proved to be no statesman. In his conceit he believed he could save France alone, and refused to act with Mirabeau or La Fayette. He caused the king's acceptance of the suspensive veto, by which he sacrificed his chief prerogative in September, and destroyed all chance of a strong executive by contriving the decree of November 7, by which the ministry might not be chosen from the assembly. Financially he proved equally incap- able for a time of crisis, and could not understand the need of such extreme measures as the establishment of assignats in order, to keep

the country quiet. His popularity vanished when his only idea was to ask the assembly for new loans, and in September 1790 he resigned his office, unregretted by a single Frenchman. Not without diffi- culty he reached Coppet, near Geneva, an estate he had bought in 1784. Here he occupied himself with literature, but Madame Necker pined for her Paris salon, and died in 1794. He continued to live on at Coppet, under the care of his daughter, Madame de Staél, and his niece, Madame Necker de Saussure, but his time was past, and his books had no political influence. A momentary excitement was caused by the advance of the French armies in 1798, when

he burnt most of his political papers. He died at Coppet in April 1804.

The chief authorities for Necker's life are La Vie privée de M. Necker, by Madame de Staél-Holstein, and the Notice sur la vie de M. Neeker, by Auguste de Staél-Holstein, his grandson, published in the collection of his works edited by the latter in 1833. The bibliography of his works is as follows:—éponse au Mémoire de M. LP Abbé Morellet, 1769; Eloge de J. B. Colbert, 1773; Essai sur la législation ct le eommerce des grains, 1775; Compte rendu au Rot, 1781; De Vadministration des finanecs de la France, 3 vols., 1784; Mémoire en réponse au discours prononeé par M. de Calonne, 1787; De Vimportanee des opinions religicuses, 1788; Sur Padministration de M. Necker, par lui-méme, 1791; Du pouvoir exécutif dans les grands états, 2 vols., 1792; Réflexions sur le proeés de Louis XVI., 1792; Dela Révolution Frangaise, several editions, the last in 4 vols., 1797; Cours dela morale religieuse, 1800; Derniéres vues de politique et de finance, 1802; Manuserits de M. Necker, published by his daughter, 1804 ; Switcs funestes d'wne seule faute, published after his death. Le Salon de Madame Neekcr, by the Vicomte d'Haussonville, 2 vols., 1882, compiled from the papers at Coppet, should also be consulted. (ESM S))

NECROSIS. This word, which has the same meaning as mortification, is now restricted in surgical works to death of bone. It is sometimes used to signify the part which dies; it may, however, with more propriety signify the process, ending in the death of the bone. A severe inflammation, caused by a severe blow, by cold, or by the absorption of various poisons, as mercury and phosphorus, is the general precursor of necrosis. The dead part,

analogous to the slough in the soft tissues, is called a sequestrun or exfoliation. At first it is firmly attached to the living bone around; gradually, however, the dead portion is separated from the living tissue. The process of separation is a slow one. New bone is formed around the sequestrum, which often renders its removal difficult. Asa rule the surgeon waits until the dead part is loose, and then cuts down through the new case and removes the sequestrum. The cavity in which it lay gradually closes, and a useful limb is the result.

NECTAR anp AMBROSIA are the nourishment of the gods in Homer and in Greek literature generally. The gods resemble men in all respects except that they have different food and drink. Usage varies much as to the exact meaning of the two terms. Probably they were not originally distinguished ; but usually both in Homer and in later writers nectar is the drink and ambrosia the food. On the other hand in Aleman nectar is the food, and in Sappho and Anaxandrides ambrosia the drink. Each is used in Homer as an unguent (nectar, Ji. xix. 30; ambrosia, //. xiv. 170). Both are fragrant, and may be used as perfume. The derivation of the word nectar is un- certain; probably vyydéreos is a kindred word. Ambrosia Is derived from éuPBporos, immortal.

NECTARINE, a fruit differing from the peach in having @ smooth or glabrous skin instead of a downy one. The varieties of nectarine, too, have often a distinct flavour from that of the peaches. The common origin of the peach and nectarine is shown, however, by the facts that seeds of the one will often reproduce the other, and that fruits of both kinds have not unfrequently been met with on the same branch. For cultivation see HorTicuULTURE, pol, p. 272.

NEEDLE. The sewing needle is an implement which has been in use from prehistoric times in all places where mankind used the skins of animals or woven fabrics for clothing. Originally the needle was made of fish-bone, bone, or ivory, and its first form was probably a tude eyeless bodkin. Needles of bone continue to this day to be used by uncivilized tribes; but since the time of the discovery of bronze metal needles have been in use i civilized communities. It is on record that needles of Steel were made at

Nuremberg towards the end of the 14th century, and ata later period Spanish needles acquired

wide celebrity. For upwards of two centuries the manu- facture has been established in England,—Redditch in Worcestershire, with several other small towns in Warwick- shire, being the centre of the industry, first planted there by Germans. Originally the trade was domestic in its character, but now it is carried on in large manufactories where mechanical appliances have to a certain extent supplanted handiwork, with much advantage to the health and the wellbeing of the operatives.

The raw material of the manufacture consists of steel wire of fine quality and suitable gauge. The wire is sup- plied in coils of definite weight and diameter, and the first operation consists in cutting the coil with powerful shears. With the aid of a gauge the coil is cut with precision into lengths, each sufficient for two needles. These lengths, having the curvature of the coil and other inequalities, are next straightened. For this purpose a bundle con- taining several thousand lengths is packed within two strong iron rings; the bundle is heated to red heat, and then pressed on an iron plate having two parallel grooves in which the iron rings run. Over this plate the bundle is worked backward and forward by the pressure of an oblong slightly curved iron tool having two longitudinal slits through which the edges of the rings project. Thus by combined pressure and rolling the whole of the lengths quickly become perfectly straight and even. The next operation consists in pointing both ends of the wires, which, being done on a dry grindstone revolving at high speed, is, from the sparks and dust created, very injurious to the operatives. A grinder, holding at one time several dozen wires against the stone with his left hand, and revolving them slightly with his right, will point about 100,000 needlesin a day. He is but imperfectly protected against the deadly dust he produces by a cowl which, partly covering the grindstone, is connected with a pipe through which a strong current of air is drawn, sucking away a large proportion of the dust. For the operation of pointing various machines have been devised and have coine into extensive use, especially in Germany. In general principle these machines consist of a wheel, to the periphery of which the wires to be pointed are held by an india-rubber band. It revolves at right angles to the revolving hollow grindstone, and, bringing each wire in rapid succession at

the proper angle for grinding against the stone, it points three times as many as a skilful grinder. The succeeding series of operations have for their object the eyeing of the needles. As a preliminary to this the oxidized scale at the centre of the wire is ground off, and on the surface so prepared each wire is separately stamped, by means of dies, with the grooved and rounded impres- sion of two needle heads set end toend. Through these stamped heads the eye-holes are next perforated by means of a screw-press working a pair of fine steel punches or prongs. Each wire now forms two needles attached head to head by a broad thin scarf of steel at the point of junc- tion where the metal has been stamped for the head. These double needles, taken to the number of about one hundred, are threaded together with a fine wire passed through the eyes, giving the whole the appearance of a fine close-set comb. Each side is clamped up tightly, and the expansion of the scarf in the centre is removed by a file. The spitted row is now ready to break over into separate needles, and as the point of junction of the two sets of heads is weakened by the stamping process, the rows readily break at that point by bending. These heads are then smoothed and rounded with the file before the clamp is removed, the wire withdrawn, and the separate needles set free. At this stage the needles are hardened and tempered in the usual manner ; that is, they are placed in an iron tray, heated to redness in a muffle furnace, plunged

into an oil bath, then re-heated in the muffle till they assume a straw colour, and gradually cooled. Following the tempering comes the process of scouring and fining or polishing, for which purpose the needles are put up in bundles of several thousands mixed with soft soap, oil, and emery powder, and tied tightly round with a canvas cover. A number of such bundles are laid in the bed of a machine in which by rollers or other devices they are kept rolling backward and forward, so that each individual needle rubs against its neighbours. After sufficient time the bundles are withdrawn, the needles cleaned by wash- ing, dried, and again bundled up as before, but with a mixture containing putty powder in place of emery. The rolling process is continued till the needles acquire a sufficiently polished surface.

The needles are now un- packed, washed in an alkaline solution, and dried in sawdust. From that they are conveyed to trays, where they are brought parallel to each other by a sharp jerking motion. It is next necessary to bring all the heads in one direction, which is dexterously done by a “ header,” who with a cloth finger-stool on the fourth finger presses a lot of needles against that cloth. Points presented adhere, and thus at each operation a number of needles re- main sticking in the finger-stool. While this arrangement is going on, faulty and imperfect needles are picked out. The heads being all now laid in one direction, attention is given to the smoothing and rounding of the eye-holes, a work essential for the prevention of the fraying and break- ing of the thread in sewing. The heads are blued by heating, an operation most neatly and perfectly performed by bringing each head in succession in contact with a gas flame by means of a revolving wheel, against the periphery of which the needles are retained by an elastic band. The needles so blued are strung on a roughened steel wire, over which is spread a fine paste of oil and emery. These wires are suspended between uprights on a frame platform, to which a jerking motion is communicated; thereby an oscillating motion is communicated to the suspended needles, and the gentle friction thus set up between the needle eye and the roughened wire and emery slowly but effectually secures the desired effect. Now it only remains to free the head from the blue colour on a small grind- stone, and give a final polish to the needle on a rapidly revolving buff wheel aided by putty powder. It has of late become a common practice to gild the heads of needles. The variety of needles manufactured for sewing by hand and machine, for packing, for upholstery and leather work, as well as for surgical purposes, is very great, and demands many modifications of processes and appliances. (J. PA.)

NEER, Van Der. Aernout and Eglon van der Neer, father and son, were painters whose lives almost filled the whole of the 17th century.

J. AERNoUT VAN DER NEER, commonly called Aart or Artus, was the contemporary of Albert Cuyp and Hobbema, and so far like the latter that he lived and died in compara- tive obscurity. Houbraken, who knew something of Eglon, was without information as regards his father. He merely noted that Aernout had been steward toa Dutch nobleman, and an amateur painter, before he settled at Amsterdam and acquired skill with his

brush. According to common chronology Aernout was born in 1619 and died in 1691 ; but neither of these statements is supported by any proofs. The earliest pictures in which Aernout coupled his monogram of A. V. and D. N. interlaced with a date are a winter landscape in the collection of Lord Overstone and a sunset in the museum of Gotha. Both pieces were finished, if we grant the genuineness of the inscriptions, in 1643, the year of Eglon's birth at Amsterdam. In 1652 Aernout, still faithful to his old haunts, witnessed the fire which consumed the old town-hall of Amsterdam.

NEE—NEE

He made this accident a subject for two or three pictures in the galleries of Berlin and Copenhagen, probably on commission from merchants of the city of his choice. But, though Amsterdam appears to have been constantly Van der Neer's domicile, he was not so sedentary in his habits as to neglect the rest of Holland. His pictures tell that he was well acquainted with the canals and woods about Haarlem and Leyden, and proofs are at hand to show that he was familiar with the reaches of the Maes and Rhine. Dort, the home of Albert Cuyp, is sometimes found in his pictures, and substantial evidence exists that there were relations of friendship and neighbourhood between the two men, At some period of their lives they laid their hands to the same canvases, on each of which they left their jot mark. On some it was the signature of the name, on others the more indelible signature of style. The partnership may not have been of long duration. It was unequal, and illustrated in a few landscapes only, but these, as well as contemporary works of Cuyp alone, reflect sufficient light on Van der Neer's career. There are land- scapes in the collections of the dukes of Bedford and West-minster, as well as in that of Colonel Neeld, in which Cuyp has represented either the frozen Maes with fishcrmen packing herrings, or the moon reflecting its light on the river's placid waters. These are models after which Van der Neer appears to have worked. His specialties were moonlights and sunsets on canals and estuaries, or winter landscapes with skaters and ball players. The same feeling and sintilar subjects are found in Cuyp and Van der Neer, before and after their partnership. But Cuyp was the leading genius. Van der Neer got assistance from him ; Cuyp expected none from Van der Neer. He carefully enlivened his friend's pictures, when asked to do so, with figures and cattle. It is in pictures jointly produced by both that we

discover Van der Neer’s presence at Dort. We are near Dort in that landscape sunset of the Louvre, in which Cuyp evidently painted the foreground and cows. In the National Gallery Cuyp signs his name on the pail of a milkmaid, whose figure and red skirt he has painted with light effectiveness near the edge of Van der Neer’s landscape. We recognize the partners in a sunset which was exhibited at Manchester when owned by Mr Francis Edwards. Again, a couple of fishermen with a dog, and a sportsman creeping up to surprise some ducks, are Cuyp’s in a capital Van der Neer at the Staedel in Frankfort. Van der Neer has been known to paint a smithy, with ficures alternately lighted by the sun and the blacksmith’s fire (Oppenheim collection at Cologne), but habitually his subjects were the rivers and water-courses of his native country either at sunset or after dark. Sometimes the moon sheds its light on tall trees and gables and wind- mills. His peculiar skill is shown in realizing trans- parence which allows objects —even distant—to appcar in the darkness with varieties of warm brown and steel greys. He cleverly manages reflexions in water, and balances the light on one side of a canal with dark masses of shadow on the other. His greatest subtlety is displayed in combining the lurid glare of fires with the cooler serenity of moonlight. Birger says he inspired Van der Poel with such a love of midnight fires that this unfortunate artist was induced to burn incalculable numbers of cities and hamlets. Another of his fancies is to paint frozen water, and his daylight icescapes with golfers, sleighcrs, and fishermen are as numerous as his moonlights. But he always avoids the impression of frostiness, which is one of his great gifts. His pictures are not scarce. They are less valuable in the market than those of Cuyp or Hobbema ; but, possessing a charm peculiarly their own, they are much sought after by collectors. According to the latest documentary evidence discovered in Holland,

hire. saan

NEE—NEG old

Aernout van der Neer was living at Amsterdam when he purchased the freedom of the city of Gouda in 1685. He is said to have resided at Rotterdam in 1691. But in 1692 he married a second wife at Gouda; and so the date usually assigned to his death receives correction. Out of about one

hundred and fifty pictures accessible to the public, the choicest selection is in the Hermitage at St Petersburg. In England the largest collector is Sir Richard Wallace. But there are good specimens in numerous English galleries besides.

IL Eaton vAN DER NEER, born at Amsterdam in 16438, died at Diisseldorf on the 3d of May 1703. He was first taught by his father, and then took lessons from Jacob Vanloo, whose chief business then consisted in painting figures in the landscapes of Wynants and Hobbema. When Vanloo went to Paris in 1663 to join the school from which Boucher afterwards came, he was accompanied or followed by Eglon. But, leaving the French capital about 1666, he settled at Rotterdam, where he dwelt for many years. Later on he took up his residence at Brussels, and finally came to Diisseldorf, where he entered the service of the elector-palatine Johann Wilhelm von der Pfalz. In each of the places where he stopped Eglon married, and having had three wives became the father of twenty-five children. A modern French critic has observed that the burden of so large a family was as nothing to Eglon's misfortune in having taught the arts to Van der Werff.

Eglon van der Neer has painted landscapes imitating those of his father, of Berchem and Adam Elsheimer. He frequently put the figures into the town views of Jan van der Heyden in competition with Berchem and Adrian van de Velde. His best works are portraits, in which he occasionally came near Terburg or Metsu in delicacy of touch, De Hooch in effectiveness of lighting, or Mieris in polish of surface. One of his earliest pieces in which the influence of Terburg is apparent is the Lady with the Book, of 1665, which was sold with the Bredel collection in 1875. A young woman in white and red satin at Rotterdam, of 1669, recalls Mieris, whose style also reappears in Eglon's Cleopatra at Buckingham Palace. Two landscapes with Tobit and the Angel, dated 1685 and 1694, in the museums of Berlin and Amsterdam, illus- trate his fashion of setting Scripture scenes in Dutch backgrounds. The most important of his sacred com- positions is the Esther and Ahasuerus, of 1696, in the Uffizi at Florence. But he varied his practice also with arrangements of hunting and hawking parties, pastures and fords, and cavalry skirmishes. The latest of his panels is a mountain landscape of 1702 in the gallery of Augsburg. @. ASC)

NEES VON ESENBECK, Curistian Gorrrriep (1776-1858), botanist and entomologist, was born at Erbach on February 14, 1776, and was educated at Darmstadt and at Jena, where he took the degree of M.D. He spent some time in medical practice in Frankfort-on- the-Main, but in 1818 was appointed professor of botany in Erlangen. Next year he became professor of natural history in Bonn, and in 1831 he was appointed to the chair of botany in the university of Breslau. He enjoyed a high reputation as a lecturer, but had a strong leaning to the transcendental philosophy of nature so much in Yogue in Germany in the earlier part of this century. In 1848 he was elected a member of the German parliament, and became a leader of the party opposed to the Govern- ment, to which he made himself so obnoxious that in 1851 he was deprived of his professorship, and in conse- quence the latter years of his life were spent in great poverty. He died in 1858.

For about forty years he edited the Nova Aeta of the ‘Acad.

Leopold.-Carolina,” and in this important scries of scientific memoirs

several of his own papers were published. His earliest memoirs decal with the ichneumons, and forsome years he continued to write on these insects. He published a Afonographie der Ichnewmone in 2 vols., in 1828; and Hymenopterorum Iehneumonibus afinium Monographiz, in 2 vols., in 1834, Nees von Esenbeck was a prolific writer in various departments of botany, and published the following separate works:—Dve Algen des siissen Wassers nach thren Entwiekel- ungsstifen dargestellt, 1814; Das System der Pilze und Schwimme, 1816; Naturgeschiehte der europdischen Lebermoose, in 4 vols., 1833-38 ; “ Agrostologia Brasiliensis, ” in the Flora Brasiliensis; and a Systema Lawrinearum, 1836. Besides these he wrote numerous monographs in the series above mentioned, also in Flora, in Linnza, and in other scientific German magazines, cither alone or along with other well-known botanists. His best known works are those that deal with the fungi, the Hepatice, and the Glumifere, in all which groups he made valuable additions to knowledge, which have exerted much influence on later investigations.

His brother Theodore (1787-1837), inspector of the botanic gardens at Leyden, and afterwards professor of pharmacy at Bonn, also wrote

numerous papers on botanical subjects, dealing more particularly with medicinal plants and their products.

NEGAPATAM, a town and the chief port of Tanjore district, Madras, India, situated in 10° 45’ 37” N. lat. and 79° 53′ 28” E. long. It forms a single municipality with the adjoining town of Nagur, the joint population in 1881 being 53,855. The port carries on an active trade with Ceylon, Burmah, and the Straits, the imports consisting chiefly of cotton goods and betel-nuts, and the exports of rice and paddy. Negapatam was one of the earliest settlements of the Portuguese on the Coromandel coast.

It was taken by the Dutch in 1660, and by the English in

si,

NEGLIGENCE is in one aspect the correlative of diligence (see DILIGENCE), in another of intention. It is the absence of diligence or the absence of intention. All definitions imply this. Negligence is a term difficult to define for more than one reason. It is used not only to denote a mental state, but the consequences resulting from a mental state. Again, the term bears a somewhat different meaning as applied to civil or criminal liability. “The meaning of negligence, in the common use of language,” says Mr Justice Stephen (//istory of the Criminal Law, vol, ii. p. 123), “is very general and indefinite. It is practically synonymous with heedlessness or carelessness, not taking notice of matters relevant to the business in hand, of which notice might and ought to have been taken. This meaning is no doubt included in the legal sense of the word, but in reference to criminal law the word has also the wider meaning of omitting, for whatever reason, to discharge a legal duty, ¢g., the omission by a medical man to exercise that skill which it is his duty to exercise.” The vagueness of the standard by which negligence is tested is another and more serious practical difficulty. The standard is the average prudent action of the average citizen, and the defendant fails to reach this standard at his peril. This is the standard implied by such definitions as that of the New York Penal Code, “the terms ‘neglect,’ ‘negligence,’ ‘negligent,’ and ‘negligently’. . . . import a want of such attention to the nature or probable consequences of the act or omission as a prudent man ordinarily bestows in acting in his own concerns,” and that of Sirey (Code Pénal, § 319), “the omission or

forgetfulness of a precaution dictated by prudence." 'The connexion between negligence and inten- tion is illustrated by a passage in the judgment of Baron Alderson in Blyth v. The Birmingham Water Works Company (1856). "The definition of negligence," says that learned judge, "'is the omitting to do something that a reasonable man would do, or the doing something that a reasonable man would not do; and an action may be brought if thereby mischief is caused to a third party not intentionally." The intention is of great importance in criminal law. Thus as a general rule it may be said that what is manslaughter where there is negligence becomes

murder where there is intention. But the negligence may in some cases be of such a nature as to lead to the pre- sumption of legal malice. In the same way in cases where the liability is civil it is important to notice that the phenomena of negligence often accord closely with those of intention. Thus in one case Lord Justice James speaks of "wilful negligence which leads the court to conclude that the person is an accomplice in the fraud." The phenomena of negligence and of dishonest intention may be similar to such an extent that the court may regard them as the same, since the legal consequences resulting from them are the same.

It is the general view that there are three degrees of negligence, corresponding to three degrees of diligence. This is illustrated by the case of bailment. Where the bailment is for the benefit of the hailor, the bailee is bound to use only slight diligence, and is liable only for gross negligence; where the bailment is for the benefit of bailor and bailee alike, each is bound to use ordinary diligence, and is liable for ordinary negligence ; where the bailment is for the benefit of the bailee, he is bound to use great diligence, and is liable for slight negligence. The soundness of this position, alleged to be founded cn the Roman law, is open to question. Roman law probably only recognized two degrees of culpa, the term which most nearly approaches negligence. And the term "* eross negligence" has been objected to as misleading (see DiniGENCE). The truth is that it is impossible to make any useful legal distinc- tion of degrees of negligence, when the question of negligence is mainly a question of fact. In English law it is for the jury to say, subject to certain rules of evidence, whether a

particular defendant has in a particular case fallen below the standard of the average citizen. Hach case must depend to a large extent upon its own merits, aided by the consideration of a series of previous cascs in which certain facts have been held by the court to be or not to be prima facie evidence of negligence to go to the jury.

Contributory Negligence.—As a general rule it is a defence to an action that the injury was caused by conduct of the injured person, without which the injury would not have happened. ” But, though a plaintiff may have been guilty of negligence which may have actually contributed to the injury, yet if the defendant could by the exercise of ordinary care and diligence have avoided the mischief the plaintiff’s negligence will not excuse him. Contributory negligence of a person other than the plaintiff is no excuse for the negligence of the defendant execpt in the case of the legal identification of the plaintiff with the negligent third party; ¢9., a passenger in a train of A company is so far identified by the law with his driver that he cannot recover against B company for an injury caused by an accident to which the negligence of A com- pany’s driver contributed. So a child cannot recover for an injury to which the negligence of the adult in charge of the child con- tributed.

Nature of the Remedy.—The person injured may have either a civil or a criminal remedy, or both. In most cases where the act of negligence is criminally punishable, the plaintiff may recover damages in addition. The question as to what amount or kind of negligence will bring a person within the criminal lawis one by no means easy to answer. In certain cases criminal proceedings are authorized by statute, ¢.g., against parish authorities for refusing to call vestries (1 & 2 Will. IV. ¢. 60), and against persons neglecting to transmit election writs (53 Geo. III. ¢. 89). The question of criminal negligence arises most commonly in cases of homicide. The rule as to the functions of the jury cannot be better put than in the words of Mr Justice Stephen, wéi supra :—‘‘in order that negligence may be culpable, it must be of such a nature that the jury think that a person who caused death by it ought to be punished.” The same high authority proceeds to point out that cases of manslaughter by negligence may be imagined in which therc is no carelessness. In one matter the prisoner or defendant in criminal proceedings is under a disadvantage as compared with the defendant in an

action. He cannot, as the latter can, set up contributory negligence as a defence. To this extent only is the criminal remedy wider than the civil. Where the question of contributory negligence does not arise, it may generally be said that, if an indictment will lie for negligence, @ fortior? an action will lie upon the same facts. (J. W.*)

NEGRO (Spanish and Italian Negro, from Latin Viger, black) in anthropology designates the distinctly dark as opposed to the fair, yellow, and brown varieties of man- kind. In this its widest sense it embraces all the dark races, whose original home are the inter-tropical and sub- tropical regions of the eastern hemisphere, stretching roughly from Senegambia, West Africa, to the Fiji Archi- pelago, Pacific Ocean, west and east, and lying north and

south between the extreme parallels of the Philippines and Tasmania, The Negro domain thus originally comprised all Africa south of the Sahara, India south of the Indo- Gangetic plains, Malaysia, and the greater part of Australasia. But this domain has since prehistoric times been intruded upon in the east mainly by peoples of the yellow Mongoloid, in the west mainly by peoples of the fair Caucasic stock. During the early and middle Tertiary epochs it appears also to have been gradually broken into two great divisions—by the subsidence of lands, some suppose, which are now flooded by the waters of the Indian Ocean, and to which Sclater has given the name of Lemuria. To these two great eastern and western geographical divisions now correspond the two great ethnical divisions of the Negro stock—the Papuan or Melanesian of Malaysia and Australasia, and the Negro proper of the African mainland. During the long ages that have elapsed since this separation, the two branches, if originally one, have had time under diverse outward conditions to become differentiated into two sufficiently marked physical types, so that on strictly anthropological as well as geographical grounds it becomes convenient to deal separately with the Papuan and African divisions of the Negro family. The present article is confined to the latter. For the Papuans see New GUINEA,

Soudan (Sudan), the fertile zone stretching from the Sahara towards the equator nearly across the continent, is usually regarded as the true home of the African Negro. But, according to the views recently advanced by

Lepsius, Soudan is rather an intermediate or mixed domain lying between the two Hamitic and Negro ethnical groups, which have respectively occupied northern and southern Africa from the remotest times. Certainly none of the chief native races in Soudan—Mandingo, Joloff, Toucouleur in the west ; Kanembu, Haussa, Kanuri in the centre; Maba in Wadai, Nuba in the Nile valley, least of all the Fulahs of the Chad and Niger basins—can be considered as of pure Negro descent. But the same phenomenon of inter-mixture is presented in the strictly equatorial and south equatorial regions, where the Fans of the Ogoway basin, the Zandey (Niam-Niam), Bongo, Bari, and other Upper- Nilotic tribes, the Waganda of the Victoria Nyanza of the

| extreme east, the Zulu-Kaffres of the extreme south, are all

of Negroid and even sub-Negroid rather than of strictly Negro lineage. Hence the same argument that would exclude Soudan would also exclude the greater part of southern Africa, and we should have to look to the hypo-thetical Lemuria or other now submerged lands for the cradle of the Negro stock. Practically, however, the whole of Africa south of the Sahara must be taken as the original habitat of the race, which is there almost everywhere still found in compact masses, although rarely perhaps abso- lutely free from foreign intermixture.

But wherever found in a comparatively pure state, as on the coast of Guinea,! in the Gaboon, along the lower Zambesi, and in the Benua and Shari basins, the African aborigines present almost a greater uniformity of physical and moral type than any of the other great divisions of mankind. By the nearly unanimous consent of anthro- pologists this type occupies at the same time the lowest position in the evolutionary scale, thus affording the best material for the comparative study of the highest anthro- poids and the human species. The chief points in which the Negro either approaches the Quadrumana or differs most from his own congeners are :—(1) the abnormal length of the arm, which in the erect position sometimes reaches the knee-pan, and which on an average exceeds that of the

1 Here apparently is to be met the most pronounced Negro type proper yet discovered. See the missionary Wilson’s Ethnographic View of Western Africa, New York, 1856, published anonymously.

|.|

Caucasian by about 2 inches; (2) prognathism, or pro- jection of the jaws (index number of facial angle about 70, as compared with the Caucasian 82); (3) weight of brain, as indicating cranial capacity, 35 ounces (highest gorilla 20, average European 45); (4) full black eye, with black iris and yellowish sclerotic coat, a very marked feature; (5) short flat snub nose, deeply depressed at the base or frontal suture, broad at extremity, with dilated nostrils and concave ridge ; (6) thick protruding lips, plainly showing

the inner red surface ; (7) very large zygomatic arches—

high and prominent cheek bones; (8) exceedingly thick cranium, enabling the Negro to butt with the head and resist blows which would inevitably break any ordinary European's skull; (9) correspondingly weak lower limbs, terminating in a broad flat foot with low instep, divergent and somewhat prehensile great toe, and heel projecting backwards ("lark heel"); (10) complexion deep brown or blackish, and in some cases even distinctly black, due not to any special pigment, as is often supposed, but merely to the greater abundance of the colouring matter in the Malpighian mucous membrane between the inner or true skin and the epidermis or scarf skin ;} (11) short, black hair, eccentrically elliptical or almost flat in section, and dis- tinctly woolly, not merely frizzly, as Prichard supposed on insufficient evidence ;? (12) thick epidermis, cool, soft, and velvety to the touch, mostly hairless, and emitting a peculiar rancid odour, compared by Pruner Bey to that of the buck goat; (13) frame of medium height, thrown somewhat out of the perpendicular by the shape of the pelvis, the spine, the backward projection of the head, and the whole anato- mical structure; (14) the cranial sutures, which close much earlier in the Negro than in other races. To this

1 Jt is also noteworthy that the dark colour scems to depend neither on geographical position, the isothermals of greatest heat, nor even altogether on racial purity. The extremes of the chromatic scale are found in juxtaposition throughout the whole Negro domain, in Sene- gambia, the Gaboon, upper Nile basin, lower Congo, Shari valley, Mozambique. In the

last region Froberville determined the presence of thirty-one different shades from dusky or yellow-brown to sooty black. Some of the sub-Negroid and mixed races, such as many Abyssinians, Gallas, Joloffs, and Mandingoes, are quite as black as the darkest full-blood Negro. A general similarity in the outward con- ditions of soil, atmosphere, climate, food charged with an excess of carbon, such as the fruit of the butter-tree, and other undetermined causes have tended to develop a tendency towards dark shades every- where in the Negro domain apart from the bias mainly due to an original strain of black blood. Even the African Arabs are described hy Burckhardt, De Pagés, and other observers as often decidedly black. Waddington mentions more particularly the Shegya Arabs south of Dongola on the White Nile as distinguished by their ‘‘ clear, glossy, jet black” (p. 149). The same expression ‘‘jet black” is applied by Schweinfurth to the Upper-Nilotic Shilluks, Nuers, and Dinkas, while the neighbouring Bongos and Mittus are described as of a ‘‘red- brown” colour ‘‘like the soil upon which they reside” (Heart of Africa, i. p. 261).

- This point has been fully detcrmined by P. A. Brown (Classifica- tion of Mankind by the Hair, &c.), who shows conclusively that, unlike true hair and like true wool, the Negro hair is flat, issues from the epidermis at a right angle, is spirally twisted or crisped, has no central duct, the colouring matter being disseminated through the cortex and intermediate fibres, while the cortex itself is covered with humerous rough, pointed filaments adhering loosely to the shaft; lastly, the Negro pile will felt, like wool, whereas true hair cannot be felted. Observing that the Negro domain is also the habitat of the most anthropoid apes —gorilla and chimpanzee,—and that these bimanous and quadrumanous species are both of a pronounced dolichocephalie type (index nos. 72-75), some anthropologists have suggested the direct deseent of the former from the latter. But against this view may be urged the different texture of the pile, which, although black in both, is woolly in the Negro but true hair in the ape. It may further be noted that in the eastern section of the dark domain, while the Papuan is still black and dolichocephalic, often excessively so, his presumed progenitor the orang-outang is, on the contrary, brachycephalic, with decidedly red hair. Dr Bernard Davis also recognizes brachycephaly in equatorial Africa itself, four out of the eighteen skulls from this region

in his collection being distinctly of the round-headed type, aud Schweinfurth describes the Bongos as ‘‘hardly removed from the lowest grade of brachycephaly” (i. 263).

premature ossification of the skull, preventing all further development of the brain, many pathologists have attributed the inherent mental inferiority of the blacks, an inferiority which is even more marked than their physical differences. Nearly all observers admit that the Negro child is on the whole quite as intelligent as those of other human varieties, but that on arriving at puberty all further progress seems to be arrested. No one has more carefully studied this point than Filippo Manetta, who during a long residence on the plantations of the Southern States of America noted that “ the Negro children were sharp, intelligent, and full of vivacity, but on approaching the adult period a gradual change set in. The intellect seemed to become clouded, animation giving place to a sort of lethargy, briskness yielding to indolence. We must necessarily suppose that the development of the Negro and White proceeds on different lines. While with the latter the volume of the brain grows with the expansion of the brain- pan, in the former the growth of the brain is on the contrary arrested by the premature closing of the cranial sutures and lateral pressure of the frontal bone.” 8

It must at the sanie time be confessed that the question of the mental temperament of the Negro has been greatly complicated by the partisanship of interested advocates on either side. But for this disturbing element it would per- haps be readily admitted that the mental are at least as marked as the physical differences between the dark and other races. And as both are the gradual outcome of external conditions, fixed by heredity, it follows that the attempt to suddenly transform the Negro mind by foreign culture must be, as it has proved to be, as futile as the attempt would be to suddenly transform his physical type. On his moral status, even when removed from the old associations and brought directly under more favourable influences, a lurid light is cast by the report of the Rev. Dr Tucker at the American Church Congress for 1883 on the present condition of the black communities in the Southern States.#

It is more correct to say of the Negro that he is non- moral than immoral. All the social institutions are at the same low level, and throughout the

historic period seem to have made no perceptible advance except under the stimulus of foreign (in recent time notably of Moham- medan) influences. Religion is a system of pure fetichism and worship of ancestry associated with such sanguinary rites as the “customs” of Dahomey and Ashantee, and a universal belief in sorcery. Slavery continues everywhere to prevail, both as a local institution and a branch of the export trade, where not checked by European Governments. Much of the surplus population not thus carried off prob- ably finds its way to the shambles of the native states in the middle Congo basin and other parts where cannibalism is practised, and where human flesh appears to be sold in the open market-place. During its voyage down the Congo the Stanley expedition was attacked at many points

3 La Razza Negra nel suo stato selvaggio, &c., Turin, 1864, p. 20.

4 “¢T know of whole neighbourhoods,” he tells us, ‘‘ where there is not one single Negro couple, whether legally married or not, who are faithful to each other beyond a few weeks. In the midst of a prayer- meeting I have known Negroes steal from each other, and on the way home they will rob any hen-roost that lies conveniently at hand. The most pious Negro that I know is confined in a penitentiary for an atrocions murder, and he persists in saying he can see no offence against God in his crime, though he acknowledges an offence against man.” Mention is further made of Negro missionaries guilty of the grossest immorality, living in open concubinage, addicted to thieving, lying, and every imaginary crime, yet all ‘‘earnest and successful preachers, and wholly unconscious of hypocrisy. Their sins, wniver- sally known, did not diminish their influence with their race. It was impossible to doubt their absolute sincerity.” A much darker picture is presented by the independent Negro commonwealths of Hayti, for eighty years the scene of almost uninterrupted fratricidal strife.

o18 for the avowed purpose of procuring a fresh supply of human food, and from other incidents of modern exploration cannibalism would seem to prevail very generally in the little known equatorial regions of the interior! Political institutions are in a rudimentary state, and where a higher system has been imposed or adopted from the whites, as in Liberia, it does not appear to have materially con- tributed to the improvement of the race. The great bulk of the natives are still in the tribal condition, while in the

kingdoms that have been founded in Guinea and elsewhere the authority of the sovereign is everywhere absolute, and its exercise often marked by the most wanton and atrocious cruelty. The largest and most powerful native state is that of Ulunda, whose present ‘‘ muata yanvo,” or ruler, is the fourteenth in descent from the founder of the dynasty. When visited in 1879 by Dr Buchner, this potentate, to impress his guest with his power, caused one of his subjects to assume the part of a chief just arrived from a remote province of the empire. The sham cortége of soldiers and women advanced to the throne all thickly plastered with mud from head to foot, and the “chief” approaching on all fours deliberately rolled himself in the sand at his majesty’s feet. The administration of justice is regulated, not by any sense of right or wrong, but by the caprice of the king, who is himself often in the power of the navum- bula, or witch-detector. Beyond what has been acquired from without, of letters there is absolutely no knowledge, unless an exception be made in favour of the invention or adaptation of a rude syllabic system some years ago by a native of the Vei tribe. Hence literature is purely oral, and limited to a few tribal legends, some folklore, proverbs, and songs of the simplest kind. The arts also are exclu- sively of an industrial character, and restricted mainly to coarse weaving, pottery, the smelting and working of metals (chiefly copper and iron), agriculture, and grazing. Architecture has no existence, nor are there any monu- mental ruins or stone structures of any sort in the whole of Negroland except those erected in Soudan under Hamitic and Semitic influences. No full-blood Negro has ever been distinguished as a man of science, a poet, or an artist, and the fundamental equality claimed for him by ignorant philanthropists is belied by the whole history of the race throughout the historic period.

On the other hand the native languages, all of which belong to the agglutinating order, are often very highly developed, and the Bantu group especially is characterized by an intricacy of structure and an alliterative phonetic system of an exceedingly delicate type.2 From the wide range of this Bantu speech, which occupies all the southern half of the continent except the Hottentot and Bushman territory in the extreme south-west, Lepsius concludes that it is the original language of the Negro race, and that the numerous linguistic groups of Soudan are merely scattered fragments of that speech or of the Hamitic intruding fromthe north. Thus has been developed his theory of the two ethnical and linguistic stocks originally in

exclusive possession of North and South Africa, and gradually amalgamating in the now diversified intermediate zone of Soudan. But this theory cannot be accepted as at all adequate to explain the present conditions in those regions. It is not by any means certain that the Bantu itself was originally a Negro language atall. There seems, moreover, to be good reason for believing that its present diffusion over South Africa dates from comparatively recent times, and that it is due to the intrusion of foreign con- querors penctrating from the north-east up the Nile valley and through the region of the great lakes into the Congo and Zambesi

basins. Nor is it possible to regard the Mandingo, Vei, Hanssa, Fulah, and many other Sondanese tongues as fragments or off-

a . orCrCw —eeeeSSSSSSeSSSeSSSSSSSSSSSSsssee

1 Amongst the Niam-Niam ‘‘human fat is universally sold,’’ while *‘the Fan barter their dead among themselves,” and even disinter them to be devoured (Heart of Africa, ii. pp. 18, 19). Still more pronounced is the cannibalism of the Monbuttu, who dry the bodies of the slain in battle for future consumption, and ‘‘drive their prisoners before them, as butchers drive sheep to the shambles, and these are only reserved to fall victims on a later day to their horrible and sickly greediness”’ (70., ii. p. 98).

? For this remarkable linguistic phenomenon see vol, xiii. p. 820.

shoots of Bantu, from which they differ as do from each other.

To Dr Gustav Nachtigal* is due the recent discovery or determination of another independent and widespread linguistic family, which had its original home amongst the Hamitic Teda or northern Tubus of the eastern Sahara, and which, gradually spread- ing southwards, has been imposed through the Dasa or southern Tubus on the Kancmbu and Kanuri of Lake Chad, the Baele of Wanyanga, the Zoghawa of Dar-Fur, and other Negro or Negroid peoples of central and eastern Soudan. The whole of Soudan, or, more correctly, the whole of Central Africa between the equator and the Sahara, is in fact a region of linguistic confusion, such as is elsewhere

found only in Caucasia, Melanesia, the Anamese high- lands, and some parts of America. Several radically distinct stock languages have already been determined, especially in Guinea, Senegambia, and the Chad basin. But many more are known to be current in Adamawa, Bornu, Baghirmi, Wadai, Dar-Fur, the White Nile Valley, while others will doubtless be revealed by the future exploration of the lands watered by the Welle, Aruwimi, Mangala, and other streams flowing either to the Nile, the Congo, or the Shari. Most of them may be properly designated as strictly Negro tongues. But in the north, that is, along the skirt of the Sahara, and in the east, that isin the Blue Nileand Atbara basins, in Kaffa, Galla, and Somaliland, the current speech is mainly Caucasic, and here also the populations are mainly Negroid and sub-Negroid rather than of pure Negro descent. The Caucasic speech again is represented by Hamitic, Tubu, and Semitic groups, all intruders in this Negro domain from prehistoric times except the Semitic Arabic, which dates only from the introduction of Islam. In attempting a complete, however brief, survey of this vast ethnical and linguistic area, account must also be taken of other disturbing elements within the area itself, which are of unknown origin, and whose actual relations to the surrounding Negro masses are still involved in much obscurity. Conspicuous amongst them are the Nubas of the Middle Nile, apparently inter- mediate between the true Negro and the Egyptian Hamite ; the Fulahs of central and west Soudan, who, although now much mixed, seem to have been originally distinct both from the Negro and the Hamite; the Fans, who have in recent times reached the west coast just above the equator, and who are also a clearly non-Negro race ; lastly, the dwarfish Akkas, Obongos, and others, who appear to be scattered over the whole of the continent south of 10° N. lat. Many, perhaps the majority, of the Bantu-speaking southern races —Waswahili of the Zanzibar coast, Waganda and others of the great lacustrine region, Zulu-Kaffres of the south-east, Marutse of the Zambesi, Ovambos of the south-west coast—are also variously affected by foreign elements, some no doubt cither Arab or Hamitic Galla penetrating from the north-east, but others drawn from now long-forgotten sources. Thus the popular idea that Negroland presents a homogeneous ethnical field must be dismissed as absolutely erroneous. It will be safer to say that, while the Negro strain is here everywhere conspicuously present, it has been re- peatedly crossed and re-crossed by diverse interminglings, which began with the first appearance of the Hamite on African soil, and

which have been continued from that vastly remote epoch down to the present time.4

From the subjoined rough scheme of classification of the chief Negro and Negroid races and languages are excluded the above- mentioned Caucasic-speaking Hamites and Semites, who hem in the Negro zone proper by a mighty ethnical barrier stretching almost continuously from the Senegal river through the Sahara, Abyssinia, and Gallaland to the east coast at the equator, From it are also omitted the Hovas, Sakalavas, Betsimisarakas, and other peoples of Madagascar, all of Malagasy (Malayo-Polynesian) speech, as well as the Bosjesman and Hottentot groups of the extreme south-west, as lying beyond the scope of the present survey. er eS = S eS SS

3 Sahara und Sudan, Berlin, 1881, vol. ii. p, 283 sg. See also 'North African Ethnology," by A. H. Keane, in Nature for March

1, 1883.

"In support of this conclusion, which to some may seem over- drawn, appeal might be made to the language of many modern African explorers, one of the most careful of whom thus expresses himself :— '*If we could at once grasp and set before our minds facts that are known (whether as regards language, race, culture, history, or de- velopment) of that vast region comprehended in the name of Africa, we should have before us the witness of an intermingling of races which is beyond all precedent. And yet, bewildering as the prospect would appear, it remains a fact not to be gainsaid, that it is impos- sible for any one to survey the country as a whole without perceiving that high above the multitude of individual differences there is throned a principle of unity, which embraces well nigh all the population" (Schweinfurth, op. cit., i. p. 313). The principle of unity here spoken of is the autochthonous black element, mostly predominant, and everywhere forming the substratum, nearly as far north as the tropic of Cancer,

fundamentally as they

—

NS = =

NTE Gotr ©

| Kibokwe, Bailunda, Kibanda, Kisanji, Nano, Sindonga, Ba-Songo,

West Soudan and Guinea.

Mandingan Group: Mande, Kabunga, Landoro, Tene, Ghandi, Susu, Mano, Toma, Gbese, Vei(?). Mainly in South Senegambia and Upper Guinea.

Wolof Group: Joloff, Kayor, Dakar, Baol, Sine, Walo, Bambara (?). Mainly between the Senegal and Gambia rivers.

Felup Group: Felup, Bola, Serere, Filham, Pepel, Diola, Kallum, Biafada, Pajade, Temné, Kissi, Sherbro. Between the Gambia and Sierra Leone.

Liberian Growp : Deh, Queah, Gurrah, Kru, Kondo, Pessa, Golla, Bassa, Kabo, Yedabo, Grebo, Babo, Webo, Tebo, Nyambo. Grain and Ivory coasts.

Ewe Group: Acra (Ga), Fantee, Ashantee, Ffon, Mina, Jeji, Dahoman, Nago, Otyi, Yoruba. Gold and Slave coasts.

Lbo Group: Ibo, Nupe, Miehi, Oru, Wari, Igara, Juku, Kororofa, Ado, Akoto. Binue and lower Niger.

Sonhray: Large, historical nation. buktu to Gando. Distinct speech.

Fulah: Futa-Jallo, Futa-Toro, Jel, Baa, So, Mabube, Laube, Beri. Scnegambia and in scattered groups eastwards to Baghirmi. Distinct speech,

Central Soudan and Chad Basin.

Adamawa Group: Batta, Dama, Fala, Buma, Marga, Holma, Ba, Bula, Kilba, Buza, Mbafu, Kotafa, Woka, Fani, Doga, Longoda. Upper Binue; thence east to Logon.

Tubu Group: Teda, Dasa, Kanembu, Dalatoa, Kanuri, Danawa, Haussa (?), Baele, Bodele, Bulala(?), Kuka(?), Zoghawa. Tibesti, Kanem, Bornu,

Borku, and north Dar-Fur.

Logon Group: Logon, Mandara, Margi, Makari, Moseu, Gamergu, So (extinet), Keribima, Yedina (Buduma), Kuri (Kalea), Bede, Ngisem, Kerrikerri, Babir, Fika. Bornu, lower Shari (between Adamawa and Baghirmi), Chad archipelagoes.

Baghirmi Group: Baghirmi, Somrai, Tummok, Kuang, Busso, Gaberi, Nyillem, Ndamm, Sara, Dekakire, Sokoro, Bua Kullanga, Bua Kuli, Yussiye, Sartia. Lower and middle Shari, east to Runga and Dar- Banda.

Wadat Group: Maba (Kelingen, Kajanga, Malanga, Kuno, Bili, and many other subdivisions), Masalit, Mimi, Marfa, Korunga, Moéwo, Abyi, Kondongo, Kabbaga, Mubi, Marta, Bakka, Birkit, Tala. Wadai and east Dar-Fur.

Middle Niger, from Tim-

East Soudan and Upper Nite.

Dar-Banda Group: Runga, Kredy, Ago, Silla, Bandala, Daggel, Gulla, Fana, Birrimbirri, Seli, Kutingara, Upper Shari, east to Dar-Fertit.

Fur Group: Fur (Forang-bele), Dudunga, Kunjara, Kera, Massabat, Tunjur, Dajo, Berti, Bego, Birguid, Berdtina, Jellaba, Sungor, Mararit, Jebal, Guimir, Kabga. Dar-Fur and Kordofan, between Wadai and White Nile.

Nilotic Group: Shilluk, Nuer, Dinka, Bongo, Jur, Bari, Mittu, Rol, Millow, Agar, Sofi, Lehssi, Ayell, Ayarr, Monbuttu, Janghey, Fallaugh, Miauk, Bonjak, Jibbe, Kunkung, Nikuar, Madi, Loboré, Shuli, Berta, Amam. White Nile and its tributaries, east to Kaffa and Gallaland, south to Uganda.

Zandey (Niam-Niam): Large, compact nation, about the Welle, and reaching southwards probably to the Lualaba.

South Africa—Bantu Family.

Zulu-Kaffre Group: Ama-Zulu, Ama-Khosa, Ama-Fingu, Ma- Tonga, Ama-Zuazi, Ba-Tembu, Matebele, Mazitu, Masai(?). Zulu- land, Natal, Kaffraria,

and in scattcred fragments from the Limpopo north to the great lakes.

Central Group: Be-Chuana, Ba-Suto, Ba-Rolong, Ma-Kololo, Ma-Rotse, Ma-Kalaka (Ma-Nansa), Ma-Laya, Ma-Totola, Ma- Shukulombwe, Ma-Shubia, Ma-Nehoia, Ma-Mbunda, Ba-Libale, Ma-Pingula, Ma-Hes, Ba-Yeiye. Upper Orange river, Transvaal, Lake Ngami, upper and middle Zambesi, and Chobe river.!

Eastern Group : Wa-Swahili, Wa-Pokomo, Wa-Nika, Wa-Kamba, Wa-Sambara, Wa-Zaramo, Achikunda, Ma-Gololo, A-Nyasa, Wa- Yao, Ma-Chinga, A-Ngulu (Walolo), Ma-Kua, Ma-Tumboka, Wa- Jagga, Wa-Segua. East coast from the equator south to Delagoa Bay, and inland to Lake Nyassa.

Equatorial Group: Wa-Ganda, Wa-Nyoro, Wa-Nyamwesi, Wa- Sukuma, Wa-Legga, Wa-Rundi, Wa-Lha, Wa-Fipa, Wa-Bemba, Wa-Bisa, Wa-Rua, Wa-Lunda, Kioko, Wa-Shinsh, Tu-Shinsh, Tu- Shilange, Tu-Ruba, Tu-Kette, Ba-Songe (Ba-Luba), A-Kawanda (Ma-Wanda), Ba-Tetela, Ba-Kuba, Lovalé, Wa-Mangala, Ibonga, Ba-Rumbe, Ba-Bwende. Region of the great lakes, upper and middle Lualaba, south to the Lokinga (Mushinga) range.

Western Group: Ova-Herero, Ova-Mbo, Ova-Quanyama, a re eae

1 The Ma-Kololo, as a distinet people, have been destroyed by the Ma-Rotse; but their language (a mixed Se-Chuana and Se-Suto dialeet) survives as the

lingua Jranca in the Ba-Rotse state, and generally between the Limpopo aud Zambesi (Dr Holub and Pere Depelehin),

org

Ma-Tamba, Ma-Yakka, Ba-Kongo, Kimbunda, Ma-Hungo, Shissilongi, Ma-Yombe, Ba-Teke, Obamba, Odumbo, Aduma, Bakota, Mbamba, Ashongo, Apinji, Okanda, Bangwé, Mpongwé, Ba-Kalai, Isubu, Bimbia, Ba-Kwilleh, Dualla, Abo, Wuri, Qua Qua (Ba-Koko), Lungasi, Edea, Bubi (Fernandian). West coast from Damaraland north to Cameroon mountains ; inland to about 20° E. long.?

The total population is vagucly estimated at 130,000,000, to which must be added probably about 20,000,000 full-blood and half-caste Negroes settled either as slaves or the descendants of slaves in various parts of the world, but ehiefly in tropieal and sub-tropical America, Owing to their peculiar qualities, great muscular development, and power of endurance in hot and moist lands, com- bined with a remarkable absence of personal sclf-respect, the African populations have from the remotest times supplied a chief material to the slave markets of the Old and the New World. For thousands of years an incessant stream of black blocd has been directed from the interior to the east coast and thence to Madagascar, Arabia, Persia, and even India, or down the Nile to Egypt and Asia Minor, or across the Sahara to the Barbary Statcs. Sinee the discovery of Ameriea hundreds of thousands have in the same way been shipped from the west coast for the West Indies, New Spain, the British and French plantations, and Brazil. Speaking generally, this black elemcnt has not amalgamated with the populations of the eastern hemisphere, and has conscquently left few traces of its presencc anywhere except in Madagascar, where there may possibly have been an indigenous Negro people before the arrival of the intruding Hovas and other Malay tribes. Nevertheless a strain of Negro blood is apparent, not only amongst the Tuaregs and especially the Tibus of the Sahara, but also in Morocco, South Algeria, Egypt, the low-lying Tehama of the West Arabian sea-board, Makran, and even here and there along the eoast of Malabar and Ceylon. But no statistics are anywhere here available which might throw some light on the proportion of blacks to the surround- ing populations. We read that there may be as many as 100,000 in Moroeco, a large number amongst the Berbers of Wargla (South Algeria) and Tripoli, and so on. It is also evident that a decided majority of the inhabitants of Madagascar must be regarded as of Negroid stock, although no Negro language has held its ground cither there or anywhere beyond the Negro domain proper. a

This is the more surprising that in some parts of Amcrica, notably the West Indian islands, the coloured has actually replaced the indigenous and largely absorbed the white element. Here we are altogether on firmer ground, and fairly accurate returns enable us to form an approximate estimate of the proportion of full-blood and half-caste Negroes in alinost cvery part of the New World. On the other hand, the nomenclature of these mongrels has become so perplexing, and is often applied so irregularly, that it has led to

many misconceptions on this point. Thus the term ‘‘ Creole,” applicable in Mexico only to persons of pure Spanish descent, denotes in Brazil, Peru, and elsewhere the presence of black blood in varying proportions. Of this bewilder- ing nomenclature the chief terms are as under :—

Negro, African, Black: Full-blood Negro, whether born in Africa or of African descent.

Mutlatto : Issue of black and white parents either way—a constant term in America.

Mestizo: Any half-breed, whether of white and Negro parents, or (more commonly in Spanish America) of white and Indian parents.

Creole: Mostly white of pure deseent, but also blacks of pure deseent (Brazil), the issue of whites and Mestizoes (Peru), and Mestizoes generally (Alaska).

Zambo: Any half-breed, but mostly the issue of Negro and Indian parents ; in the United States, Peru, and West Indies of Negro and Mulatto; in St Vincent the half-easte Caribs.

Zambo Preto: Issue of Negro father and Zainba mother (Mexico and elsewhere).

Cholo: Issue of Zamboes (South America).

Pardo: Synonymous with Mulatto (Brazil); any Mestizo (Argen- tine States).

Mamaluco: Any Mestizo, but especially the issuc of whites and Indians (Brazil).

Chino: Negro and Indian half-caste (Mexico, and generally in Spanish America).

Casco: Direct issue of Mulattoes on both sides (South America).

Tente en el Ayrc: Mongrels in whom the white element predomi- nates (South America). E

Cafwso: Issue of Negro and Indian, dark shade and woolly hair predominating (Brazil). .

Caburet : Issue of Negress and Indian (Brazil). ;

Cariboco, Tapanhuna, Xibaro: Loeal Brazilian terms of Tupi origin applied to various crosses between the Negroes and Indians.

2 Intiuders in the northern section of this group are the non-Negro Fans, the Oshyeba of the other natives. There are two main divisions,—Maké-Fan on the left, Mbelé-Fan on the right bank of the Ogoway.

Quarteroon, Quinteroon, Octoroon : Negro and white half-breeds, with fresh infusion of white blood each successive generation. Thus: Quarteroon has oue-fourth, Quinteroon one-eighth, Octoroon one-sixteenth black blood only, the last being searcely distinguish- able from a white.

Before the suppression of the slave trade, during the first half of

the present century, from 60,000 to 70,000 Negroes were annually shipped to America, where their descendants of all shades now number altogether upwards of twelve millions as under :—

| Proportion to the

Coloured Element. Whole Population.

13 per cent.

60,000

In Hayti the Africans have established their political autonomy, here forming two independent states, with total population 820, 000. Elsewhere slavery has been everywhere abolished, except in Brazil, where it is rapidly

becoming extinct. Hence the whole of the coloured population now practically constitutes a class of freed- men, in some places apparently dying out (Central America, Argentine States), in some remaining stationary (Mexico, Peru), but in others increasing rapidly. This is especially the case in the United States, as shown by the subjoined returns for the whole of the present century :—

Proportion to the

Coloured Element. Whole Population.

1800 1,002,000 19 per cent,

19

1820 1,772,000 ° 2 1840 2,874,000 i 1860 4,442.000 ig) RS 1870 4,880,000 isp

1880 6,581,000 13

It is obvious from this table that the Negroes, without any further importations from Africa, are increasing far more rapidly than the native whites, and that they would ultimately become the predominant element in the Southern States but for the con- stant stream of migration flowing from Europe to North America. Owing to this migration they decreased relatively to the rest of the population from 1820 to 1860. But since then they have main- tained their relative proportion in spite of this migration. Recently they have themselves begun to move westwards at the rate of about 50,000 annually. Should the movement continue, an equilibrium may be established, because the rate of mortality gains on the birth-rate according as they move farther from the hot Southern States, where alone the race can expect to establish itself in the republic.

Bibliography.—Pruner Bey, Mémoire sur les Negres, Paris, 1861; Winwood Reade, Savage Africa; Karl Vogt, Vorlesungen uber den Menschen; Filippo Manetta, La Razza Negra nel suo stato selvaggto e nella sua duplice condizione dt emancipata e di schiava, Turin, 1864; John Campbell, Vegromania, Philadelphia, 1851; J. F. Blumenbach, De Generts Humani

Varietate Nativa, Gottingen, 1775; Lawrence, Phystology, Zoology, and Natural I[istory of Man, 1819; Dr Paul Broca, " Memoirs" in Bulletins de la Soc. @ Anthropologie, 1860-78 ; Dr Van Evric, On Negroes and Negro Slavery ; Brehm, Reise-Skizzen aus Nordost-Africa; Col. Hamilton Smith, Natural History of the Human Species, Edinburgh, 1848; Hutchinson, Wanderings in West Africa; George MacHenry, The Cotton Trade and Negro Slavery, London, 1863; S. G. Morton, Crania "gypliaca; Peter A, Browne, Classification of Mankind by the Hair and Wool of their Heads: Nott and Gliddon, Zndigenous Races of the Earth, Philadelphia, 1857; Wilson, Ethnographic View of West Africa, New York, 1856; Prichard, Natural fistory of Man, London, 1855; Latham, Varieties of Man, London, 1850; E. B. Tylor, Anthropo- logy, London, 1881; Pickering, Races of Man, London, 1850; R. N. Cust, A Sketch of the Modern Languages of Africa, London, 1883; F. L, J ames, The Wild Tribes of the Sudan, London, 1883. The writings of the travellers Leo Africanns, Bruce, Mungo Park, Denham, Clapperton, Lander, Burckhardt, Barth, Richard- son, Nachtigal, Schweinfurth, Baker, Junker, Beltrami, for Soudan and Nile basin; of Krapf, Du Chaillu, Burton, Speke and Grant, Livingstone, Magyar, Cameron, Fritsche, Bleek, Lentz, Pogge and Wissmann, Schuver, Holub, Mohr, Buchner, Gussfeldt, for equatorial and south Africa, 2Xc 183i 1S)

NEGROPONT. See Evpaa.

NEHEMIAH (4%293), governor of Judea under Artax- erxes Longimanus; see IsRAEz, vol. xiii. p. 418. The book of Nehemiah is really part of the same work with the book of Ezra (¢.v.), though it embodies certain memoirs of Nehemiah in which he writes in the first person. Apart from what is related in this book, we possess no trustworthy information about Nehemiah. Even the legend in 2 Mac. i. 13 that he founded a library containing ancient docu- ments, which is often taken as authentic and as marking an important step in the history of the Old Testament canon (see vol. v. p. 2), is discredited by standing in an epistle of which the manifest aim was to give currency to certain spurious books.

NEISSE, a well-built town and fortress of the first rank in the district of Oppeln, Prussian Silesia, lies at the junce- tion of the Neisse and the Biela, and consists of the town proper on the right bank of the former river and the

Friedrichstadt on the left. Of its nine churches the most interesting is the parish church of St James (J akobikirche), dating mainly from the 12th century, but finished in 1430, The chief secular buildings are the old episcopal residence, the new town-house, the old rathsthurm, 205 feet in height (1499), and the theatre. There are also several schools, convents, and hospitals. The manufactures are unimportant, but a considerable trade is carricd on in agricultural products. In 1880 the town contained 20,507 inhabitants, of whom 15,825 were Roman Catholics. The garrison forms about a fourth of the population.

Neisse, one of the oldest towns in Silesia, is said to have been founded in the 10th century, and afterwards became the eapital of a principality of its own name, which was incorporated with the bishopric of Breslau about the year 1200. Its first walls were erected in 1350, and enabled it to repel an attack of the Hussites in 1428. It was thrice besieged during the Thirty Years' War. The end of the first Silesian war left Neisse in the hands of Frederick the Great, who laid the foundations of its modern fortifications. The town was taken by the French in 1807. Iu addition to its forts, ramparts, and bastions, Neisse ean, at the will of the garrison, be protected by a system of inundation.

NELEUS, a hero of Greek mythology, was son of Poseidon by Tyro, daughter of Salmoneus, to whom the god appeared under the form of the Thessalian river-god Enipeus. The legends connected with him are exceedingly difficult to classify, the events are so unconnected and the scene shifts so rapidly from country to country. Born in Thessaly, where his brother Pelias is king of Ioleus, Neleus becomes king of Pylus in Messenia and the ancestor of a royal family called the Neleidee, who are historically trace- able as the old ruling family in some of the Ionic states in Asia Minor. Tradition uniformly derives the Ionic colonies from the Attic coast, and the presence of the Neleide is explained by the legend that when the Dorians conquered the Peloponnesus the Neleide were driven out and took refuge in Attica, where they at once became kings of the land, and led colonies to the eastern shores of the /figean., This tangle of legends seems to"have as its historical basis the fortunes of an energetic yet wandering race which has left its mark indelibly on the history of every country which it touched. This race was obviously a maritime one, for there is no path

except the sea between the widely separate shores where it can be traced, and its divine ancestor is Poseidon. Neleus was father by Chloris of Nestor, Pero, and other children. Through the contest for the hand of Pero he is connected with the legends of the prophetic race of the Melampodide, who founded the mysteries and expiatory rites and the orgies of Bacchus in Argolis.

NELLORE, a district in Madras presidency, India, lying between 13° 25’ and 15° 55’ N. lat., and between 79° 9’ and 80° 14’ E. long,, bounded on the N. by Kistna district, E. by the Bay of Bengal, §, by North Arcot and Chingleput, and W. by the Eastern Ghats, separating it from Karntl and Cuddapah. The area is 8739 square miles. The district comprises a tract of low-lying land extending from the base of the Eastern Ghats to the sea. Its general aspect is forbidding : the coast-line is a fringe of blown sand through which the waves occasionally break, spreading a salt sterility over the fields. Farther inland the- country begins to rise, but the soil is not naturally fertile, nor are means of irrigation readily at hand. Less than one-third of the total area is cultivated ; the rest is either rocky waste or is covered with low scrub jungle. The chief rivers are the Pennair, Suvarnamukhi, and Gundlakamma. They are not navigable, but are utilized for irrigation purposes, the chief nrigation work being the

anicut across the Pennair. Nellore is, however, very sub- ject both to droughts and to floods. Copper was discovered in the western hills in 1801, but several attempts by European capitalists to work the ore proved unremunera- tive, and the enterprise has been abandoned since 1840. Tron ore is smelted by natives in many places. Nellore, with the other districts of the Carnatic, passed under direct British administration in 1801.

The population of Nellore in 1881 was 1,220,236, including 1,138,031 Hindus and 61,344 Mohammedans, Four Christian missions are established in the district, Roman Catholic, Baptist, Presbyterian, and Lutheran. Among the aboriginal tribes, the Yanadis arc the most numerous. On the island of Sriharikota, from which Madras derives its firewood, they still live in the jungle, and refuse to cultivate the soil or rear cattle. They have adopted some form of Hinduism, but still worship their own demons and bury their

dead. Five towns had in 1881 a popula- tion of over 5000—Nellore (27,505), Ongole (9200), Venkatagiri (7989), Kandukur (6601), and Addanki (6481). The climate is dry, the monthly temperature varying from about 74° F. in December to 90° in May; and the average annual rainfall is 36°53 inches.

In former days Nellore was celebrated for its textile fabrics, but the export has now ceased, though spinning and weaving for local consumption is carried on in many villages. Prior to the opening of the Madras Railway, Nellore formed the high road between tlic interior and the coast. The two principal ports are Kottapatam and Ittamukula, both in the north of the district. Indigo is exported by land to Madras at the ratc of about 800,000 maunds a year. The chicf means of communication is the Great Northern Trunk Road, which runs along the coast to the Bengal frontier. Watcr communication with Madras city is also afforded by the East Coast or Buckingham Canal.

NELSON, a seaport of New Zealand, capital of a pro- vincial district of the same name, prettily situated in 41° 18’S. lat. and 173° 19’ E. long., on the shores of a small harbour at the bottom of Blind Bay on the northern coast of the South Island. It is a diocesan city, and contains several churches and a college. The climate is healthy, and the surrounding scenery very picturesque. The woods and fields in the neigbourhood abound with English song-birds, and the streams are stocked with trout ; while the orchards in the town and suburbs are famous for English kinds of fruit, and hops are extensively cultivated. The industries include brewing, the manufacture of cloth (chiefly a superior kind of tweed), tanning, soap-boiling, candle-making, and the preparation of paint produced from hematite. A railway 23 miles long connects Nelson with Bellgrove, and is in course of extension towards Roundell up the Wai-iti valley. The borough returns one member to the house of representatives, and its local affairs are administered by a mayor and council elected by the ratepayers. The entrance to Nelson harbour is 10 miles south-west of Pepin Island. Six miles from the entrance commences the long and remarkable Boulder Bank, whose southern portion forms the natural breakwater to that anchorage. The population of Nelson in 1881 was 6764 (3261 males and 3503 females).

NELSON, Horatio Netson, Viscount (1758-1805), was a younger son of the Rev. Edmund Nelson, and was born at Barnham, Thorpe, Norfolk, September 29, 1758.

o21

to him. He was made a post-captain at the age of twenty- one, a promotion due to merit alone, and remarkable in that aristocratic age; and during the next few years he was actively engaged in thie vicissitudes of the American War. It was a period of chequered fortunes as regards the English navy ; its supremacy on the ocean was not yet assured ; and, though Rodney's great victory in 1782 attest- ed the excellence of British seamen, the flag of France was for a time dominant in the West Indies and Indian seas ; the fleets of the French and Spanish monarchies insulted the English coasts for several weeks, and assailed Gibraltar in formidable strength ; and the armed neutrality of the Northern powers threatened England with no ordinary peril. Nelson, however, though his correspondence proves that he followed them with the eye of genius, took no part in these great operations; he was in command only of small vessels, and was chiefly employed in protecting convoys and in chasing cruisers of the same class as his own; and his most notable exploit was a bold descent on the shores of the South American isthmus, in which he gave fresh proofs of his habitual bravery. Yet his reputation as a promising officer was steadily growing during these years; he attracted the attention of every admiral on the different stations on which he served; and King Wilham IV., at this time a midshipman, probably only echoed a general opinion in describing Nelson asa "boy captain with an entliusiasm that showed he was no common being." After the peace of Versailles in 1783, Nelson was in the West Indies for several years; and he gained credit for almost Quixotic zeal, and drew down on himself no little odium, by the efforts he made to prevent smuggling between the new United States and British colonies, and to expose the frauds of the greedy contractors who, especially on the Jamaica station, had been long permitted to plunder the navy. The time was now at hand when the commanding powers of this great seaman were to become manifest. War between England and revolutionary France was declared in the first months of 1793; and Nelson, on the recommendation of Lord Hood—a veteran who held him in high esteem— was made captain of the ''Agamemnon," the first ship

of the line commanded by him. He was despatched under Hood to the Mediterranean; and, though his vessel was one of the worst in the fieet, he performed feats of daring and perfect seamanship which at once marked him out for applause and distinction. With a detachment of sailors who, when led by him, ‘minded shot,” he declared, “as little as peas,” he took a prominent part in the siege of Bastia ; and the capitulation of the place was due, for the most part, to their determined valour. At the siege of Cadiz also, where he lost an eye, he contributed largely to the result, his “‘seamen,” as he reported, having “ fought the guns” with the assistance only of ‘“‘a single artillery- man.” Nelson, however, was greatest on his own element ; and soon after this he for the first time displayed conspicuously, and in a decisive manner, the transcendent gifts which made him pre-eminent. In March 1795 the British fleet, under Admiral Hothami—Lord Hood had by this time been replaced—was partially engaged off the coasts of Italy with a French fleet of superior force; and a French eighty-four, having been dismasted, sheered off, towed by a powerful frigate, and supported by two large ships of the line. The “ Agamemnon,” though only a sixty- four, stood out boldly after the retiring enemy ; and Nelson’s manceuvres were so skilful that he all but destroyed the crippled Frenchman, and kept the whole hostile squadron at bay, without incurring any serious loss. The injured ship, with one of her consorts, was easily captured a few hours afterwards; and, had the admiral followed Nelson’s advice, the whole French fleet would have been brought to action, and have probably met a complete defeat. XVII. — 41

22

In the winter of 1795-96 Nelson was employed in cutting off the supplies of the French army on the Italian seaboard ; and, had he been well seconded by the Austrian generals, Napoleon would not have possessed the means of beginning his career of Italian conquest. Soon after this he became a commodore; and before long he had again performed one of those great feats of daring and skill which ordinary commanders would have deemed impossible. Spain, drawn into her old alliance with France, had declared war in 1796; and on 13th February 1797 a Spanish fleet met one of the English, a few miles off Cape St Vincent. Though the enemy had twenty-seven ships of the line, and the British force was only fifteen, its admiral,

Jervis, did not hesitate; and, skilfully employing a well- known manceuvre, he broke the hostile line, cutting off nine ships. The Spanish admiral, however, endeavoured to rejoin this detachment by wheeling round his van; and the evolu- tion might have been successful had not Nelson, placed at the British rear, immediately abandoned his own line, and, disregarding his superior's orders, assailed with his single ship the advancing squadron. This audacious movement threw him in the way of three first and three second rates ; and, though the "Captain" was ably seconded by the three nearest ships of the British line, Nelson was engaged for more than half an hour with a force immeasurably superior to his own. Yet British discipline and valour triumphed ; the Spanish commander drew off beaten, and the "Captain" boarded and took two ships, each larger and more powerful than herself, Nelson leading his exulting crew in person to the ery of "Westminster Abbey or Victory." For this extraordinary passage of arms Nelson received the order of the Bath and was made an admiral, — his splendid success and skilful promptitude having effaced, even in professional minds, his disregard of the rules of the service. During the following months he was engaged in operations against Spain and her colonies; and he lost an arm in an attack on Santa Cruz, a place famous for one of Blake's victories. The time had now arrived when his genius and skill were to appear in full force in an inde- pendent command. In May 1798 he was despatched by Jervis—now Lord St Vincent—to intercept a great French armament, which, under the guidance of Bonaparte, was intended to reach Egypt and to threaten India. His squadron, however, having been crippled in a gale, the hostile fleet escaped from Toulon and reached Alexandria on Ist July, the British admiral, who had made Aboukir on the 28th June, having just missed it. This misadven- ture deceived Nelson, who believed that the enemy was still at sea ; and it was not until he had made a circuit by Crete to the coasts of Sicily, and back again to the shores of Greece, that he heard how the French had made good their landing. He set off from the Gulf of Coron, though his intelligence was a rumour only; and on the Ist August the enemy was descried. His plan of attack was quickly formed, and it was marked by his wonted insight and skill. The French fleet lay in front of the roads of Aboukir, the rear supported by coast batteries, the centre and van more out at sea, but composed of new and formidable ships ; and, as shoals stretched between it and the neighbouring shore, its admiral, Brueys, believed that no foe would

thread the way between and attack from that side. Nelson, however, a dexterous pilot from boyhood, saw that with fine steering the feat was possible; and he directed part of his fleet to assail the enemy to the landward through this intricate passage, while the remaining part assailed from the seaward. As evening fell his preparations were complete ; the shoal stopped only one of the British ships, and before an hour had passed his divided line had encom- passed more than half the French fleet. ‘The issue of the battle was never doubtful ; the French, indeed, fought with

SL SO

heroic courage, but their rear and centre, placed between two fires, were gradually overpowered and destroyed ; and their van, at anchor, like all their line, was either unable or perhaps unwilling to make sail and assist their consorts. The flagship of Brueys, the huge “ Orient,” blew up towards midnight in a voleano of flame, and by daybreak on the 2d the victory was complete. Of thirteen French ships two only escaped, and it should be added that the British fleet, though equal in numbers to that of the enemy, was wholly inferior in real force. The British seventy-fours were no match for the new and magnificent French eighties ; and Nelson’s flagship, the ‘‘ Vanguard,” had scarcely more than half the strength of the “ Orient.”

This great victory—perhaps Nelson’s masterpiece— marks a new epoch in British naval history. The superior- ity, indeed, of the English fleets had been proved from the beginning of the war, especially on June 1, 1794, and the Revolution had injured the marine of France. But it was not until the Battle of the Nile—the name given to Nelson’s triumph—that the navy of England attained its complete ascendency, and that it became the terror of even its bravest enemies. This change was due in the main to Nelson, and unquestionably the dread his name inspired was the principal cause that, years afterwards, Napoleon’s plan of invading England failed. From this period, too, the whole naval service, so to speak, was animated by a new spirit, and deeds of daring were done by men of the rising school which the Hawkes and Ansons would have never dreamt of. It is painful to turn from this blaze of glory to notice a dark passage in Nelson’s career. The Battle of the Nile having again combined the Continent against revolutionary France, —for Bonaparte and his army seemed lost,—the court of Naples was

drawn into the war; and, in the struggle that ensued, the king and queen were compelled to take refuge in Palermo. They soon, however, had returned to the capital, Suwaroff having driven the French from Italy ; and they entered Naples on the faith of a treaty, which amnestied their revolted subjects. Nelson, who still held his Mediterranean command, and had taken the royal family under his protection, nevertheless declared the capitulation null, allowed the vindictive creatures of the court to work their will on disarmed enemies, and, hurrying on himself the trial and sentence, gave his sanction to what can be only called the judicial murder of Caraccioli, the admiral of the Neapolitan fleet, who had served in the "rebel" cause only under compulsion, History must severely condemn these acts, but there is reason to believe that they were not caused, as is commonly supposed, by female prompting ; and we must not forget that, in that age, political passion ran furiously high, and often broke down all moral barriers,—that it was the age of the assassinations at Rastadt, of the crime of Vincennes, of the execution of Ney. Nelson remained on his station after this tragedy ; he shared in some of the short-lived triumphs of the allies in 1799-1800, had the satisfaction of hearing of the capture of the two ships which had escaped from Aboukir, and gave effectual aid in the siege of Malta, taken by Bonaparte on his way to Egypt. By the winter of 1800. he was again in England, having received a peerage for the Battle of the Nile, and the well-merited rank of vice- admiral, and greeted by his country with general acclaim. He was called before long to perform another service, in which his great qualities became again manifest. The victory of Marengo, won by Bonaparte after his extraordin- ary return from Egypt, having broken up the coalition against France, and inclined the ezar to a French alliance, the Northern courts, with Denmark at their head, renewed the armed neutrality of 1780; and, in the first months of 1801, a British fleet was fitted out for the Baltic to put an

end to this menacing league. Sir Peter Parker, a cautious veteran, was made chief of this expedition, Nelson being only the second in command, for negotiation was to be tried at first, and for this Nelson had no aptitude; but,

though this arrangement promised well, it did not prove, on the whole, fortunate. The fleet, an extremely powerful armament, had passed the Sound by the 3lst March,— Nelson chafing at the delays of his colleague, and at diplo- matic efforts which, he rightly thought, would give to the Danes what they wanted, time; and by the 7th April it cast anchor in the waters around the Danish capital. The enemy, however, had already prepared the means of making a stern resistance: Copenhagen was covered by strong batteries ; and an imposing array of heavily armed craft, protected by a shoal, as was the case at Aboukir, presented a most formidable line of defence. Nelson, however, declared for an immediate attack ; and on the 2d May the attempt was made, Parker having judiciously left him to act for himself. Nelson's tactics resembled those of the Nile; he closed on his foe by getting within the shoal; but, from the nature of the case, he had not the means of placing the Danes between two fires; he had to deal with forts, not with vessels only ; and his operations were in part unfortunate, for three of his ships at the out- set grounded. The result was that, although his squadron destroyed the first line of the Danish defences, and threatened the capital with ruinous injury, the hostile batteries were not silenced, and Nelson's ships had suffered so much that he readily welcomed the terms of a truce which extricated him from no little danger. Parker, indeed, had been so alarmed at the prospect that. he had actually signalled the fleet to retreat ; but Nelson character- istically refused to obey until something like victory had been attained,—on the whole, certainly, a wise resolve. Nelson was made a viscount for Copenhagen, and the league of the North was soon dissolved, for, though his success had not been perfect, it had taught the enemy a severe lesson. During the summer of 1801 he was engaged in watching the first preparations for a descent on the English coast, already contemplated by Napoleon; and he directed a boat attack on what was ere long to grow into the for- midable and threatening flotilla of Boulogne. The peace of Amiens brought the war to a close; and Nelson stood on a pinnacle of fame, the acknowledged chief of the navy of England. His life, however, had become unhappy, for his private as well as his public character was not, it must be confessed, spotless. He was singularly susceptible to female influences ; and he had formed for some years an erring attachment for Emma, the wife of Sir William Hamilton, ambassador at Naples in 1798. She was an adven- turess of great beauty and parts ; and, though his conduct at Naples does not seem to have been due to her evil counsels, he became

almost her slave in his wild passion; and this had not only led to a separation from his wife, but had given him many wretched moments, and had caused much pain to his aged sovereign. Discredit, however, of this kind could not detract from his splendid services; and on the renewal of the war in 1803 Nelson was appointed to the Mediterranean command. He took up his station off Toulon ; and for nearly two years he kept the French in port, in spite of repeated efforts of escape, and of the vicissitudes of all kinds of weather—an example of endur- ance never equalled. Meanwhile Napoleon had been maturing his deep-laid plan for invading England; the army which afterwards subdued the Continent had been inarshalled along the cliffs of Boulogne; a vast and armed flotilla had been assembled; and the descent was to be covered by an immense fleet, collected from many points of the compass, and concentrated in suitable force in the Channel. A variety of circumstances, however, the prin-

cipal being the timidity of the French admirals, alarmed at the recollections of the Nile, and fearing attempts to break the blockade, delayed the execution of the enemy's design, though certainly it was formidable in the extreme, and was unsuspected until the last moment. At last, at the end of March 1805, the French admiral, Villeneuve, escaped from Toulon,—his mission being to rally a Spanish squadron, to cross the Atlantic and reach the West Indies, and then, returning to the seas of Europe, to liberate the French and Spanish squadrons blockaded at Ferrol, Rochefort, and Brest, and to attain the Channel with a great armada of from fifty to sixty ships of the line. Villeneuve's operations were at first successful: le was at Martinique by the middle of May, having been joined by a fleet from Cadiz; and, though haunted, as it were, by the thought of Nelson, he was in full sail for Europe by the lst June, having as yet completely eluded the enemy. Meantime Nelson had sought for Villeneuve on the Mediterranean for several days; he had been long delayed by contrary winds; and, though he had crossed the Atlantic with extreme rapidity when apprised of the destination of his foe, he had been lured away by a false report to the shores of the South American continent, and he only reached the latitude of Martinique to find that Villeneuve and his fleet were gone. He sailed from Antigua on the 13th June, pursuing with eleven sail a fleet of nineteen or

twenty ; and, as he feared that he might not come up with Villeneuve, he despatched several light craft to warn the Admiralty—though not suspecting Napoleon's design—that a hostile fleet was on the way to Europe. This precaution proved of the highest moment. Nelson missed Villeneuve in the Atlantic wastes, but one of these vessels conveyed his message. Sir Robert Calder, sent off for the purpose, intercepted Villeneuve off the coasts of Spain, and though the action was not decisive the Frenchman was compelled to put into Ferrol, and was thus prevented from making northwards. Before long Nelson, still chasing Villeneuve, but ignorant where his enemy was, had approached Europe and made for England ; and at this intelligence the French admiral sailed from Ferrol southward, and put into Cadiz, completely frustrat- ing his master's projects. The position of affairs had now become clearer,—though Collingwood alone of British seamen had even an inkling of Napoleon's purpose ; and the Admiralty made preparations at once to attack the fleet that had fled into Cadiz. Nelson was placed in supreme command, and he was off Cadiz in the last days of September. His fleet numbered thirty-three or thirty- four sail of the line; that of Villeneuve was of the same force, the Ferrol squadron having joined his own ; but, as Nelson knew that the French chief would not venture to fight on equal terms, he actually sent away seven or eight ships, in order to bring about an engage- ment which, he had resolved, should prove decisive.

By 20th October Villeneuve had put to sea with the combined fleets of France and Spain. He obeyed a peremptory command of Napoleon, who had stigmatized him as a feeble coward ; he left Cadiz trusting to a false report that Nelson had only twenty ships; and yet, with thirty-three, he dreaded a battle. Nelson, eager to decoy the Frenchman out, had kept a considerable distance from land, but the enemy's movements were watched by his frigates, and he was informed of them throughout the night. His plan of attack had been made some time: the ships of the allies being very numerous, he had resolved to break their line at two points; and in this way the results, he believed, of the manceuvre would be more quick and effective. By daybreak on the 21st the fleet of Villeneuve was descried off the Cape of Trafalgar ; and the English fleet was formed into two columns, the northern led

by Nelson in the “ Victory,” the southern under Collingwood in the “ Royal Sovereign.” The wind was light, and there was an ocean swell; Nelson’s ships slowly advanced on the waters ; and, as they approached it, the hostile fleet, the sun shining on the masses of sails, presented a grand and imposing appearance. Villeneuve, a skilful seaman though a timid leader, had arranged his squadrons ably to meet the attack : he had formed them into two parallel lines, the vessels of the second commanding the spaces between the vessels of the first line; and they were thus marshalled in a compact array, each division giving support to the other, and offering a continuous front of fire to the enemy. Deafening cheers broke from the British armament as the celebrated signal flew from the flagship, “England expects every man to do his duty”; andit is said that Villeneuve, as he heard the shouting, exclaimed to his officers that “all was lost.” The southern column came into action towards noon ; and Collingwood first broke the hostile line, pouring a destructive broadside into the “Santa Anna,” and then ranging alongside the “Fougeux.” The “Royal Sovereign,” however, had out-sailed her consorts, and he was surrounded by enemies for many minutes before a friendly ship could come to her aid ; and this circumstance not only proves how absolute had become the confidence of the British chiefs, but how the manceuvre of piercing the line requires a better fleet to have a chance of success. By this time the northern column was engaged ; the “ Victory,” assailed by a tremendous fire, broke through the enemy soon after twelve, making immense havoc in Villeneuve’s flagship, and exchanging broadsides with the “ Redoubt- able” and with the huge “Santissima Trinidad,” by far the largest man-of-war afloat; and here again some moments elapsed before the “Temeraire” gave her partial relief. The action had now become general; and the British ships in the rear came up, reducing the great inferiority in the first attack. Six or seven ships of the enemy’s first line made a stern and noble resist- ance ; but the second line gradually fell to leeward; the van, as at the Nile, scarcely fired a shot; and, divided, scattered, and overpowered at. every point where the defence was maintained, the allied fleet ere long was a mass of fragments, disabled, helpless, and pursued by their conquerors. Nevertheless the victory, splendid as it was, was dearly bought by the loss of the life of the illustrious warrior who had prepared it. A musket ball from the ‘‘Redoubtable’s ” tops

inflicted a mortal wound on Nelson about an hour after the battle began, and he died towards evening to the unspeakable grief of all who witnessed the sorrowful scene in the “ Victory.” He retained, however, his great faculties to the last ; he lived to hear that almost two-thirds of the enemy’s fleet had been destroyed or captured ; and, though he passed away in the prime of manhood, it can hardly be said that his death was prema- ture, for the foes of England had been swept from the ocean. We have indicated Nelson’s undoubted errors ;and he was inferior to several of England’s naval chiefs in political sagacity and calm forethought. But he was the greatest of her commanders at sea ; he was unrivalled, in an event- ful age of war, for resource, daring, professional skill, and the art of winning the hearts of men; and, on the whole, he was beyond comparison the first of the naval worthies of his country. His remains were conveyed to England and interred in St Paul’s Cathedral on January 9, 1806. See The Dispatches and Letters of Nelson, 7 vols., London, 1844- 46; the Life by Clarke and M‘Arthur (1806), and that by Southey (1828); Alison, History of Europe; Thiers, French Revolution and History of the Consulate and the Empire. (W. O. M.) NEMATOIDEA. The name NVematoidea (vio, thread, cidos, form) was first introduced by Rudolphi, but the group had been previously recognized as distinct by Zeder

under the name of Ascarides, They are now by many systematists united with the Acanthocephali to form the order Vemathelminthes.

The Nematoidea possess an elongated and thread-like form (see fig. 1), varying in length from a few lines up to several feet. The body is covered ex- ternally by a chitinous cuticle which is a product of the subjacent epidermic layer; this cuticle is frequently pro- longed into spines and papille, which are especially developed at the anterior end of the body. The mouth opens at one extremity of the body and the anus at or near the other. Beneath the epidermis is a longitudinal layer of muscle-fibres which are separated into four distinct groups by the dorsal, ventral, and lateral areas; these are occupied by a continuation of the epi- dermic layer; in the lateral areas run two thin-walled tubes with clear con- tents, which unite in the anterior part of the body and open by a pore situated on the ventral area,

These vessels are considered to represent the seg- mental organs of other worms. The lateral areas are entirely absent in Gordius. The body cavity is largely occupied by connective tissue, and neither here nor elsewhere are cilia found at any period of development. The alimentary tract consists of a straight tube running from the mouth to the anus without any convolutions ; it is separable into three divisions :— (1) a muscular cesophagus, which is often provided with cuticular teeth ; (2) a cellular intestine ; and (3) a short terminal rectum surrounded by muscu- lar fibres.

A nervous system has been shown to exist In many species, and consists of a pericesophageal ring giving off several nerves which run forwards and backwards along the lateral and median lines. Some of the free-living forms possess eye specks. The sexes are distinct (with the exception of a few forms that are hermaphrodite), and the male is always smaller than the female. The generative organs consist of one or two tubes, in the upper portion of which the ova or spermatozoa are de- veloped, the lower portion serving as an oviduct or vas deferens ; the female generative organs open at the middle of the body, the male close to the posterior extremity into the terminal portion of the alimentary canal; from this cloaca a diverticulum is given off in which are developed one to three chitinous spicules that subserve the function of copulation. The spermatozoa differ from those of other animals in having the form of cells which sometimes per- form amceboid movements. The development is similar to that of the ova, with which they appear to be homologous.

Mode of Life and Metamorphoses.—While the majority of the Nematodes are parasites, there are many that are never at any period of their life parasitic. These free- living forms are found everywhere—in salt and fresh water, in damp earth and moss, and among decaying sub- stances ; they are always minute in size, and like many other lower forms of life, are capable of retaining their vitality for a long period even when dried, which accounts

Fie. 1—Oxryuris (after Galeb, Arch, de Zool, Ezp., 1878). 6b,mouth; e, oesophagus; dd, en- largement of the ceso- phagus, armed with chitinous teeth; 7, in- testine; s, opening of segmental tubes (placed by mistake on the dorsal instead of the ventral surface) ; fe, testes ; cd, vas deferens; sp, cloaca; pa, papille.

N EeMAT Oo DE A

for their wide distribution; this faculty is also possessed by certain of the parasitic Nematodes, especially by those which lead a free existence during a part of their life- cycle. The free-living differ from the majority of the parasitic forms in undergoing no metamorphosis ; they also possess certain structural peculiarities which led Bastian (Trans, Linn, Soc., 1865) to separate them into a distinct family, the Anguzlulide. It is impossible, however, to draw a strict line of demarcation between the free and parasitic species, since—(1) many of the so-called free Nematoidea live in the slime of molluscs (Villot), and are therefore really parasitic ; (2) while certain species belong- ing to the freeliving genus Angwillula are normally parasitic (e.g., A. tritici, which lives encysted in ears of wheat), other species occasionally adopt the parasitic mode of existence, and become encysted in slugs, snails, &c.; (3) it has been experimentally proved that many normally parasitic genera are capable of leading a free existence ;! (4) transitional forms exist which are free at one period of their life and parasitic at another. The parasitic Nematodes include by far the greatest number of the known genera; they are found in nearly all the orders of the animal kingdom, but more especially among the

Tertebrata, and of these the Mammalia are infested by a greater variety than any of the other groups. No less than nineteen distinct species have been described as occurring in man. The Nematode parasites of the Jnvertebrata are usually immature forms which attain their full develop- ment in the body of some vertebrate ; but there are a number of species which in the sexually adult condition are peculiar to the [nvertebrata.?

The Vematoidea contain about as many parasitic species as all the other groups of internal parasites taken together ; they are found in almost all the organs of the body, and by their presence, especially when encysted in the tissues and during their migration from one part of the body to another, give rise to various pathological conditions. Although some attain their full development in the body of a single host—in this respect differing from all other Hntozoa—the majority do not become sexually mature until after their transference from an “intermediate” to a “definitive ” host. This migration is usually accompanied by a more or less complete

metamorphosis, which is, however, not so conspicuous as in most other parasites, ¢.g,, the Z'rematoda. In some cases (many species of Ascaris) the metamorphosis is reduced to a simple process of growth.

The parasitic and free-living Nematodes are connected by transitional forms which are free at one stage of their existence and parasitic at another ; they may be divided into two classes—those that are parasitic in the larval state but free when adult, and those that are free in the larval state but parasitic when adult.

(1) To the first class belong the "'hairworms" Gordius and Mermis. The adult Gordius aquaticus inhabits clear running water; it is a long slender worm often about a foot in length but only

vy inch in diameter. Several individuals are frequently found together twisted into a knot, whenee the name Gordius. The

1 Ercolani successfully cultivated Oxyuris curvula, Strongylus armatus, and other species in damp earth; the free generation was found to differ from the parasitic by its small size, and by the females being ovoviviparous instead of oviparous. To this phenomenon he gave the name of dimorphobiosis.

2 The genera Ascaris, Filaria, Trichosoma are found throughout the Vertebrata, Cucullanus (in the adult condition) only in fishes and Amphibia ; Dochmius, Trichocephalus, Trichina, and Pseudatius live only in the Mammalia, the last-mentioned genus being confined to the order Cetacea ; Strongylus and Physaloptera are peculiar to mammals, birds, and reptiles, while Dispharagus, Syngamus, and Hystrichis are confined to birds. Gordius and Mermis (in the larval state) are with one or two exceptions confined to the /nvertebrata and Spherularia to bees. Oxyuris, though chiefly parasitic in the Mammalia, occurs also in reptiles, Amphibia, and one or two inseets. Dacnitis and Ichthyo- nema are only found in fishes,

larva when first hatched is provided with a number of cephalic hooks by the aid of which it bores its way into the larve of the gnat and other Dipicra ; there it becomes encysted, but con- tinues to move about within the cyst.

The gnat larve are devoured by fish, and the young Gordius is set free and penetrates the mucous membrane of the intestine, where it encysts itself and beeomes quiescent; in this second larval period the eyst differs in character from that formed during the first larval period. In the spring, about six months after the second eneystment, the larva becomes free and finds its way through the alimentary canal to tho exterior ; the eephalic armature disappears, the alimentary canal be- comes rudimentary, and after aequiring sexual organs the larva assumes the character of theadult(Villot). (2)‘To the second elass be-

‘long Dochmius, Strongylus, and many species of Ascaris; the embryo

on leaving the egg lives free in water or damp earth, and resembles very closely the free-living genus Rhabditis. After a longer or shorter period it enters the alimentary canal of its proper host and becomes sexually mature. Ascaris nigrovenosa has a developmental history which is entirely anomalous, passing through two sexual genera- tions which regularly alternate. The worm inhabits the lung of the frog and toad, and is hermaphrodite (Schneider) or partheno- genetie (Leuckart) ; the embryos hatched from the eggs find their way through the lungs into the alimentary canal and thence to the exterior ; in a few days they develop into a sexual Rhabditis, in which the sexes are distinet ; the eggs remain within the uterus, and the young when hatehed break through its walls and live free in the periviseeral cavity of the mother, devouring the organs of the body until only the outer cuticle is left ; this eventually breaks and sets free the young, which are without teeth, and have therefore lost the typical Rhabditis form. They live for some time in water or mud, occasionally entering the bodies of water snails, but under- go no change until they reach the lung ofa frog, when the cyele begins anew. Although several species belonging to the second elass occasionally enter the bodies of water snails and other animals before reaching their definitive host, they undergo no alteration of form in this intermediate host; the case is different, however, in Filaria medinensis, F. bancroftt, and other forms, in which a free larval is followed by a parasitic existence in two distinct hosts, all the changes being accompanied by a metamorphosis. Jlaria medi- nensis—the Guinea worm—is parasitic in the subcutaneous connec- tive tissue of man (oecasionally also in the horse). It is chiefly found in the tropical parts of Asia and Africa, but has

also been met with in South Carolina and several of the West Indian islands. The adult worm, which sometimes reaches a length of 6 feet, has the characters of a female, butis probably hermaphrodite, seeing that no males have ever been discovered. It is viviparous, and the young, which, unlike the parent, are provided with a long tail, live free in water; it was formerly believed from the frequeney with which the legs an@ feet were attacked by this parasite that the embryo entered the skit directly from the water, but it has been proved by Fedsechenko that the larva bores its way into the body of a Cyclops and there undergoes further development. It is probable that the parasite is then transferred to the alimentary canal of man by means of drinking water, and thence makes its way to the sub

cutaneous connective tissue.

The Nematoidea which are parasitic during their whole life may similarly be divided into two classes—those which un- dergo their development in a single host, and those which undergo theirdevelopment in the bodies of twodistinct hosts.

(1) In the former elass the eggs are extruded with the feces, and the young become fully formed within the egg, and when accidentally swal- lowed by their host are liberated by the solvent action of the gastric juice and com- plete their development. This simple type of life history has been experimentally proved by Leuckart to be characteristic of Trichocephalus affinis, Oxyuris ambigua, and other species. (2) The life history of Ollulanus tricuspis is an example of the second class. Ollulanus trt- cuspis is found in the adult state in the ali- mentary canal of the cat; the young worms are hatched in the alimentary canal, and often wander into the body of their host and become encysted in the lungs, liver, and other organs; during the encystment the worm degenerates and loses all trace of strne- ture, This wandering appears to be accidental, and to have nothing to do with the further evolution of the animal which takes place in those embryos which are voided with the ex- erement. Leuckart proved experimentally that these young forms become encysted in the muscles of mice, and the cycle is com- pleted after the mouse is devonred by a cat. The well-known Trichina spiralis (fig. 2) has a life history closely resembling that

Fig. 2.—Trichina en- cysted among mus- cular fibres. After Leuckart.

Classifi- cation.

326

of Ollulanus. The adult worm, which is of extremely minute size, the male being only th and the female 4 of an inch in length, inhabits the alimentary canal of man and many other car- nivorous mammalia; the young bore their way into the tissues and become encysted in the muscles—within the muscle-bundles ac- cording to Leuckart, but in the connective tissue between them according to Chatin and others. The co-existence of the asexual encysted form and the sexually mature adult in the same host, ex- ceptionally found in Ollwlanus and other Nematodes, is the rule in Trichina ; many of the embryos, however, are extruded with the feces, and complete the life cycle by reaching the alimentary canal of rats and swine which frequently devour human ordure. Swine become infested with Zrichina in this way and also by eating the dead bodies of rats, and the parasite is conveyed to the body of man along with the flesh of ‘‘ trichinized”’ swine.

Bibliography. — General Treatises :—Cobbold, Entozoa (London, 1864) and Parasites (London, 1879); Leuckart, Die menschlichen Parasiten, vol. ii., Leipsic, 1876; Ktichenmeister, Die Parasiten des Menschen, Lf. 3, 2d. ed., Leipsic, 1881; Chatin, La Trichine et la Trichinose, Paris, 1883. Systematic :—Goeze, Versuch einer Naturg. der Eingeweidewtirmer (Blankenburg, 1782), and Erster Nachirag, &c., mit Anmerk. von Zeder (Leipsic, 1800); Rudolphi, Entozoorum historia naturalis, Amsterdam, 1808; Dujardin, Histoire naturelle des helminthes, Paris, 1845; Diesing, Systema helminthum, Vienna, 1850; Bastian, *« Monograph of Anguillulide,” Trans. Linn. Soc., 1865; Biitschli, *‘Beitriige zur Kenntn. ad. freileb. Nematoden,” Nov. Act, ‘Acad. Letp., 1873, and ‘Ueber freileb. Nematoden,” Abh. Senk. naturf. Gesells. Frankfurt, 1874; Villot, ‘*Faune helminth. de la Bretagne,” Arch, Zool. Exp., 1875; De Man, ‘Onderz. over vrij in de Aarde levende Nematoden,” Tijdsh. d. Nederland. Dierk. Vereen, 1875 and 1876; V. Linstow, numerous papers in Arch. Sir. Naiurg,, 1872-83, Anatomy and Development :—Besides the text-books of zoology, see Lubbock, “Sphzrularia bombi,” Nat. Hist. Rev., 1861 and 1864; Eberth, Unter- such, tiber Nematoden, Leipsic, 1868; Schneider, Monographie der Nematoden, Leipsic, 1866; Bastian, ‘‘ Anatomy and Physiology of

Nematoids," Phil. Trans., 1866; Villot, " Monographie des Dragonneaux," Arch. Zool. Exp., 1874; Biitschli, "Zur Entwick, Geschichte des Cucullanus elegans," Zeitsch, wiss. Zool., 1876; Ercolani, " Osservazioni sulla vita libera dell' Ascaris maculosa," Mem. Ac. Sct. Bologna, 1877. Distribution :—V. Linstow, Compendium der Heiminthologie, Hanover, 1878. (F. E. B.)

NEMEAN GAMES. See Games, vol. x. p.° 65.

NEMERTINES, or Nemerreans (Wemertea), is the name of a subdivision of worms,! characterized by the ciliation of the skin, by the presence of a retractile pro- boscis, by the simple arrangement of the generative apparatus, and in certain cases by a peculiar pelagic larval stage to which the name " pilidium " has been given. Many of them are long thread-shaped or ribbon-shaped animals, more or less cylindrical in transverse section. Even the comparatively shortest species and genera can always be termed elongate, the broadest and shortest of all being the parasitic Malacobdella and the pelagic Pelagonemertes. There are no exterior appendages of any kind. The colours are often very bright and varied. They live in the sea, some being common amongst the corals and algee, others hiding in the muddy or sandy bottom, and secreting gelatin- ous tubes which ensheath the body along its whole length. Formerly, they were generally arranged amongst the Platyelminthes as a suborder in the order of the Turbel- larians, to which the name of Rhynchoceela was applied, the other suborders being the Dendrocela and the Rhubdocela, With the advance of our knowledge of these lower worms it has been found desirable to separate them from the Turbellarians and to look upon the Nemertea as a separate phylum of Platyelminthes. Lately the interest in their morphology has increased, since it hag been advanced (6, 8)? that certain points in their organization appear to indicate a remote degree of relationship to the ancestral forms which must have preceded the Chordata (to which the vertebrate animals also belong), and that this relationship is closer than that which exists between those Protochordata and any other group of invertebrate animals.

CLASSIFICATION.—The Nemertines are subdivided into three suborders : —Hoplonemertea, Schizonemertea, and Palzonemertea (5). The (1) Hoplonemertea embrace all the species with a stylet in the proboscis, and also Malacobdella, which has an unarmed proboscis, but which, by the details of its organization and its develop- ment, must certainly be placed here (parasitism may be the cause of its incipient degeneration). The special

- Nemertes was a scanymph, daughter of Nereus and Doris. One of the genera was named Vemertes by Cuvier. These figures refer to the bibliography at the end of the article.

characters of this suborder may be gathered from the anatomical descriptions hereafter to be given. In those species of which the embryology has been investigated the development was direct. The more common or more important genera are Amphiporus (A. pulcher, British coasts, Mediterranean ; A. splendidus, Atlantic), which is comparatively short, Nemertes (N. gracilis, Atlantic and Mediterranean; WV. antonina, Mediterranean ; NV. echinoder- ma, Mediterranean), which is long and thread-like, Tetra- stemma, Drepanophorus (with more complicate armature in the proboscis), Akrostomum, Malacobdella. (2) In the Schizonemertea all those genera and species are united which have deep, longitudinal, lateral, cephalic fissures. The development of some (Lineus) is characterized by the so-called larva of Desor, of others (Cerebratulus) by the

Fig. 1.

Fies. 1, 2.—Diagrams of the organs of a Nemertine, fig. 1 from below, fig. 2 from above. m, mouth; div, intestinal diverticula; a, anus; ov, ovaries; n, neph- ridia; Br, brain-lobes; Im, longitudinal nerve stems ; pr, proboscis ; ps, pro- boscidian sheath ; p.o., opening for proboscis.

Fig. 2.

curious and characteristic pilidium-larva. The principal genera are Lineus (L. longissimus, Atlantic ; L. obscurus), Cerebratulus (C. marginatus, C.

bilineatus, both Atlantic and Mediterranean ; CO. urticans, Mediterranean ; C. fascio- latus and aurantiacus, C. hepaticus and dohrnii, Medi- terranean; C', macintoshii, Madeira), Langia (L. formosa), Borlasia (B. elizabeth), (3) Of the Palxonemertea the most typical and most characteristic genera are Carv- nella and Cephalothria, They differ considerably both from Hoplo- and from Schizonemertines, and evidently belong to a lower stage of differentiation. The genera Polva (P. delineata and P. curta, Mediterranean) and Valen- cinta are provisionally arranged in this order because, though less primitive, they are not typical representatives of the other two suborders. The development of these species is not at all, or only very superficially, known. For the further characters of the last two suborders see the anatomical description below.

Another subdivision generally current is that into the Enopla and the Anopla (14). This does not, however, take into sufficient account the primitive and diverging

Ana- tomy.

NEMERTINES

characters disclosed by the very important less highly organized genera.

Anatomy.—(a) Proboscis and Proboscidian Sheath.—The organ most characteristic of a Nemertine is without doubt the proboscis. With very few exceptions (Malacobdella, Akrostomum, where it has fused with the mouth to a single exterior opening), there is a terminal opening (subterminal in Valencinia) at the foremost tip of the body, out of which the proboscis is seen shooting backwards and forwards, sometimes with so much force that both its interior attachments are severed and it is entirely expelled from the body. It then often retains its vitality for a long time, apparently crawling about as if it were itself a worm, a phenomenon which is at least partially explained by the extra- ordinary development of nervous tissue, equally distributed all through the walls of the proboscis, | and either united (10) into nu- merous longitudinal nerve-stems | (Drepanophorus, Amphiporus) or | spread out into a uniform and comparatively thick layer (Cere- bratulus, sp.). This very effective and elaborate innervation, which | has been directly traced (6) to the | brain, whence strong nerves (gene- | rally two) enter the

proboscis, renders it exceedingly probable that the most important functions of the proboscis are of a sensi- ferous, tactile nature, a supposi- tion which is again strengthened by the fact that amongst the Rhabdoccel Turbellarians an organ which may be called the forerunner of the Nemertean proboscis has been proved (8) to be the morphological equivalent of the foremost tip of the body, which, as an organ of delicate touch, has acquired the property of folding inwards. In Nemertines the everted proboscis is retracted in the same way as the tip of a glove finger would be if it were pulled backwards by a thread situated in the axis and attached to the tip. The comparison may be car- ¢ ried still further. The // centralthread just alluded | to is represented in the \ Nemertean proboscis by ‘ that portion which is never everted, and the tip of the glove by the boundary between the

N

Pr

Fie, 3.—Anterior portion of the

body of a Nemertine. Br, brain-lobes; WV, lateral nerves; PS, proboseidian sheath; Pr, proboscis; P.o., exterior open- ing through which the probos- eis is everted. Csophagus and mouth shown by dotted lines.

Fig. 4.

Fig. 5. evertible and non-evert- pgs, 4, 5.—Proboscis with stylet, ‘ reserve”

saes, and muscular bulb of a Hoplonemer-

ible portion of the pro- s d tine. Fig. 4 retracted; fig. 5 everted.

boscis—a boundary which in the Hoplonemertini is marked by the presence of a pointed or serrated stylet. This stylet is thus situated terminally when the proboscis has reached its maximum eversion. It adds a decisively aggressive character to an organ the original significance of which, as we have seen, was tactile. This aggressive character has a different aspect in several genera which are destitute of a central stylet, but in which the surface that is turned outwards upon eversion of the proboscis is largely

provided with nematocysts, sending the urticating rods of different sizes in all directions. In others this surface is beset with thick, glandular, adhesive papille.

The comparison with the glove-finger is in so far

insufficient as the greater portion of the non-evertible half of the proboscis is also hollow and clothed by glandular walls. Only at the very hindermost end does it pass into the so-called retractor-muscle (fig. 2), which is attached to the wall of the space (proboscidian sheath) in which the proboscis moves about. This retractor-muscle, indeed, serves to pull back with great rapidity the extruded proboscis, and is aided in its action by the musculature of the head. The extrusion itself depends entirely upon contraction of the muscular walls of the space just mentioned (proboscidian sheath). As it is (1) closed on all sides, and (2) filled with a corpuscular fluid, the contractions alluded to send this fluid to impinge against the anterior portion, where the proboscis, floating in its sheath, is attached with it to the muscular tissue of the head (fig. 3). Partial extrusion lessening the resistance in this region inevitably follows, and when further con- tractions of the walls of the sheath ensue total extrusion is the consequence. It.is worthy of notice that in those Nemertines which make a very free use of their proboscis, and in which it is seen to be continually protruded and retracted, the walls of the proboscidian sheath are enor- mously muscular. On the other hand, they are much less considerably or even insignificantly so in the genera that are known to make a rather sparing use of their proboscis.

The proboscis, which is thus an eminently muscular organ, is composed of two or three, sometimes powerful, layers of muscles—one of longitudinal and one or two of circular fibres. In the posterior retractor the longitudinal fibres become united into one bundle, which, as noticed above, is inserted in the wall of the sheath. At the circular insertion of the proboscis in front of the brain the muscular fibres belonging to the anterior extremity of the body and those connected with the proboscis are very intimately interwoven, forming a strong attachment.

The proboscis broken off and expelled is generally reproduced, the posterior ribbon-like end of this reproduced portion again fusing with the walls of the

sheath (11). There is reason to suppose that, By 4 when a wound is inflicted by the central uy stylet, it is envenomed by the fluid secreted of

in the posterior proboscidian region being at

the same time expelled. A reservoir, a duct,

and a muscular bulb in the region (fig. 4) yg. ¢.—The ar-

where the stylet is attached serve for this pur- mature from : 5 : the proboscis

pose. The significance of two or more (in of Drepano-

Drepanophorus very numerous) small sacs con- P/rus.

taining so-called “reserve” stylets resembling in shape that

of the central dart is insufficiently known.

The proboscidian,.sheath, which by its transverse con- tractions serves to bring about eversion of the proboscis in the way above traced, and the muscular walls of which were similarly noticed, is attached to the musculature of the head just in front of the ganglionic commissures (fig. 3). In nearly all Nemertines it extends backwards as far as the posterior extremity, just above the anus; in Carinella it is limited to the anterior body-region. The corpuscles floating in the fluid it contains are of definite shape, and in Cerebratulus urticans they are deep red from the presence of hemoglobin. Internally the muscular layers are lined by an epithelium. In the posterior portion this epithelium in certain Schizonemertea has a more glandular appearance, and sometimes the interior cavity is obliterated by cell-proliferation in this region. Superiorly the sheath either closely adheres to the muscular body-wall, with which it may even be partly interwoven, or

it hangs freely in the connective tissue which fills the space between the intestine and the muscular body-wall.

(6) Cutaneous System.—Externally in all species a layer of ciliated cells forms the outer investment. In it are,

moreover, enclosed unicellular glands pouring their highly refracting contents, of a more or less rod-like shape, directly to the exterior. They appear to be the principal source of the mucus these animals secrete. In Schizonemertines these elements are separated by a thin homogeneous base- ment membrane (fig. 8) from the following,—that is, from a layer in which longitudinal muscular fibres are largely intermixed with tortuous glands, which by reason of their deeper situation communicate with the exterior by a much longer and generally very narrow duct. The pigment is also principally localized in this layer, although sometimes it is present even deeper down within the musculature. The passage from this tegumentary layer to the subjacent longitudinal muscular one is gradual, no membrane separating them. In Carinella, Cephalothrix, Polia, and the Hoplonemertines the two tegumentary layers with their different glandular elements are fused into one; a thick layer of connective tissue is situated beneath them (instead of between them) and keeps the entire cutaneous system more definitely separate from the muscular (figs. 45’S).

(c) Musculature and Connective Tissue.—The muscular layers by which the body-wall is constituted have been very differently and to some extent confusingly described by the successive authors on Nemertean anatomy. There is sufficient reason for this confusion. The fact is that not only have the larger subdivisions a different arrangement and even number of the muscular layers, but even within the same genus, nay, in the same species, well-marked differences occur. Increase in size appears sometimes to be accompanied by the development of a new layer of fibres, whereas a difference in the method of preparation may give to a layer which appeared homogeneous in one specimen a decidedly fibrous aspect in another. Never- theless there are three principal types under which the different modifications can be arrarfged. One of them is found in the two most

primitively organized genera, Carinella and Cephalothrix, i.e, an outer circular, a longi- tudinal, and an inner circular layer of muscular fibres

Mig? i, Fig. 8. Fig. 9.

Fics. 7-9.—The layers of the body-wall in Carinella (fig. 7), the Hoplonemertea (fig. 8), and the Schizonemertea (fig. 9). ¢, cellular tissue of the integument ; Bm, basement membrane ; circ, 1, outer circular, and Jong, longitudinal layer of muscular tissue; circ. 2, long. 1, additional circular and longitudinal layers of the same; m7, nervous layer,

(fig. 7). The second is common to all the Schizonemer- tines as well as to Polia and Valencinia, and also compre- hends three layers, of which, however, two are longitudinal, viz., the external and the internal one, there being a strong circular layer between them (fig. 9). To the third type all the Hoplonemertea correspond ; their muscular layers are only two, an external circular and an internal longi- tudinal one (fig. 8).

The Schizonemertea thus appear to have developed an extra layer of longitudinal fibres internally to those which they inherited from more primitive ancestors, whereas the Hoplonemertea are no longer in possession of the internal circular layer, but have on the contrary largely developed the external circular one, which has dwindled away in the Schizonemertea. In only one instance has the present writer met with a thin exterior circular layer in a very large specimen of Cerebratulus ; younger specimens of the same species did not show it. It is noticeable that Kefer-

stein (9) also observed four layers similarly arranged in one of the specimens of Cerebratulus which he investi- gated. The situation of the lateral nerve-stems in the different genera with respect to the muscular layers lends definite support to the interpretation of their homologies here given.

In Carinella, Cephalothrix, and Polia, as well as in all Hoplonemertines, the basement membrane of the skin already above alluded to is particularly strong and immedi- ately applied upon the muscular layers. In the Schizo- nemertines there is a layer in which the cutaneous elements are largely represented below the thin basement membrane (fig. 8), between it and the

bulk of the outer longitudinal muscles. The difference in the appearance of the base- ment membrane—sometimes wholly homogeneous, some- times eminently fibrillar—can more especially be observed in differently preserved specimens of the genus Polia.

The connective tissue of the integument and basement membrane imperceptibly merges into that which surrounds the muscular bundles as they are united into denser and definite layers, and this is especially marked in those forms (Akrostomum) where the density of the muscular body- wall has considerably diminished, and the connective tissue has thus become much more prominent. It can then at the same time be observed, too, that the compact mass of connective tissue ("reticulum," Barrois) which lies between the muscular body-wall and the intestine (1) is directly continuous with that in which the muscular layers are imbedded. Nuclei are everywhere present. The omni- presence of this connective tissue excludes the idea of any true body cavity in Nemertines.

In Polia the connective tissue énclosed in the external muscular layer is eminently vacuolar,—all the interme- diate stages between such cells in which the vacuole pre- dominates and the nucleus is peripheral and those in which the granular protoplasm still entirely fills them being moreover present,

In addition to the musculature of the proboscis and proboscidian sheath, longitudinal muscular fibres are found in the walls of the cesophagus, whilst transverse ones are numerous and united into vertical dissepiments between the successive intestinal ceca, thus bringing about a very regular internal metamerization (4). The genital products develop in intermediate spaces similarly limited by these dissepiments and alternating with the digestive caeca.

(2) Nervous System and Sense Organs. —The nervous system of Nemertines presents several interesting peculiarities. As central organs we have to note the brain-lobes and the longitudinal lateral cords which form one continuous unsegmented mass of fibrous aud cellular nerve-tissue. The fibrous nerve-tissue is more dense in the higher differentiated, more loose and spongy in the lower organized forms ; the cellular nerve-tissue is

similarly less compact in the forms that are at the base of the + scale. No ganglionic swellings: © whatever occur in the course of €0 ne

the longitudinal cords. The wl, wl, brain must be looked upon as cont

the anterior thickening of these

cords, and at the same time as pe. pp. t-

the spot where the two halves F ”

rs ap one a nage shear Fies. oh ti and eg lleyii of intercommunicate. This is a Schizonemertine (fig. 10) and a Hoplo- brought about by a double com- nemertine (fig. 11). eo, extcrior opening; missure, of which the ventral u.l., superior brain-lobe; p.l., posterior portion is considerably thicker >rain- lobe.

than the dorsal, and which, together with the brain-lobes, consti- tutes a ring through which both proboscis and proboscidian sheath pass. The brain- lobes are generally four in number, a ventral and a dorsal pair, respectively united together by the above-mentioned commissures, and moreover anteriorly interfusing with cach other, right and left. In Carinella this separation into lobes of the anterior thickenings of the cords has not yet. commenced, the ven- tral commissure at the same time being extremely bulky. There is great probability that the central stems, together with the brain,

must be looked upon as local longitudinal accumulations of nervous tissue in what was in more primitive ancestors a less highly dif- ferentiated nervous plexus, situated in the body-wall in a similar way to that which still is found in the less highly organized Ceelenterates. . Such a nervous plexus indeed occurs in the body- wall of all Schizonemertines (7), sometimes even as a compara- tively thick layer, situated, as are the nerve stems, between the external longitudinal and the circular muscles (fig. 9). In Cari- nella, where the longitudinal nerve-stems are situated exteriorly to the muscular layers, this plexus, although present, is much less , dense, and can

more fitly be compared to a network with wide meshes. In both cases it can be shown to be in immediate continuity with the py coating of nerve-cells forming part of the longitudinal cords. It stretches forward as far as the brain,

LN. 88 and in Carinella is Fig, 12.—The brain of a Nemertine, with its lobes and

commissures. §.¥., nerves to sensory apparatus; P.N., nerves for proboscis; vag, nerves for c@so- phagus; Z.W., lateral nerve stems,

again continued in front of it, whereas in the Schizonemer- tines the innervation of the anterior extremity of the head, in front of the brain, takes the form of more definite and less numer- ous branching stems. ‘The presence of this plexus in connexion with the central stems, sending out nervous filaments amongst the muscles, explains the absence, both in Paleo- and Schizo- nemertines, of separate and distinct peripheral nerve stems spring- ing from the central stems innervating the different organs and body-regions, the only exceptions being the nerves for the pro- boscis, those for the sense organs in the head, and the strong nerve pair (n. vagus) for the esophagus. At the same time it renders more intelligible the extreme sensitivcness of the body- wall of the Nemertines, a local and instantaneous irritation often resulting in spasmodic rupture of the animal at the point touched. r=

In the Hoplonemertea, where the longitudinal stems lie inside the muscular body-wall, definite and metamerically placed nerve branches spring from them and divide dichotomously in the differeut tissues they innervate. A definite plexus can here no longer be traced. In certain Hoplonemertiues the lateral stems have been noticed to unite posteriorly by a terminal commissure, situated above the anus, the whole of the central nervous system being iu this way virtually situated above the intestine. In others there is an approximation of the lateral stems towards the median ventral line (Drepanophorus); in a genus of Schizonemertines (Langia), on the other hand, an arrangement occurs by which the longitudinal stems are no longer lateral, but have more or less approached each other dorsally (6).

In addition to the nerves starting from the brain-lobes just now especially mentioned, there is a double apparatus which can hardly be treated of in conjunction with the sense organs, because its sensory functions have not been sufficiently made out, and which will therefore rather be considered along with the brain and central nervous system. This apparatus is usually known under the name of the lateral organs. To it belong (a) superficial grooves or deeper slits situated on the integument near the tip of the head, (2) nerve lobes in immediate connexion with the nervous tissue of the brain, and © ciliated ducts penetrating into the latter and communicating with the former. Embryology shows that originally these different parts are separately started, and only ultimately become united into one. ‘T’wo lateral outgrowths of the foremost portion of the cesophagus, afterwards becoming constricted off, as well as two ingrowths from the epiblast, contribute towards its formation, at least as far as both Hoplo- and Schizonemertines are concerned. As to the Palwonemertea, their embryology has not yet been studied, and in the most primitive genus, Carinella, we do not find any lateral organs answering to the description above given. What wo do find is a slight transverse furrow on each side of the head, close to the tip, but the most careful examination of sections made through the tissues of the head and brain shows the absence of any further apparatus comparable to that described above. Only in one species, Carinella inexpectata, a step in advance has been made, in so far as in connexion with the furrow just mentioned, which is here also somewhat more complicated in its arrangement, a ciliated tube leads into the brain, there to end blindly amidst the nerve- cells. No other intermediate stages have as yet been noticed between this arrangement and that of the Schizonemertea, in which a separate posterior brain-lobe receives a similar ciliated canal, and in which the esophageal outgrowths have made their appearance and are coalesced with the nerve-tissue in the organ of the adult

animal, The histological elements of this portion remain distinct both by transmitted light and in actual sections.

These posterior brain-lobes, which in all Schizonemertines are in direct continuity of tissue with the upper pair of principal lobes, cease to have this

intimate connexion in the Hoplonemertea ; and, although still constituted of (1) a ciliated duct, opening out exter- nally, (2) nervous tissue surrounding it, and (8) histological ele. ments distinctly different from the nervous, and most probably directly derived from the esophageal outgrowths, they are never- theless here no longer constantly situated behind the upper brain-lobes and directly connected with them, but are found sometimes behind, sometimes beside, and sometimes before the brain-lobes. Furthermore, they are here severed from the principal lobes and connected with them by one or more rather thick strings of nerve- fibres. In some cases, especially when the lobes lie before the brain, their distance from it, as well as the length of these nervous eon- nexions, has considerably increased.

With the significance of these parts we are still insufficiently acquainted. There appear to be analogous organs amongst Platyelminthes, but a careful comparative study is wanted. A partial comparison has been hazarded (8) with the anterior cesophageal outgrowths in Balanoglossus and Amphioxus, and for the Schizonemertines arguments have been adduced (6) to prove that here they have the physiological significance of a special respiratory apparatus for the central nervous tissue, which in all these forms is strongly charged with hemoglobin. The hemoglobin would, by its pre-eminent properties of fixing oxygen, serve to fur- nish the nerve system, which more than any other requires a constant supply, with the necessary oxygen. Such could hardly be obtained in any other way by those worms that have no special respiratory apparatus or delicately ramifying blood-vessels, and that live in mud and under stones, where the natural supply of freshly oxygenated sea-water is practically limited. Whethcr in the Hoplo-nemertines, where the blood fluid is often provided with hemo-globiniferous disks, the chief functions of the side organs may not rather be a sensory one must be further investigated.

The exterior opening of the duct has been several times alluded to. In the Bib plonsensoriiiios it is generally situated towards the middle of a lateral transverse groove on either side of the head, as was noticed for Carinella, and as is also present in fPolia. Generally a row of shorter grooves perpendicular to the first, aud similarly provided with strong cilia, enlarges the surface of these furrows (fig. 14). In Valeneinia there is nothing but a circular opening without furrow. In all Schizonemertines there is on each

side of the head a longitudinal slit of varying 7. : length but ennely considerable depth, Fig. 12, Bige ls. in the bottom of which the dark red brain Fics. 18, eit views is very plainly visiblo by transparency. ke a ‘fg. age These slits are continued into the ciliated ongitudinal slit, and of duct, being at the same time themsclves 4 Hoplonemertine (fig. 14) very strongly eiliated. In life they are iy: So reree Vie ate commonly rhythmically opened and shut ; by a wavy movement. They are the head slits (cephalic fissures, ‘* Kopfspalten”’) so characteristic of this subdivision (figs. 10 and 13).

With respect to the sense organs of the Nemertines, we find that eyes are of rather constant occurrence, although many Schizonemer- tines living in the mud appear to be blind. The more highly organized species have often very numerous eyes (Amphiporus, Drepanophorus), which are provided with a spherical refracting anterior portion, with a cellular ‘‘ vitreous body,” with a layer of delicate radially arranged rods, with an outer sheath of dark pigment, and with a separate nerve-twig each, springing from a common or double pair of branches which leave the brain as n. optiet, for the innervation of the eyes. Besides these more highly differentiated organs of vision, more primitive eyes are present in others down to simple stellate pigment specks without any refracting apparatus. :

Organs of hearing in the form of capsules containing otoliths have only been very rarely observed, apparently only in Hoplonemertea.

As to the organ of touch, the great sensitiveness of the body has already been noticed, as well as the probable primary significance of the proboscis. Small tufts of tactile hairs or papille are some- times observed in small number at the tip of the head (11); some- times longer hairs, apparently rather stiff, are seen on the surface, very sparingly distributed between the cilia, and hitherto only in a very limited number of small specimens. They may perhaps be considered as sensory. ; ; \

(e) Digestive System.—The anterior openiug, the mouth, is situated ventrally, close to the tip of the head and in front of the brain in the Hoplonemertea, somewhat more backward and behind the brain in the other Nemertines. In most Schizonemertines it is found to be an elongated slit with corrugated borders; in the

Hoploncmertines it is smaller and rounded ; in Malacobdella and Akrostomum it, moreover, serves for the extrusion of the proboscis, which emerges by a separate dorsal opening just inside the mouth. The cesophagus is the anterior portion of the digestive canal; its walls are folded longitudinally, comparatively thick, and provided with longitudinal muscular fibres, ‘Two layers are specially obvious in its walls,—the inner layer bordering the lu- men being composed of smaller ciliated cells, the outer thicker one containing numerous granular cells and hav- ing a more glandular character. Outside tho wall of the cesophagus a vascular space has been detected (11) which is in direct continuity with the longitudinal blood-vessels. In cer- tain cases, however, the walls of the cesophagus appear to be very closely applied to the muscular body-wall, and this vas- cular space thereby con- siderably reduced.

The posterior portion of the intestine is speci- ally characterized by the appearance of the intes- tinal diverticula hori- zontally and symmetric- ally placed right and left and opposite to each other. Sometimes this re- gion, into which the ceso- phagus leads, stretches forwards under the cesophagus (Hoplone- mertines) for a certain distance, anteriorly ter- minating by a cul-de- sac. Cases of asym- metry or irregularity in the arrangement of the ceca, though sometimes occurring, are not nor- mal. At the tip of the

Fig. 17. tail, where the growth Fras, 15-17.—Diagrammatic sections to show dis-

position of internal organs in Carinella (Palxo- nemertea), fig. 15, Schizonemertea, fig. 16, and Hoplonemertea,’ fig.‘17. C, cellular portion of integument; B, basement membrane; A, circu- lar muscular layer; A’, longitudinal do.; A”, second circular (in Carinella); A’”’, second longi- tudinal (in Schizonemertea); N, nervous layer ; LN, lateral nerves; PS, cavity of proboscidian sheath (the sheath itself of varying thickness); P, proboscis; J, intestine; ZBv, lateral blood- vessel; D&Bv, dorsal do.; C7, connective tissue.

of the animal takes place, the ceca are al- ways cminently regular. So they are throughout the whole body in most of the Hoplonemertines. In Carinella they are generally deficient and the intestine straight ; in young specimens of this species, however, they occur, though less regular and more in the form of incipient foldings by which the digestive surface is increased. The inner surface of the intestinal ceca is ciliated, the ceca themselves are sometimes—especially in the hindermost portion of the body—of a considerably smaller lumen than the intermediate genital spaces; sometimes, however, the reverse is the case, and in both cases it is the smaller lumen that appears enclosed between and suspended by the transverse fibres constituting the muscular dissepiments above mentioned.

The anus is situated terminally, the muscular body-wall through which the intestine must find its way outwards probably acting in this region the part of a sphincter. The lateral nerve stems mostly terminate on both sides in closest proximity to the anus ; in certain species, however, they interfuse by a transverse connexion above the anus, The longitudinal blood-vessels do the samc. The question has been raised whether the regular intestinal ceca of Nemertines might not be compared with those intestinal diverticula of the embryo Amphioxus which ultimately become the mesoblastic somites of the adult (8). This view would be a further extension of the views concerning the ccelom first propounded by Huzley.

(f) Circulatory Apparatus.—This consists of three longitudinal trunks, a median and two lateral ones. They are in direct con- nexion with each other both at the posterior and at the anterior end of the body. At the posterior end they communicate together by a T-shaped connexion ina simple and uniform way. Anteriorly there is a certain amount of diffcrence in the arrangement. Whereas in the Hoplonemertines an arrangement prevails as represented in

NEMERTINES

fig. 18, the lateral stems in the Schizonemertines, while entirely uniform all through the posterior portion of the body, no longer individually exist in the cesophageal region, but

here dissolve themselves into a network of vascu-

lar spaces surrounding this portion of the di-

gestive tract (11). The median dorsal vessel,

however, remains distinct, but instead of con-

tinuing its course beneath the proboscidian

sheath it is first enclosed by the ventral muscu-

lature of this organ, and still farther forwards

it even bulges out longitudinally into the cavity

of the sheath. Anteriorly it finally communi-

cates with the lacune just mentioned, which ; surround the cesophagus, bathe the posterior i een a lobes of the brain, pass through the nerve ring paratus in auntie together with the proboscidian sheath, and are rior body-region of generally continued in front of the brain as a * Woplonemertine. lacunar space in the muscular tissue, one on each side.

Special mention must be made of the delicate transverse vessels regularly connecting the longitudinal and the lateral ones. They are metamerically placed, and belong to the same metamer as the digestive cceca, thus alternating with the generative sacs. The blood fluid does not flow in any definite dircction ; its movements are largely influenced by those of the muscular body-wall. It is colourless, and contains definite corpuscles, which are round or elliptical, and in many Hoplonemertines are coloured red by hemo- globin, being colourless in other species. The circulatory system of Carinella is considerably different, being more lacunar and less restricted to definite vascular channels. Two lateral longitudinal lacune form, so to say, the forerunners of the lateral vessels. A median longitudinal vessel and transverse connecting trunks have not as yet been detected. There are large lacune in the head in front of the ganglia.

(9) Nephridia.—Although these organs were already very well known to Max Schultze (14), their presence in Nemertines was repeatedly and

seriously disputed until Von Kennel (10) definitely proved their existence and gave details concerning their histology. With the exception of a few genera where they have not as yet been discovered (Carinella), one pair of nephridia appears to be very generally present. They essentially consist of a complex coiled tube, one on each side of the cesophagus (fig. 1), communicating with the exterior by a duct piercing the body-wall. The two openings of the nephridia are situated sometimes more towards the ventral, at other times more towards the dorsal side. Even in the larger Schizonemertines these pores are only a few millimetres behind the mouth region. Internal funnel-shaped openings, although sought for, have as yet not been detected. The coiled tubes extend both forwards and backwards of the cxternal opening, by far the greater portion being situated backwards. The anterior coils reach forwards till in the immediate vicinity of the posterior brain-lobes. The coils are tubiform, with an internal lumen, only one layer of rather large cells constituting the walls. These cells are ciliated ; in some transparent species the internal ciliary move- ment can be observed during life. In transverse sections the nephridia can be shown to be generally situated in the region limited by (1) the proboscidian sheath, (2) the upper wall of the intestine, (3) the muscular body-wall. No trace of nephridia is found posterior to the cesophagus.

(h) Generative System.—In the Nemertines the sexes are separate, with only very few exceptions (12) (Tetrastemma hermaphroditica, Marion). The generative products are contained in separate pouches placed metamerically in the way noticed above in treating of the digestive system. They are conveyed outwards along narrow canals, one pair for each metamer piercing the muscular body-wall, and visible on the outside in mature individuals as minute light- coloured specks, The ova and spermatozoa, when mature, present no peculiarities. As the ova are in many species deposited in a gelatinous tube secreted by the body-walls, in which they are arranged (three or more together) in flask-shaped cavities, impreg- nation must probably take place either before or at the very monent of their being deposited. The exact mode has not yet been noticed. Another point not yet sufficiently settled is the oogenesis in Nemertines. In several cases the ova appear to originate directly as the lining of the generative pouches, but the exact part which the mesoblastic connective tissue plays, both with regard

to these pouches and to the generative products themselves, remains yet to be settled.

Prosorhochmus claparedii is a viviparous form.

DEVELOPMENT.—The embryology of the Nemertines offers Develop- Our knowledge of ment.

some very remarkable peculiarities. the development of the most primitive forms is very scanty. Of that of Carinella absolutely nothing is known. On Cephalothriz we have observations, in certain respects con- tradictory. Both Schizo- and Hoplonemertea have been more exhaustively studied, the first, as was noticed above,

being characterized by peculiar larval forms, the second developing without metamorphosis.

The larva of Cerebratulus is called the pilidium. In exterior shape it resembles a helmet with spike and ear- lobes, the spike being a strong and long flagellum or a tuft of long cilia, the ear-lobes lateral ciliated appendages (fig. 19). It encloses the pri- mitive alimentary tract. Two pairs of invaginations of the ~z skin, which originally are % called the prostomial and meta- am ¢ stomial disks, grow round the *” intestine, finally fuse together, and form the skin and muscu- | cee POH Af tho Tabara’ ig rounnieve. 5, bindlet Nemertine, which afterwards © citia or flagellum; o, cesophagus; becomes ciliated, frees itself sh stomarh: ou. ae from the pilidium investment, amnion; pr.d., prostomial disk; and develops into the adult ?%%» metastomial disk. worm without further metamorphosis (2, 13).

The eggs of these species are not enveloped by such massive gelatinous strings as are those of the genus Lineus. In the latter we find the young Nemertines crawling about after a period of from six to eight weeks, and probably feeding upon a portion of this gelatinous substance, which is found to diminish in bulk. In accordance with these more sedentary habits during the first phases of life, the characteristic pilidium larva, which is so

eminently adapted for a pelagic existence, appears to have been reduced to a close-fitting exterior layer of cells, which is stripped off after the definite body-wall of the Nemertine has similarly originated out of four ingrowths from the primary epiblast. To this reduced and sedentary pilidium the name of “larva of Desor” has been given (1).

In the Hoplonemertea, as far as they have been investi- gated, a direct development without metamorphosis has been observed. It appears probable that this is only a further simplification of the more complicated metamor- phosis described above.

As to the development of the different organs, there is still much that remains doubtful. The hypoblast in some forms originates by invagination, in others by delamina- tion. The proboscis is an invagination from the epiblast ; the proboscidian sheath appears in the mesoblast, but is perhaps originally derived from the hypoblast. The origin of the lateral organs has already been noticed ; that of the nerve system is essentially epiblastic.

Literature.—(1) J. Barrois, ‘‘ Recherches sur l’embryologie des Némertes,” Annales des Sc. Naturelles, vi., 1877 ; (2) O. Butschli, ‘‘Kinige Bemerkungen zur Metamorphose des Pilidium,” Archiv Siir Naturgeschichte, 1873 ; (3) L. von Graff, Monographie der Tur- bellarien, 1882; (4) A. A. W. Hubrecht, “ Untersuchungen iiber Nemertinen a. d. Golf von Neapel,” Niederl. Archiv fiir Zoologie, li. ; (5) Id., “The Genera of European Nemerteans critically revised, ” Notes from the Leyden Musewm, 1879; (6) Id., ‘‘ Zur Anatomie u. Physiologie d. Nervensystems d. Nemertinen,” Verh. Kon. Akad. v. Wetensch., Amsterdam, 1880, vol. xx.; (7) Id., ‘‘The Peripheral Nervous System of the Paleo- and Schizonemertini, one of the layers of the body-wall,” Quart. Journal of Micr. Science, vol. xx.; (8) Id., ‘On the Ancestral Forms of the Chordata,” Jd., July 1883 ; (9) W. Keferstein, ‘‘ Untersuchungen tiber niedere Seethiere,” Zeitschr. J. wissensch. Zool., vol. xii., 1863 ; (10) J. von Kennel, ** Beitrage zur Kenntniss der Nemertinen,” Arbeiten a. d. zool.-zoot. Instit., i, Wiirzburg, 1878; (11) W. C. MacIntosh, 4 Monograph of British Annelida: I. Nemerteans, Ray Society, 1873-74 ; (12) A. F, Marion, “Recherches sur les animaux inférieurs du Golfe de Marseille,” Ann. des Sc. Nat., 1873; (18) E. Metschnikoff, ‘‘Studien iiber die Entwickelung der Echinodermen und

Nemertinen," Mém. de PAcad. Imp. de St. Petersb., xiv., 1869; (14) Max Schultze, Beitrige zur Naturgeschichte der Turbellarien, Greifswald, 1851, and Zeitschr. fiir wissensch. Zool., iv., 1852. (A. A. W. H.)

NEMESIANUS, a Roman poet who flourished about 283 B.c. His full name was Marcus Aurelius Nemesianus Olympius, and he is called a Carthaginian. He was an admired and popular poet at the court of the Roman emperor Carus. He wrote poems on the arts of fishing and hunting, but only a fragment of the latter, 325 hexameter lines, has been preserved. It is neatly ex- pressed in good Latin. Some other extant fragments are ascribed without good authority to this poet.

LEditio princeps, Venice, 1534. The Cynegetica of Gratius Faliscus and Nemesianus are united in the edition of R. Stern (Halle, 1832), — added to M. Haupt's edition of Ovid's Halieutica (Leipsic,

NEMESIS occasionally appears as a Greek goddess. At Rhamnus in Attica she had a famous temple, and there was an Attic legend that Helen was the daughter of Nemesis. The Attic goddess was perhaps a form of Aphrodite, who sometimes bears the epithet Nemesis. In Smyrna and the neighbouring Temnos we find a pair of goddesses of the name. They are represented on coins of these cities, and it is said that they appeared in a dream to Alexander the Great, bidding him rebuild Smyrna. They are certainly connected with the cultus of Meter Sipylene or Cybele, the tutelary goddess of Smyrna and all the country, round Mount Sipylus. In general Nemesis appears as a personification of that righteous indignation which punishes the arrogant and tyrannical abuse of pro- sperity. Often the idea is carried much further than this; in Herodotus especially the divine Nemesis is offended by all great prosperity among men, quite irrespective of the moral guilt of the persons concerned.

NEMESIUS, a Christian philosopher, author of a treatise On Human Nature, was, according to the title of his book, bishop of Emesa (in Syria); of his life nothing further is known, and even his date is uncertain, but most probably he flourished towards the close of the 4th century. Theologically, and especially as regards his christology, he is usually claimed by the orthodox; but his views as to the pre-existence of the soul and a modified metempsy- chosis are more Platonic than catholic, and his leaning towards

the doctrine of the world's eternity is difficult to reconcile with what, afterwards at least, came to be the teaching of the church. One or two of his physiological expositions have occasionally been quoted, very irrelevantly, to show that Harvey's discovery of the circulation of the blood had been anticipated at that early age. Nemesius is frequently quoted by later writers of the Eastern Church, such as Joh. Damascenus. His writings have sometimes been attributed to Gregory of Nyssa. The editio princeps of the wepi Piccws avOpHrov appeared at Antwerp in 1565; the work has more than once been re-edited and translated.

NENAGH, a market and assize town of county Tipperary, province of Munster, Ireland, is finely situated in a rich though hilly country near the river Nenagh, 29 miles north of Tipperary and 95 south-west of Dublin. The principal buildings are the court-house, the barracks, and the market-house. Of the old castle, "Nenagh Round," dating from the time of King John, there still exists the circular donjon or keep. There are no remains of the hospital founded in 1200 for Austin canons, nor of the Franciscan friary, founded in the reign of Henry III. and one of the richest religious houses in Ireland. The town depends chiefly on agriculture, and there is an important butter and corn market. The population in 1871 was 5696, and in 1881 it was 5422.

Nenagh was one of the ancient manors of the Butlers, who received for it the grant of a fair from Henry VIII. In 1550 the town and friary were burned by O'Carroll. In 1641 the town was taken by Owen Roe O'Nial, but shortly afterwards it was recaptured

by Lord Inchiquin. It surrendered to Ireton in 1651, and was burned by Sarsfield in 1688.

doz

NENNIUS, the supposed author of a [storia Britonum, which, commencing with a description of Britain, gives the mythical origin of the Britons and Scots and an account of the Roman occupation and of the reign of Vortigern, describes the successive settlements of the Saxons, and concludes with a narrative of the twelve battles in which King Arthur, in the 6th century, is said to have defeated the Saxons. The work is evidently the

production of a Cymric or ancient Welsh writer; but the claim of Nennius to be regarded as the author is derived solely from two prologues, where he is described as the disciple of one Elvodugus or Elbotus, whom we may perhaps identify with Elbodus, bishop of North Wales, who died in 809, and whose notable innovation of the introduction of the Roman cycle in keeping Easter ‘“‘ Nennius” appears to have followed. Of the above prologues (which differ considerably) one is preserved in the MS. in the cathedral library at Durham, and in this it is stated that the History was written in the year 858, which year is also spoken of as being the twenty-fourth of the reign of Mervin, king of the Britons. But in the work itself (chap. xvi.) it is stated that between the arrival of the Saxons (assigned in chap. xxxi. to the year 447) and the fourth year of the reign of Mervin, four hundred and twenty-nine years elapsed. Thus the twenty-fourth year of Mervin becomes coincident with the year 896, or thirty-eight years later than the date assigned by the prologue. This discrepancy, taken in con- junction with the following facts, viz., that both the above prologues are much superior in style and diction to the barbarous Latin of the Historia itself, that the MSS. prior to the 13th century are either altogether silent respecting the authorship or ascribe it to Gildas, and that Henry of Huntingdon, in his Historia Anglorum (chap. Xviil.), after quoting verbatim the account above referred to of King Arthur’s battles, expressly speaks of it as taken from Gildas,—has led the most competent critics to con- clude that the real author of the W/istoria Britonum must be looked upon as unknown. The original text is likewise a matter of doubt, the work having evidently been sub- jected to several recensions, in which the earliest version can no longer be traced.

Asan historical composition the Historia Britonum has but little value. M. de la Borderie lays it down as a canon that, when the work is found to contain an unsupported statement, which at the same time does not clash with the authority of Bede, Gildas, or any other received authority, such statement may, after due examination, be acceptcd; but if at variance with those autho- rities, it should be rejected. Much of the narrative, however, is evidently the offspring of invention and imagination; while the Cymric superstition respecting the nrysterious importance attaching to the number three and its multiples induces the writer habitually to represent the more striking events and phenomena as occurring in a succession of triads. The

peculiar value of the Historia con- sists in the illustration it affords of the Welsh mythology and those traditions of the race which took the place of history; it is in fact the earliest collection of those British legends whieh gave birth to the romances of Brut, Merlin, King Arthur, and the whole cyele of epics associated with the Knights of the Round Table. This element is discussed at some length by San Marte (A. Schulz) in the preface to his edition of Gildas and Nennius (Berlin, 1844). The best edition of the text is that edited by the Rev. Joseph Steven- son for the English Historieal Society (1838). The most recent criticism on both the work and the manuseript sources will be found in L' Historia Britonum, by M. de la Borderie (Paris, 1883).

NEOPHYTE (vedduros, "newly planted") was the designation applied to newly baptized persons in the ancient church, These usually wore the white garments which they received at their admission to the church (see Baptism, vol. i. p. 351) during the whole of the following week, but the application of the name did not necessarily cease at the close of that period. A special employment of the word was to denote one who, not having duly passed through the inferior grades, was in view of 1 Tim. iti. 6 considered canonically unfit to be consecrated a bishop.

NEN—NEO

NEOPLATONISM.—WHistorical Position and Signifi- cance,——The political history of the ancient world closes with the formation, under Diocletian and Constantine, of a universal state bearing the cast of Oriental as well as Greeco-Roman civilization. The history of ancient philo- sophy ends in like manner with a universal philosophy which appropriated elements of almost all the earlier systems, and worked up the results of Eastern and Western culture. And, just as the Byzantine Roman empire was at once the supreme effort of the old world and the outcome of its exhaustion, so Neoplatonism is in one aspect the consummation, in another the collapse, of ancient philosophy. Never before in Greek or Roman speculation had the consciousness of man's dignity and superiority to nature found such adequate expression; and never before had real science and pure knowledge been so undervalued and despised by the leaders of culture as they were by the Neoplatonists. Judged from the stand- point of pure

science, or the empirical investigation of the universe, philosophy passed its meridian in Plato and Aristotle, declined in the post-Aristotelian systems, and set in the darkness of Neoplatonism. But, from the religious and moral point of view, it must be affirmed that the ethical “mood” which Neoplatonism endeavoured to create and maintain is the highest and purest ever reached by antiquity. That this attainment should have been made at the expense of science was inevitable. On the level of the polytheistic nature-religions physical science must either subjugate and destroy religion, or be sub- jugated and destroyed by it. Religion and morality, how- ever, are found to be the stronger forces ; and philosophy, standing midway between these and physical science, may waver for a little, but ultimately it yields to the greater power. The conflict with empirical knowledge is ren- dered inevitable by the fact that within the sphere of nature-religion the ethical is itself, without any misgiving, conceived as a higher order of the natural. The higher ““physies”—for as such we must here regard religious ethics—must dislodge the lower, in order to maintain its own ground. Philosophy must cease to exist as science, in order that man’s assertion of the supernatural value of his person and his life may receive full recognition.

It is a proof of the strength of the moral instincts of mankind that the only phase of culture which we can survey in all its stages from beginning to end culminated, not in materialism, but in the boldest idealism. This idealism, however, is also in its way a mark of intellectual bankruptcy. Contempt for reason and science leads in the end to barbarism,—its necessary consequence being the

rudest superstition, and sheer helplessness in the presence —

of all sorts of delusion. As a matter of fact, barbarism did break out after the flower had fallen from Neoplatonism. The philosophers themselves, no doubt, still lived on the knowledge they repudiated ; but the masses were trained to a superstition with which the Christian church, as the executor of Neoplatonism, had to reckon and contend. By a fortunate coincidence, at the very moment when this bankruptcy of the old culture—its reversion to barbarism —must have become apparent, the stage of history was occupied by barbaric peoples, with whom the work of the past thousand years went for nothing. This has obscured the fact, which is nevertheless obvious

enough to a keener scrutiny, that the inner history of antiquity, ending as it did in despair of this world, must in any event have seen a recurrence of barbarism. The present world was a thing that men would neither enjoy nor master nor study. A new world was discovered, for the sake of which every-thing else was abandoned; to make sure of that world insight and intelligence were freely sacrificed ; and, in the light that streamed from beyond, the absurdities of the

present became wisdom, and its wisdom became foolish- ness.

Such is Neoplatonism. The pre-Socratic philosophy took its stand on natural science, to the exclusion of ethics and religion. The systems of Plato and Aristotle sought to adjust the rival claims of physics and ethics (although the supremacy of the latter was already acknowledged) ; but the popular religions were thrown overboard. The post-Aristotelian philosophy in all its branches makes withdrawal from the objective world its starting point. It might seem, indeed, that Stoicism indicates a falling off from Plato and Aristotle towards materialism, but the ethical dualism, which was the ruling tendency of the Stoa, could not long endure its materialistic physics, and took refuge in the metaphysical dualism of the Platonists. But this originated no permanent philosophical creation. From one-sided Platonism issued the various forms of scepticism, the attempt to undermine the trustworthiness of empirical knowledge. Neoplatonism, coming last, has borrowed something from all the schools. First, it stands in the line of post-Aristotelian systems ; it is, in fact, as a subjective philosophy, their logical completion. Secondly, it is founded on scepticism; for it has neither interest in, nor reliance upon, empirical knowledge. Thirdly, it can justly claim the honour of Plato's name, since it expressly goes back to him for its metaphysics, directly combating those of the Stoa. Yet even on this point it has learned something from the Stoics; the Neoplatonic conception of the action of the Deity on the world and of the essence and origin of matter can only be explained by reference to the dynamic pantheism of the Stoa. Fourthly, the study of Aristotle also exercised an influence on Neoplatonism. This appears, not only in its philosophical method, but also —though less prominently—in its meta- physic. And, fifthly, Neoplatonism

adopted the ethics of Stoicism; although it was found necessary to supplement them by a still higher conception of the functions of the spirit.

Thus, with the exception of Epicureanism—which was always treated as the mortal enemy of Neoplatonism— there is no outstanding earlier system which did not con- tribute something to the new philosophy. And yet Neoplatonism cannot be described as an eclectic system, in the ordinary sense of the word. For, in the first place, it is dominated by one all-pervading interest—the reli- gious; and in the second place, it has introduced a new first principle into philosophy, viz. the supra-rational, that which lies beyond reason and beyond reality. This principle is not to be identified with the "idea" of Plato or the "form" of Aristotle. For, as Zeller rightly says, "in Plato and Aristotle the distinction of the sensible from the intelligible is the strongest affirmation of the validity of the thinking process. It is only sense percep- tion, and the existence perceived by the senses, whose relative unreality is presupposed ; of a higher region of spiritual life, lying beyond the notion and beyond thought, there is no hint. In Neoplatonism, on the contrary, it is precisely this 'supra-rational' which is held to be the final goal of all effort and the ultimate ground of all being. Rational cognition is only an intermediate stage between sense perception and supra-rational intuition ; the forms of the intellect are not the highest and ultimate reality, but only the channels through which the activity of the formless primeval being flows into the world. This theory, therefore, proceeds, not merely on the denial of the reality of sensible existence and sensible presentations, but upon absolute doubt—a straining after something behind the sum total of reality. The highest intelligible is not that which constitutes the actual contents of reason, but simply what man postulates and reaches after as the

unknowable ground of his thought." Neoplatonism perceived that neither sense perception nor rational cognition is a sufficient basis or justification for religious ethics; consequently it broke away from rationalistic ethics as decidedly as from utilitarian morality. But, just because it renounced perception and reason, it had to find out a new world and a new spiritual function, in order first to establish the existence of what it desiderated, and

then to realize and describe what it had proved to exist. Man, however, cannot add to his psychological endow- ment. He is hemmed in by walls of iron; and, if he will not allow his thought to be determined by experience, he falls a victim to his imagination. In other words, thought, which will not stop, takes to mythology ; and in the place of reason we have superstition. A dumb astonishment in the presence of the incomprehensible passes for the highest aim of mental activity; arti- ficially excited ecstasies are prized above all the conscious acts of the spirit. Still, as we cannot allow every fancy of the subjective reason to assert itself, we require some new and potent principle to keep the imagination within bounds. This is found in the authority of a sound tradi- tion. Such authority must be superhuman, otherwise it can have no claim on our respect; it must, therefore, be divine. The highest sphere of knowledge—the supra- rational—as well as the very possibility of knowledge, must depend on divine communications, —that is, on revelations. In one word, philosophy as represented by Neoplatonism, its sole interest being a religious interest, and its highest object the supra-rational, must be a philosophy of revela- tion. This is not a prominent feature in Plotinus or his immediate disciples, who still exhibit full confidence in the subjective presuppositions of their philosophy. But the later adherents of the school did not possess this confidence ;! they based their philosophy on revelations of the Deity, and they found these in the religious traditions and rites of all nations. The Stoics had taught them to overstep the political boundaries of states and nationalities, and rise from the Hellenic to a universal human consciousness. Through all history the spirit of God has breathed ; everywhere we discover the traces of His revelation. The older any religious tradition or mode of worship is the more venerable is it, the richer in divine ideas. Hence the ancient religions of the East had a peculiar interest for the Neoplatonist. In the interpre- tation of myths Neoplatonism followed the allegorical method, as practised especially by the Stoa; but the importance it attached to the spiritualized myths was unknown to the Stoic philosophers. The latter inter- preted the myths and were done with them; the later Neoplatonists treated them as the proper material and the secure foundation of philosophy. Neoplatonism claimed to be not merely the absolute philosophy, the keystone of all previous systems, but also the absolute religion, reinvigorating and transforming all previous religions. lit contemplated a restoration of all the religions of antiquity, by allowing each to retain its traditional forms, and at

the same time making each a vehicle for the religious attitude and the religious truth embraced in Neoplatonism ; while every form of ritual was to become a stepping-stone to a high morality worthy of mankind. In short, Neoplatonism seizes on the aspiration of the human soul after a higher life, and treats this psychological fact as the key to the interpretation of the universe. Hence the existing religions, after being refined and spiritualized, were made the basis of philosophy. ee

1 Porphyry wrote a book, wep) rijs é« Aoylav Pirocopias, but this was before he became a pupil of Plotinus; as a philosopher he was independent of the Adyza.

Neoplatonism thus represents a stage in the history of religion; indeed this is precisely where its historical importance lies. In the progress of science and enlighten- ment it has no positive significance, except as a necessary transition which the race had to make in order to get rid of nature-religion, and that undervaluing of the spiritual life which formed an insuperable obstacle to the advance of human knowledge. Neoplatonism, however, failed as signally in its religious enterprise as it did in its philoso- phical. While seeking to perfect ancient philosophy, it really extinguished it; and in like manner its attempted reconstruction of ancient religions only resulted in their destruction. For in requiring these religions to impart certain prescribed religious truths, and to inculcate the highest moral tone, it burdened them with problems to which they were unequal, and under whose weight they were crushed. And further, by inviting them to loosen, though not exactly to dissolve, their political allegiance— the very thing that gave them stability—it removed the foundation on which they rested. But might it not then have placed them on a broader and firmer foundation ? Was not the universal empire of Rome ready at hand, and might not the new religion have stood to it in the same relation of dependence which the earlier religions had held to the smaller nations and states? So one might imagine, but in truth it was no longer possible. It is true that the political and spiritual histories of the peoples on the Mediterranean run in parallel lines, the one leading up to the universal monarchy of Rome, the other leading up to monotheism and universal human morality. But the spiritual

development had shot far ahead of the political ; even the Stoa occupied a height far beyond the reach of anything in the political sphere. It is also true that Neoplatonism sought to come to an understanding with the Byzantine Roman empire; the noble Julian perished in the pursuit of this project. But even before his day the shrewder Neoplatonists had seen that their lofty religious philosophy could not stoop to an alliance with the despotic world-empire, because it could not come in contact with the world at all. To Neoplatonism political affairs are at bottom as indifferent as all other earthly things. The idealism of the new philosophy was too heavenly to be naturalized in a degenerate, tyrannical, and effete institution like the Byzantine empire, which stood more in need of despotic and unscrupulous police officials than of high-minded philosophers. Important and instructive, therefore, as are the attempts made from time to time by the state and by individual philosophers to unite Neoplatonism and the universal monarchy, their failure was a foregone conclusion.

There is one other question which we are called upon to raise here. Why did not Neoplatonism set up an independent religious community? It had entirely remodelled the ancient religions, with a view to their restoration; it had tried to fill the old unsophisticated worships with profound philosophical ideas, and to make them the exponents of pure morality ; why did it not address itself, in the last resort, to the creation of a religious society of its own? Why did it not provide for its mixed multitude of divinities by founding a church, destined to embrace all mankind, in which all the gods of all nations might be worshipped along with the one ineffable Deity 4 Why not? The answer to this question involves the answer to another—Why was Neoplatonism defeated by Christianity? Three essentials of a permanent religious foundation were wanting in Neoplatonism ; they are admirably indicated in Augustine's Confessions (vii. 18-21). First, and chiefly, it wanted a religious founder ; second, it could not tell how the state of inward peace and blessedness could become permanent; third, it had

no means to win those who were not endowed with the speculative faculty. The philosophical discipline which it recommended for the attainment of the highest good was beyond the reach of the masses; and the way by which the masses could attain the highest good was a secret unknown to

Neoplatonism. Thus it remained a school for the “wise and prudent”; and when Julian tried to enlist the sympathies of the common rude man for the doctrines and worship of this school, he was met with scorn and ridicule.

It is not as a philosophy, then, nor as a new religion, that Neoplatonism became a decisive factor in history, but, if one may use the expression, as a “mood.” The instinctive certainty that there is a supreme good, lying beyond empirical experience, and yet not an intellectual good,—this feeling, and the accompanying conviction of the utter vanity of all earthly things, were produced and sustained by Neoplatonism. Only, it could not describe the nature of this highest good; and therefore it had to abandon itself to imagination and esthetic impres- sions. It was driven to explore “mysterious inward paths,” which after all led nowhere. It changed thought into an emotional dream; it plunged into the ocean of sentiment; it treated the old world of fable as the reflexion of a higher reality, and transformed reality into poetry ; and after all these expedients, to borrow a phrase of Augustine’s, it only saw afar off the land of its desire. It dashed this world in pieces, and then had nothing left but an indescribable “something,”—a faint glimmer from some world beyond.

And yet the influence of Neoplatonism on the history of our ethical culture has been, and still is, immeasurable, —not merely because it has refined and strengthened our emotions and susceptibilities, nor merely because it wove the fine veil with which all of us, whether religious or irreligious, cover the Gorgon face of brute reality, but above all because it begot the consciousness that the only blessedness which can satisfy the heart must be sought higher even than the sphere of reason. That man shall not live by bread alone, the world had learned before Neoplatonism ; but Neoplatonism has enforced the deeper truth—a truth which the older philosophy had missed— that man shall not live by knowledge alone. And, besides the propsdeutic importance which thus belongs to it, another fact has to be taken into account in estimating the influence of Neoplatonism. It is to this day the nursery of that whole type of devotion which affects renunciation of the world, which strives after an ideal, without the strength to rise above zsthetic impressions, and is never able to form a clear conception of the object of its own aspiration.

Origin.—As forerunners of Neoplatonism we may regard, on the one hand, those Stoics who accepted the Platonic distinction between the sensible world and the intelligible, and, on the other hand, the so-called Neo-pythagoreans and religious philosophers like Plutarch of Cheeronea and especially Numenius of Apamea. But these cannot be considered the actual progenitors of Neopla- tonism ; their philosophic method is quite elementary as compared with the Neoplatonic, their fundamental principles are uncertain, and unbounded deference is still paid to the authority of Plato. The Jewish and Christian thinkers of the first two centuries approach considerably nearer than Numenius to the later Neoplatonism.! Here we have Philo, to begin with. Philo, who translated the Old Testament religion into the terms of Hellenic thought,

+ The resemblance would probably be still more apparent if we thoroughly understood the development of Christianity at Alexandria in the 2d century; but unfortunately we have only very meagre frag- ments to guide us here.

holds as an inference from his theory of revelation that the divine Supreme Being is “supra-rational,” that He can be reached only through “ecstasy,” and that the oracles of God supply the material of moral and religious knowledge. The religious ethics of Philo—a compound of Stoic, Platonic, and Neopythagorean elements—already bear the peculiar stamp which we recognize in Neopla- tonism. While his system assigns the supremacy to Greek philosophy over the national religion of Israel, it exacts from the former, as a sort of tribute to the latter, the recognition of the elevation of God above the province of reason. The claim of positive religion to be something more than the intellectual apprehension of the reason in the universe is thus acknowledged. Religious syncretism is also a feature of Philo’s system, but it differs essentially from what we find in later Neoplatonism. For Philo pays no respect to any cultus except the Jewish ; and he believed that all the fragments of truth to be found amongst Greeks and Romans had been borrowed from the books of Moses. The earliest Christian philosophers, particularly Justin and Athenagoras, likewise prepared the way for the specu- lations of the Neoplatonists,—partly by their attempts to connect Christianity with Stoicism and Platonism, partly

by their ambition to exhibit Christianity as “ hyper- platonic.” In the introduction to his Dialogue with Trypho, Justin follows a method which bears a striking resemblance to the later method of Neoplatonism: he seeks to base the Christian knowledge of God—that is, the knowledge of the truth —on Platonism, Scepticism, and “ Revelation.” A still more remarkable parallel to the later Neoplatonism is afforded by the Christian Gnostics of Alexandria, especi- ally Valentinus and the followers of Basilides.1 Like the Neoplatonists, the Basilidians believed, not in an emanation from the Godhead, but in a dynamic manifestation of its activity. The same is true of Valentinus, who also placed an unnameable being at the apex of his system, and regarded matter, not asa second principle, but as a product of the one divine principle. It must be added that the dependence of Basilides and Valentinus on Zeno and Plato is beyond dispute. But the method observed by these Gnostics in thinking out the plan and the history of the universe is by no means thoroughgoing. Ancient myths are admitted without undergoing analysis; the most naive realism alternates with daring efforts at spiritualizing. Philosophically considered, therefore, the Gnostic systems are very unlike the rigorous self-consistency of Neoplatonism ; although they certainly contain almost all the elements which enter into the Neoplatonic theory of the universe.

But were the oldest Neoplatonists really acquainted with the speculations of Philo, or Justin, or Valentinus, or Basilides? Did they know the Oriental religions, Judaism and Christianity in particular? And, if so, did they really derive anything from these sources .

To these questions we cannot, unfortunately, give

decided, still less definite and precise, answers. Since

Neoplatonism originated in Alexandria, where Oriental modes of worship were accessible to every one, and since the Jewish philosophy had also taken its place in the literary circles of Alexandria, we may safely assume that even the earliest of the Neoplatonists possessed an acquaintance with Judaism and Christianity. But if we search Plotinus for evidence of any actual influence of

1 The dogmas of the Basilidians, as given by Hippolytus, read almost like passages from Neoplatonic works: ée) obdév Hv, odx BAN, ov« ovata, ode avovctov, odX aTAOdY, ob cUVOeTOY, OdK avdnToY, OdK avalaOnrov, ov kvOpwros. .. . ovx dv eds dvontws, avaiobjtes, &BovAws, admpoaupétws, amalas, averiOvuhtws xécuov OEAnoE Totjoat . . . ottTws ob Sv Qeds érolnoe Kxoopoyv ovn bytTa ef odK tytwv, kataBardsuevos Kal troorhoas omépua Tt bv exov macay év EavT@ Thy Tod Kéopou mavowepulay (Philos., vii. 20 sq.).

Jewish and Christian philosophy, we search in vain ; and the existence of any such influence is all the more unlikely because it is only the later Neoplatonism that offers strik- ing and deep-rooted parallels to Philo and the Gnostics. The Philonic and Gnostic philosophies thus appear to be merely an historical anticipation of the Neoplatonic, without any real connexion. Nor is there anything mysterious in such an anticipation. It simply means that a certain religious and philosophical tendency, which grew up slowly on Greek soil, was already implanted in those who occupied the vantage-ground of a revealed religion of redemption. We have to come down to Jamblichus and his school before we find complete correspondence with the Christian Gnosticism of the 2d century; that is to say, it is only in the 4th century that Greek philosophy in its proper development reaches the stage at which certain Greek philosophers who had embraced Christianity had arrived in the 2d century. The influence of Christianity— whether Gnostic or Catholic—on Neoplatonism was at no time very considerable, although individual Neoplatonists, after Amelius, used Christian texts as oracles, and put on record their admiration for Christ.

History and Doctrines.—The founder of the Neoplatonic school in Alexandria is supposed to have been Ammonius Saccas (0b. c. 245 A.D.), who is said to have been a Christian by birth, and to have relapsed to heathenism. As he has left no written works behind him, it is impos- sible to criticize his teaching. He communicated to his pupils an admiration for Plato, and set them to work at the reconciliation of Plato and Aristotle. The most distinguished of his disciples were Origen the Christian, another Origen—a heathen, Longinus, Herennius, and, the greatest of all, Plotinus.?

The Hnneads of Plotinus are the primary and classical document of Neoplatonism. The doctrine of Plotinus is mysticism, and like all mysticism it consists of two main divisions. The first or theoretical part deals with the high origin of the human soul, and shows how it has departed from its first estate. In the second or practical part the way is pointed out by which the soul may again return to the Eternal and Supreme. Since the soul in its long-ings reaches forth beyond all sensible things, beyond the world of ideas even, it follows that the highest being must be something supra-rational. The system thus embraces three heads—(1) the primeval Being, (2) the ideal world and the soul, (3) the phenomenal world. We may also, however, in accordance with the views of Plotinus, divide thus :—(A) the invisible world—(1) the primeval Being, (2) the ideal world, (3) the soul; (B) the phenomenal world.

The primeval Being is, as opposed to the many, the One; as opposed to the finite, the Infinite, the unlimited. It is the source of all life, and therefore absolute causality and the only real existence. It is, moreover, the Good, in so far as all finite things have their purpose in it, and ought to flow back to it. But one cannot attach moral attributes to the original Being itself, because these would imply limitation. It has no attributes of any kind ; it is being without magnitude, without life, without thought ; in strict propriety, indeed, we ought not to speak of it as existing; it is “above existence,” “above good- ness.” It is also active force without a substratum ; as active force the primeval Being is perpetually producing something else, without alteration, or motion, or diminution of itself. This production is not a physical process, but

2 Born at Lycopolis, in Egypt, in 205, Plotinus laboured from 244 onwards in Rome, where he gained many followers and admirers, amongst others the emperor Gallienus and his consort, and died in Lower Italy in 270. The writings of Plotinus were arranged by his pupil Porphyry, and published in six Enneads.

an emission of force ; and, since the product has real exist- ence only in virtue of the original existence working in it, Neoplatonism may be described as a species of dynamic pantheism. Directly or indirectly,

everything is brought forth by the “One.” In it all things, so far as they have being, are divine, and God is all in all. Derived existence, however, is not like the original Being itself, but is subject to a law of diminishing completeness. It is indeed an image and reflexion of the first Being ; but the further the line of successive projections is prolonged the smaller is its share in the true existence. The totality of being may thus be conceived as a series of concentric circles, fading away towards the verge of non-existence, the force of the original Being in the outermost circle being a vanishing quantity. Each lower stage of being is united with the “One” by all the higher stages, and receives its share of reality only by transmission through them. All derived existence, however, has a drift towards, a longing for, the higher, and bends towards it so far as its nature will permit.

The original Being first of all throws out the nous, which is a perfect image of the One, and the archetype of all existing things. It is at once being and thought, ideal world and idea. As image, the nous corresponds perfectly to the One, but as derived it is entirely different. What Plotinus understands by the nous is the highest sphere accessible to the human mind (kéopos vonrds), and, along with that, pure thought itself.

The image and product of the motionless nous is the soul, which, according to Plotinus is, like the nous, immaterial. Its relation to the nous is the same as that of the nous to the One. It stands between the nous and the phenomenal world, is permeated and illuminated by the former, but is also in contact with the latter. The nous is indivisible ; the soul may preserve its unity and remain in the nous, but at the same time it hag the power of uniting with the corporeal world, and thus being dis- integrated. It therefore occupies an intermediate position. As a single soul (world-soul) it belongs in essence and destination to the intelligible world; but it also embraces innumerable individual souls ; and these can either submit to be ruled by the nous, or turn aside to the sensual, and lose themselves in the finite.

Then the soul, a moving essence, generates the corporeal or phenomenal world. This world ought to be so pervaded by the soul that its various parts should remain in perfect harmony. Plotinus is no dualist, like the Christian Gnostics ; he admires the beauty and splendour of the world. So long as idea governs matter, or the soul governs the body, the world is fair and

good. It is an image—though a shadowy image—of the upper world, and the degrees of better and worse in it are essential to the harmony of the whole. But in the actual phenomenal world unity and harmony are replaced by strife and discord ; the result is a conflict, a becoming and vanishing, an illusive existence. And the reason for this state of things is that bodies rest on a substratum of matter. Matter is the basework of each (7d Bdbos éxderov 7 VAN) 5 it is the dark principle, the indeterminate, that which has no qualities, the yw dv. Destitute of form and idea, it is evil ; as capable of form it is neutral.

The human souls which have descended into corporeality are those which have allowed themselves to be ensnared by sensuality and overpowered by lust. They now seek to cut themselves loose from their true being ; and, striving after independence, they assume a false existence. They must turn back from this; and, since they have not lost their freedom, a conversion is still possible.

Here, then, we enter upon the practical philosophy. Along the same road by which it descended the soul must

retrace its steps back to the supreme Good. It must first of all return to itself. This is accomplished by the practice of virtue, which aims at likeness to God, and leads up to God. In the ethics of Plotinus all the older schemes of virtue are taken over, and arranged in a graduated series. The lowest stage is that of the civil virtues, then follow the purifying, and last of all the divine virtues. The civil virtues merely adorn the life, without elevating the soul. That is the office of the purifying virtues, by which the soul is freed from sensuality, and led back to itself, and thence to the nous. By means of ascetic observances the man becomes once more a spiritual and enduring being, free from all sin. But there is still a higher attainment . it is not enough to be sinless, one must become “God,” This is reached through contemplation of the primeval Being, the One; or, in other words, through an ecstatic approach to it. Thought cannot attain to this, for thought reaches only to the nous, and is itself a kind of motion. Thought is a mere preliminary to communion with God. It is only in a state of perfect passivity and repose that the soul can recognize and touch the primeval Being. Hence

in order to this highest attainment the soul must pass through a spiritual curriculum. Beginning with the contemplation of corporeal things in their multiplicity and harmony, it then retires upon itself and withdraws into the depths of its own being, rising thence to the nous, the world of ideas. But even there it does not find the Highest, the One; it still hears a voice saying, "not we have made ourselves." The last stage is reached when, in the highest tension and concentration, beholding in silence and utter forgetfulness of all things, it is able as it were to lose itself. Then it may see God, the fountain of life, the source of being, the origin of all good, the root of the soul. In that moment it enjoys the highest indescribable bliss ; it is as it were swallowed up of divinity, bathed in the light of eternity.1

Such is the religious philosophy of Plotinus, and for himself personally it sufficed, without the aid of the popular religion or worship. Nevertheless he sought for points of support in these. God is certainly in the truest sense nothing but the primeval Being; but He reveals Himself in a variety of emanations and manifestations. The nous is a sort of second god, the Adyou which are wrapped up in it are gods, the stars are gods, and so on. A rigid monotheism appeared to Plotinus a miserable conception. He gave a meaning to the myths of the popular religions, and he had something to say even for magic, soothsaying, and prayer. In support of image- worship he advanced arguments which were afterwards adopted by the Christian image-worshippers. Still, as compared with the later Neoplatonists, he is comparatively free from crass superstition and wild fanaticism. He is not to be classed amongst the "deceived deceivers," and the restoration of the worship of the old gods was by no means his chief object.

Amongst his pupils, Amelius and Porphyry are the most eminent. Amelius modified the teaching of Plotinus on certain points; and he also put some value on the prologue to the Gospel of John. To Porphyry? belongs the credit of having recast and popularized the system of his master

1 Porphyry tells us that on four occasions during the six years of their intercourse Plotinus attained to this ecstatic union with God.

? Born at Tyre in the year 238. Whether he was for a time a Christian is not certain. From 263 to 268 he was a pupil of Plotinus at Rome. He had previously written the work rep) rs ex Aoylwv piro- gopias, which shows

that he was inclined to base philosophy on revelations, For a couple of years (about 270) he lived in Sicily, where he wrote his fifteen books against the Christians. He then returned to Rome, where he worked as a teacher, edited the works of Plotinus, and wrote a series of treatises of his own. He married in his old age Marcella, a native of Rome, and dicd about the year 303.

REOPLTAYTYONIS M

Plotinus. He was no original or productive thinker, but he was a solid and diligent student, distinguished by great learning, by a turn for keen historical and philological criticism, and by an earnest purpose to disseminate the true philosophy of life, to uproot false teaching—especially Christianity, to ennoble men and train them to goodness. That a spirit so free and noble yielded itself up wholly to the philosophy of Plotinus and polytheistic mysticism shows how irresistible was the tendency of the age, and means also that the age had no better thing to offer than religi- ous mysticism. The system of Porphyry is distinguished from that of Plotinus by being still more emphatically practical and religious. The object of philosophy, accord- ing to Porphyry, is the salvation of the soul. The origin and the blame of evil are not in the body, but in the desires of the soul. Hence the strictest asceticism (abstinence from flesh, and wine, and sexual intercourse) is demanded, as well as the knowledge of God. As he advanced in life, Porphyry protested more and more earnestly against the rude faith of the common people and their immoral worships. ‘‘The ordinary conceptions of God are such that it is more impious to share them than it is to slight the images of the gods.” But, outspoken as he was in his criticism of the popular religions, he had no wish to give them up. He stood up for a pure worship of the many gods, and maintained the cause of every old national religion and the ceremonial duties of its adherents. His work Against the Christians was directed, not against Christ, nor even against what he believed to be Christ’s teaching, but against the Christians of his own day and their sacred books, which, according to Porphyry, were the work of deceivers and ignorant people. In his trenchant criticism of the origin of what passed for Christianity in his time, he spoke bitter and severe truths, which have gained for him the reputation of the most rabid and wicked of all the enemies of Christianity. His work was destroyed,! and even the

answers to it (by Methodius, Eusebius, Apollinaris, Philostorgius, &c.) have been lost. But the copious extracts which we find in Lactantius, Augustine, Jerome, Macarius Magnus, and others are sufficient to show how profoundly Porphyry had studied the Christian writings, and how great was his talent for real historical research,

Porphyry marks the transition to a new phase of Neoplatonism, in which it becomes completely subservient to polytheism, and seeks before everything else to protect the Greek and Oriental religions from the formidable assault of Christianity. In the hands of Iampicuus (¢.2.), the pupil of Porphyry (0b. 330), Neoplatonism is changed "from a philosophical theory to a theological doctrine." The distinctive tenets of Iamblichus cannot be accounted for from scientific but only from practical considerations. In order to justify superstition and the ancient forms of worship, philosophy becomes in his hands a theurgy, a knowledge of mysteries, a sort of spiritualism. To this period also belongs a set of " philosophers," with regard to whom it is impossible to say whether they are dupes or impostors —the "decepti deceptores" of whom Augustine speaks. In this philosophy the mystical properties of numbers are a leading feature; absurd and mechanical notions are glossed over with the sheen of sacramental mystery ; myths are explained by pious fancies and fine- sounding pietistic reflexions; miracles, even the most ridiculous, are believed in, and miracles are wrought. The "philosopher " has become a priest of magic, and philosophy a method of incantation. Moreover, in the unbridled exercise of speculation, the number of divine beings was 2 . 2 ee ee ee

? Tt was condemned by an edict of the empcrors Theodosius II. and Valentinian, in the year 448.

increased indefinitely ; and these fantastic accessions to Olympus in the system of Iamblichus show that Greek philosophy is returning to mythology, and that nature- religion is still a power in the world. And yet it is undeniable that the very noblest and choicest minds of the 4th century are to be found in the ranks of the Neoplatonists. So great was the general decline that this Neoplatonic philosophy offered a welcome shelter to many earnest and influential men, in spite of the charlatans and hypocrites who

were gathered under the same roof. On certain points of doctrine, too, the dogmatic of Iamblichus indicates a real advance. Thus his emphatic assertion of the truth that the seat of evil is in the will is noteworthy ; and so also is his repudiation of Plotinus's theory of the divinity of the soul.

The numerous followers of JIamblichus (ARdesius, Chrysanthius, Eusebius, Priscus, Sopater, Sallust, and, most famous of all, Maximus) rendered little service to speculation. Some of them (Themistius in particular) are known as commentators on the older philosophers, and others as the missionaries of mysticism. The work De Mysteriis digyptiorum is the best sample of the views and aims of these philosophers. Their hopes rose high when their protégé, the enthusiastic, noble-minded, but mentally ill-balanced Julian, ascended the imperial throne (361-363). But the emperor himself lived long enough to see that his romantic policy of restoration was to leave no results; and after his early death all hope of extinguishing Christianity was abandoned. |

But undoubtedly the victory of the church in the age of Valentinian and Theodosius had a purifying influence on Neoplatonism. During the struggle for supremacy, the philosophers had been driven to make common cause with everything that was hostile to Christianity. But now Neoplatonism was thrust from the great stage of history. The church and church theology, to whose guidance the masses now surrendered themselves, took in along with them their superstition, their polytheism, their magic, their myths, and all the machinery of religious witchcraft. The more all this settled and established itself—certainly not without opposition—in the church the purer did Neoplatonism become. While maintaining intact its religious attitude and its theory of knowledge, it returned with new zest to scientific studies, especially the study of the old philosophers. If Plato still remains the divine philosopher, yet we can perceive that after the year 400 the writings of Aristotle are increasingly read and valued. In the chief cities of the empire Neoplatonic schools flourished till the beginning of the 5th century; during this period, indeed, they were the training-schools of Christian theologians. At Alexandria the noble Hypatia taught, to whose memory her impassioned disciple Synesius, afterwards a bishop, has reared a splendid monument. But after the beginning of the 5th century the fanaticism of the church could no longer endure the presence of

“heathenism.” The murder of Hypatia was the death of philosophy in Alexandria, although the school there main- tained a lingering existence till the middle of the 6th century. But there was one city of the East which, lying apart from the crowded highways of the world, had sunk to a mere provincial town, and yet possessed associations which the church of the 5th century felt herself power- less to eradicate. In Athens a Neoplatonic school still flourished. ‘There, under the monuments of its glorious past, Hellenism found its last retreat. The school of Athens returned to a stricter philosophical method and the cultivation of scholarship. Still holding by a religious philosophy, it undertook to reduce the whole Greek tradi- tion, as seen in the light of Plotinus, to a comprehensive and closely knit system. Hence the philosophy which

arose at Athens was what may fairly be termed scholasti- cism. For every philosophy is scholastic whose subject- matter is imaginative and mystical, and which handles this subject-matter according to established rules in logical categories and distinctions. Now to these Neoplatonists, the books of Plato, along with certain divine oracles, the Orphic poems, and much more which they assigned to a remote antiquity, were documents of canonical authority ; they were inspired divine writings. Out of these they drew the material of their philosophy, which they then proceeded to elaborate with the appliances of dialectic.

The niost distinguished teachers at Athens were Plutarch (ob. 433), his disciple Syrianus (who did important work as a commentator on Plato and Aristotle, and further deserves mention for his vigorous defence of the freedom of the will), but above all Proclus (411-485). Proclus is the great schoolman of Neoplatonism. It was he who, combining religious ardour with formal acuteness, con- nected the whole mass of traditional lore into a huge system, making good defects, and smoothing away contra- dictions by means of distinctions and speculations. “ It was reserved for Proclus,” says Zeller, “to bring the Neoplatonic philosophy to its formal conclusion by the rigorous consistency of his dialectic, and, keeping in view all the modifications which it had undergone in the course of two centuries, to give

it that form in which it was transferred to Christianity and Mohammedanism in the Middle Ages." Forty-four years after the death of Proclus the school of Athens was closed by Justinian (529 a.p.) ; but it had fulfilled its mission in the work of Proclus, and might with advantage retire from the scene. It had nothing new to say ; it was ripe for the grave, and an honour- able burial awaited it. The works of Proclus, as the last testament of Hellenism to the church and the Middle Ages, exerted an incalculable influence on the next thousand years. They not only formed one of the bridges by which the medieval thinkers got back to Plato and Aristotle ; they determined the scientific method of thirty generations, and they partly created and partly nourished the Christian mysticism of the Middle Ages, both in the East and in the West.

The disciples of Proclus are not eminent (Marinus, Asclepiodotus, Ammonius, Zenodotus, Isidorus, Hegias, Damascius). The last president of the Athenian school was Damascius. When Justinian issued the edict for the suppression of the school, Damascius along with Simplicius (the painstaking commentator of Aristotle) and five other Neoplatonists set out for Persia. They were under the delusion that Persia was the land of the East, the home of wisdom, righteousness, and devotion. Ina few years they came back to the Byzantine empire, sadder and wiser men.

At the beginning of the 6th century Neoplatonism had ceased to exist in the East as an independent philosophy. Almost at the same time, however—and the coincidence is not accidental—it made new conquests in the church theology through the writings of the pseudo-Dionysius. It began to bear fruit in Christian mysticism, and to diffuse a new magical leaven through the worship of the church.

In the West, where philosophical efforts of any kind had been very rare since the 2d century, and where mystical contemplation did not meet with the necessary conditions, Neoplatonism found a congenial soil only in isolated indi- viduals. We know that the rhetorician Marius Victorinus (c. 850) translated certain works of Plotinus, and that his translation had a decisive influence on the spiritual history of Augustine. It may be said that Neoplatonism influenced the West only through the medium of the church theology, or, in some instances, under that disguise. Even Boetius

(it may now be considered certain) was a catholic Christian, although his whole mode of thought was certainly Neo- platonic. His violent death in the year 525 marks the end of independent philosophy in the West. But indeed this last of the Roman philosophers stood quite alone in his century, and the philosophy for which he lived was neither original, nor well-grounded, nor methodically developed.

Neoplatonism and the Theology of the Church.—The question as to the influence of Neoplatonism on the development of Christianity is not easily answered, because it is scarcely possible to get a complete view of their mutual relations. The answer will depend, in the first instance, upon how much is included under the term "Neoplatonism." If Neoplatonism is understood in the widest sense, as the highest and fittest expression of the religious movements at work in the Graeco-Roman empire from the 2d to the 5th century, then it may be regarded as the twin-sister of the church dogmatic which grew up during the same period; the younger sister was brought up by the elder, then rebelled against her, and at last tyrannized over her. The Neoplatonists themselves characterized the theologians of the church as intruders, who had appropriated the Greek philosophy, and spoiled it by the admixture of strange fables. Thus Porphyry says of Origen (Euseb., H. #., vi. 19), "The outer life of Origen was that of a Christian, and contrary to law; but, as far as his views of things and of God are con-cerned, he thought like the Greeks, whose conceptions he overlaid with foreign myths." This verdict of Porphyry's is at all events more just and apt than that of the theologians on the Greek philosophers, when they accused them of having borrowed all their really valuable doctrines from the ancient Christian books. But the important point is that the relationship was acknowledged on both sides. Now, in so far as both Neoplatonism and the church dogmatic set out from the felt need of redemption, in so far as both sought to deliver the soul from sensuality, and recognized man's inability without divine aid—without a revelation—to attain salvation and a sure knowledge of the truth, they are at once most intimately related, and at the same time mutually independent. It must be confessed that when Christianity began to project a theology it was already deeply impregnated by Hellenic influences. But the influence is to be traced, not so much to philosophy, as to the general culture of the time, and the whole set of conditions under which spiritual life was manifested. When Neoplatonism

appeared, the Christian church had already laid down the main positions of her theology; or if not, she worked them out alongside of Neoplatonism — that is not a mere accident—but still independently. It was only by identifying itself with the whole history of Greek philosophy, or by figuring as pure Platonism restored, that Neoplatonism could stigmatize the church theology of Alexandria as a plagiarism from itself. These assumptions, however, were fanciful. Although our sources are unfortunately very imperfect, the theology of the church does not appear to have learned much from Neoplatonism in the 3d century,—partly because the latter had not yet reached the form in which its doctrines could be accepted by the church dogmatic, and partly because theology was otherwise occupied. Her first business was to plant herself firmly on her own territory, to make good her position, and clear away old and objectionable opinions.

‘Origen was quite as independent a thinker as Plotinus;

only, they both drew on the same tradition. From the 4th century downwards, however, the influence of Neoplatonism on the Oriental theologians was of the utmost importance. The church gradually expressed her most peculiar convic- tions in dogmas, which were formulated by philosophical

NEHEO-NEO

methods, but were irreconcilable with Neoplatonism (the Christological dogmas) ; and the farther this process went the more unrestrainedly did theologians resign themselves to the influence of Neoplatonism on all other questions. The doctrines of the incarnation, the resurrection of the flesh, and the creation of the world in time marked the boundary line between the church’s dogmatic and Neo- platonism ; in every other respect, theologians and Neo- platonists drew so closely together that many of them are completely at one. . In fact, there were special cases, like that of Synesius, in which a speculative reconstruction of distinctively Christian doctrines by Christian men was winked at. Ifa book does not happen to touch on any of the above-mentioned doctrines, it may often be doubtful whether the writer is a Christian or a Neoplatonist. In ethical precepts, in directions for right living (that is, asceticism), the two systems approximate more and more closely. But it was here that Neoplatonism finally celebrated its greatest

triumph. It indoctrinated the church with all its mysticism, its mystic exercises, and even its magical cultus as taught by Iamblichus. The works of the pseudo-Dionysius contain a gnosis in which, by means of the teaching of Iamblichus and Proclus, the church's theology is turned into a scholastic mysticism, with directions on matters of practice and ritual. And as these writings were attributed to Dionysius, the disciple of the apostles, the scholastic mysticism which they unfold was regarded as an apostolic, not to say a divine, science. The influence exercised by these writings, first on the East, and then—after the 9th (or 12th) century—on the West, cannot be overestimated. It is impossible to enlarge upon it here; suffice it to say that the mystical and pietistic devotion of our own day, even in the Protestant churches, is nourished on works whose ancestry can be traced, through a series of intermediate links, to the writings of the pseudo-Areopagite.

In the ancient world there was only one Western theologian who came directly under the influence of Neo- platonism ; but that one is Augustine, the most important of them all. It was through Neoplatonism that Augustine got rid of scepticism and the last dregs of Manicheism. In the seventh book of his Confessions he has recorded how much he owed to the perusal of Neoplatonic works. On all the cardinal doctrines—God, matter, the relation of God to the world, freedom, and evil—Augustine retained the impress of Neoplatonism ; at the same time he is the theologian of antiquity who most clearly perceived and most fully stated wherein Neoplatonism and Christianity differ. The best ever written by any church father on this subject is to be found in chaps. ix.—xxi. of the seventh book of the Confessions.

Why Neoplatonism succumbed in the conflict with Christianity is a question which the historians have never satisfactorily answered. As a rule, the problem is not even stated correctly. We have nothing to do here with our own private ideal of Christianity, but solely with catholic Christianity and catholic theology. These are the forces that conquered Neoplatonism, after assimilating nearly everything that it contained. Further, we must consider the arena in which the victory was won. The battlefield was the empire of Constantine and Theodosius. It is only when these and all other circumstances of the case are duly realized that we have a right to inquire

how much the essential doctrines of Christianity contributed to the victory, and what share must be assigned to the organization of the church.

In medizeval theology and philosophy mysticism appears as the powerful opponent of rationalistic dogmatism. The empirical science of the Renaissance and the two following centuries was itself a new development of Platonism and

O09

Neoplatonism, as opposed to rationalistic dogmatism, with its contempt for experience. Magic, astrology, and alchemy—all the outgrowth of Neoplatonism—gave the first effectual stimulus to the observation of nature, and consequently to natural science, and in this way finally extinguished barren rationalism. Thus in the history of science Neoplatonism has played a part, and rendered services of which Plotinus or Iamblichus or Proclus never dreamt. So true is it that sober history is often stranger and more capricious than all the marvels of legend and romance.

Iiterature.—The best and amplest account of Neoplatonism will be found in Zeller, Die Philosophie der Grieehen, 3d ed., 1881, iii. 2, pp. 419-865. Compare Hegel, Gesch. d. Philos., iii. 3 sq.; Ritter, iv. pp. 571-728; Ritter and Preller, Hist. phil. Gree. et Rom., pp. 631 3sg.; the Histories of Philosophy by Schwegler, Brandis, Brucker, Thilo, Striimpell, Ueberweg (who gives the most complete survey of the literature), Erdmann, Cousin, Prantl, Lewes. See also Vacherot, Hist. de Uécole d' Alexandria, 1846-51; Simon, Hist. de Pécole @ Alexandria, 1845; Steinhart, arts. " Neuplatonismus," '¢Plotin," '" Porphyrius," " Proklus," in Pauly's Realencyklop. d. klass. Alterthwms ; Wageninann, art. " Neuplatonismus," in the second edition of Herzog's Rcalencyklop. f. protest. Theol.; Heintze, Lehre vom Logos, 1872; Richter, Newplatonisehe Studien; Heigl, Der Bericht des Porphyrius tiber Origenes, 1835; Redepenning, Origenes; Dehaut, "ssat historique sur la vie et la doctrine d Ammonius Saceas, 1836; Kirchner, Die Philosophie des Plotin, 1854; Steinhart, De dialectica Plotini ratione (1829), and Meletemata Plotiniana (1840); Neander, "Ueber die welthis- torische Bedeutung des 9. Buchs in der 2. Enneade des Plotinos," in the Abhandl. der Berliner Akademie, 1843; Valentiner, '*Plotin u. s. Enneaden," in the Z'hcol. Stud. w. Kritiken, 1864. For the biography of

Plotinus, see Porphyry, Eunapius, Suidas, — the last two in particular for the later Neoplatonists as well. On Porphyry see Fabricius, Bibl. Gr., v. p. 725 sq. ; Wolff, Porph. de philosoplia ex oraculis haurienda librorum reliquiw, 1856 ; Miller, Pragmenta hist. Gr., ili. 688 sg. ; Mai, Ep. ad Marcellam, 1816; Bernays, ZTheophrast, 1866; Wagenniann in the Jahr-biieher f. deutsche Theol., vol. xxiii., 1878; Richter in the Zésehr. jf. Philos., vol. lii., 1867; Hebenstreit, De Lamblichi doctrina, 1764; Harless, Das Bueh von den dgyptischen Mysterien, 1858 ; and Meiners, Comment. Societ. Gétting., iv. p. 50 sg. On Julian, see a catalogue of the copious literature in the Realencyklop. f. protest. Theol., 2d ed., vol. vii. p. 287; Neumann, Julian libr. ¢. Christ. que supersunt, 1880; Hoche, ‘‘ Hypatia,” in Philologus, vol. xv., 1860; Bach, De Syriano philosopho, 1862. On Proclus, see the biography of Marinus, aud Freudenthal in Hermes, vol. xvi. p. 214 sg. On Boetius, compare Nitzsch, Das System des Boethius, 1860 ; and Usener, Anecdoton Holderi, 1877.

On the relation of Neoplatonism to Christianity, and the histori- cal importance of Neoplatonism generally, see the Church Histories of Mosheim, Gieseler, Neander, Baur; and the Histories of Dogma by Baur and Nitzsch. Compare also Loffler, Der Platonismus der Kirchenviter, 1782; Huber, Die Philosophie der Kirchenviiter, 1859 ; Tzchirner, Fall des Heidenthums, 1829 ; Burckhardt, Die Zeit Constantin’s des Grossen, 1853 ; Chastel, Hist. de la destruc- tiow du Paganisme dans Venpire da’ Orient, 1850; Beugnot, Hist. de la destruction du Paganisme en Occident, 1835 ; E. von Lasaulx, Der Untergang des Hellenismas, 1854; Vogt, Neuplatonismus und Christenthum, 1836; Ullmann, ‘‘ Einfluss des Christenthums auf Porphyrius,” in the Stud. u. Kritiken, 1882. On the relation of Neoplatonism to Monachism, compare Keim, Aus dem Urchristen- thum, 1878. See further the monographs on Origen, the later Alexandrians, the three Cappadocians, Theodoret, Synesins, Marius Victorinus, Augustine, Pseudo-Dionysius, Maximus, Scotus Erigena, and the medieval mystics. Specially noteworthy are—Jahn, Basilius Plotinizans, 1838 ; Dorner, Augustinws, 1875 ; Bestmann, Qua ratione Augustinus notiones philos. Greece adhibuertt, 1877; Loesche, Awgustinus Plotinizans, 1881; Volkmann, Synesios, 1869. On the after-cffects of Neoplatonism on the church’s dogmatic, see Ritschl, Theologie und Metaphystk, 1881. (A. HA.)

NEOPTOLEMUS was the son of Achilles and Deidamia, one of the daughters of Lycomedes of Scyros, at whose court Achilles was concealed by his mother in female attire to keep him away from the Trojan War. He was brought to Troy in the last year of the war by Ulysses, whom he helped in persuading Philoctetes to come from Lemnos to aid the Grecks, and he was one of the warriors in the wooden horse. It was he who killed Priam during the sack of the city. Apart from these Trojan tales, Neoptolemus is a prominent figure in the

Natural divisions.

legends of Epirus and of Delphi. He was the ancestor of

the Molossian kings, who therefore claimed to be of pure |

Hellenic stock. His grave was at Delphi, and the festival in his honour every eighth year is described in the romance of Heliodorus as one of the most beautiful ceremonies in the Delphic ritual. It was said that he protected the

temple in the Gaulish invasion.

NEPAL, Nepaut, or Nipat, is a small independent state, situated on the north-eastern frontier of Hindustan. It lies between 80° 15’ and 88° 10’ E. long. and 26° 20’ Jts extreme length is about 525 miles, It is

and 30° 10’ N. lat. and in breadth it varies from 90 to 140 miles.

Ea Ete Hii bi

Scale of English Miles 20 4p 60

sland Boh. from Greenwich

Nepal consists of two very distinct kinds of land :—(1) the terai, or strip of level cultivated and forest land lying along the southern border ; and (2) the

great mountainous tract stretching northwards to Tibet. Along the northern frontier stand many of the highest peaks of the Himalayan range, such as Diwalgiri (26,861 feet), Mutsiputra and Yasa (24,000), Gosain Than (26,000), numerous peaks varying from 20,000 to 24,000 feet, Mount Everest (29,000), and Kinchinjunga (28,156). In clear weather this magnificent snowy range may be seen in an almost continuous line from the top of some of the lower ranges near Kathmandi. South of these are numerous parallel lower ranges, varying from 16,000 to 6000 feet in height, which are broken up at intervals by cross ranges, thus forming a series of glens with a few hill-girt valleys inter- spersed.

These mountain ranges determine the course of the Rivers

rivers, which are divided by the cross ranges into four groups. The first of these extends from Kumaon eastward as far as Diwalgiri, and consists of the affluents of the Kali, Sarju, Kurnali, Eastern Sarju, and Rapti, all of which ultimately form the Gogra or Gogari, and flow into the

a Bi

Yi (t 7 ine OE aa,

Z|

x ‘

3 =

. GS Zins Di Ni Li tf

Ne

‘ Mt Ys

d Fe ARS Sioa TAR han, Si WS 4 Cine,

Mu eh eT sal QM IED

SS ZT

Map of Nepal.

Ganges. The second group, known to the Nepalese as the Sapt Gandaki, rise from the peaks between Diwalgiri and Gosain Than, and unite at Trebéni Ghat to form the Gandak. The third is a group of smaller rivers draining the great valley of Nepal, the valleys of Chitlong, Banépa, and Panouti, and portions of the terai around the Chiriyaghati range of hills) These are the various branches of the Bur Gandak, the lesser Rapti, the Bagmati, and Kumla. Last of this again is the fourth group, known to the Nepalese as the Sapt Kisi, rising from the peaks between Gosain Than and Kinchinjunga, and uniting to form the San Kisi, which falls into the Ganges.

There is thus a natural division of the country into four portions. The most western is the country of the Baisi (or twenty-two) rajas, and contains the towns of Jumla, Doti, and Sulliana. The second is the country of the Chaubisi (or twenty-four) rajas, and contains the towns of Malebum, Palpa, Gorkha, and Noakote. The third is the district containing Nepal proper, with the capital and many large towns to be mentioned afterwards. The fourth is the eastern portion of Nepal, comprising the country of the Kiratis, and many small towns, such as Khatang and Bijapur.

In a country possessing such a range of altitudes the flora and fauna are of course very varied, and the transi- tions from those of tropical to those of temperate and alpine regions are very rapid. For descriptive purposes, Nepal may again be divided into three longitudinal zones. These are—(1) the terai and lower ranges of hills up to 4000 feet in height ; (2) the central ranges and high-lying valleys, up to 10,000 feet ; and (3) the alpine region, from 10,000 to 29,000 feet in height. These zones are not, however, sharply defined, as the climate varies according to the latitude, the height of intermediate ranges, and the depth of the valleys; so that tropical plants and animals are sometimes found far in the interior, and the more northern species descend along the loftier spurs into the southern zones.

The low alluvial land of the terai is well adapted for Flora,

cultivation, and is, so to speak, the granary of Nepal; but owing to scantiness of population and other causes the greater portion of it consists of swamps, jungles, and forests. The productions here are those of British

India,— consisting of cotton, rice, wheat, pulse, sugar-cane, tobacco, opium, indigo,,and the fruits and vegetables familiar in the plains of India. The forests yield a magnificent

Fauna.

Minerals.

Races.

NEPAL

supply of sal, sisi, and other valuable forest trees ; and the jungles abound with acacias, mimosas, cotton tree (Bombax), dik (Butea frondosa), large bamboos, rattans, palms, and numerous ferns and orchids. On the Chiriyaghati range the common Pinus longifolia grows freely. Tea can be grown on the borders of this and the next zone at a height of from 2000 to 4000 feet. The middle zone supplies rice, wheat, maize, barley, oats, ginger, turmeric, chillies, potatoes, Cucurbitacex, pine- apples, and many varieties of European fruits, vegetables, and flowers. The forests contain tree rhododendrons, Pinus longifolia, oaks, chestnuts, walnuts, maples, hill bamboos, wild cherry, pear, allies of the tea plant, paper plants (Daphne), roses, and many other inhabitants of temperate climes, with various orchids, ferns, and wild flowers. In thealpine zone exist Coniferx of many kinds, junipers, yew, box, hollies, birch, dwarf rhododendrons, and the usual alpine flora.

The wild animals follow a similar distribution, and the following typical species may be mentioned. In the lowest zone are found the tiger, leopards, wolves, hyzenas, and jackals, the elephant and rhinoceros, the gaur (Gaveus gaurus), gayal (Gaveus frontalis), wild buffalo or arna, many species of deer, and the black bear (Ursus labiatus). Among the birds are found the pea-fowl, francolins, wild jungle fowl, and the smaller vultures, &c. In the middle zone there are leopards the Himalayan black bear (Ursus tibetanus), the wild dog, cats of many sorts, squirrels, hares, porcupines, the pangolin, and some species of deer and antelope. Among the birds are the larger vultures and eagles, the fowl pheasants (Gallophasis), chukor, hill partridges, &c. In the alpine zone are found the true bear (Ursus isabellinus,

or brown bear), the yak, musk deer, wild goats and sheep, marmots, &c. Among the birds are the eagle-vulture (Gypaetus), the blood pheasant (Ithaginis cruentus), snow pheasant (T'etraogallus hima- layensis), snow partridge (Lerwa nivicola), the horned and crested pheasants, &c. Geese, ducks, waders of all sorts, and other migratory birds are found in abundance in the two lower zones,

The lowest zone in some directions abounds in fossils ; and deposits of lignite, and even of true coal, are met with, the latter notably at a spot south of Palpa. The middle zone is rich in limestone and marbles, and abounds with minerals, such as iron, copper, zinc, lead, and sulphur. Copper is found near the surface in many places, and there are remains of mines both at Markhu and in the great valley of Nepal. Mineral springs, both hot and cold, are numerous. Traces of silver, and also of gold, have been found in the alpine zone.

The races occupying Nepal are very numerous. 'To the north, inhabiting the higher mountains and valleys, dwell the Bhotiyas or Tibetans. To the west lie the Gurungs and Magars. The Murmis, Gorkhalis, and Newars occupy the central parts; and the Kiratis, Limbiis, and Lepchas occupy the eastern districts. Besides these there are many small tribes residing in the terai and some other malarious districts, known as Daris, Bhramus, Kumhas, Manjis, &c., but generally classed together by the Nepalese as Aoulias, or dwellers in the malarious or aoul districts. These are probably descendants of immigrants from the lower castes of Hindus, occupying the borderlands of the terai. Among the forests of the lower eastern region are also to be found some small savage tribes, known as Chépangs and Kusiindas.

All the races except the Gorkhalis and Aoulias are of a decidedly Mongolian appearance, being generally short and robust, and having flat faces, oblique eyes, yellow com- plexions, straight black hair, and comparatively hairless faces, The Newars, according to the Vamedvali or native

o41

history, trace their descent from the races of Bengal, but this is rendered more than doubtful both by their appear- ance and language. The Gorkhalis (Gorkhas or Ghoor- khas) are descendants of the Brahmans and Rajputs who were driven out of Hindustan by the Moslems, and took refuge in the western hilly lands, where they ultimately became the dominant race. As a rule they still retain traces of their descent in face and figure, though they have become much mixed up with the other races by intermarriage.

The Bhotiyas, Newars, Limbiis, Keratis, and Lepchas are Re. all Buddhists, but their religion has become so mixed up ligions. with Hinduism that it is now hardly recognizable. The Newars have entirely abandoned the monastic institutions of Buddhism, and have in great measure adopted the rules of caste, though even these sit but lightly upon them. They burn their dead, eat the flesh of buffaloes, goats, sheep, ducks, and fowls, and drink beer and spirits. The Gorkhalis, Magars, and Gurungs are Hindus, but the last two are by no means strict in the observance of their religion, though there are some peculiarities which they carefully preserve. Thus, for instance, the Magars will eat pork but not buffalo's flesh, whereas the Gurungs eat the buffalo but not the hog.

The various races have all separate languages, or at Lan- least dialects. The Gdorkhalis use Parbatiya, a modern guages. dialect of Sanskrit, which is also used by the western tribes. The Newars have a distinct language and alphabet, or rather alphabets, for three are known to their pandits, though only one is now in use. Their language greatly resembles the Tibetan, but is now corrupted with many Sanskrit words. The Bhotiyas use the Tibetan language and alphabet.

There are no public schools nor provision for education ; Educa- but the children of all well-to-do people are taught by the tion. family priests or their parents; and some of the higher classes send their children to be educated at Patna, Benares, or Calcutta, so that many of them speak English flucntly. The bulk of the labouring classes is quite illiterate.

The modern literature of the country is undeserving of Litera- notice, being of the most frivolous description ; but Nepal ture. is a perfect storehouse of

ancient Sanskrit literature, and some of the oldest MSS. in that language as yet known to scholars have been found there.

The portion of Nepal, exclusive of the terai, which is Route

open to Europeans is the “valley of Nepal,” containing into the capital of the country, and a few adjacent smaller cual valleys. There is only one means of access used by Europeans, and this indeed isin general resorted to by the natives, as the other routes to the capital are longer and far more difficult. The road runs nearly north from Segowli, passing through the terai and sal forests, to Bichiakori ; then through the beds of mountain streams, through a pass in the Chiriyaghati range, and through another sal forest, to Hetoura; thence by a wide and good road to Bhimphedi at the foot of the Sisaghuri range of hills. So far the route is practicable for carts and baggage animals, but from this point the road is a mere rugged footpath over the mountains, through the Chitlong valley- and over the Chandragiri range. The distance from Segowli to Kathmandii is 90 miles.

The valley in extreme length from east to west is about 20 miles, and in breadth from north to south about 15. The surrounding hills vary in height from 6000 to 9720 feet, the level of the valley itself being about 4500 feet above the sea. Tradition has it that Nepal was once a lake, and appearances are in favour of this view. It is crossed longitudinally by a low limestone range, through which the waters have gradually forced a passage, and in

Climate.

Priests.

Astro- logers.,

Baids.

Diseases.

like manner the collected rivers have escaped at the south- east corner of the valley. The former fissure, at Chowbahal, is said to have been made by Vishnu, and the latter by Bodhisatwa Manjusri.

The surface of the valley consists of a series of table- lands (tars) and wide beds of streams (khélas), with here and there a few well-wooded knolls, generally surmounted by temples.

There are three principal streams, the Bagmati, Vishnu- mati, and Manohra, besides many small tributaries of these. All the rivers rise within the valley, except the Bag- mati, which springs from the northern side of the Seopiiri peak, and enters the valley through a ravine at the north- east corner. They all unite and pass through a long narrow gorge in the limestone range, already mentioned, at Chowbahal, and ultimately escape from the valley at Kotwaldar.

There are three large towns, Kathmandi, the capital, with some 50,000 inhabitants, Patan with about 30,000, and Bhatgion with 30,000 also. The houses are from two to four stories in height, built of brick, and tiled. The windows and balconies are of wood, and are elaborately carved, There are numerous handsome temples in all the towns, the majority of which are pagoda-shaped and built of brick, with roofs of copper, which is sometimes gilt. The streets are narrow, and they, as well as the squares, are all paved with brick or stone. In front of the temples generally stand monoliths surmounted by figures of Garir, or of the founder, made of brass gilt, or sometimes of black stone. Besides these three large towns, there are at least twenty smaller towns, and numerous villages, all of which possess many temples. Some of these, as for instance those of Pashupati, Bodh- natha, and Symbhunatha, are considered of great sanctity. Many thousands of pilgrims come at one festival to worship at Pashupati, and it is there that the dying are brought to be immersed in the Bagmati, the dead are burned, and satis are immolated.

In Nepal, as in India, the year may be divided into the rainy, cold, and hot seasons. The rains begin in June and last till October, but the fall is not so heavy or continuous as in the plains of Hindustan. The cold season extends from the middle of October to the middle of April. During these months the climate is delicions. Hoar-frost and thin ice are common in the moruings,

and the thermometer sometimes falls as low as 25° Fahr., but the days are bright and warm. From Christmas to the end of February there are occasional showers of rain; and snow falls on the sur- rounding low ranges, but is very rarely seen in the valley itsclf. From April to the beginning of the rains is the hot season, but the thermometer seldom reaches 85° in the shade. The result of observations extending over many years gives an average inean temperature of 60° Fahr., and an annual rainfall of abont 60 inches. Violent thunderstorms are not uncommon, and occasionally severe earthquakes occur, as in 1838 and 1866, on the former of which occasions there were great destruction of houses and loss of life in all the large towns.

Where temples are so numerous (there are 2738 shrines in the valley) priests naturally abound, both of the Hindu and Buddhist religions. The festivals too are many in number, and in conse- quence holidays are incessant. The raj gurt, or high priest, is an influential person in the state, a member of council, and has a large income from Government lands as well as from the fines for offences against caste, &. Many other priests, gurus and purohits, have lands assigned to them, and most of the temples have been richly endowed by their founders. Every family of rank has a. special priest, whose office is hereditary.

Astrologers are also numerous, and their services are in constant request. One cannot build a house, set: out on a journey, com- mence a war, or even take a dose of pliysic, without having an auspicious moment selected for him.

All families of good position have at least one baid, or medical man, in constant attendance, and there are also many general practitioners. There are no hospitals nor dispensaries, except the small one attached to the British residency, which is much fre- quented by the poor. The diseases most prevalent in the country are rheumatism, chronic dyspepsia, skin diseases, syphilis, goitre, and leprosy.

In the rains a number of cascs of mild intermittent

fever, diarrhcea, and dysentery are met with. Fever of a severe typhoid type is eommon in the crowded lanes and dirty villages ; and cholera, when it does break out, commits fearful ravages. Smallpox is almost always present, in‘consequence of inoculation being greatly resorted to by the Parbatiyas, whilst the Newars neither vaccinate nor inoculate. Of late years vaccination has been considerably practised by the residency surgeons, especially among the Bhotiyas and the children of the higher ranks,

Much attention is devoted by the Gorkhilis to military matters, and the bulk of that race may be said to be soldiers, The standing army consists of about 16,000 men, divided into twenty-six regiments of infantry and two regiments of artillery. Besides this force there is a reserve, consisting of men who have served for a few years and taken their discharge, but who in case of necessity can be called on again to enter the ranks. The regiments are formed on the European system, and similarly drilled and officered. The arms are various, from the old flint musket to the most modern breech-loading rifle. Each man also carries a bayonet and a kukhri or native knife. The followers of some of the petty hill rajas are still armed with khoras (heavy curved swords) and bows and arrows. The cavalry is on a very small scale, consisting of only about one hundred men, as the country is not suited for horse exercise. The artillery, however, is on a larger scale, consisting of two regiments ; and there is also an attempt at horse artillery. Of late years four mountain batteries drawn by mules have been established. There is a large arsenal well provided with supplies of gunpowder and military stores. There are extensive workshops too, where cannon are east, and rifles and ammunition of all sorts turned out in large quantities. In the last war with Tibet, in 1854, when the resources of the country were strained to the utmost, the field force consisted of 27,000 men, with 29,000 yartially armed coolies and eamp followers, and 390,000 eae baggage coolies. About 7000 fighting men only were left to garrison the country.

While the Gorkhalis are occupied in military affairs, the agricul- ture of the valley is carried on by the Newars. The soil is varied in character, from light micaceous sand to dense ferruginous clay, The whole valley is cultivated and irrigated where practicable, and the slopes of the hills are carefully terraced, so that there is little grazing ground, and few sheep or cattle are kept. There are some milch cows and buffaloes, which are either stall-fed or

grazed in the jungles at the foot of the hills. Animals for consumption and sacri- fice are all imported, and are consnmed as fast as they are brought in. In the cold season the Bhotiyas bring large flocks of sheep and goats laden with bags of borax, salt, and saltpetre. These are sold for consumption, exeept a few that are retained to carry back the bags. These droves are generally accompanied by ponies and some of the large Tibetan dogs. These dogs are powerful, fierce, shaggy animals, about the size of a small Newfoundland dog. Poultry are kept and used by the Newars, especially ducks, the eggs of which are in great demand even among the orthodox Hindus. The crops grown in the valley consist of rice, both the transplanted and the dry-sown or gyah varieties, wheat, pulse, murwah, maize, buck-wheat, chillies, radishes, mustard, garlic, onions, ginger, turmeric, sugar-cane, potatoes, ground nuts, many species of cucumbers and pumpkins, &c. Space will not allow a description to be given of the modes of cultivating these. Nothing but articles of food is allowed to be grown in the valley; hence its capabilities for pro- ducing tea, cotton, and tobacco are unknown. All of these, how- ever, are grown in other districts, both in the hills and the terai. Large cardamoms are extensively grown at the base of the hills, and form an important article of export. The hemp plant (Cannabis indica) grows wild, and is used both for manufactur. iug purposes and for producing the resinous extract and other intoxicating products which are exported. Plants producing dyes, such as madder or manjit, are grown in some places; and drugs, such as chirata and atees, are collected and exported. The better class of soils yields a return of about Rs, 180 per khait, and the poorest about Rs. 90 per khait. From some of the finer soils as many as three crops of various sorts are obtained annually. The land-measures in use aré the jana=75 square yards, 4 janas=1 ropni, 25 ropnis=1 khait, or 7500 square yards.

The Newars are also fond of horticulture. Many European

fruits, flowers, and vegetables have been introduced during the last culture.

fifty years, and grow freely. The country is famous for its oranges and‘pine-apples. Flowers are grown and sold for religious purposes, and even wild flowers are brought into the market and much used by the Newar women in adorning their hair, as well as for offerings at the shrines. Many wild fruits

are collected and sold in the markets. Apples and pears, of English stock, thrive well; apricots and plums are good ; peaches and grapes grow freely and are of large size, but they seldom ripen before the rains begin, when they rot.

Army.

Agricul. ture.

Horti-

All the trade and manufactures of the country are in the hands Trade.

of the Newars, and a few Kashmiris and natives of Hindustan. The trade in European goods is chiefly carricd on by the latter, whilst the Newars deal in corn, oil, salt, tobacco, and articles of domestic manufacture. The trade with India is carried on at

Manu- factures.

Coinage.

Govern- ment.

NP A lL

numerous marts along the frontier, at each of which a customs station is established, and the taxes are collected by a thikadar, or farmer. The Newars also carry on the trade with Tibet, through a colony which has been for many years established at Lhasa. There are two principal .routes to Tibet. One of these runs north-east from Kathmandi to the frontier-station of Kuti or Nilam, crossing the Himalayan range at a height of 14,000 feet; the other passes out of the valley at the north-west corner, and runsat first upwards along the main branch of the Gandak, crossing the Himalayas, near Kirong, at a height of 9000 feet. All goods on these routes are carried on men's backs, except the salt, &c., carried in bags by the Bhotiya sheep and goats. The principal imports from Hindu- stan are raw cotton, cotton goods, woollen goods, silks and velvets, hardware, cutlery, beads, jewels, coral,

saddlery, shoes, guns, gun- powder, vermilion, indigo, lac, tea, betel-nut, spices, paper, sugar, tobacco, oils, sheet copper, goats, cattle, buffaloes; and from Tibet, musk, medicines, yaks' tails, tea, woollen cloth, blankets, borax, salt, saltpetre, paper-plant, honey, wax, sheep, goats, yaks, ponies, silver, gold. The exports to Hindustan include wax, paper-plant, musk, yaks' tails, medicines, cardamoms, borax, sul- phate of copper, brass pots, iron pots, ponies, elephants, hawks, hides and horns (buffalo), rice, ghee, oil seeds, red chillies, madder, potatoes, oranges; and to Tibet, broad cloth, raw cotton, cotton goods, tobacco, sugar, opium, coral, jewels, pearls, spices, betel- nut, copper pots, iron pots, and hardware.

To estimate the exact value of such an extensive trade, passing through so many channels, is almost impossible, especially as the Nepalese are utterly regardless of statistics. Recent estimates, however, value the exports and imports to and from the British provinces at £1,686,000 annually ; and the value of those to and froin Tibet is probably at least half that amount. Duties are levied on exports and imports, which will be noticed under the head of revenue.

The Newars are skilful workmen. Their bricks are excellent, and so also is their pottery, for which certain towns are famous, such as Thémi and Noadkote. As carpenters they excel, though the use of the large saw is still unknown, and planks are cut with chisel and mallet. Some of the wood carvings on the temples and large houses are most artistic in design and bold in execution, though unfortunately they are too often of a most obscene character. The manufactures are few, consisting chiefly of coarse cotton cloths, paper made of the inner bark of the paper-plants (Daphne), bells, brass and iron utensils, weapons, and ornaments of gold and silver.

At one time Nepal supplied Tibet with its silver coinage, but this was abandoned on account of the adulterations introduced by the Nepalese. The ancient coins, specimens of which are still to be met with, were made by hand.! The modern coinage is struck by machinery, a regular mint having been established by Sir Jung Bahadur at Kathmandi.

Gold. Silver. Copper. Value in o Value in Value in | Wee | Anglo-Indian | Nepalese | sngio-indian | Nepalese) aneio-Indian Coin. : Coin. Coin. ie Re At Bs R. A. P Ashraff…) 2 Ripi.. 013 4 Paisa…... 0 0 2 eHtlCser, 2. Mohar

0 6 8 hid coaeees 0 0 0% bonne DUS ipegon 0 3 4 Perec ie 4 Stk …..... 01 8 mere On Se Aig… 0 0 10 conan 00 5

The gold coinage and the silver rupee are seldom seen, the ordinary

currency consisting of the copper dims and paisa, and the mdhar

orhalf rupee. Besides the machine-made paisa two other kinds are In general use, One, the Bhutwaliya paisa, is made at Teusan in the Palpa district, and consists of a square lump of pure copper with a rough stamp on it. The other, the Lohiya paisa, is also a rough square lump of copper, but is much adulterated with iron. It is chiefly used in the eastern districts. The total coinage in 1875-76 was—silver méhars, Rs. 214,000; Bhutwaliya paisa, Rs, 186,000 ; Lohiya paisa, Rs. 43,000 ; flat paisa, Rs, 123,000.

However fond the Nepalese may be of asserting their independ- ence, there is no doubt that they acknowledge the supremacy of China, as they periodically send an embassy with presents to Peking. The British too have considerable influence with the Government In regard to their foreign relations; but in all matters of domestic policy the Nepalese brook no interference, and they are most jealous of anything that has a tendency to encroach on their inde- pendence.

Theoretically the government of Nepal is a pure despotism, and the raja is paramount. Practically, for the last century, all real power has been in the hands of a prime minister and his faction ; es

1 Some of the more antique are valuable to archeologists and historians on account of the dates and inscriptions. Specimens have been sent to the British Museum, the Fitzwilliam Museum at Cambridge, and to some Continental museums. Most of these have been examined by Mr C. Bendall, and described in his papers on the subjeet.

and much of the modern history of the country consists of accounts of the struggles of the various factions for power. Under the prime minister there is a council, cousisting of the relations of the king, the raj guri, the generals,

and a few other officials known as kajis and sirdars, which is consulted on all important business, and which forms a court of appeal for disputed cases from the courts of law. There are separate civil and criminal courts, but the distinction is not always observed, as difficult eases are often transferred from one to the other.

The old savage code with its ordeals by fire and water, and its punishments by mutilation and torture, was abolished by Sir Jung Bahadur after his return from England. Treason, rebellion, and desertion in time of war are punished by death. Bribery and peculation by public servants are punished by dismissal from office, and a fine with imprisonment, the latter of which may be commuted at the rate of Rs. 5 per meusem. Murder and the killing of cows are capital offences. Manslaughter and maiming cows are punished by imprison- ment for life, and other offences against the person or property by imprisonment or fine. Offences against caste are heavily punished by fine and imprisonment. In some cases all the offender's property is confiscated, and he and his family may even be sold as slaves. Slavery is an institution of the country, and all families of rank possess many slaves, who are employed in domestic and field labour. They are in general well treated, and are carefully protected by law. The price of slaves ranges from Rs. 100 to Rs. 200, There are three large prisons in the valley, one for males and two for females. The prisoners are kept in irons, and employed in public works of various sorts. They are allowed six pice per diem for subsistence at the capital, and five pice in other districts. There are no bankruptcy laws, and the liability of a debtor descends from father to son. The marriage laws are somewhat peculiar. Among the Gorkhilis of course the laws resemble those of other Hindus as regards the marriage of widows, polygamy, sati (suttee), &c. An offend- ing wife is imprisoned for life, and her paramour, after his guilt has been proved before the law courts, is cut down in public by the injured husband. The culprit gets a start of a few yards and runs for his life. If he escapes he is free, but in general he is tripped up by the onlookers and his fate is certain, as the husband is entitled to strike thrice with his kukhri. Among some of the hill tribes polyandry is still practised, and the Bhotiyas seem to regard the marriage tie with perfect indifference. Among the Newars, every girl, while still an infant, is married with much ceremony to a bél fruit, which is then thrown into some sacred stream. As the fate of the fruit is un- known, a Newarin is supposed never to become a widow. At the

age of puberty a husband is selected, but the woman can at any moment divorce herself by placing a betel-nut under her husband's pillow and taking her departure. Adultery is therefore but slightly punished. The woman is merely divorced, and her paramour has to make good to the husband the expenses incurred at the marriage. A Newéarin on the death of her husband may, ifshe chooses, become a sati, but the privilege is very seldom taken advantage of.

The revenue of Nepal is about ninety-six lakhs of rupees, 7.¢., £9,600,000. The chief sources of it are the land-tax, customs, mines, forests, and monopolies. About 10 per cent. of the terai lands, and 20 per cent. of the hill lands, are private property. Some lands were assigned by the Gorkhali rajas to Brahmans, soldiers, and others, and these are untaxed. Others, which were the gifts of the old Newar kings, pay from 4 to 8 annas per bigah, All such grants of laud, however, are subject to a heavy fine on the coronation ofa new raja. Land which does not produce rice is lightly taxed, but in the valley of Nepal, and wherever rice is grown, the Government tax or rent is one half of the produce of the land. 'Waste lands, when brought into cultivation, arc rent free for ten years, after which for five years the tax is only 4 annas per bigah, and the cultivator receives one-tenth of the cleared land rent free for his life. A con- siderable revenue in the shape of royalty is obtained from mines of copper, iron, &c. The taxes on merchandise amount to from 12 to 14 per cent. on the value of the goods carried to and from British India, and from 5 to 6 per cent. is charged on goods exported to Tibet. The revenue, when collected by the various stbas, is trans- mitted under an cscort to the Government treasury, and at the end of the year the surplusis deposited in the Mul Dhukati,.or Govern-

ment cellars, whence it is never withdrawn except in great emer-

gencies. A ycarly surplus has been accumulating in this manner for many ycars,

There are three principal eras in use in Nepal. The Samvat of Vikramaditya commences fifty-seven years before the Chistian era, the Saka era of Sadlivahana begins seventy-eight years after the Christian era, and the Nepalese Samvat dates from October 880 A.D. 'The Sri-Harsha and Kaligat eras are also sometimes used. The measurement of time is regulated by a

copper vessel with a small hole in the bottom, which is floated on water and fills and sinks sixty times a day. Each time it sinks a gong or ghari is struck, in progressive numbers from dawn to noon ; after

Revenue.

Calendar.

History.

o44

noon the first ghari struck indicates the number of gharis which remain of the day till sunset. Day is considered to begin when the tiles on a house can be counted, or when the hairs on the back of a man's hand can be discerned against the sky. Sixty bipalis=1 pala; 60 palas=1 ghari or 24 minutes; 60 gharis=1 day of 24 hours.

Nepal and the somewhat similar country of Kashmir are peculiar among the Hindu states of India in possessing an historical literature. The Nepalese Vamgavalt professes to start from a very early period in the Satya Yuga, when the present valley was still a lake. The earlier portion of it is devoted to the Satya and Tréta Yugas, and contains inythological tales and traditions having reference to various sacred localities in the country. During these two Yugas, and also the Dwapur Yuga, the Vamedvali deals in round numbers of thousands of years,

In the beginning of the Kali Yuga, the Gupta dynasty is said to have been founded by Né-Muni, from whom the country takes its name of Nepal. Lists are then given of the various dynasties, with the lengths of the reigns of the rajas. The dynasties mentioned are the Gupta, Ahir, Kirati, Somavanshi, Suryavanshi, Thakuri or Rajput, Vaishya Thakuri, second Rajput, and Karna- taki dynasties. The country was then invaded by Mukunda- séna, and after his expulsion various Vaishya Thakuri dynasties are said to have held the throne for a period of 225 years. The chronology of the Vamgdvali up to this period is very confused and inaccurate; and, though the accounts of the various invasions and internal struggles, mixed up as they are with grotesque legends and tales, may be interesting and amusing, they can

hardly be considered authentic. Some of the names of the rajas, and the dates of their reigns, have been determined by coins, the colophons of old MSS., and certain inscriptions on the temples and ancient buildings. For instance, Ancu- varma, of the Thakuri dynasty, reigned about 633 A.p., as he is mentioned by the Chinese traveller Hwen Tsang, who visited Nepal. His name too is found in an inscription still extant. In like manner it is ascertained from MSS. that Rudra-déva-Varma was reigning in 1008; Lakshmikama-déva from 1015 to 1040; Padma-déva, of the Vaishya Thakuri dynasty, in 1065; Mana- déva, of the second Rajput dynasty, in 1139; Ananta-Malla, 1286-13802; Harisinha-déva, 13824; Jayastithi-Malla, 1385-1391. Much information as to the chronology of the various dynasties can be obtained from the catalogue of the Cambridge MSS. com- piled by Mr Cecil Bendall, M.A., and also from his papers on the ancient coins of the country. Inscriptions too have been edited by Professor Bihler in the Indian Antiquary, vol. ix. Detailed lists of the rajas are to be found in Kirkpatrick's Account of Nepal, in Hodgson's Hssays, Prinsep's papers in the Asiatic Socicty's Journal, and Wright's History of Nepal.

The records begin to be more accurate from the time of the in- vasion and conquest of the country by Harisinha-déva, the raja of Simraungarh, 1324. This raja was driven from Simraungarh by Tughlak Shah of Delhi, but seems to have found little difficulty in the conquest of Nepal. There were only four rajds of this Ayodhya dynasty, aud thenthe throne was occupied by Jayabhadra- Malla, a descendant of Abhaya-Malla, one of the Rajput dynasty, who reigned in the 13th century. There were eight rajas of this dynasty. The seventh, Jayastithi-Malla, who reigned for forty- threc years (1386-1429), appears to have done much in forming codes of laws, and introducing caste and its rules among the Newars. In the reign of the eighth raja, Yaksha-Malla, the kingdom was divided into four separate states,—namely, Banépa, Bhatgion or Bhaktapur, Kantipur or Kathmandi, and Lalitapur or Patan. There was only one raja of Banépa, who died without issue. The Malla dynasty in the other three branches continued in power up to the conquest of the country by the Gorkhilis in 1768.

The Gérkhalis (Ghorkhas or Ghoorkas) claim descent from the rajas of Chitaurgarh, in Rajputana, near Tonk. They were driven out of their own country by the victorious Moslems, and took refuge in the hilly districts

about Kumaon, whence they gradually pushed their way eastwards to Lamjung, Gorkha, Noakote, and ultimately to the valley of Nepal, and as far as Sikhim.

Prithiwi-narayana Sah came to the throne in 1742. From an early period he seems to have devoted all his energies to the con- quest of Nepal, but it took him upwards of twenty-five years to accomplish his object. During the early part of the 18th century Nepal was visited by Italian missionaries, who founded a mission at Patan, which appears to have been in a flourishing state at the time of the Gérkhali invasion. Father Giuseppe has given a short account of the conquest in vol. ii, of the Astatic Rescarches, the details of which are fully corroborated by the Vamedvalt. Strange to say, that work contains no reference whatever to the presence of Christians in the country. Prithiwi-narayana entered Kathmandi in 1768, and in the course of the following year also conquered Patan and Bhatgion. In the final struggle, which took place at Bhatgaon, Jayaprakdsa (the raja of Kathmandi) was wounded, and shortly afterwards he dicd at Pashipati. Ranjit-Malla, the aged raja of Bhatgion, was allowed to retire to Benares, where he ended his days. Téj Narsinha, the raja of Patan, was kept in confine-

ment tillhisdeath. During the latter years of the war Jayaprakasa applied to the British for assistance, and a small force, under Captain Kinloch, was scnt into the tcrai in 1765, but it was repulsed by the Gorkhas.

Prithiwi-narayana diedin 1774. He left two sons, Pratapa-sinha Sah and Bahadur Sah. The former succeeded his father, but died in 1777, leaving an infant son, Rana Bahadur Sah. On the death of Pratapa-sinha, his brother, who had been in exile, returned to Nepal and became regent. The mother of the infant king, how- ever, was opposed to him, and he had again to flee to Bettiah, where he remained till the death of the rani, when he again became regent, and continued so till 1795. During this time the Gorkhas were busily annexing all the neighbouring petty statcs, so that in 1790 their territories extended from Bhutan to Kashmir, and from Tibet to the British provinces. At length, in 1790, they invaded Tibet, and were at first successful; but they were thus brought into contact with the Chinese, who in 1791 sent a large

force to invade Nepal. In 1792 the Chinese advanced as far as Noakote, and there dictated terms to the Nepalese.

In 1791 the Gorkhas had entered into a commercial treaty with the British, and hence, when hard pressed, they applied for assistance against the Chinese to Lord Cornwallis. In consequence of this Colonel Kirkpatrick was despatched to Nepal, and reached Noakote in the spring of 1792, but not till after peace had been concluded. One result of this embassy was the ratification of another commercial treaty on 1st March 1792.

In 1795 Rana Bahadur removed his uncle, Bahadur Sah, from the regency, and two years subsequently put him to death. From this time up to 1799 the king, who seems to have been insane, per- petrated the most barbarous outrages, till at length his conduct became so intolerable that he was forced to abdicate in favour of his son, Girvan-yuddha Vikrama Sah, who was still an infant. Rana Bahadur once again recovered the throne in 1804, but was assassinated in 1805.

In October 1801 another treaty was signed by the British and Nepalese authorities, and Captain W. D. Knox was appointed resident at the Nepalese court, which he reached in April 1802. He soon became dissatisfied with the conduct of the Nepalese, and he was withdrawn in 1803. From this time the Nepalese carried on a system of encroachment and outrage on the frontier, which led to a declaration of war by the British in November 1814. At first the British attacks were directed against the western portion of the Nepalese territory, and under Generals Marly, Wood, and Gillespie several disasters were met with. General Gillespie himsclf was killed while leading an assault on a small fort called Kalunga. General Ochterlony was more successful, and the Gorkhas were driven beyond the Kali river, and began to negotiate for peace. Arms, however, were soon taken up again, and Ochterlony, who was put in command, in January 1816, advanced directly on the capital in the line of the route that is now in use. He soon fought his way as far as Mukwanpur, and the Nepalese sued for peace.

From this time the records for many years furnish little of interest except a history of struggles for office between the Thapa and Panre factions, and futile attempts at forming combinations with other states in Hindustan against the British.

In 1817 Dr Wallich visited Nepal, and pursued his botanical researches for a year.

In 1839 Bhimaséna's enemies succeeded in driving him from power, and he committed suicide, or was murdered, in prison. The Kala Panré faction then came into power, and there were frequent grave disputes with the British. War, however, was averted by the exertions of the resident, Mr B. H. Hodgson.

In 1843 Matabar Singh, the nephew of Bhimaséna, returned from exile, soon got into favour at court, and, as a necessary conse- quence, speedily effected the destruction of his old enemies the Kala Panrés, who were seized and executed in May 1843. At this time mention begins to be made of a nephew of Matabar Singh, Jung Bahadur, the eldest of a band of seven brothers, sons of a kaji or state official. He rose rapidly in the army and in favour at the court, especially with one of the ranis, who was of a most intrigu- ing disposition. In 1844 he was a colonel in the army, and Matabar Singh expressed some alarm at his growing influence to Sir Henry (then Major) Lawrence, the resident at the time. This alarm proved well founded, for on the 18th of May 1845 Jung Bahadur effected the murder of his uncle, and immediately thereafter, with the aid of the rani, took a prominent part in the government. After a short but turbulent interval of intrigue, Jung Bahadur determined to get rid of his enemies at one fell swoop, and most thoroughly carried out his design by what is known as the Kot massacre, on the 15th September 1846. From that time till the day of his death Jung Bahadur was in reality the ruler of Nepal. His old friend, the intriguing rani, was banished, and all posts of any

consequence in the state were filled by Jung, his brothers, and other relatives. In 1850, finding himself sccurely seated in power, Jung Bahadur paid a visit to England, which made a great impression on his acute intellect, and ever after le professed and proved himself to be a staunch friend of the British. On his return in 1851, he at once devoted himself to reforming the administration of the country. Every department in the state

in turn felt the benefit of his resolute will, and, whatever may have been the means by which he gaincd power, it must be allowed that he exercised it so as to prove himsclf the greatest benefactor his country has ever possessed. In 1853 a treaty for the extradition of eriminals was proposed, but it was not ratified till February 1855. In 1854 the Nepalese entered into a war with Tibet, which lasted with varying success till March 1856, when peace was concluded on terms very favourable to Nepal.

In June 1857 intelligence of the mutiny of the native troops in

Ilindustan reached Nepal, and produced much excitement. Jung Bahadur, in spite of great opposition, stood firm as a friend of the British. Ou the 26th June 4000 troops were sent off to assist, and these rendered good service in the campaign against the mutineers. Jung himself followed on the 10th of 'December, with a force of 8000 men, 500 artillerymen and 24 guns, but some- what late to be of much use. Many of the mutineers and rcbels, including the infamous Nana Sahib, took refuge in the Nepalese tcrai, and it was not till the end of 1859 that they were finally swept out of the country. The Nana was said to have died of fever in the terai, along with several others of the rebel leaders, and it is probable that this was the case, although for many years tales were circulated of his being still alive, and of his having been seen in various parts of Nepal and British India. His wives and a few attendants resided for many years near Kathmandi.

In return for the aid afforded to the British, Jung Bahadur was well rewarded. He was ereated a G.C.B., and in 1873 a G.C.S.1., honours of which he was not a little proud. The troops employed received food and pay from the day of leaving Kathmandi; hand-

some donations were given to those severely wounded, and to the |

relatives of the killed; great quantities of muskets and rifles were presented to the Nepalese Government; and, to crown all, a large portion of the terai was restored to Nepal. This ground contains most valuable sal and sist forests, and yields a revenue of several lakhs of rupecs yearly.

From the termination of the mutiny Nepalese history has been uneventful. The country has becn prosperous, and the relations with the British have

continued to be most friendly. Nevertheless the restrictions on commerce, and the prohibitions against Europeans entering the country, or travelling beyond certain narrow limits, are as rigidly enforced as they were a hundred years ago. Sir Jung Bahadur died suddenly in the terai in 1877. In spite of all the exertions he had made to bring about a better state of things, three of his wives were allowed to immolate themsclves on his funeral pyre. His brother, Sir Ranadip Singh Bahadur, G.C.S.1, succeeded him as prime minister. Shortly after his accession to power a plot was formed against him, but he showed himself as prompt to meet such an emergency as his late brother had been, for nearly forty of the conspirators were seized and executed in a summary manner, and others, who escaped, are now living in exile.

The rajas of the Gérkhali line in Nepal, with dates of accession, are—Prithiwi-narayana Sah (1768), Pratapa-sinha Sah (1774), Rana Bahadur Sah (1777), Girvan-yuddha Vikrama Sah (1799), Rajendra Vikrama Sah (1816), Surendra Vikrama Sah (1847), Prithiwi Vir Vikrama Sah (1881). (D. WR.)

NEPHRITE. See Japs.

NEPOMUK, Sr Joun or. See Joun, vol. xiii. p. 718.

NEPOS, Cornerius, a Roman historian, friend of Catullus, Cicero, and Pomponius Atticus, was probably a native of Verona. Nothing is known of his life, but he is recorded to have written a universal history under the title Chronica, letters to Cicero, and other works, especially a series of biographies styled De Viris Illustribus. It is one of the problems of Latin literature whether or not any of these works have been preserved. There is a series of biographies, chiefly of Greek generals, first printed at Venice in 1471 under the title Mmilii Probi de Vita Excellentiwm. Other later editions bear slightly varying titles, and add the lives of Catoand Atticus, Many MSS. expressly assign the last to Cornelius Nepos, and in 1569 Lambinus, in a famous edition of the Lives, maintained that the whole of them were the work of Nepos. The chief argument in favour of this view is founded on the language, which is a model of chaste, elegant Latinity. The view of Lambinus has been very generally accepted ;

| province of Auvergne.

the only question debated is whether all the lives are in the original condition, or whether some of them have been modified or abridged by Aumilius Probus. The editions of Nepos's Lives are extremely numerous, the book having long been much read in schools.

NEPOS, Junius, the last but one of the Roman emperors of the West, from 474 to 475, was a nephew of that Marcellinus who in the latter half of the 5th century had established a semi-independent principality in Dalmatia. After the death of Olybrius, on October 23, 472, the throne of the West remained for some months vacant, during which Italy was abandoned to lawless barbarians. On the 5th of March 473, the army, at the instigation of Gundobald the Burgundian, who had suc- ceeded to the power and authority of his uncle Ricimer, raised Glycerius, an obscure officer, to the imperial dignity. Meanwhile Leo I., emperor of the East, was discussing with his council the election of a new colleague for the Western empire. At length choice was made of Nepos, who married a niece of the empress Verina. After con- siderable delay he landed in Italy and took Glycerius prisoner at Portus at the mouth of the Tiber in 474. Glycerius, being compelled to enter the church, was appointed bishop of Salona. The only event of the reign of Nepos was the inglorious cession to the Visigoths of the In 475 Orestes, father of Augus- tulus, who afterwards was the last emperor of the West, raised the standard of revolt and marched against Nepos at Ravenna. The emperor fled into Dalmatia, and con- tinued to reside at Salona until his assassination by two of his own officers in 480. There exists some doubt, however, whether his death was, as Gibbon affirms, caused by his former rival, the bishop of Salona.

NEPTUNE, the Roman god of the sea, is probably adopted from Greek religion. The earliest reference to his worship is on the occasion when the Sibylline books included him among the gods to whom the first lecti- sternium was dedicated, 399 B.c, (Livy v.13). In the poets no trait of Neptune occurs that is not directly borrowed from the Greek Poseidon. His festival, Neptunalia, was celebrated on July 23, and his temple stood near the Circus Flaminius. His worship was never popular or widespread in Rome. The god Portunus was thanked for naval victories in earlier times;

but Sextus Pompey called him- self son of Neptune, and Agrippa dedicated to Neptune a temple in the Campus Martius in honour of the naval victory of Actium.

NERAC, a town of France, formerly the capital of the duchy of Albret, is situated in the department of Lot-et- Garonne, on both banks of the Bayse, a navigable tributary of the Garonne, 16 miles west-south-west of Agen. It is a pretty and flourishing little place of 4803 inhabitants (1881; commune 7384), with cloth factories, cork-works, and a number of flour-mills; the ruins of its castle are entered in the Government list of historical monuments ; and in the old royal park (La Garenne) it has one of the finest promenades of the south of France.

Roman ruins of hot baths, villas, &c., discovered at Neérac in 1831-33 show that the site must have been occupied in the 3d cen- tury. In 1250 a Benedictine monastery was established, and in 1306 the lords of Albret expelled the monks and began to build a eastle for themselves, which gradually grew into an imposing edifice. Here Marguerite d'Angouléme held court as queen of Navarre, and gathered round her the Protestant literati of her time, Beza, Marot, &c.; here Henry IV. spent a large part of his yonth ; and here Catherine de' Medici in 1579 held a conference with the Protestant leaders. The town was dismantled in 1622 by Louis XIII. because it had sided with the Protcstant party.

NERBUDDA (properly NarpapA), one of the great rivers of India, traditionally regarded as the boundary between Hindustan proper and the Deccan. It rises on the summit of Amarkantak hill in Rewah state, in 22°

41' N. lat., 89° 41' E. long,, and after a westward course of 800 miles through the Central Provinces and Guzerat, falls into the sea in 21° 38' N. lat., 72° 0' 30" E. long,, in the Bombay district of Broach. During its passage through the Central Provinces several falls interrupt its course, the principal of which are a series of glittering cascades and rapids for some hundreds of feet down the heights of Amarkantak, and the well-known falls

of the ‘“ Marble rocks” 9 miles below Jabalpur. After leaving the Central Provinces, the river widens out in the fertile district of Broach, with an average breadth of from half a mile to a mile. Below Broach city it forms an estuary which is 13 miles broad where it enters the Gulf of Cambay. The Nerbudda is nowhere utilized for irrigation, and navigation is confined to the lower section. In the rainy season boats of considerable size sail about 60 miles above Broach city. Sea-going ships of about 70 tons frequent the port of Broach, but they are entirely dependent on the tide. In sanctity the Nerbudda ranks only second to the Ganges among the rivers of India, and along its whole course are special places of pilgrimage. The most meritorious act that a pilgrim can perform is to walk from the sea to the source of the river and back along the opposite bank. This pilgrimage is chiefly undertaken by devotees from Guzerat and the Deccan, and takes from one to two years to accomplish,

NEREUS, the old man of the sea, as his name (comp. va, modern Greek vepd, water) denotes, was described in Greek legend as full of wisdom and knowledge, friéndly to men, but requiring compulsion before he reveals to them all that he knows. The struggle in which Heracles wrestles and overcomes him is a favourite subject of early Greek art; Heracles, the representative of toiling active man, bends to do his will even the. power of the sea, aAtos yépuv. The fifty daughters of Nereus, the Nereids, are personifications of the smiling, quiet sea with all the gifts which it offers to men. None of the Nereids have any individual character except Thetis, Amphitrite, and Galatea. Thetis and Amphitrite are the queen or mistress of the sea in the legend of different localities; Galatea is a Sicilian figure, who plays with and deludes her rustic lover of the shore, Polyphemus. It is impossible to treat in brief of the religious conceptions on which the mythology of Nereus is founded, or of the connexion between the early representations of Nereus and Heracles and similar subjects in pre-Hellenic art.

NERI, Purr (1515-1595). Filippo Neri, one of the most remarkable and individual figures amongst the ecclesiastics of the 16th century, was born at Florence, July 21, 1515, the youngest child of Francesco Neri, a lawyer of that city, and his wife Lucrezia Soldi, a woman of higher birth than her husband, and descended from a family whose members had held important

public offices in the time of the republic. They were both devout persons, and Francesco was accustomed to intercourse with the monastic bodies in Florence, notably with the Dominicans. The child was carefully brought up, and displayed from infancy a winning, gentle, intelligent, playful, and yet obedient disposition, which earned him the title of the "good Pippo" (on Pippo) amongst his young com- panions. He received almost his earliest teachings from the friars at San Marco, the famous Dominican monastery in Florence, and was accustomed in after life to ascribe most of his progress to the teaching of two amongst them, Zenobio de' Medici and Servanzio Mini. When he was about sixteen years old, a fire destroyed nearly all his father's property, and it became therefore expedient to seek some means of recruiting the family fortunes. His father's brother Romolo, a merchant at San Germano, a Neapolitan town in the Terra di Lavoro, near the base of

Monte Cassino, was wealthy and childless, and to him Philip was sent in 1531, to assist him in his business, and with the hope that he might inherit his possessions. So far as gaining Romolo's confidence and affection, the plan was entirely successful, but it was thwarted by Philip's own resolve to adopt the ecclesiastical calling, a determination at which he arrived in the course of frequent visits to a solitary chapel on a rock overlooking the Bay of Gaeta. In 1533 he left San Germano, and betook himself to Rome, where he found shelter, food, and protection in the house of a Florentine gentleman named Galeotto Caccia, to whose two children he became tutor, continuing in that post for several years, and pursuing his own studies independently, while also practising habitual austerities, and beginning those labours amongst the sick and poor which gained him in later life the title of " Apostle of Rome," besides paying niglitly visits for prayer and medita- tions to the basilican churches of the city, and to the catacombs. In 1538 he entered on that course of home mission work which was the distinguishing characteristic of his life, and which bears in much of its method a curious resemblance to the manner in which Socrates was accustomed to set the Athenians thinking, in that he traversed the city, seizing opportunities of entering into conversation with persons of all ranks, and of leading them on, now with playful irony, now with searching questions, and again with words of wise and kindly counsel, to consider the topics he desired to set before them.

In 1548 he founded the celebrated confraternity of the Santissima Trinit' de' Pellegrini e de' Convalescente, whose primary object is to minister to the needs of the thousands of poor pilgrims accustomed to flock to Rome, especially in years of jubilee, and also to relieve the patients discharged from hospitals, but still too weak for labour. In 1551 he passed through all the minor orders, and was ordained deacon, and finally priest on May 23. He settled down, with some companions, at the hospital of San Girolamo della Carita, and while there tentatively began, in 1556, the institute with which his name is more especially connected, that of the Oratory, after a plan he had formed of proceeding as a missionary to India was abandoned at the instance of shrewd advisers, who saw that there was abundant work to be done in Rome, and that he was the man to doit. The scheme of the Oratory at first was no more than a series of evening meetings in his own room, at which there were prayers, hymns, readings from Scripture, from the fathers, and from the J/artyrology, followed by a lecture, or by discussion of some religious question proposed for consideration. It afterwards was developed further, and the members of the society were employed in various kinds of mission work throughout Rome, notably in preaching sermons in different churches every evening, a wholly novel agency at that time. In 1564 the Florentines, who regarded themselves as having a special claim upon him as their fellow-citizen, requested him to leave San Girolamo, and to take the oversight of their peculiar church in Rome, San Giovanni dei Fiorentini, then newly built. He was at first reluctant, but the pope (Pius IV.) was induced to enjoin him to accept, permitting him, however, to retain the charge of San Girolamo, where the exercises of the Oratory were still kept up. At this time the new society included amongst its members Ceesar Baronius the ecclesiastical historian, Tarrugi, afterwards archbishop of Avignon, and Paravicini, all three subsequently cardinals, and also Gallonius, author of a well- known work on the Sufferings of the Martyrs, Ancina, Bordoni, and other men of ability and distinction.

The Florentines, however, built in 1574 a large oratory or mission-room for the society contiguous to San Giovanni, in order to save them the fatigue of the daily

journey to and from San Girolamo, and to provide a more convenient place of assembly, and the headquarters were transferred thither. As the community grew, and its mission work extended, the need of having a church entirely its own, and not subject to other claims, as were San Girolamo and San Giovanni, made itself felt, and the offer of the small parish church of Santa Maria in Vallicella, conveniently situated in the middle of Rome, was made and accepted. The building, however, as not large enough for their purpose, was pulled down, and a splendid church erected on the site. It was immediately after taking possession of their new quarters that Filippo Neri formally organized, under permission of a bull dated July 15, 1575, a community of secular priests, entitled the Congregation of the Oratory. The new church was consecrated early in 1577, and the clergy of the new society at once resigned the charge of San Giovanni dei Fiorentini, but Neri himself did not migrate from San Girolamo till 1583, and then only in virtue of an injunction of the pope that he, as the superior, should reside at the chief house of his congrega- tion. He was at first elected for a term of three years (as is usual in modern societies), but in 1587 was nominated superior for life. He was, however, entirely free from personal ambition, and had no desire to be general over a number of dependent houses, so that he desired that all congregations formed on his model outside Rome should be autonomous, governing themselves, and without endeavour- ing to retain control over any new colonies they ,might themselves send out,—a regulation afterwards formally confirmed by a brief of Gregory XV. in 1622. Much as he mingled with society, and with persons of importance in church and state, his single interference in political inatters was in 1593, when his persuasions induced the pope, Clement VIII, to withdraw the excommunication and anathema of Henry IV. of France, and the refusal to receive his ambassador, even though the king had formally abjured Calvinism. Neri saw that the pope's attitude was more than likely to drive Henry to a relapse, and probably to rekindle the civil war in France, and directed Baronius, then the pope's confessor, to refuse him absolution, and to resign his office of confessor, unless he would withdraw the anathema. Clement yielded at once, though the whole college of cardinals had supported his policy ; and Henry, who did not learn the facts till several years afterwards, testified lively gratitude for the timely and politic inter- vention. Neri continued in the government of the Oratory until his death, which took place on May 26, 1595, in the eightieth year of

his age. There are many anecdotes told of him which attest his possession of a playful humour, united with shrewd mother-wit, often urging him to acts with a ludicrous aspect, but which were well calculated to serve his purpose of divesting religion of the hyper- professional garb it wore in his day, and bringing it within the area of ordinary lay experience. This, rather than the atmosphere of supernaturalism with which he is surrounded in the various biographies of him which have appeared, and that to a much greater degree than is common in similar writings, is the true key to his popu-larity, and to the fact that his name figures often in the folk-lore of the Roman poor, whom he loved so well and served so long. He was beatificd by Paul V. in 1600, and canonized by Gregory XV. in 1622.

"Practical commonplaceness," to cite the words of Frederick William Faber in his panegyric of Philip Neri, was the special mark which distinguishes his form of ascetic piety from the types accredited before his day. " He looked like other men… . he was emphatically a modern gentleman, of scrupulous courtesy, sport- lve gaiety, acquainted with what was going on in the world, taking areal interest in it, giving and getting information, very neatly dressed, with a shrewd common sense always alive about him, in a

modern room with modern furniture, plain, it is true, but with no marks of poverty about it,—in a word, with all the ease, the

O47

gracefulness, the polish of a modern gentleman of good birth, considerable accomplishments, and a very various information." Accordingly, he was ready to meet the needs of his day to an extent and in a manner which even the versatile Jesuits, who niuch desired to enlist him in their company, did not rival; and, though an Italian priest and head of a new religious order, his genius was entirely nnmonastic and unmedieval ; he was the active promoter of vernacular services, frequent and popular preaching, unconventional prayer, and unsystematized, albeit fervent, private subjective devotion.

Philip Neri was not a reformer, save in the sense that in the active discharge of pastoral work he laboured to reform individuals. He had no difficulties in respect of the teaching and practice of his church, being in truth an ardent

Ultramontane in doctrine, as was all but inevitable in his time and circumstances, and his great merit was the instinctive tact which showed him that the system of monasticism could never be the leaven of secular life, but that something more homely, simple, and everyday in character was needed for the new time.

Accordingly, the institute he founded is of the least conventional nature, rather resembling a residential clerical club than a monastery of the older type, and its rules would have appeared incredibly lax, nay, its religious character alinost doubtful, to a Bruno, a Stephen Harding, a Francis, or a Dominic. It admits only priests aged at least thirty-six, or ecclesiastics who have completed their studies, and are ready for ordination. The mem- bers live in community, and each pays his own expenses, having the usufruct of his private means,—a startling innovation on the monastic vow of poverty. They have indeed a common table, but it is kept up preciscly as a regimental mess, by monthly payments from each member. Nothing is provided by the society except the bare lodging, and the fees of a visiting physician. Everything else —clothing, books, furniture, mcdicines—must be defrayed at the private charges of each member. There are no vows, and every member of the society is at liberty to withdraw when he pleases, and to take his property with him. The government, strikingly unlike the Jesuit autocracy, is of a republican form; and the superior, though first in honour, has to take his turn in discharging all the duties which come to each priest of the society in the order of his seniority, including that of waiting at table, which is not entrusted in the Oratory to lay brothers, according to the practice in most other communities. Four deputies assist the superior in the government, and all publie acts are decided by a majority of votes of the whole congregation, in which the superior has no casting voice. To be chosen superior, fifteen years of membership are requisite as a qualification, and the office is tenable, as all the others, for but three years at a time. No one can vote till he has been three years in the society; the deliberative voice is not obtained before the eleventh year. Each house can call its superior to account, can depose, and can restore him, without appeal to any external authority, although the bishop of the diocese in which any house of the Oratory is established is its ordinary and immediate superior, though without power to interfere with the rule. Their churches are non-parochial, and they can perform such rites as baptisms, marriages, &c., only by

permission of the parish priest, who is entitled to receive all fecs due in respect of these ministrations. The Oratory chiefly spread in Italy, but a branch established in Paris by Cardinal de Bérulle in 1611 had a great success and a distinguished history. It fell in the crash of the Revolution, but was revived by Pére Pététot, curé of St Roch, in 1852; while an English house, founded in 1847, is cclebrated as the place at which Cardinal Newman fixed his abode after his submission to the Roman Catholic Church. The socicty has never thriven in Germany, though a few houses have been founded there, in Munich and Vienna.

Authorities.—Marciano, Afemorte istoriche della Congregaztone dell Oratorio, 5 vols. folio, Naples, 1693-1702; Bacci, Life of Saint Philip Ner?, translated by

Faber, 2 vols, 8vo, London, 1847; Crispino, La Scuola di San Filippo Neri, 8vo,

Naples, 1675; Faber, Spirit and Genius of St Philip Nert, 8vo, London, 1850; Agnelii, Excellencies of the Oratory of St Philip Neri, translated by F. A. Antrobus, London, 1881; articles by F. Theiner in Wetzer und Welte's Kirchen- lexicon, and by Reuchlin in Herzog's Real-Encyklopddie. (QR. F. L.)

NERO (37-68 a.p.), Roman emperor, the only child of Cn. Domitius Ahenobarbus and the younger Agrippina, was born at Antium on December 15, 37 a.p., nine months after the death of the emperor Tiberius. Though on both his father's and his mother's side he came of the blood of Augustus, and the astrologers are said to have predicted that he would one day be emperor, the circumstances of his early life gave little presage of his future eminence. His father Domitius, at best a violent, pleasure-sceking noble, died when Nero was scarcely three years old. In the previous year (39 a.p.) his mother had been banislied by order of her brother the emperor Caligula on a charge of treasonable conspiracy, and Nero, thus early deprived

of both parents, found a bare shelter in the house of his aunt Domitia, where two slaves, a barber and a dancer, commenced the training of the future

emperor. With the death of Caligula in 41 a.p. his prospects improved, for Agrippina was recalled from exile by her uncle, the new emperor Claudius, and resumed the charge of her young son. Nero's history during the next thirteen years is summed up in the determined struggle carried on by his mother to win for him the throne which it had been predicted should be his. The fight was a hard one. Messalina, Claudius's wife, was all powerful with her husband, and her son Britannicus was by common consent regarded as the next in succession. But on the other hand Claudius was weak and easily led, and Agrippina daringly aspired to supplant Messalina in his affections. To outweigh Britannicus's claims as the son of the reigning emperor, she relied on the double prestige which attached to her own son, as being at once the grandson of the popular favourite Germanicus and the lineal descendant of Augustus himself. Above all, she may well have put confidence in her own great abilities, indomitable will, and untiring energy, and in her readiness to sacrifice everything, even her personal honour, for the attainment of the end she had in view. Her first decisive success was gained in 48 by the dis- grace and execution of Messalina. In 49 followed her own marriage with her uncle Claudius, and her recognition as his consort in the government of the empire! She now freely used her ascendency to advance the interests of her son. The Roman populace already looked with favour on the grandson of Germanicus, but in 50 his claims obtained a more formal recognition from Claudius him- self, and the young Domitius was adopted by the emperor under the title of Nero Claudius Ceesar Drusus Germanicus.2 Agrippina's next step was to provide for her son the train- ing needed to fit him for the brilliant future which seemed opening before him. The philosopher L. Annus Seneca was recalled from exile and appointed tutor to the young prince. On December 15, 51, Nero completed his fourteenth year, and Agrippina, in view of Claudius's failing health, determined to delay no longer his adoption

of the toga virilis. The occasion was celebrated in a

manner which seemed to place Nero's prospects of succes- sion beyond the reach of doubt. He was introduced to the senate by Claudius himself. The proconsular imperium and the title of "princeps juventutis" were conferred upon him. He was specially admitted as an extraordinary member of the great priestly colleges, and his name was included by the Arval Brethren in

their prayers for the safety of the emperor and his house. Largesses and dona- tions delighted the populace and the soldiery, and at the games in the circus Nero's appearance in triumphal dress contrasted significantly with the simple toga preetexta worn by Britannicus. During the next two years Agrippina followed up this great success with her usual energy. Britannicus's leading partisans were banished or put to death, and the all-important command of the preetorian guard was transferred to Afranius Burrus, formerly a tutor of Nero's, and devoted to his service. Nero himself was put prominently forward whenever occasion offered. The petitions addressed to the senate by the town of Bononia and by the communities of Rhodes and Ilium were grace- fully supported by him in Latin and Greek speeches, and during Claudius's absence in 52 at the Latin festival it was Nero who, as prefect of the city, administered justice in the forum to crowds of suitors. Early in 53 his marriage with Claudius's daughter, the ill-fated Octavia, drew still closer the ties which connected him with the

1 Tac., Ann., xii. 26, 36; see also Schiller, Vero, 67. * Tac., Ann., xii. 26; Zonaras, xi. 10. 3 Tac., Ann., xii. 41.

imperial house, and now nothing but Claudius's death seemed wanting to secure his final triumph. This event, which could not in the course of nature be long delayed, Agrippina determined to hasten, and the absence, through illness, of the emperor's trusted freedman Narcissus, favoured her schemes. On October 13, 54, Claudius died, poisoned, as all our authorities declare, by the orders of his unscrupulous wife. For some hours the fact of his death was concealed, but at noon the gates of the palace were thrown open, and Nero was presented to the soldiers on guard as their new sovereign. From the steps of the palace he proceeded to the pretorian camp to receive the salutations of the troops, and thence to the senate-house, where he was fully and promptly invested with all the honours, titles, and powers of emperor.

Agrippina's bold stroke had been completely successful. Its suddenness had disarmed opposition: only a few voices were raised for Britannicus; nor is there any doubt that Rome was prepared to welcome the new emperor with genuine enthusiasm. To his descent from Germanicus and from Augustus he owed a prestige which was strengthened by the general belief in his own good qualities. He was young, generous, and genial. His abilities, really

consider- able, were skilfully assisted and magnified by Seneca's ready dexterity, while the existence of his worse qualities—his childish vanity, ungovernable selfishness, and savage temper —was as yet unsuspected by all but those immediately about him. His first acts confirmed tle favourable impres- sions thus produced. With graceful modesty he declined the venerable title of "pater patria." The memory of Claudius, and that of his own father Domitius were duly honoured. The senate listened with delight to his promises to rule according to the maxims of Augustus, and to avoid the errors and abuses which had multiplied under the rule at once lax and arbitrary of his predecessor, while his un- failing clemency, liberality, and affability were the talk of Rome. Much no doubt of the credit of all this is due to Seneca, and his faithful ally Burrus. Seneca had seen from the first that the real danger with Nero lay in the savage vehemence of his passions, and he made it his chief aim to stave off by every means in his power the dreaded outbreak of "the wild beast" element in his pupil's nature. He indulged him to the full in all his tastes, smoothed away opposition, and, while relieving him as far as possible of the more irksome duties of government, gave him every facility for easily winning the applause he craved for by acts of generosity which cost him little. Nor is it certain that any other policy would have succeeded better with a nature like Nero's, which had never known training or restraint, and now revelled with childish delight in the consciousness of absolute power. Provided only that the wild beast did not taste blood, it mattered little if respectable society was scandalized at the sight of an emperor whose chief delight was in pursuits hitherto left to Greek slaves and freedmen. At any rate the policy succeeded for the time. During the first five years of his reign, the golden '"'quinquennium Neronis," little occurred to damp the hopes excited by his behaviour on succeeding to the throne. His clemency of temper was unabated. His promises of constitutional moderation were amply fulfilled, and the senate found itself free to discuss and even to decide important administrative questions. Abuses were remedied, the provincials protected from oppression, and the burdens of taxation lightened. On the frontiers, thanks chiefly to Corbulo's energy and skill, no disaster occurred serious enough to shake the general confidence in the government, and even the murder of Britannicus seems. to have been

easily pardoned at the time as a necessary measure of self-

4 Tac., Ann., xii. 96; Suet., Nero, 8.

N E

defence. But Seneca's fears of what the consequences would be, should Nero's sleeping passions once be roused, were fully verified by the result, and he seems to have seen all along from what quarter danger was to be apprehended. Agrippina's imperious temper and insatiable love of power made it certain that she would not willingly abandon her ascendency over her son, and it was scarcely less certain that her efforts to retain it would bring her into collision with his ungovernable self-will. At the same time the success of Seneca's own management of Nero largely depended on his being able gradually to emancipate the emperor from his mother's control. During the first few months of Nero's reign the chances of such an emancipation seemed remote, for he not only treated his mother with elaborate respect, but consulted her on all affairs of state. In 55, however, Seneca found a powerful ally in Nero's passion for the beautiful freedwoman Acte, a passion which he deliber- ately encouraged for his own purposes. Agrippina's in- jured pride provoked her to angry remonstrances, which served only to irritate her wayward son, and the caresses by which she endeavoured to repair her mistake equally failed in their object. Furious at her discomfiture, she rashly tried intimidation, and threatened to espouse the cause of the injured Britannicus. But her threats only served to show that her son, if once his will was crossed, or his fears aroused, could be as unscrupulous and head- strong ashis mother. Britannicus was poisoned as he sat at table. Agrippina, however, still persisted. She attempted to win over Nero's neglected wife Octavia, and to form a party of her own within the court. Nero replied by dis- missing her guards, and placing herself in a sort of honourable confinement.! This second defeat seems to have decided Agrippina to acquiesce in her deposition from the leading position she had filled since 49. During nearly three years she disappears from the history, and with her retirement things again for the time went smoothly. In 58, however, fresh cause for anxiety appeared. For the second time Nero was enslaved by the charms of a mistress. But Poppza Sabina, the new favourite, was a woman of a very different stamp from her predecessor. High-born, wealthy, and accomplished, she had no mind to be merely the emperor's plaything. She was resolved to be his wife, and with consummate skill she

set herself at once to remove the obstacles which stood in her way. Her first object was the final ruin of Agrippina. By taunts and caresses she drove her weak and passionate lover into a frenzy of fear and baulked desire. She taught him easily enough to hate and dislike his mother as an irksome check on his freedom of action, and as dangerous to his personal safety. To get rid of her, no matter how, became his one object, and the diabolical ingenuity of Anicetus, a freedman, and now prefect of the fleet at Misenum, devised a means of doing so without unnecessary scandal. Agrippina was invited to Bais, and after an affectionate reception by her son, was conducted on board a vessel so constructed as, at a given signal, to fall to pieces and precipitate its passengers into the waters of the lake. But the manceuvre failed. Agrippina saved herself by swimming to the shore, and at once wrote to her son, announcing her escape, and affecting entire ignorance of the plot against her. The news filled Nero with conster- nation, but once again Anicetus came to his rescue. A body of soldiers under his command surrounded Agrippina's villa, and murdered her in her own chamber.2 The deed done, Nero was for the moment horrorstruck at the enormity of the crime, and terrified at its possible conse- quences to himself. But a six months' residence in Campania, and the congratulations which poured in upon

iVee,, Ann., xiii. 12-20. PCa xy) lille

k O o49

him from the neighbouring towns, where the report had been officially spread that Agrippina had fallen a victim to her own treacherous designs upon the emperor's life, gradually restored his courage. In September 59 'he re-entered Rome amid universal rejoicing, fully resolved upon enjoying his dearly bought freedom. A prolonged carnival followed, in which Nero revelled in the public gratification of the tastes which he had hitherto ventured to indulge only in comparative privacy. Chariot races, musical and dramatic exhibitions, games in the Greek fashion, rapidly succeeded each other. In all the emperor was a prominent figure, and the fashionable world of Rome, willingly or unwillingly, followed the imperial example. These revels, however, extravagant as they were, at least involved no bloodshed, and were humanizing and civilized compared with the orthodox Roman

gladiatorial shows. A far more serious result of the death of Agrippina was the

|.growing influence over Nero of Poppsea and her friends;

and in 62 their influence was fatally strengthened by the removal of the trusty advisers who had hitherto stood by the emperor's side. Burrus died early in that year, it was said from the effects of poison, and his death was imme- diately followed by the retirement of Seneca from a position which he felt to be no longer tenable. Their place was filled by Poppzea, and by the infamous Tigellinus, whose sympathy with Nero's sensual tastes had gained him the command of the praetorian guards in succession to Burrus. The two now set themselves to attain a complete mastery over the emperor. 'The haunting fear of conspiracy, which had unnerved stronger Casars before him, was skilfully used to direct Nero's fierce suspicions against possible opponents. Cornelius Sulla, who had been banished to Massilia in 58, was put to death on the ground that his residence in Gaul was likely to arouse disaffection in that province, and a similar charge proved fatal to Rubellius Plautus, who had for two years been living in retirement in Asia.3 Nero's taste for blood thus whetted, a more illustrious victim was next found in the person of the unhappy Octavia. At the instigation of Poppsa she was first divorced and then banished to the island of Pandateria, where a few days later she was barbarously murdered. Poppeea's triumph was now complete. She was formally married to Nero; her head appeared on the coins side. by side with his; and her statues were erected in the public places of Rome.

This series of crimes, in spite of the unvarying applause which still greeted all Nero's acts, had excited gloomy forebodings of coming evil, and the general uneasiness was increased by the events which followed. In 63 the partial destruction of Pompeii by an earthquake, and the news of the evacuation of Armenia by the Roman legions, seemed to confirm the belief that the blessing of the gods was no longer with the emperor. A far deeper and more last- ing impression was produced by the great fire in Rome, an event which more than almost any other has thrown a lurid light round Nero's reign. The fire broke out on the night of July 18, 64, among the wooden booths at the south-east end of the Circus Maximus. Thence in one

direction it rapidly spread over the Palatine and Velia up to the low cliffs of the Esquiline, and in another it laid waste the Aventine, the Forum Boarium, and Velabrum till it reached the Tiber and the solid barrier of the Servian wall. After burning fiercely for six days, and when its fury seemed to have exhausted itself, it suddenly started afresh in the northern quarter of the city, and desolated the two regions of the Circus Flaminius and the Via Lata. By the time that it was finally quenched only four of the fourteen regiones remained untouched ; three had been

CEN, UC on SI, B18).

utterly destroyed, and seven reduced to ruins. The con- flagration is said by all authorities later than Tacitus to have been deliberately caused by Nero himself. But Tacitus, though he mentions rumours to that effect, declares that its origin was uncertain, and his descrip- tion of Nero's energetic conduct at the time justifies us in acquitting the emperor of so reckless a piece of incendiar- ism. By Nero's orders, the open spaces in the Campus Martius were utilized to give shelter to the homeless crowds, provisions were brought up from Ostia, and the price of corn lowered. In rebuilding the city every pre- caution was taken against the recurrence of such a calamity. Broad regular streets replaced the narrow winding alleys. The new houses were limited in' height, built partly of hard stone, and protected by open spaces and colonnades. The water supply, lastly, was carefully regulated. But there is nevertheless no doubt that this great disaster told against Nero in the popular mind. It was regarded as a direct manifestation of the wrath of the gods, even

by those who did not share the current suspicions of |

the emperor's guilt. This impression no religious cere- monies, nor even the execution of a number of Christians, hastily pitched upon as convenient scapegoats, could altogether dispel. Nero, however, undeterred by fore- bodings and rumours, proceeded with the congenial work of repairing the damage inflicted by the flames. In addi- tion to the rebuilding of the streets, he gratified his love of magnificence by the erection of a splendid palace for himself. The wonders of his "golden house" were remembered and talked

of long after its partial demolition by Vespasian. It stretched from the Palatine across the low ground, afterwards occupied by the Colosseum, to the Esquiline. Its walls blazed with gold and precious stones ; masterpieces of art from Greece adorned its walls; but most marvellous of all were the grounds in which it stood, with their meadows and lakes, their shady woods, and their distant views. To defray the enormous cost, Italy and the provinces, says Tacitus, were ransacked, and in Asia and Achaia especially the rapacity of the imperial commissioners recalled the days of Mummiusand of Sulla.? It was the first occasion on which the provincials had suffered from Nero's rule, and the discontent it caused helped to weaken his hold over them at the very moment when the growing discontent in Rome was gathering to a head. For early in 65 Nero was panic-stricken amid his pleasures by the discovery of a formidable conspiracy against his life and rule. Such conspiracies, prompted partly by the ambition of powerful nobles and partly by their personal fears, had been of frequent occurrence in the history of the Czesars, and now Nero's recent excesses, and his declining popularity, seemed to promise well for the success of the plot. Among the conspirators were many who held important posts, or belonged to the innermost circle of Nero's friends, such as Feenius Rufus, Tigellinus's colleague in the prefecture of the pretorian guards, Plautius Lateranus, one of the consuls elect, the poet Lucan, and, lastly, not a few of the tribunes and centurions of the preetorian guard itself. Their chosen leader, whom they destined to succeed Nero, was C. Calpurnius Piso, a handsome, wealthy, and popular noble, and a boon com- panion of Nero himself. The plan was that Nero should be murdered when he appeared as usual at the games in the circus, but the design was frustrated by the treachery of a freedman Milichus, who, tempted by the hope of a large reward, disclosed the whole plot to the emperor. In a frenzy of sudden terror Nero struck right and left among

1 Tac., Ann., xv. 88; Suet., Nero, 38; Dio Cass., lxii. 16; Pliny, Nv, xvii. 5.

2 Tac, Ann., xv. 42; Suet., Mero, 81; ef. Friedlander, Sidten- geschichte, iti. 67-69.

the ranks of the conspirators. Piso was put to death in his own house; and his fall was rapidly followed by the execution of Fenius Rufus, Lucan, and

many of their less prominent accomplices. Even Seneca himself, though there seems to have been no evidence of his complicity, could not escape the frantic suspiciousness of the emperor, stimulated as it may have been in his case by the jealousy of Tigellinus and Poppza. The order for his death reached him in his country house near Rome, and he met his fate with dignity and courage. For the moment Nero felt safe ; but, though largesses and thanksgivings celebrated the suppression of the conspiracy, and the dazzling round of games and shows was renewed with even increased

splendour, the effects of the shock were visible in the long.

and dreary list of victims who during the next few months were sacrificed to his restless fears and savage resentment. Conspicuous among them was Petus Thrasea, whose irreconcilable non-conformity and unbending virtue had long made him distasteful to Nero, and who was now suspected, possibly with reason, of sympathy with the con- spirators. The death of Poppza in the autumn of 65 was probably not lamented by any one but her husband, but the general gloom was deepened by a pestilence, caused, it seems, by the overcrowding at the time of the fire, which decimated the population of the capital. Early, however, in the summer of 66, the visit of the Parthian prince Tiridates to Italy seemed to shed a ray of light over the in- creasing darkness of Nero's last years. Corbulo had settled matters satisfactorily in Armenia. The Parthians were grati- fied by the elevation to the Armenian throne of their king's brother, and Tiridates, in return, consented to receive his crown from the hands of the Roman emperor. In royal state he travelled to Italy, and at Rome the ceremony of investiture was performed with the utmost splendour. Delighted with this tribute to his greatness, Nero for a moment dreamt of rivalling Alexander, and winning fame as a conqueror. Expeditions were talked of to the shores of the Caspian Sea and against the remote Ethiopians, but Nero was no soldier, and he quickly turned to a more congenial field for triumph. He had long panted for an opportunity of displaying his varied artistic gifts before a worthier and more sympathetic audience than could be found in Rome. With this view he had already, in 64, appeared on the stage before the half-Greek public of Naples. But his mind was now set on challenging the applause of the Greeks themselves in the ancient home of art. Towards the end of 66 he arrived in Greece, accompanied by a motley following of

soldiers, courtiers, musicians, and dancers, determined to forget for a time Rome and the irksome affairs of Rome with its conspiracies and intrigues. No episode in Nero's reign has afforded such plentiful material for the imagination of subsequent

writers as his visit to Greece ; but, when every allowance –

is made for exaggeration and sheer invention, it must still be confessed that the spectacle presented was unique.® The emperor appeared there professedly as merely an enthusiastic worshipper of Greek art, and a humble candidate for the suffrages of Greek judges. At each of the great festivals, which to please him were for once crowded into a single year, he entered in regular form for the various competitions, scrupulously conformed to the tradition and rules of the arena, and awaited in nervous suspense the verdict of the umpires. The dexterous Greeks, flattered by his genuine enthusiasm, humoured him to the top of his bent. Everywhere the imperial competitor was victorious. Crowns were showered upon him, and crowded audiences importuned him to display his talents. The delighted emperor protested that only

3 Suet., Mero, 19-24; Dio Cass., Mpit., xiii. 8-16.

the Greeks were fit to hear him, and their ready com- plaisance was rewarded when he left by the bestowal of immunity from the land tax on the whole province, and the gift of the Roman franchise to his appreciative judges, while as a more splendid and lasting memorial of his visit, he planned and actually commenced the cutting of a canal through the Isthmus of Corinth. If we may believe report, Nero found time in the intervals of his artistic triumphs for more vicious excesses. The stories of his mock marriage with Sporus, his execution of wealthy Greeks for the sake of their money, and his wholesale plundering of the temples were evidently part of the accepted tradition about hini in the time of Suetonius, and are at least credible. Far more certainly true is his ungrateful treatment of Domitius Corbulo, who, when he landed at Cenchrez, fresh from his successes in Armenia, was met by an order for his instant execution, and at once put an end to his own life.

But while Nero was revelling in Greece the dissatisfac- tion with his rule, and the fear and abhorrence excited by his crimes, were rapidly taking the shape of a resolute determination to get rid of hin. That movements in this direction were on foot in Rome may be safely inferred from the urgency with which the imperial freedman Helius insisted upon Nero's return to Italy; but far more scrious than any amount of intrigue in Rome was the disaffection which now showed itself in the rich and warlike provinces of the west. In northern Gaul, early in 68, the standard of revolt was raised by Julius Vindex, governor of Gallia Lugdunensis, and himself the head of an ancient and noble Celtic family. South of the Pyrenees, P. Sulpicius Galba, governor of Hispania Tarraconensis, and Poppeea's former husband, Marcus Salvius Otho, governor of Lusitania, followed Vindex's example. At first, however, fortune seemed to favour Nero. It is very probable that Vindex had other aims in view than the deposition of Nero and the substitution of a fresh emperor in his place, and that the liberation of northern Gaul from Roman rule was part of his plan.! If this was so, it is easy to understand both the enthusiasm with which the chiefs of northern Gaul rallied to the standard of a leader belonging to their own race, and the opposition which Vindex encountered from the Roman colony of Lugdunum, and from the Roman legions on the Rhine. For it is certain that the latter at any rate were not animated by loyalty to Nero. They encountered Vindex and his Celtic levies at Vesontium (Besangon), and in the battle which followed Vindex was defeated and slain. But the next step of the victorious legionaries was to break the statues of Nero and offer the imperial purple to their own commander Verginius Rufus ; and the latter, though he declined their offer, appealed to them to declare for the senate and people of Rome. 'Meanwhile in Spain Galba had been saluted imperator by his legions, had accepted the title, and was already on his march towards Italy. On the road the news met him that Vindex had been crushed by the army of the Rhine, and for the moment he resolved to abandon his attempt in despair, and even thought of suicide. Had Nero acted with energy he might still have checked the revolt. But he did nothing. He had reluctantly left Greece early in 68, but returned to Italy only to renew his revels. When on March 19 the news reached him at Naples of the rising in Gaul, he allowed a week to elapse before he could tear himself away from his pleasures. When he did at last re-enter Rome, he contented himself

with the empty form of proscribing Vindex, and setting a price on his head. In April the announcement that Spain also had revolted,

1 Suet., Nero, 40; Dio Cass., Epit., xiii. 22; Plut., Galba, 4; of. also Schiller's Vero, pp. 261 sqg.; Mommisen in Hermes, xiii. 90.

and that the legions in Germany had declared for a republic, terrified him into something like energy. But it was too late. The news from the provinces fanned into flame the smouldering disaffection in Rome. During the next few weeks the senate almost openly intrigued against him, and the populace, once so lavish of their applause, were silent or hostile. Every day brought fresh instances of desertion, and the fidelity of the preetorian sentinels was more than doubtful. When finally even the palace guards forsook their posts, Nero despairingly stole out of Rome to seek shelter in a freedman's villa some four miles off. In this hiding-place he heard of the senate's proclamation of Galba as emperor, and of the sentence of death passed on himself. On the approach of the horsemen sent to drag him to execution, he collected sufficient courage to save himself by suicide from this final ignominy, and the soldiers arrived only to find the emperor in the agonies of death. Nero died on June 9, 68, in the thirty-first year of his age and the fourteenth of his reign, and his remains were deposited by the faithful hands of Acte in the family tomb of the Domitii on the Pincian Hill. With his death ended the line of the Czesars, and Roman imperialism entered upon a new phase. His statues were broken, his name everywhere erased, and his golden house demolished ; yet, in spite of all, no Roman emperor has left a deeper mark upon subsequent tradition. His brief career, with its splendid opening and its tragic close, its fantastic revels and frightful disasters, acquired a firm hold over the imagination of succeeding generations. The Roman populace continued for a long time to reverence his memory as that of an open-handed patron, and in Greece the recollections of his magnificence, and his enthusiasm for art, were still fresh when the traveller Pausanias visited the country a century later. The belief that he had not really died, but would return again to confound his foes, was long prevalent, not only in the remoter provinces, but even in Rome itself; and more than one pretender was able to collect a following by assum- ing

the name of the last of the race of Augustus. More lasting still in its effects was the implacable hatred cherished towards his memory by those who had suffered from his cruelties. Roman literature, faithfully reflecting the sentiments of the aristocratic salons of the capital, while it almost canonized those who had been his victims, fully avenged their wrongs by painting Nero as a monster of wickedness. In Christian tradition he appears in an even more terrible character, as the mystic Antichrist, who was destined to come once again to trouble the saints. Even in the Middle Ages, Nero is still the very incarnation of splendid iniquity, while the belief lingered obstinatcly that he had only disappeared for a time, and as late as the 11th century his restless spirit was supposed to haunt the slopes of the Pincian Hill.

The chief ancient authorities for Nero's life and reign are Tacitus (Annals, xiii.-xvi.), Suetonius, Dio Cassius (Zpit., 1xi., Ixii., lxiii.), and Zonaras (Adnn., xi.). The most important modern works are Merivale's History of the Romans under the Empire; H. Schiller's Nero, and his Geschichte d. Kaiserzeit; Lehmann, Claudius und Nero. (CHa)

NERTCHINSK, a district town of eastern Siberia, situated in the government of Transbaikalia, 178 miles to the east of Tchita, on the left bank of the Nertcha, 3 miles from its junction with the Shilka. It is badly built of wood, and its lower part frequently suffers from inunda- tions. The 4000 inhabitants support themselves mainly by agriculture, tobacco-growing, and cattle breeding ; a few merchants also carry on an active trade in furs and cattle, in brick-tea from China, and manufactured wares from Russia,—Nertchinsk being the trading centre for all that part of Dahouria which is situated on the eastern slope of the Stanovoy ridge.

o2

The fort of Nertchinsk dates from 1654, and the town was founded in 1658 by Pashkoff, who in that year opened direct com- munication between the Russian settlements in Transbaikalia and those on the Amur which had been founded by Cossacks and fur- traders coming from the Yakutsk region. The mutual help thus given proved, however, insufficient, and two years after the fall of Albazin—the chief Russian fort on the Amur—the Russian envoy Golovin, meeting at Nertchinsk the Chinese envoys, who were supported by

a strong military force encamped on the banks of the Shilka, signed in 1689 the well-known “treaty of Nertchinsk,” which stopped for two centuries the further advance of Russians into the basin of the Amur. Nertchinsk, which in the following year received municipal institutions and was more strongly fortified, soon became the chief centre for the trade with China. The open-ing of the western route through Mongolia, by Urga, and the establishment of a custom-house at Kiachta in 1728, diverted this trade into a new channel; so that towards the end of the 18th eentury Nertchinsk lost its commiercial importance; but it acquired a new consequence from the influx of immigrants, mostly exiles, into eastern Transbaikalia, the discovery of rich mines, and the arrival of great numbers of convicts. It ultimately became the chief town of Transbaikalia, and in 1812 was transferred from the banks of the Shilka to its present site, on account of the floods. After the foundation, in 1851, of Tchita, the present capital of Transbaikalia, it was reduced to the rank of a district town, and is now rapidly falling into decay.

NERTCHINSK (in full Nertcuinsxry ZAvop), a town and silver-mine situated in the government of Transbaikalia, 185 miles E.S.E. of the Nertchinsk noticed above (with which it is very often confounded), on the Algacha river, a few miles above its junction with the Argun. It lies in a narrow valley between barren mountains, and consists of town, silver-mine, and village, with an aggregate of 5000 inhabitants. It is much better built than any of the district towns of eastern Siberia, and its shops carry on an active trade. It hasa chemical laboratory supported by the crown for mining purposes, and a first-class meteoro- logical observatory (51° 18’ N. lat., 119° 37’ E. long,, 2450 feet above the sea-level), where meteorological and magnetical observations have been made every hour since 1842. The average yearly temperature, calculated from twenty-six years’ observations, is 24°°8 F. Nertchinskiy Zavod is the chief town and administrative centre of the

Nertcuinsk Minine District, an area of more than 2700 square miles, extending for nearly 270 miles from north to south, and comprising all the silver-mines and gold-fields situated between the Shilka and the Argun, together with a few on the left bank of the Shilka. It is traversed by several parallel chains of mountains which run from south-west to north-east, having their base on the eastern Transbaikalian plateau, while their summits

rise to about 4500 feet. These are intersected by a com- plicated system of deep, narrow valleys, densely wooded, with a few expansions along the larger rivers, where the inhabitants with difficulty raise some rye and wheat. The mountains, so far as they have been geologically explored, consist of crystalline slates and limestones—probably Upper Silurian and Devonian—interspersed with granite, syenite, and diorite ; they contain rich ores of silver, lead, tin, and iron, while the diluvial and alluvial valley for- mations contain rich auriferous sands. Several of the villages that have sprung up around the silver-mines are more populous than the district towns of eastern Siberia.

The Nertchinsk silver mines began to be wrought in 1704, but during the first half of the 18th century their yearly production did not exceed 700 Tb. From 1765 to 1777 the annual average was 64 cwts.; and the total amount for the first hundred and fifty years (1704-1854) amounted to 8600 cwts. The lead was mostly neglected on account of the difficulties of transport, but its production is at present on the increase, and recently reached about 2000 ewts. Gold was first discovered in 1830, and between 1850 and 1854 no less than 131 ewts. of gold dust were obtained, but this fell to 24°3 ewts. in 1860. In 1864, private gold mining having been permitted in the western parts of the district, a large

number of auriferous beds were discovered, and the production greatly increased. Until 1863 all the labour in the silver and gold

mines of the district was performed by serfs, who were the property |

of the emperor, and by eonvicts, numbering usually nearly four thousand. The serfdom was partially abolished in 1851, and finally in 1863, when a great number of mines were abandoned by the crown.

NERVA (32-98 4.D.), Roman emperor from 96 to 98, was called to the throne on the murder of Domitian (Sep- tember 18, 96; Suet., Dom. 17; Corp. Inscr. Lat., vi. 472). His full name was Marcus Cocceius Nerva (Henzen, 5435), and his family, though of no great antiquity, had attained to considerable distinction under the emperors. The M. Cocceius Nerva who

was consul in 36 B.c. was prob- ably his great-grandfather. His grandfather of the same name (consul c. 22 A.D.) was a lawyer of high reputation and an intimate friend of the emperor Tiberius (Tac., Ann., iv. 58, vi. 26; Front., De Aquad., 102). His father is usually identified with the ‘“ Nerva filius ” who is mentioned in the Digest as a prominent jurist, and who was possibly consul in 40 a.p. Of his mother a single inscription tells us that she was Sergia Plautilla, daughter of Leenas (Orelli, iD) =

: erva must have been bornin 32 a.p., for he was sixty- four years old at the time of his accession in 96 A.D. In early manhood he had been on friendly terms with Nero, whose taste for versification he shared (Martial, viii. 70; Pliny, Zp., v, 3), and by whom, in 65, he was decorated with the “insignia triumphalia” (Tac., dnn., xv. 72). He had been preetor (766) and twice consul, in 71 with the emperor Vespasian for colleague (Orelli, 1634), and again in 90 with Domitian. Towards the close of the latter’s reign he is said to have excited suspicion and to have been banished to Tarentum on a charge of conspiracy (Dio Cass., Lipit., xvii. 15; Philostr., Apoll. Tyan., vii. 8). He is described as a quiet, kindly, dignified man, honest of pur- pose, but unfitted by age and temperament, as well as by feeble health, to bear the weight of empire. Nevertheless his selection by Domitian’s murderers as that prince’s successor seems to have been generally approved, and his short rule, in spite of occasional exhibitions of weakness, justified the choice. His accession brought a welcome relief froni the terrible strain of the last few years. The reign of terror was at an end and liberty restored. The new emperor recalled those who had been exiled by Domitian ; what remained of their confiscated property was restored to them, and a stop was put to the vexatious prosecutions which Domitian had encouraged. But the popular feeling demanded more than this. The countless informers of all classes who had thriven under the previous régime now found themselves swept away, to borrow Pliny’s metaphor (Pliny, Paneg,, 35), by a hurricane of revengeful fury, which threatened to become as dangerous in its indiscriminate ravages as the system it attacked. It was finally checked by Nerva, who was stung into action by the sarcastic remark of the consul Fronto that, ‘‘ bad as it was to have an emperor who allowed no one to do any- thing, it was worse to have one who allowed every one to do everything” (Dio Cass., Hpit., Ixviii. 1).

Nerva seems to have followed the custom established by his predecessors of announcing at the outset the general lines of his future policy. Domitian had been arbitrary and high-handed, and had heaped favours on the soldiery while humiliating the senate; Nerva naturally enough assuined the opposite attitude, and showed himself anxious in every way to respect the traditional privileges of the senate, and such maxims of constitutional government as still survived. He pledged himself to put no senator to death. His chosen councillors in all affairs of state were senators, and the hearing of claims against the fiscus was taken from the imperial procuratores and entrusted to the more impartial jurisdiction of a pretor and a court of "'judices" (Dio Cass., Epit., Ixviii. 2; Digest, i. 2,2; Pliny,

Paneg,, 36). It was thus, as Pliny magniloquently says, that Nerva united the "principate" with "freedom."

No one probably expected from Nerva a vigorous administration either at home or abroad. But he seems to have set himself honestly enough to carry through such reforms as were either suggested by his own benevolent inclinations, or imperatively demanded by the necessities of the moment. The economical condition of Italy evidently excited his alarm and sympathy. The last men- tion of a "lex agraria" in Roman history is connected with his name, though how far the measure was strictly speaking a "law" is uncertain. Under the provisions of this "lex," large tracts of land were bought up and allotted to poor citizens. The cost was defrayed partly from the imperial treasury, but partly also from Nerva's private resources, and the execution of the scheme was entrusted to commissioners (Dig., xlvii. 21, 3; Dio Cass., Hpit., Ixviil. 9; Pliny, Zp., vii. 31; Corp. Inser. Lat., vi. 1548). This agrarian law was probably as shortlived in its effects as preceding ones had been, but a reform more lasting in its results was the provision of a regular maintenance at the public cost for the children of poor parents in the towns of Italy (Aur. Vict., Zp., 24), the provision being presuin- ably secured by imposing a yearly charge for this purpose on state and municipal lands. On coins of the year 97 Nerva is represented seated upon his curule 'chair and stretching out a helping right hand toa boy anda

girl. The legend on the coins is “tutela Italie” (Eckhel, vi. 408 ; Marquardt, Staatsverwaltung, ii. 138, note 6). Private individuals were also encouraged to follow the imperial example; and among those who responded was the younger Pliny, whose charitable institution in his own town of Comum seems to have followed directly on that of the emperor himself (Hermes, iii. 101; Pliny, Zp. ad 7., 8). In the hands of Trajan, Hadrian, and the Antonines, Nerva’s example bore fruit in the institution of the “‘alimentationes,” the most genuinely charitable institution of the pagan world. These measures Nerva supplemented by others which aimed at lightening the financial burdens which already weighed heavily on the declining industry of Italy. The cost of maintaining the imperial postal system was transferred to the “fiscus,” from the same source apparently money was found for repairing the public roads and aqueducts, and lastly the lucrative but unpopular succession duty ‘“ vicesima hereditatum,” was so readjusted as to remove the grosser abuses connected with it (Pliny, Paneg,, 37). Atthe same time Nerva did his best to reduce the overgrown expenditure of the state (Pliny, Ep., ii. 1). A commission was appointed to consider the best modes of retrenchment, and the outlay on shows and games was cut down to the lowest possible point. It was these efforts which earned for him the epithet “ frugalissi- mus” (Pliny, Paneg,, 51). Nerva seems nevertheless to have soon wearied of the uncongenial task of governing, and his anxiety to be rid of it was quickened by the dis- covery that not even his blameless life and mild rule protected him against intrigue and disaffection. arly, apparently, in 97 he detected a conspiracy against his life headed by L. Calpurnius Crassus, but he contented himself with a hint to the conspirators that their designs were known, and with banishing Crassus to Tarentum. This ill-judged lenity provoked a few months later an intolerable insult to his dignity. The pretorian guards had keenly resented the murder of their patron Domitian, and now, at the instigation of one of their two prefects, Casperius /Mlianus, whom Nerva had retained in office, they imperiously demanded the execution of Domitian’s murderers, the chamberlain Parthenius, and Petronius Secundus, A#lianus’s colleague. Nerva vainly strove to save, even at the risk of his own life, the men who had

raised him to power, but the soldiers, disregarding his protests, brutally murdered the unfortunate men, and finally foreed Nerva to propose a vote of thanks for the deed (Dio Cass., £pit., Ixviii. 4; Aur. Vict., Hp., 24). This crowning humiliation convinced Nerva of the necessity of placing the reins of government in stronger hands than his own. Following the precedent set by Augustus, Galba, and Vespasian, he resolved to adopt as his colleague and destined successor a younger and more vigorous man, and his choice fell upon M. Ulpius Trajanus, already well known as a distinguished soldier, and at the time in command of the legions on the Rhine. In October 97, in the temple of Jupiter on the Capitol, Trajan was formally adopted as his son, and declared his colleague in the government of the empire (Pliny, Paneg,, 8). For three months Nerva ruled jointly with Trajan (Aur. Vict., Ep., 24); but on January 27, 98, he died somewhat suddenly. He was buried in the sepulchre of Augustus, and divine honours were paid him by his successor. The verdict of history upon his reign is best expressed in his own words,—‘‘I have done nothing which should prevent me from laying down my power, and living in safety as a private man.” In the Rome of to-day the memory of Nerva is still preserved by the ruined temple in the Via Alessandrina (il Colonacce) which marks the site of the Forum begun by Domitian, but which Nerva completed and dedicated (Suet., Dom., 5; Aur. Vict., 12). Authorities. —Dio Cass., Epit., Ixviii. 1-4; Aurelius Victor, 12, and Kpit., 24; Zonaras, xi. 20; compare also Pliny, Hpistole and Panegyricus ; Tillemont, Histoire des Empereurs Romains ; Merivale, History of the Romans under the Empire ; H. Schiller, Geschichte ad. Kaiserzett. (ERE) NERVAL. See Gtrarp DE NERVAL, vol. x. p. 441. NERVOUS SYSTEM. See Piystonoey. NESSELRODE, Cuartes Ropert (1780-1862), long foreign minister of Russia, was born at Lisbon, where his father was Russian ambassador, in December 1780. Like so many other Russian statesmen and soldiers, he was sprung from German ancestors settled in Livonia. He entered early upon a diplomatic career, and at the age of twenty-five was attached to the Russian embassy in Paris. When the alliance of Tilsit was breaking down, Nesselrode was recalled to St Petersburg, and during the events that followed Napoleon’s invasion of Russia he rose high in the favour of the czar Alexander. From the time when Romanzoff, the advocate of a peace-policy, was dismissed, Nesselrode was employed in all the great diplomatic trans- actions of his master. He was present, though not asa plenipotentiary, at the congress of

Prague, and signed the treaty of Chaumont, in which the allies pledged themselves to continue the struggle against Napoleon, if necessary, for twenty years. In the negotiations as to the future of France, both in 1814 and 1815, he seems to have encouraged the czar in his policy of moderation. At the congress of Vienna his duties were shared by Capodistrias, and a certain rivalry existed then and afterwards between the two statesmen. In Capodistrias the czar found more sympathy both with his own earlier liberal tendencies and with his religious sentimentality. In the subsequent con- gresses of Troppau and Laibach, when Metternich, as the champion of European conservatism, set himself to repress any sympathies that the czar might have for constitutional rule in Naples and for Greek independence, it was with Nesselrode that he allied himself; Capodistrias, a Greek and a man of more modern ideas, was now treated as a dangerous person, and ultimately had to retire from office. Nesselrode followed the fluctuating and reactionary course of the czar's thoughts, and remained in favour till the death of Alexander in 1825. Nicholas kept him in office, and Nesselrode now promptly adapted himself to the more vigorous policy that suited his new master, especially

in Eastern affairs. He conducted the diplomacy of Russia throughout the contention which led to the war of 1828 and to the peace of Adrianople. Years passed by, and he grew old in office, pursuing with patience and discretion the ends which Russian statesmanship has always set before itself. Belonging rather to the cautious than the adventurous school of politicians, and attaching great value to the support of the German powers, he viewed with no great pleasure the approach of the Crimean war. He continued in office, however, until its close ; and it is remarkable that a man who was at the head of Russian diplomacy during the conflict with Napoleon I. should have lived to conclude the peace of Paris under Alexander II. in 1856. He died in 1862, still retaining the office of chancellor of Russia, though he had ceased to hold the ministry of foreign affairs.

NESTOR, the old warrior of the Jlad, the wise councillor of the Greek leaders, was the son of Neleus and Chloris. He succeeded his father as king of Pylus. In the Iliad he is represented as too old to be of use in battle, but always ready to give advice and counsel to the younger warriors, and to entertain them with long accounts of his own exploits in his youth, According to Homer, he had ruled over three generations of men, and was wise as the immortal gods. In the Odyssey he is described as still ruling over Pylus, where he is visited by Telemachus. There is no real connexion between the legends of Nestor and those of Neleus; but, as the former belonged to Pylus, the legend is bound to place him in genealogical relation with the representative king of the land.

NESTOR (ce. 1056-c. 1114), the patriarch of Russian literature, concerning whom, however, we have but little information, except that he was a monk of the Pestcherski cloister of Kieff from 1073. The only other fact of his life told us is that he was commissioned with two other monks to find the relics of St Theodosius, a mission which he suc- ceeded in fulfilling. His history begins with the deluge, as those of most chroniclers of the time did. He appears to have been acquainted with the Byzantine historians ; he makes use especially of John Malala and George Armatolus. He also had in all probability other Slavonic chronicles to compile from, which are now lost. The labours of the Byzantine annalists, some of which were translated into Paleo-Slavonic, would stimulate the production of such works. Of course there are many legends mixed up with Nestor's Chronicle; the style is occasionally so poetical that we may easily fancy that he has incorporated élini which are now lost. The early part is rich in these quaint stories, among which may be cited the arrival of the three Varangian brothers, the founding of Kieff, the murder of Askold and Dir, the death of Oleg, who was killed by a serpent concealed in the skeleton of his horse, and the vengeance taken by Olga, the wife of Igor, on the Drevlians, who had murdered her husband. The account of the labours of Cyril and Methodius among the Slavs is also given in a very interesting manner, and to Nestor we owe the tale of the summary way in which Vladimir suppressed the worship of Peroun and other idols at Kieff. As an eye-witness he could only describe the reigns of Vsevolod and Sviatopolk (1078-1112), but he gathered many in- teresting details from the lips of old men, two of whom are especially mentioned, Giourata Rogovich, an inhabitant of Novgorod,

who furnished him with information concern- ing the north of Russia, Petchora, and other places, and Jan, a man ninety years of age, who died in 1106, and was son of Vishata the waywode of Yaroslavl and grand- son of Ostromir the Posadnik, for whom the Codex was written. Besides the historical portion, many of the ethnological details given by Nestor of the various races of the Slavs are of the highest value ;

This interesting work has come down to us in several manuscripts, but unfortunately no contemporary ones, the oldest being the so- called Lavrientski of the 14th century (1877). It was named after the monk Lavrentii, who copied it out for Dimitri Constantinovich, the prince of Souzdal. The work, as contained in this manuscript, has had many additions made to it from previous and contempo- rary chronicles, such as those of Volinia and Novgorod. Solovieff, the Russian historian, justly remarks that Nestor cannot be strictly called the earliest Russian chronicler, but he is the first writer who took anything like a national point of view in his his- tory, the others being merely local writers. The language of his work, as shown in the earliest manuscripts just mentioned, is Palwo-Slavonic with many Russisms. It has formed the subject of a valuable monograph by Professor Miklosieh.

Nestor's Chronicle has been translated into Polish, Bohemian, German, and Freneh, but no version has appeared in our own lan- guage. Besides his historical work, Nestor was also the author of the Lives of Boris and Gleb, the martyrs, and of the St Theodosius previously mentioned. In recent times the genuineness of his Chronicle has been attacked by Ilovaiski and others, but the accusa- tions have hardly been considered serious in Russia, and have been completely refuted, if they nceded refutation, by Pogodin. The body of the ancient chronicler may still be seen among the relics preserved in the Pestcherski monastery at Kieff. His work is of primary importance for the study of early Russian history, and, although devoid of literary merit in the strictest sense of the term, is not without its amusing and well-told episodes of a somewhat Herodotean character.

NESTOR, the name applied to a small but remarkable group of Parrots peculiar to the New Zealand Subregion, of which the type is the Psittacus meridionalis of Gmelin, founded on a species described by Latham (Gen.

Synopsis, i. p. 264), and subsequently termed by him P. nestor, in allusion to its hoary head, but now usually known as Westor meridionalis, the "Kaka" of the Maories and English settlers in New Zealand, in some parts of which it was, and even yet may be, very abundant, though its numbers are fast decreasing. Forster, who accompanied Cook in his second voyage, described it in his MSS. in 1773, naming it P. hypopolius, and found it in both the principal islands. The general colour of the Kaka is olive-brown, nearly all the feathers being tipped with a darker shade, so as to give a scaly appearance to the body. The crown is light grey, the ear-coverts and nape purplish-bronze, and the rump and abdomen of a more or less deep crimson- red; but much variation is presented in the extent and tinge of the last colour, which often becomes orange and sometimes bright yellow. The Kaka is about the size of a Crow; buta larger species, generally resembling it, though having its plumage varied with blue and green, the Westor notabilis of Gould, was discovered in 1856 by Mr Walter Mantell, in the higher mountain ranges of the Middle Island. This is the " Kea" of the Maories, and has of late incurred the enmity of colonists by developing, they say, when pressed by hunger in winter, an extraordinary habit of assaulting sheep, picking holes with its powerful beak in their side, wounding the intestines, and so causing the animals' death. The lacerations are said to be made so uniformly in one place as to suggest deliberate design ; but the bird's intent has yet to be investigated, though it is admittedly an eater of carrion in addition to its ordinary food, which, like that of the Kaka, consists of fruits, seeds, and the grubs of wood-destroying insects, the last being obtained by stripping the bark from trees infested by them. The amount of injury the Kea inflicts on flock-masters, as always happens in similar cases, has doubtless been much exaggerated, for Dr Menzies states that on one "run," where the loss was unusually large, the proportion of sheep attacked was about one in three hundred, and that those pasturing below the elevation of 2000 feet are seldom disturbed.

On the discovery of Norfolk Island (10th October 1774) a Parrot, thought by Forster to be specifically identical with the Kaghaa (as he wrote the name) of New Zealand, —though his son (Voyage, ii. p. 446) remarked that it was

‘infinitely brighter coloured,”—was found in its hitherto untrodden woods. Among the drawings of Bauer, the artist who accompanied Robert Brown and Flinders, is one of a Nestor marked ‘“ Norfolk Isl. 19 Jan. 1805,” on which Herr von Pelzeln in 1860 founded his J. norfolcensis. Meanwhile Latham, in 1822, had described, as distinct species, two specimens evidently of the genus Nestor, one said, but doubtless erroneously, to inhabit New South Wales, and the other from Norfolk Island. In 1836 Gould described an example, without any locality, in the museum of the Zoological Society, as Plyctolophus productus, and when some time after he was in Australia, he found that the home of this species, which he then recognized asa Vestor, was Phillip Island, a very small adjunct of Norfolk Island, and not more than five miles distant from it. Whether the birds of the two islands were specifically distinct or not we shall perhaps never know, since they are all extinct (see Brrps, vol. iii. p. 735), and no specimen undoubtedly from Norfolk Island seems to have been preserved; while, now that we are aware of the great diversity in colour, size, and particularly in the form of the beak, to which the New-Zealand members of the genus are subject, it would be unsafe to regard as specific the differences pointed out by Herr von Pelzeln from Bauer’s drawing. The Phillip-Island Nestor may be distinguished from both of the New-Zealand species by its somewhat smaller size, orange throat, straw-coloured breast, and the generally lighter shade of its tints.

The position of the genus Westor in the Order Psittaci must be regarded as uncertain. Garrod removes it altogether from the neighbourhood of the Lories (Proc. Zool. Society, 1874, p. 597), to which indeed the structure of its tongue, as previously shewn by him (op. cit., 1872, p. 789), indicates only a superficial resemblance. Like so many other New-Zealand forms, Vestor seems to be isolated, and may fairly be deemed to represent a separate Family—Nestoride—a view which is fully justified by a cursory examination of its osteology, though this has hitherto been only imperfectly described and figured (kyton, Osteol. Avium, p. 72; A. B. Meyer, Abbild. von Vogel-Skeletten, p. 18, pl. 23).

Further knowledge of this very interesting form may be facili- tated by the following references to the Z’ransactions and Proceed- ings of the New Zealand Institute, ii. pp. 64, 65, 387; iii. pp. 45-52, fee 0; Vp. 207; vi. pp.

114, 128; ix, p. 340; x. p. 192; xi, p. 377; and of course to Mr Buller's Birds of New Zealand. (A. N.)

NESTORIUS anp NESTORIANS. Nestorius, patri- arch of Constantinople from 428 to 431, was a native of Germanicia, at the foot of Mount Taurus, in Syria. The ycar of his birth is unknown. At an early age he was sent for his education to Antioch, where it is probable, though not certain, that Theodore of Mopsuestia was for some time his master. As monk in the neighbouring monastery of Kuprepius, and afterwards as presbyter, he became cele- brated in the diocese for his asceticism, his orthodoxy, and his eloquence ; hostile critics, such as Socrates, allege that his arrogance and vanity were hardly less conspicuous. On the death of Sisinnius, patriarch of Constantinople (December 427), Theodosius II., indifferent to or possibly perplexed by the various claims of the local clergy, appointed the distinguished preacher of Antioch to the vacant sec. The consecration took place on April 10, 428, and then, or almost immediately afterwards, in what is said to have been his first patriarchal sermon, Nestorius exhorted the emperor in the famous words—" Purge me, O Cesar, the earth of herctics, and I in return will give thee heaven, Stand by me in putting down the heretics and I will stand by thee in putting down the Persians." In the spirit of this utterance, steps were at once instituted by the new prelate (Socrates says five days after his consecra- tion) to suppress the assemblies of the Arians ; these, by a

DDO

stroke of policy which seems to have been as successful as it was bold, anticipated his action by themselves setting fire to their meeting-house, Nestorius being forthwith nick- named "the incendiary." The Novatians and the Quarto- decimans were the next objects of his orthodox zeal,—a zeal which in the case of the former at least was reinforced, according to Socrates, by his envy of their bishop ; and it led to serious and fatal disturbances at Sardis and Miletus. The toleration the followers of Macedonius had long enjoyed was also rudely broken, the (foreign) Pelagians alone finding any favour. While these repress- ive measures were being carried on outside the pale of the catholic church, equal care was taken to instruct the faithful in such points of orthodoxy as their spiritual

head conceived to be the most important or the most in danger. One of these was that involved in the practice, now grown almost universal, of bestowing the epithet Q@cordxos, “Mother of God,” upon Mary the mother of Jesus. In the school of Antioch the impropriety of the expression had long before been pointed out, by Theodore of Mopsuestia, among others, in terms precisely similar to those after- wards attributed to Nestorius. From Antioch Nestorius had brought along with him to Constantinople a co- presbyter named Anastasius, who enjoyed his confidence and is called by Theophanes his “syncellus.” This Ana- stasius, in a pulpit oration which the patriarch himself is said to have prepared for him, caused great scandal to the partisans of the Marian cultus then beginning by saying, “Let no one call Mary the mother of God, for Mary was a human being; and that God should be born of a human being is impossible.” The opposition, which was led by one Eusebius, a “ scholasticus” or pleader who afterwards became bishop of Dorylzeum, chose to construe this utter- ance as a denial of the divinity of Christ, and so violent did the dispute upon it become that Nestorius judged it necessary to silence the remonstrauts by force ; an over- zealous monk who had withstood him to his face was scourged and sent into exile, while many of the mob who sympathized were also punished with the lash. The exact chronological order of the recorded incidents in this stage of the controversy is somewhat difficult to determine, but an important part in it was taken by Proclus, bishop of Cyzicus, who, preaching in the cathedral before the patriarch, and at his invitation (429), on one of the festivals of the Virgin, asserted so firmly the propriety of the disputed epithet that Nestorius was constrained to rise and reply.1 Dorotheus, bishop of Marcianopolis, on the other hand, anathematized from the same pulpit all who persisted in using the expression; his audience retorted by uproariously leaving the church, while a large body of clergy and laity formally withdrew from communion with Nestorius, whose friend Dorotheus was.

Matters were soon ripe for foreign intervention, and the notorious Cyrit (g.v.) of Alexandria, in whom the antagonism between the Alexandrian and Antiochene schools of theology, as well as the perhaps inevitable jealousy between the patriarchate of St Mark and that of Constantinople, found an exponent of unexampled deternti- nation and unscrupulosity, did not fail to make use of the opportunity. He stirred up his own clergy, he wrote to encourage the dissidents at Constantinople, and he addressed himself to the

sister and wife of the emperor (Theodosius himself being known to be still favourable to Nestorius). Nestorius himself, on the other hand, having occasion to write to Pope Celestine I. about the Pelagians (whom he was not inclined to regard as heretical), gave from his own point of view an account: of the disputes

1 The substance of this discourse has been preserved in a Latin translation by Marius Mercator, which is given in Galland's Biblioth, Patr., vol. viil

which had recently arisen within his patriarchate. This implied appeal, however, was the reverse of successful, for the pope, in a synod which met in 430, decided in favour of the epithet @cordéxos, and bade Nestorius retract his erroneous teaching, on pain of instant excommunication, at the same time entrusting the exccution of this decision to the patriarch of Alexandria. On hearing from Rome, Cyril at once held a synod and drew up a doctrinal formula for Nestorius to sign, and also twelve anathemas covering the various points of the Nestorian dogmatic. Nestorius, instead of yielding to the combined pressure of his two great rivals, merely replied by a counter excommunication.

In this situation of affairs the demand for a general council became irresistible, and accordingly Theodosius and Valentinian IIT. issued letters summoning the metro- politans of the catholic church to meet at Ephesus at Whitsuntide 431, each bringing with him some able suffragans. Nestorius, with sixteen bishops and a large following of armed men, was among the first to arrive ; soon afterwards came Cyril with fifty bishops. Juvenal of Jerusalem and Flavian of Thessalonica were some days late. It was then announced that John of Antioch had been delayed on his journey and could not appear for some days; he, however, is stated to have written politely requesting that the opening of the synod should not be delayed on his account. Cyril and his friends accordingly assembled in the church of the Theotokos on the 22d of June, and summoned Nestorius before them to give an account of his doctrines. The reply they received was that he would appear as soon as all the bishops were assembled ; and at the same time the imperial commis- sioner, Candidian, presented himself in person and formally protested against the opening of the synod. Notwith- standing

these circumstances, Cyril and the one hundred and fifty-nine bishops who were with him proceeded to read the imperial letter of convocation, and afterwards the letters which had passed between Nestorius and his adversary. Almost immediately the entire assembly with one voice cried out anathema on the impious Nestorius and his impious doctrines, and after various extracts from the writings of church fathers had been read the decree of his exclusion from the episcopate and from all priestly communion was solemnly read and signed by all present, whose numbers had by this time swelled to one hundred and ninety-eight. When the decision was known the populace, who had been eagerly waiting from early morning till night to hear the result, accompanied the members with torches and censers to their lodgings, and there was a general illumination of the city. A few days afterwards (June 26 or 27) John of Antioch arrived, and efforts were made by both parties to gain his ear; whether inclined or not to the cause of his former co-presbyter, he was naturally excited by the precipitancy with which Cyril had acted, and at a "conciliabulum " of forty-three bishops held in his lodgings shortly after his arrival he was induced by Candidian, the friend of Nestorius, to depose the bishops of Alexandria and Ephesus on the spot. The efforts, how- ever, to give effect to this act on the following Sunday were frustrated by the zeal of the Ephesian mob. Meanwhile a letter was received from the emperor declaring invalid the session at which Nestorius had been deposed unheard ; numerous sessions and counter-sessions were afterwards held, the conflicting parties at the samc time exerting them- selves to the utmost to secure an effective superiority at court. In the end Theodosius decided to confirm the depositions which had been pronounced on both sides, and Cyril and Memnon as well as Nestorius were by his orders laid under arrest. Representatives from each side were now summoned before him to Chalcedon, and at last, yielding to the sense of the evident majority, he gave a

decision in favour of the '" orthodox," and the council of Ephesus was dissolved. Maximian, one of the Con- stantinopolitan clergy, a native of Rome, was promoted to the vacant see, and Nestorius was henceforward represented in the city of his former patriarchate only by one small congregation, which also a short time afterwards became extinct. The commotion which had been thus raised did not so easily subside in the more

eastern section of the church ; the Antiochenes continued to maintain for a considerable time an attitude of antagonism towards Cyril and his creed, and were not pacified until an understanding was reached in 433 on the basis of a new formula involving some material concessious by him. The union even then met with resistance from a number of bishops, who, rather than accede to it, submitted to deposition and expulsion from their sees; and it was not until these had all died out that, as the result of stringent imperial edicts, Nestorianism may be said to have become extinct through- out the Roman empire. Their school at Edessa was closed by Zeno in 489. As for Nestorius himself, immediately after his deposition he withdrew into private life in his old monastery of Euprepius, Antioch, until 435, when the emperor ordered his banishment to Petra in Arabia. A second decree, it would seem, sent him to Oasis, probably the city of the Great Oasis, in Upper Egypt, where he was still living in 439, at the time when Socrates wrote his Church History. The invasions of savage tribes compelled him to seek refuge in the Thebaid, where, however, the governor caused him to be dragged to Elephantis and sub- sequently to Panopolis. The time, place, and circum- stances of his death are unknown; but zeal for theological truth and retributive justice has led at least one historian to exercise his invention in providing a fit end for the friendless heretic. The followers of Nestorius found tolera- tion under the rulers of Persia, from which empire they gradually spread into India and even into Arabia and China. They also succeeded in securing a foothold among the Tartars. Their patriarch had his sec for a consider- able time at Seleucia-Ctesiphon, afterwards in Baghdad, and then in Alkésh. In the 13th century he is said to have had twenty-five metropolitans underhim. The sect was almost extirpated by Timur.

What is teclinically and conventionally mcant in dogmatic theo- logy by ‘‘the Nestorian heresy” has been briefly indicated elsewhere (vol. xiii. p. 671). As Eutychianism is the doctrine that the God- man has only one nature, so Nestorianism is the doctrine that He has two complete persons. So far as Nestorius himself is concerned, however, it 1s certain that he never formulated any such doctrine ; nor does any recorded utterance of his, however casual, come so near the heresy called by his name as Cyril’s deliberately framed third anathema (that regarding the ‘‘ physical union” of the two hypostases or natures) approaches Eutychianism. It must be remembered that Nestorins was as orthodox at all events as Athanasius on

the subject of the incarnation, and sincerely, even fanatically, held every article of the Nicene creed. Hefele him- self, one of the most recent as well as most learned and acute of Cyril's partisans, is compelled to admit that Nestorius accurately held the duality of the two natures and the integrity of each, was equally explicitly opposed to Arianism and Apollinarianism, and was perfectly correct in his assertion that the Godhead can neither be born nor suffer ; all that he can allege against him is that ''the fear of the communicatio idiomatuwm pursued him like a spectre." But in reality the question raised by Nestorius was not one as to the communicatio idiomatum, but simply as to the proprieties of language. He did not refuse to speak of Mary as being the mother of Christ or as being the mother of Emmanuel, but he thought it improper to speak of her as the mother of God. And there is at least this to be said for him that even the most zealous desire to frustrate the Arian had never made ita part of orthodoxy to speak of David as @eordrwp or of James as ddeApd0cos. The secret of the enthusiasm of the masses for the analogous expression Theotokos is to be sought not so much in the Nicene doctrine of the incarna- nation as in the recent growth in the popular mind of notions as to the dignity of the Virgin Mary, which were entirely unheard of (except in heretical circles) for nearly three centuries of the Christian era (see MARY, vol. xv. p. 590-1). (J. 8, BL.)

NESTORIUS

Mopern NesTor1aAns.—The remnants of the Aramean Nestorians are to be found in diminishing numbers partly on Turkish, partly on Persian territory. Since the close of the 17th century the Roman Catholic mission, with its headquarters at Aleppo, has, through the powerful sup- port of the French consuls, met with great success among the Nestorians, and has formed the converts into the so- called Chaldeans, or Nestorians connected with the Roman Catholic Church. Those Nestorians who still adhere to their ancient creed are settled on Turkish soil mainly in the wild and inaccessible regions of eastern Kurdistan, and on Persian soil in the highly fertile plain to the west of the Lake of Urmia. In the former district Nestorians have lived along with the uncivilized Kurds (Iranians) from a very early period, and their numbers have probably been increased by immigrants driven from the lowlands of the Euphrates and Tigris by Moslem persecution. 'Till quite

recently they have maintained there a comparative inde- pendence in spite of the perpetual hostility of the Kurds. In those districts where the Kurds are numerically superior they have the ascendency over the scattered Nestorian com- munities; but there were formerly districts mainly or, as in the case of Tiyari (Tyari), almost completely occupied by Nestorians, and in these the Kurds were the subject race. As in those regions the conditions of life are the same for both, there is little difference between Christians and Mohammedans ; the Nestorians wear nearly the same garb as their Kurd neighbours, the most noteworthy article being the breeches. The mountain Nestorians have generally striped jackets and felt caps, and frequently a staff (the stony mountain roads being mere footpaths, or at best only available for mules). Stock-breeding is the chief occupation ; and in summer the herds are taken up to the higher regions, where, however, sheep and goats are exposed to the attacks of wild animals, especially bears and wolves. The alpine character of some of those dis- tricts has been greatly admired by the few travellers who, in spite of risks from brigands, have ventured to visit them. In certain valleys, as, for instance, in that of the Zab, there is luxuriant vegetation: the chief trees are the willow and the poplar; rice is cultivated, though at the risk of intermittent fever. To avoid the mosquitoes the people spend the summer nights in the open air on the top of a scaffolding of poles. Their ordinary houses are generally very wretched, often consisting of but a single room, and sometimes even being formed underground, after a fashion that becomes common in Armenia. Besides making most of their own utensils, the mountaineers work certain copper and sulphur mines, and earn a little money by gathering gall-nuts. Their basket-work, for which the district of Tchelu is particularly famous, deserves to be specially mentioned; travelling basketmakers from this region are to be found in all parts of western Asia. The montaineers do a good deal of hand-spinning and stocking-working, even their priests engaging in these forms of industry as well as in tillage. Wooden spoons are made in the mountains. The people as a rule are very poor; many of them migrate for a time (to Mesopotamia for the most part), but come back with their petty gains to their homes, to which they are much attached. This applies, however, only to certain districts; from the central highlands of Tiy4ri, for instance, emigration is rare. ‘The supply of food in the mountains.is very meagre; wheat does not thrive well, and the people depend on millet-bread, roasted meal, and dried mulberries. Great labour

has to be expended in carrying soil up to the ter- races which they cultivate on the mountain sides. Milk and its preparations are largely used; and bee-keeping receives some attention. The hospitality of the moun- taineers stands high; they willingly share their last morsel

with a stranger. Intellectually they are not unlike the Kurds: the latter are proverbially stupid, and these Nes- torians also are reproached not only with ignorance but with lack of capacity. The clergy, ignorant to an extra-ordinary degree, live a miserable life, and give themselves little concern about the education of their flocks. They receive, however, no small respect from their people, who also show a touching and reverential attachment to their creed. Even the churches are objects of peculiar devotion. The accusation sometimes brought against the mountain Nestorians that they resemble the Kurds in a tendency to raiding and brigandage is not altogether without founda- tion; but this may be at once explained and excused by the fact that they live in the midst of a hostile and rapacious population, from whose attacks they can defend themselves only by reprisals. In warlike courage they are not behind the Kurds. Among both races the women, judged by Oriental standards, occupy a high position. The moun- tain Nestorians are governed by hereditary village sheikhs called meliks (“kings”; compare the “kings” of the Canaanites). Great influence is possessed by the patriarch residing at Kotchannes near Julamerg, who always bears the name of Mar Shimun (z.e., Lord Simeon); the civil jurisdiction over the independent tribes is in his hands. The patriarchal dignity is hereditary in one family; the woman destined to be the mother of the future patriarch must refrain during her pregnancy from eating flesh, a dict which is absolutely forbidden to the patriarch himself. It may sometimes happen that the patriarch resorts to ecclesiastical excommunication against those who have opposed him in secular affairs; but the Nestorians are quite contented under their theocratic government, and have always shown a strong feeling of independence. Things went hard with them in 1846, when their inde- pendence was destroyed. In concert with the Turkish pasha in Mosul, to whom the freedom of the mountaineers was a perpetual offence, three powerful Kurdish chieftains (of whom Nurulla of Revandiz and Bedr Khan of Buhtan have attained unenviable

celebrity) decided to make a common attack upon the Christians. Taken completely by surprise, and basely deserted by their patriarch, these could offer but a feeble resistance; their property was pillaged, and more than 10,000 of their number were massacred. On a small scale similar proceedings are repeated from time to time; and the Turkish Government not only remains powerless to prevent them, but if any advantage accrues to itself looks on with malignant ap- proval. Frequently the Kurdish beys make raids with comparative impunity even in the richer lowland regions, as, for example, to Azerbijan in 1882.

The Nestorians on Persian territory (in Azerbijan) live, even the few who inhabit the mountains, under essentially different conditions; the greater proportion, however, dwell on the rich and fruitful plain which lies round the city of Urmia (Urmi). The date of their settlement in this district is not known, but Urmia is mentioned as early as 1111 as the see of a Nestorian bishop. Nestorians from the mountains may have gradually advanced east- wards into the plain, where they found more favourable conditions of life. If not particularly healthy, it is abundantly watered, and the fruit which it produces in profusion forms their principal means of subsistence. Even here, indeed, they are subject to poverty, for the soil belongs in great part to Mohammedan proprictors. Catholic missions have had some success among them, and there is a Chaldzan bishopric at Khosrava; but since 1831 the field has been more especially worked by the American Board, which has sought to accomplish its purpose by utilizing through the clergy the actually existing church, and by founding schools and introducing

the press. In education a decided improvement may be observed. Formerly out of two hundred Nestorians hardly one could read and write; the proportion is now much higher. The development of the moral and religious char- acter of the people is, however, a difficult task; partly on account of their pride in their old church and old beliefs, and partly because, to some extent through Persian influence, their morale has undergone great degradation. Volatile, sensuous, intemperate, and full of all kinds of superstition, while they are certainly more talented and sharper-witted than their brethren among the mountains, they are also much less truthful and

trustworthy. As their garb is similar to that of the Persians, so also are many of their manners and customs. Many intelligent countenances are to be found among them. It has even been asserted that these are of the Jewish type, and some travellers have proposed an identification of the Nestorians with the lost tribes of Israel. The ethnographic arguments in favour of this Jewish connexion are, however, of no value; for many of the individual characteristics in which the Nestorians agree with the ancient Jews are common to all Oriental nations ; and, what is of more importance, the type itself is not the Jewish one. The Nestorians have round heads, and frequently light hair and hazel eyes. Among the mountain Nestorians the complexion is usually a ruddy brown. That through all the centuries of nominal Moham- medan domination the national type should have been preserved must be ascribed exclusively to their isolated situation. They still speak Aramean (Syriac); but their dialect is not a lineal descendant of the classical and literary language. In the mountains most of the Nestorians understand Kurdish, and in the low country of Azerbijan Turkish ; and both languages have exercised a great influence on their native tongue. The low-country dialect has greatly suffered from phonetic decay; that of the mountaineers preserves many of the older forms, and is pronounced with greater correctness. The Nestorians, it may be added, call themselves in their own language Surayi, and do not recognize the designation Nestorians bestowed upon them by people of other creeds. The patriarch bears the title of patriarch of the Chaldeans, The Nestorians have a number of peculiar customs and manners. Their marriage ceremonies are very interesting, as also are some of their other festivals, during which, at least in the Urmia plain, there is always plenty of danc- ing, drinking, and in the end fighting. The mountain Nestorians more particularly are fond of hunting and hawking. One custom may be mentioned as peculiarly Kuropean ; not only do they kiss the hands of their clergy, but they lift their caps to them—a mark of respect nowhere else in use in the East. Blood-revenge is in full vogue both in mountains and lowlands; but there are asylums for homicides. Pork is never eaten. As to creed, the Nestorians are strongly opposed to image worship, have no auricular confession, know nothing of a purgatory, and allow their priests to marry. The Lord’s Supper is a kind of magical ceremony with them, and several curious customs are connected with its observance. As a matter of course their peculiarities are better

preserved in places like Urmia on the one side or the mountain district of Tiy4ri on the other, where they live together in considerable numbers.

In regard to the total numerical strength of the Nestorians, authorities differ greatly. Perkins spoke of 140,000, and assigned 50,000 to Tiyari alone. The most trustworthy data are probably those of Badger, based, in the main, on information furnished by the patriarch, but with the nnmber of families reduced one-third throughout (the figures given having, in some instances, been seen to be greatly cxaggcrated), The total number of families being 11,378, it may be estimated that the individuals amount to about 70,000. In the following table the cnnmeration of families as 4500 in Nos. 7 and 8 is purely approximate.

Dioceses, ee, Bishops. Priests.' Churches. | Families. T, (ARG asta ncsseaeendsencssesccxcoeevers 1 0 9 13 249 2. Berwari…. 1 0 18 20 348 Gs TTD ccopsamannencaes 0 2 16 23 220 4. Central Kurdistan. 0 0 62 75 2,778 5. Tkhoma, Tchelu, &e.. 1 0 24 37 IS) 6; (Gawans QC, esescastarscerecesceessee 1 0 18 34 1,082 Us TIONG pee npboreoonntaeononeoose fale WOBBLE es aR eetremonsocedsoctnenoe } : – . = 4,500 9. New and NUdGsi..sescesees 0 0 'if 9 222) rf 7 188 249 11,378

The first-named diocese is the most southerly; it embraces the districts of Akra, Zebur, Mezuriye, and Jebel Gara to the north of Mosul. It is there more especially that, since the date of the collection of the figures given above, there have probably been accessions to the Chaldean Church. The second diocese, compris- ing Berwari, Nerwi, and Snpna, lics to the north of the first, and nearer the mountains; the third, farther to the west and north- west, is mainly occupied by independent Kurds, and is still practi- cally unexplored ; the fourth, directly subject to the patriarch, contains, besides the county of Tiyari (upper and lower), almost exclusively inhabited by Nestorians, Ashitha to the west, and Kotchannes, Diz, &c., to the north. North-castward towards the Persian frontier lies the sixth diocesc, including, in addition to Gawar, Albak and some other small isolated parishes; to the north of Tiyari is the (ninth) diocese of Lewun and Nudes (Nurduz?), and to the cast (fifth diocese) two leading districts of the Tkhoma mountains and the inhospitable Tchelu, along with Bar, Rekan, and

Tchall. The seventh diocese, called also Be Shems-ud-din, lies to the east of Tchelu, and includes also Baradost, as well as Tergawer, Marjaver, &c., within Persian territory.

See G. P. Badger, The Nestorians and thetr Rituals, 2 vols., London, 1852; J. Perkins, A Residence of Eight Years in Persia among the Nestortan Christians,

Andover, 1843; Asahel Grant, The Nestorians or the Lost Tribes, 2d ed., London, 1843; and also compare Layard's WVineveh and Ritter's Asia. (A. 80.)

NESTS. See Birps, vol. iii. p. 771.

NET. A net consists of a fabric of thread, twine, or cord, the intersections of which are firmly knotted so as to form meshes or interspaces of fixed dimensions,—the meshes being usually lozenges of uniform size. The art of netting is intimately related to weaving, knitting, plaiting, and pillow-lace and machine-lace making, from all of which, however, it is distinguished by the knotting of the inter- sections of the cord. It is one of the most ancient and uni- versal of arts, having been in all times commonly practised among the rudest and most primitive tribes, to whom the net is of great importance in hunting and fishing.

Net-making, as a modern industry, is principally con- cerned with the manufacture of the numerous forms of net used in fisheries, but netting is also largely employed for many and varied purposes, as for catching game and birds, for the temporary division of fields, for protecting fruit in gardens, for collecting insects, for hammocks, and ship use, for screens and other furniture purposes, for ladies' hair, house bags, &c. While to a large extent net-making con- tinues to be a handicraft, since the early part of the 19th century numerous forms of machine have been invented for netting, and several of these have been successfully introduced on a large scale in factories for the manufacture of fishing nets. Such fishing nets were formerly made principally from hemp fibre—technically called "twine"; but since the adaptation of machinery to net-making cotton has been increasingly used. Cotton nets, being more flexible and lighter than those

made of twine, are much more easily handled and. stowed, and in practice they are rapidly superseding all others.

The forms of fishing nets vary according to the manner in which they are intended to act. This is either by entangling the fish in their complicated folds, as in the trammel ; receiving them into pockets, as in the trawl; suspending them by the body in the meshes, as in the mackerel-net ; imprisoning them within their labyrinth- like chambers, as in the stake-net; or drawing them to shore, as in the seine (See FisHertes, vol. ix. p. 247). The parts of a net are the head or upper margin, along which the corks are strung upon a rope called the head

co

NET

rope; the foot is the opposite or lower margin, which carries the foot-rope, on which in many cases leaden plummets are made fast. The meshes are the squares composing the net. The width of a net is expressed by the term "over"; e.g., a day-net is three fathoms long and one over or wide. The lever is the first row of a net. There are also accrues, false meshes, or quarterings, which are loops inserted in any given row, by which the number of meshes is increased. To bread or breathe a net is to make a net. Dead netting is a piece without either accrues or stole (stolen) meshes, which last means that a mesh is taken away by netting into two meshes of the preceding row at once.

Hand-Netting. —Net-making as a handicraft is a simple and easily acquired art; the labour is not hard; and the implements and materials are easily obtained and inexpen- sive, while a little practice in meshing is suffieient to develop wonderful dexterity of movement. The tools used in netting are the needle, an instrnment for holding and netting the material; it is made with aneye EH, atongue T, and a fork F (fig. 1).

The twine is wound on it by being passed

alternately between the fork and round

the tongue, so that the turns of the

string lie parallel to the length of the

needle, and are kept on by the tongue

and fork. A spool or mesh-pin is a piece

of wood on which the loops are formed

(round, as in fig. 2, or flat, as in fig. 3),

the circumference or the spool determin-

ing the size of the loops. Each loop con- {f=

tains two sides of the square mesh ; ciel fore, supposing that it be required to . 7 vs make E ohes t inch square,—that is, P81. Fig. 2. Pig: 8. measuring 1 inch from. knot to knot,—a spool 2 inches in eir- cumference must be used. Large meshes may be formed by giving the twine two or more turns round the spool, as occasion may require; or the spool may bo made flat, and of a suffieient width, having a portion cut away to admit the finger and thumb to grasp it con- veniently (fig. 3). The method of making the hand-knot in nets known as the fisher- man's knot is : more easily acquired by example than described in writing. Fig. 4 shows the course of the twine in forming a single knot. From the last-formed knot the twine passes over the front of the mesh-pin h, and is caught behind by the little finger of the left hand, forming the loop s, thence it passes to the front and is caught at d by the left thnmb, then through the loops s and m as indicated, after which the twine is released by the thumb and the knot is drawn "taut" or tight. Fig. 5 shows the form of

Fig. 4. the fisherman's knot, and fig. 6 is a bend knot used for uniting two ends of twine.

Machine-Netting.—So long ago as 1778 a netting-machine was patented by William Horton, William Ross, Thomas Davies,

and John Golby. From that time till the end of the 18th century several other patents for similar machines m were seeured in Great Britain, but there is no evidence that any of them Was praetically successful. In 1802 the French Govern- ment, through the Société @Eneouragement pour l'In- dustrie Nationale, offercd a reward of 10,000 franes

Fig. 5.

Fig. 6. to the person who should invent an automatic machine for net-

making. The reward attracted the attention of Jacquard, who submitted a model of a machine which was brought under the

notice of Napoleon I. and Carnot. Jacquard was summoned to Paris by the emperor, who, with foreible if profane point, asked of the inventor—‘‘ Are you the,man who pretends to do what God Almighty cannot—tie a knot in a stretched string ?” Jacquard’s niodel, which is incomplete, was deposited in the Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers ; it was awarded a prize, and he himself received an appointment in the Conservatoire, where he was not long in perfecting his famous Jacquard attachment to the common loom. In 1806 M. Buron of Bourgthéronlde (Eure) submitted to the Société d’Encouragement a model of a netting-machine for which he was awarded a gold medal. His model is also deposited in the Conser- vatoire. Meantime attention continued to be given to the problem in the United Kingdom, and the first to succeed practically in inventing an efficient machine and in establishing the industry of machine net-making was Mr James Paterson of Musselburgh. Paterson, originally a cooper, served in the army through the Peninsular war, and was discharged after the battle of Waterloo. From his early days he had devoted his mind to the invention of a net-making machine, and on his retirement from the army he set himself to earry out his purpose. After much labour he succeeded, and established a machine net factory in Musselburgh about 1820. The early form of machine was, however, imperfect, the knots it formed slipped readily, and, there being much prejudice against machine nets, the demand for his mannfactures was small. Mr Walter Ritchie, a native of Musselburgh, devised a method for forming the ordinary hand-knot on the machine nets, and the machine, so improved, and patented in July 1835, beeaine the foundation of an extensive and flourishing industry. Paterson’s factory about 1849 passed into the hands of Messrs J. & W. Stuart, by whom the machine and processes have been still further developed and perfected.

The mechanism of the Paterson net-loom or machine is complex, and not to be understood without elaborate diagrams or actual inspection. It eonsists of an arrangement of hooks, needles, and sinkers, one of each being required for every mesh in the breadth being made. The needles hold the meshes, while the hooks seize the lower part of each and twist it intoa loop. Through the series of loops so formed a steel wire is shot, carrying with it twine for

the next range of loops. This twine the sinkers successively catch and depress sufficiently to form the two sides and loop of the next mesh to be formed. The knot formed by threading the loops is now tightened up, the last formed mesh is freed from the sinkers and transferred to the hooks, and the process of looping, threading, and knotting thus continues.

Another form of efficient net-loom, working on a principle dis- tinct from that of Paterson, was invented and patented in France by M. Onésiphore Peequeur in uy 1840, and again in France and in the United Kingdom in 1849. The machine of Pec- queur was improved on by many subsequent inventors ; and especially the additions made by MM. Bandouin and Jouannin, patented in the United Kingdom in 1861, greatly perfected its principle. In this machine. separate threads or cords running longi- tudinally for each division of the mesh are employed, as will be seen from fig. 7, whieh represents a section of the net with the knots loose to show their strueture. It will also be observed that the alternate threads @ and 3 are differently

Fig. 7.

disposed—the @ series being drawn into simple loops over and

through which the threads of the 6 series have to pass. On the machine the a series of threads are arrangcd vertically, while the b series are placed horizontally in thin lenticular spools, Over the horizontal b serics is a range of hooks equal in number with the threads, and set so that they seize the b threads, raise them, and give them a donble twist, thus forming a row of open loops. The — loops are then depressed, and, seizing the vertical @ threads, draw them ‘ crotchet-like through the } loops into loops sufficiently long and open to pass right over the spools containing the 0 threads (fig. 8), after which it only remains to tighten the threads and the mesh is complete. The machines work well with steam-power; and each requires only one female attendant. : d

Bobbin Net, which is the foundation of machine-made lace, is made by the intertwisting—not knotting—of contiguous threads (see LACE, vol. xiv. p. 185),

Wire-netting, which is in extensive demand for garden use, poultry coops, and numerous like purposes, is also a twisted struc- ture made principally by machine pogver. The chief centre of wire-net making is Warrington in Lancashire. (J. PA.)

NETHERLANDS, Kinepom or tHE. See HoLbLanp.

NETSCHER, Gaspar (1639-1684), portrait and genre painter, was born at Heidelberg in 1639. His father died when he was two years of age, and his mother, fleeing from the dangers of a civil war, carried him to Arnheim, where he was adopted and educated by a benevolent physician named Tullekens. At first he was destined for the profession of his patron, but his great aptitude for painting soon caused the plan of his future career to be altered. He was placed under an artist named De Koster, and, having also studied under Terburg, he set out for Italy to complete his education there, Marrying, how- ever, at Liége, he proceeded no farther. He settled at Bordeaux, and toiled hard to earn a livelihood by painting fancy subjects. But those small cabinet pictures which are now so highly valued on account of their exquisite finish brought but a small remuneration; and, after re- moving to the Hague, he turned his attention to portrait- painting. In this branch of his art he was more successful. He was patronized by William ITIL, and his earnings soon became so considerable that he was enabled at times to gratify his own taste and fancy by depicting musical and conversational pieces. It was in these that Netscher's genius was first fully displayed. The choice of these subjects, and the habit of introducing female figures, dressed in rich, glossy satins, were imitated from Terburg .; they possess easy yet delicate pencilling, brilliant and correct colouring, and pleasing light and shade; but fre- quently their refinement passes into weakness, and they err through over-finish. The painter soon attracted notice, and was rapidly gaining both fame and wealth, when he was cut off in 1684 at the premature age of forty-five.

The paintings of Netscher are rare. The most extensive col- lection of them, numbcring eight subjects, is at Dresden; and examples may be studied in the Louvre, in the galleries of Florence, the Hague, Cassel, Copenhagen, and St Petersburg, in the London National Gallery, and in the Bridgewater,

Ashburton, and Apsley House collections. The style of Netscher was imitated

by his two sons Theodore and Constantine; but these, though meritorious painters, were far inferior to their father.

NETTLE is the vernacular equivalent of the Latin Urtica, which again gives its name to the Urticacex. The species of Urtica are herbs covered with stinging hairs, and with unisexual flowers on the same or on different plants. The male flowers consist of a perianth of four greenish seg- ments enclosing as many stamens, which latter, when freed from the restraint exercised upon them by the perianth- segments while still in the bud, suddenly uncoil themselves, and in so doing liberate the pollen. The female perianth is similar, but encloses only a single seed-vessel with a solitary seed. The stinging hairs consist, at the base, ofa bulbous reservoir filled with acrid fluid, and prolonged into a long slender tube, the extremity of which is finely pointed. By means of this point the hair penetrates the skin and discharges its irritant contents beneath the surface. Some tropical species of Urtica produce a fluid of such potency that the most serious consequences ensue from coming into contact with the plant. Nettle tops, or the very young shoots of the nettle, may be used as a vegetable like spinach ; but from the abundance of crystals (cystolithes) they contain they are apt to be gritty, though esteemed for their antiscorbutic properties. The fibre furnished by the stems of several species is, however, of more economic importance, being used for the purpose of cordage or paper-making. Three species of nettle are wild in the British Isles, although from their general presence in the neighbourhood of houses, or in spots where house refuse is deposited, it has been suggested that they are

not really natives, a supposition that to some extent receives countenance from the circumstance that the young shoots are very sensitive to frost. In any case they follow man in his migrations, and by their presence usually indicate a soil rich in nitrogen. The trailing subterranean root-stock renders the common nettle somewhat difficult of extirpa- tion.

NETTLERASH, or Urticaria, a disorder of the skin characterized by an eruption resembling the effect pro. duced by the sting of a nettle, namely, raised red or red and white patches occurring in parts or over the whole of

the surface of the body, and attended with great itching and irritation. It may beacute orchronic. In the former variety the attack appears to be connected with digestive derangements, and often comes on after indulgence in certain articles of diet, particularly various kinds of fruit, shell-fish, cheese, pastry, &c., also occasionally from the use of certain drugs, such as henbane, copaiba, cubebs, turpentine, &c. There is at first considerable feverishness and constitutional disturbance, together with sickness and faintness, which either precede or accompany the appear- ance of the rash. The eruption may appear on any part of the body, but is most common on the face and trunk, In the former position it causes swelling and disfigurement while it lasts, and is apt to excite alarm in persons unacquainted with its nature. The attack may pass off in a few hours, or may last for several days, the eruption continuing to come out in successive patches. The chronic variety consists in an eruption similar to that above described, but lasting with interruptions for a length of time often extending to months or years. This form of the disease occurs independently of errors in diet, and is not attended with the feverish symptoms characterizing the acute attack. It is probably connected with consti- tutional conditions, and is occasionally observed in the gouty. As regards treatment, the acute variety generally yields quickly to a purgative and the use of some antacid, such as magnesia or liquor potassee. The local irritation is allayed by sponging with a warm alkaline solution (soda, potash, or ammonia), or a solution of acetate of lead. In the chronic form, in addition to these remedies, any constitutional morbid condition will demand special atten- tion.

NETTLE TREE is the name applied to certain trees of the genus Celtis, and belonging to the family Urticacez. The best-known species have usually obliquely ovate, or lanceolate leaves, serrate at the edge, and marked by three prominent nerves. The flowers are inconspicuous, usually hermaphrodite, with a 4- or 5-parted perianth, as many stamens, a hairy disk, and a 1-celled ovary with a 2-parted style. The fruit is succulent like a little drupe, a character which serves to separate the genus alike from the nettles and the elms, to both of which it is closely allied. The wood of Celtis australis of southern Europe (also cultivated in England) is made use of for a variety of purposes, while the leaves serve as forage. An oil for burning is extracted from the seed of Celtis occidentalis. A North-American species is used for like purposes. Celtis australis was one of those to which the term “

lotus ” was applied by Dioscorides and the older authors, its berries or drupes having a sweet pleasant taste.

NEU-BRANDENBURG, a flourishing town in Mecklen- burg-Strelitz, Germany, situated on a small lake called the Tollenser-See, about 60 miles to the west of Stettin. It is still partly surrounded with walls, and possesses four interesting old Gothic gates, dating from 1304. The principal buildings are the Marienkirche, a Gothic building of the 14th century, the synagogue, the town-house, and the gymnasium. Iron-founding, machine-making, wool- spinning, and the making of paper, tobacco, and musical

instruments are carried on here, and the trade in wool and agricultural products is very considerable. The horse fair is also important. Neu-Brandenburg was founded in 1248, and has belonged to Mecklenburg since 1292. The popula- tion in 1880 was 8406.

NEUBURG, a small town of Bavaria, in the district of Schwaben und Neuburg, is pleasantly situated on the Danube, and in 1880 contained 7690 inhabitants, three- fourths of whom are Roman Catholics. It is a place of very ancient origin, but is chiefly noteworthy from the fact that for three centuries (1503-1802) it was the capital of the independent duchy of Pfalz-Neuburg. The most important building is the old ducal chateau, the handsomest part of which is in the Renaissance style of the 16th century.

NEUCHATEL, or Neurcnren (Germ., Vewendurg), a canton of Switzerland, consisting of a section of the Jura system (see JURA) between the Doubs valley and the Lake of Neuchatel, lies between 46° 50’ and 47° 10’ N. lat. and 6° 25’ and 7° 5’ E. long. It is bounded on the N.E. and E. by Bern, on the S.E. by its lake, which separates it from Freiburg and Vaud, on the 8. by Vaud, and on the W. and N.W. by France (department of Doubs). The greatest length is about 30 miles, the average breadth 11, and the area 312 square miles. It consists for the most part of the longitudinal ridges and valleys character- istic of the Jura mountains, which here have an average elevation of over 3000 feet, and reach their highest point in the Creux du Vent (4900 feet). The drainage is divided by the Thiéle or Zihl, which flows into the Aar, and by the Doubs, the former receiving by far the larger

portion. The lowest part of the canton, stretching along the shore of the lake, and known by the name of Vignobles, has, as the name implies, the vine for its characteristic growth. It extends from about 1425 to upwards of 1800 feet above the level of the sea. An intermediate region represented by the Val de Travers and the Val de Ruz, ranging from 1800 to about 2700 feet in height, produces cereals (only a fifth, however, of the total required by the population). The higher valleys are occupied by meadow and forest. About one-fifth of the total area of the canton is under wood, and nearly a fourth is ranked as un- productive. The geological structure is explained under Jura. The most valuable mineral product of the canton is asphalt, of which there is a large and rich deposit in the Val de Travers, from which upwards of 2000 tons are annually taken (see vol. ii. p. 716). The wine of the Vignobles (both sparkling and still) is plentiful and has a good reputation, being exported in large quantities. On the mountain pasture lands large herds of cattle are reared ; in 1876 the number was 19,469, and there were besides 3009 horses, 3433 pigs, 3586 sheep, 2853 goats, and 4723 beehives. Absinthe is manufactured in the Val de Travers, and exported to the extent of 200,000 bottles annually ; lace is also largely made, especially in that valley, but the characteristic industry of the canton is that of watchmaking In all its branches, carried on chiefly in and around the lofty and secluded villages of Chaux-de-Fonds and Le Locle. The former, which is upwards of 3200 feet above the level of the sea, had a population of 22,456 in 1880, the latter (upwards of 3000 above sea-level) had 10,464,— the annual value of the total production of watches exceed- ing £1,000,000. The population of the canton in 1880 was 103,732 (50,169 males). The proportion of Pro- testants to Catholics is nearly 8 to 1; there are also a small number of Jews. The language of three-fourths of the inhabitants is French.

The territory of NeuehAtel was inhabited during the Roman period by the Gallic Sequani. It is nota gain mentioned in history

O61

until the beginning of the 11th century, when it passed from Burgundy to the German empire. In 1288 it was given by Rudolph of Hapsburg to John II. of Chalons, with the title of count. In 1444 the count of Neuchatel joined

the Swiss league against Austria, and ever afterwards enjoycd Swiss protection. In the beginning of the 16th century the eountship passed to the house of Orleans- Longucville, and in 1579, being conjoined with the countship of Valendis, it became a principality, which in the beginning of the 18th century was inherited by Frederick I. of Prussia (his claims being preferred by the people over those of numerous other candi- dates). In 1806, after the treaty of Tilsit, it was given by Napoleon to Marshal Berthier, but it was restored to Prussia in 1814, though Neuchatel was at the same time recognized as holding a place in the Swiss eonfederaey, being the only nou-republican eanton. In 1848 a republican constitution was established, the king of Prussia protesting ; and in 1856 an attempt was made by a royalist party to re-establish monarchy, but without success. The ultimate result of the negotiations which ensued was that, by a treaty at Paris in 1857, an amnesty was granted to the insurgents, and the king of Prussia resigned all claim to sovereignty while still retaining the right to bear the title of prince of Neuchitel. Neucuiren, the capital of the above canton, stands near the north end of the lake, at the mouth of the Seyon, partly on low alluvial ground and partly on the slope of the Jura. The castle (whence the name Neocomum, Neoburgum, Novum Castrum), which is situated on an eminence, is a considerable building, now occupied by the Government offices. It was formerly the residence of the princes of Neuchatel, and the most ancient portion, recently restored, dates from the Burgundian period. Near it is the Temple du Haut, a church dating from the 12th century ; it contains a handsome monument (1372) to Count Louis of Neuchatel, and a memorial stone to the Reformer Farel, who frequently laboured here. His statue in front was erected in 1875. On the lake stands the gymnasium or college, containing a library, an archeological museum, and a valuable natural history collection founded by Agassiz. The town also possesses a picture gallery, a good observatory, and considerable charitable institutions, mostly due to the munificence of private citizens,—the municipal hospital, founded by David de Pury, whose statue stands in the Place Pury, and the Pourtalés hospital, founded by M. Pourtalés. The Préfargier lunatic asylum, presented to the canton in 1844 by M. de Meuron, is situated 3 miles to the west of the town. Neuchatel has a considerable trade in the products of the canton, the chief items being wine, watches, lace, and liqueurs. It has railway communication by Yverdon with Lausanne and Pontarlier, by Bienne with Basel, by Chaux-de-Fonds with Locle and also with Basel, and

by the Val de Travers with Pontarlier. The population in 1880 was 15,612. NEUCHATEL, Tur Laxz of, along with the connected lakes of Morat and Bienne, is the modern representative of the large body of water which at one time occupied the whole lower valley of the Aar. It is 25 miles in length, at its broadest part it measures 6 miles, its maximum depth is 500 feet, and the area is 92 square miles. The Thiéle (Germ., Zihl), which flows into it at the south-west angle, rises in the heights above La Sarraz close to the edge of the Geneva basin; the Broye, which joins it on the north-east, comes from the Lake of Morat (Lacus Aventicensis). It is also fed by the Reuse, which drains the Val de Travers, and by the Seyon from the Val de Ruz (Rudolfsthal). It drains by the Thiéle into the Lake of Bienne and thence into the Aar. Its elevation above sea- level, lowered 7 feet bya recent enlargement of the outlet, is 1424 feet. The north-west shore is cultivated and populous, but the opposite bank is rocky, overgrown with wood, and comparatively thinly peopled. The scenery, though pleasing, cannot compare with that of the more famous Swiss lakes. Besides Neuchatel, the principal towns upon its banks are Estavayer and Yverdon—the ancient Eburodunum or Ebredunum, from which came its Roman name (Lacus Eburodunensis). It abounds in fish; XVII. — 46

.

and a considerable traffic, by steam and otherwise, is borne by its waters. It is subject to violent westerly storms. Interesting remains of ancient lake dwellings have been discovered at Estavayer and Cortaillod.

NEUHAUSEL (in Hungarian, Hrsek-Ujvdr), a town of Hungary, in the district of Neutra, is situated on the river Neutra and on the railway from Pressburg to Pesth, about 60 miles from each of these towns. It was formerly a strong fortress, and played an important part in the wars with the Turks, and in the risings of Bethlen Gabor and Prince Rakoczky, but the works were razed in 1724. Its inhabitants, numbering 10,584 at the census of 1880, are partly of Slovak origin, and are occupied with agricul- ture, vine-growing, and cloth-weaving. Important cattle and horse markets are held here.

NEUHOF, Turopor, Baron von (c. 1690-1756), who fora short time was nominally king of Corsica as Theodore I., was the son of a Westphalian noble, and was born at Metz about 1690. His father, an officer in the French service, had won the special favour of the duchess of Orleans, and on his death in 1695 his son and daughter were taken under her protection. The young baron was thus early initiated into the usages of courts, and received a thorough training in all the accomplishments best fitted to gain him influence with the great. Losses in play having compelled him to leave Paris, he entered the service of Charles XII. of Sweden, by whom he was sent on a secret diplomatic mission in connexion with a project for the restoration of the Stuarts. In connexion with the same intrigue he was also resident for a short time in London. In 1718 he came to Spain, where, obtaining the favour of the duke of Ripperda, he received the commission of colonel, and married Lady Sarsfield, one of the maids of honour of the queen. Finding his position at the court insecure, he made his escape with his wife's jewels. After various adventures he came in 1732 to Florence as representative of the emperor Charles VI. Having here made the acquaintance of several Corsican patriots, he succeeded by expressing strong sympathy with their cause, and promis- ing to gain assistance for them in their resistance to the Genoese, in being accepted as a candidate for the Corsican throne. After fruitless endeavours to intercst various European sovereigns in their behalf, he made his way to the dey of Tunis. From him he obtained a shipload of supplics and ammunition, with which he landed at Corsica on the 14th March 1736. He was received with the utmost enthusiasm, and in the following April was crowned king as Theodore I. By the help of a body-guard of 400 men, and the lavish distribution of new titles, he succeeded for some time in retaining his position, but failing in an effort to capture Bastia from the Genoese, he at the end of eight months resigned his power into the hands of a council of regency, and left the island with the view of arousing sympathy in behalf of his oppressed subjects. Making his way finally to Amsterdam, he was thrown into prison by some of his old creditors, but, succeeding in satisfying their demands, he appeared before Corsica in September 1738 with a considerable supply of provisions and war matériel, only to find it under the power of the French, who had become allies of the Genoese. After the departure of the French in 1743 he endeavoured to re- establish his authority, but found the faction against him so strong that he was soon compelled again to leave Corsica,

and went to England, where he suffered several years imprisonment in the King's Bench prison at the instance of his Dutch creditors. Through the efforts of Horace Walpole a subscription was raised in his behalf, and, an understanding having been arrived at with his creditors, he obtained his freedom in 1756. He died 11th December of the same year.

Neuhof's son, who entered the service of the duke of Wiirtemberg, published an aecount of his father's life under the title Mémoires pour servir & Uhistoire de Corse, 1768, See also Filippini, Histoire des Révolutions de V'Lle de Corse et de ?Elévation de Théodore J. sur le Tréne de cet Etat, The Hague, 1738; D'Argenteourt, De Gekroonde Moff of Theodorus op Stelten (Utreeht, 1739), and De Dwaalende Moff of Verfolg van Theodorus op Stelten (Deventer, 1740); A General Account of the Island of Corsica, with authentic Memoirs of Baron de Neuhoff, London, 18389; History of Theodore L., King of Corstea, London, 1848; Varnhagen von Ense, Jio-graphische Denkmale, part i.

NEUILLY-SUR-SEINE, a town of France, at the head of a canton in the arrondissement of St Denis (department of Seine), lies between the line of the Paris fortifications, the Bois de Boulogne, the right bank of the Seine, and the village of Levallois-Perret, which was formerly included within its limits. It is only 34 miles from the centre of Paris by the road to St Germain (a continuation in the form of a boulevard of the middle avenue of the Champs Elysées), and is practically a mere suburb; but its broad drives and leafy gardens make it a favourite resort for invalids and city people who wish to enjoy a little country air. Unlike St Denis and Clichy, Neuilly has no large manufactories: convents, boarding-schools, maisons de sant¢, laundries, &c., give character to the place, which also contains establishments connected with Paris houses for the manufacture of preserved meats, patent leather, colours, chemicals. The population is 25,235.

A castle at Neuilly, built by the eount of Argenson in the 18th century, ultimately beeame the property and favourite residence of the duke of Orleans (Louis Philippe), the birthplaee of nearly all his ehildren, and the seene of the offer of the erown in 1830. The buildings, whieh eomprised 30 state apartinents, aceommodation for 500 attendants, and stabling for 200

horses, were pillaged and burned by the mob in 1848. The park which extended from the fortifieations to the river, as well as the neighbouring park of Villiers (also belonging to the prinees of Orleans), was broken up into building lots, and is now oeeupied by a large number of small middle-elass houses and a few fine villas. Within the line of the fortifications, but on Neuilly soil, stands the chapel of St Terdin- and ereeted in the Byzantine style on the spot where the duke of Orleans died July 13th, 1842, from the results of a earriage aeeident. The stained glass windows were made at Sevres after designs by Ingres; the dueal eenotaph, designed by Ary Seheffer, was seulptured by M. de Triquety; and the ehapel farther eontains a '* Descent from the Cross," by the last-named artist, a pieture by Jacquand, representing the royal family gathered round the dying prinee, and an angel exeeuted in Carrara marble by the princess Marie his sister. The eastle of Bagatelle, once the property of the count of Artois, now belongs to Sir Riehard Wallace.

NEUMANN, Cart Frrieprico (1798-1870), the well- known Orientalist, was born of Jewish parents at Reich- mansdorf near Bamberg, on the 22d December 1798. He began life in a merchant's office at Frankfort, but finding commerce unsuited to his taste he resigned his desk, and in 1816 entered as a student at the university of Heidelberg. From thence he went to Munich, where, under the influence of the liberal opinions which were fast gaining possession of his mind, he deserted his hereditary faith for the Lutheran communion. Once morc he sought another alma mater, and finally completed his studies at Gottingen. In 1822 he was appointed to a professorship in a gymnasium at Spires, but the same freedom of thought which had led him to leave the religion of his fathers brought him into conflict with the authorities of that institution, who, believing the religious tendency of his

historical teaching to be heterodox, dismissed him from .

his office. About this time he appears to have entered on the serious study of Armenian, and in 1827 we find him at Venice devoting himself to that language under the guidance of the monks of the monastery of San Lazaro. In the following year he visited Paris for the purpose of pursuing a more

general study of the Oriental languages, among which Chinese had for hima special attraction. It was not, however, until he reached London in 1829 that

he first contemplated visiting China, a project which in 1830 he carried into execution. While in that country he gathered together a library of 10,000 volumes, consist- ing of works in all departments of literature, and he also purchased a collection of works in 2400 volumes for the royal library at Berlin. On his return to Europe in 1831 he presented the 10,000 volumes to the royal library at Munich, and was most appropriately installed by the Government as curator of his gift, as well as professor of Chinese at the university. His lectures at this period of his career were no less conspicuous for the deep and wide knowledge they displayed of the languages and history of the East than for the zeal for social progress which was apparent in them. During the disturbed years which preceded the revolutionary period of 1848 the natural tendency of his mind placed him in the fore front among the “friends of the people,” and when the outbreak came he was elected a member of the Bavarian Provisional Parliament. The prominent position thus accorded to him cost him his professorship when four years afterwards the royalists found themselves sufficiently powerful to make such reprisals. He, however, still remained at Munich pursuing his favourite studies until 1864, when he removed to Berlin, where he died on the 17th March

1870.

Among the best known works of this indefatigable student are his Pilgerfahrten buddhistischer Priester aus China und Indien, Leipsic, 1883; Jlémoire sur la vie et les ouvrages de David, philosophe arménien du cingquiéme sitele de notre ére, Paris, 1829 ; Geschichte des Englisch-Chinesischen Kricges, Leipsic, 1846; Supplement to Bitrck’s Marco Polo, Leipsic, 1846; Geschichte des Englischen Reiches in Asien, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1857 ; Ostasiatische Geschichte vom ersten Chinesischen Krieg bis 2. den Vertrdégen in Peking, 1840-60, Leipsic, 1861 ; translations from Armenian of the History of Vartan by Eliseus (London, 1830), and of Vahram’s Chronicle of the Armenian Kingdom in Cilicia (London, 1831); from the Chinese of the Catechism of the Shamans (London, 1831), and of

the History of the Pirates who infested the Chinese Scas from 1807 to 1810 (London, 1831); and from the Italian of the Versuch einer Geschichte der armenischen Literatur (Leipsic, 1833). Besides these works he published Lelrsaal des Mittelreiches, 1836 ; his Asiatische Studien, 1837 ; Die Volker des siidlichen Russlands in threr geschichtlichen Entwickelang, 1847, for the last of which papers he gained a prize from the French Institute.

NEU-MUNSTER, a town of Prussia, in the province of Schleswig-Holstein, district of Kiel, lies on both banks of the small river Schale, in the basin of the Stor. It is the centre of the railway system of Holstein, and after Altona the most important industrial town in the province, containing upwards of seventy cloth-factories, besides manufactories of cotton, wadding, carpets, paper, and bonbons. Its trade is also brisk. The name is derived from an Augustine monastery, founded by Vicelin, and mentioned as “Novum Monasterium” in a document of 1136. Its industrial importance began in the 17th century, when the cloth-workers of Segeberg, a town to the south-east, migrated to it. In 1880 it contained 11,623 inhabitants, almost exclusively Protestant.

NEUNKIRCHEN, or Oser-NEUNKIRCHEN, a small manufacturing town of Prussia, in the district of Treves and circle of Ottweiler, is situated on the Blies, 12 miles to the north-west of Saarbriicken. The principal industrial establishment is a huge iron-foundry, employing upwards of 2000 hands, and producing about 80,000 tons of manu- factured iron per annum; but there are also boiler- works, soap manufactories, and a brewery. It lies in an important coal-basin, in which about 4 niillion tons of coals, worth £1,500,000, are raised annually. The 14,647 inhabitants (1880) consist of Protestants and Roman Catholics in almost equal proportions.

NEURALGIA, literally nerve pain, is a term which is frequently employed both technically and popularly in a Somewhat loose manner, to describe pains the origin of

which is not clearly traceable. In its strict sense it denotes the existence of pain in some portion or through- out the whole of the distribution of a nerve without any distinctly recognizable structural change in the nerve or nerve

centres. This strict definition, if adhered to, how- ever, would not be applicable to a large number of cases of neuralgia; for it is well known that in not a few instances the pain is connected with some source of irrita- tion, by pressure or otherwise, in the course of the affected nerve ; and hence the word is generally used to indicate pain affecting a particular nerve or its branches from any cause. There are few ailments which give rise to greater human suffering than neuralgia, and some of the chief causes concerned in its production, or the conditions most frequently found associated with it, may be briefly alluded to.

It may be stated generally that neuralgia rarely occurs in the midst of good health. On the contrary its exist- ence usually betokens a depressed or enfeebled state. Constitutional conditions inherited or acquired are among the most powerful of the predisposing influences in the production of neuralgia. Thus it is often found to affect the hereditarily rheumatic or gouty. In weakened con- ditions of the system from improper or insufficient food, or as a result of any drain upon the body, or in anemia from any cause, and in certain disease poisons, such as syphilis or malaria, neuralgia is a frequent concomitant. Further, any strain upon the nervous system, such as mental overwork or anxiety, is a predisposing cause of recognized potency. Among the exciting causes of an attack of neuralgia by far the most common is exposure to cold and damp, which seems to excite irritation in a nerve already predisposed to suffer. But irritation may be pro- duced by numerous other causes besides this,—such as a decayed tooth, diseased bone, local inflammations in which nerves are implicated, by some source of pressure upon a nerve trunk, or by swelling of its sheath in its passage through a bony canal or at its exit upon the surface. Further, there would appear to be causes of a reflex character which are capable of setting up neuralgia at a distance, such as intestinal or uterine derangements. The practical importance of ascertaining the probable nature of the cause is obvious.

The pain of neuralgia is generally localized, but may come to extend beyond the immediate area of its first occurrence, It is usually of paroxysmal character, and not unfrequently periodic, occurring at a certain time of the day or night. It varies in intensity, being often of the most agonizing character, or less severe and more of a tingling kind. Various

forms of perverted nerve function may be found co-existing with or following neuralgia. Thus there may be hyperesthesia, anzesthesia, paralysis, or alterations of nutrition, such as wasting of muscles, whitening of the hair, &c. Attacks of neuralgia are liable to recur, particularly when the general health is low, and some persons unhappily continue to suffer from occasional attacks during the greater part of their lifetime.

The nature of the disease and its manifestations will be best understood by a reference to the forms in which neuralgia most commonly shows itself. These are facial neuralgia or tic douloureux, migraine (hemicrania or brow ague), intercostal neuralgia, and sciatica. Other forms, such as those affecting the neck, arm, &c., are described, but they are of less frequent occurrence.

Facial neuralgia, or tic douloureux, is one of the most common forms of neuralgia, and one of the most severe. It affects the great nerve of sensation of the face (fifth nerve), and may occur in one or more of the three divisions in which the nerve is distributed. It is usually confined to one side. Females suffer, on the whole,

more frequently than males, and adults or young persons more than children or the aged. Among the more prominent conditions asso-

ciated with it may be mentioned a low state of health as a result of previous disease, any drain upon the system (such as excessive menstruation, over-lactation, &c.), and, very specially, over-exertion of body or mind and mental anxiety. It is occasionally associated with epilepsy (Trousseau). The attack is often precipitated by the irritation of a decayed tooth or by exposure to cold air. When the first or upper division of the nerve is involved, the pain is mostly felt in the forehead and side of the head. It is usually of an in- tensely sharp, cutting, or burning character, either constant or with exacerbations, and often periodic, returning at a certain hour each day while the attack continues. Occasionally the paroxysms are of extreme violence, and are brought on by the slightest provoca- tion, such as a draught of cool air. The skin over the affected part is often red and swollen, and, even after the attack has abated, feels stiff and tender to the touch. In

this, as in all forms of neuralgia, there are certain localities where the pain is more intense, these ‘‘painful points,” as they are called, being for the most part in those places where the branches of the nerves emerge from bony eanals or pierce the fascia to ramify in the skin. Hence, in this form, the greater severity of the pain above the eye- brow and along the side of the nose. ‘There is also pain in the eyelid, redness of the eye, and flow of tears. When the second division of the nerve is affected the pain is chiefly in the cheek and upper jaw, the painful points being immediately below the lower eyelid, over the cheek bone, and about the upper lip. When the third division of the nerve suffers the pain affects the lower jaw, and the chief painful points are in front of the ear and about the ehin. As a result of this malady important nutritive disturbances may appear in the affected area, such as thickening of the tissues, falling out or blanching of hair, &c., as well as various alterations of sensibility. Attacks of tic douloureux, extremely distressing as they are, may recur oceasionally for years; and, although, by depriving the sufferer of sleep and interfering with the taking of food, they may in some measure impair the health, they rarely appear to lead to any scrious results.

Hemicrania, migraine, brow-ague, and sick headache are various terms employed to describe what appears to be another form of neuralgia, notwithstanding the opinion of some that it is a different kind of disease. The causes giving rise to it appear to be similar to those which bring about any of the forms of neuralgia. In some instances it would seem to be hereditary. It most frequently affects females, and generally occurs in carly life, tending to disappear as age advances, An attack may come on suddenly, but, in general, begins by a dull aching pain in the brow or temple, which steadily increases in severity and extent, but remains usually limited to one side of the head. It attains at times an extreme degree of violence, and is apt to be aggravated by movement, loud noises, or bright light. Accompanying the pain there is more or less of nausea, and when the attack reaches its height vomiting may occur, after which relief comes, especially if sleep supervene. An attack of this kind may last for a few hours or for a whole day, and after it is over the patient feels comparatively well. It may recur periodically, or, as is more common, at irregular intervals. During the paroxysms, or even preceding them, certain sensory disturbanees may be experienced, more especially affections of vision, such

as ocular spectra, hemiopia, diplopia, &c.; and there is also apt to be considerable mental depression.

Iniercostal neuralgia is pain affeeting the nerves which emerge from the spinal cord and run along the spaces between the ribs to the front of the body. This form of neuralgia affects the left side more than the right, is much more common in women than in men, and oceurs generally in enfeebled states of health, I+ might be mistaken for pleurisy or some inflammatory affection of the lungs; but the absence of any chest symptoms, its occurrence independently of the aets of respiration, and other considerations well establish the distinction. ~The specially painful points are ehiefly at the commencement of the nerve as it issues from the spinal canal, and at the extremities towards the front of the body, where it breaks up into filaments which ramify in the skin. This form of neuralgia is occasionally the preeursor of an attack of shingles (Herpes zoster) as well as a result of it.

Seiatica is another of the more eommon forms of neuralgia. It affects the great seiatie nerve which emerges from the pelvis and runs down the leg to the foot. It is in most instances traceable to exposure to cold or damp, to overuse of the limbs in walking, &c.; but there are many other possible causes, Any source of pressure upon the nerve within the pelvis, such as may be produced by a tumour or even by constipation of the bowels, may excite an attack of sciatica, It is often connected with a rheumatic or gouty con- stitution. In general the nerve of one side only is affected. The pain which is felt at first a little behind the hip-joint steadily increases in severity and extends along the course of the nerve and its branches in many instances as far as the toes. The specially painful points are about the knee and ankle joints ; besides which a feeling of numbness is experienced throughout the whole limb. In severe cases all movement of the limb aggravates the pain, and the patient is obliged to remain in bed. In prolonged attacks the

limb may waste and be drawn up and fixed in one position. Attacks of sciatica are often attended with great suffering, and are apt to be very intractable to treatment.

In the treatment of all forms of neuralgia it is of first importance to ascertain if possible whether any constitu- tional morbid condition is associated with the malady, for otherwise the most powerful and approved remedies will often fail. Thus, if evidence of rheumatism, gout, anzemia, &c., be present, treatment appropriatc to these conditions must be employed.

Of means available for the relief of the pain the number is so great that any detailed statement would be impossible in a general notice like the present. Only the more approved and potent remedial measures can be alluded to. The internal administration of narcotics and sedatives often succeeds in quelling the attack and procuring sleep. Among these the various preparations of opium, belladonna, henbane, chloral, croton-chloral, bromide of potassium, the bromide and chloride of ammonium, aconite, gelsemium, &ec., are most commonly employed ; but to many of them, such as opium and chloral, there exists the serious objec- tion of the risk of the acquisition of the habit of indulgence in them.

When the attack is periodic the administration of a large dose of quinine two or three hours previous to the usual time of the seizure will often mitigate, and may even pre- vent, the paroxysm. In migraine, caffein and its prepara- tions are recommended. Many topical applications are of great efficacy. The various liniments or ointments con- taining the preparations of opium, belladonna, or aconite rubbed into the aficcted part will often soothe the most severe local pain. An excellent sedative application is a lotion composed of equal parts of camphor and chloral painted or gently rubbed over the painful area, In many cases relief may be obtained by the hypodermic injection of morphia or atropia, by acupuncture, by blisters, or by counter-irritation with the button cautery.

The plan at one time resorted to of dividing or excising a portion of the affected nerve is now seldom employed, but the operation of nerve-stretching has been recently introduced, and in some forms of neuralgia, notably sciatica, is sometimes successful. It consists in cutting down upon and exposing the nerve, and in seizing hold and drawing upon it so as to stretch it. Such an opera- tion is obviously justifiable only in cases wherc other less severc measures have failed to give relief. The cmploy- ment of

electricity, either in the form of faradization or galvanism, has much to recommend it, and in long continued and intractable forms of neuralgia proves in many instances eminently serviceable. (J. 0, A.)

NEUROPTERA. See Inszots, vol. xiii. p. 151.

NEU-RUPPIN, the chief town of a circle in the district of Potsdam and province of Brandenburg, Prussia, lies on the west bank of a small lake (the Ruppiner See), 37 miles to the north-west of Berlin. The town, which was rebuilt after a destructive fire in 1787, contains three Protestant churches, a small' Roman Catholic church, and various educational and benevolent institutions. Its inhabitants are employed in the manufacture of cloth, starch, and machinery, iron-founding, and lithography. In 1880 they numbered 13,985. Important cattle and horse fairs are held here. The small town of Alt-Ruppin lies at the north end of the lake, and about 10 miles to the north is the chateau of Rheinsberg, where Frederick the Great spent his youth.

NEU-SANDEG, or Nzv-Sannzz (Polish, Vout Sécz), the chief town of a district in western Galicia, lies on the river Dunajec, about 45 miles to the south-east of Cracow. It contains a medieval chateau, a Gothic church of 1448, a Protestant church, a gymnasium, and several benevolent

institutions. In Alt-Sandec, a little to the south, at the confluence of the Poprad and Dunajec, is an old convent of Clarissine nuns, formerly one of the wealthiest in Poland. Sandec was founded by Wenzel, king of Poland and Bohemia, in 1294. It contains (1880) 11,185 inhabi- tants, most of whom are Protestants.

NEUSATZ (Hungarian, Uj Vidék; Servian, Nowisad), a royal free town of Hungary, in the province of Bacs, and the seat of a Greek non-united bishop, lies on the left bank of the Danube, opposite Peterwardein, with which it is connected by a bridge of boats. It is about 150 miles to the south of Pesth and 50 miles above Belgrade. The town is well built, and contains ten churches (Greek, Roman Catholic, and Protestant), a synagogue, a gymnasium, and a real-school. It is a steamboat station, and carries on a brisk trade in grain and fruit with Germany and Turkey. Nearly one half of

its 21,325 inhabitants (1880) are Serbs, the other half being made up of Magyars, Germans, and Jews; and it has recently become a sort of religious and literary centre for the Serbs of Hungary. Neusatz was founded in the middle of the 18th century, and was almost totally destroyed in 1849, when the insurgents made an ineffectual resistance here to the imperial troops under Jellachich. In the vicinity are the remains of an extensive Roman entrenchment.

NEUSOHL (Hungarian, Bestercze-Bdnya; Slavonic, Banska Bystrica), an ancient mining town of Hungary, the capital and see of the district of Sohl, is prettily situated at the confluence of the Gran and the Bistritz, in a fertile valley enclosed by lofty hills, 85 miles to the north of Pesth. It isa well-built town, with five suburbs, and contains a Roman Catholic cathedral, an imposing Protestant church, an old castle, two gymnasia, an episcopal seminary, a normal school, and several charitable institutions. The offices of the mining and other authorities of the district are large and handsome buildings. In 1880 Neusohl contained 7160 inhabitants, of mixed Magyar, Slavonic, and German descent. They are employed chiefly in the copper, lead, and silver mines of the vicinity, and in the various metallurgical occupations to which these give rise; but they also manufacture cloth, dye-stuffs, paper, beetroot sugar, &c. Mining has been carried on here since the 8th century, and has been pro- secuted with especial energy since the immigration of German miners in the 11th and 13th centuries. Neusohl was made a royal free town in 1255.

NEUSS, a busy manufacturing town. of Rhenish Prussia, lies 4 miles to the west of Diisseldorf and 14 miles from the west bank of the Rhine, with which it is con- nected by the Erft canal, uniting the Rhine and the Meuse. The chief building in the town is the church of St Quirinus, a remarkably fine example of the transition from the Round to the Pointed style; and there are four other Roman Catholic churches, a Protestant church, a gymnasium (containing a collection of Roman antiquities), and two lunatic asylums established in old convents. The site formerly occupied by fortifications is now laid out as a promenade encircling the town. Neuss is the chief place in the Rhenish province for the production of oil and meal, and it also carries on the manufacture of woollen stuffs, white goods, and paper, brick-making, iron-founding, and other industries too numerous to specify. Its

markets for cereals are among the most important in Prussia, and it is also the centre of a brisk trade in cattle, coals, building materials, and the products of its various manufactories. In 1880 it contained 17,495 inhabitants, of whom 16,077 were Roman Catholics.

Neuss, the Novestum of the Romans, frequently mentioned by Tacitus, formerly lay close to the Rhine, and was the natural centre of the district of which Diisseldorf has become the chief town,

Drusus, brother of the emperor Tiberius, threw a bridge across the IKhine here, and his name is preserved in the Drususthor, the lower half of which is of Roman masonry. In 1474-75 Charles the Bold of Burgundy besieged the town in vain for eleven weeks, during which he lost 10,000 men; but it was taken and sacked by Alexander Farnese in 1586.

NEUSTADT (Polish, Prudnik), a manufacturing town of Prussian Silesia, in the district of Oppelu, is situated on the river Prudnik or Prudnitz, 60 miles to the south-east of Breslau. It contains three Roman Catholic churches, a Protestant church, and a gymnasium. The chief industries are tanning, dyeing, and the manufacture of damask, table-linen, ticking, and woollen stuffs. In 1880 the population was 14,292, including 12,300 Roman Catholics. In 1745, 1760, and 1779 engagements between the Austrians and Prussians took place near Neustadt, which on the last occasion was bombarded and set on fire.

NEUSTADT, or Wiener-NEUSTADT, an important manufacturing town in Lower Austria, is situated between the Fischa and the Leitha, close to the Hungarian frontier, and 25 miles to the south of Vienna. It was almost entirely rebuilt after a destructive fire in 1834, and ranks among the handsomest provincial towns in Austria. Its ancient gates, walls, and towers have disappeared, but it still possesses a few medizeval edifices, the most important of which is the old castle of the dukes of Babenberg, founded in the 12th century, and converted by Maria Theresa into a military academy (400 to 500 pupils). The Gothic chapel contains the remains of the emperor Maximilian I., who was born here in 1459. The parish church, with its two lofty towers, is substantially a Romanesque building of the 13th century, but

the choir and transepts are Gothic additions of a later date. The late Gothic church of the old Cistercian abbey contains a handsome monument in memory of Eleonora of Portugal (d. 1467), consort of the emperor Frederick IV. The town-house is also a noteworthy building. The educa- tional and charitable institutions include a gymnasium, a real-school, a normal seminary, industrial, commercial, and musical schools, and three hospitals. The chief industrial establishment is an engine-factory, employing 2500 hands, and turning out 150 to 200 locomotives annually; but manufactures of cotton, silk, velvet, pottery, and paper, sugar-refining, and tanning are also extensively carried on. 'Trade is also brisk, and is facilitated by a canal connecting the town with Vienna, and used chiefly for the transport of coal and timber. The population in 1880 was 23,468, nearly all Roman Catholics.

Neustadt was founded in 1192, and was a favourite residence of numerous Austrian sovereigns, acquiring the title of the ''ever- faithful town" (die allezett getreue Stadt) from its unfailing loyalty. In 1246 it was the scene of a victory of the Hungarians over the Austrians ; and in 1486 it was taken by Matthew Corvinus, king of Hungary, who, however, restored it to Maximilian I. four years later. In 1529 and 1683 it was besieged by the Turks. It was at Neustadt that the emperor Rudolf IJ. granted to the Bohemian Protestants, in 1609, the '* Majestatsbrief," or patent of equal rights, the revocation of which helped to precipitate the Thirty Years' War. Compare Boheim, Chronik von Wiener-Neustadt.

NEUSTADT-AN-DER-HAARDT, a small manufactur- ing town in the Bavarian Palatinate, is picturesquely situated at the base of the Haardt mountains and the mouth of the valley of the Speyerbach, 14 miles to the east of Spires and the Rhine. The Protestant abbey- church, a fine Gothic edifice of 1354-1489, contains the tombs of several Counts Palatine. The other noteworthy buildings are the handsome Roman Catholic church, a modern Gothic structure ; the Saalbau, a large edifice for balls and concerts; the town-house, formerly a Jesuit college ; the old Latin school; the real-school; and the hospital. The chief industries are paper-making, straw-plaiting, distilling, and the manufacture of cloth, gold and silver plate, furniture, starch, and hats. A brisk trade is

carricd on in wood, grain, fruits, and wine, all of which | affluent of the Oder, about 70 miles to the north-east of

are produced extensively in the vicinity. Neustadt, which received its municipal charter in 1275, now contains (1880) 11,411 inhabitants, of whom 6987 are Protestants and 4028 Roman Catholics.

visitors.

NEUSTADT-EBERSWALDE, now officially named EBERSWALDE simply, is a manufacturing town of Prussia, province of Brandenburg, situated 28 miles to the north- west of Berlin, on a canal connecting the Oder and the Havel. It possesses a mineral spring, which has lately attracted numerous summer visitors, but its chief import- ance arises from its various industries, which include iron- founding and the making of horseshoe nails, roofing material (Dachpappe, a kind of thick pasteboard), and bricks. A considerable trade is carried on in grain, wood, and coals. In the immediate vicinity are one of the chief brass-foundries in Germany and an extensive Government paper-mill, in which the paper for the notes of the national bank (Jeeichsbank) is manufactured. The town contains no noteworthy buildings except the large lunatic asylum for the province, and the school of forestry, which is attended by students from all parts of Germany. There are two Protestant churches, a Roman Catholic church, and a synagogue. In 1880 the population was 11,524, including 436 Roman Catholics and 171 Jews.

Neustadt-Eberswalde received its municipal charter in 1237, and was taken and sacked during the Thirty Years' War. In 1747 Frederick the Great brought a colony of Thuringian entlers to the town, but this branch of industry has entirely died out. About 4 miles to the north lies the old Cistercian monastery of Chorin, the fine Gothic church of which contains the tombs of several iargraves of Brandenburg.

NEU-STETTIN, a inanufacturing town of Prussia, in the province of Pomerania and district of Késlin, lies on the small Streitzig lake, 90 miles to the north-east of Stettin. Its industries are iron-founding, dyeing, brewing, and the manufacture of machinery and matches. The inhabitants also practise cattle-rearing and agriculture, and carry on a trade in grain, timber, and spirits. Neu-Stettin was founded in 1312, and contains (1880) 8604 inhabi- tants, the bulk of whom are Lutherans and Irvingites. It is the seat of a gymnasium.

NEU-STRELITZ, the capital of the grand-duchy of Mecklenburg-Strelitz, is charmingly situated between two small lakes, 60 miles to the north of Berlin. It igs well

which converge on a spacious market-place, adorned with a statue of Duke George (d. 1860). The ducal residence is a handsome edifice in a pseudo-Classical style, with a

library of 70,000 volumes, and collections of coins and |

antiquities. Attached to it are a fine garden and park. The other chief buildings are the three churches, the Carolinum (a large hospital), the town-house, the barracks, the gymnasium, and the real-school. In 1880 the town contained 9407 inhabitants, chiefly Protestants. They are supported partly by ministering to the wants of the court, and partly by the manufacture of iron wares, machinery, cloth, pottery, oil, and mineral waters. Its trade, chicfly in corn, meal, and timber, is facilitated by a canal connect- ing the town with the Havel and the Elbe.

About 14 miles to the south lies Alt-Strelitz, the old capital of the duchy, a small town with (1880) 3336 inhabitants, employed in the manufacture of tobacco, leather, wax candles, and wadding. Neu-Strelitz was not founded till 1733. In the vicinity is the

chateau of Hohen-Zieritz, where Queen Louise of Prussia died in

1810.

NEUSTRIA. See Francs, vol. ix. p. 530. NEU-TITSCHEIN (Czech, Novy Jicin), a small but thriving town of Moravia, is picturesquely situated on an

It is one of the centres | of the Rhenish ““grape-cure,” which attracts numerous |

Brinn. It is the chief place in the Kuhlandchen, a fertile valley peopled by German settlers, who rear cattle and cultivate flax. At Neu-Titschein manufactures of woollen cloth, flannel, hats, carriages, and tobacco are carried on ; and it is also the centre of a brisk trade. The town was founded in 1311. It contains (1880) 10,274 inhabitants, almost entirely of German descent.

NEUTRA (Hungarian, Vyitra), the chief town of a district and bishopric of the same name in Hungary, is situated on the river Neutra, 90 miles to the east of Vienna. It lies partly on the slope of a hill, which is strongly fortified, and crowned with the episcopal chateau and the ancient and modern cathedrals. The town also con- tains three convents, a theological seminary, a gymnasium, and two hospitals, and carries on manufactures of vinegar, spirits, and liqueurs. Its grain-markets are important. Neutra has lagged far behind most Hungarian towns in the march of improvement, and a recent visitor describes its internal economy as on a par with that of Bokhara and other towns in Central Asia. The population in 1880 was

8650.

Neutra is one of the oldest towns in Hungary, and is said to have been the seat of a bishop in the 4th century, when in possession of

the Marcomanni. The present and historically authenticated line of bisliops dates from 1130.

NEUTRALITY. See Internationa Law, vol. xiii. p. 195, and Sa Laws.

NEUWIED, the chief town of a circle in the district of Coblentz, Rhenish Prussia, and the capital of the mediatized countship of Wied, is pleasantly situated on the right bank of the Rhine, 8 miles below Coblentz. The principal edifice in the well-built town is the handsome chateau of the

princes of Wied, containing a collection of Roman antiquities, most of which were found in the neighbour- hood. The inhabitants—including Lutherans, Roman Catholics, Moravian Brethren, Baptists, and Jews—are noted for their industry. The chief products are starch and sugar made from potatoes, tobacco and cigars, chicory, and enamelled-tin wares. A brisk trade is carried on both by rail and river. In the vicinity are several large iron- foundries. Population in 1880, 9656. The schools of Neuwied enjoy a high reputation, and attract numerous pupils from England.

Neuwied was founded by Count Frederick of Wied in 1683, on the site of a village destroyed during the Thirty Years' War, and

ee é idly i ased owing to the toleration ¢ ded to all religi and regularly built in the form of a star, the eight rays of | hic we. toc. 6

sects without distinction. Among those who sought refuge here was a colony of Moravian BRETHREN (¢.v.), who now number 500 to 600 souls, and occupy a separate quarter of the town, where they carry on manufactures of porcelain stoves and deerskin gloves. Near Neuwied one of the largest Roman castles on the Rhine has been excavated, yielding numerous interesting antiquities. In 1797 the French, under General Hoche, defeated the Austrians near Neuwied,—thcir first decisive success in the revolutionary wars. NEVA, a river of Russia which carries off into the Gulf of Finland the waters of Lakes Ladoga, Onega, and Ilmen and many smaller basins. It issues from the south-west corner of Lake Ladoga in two channels which form the island of Oriekhoff, and are obstructed by sandstone reefs, so that the better of the two has a depth of only from 7 to 16 feet in its fairway. A little farther down it becomes completely navigable, and in the neighbourhood of the island of St Nicholas it attains a breadth of 4200 feet; but between the village of Ostrovkoff and that of Ust- Tosnui (Tosna-mouth) it passes over a limestone bed which, lying only from 2 to 12 feet below the surface, produces a series of rapids, and reduces the width of the river to from 1050 to 840 and that of the navigable passage to from 350 to 175 feet. From Ust-Tosnui downwards there is no further obstacle. Nine or ten miles from its outfall the

outlying spur of the Carpathians, on the Titsch, an | Tiver enters St Petersburg, and then 5 or 6 miles lower down

breaks up into the Great Neva (850 to 1700 feet wide), the Little Neva (945 to 1365), and the Great Nevka (280 to 1205), this last, two miles farther on, sending off the Little Nevka (370 to 1129). In front of the delta are sandbanks and rocks which prevent the passage of vessels except by five narrow channels, of which the best has a depth of 7 to 20 feet. The most of its alluvial burden being deposited in the lakes, the Neva takes a long time to alter its channels or extend its delta: an accession of 1570 acres was all that was registered between 1718 and 1834. According to Destrem the current above the delta is 114,659,529 cubic feet per minute, a mass of water greater than that of the Rhone or the Rhine. The ordinary rise and fall of the river 1s comparatively slight, but when the west wind blows steadily for a long time, or when Lake Ladoga sends down its vast accumulations of block-ice, inunda- tions of a dangerous kind occur. In 1824 and 1879 the former cause produced a rise of more than 12 feet. According to observations extending from 1703 to 1879, the mean day of the freezing of the Neva is November 25, the earliest October 28 (1805), the latest (not quite certain) January 9 (1711), and the next latest December 26 (1826). The mean day of opening is April 21, the earliest March 18 (1822), and the latest May 12 (1810). The mean number of days open is 218, the least 172 (1852), the greatest 279 (1822).

NEVADA, one of the most western of the States of the American Union, was formed from a portion of the territory acquired by the United States from Mexico by the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo. The boundary line commences in the centre of the Colorado river, where the 35th parallel of north latitude crosses that stream (near Fort Mojave) ; thence it runs in a direct north-westerly line to the point where the 39th parallel of north latitude intersects the 120th degree of longitude west from Greenwich (near the centre of Lake Tahoe), thence north on that meridian to the 42d parallel of latitude, thence east on that parallel to the 37th meridian west of Washington, thence south on that meridian to the Colorado river and down that stream to the place of beginning, enclosing an area of 110,700 square miles. The State is bounded on the 8. and W. by California, N. by Oregon

and Idaho, and E. by Utah and Arizona. At the time of the discovery of the silver mines (1858-59) what is now the State of Nevada was a part of Utah. By Act of Congress of March 2, 1861, Nevada became a Territory ; and, with a modification of its bound- aries, it was admitted as a State on October 31, 1864.

By the upheaval in past ages of the Rocky Mountains and the Sierra Nevada, there was enclosed an ancient sea, several hundred thousand square miles in extent. The draining off and evaporation of the waters so enclosed left an immense plateau, having a general elevation of 4000 to 6000 feet above the present sea-level. Although this table- land is spoken of as a "basin," yet throughout its whole extent it is traversed by ranges of mountains rising from 1000 to 8000 feet above the general surface, and having the same northward and southward trend as the Sierra Nevada and the Rocky Mountains. The surface of the country as a whole presents a very barren, rocky, and mountainous appearance, yet between the parallel ranges are valleys from 5 to 20 miles in width, all having about the same altitude above the sea. Where traversed by rivers or creeks these contain considerable areas of arable land, the amounts usually being proportionate to the size of the streams. They are timberless, except for a few cotton-wood trees found along the rivers. Upon the mountains the quantity of timber depends upon the altitude. The lower ranges are bare, or contain only a scanty growth of pifion, cedar, or mountain mahogany, of very little economic importance. Several of the higher

ranges contain small bodies of valuable timber, while the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevada is well-clothed with forests of conifers, which have proved of inestimable value to the people of the State.

The river system is peculiar, only two of the streams of the State finding their way to the sea: the Owyhee, which rises in the northern part, empties into the Snake, and thence passes through the Columbia river to the Pacific Ocean ; and the Colorado river, on the southern bound- ary, flows into the Gulf of California. All the other streams either sink in the sand of the interior valleys or terminate in lakes that have no outlet. The Humboldt river, about 300 miles long, empties into Humboldt Lake or "Sink";

Truckee river, which drains Lakes Tahoe and Donner (in the Sierra Nevada), after a course of 125 milcs, falls into Pyramid and Winnemucca Lakes. Walker river, 100 miles long, rises in the Sierra and discharges into Walker Lake; Carson river, 180 miles long, also rises in the Sierra Nevada, and empties into the “Sink of the Carson” or Carson Lake. Reese river rises in the Toyabe Range (within the basin region), and after a course of about 150 miles disappears in the sand; Quinn river, in the northern part of the State, after a course of 80 miles, similarly disappears in the soil; the Amargosa (bitter) river, in the southern part of the State, is 150 miles long, and, after sinking and rising several times, finally loses itself in the sands of Death Valley just over the line in California. Such of the creeks as are not tributaries of the rivers either sink in the sandy plains or end in small pools. Most of the lakes are merely sinks for the scanty streams. Of these, as already mentioned, are Humboldt, Pyramid, Winnemucca, Walker, and Carson Lakes, which, with the beautiful Lake Tahoe in the Sierra Nevada, com- plete the enumeration of the bodies of water of any con- siderable magnitude in the State. In many places on the sides of the mountain ranges are to be seen well-defined water-lines of the ancient sea or of extinct lakes, indicating a far greater extension of water surface and a much moister climate than at present. Hot springs, many of which have medicinal virtues, are found in all parts of Nevada. The most noted are the Steamboat Springs, in Washoe Valley, on the line of the Virginia and Truckee Railroad.

The climate of Nevada is characterized primarily by its extreme aridity. The air currents from the Pacific are thoroughly drained of their moisture before reaching the borders of the Great Basin, and pass over it as dry winds. In the southern part of the State, wherc the elevation above sea is least and the temperature highest, the rain- fall averages not more than 5 inches per annum, while evaporation is extremely rapid. In the northern part the rainfall is greater, averaging not far from 15 inches in many localities. Nowhere, however, is it sufficient for the needs of agriculture, and consequently irrigation has to be universally resorted to. The mean annual temperature in the habitable portions of the State ranges from 70° Fahr. in the south to 45° in the north. This, however, expresses but a part of the conditions of temperature. The range between summer and winter, and between day and night, is very great. At several meteorological stations in the State the maximum temperature is quoted at from 100° to 111° Fahr.,

while the minimum temperature ranges as low as —23° Fahr. The temperature varies greatly according to altitude. In the lower valleys snow seldom les more than a day or two in winter. The weather in winter as a rule is dry, bright, and pleasant. In summer the nights are everywhere delightfully cool.

Rivers, lakes, and. springs.

Climate.

The fauna of the State is poor, and illustrates, with Fauna

the flora, the aridity of the climate. and rabbits are perhaps the most abundant animals, as they certainly are the most characteristic. In the more

Coyotes, badgers, 24

ora.

Geology.

Minerals,

Agricul- «ture.

northern valleys are to be found, in the winter, herds of antelope, and occasionally a few deer and elk. In the Sierra, except where driven away by the encroachments of civilization, large game, consisting of elk, deer, and black and grizzly bears, are still to be found in greater or less abundance. The flora is also scanty, and is characterized by Artemisia, so that Nevada is often nicknamed the “Sage-brush ” State. In the southern valleys even this fails, and the sterility is relieved by little save Yucca and various species of Cactus. In the northern valleys, and particularly upon the lower mountains and hills, the bunch grasses replace Artemisia to a considerable extent, although not sufficiently to give the interest of meat-production great prominence in the State.

Nevada offers an attractive field of study for the geologist, not only ou account of its great wealth of precious metals, but because of the great complexity of geological phenomena there presented. The valleys are everywhere covered to a great depth with most recent deposits, out of which rise the ranges, as long, narrow islands from the sea. These ranges bring to the surface rocks of all the geologic ages, even to the Azoic, while here and there are intrusions of volcanic rock. In the north-western part of the State the great lava field of southern Oregon has overflowed the State boundary, and extends over a considerable area.

The State is rich in mineral productions of all kinds. Silver is, however, the leading mineral product, and the mines of the Comstock at Virginia City and Gold Hill have been among the richest in the world. Since the discovery in 1859 these mines have yielded over $200,000,000 in silver and gold, and the product of the whole State hitherto has been about $300,000,000. Two mines alone on the Comstock, the California and the Consolidated Virginia (known as the bonanza mines), have yielded over $130,000, 000 in silver and gold,—the bullion of the Comstock being about one-third gold and two-thirds silver. The rich deposits of the vein, known as ‘‘bonanzas,” have, however, now been ex- hausted as far as discovered, and since 1880 the yield from the Comstock lode has been light. Explorations, however, are actively continued. In the Yellow Jack and Belcher mines the workings have reached a depth of 3000 feet, and in the Ophir and Mexican mines they are drifting at a point 3100 feet below the surface, the greatest depth to which mining operations have been carried any- where on the American continent. At these great depths the lode is found to diminish neither in width nor strength of formation. The heat of the rock is intense in these levels, and it is possible for men to work only for very short periods, requiring frequent shifts. The Sutro tunnel, over 20,000 feet in length, drains all the leading mines of the lode to a depth of 1600 feet, thus saving much pump- ing. There are millions of tons of low-grade ore in the many inines of the Comstock which will be mined at no distant day, but which cannot be profitably worked at the present high rates of wages (miners get $4 per day) and great cost of transportation and reduction. In the eastern part of the State, at Eureka and several other points, are mines which produce smelting ores con- taining too much lead to be worked by mill process, as are the free chloride and sulphuret ores of the Comstock. Many

of these ‘*base metal veins,” as they are called by the miners, are very rich in silver, have been profitably worked for several years, and are still yielding well. The mineral production of Nevada for the year 1882 was reported by Wells, Fargo, & Co. to be:—gold dust and bullion, $752,506; silver bullion, $6,588,028; ores and base bullion, $3, 022,847—imaking a total of $10,368,376. All the interior ranges of mountains in the State contain veins producing gold, silver, copper, lead, and antimony in paying quantities, but as yet little mining has been done except for gold and silver. The many rich mines of copper have scarcely been touched. Besides the metals mentioned, there are found within the borders of Nevada iron, platinum, zinc, nickel, cobalt, quicksilver, lignite, gypsum, kaolin, beds of pure sulphur, and in the plains and marshes deposits of pure salt, carbonate of soda, borax, nitrate of potash, and other minerals of a similar nature.

While Nevada is not a country to attract the farmer, there is still a considerable amount of arable land within its borders. At present there are under cultivation only about 344,423 acres, Wherever water for irrigation can be procured good crops of most kinds of grain, hay, and vegetables may be grown. It has been estimated that by a full utilization of the streams for irrigation possibly 8 per cent. of the area of the State can be bronght into cultivation ; of this (some 2,000,000 acres) only about one-sixth has as yet been reduced to the service of man. It is not probable, however, that Nevada will ever attain to a high rank as an agricul- tural State. The principal products during the census year 1880 were—barley, 518,470 bushels; oats, 186,860 bushels; wheat, 69,298 bushels ; wool, 655,012 tb; hay, 95,853 tons; and potatoes,

302,143 bushels. The grazing interest is not, and probably never will be, a very extensive onc. The following figures give the amount of live stock in the State :—horses, 32,087 ; cattle, 172,212; sheep, 188,695.

The manufacturing interests of Nevada are not extensive, and Manu- are confined mainly to the smelting and reduction of ores. facture, There are several railroads. The Central Pacifie crosses the Rail. whole State, and has within its limits a length of 452 miles; the ways, Virginia and Truckee runs from Reno, on the Central Pacific, through Carson to Virginia City, and is 52 mileslong; the Carson and Colorado leaves the Virginia and Truckee

near Virginia City, and running southward through the State taps a rich and extensive mineral and agricultural region. his road is now completed to Benton, California, 193 miles, and will eventually connect with the Southern Pacific at Mojave, California. The Nevada Central, 93 miles in length, connects the towns of Austin and Battle Mountain ; and the Eureka and Palisade, 20 miles long, connects the places named. There are several shorter lines completed, and a

considerable number projected.

There are in the State 185 common schools, 12 high schools, and Educa- a State nniversity at the town of Elko. In all the large towns are tion. churches of the leading religious denominations, and many of the Churches, church edifices are fine and costly structures. Thirty-seven news- News- papers are published, the majority being dailies. papers.

The returns of the tenth census place the assessed valuation of Property, the real estate of Nevada at $17,941,080, and the personal property at $11,350,429, a total of $29,291,459. The true valuation is estimated at $69,000,000 in 1880.

The State government is similar to that of the majority of the Govern- western States. Nevada has two representatives in the United ment, States senate and one in the house of representatives.

The first settlement in Nevada was made at Genoa, at the foot History, of the Sierra Nevada, in 1850, though as carly as 1848 the Mormons, travelling between Salt Lake and California, had established a temporary camp at that place. The Mormons made two or three small settlements in the valleys along the base of the Sierra, and until 1859, when the silver mines of the Comstock were discovered, they were the principal white inhabitants. The discovery of silver caused great crowds of miners of all nationalities to pour over the Sierra Nevada from California, and in that year and 1860 several towns were laid out and rapidly built up. In a few years new mineral belts were discovered to the eastward, and soon there were founded many interior towns and camps.

In 1870 the population was 42,491. In 1880 it had increased to Popula-

62,266 (1 to 13 square miles), a gain of 46°5 per cent. In 1888 tion, it had not greatly increased over the number in 1880. The population shows a great disproportion of males, as is every- where the case on the frontier, especially ina mining region. Of the total number 42,019 were males and 20,247 females. There was also a disproportionately large number of the foreign born, 36,613 being natives and 25,653 foreigners. With the Pacific coast States, Nevada has received a comparatively large accession of Chinese, these numbering 5416, or more than one-eighth of the whole population of the State. The main body of the population is con- gregated in the extreme western portion of the State, in Storey and the adjacent counties. A second but much smaller body of popu- lation is abont Eureka. The balance is dispersed very sparsely. The population of the principal towns in 1880 was as follows :— Carson City, the capital of the State, 4229; Eurcka, 4207; Virginia City, 10,917; Gold Hill, 4531; Reno, 1802. The population is now (1883) about the same for all these towns except Reno, which has probably 3000 inhabitants. There are several other towns and camps containing from 300 to 1000 inhabitants. There are com- paratively few Indians in the State, and these, known as Pah Utes or Diggers and Shoshones, are theoretically upon reservations in the western part. Their number is estimated by the Indian office at 3377. ‘They are, as a class, both mentally and physically below the average of the North American tribes. (W. WR.)

NEVERS, ~~a city of France, chief town of the depart~~ ment of Niévre, and formerly capital of the countship of Nevers or Nivernais, is picturesquely situated at a height of 656 feet above the sea, on a hill commanding the right bank of the Loire at the confluence of the Niévre, 158 miles south-south-east of Paris by the railway to Nimes. It is the see of a bishop, and has a fine cathedral, which, dating from the 12th and 14th centuries, but at present (1883) undergoing a complete restoration, is mainly not- able for the fact that there is an apse above the crypt and another at the opposite end of the building. To the north of the nave rises a massive but highly-decorated tower. Of higher architectural interest as a remarkable specimen of the Romanesque style of Auvergne is the church of St Etienne, consecrated at the close of the 11th

century, and belonging to an abbey affiliated to Cluny. The ducal palace at Nevers (now occupied by the courts of justice and a ceramic museum) was built in 1475 by J. de Clamecy, count of Nevers, and is one of the principal feudal edifices in central France. A middle tower, con- taining the great staircase, has its windows adorned by sculptures relating to the history of the house of Cleves. In front of the palace lies a wide open space with a fine view over the valley of the Loire. The Porte de Croux, dating from the end of the 14th century, is the only remnant of the old fortifications ; it now contains a collec- tion of sculptured stones and some Roman antiquities. The modern triumphal arch (18th century), the town- house and library, the almshouses, and the mother-house of the Nevers sisters of charity may also be mentioned. The Loire is crossed by a fine stone bridge of fifteen arches, and a cast-iron railway bridge. Up to 1880 there was at Nevers a navy cannon foundry which, furnished with eight blast-furnaces capable of melting 40 tons at once, used to turn out 250 pieces per annum. It has now been com- bined with the foundry at Ruelle (Charente); and the works are transformed into a practical school for such branches as boiler-making and engine-fitting. The town also contains private engineering establishments, potteries and porcelain works, chemical works, pit-cable factories, file-works, oil-works, tanneries, and wool-spinning iaills. Commercially it has the advantage of being a large railway junction, communicating with Paris and Orleans by Gien, with Bourges, Moulins, and Dijon by Chagny, and with Auxerre by Clamecy. Population in 1881, 23,846.

Noviodunum, or (later) Nevirnum, derived its name from two Cel- tic words nov, a river, and dun, a hill. The quantities of medals and other Roman antiquities found on the site indicate the import- auce of the place at the time when Czsar chose it as a military depot for com, money, and hostages. It had counts of its own as carly as 987, and obtained a charter in 1194. Subject for a time to the dukes of Burgundy, it next passed to the German house of Cleves. In 1588 Francis I. erected the Nivernais into a ducal peerage, which, beeoming in 1565 the property of the Gonzaga of Mantua, was purchased from them by Cardinal Mazarin, and remained in his family till the Revolution. For a short time in the 14th century the town was the seat of a university, afterwards transferred to Orleans.

NEVIANSK (Neviansxiy, or NEIVINSKIY Zavop), a town of Russia, in the government of Perm, 62 mules to the north-north-west of Ekaterinburg, is situated on the eastern slope of the Ural mountains, in the populous valley of the Neiva, surrounded by mountains composed of talc and chlorite schists and granites, in a district very rich in iron and also in auriferous sands. The population in 1881 numbered 13,980 (17,950 with its suburb, the Byngovskiy iron-work), all Great-Russians, and mostly Nonconformists (edinovyertsy), of whom about 3000 are employed at the iron-works, while the others carry on various small trades, such as the manufacture of boxes widely sold in Siberia, small iron-wares, and boots, or engage in agriculture. merchants of the town carry on an active trade, and its fairs are very animated. The iron industry produced in 1879 96,000 ewts. of cast iron and 45,000 cwts. of

ao iron, and the average yearly yield of gold is about 00 tb.

The iron-work at Neviansk is the oldest on the Ural, having been founded in 1699. In 1702 Peter I. presented it to Demidott, with 3,900,000 acres of land around it, of which 522,000 acres, besides 60,000 acres of forest, still belong to the present proprietors of the works, the merchants Yakovleffs. Five iron-mines, seven gold- washings, and two iron-works are its dependencies. Several other important iron-works are situated within short distances of Neviansk, on the Neiva river, and are usually comprised under the sane name of Neivinsk iron-works, the chief being Verkhne-Neivinsk (Upper Neivinsk), situated 14 miles to the south (3960 inhabitants); Neivo-Rudyansk, 8 miles to the south (4020); Petrokamensk, 32 miles to the north-east (2200) ; Neivo-Shaytansk, 8 miles lower down the Neiva (3000) ; and Neivo-Alapaevsk (6000).

The

NEVIS, an island in the Federated Leeward group, British West Indies, in 17° 14’ N. lat. and 62° 33’ W. long,, separated from St Christopher by a shallow strait 2 miles broad at the narrowest. It is a mountain rising gradually to a height of 3200 feet, the lower portion being cultivable; the total area is about 32,000 acres. The climate is healthy, the average height

of the thermometer being 82° Fahr. Discovered by Columbus in 1498, and colonized by the English in 1628, it now forms one pre- sidency with St Christopher, with one legislative council (meeting in St Kitts) of ten official and ten unofficial mem- bers, all nominated by the crown, Nevis sending three of the unofficial members. The revenue in 1882 was £9285, and the expenditure £8465. Its exports of sugar in the four years from 1879 to 1882 respectively were 3500, 1600, 1700, and 4000 tons,—the total exports in 1881 being £38,672, and in 1882 £75,000. The population is 11,864; the capital is Charlestown, on the shore of a wide bay on the south-west side of the island.

NEW ALBANY, a flourishing manufacturing city of the United States, in Floyd county, Indiana, occupies a good position on the left bank of the Ohio, nearly opposite the west end of Louisville, 156 miles below Cincinnati. It is handsomely built, with wide and well-shaded streets, and among its public edifices are a city-hall , a court-house, an opera-house capable of containing 2500 persons, a masonic hall, and an oddfellows' hall. Abundant water- power is obtained from the falls about two miles up the river. Besides the glass-works, which rank as the largest in the United States, the industrial establishments com- prise foundries, pork-packing factories, boatbuilding yards, rolling mills, cotton and woollen mills, and hosiery mills. Laid out in 1813, and incorporated as a city in 1839, New Albany increased its population from 4226 in 1840 to 16,423 in 1880, and is still rapidly growing.

NEWARK (or in full Newarx-upon-TRENT), a muni- cipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of Nottinghamshire, England, is situated in the midst of a flat but highly cultivated country, near the Trent, on the river Devon, and on the Great Northern and Nottingham and Lincoln Railways, 120 miles north of London, and 19 east of Nottingham. By means of a canal 14 miles in length it is connected with the Trent navigation. The town is well built, with wide but irregular streets, which diverge from the market-place. The church of St Mary Magdalene, one of the largest and finest parish churches of England, is specially notable for the beauty of the tower and of the octagonal spire (223 feet high) by which it is surmounted. The central piers of the old church, dating from the 11th or 12th century, still remain, and the lower part of the tower is a fine example of Early

English when at its best. The upper parts of the tower and spire were completed about 1350, the nave between 1384 and 1393, and the chancel in 1489. The sanctuary is bounded on the south and north by two chauntry chapels, the former of which has on one of its panels a remarkable painting from the Dance of Death. There are a few old monuments, and an exceedingly fine brass of the 14th century. The castle, supposed to have been founded by Egbert, king of the West Saxons, was partly rebuilt and greatly extended by Alexander, consecrated bishop of Lincoln in 1123, who established at ita mint. The castle from its position and its great strength was for a long time known as the "key of the North." Of the original Norman stronghold the most important remains are the gate-house and the lofty rectangular tower at the south-west angle. The building geems to have been reconstructed in the early part of the 13th century. In the reign of Edward III. it was used as a state prison. During the civil war it was garrisoned for the king, and endured three sieges. Its dismantling

was commenced 11th May 1646. There isa very beautiful and interesting cross (the "' Beaumond" cross) of the latter part of the 15th century in good preservation in the town. A grammar and song school was founded in the reign of Henry VIII, and endowed by Archdeacon Magnus. The other principal public buildings are the town-hall in the Grecian style (erected in 1774), the corn exchange (1848), the Stock library and Middleton newsroom (1828), the mechanics' institution (1836), the new hospital (1881, a very fine building) Two elegant buildings—a coffee palace and a free library—were given to the town in 1882. By means of the Trent navigation Newark carries on a large trade in coal, corn, and cattle. The manufacture of malt is by far the chief source of wealth in the town. There are iron and brass foundries, boiler-works, agricultural implement manufactories, and breweries. Gypsum and limestone are obtained in the neighbourhood, and plaster of Paris is extensively manufactured. The population of the municipal and parliamentary borough (area 1933 acres) in 1871 was 12,195, which in 1881 had increased to 14,018.

From the large number of Roman remains found in the neigh- bourhood, from traces of ditehes, and from supposed portions of Roman buildings that still exist, some antiquarlans suppose that Newark was an important Roman station built to proteet the navigation of the Trent, and identify it with the British Ael Tavum, the Roman Eltavona, and the Saxon Sidnaecester, whieh was an episcopal see of Mereia. The balance of probability seems, however, to favour the opinion that Sidnacester was situated in Lincolnshire. The first authentic notiee of Newark is during the Saxon heptarchy. The town was partly destroyed by the Danes, but during the reign of Edward the Confessor it was rebuilt. By Leofric, earl of Mereia, the manor of Newark was bestowed upon the monastery of Stow, near Lincoln. The eastle and manor were eonveyed to the erown by Henry Holbeaeh, bishop of Lincoln, in the reign of Edward VI., by whom the town was ineorporated in 1549. It was ereated a mayoralty by Charles II. in 1625. It is supposed to have sent members to parliament in the reign of Edward VI., but it is not known how long the privilege had been in abeyance when it was restored by Charles II. in 1625, from whieh time it has returned two members. Newark is the birthplaee of Bishop Warburton; David Hartley taught in its grammar sehool ; and the first volume of Lord Byron's poems was printed by Ridge, a Newark bookseller.

Of the various histories of Newark the most recent is the beautiful and elabo- rate volume by Cornelius Brown, Annals of Newark-upon-T rent, 1879.

NEWARK, the principal city of the State of New Jersey, United States, is situated in Egsex county, on the west bank of the Passaic river, 4 miles above Newark Bay, and covers an area of about 18 square miles. The original site was a crescent-shaped ridge, or double chain of low hills, extending from north-east to south-west, now much changed by levelling and cutting. The main part of the city is on the lower ground which stretches east and south towards the Newark and Hackensack Meadows (salt marshes). The surface is, in general, well adapted for drainage and sewage. The climate is mild, tempered by the proximity of Newark Bay and the Atlantic (12 miles dis- tant), and the place bears a good reputation for healthfu- ness. The water-supply comes from the Passaic. There are about 130 miles of streets, generally wide and well-shaded, one-fifth of which are

paved. The principal thoroughfare, Broad Street (120 feet wide), is lined throughout a good part of its length with fine old elms, and where not occupied by business premises is fronted by numerous handsome residences. There are several small parks, the principal of which are Military and Washington Parks, bordering on Broad Street. The public buildings are for the most part unsightly and unsuitable; on the other hand, the city is not overburdened by debt or by heavy taxation.

Notwithstanding that the central portion of Newark is but 9 miles distant from the general post-office in New York city,—being considerably nearer that point than are the northern portions of New York city proper—Newark has more the character of an independent city than a

suburb. This it owes in part to its situation within another State, but still more to its independent and dis- tinctive manufacturing interests. Even prior to 1872 it was called “the Birmingham of America.” In that year a very successful exhibition, consisting of the manufac- tures of Newark, greatly stimulated the investment of capital.

The United States census of 1880 gives the following

statistics of manufactures for Newark :-— pr ere ee tee ee ee ee

No. of Capital Wages Total Persons Employed, Indus- ite ad Paid Value of tries, : Annually. Products. | Males.

Females.| Children.

2,649

1,819 | $25,679,885 | $13,171,339 | $69,252,705 | 22,151| 5,246

The principal industries are—jewellery, tanning and currying, celluloid (a substitute for ivory, coral, &c.) and celluloid goods, hat-making, boot and shoe making, trunk and valise making, saddlery hardware, harness-making, breweries (mostly lager beer) and malt-houses, building, carriage and waggon making, clothing, chemical works, cigar and tobacco factories, edge tools, hammers, «c., cabinetmaking, and iron and steel works. There

are algo large cotton, woollen, and silk-thread factories, and an ex- tensive sewing-machine factory, together employing about 3000 hands.

1 Ta fy rp ~ U[%) offi] ! COSY TE UO) Nill Kh U8 TSG ip

7

ou a bg

The shipping facilities of Newark are abundant, and four great trunk lines of railroad—the Pennsylvania, the New York, Lake Erie, and Western, the Delaware, Lacka- wanna, and Western, and the Central Railroad of New Jersey (Reading Railroad)—give ready communication with all parts of the United States, and with the steam- ship lines at Jersey City and in New York. Newark is intersected by the Morris Canal, and has considerable coasting trade by way of the Passaic river. The city has 112 churches and missions :—Presbyterian, 23; Reformed Presbyterian, 1; United Presbyterian, 1 ; Congregational, 2; Reformed Dutch, 9; Baptist, 13; Episcopal, 12; Episcopal Reformed, 1; Methodist, 22; Lutheran, 4; Roman Catholic, 11; Jewish synagogues, 3; besides Bethel, Universalist, Unitarian, Independent Catholic, and

NE W—N EW avi

other independent churches. It has an admirable free public school system. There are three well-appointed hospitals. The city has six daily newspapers, four English and two German, besides two Sunday morning newspapers and a weekly German paper.

In 1810 the population of Newark was 6000 ; in 1836, when the town became a city, it was 19,732; in 1840 it was 17,290, shortly after which began a stream of immigration which has continucd almost uninterruptedly since. In 1850 the population had more than doubled, reaching 38,894 ; in 1860 it was 71,941, having again almost doubled ; during the next decade, including the period of the civil war, it increased to 105,059, and it hassince grown in like ratio, being 186,508 in 1880. This had risen to 145,000 (esti- mated) in 1883. In 1880 there were 17,628 persons of German, 18,451 of Irish, 4478 of English, and 1090 of Scotch birth, together with Italians,

French, Swedes, Swiss, and other nationalities in numbers which bring the total of foreign-born population up to 40,330. Those of German and Irish birth, together with their children (minors) born within the United States, constitute fully three-fifths of the entire population.

History.—On or about May 17, 1666—the exact date cannot be determined—there anchored in the Passaic river, opposite what is now Newark, a small vessel from Milford, Connecticut, having 2n board a company of thirty persons, Puritans, who had come to form a new settlement in the New Jersey wilderness. Before the landing was completed, the Hackensack Indians demanded compensation from the new comers, which they finally received. The price then paid for the land upon which Newark and the adjacent towns and villages of Essex county arc built being ‘‘ fifty double hands of powder, one hundred bars of lead, twenty axes, twenty coats, ten guns, twenty pistols, ten kettles, ten swords, four blankets, four barrels of beer, ten pairs of breeches, fifty knives, twenty horses, eighteen hundred and fifty fathoms of wampum, two ankers of liquor (or something equivalent), and three troopers’ coats.” Subse- quently another vessel arrived from Connecticut containing a some- what larger party, but both together numbered, all told, less than seventy persons. Their chief desire was to establish a community whose spiritual and temporal affairs would be controlled and directed ‘‘according to God and a godly government.” Their pastor was Abraham Pierson, originally from Newark-on-Trent, in whose honour the name of the settlement was changed from Milford to Newark. The town was laid out in lots, and everything was ordered and governed mainly according to Mosaic law. The fore- most among the settlers was Captain Robert Treat, a brave, resolute, wise, and kindly man, who, after remaining long enough to see the new settlement fairly established, returned to Connecticut, and became governor of the colony. He had previously been deputy- governor for thirty-two years. The dream of Pierson and his Puri- tan followers was not realized. Before many years the Mosaic bars had to be removed one by one, and gradually the townspeople broadened their ideas of government. But even to this day, despite the cosmopolitan character of the population, the old Puritan leaven is still at work, largely leavening the whole lump.

The first occurrence of special interest in the history of the town after its settlement was a schism in the old church. Colonel Josiah Ogden, a rich and influential member, and a man of strong individuality, saved his wheat one dry Sunday, in a wet season. He maintained that it was a work of necessity ; the church declared it to be a violation of God's law. The immediate result was the withdrawal of Ogden and his followers, and the founding of the first Episcopal or Church of England Society in Newark, —Trinity Church. The affair led also to an exacerbating controversy which lasted from 1784 until long after the Revolutionary war which closed in 1788. Newark was, from 1748 to 1756, the seat of the college of New Jersey, thereafter permanently established at Princeton, founded by the Rev. Aaron Burr, father of the more celebrated American of the same name ; the latter was born in Newark. During the war of Independence, the great majority of the thousand inhabitants of Newark sided with the Americans; the town: suffered severely from the ravages of the British and marauding parties of American loyalists; on the other hand the American revolutionists drove out all loyalists, and confiscated their property. After the war, manufactures began to prosper, and have continued to do so ever Since.. At one time chair-making was carried on extensively, and it is stated that among those who worked at it in Newark was the famous Talleyrand.

NEWARK, a city of the United States, capital of Licking county, Ohio, is situated on the Licking river and on the Ohio and Erie Canal, and is 33 miles from Columbus by the railway to Pittsburg. It is a flourishing agricultural and industrial centre, with extensive railway shops, foundries, and manufactories of glass, paper, steam-engines, and agricultural implements; and sandstone quarries and

coal-mines are worked in the neighbourhood. Some of the most extensive and interesting of the earth-work remains of the prehistoric inhabitants of North America are found here, The population was 3654 in 1850, 6698 in 1870, and 9602 in 1880.

NEWARK, Davin Lest, Lorp (1601-1682), a cele- brated Scottish military character during the civil war, was born in 1601, the fifth son of Patrick Leslie of Pitcairley, commendator of Lindores, and Lady Jane Stuart, daughter of the first earl of Orkney. In his early life he served in the armies

of Gustavus Adolphus, where he rose to the rank of colonel of horse. On his return he was appointed major-general in the army that was sent into England under the earl of Leven to assist the Parliament. This army engaged the Royalists under Prince Rupert at Marston Moor, and totally defeated them, in July 1644. When Scotland after the battle of Kilsyth was at the mercy of Montrose and his army, Leslie was recalled from England in 1645, and made lieutenant-general of horse. In Sep- tember he defeated Montrose at Philiphaugh near Selkirk, with great loss, and was rewarded by the committee of estates for this service with a present of 50,000 merks and a gold chain. He completely suppressed the civil war in Seotland in 1647, was declared lieutenant-general of the forces, and, in addition to his pay as colonel, had a pension of £1000 a month settled on him. Leslie then returned to England, and was present at the siege of Newark. On his return to Scotland he reduced several of the Highland clans that supported the cause of the king. In 1649 he purchased the lands of Abercrombie and St Monance, Fife- shire. In 1650 he was sent against Montrose, whom he made prisoner; and on the resignation of the earl of Leven he was appointed to the chief command of the army raised on behalf of Charles II. He baffled the forces of Cromwell, who was then invading Scotland, by shutting him up in Dunbar, and would have cut off his whole army, but, yielding to the advice of the church and state committee, he rashly left his commanding position on the Doon Hill, and was signally defeated on the 3d September 1650. After various skirmishes Leslie afterwards accompanied Charles to Wor- cester, where he was lieutenant-general under the king, who commanded in person. On the defeat of the royal army, Leslie, intercepted in his retreat through Yorkshire, was committed to the Tower, where he remained till the Restoration in 1660. He was fined £4000 by Cromwell's "Act of Grace" in 1654. He was in 1661 created Lord Newark, and received a pension of £500 per annum. He died in 1682. The title became extinct in 1790.

NEW BEDFORD, a city and port of entry of the United States, one of the capitals of Bristol county, Massachusetts, stretches for several miles along the west side of the estuary of the Acushnet river, which opens into Buzzard Bay, and forms an excellent harbour. It is 56 miles almost due south of Boston by the Old Colony Railroad. Of the fact that it has been for a long time one of the wealthiest cities in the State New Bedford affords abundant

indications in the character both of its private residences and of its public enterprises and numerous charitable institutions. Among the more conspicuous build- ings are the city-hall, constructed of granite in 1839, the custom-house (1836) also of granite, the almshouse (1846), and the public library. This last was erected in 1857 at a cost of $45,000, the city having taken over the “Social Library,” founded in 1803; in 1863 the development of the institution and the cause of liberal education generally were stimulated by a bequest of $100,000 from Miss Sylvia A. Howland, The same lady left a similar sum for the construction of water-works; and in 1867-69 a total of about $1,000,000 was spent in connecting the city with a reservoir for 300,000,000 gallons supplied by the upper

part of the Acushnet river. French Avenue, the favourite promenade, was laid out by the municipality in 1853; it runs 4 miles round the shore of Clark’s Point at the mouth of the river, where the United States erected a granite fort in 1860-64. Since the decline of Nantucket New Bed- ford has been the great seat of the United States whale fishery; in 1854, when this enterprise was at its best, the New Bedford district possessed 410 whalers with a burden of 132,966 tons, but owing to the civil war and other influences (especially the immense production of petroleum) the number was by 1883 reduced to 95.. The manufactories of the city, which on the other hand have been increasing in importance, produce cotton goods (460,000 spindles), woollen goods, silver-plated and iron wares, drills for metal- workers, copper sheathings, Prussian blue, paraffin and other candles, glass, cordage, shoes, &c., the total value in 1880 being $8,880,384. The population was 21,320 in 1870, and 26,845 in 1880.

New Bedford (Acushnet of the Indians) was settled by Quakers in 1664, but it did not receive its present name till about 1765. Previous to 1787 it formed part of the ‘‘ town” of Dartmouth. The city charter dates from 1847. In 1778, in revenge for the use of its harbour as a rendezvous of privateers who had been driven from other ports, the shipping and wharves of New Bedford were burned by the British. Not many of the privateers, however, belonged to the town, most of the inhabitants at that time being Quakers.

NEW BERNE, or NEwsery, a city of the United States, the capital of Craven county, North Carolina, and the port of entry of the district of Pamlico, is situated at the meeting of the Neuse and the Trent, on the Atlantic and North Carolina Railroad, 107 miles south-east of Raleigh. Vessels drawing 84 feet can reach the wharves at mean water-level, and steamers run regularly to New York, Baltimore, and Norfolk. Cotton, lumber, naval stores, fish, rice, corn, and early vegetables for the northern markets are the chief articles of trade. Tobacco factories, turpentine distilleries, candy factories, lumber mills, a wooden-plate factory, a cotton-seed-oil factory, a rice mill, and a cigar factory are the most noteworthy of the industrial establishments in the city. The population was 5849 in 1850, and 6443 in 1880. Founded by Swiss ‘settlers in 1701, New Berne continued to be the capital of the pro- vince of North Carolina till 1793. It was captured by Burnside in 1862, and suffered from fire.

NEW BRIGHTON, a post-village of the United States, in Richmond county, New York, is situated at the north- eastern corner of Staten Island, 6 miles south-west of New York, with which it is connected by ferry. Best known as the seat of the Sailors’ Snug Harbour, a fine building fronting the Kill von Kull, which was founded in 1831 for aged and disabled seamen of the port of New York, New Brighton also contains an asylum for destitute children of seamen, one of the largest dyeing and printing establish- ments in the United States, a silk-printing factory, a paper- hanging factory, &c., as well as many residences belonging to New York men of business. The population in 1880 was 12,679.

NEW BRITAIN, a city of the United States, in Hartford county, Connecticut, 10 miles south-west of Hartford by the New York and New England Railroad. It is the seat of the State normal school (the new building erected in 1881 cost $90,000), and has a public park of 74 acres, a public library, and a good water-supply from a reservoir 200 feet above the level of the streets. The principal manufactures are bronze goods, locks, buiiders’ hardware, cutlery, knit woollen goods, carpenters’ tools, and jewellery. In 1870 the population was 9480; in 1880, 13,979. Elihu Burritt was born at New Britain in 1811.

NEW BRITAIN (Brrara) anp NEW IRELAND, two Polynesian islands, about 340 miles by 23, and 240 by 22

respectively, are separated from the south-east extremity

of New Guinea by a strait, first ascertained to be such by Dampier, 52 miles wide (see Plate VI.). They form together a sort of horse-shoe, divided in the middle by St George's Channel, some 20 miles wide, which in 1878 was half choked, temporarily, by pumice from a neigh- bouring volcano. In this channel lies the Duke of York group, fourteen small, well-wooded, fertile islands, with steep cliffs and narrow fringing reefs. A Wesleyan mission and some German and other traders are settled here and on the adjacent part of New Britain. The coasts of New Britain are in some parts precipitous; in others the mountains lie farther inland, and the coast is flat and bordered by fringing reefs. The west coast of New Ireland is generally precipitous, and crowned by a table-land which falls away towards the east. The north coasts of New Britain and the adjacent islands are studded with active volcanoes rising to 4000 feet, and at both ends of the island these are on a very grand scale. The scenery and vegetation are varied and luxuriant, with abundant wood and water. In New Ireland images, apparently represent- ing deceased relations, like the karwars of New Guinea, are made of a rock indistinguishable from pure chalk, which is said to exist nowhere else in the Pacific. These are deposited in buildings set apart for them. There are also peculiar wooden masks, worn at stated inter-tribal meetings and dances, and composite wooden images in which the human figure, male or female, is surrounded by those of the snake, fish, owl, tern, é&c.

The people of New Britain, especially. towards the west, resemble those of eastern New Guinea, height about 5 feet 6 inches, with matted curly hair; the women appear stunted and oppressed. They are a finer race than those farther east in Duke of York and New Ireland, who, ex- cepting an evidently Polynesian colony on the south coast

of New Ireland, rather resemble the Solomon Islanders. –

Both are thorough cannibals.. Their weapons are clubs (stone-headed in New Britain), spears, tomahawks, and slings. They perform complicated surgical operations with an obsidian knife or a shark's tooth. They construct

in- genious fishing weirs.. The villages are clean and well- kept, the houses varying from miserable huts 8 by 5 feet without furniture to neat well-built semicircular houses, the roof extending to the ground behind, with front of wicker work, leaving a space for the door. The common dead are buried or exposed to sharks on the reefs; bodies of chiefs are exposed in the fork of a tree. Girls for some time before puberty are confined in cages of pandanus leaves about 4 feet diameter, possibly to fatten them, an old Polynesian custom. Justice is executed, and tabus, feasts, taxes, &c., arranged, by a mysterious disguised figure, the “duk-duk.” Only the chief and those who have been initiated on payment of a heavy fee know who or what he is. Women and children are forbidden to look on him. The custom, perhaps, points to a time when. there was a priesthood, aiding the chief to rule the people. The population is divided into two exogamous classes. The children belong to the class of the mother, and when the father dies go to her village for support, the land and fruit trees in each district being divided between the two classes. Compare the Polynesian custom “tamaha” (the Fijian ‘‘vasu”), which gives certain privileges to a sister’s children. There are several dialects, the construc: tion resembling Fijian, as in the pronominal suffixes. in singular, triad, and plural; the numerals, however, are Polynesian in character.

See Wilfrid Powell, Wanderings in a Wild Country, and paper in Roy. Geog. Soe. Proceedings, 1881; Rev. G. Brown in Roy. Geog. Soe. Journal, 1877, and Proceedings, 1881; Verhandlungen der Ges. j. Erdkunde zu Berlin, x., Nos. 5 and 6.

Plate IV.

- by Quebec; N.

the Bay of Chaleur.

NEW BRUNSWICK

NEW BRUNSWICK, a province of Canada, in British North America, lying between 45° 5’ and 48° 40’ N. lat. and 63° 50’ and 68° W. long. It is bounded on the N.W. by the Bay of. Chaleur; E. by the Gulf of St Lawrence and Northumberland Strait, which separates ‘+t from Prince Edward Island;

8. by a portion of Nova Scotia, Chignecto Bay, and the Bay of Fundy; and on the W. by the State of Maine. Its length from north to south is 230 miles, its greatest breadth 190 miles, and it has a seaboard of some 545 miles, interrupted only by the isthmus of Chignecto, which joins the province to Nova Scotia. In shape it is very compact, resembling an irregular quadrangle. Its area is 27,177 square miles.

Physical Featwres.—The surface is generally undulating, but in the northern and north-western sections there are many ranges of hills which rise to a height of from 1200 to 2000 feet, while individual peaks are to be found of even greater altitude. These elevations are an extension of the Appalachian Mountains, and traverse the province from the State of Maine. The scenery is most picturesque and varied, and vast forests abound all through this section of country. The southern region embraces the district along the Bay of Fundy. Its coast is rocky and bold, and interrupted by great ravines. West of the river St John the soil .is fertile and rich, and, though towards the east it is not so deep, there is still a good agricultural country, with many beautiful valleys, grain fields, and forests. Along the shores on the east coast, and for 20 miles inland, the country is flat, and composed of mosses and marshes, but beyond that distance it rises into gently sloping hills, which extend as far as St John.

The whole of New Brunswick is well watered.

“Rivers, bays, and lakes are numerous, and several are

navigable for vessels of large tonnage. The principal rivers are the St John, Miramichi, Restigouche, Saint Croix, Petitcodiac, Richibucto, and Nepisiguit. The St John, which is famous for its scenery, rises in the State of Maine, and is over 450 miles in length. It is navigable for vessels of moderate tonnage from St John on the Bay of Fundy to Fredericton, a distance of about 88 miles, but steamers of light draught ply as far as Woodstock, 65 miles farther, and during the rainy season boats may proceed to Grand Falls, a cataract 70 or 80 feet high, 225 miles from the sea. Above the falls the St John has been navigated by a steamer to the mouth of the Madawaska, 40 miles. The river is an important highway, especially of the lumber traffic. About 9,000,000 acres of New Brunswick, 2,000,000 acres of Quebec, and 6,000,000 acres of Maine lands are drained by it.

Among the many lakes communicating with the St John is Grand Lake, 30 miles long, and varying from 3 to 9 miles in breadth. The Miramichi rises in the county of Carleton, and flows in a north-easterly direction into a bay of the same name. It is 225 miles long, 7 miles wide at its mouth, and navigable

- for large vessels as far as Nelson (46 miles). In the spring

and autumn, when full freshets prevail, small steamers and tow-boats can ply a much greater distance. The branches of the Miramichi drain a fourth of the entire province. An extensive lumber trade is done in this district, and many sawmills are driven by the river. Its fisheries are specially valuable, including salmon, trout, bass, smelt, and lobster. The Restigouche forms the north-east boundary of the province, is 100 miles in length, and discharges into It is composed of five main branches, from which fact it derives its name, signifying in Indian “the river which divides like the hand.” It is a consider- able waterway, 3 miles in width at its mouth, and 9 fathoms indepth. Large vessels may safely navigate it 18 miles from the bay. The main river and its tributaries drain over 4000 square miles of fertile and well-wooded

country. A good deal of lumber is carried on it, and the harbour is secure and safe for ships of ordinary tonnage. The St Croix separates the State of Maine from New Brunswick at its south-west part. Its source is a chain of lakes called the Chiputneticook. The Petitcodiac is navigable for 25 miles for ships, and schooners of 80 tons burden may proceed to the head of the tide, 12 miles farther; it empties into Shepody Bay. The Richibucto discharges into the Gulf of St Lawrence. The Nepisiguit and Tobique (a tributary of the St John) in the north are in much repute among anglers.

The coast-line of New Brunswick is indented with numerous fine bays and harbours. There are few islands. The Bay of Fundy is a huge arm of the sea extending into the land between New Brunswick and Nova Scotia, and terminating in two smaller bays, Chignecto Bay and the Basin of Minas. Its length up to Chignecto Bay is 140 miles, and its extreme breadth 45 miles. It is noted for its high tides, which are influenced by the Gulf Stream, and

rise about 30 feet at St John and 60 feet at the head of Chignecto Bay, rushing into the latter with remarkable force. At Bay Verte, 14 miles distant, the tide rises little more than 4 or 5 feet. The Bay of Chaleur, which presents no impediment to navigation, and has several excel- lent harbours, is over 90 miles in length, and from 20 to 25 miles in breadth. Onits southern side the shores are low, and on the northern bold and precipitous. The other inlets of consequence on the east coast are Miramichi, Richibucto, Buctouche, Cocagne, and Shediac Bays; on the south coast are Passamaquoddy Bay, St John Harbour, and Chignecto Bay.

Geology.—The northern divisions of the province are occupied by metamorphic slates and rocks of Silurian age. The area of the Carboniferous system includes the, greater part of the counties of Westmoreland, Queen's, Sunbury, and Gloucester, a considerable portion of York and Northumberland, and the whole of the county of Kent. The Lower Carboniferous and Devonian systems prevail in the western portion about the head of the Grand Lake and on the river' Canaan. Grey sandstone, shales, and conglomerates predominate. Along the southern coast, from the head of the Bay of Fundy to the State of Maine, there is a belt comprising Laurentian, Huronian, Cambrian, and Silurian rocks. Dr J. W. Dawson says, "' the Carboniferous plain of New Brunswick corresponds to and at its eastern extremity is connected with that of Nova Scotia; and its hilly ranges of altered and igneous rocks form, with those of Nova Scotia, outlying ridges rudely parallel to the great Appalachian breastbone of America, and, like it, descend- ing under the level of newer deposits and of the sea at their northeastern extremities." The Newer Red Sand- stone and Middle Cambrian formations are also to be found in New Brunswick, with trap, limestones, porphyry, granite, syenite, felsites, and gneiss. Many of the strata are rich in fossil remains. The coal-fields of the province occupy an area of over 11,000 square miles. Tron and plumbago or graphite occur in workable quantities, the deposits of the former being extensive and valuable. Manganese abounds and forms an article of export. Gold, in small quantities, is found on the banks of the Shiktehawk, a tributary of the St John. Professor Bailey has dis- covered drift gold on the headwaters of the Tobique and the Miramichi, and at the Grand Falls of the St John, At St Stephen, in Charlotte county, it occurs in quartz veins in micaceous schist, and in the

same neighbourhood in a black plumbaginous slate. Copper, lead, nickel, and zinc, with important deposits of antimony, complete the list of minerals.

Climate-—The climate of New Brunswick is somewhat similar to that of the more southern parts of Quebec. It.

and eels comprise the principal varieties taken. Of recent years the fishing business has been most industriously pursued, and several firms have gone extensively into the eanning of salmon, oysters, and lobsters for export. Fish-breeding establishments are in operation, maintained by the Government of the Dominion. In 1881 there were 205 larger vessels and 4284 boats engaged in the fisheries.

Game, &c.—Game is abundant,—wild ducks, teal, wild geese, partridges, woodcocks, pigeons, plover, snipe, &c., occurring in great quantity. No fewer than 270 varieties of birds have been already discovered, and ornithologists state that that number ean be increased, Of wild animals the principal are the bear, wolf, deer, moose, caribou, lynx, fox, musk-rat, mink, marten, ermine, hare, squirrel, and beaver.

Communication.—Good waggon roads intersect the province wherever therc is a settlement. Telegraphic lines are established throughout the country, and the means of railway communication are excellent. The Inter-Colonial, which is the principal line, runs from St John to Moncton and thence to Halifax, N.S. At Moncton a branch line extends to Shediac, while the main division proceeds in a northerly direction through the counties of West- moreland, Kent, N orthumberland, Gloucester, and Restigouche, crossing the Restigouche river at the valley of the Metapedia, where the scenery is varied and beautiful, ‘and thence ‘to Point Levis opposite the ancient city of Quebec. The head offices are at Moncton. The St John and Maine Railway runs from St John westward to the State of Maine, connecting at Fredericton Junction with the Fredericton Branch Railway, at M‘Adam with the New Brunswick and Canada Railway, and at Bangor (Maine) with all the great railway lines of the United States, The New Brunswick and Canada Railway runs from St Andrews to Woodstock, and has branches to St Stephen and Houlton (Maine). At Woodstock it connects

with a branch of the New Brunswick Railway which runs between Fredericton and Woodstock and Edmundstou, in the new county of Madawaska. The Grand Southern Railway runs from St John to St Stephen, the Albert Railway from Salisbury to Hope- well, the Elgin from Petitcodiac to Elgin, and the St Martins and Upham Railway runs from Hampton to Quaco on the shore of the Bay of Fundy. The total length of the railways now (1883) is abont 1002 miles.

Population.—The province is divided into fifteen counties, viz., Restigouche, Gloucester, N orthumberland, Kent, Westmoreland, Albert, St John, Charlotte, King's, Queen's, Sunbury, York, Carleton, Victoria, and Madawaska, Up to the 31st October 1882 9,937,483 acres were granted by the Government and occupied, leaving 7,455,977 acres still vacant, The population of the province, 285,594 in 1871, was 321,233 (164,119 males, 157,114 females) in 1881. There are two Roman Catholie dioceses, one at St John and the other at Chatham, and one see of the Church of England at Fredericton. The following table shows the religious denominations and the number of their adherents :—

Church of England…....cce..066 AGyaGoN || ACVenbisistcs,cscsseeeeeee ere 738 Church of Rome…. ++ 109,091 |
Universalists…….....ccssessecossees, 375

is subject to pronounced extremes of heat and cold, but is considered healthy, and epidemics are rare. In the interior the thermometer sometimes registers 95° Fahr. in the summer, while in the winter, which begins early in December and lasts until the end of March, the mercury frequently drops as low as 35° below zero. At Fredericton, the capital, the temperature ranges from – 35° to 100°, the mean being about 42°. The winters are severe, and snow falls to a great depth, especially in the north, where also wild and cold winds prevail. In the south the winters are milder and more broken. The most charming season is autumn, and particularly that part of it known as the Indian summer, which lasts about six weeks.

Agriculture, &c.—Vegetation is rapid. A very large portion of the country is well adapted for agriculture, the soil being exceedingly fertile. On the "intervales" or low lands enormous quantities of hay are grown, while the yield on the high lands varies from one to three tons per acre. Wheat, oats,

buckwheat, rye, barley, hemp, and flax yield good crops, and potatoes, turnips, beets, celery, carrots, parsnips, and pease and beans grow well. The principal fruits are apples, plums, cherries, gooseberries, currants, strawberries, and raspberries. A large export trade of recent years has sprung up in the latter fruits. Hay has always been exported from the province to the United States, where it commands good prices. Farming is not prosecuted in New Brunswick to the extent it should be, and the inhabitants fail to raise enough produce to meet their own wants.

The amount of land under crop in 1871 was 7 78,461 acres, and in pasture 385,105 acres. In 1881 these figures were increased to 849, 678 acres under crop and 392,169 in pasture. The crops raised during the latter year were 521,956 bushels of wheat, 84,183 of barley, 3,297,584 of oats, 1,587,223 of buckwheat, 18,157 of corn, 43,121 of pulse, 990,336 of turnips, 6,961,016 of potatoes, 159,043 of other roots, 414,046 tons of hay. The number of horses in 1881 was 52,975; of working oxen, 8812; of horned cattle, 203,748; of sheep, 221,163; and of swine, 53,087. In 1882 760,581 tb of wool and 78,2038 tb of bees' honey were raised.

Commerce.—New Brunswick yanks as one of the most amply wooded countries in the world. Great forests of trees cover an extensive portion of its surface, and lumbering forms one of its chief industries.. The principal trees are pine, hackmatac, spruce, eedar, beech, maple, hemlock, birch, fir, elm, oak, larch, butternut,

ash, poplar, chestnut, and snmach. Thongh lumbering and fishing form the main occupations of the people, many are engaged in

the mining and manufacturing industries. The total value of ee ee Khe anaes aS ta ie a the produce of the forest exported in 1881-82 was $4,724,422; of | Methodists. 34,514 | No creed stated 1,260 the fisheries, $758,251; of the mines, $140,908; of animals and Congregationalists……..6…. Si2aliewe eee 55

A large proportion of the population is composed of emigrants from Great Britain and their descendants. In the northern counties and in the valley of the Madawaska there are many settlements of French Acadians, and in the same localities and along the shores of the St John river there are Indians

belonging to the Malicite, Micmac, and other tribes, numbering in all 1401. During the last forty years these have varied from 1200 to 1400. The tribes, though resembling each other in physique and appcarance, differ very materially in origin and almost wholly in langnage. The ex- tent of land granted to the Indian population by the Government of New Brunswick is 58,662 acres. Within the last six or seven years a most flourishing colony of Danes has been settled in the province,

Administration.—The affairs of the province are administered by a lieutenant-governor (salary $9000) and an executive council composed of six members with portfolios and three without offices or salary, assisted by a legislative assembly of 41 representatives and a legislative council of 18 members, The latter are appointed for life, and the former are elected by the people every four years, The lieutenant-governor is appointed by the governor-general of Canada in ‘council. New Brunswick returns to the Canadian House of Commons 16 members, and 10 senators are appointed by the crown. The public revenue in 1882 was $648,710, and the expenditure $614,236. The principal source of income is the annual subsidy granted to the province, under the terms of the British North America Act of 1867, by the Dominion Government. This subsidy is computed on a fixed rate of 80 cents per head of population ; $50,000 are allowed for government and $150,000 for export duty. In 1882 the amount paid on this basis to New Brunswick was $456,903°20. It will increase until the population reaches 400,000, when the 80 cents will be regularly calculated on

their produce, $321,426; of agricultural produce, $256,994; of manufactures, $365,748. The total value of the exports was $7,474,407, and of the imports $6,707,244. The chief articles of export are fish, timber and lumber, iron, coal, gypsum, manganese, hay, &. The imports embrace wheat and other grain, flour and eorn-meal, salted meats, coffee, tea, sugar, molasses, tobacco, woollen, cotton, and silk goods, fruits, &c.

Industries. —Shipbuilding, which was prosecuted on an extensive scale some twelve or fifteen years ago, has fallen off considerably of

During the ycar 1882 the number of vessels built in New Bruns- Wick was 66, tonnage 16,820. On the 31st December 1882 the vessels registered in

the province and remaining on the registry books of the several ports amounted to 1064, tonnage 308,961, In that year there were engaged in the coasting trade, including steamers and sailing vessels, 4435 craft, representing a tonnage of 415,029. The number of saw-mills in the province is 478, employ- ing 7175 hands. There are also 166 flour and grist mills, and 83 tanneries. Other industries are lime-burning, shingle-making, manufacture of woollen cloth and cotton warps, cheese and butter making, sash, door, and blind factories, iron working, and brick- making, In 1871 the amount of capital invested in industrics was $5,976,176; in 1881 it reached $8, 425,282, 19,922 hands being employed in manufacturing, $3,866,011 paid in wages, and $11,060,842 worth of raw materials consumed. The total value of the articles produced was $18,512,658.

Fisheries.—The chief scats of the fisheries are in the Harbour of St John, on the islands at the mouth of the Bay of Fundy, and on the north shore. Cod, haddock, salmon, trout, sturgeon, holibut white fish, herring, shad, gaspcreaux, smelt, bass, mackerel,

that number. The remainder of the revenue is derived from the sales of erown lands, timber limits, mining licences, fishing licences, fees, and other miscellaneous receipts. ‘The judiciary consists of a supreme court with chief and five puisne judges having law and equity jurisdiction, a court of marriage and divorce, a vice-admiralty court, a court for the trial and punishment of piracy and other offences on the high seas, a probate court, and six county courts. These officers are appointed for life by the federal authorities. The provincial legislature meets at Fredericton, where the Govern- ment offices are situated. The militia of the province consists of an active force of one regiment of cavalry (seven troops), two batteries of field artillery, seven batteries of garrison artillery, one company of engineers, and five battalions of infantry and rifles, in all 140 officers and 1570 non-commissioned officers and men.

Education.—The present school law was passed in 1871. Under its provisions school trustees of each district are eompelled to provide school accommodation for all persons therein between the ages of five and twenty free of charge. In addition to the provincial grant a tax is levied in each

county equal to 30 cents per head, and a large fund sufficient to carry out the law (includ- ing a poll-tax of $1 per head) is raised by the localities. The educational institutions aided by the Government are the university of New Brunswick (founded in 1828 under the title of King's College, and having its seat at Fredericton), a normal or training school for teachers, and a system of common schools ranging from the primary to the grammar or high school department. The eommon schools are non-sectarian and free to all. The province expended for this service in 1882 $166,733. In the summer term of 1881 the number of schools was 1386, of teachers 1453, and of pupils 51,921. During the winter course of 1882 there were 1317 schools at work, taught by 1871 teachers, and attended by 48,805 boys and girls. The total number of pupils in attend- ance at the schools within the year was 64,267. Besides the university at Fredericton there is the Mount Allison Wesleyan College at Sackville. The public charitable institutions receiving aid from the local Government are the Provincial Lunatic Asylum and the City Hospital, St John, and the deaf and dumb school at Fredericton; and the blind school and deaf and dumb asylum at Halifax, N.S., receive an annual grant from the province also. In eonsideration of this the latter admit pupils from New Bruns- wick. The lazaretto for lepers at Tracadie and the marine hospital at St John are maintained by the Dominion.

History.—New Brunswick was settled in the first place by the French in July 1604, and with Nova Scotia belonged to that part of New France called Acadia until 17138, when it passed into the hands of England. A dispute arose between the two powers con- cerning the preeise limits of Acadia, and the question remained a vexed one until the treaty of Paris, 1763, when the whole domain was finally ceded to Great Britain. In 1764 a body of Scottish farmers and labourers arrived in the country and took up their homes in the Miramichi and other districts. The year 1783 is memorable as the date when the Loyalists landed from the United States and settled in the colony. In the following year Nova Scotia and New Brunswick separated, and they remained distinct provinces until 1867, when they were united with Quebec and Ontario to form the Dominion of Canada. The capital of New Brunswick is Fredericton (population 6218), and St John (26,127) is the chief commercial city, Portland (15,226), formerly a suburb of St John and latterly a town, was erected into a city in April 1888. Other towns are

Moncton (5032), which contains the head offices of the Inter-Colonial Railway and a sugar refinery, Shediac (6227), Dorehester (6582), Chatham (5762), Sackville (4882), Richibucto (4079), St Stephen (2338), Bathurst (4806), St Andrews (2128), St George (8412), Woodstock (1994), Dalhousie (2353).

See Dawson, Acadian Geology, 3d edition, Montreal, 1878; Bailey, Ells, and

Matthew, in Reports of the Geol. Survey of Canada, 1878-79-80; Public Documents of New Brunswick and Canada, 1882. (G. ST.)

NEW BRUNSWICK, a city of the United States, capital of Middlesex county, New Jersey, 31 miles by rail from New York, at the head of navigation of the Raritan river, and the eastern terminus of the Raritan and Delaware Canal. The older portion occupies the low land along the river, and has narrow irregular streets; but the newer districts have spread over the higher grounds behind, and are both well built and well laid out. Conspicuous among the public buildings are Rutgers College and the theological seminary of the Reformed (Dutch) Church. The college was founded in 1770 as Queen's College, and received its present name in honour of Colonel Henry Rutgers (1746-1830) only in 1825. It has a library of 12,000 volumes, and 16 professors and 115 students. The seminary, dating from 1784, consists of eight fine buildings—Hertzog Hall, Suydam Hall, the Gardiner Sage Library (36,000 volumes),

and five professors' residences—and. occupies a good posi- tion to the north of the college. India-rubber goods, hosiery, paperhangings, shoes, and machinery are manufactured on a large scale in the city. The population was 15,058 in 1870, and 17,166 in 1880. Settled in the close of the 17th century, New Brunswick was incorporated in 1736, and had become by 1748 a "pretty little town with four churches and a considerable trade with New York." A city charter was obtained in 1784.

NEWBURG, or NewsunreH, a city of the United States, the capital of Orange county, New York, occupies a com- manding position on the steep

slopes of the west bank of the Hudson, about 60 miles north of New York. It has a large river trade, especially in coal and lumber, contains engine-factories, a cotton-mill, a bleachery, a lawn-mower factory, &c. Hasbrouck House, an old stone mansion which served as Washington's headquarters in 1782-83, has since 1850 been maintained by the State, and contains a considerable collection of historical relics. The popula- tion was 17,014 in 1870, and 18,049 in 1880.

The site of Newburg, then occupied by a clan of the Minsis (Delaware) tribe, was recognized by Hudson in 1607 as a ‘‘ pleasant place to build a town on”; but it was not till 1709 that the Palatine Parish of Quassaic, as it was at first called, was settled by a number of Germans from the Palatinate of the Rhine. In 1752 the name of Newburgh or Newburg was adopted from the likeness which the place bore to Newburgh on the Tay in Scotland. lt was here that Washington rejected the proposal to make him king, thereby checking the incipient mutiny which the anonymous “‘ Newburgh Letters’? were designed to excite, and here the army was disbanded. A city charter was obtained in 1865.

NEWBURY, a municipal borough and market-town of Berkshire, England, near the Hampshire border, is situated on the river Kennet, the Kennet and Avon Canal, and the Great Western Railway, 53 miles west of London and 16 south-west of Reading. The church of St Nicholas, in the Late Perpendicular style, is said to have been mainly built at the expense of John Winchcombe (Jack of Newbury), who sent one hundred of his own weavers fully equipped to Flodden Field. The church was restored in 1867 at a cost of £15,000. It contains a brass of John Winch- combe and Alice his wife (1519). Among other public buildings are the corn exchange (1862), the literary and scientific institution, and the free grammar school. . There are over one hundred almshouses, of which twenty-four are supported by the hospital of St Bartholomew, chartered by King John. Malting is carried on, and there is a con- siderable trade in corn and agricultural produce. Silk, ribbons, and paper are also manufactured. A large wool fair is held in February. The population of the municipal borough, 6602 in 1871, was 10,144 in 1881. In 1878 the area of the borough was extended from 1722 to 1813 acres.

Newbury owes its origin to the Roman station Spinw, now represented by the modern village of Speen. In contradistinction to this village it was named Newbury, that is the new borough or town. By William the Conqueror it was bestowed on Ernulf de Hesdin, and it belonged to the Marshalls of Hampstead-Marshall before it came into the possession of the Cravens. The town was incorporated by Elizabeth in 1596, and the eharter was renewed by James I. and Charles 1]. In the reign of Edward I. it sent

two members to a parliament at Westminster ; and, being a place of considerable trade, it also sent representatives to a great council in the time of Edward III. It then possessed large woollen manu- factures, but the industry is now wholly discontinued. During the civil war two battles were fought near it in 1643 and 1644. In 1645 it was taken by the Parliamentarians, who held possession of it till the elose of the war. A handsome memorial to Lords Falkland, Sutherland, and Carnarvon and other Royalists who fell at Newbury in 1648 has been erected on the battlefield (1878).

NEWBURYPORT, a city and port of entry of the United States, and one of the shire-towns of Essex county, Massachusetts, lies on the right-hand side of the estuary of the Merrimack, and 35 miles by rail north-north-east of Boston. At this point the river is crossed by several

Plate VI.

bridges, one of which, constructed in 1792, was the first suspension bridge in America. The ground on which the city is built rises gradually to a height of about 100 feet ; along the top of the ridge, parallel with the river, runs for a distance of 3 miles High Street, the leading thorough- fare, lined with old-fashioned mansions (Caleb Cushing's, Lord Timothy Dexter's, &c.) ; and at the junction of High Street and State Street is a pond of 34 acres enclosed by a terraced promenade. The streets in general are umbrageous even for an American city, a special endowment having been left for the maintenance of shade trees. Old South (Presbyterian) Church in Federal Street contains a whisper- ing gallery of a very striking kind, and under its pulpit lie the remains of George Whitefield. The free library, founded by Josiah Little in 1854, and endowed by George Peabody, occupies the old Tracy mansion, and contains upwards of 21,000 volumes. Putnam Free School, dating from 1847, with an endowment of $50,000, and the high school for girls, are both institutions of wide reputation (the latter the first of its kind in the States), now consolidated with the high school for boys. The cotton manufacture, introduced in 1836, is the staple of the city, which also, however, contains shoe factories (one of them said to be the largest manufactory of women's shoes in the world), an iron foundry, a distillery, carriage works, hat

factories, &c., and has long been the seat of extensive shipbuild- ing operations (tonnage 4000 in 1882). The harbour (formed by the northern end of Plum Island, which is united to the city by a causeway) is of somewhat difficult access owing to the shifting character of the bar, which becomes altogether impassable during storms from the east. The population of the city was 13,401 in 1860, 12,595 in 1870, and 13,538 in 1880.

Newbury was settled by Thomas Parker's company in 1685, but it was not till 1764 that Newburyport attained independent existence. It had reached a state of great prosperity when in 1811

about 11 acres of its most closely-built portion were destroyed by fire. In 1851 a city charter was obtained.

NEW CALEDONIA, the largest island in the Pacific after New Zealand, about 240 miles long, with an average breadth of 25 miles, lies at the southern extremity of MELANESIA (q.v.), between 20° 10' and 22° 25' S. lat. and between 164° and 167° E. long., and, like all the chief islands of that chain and the chain itself, runs north- west and south-east. It was discovered by Cook in 1774, and was appropriated by the French for a convict settle- ment in 1853. Their capital, Nouméa, with a fine harbour, is near the south end of the island. An almost unbroken barrier reef skirts the west shore at about 5 miles distance; on the east, which is more abrupt and precipitous, it is much interrupted. To the north the reefs continue, marking the former extension of the land, for about 160 miles, ending with the Huon Islands. Hunea, or Isle of Pines, so called from its aralcarias, geologically a continuation of New Caledonia, lies 30 miles from its south-east extremity. It abounded formerly in sandalwood, and consists of a central plateau surrounded by a belt of cultivation, New Caledonia consists essen- tially of confused masses and ranges of mountains, rising at Mount Humboldt to 5380 feet, the plains being chiefly the deltas of rivers. The landscape is rich and beautiful, varied with grand rock scenery, the coast-line being broken by countless streams, often skilfully utilized by the natives for irrigation. The larger rivers in the wet season form impassable morasses. The framework of the island consists chiefly of argillaceous, serpentinous, and mica schists. There are no active volcanoes, but great magnesian eruptions, represented by serpentines, cover the greater part of the surface, especially

in the south- cast,—the extent of sedimentary formations, ranging from Upper Devonian (to which some Carboniferous rocks near

NE W—

N E W

Nouméa apparently belong) to Neocomian, being relatively insignificant. With the serpentines occur masses of red clay from the decomposed rock, and much chromate of iron, which forms the metalliferous black sands of the streams. The famous nickel mines lie in the Kanala district, and extend for some 60 miles along the east coast, the rocks being coated with the green ore (“ garnierite,” a hydrous magnesian silicate impregnated with nickel oxide), which also occurs in pockets, and is extensively worked. There are also mines of copper and cobalt. Gold has only been found in small quantities. In the low-lying districts to the south-east are several lakes and morasses of black mud, and blocks of ironstone so abundant as to affect the compass. In the north-west the rocks (in which quartz replaces the diorite) are not ferruginous, and are less contorted. The hottest and the wettest months are from December to March, but there is usually a fresh trade- wind blowing, and the climate is healthy. There is much less moisture, and the flora is of a less tropical character, than farther north; it has some Polynesian and New Zealand affinities, and on the west coast a partially Australian character; on the higher hills it is stunted ; on the lower, however, there are fine grass lands, and a scattered growth of niaulis (Melaleuca viridifiora), useful for its timber, bark, and cajeput oil. There is a great variety of fine timber trees: those at present most used are the kaurie, houp, and other pines, tamanou (Calo- phyllum montanum), ironwood, acacias, milneas, Cordia Sebestena, cohu, bourao, azou. The bread-fruit, sago, banana, vanilla, ginger, arrowroot, and curcuma grow wild. The cocoa nut, maize, sugar-cane, coffee, cotton, rice, and tobacco (which last does not suffer like other crops from the locusts) do well. The orange, indigo, lucerne, and European vegetables are grown. There are probably no mammals except the rat and Pteropus and other bats. The commonest birds are pigeons (the large notou and other varieties), doves, parrots, kingfishers, and ducks. The kagu (Rhinochetus jubatus), a peculiar “‘wingless” bird, is found here only. Turtle abound on the coast, and fish, of

which some kinds, as the tetrodons (globe-fish), are poisonous, especially at certain seasons.

The population is probably about 30,000, but has diminished greatly since the French occupation. There are two distinct types: one is sub-Papuan, probably aboriginal, dark brown, with black frizzly hair, rounded narrow retreating forehead, high cheek-bones, and flat nose depressed at the root below the prominent brows ; the other, with all these features modified, better-developed physique, and lighter colour, strongly resembles the Polynesian, and is most numerous in the east and south, where most of the upper class belong to it; but the two types intermingle everywhere. The women, though hard worked, are less degraded than is usual among Papuans. Their marriage ceremonies end with a simulated flight and capture. The people are hospitable to strangers, and not quarrelsome among themselves, though fond of war with another tribe, which is declared bya masked messenger, who taking a spear and money with him thrusts the former among the challenged tribe, and then, throwing down the money in atonement of the injury his spear may have done, is allowed to return unharmed. Their weapons are clubs, slings, stone hatchets (resembling the Australian), and spears with a throwing cord. Rows of stones are found commem- orating the numbers of enemics killed and caten in former wars. The French have found them formidable antagonists on many occasions ; the last ‘‘revolt’” was put down after much trouble and bloodshed in 1881. There are various degrees of hereditary chicfships, distinguished by insignia on their houses. As in some other Pacific islands, when a son is born the chicfship passcs to him, but the father continucs to govern as regent. They have strict ideas of property—individual, village, and tribal. The people have to work on the chiefs plantations and fisheries, and also work in parties for cach other, breaking up new land, &c. This often ends in feasting and in dances (pilu pilw), which include allegorical representations of events or ideas.

Their huts are usually beehive-shaped, with a single apartment, low narrow door, and no chimney. he fire inside is their only defence against mosquitoes. The central pole is continued outside, usually by a rude figure surmounted by a long post elaborately decorated, especially in the chiefs’ houses, which far overtop the

others, and have a good deal of grotesque hand carving, something like but inferior to that seen in New Zealand.

The food is chiefly vegetable, so that there is considerable scarcit at certain seasons; but almost anything is eaten, including all sorts of insects, and a steatite earth which contains a little copper. The exception is the lizard and the gecko,! of which they have a superstitious dread.

They believe in the power of spirits to take up their abode in persons or inanimate objects, and employ the aid of the soothsayer in thisand many other emergencies of life. The dead are supposed to go down into the sea at the west end of the island: Cocoa-nut trees, a valuable sacrifice, are cut down on the death of a chief. Like other cannibals, they have a certain knowledge of anatomy and surgery, and also of medicine. Their musie is quite rudimentary, and consists of little else than beating or sounding in time. Their money is made of different sorts of shells, but other articles of value—axes, skins, mats, &c.—are used as mediums of exehange.

The languages of the different tribes are mutually unintelligible. They express abstract ideas imperfectly. Dr Patouillet says that there are several words for eating, each applied to a particular article of food. Their reckoning shows the same peculiarity. The numbers go up to five, and for living objects the word bird is added, for inanimate yam, for large objects ship.2 There are other terms for bundles of sugar-canes, rows (planted) of yams, &e.; and sometimes things are counted by threes. Ten is two fives, 15 three fives, 20 is a ‘‘man” (ten fingers and ten toes), 100 is “five men,” and so on.

The free white population, settlers and miners, numbers about 3000 ; officials and troops, 3000; transportés and déporteés (ordinary and political convicts), with their families, 4000 and 6700 respec- tively. Some of the planters and graziers are fairly prosperous, but the material development of the country does not advance rapidly. There seems a general want of energy, a deficieney of banking faeilities and of roads and means of transport. It is in fact found difficult to work the scttlement both as a free aud as a penal colony. The larger proprietors are free immi- grants, but are being swamped

by the more numerous small ones, who are ‘‘libérés,” holding small concessions, and bound—theore- tically at least—not to leave the country. The déportés and trans- portés are under separate regulations. The latter when well- behaved are hired out to the free settlers at 12 francs a month. The libérés either receive a very small allowance from Government, or are perinitted to take serviee, receiving 30 to 50 francs a month, with their board. The sending out of the families of convicts, with the view to promote settlement, has not answered well. Free concessions are offered with the same object, especially to retired officials and others. Large concessions have also been made to agricultural colonies, which have mostly failed. The agricultural establishments worked by convicts have answered better, the lands belonging partly to colonists, and the convict labourers eventually obtaining a certain status, and permission to marry. Out of a total area of about 1,600,000 hectares, half is unfit for cultivation or pasture. Up to 1877, 130,965 hectares were taken up, and probably half the available land is now taken. The miners in New Cale- donia are ehiefly Anstralians, but out of several hundred concessions of mines, chiefly nickel, only a few have been worked. The inten- tion of the French Government to send yearly to New Caledonia 5000 recidivistes or habitual criminals, to be released after three years’ detention, causes serious uneasiness in Australia.

The trade was valued in 1874 at 13,471,000 frances, the imports being three times the value of the exports, and the greater part

carried in foreign vessels.

Principal Authorities.—Ch. Lemire, La Colonisation Francaise en Nouvelle Calédonie; papers—(geological) by Jules Garnier in Annales des Mines, 1867, and by Herteau, /bid., 1876, and (anthropological) by Dr Bourgarel in J/ém. de la Soc. d’ Anthropologie de Parts, vol.i.; Dr J. Patouillet, Trois ans en Nouvelle Calédonie, (Cie)

NEWCASTLE, or in full, for the sake of distinction, NEWCASTLE-UPON-TYNE, a city (with the constitution of a county), municipal and parliamentary borough, market- town, and seaport in the county of Northuniberland, Eng- land, is situated on the north bank of the river Tyne, 8 miles above its mouth, and on the main line of the North-Eastern Railway, 275 miles north of London and 70 east of Carlisle. Some of the streets in

the older portion of the town along the river side are narrow and steep, and still contain several of the quaint gable-fronted houses of the time of Eliza- beth. The business portions of the town—principally erected from the plans of Richard Grainger—are character- ized generally by spacious streets with imposing buildings and fine shops; and in the northern and western suburbs

1 Fourteen varieties have been found.

2 A similar usage exists in Malay. See paper by Colonel Yule in Jour. Anthrop. Inst., ix. p. 290.

Old

there are numerous terraces and villas inhabited by the wealthier classes. The important town of GATESHEAD (g.v.), on the south side of the river, is connected with Newcastle by three bridges—a high level bridge, an hy- draulic swing bridge, and a suspension bridge. The high level bridge has been already described (see vol. iv. p. 337). The hydraulic swing bridge, on the low level a little farther down the river, was built to replace a stone structure erected in 1781 on the site of a bridge dating from 1250, and destroyed by a floodin 1771. The Roman bridge, the Pons A‘lii, probably built by the emperor Hadrian, is said to have spanned the river at the same point. The hydraulic bridge was begun in 1868, and opened for traffic 15th June 1876, at a cost of about £200,000. It consists of one large centre pier, two mid- stream piers, and two abutments ; and its foundations are iron cylinders resting on the solid rock, 60 feet below the bed of the river. Two spans, which open simultaneously by machines impelled by steam, allow 103 feet of water- way for vessels going up and down the river. About half a mile farther up the stream is the Redheugh bridge, com- menced in 1867, and opened in 1871 at a cost of £40,000. Newcastle is well supplied with public parks and recreation grounds. To the north of the city is the Leazes ornamental park of 35 acres, and beyond this the town moor and racecourse, an extensive common, the survival of the pasture land of the township. Eastward from the town moor is Brandling Park. The picturesque grounds of Armstrong Park to the north-east of the city extend to about 50 acres, the larger half of which was presented by Sir W. G. Armstrong, who also has presented the beauti- fully wooded grounds of Jesmond Dene. Elswick Park in the south-west of the city, extending to 8? acres, and in-

cluding Elswick Hall, was purchased by the corporation and opened as a recreation ground in November 1878. The earliest artificial method of water supply for New- castle was by pipes of elmwood from Heworth and from springs about 3 miles north of thetown. In 1845 a water company was formed to supply the town with water from Whittle Dene. The reservoirs of the company have been extended from time to time, and the water of various other streams utilized to meet the increasing necessities of the town. The gas supply is also in the hands of a company. Of the old walls of the town, which, according to Leland, “for strength and magnificence far surpassed all the walls of the cities of England and of most of the towns of Europe,” and the circuit of which was 2 miles 239 yards, there still remain some towers in good preservation, although the fortifications were allowed to go into dis- repair after the union of Scotland and England. The castle, from which the town takes its name, stood on a slight elevation rising abruptly from the river, and was erected by Henry II. between 1172 and 1177 on the site of an older structure built in 1080 by Robert eldest son of the Conqueror. It was originally the strongest fortress in the north of England, and its keep is now one of the finest specimens of the Norman stronghold remaining in the country. While it was still incomplete, William the Lion was led within its walls after his capture at Alnwick; and within its great hall Baliol, on 26th December 1292, did homage for the crown of Scotland to Edward L The area of the castle within its outer walls and fosse was 3 acres. Fragments of these walls, with the principal entrance or Blackgate (portions of which are, however, of later construc- tion), and the Watergate or southern postern, still remain, but the inner wall surrounding the keep has been entirely removed. The massive keep, with walls 14 feet thick, is in a-state of good preservation, as is also the chapel, a beautiful specimen of the Late Norman style, for some

time used as the cellar of a public house. The castle was

purchased by the corporation in 1809 for £600, and is now under the charge of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries, who have fitted up a portion of it as an antiquarian museum. Near the castle is St Nicholas church, now forming the cathedral of the diocese of Newcastle (instituted in 1882). The

church, which is principally Decorated, consists of nave, aisles, chancel, and transepts, the total length of the interior from east to west being 245 feet, and the width at the transepts 128 feet. The principal feature of the church is the lantern tower, a later addition and a very fine specimen of Early Perpendicular. The church has been frequently repaired, and underwent extensive renovation (1873-76) at a cost of £30,000. Among other interesting old churches is St Andrew's church, erected in the 11th century, principally Norman, with a low square tower and a peal of six bells. During the siege by the Parliament-

ary army in 1644 it was greatly damaged. St John's church is a stone building of the 14th century with an ancient font. Of the nine conventual buildings at one time existing in Newcastle or its immediate neighbour-hood, a few fragments of the monastery'of the Black Friars still remain, and the chapel of the hospital of St Mary at Jesmond forms a picturesque ruin. a a ;

The most important public buildings are the corporation buildings, including a large public hall, and a corn ex- change, erected (1863) at a cost of £100,000; the guild- hall, originally a hospital called the Maison de Dieu, and afterwards used as "the stately court of merchant ad- venturers," re-erected in 1658; the moot-hall (1810) for the meetings of assizes and sessions and the transaction of county business; the exchange (1860); the central news-room and art gallery (1838); the assembly-rooms

° aA @ \ "EM BRIDGE st.

Plan of Newcastle.

(1774, re-erected 1876); the barracks (1806); the market (1835); the central railway station, opened 1849, at a cost of £130,000; the police courts (1874) ; the general post office (1876); the Wood memorial hall (1870), used for the meetings of the North of England Institute of Engineers; the custom-house ; the theatre royal ; house, with a chapel dating from 1491; and the Bank of England.

The Grey monument in Grey Street, an Ionic column sur- mounted bya statue of Earl Grey, was erected in 1836 to com- memorate the passing of the Reform Bill; the Stephenson monument near the railway station was erected in 1862,

The principal educational establishments are the colleges of medicine and of physical science, affiliated to the university of Durham; the royal free grammar school, founded in 1525, and rebuilt by the town council in 1870 out of the funds of the hospital of St Mary ; the school of science and art in connexion with South Kensington,

Trinity (branch)

opened in 1879; and Allan's endowed schools, founded in 1705, and reorganized by the charity commissioners in 1877. Among the clubs and similar institutions are the Literary and Philosophical Society, founded in 1793, possessing buildings erected in 1825 at a cost of £16,000 ; the Society of Antiquaries, founded in 1813, with a museum in the castle ; the Natural History Society ; the Tyneside Naturalists' Club, established in 1846; the Mechanics' Institution, 1824; the North of England Institute of Mining Engineers, 1852; the Fine Arts Society; the Farmers' Club ; the Northern Counties Club; the Union Club ; and the University Club. There is a public library and news-room, erected at a cost of £20,000. The benevolent institutions include the infirmary (originally founded in 1751 and enlarged in 1801 and 1851), the dispensary (1777), the fever house (1803), the lying-in hospital (1760), the eye infirmary (1822), Trinity alms- houses (1492), the hospital of the Holy Jesus (1682), the

NEWCASTLE

keelmen's hospital (1701), the female penitentiary (1831), the Royal Victoria asylum for the blind (1838), the Northern Counties institution for the deaf and dumb(1839), the Northern Counties female orphan institution, and the Philipson memorial orphanage for boys (1876).

Newcastle owes its prosperity to its convenient situation on a tidal river, and to the immense stores of coal in the neighbourhood, which, besides being largely exported, have stimulated a great variety of industries which

are dependent on their use. It began to export coal about the end of the 13th century, but the trade received a severe check by the Act of Edward I. which made the burning of it in London a capital offence. In the reign of Edward II]. licence was granted to the inhabitants ‘‘to dig coals and stones in the common soil of the town without the walls thereof in the place called the Castle Field and the Forth.” North and South Shields are both important ports at the mouth of the Tyne, and the whole of the river to about 10 miles from its mouth is lined on both sides with quays, shipbuilding yards, chemical works, furnaces, and numerous manufactories. The quay in front of the town, extending from the hydraulic bridge to the Ouseburn, forms a fine thoroughfare of about a mile in length; and by means of dredging a depth of water has been obtained at the shore permitting vessels of large tonnage to approach, although the berths of the ocean steamers are a little farther down the river. The quay is supplied with the most improved mechanical appliances, and by a double line of rails has direct communication with the North-Eastern Railway. :

In 1853 the number of sailing vesscls in the coasting trade that entered with cargocs was 2132 of 164,440 tons, cleared 11,172 of 1,502,813 tons; of steamers—entered 399 of 81,886 tons, cleared 429 of 97,154 tons. In the same year, in the foreign and colonial trade, the entrances with cargoes were 2555 sailing vessels of 350,190 tons, and 70 steamers of 17,248 tons ; the clearances 5396 sailing vessels of 864,291 tons, and 70 steamers of 17,243 tons. In the annual statement of the shipping of the United Kingdom for 1882 the

returns for the coasting trade are not given for Newcastle sep- |

arately; but for the Tyne ports, which include, in addition to Newcastle, North and South Shields, the numbers were—entered with cargoes and in ballast 10,152 of 3,377,108 tons, cleared 8214 of 2,861,248 tons. The following table gives similar details of the

foreign and colonial trade of the Tyne ports for the same year :— Entered.

; British Foreign Total Total Ports. Ships. bs Ships. Finke? Ships, | Tonnage.
Neweastle…….| 2,514 | 1,232,803 | 2,369 | 767,515 | 4,883 | 2,000,318
North Shields…... 426 236,254 437 92,650 863 328,904 South Shields…...

471 297,493 185 81,638 656 379,131 Tyne ports…..... 3,411 | 1,766,550 | 2,991 | 941,803 | 6,402 | 2,708,353

Cleared. British Foreign Total Ships. Tonnage. Ships. Tonnage. Tonnage. Newcastle 2,253,373 | 8,166 | 1,036,721 3,290,094 North Shields ….. 334,077 447 79,042 413,119 South Shields…... 253,150 95 42,632 295,782 Tyne ports 2,840,600 | 3,708 | 1,158,395 | 8,824 | 3,998,995

In 1878 the value of the imports of foreign and colonial merchan- dise for Newcastle was £5,367,931, and for the whole Tyne ports £6,540,859; in 1882 the values were £7,650,085 and £9,028,925 respectively. The value of the exports of the produce of the United Kingdom for Newcastle in 1878 was £3,712,899, and in 1882 £4,597,700,—the value for the whole Tyne ports being £4,128 ,227 in 1878, and £5,337,983 for 1882. Besides coal, which is brought down the river in broad boats called keels, and of which 4,557,277 tons left Newcastle by sea in 1882, the principal exports are coke, iron, machinery, chemicals, alkali, glass, hardware, earthenware, and pig and sheet lead. The imports-include various ores and chemical substances, timber, corn, provisions, and cattle. There is regular steam communication with the principal British ports, the Baltic ports, Norway, Montreal, and New York. The number of vessels built at Newcastle in 1882 for British owners was 75 of 85,121 tons, of which 68 with a tonnage of 82,468 were iron, and 3 with a tonnage of 1785 were steel. In the same year there were built for foreigners 25 ships of 27,102 tons burden. The principal other industrial establishments of the town and neighbourhood are engi- neering and machinery shops, ordnance works, including the well- known Armstrong factory at Elswick, alkali manufactories, sheet and plate glass works, bottle works, stained glass works, potteries for earthenware, coachbuilding yards, hat factories, chemical works, sail, cable, and anchor works, and manufactories of nails, files, and spades and shovels. Within the present century the population of Newcastle has more than quadrupled. In 1781 the houses

o79 numbered 2389, with an estimated population of 80,000. The census of 1801 gave the number of houses as 3141 and the popula- tion as 28,294 ; the numbers in 1821 were 4031 and 35,181; in 1871 they were 16,460 and 128,443; and in 1881 they had increased to 20,264 and 145,359. The

number of males in 1881 was 71,100, and of females 74,259. The area of the municipal and parliamentary borough is 5371 acres.

History.—Newcastle owes its origin to the Pons lit men- tioned above. The most important relics of Roman occupation are a well in the centre of the buildings of the old castle, a mutilated statue of Hercules and a figure of Mercury preserved in the castle, numerous coins, altars, and various specimens of Roman pottery. The foundations of the old Roman bridge, with the remains of the piers, were discovered during the dredging operations after the destruction of the old wooden bridge in 1771. On account of its position as a fortified town affording protection to the inhabitants of the monasteries of Tynemouth, Jarrow, Lindisfarne, and Wear- mouth, Newcastle was known in early times as Monkceastre or Monkchester ; along with these monasteries it was ravaged by the Danes, who massacred the monks and nuns within its walls. After the union of the kingdom under Egbert it continued till the Conquest to be the residence of the earls of Westmoreland and Northumberland. The town was destroyed by William the Con- queror in 1068, after he had defeated Edgar Atheling and Malcolm of Scotland on Gateshead Fell, but in 1080 a fortress was reared at it by Robert Courthose, eldest son of the Conqueror, which, in contradistinction to the old fortress, was named Newcastle, and formed the nucleus of the present town, burgesses being gathered round the fortress to defend the country against the Scots. After the conspiracy of the barons under Earl Mowbray the town was stormed and taken by William Rufus in 1095. After the death of Henry I. it was seized by the Scots under David, and it remained in their possession until 1157, when it was restored by treaty to Henry II., who established at ita mint. The town was, under the three Edwards, the chief rendezvous of troops for the invasion of Scotland. In the reign of Edward I. it was surrounded by walls, after which it withstood attempts of the Scots to capture it in 1322, 1342, and 1889. In 1640 it was taken by the Scottish Covenanters under Leslie, who held it for a year, and are said to have destroyed most of the public documents. After the battle of Marston Moor it was besieged and taken by the Scots in October 1644, from which time it was held by the Parliament till the close of the war. When Charles gave himself up to the Scottish army at Newark-upon-Trent, they took him to Newcastle, where he remained in their hands until, on the 28th January 1647, he was delivered up to the Parliament.

Newcastle is a borough by prescription, and was first incorporated by Henry II. In the reign of Henry III. the government was vested in a mayor chosen by the burgesses, in lieu of a provost appointed by the crown. In 1400 it obtained a charter from Henry IV. constituting it a county in itself, with lord-lieutenant, sheriff, and magistrates of its own. Its privileges were confirmed and extended by Queen Elizabeth in 1589. Though it still retains the constitution of a county, the old corporation was dissolved by the Municipal Act of 1835, and the government vested in a mayor, sixteen aldermen, and forty-eight town councillors. Since 1282 it has returned two members to parliament. The gross estimated rental of the borough in 1871 was £457,868, and the rateable value £402,030; in 1882 these were £803,961 and £714,470.

Among the emineiit persons who have been connected with New- castle are Ridley the martyr, Akenside the poet, Hutton the mathe- matician, Brand the antiquary, Lords Eldon and Stowell, Lord Collingwood, Thomas Bewick, and George and Robert Stephenson.

See Chorographta, or a Survey of Newcasile-upon-Tine, by W.G., 1649, reprinted 1813 and 1818; John Bell, Collections for a History of Newcastle-on-Tyne, 1835;

and Histories of Newcastle-on-Tyne, by Bourne (1786), Brand (1789), and Mac- kenzie (1827).

NEWCASTLE, a city of New South Wales, and the principal seaport on the northern coast, is situated on a steep acclivity rising from the sea, at the mouth of the Hunter river, about 75 miles north of Sydney. It isa well-built town, and most of the streets are paved, and lighted with gas. For the water supply a reservoir has been constructed on Monument Hill capable of holding 500,000 gallons. Among the public buildings the prin- cipal are the court-house, the lunatic asylum, the grammar school, the school of arts (with a library of over 4000 volumes), the Victoria market building, and the custom- house. The harbour, which is defended by a fort, and protected by a breakwater rendering it more easy of access in stormy weather, affords ample accommodation for present requirements, and has a depth at the shores of 23 feet, In 1883 the number of vessels that entered was 945

of 656,906 tons, the number that cleared 1305 of 925,926 tons. There is daily communication with Sydney by two lines of steamers. Besides the agricultural produce of the Hunter river district, the principal export is coal from the extensive mines in the neighbourhood of the town, which give employment to over 5000 men. The industries of the town include copper and iron founding, engineering, carriage building, shipbuilding, and brewing. The popu- lation of the census district in 1881 was 15,595.

The mouth of the Hunter river was discovered in 1797. The station, which for a long time was a convict depdt, was formerly called Port Hunter. In 1821 it became a free settlement, and in 1859 it was erected into a municipality, since which time its progress has been very rapid.

NEW CASTLE, a post-borough of the United States, the capital of Lawrence county, Pennsylvania, 2 miles above the junction of the Shenango and Mahoning (sub- tributaries of the Ohio), and 45 miles north-north-west of Pittsburg. It contains blast furnaces, rolling-mills, iron and brass foundries, tube-works, boiler-works, machine shops, planing-mills, nail factories, glass-works, grist-mills, and breweries. The population. increased from 6164 in 1870 to 8418 in 1880, and was estimated at upwards of 13,000 in 1883.

NEWCASTLE-UNDER-LYME (or Lyn), a municipal and parliamentary borough of Staffordshire, England, is situated on a small stream, the Lyme brook, and near the Grand Trunk Canal, 16 miles north-north-west of Stafford, and 35 south from Manchester. The parish church of St Giles was, with the exception of the old square tower, which dates from the 12th century, rebuilt (1873-76) from the plans of Sir Gilbert Scott, in the Decorated style, at a cost of £15,000. The free grammar school, originally founded in 1602, possesses very large endowments, increased by the amalgamation of various subsequent bequests for educational purposes, and now consists of a high school for boys, a middle school for boys, and Orme’s school for girls. The high school is a fine structure of red brick in the Elizabethan style, erected in 1874 at a cost of £12,000. There are also national and board schools and a school of art. The other principal buildings are the town-hall, recently rebuilt, the covered market (1854), and the

militia barracks. The manufacture of hats was at one time the staple trade, but it has now greatly declined. There are silk, cotton, and paper mills; and tanning, brew- ing, malting, and sugar-refining are also carried on. In the neighbourhood there are large collieries. The popula- tion of the parliamentary borough was 15,948 in 1871, and in 1881 it was 17,493. The municipal borough, which was slightly increased in extent in 1877, had 17,506 inhabitants in 1881.

The town, which was of some importance before the Conquest, derives the name Newcastle from the rebuilding of the castle in the reign of Henry I. The addition Lyme was due to the neigh- bouring exteusive forest of Lyme, which stretched “into Cheshire. The town and manor reverted in 1231 to Henry III. In 1268 the town and castle were bestowed on Simon de Montfort, on whose death they were forfeited to the crown. The town received its first charter from Henry II., and this was extended by Henry III. and Elizabeth. It possessed the privilege of returning two mem- bers to parliament some time before 1352.

NEWCASTLE, Duxes or. Within the space of a century there were no less than four successive creatious of dukes of Newcastle. William Cavendish, nephew of the first earl of Devonshire, was raised to the dignity of duke of N ewcastle-upon-Tyne in 1664. His son and successor Henry died leaving daughters only, and one of these married John Holles, earl of Clare, who was created duke in 1694. This duke died also without male issue in 1711, leaving his estates to his sister’s son Thomas Pelham, who, with other dignities, had the title of duke of Newcastle-upon-Tyne conferred on him in 1715, andeg

second and similar ducal title (that of Newcastle-under- Lyme) in 1757. His first dukedom became extinct at his death, but the second title was granted him with remainder to the earl of Lincoln, at once his nephew and nephew-in-law, whose descendants (Pelham-Clintons) have been dukes of Newcastle-under-Lyme in direct lineal succession down to the present time. Two of the dukes of Newcastle, and one duchess, call for separate notice :—

I. WILLIAM CAVENDISH, DUKE or Newcastix (1592- 1676), son of Sir Charles Cavendish, youngest brother of the first earl of Devonshire, by Catherine, daughter of Cuthbert Lord Ogle, was born in 1592. In his early years he showed little inclination for study, and while at. St John's College, Cambridge, he took "more delight in sports than in learning." At an early age he acquired marvellous proficiency in horsemanship and weapons, ""' which increased much his father's hopes of his future perfections.". His personal beauty and manly . accomplishments gained him special favour at the court of James I., who, when his son Henry in 1610 was created prince of Wales, made Cavendish a knight of the Bath. Ten years afterwards he became Viscount Mansfield and in 1628 earl of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. In 1638 he was appointed by Charles I. governor of Charles, prince of Wales. When the king in 1639 visited Scotland, he was entertained with great splendour by the earl of Newcastle at Welbeck. On the outbreak of the civil war the earl was appointed governor of the town of Newcastle and the four neighbouring counties, and a short time afterwards he was named general of the forces north of the Trent. In this position his energy and circumspection proved invalu- able to the royal cause. For his victory over Fairfax at Adderton Heath, near Bradford, June 30, 1643, he was created marquis. The Parliamentary generals were step by step losing their hold on the north, and were reduced to the hardest straits, when they were relieved by a Scottish army under the earl of Leven. Newcastle had to fall back on York, where he was closely besieged when Prince Rupert hurried to his assistance. Contrary to his advice Prince Rupert risked the battle of Marston Moor, which resulted in the utter rout of the royal forces and the ruin of the king's cause in the north of England. Newcastle, with about eighty gentlemen, retired to the Continent. He returned with Charles IT. at the Restoration, when he was appointed chief justice of the counties north of the Trent, and in 1664 he was created duke. From this time, however, he ceased to take an active part in political life, occupying himself chiefly with literary pursuits and the retrievement of his broken fortunes. He died December

| 25, 1676, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Dryden's Even Song is dedicated to Neweastle in very eulogistic terms. The duke, besides publishing 4 New Method and Extra- ordinary Invention to Dress Horses, 1667, which had previously appeared in 1657 in French, was

the author of several comedies, including The Exile (doubtful); The Cowntry Captain, 1649; Variety, 1649; The Humorous Lovers, 1677. He also translated Moliére's L' Etourdi under the title Sir Martin Mar-All. His wife's Life of him is noticed below.

II. Marcarer Lucas, pucHuss or NEWCASTLE (c. 1625-1673), second wife of the duke of Newcastle noticed above, was born about 1625, the youngest daughter of Thomas Lucas of St John's, near Colchester, Essex. She joined the court at Oxford in 1643 as maid of honour to Henrietta Maria, and met there the marquis (afterwards duke) of Newcastle, whom she married at Paris in 1645, after the battle of Marston Moor. Throughout life they continued to cherish a mutual admiration of a very exaggerated character, each regarding the other as en- dowed with transcendent merits both of person and mind. The duchess cultivated literary composition with exuberant fervour, and kept a bevy of maids of honour obliged to

be ready at all hours "'to register her Grace's conceptions." Walpole speaks of her as a "fertile pedant" with an "unbounded passion for scribbling"; and, although giving evidence of learning, ingenuity, and imagination, her writings are fatally marred by a deficiency in judgment and self-restraint.

She is best known by The Life of the Thrice Noble, High, and Puissant Prinee, William Cavendish, Duke, Marquess, and Earl of Neweastle ; written by the Thrice Noble, Illustrious, and Exeellent Prineess, Margaret, Duchess of Neweastle, his Wife, originally printed by A. Maxwell at London in 1667. She also published Philosophical Fanetes, 1653; Poems and Faneies, 1658; The

World's Olio, 1655; Nature's Picture drawn by Fanete's Peneil to.

the Life, which includes an autobiography, 1656; Philosophieal and Physteal Opinions, 1655 ; Orations, 1662; Plays, 1662; Sociable Letters, 1664; Observations wpon Experimental Philosophy, 1666 ; Letters and Poems, 1676. Wer Seleet Poems were edited by Brydges in 1818, and her Autobiography in 1814. The latter, edited by ee was published along with her Life of the Duke of Neweastle in 1872.

III. Tuomas PELHAM HoLLES, DUKE OF NEWCASTLE (1693-1768), who was for thirty years one of the two secretaries of state, and for seven more prime minister, and whose official life extended throughout the Whig supremacy of the 18th century, was the elder son of 'Thomas, first Lord Pelham, by his second wife Lady Grace Holles, younger sister of John Holles, duke of Newcastle- on-Tyne. Born in 1693, he was educated at Westminster and at Clare Hall, Cambridge. In 1711 his uncle the duke of Newcastle died, and left the whole of his vast estates to him. In 1712 he also succeeded his father in his peerage and estates, and in 1714, when he came of age, was one of the greatest landowners in the kingdom. He vigorously sustained the Whig party at Queen Anne's death, and had much influence in making the Londoners accept King George. His services were too great to be neglected, and in 1714 he was created earl of Clare, and in 1715 duke of Newcastle in Northumberland. He also became lord-lieutenant of the counties of Middlesex and Nottingham and a knight of the Garter in 1718, in which year he increased his Whig connexion by marrying Lady Henrietta Godolphin, granddaughter of the great duke of Marlborough. In 1717 he first held political office as lord chamberlain of the household, and in 1724 was chosen by Sir Robert Walpole to be secretary of state in place of Lord Carteret. This office he held continuously for thirty years (1724-1754), and only changed it for the premiership on his brother's death. His long tenure of office has been attributed to his great Whig connexions and his wealth, but some praise must be given to his inexhaust- ible activity and great powers of debate. He was a peculiarly muddle-headed man, and unhappy if he had not more to do than he could possibly manage, but at the same time he was a consummate master of parliamentary tactics, and knew how to manage the Houses of Lords and Commons alike. Lord Hervey compares him with Walpole in 1735, and says—" We have one minister that does everything with the same seeming ease and tran- quillity as if he were doing nothing; we have another that does nothing in the same hurry and agitation as if he did everything." He continued in office on Walpole's fall in 1742, and became more powerful on his younger brother Henry becoming prime minister in 1743. On Henry Pelham's death in March 1754, Newcastle suc- ceeded him as premier ; but people who had been accus- tomed to him as secretary of state would not stand him as premier, and in November 1756 he gave place to the duke of Devonshire. For his long services he was created duke of Newcastle-under-

Lyme, with remainder to the earl of Lincoln, who had married his niece Catherine Pelham. In July 1757 he.again became prime minister —for Pitt, though a great statesman, was a bad party

o8l

leader—on the understanding, according to Horace Walpole, that ‘‘ Mr Pitt does everything, the duke gives everything.” Under this ministry England became famous abroad, but it gradually fell before the young king’s affection for Lord Bute, who, after supplanting Pitt, became prime minister in the room of Newcastle in May 1762. The duke went into strong opposition, and lost his two lord-lieutenaucies for opposing the peace of 1763. In 1765 he became lord privy seal for a few months, but his health was fast giving way, and he died in August 1768. The duke was certainly not a great man, but he must have possessed far more ability than has generally been allowed to have maintained office as long as he did; he was industrious and energetic, and to his credit be it said that the statesman who almost monopolized the patronage of office for half a century twice refused a pension, and finally left office £300,000 poorer than he entered it. j

The best authority for the duke of Newecastle’s life is the Memoirs of the Administration of the Right Hon. H. Pelham, by the

Ven. W. Coxe, 1829. See also the histories of his time, and such books as Lord Hervey’s Memoirs and Horace Walpole’s Letter’s.

NEW-CHWANG, a city of China, in the Manchurian province of Liau-tung (Shing-king or Fing-tien), is situated in 40° 25’ N. lat. and 122° 40’ E. long,, about 35 miles (90 miles by water) from the coast of the Gulf of Liau- tung, on what is now a small branch of the main eastern affluent of the Liau-ho or Sua-muren. The city proper is a comparatively unimportant place with broken-down walls, but it is surrounded by a number of largé and most flourishing suburbs. About the beginning of the present Ta-tsing dynasty (1644) New-chwang was the chief port on the river, but in the reign of Keen-lung, owing mainly to physical changes, it was supplanted by Tien-chwang-tai farther down the stream, and towards the close of the 18th century this had in turn to give place to Ying-tze still nearer the mouth. Jn ignorance of these facts New- chwang (now scarcely to be reached by a

flat-bottomed river boat) was chosen as one of the ports to be opened to foreign trade by the treaty of Tien-tsin ; and, though Ying- tze had of necessity to be adopted as the site of the forcign settlements, Europeans still continue to speak of the port of New-chwang. Ying-tze (otherwise known as Ying-kow, New-kow, and in Mandarin as Muh-kow-ying) lies on the left bank of the Liau-ho on the lowest dry portion of the plain, not much above high-water mark. The British settlement immediately above the town has a river frontage of 1000 yards opposite the deepest of all the reaches, and runs back to the highway leading to New-chwang. Off the mouth of the river there is an extensive bar of hard mud which can only be crossed by certain channels at high tide, when itis covered by from 18 to 20 feet of water ; and the port is altogether closed by ice for four or five months of the year between November and May. But in spite of these drawbacks Ying-tze is the seat of an extensive and growing trade. The staple articles of export are pulse (beans), pulse-cake, and pulse-oil; and pulse-warehouses and pulse-mills are the characteristic buildings of the town. The cake is a popular article of food with the natives of Kwang-tung and Fuh-keen, and is also largely employed for manuring the rice and sugar fields in the neighbourhood of Shanghae, Amoy, Swatow, &e. Other leading articles of export are castor oil, raw silk, ginseng, and samshu,—this last manufactured with great success in the city of New-Chwang, but very badly in Ying-tze. The port was opened to foreign trade in 1858; in 1882 316 vessels (of 152,871 tons) entered. The total value of the trade was £934,374 in 1864, £2,606,134 in 1878, and £1,904,740 in 1882. In 1864 Mr Meadows Taylor estimated the population of Ying-tze as about 80,000, though the mandarins stated it to be 200,000.

Plate V.

382

NEWCOMEN, Tuomas, one of the inventors of the steam-engine, was a native of Devonshire, and was born about the middle of the 17th century. While employed as an ironmonger in Dartmouth he corresponded with Robert Hooke about the previous investigations of Papin and the marquis of Worcester as to the applicability of steam- power for the purpose of driving machinery, and in conjunc- tion with Cawley, a glazier in Dartmouth, and

Savary, the manager of a Cornish mine, he ‘obtained in 1705 a patent for a “ fire-engine,” now known as the ‘atmospheric steam-engine,” which was the first piece of mechanism in which steam was used with practical success. He died about 1713. See SrzAM-ENGINE.

NEW ENGLAND is the north-eastern portion of the United States, comprising the six States of Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Nhode Island. It formed part of the territory of ‘‘ North Virginia” granted by James I. to the Plymouth Company in 1606 ; and in 1614 the name of New England was be- stowed upon it by Captain John Smith (1579-1631), whose Description of New England appeared at London in 1616.

NEWFOUNDLAND. This island, which is a British colony, lies off the eastern coast of North America, directly across the Gulf of St Lawrence. Its south-western ex- tremity approaches within 50 miles of Cape Breton, while its most easterly projection is only 1640 miles from Valentia, on the coast of Ireland. It is situated between 46° 36’ 50” and 51° 39’ N. lat., and between 52° 37’ and 59° 24’ 50” W. long. Its greatest length, from Cape Ray to Cape Norman, is 317 miles; its greatest breadth, from Cape Spear to Cape Anguille, 316 miles; and the total area about 42,000 square miles. Its figure roughly approaches an equilateral triangle. Two large peninsulas project from the main body of the island. One of these (Petit Nord) points northwards, and is long and narrow. The other is the peninsula of Avalon, pointing south-east, and almost severed from the principal portion of the island, the connexion being a narrow isthmus, in one place but 3 miles in width. On the eastern side of the Avalon peninsula is situated St John’s, the capital. Owing to its extensive frontage on the Atlantic, its numer- ous good harbours, and its proximity to the Banks! and the smaller fishing grounds, Avalon is the most thickly populated and commercially important part of the island.

Physical Features.—The shores of Newfoundland present generally a rock-bound aspect when seen from the ocean, but the line of cliffs (200 to 300 feet in height) is broken by numerous magnificent bays, running in some instances 80 to 90 miles inland, and throwing out smaller arms in all directions, so that, though the circumference of the island, measuring from

headland to headland, is about 1000 miles, the actual length of coast-line is more than ere ee

1 These Banks, which have played such an important part in the

history of the colony, aud are the chief source of its wealth, stretch for about 300 miles in a south-east direction towards the ceutre of the

North Atlantic, and probably at one time formed a part of the North .

American continent. The depths range from 15 to 80 or 90 fathoms. The deposits consist of sand and gravel composed of ancient rocks, and fragments of quartz, mica, hornblende, felspars, and magnetite; along with these are many calcareous fragments of echinoderms, polyzoa, and many foraminifera. In the deeper parts there is sometimes a fine mud containing the above-mentioned minerals and calcareous fragments, and in addition numerous frustules of diatoms. The Banks are swept by the cold Labrador current, and icebergs are frequently stranded upon them. The Gulf Stream passes over their southern portions. These two currents bear along many species of pelagic algze and animals, which supply abundant food to the myriads of echinoderms, molluses, annelids, ccelenterates, and other invertebrates which live at all depths ou the Banks. These invertebrates in turn supply food to the cod and other fishes which are sought for by the fishermen. Sea birds frequent the Banks in great numbers; and, as diving birds are not met with at any great distance from them, the presence of these in the sea gives seamen an indication of the shallower water.

NE W—

N HE W

twice as great. The bays frequently present scenes of much beauty, being studded with islands, and having their shores clad in dark green forests to the water’s edge.

The part of the island nearest the sea consists of a hilly country with eminences of no great elevation. The interior proper consists of an elevated undulating plateau, traversed here and there by ranges of low hills, the

surface being diversified with valleys, woods, lakes, ponds, and marshes. Much of this isa savanna country, sustain- ing vast herds of reindeer. All the great hill ranges take a north-easterly and south-westerly direction, the highest land occurring along the western and southern shores. The principal mountain chain, the Long Range, extends along the western side of the island for nearly its entire length, and has peaks more than 2000 feet high, and parallel to this, but nearer the coast, is the Cape Anguille range. The peninsula of Avalon is very hilly ; but the highest summits do not exceed 1500 feet. The country is remarkable for a number of isolated sharply-peaked summits which rise abruptly here and there from the level plain, and bear the local name of " tolts."

The largest river is the Exploits, 200 miles in length, and having a drainage area of between 3000 and 4000 square miles. It rises in the extreme south-western angle of the island, and flows in a north-easterly direction through Red Indian Lake, terminating in the Bay of Exploits, Notre Dame Bay. The valley through which it flows contains large areas of fertile land, capable of yield- ing crops of all kinds, and in many places is covered with pine forests containing timber of large growth. The next largest river is the Humber, which rises 20 miles inland from Bonne Bay, and after a circuitous course empties itself into Deer Lake, thence flowing into the Bay of Islands. It drains an area of 2000 square miles. The Gander, which rises near the southern coast, and, flowing through Gander Lake, falls into Gander Bay on the east, has a drainage area of 2500 square miles.

One of the most remarkable of the physical features of the island is the immense number of lakes and ponds, which occupy nearly a third of the whole surface. The largest is Grand Lake, 56 miles in length, and covering an area of 192 square miles. It contains an island 22 miles in length and 5 in breadth. Red Indian Lake is 37 miles long and 64 square miles in area ; Gander Lake aud Deer Lake occupy 33 and 24 square miles respec- tively ; Sandy Lake, Victoria, Hind's, Terra Nova, and George IV. Lakes range next in size. The shores of these great lakes, and the fertile valleys through which their rivers flow, are as yet absolute solitudes, the very existence of which was until recently all but unknown.

Of the bays already alluded to, special mention may be made of St Mary's Bay (25 miles wide at the mouth and 35 miles long, with two arms— Salmonier and Colinet— which stretch still farther into the interior), Placentia Bay (55 miles wide at the entrance and 90 miles long), Fortune Bay (25 miles wide and 70 in length, with numerous arms, the chief of which are Bay D'Espoir, Hermitage Bay, and Connaigre Bay). At the entrance of Fortune Bay are the two islands of St Pierre and Miquelon, ceded by treaty to France for the shelter of its fishermen, and now all that remains to France of the vast possessions it once held in North America. Around Bay St George, on the western coast (40 miles wide at the mouth and with a good harbour at its head), are some of the most fertile valleys in the island, with fine forests of timber, and a coal-field of large extent. Bay of Islands has three fine arms running 20 miles inland. It is the seat of a valuable herring fishery. Notre Dame Bay is 50 miles wide at its mouth, and runs inland 70 or 80 miles. On its shores are the now famous copper mines, which are worked with great success.

NEWFOUNDLAND

Bonavista Bay is of great extent, contains numerous groups of islands, and presents some of the finest scenery in the island. Conception Bay is the most populous and com- mercially important, having on its shores towns and villages containing a population of 42,000. The harbour of St John's is spacious and well sheltered.

Geology.'—All the great ancient rock systems, between the Lower Laurentian and the Coal-measures, are more or less represented at one part or another of Newfoundland.

The Laurentian system has an immense spread in the island. It. constitutes the principal mountain ranges, coming to the surface through the more recent deposits, on the axes of anticlinal lines, or brought up by great disloca- tions, most of which trend nearly parallel with each other in a general bearing of about north-north-east and south- south-west. The Laurentian gneiss of the Long Range, on the western side, extends in a nearly straight course from Cape Ray to the headwaters of the Castor in the great northern peninsula. On the south-western extremity of the island these rocks occupy the coast from Cape Ray to La Poile. They are largely

exhibited on the Grand Lake, running ina spur from the Long Range between it and the Red Indian Lake, and bearing for the south-eastern shores of Hall's Bay. The central portion of the northern peninsula is Laurentian, which also spreads over a wide expanse of country between Grand Lake and the Humber and Exploits rivers, and shows itself on the coast between Canada Bay and White Bay. Another range of Laurentian comes up in the district of Ferryland, and shows itself occasionally on the coast of Conception Bay. Thus more than half the island is Laurentian.

Three-fourths of the peninsula of Avalon are Huronian, a formation which does not extend west of Fortune Bay. The town of St John's and, in fact, nearly all the settle- ments between Fortune Bay and Bonavista Bay are built upon it. Signal Hill, overlooking the harbour of St John's, is capped with the sandstone of this formation. The whole Huronian system is not less than 10,000 feet thick, and has been cut through by denudation to the Laurentian floor. The rocks of the Primordial Silurian age are spread unconformably over the area thus ground down. These evidences of denudation and reconstruction are very clear in Conception Bay, where the rocks of the intermediary system have been ground down to the Laurentian gneiss, and, subsequently, the submarine valley thus formed has been filled up with a new set of sediments, the remains of which are still to be found skirting the shores of the bay and forming the islands in it.

Rocks of the Silurian age are most extensive on the peninsula of Cape St Mary, and around the head of Trinity Bay. These belong to the Primordial Silurian group. The Lower Silurian rocks have a large development, and in them the metallic ores occur which seem destined to render the island a great mining centre. The Lauzon division of the Quebec group, which is the true metalli- ferous zone of North America, has an immense spread in the island. It consists of serpentine rocks associated with dolomites, diorites, &c., and is well known throughout North America to be usually more or less metalliferous. The Newfoundland rocks are no exception, but give evidence of being rich in metallic ores. The Middle Silurian division of rocks is also widely spread; and the most fertile belts of land and the most valuable forests are nearly all situated on the country occupied by this formation. The great valley of the Exploits and Victoria rivers, the valley of the Gander, and several smaller tracts belong to it.

1 The geological survey of the island was commenced in 1864, and has been prosecuted steadily since; the results are embodied in The Geological Survey of Newfoundland, by A. Murray, C. M.G., 1881.

the north-west.

The Carboniferous series occupies a large area on the western side of the island, in the neighbourhood of St George's Bay and Grand Lake. There is also a wider spread of the same series along the valley of the Humber and round the shores of Deer Lake and the eastern half of Grand Lake, and as far as Sandy Lake. "Coal," says Mr Howley, "is known to exist at several places in this series; and seams, apparently of workable thickness, judging from their out-crops, occur on the Middle Barachois and Robinson's Brook, in St George's Bay."

It will thus be seen that the Carboniferous series is confined to the western side, while the middle, eastern, and southern portions are occupied by Silurian, Huronian, and Laurentian formations. From the extent to which the Lauzon division of the Quebec group, the true metalliferous zone of North America, prevails in the island, its yet un- developed mineral wealth must be very great, while it is fitted to sustain a large agricultural population.

Climate.—The climate is more temperate than that of most portions of the neighbouring continent. It is but rarely, and then only for a few hours, that the thermometer sinks below zero in winter, while the summer range rarely exceeds 80° Fahr., and for the most part does not rise above 70°. The Arctic current exerts a chilling influence along the eastern coast, but as a compensation it brings with it the enormous wealth of commercial fishes and seals which has rendered the fisheries the most productive in the world. The Gulf Stream, while it creates fogs, modifies the cold. The salubrity of the climate is evidenced by the robust healthy appearance of the inhabitants. Open fireplaces are sufficient to warm the houses, and free exercise in the open air is attainable at all seasons. The average mean temperature at St John's for eight years ending 1864 was 41°°2 Fahr., the maximum being 83° and the minimum 7°; the average height of the barometer was 29°37

inches.? The average rainfall is 58°30 inches. Winter sets in, as a rule, in the beginning of December, and lasts until the middle of April. Generally the snow lies during this period, and the frost rarely penetrates the ground to a greater depth than a few inches. Spring is sometimes late in arriving, but once vegetation sets in it advances with marvellous rapidity. The autumn is usually very fine, and is often prolonged till November. There is nothing in the climate to interfere with agriculture. Tornadoes are unknown, and thunderstorms are very rare. Fogs, of which so much is said in connexion with the country, are confined to the shores and bays of the south- eastern and southern coasts.

fauna.—Among the well-known wild animals indigenous to the country the caribou or reindeer hold a conspicuous place. They migrate regularly between the south-eastern and north-western portions of the island. The winter months are passed in the south, where ‘‘browse” is plentiful, and the snow is not too deep to prevent them from reaching the lichens ou the lower grounds. In March they begin their spring migration to the barrens and mouutains of In May or June they bring forth their young. As soon as the frosts of October begin to nip the vegetation they turn south. September and October are the best months for stalk- ing. In addition to the caribou, the wolf and black bear are found in the interior; the fox (black, silver, grey, and red), beaver, otter, arctic hare, North-American hare, weasel, bat, rat, mouse, and musquash or musk-rat are numerous. The famous Newfoundland dog is still to be met with, but good specimens are rare, and he appears to thrive bettcr elsewhere. The common dogs are a degene- rate mongrcl race. It is estimated that there are three hundred species of birds in the island, most of them being migratory. Among them may be enumerated the eagle, hawk, owl, wood- pecker, swallow, kingfisher, six species of fiy-catchers and the same number of thrushes, warblers and swallows in great varicty, finches, ravens, jays. The ptarmigan or willow grouse is very abundant, and is the finest game-bird in theisland. The rock ptarmigan is found in the highest and barest mountain ridgcs. The American

2 See Tables of Aqueous Precipitation for Series of Years, collected by the Smithsonian Institution, United States, 1872.

goldcn plover, various species of sandpipers and curlews, the brent goose, ducks, petrels, gulls, and the great northern diver are met with everywhere. The great auk, now extinct, was once found in myriads around the island. The little auk, guillemot, and the razor-billed auk are abundant. No venomous reptiles, toads, or frogs occur. Of molluscous animals the common squid, a cepha- lopod about 6 or 7 inches in length, visits the coasts in immense shoals in August and September, and supplies a valuable bait. A gigantic species of cephalopod was discovered in 1873, which excited much interest among naturalists: the body varies from 7 to 15 feet in length, with a circumference of 5 or 6 feet; from the head ten arms radiate, the two longest (tentacles) being from 24 to 40 feet in length, and covered with suckers at their extremities; the other eight arms vary from 6 to 11 fcet, and on one side are entirely covered with suckers. Professor Verrill, of Yale College, has dis- tinguished two species—one he named Architeuthis Harveyt, after the discoverer, and the other Architeuthis monachus.

Flora.—The pine, spruce, birch, juniper, and larch of the forests of the interior furnish ample materials for a large timber trade as well as for shipbuilding purposes. The white pine grows to the height of 70 or 80 feet in some places, and is 8 or 4 feet in diameter. The mountain ash, balsam poplar, and aspen thrive well. Ever- greens arc in great variety. ‘The berry-bearing plants cover large areas of the island. The maidenhair or capillaire yields a saccha- rine matter which is Insciously sweet. Flowering plants and ferns are in vast varieties, and wild grasses and clover grow luxuriantly. Garden vegetables of all kinds, and strawberries, raspberries, goose- berries, currants, &c., thrive well.

Fisherics.—These constitute the grand staple industry of the country. The most important is that of the cod, which is the most extensive of the kind in the world. During six years from 1877 to 1882 the average annual export of codfish from Newfoundland amounted to 1,326,259 quintals (cwts.). (For earlier statistics see FisHEries, vol. ix. p. 266.) The cod are taken on the shores of the island, on the Banks, and along the coast of Labrador. The Bank fishery is now prosecuted chiefly by the French and by Americans, Newfoundlanders occupying themselves with the shore and Labrador fishery. The aggregate annual catch of cod at present in the North-American waters is estimated at 3,700,000 quintals, say 150,000,000 fish. The value at

$4 a quintal would be $14,800,000. Nearly four-fifths of the entire returns of tlie Newfoundland fisheries arise from the cod fishery.

While the cod fishery docs not show any marked advance in the quantities taken during the last thirty years, the market value of dried codfish has risen more than 50 per cent., and the average value of the exported products of the fishery may be fairly reckoned at $5,500,000 per annum. Adding to this the local consumption, we must place the entire annual value at $6,364,000, or £1,325,834 sterling.

The last census (1874) showed that there were 26,377 able- bodied fishermen in the colony, and. 45,845 persons engaged in catching and curing fish out of a population of 161,374, 1197 vessels of a tonnage of 61,551 tons, 8902 fishing rooms in actual usc, and 18,611 boats employed in the shore fishery. There are now (1883) about 53,000 persons engaged in catching and curing fish out of a population exceeding 180,000. The French Newfoundland fisheries on the Banks and along the shores average from 400,000 to 500,000 quintals,—the number of men employed being 5000 to 6000.

The cod fishery has been prosecuted for about 380 years, but, notwithstanding the cnormous drafts every year, to all appearance the cod are as abundant as ever. Thcy begin to appear on the coasts of the island about the first of June, at which time they move from the deep waters of the coast to the shallower and warmer waters near the shore, for spawning purposes. Their approach is heralded by the caplin, a beautiful little fish about 7 inches in length, vast shoals of which arrive, filling every bay and harbour. The cod follow in their wake, feasting greedily upon the caplin, which supply the best bait. In six weeks the caplin dis- appear, and their place is taken by the squid about the Ist of August. These also supply a valuable bait, and are followed by the herring, which continue till the middle or end of October, when the cod fishery closes, The cod are taken by the hook-and-line, the seine, the cod-net or gill-net, the cod-trap, and the bultow. Newfound- land cxports cod to Brazil, Spain, Portugal, Italy, Great Britain, the West Indics, and the United States. Brazil and Spain are the largest consumers.

Next to the cod fishery in value comes that of the seal, which is not more than eighty years old. At present the average annual value of the seal fishery is about $1,100,000, being an eighth part of the entire exports. ‘The number of men employed is from 8000 to 10,000. Steamers were first used in 1863, and now there are about 25 engaged, some of them from 400 to 500 tons burthen; sailing vessels are rapidly diminishing in numbers. According to law, no sailing vessel can clear for the seal fishery before the 1st of March, and no steamer before the 10th. The young scals are born on the ice from the 15th to the 25th of February, and increase in bulk so rapidly that they are in perfect condition by the 20th March.

NEWFOUNDLAND

The scals frequenting the coasts of Newfoundland have regular migratory movements. They are found on the ice from the middle of February till May, when they commence their northerly move- ment. In June they are seen in enormous numbers on the Green- land coast, where they spend two or three months. As the early winter sets in they begin their southern migration, keeping ahead of the ice as it forms, and moving towards the coast of Labrador, feeding in its fiords and bays. Reaching the Great Banks by the close of the year, they feed there till the beginning of February, when their northern migration begins, to meet the ice on which their young are to be brought forth and cradled. For more than sixty years they have borne an annual draft of from a quarter to half a million without showing any sensible diminution in their numbers, but the introduction of steam has given increased facilities for following the old seals at a later period of the scason, and for shooting them on the ice,-—a practice which may ultimately lead to their extermination.

There are no finer salmon streains than those of Newfoundland, but no proper measnres have been taken for their preservation, and in consequence such practices as closing the mouths of the rivers with nets at a time when the fish are ascending to spawn, and con- structing weirs, traps, and dams, have been followed to such an extent that in many of the rivers salmon are almost exterminated. The average value of the pickled and fresh salmon exported, during the last ten years, has been about $106,000 per annum. Until recently the chief mode of curing the salmon was salting, In 1842 the

export was 4715 tierces ; in 1871, 3977; in 1880, 6765; in 1881, 3689; and in 1882, 3825 tierccs. The methods of preserving salmon in hermetically sealed tins and of exporting it in ice have been lately introduced with success, Of tinned salmon 34,584 Ib were exported in 1880, 20,000 fb in 1881, and 10,000 1b in 1882, while 68,551 tb of frozen salmon were exportcd in 1881, and 313,000 Ib in 1882.

The chief seats of the herring fishery are Fortune Bay, St Gcorge's Bay, Bay of Islands, Bonne Bay, and the whole coast of Labrador. The finest fish are those taken off Labrador and in the Bay of Islands. The average annual value of herrings exported during the seven years 1877-83 was $358,359. The value of the herrings sold to the French and Americans as bait is about $150,000 per annum. Allowing 73,000 barrels for home comsumption, at $3 per barrel, we have as the total value of the annual catch of herrings $727,359.

Fifty years ago the mackerel, once very abundant, deserted the Newfoundland waters, and have not since reappeared. But few holibut or haddock are taken. Within the last few years the exportation of preserved lobsters has increased rapidly. Lobster factories have been established at various points. In 1881, 1,299,812 tb of prescrved lobsters were exported, and 46,428 tb of frozen lobsters, the total value being $111,408. In 1882 the export was 1,265,224 Ib of preserved lobsters, the value being $105, 432.

Agriculiture.—Up to a comparatively recent period the people of Newfoundland were so exclusively engaged in the fisheries that uo attention was given to agriculture; and persons who were interested in keeping the inhabitants on the sea-coast employed in fishing systematically represented the country as hopelessly barren. That this is not the case has been conclusively proved by the geolo- gical survey. According to its Reports there are in the valleys on the western coast 1320 square miles " perfectly capable of being re- claimed and converted into fairly productive grazing and arable land"; and these valleys are also for the most part well wooded. In the great valleys of the Gander, Gambo, Terra Nova, and Exploits there are 3320 square miles of land suited admirably for settlement. There are also any smaller fertile tracts around the heads of the bays, along the margin of the smaller streams, and in the islands, so that in

all there are 5,000,000 acres of cultivable land. At present these fertile tracts are almost wholly unoccupied, but the railway now being constructed will render them accessible and promote their set- tlement. The last census showed that only 34,2938 acres are actu- ally cultivated, the valuc of the produce being $612,350 per annum.

Minerals. —The first copper mine was opened in 1864, and at the end of 1879 the customs returns showed that copper and nickel ore to the value of £1,000,000 had been exported in the interval. At present Newfoundland stands sixth among the copper-producing countries of the world. The mines are all situated around the shores of the Bay of Notre Dame ; and until the interior is opened by roads and railways this will be the chief scenc of mining euter- prise. From one of these mines—Betts Cove—35,000 tons of ore were taken in 1877. The ore is found in proximity to the serpeu- tine rocks, but more immediately associated with a chloritic slate which occurs both above and below the serpentine. The area of serpentine rocks in the island is estimated at 5097 square miles. Many other minerals besides copper have been found, such as lead (in many places), silver, and magnetic iron ore ; gold was recently discovered in onc locality. In St George's Bay there are large workable seams of coal as yet untouched ; a seam of excellent canne\ coal, 8 feet in thickness, was discovered there many years ago. Mr Jukes estimated the coal basin at 25 miles by 10. Gypsum exists in great abundance in the Carboniferous region, especially at

Codroy and around St George's Bay. Marbles of almost every shade are found on various parts of the eoast ; limestone, granite of the finest quality, roofing slate, and building stones are abundant.

Shipping.—On December 31, 1881, the registered tonnage of the eolony was 1895 vessels, having a tonnage of 89,655 tons. Of these 1866 were sailing vessels and 29 were steamers. In addition, 60 vessels were engaged in the foreign carrying trade whieh, thongh owned in Newfoundland, were registered in Britain. The number of vessels entered at the various ports in 1881 was 1366, of 158,345 tons; the number cleared was 1018, of 132,743 tons. The number of steamers eleared at the various ports in 1881 was 181,

their tonnage 162,285. The total value of exports in 1882 was $8,228,291; of imports, $8,350, 222.

Manufactwres.—These are yet on a limited scale, and are confined to St John's. There are a boot and shoe factory, a woollen faetory, two tobaceo factories, three furniture factories, a rope and cordage faetory, three biseuit factories, a tannery, and soap works.

Population.—The earliest estimate of the resident population of

ewfoundland was made in 1654, when the total amounted to 1750. In 1680 it reached 2280; in 1763, 7000; in 1804, 20,000; in 1832, 60,000; in 1836, 75,094; in 1857, 124,288; in 1869, 146,536; and in 1874, when the last census was taken, the total population was 161,374. It is now (1883) probably 185,000. St John's, the capital, contained a population of 15,000 in 1835, and in 1882 it was elose on 30,000. From 1845 to 1857 the rate of increase for the island was 25 per cent., from 1857 to 1869 184 per cent., and from 1869 to 1874 10 per cent.

The following table shows the numerical strength of the various religious denominations in 1874 :—

@iminCh OfAROMEC….cese0sscscssccerses Gata Wia PRES bybeUIANSsessssseseccssessercreeseste 1,168 Church of England…….-sscseec 59,561 | Congregationalists…….ssssee0 461 Ry ESLEYATIS, cc cresescsseescces cece se oee 35,702 | Baptists and Others……..ccccersceee 165

The Protestant portion of the population are deseendants of English settlers chiefly, and the Roman Catholic portion descend- ants of Irish emigrants.

Edueation is eondueted on the separate or denominational prin- eiple, each religious denomination receiving an amount for its elementary schools and academies proportionate to its numbers. The grant amounts to $93,252 per annum. The total number of seholars in attendance at the schools is 24,971, and the number of sehools 416. There are four academies in St John's, and grammar sehools in some of the larger towns.

Finance.—The revenue is ehiefly derived from duties leviea on imports. These are partly ad valorem and partly specific, but only to a very slight extent differential, the tariff being designed for revenue purposes only, not for proteetion. There are no direct taxes, and no city or town corporations, The expenses connected with the various branches of the public service are all defrayed out of the general revenuc. The taxation in 1882 was only $4°94 per head of a population of 185,368. Within the last twenty years the revenue has more than doubled. In 1860 it amounted to $534,432, and in 1882 to $1,119,385. The consolidated and debenture debt of the colony on December 31, 1881, was $1,351,008. The colony has placed to its credit at 4 per eent. $757,704, being a portion of the fishery award in connexion with the treaty of Washington ; and

‘a sinking fund has been established which in twenty-one years will remove over half the publie debt.

Government.—Newfoundland is a British colony, directly de- pendent on the erown. Representative government and a consti- tution were granted to it in 1832, and ‘‘responsible government ” in 1855. Two legislative chambers were appointed—the house of assembly, to be elected, and the legislative council, to be nominated by the governor in council. This form of government has worked satisfactorily. It eonsists of a governor who is appointed by the crown, and whose term of office is usually about six years ; an executive council chosen by the party commanding a majority in the house of assembly, and consisting of seven members; a legislative council or upper house, of fifteen members, nominated by the governor in council and holding office for life; and a house of assembly of thirty-three members, elected every four years by the votes of the people. There are seventeen electoral districts, The members of the lower house are eleeted by household suffrage. The governor reeeives a salary of $12,000 per annum, paid by the eolony. The supreme court, instituted in 1826, is composed of a chief justice with a salary of $5000 per annum and two assistant judges with salaries of $4000. They are appointed by the crown, and hold their office for life. The jurisdiction of Newfoundland extends over the whole of the Atlantie coast of Labrador.

Roads and Railways.—The first road was made in 1825 (from St John's to Portugal Cove), and about $100,000 per annum are now devoted to making and repairing roads and bridges. At present there are 727 miles of postal roads and 1730 miles of district roads, besides 1200 miles in process of construction. In 1880 Government was authorized by the legislature to raise a loan of £1,000,000 ster- ling, on the credit of the colony, for the purpose of construeting a railway from St John's to Hall's Bay, the centre of the mining

region, with branches to Brigus, Harbour Grace, and Carbonear, the whole length to be 340 miles. At the close of 1882 there were 45 miles open for traffic. This railway, when completed, will tra- verse the great valleys of the Gander and Exploits, and afford aecess to the finest agricultural and timber lands. In 1882 a charter was granted to '' The Great American and European Short Line Railway Company" to construet another line which is to run from a point on the eastern coast to Cape Ray, the object being to shorten the route between Europe and America by crossing Newfoundland. The proposed plan is to place a line of the swiftest steamers between Newfoundland and a port on the Irish coast; the proposed railway across the island would eonvey passengers to Cape Ray, whence a steam-ferry would earry them to Cape North, in the island of Cape Breton, and the railway system of Canada would be reached. The company ealenlate on shortening the time of travel between London and New York by two days.

History.—Newfoundland, the most ancient of Great Britain's immense colonial possessions, was discovered by Joun Cazor (see vol. iv. p. 622) in 1497. Gasper Cortoreal, who ranged the coast of North America in 1500, discovered and named Conception Bay and Portugal Cove in Newfoundland, and established the first regular fisheries on its shores. Seven years after Cabot's dis- eoveries the fishermen of Normandy, Brittany, and the Basque Provinces were engaged in these. In 1517 40 sail of Portu- guese, French, and Spaniards took part in the cod fishery. In 1578, aeeording to Hakluyt, the number of vessels employed in it had inereased to 400, of which only 50 were English, the remainder being French and Spanish. At length, however, England awoke to the importanee of Cabot's

great diseovery, and an attempt was made to plant a colony on the shores of the island. Sir Humphrey Gilbert (see vol. x. p. 591), provided with letters patent from Queen Elizabeth, landed at St John'sin August 1583, and formally took possession of the country in the queen'sname. This first attempt at colonizing was frustrated by the loss of Gilbert soon afterwards at sea. In 1610 James I. granted a patent to Mr Guy, an enterprising Bristol merehant, for ''a plantation " in Newfound- land ; but no marked suecess attended his efforts to found settle- ments. In 1615 Captain Riehard Whitbourne of Exmouth in Devonshire was despatched to Newfoundland by the British Admiralty to establish order and correct abuses which had grown up among the fishermen. On his return in 1622 he wrote a Discourse and Discovery of Newfoundland Trade, which King James, by au order in council, caused to be distributed among the parishes of the kingdom 'for the encouragement of adventurers unto plantation there." A year after the departure of Whitbourne, Sir George Calvert, afterwards Lord Baltimore, obtained a patent conveying to him the lordship of the whole southern peninsula of Newfoundland, and the right of fishing in the surrounding waters. He planted a colony at Ferryland, 40 miles north of Cape Race, where he built a handsome mansion and resided with his family for many years. The French so harassed his settlement by incessant attacks that he at length abandoned it and went to Maryland, where he founded the city of Baltimore.

In 1650, or about a century and a half after its discovery, New- foundland contained only 350 families, or less than 2000 individuals, distributed in fifteen small settlements, chiefly along the eastern shore. These constituted the resident population; but in addition there was a floating population of several thousands who frequented the shores during the summer for the sake of the fisheries, which had now attained very large dimensions. So early as 1626 150 vessels were annually despatched from Devonshire alone ; and the shipowners and traders residing in the west of England sent out their ships and fishing crews early in summer, to prosecute these lucrative fisheries. The fish eaught were salted and dried on shore; and on the approach of winter the fishermen re-embarked for England, earrying with them the products of their labour. Hence it became the interest of these traders and shipowners to diseourage the settlement of the country, in order to retain the exclusive use of the harbours and fishing coves for their

servants, and also a mono- poly of the fisheries. They were able to enlist the British Govern- ment of the day in their project, and stringent laws were passed prohibiting settlement within 6 miles of the shore, forbidding fishermen to remain behind at the close of the fishing season, and rendering it illegal to build or repair a house withont a special licenee. The object of this short-sighted policy, which was per- sisted in for more than a century, was to preserve the island as a fishing station, and the fisheries as nurseries for British seamen.

There was, however, another element which retarded the pro- sperity of the country. The Freneh had early realized the imniense value of the fisheries, and strove long and desperately to obtain possession of the island. Their constant attacks and encroachments harassed the few settlers, and rendered life and property insecure during the long wars between England and Franee. When at length, in 1713, the treaty of Utrecht ended hostilities, it did not deliver Newfoundland from the grasp of France, as it yielded to her the right of catching and drying fish on the western and northern side of the island. Though no territorial rights were conferred on the

French, and the sovereiguty was secured to England, the prac- tical effect was to exclude the inhabitants from the fairest half of the island. Interminable disputes have arisen regarding those treaties, which are not yet settled, and, as a cousequence, the fine lands of western Newfoundland are still untenanted, and the mineral treasures untouched. ;

In spite of the restrictive regulations, the number of the resident population continued to increase. The sturdy settlers clung to the soil, combated the ‘‘adventurers,” as the merchants were called, and after a lengthened conflict obtained frecdom of settlement and relicf from oppression. But the contest was severe and so prolonged that only seventy years have elapsed since the repeal of the last of those laws which prohibited settlement and the cultivation of the soil. The progress of the colony since has been most satisfactory.

The merchant-adventurers strenuously opposed the appointment of a governor; but at length, in 1728, the British, Government appointed Captain Henry Osborne first governor of Newfoundland, with a commission to establish a form of civil government. ‘This constituted a new era in the history of the colony. In 1763 the fixed inhabitants had increased to 8000, while 5000 more were summer residents who returned home each winter. In 1765 the coast of Labrador, from the entrance of Hudson’s Strait to the river St John, opposite the west end of the island of Anticosti, was attached to the governorship of Newfoundland. The popu- lation in 1785 had increased to 10,000. During the wars between England and France which followed the French Revolution, Newfoundland attained great prosperity, as all competitors in the fisheries were swept from the seas, and the markets of Europe were exclusively in the hands of the merchants of the country. The value of fish trebled ; wages rose to a high figure ; and in 1814 no less than 7000 emigrants arrived. The population now num- bered 80,000. In 1832 representative government was granted to the colony, and provision was made for education. In 1846 a terrible fire destroyed three-fourths of St John’s, and with it an enormous amount of property ; but the city rose from its ashes im- proved and beautified. In 1855 the system of responsible govern- ment was inaugurated. In 1858 the first Atlantic cable was landed at Bay of Bull’s Arm, Trinity Bay.

Unproductive fisheries, causing a widespread destitution among the working classes, marked the first eight years of the decade between 1860 and1870. A system of able-bodied pauper relief was initiated to meet the necessities of the case, but was attended with the usual demoralizing results. The necessity of extending the cul- tivation of the soil in order to meet the wants of the growing population was felt more and more as the pressure arising from the failure of the fisheries showed their precarious nature more sensibly. In 1864 copper ore was discovered in the north, and mining opera- tions, furnishing employment for the people, were successfully initiated. In 1869 a series of successful fisheries began, which enabled the Government to terminate the injurious system of able- bodied pauper relief. In 1871 the revenue rose to $831,160. In 1873 direct steam communication with England and America was established.

Authorities —Hakluyt's Chronicles; Captain Richard Whitbourne, 4 Discourse and Discovery of Newfoundland, 1622; Nieholls, Life of Cabot; Anspach, History of Newfoundland; (Chief-Justlee) Reeve, History of the Government of the Island of Newfoundland, 17938; Jukes, Newfoundland, 1841; Sir Richard Bonnyeastle, Newfoundland, 1842; Pedley, History of Newfoundland, 1863; Murray and Howley, Geological Survey of Newfoundiand, 1881; and Harvey and Hatton, Newfoundland, the Oldest British Colony, London, 1883. (M. HH.)

NEW GRANADA. The vast regions of the north-west of South America conquered by Spanish adventurers in the first half of the 16th century received from Quesada, one of the great leaders of the movement, the title of the New Kingdom of Granada. It was not till 1718, however, that the Spanish Government granted the president of the colony, Pedroza y Guerrero, the rank of viceroy ; and at the desire of his successor, Jorge Villalonga, the honour was again withdrawn. In 1739 the New Kingdom of Granada was re-established under a viceroy, whose authority extended over the provinces of Tierra-firma (state of Panama), Cartagena (state of Bolivar), Santa Marta and Riohacha (state of Magdalena), Maracaibo, Caracas, Cumana, and Guiana (republic of Venezuela), Antioquia (state of Antioquia), Pamplona and Socorro (state of Santander), Tunja (state of Boyaca), Santa Fé (state of Cundinamarca), Neyva and Mariquita (state of Tolima), Popayan and Pasto (state of Cauca), and Quito, Cuenca, and Guayaquil (republic of Ecuador). In 1777 the provinces of Maracaibo, Caracas, Cumana, and Guiana were separated from the viceroyalty to form the captaincy- general of Venezuela. For the republic of Colombia (1820-30), the republic of New Granada (1831-61), and

NE W—

NE W the United States of Colombia (1861 to the present time), which have successively taken the place of the

viceroyalty, see Cotomsta (vol. vi. p. 156); and compare Pereira, Les Etats-Unis de Colombie (Paris, 1883).

NEW GUINEA, the largest island in the world (ex- Plate y1

cluding Australia), les immediately north of Australia, between 0° 25’ and 10° 40’S. lat. and between 130° 50’ and 150° 35’ E. long. It is 1490 miles long, with a maximum breadth of 430 miles, its area being about 306,000 square miles.}

Physical Features.—It was probably in Miocene times, if not later, united to Australia; the average depth of Torres Straits, which are 80 miles wide, is only 8 or 9 fathoms, and the maximum 20,—three-fourths of the distance being occupied by coral reefs, a prolongation of the great eastern barrier reef of Australia. At either end of New Guinea a few large islands, with a number of smaller islets, are only separated from the mainland by narrow channels. From difficulties connected with the navigation, the climate, and the people, the coasts are still imperfectly surveyed, while of the interior, relatively to its vast extent, very little is known. At the north-west end the deep M‘Cluer Inlet almost cuts off a great peninsula of some 200 by 115 miles, while this inlet and another farther south almost if not entirely insulate the great tract known as Onin. The south coast, from Cape Bourou westwards, is mostly precipitous, limestone cliffs rising several hundred feet, with dense forest and a moun- tainous country behind. There are occasional tracts of flat swampy ground, and the steep coast-line is be- sides broken by some large rivers, whose banks for some distance inland are usually swampy. Off M‘Cluer Gulf are numbers of curious mushroom-shaped islands with sea-worn bases.

The north coasts are sometimes level, as at parts of Geelvink Bay and the extensive delta of the great Amberno river, at Walckenaar and Humboldt Bays, and farther east towards Cape della Torre, near which, and near Huon Gulf, there are large rivers; otherwise the shores are steep-to, and apparently rising, with promon- tories jutting 20 to 40 miles out, and some good harbours. There is no barrier reef off this coast. High distant mountains are observed at every opening, those towards the east rising in successive and highly fertile terraces to some 13,000 feet. No active volcanoes have as yet been observed on the mainland, but Mr W. Powell reports masses of pumice on the slopes of the Finisterre mountains. Severe earthquakes, too, occur on the north side, and there is a line of volcanic activity parallel to this coast some 20 to 50 miles distant. Near its east end are the D’Entre- casteaux Islands (7000 feet), richly wooded, with rocks of

raised coral and boiling alkaline springs. Cape Bourou appears to be the extremity of the lofty Charles Louis range, over 16,000 feet, the tops of which seem from the distance to be snow-covered. East from Cape Bourou the | mountains recede out of sight, the sea is shallow, and the flat mangrove-covered coast is intersected by creeks and rivers laden with mud, as far as the Gulf of Papua, where Signor D'Albertis reports that he steamed 500 miles up the Fly river, probably one of several channels draining a vast swamp country between the mountains and the sea. He found the tropical forest scenery varied by treeless plains, with isolated hills rising from them, like the islands in the neighbouring Torres Straits from the sea. These tracts are Australian in character. The hills probably escaped the submersion which, besides forming Torres Straits, covered the surrounding country, and thus re- mained as nuclei of an Australian flora,—the plains, on

1 That of Borneo is about 286,000.

again emerging, being occupied, in great measure, by the tropical vegetation from the westward. Beyond Redscar Head in the Gulf of Papua the country again rises, having an Australian appearance,—open grassy hills with scattered timber sloping to the coast, which is here skirted by a barrier reef with occasional openings, affording good shelter to vessels. Inland, densely wooded hills and valleys with rivers and rich cultivable soil are backed by the great Owen Stanley range (13,000 feet), which terminates at the east forks in bluffs 2000 feet high.

Geology. Of the geology of New Guinea little is known. In the north-west the Arfak mountains are mainly granite and gneiss. Near Geelvink Bay dark limestones occur, apparently ancient, and stratified clay slates. Bismuth is found here at Moom. Miosnom island, opposite, is volcanic. Raised coral is frequent on this (north) coast, and the streams bring down pebbles of plutonic rocks and sandstones. Clay ironstone is found at Humboldt Bay, on the river Jakata near M'Cluer Gulf, and at Lakahia Island, and a Tertiary coal (lignite) at Lakahia and in Galewo Strait. On the east side of the Gulf of Papua the coast range is of recent limestone. At Hall Sound calcareous clays from the Lower Miocene con- tain fossil shells identical with those found in Victoria and South Australia. Small fragments and pebbles, sent

from Redscar and Astrolabe Bays (probably coming from the great central range), consisting of mica slate, quartz, sand- stones, greenstones, and jasperoid rocks, are undistinguish- able from those of the Devonian and Silurian series of the gold-fields of New South Wales. A black magnetic-iron sand (with traces of gold) and plumbago are reported from this (south-east) coast. Some of the Torres Straits islands are of raised coral, others of stratified sandstones with huge overlying blocks of the same and conglomerates, others volcanic.

Climate.—The climate of the coast is unhealthy, especi- ally during the transition between the monsoons, which is long and irregular owing to the action of the high mountain ranges on these winds. The heat is tempered by the heavy rainfall, discharged by the north-west mon- soon chiefly in the west and north; the south-east monsoon also is often wet, especially in the east and south districts. Torres Straits are healthier, though the heat is great and the amount of salt in the air is trying to many. From July to September the force of the south-east monsoon there is such that even steamers cannot always face it and the tide together.

Flora. —The flora is mainly that of the Indian Archi- pelago, which predominates even in the islands of Torres Straits; but on the shores of the Gulf of Papua, and inland, Australian vegetation is represented by Eucalyptus, acacias, and Pandanus; and Australian types are found as far north as Humboldt Bay. Over great part of New Guinea dense forests prevail, clothing the mountains to a height of several thousand feet, the timber of enormous height, though the species are fewer than in the great islands of the archipelago. Among them various kinds of Ficus, Casuarina, Araucaria, Dammara, Podocarpus, Calophyllum, Aleurites, Ebenacee, Canarium, Durio, Wormia, and many species of palms. The trees are matted with creepers (Bauhinia, Bignonia, Asclepias, &e.), with a dense undergrowth of brushwood, ferns, and lycopodiums, but their density often makes the herbaceous vegetation poor. Of the smaller growths are great reeds and grasses covering the swamps and open spaces; aloes, aroids, orchids, Scitaminee (ginger, cardamum, «c.), Laurinex, Piperacee (betel and} others, wild and culti- vated), Myrtacex, Vinifere, pine-apple, nutmeg, cotton shrubs, Urticex, Apocynex, Malvacee, Papilionaceer (Butea, Lrythrina, Clitoria, Mimosa, &c.), Justicee, and Begoniz ;

and in the mountains a sub-alpine flora, oaks, rhododen- drons, vacciniums, epilobiums, Umbellifere, &c. Among cultivated plants are the banana, papaya, orange, sugar cane, maize, millet, taro (Arum esculentum), Abelmoschus Mamhot, Jambosa, yams, sweet potato, and pumpkins, and among the Amberbaki the dry rice. The cocoa-palm grows everywhere ; the sago-palm grows wild in abund- ance in the swamps, and in the north-west each hill tribe, apparently to avoid collisions, draws its supplies from a different district of the coast. They have also in the hills a tree called “sali,” with top and pith resembling sago. Tobacco of good quality is brought down from the interior, and an illustrious antiquity is claimed for the plant by a tradition which describes it as the miraculous fruit of a woman named Heva. In some places the kava of the Pacific (Piper methysticum) is used. At Doreh a cotton plant (G@. vitifolium) grows wild, and is also cultivated. fauna.—New Guinea is very poor in Mammalia. According to Mr Wallace (Geographical Distribution of Animals), there are as yct known, besides a peculiar form of pig, some mice, and various Pteropide, four families of marsupials, all Australian, viz., Dasyuride, Peramelide, Macropodide, and Phalangistide, with nine species Among them are a Dendrolagus or tree-kangaroo and several cuscus. There are also two echidnas. The large animals reported by travellers may possibly be gigantic marsupials akin to those found fossil in the Queensland Pleistocene. The wealth and beauty of the avifauna are great. Count Salvadori gives 1028 species, belonging to 321 genera, for the Papuan subregion (i.¢., from the Solomon Islands westwards to, but excluding, Celebes). Of these about 470 are peculiar to New Guinea and the adjacent islands, including Aru. The more numerous and important genera are pre-eminently Australian in character, with many species peculiarly developed. There is also, as might be expected, a considerable number of Malayan forms, some common to the whole region, some only found here and at other far distant spots in it. The most remarkable orders, besides the birds of paradise, which are only found in New Guinea and the neighbouring islands, are the honeysuckers, flycatchers, parrots, kingfishers, and pigeons, all rich in special forms. Birds of prey are rare; vultures, pheasants, woodpeckers, and finches absent. Mr Wallace attributes the unusually large number of “ beauti- ful” birds, 50 per cent. of the whole, to the numbers of parrots, lories, cockatoos, pigeons, and

kingfishers, and to the absence of thrushes, shrikes, warblers, and other dull- coloured groups. Of snakes, which may migrate freely on floating timber, we find out of 24 genera (belonging to 11 families) 6 Oriental, 4 Australian, and only 4 specially Papuan; of lizards 3 families with 24 genera, of which only 3 are peculiarly Oriental, 3 Australian, 6 Papuan. The Amphibia (6 families with 8 genera), for which the salt water is a barrier, have no western aflinities, and those not of wide distribution are almost exclusively Australian,—a fact of obvious geological significance. The Lepidoptera are numerous and singularly beautiful, as are the Coleoptera, which Mr Wallace says often display the metallic lustre characteristic of the plumage of the New Guinea birds.

Population.—The population consists of a great number of isolated tribes, differing much in appearance and language. The level of civilization varies, but seldom reaches even the average Pacific standard.

They have no single name for New Guinea, nor any idea of its extent, only using terms signifying "great land," to distinguish it from the adjacent islands or from Australia.

The name Paptia isa Malayan term signifying frizzled, in reference to the hair; and, as distinguishing the peoples so characterized from the Australians, the term "Papuan" is bysome writers thought more suitable than "Melanesian,"

while equally distinguishing the race from the brown Polynesians, The type of man known as Papuan or Melanesian (see MELaNzsiA) is found here in its greatest purity, and appears to occupy the whole island excepting its east extremity. But among tribes occupying so wide an area, having little intercommunication, and with other races at no great distance, many deviations from the normal type must be expected, and in fact it is not very easy to define this type. Its leading characteristics are— a medium height; fleshy rather than muscular frame ; colour a sooty brown, varying, but decidedly darker than the Malay ; high but narrow and rather retreating fore-

head, with thick brows; nose sometimes flat and wide at—

the nostrils, but oftener hooked and “Jewish,” with depressed point, a feature represented in their karwars or ancestral images ; prognathism general, but not universal ; lips thick and projecting, so as to make the chin seem retreating ; high cheek bones; hair black, frizzly, trained intoa mop. The appearance is thus negroid, and is said to resemble the population of the African coast opposite Aden. But in the Arfak mountains in the north-west, and at points on the west and north coasts and adjacent islands, very degraded and stunted tribes are found, with hardly the elements of social organization (possibly the aboriginal race unmixed with foreign elements), and resembling the Aetas or Negritos of the Philippines, and other kindred tribes in the Malay Archipelago. On the banks of the Fly river D’Albertis observed at least two widely differing types, those on its upper course bearing some resemblance to the tribes of the eastern coast. Here, wedged in among the ruder Papuans, who reappear at the extremity of the peninsula, we find a very different-looking people, whom competent observers, arguing from appearance, language, and customs, assert to be a branch of the fair Polynesian race. But there are obvious signs among them of much admixture of blood; and they or their congeners again may easily have modified their neighbours immedi- ately west of them, just as Malay and other influences have done on the other end of the island. Indeed the greater degree of intelligence and good looks observed at points along the north coast may be due simply to this cause. On the west coasts there is a semi-civilization, due to intercourse with Malays and Bughis, who have settled at various points, and carry on the trade with the neighbour- ing islands, in some of which, while the coast population is Malay or mixed, that of the interior is identical with the people of the mainland. On the west coasts Moham- medan teaching has also some civilizing effect. Many of the tribes at this west end of New Guinea are, at all events in war time, head-hunters, and in the mountains cannibals. Cannibalism in fact is practised here and there throughout New Guinea. Tho frequent hostility and mistrust of strangers are partly due to slave-hunting raids and ill- treatment by traders, but the different tribes vary much in character. Thus in the mountains of the north-west the Karons, a short, hardy, well-built people, cultivate very little, living chiefly on wild plants which their women cook in hollow bamboos, and obtaining what they require from without, as knives, ornaments, é&c.,

either by plunder, or by disposal of slaves or bird skins; while their neighbours the Kebars grow vegetables and very fine tobacco, which they sell to the Amberbaki, a peaceful industrious coast tribe. The mountain tribes are usually despised by their coast neighbours as ruder and more destitute of resources, but when more numerous and fiercer, as in the south of west New Guinea, the tables are turned, and the coast people live in perpetual terror of their neighbours, who plunder and enslave them.

At Humboldt Bay the people, though uncertain, rude, and warlike, are ready to trade, and tribes of a kindred

race are found farther east, at Astrolabe Bay; here the Russian Miklucho Maclay lived among them for some time, and was favourably impressed by them. Still farther east, the plateaus of the Finisterre ranges are highly culti- vated and artificially irrigated by a comparatively fair people. Many tribes in the south-west seen: to be migratory. At Princess Marianne Straits tribes much wilder than those farther west, naked and painted, swarm like monkeys in their trees, the stems of which are submerged at high tide. But the Torres Straits islanders are employed by Europeans in the pearl shell fishery, and are liked as labourers; and in some of the Ké and Aru Islands the Papuan inhabitants form orderly Christian communities. The people of the south-east peninsula seem generally, like the typical Poly- nesian, of a mild, accessible type. Englishmen, wandering inland and losing their way, have been found and brought back by them. Their manners are more courteous, their women better treated, than is usual with Papuans, but they show perhaps less ingenuity and artistic taste. Their children, in the mission schools, show much intelligence.

While tribes allied to the Papuan have been traced through Timor, Flores, and the highlands of the Malay Peninsula to the Deccan of India, these "' Oriental negroes " have many curious resemblances with some East-African tribes. Besides the appearance of the hair, the raised cicatrices, the belief in omens and sorcery, the extraction of diseases in the form of bits of wood or stone, and the practices for testing the courage of youths, they are equally devoid of forethought or ambition, rude, merry, and boisterous, but amenable to discipline, and with decided artistic tastes and faculty.

Several of the above practices are also common to the Australians, who, though generally inferior, have many points of resemblance (osteological and other) with the Papuans. The extinct Tasmanians were more closely allied to the Papuans.

The constitution of society is everywhere simple. Among the more advanced tribes rank is hereditary, otherwise the chiefs generally have but little power, most matters being settled by the assembly, a contrast to the Polynesian respect for birth and hereditary rank. The Papuan's religious institutions are likewise simpler; there is no general object of worship, consequently no regular priesthood ; the institution of tabu is less oppressive, and its sanction less awful, but the transgressor may still have to reckon, not only with the society or individual who imposed it, but also with offended spirits. Almost every crime is condoned by payment. A characteristic example of the feeling of the fair race towards the dark was seen in the contempt shown by the tribes of the south-east towards certain Melanesian teachers introduced by the English missionaries, while others brought from the Polynesian islands were treated with respect.

The Papuan women are, asa rule, more modest than the Poly- nesian.

In western New Guinea, according to the Dutch missionaries, there is a vague notion of a universal spirit, practically represented by several malevolent powers, as Mfanoin, the most powerful, who resides in the woods; Narwoje in the clouds, above the trees, a sort of Erl-K6onig who carries off children ; Faknik in the rocks by the sea, who raises storms. Asa protection against these the people construct —having first with much ceremony chosen a tree for the purpose— certain rude images called karwars, each representing a recently dead progenitor, whose spirit is then invoked to occupy the image and protect them against their enemies and give success to their under- takings. The karwar is about a foot high, with head dispropor- tionately large ; the male figures are sometimes represented with a spear and shield, the female holding a snake. Omens are observed before starting on any expedition; if they are unfavourable the per- son threatened retires, and another day is chosen and the process repeated. They have magicians and rain-makers, and sometimes resort to ordeal to discover a crime. Temples (so-called) are found in the north and west, built like the

houses, but larger, the piles being carved into figures, and the roof-beams and other prominent points decorated with representatious of crocodiles or lizards, coarse human figures, and other grotesque ornamentation; but their use is not clear. Neither temples nor images (except small figures worn as amulets) occur among the people of the south-east, whose religious ideas seem vague and rudimentary ; but they have a great dread of departed spirits, especially those of the hostile inland tribes, and of a being called Vata, who causes diseasc and death.

Religion.

Diseases.

Food,

Clothing.

Orna- ments.

Weapons,

Houses,

NEW G

-The dead are disposed of in various ways. The spirit is supposed not to leave the body immediately, which is either buried for a time and then taken up and the bones cleaned and deposited in or near the dwelling, or it is exposed with the same object on a platform of branches, or dried over a fire, and the mummy kept for a few years. Sometimes the head, oftener the jaw bone, is kept asa relic. Food is placed on a grave,—with an infant a calabash of its mother's milk,—and a path is made to the sea that the spirit may bathe; but the spirits are everywhere dreaded as likely to injure the living. No one likes to go about, or into the water, after dark. Little imitation houses are placed in the woods to allure the spirits away. These dwell chiefly in the moon, and are particularly active at full moon. The houses which they haunt, and beneath or near which their bodies lie buried, are deserted from time to time, especially by a newly-married couple, or by

women before child- birth. Probably the effluvium from the buried corpse produces the feelings of sickness which are supposed to be caused by the spirit's presence, and which subside when they leave the spot.

Feasting and dances take place on the setting up of a karwar, on the return of warlike and other expeditions, at a marriage, birth, change of name, child's first hair-cutting, and also some time after a death.

The chief diseases are skin diseases, with which in some places one-third of the population is affected,—among these a sort of leprosy to which, as well as to a dropsy (beri-beri), Europeans are subject,—catarrhs, boils, syphilis, and intermittent fevers, especi- ally where there is much coral on the coast.

The Papuan varies his vegetable diet with the flesh of the wild pig, wallabi, and other small animals, which are hunted with dogs. Birds are snared or limed. Fish abound at many parts of the coast, and are taken by lines, or speared by torehlight, or netted (the netting pattern is the same as ours); or a river is dammed and the fish stupefied with the root of a milletia. Turtle and dugong are caught. The kima, a great mussel weighing (without shell) 20 to 30 ib, and other shell-fish are eaten, as are also dogs, flying foxes, lizards, beetles, and all kinds of insects, and an edible earth.

'Food is cooked in various ways, being stewed or roasted, or baked with hot stones as in Polynesia. A third part of sea water, which is carried to the interior in hollow bamboos, is added in place of salt, which is also obtained from the ashes of wood saturated by the sea. The sexes generally eat apart.

Their ery scanty clothing is made of the bark of Hibiscus, Broussonetia, and other plants, or of leaves, and in more civilized parts of eotton. Tight belts and armlets of split rattan and fibre are often worn. The people have usually a great dislike to rain, and carry a mat of pandanus leaves as a protection against it.

The chief home-made ornaments are necklaces, armlets, and ear- rings of shells, teeth, or fibre, and cassowary, cockatoo, or bird of paradise feathers, —the last two, or a flower, are worn through the septum of the nose. The hair is frizzed out and decorated variously with flowers, leaves, feathers, and bamboo combs. The fairer tribes at the east end tattoo, no definite

meaning apparently being attached to the pattern, for they welcome suggestions from Manchester. For the women it is simply a decoration. Men are not tattooed till they have killed some one. Raised cicatrieces usually take the place of tattooing with the darker races. Rosenberg says the scars on the breast and arms register the number of sea-voyages made.

The use of the bow and arrow is little known among the eastern tribes. The Papuan bow is rather short, the arrows barbed and tipped with cassowary or human bone. Other weapons are a short dart, a heavy spear and shield, stone clubs and axes. They are mostly ignorant of iron, but work skilfully with their axes of stone or tridacna shell, and bone chisels, cutting down trees 20 inches in diameter. Two man working on a tree trunk, one making a cut with the adze lengthwise and the other chopping off the piece across, will soon hollow out a large canoe. Every man has a stone axe, each village generally owning a large one. Their knives are of oral hardened by fire. In digging they use the pointed stick.

The eastern tribes salute by squeezing simultaneously the nose and stomach, and both there and on the north coast friendship is ratified by sacrificing a dog. In other places they wave green branches, and on the south (Papuan) eoast pour water over their heads, a custom noticed by Cook at Mallicolo (New Hebrides). Among other pets they keep little pigs, which the women suckle.

The Papuan numerals extend usually to 5 only. In Astrolabe Bay the limit is 6; with the more degraded tribes it is 8, or, as in Torres Straits, they have names only for 1 and 2; 3 is2+1.

The houses are mostly (so far as is known) built in Malay fashion on piles, and this not only on the coast but on the hill-sides, though the houses there are smaller. Small houses are also found perched high up in trees as a safeguard against enemies and evil spirits, and possibly malaria; and one or two of these in a village act as its fortress or watch-tower.

The piles support a platform made from old eanoes or branches, the whole covered with a rounded or inverted boat-shaped roof thatched with valm branches, sometimes 500 fect long, and looking

inside, when undivided, like a dark tunnel.! Otherwise the coast houses are 60 to 70 feet long, often more, with a passage down the centre, and the side spaces partitioned off as needed. Hach house has a sort of paterfamilias, the rest of the numerous inhabitants being his relations or slaves. A bridge, when the house is over the water, connects it with the land, and near this is sometimes a small jointure house for widows of former occupants, and a separate one for bachelors or for pregnant women. A veranda towards the sea is usually occupied during the day by the men, and one on the land side by the women. The gable ends are often prolonged upwards and carved, and the houses adorned with drawings of animals, and hung round with weapons, and crocodiles', dogs', and boars' teeth. On the north coast, about Astrolabe Bay, the houses are not built on piles ; the walls, of bamboo or palm branches, are very low, and the projecting roof nearly reaches the ground ; a barrier at the entrance keeps out pigs and dogs. A sort of table or bench stands outside, used by the men only, for meals and for the subsequent siesta.

In cast New Guinea sometimes the houses are two-storied, the lower part being used for stores. The furniture consists of earthen bowls, drinking cups, wooden neeck-rests, spoons, &c., artistically carved, mats, cordage, small plaited baskets and boxes, and various weapons and implements. The pottery is moulded and fire-baked.

West New Guinea exports a certain amount of sago, nutinegs, massoi and pulasaria barks (all wild), birdskins, tripang, tortoise- and pearl-shell, the trade with the Dutch being worth about £20,000 a year. Misol is rich in all these products, and Salawatti in sago. They are sent to Ceram, Ternate, and Macassar in exchange for iron and copper ware, cotton cloths, indigo, knives, mirrors, beads, arrack, &c. The Kéislanders are great boatbuilders. An active trade is carried on between the hill and coast tribes, the former bringing down vegetable produce in exchange for fish and shell ornaments. In the north-west some of the coast villagers spend six months in the forest collecting massoi bark, and live the rest of the year by fishing. Often a village has its special industry, as canoe-building, pottery, or manufacture of shell ornaments, or of the little sticks worn in the septum ofthe nose. Large

trading canoes pass up and down the coast, probably combining a little piracy and kidnapping with other business, The Papuan pirates were formerly dreaded in thesc seas. For trading purposes several large canoes are lashed together, with a platform above and a house at each end united by a palisade. Coasting voyages of several weeks are made in these craft. The canoes vary from the common ‘‘dug-out” to the great war-canoe elaborately carved and ornamented.

Both races show considerable agricultural skill—probably an old Agricul- Asiatic tradition, for the plants cultivated seem mostly Asiatic. ture

In some places the hill-sides are carefully terraced, plantations well kept and fenced, and flowers grown for ornament. Any one may clear and cultivate a piece of land belonging to his tribe, but often after one or two deaths a kampong is deserted, and new forest-land taken up ; on the west coast, where the mainland is too steep for cultivation, the people cross over and cultivate the neigh- bouring uninhabited islands. They have a strong sense of pro- prietorship, even of thie fruit trees in the forest and of the fish in their own streams or on thcir own coast.

History.—The claims to superiority over New Guinea on the part History.

of the rulers of some of the small ncighbouring islands are curious when we compare the extent of their dominions with New Guinea. These claims date at all events from the spread of Islam to the Moluccas at the beginning of the 15th century, and were maintained by the Malay rulers both of Batjan and of Gébe. Latterly they have been exercised by the sultan of Tidore. When the Dutch first came to these seas it was their policy to ally themselves with certain chiefs, and support their claims over various islands, so as to extend their own commercial monopoly ; and they now support the claims (admitted by Great Britain in 1814) of their former rival and ally the sultan of Tidore over both the Raja Ampat (7.¢., the four Papuan kingships, Waigiu, Salawatti, Misol, and Waigamma ”) and certain islands or points on the north-west coast of New Guinea, and the rulers of these places are nominated, on his recommendation, by thc Dutch governor of Ternate, under the titles of rajah, major, singaji, or korano.

Salawatti and till lately Misol have dominated the coasts respec- tively adjacent to them, but certain dues (consisting of sago, massoi bark, occasional slaves, and other produce) are levied in the sultan's name, at irregular intervals, all along the coast for hundreds of miles. These extortions make Islam unpopular, and have retarded progress, for we read in former days of Papuan pirate fleets, and of '*the Papuas"' in league with the Moluccas against the Portuguese. The Dutch, however, in their dealings with the people still find it convenient to use the sultan's name and authority. As his suzerain they claim possession of the west half of New Guinea as far as 140° 47' E., but his claims never cxteuded so far, and their sovereignty is little more than nominal. There is a small coaling station

1 'These large houses, like the custom of head-hunting, are traceable west through Borneo up to the north-east frontier of India, where the custom above- mentioned of exposing the dead also prevails.

2 On Misol island.

at Dorch, in Geelvink Bay, and the Dutch flag is hoisted by many of the coast chiefs, ignorant even of its meaning; all attempts at settlement have been abandoned owing to the bad climate, the difficult navigation, and the constant fighting and laziness of the people,—all this limiting the amount of produce available for trade. The Dutch missionaries,! who have laboured on the shores and islands of Geclvink Bay for many years, have a certain influence, and their schools are well attended, but with no more definite result than a certain softening of manners and slight increase of material prosperity. '

Though probably sighted by A. Dabreu, 1511, New Guinea was apparently first visited either by the Portugucse Don Jorge de Meneses, driven on his way from Goa to Ternate in 1526 to take shelter at 'Isla Versija" (which has been identified with a place Warsia on the N.W. coast, but may possibly be the island of Waigiu), or by the Spaniard Alvaro de Saavedra two ycars later.

By Ortiz de Retez, or Roda, who in 1546 first laid down several points along the north coast, the name of ‘‘New Guinea” was probably given. In that and the two following centuries, though the coasts were visited by many illustrious navigators, as Schouten and Lemaire, Tasman, Dampier, Torres, Bougainville, and Cook, little additional knowledge was gained. This was due first to the difficulties of the navigation, next to the exclusiveness of the Dutch, who, holding the Spice Islands, prevented all access to places east of them, and lastly to the stream of enterprise being latterly diverted to the more temperate regions farther south. The Dutch barrier was broken down by the arrival of Dampier and other ‘‘interlopers” from the east, and of emissaries from the (English) East India Company in search of spice-bearing lands. The voyage of Forrest (1774) in the ‘‘ Tartar galley” of 10 tons, and his account of New Guinea, are still full of interest. New Guinea was actually annexed in 1793 by two commanders in the East India Company’s service, and the island of Manasvari in Geelvink Bay held for some months by their troops. After the peace of 1815 Dutch surveying expeditions to the west coasts became more numerous. Surveys of the east coasts have been made since the visits of D’Entrecasteaux (1793) and D’Urville (1827-40) by Captains Owen Stanley, Yule, Blackwood, and other English officers, the latest being that of Captain Moresby ; and English missionaries and traders are doing around the Gulf of Papua what the Dutch have done at Geelvink Bay. The islands of Torres Straits, which are the headquarters of a valuable pearl- shelland tripang fishery, have all bcen annexed to Queensland, and practically command the few available channels by which ships can

ass.

Latterly the colonial authorities in Australia, alarmed at the prospect of the annexation by some foreign power of territory so near their shores, and also desirous to prevent the abuses that must soon arise from the influx of convicts or of European adventurers under no control, have urged the home Government to annex the east half of New Guinea.

Authorities.—The principal are Von Rosenberg, Der Malayische Archipel; Miller, Nieuw Guinea, ethnogr. en natuurkundig onderzocht, Amsterdam, 1862; Robidé van der Aa, Reizen naar Nederlandsch Nieuw Guinea, 1879;

Moresby, New Guinea and Polynesia; D'AYbertis, New Guinea; Quart. Rev., July 1877 ; Beccari, Malesia (botanical); Kolff's Voyage, translated by Windsor Earl ; Parliamentary Papers, 1876 and 1883; lecture by Prof. W. H. Flower at the Royal Institution, 31st May 1878; A. B. Meyer, ""'Anthrop. Mitthetl. tiber die Papuas von N. G.," in Jour. Anthrop. Inst., 1877-78 ; papers in Cosmos, 1875-77 ; Trans. of Brit, Assoc, 1883; Proc. R. Geog. Soc., March 1884. Cc. T,

NEW HAMPSHIRE, one of the New England States of the American Union, lies between 70° 37' and 72° 37′ W. long., and between 42° 40' and 45° 18' 23" N. lat., and has an area of 9336 square miles. Its boundaries are partly natural. On the W. it is separated from the State of Vermont by Connecticut river; on the N. from the province of Quebec by the natural ridge of the watershed between the St Lawrence and the streams flowing south to the Atlantic ; on the E. from Maine by a straight line from Quebec to the source of Salmon river, thence by this river to the ocean, and south-easterly through the middle of the Isles of Shoals ; the boundary on the S§.E. is the Atlantic : and that on the 8. is a line 24 miles distant from and parallel to the lower Merrimack, until that river changes its course to due north and south, when the line runs magnetic west to Connecticut river. The general shape of the State is nearly that of a right-angled triangle, having the per- pendicular 180 and the hypothenuse 190 miles long. The greatest width is 100 miles, from Chesterfield to the outer- most of the Isles of Shoals.

Physical Features.—The State lies on the Atlantic slope ee ee ae

2 One of these, Mr Van Hasselt, is the chief authority on the languages and customs of west New Guinea,

of the continent, forming part of the elevated belt bordering upon the ocean whichculminates in three mountain districts, viz., Newfoundland, the White Mountains, and the Black Mountains in North Carolina. It is also situated east of the Blue Ridge and its northerly continuation in the New York highlands and the Green Mountain range, both of which are distinct from the true Appalachians—the latter being west of the great Appalachian

limestone valley, and well-shown in the Catskill, Alleghany, and Cumber-land ridges and plateaus. The Atlantic and White Mountain ranges are comparatively short, consisting of obtusely-pointed summits of gneissic or granitic rocks, either arranged en échelon or scattered in irregular groups. The White Mountains group first becomes noticeable in northern Maine, reaching the height of a mile at Mount Katahdin, and continues at less elevation south-westerly to the New Hampshire line, where it rapidly rises to its culmina- tion in Mount Washington (6293 feet). The part of this mountainous area that lies within New Hampshire extends to about 1400 square miles. It is continued south-westerly, much reduced in elevation, beyond Mount Moosilauke, along the highlands separating the tributaries of the Merri- mack and Connecticut rivers, through New Hampshire and Massachusetts intoConnecticut. The distinctive Montalban elevation is limited on the west and on the south by the Connecticut.

The geological reports published in 1878 show four important topographical features :—(1) the mountainous ridge following the eastern rim of the Connecticut river basin along the longest straight line that could be drawn within the State; (2) the elevated White Mountain tract, just north of the middle of the territory ; (3) the comparatively low country between the two elevated districts just noted and the sea—three-fourths of which, away from the foothills, scarcely exceeds 500 feet above the sea-level; (4) a mountainous district north of the White Mountains, occupying Coos county in New Hamp- shire, Essex county in Vermont, and an indefinite region in Maine near the Quebec line. The average elevation of the land in New Hampshire is estimated to be 1200 feet above the sea. Of this more than one-half is situated below 1000 feet, and about one-sixth exceeds 2000 feet, and is comprised in the third area mentioned above. The average height of the Coos and Essex district will be found to exceed 1500 feet. Mount Washington is the only mountain peak exceeding 6000 feet; and eight others are above 5000 feet (Adams, Jefferson, Clay, two Monroes, Madison, Lafayette, and Lincoln).

Climate, Fauna, Flora.—These elevations have produced a marked effect upon the climate and natural products. The greatest annual precipitation is along the Merrimack river, 44 inches near Manchester and 46 above Franklin. It is only 35 inches near the sea-coast, and 40 inches on the upper

Connecticut. The greatest precipitation is therefore on the seaward side of the long mountainous ridge constituting the backbone of the State. The annual isothermal lines vary from 48° Fahr. at Manchester to 40° in Coos county and 25° upon the summit of Mount Washington.

No less than four faunal areas are recognized, known as the Alleghanian, Canadian, Hudsonian, and Labrador. The first enters New Hampshire from the south, and is limited on the north by the line of 600 feet altitude, which 1s not far from the isothermal line of 45° Fahr., or the winter average of 20° Fahr. and the summer average of 65° Fahr. A few distinctive animals are the red-headed woodpecker, humming bird, bobolink, Baltimore oriole, blue jay, the box and painted turtles, and the rattlesnake. Among plants which are employed to determine the northern limit of this district are the hickory or shell bark,

chestnut, mountain laurel or Kalmia, grape, and cran- berry. A few characteristic animals of the Canadian district are the rose-breasted grosbeak, Canada jay, spruce partridge, crossbill, snowbird, caribou, and Canada lynx ; the absence of reptiles is marked. A few of the trees are spruces, balsam fir, canoe birch, and bush maples. This district, comprising the northernmost county, reaches the height of 4000 feet, or the upper limit of trees. The Hud- son district is a region of dwarfed spruces extending above the Canadian upper limit to the 5000 feet line, and limited to the White Mountains. None of the larger animals which flourish about Hudson’s Bay could be expected in such limited and mountainous peaks, so that the proof of the presence of this fauna is afforded by the plentiful distribu- tion of the butterfly known as Brenthis montinus and the grasshopper Pezotettix glacialis. Owing to the small areas occupied by the Hudson and Labrador floras in the White Mountains, botanists have not yet succeeded in separating the plants peculiar to each. Fifty-three species are referred to them, called the sub-alpine and alpine districts, embracing such genera as Arenaria, Geum, Solidago, Potentilla, Nabalus, Cassiope, Rhododendron, Salix, Saxifraga, Diapensia, Carex, Poa, &c. The Labrador fauna is specially characterized by the abundant presence above the 5000 feet line of the butterfly Oenevs semidea. The presence of these faunal

islands in the midst of the Canadian district is accounted for by the greater coldness of the climate in the glacial period. The whole country was then overspread by the peculiar animals and plants of the Arctic regions. As the climate moderated these organisms migrated both northwards and upwards into the higher districts, where they found the conditions favourable to their existence. Those which ascended the mountainous regions soon became separated from their congeners by the warmer temperature of the lowlands, and are now securely imprisoned in these mountain fastnesses.

New Hampshire was originally nearly covered by a dense forest. In 1876 it was estimated that more than one-fourth of the territory was still covered by trees, not of the original growth, but occupying land that had not been cleared. The trees valued for lumber, growing naturally in the forest, are the white, red, and pitch pines, spruces, hemlock, larch, red and sugar maple, beech, birch, red and white oak, chestnut, elm, hickory, poplar, cherry, &c. The pines have been described by the early settlers as commonly exceeding the height of 200 feet. One that was cut upon the Dartmouth College grounds measured 270 feet in length. es

Se

Geology. —The topography has a less intimate connexion with the geology. The rocks are nearly all crystalline, and show very few peculiarities of sculpturing except the eruptive massive granites. These are more or less conical, like volcanic accumulations of modern times. Examples may be seen in Mount Chocorua, Mount Pequawket, and Mount Moat. At the*base is a coarse porphyritic gneiss, not less than 5000 feet thick. This shows itself prineipally along the Connecticut-Merrimack watershed south of the White Mountains. Next comes a protogene gneiss, saccharoidal and easily crumbling, having the same thickness, and developed most extensively in Cheshire county.

feet thick. Other terranes of related rocks are to be found in Merrimack, Hillsborough, and Rockingham counties. Veins of copper and gold are wrought in the Huronian. Sixth there follows a succession of schists and slates 11,000 feet thick, whose relations are not well established. Scventh isa series of clay slates, aurifer- ous, and 3000 feet thick, referred to the Cambrian. Highth follows a group of mica schists and limestones, known as the Coos group, and the calciferous mica schist, perhaps 7000 or 8000 feet thick. These are claimed as Silurian by some. Ninth, and last, are fossili- ferous beds of undetermined thickness, as much as 1000 feet, in which occur well-defined Pentamerus and Halysites. These show the rock to belong to the Niagara group of the Upper Silurian. The principal localities are at Littleton and Lisbon, at the west base of the White Mountains. The

most natural association of these groups is (1) Laurentian, (2) the Montalban, and (38) Huronian,—all of which are Eozoie, with an aggregate thickness of 40,000 feet. Next would follow the Huronian and indeterminate groups, reaching 23,000 feet, all believed to antedate Paleozoic time. Thirdly there remains the supposed Paleozoic series, 12,000 feet.

hs

I Sy

=

rf

Distribution of the roeks over a large part of New England on a scale of about 100 milestotheinch. For eonvenience they are grouped thus :—(1) granite ; (2) Laurentian of New York, and porphyritie gneiss of New England; (8) the later gneisses—Bethlehem, Lake, and Montalban; (4) Huronian, é&e.; (5) Cambrian and Silurian; (6) Carboniferous ; (7) Triassic; (8) Quaternary.

Few parts of the country display better evidences of the existence of an ice age than New Hampshire. No extensive rock exposures can be found that do not exhibit marks of scarification. Even Mount Washington has been striated, and boulders weighing 90 Tb occur there, which have been brought at least a dozen miles and left 3000 feet higher than their source. The prevailing direction of the striae and transportation of fragments was to the south-east. Local glaciers existed in the decline of the period, leaving well-marked moraines. It was in New Hampshire that the nature of the eskers or kames was first understood in America. A very noted one follows the course of the Connecticut river, from Lyme, N.H., to Windsor, Vt., a distance of 30 miles. The terraces along the Con- necticut, the Merrimack, and other rivers are well shown. Careful measurements indicate that they all slope equally with the descent of the river, and resulted from accumulations of detritus pushed forward when the streams were fed by the waters of the melting ice sheet and stood 200 feet or more higher than at present. .

Minerals occurring in sufficiently large quantities to be the object of mining are gold, silver, copper, zinc, lead, arsenic, tin, iron, bis- muth, manganese, and molybdenum. Articles used for building purposes occurring largely are granite, eoloured porphyries for ornamentation, slate, clays for brick, limestone, and soapstone or steatite. Other useful minerals either obtained directly from the rock or capable of special manufacture are quartz and felspar for glass, mica, plumbago, precious stones, whetstones, copperas, alum, pyrites, titanium, polishing powder, moulding sand, and ochres for paints. There are forty extensive quarries of granite in the State. The stone is very fine grained, of a light grey colour, and is used largely for obelisks in cemetries. The mineral beryl is very

abundant. ring at Grafton.

Crystals weighing 2900 Ib have been described as occur- (C. H. H.)

Population.—The population of New Hampshire in 1880 was 346,991 (170,526 males, 176,465 feinales)—46,294 being of foreign birth. The growth of the population is shown by the following table :—

el i | a Rank in

- eps Gain per cent. Rank in| = eel Gain percent.) Trion, 1790 | 141,885 aps 10 1840 | 284,574 5°6 22 1800 | 183,858 29°5 11 1850 | 317,976 Wey, 22) 1810 | 214,460 16°6 16 1860 | 326,078 2°5 27 1820 | 244,042 Tesje7e 15 1870 | 318,300 —2°3 31 1830 | 269,328 10°3 18 1880 | 346,991 9 31

The decrease in the decade ending with 1870 was due to the effects of the civil war and to emigration to other States. The latter cause greatly checked the growth of the preceding decade. So constant has it been that 128,505 natives of New Hampshire are resident in other parts of the Union. The density of population is 37°17 to the square mile, but the southern part of the State is more thickly inhabited. The tendency of the population is towards the towns. Of the total increase in the last decade (28,691, of whom 58 per cent. were immigrants), nine towns received 20,649, Manchester alone gaining 9094. Canada supplied the largest number of immigrants

(14,979), and Ireland the next (6544). Since 1850 the native popu- lation has decreased 2866. The number of families in 1880 was 80,286, and the number of births 6141, one to 56°5 of the inhabit- ants, and the deaths 5584. The average size of families was 4°32, the smallest average of any State in the Union, though larger than in a few of the new Territories. It is steadily decreasing, having been 4°41 in 1870, 4°72 in 1860, and 5°15 in 1850. The decrease in the size of the family has been accompanied by an increase in the number of divorces. The tendency of the State legislation for a number of years was to facilitate divorces ; between 1860 and 1870 the number increased (one county not reporting) from 90 to 147, and between 1870 and 1878, in the whole State, from 157 to 240. At the present time public sentiment is setting towards greater stringency of legislation, and has already diminished the number of divorces. The number of paupers in 1880 was 2087.

The cities of largest population in 1880 wcre—Manchester, 32,630; Concord, the State capital, 13,843; Nashua, 13,397; Dover, 11,687 ; Portsmouth, 9690; Keene, 6784; Rochester, 5784; Somersworth, 5586.

Manufactwres.—The principal industry of New Hampshire is manufacturing. In 1880 the number of establishments was 3181, and the invested capital $51,112,263, giving employment to 45,811 operatives, The total annual product was valued at $73,978,028. The most important manufactures, mentioned in the order of the value of their products, were those of cotton and woollen goods, boots and shoes, leather, lumber, mixed textiles, and worsted goods. Other valuable manufactures are hosiery and knitted goods, paper, foundry and machine-shop products, flouring and grist-mill pro- ducts, and malt liquors. ‘There is a large annual cut of logs in the northern part of the State. The total horse-power employed in manufacturing was 87,750, of which water furnished 78°81 per cent. and steam 21°19 per cent. Manchester is the chief manufacturing centre, but large mills are built at Dover, Nashua, and Great Falls. The growth of manufactures in New Hampshire has been steady and constant. The first cotton mill was built in1804. By 1826 there were fifty different buildings for the manufacture of cotton, and about half as many for that of wool. Since 1850 the capital invested in manufacturing has increased nearly 300

per cent., the annual value of materials employed 350 per cent., and the value of products 320 per cent.

Agriculture.—The value of the agricultural productions of the State is about one-fifth of the manufactures. In 1879 it was $13,474,330. The large farms are growing at the expense of small ones. In the decade ending 1880, thc average size decreased from 122 to 116 acres. Within that time the farm acreage increased 115,179 acres, but the improved acreage diminished by 26,375 acres. The value of farms and farming implements remained about the same, but there was a general falling off in the quantity and value of farm productions (decrease about $9,000,000, without allowance for change in currency).

Fisheries.—An effort is being made to stock the inland waters of the State with food and game fish. A hatching house is main- tained from which thousands of fry (black bass, Schoodic salmon, carp, brook trout, and other fish) are distributed to the ponds and streams. The sea fisheries are of slight importance.

Railroads. —The first railroad charter was granted in 1835. Since then the growth of railroads has kept pace with the development of the State, the present mileage (1051) being greater in proportion to population and wealth than in the case of any other New England State. The number of persons employed is 2389. The Mount Washington Railway is one of the triumphs of modern engineering. Extending 23 miles from the base to the summit of Mount Washington, it makes an ascent of 3625 feet. Its maximum gradient

is 1980 fect to the mile, and the sharpest curve has a radius of 497 fect. The peculiarity is a central cog-rail into which plays the cog- driver of the engine, while the weight rests upon two lateral rails.

Finance.—The first bank in New Hampshire was established at Portsmouth in 1792. In 1882 there were under a State charter one bank, with a capital of $50,000, and forty-nine national banks under the National Banking Act. Their capital was $6,080,000; circulation, $5,704,691; surplus, $1,102,631; deposits, $4,859,327 loans and discounts, $8,187,442; dividends (1882),

$447,525 (about 7% per cent. on capital). The first savings bank was established in 1828. They now number sixty-five, with deposits of $36,181,186, by 104,482 depositors. In thirty years the depositors have increased by nearly 90,000, and the average deposit from $127 to $372. Every banking company pays annually to the State a tax of 4 per cent. on its actual capital, and the amount thus paid constitutes a ‘literary fund” for the support of schools. All are under the super- vision of two bank commissioners, whose duty it is to inspect the accounts and securities of each bank at least once each year, and who have power to petition the supreme court against any bank which they think unsound. In 1880 the valuation of the State was $122,733, 124 for real estate, and $42,022,057 for personal property. The taxes asscssed by the State were $395,372, and the local taxes amounted to $2,302,268 (about $7°75 per head). The net State debt was $3,561,200, and the local debt $7,162,970, or taken togcther about $31 per head.

Religion and Education.—The largest religious denomination is the Congregationalist, which has 188 churches, 179 ministers, 20,039 members, and 21,948 in its Sabbath schools. The Methodists have 119 churches, 107 pastors and 63 local preachers, 12,100 members and 1862 probationers, and 13,509 Sabbath school scholars. The Baptists have 80 churches, 90 ministers and 7 licentiates, and 8932 members. The Episcopalians have 28 churches, 32 ministers, and 2062 communicants. The Free-will Baptists have an organization, and there are two societies of Shakers. New Hampshire has always fostered education. In earlier colonial times, when it was united with Massachusetts, the samc laws applied to both, and on becoming a distinct province it placed on its statute book the Massachusetts law requiring townships of 50 householders to provide instruction for their children, and those of 100 householders to set up a grammar school. This law, with slight changes designed to render it more effective, remained in force till after the Revolution. The State con- stitution, adopted in 1784, contained a clause, still in force, making it the duty of ‘‘Icgislators and magistrates to cherish the interests of literature and the sciences, and all seminaries and public schools.” In 1789 the school laws were revised, and towns required to raise for school purposes £4 for every 20s. of their several apportionment of the State tax. This requisition has been gradually increased, until now it is $350 for each dollar of the apportionment. In 1805

the towns were authorized to divide into districts, and cach district was directed to maintain aschool. This system, with modifications, is still in force. Towns are now authorized to abolish districts and form central schools, and to grade them when the attendance exceeds fifty. High schools may be established when there are not less than one hundred school children between the ages of six and sixteen. In 1829 the ‘‘literary fund”’ was divided among the towns accord- ing to the apportionment of the State tax for the support of ‘‘common free schools, or for other purposes of education.” To the tax on bank capital is added one on the savings banks deposits of non-residents. In 1881 it was $26,584. The general supervision and control of the educational intcrests of the State are committed to asuperintendent of public instruction appointed by the governor. The immediate charge of all schools is given to local boards of educa- tion or committces, which, within the requirements of the law, have complete authority to engage teachers and fix their compensation, to regulate the studies and discipline of the schools, and to direct their expenditures. Attendance upon the public school or some reputable private day school for at least twelve weeks in a year is required, except in case of sickness, of all children between the ages of eight and fourtcen. Teachers, except graduates of the normal school, are engaged only after cxamination. The State normal school, established in 1870, and supported by an annual appropriation of $5000, confers upon its graduates the right to teach three or five years in the common schools. The number of schools in 1882 was 2644, including 481 graded and 56 high schools. The number of scholars was 64,349, and in private schools 4275. The schools are supported by the literary fund, the tax required by law, with the additional taxes voted by the towns and a few other taxes. The total amount appropriated for schools in 1882 was $584,527 ‘74. There arc also, existing under special charters, 53 academies and seminaries, many of them endowed, and furnishing a preparatory training for college. They have 161 teachers and 3112 pupils. The largest of these is Phillips Academy at Exeter, founded in 1781. Dartmouth College, the only college in the State, was founded in 1769. It has nearly 7000 graduates, among whom are some of the most noted names in American history. With its academic course are connected a scientific department, a department of civil engineer- ing, the New Hampshire Medical College, and the New Hampshire

College of Agriculture and the Mechanic Arts. The faculty has 36 members, and there are 427 students. Its library contains 63,000 volumes.

Government.—The executive department consists of a governor and five councillors elected biennially by a majority vote, or by the general court whicn there is no popular election. In addition to the nsual powers of the executive, the governor and council have the right of pardon, and appoint all judicial officers, the attorney gencral, notaries, coroners, Judges of probate, and general and field officers of the militia. The legislative department consists of a senate of 24 members, elected by districts, and a house of representatives of 231 members, elected by the towns according to population. They are styled the General Court, and meet biennially in June. The judicial department is a supreme court consisting of a chief justice and six associate justices appointed by the governor, and holding office during good behaviour, or till they reach the age of seventy. Law terms are held twice each year at the capital, by the full bench, and by single justices two or four times yearly in each of the ten counties. This court has civil, criminal, and equity jurisdiction. Exceptions on questions of law, taken at the trial terms, are heard at the law terms, and cases not exceeding $100 in value, or affecting the title to real estatc, niay be tried before referees without jury. Commitments for offences are made by justices of the peace and by police courts. Probate courts are held by the judges of probate in the different counties, but there is a right of appeal to the supreme court.

The enrolled militia under the command of the governor numbers 33,288 men, but the active militia, known as the ‘‘ New Hampshire National Guard,” consists of infantry, cavalry, and a battery, and is formed into a brigade of 1208 men. An annual encampment of not less than four days is held in September.

State Institutions.—There are several institutions under State control. The State’s prisou in 1880 had 151 inmates. The number confined in the county jails was 122. The State reform school for ‘*juvenile and female offenders against the laws’’ was opened in 1858, and has received 1087 boys and girls. The asylum for insane, established in 1838, and partly supported by

the State, had in 1880 285 patients (129 men and 156 women). The total number of insane in the State was 1056.

History.—New Hampshire was unknown to the earliest Kuropean explorers of America, who passed its short sea-coast without observa- tion. The first recorded visit of a white man was that of Martin Pring, who in June 1603 sailed with two small ships into the Pis- cataqua. The French discoverer De Champlain visited it in July 1605, and discovered the Isles of Shoals, but in 1614 Captain John Smith made a more careful examination of this and the contiguous coast. The map which he made was presented to Prince Charles of England, who gave to the whole country the name of New England. In November 1620 James I. chartered the Plymouth Company ‘‘for the planting, ruling, ordcring, aud governing of New England,” which was the territory lying between the 34th and 48th parallels of north latitude. On the Ist of August 1622 this company gave a sub-charter to Sir Fernando Gorges and Captain John Mason of all land lying between the Merrimack and Kennebec rivers and a line supposably 60 miles inland. This was called ‘*Maine,” though from another charter covering about the same territory sometimes spoken of as ‘‘ Laconia.” Under this charter settlements were made in 1623 at the places now known as Ports- mouth and Dover, by companies scnt out by Mason and Gorges. These continucd for several years without enlargement, mere fishing and trading posts; and the next settlements, those at Exetcr and Hampton, were not made till 1638 and 1639. In November 1629 Gorges and Mason divided their grant, and Mason obtained from the Plymouth Company, of which he was then a member, a grant of the land between the Merrimack and the Piscataqua for 60 miles inland. To this tract he gave the name of New Hampshire, from the county of Hampshire, in which he had been a resident. The efforts of Mason, his heirs and assigns, to enforce the proprietary rights of this patent gave rise to litigation that lasted more than a century anda half. The settlers disturbed in their possession resisted his claim, opposing to it the riglits of occupancy and a prior deed of a considerable portion of the same land, said to have been obtained of four Indian sagamores in May 1629 by one Wheelwright, a minister expelled from Boston for errors of doctrine. This deed was probably a forgery, but it was made the basis of resistance to Mason’s grant. Cases arising from the conflict of the two deeds were repeatedly brought before the colonial courts and appealed to England. Conflicting decisions,

resisted when adverse to those in possession, delayed settlement till 1746, when a company purchased the Mason claims, and by refraining from the extreme assertion of their claims brought the quarrel nearly to an cnd, but it did not wholly disappear till it was settled by the legislature in 1787. In 1641 the four New Hampshire settlements, fearful of their weakness, voluntarily petitioned for union with Massachusetts. They were

reccived, and with some towns on the Merrimack formed into a county. This union continued till 1680, when the claim which Massachusetts had put forward for jurisdiction over New Hampshire, by the terms of its charter, was denicd by royal authority, and New Hampshire was declared a separate province with a governor of its own. The province ceased to have a special governor when Joseph Dudley was appointed governor of New England in 1685. In 1691, when Massachusetts regained the charter of which it had been deprived, New Hampshire was anxious to unite with it, and did act with it fora time. It did not, however, cease to be a royal province until the Revolution, having governors of its own, or jointly with Massachusetts and all New England. New Hampshire suffered severely in the French and Indian wars, as its settlements were most exposed to the attacks that came from Canada. It furnished 500 men for the siege of Louisbourg in 1745, of whom 150 were paid by Massachusetts. It sent 500 to the attack on Crown Point in 1755, and raised 2600 in the succceding years of the war. The boundaries of New Hampshire, owing to conflicting eharters given in ignorance of the country, were long a matter of dispute. The claim of Massa- chusetts to its whole territory was not settled, and the southern boundary definitively established, till 1740. In 1749 a controversy arose with New York, which claimed as far east as the Connecticut river, while New Hampshire claimed to extend as far west as did Massachusetts. It was determined in favour of New York in 1764, but not till New Hampshire had chartered 138 towus in the disputed territory. After the Revolution many of these towns attcinpted to unite with those on the western border of New Hampshire into a new State. The bitter quarrel that arose and proceeded almost to bloodshed was settled only by the interposition of congress. The settlement of New Hampshire, which had becn retarded by fears of Indian invasions and questions of jurisdiction,

followed very rapidly after the province was quieted, so that by the outbreak of the Revolu- tion it had 80,000 inhabitants. It took a prominent place in the assertion of American liberty. It was represented in the successive continental congresses by two delegates, who in 1776 subseribed the declaration of independence, and in 1787 contributed to the forma- tion of the constitution. Two New Hampshire regiments took part in the battle of Bunker Hill. The battle of Bennington, that turned the scale of the war, was won by New Hampshire and Vermont troops under the command' of General Stark, who bore a commission from New Hampshire. In the whole war New Hamp- shire furnished 12,497 soldicrs. It was the ninth State to adopt the Federal constitution, June 21, 1788, thus sccuring the success of the Union. Its own provisional government, formed on the retirement of the royal governor in 1775, was replaced by a State constitution in 1784. This was thoroughly revised in 1792, and with minor changes continued till 1877, when another though less radical revision was made. In the war of 1812 the State, though divided on the question of the rights of the States and the general Govern- ment, sent its quota of men. More than 2000 took part in the various battles. In the civil war of 1861-65 New Hampshirc earnestly supported the Union cause. It furnished 18 regiments of infantry, 1 of cavalry, 1 light and 1 heavy battery, and 3 companies of sharpshooters, in all 32,750 men, or about 10 per cent. of the population.

The earlier history of New Hampshire is given in Belknap's History of New Hampshire, and illustrated by a series of Provincial and State Papers. Its later

history is found in Sanborn's History of New Hampshire, and various local histories and official reports. (J. K. L.*)

NEWHAVEN (anciently MerEcHING), a seaport of Sussex, is situated on the English Channel near the mouth of the Ouse, and on a branch of the London, Brighton, and South Coast Railway, 56 miles south from London, 64 miles south of Lewes, and 84 east of Brighton. The village, which is distant about half a mile from the sea, is clean and well built, but is little more than a shipping station, although it possesses a small ship- building yard, flour-mills, and a brewery celebrated for its Tipper ale. The church of St Michael, which has a Norman square embattled tower surmounted by a

spire, was restored in 1854. ‘The cliffs in the neighbourhood of the port are about 200 feet in height, and Castle Hill, formerly a military encampment, is very strongly fortified. A harbour was first granted to Newhaven in 1713, and during the early part of the 18th century it possessed a large shipping trade. This afterwards declined, but within the last forty years has again revived, and it is now one of the principal points of communication between England and France. The roadstead is one of the finest on the whole coast of England. The extensive additions being made to the dock accommodation are expected to give a great impetus to the trade of the port. The

ny 50

394

limits of the port after January 1, 1882, are defined by the Customs Consolidated Act of 1876. The total number of vessels in the foreign and colonial trade in 1882 was—entered 901 of 204,106 tons, cleared 881 of 197,327 tons. In the same year the vessels engaged in the coasting trade were—entered 224 of 36,309 tons, cleared 224 of 35,929 tons. Steamers ply daily to and from Dieppe in connexion with the Western Railway of France. With France there is alsoa large traffic in wines, spirits, silk, and general provisions. The coasting trade consists chiefly of imports of coal and provisions, the exports being principally timber for shipbuilding and flint for the Staffordshire potteries. The population of New- haven (area 906 acres land and 184 acres water and foreshore), 2549 in 1871, had increased in 1881 to 4009.

NEW HAVEN, a city and town of New Haven county, Connecticut, U.S., in 41° 19’ 28” N. lat. and 72° 55’ 19” W. long. (local time 16 minutes before that of Washington), is widely known as the seat of Yale College. The town includes the city and two outlying suburbs— Westville and Fair Haven East. The city occupies an alluvial plain, from 3 to 4 miles in breadth, at the head of New Haven harbour, which is an indentation of the northern shore of Long Island Sound, extending inland about 4 miles, and formed by the confluence of three small rivers

Plan of New Haven.

1. Yale College. | 2, City-Hall. | 3. City Market.

flowing through the township ; the plain is partly enclosed on the east and west by two prominent trap rocks, with precipitous faces towards the city, respectively 360 and 400 feet in height. The mean annual temperature is 49° Fahr. ; and the city ranks among the healthiest in the United States, It is 74 miles north-east from New York, with which it is connected by rail, as well as by daily steamboats ; it has communication by three railway lines with Boston, 120 miles to the north-east, and two other railways have their termini here.

The central and older portion of the city is laid out in regular squares, surrounding a public green of 16 acres, on which stand the three oldest churches and a building formerly used as a State-house; the abundance and beauty of the elms planted about this square and along many of the streets has caused the place to be familiarly known as the “Elm City.” On the squares bordering upon this central park are the interesting grounds and buildings of Yale College, the city-hall and county court-house, the post-office and custom-house, and several churches,

NEW—NEW

The college buildings include six dormitories (accommoda- ting about 400) for the undergraduate academical depart- ment, which contains 620 students, under 36 instructors ; and there are thirteen buildings for recitation rooms, labora- tories, museums, library, &c. The handsome buildings of

‘the theological department are in the immediate vicinity.

Other public buildings are—the general hospital and training school for nurses, an armoury, the orphan asylum, the almshouse, the county prison, the halls of the Sheffield Scientific School, the college observatory, and the Connecticut Agricultural Experiment Station. The finest private residences are in the section of the city north of the central square. There are ten smaller squares within the town limits, and two private parks, of 55 and 30 acres respectively, the smaller being the college athletic grounds. A beautiful park of 352 acres (partly in an adjoining town) was opened in 1881; it lies 2 miles to the north-east of the city green. The public buildings

include sixty-one places of worship, of which nineteen belong to the Congregationalists, the only denomination in the town for a century after its settlement ; twelve to the Methodists, first organized here in 1795; eleven to the Protestant Episcopal Church, first organized about 1736 ; seven to the Baptists, who formed a church here in 1816 ; and seven to the Roman Catholics, whose first church was erected in 1834. There are thirty-six public schools ; the expenditure for their maintenance was $368,000 in 1882-83. Twenty-nine schoolhouses owned by the town, with their furniture and grounds, represent an outlay of about $675,000. There are also about twenty private schools, the oldest being the Hopkins Grammar School, founded in 1660.

The harbour, which originally determined the site of the city, and has always been a large factor in its prosperity, is large and safe, though shallow, and is under improvement by the construc- tion of a costly breakwater. Long Wharf, begun in 1682, is 3480 feet in length, the longest pier in the United States. Natural oyster-beds formerly abounded, in the harbour and its tributary streams; and extensive beds are still maintained by planting, which give large returns, and make New Haven the chief centre of the important oyster trade of Connecticut. The harbour is still more valuable in its relation to the extensive manufacturing industries of the vicinity. Within a radius of 20 miles not less than $50,000,000 is employed in the manufacture of hardware, carriages, arms, and wire. Tor this New Haven is the commercial centre, and through its port there annually passes merchandise (largely coal and iron) valued at $175,000,000. The foreign trade is chiefly with the West India Islands and Demerara, and its pro- sperity dates from the latter part of the 18th century. The exports in the thirty-six vessels employed in this branch of trade in 1882 (breadstuffs and live stock) were valued at $3,150,000, the imports (sugar and molasses) at $6,281,000; it should, how- ever, be noted that three-fourths of these imports and exports enter and leave the port of New York, although the capital and management of the trade remain in New Haven. ‘The estimated total value of foreign importations received (in 84 vessels of 18,126 tons) at the port in the year ending June’ 1883 was $1,155,883, the chief articles being sugar.and molasses, salt from the West Indies and Spain (about $100,000), and paper-rags from Alexandria. The value of the foreign exports for the same period, in 42 vessels of 7228 tons, was $670,046, the

largest item being the shipments of the Winchester Repeating Arms Company. For the same year the estimated value of cargoes received from domestic ports (in 2200 steam vessels and 4125 sailing vessels and barges) was $93,963,900. Of these receipts the largest items were—iron, valued at $2,000,000; lumber, $3,000,000, twice as much more being received by railroad; and coal (a rapidly increasing business of recent growth), $3,750,000. The value of shipments to domestic ports was $74,812,000.

In the production of carriages and carriage trimmings, New Haven, which is the chief seat of the trade in New England, employs a capital of perhaps 14 millions dollars; nearly 2000 workmen receive annual wages of about $750,000; and the esti- mated value of the yearly product is $2,240,000. Another import- ant industry is represented by the Winchester Repeating Arms Company, which, with a capital of $1,000,000, employs 1200 hands, and does a business in sporting guns and ammunition of about $2,500,000 a year. Another noticeable manufacture is that of superior blotting paper from cotton waste; blotting paper was made here for the first time in America in 1856. The other

principal manufactures are locks, rubber, clocks, organs, corsets, fish-lines, and paper boxes. ‘There are nine banks of deposit, with an ageregate capital of $4,664,000,.and a circulation of $3,038,940; also three savings banks, with deposits of about $9,000,000. About $225,000 is annually paid in New Haven in fire insurance premiums, for the protection of property valued at upwards of

$25,000,000.

New Haven (Indian name Quinnipiac, meaning ‘‘ long-water land”) was settled in 1638 by nearly three hundred English emi- grants of more than the average wealth and business ability, led by Johu Davenportand Theophilus Eaton, with the design of found- ing a commercial colony to be governed by the laws of the Bible. Davenport, an Oxford graduate, and for fourteen yearsa minister in London, became the pastor of the New Haven church; and Eaton, a successful London merchant, was the first governor of the colony which grew up about the town. The colony (of the same name)

included five other towns, and remained independent until merged, by a charter of Charles 1}. in 1662, in the older colony of Connecti- cut; this result was largely due to the waning prosperity of New Haven (in contrast with Connecticut), and to the prejudice against its more rigidly Puritan tone, as shown, for instance, in its code of laws, and in such ineidents as the shelter given to Whalley and Goffe, two of the regicide judges. In recognition of its former standing, the sessions of the legislature were held alternately here and in Jkartford (the original capital of Connecticut) from 1701 to 1874, From the original territory of the town (about 13 by 18 miles) ten new towns have been wholly or partly taken. New Haven was from the beginning distinguished for its care of public education,—a free school being ordered to be set up as early as 1641, aud the establishment of a college being contemplated in 1648. In 1716 Yale College was removed from Saybrook to New Haven, which had then somewhat under a thousand inhabitants. A period of quiet and regular growth ensued. In 1754 a printing press was set up, and in 1755 the first newspaper published in Con- necticut appeared here. There are now six daily and six weekly papers, besides several college periodicals, The American Journal of Science, founded in 1818 by Professor Silliman, and another review (The New Englander). The Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences, incorporated in 1799, and the American Oriental Soeiety, have their libraries here, and publish valuable trans- actions. In the American Revolution the town favoured resistance to the British Government, and in 1779 was invaded by a detach- ment of about 3000 British troops, under General Tyron. In 1784 New Haven received a city charter (the earliest in the State), the territory incorporated having then a population of about 3350. With the close of the Revolutionary War commerce revived and expanded ; aud after the war of 1812 manufactures were intro- duced.

The population nuinbered in 1790, 4510; in 1800, 5157; in 1810, 6967; in 1820, 8327; in 1830, 10,678; in 1840, 14,396; in 1850, 22,529; in 1860, 39,267; in 1870, 50,840; and in 1880, 62,882, of whom 15,668 were born in foreign countries. The city was in 1880 the third place (next to Boston and Providence) in size in New England, and the twenty-sixth in the United States. Since 1880 new territory has been annexed, and the population is estimated in 1883 at nearly 74,000. The real and personal estate of the inhabitants was in 1882 valucd at $48,335,632 (real estate 34 millions,

personalty 14 millions). The net indebtedness of the city (principally contracted in building sewers) was $631,907 at the close of 1882; there was also a debt contracted by the town government of $941,637. The amount appropriated to meet the city expenses for 1883 was $559,435. The city is divided into twelve wards, and is governed by a mayor and twenty-four alder- men (twelve elected yearly) and thirty-six councilmen. The town affairs are controlled by a separate board of seven select men.

For the history of the town see Bacon, Thirteen Historical Discourses, 1839 ;

Atwater, History of the Colony of New Haven, 1881; Papers of the New Haven Colony Historical Society, 3 vols., 1865-82,

NEW HEBRIDES anp SANTA CRUZ. These islands form part of the long chain of groups in the west Pacific known as MELANESIA (q.v.), having the Solomon Islands about 200 miles west and north-west of their northern and New Caledonia at the same distance west of their southern extremity. They extend for about 700 miles between 9° 45’ and 20° 16’ S. lat., and between 165° 40’ and 170° 30’ E. long.,—the Santa Cruz group lying about 100 miles north of the New Hebrides. Excepting the small Torres group in the North New Hebrides, and some other small islands north of Santa Cruz which are all perched on reefs, but without lagoons, all the islands are of volcanic formation, the larger ones lying on both sides of the line of volcanic activity. The largest of them, being thought by its discoverer, Quiros (1606), to be the long-

sought Terra Australis, was named by him Australia del Espiritu Santo. It is 75 by 40 miles; its peaks and mountains have a fine appearance from the sea. Pottery is made here as in Fiji and New Caledonia, the manu- facture being suggested, it is said, by the form and material of the hornet’s nest (Humenes sxanthura). South-east from Espiritu Santo lie Mallicolo (56 by 20 miles), with a fine harbour, and Ambrym (22 by 17 miles), very beautiful, with a great volcano, 2800 feet ; south of this Lopevi, a perfect volcanic cone, also active, rises to 5000 feet. Farther south are Vaté or Sandwich Island (30 by 15 miles), with the very fine harbour of Havannah;

Erromango (30 by 22 iniles; 3000 feet), where sandalwood is still found; Tanna (18 by 10 niiles), contain- ing Yasowa, the largest volcano of the group ; and Aneiteum, the most southerly (2788 feet). Sulphur from the volcanoes is exported, Santa Cruz or Nitendi Island was the scene of Mendaiia's ill-fated attempt in 1595 to found a colony ; and on Vanikoro, south of Santa Cruz, La Pérouse's expedi- tion was lost (1788). Except in the two localities above mentioned, and at Aneiteum, the coasts are almost free from reefs (the subterranean heat being probably fatal to zoophyte life), and the shores rise abruptly from deep water, the hills being densely wooded, and the scenery and vegetation singularly varied and beautiful. The trees— Casuarina, candle nut (Aleurites triloba), kaurie pine (on Tanna), various species of Jicus, Myrtacex, and many others—are magnificent ; the cocoa-nut is not confined to the coast, but grows high up the valleys on the hill-sides, Beautiful crotons and draczenas abound. Besides the breadfruit, sago-palm, banana, sugar, yam, taro, arrowroot, and several forest fruits, the orange, pine-apple, and other imported species flourish; and European vegetables are exported to Sydney. The fibres of various Urticex and Malvacex are used.

No land mammals are known except the rat and Pteropidx. Birds (species) are less numerous than in the Solomon Islands. Pigeons, parrots, ducks, and swallows are common, and a AMegapodius is found. Of fish more than one hundred kinds are known, mostly inferior as food, and some poisonous. Whales and béche-de-mer abound and are fished for. There are two kinds of serpents (harmless), three or four lizards, and two turtles ; locusts, grasshoppers, butterflies, and hornets are numerous.

The population is perhaps 50,000. Isolated Polynesian com- munities occur on the smaller islands ; and on Vate—and perhaps also on Santa Cruz and Vanua Lavu—there is an infusion of Poly- nesian blood, producing a taller, fairer, and less savage population. The people, however, vary on every island. At Aneiteum they are all Christians, and this influence predominates in the neighbouring southern islands of the group; on Vaté and Tanna, too, there are European factories (cotton and copra), but the population is dwindling rapidly. Motu, in the Santa Cruz group, was the late Bishop Patteson's principal island station. The general type is an ugly one: below the middle height, fairer than the typical Papuan, with low receding

foreheads, broad faces, and flat noses. They wear nose- and ear-rings and bracelets of shells, and frequently nothing clse. The men, but not the women, drink kava. They are con- stantly fighting ; their weapons are bows and arrows, often beauti- fully designed, clubs of elaborate patterns, spears, and latterly muskets. ‘heir houses are either the round huts described by Mendafia three hundred years ago, or rectangular with pitched roofs resting on three parallel rows of posts ; in Vaté the reception houses are adorned with festoons of bones and shells. In Aurora the roof is set directly on the ground, with a square doorway 2 feet high in a deep gable at the end. ‘The villages are scrupulously clean and neat, and ornamented with flowering shrubs, crotons, and draceenas. ; ; ;

In character the pcople differ in different islands, but much of their inhospitality and savagery, disastrously shown in the murder of several missionaries, Bishop Patteson, and Captain Goodenough, is traced to the misconduct and cruelty of traders and labour agents, or to revenge for the introduction of epidemic diseases. In some islands there is the objection also found among Malays to mention their names, or as in Australia the name of the mother-, sister-, and daughter-in-law. They are inveterate cannibals, with a few excep-

Plate VILL.

O96

tions, as at Santa Cruz and Banks’s Islands (North New Hecbridcs). They believe much in sorceries and omens ; but prayer and offerings (usually of shell moncy?) arc addressed mainly to the spirits of the (recently) dead, and there is another class of spirits, called Vui, who are appealed to when incorporate in certain stones or animals; of one or two such the divinity is recognized generally. By the villages a space shadowed by a great banyan tree is often set apart for dances and public meetings. A certain sacredness attaches also sometimes to the Caswarina and the Cycas. An important institu- tion is the club-house, in which there are various grades, whereon a man’s rank and influence mainly depend, his grade being recog- nized cven if he goes to another island where his language is wnin- telligible. In like manner a division into two great exogamous groups prevails, at all events throughout the northern islands. It would therefore seem that the present

diversity of languages in the group must be of relatively recent origin, These languages or dialects are numerous, and mutually unintelligible, but alike as to grammatical construction, and belonging to the Melanesian class.

Principal Authorities —Lieut. A. H. Markham, R.N., in Koy. Geog. Soc. Jour., 1872; Brenehley, Cruise of the Curacoa; Rev. R. H. Codrington, "On Religious Heliefs and Practices in Melanesia," in Jour. Anthrop. Inst., vol. x.; Walter Coote, Wanderings South and East. (Cae)

NEW IRELAND. See New Brirain.

NEW JERSEY. The State of New Jersey, one of the original colonies which formed the United States of America, lies between 38° 55' 39°65 and 41° 21' 19" N. lat., and 73° 53' 51" and 75° 33' 3" W. long,, and is bounded on the E. by the Hudson river, Staten Island Sound, Raritan Bay, and the Atlantic Ocean, on the S. by Delaware Bay, on the W. by the Delaware river, and on the N. by the State of. New York, their common boundary being a straight line from the west bank of the Hudson river in latitude 40° N. toa point on the north bank of the Neversink river at its junction with the Delaware. The extreme length is 1672 miles, and the width ranges from 59 to 32 miles; and the State has an area of 7576 square miles, and is divided into 21 counties and 223 townships.

Physical Features.—New Jersey lies entirely on the Atlantic slope of the United States. In the north and north-west it is traversed by the Appalachian chain; the Red Sandstone belt, intersected by trap dykes, and extend- ing from Massachusetts to South Carolina, occupies the central portion ; and the lower half of the State is a part of the level sandy tract, covered with pine woods, which borders the Atlantic from New York to Florida.

The ridges of the Appalachian chain in New Jersey may be grouped in two main ranges—the Blue or Kittatinny Mountains and the Highland range. The first of these is an almost unbroken ridge from the New York State line to the Delaware Water Gap, and is the highest ground in the State, being at the Water Gap 1479 feet above the sea, and at High Point, near the New York line, 1800 feet high. Its level crest is clothed with forests, but the slopes are to a great extent cultivated. The Highland range, on the other hand, consists of a number of detached ridges, the highest of which is 1488

feet above the sea. These vary greatly in their surfaces ; many admit of culti- vation to the summit, while others are so covered with loose stones or bare rock that cultivation is impossible, The mineral wealth of the range is considerable.

The Red Sandstone central region is traversed by a number of irregularly distributed trap dykes, which are rough and wooded, and rise in the midst of a rich and productive district. These vary much in elevation, the highest being 868 feet. In southern New Jersey there are no rocky emin- ences or elevations worthy of the name of mountains. Its rounded hills are all earthy, and the results of denudation or erosion; the most elevated—the Navesink highlands— are about 400 feet high.

The southern half of the State is a great plain, sloping

gently from its centre towards the Atlantic and the = ee eee

1 ‘ : : , The Cyprea moneta is used here, as in New Caledonia, asa medium of exchange,

NEW—NEW

Delaware, and has been eroded in the Drift period.2 It contains tracts of gravelly loam largely used for market gardens and vineyards. Extensive tidal marshes border the Atlantic and Delaware Bay, to the extent of nearly 300,000 acres. The Delaware river and bay receive all streams flowing from the western half of the State; the Passaic and Raritan are the most considerable rivers entirely within New Jersey. In the north-western part are many beautiful lakes abounding with fish ; the largest is Lake Hopatcong, 53 miles long by 44 to 1} miles wide.

Geology and Minerals.—N early all the geological periods, except the Coal-measures, are represented in the State. It may be stated in a general way that all the stratified formations cross the State from north-east to south-west; that the Highland range, to which they run parallel, is made up of the oldest rocks in the State; that almost all of the Palseozoic rocks, which are next in order, lie on the north-west side of these mountains; that the Triassic rocks lie next to’the mountains on the south-east ; and that the

Tertiary and recent formations are then found in succession towards the south-east. The Azoic rocks occur mainly in the Highland range, and here consist chiefly of syenitic gneiss and white crystalline limestone, the former greatly predominating. This limestone is found chiefly on the north-west border of the gneiss, interstratified with and conformable to it. Magnetic iron ore abounds here, and occurs in beds or veins interposed between the strata of the gneiss. New mines are constantly being discovered, and the supply seems inexhaustible. Graphite is also found and worked. Valuable deposits of zine ore occur in the crystalline limestone, and large quantities of excel- lent lime are made from this rock.4 The Potsdam lime- stone is found in comparatively small quantities, always near the borders of the gneiss and limestone. Magnesian limestone, found between the Highland range and Kitta- tinny Mountains, is extensively used for making lime, and contains hematite iron ore. Hudson River slate (used for roofing and flagging) exists most largely on the south-east slope of the Kittatinny Mountains. Water lime and Lower Helderberg limestone, which produce the Rosendale cements, are found in quantity along the north-west foot of the Kittatinny. Red sandstones and shales underlie the region immediately south-east of the Highland range, extending from the Hudson to the Delaware. They are in regular layers, dipping gently to the north- west, and form an excellent building material. Copper occurs in this formation, and was worked at an early period. To the south-east of the Sandstone formation follow plastic and fire clays, due to the decomposition of a ridge of granite which once formed the eastern edge of the Red Sandstone valley ; these furnish clays of the purest and most refractory kind, suitable for fire-brick ; very pure quartz sand is also found here, to mix with the clay, and kaolin, although not yet of the best quality.6 The greensand, marl, and sand beds occupy a belt some 90 miles long extending from Sandy Hook to the Delaware near

? The glacial action of the Drift period is well marked in the State by strize and by boulders as distant as 100 miles from their original position. In Middlesex county there is a boulder of 250 tons uearly 30 miles from its parent rock, another in West Orange. The western boundary of the great terminal or frontal moraine of the glacial Drift period extends across the State in a gencral north-north-west course from the mouth of the Raritan at Perth Amboy to Morristown, thence northerly to Denville, where the

direction changes to the west as far as the Musconetcong valley, where it again turns and bears west- south-west to the Delaware at Belvidere.

3 932,762 tons were obtained in 1882.

4 40,138 tons were mined in 1882.

5 In 1882 more than 350,000 tons of these clays were worked, from which 150,000,000 red bricks were made, a large number of porous bricks, 80 per cent. of the architectural terra cotta made in the United States, and a very large amount of pottery and stoneware.

NEW JERSEY

Salem. This formation consists of three distinct beds of greensand, each from 12 to 25 feet thick, separated by beds of sand. The marl is clearly of marine origin, con- taining sea shells, bits of coral, sharks' teeth, saurian bones, &e., and makes a good manure. Glassmakers' sand is worked in the southern part of the State! Along the shore is an elevation of only 5 to 10 feet above the sea- level, having good alluvial soil, which must within a com- paratively recent period have been beneath the sea, Since the first settlement of the country, however, the shore has washed away, and there is good reason to believe that a very gradual subsidence is now taking place.? The entire sea-coast is rapidly becoming a continuous line of summer resorts, among which may be enumerated Long Branch, Sea Bright, Spring Lake, and Asbury Park in the northern portion, Atlantic City in the centre, and Cape May in the south. Some of these places, as Atlantic City, are fre- quented even during the winter months.

Commerce and Industry.—Although only the thirty-fifth among the thirty-eight States in area, it is the nineteenth in population, the eighth in the value of property, and twenty-fifth in value of agricultural products, the sixth in manufacturing and mechanical industries, while in some industries, as silk, pottery, and glass, it far exceeds any other State. The output of the non-precious minerals places it seventh in the list of States, it being the fourth among the iron-producing States, and first as to zine ore. It has 1869 miles of railways, or 1 mile to every 4°25 square miles of area, exceeded in this by only one State. The average value of farming lands is considerably

above that of any other State. In 1880 the total number of farms was 34,307, averaging 85 acres, or a total of 2,929,773 acres of farm lands, of whieh 24°4 per cent. were unim- proved. The value of farm lands was $190,895,8383; farming imple- ments and machinery, $6,921,085; live stock, $14,861,412; all farm products, $29,650,756. Among the principal products were—Indian corn, 11,150,705 bushels ; oats, 3,710,573; rye, 949,064 ; wheat, 1,901,739 ; hay, 518,990 tons ; Irish potatoes, 3,563,793 bushels ; sweet potatoes, 2,086,731 bushels ; 86,940 horses ; 9267 mules and asses ; 152,078 milch cows ; 71,808 other cattle; 117,020 sheep ; 219,069 swine ; 9,518,835 Ib butter ; 15,472,783 gallons milk.

Omitting fishery products, gas, petroleum, refining, mining, and quarrying, the following table gives the general condition of the manufacturing interests of the State in the years mentioned :—

No. of Establish- ments,

: Hands Capital. Employed.

Cost of Material.

Wages Paid. Products. $9,364,740 | $22,011,871 | $39.85) 256 16,277,337] 41,429,100 | 76,306,104 32,648,409 | 103,415,245 | 169,237,732 46,083,045} 165,280,179 | 254,375,236 |

4,207 4173 6,636 7,128

$22,293,258 40,521,048 79,606,719 106,226,038

37,830 56,027 75,052 126,038

Among the most important interests for 1880 are those given in the following table:—

2 a

S ry =| co Kind of Industry, | = E Capital. 5 ae — Material. | Products.

eels aan Anthracitefurnaces.| 16 [$6,825,000 938 | $340,035 |$2,341,560 [$3,580,664 Boots and shoes….. 398 1,153,390 | 3,757 | 1,422,681 | 3,069,894 | 5,262,671 Breweries…...00.-+ 48 | 4,250,000} 1,095] 662,886 | 3,179,883 | 5,798,330 Cotton goods,....., 24 | 3,961,145 | 4,836 | 1,309,997 | 1,284,819 | 5,039,519 Drugsandchemicals; 41 | 8,830,750} 1,272} 598,742 | 3,528,204 | 4,993,965

Foundry & machine

shop products….. 188 | 7,481,421 | 8,205 | 3,432,453 | 6,188,852 |11,282,748 Hats and caps…..... 79 | 1,343,900 | 5.567 | 2,113,581 | 2,103,082 } 6,152,447 lron and steel…..... 66 | 9,741,216 | 5,544 | 2,109,740 | 7,564,205 111,837,846 Jewcllery eee} 68 | 2,555,899 | 2,234 |:1,114,946 | 1,967,054 | 4,079,677 Leather 111 | 3,793,796 | 2,688 | 1,479,296 |12,353,017 |15,475,222 Paper mills….. 32 | 1,830,500] 886] 272,936 | 1,286,182 | 2,015,569 Rubber goods…....| 20 1,790,200 | 2,548] 766,523 ; 2,029,415 | 5,212,695 Sewing machines… 8 | 1,152,755 | 3,311| 1,519,947 | 1,484,902 | 4,640,852 Silk and silk goods..| 106 | 6,952,325 |12,549 | 4,177,745 | 9,678,536 {17,122,236 Stone &earthenware| 49 2,057,200 | 3,180} 1,101,511 | 1,030,598 | 2,598,757 Sugar and molasses.| 4 | 2,110,000 697| 476,216)20,794,961 |22,841,258 Woollen goods,.....| 27 | 2,530,125] 3,363) 996,384 | 3,162,955 | 4,984,007

Population.—The population of the State was 211,149 in 1800, 277,426 in 1820, 373,306 in 1840, 672,035 in 1860, 906,096 in pe a a ll ee ae ae i 2

1 Tn the year ending June 1880 27,495 tons were mined, and in that year there were in operation in the State 55 furnaees, eontaining 364 pots, with 3501 work-people, and a produet of $2,810,000; window glass, green glass, and glassware are made. One-third of the produet of green glass in the United States is made by the Jersey works.

- The United States Coast Survey and the New Jersey Geological Survey are engaged on observations to settle this question,

O07

1870, and 1,131,116 in 1880. The census of 1880 showed 559,922 males and 571,194 females, 1,992,017 white, 38,853 coloured, 172 Chinese, and 74 Indians. The inhabitants of foreign birth numbered 221,700. To cvery square mile of area there were 151°73 inhabi- tants, the State being the third in the Union in respect of density of population.

The largest cities, with population in 1880, are—Ncwark, 186,508; Jersey City, 120,722; Paterson, 51,031; Camden, 41,659; Hoboken, 30,999 ; Trenton (the State capital), 29,910 ; Elizabeth, 28,229; New Brunswick, 17,166 ; Orange, 138,207.

Government.—The executive power is vested in a governor elected by the people for a term of three years ; no one can serve in this capacity two successive terms. The lcgislative power is in the legislature, composed of a scnate and general assembly mect- ing on the second Tuesday of January cach year at Trenton, the capital of the State. A scnator is elected for threc years by each of the twenty-one counties, one-third of the whole number being elected each ycar. The assembly consists of not more than sixty members, clectcd for one year, and apportioned among the counties as nearly as may be according to the number of their inhabitants, with the condition, however, that each county shall at all times be entitled to one member. The principal officers of the Statc are a secretary of state, attorney-general, adjutant-general, and quarter- master-gencral, all appointed by the governor and confirmed by the senate, and a treasurcr and comptroller appointed by the legis- lature in joint meeting. All judges and prosecutors of the pleas are appointed by the governor and confirmed by the senate ; the election system for the judiciary has not yet reached New Jersey.

The judicial power is vested in (1) a court of errors and appeals in the last resort, consisting of the chancellor, the justiccs of the supreme court, and six judges of the court of errors; (2) a court for the trial of impeachments, consisting of the senate; (3) a court of chancery, consisting of the chancellor and two vice- chancellors; (4) a supreme court, consisting of the chief justice and eight associate justices; (5) circuit courts, held in every county by the justices of the supreme court ; (6) an inferior court of the common pleas organized in cach county, and consisting of three judges. In some of the sparsely settled counties the inferior courts are presided over by justices

of the supreme court; in the other counties one of the three judges is a law judge and presides. The court of pardon consists of the governor, the chancellor, and the six lay judges of the court of errors ; a majority of this court, of whom the governor must be one, can remit fines and forfeitures, and grant pardons, after conviction in all cases except impeachnients.

State Institutions.—There are two lunatic asylums,—one near Trenton containing more than 600 patients, the other near Morris- town capable of accommodating 800; the latter is probably unsnr- passed by any similar institution; there are also seven county asylums containing 746 paticnts. An institution for the deaf and dumb, to contain 125 pupils, has been recently established at Trenton; the blind and feeble-minded are placed in suitable establishments in neighbouring States. The home for disabled soldiers, at Newark, accommodates nearly 400 men. The State prison at Trenton contains some 800 convicts, a large part of whom are employed in contract labour to an extent which pays about 54 per cent. of the cost of the institution. A rcformatory school for boys, near Jamesburg, contains about 325 juvenile delinqnents. An industrial schvol for girls, near Trenton, has 30 inmates. The board of health is steadily gaining in importance, and has accomplished much good in spreading uscful information, collecting important vital and health statistics, and investigating matters affecting the public health. The labour bureau has done good service in collecting statistics affecting the questions of labour and capital, in bringing about a better understanding betwecn the two, and in indicating new and profitable avenues for industry. The geological survey, of which the geodetic and topographical surveys have neccssarily formed part, now approaching its close, is one of the most uscful of the State institutions.

Education.—The Agricultural College, attached to Rutgers College at New Brunswick, is supported by the proceeds of certain public lands given by the United States to the State for that purpose. In connexion with this are the college farm and the agricultnral experiment stations, which are doing admirable work in systematic and carefully conducted expcriments (under the chicf of the geological survey) with various fertilizers, and in testing various soils, crops, and methods of agriculture. The public seliools are mainly supported by a State tax of $4 for each child between five and eighteen years of age, amounting in 1882 to $1,322,740, supplemented by

an annual appropriation of $100,000 from the school fund, which latter now amounts to morc than $3,375,000, and is rapidly increasing. Small additional special taxes are also levied in some of the school districts. A normal school has been in successful operation at Trenton for several years, and has nearly 250 pupils. The eollege of New Jersey at Princeton, and its sister theological seminary, although not State institutions, occupy placcs in the very front rank of Amcrican schools of learning.

Finance.—The only State debt is that known as the war debt, amounting at present to less than $1,700,000, and paid off at the rate of $100,000 per annum. The sinking fund for the redemption of this debt is valued at something more than $1,100,000. Inde- pendently of the general State school tax the receipts and expendi- tures for 1882 were $1,104,303°75, distributed as follows:—interest on debt, $90,000; charitable and reformatory, $269,793°19 ; courts, crimes, &c., $274,025 °82 ; State government, $158,171°04; scien- tific, sanitary, &c., $47,880°49 ; military, $70,692°22 ; educational, $33,983°61 ; publication, $105,225°47 ; miscellaneous, $54,531°91. It will thus be seen that the State expended for educational pur- poses $1,356,723°61, as against $1,070,320‘14 for other purposes.

History. —The first settlement within the present State was made in 1617 by the Dutch at Bergen opposite New York. Subsequently Cornelius May, who discovered the Delaware in 1628, built a fort on its banks opposite Philadelphia. During the early colonial period the region was the scene of many petty struggles arising out of the rival efforts of the Dutch, Swedes, and English to establish trading posts and settlements on the river. ‘The Indians among whom these early settlers were thrown were generally divided into small tribes; but in the valley of the upper Delaware were the principal and most populous seats of the Leni Lenape—known by the English as the Delawares, a name still retained by the remnants of this most interesting and once powerful tribe in their new homes west of the Mississippi. On the whole the early intercourse between the whites and Indians was peaceful, but there were occasional collisions, some of a serious nature, too often brought about by the rapacity and bad faith of the

whites. As a rule the title to the Indian lands was purchased, and after the province fell into the hands of the English the gencral policy pursued was one of humanity and good faith. At the time of the English accession it is estimated that the Indians in New Jersey numbered about 2000.

When Charles IT. wrested their North American possessions from the Dutch—in fact before this was accomplished—he granted them in bulk to his brother the duke of York, who in turn granted what is now New Jersey to Lord John Berkeley and Sir George Carteret, the conveyance (June 23, 1664) providing that 'the said tract of land is to be called Nova Cesarea, or New Jcrsey."! The royal grant was of the proprietary character, that is, it not only con- veyed the absolute estate and title to the land, but also the power to govern and rule, and therefore to establish such laws as 'might be thought necessary, provided they were not contrary to but, as near as conveniently might be, agreeable to the laws, statutes, and government of the realm of England." As all these rights and powers were assignable, the duke transferred to Berkeley.and Carteret, not only the lands, but also the power to govern; and they in turn possessed, and finally exercised, the power to assign to others both land and power to govern.

The first general assembly met at Elizabeth, May 26, 1668; another session was held during the same year, but none other for seven years thereafter. In 1672 New Amsterdam and New J ersey Were reconquered by the Dutch, but early in 1673 they reverted to England. | Doubts arising as to the effect of the reconquest upon the validity of the original grant, the duke of York obtained a new grant from the king, and renewed his own to Berkeley and Carteret. Prior to this renewal the two proprietors had agreed to a division of their interests, and in the new grant the portion assigned to Carteret was the region east of a line drawn from

' In compliment to Sir George Cartere against the Long Hr , g t, who had defended the Isle of Jersey

NEW JERSEY

Barnegat Creek to the Rancocus; to Berkeley was assigned the territory west of that linc. In 1676, however, the line of separation was changed by the owners, so that it extended from Little Egg Harbour to a point on the

Delaware in 40° N. lat.; this remained thereafter the boundary between Kast and West Jersey.

Immediately aftcr the reconquest Philip Carteret returned to East Jersey as its governor, and on his arrival in 1674 presented a new charter, less liberal in many respects than the original. Berkeley meanwhile sold West Jersey to a firm of Quakers, who at once proceeded to colonize it, establishing their first settlement at Salem in 1675, and another shortly aftcr at Burlington. For some years great annoyance was experienced both in East and West Jcrsey from the unjust interference of the governor of New York, and of the duke himself, with their internal affairs; these attempts were always met by a firm and spirited resistance, which eventually triumphed. In 1682, soon after Sir George Carteret's death, a society of Quakers under the lead of William Penn, encouraged by their success in West Jersey, purchased from his heirs their rights to Hast Jersey. It will give some idea of the progress already made to state that at this early period (1682) a smelting furnace and forge were in operation in New Jersey, making good iron, and that contemporary documents show that at the same date there were exported 'great plenty of horses, beef, pork, pipe-staves, boards, bread, fiour, wheat, barley, rye, Indian corn, butter, and cheese to Barbados, Jamaica, and other adjacent islands, as also to Portugal, Spain, the Canaries, &c.; whale oil, whale fins, beaver, mink, raccoon, and martin furs to England."

Towards the close of the 17th century the number of proprietors in the two provinces increased so much as to render good government impracticable in consequence of the discord arising from divergent interests and views. The evil became unendurable, and in 1702, by the general consent of the proprietors and people, the former, while retaining all their property rights, surrendered their right of govern- ment to the crown, by whom the two provinces were reunited, and placed under a governor appointed by the sovereign. With him Were associated in the government twelve councillors selected by the crown, and twenty-four assemblymen selected by the freeholders, The sessions of the assembly were at the pleasure of the governor, and its acts subject to the double veto of governor and crown, The governor and council organized the courts of law, determined all salaries, and appointed all civil and military officers.

The population of the two provinces at this period was probably a little more than 15,000. ‘The great majority of the people were Quakers, Presbyterians, and Anabaptists; there were only two Church of England ministers in the province, and their followers were too few and poor to provide churches ; nevertheless the Church of England was now made the established church, and its support provided for. Liberty of conscience was permitted to all except Roman Catholics. Quakers were eligible to office. The governor enjoyed the right of presentation to ecclesiastical benefices.

Lord Cornbury was the first governor appointed under the new arrangement, and the commission and instructions which he re- ceived, the chief points of which have just been given, formed the constitution and government of New Jersey until the declaration of independence, except that New York and New Jersey had the same governor until 1738, after which year each had its own governor, and in New Jersey the council became a separate branch of the legislature, the governor no longer participating in the debates. rom the beginning of Cornbury’s administration to. the Revolution the political history of the province consisted largely of violent contests between the assembly and the governor and his council,—-the latter constantly striving to extend the prerogative and curb the power of the people, and the assembly maintaining a bold and able contest in defence of the principles of liberty. Not- withstanding the large proportion of Quakers among its carly in- habitants, New Jersey never failed to furnish its just quota of men and money for the various American wars waged in the 18th ; century, and its contingent bore a most honourable part in the chief military events of that period. For the campaigns of 1711, 1739, 1746, 1747, and 1748 the province supplied a battalion of 500 men. It was during these last campaigns that the name ‘‘ Jersey Blues,” in vogue since that time, was first applied to the Jersey troops from the colour of their uniform —blue faced with red, grey stockings, and buckskin breeches. They were described at the time as ‘the like- liest well-set men who ever entcred upon a campaign.” When the French war of 1754 broke out Jersey again furnished a battalion of 500 men ; of these one half were captured by Montcalm at Oswego, after a gallant resistance, and the remainder at the surrender of Fort William Henry. But the province at once made good the losses, and maintained as many as 1000 men in 1758, 1759, and 1760, in which last year its contingent took part in the capture of Montreal. In 1761

and 1762 the contingent was 600 men, and again in 1764 for service against the Indians. i

During the years immediately preceding the Revolution New Jersey took an active and leading part in all the discussions and measures growing out of the attempt of parliament to impose stamp duties and taxation upon the colonies without their consent. The

rs

provinee was ably represented at the various mcetings of the con- tinental congress preeeding and leading to the war of the Revolution, and from the breaking out of hostilities bore more than its full share of the bureens necessary to bring the war to a successful con- elusion. The last provincial assembly was prorogued in December 1775. The provincial congress, elected in aecordanee with the ordinance of the preceding congress, convened in June 1776, and on the 18th of July assumed the title of the ‘‘ convention of the State of New Jersey.” An Act of Assembly of September 1777 sub- stituted the word ‘‘State” for the word ‘‘ Colony” in all cases of writs, commissions, indictments, &e., kc. In the war New Jersey furnished to the “continental line” 10 ,726 men, besides large numbers of militia, and expended for war purposes, on account of the continental government, $5,342,770. Some very important and interesting operations of the war were conducted within the limits of the State; and from its peculiar position New Jersey suffered more from the evils of the war than any of the thirteen colonies, exeept perhaps South Carolina. In the whisky insur- rection of 1794 the State furnished more than 2000 militia, who under Governor Howell formed part of the army in Pennsylvania. In the war of 1812 it furnished nearly 7000 militia, and in the Mexican war three companies of regular infantry and a battalion of volunteers. At the breaking out of the civil war of 1861 the number of men in the State available for military duty was 98,806; and during that war New Jersey organized and maintained 37 regi- ments of infantry, 3 regiments of eavalry, aud 5 batteries. The national guard of the State now consists of 48 eompanies of infantry and 2 Gatling gun companies, numbering 3220 officers and men, thoroughly organized, drilled, and equipped for service.

See Samuel Smnith, History of the Colony of New Jersey to the year 1721, Bur- lington, 1765, republished 1877; Gordon, History of New Jersey to the Adoption of the Federal Constitution, Trenton, 1834; Mulford, Civil and Political History of New Jersey, Camden, 1848; Barber and Howe, Historical Collections; New Jersey Archives, first series; Whitehead, Contributions to the Early IHistory of Perth Amboy, New York, 1856, and Contributions to Fast Jersey History; Win- field, History of Hudson County; Hatfield, History of Elizabeth, New Jersey, 1868. For the geology, Cook, Geology of New Jersey, 1868; and Annual ig ts of the State Geologist of New Jersey. (G. B. M‘C.)

NEW J ERUSALEM CHURCH. See Swepentore.

NEW LONDON, acity and port of entry of the United States, one of the shire towns of New London county, Connecticut, lies on the west bank of the Thames, about 3 miles above its entrance into Long Island Sound. It is the southern terminus of the Central Vermont Railroad, and a station on the New York, New Haven, and Hartford and the New York, Providence, and Boston Railroads, whose trains cross the river by ferry. By rail it is 126 miles from New York and 62 from Providence. Two lines of steamers ply daily to New York. The city is built on a declivity facing the south-east, and from the higher points enjoys fine views over Long Island Sound and the surrounding country. To the south lies Fort Trumbull, having 80 guns and room for 800 men, but too near the city to be a sufficient defence. At Groton Heights on the opposite bank, a small battery occupies the site of Fort Griswold, near which is a granite shaft, 127 feet high, commemorating the massacre of its garrison by Arnold’s troops in 1781. As a fashionable summer resort, rivalling Newport, it is well provided both with private residences and public hotels. The city-hall, the county court-house, and the custom-house are among the most conspicuous buildings. The harbour of New London, the best on Long Island Sound, and one of the best in the world, is 3 miles in extent, and has a depth of from 4 to 7 fathoms; the river is navigable also for 3 miles above the city. The granite wharf, built by the New London Northern (Central Vermont) Railroad, is 1125 feet long, 220 feet wide at the river end, and 150 feet at the shore end. On the east side is a United States navy yard. Asa whale-fishery port New London was from 1840 to 1857 second only to New Bedford. Since the decline of the whale

fishery it has prosecuted the seal fishery (Alaska and New Shetland), and the cod and mackerel fisheries. A woollen mill, a cotton-gin factory, iron foundries, a fruit-canning establishment, and an ex- tensive cracker bakery are the chief manufacturing works in the city. The population was 8991 in 1850, 10,115 in 1860, 9575 in 1870, and 10,537 in 1880. In 1645

John Winthrop the younger settled on what was then |

known as Pequot Harbour, and in 1658 the Connecticut assembly resolved that the "plantation" should bear the name of New London. During the Revolution the har- bour was the headquarters of the Connecticut privateer- ing fleet. In 1781 the city was captured by Benedict Arnold, and, together with Groton, was burned by accident or design.

NEWMARKET, a market-town, partly in Cambridge and partly in Suffolk, and the seat of important races, is situated on the Cambridge and Bury branch of the Great Eastern Railway, 13 miles north-east of Cambridge and 60 north by east of London. The parish church of Saint Mary, an old Gothic building of stone, was recently restored, Newmarket has been celebrated for its races from the time of James I. The house built for this monarch's use during his visit to the races, and enlarged by Charles II., is now partly occupied by a Congregational chapel. The Beacon race-course at Newmarket is about 4 miles long, and is the finest in the world. The town is the chief seat of the Jockey Club, and of the training establishments for races, more than 1000 horses generally occupying the stables at one time. Near the race-course is the Devil's Ditch, consisting of a ditch and mound 4 or 5 miles long and 100 feet broad, with a slope of 50 feet on the south-west side. Roman remains have been found in the neighbourhood. The population of the urban sanitary district (740 acres) in 1871 was 4534, and in 1881 it was 5093.

NEW MEXICO, a Territory of the United States, is Plate IX.

bounded on the N. by Colorado, on the E. by Texas and unorganized 'public lands" adjacent to the Indian Territory, on the 8. by Texas and Mexico, and on the W. by Arizona. It forms nearly a square, being about 335 miles in

width from east to west and 345 miles in length from north to south on the eastern border, which lengthens to 390 miles on the west. As formed originally by the Organic Act of 1850, the Territory embraced Arizona and southern Colorado. In 1854 the “Gadsden Purchase ” from Mexico added a strip along the southern boundary. In 1863 Arizona was detached and made into a separate Territory, and in 1867 the portion of New Mexico north of the 37th parallel was added to Colorado, leaving the Territory with its present boundaries, and an area of 122,460 square miles.

Physical Features.—The whole area is elevated far above the ocean, the table-lands of the north being 6000 to 6500, those of the centre 5000, and those of the south about 4000 feet above sea-level. The fall in the Rio Grande from the Colorado line to that of Mexico is about 3500 feet. The whole except the eastern portion is traversed by mountains, passing from north to south, not continu- ously but in broken ranges, which, for convenience of description, may be divided into three parts. The main range of the Rocky Mountains enters the Territory from the north, the highest peaks being the Costilla (12,615 feet), Taos, Mora (12,020), Truchas (13,150), and Baldy (12,661). This range disappears as a continuous chain near Glorieta. Running east from this as a kind of spur along the Colorado line are the Raton Mountains, the pass in which, south of Trinidad, is 7893 feet high. The railroad crosses this range through a tunnel. Commencing about 20 miles south of Santa Fé, and extending south- wards on the east side of the Rio Grande, is a broken range, known variously in localities from north to south as the Cerrillos, Placer, Sandia, Chilili, Manzana, Jumanes, Oscura, San Andres, and Organ Mountains, ——the last- named crossing into Mexico near El Paso. Nearer to the Rio Grande in Socorro county are the Fra Cristobal and Caballo Mountains. East of the above chain is a series of ranges, generally short, locally known as tle Gallinas,

Jicarilla, Carrizo, Capitan, Sierra Blanca, Sacramento, Hueco, and Guadalupe Mountains. On the west of the io Grande another broken range runs south, commencing at the singularly conspicuous San Antonio mountain, close to the Colorado line, and known in its several parts as the

Petaca, Valles, Nacimiento, Jemez, San Mateo, Ladrones, Oso, Madalena, Socorro, San Mateo (of Socorro), Black Range, Mimbres, and Florida Mountains, the latter extend- ing into Mexico. Still farther to the west, and near the Arizona boundary, yet another series of comparatively short ranges is found, consisting of the Carrizo, Tunicha, and Chusca Mountains, which constitute part of the "great continental divide" separating the waters flowing into the Gulf of Mexico from those running into the Pacific, and more to the south the Zufii, Datil, San Francisco, Escudilla, Tulerosa, Luera, Mogollon, Diablo, Pinos Altos, Burro, Sarampion, Hacha, Perro, Animas, and Peloncillo Moun- tains. These mountains are seamed with great '" cafions," which also penetrate the larger '"'mesas" or table-lands in various places, where in some way the covering of lava which is their usual protection has been removed. Between contiguous ranges or spurs of the same range are fre- quently found "parks" of great beauty and fertility. These specially abound in the western part of Colfax county.

New Mexico, while generally requiring irrigation for its cultivation, is more fully provided with rivers than any of the other mining States or Territories. Its watcrs flow east to the Mississippi, south to the Gulf of Mexico, and west through the Colorado and Gila to the Gulf of California and the Pacific Ocean. The Rio Grande, called also the Rio Bravo del Norte, passcs completely through the centre of the Territory from north to south. It receives many tributaries, the principal being the Santa Fé and Galisteo from the east, and the Chama, Jemez, Puerco, and Alamosa from the west. Its valley is of great fertility, and capable of supporting a large population. The north- eastern part of the Territory, including the greater part of the counties of Colfax, Mora, and San Miguel, is drained by the Canadian or Red River, which flows into the Arkansas. The branches of this stream are very numerous, the principal ones being the Cimarron, Mora, Concha, Pajarito, and Ute. The Pecos rises north-east of Santa Fé, and, flowing south, gives value to a vast belt of land, until it crosses the Texas line and finally joins the Rio Grande itself. Its valley is unsurpassed for fertility and agricultural worth. Among other streams, the Tecolote, Gallinas, Hondo, and Peiiasco are tributaries to it. In the north-west is the Rio San Juan, from which that whole section is called the "San Juan country." It flows west to the Great Colorado, and has as its principal branches in New Mexico the Animas from the north and the Chaco from the south. In the central west are

the headwaters of the Little Colorado, and in the south-west those of the Gila, with the Mimbres, which flows south into Mexico.

Minerals.—In almost all parts of the Territory, except the pastoral plains, the precious metals are found, the mineral extending from the extreme north to the southern boundary. The eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains, in Colfax county, abounds in gold, and Elizabethtown, its chief village, was the scene of great mining prosperity a few years ago. The metal is found in "leads" as well as in extensive "placers." On the opposite side of the range are both gold and silver, and a little farther south, near Picuris, are large deposits of copper. 'Travelling southwards we find various minerals of value in the mountains east of Santa Fé; and the Cerrillos mining district, about 20 miles south of the capital, presents a rich deposit of silver not as yet fully developed. Here

hex eo

also are the famous turquoise mines, the largest in America, which played so important a part in the early history of the Territory. To the west in the Nacimiento region is a great body of copper. At the "Old Placers" and "New Placers," in the southern extremity of Santa Fé county, are inexhaustible supplies of placer gold, which were washed for many years by the rude methods of former times, but work here has been suspended pending the completion of extensive works now in progress which will provide a sufficient supply of water for large operations. The Manzana, Ladrone, and Madalena ranges, and, indeed, nearly all the mountains on botli sides of the Rio Grande, contain rich mineral. Silver mines of great value are worked in the Socorro Mountains, directly west of the city of that name. The Black Range country is rich in silver and copper; and the more recent discoveries on the Percha river and at Lake Valley promise to be of extraordinary richness and extent. The vicinity of White Oaks in Lincoln county is specially noted for its free gold, and the San Andres, Caballo, and Organ ranges abound in valuable ores. The greatest development has taken place in Grant county, whose "Santa Rita," " Hanover," and other copper mines are well known; the vicinity of Silver City and Georgetown produce great quantities of silver, while the newer districts in the south-west, in the vicinity of Shakespeare and Lordsburg, are also rich in the last- mentioned

metal. To the north of Silver City are the Mogollon Mountains, where valuable mineral deposits are found. The mines, especially those of silver, were exten- sively worked by the Spaniards down to the year 1680, when the revolt of the Pueblos, caused by the cruel slavery to which they were reduced in working for the precious metals, resulted in the fillmg up and conceal- ment of every mine in the country during the thirteen years of Pueblo control. The shafts of these mines are frequently discovered. Development in recent times has been greatly retarded by Indian occupancy in some sections and their incursions into others; but now that these difficulties have ceased it is very rapidly progressing.

Bituminous coal is found in inexhaustible quantitics in very many sections of the Territory, notably near Raton in Colfax county, along the Galisteo river on the line of the Atlantic and Pacific Railroad, and near the Chama river in the north-west. Anthracite coal of an exceedingly fine quality exists in large amounts near Cerrillos station, being superior to many of the coals of Pennsylvania, and by far the best fuel thus far discovered west of the Mississippi river. Iron is found in many localities, but has not yet been worked, the more valuable metals monopolizing attention. Mica mines of large extent and excellent quality are at Petaca, Mora, near Nambé, and in other localities. Lead abounds in many sections carry- ing silver, and notably in the Cerrillos mines. Plumbago is found in Colfax county ; and cement of a very superior quality is made at Springer. Gypsum, fire-clay, and mineral paints are among the mineral resources of the Territory ; and marbles and other excellent building stones abound.

Mineral springs of various kinds of great excellence are found in different localities. Prominent among them are the Las Vegas hot springs, the Ojo Caliente in Taos county, the Jemez hot springs, and the Hudson springs. These all have special medicinal qualities, and are of high temperature, the Ojo Caliente water being of 114° and the Jemez 168°. ‘There are also important springs south of E] Rancho in Taos county and east of Santa Fé.

Climate.—The climate is dry and the air clear through- out almost the entire year. The temperature at Santa Fé, which is considered to have the best climate in the Territory, is sometimes as low in the winter as at New York, but

the dryness of the atmosphere prevents the cold from being felt to anything like the same extent. The more southerly towns are of course warmer, not only on account of the difference in latitude, but also because of their decreased altitude! The rainy season occupies about a month, varying in time from the middle of July to the iniddle of September, but even then a wholly cloudy day is seldom seen, the mornings being bright, with showers in the afternoon. The comparative death-rate from tubercular diseases in New Mexico is less than anywhere else in the United States, the proportions being—New England 25, Minnesota 14, Southern States 6, New Mexico 3.2 The average rainfall at Santa Fé for eight years (1874-81) was a little less than 144 inches, whereas the average at New York was 43, Boston 45, Philadelphia 44, Washington 37, St Louis 42, and Savannah 48. The mean temperature was 484°. The atmosphere is so clear and pure as to be proverbial. From the first characteristic arises the decep- tion as to distances so generally experienced by strangers ; and the second is evidenced by the fact that everywhere throughout the Territory the natives hang up their meat out-of-doors to dry, and use pieces of it as required, not the slightest taint arising from it during a series of months.

Agriculture, &c.—The greater portion of New Mexico is pastoral, being unfitted for agriculture from lack of water for irrigation. Wherever there is sufficient water either in streams or springs to supply the wants of animals, the grass is amply sufficient to sup- port either cattle or sheep. The Territory abounds in the most nutritious grasses, which retain their virtues during the winter ; and the cliinate is such that shelter is not required other than that afforded by nature, in valleys and woods. The number of sheep is variously estimated from 7,000,000 to 10,000,000, and they are raised in every county. Within the past few years the breed has been much improved by the introduction of merino, Cotswold, and other fine-woolled varieties. The cattle business has reached enormous proportions within a few years, and is steadily advancing in importance. The immense profits reccived have induced the investment of large amounts of capital, and all the desirable ranches are being rapidly taken up and stocked. The business is changing in its character in two ways. Large corporations are taking the place of small owners, and, instead of ranging over the plains, the cattle are now generally

confined to tracts exclu- sively owned or occupied, and fenced. Colfax county alone is thought to contain nearly 100,000 head of cattle, and the number in the whole Territory is very large, and rapidly increasing.

Agriculture is mainly limited to the valleys. Those of the Rio Grande, the Pecos, the Canadian, the San Juan, and their tribu- taries, though generally narrow, contain large areas of arable land of extraordinary fertility. They produce large crops of grain and of most kinds of vegetables, especially onions, beets, turnips, cab- bages, cauliflowers, &c. Potatoes succeed best in the mountainous regions. The Taos valley is an exceptionally fine wheat country, and before the advent of railroads supplied a great part of the Terri- tory with its flour. The Mora valley is also celebrated for its wheat. Itis as a fruit-producing region, however, that a large portion of the irrigated laud in the Territory specially excels. The Rio Grande valley from Embudo to Mesilla is particularly adapted to this purpose. The area of fruit and vine culture is being yearly extended. Pcaches, plums, and apricots come to great perfection in the north, and pears, apples, quinces, cherries, &c., as well as the stone fruits, throughout the middle and southern sections. Grapes flourish from Bernalillo to El Paso, and in some favoured spots like La Joya farther north. The grape principally cultivated is the “ Mission,” which produces excellent wine. Hardy American varieties like the Concord will do well anywhere, and the less hardy European varieties, such as the White Muscat, Flamed Tokay, &c., succeed admirably in the vicinity of Las Cruces. The Pecos valley also produces fruit of extraordinary size and beauty.

The supply of timber, especially of pine, is almost inexhaustible.

1The elevations at sume of the principal points are—Costilla, 7774 feet; Tierra Amarilla, 7455; Glorieta, 7507; Santa Fé, 7044; Fort Wingate, 7087; Taos, 6950; Las Vegas, 6452; Fort Stanton, 5800; ee” 5104; Albuquerque, 4918; Socorro, 4655; Las Cruces,

4,

2 The army statistics for six years lead to the same result, the ratio of deaths per 1000 from diseases of the respiratory organs being—west coast of

Florida, 6°9; New York, 5°9; New England, 4°8; Great Lakes, 4°5; Texas coast, 4; western Texas, 3°9; East Florida, 2°3 ; New Mexico, 1°38.

EX ICO 401

It exists in nearly all the hilly and mountainous parts of the Territory, but is of very superior quality as regards both height and straightness in the vicinity of Tierra Amarilla. Cedar abounds in many localities, and the pifion makes an excellent fuel. Oak, maple, walnut, and ash are found toa more limited extent. The varieties of poplar commonly known as cottonwood and quaking aspen are the most common deciduous trees, and grow in almost all parts of the Territory. Several other native plants are proving of value. The Yucca of different varieties abounds,—Y. jfilamentosa, commonly called amole or soap-weed, covering immense tracts. Experiments have recently been made with a view to utilizing the fibre of the large serrated variety abundant in the south in the manufacture of rope, and the smaller kinds in paper-making, as well as using the root in preparing a substitute for soap, These bid fair to make this very abundant plant of large commercial value. The cafiaigre has long been known to possess powerful tan- ning properties, and recent cxperiments by the department of agriculture and elsewhere have demonstrated its value as a substi- tute for bark and other agents. The plant grows wild over a large extent of country, and its importance in a district producing so many hides and skins can hardly be overestimated.

Government and Administration.—The executive officers are a governor and a secretary. ‘The higher judiciary consists of a chicf justice and two associates, each of whom presides over the courts in one district, all three sitting together as an appellate supreme court in January of each year. The legislature consists of a council of twelve members and a house of representatives of twenty-four, elected by counties biennially. The governor possesses the veto power. The territorial officials are a treasurer, auditor, attorucy- general and two district attorneys, and an adjutant-general. In each county there are a probate judge, sheriff, and other local officers, the chief authority being vested in a board of county com- missioners of three members elected by the people. The counties are divided into precincts, in cach of which there is a justice of the peace and a constable. At present there are twelve counties in the Territory. Public education is in charge of a

board of three school commissioners in each county. A tax of 4 per cent. is levied for the support of public schools. Precincts may become independent school districts at their option.

Population.—The population of the Territory was 91,874 in 1870 and 119,565 in 1880. Since that time it has steadily increased. The capital, Santa Fé, had 6635 inhabitants in 1880.

History.—The first European that traversed the Territory was Cabeza de Vaca (Nufiez), the treasurer of the unfortunate expedition of Panfilo Narvaez to Florida, who, being cast ashore on the coast of Texas, crossed the continent with three companions, and after encountering infinite difficulties and dangers arrived at Spanish settlements near the Gulf of California. On the way he passed through a land of 'fixed habitations," which were evidently the Pueblo towns, followed the Rio Grande for many miles, and on his return to civilization gave such an account of his travels that great interest was excited. In consequence, Coronado, the governor of New Galicia, sent Marcos de Niza, a Franciscan monk, with Stephen, a negro who had been one of Vaca's companions, to reconnoitre the country. They penetrated as far as Zui, then called Cibola, where Stephen was killed; but Marcos made up for the lack of substantial success by the marvellous nature of the report he presented. The next year, 1540, Coronado himself headed an expedition of 300 Spaniards and 800 Indians, and started from Culiacan on Easter Monday. He succeeded in finding Cibola, which he subjugated with the surrounding country, and then proceeded to the province of Tiguex (on the Puerco river). After this expedition several friars at various times entered the country, establishing missions, often at the cost of their lives. Among them one of the most pro- minent was Agustin Ruiz, who was killed in 1581. Almost imme- diately after this came the expedition of Espejo, who was sent by the viceroy to protect the missions. The next expedition of note was that of Ofiate, toward the close of the century, which carried a large number of additional colonists into the Territory. From this time the Spanish population increased rapidly, and mining was extensively engaged in, the natives being reduced to a virtual con- dition of slavery in the mines. In 1680 the Indians, who had long been on the verge of rebellion, revolted, and under the lead of Popé, a chief of large influcnce, marched on Santa Fé, and there besieged Governor Otcrmin

and the Spanish army, who were finally compelled to evacuate the town and retreat to El Paso. For thirteen years the Pueblos continued to control the country, defeating successive Spanish expeditions, until in 1693 Diego de Vargas, the new governor, succeeded in conquering them and a peace was made, one of the terms of which was that there should be no more slavery in the mines. In fact the Indians had filled up all the shafts in the meantime. For over a century afterwards little occurred to disturb the tranquillity of the Territory, cxcept occasional wars with the surrounding savage tribes. In 1804 Lieutenant Pike, exploring the head-waters of the Arkansas, by mistake camped on Mexican soil and was brought into Santa Fé aud sent to Chihuahua as a prisoner, About this time the first

goods were brought across the plains to the New Mexican market, being the commencement of the overland traflic of the Sante Fé ‘‘Trail,’’ which increased yearly in importance until the railroads took the place of the ‘‘ prairie schooner.” In 1820 Mexico became independent, and New Mexico began to be governed by political chiefs instead of Spanish ‘‘ Gobernadores.”

By a change in the constitution in 1835, governors were appointed instead of elected, and Albino Perez was sent from Mexico as the new ruler. This excited much discontent, which was increased by the enactment of a new tax law two years later. About August 1, 1837, a revolutionary movement commenced in the north of the Territory among both Mexicans and Pueblos, hav- ing for its centre the town of Caftada or Santa Cruz. Governor Perez marched to meet the insurgents, but was deserted by nearly all his troops and compelled to fly, and was soon after overtaken and killed near Agua Fria. A number of other prominent officials were also killed ; and on August 10 Jose Gonzalez, a Taos Indian, was installed as governor in the palace. General Manuel Armijo, who had held high positions before, raised troops at Albuquerque to suppress. the revolt, and finally defeated the rebels at Cafiada. The Mexican Government confirmed his acts and appointed him governor, which office he held with some intermissions until the coming of an American army in 1846 under General Kearney, who marched from the

Missouri and took possession of the Territory without bloodshed,—General Armijo retiring southwards. A pro- visional government was established by the Americans, and Charles Bent, an old resident, appointed governor, but he was killed in a revolt in January 1847. The treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo made New Mexico a part of the United States, and by an Act of Congress of September 9, 1850, it was organized asa Territory with a regular government. Early in 1862 a Confederate army from Texas invaded the country and occupied Santa Fé, March 10; they were defeated, however, at Glorieta on March 28, and evacuated the capital April 8. The people of the Territory were commendably loyal, and supplied 6000 men to the Union army.

The first rail was laid in New Mexico, November 30, 1878, by the Atchison, Topeka, and Santa Fé Railroad, which reached Las Vegas July 1, 1879, Santa Fé February 9, 1880, and connected with the Southern Pacific at Deming March 18, 1881. This, and the con- struction of the Denver and Rio Grande and the Atlantic and Pacific Railroads, have given a great impetus to the Territory. (L. B. P.)

NEW MILLIS, a township of Derbyshire, is situated at the confluence of the rivers Goyt and Kinder, on the borders of Cheshire, 8 miles south-east of Stockport and 7 south-west of Glossop. Its ancient name was Bowden Middle Cale, and formerly it included seven hamlets, but about a century ago three of these were detached, and it now includes only those of Beard, Ollersett, Thornsett, and Whittle. The name New Mills was given to it from a corn-mill erected on the Kinder in the hamlet of Ollersett, and is now specially applied to the group of factories which have grown up round it. Formerly paper and cloth were the staple industries of the district, but now the inhabitants of the various hamlets are occupied chiefly in iron and brass foundries, cotton-mills, and print-works. A public hall was erected in 1871, to which a lofty tower was added in 1875. There are almshouses and other charities. The population of the urban sanitary district (5200 acres) in 1881 was 6552.

NEW ORKNEY. See New Sours Suernanp.

NEW ORLEANS, a city of the United States, situated on the left bank of the Mississippi, 107 miles from its mouth, in that portion of the State of

Louisiana which constitutes the river’s larger delta. This peculiar region 1s an irregular expanse of densely-wooded swamps, wide prairies, and sea-marshes, interlaced by innumerable lakes, streams, and bays, formed by the periodic overflows of the river upon the alluvium of its own deposit, and by remnants of the sea which this natural process of land-making has not yet conquered. It embraces the whole coast of Louisiana on its southern border, and, narrowing rapidly northward, presents a total area of some 20,000 square miles of land and water. Through this region the Mississippi, as in its southward course it reaches the 30th parallel of latitude, turns and runs tortuously eastward a few miles south of and parallel with a chain of these delta lakes—Lake Pontchartrain being the chief—which marks the course of the same river in prehistoric, but not

geologically remote, ages. At the 90th degree of longitude it bends abruptly southward, then as suddenly eastward again, then northward and again eastward, thus portioning off on the low, concave land, which is always highest at the river’s margin, a shallow basin rudely square in shape and not unlike the palm of one’s hand. This deep three- sided bend, some 9 miles in total length, is the harbour of New Orleans, and on the low tract walled in by the dyke or levée that lines its bank, and by a similar defence where Lake Pontchartrain, some 4 to 6 miles to the north- ward, shuts in the fourth side, lies New Orleans, the principal seaport of the Mississippi valley, and a city of 216,000 inhabitants.

The river at this point varies from 1500 to 3000 feet in width, and its broad channel often stretches almost from shore to shore, with a depth varying frequently at short intervals from 60 to more than 200 feet. Around the margins of this fine harbour a line of steamers and ship- ping extends for 7 r= = : —J miles on either shore, FY z= > moored, in the busy [x7 season, from two to five abreast, to the outer end of short, broad, unsheltered wooden wharves that rest on piles driven firmly intothe tenaci- ous clay of the river’s | bed. The speed of }° the current reaches, in times of high water, a rate of 5 milesanhour. Along the immediate front of the city’s principal commercial quarter, this current, losing some of its force by change of direction, deposits its alluvium in such quantities as to produce a constant

encroachment of the shore upon the harbour. At its widest this new land, or batture, with wharves, streets, and warehouses following eagerly after it, has advanced nearly 1500 feet beyond the water-line of a century and a half ago.

New Orleans is emphatically a commercial city. It was its commercial value as the southern gateway of the immense valley behind it, and as the key to the free navigation of that vast natural system of waterways of which the Mississippi is the great main artery that, upon the achievement of American national autonomy, gave a small, poor, and remote Franco-Spanish-American port its political importance, and in 1803 led to its purchase by the United States, and the purchase with it of the entire province of Louisiana, of which it was the capital in embryo; and it is almost solely as the dispenser of the products of this greatest agricultural valley in the world that New Orleans has grown from the wild and indolent little frontier town of 10,000 inhabitants it then was to the dimensions of a great city. Along its winding har- bour front one sees, in the season that follows the harvests of the south and west, the energies and activities of an exporting movement not excelled in volume or value on the American continent save by New York. The levée, the wharves, and the contiguous streets teem with strenuous life, and aré gorged with the raw staples of the countries far and near that lie about the Mississippi and its greater and lesser tributaries,—sugar, molasses, rice, tobacco, Indian corn, pork, staves, whisky, wheat, oats, flour in immense quantities, and, over and above all else, nearly one-fourth of the world's entire supply of cotton. All other movement is subsidiary or insignificant: the import trade is small ;

Environs of New Orleans.

NEW ORLEANS

manufactures are inconsiderable; mining interests are almost unknown. There are no fisheries, no naval construc- tion, no large transit of immigrants, no notable Govern- ment establishments except a branch mint and the custom- house. There are no great educational and scientific institutions or important conservatories of art—only the promising germs of such ; no famous galleries or museums ; no noted monuments; in short, well-nigh none of that multiplicity of pursuits and opportunities that retains

and multiplies rapidly a city's wealth, and makes the inspiring tumult of metropolitan life. On any hand it requires but a, step or two aside from the current of commercial move- ment to carry one into the bowery repose of a huge suburb rather than of a city, or, if of a' city, a city of villas and cottages, of umbrageous gardens, intersected by 470 miles of unpaved streets shaded by forest trees, haunted by song birds, fragrant with a wealth of flowers that never fails a day in the year, and abundant, in season, with fruit—the fig, the plum, the pomegranate, the orange. No other |

large city in America is so laid open to the sunshine and the air. Neither St Louis, nor Chicago, nor Philadelphia, nor New York covers so large a site as New Orleans, whose inhabitants, considerably under a quarter of a million in number, have spread out their town over an area of 155 square miles.?

New Orleans is exceptionally interesting among cities of the United States for the picturesqueness of its older sections, and the language, tastes, and customs of a large portion of its people. Its history is comparatively short ; but it is as sombre and unique as the dark, wet cypress forest draped in long, pendent Spanish moss that once occupied its site, and which still encireles its low horizon. It was founded in 1718 by Jean Baptiste Lemoyne de Bienville, a French Canadian, governor of the French colony which nineteen years earlier had been planted by his brother D'Iberville on the neighbouring shores of the Gulf, along the eastern margin of the Bay of Biloxi. A few years after its founding, and while it was still but little more than a squalid village of deported galley-slaves, trappers, and gold hunters, it was made the capital of that vast Louisiana which loosely comprised the whole Mississippi valley to Canada on the north and without boundary on the west, under the

ee. UN)

joy, Yi

Yy,

6 St Louts Cathedral 7 Immaculate Concep-

tron Church, 8 St John the Baptus K.

NG Cy, [> ig

13 Lafayette Square.

2 4 ~ 4)

ACG,

Plan of New Orleans.

commercial domain and monopoly of John Law's scheme, so famed in history under the merited nickname of the Mississippi Bubble. The names remaining in vogue in that part of the city still distin- guished as the ''vieux carré," or 'old French quarter," continue to preserve an interesting record of these humble beginnings. The memory of French Bourbon dominion is retained in the titles, and in the foreign aspect as well, of Toulouse, and Orleans, and Du Maine, and Conti, and Bourbon, and Dauphiné, and Chartres Streets ; while even more distinctly the Bourbon of Spain has superimposed his impress on frequent stuccoed wall and iron lattice, huge locks and hinges, arches and gratings, balconies, jalousies, corrugated roofs of tiles, dim corridors, cool pavements, and inner courts brightened with parterres, urns, and basins, statues half hid in roses and vines, and sound of trickling water. There are streets named from his governors, too:—Unzaga, Galvez, Miro, Salcedo, Casa Calvo, Carondelet, and the Baron Carondclet's Baronne. The moated and palisaded boundaries constructed in wild and unsafe days are indicated by the wide, tree-planted, and grassy avenues named respectively from the Canal, the Rampart, and the Esplanade that lay along their course; and the old parade ground in the midst of the carly town's river front, now laid off in flower-beds, white- shelled walks, and shaven shrubbery, and known as Jackson Square, still retains, with that official title, its older name of the

Place d'Armes. In this quaint, sunny, and dusty old garden, surrounded by an unconscious picturesqueness of architecture not seen elsewhere in

America save in one or two remote nooks, by the old cabildo and calaboza, the court-house (once the presbytery of Capuchin friars), the cathedral of St Louis, and the long row of red shops shaded by broad verandas in the streets of St Peter and St Ann,—in this square is commemorated nearly every event in the colonial history of Louisiana. Here in early days were landed those cargoes of French girls supplied each with a chest of clothing by the king, and proudly famed long afterward by their numerous and prosperous descendants as the ‘‘ filles ala cassette ”— the girls with trunks. Here from 1729 to 1739 rallied these motley gatherings of men—white, red, and black—in the buckskin and feathers of the wilderness, the gay colours, gold braid, and ruffles of royal uniforms, and the black nakedness of slavery, that with varying success made ten years’ war against Natchez, Yazoo, Choctaw, and Chickasaw savages. Here in 1765 the people welcomed with tears and open arms their exiled brethren from far

1 This has not been entirely within the boundaries already described. A modern part of the city, of some extent, lies on the right bank of the harbour, opposite these older portions that occupy the river front where it turns from north to east,

Acadia, as thirty-six years before on the same spot they had received the women and children of Fort Rosalie (Natchez), recaptured from the hands of the savages who had massacred their husbands and fathers. Here in 1768, the town being then a place of about 3200 souls, the people within the walls and from the farms and plantations of the surrounding delta mustered under arms almost to a man, repudiated the cession of Louisiana to Spain, and compelled the holder of the Spanish king’s comuinission to leave their town and return to Havana. Here again, in the following year, Don Alexandro O’Reilly landed from a ficet of twenty-four vessels with 2600 Spanish troops and fifty pieces of artillery, and restored the Spanish power by mere terror of such an overwhelming force. Here stood under Spanish sentence and fell under a volley of Spanish musketry the leaders in this the first attempt made in America to overthrow by force of arms the dominion of a European sovereign. It was here, again, that in 1779 the brilliant young Spanish governor Galvez, laying before the people the proposal to head

them in defence of their homes, and intending to lead them against the neighbouring British posts along the shores of the Mississippi and the Gulf of Mexico east of it, was answered by their acclamations, and was followed to repeated and uninterrupted victory. Here, when in 1788 and 1794 the heart of the frail wooden town was plucked out by fire, the houseless sufferers covered the rank sward with booths and tents until that Spanish-American architecture could rise out of the ashes whose brick and stucco and coloured limewashes, and flowery inner courts seen through eovered carriage-ways, and overhanging balconies, and confusion of heights and breadths and shapes, with here and there a palm tree lifting its stately top among them, heavy with yellow dates, still offer to the eye a moss-grown and crumbling picture whose variety and poetry tempts description to repeat itself.

On the 30th of November 1803, in the council hall of the old cabildo that still overlooks the square, the aged governor Salcedo handed the keys of the city back to the representatives of the French Government, the marquis of Casa Calvo declared the people of Louisiana absolved from their allegiance to the Spanish king, and on the flagstaff in the open plaza the yellow flag of Spain came down and the tricolor of France arose in its place. And here, at length, only twenty days afterward, with similar ceremonies, the keys of the city passed from the hands of the French colonial prefect to those of the commissioners for the United States, and through their tears the creoles saw the ensign of the French republic sink and the American flag unfurl over what is to-day, as it was then, the least American of all the cities within the bounds of the American States. A bronze equestrian statue of Andrew Jackson stands in the middle of the ground on the spot where, in January 1815, when he had driven back to its ships from the plains just below the city the bleeding remnant of a formidable British invasion, he passed, amid all the evidences of joy that a delivered city could display— cheers and salvos and rolling drums, arms and banners and maidens' garlands—uuder an arch of triumph and into the cathedral, and so onward in later years to the highest seat in the nation.

At the time (1803) when New Orleans with its 10,000 inhabi- tants, mostly French creoles and their slaves, passed into the political bond of the United States, the prospect of its future com- mercial greatness was not only

appreciated but was exaggerated even by the most sagacious minds; for they regarded it in the light of its remarkable geographical position, and of thosc stirrings of revolution which were beginning to promise the birth of other republics round about the broad circuit of the Mexican Gulf, with maritime powers and commercial energies that must give the position of New Orleans an inestimable value. But, as the future gradually unfolded, on the one hand the provinces that did throw off the Spanish yoke failed persistently to establish internal peace and stability or obtain the confidence of the commercial world, and on the other hand the invention of railway transit revolutionized commeree itself and turned its courses across the natural highways and barriers of the continent; and when, moreover, the pestilenee of yellow fever, the plague of the Gulf, made New Orleans one of its most famous ambuscades, and the provincialism and lethargy of an isolated and indolent civilization allowed this last unfortu- nate condition to remain uncorrected, the limitations to the city's commereial grandeur were distinctly drawn around it, and a port that had promised to become one of the greatest in the world became, even while it was expanding to mctropolitan dimensions, a monument of golden possibilitics dwarfed by unforeseen and over- powering disadvantages.

New Orleans held its highest place on the comparative scale of cities in the United States when, by the census of 1840, only New York, Philadelphia, and Baltimore were greater in population. In the decade that followed, these cities left it far behind and others overtook it and passed it by. In the second decade after the Junction of the great west and the Atlantie seaboard by canals and railways many other conditions came in to the great disadvantage of New Orleans. The development of the carrying trade on the lakes of the far north, the adoption by the world's maritime trade of ships and stcamers drawing too much water to pass the bars at

the mouth of the Mississippi, and in the city the riot made by death, whieh in three years (1853-55) from a population diminished by flight to barely 145,000 carricd off over 35,000 persons, —these things and others combined to impede the town's progress at a period when the growth of

American cities was a marvel of the times, and to reduce her comparative importance in population, wealth, enlightenment, and architectural dignity.

However, turning from these comparisons and contrasting the city only with itself, we see the trading post described by the priest-chronicler Charlevoix in 1721 as a place of a hundred wretched hovels in a malarious wet thicket of willows and dwarf palmettos, infested by serpents and alligators, changed in 1860 to a metropolis whose exports, imports, and domestic receipts aggre- gated $324,000,000. In that year the election of a president from the Republican party was made the occasion of acts that led to war between the Northern and Southern States of the Union. The commerce of New Orleans experienced an early paralysis: the port was soon blockaded by the United States navy; the city fell into the hands of the Federal forces; and its aggrandizement suffered a recoil from which it has taken nearly a quarter of a century to recover. Only in the present year (1883) will its total commerce again distinctly reach the magnitude it enjoyed in 1860. Its wealth in 1882 was $112,000,000. In the present year it is closely csti- mated that 2,000,000 bales of cotton will be received across its levee for shipment to the world's markets. It appears highly prob- able that those drawbacks which have been enumerated have at length expended their power, and that New Orleans now looks out upon a future of more genuine promise than ever before. A system of jetties at the mouth of the Mississippi, built by the distinguished engineer Eads in 1879, has opened the city's deep and spacious harbour to the largest ocean craft. Lines of stcamers to the great ports of Kurope are replacing with their great carrying capacity the light tonnage of other days. An active sanitary system, which grows every year better, gives reasonable promise of immunity from the deadly epidemics of former years; street paving has recom- mienced; the inadequate and superficial drainage is being improved, under the direction of a sanitary association auxiliary to the board of health, a diligent house-to-house inspection is being performed, and the open gutters that are in all the streets are daily flushed during the warm months with water thrown into them by powerful pumps at the river front. The annual mortality-rate of the three years 1879 to 1881 averaged 26°52 per 1000. The old spirit of depend- enee upon natural advantages which once deluded the people of the city is yielding to a more energetic acceptance of the principles of modern commerce, and railway conncxions, near and remote, are increasing year by

year. The immense increase of population and products in that wide south-west that stretches out beyond to the Mexican border offers new accessions of commercial tribute. Mexico holds out fair assurance of a new era of political order and material development ; and within the city's immediate bounds both the convictions of her citizens and the movement of capital are recognizing theoretically and practically the necessity and advan- tage of manufactures. About ten million dollars are at present invested in this direction, and the aggregate is steadily growing.

Within the last two years (1882-83) a new impulse towards arehi- tectural improvement has shown itself, and several edifices of com- paratively imposing character have been erected. Chief among them is the new Cotton Exchange. The small public squares here and there in the city have been laid out in lawns and adorned with fountains ; but, as long as the great body of the people is not sub- jected to the discomforts of pent-up living, the larger reservations of ground intended for public parks are likely to remain as they are, unimproved. Suburban pleasure resorts are few, the principal being two waterside gardens of moderate pretension on the neigh- bouring margin of Lake Ponchartrain.

The creoles of New Orleans and the surrounding delta are a hand- some, graceful, intelligent race, of a decidedly Gallic type, though softened in features, speech, and carriage, and somewhat relaxed in physical and mental energies by the enervating influences that blow from the West Indies and the Spanish Main. Their better class does not offer to the eye that unpleasing evidence of gross admixture of race which distinguishes those Latin-American communities around the borders of the adjacent seas; and the name they have borrowed from those regions does not necessarily imply, any more than it excludes, a departure from a pure double line of Latin descent. They are brave, proud, courteous, slow to offend, quick to resent, gay, fond of pomp, and display an ardent relish for pagcantries of such childish sort as offers a strong hint of their Spanish-American relationship. They are very musical, yet not, as a class, highly trained in music, have some love of the fine arts, but are little acquainted with or interested in its modern devclopments, and are comparatively upproductive of art work. The famous carnival dis- plays of New Orleans are participated in largely by the '"Americain," 7.e., the Anglo-American ; but they mark

one of the victories of Spanish-American over North-American tastes, and probably owe mainly to the ‘‘ Americain” their pretentious dignity and to the creole their more legitimate harlequin frivolity. Out of the simple

N Hk W—

idea of masked revelry in the open streets, as borrowed from the great Italian cities, the American bent for organization appcars to have developed, by a natural growth, the costly fashion of gor- geous torcli-lighted processions of elaborately equipped masques in tableaux drawn on immense cars by teains of eaparisoned mules, and combining to illustrate in a symmetrical whole some theme chosen from the great faiths or literatures of history. This carnival has grown to last two or threc days, during which time its extrava- gances quite engross public attention with an elaborate mock- restoration of the gaudiest Oriental and feudal European life and times; the daily press shows long lists of names of citizens knighted or invested with imaginary dukedoms (at a fixed price); and many thousands of visitors from all parts of America come, or tarry, yearly to see these laborious pomps.

The first settlers of New Orleans were such men as colonies in America were generally made of when planted by royal com- nercial enterprise, and such wives as could be gathered hap-hazard from the ranks of Indian allies, African slave cargoes, and the inmates of French houses of correction. As time passed, gentler and often better blood was infused by the advent of the filles 4 la cassette, by victims of lettres-de-cachet, by the cadets of noble families, holding land grants or military commissions, by Spanish officials glad to strengthen their influence in the colony through matrimonial alliances, and by royalists fleeing the terrors of the French Revolution. The creole civilization that grew from these sources acquired two of its strongest characteristics from the facts, first that it developed under the evil reigns of French and Spanish Bourbons, and second that it was founded on the system of African slavery. The influences of the elimate and landscape were sucli as to emphasize rather than counteract the effects of these conditions; and, when in the year 1809 Napoleon’s wars caused an exodus of West Indian creoles into New Orleans that immediately doubled the town’s population, the place naturally and easily became the one stronghold of

Latin-American ideas in the United States, a harbour of contrabandists, Guadeloupian pirates, and Spanish-American revolutionists and filibusters. Under the glacier-like pressure of Anglo-American immigration, capital, enterprise, and education, this creole civilization has slowly and with stubborn reluctance yielded ground, and is at length fairly beginning to amalgamate with the better social system of the American nation. And yet the creole has stamped his initials upon well-nigh every aspect in the life of the city that has broadened out so widely on every side of his antique town. Some effect, of course, is attributable to those natural surroundings that have so qualified the creole's own Gallic energies. Between the two influences the whiole life of the place shows an apathy of desire, a langour of performance, and an intolerance of all sorts of rigour, that makes it unlike those sister cities from which it is separated both by the eutire breadth and by the peculiar sentiment of that great belt of States which still dis-tinguishes itself, more proudly than profitably, as the South.

Churches, both Catholic and Protestant, are very numerous in New Orleans, though not generally fine or imposing. St Patrick's, however, has a majestic tower; the First Presbyterian cliurch, in Lafayette Square, is a tasteful Gothic structure; and the cathedral of St Louis, the church of the Immaculate Conception, in Baronne Street, and some others have handsome intcriors. The number of private charitable institutions is also large, and their management excellent. Those under municipal control are not nearly so good, but are improving. The system of public education is a large aud excellent one deserving much praise. It embraces the youth both of the white and of the black and mulatto populations, is carried up through a full high-school grade, and is steadily improving. The police force is small, ill-paid, and ineffieicnt, and the whole police system dilapidated and bad.

The coloured population, notwithstanding the presence among it of that noted free quadroon class which has enjoyed a ccrtain legal freedom for many generations, has not greatly improved since the date of emancipation. A conventional system of caste cuts them off from the stimulating hope of attaining social rank, and confines them closely to servile employments. The probability seems to be that their decided elevation must wait upon their acquisition of material wealth, an achievement which the con- ditions mentioned and some inherent deficiencies of the race tend to make

extremcly difficult. Besides the large Anglo-American and creole populations, there are in New Orleans weighty fractions of Irish and Germans and an appreciable number of Italians, Sicilians, and Spaniards. The Babel of tongues in the ‘‘ French Market” immediately below Jackson Square and at the ‘‘ Picayune Tier” Just adjacent is famed as far as the city of which it is a feature. Another noted feature of New Orleans is its cemeteries. Owing to the undrained condition of the subsoil, burials are made entircly above ground, in tombs of stuccoed brick and of granite and marble. Some of these are very elegant and costly, and many of the burial-grounds, with their long alleys of these tombs of diverse designs deeply shaded by avenues of cedars and the Afagnolia grandiflora, possess a severe but emphatic beauty.

The climate is not marked by extremes of heat or cold. The

wide reaches of water and wet lands that lie about the city on every side temper all airs, and the thermometer rarely passes above 95° or below 27°F. The consequent humidity of the atmosphere, however, gives the climate an enervating quality and an apparent warmth and cold beyond the actual temperature. It is rarely invigorat- ing, and during the long summer between June and October is distinctly though not severely debilitating ; but in the absence of epidemic yellow fever, whose visitations are becoming more and more infrequent, there is no ‘‘sickly season”; and those who visit the city between the months of November and June, the term in which the eommercial movement is at its height, may enjoy from its beginning to its end the delights and beauties of a redundant spring time, and find easy entrance into the social gaieties of a high-spirited pleasure-loving people. (G. W. C.) NEW PLYMOUTH, a seaport on the west coast of the North Island of New Zealand, is situated about 20 miles to the north-eastward of Cape Egmont, in 39° 4’ S. lat. and 174° 5’‘E. long. It is the capital of the provincial dis- trict of Taranaki. The position of the town is picturesque, sloping to the ocean in front, and with a background of forest surmounted by the snow-clad cone of Mount Egmont (8000 feet). The settlement was founded in 1841 by the Plymouth Company under the auspices of the New Zealand Company, and chiefly consisted of emigrants from Devon- shire

and Cornwall. The railway to Wellington is rapidly approaching completion. The town has a hospital, several places of worship, and manufactories for coach-building and painting, for furniture, for rope and twine, for tan- ning, and for making brick, tile, and pottery. On the beach at New Plymouth there are extensive deposits of ironsand. New Plymouth returns one member to the house of repre- sentatives, and is a borough with an elective mayor and municipal council. The population in 1883 was about 4000. NEWPORT, a municipal and parliamentary borough of Hampshire, and the county town of the Isle of Wight, is situated near the centre of the island, at the head of the navigation of the Medina river, about 7 miles from the sea at Cowes. Three separate railway lines connect it with Cowes, Ryde, and Ventnor. On account of its central position Newport has since the decay of the more ancient town of Carisbrooke absorbed the principal trade of the island. The church of St Thomas of Canterbury, rebuilt in 1854 in the Decorated style, contains many interesting old monuments; and one by Marochetti to the princess Elizabeth, daughter of Charles I., has been erected by Queen Victoria. Carisbrooke castle is about a mile from the town, and Parkhurst barracks are in the immediate neighbourhood. The guildhall, erected in 1816 from the designs of Nash, includes the town-hall in the upper story with the market-place below. The grammar school (the scene of the negotiations between Charles I. and the Parliament) was founded in 1612, and there is a blue-coat school for girls founded in 1761. A consider- able trade is carried on in timber, malt, wheat, and flour; and Newport is the commercial centre whence the smaller towns of the island are supplied. The boundary of the borough of Newport was defined and extended by the Newport Borough Act, 1876. The population of the municipal borough (area 501 acres) in 1881 was 9357, and of the parliamentary borough (area 410 acres) 9144.

When the lordship of the Isle of Wight passed from the lords of Carisbrooke to Edward I., Newport began to supersede Carisbrooke as the chief town of the island. Camden speaks of it as the principal seaport of the island, ‘‘in times past Medena and Novus Burgus de Meden,” that is, the new borough of Medina. In the 23d of Edward I. it sent two members to parliament, but not again till the 27th of Elizabeth, from which time it enjoyed the privilege without interruption until 1867, when the number of members was reduced to one. The borough was incorporated by James I.

NEWPORT, a seaport, market-town, and municipal and parliamentary borough of Monmouthshire, is situated on the right bank of the Usk, about 4 miles from its confluence with the Bristol Channel, and 12 miles north-east from Cardiff. On the east, north, and west it is finely sheltered

by a line of lofty hills, and the neighbouring scenery is picturesque; but the town is chiefly composed of a mean class of houses, although there are many good villas in the suburbs. The old parish church of St Woollos is one of » the most curious churches in England. Originally it con- sisted only of the present nave,—a fine specimen of grand though perfectly unadorned Romanesque architecture ; but a massive square tower (of the time of Henry III.) and a chancel were subsequently added; a large western lady-chapel is interposed between the nave and the tower. The old castle, built about 1130 by Robert earl of Glou- cester, was a very extensive structure in the Late Perpen- dicular. The two towers and the main central mass still remain; a portion has been converted into a brewery. The old monastery of Friars Preachers (Dominicans or Black Friars) has been entirely rebuilt, and is occupied as a private residence. The other principal public buildings are the spacious Victoria Hall, the Albert Hall, the new town-hall, the market-house, the custom-house, the union workhouse, the infirmary, and the free library and school of art. Newport owes its rapid increase to its situation on a deep and spacious tidal river, which renders it a con- venient outlet for the trade of a very rich mineral district. It is now supplied with very extensive docks and wharves, to which steamers of the largest size can have access at all tides. The old dock of 44 acres, opened in 1842, received in 1858 an addition of 7? acres; and in 1875 the new Alexandra dock of 25 acres was opened, land being re- tained surrounding it to the extent of 400 acres, available for the construction of wharves and warehouses, and for extension of the dock area. There is regular steam com- munication with Bristol, Liverpool, and Ireland. In 1882 the number of vessels in the foreign and colonial trade that entered the port was 1656 of 734,264 tons, the number that cleared 2143 of 1,078,245 tons. In the same year there entered in the coasting trade 8020 vessels of 1,048,626 tons, and cleared 7667 vessels of 700,500 tons. The town possesses large iron foundries and engineering works, and among the other industries the principal are the manufac- ture of

waggons and wheels, patent nails, bolts, and wire. The manufacture of steel in the district is rapidly increasing. Shipbuilding was formerly carried on to a large extent. The building of iron ships has recently been commenced by several firms. The population of the municipal borough, which in 1801 was only 1135, had increased in 1831 to 7062, in 1851 to 20,279, in 1871 to 27,069, and in 1881 to 35,313. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 1690 acres) in 1881 was 38,427. Newport is called Novus Burgus by Giraldus Cambrensis to dis- tinguish it from the old Roman city of Caerleon about 3 miles distant. The town is nowhere mentioned in history before the beginning of the 10th century. Tradition states that Ethelfleda was killed at a great battle at Castell Newydd (Newport), but according to another account the Saxon sovercign slain was Ethelfred. The town received its first charter from Edward IT. It is included in the Monmouth parliamentary district of boroughs.

NEWPORT, a city of the United States, capital of Campbell county, Kentucky, lies on the south bank of the Ohio river, opposite Cincinnati, and separated from Covington by the Licking river. With the larger city it is connected by a road-and-railway pier bridge, and with the lesser by a suspension bridge partly used by a street railway. Practically both Newport and Covington are residental suburbs of Cincinnati, but in the matter of population (20,433 in 1880) Newport ranks third among the cities in the State. The local manufactories comprise rolling-mills, steel-works, iron foundries, watch-case fac- tories, and stove factories. For many years a small garrison of United States soldiers has been stationed here. The first settlement dates from 1791.

NEWPORT a city of the United States, one of the

NEWPORT

capitals of the State of Rhode Island, and among the most fashionable of American watering-places, is situated on the west coast of the island from which the State derives its name, on the isthmus of the southern peninsula. By rail itis 19 miles south-south-west of Fall River, and by steamer 162 miles from New York. In front lies an excellent harbour opening into Narragansett Bay, with a fine anchorage in 30 feet of water between Fort Adams (a nulitary post of great importance) and Goat Island (head- quarters

of the torpedo division of the United States navy), and allowing vessels of 18 feet draught to reach the piers at low water. But it is rather the attractions of the east and south coast that have made the fortunes of the modern city : —First or Easton's Beach, one of the safest for surf- bathing ; Second or Sachuest Beach, exposed to heavier

B Sos " Reet Ales \

Plan of Newport, Rhode Island. 1. Redwood Library, | 3, Trinity Church. 2, Touro Park. 4. State-House,

points of interest are connected with the city by avenues and drives, many of which are lined in whole or in part with villas and cottages; and in fact Newport as a watering-place may be said to comprise the whole of the southern peninsula. In its narrower limits as a city it is a place of no small interest. In Washington Square, the central point of the old town, stand the State-house (dating from 1742), the city-hall (1763), and the opera-house (1867). Trinity Church has an organ presented by Bishop (then Dean) Berkeley, and the first Baptist church dates from 1638. The synagogue, founded in 1762, is the oldest in the United States; it is still used, though there are few Jews in Newport, endowments for keeping it in repair and maintaining services having been left by the brothers Abraham and Judah Touro, the latter of

'whom also gave the city $10,000 towards the purchase of

Touro Park. The Jewish cemetery is the subject of one of Longfellow's best pieces. Redwood Library, established in 1747, has 27,000 volumes; and there is a free people's library with 15,000. Besides the bronze statue of Com- modore M. C. Perry, of Japanese fame, Touro Park con-

NE W—-NEW

tains an old tower, supported on round arches, which has been one of the greatest antiquarian puzzles in the United States—some considering it a monument of the Norsemen who visited America before Columbus, and others maintaining that it is only an old windmill dating At one time,

previous to the War of Independence, Newport was the seat of great commercial activity, but it now holds a very secondary posi-

from the 17th century.

tion both in trade and manufacturing industry. Its ex- ports and imports in 1882 made a total of only $17,513; and one or two cotton-mills and a brass foundry are almost its only public works. The population of the city was 12,521 in 1870, and 15,693 in 1880.

The harbour of Newport was visited by Verezzani in 1524, and

the first settlement was made in 1639 by a party under the lead of

William Coddington. Rapidly increasing from 4640 inhabitants in 1730 to 12,000 in 1774, the town soon took rank immediately after Boston in the matter of trade. But it suffered severely during the Revolution, being occupied by the British forces from 1776 to 1779, and on their evacuation having its wharves and fortifications destroyed and its library and records carried off. In 1788 Brissot de Warville found houses falling to ruin and grass growing in the public square, and its inhabitants were at that time less than 6000. During the first half of this century the recovery of the city was comparatively slow.

NEW PROVIDENCE. See Banaaras.

NEW ROSS, a market-town and parliamentary borough of Leinster, Ireland, partly in Wexford and partly in Kilkenny, is situated on the acclivity of a hill on the east bank of the Barrow, 2 miles below its junction with the Nore, 85 miles south-south-west of Dublin and 24 west- north-west of Wexford. The Barrow is crossed by an iron bridge, erected at a cost of £50,000, with a swivel pillar in the centre on which a portion of the bridge is turned to admit the passage of vessels. The principal buildings are the tholsel surmounted by turret with clock, the court- house, the fever hospital, Trinity hospital, and the poor- house. There is a brisk trade by means of the Barrow, the principal exports being grain, flour, butter, bacon, and wool. In 1882 the number of vessels that entered the port was 1670 of 260,578 tons, the number that cleared 1635 of 281,101 tons. There is inland

communication for ships by the Nore to Inistiogue, and by the Barrow to St Mullins, while barges can proceed as far as Athy, where the Barrow joins the Grand Canal. New Ross possesses breweries and tanyards. There is a salmon fishery above and below the town. The population of New Ross in 1871 was 6772, and in 1881 it was 6626.

It is stated that St Abban built the abbcy of Rossmactreoin, which gave rise to an ancient city formerly called Rossglas. Aceording to Camden, New Ross was founded by Isabella, daughter of Strongbow and consort of William le Mareschal, afterwards Earl Pembroke. A charter was granted to it by Roger Bigod in the reign of Edward I., which was cxtended by James I. and James II. From 1374 it enjoyed the privilege of returning two members to parliament, but at the Union the number was reduced to one. In 1269 the town was surrounded by walls. The fortresscs were dis- mantled by Cromwell, but some of thcir remains are stil] extant.

NEWRY, a seaport, market-town, and parliamentary borough, partly in Armagh but chiefly in Down, province of Ulster, Ireland, is situated on the Newry navigation at the head of Carlingford Lough, and on two railway lines, 18 miles south-east of Armagh and 63 north of Dublin. The western part, called Ballybot, is connected with the eastern part or old town in Down, situated on the acclivity of a hill, by four stone bridges and a swivel bridge. The more modern streets are wide and well-paved, and there are many handsome houses and shops. The principal build- ings are the infantry barracks, the town-hall, the market- house, the court-house, and the assembly rooms. Newry is one of the most important ports of Ulster, and in con- nexion with several sub-ports farther down the river is the outlet for the trade of a very extensive district. In 1882

the number of vessels that entered the port was 676 of 80,586 tons burden, the number that cleared 654 of 65,262 tons. The principal exports are grain, provisions, eggs, cattle, linen cloth, and flax, and the imports include timber, manufactures, groceries, and provisions. In the neigh- bourhood granite of a fine quality is quarried, and the town possesses rope and sail works, breweries, distilleries, flour- mills, and tanneries. The population of Newry in 1861 was 13,108, which had increased in 1871 to 14,158, and in 1881 to 15,085.

Newry is very ancient. In 1175 an abbey was founded there by Maurice M'Loughlin, king of Ireland, which possessed extensive endowments and privileges. The abbey was converted in 1543 into a collegiate church for secular priests, and was dissolved by Edward VI., who granted it to Sir Nicholas Bagnal, marshal of Ireland. He made it his private residence, and by his enterprise and cnergy laid the foundations of the prosperity of the town. In 1689 Newry was set on fire by the duke of Berwick when in retreat before Schomberg. Charters were granted to the town by James I. and James II. By the charter of James I. it received the privilege of sending two members to parliament, but at the Union it was restricted to one member.

NEW SHOREHAM. See SHOREHAM.

NEW SOUTH SHETLAND, or simply SourH SuHer- LAND, a group of islands on the borders of the Antarctic polar regions, lying about 600 miles south-south-east of Cape Horn, between 61° and 63° 10'S. lat. and between 53° and 63° W. long,, and separated by Bransfield Strait from the region composed of Palmer Land, Trinity Land, Louis Philippe Land, &. The more considerable islands are those of Smith (or James), Jameson (or Low), Snow, Livingston, Deception, Greenwich, Nelson, King George, Elephant, and Clarence. Deception Island is particularly remarkable as of purely volcanic origin. On the south-east side an opening 600 feet wide gives entrance to an internal crater-lake (Port Forster) nearly circular, with a diameter of about five miles and a depth of 97 fathoms. Steam still issues from numerous vents, and hot springs bubble up from beneath the snow-clad surface (HE. N. Kendall in Jour. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1831). Most of the islands are rocky and mountainous, and some of their peaks are between 6000 and 7000 feet in height. Covered with snow for the greater part of the

year, and growing nothing but lichens, mosses, and some scanty grass, the South Shetlands are of interest almost solely as a great haunt of seals, which share possession with albatrosses, penguins, and other sea fowl. The capture of the seals, which began shortly after the islands were rediscovered by Captain William Smith of the brig ‘‘ Wiliam” in 1819, has been carried on to the present time. Dirck Gheritz was prob- ably the first discoverer, in 1598. Edward Bransfield, of the frigate “Andromache,” ascertained the extent of the group in 1820; and Captain Weddell (1820-21), D’Urville (1838), and Wilkes (1839) explored the islands in detail. A smaller group of islands—Coronation Island, Laurie Island, &c.—lying 200 miles east of the South Shetlands, bears the name of New or South Orkney.

NEW SOUTH WALES. This was the name given by Plate X. Captain Cook, in his exploratory voyage in 1770, to the southern portion of the eastern coast of Australia, from some imagined resemblance of its coast-line to that of South Wales. The name was afterwards extended to the eastern half of Australia, but by subsequent subtractions has gradually received a more limited meaning. It is still, however, three times the size of Great Britain and Ireland, and larger than any state in Europe except Russia. The present British colony of New South Wales is bounded by the Pacific Ocean on the E., by Queensland on the N., by South Australia on the W., and by Victoria on the 8. It lies between 28° and 38° S. lat., and 141° and 154° E. long,, extending over about nine degrees of latitude and about twelve and a half degrees of longitude. The coast-line,

which is about 700 miles in length, extends from Cape Howe (37° 30’) at the south-eastern corner of Australia to Point Danger in 28° 7’S. The colony is approximately rectangular in form, with an average depth from the coast of 650 miles and an average width from north to south of 500 miles. The superficial area is estimated at 310,000 square miles, or about one-tenth of the whole of Australia.

Along the seaboard are twenty-two well-defined head- lands or capes and about a score of bays or inlets, to mark which for navigators there are twenty-three lighthouses. There are four very fine natural harbours, viz., Jervis Bay, Port Jackson, Broken Bay, and Port Stephens, and several others

of minor importance. Of these, only Port Jackson, on which is situated the city of Sydney, has attained as yet to commercial importance. The port second in com- mercial importance is Newcastle, at the mouth of the Hunter river, which is the great coal-shipping port of the colony. Secondary harbours, available for coasting steamers, south of Sydney are to be found at Port Hacking, Wollongong, Kiama, Shoalhaven, Bateman's Bay, Ulladulla, Merimbula, and Twofold Bay. To the north of Sydney the secondary ports are at the mouths of the Hawkesbury, the Manning, the Hastings, the Macleay, the Nambucca, the Bellinger, the Clarence, the Richmond, and the Tweed rivers. These are mostly bar harbours, but the Clarence is a noble river, and when the entrance is im- proved will become a great port.

The characteristic natural feature of New South Wales is the great Cordillera range running north and south. The average elevation of this range is about 2500 feet. The highest point, Mount Kosciusko, reaches, however, a height of 7300 feet, about 700 feet below the theoretical line of perpetual snow, yet snow has never more than once wholly disappeared. None of the interior parts of the colony attain to a similar elevation. This range runs generally parallel to the coast, varying from 30 to 140 miles distant, being nearest at the south and receding the farthest at the sources of the Goulburn river, the main tributary of the Hunter. The crest of this range is in some places narrow ; in others it spreads out into a wide table-land. The eastern slopes are somewhat rugged and precipitous, the sandstone especially being deeply fissured by the watercourses; but along the greater part of the coast there is a belt of flat land generally of high fertility. At the outlet of many of the streams descending from the range are large lagoons, sometimes closed against the sea by sandbars, and at other times opened by the force of the outrushing waters. The principal of these are Lake Illawarra and Lake Macquarie, Tuggarah Lake, Lake Myall, Wallis Lake, Watson Taylor Lake, and Queen's Lake. Lake Macquarie, however, is rather a magnificent estuary than a lake, and if the bar at the entrance could be removed would become a commercial port, as the hills at the back are rich incoal. The inland lakes are few and unimportant. They are mostly shallow and occasionally dry. On the western side of the main range the general slope of the country is towards the west, the drainage being into the Murray, the Murrumbidgee, the Lachlan, and the Darling; but the drainage of all of

them unites in the Murray, at the town of Wentworth, near the south-western corner of the colony.

Climate.—The rainfall differs very much in different parts of the colony. It is heaviest on the eastern coast, where the easterly gales break against the main range. Here the average is 40 inches on the south to 65 inches on the north. Sydney, with forty-three years' observation, has a meanof 50 inches. In winter the temperature sometimes falls to the freezing point, and it rises in summer to' 85° or 90° on very hot days. The mean temperature of Sydney is 62°°5. On the table-lands the rainfall is from 20 to 35

inches. In winter the temperature in extreme cases falls 10° or 15° below the freezing point, and in the height of summer it rises to 100° or 105°. The mean temperature may be found from 50° to 60°. On the great western plains the rainfall is much less, falling rapidly as the high land is left to 18 inches, and in the far west to 8 inches. Here the temperature seldom falls more than 6° or 8° below freezing, but in summer it often rises to 110°, and in extreme cases to 120°; and the mean temperatures range from 60° on the south to 68° on the north. Along the coast-line the air is moistand soft; the temperature is mild, the thermometer ranging from 78° in January to 59° in July, and the mean for the year being about 624°. The prevailing wind in summer is from the north-east, though occasionally hot, dry winds come from the north-western interior, which are generally followed by a sudden and violent reaction from the south, known as 'southerly bursters." On such occasions the thermometer will some- times suddenly fall in a few hours 20 or 30 degrees. The violent rainstorms generally come from the east, shifting from north-east to south-east; but, as they are mostly accompanied with a high temperature, their origin is to be looked for towards the north. During the winter months the wind blows mostly from the west. It is a dry wind, and the weather is generally clear, bright, and invigorat- ing. On the table-land the air is much drier than on the coast, the winters are longer and colder, and the summer heat, except in the middle of hot days, much below the coast temperature; and this elevated region is much resorted to by the citizens of Sydney as a summer resort. As the country slopes down towards the west the dryness of the climate increases. Though the heat is sometimes

oppressive, the climate is not unhealthy ; while sheep and cattle are more free from disease here than in moister parts of the colony.

Geology.—The main mountain chain, running north and south, with the eastern portion of the continent generally, must have been submerged during the early Miocene period to the extent of about 4000 feet below its present level, leaving the highest portions of the range standing out as islands, which have probably never wholly been submerged since the commencement of the Mesozoic era, and to this is attributable the survival of the cycads, araucarias, and other ancient vegetable forms which now abound in Australia; the living Ceratodus forsteri of Queensland, and the Marsupialia, also point to the same conclusion. ‘To the westward it throws out many lateral spurs, diminishing gradually in elevation, and determining the basins of the tributaries of the rivers owing westward. The most important of these lateral ranges runs north- westward towards the Darling and beyond to the Barrier Ranges in the north-western part of the colony. The summit of this lateral range has been partly denuded, and it dips towards the plain of the Darling where that river cuts through it. This being the only water channel from all the north-western portion of the colony, all the tributaries of the Darling converge into this depression. This range divides the western portion of the colony into two main basins, the northern of which contains all the affluents of the Darling, and the southern is the Murrum- bidgee basin, with its affluents the Murray and the Lachlan. These basins consist of a large Cretaceous area, which extends away far beyond the western boundary of the colony. The basis of the mountain system of the colony is granite, and the oldest sedimentary deposit rest- ing on it is the Upper Silurian. In the neighbouring colony of Victoria, Lower Silurian fossils are found over a large area west of Melbourne, but in New South Wales nothing has been definitely determined older than the Upper Silurian. Granite has lifted the superincumbent

deposits, penetrated them, and metamorphosed them in various degrees up to a close resemblance to igneous rocks.

The great western plains of the interior are characterized

by isolated rocks, or short ranges, mostly granite, but occasionally trap, long sand ridges, and clay basins. The sand and clay both result from the disintegration of granite and trap, the sand ridges having been wind-blown, and the clay washed into the lower levels. into the yellow clay furnish an almost undrinkable brackish water, from the salts of soda and iron, and occasionally lime, potash, and magnesia, yielded by the felspars.

The Upper Silurian rocks occur frequently, but chiefly on the western watershed of the great dividing range. They consist of conglomerates, sandstones, slates, mud- stones, and limestones, and have a general meridional strike. Devonian rocks are displayed on the western flanks of the Blue Mountains. They include sandstones, con- glomerates, limestones, and shales, related by their fossils to the Silurian beds below and to the Carboniferous beds above. The Carboniferous series is very widely developed. The strata are probably not less than 10,000 feet thick, the lower beds containing both plants and marine fauna.

The Upper Carboniferous series includes the lower Coal-

measures of New South Wales. These are traceable along the coast from 314° to 354°S. The coal-seams are visible

above the sea-level from Coal Cliff, 20 miles south of

Sydney, the seams rising to the southward, and from Lake Macquarie, north of Sydney, the seams rising to the north- ward, ‘The great coal basin extends westward along what seems to have been a depression between the northern and southern elevated portions of the old main range, and, lying under what is now the Blue Mountains, passes up northwards along the western flank of the main range towards the boundary of Queensland. The western edge of the coal basin is not determined. Overlying the coal basin, to the westward of Sydney, is a Mesozoic sandstone formation, 1000 feet thick, while above this, and also inter- mixed with it, lies a shale deposit. All these series have been disturbed by dykes of basalt, diabase, and dolerite. Some of the coal-seams have been tilted by this intrusion ; in other cases the dip has not been changed ; and in some cases the adjacent coal has been charred into coke. Vol- canic disturbance seems to have been very

active during the Tertiary epoch, and the igneous formations occupy about 40,000 square miles.

Minerals.—Commercial mining is at present limited to gold, silver, eopper, tin, coal, and oil shales, The greater portion of the gold hitherto raised has been from alluvial deposits. These are of Permian, Cretaceous, Tertiary, and Quaternary ages, and are derived from the degradation of the older sedimentary rocks of Upper Silurian, Devonian, and Lower Carboniferous ages. The formations in association with which gold has been found are widely scattered over the colony, and are estimated to occupy nearly one-fourth of its area. In the reefs, gold seldom occurs without one or more of the following sulphides :—iron pyrites, galena, mispickel, blende, and copper pyrites. The gold is always more or less alloyed with silver, and there are occasionally traces of copper, iron, osmiridium, and other metals. The greatest depth at which auriferous reefs have been worked is 940 feet at Adelong. The value of the gold raised in the colony up to the end of 1882 was £34,839,847. Silver has been fonnd in several places, but has only been profitably worked at Boorook. The lodes vary in width rom 1 to 3 feet, and are situated in belts of fclspar porphyry, alternated with beds of fossilifcrous shales of the Devonian forma- tion. The value of silver raised to the end of 1882 was £187,429. Copper ore is traceable on the surface in very many places, and the cupriferous formations are already estimated to cover an area cqual to 4,300,000 acres. The value of copper exported to the end of 1882 was £3,538,285. Tin has been profitably worked since 1872, and the value exported to the end of 1882 was £5,173,038. It is nearly all taken from alluvial deposits—in the first instance from the beds of existing creeks, but more recently from the beds of old rivers, sometimes covered by basalt. It is all obtained from the Tertiary and Quaternary drifts, composed of the detritus from the stanniferous granite. The area of stanniferous deposits is estimated at 5,440,000 acres, the principal tin-bearing localities being in the

Many of the wells sunk

high lands of the great dividing chain in the northern and southern districts. The known Coal-measures embrace an area of about 24,000 square miles,

the seams varying from 3 feet to 25 feet in thickness. The seams are mostly horizontal, The dip is usually under 5°. The principal collieries are near Newcastle, and on the Illawarra coast, and at the western foot of the Blue Mountains. The seains worked to the south of Sydney are morc anthracitic than those worked to the north. The value of the coal raised during 1882 was £944,405. What is called, though erroneously, ‘‘kerosene shale” is worked in the west at Hartley and in the south at Joadja Creek. It is really a species of cannel coal. A good illuminating oil is distilled froin it, and it is largely shipped for use in gas-works, a moderate percentage of it greatly improving the quality of the gas. The value of this cannel coal raised up to the end of 1882 was £665,160. Iron exists in abundance, and has been worked at Mittagong and Lithgow Valley, but the colonial cost of labour has made it difficult to compete with English imports. Red and brown ore exists in abundance in the sandstone formation. It contains 55 per cent. of metallic iron. Beds of clayband iron ore are found in the Coal-measures, both on the west of the Blue Mountains and ou the Illawarra coast. Antimony has been found in several places, and has been slightly worked in the Macleay and Armidale districts, where the lodes traverse sedimentary rocks of the Devonian age. Argentiferous lead is found in many places in the Silurian, Devonian, and granite formations, but hitherto the attempts to work it at a profit have been a failure. Bismuth has been found in the tin-bearing rocks, and asbestos in veins in serpentines ; chromic iron and manganese ore have also been found in consider- able quantities. The tin-bearing drifts in the river gravels con- tain precious stones, —the diamond, sapphire, emerald, ruby, opal, amethyst, garnet, chrysolite, topaz, eairmgorm, and onyx having all been found. The colony is well supplied with building stone, eranite, sandstone, flagging, marble, limestone, slate, and fire-clay ; and brick and pottery elays occur in abundance.

Agricultwre.—The fertile soils consist chiefly of the alluvial deposits on the banks of the rivers and the detritus of the igneous rocks. On the rich flats on the banks of the river Hunter, mostly devoted to the growing of lucerne for hay, six cuttings are generally taken off in the year. To the southward of Sydney the coast land is very largely devoted to dairy-farming, the herbage being rich and sweet, especially in localities where there has been any basaltic overflow. The principal supply of butter and cheese for the Sydney market comes from this district. Along the coast to the north- ward of Port

Stephens maize is very largely cultivated for horse- food. The yield in an average scason is about 50 bushels per acre. Sugar has not been commercially succcssful south of Clarence. But on that river, and on the Richmond, and all the way to the border of Queensland, it has proved profitable, and is rapidly extending. Oranges are not cultivated to advantage south of Sydney, but any- where to the northward along the eastern slopes they grow freely. Nearly every description of European fruit is cultivated without difficulty. Tobacco is increasingly grown both on the coast and on the alluvial flats of the western waters. In earlier days wheat was very largely grown upon the coast, but in consequence of the rust this crop has been driven inland on to basaltic areas. The produc- tion of wine is limited only by the demand. Hitherto the prineipal seats of this industry have been in the Hunter river district, where many varieties of light wine are produced, and in the district round Albury, where, in a dry, warm. climate, and from a rich volcanic soil, a strong, full-bodied wine is obtained.

Grazing was the beginning of the industrial life of Australia, and it is still the great source of its wealth. The mildness of the winter allows stock to be pastured out of doors all the year round, and supersedes the necessity of artificial food. The consequence is that the country has been easily and rapidly overspread with sheep and cattle farms, the only natural check being the want of water in the remote parts and the occasional discouragement of poor markets. The speciality of the Australian wool is its fineness, and the small merino sheep are found to be the best-suited to the pasture and the climate. The stock which is now most appre- ciated is that of Australian breeders who have kept their flocks free from intermixture for a long period. The Australian merino has established for itself a separate type. Sheep as a rule are remarkably healthy in the Australian climate. In wet seasons and on stiff land they are liable to fluke and to foot-rot. Scab has occasionally appeared ; but the precautions taken against it now are very strict, and it has not prevailed in the colony sinee 1t was stamped out in 1866. Cattle are liable to pleuro-pneumonia, which is sometimes very destructive. ;

Flora.—The flora of New South Wales, which comprises about 3000 species of plants, exclusive of mosses, lichens, fungi, and sea-weeds, is characterized by many peculiar forms. The great orders of dicotyledonous

plants on the eastern side of the dividing range are respectively Leguminose, Composite, Myrtacex, Proteaceex, Epacridex, and Rutacce, three of which (the Myrtacew, Proteaccex, and Epacridex) include the great majority of the trees and shrubs which differ so essentially from the ordinary European types.

XVI — s2

410

Amongst the Myrtacew (containing some 140 species) there are plants ranging from the minute Beckia to the gigantic Huealyptus. These, for the most part, have valuable resins and oils, and possess astringent and antiscorbutic properties; the foliage is evergreen, and the flowers vary from white and ycllow to purple and crimson. The forests are principally myrtaceous, some speeies yielding esculent fruits, while the wood aud bark of many are becoming known throughout the world. While in point of utility the Myrtacee stand unrivalled, the Proteacex, by their various flowers, curiously shaped fruits, and harsh foliage, arrest the attention of the observer. 'The far-famed '' wooden pear" (Xylo- melum pyriforme), the gorgeous "' waratah"' (Telopea speciosissima), and species of the hard-fruited Hakea and the variously coloured Grevillea represent this order in the vicinity of Port Jackson. In New South Wales there is only one heath correctly so termed (Gauitheria hispida), and that only on the summits of snowy mountains near the Bellinger, or on the Australian Alps; but the lovely epacrids, which are abundant near Sydney, take the place of heaths, and two of them (Z. purpurascens and E. mierophylla), as if to increase the beauty of their inflorescence, are sometimes found double even in a wild state. In each region, whether alpine, littoral, or beyond the dividing range, epacrids occur in a greater or less degree. The Leguminose and Composite, though nearly cosmo- politan, attain a comparative maximum in New South Wales, the speeies of the former being over 300 and of the latter 250. Of legu- minous plants, the species of Acacia are the most. numerous (about 100), scattered in some places amongst the trees of the forest, and in others forming dense scrubs, Those remarkable for their scented and nseful wood (such as 4. pendula and A. homalophylla—the ''myalls" of the natives) are highly valued. Sturt's desert pea (Clianthus Dampiert), the Moreton Bay

ehestnut (Castanospermum. australe), and the genus Swainsona have acquired a reputation amongst horticulturists. Many of the composites, the largest of which is the musk-tree (Aster argophyllus), are found not only near the coast but on the arid plains of the interior. Although from the frequent occurrence of eertain orders, the flora of New South Wales is somewhat monotonous, yet the vegetation of the southern mountains, of the north-east portion of the colony, and of moist gullies is wonderfully diversified. The alpine plauts of the south, occurring at an elevation of from 4000 to 6000 feet above the level of the sea, show an affinity for the flora of Tasmania, many plants being common to both colonies, whilst ten species at least are identical with those of Europe. In the northern

when droughts prevail and the usual pasture fails, sheep and cattle find sustenance in salsolaceous bushes, the hardy composites, and

tions from female plants alone.

flowers have been found, but fixocarpus cupressiformis, or the ‘“‘native cherry,” is another anomalons shrub, having, properly raised on an obconical pedicel, which becomes thick, red, and eseulent. In most countries the labiates are herbs or under- shrubs, but in New South Wales there is a large genus of the order (Prostanthera) whieh has species of considerable size, abound- ing im scented and volatile oils, and adorned with a profusion of elegant flowers. The Eastern Australia, but the species are very singular. The column in which the stamens and style are blended is remarkable for its

strueture and the elegance of their flowers, whilst the gigantie object of interest from the earliest days of the colony. Of the palms, five Speeies extend to 0 The walking-stick palm (Kentia monostachya) occurs in the north, and Ptyehosperma Cunninghami and Livistona australis extend to IHawarra. Fauna,—As New South Wales has no natural boundary except the Pacific, there are no organic types which characterize this

colony in the same degree as the marsupials, protcads, eucalypts, — and acacias distinguish the Australian region asa whole. In this respect neither

do its northern distriets differ from South Queens- land nor its southern from north-east Victoria, while its west is uniform with the rest of the great continental plain. With this proviso, New South Wales may be justly regarded as the typieal region of East Australia. It is made up of three strips, each a subregion in itself—the coast, the dividing range and its plateaus, and the lower western plains. The coast ranges, bathed by a heated oceanic current, shclter a warm and moist sea margin, in which as far as 34° 40’ S. lat. we find Jungles of palms, figs, nettle- trees, and a host of other sub-tropical plants, haunted by talegallas, fruit pigeons, flying foxes, &.; the table-lands enjoy an essenti- ally temperate climate; and in the plains of the interior the seanty rainfall imposes further restrictions on animal and vegetable life. The indigenous mammals are all marsupial, with the exception of a few bats and rodents, and even among these Hydromys is eculiar. This indicates permanent isolation since Mesozoic time. he dingo was doubtless introduced by man, while whales and seals belong to no coast in particular. The dugong (Halieore) is not found south of Moreton Bay. Many extinct marsupials, be- longing to Australian types, but of gigantic size, as Diprotodon, Nototherium, Thylaeoleo, with huge kangaroos, are found in Pleistocene deposits. With them are associated Thylacinus and Sarcophilus, now restricted to Tasmania. No Didelphys occurs, fossil or recent. COuscus is tropical only. Nor is the singular Dendrolagus, akin to the phalangers rather than the kangaroos, found in Australia, All other genera of marsupials are represented in New South Wales. The flying ’possum (Petaurista), tiger cat (Dasyurus maculatus), wallaroo (Maeropus robustus), &c., are con- fined to the eastern, and Myrmecobius, Cheropus, and Peragalea to the western districts. Of these Thylacoleo is related to the Jurassic Plagiaulax, Myrmecobius to Amphitherium, &c. , the oldest mammals known to paleontology. —Among birds, woodpeckers, vultures, and many other families are unknown ; while honeysuckers (Jfelli- phaga), lyre birds (Menura), cockatoos, rosellas (Platycercus), brush-tongued lories (Trichoglossus), brush turkeys (Afegapodius), emus, jackasses (Dacelo), moreporks (Podargus), magpies (Gymno- rhina), wood swallows (Artamus), crested pigeons, bower birds, and plain turkeys (bustards) give a most distinct character to the avifauna.—Of reptiles, the luth (Dermatochelys) is not uncommon on the coast, while long-necked tortoises (Chelodina) frequent all inland waters. Lizards of the skink, geeko, and agama families are numerous, as Hinwlia, sleeping lizards (Cyelodus), rock

scorpions (Phyliurus), Jew lizards (Grammatophora), and, in the west, stump- tails (Trachydosaurus), which Dampier deelared the ugliest animals on earth. The monitors are represented by the (so-called) iguanas (Hydrosaurus). Crocodiles are absent. Of snakes, the Crotalide are unknown. The Viperide appear by the death adder (Aean- thophis). Sea snakes, as Platurus and Pelamis, occur upon the coast. The harmless colubrines—Tropidonotus, Dendrophis, Dipsas —are known by single species; but the Elapidz, as Diemenia, the black snake (Pseudeehis), and several species of Hoplocephalus, are common and dangerous. Morelia spilotes, the diamond snake, peculiar to the coast, and Jv variegata, the carpet snake, belong to the pythons. No tailed batrachians occur, but there are a few species of frogs, mainly of the genera Linnodynastes, Pseudophryne, Pelodryas, and Hyla (tree-frog).—As to marine fishes and inverte- brates, the region is naturally intermediate between the Indo-Pacific and South Australian districts, partly limited indeed ou the south by the cold waters of Bass's Straits, but quite open to the north; hence the fauna is rich and various. —The number and variety of the insects of New South Wales is well known. The most distinct types arc probably in the Coleoptera, where Carenum, Anoplognathus, Stigmodera, and Amycterus form very important groups in the Carabidx, Lamellicornes, Buprestidx,and Curculionide res pectively. So also Thynnus among the Hymenoptera. Lepidoptera alone are comparatively few, restricted to the coast, and of Indian types. In like manner the land and freshwater molluses, numerous to the north and east, become rarer towards the south and west, Fisheries. —Up to the present time but little enterprise has been displayed in developing the extensive sea-fisheries of the colony. The fish as a rule are shore-fish, and are not commonly met at a greater distance from the coast than 3 or 4 leagues, or in a greater depth of water than 40 fathoms. The line-fish, such as schnappers, teraglin, king-fish, rock cod, morwong, and other forms, are generally found in the neighbourhood of reefs, or rocky patehes off headlands and in offings; while the net-fish, such as mullet (of various kinds), black and silver bream (or tarwhine), whiting, Dlack-fish, gar-fish, flounders, flathead, tailors, and travally, are obtained on inshore beaches or flats of the many inlets and rivers whieh break the coast-line. No gadoids or codfish have as yet been found, nor any larger flat fish than flounders and soles. The chief freshwater fish are the Murray cod and the golden and

common river perch. Freshwater herrings abound in the eastern rivers, also eels, but they are not much sought

a

Ni w 8s OUT H

after. Oysters abound in all tidal waters. There appear to be three varieties, the mud oyster, the drift, and the rock or foreshore oyster. The drift and rock oyster are in season all the year round in some fisheries, and in quality almost, if not quite, equal the “natives” of Whitstable. Lobsters also abound on the coast, espe- cially where there is good cover afforded by kelpy rocks. Shrimps are not found, but prawns of large size and excellent quality are abundant.

Commerce.—Sydney, the capital, scated on the magnificent har- bour of Port Jackson, is well posted to gather the commerce of the Southern Pacific, its position corresponding with that of San Francisco on the opposite coast of the Northern Pacific. The fiscal policy of the colony has been generally, though not rigidly, one of free trade, and this has greatly helped to make Sydney the chief emporium of Australasia. The total value of the trade in 1882 was very nearly £38,000,000, the imports exceeding the exports by £4,500,000. The intercolonial trade accounts for about one-third of the imports, and that with the United Kingdom for nearly one- half, the import from foreign states being about one-tenth. The export trade with foreign states is below one-thirteenth of the whole. The great items of export consist of wool, skins, leather, hides, and tallow. To the neighbouring colony of Victoria there is a very large export of sheep and cattle. Next to the produce of the pastoral industry comes the produce of the mining industry, con- sisting of gold, coin, tin, copper, and coal. Other articles are of nuinor importance.

Railways.—These, with one small and detached exception, are entirely in the hands of the Government, and nearly all the capital has been raised in England. They are under the management of a commissioner, subject to the general superintendence of the minis- ter for public works. The whole system is divided into three groups, the southern, the western, and the northern, with their respective branches.

Telegraph and Postal Service.—The telegraph and postal systems are entirely in the hands of the Government. Every important place in the colony is within the range of both services, and New South Wales unites with New Zealand in subsidizing the mail route between Sydney and San Fraucisco.

Banks, —There are thirteen joint-stock banks, five of tliem beiug Anglo-Australian, four intercolonial, with their headquarters in Sydney, three branches of intercolonial banks, having their head- quarters elsewhere, and two belonging exclusively to the colony. In 1882 the average note circulation was about £1,500,000, and the coin and bullion held about £3,000,000. There is a savings bank with its branches, under Government management, besides a savings bank department attached to the post-office, and the total deposits in 1882 amounted to £2,600,000, the depositors numbering over 70,000.

Shipping. —The coasting and intercolonial trade sustains a dozen steamship companies, and the trade of nearly all the great ocean lines of steamers converges at Sydney, where the convenience for eoaling is greatest. Mort's Dock is capable of accommodating most of the large steamers that visit the port. The Government possesses another dock of equal size at Biloela, and is constructing another capable of taking in the largest ironclad. There are several private slips, and repairs of any kind can be executed. The headquarters of the imperial navy are in Port Jackson, where the admiralty has a depot. ;

Administration.—The political constitution of New South Wales is that of a self-governing British colony, and rests on the provisions of the Constitution Act. The governor is appointed by the crown, the term of office being generally for five years, and the salary £7000. The governor is the official medium of communication between the colonial Government and the secretary for the colonies, but at the same time the colony maintains its own agent-general in London, who not only sees to all its commercial business, but communi- cates with the colonial office. In the legislative assembly there are more than one hundred members. The number is not fixed, because the Electoral Act provides that electorates in which the votes have increased beyond a stipulated number shall be per- manently entitled

to additional representation. The principle adopted in distributing the representation is that of equal electoral districts, modified, however, by a preference given to the distant and rural constituencies at the cost of the metropolitan electorates. The suffrage qualification is a residence of six months, or the pos- session of a small landed property. The upper house or legislative council consists exclusively of persons nominated for life by the governor, with the advice of the executive council. The number is not fixed, but it is understood that, except in cascs of emergency, the number shall not exceed one-half of that of the legislative assembly, and that no appointments shall be nade during the sitting of parliament. The parliaments are triennial.

Revenue.—The revenue is officially classed nnder three principal heads, as derived from taxation, from publie services, and from land, of which the first yields the least. This is nearly all derived from the custom-house, and principally from the duties on aleoholic liquors, tobacco in its various forms, and groceries. Stamps and

licences are the only form of direct taxation. The municipal sys- tem, being of voluntury adoption, has been only partially applied, a very large proportion of works of improvement being executed by the general Government. The receipts from land are large; the poliey which shouid regulate the alienation of land is a standing subject of political controversy. At the end of 1882 nearly 36,000,000 acres had been alienatcd, the unsold portion being leased by the Government to graziers.

Education. —The educational system was originally that of subsi- dizing the four principal churches, to which were made grants of land for school purposes, as well as annual endowments. Subsequently a national system in imitation of the Irish system was established, and the two were separately worked by a national board and a de- nominational board respectively. These two boards were abolished in 1866, and a public school board appointed to superintend all schools, both national and denominational. Finally this board was abolished, and in 1880 all primary schools were placed under the immediate control of a minister for education, and it was arranged that grants to denominational schools should cease at the end of

the year 1882. There is one graminar school for boys only in Sydney, sustained by the state, but bya recent Act high schools for both sexes are to be established all over the colony. The university, which was built by the state, and which receives an endowment of £10,000 a year, gives lectures and confers degrees in arts, laws, medicine, and science. Adjoining the university is the Prince Alfred Hospital, the medical teaching in which is partly under the control of the university senate. Attached to the university are three affiliated colleges, one belonging to the Church of England, one to the Chnrch of Rome, and one to the Presbyterian Church. In addition to the examinations for degrees, the senate holds a senior and a junior examination each year for the use of schools for both sexes. Private munificence has supplied many bursaries and scholarships. Mechanics' institutes and schools of art receive an annual subsidy in proportion to their subscriptions, and an extensive scheme for technical classes is being organized.

Population. —The official estimate of the population at the close of 1882 was 817,000. The previous census was taken on April 3, 1881, and the population was then 751,468 (411,149 males and 340,319 females),—an increase since 1871 of 247,487, or 48 per cent. The persons born in the colony numbered 465,559, while 208,512 had come from Great Britain, Ireland, and other British possessions, The Catholics were about two-sevenths of the population, being 207,606 as against 516,512 Protestants. Nearly every religious sect is represented, and the estimated attendance at public worship on Sunday was 221,031. There is no state church.

History.—The early history of New South Wales was for many years that of Australasia, and it has little more interest than what pertains to the philosophy of penal settlements. It was a distant prison maintained at the imperial cost. The commercial epoch began when Captain Macarthur found that the climate was suited to the growth of fine wool. The first sheep came from the Cape, mixed with a few from India. He got together a flock of 1000, and uoticed that even in his mongrel flock careful culling and breeding led to a great improvement in the wool, and this set him on considering the importance of having goodrams. The fortunate arrival in the colony from the Cape of some fine-woolled sheep of the Escurial breed gave him the opportunity of adding three rams and five ewes to his flock,

which he subsequently further improved ona visit to England, by purchasing some of King George III.'s stock at Kew. The stnd flock he thus formed, and which was kept at Camden for fifty years, laid the basis of an expansive industry. From that time the colony had an export. The growth of live stock quickly overtook the demands of the local population for meat, and then another colonist, Mr O'Brien, made the dis- covery that if sheep were worth nothing for meat they were worth something for tallow, and boiling down became the destiny of all the surplus stock. This waste of meat was suddenly stopped when the next great epoch in the history of the colony was opened up by the diseovery of gold. Victoria soon outstripped the mother-colony by its superior attractions in this respect, but New South Wales gained the enormous advantage of having its pastoral industry stimulated and made more profitable. The unoccupied country became worth taking up, till every portion of the territory that was at all occupiable was leased. The political government was at first necessarily a strictly military one, but as the number of the freed men and their children increased, and the number of free scttlers increased also, the demand for some form of representative government arose, and became irresistible. A legislative council was established, partly nominative and partly elective. Coinci- dently with this grew up a demand that transportation should cease, and the agitation on this question has been the only serious con- flict between the colony and the mother-country. It was ended by the mother-country yielding, and transportation was somewhat reluctantly abolished in 1853. At about the same time the mixed legislative council was superseded by the existing parliamentary system of two houses and responsible government, under which the colony has prospered contentedly ever since. | (A. GA.)

412

NEWSPAPERS

HE authenticated history of newspapers begins in Germany. The earliest plainly periodical collection of the "news of the day," as distinguished from the isolated news-pamphlets (of which there is at least one example of as early a date as 1498, and in Germany alone about eight hundred examples, all dating before 1610, still to be found in existing libraries), is the

/rankfurter Journal, a weekly publication started by Egenolph Emmel in 1615. Antwerp follows, with its Vieuwe Tijdinghen of 1616. Six years later came the establishment in London, by Nathaniel Butter and his partners, of a like paper, under the title of The Weekly News. All of these were the enter- prises of " stationers," undertaken in the ordinary way of their trade, and hawked about the streets by itinerating ""“mercuries." ‘The foundation in Paris, in 1631, of a journal which eventually attained fame as the Gazette de france, and which still exists, had a very different origin and different aims. The scheme of Théophraste Renaudot, a busy projector, unconnected with trade, who in certain points of his character and talent may be described as a born publicist, it appeared under the patronage of Richelieu, in the shape and with the limitations which it pleased the chief statesman of the day to mark out for it.

The history of the "leading article," as a great factor in the shaping of public opinion, begins with Swift, Defoe, Bolingbroke, and Pulteney, in the many newspapers, from The Review and The Examiner to The Craftsman, by which was waged the keen political strife of the years 170440, There is no counterpart to it in France until the Revolution of 1789, nor in Germany until 1796 or 1798. It was a Frenchman who wrote—" Suffer yourself to be blamed, im- prisoned, condemned; suffer yourself even to be hanged ; but publish your opinions. It is not a right; it is a duty." It was in England that the course so pithily de- scribed was actually taken, in the face of fine, imprisonment, and pillory, at a time when in France the public had to depend upon foreign journals illicitly circulated, when its own chief writers resorted to clandestine presses, to paltry disguises, and to very poor subterfuges to escape the responsibilities of avowed authorship, and when in Ger- many there was no political publicity worthy to be named.

When the Mercure de France, after a long period of mediocrity, came into the hands of men of large intellectual faculty, they had the most cogent reasons for exerting their powers upon topics of literature rather than upon themes of politics. True political journalism dates only from the Revolution, and it then had a very brief exist- ence. It occupied a cluster of writers, some of whom have left an enduring mark upon French literature. A term of high aspiration was followed quickly by a much longer term of frantic licence and of literary infamy. Then came the long rule of a despotic

censorship ; and cycles of licence followed by cycles of repression have revolved, with varying periodicity, from that day to this. Germany has to some extent its parallelisms ; but German journal- ism, if it never soared so high, never sank so low, Journalism in Germany has made steady advances onward : and in one grand feature—that of far-gathered informa- tion from foreign countries, not merely of incidents, but of the growth of opinion and the state of social life— the leading newspapers of Germany keep much ahead of their best French contemporaries. In France, too often, the journals that gain the largest circulation are precisely those of most conspicuous frivolity. Sometimes they are much worse than frivolous. In 1871 newspapers Issued from Parisian presses which were as base and as brutal as

those of 1794. In 1870 the democratic Government at Bordeaux issued against journals of high aims and of unspotted integrity, but opposed to its pretensions, edicts as arbitrary as the worst acts in that kind of Napoleon L., and unparalleled in the whole course of the government of Napoleon ITI.

In all the other countries of Europe political journalism, in any characteristic sense, is a thing of the present century, —somewhat earlier in the century in northern Europe, somewhat later in southern. The Ordinarie Post-Tidende of Stockholm dates indeed from 1643, but until very recent times it was a mere news-letter. Denmark had no sort of journal worth remark until the foundation, in 1749, of the Berlingske Tidende, and that too attained to no political rank. The Gazetteof St Petersburg—thepatriarchof Russian newspapers—dates from 16th December 1702, is a Govern- ment organ, and nearly synchronizes with the first success- ful attempt at a newspaper in the British colonies in America. But the Boston Gazette was, in its degree, a better journal in the last century than the Wiedomosti now.

Journalism in Italy begins with the Diario di Roma in 1716, but in politics the press remained a nullity—for all practical purposes—until nearly the middle of the present century, when the newspapers of Sardinia, at the impulse of Cavour, began to foreshadow the approach of the influential Italian press of the present day. In Spain no rudiments of a newspaper press can be found until the last century. As late as in 1826 an inquisitive

American traveller records his inability to lay his hands, during his Peninsular tour, upon more than two Spanish news- papers.

It may be useful to bring these chronological notes of

the origin of journalism into view, at a. glance, conjointly

with the dates of some of the chief existing journals of Europe, by tabulating them thus :—

|

Name. Remarks,

Frankfurter Journal……..| Existing in 1883.

WVUAITIE se scscen

1616 | Antwerp…….. Nieuwe Tijdinghen……..

1622 | London (1)..... WWGOKIVENGWS..:.sscceonnsren asset

1631 | Paris (1)..... Gazette [de Fianee]..... Existing in 1883.

1643 | Stoekholm……) Post [och Inrikes] Tidende Do. do.

1660 | Edinburgh (1)| Mereurius Caledonius…... Ten numbers only published.

1665 | London (2).....| London Gazette……..00008. Existing in 1883.

[Temporarily at Oxford]

1672 | Paris (2).....| Mereure [de Franee]..... Continued till 1853

1690 | Woreester ….. Berrow’s Woreester Jour.| Existing in 1883.

1695 | London (3).....] The Postboy…….0…cscccceee First London daily paper.

1699 | Edinburgh (2)| Edinburgh Gazette…….. Existing in 1883.

1702 | London (4).....] Daily Courant……..6 First sueeessful London daily.

1702 | St Petersburg] St Petersburg Wiedomosti Existing in 1883.

1704 | London (5).....) Defoe's Review of the | Continued till June 1713.

Affairs of State…….. 1704} Boston, Mas-| Boston News-Letter..,.....] Continued until loss of Bos- saehusetts… ton by the British.

1705 | Edinburgh (8).} Edinburgh Courant…….. Existing in 1883.

1711; Dublin (1)..... Dublin Gazette……..068 Do. do.

1712 | Hamburg……. Hamburg Correspondent.. Do. do.

1716 | Rome.,..... Diario di Roma……. Continued fornearly 90 years.

1726?) Madrid (1).....) Gaceta de Madrid…….. Continued until about 1850,

1763 | Dublin (2).....| Freeman's Journal…….. Earliest Irish daily paper.

1772 | London (6).....| The Morning Post…….. Existing in 1883,

1782 | Glasgow (1)...! Glasgow Herald…….. Do. do

1785 | London (7)..... MINE VINES aestesetevesseanevace Known until 1788 as Uni- versal Daily Register

1789) PP ariSh(3);,..... Moniteur Universel…….. Existing in 1883.

1789 | Paris (4).....] Journal des Débats…….. Do. do.

1792 | London (8).....| The Observer…. eee Do. do. (weekly).

1792 | London (9)..... The Courier……. ..| Long the leading London newspaper.

1798 | Leipsie…….| Allgemeine Zeitung……. Existing in 1883.

1817 | Edinburgh (4)| The Seotsman……. Daily from 1855,

1827 | London (10)...} The Standard ……..cse0e- Morning paper from 1857.

1842 | Madrid (2).....| Herald0…..ce.ceccseccoesseoees Chief Spanish journal for many years.

1846 | London (11)...! The Daily NewS……..00.. Existing in 1883.

USAT, | ARGH er ce. eee Tl Risorgimento…….00- Edited by Cavour,

1847 | Florenee……..] HW' Opimtone……0:-.s6:000.0000 Existing in 1883,

1847 | Glasgow (2) ...| North British Daily Mail.. Do. do.

USTON BCT UM. co c.arees Volkszeitting ……0…. | Reputed to have the largest. eireulation in Germany,

1855 | London (12)...) The Daily Telegraph…….! Existing in 1883,

English llews-

NEWSP

The development of the modern newspaper is due to a union of causes that may well be termed marvellous. A machine that from a web of paper 3 or 4 miles long can, in one hour, print, fold, cut, and deliver 24,000 or 25,000 perfected broadsheets is after all not so great a marvel as is the organizing skill which centralizes in a London office telegraphic communications from every important town in Europe, Asia, America, and Australia, and which then (whilst re-transmitting thither the news of London) dis- tributes those communications—directly or indirectly—to thousands of recipients simultaneously, by day and by night, throughout all Britain. And but for

unusual mental gifts, conjoined with high culture and with great " staying-power," in the editorial rooms, all these marvels of ingenuity—which now combine to develop public opinion on great public interests, and to guide it —would be nothing better than a vast mechanism for making money out of inan's natural aptitude to spend his time either in telling or in hearing some new thing.

Julius Reuter's enterprise grew immediately out of the thoughts of an observant Prussian Government-messenger on the extraordinary excitement of this natural aptitude which he witnessed as caused by the revolutionary move- ments of 1848. In 1849 he established a news-trans- mitting agency in Paris, with all the appliances that were then available. Between Brussels and Aix-la-Chapelle he formed a pigeon-service, connecting it with Paris and with Berlin by telegraph. As the wires extended, he quickly followed them with agency-offices in many parts of the Continent. When he came to London, his progress was for a moment held in check. The editor of Zhe Times listened very courteously to his proposals, but (on that first occasion) ended their interview by saying, " We gene- rally find that we can do our own business better than anybody else can." He went to the office of The Morning Advertiser, which had then the next largest circulation to that of The Times, and had better success.! He entered into an agreement with that and afterwards with other London journals, including The Times, and also with many commercial corporations and firms.

The newspapers, of course, continued to employ their own wires and to extend them, but they found great advantage in the use of Reuter's telegrams as supplemen- tary. Hisenterprise grew apace. Within a few years it is said to have yielded the founder some £25,000 a year. In 1865 it was transferred to a limited company. In 1868 the London Press Association was formed. It contracted with Reuter's company to supply their telegrams exclusively throughout the United Kingdom, London only excepted. The cost yearly to those newspaper proprietors who are members of the association is £294, to non- members £323. In connexion with the intelligence depart- ment of the post-office, the Press Association supplies parliamentary, juridical, and market news. The office of the Association is kept open during twenty-one hours of the twenty-four. The enterprise was organized by Mr John Lovell, now editor of The Liverpool Mercury.

London has now at least nine other press and telegraphic associa- tions ; Paris probably has almost as many.

ENGLAND. |

THe NEWSPAPERS OF THE UNITED KINGDOM.

The first English journalists were the writers of “ news-

APERS 413

single letter wrote as many letters as he had customers. Then one more enterprising than the rest established an “intelligence office,” with a staff of clerks, such as Ben Jonson’s Cymbal depicts from the life in Zhe Staple of News, acted in 1625 :— ‘¢This is the outer room where my clerks sit,

And keep their sides, the register in the midst ;

The cxaminer, he sits private there within;

And here I have my scvcral rolls and files

Of news by the alphabet, and all put up

Under their heads.”

Of the earlier news-letters good examples may be seen Early news- in Sir John Fenn’s collection of Paston Letters, and in letters.

Arthur Collins’s Letters and Memorials of State (better known, perhaps, as the Sydney Papers). Of those of later date specimens will be found in Knowler’s Letters and Despatches of Strafford, and in other well-known books. Still later examples, and such as have a very high historical interest, may be seen in abundance amongst the papers collected by the historian Thomas Carte, now pre- served in the Bodleian Library at Oxford. Of these, several series were addressed to the first duke of Ormond, partly by correspondents in England and Ireland, partly by correspondents in Paris; others were addressed to suc- cessive earls of Huntingdon; others, again, to various members of the family of Wharton. And like valuable collections

are to be seen in the library of the British Museum, and in the English Public Record Office. In Edinburgh, the Advocates' Library possesses a series of the 16th century, written by Richard Scudamore to Sir Philip Hoby during his embassy to Vienna.

The MS. news-letters—some of them proceeding from writers of marked ability who had access to official infor- mation, and were able to write with greater freedom and independence of tone than the compilers of the printed news—held their ground, although within narrowing limits, until nearly the middle of the last century. Some of the collections of these "gazettes a-la-main" have for the historian a greater value than any existing printed series of a contemporary gazetteer.

By the pains and critical acumen of the late Mr Thomas Watts, of the British Museum, the obstinate fiction that "for the first printed newspaper mankind are indebted to the wisdom of Elizabeth and the prudence of Burghley " is at length gradually disappearing from current literature, although the old story of the English Mercurie of the Armada year has been many times repeated (even in the latest works on English journalism) since the first publica- tion of his able pamphlet.2 In a later publication,® the game learned bibliographer traced, not less conclusively, this curious fabrication to its author, the second earl of Hardwicke.

Although no genuine newspaper of the 16th century can News pam- be produced, English pamphlets, as well as French, Italian, phlets.

and German, occur with such titles as Wewes from Spaine, and the like. In the early years of the 17th century they became very numerous. In 1614 we find Burton (the author of the Anatomy of Melancholy) pointing a sarcasm against the non-reading habits of "the major part" by adding, "if they read a book at any time… 'tis an English chronicle, Sir Huon of Bordeaux, Amadis de Gaui, dsc., a play-book, or some pamphlet of news." The most eminent purveyors of reading of this sort were Nathaniel Butter, Nicholas Bourne, and Thomas Archer; and by

letters," originally the dependants of great men, each en1-

2 : : , them was issued, in May 1622, the first authentic English First perio-
ployed in keeping his own master or patron well-informed,

papers, : periodical newspaper now known to exist. When these dical news-

during his absence from court, of all that transpired there. The duty grew at length into a calling. The writer had his periodical subscription list, and instead of writing a

1 Mr James Grant has put on record, word for word, the curious conversation that occurred (Jfist. of Newspaper Press, ii. 328 sq.).

news-pamphlets began to be periodicals their periods were Paper.

2 Letter to Antonio Panizzi, on the Reputed Karliest Printed News- paper, ‘* The English Mereurie” of 1588, London, 1839, 8vo.

3‘ Authorship of the fabricated ‘Earliest English Newspaper,’ ” Gent. Mag., n.s., xxxiii. 485-491, 1850.

AMercuries.

414

at first irregular. Thus on the Ist of June 1619 Ralph Rounthwaite entered at Stationers’ Hall A Relation of all matters done in Bohemia, Austria, Poland, Sletia, France, &c., that is worthy of relating, since the 2 of March 1618 [1619 n.s.] wntil the 4th of May Again, at the begin- ning of November 1621, Bartholomew Downes and another entered in like manner Zhe certaine and true newes from all parts of Germany and Poland, to this present 20 of October 1621.2. No copy of either of these papers is now, we believe, known to exist. Nor is any copy known of The Courant, or Weekly Newes from foreign parts, of October 9, 1621, mentioned by Mr Nichols. But in May 1622 we arrive at a weekly newspaper which may still be seen in the British Museum. It is entitled “The 23d of May—The Weekly News from Italy, Germany, &c., London, printed by J. D. for Nicholas Bourne and Thomas Archer.” Nathaniel Butter’s name does not occur on this number, but on many subsequent numbers it appears in connexion sometimes with

Bourne's and sometimes with Archer's name ; so that there was probably an eventual partnership in the new undertaking. Butter had published Mewes Jrom Spaine in 1611, and he continued to be a publisher of news until 1641, if not later.4

In The Certain Newes of this Present Week, ending 23d August 1622, the publisher inserted this advertisement :— "Tf any gentleman or other accustomed to buy the weekly relations of newes be desirous to continue the same, let them know that the writer, or transcriber rather, of this newes hath published two former newes ; the one dated the second, the other the thirteenth of August, all which do carry a like title, and have dependence one upon another ; which manner of writing and printing he doth propose to continue weekly, by God's assistance, from the best and most certain intelligence." November 1641 is especially noticeable for the publication, in the form of a newspaper, of the earliest authentic report of the procecdings of parliament. Diurnal Occurrences, or the Heads of several Proceedings in both Houses of Parliament, was usually, notwithstanding its title, a weekly periodical, and it sometimes contained ordinary news in addition to its staple matter. This was followed, within five years, by a long train of newspapers, most of which were published weekly. Those which stand out most saliently from the rest are the Mercurius Britanni- cus, M. Pragmaticus, and M. Poltticus of Marchmont Nedham, and the Mercurius Aulicus of John Birkenhead. Nedham was perhaps both the ablest and the readiest man that had yet tried his hand at a newspaper. He com- menced the Jf. Britannicus on August 22, 1643, zealously advocated in it the cause of the Parliament, and continued its publication until 1647. At that period 'he changed sides, and began to write Wercurius Pragmaticus,

''which, being very witty, satirical against the Presbyterians, and full of loyalty, made him known to, and admired by, the bravadoes and wits of those times. ... Atlength. .. Lenthall and Bradshaw ... persuaded him to change his style onee morc {in favour of] the Independents, then carrying all before them. So that, being bought over, he wrote Merewrius Politicus, so extreme contrary to the former that the generality for a long time. . . could not believe that that 'intelligence' could possibly be written by the same hand that wrote the M. Pragmaticus. . .°. The last [i.c., the Pragmatici] were endeavoured by the parliamenteers to be stifled, but the former, the

Politici, which came out by authority, and flew every week into all parts of the nation for more than ten years, had very great influcnee. . . . He was then [after a fourth “change of style’] the Goliath of the Philistincs, the great

1 Registers of the Stationers’ Company, as printed by Mr Edward Arber, iii. 302.

ED Hithing, thin 23% 3 Literary Anecdotes, iv. 38.

- It is to him that a passage in Fletcher’s Fair Maid of the Inn (act iv. sc. 2) obviously refers :—“ It shall be the ghost of some lying stationer. A spirit shall look as if butter would not melt in his mouth; a new Mercurius Gallo-Belgicus.”’

Ned WW 1 2 ee

[ENGLAND.

champion of the late usurper, whose pen, in comparison of others, was like a weaver’s beam.” ®

Birkenhead’s Jf. Aulicus was also begun in 1643, and continued, although irregularly, until nearly the close of the civil war. According to Wood, Charles I. “appointed him to write the Mercurit Aulicit, which being very pleas- ing to the loyal party, His Majesty recommended him to the [university] electors that they would choose him moral philosophy reader,” which was done accordingly. He was assisted in the composition of Awlicus by George Lord Digby (secretary of state, and afterwards earl of Bristol) and by Dr Peter Heylin. Sir John Birkenhead had con- siderable powers of satire, after a coarse fashion, and was one of the few rough-weather royalists who were permitted to bask in the sunshine of the Restoration.

Under Cromwell, the chief papers were J. Politicus and Intelli- The Public Intelligencer (of which the first number appeared gencers,

on the 8th October 1655). These publications were issued on different days of the week, and at length they became conjointly the foundation of the

present London Gazette. Even at their origin they were in some degree official papers. In 1659 the council of state caused the following announcement to be published :—‘‘ Whereas Marchmont Nedham, the author of the weekly news-books called Mercurius Politicus and The Publique Intelligencer, is, by order of the council of state, discharged from writing or publishing any publique intelligence ; the reader is desired to take notice that, by order of the said council, Giles Dury and Henry Muddiman are authorized henceforth to write and publish the said intelligence, the one upon the Thursday and the other upon the Monday, which they do intend to set out under the titles of The Parliamentary Intellagencer and of Mercurius Publicus.” After the Restora- tion, an office of surveyor of the press was instituted, to which Roger L’Estrange was appointed. The story of his administration of it—for which there are ample materials in the State Papers ®—would be well worth the telling in a befitting place. On him was also conferred, by royal grant —and, as it proved, for only a short period,—“all the sole privilege of writing, printing, and publishing all narratives, advertisements, .mercuries, intelligencers, diurnals, and other books of public intelligence; ... with power to search for and seize unlicensed and treasonable schismatical and scandalous books and papers.” L’Estrange continued the papers above mentioned, but changed their titles to The Intelligencer and The News.

Joseph Williamson (afterwards secretary of statc) was for a time L’Estrange’s assistant in the compilation of The Intelligencer,’ from which he soon withdrew. He organized for himself a far-spread foreign correspondence, and carricd on the business of a news-letter writer on a larger scale than had till then been known. Presently L’Estrange found his own sources of information much abridged. To his application for renewed assistance Williamson replies that he cannot give it, but “will procure for L’Estrange a salary of £100 a year if he will give up his right in the news-book.” 8 The Intelligencer appeals to Lord Arlington, and assures him that the charge of “entertaining spies for information was £500 in the first year.”9 But he has

5 Wood, Athene Oxonienses (by Bliss), iii. 1182. A new Jfer- curius Britannicus appeared in June 1647, but did not long eontinue. Another,

entitled Mf. Britannicus again Alive, was published in May 1648, and the title was often subsequently revived.

6 These materials begin in Domestic Correspondence, Charles IT., Xxxix. 92-95 (Rolls House), and continue at intervals in several sueceeding volumes,

7 This help seems to have been given at the request of Arlington (then Sir H. Bennet) in 1663, State Papers, Domestic, Charles IL., bowbe, INGE Inisy

8 State Papers, Domestic, Charles II., cxxxiv. 108 (Rolls House).

eli, 117.

London Gazette.

EW s P

“doubled the size and price of the book, and has brought the profit from £200 to £400 or £500 a year.”! The appeal was in vain. It was resolved to suppress 7’he Intelligencer, and to establish a court newspaper under a new title and new editorship.

At that time the great plague had driven the court to Oxford. The first number of Zhe Oxford Gazette was published on the 14th of November 1665. With the pub- lication of the twenty-fourth number it became Zhe London Gazette. Williamson had the general control of it. For a considerable time Charles Perrot, a member of Oriel College, was the acting editor.? For several years the Gazette was regularly translated into French by one Moranville. During the Stuart reigns generally, its con- tents were very meagre, although in the reign of Anne some improvement is already visible. More than a century

ENGLAND. |

AF ERS 415

world-famous ‘‘ Lloyd’s” of commerce—started a thrice-a- week paper, Lloyd’s News, which had but a brief exist- ence in its first shape, but was the precursor of the Lloyd’s Inst of the present day. No. 76 of the original paper contained a paragraph referring to the House of Lords, for the appearance of which a public apology must, the pub- lisher was told, be made. He preferred to discontinue his publication (February 1697). Nearly thirty years afterwards he in part revived it, under the title of Lloyd’s List, —published at first weekly, afterwards twice a week.° This dates from 1726. It is now published daily.

It was in the reign of Queen Anne that the newspaper press first became really eminent for the amount of intel- lectual power and of versatile talent which was employed upon it. It was also in that reign that the press was first fettered by the newspaper stamp. The accession of Anne

after the establishment of the Gazette, we find Secretary Lord Weymouth addressing a circular? to the several secretaries of legation and the British consuls abroad, in

was quickly followed by the appearance of the first success- First ful London daily newspaper, The Daily Courant (1703), London Seven years earlier, in 1695, The Postboy had been started 4aily paper.

é

which he says, ‘‘ The writer of the Gazette has represented that the reputation of that paper is greatly lessened, and the sale diminished, from the small portion of foreign news with which it is supplied.” He desires that each of them will send regularly all such articles of foreign intelligence as may appear proper for that paper, ‘“ taking particular care,—as the Gazette isthe only paper of authority printed in this country,—never to send anything concerning the authenticity of which there is the smallest doubt.” From such humble beginnings has arisen the great repertory of State Papers, now so valuable to the writers and to the students of English history. It has appeared twice a week, in a continuous series, for nearly two hundred and twenty years. The Gazette brings to the public an income ex- ceeding £20,000 a year. ‘The editorship is of course a Government appointment, and

it has a salary of £800. The office is now commonly given in reward of distin- guished service upon the ordinary newspaper press.

In November 1675 L'Estrange—not yet tired of journal- ism—commenced The City Mercury, or Advertisements concerning Trade. This he followed up in 1679 by Domestick Intelligence, published gratis for the promoting of Trade. ci

The very day after the departure of James IJ. was marked by the appearance of three newspapers—TZhe Uni- versal Intelligence, The English Courant, and The London Courant. Within a few days more these were followed by The London Mercury, The Orange Gazette, The London Intelligence, The Harlem Currant, and others. The Licens- ing Act, which was in force at the date of the Revolu- tion, expired in 1692, but was continued for a year, after which it finally ceased. On the appearance of a paragraph in The Flying Post of 1st April 1697, which appeared to the House of Commons to attack the credit of the Exchequer Bills, leave was given to bring in a Bill "to prevent the writing, printing, or publishing of any news without licence"; but the Bill was thrown out in an early stage of its progress. That lying Post which gave occasion to this attempt was also noticeable for a new method of printing, which it thus announced to its customers,—" If any gentleman has a mind to oblige his country friend or correspondent with this account of public affairs, he can have it for twopence….ona sheet of fine paper, half of which being left blank, he may thereon write his own affairs, or the material news of the day."

In 1696 Edward Lloyd—the virtual founder of the

1 State Papers, Domestic, Charles II., cxxxv. 24.

2 Anthony Wood, Athenee Oxonienses, sect. '' Perrot."

3 Calendar of Home-Office Papers, 1766-69, p. 483 (1879).

4 A complete set exceeds four hundred volumes, with four volumes of index, and is now of extreme rarity.

as a daily paper, but only four numbers appeared. The Courant was published and edited by the well-known and learned printer Samuel Buckley, who explained to the public that “the author has taken care to be duly fur- nished with all that comes from abroad, in any language. .... At the beginning of each article he will quote the foreign paper from which it is taken, that the public, seeing from what country a piece of news comes, with the allowance of that Government, may be better able to judge of the credibility and fairness of the relation. Nor will he take upon himself to give any comments,... supposing other people to have sense enough to make reflexions for themselves.” Then came, in rapid succes- sion, a crowd of new competitors for public favour, of less frequent publication. The first number of one of these, The Country Gentleman’s Courant (1706), was given away gratuitously, and made a special claim to public favour on the ground that “here the reader is not only diverted with a faithful register of the most remarkable and momentary [z.e., momentous] transactions at home and abroad,... . but also with a geographical description of the most material places mentioned in every article of news, whereby he is freed the trouble of looking into maps.”

On the 19th of February 1704, whilst still imprisoned Defoe’s in Newgate for a political offence, Defoe began his famous “evev.

paper Zhe Review (see DEFOE). At the outset it was pub- lished weekly, afterwards twice, and at length three times a week. It continued substantially in its first form until July 29, 1712; and a complete set is of extreme rarity. From the first page to the last it is characterized by the manly boldness and persistent tenacity with which the almost unaided author utters and defends his opinions on public affairs against a host of able and bitter assailants. Some of the numbers were written during travel, some in Edinburgh. But The Review appeared regularly. When interrupted by the pressure of the Stamp Act, the writer modified the form of his paper, and began a new series (August 2,1712, to June 11, 1713). In those early and monthly supplements of his paper which he entitled “‘ Advice from the Scandalous Club,” and set apart for the discussion of questions of literature and manners, and sometimes of topics of a graver kind, Defoe to some extent anticipated the Z’atler and Spectator. In 1705 he severed those supplements from his chief newspaper, and published them twice a week as

Zhe Lrttle Review. But they soon ceased to appear. Not again to revert to Defoe as an

5 Frederick Martin, History of Lloyd's, 66-77 and 107-120. The great collection of newspapers in the British Museum contains only one number of Lloyd's News; but sixty-nine numbers may be seen in the Bodleian Library. Of the Zis¢, also, no complete series is known to exist ; that in the library of Lloyd's begins with 1740.

Stamp tax of

1712.

English journalist, it may here be added that in May 1716 he began a new monthly paper under an old title, Mercurvus Politicus,.... "by alover of old England." This journal continued to appear until September 1720.

The year 1710 was marked by the appearance of 7'he Examiner, or Remarks upon Papers and Occurrences (No. 1, August 3), of which thirteen numbers appeared by the co-operation of Bolingbroke, Prior, Freind, and King be- fore it was placed under the sole control of Swift. Zhe Whig Examiner, avowedly intended "to censure the writings of others, and to give all persons a rehearing who had suffered under any unjust sentence of Zhe Examiner," followéd on the Ist September, and Zhe Medley three weeks afterwards.

This increasing popularity and influence of the news- paper press could not fail to be distasteful to the Govern- ment of the day. Prosecutions were multiplied, but with small success. At length some busy projector hit upon the expedient of a newspaper tax. The paper which seems to contain the first germ of the plan is still preserved amongst the Treasury papers. It is anonymous and undated, but probably belongs to the year 1711. " There are published weekly," says the writer, "about 44,000 newspapers, viz., Daily Courant, London Post, English Post, London Gazette, Postman, Postboy, Flying Post, Review, and Observator." }

The duty eventually imposed was a halfpenny on papers of half a sheet or less, and a penny on such as ranged from half a sheet toa single sheet (10 Anne, c. xix. § 101), and it came into force on the 19th July 1712. The first results of the tax cannot be more succinctly or more vividly described than in the following characteristic passage of the Journal to Stella (August 7, 1712): "Do you know that Grub Street is dead and gone last week? No more ghosts or murders now for love or money. I plied it close the last fortnight, and published at least seven papers of my own, besides some of other people's ; but now every single half-sheet pays a halfpenny to the queen. The Odservator is fallen ; the JMedleys are jumbled together with the Flying Post; the Examiner is deadly sick; the Spectator keeps up, and doubles its price—I know not how long it will hold. Have you seen the red stamp the papers are marked with? Methinks the stamping ts worth a halfpenny."

Swift's doubt as to the ability of the Spectator to hold out against the tax was justified by its discontinuance in the following year. But the impost which was thus fruit- ful in mischief, by suppressing much good literature, wholly failed in keeping out bad. Some of the worst journals that were already in existence kept their ground, and the number of such ere long increased.2, An enumera- tion of the London papers of 1714 comprises The Daily Courant, The Examiner, The British Merchant, The Lover, The Patriot, The Monitor, The Flying Post, The Postboy, Mercator, The Weekly Pacquet, and Dunton's Ghost. Another enumeration in 1733 includes The Daily Courant, The Craftsman, Fog's Journal, Mist's Journal, The London Journal, The Free Briton, The Grub Street Journal, The Weekly Register, The Universal Spectator, The Auditor, The Weekly Miscellany, The London Crier, Read's Journal, Gidipus or the Postman Remounted, The St James's Post, The London Evening Post, and The London Daily Post. Twenty years later the last-named publication became the well-known Public Advertiser. Part of this increase may fairly be ascribed to political corruption. In 1742 the

1 "* A Proposition to Increase the Revenue of the Stamp-Office," Red- ington, Calendar of Treasury Papers, 1708-14, p. 235. The stamp- office dated from 1694, when the earliest duties on paper and parch- ment were enacted.

? See the Burney collection of newspapers in the British Museum; and Nichols, Literary Anecdotes of the Highteenth Century iv. 33-97.

NEWS PAP WD he

ous penalties into signal triumphs. | The North Briton to those of The Examiner, every con- ‘spicuous newspaper prosecution gave tenfold currency to ‘ the doctrines that were assailed.

[ENGLAND,

committee of the House of Commons appointed to inquire into the political conduct of the earl of Orford reported to the House that during the last ten years of the Walpole ministry there was paid, out of public money, no “less a sum than £50,077, 18s. to authors and printers of news- papers, such as the Free Briton, Daily Courant, Gazetteer, and other political papers.”? But some part of the payment may well have been made for advertisements. Towards the middle of the century the provisions and the penalties of the Stamp Act were made more stringent. Yet the number of newspapers continued to rise. Johnson, writing in 1758, bears testimony to the still growing thirst for news: ‘Journals are daily multiplied, without in- crease of knowledge. The tale of the morning paper is told in the evening, and the narratives of the evening are bought again in the morning. These repetitions, indeed, waste time, but they do not shorten it. The most eager peruser of news is tired before he has completed his labour ; and many a nian who enters the coffee-house in his night- gown and slippers is called away to his shop or his dinner before he has well considered the state of Europe.” Five years before this remark appeared in Zhe Jdler the aggregate number of copies of newspapers annually sold in England, on an average of three years, amounted to 7,411,757. In 1760 it had risen to 9,464,790, and in 1767 to 11,300,980. In 1776 the number of newspapers published in London alone had increased to fifty-three.

When Johnson wrote his sarcastic strictures on the newspapers that were the contemporaries and, in a sense, the rivals of The Idler, the newswriters had fallen below the standard of an earlier day. A generation before, the newspaper was often much more of a political organ than of an industrial venture. All of the many enterprises of Defoe in this field of journalismt

united indeed both characteristics. But if he was a keen tradesman, he was also a passionate politician. And not a few of his fellow- workers in that field were conspicuous as statesmen no less than as journalists. Even less than twenty years before the appearance of Johnson's remarks, men of the mental – calibre of Henry Fielding were still to be found amongst the editors and writers of newspapers. The task had fallen to a different class of men in 1750.

The history of newspapers during the long reign of Press

George III. is a history of criminal prosecutions, in which Deal d ons.

individual writers and editors were repeatedly defeated an severely punished, whilst the press itself derived new strength from the protracted conflict, and turned ignomini- From the days of

In the earlier part of this period men who were mere traders in politics— whose motives were obviously base and their lives contemptible— became for a time powers in the state, able to brave king, legislature, and law courts, by virtue of the simple truth that a free people must have a free press. Yet the policy that had failed in 1763 continued to be clung to in 1819.

One of the minor incidents of the North Briton excite- ment led indirectly to valuable results with reference to the much-vexed question of parliamentary reporting. During the discussions respecting the Middlesex election, Almon, a bookseller, collected from members of the House of Commons some particulars of the debates, and published them in The London Evening Post. The success which attended these reports induced the proprietors of The St James's Chronicle to employ a reporter to collect notes in the lobby and at the coffee-houses. This repeated infrac- tion of the privilege of secret legislation led to the memor-

3 '* Fourth Report of the Committee of Secrecy," &c., in Hansard's Parliamentary History, xii. 814.

ENGLAND. |

able proceedings of the House of Commons in 1771, with their fierce debates, angry resolutions, and arbitrary im- prisonments,—all resulting, at length, in that tacit con cession of publicity of discussion which in the main, with brief occasional exceptions, has ever since prevailed.

The three metropolitan newspapers which at different periods of this reign stood pre-eminent amongst their com- petitors were The Public Advertiser, The Morning Post, and The Morning Chronicle. The first-named paper owed much of its popularity to the letters of Junius. The Post and the Chronicle were mainly indebted for their success to the personal qualities of individual editors, combined, in both cases, although in very different degree, with a staff of writers endowed with exceptional literary power and marked versatility of talents. The Public Advertiser was first published in 1726, under the title London Daily Post and General Advertiser. In 1738 the first part of the title was dropped, and in 1752 General Advertiser was altered into the name which the letters of Junius made so famous. Many of these had appeared before the smallest perceptible effect was produced on the circu- lation of the paper; but when the " Letter to the King" came out (19th December 1769, almost a year from the beginning of the series) it caused an addition of 1750 copies to the ordinary impression. The effect of subsequent letters was variable ; but when Junius ceased to write the monthly sale of the paper had risen to 83,950. This was in December 1771. Seven years earlier the monthly sale had been but 47,515.1 It now became so valuable a property that shares in it were sold, according to John Nichols, "as regularly as those of the New River Company."2 But the fortunes of the Advertiser declined almost as rapidly as they had risen. It continued to appear until 1798, and then seems to have been amalga- mated with the commercial paper called The Public Ledger (dating from 1759), which still exists as a London daily journal. Actions for libel were brought against the paper

NE WSsP

A? rT RS 417

materials, was sold for £600 to Peter and Daniel Stuart, who quickly raised the position of the Post by enlisting Mackintosh and Coleridge in its service, and also by giving unremitting attention to advertisements and to

the copious supply of incidental news and amusing paragraphs. There has been much controversy about the share which Coleridge had in elevating the Post from obscurity to eminence. That he greatly promoted this result there can be no doubt. His famous "Character of Pitt," published in 1800, was especially successful, and created a demand for the particular number in which it appeared that lasted for weeks, a thing almost without precedent. Coleridge wrote for this paper from 1795 until 1802, and during that period its circulation in ordinary rose from 350 copies, on the average, to 4500. Whatever the amount of rhetorical hyperbole in Fox's saying,—recorded as spoken in the House of Commons,—'" Mr Coleridge's essays in The Morning Post led to the rupture of the treaty of Amiens," it is none the less a striking testimony, not only to Coleridge's powers as a publicist, but to the position which the newspaper press had won, in spite of innumerable obstacles, eighty years ago. The list of his fellow-workers in the Post is a most brilliant and varied one. Besides Mackintosh, Southey, and Arthur Young, it included a galaxy of poets. Many of the lyrics of Moore, many of the social verses of Mackworth Praed, some of the noblest sonnets of Wordsworth, were first published in the columns of the Post. And the story of the paper, in its early days, had tragic as well as poetic episodes. In consequence of offence taken at some of its articles, the editor and pro- prietor, Nicholas Byrne (who succeeded Daniel Stuart), was assaulted and murdered whilst sitting in his office. In later days, but long prior to those of the submarine cable, the Post for a time eclipsed most of its rivals by means of the skilful organization which Lieutenant Waghorn—the pioneer of the overland route to India— gave to its agencies for foreign intelligence.

by Edmund Burke in 1784, and by William Pitt in 1785, Morning and in both suits damages were given. The Morning Chron- Chronicle was begun in 1769. William Woodfall was its

The Times is usually dated from the Ist of January 77. 1788, but was really commenced on the 18th January Times. 1785, under the title of Zhe London Daily Universal

ae printer, reporter, and editor, and continued to conduct it until 1789. James Perry succeeded him as editor, and so continued, with an interval during which the editorship was in the hands of the late Mr Sergeant

Spankie, until his death in 1821. Perry's editorial functions were occasionally discharged in Newgate in consequence of repeated prosecutions for political libel. In 1819 the daily sale reached nearly 4000. It was sold in 1823 to Mr Clement, the purchase-money amounting to £42,000. Mr Clement held it for about eleven years, and then sold it to Sir John Easthope for £16,000. It was then, and until 1843, edited by John Black, who numbered amongst his staff Albany Fonblanque, Charles Dickens, and John Payne Collier. The paper continued to be distinguished by much literary ability, but not by commercial prosperity. In 1849 it became the joint property of the duke of New- castle, Mr Gladstone, and some of their political friends ; and by them, in 1854, it was sold, conditionally, to Mr Serjeant Glover, under whose management it became event- ually the subject of a memorable public scandal in the law courts of France. At length the affairs of the Chronicle were wound up in the Bankruptcy Court of London, after an existence of more than ninety years.

The Morning Post dates from 1772. For some years it was in the hands of Henry Bate (afterwards known as Sir Henry Bate Dudley), and it attained some degree of temporary popularity, though of no very enviable sort. In 1795 the entire copyright, with house and printing

1 These are the figures of Mr W. S. Woodfall, the editor. Literary Anecdotes of the Highteenth Century.

Register, printed logographically. This "word-printing " process had been invented by a printer named Henry Johnson several years before, and found a warm advocate in John Walter, who expounded its peculiarities at great length in No. 510 of his Daily Universal Register. Ina later number he stated, very amusingly, his reasons for adopting that altered title which the enterprise and the ability of his successors have made world-famous.

Within two years Walter had his share in the Georgian persecutions of the press, by successive sentences to three fines and to three several imprisonments in Newgate, chiefly for having stated that the prince of Wales and the dukes of York and Clarence had so misconducted them- selves "as to incur the just disapprobation of his Majesty." In 1803 he transferred the management (together with the joint proprietorship) of the journal to his son, by whom it was carried on with remarkable energy and

consummate tact. To Lord Sidmouth's Government he gave a general but independent support. That of Pitt he opposed, espe- cially on the questions of the Catamaran expedition and the malversations of Lord Melville. This opposition was resented by depriving the elder Walter of the printing for the customs department, by the withdrawal of Govern- ment advertisements from he Times, and also, it is said, by the systematic detention at the outports of the foreign intelligence addressed to its editor. Walter, however, was strong and resolute enough to brave the Government. He organized a better system of news transmission than had ever before existed. He introduced steam-printing, and re- peatedly improved its mechanism ; and, although machines

which print 22,000 sheets in the hour may now seem to | their varied stages of development, must have occasioned

thrust into insignificance a press of which it was at first announced as a notable triumph that the new machine per- formed its task ‘‘ with such a velocity and simultaneousness of movement that no less than 1100 sheets are impressed in one hour,” yet Walter's assertion was none the less true, that The Times of 29th November 1814 “presented to the public the practical result of the greatest improvement con- nected with printing since the discovery of the art itself.”

The effort to secure for The Times the best attainable literary talent in all departments kept at least an equal pace with those which were directed towards the improve- ment of its mechanical resources. And thus it came to pass that a circulation which did not, even in 1815, exceed on the average 5000 copies became, in 1834, 10,000; in 1844, 23,000; in 1851, 40,000; and in 1854, 51,648. In the year last named the average circulation of the other

London dailies was—Morning Advertiser, 7644; Daily News, 4160; Morning Herald, 3712; Morning Chronicle, 2800 ; Morning Post, 2667.

Sir John Stoddart, afterwards governor of Malta, edited The Times for several years prior to 1816. He was suc- ceeded by Thomas Barnes, under whose management the great journal became famous for munificent reward of every kind of efficient service. The energy shown of late in the use of the railway and the telegraphic cable is no more marvellous than was the bringing of important news to London in 1834, at the rate of 15 miles an hour, for 400 miles. Unlike his most distinguished successor in the editorship, Barnes for many years wrote largely in his paper. When his health began to fail the largest share of the editorial work came into the hands of Captain Edward Sterling,—the contributor about a quarter of a century earlier of a noteworthy series of political letters signed "Vetus," the Paris correspondent of Zhe Times in 1814 and subsequent eventful years, and afterwards for many years the most conspicuous among its leader-writers.1 From 1841 to 1877 the chief editor was John Thaddeus Delane. It is known, on the best authority, that "he never was a writer; he never even attempted to write anything, except what he wrote better than most writers could do—reports and letters."2 But without writing, in the literary sense, a wonderful life's work was crowded into those six and thirty years. The result of that labour, combined with the labour of a most brilliant staff of contributors, was to make what already had grown to be the "favourite broadsheet " of the English public into that which is now wont to be described as the "leading journal of the world." Everything that is used in the production of The Times, except the printing paper, is made in its offices. Not only its own " Walter machines " -—able to print and perfect from 22,000 to 24,000 sheets in the hour—but those also which have been supplied to The Scotsman, The Daily News, The Liverpool Post, and The New York Times have been manufactured there. The editor's office in Printing-House Square is now in direct communication by special wires with his branch offices both in Paris and in Berlin. The parliamentary reports are sent to the office from the Houses through the telephone. The shorthand writer extends his notes in the usual way, and reads off the manuscript through the instrument. The recipient dictates the reports to the type setters. The manuscript follows the telephonic report, and the proofs are read by it. These several mechanical triumphs, in dl,

1 See Life of John Sterling, by Carlyle, who says of him at this time -——‘‘The emphatic, big-voiced, always influential and often strongly unreasonable Times newspaper was the express emblem of Edward Sterling. He, more than any other man, .. . was The Times, and thundered through it, to the shaking of the spheres,”

? The Times, 25th November 1879,

a preliminary outlay of at least £100,000. And that such experiments, on any like scale, became possible is due to the growth of advertisements. Of these, the first number of The Times contained fifty-seven, all brief ones. In recent days a number of The Tvmes has occasionally con- tained sixty columns—in one instance, at least, sixty- seven—of advertisements. The rates of charge vary, but upon a rough average it seems probable that the annual revenue from this source alone may considerably exceed £400,000. With such a fund in reserve—apart from the direct product by sale—it becomes easy to understand the otherwise amazing items of outlay known to have been incurred for telegrams, as, for instance, of £800 for reports of the results of the congress of Berlin, when The Times achieved the publication of the treaty almost at the instant of its signature. What the sale of the paper was upon that occasion is not publicly recorded. But when, in December 1861, it published a memoir of the lamented Prince Consort, 91,000 copies were sold. On occasion of the marriage of the prince of Wales a sale of 110,000 copies (at 44d.) was attained.

Of the many curious episodical incidents which occur in the public history of Zhe Times, one only can here be mentioned, In 1840 the Paris correspondent of the paper (Mr O’Reilly) obtained information respecting a gigantic scheme of forgery which had been planned in France, together with particulars of the examination at Antwerp of a minor agent in the conspiracy, who had been there, almost by chance, arrested. All that he could collect on the subject, including the names of the chief conspirators, was published by Zhe Times on the 26th of May in that year, under the heading “Extraordinary and Extensive Forgery and Swindling Conspiracy on the Continent (Private Correspondence).” The project contemplated the almost simultaneous presentation at the chief banking- houses throughout the Continent of forged letters of credit, purporting to be those of Glyn &

Company, to a very large amount ; and its failure appears to have been ina great degree owing to the exertions made, and the responsibility assumed, by Zhe Times. One of the persons implicated brought an action for libel against the printer, which was tried at Croydon in August 1841, with a verdict for the plaintiff, one farthing damages. A subscription towards defraying the heavy expenses (amounting to more than £5000) which Zhe Times had incurred was speedily opened, but the proprietors declined to profit by it; and the sum which had been raised was devoted to the founda- tion of two "Z%mes scholarships," in connexion with Christ's Hospital and the City of London School. Three years afterwards Z'he Times rendered noble public service in a different direction. It used its vast power with vigour—at the expense of materially checking the growth of its own advertisement fund—by denouncing the fraudu- lent schemes which underlay the "railway mania" of 1845.

For a long period after the establishment of The Times, no effort to found a new daily London morning newspaper was ever conspicuously successful. As time went on, many endeavours were made, at an aggregate cost, as respects those only that entirely failed, of at least £80,000.3 A measure of success followed the establishment ieee ann genes a Seniesa rR Hy

3 Conspicuous among these unfruitful attempts were—(1) The New Limes, started by Dr (afterwards Sir J ohn) Stoddart, upon his depar- ture from Printing-House Square; (2) The Representative, established by John Murray, under circumstances which seemed at the outset exceptionally promising; (3) The Constitutional, begun in 1836 and carried on for eight months by a joint-stock company, exception- ally favoured in having for editor and sub-editor Laman Blanchard and Thornton Hunt, with a staff of contributors which included Thackeray, Douglas Jerrold, and Bulwer; (4) The Morning Star, founded in 1856, and kept afloat at a cost (it is credibly reported) of,

Morning Adver- tiser.

Daily News.

Stand- ard,

Daily Tete- graph.

London evening papers.

ENGLAND. |

(1794) of The Morning Advertiser, under special circum- stances. It was the joint-stock venture of a large society of licensed victuallers, amongst whom subscription to the paper was the condition of membership. For nearly sixty years its circulation lay almost entirely in public-houses and coffee-houses, but amongst them it sold nearly 5000 copies daily, and it yielded a steady profit of about £6000 a year. 'Then, by the ability and enterprise of an experi- enced editor (James Grant), it was within four years raised to a circulation of nearly 8000, and to an aggregate profit of £12,000 a year.

Setting aside mere class-journals like The Financier and The Sportsman, the only existing London morning news- papers which have been founded during the present century are The Daily News (21st January 1846), The Daily Tele- graph (29th June 1855), and The Standard (29th June 1857). The lowest of the three in the point of circulation has attained an average issue of 170,000 copies; the highest has reached (by notarial certificate) to an average of about 242,000. In 1856 no London newspaper of any kind was recorded to have reached a higher average circu- lation than 109,106 copies (attained in 1854 by the weekly News of the World); no daily newspaper had exceeded an average of 51,648 copies (attained in the same year by The Times), its next highest competitor, Zhe Morning Advertiser, reaching an average sale of only 7644 copies.

The Daily News became a penny paper in 1868. The great stride in its circulation did not come until 1870, when lavish use of the electric telegraph, combined with the great powers of a brilliant war correspondent, are said to have lifted the sale in a week from 50,000 copies to

150,000.1

Originally an evening paper, established in 1827 as the express organ of the opponents of the measure for the removal of the Roman Catholic disabilities, The Standard was at first edited by Dr Gifford. From the

beginning it showed marked literary ability, but its commercial success was small. When sold to James Johnson its fortunes rapidly improved. He made it both a morning and even- ing journal, reduced its price to a penny, and gave it a thoroughly good organization. Occasionally, in 1870, the evening sale reached 100,000 copies. In 1882 the aggre- gate circulation, morning and evening, was certified to average 242,062 copies.

The Daily Telegraph was originally founded by Colonel Sleigh, and fora few and unprosperous years was edited by Henry Barnett. It attained no success until a change of ownership placed it under the editorial care of Edward Lawson. In 1882 its certified average daily circulation exceeded 241,900 copies.

London possessed no daily evening paper until 1788, nor did any cvening paper attain an important position until the period of the war with Napoleon, when The Courier (established in 1792) became the newspaper of the day. For a few years its circulation exceeded that of The Times. The average amounted during the last three years of the war to 10,000 copies daily, a circulation not till then known to have been attained by any daily paper. Mack- intosh, Coleridge, and Wordsworth were amongst its stated contributors, Out of an article in Zhe Courier, from the from first to last, some £80,000, until 1870, when it merged in The Daily News; (5) in 1867, The Day, which lived only six weeks; (6) in 1873, The Hour, which had an existence of three years; (7) in 1878, The Daily Express, an almost instant failure, although edited with mueh ability. Against these seven disastrous ventures, extending over nearly the whole of the present century, there are to be set but three successful ones,—disregarding papers of a strietly commercial sort, and also, of eourse, those teeming loeal and suburban journals whieh are chiefly advertising organs, and of which only one, The Clerkenwell Daily Chronicle, has sueceeded in establishing itself as a

London morning paper of the usual type. 1 Hatton, Journalistic London, 1881.

Ni wer ’PE RS

pen of the last-named, grew the famous pamphlet on the convention of Cintra. Among the successive editors of The Courier were Daniel Stuart, William Mudford, Eugenius Roche, John Galt, James Stuart, and Laman Blanchard. In 1827 one twenty-fourth share in the property is said to have brought 5000 guineas. But changes of editorship and keen competition were fatal to a paper that had rendered brilliant public service in its day, and for a time had headed the newspaper press of London.

The metropolis has now seven evening papers, one of which—T7he Shipping and Mercantile Gazette—is exclusively commercial. Whilst, of the distinctively political morning journals, four are Liberal and only two Conservative, of the six political evening ones, four are Conservative (Globe, dating from 1803; Evening Standard, 1827; St James's Gazette, 1880 ; Hvening News, 1881) and two are Liberal (Pall Mall Gazette, 1865 ; and The Echo, 1868). The last- named was the first London newspaper published at a halfpenny.

The London weekly press has always worn a motley garb. London Weekly publication facilitates the individuality of a journal, both weeklies,

as respects its editorship and as respects the class of readers to which it more especially addresses itself. From the days of Daniel Defoe to those of Albany Fonblanque and Robert Rintoul there have always been newspapers bearing the unmistakable impress of an individual and powerful mind. When to great force of charac- ter in the writer and its natural result, an almost personal intimacy between writer and reader, Governments have been unwise enough to add the strength which inevitably grows out of persecution, the combination might well prove a formidable one. Cobbett's Weekly Register affords perhaps as striking an illustration of journalism in its greatness and in its meanness as could be found throughout its entire annals. And Cobbett's paper has had many successors, some of which, profiting by the marvellous mechanical appliances of the present day, have attained a far wider popular influence than was possessed by the Weekly Register in its most prosperous days.

The Observer dates from 1792, and was conducted by one editor— Mr Doxat—for more than fifty years. It early distanced its com- petitors ; its expenditure was lavish, and its profits large. There is record that the issue of

The Observer which contained a report of the coronation of George IV. (published in two parts, each of them with a fourpenny stamp) attained a circulation of 60,000 copies, and that there was paid to the Govcrnment for that week's issue about £2000 of stamp duty.?

The late well-known Examiner was founded in 1808, and had a career as one of the most prominent organs of the Liberals of nearly seventy years. 'That its literary reputation was great resulted naturally from a succession of such editors as Leigh Hunt, Albany Fonblanque, John Forster, and Professor Henry Morley. It had in its later days a distinguished competitor in the Speetator, founded (July 1828) and for more than thirty years edited by Robert Rintoul.

Strikingly in contrast with newspapers of this class stand two which have much in common besides their identity of title and their extraordinary circulation—Lloyd's Weekly Newspaper and Reynolds's Weekly Newspaper. The former started as an unstamped illustrated journal at a penny in September 1842. In 1843 it was enlarged in size; and the price raised to threepence. Curious ingenuity was shown in advertising it by all sorts of expedients. Amongst others, all the pennies its proprietor could lay his hands on were embossed, by acleverly constructcd machine, with the title and price of the new journal. The Times soon drew attention to this defacement of the queen's coin, and so gave a better advertise- ment still. Fron a weekly sale of 33,000 in 1848 it rose to 170,000 in 1861. In anticipation of the abolition of the paper duty, the price was then reduced toa penny. The circulation became 347,000 in 1863 ; in 1865 it rose to 412,080. The skill of the American machine-makers was now put to a test whieh produced for this paper Hoe's first great web-machine,—adopted immediately after- wards by The Daily Telegraph and The Standard. In 1879 the weekly sale of Lloyd's Newspaper was certified to average 612,902 copies. Reynolds's Weekly Newspaper, which has also a large circu- lation, dates from May 1850.

Of the illustrated papers The Illustrated London News is the oldest, and has the largest circulation (about 95,000). Besides its pictorial merits, it has long been notable for its obituary notices and its abstracts of wills. It was founded in May 1842. The Graphic (commenced in December 1869) has

attained eonsiderable reputation for its literature as well as for its engravings. Zhe Pictorial World dates from March 1874.

2 «The Newspaper Press," in Quarterly Review, October 1880.

Com-

parative daily newspapers was 15; it is still (in 1883) only 18.

420 wi Ws P

Nearly thirty years ago (in 1855) the total number of oe he

statistics. total number of London newspapers of all kinds increased

ee naeacsommagn

from 89 in 1855 to 386 in 1883. In 1855 the total number of provincial newspapers published throughout the United Kingdom was 560; in 1883 it was 1576. The whole number of daily newspapers in the provinces at the former date was but 13; at the latter it was 162. This vast growth is due in the main to altered legislation rather than to altered economic conditions. Some account must now be given of the Government restrictions on the British newspaper press, commencing with the Stamp Act of

1712.

In 1756 an additional halfpenny was added to the tax of 1712. In 1765 and in 1773 various restrictive regulations were imposed (5 Geo. III. e. 46, and 13 Geo. III. c. 65). In 1789 the three- halfpence was increased to twopence (29 Geo. III. c. 50), in 1797 to twopence-halfpenny (37 Geo. III. e. 90), in 1804 to three- pence-halfpenny (44 Geo. III. c. 98), and in 1815 to fourpence, less a discount of 20 per cent. Penalties of all kinds were also increased, and obstructive regulations were multiplied. In the course of the struggle between this constantly enhanced taxation and the irrepressible desire for cheap newspapers, more than seven hundred prosecutions for publishing unstamped journals were insti- tuted, and more than five hundred persons were imprisoned, some-

ArH RS

£31,287. In the year ending 9th January 1838—the first complete year of the reduced duty—the number of stamps issned was 53,897,926. The gross amount of duty was reduced to £228,425 (English, £182,998; Scottish, £18,671; Irish, £21,756).

The results of the reduction surpassed all that had been predicted by its promoters. Yet the total abolition came only in 1855. In the year ending 5th January 1855 the number of penny stamps issued to newspapers was 107,052,053, and the gross amount of duty £446,050. The details are as follows :—

[ENGLAND.

Number of Newspapers Stamped.

Penny Stamps issued to News- papers.

Gross Amount of Duty thereon.

Hneland) eecenee

87,930,085 1,107,434 9,112,245 8, 902, 289

412 £366,375 7 1

4,614 6 2 37,967 13 9 37,092 17 5

107,052,058

£446,050 4 5

At the same date the following newspapers (all weekly except The Times and Advertiser) stood highest as regards circulation and consumption of stamps:—

times for considerable periods. As the prosecutions multiplied and

the penalties became more severe, Poor Man's Guardians, Demo- Name and Date of Establishment. Penny Stamps | Average crats, Destructives, and their congeners multiplied also, and their egal Cireulation. revolutionary tendencies increased in a still greater ratio. Blas- : Z

phemy was added to sedition. Penny and halfpenny journals were aap wae ee (1843) by gee ee) cee established which dealt cxclusively with narratives of gross vice and Tits tivsted! Londen Nowe (1849) ees 56 o7 866 | 108/098 crime, and which vied with each other in every kind of artifice to Telovd's WeEklv Newertiner (1842) ce 5.572, 897 107 1 1 inake vice and crime attractive. Between the years 1831 and 1835 Werkl Times (1847). Ns ates 3902169 oie many scores of unstamped newspapers made their appvarance. Ravn ol ds's Wi aldlic. Nicks aper (1850) 9. 496 256 be Papers such as those enumerated above swarmed from presses that M Ue ay ee y 179 * 9° 39278 0 7 644 seemed to rival, in their mysterious itinerancy and sudden vanish- Weekly Di 'i fy ECA Jee ereeeeeeees 1982933 38° 13 ings, the famous Marprelate press of the 16th century. The politi- egg re ape 23 cesses eae, ,1838

cal tone of most of them was fiercely revolutionary. Prosecution followed prosecution; but all failed to suppress the obnoxious publications.

To the late Lord Lytton is due the credit of grappling with this question in the House of Commons in a manner which secured the speedy reduction of the tax from fourpencc to a penny, and paved the way for its subsequent though long-delayed abolition. The reduction to a penny took effect on the 15th September 1836. At that date the number of newspapers stamped in Great Britain and Ireland was about 36,000,000 in the year, and the gross amount of duty upwards of £553,000. Of this sum Enghsh newspapers

paid £473,910, Scottish newspapers £47,999, Irish newspayers

The measure for the final abolition of the stamp tax was substan- tially prepared by Mr Gladstone during his chancellorship of the exchequer in 1854, but was introduced into the House of Commons by his successor in 1855. The second reading was carried by a mnajority of 215 to 161. In the House of Lords uno division took place. To enable the reader to appreciate the legislation of June 1855, we give here the aggregate circulation of

newspapers, as shown by the number of stamps issued and as compared with the growth of population, at various periods during the century pre-ceding the abolition of the stamp duty, and also the figures for the first year after the abolition took efiect.

Tabular View of the Aggregate Issue of Stamped Newspapers from 1753 to 1854.

oF eee

Population, Chief Politieal Events or Topies of the Year. Number of Stamps Issued. Rate of Duty (Net). 1753 | England……. 6,186,366 7AM 1$d. 1760 Li © Seen 6,479,730 ae aus Eugland.«:..... 9,464,790 ¥ 1790 DOP a cicsss ss. 8,540,738 | French Revolution…….....0..0.00- 14,035,639 2d. 1801 | Great Britain…. 10,942,646 | War with Napoleee. 2h. c-cscates…08) 16,085,085 Ne 1806 e Ee a Bos ON ae ee | 20,532,793 3d. 1811 | Great Britain…. 12,596,803 Oo neon ee + Great Britain..{ 24,424,718 Ae HE 2) – mis Defeat of Napeleon:.....0…-.+.0 L 26,308,003 + 1815 cas Waterloo compaiin., ...0….

1834 34,748,922 49

1835 a o = | 35,823,859 1836 Stamp Duty reduced to One Penny 39,423, 200 Tremere SL * 1837 First Year of Penny Stamp……..... 58,897,926 ” 1838 he Se st ‘ Great Britain { 53,680,880 a 1839 oo Ae s CUBIS QRTATION «2… .c…c.cssenes and Ireland. 58,981,078 1841 | United Kingdom 27,036,450 Ss = | 60,759,392 ” ce a te a“ Corn Lawaeidetion®..... } | le = 4 1846 Repeal of the Corn Laws……..... | 83,074,638 , 1847 Hamine ain irate es. << 5..cc.0ecessssceie: 82,380,875 » 1848 European insurrections……..... 86,465,684 » 1849 ae = 4 84,069,472 98 1851 | United Kingdom 27,724,849 sai aC 91,600,000 ” 1854 = Her a Wrartwith@Russta). 2. ..c.c.-sssee-e01 osc 00. OS srs) x – os J \ 39,184,474) Optional Stamp.

1 Inclusive of prices current, trade lists, &c., and of halfpenny stamps for supplements.

ENGLAND. |

It will be observed that for several years in the earlier part of this eentury the aggregate circulation remained very steady—almost stationary—at about 24,000,000 copies, and that, after a gradual increase within a few years to 30,000,000, the politieal excitements of the years 1830-82 raised the aggregate to very nearly 38,000,000. Making allowance for the mere trade-lists, this number came to be more than tripled in 1854.

The number of newspapers established from the early part of 1855, when the repeal of the duty had beeome a certainty, and continuing in existence at the beginning of 1857, amounted to 167, —80 started in 1855, and 27 in 1856; 26 were métropolitan, and

and attained considerable success, chiefly as advertising sheets, and as sometimes the organs, more often the crities, of the loeal vestries and other administrations. There are now (1883) 128 of these local papers. One ofthem, The Clerkenwell News and Daily Chroniele, so prospered in the commercial sense, being crowded with advertise- ments, that it sold for £30,000, and was then transformed into the London Daily Chroniele (28th May 1877). In the hands of its new owner—the proprietor of Lloyd's Weekly News—its eirculation in- creased fivefold within a year. Another conspicuous result of the legislation of 1855 was an enormous iucrease in the number and influence of what are known as ''class papers," and as professional]

81 provincial. Of the latter, the majority belonged to towns which | and trade papers. possessed no newspaper whatever under the Stamp Acts, and the The history of the provincial press of England begins with the Pro- price of nearly one-third of them was but a penny. In some cases, | year 1690, and with a weekly newspaper which still exists, The vineial. however, a portion of these new cheap papers of 1857 was printed | Woreester Postman, now known as Berrow's Worcester Journal. press of in London, usually with pictorial illustrations, and to this was | But the real development of provincial journalism, as a power co- England. added a local supplement containing the news of the district. ordinate with that of London, dates only from 1855 ; although there wo,. The total number of the newspapers published throughout the | were many newspapers issuing from country

presses here and there United Kingdom at the beginning of 1857 was 711. They may be | —at least from the later years of thelastcentury—which were marked classified as follows :— by originality of character and by considerable literary skill. Worcester has now four weekly and two dailynewspapers. Stamford Stamford.

eester.

England g 3 followed next after Worcester by the establishment of its Mereury : 3 sa. in 1695. This also is still published under the title of The Lincoln, Newspapers oi St ee a eee Rutland, and Stamford Mereury. Next to The Stamford Mercury

i Pa a.) 3.) @ see). caine The Norwich Postman, first published in 1706 in small quarto, Norwich. ee ee ee Le aM (cel hl Lal (A and of meagre contents. The stated price of this paper was a Liberal politics……. 40 | 134 7 | 66] 38 4 |9g9| | penny, but its proprietor notified to the public that "'a halfpenny Nimcerdic…-.....8 3| | 1s not refused." 'I'wo other papers were started in Norwieh within Ronucskege… 2 ors., 20 90 5 6| 38 4 1173 a few years afterwards,—The Cowrant in 1712, and The Weekly antral Eee Sg 33 | 131 7 | 30| 35 5 |246| | 2lereury or Protestant's Packet (which still exists) in 1720. Norwich aad ty ate ich, | ee has now seven other weekly and, in addition, two daily papers.

K 2 Nottingham follows in 1710 with its Cowrant, now The Nottingham Notting-

PORE BUDE Ait sca ci Veale Nic Schad Makes Ziewie. and a daily paper. Nottingham has now in all (oem datly ham.

and three weekly newspapers. The Neweastle Courant followed New-

If these newspapers be classified according to their dates of first | in 1711 ; Newcastle has now five weekly and five daily journals. eastle.

— SS

publication, the enumeration will run thus :—

England. ; s a | %

Date of First Publication. Metro-| Pro- By 3 z a ae 2 politan.|vincial.| & | 8 | = |E2! &

erin tO WOO... ac oc.000 2: al 1 2 4 Between 1701 and 1750 ae 17 oS 92 % i751, L760 1 2 1 4

a LAG 5, LAZO 2 5 1 38 ope

Fe Let 4, 730 | 6 on 4 11

ae “7st 4g, VA90 3 «9 Bs, i |) a3

+ 1791 ,, 1800 6 9 3 aie (iy aes

- TOr ,, £810 3 14 S 6 Gi) cc |) oe

re 1811 ,, 1820 2 ly a 6 4 4 | 32

a HS21) 5,- 1830 ih 20 al | 13 3 | 49

ee Iso ,,’ 1840) 18 50 2 1 6 | 19 1/101

Ss Weal”, 1850 27 47 A 29) 27 ||... | tse

= WS5l ,, 854) 10 76 oe ale |e 1 | 116 ln 1855 13 67 4) 21 9 2 1116

as 1856 12 15 2 fi 3 il, ee) POM SOR LM ac. cece iris s oveose ves we oe hee Wdlee: 7 Total number…... 101 B13) | HS AT, ES! lal

i

The decrease in the number of newspapers which passed through the post-office in the year 1855 (during exactly one-half of which the eompulsory stamp had been abolished) amounted to about one- fourth of the aggregate number which had been posted in the pre- ceding year. During the six months of the optional stamp the money received for impressed stamps was about £93,000, and that for postage stamps affixed on newspapers about

£25,000. In the year 1856 the number of newspapers which passed through the post-office was nearly 71,000,000,—about three-fourths bearing the impressed stamp and one-fourth franked by the ordinary postage stamps. The total gross revenue was therefore about £295,833. Prior to the abolition of the compulsory stamp the average weight of the newspapers passing through the post-office was three ounces and a half; in 1857 the average weight fell to about two ounces and three quarters. The reduction was due to the increase of the small and eheap papers. It was understood that The Times, at that date, stamped about 40 per cent. of its entire impression, the daily average of which then exceeded 60,000.

Amongst the earliest results of the change in newspaper law made in 1855 was the establishment in quick succession of a series of penny metropolitan local papers, chiefly suburban, of a kind very different from their unstamped forerunners. They spread rapidly,

1 The figures in the table are from the parliamentary returns. Mr Grant (History of the Newspaper Press, vol. ii. p. 321) states the cir- culation for 1831 at 38,649,314 copies, founding upon figures quoted in the House of Commons in 1864 by Mr Edward Baines,

The Courant continues to be the farmers' paper of the north; for almost a hundred and eighty years it has had but seven successive proprietors ; in politics it is independent. The Daily Journal is an organ of the Conservative party, dating as a weekly paper from 1832, asa daily one from 1861. Zhe Chronicle holds a like position

on the Liberal side. The Liverpool Courant dates from May 1712. Liverpool.

It lasted a very short time, and had no successor until May 1756, when The Liverpool Advertiser appeared ; Gore's General Advertiser followed in 1765, and continued until 1870. Liverpool has now (1883) eight daily and five weekly journals. There are, besides, commercial gazettes and a European Times published irregularly. The Hereford Journal dates from 1718, is of Conservative polities, and is noted for its fulness of local reports. The Hereford Times was established in 1832, and claims to be ‘‘the largest newspaper in the world,” containing regularly 112 columns, with

frequent supplements. Its merits are such that it holds its ground at the price of 34d. against a competitor at 2d. and two at 1d. The four papers of Hereford are all weekly.

The Salisbury Postman was the first newspaper started in that Salisbury.

city. It appeared in 1715, and its first number was the earliest first number of a provincial newspaper that the researehes of the committee of the Caxton Centenary of 1877 enabled them to ex- hibit at South Kensington. It was followed by The Salisbury

Journal of 1729, which continues to appear. Bristol journalism Bristol.

began with Felix Farley's Journal in 1715, which merged into The Bristol Times (1735), and both were conjoined with The Bristol Mirror (weekly from 1773) to form The Daily Bristol Times and Mirror of January 1865. In journalism as in much else Bristol contrasts curiously with its northern rival. Liverpool had no really established newspaper until 1756. It now (in 1883) pub- lishes seventeen papers (reckoning those which are printed to aceom- pany the outgoing mails), while Bristol has only seven, including the little visitors' paper of Clifton.

The Kentish Gazette dates from 1717, but was first published Canter- under the title of Kentish Post. Canterbury has now seven papers, bury.

one of which appears twice a week; the others are of weekly issue.

The Leeds Mereury was established in 1718, and, for the purpose Leeds.

of evading the Stamp Act, was made to extend to twelve pages small quarto (or a sheet and a half,—the stamp being then levied only on papers not exceeding a single sheet). Like its contempor- aries it was published weekly, and its price was three-halfpence. In 1729 it was reduced to four pages of larger size, and sold, with a stamp, at twopence. From 1755 to 1766 its publication was sus- pended, but was resumed in January 1767, under the management of James Bowley, who continued to conduct it for twenty-seven years, and raised it to a circulation of 3000. Its price at this time was fourpence. The increase of the stamp duty in 1797 altered its price

to sixpence, and the circulation sank from 3000 to 800. It was purchased in 1801 by Edward Baines, who first began the in- sertion of ‘‘leaders.” It took him three years to obtain a eireu- lation of 1500; but the Merewry afterwards made rapid progress, and became ono of the most important and valuable of the country

Exeter.

Man- chester.

Birming- ham,

Cam- bridge.

Oxford.

Wales.

Aggre- gate for England and Wales.

Scotland.

papers. It is now published both as a daily and asa weekly paper. Leeds has now four dailies and six weeklies.

Journalism in Excter began in the same year as in Leeds, and, somewhat singularly, with three newspapers, all of which in the first year of existence became the subject of debate in parliament. The western capital was then fiercely political. Its journals took the freedom of commenting on proceedings in parliament, and the three editors—those of The Exeter Merewry, The Protestant Merewry, and The Postmaster or Loyal Mercury—were all summoned to the bar of the House of Commons.1 The incident is curious as showing that each of the three represented a rival MS. news- letter writer in London. , eed

The following year (1719) saw the beginnings of journalism in Manchester, originating with The Manchester Weekly Journal, The Manchester Gazette

followed in 1730, and lasted until 1760. Then, in 1762, came Joseph Harrop's Manchester Mercury, which had a stormy life, but continued to appear until 1830. In 1867 Manchester had three daily papers and four weekly ones ; now it has six dailies (two Conservative, two Libcral, and two ncutral) and seven wecklics.

The earliest of the Birmingham newspapers dates from 1741, when Aris's Gazette (still in course of publication) began its career. It seems to have had no competitor, of any lengthened existence, until the establishment in 1836 of The Midland Counties Herald. The daily press of Birmingham begins with the year 1857, and with Zhe Birmingham Post. There are now three daily papers and nine weeklies, exclusive of Zhe Midland Sporting News, pub- lished twice a day, but relating only to its special subject. Of the other papers six are neutral, four Liberal, two Conservative.

The newspapers of Cambridge begin with the Chroniele of 1744, still extant. The Radical Intelligencer of the later years of the last century, conducted by Benjamin Flower, and notable in the history of press prosecutions, is said to have been the first provincial paper in England for which original leading articles on the political topics of the day were written. But it would need a far-reaching ex- amination of scattered collectious and files of newspapers preserved in editorial offices—the collection, large as it is, in the British Museum is quite inadequate to the inquiry—to warrant any absolute assertion on that point.. Cambridge has now three weekly news- papers (one Liberal, one Conservative, one ncutral), exclusive of those university organs which appear only during term. Oxford journalism begins, strictly speaking, with Mercurius Aulicus? (1648, see p. 414, above), but the carliest really local newspaper is Lhe Oxford Journal of 1753, still in existence. The city has in all (exclusive, as above, of university ones) four weekly papers, three of which are Conservative organs.

The earliest existing newspaper of Wales is Zhe North Wales Chronicle, published at Bangor, which began to appear in 1807. The entire newspaper press of the principality numbcred in 1850 nine journals, in 1873 sixty, in 1883 seventy-five. Of these eleven are printed in Welsh ; one of them, Y Llana'r Dywysogacth describes itself as "the only" church and state Welsh

newspaper. Of the English-printed papers, thirteen are described as Conscrva- tive, twenty-seven as Liberal, the remainder as being either "neutral" or "independent" in respect of politics.

The aggregate number of provincial newspapers in England and Wales was in the year 1782, 50; in 1795, 72; im 1846, 228; in 1866, 773; in 1868, 797; in 1870, 848; in 1872, 948; in 1874, 973 ; in 1876, 1047 ; in 1878, 1075; in 1879, 1088: in 1880, 1130 ; in 1881, 1163; in 1883, 1219. In respect of political character the 1163 papers of 1881 have becn approximately classified thus :— Liberal, 385 ; Conservative, 302; neutral or independent, 476.

The first newspaper purporting by its title to be Scottish (The Seotch Iutelligencer,? 7th September 1643) and the first newspaper actually printed in Scotland (Mereurius Politicus, published at Leith in October 1653) were both of English manufacture,—the one being intended to communicate more particularly the affairs of Scotland to the Londoners, the other to keep Cromwell's army well acquainted with the London news. The reprinting of the Politieus was transferred to Edinburgh in November 1654, and it continued to appear (under the altered title Mercwrius Publicus subsequently to April 1660) until the beginning of 1663. Meanwhile an attempt

1 Journals of the House of Commons, xix. 30, 48, 1718.

2 Mr Grant (Newspaper Press, vol. iii. p. 193) says, very singu- larly :—" Though printed in Birkenhead, the Mercurius Aulicus was not published there. It was avowedly printed for a bookseller hear Queen's College, Oxford. ... Unfortunately there are no copies in the British Museum." The set of Mercurius Aulicus in the British Museum is, however, very complete, and has some useful MS. notes of dates, but no mention of any "Birkenhead," except the stout old cavalier Sir John.

3 This was followed by The Seotch Dove, the first number of which is dated "September 30 to October 20, 1643," and by The Scottish Mercury (No. 1, October 5, 1643). In 1648 a Mercurius Seotious and a Afercurius Caledonius were published in London. Zhe Scotch Dove was the only one of these which attained a lengthened existence.

NEWSPAPERS

[scorLaND.

by Thomas Sydserfe to establish a really Scottish newspaper, Mercurius Caledonius, had failed after the appearance of ten numbers, the first of which had been published at Edinburgh on the 8th of January 1660. It was not until March 1699 that a Scottish news- paper was firmly established, under the title of The Edinburgh Gazette, by James Watson, a printer of eminent skill in his art.4 Before the close of the ycar The Gazette was transferred to Jolin Reid, by whose family it long continued to be printed. In February 1705 Watson started Zhe Kdinburgh Courant, of which he only published fifty-five numbers. He states it to be his plan to give *‘most of the remarkable foreign news from their prints, and also the home news from the ports of this kingdom, ... now altogether neglected.” The Cowrant appeared thrice a week. Upon complaint being made to the privy council concerning an advertisement inserted after the transfer of the paper to Adam Boig, the new printer presented a supplication to the council in which he expressed his willingness ‘that in all time coming no inland news or advertisements shall be put into the Cowrant, but at the sight and allowance of the clerks of council.” In 1710 the town council authorized Mr Daniel Defoc to print The Edin- burgh Courant in the place of the deceased Adam Boig. Four years earlier the indefatigable pioneer of the Scottish press, James Watson, had begun the Scots Cowrant, which he continued to print until after the year 1718. To these papers were added in October 1708 The Edinburgh Flying Post and in August 1709 The Scots Postman. Five years later this paper appears to have been incor- porated with The Edinburgh Gazette, and the publication ap- peared twice a week, as it still continnes to do in 1883, as the Government gazette for Scotland. Zhe Caledonian Mercury began April 28, 1720. At one period it was published thrice and after- wards twice a weck. Its first proprietor was William Rolland, an advocate, and its first editor Thomas Ruddiman. The property passed to Ruddiman on Rolland’s death in 1729, and remained in his family until 1772. It is curious to notice that in his initiatory number of April 1720, Rolland claimed a right to identify his Afer- cury with that of 1660. This journal, he said in his preface to the public, ‘‘is the oldest [existing] in Great Britain.” And his suc- cessor of the year 1860 followed suit by celebrating

the ‘‘second centenary” of The Caledonian Mercury. He brought out a fac-simile of No. 1 of Mcrewrius Caledonius (January 1660), in its eight pages of small quarto, curiously contrasting with the great donble sheet of the day. But sixty years is a long period of suspended animation, and the connexion of the two newspapers cannot be proved to be more than nominal. The Caledonian Mercury was the first of Scottish journals to give conspicuous place to literature— foreign as well as Scottish. In ‘the ’45” once of its editors, Thomas Ruddiman, junior, virtually sacrificed his life,5 and the other, James Grant, went into exile, for the expression of conscientious political opinion. Its publication ceased after an existence of more than one hundred and forty years.

Notwithstanding the positive assertion® that The Edinburgh Courant and The Edinburgh Evening Courant ‘were entirely different journals, and never had any connexion whatever with each other,” the proprietors of the existing Cowraut assert a substantial identity, and obviously upon better grounds than those for which identity used to be claimed for The Caledonian Mercury with Mer- curtus Caledonius. The grant by the town council of Edinburgh in December 1718 of a licence to James M ‘Ewan to print an Evening Courant three times a week appears to have been really a revival, in altered form, of the original Courant, repeatedly referred to in earlier, but not much earlier, records of the same corporation. So revived, The Evening Cowrant was the first Scottish paper to give foreign intelligence from original sources, instead of repeating the advices sent to London. In 1780 David Ramsay became its pro- prietor. Under his management it is said to have attained the largest Scottish circulation of its day. It was then of neutral politics. Of late years, returning to its original title, and appearing as a daily morning paper, it has ranked as the senior organ of the Conservative party in Scotland.

4 Watson was the printer and editor, but the person licensed was James Donaldson, merchant in Edinburgh (‘ Act in favors of James Donaldson for printing the Gazette,” March 10, 1699, published in Miscellany of the Maitland Club, ii. 232 sq.). Arnot, in his Zistory of Edinburgh, mentions as the second of Edinburgh newspapers— intervening between Mercurius Caledonius and the Gazette—a King- dom’s Intelligencer. But this was a London newspaper, dating from 1662, which may occasionally have been

reprinted in Scotland; no such copies, however, are now known to exist. In like manner The Scottish Mercury, No. 1, May 8, 1692, appears to have been a London newspaper based upon Scottish news-letters, although in an article written in 1848, in the Scottish Journal of Topography, vol. ii. p. 308, it is mentioned ag an Edinburgh newspaper.

> During an imprisonment of six weeks in the Tolbooth of Edin- burgh his health suffered so severely that he died very shortly after his release.

§ Grant, Wistory of the Newspaper Press, 1878, iii. 412,

IRELAND. |

The Edinburgh Weekly Journal dates from 1744, but it only attained celebrity when, almost seventy years afterwards, it became the joint property of Sir Walter Scott and of James Ballantyne. Scott wrote in its columns many characteristic articles. Ballantyne edited it until his death in 1833, and was succeeded in the editor- ship by Thomas Moir. The paper was discontinued about 1840.

The Seotsman was established as a twice-a-week paper in January 1817, and became a daily in June 1855. It has always ranked as the chief organ of the Liberal party in Scotland. The proprietor- ship continues to be in the family of William Ritchie, by whom, in conjunction with Charles Maclaren, the paper was founded. For a short period it was edited by J. R. M‘Culloch, the eminent political economist. He was succeeded by Maclaren, who edited the paper until 1845, and he in turn by Alexander Russel, who coutinued to conduct it with great ability until 1876. In 1854 its average circulation was 3451 copies. In 1859 the first of Hoe’s rotary machines brought into Scotland was erected for The Scotsman, and the productive power was raised from 1500 in the hour to 7500.

The North British Advertiser, founded in 1826, had in 1854 an average circulation of 15,423 cdpies,—the greater part of the issue distributed gratnitously. The Witness began in 1840 as the avowed

NEWSPAPERS

men" in 1768, and its first editor was Dr Lneas. Flood and Grattan were at one time numbered amongst its contributors ; although the latter, at a subsequent period, is reported to have exclaimed in his place in the Irish parliament, 'the Freeman's Journal is a liar, ... a public, pitiful liar." The relations between the journalism and the oratory of Ireland have been not unfrequently of this stormy character. Dublin has now six daily papers and fifteen others, mostly appearing once or twice a week. It had in 1875 eight dailies and seventeen weeklies.

Watcrford possessed a newspaper as early as 1729, entitled The Waterford Flying Post. It professed to contain ''the most material news both foreign and domestic,'' was printed on common writing paper, and published twice a week at the price of a halfpenny. The paper of earliest origin now published in Waterford is The Waterford Chronicle, which dates from 1766. The Belfast News- Letter was started in 1737, and still flourishes.

In all Ireland the number of daily papers was 19 in 1875, and in 1883 only 16. The number issued once or twice a week was in the former year 118, in the latter 131. There are five other news- papers of varying periodicity, making an aggregatc, in 1883, of 152. The total increase since 1862 is 18, the inerease in Scotland during the same period having been 45.

organ of what specdily became the Free Church party in Scotland. In its first prospectus it calls itself The Old Whig. The paper appeared twice a week, and its editor, Hugh Miller, very soon made it famous. In the course of less than sixteen years he wrote about a thousand articles and papers, conspicuous for literary ability, still more so for a wide range of acquirement and of original thought, most ofall for deep conscientiousuess. It survived its first editor's lamented death (1855) only a few years. Edinburgh has now five daily and six weekly papers.

In Glasgow the lead is taken by the Glasgow Herald (Independ- ent), the greatest advertising medium in Scotland. Founded in

The newspaper press of the Isle of Man dates only from 1821. Isle of The island possesses six journals in 1883, one of which, The Jfona Man. Daily

News, appears daily from July to September.

The Gazette de Guernsey—carliest of existing Channel Island Channel newspapers—dates from 1788 ; the Chronique de Jersey from 1814. Islands. Guernsey has in all seven papers, and Jersey eight.

An Act of Parliament of 1869 (82 & 33 Vict. c. 24), entitled British

An Act to Repeal certain Enactments relating to Newspapers," news- simplified the process for discovering the names of proprietors and paper publishers, but until the year next following (1870) the establish- legisla- ment of a newspaper still required compliance with most of the tion.

1782, it has risen gradually to the level of the great metropolitan newspapers. The North British Daily Mail (Liberal), the oldest daily in Scotland, was established in April 1847. George Tromp, its first editor, made it specially famous for the organizing skill with which he brought his intelligence at an unprecedented rate of speed from Carlisle, the nearest point then eonnected with London by railway.! Glasgow has now six daily newspapers and thirtecu of weekly issue.

The earlicst in date of the provincial newspapers of Scotland is The Aberdecn Journal (Couservative), founded as a weekly paper in 1748, and a daily from 1876. The Aberdeen Daily Free Press (Liberal), originally a weekly, dates from 1853. The Dundee Advertiser (Liberal) was established in 1801.

The aggregate number of Scottish journals—metropolitan and provincial together—79 in 1846, had grown in 1866 to 188, in 1876 to 164, and in 1883 to 184. Taken as a whole—in regard as well to literary character and scope as to the specially industrial characteristics of journalism—they occupy at least an equal rank with the best journals of the leading provincial towns of Kugland, whilst the metropolitan press of Scotland ranks exceptionally high. A very large number of the men who have distinguished themselves by their labours on the great newspapers of London, and several who rank as founders of these, began their career, and have left their mark, on the newspapers of Scotland.

Ireland's True Diurnal (1642), Mercurius Hibernicus (1644), The Irish Courant (1690), are all of them London newspapers containing Irish news. The newspaper press of Ireland begins with The Dublin News-Letter of 1685, just at the close of the lien- tenancy of the illustrious duke of Ormond.? Five years later appeared the Dublin Intelligencer (No. 1, September 30, 1690). Both of these were short-lived. Pue's Occurrences followed in 1700,

regulations of the 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 76. In that year, by the Act 33 & 34 Vict. c. 32, the (until then optional) stamp duties on newspapers were wholly repealed, and their postal transmission became subject only to the regnlations of the post-office. It is now subject, under the Post-Office Act of 1870, to an annual registration with a fee of five shillings, and without such annual registration a newspaper can pass through the post only at the book rate of postage. In 1881 the registration of newspapers in order to the enforcement of responsibility for libel passed to the office of the registrar of joint-stock companies (44 & 45 Vict. c. 60).

Authorities.—Miscellaneous newspapers in the Burney, Stamp-Office, and other collections of the British Museum, and in the Hope collection and miscellaneous colicetion of the Bodleian at Oxford; Nichols, Literary Anecdotes of the Eighteenth Century, iv. 33-97; Returns relating to Newspaper Stamps, 1836-54; Report of the Select Committee on Newspaper Stamps, 1850; Uansard, Parliamentary History of England, 1712-1742, and Debates, Sessions 1835, 1836, 1853, 1854, 1855, 1881, and 1882; First Report of the Commissioners on the Inland Revenue, 1857, 28, exxiv; Andrews, History of British Journalism, 2 vols., 1860; Hunt, The Fourth Estate; Grant, The Newspaper Press, 3 vols., 1871-73; Wm. Lee, Life and Newly Discovered Writings of Daniel Defoe, 3vols.,1869; Coleridge, Biographia Literaria, Supp., 392-395 ; Life of Edward Batnes, 346 sq.; Mitchell, The Newspaper Press Directory, 1846, 1857, 1859 to 1883 inclusive, 26 vols.; Plummer, 'The British Newspaper Press," Companion to the Almanac, 1876 ; Second, Third, and Twenty- eighth Reports of the Postmaster-General, 1856, p. 19, 1857, p. 10 sg., 1882; Scott, Memoirs of Swift, 180 sq.; Alex. Chalmers, articles '' Amhurst," '' Birkcnhead," ""'Heylyn," '' Johnson," ''Needham," &c., in General Biographical Dictionary, 1812-17; Gentleman's Magazine, vol. vii.; "The

Newspaper Press," Quarterly Review, cl. 498-537, October 1880; Hatton, Journalistic London, 1882; Gcorge Chalmers, Life of Ruddiman, part 2, 1794; Bayne, Life and Letters of Hugh Miller, vol. ii.; H. G. Graham, "Russel of the Scotsman," Frasers Magazine, n.s., xxii, 301-317, 1880. Information concerning North of England newspapers has been coutributed by Mr W. Hill, Newcastle-upon-Tyne.

NEWSPAPERS OF FRANCE.

The annals of French journalism begin with the Gazette, Gazette established by Théophraste Renaudot in 1631, under the de patronage of Richelieu, and with his active co-operation, 47"

and lasted for more than fifty years, as the pioncer of the daily press of Ireland. In 1710 or in 1711 (there is some doubt as to the date of the earliest number) The Dublin Gazette began to appear,

and it continues still (1883) as the official organ of the vice-regal government. Falkener's Jowrnal was established in 1728, and also appeared daily. Hsdaile's News-Letter began in 1744, took the title of Sawnders's News-Letter in 1754 (when it appeared three times a week), and became a daily newspaper in 1777. It long possessed the largest circulation ever attained by an Irish daily paper.

The famous Freeman's Journal was long pre-eminent amongst the Dublin papers for ability and vigour. It was established as a daily paper by a committee of the first society of " United Irish-

1 See Motes and Queries, 5th series, vii. 45, viii. 205.

2 The appearance of the earliest of Irish newspapers during the very last year in which that great statesman was in Ireland made it a matter of special interest to the present writer to ascertain if Ormond —who had a keen zest for literature as well as for field sports—had in any way patronized or noticed the new literary venture. But a perusal of some scores of his original letters (now in Oxford), dated in that year, finds no mention of The Dublin News-Letter. Ormond's own collection of " news-letters" in MS. is, it may be added.one of the finest known to exist in the kingdom,

Much of its earliest foreign news came direct from the minister, and not seldom in his own hand. Louis XIII. took a keen, perhaps a somewhat childish, interest in the progress of the infant Gazette, and was a frequent con- tributor, now and then taking his little paragraphs to the printing office himself, and seeing them put into type. Renaudot was born at Loudun in 1584, studied medicine in Paris and at Montpellier, established himself in the capital in 1612, and soon became conspicuous both within and beyond the limits of his profession. Endowed by nature with great energy and versatility, he seems at an early period of his career to have attracted the attention of the great cardinal, and to have obtained permission to establish a sort of general agency office, under the designa-

3 Debates of the Irish House of Commons, 3d March 1789.

tion of “Bureau d’Adresses et de Rencontre.” An enter-.| in 1672, with Thomas Corneille for its sub-editor, it may Mercure

prise like this would, perhaps, naturally suggest to such a mind as Renaudot’s the advantage of following it up by the foundation of a newspaper. According to some French writers, however, the project was formed by Pierre d’Hozier, the genealogist, who carried on an extensive correspondence both at home and abroad, and was thus in a position to give valuable help; according to others by Richelieu himself. Be this as it may, Renaudot put his hand zealously to the work, and brought out his first weekly number in May 1631. So much, at least, may be inferred from the date (4th July 1631) of the sixth number, which was the first dated publication, the five preceding numbers being marked by “signatures” only —A to E. Each number consists of a single sheet (eight pages) in small quarto, and is divided into two parts—the first simply entitled Gazette, the second Mouvelles Ordinaires de Divers Endroits. For this division the

author assigns two reasons—(1) that two persons may thus read his journal at the same time, and (2) that it facilitates a division of the subject-matter—the Nouvelles containing usually intelligence from the northern and western countries, the Gazette from the southern and eastern. He commonly begins with foreign and ends with home news, a method which was long and generally followed, and which still obtains. Once a month he pub- lished a supplement, under the title of Relation des Nouvelles du Monde, recues dans tout le mois. In October 1631 Renaudot obtained letters-patent to himself and his heirs, conferring the exclusive privilege of printing and selling, where and how they might please, "the gazettes, news, and narratives of all that has passed or may pass within and without the kingdom." His assailants were numer- ous, but he steadily pursued his course, and at his death in October 1653 left the Gazette to his sons in flourishing circumstances. In 1752 the title Gazette de France was first used. Under this designation it continued to appear until the 24th August 1848. During the five days which followed that date it was suspended; on the 30th it was resumed as Le Peuple Lrancais, Journal de V Appel @ la Nation, and again modified on the 14th September to L'£toile de la France, Journal des Droits de Tous. On the 25th October it became Gazette de France, Journal de [Appel & la Nation; and under this title it still continues to appear. A complete set extends to upwards of 300 volumes, of which 189 are in quarto and the rest in folio. It scarcely need be added that such a set forms a collection of great value, not only for the history of France, but for that of Europe generally.

Not the least curious nor the least instructive incident in the history of the Gazette de France—a history which abounds both with curiosity and with instruction—is the endeavour which was made by a great French minister, more than a hundred years ago, to make the envoys and consuls of France at foreign courts official members of its literary staff, by calling on them for periodical accounts of the progress of letters and science and of literary and scientific institutions in the several countries to which they were respectively accredited. The approach of 1789 obstructed the good effect of this pregnant scheme.

Loret's rhymed Gazette (1650 to March 1665) will always have interest in the eyes of students who care less for the "dignity" of history than for the

fidelity of its local colouring and the animation of its backgrounds. It were vain to look there for any deep appreciation of the events of those stormy times. But it abounds in vivid portraits of the men and manners of the day. It paints rudely, yet to the life, the Paris of the Fronde, with all its effervescence and depression, its versatility and fickleness, its cowardice and its courage.

Of the Mercure Galant, established by Donneau de Visé

be said that it sought to combine the qualities of the #

Gazettes, both grave and gay. Like the former, it con- 44″

tained the permitted state news and court circulars of the day. Like the latter, it amused its readers with satirical verses, and with sketches of men and manners, which, if not always true, were at least well invented. Reviews and sermons, law pleas and street airs, the last reception at the Academy and the last new fashion of the milliners, all found their ~~place. De Visé carried on his enterprise for more than thirty years, and at his death it was con~~ tinued by Riviére du Fresny. The next editor, Lefévre de Fontenay, altered the title to Nouveau Mercure, which in 1728 was altered to Mercure de France, a designation re- tained, with sight modification, until 1853. The Mercure passed through many hands before it came into those of Panckoucke, at the eve of the Revolution. Amongst its more conspicuous writers, immediately before this change, had been Raynal and Marmontel. The latter, indeed, had for many years been its principal editor, and in his Mémorres has left us a very interesting record of the views and aims which governed him in the performance of an arduous task. And he there narrates the curious fact that it was Madame de Pompadour who contrived the plan of giving pensions to eminent men of letters out of the profits of the Mercwre. To one of Marmontel's pre- decessors the " privilege," or patent, had been worth more than £1000 sterling annually. This revenue was now to be shared amongst several, and to become a means of extending royal " patronage" of literature at a cheap rate. It is to this pension-scheme, too, that we owe the Contes Moraux. Marmontel, who had long before lost his "patent" by an act of high-minded generosity, continued to share in the composition of the literary articles with Chamfort and La Harpe, whilst Mallet du Pan, a far abler writer than either, became the most prominent of

the political writers in the Mercure. In 1789 he contributed a series of remarkable articles on the well-known book of De Lolme; and in the same year he penned some com- ments on the “Declaration of the Rights of Man,” very distasteful to violent men of all parties, but which forcibly illustrate the pregnant truth they begin with :—‘“The gospel las given the simplest, the shortest, and the most comprehensive ‘Declaration of the Rights of Man,’ in saying, ‘Do unto others as you would that they should do unto you.’ All politics hinge upon this.”

In 1790 the sale of the Mercure rose very rapidly. It attained for a time a circulation of 13,000 copies. Mirabeau styled it in debate “the most able of the newspapers.” Great pains were taken for the collection of statistics and state papers, the absence of which from the French news- paper press had helped to depress its credit as compared with the political journalism of England and to some extent of Germany. But, as the Revolution marched on towards a destructive democracy, Mallet du Pan evinced more and more unmistakably his rooted attachment to a constitutional monarchy. And, like so many of his com- patriots, he soon found the tide too strong for him. The political part of the Afercure changed hands, and after the 10th August 1792 its publication was suspended.

All this time the Moniteur (Gazette Nationale, ou le Monitew Momteur Universel) was under the same general manage- Univer-

ment as the Mercure Francais (so the title had been altered

in 1791). The first idea, indeed, of this famous official journal appears to have been Panckoucke’s, but it did not firmly establish itself until he had purchased the Journal de l Assemblée Nationale, and so secured the best report of the debates. The Monitewr, however, kept step with the majority of the assembly, the Mercure with the minority. So marked a contrast between two journals, with one pro-

prietor, gave too favourable a leverage to the republican | John Adamson, 1777-89”), and are usually referred to by

wits not to be tured to good account. Camille Desmoulins | French writers as the Mémoires de Bachaumont.

depicted him as Janus,—one face radiant at the blessings The journalism of the first Revolution has been the News- of coming liberty, the other plunged in grief for the epoch | theme of many bulky volumes, and their number is still P¢Po of

that was rapidly disappearing. on the increase. The recital of the mere titles of the nee

FRANCE. |

enhanced. During the later days of the Revolution, and under the imperial rule, its roll of contributors included the names of Geoffroy, Ginguené, Morellet, Lacretelle, Fontanes, and Chateaubriand. ‘The statesman last named brought upon the Afercure another temporary suppression in June 1807 (at which date he was its sole proprietor), by words in true unison with the noblest deed of his chequered career—his retirement, namely, from the imperial service on the day that the news of the execution of the duke of Enghien reached him, being the day after he had been appointed by Napoleon a minister plenipotentiary.

Thus it chanced that alike under the brilliant despotism of Napoleon and under the crapulous malversation of Louis XV. the management of the Merewre was revolutionized for protests which conferred honour upon the journal no less than upon the individual writers who made them. Resumed by other. hands, the Mercure continued to appear until January 1820, when it was again suspended. In the following year it reappeared as Le Mercure de France, au dix-neunéeme siecle, and in February 1853 it finally ceased. A complete set extends to no fewer than 1611 volumes.

Mercure | When resumed, after a very brief interval, the Mercure | newspapers which then appeared throughout France fills Fran- ‘Frangais became again Mercure de France,—its political | more than forty pages of larger dimensions than those wd importance diminished, whilst its literary worth was | which the reader has now before him. It is obvious,

therefore, that a very casual glance at this part of our subject is all that can be given to it here.

When at least one half of the French people was in a ferment of hope or of fear at the approaching convocation of the states-general, most of the existing newspapers were still in a state of torpor. Long paragraphs, for example, about a terrible " wild beast of the Gevaudan "— whether wolf or bear, or as yet nondescript, was uncertain —were still current in the Paris journals at this momentous juncture. Mirabeau was among the foremost to supply the popular want. His Lettres a ses Commettants began on the 2d May 1789, and with the twenty-first number became the Courrier de Provence. Within a week Maret (after- wards duke of Bassano) followed with the Bulletin des Séances de l Assemblée Nationale, and Lehodey with the Journal des Etats Généraux. In June Brissot de Warville began his Patriote Francais, Gorsas published the first number of his Courrier de Versailles in the following month, from which also dates the famous periodical of Prudhomme, Loustalot,'and Tournon, entitled Révolutions de Paris, with its characteristic motto,—" Les grands ne nous paraissent grands que parce que nous sommes a

Journal The only other newspaper of a date anterior to the de Paris. Revolution which needs to be noticed here is the Journal de Paris, which was commenced on New Year's Day of 1777. It had but a feeble infancy, yet lived for half a

genoux; levons nous!" In August 1789 Baudouin began

the Journal des Débats (edited in 1792 by Louvet) and Journal Marat the Ami du Peuple (which at first was called Le #5 Débats Publiciste Parisien). The Moniteur Universel (of which we a a

|

century. Its early volumes appear so insipid to a 19th. century reader that he wonders what can have been the cause of its occasional bickerings with the police. Its tameness, however, did not save it from sharing in the "suspensions" of its predecessors. After the Revolution such men as Garat, Condorcet, and Regnaud de St Jean d'Angély appear amongst its

contributors, but those of earlier date were obscure. Its period of highest prosperity may be dated about 1792, when its circulation is said to have exceeded 20,000.

and, if we may judge from the copious specimens of these epistles which yet survive, must also not unfrequently have arisen from lack of official employment, rather than from substantial provocation. Madame Doublet de Persan, the widow of a member of the French board of trade, was a conspicuous purveyor of news of this sort. For nearly forty years daily meetings were held in her house at which the gossip and table-talk of the town were systematically (and literally) registered; and weekly abstracts or epitomes were sent into the country by post. iron, Mirabaud, Faleonet, D'Argental, and, above all, Bachaumont, were prominent members of the "society," and each of them is said to have had his assigned seat beneath his own portrait. The lady's valet-de-chambre appears to have been editor ex officio; and as he occasionally suffered imprisonment, when offensive news-letters had been seized by the police, so responsible a duty was doubtless "considered in the wages." News and anecdotes of all kinds—political and literary, grave, gay, or merely scandalous—were all admitted into the Vouvelles a la Main; and their contents, during a long series of years, form the staple of those Mémoires Secrets pour servir & 0 Histoire dela République des Lettres which extend to thirty-six volumes, have been frequently printed (at first with the false imprint ''Londres:

have spoken already) was first published on the 24th November, although numbers were afterwards printed bearing date from the 5th May, the day on which the states-general first assembled. Camille Desmoulins also commenced his Révolutions de France et de Brabant in November 1789. The Ami du Roi was first published in June 1790, La Quotidienne in September 1792.

Of all these prominent journals the MJoniteur and the Débats alone have survived until now. A few of them lasted until 1794 or 1795; one continued until recently ;

Nouvelles The police adventures of the writers of the MS. news- | but most of them expired either in the autumn of 1792 :., letters, or Nouvelles & la

Main, were still more numerous, | or with the fall of the party of the Gironde in September

1793. In some of these papers the energy for good and for evil of a whole lifetime seems to be compressed into the fugitive writings of a few months. Even the satirical journals which combated the Revolution with shafts of ridicule and wit, keen enough after their kind, but too light to do much damage to men terribly in earnest, abound with matter well deserving the attention of all students desirous of a thorough knowledge of the period.1

The consular Government began its dealings with the press by reducing the number of political papers to thirteen. At this period the number of daily journals had been nineteen, and their aggregate provincial circulation, apart from the Paris sale, 49,313, an average of 2600 each.

Under Napoleon the Monztewr was the only political paper that was really regarded with an eye of favour. Even as respects the nation at large, the monstrous excesses into which the Revolutionary press had plunged left an enduring stigma on the class. When Bertin acquired the Journal des Débats from Baudouin, the printer, for 20,000 francs, he had to vanquish popular indifference on ee, ee

1 We make these remarks after an actual examination—volume by volume—of many hundreds of these ephemeral productions, reckoning those of all kinds, belonging to the Revolutionary period.

Consti- tution- nel,

La Presse and Le Siécle.

the one hand, as well as imperial mistrust on the other. The men he called to his aid were Geoffroy and Fievée ; and by the brilliancy of their talents and the keenness of his own judgment he converted the Débats into a paper having 32,000 subscribers, and producing a profit of 200,000 francs a year.

When the imposition of a special censorship was threatened in 1805, at the instance of Fouché, a remarkable correspondence took place between Fievée and Napoleon himself, in the course of which the emperor wrote that the only means of preserving a news- paper from suspension was “to avoid the publication of any news unfavourable to the Government, until the truth of it is so well established that the publication becomes needless.” The censorship was avoided, but Fievée had to become the responsible editor, and the title was altered to Journal de ? Empire—the imperial critic taking exception to the word Débats as “inconvenient.” The old title was resumed in August 1815. The revolution of July did but enhance the power and the profit of the paper. It has held its course with uniform dignity, as well as with splendid ability, amidst recent perils, and may still be said, in the words which Lamartine applied to it in an earlier day, to have “‘made itself part of French history.”

Shortly before the Journal del Empire became again the Journal des Débats (in 1815), a severance occurred amidst both the writers and subscribers. It led to the foundation of the Constetutionnel, which at first and for a short time bore the title of Z’Indépendant. The former became, for a time, the organ of the royalists par excellence, the latter the leader of the opposition. In 1824, however, both were in conflict with the Government of the day. At that date, in a secret report addressed to the ministry, the aggregate circulation of the opposition press of Paris was stated at 41,330,1 while that of the Government press amounted only to 14,344.?

The rapid rise of the Constitutionnel was due partly to the great ability and influence of Jay, of Etienne, of Béranger, and of Saint Albin (who had been secretary to Carnot in his ministry of 1815), all of whom co-operated in its early editorship, and partly to its sympathy with the popular reverence for the memory of Napoleon, as well as to the vigorous share it took in the famous literary quarrel between the classicists and romanticists (although in that quarrel it took what may now be called the side of the vanquished). Its part in bringing about the revolution of 1830 raised it to the zenith of its fortunes. For a brief period it could boast of 23,000 subscribers at 80 francs a year. But the invasion of cheap newspapers, and that temporary lack of enterprise which so often follows a brilliant success, lowered it with still greater rapidity. When the author of the Mémoires d’un Bourgeois, Dr

Véron, purchased it, the sale had sunk to 3000. Véron gave 100,000 francs for the Juif Errant of Sue, and the Sue fever rewarded him for a while with more than the old circulation. editorship of Césena, Granier de Cassagnac, and La Guéronniére.

The cheap journalism of Paris began in 1836 (Ist J uly) with the journal of Girardin, Za Presse, followed instantly by Le Siécle, under the management of Dutacq, to whom, it is said—not incredibly—the original idea was really due. The first-named journal attained a circulation of 10,000 copies within three months of its commencement, and soon doubled that number. The Siécle prospered even more Pa ee ee eee

1 Le Constitutionnel, 16,250; Journal des Débats, 13,000; La Quotidienne, 5800; Le Courrier Francais, 2975; Journal de Com- merce, 2880; L' Aristarque, 925.

® Journal de Paris, 4175; L' Etoile, 2749; Gazette de France, oa Le Moniteur, 2250; Le Drapeau Blanc, 1900; Le Pilote,

Afterwards the paper passed under the –

NE WSPAPTrHE DS

|

[FRANCE

strikingly, and in a few years had reached a circulation (then without precedent in France) of 38,000 copies.

The rapid growth of the newspaper press of Paris under Louis-Philippe will be best appreciated from the fact that, while in 1828 the number of stamps issued was 28 millions, in 1836, 1843, 1845, and 1846-the figures were 42, 61, 65, and 79 millions respectively. At the: last- mentioned date the papers with a circulation of upwards of 10,000 were (besides the Moniteur, of which the circula- tion was chiefly official and gratuitous) as follows :—Ze Stécle, 31,000; La Presse and Le Constitutionnel, between 20,000 and 25,000; Journal des Débats and L' Epoque, between 10,000 and 15,000.

If we now cast a retrospective glance at the general characteristics (1) of the newspaper press of France, and (2) of the legislation con- cerning it, between the respective periods of the devastating revoln- tion of 1793-94 and the scarcely less destructive revolution of 1848, it will be found that the years 1819, 1828, 1830 (July), and 1835 (September) mark epochs full of pregnant teaching upon our sub- ject. We pass over, as already sufficiently indicated, the newspaper licence of the first-named years (1793-94), carried to a pitch which became a disgrace to civilization, and the stern Napoleonic censor- ship which followed it,—also carried to an excess, disgraceful, not, indecd, to civilization, but to the splendid intellect which had once given utterance to the words, ‘‘ Physical discovery is a grand faculty of the human mind, but literature is the mind itself.”

The year 1819 is marked by a virtual cessation of the arbitrary power of suppression lodged till then in the Government, and by the substitution of a graduated system of preliminary bonds and suretyships (‘‘cautionnements’”’) on the one hand, and of strict penalties for convicted press-offences on the other. This initiatory amelioration of 1819 became, in 1828, a measure of substantial yct regulated freedom, which for two years worked, in the main, alike with equity towards the just claims of journalism as a profession and with steady development towards the public of its capabilities as a great factor in the growth of civilization. Those two years were followed by a widely-contrasted period of five years. That was a term of entire liberty often grossly abused, and fitly ending with the just and necessary restrictions of September 1835. But that period of 1830-35 was also signalized by some noble attempts to use the powers of the newspaper press for promoting the highest and the enduring interests of France. Not least memorable amongst these was the joint enterprise of Montalembcrt and Lamennais— soon to be aided by Lacordaire,—when, by the establishment (October 1830) of the newspaper LZ’ Avenir, they claimed for the church of France ‘‘ her just part in the liberties acquired by the country,” and asserted for the sacred symbols of Christianity their lawful place, alike above the tricolor and above the lilies. ‘* Dicu ct la liberté” was the motto which Montalembert chose for his news- paper, as he had chosen it long before for the guiding star of his youthful aspirations. ZL’ Avenir existed only for one year and ono month. It came toits early end from no laek of energy and patience in its writers, but in part from that mission of

the editors to Rome (November 1831) which, at least for a time, necessitated the discon- tinuance of their newspaper. Human regrets had higher than human consolations. ‘‘Ourlabonrs” on L’ Avenir, wrote Montalem- bert, with simple truth, “decided the attitude of Catholics in France and elsewhere, from the time of the July revolution to the time of the second empire.”

There were many other papers, at this time and afterwards, which, like L’ Avenir, were, in their degree, organs of ideas, not speculations of trade. But they cannot be even cnumerated here. No very notable specially religious paper succeeded L’ Avenir until the fonnda- tion in 1843—under widely different auspices, although twice at the outsct the editorship was offered to Lacordaire—of L’ Univers Religieux. That journal was edited, at first, by De Coux, then by Louis Veuillot; it underwent innumerable lawsuits, “warnings,” suppressions, and interdicts, for causes very diverse. Several prelates suppressed L’ Univers Religicux in their respective dioceses, amongst them the great bishop Dupanloup in that of Orleans (1853). Napoleon III. suppressed it in 1861, permitted it to reappear as Le Monde, and suspended it many times afterwards ; but it has survived all its misfortunes and still exists, under its new title. Ze Monde had the curious fate, at one time, of being conducted jointly by the first editor of L’ Avenir, Lamennais, and by George Sand, who had previously figured in the newspaper annals of France as co-foundress of L’Kelaireur de U’Indre, a journal published at Orlcans. The account given by that brilliant writer of her adventures in what was then to her a new department of activity is an instructive one. With that breadth of sympathy which was so characteristic of her, she strove to interest all her friends (however varied in character, as in rank) in the enterprise. There is, perhaps, scarcely anything more amusing in French Journalistic annals than is her (contemporary) account of the first

mecting of the shareholders—at which, she tells us, about five hundred resolutions were moved for the guidance of the editor at his desk. JL’ Eelaireur did not shed its lustre on the department of the Indre for much

length of time. In later days Le Monde, under very various editorships, has amply vindicated the change in its title.

The impulse given to the growth of advertisements in the days which followed July 1830, although trivial in comparison with what British newspaper readers are daily familiar with, became, as the years rolled on, sufficiently developed to induce the formation of a company—in which one of the Lafittcs took part—to farm them, } at a ycarly rent of £12,000 sterling (300,000 frances), so far (at first) as regarded the four leading journals (Débats, Constitutionnel, Siécle, Presse), to which were afterwards added two others (Le Pays and La Patrice), The combination greatly embarrassed advertisers, first, since its great aim was to force them either to advertise in all, whether addressing the classcs intended to be canvassed or not, or clse to pay for each advertisement in a selected newspaper the price of many proffered advertisements in all the papers collectively, and, secondly, because by many repetitions in certain newspapers no additional publicity was really gained, two or three of the favoured journals circulating for the main amongst the same class of buyers. La France was then the newspaper of the Conservative aristocracy of the nation ; Le Monde and the Union more especially addressed the clergy; the Débats and the Temps were the journals of the upper mercantile class, the Stécle and L'Opinion of the lower or shopkeeping class. A man who asked to advertise briefly, in the Siéele, for example, alone, was charged 2 frances for each several insertion. If he went the round of the six, his advertisement cost him only 75 centimes per journal, for ten successive insertions in each of them, all round.

To a great extent, the inundation of newspapers which followed the revolution of February 1848 was but a parody on the revolu- tionary press of 1798. Most of them, of course, had very short lives. When Cavaignac took the helm he suppressed eleven jour- nals, including La Presse and L' Assemblée Nationale. The former had at this period a circulation of nearly 70,000, and its proprietor, in a petition to the National Assembly, declared that it gave sub- sistence to more than one thousand persons, and was worth in the inarket at least 1,500,000 francs. In August the system of sureties was restored. On the 13th June 1849 the president of the republic suspended Le Peuple, La Révolution Démocratique et Sociale, La Vraie République, La Démocratie Pacifique, La Réforme, and La Tribune des Peuples. On July

16, 1850, the assembly passed what is called the ‘‘ Loi Tinguy,” by which the author of every news- paper article on any subject, political, philosophical, or religious, was bound to affix his name to it, on penalty of a fine of 500 francs for the first offence, and of 1000 francs for its repetition. Every false or feigned signature was to be punished by a fine of 1000 francs, ‘‘ together with six months’ imprisonment, both for the author and the editor.” The practical working of this law lay in the creation of a new functionary in the more important newspaper offices, who was called ‘‘sccrétaire de la rédaction,” and was, in fact, the scapegoat ex officto. In February 1852 all the press laws wcre incorporated, with increased stringency, into a ‘‘ Décrct organique sur la presse.”” The stamp duty for each sheet was fixed at 6 centimes, within certain dimensions, and a proportional in- crease in case of excess.

In 1858 the order of the six leading Parisian papers in point of circulation was—(1) Siéele, (2) Presse, (8) Constitutionnel, (4) Patric, (5) Débats, (6) Assemblée Nationale. The number of provincial papers exceeded five hundred. ‘‘ Newspapers, nowadays,” wrote a keenly observant publicist in that year, ‘‘are alinanacs, bulle- tins, advertising mediums, rather than the guides and the centres of opinion.” In 1866 the change had become more marked still. The monctary success of Girardin’s many commiercial speculations in this branch of commerce greatly increased the number of Parisian journals, whilst lowering the status of those of estab- lishedrank. The aggregate daily issue of the Parisian ‘‘ dailies” had increased to about 350,000 copies, but the evening paper, Le Petit Moniteur, alone issued nearly 130,000 of these. The average circu- lation of Le Siécle had fallen from 55,000 to 45,000 copies ; that of La Patrie was reduced by one-half (82,000 to 16,000); that of Le Constitutionnel from 24,000 to 13,000; of L’Opinion Nationale from 18,000 to 15,000; whilst the chief journal of all, —with grand ante- cedents, and with a brilliant history of public service rendered,— had for a time descended, it is said, from 12,000 copies to 9000. And yet almost over the whole of this very period the brilliant ‘‘ Lundis” of Sainte-Beuve were making their punctual appearance in Le Consti- tutiounel, to be presently continued in Le Monitewr and in Le Temps ; and writers like St Mare Girardin, Cuvillier-Fleury, and Prévost-Paradol were constantly writing in the Journal des Débats. Mean- while,

Villemessant and his colleagues were making their for- tunes out of Figaro, and helping to inakc frivolous petty ‘‘ para-

’ Or, to speak more precisely, to farm a certain conspicuous page of each newspaper, in perpetuity.

| graphs” on matters of literature almost everywhere take the place of able and well-claborated articles. Well might Albert Sorel say,” ‘‘Our truimpery newspapers are the newspapers that pay.” And the descent in the sterling characteristics of journalism con- tinued at an increased speed. In 1872 the circulation of Le Petit Journal was 212,500; in June 1877 it reached nearly to 500,000.

No incident in recent newspaper history made more temporary noise than did the strange charges brought in 1867 against the Débais, the Siéele, and L’Opinion Nationale, by M. Kerveguen, member for Toulon, in the French assembly. He charged them collectively with receiving bribes, both from the Government of Prussia and from that of Italy,—upon the faith, as it afterwards appeared, of statements made by another newspaper, not of France but of Belgium, La Finance. An elaborate inquiry, presided over by M. Berryer, pronounced the accusation to be absolutely ground- less, Yet it was soon revived by Le Pays, in the shape of a specitic charge against an individual editor of Le Siécle,—La Varenne. All that was eventually proved, in due course of law, was merely the agency in Paris of La Varenne for the Italian Government, at a time prior to the events of 1866.

In 1874 an elaborate rcturn showed that in thirty-five principal towns of France, comprising a population of 2,566,000, their re- spective journals had an aggregate weckly issue of 2,800,000 copies. The details in round numbers are as follows :—

{ : |.; “aa : ; “News. {Approx “Sews- (Approxin apers eedeel DADCTSEN een Pp lation in heh lation in issue 1874 issued 1874 weekly. . weekly. c LAVOE cocseonoones 426,000 325,000 || Orléans……..... 45,500 50,000

Marseilles……..] 327,000 315,000 |; Angouléme…... 44,000 25,000 Bordeaux……..] 247,000 200,000 || Amiens……..... 42,000 65,000 Lill seenéncononcece 188,600 158,000 || Chalons……..... 41,500 18,000 Montpellier…..| 142,500 57,000 || Besangon…….... 40,500 49,000 Toulouse……..| 135,000 UPD: | BAG Sireaecrnncadee 37,000 26,000 IROIGETS 2. .26.ces 121,500 SOOO || PGRONE ccccesssee <<: 36,500 10,000 [HORE apaneencecs 98,500 109,000 || Perpignan……. 35,000 27,000 IDIOT peemorppccse 87,500 42,000 || Troyes……..... 34,000 38,000 EVGVRO Sse ecce-osese 80,000 87,000 || St Etienne…..... 34,000 111,000 Caene essa. cen 78,500 42000) || INiG@s. .INDICV ie. .scs+ss ee 71,500 53,000 || Rennes……..... 33,500 52,000? Nantes……..... 70,000 118,000 |! Rheims……..... 29,500 72,000 PDOMLUS:. 5 coseissc) sss 61,000 43,000 |} Evreux……..... 29,500 12,000 Le Mans ……..... 57,000 47,000 || Beauvais…….... 28,500 15,000 Clermont- Fer- 54,000 37,000 || Perigueux…….| 28,000 22,000 LED bepenanctepoc Towlony…..22---| 17,000 70,000 TAMBOS<.....0-: 45,500 58,000 || Avesnes……..... 13,000 3,000

In 1878 the total number of journals of all kinds published in France was 2200. Of these 150 were political, strictly speaking, of which Paris published 49. Of Parisian journals other than political there were 1141 (including 71 religious, 104 legal, 153 commercial, 134 technological, 98 scientific and medical, 59 artistic). At that date Figaro had a circulation of about 70,000, Le Petit Journal (at a halfpenny) one of about 650,000.32 At the great show of newspapers of all countries held that year at the International Exhibition of Prague the French newspapers were conspicuous.

The principal Parisian newspapers in 1883 may be classified thus :—

a. Organs of the Legitimists and of the Church of France :— Gazette de France, Le Monde, L' Union, La Defense, La Civilisation, DP Univers.

b. Orleanist organs :—Le Moniteur Universel, Le Constitutionnel, Le Frangais (under the auspices of the Duc de Broglic), Le Soleil.

c. Bonapartist organ:—Le Pays (edited at onetime by Lamartine).

d. Republican organs :—Journal des Débats, Le Temps (the paper of the republican middle classes, and read largely by Protes tants), Le Siéele (now of declining importance, Voltairean in tone), Le XIX. Svrécle (also Voltairean), Le Paix (M. Grévy's paper), La Justice, Paris, La Republique Francaise (founded in 1871 by Gambetta), Le Parlement (founded by Dufaure ; circulation less than that of Za Republique, but political weight considerable).

The law concerning the liberty of the press, of July 29, 1881, abolished suretyship for newspapers, and transferred their registra- tion from the ministry of justice at Paris to the local representa- tive of the attorney-general (Je parquet) in cach town respectively. It made the establishment of a newspaper virtually free, upon legal deposit of two copies, and upon due registration of each newspaper under the simple guarantee of a registered director, French by birth, responsible in case of libel. And it took away the former discretionary power, lodged in the home office, of interdicting the

2 When comparing the French newspaper press as it stood in 1878 with that of Germany, in the Revue des deux Mondes, article ‘‘ La Presse Allemande,” vol. ii. of 1873, p. 715.

3 It is curious to notice the comparatively small sale of the French illustrated papers. In 1880 the sale of L'llustration was only abont 15,000 copies, and that of Le Journal Amusant about twice that number. At the same date the Jdlustrated London News sold 95,000, and the Illustrirte Welt of Stuttgart 107,000.

circulation in France of foreign journals. still prohibit a single number of a newspaper; only the whole

council of ministers, duly convened, can prohibit the circulation

of a foreign newspaper absolutely.}

Authorities.—Hatin, Histoire de la Presse en France, 8 vols., 1860-61; Jules Evrard, " Origines de la Presse en Franee," in Revue Moderne, 1, 721-741, 1869 ; Gallois, Histoire des Journaux et Journalistes de la Revolution, 2 vols.; Mar- inontel, Mémoires, i. 277-291; Morellet, Eloge de Marmoniel, 1], 12; Chateau- briand, Afémoztres d'outre Tombe, iii. § 1, 24 sq., v. 95, and vi. 403, 407 ; Mémoires de Mallet du Pan, i. 29 sqg.; Montalembert, Le Pére Lacordatre, ii, 81, 1881 ; articles '' Baehaumont," " Bertin," '' Donneau," ' Doublet," '" Garat, '* Loret, '*Panckoueke," " Renaudot," in Biographie Universelle; Bulletin du Bibliophile, new series, vii. 855-866; Ste Beuve, Chateaubriand et son Groupe Litteratre, é&e., li, 100; Id., Portraits Littéraires, vy. 147 sq.; Lamartine, Wistotre de la Révolution de 1848; Hatin, Manuel de la liberté de la Presse, 1868, and Nomen- clature des Journauz ; Bibliotheque Impériale—Catalogue de l' Histoire de France, iv. 845-569, 1857; Victor Gébé, Catalogue des Journauz, 1875; "Journalism in France," Quarterly Review, Ixv. 422-468, Marchi 1840; Annuaire Encyclopédique, 1868, 708-709 ; Cochin, Le Comte de Montalembert, 1870; Bibliographie dela France, 'Chronique' (1875, 96; 1876, 74, 75; and 1881, 7); Journal Général de oIm- primerte, 1881, part ii. 201 sg.; Amédée Breton, " Les droits de la Presse," in Revue Moderne, xlii. 721-741, 1867; Vapereau, articles 'De Champagny," "De Coux," "De Falloux,' "E. de Girardin," " Galignani," 'J. Lemoinne, a De Montalembert," "Jules Ferry," "Alphonse Karr," " G. Sand," " Veuillot, &., in Dictionnaire des Contemporatins, various editions; H. Rigault, '' Observations sur les Journaux," in Jour. des Débats, Oetober 28, 1858; G. Sand, Correspond- ance, ii, 288-311, 1882; Sayons, Mémoires et Correspondance de Mallet du Pan, i. 32-35, 84, 86, ii. 368-448; Reinaeh, 'Parisian Newspapers, Nineteenth Century, xii. 347 sq.; various Freneh newspapers, from 1789 onwards, in the library of the Taylor Institution at Oxford.2

NEWSPAPERS OF GERMANY.

Printed newspapers in Germany begin with the Frank- Jurter Journal, established in the year 1615, by Egenolph Emmel, a bookseller of Frankfort-on-Main. In the follow- ing year his example was imitated, doubtless with some improvement, by the foundation of the Frankfurter Ober- postamtszertung,—continued until the year 1866 as Frank- Jurter Postzeitung. Fulda appears to have been the next German town to possess a newspaper, then Hildesheim (1619) and Herford (1630). In the course of the century almost all German cities of the first rank possessed their respective journals. The earliest in Leipsic bears the date 1660. The Rostocker Zeitung was founded in 1710. The Hamburgischer Correspondent dates from 1714, but was originally published under the name of Wolsteinische Zeitungs-Correspondenz, two years earlier, and was almost the only German newspaper which really drew its foreign news from "our own correspondent." Berlin had two papers, those of Voss and of Spener, both of which are still published. They possessed in their earlier career some literary value, but were politically null. Some half- dozen papers which glimmered if the surrounding darkness were the reservoirs whence the rest replenished their little lamps. On the whole, it may be said that the German newspapers were of very small account until after the out- break of the French Revolution. Meanwhile the MS. news-letters, as in earlier days, continued to enjoy a large circulation in Germany. Many came from London. The correspondence, for instance, known under the name of "Mary Pinearis,"—that, apparently, of a French refugee settled in London,—had a great German circulation be- a

1 The history of French journals published abroad is interesting, but is necessarily passed over in these pages. The Annales politiques of Linguet, —for a time of Linguet and Mallet du Pan jointly, —was, from about 1770 to about 1785, almost a power in Europe, in its way. Mallet's own Mercure Britannique, during the eventful years 1798— 1800, was brilliant, sagacious, and honest. When the pen literally fell from his dying hand,—a hand that had kept its integrity under the pains of exile and of bitter poverty, —that pen was taken up (for a short interval) by Malonet. When Napoleon forcibly suppressed, a little later, the Courrier de ? Europe of the count of Montlosier, he offered the deprived editor a pension, which was refused,

until ac- companied by the offer of a post in which the able ininister of Louis XVI. could still work for his country. In ‘our own day, another Courrier de l’Europe has had along and useful existence, and still appears weekly in London.

2 The writer desires to express here, once for all, his deep sense of obligation to the curators of the Taylor Institution at Oxford and to their learned librarian, Dr Krebs, for liberally granting facilities of

access to the store of foreign newspapers with which its library is admirably supplied.

VTEwWs PAPERS

The home minister may

[GERMANY.

tween 1725 and 1735. Another series was edited by the Cologne gazetteer, Jean Ignace de Rodérique, also a French refugee, and remembered as the subject of a character- istic despatch from Frederick II. of Prussia to his envoy in that city, enclosing 100 ducats to be expended in hiring a stout fellow with a cudgel to give a beating to the gazetteer as the punishment of an offensive paragraph.% The money, it seems, was earned, for Rodérique was well-nigh killed. At Berlin itself, Franz Hermann-Ortgies carried on a brisk trade in these news-letters (1728-35), until he too came under displeasure on account of them, was kept in prison several months, and then exiled for life.4 Nor, indeed, can any journal of a high order be mentioned of prior appearance to the Allgemeine Zeitung, founded at Leipsic by the bookseller Cotta (at first under the title of Neueste Weltkunde) in 1798, and which is still at the head of the political press of Germany. Posselt was its first editor, but his want of nerve—and perhaps his weak health—hindered the application of his high powers to political journalism. His articles, too, gave offence to the Austrian court, and the paper had to change both its title and its place of publication. It had been commenced at Tubingen, and removed to Stuttgart; it was now trans- ferred to Ulm, and again to Augsburg. It was Cotta’s aim to make this the organ of statesmen and publicists, to reach the public through the thinkers, to hold an even balance

between the rival parties of the day, and to provide a trustworthy magazine of materials for the historians to come; and, in the course of time, his plan was so worked out as to raise the Allgemeine Zeitung into European fame. Cotta was also the founder, at various periods, of the Morgenblatt, which became famous for its critical ability and tact, of Vesperus, of Das Inland, of Nemesis, of the Oppositionsblatt of Weimar (for a time edited by Bertuch), and even of the Archives Paristennes. His ventures were not, of course, uniformly successful, but it is rare that men of like enterprise have made so few failures. Whilst French influence was dominant in Germany, the German papers were naturally little more than echoes of the Parisian press. But amidst the excite- ments of the " war of liberation" a crowd of new journals appeared. Niebuhr started a Preussischer Correspondent ; Gorres—who in 1798 had founded at Coblentz Das rothe Blatt, soon suppressed by the invading French—under- took the Sheimischer Mercur (January 1814 to J. anuary 1816), which was suppressed by the Prussian Government, under Von Hardenberg. This journal, during its initiatory year, had the honour of being termed by Napoleon—per- haps satirically—'"the fifth power of Europe." Wetzel, somewhat later, founded the P'-dnkischer Mercur, published at Bamberg, and Friedrich Seybold the Neckarzeitung. Some of these journals lasted but two or three years. Most of the survivors fell victims to that resolution of the diet (20th September 1819) which subjected the news- paper press, even of countries where the censorship had been formally abolished, to police superintendence of a very stringent kind,

The aspirations for some measure of freedom which burst forth again under the influences of 1830 led to the establishment of such papers as Siebenpfeiffer's Westbote, Lohbauer's Hochwiichter, Wirth's Deutscher Tribune, EKisen- mann's Baverisches Volksblatt, Der Freisinnige of Rotteck and Welcker, and many more of much freer utterance than had been heard before in Germany. This led, in the ordinary course, to new declarations in the diet

— SS Ee

3 Fr. Kapp, " Berliner geschriebene Zeitungen," in Deutsche Rund- schau, xxi. 107-122, 1879, citing Droysen, Zeitschr. f. preuss. Gesch., xiii. 11. The story, as told by Droysen, is an instructive commentary

on Carlyle's praise of Frederick' * love of the liberty of the press." * Kapp, ut supra.

against the licence and revolutionary tendencies of the press, and to "regulations" of a kind which will be suffi- ciently indicated by the mention of one, in virtue whereof no editor of a suppressed journal could undertake another journal, during the space of five years, within any part of Germany. It need hardly be added that few of the news- papers of 1830 saw the Christmas of 1832. Very gradually some of the older journals—and amongst the number the patriarch of all, the Frankfurter Oberpostamtszeitung— plucked up courage enough to speak out a little ; and some additional newspapers were again attempted. Amongst those which acquired deserved influence were Brockhaus's Deutsche Allgemeine Zeitung, the advocate of free trade

and of a moderate liberalism, and possessing a large circu-—

lation in northern Germany (1837) ; the Deutsche Zeitung, edited by Gervinus, at Heidelberg (July 1847) ; and the Dorfzeitung, published at Hildburghausen. The stirring events of 1848 called forth in Germany, as in so many other countries, a plentiful crop of political instructors of the people, many of whom manifestly lacked even the capacity to learn, and vanished almost as suddenly as they had appeared. But it is undeniable that a marked im- provement in the ability and energy of the German politi- cal press may be dated from this period ; and of late years the press of Germany has gone far towards turning into very grave earnest the ironical words of the first Napoleon.

In 1833 the number of German newspapers of all kinds, popular journals (Volksblatter) included, but without reckoning periodicals devoted to literature or science, amounted to no more than about 335; in 1849 this number had increased to 1551, their geographical distribution being as follows :—Anhalt, 10; Austria (German), 74; Baden, 55; Bavaria, 127; Bremen, 18; Brunswick, 9; Frankfort, 17; Hamburg, 24; Hanover, 32; Hesse-Cassel, 22; Hesse-Darm- stadt, 34; Hesse-Homburg, 4; Hohenzollern, 4; Holstein, 17; Lippe-Detmold, 4; Liibeck, 4; Luxemburg,

4; Mecklenburg, 22; Nassau, 18; Oldenburg, 8; Prussia, 632; Reuss, 11; Saxon Duchies, 44; Saxony, 183; Schaumburg-Lippe, 2; Schleswig, 5 ; Schwartzburg, 12; Waldeck, 2; Wirtemberg, 67. In addition to these, but included in the total of 1551, 77 German newspapers were published in the Swiss cantons, and 14 in the Baltic pro- vinces of Russia. Many of those reckoned in this enumeration soon ccased to appear, but others took their place, and the total in 1855 was estimated at a little above 1600.

In 1879 it was estimated that the total number of newspapers and periodicals published in the German language, in all parts of the world, reached to nearly 5480:—-in Germany proper, 3780; Austria-Hungary, about 700; Switzerland, about 300; Russia, about 50; Great Britain, Netherlands, Belgium, Italy, &c., 40; North America, 600; South America, 9; Africa (Cape Town) 1.1 In Germany, in foreign languages, thcre appeared at the same period—in Polish, 26; Freneh, 17; Danish, 10; Wendish, 6; Lithuanian, 2; English, 2; Hebrew, 4; total, 67.? .

All the leading German papers have daily correspondence from Paris ; in the Cologne Gazctte sometimes five Paris letters may be eet atime. Foreign state papers are largely collected and trans- ated.

The National Zeitung, published at Berlin, holds a conspicuous placc amongst existing German newspapers. Dr Bernhard Wolff, who founded it (also in 1848), continued to be chief editor until his death in 1879. He wasa notable precursor (only a little in advance) in telegraphic enterprise of Julius Reuter ; and, to somc extent, his telegraphic bureau at Berlin may be regarded as the germ at once of the “ Agence Havas” and of “ Reuter’s telegrams.” Like Reuter, he found it expedient, as the affair grew, to turn it over to a company. He did so in 1864, but continued to work the enterprise until 1871. ably that which has the largest circulation of all Germany.

As regards the socialistic press, “ German socialism,” says Sorel, **has turned journalist. publishes 41 political journals, 13 of which are of daily publication. . . . The collective circulation is said to exceed 130,000. The leading paper of this party, Vorwdrts, published at Leipsic, prints about 12,000; Die neue Welt, literary rather than political, is said

1 Lagai, ‘‘Zeitungen und Zeitschriften,” in Pierer’s Univ. Lexicon, 1879. The statisties given by Hubbard (Newspaper Directory of the World, vol. ii. pp. 1899-1563) differ enormously from those given above. But Hubbard mingles the most heterogeneous ‘‘ periodieals ” in one undigested mass with the newspapers whieh are strietly sueh.

2 ¢*Tia Presse Allem. in 1873,” Rev. d. d. Mondes, 1873, ii. 715.

Of strictly political papers, the Volkszeitung is prob-

It has established 14 printing offices, and |

to sell 35,000 copies.”3 . . . Die Zukunft, another of their organs (1848), long edited by Johann Jacoby, was suppressed in 1871, mainly on account of its vigorous protests against the annexation of Alsace- Lorraine.

The total number of political journals of all kinds throughout Germany in 1879 was 2451, of which 640 were avowedly Govern- ment or administrative organs.

Authorities (in addition to those above cited).—Artides ‘‘ Bertueh,” ‘‘ Cotta,” ‘Gorres,” “Huber,” ‘‘ Niebuhr,” ‘Posselt,” &e., in Biographie Universelle; Bluntsehli and others, article ‘‘ Zeitungswesen,” Deutsches Staatswérterbuch, 1870; Vapereau, Dictionnatre des Contemporains, edition of 1880.

NEWSPAPERS OF AUSTRIA-HUNGARY.

At the beginning of 1840 the whole number of Austro- German and Hungarian periodicals, of all sorts, was less than 100, only 22 being (after a fashion) political news- papers ; and of these nearly all drew their materials and their inspiration from the official papers of Vienna (Wiener Zeitung and Oesterreichischer Beobachter). These two were all that appeared in the capital. Agram, Pesth, Pressburg, Lemberg, and Prague had also two each; but no other city had more than a single journal. In 1846 the aggre- gate number of periodicals had grown to 155, of which 46 were political, but

political only in the character of mere conduit-pipes for intelligence "approved of " by the Government. In 1855 the number of political papers published throughout the entire territory under Austrian government, the Italian provinces excepted, was 60.4 In 1873, ten years after the virtual cessation of a strict censorship,° the number of political journals, including all the specifically administrative organs, as well local as gene- ral, was 267, and that of mere advertising papers 42; now, in 1883, the former number is increased to about 280, the latter to about 60. The comparatively brief duration of Austrian-Hungarian newspapers and periodi- cals generally is a characteristic feature. Of 866 journals of all kinds existing at a recent date, 153 had their birth in 1873, 145 others in 1872, 109 in 1871; only 67 dated from the decennium 1851-60, 30 from 1841-50, and there were but 21 with any claim to a date earlier than 1840.

Vienna had in 1883 in all 18 daily newspapers (really sucl1), ten of which range in average circulation from 14,000 to 54,000 copies, and, aceording to the consular returns collected by Hubbard, no less than 488 periodicals of all kinds, and of all periods of issue. Of 1016 journals, classified as to language, 600 appear in German, 170 in Hungarian, 79 in Bohemian, 58 in Polish, 56 in Italian, 22 in Slovenian, 11 in Croatian and Servian, 9 in Ruthenian, 8 in Roumenian, 3 in Hebrew. Budapest elaims to have 229 journals, and Prague 99, counting those of all descriptions. The aggregate

uumber of stamps issued to political journals in 1860 was about 42,100,000; in 1871 it reached nearly 81,000,000.

See Die periodische Presse Ocesterreichs, 1875; Lagai, " Zeitungen und Zeit- schriften," wi sup.; Bluntsehli and others, ' Zeitungswesen," wi sup.

NEWSPAPERS OF OTHER EUROPEAN STATES.

Denmark, Sweden, and Norway.—In Sweden the earliest regular Sweden.

newspaper appears to have been the Ordinarie Post-Tidende of Stockholm, first published in 1648, and continued until 1680, then, after long suspension, revived under the title Post- och Inrikes- Tidning, under which name it is still published daily. Stockholm has also its Aftonbladct. The Post-Tidende was followed by the Svensk Merewrius (1675-88) and the

Latin Relationes Curiose (1682-1701). In 1742 a Swedish newspaper in French (Gazctte Francaise de Stockholm) was commenced, and was followed in

3 Valbert, ‘‘Le parti socialiste en Allemagne,” Rev. d. d. Mondes, 1878, ii. 708.

4 Distributed thus :—-Vienna, 19; Linz, 1; Salzburg, 2; Gratz, 1; Klagenfurt, 1; Laibach, 1; Trieste, 3 (two Italian); Prague, 4 (one Czech); Brunn, 3 (one Czech); Olmiitz, 1; Troppau, 1; Innsbruck, 4; Pesth, 4 (two Magyar); Pressburg, 1; Agram, 2 (one Crotian); Temesvar, 1; Neusatz, 1 (Servian); Hermannstadt, 2 (one Roumanian); Cronstadt, 2 (one Roumanian) ; Lemberg, 2 (one Polish) ; Craeow, 1 (Polish) ; Zara, 3 (one Slavonic and one Italian).

5 What that censorship had been in its palmy days may be sufficiently seen from the one fact that in January 1818 the Rheinischer Merkur, the Nuremberg Concordant, the Neuwied Zeitung, all the papers in Freneh printed in the Netherlands, and all Polish papers whatever were suppressed at a blow.

Denmark.

Iceland.

Norway.

Belgium and Holland.

1772 by the Mercure de Suede, But the press in Sweden had small political influence until 1820, when the Argus was established by Johannsen. The strife between ‘‘classicists” and “‘ romantic- ists” spread itself in Sweden, as in France, from the field of litera- ture into that of politics. Crusenstolpe’s Faderneslandbladet and Hjerta’s Aftonbladet, founded in 1830, were long the most con- spieuous of the Swedish journals,—the former on the side of the royalists, the lattcr on that of the reformers.

Hjerta's paper, in its best days, could boast of a circulation of 5000 copies ; but on the accession of King Oscar it ceased to appear as an opposition organ. Almost every town in the provinces has its paper. The growth of the Swedish press during the present ceutury may be thus briefly epitomized:—

Papers. Papers. Papers. GUM cteccreenete remeeace 25 | 1831. seco OOM PLSDS sceccs secccssecaseseesis 105 SU acco st sexcterescecees ASU USE secs ssscsccescsscex cess M25 SSS ese ccc sence ccaceveses 101 Oo 22. eueauesse ese teesets G25 | WSOD ii rercccescsssseseeees TUS} || kei Obepseoccncconeesensecoo 180

2?

In 1882 the newspapers and ''other journals," according to Hubbard, numbcred 303.

While Denmark, as regards mere néws-journals, followed the example of its rival by publishing an Luropdisehe Zeitung as early as 1663 aud the Danske Merewrius in 1666, the political influence of the press is a newer thing in that country than even in Sweden. Until 1830 Copenhagen had but two papers, and they filled their columns with mild extracts from foreign journals. Real activity in this direction dates but from the establishment of the provincial states in 1834, The oldest existing papcr is the Berlingske Tidende, which dates from 1749, and was at first published in German. It is now a semi-miuisterial journal. The Fadrelandet belongs to the opposition, and in 1848-49 was in a glow of zeal for Scandinavian- ism and " Young Denmark." The total number of political journals in 1849 was 36. Of political and miscellancous journals together there were in 1879, according to Larousse, 207, of which number 97 were published in Copenhagen. Those belonging to the provinces are of small account. 'he American consular returns furnished to Hubbard in 1882 give to Denmark 142 (in the text 61 only, but 81 are added in a supplement apparently printed subsequently to the table) of all kinds. So great is the diversity of the most recent accounts. Iceland has in all 12 journals; 10 of these may fairly be looked upon as newspapers, while 2 are magazines. The 10 inelude two papers printed in Copenhagen for circulation in Iceland.

The earliest Norwegian paper was the Christiania Intelligents- sedler, founded in 1763. Next to this came the Advessceontors Lfterretninger (1765), published at Bergen. Den Constitutionelle was until recently the organ of the Government, and had absorbed an older paper, called Norske Rigstidende. The Morgenblad is now the daily journal of the popular party, and dates from 1819.

See A. Geffroy, " La presse périodique dans les Etats Seandinaves," in Tevue des deux Mondes, 1861, iv. 759-765; Larousse, article " Journal," in Grand Dictionnaire, 1875; Hubbard, ut sup., ii. 1297-1300, 1833-1851, 1921, 2580-2582.

The Netherlands and Belgium.—The Niewwe Tijdinghen of Antwerp, published by Abraham Verhoeven, has been said to date virtually from 1605, in which year a ''licence for the exclusive retailing of news" was accorded to him by the archdukes Albert and Isabella. But the claim is conjectural. No copy of any number of this paper anterior to 1616 is now known to exist. It seems probable that the Gazette Extraordinaris Posttijdinghen, published by Wilhem Verdussen between 1637 and 1644, is a continuation of Verhoeven's paper. But, be this as it may, that of Verdussen was certainly the foundation of the well- a Gazette van Antwerpen, which continued to appear until

Bruges had its Niewwe Tijdinghen uyt verscheyden Quartieren, published (in black letter) by Nicholaes Breyghel. Whicn this paper was commeneed is uncertain, but various numbers of it exist with dates betwecn 1637 and 1645. In one of these (26th July 1644) a Brusselsehe Gazette of the 24th of that month is quoted, apart from which citation no Brussels paper is known of earlier date than 1649. When the first number of Le Courrier véritable des Pays- Bas made its appearance, the publisher (Jcan Mommacrt) prefaced the first number by an address to the reader, in which he says :-— "*T have long endeavoured to meet with somebody who would give employment to my presses in defending truth against the falsehoods which malignity and ignorance send daily abroad. Ihave at length found what I sought, and shall now be able to tell you, weekly, the most important things that are going on in the world." This paper became afterwards the Gazette de Bruxelles, then Gazette des Pays-Bas; aud, under the last-named title, it

continued to appear until 1791. The Annales Politiques of Linguet was one of the most remarkable of the politieal journals of Brussels in the last century. For a time the cditor won the favour of the emperor Joseph 11. by praising his reforms, and the Government subscribed for 1200 copies of his paper at two louis d'ors each a year ; but here, as in almost every other place of residence during his chequered eareer, Linguet at length incurred fine and imprisonment. His Journal was repeatedly suppressed, and as often resumed under many

NWiwePaPrri hs

[NORTHERN EUROPE.

modifications of title. It was continucd in France, in Switzerland (at Lansanne), and in England. At onetime it was so popular that a printer in Brusscls regularly and rapidly published a pirated edition of it. For a brief period the publication was resumed at Brussels. A complete set extends to eighteen volumes, and ranges in date from 1780 to 1791.1 Mallet Du Pan was, for a time, a collaborator in the editorship. Linguet died by the guillotine in 1794. Le National was a famous paper for a short period prior to the revolution of 1880. Soon after its cessation—its presses were destroyed by the populace on the 26th August—the official journal, Le Monitewr Belge, was established,—"the ministry decming it in-dispensable to the success of its great political enterprise that a journal should be created which might expound its views, and act daily upon public opinion"; and, on decree of the regency, it was published accordingly. It now claims a circulation of 30,500, and the restored National one of 21,100 copies. But LZ' Etoile outshines both ; according to its publishers, it circulates, on the average, 40,500 copies daily. Hubbard's correspondents assign to Brussels a total of 28 daily newspapers, but this heaps together publications of the most incongruous kind.

The first newspaper published at Ghent, Gazette van Gent, appeared in 1667. Den Vaderlander, begun in October 1829, was, for a long period, one of the most widely circulated of the Flemish journals. La Flandre libérale is now the leading newspaper of Ghent, with a circulation of about 15,000 daily.

The kingdom of the Netherlands has always been rich in news- papers, but they have usually had more weight commercially than politically. Those in most estecm are Het Nicwws van den Dag (about 25,000 copies) and the Allgemeen Handelsblad (both daily) of Amsterdam ; the Haarlemsehe Courant ;2 and the Nederlandsche Staats-Cowrant, and Dagblad van Zuidholland en ’s Gravenhage (originally Jowrnal de la Haye), both printed at the Hague.

See Hatin, Les Gazettes de Hollande, Paris, 1865; Warzéec, Essai Historique et Critique sur les Journauz Belges, Ghent, 1845; Kolb, artiele ‘‘ Linguet,” in Bio- graphie Universelle; Alex. Chalmers, article “ Linguet,” in Gen. Biog. Dict.

Russia, Poland, and Finland.—The earliest gazctte of Moscow Russia. (Moskouskia Wiedomosti) was issued by order of Peter the Great on the 16th December 1702, but no copy is known now to exist of earlicr date than the 2d January following. The whole gazette of the year 1703 was reproduced in facsimile by order of the late Baron de Korff (the able imperial librarian at St Petersburg) in 1855, on occasion of the festival for the 8d century of Moscow university. The existing Wiedomosti datcs only from 1766; its circulation in 1882 has been estimated at 50,000 copies. That of St Petersburg dates from 1718.3 The historian Karainzin estab- lished a short-lived Moscow journal (Moskovski Listok), and after- wards at St Petersburg the once widely-known Russian Courrier de la Europe (1802). The profits of the successful Invalide Russe, established in 1815;by Persorovius, were devoted to the sufferers by the war with France. It continucs to appear, not in its original weekly form, but daily, and is now published in Russian (Russkit Invalid). It is said to have an average circulation of about 7000 copies (1882). It is the organ of the‘‘old Russia” party, and also of the ministry of war. Adding to the distinctively political

‘Journals those of miscellaneous character, the whole number of

newspapers published within the Russian states—Poland and Fin- land excepted—in the year 1835 was 136; in 1858 that number had grown to 179, of which 82 were published in St Petersburg and 15 in Moscow ; 132 were printed in Russian, 3 in Russian and in German, 1 in Russian and in Polish, 28 in German, 8 in French, 3 in English, 1 in Polish, 1 in Lithuanian,

1 in Italian. In 1879, under the more libcral rule of Alexander II., the number of political and miscellaneous journals—if we may trust the native authorities used by Lagai—had grown to 293, and of these 105 were under the dircct influence of the Government. But, in truth, the period of relaxation of censorship, if strictly examined, will be found to have lasted only from 1855 to 1864, when repressive Measures were again and frequently resorted to. Ouly 107 foreign political journals are now authorized to circulate. The total number of licensed foreign periodicals amounts to about 300, and of that number no less than 154 are in German.

Poland in 1830 had 49 newspapers. Fifty years later the Poland, number was still less than 70, of which 54 are in Polish, these numbers including journals of all kinds.

Finland in 1860 had 24 newspapers, half in Swedish, half in Finland. Finnish. In 1863 the number had increascd to 32, in spite of the zealous opposition of Count de Berg, the governor-general, to all discussion of political events and '" subjects which do not concern

1 Collection de Matériaux, &e. [Ribliog. des Journauc}, par M.Df[eschiens], p. 97.

? The late M. Xavier Marmier says in his Letires sur la Hoilande, 'the Haar-lemsche Courant is the senior of all the gazettes of Europe," but in truth it dates only from 1656, seventeen years later than the Tijdinghen uyt verscheyden Quar- tieren, and twenty-five years later than his own familiar Gazette de France,

3 There are now (1883) no less than four St Petersburg gazettes, all dailies, the¥three which are in Russian having an aggregate cireulation of about 16,700, while the one in German (1827) cireulated nearly 15,000 eopies in 1882. Lagai says of the latter:—" Its aim is to restore the state of affairs which existed under Peter the Great."

Italy.

SOUTIIERN EUROPE. |

the people." He was very friendly to jonrnals of gardening and eottage economy, and to magazines of light literature, and did not regard comic papers with anger ee they kept quite clear of polities. The paper which was long the chief Finnish organ, Suometar (founded at Helsingfors in 1847, and circulating to more than 4000 copies), owed much of its popularity to the pains its editors took with their correspondence. The Oulun Wukko-Sanomat (''Uleaborg Daily News") was for a considerable period the most northerly newspaper of the world, with the one exception of the little journal published at Tromsd, in Norway. Uleaborg, with a population of less than 9000, supports 6 periodicals, 4 of which are strictly newspapers.

In 1880 the whole number of newspapers printed within the government of Finland was 46, while the total number of news- papers and journals of all kinds published within the whole Russian empire during the same year was 608. Of these, 417 were printed in the Russian language, 155 of them being official or administra- tive organs ; 54 were printed in Polish, 40 in German, 11 in Lettish,

10 in French, 7 in Esthonian, 3 in Lithuanian.

See Hatin, Bibliographie de la Presse périodique, Introduction, pp. xxix, c; Bibliographie de la France, January 30,1875, "Chronique"; Annuatre de la Presse Russe (for 1880), as quoted in Bibliographie de la France, 1880, "Chron- igque," p. 19; Lagai, article '' Zeitungen," ud sup., 745 sq.; A. Geffroy, '' De la Presse périodique en Finlande," in Revue des deux Mondes, 1860, vi. 771-777; Sampson Low, in Publishers' Circular, 1879, p. 410.

Ttaly.—The Diario di Roma, although dating only from 1716, may claim to have been the patriarch of the Italian press. It lasted for nearly a century anda half. During its later years it wasa daily paper, with a weekly supplement having the somewhat whimsical title Notizie del Giorno. Next to this, we believe, canie the Gazzetta Uffiziale di Napoli, which continues to exist. These and their eongeners were published under a rigid censorship until far into the present century, and exercised little influence of any kind. The first tentative movement towards a free press may, perhaps, be dated from the etfort to establish at Milan, in 1818, under the editorship of Silvio Pellico, the Coneiliatore, in which Simonde de Sismondi, Gonfalonieri, and

Romagnosi were fellow-writers. But tle new journal was suppressed in 1820. The first really effectual effort had to wait for the lapse of nearly thirty years. L'Opinione, which in many respects is the leading journal of Italy, although its circulation is far inferior to that of many of its rivals, was first published in Turin (26th December 1847). It is now published in Rome. It has had, amongst its many editors, Giacomo Durando (a soldier of mark, and twice minister of foreign affairs), Montezenolo, Giovini Bianchi, and Giacomo Dina. At one period it attained, according to credible report, a circulation of 15,000 copies. Its present circulation averages less than the half of that, but few Italian papers are so often met with in other countries. Fewer still are edited with equal ability.

The Gazzetta del Popolo of Turin had in 1855 about 7000 sub-

seribers. In later days its sale has occasionally reached almost 20,090 copies. Hubbard's agents, in 1882, reported its circulation as 8000. 'The Florence Diritto, originally founded at Turin, in 1851,

by Lorenzo Valerio, was edited successively by Macchi, Bargini, and Civinini, and as a radical organ attained great influence. When (under the last-named editor) it displayed a wise moderation in its politics, popularity rapidly declined ; and it has long ceased to appear.

Ponanting journals of all kinds, there were published in Italy in 1836 185 newspapers ; in 1845, 220; in 1856, 311; in 1864, 450;1 in 1875, 479. In 1882 the " periodicals" of all kinds? numbered 1454, distributed as follows :—Piedmont, 155 ; Liguria, 63; Lom- bardy, 291; Venice, 83; the Emilia, &c., 301; Tuscany, 178; Naples, 243; Sicily, 182; Sardinia, 8. The total number of political dailies is 149, of which the Roman district claims 35,3 Naples and Sicily 36, Lonibardy 22. Amidst all the vicissitudes of things political in Italy, the press-law of March 1848 remains substantially and in the main the law of to-day. There is neither stamp, caution-money, nor obligatory signature ; but there are provisions— used with great moderation —for a wise and firm repression of libel. It was in Piedmont that the best portion of the press learned the lesson that its duty is rather to fructify and to expand established institutions than to attack them by sap and mine. By the Police Act of November 1859 the vending of newspapers is made subject to due regulation. And by the constitutional law of Italy (June 1874)

it is made illegal for newspapers to publish reports of eriminal procedure until after the delivery of the verdict or definitive jndgment in each case.

See Statistica Amministrativa del regno d Italia, Rome,1882; Calendario gene- rale, 1876, appendix; Bibliograjia Italiana, 1876-77, section ‘‘Cronaca”; Hatin, Bibliographie de la Presse périodique, supplement; Annuario statistico Italiano, 1881, Introduetion, pp. 149 and 150, 328, 329; Charles de Mazade, ‘‘Les pré- eurseurs Italiens,” in Revue des deux Mondes, 1867, i. 906; André Folliet, “La presse Italienne et sa législation,’ in Revue Moderne, vol. li. pp. 659-693, and vol. lil. pp. 87-118, 1869 ; Cesare Canth, in Bibliograyia Italiana, xiv. 909 sq., 1880.

1 Of these’Turin published 100, Milan 80, Florence 51, Genoa 37.

2 There are no means of separating, with assured accuracy, the newspapers strietly so called from other “ periodicals” under the forms of return employed in the official publications of latest date.

3 The city of Rome itself publishes 18 ; Naples, in 1881, followed elosely with 16.

Spain and Portugal.—In Spain no newspaper of any kind existed Spain.

earlier than the last century. Even during the early years of the present its capital contented itself with a single journal, the Diario de Madrid. The Peninsular War and the establishment of the Cortes gave the first impulse towards something which might be called political journalism, but the change from total repression to absolute freedom was too sudden not to be grossly abused. The Diario de las Cortes, the Semanario Patriotieo (published at Cadiz from 1808 to 1811), and the durora Mallorquina (published at Palma in 1812-13) are the first of the new papers that attained importance. In 1814 the circulation or receipt in Spain of English newspapers was prohibited under penalty of ten years’ imprison- meut.> Most of the native journals fell with the Cortes in 1828. In the following

year Ferdinand decreed the suppression of all the journals except the Diario and the Gageta of Madrid,® the Gacetu de Bayona, and certain provincial papers which dealt exclusively with commercial or scientific subjects. At the close of his reign only three or four papers were published in Madrid. Ten years after- wards there were 40; but the number was far more noticeable than the value. Spanish newspapers have been too often the mere step- ping-stones of political adventurers, and not unfrequently the worst of them appear to have served the turn more completely than the best. Gonzales Bravo attained office mainly by the help of a paper of notorious scurrility,—I Guirigay. His press-law of 1867 introduced a sort of indirect censorship, and a system of ‘‘warnings,” rather clandestine- than avowed; and his former rivals met craft with craft. The Universal and the Correo were successively the organs of José Salamanca. At the end of 1854 the political journals published in Madrid numbered about 40, the most couspicuous being the now defunct Lspatia and El Clamor Publico.

Hubbard’s agents assign to Spain in 1882 220 newspapers of all sorts, of which 58 appear in Madrid. The same authorities assign to El Correo a circnlation of about 10,000 copies, to the Diario de Madrid [? Diario Espaiiol] a circulation of 12,275 copies, and to La Vanguardia Federal one of 16,000 copies ; all these are dailies. To the weekly paper, Correspondencia de Espaiia, they assign an average sale of 42,000 copies. Cadiz has 5 political newspapers, Seville 4, and Barcelona 4.

Portugal in 1882 is credited by the resident American consuls Portugal.

with 179 journals of all kinds and of various periodicity. Of this number 68 appeared in Lisbon. The strictly political daily papers of Lisbon are 6 in number ; those of Oporto 8.

See Ford, Handbook of Spain; S. T. Wallis, Spain, her Institutions and Public Men, 1853, p. 88-95; Charles de Mazade, “La Révolution et la réaction en Espagne,” in Revue des deux Mondes, 1867, v. 501; ‘‘The Newspaper Press of Spain,” in British Quarterly Review, vi. 315-5832; Hubbard, Newspaper Direc- tory, ii. 1852-1857, 1877-1893, 2458-9, and 2587-8.

Switzerland.—In 1873 the total number of political and general Switzer- In 1881 they numbered 342, land.

newspapers in Switzerland was 230. of which 45 may be described as class journals, 297 as political, general, and advertising. Of 226 of the whole number, 53 were of daily issue, 166 appeared twice or thrice a week, and 7 only were of weeklyissue. Of 225 political journals, 185 are classed as ‘‘ Pro- gressist ’ organs, 40 as ‘‘ Conservative.” Zurich claimed 44; Bern, 34; Vaud, 20; Basel, 18; and Geneva, 10. The aggregate average circulation is estimated approximately at 606,000 copies, an average circulation of about 1770 to each newspaper.

A monthly compendium of the news of the day appeared at Rorschach, in the canton of St Gall, as earlyas January 1597. The editor was a German, one Samuel Dilbaum, of Augsburg. He varied his titles, so that his monthly newsbooks, although really consecutive, do not wear the appearance of serial publications. Sometimes he called his issue Historische Relatio, sometimes Beschreibung, sometimes Historische Erzihlung.

See Bicuter, ‘‘ Statistique de la Presse Suisse,” in Journal des Economistes, 1882,

xviii. 134; Weller, Die ersten deutschen Zeitungen, Tiibingen, 1872; of. Lagai, in Pierer, ubt sup.; and Hubbard, ii. 1897-1913, 2458-9, and 2588 (supplement).

Grecee.—The few newspapers that made their sudden appearance Greece.

in Greece during the war of liberation departed as hastily when King Otho brought with him a press-law, one of the provisos of which demanded caution-money by actual deposit. The journal Saviour was established, in 1834, as a Government organ, and was soon followed by Athena as the journal of the opposition. Ten years later 7 distinctively political papers had been established, along with 13 journals of miscellaneous nature. In 1877 there were, of all sorts, 81 journals, of which 77 appeared in Greek, 2 in Greek and French, 2 in French only; 37 of these were printed in Athens, 17 in the Ionian Islands. Of strictly political news- papers there were 12 at

Athens and 3 in the Islands. In 1882 the American consul reported 89 periodicals in all, of which 52 were published at Athens.

See Lagai, in Picrer, ut sup.,745; Iubbard, wt sup., ii. 1779-1781, and 2458-9.

4 Lagai (article “ Zeitungen,” in Pierer’s Universal Lexicon, 1878) cites a Gage- ta de Madrid of 1626, but gives no evidence whatcyer.

5 A contemporary communieation to Gent. Mag., 1xxxiv. part 2, 176.

6 The present Zi Diario Espaiol is a paper of more recent date.

Roumania and Servia.

Turkey.

India.

432

Rowmania and Servia.—Bucharest has now 4 daily newspapers (Romanulu, Timpul, Tclegraphulu, Tagblatt), and Galatz one (Vocea Covurlwivlut). Roumania has in all 19 journals, with an estimated average aggregate circulation of 32,700 copies. Servia at the end of 1877 had 19 political journals. The Government organ (Serbske Novine) dates from 1841, the independent journal (Vidov Dan) from 1861, the elerical organ (Pastié) from 1868.

See Lagai, ut sup.; Hubbard, wt sup., ii. 2458 sq.

Turkey.—During the embassy (1795) of Verninac Saint-Maur, envoy of the French republic, a French journal was established at Pera. This, possibly, is the pioneer of all Turkish newspapers. Thirty years later (1825) the Speetateur de l’Orient was founded at Smyrna, also by a Frenchman (Alexander Blacquet ?). It was after- wards published under the titles Cowrricr and Journal de Smyrne, and its latest editor was a third Frenchman, Bousquet des Champs. In like manner, the Afonitewr Ottoman, first of strictly Constan- tinopolitan journals, was founded by the above-

named Blacquet in 1&31. It soon changed its language to Turkish, and was edited by Franceschi. The second Smyrna newspaper, Keho del' Orient, estab- lished in 1838, was transferred to Constantinople in 1846. But not one of these papers has survived until now. In 1876 the total nuinber of journals of all kinds published in the capital was 72 (namely, 20 in French, 16 in Turkish, 13 in Armenian, 12 in Greek, 11 in as many other tongues); in 1877 it was 80. In 1882 the whole number published in all the Turkish dominions, Asiatic as well as European, is reported as 121 of all kinds and of all varieties of periodicity. Among the papers printed in Constantinople are four Bulgarian journals; the stoch no Vreme is edited by an Englishman, Three other official newspapers for Bulgaria are published by the Turkish Government at Rustchuk, Adrianople, and Salonica. The Arabie Jawdib of the notorious and learned Faris al-Shidiak has long been one of the best-known Oriental journals.

See Bibliografia Italiana, 1876, " Cronaca," p. 50; Lagai, ut sup.; Hubbard, ii. 1914-1918, 2458-9, 2588; Zeitung fiir Staatswissenschaft, 1876.

NEWSPAPERS OF INDIA AND CHINA.

India.—¥or a considerable period under the rule of the East India Company, the Indian press was very unimportant both in character and influence. It was permitted to shape its course and to gain a position as it could, under the potent checks of tho deportation power and the libel law, without any direct eensorship. Nor was it found difficult to inflict exemplary punishment on the writers of " offensive paragraphs."

Prior to Lord Wellesley's administration the most considerable newspaper published at Calcutta were The World, The Bengal Journal, The Hurkaru, The Calcutta Gazette (the organ of the Bengal Government), The Telegraph, The Calcutta Courter, The Asiatic Mirror, and The Indian Gazette. Not one of these eight journals has survived, as a substantive publication,! until now. Mr Duane, the editor of the first-named paper, was sent to Europe in 1794 for "an inflammatory address to the army," as was Mr Charles Maclean, four years afterwards, for animadverting in The Telegraph on the official eonduct of a local magistrate. Lord Wellesley was the first governor-general who ereated a censorship (April 1799). His press-code was abolished by the marquis of Hastings in 1818, The power of transporting obnoxious editors

to Europe of course remained. Perhaps the most eonspicuous instance of its exereise was the removal of the editorof The Calcutta Journal (Silk Buckingham), which occurred immediately after Lord Hast- ings's departure from India, and during the government of his temporary successor, Mr John Adam. Buckiugham's departure was followed closely (14th March 1823) by a new licensing Act, far exceeding in stringency that of Lord Wellesley, and (5th April 1823), by au elaborate '' Regulation for preventing the Establish- ment of Printing-Presses without Licence, and for restraining under certain circumstances the Circulation of Printed Books and Papers." The first application of it was to suppress The Calcutta Journal.

In the course of the elaborate inquiry into the administration of India which occupied both Houses of Parliament in 1832, prior to the renewal of the Company's charter, it was stated that there were, besides 5 native journals, 6 European newspapers :—three daily, The Bengal Hurkaru, John Bull, and The Indian Gazette; one published twice a week, The Government Gazette; and two weekly, The Bengal Herald and The Oriental Observer. At this period every paper was published under a licence, revocable at pleasure, with or without previous inquiry or notice. At Madras, on the other hand, the press remained under rigid restriction. The Madras censorship was removed whilst the parliamentary inquiry of 1832 was still pending.

One question only, and that but for a brief interval, disturbed

1 The Hurkaru and The Indian Gazette were long afterwards combined under the new leading title, Indian Daily News (with the old name appended), and the joint publicatlon survives, circulating, in 1882, about 1700 copies. All the Cal- cutta newspapers, properly so called, are comparatively of short duration, and ey o ae ne cae me at present exceeds 2000 copies, and only

— ishman's Overland Mail—attai i i j Atti stk acdeion, attains so high, The sporting journal,

NEWSPAPERS

[INDIA AND CHINA.

Lord William Bentinck's love of free discussion. The too famous '* Half-Batta '? measure led him to think that a resolute persistence in an unwise policy by the home Government against the known convictions of the men actually at the helm in India and an unfettered press were two things that could scarcely co-exist. It was on this occasion that Sir Charles Metcalfe recorded his minute of September 1830, the reasoning of which fully justifies the assertion—''I have, for my own part, always advocated the liberty of the press, believing its benefits to outweigh its mischiefs; and I continue of the same opinion." This opinion was amply carried out in the memorable law (drafted by Macaulay, and enacted by Metcalfe as governor-general in 1835), which totally abrogated the licensing system. It left all men at liberty to express their senti- ments on public affairs, under the legal and moral responsibilities of ordinary life, and remained in force until the outbreak of the mutiny of 1857.

In 1853 Garcin de Tassy, when opening at Paris his annual eourse of Icctures on the Hindustani language, enumerated and gave some interesting details concerning twenty-seven journals (of all sorts) in Hindustani. In 1860 he made mention of seventeen additional ones. Of course the eirculation and the literary merits of all of them are relatively small. One, however, he said, had reached a sale of 4000 copies.?

In 1857 Lord Canning's law, like that of 1823, on which it is closely modelled, absolutely prohibited the keeping or using of printing-presses, types, or other materials for printing, in any part of the territories in the possession and under the government of the East India Company, except with the previous sanction and licence of Government, and also gave full powers for the seizure and prolibition from circulation of all books and papers, whether printed within the Indian territories or elsewhere.

The Act (March 1878) which now regulates the important part of the subject that concerns the vernacular press of India runs thus:—'' Printers or publishers of journals in Oriental languages must, upon demand by the due officer, give bond not to print or publish in such newspapers anything likely to excite feelings of disaffection to the Government or antipathy between persons of different castes or religions, or for purposes of extortion. Notifica- tion of warning is to be made in the official gazette if these regula-

tions be infringed (whether there be bond or not); on repetition, a warrant is to issue for seizure of plant, &c.; if a deposit have been made, forfeiture is to ensue. Provision is made not to exact a deposit if there be an agreement to submit to a Government officer proofs before publication."

The total number of journals of all kinds published within dll the territories of British India was reported by the American eonsular staff in 1882 as 373, with an estimated average ageregate circulation per issue of 288,300 copies. Of these, 43, with an aggregate circulation of 56,650 copies, were published in Calcutta ; 60, with an aggregate circulation of 51,776 copies, at Bombay.

Sce Afinutes of Evidence on the Affairs of the East India Company, February to July 1832, i. 98-101, 166-180 (Company's cdition); Report of the Select Com- mittee of House of Commons on the Affairs, &c., 16th August 1832, 31, 32; Report from Select Committee on the Suppression of the Calcutta Journal, 4th August 1834; Second Report from Select Committee on Indian Territories, 12th May 1853, 64-68; Further Papers on the Mutinies in the East Indies, 1857, No. 5, 89-96 ; Returns relating to the Restriction of the Liberty of the Press in India, 24th August 1857; Selections from the Papers of Lord Metcalfe, 1855, 311 sq.; The Oriental Heraid, 1824, i, 6-77, 123-142, 197-224 ; Letters to the Marquis of Hlastings on the Indian Press, 1824, 61, &c.; Memoirs and Correspondence of the Marquess Wellesley, i. 281, ii. 128 sqg.; Wilson, History of British India, from 1805 to 1835, 1848, iii. 581-585; An Act for the Better Control of Publications in Oriental Languages, March 1878; Hubbard, Directory, ii. 2458 sq.

China.—The Peking Gazette is said, traditionally, to date from China.

the 10th century of the Christian era, but this is unsupported by evidence. The Gazctte consists of three parts:—(1) Kung-men- eh'ae, ''Copy of the Palace Gate," a sort of court circular; (2) Shang-yii, *' Imperial Decrees"; (8) Y'sow-pao, '' Memorials from Officers of State." The answers to the documents printed in (3) sometimes appear subjoined as ''apostils," sometimes as decrees in (2). During part of the last eentury the Gazette was printed in the imperial palace from movable types of copper (probably brought into China by the Jesuits), afterwards from wax tablets, and for the last sixty years from movable types of wood.

Since 1858 several newspapers on the European model have been established in various large mercantile towns of China. The most notable is the Sceng-pao of Shanghai, which circulates throughout many provinees. The Datly Press of Hong-Kong dates from 1860, the North China Herald from 1862. Of all sorts of journals China is credited with 22, of which 14 appear at Hong-Kong, the Gazette only at Peking.

See Sir Rutherford Alcock, "The Peking Gazette," in Fraser's Magazine, February and March 1873; W.F. Mayer, in China Review of 1877; Bibliographie dela France, 1877, pp. 103, 104; Journal des Economistes, xvi. 228, 1881,

2 Some valuable notices of vernacular journals in various tongues have been published from time to time in Triibner's Oriental and American Record.

3 Of the former kind the following is a rccent example, Li-Hung-Chang reports that the leader of the Nien-fei (northern rebels) "did really die by drowning," as lately announced. The emperor apostils, ''I am greatly delighted to hear it."

UNITED STATES. |

NEWSPAPERS OF SouTH AFRICA.

The chief papers of the Cape Colony are The Evening Express (6000) and The Cape Argus (5000). At Pretoria, the eapital of the Transvaal, in 1882, four papers were published—three in Dutch, one in English.

NEWSPAPERS OF THE UNITED STATES.

Boston was the first city of America that possessed a local newspaper ; but the earliest attempt in that direction, made in 1689, and a second attempt, under the title Publick Occurrences, which followed in September 1690, were both suppressed by the Government of Massachusetts. Only one copy of the first and two copies of the second of these two pioneers are now known to exist. One copy of the Publick Occurrences may be seen in the State Paper Department of the Rolls House in London. The other was

recently exhibited at Philadelphia. The paper is a small quarto sheet, one of the four pages of which is blank, while the other three contain a record of passing occurrences, not unlike the contemporary news of the English press ; and there is little in the paper to justify, in any sense, the governor's assertion that "it contained reflexions of a very high nature." Although it purports to be "printed by Richard Pierce for Benjamin Harris," it is probable that the latter was both printer and editor, as he had already been of a London paper (Zhe Post), and was again at a subsequent period. Nearly fourteen years afterwards (April 24, 1704), the first number of Zhe Boston News-Letter was "printed by B. Green, and sold by Nicholas Boone"; but its proprietor and editor—so far as it can be said to have had an editor, for extracts from the London papers were its staple contents—was John Campbell, postmaster of the town. In 1719 he enlarged his paper, in order, as he told his readers, "to make the news newer and more acceptable; . ... whereby that which seem'd old in the former half-sheets becomes new now by the sheet… .. This time twelvemonth we were thirteen months behind with the foreign news beyond Great Britain [or, in other words, the attention of the Bostonian politicians was engrossed on the siege of Belgrade, when their contemporaries in the mother country were intent on the destruction of the Spanish fleet on the coast of Sicily], and now less than five months; so that… . we have retrieved about eight months since January last"; and he encourages his subscribers with the assurance that if they will continue steady "until January next, life per- mitted, they will be accommodated with all the news of Europe… . that are needful to be known in these parts." But Campbell's new plans were soon disturbed by the loss of his office, and the commencement of a new journal by his successor in the postmastership, William Brooker, entitled The Boston Gazette, "published by authority" (No. 1, 21st December 1719). The old journalist had a bitter controversy with his rival, but at the end of the year 1722 relinquished his concern in the paper to Benjamin Green, by whom it was carried on with higher aims and greater success.

Green conducted the paper until his death, at the close of 1733, and was succeeded by his son-in-law, John Draper, who published it until December 1762. By Richard Draper, who followed his father, the title was altered to Massachusetts Gazette and Boston News-Letter; and the maintenance of the British rule against the rising spirit of independence uniformly

characterized his editorship and that of his widow (to whom, at a subsequent period, a pension was granted by the British Government). It was the only paper printed in Boston during the siege, and ceased to appear when the British troops were compelled to evacuate the city.

The Boston Gazette began, as we have seen, in 1719.

James Franklin, elder brother of the celebrated Benjamin Franklin, was its first printer. It lasted until the end of 1754, its editorship usually changing with the change of the postmasters. On the 17th August 1721 James Franklin started The New England Courant, the publica- tion of which ceased in 1727; and two years later Benjamin Franklin established The Pennsylvania Gazette, which he continued weekly until 1765.

To The Boston Gazette and the Courant succeeded The New England Weekly Journal (20th March 1727 ; incor- porated with The Boston Gazette in 1741), and The Weekly Rehearsal (27th September 1731), which became The Boston Evening Post (August 1735), and under that title was for a time the most popular of the Boston newspapers. It aimed at neutrality in politics, and therefore did not survive the exciting events of the spring of 1775. Several minor papers followed, which may be passed over without notice. A new Boston Gazette, which began in April 1755, has, however, claims to be particularized. For a long time it was the main organ of the popular party, and expounded their policy with great ability, and in a dignified temper. Otis, John Adams, Samuel Adams, and Warren were amongst its writers.

The Massachusetts Spy, under the indefatigable editor- ship of the American historian of printing, Isaiah Thomas, did yeoman's service in this struggle, although of a different kind from that of Zhe Boston Gazette. The latter spoke chiefly to the thinkers and natural leaders of the people. The Spy was a light and active skirmisher who engaged his antagonists wherever he met them, and frequently carried the war into the enemy's country. In July 1774, during the operation of the Boston Port Act, and soon

after the landing of four British regiments, it adopted Franklin's odd device, representing Great Britain as a dragon, and the colonies as a snake divided into nine parts with the motto, "join or die." But Boston grew too hot for the patriotic printer, and he had to remove to Worcester on the day of the battle of Lexington. Here the paper continued to be published until 1786,—the lack of the stirrig revolutionary matter being occasionally supplied by the republication in its columns of entire books, such as Robertson's America and Gordon's J/istory of the Revolution. This journal, like so many more, was for a time killed by a tax. The stamp duty imposed in March 1786, though amounting to but two-thirds of a penny, and very speedily repealed, led to the suspension of the Spy until April 1788, At that period it was resumed ; and it still continues, being the oldest newspaper in Massa-chusetts.

The Boston Sentinel is on many grounds a memorable newspaper. It was founded and for nearly forty years edited by Major Bursell, a man who combined ability with singular moderation of temper, and with singular modesty and disinterestedness. He printed the Acts of Congress for a very long time without charge. William Lloyd Garrison's once well-known Boston Liberator was founded on New Year's Day 1831. For a time its editor was also writer, compositor, and pressman. In December of that year the assembly of his State offered a reward of 5000 dollars to any one who would cause him to be apprehended and brought to trial. He continued the paper to the last day of 1861, and lived to witness the abolition of negro slavery.

At the commencement of the struggle for independence in 1775 Massachusetts possessed 7 newspapers, New Hampshire 1 (The New Lampshire Gazette, founded in 1756), Rhode Island 2, and Connecticut 3, —making 13 in all for the New England colonies. Pennsylvania had 8, of which the earliest in date was The American Weekly Mercury (No. 1, 22d December 1719) ; and New York

but 3, the oldest of them being The New York Gazette, the publication of which had commenced on the 16th October 1725. Up to that period (1725) Boston and Philadelphia were the only towns possessing a newspaper throughout America. In the middle and southern colonies there were, in 1775, in the aggregate, 10 journals, of which Maryland, Virginia, and North Carolina possessed each 2, South Carolina 3, and Georgia 1. The total number of the Anglo-American papers was 34, and all of them were of weekly publication.

The New Hampshire Gazette still exists, and is the "father" of the New-England press. In 1810 this State possessed 12 papers; in 1828, 17; in 1840, 27; in 1850, 32,—-viz., 22 described as "political," and 10 as "mis-cellaneous." The earliest paper established in Vermont was The Green Mountain Postboy, first published in April 1781. In 1850 the number of newspapers was 30, 27 of which are described as "political." Maine possessed in 1850 29, 4 of them of daily publication. Rhode Island

had 13, of which 5 were daily; Connecticut had 28, |

including 7 daily papers ; Massachusetts possessed in 1850 no less than 91 newspapers, about two-thirds of them published in Boston. Of the whole number, 22 were of daily and 54 of weekly publication.

Pennsylvania had in 1810 71 newspapers; in 1850, 210, with a collective circulation of 338,336 copies; in 1870, 540, with a circulation of 3,419,765 copies ; and in 1880, 973, with a circulation of 5,031,061 copies.

The Aurora was the most notable of the early Phila- delphia papers, next to Franklin's Gazette. Its hostility to Federalism, and to Washington as the main pillar of the Federalists, was violent. Zhe Daily National Gazette, started in 1820, soon became prominent for its union of literature with politics.

The earliest journal of Maryland was William Parker's Maryland Gazette, established in 1727, when in all America it had but six existing predecessors. Discontinued in 1736, it was revived in 1745 by Jonas Green, to exist to the present day as the flourishing patriarch of American journals. In Maryland there were, at the census of 1850, 40 newspapers ; at that of

1870, 88, with an aggregate circulation of 235,450 copies. In March 1880 its capital, Baltimore, had 4 daily newspapers—a number equal to that of Boston, and surpassed only by Philadelphia, New York, Cincinnati, and Chicago.

New Jersey had no really established newspaper before the Revolution, although the first number of an intended journal was published in 1765, under the title of The Constitutional Gazette, containing matters interesting to Lnberty, but no wise repugnant to Royalty. The earliest regular paper was The New Jersey Gazette, which began in December 1777. New Jersey in 1850 had 45 newspapers ; in 1870, 122.

Virginia, notwithstanding its illustrious precedency,—the province of Raleigh, the cradle of Washington,—possessed neither newspaper nor printing office until 1736, so that (as respects one-half at least of the wish) there was once a prospect that the devout aspiration of Sir William Berkeley might be realized. 'Thank God," said this Virginian governor in 1671, "we have neither free school nor print- ing press, and I hope may not have for a hundred years to come." The earliest journal established in the State was The Virginia Gazette, commenced in 1736. The Ltichmond Inquirer, which started in 1804, early attained a leading position. In 1810 the total number of Virginian papers was 23; in 1828, 37; at the census of 1850, 67; in 1870, 173, with an average total circulation of 198,272 copies. North Carolina had, in 1850, 37 journals, with an aggregate circulation of 25,439 copies ; in 1870 it had 64, with 64,820 ; South Carolina in 1870 had 55, with 80,900 :

APERS5

Georgia 110, with 150,987 of circulation ; Florida 23, with 10,545; Alabama 89, with a circulation of 91,165 copies.

In New York, the Gazette already mentioned was followed by The Weekly Journal (No. 1, 5th November 1733), still memorable for the prosecution for sedition which it entailed on its printer, John Peter Zenger, and for the masterly defence of the accused by Andrew Hamilton. ''The trial of Zenger," said Gouverneur Morris, "was the germ of American freedom." CGaines's New York Mercury was published from 1752 to 1783. Rivington's Royal Gazette was established in 1773, and in the first year of

its existence is said to have attained a circulation of 3600. After the Revolution this paper was continued under the title New York Gazette and Universal Advertiser. The first daily newspaper published in the city or State of New York was The New York Journal and Register, com- menced in 1788. In 1810 the aggregate number of papers published within the State was 66, of which 14 belonged to New York city. Ten years later the city press included 8 daily journals, with an aggregate daily circulation of 10,800 copies. No one paper circulated more than 2000, and but two—TZhe Evening Post and The Commercial Advertiser—attained that number. In 1832 there were 13 daily journals, with a collective daily circulation of 18,200. In 1850 the number of daily papers was 51, with an aggregate annual circulation of 63,928,685.

The penny press of America began in New York, and the pioneer was The Daily Sun (No. 1, 23d September 1833), written, edited, set up, and worked off by Benjamin Franklin Day, a journeyman printer. Its circulation at first was 600 copies ; in 1854 its average issue was 36,525 copies. Its success has been described with sufficient significancy as mainly owing to "' piquant police reports," at least at the outset. It was afterwards reorganized, and made to take a more vigorous political course, chiefly on the Democratic side. Without increasing its size or chang- ing its price, it has thus become one of the most profitable journals in New York. Zhe New York Herald followed in May 1835. Exceptional and eccentric forms of advertisement were persistently used to gain notoriety for the new paper, and its commercial success was great. Within twenty years it had attained a circulation of 36,158 copies,—which was at that date about five times the circulation of any London newspaper, The Times only excepted,—and the issue has since greatly increased. The Herald is said to be still "the most fickle, coarse, and blustering of American papers," but it is none the less conducted with conspicuous skill and enterprise. It often contains several columns of "' exclusive " telegrams, obtained by a lavish outlay. In a single number during 1882, forty columns of original matter appeared. In another number (also of 1882) one hundred columns of advertise- ments appeared, containing nearly 4000 several insertions. The one fact explains the other. James Gordon Bennett, the founder, proprietor, and editor of the Herald, gradually yielded its management in the later years of his life to his only son, of the same name, who succeeded to the absolute control on his

father’s death. The elder Bennett left a large fortune ; and of part of this a noble use was eventu- ally made. Besides the expenditure on the world-famous mission in search of Livingstone, a generous but unfor- tunate Arctic exploration enterprise was fitted out from the same fund. A popular subscription for the relief of the suffering in Ireland was also started with a gift of a

hundred thousand dollars from the Herald. The New

York Tribune was established in 1841 by Horace Greeley, who remained its editor and one of its proprietors until his death, shortly after his defeat for the presidency in 1872. It was also, at the outset, a penny paper, but it differed from its cheap rivals in being a vigorous political pro-

pagandist, and in giving hospitable attention to literature and to novel ideas in social and political economy. Thus it allowed contributors to expound and defend the doctrines of Fourier; it encouraged various efforts at founding associations more or less communistic and educational ; after the failure of the famous Brook Farm experiment, it took the president and three other conspicuous members of that association upon its staff; it was early in giving serious notice to the so-called manifestations of spiritualism ; it advocated co-operation instead of trades unions and strikes as the best remedy for the wrongs or misfortunes of labour ; and it led in the warfare upon slavery through political agencies. The 7’ribune made the first great use of the Atlantic cables for transmitting war correspondence, in its voluminous reports of the Franco-Prussian war. Another of its notable feats was the translation of the “cipher dispatches,” revealing the effort by some of Mr Tilden’s partisans to purchase electoral votes for him, in the disputed presidential election of 1876. Its circulation in 1851 was 19,000 copies, of which somewhat more than half was sold within the limits of the city. It had gained in 1857 a daily circulation of about 29,000 copies, and in addition issued as a weekly paper 163,000 copies, irrespec- tively of certain special issues for California and for Europe. The circulation in both forms is now, in 1883, greatly increased, but there are no quite trustworthy records of the

present issues of the New York press. The New York Times was established by Henry J. Raymond in September 1851; and, though absent at times in the dis- charge of his duties as lieutenant-governor of New York and member of congress, he continued its editor and chief proprietor until his death in June 1869. It was intended to satisfy the wants of those who preferred a journal of the Tribune's general political tendencies and literary character, but with a more moderate and conservative spirit. The Times also began as a cheap paper; and it was successful almost from the first. Its greatest good fortune came after the death of its founder, in its discovery and vigorous exposure of the frauds and robberies committed by the "Tweed Ring," in the municipal government of New York, a work for which it received great praise and profit. These are amongst the prizes of New York journalism. How numerous the blanks are may be inferred from the statement that between the years 1820 and 1850 32 daily newspapers were founded and abandoned.

The prices of the more important New York papers were advanced to three, and finally, during the war of the Rebellion, to four cents. They all came to make regular issues on Sunday also, when the price was generally five cents. In September 1883 the Times suddenly reduced its price from four to two cents. The Herald did the same ; but the 7ribume stopped at three cents, being now the only one of the great morning journals to charge over two cents. There are also several one-cent papers, with considerable circulations. Their inroads upon the larger journals, and that from the World, an eight-page Democratic newspaper sold at two cents, are supposed to have forced the reductions in price above named, which are obviously to make a great change both in the character and prosperity of the press of New York.

The expenditures upon the New York newspapers have greatly increased since 1860. Forty columns of news and editorial comment are often given ina single eight-page paper; extra sheets are frequent, and are always given when advertisements require it. The //erald sometimes prints as many as 32 pages in one issue. Nearly all the news is now received by telegraph, and a large part of it is collected for each paper by its own staff of correspond- ents and reporters. Several papers lease telegraphic wires to Washington for their own use. A large staff of

reporters is also maintained by each for occurrences in and about the city—twenty-five to fifty reporters not being an unusual number for any of the more important journals.

The New York Associated Press is the chief news agency of the American continent. It is a partnership between the Herald, Tribune, Times, Sun, World, Journal of Commerce, and Mail and Express for the collection of such news as its members may wish to use in common, and the sale of it to others. This and the Western Associated Press—an organization of a large number of the more important newspapers of Chicago, Cincinnati, St Louis, and other cities in the Mississippi valley—are now consolidated in a working arrangement, under the man- agement of a permanent joint executive committee, who appoint agents, contract with telegraph companies, dis- tribute the news to the members of the two associations, and sell it to a great number of individual papers and other associations. They transmit proceedings of Congress and the State legislatures, public documents, market news, the dispatches by ocean cables, and, in general, accounts of all public occurrences of interest.

Until the reductions of 1883, the prevailing price for first-class papers, of eight or more pages, was, in New York, four cents; in Chicago, Cincinnati, St Louis, and elsewhere, five cents. The past ten years, however, had been notable for the growth of another class of journals, of about half the size, generally of only four pages, which aimed at a greater condensation of routine news, and often at giving special prominence to “sensations.” These were sold at two cents, and frequently attained great success. The New York Sun, Boston Herald, Philadelphia Times, Chicago Mews, and San Francisco Chronicle were good examples. Equally successful, if generally less sensational, were the Philadelphia Ledger, Baltimore Sun, Washington Star, and San Francisco Call. The wide circulation and handsome profits of this class of journals have developed a considerable reaction against large papers, extreme ful- ness of news detail, and long editorial comment. Most of the newspapers started or projected now are of this two- cent class.

The great distances in the United States, the excellent and cheap telegraphic service, and the facilities afforded by the Associated Press combine to promote the growth of what would be called in England “provincial journals.” Cincinnati, Chicago, and St Louis being each over a day’s and a night’s journey from New York, Boston, or Phila- delphia, are able to build up first-class papers of their own. In Chicago the 7’ribune, Times, and fnter-Ocean are all strong and enterprising eight-page journals, often sending out double or sixteen-page sheets, maintaining large corps of correspondents, and leasing private wires from New York and Washington. Substantially the same may be said of the Commercial Gazette and the Enquirer of Cincinnati, of the Globe-Democrat and the Republican of St Louis, and of the Zimes-Democrat of New Orleans. Some of these papers realize net profits of over a hundred thousand dollars in a single prosperous year.

Nearly every town of 15,000 inhabitants has its own daily paper. Scarcely a “‘ county seat ” in the settled part of the United States is without its weekly paper,—even if the population should be below 1000. In the older counties, villages of a few hundred inhabitants in the “‘ out-townships” are also apt to have a weekly. These are often of the class known as “patent outsides,” for which the first and fourth pages, composed of reprint matter and advertisements, are made up and printed in a central office, doing such work by wholesale for hundreds of papers, while the half-printed shcets are then forwarded to the local office, to be filled out with village news and | advertisements.

436

Only one illustrated daily paper is published in America, the Daily Graphic of New York. It prints regularly woodcuts and other engravings on four of its eight pages. The illustrated weeklies are numerous,—the best known in New York being Harper’s Weekly, Harper’s Bazar, and Frank Leshe’s Fllustrated Paper.

Elaborate as are the newspaper returns given in the successive census reports of the United States, they are only to be relied upon for preeise information when liniited to papers of daily issue. The classification of the main returns is headed “pcriods of issue”; and, although there is a subsidiary classification, according to character, this fails to elicit even the

simple distinction between newspapers and magazines. Of the 5871 publications shown by the census of 1870, 4333 are classed as political. The 11,314 of the 1880 census are classified thus :—devoted to news, politics, and family reading, 8863; religious, 5531; agricultural, horticultural, &c, 173; eommerce and trade, 284; finaneial, 25; insurance and railroads, 54; general literature (including magazines), 189; medicine and surgery, 114; law, 45; science and mechanics, 68 ; freemasonry, oddfellowship, temperance, &c., 149; educational, 248 ; children's periodicals, 219; miscellaneous, 330. The Sunday newspapers (included in the above figures) numbered 252. The arrangement

Ne wsePpParErks

[UNITED STATES.

is different from that of former returns, and, in this absence of uniformity, we cannot give any precise statement, at once com- parative and detailed, of the progress of American journalism.

Nor will the Directories of the well-known advertising houses of agency—such as thosc of Pettengill and of Hubbard—serve the purpose, for reasous which are thus stated by the able statistician who edited the " Population and Soeial Science Tables" in the census report of 1870. "There are," he writes in his prefatory remarks, "very considcrable numbers of issucs of . . . . shects, intended for distribution at places of public amusement, and a dozen other forms of advertisement, 'more or less disguised under a show of presenting news or criticism' to the public… . . To swamp statistics [of newspapers]. . . by inconsiderately admitting hundreds of . . . advertising sheets, would be undoubtedly an abuse." But shoals of such are recorded in Pettengill's Directory and in Hubbard's Record.

The following figures are from the official returns for 1850, 1870, and 1880. 'Class papers" are included among the newspapers for 1850 and 1870, while the heading in the census tables of 1880 is "newspapers and periodicals." The 1880 returns do not furnish statistics of annual circulation. The aggregate circulation per issue of the 971 dailies in 1880 was 3,566,395, and that of the 10,343 other papers (8633 of which were published weekly and 1167 monthly) 28,213,291.

General Statistics of the Newspaper Press of the United States for 1850, 1870, and 1880 respectively.

ee

1850. 1870. 1880.

States and Territories.* Aggregate Aggregate Popula- No. of Total No. of Popula- No. of Total No. of Pangiee No. of se Total > News- | Circula- Copies z News-/} Circula- Copics Ag Dail eo Circula- tion : Z tion. 3 . a tion aly | Periodi- aaa papers.| tion. gee papers, tion. Printed * |} Papers eae tion. nnually, Annually. je Mite… le 583,169| 29 | 29,695] 2,501,680|| 626,015| 65 | 170,090| 9,867 680! eaaaae| ia 13 | 6,214.4 2. New : Hampshire 317,076 22 32,186 1,673,672 | 318,300 5 173,919} 7,237,388 || 346/991| 10 87 fats . Vermont… 025,43 30,551] 47 71,390| 4,055.30 2, 4, Massachusetts… 994514] 91 | 229:087| 46,587,800|| 1,457.351| 259 | 1,692‘194 199°691‘966 1 Age 2S wi 2 nes 5. Rhode Island …. 147,545| 13 20,575| 2,476,150|| ‘217:353] 32 82,050 9,781,500 || 276°531 8 44 97-121 6. Connecticut…... 370,792| 28 34.916| 3,499,439 || 539.454| 71 208.725] 17,454,740 || 622‘700} 17 139 237,660 7. New York ee 3,097,394 278 527.195 82,780,095 || 4,382,759| 835 | 7,561,497] 471,741,744 5,082\871) 115 | 1,411 9,374,134 ; TSCY ss… i , 7,047 || ‘906,096 | 122 205,500| 18,625,740 || 1.131116| 27 215 2 9. Pennsylvania… ...| 2,811,786 | 210 | 838,336] 59,717,508 || 3,521951| 540 | 3,419,765! 241‘170,540 4‘982,891| 98 973 5 ee 10. Delaware…..ccccccces.| 915321 8 6,600; 374,400 || ‘125:015| 17 20,860} 1,607,840 || ‘146608| 5 26 “34,495 11 Maryland… ae. Hees 583,034! 40 82,837 | 4,205,324 || 780,804| 88 235,450] 83,497,778 || 934,943| 15 143 414,693 12, —> olumbia…... : pbsst 16 99,787 11,045,336 ; 131,700 2 81,400] 10,092;800 || 177,624| 5 44 213,993 » Virginia… ; ,225,163 1s 14, North Carolina… ‘869,089| 37 25,489| 1,571.414|| 1:071,361| 64 ee pee ieearen i fe 15, South Carolina… 668,507| 29 36,415| 6,451,330 || 705,606] 55 80,9004 8,901,400|| “9951577| 4 81 69°909 16. Georgia …....6.., 906,185} 26 23,946} 2.238.690 || 1,184,109] 110 150,987} —15,539;724|| 1,5421180| 16 200 269,066 M7 Florida… Ripe wi 3,500] 202,800 || “187,748) 23 10,545 649,290 || 969,493] 3 45 27,332 labama…... } 25,336! 2,202‘169|| 996,992! 189 91,165{ 9,198,980 || 1,262,505} 6 125 93, 19. Mississippiessscsccscsssson 606,526] 40 26,380

1,519,024|| 827.999| 111 71,868{ 4,703,336 || 1.131597! 5 123 sl, 20, Louisiana sseccscnsen 517.7621 40 57,522 | 11,691,324|| 726915] 92 84,165| 13,755,690) ‘939:946| 18 112 131,630 21 Texas… eee 212,502 15 9,750 808,800 818,579} 112 55,250} 4,214‘800 || 1,591:749| 30 280 263,289 : as.. 50 205,400 8 56 : 2 : 28. Tennessce…....-...-0 1,002,717] 38 34,757 | 5,642‘510 eee 91 oon one Po ory ieee 1D 193 a obs 24, Kentuckyinevseeceeneene 982.405} 44 56,736} 5,496,288 || 1391011| 89 197,130| 18,270,160 || 1,648,690} 11 205 397,564 25. MiSSOUTiswsseeseesneeene] 682044] 42 48,340| 5,496,280 || 1.721.295! 270 522,866| 47,980,492 || 2‘168,380| 43 530 965,285 26, TMinois..e.. 851,470| 74 52,401 | 3,787,982 || 2,539,891| 505 | 1,722,541] 113,140,499 || 3,077,871| 74 | 1,017 2,491,975 27. Indiana 988,416] 84 47,900} 3,569,324 || 1,680,637| 208 363,542| 28,964,984 || 1.978301] 40 467 “661,111 28, ONO rssreereverv 1,980,329] 198 | 202,785! 23,086,087 || 2,665,260] 395 | 1,388,367] 98‘548°814|| s‘198,062| 56 774 3,093,981 29. Michigan seseicen 397,654| 40 28,993| 2,582,836|| 1,184.059| 211 253,774| 19,686,978 || 11636937} 33 464 “620,974 80, Wisconsin… 305,391] 49 29,236| 2,517,487 || 1.054.670| 190 343,385} 28,762,920 || 113151497; 21 340 436,576 B1. Towa… 192,214] 26 21,350! 1,469,000|/ 1,194090| 233 219,090] 16,403,380 || 1/624615| 30 569 547,340 32. Califor. er 02,597 4 2,000 626,000 560,247 201 491,903 47,472,756 || 864,694] 58 g61 640,026 OE ee Oe : 5 : 3,657,300 |} 174,768] 7 74 85,786 States, &c., formed between i . a % 1850 and 1870, rizona 5S emer 9,658| 1 280 14,560 40,440| 6 17 13,550 35 Colorado er anaaeme 39,867| 14 12,750} 1,190,600 || 194397| 19 87 95,744 36. Dakotteersctresen 14,181 3 1.651 85,904|| 135.177] 9 67 36,943 deh ene : 200,200 32/610 10 5,650 se oe 367,399| 97 96,803| 9,518,176|| 996.096| 26 347 280,729 Ol ehetiee . 439,706 95 110,778 9,543,656 || 780,773} 10 223 229° 074 oo | ee ne ee a : ; 2,860,600 39.159] 4 18 20,827 41. Nebr — ne Bele ace a te ve 122,998 #2 81,600 3,388,500 || 459‘409] 15 189 154,570 ae e ; .,300| 2/572°000 62,266! 14 37 97,745 eee ofl Gets] ao | aetes| ieeeanl| amet 3) | ae 45, Washington… ane “955 o| “ages eee Oe cared ees 23.955| 14 6.785 396,500 75.116] 4 29 16,751 ay | Seoedocccopesescnece ae 9118] 6 1,950 243°300 20,789} 3 11 5,686 motels: -2) eee ce 99 ; “5871 | 75 Ra x ec | 28,112,872} 1,718 | 2,211,512 | 309,863,095 || 38,548,371 | 5,871 | 20,842,475 | 1,508,548,250 || 50,155,783 | 971 11,814 | 31,779,686

- ° : 2 : . . The order of the States is here given as they are enumerated in the official tables of the census of 1850. In recent censuses the States are placed alphabetically.

Of the 11,314 periodicals in 1880, 10,515 were in English, 641 in German, 49 in Danish and Scandinavian, 41 in Freueh, and 26 in Spanish. The number of <¢ journalists" in the United States in 1880 was returned as 12,308 (12,020 males and 288 females).

If we adopt Hubbard's newspaper statistics of 1880 for the United States collectively,—including, as they do, a considerable number of sheets which contain advertisements only, and which therefore are rejected from the official lists adopted by the statists of the census office at Washington, while, on the other hand, trade-

1 Ineluding Methodist, 75: Roman Catholic, 70 i ¢ i : ; Baptist, 63 ; Presbyterian, 42 ; Episeopal, 32; and 'Cunseetarian, " 96. cae ,

journals and class-journals (embraced in the census returns), which contain no ""'news" and no politics, are exeluded,—and add to them the number of newspapers published within the Dominion of Canada, we obtain a grand total for the North American continent, as a whole, of 10,131 ''newspapers" of all sorts. Of these, 899 are published daily, 8428 weekly or twice or thrice a week, and 804 at longer intervals. The aggregate circulation of the whole number amounts to about 20,680,000 copies; and the ageregate annual issue of the whole somewhat-exceeds 1,836,476, 000 copies.

That, on the whole, industrialism has too much over-weighted literature in the development of American journalism is the state- ment of the most observant and thoughtful of American publicists

NEWSP

and statesmen. It is the shady side of a theme which, in many of its aspects, has much of brightness and of mental energy. The fact was recognized by an eminent judge many ycars ago in the ordinary course of his official duty. 'The copyright law," said Mr Justice Thompson, from the bench of the State of New York, in the cause Clayton v. Stone, ''is an Act for the

encouragement of learning, not of mere industry. A newspaper… is not sucha publication as falls under the protection of the copyright laws."

Sce the different Census Reports of the United States, Washington, 1853, 1872, and 1882-83; Buckingham, Specimens of Newspaper Literature, 2 vols., Boston, 1850; Coggeshall, The Newspaper Record, Philadelphia, 1856; Sparks, Life and Works of Franklin, i. 23, 123, &e.; Life and Works of John Adams, ii. 4053 Proceedings of the New York Historical Society for 1844; Historical Notices of Newspapers published in New Hampshire, in Farmer and Moore's collection, iii. 174 sq.; Frothingham, History of the Siege of Boston, 31 sq.; Minutes of Evidence before the Select Commitiee on Newspaper Stamps (evidence of Mr H. Greeley), pp. 389-395, 438-448; Andrews, History of British Journalism, i. 298- 305, 1859; Hubbard, Record, &c., New Haven, Conn., 1880, and other publica- tions; papers by C. de Varigny, on " American Journalism," in Revue des Deux Mondes, 1877, ii. 118-143; F. Hudson, Journalism in the United States, New York, 1873.

NEWSPAPERS OF BRITISH AMERICA AND CENTRAL AMERICA.

The virtual senior of the Canadian press is the Gazette, still pub- lished at Montreal, which may fairly be considered as the continu- ation (or at least the representative) of the original Gazette, established in that city in January 1765. It is now a daily paper —one of 10 dailics, three of which (La Minerve, Le Nouvel Monde, and L'Evénement) appear in French. There are also 3 weekly papers. Toronto has now 8 daily journals, and Ottawa 4. The Halifax Gazette (pioneer of the Nova Scotia press) was established in January 1751, but it had an existence of less than twenty years. Halifax now publishes 4 daily papers. In all parts of British America, collectively, 67 daily newspapers were published in 1882, with an aggregate circulation of each issuc estimated (by the American consular agents) at 287,788. The total number of jour- nals of all kinds published in the British-American provinces is stated at 624, with an average circulation for each issue of about 2600 copies.

The press of the West Indies begins at Barbados with Keimer's Gazette of 1731, followed by Grenada in 1742. In 1882 there were in the West Indies 47 daily papers with an estimated average circulation, per issue, of 1818

copies. Kingston (in Jamaica), with a population of 38,556, had five daily papers, at the head of which appears The Gleaner (1800 copics). Havana (in Cuba), with a population of about 300,000, has 11 daily papers, of which the four chicf are thus rcported:—Diario de la Marina (cire. ise." La Voz de Cuba (8000), El Triunfo (8000), La Diseusion

(6000).

The principal newspaper of San José, the capital of the republic of Costa Rica (population about 18,000), is The Central American Teporter, a daily journal (circ. 3000). S. Salvador, capital of the republic of that name, has a daily journal, El Boletin Oficial, which circulates 2000 copies.

The city of Mexico (population about 230,000) has 24 daily papers, of which £1 Diario Oficial (4000 copies) and La Patria (5000) are the chief.

NEWSPAPERS OF SOUTH AMERICA.

(1) Brazil.—The chief daily newspaper of Rio de Janeiro is the Journal de Commeretio, which dates from 1828, and has a circulation of about 16,000. The official organ, Gazeta de Noticias, is said to circulate 24,000. The Cruzeiro follows with 12,000, and O Apostolo, the principal organ of the Roman Catholics, with 7000. There are, in all, 8 daily papers. Among the papers of less frequent publication are one in French (established in 1868) and also one in German.

(2) Argentine Republic.—The chief papers of Bucnos Ayres are The Standard and River Plate News (8500) and La Tribuna Nacional (3000).

(3) Chilt.—In Santiago are published #2 Ferro Carril and El Diario Ofieial (5000).

(4) Peru.—Lima, with a population exceeding 100,000, has no journal with a larger circulation than La Patria (2500).

(5) Uruguay.—Montevideo (population 110,000) has 17 daily papers, of which the priucipal are—ZI Ferro Carril (6000), El Siglo (5000), and La Naeion (8000).

(6) Venezwela.—The chief papers of Caracas are El Monitor (7500), La Opinion Nacional (5000), and La Gazeta Oficial (5000).

NEWSPAPERS OF AUSTRALASIA.

(1) New South Wales.—Sydney (population 134,187) has 6 daily newspapers, of which the circulation of the chicf ones, as it is stated by thcir respective publishers, stands thus:—Evening News, of which three or four successive editions arc regularly published, 35,000; The Australian Town and Country Journal, 30,000; The Bulletin, 20,000.

(2) South Australia.—Adelaide (population 82,250) has 4 daily papers.

(83) Victoria.—Melbourne, with a population nearly ninc times

ere RSs 437

as large (282,907), has the like number. The publisher of the chief one, The Age, reports its circulation as 44,000.

(4) New Zealand.— Wellington (population about 19,000) has also 4 dailies, of which The New Zealand Times (7000) is the chief.

(5) Tasmania.—Hobart Town, with a population of about 20,000, has 3 dailies. One of these, The Evening Star, circulates 8000 copies.

CoMPARATIVE STATISTICS.

It is almost impossible by any statistical detail to give an idea of the recent advances made—even as regards circulation merely—by the newspaper press; but an outline of the general results reached by three statists, who published their summaries respectively in 1828, 1866, and 1882, may have its utility.

The earliest summary is that of Adrien Balbi. It was published in the Revue Encyclopédique for 1828 (vol. i. pp. 593-603), along with much matter of more than merely statistical interest. The numbers of newspapers published in different countries at that date are given as follows :—France, 490; United Kingdom, 483; Austria, about 80; Prussia, 288; rest of the Germanic

Confedera- tion, 305; Netherlands, 150; Spain, 16; Portugal and the Azores, 17; Denmark, Sweden, and Norway, 161; Russia and Poland, 84. The respective proportions of journals to population were—for Prussia 1 to 41,500, German states 1 to 45,300, United Kingdom 1 to 46,000, France 1 to 64,000, Switzerland 1 to 66,000, Austria 1 to 400,000, Russia 1 to 565,000. Europe had in all 2142 newspapers, America 978, Asia 27, Africa 12, and Oceania 9; total 3168. Of these, 1378 were published in English-speaking countries (800 of them in the United States), having a population of 154 millions, and 1790 in other countries, with a population of 583 millions.

The second summary is-'that given by Eugéne Hatin in an appendix to his very able Bibliothéque de la Presse périodique. His enumeration of newspapers is as follows : —France, 1640; United Kingdom, 1260; Prussia, 700 ; Italy, 500; Austria-Hungary, 365; Switzerland, 300; Belgium, 275 ; Holland, 225; Russia, 200; Spain, 200 ; Sweden and Norway, 150; Denmark, 100; United States, 4000. Here the proportions of papers to population are —Switzerland and United States 1 to 7000, Belgium 1 to 17,000, France and the United Kingdom 1 to 20,000, Prussia 1 to 30,000, Spain 1 to 75,000, Austria 1 to 100,000, Russia 1 to 300,000. Hatin assigns to Europe a total of 7000, to America 5000, and to the rest of the world 250, making in all 12,500.

The third summary is that of Henry Hubbard, published in his Newspaper Directory of the World (New Haven, Connecticut, 1882), a work the value of which is marred by the exclusively commercial spirit that has moulded its compilation, and its want of literary character. Its scope embraces a very considerable number of serial publi- cations which cannot be classed as newspapers. Still—all this being understood—Hubbard's figures, which were collected (chiefly by the American consuls and consular agents in all parts of the world) about 1880, cannot be disregarded. The following are his general results :—

Daily Newspapers. Other Publications.

Estimated Population (1880). Num- | Circulation |.yymper,| Circulation ber. per Issue. per Issue. Europe…..| 301,856,000 | 2,408 15,682,425 | 10,780 |38,901, 400 ae '1,007,128,000| 154] 550,786 3371 257,000 Africa

205,000,000) 25 55,475 125} 167,220 N. Amcrical 76,033,000 | 1,136 | 4,758,223 | 9,656 |22,078,000 S. Amcrical 29,988,000) 208 347,490 427 354, 860 | ustralasia 3,670,000 94 246,850 471 483,000 ictal …..... ‘1,628,175,000 | 4,020 |21,641,199 | 21,746 |57,236, 480

(E. ED.—W. R.)

438

NEWTON, a city of the United States, in Middlesex county, Massachusetts, about 8 miles west of Boston, on the south bank of the Charles river. It is divided into seven wards, and contains the post-villages of Auburndale, Chestnut Hill, Newton, Newton Centre, Newton Highlands, Newton Lower Falls, Newton Upper Falls, Newtonville, West Newton, and Nonantum. Newton is principally inhabited by Boston merchants, and, each village being a collection of fine residences with beautiful grounds, it has been designated “the Garden City of New England.” The water-power furnished by the river is turned to account by numerous manufactories producing paper, hosiery, dye stuffs, emery paper, ink, soap, shoddy, &c. The first Baptist theological seminary in America was established in Newton Centre in 1826; it is nowa flourishing institu- tion with a library of 15,000 volumes, and five resident professors. Laselle Female Seminary at Auburndale dates from 1851. First settled in 1630, Newton was incorpo- rated as a town in 1679, asa city in 1873. Its population was 3351 in 1840, 8382 in 1860, 12,825 in 1870, and 16,995 in 1880.

NEWTON, Sir Isaac (1642-1727), the greatest of natural philosophers, was born on the 25th of December 1642 (0.s.), at Woolsthorpe, a hamlet in the parish of Colsterworth, Lincolnshire, about 6 miles from Grantham. His father (also Isaac Newton) was the farmer of a small freehold property of his own. He died before his son’s birth, a few months after his marriage to Hannah Ayscough, a daughter of James Ayscough of Market-Overton. When Newton was little more than two years old his mother married Mr Barnabas Smith, rector of the neighbouring parish of North Witham. Of this marriage there was issue, Benjamin, Mary, and Hannah Smith, and to their children Sir Isaac Newton subsequently left the greater part of his property. After having acquired the rudiments of education at two small schools in hamlets in close proximity to Woolsthorpe, Newton was sent at the age of

twelve to the grammar school of Grantham, the head- master of which was Mr Stokes. While attending Grantham school Newton lived in the house of Mr Clark, an apothecary of that town. According to his own con- fession he was far from industrious, and stood very low in his class. An unprovoked attack from the boy next above him led to a fight, in which Newton's pluck gave him the victory. This success seems to have led him to greater exertions in school, and after some time he rose to be the head boy of the school. He cared but little for the ordinary amusements of his schoolfellows, but he displayed very early a taste and an aptitude for mechanical con- trivances. He made windmills, water-clocks, kites, and dials, and he is said to have invented a four-wheeled car- riage which was to be moved by the rider. In 1656 Mr Smith died, and Newton's mother came back with her three children to Woolsthorpe. Newton was then in his fifteenth year, and, as his mother in all probability intended him to be a farmer, he was taken away from school. He was frequently sent on market days to Grantham with an old and trusty servant, who made all the purchases, while Newton spent his time among the books in Mr Clark's house. It soon became apparent to Newton's relatives that they were making a great mistake in attempting to turn him into a farmer, and he was therefore sent back again to school at Grantham. ~ His mother's brother, Mr W. Ayscough, the rector of the next parish, was a graduate of Trinity College, Cambridge, and when he found that Newton's mind was wholly devoted to me- chanical and mathematical problems, he urged upon Mrs Smith the desirability of sending her son to his own college, a proposal to which she was not at all unwilling to give her consent. He was accordingly admitted a member of

Trinity College on June 5, 1661, as a subsizar, and was matriculated on July 8. We have scarcely any informa- tion as to his attainments when he commenced residence, and very little as to his studies at the university before he took the degree of bachelor of arts. It is known that while still at Woolsthorpe Sanderson's Logic, a book which his uncle had given him, had been read by him to such purpose that his tutor at Trinity College excused his attendance at a course of lectures on that subject. Newton tells us himself that, when he had purchased a book on astrology at Stourbridge

fair, a fair held close to Cam- bridge, he was unable, on account of his ignorance of trigonometry, to understand a figure of the heavens which was drawn in this book. He therefore bought an English edition of Euclid with an index of propositions at the end of it, and, having turned to two or three which he thought likely to remove his difficulties, he found them so self-evident that he expressed his astonishment that any one should have taken the trouble to offer demonstrations of them. He therefore put aside Euclid "as a trifling book," and applied himself to the study of Descartes's Geometry. He had some difficulty in mastering this work, but he succeeded in doing so without any assistance. It is reported that in his examination for a scholarship at Trinity, to which he was elected on April 28, 1664, he was examined in Euclid by Dr Barrow, who formed a poor opinion of his knowledge, and that in consequence Newton was led to read the Elements again with care, and thereby to form a more favourable estimate of Euclid's merits. The study of Descartes's Geometry seems to have inspired Newton with a love of the subject, and to have introduced him to the higher mathematics. In a small commonplace book, bearing on the seventh page the date of January 1663-4, there are several articles on angular sections, and the squaring of curves and 'crooked lines that may be squared," several calculations about musical notes, geometrical propositions from Francis Vieta and Schooten, annotations out of Wallis's Arithmetic of Injinites, together with observations on refraction, on the grinding of "spherical optic glasses," on the errors of lenses and the method of rectifying them, and on the extraction of all kinds of roots, particularly those "in affected powers." And in this same commonplace book the following entry made by Newton himself, many years afterwards, gives a further account of the nature of his work during the period when he was an undergraduate :—

'July 4, 1699.—By consulting an account of my expenses at Cambridge, in the years 1663 and 1664, I find that in the year 1664, a little before Christmas, I, being then Senior Sophister, bought Schooten's Miscellanies and Cartes' Geometry (having read this Geometry and Oughtred's Clavis clean over half a year before), and borrowed Wallis's works, and by consequence made these annotations out of Schooten and Wallis, in winter between the years 1664 and 1665. Atsuch time I found the method of Infinite Series ; and in summer 1665, being forced from Cambridge by the

plague, I computed the area of the Hyperbola at Boothby, in Lincolnshire, to two and fifty figures by the same method."

That Newton must have begun early to make careful observations of natural phenomena is sufficiently testified by the following remarks about halos, which appear in his Optics, book ii. part iv. obs. 13:—

"The like Crowns appear sometimes about the moon; for in the beginning of the Year 1664, February 19th, at night, I saw two such Crowns about her. The Diameter of the first or innermost was abont three Degrees, and that of the second about five Degrees and an half. . Next about the moon was a Circle of white, and next about that the inner Crown, which was of a bluish green within next the white, and of a yellow and red without, and next about these Colours were blue and green on the inside of the Outward Crown, and red on the outside of it. At the same time there appear'd a Halo about 22 Degrees 35' distant from the center of the moon. It was elliptical, and its long Diameter was perpendicular to the Horizon, verging below farthest from the moon."

In the month of January 1665 Newton took the degree

WE W TON

of bachelor of arts. The persons appointed (in conjunction with the proctors, John Slade of Catharine Hall, and Benjamin Pulleyn of Trinity College, Newton's tutor) to examine the questionists were John Eachard of Catharine Hall and Thomas Gipps of Trinity College. It isa curious accident that we have no information about the respective merits of the candidates for a degree in this year, as the "'ordo senioritatis" of the bachelors of arts for the year is omitted in the " Grace Book."

It is supposed that it was in 1665 that the method of fluxions first occurred to Newton's mind. There are several papers still existing in Newton's handwriting bearing dates 1665 and 1666 in which the method is described, in some of which dotted or dashed letters are used to represent fluxions, and in some of which the method is explained without the use of dotted letters.

Both in 1665 and in 1666 Trinity College was dismissed on account of the plague. On each occasion it was agreed, as appears by entries in the ‘‘ Conclusion Book” of the col- lege, bearing dates August 7, 1665, and June 22, 1666, and signed by the master of the college, Dr Pearson, that all fellows and scholars who were dismissed on account of the pestilence be allowed one month’s commons. Newton must have left college before August 1665, as his name does not appear in the list of those who received extra commons on that occasion, and he tells us himself in the extract from his commonplace book already quoted that he was “forced from Cambridge by the plague” in the summer of that year.

Newton was elected a fellow of his college on October 1, 1667. There were nine vacancies, one of which was caused by the death of Cowley in the previous summer, and the nine successful candidates were all of the same academical standing. A few weeks after his election to a fellowship Newton went to Lincolnshire, and did not return to Cambridge till the February following. On the 16th of March 1668 he took his degree of M.A.

During the years 1666 to 1669 Newton’s studies were of a very varied kind. It is known that he purchased prisms and lenses on two or three several occasions, and also chemicals and a furnace, apparently for chemical experiments ; but he also employed part of his time on the theory of fluxions and other branches of pure mathe- matics. He wrote a paper Analysis per Hquationes Numero Terminorum Injfintas, which he put, probably in June 1669, into the hands of Isaac Barrow (then a fellow of Trinity College, and the first occupant of the Lucasian chair of mathematics), at the same time giving him per- mission to communicate the contents to their common friend Mr John Collins, a mathematician of no mean order, and a correspondent of many of the eminent men of his time. Barrow did this on the 31st of July 1669, but kept the name of the author a secret, and merely told Collins that he was a friend staying at Cambridge, who had a powerful genius for such matters, and ex- pressed a hope that the paper would not a little delight him. In a subsequent letter on the 20th of August, Barrow expressed his pleasure at hearing the favourable opinion which Collins had formed of the paper, and added, “the name of the author is Newton, a fellow of our college, and a young man, who is only in his second year since he took the degree of master of arts, and who, with an

unparalleled genius (exzmio quo est acumine), has made very great progress in this branch of mathematics." Shortly afterwards Barrow, who had resolved to devote his attention to theological in preference to mathematical studies, resigned the Lucasian chair, and was instrumental in securing Newton's election as his successor. Newton was elected Lucasian professor on the 29th of October 1669. It was his duty as professor to lecture at least

once &@ week in term time on some portion of geometry, arithmetic, astronomy, geography, optics, statics, or some other mathematical subject, and also for two hours in the week to allow an audience to any student who might cone to consult with the professor on any difficulties he had met with. The subject which Newton chose for his lectures was optics. He gave courses of lectures on this subject, and the success which attended his researches in optics must have been great. The results of his investigations, however, were known only through his own oral lectures, and were not published until he presented an account of them to the Royal Society in the spring of 1672. On December 21, 1671, he was proposed as a candidate for admission into the Royal Society by Dr Seth Ward, bishop of Salisbury, and on January 11, 1672, he was elected a fellow of the Society. At the meeting at which Newton was elected a description of a reflecting telescope which he had invented was read, and "it was ordered that a letter should be written by the secretary to Mr Newton to acquaint him of his election into the Society, and to thank him for the communication of his telescope, and to assure him that the Society would take care that all right should be done him with respect to this invention."

In his reply to the secretary on January 18, 1672, Newton writes :— .

'*T desire that in your next letter you would inform me for what time the society continue their weekly meetings; because, if they continue them for any time, I am purposing them to be considered of and examined an account of a philosophical discovery, which induced me to the making of the said telescope, and which I doubt not but will prove much more grateful than the communication of that instrument, being in my judgment the oddest if not the most

considerable detection which hath hitherto been made into the operations of nature."

The promise here made was fulfilled in a communica- tion which Newton addressed to Oldenburg, the secretary of the Royal Society, on February 6, 1672, and which was read before the Society two days afterwards. The whole is printed in No. 80 of the Philosophical Transactions, and the first part of it has been already printed in the article Lieut, vol. xiv. p. 590. After explaining his discovery of the composition of white light, he proceeds:—

'When I understood this, I left off my aforesaid Glass works; for I saw, that the perfection of Telescopes was hitherto limited, not so much for want of glasses truly figured according to the prescrip- tions of Optick Authors (which all men have hitherto imagined), as because that Light it self is a LHeterogencous mixture of differently refrangible Rays. So that, were a glass so exactly figured as to collect any one sort of rays into one point, it could not collect those also into the same point, which having the same Incidence upon the same Mcdium are apt to suffer a different refraction. Nay, I wondered, that seeing the difference of refrangibility was so great, as I found it, Telescopes should arrive to that perfection they are now at."

He then points out why

'*The object-glass of any Telescope cannot collect all the rays which come from one point of an object, so as to make them con- vene at its focus in less room than in a circular space, whose diameter is the 50th part of the Diameter of its Aperture: which is an irregularity some hundreds of times greater, than a circularly figured Lens, of so small a section as the Object-glasses of long Telescopes are, would cause by the unfitness of its figure, were Light uniform"; and he adds—

'*This made me take reflections into consideration, and finding them regular, so that the Angle of Reflection of all sorts of Rays was equal to their Angle of Incidence; I understood, that by their mediation Optick instruments might be brought to any degree of perfection imaginable, provided a Reflecting substance could be found, which would polish as finely as Glass, and reflect as much light, as glass transmits, and the art of communicating to it a Parabolick figure be also attained. But these seemed

very great difficulties, and I have almost thought them insuperable, when I further considered, that every irregularity in a reflecting super- ficies makes the rays stray 5 or 6 times more out of their due course, than the like irregularities in a refracting one; so that a much greater curiosity would be here requisite, than in figuring glasses for Refraction.

440 N EW

‘Amidst these thoughts I was forced from Cambridge by the Intervening Plague, and it was more than two years before I pro- ceeded further. But then having thought on a tender way of polishing, proper for metall, whereby, as I imagined, the figure also would be corrected to the last; I began to try, what might be effected in this kind, and by degrees so far perfected an Instrument (in the essential parts of it like that I sent to London), by which I could discern Jupiters 4 Concomitants, and shewed them divers times to two others of my acquaintance. I could also discern the Moon-like phase of Venus, but not very distinctly, nor without some niceness in disposing the Instrument.

‘* From that time I was interrupted till this last Autumn, when I made the other. And as that was sensibly better than the first (especially for Day-Objects), so I doubt not, but they will be still brought to a much greater perfection by their endeavours, who, as you inform me, are taking care about it at London,”

Then, after a remark that microscopes seem as capable

of improvement as telescopes, he adds—

‘*T shall now proceed to acquaint you with another more notable difformity in its Rays, wherein the Origin of Colour is unfolded: Concerning which I shall lay down the Doetrine first, and then, for its examination, give you an instance or two of the Experiments, as a specimen of the rest. ; :

‘*The Doctrine you will find comprehended and illustrated in the following propositions :— athe

“1. As the Rays of light differ in degrees of Refrangibility, so they also differ in their disposition to exhibit this or that particular colour. Colours are not Qualifications of Light, derived from Refrac- tions, or Reflections of natural Bodies (as ’tis generally believed), but original and connate properties, which in divers Rays are divers. Some Rays are disposed to exhibit a red colour and no other; some a yellow and no other, some a green and no other, and so of the rest. Nor are there only Rays proper and particular to the more eminent colours, but even to all their intermediate gradations.

‘2. To the same degree of Refrangibility ever belongs the samc colour, and to the same colour ever belongs the same degree of Refrangibility. The least Refrangible Rays are all disposed to exhibit a Red colour, and eontrarily those Rays, which are disposed to exhibit a Red colour, are all the least Refrangible: So the most refrangible Rays are all disposed to exhibit a deep Violet Colour, and contrarily those which are apt to exhibit such a violet colour are all the most Refrangible.

‘‘And so to all the intermediate colours in a continued series belong intermediate. degrees of refrangibility. And this Analogy ‘twixt colours, and refrangibility is very precise and strict; the Rays always either exactly agreeing in both, or proportionally dis- agreeing in both.

“3, The species of colour, and degree of Refrangibility proper to any particular sort of Rays, is not mutable by Refraction, nor by Reflection from natural bodies, nor by any other cause, that I could yet observe. When any one sort of Rays hath been well parted from those of other kinds, it hath afterwards obstinately retained its colour, notwithstanding my utmost endeavours to change it. I have refracted it with Prismes, and reflected it with Bodies, which in Day-light were of other colours; I have intercepted it with the coloured film of Air interceding two compressed plates of glass, transmitted it through coloured Mediums, and through Mediums irradiated with other sorts of Rays, and diversly terminated it; and yet could never produce any new colour out of it. It would by contracting or dilating become more brisk, or faint, and by the loss of many Rays, in some cases very obscure and dark; but I could never see it changed in speeie.

- Yet seeming transmutations of Colours may be made, where there is any mixture of divers sorts of Rays. For in such mixtures, the component colours appear not, but, by their mutual allaying each other constitute a midling colour.”

Further on, after some remarks on the subject of com- pound colours, he says—

“‘T night add more instances of this nature, but I shall con- clude with this general one, that the Colours of all natural Bodies have no other origin than this, that they are variously qualified to reflect one sort of light in greater plenty then another. And this I have experimented in a dark Room by illuminating those bodies with uncompounded light of divers colours. For by that means any body may be made to appear of any colour. They have there no appropriate colour, but ever appear of the colour of the light cast upon them, but yet with this difference, that they are most brisk and vivid in the light of their own day-light colour. Minium appeareth there of any colour indifferently, with which ‘tis illustrated, but yet most luminous in red, and so Bisc appearcth indifferently of any colour with which ’tis illustrated, but yet most luminous in blew. And therefore minium reflecteth Rays of any colour, but most copiously those indued with red ; and consequently when illustrated with day-light, that is with all sorts of Rays pro- miscuously blended, those qualified with red shall abound most in

AON

the reflected light, and by their prevalence causc it to appear of that colour. And for the same reason Bise, reflecting blew most copiously, shall appear blew by the excess of those Rays in its reflected light ; and the like of other bodics. And that this is the intire and adequate cause of their colours, is manifest, because they have no power to change or alter the colours of any sort of Rays incident apart, but put on all colours indifferently, with which they are inlightened.

‘* Reviewing what I have written, I see the discourse it self will lead to divers Experiments sufficient for its examination: And therefore I shall not trouble you further, than to describe one of those, which I have already insinuated.

‘In a darkened Room make a hole in the shut of a window, whose diameter may conveniently be about a third part of an inch, to admit a convenient quantity of the Suns light: And there place a clear and colourless Prisme, to refract the entring light towards the further part of the Room, which, as I said, will thereby be diffused into an oblong coloured Image. Then place a Lens of about three foot radius (suppose a broad Object-glass of a three foot Telescope), at the distance of about four or five foot from thence, through which all those colours may at once be transmitted, and made by its Refraction to convene at a further distance of about ten or twelve feet. If at that distance you intercept this light with a sheet of white paper, you will see the colours converted into whiteness again by being mingled.

“But it is requisite, that the Prisme aud Lens be placed steddy, and that the paper, on which the colours are cast be moved to and fro; for, by such motion, you will not only find, at what distance the whiteness is most perfect but also see, how the colours gradually convene, and vanish into whiteness, and afterwards having crossed one another in that place where they compound Whiteness, are again dissipated and severed, and in an inverted order retain the same colours, which they had before they entered the composition. You may also see, that, if any of the Colours at the Lens be inter- cepted, the Whiteness will be changed into the other colours. And therefore, that the composition of whiteness be perfect, care must be taken, that none of the colours fall besides the Lens.”

And he concludes his communication with the words—

“This, I conceive, is enough for an Introduction to Experi- ments of this kind: which if any of the R. Society shall be so curious as to prosecute, I should be very glad to be informed with what success: That, if any thing seem to be defective, or to thwart this relation, I may have an opportunity of giving further direction about it, or of acknowledging my errors, if I have committed any.”’

The publication of these discoveries led to a series of controversies which lasted for several years, in which Newton had to contend with the eminent English natural philosopher Hooke, Lucas, mathematical professor at Liége, Linus, a physician in Liége, and many others. Some of his opponents denied the truth of his experiments, refusing to believe in the existence of the

spectrum. Others criticized the experiments, saying that the length of the spectrum was never more than three and a half times the breadth, whereas Newton found it to be five times the breadth. It appears that Newton made the mistake of supposing that all prisms would give a spectrum of exactly the same length ; the objections of his opponents led him to measure carefully the lengths of spectra formed by prisms of different angles and of different refractive indices ; and it seems strange that he was not led thereby to the discovery of the different dispersive powers of different refractive substances.

Newton carried on the discussion with the objectors with great courtesy and patience, but the amount of pain which these perpetual discussions gave to his sensitive mind may be estimated from the fact of his writing on November 18, 1676, to Oldenburg :—

"*I promised to send you an answer to Mr Lucas this next Tuesday, but I find 1 shall scarce finish what I have designed, so as to get a copy taken of it by that time, and therefore I beg your patience a week longer. I see I have made myself a slave to philosophy, but if I get free of Mr Lucas's business, I will resolutely bid adicu to it eternally, excepting what I do for my private satisfaction, or leave to come out after me; for I see a man must either resolve to put out nothing new, or to become a slave to defend it."

It was a fortunate circumstance that these disputes did not so thoroughly damp Newton's ardour as he at the time felt they would. He subsequently published many papers

in the Philosophical Transactions on various parts of the science of optics, and, although some of his views have been found to be erroneous, and are now almost universally rejected, his investigations led to discoveries which are of permanent value. He succeeded in explaining the colour of thin and of thick plates, and the inflexion of light, and he wrote on double refraction, polarization, and binocular vision. He also invented a reflecting sextant for observ- ing the distance between the moon and the fixed stars,— the same in every essential as the instrument which is still in everyday use at sea under the name of Hadley's quadrant. This discovery was communicated by

him to Dr Halley in 1700, but was not published, or communi- cated to the Royal Society, till after Newton's death, when a description of it was found among his papers.

In March 1673 we find Newton taking a somewhat pro- minent part in a dispute in the university. The public oratorship fell vacant, and a contest arose between the heads of the colleges and the members of the senate of the university as to the mode of electing to the office. The heads claimed the right of nominating two persons, one of whom was to be elected by the senate. The senate on the other hand insisted that the proper mode was by an open election. The duke of Buckingham, who was the chancellor of the university, endeavoured to effect a com- promise between the contending parties. He suggested an expedient which, he says, "I hope may for the present satisfy both sides. I propose that the heads may for this time nominate and the body comply, yet interposing (if they think fit) a protestation concerning their plea that this election may not hereafter pass for a decisive pre- cedent in prejudice of their claim," and, " whereas I under- stand that the whole university has chiefly consideration for Dr Paman of St John's and Mr Craven of Trinity College, I do recommend them both to be nominated. For it is very reasonable that in this nomination, before the difference be determined between you, the heads should have regard to the inclination of the body, especially seeing you all agree in two men that are very worthy, and very fit for the place." The heads, notwithstanding this reasonable and conciliatory suggestion of the chancellor, nominated Dr Paman and Mr Ralph Sanderson of St John's, and the next day one hundred and twenty-one members of the senate recorded their votes for Craven and ninety-eight for Paman. On the morning of the election a protest in which Newton's name appeared was read, and entered in the Regent House. But the vice-chancellor admitted Paman the same morning, and so ended the first contest of a non-scientific character in which we find Newton taking part.

On March 8, 1673, Newton wrote to Oldenburg, the secretary of the Royal Society :—

'* Sir, I desire that you will procure that I may be put out from being any longer Fellow of the Royal Society: for though I honour that body, yet since

I see I shall neither profit them, nor (by

reason of this distance) can partake of the advantage of their assemblies, I desire to withdraw."

Oldenburg must have replied to this by an offer to apply to the Society to excuse Newton the weekly payments, as ina letter of Newton's to Oldenburg, dated June 23, 1673, he says, " For your proffer about my quarterly payments, I thank you, but I would not have you trouble yourself to get them excused, if you have not done it already." Nothing further seems to have been done in the matter until January 28, 1675, when Oldenburg informed "the Society that Mr Newton is now in such circumstanccs that he desires to be excused from the weekly payments." Upon this "it was agreed to by the council that he be dispensed with, as several others are." Very soon after this—that is, on February 18, 1675—Newton was formally admitted into the Society. 'The most probable explanation

of the cause why Newton wished to be excused from these payments is to be found in the fact that, as he was not in holy orders, his fellowship at Trinity College would lapse in the autumn of 1675. Itis true that the loss to his income which this would have caused was obviated by a patent from the crown in April 1675, allowing him as Lucasian professor to retain his fellowship without the obligation of taking holy orders. This must have relieved Newton's mind from a great deal of anxiety about pecuniary matters, as we find him so soon after this event as November 1676 subscribing £40 towards the building of the new library of Trinity College.

It is supposed that it was at Woolsthorpe in the summer of 1666 that Newton's thoughts were directed to the subject of gravity. Voltaire is the authority for the well-known anecdote about the apple. He had his information from Newton's favourite niece Catharine Barton, who married Conduitt, a fellow of the Royal Socicty, and one of Newton's intimate friends.' How much truth there is in what is a plausible and a favourite story can never be known, but it is certain that tradition marked a tree as that from which the apple fell, till 1820, when, owing to decay, the tree was cut down and its wood carefully preserved.

Kepler had proved by an elaborate ‘series of measure- ments that each planet revolves in an elliptical orbit round the sun, whose centre occupies one of the foci of the orbit, that the radius vector of each planet drawn from the sun describes equal areas in equal times, and that the squares of the periodic times of the planets are in the same pro- portion as the cubes of their mean distances from the sun. The fact that heavy bodies have always a tendency to fall to the earth, no matter at what height they are placcd above the earth’s surface, seems to have led Newton to conjecture that it was possible that the same tendency to fall to the earth was the cause by which the moon was retained in its orbit round the earth. Newton, by calcu- lating from Kepler’s laws, and supposing the orbits of the planets to be circles round the sun in the centre, had already proved that the force of the sun acting upon the different planets must vary as the inverse square of the distances of the planets from the sun. He therefore was led to inquire whether, if the earth’s attraction extended to the moon, the force at that distance would be of the exact magnitude necessary to retain the moon in its orbit. He found that the moon by her motion in her orbit was deflected from the tangent in every minute of time through a space of thirteen feet. But by observing the distance through which a body would fall in one second of time at the earth’s surface, and by calculating from that on the supposition of the force diminishing in the ratio of the inverse square of the distance, he found that the earth’s attraction at the distance of the moon would draw a body through 15 feet in one minute. A less careful calculator might have been satisfied with the close approximation of these two results ; but Newton, on the contrary, regarded the discrepancy between the results as a proof of the inaccuracy of his conjecture, and ‘‘laid aside at that time any further thoughts of this matter.” The idea thus laid aside was not finally condemned. In 1679 a controversy between Hooke and Newton, about the form of the path of a body falling from a height, taking the motion of the earth round its axis into consideration, led Newton again to revert to his former conjectures on the moon. The measure of the earth, which had hitherto been accepted by gcographers and navigators, was based on the very rough estimate that the length of a degree of latitude of the earth’s surface measured along a meridian was 60 miles. More accurate estimates had been made by Norwood and Snell, and more recently by Picard. At a meeting of

the Royal Society on January 11, 1672, Oldenburg the secretary read a letter from Paris describing the method followed by Picard in measuring a degree, and specifically stating the precise length that he calculated it to be. It is probable that Newton had become acquainted with this measurement of Picard's, and that he was therefore led to make use of it when his thoughts were redirected to the subject. This estimate of the earth's magnitude, giving 69-1 miles to one degree, made the two results, the discrepancy between which Newton had regarded as a disproof of his conjecture, to agree so exactly that he now regarded his conjecture as fully established.

In January 1684 Sir Christopher Wren, Halley, and Hooke were led to discuss the law of gravity, and, although probably they all agreed in the truth of the law of the inverse square, yet this truth was not looked upon as established. It appears that Hooke professed to have a solution of the problem of the path of a body moving round a centre of force attracting as the inverse square of the distance ; but Halley, finding, after a delay of some months, that Hooke "had not been so good as his word" in showing his solution to Wren, started in the month of August 1684 for Cambridge to consult Newton on the subject. Without mentioning the speculations which had been made, he went straight to the point and asked Newton what would be the curve described by a planet round the sun on the assumption that the sun's force diminished as the square of the distance. Newton replied promptly, "an ellipse," and on being questioned by Halley as to the reason for his answer he replied, "'Why, I have calculated it." He could not, however, put his hand upon his calculation, but he promised to send it to Halley. After the latter had left Cambridge, Newton set to work to reproduce the calculation. After making a mistake and producing a different result he corrected his work and obtained his former result.

In the following November Newton redeemed his promise to Halley by sending him, by the hand of Mr Paget, one of the fellows of his own college, and at that time mathe- matical master of Christ's Hospital, a copy of his demon- stration ; and very soon afterwards Halley paid another visit to Cambridge to confer with Newton about the problem ; and on his return

to London on December 10, 1684, he informed the Royal Society "that he had lately seen Mr Newton at Cambridge, who had showed him a curious treatise De Motu," which at Halley's desire he promised to send to the Society to be entered upon their register. 'Mr Halley was desired to put Mr Newton in mind of his promise for the securing this invention to himself, till such time as he could be at leisure to publish it," and Paget was desired to join with Halley in urging Newton to do so. Newton was not slow in responding to the wish of the Society. By the middle of February he had sent his paper to Aston, one of the secretaries of the Society, and in a letter to Aston dated February 23, 1685, we find Newton thanking him for "having entered on the register his notions about motion." Newton adds, "I designed them for you before now, but the examining several things has taken a greater part of my tithe than | expected, and a great deal of it to no purpose. And now I am to go to Lincolnshire for a month or six weeks, Afterwards I intend to finish it as soon as I can con- veniently." This treatise De Motu was the germ of the Principia, and was obviously meant to be a short account of what that work was intended to embrace. It occupies twenty-four octavo pages, and consists of four theorems and seven problems, some of which are identical with some of the most important propositions of the second and third sections of the first book of the Principia.

The years 1685 and 1686 will ever be memorable in the history of science. It was in them that Newton composed

N Lew 7 ON

almost the whole of his great work. During this period Newton had a very extensive correspondence with Flamsteed, who was then the astronomer-royal. Many of the letters are' lost, but it is clear from one of Newton's, dated September 19, 1685, that he had received many useful communications from Flamsteed, and especially regarding Saturn, ''whose orbit, as defined by Kepler," Newton "found too little for the sesquialterate propor- tions." In the other letters written in 1685 and 1686 he applies to Flainsteed for information respecting the orbits of the satellites of Jupiter and Saturn, respecting the rise and fall of the spring and neap tides at the solstices and the equinoxes, respecting the flattening of Jupiter at the poles

(which, if certain, he says, would conduce much to the stating the reasons of the precession of the equinoxes), and respecting the difference between the observed places of Saturn and those computed from Kepler's tables about the time of his conjunction with Jupiter. On this last point the information supplied by Flamsteed was peculiarly gratifying to Newton; and it is obvious from the language of this part of his letter that he had still doubts of the universal application of the sesquialteral proportion. "Your information," he says, 'about the errors of Kepler's tables for Jupiter and Saturn has eased me of several scruples. I was apt to suspect there might be some cause or other unknown to me which might disturb the sesqui- alteral proportions, for the influences of the planets one upon another seemed not great enough, though I imagined Jupiter's influence greater than your numbers determine it. It would add to my satisfaction if you would be pleased to let me know the long diameters of the orbits of Jupiter and Saturn, assigned by yourself and Mr Halley in your new tables, that I may see how the sesquialteral proportion fills the heavens, together with another small proportion which must be allowed for."

Upon Newton's return from Lincolnshire in the begin- ning of April 1685, he seems to have devoted himself to the preparation of his work. In the spring he had determined the attractions of masses, and thus completed the law of universal gravitation. In the summer he had finished the second book of the Principia, the first book being the treatise De Motu, which he had enlarged and completed. Excepting in the correspondence with Flamsteed, to which we have already referred, we hear nothing more of the preparation of the Principia until April 21, 1686, when Halley read to the Royal Society his Discourse concerning Gravity and its Properties, in which he states "that his worthy countryman Mr Isaac Newton has an incomparable treatise of motion almost ready for the press," and that the law of the inverse square "is the principle on which Mr Newton has made out all the phenomena of the celestial motions so easily and naturally, that its truth is past dispute." The intelligence thus given by Halley was speedily confirmed. At the very next meeting of the Society, on April 28, " Dr Vincent presented to the Society a manuscript treatise entitled Philosophiex Naturalis Principia Mathematica, and dedicated to the Society by Mr Isaac Newton." Although this manuscript contained only the first book, yet such was the confidence the Society placed in the author that an order was given "that a letter of

thanks be written to Mr Newton ; and that the printing of his book be referred to the consideration of the council; and that in the meantime the book be put into the hands of Mr Halley, to make a report thereof to the council." Although there could be no doubt as to the intention of this report, yet no step was taken towards the publication of the work. At the next meeting of the Society, on May 19, some dissatisfaction seems to have been expressed at the delay, as it was ordered "that Mr Newton's work should be printed forthwith in quarto, and

NE W

that a letter should be written to him to signify the Society's resolutions, and to desire his opinion as to the print, volume, cuts, and so forth." Three days afterwards, namely, on May 22, Halley communicated the resolution to Newton, and stated to him that the printing was to be at the charge of the Society. At the next meeting of the council, on June 2, it was again ordered "that Mr Newton's book be printed," but, instead of sanctioning the resolution of the general meeting to print it at their charge, they added "that Mr Halley undertake the business of looking after it, and printing it at his own charge, which he engaged to do."

In order to explain to Newton the cause of the delay, Halley in his letter of May 22 alleges that it arose from '"'"the president's attendance on the king, and the absence of the vice-presidents, whom the good weather had drawn out of town"; but there is reason to believe that this was not the true cause, and that the unwillingness of the council to undertake the publication arose from the state of the finances of the Society. Halley certainly deserves the gratitude of posterity for undertaking the publication of the work at a very considerable pecuniary risk to him- self. Halley in his letter to Newton of May 22, found it necessary to inform him of Hooke's conduct when the manuscript of the Principia was presented to the Society. Sir John Hoskyns was in the chair when Dr Vincent presented the manuscript, and passed a high encomium on the novelty and dignity of the subject. Hooke was offended because Sir John did not mention what he had told him of his own discovery. Halley only communicated to Newton the fact "that Hooke had some pretensions to the invention of the rule for the decrease of gravity being reciprocally as the squares of the distances from the centre,"

acknowledging at the same time that, though Newton had the notion from him, ‘yet the demonstration of the curves generated thereby belonged wholly to Newton.” “ How much of this,” Halley adds, ‘is so, you know best, so like- wise what you have to do in this matter; only Mr Hooke seems to expect you should make some mention of him in the preface, which ’tis possible you may see reason to prefix. I must beg your pardon that ’tis I that send you this ungrateful account ; but I thought it my duty to let you know it, so that you might act accordingly, being in mnyself fully satisfied that nothing but the greatest candour imaginable is to be expected from a person who has of all men the least need to borrow reputation.”

In thus appealing to Newton’s candour, Halley obviously wished that some acknowledgment of Hooke should be made. He knew indeed, that before Newton had announced the inverse law Hooke and Wren and himself had spoken of it and discussed it, and therefore justice demanded that, though none of them had given a demonstration of the law, Hooke especially should receive credit for having maintained it as a truth of which he was seeking the demonstration. On June 20, 1686, Newton wrote to Halley the following letter :—

‘Sir,—In order to let you know the case between Mr Hooke and me, I give you an account of what passed between us in our letters, so far as I could remember; for ’tis long since they were writ, and I do not know that I have seen them since. I am almost confident by circumstances, that Sir Chr. Wren knew the duplicate proportion when I gave him a visit; and then Mr Hooke (by his book Cometa written afterwards) will prove the last of us three that knew it. I intended in this letter to let you understand the case fully; but it being a frivolous business, I shall content myself to give you the heads of it in short, viz., that I never extended the duplicate proportion lower than to the superficies of the earth, and before a certain demonstration I found the last year, have suspected it did not reach accurately enough down so low; and therefore in the doctrine of projectiles never used it nor considered the motions of the hcavens; and consequently Mr Hooke could not from my letters, which were about projectiles and the regions descending hence to the centre, conclude me ignorant of the theory of the heavens. That what he told me of the duplicate proportion

was erroneous, uamely, that it reached down from hence to the centre of the earth.

‘‘That it is not candid to require me now to confess myself, in print, then ignorant of the duplicate proportion in the heavens; tor no other reason, but because he had told it me in the case of projectiles, and so upon mistaken grounds accused me of that ignorance. That in my answer to his first letter I refused his correspondence, told him I had laid philosophy aside, sent him only the experiment of projectiles (rather shortly hinted than carefully described), in compliment to sweeten my answer, expected to hear no further from him; could scarce persuade myself to answer his second letter ; did not answer his third, was upon other things; thought no further of philosophical matters than his letters put me upon it, and therefore may be allowed not to have had my thoughts of that kind about me so well at that time. That by the same reason he concludes me then ignorant of the rest of the duplicate proportion, he may as well conclude me ignorant of the rest of that theory I had read before in his books. That in one of my papers writ (I cannot say in what year, but I anf sure some time before I had any correspondence with Mr Oldenburg, and that ’s) above fifteen ycars ago, the proportion of the forces of the planets from the sun, reciprocally duplicate of their distances from him, is expressed, and the proportion of our gravity to the moon’s conatus recedendi a centro terre is calculated, though not accurately enough. That when Hugenius put out his Horol. Oscil., a copy being presented to me, in my letter of thanks to him I gave those rules in the end thereof a particular commendation for their usefulness in Philosophy, and added out of my aforesaid paper an instance of their usefulness, in comparing the forces of the moon from the earth, and earth from the sun; in determining a problem about the moon’s phase, and putting a limit to the sun’s parallax, which shews that I had then my cye upon comparing the forces of the planets arising from their circular motion, and understood it ; so that a while after, when Mr Hooke propounded the problem solemnly, in the end of his attempt to prove the motion of the earth, if I had not known the duplicate proportion before, I could not but have found it now. Between ten and eleven years ago there was an hypothesis of mine registered in your books, wherein I hinted a cause of gravity towards the earth, sun, and

planets, with the dependence of the celestial motions thereon ; in which the proportion of the decrease of gravity from the superficies of the planet (though for brevity's sake not there expressed) can be no other than reciprocally duplicate of the distance from the centre. And I hope I shall not be urged to declare, in print, that I under- stood not the obvious mathematical condition of my own hypo- thesis. But grant I received it afterwards from Mr Hooke, yet have I as great a right to it as to the cllipsis. For as Kepler knew the orb to be not circular but oval, and guessed it to be elliptical, so Mr Hooke, without knowing what I have found ont since his letters to me, can know no more, but that the proportion was duplicate quam proximé at great distances from the centre, and only guessed it to be so accurately, and guessed amiss in extending that proportion down to the very centre, whereas Kepler guessed right at the ellipsis. And so Mr Hooke found less of the proportion than Kepler of the ellipsis.

'¢There is so strong an objection against the accurateness of this proportion, that without my demonstrations, to which Mr Hooke is yet a stranger, it cannot be believed by a judicious philosopher to be any where accurate. And so, in stating this business, I do pretend to have done as much for the proportion as for the ellipsis, and to have as much right to the one from Mr Hooke and all men, as to the other from Kepler; and therefore on this account also he must at least moderate his pretences.

'¢The proof you sent me I like very well. I designed the whole to consist of three books; the second was finished last suininer being short, and only wants transcribing, and drawing the cuts fairly. Some new propositions I have since thought on, which I can as well let alone. The third wants the theory of comets. In autumn last I spent two months in calculations to no purpose for want of a good method, which made me afterwards return to the first book, and enlarge it with divers propositions, some relating to comets, others to other things, found out last winter. The third I now design to suppress. Philosophy is such an impertinently litigious lady, that a man has as good be engaged in lawsuits, as have to do with her. I found it so formerly, and now I am no sooncr come near her again, but she gives me warning. The two first books, without the third, will not so well bear the title of Philosophiz Naturalis Principia Mathematica; and therefore I had altered it to this, De Motu Corporum libri duo. : i

‘*But, upon second thoughts, I retain the former title. “Twill help the sale of the book, which I ought not to diminish now ’tis yours. The articles are, with the largest, to be called by that name; if you please you may change the word to sections, though it be not material. In the first page, I have struck out the words ‘uti posthac doccbitur,’ as referring to the third book; which is all at present, from your affectionate friend, and humble servant,

‘Is. NEWTON.”

444

On June 29, 1686, Halley wrote to Newton:—‘‘I am heartily sorry that in this matter, wherein all mankind ought to acknowledge their obligations to you, you should meet with anything that should give you unquiet”; and then, after an account of Hooke’s claim to the discovery as made at a meeting of the Royal Society, in which he says, ‘As to the manner of Mr Hooke’s claiming the discovery, I fear it has been represented in worse colours than it ought ; for he neither made public application to the Society for justice, nor pretended you had all from him,” he concludes :—

‘* But I found that they were all of opinion that nothing thereof appearing in print, nor on the books of the Society, you ought to be cousidered as the inventor. And if in truth he knew it before you, he ought not to blame any but himself for having taken no more care to sccure a discovery, which he puts so much value on. What application he has made in private, I know not; but I am sure that the Society have a very great satisfaction, in the honour you do them, by the dedication of so worthy a treatise. Sir, I must now again beg you, not to let your resentments run so high, as to deprive us of your third book, wherein the application of your mathematical doctrine to the theory of comets and several curious experiments, which, as I guess by what you write, ought to com- pose it, will undoubtedly render it acceptable to thosc, who will call themselves Philosophers without Mathematics, which are much the greater number. Now you approve of the character and paper, I will push on the edition vigorously. I have sometimes had thoughts of having the cuts neatly done in wood, so as to stand in the page with the demonstrations. It will be more convenient, and not much more charge. If it please you to have it so, I will try how well it can be done; otherwise I will have them in somewhat a larger size than those you

have seut up.—I am, Sir, your most affectionate humble servant, KE. HAuLeEy."

On June 30, 1686, the president was desired by the council to license Mr Newton's book, entitled Philosophizx Naturalis Principia Mathematica.

On July 14, 1686, Newton wrote to Halley approving of his proposal to introduce woodeuts among the letter- press, stating clearly the different things which he had from Hooke, and adding, "And now having sincerely told you the case between Mr Hooke and me, I hope I shall be free for the future from the prejudice of his letters. I have considered how best to compose the present dispute, and I think it may be done by the inclosed scholium to the fourth proposition." This scholium was—" The inverse law of gravity holds in all the celestial motions, as was discovered also independently by my countrymen Wren, Hooke, and Halley." After this letter of Newton's the printing of the Principia was commenced, and went on with considerable regularity. The second book, though ready for the press in the autumn of 1686, was not sent to the printers until March 1687. The third book was presented to the Society on April 6, 1687, and the whole work published about midsummer in that year. It was dedicated to the Royal Society, and to it was prefixed a set of Latin hexameters addressed by Halley to the author. The work, as might have been expected, caused a great deal of excitement throughout Europe, and the whole of the impression was very soon sold. In 1691 a copy of the Principia was hardly to be procured.

While Newton was writing the second and third books of the Principia, a very important event occurred at Cambridge which had the effect of bringing him before the public in a new light. James IT. had already, in 1686, in open violation of the law, conferred the deanery of Christ Church at Oxford on John Massey, a person whose sole qualification was that he was a member of the Church of Rome; and the king had boasted to the pope's legate that "what he had done at Oxford would very soon be done at Cambridge." In accordance with this boast, in February 1687, he issued a mandate directing that Father Alban Francis, a Benedictine monk, should be admitted a master of arts of the university of Cambridge, without taking the oaths of allegiance and supremacy. Upon

receiving the mandamus Magdalene

NEWTON

Dr Pechell, the master of College, who was vice-chancellor, sent a messenger to the duke of Albemarle, the chancellor, to

request him to get the mandamus recalled; and the registrary and the bedells waited upon Francis to offer him instant admission to the degree if only he would take the necessary oaths. inexorable. The court and the university were thus placed in open collision.

Both the king and the monk were

A menacing letter was despatched by Sunderland to shake the firmness of the university ; but, though humble and respectful explanations were returned, the university showed no sign of compliance, nor even of a desire to suggest a compromise. In conse- quence the vice-chancellor and deputies from the senate were summoned to appear before the High Commission Court at Westminister. Newton was one of the eight deputies appointed by the senate for this purpose. The deputies, before starting for London, held a meeting to prepare their case for the court. A compromise which was put forward by one of them was stoutly and success- fully resisted by Newton, and ou April 21 the deputation, with their case carefully prepared, appeared before the court. Jeffreys presided at the board. The deputation appeared as a matter of course before the commissioners, and were dismissed. On April 27 they gave in their plea. On May 7 it was discussed, and feebly defended by the vice-chancellor. The deputies maintained that in the late reign several royal mandates had been withdrawn, and that no degree had ever been conferred without the oaths having been previously taken. Jeffreys spoke with his accus- tomed insolence to the vice-chancellor, silenced the other deputies when they offered to speak, and ordered them out of court. When recalled the deputies were reprimanded, and Pechell was deprived of his office as vice-chancellor, and of his emoluments as master of Magdalene. From the precincts of the High Commission Court Newton returned to Trinity College to complete the Principia.

At the time when Newton was writing the latter part of this great work, he had an extensive correspondence with Halley, a very great part of which is extant. The fol- lowing letter from Halley, dated London, July 5, 1687, announcing the completion of the Principia, is of peculiar interest :—

“T have at length brought your book to an end, and hope it will please you. The last errata came just in time to be inserted. I will present from you the book you desire to the Royal Society, Mr Boyle, Mr Paget, Mr Flamsteed, and if there be any else in town that you design to gratify that way; and 1 have sent you to bestow on your friends in the University 20 copies, which I entreat you to accept. In the same parcel you will receive 40 more, which having no acquaintance in Cambridge, I must entreat you to put into the hands of one or more of your ablest booksellers to dispose of them. I intend the price of them, bound in calves’ leather, and lettered, to be 9 shillings here. Those I send you I value in quires at 6 shillings, to take my money as they are sold, or at 552 for ready, or else at some short time; for I am satisfied there is no dealing in books without interesting the booksellers; and I am contented to let them go halves with me, rather than have your excellent work smothered by their combinations. I hope you will not repent you of the pains you have taken in so laudable a piece, so much to your own and the nation’s credit, but rather, after you shall have a little diverted yourself with other studies, that you will resume those contemplations wherein you had so great suc- cess, and attempt the perfection of the lunar theory, which will be of prodigious use in navigation, as well as of profound and public speculation. Sir, I shall be glad to hear that you have received the books, and to know what farther presents you wish in town, which shall be accordingly done. You will receive a box from me on Thursday next by the waggon, that starts from town to-morrow.”

In 1692 and 1693 Newton seems to have had a serious illness, the nature of which has in late years given rise to very considerable dispute. In a letter dated September 13, 1693, addressed to Mr Pepys, he writes:—

“Some time after Mr Millington had delivered your message, he

| pressed me to see you the next time I went to London. I was

NE W

averse, but upon his pressing consented, before I considered what I did, for I am extremely troubled at the embroilment I am in, and have neither ate nor slept well this twelvemonth, nor have my former consistency of mind. I never designed to get any thing by your interest, nor by King James's favour, but am now sensible that I must withdraw from your acquaintance, and see neither you nor the rest of my friends any more, if I may but have them quietly. I beg your pardon for saying I would see you again, and rest your most humble and obedient servant."

And in a letter written to Locke in reply to one of his about the second edition of his book. and dated October

15, 1693, Newton wrote:—

"The last winter, by sleeping too often by my fire, I got an ill habit of sleeping; and a distemper, which this summer has been epidemical, put me farther out of order, so that when I wrote to you, I had not slept an hour a night for a fortnight together, and for five days together not a wink. I remember I wrote to you, but what I said of your book I remember not. If you please to send me a transcript of that passage, I will give you an account of it if I can."

These letters of Newton are sufficient evidence that he must have been for a very considerable time seriously unwell. The loss of sleep to a person of Newton's temperament, whose mind was never at rest, and at times so wholly engrossed in his scientific pursuits that he even neglected to take food, must necessarily have led to a very great deal of nervous excitability. It is not astonishing that rumours got abroad that there was a danger of his mind giving way, or, according to a report which was believed at the time, that it had actually done so. Mr Pepys must have heard such rumours, as in a letter to his friend Mr Millington, the tutor of Magdalene College at Cambridge, dated September 26, 1693, he wrote :—

'"'T must acknowledge myself not at the ease I would be glad to be at in reference to excellent Mr Newton; concerning whom (methinks) your answer labours under the same kind of restraint which (to tell you the truth) my asking did. For I was loth at first dash to tell you that I had lately received a letter from him so surprising to me for the inconsistency of every

part of it, as to be put into great disorder by it, from the concernment I have for him, lest it should arise from that which of all mankind I should least dread from him and most lament for,—I mean a discomposure in head, or mind, or both. Let me, therefore, beg you, Sir, having now told you the true ground of the trouble I lately gave you, to let me know the very truth of the matter, as far at least as comes within your knowledge. For I own too great an esteem for Mr Newton, as for a public good, to be able to let any doubt in me of this kind concerning him lie a moment uncleared, where I can have any hopes of helping it."

On September 30, 1693, Mr Millington wrote to Mr Pepys that he had been to look for Newton some time

before, but that "he was out of town, and since," he says,

'*T have not seen him, till upon the 28th I met him at Hunting- don, where, upon his own accord, and before I had time to ask him any question, he told me that he had writt to you a very odd letter, at which he was much concerned: added, that it was in a distemper that much scized his head, and that kept him awake for above five nights together, which upon occasion he desired I would represent to you, and beg your pardon, he being very much ashamed he should be so rude to a person for whom he hath so great an honour. He is now very well, and though I fear he is under some small degree of melancholy, yet I think there is no reason to suspect it hath at all touched his understanding, and I hope never will; and so I am sure all ought to wish that love learning or the honour of our nation, which it is a sign how much it is looked after, when such a person as Mr Newton lyes so neglected by those in power. And thus, honoured Sir, I have made you acquainted with all I know of the cause of such inconsist- encys in the letter of so excellent a person; and I hope it will remove the doubts and fears you are, with so much compassion and publickness of spirit, pleased to entertain about Mr Newton, but if I should have been wanting in any thing tending to the more full satisfaction, I shall, upon the least notice, endeavour to amend it with all gratitude and truth."

The illness of Newton was very much exaggerated by foreign contemporary writers. In a manuscript journal of Huygens is to be found an entry :—

‘©29 Maj. 1694.—Narravit mihi D. Colm Scotus virum celeber- rimum ac summum gcometram Is. Neutonum in phrenesin

incidisse abhinc anno ct sex mensibus. An ex nimia studii assiduitate, an dolore infortunii, quod incendio laboratorium

FON 445

chymicum et scripta quedam amiserat? Cum ad Archiepiscopum Cantabrigiensem venisset, ea locutum, que alienationem mentis indicarent. Dcinde ab amicis curam ejus susceptam, domoque clauso remedia volenti nolenti adhibita, quibus jam sanitatem recuperavit ut jam rursus librum suum Principiorum Philosophie Mathemati- corum intelligere incipiat.”

Huygens, in a letter dated June 8, 1694, wrote to Leibnitz, “I do not know if you are acquainted with the accident which has happened to the good Mr Newton, namely, that he has had an attack of phrenitis, which lasted eighteen months, and of which they say his friends have cured him by means of remedies, and keeping him shut up.” To which Leibnitz, in a letter dated June 22, replied, “I am very glad that I received information of the cure of Mr Newton at the same time that I first heard of his illness, which doubtless must have been very alarming.”

The active part which Newton had taken in defending the legal privileges of the university against the encroach- ments of the crown had probably at least equal weight with his scientific reputation when his friends chose him as a candidate for a seat in parliament as one of the repre- sentatives of the university. The other candidates were Sir Robert Sawyer and Mr Finch. Sir Robert stood at the head of the poll with 125 votes, Newton next with 122, and Mr Finch was last with 117 votes. Newton retained his seat only about a year, from January 1689 till the dis- solution of the Convention Parliament in February 1690. During this time Newton does not appear to have taken part in any of the debates in the House; but he was not neglectful of his duties as a member. On April 30, 1689, he moved for leave to bring in a Bill to settle the charters and privileges of the university of Cambridge, just as Sir Thomas Clarges did for Oxford at the same time, and he wrote a series of letters to Dr Lovel, the vice-chancellor of the university, on points which affected the interests of the university and its members.

Some of the members of the university who had lately sworn allegiance to James had some difficulty in swearing allegiance to his successor. On February 12, 1689, the day of the coronation of William and Mary, Newton intimated to the vice-chancellor that he would soon receive an order to proclaim them at Cambridge. He enclosed a form of the proclamation, and expressed a hearty "wish that the university would so compose themselves as to perform the solemnity with a reasonable decorum."

During his residence in London Newton had made the acquaintance of John Locke. Locke had taken a very great interest in the new theories of the Principia. He was one of a number of Newton's friends who began to be uneasy and dissatisfied at seeing the most eminent scientific man of his age left to depend upon the meagre emoluments of a college fellowship and a professorship.

At one time Newton's friends had nearly succeeded in getting him appointed provost of King's College, Cambridge, but the college offered a successful resistance on the ground that the appointment would be illegal, as the statutes required that the provost should be in priest's orders. Charles Montague, who was afterwards earl of Halifax, was a fellow of Trinity College, and was a very intimate friend of Newton's ; and it was on his influence that Newton relied in the main for promotion to some post of honour and emolument. His hopes, however, were blighted by long delay. In one of his letters to Locke at the beginning of the year 1692, when Montague, Lord Monmouth, and Locke were exerting themselves to obtain some appointment for him, Newton wrote that he was "fully convinced that Mr Montague, upon an old grudge which he thought had been worn out, was false to him." Newton was now in his fifty-fifth year, and whilst those of his own standing at the university had been appointed

to high posts in church or state, he still remained without any mark of national gratitude. But this blot upon the English name was at last removed by Montague in 1694, when he was appointed chancellor of the exchequer. He had previously consulted Newton upon the subject of the recoinage, and on the opportunity occurring he appointed Newton to the post of warden of the mint. In a letter to Newton announcing the news, Montague writes :—

‘“‘I am very glad that at last I can give you a good proof of my friendship, and the csteem the king has of your merits. Mr Over- ton, the warden of the mint, is made one of the Commissioners of Customs, and the king has promised me to make Mr Newton warden of the mint. The office is the most proper for you. ’Tis the chief office in the mint: ’tis worth five or six hundred pounds per annum, and has not too much business to require more attend- ance than you can spare.”

This letter must have convinced Newton of the sincerity of Montague’s good intentions towards him; we find them living as friends on the most intimate terms until Halifax’s death in 1715.

The chemical and mathematical knowledge of Newton proved of great use in carrying out the recoinage. This was completed in about two years, and such was the zeal and devotion with which Newton discharged the laborious duties of his office that he was in 1697 appointed to the mastership of the mint, a post worth between £1200 and £1500 perannum. While he held the latter office, Newton drew up a very extensive table of assays of foreign coins, and composed an official report on the coinage,

Up to the time of the publication of the Principia in 1687 the method of fluxions which had been invented by Newton, and had been of great assistance to him in his mathematical investigations, was still, except to Newton and his friends, a secret. One of the most important rules of the method forms the second lemma of the second book of the Principia. Though this new and powerful method was of great help to Newton in his work, he did hot exhibit it in the results. He was aware that the well- known geometrical methods of the ancients would clothe his new creations in a garb which would appear less strange and uncouth to those not familiar with the new method. The Principia gives no information on the subject of the notation adopted in the new calculus, and it was not until 1693 that it was communicated to the scientific world in the second volume of Dr Wallis’s works,

Newton’s admirers in Holland had informed Dr Wallis that Newton’s method of fluxions passed there under the name of Leibnitz’s Calculus Differentialis. It was there- fore thought necessary that an early opportunity should be taken of asserting Newton’s claim:to be the inventor of the

method of fluxions, and this was the reason for this method first appearing in Wallis's works. A further account of the method was given in the first edition of Newton's Optics, which appeared in 1704. To this work were added two treatises, entitled Zractatus duo de speciebus et magnitudine Jjigurarum curvilinearum, the one bearing the title Tractatus de Quadratura Curvarum, and the other Enumeratio linearum tertiz ordinis. The first contains an explanation of the doctrine of fluxions, and of its application to the quadrature of curves; the second, a classification of seventy-two curves of the third order, with an account of their properties. The reason for publishing these two tracts in his Optics, from the subsequent editions of which they were omitted, is thus stated in the advertisement :—

'"'In a letter written to M. Leibnitz in the year 1679, and published by Dr Wallis, I mentioned a method by which I had found some general theorems about squaring curvilinear figutes on comparing them with the conic Sections, or other the simplest figures with which they might be compared. And some years ago I lent outa manuscript containing such theorems ; and having since met with some things copied out of it, I have on this occasion made

|

it public, prefixing to it an introduction, and joining a Scholium concerning that method. And I have joined with it another small tract concerning the curvilineal figures of the second kind, which was also writtcn many years ago, and made known to some friends, who have solicited the making it public."

In the year 1707 Whiston published the algebraical lectures which Newton had delivered at Cambridge, under the title of Arithmetica Universalis, sive de Compositione et fiesolutione Arithmetica Liber. We are not accurately informed how Whiston obtained possession of this work Z but it is stated by one of the editors of the English edition "that Mr Whiston, thinking it a pity that so noble and useful a work should be doomed to a college confinement, obtained Icave to make it public." It was soon afterwards translated into English by Mr Raphson ; and a second edition of it, with improvements by

the author, was published at London in 1712, by Dr Machin, secretary to the Royal Society. With the view of stimu- lating mathematicians to write annotations on this ad- mirable work, the celebrated ’S Gravesande published a tract, entitled Specimen Commentarii in Arithmeticam Universalem ; and Maclaurin’s Algebra seems to have been drawn up in consequence of this appeal.

In mentioning the mathematical works of our author, we must not omit his solution of the celebrated problems proposed by John Bernoulli and Leibnitz. In June 1696 Bernoulli addressed a letter to the mathematicians of Europe challenging them to solve two problems—(1) to determine the brachistochrone between two given points not in the same vertical line, (2) to determinea curve such that, if a straight line drawn through a fixed point A meet it in two points P,, P,, then AP,™+ AP,™ will be constant. This challenge was first made in the Acta Lipsiensia for June 1696. Six months were allowed by Bernoulli for the solution of the problem, and in the event of none being sent to him he promised to publish his own. The six months elapsed without any solution being produced ; but he received a letter from Leibnitz, stating that he had: “cut the knot of the most beautiful of these problems,” and requesting that the period for their solution should be extended to Christmas next, that the French and Italian mathematicians might have no reason to complain of the shortness of the period. Bernoulli adopted the sugges- tion, and publicly announced the prorogation for the infor- mation of those who might not see the Acta Lipsiensia.

On the 29th January 1696-97 Newton received from France two copies of the printed paper containing the problems, and on the following day he transmitted a solu- tion of them to Montague, then president of the Royal Society. He announced that the curve required in the first problem must be a cycloid, and he gave a method of determining it. He solved also the second problem, and he showed that by the same method other curves might be found which shall cut off three or more segments having the like properties. Solutions were also obtained from Leibnitz and the Marquis de L’Hopital ; and, although that of Newton was anonymous, yet Bernoulli recognized the author in his disguise ; “tanquam,” says he, “ex ungue leonem.”

In the year 1699 Newton’s position as a mathematician and natural philosopher of the first order were recog- nized in a very honourable manner by the French Academy of Sciences. In that year the Academy was remodelled, and eight foreign associates were created. Leibnitz, Guglielmini, Hartsoeker, and Tschirnhausen were appointed on February 4, James Bernoulli and John Bernoulli on February 14, and Newton and Roemer on February 21,

While Newton held the office of warden of the mint, he retained his chair of mathematics at Cambridge, and dis- charged the duties of the post, but shortly after he was

Newer © ®

447

promoted to the more lucrative office of master of the mint | donnera encore quelque chose sur le mouvement de la lune:

he appointed Whiston his deputy with “the full profits of the place.” Whiston began his astronomical lectures as Newton’s deputy in January 1701. On December 10, 1701, Newton resigned his professorship, thereby at the same time resigning his fellowship at Trinity, which he had held with the Lucasian professorship since 1675 by virtue of the royal mandate. Whiston’s claims to succeed Newton in the Lucasian chair were successfully supported by Newton himself.

On November 26, 1701, Newton was again elected one of the representatives of the university in parliament, but he retained his seat only until the dissolution in the follow- ing July. Newton does not seem to have been a candidate at this election, but at the next dissolution in 1705 he was again a candidate for the representation of the university. He was warmly supported by the residents, but being a Whig in politics he was opposed by the non-residents, and beaten by a large majority.

In the autumn of 1703 Lord Somers retired from the post of president of the Royal Society, and Newton on November 30, 1703, was elected to succeed him. Newton was annually re-elected to this honourable post during the

remainder of his life. He held the office in all twenty-five years, a period in which he has been exceeded by but one other president of the Royal Society, Sir Joseph Banks. As president Newton was brought into close connexion with Prince George of Denmark, the queen's husband, who had been elected a fellow of the Royal Society. The prince had offered, on Newton's recommendation, to be at the expense of printing Flamsteed's observations, and especially his catalogue of the stars. It was natural that the queen should form a high opinion of one whose merits had made such a deep impression on her husband, and she took an early opportunity of publicly showing the respect she had for his geniusand character. In April 1705, when the queen, the prince, and the court were staying at the royal residence at Newmarket, they paid a visit to Cambridge, where they were the guests of Dr Bentley, the master of Trinity. Her Majesty went in state to the Regent House, where a congregation of the senate was held, and a number of honorary degrees conferred. After- wards the queen held a court at Trinity Lodge, where (April 16, 1705) she conferred the order of knighthood upon the most distinguished of her subjects, the noblest knight who ever won his spurs in science, Sir Isaac Newton.

As soon as the first edition of the Principia was pub- lished Newton began to prepare for a second edition. He was anxious to improve the work by additions to the theory of the motion of the moon and the planets. Dr Edleston, in his preface to Newton's correspondence with Cotes, justly remarks :—

"Tf Flamsteed the Astronomer-Royal had cordially cooperated with him in the humble capacity of an observer in the way that Newton pointed out and requested of him (and for his almost unpardonable omission to do so I know of no better apology that can be offered than that he did not understand the real nature and, consequently, the importanee of the researches in which Newton was engaged, his purely empirical and tabular views never having been replaced in his mind by a clear eonception of the Principle of Uni- versal Gravitation), the lunar theory would, if its ereator did not overrate his own powers, have been completely investigated, so far as he could do it, in the first few months of 1695, and a second edition of the Princtpia would probably have followed the execution of the task at no long interval."

Newton, however, could not get the information he wanted from Flamsteed, and after the spring of 1696 his time was much occupied by his duties at the mint. Rumours, however, of his work, and of a new edition, were heard from time totime. In February 1700 Leibnitz writes of Newton, “J’ai appris aussi (je ne scai ot!) qu’il

et on m’a dit aussi qu’il y aura une nouvelle édition de ses principes de la nature.”

Dr Bentley, the master of Trinity College, had for a long time urged Newton to give his consent to the republica- tion of the Principia. In the middle of 1708 Newton’s consent was obtained, but it was not till the spring of 1709 that he was prevailed upon to entrust the superintendence of it toa young mathematician of great promise, Roger Cotes, fellow of Trinity College, who had been recently appointed the first Plumian professor of astronomy and experimental philosophy. On May 21, 1709, after having been that day with Newton, Bentley announced this arrangement to Cotes:—‘‘Sir Isaac Newton,” he said, “will be glad to see you in June, and then put into your hands one part of his book corrected for the press.” About the middle of July Cotes went to London, in the expecta- tion doubtless to bring down with him to Cambridge the corrected portion of the Principia. Although Cotes was impatient to begin his work, it was nearly the end of September before the corrected copy was put into his hands.

During the printing of this edition a correspondence went on continuously between Newton and Cotes. On March 31, 1713, when the edition was nearly ready for

publication, Newton wrote to Cotes :— **T heare that Mr Bernoulli has sent a Paper of 40 pages to be

‘published in the Acta Leipsica relating to what I have written upon

the eurve Lines described by Projectiles in resisting Mediums. And therein he partly makes Observations upon what I have written & partly improves it. To prevent being blamed by him or others for any disingenuity in not acknowledging my oversights or slips in the first edition, I believe it will

not be amiss to print next after the old Prefatio ad Lectorem, the following account of this new Edition.

‘In hac secunda Principiorum Hditione, multa sparsim emen- dantur & nonnulla adjieiuntur. In Libri primi Sect. ii. Inventio virium quibus corpora in Orbibus datis revolvi possint, facilior redditur et amplior. In Libri seeundi Sect. vii. Theoria resisten- tie fluidorum accuratius investigatur & novis experimentis confir- matur. In Libro tertio Theoria Lune & Precessio Hquinoctiorum ex Principiis suis plenius deducuntur, et Theoria Cometarum pluribus ct accuratius computatis Orbium exemplis confirmatur.

6698 Mar. 1713. TaN

‘*Tf you write any further Preface, I must not see it, for I find that I shall be examined about it. The cuts for y® Comet of 1680 & 1681 are printed off and will be sent to Dr Bently this week by the Carrier.”

Newton’s desire to have no hand in writing the preface seems to have proceeded from a knowledge that Cotes was proposing to allude to the dispute about the invention of fluxions.! At last, about midsummer 1713, was published the long and impatiently expected second edition of the Principia, and on July 27 Newton waited on the queen to present her with a copy of the new edition.

In 1714 the question of finding the longitude at sea, which had been looked upon as an important one for several years, was brought into prominence by a petition presented to the House of Commons by a number of captains of Her Majesty’s ships and merchant ships and of London merchants. This petition set forth “that the discovery of longitude is of such consequence to Great Britain, for safety of the navy, for merchant ships, as well as of improvement of trade, that for want thereof many ships had been retarded in their voyages, and many lost ; but if due encouragement were proposed by the public for such as shall discover the same, some persons would offer themselves to prove the same before the most proper judges.” The petition was referred to a committee of the House, who called witnesses. Newton appeared before

1 For an aceount of the dispute coneerning the rival elaims of Newton and Leibnitz to be eonsidered the inventor of the method of fluxions or the differential ealculus, and an aeeount of the case as ‘drawn up by a committee of the Royal Soeiety in the Commercium Epistolicum, see INFINITESIMAL CALCULUS, vol. xiii. pp. 8-10.

them and gave evidence. the longitude at sea there had been several projects, true in theory but difficult to execute. He mentioned four:— (1) by a watch to keep time exactly, (2) by the eclipses of Jupiter’s satellites, (3) by the place of the moon, (4) by a new method proposed by Mr Ditton. Newton criticized all the methods, pointing out their weak points, and it is due mainly to his evidence that the committee brought in the report which was accepted by the House, and shortly afterwards was converted into a Bill, passed both Houses, and received the royal assent. The report ran ‘that it is the opinion of this committee that a reward be settled by parliament upon such person or persons as shall discover a more certain and practicable method of ascertaining the longitude than any yet in practice; and the said reward be proportioned to the degree of exactness to which the said method shall reach.” For the history of the conse- quences of this report we must refer to the article Navi- GATION, p. 258 sg. of the present volume.

Sir Isaac Newton was a very popular visitor at the court of George I. The princess of Wales, afterwards Queen Caroline, wife of George IT., took every opportunity of con- versing with him. Having one day been told by Sir Isaac that he had composed a new system of chronology while he was still resident at Cambridge, she requested him to give her a copy. He accordingly drew up an abstract of the system from his papers, and sent it to the princess for her own private use; but he afterwards allowed a copy to be made for the Abbé Conti on the express understanding that it should not be communicated to any other person. The abbé, however, unmindful of his promise not to divulge the system, lent his copy to M. Fréret, an antiquary at Paris, who translated it, and endeavoured to refute it. The translation was printed under the title Abrégé de Chronologie de M. le Chevallier Newton, fait par lui-méme et traduit sur le Manuscrit Anglais. Upon receiving a copy

of this work, Sir Isaac Newton printed, in the Phalosophacal Transactions for 1725, a paper entitled Remarks on the observations made on a Chronological Index of Sir Isaac Newton, translated into French by the observator, and published at Paris. In these remarks Sir Isaac charged the abbé with a breach of promise, and gave a triumphant answer to the objections which Fréret had urged against his system. Father Souciet entered the field in defence of Fréret; and in consequence of this contro- versy Sir Isaac was induced to prepare his larger work, which was published in 1728, after his death, and entitled The Chronology of Ancient Kingdoms amended, to which is prefixed a short Chronicle from the First Memory of Kings os Lurope to the Conquest of Persia by Alexander the

‘reat.

From an early period of his life Newton had paid great attention to theological studies, and it is well known that he had begun to study the subject of the prophecies before the year 1690. M. Biot, with a view of showing that his theological writings were the productions of his dotage, has fixed their date between 1712 and 1719. That Newton’s mind was even then quite clear and powerful is sufficiently proved by his ability to attack the most difficult mathe- matical problems with success. For it was in 1716 that Leibnitz, in a letter to the Abbé Conti, proposed a problem for solution “for the purpose of feeling the pulse of the English analysts.” The problem was to find the orthogonal trajectories of a series of curves represented by a single equation. Newton received this problem about 5 o’clock in the afternoon as he was returning from the mint, but, though he was fatigued with business, he solved the problem the same evening,

One of the most remarkable of Sir Isaac’s theological

NEW TOWN

He stated that for determining | ruptions of the Scripture, in a letter to a friend. This

friend was Mr Locke, who received the letter in November 1690. Sir Isaac seems to have been then anxious for its publication ; but, as the effect of his argument was to deprive the Trinitarians of two passages in favour of the

Trinity, he became alarmed at the probable consequences of such a step. He therefore requested Locke, who was then going to Holland, to get it translated into French, and published on the Continent. Being prevented from going to Holland, Locke copied the manuscript, and sent it, without Newton's name, to Le Clerc, who received it before the 11th of April 1691. On the 20th of January 1692 Le Clere announced to Locke his intention to publish the pamphlet in Latin ; and, upon the intimation of this to Sir Isaac, he entreated him "to stop the translation and impression as soon as he could, for he designed to suppress them." This was accordingly done; but Le Clerc sent the manuscript to the library of the Remonstrants, and it was afterwards published at London in 1754, under the title of Two Letters from Sir Isaac Newton to M. le Clere. This edition is imperfect, and in many places erroneous. Dr Horsley therefore published a genuine one, which is in the form of a single letter to a friend, and was taken from a manuscript in Sir Isaac's own hand.

Sir Isaac Newton left behind him in manuscript a work entitled Observations on the Prophecies of Daniel and the Apocalypse of St John, which was published in London in 1733, in one volume 4to; another work, entitled Lexicon Propheticum, with a dissertation on the sacred cubit of the Jews, which was printed in 1737; and four letters addressed to Bentley, containing some arguments in proof of a Deity, which were published by Cumberland, a nephew of Bentley, in 1756. Sir Isaac also left a Church LMistory complete, a Listory of the Creation, Paradoxical Questions regarding Athanasius, and many divinity tracts.

Newton devoted much of his time to the study of chemistry ; but the greater number of his experiments still remain in manuscript. His Zabula Quantitatum et Graduum Caloris contains a comparative scale of temperature from that of melting ice to that of a small kitchen fire. He wrote also another chemical paper De Natura Acidorum, which has been published by Dr Horsley. Sir Isaac spent much time in the study of the works ot the alchemists. He had diligently studied the works of Jacob Boehme, and there were found amongst his manuscripts copious abstracts from them in his own handwriting. In the earlier part of his life he and his relation Dr Newton of Grantham had put up furnaces, and had wrought for several months in quest of the philosopher's tincture. Among the manuscripts in the

possession of the earl of Portsmouth there are many sheets in Sir Isaac's hand of Flamsteed's Euplication of Hieroglyphic Figures, and in another hand many sheets of William Yworth's Processus Mysteriti Magni Philosophicus.

In the last few years of his life Newton was troubled with incontinence of urine, which was supposed to be due to stone ; but with care he kept the disease under control. In January 1725 he was seized with a violent cough and inflammation of the lungs, which induced him to reside at Kensington ; and in the following month he had a severe attack of gout, which produced a decided improvement in his general health. His duties at the mint were dis- charged by Mr Conduitt, and he therefore seldom went from home. On the 28th of February 1727, feeling well, he went to London to preside at a meeting of the Royal Society ; but the fatigue which attended this duty brought on a violent return of his former complaint, and he returned to Kensington on the 4th of March, when Dr Mead and Dr Chesselden pronounced his disease to be

productions is his Historical Account of Two Notable Cor- | stone. He endured the sufferings of this complaint with

wonderful patience and meekness. He secmed a little better on the 15th of March, and on the 18th he read the newspapers, and conversed with Dr Mead'; but at 6 o'clock in the evening he became insensible, and continued in that state till Monday the 20th of March 1726-7, when he expired without pain between one and two o'clock in the morning, in the eighty-fifth year of his age. His body was removed to London, and on Tuesday the 28th of March it lay in state in the Jerusalem Chamber, and was thence conveyed to Westminster Abbey, where it was buried. Authorities.—Commercium Epistolicum D. Johannis Collins et aliorum de analyst promota: jussu Soctetatis Regiz in lucem editum, &c., 1712 (2d edition, 1722); H. Pemberton, 4 View of Str Isaac Newton's Philosophy, 1728; ¥. Baily, An Aceount of the Rev. John Flamsteed, the -First Astronomer-Royal, &c., 1835; Whewell's History of the Induetive Sciences, 1837; 8. P. Rigaud, Historical Essay on the First Publication of Sir Isaac Newton's Principia, 1838; Edleston, Correspondence of Sir Isaac Newton and Professor Cotes,

&c., 1850; Sir D. Brewster, Memoirs of the Life, Writings, and Discoveries of Sir Isaac Newton, 1855; Lord Brougham and Mr Routh's Analytical View of Sir Isaac Newton's Principia, 1855; Correspondence of Scientific Men of the 17th Century, &c., from the Originals in the Collection of the Earl of Macclesficld, 1841; J. Raphson, History of Fluxions, shewing in a compendious manner the First Rise of and Various Improvements made in that Incompar- able Method, 1715. The collected works of Newton were published in 1779 by Dr Samuel Horsley, ¥F.R.S., under the title Zsaaci New- tont Opera que exstant Onunria. (H. M. T.) NEWTON, Joun (1725-1807), a prominent Evangeli- cal clergyman of the Church of England, and an intimate friend of the poet Cowper, was born in London 24th July 1725. His father, who fora long time was master of a ship in the Mediterranean trade, became in 1748 governor of York Fort, Hudson's Bay, where he died in 1750; his mother, a pious Dissenter, died when he was hardly seven years old. The only time spent by him at school was from his eighth to his tenth year, at Stratford, Essex. When only eleven years of age he joined his father's ship, where he continued to serve under him till' 1742; shortly afterwards he was impressed on board a man-of-war, the "Harwich," where he was made a midshipman. For an attempt to escape while his ship lay off Plymouth he was degraded, and treated with so much severity that when two men from a Guinea ship came aboard the man-of-war off Madeira he was glad to take advantage of the oppor- tunity to exchange into an African trader. At Sierra Leone he left this ship and entered into the service of a slave trader, with whom he remained two years. The hardships he suffered were, however, so severe that he brought them under the notice of his father, by whose directions an English ship called for him in 1747 and brought him to England. Shortly afterwards he became mate on board a Liverpool slave ship, with which he made another voyage to Guinea, returning by the West Indies and Charleston, After his marriage in 1750 he made several similar voyages as master, devoting his leisure time to the im- provement of his education, especially in mathematics, French, and Latin. The state of his health anda grow- ing aversion to the slave trade led him to quit the sea in 1755, when he was appointed tide-surveyor at Liverpool. He now directed his attention to the study of Greek and Hebrew, and in 1758, in consequence of a gradual deepen- ing of his religious convictions which had been going on for years, applied to the archbishop of York for holy orders. This was refused him, but, having had the curacy of Olney offered

to him in April 1764, he was ordained deacon by the bishop of Lincoln, and in June of the following year was ordained priest. About three and a half years after- wards Cowper the poet settledin the parish. An intimate friendship sprung up between them, and they published together the Olney Hymns (1779). They made it a rule to spend four days of the week in one another's company, and were rarely "'seven successive working hours apart."

449

In 1779 Newton left Olney to become rector of St Mary Woolnoth, London, where he laboured with unremitting diligence in visiting and preaching till his death, December

31, 1807.

Like Cowper, Newton held strongly Calvinistic views, although his evangelical fervour allied him closely with the sentiments of Wesley and the Methodists. His enduring fame rests on certain of the Olney Hymms, remarkable for vigour, simplicity, and directness of devotional utterance, which have passed into almost universal currency throughout the Reformed ehurches of English speech. His prose works include an Authentic Narrative of some Interesting and Remarkable Particulars in his own Life, a volume of Sermons (1760), Omicron (a series of lettcrs on religion, 1762), Review of Leclesiastical History (1769), and Cardiphonia (1781); but, though once extensively read, they now, with perhaps the exception of the first-named (a well-told narrative of moral and religious conversion), receive but little attention, and indeed have but little title toa per- manent place in religious literature. A Life of Newton by Richard Cecil, first published in 1808, was prefixed to a collected edition of his works which appeared in 6 vols., 1816. Many subsequent editions of his works have been published.

NEWTON ABBOT anp NEWTON BUSHEL, situated respectively in the parishes of Wolborough and Highweek, and separated by the small river Lemon, are generally included under the one name Newton Abbot, a market- town of Devonshire, England, on the Teign, 5 miles south by west of Teignmouth, and 6 north of Torquay. The beauty of the neighbouring scenery and the salubrity of the climate have tended of late years to increase

the demand for residences, while the situation of the town at the head of the Teign navigation enables it to carry ona considerable shipping trade. St Mary's, the parish church of Wolborough, about half a mile south of the town, is in the Perpendicular style, as is also the parish church of Highweek, about a mile to the north-west. A very ex- tensive nunnery, called St Augustine's Priory, was erected near the town in 1861. To the east of the town is Forde House, an Elizabethan structure belonging to the earl of Devon, visited by Charles I. and William of Orange. The other principal buildings are the union workhouse, the town-hall, and the markets. There are two fine public parks, Courtenay Park and Forde Park. The town pos- sesses iron foundries, malt-houses, flour-mills, a tannery, and a brewery. The engine-works of the Great Western Railway have lately been established in the town. Fine potters' clay and pipeclay are obtained in the neighbour- hood, about 6000 tons being exported annually to the potteries. There is a considerable trade in cattle, corn, and agricultural produce. The population of Wolborough with Newton Abbot in 1881 was 7662, and of Highweek

2164.

Probably both Newton Abbot and Newton Bushel were originally included under Nuzetone. Newton Abbot was given to the abbot of Tor by William Lord Brewer, founder of the monastery. Newton Bushel was so called from Robert Bussell or Bushell, foster-child

and kinsman of Theobald de Englishville, who was made lord of the manor by Henry III. in 1246.

NEWTON-LE-WILLOWS, or Newron-1n-MAKERFIELD, a township and urban sanitary district of Lancashire, is situated on a branch of the London and North-Western Railway between Liverpool and Manchester, about 153 miles from each. The original town of Newton consists principally of one broad street, but many new buildings have sprung up in the immediate neighbourhood, especi- ally at Earlestown junction, about half a mile distant. There is a town-hall, a mechanics' institute, and a grammar school. At a short distance from the town is a moated timber-house, and also an ancient barrow of great extent. The Liverpool farm reformatory school is in the neighbour- hood. The industrial establishments include the waggon

factory of the London and North-Western Railway Company (employing about 1000 hands), a large foundry, printing and stationery works, paper-mills, and sugar refineries. Coal abounds in the neighbourhood. ‘The

barony is mentioned as being possessed by Edward the Confessor, but after the Conquest it was given to the Langtons. Near the town a party of Highlanders were in 1648 taken prisoners by Cromwell’s troops, and hanged in an adjoining wood, still called Gallow’s Cross. The town possessed the privilege of returning two members to par- liament from the 5th of Elizabeth, but was disfranchised in 1832. The population of the urban sanitary district in 1871 was 8244, and in 1881 it was 10,580.

NEWTOWN (Welsh, Drefnewydd; ancient name, Llan- far Cedewain), a market-town and parliamentary borough of Montgomeryshire, is situated on both sides of the Severn, 11 miles east-north-east of Llanidloes, and 13 south-south- west of Welshpool. It is a well-built town with wide and regular streets, although some of the houses are of timber. The principal buildings are the public rooms (1835), the infirmary (1867), and the market-hall (1870). Newtown is the principal seat of the Welsh flannel manufacture, to which now has been added that of tweeds and shawls. It joins with Welshpool, Llanfyllin, Montgomery, Llanidloes, and Machynlleth in returning a member to parliament. The population of the urban sanitary district of Newtown and Llanllwchaiarn in 1871 was 5886, and in 1881 it was 7170.

NEWTOWN, a suburban municipal district of Sydney, New South Wales. It consists chiefly of the residences of the better classes, whose business premises are in the city. It possesses a town-hall, a good free library, and a new court-house. There is a public school with an average attendance of about 800. The municipal government was proclaimed 12th December 1862. Newtown is connected with Sydney by railway, tramway, and omnibus. The population in 1881 was 15,828.

NEWTOWNARDS, or Newrownarpss, a market-town, formerly a parliamentary borough, of the county Down, Treland, is beautifully situated near the northern extrem- ity of Lough Strangford, on the Belfast and County Down Railway, 94 miles east of Belfast and 44 south by west of Bangor. The town, which is sheltered by hills on the west and north, is well built, and possesses a fine square, from which the principal streets diverge. There isa court- house and a town-hall. of an ancient cross was erected in 1636. Muslin embroid- ery is the principal industry, a hem-stitching factory affording employment to 500 females. There is also a mill for flaxand hemp yarns. In the neighbourhood there are freestone quarries. The population in 1871 was 9562, and in 1881 it was 8676.

NEW I. New Yorx Srarz.

N*Y YORK, one of the original thirteen United States of America, is situated between 40° 29’ 40” and 45°0’ 2″ N. lat. and between 71° 51’ and 79° 45’ 54’“4 W. long. It is bounded N. by Lake Ontario and the St Lawrence river, which separate it from the province of Ontario; E. by Vermont, Massachusetts, and Connecticut s°S: by*the Atlantic Ocean, New J ersey, and Pennsylvania; and W. by Pennsylvania, Lake Erie, and the N lagara river. Topography.—The State of New York has a triangular outline, with a breadth from east to west of 32646 miles, and from north to south, on the line of the Hudson, of 300 miles. In addition it includes Long Island and Staten Island on the Atlantic coast. Its arca is 49,170 square miles,—47,620 square miles, or 30,476,800 acres, being land, and the remainder portions of the great lakes that border it. The surface is more diversified than that of any other State in the Union. The eastern and southern

NE W—

In the market square the pedestal |__tioned, celebrated the beginning of the ycar (nev-ritz) by

NE W

From an early period there were a large number of religious foundations in the district, and the town owes its origin to a Dominican monastery founded in 1244 by Walter de Burgh. The town was forfeited by the O’Neills, and

given to the Hamiltons and Montgomeries, from whom it passed to the marquis of London- derry. It received a charter from James I., and until the Union returned two members to parliament.

NEW YEAR'S DAY. The first day (calends) of January, as marking the beginning of the year, was observed as a public holiday in Rome from at least the time of the Julian reformation of the calendar. Ovid (as., i. 63 sq.) alludes to the abstinence from litigation and strife, the smoking altars, the white-robed processions to the Capitol ; and later writers describe the exchanges of visits, the giving and receiving of presents (strenz), the masquerad- ing, and the feasting with which the day was in their time celebrated throughout the empire. Libanius (c. 346 a.p.) speaks of it as being in his day the one great holiday common to all under the Roman rule. Participation by Christians in the ordinary New Year's Day observances, as well as in the Saturnalia of the preceding month of December, which was from the first discouraged by the church, called forth repeated protests, not only from eminent individuals such as Tertullian (De Jdol., 14), Augustine (Serm. de Kal. Jan.), and Chrysostom (Hom. in Kal.), but also from various provincial synods ; and the sixty-second canon of the Quinisext general council (692) was expressly directed against "the so-called Calends, and Vota, and Brumalia." Christians were expected to spend the day in quiet meditation, reading of scripture, and acts of charity and beneficence. When about the 5th century the 25th of December had gradually become a fixed festival com- memorative of the Nativity, the lst January ultimately also assumed a specially sacred character as the octave of Christmas Day and as the anniversary of the circumcision of our Lord, and'as such it still figures in the calendars of the various branches of the Eastern and of the Western Church, though only as a feast of subordinate importance. The practice of giving and receiving "strene" for luck about the beginning of the year survives in such institu- tions as the French "jour d'étrennes" and the Scottish "Handsel Monday." The Persians also, it may be men-

exchanging presents of eggs. For particulars as to the date of commencement, and also as to the duration, of the year, whether civil or sacred, in various nations and religions, reference may be made to the article CALENDAR. ;

north and west to Lake Ontario. The mountainous belt of the eastern part is cut through by the great water-gap of the Mohawk valley, which once connected the Ontario basin with the trough of the Hudson below the present ocean-level, and is the most interesting and important feature in the topography of the State.

Afountains.—The mountains of New York form three distinct groups. (1) The Adirondacks, a series of short ranges having a north-north-east and south-south-west direction, form the centre of the elevated region of the north-east section of the State. The highest of these is Mount Marcy, 5344 feet, with several associated summits which reach the altitude of 5000 fect. (2) The Cat- skill Mountains, with their foothills, occupy about 500 square miles south of the Mohawk valley and west of the Hudson ; the highest peaks reach an altitude of 4000 fect.

The Helderberg and Shawangunk Mountains are topo-

¢ graphically a portion of the Catskills, the first on the portions are high, and from these the land slopes gently |

north, the second on the south. These all belong to the

Alleghany system, and are connected with the mountains | picturesque falls. Besides the great cataract of Niagara, a of Pennsylvania by the Delaware Mountains, which have | mile wide and 164 feet high, which New York shares with an altitude of from 1600 to 2800 feet. (3) The Highlands | Canada, there are many other falls worthy of mention, as of the Hudson, through which the river passes at West | those of the Genesee at Rochester and Portage, Trenton Point, are the northern continuation of the Blue Ridge of | Falls, the Falls of Ticonderoga, &c. Among the natural Pennsylvania, having an altitude of from 1200 to 1800 | features which distinguish the State its mineral springs feet. The so-called mountains of the central and southern | deserve special mention. Those of Saratoga, Balston, counties are

portions of a high plateau which connects | Sharon, Avon, and Richfield are famous throughout the

‘with the Helderberg and Catskill Mountains on the east. | Union. They differ much in chemical composition and

This is cut by eroded valleys in such a way as to leave | medicinal virtues, but all are popular places of resort, and many elevated points, of which the highest is East Hill in | some have gathered round them towns of considerable size. Otsego county, 2300 feet above the sea. Climate.—In a general way it may be said that the

One of the most peculiar and impressive topographical | climate of New York is typical of that of the northern features is formed by the cliffs of the Palisades, which | United States, a climate of extremes, hot in summer and border the Hudson in Rockland county, and are continu- | cold in winter, and yet healthful, stimulating, and on the ous with those of New Jersey. whole not disagreeable. The average annual temperature

Lakes and Rivers.—Two of the chain of great lakes | is about 47° Fahr., the average maximum of summer heat border the State, Lake Erie and Lake Ontario, con- | 93°, the temperature of 100° being rarely reached, and nected by the Niagara river, on which is the most | 102° the highest maximum record. The minimum tempera- celebrated cataract in the world. Lake Erie gives about | ture is about — 20° Fahr., never attained in the southern 75 miles of coast-line to New York, Lake ges: —] 4…] portion, seldom in the central, but Ontario over 200. The surface level of the Pe Ve ddd, y ; |often passed by four or five de- former is 573 feet above the sea, of the latter |. > § (2 grees in the most northern counties. 245 feet; and this is 606 feet deep. A por- The average rainfall is about 40 tion of the eastern border of New York is inches. Frosts begin from Sep-

tember Ist to October Ist, and end from April lst to May 1st, according to the locality and year. In the Adirondack region the snow- fall is heavy, the winter long and severe. In central New York it is ‘| not uncommon for snow to accumu- late to the depth of 3 or 4 feet, and yet this is not persistent. About ‘| New York city and on Long Island | the snow rarely exceeds a foot in depth, sleighing is always uncertain,

<\

=~

T

a WS SSN O

Take

R M

SN LAM ess

G and sometimes the ground will be Ze bare for weeks together. Thus it Te. will be seen that the climate of – New York is intermediate in char-

} acter between that of New Eng- land and the Mississippi valley States,—a little milder than the first, severer than the last. The great lakes which border it are | never frozen to their centres, and exert an equalizing influence upon

Me athe * * Sat, *

WY aT

a

Geological Map of New York. formed by Lake Champlain, which lies in the trough between the Adirondacks and the Green Mountains. Within the State the number of lakes is very great. The largest is Lake George, famous for its beautiful scenery. Through the central portion a series of +4 the climate of their shores, peculiar elongated lakes are found which lie with a | ws In the absence of extensive nearly north-and-south bearing on the slope from the | alluvial plains and marshes, there is little malaria, and the southern highlands to the Ontario basin, or the Mohawk | climate is salubrious. About New York city and on Long valley. The largest of these are Cayuga, Seneca, Oneida, | Island the ocean softens the rigours of winter, and through Crooked, Canandaigua, Owasco, and Otsego. These are | the influence of

the Arctic current, which bathes the coast river valleys once occupied and modified by glaciers and | as far south as Cape Hatteras, renders the summer per- dammed up by moraines. The Adirondack region is | ceptibly cooler.

famous for its system of lakes, which are favourite places The local variation of climate within the limits of the of resort for tourists. Among the rivers of New York | State will be best seen by the following table :—

the Hudson is the largest and most beautiful. Formerly it ran several hundred feet below its present level, and oe was the great channel of drainage which led through the | Temp. | Rainfall. Mohawk valley from the interior. Now, by a subsidence | | Moriches, Long Is-| ° ’ fai Feet, Inches. . ; . 2: 21 call eae 4049 | 7286 |Sea-level.| 54:2 54°67 of the continent, it is an arm of the sea, and navigable to | | new york City | 4042 7″ 100 “ete aes Troy, 151 miles from its mouth. The Black River, the ATDAMY:weeseeveesene] 42 40 74 45 150 469 40°61 Mohawk, and the Genesee are all large streams which lie | | Batraio. 2777”) 49.53 78 55 660 46°8 33°84 entirely within the State, while the Alleghany, the Sus- | | Gouverneur…..... oe } Ee = = pes quehanna, and the Delaware rise there, but soon leave | – it to become the great rivers of Pennsylvania. From the | Fauna.—At the advent of the whites the fauna of New

varied topography and the abundant rainfall the number York included all the wild animals which were found

of streams is large, and many of them are marked by | in the north-eastern States of the Union or the adjacent

portions of Canada, but by the cutting off of forests, and the occupation of the surface by farms, the range of the native animals has been greatly reduced, and they have been unceasingly destroyed by man. Formerly the elk, the moose, and the caribou were abundant in the northern part of the State, but are now all exterminated, while the Virginia deer in many localities is still quite plentiful. Of the carnivorous animals, the couguar, the black bear, two species of lynx, the red and grey foxes, the wolf, otter,

fisher, pine marten, mink, and skunk still remain, but the wolf is on the eve of extermination, and the wolverine, never abundant, has perhaps migrated northward. Among the rodents the beaver and variable hare are found, but in small numbers, while rabbits, squirrels, rats, mice, field- mice, &c., are still unpleasantly numerous.

Civilization has made but little difference with the reptiles, birds, and fishes. All the birds indigenous to the eastern portion of the continent may probably at times be found within the State, though their relative numbers are affected by the removal of the forests. Among the reptiles are seventeen species of snakes, three of which, two rattlesnakes and the copperhead, are venomous. The fishes include all the species found in the lower lakes, in the rivers of the temperate portions of the continent, and on the Atlantic coast; and the fisheries constitute an important element in the revenues and subsistence of the people. The streams and lakes of the more elevated portions contain brook trout in abundance; those of the lower levels are well stocked with bass, pickerel, perch, and other game fish. The salmon, which formerly inhabited the Hudson and its tributaries, was long since exterminated; but an effort has been made to restock some of the streams, and, like the German carp recently introduced, it may now be reckoned as an inhabitant of the waters of New York. Some of the interior lakes are stocked with a land-locked salmon, or lake trout, a valuable and interesting fish. The oyster industry of the coast has its chief commercial centre in New York city, and an important fraction of the supply of clams, oysters, lobsters, and sea fish is obtained from the New York coast.

Flora,—Originally the surface of New York was occupied by an almost unbroken forest, and, as a consequence of the general fertility of the soil, its topographical diversity, and the range of latitude and longitude, the flora is rich and varied. About seventy species of trees are known to inhabit the State, and these include all found in the adjacent portions of the Union and Canada. The most abundant are oaks, of which there are fifteen species, but with these mingle five species each of maple, pine, and poplar, four species of hickory, three each of elm, spruce, and ash, two of willow, cherry, magnolia, and pepperidge,

and one each of larch, liriodendron, dogwood, arbor |

vite, balsam, yew, sycamore, honey locust, sweet gum, locust, butternut, black walnut, chestnut, beech, hornbeam, basswood, sassafras, and mulberry. On the summits of the Adirondacks a true alpine vegetation is found, though consisting of but a small number of plants ; several of these exist in no other locality in the United States except the mountain summits of Vermont and New Hampshire. The flowering plants and ferns of New York were studied with much care by the late Dr Torrey, and his report upon them forms two of the series of twenty-three quarto volumes which compose the Report on the Natural History of New York, The flowering plants enumerated by Dr Torrey amount to 1540 species, to which a few additions have since been made. The ferns number fifty-four species — more than are found in any other State; the lower forms of plant life, seaweeds, fungi, lichens, &c., are con- stantly supplying new material, and many years will yet be required for their complete elaboration.

New York

[STATE.

Geology.—The geological structure of New York is more varied and comprehensive than that of any other State, since it includes, with perhaps the exception of the Jurassic, the entire geological column from the Archean to the Tertiary. A tabular view of the relations of the rocks of New York may be given as follows :—

Alluvium, peat, shell-marl, diatomaceous carth. Quaternary… < Champlain clays.

Glacial deposits. Till, kames, moraines, erraties. ee a (?). Gay Head group.

Tertiary …... } Greensands (?).

Cretaceous…. ¢ Raritan group.

with lignite. Wanting (?). Palisade group. Sandstones, shale, and trap of

Rockland county. Coal-measures, wanting. Monntain limestone, wanting.
Carboniferous { Waverly group, “ White Catskill.”

Catskill group, “ Red Catskill.” | Chemung group. Encrinal limestone.

Marcellus shale.

Hamilton group. Devonian….. Corniferous limestone.

Long and Staten Island clays,

Jurassic.

Triassic…

Gardeau shale. Cashaqua shale Genesee shale. Tully limestone. Hamilton shale. Moscow shale.

Corniferous group. Onondaga limestone. Schoharie grit—passage bed,

Caudagalli grit.

Oriskany sandstone.

(Upper Pentamerus limestone. Scutella limestone. Delthyris limestone.

Lower Pentamerus limestone. Water lime.

(Local.) “ Onondaga salt group.”

Niagara limestone.

Niagara shale.

Clinton limestone.

Clinton shale.

Medina sandstone.

Oneida conglomerate.

Hudson River shales.

Utica shale.

Trenton limestone.

Black River limestone.

Birdseye limestone.

Chazy limestone.

Calciferous sand rock—pass-

age bed.

Potsdam sandstone.

Rossie slate ore and marble.

Troy slates and limestones.

‘* Georgia slates.”

Oriskany group.

Helderberg group.

Upper Silurian

Niagara group.

Medina group.

| Salina group. f

Hudson group.

Lower Trenton group,

Silurian. | Potsdam group. }

Cambrian….. Taconic group.

Huronian….. Wanting (2). St Lawrence marble. Moriah ophiolite. ;
Laurentian.. Adirondack group. ee

Gnciss with magnetite. | Highlands — gnciss maguctite, &e.

The surface exposures of these rocks can be seen at a glance by reference to the accompanying outline map.

The boundaries of the State enclose an area which once formed a part of the eastern declivity of the Archean continent, of which the Canadian and Adirondack high- lands are the most important representatives. These are composed of Laurentian rocks, and are perhaps the oldest portion of the earth's surface. Upon the slope of this old continent the ocean rose and fell in the different geological ages, cutting away the shore by its waves in its advance, and spreading the debris in sheets of sand and gravel—old sea beaches. During long-continued periods of submer- gence organic sediments, composed of the hard parts of marine animals, accumulated over the sea bottom. In the process of emergence the shallowing and retreating sea,

with

STATE. |

spread over its deep water deposits mixed sediments, the finer wash of the land and organic material, carbonaceous or calcareous. When indurated, these three kinds of de- posits became (1) sandstones or conglomerates, (2) lime- stones, (3) shales or earthy limestones. During the inter- vals of emergence the surface was more or less eroded, and the elevations gave

obliquity to the planes of deposition, so that in each invasion of the sea it deposited its round of sediments unconformably upon the older ones. The repeated submergences which have here left their record did not cover the same area, but overlapped in such a way that the succession of deposits is easily made out,— the different groups which we call geological systems being separable by unconformability along the planes of contact, by lithological characters which are faithful records of conditions of deposition, and by differences exhibited in their fossils, for in the long intervals which separated these inundations the life of sea and land was completely and repeatedly revolutionized.

The processes described above went on through the Cambrian, Silurian, Devonian, and Carboniferous ages, forming on the south shore of the Laurentian continent the most complete and consecutive record of Paleeozoic time of which we have any knowledge. Then the strata along a line passing south-westerly through eastern New York were raised in a series of folds which we call the Alleghany Mountains, and at this time all the interval between the Atlantic and the Mississippi was elevated above the ocean. There it has since remained, the sea rising and falling upon its margin, and leaving its marks, but never sub- merging the interior. The geological record was con- tinued by minor contributions to the land along the Atlantic coast during the Triassic, Cretaceous, Tertiary, and Quaternary ages, and by the grinding and trans- porting action of glaciers which once covered the entire surface of the State.

Previous to the elevation of the Alleghanies the sheets of Paleozoic rocks formed a littoral plain sloping gently southward from the Archean continent. But in the formation of this mountain belt the country traversed by the southern line of the State was left with a surface inclination northward, and between the Alleghanies and the Canadian and Adirondack highlands a broad valley was formed which became the channel of drainage for a great interior area. Through this valley flowed a large river which reached the sea at or near New York island. From the Carboniferous age to the Ice period this was the course of the drainage of the interior, and thus was formed the great water-gap between the Helderberg and Adiron- dack Mountains, the gate of the continent, through which the tide of migration has flowed from the seaboard into the Mississippi valley, and where the

canal and railroad lines have been constructed which are the great arteries of commerce.

During portions of the Tertiary age perhaps the whole, but certainly the eastern margin, of the continent stood many hundred feet above its present level. The drainage of the intcrior flowed freely and rapidly through the channel which has been described, until that part of it which lies within the State was cut below the present sea- level, and the great river, which as a whole has never been named, but of which the Hudson, the Niagara, the Detroit, and the St Mary's are representatives, reached the ocean 80 miles south and cast of New York harbour, for its channel may be traced to that point on the sea bottom, and its mouth was 600 feet below its present one. By a subsequent depression of the land or rise in the ocean-level the sea covered much of its old shore, and filled the channels cut by subaerial erosion ; the Hudson became an arm of the sea, and the labyrinth of tideways was

formed which are such a marked feature of the coast, and such important auxiliaries to New York harbour. During the Ice period important changes were made in the topography of the State,—by local glaciers in its advent and decline, by the great ice sheet at its climax, —the first perhaps increasing topographical variety, the second producing monotony by grinding down and round- ing over asperities, and filling depressions with the debris.

The basins of the great lakes which border New York, —Ontario, Erie, and Champlain,—and of the peculiar elongated lakes of the interior, are largely the work of glaciers, which broadened and perhaps deepened river channels, and dammed them up with moraines. When the glaciers retreated from the area of New York many of the old channels of drainage were left partially or com- pletely filled, and the flow of surface water took in some cases new directions. Among the obstructed channels was that of the Hudson west of Albany, filled by the Ontario glacier. By this cause the great river flowing from the interior was deflected from its ancient course and

found a line of lowest levels leading from the north-east instead of that from the south-east corner of the Ontario valley. In this way the St Lawrence was made the outlet of the interior basin, and the Mohawk dwindled to a local drain- ing stream. Long Island Sound and part of Long Island itself should also be classed among the products of glacial action, the Sound having been scooped out by the great glacier when it left the more resistant ledges of crystalline rocks which occupy south-eastern New York and Con- necticut, and plunged into the softer Cretaceous and Tertiary beds which formed the littoral plain that bordered the continent,—the hills of the island being covered, and in part composed of loose material transported by the glacier and deposited along its edge.

Minerals.—The mineral resources of New York, though less varied than those of some other States, are still of great importance. The most valuable of these are exten- sive deposits of iron ore, viz.:—(1) magnetite, found in great abundance in the Adirondack region, and in Putnam, Orange, and Rockland counties ; (2) hematite, mined in the vicinity of Rossie (St Lawrence county), Clinton (Oneida county), and elsewhere; (3) limonite, largely worked on Staten Island, and at Amenia, Sharon, &c., on the line of the New York and Harlem Railroad; (4) siderite, mined at Hyde Park on the Hudson. The pro- duction of ore from these mines in 1879 was 1,239,759 tons, valued at $3,499,132; and New York is surpassed in the quantity of iron produced by Michigan and Pennsyl- vania only.

The quarries of New York are numerous, and they furnish a great variety of products:—granite in the Adirondacks and along the Hudson; roofing slate in Washington county ; white marble in Westchester and St Lawrence counties; red marble at Warwick, Orange county ; black marble at Glenn's Falls; verde antique at Moriah and Thurman, Sandstone comes from Potsdam, Medina, and various other localities ; shell-limestone from Lockport and Hudson; excellent flagging from Kingston on the Hudson ; and paving stone from the trap of the Palisades. In 1880 the quarries of New York numbered two hundred and fifty-one, and the value of their product was $1,261,495. A large amount of hydraulic cement is supplied from the quarries at Rondout (Ulster county), Manlius (Onondaga county), and Akron near Buffalo; also gypsum from the vicinity of Syracuse. The deposits of these substances are very extensive, and their production could

be increased indefinitely. Another item of importance among the mineral resources of the State is the salt produced from the salt-wells at Syracuse; these have been worked for

many years, and the present annual product is 10,997,408 bushels, having a value of $1,374,666. In south-western New York gas and oil springs are numerous, and at Fredonia the gas has been used in lighting houses for half a century. Recent discoveries show that the petroleum fields of Pennsylvania extend into New York, and it is probable that petroleum will soon claim a place among the mineral products of the State.

The Amboy clays of New Jersey extend across Staten and Long Islands. With further investigation they may prove as valuable in the one State as in the other. (J. 8. N.*)

History.—Recent investigations have added little to the knowledge of the prehistoric period of the territory known as the Middle States. The bias of scientific opinion seems to be that the carthworks, palisades, and piles of stone found in the region bounded by the St Lawrence on the north and watered by the Delaware, the Susquehanna, the Alleghany, and their tributaries are of an origin much more recent than the mound system of the Mississippi and the Ohio, and are the remains of a people intermediate between the aboriginal race and the Indians found on the soil by the first European discoverers and explorers. The latter found the eastern slope of the continent under the domination of the Iroquois tribes. John Smith met with them on the north waters of Chesapeake Bay in 1607, and Hudson found them in 1609 on the banks of the river to which he gave his name. The chief seat of this powerful nation, whose sway was recognized from the St Lawrence to the Tennessee and from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, was in the wide and fertile region of western and northern New York. Forming permanent settlements about the headwaters of the streams which gave them passage to the heart of the country, they organized the political league or confederacy known as the Five Nations. These were the tribes of Mohawks, Onondagas, Cayugas, Scnecas, and Oneidas. They took the name of ‘‘Konoshioni,” or People of the Long House, by which they designated the territory occupied by them, extend- ing west from the

Hudson at Albany to the foot of the great lakes, a distance of about 325 miles. There is a tradition in one of the tribes that the confederation was formed four years before Hudson's arrival, which would fix the date at 1605. On the other hand, a missionary resident among them as early as 1742 was informed by a principal chief that the confederacy was established one age (lifetime) before the white people came into the country, which, in view of the thoroughness of their organizations at the time the whites first came into immediate contact with them, seems not improbable. In 1609 Champlain, while accompallying a war party of Hurons and Algonquins on an expedition against the Iroquois, fell in with the enemy on the lake to which he gave his hame. European firearms, with which the Iroquois then made first acquaintance, turned the scale of victory against them. The interference of the French aroused in the formidable confederacy a spirit of enmity which, relentlessly nourished, finally arrested the progress of French colonization and French power in Canada, and later secured the triumph of the English arms, Pursuing his explo- rations, Champlain in 1615 again accompanied a hostile expedition of his allies, penetrated to the very seat of the Iroquois power, and besieged their fortified village or castle, but was compelled to retreat after an ineffectual attempt to storm or fire the stockade. Thus within a few years after Hudson's voyage the French had discovered the great lakes and explored the river which separate the territories of New York from Canada. The Iroquois sought an alliance with the Dutch as a counterpoise to that of their Algonquin enemies with the French.

NEW YORK

[statr.

calamity they never recovered. Thcir numbers have been estimated as 25,000 in 1650, and in 1750 about half that number, of whom about 2500 were fighting men. Disregarded in the treaty of 17 83, their political existence terminated, and their lands were ceded to the State with some small reservations. The last official State census (1875) reports the total number of Indians in the State at 5117, chiefly the remains of the Iroquois tribes. Of these 4707 were living on reservations.

At what time, and by whom, the Bay of New York was first visited by European voyagers is still in doubt. Verrazano is claimed to havc entered it with the “Dauphine” in 1524, and Gomez to have sailed along the coast to the latitude of New York in 1525. Of the voyage of Henry Hudson (see Hupson) there is no doubt. Hudson’s report of the picturesque grandeur of the fine harbour and river, of the fertile country on its shores, of the kindly disposition of the Indians, and of the abundance of fur-bearing animals in the interior causcd great excitement in Holland; and the United Netherlands, whose independence had been acknowledged in the spring, asserted their claim to the newly discovered country. In 1610 a vessel was despatched with merchandise suitable for traffic with the savages. The Europeans were well received, and the voyage resulted in profit. Other private ventures followed, and a lucrative trade in pceltry sprung up. In 1613 a few huts were built at the southern point of Manhattan Island, and in 1615 a fortified trading house, to which the name of Fort Nassau was given, was constructed on Castle Island near the present site of Albany, and a factor permanently established there. No effort at colonization was as yct made. Encouraged by the reports of their explorers, the merchants of North Holland formed themsclyves into a company, which on the 11th day of October 1614 received from the states-general a special trading licence in which the name of New Netherland first appears, the association styling itself the United New Netherland Company. In 1618 the fort on Castle Island was abandoned, and in 1622 a new post, Fort Orange (now Albany), was established on the west bank of the river, at the place where, according to tradition, the first formal treaty between the Dutch and the Five Nations was made. On the expiration of the charter of the United Netherland Company (October 1618) a renewal was refused by the states-general, but private ventures were author- ized. The exploration of the coast and rivers was actively continucd, but special charters to the discoverers were persistently refused. On the 3d June 1621 the states-general granted to the West India Company a charter with full powers over New Netherland for a period of twenty-four years. The territory was formally erectcd into a province, and the management of its affairs assigned to the chamber of Amsterdam. In the year 1622 they sent out trading vessels and took formal possession of the country. It was not, however, until the 21st June 1623 that the company, its rules and regulations being formally approved by the states-general, closed their subscription books. Agricultural colonization

had been already begun in the spring of the same year. The ship “ New Netherland,” equipped by the company with thirty families, reached Manhattan early in May; with them went Cornelis Jacobsen May, the first director of New Netherland. May was succeeded in 1624 by William Verhulst. In 1626 the plans for the government of the province by a director and council being perfected by the Amsterdam chamber, Peter Minuit was sent out as director-general. His administration was vigorous and successful. Manhattan Island was purchased of the Indians for the West India Company, and a fort built which was named Fort Amsterdam. The charter of the company provided for a form of feudal colonization under patroons, such colonies to consist of fifty adults, and the lands occupied to tun 16 miles in length on the one side of a navigable river or 8 miles if on both banks, but only so far into the country as the occupiers should push their settlement. The limits of’ the colonies might be increased in proportion to the number of immi- grants. The patroons had special privileges of trade, and magisterial powers ; leet courts were held upon their manors, and later their representatives sat for them in the colonial assembly. Under these favourable conditions the example of Minuit was cagerly followed ; large tracts of land were acquired from the Indians, and settlement made by the new proprietors. The jealousy caused by these purchases and privileges brought about the recall of Minuit. The little colony was annoyed by the encroachments of the English of the New Plymouth colony, and disturbed by the hostilities between the Indian tribes in their immediate neighbourhood. In 1633 Wouter van Twiller succeeded Minuit as director-general, and carried out the policy of commercial monopoly of his principals. The Swedes now began aggressions on the southern border of the Dutch province. Irregularities in administration caused the recall of Van Twiller in 1637, and in 1638 he was succeedcd by William Kieft. During Kieft’s administration, which was arbitrary and ill-advised, the colony was still further molested by its English and Swedish neighbours, while its prosperity was arrested by dissensions between the company and the patroons. The fatal mistake was also made of supplying the Iroquois with fircarms, which completed the estrangement of all the other tribes. A collision occurred, and

‘

STATE. |

was the beginning of a bloody war which desolated New Netherland for five years. At its close scarcely one hundred men besides traders could be found in Manhattan, and the river settlements were nearly destroyed. This disastrous administration was closed in the summer of 1646 by the appointment of Pcter Stuyvesant, who landed at Manhattan in May of the succceding year. Though of a proud and overbearing temper, and by nature disposed to arbitrary rule, he proved the most satisfactory of the company's administrators. He closed the Indian difficulties, conciliating the fricndly and utterly destroying the hostile tribes. He negotiated a settlement of the boundary disputes with the New England eolonies (treaty of Hartford, 1650). In his relations with his own people he was less fortunate, and by his opposition to their demands for a larger freedom he alienated their affections and prepared them for ready submission to a more generous rule. The province was already shorn of its original limits, by English aggression and Dutch submission, before the consent of the director and council to a general assembly could be had. This, the first popular representa- tive body of the province, met in April 1664. Before the year closed the colony fell an easy conquest to the English. The population of the province was now fully 10,000, that of New Amsterdam 1500 ersons.

: The English Government was hostile to any other occupation of the New World than its own. In 1621 James I. claimed sove- reignty over New Netherland by right of ''occupancy." In 1632 Charles I. reasserted the English title of ''first discovery, occupa- tion, and possession." In 1654 Cromwell ordered an expedition for its conquest, and the New England colonies had engaged thcir support. The treaty with Holland arrested these operations, and recognized the title of the Dutch. In 1664 Charles II. resolved upon a conquest of New Netherland. The immediate excuse was the loss to the revenue of the English colonics by the smuggling practices of their Duteh neighbours. A patent was issued to the duke of York granting to him all the lands and rivers from the west side of the Connecticut river to the east side of Delaware Bay. On the 29th August an English squadron under the direction of Colonel Richard Nicolls, the duke's deputy-governor, appeared off the Nar- rows, and on September 8 New Amsterdam, defenceless against the force, was formally surrendered by Stuyvesant. The

duke's authority was proclaimed, and New Netherland became New York. The name of Fort Orange was changed to Fort Albany, after the second title of the duke. Nicolls proved an admirable ruler, and his successor Francis Lovelace continued his policy, —autocratic government, arbitrary in form but mild in practice. Religious liberty was as large asin England. In 1673 (August 7), war being declared between England and Holland, a Dutch squadron surprised New York, captured the city, and restored the Dutch authority and the names of New Netherland and New Amsterdam. But in July 1674 a treaty of peace restored New York to English rule. A new patent was issued to the duke of York, and Major Edmund Andros was appointed governor. He proved a firm but moderate ruler ; the unsustained charge of maladministration made against him had its source in religious prejudice. In 1683 Thomas Dongan succeeded Andros. The province flourished under his excellent administration. A general assembly, the first under the English rule, met on October 1683, and adopted a charter of libertics which was confirmed by the duke. In August 1684a new covenant was made with the Iroquois, who formally acknowledged the jurisdiction of Great Britain, but not subjection. By the accession of the duke of York to the English throne in 1685 the duchy of New York became a royal province. The charters of the New England colonies were revoked, and together with New York and New Jersey they were consoli- dated into the dominion of New England. Dongan was recalled, and Sir Edmund Andros, who suggested the policy, was commissioned governor-general, He assumed his viceregal authority at New York, August 11, 1688. The English Revolution of 1688 had its faint counterpart in the colonies in an insurrection of the militia, headed by one Jacob Leisler, which was not terminated till the arrival from England in 1691 of a new governor, Sloughtcr, with whose administration what may be called the second period of English rule begins.

The assembly which James had abolished in 1686 was rcestab- lished, and in May declared the rights and privileges of the people, reaffirming the principles of the repealed charter of liberties of October 30, 1683; but religious liberty was curtailed and the Test Act put in force as to Roman Catholics. In 1697 the lords of trade, in a formal report, protested against the Act declaratory of the rights and privileges of the people of the provinee of New York; and the instructions of the king to Lord Bellomont, the newly appointed governor, were sharply restrictive of the rights claimed as to

courts and assemblies. The government was to be ruled as a province by a governor and council,—the governor having power to institute eourts, appoint judges, disburse the revenucs, veto all laws, and prorogue or dissolve the assembly at pleasure. The provincial legal authorities protested at once against this excess of prerogative. Thenceforth the political history of the province records one con- tinued struggle between the royal governors and the general

assembly,—the assembly withholding money grants, and the gover- nors exercising the power to dissolve it at will. The chief concern of the province was the defence of the northern fronticr. The quartering of British troops became a source of constant irritation between the people and the officers, and the need of money by the authoritics caused as severe a struggle between the governors and the assembly. The conquest of Canada in 1763 closed the long contest in which New York troops were constantly engaged. The war left a heavy burden upon Great Britain, a part of which par- liament attempted to shift to the shoulders of the colonies. A general congress of the colonies held in New York in 1765 protested against the Stamp Act and other oppressive ordinances, and they were in part repealed. But parliament maintained the principle upon which the legislation was based, the supremacy of parliament and its right to tax the colonies without their representation or con- sent. In 1769 the total exports of the province amounted to £246,522. During this long political agitation New York, the most English of the colonics in her manners and fecling, was in close har- mony with the Whig leaders of England. She firmly adhered to that principle of the sovereignty of the people which she had inscribed on her ancient charter of liberties. Largely dependent upon ecommerce, she was the first to recommend a non-importation of English merchandise as a measure of retaliation against Great Britain, and she was first also to invite a general congress of all the colonies. On the breaking out of hostilities, New York immedi- ately joincd the patriot cause ; the English authority was overthrown, and the government passed to a provincial congress. In May 1775, Forts Ticonderoga and Crown Point, which eommanded Lakes Champlain and George, and secured the northern frontier, were cap- tured by the Americans. New York city became the headquarters of the

continental army under command of General Washington. On July 9, 1776, the provincial congress reassembled at White Plains, and formally took the name of the representatives of the State of New York. The same day they proclaimed their adhesion to the Declaration of Independence. The defeat of the Americans on Long Island, 27th August 1776, was followed by the abandonment of the city, September 15, the army of Washington retiring to the high ground at the northern end of the island. Next day a conflict took place between the advanced troops where Manhattanville now stands. The movement of Howe to Whitc Plains, and his sub- sequent successful operations, compelled the withdrawal of the Americans to New Jersey. In 1777 the advance of Burgoyne from Canada was checked at Saratoga and his entire army captured; a diversion attempted by St Leger by way of the Mohawk was like- wise unsuccessful. An attempt of Clinton to aid Burgoyne, in which he captured the forts at the entrance to the Hudson Highlands, failed; West Point continued to command the passage of this import- ant line of communication. On April 20,1777, the State assembly adopted the first constitution. General George Clinton was elected governor, and held the office till the closc of the war. In 1779 (July 16) Stony Point was captured by the Americans. In 1780 the failure of Arnold's treason put an end to the schemes of the British to command the river. The only other action of importance on the soil of the State was the punishment of the Indians who had aided Sir John Johnson in his incursions. Sullivan with 3000 men penetrated to the heart of the Seneca country and destroyed the towns. In the summer of 1781 Rochambeau with French troops made a junction with Washington in Westehester county, and New York city was threatened by the allied forces. News of the approach of the ficct of De Grasse to Chesapeake Bay caused a transfer to Virginia of the military operations. On the conelusion of the war New York was evacuated, November 25, 1783. Freed from armed occupation, and its seaport regained, the State made rapid progress. Its natural advantages, which the war disclosed, attracted settlers from other States, and the western lands were quickly taken up. In 1788 (July 26) New York adopted the Federal constitution, became the most important member of the national union, and reccived popularly the name of the Empire State. The scat of government was transferred from New York city to Albany in 1797. The pro- gress of the Statc met with no interruption until the war with Great Britain in 1812, when its northern frontier became the seat of opera- tions by land and water.

The treaty of Ghent put an end to the war, and important schemes for the development of the internal navigation to bring the products of the State to tidal water were rapidly consummated. Steamboat navigation began on the Hudson in 1807, and the canal system was perfected in 1825 in the comple- tion of the Erie Canal, which opened the country from the lakes to the sea. Thisimportant artery of commerce has been recently freed from toll by popular vote. The railroad system is still more perfect : great lines traverse the State from its eastern to its western extremity, and a network of minor lines connects every town and village of any importance in the State with the central artcries. Progress of Settlement.—At the close of the Dutch period the settlement of that part of New Netherland which afterwards became New York was confined to Manhattan, Long, and Staten Islands, and the banks of the Hudson. Westward of these there were small trading stations on the line of the Mohawk and other

water carriages. Early in the last century the admirable natural channel of communication which by the Mohawk river and Wood Creek connects the Hudson with the great lakes attracted immigra- tion. The fertile valley of the Mohawk was the first occupied. A settlement was made there about 1722 bya colony from the Pala- tinate, who constituted almost the entire population until the close of the Revolution. In 1756 there were only ten county divisions in the province, of which but two were west of the Hudson. At the time of the Revolution there were fourteen counties, the most westerly of which lay on the sides of the Mohawk, about 40 miles from Albany. The inhabitants were at this time Dutch, French, English, Scotch, and Irish. The war brought the extreme richness of the western lands to the notice of the troops, and they in turn informed the people. After the war settlements spread with rapidity. The State of New York ceding to Massachusetts about 10,000 square miles of territory, there was before 1800 a large immigration from New England, which extended itself over the interior of the State to its western boundary. This was essentially an agricultural population. The military lands sct apart as bounties during the war, to the amount of 180,000 acres, were rapidly taken up by the immigrants who flowed into the western country like a torrent, opening roads and founding villages and towns. Between 1784 and 1800 two cities,

three large villages, and numerous smaller settlements were founded, and the population of the State doubled in numbers. The foreign immigration of the last forty years has chiefly settled on the lines of the great railroads, which present an almost unbroken chain of industrial cities. Constitution. —The fundamental constitution of the State adopted in 1777 was in its main features after the English model :—a chief executive and two separate Icgislative chambers ; justice adminis- tered through local county courts, a probate judiciary, a high con- mon law tribunal called the supreme court, side by side with a court of chancery; final appellate jurisdiction in law and equity vested in the State senate. This first constitution of the State declared the people to be the only source of political power. The sccret ballot insured the independence of the vote. Religious liberty to all was absolutely secured. In 1821 a new convention greatly simplified the machinery of administration. Under this new constitution the people took to themselves a large part of the powers before delegated to the assembly. The elective frauchise was cxtended by a removal of freehold qualification. In 1846a new constitution made radical changes in the framework of government. The elective franchise was further exteuded by diminution of resid- ence qualification ; elective districts were established on the basis of population, and shifted with the varying censuses. The elective principle, before confined to part of the executive and legislative ‘officers, was applied also to the judiciary. A court of appeals of last resort was instituted. Local tribunals were invested with the powers ~~and jurisdictions of the supreme court of common Iaw and of the court of chancery. The separation of the legal and political depart~~ ments of government was complete. The question was again sub- mitted to the people in 1873, and the elcction of the judiciary main- tained bya large majority. Some slight amendments have been since made. The constitution, as finally matured, completely carries out the principle of a government of the people by its own directly chosen agencies. Elective restrictions upon negrocs and mulattoes were removed by degrees. Slavery was gradually abolished under an Act passed in 1799. In 1811 the only discrimination was the require- ment of a certificate of freedom. The constitution of 1821 imposed both a residence and a freehold qualification, restrictions which remained until removed in 1870 by the fifteenth amendment to the Federal constitution, when suffrage to males became absolutely free in the State. The constitution of 1777 forbade Acts of Attainder after the close of the war, and provided that no Act should

work corruption of blood. Primogeniture and entail were for ever abolished. That of 1846 did away with all feudal tenures of every description. Imprisonment for debt, before limited by statute so far as females were concerned to sums over $50, was entirely abolished in 1831. Married women were secured in their separate rights to real and personal property by statute in 1848, Imprisonment of witnesses was put an end to by Act of 1882. Education.—The grant of the West India Company (1629) to the planters of New Netherland required the establishment of a school and in 1644 the burgomasters of New Amsterdam made a munici- pal provision for school purposes in the colony ; but this proved nominal, and instruction received little attention until after the arrival of Stuyvesant, when an academy and classical school was established (1659). At the conquest in 1664 the English found this institution in high repute, and in addition three public schools and a number of private Dutch schools in the city alone. The academy or Latin school was continued by the English authorities for a few years, but the Dutch schools received no Government contribution. In 1702 a free grammar school was established by Act of Assembly. In 1710 a school was founded by Trinity church, and similar pro- visions by other religious denominations followed. In 1754 King's College (reorganized in 1784 as Columbia) was established by char- ter. Here many of the men who became distinguished in the

YO S

annals of the State received their education. Its departments were fully organized when the Revolution put an cnd to all instruc- tion, and the building beeame a military hospital. The legislature of the State in 1795 granted an appropriation of $50,000 for five years for common school purposes.

Charities. —The public charities were by Act of 1867 placcd under the charge of a board of State commissioncrs of public charities, who are paid expenses but receive no salary. The institutions wholly or chiefly maintained by the State arc—asylums for the insane, incbriate, deaf and dumb, blind, and idiots, and cstablish- ments for reform of juvenile delinquents. In the counties, cities, and towns there are public poorhouses and asylums, besides hospitals, dispensaries, and homes in great variety.

The official report of January 1883 states the expenditures for the fiscal year ending September 30, 1882, for orphan asylums and homes for the friendless, at $4,486,204°21, the total number of persons sup- ported being 46,985,—of these 24,868 remained at the close of the year. The expenditure for hospitals the same yearwas $1,503,283 °68, the number of patients treated 27,850. During the same period the dispensaries treated 276,323 persons, at an cxpenditure of $102,834°20. There were in the several asylums and almshouses, October 1, 1882, 10,443 insane persons. The number of persons supported and temporarily relieved in the county poorhouscs and almshouses during the year cnding November 30, 1882, was 57,895; in the city almshouses 69,875; total 127,770, of whom there remained at that date 16,507. The amount expended for support and relief of the poor and other charities was $4,715,065 62. Com- parison with previous statements shows that there had becn no actual increase in paupcrism in the State in twelve years, and a decrease in proportion to the population. A State board of com- missioners of emigration has until recently had charge of the immi- grants landed at the port of New York. The arrivals in 1882 were 476,086. The expenses of this board were met by a head- money tax, but, the Act under which it was levied having been declared unconstitutional, its functions have virtually ceased.

Correctton.—The superintendent of prisons reported the number of convicts confined 30th September 1882 at 2937, the total ex- penses at $415,662°10, and the earnings at $421,916°95, showing a surplus of $6254°85. The strong and increasing jealousy of artisans has led to an abandonment of some of the most profitable kinds of convict labour.

Wealth and Taxation.—The aggregate assessed valuation of the wealth of the State was in 1882 $2,821,549,963, of which amount $2,482, 012,682 was real and $339,537,281 personal. The amount of taxation was $47,573,820°07, of which $3,757,971°47 was State, $30,429,458°62 county, $10,324,339°16 city, town, and village, equal to 1°709 cents on one dollar ($1) valuation.

Finances.—The fiscal affairs of the State have been managed on correct principles, and its credit has been maintained unimpaired. To this its payment of the interest and principal of its bonds in coin during the

temporary suspensions of specie payment which preceded the civil war and the long national suspension which followed its outbreak greatly contributed. The total funded debt of the State, 30th September 1882, was $6,385,556 °30, over 6 millions of which represents the canal debt. The reccipts of the State treasury during the fiscal year ending at same period were $17,735,761, and the payments $13,898,198 °21, leaving a balance of $3,837,563‘38. The rate of taxation for the year 1882 was fixed at 2°45 mills on the dollar, which is estimated to yield a revenue of $6,820,022-29. The revenues of the canals for the ycar ending September 30, 1882, were $659,970°35, and the expenditure $653,510°01. The canal system is for the future to be maintained by direct taxation.

(STATE.

1 In 1881-82, of 1723 Indian children of school age reported, 1169 attendcd school. The State pays $8500 for their education.

city. |

Banking.—The bank of New York, chartered in 1791, was the first financial institution incorporated in the State. Banks con- tinued to be ineorporated by special Acts of the legislature until 1838, when a general banking law made the business free to all under certain restrictions. In 1829 a safety fund system was established to secure the circulation of the banks contributing to it, and commissioners were created to apply its provisions, but the unequal operation and insuflicieney of the system brought about its abolition in 1843, and supervision was entrusted to the comp- troller of the State. In 1851 a banking department was created. The Act of the United States of 1865, to provide a national currency, in its requirement of a deposit of United States bonds to secure the circulation issued to the banks by the Government made a radical change in the entire banking system. If the poliey of reduction of the debt of the United States be continued, some other form of security must be deviscd to take the place of the bonds of the United States. In 1867 the State passed an Act enabling national banking associations to become State banking associations. The national tax of 10 per cent. being in effect prohibitory on other than national bank eirculation, the State banks are banks of dis- count and deposit only. On the 16th December 1882 there were seventy-seven banks in operation under this Act.

Their capital was $19,455,700. The mass of the banking business of the State is done by the national banks, of which there were on December 30, 1882, 307, witha capital of $86,313,692. Their deposits at same date were $355,673,215°80, their loans and discounts $336,269,003°87, and their issues of national bank circulation amounted to $45,979,914, secured by United States bonds, deposited with the eomptroller of the currency at Washington, to the amount of $52,217,050. They held in specie $54,186,128°94, and in legal tender notes of the United States $18,192,201. The first bank for savings in the State was incorporated in 1819, since which time these beneficent institutions have vastly increased. On the Ist January 1883 they numbered 127, holding for 1,095,971 depositors the suin of $412,147,213. They are incorporated by special Acts of the legislature, and the provisions for the security of their investment are very stringent. Trust companies, of which there are several, are also incorporated by special Act, and the security of their depositors is guarantced by deposits of public stocks or cash with the banking department of the State. On the Ist October 1882 there were fourteen corporations for the safe keeping and guardianship of personal property, with a capital of $2,676,900.

Agriculture.—New York is the third State of the Union in the number of farms, and second in their value. The total number of acres in farms in 1880 was 23,780,754, of which 17,717,862 acres were improved lands. The number of farms was 241,058, value $1,056,176,741. The live stock included 610,358 horses, 5072 inules and asses, 39,633 working oxen, 1,437,855 milch cows, 862,233 other cattle, 1,715,180 sheep, 751,907-swine. The farm products were—oats, 37,575,506 bushels; Indian corn, 25,690,156 ; wheat, 11,587,766; barley, 7,792,062; rye, 2,634,690; buck-wheat, 4,461,200; potatoes, 33,644,807; hay, 5,240,563 tons; hops, 21,628,931 tb; tobacco, 6,481,431 Ibj; milk (sold or sent to butter aud cheese factories), 231,965,533 gallons ; butter (made on farms), 111,922,423 Ib; cheese (made on farms), 8,362,590 ib; wool, 8,827,195 ib. The estimated value of all farm productions by the census of 1880 was $178,025, 695.

Manufactures.—New York is the first manufacturing State in the Union, and in tlie last decade the value produced has inercased nearly 35 per cent. In 1880 there were in the State 42,739 establishinents, employing a capital

of $514,246,575 and 531,533 hands. The amount paid in wages was $198,634,029; for mate- rials, $679,612,545. The products were valued at $1,080,696,596.

Shipbuilding. —The vessels of all classes built in the State during the fiscal year ending 30th June 1882 numbered 1371, aggregating 282,269 tons. Of these there were 668 sailing vessels of 118,798 tons, 502 steamers of 121,942 tons, 68 canal boats, and 135 barges.

Fisheries.—The chief fishing industry is the taking of menhaden, in value (1880) $1,114,158, and the raising of oysters, value in 1880 $1,577,050, other fisheries $1,689,357. The total number of hands employed in all branches in 1880 was 7266, the amount of capital $2,629,585, and of product $4,380,565; the number of vesscls em- ployed was 541, measuring 11,583 tons, valued at $777,600.

Commerce.—New York, owing to its magnificent seaport and its admirable land and watcr communication, enjoys a large proportion of the national trade. In 1882 the State had in exports and im- ports of merchandize, including specie and bullion, the sum of $894,430,636, or 564 per cent. of the trade of the United States. Of the imports it received and distributed $499, 928,774, and it exported $394,501,862. The amount of internal trade can only be estimated by the value of the tonnage moved. In the year ending 30th September 1882 the arrivals at tide water were 3,068,152 tons, and the internal movement reached 1,361,268, the total value of the property transported being $147,918,907. The freight carried on railroads amounted to 47,350,174 tons, which at the same rate of valuation as that given for canal traffic, $35 per ton, may be set down at $1, 657,256,090, a total value transported of $1,805,174,997.

The value of the freight carried through the Sound, the Hudson river, and the lakes may be estimated at $250,000,000, which would give an aggregate of over $2,000,000,000. Deducting from this gross amount 900 millions, the value of its foreign commerce (imports and exports), the sum of 1000

millions is arrived at as an approximate valuation of the internal trade of the State.

Conveyance.—On the 30th September 1882 there were 326 steam and 81 horse railroads incorporated under the laws of the State. The paid up capital stoek of the stcam roads amountcd to $623,772,211°67 (of which for this State $397,386,453°21), and of the horse roads to $24,068,248°35. The steam roads carried 66,691,562 passengers ; two elevated roads in New York city carried 86,361,029, and the horse roads 277,171,345 passengers. The total of miles of steam roads built and owned by New York companies was 10,058, of whieh 6641 were in New York State. There are twelve canals, of which the Erie is the principal. The total move- ment on all reached 5,467,423 tons in 1882.

Population.—New York has the largest population of any of the States. From official sources the population of the province was given in 1698 at 18,067; in 1708 at 20,665 ; in 1723, 40,564; in 1731, 50,824 ; in 1737, 60,437 ; in 1749, 78,448; in 1756, 96,790; in 1771, 163,337. By the first United States census of 1790 at 340,120; in 1800, 589,051 ; in 1810, 959,049 ; in 1820, 1,372,111; in 1830, 1,918,608; in 1840, 2,428,921; in 1850, 3,097,394; in 1860, 3,880,735 ; in 1870, 4,382,759.

The total population by the census of 1880 was 0,082,871 (2,505,322 males, 2,577,549 females); of these 3,871,492 were native born. The race division was—whitcs, 5,016,022; coloured, 65,104; Chinese and Japanese, 926; Indians, 819.1 There are 59 cities having each a population of over 4000, the principal being New York, 1,206,299; Brooklyn, 566,663; Buffalo, 155,134; Albany, the State capital, 90,758; Rochester, 89,366; Troy, 56,747 ; Syracuse, 51,792; Utica, 33,914; Auburn, 21,924; Oswego, 21,116; Elmira, 20,541; Poughkeepsie, 20,207. There were engaged in agriculture 377,460 persons ; in professional and personal service, 537,897; in trade and transportation, 339,419; and in manufac- tures and mechanieal and mining industries, 629,869. The popu- lation averaged 106°74 persons to the square mile, and occupied 772,512 dwellings. (J. A. S.*)

Il New York Crry.

NEW YORK, the principal city of the United States in Plates

point of wealth and population, and, next to London, the ae

most important commercial and financial centre in the world, hes mainly on Manhattan Island, which is situ- ated at the upperend of New York Bay, between the Hudson River and East River, on the west and east respec- tively, and the Harlem River and Spuyten Duyvil Creek, small connecting tide-ways which separate it from the mainland on the north-east and north. The legal limits of the municipality also include on the northern side a portion of the mainland which formerly constituted the towns of Morrisania, West Farms, and Kingsbridge, the boundary on the N. being the city of Yonkers and on the E. the Bronx and East Rivers, containing in all 413 square miles, or 26,500 acres, of which Manhattan Island makes 22 square miles, or 14,000 acres. They also con- tain the small islands in the East River and New York Bay known as North Brother's, Ward's, Randall's, Blackwell's, Governor's, Bedloe's, Ellis, and the Oyster Islands. The city-hall stands in 40° 42' 43" N. lat. and 74° 0' 3" W? long,, and is about 18 miles distant from the ocean, which is reached through the upper and lower bay, together constituting a harbour of the first order. The upper bay has an area of 14 square miles and the lower bay of 88 square miles of safe anchorage. The ship channels have from 21 to 32 feet and from 27 to 39 feet of water according to the state of the tide. The Hudson and East Rivers also afford the city 13} square miles of good anchorage. The tide rises and falls on the average 43 inches. Manhattan Island, as well as the adjacent country to the north and east, is composed mainly of rocks, chiefly gneiss and mica schist, with heavy inter-

1 This ineludes only Indians subject to taxation. 2New York is 3° E. of Washington. In time it is 12™ before Washington, 55™ before Chicago, 3414™ before San Francisco, and

4b 56™ after Greenwich. XVIL — 58

io

458

calated beds of coarse-grained dolomitic marble and thinner layers of serpentine. These rocks have been usually sup- posed to be Lower Silurian,

but Professor Newberry holds that they have so great a similarity to some portions of the Laurentian range in Canada that it is difficult to resist the conviction that they are of the same period. The deep troughs through which the Hudson and East Rivers now find their way through New York harbour to the ocean are supposed by the same geologist to have been excavated in the late Tertiary period, in which Manhattan Island and the other islands in New York Bay stood much higher than they do now, when Long Island did not exist, and a great sandy plain extended beyond the Jersey coast some 80 miles seaward. Manhattan Island, for half its length from the southern point, slopes on each side from a central ridge. On the upper half of the island the ground rises precipitously from the Hudson River in a narrow line of hill, which again, on the eastern side, sinks rapidly into a plain bordering on the Harlem and East Rivers, and known as Harlem Flats. The surface is throughout rocky, with the exception of this plain, and levelling on a great scale has been necessary in laying out streets. The district beyond the Harlem river, which extends as far north as the city of Yonkers, is traversed by lines of rocky hill running north and south, and still thickly wooded. The original settlement out of which New York has grown was made on the southernmost point of the island, and it has, since the beginning of the 18th century, spread due north and from river to river.

The street called Broadway runs for nearly 3 miles along the crest of the island, forming for that distance the central thoroughfare from which streets spread with some regularity to the water on each side. The lead- ing thoroughfares originally followed the line of the shore, along which the ear- lest buildings were chiefly erected, the central ridge being the last to be occu- pied, until the city reached what is now knownasWall Street, the site of which was|_|/j/SS marked by a rampart |_|_{ji 77! and stockade extend- | J&Z ing from river toriver |) }f across the island. |!) j: Within this space the | streets were laid out]. either as convenience {ff dictated or as old}\ pathways suggested, without any general =e design or any atten- New York in 1695, tion to symmetry, and were named, for the most part, after prominent settlers. The first regular official survey of the city, tracing the line of the streets, was made in 1656, when Wall Street was its northern limit. In 1807 the present plan of the city was adopted, with its broad longitudinal avenues crossed by side streets at right angles, beginning at a point about two miles from the Battery and running the whole Jength of the

island. The erection of buildings along these streets has led to the levelling of the region below the Central Park, but in the park the varied outline which once characterized the whole island is still retained. The precipitous banks of the Hudson river at the upperend have also compelled a treatment in which the original configuration of the ground is pre-

<==

NEW YORK

[orry.

served, and the streets and roadways are adapted to it. The city in its growth northward absorbed several suburban villages known as Greenwich, Harlem, Manhattanville, Fort Washington, Morrisania, and Kingsbridge.

General Aspect.—The appearance of New York every- where but in the leading thoroughfares is usually dis- appointing to strangers. The pavement of all the streets, except Broadway and Fifth Avenue, is bad, and the street, cleaning in all but the principal streets is very defective. The lower part of the city, which is the centre of trade, is generally well kept, and contains a large number of im- posing buildings. Wall Street in particular, which is now, after Lombard Street, the most important haunt of moneyed men in the world, has several banks of effective architecture, together with the United States custom-

New York in 1728,

occupied at its upper end by handsome buildings of vast proportions intended for the offices of merchants and bankers. After the city had spread beyond Wall Street, the well-to-do portion ‘of the population and the leading retailers seem to have clung to Broadway as the great line of traffic and trade. For one hundred years the wealthy residents built their houses along it, or, if in the streets running off from it at right angles, as near it as possible ; and the shops followed them up closely. As population grew during this period the private dwellings of the better class simply moved up farther on Broadway and the adjacent streets, leaving the old houses to be converted into shops. The farther from Broadway, and the nearer the river

on either side, the cheaper land was, and the poorer the class of houses which sprang up on it. This fondness for Broadway in a great degree explains the aspect of the city. About a mile and a half from the Battery, or southernmost point of the island, the cross

crry. |

streets which up to this line are mostly named after local notables of the colonial period, become designated by numbers, and are separated by equal intervals, known as “blocks,” of which twenty form a mile. Up to Eighth Street, Broadway divides the streets which cross it into east and west. After Highth Street, Fifth Avenue, which begins at a handsome square, known as the Washington Square, lying a short distance west of Broadway, becomes the dividing line, and continues to be so out to the Harlem River, a distance of 8 miles. Broadway at Fourteenth Street runs into Union Square, which contains statues of Washington (equestrian), La Fayette, and Lincoln, and is surrounded by large shops; it then trends westerly to- wards the Hudson River, and thus crosses Fifth Avenue (which runs due north) at Twenty-Third Street, where it enters Madison Square, another open space, on the west side of which are clustered several of the largest hotels in the city. Fifth Avenue has played for the last forty years the same part, as the fashionable street, which Broadway played in the preceding period. It was long the ambition of wealthy men to live in it. It is lined from Washington Square to the Central Park, a distance of 3 miles, with costly houses, mostly of brown stone and red brick, without much architectural pretension, and producing from the preponderance of the brown stone a somewhat monotonous effect, but perhaps unequalled any- where as the indication of private wealth. Fashion has long permitted, and of late has encouraged, resort to the side streets as places of abode, but the rule is neverthe- less tolerably rigid that one must not go beyond Fourth Avenue, two blocks on the east side, or Sixth Avenue, one block on the west side, if one wishes to live in a good quarter. Within the district thus bounded the city presents a clean and orderly appearance, but mainly owing to the exertions of the householders themselves.!

Llarbour Defence.—For this the city depends on forts situated at the western entrance to Long Island Sound, at the Narrows (a passage between

the upper and lower bays), and in the harbour itself. All these are confessedly powerless against a fleet armed with modern ordnance. The forts at the entrance of the Sound are Fort Schuyler, situated on Throgg's Neck, and a fort on Willett's Point on the opposite shore. The defences at the Narrows consist of Forts Wadsworth and Tompkins and several detached batteries on the Staten Island shore, and of Fort Hamilton and several batteries on the opposite Long Island shore. The forts in the bay are small and weak structures, and comprise Fort Columbus, Castle William, and some batteries, all on Governor's Island, and Fort Gibson on

1 When the present street plan was adopted, no arrangement was made for back entrances to the houses as in Boston and Philadelphia, and the consequence is that all ashes and refuse have to be removed by a front door, and are placed in barrels on the sidewalk in the morning to await the arrival of the municipal scavenger carts, which is very uncertain as to time. The streets, consequently, are defaced for half the day by these unsightly accumulations. In the better quarters the inhabitants avoid this by having their refuse removed at their own cost by dustmen who enter the houses for it. They have the streets in front of the houses swept in the same way to make up for the defects of the municipal street cleaning. When we pass out of this favoured region we find the garbage and ashes heaped in front of the doors, and the streets impeded by carts and waggons which their owners, in disregard of the municipal ordinances, are allowed to keep standing out of doors, thus saving themselves the expense of coach-houses. Consequently, all that portion of New York which does not lie within a quarter of a mile of Broadway or Fifth Avenue presents a spectacle of dirt and disorder and bad pavement for which it would be difficult to find a parallel in other great capitals. The fine and well-kept part of the city nowhere touches on the rivers or approaches them, but runs in a long central line north and south, and the river banks are lined by wooden wharves. Some part of this neglect to beautify the city is due to the rapidity of its growth, some to defects in the plan on which itis laid out, but more to the badness of the municipal government.

Ellis Island. Fort La Fayette, made famous during the war of the rebellion as a prison, was destroyed by fire in 1868, and Bedloe's Island, on which stood Fort Wood, is now given up for the reception of Bartholdi's statue of Liberty.

HMistory.—The history of the first Dutch settlements at Manhattan, and of their transference to England, is sketched in the article on New York Srare. Down to the Revolution the history of the city is to all intents and purposes that of the province at large. The population grew slowly but steadily, and so did the trade of the place, —the Dutch language and influence, however, gradually giving way to the English. During the Revolution the city, while containing a large body of loyalists, shared in the main in the feelings and opinions of the rest of the country, but was cut off from active participation in the struggle by being occupied at a very early period of the war by the British troops, and it was the scene of their final departure from American soil on November 25, 1782. Since the Revolution its history has been principally the record of an enormous material growth, the nature and extent of which are described in other parts of this article. It was the capital of the State of New York from 1784 to 1797, though the legislature met several times during this period at Albany and Poughkeepsie. From 1785 to 1790 it was the seat of the general Government, and there the first inauguration of Washington to the presidency occurred on the 30th of April 1789.

Population.—The population of New York, in spite of the great attractions of the site, increased very slowly for the first century after its settlement. When the Revolution began it amounted to less than 22,000, and the city stood far below Boston and Philadelphia in importance. It was, too, dominated to a degree unknown in the other Northern States by the landowners whose estates lined the Hudson as far up as Albany, and who played the leading part in society and politics. The original constitution of colonial society was thoroughly aristocratic, and it was main- tained almost intact until after the Revolution, the large landed estates along the Hudson being still held by the descendants of the original Dutch grantees, and let on tenures which were essentially feudal in their character. In spite of the large influx of settlers from New England and other parts of the country, the Revolution found the Dutch elements in New York society still strong, if

not dominant, and the political ascendency of the terri. torial families on the Hudson on the whole but little diminished. After the Revolution the growth of the city population became more rapid, but it did not reach 100,000 until 1815, nor 160,000 until 1825. From this date it grew by leaps and bounds until it reached, in 1880, 1,206,299,? although a large body of persons whose business lies in New York reside in Brooklyn or Jersey City, on the other side of the East and Hudson Rivers respectively, or in the lesser suburbs, and are not included in the census return, At the end of 1883 the population was estimated at 1,337,325. The impetus which the population received in 1825 was due to the opening of the canal connecting the Hudson with Lake Erie, which made New York the commercial entrepot for a vast and fertile region such as lay behind no other port on the eastern coast. The tendency of foreign trade to con- centrate at New York, which has since reduced many small but once flourishing ports along the Atlantic coast, and has taken away from Boston and Philadelphia a good

2 The following are the numbers given in the different United States census returns:—in 1790, 33,131; in 1800, 60,515; in 1810, 96,373 ; in 1820, 123,706; in 1830, 202,589; in 1840, 312,710; in 1850, 515,547; in 1860, 813,6695 in 1870, 942,292; in 1880,

1,206,299

deal of the chief source of their early prosperity, at once began to show itself, and has apparently lost none of its force since the railways came into use to supplement or supersede the canals.

In considering New York as a commercial port, the popu- lation of several suburbs within 10 or 15 miles radius should be taken along with it. Including only that of Brooklyn (556,663) and of Jersey City (120,722), the total would be 1,883,684. Of the 1,206,299 forming the population of the municipality of New York proper in 1880, 478,670, or nearly one-third, were of foreign birth. Of these 163,482 were Germans and 198,595 Irish, forming together by far the largest and most important part of the foreign element. Of the total population, 336,137 are males above the voting age, and the females exceed the males by about 25,000. In the native Ameri- can

population, amounting to 727,629, there are 647,399 natives of the State of New York, only 80,330 coming from other States. New Jersey furnishes the largest contingent, Pennsylvania, Massachusetts, and Connecticut following next, though every State and Territory in the Union contributes something. There are no means of ascertaining the proportion of the inhabitants born within the city limits ; it is probably smaller than even in London or Paris.

The heterogeneous character of the population, however, so largely composed of persons who come from widely different parts of the globe to seek their fortune, while infusing great energy into commercial and industrial operations, has had an unfortunate effect on the municipal life of the place. It has prevented the growth of a healthy local pride among the successful men of business, many of whom labour with the intention of passing their closing years elsewhere, a sentiment particularly strong among the prosperous New Englanders, whose affections are very apt to be fixed on the place of their birth. The result is that, considering the very large fortunes which have been made in the city during the last century, it has profited but little, compared with others in America, by the gifts or endowments of its wealthy men. The same cause has operated to some extent to prevent hearty co-operation in municipal affairs. The inhabitants of the different nation- alities live much apart, both in politics and in society. The Germans, whose social life is very active, give but little attention to local politics, although they form, owing to their intelligence, order, and industry, a very valuable element in the population. Germans head a good many of the principal banking and commercial houses. A considerable proportion of those settled in New York are skilled artisans; cabinetmaking and upholstering in particular are largely in their hands. They supply also most of the music of the city, do nearly all its brewing and a considerable portion of its baking, and furnish a very large contingent in the work of all the leading manu- factures. They supply comparatively few of the domestics of either sex, or of the manual labourers. Difference of language, combined with the absence of political training at home, keeps the Germans from taking a very active part in politics, except to resist some of the attempts at restrictive legislation directed against their beer drinking and Sunday amusements, which the American temperance advocates frequently make. As a rule it may be said that the prominent Germans in the city, like the Catholic Irish, belong to the Democratic party.

The port of New York is the great gateway for Immigrants coming to the United States. Of the 7,882,783 immigrants who have come to the country from the years 1855 to 1882 inclusive, 5,169,765 have landed at New York city. The largest number landed there in One year was 476,086 in 1882. Germany sends the

lorry,

greatest number, Ireland coming next, England third, and Sweden fourth, From 1847 to 1881 inclusive the German immigrants arriving in New York have numbered 2,498,595 ; the Irish, 2,171,982; the English, 834,328 ; and the Swedish, 208,505. The total number of immigrants landed at New York during the years 1858 to 1862 inclu- sive was 404,918 ; from 1863 to 1867 it was 1,009,641; from 1868 to 1872, 1,209,011; from 1873 to 1877, 614,219; in 1878 it was 75,347; in 1879, 135,070; in

1880, 327,371; in 1881, 455,681; in 1882, 476,086; and

in the first six months of 1883 it was 257,635. The Irish emigrants who settle in New York are to a considerable extent a deposit left by the stream of emigration which enters the country at that port. The more energetic and thoughtful, and those who have any money, push on to the west ; the penniless and the shiftless are apt to stay where they land, and furnish the city with most of its unskilled labour, although of late years they have been exposed to considerable competition from Italians, mainly from southern Italy. The resource of a large number of the more pushing is apt to be liquor dealing, which generally brings them influence in ward politics, and secures recognition from the party leaders as a means of communicating with and controlling the rank and file. The great body of the porters and waiters in the hotels and second-class restaurants, of the carters and hackney-coach drivers, a large proportion of the factory workers, and almost the entire body of household servants are Irish also, and for the most part a saving and industrious body.

The social life of New York in the earlier days, and, in fact, down to 1825, took its tone from the landholding aristocracy. Social traditions were,

however, principally Dutch, and were characterized by the simplicity and frugality of that people. As the place grew in wealth and population, the ascendency of the old Dutch families was gradually lost. The successful commercial men who came to New York from all parts of the country became the real local magnates, and business prosperity became the chief sign and cause of social distinction. This state of things still exists. There is no other city in the United States in which money gives a man or woman so much social weight, and in which it exercises so much influence on the manners and amusements, and meets with so little com- petition from literary, artistic, or other eminence. The luxury of domestic life is carried to a degree unequalled in any other city. The entertainments are numerous and costly, and the restaurants, of which Delmonico's is the chief, have achieved a world-wide fame. The number of horses and equipages has greatly increased within twenty years under the stimulus given by the opening of Central Park, the drives of which on fine after- noons in April and May and the early part of June present a scene of great brilliancy. The city is, however, almost completely deserted during the summer months by the wealthy, who fly to country houses along the coast from New Jersey as far up as the province of New Brunswick, or to the mineral springs of Saratoga, or to Europe. Thirty years ago it was the ambition of rich men to own country houses along the Hudson river, the scenery of which possesses great grandeur, but its banks have of late been infested by malaria, and for this and other reasons the tide of fashion has been turned to the seaside, 'and more particularly to Newport in Rhode Island, which is now a city of marine villas. For people of small means New York is slenderly provided with summer entertain- ments, except such as are afforded by the beauty of the suburbs and by the many water-side resorts within easy reach on the Hudson, the New Jersey coast, and Long Island Sound, and especially at Coney Island, which is really a continuation of the sandy beach that extends all

crry. |

along the south side of Long Island. Its western extremity is distant from the Battery about 8} miles in a straight line, and its extreme length is about 5 miles. Since 1874, when capitalists suddenly woke up to the capabilities of the spot, a number of favourite resorts have sprung up on the island, with

monster hotels, in one of which as many as four thousand people can dine at once, con- veniences for surf-bathing, and a great variety of amuse- ments. The island is reached by steam and horse cars, by steamboats, and by carriages. The Germans have beer gardens on a grand scale, both on Manhattan Island and elsewhere which they frequent in vast numbers. The Irish organize picnics to groves and woods along the Hudson and Kast Rivers, which are let for that purpose. Excursions by water down the harbour and up Long Island Sound are very numerous. For this species of amusement there are few cities in the world so well situated.

New York has about thirty places of amusement using scenery, not including a few small variety theatres of little importance ; of all these the Metropolitan Opera House is much the largest. Its stage is 96 feet wide, 76 feet deep, and 120 feet high. There are seventeen outside entrances, six of them 10 feet wide; and the whole structure is fire-proof. The chief foyer is 34 feet wide and 82 feet long, with a parlour so connected that the foyer can be used as a lecture-room, the parlour giving place for a stage. The seating capacity of the auditorium is about three thousand. Of the other theatres the largest are Miner's Bowery, Miner's Eighth Avenue, Academy of Music, M'Kee Rankin's, Niblo's, Fourteen Street Theatre (Haverly's), Thalia, Criterion, London, Harrigan and Hart's, Cosmo- politan, Fifth Avenue, Star, Twenty-third Street, Union Square. Beside the theatres there are two fine concert and lecture-rooms—Steinway Hall and Chickering Hall.

The clubs of New York may be divided into two classes, —the political and social, and the purely social. To the former belong the Manhattan and the Union League; to the latter the Century (1847), Harmonie (1852), Knicker- bocker (1871), Lotus (1870), New York, St Nicholas, Union (1836), and University (1865). The Manhattan Club (with some 570 members) is the local club of the Democratic party, founded during the closing years of the civil war, and reorganized in 1877. The Union League Club was founded in 1863, in order to give to the Federal administration during the war the organized support of wealthy and influential men in the city, and it has been ever since the Republican social organization of the city. The Century Club represents literature, art, and the learned professions, and owns a valuable collection of pictures and a well-selected library. All the members of the Harmonie Club speak German. The original plan of the Lotus Club looked

to a membership of literary men and artists, and members of the musical and dramatic pro- fessions,

Edueation.—The Dutch West India Company, which scttled the island of Manhattan, was bound by its charter to provide school- masters as well as ministers for its colonists. The company conse- queutly maintained schools from the beginning, and private schools were also soon established, and drew pupils even from other colonies. When the colony passed into the possession of England, the schools of the city still eontinued in the hands of the Dutch Church and miuisters, and were supported by them, receiving little or no aid from the Government. to hasten the substitution of the English for the Dutch language in the colony led to an attempt by the colonial Government to reserve to itself the appointment of the schoolmasters, but it was not suc- cessful. Down to the middle of the 17th century the bulk of the population remained Dutch, and the support and control of the schools remained with the Dutch Church. The only outward sign of the growth of English influence during this period was the estab- lishment of the still existing Trinity school, in 1710, in connexion with the Anglican Church. About the middle of the century the

New Yr RK

Ata later period, the desire of the new rulers |

461

tide of English emigration, which has never since ceased, began to flow in, and English influence in educational matters began to gain the ascendency. In 1754 King’s College, afterwards Columbia College, was established, and, after a short struggle to preserve it from denominational control, became distinctively an Anglican institution. Before the Revolution the English language had practically carried the day, and taken possession of the schools, colleges, and churches ; but the political troubles which preceded the outbreak of the war, and the occupation of the city by the royal army during the war, closed them all, and for nearly ten years sus- pended all educational progress.

It was not until over ten years after the Revolution that the State legislature took any steps for the establishment of a system of popular education in the State at large. But within three years after the peace the beginnings were made in New York in the form which has made the educational history of the city so peculiar, namely, as a charitable organization. In 1785 the Manumission Society established free schools for the poor coloured children of the city, and they were continued under the same auspices until 1794. A Quaker society, known as the ‘‘ Female Association for the Relief of the Poor,” in like manner opened a school for white girls in 1802, and the organization extended its operations and continued them until 1846. It was the means of suggesting the formation in 1805 of the association known as the ‘‘ Free School Society,” and after- wards as the ‘‘ Public School Society,” which has played so im- portant a part in the education in New York. These were both charitable societies, and at first only sought to provide for children unconnected with the churches of various denominations, all of which maintained schools of theirown. Of the Free School Society the mayor, recorder, aldermen, and assistant aldermen were made ex-officio members, and membership was open to all citizens offering contributions to the funds. This socicty was in 1826 converted into a still larger and more powerful one with a new charter, called the Public School Society, which continued to have charge of popular education in the city until 1853. It was supported in part by voluntary contributions, in part by subscriptions from those who desired to share in its management, and in a small degree by a con- tribution from the school fund of the State. For fifty years it may be said to have done all that was done for popular education in New York city, and its existence caused the exemption of the city for nearly thirty years from the operation of the common-school system established in the rest of the State, under which the scliools were managed by trustees clected by the voters of each school district. During its existence 600,000 children passed through its schools, and it expended every year a large and increasing revenue, and when dissolved turned over $600,000 to the city. It gradually became plain, however, that the work of popular education in a large city was too great to be carried on by a charitable association, however able or energetic. In 1842 New York was brought under the system prevailing in the rest of the State, but the Public School Society was permitted to continue its existence and retain control of its own schools. It was found, after a few years’ trial, that the society could not flourish in

competition with the official organiza- tion, and in 1853 it was voluntarily dissolved, and its schools and property handed over to the city authorities, by whom the work of popular education has ever since been carried on.

The municipal board of education was at first composed of repre- sentatives elected by the different wards, but in 1864 the city was divided into school districts of equal school population, each of which sends three commissioners to the board. ‘The ward schools were left in the control of elected trustees, subject only to a some- what ill-defined power of supervision at the hands of a central board. This was found to work so badly, owing to the low character of many of the elected trustees, that in 1873 the whole system was reorganized. The power of appointing the twenty-one commissioners of the board of education, and three inspectors for each of the eight school dis- tricts, was given to the mayor, and to the commissioners the power of appointing five school trustees for cach ward. The commissioners and inspectors hold office for three years, and trustees for five. As an outgrowth of the common-school system there is a normal college for the education of teachers, with a model school connected with it, and also the college of the city of New York, which began in 1848 as a free academy for the advanced pupils who had left the comnion schools. It was empowered to grant degrees in 1854, and was formally converted into a university in 1866.

The total number of scholars attending the city schools in 1882 was 289,917, and the number of professors and teachers employed was 2544. An Act providing for compulsory education was passed by the legislature in 1874, and came into operation in the city in 1875. It compels every person in the control or charge of any children between the ages of eight and fourteen to cause them to attend some public or private school at least fourteen weeks in cael year, eight weeks of which are to be consecutive, or the pupils are to be instructed regularly at home at least fourteen weeks in each year in spelling, reading, writing, English grammar, and arithmetic. The Jaw is enforced in the city by the city superintendent, who has twelve assistants known as “agents of truancy.”

The schools, colleges, ana other institutions not eonnectcd officially with the Government are very numerous, beginning with Columbia College, founded in 1754, and now the oldest university in the State, and the richest in the United States. Though not formally denominational, it is managed chiefly by members of the Protestant Episcopal Church. It has well-equipped law, medical, and mining schools, besidcs its academic department, a library of about 20,000 volumes, and a rapidly growing income from advance of its property in the city. There are also several denominational eolleges belonging to Catholics, which offer a full course from the primary to the most advanced stage ; and two theological seminaries, one the Protestant Episcopal, and the other the Union Theological Seminary, belonging to the Presbyterians. The endowment of the non-sectarian University of the City of New York is small, so that it makes but little figure in the edueational field. ‘There are also numerous medical colleges, and a large number of private schools frequented by children of the wealthier classes. ;

Libraries.—The principal public libraries are the Astor Library, the Mercantile Library, and the New York Society Library, which have been described in vol. xiv. pp. 535, 536. ;

Periodical Press.—There is probably nothing in which New York more nearly occupies the place of a metropolis than in the position of its periodical press towards that of the rest of the country. See NEWSPAPERS, supra, p. 434, The modern American newspaper may indeed be said to have originated in New York, which is naturally the chief centre for foreign news, as well as the chief financial and commereial centre, and the chief entrepot of foreign goods. In fact, as early as 1840 it had become plain that any one proposing to address the whole country through the press could address it more effectively from New York than from any other point. As popula- tion has spread and other cities have grown in wealth and numbers, New York newspapers have of course lost more or less of their early superiority, but they are still more widely read than any others, and absorb more of whatever journalistic talent there may be in the country. In the field of literary and artistic and musical criticism they are exposed to but little eompetition from any quarter. The periodical literature of the city is now very large; there is hardly an interest or shade of opinion, religious or

political, which does not possess a New York organ, as the subjoined table will show:—

Periodicals published in New York City, May 1, 1883.

BS 35 | 3 eto Weel Class. 2] s Ss] 3 =

lo) en) ee te |

a\a| 3 Fel # /2/8| 2

Alal = ha) Ss |Rle]s Commerce, finance, and tradcs……. WI 4 62 15 49) 1 aaa AVEIRO snenevecsensnsascceeieensvesceetomeretere tees “pn || 2 435) | | ae: General literature…... eocsed||cos || eco |) BILL esti) 2a os 58 News and polities……. 14/4) 27 lees : 46 Science and mechanic 13 4] 19 aan) 20 Medicine and surgery. 4 15 | 1) 4) 24 Society and fashions… BS jh tee || tls} 2a) es AWC RtON sic… cseses cones eee || coe 1 4) 11 1 17 Music, art, drama……...0… ay| dibessd) Je 1 4 cop {| 318} SUVEMILCMIPETR GUNG. .cc-c.-sesccessecereesereonelisee ees 7 il 4 |, Ue AM OLICUILUEE Ri Oacccs .nescsscecstecnoeencseee cen eeliece oe || aa || UD || 12 SPOUUM prec: coassercenevenc trace eeence cee se lees mal) 2S 1 i coo || dle) Wig wane sceee sneer tye eens eee eee ee OH hee ca eee 1 1 8 ELEN OF OUSivestiscestesseces s-steecessccescccsee osteo: Ge || Gon aaa 4 SaMitAPy STO IECEON sss osctescecsesscoern tee lace 2 ABA 2. Polities‘and! literature… ...-<:c2els.cescesecseel oes nee 1 1 Class, secret society, and miscellaneous |...|...| 10 | ... 4 |iccailpee! 15 In foreign languages……...cccccccsccsssssceees 11; 1 | 42 0° | LG Se feses 7 39| 9 | 261 | 38 209 | 3 | 14 | 573

Churches, Religion, and Charities.—In the abscuce of official returns as to churehes and religious denominations, the most trustworthy statistics are those of the City Missionary Socicty, which puts the number of places of religious worship in the city, including halls, chapels, and missions, at 489. Of these, 349 are ehurches properly so-called, each with a fixed congregation, and a settled pastor and a building appropriated to its own use. They are divided as follows among the various denominations:— Protes- tant Episcopal, 72; Roman Catholic, 57; Methodist Episcopal, 48; Presbyterian, 41; Baptist, 38; Jewish synagogues, 25; Luthcran, 21; Dutch

Reformed, 20; African Methodist Episcopal, 7; United Presbyterian, 6; Congregational, 5; Universalist, 4; Unitarian, 3; Quakers, 2; ‘‘ miscellaneous,” 23. This last term covers spiri- tualists and radicals of various shades, who, without having any fixed creed, or definite object of worship, meet on Sunday for speculative or ethical discussion.

The Roman Catholic Church lays claim to 500,000 worshippers, or nearly half the population, which is probably a considerable exaggeration, as its hold on the natives is, beyond question, very slight, and the total foreign population of the city does not reach 500,000. The Irish are almost wholly Catholie, as are the majority of the Germans, and nearly all the French, Italians, and other per- sons of foreign birth. The Catholic increase, too, is derived almost

Yo hk

exclusively from foreign immigration. The pricsts are mainly Irish and German, the higher clergy being almost exclusively Irish eithcr by birth or parentage. There is, too, a considerable Catholic element in social life, composed of the well-to-do French and German and Trish and Spanish, who, however, confine theniselyes very much to the company of persons of their own creed.

All the places of worship in the city of one sort or another, taken together, are supposed to contain 375,000 sittings. The Protestant denominations lay claim to 83,400 communicants and 400,000 attendants or supporters. The value of all the church buildings, including the ground on which they stand, is estimated at $40,000,000. The annual ehurch expenses, including the ministers’ salaries, are supposed to be $3,000,000. There are connected with the churches 418 Sunday schools, with an average attendance of 115,826 pupils. There are also in the city 326 local charitable institutions, of which 261 are Protestant, 38 are Roman Catholic, 18 are Jewish, and the rest are not classified. They disburse annually about $4,000,000. The most remarkable and successful of these charities is undoubtedly the Children’s Aid Society, which was founded in 1853 by Mr Charles Loring Brace, the present secretary, for the purpose of helping friendless street children, especially street boys, both by sending them to the west and by opening schools and lodging-houses for them in the eity. Since it began its work

67,287 children have been, by its agency, sent away from the city to country homes. During the year 1882 the society gave 14,122 boys and girls 230,968 lodgings in its six lodging- houses, of whieh 173,152 were paid for by the lodgers themselves ; and it furnished them with 305,524 meals at low rates or free. The income of the society has risen from $4,732°78 in 1853 to $237,624 in 1882 from subscriptions and endowments.

The richest and most fashionable denomination is the Protestant Episcopal, and it is the one which seenis to grow most by accretion from the native population. On the' other hand, while the Baptists and Methodists lave always flourished in New York, the two denominations which owed thcir origin in the United States ehiefly to New England—the Unitarians and Congregationalists—have never taken deep root in the city.

Municipal Charttics.—The municipal charities are in the hands of a department of the eity government called the Commissioners of Charities and Correction, consisting of three commissioners appointed by the mayor, who have charge of all prisons for persons awaiting trial, of all city hospitals, almshouses, workhouses, and lunatic asylums, and of the penitentiary and city prisons. Most of these institutions are situated on small islands in the East River, known as Blackwell's, Ward's, Randall's, and Hart's Islands, the last-named containing a municipal industrial school.

Two eharities are, however, exempt from the control of the department. One, the House of Refnge on Randall's Island, which is the property of a private corporation that reccives vagrant and disorderly children, aud gets its income partly from the labour of the inmates, partly from the proceeds of theatrical licenees granted by the city, and partly from State grants. The other is the Juvenile Asylum, which also is managed by a private association, and partly supported by State grants. The influence of political partisanship on the appointment of the officers under the control of the department of charities and correction has been found to result in such serious defects of management, as regards the hospitals and charities especially, that a voluntary association, composcd mainly of ladies, and known as the State Charities Aid Association, was formed in New York some years ago, and has obtained from the legislature powers of compulsory inspection. Its volunteer visitors are thus enabled to visit and

examine all the institutions belonging to the city, as well as those of the State at large, and report on their condition both to the public and to the superiors of the officers eriticized. The emigrants, of whom by far the greater por- tion pass through New York, are also placed in charge of Commis- sioners of Emigration, appointed by the mayor, whose duty is to afford all information and assistance which helpless strangers are likely to require on thcir first arrival in a foreign country. Their duties include also the discovery on shipboard, and detention for return to the country of their origin, of all paupers, cripples, and insane persons or others who are likely to become a eharge to the city. These functions are discharged in a huge wooden structure known as Castle Garden, on the southernmost point of Manhattan Island, at the lower end of Broadway. Thcir magni- tude varies from year to year. In 1883 about 405,000 emigrants of all ages and both scxes passed through the hands of the com- missioners,

Government and, Administration.—During the first stage of the colony the government was to all intents and purposes a military one. The governor, or director-general, appointed by the Dutch East India Company, cxereised virtually absolute power, subject, of course, to the distant eontrol of the directors in Holland. In 1652 the town received municipal magistrates appointed for one year by the director-general. They held office at his will, and were liable to have their decisions overruled by him on appeal ; but, subject to these conditions, they possessed the powers and

[orry.

N E W

exercised the functions of corresponding officers in the Dutch municipalities at home. This form of government continued until after the conquest of the colony by the English, when the so-called ‘‘ Duke’s Laws” were proclaimed, and, on June 12, 1665, all the inhabitants of Manhattan Island were declared a body politie and corporate. The first formal charter, known as the Dongan charter, was bestowed on the city in 1686. The recorder, mayor, aldermen, and assistants were to constitute the body cor- porate, but the mayor, recorder, sheriff, and other superior officers were to be appointed yearly by the lieutenant-governor of the pro- vince, while the aldermen and assistants (who together with the mayor and recorder

constituted the common council) and the petty constables were to be elected by a majority of the freemen and free- holders of each ward. In 1730 the eharter was again amended, and took the form known as the Montgomery charter, reserving the appointment of a mayor and recorder still to the crown, and pro- viding for the annual election by the people of the aldermen and assistants, constables, assessors, and collectors. The frecdom of the city was purchasable from the corporation for five pounds, and was necessary to the pursuit of any trade or handicraft within its limits. This charter continued in force for nearly a century. It was con- firmed by the State constitution of 1777 adopted after the out- break of the Revolution, and again by the revised constitution of 1821, and has furnished, in fact, the framework of the city govern- ment down to the present day. The power which it gave the cor- poration of fixing the price of all articles sold in the city market was exercised till the Revolution. It was not essentially altered until 1831, when among other minor changes the common council was divided into two boards. The appointment of the mayor re- mained in the hands of the governor and council until the Revolu- tion, when it was transferred by the State constitution to the governor and council of appointment which shared with him the appointing power. By the amended State constitution of 1821, the duty of electing the mayor annually was imposed on the eommou council, and so continued until 1834, when provision was made by statute for his election by a vote of the qualified city electors. This charter continued in force without material moditi- cation until 1857.

The revised State constitution of 1846 introduced manhood suffrage, and its effect on the city government during the first ten years gave considerable dissatisfaction. It came into operation simultaneously with a great increase in the stream of foreign immigration, most of which passed through New York on its way westward, but not without leaving behind a sediment, composed of the poorest, the most ignorant, and the most vicious. The result was that a very inferior class of men began to find their way into the mayoralty and the common council. The liquor dealers and others of a similar stamp, whose occupations gave them access to, and influence over, the more ignorant voters, began to assume in- ercasing importance in municipal politics, becoming able to impose conditions on candidates for office and to exercise considerable control over the distribution of

municipal patronage. The police force was gradually converted into a refuge of political partisans, and was employed without scruple in electioneering. Every political department of the city government suffered more or less from the same causes. The great political club known as the Tammany Society, which was formed in 1789 asa non-political patriotic organization, professedly to couuteract the aristocratic tendencies of the Order of the Cincinnati, and which had long been the managing body of the Democratic party in the city, was much strengthened by the increase of the immigrant vote, and its government was also affected for the worse by the same influences to which the city government was exposed. During these years, however, the Republican party, as the opponent of slavery, was slowly rising into prominence in State and Federal politics on the rnins of the old Whig party. By the year 1857 it had gained a majority of the voters of the State outside of the city, secured the eontrol of the State legislature, aud elected a governor. It was not very long in power in the State at large before it determined to take the government of the city of New York, to a certain extent, out of the hands of the local majority by giving portions of it to commissions appointed by the governor. There was perhaps reason enough for the experiment to be found in the condition of the municipal administration, but it was unfortunate that it had to be made by a political party to which the local majority did not belong. This gave it an air of partisanship, and exposed it to the charge of being simply an attempt to put the Republican party in possession of a portion of the city patronage, which it eould not get hold of in any other way, and to punish the city voters for being Democratic and standing by the South in the slavery con- troversy. native-born and the property holders to escape the inevitable

cIry. |

1 The legal title of the corporation is now the ‘‘ Mayor, Aldermen, and Com- monalty of the City of New York,” and the legislative branch consists of a board of twenty-four aldermen, who constitute the common council, and are clected by a majority vote, onc from each electoral district, within the city limits, which sends a member to the State assembly.

It was in reality, however, an effort on the part of the.

result of a sudden increase in the power of the ignorant and poor in a great commercial city.

Accordingly, in the spring of 1857, the charter was so modified by the legislature as to give the construction of a park, known as the Central Park, for which provision had just been made, to a commission appointed by the governor. The police was in like manner taken out of the hands of tle mayor and given to a similar commission. 'The mayor then in office, Fernando Wood, attempted forcible resistance to this change on the ground that the statute was unconstitutional. He barricaded himself in the city-hall surrounded by his policemen, and had to be ousted and arrested by the aid of the militia. Ever since 1857 interference of the State in the city government has been frequent, and alterations of the charter have been mado or attempted almost every year with the view mainly of effecting a new distribution of the city patronage, sometimes as the result of a change in the majority of the legis- lature, and sometimes as the result of a bargain between the Republican leaders in the legislature aud the Democratic leaders in the city. But the policy of withdrawing or withholding power from the common council has through all these changes been steadily adhered to on both sides, owing to distrust of the persons now usually elected to that body.

During the war, and for scveral years afterwards, the art of managing the city voters of the Democratic party through the political club known as the Tammany Society was continually improved under the leadership of William M. Tweed, who had succecded Fernando Wood as the municipal chief of his party. Before 1870 he had brought the city majority under his control through a very perfect organization, and had filled the mayoralty and all the leading adininistrative offices as well as the common eouncil with his creatures. He thereupon began an elaborate system of plunder, of which the main feature was the presentation of enormous bills for work done on a new court-house then in process of erection by city tradesmen acting as his confederates. To these he paid a portion only of their demands, retaining the balance, which he divided in certain proportions with his principal followers. The total amount taken from the city treasury in this and similar ways was never clearly ascertained, but the city debt, which was apparently a little over $73,000,000 in 1870, was, when the liabilities were

fully ascertained in 1876, found to be nearly $117,000,000. These frauds, which had been long suspected, were finally brought to light by the treachery of one of the con- spirators, who was dissatisfied with his share. But their success and the length of time which had elapsed before their detection were, eonsideriug the very large number of persons who had been made privy to them, and who had been admitted as partners in their results, a remarkable illustration of the perfection to which . the system lad been brought. The overthrow and punishinent of the leading perpetrators of them greatly purified the municipal admiuistration, and lcd to a watchfulness on the part of the public regarding inunicipal affairs which promises, as long as it lasts, to make a repetition of them impossible. In fact, they could not have been perpetrated without a combination which included all the ehief city officers; and this could not have been effected, and as a matter of fact was not effected, without many years of carcful, and, to a certain extent, unobserved preparation. The grcat source of corruption in the city government is the practice of treating places in the municipal service as what are called party "spoils," or, in other words, as rewards for electioneering services. This practice, which has prevailed in the Federal as well as in the State service all over the country, is of older growth in the State of New York than elsewhere, having shown itself there very soon after the Revolution. It has been much weakened, however, in New York by an Act of the legislature, passed in 1873, which forbids the removal of any regular clerk or head of bureau in the service of the city government, except for cause, and after an informal trial. The police and fire departments are protected in a similar way; but this does not relieve the clected officers from the necessity of purchasing their nominations by such promises as still remain in their power to carry out, such as contributions from their salaries, or the filling of vacancies occurring within their departments, or the employment of labourcrs in any public work of which they may have charge. A more recent Act of the legis- lature (1883) prescribes competitive examination as a basis for appointment to all Statc offices, and forbids, under heavy penalties, all assessments on salaries for political purposes ; but its applica- tion to the large cities as regards competitive examinations is left optional with the mayor, and with the heads of certain depart- ments. As the chartcr stands at present, the legislative power of the board of aldermen is restricted to the regulation of the traflie in the streets, the granting of licences to street vendors, the opening of new streets, and

similar matters. Their confirmation is, however, necessary to the mayor's appointment to office. The amount of taxes for each year is fixed by the board called the board of apportionment, composed of the mayor, the comptroller, the president of the board of aldermen, and the president of the department of taxes and assessments, The estimate so made is

464 NE W

laid before the board of aldermen for their approval, but this is a mere form, for, if the aldermen refuse sueh approval, the board of apportionment disregards the refusal and goes on to levy the taxes, atter having placed on file their reasons for so doing. Moreover, the aldermen are expressly forbidden by the charter to impose taxes, or borrow money, or eontraet debts, or lend the eredit of the eity, or to take or make a lease of any real estate or franchise save at a reasonable rent and for a period not exceeding five years, Taxation.—For purposes of taxation New York is a county as well as a city, the two being conterminous. The city taxes, when settled by the mayor, eomptroller, president of the board of aldermen, and president of the board of assessments and taxes, forming the board of apportionment, are levied by the same officers, forming the board of eounty supervisors, upon all the real and personal property in the county, and in this levy is included the amount needed for State purposes, the city's share of which is settled by a State board. The rule on whieh the New York taxes are levied is that which prevails with but little modification allover

the United States, though applied with much more rigour in some

States than in others, viz., that every speeies of property, visible and invisible, is liable to taxation. In New York city it is the custom of the appraisers to tax land and houses at about two-thirds of their market value. The amount assessed on personal property is generally inereased in successive years, until the owner gainsays the assessor's guess, but his oath is suffieient proof for its reduction. In other words, it may be said that the attempt to tax personal property in the city, except in the case of corporations, has failed. The eity tax levy for 1881 amounted to $31,071,840°19, and the rate of the tax was $2°62 per cent. on the valuation of all kinds of taxable property. There is a steady inerease in the valuation

of land and houses, but a nearly steady deerease in the valuation of personal property.

Courts and Police.—The city has three courts of record, of which two, the superior court and court of eommon pleas, possess con- eurrent jurisdietion with the supreme court of the State in all eases in which the cause of action has arisen within the county, or in which the property or other thing in dispute lies within the county, or in which the defendant is a resident. Eaeh court has six judges, eleeted by popular vote for a term of fourteen years. The supreme court can, however, remove any eause from either of these courts by order on notice, and take jurisdiction of them itself, but in that case the trial must take place in another county. The third, formerly the marine court, now the city court, consists also of six judges. Its jurisdittion, however, is limited to cases not involving more than $2000 dollars in value, and to the enforcement against real estate of mechanics' liens, that is, of liabilities ineurred to contraetors or labourers who have been engaged in the eonstruetion of a house or other work of improvement on land. The only marine causes of which the eourt has cognizance are suits brought by sailors for wages, or by any person for assault and battery or false imprison- ment on board a vessel. Below these are ten district courts which are not eourts of record, and whose jurisdiction only extends to eases not involving over $250. The justiee of each eourt is elected by popular vote, and holds offiee for six years, and must be a member of the bar. Appeals from his deeisions, in eertain cases specified by statute, lie to the eourt of common pleas. The surro- gate, who has charge of the court of probate, is also elected, and holds office for six years.

The criminal courts of the city begin with the court of oyer and terminer, which eonsists of a single judge of the State supreme court belonging to the judieial district within which the city lies, and tries all sueh eases sent to it by the court of general sessions as it thinks proper to try, and is, in fact, intended to furnish relief to the latter. The working eriminal court of the city is the eourt of general sessions, whieh eonsists of the recorder, the city judge, and the judge of the court of general sessions, eaeh of whom tries cases sitting apart ; but an appeal in all capital cases, and in all cases punishable with imprisonment for life, lies from them to the supreme court and court of appeals. All three judges are elected, and hold office for

fourteen years. Below the general sessions there is the court of special sessions, composed of any three police justices, which tries all misdemeanours, unless the defendant prefers to be tried by the court of general sessions, or is sent before that court for trial by the special sessions. The poliee courts are held by eleven police justices possessing the usual Jurisdiction of police magistrates, and appointed by the mayor, subject to the confirmation of the board of aldermen, for a term of ten years.

In addition to the courts of law there is an official arbitrator, appointed by the governor of the State, who, with or without two assessors chosen by the parties to the eontroversy, hears and deeides, on short notice, all disputes between members of the chamber of commerce. His judgments have all the foree of those of the courts of law, and are executed in the same manner, and are rendered without formal pleadings, on the oral or written statements of the litigants, and the submission of the necessary documents.

The police department is in the control of four salaried commis-

sioners, who are nominated by the mayor and confirmed by the aldermen, and hold office for six years, The total force perform- ing actual police duties consists of 2237 patrolmen, 165 roundsmen, 143 sergeants, 78 doormen, 36 captains, 40 deteetive sergeants, 4 inspectors, and 1 superintendent. The expenses of the department for the year ending January 1, 1882, were $3,209,960°65. The eity is divided into thirty-five police precincts, each under the direc- tion of a captain and subordinate officers. There is, in addition, a steamboat squad, whose duties confine them to the piers and the neighbourhood ; a mounted squad, on duty in the uptown avenues; a eentral-offiee squad, on duty at the department headquarters; a special-serviee squad; a deteetive bureau; a sanitary company for the inspeetion of steam-boilers and tenement houses ; four inspec- tion distriets ; and six distriet-court squads.

About half of those arrested for various offences in the city are natives of the United States. The statistics of the poliee courts (including the court of special sessions) show that in the year cnd- ing October 31, 1882, they

disposed of 66,867 prisoners, a decrease of 17,954 as eompared with the year 1874.

The fire department is under control of three salaried fire commis- sioners, who are nominated by the mayor and eonfirmed by the aldermen. The working force of the department consists of 826 uniformed men, who are divided into fifty-one engine companies and nineteen hook-and-ladder companies. The city is thoroughly equipped with a fire-alarm telegraph system. The number of fires in the city in 1883 was 2168, with a loss of $3,517,326. The expenditure of the department in 1883 was $1,464,850. The department has other dutics besides that of extinguishing fires. It has eharge of the bureau which looks after the proper eon- struction of buildings, seeing that they are ereeted in compliance with the Building Act, and that old buildings do not beeome in any way dangerous, and supervises the storage of combustibles and explosive materials.

An adjunct of the fire department, although under entirely inde- pendent control, is the fire-insurance patrol. This is an organiza-

| tion authorized by an Act of the legislature passed in 1865, aud

supported by the fire insurance companies doing business in the city. Its object is not to assist in extinguishing fires, but to remove goods from the burning buildings, and to protect them from damage by water.

Vital Statistics,—The situation of the city, surrounded as it is by tide water, renders the disposition of its sewage easy. This, com- bined with its excellent supply of fresh water, tends to make the city a healthy one. On the other hand its limited area causes an excessive crowding of its inhabitants into tencment houses; and, as a majority of the tenement population is foreign, with little appre- eiation of the value of eleanliness, the death-rate among this elass is very large. This is espeeially true of young children in the very hot months. Quarantine inspection at the mouth of the harbour, and vigilant sanitary inspection throughout the city itself, have been very successful in warding off pestilence. Since 1822 there have not been more than one hundred deaths from yellow fever in any one year. Sinee 1831 there have been six outbreaks of cholera, but only two deaths oceurred from that disease from 1875 to 1882 inelusive.

The sanitary condition of the city is in charge of a board of health, eonsisting of the president of the police board, the health offieer of the port, and two eommissioners of health, one of whom must have been a praetising physieian for not less than five years preceding his appointment. In the health department are two bureaus, one in charge of a sanitary superintendent, and the other in charge of a registrar of records. The board has authority to frame and cnforee a sanitary eode. The death-rate was 26°47 in 1880, 31°08 in 1881, and 29°64 in 1882,

Commerce and Manufactures. —New York owed its first rise in importanee to the excellenee of its situation as a seaport, and in this respeet still maintains its pre-eminence over all Aimerican cities. Nearly 57 per cent. of all the foreign trade of the country passes through its harbour. Its exports during the fiscal year ending June 30, 1882, amounted to $344,503,775 out of a total for the whole eountry of $750,542,257. Its imports during the same period reached $493,060,891 out of a total of $724,639,574, but a very much larger proportion of this trade is done in foreign vessels than formerly. There is no line of steamers to Europe sailing from tho port under the American flag. Its supremacy as a port naturally brought with it supremacy as an entrepdt of foreign goods ; of these New York has been for the last half century the principal distri- buting agency, especially as regards dry goods. Of late this branch of business has to some extent migratcd to Chieago and othcr Western cities, owing to the growth of population west of the Mis- sissippi ; but east of the Alleghanies, and all through the Southern States, the hold of New York on the retail dealers is practically unshaken. New York is also the foremost city of the Union in manufactures, and no other city, except Philadelphia, can make any pretenee of competing with it in this field.

The following table shows the growth of New York's manufac-

, tures since the census of 1860 :—

lorry.

cITy. | j 1880. 1870. 1860. Establishments……..~~...c0.2.r0+c000 11,339 7,624 4,375 Gerri ees ee ose Sine senss see | $181,206,356 | $129,952,262 | $61,212,757 IR fiwarettenial cso eset etces. awe $288,441,691 |~~

$178,696,939 | $90,177,038 iairciSfem POV ECs. .acsccasscen eee 227,352 129,577 ,204 AW DSS esonconcantensocnceraoncrponcensce $97,030,021 $63,824,049 $28,481,915 Value of products. .....-00:e0e $472,926,437 | $332,951,520 | $159,107,369

In number of establishments the boot and shoe industry leads in 1880, the number in this case being 839. Then, in order, come— bakery products, 782 ; cigars, 761; men'sclothing, 736 ; carpenter- ing, 460; printing and publishing, 412; plumbing and gastitting, 401; furniture, 299; painting and paper-hanging, 293; foundry products, 287; jewellery, 240 ; machinery, 240 ; women's clothing, 230; blacksmithing, 205. The whole number of industries enume- rated in the census table is 164. In the value of products, men's clothing leads, the total being $60,798,697. Next in order come— meat packing, $29,297,527 ; printing and publishing, $21,696,354 ; malt liquors, $19,137,882; women's clothing, $18,930,553; cigars, $18,347,108; lard (refined), $14,758,718; foundry products, $14,710,835; sugar and molasses (refined), $11,330,883. Then come furniture, bakery products, machinery, silk and silk goods, boots and shoes, carpentering, musical instruments (pianos and materials), grease and tallow, flouring aud grist-mill products, coffees and spices (roast and ground), marble and stone work, shirts, iron castings, oleomargarine, inillinery and lace goods,

$5,000,000.

Docks.—Until 1870 the docks of the city were not confided to the care of a special department of the city government, and there was no adequate attempt made to put them in practieal and durable shape, and to extend the wharf line. In that year a separate dock department was authorized by the legislature, and it is continued under the present charter. It is in charge of three commissioners, nominated by the mayor and confirmed by the aldermen. They hold office for six years, and receive an annual salary of $3000 each. The bulkhead line of the city from the Battery to Sixty-First Street on the Hudson River, according to the new plan, measures 25,748 feet, and from the Battery to. Fifty-First Street on the East River 27,995 feet. At the Battery a stone pier was completed several years ago. Thisis the only stone pier on the water front. The system which the department is trying to carry out proposes the construction of a new bulkhead wall, first

along the Hudson River front, and eventually along the East River, and the widening of the street along the Hudson River to a width of 250 feet, and of that along the East River to a width of 150 feet in the lower part and of 100 feet in the upper part. A beginning of this work has been made along the Hudson River, but it makes slow progress, partly because the title to the water front in many places is disputed by private individuals, and this results in much tedious litigation. 1t is the intention to give 20 to 25 feet of water at every point along the new bulkhead. This bulkhead is now completed at detached points on the Hudson River, as from West Tenth Street to Canal Street, and from Jay Street to Warren Street, and the work is going on at other points. The allotment of wharfs and places in the harbour to vessels is not done by the dock or any other city depart- ment, but by the captain of the port aud eleven harbour masters, all of whom are nominated by the governor of the State and con- firmed by the State senate. three years, and the harbour masters for two years.

Ferries.—As New York is on all sides surrounded by water, ferry- boats form the principal means of communication between it and the opposite shores, The water-courses of its northern boundary— Harlem River and Spuyten Duyvel Creek—are narrow enough to be bridged ; but, until the opening of the Brooklyn Bridge, steam ferry-boats supplied the only means of communicatiou with New Jersey and Long and Staten Islands. These boats are arranged with cabins for passengers on both sides, and a roadway for horses, waggons, cattle, &c., in the middle. They are worked by the rail-road companies and other private corporations. The principal ferries to New Jersey, running from the Hudson River side, have their piers at the foot ot the following streets :—Liberty, Cortlandt, Barclay, Chambers, Desbrosses, Christopher, Twenty-Third, and Forty- Second. The principal ferries to Brooklyn, running from the East River side, have their piers at. the foot of the following streets :— Whitehall (2), Wall, Fulton, Catharine, Roosevelt, Grand, and Houston. There are also two ferry lines to Staten Island, four to Long Island City, one to Astoria, L.I., one to Blackwell's Island, two to Greenpoint, L.J., and one to Governor's Island. The

3rooklyn ferry-boats leave their piers every ten minutes (and those from Fulton Street every five minutes) during the business hours, lessening their trips afterwards to one every fifteen or twenty minutes. On the New Jersey

side they run at intervals of from ten to thirty minutes. During certain of the busiest hours of the morning and evening the fare for each foot passenger on the leading

Brooklyn ferries is 1 cent ; during the rest of the day it is 2 cents. |

On the New Jersey ferries it is uniformly 3 cents.

The captain of the port holds office for |

Nee We FO hh K

465

Conveyances.—The rapid growth of the city in a long line to the northward has naturally led to great difficulties of transportation. The old omnibuses began to be supplemented in 1834 on all the leading longitudinal lines of thoroughfare by tramway cars drawu by two horses, but, though running in the most frequented routes at intervals of a minute, they became long ago unequal to the demands on them. As the dwelling houses became farther and farther separated from the business part of the city, the discomfort and delay of this mode of travel, especially in winter weather, grew very serious, and caused a considerable migration to Jersey City and Brooklyn of persons who would have remained on Manhattan Island but for the difficulty of getting to and fro. After a long period of clamorous discontent, the remedy was applied in 1878 by the construction of what is known as the Elevated Railroad, worked by steam locomotives on raised iron trestle work in four of the avenues, the Ninth, Sixth, Third, and Second, and running from the Battery to the Harlem River every three to four minutes, 10 cents being the ordinary fare for the entire distance of 10 miles, but with ‘‘commission” trains at 5 cents between certain hours of the morning and evening, for the accommodation of the working classes, the fare in these having been fixed by the State commission which settled the conditions of the charters. The result has been a very rapid increase of population in tle uppcr end of the island. Public Works.—There are but few public buildings of much architectural pretension. The principal are the city-hall, the

; general post-office, the custom-house, the barge office at the jewellery, all with annual production ranging from $10,000,000 to. }

Battery for the accommodation of passengers landing from steam- ships, the new produce exchange, and the Roman Catholic cathedral in Fifth Avenue. The two great public works of the city are the Croton aqueduct and the suspension bridge, spanning the East River, connecting New York with Brooklyn. The former, which carries the water supply of the city over 40 miles from the Croton Lake in Westchester county, has a eapacity of 115,000,000 gallons daily, and is now delivering 90,000,000 gallons daily. It has for forty years supplied the inhabitants with water with a profusion never seen elsewhere in the modern world, and with little or no restriction on its use. Of late the supply has begun to be inade- quate, and provision has (1883) been made by the legislature for the construction of an additional reservoir and aqueduct.

The Brooklyn Bridge connecting New York with Brooklyn across the East River is much the largest suspension bridge yet constructed, measuring 5989 feet in length, while that at Kieff, the next largest, only measures 2562. The work on it began in 1870, and it was opened for traffic on May 24, 1883. The bridge consists ofa central span 15954 feet in length from tower to tower, two spans of 930 feet each from the towers to the anchorage on either side, and the approaches of ironwork and niasonry, the one on the New York side being 156232 feet, and that on the Brooklyn side 971 feet in length. The towers, between whieh the central span extends, are 276% feet above high water, and rest upon a rock foundation 80 feet below the surfaee of the river and 40 feet below its bed. The cables, four in number, supporting the spans, are 15? inches in diameter, and 37574 feet in length. They rest on movable ‘‘saddles” where they pass over the towers, exerting here a vertical pressure only, the stress (or lengthwise pull) being sustained wholly at the anchor- ages, masses of solid stone masonry weighing 60,000 tons each, and rising 90 feet above the river’sedge. Each cable contains 5282 gal- vanized steel wires in nineteen separate strands, consisting of 278 lengths, each strand having over 200 miles of continuous wire. The wires are laid parallel (not twisted), and packed as closcly as possible, the greatest care being necessary to secure perfect evenness of length, and are covered with an outside spiral wrapping of wire. The defiexion of the cables

between the towers is 128 feet ; the clear height of the bridge above high water is 135 feet in the centre and 118 feet at the towers, giving a free passage to shipping. The width of the bridge is 85 feet, divided between five passage ways. In the eentre is a footway 15% feet wide and raised 12 feet above the other passages, giving an open view on both sides; next this on each side are tracks for cars, worked by cables from a stationary engine at the Brooklyn terminus ; and outside of these are waggon ways 19 feetwide. The entire cost of the bridge, $15,500,000, was borne by the cities of New York and Brooklyn, the latter paying two-thirds.

Hudson River Tunnel,—The width of the Hudson River along the city's front is so great that no engineer has yet proposed to bridge it there ; but an engineering feat almost as difficult is now in progress. This is the excavation of a tunnel beneath the bed of the river large enough to permit the running of steam trains in it. The work is in the hands of private capitalists. The entrance of the tunnel in New York is at the foot of Morton Street ; in Jersey City it is at the foot of Fifteenth Street, near the Hoboken line. Work was begun at the New Jersey entrance in 1874, and at New York entranee several years later. There are in faet to be tivo tunnels, about 25 feet apart, with connexions every 1000 feet. This mode of construction is casier than to make one tunnel of double width. The river from bulkhead to bulkhead at this point measures 5400 feet in width, and each entrance is about 60 feet back from the bulkhead. The tunnels will measure, inside, 17 feet

SOV. ag

Plate XIV,

466

in width and 17 fect in height. From Jersey City one tunnel had

been, in August 1882, completed a distance of 1600 feet, and the |

other a distance of 640 feet ; from New York 170 feet of one tunnel

only is completed. Unfinished work has been pushed a considerable | The material through which the | tunnel is cut has made its construction very difficult—on the New |

distance farther on each side.

Jersey side silt, and on the New York side a light sandy soil, through both of which the overlying water percolates freely, and it was necessary to keep this water out of the excavated sections as the work procceded. The plan adopted consisted of the sinking, at each mouth, of a heavy caisson of timber to the required depth. In the river side of this, when it was completed, a hole was cut corre- sponding with the mouth of the tunnel. The caisson was air-tight, and into it the air was pumped until it reached a density sufficient to prevent the entrance of the water. As soon as a short section is excavated it is lined with iron plates firmly braced. The interior of the tunnel will therefore consist of an outer lining of iron, and an inner lining of bricks laid in mortar. Whenever one section is completed an iron bulkhead is moved to its further end, and a new air-tight chamber is formed beyond the bulkhead. The company has met with financial embarrassments, and the work has mean- while been suspended.

Parks, Museums, and Galleries.—The city is well supplied with parks and public gardens. There are in all thirty of these, inelud- ing small open squares. The principal are the Battery, at the southernmost point of Manhattan Island, containing 21 acres; the City-Hall Park, containing 6 ; Washington Square, 8; Union Square, 3}; Tompkins Square, 103; Madison Square, 64; Reservoir Square, 43; Mount Morris Square, 20. The chief is, however, the Central Park, lying nearly in the centre of the island, and contain- ing 843 aeres } it is 24 miles long by half a mile wide. It was laid out in 1858, and is considered a masterpiece of landscape garden- ing. It eontains the building of the Metropolitan Museum of Art, immediately in front of which stands the obelisk brought in 1880 from Alexandria. Outside the Central Park, but within Man- hattan Square, a small addition recently made to it on the west side, stands also the Ameriean Museum of Natural History, which, like the Museum of Art, is the property of a private corporation.

The National Academy of Design, situated at Fourth Avenue and |

Twenty-Third Street, has a frontage of 80 feet anda depth of 98 feet 9 inches. The exterior is Venetian; the material used is grey and white marble and blue stone. The first and second stories con- tain offices, lecture-rooms, and rooms for art schools. On the third are large exhibition rooms, lighted from above. Every year one exhibition of oil paintings and one of water colours are given, and in later years supplementary exhibitions have been added. The art schools are free, and are open to both scxes.

The Metropolitan Museum of Art was chartered by the legisla- ture in 1870. It is managed bya board of officers, comprising the comptroller of the city, the president of the department of public parks, the president of the National Academy of Design, and certain

NEW ZEALAND consists of two large islands, the North Island and the South Island, of another much: smaller one named Stewart Island, and of islets around the coast. the Auckland Islands. to 47° 17’S. lat., and from 166° 26’ to 178° 36’ E. long. The Chatham Islands lie between 43° 25’ and 44° 20’S. lat. and 176° 10’and 177° 15’ W. long,, and are about 365 miles eastward of Cape Palliser, Cook Strait, New Zealand. The Auckland Islands, which are uninhabited, lie between 50° 30’ and 51° §. lat., and 165° 55’ and 166° 15’ E. long. The whole group comprised in the British colony of New Zealand is situated in the South Pacific Ocean, and is nearly antipodal to Great Britain. land is about 100,000 square miles, or one-sixth less than that of Great Britain and Ireland. The area of the North Island is about 44,000 square miles, or 28,000,000 acres ; that of the South Island is about 55,000 square miles, or 36,000,000 acres ; and Stewart Island has about 800 square miles, or 512,000 acres. The Chatham Islands and the Auckland Islands are of inconsiderable dimen- sions. The North and South Islands together extend over twelve degrees of latitude, and vary from 46 miles to 250 miles in breadth, the average breadth being about 140 miles. The North Island is in area about. three- fourths that of England and Wales. The South Island

NEW—

The colony includes also the Chatham Islands and | New Zealand extends from 34° 25’ |

The area of New Zea- | lie chiefly on the western side of the range.

N E W

private citizens who are members of its corporation. The museum building, opened in 1880, was erected by the park department, at a cost of about $500,000, and is situated in the Central Park, near Fifth Avenue and Eighty-Third Street. It measures 218 by 95 feet. The material is red brick with sandstone trimmings. Among its valuable possessions are the Blodgett collection of pictures, the Cesnola collection of articles taken from the Cypriote cities and tombs, two paintings by Rubens, two by Van Dyck, ahd many other works of eminent masters. The museum is open to the public free, on Wednesdays, Thursdays, Fridays, and Saturdays. On the other days an admission fee of 25 cents is charged.

The American Museum of Natural History was incorporated by the legislature in 1869, and its present building was opened in 1877. It is situated in Manhattan Square. The exterior is of red briek with yellow sandstone trimmings. It is four storics high, and each of its halls measures 170 feet in length by 60 in width. It is governed by a board of twenty-five trustees. The building was erected by the park department, which has charge of it and the surrounding grounds. It is open free. Among its possessions are the Veneaux collection of natural-history specimens, the museum of Prince Maximilian of Neuwied, the Elliot collection of the birds of North America, the Jay collection of shells, the James Hall collection of geological specimens of New York State, the Bement specimens of the Stone Age of Denmark, the De Morgan collection of stone implements from the valley of the Somme in France, and the Squire and Davis collection from the Mississippi valley.

The Cooper Institute, or ‘‘ Union for the Advancement of Science and Art,” oecupies a huge brown stone building at the junction of Third and Fourth Avenues, the gift of Peter Cooper, who erected it in 1857 at a cost of over $600,000, and further endowed the union with $200,000 for the support of a library, reading-room, and schools of seience and art, all of which are free, and are largely attended by young men and young women of the working classes. Its evening schools are attended by over 3000 students annually, and in the women’s art school instruction is given gratuitously to 350 pupils yearly. The library contains 15,000 volumes, a notable feature being a complete and fully indexed set of the reports of the United States patent office. The reading-room is supplied with about 300 periodicals and newspapers, and is frequented daily by over 2500 readers. No one instrumentality is doing more than the Cooper Union for the instruction of the working classes in the city.

The principal works relating to New York are—Thomas J. ones, History of New York during the Revolutionary War, 1879: Mrs Lamb, History of the City

| of New York, 1877; Stone, History of the City of New York, 1872; Perge, History

of the City of New York, 1859; Mary L. Booth, History of the City of New York, 1880; Valentine, History of the City of New York, 1853: The City Charter, with Chancellor Kent's notes, 1836; Bourne, History of the Public School Society, 1870; Newberry, Zhe Geological History of New York Island and Harbour, 1878; Dis- turnell, New York as tt was and as it is, 1876; ©. L. Brace, The Dangerous Classes of New York, 3d ed., 1880; The Laws of New York (consolidated), 1882; Boese, Public Education in the City of New York, 1869; Cammann and Camp, The Charities of New York, 1868; Friedrich Kapp, Immigration and the Com- misstoners of Emigration of the State of New York, 1870. (E. L. G.)

is larger; its area is about equal to that of England and Wales.

The mountains in the North Island occupy about one- Moun- tenth of the surface, and are covered with dense forests tains.

containing an almost inexhaustible supply of fine timber. In the northern half the mountains are not so frequent as in other parts, and do not exceed 1500 feet in height, with the exception of a few extinct volcanoes between 2000 and 3000 feet high. In the centre there are some higher volcanic mountains. Tongariro (6500 feet) is occasionally active. Ruapehu (9100 feet) and Mount Egmont (8300 feet) are extinct volcanoes. The main range of the island, beginning to the eastward of these mountains, is at its greatest height 6000 feet. The plains in the North Island Mount Egmont is surrounded by an extensive and very fertile district. Nearly four-fifths of the South Island is occupied by mountains. The greater part of them is open, well grassed, and adapted for pasture. The Southern Alps, as they are called, run close to the west coast the whole length of the island. Mount Cook, the highest peak, is 12,349 feet high, and has many glaciers. Its summit was for the first time reached in March 1882 by the Rev. W. 8. Green, a member of the Alpine Club, and his two Swiss guides, Messrs Kaufmann and Boss. The main range is crossed at intervals by low passes. Extensive agricultural

Rivers.

Lakes.

plains lie on the eastern side. The rugged western slopes are rich in mineral wealth. On the south-western coast there are several fiords or sounds, long, narrow, and deep, surrounded by snow-capped mountains from 5000 to 10,000 feet in height. The scenery, especially in Milford Sound, is sublime.

There are countless running streams of the purest water throughout New Zealand, but not many rivers of depth and size. The Waikato is the chief river in the North Island. Its tortuous course is over 200 miles long, and it is joined by a fine tributary, the Waipa, at Ngaruawahia. The Waikato rises in the central part of the island, and flows into the sea on the west coast south of the Manukau. The Wairoa, discharging itself into Kaipara harbour, is large and deep, and is navigable for vessels of considerable tonnage. In the South Island, the chief river is the Clutha, rising north of Lake Wanaka, and 220 miles in length. It flows into the sea about 50 miles south of Otago Harbour, and a calculation has been made that it discharges 1,088,736 cubic feet of water a minute. Rivers in New Zealand have bars at their mouths, and are, with two or three exceptions, only navigable for small craft. Owing to the height and the preci- pitous nature of the mountain ranges, the rivers, especially in the South Island, are subject to sudden and dangerous floods.

The lakes in New Zealand are a characteristic feature.

“Lake Taupo, in the central part of the North Island, covers

Coast- line,

an area of about 250 square miles. In its neighbourhood, and in a line between it and White Island, in the Bay of Plenty, which is in constant volcanic action, there is the

famous Lake District with its wonderful collection of-

geysers, sulphurous springs, palatial terraces, and lovely natural baths, formed as it were of tinted marble, and full of warm transparent water of a beautiful blue colour. Nor are these waters only astonishing to the sightseer. Their curative properties in cases of rheumatism, scorbutic and tubercular

diseases, cutaneous eruptions, and nervous affec- tions are well established. In the South Island there are numerous lakes, some of them of considerable extent, Lake Wakatipu covering 112 and Lake Te Anau 132 square miles. These and many others embosomed in the Southern Alps are scenes of great natural beauty, abound with objects of interest, and present. strong attractions to the explorer and the tourist.

The coast-line is over 3000 miles. Cook Strait separates the two large islands, and Foveaux Strait separates the South Island from Stewart Island. Both straits greatly facilitate inter-navigation. The coastal features of the northern part of the North Island are remarkable. The waters of Auckland Harbour on the eastern side and of Manukau Harbour on the western side approach each other within a mile. A great number of natural harbours are included between the North Cape and Cape Colville. The harbours on the west coast of the North Island have shift- ing bars at the entrance; but Manukau, Kaipara, and Hokianga are excellently surveyed, and can, with due caution, be safely entered. Inside they are spacious and fine. Auckland and Wellington have excellent natural harbours. The South Island on its north side, from Cape Farewell to Cape Campbell, is indented with numerous good harbours ; and on the eastern coast, Port Lyttelton, Akaroa, Port Chalmers, and the Bluff are all available for large vessels. On the south-western extremity the coast is iron-bound, but there are several deep fiords surrounded by lofty and precipitous mountains. Anchorage can rarely be obtained there, except at the head of remote coves. Northward there is Jackson’s Bay ; and between it and Cape Farewell, a distance of 300 miles, there is an open and exposed coast, with seven or eight small bar river harbours at intervals.

|

467

Stewart Island is only 120 miles in cireumference, and has several excellent harbours on its eastern side. There are some anchorages on the western side, but they are rather exposed to the prevailing westerly winds.

Meteorological statistics are collected at Auckland, Wellington, Christchurch, and Dunedin; and observa- tions of rainfall, temperature, and

wind-direction are re- ceived from thirty other stations. From the data thus obtained an isobaric map and a report are prepared for each day; and weather warnings are telegraphed to any part of the coast when necessary. A system of inter- colonial weather exchanges has been agreed upon, and telegrams are daily exchanged between Sydney and Wellington,

In the Handbook of New Zealand (1883), Dr Hector makes the following observations :—

‘*The climate resembles that of Great Britain, but is more equable, the extremes of daily temperature only varying through- out the year by an average of 20°, whilst London is 7° eolder than the North and 4° eolder than the South Island of New Zealand. The mean annual temperature of the North Island is 57°, and of the South Island 52° that of London and New York being 51°. The mean annual temperature of the different seasons for the whole eolony is in spring 55°, in summer 63°, in autumn 57°, and in winter 48°. The climate on the west eoast of both islands is more equable than on the east, the difference between the average summer and winter temperature being nearly 4° greater on the south-east portion of the North Island and 7° on that of the South Island than on the north-west, on whieh the equatorial winds impinge. This constant wind is the most important feature in the meteorology of New Zealand, and is rendered more striking by eomparing the annual fluctuation of temperature on the opposite seaboards of the South Island, whieh have a greater range of temperature by 18° at Christehurch on the east than at Hokitika on the west.”

Rain is frequent. In the north the greater fall is during winter ; in the south it is more equally distributed throughout the year. There is a much greater rainfall on the west than on the east coast, especially in the South Island. The winter snow-line on the Southern Alps is 3000 feet on the east side, and 3700 feet on the west side. Periods of drought are very rare in New Zealand. Westerly winds prevail in all parts and throughout all seasons. The formation of the land, however, much modifies the winds,

The configuration of New Zealand, and its extension over twelve degrees of latitude, cause considerable variety of climate in different districts. The northern half of the North Island possesses a beautiful climate, and remarkably equable; that of the southern half is more variable. The climate

of the west coast of the South Island is rainy, but temperate and salubrious; that of other parts of the South Island is generally similar to the

English, but warmer in summer and not so cold in winter.

In the North Island, sheep-shearing extends from September to November, and harvesting from November to January. In the South Island, sheep-shearing is from October to January, and harvesting from December to the end of February.

The following details are extracted from meteorological statistics published in the colony :—

Comparative Abstract for 1882 and previous Years.

Temperature. Mean Rain. Degree Baro- of No. of | Stations. meter. | Mean | Mean |Moisture| Total | Days on Mean. in Daily ete Fall in ple Shade. | Range. my Inches, ain 8° | =100). fell. Auckland (1882).....—| 29°965 59°3 13°1 76 45°630 191 ee 18 ee Baise | 99-954 59°4 a 76 43°179 188 Wellington (1882).....| 29°900 | 55°4 | 11-4 77 55-685 | 166 Previous 18 years…...| 29°921 54°8 =e 72 51:790 158 Dunedin (CEE eecatay 30-037 50°9 137 76 41°796 187 Previous 18 years…...| 29°833 | 50-4 74 34:672 | 162

jn ne nae

Geology.

468

Average Femperature of Seasons.)

|

’ Stations. Spring. Summer, Autumn. Winter. “1881 : 1882, 1881, 1882, | 1881. 1882. 1881. 1882. Auckland……... 58-0 56°9 | 652 65-4 | 61°9 61°9 | 53-4 52°8 Wellington…..... O44 53°38 | 616 61°55 | 583 57°38 | 49-4 48°8 IDWMedin=....<.s-

~~On the whole, the New Zealand climate is admirably~~

~~suited to Europeans. In the Colonial Office List for 1883 it is stated that, according to the official reports of the medical department, whereas the annual mortality from all diseases out of every 1000 British soldiers quartered in the United Kingdom was 16, it was only 5 out of every 1000 in the troops quartered for more than twenty-five years in New Zealand. The true test of the comparative healthiness of countries is the rate of mortality distributed according to the ages of population ; and different actuarial investi- gations show that this rate is light for New Zealand.~~

~~It is generally supposed that in the course of ages volcanic action has gradually, by an alternate process of subsidence and upheaval, left New Zealand as itis. There are lines of volcanic craters stretching across the North Island,—one at the Bay of Islands, another at Auckland, and a third from Mount Egmont near New Plymouth to White Island, an active volcano in the Bay of Plenty. There are evidences in the South Island of submarine volcanic action. Slight shocks of earthquake are often felt in different parts of New Zealand, but none of great severity has been felt since 1855. During 1882 twenty-eight shocks were recorded, only one being at all severe, while ten were described as **simart," and the other seventeen were slight tremors.~~

~~A description of the general geological structure of the islands, so far as it is at present ascertained, is contained in the sketch geological map of 1883 by Dr Hector, the director of the geological survey of New Zealand, who has kindly allowed an advance proof to be available for this article (see Plate XIV.). The classification adopted in this map is founded on a mass of paleontological data, but, owing to the unavoidable absence hitherto of minute surveys, is merely provisional. The following is an abstract of some of Dr Hector's remarks on this map :—~~

~~The post-Tertiary (Recent) deposits have accumulated with great rapidity in New Zealand, owing to the mountainous character of the country giving to the rivers, even when of large size, the char- acter of torrents which are liable to occasional floods of extreme violence. The Pliocene formation belongs to a period when New Zealand was the mountain range of a greatly extended land area. The Upper Miocene beds are limited in their extent to~~

the southern and eastern districts of the North Island, and in the South Island occur as patches. The New Zealand seas have yielded about 450 species of existing shells, of which 120 have been found in this formation, together with 25 forms which are now extinct. The Lower Miocene represents a period of great depression, and the deposits are remarkable for the absence of evidence of volcanic activity in any part of the region, and for the abundance of marine life. The Upper Eocene is a very marked formation of calcareous sandstone composed of shell fragments with corals and Bryozoa, and is a shallow-water and littoral deposit. Intense volcanic activity prevailed during this period in both islands. In the upper part of the Cretaceo-Tertiary formation occurs the valuable building stone, known commercially as the "Oamaru stone," a calcareous sandstone which is very easily worked, but which hardens when exposed to the weather. The principal coal deposits of New Zealand occur in the Cretaceo-Tertiary formation, but always at the base of the marine beds of the forma- tion, in every locality where they occur. The Lower Greensand, which is confined to a few localities of limited extent, is very ricli in fossils of the genera Belemnites and Trigonia, with a few saurian bones and large chimeroid fishes. It has been found necessary to include in the Trias a thickness of strata which is quite unusual in other parts of the world, but the close connexion which exists throughout, founded both on paleontological and on stratigraphical grounds, and the clearly defined Permian character of the next underlying formation, renders this classification absolutely necessary. Saurian remains are associated with the Permian beds at Mount Potts, which were referred by Dr Hector to Ichthyosaurus in 1871, but subsequently to the genus Eosaurus of Marsh. The further remains obtained of this saurian ave, however, of such gigantic size as compared with the original types found in Nova Scotia, in which the vertebree were 24 inclies in diameter, that the determination may be doubted. The Lower Carboniferous and Upper Devonian forma- tion is of considerable importance from the large share it takes in the structure of the great mountain ranges, and from the occa- sionally great development in it of contemporaneous igneous rocks with which are associated metalliferous deposits. The igneous rocks

' Spring begins with September, summer with December, &c.

(basic volcanic and acidic volcanic) have played an important part in almost every formation in New Zealand, marking great movements of the earth's crust at the different geological periods, while the superficial and later-formed volcanic rocks occupy nearly one-third of the area of the North Island. The geysers and boil- ing springs in the North Island give rise to the formation of siliceous sinter deposits, which must be included as the most purely acidic products of volcanic action, and are due to the decomposition of the older rocks by the action upon them of fresh water ; but in the case of White Island and other localities where the decomposi- tion is brought about by the agency of sea water, the sinter deposits are formed chiefly of sulphate of lime and not silica.

The census of 1881 shows that out of a total population (other than aboriginal) of 489,933 there were 14,273 miners, of whom 12,996 were returned as being engaged in gold mining, and 1087 in coal mining. The principal quartz mines for gold are in the Thames and Coromandel districts near Auckland in the North Island, but several auriferous reefs are extensively worked in the Otago, Westland, and Nelson gold-fields in the South Island. There is good reason to believe that quartz mining in New Zealand is still in its infancy, and that its indefinite extension can be ensured by the judicious application of more capital. Alluvial gold mining chiefly exists in the Otago, Westland, and Nelson districts. Gold drift, as it is called, is found in river-beds and on the sea-coast, where it can be worked with comparative ease, and also in thick deposits of gravel, the working of which requires mechanical water-power, and often large expenditure. The opinion entertained in many quarters that the auriferous resources of New Zealand will soon be exhausted, and that the gold mining industry is approaching a rapid decline, is certainly not based upon fact. There still, it is reliably stated, exist large areas, both in the North and South Islands, that on geological grounds are highly promising for the existence of original or primary auriferous deposits, namely, quartz lodes. With regard to secondary or derived auriferous deposits—namely, gold drift—the more easily and cheaply accessible of them have, no doubt, been worked out, more or less, but the South Island still contains tracts that offer profitable employinent to the miner for generations to come. The total quantity of gold produced in

~~and exported from New Zealand from 1st April 1857 to 31st March 1883 was 10,144,926 ounces, valued at £39,7 47,940. The quantity during the year ended 31st March 1883 was 248, 862 ounces, valued at £994,555. Good coal is obtained in many parts of New Zealand. The number of coal mines in work in 1882 was 104 ; and the output during 1882 was 378,172 tons, being 215,954 tons more than the output in 1878. Silver is chiefly extracted from the gold produced in the Thames district, but other mines containing silver ores have been found. There are many other valuable ores —copper, iron, lead, zinc, antimony, chrome, and manganesc—some of which are being worked. Several fine mineral oils also are obtained. Building stones of various kinds and of excellent quality abound. Marble and cement stones occur in many places. In 1881 there were 127 brick, tile, and pottery manufactories in work ; and their lands, buildings, and machinery were valued at £105,765. There are extensive deposits of iron-sand on the west coast of the North Island.~~

~~The following official table, in Dr Hector's New Zealand Hand. book, classifies the land according to the geological subsoil :—~~

~~North South~~

~~Island. Island. Totals. Sq. miles. | Sq. miles. | Sq. miles. 1, Fluviatile drifts, one-third agricultural… 8,447 6,286 14,733 2. Marine-Tertiary,two-thirds agricultural }~~

~~(thejrest pastoral)... ..0….0…..0 13,898 4,201 Donia) 3. Upper Secondary, coal-bearing, pastoral.. 2,390 2,110 4,500 4, Palzozoic, pastoral …….- s0ccsessesoee 5,437 20,231 25,668 5. Schistose, pastoral 15,308 15,308~~

~~6. 5,978 5,978~~

~~| & 1,150 15,714 55,264 | 100,000~~

~~A study of this table, he adds, shows that 'in the whole colony there are about 12,000,000 acres of land fitted for agriculture, and about 50,000,000 which are better adapted for pasturage; but from these estimates allowance must be made for about 20,000,000 of surface at present covered by forest."~~

~~Dr Hector also reports the prevalence, in the north of Auckland and in the lower part of the Waikato Valley, of light volcanic soil, interspersed with areas of clay marl, which in the natural state is cold and uninviting to the agriculturist, but which under proper drainage and cultivation can be brought to high productiveness, He adds valuable information, in substance as follows, respecting other districts. In Taranaki and Wanganui districts the soil is very rich, and on the surface is formed by the decomposition of calcareous marls intermixed with the debris from the lava streams and tufaceous rocks of the extinct volcanic mountains. The forest growth which generally covers the land proves its productiveness,~~

~~Fauna.~~

~~Flora.~~

~~NEW ZEALAND~~

~~although that growth greatly impedes the progress of settlement. From Lake Taupo towards the Bay of Plenty the surface soil is derived from rocks of a highly siliceous character, and large areas are covered with little else than loose friable pumice-stone. On the eastern side of the slate range which extends through the North Island, the surface is generally formed of clay marl and calcareous rocks ; in the valleys there are shingle deposits from the back ranges, with occasional areas of fertile alluvium of considerable extent. The latter portions of the district are adapted for agricul- ture, and the remainder is very fine pastoral land. In the South Island the chief agricultural areas are in the vicinity of the eastern coast, but there are also small areas fitted for agriculture in the interior in the vicinity of the lake districts. The alluvial soils of the lower part of the Canterbury plains and of Southland are re- markably fertile. Scarcely less important are the low rolling dowus formed by the calcareous rocks of the Tertiary formation which skirt the higher mountain masses, and often are improved by the disintegration of interspersed basaltic rocks. On the western side of the South Island, from the close vicinity of the mountain ranges, there are comparatively small areas of good alluvial soil, but these are made very fertile by the wetness of the climate.~~

~~New Zealand is singular in the absence of all indigenous land mammals except two small kinds of bat, and a rat which has already disappeared. A native dog is supposed to have been intro- duced by the natives on their original migration. There are no snakes. A few lizards are found, but they are harmless, though held in superstitious terror by the natives. A peculiar species of frog exists, butitis very rare. Insect life is not nearly so abundant as in Europe, though bloodthirsty sand-flies swarm on the sea-shore, and mosquitoes in the bush. There are between four and five hnndred species of molluscs. Seals are numerous ou some parts of the coast. New Zealand is also remarkable for its wingless birds, living and extinct. There are four speeies of Apteryx, or Kiwi (q.v.), without wings and tail-feathers, and a little larger than a hen; they have short legs, snipe-bills, and bodies covered with long, brown feathers like lair. the Moa (see Drnornis) has been long extinct. 'The tradition of the natives is that their ancestors found these birds living, and hunted them for food till they exterminated them.?~~

~~The peculiar nature of the New Zealand fauna has given rise to much scientifie speculation, and, in the opinion of able writers, points to a continental period as the condition of the country in remote ages, and to subsequent partial subsidence and partial elevation. The discovery and colonization of the conntry have completely changed the character of its animal life. Captain Cook introduced the English dog and the pig. Colonists have brought all kinds of domestic animals. Game and small birds have been imported and acclimatized; rabbits have become a formidable nuisance in many districts.~~

~~There are about one thousand species of flowering plants, of which about three-fourths are endemic. Most of those not peculiar to the country are Australian ; others are South-American, European, Antarctie ; and some have Polynesian affinities. Ferns and other cryptogamic plants are in great variety and abundance. There are a few indigenous plants and fruits used as food. Phormium tenax, or tlhe New Zealand hemp, is a common and most useful plant. Forests covering from 11,000,000 to 12,000,000 acres are a characteristic feature in New Zealand vegetation. Much of the timber is of great value for building and for constructive works (see vol. ix. p. 407). The area of forest land is rapidly diminishing, and the rate of decrease in some large forests has been estimated at 4 per cent. perannum. The rapid decrease~~

~~is stated to be due to reckless and wasteful consumption of the best timber without regard to the conservation of the young trees, to fires, and to other avoidable causes.~~

~~The following return, compiled from a report, in 1875, by Professor Kirk, F.L.8., on New Zealand timbers, specifies those of great durability, and adapted for general building purposes and for constructive works, &c. :—~~

~~1 In 1880 Messrs S. Grant and J. S. Foster, delegates to New Zealand from the tenant farmers of Lineolnshire, travelled over and inspected the chief agrieultural districts in both islands. Their impression was, as stated in their report, that the soil is, as a rule, mueh lighter than farmers in England are aceustomed to work, and that it does not require half the working that English land does. One double-furrow plough, they say, will turn up about 18 aeres a week. They Saw very little really heavy clay-land in the eolony, and sueh soil, they think, will not be worth eultivating for some time to eome. "The labour required to work it," they write, "is far too great, and there are no frosts in winter sufficient to pulverize it, while it is perfeetly possible to eonsolidate any soil whieh may be a little too light by stoeking it sufficiently heavily." And they add—" But of one thing we are certain, that, whatever the quality of the soil, there were splendid crops on it in almost every part of the eountry that we saw."~~

~~2 Dr Buller, in his Manual of the Birds of New Zealand (1882), gives one hundred and seventy-six speeies, belonging to the Acetpitres, Passeres, Scansores, Columbx, Gallinxw, Struthiones, Gralle, and Anseres. Mr W. T. L. Travers, F.L.S., in a paper read before the Wellington Philosophieal Society, on Oetober 21, 1882, states that out of 88 species 18 are peeuliar to both islands, 8 to both islands and the Chathams, 3 to both islands and the Aucklands, 22 to New Zealand and habitats outside, 9 to the North Island, 16 to the South Island, 6 to the Chathams, 2 to the Aucklands, 1 to the North Island and the Chathams, 2 to the South Island and the Chathams, and 1 to all,~~

~~The gigantic wiugless bird called |~~

~~T Name, Uses. Height and Diameter.~~

~~Kauri (ammara aus-~~

~~Ships, houses, &c. 120 to 160 ft.; 5 to 12 ft.~~

~~tralis). Totara (Podocarpus To- | Piles, sleepers, &c. 40 to 70 ft.; 4 to 6 ft. terra). Matai (Podocarpus spi- | Piles, sleepers, &c. 50 to 70 ft.; 2 to 4 ft. cata). Kawaka (Libocedrus | Feneing, eabinet work. 60 to 100 ft.; 3 to 5 ft. Doniana). Pahautea (ZLibocedrus | Feneing, bridges. 60 to 80 ft.; 2to 3 ft. Bidwillit). Tanekaha (Phyllocladus | Sleepers, planks, bridges. 50 to 60 ft.; 3 ft. (nax.). trichomonoides). Manoao (Dacrydium | Houses, piles. 30 to 40 ft.; very durable. Colensot). Dacrydium westlandi- | Piles, bridges, &c. 40 to 50 ft.; 1 to 2 ft. cum. Dacrydium interme- | Piles, bridges, &c. 40 to 45 ft.; 1 to 2 ft. dium.~~

~~Tawai (Fagus Menztesii). Puriri (Vitex littoralis). Hututawhai (Fagus Susea). Pohutukawa (Metro- sideros tomentosa). Rata (Afetrosideros ro- busta). Rata lucida). Rawiri (Leptospermum ericoides).~~

~~Handsome tree. 40 to 60 ft.; 3 to 5 ft. 60 to 90 ft.5 8 to 8 ft.~~

~~Posts, piles, sleepers.~~

~~Posts, sleepers, bridges.~~

~~Ships, dock gates, &c. Short trunk; massive arms,~~

~~Ships, sleepers. 60 to 100 ft.; 5 to 12 ft.~~

~~(Metresideros | Ships, trucks. 30 to 60 ft.; 2 to 5 ft.~~

~~Wharves, marine works. 40 to 50 ft.; 1 to 2 ft.~~

~~Kowhai (Sophora tet-| Piles, sleepers, raptera).~~ §

~~ao (Olea ape- | Valuable, but little known. | 50 to 70 ft.; 2 to 4 ft. tala).~~

~~Maire-tawhake (Zugenia | Feneing, piles, &c. About 40 ft.; 1 to 2 ft. maire).~~

There are many other kinds of trees which are less durable, but of considerable value. Some have barks largely used for tanning purposes. Kauri gum, a valuable product of the kauri tree, is found in the soil on the sites of old kauri forests, and at the base of growing trees. It is much used in Europe and America asa base, instead of gum mastic, for fine varnishes, and for other pur- | poses. There are now many flourishing plantations of English and foreign trees.

The New Zealand flora, like the fauna, has been cited in support of the theory of the remote continental period. Sir Joseph Hooker, in his Introductory Essay, wrote that the botanical relationship of the New Zealand flora is not to be accounted for by any theory of transport or variation, but that it is agreeable to the hypothesis of all being members of a once more extensive flora, which has been broken up by geological and climatic causes.

cultivations, shows the rapid and continuous development of agri- culture in New Zealand during the last twelve years :—

eres Aeres under | Aeres under all kinds Number i Green and of Crop, ineluding ae ee of Can Other Crops, , Sown Grasses; and of ee *| Holdings. ious excluding | Land broken up, tut DS , Sown Grasscs, | not under Crop.

1872 266,936 | Not given,| 261,210 45,355 1,226,222 1877 398,938 18,750 | 320,011 160,100 2,940,711 18382 500,663 26,298 | 638,910 363,573 5,189,104 1883 509,052 27,352 | 738,822 394,473 + 5,651,255

In 1880 the estimated average produce of wheat per acre was 28 bushels, in 1881 25 bushels, in 1882 224 bushels, and in 1883 264 bushels. The estimated average of oats was 364 bushels to the acre in 1880, 32 bushels in 1881, 224 bushels in 1882, and nearly 33 bushels in 1883. Barley was estimated in 1880 at 304 bushels to the acre, in 1881 at 26, in 1882 at 22}, and in 1883 at 26. Potatoes were estimated to produce 4% tons to the acre in 1880, in 1881 54 tous, in 1882 5 tons 17 ewts., and in 1883 5 tons 2 ewts. The number of horses in 1881 was 161,736, having doubled since 1871. The number of cattle increased during the same ten years from 436,592 to 698,637, and sheep from 9,700,629 to 12,985,085. The yearly production of butter in 1881 was 8, 453,815 tb, and of cheese 3,178,694 Ib. The produce

of wool will be stated in the summary of exports for 1882. Pigs, goats, and poultry abound. ;

Except eels and a few small] fishes of little worth, there are no indigenons fish in the rivers. Dr Hector states that thirty-three kinds of sea fish ave used as food. Among the constant residents on the coast or on parts of it, he names hapuku, tarakihi, trevally, moki, aua, rock eod, wrasse, flounder, snapper, mullet, gurnet, trumpeter, butter fish, and red eod. Of the edible fish irregu- larly visiting the coast, much the largest nnmber come from warmer latitudes, namely, the frost fish, barracouta, Norse mackerel, king fish, dory, waichou, mackerel, and gar fish. He adds that of 140 species of fish found in New Zealand 67 species are believed 1 to be peculiar to New Zealand, 75 are common to Australia and

| 3 Varies from shrub to tree 30 to 40 ft. high, with trunk 1 to 3 ft. diameter.

The following comparative table, which does not include native Agri-

culture.

Fisheries,

Commu- nication.

Trade

Shipping.

Adminis- tration.

470

Tasmania, whilst ten are found in New Zealand and other places, but not in the Australian seas. ‘‘ New Zealand ichthyology,” he states, ‘‘ presents a very distinct character, the thorough deeipher- ing of whieh affords a wide field for future observation and scientific investigation.” Oyster fisheries exist, and are protected by law. Cray-fish are in abundance. Whaling formerly flourished on the eoast, but since New Zealand has become a colony whaling stations have disappeared. Whales, however, of valuable

kinds are nume- rous in the adjacent ocean, and a few whaling ships are owned in New Zealand. Efforts have, for several years past, been made by the Government, but chiefly by local acclimatization societics, private and self-supported bodies, to introduce and acclimatize 'European and American edible fish. Ova, in considerable quanti- ties, of British salmon, of Californian salmon, of brown trout, and of American whitefish have been imported, and the fish hatched from them distributed.! No instance of the survival of British salmon has as yet been authenticated ; but three or four eases of grown Californian salmon having been found are reported. The success of brown trout in many streams has been great, and fish of 11, 14, and even 21 Ib weight have been caught. Trout-fishing has becoine a common sport in many places. Salmon trout fry hatched in 1870 spawned in 1875. The Canterbury Acclimatization Society in 1880 liberated nearly 25,000 American whitefish in Lake Coleridge. The acclimatization of other fish has also been successful,

The natural features of the country were, for a long time after its, colonization, a bar to overland internal communication, but good coach roads now traverse the country in every direction, and railways especially have enabled solitudes to be peopled, and wastes to be made productive. The total length of railways opened for traffic in March 1883 was 1443 miles. In the North Island, the chief working lines are—Kaipara to Waikato, 141 miles ; Wellington to Napier, 138 miles open ; Foxton to New Plymouth, 169 miles open ; in the South Island—Hurunui to Bluff, 671 miles, and Invercargill to Kingston, 89 miles. £10,400,000 in round numbers have been expended on opened lines of Government railways from 1870 to March 31, 1883, and the net earnings as a whole were yielding £3, 8s. 10d. per cent. on that expenditure. In addition to road aud railway communieation, intercourse between the chief ports is carricd on two or three times a week by swift and commodious steamers. The telegraph wire runs through every settled district, and is extended to Australia and England.

The following table shows the value of imports and exports for five years respectively :—

Imports, Exports,

1878 £8,755,663 £6,015,700

1879 8,374,585 5,743,126 1880 6,162,011 6,352,692

1s81 7,457,045 6,060.866

: 8,609,270 6,658,008

The total exports for 1882 included the following values :—from mines, £956,803; from fisheries, £5693; from forests, £390,242; animals and animal products, £3,601,242, of which wool alone was £8,118,544; agricultural products, £1,140,839; and colonial manufactures, £96,628. The export of frozen sheep to Europe seems likely to become very valuable. In an able paper on the Public Debt of Australasia, read before the Royal Colonial Insti- tute in London- on November 21, 1882, Sir Francis Dillon Bell, K.C.M.G., agent-general for New Zealand, stated that 5000 frozen sheep had reeently come in good eondition in one lot from New Zealand, that "the meat was readily taken into consumption," and that "the sheep netted 21s. 9d. a-piece, a return eminently satisfactory to their owners, because they would not have sold for more than 12s. in New Zealand."

The total shipping inwards during 1882 was 795 vessels of 461,285 tons, as compared with 765 vessels of 420,134 tons during 1881. The total outwards during 1882 was 764 vessels (486,793 tons) as eompared with 762 vessels (418,487 tons) in 1881. The number of vessels on the New Zealand register, on 31st December 1881, was 572, altogether 72,387 tons, of which 443 (56,751 tons) were sailing vessels and 129 (15,636 tons) were steamers. There were in 1883 twenty-three coastal light-houses, among which six were of the first and twelve of the second order of apparatus.

New Zealand was not eolonized in the ordinary manner around one centre, There were in its early years six distinct settlements—Auckland, Wellington, Nelson, New Plymouth, Canterbury, and Otago—between which communication was for several years irregular and infrequent. To meet their political wants, the Constitution Act of 1852 created them into provinces, with elective councils and superintendents respectively,—subordinated to one colonial legisla- ture. In 1876 the provincial system was abolished by that legisla- ture. The general assembly, as it is called, is

~~convposed of the governor, the legislative council, and the house of representatives.~~

~~2~~

~~1 According to a paper read by Mr W. Arthur before the Otago Institute in 1881, the numbers distributed by the various societies were—British salmon, 4000 ; Californian salmon, 417,000; brown trout, 332,000; salmon trout, 1000; and American whitefish, 34,000.~~

~~NEW ZEALAND~~

~~The governor is appointed by the crown. The legislative council consists of members appointed for life by the governor; the number of legislative councillors in 1883 was 50. The house of representa- tives consists of 95 niembers chosen by the electors. The franchise is manhood suffrage, conditional ou a previous residence in the colony for a year, including six months in the electoral district for which a claim to vote is registered. Every elector is qualified for election. Four members of the house must be Maoris elected by their own race. The duration of the house is for three years, but it is subject to re-election whenever the governor dissolves the genetal assembly, Legislation is subject to disallowance by the erown, but practically that power is seldom if ever exercised. Executive: adininistration is conducted on the principle of English responsible or parliamentary government. Its seat is at Wellington. Local administration is vested in local elective bodies, such as municipal councils, county boards, road boards, and others, with power to levy rates. The eolonial revenue is chiefly derived from customs, stamp duties, property tax, postal and telegraphic serviees, railways, and crown land sales. The proceeds of land sales are applied to surveys and public works. Crown lands are acquired at auction, or by selection, or on deferred payment, or by lease with right to purchase on certain conditions. The price is rarely less than £1 an acre.~~

~~The chief feature of public policy in New Zealand from 1871 to 1883 has been to borrow and expend large sums on railways, immi- gration, main roads, native land-purchases, telegraphs, and other important public works. During that time about £19,000,000 has been expended on those objects collectively, and there are good grounds for the general conclusion that, as a~~

~~whole, this policy of investing loans in large reproductive services has been, and will be, if prudently continued, a substantial success, The gross public debt of the colony on March 31, 1883, was £30,357,111, subject to a deduction of £2,571,829 for accrued sinking funds. The annual charge, including sinking fund, was £1,525,281. The loan of £1,000,000, raised in January 1883, for railways and other works was a 4 per cent. loan inscribed in stock at the Bank of England. Another similar loan was raised in J anuary 1884.~~

~~The New Zealand state has encouraged public thrift by a system of Government life insurance, which is working with remarkable success. On 31st December 1882, when the population may be~~

~~| estimated at 505,000, the total sum assured on 23,489 policies in~~

~~force in both branches (ordinary and industrial) of the department, exclusive of insurance in private offices, was £5,355,900. The Government post-office savings banks, at the end of 1882, had 57,517 open accounts, amounting altogether to £1,470, 950.~~

~~Under the Education Act of 1877 state schoolsare established, in Educa- with certain excep- tion.~~

~~which teaching is free, secular, and compulsory, tions, for children between the ages of seven and thirteen. A capi- tation grant is given for every child in average daily attendance at the schools. Grants are also made for scholarships from primary to secondary schools, for training institutions for teachers, and for school buildings. Large reserves of public lands have been made for primary, secondary, and university education. The progress in the education of children is shown in the census of 1881. In 1874 the number of children attending school was 66°78 per cent. of the population between five and fifteen years; in 1878 it was 73°64 per cent., and in 1881 80°76 per cent. Native schools are also provided by the state in native districts. There are, moreover, industrial schools, orphanages, and an institution for the deaf and dumb. There are several secondary schools with public endow- ments. The university of New Zealand is an examining body, and grants honours, degrees, and scholarships. It is empowered by royal charter to confer degrees entitled to rank and consideration throughout the British dominions,~~

~~as fully as if they were granted by any university in the United Kingdom, It has also the privilege of nominating one of its students in each year for a cadetship at the Royal Military College at Sandhurst. 'The Canterbury College and the Otago University, both academical institutions of a high order, are affiliated to the New Zealand University. Provision made by the legislature in 1882 for a university college at Auck- land has been given practical effect to. The state in no way con- trols or interferes with religious administration. Each denomi- nation attends to the religious instruction of its own adherents. State school-buildings can be used for such instruction on days and at hours other than those fixed by law for ordinary school work ; but no child can be required to attend, except at the wish of its parent or guardian. The average daily attendance of scholars at the state schools throughout the year 1882 was 68,288. In 1881 the number returned as attending private schools was 13,538; Sunday schools, 78,891; and receiving tuition at home, 7348. Exclusive of tion of New Zealand on December 31, 18838, was 515,000. census of 1881 returns the number in April of that year as 489,933 (269,605 males and 220,328 females). The average number of persons to an inhabited dwelling was 5°12. The popu- lation under twenty-one years of age was 258,774, of whom 128,791 were females. The number of those born in the colony was 45°60 per cent. of the whole population ; of those born in England,~~

~~the aboriginal population, the cstimated popula- Popula- The tion.~~

~~History.~~

~~NE Y—~~

~~24°33 per cent. ; in Scotland, 10°77; in Ireland, 10°08; in Wales, 0°40; in Australia and Tasmania, 3°53; in British America, 0°73; in other British possessions, 0°82; in Denmark, Sweden, and Norway, 0°97; in Germany, 0°98; in United States, 0°35; in China, 1:03; and elsewhere, 0°41.~~

~~The excess of immigration over emigration for the ten years 1872-81 was 4973, 8811, 38,106, 25,270, 11,955, 6376, 10,502, 18,723, 7231, and 1616 persons respectively. The great decrease in the last two years is owing to the stoppage, almost wholly, of immigration at public cost.~~

~~The proportionate number in 1881 of occupied European holdings of land, exclusive of crown pastoral leases, classified according to size is as follows: — holdings over 1 acre and up to 10 acres in- clusive, 7680 ; thence up to 50 acres, 6498; to 100, 4462; to 200, 5066 ; to 320, 2453; to 640, 2258; to 1000, 828; to 5000, 1097; to 10,000, 185; to 20,000, 169 ; to 50,000, 111; to 100,000, 18; and above 100,000, 7 ; total, 30,832.~~

~~It has always been difficult to collect the number of the aboriginal population. In 1878 the number returned was 438,595; in 1881 44,097, of whom 19,729 were females. Those residing in the North Island were 22,872 males, and 18,729 females. The apparent increase in 1881 is believed by the registrar-general to be attributable to omissions in 1878. His conclusion is that on the whole there was a decrease from 1878 to 1881. If former estimates, partly conjectural, are at all correct, the decrease during the last forty years has been considerable. The comparatively small pro- portion of females under fifteen years of age to the total population of both sexes in 1881, given as 15°35 per cent., renders future increase improbable. Generally, Maoris are in form middle-sized and well-made. They show great aptitude for European habits. The Maoris are of Polynesian race ; and the probability is that they migrated from the Navigators' Islands to Rarotonga, and thence to New Zealand. Their tradition is that they came originally from '**Hawaiki." This may be the Hawaiian or Sandwich Islands ; but there is also ''Savii," which isa dialectical form of the other name, in the Navigators' Islands. Dr Thomson, in his Story of New Zealand, quotes a Maori tradition, among those published by Sir George Grey, that certain islands, among which it names Rarotonga, Parima, and Manono, are islands near Hawaiki. The natives of Rarotonga state that their ancestors came from Hawaiki; and Pirima and Manono are the native names of two islands in the Navigators' group. The alinost identical languages of the Rarotonga natives and the Maoris, as well as other circumstantial evidence, strengthen the supposition. The distance from Rarotonga is about 3000 miles ; and, with the aid of the trade wind, large canoes could traverse the distance within a month. A comparison of genealogies of Maori chiefs of different tribes shows that about eighteen genera- tions, or probably not much more than five hundred years, have passed since the first migration. The origin and distribution of the Polynesian race cannot be discussed here,~~

~~but there is in some respects a remarkable likeness in the customs, appearance, and character of Maoris and of Malays.~~

~~The Maoris, before their conversion, had no idea of a Supreme Being. Their notion was that all things had been produced by pro- cess of generation from darkness and nothingness. They believed that the spirit survives the body, and retires to some place under the earth, whence it occasionally returns to advise and sometimes punish the living. The Maoris are divided into tribes, which respectively had their chiefs and priests. Land was held by tribal tenure, and small plots were cultivated. Hach tribe had its unwritten laws regarding land, cultivation, and other social matters. ‘“Tapu,”’ or the practice of making certain things sacred, —a rule, the breach of which was severely punished by spirits and men,—was an essential element in their. code of law. Tribes were constantly fighting with each other ; and the chief causcs of strife arose from alleged wrougs to property and person. Cannibalism was practised from vindictive feelings. Slaves were captives in war. The dead bodies of chiefs were put away on stages ; and in course of time the bones were collected and hidden in secret places. The Maoris have a genius for war, and show great ability in building, fortifying, and defending stockailes.~~

~~The Maori language isa Polynesian dialect. It closely approaches that of the Sandwich Islands, of the Navigators’ group, and of Rarotonga. Natives of these mutually understand each other.~~

~~The first European discoverer of New Zealand was Tasman, in 1642, who did not, however, land there. Captain Cook, in 1769, was the first European who set foot on its shores, and he took formal possession of the country for King George III. Cook visited New Zealand several times, and circumnavigated the coasts in the course of his three voyages of discovery, exploring and partly sur- veying the general outline. He introduced several useful animals and plants; and pigs, fowls, potatoes, turnips, and cabbages, first brought by him, increased and multiplied. From the time of Captain Cook’s final departure from New Zealand in 1777 to 1814, little is known of the country, except that, owing to the ferocity and cannibalism of its aborigines, it was a terror to sailors. In 1814~~

~~the Rev. Samuel Marsden, colonial chaplain to the Government of |~~

New South Wales, first established his chureli mission in New Zealand at the Bay of Islands. He was followed by others ; and both Protestant and Roman Catholic missions were formed. In the course of the following thirty years almost the whole native population was converted, nominally at least, to Christianity. There was in after years a considcrable relapse ; but the results of missionary teaching were, as a whole, great and permanent. Cannibalism ceased, and the barbarous nature of the race became softened and capable of civilization. The missionary paved the way for the colonist.

In February 1840 an assemblage of chiefs at the Bay of Islands signed the treaty of Waitangi acknowledging their submission to the queen of England ; and Her Majesty guaranteed their possessions, extended to them her protection, and imparted to them the rights and privileges of British subjects. This treaty was shortly after- wards signed by many other chiefs in other parts of both islands. Cavil as persons may at the treaty, there is no doubt that it is the honourable and equitable agreement on which New Zealand first became a British colony. The leading features of the colonization of the country, so far as the natives are concerned, can only be most briefly summarized here. The rights of the natives to their lands have been fully recognized by the crown; and no land has been alienated from them without their consent except in the case of the confiscated blocks which were taken under the authority of a special law from rebellious tribes. The native title to land has not been eonfined to that in actual use, but has extended over waste territory. The Government and the legislature have always been disposed to consider favourably native interests ; and special action has often been taken for that object. Mistakes have, no donbt, often been made on both sides; and serious disputes have arisen. Native tribes, here and there, have been in active insurrection, but at no time have the natives, as a racc, been arrayed in arms against Britain. A large majority has either been passive or friendly. The most serious disturbances took place in 1863 and 1864. During that time several British regiments and ships of war were, in common with the colonial forces, actively engaged in their sup- pression. No impcrial soldiers have been stationed in New Zealand since 1869. The colony has from that date altogether provided for its internal defence. The present state of native affairs is peaceful, and likely, with

ordinary prudence, to remain so. In many dis- tricts the gradual amalgamation of the two races is hopeful, natives and Europeans co-operating with each other in a common civiliza- tion. (W. GI.)

NEY, Micwen (1769-1815), one of the bravest of Napoleon's marshals, was born at Saarlouis on January 10, 1769. His father, who had been a soldier, gave him a fairly good education, and obtained for him an appoint- ment in some neighbouring mines. But his heart was set on the army, and in 1787 he went to Metz and enlisted in a regiment of hussars. But for the Revolution he could never have become more than a sergeant, but in the new state of things he was elected heutenant, and after- wards (1792) captain of his regiment. He was aide-de- camp to General Lamarque in March 1793, and soon after became lieutenant-colonel, when Kléber perceived his eminent military ability, and made him adjutant- general in August 1794. He was promoted colonel in September, and his merits were so great that Jourdan and Kléber actually quarrelled which should have the advant- age of his services. In February 1795 he might have become general of brigade, but modestly refused the rank, alleging his own unworthiness. He commanded the advanced guard of Kléber at the battle of Altenkirchen, and was made general of brigade on the field of Forchheim. He then commanded the right wing of Hoche's army, and in 1798 took Mannheim. Sent next to Switzerland, he there reorganized Masséna's cavalry, and immensely dis- tinguished himself in Masséna's great campaign, in which he was three times wounded, and after which he was made general of division. In 1799 he commanded on the Rhine, and by his skilful operations obtained the armistice during which the coup d'état of Brumaire took place. In 1801 he was present at Hohenlinden, and in May 1802 he married Mademoiselle Auguié, whom Josephine had chosen for him at Bonaparte's request. He became inspector- general of cavalry, and, after a short residence as minister in Switzerland, commandant of the camp of Montreuil. It was while there that in the name of the army he begged Napoleon to declare himself emperor, and on the establish-

ment of the empire he was made marshal of France and grand cross of the Legion of Honour. In 1805 he com- manded the 6th corps of the grand

~~army, and by his victory at Elchingen, for which he was made duke of Elchingen, secured the surrender of General Mack at Ulm. He was then ordered to the upper Adige, and missed the battle of Austerlitz, but was present at Jena and Eylau, and was so instrumental in winning the battle of Friedland that Napoleon called him the brave des braves, and gave him the grand eagle of the Legion of Honour. In 1808 he was ordered to Spain with the 6th corps, and received the command of Galicia, which he managed to keep in subjec- tion to the French in spite of the mountainous nature of the country. In 1810, in command of a corps d'armée under Masséna, he advanced into Portugal, but he was so disgusted at being under Masséna's command that per- petual quarrels resulted, and not only were the French defeated at Busaco, but Ney, when conducting the last column on the retreat from Torres Vedras, received more than one repulse from Lord Wellington at Pombal, Redinha, and Foz d'Aronce. For his opposition to Masséna Ney was recalled from Spain, but received the command of the 3d corps in the grand army of 1812. At the battle of the Moskva he so distinguished himself that he was made Prince de la Moskowa on the field, and in the disastrous retreat from Moscow it was Ney who com- manded the rear-guard, and kept the relics of the grand army together. He served at Liitzen and Leipsic, and in the last defensive campaign of 1814, and with Macdonald remained faithful to Napoleon to the last. At the Restora- tion he was made a peer, and in 1815 was given the command of the army sent to check Napoleon on escaping from Elba. But the sight of the old colours and of his old master was too much for him, and he led his troops over to Napoleon's side. In the Flemish campaign he fought the battle of Quatre Bras against the English on the same day that Napoleon defeated the Prussians at Ligny, and at Waterloo he commanded in person the last charge of the Old Guard. He made no attempt to leave France, aud was arrested as a traitor; on December 5 he was found guilty of high treason by the House of Peers by 169 votes to 17, and two days later he was shot in the gardens of the Luxembourg. His execution caused a cry of horror ; while no one would have regretted the death of Fouché or many another of the innumerable traitors, it is to be lamented that Ney was chosen to suffer, whose honesty was well known, and had only once failed him.~~

~~The character of Ney was that of a simple soldier; intensely brave, though without the rash impetuosity of a Murat, he was yet as modest as he was~~

brave; as a general his conduct of the two retreats from Portugal and Russia are his chief titles to fame; and, if he was not faithful to the Bourbons, he paid with his life for his defection.

See Mémoires du Maréchal Ney, publiés par sa Jamille, Paris, 1833, which go down to the capitulation of Ulm, and were translated into English in 18383; Vie du Maréchal Ney, Paris, 1816; Histoire complete du proces du Maréchal Ney, 1815, English translation, 1816; A. Delmas, Mémoire sur la révision du proces du Maréchal Ney, 1832; and Military Studics by Marshal Ney written for the use

of his ojicers, translated by C. H. Caunter, with notes by Major A. James, London, 1833.

NIAGARA, a river in North America forming a por- tion of the great lake and river system known as the St LawRENCE (q.v.), flows northward from Lake Erie (573 feet above sea-level) to Lake Ontario, separating the State of New York from the province of Ontario in Canada, and within the 33 miles of its course makes a total descent of 328 feet. On issuing from Lake Erie the river is only about three-fourths of a mile broad, and for the first two miles is somewhat swift ; it then divides and passes round Grand Island, broadens and assumes the tranquillity of a

lake until the commencement of the rapids, where it sud- denly narrows and makes a descent of about 52 feet in the mile before its hurried and troubled waters are precipitated over a lofty chasm forming falls of unexampled grandeur. The breadth of the river immediately be- fore making the leap is 4750 feet, but the centre is occupied by Goat Island, rising about 40 feet above the water, and oc- cupying a breadth of about 1000 feet, a distance of abou

double that distance | 7 from the Canadian Al side, while the length at of the verge line be-) tween the island and the Canadian side is moreover increased by an inward horse- shoe curve. The height of the fall on the American side is about 164 feet, and on the Canadian side about 150 feet; the dis- charge is about 18,000,000 cubic feet per minute. The waters

~~plunge into an abyss about 1000 feet wide, and during the next seven miles make a descent of about 104 feet through a deep ravine with perpendicular banks rising toa height of from 200 to 350 feet, the breadth of the river varying from 250 to 400 yards. Three miles below the great falls the whirlpool rapids are formed by a sudden turn in the channel causing the waters to impinge against the Canadian shore, where they have made a deep indenta- tion, and to rush back to the American side in a great whirl or eddy, rendered more furious by the uneven bed of the river, and the narrow space into which it contracts. After issuing from the gorge at Lewiston the river enters on a tranquil course, which continues to Lake Ontario. The point where thé gorge ceases marks the termination of a table-land in an escarpment facing northwards ; and it has been generally held that the falls were situated here at the time when the river first began to flow, that is, subse- quently to the great Ice Age. Recent study has suggested a much more complicated theory, making a great part of the gorge older than the Ice Age, and thus reducing the period for which the modern river has flowed from several hundred thousands of years to one-tenth of that time. The rate of recession is very uncertain; while it would appear from the best maps that some parts have receded at least 100 feet since 1841, others have remained more or less stationary. At the present site of the falls the edge of the cataract is formed by strata of hard limestone reaching to a depth of about 80 feet; and by the action of the spray the softer shaly strata below have been hollowed out so as to form the "Cave of Winds," which may be entered from the Canadian side. The river is crossed by a suspen- sion bridge for foot passengers, about 250 yards below the falls, and a mile and a half farther down by two railway bridges about a hundred yards apart,—one of which has a carriage way 18 feet below ; the other, a cantilever bridge, completed in December 1883, carries a double line of rails. The name Niagara (''thunder of waters'') is the invention of an Indian tribe who adopted it as their own designation, from the fact that it was descriptive of the remarkable natural phenomenon~~

~~situated within their territory. This tribe, on account of their peace- ful proclivities, were also called the Neuter Nation; but, to avoid~~

~~Niagara River.~~

the fury of the Iroquois, they finally joined them in 1723 against the Hnrons, and from this time they ceased to exist as a separate tribe. The first printed allusion to the cataract is in the record of a voyage by Jacques Cartier in 1535. Its position was first mentioned by Samuel Champlain in a map attached to his voyages published in 1613. The earliest description is that by Fathcr Hennepin, who visited it in 1678, and published an account of it accompanied with a sketch giving a view of a third fall on the north side cansed by the presence of a large rock on-Table Rock. The rock and cascade are mentioned by Kalm the Swedish naturalist, who visited Niagara in 1750, but they had disappeared a few years previously. Some writers indeed mention as many as six falls, and there can at least be no donbt that within the last two hundred years the aspect of

origin, meaning in that language "great eaters," with reference, as is supposed, to their cannibalistic propensities. The most general national name is Zandey (pl. A-Zandey), which seems to be current throughout the eastern Niam- Niam domain, a region estimated by Schweinfurth (11. p. 4) at about 48,000 square miles, with a population of at least two millions. But these by no means constitute a uniform ethnical group, for within this area is the large A-Madi nation,? differing altogether in speech and even in some respects physically from the ordinary Niam-Niam

the falls has been greatly altered. Goat Island extended, up to a comparatively recent period, for about another half mile northerly in a triangular prolongation ; and the number of small islands was perhaps larger than at present. Large masses fell in 1818, 1828, 1843, and 1847, and in June 1850 Table Rock disappeared.

See Sir Charles Lyell, Travels in North America, 1845; George W. Holley, Niagara, 1880; paper by Professor Tyndall on "Niagara" in Macmillan's Maga-

zine, vol. xxviii. (May 1873); paper by G. W. Holley in Scribner's Magazine

~~(August 1876); Dr Julius Pohimann, Life History of the Niagara River, 1883.~~

~~NIAGARA FALLS, a village of Niagara county, New~~

~~York, situated at the Niagara falls, opposite Drummondville (on the Canadian side), and a mile and a half above the contiguous village of Suspension Bridge, formerly Niagara City, which is connected by a suspension bridge with Clifton (on the Canadian side), At Niagara Falls there are grist mills and machine shops. of Niagara Falls was 3320, and that of Suspension Bridge 2476. Both villages are largely frequented by visitors.~~

~~NIAM-NIAM, a numerous and widespread Central~~

~~African race, who were first visited by John Petherick in 1858, and have since been more fully described, especially by Piaggia, Dr Schweinfurth, Dr W. Junker, Potagos, and G. Casati. But none of these explorers have penetrated more than a few miles from the upper Nile and Welle basins into the Niam-Niam domain, which consequently still remains for the most part an unknown land. Its limits are determined on the east by the Bongo and Monbuttu territories, about 28° E. long., and on the north as far as 20° E. long. by Dar-Fertit and Dar-Banda, about 7° N. lat. But in other directions they extend for unknown distances on the south towards the middle Congo, westwards along the Kuta (upper Shari?) probably to the Fan country, which is now known to stretch from the Ogoway basin for a vast space towards the north-east. Nearly the whole of equatorial Africa, from the neighbour- hood of Lake Albert Nyanza to the Atlantic, east and west, and from the Congo to the headwaters of the Shari, south and north, would thus appear to be divided between the two great cannibal nations of the Fans on the west and Niam-Niam on the east. Their common cannibalism, combined with some other characteristics, has suggested a possible ethnical relationship of these two peoples, which, however, has not been confirmed by a close examination of the respective physical types. The Fans, like the Fulahs of Soudan, seem to be fundamentally distinct from the Negro stock, although more or less affected by Negro elements, whereas the Niam-Niam, notwithstanding certain marked peculiarities, cannot be severed ethnically from that connexion.~~

~~Affinities have also been sought for them amongst the~~

~~neighbouring Krej tribes, amongst the Nubas of Kordofan'~~

~~and the Nile, and even amongst the Soudanese Fulahs, but, in the absence of more ample details, any attempt to determine the relations of the Niam-Niam to the surrounding peoples must be regarded as premature.~~

~~The term Niam-Niam, by which they are best known! to the neighbouring populations, appears to be of Dinka~~

~~1 Not exclusively, for they are called Babungera by the Mangbattns (Monbuttus), A-Madyaka by the Dyurs, Mundo or Manyanya by the Bongos, Makkarakka or Kakkaraka by the Mittus. But Niam- Niam, pronounced Gnani-gnam (Ital. gn), has been adopted and gene- ralized by the Soudan and Nubian Mohammedans.~~

~~In 1880 the population~~

~~type. Apart also from numerous tribal divisions, the eastern Niam-Niam proper form three very distinct branches, presenting considerable varieties in appearance, language, usage, and general culture. The bleak, northern highlands bordering east on the Bongos and north on Dar- Fertit are occupied by the Banda Niam-Niam, a rude and savage people, rather of a black-brown than of a red com- plexion, omnivorous in taste, devouring apes, reptiles, insects, and apparently human flesh, practising circumcision, and wearing a broad strip of bast or even mere foliage round the loins. These are succeeded southwards by the more civilized Belanda Niam-Niam, who hold the fertile hilly territory about the headwaters of the Abu-Dinga, Beri, Dembo, and other western tributaries of the White Nile. They are of a very dark red or coppery colour, of middle size, and somewhat regular features, betraying distinctly Negro blood chiefly in their woolly hair and thick lips. Their costume is even more scanty than that of the Banda, but special attention is paid to the hair, which often presents the most elaborate designs, more picturesque than conducive to the comfort of the wearer. They cultivate durrah, maize, sesame, bananas, batatas, and are skilled wood and ivory carvers, and workers in iron, producing knives, spears, chains, bracelets, and other ornaments in this metal, which abounds~~

~~in their country. Very different from either of the foregoing are the so-called "White" Niam-Niam, neighbours of and probably often confounded with the already mentioned A-Madi of the Makua-Welle river basin. The complexion seems to be more of a bronze tint, and they are distinguished from the other branches of the family by their tall stature, sym- metrical figure, long kinky hair and beard, and higher social culture. They wear cotton garments, obtained by barter for ivory, copper, and iron, are fond of music and dancing, occasionally form powerful political states, which, however, are liable to disintegration at the death of the founder,' and in many respects present certain affinities with the Baghirmi and other Negroid peoples of the Chad basin. But so little is yet known of the institutions and internal condition of the Niam-Niam race that these divisions cannot be accepted as finally established. At the same time there can be no doubt at all about the existence of a very distinct Niam-Niam type, which is one of the most marked in the whole of Africa. 'These beings," remarks Schweinfurth, on his first introduction to them,~~

~~2 Visited by Dr W. Junker in 1882-83, and described by him in Petermann's Mittheilungen for May 1883.~~

~~3 About the middle of this century most of the castern Niam-Niam lands appear to have been subject to Yapaty, son of Mabengeh. But after his death they were distributed amongst his seven sons, Renjy, Balia, Perkye, Tombo, Bazimbey, Manuba; and in 1870 there were already fourteen reigning princes of this dynasty, besides several others of doubtful relationship with the line of Mabengeh. In the Niam-Niam districts visited by the traders from Egyptian Soudan there were at that time altogether as many as thirty-five independent chiefs. But reports were current of a very powerful " sultan " named Mofio, whose empire lay some 300 miles farther west. Another large state, founded in the Welle region by Kipa (Kifa), brother of Yapaty, also fell to pieces after his death in 1868. The powerful chiefs Bakangoi and Kanna, visited in 1888 by Casati, are sons of this Kipa, whose grave near Kanna's village is still watched by twenty-five '* vestals," bound, under penalty of death, to keep a fire constantly burning, and to pre- serve their chastity inviolate (Zsploratore, sary 1883).~~

"stood out like creatures of another world . . . a people of a marked and most distinct nationality, and that in Africa and amongst Africans is saying much " (i. p. 487).

Their most salient characteristics appear to be—great space be- tween the orbits, giving them at once a peculiarly savage and frank expression ; very short nose, with correspondingly long upper lip ; woolly hair much longer thau that of any other Negro people; head of @ pronounced brachycephalous type, agreeing in this respect with the Bongos of the White Nile, but differing from the great majority of the other African dark races, who are distinctly dolichocephalic ; features generally round, less prognathous, and altogether more regular than the typical Negro ; ruddy brown or chocolate colour, like that of a cigar, scarcely ever black, but occasionally bronze and even olive (Pctherick) ; symmetrical figures, about the middle size, robust and active. These points seem to indicate a large com- mingling of Negro and foreign elements, but in what proportion and from what source it would be unsafe to conjecture in the absence of trustworthy anthropometrical data. At present all that can be said with any certainty is that the A-Zandey are to be regarded as rather of mixed Negroid than of pure N egro stock.

Their traditions, customs, political and religious institutions, and general culture seem to point at the same conclusion. The savagery of most tribes, their pronounced caunibalism, agricultural and hunting rather than pastoral habits, universal belief in sorcery and fetichism, may be credited to the N egro element, while to foreign influences may be attributed their great intelligence, shown especi- ally in the skilful structure of their dwellings and in the remarkable taste and proficiency displayed in the native industries. Prominent among these are their earthenware vessels of faultless symmetry ; iron-smelting and metal works such as scimitars, knives, and spears; wood carvings such as stools, ben ches, bowls, tobacco pipes of varied and intricate design, and often "admirable works of art" (Schweinfurth). It may also be stated that their reputation for extreme ferocity appears to have been greatly exaggerated by early report, although on the other hand the charge of cannibalism in its very worst forms has been

fully confirmed by the latest Kuropean observers. Nevertheless the A-Zandey, who everywhere present those sharp contrasts of habits and temperament so characteristic of mixed races, are distinguished by some excellent qualities, such as frankness, courage, an instinctive love of art, and abeve all a genuine and lasting affection for their women, such as is betrayed by no other African race. 'A husband will spare no sacrifice to redeem an imprisoned wife; and the N ubians, being acquainted with this, turn it to profitable account in the ivory trade. They are quite aware that whoever possesses a female hostage can obtain oe any compensation from a Niam-niam " (Schweinfurth, i. p. 472).

Beyond a few meagre vocabularies no materials have yet been collected for the study of the Zandey language, which, except in the A-Madi country, appears to be everywhere spoken with con- siderable uniformity in the eastern N iam-niain lands. Its phonetic system, such as initial mb and vowel auslaut, affiliates it, not to the Libyan, as has been asserted, but to the Negro linguistic type. Within this order of speech its pronominal prefix inflexion points to affinity rather with the southern Bantu than with the Soudan group of languages. Thus the personal plural a-, as in A-Zandey, A-Madi, A-Banga, &c., would appear to be identical in origin and meaning with the Bantu wa-, as in Wa-Ganda, Wa-Swaheli, Wa- Zambara, &c. There is also the same dearth of abstract terms, which renders the translation of Scripture into the N. egro tongues such a hopeless task, Compare gumbah, an expression for the deity, really meaning "lightning," with the Chinyanja chuuta=thunder = God (2) and the Zulu Onkulunkulu= great-grandfather, also adopted by the missionaries as the nearest equivalent for the deity in that language.

Bibliography.—John Petherick, Egypt, the Soudan and Central Africa, 1861: Piaggia's "Account of the Niam-Niam," communicated by the ae Antinori to the Bolletino of the Italian Geographical Society, 1868 pp. 91-168: Schweinfurth, Heart of Africa, English edition, 1873; G. Casati's Journey to the Niam-Niam Country," j

" Rundreise in dem siidlichen Niamniam-Lande," in Petermann's Mittheilungen for May 1883, PASH Ke

NIAS ISLAND. See Suararra.

NIBELUNGENLIED, or Nisetuner N6t, a great epic poem written in a Middle High German dialect. The story told in this poem belonged in its primitive form to the whole Teutonic race, and was composed originally of purely mythological elements. It is touched upon in Beowulf, and forms the most important subject of the old Norse poems, in which it is presented in fragments,—the poets having apparently assumed that the tale as a whole was known to every one, and that their hearers would be able to put each incident in its proper place. It is also set forth in the prose Edda and in the Thidrekssaga, which

belongs to the 13th century. The substance of the story in its Norse form is as follows. Beside a waterfall the three Anses—Odin, Loki, and Hénir—see an otter devour- ing a salmon. They kill it, and taking its skin with them seek shelter for the night in the house of Rodmar. He recognizes the skin as that of his son Otter, and demands that as much gold as is necessary to cover it shall be de- livered to him as " wergild." In a net Loki catches the dwarf Andwari in the shape of a pike, and compels hini to pay for his ransom a great treasure, which covers the whole of the skin except one hair. In order to cover this hair Loki takes from the dwarf a magic ring which breeds gold, and Andwari, enraged, curses the hoard. His curse attends it to the last, and begins to operate immediately, for Rodmar, who claims for himself the whole of the "weregild," is slain by his sons, Fafnir and Regin. Fafnir takes possession of the hoard, and in the form of a snake guards it on Glistenheath. Regin, indignant at being deprived of his share, calls to his aid Sigurd, a young hero for whom he makes the sharp sword Gram ; and, armed with Gram, Sigurd goes to Glistenheath and kills Fafnir. While Sigurd is roasting Fafnir's heart, which Regin has cut out, the fat dropping into the fire burns his finger, and putting the hurt part into his mouth, he finds that he has suddenly obtained the power of understanding the language of birds. He thus learns that Regin intends to act treacherously towards him. Sigurd therefore slays Regin, and rides away with the hoard in two bundles on his horse Grani. In a houseona hillhe finds the Walkyrie Brunhild in an enchanted sleep, from which she awakes, and plights her troth to Sigurd, who loves her ardently. Coming to the court of Giuki, a king of the Rhineland, Sigurd forms a friendship with Giuki's sons, Gunnar,

~~Hégni, and Guthorm. Gudrun, Giuki's daughter, being fascinated by the stranger, gives him an enchanted drink which causes him to forget Brunhild, and then he and Gudrun are married. Gunnar wishes to make Brunhild his wife, and asks Sigurd to go with him in quest of her. Flames encompass her tower ; and she will accept as her husband only the hero who shall succeed in riding through them. Gunnar makes the attempt in vain ; but Sigurd, mounted on Grani, has no difficulty in passing to Brun- hild, with whom he exchanges rings, giving her the ring of the dwarf Andwari. Sigurd, however, has assumed the form of Gunnar, and Brunhild supposes that it is by Gunnar she has been won. All of them return to Giuki's court, Sigurd having taken his own form again, and Brunhild having become Gunnar's wife. Here a quarrel breaks out between Brunhild and Gudrun, the former contending that Sigurd's position is inferior to that of her husband, while Gudrun retorts by telling her rival that it was Sigurd who rode through the flames. Brunhild, maddened by jealousy, in- cites Guthorm, Gunnar's brother, to murder Sigurd ; and twice Guthorm glides into Sigurd's chamber to accomplish her will, but departs when he finds Sigurd awake and gazing at him with flashing eyes. The third time Sigurd is asleep, and Guthorm stabs him. Sigurd, before dying, has just strength enough to throw his sword after. the murderer, whom it cuts in two. Brunhild laughs at the desolation she has wrought, but all the time she has loved Sigurd, and she kills herself with the sword that has slain him, and is burned with him on his pyre. By and by Gudrun takes as her second husband Atli, Brunhild's brother, king of the Huns. Ati asks her brothers, Gunnar and Hoégni, to visit him ; and, notwithstanding her warnings, they accept his invitation. He demands of them Sigurd's hoard, which he claims as Gudrun's pro- perty ; but before leaving home they have buried it beneath the Rhine, and they refuse to say where it is con- cealed. After a fierce' contest in which all the followers of~~

~~NIBELUN~~

~~Gunnar and Hiégni fall, Atli renews his demand, promising to spare Gunnar's life if he will reveal the secret. Gunnar declines to do so until he sees the heart of his brother Higni. The heart of a slave is laid before him, but he declares that it cannot be Hégni's, since it quakes. Higni's heart is then cut out, the victim laughing in the midst of his pain; but Gunnar is still resolute, proclaim- ing that he alone knows where the hoard is, and that no~~

one shall share the knowledge with him. His hands being bound, he is put into the court of serpents, where he plays so sweetly on a harp with his toes that he charms all the reptiles except an adder, by which he is stung to death. Gudrun avenges the murder of her brothers by killing the sons she has borne to Atli, and causing him unwittingly to drink their blood and eat their hearts. In the night she kills Atli himself, burns his hall, and leaps into the sea, by the waves of which she is carried to new scenes, where she has adventures not connected with those recorded in the Nibelungentted.

The tale of which this is one version, pieced together from many poetical fragments, assumed different forms until it was put into its final shape in the Nibelungenlied. The heroine of the German poem is Kriemhild, who represents Gudrun. She lives at Worms, the capital of the Burgundian kingdom, with her brothers Gunther, Gernot, and Giselher, of whom the eldest, Gunther, is king of the Burgundians. To Worms comes Siegfried (an older form than Sigurd), the son of Siegemund and Siegelind, the king and queen of the Netherlands. Siegfried possesses the magic hoard, but he does not obtain it as Sigurd obtains it in the Norse form of the tale. He takes it from two princes of Nibelungen-land, to whom it has been bequeathed by their father, King Nibelung. Quarrelling as to their respective shares, they appeal to Siegfried to decide between them; and he, irritated by their unreasonableness, kills them and seizes the treasure, together with the sword Balmung and the Tarnkappe, or cloak of darkness, which renders the wearer invisible and gives him the power of twelve men. Although this is how the hoard comes into his hands, he is still represented as slayng a dragon, in whose blood he bathes, being thus rendered invulnerable except in one spot between the shoulders, on which a leaf falls before the blood is dry. At the Burgundian court Siegfried wins the hand of Kriemhild; but before their marriage he establishes a claim to the gratitude of King Gunther, the lover of Brunhild, the young and stalwart queen of Iceland, who requires that any one wishing to be her husband shall surpass her in three games. Gunther and Siegfried with their followers sail to Iceland ; and with the aid of Siegfried, who during the trial of skill and vigour makes himself invisible by donning the Tarnkappe, Gunther overcomes the powerful maid. On the night of the wedding Brunhild scoffs at Gunther, struggles with him, binds him, and lets him hang on the wall ignominiously until the morning. Next night, with- out the knowledge of Brunhild,

Siegfried goes to the help of his friend, and as a token of his conquest takes her ring and girdle, after which she is incapable of giving Gunther further trouble. Siegfried and Kriemhild then go to the Netherlands, where they live for some years in perfect happiness and with great splendour, the Nibelungen hoard being sufficient to provide them with the means of lavish display. Invited to visit the Burgundian court, they quit Santen, the capital of the Netherlands and Siegfried's birthplace, and, attended by a brilliant retinue, make for Worms. Up to this point the tone of the poem is bright and cheerful; we now begin to see the working of tragic forces which from petty complications lead to strife and disaster. Brunhild, who is of a proud and sullen temper, has always shown bitter animosity towards Siegfried,

Giant i lh D 475

whom she is represented as recognizing when they meet in Iceland. She insults Kriemhild by vaunting the superior greatness of Gunther, and by claiming precedence. Kriemhild resents these pretensions, and in an animated scene before the cathedral of Worms asserts her right to enter first with her attendants. The quarrel becoming furious, Kriemhild pretends that Siegfried had taken an unfair advantage of Brunhild on the night when he had fought with her in her bridal chamber, and produces the girdle and ring (of the seizure of which Brunhild had been unconscious) as evidences of her disgrace. In vain Siegfried tries to restore harmony by rebuking his wife for this malicious invention: Brunhild is too deeply wounded to forgive so bitter a wrong, and meditates a fearful vengeance. At last she decides that Siegfried shall die ; and Hagen, one of Gunther's bravest warriors, under-takes to do her bidding. Inducing Kriemhild to tell him where her husband is vulnerable, he achieves his purpose during a hunting expedition, from which Kriemhild, warned by a dream, has entreated Siegfried to stay away. Kriemhild is overwhelmed with grief and rage, and the rest of the story relates chiefly to her thirst for revenge, and the manner in which she slakes it. For thirteen years she remains quietly at Gunther's court. Then Riidiger, margrave of Bechlaren, appears as the ambassador of Etzel (Attila), king of the Huns, and entreats Kriemhild to be- come Etzel's wife. She consents, and again thirteen years pass without any important incident. At the end of that time Gunther and his followers are invited by Etzel and Kriemhild to the land of the Huns; and, despite super- natural intimations and Hagen's

~~presentiments, they resolve to go. The ultimate result is that in a terrible conflict the Burgundian visitors are destroyed. When all of them have fallen save Gunther and Hagen, these survivors are overcome by Dietrich, a resident at Etzel's court, and delivered by him to Etzel and Kriemhild. The closing scenes are complicated by reference to the hoard of the Nibelungen, which had been taken after Siegfried's death by Gunther as Kriemhild's brother. In virtue of his pos- session of it he and his people are called Nibelungen ; but he possesses it only in name, for Hagen, who had brought it to Worms, fearing that it would work evil, had buried it (as Gunnar and Hégni are represented to have done) beneath the Rhine. Kriemhild commands Hagen to reveal its resting-place, but he answers that he has sworn not to tell the secret as long as the king lives. The head of Gunther being exhibited to him, he still refuses; where- upon, snatching the sword Balmung, which Hagen has used since Siegfried's death, Kriemhild rids herself of her enemy by beheading him. Immediately afterwards she herself is killed by Hildebrand, a Hunnish warrior, who is horrified by her savage cruelty.~~

~~Many elements embodied in the Norse rendering of the primitive tale are retained in the Nibelungenlied ; and, indeed, it is impossible to understand the latter thoroughly without reference to the former. For instance, the recognition of Siegfried by Brunhild in Iceland, and her misery in beholding his happiness with Kriemhild, are unintelligible until we know that Siegfried and Brunhild are supposed to have been lovers before the action of the poem begins. Again, we cease to be puzzled by the malign power of the hoard only when we learn how an evil fatality has been associated with it by the wrath of Andwari. After all, however, the points in which the later version agrees with the earlier one are not more remarkable than those in which they differ. In the Norse poems the only historical character is Atli or Attila; but in the Nibelungenlied Attila (Etzel) is associated with Theodoric the East Goth (Dietrich), while the relations of Gunther to Siegfried seem to be a reminiscence of the absorption~~

~~of the Burgundian kingdom by the Franks. almost all the mythological features of the tale have dis- appeared, ethical influences having become~~

more prominent. The curse on the hoard is little more than a picturesque survival, for although it symbolizes, sometimes very effec- tively, a kind of mysterious fate in the background, the destinies of the various characters would not have been different if it had been altogether omitted. If the characters are less grand, they are more human; and their motives have a closer resemblance to those represented in modern poetry. It is true that Kriemhild works as much desolation as Gudrun, but her cruelty is not so revolting, and it does not spring, like Gudrun's, from passions ex- cited by a blood-feud, but from wounded love.

The Wbelungenlied is composed of stanzas of four lines, the first line rhyming with the second, the third with the fourth. ach line is divided into two parts by the cesura, the first part having four accents, the second part three, except in the last line, where the second part has also four accents. Some of the rhymes indicate poverty of resource, and the diction is very simple ; but the poet displays much artistic skill in the handling of the traditions which it was his task to weave into a continuous narrative. He selects his incidents with fine tact, and almost invariably places them in relations which are fitted to bring out their full significance. Character he is able to conceive powerfully and vividly. Perhaps the only character who loses anything by his mode of treatment is Brunhild, who is certainly far less impressive in the Wibelungenlied than in the Norse poems. Kriemhild, on the other hand, is a splendid creation of imaginative genius. First we see her as a simple maid, gentle and modest ; then her powers are awakened by love; and when the light of her life is suddenly quenched all her tenderness dies. She has then but one end, to avenge her husband's death ; and for its accomplishment she sacrifices everything—repose, the possibilities of new happiness, and at last existence itself. The transitions are startling, but not unnatural in a rude age; and in the earlier stages of Kriemhild's career they are lightly and delicately touched. Towards the close, when her vengeance is being sated, the style is intensely concentrated, vivid, and impassioned ; but the change does not take the reader by surprise, for he is prepared for it even in the brightest scenes of the poem by hints of inevitable ruin. Siegfried is less complex than Kriemhild, but not less poetically presented. He isa flawless hero, strong, brave, loyal, and generous; and it is possible, as some critics suppose, that in the original myth he personified the radiance of summer in conflict with the

approaching gloom of winter. Hagen is as sombre and tragic a figure as Siegfried is bright and genial ; and, notwithstanding his guilt, he commands a certain admiration, for his crimes are only a manifestation of his fidelity to the royal house he serves. Another character wrought with great imaginative power is Riidiger, who was probably introduced into the tale for the first time by the author of the Nibelungenlied. HIs part. is subordinate, but it suffices to evoke the expression of all the most. brilliant and attractive qualities of the age of chivalry.

There are twenty-eight manuscripts of the Nibelungeniied, some of them complete, others in fragments, and they date from the 18th to the 16th century, so that the poem must have been studied until about the time of the Reformation, It had been entirely for- gotten when, in the middle of the 18th century, Bodmer, the Swiss poet and critic, issued some portions of it along with the ‘‘ Klage,” a poem of the same period describing the lamentations at Etzel’s court over the fallen heroes. In 1782 C. H. Myller published the first full edition, using in the latter part Bodmer’s text. Very little attention, however, was given to the recovered epic until the writers of the Romantic school began to interest themselves in

medieval literature, Then the Nibelungenlied was read with enthusiasm ; and in 1807 Von der Hagen provided an improved

NIC—NIC

Moreover, | text with a glossary.

An cpoch in the study of the poem was marked by Lachmann, who in various writings contended that it consisted of twenty ancient ballads, that these ballads had been put together about 1210, that the collector or editor had connected them by stanzas of his own composition, and that in the ancient ballads themselves he had inserted unauthentic verses. Lachmann held that the Munich manuscript (A), which is the shortest, contains the purest text, and that it was extended by the authors of the texts in the St Gall manuscript (B) and the Lassberg manuscript ©. This view guided his labours in preparing his edition of the Nibelungenlied (1826) ; and the theory was for some time generally accepted. Hahn, however, in 1851, and H oltzinann, in 1854, suggested doubts whether the critical canons by which

~~Lachmann had distinguished authentic from unauthentic stanzas were valid ; and Holtzmann sought to prove that ©, the longest manuscript, not A, the shortest, is nearest the original form of the poem. This occasioned an animated controversy, in which many eminent scholars took part. In 1862 Pfeiffer gave a new aspect to the question by maintaining that in the 12th and the eatly part of the 13th century every poet considered ita point of honour to invent a new kind of stanza, and that, as we possess lyrics by the Austrian poet Von Kiirenberg, which are in the same measure as the Nibelungenlied, we are bound to conclude that he was the author of the poem. Developing this hint, Bartsch argues that the Nibelungenlied was written about 1140; that in its original form the lines ended not in rhymes but in assonances ; that about 1170 a younger poet introduced the principle of rhyme, although imper- fectly, into his predecessor's work ; that between 1190 and 1200, when rhyme was considered essential, two poets, independently of one another, completed the transformation which the second poet had begun; and that the work of the one is represented by manu- script C, the work of the other by manuscript B, of which A is an abbreviated form. Bartsch regards B (entitled Nibelunge Nét) as that which approximates most closely to the work of the first poet ; and this he has made the basis of his admirable critica] edition, published separately in two volumes, and in one volume in the series of Deutsche Classiker des Mittelalters. If Bartsch's view be correct, the poem must have been greatly injured by its successive transfor- mations. His theory is supported by the facts that assonances survive in all the manuscripts, and that the rhymes are not nearly so good as might have been expected from the creative energy with which the general scheme of the work is conceive ; The WNibelungenlied has been rendered into modern German, among others, by Simroek, Bartsch, Marbach, and Gerlach. See 11. Fischer, Die Forschungen tiber das Nibelungenlied seit K. Lachmann; and Paul, Zur Nibelungenfrage. A full oo oo résumé of the poem oceurs in the works of T. eG," Vol, Ii.). OL~~

~~NICZAA, or Nick, still called ISNIK, 7.¢., eis Nixatay, was an important town of Asia Minor, in Bithynia, on the lake Ascania. Antigonus built the city on an old deserted site, and soon afterwards Lysimachus changed its name from Antigonia to Nicza, calling it after his wife. Under the Roman empire Nicwa and Nicomedia disputed the title of metropolis of Bithynia.~~

~~After Constantinople became the capital of the empire Niczea grew in importance, and the Byzantine walls, which are still well preserved, are very extensive. On the council held there in 325 a.p. see CrEEDS and Councm. The possession of the city was long disputed between the Greeks and the Turks, It remained an important city for some time after its final incorporation in the Ottoman empire, but has decayed till it is now a poor and insignificant village. Strabo describes the ancient Nicea as built regularly, in the form of a square, with a gate in the middle of. each side. From a monument in the centre of the city all~~

~~'the four gates were visible at the extremities of great~~

~~cross-streets.~~

~~—NICANDER, a Greek poet, physician, and grammarian, succeeded his father Damneus or Xenophanes as heredit- ary priest of Apollo at Clarus, the famous temple in the territory of the Colophonians. Hence he is often called Colophonius. He wrote a great number of works both in prose and verse, of which two are preserved. The longest, Theriaca, is a poem in about 1000 hexameters on the nature of venomous animals and the wounds which they inflict. The other, Alexipharmaca, consists of 600 hexameters treating of poisons and their antidotes. The works of Nicander are praised by Cicero, and frequently quoted by Pliny and other writers. A Greek writer in the~~

~~Plate a, youl. xi.~~

~~Physical features.~~

~~NIC—NIC~~

~~Anthology celebrates the glory of Colophon as birthplace of both Homer and Nicander. The two works preserved do not justify this; they have, as Plutarch says, nothing of poetry about them except the metre, and the style is affected and obscure ; but they contain some interesting information as to ancient belief on the subjects treated. Nicander flourished probably in the 2d century B.c.~~

NICARAGUA, one of the five states of Central America, between 10° 30’ and 15° N. lat. and 88° 11’ and 87° 40’ W. long., forms an irregular equilateral triangle wedged in between Honduras and Costa Rica north and south, with base stretching for 280 miles along the Caribbean Sea from Cape Gracias & Dios southwards to the San Juan delta, and apex at the Coseguina volcano, Gulf of Fonseca, which separates it on the Pacific side from San Salvador. The frontier towards Honduras, as laid down by the treaty of 1870, runs from the Gulf of Fonseca in a north-westerly direction along the Cordillera de Dipilto to 85° W., and thence a little north of and nearly parallel with the Rio Coco (Wanks) to the Atlantic above Cape Gracias & Dios. The still contested Costa Rica frontier may be taken as practically defined by the course of the San Juan river and the south side of Lake Nicaragua to within 14 miles of the Pacific, where it is marked by a conventional line drawn across the isthmus from the mouth of the Sapoa river to Salinas Bay on the Pacific. Within these limits, and including the Reserva Mosquita (Mosquito territory), the state comprises a total area of 58,500 square miles, with a population usually estimated at 400,000, but by the census of 1882 reduced to 275,816, and distributed over ten departments, as under :—

Departments. Population. Chief Towns. | Population. “TRING Seqateosoasqncnene NG sy || TRING Skanecs pecepaonoon 10,000 Granada. .....s.---00: 51,056 | Granada……. 16,000 (2) Managua…….. 105067 |Wlansena……..- 12,000 (2) IL Gyo pnnrapeentecpenasee 23380) || 1b) Sess esonesauenasene | 25,000 Chimandesa ……..- 17,578 | Chinandega…….j 11,000 Nueva-Segovia …… BGO || Oreo coposssssessae 06 :| 8,000 (2) Matagalpa……..+.- 51,699 | Matagalpa…….. | 9,000 Chontales®.....2+s o7e7aee | Wilbertad……..- 5,000(2)| S. Juan del Norte… Tyee |) Cire viOi fills copscence | 2,000 aulleisy lahat) pameeeonoeor 36,000 | Bluefields……..) 1,000

The low. monotonous and swampy Mosquito Coast is broken by the two lagoons of Pearl Cay and Bluefields, and is fringed by a few cays (islets) and reefs, such as Great and Little Corn, Longreef, and Tangweera, which shelter no harbours, and serve only to obstruct the naviga- tion. Here the only port is Greytown (San Juan del Norte), formed by the northern branch

of the San Juan delta, and now nearly choked with sand. But the bold and rocky west coast, which extends for about 200 miles from Coseguina Point to Salinas Bay, although destitute of islands, presents a few convenient harbours, of which the chief are San Juan del Sur, Brito, and especially Realejo, which is designed as the terminus of Captain

Bedford Pim's Transatlantic route, and which Dunlop |

declares to be "as good a port as any in the known world," although of somewhat difficult access.

In Nicaragua the great geographical feature is the remarkable depression stretching for about 300 miles north-west and south-east parallel with the Pacific coast, and transversely to the Central American plateau, which it almost completely interrupts. This depression, which lies at a mean elevation of scarcely 100 feet above the sea, is now flooded by the two great lakes Managua and Nicaragua (Cocibolea), which collect nearly all the drainage

1 The figures given are official, but would appear to be understated. Tt will be observed that the population of the department is in one case closely approached and in two cases is actually exceeded by that of its chief town.

of the western provinces, discharging it through the desaguadero (outlet) of the Rio San Juan to the Atlantic. About midway between Lake Nicaragua and the Caribbean Sea, the San Juan entirely pierces the main chain of the Cordillera de los Andes, which here sweeps round the east side of the lacustrine basin at a mean height of 4000 or 5000 feet northwards to the Honduras highlands. Towards the lakes the descent is very precipitous; but on the opposite side the land falls in broad terraced plateaus down to the Mosquito coast.

Throughout its entire length the depression is traversed by a remarkable volcanic chain of isolated cones, which north of the lakes takes the name of the Maribios, termin- ating in the extreme north-west with Coseguina (4000 feet), and in the extreme south-east with the low wooded archipelagos of

Solentiname and Chichicaste near the head of the desaguadero. Between these two extremes the chief cones, proceeding southwards, are—the Maribios chain, comprising El Viejo (6000 feet), Santa Clara, Telica, Orota, Las Pilas, Axosco, Momotombo (7000 feet, highest point in the state), all crowded close together between the Gulf of Fonseca and Lake Managua; Masaya or Popocatepec and Mombacho (5700 feet), near Granada ; lastly, in Lake Nicaragua the two islands of Zapatera and Ometepec with its twin peaks Ometepec. (4100 feet) and Madera (4190 fect). Several of these are stillactive, or at least quiescent, and in 1835 Coseguina was the scene of one of the most tremendous eruptions on record. The outbreak lasted four days, during which sand fell in Jamaica, Mexico, and Bogota. After a long repose Ometepec also burst into renewed activity on June 19, 1883, when the lavas from a new crater began to overfiow, and continued for seven days to spread in various direc- tions over the whole island. The eruption was accom- panied by incessant rumblings and earthquakes, in conse- quence of which the whole population took refuge on the mainland. Mud, ashes, lavas, and rocks now cover the mountain slopes, which had been under uninterrupted cultivation for many centuries. In the Maribios district also occur several volcanic lakelets, suchas that of Masaya, besides numerous "infernillos," low craters or peaks still emitting sulphurous vapour and smoke, and at night often lighting up the whole land with bluish flames. The malpais, or barren lava-fields, here extend for miles in some directions, and no other region of equal extent probably betrays so many or so marked traces of igneous action as that portion of Nicaragua intervening between its lakes and the Pacific (Squier). Here the departments of Rivas and Granada are traversed by a low range sometimes spoken of as the Coast Range, which seldom rises above 2000 feet, and merges northwards in the magnificent plains of Leon and Conejo, that is, in the northern section of the lacustrine depression. It is crossed by three low and easy passes—at its southern extremity along the Costa Rica frontier, again between the ports of La Virgen on Lake Nicaragua and §. Juan del Sur on the Pacific, and in the north between Lake Managua near Nagarote and Tama- rinda Bay, while it disappears altogether south of Leon, where the depression reaches the coast at Realejo. our alternative routes are thus afforded for the interoceanic canal which is destined one day to connect the two seas through this great depression (see vol. iv. p. 793).

~~No rivers of any size flow westwards to the Pacific, the western provinces discharging, as already stated, mainly through the San Juan emissary to the Caribbean Sea, Yet Lake Managua, which lies 16 feet above Lake Nicaragua, and 150 (?) above sea-level, may now be regarded almost as a land-locked basin. Although nearly 50 miles long by 25 broad, with a nican depth of 30 feet, it seldom sends any overflow through the natural outlet of the Estero~~

~~Geology.~~

~~478~~

~~Panaloya (Tipitapa)! down to the lower basin. It does not appear to have undergone any perceptible change of level since the conquest ; but some of its former feeders have probably been displaced by the violent earthquakes, of which this region is a chief centre. Thus the present inflow, except during high floods, is mainly carried off by evaporation. But the larger lake continues to receive the important Rio Frio from Costa Rica at its south-eastern extremity, besides numerous perennial streams, especially from the western slopes of the Cordillera de los Andes. Hence there is an abundant discharge through the Rio San Juan, a deep, sluggish stream 128 miles long, from 100 to 400 yards broad, 10 to 20 feet deep, but unfortunately obstructed by five dangerous rapids presenting insuperable obstacles to steam navigation.? The lake itself is the largest fresh-water basin between Michigan and Titicaca, being nearly 100 miles long by 40 broad and 240 feet deep in some places, but shoaling considerably, especially towards the outlet, where it falls to 6 or 8 feet. Under the influence of the intermittent trade winds it rises and falls regularly towards the south side, whence the popular notion that it was a tidal lake. It is also exposed to the dangerous Papagayos tornadoes, caused by the prevailing north-easterly winds meeting opposite currents from the Pacific.~~

~~The little-known region of rugged plateaus and savan- nas occupying fully one-half of the state between the lacustrine depression and the Mosquito Coast is watered by several unnavigable streams, all draining from the Cordilleras eastwards to the Atlantic, and all distinguished by a perplexing nomenclature. The chief are, coming southwards, the Coco (Wanks or Segovia, known in its upper course as the Telpaneca), the Wama (Sisin~~

Creek), the Rio Grande (Great River or Amaltara), the Escondida (Bluefields, Blewfields, Rio del Desastre).

From the general relief of the land, as above set forth, its geological constitution is sufficiently obvious. In the west we have the lavas, tufas, sulphurs, pumice, and other recent volcanic formations of the Maribios system. These are succeeded east of the lacustrine basin by andesite rocks, trachytes, greenstone, and metalliferous porphyries of the Cordilleras, abounding in auriferous and argentiferous quartz, especially in Chontales and the uplands of north- west Segovia. Then come the older plutonic upheavals, crystallized schists, dolerites, d&c., apparently stretching down to the Mosquito Coast region, where they appear to underlie the comparatively modern sedimentary formations and alluvia of the streams flowing eastwards to the Caribbean Sea. The Chontales gold mines, which have been intermittently worked for many years past, lie about midway between the Atlantic and Pacific between 11° and 13° N. lat. and 85° and 86° W. long., and the mining industry is centred chiefly about Libertad, capital of Chontales, and Santo Domingo in the Matagalpa district.

1 According to Baily's survey this emissary is 16 miles long, with a fall of 7 inches per mile, and a depth of 6 to 12 feet during the rains, but at other times often quite dry. Other writers have represented it as completely interrupted by a break or ridge 4 miles wide in the centre, over which no water now ever flows from the upper lake (Boyle, i. p. 249). Frébel also states that since the earthquake of 1835 the channel has been closed, although J. M. Caceres, a native of Nicaragua, positively asserts that the two basins still communicate (Centro-America, Paris, 1880, p. 60).

2 It is often asserted that these rapids were artificially formed by the Spaniards themselves to prevent the buccaneers from penetrating to Lake Nicaragua. But Herrera (Dec. iii., book 2, chap. 3) speaks of the ' 'great rocks and falls" which prevented Cordova, the first circumnavigator of the lake, from descending the San Juan in 1522, On the other hand, the English traveller Gage tells us that in his time (17th century) vessels reached Granada direct from Spain. Nevertheless there can be little doubt that the rapids are natural obstructions, representing all that now remains of the Cordilleras which have at this point been pierced by the San Juan.

~~NECARAGU A~~

~~There is very little gold washing in any of the eastern streams, the metal being found almost exclusively in the quartz lodes, which run generally east and west in closo parallel lines, varying in thickness from 2 or 3 to 20 feet, and in productiveness from a few pennyweights to 2 or 3 ounces per ton. The chief silver mines are those of Matagalpa and Dipilto towards the Honduras frontier, but the total annual yield of the precious metals seldom exceeds £40,000.~~

~~Lying at a mean elevation of 2000 to 3000 fect above Climate. sea-level, the Chontales and Segovian uplands enjoy a mild climate, generally healthy and well-suited for European constitutions. But elsewhere the climate is distinctly tropical, with two seasons—wet from May to November, dry throughout the winter months—and a mean annual temperature of about 80° Fahr., falling to 70° at night and rising to 90° at noon in summer. Nicaragua comes within the zone of the wet north-east trade winds, which sweep inland from the Atlantic, unintercepted by any great elevations till they reach the lofty Ometepec and Madera peaks. Hence the heaviest rainfall occurs along the west side of the lacustrine basin, with an annual mean at Rivas of 102 inches. Elsewhere the summer rainfall is about 90, the winter from 8 to 10 inches, The flat, low- lying Mosquito region being exposed to the inundations of the numerous streams from the Cordilleras, and to the exhalations from the stagnant waters of the coast lagoons, is very malarious, and the fever here endemic is especially fatal to Europeans.~~

~~In the volcanic western provinces the soil is extremely fertile, yielding, where cultivated and irrigated, magnificent crops of sugar, cotton, rice, tobacco, coffee, cocoa, and maize. Much indigo was produced here formerly from an indigenous variety, the Indigofera disperma, L., but this industry has been neglected since the revolu- tion. Sugar yields two or three crops, and maize as many as four, this cereal supplying a chief staple of food. Plantains, bananas, beans, tomatoes, yams, arrowroot, pine-apples, guavas, citrous, and many other tropical fruits are also cultivated, while the exten- sive primeval forests of the central provinces abound in mahogany, cedars, rosewood, ironwood, caoutchouc (ule), gum copal, vanilla, sarsaparilla, logwood, and many other dye-woods, medicinal plants, and~~

~~valuable timbers. Conspicuous amongst the forest trees is the splendid Coyol palm (Cocos butyracea, L.), with feathery leaves 15 to 20 feet long and golden flowers 3 feet, and yielding a sap which when fermented produces the intoxicating chicha or vino de Coyol. In Chontales occurs the remarkable Herrania purpurea, a ** choco- late tree," whose seeds yield a finer-flavoured chocolate than the cocoa itself. The forest growths are on the whole inferior in size to those of corresponding latitudes in the eastern hemisphere ; the tropical vegetation, especially about Nindiri and elsewhere in the west, is unsurpassed for beauty, exuberance, and variety.~~

~~The Nicaraguan fauna differs in few respects from that of the Fauna. other Central-American states. Here the jaguar, puma, and ocelot still infest all the wooded districts, alligators swarin in the lakes and in the San Juan and other rivers, while the vulture, buzzard, toucans, humming birds, and howling monkeys are almost every- where familiar sights. Amongst the endless species of reptiles occur the harmless boba or 'chicken snake," python, and black snake, the venomous corali, taboba, culebra de sangre, and rattlesnake, iguanas of great size, scorpions, edible lizards, and others said to be poisonous (Boyle). Of useful animals by far the most important are the horned cattle, large herds of which are bred on the savannas of the central and northern provinces. Their hides Trade. form one of the staples of the export trade, the other chief items of which are gold and silver bullion, coffee, and gums, amounting to a yearly sum of about £400,000, against £300,000 imports, mainly European and United States manufactured goods.~~

~~From the numerous sepulchral mounds, monumental ruins, and Pre-other remains thickly strewn over Chontales and all the western historic provinces, as well as from the direct statements of the early remains. Spanish writers, it appears that most of Nicaragua was densely peopled at the time of the conquest. In many districts colossal monolithic statues of men and gods, crumbling temples, cairns, and tombs of all sizes are met in every direction, and in some places the inhabitants stil] supply themselves with pottery from the vast quantities of fictile vessels preserved below the surface, or piled up~~

~~Vegeta- tion,~~

3 The exports in 1880 amounted to £411,500, the imports to £295,000. For the same year the revenue was £487,000, the expenditure rather more; the public debt was £700,000.

Popula- tion.

Adminis- tration.

NICARAGUA

in heaps like that of Monte Testaccio near Rome. One explorer speaks of "mountains of earthenware," and another tells us that 'around Libertad the tombs are in thousands, offering every pos- sible variety of form, size, and thickness." Monuments of this sort have been found ranging from 20 to over 170 feet in length and 120 in breadth, built of huge stones piled up 5 feet in thickness, which must have been brought from great distances. Managua appears to have had a population of 40,000; mention is made of other cities four miles in extent ; and when Gil Gonzalez penetrated into the country in 1522 he found in one district a cluster of six consider- able towns all less than two leagues apart. But "a few years of Spanish rule sufficed to turn whole tracts of flourishing country into uninhabited wilds" (H. H. Bancroft), and, after making every allowance for the defective character of the last census returns, the present population of the whole state cannot be estimated at more than 400,000. A calculation based on the partial census of 1846 gave 300,000, of whom about 100,000 were pure-blood Indians, 150,000 half-castes (Mestizoes, Zambos, &c.), 20,000 Negroes, and 30,000 whites. Throughout the present century the whites appear to have shown a general tendency to diminish, and the indigenous element is by some now estimated at fully one half of the whole population.

With the exception of some wild tribes in the interior of Mos- quitia, nearly all the natives are now in a more or less civilized state, and have generally adopted the Spanish language. At the time of the conquest Herrera tells us that five distinct languages were current in Nicaragua :—the Caribisi (Carib) on the east coast, now represented by the Rama, Toaca, Poya, and Waikna (Mosco); the Chontal of Chontales, Segovia, and parts of West Honduras and Salvador, now represented by the Woolwa in Chontales and Mos- quitia; the Chorotegan (Dirian), mainly between Lake Managua and

the Pacific and thence north to Honduras, now extinct; the Orotifian between Lake Nicaragua and the Pacific (department of Rivas) and thence south to the Gulf of Nicoya, Costa Rica, also extinct; the Cholutec (Niquiran), a pure Aztec dialect spoken in the large islands of Lake Nicaragua, and about Masaya, Granada, and other districts, especially along the north-west side of the lake, where it still survives among a few scattered communities. The presence of Aztec settlements in this region, and at one time even amongst the Chontales of the opposite side of the lake, is abundantly established by this survival, by the archeological remains found in the islands and adjacent mainland, and especially by the Aztce geographical nomenclature widely diffused throughout the whole of West Nicara- gua; c.g., Popogatepec = Popocatepetl, the local name of the Masaya volcano; Ometepec or Omctepet=Ometepetl, z.¢., 'Two Peaks," the largest of the islands in Lake Nicaragua; the ending galpa, common in Chontales (Juigalpa, Matagalpa, &c.), which is the Aztec calpa, group of houses, town, from calli, house. The euphonic changes ¢ or ¢ for final é0, g for c, &c., occur even in Mexico itself, and are important as showing that the Cholutecs are comparatively recent intruders from the Anahuac plateau, not the original stock of the Aztec nation, as has been suggested by some ethnologists.?

Besides the Caribisi, or continental Caribs of Herrera, the Mosquito Coast is occupied by other Carib communities, which are descended from the Caribs removed thither from the island of St Vincent by the English in 1796. To these alone the name of Carib is now applied, although they are not pure-blood Indians, but Zambos, in whom the Negro features greatly predominate. The Woolwas of the interior of Mosquitia and Chontales are divided into a great number of tribes collectively known as Bravos, that is, wild or uncivilized, who live chiefly on hunting and fishing, and are prac- tically independent of the Nicaraguan Government. The term Bravo itself is the exact Spanish equivalent of the Aztec Chontal, Chondal, that is, " barbarian," which at the time of the discovery was applied by the Cholutecs to all the tribes dwelling east of the great lakes and on the Cordillera de los Andes as far north as Hon- duras and San Salvador. Here they seem to have supplanted a still more ancient race, who had attained a high state of civilization, as attested by the already-mentioned monuments and stone

~~sculptures of Chontales, which are of a different type both from the Aztec and the Maya-Quiché remains of Yucatan and Guatemala.~~

~~According to the electoral law of 1858 Nicaragua forms a demo- cratic republic modelled on that of the United States, with a legis- lative assembly of eleven members, a senate of ten, and a president elected for four years and assisted by a cabinet of four ministers. The seat of government, formerly Granada and Leon, has since 1858 been Managua on the south-west side of Lake Managua. Although Roman Catholicism is still recognized as the state religion, the free exercise of all others is guaranteed, together with freedom of the press and of education. Public instruction, which is provided~~

1 It should be noted in this connexion that Buschmann has clearly traced a distinct Aztec geographical terminology throughout the whole of Central America from Guatemala top Comayagua in Honduras on the one hand, and on the other through San Salvador and West Nicaragua nearly to the Costa Rica frontier, The Pipil, an Aztec dialect rather more divergent than the Cholutce of Nicaragua, is still current in parts of Guatemala and San Salvador, but no evidence of Aztec settlements has been discovered either in Yucatan or in Costa Rica (Ueber die Aziekischen Ortsnamen, passim).

for by one university, three colleges, two hundred schools, and an annual grant of £10,000, is still in a very backward state. The total attendance at the national schools in 1882 was 5000, or less than 8 per cent. of the whole population. The criminal charges in the saine year were 1938, or 5 per 1000, showing a slight improve- ment on previous years. There are no railways, and very few good roads even between the large towns and seaports.

year Nicaragua joined the Universal Postal Union. The telegraph despatches forwarded through twenty-six offices numbered 81,000; letters and packages of all sorts, 1,119,000.?

First discovered and coasted by Columbus during his fourth and History.

last voyage in 1502, Nicaragua was not regularly explored till 1522, when Gil Gonzalez Davila penetrated from the Gulf of Nicoya to the western provinces and sent his lieutenant Cordova to circumnavigate the great lake. The country takes its name from Nicaragua (also written Micaragua), a powerful Cholutec chief, ruling over most of the land between the lakes and the Pacific, who received Davila in a friendly spirit, and accepted baptism at his hands. Nicaragua's capital seenis to have occupied the site of the present town of Rivas over against Ometepec, and soon afterwards the Spaniards overran the country with great rapidity, both from this centre northwards, and southwards from the Honduras coast. The occupation began with sanguinary conflicts between the two con- tending waves of intrusion, and down to the present day this region has had little respite from external attack and internal convulsions. Granada was founded in 1524 on

the isthmus between the two lakes as the capital of a separate government, which, however, was soon attached as a special intendence to the general captaincy of Guate- mala, comprising the whole of Central America and the present Mexican state of Chiapas. Hence, during the Spanish tenure, the history of Nicaragua is merged in that of the surrounding region. Of its five earliest rulers "the first had been a murderer, the second a murderer and rebel, the third murdered the second, the fourth was a forger, the fifth a murderer and rebel" (Boyle). Then came the hopeless revolts of the Indians against intolerable oppression, the abortive rebellions of Hernandez de Contreras and John Bermejo (Bermudez) against the mother country (1550), the foundation of Leon, future rival of Granada, in 1610, and its sack by Dampier in 1685, and, lastly, the declaration of independence (1821), not definitively acknowledged by Spain till 1850.

In 1823 Nicaragua joined the Federal Union of the five Central American states, which was finally dissolved in 1833. While it: lasted Nicaragua was the scene of continual bloodshed, caused partly by its attempts to secede from the confederacy, partly by its wars with Costa Rica for the possession of the disputed territory of Guanacaste between the great lake and the Gulf of Nicoya, partly also by the bitter rivalries of the cities of Leon and Granada, respective headquarters of the Liberal and Conservative parties. During the brief existence of the Federal Union "no fewer than three hundred and ninety-six persons exercised the supreme power of the republic and the different states' (Dunlop's Report). Since then the independent government of Nicaragua has been distinguished almost beyond all other Spanish-American states by an uninterrupted series of military pronunciamientos, popular revolts, partial or general revolutions, by which the land has been wasted, its former industries destroyed, and the whole people reduced to a state of moral debasemient scarcely elsewhere paralleled in Christendom. Conspicuous amongst the episodes of this sanguinary draina was the filibustering expedition of General Walker, who was at first invited by the democrats of Leon to assist them against the aristocrats of Granada, and who, after seizing the supreme power in 1856, was expelled by the combined forces of the neighbouring states, and on venturing to return was shot at Truxillo on September 25, 1860. A truce to these internecine troubles has been recently brought about by mutual exhaustion; and, should any of the schemes of interoceanic canalization be

~~carried out, it may be hoped that a national revival will take place under more favourable prospects for the future.~~

~~One source of serious embarrassment has been removed by the Mosquito settlement of the Mosquito reserve question. This territory, which reserve.~~

~~stretches along the Caribbean coast from the Sisin Creek to the Rama river (from 10° 30' to 13° N, lat.) and for about 40 miles inland, had enjoyed a semi-independent position under the nominal protection of Great Britain from 1655 to 1850. By the Clayton- Bulwer treaty of 1850, England resigned all claims to the Mosquito Coast, and by the treaty of Managua in 1860 ceded the protectorate absolutely to Nicaragua. The local chief was induced to accept this arrangement on the condition of retaining his administrative functions and receiving a yearly subvention of £1000 from the suzerain state for the ten years ending in 1870. But he died in 1864, and Nicaragua has never recognized his successor. Never- theless the reserve continues to be ruled by a chief elected by the natives, and assisted by an administrative council, which assenibles at Bluefields, capital of the territory.~~

~~2 Oficial Report of the Minister of the Interior on the State of the Republic for the years 1881-82, Managua, 1883.~~

~~But the tele- Tele- graph system (800 miles) was completed in 1882, and in the same graphs.~~

~~Bibliography.—Memoria del Ministro de la Gobernacion al Soberano Congreso de la Republica de Nicaragua, Managua, 1883; José Maria Cdeeres, Geografia de Centro-America, Paris, 1880; H. W. Bates, Central and South America, with ethnological appendix by A. H. Keane (Stanford series), London, 1878; Fr. Boyle, Wanderings through Nicaragua and Costa Rica, London, 1868; J. W. Bodham Whetham, Across Central America, London, 1817; Dr J. E. Wappius, Mittel- u. Sud-America, Leipsic, 1870; E. G. Squier, Notes on Central America (London, 1856), and Nicaragua, its People, Scenery, Monuments, and the Proposed Inter-oceanic Canal (London, 1852); Th. Belt, The Naturalist in Nicaragua, London, 1873; Karl~~

~~von Scherzer, Wanderungen durch Nicaragua, Honduras, und San Salvador, Brunswiek, 1857; A. von Biilow, Der Freistaat Nicaragua, Berlin, 1849; J. Keller, Le Canal de Nicaragua, Paris, 1859; Consul Gollan's " Report on the Trade-and Commeree of Niearagna," in Reports from H.M.'s Consuls, part v., 1877 ; Memoria historica sobre el Canal de Nicaragua, Guatemala, 1845; S. Levy, Notas geograficas y economicas sobre la Republica de Nicaragua, Paris, 1873; W. Grimm, Die Staaten Central-Amerikas, Berlin, 1871; W. Walker, The War in Nicaragua, Mobile, 1860; H. H. Baneroft, History of the Pacific States, &c., Central America, vol. i., San Franciseo, 1882; Thomas Gage, Journey from Mexico through Guazaca, &c., with his return through Nicaragua, d&c., London, 1655; A. von Humboldt, " Zustand des Freistaats von Central-Amerika,'' in Berghaus's Hertha, 1826, vi.; J. Baily, Central America, London, 1850; R. G. Dunlop, Zravels in Central America, London, 1847; J. L. Stephens, Central America, Chiapas, and Yucatan, London, 1842 ; Brasseur de Bourbourg, Histoire des Nations Civilisées du Mexique et del Amérique Centrale, Paris, 1857-59 ; W. Childs, Report on an Interoceanic Ship Canal, &e., New York, 1852 ; Th. Strange- ways, Sketch of the Mosquito Shore, &e., Edinburgh, 1822; §. A. Bard, Waikna, Adventures on the Mosquito Shore, London, 1855 ; Correspondence respecting the Mosquito Territory, presented to the House of Commons, July 3, 1848; '* Das Mosquito-Gebiet," &e., in Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1856; A. J. Cotheel, **Language of the Mosquito Indians," in Transactions of the American Ethno- logical Society, 1848, vol. ii. CACHE)~~

~~NICASTRO, an episcopal city of Italy in the province of Catanzaro, 16 miles west of Catanzaro and about 6 miles from the Gulf of Sta Eufemia. There are two large~~

~~Exe~~

~~D~~

~~= aeerse « HI! : aii rf | ite~~

~~NIC—NIC~~

~~| suburbs,—Zangaroma, founded by an Albanian settlement~~

~~in the 15th century, and Bella, dating from 1782,—and the communal population is 14,067 (1881). In the castle of Ferrolito, whose ruins still look down on the city, Frederick I. imprisoned his rebellious son Henry. Nicastro suffered greatly from the earthquake of 1638, which also destroyed the famous Benedictine abbey of Sta Eufemia, about 3 miles to the west.~~

~~NICCOLO PISANO. See Pisano.~~

~~NICE, a city of France, the chief town of the de- partment of Alpes Maritimes, and previous to 1860 the capital of the countship of Nice (Nizza) in the kingdom of Sardinia, is situated in 43° 42’ N. lat. and 7° 16’ E, long., 739 miles by rail from Paris, and occupies a fine position at the mouth of the Paillon (Paglione), a stream (often dried up in summer) which, after a course of 20 miles, enters the northern end of the Baie des Anges. A steep isolated limestone hill, 315 feet in height, running back for some distance from the shore, forms the historical nucleus of the town. Formerly crowned by a castle, which previous to its destruction by the duke of Berwick in 1706 was one of the strongest fortresses on the coast, it is now laid out as a public pleasure-ground, and~~

~~S VE U@,~~

~~PP RSE SK ae! ny~~

~~Le: Hee Sy os |~~

~~ame~~

~~E oO~~

~~v~~

~~u ahis;)~~

~~Plan of Nice.~~

~~planted with aloe, cactus, agave, and palm. Towards its south-west corner stands a tower (Tour Bellanda or Clérissy) dating, it is believed, from the 5th century. The old town stretches along the western base of the hill ; the~~

~~“town of the 18th century” occupies the ground farther west, which slopes gently towards the Paillon; and away to the north-east and north and west beyond the stream~~

~~lie the ever-growing quarters of the modern city. To the |~~

~~east of the hill, and thus out of sight of the more fashion- able districts, the commercial quarter surrounds the port. The whole frontage of Nice is composed of fine embank- ments: the Quai des Ponchettes, constructed in 1770 round the base of the castle hill, is continued westward~~

~~by the Quai du Midi as far as the Pont des Anges, which crosses the mouth of the Paillon; and from the public~~

~~gardens and the municipal casino on the other side of the~~

~~stream the Promenade des Anglais, a boulevard 85 feet wide, extends for more than a mile to the mouth of the Magnan, and is likely to be prolonged to the Var. A pier projecting into the sea from the promenade contains a “crystal palace” and a sea-bathing establishment. The course of the Paillon also is embanked on both sides, and~~

~~| at one part the Place Masséna, one of the largest public Squares in the city, and the principal resort of foreign | Visitors, has been laid out across the stream. Besides a~~

~~Roman Catholic cathedral—Ste Réparate, dating from~~

~~NIC—NIC~~

~~1650—Nice possesses a Russian church, two synagogues, and several Protestant chapels. Architecturally the most remarkable church is Notre Dame, a modern Gothic build- ing with two towers 213 feet high, erected by the town in 1835 to commemorate its preservation from cholera. The secular buildings include the town-house, the prefec- ture, the theatres, the hospitals, the lycée (founded by the Jesuits in the 17th century), the natural history museum, the library (especially rich in theology), and, at some distance from the town, the astronomical and meteorological observatory on~~

~~Mount Gros. The indus- trial establishments comprise perfume factories, distilleries, oil-works, furniture and wood work factories, confectionery works, soaj-works, tanneries, and a national tobacco factory employing several hundred persons. Besides the vine, the trees principally cultivated in the neighbourhood are the olive, the orange, the mulberry, and the carob; and the staple exports are oil, agricultural produce, fruits, and flowers. The harbour, which as yet only covers 10 acres, is being enlarged. In 1881 the population of the city was 54,953, and of the commune 66,279,—an increase respectively of about 9000 and 13,900 since 1872. During winter there is a large proportion of strangers from all parts of the world.~~

~~Protected towards the north by hills which rise stage behind stage to the main ridge of the Alps, Nice is celebrated for the mildness of its climate. The mean tem- perature is 60° Fahr., that of winter being 49°, of spring 56°, of summer ,72°, and of autumn 63°, For a few nights in winter the mercury sinks below freezing point, but snow is practically unknown, falling, on an average, only half a day in the year. The highest reading of the thermometer is rarely above 90°. There are sixty-seven days with rain in the course of the year; but it usually falls in heavy showers which soon leave the sky clear again, though the whole annual amount exceeds 32 inches. Fine days and rainy days are almost equally distributed throughout the different seasons. The winds are very variable, some- times changing several times a day. Apart from the ordinary land and sea breezes, the most frequent is the east wind, which is especially formidable during autumn. The south-west wind is moist and warm; the north-east, which is happily rare, brings storms of hail and even snow in winter. The mistral (from the north-west) and the tramontane (from the north) are generally stopped by the mountains ; but when they do reach the city they raise intolerable dust-storms. For two thousand years the climate of Nice has been considered favourable in chest complaints. Those who are requiring rest, and those suffering from gout, asthma, catarrhs, rachitic affections, scrofula, stone, also experience benefit; but the reverse is the case when heart disease, nervous disorders, or ophthalmia are concerned. Autumn is the best season ; in spring the sudden changes of temperature demand great care. Means of passing the time pleasantly are fairly abundant. The city is at its liveliest during the carnival festivities, in which, as at Rome, battles are waged with sweetmeats and flowers.~~

Nice (Nicza) was founded about two thousand years ago by the Phoceans of Marseilles, and received its name in honour of a victory (vinn) over the neighbouring Ligurians. It soon became one of the busiest trading stations on the Ligurian coast; but as:a city it had an important rival in the town of Cemenclium, which continued to exist till the time of the Lombard invasions, and has left its ruins at Cimiez (Italian, Cemella), 24 miles to the north. In the 7th cen- tury Nice joined the Genoese league formed by the towns of Liguria. In 731 it repulsed the Saracens; but in 859 and 880 they pillaged and burned it, and for the most of the 10th century remnained masters of the surrounding country. During the Middle Ages Nice had its share in the wars and disasters of Italy. As an ally of Pisa it was the enemy of Genoa, and both the king of France and the emperor of Germany endeavoured to subjugate it; but in spite of all it maintained its municipal liberties. In the course of the 13th and 14th centuries it fell

the hands of the counts of Provence; and at length in 1888 it placed itself under the protection of the counts of Savoy. The maritime strength of Nice now rapidly increased till it was able to cope with the Barbary pirates; the fortifications were largely extended and the roads to the city improved. During the struggle between Francis I. and Charles V. great damage was caused by the passage of the armies invading Provence ; pestilence and famine raged in the city for several years. It was in Nice that the two monarchs in 1538 concluded, through the mediation of Paul III., a truce of ten years; and a marble cross set up to commemorate the arrival of the pope still gives its name, Croix de Marbre, to part of the town. In 1543 Nice was attacked by the united forces of Francis I. and Barbarossa; and, though the inhabitants, with admirable courage, repulsed the assault which succeeded the terrible bombardinent, they were ultimately compelled to surrender, and Barbarossa was allowed to pillage the city and to carry off 2500 captives. Pestilence appeared again in 1550 and 1580. In 1600 Nice was taken by the duke of Guise. By opening the ports of the countship to all nations, and proclaiming full freedom of trade, Charles Emmanuel in 1626 gave a great stimulus to the commerce of the city, whose noble families took part in its mereautile enterprises. Captured by Catinat in 1691, Nice was restored to Savoy in 1696; but it was again besieged by the French in 1705, and in the

~~following year its citadel and ram- parts were demolished. The treaty of Utrecht in 1713 once more gave the city back to Savoy; and in the peaceful years which followed the "new town" was built. Fron 1744 till the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle (1748) the French and Spaniards were again in possession. In 1775 the king of Sardinia destroyed all that remained of the ancient liberties of the commune. Conquered in 1792 by the armies of the French Republic, the countship of Nice continned to be part of France till 1814; but after that date it reverted to Sardinia. By a treaty concluded in 1860 between the Sardinian king and Napoleon III. it was again transferred to France, and the cession was ratified by nearly 26,000 electors ont of a total of 30,700. Nicc is the seat of a bishopric, at present dependent on the archbishopric of Aix, and the headquarters of a military division forming part of the corps d'armée of Marseilles.~~

~~Masséna and Garibaldi were natives of the city. See Roubaudi, Vice et ses environs, Turin, 1843; Tisserand, Hist. de la cité de Nice, Nice, 1862; Lacoste, Nice pittoresque et pratique, Nice, 1876.~~

~~NICEPHORUS I., emperor of Constantinople from 802 to 811, born at Seleucia in Pisidia, is alleged on very doubtful authority to have been a descendant of Jaballah, who had been monarch of the small Arabian kingdom of Ghass4n in the time of Heraclius, and for a time had professed the Mohammedan religion. In the reign of Irene he rose to the office of logothetes, or lord high treasurer, and in 802 he was joined by her favourite eunuchs in a plot by which she was dethroned and exiled, while he himself assumed the crown (October 31). Soon after his accession, Bardanes, one of his ablest generals, rose in revolt against him and received much powerful support, including that of Leo the Armenian and Michael the Armorian (names which reappear in history), but the skilful diplomacy of Nicephorus soon brought the rebel to the position of a suppliant, willing to accept the seclusion of a monastery. 'The conspiracy headed by the patrician Arsaber in 808 had a similar issue. In 803 Nicephorus had entered into a treaty with Charlemagne by which the limits of the two empires were amicably fixed, — Venice, Istria, the maritime parts of Dalmatia, and South Italy being assigned to the East, while Rome, Ravenna, and the Pentapolis were recognized as belonging to the West; this treaty was renewed in 810. Shortly after the retirement of Bardanes, who had been appointed to march~~

against the Saracens, Nicephorus in person took the field against Haroun al-Rashid, but sustained a great defeat at Crasus in Phrygia; and subsequent inroads of his conqueror compelled him to sue for peace, which was granted only on condition of an annual tribute of 30,000 pieces of gold, besides three additional pieces (perhaps, as Finlay suggests, medallions of superior size) for himself, and three for his sonStauracius. By the death of Haroun in 809 Nicephorus was left free to turn his attention to the Bulgarians, whose warlike king, Crumn, had begun to harass the empire in the north; but six days after it had

more than onee into | crossed the frontier the powerful Byzantine army was

XVIL — 61

482

attacked in force by night, and Nicephorus, along with six patricians, many officers of high military rank, and a large number of rank and file, was put to the sword. Crumn

is recorded to have made a drinking cup of the emperor's || Zimisces, who immediately succeeded him.

skull. After a brief reign of two months, Stauracius, who had been proclaimed emperor by the soldiers, was deposed by his brother-in-law, Michael Rhangabe. Nicephorus, who "though a brave soldier was essentially a statesman," gave considerable attention to the finance department of the empire, but did not escape the imputation of avarice and oppression. Kcclesiastically his reign is noted for the comparative success with which he asserted the supremacy of the civil power, and gave effective preponderance to imperial over monkish opinion.

NICEPHORUS II. (Phocas), emperor of Constantinople from 963 to 969, was member of a brave Cappadocian family which had previously furnished more than one distinguished general to the empire. He was born about 912, joined the army at an early age, and under Constantine

VII., Porphyrogenitus, attained the high rank of magnus |

~~domesticus, or general of the East (954). In the almost continual struggle with the Saracens which this post implied he sustained severe defeat in 956, but retrieved his fame in 958 and again in 959 in Syria; and in Jily 960 he led the expedition against Crete which compelled Candia to surrender after a siege of ten months, and again brought the whole island under Byzantine rule. The long extinct honours of a triumph were revived to reward him on his return to Constantinople. In 962 he again set out with a large army against Syria; after forcing his way through the narrow passes of Mount Amanus, and compel- ling the principal cities to open their gates, he was pushing on towards the Euphrates when intelligence reached him in 963 that the emperor Romanus IT. had died, leaving the empress Theophano regent for her infant sons. Justly fearing the intrigues of the able minister Joseph Bringas, he returned to Constantinople, after having previously obtained from Theophano and the patriarch Polyeuctes a guarantee for his personal safety ; he then, with the help of the patriarch, procured for himself the supreme com- mand of the army during the minority of the princes, and, after gaining over the officers and soldiers to his interest, consented to allow himself to be proclaimed emperor. He was crowned on August 16, and soon afterwards married Theophano, though the union was discountenanced by the patriarch on the alleged ground of a spiritual affinity. In 964 he resumed the war against the Saracens, and, though compelled to raise the siege of Tarsus, was successful in capturing Adana and Mopsuestia; in the following year Tarsus also was forced to surrender to himself, while Cyprus was reconquered for him by the patrician Nicetas. In 966 and 967 the internal affairs of the empire and threatening troubles in Hungary and Bulgaria detained him in Constantinople; but the spring of 968 saw him once more in the field against the caliph, and Laodicea, Hierapolis, Aleppo, Arca, and Emesa were added to his conquests. In the following year Antioch also fell, in the emperor's absence, into the hands of the patricians Burtzes and Peter, but Nicetas was less successful against Sicily. Meanwhile Nicephorus had not made himself so popular on the throne as in the camp. The heavy imposts he found necessary for the support of his expeditions more than counterbalanced, in public estimation, the glory he gained by them. His retrenchment of court largesses and pensions naturally made him many enemies, and he incurred just odium by employing debased coinage to meet the public debts while continuing to exact money of the old standard in payment of the taxes. An accidental tumult in the hippodrome,~~

which had resulted in the loss of many lives, further increased his unpopularity, and, last

NIC—NIC

| of all, his fickle wife joined the number of his enemies

and began to plot his death. He was assassinated in his sleeping apartment on the night of December 10, 969. At the head of the conspirators was his nephew John

NICEPHORUS III. (Botaniates), emperor of Con- stantinople from 1078 to 1081, belonged to a family which claimed descent from the Roman Fabii. He served in the army, and rose to be commander of the forces in Asia. In 1078 he assumed the purple at Nicsea, almost simultaneously with Nicephorus Bryennius (father or uncle of the historian of that name), who had revolted against Michael VII. at Adrianople; the aristocracy and clergy of the capital supported the claims of Botaniates, who was crowned on March 25, 1078. With the able help of Alexius Comnenus, the recalcitrant generals Ursel, Bryennius, and Basilacius were successively driven from the field, but soon afterwards the wakeful jealousy of the

| emperor was turned upon their conqueror, who was com-

pelled to flee the court. Alexius, however, had hold of

the army, and on April 1, 1081, ascended the throne,

Nicephorus being forced to abdicate and become a monk of St Basil. He died in obscurity.

NICEPHORUS BRYENNIUS. See Byzantine His- TORIANS, vol. iv. p. 613.

NICEPHORUS, surnamed Catuisti, the last of the Greek ecclesiastical historians, lived at Constantinople,

—perhaps as a monk in connexion with the church of St

Sophia. He was born about the close of the 13th century, and died not later than 1356. His Historia Ecclesiastica, in eighteen books, brings the narrative down to the death of Phocas in 610; for the first four centuries the author is largely dependent on his predecessors, Eusebius, Socrates, Sozomen, Theodoret, and Evagrius, his additions showing very little critical faculty ; in the later period his labours, based on documents now no longer extant, to which he had free access, though he used them also with small dis- crimination, are much more valuable. A table of contents of other five books, continuing the history to the death of Leo the Philosopher in 911, also exists, but whether the books were ever actually written is doubtful. A Latin translation of the JHistoria of Nicephorus, by Lange, appeared at Basel in 1553; the Greek text was edited for the first time by Fronton le Duc (2 vols. fol., Paris,

1630).

NICEPHORUS GREGORAS. See Byzantine His- TORIANS, vol. iv. p. 613.

NICEPHORUS, one of the Byzantine historians (see vol. iv. p. 614), surnamed PaTRIaARCHA, was patriarch of Constantinople from 806 to 815. He was born about 758; from his father Theodorus, one of the secretaries of the emperor Constantine Copronymus, who for his zeal as an image-worshipper had been scourged and dismissed into exile, he inherited literary talent as well as strong religious convictions. He was present as secretary to the imperial commissaries at that second council of Nice in 787 which witnessed the triumph of his opinions; but court vicissitudes soon afterwards drove him again into private life. In 806 he was suddenly raised by the emperor Nicephorus I. from the condition of a monk to the patriarchate of Constantinople, and this office he held until 815, when he accepted deposition rather than assent to the iconoclastic edict promulgated by Leo the Armenian in the previous year. He retired to the cloister of St Theodore, which he himself had founded, and died there in 828. Nicephorus is the author of a valuable and well- written compendium (Breviarium Historicum) of Byzantine

| history from 602 to 770, first printed at Paris in 1616,

of a much less important Chronologia compendiaria, and of one or two controversial writings against iconoclasm.

Nicntv vas

NICHOLAS, Sr, of Myra, according to the Roman breviary (December 6) was a native of Patara in Lycia, and was given to his parents in answer to their prayers. From his earliest infancy he signally displayed the piety for which his whole life was remarkable, on Wednesdays and Fridays regularly refusing to receive nourishment from his nurse except once only, and that after sunset. While still a youth he was deprived of his parents, and the wealth that he thus early inherited he forthwith distributed to the poor. To this period belongs what may be called the characteristic deed of his life,—his secret bestowal of dowries upon the three daughters of a citizen fallen into poverty, who, unable to procure. fit marriages for them, was minded to give them up to a life of shame. Having given himself wholly to God, Nicholas made a pilgrimage to Palestine, and in his voyaging miraculously stilled a storm by his prayers. On his return to his native province he visited Myra, the capital, where, as it fell out, the bishop had just died, and the chapter had been divinely advised to select as his successor a man named Nicholas who should be the first to enter the church next morning. Nicholas, thus plainly indi- cated, was duly consecrated, and displayed throughout his whole term of office every episcopal virtue. Under Maximian and Diocletian he was seized for his constancy, removed far from his diocese, and thrown into prison, where he lay until the days of Constantine, when he returned to Myra. He afterwards attended the council of Nice, and died a natural death not long after his return. His remains were subsequently removed to Bari (Barium) in Apulia. So far the authoritative Roman legend, the documentary evidence for which, however, does not take us farther back than to the 9th century at the earliest (Simeon Metaphrastes). Nicholas is not mentioned among the Nicene fathers by any of the church historians of that or the succeeding century, and the earliest extant trace of his existence is in the fact that a church was dedicated to him in Constantinople by Justinian about the year 560. Before the 12th century his name had become very pro- minent both in the Eastern and in the Western Church, it is difficult to tell precisely why; and to this day he is one of the most popular saints in the orthodox Greek communion. Among the

miracles assigned to him is that of restoring to life three youths who had been murdered and salted down by an innkeeper in whose house they had taken lodging ; thus Nicholas figures as the patron saint not only of poor maidens and of sailors but also of travellers and merchants. Children, and especially schoolboys, are also regarded as being especially under his guardianship, and in Russia and Greece, as wellas throughout the north of Europe, the liberality of Nicholas or Klaus is yearly appealed to by them on the eve of his festival (December 6). His protection is specially invoked against thieves and losses by robbery and violence. It may be well to note that the "Old Nick" belonging to another cycle of legend has no connexion, as has sometimes been supposed, with the subject of the present article, that designation being etymologically connected with such words as Nixie, Nickar, and perhaps even with the river-name Neckar (see Grimm's Deutsche Mythologie).

NICHOLAS I., sometimes called The Great, and certainly the most commanding figure in the series of popes between Gregory I. and Gregory VII., succeeded Benedict III. in April 858. According to the annalist "'he owed his election less to the choice of the clergy than to the presence and favour of the emperor Louis II. and his nobles,'—-who can hardly have foreseen with what ability and persistency the rights of the holy see as supreme arbiter of Christendom were to be asserted even against themselves by the man of their choice. Of the

previous history of Nicholas nothing 1s recorded. His pontificate of nine years and a half was marked by at least three memorable contests which have left their mark in history. The first was that in which he supported the claims of the unjustly degraded patriarch of Constantinople, Ignatius ; the history of the conflict cannot be related here, but two of its incidents, the excommunication of Photius, the rival of Ignatius, by the pope in 863, and the counter-deposition of Nicholas by Photius in 867, were steps of serious moment towards the permanent separation between the Eastern and the Western Church. The second great struggle was that with Lothaire, the king of Lorraine (second son of the emperor Lothaire I., and brother of the emperor Louis II.), about the divorce of his wife Theut- berga or

Thietberga. The king, who desired to marry his mistress Waldrada, had brought a grave charge against the life of his queen before her marriage; with the help of Archbishops Gunther of Cologne and Thietgand of Treves, a confession of guilt had been extorted from Thietberga, and, after the matter had been discussed at more than one synod, that of Aix-la-Chapelle finally authorized Lothaire, on the strength of this confession, to marry again. Nicholas ordered a fresh synod to try the cause over again at Metz in 863; but Lothaire, who was present with his nobles, anew secured a judgment favourable to himself, whereupon the pope not only quashed the whole proceedings, but excommunicated and deposed Gunther and Thietgand, who had been audacious enough to bring to Rome in person the "'libellus" of the synod. The archbishops appealed to Louis IL, then at Benevento, to obtain the withdrawal of their sentence by force; but, although he actually occupied Rome (864), he was unsuccessful in obtaining any concessiou, and had to withdraw to Ravenna. Thietberga herself was now induced to write to the pope a letter in which she declared the invalidity of her own marriage, and urged the cause of Lothaire, but Nicholas, not without reason, refused to accept statements which had too plainly been extorted, and wrote urging her to maintain the truth steadfastly, even to the death if need were, "for, since Christ is the truth, whosoever dies for the truth assuredly dies for Christ." The imminent humiliation of Lothaire was prevented only by the death of Nicholas. The third great ecclesiastical cause which marks this pontificate was that in which the indefeasible right of bishops to appeal to Rome against their metropolitans was successfully maintained in the case of Rothad of Soissons, who had been deposed by Hincmar of Rheims. It was in the course of the controversy with the great and powerful Neustrian archbishop that papal recognition was first given (in 865) to the pseudo-Isidorian decretals, which had probably been brought by Rothad to Rome in the preced- ing year. (For some account of these, see Canon Law, vol. v. p. 17.) At an early period in his reign Nicholas also had occasion to administer discipline to John of Ravenna, who seems to have relied not only on the prestige of his famous see but also on the support of Louis Il. After lying under excommunication for some time he made a full submission. Nicholas was the pope to whom Bogoris, the newly converted king of Bulgaria, addressed himself for practical instruction in some of the difficult moral and social problems which naturally arise during a transition from heathenism to Christianity.

The letter from the holy see in reply to the hundred and six questions and petitions of the barbarian king is perhaps the most in- teresting literary relic of Nicholas I. now extant. He died on November 13, 867, and was succeeded by Hadrian II. NICHOLAS IL, a Burgundian, whose Christian name was Gerard, was archbishop of Florence when he was chosen (December 28, 1058) at that place to succeed Stephen IX. in the papal chair. Some time previously the

old Roman feudatory barons had caused to be consecrated, under the name of Benedict X., John, cardinal bishop of Velletri, who, however, was speedily deposed. The elec- tion of Nicholas had been brought about by Hildebrand (afterwards Gregory VII.), and his whole pontificate derived its character from that master-spirit. Its first act of historical importance was the framing by the second Lateran council (April 1059) of the decree which vested the election of popes in the cardinal bishops in the first instance, the assent of the cardinal priests and deacons being next required, then that of the laity, and finally that of the emperor. It was at the same council that Berengarius of Tours was temporarily induced to admit the doctrine of the corporeal presence in the sacrament. In the following June Nicholas visited Apulia, accepted the submission of the Normans, and removed the ban of excommunication, investing Richard in the principality of Capua and Robert Guiscard in the dukedom of Apulia, Calabria, and Sicily. He died at Florence in June 1061, and was succeeded by Alexander II.

NICHOLAS III. (Giovanni Gaetano), a member of the noble house of Orsini, succeeded John XXI. as pope on November 25, 1277. Though his election was doubtless largely due to family influence, he was also personally a man of good endowments, and the record of his brief pontificate has more than one touch fitted to recall the grander manner of some of the greatest popes. In 1278 he extorted from the newly-elected and insecurely seated Rudolph of Hapsburg an absolute cession of the Romagna and of the exarchate of Ravenna, and in the same year he deprived Charles of Anjou of his vicariate of Tuscany; in the following year he compelled Charles to renounce his dignity of senator of Rome also, declaring himself per- petual senator, and his nephew Orso his vicar. He was understood to be

planning with Rudolph an entirely new distribution of the thrones of the empire, by which the royal dignity was to be conferred on more than one member of the house of Orsini, when a stroke of apoplexy brought his career to a sudden close on August 22, 1280. Towards the beginning of his reign he repaired and strengthened the Lateran palace, and greatly enlarged the Vatican. For his simoniacal nepotism he has been placed by Dante in the third " bolgia" of the eighth circle of hell (Inf., xix. 31 sq.). The successor of Nicholas II]. was Martin IV.

NICHOLAS IV. (Girolamo de Ascoli), pope from February 22, 1288, to April 4, 1292, was born at Ascoli, of humble parentage. At an early age he entered the Franciscan order, of which he rose to be general in 1274, after the death of Bonaventura. It was in this capacity that in 1278 he condemned Roger Bacon to imprisonment on account of his writings. He subsequently became bishop of Preeneste; and he was created cardinal by Nicholas III. Repeated meetings of the conclave upon the death of Honorius IV. resulted, ten months after the vacancy had occurred, in the election of Ascoli, whose first and almost only historical act was to annul the solemn treaty by which Charles the Lame (of Anjou) had obtained from Alphonso III. of Aragon his release from prison,— "'the most monstrous exercise of the absolving power which had ever been advanced in the face of Christendom" (Milman). The revival of the old and expiring enthusiasm of the crusading epoch was a cause he had much at heart ; and it was partly at least with the object of stirring up the Mongols against the hated Saracens that he gave John of Monte Corvino and other members of his order their missions to China. 'The fall of Ptolemais, the last remnant of the Christian dominion in Palestine (1291), greatly affected him, and combined with other disappointments to hasten his death. Celestine V. succeeded.

NFCHOLA'S

NICHOLAS V. (Tommaso Parentucelli), the pope whose name is most intimately associated with the revival of learn- ing, was the son of a physician, and was born at Sarzana, near Spezzia, in 1389. He received a good education at Bologna, became tutor in the Albizzi and Strozzi families at Florence, and ultimately entered into the service of Albergata, bishop of Bologna. He accompanied his patron on several embassies, and gained so

~~high a reputation for diplomatic ability and for learning that shortly after Albergata's death he himself obtained the see of Bologna, was sent by Eugenius IV. on an embassy into Germany, and in December 1446 was madea cardinal. In less than three months he was pope in succession to Eugenius,—a small majority of the electors, indisposed to the strongest candidate, Cardinal Prospero Colonna, having united upon Parentucelli asa man who had made no enemies. His policy as pope seemed clearly marked out for him. The church was reaching the end of a period of strife and schism. The firmness of Eugenius IV. had at length almost beaten down the emperor, the antipope, and the council of Basel ; the wisdom and moderation of Nicholas V. completed the work. Within two years the emperor made peace, the antipope abdicated, and the council dissolved itself. Nicholas hoped for a period of tranquillity, and determined to exhibit the papacy to the world as the protector of art and learning. 'To the demand of Germany for reforma- tion," says Mr Creighton, "he answered by offering culture." He aimed especially at making Rome archi- tecturally a worthy capital of the Christian world: he repaired its fortifications, began the rebuilding of its cathedral, enlarged and adorned its thoroughfares, and traced much of the plan of restoration executed by his successors. But his great glory was his active co-operation in the revival of learning. He collected manuscripts from all quarters, caused them to be multiplied by transcription, commissioned the most competent scholars to translate Greek books into Latin, and gathered around him the most distinguished humanists of his day, Poggio Bracciolini, Valla, Filelfo. Under him the papacy regained much of its former lustre, and till late in his reign his administration was disturbed by no unfortunate events. In January 1453 the conspiracy of Stefano Porcaro was detected on the eve of breaking out. The pope and cardinals were to have been seized, their effects pillaged, and Rome declared a republic. Nicholas was terrified, and showed himself angry and cruel. On May 29 of the same year Constan- tinople was taken by the Turks. The fault was not the pope's, who had ineffectually sent his galleys to the rescue ; yet he could not but feel that a stain had fallen upon his pontificate. He proclaimed a crusade, but this was an undertaking for which he was constitutionally unfit ; he failed to kindle the zeal of others, and many doubted his own. Exhausted by repeated attacks of gout, he died on March 24, 1455. Before his death he summoned the cardinals, and enumerated the good works he had been enabled to perform, "by God's~~

~~blessing of peace and tranquillity in my days." 'These last words sufficiently express the general scope of his policy. He was rather a scholar than an ecclesiastic or a statesman, yet enough of both to perform his part on the world's stage with sufficient credit; it is, however, his principal distinction to have been a learned and art-loving pope, and to have formed that alliance between the papacy and intellectual culture which subsisted for the next hundred years. He was suc- ceeded by Calixtus IIT.~~

~~NICHOLAS V. (Pietro di Corvara), antipope in Italy from 1328 to 1330, during the pontificate of John XXII. at Avignon, was a native of the Abruzzi and a member of the Franciscan order. He owed his nomination to the papacy, and his election (May 12, 1328) by popular~~

~~NICHOLAS~~

~~acclamation, to the influence of the excommunicated emperor Louis the German, on whose head he placed the crown after his own enthronement. After spending four months in Rome he withdrew along with Louis to Viterbo and thence to Pisa; but, on the revolt of that city from Ghibellinism, he was compelled to throw himself on the mercy of John. Carried to Avignon, on making full con- fession and abjuration of his heresies and impieties (September 6, 1330), he was kept in honourable imprison- ment in the papal palace until his death in 1334. NICHOLAS I. (1796-1855), czar of Russia, third son of Paul I., was born at Tsarkoe-Selo on the 25th June 1796. His elder brothers were Alexander and Constantine, of whom the former was twenty years his senior. Their father was murdered in 1801, and Alexander then became emperor. The education of Nicholas was conducted under the care of his mother, a pious but narrow-minded woman. He had not, like his eldest brother, whose education was directed by the empress Catherine, the advantage of associating in early life with men of culture and of modern ideas. Nor was he early introduced either to military or to political life. He was brought up in retirement, and even during the invasion of Russia by Napoleon in 1812 he was not permitted to serve in the army. His tastes, however, were all military, and his favourite studies mathematics and fortification. During the campaign of 1814 in France he was allowed to come to the allied head- quarters, but not to take part in any engagement. He was present during the occupation of Paris in 1815, and in the following~~

year was sent to travel on the Continent and to visit England, where his striking personal appear- ance excited the admiration of Sir Walter Scott. He married in 1817 Louise Charlotte, daughter of Frederick William III, king of Prussia, and this union had for half a century an important effect on the history of Prussia and Germany at large. After his marriage he received a military command from his brother, and from this time forward he gave his utmost attention to the mechanical part of military affairs, rejoicing in the occupations of a drill-sergeant, and identifying himself so completely with his soldiers that civil costume became insupportable to him, even when on visits to sovereigns who, like Queen Victoria, would have preferred to see him in less warlike guise. Alexander having no sons, Constantine was heir to the throne. 'This brutal and ignorant prince had, however, the sense to recognize his own unfitness for the task of governing an empire, and by a secret agreement with the reigning sovereign he renounced his rights in favour of Nicholas. Alexander died on December 1, 1825. Con- stantine, who was in Poland, showed no inclination to prefer his claims; the edict of the late emperor appointing Nicholas his successor was opened, and the younger brother was called by the highest authorities of Russia to assume the crown. He nevertheless refused, and, as it would seem, in perfect sincerity, until Constantine had formally con- firmed his renunciation. The delay led to serious conse- quences. Conspiracies against the late emperor and in favour of a freer government had been formed in the army and among the nobles ; and when the troops at St Peters- burg were called upon to take the oath to Nicholas, revolt broke out. The young czar showed great nerve and courage, but the mutiny was not put down without blood- shed, and the impression which it left on his mind never passed away. Despotic by nature, trained in the midst of the monarchical reaction that followed the French wars, and accustomed to hear the earlier liberal tendencies of his brother Alexander spoken of as mere vagaries that had happily been abandoned, Nicholas saw in the outbreak of his soldiers in 1825 a warning never to relax the grasp of authority. The maintenance of despotic power was

a duty to which he devoted himself with the deepest religious conviction. At the accession of Nicholas, Russia had been for some years on the brink of

~~war with the Porte. Greece was in insurrection, and Russia had its own specific causes of complaint in consequence of the alleged infraction of the privileges of the Danubian pro- vinces guaranteed by the treaty of Bucharest. It had long been the effort of European diplomatists to dissuade Alexander from interfering on behalf of Greece, and to find a peaceful solution for the difficulties in which Russia was more directly concerned. The Greek cause had, however, at length excited so much sympathy that the British Government took advantage of the accession of Nicholas to send the duke of Wellington to St Petersburg to propose some joint action on behalf of Greece. The attempt succeeded : England and Russia undertook to tender their mediation, requiring the sultan to grant the Greeks a modified independence, and the concert was subsequently joined by France. The result of this combination, and of Ottoman obstinacy, was the destruction of the Turkish fleet at Navarino by the allied squadrons, and the establish- ment of Greek independence. This, however, did not terminate the contentions between Turkey and Russia. The Porte itself challenged war, and in 1828 hostilities broke out. Nicholas took part in the first and unsuccess- ful campaign of 1828, but allowed his generals to act by themselves in 1829; and the march of Diebitsch over the Balkans was followed by the peace of Adrianople. A Persian war had already been successfully concluded, and Russia had gained thereby two provinces in the east. The peace of Adrianople gave it only an improved frontier on the eastern shore of the Black Sea. In 1830 the fall of the Bourbons made an end of the friendship which existed between France and Russia, and restored the union between the three despotic courts of St Petersburg, Vienna, and Berlin, which had been framed in 1814 and inter- rupted by the course of Eastern affairs. Nicholas did not refuse to recognize Louis Philippe, but he would never accord him the usual title of Mon Frére, and he lost no opportunity of treating him with contempt. The insurrec- tion of Poland soon followed. Alexander had received the grand-duchy of Warsaw from the congress of Vienna as a separate kingdom, united with Russia only in the person of its ruler; and he had fulfilled his promise of granting it a constitution, and treating it asa distinct nationality. The violation of these rights by the grand-duke Constan- tine, who was governor of Poland, and the virtual establishment of dictatorial rule, caused the insurrection against Nicholas. The Polish leaders sent their demands to St Petersburg; Nicholas replied that he would only answer them with cannon. 'The diet now~~

pronounced his dethronement as king of Poland, and the armed struggle began. It was a long and doubtful one, for Poland had a regular army of its own; but the victory was at length won by Nicholas, and he showed no mercy to his conquered enemy. Poland was made a Russian province ; its liberties were utterly extinguished; its defenders were sent by thousands to Siberia. During the years that followed, the struggle between the sultan and his vassal, Mehemet Ah, pasha of Egypt, brought the Eastern question again to the front of European affairs. The treaty of Unkiar-Skelessi seemed for a moment to have placed Turkey in absolute dependence upon the czar, who guaranteed it his protec- tion against all internal and external enemies ; but France and England now made their influence felt, and the ultimate settlement was the work of all Europe. Nicholas visited England in 1844, and tried, but unsuccessfully, to frame some plan of joint action with that country in view of the possible collapse of the Ottoman empire. The revolutionary spirit which the czar so passionately abhorred

was now about to convulse Europe again. He watched the events of 1848, and strengthened his army. So long as revolution did not approach his own frontiers he was willing to hold his hand; but when Hungary rose against the Hapsburgs and established its national independence he felt that Poland would soon follow its example, and sent his soldiers to crush the Magyar armies which Austria had not been able to subdue. When the victory of despotism was secured, he joined with the Austrian Govern- ment in demanding from the Porte the surrender of the Hungarian leaders who had taken refuge in Turkey. But it was not long permitted to him to play the part of inter- national autocrat. empire, continued up to 1853, brought England and France into the field against him. His armies were defeated at Alma and Inkermann, his fortresses besieged ; and in the bitterness of defeat death came upon him, and carried him from a world where, with the deepest conviction that he was doing God service, he had inflicted so much evil on mankind (February 18, 1855). He died as he had lived, a brave man, and his last words were those of simple prayer. Shortly before his death he is said to have laid two injunc-

tions upon his successor,—to liberate the serfs, and never

~~to grant Poland a constitution. (Cc. A. F~~

~~NICHOLAS or Baset, generally called by his friends the Great Layman or the Great Friend of God, was the founder of a singular widespread association of pious people who, in the age of monastic fraternities, lived in special religious fellowship in a fashion altogether different from the common usage of the time. They did not renounce their property, they took no vows of celibacy or of obedience, but they met together for pious conversa- tion, they corresponded with each other, they had common ideas about conversion, holy living, and Christian faith and duty. They were the Quietists of the 14th century, and called themselves the "Friends of God."~~

~~Nicholas was the son of a rich merchant of Basel, and was born in that town about the year 1308. Left his own master at the age of twenty-four, by the death of his parents, and possessed of considerable wealth, he went out into the world to enjoy life and seek adventures. He became engaged, burgher as he was, to a maiden of noble rank. The night before his betrothal, as he was praying, he had a vision which resulted in his breaking off his marriage, leaving home and friends, and devoting himself to an ascetic life. After some years spent in solitude, severe bodily mortifications, and deep soul struggle, Nicholas gained the religious peace he sought, and from this time devoted himself to turning men around him from sin to God. He did not enter any religious order ; he remained, what he loved to call himself, a layman; he neither preached nor heard confessions, but by means of a singular gift of personal influence he drew round him disciples from all classes of society. His followers did not form themselves into a sect or intoan order. Some of them were priests, monks, and nuns, but some of them lived in the world, were nobles, knights, rich merchants, aud their wives. Their religious opinions were what are commonly called mystical; and indeed all the more notable mystics of the 14th century were under the influence of Nicholas and belonged to the Friends of God. They did not break loose from the outward order of the church; they observed, though with no great scrupulosity, sacraments, fasts, and festivals; but they looked on all such things as unimportant compared with that absolute resignation to the divine will in all things which was their leading principle.~~

~~The most striking event in the life of Nicholas is his meeting, in 1346, with Tauler, the Dominican preacher of Strasburg, which had the result of entirely changing the character of Tauler's religious views and of his preaching.~~

~~His aggressions upon the Ottoman~~

~~NIC—NIC~~

~~In the society of the Friends of God there came to be a small inner circle of thirteen, who attached themselves to Nicholas, lived in community, and were sent by him on long journeys to maintain communication among the brethren in the different countries of Europe. In 1380, two years after the beginning of the "Great Schism," these thirteen friends met together for the last time, coming from Italy, Hungary, and different parts of Germany. The state of the church at the time seemed to fill them with despair. Nicholas had long, by the many secret means he had at his command, exercised a great though invisible influence on church appointments and ecclesiastical affairs, but now he seemed to feel it hopeless to strive any longer against the increasing wickedness of the times, and he broke up the society he had formed, releasing his followers from their obedience, and went with two friends into Austria. Ten years later one Martin of Mainz, a follower of Nicholas, was burnt as a heretic, and in the act of accusation there are allusions to Nicholas which show that he was still living. But, as he must have been then nearly eighty-five years of age, it cannot have been much later, though the actual date is unknown, when, with two companions, he was burnt asa heretic at Vienna, the chief crime of which he was accused being that "he audaciously affirmed that he was in Christ and Christ in him,"~~

~~Our information about Nicholas comes to us chiefly through Rulmann Merswin, a banker of Strasburg, who with his wife belonged to the Friends of God. Merswin collected many leters and documents relating to the society, and bequeathed them to a convent of the Knights of St John which he founded in Stras- burg. They lay hid for centurics, while the memory of Nicholas perished ; even his name was forgotten, and medimwval students were aware only of a mysterious presence who was sometimes~~

~~referred to as "the Great Friend of God." At last Professor C. Schmidt discovered the documents in the library of the university,~~

~~| and was able to identify Nicholas with Tauler's mysterious visitor~~

~~and with the Great Layman.~~

~~See Carl Schmidt, Nicolaus von Basel, Leben und Wirken, Vienna, 1866; Die Gottesfreunde im vierzehnten Jahrhundert, Jena, 1854; and Miss Winkworth, History and Life of Johann Tauler, London, 1857.~~

~~NICHOLS, Joun (1745-1826), a printer, ranks among the most industrious and voluminous of English antiquaries and collectors. He was editor of the Gentleman's Magazine for nearly half a century, from 1778 till his death, and, partly in his magazine and partly in his numerous volumes of Anecdotes and Illustrations, made invaluable contributions to the personal history of English men of letters in the 18th century. The project of compiling these volumes grew gradually out of his business as a printer. Born in London in 1745, he had been the apprentice and successor of Bowyer, a learned and accomplished printer, a graduate of Cambridge, who had printed for many distinguished men ; and on the death of this revered master, in 1778, he issued a brief memoir. This he afterwards expanded into biographical and literary anecdotes of Mr Bowyer and his friends; and, materials accumulating upon him, he expanded his design into a sort of anecdotical literary history of the century, many important letters being placed at his disposal. Large as this work is, it formed but a small part of the indefatigable collector's activity, of which a full account is given in a memoir by Chalmers accompanying the extension of the Jilustrations by Mr J. B. Nichols. One of his favourite works was an antiquarian history of the town and county of Leicester ; and another, on which he himself set great value, a collec- tion of documents illustrating the manners and expenses of ancient times in England. He produced six volumes concerning the progresses, processions, and festivities of Elizabeth and James. In the days of his apprenticeship he wrote and published two volumes of poetry, but had the good sense to throw his genial energies afterwards into other channels. Vol. xcvi. of the Gentleman's Magazine~~

~~contains @ portrait of him at the age of eighty and several | in their gift.~~

~~well-earned tributes to the worth of his busy and fruitful life. He died November 26, 1826.~~

~~NICHOLSON, Wiiu1am (1753-1815), a writer on natural philosophy, was born in London in 1753, and after leaving school made two voyages as midshipman in the East India service. He subsequently entered an attorney's office, but, having become acquainted, in 1775, with Wedgwood, he resided for some years at Amsterdam as agent for the sale of pottery. On his return to England he was induced by Holcroft to devote himself to the com- position of light literature for periodicals, assisting that writer also with some of his plays and novels. Such work was little in accordance, however, with his scientific tastes, and he employed himself on the preparation of An Intro- duction to Natural Philosophy, which was published in 1781, and was at once successful. A translation of Voltaire's Elements of the Newtonian Philosophy soon followed, and he now entirely devoted himself to scientific pursuits and philosophical journalism. In 1784 he was appointed secretary to the general chamber of manu- facturers of Great Britain, and he was also connected with the society for the encouragement of naval architecture, established in 1791. Besides his literary labours, he bestowed much attention upon the construction of various machines for comb-cutting, file-making, cylinder printing, &c.; he also invented an aerometer. In 1800 he com- menced in London a course of public lectures on natural philosophy and chemistry, and about this period he made the discovery of the decomposition of water by the agency of galvanism, which was said to be the foundation of Sir Humphrey Davy's discoveries in the decomposition of the alkalins. In 1797 the Journal of Natural Philosophy, Chemistry, and the Arts, generally known as Nicholson's Journal, the earliest work of the kind in Great Britain, was begun ; it was carried on till 1814, During the later years of his life Nicholson's attention was chiefly directed to engineering works at Portsmouth, at Gosport, and in Southwark ; these with his other employments placed him in an affluent position, which, however, from domestic and other causes, he was unable to maintain. He died in poverty in 1815.~~

~~“A memoir was written by his son long after his death, but it never was published. Besides considerable contributions to the Philosophical Transactions, Nicholson wrote translations of Four- croy’s Chemistry (1787) and Chaptal’s Chemistry (1788), First Prin- ciples of Chemistry (1788), and a Chemical Dictionary; he also edited the British Encyclopedia, or Dictionary of Arts and Sciences, 6 vols. 8vo, London, 1809.~~

~~NICHOLSON, Witt1am (1784-1844), portrait-painter, was born at Newcastle-on-Tyne in 1784. Having settled in Edinburgh, he became, along with Thomas Hamilton the architect, one of the founders and most vigorous pro- moters of the Scottish Academy, of which in 1826 he was appointed the first secretary, a position which he held for about seven years. He is known by his life-sized portraits in oils, and still more favourably by his very delicate and faithful likenesses in water-colours. In 1818 he published a series of etchings entitled Portraits of Distinguished Living Characters of Scotland. They are executed in an effective and painter-like fashion, mainly from the artist’s own water-colours, and include portraits of Sir Walter Scott, Lord Jeffrey, Robert Burns, and Professor Wilson. Nicholson died at Edinburgh on August 16, 1844.~~

~~NICIAS was the leader of the aristocratic party at Athens and one of the foremost figures in Athenian history during the Peloponnesian War. Although he opposed the democratic tendencies which gave the tone to Attic politics at this time, his high character for piety and honesty, combined with his wealth and influence, gained the con- fidence of the people, and raised him to the highest offices~~

~~His abilities were not equal to the duties he was called on to perform, and in the severe trial of the Sicilian expedition his conduct showed such timidity in critical situations, such wavering in the general plans of warfare, such obstinacy in details where piety or supersti- tion were concerned, that the disastrous end of the siege of Syracuse must be mainly laid to his charge. It is unnecessary here to write his life, a task which would be almost equivalent to writing the history of Athens for a number of years. See GREECE, vol. xi. p. 102.~~

NICKEL, a chemical term, designating a metallic element which was discovered by Cronsted in 1751. In 1754 he succeeded in isolating it (in an impure state), and found it to be a "halbmetall" (semi-metal). After- wards finding it to be present largely in "kupfer-nickel,") he borrowed from that mineral the name for his new element.

Nickel (Ni) is one of the less abundant of elements. It is contained in the sun's atmosphere and in all meteoric iron. Of nickel minerals the following are of metallurgic importance :—nickel-blende, NS; arsenical nickel glance, Ni(As.§),; niccolo-cobaltic pyrites, (Ni, Co, Fe),§, ; garnierite, 5(Ni, Mg)O.4810,+3H,O. Almost invari- ably part of the nickel is replaced by cobalt, and not unfrequently part of the arsenic by antimony, or occasion- ally bismuth. Nickel ores are in general complex mixtures of one or more of these minerals, with sometimes very large proportions of copper, iron, and other foreign metallic ores and gangue. The metallurgy of nickel accordingly is a complex subject which cannot be fully treated here.

As an example of a sulphurcous ore may be quoted that niccolo- cupreous pyrites which is being worked at Dillenburg in Nassau. The process employed is closely analogous to the old process of copper-smelting as explained in METALLURGY (vol. xvi. p. 61). The fully refined mat (" Concentrations-Stein ") consists of 85 per cent. of nickel, 43 of copper, 2 of iron, and 20 of sulphur. The article METALLURGY (ut sup.), under arsenides, describes a process which, when applied to arseniferous cobalt and nickel ores, yields the cobalt as sinalt, the nickel as part of a "'speis" (an alloy of arsenides). The same process serves occasionally for (so to say) collecting small proportions of nickel diffused throughout oxidized ores, the arsenic requisite being introduced in the form of native arsenide of iron.

If au arseniferous ore contains copper, the proccss sometimes is modified by addition of iron pyrites or some other sulphureous material, and so conducted that, in addition to a nickelous speis, acupreous mat is produced. The speis and mat donot mix, but form separate layers, the mat, as the lighter of the two, going to the top.

All sulphureous, arsenical, or poor oxidized nickel ores are being wrouglit by methods analogous to the above, in so far at least as they all aim, in the first instance, at the production of a speis or mat from which the metal has

to be extracted by subsequent operations. Direct methods are being used only in conjunction with one kind of ore, namely, that rich oxidized nickel ore which was discovered in New Caledonia about 1875, and has since been imported into Europe in large and yearly increasing quantities. It occurs in veins within serpentine, and consists of garnierite mixed with more or less of oxide of iron, chrome-iron ore, and a little black oxide of cobalt. It is valuable chiefly through its absolute freedom from arsenic and sulphides. Most of the ore goes to France, where it is worked chiefly by two firms. Christofie at St Denis treats the ore with hydrochloric acid, and from the solution recovers the metal by methods analogous to those customarily employed in con- nexion with speis and mats. Garnier, at the Septémes Works near Marseilles, makes straight for the metal. The powdered ore, after mechanical purification (by such methods as are explained in Merauiurey, vol. xvi. p. 59), is mixed with charcoal and fluor-spar (or other flux) and worked into a paste with coal-tar, which is then shaped into bricks or walnut-sized stones. The ore thus prepared is then manipulated pretty much in the same way as an iron ore is for the production of pig-iron. The furnaces used are about 13 feet high, and worked with cold wind. Garnier in this manner produces three kinds of metal :—(1) an almost pure carbide of nickel, which needs only be decarbonized to be converted into pure metal; (2) an alloy of the carbides of nickel and iron; and (3), from mixtures of nickel and iron ore, a nickeliferous pig-iron which,

1 Said to be originally a term of contempt—"goblin copper," mean- ing a tricky ore, which promises copper but does not yield it.

when refined and puddled, yields a very superior kind of wrought iron, harder and less liable to oxidation than the ordinary metal.

Extraction of Metal from Mats and Speises.—The first step as a rule is a roasting process, which, in the case of a speis, yields an arseui- ferous mixture of oxides; a mat, in general, passes into a mixture of oxide, sulphate, and unchanged sulphide. Either roasted material is easily disintegrated by being treated with aqueous muriatic or sulphuric acid, with formation of a solution of nickel- salt, contaminated, in general, with arsenic, antimony, bismuth, copper, iron, cobalt, and zinc, which must be

removed by suitable analytical methods. But, as we have no space to consider this problem in its general form, we will assume antimony, bismuth, and zinc to beabsent. If, in this case, the iron predominates sufficiently over the arsenic, these two can both be removed at one stroke by evaporating the solution to dryness and calcining the residue at the lowest sufficient temperature; the iron-salt only is reduced to an insoluble basic salt (of Fe,0,), which includes all the arsenic, so that by redissolving in water and passing the liquor through a filter press we obtain a solution which, by theory, is free of iron and arsenic. Practically, however, a trace of iron remains, and must be removed by precipitation with carbonate of line in the cold and filtration. A repetition of the same process at about 60° C. elimi- nates the copper, so that only the cobalt is left, which, however, is no impurity metallurgically, and consequently may be suffered to remain, but, if present in sufficient quantity, must be recovered for its own sake. This is effected by addition of bleaching powder and gentle heating. If care be taken to let a little of the cobalt escape, the rest goes down as black peroxide, Co,03, sufficiently pure for its ordinary applications. From the filtered nickel solution the metal is precipitated, by addition of milk-of-lime, as a green hydrated oxide, which is collected and washed in a filter press. The precipitate, being inconveniently gelatinous and bulky, is next rendered compact by a gentle calcination, and, if it is, as usual, contaminated with sulphate of lime, is freed from this impurity by judicious washing with highly dilute muriatic acid or otherwise. The purified oxide then, either by mere pressure or with the help of starch or other plastifying material, is shaped into little cubes of about one centimetre's side, embedded in charcoal dust within graphite or fire-clay crucibles and heated in a fire. A dull red heat suffices for the mere reduction of the oxide to metal ; but a strong red heat is applied in order to cause the nickel cubes to sinter together and become fast and compact. No degree of red heat will fuse them unless they are contaminated with copper. There is no need to explain how, with cupriferous leys, the process has to be modified to lead ultimately to a fused regulus of copper- nickel available for the preparation of german silver. From a copper-free liquor, provided only it contains its iron all as ferric salt, a pure nickel precipitate can be obtained at once by addi- tion of oxalic acid. The (green) oxalate of nickel precipitate need only be washed, dried, and ignited to be converted into a pure (but partially oxidized) metal. This process has actually been applied, at least

~~experimentally, in the working of the New Caledonian ore, with this modification, however, that the oxalic acid was recovered by boiling the oxalate of nickel with carbonate of potash, and precipitating the acid by milk-of-lime from the alkaline solution.~~

~~Ordinary cube-nickel contains from 94 to 99 per cent. of real nickel. The purest commercial metal is that extracted from the New Caledonian ore; it often contains only a fraction of a per cent. of impurities. The present writer has no information regarding the mechanical characters of such highly-refined New Caledonian metal. The best com- mercial cube-nickel (although it may contain less than 1 per cent. of impurities) is always utterly devoid" of plasticity ; it breaks under the hammer, although the pure metal, as was shown as early as 1804 by Richter, and confirmed by Deville in 1856, is highly ductile and tenacious. To obtain the pure metal, the best laboratory method is to prepare pure oxalate and heat it intensely in a close crucible made of quicklime, when it is obtained as an almost silver-white regulus, which has all the ductility and malleability of the best wrought iron combined with one and a half times the breaking strain and greater hardness. It is attracted by the magnet. Its specific gravity is 8-279 for ingot, and 8°666 (Richter) for the forged metal. It can be welded at a red heat like wrought iron, which it exceeds in relative infusibility. It does not tarnish even on long exposure to the air. Sulphuretted hydrogen does not blacken it. Liquid water, even in the presence of air, has no action upon it. Aqueous non-oxidizing acids act upon it as they do on~~

~~iron, but more slowly. Nitric acid and aqua regia dissolve it as nitrate Ni(NO,), and chloride NiCl, respectively. When heated strongly in air it is gradually oxidized ; it decomposes steam, slowly, at a red heat. In brief, it unites in itself all the virtues of iron with some of the characteristics of the noble metals, and yet its application in the mechanical arts was never thought of until Fleitmann in 1879 made a most remarkable observation. Finding that even the purest nickel which he could produce on a manufacturing scale was brittle, he attributed this defect not to the traces of metallic impurities still present in it but to occluded carbonic oxide, and tried to remove this by addition of magnesium to the molten metal. He suc-~~

ceeded beyond expectation: one-eighth of a per cent. of magnesium added to the metal (in an atmosphere of carbonic acid) before pouring imparted to it all the plasticity of the pure metal! Fleitmann also found that the thus purified nickel could be permanently welded on wrought iron, and that a combination plate thus produced could be rolled out into the thinnest sheet without breach of continuity. Since that time his firm (Fleitmann & Witte of Iserlohn) have made a business of the manu- facture of cooking utensils and other useful articles out of such nickel-plated iron. Physiological experiments on a dog, instituted at the instance of the firm, showed that the metal is innocuous. Cobalt, as Fleitmann found, behaves in every respect like nickel, and even exceeds it in whiteness and brilliancy.2. The writer has for more than a year been in the habit of using a nickel basin (supplied by Messrs Johnson & Matthey of London) for operations with caustic-alkali lye, and finds it to work admirably—better, in fact, than a silver one.

Nickel Electroplating.—This art, invented by Bottcher about 1848, has developed into an important industry, especially in the United States. The best kind of solution to use is one of the double sul- phate of nickel and ammonia, which should be saturated at 25° and used in conjunction with a plate of nickel as positive electrode.

Alloys.—Nickel alloys were used practically long before Cronsted's discovery of the metal. GERMAN SILVER (g.v.), long known to the Chinese as '' Pack Tong," 4.¢., '' white copper," consists of nickel, copper, and zinc united in varying propottions,—3 of copper, 1 of zinc, and 1 of nickel is said to give the most silver-like alloy. An alloy of '' german" with real silver has lately been introduced as "'tiers-argent"; it consists of silver 27°6, copper 59°0, zine 9°6, nickel 3°4 per cent. In the United States, in Belgium, and in Germany, an alloy of 1 of nickel with 3 of copper serves for the making of minor coins. All these alloys are non-magnetic.

' Salts.—For nickel salts sce CHEMISTRY and chemical hand- ooks.

Analysis,—Nickel-salts, as a rule, and their solutions more gene- rally, exhibit a green colour. Sulphuretted hydrogen does not precipitate the metal from solutions containing free mineral acid. Sulphide of ammonium, from neutral or alkaline solutions, precipi- tates a black sulphide which, like sulphide of cobalt, when once produced is almost insoluble in dilute cold

hydrochloric acid, and has the specific property of being very appreciably soluble in a mixture of yellow (é.c., ordinary) sulphide of ammonium and free ammonia, forming a dark coffee-brown solution. Unlike iron-salts, nickel-salts are not oxidized into sesquioxide (analogous to Fe,03) salts by nitric acid orchlorine. Carbonate of baryta, which readily precipitates oxide of iron (Fe,O3) and alumina, does not precipitate nickel from its solutions in the cold. By means of these reactions nickel is easily distinguished and separated from all other metals except cobalt. To test a nickel solution for cobalt, add excess of nitrite of potassium and acidify with acetic acid. Cobalt, if present, comes down gradually as " Fischer's salt," a double nitrite of Co.03 and K,0O.

The atomic weight of nickel, according to the latest determina- tions, is identical with that of cobalt :—Ni(=Co) =58'6, O being 16.

Karmarsch and Heeren's Technisches Worterbuch gives a very full account of the metallurgy of nickel, quite up to date (1883). (W. D.) a ee eS

1 It is perhaps well to repeat a warning given by Fleitmann, that the introduction of the magnesium, if not very cautiously done in the absence of air, leads to violent explosions.

2 It is only fair to state that as early as the Universal Exhibition of Vienna in 1873 the American Wharton exhibited vessels of pure forged nickel, prepared from the spongy metal by strong compression under a steam hammer at a red heat.

NIC—NIC

NICOBARS, a cluster of eight large and twelve small islands in the Bay of Bengal, lying to the south of the Andamans, between 6° 40' and 9° 20' N. lat. and between 93° and 94° E. long., with a population in 1881, exclu- sive of aborigines, of 308. The largest island, the Great Nicobar, is about 30 miles in length and from 12 to 15 in breadth. Many of the islands are hilly, with peaks of con- siderable height ; others are flat and covered with forests of cocoa-nut trees. Allare well wooded. Tropical fruits grow in abundance, and yams of fine quality and size. The Nicobar swallow is the builder of the edible bird's nest, which, together with trepang (béche-de-mer), cocoa-nuts,

~~tortoiseshell, and ambergris, forms the whole export of the islands. Agriculture is quite unknown. 'Trade is carried on by barter with the crews of English, native, and Malay vessels. The inhabitants, a race of savages with Malay- like features, had an evil reputation for piracy, and murder of the crews of vessels visiting the island or ship- wrecked upon them. An inquiry by the Government of India into a case of this sort in 1869 led to the annexa- tion of the whole archipelago, the administration being placed under the superintendent of the Andaman Islands.~~

~~NICOL, Witu1am, the inventor of the invaluable polarizing prism (Lieut, vol. xiv. p. 612), was born about 1768, and died at Edinburgh in September 1851. Nothing is known of his early history, beyond the fact that, after amassing a small competence as an itinerant popular lecturer on various parts of natural philosophy, he settled in Edinburgh to live a very retired life in the society of his apparatus alone. Besides the invention of his prism (of which we are told that he himself did not understand the mode of action), he devoted himself chiefly to the examination of fluid-filled cavities in crystals, and of the microscopic structure of various kinds of fossil wood. In the preparation of the sections of wood he introduced improvements of the utmost value. Before his time only the roughest slices were employed. His skill asa working lapidary was very great; and he executed a number of lenses of garnet and other precious stones, which he pre- ferred to the achromatic microscopes of the time. The majority of the few, though important, papers which he published are to be found in the old and new Edinburgh Philosophical Journal.~~

~~NICOLAI, Curistopx Frieprich (1733-1811), a German author and bookseller, was born on the 18th of March 1733, at Berlin, where his father was a bookseller. He was educated at a real-school in Berlin, and in 1749 went to Frankfort-on-the-Oder to learn his father's business. In 1752 he returned to Berlin, and soon began to take part in current literary controversy. At that time the leaders of critical opinion in Germany were Gottsched and Bodmer. In 1755 Nicolai issued a book, Briefe tiber den jetugen Zustand der schénen Wissenschaften, in which he tried to show that each of these writers was in his own way narrow and intolerant. This work secured for the author the friendship of Lessing, whose power as a critic was then beginning to be recognized. In 1757 Nicolai devoted himself~~

exclusively to literature; but next year, after the death of his brother, who had continued the elder Nicolai's business, he found it necessary to resume the life of a bookseller. He did not, however, abandon his literary labours. In association with his friend Moses Mendelssohn he had established, in 1757, the periodical called Bibliothek der schinen Wissenschaften, and this he conducted until 1760. From 1761 to 1766 he contributed to the Briefe, die neueste Literatur betrefend ; but it was Lessing's work that made this series famous. For many years (from 1765 to 1791) Nicolai edited the Allgemeine deutsche Bibliothek, a periodical which served as the organ of the so-called popular philosophers, who warred against authority in

religion and against what they conceived to be extravagance in literature. The new niovement of ideas represented by Herder, Goethe, Schiller, Kant, and Fichte he was in- capable of understanding, and he made himself ridiculous by foolish misrepresentation of theiraims. Of Nicolai's inde- pendent writings, perhaps the only one of permanent value is his Anekdoten von Lriedrich II, His romances are forgotten, although Leben und Meinungen des LHerrn Magisters Sebaldus Nothanker had a certain reputation in its day. His Beschreibung einer Reise durch Deutschland und die Schweiz was attacked by many writers, and it proved that in middle life he had become in a new way not less bigoted than the authors whose bigotry he had spent much of his time in exposing. Nicolai died on the 8th of January 1811. He wrote an Autohiography, which was published in 1806. See Nicolad's Leben und litera- rischer Nachlass, by Géckingk (1820).

NICOLAIEFF. See NIKo.alerr.

NICOLAS, Sir Nicworas Harris (1799-1848), English antiquary, was born 10th March 1799, the fourth son of John Harris Nicolas of East Looe in Cornwall, whose Breton ancestors had settled there on the revocation of the edict of Nantes. He entered the navy in 1808, and was promoted lieutenant in 1815. At the close of the war he retired from the service and began to study for the bar. He was called at the Inner Temple in 1825, but his business as a barrister was chiefly confined to the claims of peerage before the House of Lords, his special genealogical knowledge rendering his assistance in such cases invaluable. On genealogical questions and those

connected with the descent of ancient families his researches have thrown much important light. Of works on these subjects he published a considerable number, the most useful being Wotetia Historica (1824 ; expanded in 1835 for " Lardner's Cabinet Cyclopedia" into Chronology of History), Synopsis of the Peerage of England (2 vols., 1825), and Testamenta Vetusta (2 vols., 1826). Nicholas wrote a number of valu- able biographical notices for Pickering's Aldine edition of the poets, among others those of Chaucer, Surrey, Wyatt, Collins, Cowper, Thomson, Burns, and Kirke White. His "Lives of Isaak Walton and Charles Cotton," prefixed to Pickering's edition of the Complete Angler, are also the fruit of independent and original research. The service of Nicolas in the royal navy seems to have left an impress on his mind which his antiquarian studies tended rather to deepen than obliterate; and it is where his passion for antiquarian research was exercised in illustrating the historic glories of England and the heroic deeds of famous individuals that he found the most congenial scope for his powers. His magnum opus is his {1tstory of the Orders of Knighthood of the British Empire (4 vols., 1841-42). For his previous researches into the history of the orders he was, in 1831, made a knight of the Hanoverian Guelphic order and in 1832 chancellor of the Ionian order of St Michael and St George, and in 1840 he was advanced to the grade of the Grand Cross. In his later years Nicolas was occupied chiefly with works connected with the naval achievements of England. He published Dispatches and Letters of Admiral Lord Viscount Nelson (7 vols., 1844-46); and he was engaged until a few days before his death in editing the papers of Sir Hudson Lowe. He died at Cape Curé,

near Boulogne, August 3, 1848. os

Sir Harris Nicolas left an unfinished History of the British Navy, in 2 vols. He became a member of the council of the Society of Antiquaries in 1826, but on account of a controversy with the other members in regard to the management of its affairs he withdrew in 1828. Besides exposing in various pamphlets what he regarded as serious defects in its management, he made frequent reference to them in the Retrospective Review, of which he was joint-editor. He also instituted an inquiry into the proceedings of the Record Com- mission, the publications of which he regarded as not commensurate in value with the money expendedon them. But, although, owing

to the warmth of his feelings and his keen interest in his subject, Nicolas was apt to involve himself in keen controversy, he never cherished personal animosity, and his motives were otherwise above suspicion. A complete list of the writings of Nicolas will be found in the Gentleman's Magazine for October 1848.

NICOLE, Prerre (1625-1695), one of the most distin- guished of the Port-Royalists, a scholar of great excellence, and, according to Bayle (who had no particular reason for praising him), "one of the best writers in Europe," was born at Chartres in 1625. Like his friend Pascal he was a precocious boy, though his precocity showed itself in classics and in miscellaneous reading, not in mathematics, and it was when he was transferred from his native town to Paris to finish his education that the rising school of Port Royal fixed its attention upon him. At an early age he was made a master in the Port Royal school, where his special department was classical instruction, though he is said to have taken no small part in the famous Art de Penser or Port Royal logic. He shared in the history of the school, and with the exception of Arnauld and Pascal may be said to have been its most accomplished member. Not a little of the materials of the Provinciales is said to be due to him, and at the completion of Pascal's great work he translated it into Latin. One of the most virtuous men in France, he was a favourite of the notorious duchess of Longueville for politico-theological reasons, and he was the immediate master of Racine. This latter circumstance brought about an incident thoroughly dis- creditable to the dramatist. Nicole was the author of certain Lettres sur les Visionnatres or & un Visionnaire, as they are most frequently cited. The actual title of the collected work is Les Imaginaires et les Visionnaires (1667). In these he had attacked Desmarets de Saint Sorlin, and with the excessive puritanism which characterized his sect had reflected on fiction and the drama generally. Racine, without a shadow of personal provocation, replied in two letters of great asperity, of which the first was actually published, and the second only delayed (it was published after its author's death) owing to the judicious counsel of Boileau. But Nicole made no reply, and indeed public

~~opinion condemned Racine without hesitation. Nicole, who, owing to the theological disputes in which he was concerned, had never fully taken orders, and who had been compelled at one time to leave France, devoted himself in his later years chiefly to moral philosophy. The first volume of his Hssais de Morale appeared in 1671, and the rest of his life was chiefly occupied on this book, though he wrote many others. He was warmly admired by many of the best judges among his contemporaries, Madame de Sévigné deserving especial mention, and numerous selec- tions of his ethical works have appeared in recent times. Modern opinion hardly recognizes in Nicole the right to hold the place close to Pascal which his own time accorded to him. His style is clear, simple, and correct, but a little flat and monotonous; his thought sensible, just, and charitable, but somewhat destitute of depth, subtlety, and originality. He was certainly one of the best men of his time, but as certainly not one of the greatest ; and his reputation was due first to his scholarship, secondly to his moderation. He died of apoplexy, November 16, 1605; and had latterly somewhat separated himself from the Jansenists. Numerous stories are told of his personal timidity and unreadiness in oral argument. It does not appear that his works (by far the most important of which is the already-mentioned Hssais de Morale, Paris, 1671, sq.) were ever collected.~~

~~NICOMEDES L., son of Zipcetes, succeeded his father as king of Bithynia in 278 B.c. He enlarged and consoli- dated the kingdom, which had been founded by his father in 288, and founded the great city of. Nicomedia as the capital.~~

~~NIC—NIC~~

~~Antioclius of Syria, and invited the Gauls under Leonnorius and Lutarius to cross into Asia Minor and help him against his foreign and domestic enemies. His reign seems to have been long, prosperous, and uneventful; the year of his death is unknown,~~

~~NICOMEDES IL., fourth in descent from the preced- ing, was son of Prusias II. He was so popular with the people that his father became jealous and sent him to Rome. Here he was so much favoured by the senate that Prusias sent an ambassador, Menas, to Rome, giving him secret orders to assassinate Nicomedes. Menas revealed the plot, and persuaded the prince~~

~~to rebel against his father. Supported by Attalus IL, king of Pergamum, he was completely successful, and ordered his father to be slain before the altar of Zeus in Nicomedia. Nicomedes reigned from 149 to 91 3.c., and during his long reign adhered steadily to the Romanalliance. He made himself for a time master of Paphlagonia, and married Laodice, widow of Ariarathes VI., in order to have a claim on her deceased husband's kingdom of Cappadocia.~~

~~NICOMEDES IIL, son and successor of the preced- ing. His brother Socrates contested the kingdom with him, relying on the alliance of the great Mithradates. Nicomedes was established on the throne by Roman help in 90 B.c., but expelled by Mithradates in 88, after a great defeat in Paphlagonia. In 84 he was restored by the Romans. In 81 Julius Cesar, sent to him by his com- mander, became so intimate with him as to give rise to great calumnies at home. He died in 74 Bo., and be- qeathed his kingdom to the Romans.~~

~~NICOMEDIA, a town at the head of the Sinus Astacenus, which opens on the Propontis, was built in 264 B.C. by Nicomedes I., king of Bithynia, and has ever since been one of the chief towns in this part of Asia Minor. It still retains the ancient name under the form Ismid, and it is the terminus of a short railway. Its situation made it a convenient centre of government. It was the metropolis of Bithynia under the Roman empire (see Nica); Diocletian made it the capital of the East, and fixed his court there. It retained its importance even after Constantinople was founded, for the roads from all parts of Asia Minor to the capital converge at Nicomedia.~~

~~NICOPOLI. See Nixopor.~~

~~NICOPOLIS, or Actia Nicopomis, an ancient city of Epirus, founded 31 B.c. by Octavian in memory of his victory over Antony and Cleopatra at Actium. The colony, composed of settlers from a great many of the towns of the neighbouring countries (Ambracia, Anactorium, Calydon, Argos Amphilochicum, Leucas, &c.), proved highly successful, and the city was considered the capital of southern Epirus and Acarnania, and obtained the right of sending five representatives to the Amphictyonic council. On the spot where Octavian's own tent had been pitched he erected a sanctuary to Neptune adorned with the beaks of the captured galleys; and in further celebra- tion of his victory he instituted the so-called Actian games in~~

~~honour of Apollo Actius. The city was restored by the emperor Julian, and again after the Gothic invasion by Justinian ; but in the course of the Middle Ages it was supplanted by the town of Prevesa. The ruins of Nicopolis, now known as Paleoprevesa (Old Prevesa), lie about 3 miles north of that city, on a small bay of the Gulf of Arta (Sinus Ambracius) at the narrowest part of the isthmus of the peninsula which separates the gulf from the Ionian Sea. Besides the acropolis, the most con- spicuous objects are two theatres (the larger with twenty- seven rows of seats) and an aqueduct which brought water to the town from a distance of 27 miles. See Wolfe in Jour. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1833; Leake, Northern Greece ;~~

~~He was for some time engaged in war with | Bursian, Geog. von Griechenland.~~

~~NI C—~~

~~Nicopolis was also the name of (1) a city in Cappadocia in the | valley of the Lycus, founded by Pompey on the spot where he defeated Mithradates; (2) a city in Egypt, founded by Octavian 24 B.c. to commemorate his final victory over Antony; and (3) acity in Thrace at the junction of the Iatrus with the Danube, founded by Trajan in memory of his victory over the Dacians (Nikup).°~~

~~NICOSIA is the name in common use, though originally a mere corruption of the Greek name Lefkosia, for the capital of Cyprus. It is situated in the midst of the great plain of the Mesaria, which traverses the island from sea to sea, and is nearly equidistant from the Gulf of Morphu at one end and that of Famagosta at the other. Though the name of Lefkosia (Aevxwoia) is undoubtedly Greek, it is not found in the ancient geography of the island ; and, though the discovery of some ancient tombs in the immediate neighbourhood prove that the site was inhabited in very early times, no mention is found of it before the reign of Constantine, by whom it was fortified with a circuit of walls, which continued to exist down to the time of the Venetians. It became the capital of the island under the kings of the Lusignan dynasty, who were the rulers of Cyprus from 1192 to 1489,—an advantage which it probably owed to its inland, and somewhat central, situation, though in other respects its position affords few advantages. It stands in a barren and treeless plain, on the banks of the river Pedias, which~~

~~is, however, a mere shingly bed during the greater part of the year, and the town is dependent for its supply of water upon an aqueduct by which it is conveyed from the neighbouring hills. Like many other Oriental towns, Nicosia has rather an imposing effect from a distance, in consequence especially of its lofty walls, built by the Venetians to replace the previously existing circuit, which remain unbroken to the present day. Above these towers the beautiful Gothic cathedral, now converted into amosque. But the interior of the city is a mere labyrinth of narrow streets, and presents an aspect of great decay. The population, which was previously estimated at 16,000, was found by an actual census, taken in 1879, to amount to only 11,197 souls, of whom 5628 were Mohammedans and 5251 Greeks. Since the occupation of Cyprus by the English, some improvements have been introduced at Nicosia, which still continues to be the capital of the island, and the residence of the British commissioner, as well as of the Greek archbishop. A new carriage road has also been constructed from thence to Larnaca, which is becoming a place of considerable trade. But the natural disadvan- tages of its situation will probably prevent Nicosia from ever rising again to an important town. At the present day it is worthless as a fortress, on account of its being completely commanded from the neighbouring heights.~~

~~NICOSIA, a city of Italy in the province of Catania in Sicily, about 50 miles west of Catania, near the rise of the Seminato. It is a picturesque medizval-looking place, with a cathedral in the Norman style, a communal library, mineral wells, and a trade in grain, wine, and oil. The population of the commune was 14,731 in 1861 and 15,460 in 1881; that of the town was 14,508 in 1871.~~

~~Nicosia probably represents the ancient Herbita, which gallantly maintained its independence against Dionysius of Syracuse. De- stroyed by the Saracens, the city was restored by the Normans, and the Lombard colony introduced by Roger is said to have ae trace in the popular speech. The bishopric dates from~~

~~NICOTINE. See Tosacco.~~

~~NIEBUHR, Bartuorp Grore (1776-1831), the his- torian of ancient Rome, was the son of Karsten Niebuhr, noticed below, and was born at~~

Copenhagen on August 27,1776. His family was of Hanoverian extraction. In his infancy his father removed to Meldorf in South Ditmarsh, where he had received a Government appoint- ment, and devoted his leisure to the instruction of his |

Net A491

son. From the earliest age young Niebuhr manifested extraordinary precocity, and especial interest in history and politics. From 1794 to 1796, being already a finished classical scholar and acquainted with several modern lauguages, he studied at the university of Kiel, applying himself to mathematics, logic, philosophy, and other studies previously neglected. He there formed the most important friendship of his life, that with Madame Hensler, the widowed daughter-in-law of one of the professors, and a woman of unusual strength of character, six years older than himself. He also made the acquaintance of her sister, Amelie Behrens, whom he subsequently married. After quitting the university he became private secretary to Count Schimmelmann, Danish minister of finance, but finding that the post did not allow him sufficient leisure for study, he quitted it for an appointment at the royal library. He shortly afterwards travelled in Great Britain, and spent a year at Edinburgh studying agriculture and physical science. His observations on England and Scotland, conveyed in letters to his betrothed, are exceed- ingly interesting ; but he failed to obtain that confidence in the capacity of an educated community for self-government which residence in a free country might have been expected to bestow, and which would have saved him much sorrow, and most of his errors in practical politics. He says, nevertheless, "my early residence in England gave me one important key to Roman history. It is necessary to know civil life by personal observation in order to understand such states as those of antiquity. I never could have understood a number of things in the history of Rome without having observed England." He also acquired in Scotland a feeling for nature, in which he had previously been remarkably deficient. In 1799 he returned to Denmark, where he was soon appointed assessor in the East India department of the Board of Trade, and secretary for the affairs of the Danish consulates in Barbary. In 1800 he married and settled at Copenhagen. In 1804 he became chief director of the National Bank, but in September 1806, after negotiations which had extended over more than a

~~year, quitted this for a similar appoint- ment in Prussia. The step was a false one as concerned his personal interests, and not highly creditable to his patriotism as a Danish subject; but it is not to be regretted, since, without the release from' public life which it ulti- mately occasioned, we should not have possessed his oman Llistory.~~

~~He arrived in Prussia on the eve of the catastrophe of Jena, and shared to the full all the disasters and miseries which overwhelmed the monarchy, He accompanied the fugitive Government to Kénigsberg, where he rendered considerable service in the commissariat, and was after- wards still more useful as commissioner of the national debt, and by his opposition to ill-considered schemes of taxation. He was also for a short time Prussian minister in Holland, where he endeavoured without success to con- tracta loan. The extreme sensitiveness of his temperament, however, disqualified him for politics; he proved impractic- able in his relations with Hardenberg and other ministers, and in 1810 retired for a time from public life, accepting the more congenial appointment of royal historiographer and professor at the university of Berlin. He commenced his lectures with a course on the history of Rome. The enthusiastic reception these experienced filled him with delight. He recognized that he had found his vocation, and henceforth regarded the history of Rome from the earliest age to Augustus as the task of his life. The first two volumes, based upon his lectures, were published in 1812, but attracted little attention at the time owing to the absorbing interest of political events. In 1813 Niebuhr's own attention was diverted from history by~~

~~the uprising of the German people against Napoleon ; he entered the landwehr, and ineffectually sought admission into the regular army. He edited for a short time a patriotic journal, The Prussian Correspondent, joined the headquarters of the allied sovereigns, and witnessed the battle of Bautzen, and was subsequently employed in some minor negotiations. In 1815 he lost his father, whose life he subsequently wrote; and in July his beloved wife, whose health had long been declining, expired, enjoining him to finish his History. He next accepted the post of ambassador at Rome, which he probably thought would assist his historical labours, and departed~~

to assume that office in July 1816. On his way he discovered in the cathedral library of Verona the long-lost Institutes of Gaius, afterwards edited by Savigny, to whom he communicated the discovery under the impression that he had found a portion of Ulpian. Before his departure for Rome he had married his wife's niece, an amiable young person, but inferior intellectually to his first wife, and almost equally delicate in constitution. Although devoted to him, she could in no way replace her predecessor. Nor was he happy in other respects. He disliked the Italians, and found himself unable to proceed as he wished with his History. These causes, acting upon a naturally querulous and despondent temper, produced a general dissatisfaction and discouragement which coloured all his views of human affairs, and deprived the world of the benefit that it might have received from the observations of one endowed with such profound insight and such noble sympathies. While his distrust made him ungenerous to those who were con- tending for a better order of things, his appreciation of the lessons of history withheld him equally from siding with the reactionary party. His position in his latter years was hence one of great isolation, not uncheered, however, by the sympathy of friends and disciples such as Savigny and Bunsen. During his residence in Rome he discovered and published fragments of Cicero and Livy, aided Cardinal Mai in his edition of Cicero De Republica, and shared in framing the plan of Bunsen and Platner's great work on the topography of ancient Rome, to which he contributed several chapters. He also, on a journey home from Ttaly, deciphered in a palimpsest at St Gall the fragments of Flavius Merobaudes, a Roman poet of the 5th century. In 1823 he resigned the embassy and established himself at Bonn, where the remainder of his life was spent, with the exception of some visits to Berlin as councillor of state. He here rewrote and republished (1827-28) the first two volumes of his /Tistory, and composed a third volume, bringing the narrative down to the end of the First Punic War, which he did not hiniself entirely complete, but which, with the help of a fragment written in 1811, was edited after his death by Professor Classen. He also assisted in Bekker's edition of the Byzantine historians, and delivered courses of lectures on ancient history, ethnography, and geography, and on the French Revolution, which were published from notes after his death. In February 1830 his house was burned down, but the greater part of his books and manuscripts were saved. The revolution of July in the same year was a terrible blow to him, and filled him with the

most dismal anticipations of the future of Europe. He died on J anuary 2, 1831, from a chill taken in coming home from a news-room where he had been eagerly studying the trial of the ministers of Charles X. His wife survived him only nine days. He left several children by her ; his first marriage had been childless.

Niebuhr's great work counts among epoch-making histories both as marking an era in the study of its special subject, aud for its momentous influence on the general conception of history. 'The

main results," says Dr Schmitz, "arrived at by the inquiries of Niebuhr, such as his views of the ancient population of Rome,

Nae CR

| the origin of the plebs, the relation between the patricians and

plebeians, the real nature of the ager pubiicus, and many other points of interest, have been acknowledged by all his successors." Other alleged discoveries, such as the construction of early Roman history out of still carlier ballads, have not been equally fortunate s but if every positive conclusion of Niebuhr's had been refuted, his claim to be considered the first who dealt with the ancient history of Rome in a scientific spirit would remain unimpaired, and the new principles introduced by him into historical research would lose nothing of their importance. He suggested, though he did not elaborate, the theory of the myth, so potent an instrument for good and ill in modern historical criticism. He brought in infer- ence to supply the place of discredited tradition, and showed the possibility of writing history in the absence of original records. By his theory of the disputes between the patricians and plebeians arising from original differences of race he drew attention to the immense importance of ethnological distinctions, and con- tributed to the revival of these divergences as factors in modern history. More than all, perhaps, since his conception of ancient Roman story made laws and manners of more account than shadowy lawgivers, he undesignedly influenced history by popu- larizing that conception of it which lays stress on institutions, tendencies, and social traits to the neglect of individuals. History, so treated, always inclines to degenerate into mere disquisition ; and if Niebuhr were weighed in the

scales of Livy it might be questioned whether he could even claim to rank among historians. That his rank should be so high is a proof of the extension which the defini- tion of history has received in ourday. An historian should beforo all things tell a story. Niebuhr is often engaged in proving that there is no story to tell, The peculiar character of his work is incidentally expressed by himself. ‘‘That,” he says, ‘‘ which would be harmonious in a national and poetical historian would be out of tune in a work written more than eighteen hundred years later by a foreigner and a critic. His task is to restore the ancient tradition.” He is not, that is to say, an historian but an historical critic. It would therefore be unjust to try him by the standard of great artists in history like Gibbon, eminent in narrative, in character-painting, in historical grouping and light and shade. His intense admiration for Livy proves how greatly he himself valued such accomplishments, but he makes no attempt to emulate them. Such an endeavour could have had no place in the treat- ment of early Roman history according to the principle he had prescribed for himself ; and it is perhaps fortunate for his fame that the pen dropped from his hand as he was slowly emerging from the regions of historic twilight into a clear day where the actions of statesmen and generals are no longer a matter of uncertainty, and only require to be interpreted by their motives. There are indeed in the latter pages of his history evidences of deep human sympathy, and a capacity for viewing men and things in the concrete, as, for instance, in his treatment of Pyrrhus; but this tendency is continually checked and controlled by his propensity to analytical criticism. Had his work been carried down, as he designed, to the period of Augustus, he would have given a masterly study of such episodes as the legislation of the Gracchi, he would have thrown the clearest light on the constitutional questions between Cesar and his adversaries, he would now and then have illuminated the character of a great man by a flash of inspiration ; but as a whole his history would have lacked life, colour, and movement. It must be added that, if his style is not precisely inelegant, even the refined literary skill of his English translators has failed to render it attractive. Whence, then, is this history not merely valuable, but delightful? The answer must be from its freshness, its elation of real or supposed discovery, the impression it conveys of actual contact with a great body of new and unsuspected truth. We seem to be at once learning and unlearning ; we sce many new things, and old things as we never saw them before. It is an intellectual

emancipation, momentous for the world and the individual, even if particular conclusions should prove to be hasty, and particular details inaccurate. In this sense Niebuhr was justified in his proud assumption that ‘‘the discovery of no ancient historian would have taught the world so much as my work.” His further prediction “that all that may hereafter come to light from ancient and uncorrupted sources will only tend to confirm or develop the principles I have advanced” has not received equal confirmation. The theory on which he laid so much stress of the derivation of ancient Roman history from popular ballads has been refuted by Sir George Lewis, and now finds little acceptance. The general scepticism as to the credibility of ancient history implied in his method went too far, and has been succeeded by a legitimate reaction fortified by such practical arguments as the recent archeological discoveries at Ilion and Mycenz, and more lately at Samos, in the deserts of Moab, and even on the confines of Ethiopia. Writing, it is evident, was more ancient and more practised ; oral tradition was more disciplined (as might have been inferred from a memorable passage in Plato’s Timwus); there was more even of a judicial and critical spirit in antiquity than was surmised by Niebuhr. The testimony of Xanthus to the Lydian origin of

NTEBU ER

the Etruscans, so summarily set aside by him, would now be con- sidered strong prima facie evidence. Yet, after every deduction, Dr Leonhard Schmitz, prefacing the English translation of the Roman History by Mommsen which has for readers of general culti- vation superseded Niebuhr, is able to say of the latter, ‘‘The main pillars of his grand structure are still unshaken.” The endowments which enabled him to achieve so much in the absence of so many of the historian’s most essential gifts may be character- ized as learning, memory, sagacity, imagination. His erudition is marvellous for a man so much engaged in public affairs, and the perfect ease with which it is wielded is even more rare and admir- able. This facility was greatly assisted by the prodigious memory which remembered things not only in themselves but in their relations to other things, and hence would often quite unexpectedly bring one circumstance to bear upon the interpretation of another. Niebuhr’s sagacity is considerably overestimated when it is spoken of as “divination”; this dangerous term,

however, may be service- able in expressing his faculty for remote inference, and for detect- ing how much may be implied in a statement, an allusion, or an omission previously disregarded. It must be confessed that this faculty was sometimes perverted by a tendency to paradox, particularly observable in some of his minor speculations, such as his disquisitions on the dates of Quintus Curtius and Petronius. Imagination, nevertheless, was Niebuhr's most signal endowment, — not the historical imagination that reanimates actors departed from the world's theatre, but the critical imagination that makes past social conditions living and real. In the pourtrayal of men Niebuhr's touch is uncertain, but his treatment of institutions is an actual contact. Everything becomes alive to him, and to the reader's elation at finding himself thus apparently introduced to realities where he had looked only for abstractions must be ascribed much of the overwhelming influence and success of a work so deficient in the ordinary attractions of history.

Niebuhr's other works are interesting, but would not of them- selves have made a great reputation. The notes of his Bonn lectures on ancient history and geography disappointed expectation, but expectation had been pitched unreasonably high. They were not finished compositions, and could not be more than useful and suggestive commonplace books. A detailed examination of their obiter dicta by the light of recent discovery and more exact research would be highly interesting. His' lectures on the French Revolu-

tion, delivered in 1825, though well worth hearing, were not worth |

publishing, especially as the editor cannot vouch fortheir verbal or even their substantial fidelity. The Kicine Schriften include many valuable essays. His letters form one of the most interesting collections of correspondence extant, alike for the multiplicity of important subjects treated in them, and their revelation of the writer in all his strength and weakness. The luminous profundity of his remarks is frequently startling. Like Coleridge he seems to have an intuitive faculty for descending below the apparent surface of things, while he is no more successful than Coleridge in applying this gift to the appreciation of the practical problems of his own age. There is hardly another book from which it would be

~~possible to select more entirely perverse and erroneous views respecting human society in general, and more admirable observations on individual men and things. A selection of remarks and aphorisms, both from his correspondence and his historical writings, would be a compilation of great value.~~

~~Niebuhr's personal character was in most respects exceedingly attractive. His heart was kind and his affections were strong ; he was magnanimous and disinterested, simple and honest. He hada kindling sympathy with everything lofty and generous, and framed his own conduct upon the highest principles. His chief defect was an over-sensitiveness leading to peevish and unreasonable behaviour in his private and official relations, to hasty and unbalanced judg- ments of persons and things that had given him annoyance, and to a despondency and discouragement which have frustrated the great good he might have effected as a critic of public affairs from the point of view of a lofty morality. His imagination sometimes usurps the functions of his judgment, and his sagacity is traversed by a vein of paradox. In this, as in many other features of his intellectual character, he strikingly resembles Bentley, but his moral constitution is totally dissimilar.~~

~~The principal authority for Niebuhr's life is the Lebensnachrichten, prepared by Madame Hensler in 1838, and consisting mainly of correspondence linked by a brief biographical narrative. In the English translation by Miss Winkworth (1852) a great part of the correspondence is omitted, but the narrative is rendered more full, especially as concerns Niebuhr's participation in public affairs. 1t also contains interesting communications from Bunsen and Professor Loebell, and select translations from the Kleine Schriften. The reminiscences of Francis Licber (London, 1835) convey a pleasing view of Niebuhi's character, and prescrve passages of his conversation when ambassador at Rome. The first edition of his Roman History was translated into English by F. A. Walter (1827), but was immediately superseded by the translation of the second edition by Julius Hare and Connop Thirwall, completed by Dr William Smith and Dr Leonhard Schmitz (last edition, London, 1847-51). The History has been dis-~~

cussed and criticized in a great number of publications, the most important of |

which, perhaps, is Sir George Cornwall Lewis's Essay on the Credibility of the Early Roman History. The Lectures on Ancient History have been translated

by Dr Schmitz (London, 1852-53). (R. G.)

493

NIEBUHR, Karsten (1733-1815), Eastern traveller, was born at Liidingworth, Lauenburg, on the southern border of Holstein, March 17, 1733, the son of a small farmer. He had little elementary education, and for several years of his youth had to do the work of a peasant. His bent was towards mathematics, and he managed to obtain some lessons in surveying. It was while he was working at this subject that one of his teachers, in 1760, proposed to him to join the expedition which was being sent out by Frederick V. of Denmark for the scientific exploration of Egypt, Arabia, and Syria. To qualify himself for the work of surveyor and geographer, he studied hard at mathematics for a year and a half before the expedition set out, and also managed to acquire some knowledge of Arabic. The expedition sailed in January 1761, and, landing at Alexandria, ascended the Nile and devoted some time to an examination of the pyramids and of the hieroglyphic writings of Egypt. Proceeding to Suez, Niebuhr made a visit to Mount Sinai, and in October 1762 the expedition sailed from Suez to Jiddah, journeying thence overland to Mocha. Here in May 1768 the philologist of the expedition, Van Haven, died, and was followed shortly after by the naturalist Forskal. San'a, the capital of Yemen, was visited, but the remaining members of the expedition suffered so much from the climate or from the mode of life that they returned to Mocha. Niebulir seems to have saved his own life and restored his health by adopting the native habits as to dress and food. From Mocha the ship was taken to Bombay, the artist of the expedition dying on the passage, and the surgeon soon after landing. Niebuhr was now left alone, the only surviving member of the expedition. He stayed fourteen months at Bombay, and then returned home by Muscat, Bushire, Shiraz, and Persepolis, visited the ruins of Babylon, and thence went to Baghdad, Mosul, and Aleppo. After a visit to Cyprus he made a

tour through Palestine, crossing Mount Taurus to Brussa, reaching Constantinople in February 1767, and Copenhagen in the following November. On his return Niebuhr at once set himself to the task of preparing the records of the expedition. His first volume, Beschreibung von Arabien, was published at Copenhagen in 1772, the Danish Government defraying the expenses of the abundant illustrations. This was followed in 1774-78 by other two volumes, Leisebeschreibung von Arabien und anderen umliegenden Ldndern. The fourth volume was not pub- lished till long after his death, in 1837, under the editor- ship of Niebuhr's daughter. He also undertook the task of bringing out the work of his friend Forskal, the naturalist of the expedition, under the titles of Descriptiones Animalium, Flora Aigyptiaco-Arabica, and [cones Rerum Naturalium (Copenhagen, 1775-76). To a German periodical, the Deutsches Museum, Niebuhr contributed papers on the interior of Africa, the political and military condition of the Turkish empire, and other subjects. He married in 1773, and for some years held a post in the Danish military service which enabled him to reside at Copenhagen. In 1778, however, he accepted a position in the civil service of Holstein, and went to reside at Meldorf, where he died, April 26, 1815.

Niebuhr was in no sense a genius nor even a man of many accomplishments, but he was one of the best scientific travellers that ever lived. He was well equipped for the partieular service which he had to perform in connexion with the Eastern expedi- tion; above all, he was an accurate and careful observer, had the instincts of the scholar, was animated by a high moral purpose, and was rigorously conscientious and anxiously truthful in recording the results of his observation. His works have long been classical, and even now must be consulted by any one who desires to have the most trustworthy accounts, not only of the gcography, but of

the people, the antiquitics, and the archeology of much of the | district of Arabia which he traversed. His narratives are simple,

and he himself is kept almost entirely in the background. He was |

a genuine peasant in many respects to the end of his life, having many of the peasant's virtues as well as failings.

Freneli and Dutch translations of his narratives were published during his lifetime, and a condensed English translation, by Robert Heron, of the first three volumes in Edinburgh, 1792. His distinguished son Barthold published a short Life at Kielin 1817; an English version was issued in 1838 in the Lives of Eminent Men, published by the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge.

NIELLO (Italian form of Latin nigellum, diminutive

of mger, "black"; late Greek, peAavdv), a method of |

producing delicate and minute decoration on a polished

metal surface by incised lines filled in with a black |

metallic amalgam. In some cases it is very difficult to distinguish niello from black enamel 3 but the black sub- stance differs from true enamel in being metallic, not vitreous. Our knowledge of the process and materials employed in niello-work is derived mainly from four writers, —Eraclius the Roman (a writer probably of the 11th century), Theophilus the monk, who wrote in the 12th or 13th century,! and, in the 16th century, Ben. Cellini? and Giorgio Vasari.2 These, with the exception of Eraclius, whose account is slightly different, agree closely in their description of the process. The design was cut with a sharp graving tool on the smooth surface of the metal, which was usually silver, but occasionally- gold or even bronze. An alloy was formed of two parts silver, one-third copper, and one-sixth lead ; to this mixture, while fluid in the crucible, powdered sulphur in excess was added ; and the brittle amalgam, when cold, was finely pounded, and sealed up in large quills for future use. A solution of borax to act as a flux was brushed over the metal plate and thoroughly worked into its incised lines. powdered amalgam was then shaken out of the quills on to the plate, so as to completely cover all the engraved pattern, The plate was now carefully heated over a charcoal fire, fresh amalgam being added, as the powder fused, upon any defective places. When the powder had become thoroughly liquid, so as to fill all the lines, the plate was allowed to cool, and the whole

~~surface was scraped, so as to remove the superfluous niello, leaving only what had sunk into and filled up the engraved pattern. Last of all the nielloed plate was very highly polished, till it presented the appearance of a smooth metal surface enriched with a delicate design in fine grey-black lines, This process was chiefly used for silver work, on account of the vivid contrast between the whiteness of the silver and the darkness of the niello. As the slightest scratch upon the metal received the niello, and became a distinct black line, ornament of the most minute and refined description could easily be produced.~~

~~The earliest specimens of niello now existing belong to the Roman period. Two fine examples are in the British Museum. One is a bronze statuette of a Roman general, nearly 2 feet high, found at Barking Hall in Suffolk. The dress and armour have patterns partly inlaid in silver and partly in niello. The dark tint of the bronze rather prevents the niello from showing out distinctly. This statuette is apparently a work of the st century.¢ The other example is not earlier than the 4th century. Itisa silver casket or lady's toilet box, in which were found an ampulla and other small objects, enriched with niello- work.~~

~~From Roman times till the end of the 16th century the art of working in niello seems to have been constantly practised in some part at least of Europe, while in Russia and India it has survived down to the present day. From the 6th to the 12th century an enormous number of most massive and splendid works in the precious metals were~~

~~1 Div. Art. Sched. , iii. 27-29 (see Hendrie's edition, 1847).~~

~~2 Trattato dell' Orejiceria. ' 8 Vre Arti del Disegno, * See Soc. Ant. Vet. Mon., iv., pls. 11-15.~~

~~> See Visconti, Una Antica Argentaria, Rome, 1793.~~

~~The:~~

~~NIE—NIE~~

~~produced at Byzantium or under Byzantine influence, many of which were largely decorated with niello ; the silver dome of the baldacchino over the high altar of §. Sophia was probably one of the most important of these. Niello is frequently mentioned in the inventories of the treasures belonging to the great basilicas of Rome and Byzantium. The Pala d'Oro at S. Mark's, Venice, 10th century (see Mrrar-Work), owes much of its refined beauty to niello patterns in the borders. This art was also practised by Bernward, artist-bishop of Hildesheim (0b. 1023) ; a fine silver paten, decorated with figures in niello, attributed to his hand, still exists among the many rich treasures in the church of Hanover Palace, Other nielli, probably the work of the same bishop, are preserved in the cathedral of Hildesheim. In France too, judging both from existing specimens of ecclesiastical plate and many records preserved in church inventories, this mode of decoration must have been frequently applied all through the Middle Ages : especially fine examples once existed at Notre Dame, Paris, and at Cluny, where the columns of the sanctuary were covered with plates of silver in the 11th century, each plate being richly ornamented with designs in niello. Among the early Teutonic and Celtic races, especially from the 8th to the 11th centuries, both in Britain and other countries, niello was frequently used to decorate the very beautiful personal ornaments of which SQ many specimens enrich the museums of Europe. The British Museum possesses a fine fibula of silver decor- ated with a simple pattern in niello and thin plates of Tepoussé gold. This, though very similar in design to many fibule from Scandinavia and Britain, was found in a tomb at Kertch (Panticapeum).6 Several interesting gold rings of Saxon workmanship have been found at different times, on which the owner's name and ornamental patterns are formed in gold with a background of niello, One with the name of Ethelwulf, king of Wessex (836-838), is now in the British Museum (see figure). Another in the South Kensington #ay~~

~~Museum has the name of Alhstan, Be -eare pp who was bishop of Sherborne from~~

~~823 to 867. The metal-workers of Treland, whose skill was quite un- [eg > rivalled, practised largely the art of ee niello from the 10th to the 12th cen- Gold and Niello Ring. tury, and possibly even earlier. Fine croziers, shrines, fibule, and other objects of Irish workmanship, most skil- fully enriched~~

with elaborate niello-work, exist in consider- able numbers. From the 13th to the 16th century but little niello-work appears to have been produced in England. Two specimens have been found, one at Matlask, N orfolk, and the other at Devizes, which from the character of the design appear to be English. They are both of gold, and seem to be the covering plates of small pendent reliquaries, about an inch long, dating about the end of the 15th century, One has a crucifix between St John the Baptist and a bishop; the other, that found at Devizes, has the two latter figures, but no crucifix.? It is, however, in Italy that the art of niello-work was brought to greatest perfection. During the whole medieval period it was much used to decorate church plate, silver altar-frontals, and the like. The magnificent frontals of Pistoia cathedral and the Florence baptistery are notable instances of this,8 During the 15th century, especially at Florence, the art of niello-work was practised by almost all the great artist-

§ See Antiquities of Kertch, pl. v. 7 See Proc. Norfolk Archeo. Soc., iii. p. 97. 8 See METAL-Work ; and Gori, Thesaurus Veterum Diptychorum,

vol. iii, Florence, 1759.

;

goldsmiths of that period. ~Apart from the beauty of the works they produced, this art had a special importance and interest from its having led the way to the invention of printing from engravings on imetal plates. For the description of how this happened see ENGRAVING, vol. vill. p. 439. Vasari's account of this invention, given in his lives of Pollajuolo and Maso Finiguerra (Vite det Pittori e Scultort), is very interesting, but he is probably wrong in asserting that Maso was the first worker in niello who took proofs or impressions of his plates. The most important work of this sort by Maso Finiguerra, described at length by Vasari, still exists in the Opera del Duomo at Florence. It is a pax with a very rich and delicate niello picture of the coronation of the virgin ; the composi- tion is very full, and the work almost microscopic in minuteness ; it was made in 1452. Impressions from it are preserved in the British Museum, the Louvre, and other collections. Among the many great Italian artists who were also niellists occur the

~~names of Brunelleschi, Ant. Pollajuolo, Baccio Baldini, Francia, Pellegrino da Cesena, Cellini, Caradosso, and Foppa. Some fine speci- mens signed by Francia are preserved in the Bargello at Florence. The British Museum, the Louvre, the Berlin Museum, and the royal gallery of Vienna are especially rich both in nielli and in sulphur and paper impressions. The British Museum also possesses the finest existing example of 15th-century German niello. It is a silver beaker, covered with graceful scroll-work, forming medal- lions, in which are figures of cupids employed in various occupations ;! it is a very remarkable piece of silver-work, both for design and beauty of execution. The art of niello-work is still practised with considerable skill both in Russia and in various parts of India. The " bidri work," so called from Bedar in Hyderabad, is a variety of niello, in which the pattern shows as silver on a niello ground. The modern revival of the art in Paris has been hitherto very unsuccessful.~~

~~Literature. —The Archeological Journal (vol. xix. p. 323) has an excellent monograph on the subject, see also vol. xii. p. 79 and vol. iv. p. 247; Archxologia, vol. xxxi. p. 404; Merrifield, Ancient Practice of Painting, vol. i., 1849 (gives MSS. of Eraclius and other early writers); Catalogue of Museum of Royal Irish Academy; Les Nielles & la Cath. d' Aix-la-Chapelle, Paris, 1859; Alvin, Nielles de la Bibliotheque roy. de Belgique, 1857; Duchesne, Nielles des Orfévres Florentins, 1826; Passavant, Le Peiutre- graveur, 1860-64; Ottley, History of Engraving (1816) and Collection of Fae-similes of Prints (1826); Cicognara, Storia della Seultura (iii. p. 168, Prato, 1823) and Storta della Calcogvafia, (Prato, 1831); Lanzi, Storia Pittorica, ep. i. sec. iii., 1809; Baldi- nucci, Professort del Disegno (1681-1728) and L' Arte di Intagliare iw Rame (1686); Zani, Origine dell' Incisione in Kame, 1802; Labarte, Arts of the Middle Ages, 1855; Texier, Dictionnaire de VOrfévrerie, p. 1822, Paris, 1857; Bartsch, Le Peiutre-graveur, vol. xiii. pp. 1-35; Rumohr, Untersuchung der Griinde fiir die Anuahme, &c., Leipsic, 1841; and Lessing, Collectaneen zur Litter- atur (vol. xii. art. " Niellum"'). (J. My)~~

~~NIEMCEWICZ, Jurtan Ursin (1757-1841), was born in 1757 in Lithuania. In the earlier part of his life he acted as adjutant to Kosciusko, was taken prisoner with him at the fatal battle of Maciejowice (1794), and shared his~~

~~captivity at St Petersburg. On his release he travelled for some time in America, where he married. He died as an emigrant at Paris in 1841.~~

~~Niemcewicz tried many styles of composition. He wrote comedies (one of which, The Return of the Deputy, enjoyed a great reputation), tragedies, and a novel, John of Tenczyn, in the style of Scott, which gives a vigorous picture of old Polish days. He was also the author of a Iistory of the Reign of Sigismund III. Perhaps, how- ever, he is now best remembered by his Historical Songs, a series of lyrical compositions in which the chief heroes of~~

~~1 It is well illustrated in Shaw's Dresses and Decorations of the Middle Ages, vol. ii., 1858.~~

~~Polish history are introduced. The poet dwells with delight upon the golden age of Sigismund I., and the reigns of Stephen Bathori and Sobieski. With the last of these, as with the fall of Polish grandeur, the collection closes, one piece only being added by way of supplement, entitled "The Funeral of Prince Joseph Poniatowski," the marshal of Napoleon, drowned in the Elster in 1813 after the battle of Leipsic. Niemcewicz also translated a great deal from the English, among other poems Pope's Rape of the Lock and Gray's Hlegy. His reputation has somewhat waned since his death. He has been eclipsed in modern times by the genius of Mickiewicz, to say nothing of Slowacki and Krasinski, all poets of much greater calibre. Perhaps some of the enthusiasm which his writings once kindled may have been due to his being a patriot and a man of action during the death-struggles of his unfortunate country.~~

~~NIEPCE, JosepH NictpHore (1765-1833), one of the inventors of photography, was born at Chalon-sur-Saéne on March 7, 1765. His father, a "conseiller du roi," was in good circumstances, and young Niepce, who was of a meditative and poetical temperament, showed no eagerness to choose a profession. In 1792, however, he entered the army as a sub-lieutenant, and in the following year he saw active service in Italy. Tl-health and failing eyesight compelled him to resign his commission before he had risen above the rank of lieutenant; but in 1795 he was nominated "administrateur" of the district of Nice, and he held the post until 1801. Returning in that year to his birthplace, he gave himself along with his brother to mechanical and~~

chemical researches; and in 1811 he directed his attention to the rising art of lithography. In 1813 the idea of obtaining sun pictures first suggested itself to him in this connexion ; the history of the subsc- quent development of the conception will be found under DacueRReE (vol. vi. p. 761) and PHorocrapuy. Niepce died at Gras, his property near Chalon, on July 3, 1833. A nephew, Claude Félix Abel Niepce de Saint-Victor (1805-1870), served with destinction in the army, and also made important contributions towards the advance- ment of the art of photography (actinescence) ; he pub- lished Recherches photographiques (Paris, 1855) and T'raité pratique de gravure héliographique (Paris, 1866).

NIEVRE, a central department of France, formed out of the old province of Nivernais with a small portion of the Orléanais, lies between 46° 40' and 47° 35' N. lat. and between 2° 50' and 4° 12' E. long., and is bounded N.W. by Loiret, N. by Yonne, N.E. by Céte d'Or, E. and 8.E. by Sadne-et-Loire, 8.W. and W. by Allier, and W. by Cher. It belongs partly to the basin of the Loire, partly to that of the Seine. Towards the west its limits are marked by the Allier-Loire valley,—the Loire striking across the south- west corner of the department by Decize and Nevers and then continuing the line of its great affluent the Allier northwards by Fourchambault, La Charité, Pouilly, and Cosne. Secondary feeders of the Loire are the Niévre, which gives its name to the department, and the Aron, whose valley is traversed by the Nivernais Canal. The largest Seinc tributary in Niévre is the Yonne, which rises in the south- east, passes by Clamecy, and carries along with it the northern part of the Nivernais Canal. The Cure, the principal affluent of the Yonne (with which, however, it does not unite till after it has left the department), is the outlet of a lake, Lac des Settons, which serves as a reservoir for the practical regulation of the river. The watershed between the two river systems runs, like the general slope of the department, from south-east to north-west,—the highest summits belonging to the Morvan, an uplift of granite, porphyry, and gneiss, which extends into Saéne-et-Loirc, Cote d'Or, and Yonne. Here stands

Mount Préneley (2790 feet), the highest point in Niévre ; and 7 or 8 miles north-north-west, at an altitude of nearly 2000 feet, is Chateau-Chinon, the

highest town in the department. The lowest level in the department is 443 feet, at the exit of the Loire. Niévre is divided by the line of the canal into two distinct geological districts : to the east the old crystalline rocks of the Morvan, to the west the Jurassic limestones. Both are partly covered by extensive stretches of woodland. Morvan (‘Black Forest ”) is one of the most picturesque portions of France ; and the western district, known as the “Bon Pays,” is one of its finest pastoral areas, terminating towards the Loire in hills generally clad with vines. Owing to its greater eleva-

tion and the retention of the rain-water on its hard surface.

in the shape of ponds and streams, Morvan shows a mean temperature 6° Fabr. lower than that of the western district, which, in the valley of the Loire, is almost identical with that of Paris (52° Fahr.). At Nevers the annual rainfall amounts to only 18 inches; but in Morvan it is about

three times as great.

The area of the department is 2631 square miles, one-half being arable land, a third woods, and a tenth pasture, while 42 square miles are oceupied by vines. The live stock numbers 20,000 horses (mainly of Morvan breed, small but hardy and strong), 500 mules, 7000 asses, 146,100 eattle (generally of Nivernais-Charolais breeds), 210,000 sheep, 70,000 swine, 5700 goats; and there are 18,600 bee- hives. In 1880 the department produced 2,984,000 bushels of wheat, and about the same quantity of oats; barley, 1,122,000 bushels ; rye, 521,000; buckwheat, 211,000 ; potatoes, 4,620,000 ; besides beetroot (86,108 tons), pulse, maize, hemp, colza, fruits. The vintage of 1881 yielded 5,304,816 gallons of wine,—the best being the white wines of Pouilly, a locality which besides sends a great quantity of its grapes to Paris for table use. The Nidvre forests, consisting of oak, becch, hornbeam, and elm, supply about three-fifths of the firewood required for the Parisian market, The coal-field of Decize, with its seven seams making a total thickness of 40 feet, yielded 200,000 tons in 1882. Fine build- ing stone, a little white marble, saudstone, millstones, granite, and kaolinic sands are all worked in the department. The best- known mineral springs are those of Pougues and St Honoré,— the former chalybeate and the latter sulphurous, as at Eaux Bonnes in the Pyrenees. Of the iron-works for which Niavre is famous, the most important are those of FouRCHAMBAULT

(9.v.); employing more than 2000 workmen, and manufacturing into bridges, building frames, rails, wheels, &c., the product of 40,000 tons of ore. At Imphy the staple is rails and Bessemer steel. The Government works of La Chaussade at Guérigny employ 1300 workmen, and make armour-plates and the materials required in iron shipbuilding ; wood charcoal is used, which explains the selection for this industry of a department so well supplied with timber. There are besides in the department minor foundries and forges, manufactories of agricultural implements and hardware, potteries, tile-works, chemical works, paper-mills, and wool-mills, as well as numerous tanneries, breweries, and oil works (colza, poppy, and hemp). In the Morvan district a large part of the population is engaged in the timber industry; the logs carried down by the streams to Clamecy are then collected into rafts or put into boats. Besides firewood and charcoal Nidvre exports cattle; but it has to import cereals. A great deal of the traiffic is by water; the canal along the left bank of the Loire runs through the department for 38 miles, and the Nivernais Canal (from Decize to Clamecy and so to the Yonne) for 47 miles. The total length of the railways is 145 miles. The population of the department was 347,576 in 1881. Niévre is divided into 4 arrondissements, 25 cantons, 313 com- munes. It forms the diocese of Nevers, and part of the districts dependent on the corps d'armée and the court of appeal of Bourges, The chief towns of the arrondissements are Nevers, Chateau Chinon (2613 inhabitants), Clamecy (5536), and Cosne (7401). Other places of note are La Charité (4826), with an old church of the order of Cluny; Decize (4927), with an old church and interesting ruins; and St Pierre le Moutier (3080), having an old Cluniac monastery.

NIEZHIN, Niesty, or NyYxzuin, a district town of Russia, situated in the government of Tchernigoff, 50 miles south-east of that town, on the railway between Kursk and Kieff. The old town is built on the left bank of the (canal- ized) river Oster, and its suburbs, Novoye Myesto and Magherki, on the right. It has an old cathedral, two Greek churches, one Catholic church, a synagogue, and two monas- teries. The high school (lyceum of Bezborodko) formerly

had 200 students, but now only from 30 to 40, since its

~~transformation into a philological institute. The 23,000 inhabitants are mostly Little Russians and Jews (about 3000) ; there are also some 400 Greeks, descendants of those who immigrated in the 17th century, at the invita- tion of Bogdan Khmelnitski, and have since then consti- tuted a privileged trading corporation. About 7000 of the population of Niezhin are engaged in agriculture, in market gardening, and especially in the cultivation and preparation of tobacco. Cast-iron wares and agricultural implements are manufactured, but not extensively ; candle- making and tanning are also carried on. In the district there are several distilleries, producing about 160,000 gallons of wine-spirit. The commerce of Niezhin, which formerly was very prosperous, has fallen off since the opening of the Black Sea ports. Its merchants, however, especially the Greeks, still carry on an active trade in tobacco, which is exported from Niezhin to the amount of nearly 200,000 ewts., in all kinds of manufactured wares, in cattle, in wine-spirit, and also in preserved fruits and vegetables, which are a kind of specialty with the citizens.~~

~~The date of the foundation of Niezhin is unknown, but Unyezh, which is supposed to have been its former name, is mentioned as early as 1147. At that time it belonged to the principality of Tchernigoff; afterwards it fell under the rule of Poland. lt was ceded to Russia about 1500, but became again a Polish pos- session after the treaty of Deulin. In 1649, after the revolt of Little Russia and its liberation from the Polish rule, Niezhiw was the chief town of one of the most important Cossack regiments. lt was annexed to Russia in 1664. In the 18th century it was a flourishing commercial city, owing to its situation on the highways from Kietf to Moscow and from Tchernigoff to Poltava, and to the Greek merchants who kept up commercial relations with Turkey, Italy, and Austria.~~

~~NIGER, one of the most famous of African rivers, has its headwaters on the north side of the mountains (known as Kong Mountains and by various other local names) which run parallel with the coast of Upper Guinea and Sierra Leone ata distance of about 200 miles, flows north- eastward as far as 17° 30’ N. lat. and the meridian of Greenwich, and then turning south-eastward reaches the Gulf of Guinea after a total course of about 2600 miles. The main stream bears in different districts a great variety of names —Joliba (Dholiba or Dialiba), Kworra (Quorra), Mayo, Kaki ’n ruwa, &c.;~~

~~and the same is true of the great eastern confluent the Benue; Shary or Tchadda,! (For other synonyms see Baikie, Warr. of an Expl. Voyage, p. 426.) It will be convenient to retain the established European name for the whole river system, and to call the main stream the Kworra and the confluent the Benue.~~

~~Of the many headwaters which go to form the upper Kworra, the Tamincono, Falico, and Tembi are the most important ; and, as the largest of these, the Tembi, rises in the Loma Mountains in 8° 36' N. lat. and 10° 33' W. long,, this may be considered the true position of the long-sought source of the Niger. The Falico rises in 8° 45' N. lat. and 10° 25' W. long.; the Tamincono, of much less significance, about 60 miles farther north. A narrow watershed separates these headstreams from the head- Streams of the Rokelle, which flows west through Sierra Leone. At Farannah (now destroyed), in 10° N. lat., the river is about 100 yards wide, and taking its Mandingo name of Joliba (or Great River) bends eastwards. From the source of the Tembi to Kuruassa, where Caillié crossed in June 1825, and found it 9 feet deep, the course of the river (nearly 300 miles) has not been followed by any European ; but the general character of the next 60 or 70 miles, down to Bora, is known because Caillié's route skirted the eastern bank. Below that point there is another unexplored stretch. At Bammako, after the junc- tion of the Milo, the Bafing or Bafi (Black River), the Fan-~~

~~1 These last two names really belong to another river which dis- charges into Lake Chad, Tehad, or Tsad,~~

~~"~~

~~NIG RK~~

~~dube, &c., the depth is 6 feet, witha breadth of 1300 feet. About 7 or 8 miles farther down the Sotuba rocks mark the end of what may be regarded as the upper Kworra. Even in this section the stream is probably navigable in small boats all the way from the union of the headstreams to Sotuba. From Bammako begins a more rapid deflexion towards the east, and it is not till the Mahel Balevel, a very important tributary, joins in that a more directly northward direction is resumed. For several hundred miles below this confluence the Kworra shows a great tendency to split into different channels, often enclosing extensive tracts of country in their meshes, and turning whole provinces into a perfect labyrinth of creeks, back- waters, and lagoons. Kabara, the port of Timbuktu, is situated on one of the secondary branches ; but the main channel, at no great distance, is about a mile across. At times the river rises so that boats can approach the walls of the city proper; and in 1640 an exceptional inundation turned the central and lowest quarter into a lake. The swamps and side-creeks continue to the east of Timbuktu, and, though at Bamba (130 miles) the river is shut in by steep banks and narrows to 600 or 700 yards, it again spreads out for some distance farther down. At Tahont 'n eggish (Entrance Rock), however, a great change is observed, the banks beginning to be rocky and the channel definite; and at Tosaye the width is reduced to not more than 150 yards, and the depth is enor- mously increased. At Burrum the valley again widens out to about 3 miles, and tracts of level ground, swamps, or sandy downs skirt the river on both sides.~~

~~In 7° 50'N. lat. and 6° 45' E. long., the Kworra is joined.~~

~~by the Benue or Binue ("" Mother of Waters" in the Batta tongue). This magnificent confluent rises in Adamaua a little to the north of Ngaundere (Ngamdere of the Houssas), about 7° 10' N. lat. and 13° 20' E. long., at a height of between 3000 and 5000 feet above the sea, and in the early part of its course it is separated by a narrow water- parting from the headstreams of the Logone or Serbewel, which probably flows eastward to Lake Chad. For the first 100 miles of its course it remains a rocky mountain~~

stream, but after the junction (at about 800 feet above the sea) of the Mayo Kebbi (itself probably navigable to Dawa in the Tuburi country, and there possibly forming a bifurcation between the basins of the Niger and Lake Tchad) it takes a western direction and becomes navigable for boats drawing 4 feet of water. For some 40 miles below Ribago (Rebom)—the farthest point reached by exploration upward—the Benue has an average width of 180 to 200 yards, and flows with a strong steady current, although a broad strip of country on each side is swampy or submerged. Below the junction of the Faro the width increases to 1000 or 1500 yards, and, though it narrows at the somewhat dangerous rapids of Rumde Gilla to 150 or 180, it soon expands again. It flows onwards with com- paratively unobstructed current through a beautiful country, its valley marked out for the most part by ranges of hills, and its banks diversified with forests, villages, and cultivated tracts. (See Crowther in Proc. oy. Geog. Soc., 1877; Hutchinson, Jbid., 1880; Flegel in Petermann's Mitth., 1880.)

At their confluence the Kworra is about ? mile broad and the Benue rather more than a mile. The united stream is like a lake about 2 miles in width, dotted with islands and sandbanks; and the peninsula at the junction is low, swampy, and intersected by numerous channels. From this point the course of the Niger is well known. As far south as Iddah or Idah, a town on the east bank, it rushes through a deep valley cut between the hills, the sandstone cliffs at some places rising 150 feet high. Between Iddah and Onitsha (destroyed by British gunboats in 1879), 80 miles, the banks are lower and the country flatter, and to the south of Onitsha the whole land is laid under water during the annual floods. From this point, consequently, may be said to begin the great delta of the Niger, which, extending along the coast for about 120 miles, and 140 or 150 miles inland, forms one of the most remarkable of all the swampy regions of Africa. 'The river soon breaks up into an intricate network of channels, dividing and subdividing, and intercrossing not only with each other but with the branches of other streams that drain the neighbouring coast, so that it is practically impossible to say where the Niger delta ends and another river system begins. West- wards the anastomosis probably extends to the lagoons at Lagos, and eastwards to the Old Calabar or Cross River. Hitherto the channel almost regularly followed is the Rio Nun, a direct continuation of the line of the undivided river. From the sea the only indication of a river mouth is a break

in the dark green mangroves which here universally fringe the coast. The crossing of the bar requires considerable care, and at ebb tide the outward current runs 53 knots perhour. For the first 20 miles (or as far as Sunday Island, the limit of the sea tide in the dry season), dense lines of mangroves 40, 50, or 60 feet in height shut in the channel, so that nothing is visible save a narrow strip of sky overhead ; then palm and other trees begin to appear, and the widening river has regular banks ; and before long little villages and plantations of plantains and sugar-cane show that even in this region of miasma and mud human beings find means to exist.

As the Kworra and the Benue have quite different gathering grounds they are not in flood at the same time. The upper Kworra rises in June as the result of the tropieal rains, and deereases in December, its breadth at Turella expanding from between 2000 and 2500 feet to not less than 14 miles. The middle Kworra, how- ever, reaches its maximum near Timbuktu only in Jannary; in February and March it sinks slowly above the narrows of Tinsherifen (Tosaye), and more rapidly below them, the level being kept up by supplies from backwaters and lakes; and by April there is a deerease of about 5 feet. In August the channel near Timbuktu is again

navigable owing to rain in the Wangara highlands. The Benue reaches its greatest height in August or September, begins to fall

XVIL — 63

498

in October, falls rapidly in November, and slowly in the next three months, and reaches its lowest in March and April, when it is ford- able in many places, has no perceptible flow, and at the conflucnce begins to be covered with the water-weed Pistia Stratiotes. The flood rises with great rapidity, and reaches 50, 60, or even 75 feet above the low-water mark. The two confluents being so unlike, the united Niger differs from each under the influence of the other. Here the river is at its lowest in April and May; in June it is sub- ject to great fluctuations; about the middle of August it usually ae to rise; and its maximum is reached in September. In October it sinks, often rapidly. A slight rise in January, known as the yangbe, is

~~occasioned by water from the Kworra. — Between high and low water-mark the difference is as much as 35 feet.~~

~~As a highway of commerce the Niger has been little used, trad- ing steamers having mainly confined their operations to the river below the confluence. But since 1857 the area of supply has been considerably extended, the quantity of goods (chiefly oil and shea butter) collected has greatly increased, and steamers five or six times the size of the vessels formerly used have been introduced. The delta region has become more populous, and trading posts more frequent. The Church Missionary Society, which, except the British Government, has done more than any other agency for opening up the lower Niger, has stations at four places on the coast, at Osamare (120 miles inland), Onitsha (20 miles farther), Lokoja (90 miles), Kipo Hill, Egan (90 miles), Shonga (94 miles farther, and only 12 or 15 short of Rabba). Lokoja is near the site of the experimental] farm maintained by the Government for some years from 1841.~~

~~Pliny mentions a river Nigris of the same nature with the Nile separating Africa and Ethiopia, and forming the boundary of Geetulia; and it is not improbable that this is, in fact, the same with the modern Niger. In Ptolemy, too, appears along with Gir a certain Nigir (Nfyerp) as one of the largest rivers of the interior ; but so vague is his description that, while D'Anville and Leake strongly maintain that this, also, is the Niger, Walckenaer and Vivien St Martin insist on the negative view, and Mr Bunbury is almost inclined to follow them. When the Arabian geographers became acquainted with the river near Timbuktu they called it the Nile of the Negroes, and down to the present century European authorities (such as Jackson in his Empire of Morocco, 1800) fought zealously for the identity of this Nile with the river of Egypt.~~

~~The following dates show the progressive exploration of the river. 1788. Formation of the African Association in England. 1795. Mungo Park (African Association) saw the Niger near Sego " glittering in the morning sun as broad as the Thames at West- minster, and flowing slowly to the eastward." In this first expedition he went down the river as far as Sella and up as far as Bammako; in his second he sailed down to Bussa, where he was drowned. Park adopted the opinion that the Niger and the Congo were~~

one. Major Peddie's expedition to the Niger, and Tuckey's expedition to the Congo, threw no light on the relation of the rivers. 1802. Reichard, a German, suggested that the Rio Formoso was the mouth of the Niger. 1822. Laing learned that the sources of the Niger lay not far from Sulima. 1826. Caillié sailed down the river from Jenne to the port of Timbuktu. Clapperton and Richard Lander visited Bussa. 1830. Richard and John Lander passed down from Yauri to the mouth of the Rio Nun, thus sctttling the doubt as to the outlet of the river. 1832. Macgregor Laird established the African Steamship Company, and Richard Lander and Oldfield (as members of its first expedition) ascended the Niger to Rabba and the Benue (or, as it was then called, the Shary or Tchadda) as far as 'Dagbo (80 miles). 1840, Consul Beecroft ascended beyond Rabba in the " Ethiope." 1841. An expedition, consisting of three steamers of the royal navy, under Captain (afterwards Admiral) H. D. Trotter, went up to Egga (Egam), but was forced to return owing to sickness and mortality. 1851. Barth crossed the Benue at the junction of the Faro, and conjectured it to be the upper part of the Tchadda. 1854. Barth sailed down from Saraiyamo to Kabara (port of Timbuktu), and then skirted the left bank to Bornu and the right thence to Say. The 'Pleiad" expedition (Baikie, Crowther, D. J. May) advanced up the Benue 400 miles to Dulti or Jin. 1857-59. Expe- dition (Baikie, Glover, &c.) up to Bussa; steamer ** Dayspring " wrecked on a rock above Rabba. Mission stations founded at Onitsha, Gbebc, and Rabba. 1864. Crowther made bishop of the Niger. 1877. Rev. Henry Johnson journeyed up the river to Bida. 1879. " Henry Venn," steamer (Ashkroft, Kirk, Flegel), passed up the Benue to Gurua (145 miles beyond Jin), and her boats 8 miles farther to Rebom or Ribago. Zweifel and Moustier, sent out by M. Verminck, a Marseilles merchant, discovered the sources of the Falico, &. 1880-81. Flegel went up from Rabba to Gompa.

Besides the reports of expeditions published by Laird and Oldfield, Allen, Baikie, Crowther, &c., see Barth's Travels, vols. iv. and v., and his paper in Z. fir allg. Erdkunde, Berlin, 1863; Cole, Life on the Niger; Crowther, The Gospel on the Niger; The Church Missionary Intelligencer; Mittheilungen der Afrikan. Ges. in Deutschland, 1882 and 1883; and llutchinson's paper in Jour. of Soc. of Arts, 1880. dl. A. W.)

NIG—NIG

~~NIGER, C. PEscenntus, governor of Syria under the emperor Commodus, and one of the rivals of Septimius Severus for the succession after the murder of Pertinax, belonged to an Aquinum family of equestrian rank, and owed his promotion to the Syrian command not only to the interest of Narcissus, the favourite of Commodus, but also to his known merits as a soldier. He was saluted emperor by the troops at Antioch as soon as the death of Pertinax became known, in the spring of 193 4.pD., but he unaccountably delayed marching on Rome until he learned that Severus had assumed the offensive. He now strongly garrisoned Byzantium as well as the principal towns of Asia Minor, but after his legate A'milianus had been defeated and slain near Cyzicus he himself was driven from Nica and decisively routed, with great slaughter, in the neighbourhood of the Cilician Gates. Having failed in an effort to escape towards the Euphrates, he was brought back and put to death in 194.~~

~~NIGHTINGALE (Anglo-Saxon, Wthtegale, literally "singer of the night"), the bird justly celebrated beyond all others by European writers for the admirable vocal powers which, during some weeks after its return from its winter-quarters in the south, it exercises at all hours of the day and night. The song itself is indescribable, though several attempts, from the time of Aristophanes to the present, have been made to express in syllables the sound of its many notes; and its effects on those that hear it depend so much on their personal disposition as to be as varied as are itstones. 'To some they suggest melancholy ; and many poets have descanted on the bird (which they nearly always make of the feminine gender) leaning its breast against a thorn and pouring forth its melody in anguish. It is accordingly to be observed that the cock alone sings, and that there is no reason to suppose that the cause and intent of his song, unsurpassed though it be, differ in any respect from those of other birds' songs (see Brrbs, vol. iil. p. 770). Sadness, therefore, is certainly the last impelling sentiment that can be properly assigned in this case. In great contrast to the Nightingale's pre-eminent voice is the inconspicuous coloration of its plumage, which is alike in both sexes, and is of a reddish- brown above and dull greyish-white beneath, the breast being rather darker, and the rufous tail shewing the only bright tint. The range of this bird in Europe has already been so fully described (Birps, vol. iii. p. 756, 757) as to render a further account of it needless. The Nightingale reaches its English home about the middle of~~

~~April,! the males (as is usual among migratory birds) arriving some days before the females ; and, often stopping on their way, letting their song be heard in places they do not habitually frequent, pass to their proper breeding-quarters. At this time they run very great danger from birdcatchers, for their capture is effected with facility, and it is painful to add that of those then caught nine-tenths are said to die within a month. Fortunately for the species, it receives great protection from the practice of game-preserving, which guards from intrusion so many of the localities it affects, and there is probably no country in which the Nightingale breeds more abundantly and in greater security than in England. On the cocks being joined by their partners, the work for which the long and hazardous journey of both has been undertaken is speedily begun, and before long the nest is completed. This is of a rather uncommon kind, being placed on or near the ground, the outworks~~

- ~~Poets and novelists are apt to command at will the song of this bird, irrespective of season. If the appearance of truth is to be regarded, it is dangerous to introduce a Nightingale as singing in England before the 15th of April or after the 15th of June. The a Nightingale " of newspaper paragraphs is generally a Song-~~

~~rush.~~

~~NIG—NITI~~

~~499~~

~~consisting chiefly of a great number of dead leaves | The flowers are succeeded by ovate scarlet berries, which~~

~~ingeniously applied together so that-the plane of each is mostly vertical. In the midst of the mass is wrought a deep cup-like hollow, neatly lined with fibrous roots, but the whole is so loosely constructed, and depends for lateral support so much on the stems of the plants, among which~~

~~it is generally built, that a very slight touch disturbs its |~~

~~beautiful arrangement. Herein from four to six eggs of a deep olive colour are duly laid, and the young hatched. If the latter be taken when nearly fit to fly from the nest, they can with proper care be reared by hand, and this is the only justifiable mode of proceeding for those who wish to keep this fine songster in confinement, as, if the birds survive their first moult, they may live for some years in a cage, and the cocks will in due time exercise their full vocal powers. The nestling plumage of the Nightingale differs much from that of the adult, the feathers above being tipped with a buff spot, just as in the young of the Redbreast, Hedge-Sparrow, and Redstart, thereby shewing the natural affinity of all these forms. Towards the end of summer the Nightingale disappears, and but little has been observed of it in its winter-retreats, which are presumably in the interior of Africa. One of the few records of it at that season proves that it visits the Gold Coast (Jbis, 1872, p. 291).~~

~~The Nightingale is the Motacilla luscinia in part of Linneus, and the Daulias luscinia of some modern ornithologists. In the east of Europe a second species occurs which was not discriminated by Linneus, though long known to German bird-fanciers as the Sprosser. This, the Sylvia philomela or Daulias philomela of many scientific writers, isa somewhat larger bird, which fact, and the presence of some faint spots on its breast, have caused it to receive the English name of Thrush-Nightin- gale. Its westward range appears to be limited to the valley of the Rhine, and the statement that it has occurred in England is erroneous. Its song is louder than that of the true Nightingale, but not so sweet in tone or so varied in note. The name Nightingale has been vaguely applied to several other birds. The so-called " Virginian Nightin- gale" is a species of GrosBEAk (vol. xi. p. 205), and the REDWING (q.v.), strangely enough, has been often spoken of as the "Swedish Nightingale."~~

~~The Nightingale holds a place in classical mythology. Procne and Philomela were the daughters of Pandion, king of Attica, who in return for warlike aid rendered him by Tereus, king of Daulis in Thrace, gave him the first-named in marriage. Tereus, however, being enamoured of her sister, feigned that his wife was dead, and induced Philomela to take her place. On her discovering the truth, he cut out her tongue to hinder her from revealing his deceit; but she depicted her sad story on a robe which she sent to Procne;~~

~~and the two sisters then contrived a horrible revenge for the infidelity of Tereus, by killing and serving to him at table his son Itys. Thereupon the gods interposed, changing Tereus into a Hoopoe, Procne into a Swallow, and Philomela into a Nightingale, while Itys was restored to life as a Pheasant, and Pandion (who had died of grief at his daughters' dishonour) as a bird-of-prey (see OSPREY). The fable has several variants. Ovid's version may bce seen in the 6th Book of his Metamorphoses (lines 412-676). (A. N.)~~

~~NIGHTSHADK, a general term for the genus of plants known to botanists as Solanum. The species to which the name of Nightshade is commonly given in England is the Solanum Dulcamara, IL., which is also called the Bittersweet or Woody Nightshade. It is a common plant in damp hedgebanks and thickets, scrambling over under- wood and hedges. It has slender slightly woody stems, with alternate lanceolate leaves more or less cordate and auriculate at the base. The flowers are arranged in droop- ing cymes, and resemble those of the potato in shape, although much smaller. The corolla is rotate, of a lilac- blue colour with a green spot at the base of each segment, and is furnished with yellow sessile anthers united at their margins so as to form a cone in the centre of the corolla.~~

~~in large doses appear to be poisonous or, to say the least, dangerous to children, cases of poisoning by them having occurred. The plant derives its names of bittersweet and Dulcamara from the fact that its taste is at first pleasantly sweet and then bitter. The young stems collected in autumn have been used in medicine as an alterative in rheumatism and certain skin diseases, but are little used at the present time except by homceopaths, by whom Dulcamara is given as an anticatarrhal remedy in all symptoms produced by cold arising from exposure to damp. It owes its medicinal activity to a bitter principle yield- ing by decomposition sugar and the alkaloid " solania," C,,;Hg9NO,,. This principle has been found in small quan- tity in the leaves, stalks, and berries. Dzulcamara also con- tains another glucoside "dulcamarin," C,.H,,0,9, which when boiled with dilute acid splits up into sugar and "dul- camaretin," C,)H,,O,. Solania appears to exert a depres- sant action on the vagus nerve and an excitant action on the medulla oblongata. The term Deadly Nightshade is often erroneously applied to this plant, and the popular usage has even been confirmed by so~~

eminent a botanist as Bentham (Handbook of the British Flora, p. 384, 1858). It is generally accepted, however, that the deadly night- shade is Atropa Belladonna, L. (see vol. iii. p. 543).

Solanum Dulcamara is subject to the same parasitic fungus (Peronospora infestans) as the potato, and may serve as a medium for communicating the spores to the potato if not removed from the hedges of the fields where potatoes are grown.

The Garden Nightshade, Solanum nigrum, L., differs from 8S. Dulcamara in having white flowers in small umbels and globose black berries. It is a common weed in gardens and waste places, growing about 12 or 18 inches high, and has ovate, entire or sinuate-dentate leaves. Two varieties of the plant, one with red and the other with yellow berries, are sometimes met with, but are compara- tively rare. The berries have been known to produce poisonous effects when eaten by children, and owe their properties to the presence of solania. They are, however, said to be eaten without inconvenience in British Kaffraria, and in Réunion and Mauritius the leaves are eaten like spinach ; their innocuousness in these cases may, however, be due to the poisonous principle being removed or decom- posed by the process of cooking.

The name of nightshade is applied to plants of different genera in other countries. American Nightshade is a species of Phytolacca; the Three-leaved Nightshade is a Trillium ; the Malabar Nightshade is a Basella; the Bastard Nightshade is a Riwina; and the Enchanter's Nightshade is Circea lutetiana. The last-named is not known to possess any poisonous property, and the name seems to have been given to it in the first place in mistake for a species of Mandragora (see MANDRAKE).

NIGRITIA. See Soupan.

NIIGATA, a city of Japan, with a population of about 34,000, the chief town of the province of Echigo, and one of the ports open to foreign trade since 1869, lies in 37° 57' N. lat. and 139° E. long., on the west coast of the island of Nippon, on a narrow strip of sandy ground between the left bank of the Shinano and the sea, which though quite at hand is shut out from view by a low range of sandhills. It occupies an area of rather more than

one square mile, and consists of five long parallel streets intersected by cross-streets, which in most cases have canals running down the middle and communi- cating with the river, so that the internal traffic of the city is mainly carried on by water. The houses are usually built with gables to the street, and roofs and verandas project so as to keep the windows and footpaths from

being blocked up by the heavy winter snows. In August 1880 nearly half of the town was destroyed by fire; but in the following year most of the public buildings were restored. The college, founded in 1870, was handed over to the authorities in 1878 (with an English department, an engineering school, a geological museum, and various laboratories) ; and the large hospital was rebuilt on a more spacious scale and in European style in 1878. There are large public gardens in the city; many of the canals are bordered with trees; and an air of tidiness and comfort prevails throughout the un-Europeanized quarters. Niigata has a greater junk traffic than any other town on the west coast of Japan, but it has been found quite unsuited in its present state for foreign commerce. The mouth of the river is obstructed by a bar with only 12 feet of water at high tide, and in autumn and winter the squalls are so violent that only very powerful steamers can safely anchor in the bay. Ebisuminato, on the island of Sado, has been opened as a supplementary harbour of refuge but not as a trading port. The shore of the Shinano has already been improved up to the town ; and when the Government has constructed the new harbour and breakwater planned in 1880 Niigata will doubtless become a very flourishing commercial centre, as it is the natural outlet of a large and populous province, producing rice, tea, coal, petroleum, copper, silver, and gold. Almost all the foreign trade of the place has passed into the hands of the Japanese since the Mitsubishi Company began to call at the port. In 1879 thirty-six of their vessels entered, with a total burden of 29,361 tons. In 1878 there were only twenty foreigners in the city, and these mostly in Government employment or agents of mission societies. The Edinburgh Medical Mission has maintained a valuable hospital and dispensary since 1875. During winter Niigata suffers from a terribly severe climate, and the people go “about in wadded clothes with only their eyes exposed.”

~~See Bird, Unbeaten Tracks in Japan, for many picturesque details.~~

~~NIJAR, a town of Spain, in the province of Almeria, 14 miles to the east-north-east of that town, occupies an exposed site on the southern slope of the Sierra Alhamilla. It has dye-works, and manufactures woollen stuffs and pottery; trade is carried on in the products of these industries, as well as in corn, cattle, barilla, and fine potter's clay procured in the neighbourhood. The popula- tion of the ayuntamiento in 1877 was 13,661.~~

~~NIJNE-TAGHILSK, currently known as Tacum, a town and iron-work of Russia, situated in the govern- ment of Perm and district of Verkhoturie, 100 miles to the south-east of the district town. It occupies an advantageous position in a longitudinal valley on the eastern slope of the Ural Mountains, within a few miles of the place where the Taghil, cutting through the eastern wall of the valley, escapes to the lowlands to join the Tura, a tributary of the Tobol. The southern part of this valley is occupied by the upper Taghil, and its continuation towards the north by the upper Tura, from which it is separated by a low watershed ; it is dotted with numer- ous iron-works, and is now connected by railway (the first in Siberia) with Perm and Ekaterinburg (88 miles distant). The town was founded in 1725 by the well-known Russian miner Demidoff, and is still the property of his family. The river, which above the iron-work ex- pands into a small lake, supplies the iron-work with motive power, driving no less than twenty-seven water-wheels, while there are several steam-engines. Nijne-Taghilsk is a central foundry for a number of iron-mines and eleven other works scattered in the valley of the Taghil and its tributary, the Salda, the aggregate production of which in 1879 amounted to 749,000 cwts. of cast iron and 280,000 cwts.~~

~~of wrought iron (547,500 cwts. of iron and iron-ware, worth 6,000,000 roubles, in 1881). About 360 Ib of gold, 2500 tb of platinum, and 11,600 cwts. of copper are also annually mined at Nijne-Taghilsk. The town has several educational institutions both primary and secondary, the latter including a technical school and a school for girls. It has a very animated appearance during its weekly fairs, and, being the chief corn-market for the supply of nearly all the iron-works of the district of Verkhoturie, carries on a brisk corn trade, which the railway has further developed. The inhabitants~~

~~also make wooden boxes and trays which are sent to the fairs of Irbit and Nijni-Novgorod. The population, including that of the Vyiski iron-work, situ- ated close at hand, exceeds 30,000, all Great-Russians, and chiefly Nonconformists.~~

~~NIJNE-TCHIRSKAYA, a Cossack village, or stanitsa, of Russia, chief town of the Second Don district of the Don Cossack government, is situated on the right bank of the Don, at its junction with the Tchir, 25 miles below the Kalatch station of the Volga and Don Railway, and is the chief point for corn and linseed from the basin of the middle Don. Its 14,000 inhabitants (with the 11,000 of Verkne-Tchirskaya, 2 miles distant) are mostly engaged in agriculture and cattle-raising, favoured by the extensive landholdings (about 700,000 acres) belonging to the Cossacks of both stanitsas. The hills above the village are covered for several miles with rich gardens and vine-yards. Besides the trade in grain and linseed, a consider- able business is done in cattle, wool, and salt. Manufac- tures, as among the Don Cossacks generally, are very limited, being confined to tanning, brick-making, and candle- making. The place is in regular steamboat communica- tion with Novotcherkassk and Taganrog.~~

~~NIJNL-LOMOFF, a district town of Russia, in the government of Penza, 69 miles west-north-west from the capital of the government, on the Lomoff; the railway from Penza to Tula passes within 17 miles. It was founded as a south-eastern frontier fort in 1636, in a country of moderate fertility, and has but slowly developed. It has now 19,000 inhabitants, who support themselves chiefly by agriculture and gardening. The merchants carry on trade in grain, wine-spirit, hempseed oil, leather, woollen goods, and a variety of wooden wares (cars, sledges, wheels, and so on), largely manufactured in the southern and wooded part of the district. The yearly fair is of some importance as regards corn and cattle. The town and the district have also a few distilleries, manufactures of woollen cloth and potash, oil-works, and potteries.~~

~~NIJNI-NOVGOROD, or Nisnxry-Novcorop, a govern- ment of Central Russia, bounded by Vladimir on the W., by Yaroslaff and Vyatka on the N. and N.E., by Kazan and Simbirsk on the E., and by Penza and Tamboff on the S., with an area of 19,800 square miles, two-thirds being on the right~~

~~and the rest on the left bank of the Volga. The smaller portion, with the exception of the better- drained lands close to the river, is a low flat marshy district, covered with thick forests and sandy hills, and is but thinly peopled. The space between the Oka and Volga is also flat and covered with forests, but offers some- what greater advantages to the settler. The best part of the government is that to the east of the Oka; it is hilly, traversed by deep ravines, and better drained, and has patches of fertile black earth in the south. Geologically, Nijni-Novgorod belongs chiefly to the Permian system ; the Carboniferous appears only in the lowest formations, and the Permian limestones are covered with a stratum 450 feet in thickness, of variegated marls, formerly con- sidered as Permian, but now supposed to be Triassic. It is watered by the Volga with its tributaries, the Kerjenetz and Vetluga on the left, and the Sura (with the Piana)~~

~~NIJNI-NOVGOROD~~

~~and Oka on the right. These and their numerous tributaries offer great facilities both for navigation and for the transit of timber. Very numerous lakes dot the government, especially in the north; and one-third of its entire surface is still covered with forests, which occupy nearly the whole of the Zavoljie (to the north of the Volga), and extend without a break for 50 and 80 miles to the west and south-west. The climate is severe, especially in the Zavoljie, where the average yearly temperature is 5°°6 Fahr. lower than at Nijni. The population in 1880 reached 1,376,000; they are mostly Great-Russians, Mordvinians (50,600), and Tartars (42,650); the Tcheremisses numbered 5630, and the Jews about 1500. Of the total, 1,266,550 belong to the Greek Church, 63,850 (probably much understated) are registered as Old Believers and Raskolniks, 42,650 are Mohammedans, 750 Protestants, and 740 Catholics. The urban population is only 101,000. The yearly increase of the population is estimated at 0°43 per cent., and the mortality at 47 per 1000.~~

~~The chief occupation of the inhabitants is agriculture, but only 38 per cent. of the area is under crops. Cattle breeding is falling off rapidly, and in 1880 there were only 229,000 horses (as against 326,000 in 1848 and 264,006 in 1865), 232,000 horned cattle, 444,000 sheep (585,000 in 1865), and 74,000 pigs. Kitchen- gardens are a source of income in several districts.~~

Agriculture, on the whole, has to contend with great difficulties on account of the climate, the soil, and the small ——~— allotments of land. A variety of petty trades carried on by the peasantry FSS have accordingly developed in the vil- lages; of these cutlery is the chief, no less than 6000 families being engaged in that industry at Pavlovo and B& Vorsma. In other parts of the govern- [| ment the peasants make felt and woollen wares, leather wares and harness, iron- wire aud sieves, &c.; each village has its own specialty, being renowned for its felt shoes, or for its gloves, its fine scales, and so on. The chief occupa- tion, however, is the inanufacture of wooden wares, — sledges, wheels, dishes and spoons, window frames, boxes, &c., —which are exported in large quantities to the governments of the lower Volga, and even to Bokhara and Persia. The manufactures are rapidly developing. In 1880 there were 465 factories (prin- cipally machine-works, steam flour: |., mills, iron and steel works, naphtha distilleries, cutlery and copper works, — tanneries, and rope-works), employing about 20,000 work-people, and producing goods to the value of more than 15,000,000 roubles (8,840,000 in 1876); the productiou of the distilleries amounted to 4,540,000. The building of boats and steamers is also a considerable source of income. A very large proportion of the population fails to find the means of self-support within the province, and every year no fewer than 100,000 to 117,000 persons leave their villages aud go in search of labour as far as St Petersburg and Astrakhan. Trade in corn, salt, timber, leather, iron, and all kinds of manufactured ware is well developed in all towns of the government, and there are important fairs at several places. The educational institutions are few, and, on the whole, except among the Raskolniks, education stands at a very low level. The government is divided into eleven districts, having as their chief towns Nijni-Novgorod (50,000 inhabitants), Ardatoff (3500), Arzamas (10,500), Balakhna (4000), Gorbatoff (3000), Knyaghinin (2500), Lukoyanoff (10,000), Makarieff (2000), Seme- noft (3000), Sergach (4000), and Vasilsursk (8000). The other towns are Perevoz (1000) and Pochinki (7500); the two villages Pavlovo (about 10,000) and Vorsma (4000) are important manu- facturing centres. ;

Nusn1-Noveorop, or simply Nisn1 or Nisnry, capital of the above government, is situated at the confluence of the Oka and Volga, 276 miles by rail to the east of Moscow. It occupies a most advantageous position on

the great artery of Russian trade, at a place where the manufactured and agricultural products of the basin of the Oka meet

with the metal wares from that of the Kama, the corn and

=

>

2

ag

\ Hi Hn iN i W

Iss i

501

salt brought from the south-eastern provinces, the produce of the Caspian fisheries, and the various wares imported from Siberia, Central Asia, Caucasus, and Persia. It has thus become the seat of the great Makarievskaya fair, and one of the chief commercial centres of Russia. Its importance has still further increased during the last twenty years in consequence of the growth of manufactures in the Oka basin, the rapid development of steamboat traffic on the Volga and its tributaries, the extension of the Russian railway system, and the opening of Central Asia for trade. Nijni-Novgorod consists of three parts:— the upper city, including the Kremlin ; the lower town, or Nijni Bazaar ; and "the Fair," with the suburb Kunavina. The upper city covers three hills, which rise as steep crags to a height of 400 feet (490 feet above sea-level) on the right banks of both the Oka and the Volga. The Kremlin, or old fort, occupies one of these hills facing the Volga. It was erected in the beginning of the 16th century, on the site of the old palisaded fort, and has a wall 2300 yards long, with eleven towers; it contains the law- courts, the governor's residence, the arsenal, barracks, the military gymnasium of Count Arakchéeff, transferred from Novgorod, and two cathedrals, Preobrajenski and Arkhangelski. These

were erected in 1225 and 1222 respectively, and have been rebuilt more than once; the present structures, in somewhat poor taste, date from

Scale of 1 English Mile

= |\e Plan of Nijni-Novgorod.

1834 and 1732. The Preobrajenski cathedral, however, retains several relics of the past, such as a holy picture of 1380, and a Bible of 1404; Minin, the hero of Nijni, lies buried there. The Kremlin is adorned with a square, containing a monument to Minin and Pojarsky erected in 1826, and pretty boulevards have been laid out along its lower wall. The view from the Kremlin of the broad Volga, with its low-lying and far-spreading left bank, is very charming. The Pechorsky monastery, close by, is archeeologically interesting; it was built in the first half of the 16th century,—instead of the old monastery founded in 1330 and destroyed by a land-slip,—and has several antiquities and a library with very valuable MSS. Another monastery, contemporary with the foundation of Nijni, that of Blagovyeschensk, is situated on the right bank of the Oka. Its old churches have been destroyed by fire, but it has a very ancient holy picture—probably the oldest in Russia—dating from 933, which attracts many pilgrims. Besides the Kremlin, the upper town contains the best streets and public buildings. Five descents lead from it to the lower town, which covers the alluvial terrace, 30 to 35 feet in height, on the banks of the Oka and Volga, and is the centre of a very lively

502

traffic. Its embankments are covered with storehouses, and during the fair great quantities of merchandise are un- loaded there : hills of salt surround the salt-harbour on the Oka ; farther down are seen the extensive storehouses and heaps of grain of the corn-harbour ; then comes the steam-boat quay on the Volga, opposite the Kremlin, and still farther to the east the timber-harbour. The fair is held on the flat sandy tongue of land between the Oka and the Volga, connected with the town only by a bridge of boats, 1500 yards long, which is dismounted in winter. The shops of the fair, more than 3000 in number, built of stone in regular rows, are surrounded by a canal, and cover half a square mile. A complete town has sprung up around them,

~~whilst the sandy banks are occupied by storehouses. The Siberian harbour during the fair has a special interest on account of its accumulations of tea boxes and temporary shelters where the different kinds of tea are tried and valued by tasters. The point of the peninsula is occupied by the storehouses of the steamboat companies, while metal wares and corn are discharged on a long island of the Oka, at the iron-harbour and Grebnovskaya harbour. An island in the Volga is the place where various kinds of rough wares are landed. An immense cathedral has been recently erected to the north of the fair, on a site which is often flooded. The railway from Moscow has its terminus close to the fair buildings, to the south of which is the suburb Kunavina, widely known throughout the East as a place for amusements of the lowest kind during the fair.~~

~~Nijni-Novgorod is well supplied with drinking-water by springs which flow from beneath the Triassic marls of which its hills are constituted. The water is collected in a basin on the banks of the Volga and pumped to the upper town (114,000 gallons per day). The climate of Nijni is harsh and continental, the yearly average temperature being 39° Fahr. (10°°6 in January and 64° in July), and the extreme thermometric readings — 40° and 104° Fahr.~~

~~The town has a scttled population of 50,000 inhabitants, rising to 250,000 or perhaps to 300,000 during the fair. The inhabitants are nearly all Great-Russians, and many of them are Nonconfor- mists. The mortality exceeds the birth-rate. The ednca tional institutions, which are few, include, besides the military school, one college (gymnasium) for boys and one for girls, a technical school, a theological seminary, two schools for sons and daughters of the clergy, and a dozen primary schools. The aggregate number of scholars being 3000, nearly 8000 children receive no public instruc- tion. There is a small public library, and a single periodical — The Exchange News; the five printing offices are employed almost exclusively by the public institutions. Of late the statistical com- mittee has issued a most valuable publication, the Nijegorodskiy Sbornik, containing all kinds of statistical, ethnographical, and archeological information abont the government.~~

The mannfactures are unimportant, but on the increase. The 'steam flour-mills, iron and machine works, manufactories of ropes and candles, distilleries, and potteries have an aggregate production of nearly £250,000 per year. Shipbuilding, especially for the transport of naphtha on the Caspian Sea, and also steam- boat building, have recently advanced considerably. Nijni is the chief station of the Volga steamboat traffic. The first steamer on the Volga made its appearance in 1821, but it was not till 1845 that steam navigation began to assume large proportions. In 1846 the whole traffic, carried on by nearly 1000 boats and 200 larger boats moved by horse-power, did not exceed 1,000,000 tons ; it is now estimated at 2,500,000 tons, worth £3,000,000, and the nuinber of steamers on the Volga alone is about 500. The head offices of the chief companies are at Nijni. The merchants also carry on a brisk trade, valued (apart from that of the fair) at more than £2,000,000 (20,000,000 roubles) of purchases and £1,800,000 of sales; the chief items are corn (from £200,000 to £500,000), salt, iron, tea, fish, groceries, and manufactured goods. The annual budget of Nijni is under £20,000.

The chief importance of Nijni is due to its fair, which is held from Angust 5th to Scptember 15th. From remote antiquity Russian merchants were wont to meet-in summer with those from the East at different places on the Volga, between the mouths of the Oka and Kama,—the fair changing its site with the increasing or decreasing power of the nationalities which struggled for the possession of the middle Volga. Bulgary, or Bakhrimovo, Nijni-

Nid TSN Or Go hf OD

Novgorod, Kazan, and Vasilsursk have successively been its seat since the 10th century. From 1624 its seat was long at the Jeltovodski monastery, 55 miles below. Nijni, close to Makarieff, whence its present name. The situation, however, being in many ways inconvenient, and a conflagration having destroyed the shops at Makarieff, the fair was transferred in 1817 to its present seat at Nijni. The first fair held here showed a large increase of arrivals, which reached the value of 27,000,000 roubles, and this fignre has steadily increased, reaching an average of 168,628,600 roubles in 1871-75, and 200,446,000 roubles in 1880. 'The value of the

| merchandise unsold usually varies from 15 to 25 millions (31

~~millions in 1880). The goods chiefly dealt in are cotton, woollen, linen, and silk stuffs (35 to 88 per cent. of the whole), iron and iron wares, furs and skins, pottery, salt, corn, fish, wine, and all kinds of manufactured goods. The Russian goods constitute four- fifths of the whole trade; those brought from Asia—tea (imported via Kiachta, Canton, and Suez), raw cotton and silk, leather wares, madder, and various manufactured wares—do not exceed 10 or 11 percent. Manufactured wares, groceries, and wines are the goods principally imported from western Europe.~~

~~The above figures, however, convey but a very imperfect idea of the total business transacted at the fair, which has been estimated at 371,013,911 roubles in 1880 (320,532,700 in 1876), and in reality stands ata much higher figure. Twenty-five years ago, the Russian manufacturers depending chiefly on the barter-trade in tea at Kiachta, their production was regulated principally by the prices of tea established at the fair; but now cotton takes the lead, and the extension to be given each year to the mills of central Russia is determined at the fair by the price of raw cotton imported from Asia, by that of madder, and by the results of the year's crop which become known during the fair. The same holds good with regard to all other stuffs, the prices of wool (provisionally established at the earlier fairs of south-western Russia) being ultimately settled at Nijni, as well as those of raw silk. The whole of the iron production of the Ural depends also on the same fair. The "caravans" of boats laden with iron-ware, starting from the Ural works in the spring, reach Nijni in August, after a stay at the fair of Laisheff, which supplies the lower Volga; and the purchases of iron made at Nijni for Asia aud middle Russia determine the amount of credit that will be granted for the next year's business to the owners of the iron-works, on which credit most of them eutirely depend. The fair thus influences directly all the leading branches of Russian manufacture. It exercises a yet greater in- fluence on the corn and salt trades throughout Russia, and still more on the whole of the trade in Siberia and Turkestan, both depending entirely on the conditions of credit that the Siberian and Turkestan merchants obtain at the fair.~~

~~The Makarievskaya fair attracts therefore no fewer than 200,000 people from all parts of Russia, and partly from Asia. The 3000 shops of the Gostinoy Dvor being insufficient for all the merchandise, other 3000 shops~~

are erected on a field close by, whilst the quays are covered for 10 miles with heaps of ware and temporary shelters. The Oka and Volga are literally covered with thousands of boats of all descriptions; thonsands of bargemen swarm in the dirticst holes, spreading epidemics ; whilst the lowest amusements are earried on in the houses of Kunavina. The fair is under the con- trol of a special committee, who raise more than 400,000 roubles for shop rents.

Two other fairs of some importance are held at Nijni,—one for the trade in wooden wares is held on the ice of the Oka, and another, in June, for the trade in horses.

History.—The confluence of the Oka and the Volga, inhabited in the 10th century by numerous Mordvinian tribes, began to be coveted by the Russians as soon as they had occupied the upper Volga, and as early as the 11th century they had established a fort, Gorodctz, 20 miles above the mouth of the Oka. In 1221 the people of Suzdal, under Yuri Vsevolodovich, erected a fort on the hill now occupied by the Kremlin of Nijni, and gave it the name of Novgrad Nizovskiya Zemli (new town of the lowland). Until the beginning of the 14th century Nijni-Novgorod, which grew rapidly as the Russians colonized the banks of the Oka, remained a sub-town of Suzdal ; it enjoyed, however, almost complete independence, being ruled by its popular assembly. In the 14th century, until 1890, it elected its own princes. Ill pro- tected by its palisaded walls, it was plundered in 1377 and 1878 by the Tartars, supported by the Mordvinians. In 1390 Prince Vasili of Moscow, in alliance with the khan Toktamish, took Nijni and established his own governors there; in 1412 it was definitely annexed to Moscow, becoming a stronghold for the further advance of that principality towards the east. It was fortified in 1508-11, and was able to repel the Tartars in 1518, 1520, and 1536. The second half of the 16th century was for Nijni a period of peaceful and rapid development. It became a depét for all merchandise brought from the south-east, and even English merchants established warehouses there. With the fall of Kazan, and the opening of the free navigation on the Volga, it became also the starting place for the " caravan" of boats yearly

NIK—NIK

sent to the lower Volga under the protection of a military force ; whilst the thick forests of the neighbourhood favoured the develop- ment of shipbuilding. In 1606-11 the trading classes of Nijni took an active part in the expeditions against the revolted serfs, and it was a Nijni dealer in cattle, Kozma Minin Sukhoruki, who took the initiative in sending an army for the delivery of Moscow from the Poles. During the 17th century the country around Nijni becanie the seat of a vigorous religious agitation, and in its forests the Raskolniks spread hundreds of their monasteries and communities, those of the Kerjenets playing an important part in the history of Russian Nonconformity even to our own day.

Nijni-Novgorod had at one time two academies, Greek and Slavonic, and took some part in the literary movement of the end of the last century; its theatre also had some importance in the history of the Russian stage, Itis the birthplace of Kulibin and Dobroluboff. (P. A. K.)

NIKKO; one of the chief religious centres of Japan, is beautifully situated on the Nikko Zan (Mountains of the Sun's Brightness) in Tochigi ken (province of Shimotsuke), about 92 miles north-north-west of Tokio (Yedo) by the ordinary route wa Utsunomiya. The town is properly called Hachi-ishi, but this name is very little used in com- parison with that of the shrines. A Shinté temple seems to have existed at Nikko from time immemorial, and in 767 its first Buddhist temple was founded by Shé-dé Shé-nin (the subject of many strange legendary adventures) ; but the main celebrity of the place is due to the sepulchres and sanctuaries of Iyeyasu and Iyemitsu, the first and third shéguns of the Tokugawa dynasty. Iyeyasu was buried with amazing pomp in 1617, and Iyemitsu, his grandson, was slain in 1650 while visiting his tomb. From 1644 to 1868 the "abbots" of Nikko were always princes of the imperial blood ; thirteen of them are buried within the sacred grounds. Though the magnificent abbots' residence was destroyed by fire in 1871, and the temples have lost most of their ritual and much of their material splendour, enough remains to astonish by excellence and bewilder by variety of decorative detail. Of the numerous structures which cluster round the shrine of Iyeyasu, it is sufficient to mention the cylindrical copper column, 42 feet high, adorned at the top with a series of six lotus flowers, from the petals of which hang small bells; a five-storied pagoda, 104 feet high, with the animals of the duodenary cycle running

~~round the base ; the gate of the Two Kings, with its figures of unicorns, tapirs, elephants, and tree-peonies; the vermilion-coloured timber enclosure to which this gate gives entrance, with three great storehouses, a sumptuous stable for the sacred horses, and a finely fashioned granite cistern for holy water; and the Yo-mei gate, which with the contiguous cloister is covered with the most elaborate carving, and gives access to the court in the midst of which stands the last and most sacred enclosure. This, known as the Tamagaki, isa quadrangle of gilt trellis-work 50 yards square; within it stands the "chapel" or oratory (or rather a series of chapels, though the inmost is kept closed), in the decoration of which gilding and black lacquer have been lavishly employed. The tomb of Iyeyasu lies apart from all this magnificence two hundred and forty steps higher up the hills, in the shadow of tall cryptomerias—a single light-coloured bronze urn or casket standing on a circular base of three steps with a stone table in front on which rest a censer, a lotus-cluster, anda stork with a candlestick in its mouth,—the whole enclosed by a high stone wall. Somewhat similar are the tomb of Iyemitsu and its surroundings; and though the art dis- played is of an inferior character, the profusion of buildings and embellishments is even more perplexing. Hotoké Iwa, the hill on which the tomb stands, is completely covered to the summit with trees of various tints.~~

~~See Satow and Hawes, Guwide-book to Japan, 1881; Bird, Unbeaten Tracks in Japan, 1880.~~

~~NIKOLAIEFF, the chief naval station of Russia on the Black Sea, is situated in the government of Kherson, 41~~

~~miles north-west of the government capital. It stands most advantageously a little above the junction of the Ingul with the Bug, at the head of the liman, or estuary, of the Bug, and is the natural outlet for the basin of that river. The estuary, which is 23 miles long, enters that of the Dnieper; and Nikolaieff, 42 miles distant from the Black Sea, thus combines the advantages of a good seaport with those ofan inland town. The entrance to the double estuary of the Bug and Dnieper is protected by the fortress of Otchakoff and by the fort of Kinburn, erected on a narrow headland opposite, while several forts sur- round Nikolaieff on both sides of the Bug~~

~~and protect it from an attack by land. The town, which occupies two flat peninsulas between the Bug and the Ingul, extends up the banks of the latter, while its suburbs spread still farther into the steppe, the whole covering an area of 6 square miles. Immense unoccupied spaces separate the houses, which are mostly one-storied, and border on spacious streets. The bank of the Ingul is taken up with shipbuilding yards, docks, slips, and various workshops of the admiralty for the construction of armour-plates, guns, boilers, &c. On the river there is a floating dock for armoured ships, but Nikolaieff has this drawback that fully armoured ships are unable to pass the bar, which is only 18 to 21 feet deep. Before the Crimean War the activity of the dockyards was very great, ships of 130 guns being built in them; the suburbs—which belong to the admiralty—were bound to supply the necessary hands to the number of 3000 every day, and all the inhabitants had to perform compulsory service. Special bodies of militarily organized workmen were trained in shipbuilding, and thus Nikolaieff became a great school for all branches of navigation and naval architecture. The population, numbering 35,000, was mainly dependent on these sources ; but when the activity of the admiralty was brought to a stop for fourteen years by the treaty of Paris the inhabitants had to seek other means of support. By a branch of the Balta-Krementchug Railway, starting from Znamenka (147 miles), Nikolaieff has been brought into connexion with the Russian railway system, and its grain exports now equal those of Riga, while it is the chief market for a region comprising the governments of Kher- son, Poltava, Kharkoff, Ekaterinoslaff, and parts of Kieff and Podolia. In 1878 it reached the maximum of 2,665,000 quarters (9,660,000 cwts. in 1881). Large storehouses, capable of holding 2,000,000 quarters, stand close to the commercial port, two miles distant from the town, at Popova Balka on the Bug. The export of timber, skins, tallow, and cattle is steadily increasing. The population, which is growing rapidly, now amounts, including the suburbs, to upwards of 70,000 (45 per cent. of them mili- tary, and 7000 Jews). The sanitary conditions are bad, and the mortality reaches 40 per thousand. The educational institutions of Nikolaieff are more numerous and better than in many capitals of Russian governments. They include a gymnasium, an artillery school, and a dozen schools for boys and girls, an astronomical and meteoro- logical observatory (46° 58’ N. lat. and 31° 38’ E. long.), four museums and libraries, and a hydrographical insti- tute. Among the public buildings, the cathedral, which contains some good~~

Italian pictures, the theatre, the admiralty and several other state buildings are worthy of mention. The manufactures in the hands of private individuals include a shipbuilding yard and several tallow-melting houses and tobacco works. Since 1870 the Nikolaieff admiralty has resumed activity, especially in the construction of armoured ships and torpedo boats, though not to such an extent as before the Crimean War. Though a district town of the government of Kherson, Nikolaieff is under an independent military governor.

The remains of the well-known Greek colony Olbia have been | Mennonites, who prosecute agriculture extensively. The

discovered close to the confluence of the Ingul with the Bug at the Sto-Moghily (Hundred Graves). In medieval times the country was under the Lithuanians, and subsequently under the Zaporogian Cossacks. Russian colonists settled in the locality about the end of the last century, and after the fall of Otchakoff Prince Potem- kin established a wharf on the Ingul which received the naine of Nikolaieff. The further devclopment of the town is duc almost entirely to the efforts of the Russian Government to make it an important naval station.

NIKOLAIEVSK, a district town of Russia, in the government of Samara, on the right bank of the Irghiz, lies 48 miles from the Volga and 109 miles to the south-west of Samara. Its 10,000 inhabitants are mostly Raskolniks, or of the "United Church," and about 2000 Tartars occupy a separate part of the town. The chief occupation of the Russian and Tartar inhabitants is agriculture and cattle-breeding, in the products of which the merchants carry on a lively trade. The industries (tallow-melting and tanning) are unimportant. The fertility of the soil in the district favours commerce, as well as the development of large villages, many of which—Poganovka (6000 inhabitants), Ekaterinstadt (5000), Porubejka (5000), and several others—are more important and wealthier than many district towns of Russia. The famous Irghiz monasteries of the Raskolniks occur along the

~~Irghiz in the same district, whilst the left bank of the Volga is studded with rich German colonies.~~

~~Under the name of Metchetnoye, Nikolaievsk was founded in 1762, by Raskolniks who had fled to Poland and returned when Catherine II. undertook to grant them religious freedom. The monasteries which were founded at the same time became the refuge of numerous runaway serfs, and so the focus of the dis- turbances which broke out in 1778. In 1828 serious prosecu- tions began, with the result that the monasteries were closed with the exception of three, which were handed over in 1829 and 1836 to the United Church by order of Government. In 1835 the name of Metchetnoye was changed to Nikolaievsk.~~

~~For Nikolaievsk-on-the-Amur, a town of Eastern Siberia, on the left bank of the estuary of the Amur, 23 miles from the Gulf of Amur, see MARITIME PRovINcE, vol. xv. p. 548.~~

~~NIKOLAIEVSKAYA SLOBODA, a village of Russia, in the government of Astrakhan and district of Tsareff, 3 miles from the Volga, on its left bank, opposite Kamuishin. It dates from about the end of the last century, when a number of Little-Russians settled here for the transport of salt from Lake Elton. Although still but a village, it has about 30,000 inhabitants, and is one of the chief centres on the lower Volga for the trade in corn and salt,~~

~~NIKOPOL, a town of Russia, in the government and district of Ekaterinoslaff, on the right bank of the Dnieper, 76 miles to the south-south-west of Ekaterinoslaff. The town, formerly called Nikitin Rog, occupies an elongated peninsula between two branches of the Dnieper, at a point where its banks are covered on both sides and to a con- siderable distance with marshes, and has been for many centuries one of the places where the middle Dnieper could most conveniently be crossed. The old " setcha," or fortified camp, of the Zaporogian Cossacks had its seat a little above. Numbers of graves around it recall the battles which were fought for the possession of this im- portant strategic point. One of them, close to the town, "the Great Grave" (Tolstaya Moghila), contained, along with other Scythian antiquities, the well-known precious vase representing the capture of wild horses, Even now Nikopol, which is situated on the highway from Ekaterinoslaff to Kherson, is also the point where the "salt-highway" of the~~

Chumaks (Little-Russian carriers of salt) to the Crimea crosses the Dnieper. A wharf for the building of trading ships navigating the estuary of the Dnieper has been established at Nikopol, and it is still one of the chief places on the lower Dnieper for the export of corn, linseed, tallow, and wool. Its 10,000 inhabitants are Little-Russians, Jews, and

trade in wheat, hemp, tallow, and wool is important in connexion with the export trade of Nikolaieff and Odessa.

NIKOPOLL, or Nicoport (Turkish, Vighebolu or Nebul), a city of Bulgaria, the chief town of a circle in the district of Plevna (Plyeven), is picturesquely situated on the south bank of the Danube, at the confluence of the Osma. According to the census of 1881 it had only 4652 inhabitants, but previous to its destruction by the Russians in 1877 they numbered about 10,000, and: as a military post the town has for centuries been of con- siderable importance. A ruined castle still dominates the place, and fortifications stretch down to the river.

Nikopoli occupies the site of the ancient Asaimus, but by some medieval confusion bears the name of Nicopolis ad Istrum, which was founded by Trajan several miles down the river, at the inflow of the Iatrus or Yantra, at the spot still called Nikup. The following are the chief points in the modern history of the place :— capture of the fortress by Sigismund of Hungary in 1892 and 1395 ; defeat of Sigismund and his hosts in 1896 by Bajazet; siege of the town by Uladislaus of Hungary in 1444; defeat of the Turks by Bathori in 1595 and by Michael of Wallachia in 1598 ; occupation of the fortress by the Russians in 1810 ; destruction of the Turkish flotilla and storming of the Turkish camp by Govaroff in 1829;

and the capture and burning of the town by the Russians under Kriidener on 15th June 1877.

NILE. This mighty river, which after a course of Plate 3370 miles pours into the Mediterranean a low-water XV-'

current of 61,500 cubic feet per second, has its cradle in

~~the Victoria Nyanza, an enormous lake in Central Africa Victoria where the line of the equator is crossed by 32°, 33°, Nyanza.~~

~~and 34° of E. long,, somewhere about 4000 feet above the sea. The Victoria Nyanza? measures 230 miles from north to south and 220 from east to west. Its coast-line, which is very irregular, cannot be less than 2000 miles ; its water area is estimated at 27,000 miles, and its very islands have an aggregate area of 1400 square miles. The physical features of the shores vary greatly from district to district.? At the south-east corner is Speke Gulf, about 60 miles long, formed partly by a deep indentation of the mainland and partly by the peninsular island of Ukerewe, which is separated from the mainland by Rugisi or Rugeshi Strait, a narrow and shallow channel about # mile long, overgrown with rushes, papyrus, and a fine network of grass whicli undulates beneath the foot. Bukindo is the chief village on the island, which forms the territory of a separate ruler. Its inhabitants murdered Lieutenant G. Shergold Smith, R.N., and Mr O'Neill, members of the 1876-77 expedition of the Church Missionary Society. To the north of Ukerewe lies Ukara, for the most part barren, and with two rugged hills rising 200 or 300 feet. The natives average less than 5 feet in height (Wilson and Felkin, i. pp. 99-101). Along the south and south-west coasts is a whole series of islands—notably Komeh, Mysomel, Bumbireh, and Bukerebe or Alice Island; but of much more importance is the great Sesse Archipelago off the coasts of western Uganda. At first entered on our maps as a single great island, it has turned out to be (according to King Mtesa's possibly somewhat exaggerated statement) a cluster of four hundred mostly inhabited islands, some of the largest being 10 to 15 miles in length and 3 to 4 miles in breadth. Clothed as they generally are with forest, and fringed along the shore with papyrus or low jungle, they often present scenes of the richest tropical luxuriance. Along the east half of the northern coast are a number of~~

~~1 Plate XV. shows the river system south of the Tropic of Cancer. For the Egyptian portion see Plate VI., vol. vii.~~

~~2 Nyanza means water or lake. Other names are—Nyanza Kerewe (Linaut), Neraa Bali (Baker), Luero lo Luta Nzige, i.e., 'white with dead locusts"~~

(Speke), Bahari ya Pila or ‘Second Lake” and Bahari ya Ukara (of the Sawahili), and Sea of Ukerewe (of the Arabs).

3 A description will be found in Wilson and Felkin, Uganda and the Egyptian Soudan, vol. i. p. 250-54.

Ripon Falls,

N I

considerable islands such as Usuguru, and, at the head of Napoleon Channel, Uvuma, famous for the canoe contest waged between its inhabitants and King Mtesa of Uganda, of which Mr Stanley was spectator. Ugingo, on the east coast, is a large island separated like Ukerewe by a narrow channel from the mainlaid. Though when its extent is taken into account Victoria Nyanza may be described as shallow in contrast to such basins as those of Tanganyika, the depth, especially on the eastern side, appears to be very considerable, Stanley giving 275 and even 580 feet not far from the shore. Of the affluents of the lake a few only require to be mentioned. The Shimiyu, which falls into the south side of Speke Gulf, was described by Stanley (March 1875) as a magnificent flood a mile wide receiving the waters of the Monangah, the Luwamberri, and the Duma, and having a course of 300 miles. If this were the case it would take the southmost point of the Nile system as far at least as between 4° and 5° S. lat. But when Lieutenant Shergold Smith saw the Shimiyu in 1876 he found it a comparatively insignificant stream, and if the altitudes observed by Smith and Pearson be correct it cannot be the recipient of the Luwamberri and the Monangah. Instead of the Shimiyu, either the Wami (or Kiye) or the Muinguira (Isanga or Isanda), both of which flow into Jordans Creek,! may be the southmost feeder of the Nile. Of much more importance as a tributary than any of these is the Kagera (of the Waganda), otherwise known as the Kitangule, Kitangure (Burton), Tengure (Grant), or Alexandra Nile (Stanley), a river 450 feet wide and 85 feet deep at its mouth, with a strong current, apparently pouring into the lake more water than is carried off by the Nile. It may be navigated for about 50 miles, and is believed to have its sources between 200 and 300 miles to the south-west. There are several lakes along its course—Lake Windermere, Lake Thema, and the larger Lake Alexandra not yet reached by Europeans.

~~The leading fact in regard to the position of Victoria Nyanza in the general hydrography of Central Africa is that by none of its affluents is it connected with any of the other great "equatorial" lakes. Tanganyika? lies in a trough about 1400 feet lower. Between the Victoria and Lake Nyassa (Zambesi system) there is a stretch of 500 miles; and, though a large lake, part of which Stanley saw in 1876, and named Gulf Beatrice, lies to the west, it forms in all probability a distinct basin.~~

~~In 1875 Stanley proved that the only outflow from Victoria Nyanza was by the Ripon Falls on the north side of the lake. These falls (named after Earl de Grey and Ripon, president of the Royal Geographical Society in 1859) were discovered July 28, 1862, by Captain Speke, but from native accounts he was led to believe that other streams (such as the Luajerri) issued from the lake. The Nile, as it dropsabout 12 feet over the rocks, hasa breadth of 400 to 500 feet, divided into several sections by a number of wooded isles. For the next 300 miles the Victoria Nile or Somerset River, as this section is called, has all the character of a mountain stream racing swiftly along a rocky channel often walled in by cliffs (at times 180 feet high) and broken by picturesque islands and countless rapids. At first for 117 miles its course is north-north- west, but reaching the Khor Kafu (on which Mruli stands), about 1° 38' N. lat. and 32° 20' E. long,, it takes the north-east direction of this channel, and it is not till 2° N. lat. that it again turns north-west towards the Albert Nyanza. About 52 miles below the Ripon Falls, Long, who in 1874 boated from Urondogani to Foweira, describes himself as having passed through a lake 20 to 25 miles~~

~~1 Named not after the Jordan, but after Speke's country-house, Jordans, in Somersetshire. 2 Tanganyika level is 2610 feet according to Joseph Thomson.~~

~~LE 505~~

~~broad ; but this expanse, which appears in text-books and maps (sometimes as two lakes, Kaja and Ibrahim Lakes), may have been the result of a mere temporary overflow. At~~

~~| Karuma, below Foweira, the river falls over a wall-like~~

ledge of rock 5 feet high which extends right across its bed. But the great feature of the Victoria Nile is the Murchison Fall, about 2° 18’ N. lat. and 31° 50’ E. long.,, where the river rages furiously through a rock-bound pass, and plunges at one leap of about 120 feet into a gloomy abyss. Below this point, continuing between steep forest- covered hills, it gradually calms down into a stream so slow and steady that at certain seasons it is only from the scarcely perceptible drifting of the little green water-plants, called Pistia Stratiotes,? that the flow can be observed. About 20 or 25 miles below the fall it enters the north end of the Albert Nyanza.

This lake* was first reached by Baker on March 14, 1864, near Vacovia on the east coast, a small village of fisher- men and salt-makers. From a granitic cliff 1500 feet above the water he looked out over a boundless horizon on the south and south-west, and towards the west descried. at a distance of 50 or 60 miles, blue mountains about 7000 feet high. The Albert Nyanza was consequently entered on his map as a vast lake extending from 2° §. lat. to 2° 50’ N. lat., or a distance of about 380 miles. But the circumnavigation of the lake by Gessi Pasha (1876), Mason Bey, and Dr Emin Bey leaves no doubt that its real dimensions are—length 97 miles, average breadth 22 miles, and area about 2000 square miles. ‘The western shore is in its northern half overhung by lofty and precipitous mountains, but farther south is formed by a wide forest-clad plain. At the south end the water is very shallow and encumbered by a vast stretch of ambatch forest. Instead of the lake being, as Baker contended, one of the great sources of the Nile, its functions are those of a large backwater. Of course a considerable amount of drainage must reach it from the surrounding high grounds, though the lakeward slopes are not very extensive; but none of its tributaries appear to be of much importance as feeders of the main stream. Along the western shore the depth is from 15 to 20 feet.

Escaping by an island-studded channel from the north- west corner of the Albert Nyanza, the Nile, which now takes the name of Bahr al-Jebel, or River of the Mountains, continues to flow in a general northward direction. From Magungo to Dufile (Dufli), 128 miles, its course is wonder- fully smooth, and formsa series of lake-like reaches. Below Dufile the high lands close in upon the river, which, from a width of a mile at Dufile, narrows to 400 or 500 yards, and rushes through a gorge. Near Mugi (50 miles below

~~Dufile) are the formidable Yarborah rapids. From Kiri (Kerrie)—an Egyptian fort on an eminence 1500 feet highon the left bank—the river is again navigable, but flows with so strong a current that Mr Felkin's boat took only three and a half hours to reach Bedden, a distance of some 30 miles. At Bedden a line of hills runs right athwart the channel, which is divided by an island of great beauty. An iron rope ferry was established by Gordon at this point, and without it the river could not be crossed. Between Bedden and Rejaf (12 miles) the hills give place to park-like plains dotted with large trees. About 15 miles below Rejaf, Gondokoro is passed on the right hand, and there the traveller may still see the ruins of the old mission church, the earthworks of Baker's camp,~~

~~3 Pistia Stratiotes is characteristic of the Bahr al-Jebel. It is found drifting far down the White Nile, but, according to Steudner, does not occur in the Bahr al-Ghazal.~~

~~4 Otherwise known 'as the Mwutan Nzige (Locust Lake) and the Luta Nzige (Dead Locust).~~

~~5 The descriptive phrase "blue mountains" has since been converted into a geographical name, "Blue Mountains."~~

~~XV—Ge~~

~~Murchi- son Fall.~~

~~Albert Nyanza.~~

~~Bahr al-Jebel.~~

~~506~~

~~and the lemon grove from which the fruit has been distri- buted throughout the equatorial provinces. At this point the river, about 656 feet wide, is divided by a large island. Eight miles farther down lies Lado (often spelled Lardo) on the left bank, a well-built Egyptian town with houses of burnt brick and a considerable area of cultivated land watered by shaddifs. With the hill to the west of Lado, variously called Nyerkani and Luyola, the~~

mountainous region ends, and the river enters on a vast plain. The aftluents which it has hitherto received are for the most part short and individually insignificant 4idérs (temporary streams), but two at least deserve a few words of descrip- tion. The Unyama, joining the river opposite J. Kuku or Neri, 10 miles below Dufile, is a perennial stream rising in the prairies between Fatiko and Unyoro, and winding through a lovely country for about 80 miles. The Asua (Atza of the Madi), whose mouth is 20 miles farther down on the same side, is about 120 paces broad, and flows through a rocky bed 15 feetdeep. As it receives nearly the whole drainage of the Madi and Shua countries and various districts farther east, it becomes in the rainy season a deep and furious torrent. The Atabbi or Atappi (the main drain of the western face of the Shuli mountains) reaches the Asua a short distance above the mouth.

The great plain which the Nile enters below Lado, about 5° N. lat., slopes so gradually towards the north that the river falls only 300 feet in a stretch of more than 650 miles between Gondokoro and Khartoum. As the river has gradually raised the level of both bed and banks, an overflow takes place, and lagoons or side channels (mayés) are formed wherever the bank breaks down; and as these, from their position, naturally act as settling-ponds they get rapidly silted up.

Up to about 7° 25’ N. lat., in spite of this condition of things, the Nile maintains a fairly definite course, with a considerable depth of water in its main current, but at this point it splits up into two branches as if to form a delta. The left branch, which retains the name Bahr al-Jebel, but which may be conveniently distinguished by the Denka name of Kir, continues in the line of the river, and the right branch, or Bahr al-Zerdf (Giraffe River), tends rather more towards the east. After flowing respectively about 160 and 140 miles, they reach the Bahr al-Ghazal, slowly gliding east with a slight deflexion to the south. The whole region is a vast expanse of low swampy lands crossed by secondary channels, and flooded for many miles in the rainy season. At the junction of the Bahr al-Ghazdl and the Kir the perma- nently submerged area is usually named Lake No on our maps, but the Arabs simply call it the confluence—Mokren al-Bohur. The scenes presented by this portion of the Nile are of the most peculiar description. The dark and ill-smelling water shows no sign of motion. On all sides

stretch monotonous reaches of omm sif (i.e., woolly) grass (Vossia procera) and papyrus, rising 20 or 30 feet above the water so as often to close the view like a stone wall ; the level of the plain is broken only at intervals by little mounds of earth, tenanted for the most part by white ants, and covered with a clump of brushwood or trees;! the moisture in the air is so excessive that gunpowder left in the guns overnight is reduced to a paste; mosquitoes and other swamp flies swarm in myriads. And yet touches of beauty are not wanting. Water-lilies (Nymphea stellata and Nymphea Lotus)—white, blue, and crimson—often adorn the surface of the stream ; multitudes of water-fowl, from the familiar Egyptian duck and the pelican to the rare and odd-looking Balzniceps rex (abu markub), breed

1 The ordinary theory is that these mounds are hills constructed by

the white ants; but Marno considers them as more probably portions which have resisted the general process of degradation,

NILE

among the reeds, and at night the scene is lit up bya very firmament of fire-flies.

Previous to 1863 both the Kir and the Bahr al-Zeraf had White But when the Nile.

been navigable within the memory of man. Tinné expedition passed down the river in March of that year, the White Nile, the united current of the Bahr al- Jebel and the Bahr al-Ghazal, was found to be blocked by an accumulation of vegetable flotsam, and it cost the crew two days' hard labour to take their vessel through a channel partially cleared by their predecessors. The obstruction rapidly increased, and thirty vessels had to be employed for five weeks to open a permanent passage. In 1865 Baker found a dam about # of a mile wide already overgrown with reeds and grass so as to form a continuation of the surrounding country. Matters went from bad to worse, and the White Nile, the Kir, and tle Bahr al-Zeraf were all rendered impassable till, in 1874, Ismael Ayub Pasha cleared the main route by the White Nile and the Kir. But in 1878 again the whole Nile rose to an unusual height (the banks at Lado, 15 to 20 feet above the niean level, were

~~overflowed), and enormous quan- titles of vegetable debris were carried off by the current. A formation of bars on an unprecedented scale was the result, and communication between the upper and lower Nile was not restored till 1880.~~

~~If the Kir and the White Nile, with their comparatively strong current, were thus obstructed, it was natural that the more sluggish Bahr al-Ghazal should contain more extensive though less compact accumulations. In 1881 Gessi Pasha spent three and a half months on a part of the voyage usually performed in five hours, and lost half of his men by starvation. Between the mouths of the Kir and Bahr al-'Arab there were twenty distinct dams.?~~

~~Sir Samuel Baker asserted in 1874 that from the equator to the Mediterranean not a drop of water reached the Nile from the west,—the Bahr al-Ghazal being only a channel of stagnant pools and marshes (Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1873-74, p. 148). But if their total contri- bution be of little moment in comparison with that of their eastern rivals, the western affluents are exceedingly numerous, and drain a wide extent of country. Their relative importance has been shown by Schweinfurth, Junker, Emin Bey, &c. One or two—the Rodi (Lau) and the Rohl—join the Bahr al-Jebel in its passage through the plain, but by far the greater number converge to the Bahr al-Ghazal. At its lowest state, just before the com- mencement of the rains, this river had in 1881 a depth varying from 20 to 25 feet, though in many places no per- ceptible current. It is generally navigable to Meshrat-el- Rek, about 200 or 220 miles above the mouth of the Kir, and in the rainy season even small steamers may ascend its tributary, the Dyur or Jur, as faras Wau. In exceptionally dry seasons the channel at Meshrat-el-Rek is so utterly desiccated that drinking-water can be obtained only by digging. One of the main feeders of the Bahr al-Ghazal is the Bahr al-'Arab, which is formed by the drainage of southern Darfur, has a breadth—about 10° 20' N. lat. and 25° 20' E. long. (before it receives any of its right hand affluents)—of 360 feet and a depth (in Decem- ber) of 4 feet, and never quite dries up even in the heat of summer (Felkin, Uganda, ii. 239). This is the only con- siderable accession from the north: the rest of the affluents, an almost countless host if all the small headstreams be~~

~~included, have their rise in the range of mountainous~~

~~country which stretches, from the Blue Mountains of the Albert Nyanza and their southern continuation, in a general north-east direction as far as 25° or 26° E. long,, and forms the watershed between the Nile basin and those~~

~~= See E. Marno, "Die Sumpfregion des dquat. Nilsystems," in Pet. Afitth., 1881, and another paper in 1882. :~~

~~Blue Nile.~~

~~and sonietimes high banks.~~

~~NI~~

~~probably of Lake Chad and the Congo. Flowingin many cases for 400 or 500 miles, these streams in the upper part of their course are of considerable volume and of much importance in the economy of the countries which they traverse.~~

~~About 95 miles below the junction of the Kir, and 30 below that of the Bahr al-Zerdf, the White Nile receives its first great affluent from the east. The Sobdat, as it is called, has its headwaters (largely unexplored) distributed over a wide area—the southmost rising possibly as far south as 4° N. lat. in the hilly country of Atuka, the eastmost in Kaffa, and the northmost about 9° in the Berta mountains! On one of them there is probably a consider- able lake: first inserted as Baro Lake on our maps by Petermann on the report of a slave dealer, it was expunged by Matteucci; but Schuver clainis to have seen it from the mountains to the north, and proposes to call it Haarlem Lake. The Sobdt proper is navigable from June to November as far as Nasser (180 miles), an Egyptian port established by Gordon in 1874, and even, it is said, for three days farther, though it divides into four branches a short distance above this point. Junker, who visited Nasser * in 1876, found the river 15 to 20 feet deep, flow- ing at the rate of 80 paces per minute between banks high enough to prevent any general inundation. At the mouth of the Sobat there is an Egyptian post of the same name (see Zeitschr. der Ges. f. Hrdk., Berlin, 1877).~~

~~The northward progress of the White Nile for the next 300 miles is through a great plain stretching from the spurs of the Abyssinian highlands in the~~

~~east to the hilly districts of Takalla and Kordofan in the west, and con- sisting almost exclusively of red and other sandstone, often flat as a pavement. Escaping from the swampy region, the river again forms a well-marked channel, with regular Throughout the whole dis- tance indicated a striking confirmation of Baer's law is afforded,—the fairway or deeper side of the stream gene- rally keeping to the eastern shore. About 60 miles below the Sobat mouth lies (on the right bank) Fashoda, an Egyptain town founded in 1867 on the site of Denab, the old "capital" of the Shilluks. In the neighbourhood of Mahadat Abu Zaid (about 13° 5' N. lat.) begin the Sunt Islands, so called from the Arab name for the Acacia nilotica, a tree characteristic of the White Nile.~~

~~At Khartoum (Khartum), in 15° 37' N. lat., the White Nile is joined by its greatest eastern confluent the Blue Nile? (Bahr el-Azrak). This river has its head reservoir in Lake Tana (Tsana), which is so situated that the lines of 12° N. lat. and 37° 2' E. long. cut it into four nearly equal portions. The height of the lake is 5658 feet (Rohlfs).~~

~~From east to west the breadth is about 40 miles, and —~~

~~the area is estimated at 2980 square miles. Between Dega and Zegi a depth of 236 feet has been found, and between Korata and Zegi 219. The Blue Nile, or Abai as it is called in Abyssinia, rises on the northward slopes of a cluster of mountains (Mount Gesh, &c.) about 11° N. lat., and flowing northwards enters Lake Tana near the south- west corner, to issue again at no great distance. Of the multitudinous ramifications by which the Abai and its tributaries drain a large part of the Abyssinian plateau, a better idea will be obtained from the map than from any description. From east and south and north the mountain~~

~~1 The connexion of the Godjeb or Orno with the Sobat, first sug- gested by Beke in 1841, and strongly opposed by Von Kloden, is still matter of doubt.~~

~~2 Naser, locus ubi torrentes fluunt in alveum.~~

~~3 At Khartoum the water of the one river has a milky-limy appear- ance, that of the other is clear and blue, except when in flood, when it gains a reddish-yellow from its alluvial burden.~~

~~4 Lake Tana has been explored by Bruce, Blanc, De Cosson, Piaggia, Steeker, &c.~~

~~Li S07~~

~~| streams pour down into the river,—its eastmost tributary probably rising east of Magdala, and its southmost between 8° and 9° N. lat. At Fazokl or Famaka, 11° 17' N. lat., it begins to escape from the mountains; about 130 miles farther down, after passing Rosaires and Karkoj on the right and Sennaar on the left, it is joined by the Dinder ; and 35 miles more bring it to the confluence of the Rahad (Ra'ad) and the town of Abu Haraz. Beyond this point it flows through the most fertile portion of the Egyptian Soudan, the plain on the left hand more especially being a great grain-growing district. The total length of the Abai or Blue Nile may be estimated at 960 miles.~~

~~On the north-west side of the mountains which enclose Atbara.~~

~~Lake Tana are some of the headwaters of the Atbara, another important tributary of the Nile; but it does not reach the main stream till about 17° 41' N. lat., or 200 miles below Khartoum. Its principal branch, the Settit or Takazze, has a course of about 420 miles through the Abyssinian plateau before it joins or (more strictly) is joined by the river which gives its name to the united stream. The Khor-el-Gash, or Mareb, though a consider- able river in its upper regions, reaches the Atbara (and thus the Nile, of which it is the northmost affluent) only during a heavy rainy season (see James, Wald Tribes of the Soudan, 1883). A large number of these eastern tributaries are mountain torrents, of enormous volume and impetuosity during the rains, and for a short time afterwards, but rapidly dwindling again into mere threads of water or chains of pools, and leaving the rocks and sand of their deep-cut channels as dry and parched as the surrounding desert. No one who has read it will easily forget Sir Samuel Baker's graphic account of the deep pool in the bed of the Atbara into which the fishes, tortoises, crocodiles, and hippopo- tami from a long reach of the river had gradually been crowded as the water disappeared, and of the sudden release effected by the return of the rainy season. A more recent~~

~~traveller, Herr Schuver, had a similar experience on the Tumat, the southern tributary of the Blue Nile.®~~

~~After receiving the Atbara the Nile continues for 650 miles through the Nubian desert, where the volume of the river suffers continual diminution from the ex- treme dryness of the air, without being recruited by a single drop of water. Between Berber (an important town on the right bank 30 miles below the Atbara) and Wady Halfa (about 600 miles) rapids and cataracts follow at intervals. The highest of these, the fifth cataract of the Nile, is situated about 40 miles below Berber, the fourth, 170 miles farther down, below Shitab, the third, 230 miles farther, at Hannek, and the second just above Wady Halfa. At Assuan (200 miles lower) are the first cataracts. Beyond that point the river flows through the wonderful valley which has already been described in the article Eeypr.~~

~~Reduced to its simplest expression, the Nile system may be said to consist of a great steady flowing river fed by the rains of the tropies, controlled by the existenee of a vast head reservoir and several areas of repose, and annually flooded by the aceession of a great body of water with which its eastern tributaries are flushed. The following details will enable the reader to estimate the hydro- graphie value of the different portions:'—~~

~~Victoria Nyanza lies in a zone where rain falls all the year round. At Kagei (south shore) the lake was seen by Mr Wilson in 1877 to be slowly rising in the middle of February, and it had attained its maximum (2 feet) about the middle of May, ten days after the rain had ceased. The total rainfall of this zone is not excessive. Speke's estimate of 49 inches is confirmed by Mr Wilson's much longer experience. In Uganda there are two maximum periods— March to May, and September to November.~~

~~The Assua is important from 15th April to 15th November.~~

~~The Bahr al-Jebel, at Gondokoro, begins to rise in April, and~~

~~5 Baker, Abyssinian Tributaries of the Nile. 6 See Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1883; Erg.-Ieft, No, 72. 7 Cf. Keith Johnston, Africa, Appendix.~~

gradually attains a maximum of 44 feet, the river being then 6 to 10 feet deep.

On the Kir the rainy season lasts from the first week of March to the close of October; but the 100 inches of rainfall goes largely to flood the swamps. ;

The Bahr al-Ghazdl is at its lowest in March, and begins to rise soon after.

The Sobdt is full from June to December.

The White Nile, at Khartoum, begins to rise in May, but only gains 2 or 3 feet till July or August, Its maximum (6 feet) is reached in September. Linant Bey estimated its volume at low level as 10,488 cubic feet, and in flood as 213,450.

The Blue Nile, at Khartoum, begins to rise in July, and reaches its maximum (174 feet) by August 20. Its rise is much more rapid than its decline ; it takes eighty days to lose the gain achicved in fifty-one. Linant Bey estimated its volume at low level as 5615 cubic feet, and in flood as 220,620. At Famaka it grows turbid about 20th May. Pies

The Atbara, for 150 miles above its junction with the Nilc, is perfectly dry from March to June.

As a waterway leading into the heart of Africa, the Nile at first sight might appear to be of more importance than it is, Steamers, it is true, as well as sailing craft, can pass up from Egypt as far as Bedden, a distance of 2900 miles ; but even at the period of high water (June to August) the ascent of the cataracts between Wady Halfa and Berber is so dangerous for vessels of any size that the river-route is scldom followed throughout. From Wady Halfa the traveller may proceed by camel to El Ordeh (New Dongola), thence take boat to El Dabbeh or to Old Dongola, and again proceed by land either to Berber, Shendy, or Khartoum. Or, instead, he may leave the river at Korosko, and strike through the Nubian desert direct to Berber. From Berber, which is also the terminus of a route often used from Souakim

~~(Suakin) on the Red Sea, steamers ply up the river, but it sometimes takes nineteen days to reach Khartoum. The difficulties of navigating the Kir have already been described. Above Bedden the steamer again finds a free course from Dufile to the neighbourhood of the Murchison Fall; but the route to Victoria Nyanza is again overland from Magungo. It is found 'more expeditious to come to the equatorial regions from the east coast than up the Nile valley.~~

~~For the botanical aspects of the Nile valley the reader is referred to Schweinfurth's papers (Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1868); for the general zoology to Heuglin's sketch (did., 1869); and for an account of the fish fauna to Dr Giinther's appendix to Mr and Mrs Petherick's Travels in Central Africa (1869).~~

~~The ancients knew little of the course of the Nile above MERrorE (q.v.). Juba, in his Libyca, quoted by Pliny, makes the Nile rise in western Mauretania, not far from the ocean, in a lake pre- senting characteristic Nile fauna, then pass underground for several days' journey to a similar lake in Mauretania Cesariensis, again continue underground for twenty days' journey to the source called Nigris on the borders of Africa and Ethiopia, and thence flow through Ethiopia as the Astapus. This tissue of invention re- ceived strange favour in the eyes of many subsequent geographers, and actually left its traces in some of our maps down to a com- paratively modern time. Strabo, who ascended the river as far as Syene, states that very early investigators had connected the in- undation of the lower Nile with summer rains on the far south- ern mountains, and that their theory had been confirmed by the observations of travellers under the Ptolemies. Nero despatched two centurions on an expedition for the express purpose of explor- ing the Nile, and Seneca informs us that they reached a marshy impassable region, which may be easily identified with the country of the White Nile above the mouth of the Sobat. To what they re- ferred when they reported a great mass of water falling from between two rocks is not so readily determined. By the time of Ptolemy in- formation had somewhat accumulated. Two streams, he says, issu- ing from two lakes! (one in 6° and the other in 7° S. lat.), unite in 2° N. lat. to make the Nile which in 12° N. lat. receives the Astapus, a river flowing from Lake Coloe (on the equator). Thus it would appear that he had heard vaguely about the lakes which we~~

~~know as Victoria Nyanza, Albert Nyanza, and Tana. His two southern lakes, he conceived, were fed by the melting of snows on a range of moun- tains running east and west for upwards of 500 miles—the Moun- tains of the Moon, +d ris ceAhvns bpos, Lunxw Montes. To this opinion he was probably led by hearsay about the snow-clad summits of Kilimanjaro and Kenia. On all the subsequent history of the geography of the Nile Ptolemy's theory had an enormous influence. Medieval maps and descriptions, both European and Arabian, reproduce the Mountains of the Moon and the equatorial lakes with a variety of probable or impossible modifications, Even Speke congratulated himself on identifying the old Ptolemean range with the high lands to the north of Tanganyika, and connected the name with that of Unyamwezi, the " country of the moon."~~

~~1 The two lakes afterwards received the names Lake of Crocodiles and Lake of Cataracts.~~

~~NIL—NIL~~

~~Attacking the lake region from the east coast, the Portuguese ex- plorers gained a good deal of information which found its way into such maps as those of Pigafctta (1580); but it was not till the present century that the geography of those parts was placed on the basis of fully accepted observations. On November 14, 1770, Bruce reached Lake Tana, and considering, as he did, that the Bluc Nile was the main branch, very fairly claimed for himself the honour of being the discoverer of the long-sought caput Nili.~~

~~The following are a few of the chief dates in the progress of knowledge since 1800 in regard to the river system:—~~

~~1807. Completion of Jacotin's Atlas de l' Egypte (surveys from the Mediterranean to Assuan). 1814. Burckhardt goes up the Nile, partly by land, as far as Shendi, crosses to the Atbara, and skirts the east side to Gos Rajeb. 1819. Cailliaud is the first to visit Meroe. 1820. Steamers first ascend the cataracts to Korosko. 1822. Cailliaud and Letorzec ascend the Blue Nile with Ibrahim Pasha's military expedition as far as Fazokl. 1827. Linant Bey ascends White Nile 182 geographical miles to Al Ais, in 13° 43' N, lat. Prokesch von Osten surveys the Nile between Assnan and Wady~~

Halfa. 1839. Mehemet Ali sends up White Nile an expedition,

usually known as the First Egyptian Expedition, under Selim Bim- bashi, which (28th January 1840) reaches an island Badelik, in 6° 30’ N. lat., but adds little information. Thibaut (Ibrahim Effendi) was a member of this expedition. 1840-41. A second Egyptian expedition (D’Arnaud, Sabatier, Werne) reaches island of Janker near Gon- dokoro, about 4° 42’ N. lat. 1841-42. Third Egyptian expedition (Selim Bimbashi, D’Arnaud, Sabatier, Thibaut). 1845. Brun- Rollet founds trading post not far from subsequent site of Heili- genkreuz. 1846. First steamboat on White Nile. 1849. Baron Von Miiller surveys the Nile from Handak to Ambakol in province of Dongola. 1850. Knoblecher (of Austrian mission) reached Log- wek. 1855. Rcbmann (missionary at Kisulutini, north-west of Mombasa) sends home map showing Lake Ukerewe, extending from 0° 30’ N. lat. to 18° 30’S. lat. 1858. Speke, twenty marches north of Kazeh, where he had left Burton, reaches shore of Victoria Ny- anza. 1859. Miani reaches mouth of Unyama. 1860. Pruyssenaere starts from Khartoum up the White Nile. 1862. Speke reaches Ripon Falls. Stcudner passes down the Ra‘ad and Blue Nile to Khartoum. The Tinné expedition goes five hours’ journey beyond Gondokoro on the White Nile. 1864. Sir Samuel Baker reaches Albert Nyanza. Petherick closes a long series of wanderings in the White Nile and Bahr al-Ghazal districts. 1868-71. Schweinfurth explores the western affluents of White Nile. 1871-73. Baker in the White Nile region. 1874. Watson and Chippendall survey the river from Khartoum to Rejaf, and J. Kemp from Rejaf to Dufile. 1875. Stanley circumnavigates Victoria Nyanza. 1877. First voyage across Victoria Nyanza by Rev. C. T. Wilson and Lieutenant Shergold Smith. 1881-82. Schuver in the source- district of the Tumat. (H, A. W.)

NILGIRI, a petty state in Orissa, Bengal, India, bounded on the N. and W. by Morbhanj state and on the S. and E. by Balasor district, with an area 278 square miles, of which only one-third is under cultivation, Valuable quarries of black stone are worked, from which cups, bowls, platters, &c., are made. The population in 1881 was 50,972.

NILGIRI HILLS, or NerteuErry Hix, a district and range of mountains in the Madras presidency, India, lying between 11° 12’ and 11° 37’ N. lat. and

between 76° 18’ and 77° 5’ E. long., and bounded on the N. by Mysore, E. by Coimbatore, 8. by Coimbatore and Malabar, and W. by Malabar. The district until recently consisted exclusively of a mountain plateau lying at an average elevation of 6500 feet, with an area of about 725 square miles. In 1873 this was increased by the addition of the Ochterlony valley in the south-east Waindd, and again, in 1877, by other portions of the Wainad, making a total area of 957 square miles. The administrative headquarters is at Utakamand, which is also the summer capital of the Government of Madras. The summit of the Nilgiri Hills is an undulating plateau, frequently breaking into lofty ridges and steep rocky eminences. The descent to the plains is sudden and abrupt, the average fall from the crest to the general level below being about 6000 feet, save on the north, where the base of the mountains rests upon the elevated land of Waindd and Mysore, standing between 2000 and 3000 feet above sea-level. The Ochterlony valley and Wainad country consist of a series of broken valleys, once forest- clad throughout, but now studded with coffee-gardens,

NIM—NIM

†

The highest mountain peaks are—Dodabetta, 8760 feet ; Kudiakad, 8502; Bevoibetta, 8488; Makurti, 8402; Davarsolabetta, 8380 ; Kunda, 8353; Kundamoge, 7816 ; Utakamand, 7361; Tambrabetta, 7292 ; Hokabetta, 7267. Thereare six well-known passes or ghdts by which the district communicates with the neighbouring provinces, viz., the Kuntir, Segtr, Gudalur, Sispéra, Kotdgiri, and Sundapatti, the first three of which are practicable to wheeled traffic. The chief rivers are the Moydr, Paikara, and Calicut, none of which are navigable within the district. The only lake of note is an artificial one, Utakamand (7220 feet above sea-level), which is nearly 2 miles long. The forests consist of fine timber trees, such as sdl (Shorea robusta), kino (Pterocarpus Marsupium), jack (Artocarpus integrifolia), blackwood (Dalbergia latifolia), and teak. Eucalyptus and Australian wattle have been extensively planted in the higher grounds of the Waindd. The hills were first explored by British officers in 1814, and in 1821 the first English house was built on the plateau.

The population of the district in 1881 was 91,034. The only town with more than 5000 inhabitants is Utakamand, with a popula- tion of 12,335. The most interesting of the hill tribes are the Todas, who regard themselves as autochthonous. They are a tall, well- proportioned, and athletic race, but indolent and dirty. Their sole occupation is cattle herding and dairy work. They practise poly- andry, a woman marrying all the brothers of a family. In religion they follow a species of Hinduism, and also worship their dairy buffaloes. The race seems to be gradually dying out, and in 1881 only numbered 675. The most numerous as well as the most wealthy and civilized of the hill tribes are the Badagas. They are occupied in agriculture, dress after the fashion of the natives of the plains, and are fond of ornaments. They profess Hinduism, and in 1881 numbered 24,130. The Kotas, another hill tribe (1065 in 1881), follow agriculture and various handicrafts. They perform menial offices for the Todas and Badagas, and, like the latter, pay a gudu to the Todas. They worship "ideal" gods, which are not represented by any image. The Kurumbas, or shepherds (3185 in 1881), are the most uncivilized of the hill tribes, and officiate as priests to the Badagas. Besides cultivating on a small scale, they collect various sorts of jungle produce, which they barter on the plains for grain and cloth. The Irulas (946 in 1881) live on the lowest slopes and forests, extending from the base of the Nilgiris to the plains. They are an idle and dissolute tribe, although in plysique adapted to hard manual labour.

The ordinary crops grown on the Nilgiri Hills include wheat, barley, and other cereals, oilseeds, and nearly every variety of English vegetables and fruits. The commercially important pro- ducts are coffee, tea, and cinchona. Coffee cultivation was introduced about 1844. One of its chief seats is the beautiful Ochterlony valley. The Madras Government commenced the experimental cultivation of cinchona on the Nilgiris in 1860, and in 1882 the receipts therefrom amounted to over £50,000. Several private cinchona gardens have been laid out, owing to the success of the Government experiment. There are 190 miles of road, bridged and available for wheeled traffic. The climate of the Nilgiri Hills is almost unrivalled for equability of temperature. The average is 58° F.

NIMAR, a district in the Central Provinces, India, lying between 21° 4' and 22° 26' N. lat. and between 75° 50' and 77° 1' E. long,, and bounded on the

N. and W. by Dhar and Indore states, S. by Khandesh and West Berar, and E. by Hoshangabad. 'The area is 3340 square miles, of which only 659 are under cultivation. The population in 188] was 231,341 (embracing 199,454 Hindus, 24,426 Mohammedans, 5282 aborigines,—the most numerous tribe of these being the Bhils). Khandwa town is the administrative headquarters. The district consists of two portions of the Nerbudda and Tapti valleys, separated by a range of hills, a section of the Sdtpura range, about 15 miles in breadth. On the highest peak, about 850 feet above the plain and 1800 above sea-level, stands the fortress of Asirgarh, commanding a pass which has for centuries been the chief highway between Upper India and the Deccan. The district con- tains extensive forests, but the only tract reserved by Government is the Pundsa forest, which extends for about 120 miles along the south bank of the Nerbudda, and

contains very fine young teak, besides sdj (Terminalia tomentosa) and anjan (Hardwickia binata) of great size. The only towns with a population exceeding 5000, in 1881, were Khandwa, the district capital (15,142), and Burhanpur (30,017). The principal line of road is that from Khandwa to Indore. The Great Indian Peninsular Railway traverses the district.

NIMEGUEN, Nimwecen, or Nymrcen (Dutch, W¢jme- gen), probably the oldest of all the cities of the Netherlands, is situated in the province of Guelderland, on the south bank of the Waal, 80 miles from the sea and 17 miles north-west of Cleves. Built partly on a row of five hills—Hessenberg or Hezelberg, Marienberg, Gruitberg, Klokken- berg, and Hunnenberg or Hoenderberg—so that stairs are necessary to lead to the higher portions, Nimeguen stands out with a boldness quite unusual in a Dutch town. Till past the middle of the present century it was strongly fortified, its old walls, erected in 1447, having been strengthened from time to time with extensive bastions and outworks. The beautiful park—the Valkhof—at the east end of the town is the site of Charlemagne's palace, which was still habitable in 1787, but, being greatly damaged during the French bombardment of 1794, was in 1796 sold for what it would bring. Two portions were fortunately preserved,—the vault of a chapel (" Pagan's Chapel"), with two white marble Corinthian pillars, and an octagonal baptistery ("Roman Chapel").

~~Near the Valkhof stands a lofty tower, the Belvidere, erected by the duke of Alva. The great church (St Stephen's), which forms one of the most striking features in the general view of the town, was originally built between 1254 and 1273, but in its present condition dates mainly from the 15th and 16th centuries. The immense nave is roofed with circular vaulting and supported by thirty-five slender pulars. In the choir is the monument of Catherine of Bourbon (1469), wife of Adolphus, duke of Guelderland. The town-house, built in 1554, is adorned with medallions representing the kings and emperors who had been bene- factors of Nimeguen, and contains the great hall in which the treaty of 1678 was concluded. On the ground-floor is a cumbrous and strong safe in which the town's charters from that of Henry IV. in 1230 were preserved with the most jealous care, the garrison being called out and the gates closed when it was necessary to consult any of them. Other buildings of note are the theatre (1838-39), the old burghers' almshouse, the Protestant hospital (1849), and the Roman Catholic or Canisius hospital (1866). Between 1656 and 1679 Nimeguen was the seat of a university ; it has now nothing higher thana gymnasium. 'Tools, gold and silver work, leather, furniture, tobacco, &ec., are the chief products of the local industry ; and a good deal of traffic is carried on both by means of the river and (since 1865) the railway. The population of the town in 1870 was 19,196 ; that of the commune increased from 22,929 (15,984 Roman Catholics, 5806 Dutch Reformed, 408 Jews) in 1875 to 24,984 in 1879.~~

~~The name Nimeguen appears for the first time as Noviomagum in the Tabula Pcutingeriana, but several antiquaries seek to identify the town with the Oppidum Batavorum of Tacitus, Charlemagne's palace continued to be the temporary residence of kings and em- perors for many generations. Prince Henry, son of Conrad II. (1026), and the emperor Henry IV. (1164) were both born within its walls. In 1247-48 William, king of the Romans, pawned the town to Reinald of Guelders, but in 1316 the people refused to remain under his authority. The Burgundians, who entered after a four weeks' sicge in 1478, were expelled in 1477. In 1494 the arch- duke Maximilian was successfully repulsed. The duke of Alva, with ten companies of Spanish soldiers, took possession in 1568 ; but in 1579 Nimeguen joined the Union. In 1584 the duke of Parma's attempt to recover the town proved a failure; next year, the people having expelled the states garrison, he was successful ; and, Martin Schenk having lost his life in a~~

rash coup de main in 1589, the Spaniards werc left in possession till 1591. Between 1672

510

and 1674 the town was held by the French; they attacked it again in 1703 without success, got easy possession of it in 1794, and remained till 1814.

NIMES, or Nismss, a city of France, chief town of the department of Gard, a bishop's see and seat of a court of appeal, lies 450 miles south-south-east of Paris by the Clermont-Ferrand Railway, and 80 miles north-west of Marseilles. The importance of the place is due to its central position between the Rhone, the Cevennes, and the sea, to the richness of the surrounding district, which before the ravages of the Phylloxera was clothed with vines, to its commerce and industry, and lastly to its archeological treasures. No town in France can show so many remains of the Roman period. The amphitheatre is still in a good state of preservation. Occupied during the . Middle Ages by a special quarter, with even a church of its own, it was cleared in 1809, and since then has been well kept in repair. It is built of large stones without mortar. In form it is elliptical, measuring 437} by 332} feet externally ; the arena is 327 by 222 feet. The elevation (70 feet in all) consists of a ground story of 60 arches, an upper story of 60 arches, and an attic with consoles pierced with holes for supporting the velariwm or awning. There

BOT, DY Ray SI Ba ES 5 FERRETS

H 528 SSSI

Wah

lel ye nl

¶

SIE

'Plan of Nimes.

are four main gates, one at each of the cardinal points ; and no fewer than one hundred and twenty-four doorways gave exit from the tiers of the amphitheatre to the inner galleries. Originally designed for gladiatorial shows, or stag or boar hunts, the area has in recent times been sometimes used for bull-fights. The celebrated Maison Carrée, a temple in the style of the Parthenon, but on a smaller scale, 82 feet long by 40 wide, is one of the finest monuments of the Roman period, and probably dates from the time of the Antonines. It contains a collection of antique sculptures and inscriptions. The temple of Diana,—possibly a building connected with the neighbouring baths,—is now overgrown with fig trees and climbing plants, but preserves a few fragments of statues and some rustic columns. The Tour Magne (Turris Magna), situated on the highest point in the city, 375 feet above sea-level, is still 92 feet in height, and was formerly a third higher. Admittedly the oldest monu- ment of Nimes, it has been variously regarded as an old signal tower, a treasure-house, or the tomb of a Greek family settled in Gaul along with the earliest Phoenician

i (t

colonists. Attached to the ramparts erected by Augustus, and turned into a fortress in the Middle Ages by the counts of Toulouse, the Tour Magne was restored about 1840. From the top there is a magnificent view extending from Canigou at the east end of the Pyrenees to Mont Ventoux, an outpost of the Alps; northward it takes in the vine- and olive-clad Garrigues and the Cevennes, eastward the valley of the Rhone and the Vaucluse and Alpine ranges, and southward the Mediterranean and the Aigues Mortes ramparts. Near the Tour Magne has been discovered the reservoir from which the water conveyed by the Pont du Gard was distributed throughout the city. Two gates, that of Augustus dating from 16 B.c., and the Porte de France, both semicircular arches, are preserved as historical. monuments. Many of the finest buildings known to have existed have disappeared. When it still possessed its capitol, the temple of Augustus, the basilica of Plotina erected under Hadrian, the temple of Apollo, the hot baths, the theatre, the circus, constructed in the reign ot Nero, the Campus Martius, and the fortifications built by Augustus, Nimes must have been one of the richest of the Roman

cities of Gaul. The cathedral (St Castor), occupy- ing, it is believed, the site of the temple of Augustus, is partly Roman and partly Gothic in style. It contains the tombs of Fléchier and Cardinal de Bernis. The church of St Paul, a modern Romanesque building, is adorned with frescos by Flandrin; St Baudile (modern Gothic) is of note for the two stone spires which adorn its facade; and the court-house has a fine Corinthian colonnade and a pediment. Other buildings and in- stitutions of note are the hospitals, the barracks, the old citadel (dating from 1687, and now used as a central house of detention), the picture gallery in the old lycée, the public library (50,000 volumes), and the museum of natural history.

The esplanade in front of the court-house has in the centre a handsome fountain with five marble statues by Pradier. The Fountain Gardens, in the north-west of the town, owe their peculiar character as well as their name to a spring of water which after heavy rains is copious enough not only to fill the ornamental basins (constructed in the 18th century with balustrades and statues on ancient foundations) but also to form a considerable stream. Neither the spring, however, nor the Vistre into which it

| discharges, is sufficient for the wants of the city, and water

has consequently been brought from the Rhone, a distance of 17 miles. A beautiful avenue, the Cours Neuf, runs south for nearly a mile from the middle walk of the garden.

At the close of the Middle Ages the industries of Nimes were raised to a state of great prosperity by a colony from Lombardy and Tuscany ; and, though the plague, the wars of religion, and the revocation of the edict of Nantes were all sufficiently disastrous in their effects, before the Revolution about half of the whole community, or from 10,000 to 12,000 persons, had come to be engaged in manufactures. Since then, however, the numbers of this class have hardly increased, while the population of the city has been doubled. The silk manufacture (reeling, spinning, weaving) no longer occupies all hands. Uphol- stery materials (which have almost displaced shawls), carpets, handkerchiefs, tapes, braidings, hosiery, leather, clothes, and boots and shoes are also produced ; and, coal being worked in the neighbourhood, a number of found-

ries have been established. Nimes is, besides, one of the

great southern markets for wine and brandy, silks and cocoons ; and there isa good trade in grain, groceries, and colonial wares. 'The population of the city in 188] was 61,210; that of the commune was 62,394 in 1871, and 63,552 in 1881.

NIM—NIN

Nemausus, the ancient Nimes, derived its name from the saered wood in which the Volee Arecomici (who of their own accord sur- rendered to the Romans in 121 B.c.) were wont to hold their assemblies. Constituted a colony of veterans by Augustus, and endowed with numerous privileges, it built a temple and struck a medal in honour of its founder. The medal, which afterwards furnished the type for the coat of arms granted to the town by Francis I., bears on one side the heads of Cesar Augustus and Vipsanius Agrippa (the former crowned with laurel), while on the other there is a crocodile chained to a palm-tree, with the legend Cot. Nem. It was Agrippa who built the public baths at Nimes, the temple of Diana, and the aqueduct of the Pont du Gard. The city-walls, erected by Augustus, were nearly 4 miles in circuit, 30 feet high, and 10 feet broad, flanked by ninety towers, and pierced by ten gates. Hadrian on his way back from Britain erected at Nimes two memorials of his benefactress Plotina. In the very height of its prosperity the city was ravaged by the Vandals; the Visigoths followed, and turned the amphitheatre into a stronghold, which at a later date was set on fire along with the gates of the city when Charles Martel drove out the Saracens. Nimes became a republic under the protection of Pippin the Short ; and in 1185 it passed to the counts of Toulouse, who restored its prosperity and enclosed it with ramparts whose enceinte, less extensive than that of Augustus, may still be traced in the boulevards of the present day. The city took part in the crusade against the Albigenses in 1207. Under Louis VIII. it received a royal garrison into its amphitheatre ; under Louis XI. it was captured by the duke of Burgundy, and in 1420 was recovered by the dauphin (Charles VII.). On a visit to Nimes Francis I. enriched it with a university and a school of arts. By 1558 about three-fourths of the inhabitants had become Protestant, and the city suffered greatly during the religious wars. From the accession of Henry IV. till the revocation of the

edict of Nantes (1685) the Protestant community devoted itself to active industry ; but after that disastrous event great nunibers went into exile or joined the Camisards. Louis XIV. built a fortress (1687) to keep in check the disturbances caused by the rival religious parties. Nimes passed unhurt through the storms of the Revolution; but in 1815 Trestaillon and his bandit followers pillaged and burned and plundered and massacred the Bonapartists and Protestants. Since then the city has remainced divided into two strongly-marked factions—Catholics and Protestants ; happily, however, there has been no repetition of such scenes. Domitius Afer (Quintilian's master), Jacques Saurin the Protestant divine, Nicot the introducer of tobacco into France, Séguier the archelogist, Guizot, and Reboul (the Provencal poet whose statue adorns the Promenade de la Fontaine) are among the celebrated natives of Nimes.

NIMROD (NeBpwd, LXX.), apart from the mere mention of his name in Micah v. 5 (A.V., v. 6), occurs only once in Scripture, namely, in Gen. x. 8-12 (1 Chron. i. 10), where, in a Jehovistic portion of the genealogy of the nations there given, we are told that "Cush begat Nimrod, who was the first mighty one in the earth (he was a mighty hunter before Jehovah, wherefore it is said—A mighty hunter before Jehovah even as Nimrod), and the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech and Accad, and Calneh in the land of Shinar. Out of that land he went forth into Asshur! and builded Nineveh," &c. Just as Enos was the first to call upon the name of Jehovah, and Noah the first to plant vines, so is Nimrod the first mighty ruler in the earth, and as such at the same time a mighty hunter before Jehovah, after the manner of the Oriental sovereigns of old. By the Hebrews the Assyrio-Baby- lonian empire was at all periods regarded as the prototype of the worldly power; and it is of this kingdom that Nimrod here figures as the founder—not in its prehistorical but in its historical form as actually subsisting at the time of the writer. This is apparent, not only from the general character of the genealogical table, but also from the enumeration of the cities in the land of Shinar and Asshur. As founder of the kingdom, Nimrod represents both kingdom and people ; the genealogy knows no distinction between the hero and the nation,—the latter is the family of the former. When, therefore, Nimrod is said to be descended from Cush, the mighty nation of Asshur and Babel (which in Gen. x. 22 is regarded as belonging to

1 Not ‘out of that land went forth Asshur”; for the ‘‘ beginning” of his kingdom demands a continuation, and Asshur is called Nimrod’s land in Micah v. 5.

511

Shem) is also by the Jehovist assigned to Cush. Shem for him seems to have a very narrow meaning, expressing merely the contrast between the Hebrew lords and their Canaanite subjects; Cush, on the other hand (like “Ivdcu with the Greeks), is a very comprehensive and vague word, which does not readily admit of clear geographical or ethnological definition, and therefore also cannot be brought into contrast with Shem if Shem be used in its modern application as indicating race. A god spoken of as ‘Marri with his hounds” was still worshipped in Harran after the introduction of Christianity (Assem., Bibl, Or., i. 327); that this Marri is akin to Nimrod is suggested on the one hand by his hounds and on the other by the etymology of the two names derived from the synonymous roots mry and mrd. Nimrod looks like a Syriac imperfect of the root mrd, in which case it would seem to follow that the legend arose among the Syrians, the next neighbours of the Babylonians and Assyrians, and from them had passed over to the Hebrews. Then, further, Nimrod may be a modification of the name Merodach, the Babylonian chief god, the final syllable -ach being dropped.? To the later Jews Babylon was the complete embodiment of the enmity of the heathen world against the kingdom of God, and the idea they formed of Nimrod was influenced by this view. The arrogance of his character, which seemed to be implied in his very name, was conceived of as defiance of God, and he became a heaven-storming Titan. As such he built the tower of Babel, and as such was he identified with the giant in bonds in the constellation of Orion. Jewish legend made choice of Abraham to be his antithesis, the representative of God’s kingdom over against the heathen autocrat. Nimrod cast the bold confessor of the true God into the fire of the Chaldeans (Ur Kasdim), whence, according to Gen. xv, 7, Isa. xxix. 22, Jehovah delivered him.? The Jewish material was afterwards treated by Mohammed and the Arabian theologians, who mixed it up with other elements. Compare Philo, De Gigantibus, sec. 15 (Mang., p. 272); Jos., Ant., 1. 4, 2; 6, 2; Chron. Pasch., p. 36 (Cedren., p. 14); Jerome and Jonathan on Gen. xi. 28 ; Tabari, i. pp. 319-325. (J. WE.) NINEVEH

(Hebrew 3°), in classical authors Nivos, Ninus; LXX., Nwev; Jerome, Niniue), the famous capital of the Assyrian empire, called Ninua or Nina on the monuments. Though the city appears to have been entirely destroyed in the fall of the empire 4 the name of Nineveh (Syriac, Vinwe ; Arabic, Ninawd, Niinawd) con- tinued, even in the Middle Ages, to be applied to a site opposite Mosul on the east bank of the Tigris, where gigantic tells or artificial mounds, and the traces of an ancient city wall, bore evident witness of fallen greatness.® The walls enclose an irregular trapezium, stretching in length about 2} miles along the Tigris, which protected the city on the west. The greatest breadth is over a mile. The most elaborate defences, consisting of outworks and moats that can still be traced, were on the southern half of the east side, for the deep sluggish Khausar, which

2 Compare the converse gaAwyx, LXX., in 1 Chron. v. 26 for bp,

3 Beer, Leben Abrahams (1859), p. 1 sg. Compare Dan. iii., whence the confusion of Nimrod with Nebuchadnezzar by the Arabs.

4 It is generally agreed, and the description hardly leaves a doubt, that the ruins of Mespila‘and Larissa described by Xenophon, Anaod., iii, 4, 7 sq., are Kuyunjik and Nimrid respectively. In this case we can be certain that there was no inhabited city on the spot at the time of the march of the Greeks with Cyrus. Comp. Strabo xvi. p. 245.

5 The references collected by Tuch, De Nino Urbe, Leipsic, 1845, are copious, but might easily be added to. Ibn Jubair, p. 287 sq., who as usual is pillaged by Ibn Batuta, ii. 187, gives a good descrip- tion of the ruins and of the great shrine of Jonah as they were in the 12th century. The name Ninawa was not appropriated to the ruins, but was applied to the Rustak (fields and hamlets) that stood on the site (BelAdhori, p. 331; Ibn Haukal, p. 145; Yakut, ii. 694).

8 A change in the bed of the stream has left a space between the wall and the present channel of the Tigris.

protects the northern half of this face, then bends round towards the -Tigris and flows through the middle of the town, so as to leave the south-east of the city more open to attack than any other part. The principal ruin mounds within the walls are that of Kuyunjik, north of the Khausar, and that ° ; G

of the prophet Jonah (Nebi Yu- nus) south of that stream. Thelatter is the traditional } site of Jonah's preaching, and is FQ crowned by an ancient and fam- ous Mohammedan shrine. The sys- tematic explora- tion of these ruins is mainly due to Layard (1845- 46), whose work has been con- tinued by subse- quent diggers. These researches leave no doubt Fie. 1.—Country round Nineveh.

as to the correctness of the local tradition. Not only have magnificent remains of Assyrian architecture and sculpture been laid bare, but the accompanying cuneiform inscriptions throw much light on the history of the city

SS a7, = ian eI NEY .

=

ny

y) LW se

C] RS md

'a e Wk stain, "

are Way j en & ~ A

a

apilllablaadg, ee 3 SPs then

~~“ex,~~

•

~~ey KUYUR, sy~~

~~%, 3~~

~~Paar’ Yunus, we, S a~~

~~=~~

~~é gunn seo iggy~~

~~500 1000 2000 S000YARDS~~

~~Fic. 2.—Ruins of Nineveh.~~

~~and its buildmgs. The mound of Kuyiunjik covers palaces of Sennacherib and Assurbanipal,! that of Jonah a second palace of Sennacherib and one of Esarhaddon. Of other remains, the most striking is the gateway near the centre of the north wall, consisting of two halls, 70 feet by 23, the entrance to which towards the town was flanked by colossal man-headed bulls and winged human figures. For the structure and art of the palaces see vol. ii. p. 397 and vol. iii. p. 189. EE ES Ee ene ee Wn ne 1 In this palace is the famous library chamber from which Layard~~

~~and George Smith brought the tablets now in the British Museum, containing the account of the deluge.~~

~~NINEVEH~~

~~Nineveh proper was only one of a group of cities and royal residences whose ruins still mark the plain between the Tigris, the Great Zdb, and the Khazir. The chief of these are at Khorsdbad or Khurustabad, five hours by caravan north-east of Mosul, on a tributary of the Khausar, and at Nimrtd, on the left bank of the Tigris, eight caravan hours (18 miles) south-east from Kuyunjik. The former site was mainly explored by the Frenchmen~~

Botta and Place. The city was almost square, each face of the wall a little more thana mile in length. The vast T-shaped palace of Sargon (722-705 B.c.), whose name the town bore (Dur-Sarrukin), stood near the northern angle. Its main frontage was nearly a quarter of a mile long ; it had thirty-one courts and more than two hundred apartments.?

The ruins of Nimrud, identical with the ruin Athtr of Arabic geographers (Yakut, s.ow. "Athur," "Salamiya"), and first excavated by Layard, represent the ancient city of Kalhu, the Biblical Calah. The enclosure, protected on the west by the old bed of the Tigris, is, according to Layard's measurements, a quadrangle of 2331 yards by 2095 at the widest part, and was surrounded by walls with towers and moats. 'The chief architectural remains belong to a group of palaces and temples which occupied the south-west quarter of the city. The principal palace (north-west palace) was built by Assur-nasir-pal (885-860 B.c.), and beside it he raised a temple with a great tower (falsely called the tomb of Sardanapalus) built in narrowing stages. The so-called central palace is that of his son Shalmaneser IL.; the unfinished south-west palace was the work of Esar-haddon. Of the so-called south-east palace the chief part is really a temple of Nebo; a statue of the god from this temple is in the British Museum.

The main points in the history of these three great cities which are held to be established by monumental evidence are these. The ancient capital of Assyria was Assur (Kal'a Sherkat) on the Tigris, 50 miles south of Mosul. Assur-nasir-pal transferred the residence to Calah, a city which he tells us upon an inscription had been originally founded by Shalmaneser I. (c. 1300 B.c.), but had subse- quently fallen into decay. Calah seems to have been the chief seat of the kings till Sargon the captor of Samaria founded his residence at Khorsabad ; the glory of Ninevch proper begins with Sennacherib, but the city existed earlier, for his inscribed bricks represent him. only as rebuilder of the walls. It is even averred that kings of the 19th and 15th centuries B.c. built temples at Nineveh, but the remoter dates of Assyrian history must be received with caution.? From the time of Sennacherib down to the fall of the capital and empire—an event the date of which is still uncertain, the ancient accounts varying between 626 and 608 B.c.—Nineveh proper, that is, the city on the Tigris and Khausar, appears to have been the chief seat of empire. But when the book of Jonah speaks of

~~Nineveh as a city of three days' journey, or when Ctesias in Diodorus ii. 3 describes its circuit as 480 stadia, it is plain that these conceptions imply an extension of the name to the whole group of cities between the Tigris and the Zab. In this connexion the words of Gen. x. 11 sg, are remarkable; for, on the most natural view, the clause " this is the great city " applies not to Resen alone but to the four cities of Nineveh, Rehoboth Ir, Calah, and Resen. Rehoboth Ir and Resen are still untraced ; the Syriac tradition which connects the latter with Résh 'Aina, that is, with Khorsabad, does not agree with the text, which says expressly that Resen was between Nineveh and Calah, and indeed the verses in Genesis appear to be older than the foundation of the city of Sargon. The description would suit the mound of Salaniiya a little above Nimrid, but in fact the whole district is studded with ruins.~~

~~See the works of Layard, Botta and Flandin, V. Place, Oppert (Expédition en Mesopotamie}, and G. Smith (Assyrian Discoveries). For the ruins and their exploration, Tuch's Commentatio, above cited, gives all that was known before the explorations; Schrader, Keilinsch. u. A. T. gives the bearing of recent dis- coveries on the Biblical records. See also, in general, the article BABYLONIA, vel, iii. p. 183 sg. CW. R. 8.)~~

~~® There is some evidence that Syriac tradition connected these ruins With the name of Sargon ; though our authority Yakut, in giving the alleged old name of Khurustabad, has corrupted Sarghin into Sar'in, by writing ¢ for =}, Another Syriac tradition connects Khurusta-~~

~~bad with Resen, finding the name Resen in the neighbouring Ras al-'Ain (Résh "Aina). See Hoffmann, Syrische Acten, p. 183.~~

~~8 The legend of Ninus and Semiramis in classical authors appears to be of late origin and quite unhistorical. Ninus is merely the eponym hero of Nineveh.~~

~~NIN—NIO~~

~~NING-PO, or Nrvc-Po-Foo (i.e., City of the Hospitable Waves), a great city of China, one of the five seaports thrown open to foreign trade in 1842 by the treaty of Nanking, and the principal emporium of the province of~~

~~Chekeang, stands in a fine plain bounded by mountains towards the west, on the left bank of the Takia or Ning-po river, about 16 miles from its mouth, in 29° 51' N. lat. and 121° 39' E. long. It is surrounded by a fine old wall, 25 feet high and 16 feet broad, pierced by six gates and two passages for ships in its circuit of 4 to 5 miles. Just within the walls there is a considerable belt of open ground, and in many places the ramparts are thickly covered with jasmine and honeysuckle. In ascending the river a stranger's eye is first caught by the numerous huge ice- houses with high thatched roofs and by a tall white tower — the Tien-fung-tah or Ning-po pagoda or obelisk — which rises to a height of 160 feet, and has fourteen stories and seven tiers of windows, but has unfortunately been stripped of its galleries and otherwise damaged. Another striking structure in the heart of the city is the Drum Tower, dating from before the 15th century. As is natural in a place long celebrated for its religious and educational pre-eminence, there is no lack of temples, monasteries, and colleges, but few of these are of any architectural signifi- cance. Brick is the ordinary building material, and the dwelling-houses are mostly of one story. Silks, cottons, carpets, furniture, white-wood carvings, and straw hats are the chief products of the local industry. Large salt-works are carried on in the vicinity, and thousands of fishermen are engaged, mainly between April and July, in catching the cuttlefish. In spite of the powerful competition of Shanghai, Ning-po has a valuable foreign trade. It is regu- larly visited by the vessels of the China Navigation Company and the Chinese Merchants Steam Navigation Company. From 216,191 register tons in 1873 the tonnage of the port had increased to 303,109 in 1880, — British shipping having advanced from 18,592 tons to 86,175, and Chinese shipping from 17,972 to 209,487, though on the other hand the American total had sunk from 170,351 to 2100. The principal import is opium, £982,507 being the average value of the annual quantity between 1876 and 1880. Lead for packing tea was formerly a leading item, but it now enters mainly by other ports. Straw or grass hats, straw mats, samshu (from the Shaou-hing district), Chinese drugs, vegetable tallow, and fish are among the chief exports ; in 1877 (the maximum year) the hats num- bered 13,724,822, though in 1863 they had only amounted to 40,000, and the mats, mainly despatched to South China, average from 500,000 to 1,000,000. After the storming of Chinhai — the fortified town at the mouth of the river — on October 10, 1841, the British forces quietly took possession of Ning-po on~~

the 12th. In 1864 the Taipings held the town for six months. Missions are main- tained in Ning-po by the Romish Church, by the Church Missionary Society (1848), the American Presbyterians, the Reformed Wesleyans, the China Inland Mission (1857), &c. A mission hospital was instituted in 1843. The population of the city and suburbs is estimated at from 400,000 to

500,000.

NINIAN (Nuryianus or Nyyias), St, was, according to the earliest account of him we possess,—that of Bede (H. E., iii. 4),—a bishop of the nation of the Britons who had been trained at Rome in the doctrine and discipline of the Western Church, and who built at Leukopibia (a town of Ptolemy's Novante, on the west side of Wigtown Bay, the modern Whithorn) a stone church, called Candida Casa, dedicated to St Martin of Tours. He is said to have converted the Picts to the south of the Grampians. An old Irish account mentions that he spent his last years in Ireland, where he founded a church in Leinster called

O13

Cluain Conaire ; he was 'afterwards commemorated there under the name of Monenn ("Nenn" being simply "Ninian" with the Irish mo, or "my," prefixed). There is some evidence that the founding of Candida Casa took place in the year of the death of Martin of Tours (397). The date of Ninian's own death is unknown; he is com- memorated in the Roman martyrology on September 16. See Skene, Celtic Scotland, vol. ii. A Life of St Numan, compiled in the 12th century by St Ailred of Rievaux, and edited by the late Bishop Forbes, is given in the fifth volume of The Historians of Scotland, Edinburgh, 1874.

NIOBE is a figure who appears in the legends of many parts of Greece, especially Thebes, Argos, and the Hermus valley. Proud of her numerous family, she scoffed at Leto as the mother of only two children. Apollo and Artemis, the children of Leto, slew all her children with their arrows; and Niobe, after vainly trying to defend them, wept over them till she became a rock which still weeps incessantly. It is probable that this tale was in its simplest form a myth of the annual destruction of the bloom of earth by the

~~shafts of the cruel sun-god, and that Niobe was a form of the mother-goddess, the goddess of all earthly life, whose progeny is thus slain every summer. The tragedians read in this tale a moralized myth of the instability of human bliss: Niobe became a representative of human nature, ever liable to become proud in prosperity and to forget the submission and respect due to the gods. In this form the legend has found permanent acceptance in literature and art. The metamorphosis of Niobe was adopted from the local legends of the Smyrna district ; here it is probable that Niobe was originally a title of the Meter Sipylene, the deity worshipped all round the sacred mountain of Sipylus. An archaic figure of the goddess, carved in the northern side of the mountain near Magnesia, gave rise to the tales current in this district, that Niobe had thrown herself down from the rock, or that she had been turned into stone. It seems necessary to distinguish from this archaic figure, which is still visible, the ‘‘ Niobe ” described by Pausanias and Quintus Smyrnzus, both natives of the district. This was an appearance assumed by a cliff in Sipylus when seen from a distance and from the proper point of view. In these later writers the genuine old local legend had been replaced by a new form, founded on the myth as developed by the tragedians; the archaic figure carved in the cliff was known by the natives to be an image of the mother-goddess, whom they worshipped there year by year. But, as with every other point in the legend in its most developed form, the natives had a local representative of the Niobe, the weeping rock, which they saw in the heart of Sipylus.~~

~~On the myth of Niobe and its artistic representation, especially on the famous group thought to be the work of Praxiteles or Scopas, copies of most of the figures in which are preserved at Florence, see Stark, Niobe wnd die Niobiden. On the ‘‘Niobe” in Mount Sipylus, see Hirschfield in Curtius, Bettrdge zur Gesch. u. Topogr. Klcinasiens; Stark, Nach dem griechischen Orient; Ramsay, ‘‘Sipy- los and Cybele,” in Journal of Hellenic Studies, 1882.~~

~~NIOBIUM, a very rare chemical element which was discovered by H. Rose in 1846 as a component of the columbite of Bodenmais. In it, as also in tantalite, pyrochlore, yttro-tantalite, and a few other rare minerals, it is constantly associated with tantalum, which was dis- covered byEkkeberg in 1802. Both metals, with vanadium, form a kind of appendage to the~~

nitrogen group of elements. Like these they are capable of forming acid pentoxides and corresponding chlorides and oxychlorides. The oxy-chlorides and oxyfluorides, NbOCI, and NbOF,, were origin- ally thought by Rose to be peculiar (unmixed) chlorides and fluorides of niobium, until Blomstrand ascertained their true nature. The atomic weights of the two elements are Ta = 182 and Nb=94.

XVII. —65

o14

NIORT, a city of France, chief town of the department of Deux Sévres, distant 255 miles south-west of Paris by the railway to Poitiers and La Rochelle (here crossed by the line from Angers to Angouléme), is situated at the head of navigation of the Sévre Niortaise, partly in the valley and partly on the slopes of the enclosing hills. The tower of the church of Notre Dame (16th century) has a spire 246 feet high, with bell-turrets adorned with statues of the evangelists, and at the base a richly-decorated dais in the Renaissance style; and the north doorway shows a balustrade, whose balusters form the inscription, O Mater Dei, memento mei. There is a fine window in the apse of St André, and St Hilaire contains some beautiful frescos. Of the old castle, whose site is partly occupied by the pre- fecture, there still remains the donjon—two large square towers, flanked by several of smaller dimensions. Built, it is said, by Henry IL. of England or Richard Coeur de Lion, the south tower contains four vaulted chambers one above the other, and the platform on the top affords a fine view of the public garden (one of the most picturesque in France) and the valley of the Sévre. The old town-house (now used as "justice de paix") is known as the Aliénor or Eléonore palace, after Eléonore of Guienne 3 near it is a Renaissance belfry. The convent of the Oratorians is occupied by a public library (30,000 volumes), a picture gallery, and museums of geology and antiquities—the last containing plaster copies of all objects of interest in the ancient monuments of the surrounding country. Niort further possesses extensive barracks, several hospitals, and a lycée named after Fontanes, grandmaster of the imperial university, who was born in the town. The house is still shown in which Madame de Maintenon was born while her father was imprisoned in the donjon. Tanning, currying, shammy-dressing,

~~glove-making, and hair-working are the staple industries of Noirt, —gloves alone giving employment to about one thousand workmen, and brush-making, hair-working, and allied industries to nearly as many.~~

~~Up to the 7th century the Niort plain formed part of the Gulf of Poitou; and the mouth of the Sévre lay at the foot of the hills now occupied by the town which grew up round the castle erected by Henry Plantagenet in 1155. The place was captured by Louis VIII. in 1224. By the peace of Brétigny it was ceded to the English ; but its inhabitants revolted against the Black Prince, and most of them were massacred when his troops recovered the town by assault. In 1369 Duguesclin obtained possession by a stratagem. Protes-tantism made numerous proselytes at Niort, and Coligni made him- self master of the town, which successfully resisted the Catholic forces after the battle of Jarnac, but surrendered without striking a blow after that of Moncontour. Henry IV. rescued it from the League. It suffered severely by the revocation of the edict of Nantes.~~

~~NIPPON. See Japan, vol. xiii. p. 569.~~

~~NISH, Niscu, or Nissa, the ancient Naissus, a city of the Balkan peninsula, which at one time was the capital of Servia, and after being the chief town of a Turkish eyalet in the vilayet of the Danube, and (1877) of the new vilayet of Kossovo, was again in 1878 restored to Servia, where it is now the administrative centre of a circle con- taining a population of 117,000. The town isa thriving place of 12,800 inhabitants, the see of a Greek bishop, the headquarters of a militia corps, and an important centre in the Servian railway system. It is situated at the east end of a plain, and is traversed by the Nishava, a tributary of the Morava and sub-tributary of the Danube. Fortifi- cations on the heights, buildings well massed together, numerous minarets, and abundant foliage in the suburbs render the outward appearance of the town both pleasant~~

~~and imposing ; but the interior, with its narrow and ill-kept streets, is utterly disappointing. About a quarter of an hour to the north of the citadel is the Voinik (war) hill, where the Turkish army encamped in 1689.~~

Naissus, best known as the birthplace of Constantine the Great, was destroyed by Attila, but restored by Justinian. The chief facts in the history of the modern town are its capture by the Turks in 1375 and by John Hunyady in 1443; the victory of Louis of Baden over the Turks in 1689; the recovery by the Turks in 1690; the capture by the Austrians and the subsequent surrender by General Dochat in 1737; and finally the siege by the Servians in 1809. On this last occasion Stephen Singelitch blew up his redoubt, to the destruction at once of his Turkish assailants and himself.

NISHAPUR, or NusHiptr (Arabic, Naisdbir), the most important city of Khordsin in the Middle Ages, but now much decayed. The second element of the name is

that of the traditional founder Shahpuhr or Sapor. Some accounts name the first, others the second Sapor.! The older name of the town or district was Abrashahr. The

importance of the place under the Sasanians was in part religious; one of the three holiest fire-temples was in its neighbourhood.? Nishdpur under the Moslems contained a large Arab element; it became the capital of Khorasan, and greatly increased in prosperity, under the almost independent princes of the house of Tahir (820-873 a.p.). Istakhri describes it as a well-fortified town, a league square, with a great export of cotton goods and raw silk. In the decline of the empire the city had much to suffer from the Turkomans, whose raids have in modern times destroyed the prosperity of this whole region. In 1153 it was utterly ruined by the Ghuzz Turkomans, but soon rose again, because, as Yakut remarks, its position gave it command of the entire caravan trade with the East. It was again taken and razed to the ground by the Mongols in 1221, but a century later Ibn Batuta found the city again flourishing, with four colleges, numerous students, and an export of silk-stuffs to India. Nishapur was famous for its fruits and gardens, which gave it the epithet of "little Damascus."

The surname of Naisaburi connects with the city a number of learned men, including 'Omar Kuayyam (q.v.), the Hafiz Abu 'Ali (0b. 960), the Koran commentator Ahmed al-Tha'labi (0b. 1035), his disciple Wahidi, author of the famous Asbdd nozil al-Ko'rdn (ob. 1076), and the disciple of the latter,

Maidani, the author of the a, collection of Arabic proverbs. See further Kazwini, ii. 317 sq.

NISIBIS, a once famous city and fortress, situated in 37° N, lat. and 41° 20' 10" E. long,, in the north of Mesopotamia, near the point where the Jaghjagha leaves the mountains by a narrow defile. The modern Nasibin consists of some two hundred wretched huts, mainly inhabited by Jews, who pay tribute to the Shammar Bedouins. The neighbourhood, we are informed by Arab writers, was at one time richly wooded. The locality is at present somewhat marshy and unhealthy. The number of dangerous scorpicns is specially noticeable. According to Yakut the legend is that Persian scorpions were thrown into the place when it was besieged by Anushirwan. The church of St James, belonging to a small community of Jacobite Christians, and a 'few pillars and blocks of masonry are the only remains of the former greatness of the town.

The site of Nisibis, on the great military and commercial route betwecn the Tigris and the Mediterranean, and commanding alike the mountain country to the north and the then fertile plain to the south, gave it an in:portance which began during the Assyrian period and continued under the Seleucide (see MESOPOTAMIA, Vol. xvi. p. 48). From 149 B.c. to 14 A.p. Nisibis was the residence of the kings of

Armenia, and it was there that Tigranes had his treasure-houses, The place afterwards figured frequently as a strong froutier fortress a ee—E—E

' Spiegel, Hranische Alterthumskunde, iii. 254; Noldcke, Gesch. der Perser . . . aus Tabari, p. 59. The first syllable of the name appears to be Wév, '* good" (Noldeke, J.¢.).

® Hoffmann, Syr. Akten pers. Martyrer, p. 290 sq.

NIS—NIT

in the wars of the Romans and the Parthians, its brick walls being unusually thick and its citadel very strong. Ceded to the Parthians by Hadrian, it became a Roman colony (Septimia Colonia Nisibis) under Septimius

Severus. It was heroically defended against Sapor II., who unsuccessfully besieged it thrice. In the peace made by Jovian, however, it passed into the hands of the Persians, who established a strong colony there. Nisibis early became the seat of a Jacobite bishop and of a Nestorian metropolitan, and under the Arabs (when it continued to flourish and becanie the centre of the district of Diyar Rebi‘a) the population of the town and neighbour- hood was still mostly Christian, and included numerous monasteries. According to Ibn Haukal the taxes and dues derived from the town and district of Nisibin in 358 A.H. (969 A.p.) amounted to five million dirhems and 32,000 dinars. Arab geographers and travellers of the Middle Ages speak in high terms of the gardens of Nisibis, and the magnificent returns obtained by the agriculturist. According to Mukaddasi (ob. 1024), acorns, preserved fruits, and manufactured articles such as carriages, inkstands, &., were exported. A change for the worse soon afterwards set in. The town was so heavily burdened with taxes by the Hamdanid princes living at Mosul that the Arab tribe of the Banu Habib, although blood relations of the Tlamdanids, migrated in a body into Byzantine territory, where they were well received, accepted Christianity, attracted other emigrants from Nisibis, and at last began to avenge themselves by yearly raids upon their old home. Ibn Haukal goes on to say that jinally the Hamdanid Nasir ad-Daule took possession of the town, confiscated the estates of those who had emigrated, and compelled those who remained to substitute corn for their profitable fruit crops. This made a final end of the prosperity of Nisibis; the surrounding district, no longer protected against the incursions of nomad tribes, ceased to be cultivated and became the wilderness which it continues to be to this day.

NISI PRIUS. For the history and meaning of this term in English law see Assizz. Asa rule actions only are tried at nisi prius, and a judge is said to sit at nisz prius when he sits alone, usually in the Queen’s Bench Division, for the trial of actions. The trial at nso prius was formerly by jury, unless with consent of the parties, but since the rules of the Supreme Court of 1883 the ordinary trial at nisi prius is without a jury in all but some specially excepted cases, chiefly of torts where the damages are unliquidated. Besides actions, indictments or informations may be tried at nzsi prius, but only before a jury, the change in the law above-mentioned not extend- ing to such cases. The indictment or information is generally renioved from the

ordinary forum by certiorart, and the trial takes place in the Queen's Bench Division or at assizes before a special or a common jury (see JURY). The removal may be at the instance of the crown, the prosecutor, or the accused. Misdemeanours are removed more often than felonies. The most usual grounds of removal are that difficult questions of law are likely to arise, that local prejudice has been excited, or that the case is quasi-civil, as non-repair of a bridge or obstruction of a highway. It is noticeable that criminal cases tried at nisi prius take their place in the nist prius list and not with other criminal cases. Where the proceedings are by indictment at assizes, sentence may be passed either at the assizes or in the Queen's Bench Division ; where by infor- mation, only the latter course is available.

Nist Prius Record was before the Judicature Acts the name of the formal copy of proceedings showing the history of the case up to the time of trial. After the trial it was endorsed with the postea, show- ing the result of the trial, and delivered by the officer of the court to the successful party, whose possession of the postea was his title tojudgment. Since the Judicature Acts there is no nist prius record in civil actions, the nearest approach to it being the deposit of copies of the pleadings for the use of the judge, and there is no postea, the certificate of the associate or master as to the result of the trial superseding it. In crown practice, the class of practice under which criminal proceedings at nist prius fall, the nisi prius record still exists, crown practice being specially excepted from the operation of the Judicature Acts.

NISSA. See NisuH.

NITRATES, NITRE, NITRIC ACID. See Nrrrocey.

NITROGEN is a chemical element which, on account of its abundance in nature and its relations to life, is of great importance. About three-fourths of the mass of the

old

atmosphere consists of elementary nitrogen; and, as an essential component of all albumenoids, the element per- vades the whole of the animal and vegetable kingdom. Nitrogen minerals are scarce (almost the only ones are

Chili saltpetre and native nitre), but traces of the two nitrogen compounds, ammonia and nitric acid, are diffused through- out all soils, besides existing in the atmosphere.

Elementary nitrogen exists only in the one form of nitrogen gas (N,=1 molecule), which is easily extracted from the atmosphere. Though resembling air in its general properties, it is easily distinguished from it by its not supporting combustion. According to Regnault, its specific gravity is 09703 times that of pure, dry air; and one litre, measured at ¢ C. and P millimetres pressure (strictly speaking the pressure exerted by a column of mercury of 0° C. and the height P, at latitude 45° and sea- level) is W grammes, where

e W=0°45043 5 — For sea-level and lat. 55° 54' (Edinburgh or Glasgow) the constant is 0°45090; for lat. 51° 32' (London), 0°45072.

According to Dittmar (Reports on the Challenger Lape- dition) 1000 volumes of pure water, when shaken with excess of gas at ¢° C. and "one atmosphere's pressure," absorb 8 volumes of the gas measured at 0° and the same pressure,— having for the temperatures given the fol- lowing values : —

ee B=24°40

die 208

17°65 14°95

Nitrogen is a permanent gas in this sense that no amount of pressure will liquefy it at any temperature lying above the "critical point" of*-123°°8 C. At or a little below this temperature 42 atmospheres reduce it to a liquid (Sarrau).

Chemically, nitrogen gas is characterized by perfect inertness towards all ordinary reagents under ordinary conditions. But at certain higher temperatures boron, magnesium, vanadium, and titanium combine with it directly into nitrides. Nitrogen is capable even of uniting with ordinary oxygen. A mixture of the two gases, it is true, remains unchanged whien

exposed en masse to any tem- perature, but when it is subjected to a succession of electric sparks a small proportion of the two gases, no doubt through local dissociation into isolated atoms N and O, does unite into nitric oxide, NO, which then combines with more oxygen into red fumes of peroxide, N,O,.

The part which the nitrogen gas in the atmosphere plays in the economy of nature is as yeta mystery. It certainly is not susceptible of being taken up directly by the plants and utilized in their synthesis of nitrogenous compounds. It plays no active part in the processes of combustion and of animal respiration ; in either it appears to act only as an inert diluent of the oxygen.

In the case of respiration, however, this particular diluent seems to be essential; no animal could live healthily for any considerable period of time in pure oxygen, and we know of no other diluent which could be substituted for the nitrogen without producing poisonous effects. Besides, there can be no doubt that atmospheric nitrogen, in an indirect way, contributes towards the building up of nitrogenous organic matter. Every process of ordinary combustion probably, and every electric dis- charge in the atmosphere certainly, induces the formation of some nitric acid, which by combining with the atmo- spheric ammonia becomes nitrate of ammonia, and from certain experiments of Schénbein's it would appear that nitrogen gas and water are capable of uniting directly into nitrite of ammonia (N, + 2H,O =NO,.NH,), which, sup-

30° 13°90

016

posing it to be produced in the atmosphere, would promptly be oxidized into nitrate. The nitrate produced by either process is carried down by the rain and conveyed to the roots of the plants, which assimilate it as part of their nitrogenous organic matter. However small the scale may appear on which these processes of atmospheric nitrifica- tion go on when measured by the mass of nitrogen which remains unchanged, as this mass is immense, their absolute effect must be very considerable, and may form an important item in the economy of nature.

~~The compounds of nitrogen may be arranged under the heads of ammonia, nitrates, nitro-compounds, organic nitrogen compounds, and cyanides. As all the several classes and their most important members are treated of under CHemistry (vol. v. p. 509-514), we confine our- selves here, in the main, to supplementing that article by such details as are of practical or general scientific interest.~~

~~Ammonia.~~

~~This, the only known compound of hydrogen with nitro- gen, is a gas of the molecular formula NH,. The most convenient process for the preparation of the pure gas is to mix powdered sal-ammoniac with powdered quicklime in a flask and to heat the mixture in a sand-bath. Torrents of ammonia come off, which must be dried by passing it through a closely packed column of solid caustic potash or soda (chloride of calcium absorbs the gas chemically) and collected over mercury, as the gas dissolves most abundantly in water. In addition to what has been said under CuEmistry of the properties of ammonia, it may here be mentioned that, though uninflammable in air, it burns brilliantly in oxygen, and that it is liable to the following peculiar kind of oxidation. Pour some strong liquor ammoniz into a large flask, so as to produce a moist mixture of the gas and of air, and suspend in this atmo- sphere a recently ignited spiral of thin platinum wire. The wire continues glowing and the flask soon fills with dense white fumes of nitrite and nitrate of am- monia, formed according to equation: 2N H, + (40 or 30) =H,0+NO,H.NH, or NO,H.N H;. The platinum suffers no permanent change; its mode of action probably consists in this that it alternately absorbs (z.e., combines with) oxygen and hands it over to the ammonia. In any case the reaction is interesting as throwing some light upon the process of nitrification (vide infra).~~

~~Aqueous ammonia (liquor ammoniz), being in constant requisition as a reagent, and also used in medicine and in the arts, is being manufactured industrially. Fresenius recommends the following process. A cast-iron pot, fitted up as a retort, is charged with alternate layers of slaked lime (10 kilos of quicklime plus 4 kilos of water) and a powdered and sifted mixture of 6°5 kilos of chloride and 3°95 kilos of sulphate of ammonium. Eight litres of water are then added and well incorporated with the solids. The retort is~~

now closed, and the outlet-tube joined on to the lower end of an inverted condenser, the upper end of which communicates with a set of Woulfe's bottles charged with water. The ammonia is driven off by judicious application of heat, the inverted condenser serving to make the gas relatively dry before being absorbed. In this operation the tubes conveying the gas to the water must go to the bottom of the bottles, as the solution produced is lighter than pure water ; and, of course, the bottles must be kept cool by immersion in a cold water-bath, The strength of aqueous ammonia, for commercial purposes, is readily ascer- tained by means of an hydrometer ranging from 0°85 to 1-0 specific gravity. The relation between specific gravity S at 14° C. (water of 14°=1) and percentage of ammonia

NH, (p), according to experiments by Carius, is as follows :—

NITROGEN

Nat oy s Pp s p ae

36 "8844 25 9106 10 "9593

35 "8856 20 "9251 9 '9631 84 *8868 15 "9414 8 "9670 33 *8907 14 "9449 7 '9709 32 *8929 13 9484 6 '9749 | 31 "8953 12 9520 5 9790 |} 30 8976 11 9556

Aqueous ammonia is generally sent out as "liquor fortissimus" of 80 to 35 per cent. For ordinary labora- tory purposes it is usually diluted down to 9 to 10 per cent. This explains the discontinuities in the table.

Two natural sources of ammonia are at present in industrial use. (1) The gaseous exhalations of volcanoes always include ammonia, hydrochloric acid, and sulphurous acid, of which the first two are formed no doubt by the action of steam on deposits of nitrides and chlorides in the interior of the earth. This explains the existence in the fumaroles (smoke-holes), and in the clefts of the lava of Vesuvius, Hecla, and other volcanoes, of deposits of (chiefly) sal-ammoniac. This volcanic ammonia salt is highly valued as a material for the preparation of pure liquor ammoniz ; but its supply hardly comes up to the demands of even this small industry. (2) More important are the masses of ammonia formed in the processes of putrefaction which

are going on constantly in nature, and of which a mere fraction would satisfy all the demands of industry, if the recovery of such ammonia were not, as a rule, beset with insuperable difficulties. Thus, for instance, all the immense mass of the ammonia of the sewage of our large cities must be allowed to go to waste because we have no economical method for its extraction. Urine, when undiluted, is an easily handled raw material, and in former times actually formed the principal source of ammonia. Human urine contains from 2 to 3 per cent. of urea, or carbamide as it is called in systematic chemistry, because it is the anhydride of carbonate of ammonia. When urine putrefies, this carbamide takes up the ele- ments of water and becomes carbonate of ammonia, CO. (N,H,) + 2H,0 =CO,(NH,).. A prompter mode of conversion is to evaporate the urine with a small propor- tion of vitriol, and heat the residue to near the boiling- point of the acid, when the nitrogen of the urea passes at once into the form of sulphate of ammonia. This latter process would apply also to the urine of horses and cattle, which, instead of urea, contains hippuric acid, a compound which, when taken conjointly with water, contains the elements of ammonia and benzoic and acetic acids. At the present time urine plays hardly any part in the ammonia industry ; but it may be mentioned that the produce of the urinals of Glasgow is, or lately was, wrought for car- bonate of ammonia.

Preparation of Ammonia Jrom Nitrogenous Organic Matter.— All such matter when subjected to dry distillation gives up part of its nitrogen as ammonia, of which 'the greater part condenses with the vapour of water produced, and is thus obtained as part of the aqueous portion of the ''tar.'' Large quantities of such tar- water are being produced incidentally in the manufacture of coal- gas, and it is this material which at present forms the principal

ig for the industrial production of ammonia and ammonia salts.

It may also be mentioned that the tar-water obtained as a bye- product in the distillation of shale for the production of paraffin oil is rich in ammonia, and has long come to be worked up for sulphate like gas-liquors.

Crude tar-water contains about 1 per cent. of ammonia (more or less according to the quality of coal used, and the way it has been manipulated), mostly in the form of carbonate, part as cyanide, sulphocyanate, and

sulphide of ammonium; and this ammonia, of course, is associated with traces of hydrocarbons and other organic matter dissolved, or suspended, in the liquor. In some establish- ments the ammonia is extracted directly in the form of liquor ammoniz. The lHquoris run into a large iron boiler, and after addition of some ferrous and ferric salt (for fixing the sulphur of the

Nigtkeo>G EN

sulphide as FeS, and the cyanogen of the cyanide as prussiate, (NC),Fe. (NH,);), mixed with slaked- lime and distilled. The vapours if condensed as they come off, would yield a very dilute liquor contaminated largely with volatile carbon compounds. To obtain a relatively pure gas, the vapour is subjected to a succession of partial condensations by making it pass through the several com- partments of an iron apparatus, similar in its action to the "*Coffey's still" which is used for the strengthening and refining of alcoholic liquors (see DisTILLATION, vol. vii. p. 265). The almost pure gas which leaves the last condenser is passed into a mass of water contained in a refrigerated close lead vessel, and thus converted into liquor ammoniz of the requisite strength. In the majority of large establishments, however, the ammonia is converted into sulphate, for which purpose it need not be so elaborately purified. The ammoniaca] vapour obtained from the crude liquor by simple distillation, or by distillation with lime from out of a steam-boiler, is passed into a quantity of chamber-acid con- tained in a leaden tank, until the acid is almost but not quite neutralized. An excess of alkali would induce the formation of sulphide of iron. from the sulphide of ammonium in the vapour and the traces of iron-salt adventitiously present, and lead toa discolora- tion of the salt. Matters are generally arranged so that the bulk of the sulphate formed crystallizes out, on cooling, in the form of a granular magma, which is allowed to drain and to dry, and either sold as it is, or first purified by recrystallization. The pure salt, (NH,),SO,, forms anhydrous, colourless, transparent crystals, iso- morphous with those of the corresponding potash salt, and, like it, belonging to the rhombic system ; even when produced on a large scale they are generally of small dimensions ; when allowed to grow, they assume forms which strikingly remind one of sugar-candy, although the latter is clino-rhombic. The salt is insoluble in alcohol, like most sulphates,—100 parts of water at 0°, 20°, 100° C. dissolve 71:0, 76°83, 97°5 parts of salt. The solution is neutral to litmus.

‘The salt readily unites with another equivalent of sul- phuric acid into crystallizable acid sulphate, SO,. (NH,). H, soluble in alcohol. The neutral salt melts at 140° C. Above 280° it emits ammonia and leaves acid salt, which latter then breaks up with formation of acid sulphiteSO,(NH,)H,, nitrogen, and water. Ata red heat it breaks up into sulphur, nitrogen, and water: (NH,).SO,= S+N,+4H,0.

Of other ammonia salts only the hydrochloride and the carbon- ates are industrially important.

The hydrochloride, HCl. NH,=NH,Cl, better known as sal- ammoniac (see vol. i. p. 741-2), is made sometimes by sublimation of a mixture of the sulphate with common salt, but it is more con- veniently produced direct from gas-liquor ammonia by passing it into muriatic acid until the latter is almost neutralized. The liquor, when sufficiently concentrated by evaporation, deposits, on cooling, part of its salt in feathery crystals, which are customarily purificd by sublimation. The subliming apparatus consists of two parts, —(1) a hemispherical stoneware basin placed within a close fitting iron one, or an enamelled iron basin, and (2) a hemispherical lead or stoneware lid, or dome, placed on the top of the basin and cemented on to prevent leakage. The dome has a small aperture in the top which remains open to preclude accumulation of pressure. The carefully dried crystallized salt is pressed into the basin, and, after the lid has been fitted on, is exposed to a long- lasting moderate heat. The salt volatilizes (mostly in the form of a mixed vapour of the two componcnts, which reunite on cooling), and condenses in the dome in the form ofa characteristically fibrous and tough crust. The salt readily dissolves in water, with consider- able absorption of heat; 30 parts of salt with 100 parts of water at 13°°3 give a mixture of the temperature of —5°°1 C. One hundred parts of water at 0°, 10°, 110° dissolve 28°4, 32°8, 77-2 parts of the sult. From its hot saturated solution it crystallizes on cooling in feathery groups of colourless needles. By slow evaporation of the solution it is possible to produce well-developed crystals which belong to the regular system, but look irregular on account of the predontinance of the (hemihcdric) faces of the trapezohedron.

Of the carbonates of ammonia thcre are a large number, and their chemistry still lacks definiteness. The normalsalt CO,(NH,). is so unstable that it can

hardly be said to exist. The acid salt CO,(NH,)H is easily produced by passing carbonic acid into a saturated solution of the commercial salt, when it comes down as a crystalline precipitate. The commercial salt (important as a medicinal agent and asa chemical reagent) is obtained by subliming a mixture of sal-ammoniac and chalk from an iron retort pro- vided with a lead dome and receiver. It forms hard fibrous crusts or cakes, smelling strongly of ammonia. The salt has a variable composition, The greater part, as a rule, consists of "sesqui- carbonate," 2(NH,),0 . 3CO,+ H,O = (NH,),.CO, + 2(NH,) . HCOs. But it also contains carbamate of ammonia,

NH 5 co O—(NH,) = CO2+2N Hg,

as obtainable by the direct union of carbonic anhydride and ammonia.

ol7

Of the several ammonia compounds which we have referred to, the sulphate is by far the most important in an industrial sense. Immense quantities of the crude salt are being used as a manure — the German sugar-beet growers alone consume a considerable fraction of the British produce—while to the technical chemist gencrally it serves as the most convenient starting-point for the manufacture of ammonia, or of other ammonia salts.?

In the mode of distilling coal customarily carried on in gas works, only about one-third of the nitrogen is obtained as ammonia in the tar-water, the remaining two-thirds being lost by evaporation into the air, or remaining in the coke in the carbide form. What used to go into the gas is now mostly recovered by efficient scrubbers. But the more efficient condensation of the ammonia actually formed is a matter of chemical engineering which cannot be more than touched on here. According to Bilbey the nitrogen of the coke can be recovered, partly at least, by distilling it at a very high temperature in a current of steam. Bilbey's process, however, has hitherto failed practically to give satisfaction, because the intense heat required means a great expense for fuel, and destroys the retorts at an alarming rate. The analytical chemist has no difficulty in extracting the whole of the nitrogen in a given sample of coal as ammonia by mixing it with soda-lime and heating the mixture in a combustion-tube to redness, and possibly the technical chemist will one day bring this process into a remunera- tive form.

What, however, is meanwhile more easy of attainment is the recovery of the large quantities of ammonia which are being produced in the mannfacture of coke and in iron smelting (as far as carried out with coal), and which hitherto have been allowed to go to waste. Quite a number of chemists and engineers have tried their hands at this problem. The apparatus proposed, generally speaking, all come to this, that the coal-smoke produced in the furnace, instead of being allowed to have its own way, is sucked out by exhausters, made to pass through refrigerators to deposit at least part of its tar aud ammonia water, and the uncondensed combustible gases are led away to be used as fuel for steam-boilers, or, what in the case of coking is far better, led back to the coke oven and consumed there to increase the tempcraturc, and thus improve the qualities of both coke and tar. The very high tem- perature of the oven or furnace smoke throws great difficulties in the way of a perfect condensation of the ammonia. These, in a Scottish iron-work, have been turned most ingeniously by mixing the smoke with the sulphureous vapour formed by the roasting of pyritic shale or coal, wherebу the ammonia is converted into sulphite and sulphate, which can easily be condensed in even hot water.

Should it not be possible to produce ammonia synthetically from atmospheric nitrogen? This question is still waiting for an industrial solution ; scientifically it may be answered in more than one way. Magnesium, boron, and a number of other solid and non-volatile elementary substances, when kept in nitrogen gas at the proper temperature, unite with the nitrogen into solid non- volatile nitrides ; and these, when heated in steam, yield ammonia and the corresponding oxide. Thus we have 3Mg+N,=—N.Mg, and N.Mg,+3H,0=2NH;+38Mg0O. Unfortunately the reagents are all expensive, and there is no economical method for their regeneration. The following method is not subject to this one objection. A mixture of baryta or carbonate of baryta with char- coal, when heated intensely in nitrogen gas, yields cyanide of barium, Ba(NC),, and this salt when heated in steam gives off ammonia while earbouate of baryta is left, which latter can be nsed for starting de novo, BaN,C,4H,O0O=2NH, BaCO,+CO +4 Hy. Where this process fails we are unable to say; what we do know is that nobody has as yet succeeded in working it profitably even as a means for obtaining cyanides, whose value, per unit of nitrogen, is higher than that of ammonia.

Nitrates.

Nitrates (the generic term for nitric acid, HNOg, and its salts) are produced naturally by the electric discharges in the atmo- sphere, and in the processes of ‘‘ nitrification,” a fernientative oxidation which always sets in when moist nitrogenous animal or vegetable matter is left to itself in the presence of air and some basic substance (see FERMENTATION, Vol. ix. p. 98). This process in former times used to be carried out for the production of saltpetre, but as an industrial operation is now obsolete. The deposits of native nitre in India and clsewhcre which nature has produced for us by the same method are, of course, still being utilized as far as they go. But they amount to very little compared with the immense masses of native nitrate of soda which exist in South America, and which, at present, constitute by far the most im- portant raw material for the nitrate industry.

This native nitrate of soda forms part of a salty carth known to

1 For the ammonia process of soda-ash manufacture, which, after having been asleep industrially for some thirty years, was brouglit into a remunerative form by Solvay and Mond, and is now gradually, but surely, taking the place of the old Leblane process, see SODIUM.

518

the natives as caliche or terra salitrosa, which abounds especially in the district of Atacama and the Peruvian province of Tarapaca. The caliche there lies from ‘25 to 1°5 metres deep, and stretches over a distance of forty leagues ; it is covered by a layer, froma half to two metres thick, ofa hard conglomerate of sand, felspar, phosphates, and other mineral matters, which is designated ‘‘Jostra.” ‘In other places the caliche forms part of a sandy deposit which some- times comes to the surface and never goes down to a depth beyond 2‘6 metres. The caliche contains from 48 to 75 per cent. of nitrate of soda and from 20 to 40 per cent. of common salt, which are associated with various minor saline components, including lodate of soda, and more or less of insoluble mineral, and also some organic inatter, guano amongst other things, which suggests the idea that the nitrate was formed by the nitrification of this kind of excre- mental matter. The caliche is worked up zn Joco for crude nitrate of soda; by extracting the salts with hot

water, allowing the suspended earth to settle, and then transferring the clarified liquor, first to a eistern where it deposits part of its chloride of sodium at a high temperature, and then to another where, on cooling, it yields a crop of erystals of purified nitrate. The nitre thus refined is imported chiefly from Valparaiso, whence the name of " Chili saltpetre." The mother-liquors used until a few years ago to be thrown away, but are now being utilized for the extraction of their iodine, which, although little in a relative sense, on account of the large masses of raw inaterial wrought, amounts to a good deal absolutely, as is illustrated by the fact that Peruvian iodine has put an end to the kelp industry in Scotland. Chemically pure uitrate of soda can be obtained by repeated recrystallization of Chili saltpetre or by synthesis from pure nitric acid and pure car- bonate of soda. It forms colourless transparent rhombohedra, like those of Iceland spar, only the angles are more nearly equal to right angles, so that the crystals look like cubes. Hence the name of cubic saltpetre, which is sometimes given to the salt. One hundred parts of water at 0°, 20°, 50°, 100°, 110° C. dissolve 72:9, 87°5, 112, 180, 200 parts of the salt; at 120°, the boiling-point of the saturated solution, 216 parts. It fuses at 330° C. (Carnelley) ; at higher temperatures it loses oxygen (more readily than the corresponding potash salt) with formation of nitrite NO,Na, which, at very high temperatures, is reduced ultimately to a mixture of peroxide, Na,O,, and oxide, Na,0. Industrially the salt is important as being the raw matcrial for the manufacture of uitrie acid and of nitrate of potash.

Nitrate of potash (saltpetrc), which forms the predominating component of gunpowder, occurs native in India and other parts of the world, and such native nitre has only to be purified by erystallization to beeome fit for the market. But the bulk of what occurs in commerce is made by double decomposition of Chili saltpetre with (a) caustic potash, (0) carbonate of potash, or © ehloride of potassium, which processes yield (a) caustic soda, (b) carbonate of soda, (c) common salt as bye-products. The third form (c) of the method is most largely wrought, the necessary supplies of chcap chloride of potassium being furnished by the works at the Stassfurt deposits. The two raw materials are analysed, and quantities corresponding to NaNO,=85 of nitrate of soda and KC]=74°5 parts of chloride of potassium respectively are dissolved together in an iron basin in the least quantity of hot water. The solution is boiled down to 1°5 specific gravity

(hot), when the common salt formed gradually crystallizes out. It is fished out, allowed to drain, and the runningsare returned to the basin. The highly concentrated mother-liquor is allowed to cool with frequent agitation, so that the saltpetre, which crystallizes and assumes the form of a "meal," is more readily freed from mother-liquor, by judicious washing with cold water. The crude saltpetre which is thus obtained is reerystallized until it is almost chemically pure, because an even slightly contaminated salt is unfit for gunpowder making. Nitrate of potash is isomorphous with the soda salt in this sense that it is possible to obtain it in the form of rhombohedra s but these rhombohedra have no great stability, and under ordinary conditions the salt always assumes the form of long six-sided prisms of the right-rhombic system. It is far less soluble in water than nitrate of soda, and, unlike it, is absolutely non-hygroscopic. One hundred parts of water at 0°, 10°, 20°, 50°, 80°, 100°C. dissolve 13}. 21°1, 31°2, 86, 172, 247 parts of salt. The boiling fully saturated solution is at 114°, and contains 327 parts of salt per 100 of water (Mulder). It fuses at 352° C. (Carnelley) into a colourless liquid, which freezcs into a hard compact mass exhibiting a coarse, fibrous fracture if the salt is pure. In an impure salt this structure be-comes the less distinct the greater the proportion of impurities; with a saltpetre which contains 3°5 per cent. of common salt, the fibres appear only at the edges of the surface of fracture. This is the basis of a now almost forgotten test for purity, and explains that to the present day the term ''refraction" is used to designate the sum total of impurities contained in 100 parts of nitre analysed. When heated sufficiently beyond its fusing point it decomposes similarly to nitrate of soda, only it gives up its oxygen far less readily. A mixture of nitre with charcoal, sulphur, or other com-bnstible matter, when kindled, burns off with explosive violence.

Na ee Oi ON

Hence its application for the manufacture of gunpowder and in pyrotechnics, and its use in the laboratory as a powerful oxidizing agent in operations of the dry way. –

Nitric Acid, HNO, (see CuEMistRY, p. 511 sq.), is prepared from nitrate of potash or soda by distillation with sulphuric acid, The scientific chemist prefers the potash salt because it is more easily purified ; the manufacturer

uscs nitrate of soda because it is cheaper and a lower temperature and a less excess of oil of vitriol (over and above 1H,SO, for 2RNO,) suffice for its successful con- version into acid. Jor manufacturing purposes the distillation is effected from out of horizontal cylindrical or deep hemispherical retorts made of cast iron (a material which is far less attacked by the acids than one miglit be inclined to think). The retort com- municates with a series of Woulfe's bottles made of stoneware, which are sometimes provided with taps for letting off the distillate. The retort, after having been charged and eonnected with the receivers, is heated over a naked fire until all the acid is driven off, and nothing but a (more or less acid) sulphate of soda is left. The details of the manufacture vary according to the kind of acid which is intended to be produced. If the manufacture of ordinary aqua-fortis (of 1°3 to 14 specific gravity) is aimed at the receivers are charged with the proper proportion of water, and less than 1H,S80, may be used for the decomposition of 1NO,Na, because the per- oxide of nitrogen from the dissociated part of thc acid, by the action of the water and the air in the receivers, is to a great extent recon- verted into nitric acid. The preparation of acid of highest strength demands the full equivalent of vitriol. But even then the product, apart from the contents of the first few condenser bottles nearest to the retort, is strongly contaminated with dissolved peroxide, which imparts to the acid a deep red colour. This impurity can be brought down to about 2 per cent. by blowing air through the gently heated acid, which carries away the peroxide as a vapour. T'o utilize the latter, the mixture is made to ascend through a tower filled with coke kept moist by a constant rain of water running downwards against the stream of acid fumes. Water alone would convert two-thirds of the nitrogen into nitric acid, thus: —3N. 204 (aqua)=2NO(2N,0,+aqua); but by the coopcration of the oxygen of the air a larger proportion of acid is being regenerated as aquafortis of about 1°83 specific gravity. Two kinds of acid are chiefly being produced, viz., (1) full-strength fuming acid of 1°5 to 1°52 specific gravity at 15° C., which is largely used (in the tar-colour industry for the making of nitro-bodies, and also for the manu- facture of gun-cotton and nitroglycerin), and (2) aquafortis of 1°35 to 1°42 specific gravity, for the charging of batteries, and as a re- agent generally. Either acid is sold in two qualities,—as colour-less acid relatively free of peroxide of nitrogen, and as red acid charged with it, which admixture is not always an impurity in a technical sense, but desired for certain purposes to be present. Most commercial acid is

contaminated with chlorine and sulphuric acid, which can both be removed by fractional distillation—most easily from the strongest acid. The chlorine accumulates in the first runnings ; the sulphuric acid remains in the retort, if the dis- tillation be stopped in time.

For most purposes the strength of an acid can be determined with sufficient accuracy by means of a hydrometer.

The following table gives the relation between the perecntages p of HNO, and the specific gravity S according to Kolb :—

Sat 0°C. S at 15° C. Dp Sat o°c. S at 15°C.

100 1°559 1°530 30 1-200 1-185 90 1°522 1-495 20 1°132 1-120 80 1-484 1°460 15 1-099 1°089 70 1-444 1°423 10 1-070 1-060 60 1°393 1°374 5 1-031 1-029 50 1°334 1317 0 1-000 1-000

40 1-267 1-251

Regarding the reactions of nitric acid with elementary substances and with inorganic compounds generally, see CHEMISTRY (wt sap. pp: 511-514). The general effect of the treatment of an organic substance with aquafortis is that the acid is reduced to lower oxides of nitrogen and water, while the organic substance undergoes some kind of oxidation, which sometimes assumes the character of a com- bustion. With regard to the more immediately formed oxidation products it is difficult to speak in gencral terms; suffice it to say that, according to Carius, all organic substances when heated with nitric acid in sealed-up tubes to 150° to 300° C. are burned com- pletely into carbonic acid, water, and nitrogen or nitrogen oxides. Any other element that may be present passes into its highest state of oxidation: sulphur, for instance, becomes sulphuric acid; phos- phorus, phosphoric, &c. Very remarkable is the action of real nitric acid, when employed in the cold, and under conditions pre- cluding the accumulation of water or lower oxides of nitrogen. The acid then, if it acts at all, unites with the respective substances, with elimination of water and formation from the body B of a pro- duct B+nHNO,-nH,0 or B+nNO,-nH. These nitro-bodies, as they are sometimes called, divide themselves into two

classes: — (1) nitric esters, t.c., real nitrates formed from alcohols, which term

Not TT & OG! EN 519

must be understood here to include glycerin, sugar, mannite, cellu- lose, and many other OH-compounds not usually called alcohols (in these the group NO,. O stands where the OH was in the original substance); and (2) nitro-bodies proper, in which the NO,-group has taken the place of an H which was combined directly with carbon. An example is the nitrobenzol, CgH, (NO,), produced from benzol, C,H,;.H. When such a (true) nitro-body is treated with nascent hydrogen, the NO, as a rule goes out and is replaced by an amidogen NH,; thus C,H,(NO,) becomes C,H;(NH.), amido-benzol or aniline. The nitric esters, In the circumstances, yield up their NO, as ammonia.

For other metallic nitrates, see under the respective metals. For nitric esters, see METHYL, GUN-CoTTON, aud NITROGLYCERIN. For nitric anhydride (N,O;), peroxide of nitrogen (N04), nitrous acid (N,O3), nitric oxide (NO), nitrous oxide (NO, laughing-gas), also chloride of nitrosyle (aqua regia), see CHEMISTRY, p. 511 sq.

Nitrogenous Carbon Compounds.

Of this very numerous family we can only name a few of the more important groups and explain their genetic relations. Cyanides, compounds of the radical (NC),! are important to us here chiefly as a link between the two elements on the one hand and nitrogenous organic bodies proper on the other. Hydrocyanic acid, NCH, can be produced synthetically in a number of ways; we may, for instance, synthesize cyanide of barium, BaN,C,, as shown above, and decompose it by sulphuric acid. A more direct method is to first combine carbon with hydrogen into acetylene and then to subject a mixture of this and nitrogen gas to a spark-current, when hydrocyanic acid is produced, thus: —C,H,+N,=2HNC.

Alkylamines.—When hydrogen is generated within an acidified solution of hydrocyanic acid by means of zinc, the cyanide, by taking over four atoms of hydrogen, passes into (a salt of) methyl- amine, NCH+4H=NH,.CH;. It is

explained under Metiyi how this base may be utilized for the production of methyl- alcohol, and thus, indirectly, of iodide of methyl and of acetonitrile (pseudo-cyanide of methyl, NC.CH,). This shows the possibility of producing from hydrocyanic acid, in the first instance di- and tri-methylamine, and, more indirectly, the whole series of alkyla- mines (NH,R, NHR,, NR,; where R=CH,, CH,+CH,=C,H,, C,H,;+CH,=C3H,, &c.). Closely allied to these alkylamines are the diamines, derived from the bromides of the olcfines, CpHen, as the former are from those, or the iodides, of the alcohol-radicals CH;, C,H,, &c. To ethylamine, for instance, corresponds ethy- lene-diamine, C,H,(NH,)o.

Acid-amides are bodies related to acids, as alkylamines are to alcohols. Thus, for instance,

C,H,;NH, corresponds to [CH,. COJNH,. Ethylamine. Acctamide. Polybasic acids form each a series of amides. Thus succinic acid, C,H,(COOH),, forms two amides, viz., COOH CONH, C,H, CONH, and C,H, CONH,"

Succinamic acid. Succinamide. All acid-amides are the anhydridss of corresponding ammonia salts, and can be produced from these by actual dehydration ; there is no need of explaining by an equation what is so clearly seen in tlie formule. The two succinamides just named, and all analogous '¢ amides," are susceptible of further lehydration: thus

= 3 CO[OH]

succinamic acid, CHC COW nT) Z by losing the bracketed OH and H becomes

succinimid, CH. Go (NH);

C(O| N|H,]

and succinamide, C,H, c joni Cig a 2

similarly becomes succino-nitrile, CHC GN .

Acid-amides must not be mixed up with amido-acids.

Amido-acids have their (NH,) within the specific, not in the generic, radical. Thus, acetic acid, CH,COOH, by chlorination, becomes chloracetic acid, CH,C]. COOH, and this chloro-acid again gives up its chlorine to ammonia and to caustic potash, and receives back NH, in the one case and OH in the other, becoming

CH,(NH,). COOH and CH,(OH). COOH Amido-acetic acid. Oxy-acetic or glycollic acid. respectively. The latter forms an amide, CH,(OH)CO.NH,, as acetic acid does, and this amide, as is easily seen, is isomeric with amido-acetic acid, either being oxy-acetic minus OH plus NH,; but

1 See Cnoemistry. Some of the more important cyanides will be discussed under Prussic Aci.

the two differ widely from each other. The amide, when treated with aqueous potash, yields ammonia and glycollate of potash, tho amido-acid water and amido-acetate of potash. The substanco asparagine, which is contained in so many vegetable juices, and often appears as a decomposition product of albumenoids, is an amide and an amido-acid in one, being amido-succinamic acid.

COOH CO. NH CoH COOH CEM.) CO!0H™:

Succinic acid. Asparagine,

With the so-called aromatic bodies a very general method for producing amido-bodies is first to prepare a nitro-body and then reduce it by naseent hydrogen. Thus, for instanee, we can convert nitrobenzol, C,H;..NO,, above referred to, into amido-benzol, C,H,.NH,. We shall use this body as an example to explain the general mode of formation of a most interesting group of nitro- genous compounds which at present play a great part in the colour industry.

Diazo-bodies.—All NH, compounds, when treated with water and nitrous acid, virtually NO.OH=43(N,0,+H,0), yield the corresponding hydroxyl (OH) compounds, with joint elimination of the nitrogen of substance and reagent as nitrogen gas. Thus we

have—C,H; NH, + OH . NO = C,H, . OH + H,0 + N;. Aniline.

Phenol.

This is quite a general reaction ; but in the case of aromatic amines the reaction takes a different turn, if, instead of the free amine, we use one of its salts, and, in a relative sense at least, exclude water asamedium. In the case of nitrate of aniline, for instance, the two atoms of oxygen in the nitrous acid combine with all the hydrogen of the generic radicals, while all the rest unites into diazo-benzol :—HNO,. C,H;. NH,+ NO. OH=2H,0 + C,H,—N—N—NO,.

Nitrate of diazo-benzol.

And similarly in similar cases. Diazo-benzol has a great tendency to give off the nitrogen gas N, which isvisiblein its formula. We need only treat it with water and it yields what nitrous acid water would have given at once :—

C,H; N—=N—NO,+H.OH=HNO;+N,+C,H,. OH. There is something between the nitrates of ainido and of diazo- benzol, which, it is true, has only a theoretical existence in this case, but can be realized in other analogous cases.

Nitroso-bodies.—Kthylamine, under the action of water and nitrous acid, yields alcohol, C,H,.OH, as aniline yields phenol, and other monamines yield their alcohols. With diethylamine this reaction cannot take place; what does take place is that the NO of the nitrous acid expels and takes the place of the one loose H in the amine, and forms nitroso-diethyline :—

N.H.(C,H;),+NO. OH-H. OH+N. (NO). (C,H;)o. Nitroso-diethyline.

Hydrazines.—This nitroso-diethyline is a liquid boiling at 177°, devoid of alkaline properties. When treated with zinc-dust and acetic acid it yields a basic substance diethyl-hydrazine, which contains NH, in lieu of the NO of the nitroso-body.

N. (NO)(C,H;), N . (NH,)(C,H5)o. Nitroso-diethyline. Diethyl-hydrazine. This hydrazine is only one of a large genus, representatives of which are also obtainable from diazo-bodies by nascent hydrogen. Example— C,H, N —N—(HSO,) + 4H =H,S0,+C,H,—NH. (NH,). Sulphate of diazo-benzol. Phenyl-hydrazine.

Ureids are a class of bodies which are related to urea as amido-

bodies are toammonia. Thus

NH, (NH,)' (2NH,)" NH; correspond to a ary QvHy co NE CO } ND co< Hy Urea. Urea radicals,

We satisfy ourselves with quoting two ureids derived from oxalic

acid,C00€ Off . Just as we have two ammonia derivatives,

OH NH C,0, NTE Oxamie acid. Oxamide. so there exist two urea-derivatives

OH NH] C205 <INH. NH,co] #4 OR CO |.

Oxalurie acid. Parabanie acid.

The urea radicals are enclosed in square brackets. These are two

examples of a large family of bodies interesting on account of their

close relationship to uric acid, a constant component of urine, Creatine is a crystalline base which was discovered by Liebig

520

in the juice of flesh. Volhard prepared it synthetically by the successive realization of the following two reactions :—

(1) CH,Cl. COOH + NH,CH,~HCl+CH,. NH(CH,). COOH ; Chloracetic acid. Methylamine. Methyl-amido-acetic acid. (sarkosine). (2) CH, .

NH(CH,). COOH +(CN)NH,= Sarkosine, Cyanamide. gy |) 2NTI8 NHC | N(CH): (GH, COOH]. Creatine.

Betaine and Neurine, two bases derived from trimethylamine, are of great physiological importance. Neurine

(CHs);—N—(OH)

CH. CH,

was discovered by Liebreich as one of the congeners of a complex substance contained in the brain. By oxidation it is converted

into betaine (CH;),—N ——— CH,.CO.0O

which Scheibler discovered in the juice of the sugar-beet. Both bases can be produced synthetically,—the betaine by first unit- ing trimethylamine with chloracetic acid into 'a chloride, CICH,.COOH + N(CHs)3, and then replacing the Cl by OH by means of oxide of silver and water. The hydroxide

CH N—[OH]C GH boorH]

formed spontaneously loses the bracketed [OH] and [H] as water, and becomes trimethyl-glycocoll, which is betaine.

Native Alkaloids.—These may be divided into (1) bodies consisting of carbon, nitrogen, and hydrogen only, generally volatile liquids (of which nicotine may be quoted as an example); and (2) such as contain oxygen in addition to the three elements named (quinine, morphia, strychnine, &c.). The more important of these bases are noticed in separate articles,

The Albumenoids.—This class comprises those substances known as albumin, fibrin, casein, &c., which, conjointly with carbo- hydrates and fats respectively may be said toform the basis of vegetable and animal life. They consequently are the most important of all nitrogenous carbon compounds; but unfortunately we know little of their chemical constitution. They are all solids containing 53 to 547 per cent. of carbon, 7°1 to 7°2 of hydrogen,

~~15°6 to 15°8 of nitrogen, and 1°7 to 1°8 of sulphur. Glutin and chondrin (glue) are closely allied to them. See the special articles,~~

~~Analysis,~~

~~In regard to general methods for the determination (or detection) of the element, sce CHEMIsTRY, vol. v. p- 546-7. But it may be added that the method there given as that of Dumas, for combustible carbon compounds, can be made to apply to metallic nitrates by simply substituting finely divided metallic copper for the oxide of copper as a burning agent, and that Varrentrapp and Will's method applics)as it stands to metallic nitrides and amides, to metallic cyanides, and to all metal-amines, We confine ourselves here to the more important methods for the detection of certain classes of nitrogen compounds.~~

~~1. Ammonia-salts and most acid-amides and amin-acids, when treated with aqueous potash, give off their nitrogen as ammonia gas, which, if sufficient in quantity, is easily detected by (a) its pungent smell, () its action on turmeric or red-litmus paper, (c) its forming~~

~~) : the vapours of ammonia be too highly attenuated to be thus identified, condense~~

~~them in dilute muriatic acid, and to the distillate obtained (after neutralization of the free acid by potash or soda) apply ''Nessler's reagent"' (a solution of the salt HgII,.2KI in aqueous caustic potash or soda; see Mercury, vol. xvi. p- 384). The least trace of ammonia, if present, assumes the form of iodide of mercur- ammonium, which, if too little to come down as a precipitate, will announce itself by imparting to the liquid an intense brown or yellow colour. One-hundredth of a milligram of ammonia dif-fused throughout 50 c.c. of liquid (i¢., five million times ity weight) can thus be detected with unerving certainty.~~

~~2. Nitrous and Nitric Acid.—We assume the acids to be given as solutions of their alkaline salts, and may well do so because other metallic salts of either acid can easily be brought into this form by suitable operations. A solution of 'alkaline nitrite, when mixed with aqueous sulphuric acid, gives off brown fumes (of NO, and N,0,) if it is sufficiently concentrated. In more~~

dilute solutions the liberated nitrous acid breaks up into nitric acid and nitric oxide gas, which latter forms brown fumes (of N,O,) as soon as it

comes into contact with the air. In still more dilute solutions tho liberated nitrous acid remains undecomposed, but is readily detected by a sufficiency of a strong solution of ferrous sulphate or chloride, which reagents liberate nitric oxide from it and dissolve it with formation of an inky-black solution. This is the most character- istic and a highly delicate test. But in the latter respect it is far surpassed by ‘‘Gries’s reagent,”—a solution of sulphate of meta- diamido-benzol in dilute sulphuric acid. When this solution is added to even the most dilute solution of nitrous acid, a yellow coloration is developed which attains its maximum of intensity after about fifteen minutes standing. This test is fully as delicate as Nessler’s for ammonia.

A nitrate solution, when mixed with aqueous sulphuric acid or that acid and ferrous salt, exhibits no visible change. But when tlic solution is mixed with its own volume of (concentrated) oil of vitriol, so as to not only liberate but also dehydrate the nitric acid, and a strong solution of ferrous sulphate is cautiously poured on the top of the mixture, nitric oxide is eliminated which dissolves in,

and strikes an inky-black colour with, the ferrous salt layer. This is the test for nitrates.

When a solution containing nitrates or nitrites is distilled with concentrated caustic potash or soda and aluminium foil or zinc- foil and iron filings (or any metal or combination which, with the pure alkali-solution, would give off hydrogen), the nitrogen is gradually eliminated as ammonia, which can be condensed, and, however little it may amount to, detected by Nessler’s reagent, as above explained. (W. D.)

NITROGLYCERIN (synonymes. Glonoin, Glonoin Oil, Dynamites, Blasting Gelatin), C;H;N;0, = C,H,(NO,).05, was discovered by Sobrero in 1846, and soon afterwards was more thoroughly investigated by Railton and by De Vrij. It is formed by the action of concentrated nitric acid, in the presence of strong sulphuric acid, upon gly- cerin at a low temperature, and

~~may be readily prepared upon a small scale by dropping the glycerin into the mixed acids, the mixture being kept artificially cooled, and afterwards poured into a large volume of water. The nitroglycerin then separates as a heavy liquid (sp. gr. 1°6), generally pale yellow, but quite colourless when pure. It is inodorous, and has a sweet pungent aromatic flavour; if it be touched with the tongue or even brought into contact with the skin severe headache ensues, but this effect does not recur after a while with those who habitually handle it, nor is their health premanently injured by working with it. Nitroglycerin is applied medicinally, in very minute doses, in cases of heart disease, but if taken even in small quantities it operates as a violent irritant poison. If a thin layer be spread upon a hard surface and struck sharply with a hammer it explodes violently ; under favourable conditions it is more sensitive to explo- sion by a blow than even mercuric fulminate, It freezes (or crystallizes, in six-sided prisms) at about 40° F., and slowly liquefies again at 50°. When frozen it is less sensitive to explosion; in the United States, where nitro- glycerin is extensively used, as such, in mining operations, it is transported in the frozen state for greater safety. Under some circumstances, however, the readiness with which nitroglycerin and its preparations freeze is a source of danger; they have generally to be thawed, by applying heat, before use in cold weather or after they have been frozen for some time, and disastrous explosions have re- sulted from this being carelessly done. Nitroglycerin is very slightly soluble in water, but is readily taken up by many solvents, especially by methyl-alcohol or wood-spirit. This solution being non-explosive, in the early days of application of nitroglycerin it was transported in that form ; but if the spirit became weakened by evapora- tion, an explosive layer of nitroglycerin containing some spirit would separate, and, in cool weather, nitroglycerin would crystallize out of the solution. The dangers attend- ing the use of nitroglycerin were therefore not much diminished by the use of the solvent.~~

~~Unless very carefully freed from acid and from unstable impurities, nitroglycerin will decompose more or less rapidly, especially in warm climates, and the heat developed~~

~~by the chemical change may lead to spontaneous explosions. But, when manufactured and purified according to the system originated and developed by Nobel, the liquid is possessed of great stability.~~

~~The first attempts to utilize the explosive power of nitroglycerin were made by Nobel in 1863; they were only partially successful until the plan, first applied by General Pictot in 1854, of develop- ing the force of gunpowder in the most rapid mannrr and to the maximum extent, through the agency of an initiative detonation (see ** Detonation," art. EXPLOSIVES, vol. viii.), was applied by Nobel to the explosion of nitroglycerin. Even then, however, the liquid nature of the substance, though advantageous in one or two direc- tions, constituted a serious obstacle to its safe transport and storage and to its efficient employment; it was therefore not until Nobel hit upon the expedient of producing plastic solid preparations by mixing the liquid with solid substances, in a fine state of division, capable of absorbing and retaining considerable quantities of it, that the future of nitroglycerin as one of the most effective and convenient blasting agents was secured. Charcoal was the first absorbent used ; eventually the siliceous (infusorial) earth known as "' kieselguhr" was selected by Nobel as the best material for pro- ducing DYNAMITE (q.v.), as it absorbs, after calcination, from three to four times its weight of nitroglycerin, and does not part with it easily when the mixture is submitted to pressure or frequent altera- tions of temperature. For work requiring the greatest sharpness and violence of action, the so- called No. 1 dynamite, consisting of about 75 parts of nitroglycerin and 25 parts of kieselguhr, is by far the most extensively used; other inert absorbents have been used at times, and numerous other less violent forms of dynamite (Dynamitis & base action) are prepared by impregnating mixtures of oxidizable substances and oxidizing agents (e.g., of nitrates and charcoal or carbonaceous bodies) with smaller proportions of nitro- glycerin, or by using imperfectly nitrified wood-fibre, or other forms of cellulose, as the absorbent. Lithofracteur, dualin, glyoxilin, potentitc, atlas- dynamite, lignin-dynamite, are examples. The last- named was employed by the Fenians in the attempted outrages in Glasgow and London in 1883. The only inert absorbent of nitro- glycerin which compares in efficiency with kieselguhr is magnesia alba, which is extensively used for making dynamite in California. The appheation of nitroglycerin-preparations to industrial pur- poses, especially for mining, tunnelling, aud blasting work in~~

which great cleaving and shattering effects arc desired, has developed very rapidly since 1867. Thus, in that year 11 tons were produced at the various works with which Nobel is associated ; in 1870 the yield had increased to 424 tons, in 1877 to 5500 tons, and in 1882 to 9500 tons, while considerable quantities are now manufactured independently of Nobel.

The most recent and most perfect form in which nitroglycerin is now used is called blasting gelatin. This material, also invented by Nobel, is composed of the liqnid and of a small proportion of so-called nitro-cotton, which consists chiefly of those products of the action of nitric acid on cellulose which are intermediate between collodion-cotton and gun-cotton (trinitro-cellulose, &c.). If the

'liquid is gently heated together with 5 to 7 per cent. of the finely-divided nitro-cotton, and the mixture kept stirred, the two gelatinize together, producing a translucent, plastic, and tenacious inass, which becomes hard when cooled to the freezing point of nitroglycerin, and may be kept iu water for any length of time without an appreciable separation of nitroglycerin. When properly prepared, blasting gelatin is less sensitive to detonation than dynamite ; and, while its action as an explosive is somewhat iore gradual, it is considerably superior to dynamite in explosive power, and even slightly more powerful than pure nitroglycerin, the reason being that the latter contains somewhat more oxygen than is required for the complete oxidation of the carbou and hydrogen, and that this excess is utilized in supplying the deficiency of oxygen existing in the feebly explosive uitro-cotton. Blasting gelatin is rapidly replacing dynamite in some of its applications, and is already extcnsively manufactured in different countrics. (F. A. A.)

NITZSCH, Karz Immanven (1787-1868), theologian, was born at the small Saxon town of Borna on September 21,1787. His father, Karl Ludwig Nitzsch, who at that time was pastor and superintendent in Borna, and afterwards became professor at Wittenberg, has also left a name of some distinction in the theological world by a number of writings, among which may be mentioned a work entitled De discrimine revelationis imperatorixe et didactice prolusiones academice (2 vols., 1830). Karl Immanuel, after receiving his elementary education at home, was sent to Schulpforta in

1803, whence he pro- ceeded to the university of Wittenberg in 1806. In 1809 he graduated, when the subject of his thesis was De

52]

| evangeliorum apocryphorum in explicandis canonicis usu et

abusu, and in the following year he "'habilitated" with a dissertation De testamentis patriarcharum, libro veteris testamenti pseudepigrapho. Uaving been ordained deacon in 1811, he showed remarkable energy and zeal during the bombardment and siege of the city in 1813; and in 1817 he was appointed one of the preceptors in the preachers' seminary which had been established after the suppression of the university. From 1820 to 1822 he was superintendent in Kemberg, and in the latter year he was appointed professor ordinarius of systematic and practical theology at Bonn. Here he remained until called to succeed Marheineke at Berlin in 1847; subsequently he became university preacher, provost of St Nicolai (in 1855), and member of the supreme council of the church, in which last capacity he was one of the ablest and most active promoters of the Evangelical Union. He died on August 21, 1868.

His principal works are System der Christlichen Lehre (1829, 6th ed. 1851), Praktische Theologie (1847-60, 2d. ed. 1863-68), Akadc- mische Vortrdge tiber Christliche Glaubenslehrc (1858), and several series of Predigtcn. His Protestantische Bcantwortung, a reply to the Symbolik of Mohler, which originally appeared in the Studien uw. Kritiken, nay also be mentioned. Nitzsch, whose work in dog- matic theology has been already charactcrized (see vol. vii. p. 342), still stands out as one of the ablest and most genial and accoin- plished representatives of the '' Vermittelungstheologie" (media- tion theology), or what may be called the broad evangelical school of modern Gerinany.—Gregor Wilhelm Nitzsch (1790-1861), brother of Karl Immanuel, chose philology as his province, and held pro- fessorships of ancient literature successively at Kiel (from 1827) and at Leipsic (1852). He published various works, chiefly connected with the elucidation of the Homeric pocms.

NIVELLES (Flem., Vyvel), a manufacturing town of South Brabant, Belgium, stands on the Thines, a small sub-tributary of the Scheldt, 18

miles by rail to the south of Brussels. The Romanesque church of St Gertrude, dating from the 11th century, is interesting, but the exterior suffered defacement in the 18th century, and the restoration of the tower, which suffered from fire in 1859, has not been successful. The treasury contains some valuable works of art. Nivelles has manufactures of woollen, cotton, linen, and paper, as well as a railway loco- motive and carriage work, and does a considerable trade in corn and live stock, especially swine. The town owes its origin to a convent founded in 645 by Ida or Ita, the wife of Pippin of Landen. The population was 9825 in 1876, but is said to have been much larger in the 16th century.

NIZAMI (1141-1203). Shaikh NizAmi or Nizdm-uddin Abt Mohammed Ilyas bin Yusuf, the unrivalled master of the romantic epopee in Persia, who ranks in poetical genius as next to Firdausi, was born 535 a.n. (1141 a.p.). His native place, or at any rate the abode of his father, was in the hills of Kumm, but as he spent almost all his days in Ganjah in Arran (the present Elisabethpol) he is generally known as Nizami of Ganjah or Ganjawi. The early death of his parents, which illustrated to him in the most forcible manner the unstableness of all human existence, threw a gloom over his whole life, and fostered in him that earnest piety and fervent love for solitude and meditation which have left numerous traces in his poetical writings, and served him throughout his literary career as a powerful antidote against the enticing favours of princely courts, for which he, unlike most of his contemporaries, never sacrificed a tittle of his self-esteem. The religious atmosphere of Ganjah, besides, was most favourable to such a state of mind ; the inhabitants, being zealous Sununites, allowed nobody to dwell among them who did not come up to their standard of orthodoxy, and it is therefore not sur- prising to find that Nizimi abandoned himself at an early age to astern ascetic life, as full of intolerance to others as dry and unprofitable to himself. He was rescued at last from this monkish idleness by his inborn genius,

which, not being able to give free vent to its poetical inspirations under the crushing weight of bigotry, claimed a greater share in the legitimate

enjoyments of life and the appreciation of the beauties of nature, as well as a more enlightened faith of tolerance, benevolence, and liberality. The first poetical work in which Nizdmi embodied his thoughts on God and man, and all the experiences he had gained, was necessarily of a didactic character, and very appropriately styled Mukhzan-ulasrdr, or "Storehouse of Mysteries," as it bears the unmistakable stamp of Sufic speculations (compare HAriz, vol. xi. p. 368). It shows, moreover, a strong resemblance to Nasir Khosrau's ethical poems and Sandi's Hadikat-ulhakikat, or "Garden of Truth." The date of composition, which varies in the different copies from 552 to 582 a.n., must be fixed in 574 or 575 (1178-79 a.v.), as the author states himself in the prologue that he was forty years old when he wrote it, and the prince to whom he dedicated it—complying so far with the usual custom of his time—was Fakhr- uddin Bahramshah, the ruler of the principality of Arzanjan, who died after a very long reign 622 a.4. Although the Makhzan is mainly devoted to philosophic meditations, the propensity of Nizdm{f's genius to purely epic poetry, which was soon to assert itself in a more independent form, makes itself felt even here, all the twenty chapters being interspersed with short tales illustrative of the maxims set forth in each. His claim to the title of the foremost Persian romanticist he fully established only a year or two after the Makhzan by the publication of his first epic masterpiece Khosrau and Shirin, composed, according to the oldest copies, in 576 A.n. (1180 a.p.). As in all his following epopees the subject was taken from what pious Moslems call the time of "heathendom,"— here, for instance, from the old Sassdnian story of Shah Khosrau Parwiz, his love affairs with the princess Shirin of Armenia, his jealousy against the architect Ferhad, for some time his successful rival, of whom he got rid at last by a very ingenious trick, and his final reconciliation and marriage with Shirin ; andit is a noteworthy fact that the once so devout Nizdmi never chose a strictly Mohammedan legend for his works of fiction. Nothing could prove better the complete revolution in his views, not only on religion, but also on art. He felt, no doubt, that the object of epic poetry was not to teach moral lessons or doctrines of faith, but to depict the good and bad tend- encies of the human mind, the struggles and passions of men ; and indeed in the whole range of Persian literature only Firdaust and Fakhr-uddin Asad Jorjani, the author of the older epopee Wis and Rémin (about the middle of the 11th century), can compete with Nizdim{ in the wonderful delineation of character and the brilliant paint-

ing of human affections, especially of the joys and sorrows of a loving and beloved heart.

Khosrau and Shirin was inscribed to the reigning atabeg of Azerbaijan, Abi Jafar Mohammed Pahlawan, and his brother Kizil-Arslan, who, soon after his accession to the throne in 582 a.x., showed his gratitude to the poet by summoning him to his court, loading him with honours, and bestowing upon him the revenue of two villages, Hamd and Nijin. Nizdm{ accepted the royal gift, but his resolve to keep aloof from a servile court-life was not shaken by it, and he forthwith returned to his quiet retreat. Mean- while his genius had not been dormant, and two years after his reception at court, in 584 a.n. (1188 a.p.), he completed his Diwdn, or collection of kasidas and ghazals (mostly of an ethical and parenetic character), which are said to have numbered 20,000 distichs, although the few copies which have come to us contain only a very small number of verses. About the same time he commenced, at the desire of the ruler of the neighbouring Shirwén, his

second romantic poem, the famous Bedouin love-story of Laila and Majnin, which has so many points in common with Ariosto's Orlando Furioso, and finished it in the short space of four months. A more heroic subject, and the only one in which he made a certain attempt to rival Firdausf, was selected by our poet for his third epopee, the Iskandarndma, or "Book of Alexander," also called Sharafndma or Iqbdlnéma-i-Iskandari (" The Fortunes of Alexander "), which is split into two divisions, The first or semi-historical part shows us Alexander the Great as the conqueror of the world, while the second, of a more ethical tendency, describes him in the character of a prophet and philosopher, and narrates his second tour through the world and his adventures in the west, south, east, and north. There are frequent Sufic allegories, just as in the Makhzan ; and quite imbued with pantheistic ideas is, for instance, the final episode of the first part, the mysterious expedition of Alexander to the fountain of life in the land of darkness.! As for the date of composition, itis evident, from the conflicting statements in the different MSS., that there must have been an earlier and a later recension, the former belonging to 587-589 a.n., and dedicated to the prince of Mosul, 'Izz-uddin Masud, the latter made for the atdbeg Nusrat-

uddin Abu Bakr of Tabriz after 593 A.H., since we find init a mention of NizAm{'s last romance Haft Patkar, or the "Seven Beauties," which comprises seven tales related by the seven favourite wives of the Sassinian king Bahramgur. In this poem, which was written 593 a.n., at the request of Nur-uddin Arslén of Mosul, the son and successor of the above-mentioned 'Izz- uddin, Nizimi returned once more from his excursion into the field of heroic deeds to his old favourite domain of romantic fiction, and added a fresh leaf to the laurel crown of immortal fame with which the unanimous consent of Eastern and Western critics has adorned his venerable head. The most interesting of the seven tales is the fourth, the story of the Russian princess, in which we recognize at once the prototype of Gozzi's well-known Turandot, which was afterwards adapted by Schiller for the German stage. The five mathnawis, from the Makhzan to the Haft Patkar, form Nizdmi's so-called " Quintuple " (Khamsah) or "Five Treasures" (Panj Ganj), and have been taken as pattern by all the later epic poets in the Persian, Turkish, Chaghatdi, and Hindustani languages. Nizdmi died at Ganjah in his sixty-fourth year, 599 a.n. (1203 a.p.).

The fullest account of Nizdmi is given in Dr W. Bacher's Niedmt's Leben und Werke (Leipsic, 1871 ; English translation by S. Robinson, London, 1878, reprinted in the same author's Persian Poetry for English Readers, 1883, pp. 103-244). All the-errors of detail in Bacher's work have been corrected by Dr Rieu in his Catalogue of the Persian MSS. in the British Museum, vol. ii., 1881, p. 563 sq.

Principal Editions.—The whole Khamsah (lithographed, Bom- bay, 1834 and 1838 ; Teheran, 1845) ; Makhzan-ulasrdr (edited by N. Bland, London, 1844; lithographed, Cawnpore, 1869; English translation in MS. by Hatton Hindley, in the British Museum Add. 6961); Khosrau and Shirin (lithographed, Lahore, 1871; Ger- man translation by Hammer in Shéirin, ein persisches romantisches Gedicht, Leipsic, 1809); Laila and Majnin (lithographed, Lucknow, 1879; English translation by J. Atkinson, London, 1836); Haft Paikur (lithographed, Bombay, 1849 ; Lucknow, 1873 ; the fourth tale in German by F. von Erdmann, Behramgur und die russische Fitrstentochter, Kasan, 1844) ; Iskandarnéma, first part, with coin- mentary (Calentta, 1812 and 1825 ; text alone, Calcutta, 1853; lithographed with marginal notes, Lucknow, 1865; Bombay, 1861 and 1875; English

translation by H. Wilberforce Clarke, London, 1881; compare also Erdmann, De Expeditione Russorum Berdaam versus, Kasan, 1826, and Charmoy, Expédition d' Aléxandre contre les Russes, St Petersburg, 1829); IJskandarndma-t-Bahrt, sccond part, edited by Dr Sprenger (Calcutta, 1852 and 1869). (H. E.)

NIZAM'S DOMINIONS. See HYDERABAD, Vol. xii. p. 428.

—1 Compare Dr Ethé's essay, "* Alexander's Zug zum Lebensquell," in Siizungsber. d. bayerisch. Akad., 1871, pp. 343-405.

;

NOA—NOA

NOAH (M3, Née, Moe) is, according to the book of Genesis, the son of Lamech, and the second father of mankind after the deluge. His name, which is of obscure origin, is connected in Gen. v. 29 with a play on the word 0M) (nahem), to comfort. The story of the flood, the two elements of which the extant narrative is com- posed, and the parallel traditions of other nations, par- ticularly of the Babylonians, have been spoken of in the article DELUGE. 'The earlier narrative does not mention the point at which Noah left the ark, and it is doubtful if Gen. xi. 1 sg.,, which seems to be a fragment of a still older tradition, and which makes mankind disperse from Babylonia, originally stood in any connexion with the story of Noah and the flood. The later priestly (or, as it used to be called, Elohistic) narrative names the mountains of Ararat, 2.e., one of the mountains of the land of Ararat, as the place where the ark rested. The identification of this mountain with the Ararat of modern maps (M. Masis) is tolerably old ; Jerome (on Isa. xxxviil. 38) already places the land of Ararat in this quarter; but a more ancient Jewish tradition, which remained alive throughout the Middle Ages, seeks Ararat in the land of Kardu, 7.e., the mountains of the Kurds east of the Tigris (comp. ARARAT). From the Bible it is only certain (Isa. xxxvii. 38; Jer. li. 27) that the kingdom of Ararat was a remote northern district. After describ- ing the covenant which God made with Noah on leaving the ark (Gen. ix. 1-17) the priestly narrative has nothing further to tell of the patriarch's life; but an older frag- ment (Gen. ix. 20-27) makes him plant a vineyard and drink of the wine with consequences which lead him to

pronounce a blessing on Shem and Japheth and a curse of slavery on Canaan. The story seems to require, for clear- ness, the omission of the words " Ham, the father of" in verse 22; and if this be so we find that in one tradition the sons of Noah are Shem, Japheth, and Canaan. So taken, the names of the three sons would represent three elements, not in the population of the world, but in that of Palestine. Shem, in Hebrew, means name, and "sons of name," as opposed to "sons of no name" (Job xxx. 8, A. V., "sons of base men"), would naturally denote the Hebrew pure-blooded aristocracy, in antithesis to the subject aborigines (Canaan). Wellhausen, to whom this ingenious theory is due, would further identify Japheth in this passage with the Philistines ; Budde thinks rather of the Pheenicians. That the divisions Shem, Ham, and Japheth had not always one fixed sense is clear from Gen. x., where two distinct schemes of classification have been mixed up with such results as that Sheba and Havilah appear under Ham at ver. 7, and under Shem in ver. 28 sg. The one division appears to be mainly geographical, and is preserved complete, vers. 2-7, 20-23, 31; it bears the marks of the priestly narrator, and was not written before the exile. On the other hand, vers. 8-19, 25-30 belong to the older narrative, and are frag- ments of a classification seemingly more ethnographical in character.

NOAILLES. This great French family took its name from the castle of Noailles, in the territory of Ayen, be- tween Brives and Turenne in the Limousin, and dated its nobility from the 11th century. It did not obtain more than local and provincial fame until the 16th century, when its head, ANTOINE de Noailles (1504-1562), became admiral of France, and was ambassador in England during three important years, 1553-1556, durmg which he main- tained a gallant but unsuccessful rivalry with the Spanish ambassador, Simon Renard. Henri (1554-1623), son of Antoine, was a commander in the religious wars, and was made comte d'Ayen by Henry IV. in 1593. The grandson of the first count played an important part in the Fronde

and the early years of the reign of Louis XIV., became a captain-general of the newly-won province of Roussillon, and in 1663 was made duc d'Ayen, and peer of France. The sons of the first duke raised the family to its

~~greatest fame, and occupied very important positions in the later years of the reign of Louis XIV. The elder son, ANNE JuLEs (1650-1708), was one of the chief generals of France towards the end of the reign of Louis, and, after raising the regiment of Noailles in 1689, he commanded in chief in Spain during the war of the Spanish succession, and was made marshal of France in 1693. The younger son, Louis ANTOoINE (1651-1729), took orders, and rose to the most important position of the church in France when he was made archbishop of Paris in 1695. He held this high dignity for more than thirty years, until his death in 1729 ; he was nade a cardinal in 1700. These two distinguished brothers had made their family the most famous in France, with the exception of the Rohans, and the name occurs with almost confusing reiteration throughout the 18th century. ADRIEN Maurice (1678-1766), the third duke, was also a soldier, and learned war under his father in Spain. He served in all the most important wars of the reign of Louis XV. in Italy and Germany, and became the second maréchal de Noailles in 1734. His last command in the war of the Austrian succession was not a successful one, for he was beaten by the English at the battle of Dettingen in 1743. Two sons of the third duke also attained the rank of marshal of France. The elder, Louis (1713-1793), who bore the title of duc d'Ayen till his father's death in 1766, when he became duc de Noailles, served in most of the wars of the 18th century without particular distinction, but was nevertheless made a marshal of France, as the maréchal de Noailles, in 1775. He refused to emigrate during the Revolution, but escaped the fate of most noblemen by dying in August 1793, before the Terror reached its height. On the 4th Thermidor, just before the fall of Robespierre, the aged duchesse de Noailles was executed with her daughter-in-law, the duchesse d'Ayen, and her granddaughter, the vicomtesse de Noailles. JEAN Pauu Francois (1739-1824), the fifth duke, was, like his family, in the army, but his heart was bent on scientific pursuits, and for his eminence as a chemist he was elected a member of the Academy of Sciences in 1777. He became duc d'Ayen in 1766 on his grandfather's death, and duc de Noailles on his father's in 1793. Having emigrated in 1792, he lived in Switzerland until the restoration in 1814, when he took his seat asa peer of France. He had no son, but several daughters, one of whom married*La Fayette, and another her cousin, the vicomte de Noailles. He was succeeded as duc de Noailles by his grand-nephew, PauL (b. 1802), who has won some reputation as an author, and~~

who became a member of the French Academy in the place of Chateaubriand in 1849. The grandfather of Paul de Noailles, and brother of the fifth duke, Emmanurt Marie Louis (1743-1822), marquis de Noailles, was a distin- guished diplomatist of the 18th century: he was ambassador at Amsterdam from 1770-1776, at London 1776-1783, and

at Vienna 1783-1792; and, like his brother, he survived

the Revolution, and lived to see the Restoration.

One other branch of the family deserves notice. PHILIPPE (1715- 1794), comte de Noailles, was a younger brother of the fourth duke, and amore distinguished soldier than his brother. He served at Minden and in other campaigns, and was made a marshal on the same day as his brother, under the title of maréchal de Mouchy. He was long in great favour at court, and his wife was first lady of honour to Marie Antoinette, and was nicknamed by her Madame Ktiquette. This court favour brought down punishment in the days of the Revolution, and the old marshal and his wife were guillotined on the 27th June 1794. His two sons, the prince de Poix and the vicomte de Noailles, were both members of the Constituent Assembly. The prince de Poix, who was a captain of the body guards, sat on the right of the assembly, aud emigrated in 1792, but, surviving the

Bibliothéque Universelle of Geneva. It is worthy of note that for the measurement of currents he seems to have pre- ferred the use of his “rings” to the use of the galvanometer.

NOBILITY. To form a true understanding of what is strictly implied in the word “ nobility ” it is needful to distinguish its meaning from that of several words with which it is likely to be confounded. In England nobility is apt to be confounded with the peculiar institution of the British peerage. Yet nobility, in some shape or another, has existed in most places and times of the world’s history, while the British peerage is an institution purely local, and one which has actually hindered the existence of a nobility in the sense which the word bears in most other countries. Nor is nobility the same thing as aristocracy. This last is a word which is often greatly abused ; but,

whenever it is used with any regard to its true meaning, it is a word strictly political, implying a particular form of government. But nobility is not neces- sarily a political term; the distinction which it implies may be accompanied by political privileges or it may not. Again, it is sometimes thought that both nobility and aristocracy are in some special way connected with kingly government. To not a few it would seem a contra- diction to speak of nobility or aristocracy in a republic. Yet, though many republics have eschewed nobility, there is nothing in a republican, or even in a democratic, form of government inconsistent with the existence of nobility ; and it is only in a republic that aristocracy, in the strict sense of the word, can exist. Aristocracy implies the existence of nobility ; but nobility does not imply aris- tocracy ; it may exist under any form of government. The peerage, as it exists in the three British kingdoms, is something which is altogether peculiar to the three British kingdoms, and which has nothing in the least degree like it elsewhere.

Nobility, then, in the strict sense of the word, is the Defni- hereditary handing on from generation to generation of tion. some acknowledged pre-eminence, a pre-eminence founded on hereditary succession, and on nothing else. Such nobility may be immemorial or it may not. There may or there may not be a power vested somewhere of con- ferring nobility; but it is essential to the true idea of nobility that, when once acquired, it shall go on for ever to all the descendants—or, more commonly, only to all the descendants in the male line—of the person first ennobled or first recorded as noble. The pre-eminence so handed on may be of any kind, from substantial political power to mere social respect and precedence. It does not seem necessary that it should be formally enacted by law if it is universally acknowledged by usage. It may be marked by titles or it may not. It is hardly needful to prove that nobility does not imply wealth, though nobility without wealth runs some risk of being forgotten. This definition seems to take in all the kinds of nobility which have existed in different times and places. They have differed widely in the origin of the noble class and in the amount of privilege implied in membership of it; but they all | agree in the transmission of some privilege or other to all the descendants, or to all the male descendants, of the first noble.

~~In strictness nobility and gentry are the same thing. Nobility This fact is overshadowed in England, partly by the and habitual use of the word "gentleman " in various secondary Sut. uses, partly by the prevalent confusion between nobility and peerage. But that they are the same is proved by the use of the French word gentulhomme, a word which has pretty well passed out of modern use, but which, as long as It remained in use, never lost its true meaning. There Were very wide distinctions within the French noblesse, but they all formed one privileged class as distinguished~~

~~Revolution, he returned to Parisin 1814, and was made a lieutenant-general. Lovis Marte (1756-1804), vicomte de Noailles, was the second son of the maréchal de Mouchy, and the most distinguished of all his family. He served brilliantly under his brother-in-law La Fayette in America, and was the officer who concluded the capitu- lation of Yorktown. He was elected to the states-general in 1789, and at once showed his enthusiasm for liberty. He began the famous "orgie," as Mirabeau called it, on 4th August, when all privi- leges were abolished, and with d'Aiguillon proposed the abolition of titles and liveries in June 1790. When the Revolution became more pronounced he emigrated to America, and became a partner in Bingham's bank at Philadelphia. He was very successful, and might have lived happily had he not accepted a command against the English in San Domingo, under Rochambeau. He made a brilliant defence of the mole St Nicholas, and escaped witli the garrison to Cuba; but in making for Havana his ship was attacked by an English frigate, and after a long engagemeuit he was severely wounded, and died of his wounds on 9th January 1804. The whole family of Noailles had not a more brilliant representative than the friend of La Fayette, Louis, vicomte de Noailles.~~

~~NOAKHALL, or Noaconzy, a district in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, India, lying between 22° 22' and 23° 17' N. lat. and 90° 43' and 91° E. long, bounded on the N. by Tipperah, on the E. by Hill Tipperah state and Chittagong, on the S. by the Bay of Bengal, and on the W. by the main stream of «the Meghna, with an area of 1641 square miles, consists of an alluvial tract of main- land, together with several islands at the mouth of the Meghné. In general, each homestead is surrounded by a thick grove of betel and cocoa-nut palms, and in the north- western tracts dense forests of~~

~~betel-nut palms extend for miles. The district is very fertile; and, with the exception of some sandbanks and recent accretions, every part of it is under continuous cultivation. The process of alluvion is gradually but steadily going on, the mainland extending seawards. Wild animals and small game are numerous.~~

~~The population of the district was 820,772 in 1881, of whom 608,592 were Mohammedans. The district contains no town exceed- ing 5000 inhabitants. Sudharam, the civil station, is little more than a large village, with a populatioh (in 1872) of 4752. Rice forms the great staple of cultivation ; and rice, betel-nuts, and cocoa-nuts are exported. Nodkhali is peculiarly liable to destructive floods from the sea, generally caused by southerly gales or cyclones occur- ring at the time when the Meghna is swollen by heavy rains, and at flood-tides, — the tidal bore being somctimes 20 feet high, and moving at the rate of 15 milesan hour. The cyclone and storm-wave of 3lst October 1876 was terribly disastrous, sweeping over the whole delta of the Meghnd. The loss of human life was esti- mated at 100,000.~~

~~The Mohammedan population of the islands at the mouth of the Meghna practised piracy up to a comparatively recent date, and at the beginning of the 17th century Portuguese pirates, under Sebastian Gonzales, occupied Sandwip. They were ultimately reduced to subjection by Shaista Khdn, the governor of Bengal, about the middle of the century ; and their descendants have gradually sunk to the level of the natives surrounding them, whose dress, customs, and language they have, for the most part, adopted. They are Christians, and retain the old Portuguese names. About 1756 the East India Company established factories in Noakhali and Tipperah, the ruins of some of which still remain.~~

~~NOBILL, Leoproxpo (17 84-1834), was in youth an officer of artillery, but afterwards became professor of physics in the archducal museum at Florence, the old habitat of the Accademia del Cimento. His most valuable contributions to science consist in the suggestion of the astatic combina- tion of two needles, by which the sensibility of a galvano- meter is so greatly increased, and in the invention of the so-called thermo-multiplier or thermo-electric pile. His own experimental work with these instruments~~

~~was soon eclipsed by the brilliant applications made of them by Melloni and Forbes. He also discovered the exquisitely coloured transparent films of metal deposited by electro- chemical processes, which from their common form are usually known as Nobili's rings. Guebhard has lately im- proved the process for producing them. Nobili has left a large number of theoretical writings, chiefly on magnetism, light, and electricity, most of which are to be found in the~~

~~Roman Populus,~~

~~–~~

~~NOBEL ITY~~

~~from the roturier. Here, then, is a nobility in the strictest sense. If there is no such class in England, it is simply because the class which answers to it has never been able to keep any universally acknowledged privileges. The word " gentleman " has lost its original meaning in a variety of other uses, while the word "nobleman " has come to be confined to members of the peerage and a few of their immediate descendants.~~

~~That the English peerage does not answer to the true idea of a nobility will be seen with a very little thought. There is no handing on of privilege or pre-eminence to perpetual generations. The peer holds a great position, endowed with substantial powers and privileges, and those powers and privileges are handed on by hereditary suc- cession. But they are handed on only to one member of the family at a time. The peer's children, in some cases his grandchildren, have titles and precedence, but they have no substantial privileges. His remoter descendants have no advantage of any kind over other people, except their chance of succeeding to the peerage. The remote descendant of a duke, even though he may chance to be heir presumptive to the dukedom, is in no way distinguished from any other gentleman; it is even possible that he may not hold the social rank of gentleman. This is not nobility in the true sense; it is not nobility as nobility was understood either in the French kingdom or in the Venetian commonwealth.~~

Nobility thus implies the vesting of some hereditary privilege or advantage in certain families, without decid- ing in what such privilege or advantage consists. Its nature may differ widely according to the causes which have led to the establishment of the distinction between family and family in each particular case. The way in which nobility has arisen in different times and places is very various, and there are several nations whose history will supply us with examples of a nobility of one kind giving way to a nobility of another kind. The history of the Roman commonwealth illustrates this perhaps better than any other. What we may call the nobility of earlier occupation makes way for the nobility of office. Our first glimpses of authentic Roman history set before us two orders in the same state, one of which is distinguished from the other by many exclusive privileges. The privi- leged order—the populus, patres, patricians—has all the characteristics which we commonly expect to find ina privi- leged order. It is a minority, a minority strictly marked out by birth from other members of the commonwealth, a minority which seems further, though this point is less clearly marked, to have had on the whole the advantage in point of wealth. When we are first entitled to speak with any kind of certainty, the non-privileged class possess a certain share in the election of magistrates and the making of laws. But the privileged class alone are eligible to the greatest offices of the state ; they have in their hands the exclusive control of the national religion ; they have the exclusive enjoyment of the common land of the state,—in Teutonic phrase, the folkland. A little research shows that the origin of these privileges was a very simple one. Those who appear in later times as a privileged order among the people had once been the whole people. The patricians, patres, housefathers, goodmen—so lowly is the origin of that proud name—were once the whole Roman people, the original inhabitants of the Roman hills. They were the true populus Romanus, alongside of whom grew up a secondary Roman people, the plebs or commons. As new settlers came, as the people of conquered towns were moved to Rome, as the character of Romans was granted to some allies and forced upon some enemies, this plebs, sharing some but not all of the rights of citizens, became a non-privileged order alongside of a privileged order. As

~~the non-privileged order increased in numbers, while the privileged order, as every exclusive hereditary body must do, lessened, the larger body gradually put on the char- acter of the nation at large, while the smaller body put on the character of a nobility. But their position as a nobility or privileged class arose solely because a class with inferior rights to their own grew up around them. They were not a nobility or a privileged class as long as there was no less privileged class to distinguish them from. commonwealth in which they bore rule an aristocracy ; but they were a democracy among themselves.~~

~~Their exclusive possession of power made the~~

~~We see indeed faint traces of distinction among the patricians themselves, which may lead us to guess that the equality of all patricians may have been won by struggles of unre- corded days, not unlike those which in recorded days brought about the equality of patrician and plebeian. But at this we can only guess. The Roman patricians, the true Roman populus, appear at our first sight of them as a body democratic in its own constitution, but standing out as an order marked by very substantial privileges indeed from the other body, the plebs, also democratic in its own constitution, but in every point of honour and power the marked inferior of the populus.~~

~~The old people of Rome thus grew, or rather shrank Patri- up, into a nobility by the growth of a new people by "2s their side which they declined to admit to a share in their rights, powers, and possessions. A series of struggles raised this new people, the plebs, to a level with the old people, the populus. The gradual character of the process is not the least instructive part of it. There are two marked stages in the struggle. In the first the plebeians strive to obtain relief from laws and customs which were actually oppressive to them, while they were profitable to the patricians. When this relief has been gained by a series of enactments, a second struggle follows, in which the plebeians win political equality with the patricians. In this second struggle, too, the ground is won bit by bit. No general law was ever passed to abolish the privileges of the patricians; still less was any law ever passed to abolish the distinction between patrician and plebeian. All that was done was done step by step. First, marriage between the two orders was legalized. Then one law admitted plebeians to one office, another law to~~

~~another. Admission to military command was won first, then admis- sion to civil jurisdiction; a share in religious functions was won last of all. And some offices, chiefly those reli- gious offices which carried no political power with them, always remained the exclusive property of the patricians, because no special law was ever passed to throw them open to plebeians. In this gradual way every practical advantage on the part of the patricians was taken away. But the result did not lead to the abolition of all dis- tinctions between the orders. Patricians and plebeians went on as orders defined by law, till the distinction died out in the confusion of things under the empire, till at last the word "patrician" took quite a new meaning. The distinction, in truth, went on till the advantage turned to the side of the plebeians. Both consuls might be plebeians, both could not be patricians; a patrician could not wield the great powers vested in the tribunes of the commons. These were greater advantages than the exclusive patrician possession of the offices of interrex, rex sacrorum, and the higher flamens. And, as the old distinction survived in law and religion after all substantial privileges were abo- lished, so presently a new distinction arose of which law and religion knew nothing, but which became in practice nearly as marked and quite as important as the older one.~~

~~This was the growth of the new nobility of Rome, that body, partly patrician, partly plebeian, to which the name~~

~~New nobility.~~

~~526~~

~~nobilitas strictly belongs in Roman history. This new nobility gradually became as well marked and as exclusive as the old patriciate. But it differed from the old patriciate in this, that, while the privileges of the old patriciate rested on law, or perhaps rather on immemorial custom, the privileges of the new nobility rested wholly on a sentiment of which men could remember the beginning. Or it would be more accurate to say that the new nobility had really no privileges at all. Its members had no legal advantages over other citizens, They were a social caste, which strove to keep, and which largely succeeded in keeping, all high offices and political power in its own hands. Such privileges, even of an honorary kind, as the nobles did enjoy by law belonged to them, not as nobles, but a$ senators and senators' sons. Yet practically the new nobility was a privileged class ; it felt itself to be so, and it was felt to be so by others. This nobility consisted of all those who, as descendants of curule magistrates, had the jus imaginum,—that is, who could point to forefathers ennobled by office. That is to say, it consisted of the remains of the old patriciate, together with those plebeian families any members of which had been chosen to curule Offices. These were naturally those families which had been patrician in some other Italian city, but which were plebeian at Rome. Many of them equalled the patricians in wealth and antiquity of descent, and as soon as inter- marriage was allowed they became in all things their social equals. The practical result of the Licinian reform was that the great plebeian families became, for all practical purposes, patrician. They separated themselves from the mass of the plebeians to form a single body with the sur- viving patricians. Just as the old patricians had striven to keep plebeians out of high Offices, so now the new nobles, patrician and plebeian alike, strove to keep "new men," men who had not the jus imaginum, out of high office. But there was still the difference that in the old state of things the plebeian was shut out by law, while in the new state of things no law shut out the new man. It needed a change in the constitution to give the consul- ship to Lucius Sextius; it needed only union and energy in the electors to give it to Caius Marius.~~

~~The Roman case is often misunderstood, because the later Roman writers did not fully understand the case them- selves. Livy could never get rid of the idea that the old struggle between patrician and plebeian was something like the struggle between the nobility and the people at large in the later days of the commonwealth, In a cer- tain sense he knew better; at any rate, he often repeats the words of those who knew better; but the general impression given by his story is that the plebeians were a low mob and their leaders factious and interested ring- leaders of a mob. The case is again often misunderstood because the words " patrician" and "plebeian," like so many other technical Roman and Greek words, have come in modern language to be used in a way quite unlike their original sense. The word "'plebeian," in its strict sense, is no more contemptuous than the word commoner in England. The plebs, like the English commons, contained families differing widely in rank and social position, among them those families which, as soon as an artificial barrier broke down, joined with the patricians to form the new nobility. The whole lesson is lost if the words "patrician " and " plebeian " are used in any but their strict sense. The Catuli and Metelli, among the proudest nobles of Rome, were plebeians, and as such could not have been chosen to the purely patrician office of interrex, or flamen of Jupiter. Yet even in good writers on Roman history the words " patrician " and « plebeian " are often misapplied by being transferred to the later disputes at Rome, in which they are quite out of place.~~

~~Athenian eviraTpioa t,~~

~~hand on many of them~~

~~N-OSn fo tt oy~~

~~We may now compare the history of nobility at Rome Compari- the most famous city- son be- Thus at Athens its history is in its tween~~

~~with its history in some other of commonwealths, main outlines very much the same as its history at Rome up to a certain point, while there is nothing at Athens which at all answers to the later course of things at Rome. At Athens, as at Rome, an old patriciate, a nobility of older settlement, a nobility which had once been the whole people, was gradually shorn of all~~

exclusive privilege, and driven to share equal rights with a new people which had grown up around it. The reform of Clisthenes answers in a general way to the reform of Licinius, though the different circumstances of the two cities hinder us from carrying out the parallel into detail. But both at Rome and at Athens we see, at a stage earlier than the final reform, an attempt to set up a standard of wealth, either instead of or along- side of the older standard of birth. This same general idea comes out both in the constitution of Servius and in the constitution of Solon, though the application of the principle is different in the two cases, Servius made voting power depend on income ; by Solon the same rule was applied to qualification for office. By this change power is not granted to every citizen, but it is put within the reach of every citizen. No man can change his fore- fathers, but the poor man may haply become richer. The who were thus gradually brought down from their privileged position, seem to have been quite as proud and exclusive as the Roman patricians ; but when they lost their privileges they lost them far more thoroughly, and they did not, as at Rome, practically to a new nobility, of which they formed part, though not the whole. While at Rome the distinction of patrician and plebeian was never wiped out, while it remained to the last a legal distinction even when practical privilege had turned the other way, at Athens, after the democracy had reached its full growth, the dis- tinction seems to have had no legal existence whatever.

At Rome down to the last it made a difference whether the

candidate for office was patrician or plebeian, though the difference was in later times commonly to the advantage of the plebeian. At Athens, at any rate after Aristides, the eupatrid was neither better nor worse off than another man.

But, what is of far greater importance, there never arose at Athens any body of men which at all answered to the nobilitas of Rome. We see at Athens strong signs of social distinctions, even at a late period of the democracy ; we see that, though the people might be led by the low- born demagogue—using that-word in its strictand not neces- sarily dishonourable meaning—their votes most commonly fell on men of ancient descent. We see that men of birth and wealth often allowed themselves a strange licence in dealing

~~with their low-born fellow-citizens, But we see no sign of the growth of a body made up of patricians and leading plebeians who contrived to keep office to themselves by a social tradition only less strong than positive law. We have at Athens the exact parallel to the state of things when Appius Claudius shrank from the thought of the consulship of Caius Licinius ; we have no exact parallel to the state of things when Quintus Metellus shrank from the thought of the consulship of Caius Marius. The cause of the difference seems to be that, while the origin of the patriciate was exactly the same at Rome and at Athens, the origin of the commons was different. The four Ionic tribes at Athens seem to have answered very closely to the three patrician tribes at Rome ; but the Athenian demos grew up in a different way from the Roman plebs. If we could believe that the Athenian demos arose out of the union of the other Attic towns with Athens, this would be an exact analogy to the origin of the Roman plebs ; the evrratpisae would be the Athenians and the demos the~~

~~Sparta.~~

~~NOBILITY~~

~~Atticans (Arrixot). But from such glimpses of early Attic history as we can get the union of the Attic towns would seem to have been completed before the constitu- tional struggle began. That union would answer rather to the union of the three patrician tribes of Rome. Such hints as we have, while they set before us, just as at Rome, a state of things in which small landed proprietors are burthened with debt, also set before us the Attic demos as, largely at least, a body of various origins which had grown up in the city. Clisthenes, for instance, enfran- chised many slaves and strangers, a course which certainly formed no part of the platform of Licinius, and which reminds us rather of Cneus Flavius somewhat later. On the whole it seems most likely that, while the kernel of the Roman plebs was rural or belonged to the small towns admitted to the Roman franchise, the Attic demos, largely at least, though doubtless not wholly, arose out of the mixed settlers who had come together in the city, answer- ing to the perorxox of later times. If so, there would be no place in Athens for those great plebeian houses, once patri- cian in some other commonwealth, out of which the later Roman nobilitas was so largely formed. =~~

~~Thus the history of nobility at Athens supplies a close analogy to the earlier stages of its history at Rome, but it has nothing answering to its later stages. At Sparta we have a third instance of a people shrinking up into a nobility, but it is a people whose position differs altogether from anything either at Rome or at Athens. Sparta is the best case of a nobility of conquest. This is true, whether we look on the zrepiotxor as Achaians or as Dorians, or as belonging some to one race and some to the other. In any case the Spartans form a ruling body, and a body whose privileged position in the land is owing to conquest. The Spartans answer to the patricians, the zepiocxor to the plebs ; the helots are below the position of plebs or demos. The only difference is that, probably owing to the fact that the distinction was due to conquest, the local char- acter of the distinction lived on much longer than it did at Rome. We hardly look on the Spartans as a nobility among the other Lacedemonians ; Sparta rather is a ruling city bearing sway over the other Lacedemonian towns. But this is exactly what the original Roman patricians, the settlers on the three oldest hills, were in the beginning. The so-called cities (rdéAes) of the wepiouxor answered pretty well to the local plebeian tribes ; the difference is that the wepiouor never became a united corporate body like the Roman plebs. Sparta to the last remained what Rome was at the beginning, a city with a populus (Sjpos) but no plebs. And, as at Rome in early times, there were at Sparta distinctions within the populus; there were dpovor and tropeioves, like the majores and mznores gentes at Rome. Only at Rome, where there was a plebs to be striven against, these distinctions seem to have had a tend- ency to die out, while at Sparta they seem to have had a tendency to widen. The Spartan patriciate could afford to disfranchise some of its own members.~~

~~The other old Greek cities, as well as those of medieval Italy and Germany, would supply us with endless exam- ples of the various ways in which privileged orders arose. Venice, a city not exactly belonging to any of these classes, essentially a city of the Eastern empire and not of the Western, gives us an example than which none is more instructive. The renowned patriciate of Venice was as far removed as might be from the character either of a~~

~~out any parallel to the earlier. Athens has Fabii and Claudii, but no Catuli or Metelli; Venice has Catuli and — Metelli, but no Fabii or Claudii.~~

~~In one point, however, the Venetian nobility differed Venice.~~

~~from either the older or the newer nobility of Rome, and also from the older nobilities of the medizval Italian cities. Nowhere else did nobility so distinctly rise out of wealth, and that wealth gained by commerce. In the original island territory of Venice there could be no such thing as landed property. The agricultural plebeian of old Rome and the feudal noble of contemporary Europe were both of them at Venice impossible characters. The Venetian nobility is an example of a nobility which gradually arose out of the mass of the people as certain families step by step drew all political power into their own hands. The plebs did not gather round the patres, neither were they conquered by the patres; the patres were developed by natural selection out of the plebs, or, more strictly, out of the ancient populus. The com- mune of Venice, the ancient style of the commonwealth, changed into the seigniory of Venice. Political power was~~

~~'gradually confined to those whose forefathers had held~~

~~political power. This was what the later nobility of Rome was always striving at, and what they did to a great extent practically establish. But, as the exclusive privileges of the nobility were never recognized by any legal or formal act, men like Caius Marius would ever and anon thrust themselves in, The privileges which the Venetian nobility took to themselves were established by acts which, if not legal, were at least formal. The Roman nobility, resting wholly on sufferance, was overthrown by the ambition of one of its own members. The Venetian nobility, resting also in its beginnings on sufferance, but on sufferance which silently obtained the force of law, lasted as long as Venice remained a separate state.~~

~~The hereditary oligarchy of Venice was established by a series of changes which took place between the years 1297 and 1319. All of them together really go to make up the "Shutting of the Great Council," a name which is formally given to the act of the first of those years. In 1172 the Great Council began as an elective body; it gradually ousted the popular assembly from all prac- tical power. It was, as might be looked for, commonly filled~~

by members of distinguished families, descendants of ancient magistrates, who were already beginning to be looked on as noble. The series of revolutions already spoken of first made descent from former councillors a necessary qualification for election to the council; then election was abolished, and the council consisted of all descendants of its existing members who had reached the age of twenty-five. Thus the optimates of Venice did what the optimates of Rome strove to do: they esta- blished a nobility whose one qualification was descent from those who had held office in past times. This is what the nobility of office, if left unchecked, naturally grows into. But the particular way in which oligarchy was finally established at Venice had some singular results. Some of the great families which were already looked on as noble were not represented in the council at the time of the shutting .; of others some branches were represented and others not. These families and branches of families, however noble they might be in descent, were thus shut out from all the political privileges of nobility. When one branch of a family was admitted and one shut out we have

an analogy to the patrician and plebeian Claudii, though the The distinction had come about in quite another way. And Roman in the Great Council itself we have the lively image of the C“”™ 5 : and the aristocratic popular assembly of Rome, the assembly of Groat the populus, that of the cwriz, where every man of patri- Council

cian birth had his place. The two institutions are the of Venice.

nobility of conquest.or of a nobility of older settlement. Nor was it strictly a nobility of office, though it had more in common with that than with either of the other two. As Athens supplies us with a parallel to the older nobility of Rome without any parallel to the later, so Venice sup- plies us with a parallel to the later nobility of Rome with-

The Nobility of Venice an Aris- tocracy.

Civic aristo- eracies.

same, only the way in which they came about is exactly opposite. The assembly of curi# at Rome, originally the democratic assembly of the original people, first grew into an aristocratic assembly, and then died out alto- gether as a new Roman people, with its own assembly, grew up by its side. It was a primitive institution which gradually changed its character by force of circumstances. It died out, supplanted by other and newer powers, when it became altogether unsuited to the times. The Great Council of Venice was anything but a primitive institu- tion ; it was the artificial institution of a late age, which grew at the expense of earlier institutions, of the prince on the one side and of the people on the other. But the two different roads led to the same result. The Great Council of Venice, the curiz of Rome, were each of them the assembly of a privileged class, an assembly in which every member of that class had a right to a place, an assembly which might be called popular as far as the privileged class was concerned, though rigidly oligarchic as regarded the excluded classes. But, close as the likeness is, it is merely a superficial likeness, because it is the result of opposite causes working in opposite directions. It is like two men who are both for a moment in the same place, though their faces are turned in opposite ways. If the later nobilitas of Rome had established an assembly in which every one who had the jus imaginum had a vote and none other, that would have been a real parallel to the shutting of the Venetian Great Council ; for it would have come about through the working of causes which are essentially the same.

The nobility which was thus formed at Venice is the very model of a civic nobility, a nobility which is also an aristocracy. In a monarchy, despotic or constitutional, there cannot in strictness be an aristocracy, because the whole political power cannot be vested in the noble class. But in the Venetian commonwealth the nobility was a real aristocracy. All political power was vested in the noble class ; the prince sank to a magistrate, keeping only some of the outward forms of sovereignty; the mass of the people were shut out altogether. And, if no govern- ment on earth ever fully carried out the literal meaning of aristocracy as the rule of the best, these civic nobilities come nearer to it than any other form of government. They do really seem to engender a kind of hereditary capa- city in their members. Less favourable than either mon- archy or democracy to the growth of occasional great men, they are more favourable than either to the constant

~~supply of a succession of able men, qualified to carry on the work of government. Their weak point lies in their necessary conservatism; they cannot advance and adapt themselves to changed circumstances, as either monarchy or democracy can. When, therefore, their goodness is gone, their corruption becomes worse than the corruption of either of the other forms of government.~~

~~All this is signally shown in the history both of Venice and of other aristocratic cities. But we are concerned with them now only as instances of one form of nobility. The civic aristocracies did not all arise in the same way. Venice is the best type of one way in which they rose ; but it is by no means the only way. In not a few of the Italian cities nobility had an origin and ran a course quite unlike the origin and the course which were its lot at Venice. The nobles of many cities were simply the nobles of the surrounding country changed, sometimes greatly against their will, into citizens. Such a nobility differed far more widely from either the Roman or the Venetian patriciate than they differed from one another, It wanted the element of legality, or at least of formality, which distinguished both these bodies. The privileges of the Roman patriciate, whatever we may call them, were~~

~~NO Bt La Ty~~

~~not usurpations; and, if we call the privileges of the Venetian nobility usurpations, they were stealthy and peaceful usurpations, founded on something other than mere violence. But in many Italian cities the position of the nobles, if it did not begin in violence, was main- tained by violence, and was often overthrown by violence. They remained, in short, as unruly and isolated within the walls of the cities as they had ever been without. A nobility of this kind often gave way to a democracy which either proved as turbulent as itself, or else grew into an oligarchy ruling under democratic forms. Thus at Flor- ence the old nobles became the opposite to a privileged class. The process which at Rome gradually gave the plebeian a political advantage over the patrician was carried at Florence to a far greater length at a single blow. The whole noble order was disfranchised; to be noble was equivalent to being shut out from public office. But something like a new nobility presently grew up among the commons themselves; there were~~

popolani grossi at Florence just as there were noble plebeians at Rome. Only the Roman commons, great and small, never shut out the patricians from office ; they were satisfied to share office with them. In short, the shutting out of the old no- bility was, if not the formation of a new nobility, at least the formation of a new privileged class. For a certain class of citizens to be condemned, by virtue of their birth, to political disfranchisement is as flatly against every principle of democracy as for a certain class of citizens to enjoy exclusive rights by reason of birth. The Florentine demo- cracy was, in truth, rather to be called an oligarchy, if we accept the best definition of democracy (see Thucydides, vi. 39), namely, that it is the rule of the whole, while oligarchy is the rule of a part only.

It is in these aristocratic cities, of which Venice was the most fully developed model, that we can best see what nobility really is. Itis in these only that we can see nobility in its purest form—nobility to which no man can rise and from which no man can come down except by the will of the noble class itself. In a monarchy, where the king can ennoble, this ideal cannot be kept. Nor could it be kept in the later nobility of Rome. The new man had much to strive against, but he could sometimes thrust himself through, and when he did his descendants had their jus tmaginum, But at Venice neither prince nor people could open the door of the Great Council; only the Great Council itself could do that. That in the better times of the aristocracy nobility was not uncommonly granted to worthy persons, that in its worse times it was more commonly sold to unworthy persons, was the affair of the aristocratic body itself. That body, at all events, could not be degraded save by its own act. But these grants and sales led to distinctions within the ranks of the noble order, like those of which we get faint glimpses among the Roman patricians. The ducal dignity rarely passed out of a circle of specially old and distinguished families. But this has often been the case with the high magis- tracies of commonwealths whose constitutions were purely democratic.

From this purest type of nobility, as seen in the aristo- Rural cratic commonwealths, we may pass to nobility as seen in Nobility.

States of greater extent—that is, for the most part in mon- archies. There are two marked differences between the two. They are differences which seem

~~to be inherent in the difference between a republic and a monarchy, but which it would be truer to say are inherent in the differ- ence between a body of men packed close together within the walls of a city and a body of men—if we can call them a body—scattered over a wide territory. The member of a civic nobility is more than a member of an order; he is a member of a corporation ; he has no powers, he has hardly~~

~~Nobili- ties in early Western Europe.~~

~~mot eh I TY~~

~~any being, apart from the body of which he is a member. He has a vote in making the laws or in choosing those who make them; but when they are made he is, if any- thing, more strictly bound by them than the citizen of the non-privileged order. To be a fraction of the corporate sovereign, if it had its gains, had also its disadvantages ; the Venetian noble was fettered by burthens, restrictions, and suspicions from which the Venetian citizen was free. The noble of the large country, on the other hand, the rural noble, as he commonly will be, is a member of an order, but he is hardly a member of a corporation; he is isolated ; he acts apart from the rest of the body and wins powers for himself apart from the rest of the body. He shows a tendency—a tendency whose growth will be more or less checked according to the strength of the central power—to grow into something of a lord or even a prince on his own account, a growth which may advance to the scale of a German elector or stop at that of an English lord of a manor. Now many of these tendencies were carried into those Italian cities where the civic nobility was a half-tamed country nobility ; but they have no place in the true civic aristocracies. Let us take one typical example. In many parts of western Europe the right of private war long remained the privilege of every noble, as it had once been the privilege of every freeman. And in some Italian cities, the right, or at least the privilege, of private war was continued within the city walls. But no power of imagination can conceive an acknowledged right of private war in Rome, Venice, or Bern.~~

~~'The other point of difference is that, whatever we take for the origin and the definition of nobility, in most countries it became something that could be given from outside, without the need of any consent on the part of the noble class itself. In other words, the king or other prince can ennoble. We~~

have seen how much this takes away from the true notion of nobility as understood in the aristocratic commonwealths. The nobility is no longer all-powerful; it may be con- strained to admit within its own body members for whose presence it has no wish. Where this power exists the nobility is no longer in any strictness an aristocracy ; it may have great privileges, great influence, even great legal powers, but it is not the real ruling body, like the true aristocracy of Venice.

In the modern states of western Europe the existing nobility seems to have for the most part had its origin in personal service to the prince. And this nobility by personal service seems commonly to have supplanted an older nobility, the origin of which was, in some cases at least, strictly immemorial. Of this process in England, the substitution of the later nobility of the thegns for the older nobility of the ecorls, something has already been said in the article ENGLAND (vol. vili. pp. 274-5). Now the analogy between this change and the change from the Roman patriciate to the later Roman nobilitas is obvious. In both cases the older nobility gives way to a newer; and in both cases the newer nobility was a nobility of office. Under a kingly government office bestowed by the sove- reign holds the same place which office bestowed by the people holds in a popular government. This new nobility of office supplanted, or perhaps rather absorbed, the older nobility, just as the later nobilitas of Rome supplanted or absorbed the old patriciate. In our first glimpse of Teutonic institutions, as given us by Tacitus, this older nobility appears as strictly immemorial (see Waitz, Deutsche Verfassungsgeschichte, i. 185 sq.), and its immemorial character appears also in the well-known legend in the Rigsmal-saga of the separate creation of jarl, karl, and thrall. These represent the three classes of mankind according to old Teutonic ideas—the noble, the simple free- man, and the bondman. The kingly house, where there

529

is one, is not a distinct class; it is simply the noblest of the noble. For, as almost everywhere else, this Teutonic nobility admits of degrees, though it is yet harder to say in what the degrees of nobility consisted than to say in what nobility consisted itself. The older nobility is independent of the possession of land ; it is independent of office about the sovereign ; it is

hard to say what were the powers and privileges attached to it; but of its existence there is no doubt. But in no part of Europe can the existing nobility trace itself to this immemorial nobility of primitive days ; the nobility of medizeval and modern days springs from the later nobility of office. The nobles of modern Europe are rather thegnas than eorlas. The eorl of the old system would doubtless commonly become a thegn under the new, as the Roman patrician took his place in the new nobilitas; but others could take their place there also. The Old-English laws point out ways by which the churl might rise to thegn's rank, and in the centuries during which the change went on we find mention—complaining mention—both in England and elsewhere, at the court of Charles the Simple and at the court of thelred, of the rise of new men to posts of authority. The story that Earl Godwine himself was of churlish birth, whether true or false, marks the possibility of such a rise. A still wilder tale spoke of Hugh Capet as the son of a butcher of Paris. Stories like these prove even more than the real rise of Hagano and Eadric.

In England the nobility of the thegns was to a great England.

extent personally displaced, so to speak, by the results of the Norman Conquest. But the idea of nobility did not greatly change. The English thegn sometimes yielded to, sometimes changed into, the Norman baron, using that word in its widest sense, without any violent alteration in his position. The notion of holding land of the king became more prominent than the notion of personal ser- vice done to the king; but, as the land was held by the tenure of personal service, the actual relation hardly changed. But the connexion between nobility and the holding of land comes out in the practice by which the lord so constantly took the name of his lordship. It is in this way that the prefixes de and von, descriptions in themselves essentially local, have become in other lands badges of nobility. This notion has died out in England by the dropping of the preposition; but it long lived on wherever Latin or French was used. And before long nobility won for itself a distinguishing outward badge. The device of hereditary coat-armour, a growth of the 12th century, did much to define and mark out the noble class throughout Europe. As it could be acquired by grant of the sovereign, and as, when once acquired, it went on from generation to generation, it answers exactly to the jus imaginum at Rome, the hereditary badge of

nobility con- ferred by the election of the people. Those who possessed the right of coat-armour by immemorial use, or by grant in regular form, formed the class of nobility or gentry,— words which, it must again be remembered, are strictly of the same meaning. They held whatever privileges or advantages have attached in different times and places to the rank of nobility or gentry. In England indeed a variety of causes hindered nobility or gentry from ever obtaining the importance which they obtained, for instance, in France. But perhaps no cause was more important than the growth of the peerage (see Preracs). That institution at once set up a new standard of nobility, a new form of the nobility of office. The peer—in strictness, the peer in his own person only, not even his children—became the only noble ; the ideas of nobility and gentry thus became divorced in a way in which they are not in any other coun- try. Those who would elsewhere have been counted as the nobility, the bearers of coat-armour by good right, were XVII. — 67

France.

Poland.

530

hindered from forming a class holding any substantial pri- vilege. In a word, the growth of the peerage hindered the existence in England of any nobility in the Continental sense of the word. The esquires, knights, lesser barons, even the remote descendants of peers, that is, the noblesse of other countries, in England remained gentlemen, but not noble- men,—simple commoners, that is, without legal advantage over their fellow-commoners who had no jus imaginum to boast of. There can be no doubt that the class in England which answers to the noblesse of other lands is the class that bears coat-armour, the gentry strictly so called. Had they been able to establish and to maintain any kind of privilege, even that of mere honorary preced- ence, they would exactly answer to Continental nobility. That coat-armour has been lavishly granted and often assumed without right, that the word "gentleman" has acquired various secondary senses, proves nothing; that is the natural result of a state of things in which the status of gentry carries with it no legal advantage, and yet is eagerly sought after on social grounds. If coat-armour, and thereby the rank of gentry, has been lavishly

~~granted, some may think that the rank of peerage has often been lavishly granted also. In short, there is no real nobility in England ; for the class which answers to foreign nobility has so long ceased to have any practical privileges that it has long ceased to be looked on as a nobility, and the word nobility has been transferred to another class which has nothing answering to it out of the three British king- doms. This last class in strictness takes in only the peers personally ; at the outside it cannot be stretched beyond those of their children and grandchildren who bear the courtesy titles of lord and lady.~~

~~No attempt has been here made to trace out the history of nobility in the various countries and, we must add, cities of Europe. All that has been attempted has been to point out some general truths, and to refer to some specially striking instances. Once more, it must be borne in mind that, while it is essential to the idea of nobility that it should carry with it some hereditary privilege, the nature and extent of that privilege may vary endlessly. In the last century the nobility of France and the nobility of Poland alike answered to the very strictest definition of nobility ; but the political positions of the two were as broadly contrasted as the positions of any two classes of men could be. The nobility of France, keeping the most oppressive social and personal privileges, had been shorn of all political and even administrative power ; the tyrants of the people were the slaves of the king. In Poland sixty thousand gentlemen, rich and poor, famous and obscure, but all alike gentlemen, rode out to choose a king by a unanimous vote, and to bind him when chosen by such conditions as they thought good. Those sixty thousand, like the populus of Rome, formed a narrow oligarchy as regarded the rest of the nation, but a wild democracy among themselves. Poland, in short, came nearer than any kingdom or country of large extent to the nature of an aristocracy, as we have seen aristocracy in the aristocratic cities. The chief power of the state was placed neither in the prince nor in the nation at large ; it was held by anoble class. The kingly power in Poland, like the ducal power at Venice, had been so narrowed that Poland, though she still kept a king, called herself a republic no less than Venice. And whatever was taken from the king went to the gain of the noble order. But the nobility of a large country, even though used to act politically as an order, could never put on that orderly and legal character which distinguishes the true civic patriciates. It never could come so nearly as a~~

civic patriciate could to being something like the rule of the best in any sense of those words.

NOC—NOC

The tendency of modern times has been towards the breaking down of formal hereditary privileges. In modern commonwealths, above all, they have been thought to be essentially inconsistent with republican institutions. The truth of the matter is rather that the circumstances of most modern commonwealths have been unfavourable to the preservation, and still more to the growth, of privi- leged bodies. Where they existed, as in Switzerland, théy have been overthrown. Where they did not exist, as in America, everything has made it more and more impossible that they should arise. And, as modern changes have commonly attacked the power both of kings and of nobles, the common notion has come that king- ship and nobility have some necessary connexion. It has seemed as if any form of nobility was inconsistent with a republican form of government, while nobility, in some shape or other, has cone to be looked on as a natural, if not a necessary, appendage to a monarchy. And as far as regards the social side of kingship this is true. A court seems more natural where a chain of degrees leads gradually up from the lowest subject to the throne than when all beneath the throne are nearly on a level. And from one point of view, that from which the kingly house is but the noblest of the noble, kingship and nobility are closely allied. But in the more strictly political view monarchy and nobility are strongly opposed. Even the modified form of absolute monarchy which has existed in some Western countries, while it preserves, perhaps even strengthens, the social position of a nobility, destroys its political power. Under the fully-developed despotisms of the East a real nobility is impossible ; the prince raises and thrusts down as he pleases. It is only in a common- wealth that a nobility can really rule; that is, it is only in @ commonwealth that the nobility can really be an aristocracy. And even in a democratic commonwealth the sentiment of nobility may exist, though all legal privi- lege has been abolished or has never existed. That is to say, traditional feeling may give the members of certain families a strong preference, to say the least, in election to office. We have seen that this was the case at Athens; it was largely the case in the democratic cantons of Switzerland ; indeed the nobility of Rome itself; after the privileges of the

patricians were abolished, rested on no other foundation. It is important to bring these historical facts into notice, as they are likely to be con- fused or forgotten among modern practical tendencies the other way. (E. A. F.)

NOCERA INFERIORE, formerly Nocera pEr PAGANt, a city of Italy in the province of Salerno at the foot of Monte Albino, 22$ miles east-south-east of Naples on the railway to Salerno, which lies only 10 or 11 miles distant. In 1881 it had a communal population of 15,858, that of the town was 12,830; but the interest of the place is almost exclu- sively historical.

Nuceria Alfaterna, first mentioned as assisting the Samnites in 315 B.c., was a few years later (808) besieged and captured by Fabius. In 216 Hannibal completely destroyed the city and dis- persed its inhabitants; but the town, having been repeopled at some unknown date, appears again asa flourishing municipium in the time of Cicero. In 73 3.c. it was plundered by Spartacus, and under Augustus it received a Roman colony (Nuceria Constautia), afterwards recruited by Nero. At an early date the city became an episcopal see, and in the 12th century it sided with Innocent II. against Roger of Sicily, and suffered severely for its choice. A colony of Saracens introduced by Frederick II. probably gave rise to the epithet by which it was so long distinguished, as well as to the town of Pagani, which lies about a mile to the west. In 1885 Pope Urban VI. was besieged in the castle by Charles of Durazzo. Nocera was the birthplace of Solimena the painter ; and in the list of its bishops appears the name of Paulus Jovius.

Nocera Inferiore must not be confounded with Nocera Umbria (the ancient Nuceria Camellaria), an old episcopal city 14 milcs from Foligno.

NOD—NOT

NODDY, the name applied, originally by sailors, to a sea-bird from its showing so little fear of man as to be accounted stupid. It is the Sterna stolida of Linnzus, and the Anous stolidus of modern ornithology, having the figure of a TERN (q.v.), and belonging to the sub-family Sternine, but is heavier in flight, with shorter wings and the tail less deeply forked. The plumage is of a uniform sooty hue, excepting the crown of the head, which is light grey. The Noddy is very generally distributed through- out the tropical or nearly tropical oceans, but occasionally wanders into colder

~~climates, and has been met with even in the Irish Sea. It breeds, often in astounding numbers, on low cays and coral-islets, commonly making a shallow nest of sea-weed or small twigs, which may be placed on the ground, on a tuft of grass, or in the fork of a tree, while sometimes it lays its eggs on a bare rock. Mr Saunders (Proc. Zool. Society, 1876, pp. 669-672) admits four other species of the genus :—Anous tenuirostris, supposed to be confined to the southern part of the Indian Ocean, from Madagascar to West Australia ; A. melanogenys, often con- founded with the last, but having nearly as wide a range as the first; and A. lewcocapillus, hitherto known only from Torres Strait and the Southern Pacific. These three have much resemblance to A. stolidus, but are smaller in size, and the two latter have the crown white instead of grey. The fourth species, A. caruleus (with which he in- cludes the A. cinereus of some authors), differs not incon- siderably, being of a dove-colour, lighter on the head and darker on the back, the wings bearing a narrow white bar, with their quill-feathers blackish-brown, while the feet are reddish and the webs yellow. Three more species—A. superciliosus from the Caribbean Sea and Gulf of Mexico, A. plumbeigularis from the Red Sea, and A. galapagensis from the Galapagos —have been added by Mr. Sharpe (Philos. Transactions, clxviii. pp. 468, 469), who also con- siders (Proc. Zool. Society, 1878, p. 272) A. cinereus of the Eastern Pacific to be distinct from A. cexruleus of Australia and the Western Pacific. (A. N.)~~

~~NODIER, Cuarues (c. 1780-1844), a writer of greater intrinsic merit and more importance in the history of French literature than is generally recognized, was born at Besangon somewhat less than ten years before the outbreak of the Revolution, but the exact date is strangely uncertain. Besancon for the place and the 29th of April for the day of the month appear to be agreed upon, but the year is some- times given as 1780, sometimes as 1781, and sometimes as 1783. The earliest seems the most probable. His father was a lawyer of some distinction and had been a teacher of law, and after the outbreak of the Revolution he was appointed mayor of Besangon and consequently chief police magistrate. He seems, from some euphemistic expressions of his friends, to have rather lent himself as an instrument to the tyranny of the Jacobins than to have shared their principles ; but his son was for a time an ardent citizen, and is said to have been a club member when he could at the most have been twelve years~~

~~old. His education in these troublesome times was necessarily haphazard, but appears to have been sufficient. His love of books began very early, and he combined with it, what is not perhaps very often character- istic of the bibliophile proper, a strong interest in natural science. The dates of his early life are given very sparingly, and the chief authority for the details of it is his own Souvenirs, a not very trustworthy source. Having obtained and then lost the post of librarian in his native town, he went to Paris and plunged into literature. He had pub- lished a dissertation on the antennze in insects as early as 1798 at Besancon. Entomology continued to bea favourite study with him, but he varied it with philology and pure literature—Le Peintre de Salzbourg dates from this early period—and even political writing. A "skit" on Napoleon~~

~~531~~

~~in 1803 got him into trouble, which was not very serious. He was obliged, or thought himself obliged, to quit Paris, and for some years lived a very unsettled life at Besancon, Déle (where he married), and other places. In 1811 he appears at Laibach in the singular character of editor of a polyglot journal, the Jllyrian Telegraph, published in French, German, Italian, and Slav. Then he returned to Paris, and the restoration found him, or made him, an ardent royalist. Literary and journalistic work of all kinds filled up his time, until in 1823 he was appointed to the librarian- ship of the Bibliotheque de |'Arsenal. He was not dis- turbed in this post by the revolution of July, but, on the contrary, was elected a member of the Academy in 1833, and made a member of the Legion of Honour in 1843, a year beforehis death, which happened on 27th January 1844. These twenty years at the arsenal were by far the most im- portant and fruitful of Nodier's life. He had much of the Bohemian in his composition, and the wandering and un- settled life that he had led was more favourable to the cultivation of this feature of his character than to the pro- duction of solid work. His post at the arsenal was not very lucrative, and even after his appointment his way of life is said by some chroniclers not to have been extraordinarily regular. But he had the advantage of a settled home in which to collect rare books (for which he had a real vocation), and to study them ; and, what was of still more importance, he was able to supply a centre and rallying place to a knot of young literary men of greater individual talent than him- self—~~

~~the so-called Romantics of 1830—and to colour their tastes and work very decidedly with his own predilections. Much older than most of them, possessing a literary reputa- tion already formed, though resting on no single work of great importance, with very decided idiosyncrasies and a considerable power of personally influencing his associates, Nodier must be credited with no small part in the making of the men of 1830.~~

~~His own literary work is abundant, but much of it is obsolete, much more mere miscellanies, much injured by hasty production, and some, it is said, is not due to himself. His best and most characteristic work, some of which is exquisite in its kind, consists partly of short tales of a more or less fantastic character, partly of nondescript articles, half bibliographic, half narrative, the nearest analogue to which in English is to be found in some of the papers of De Quincey. The best examples of the latter are to be found in the volume entitled Mélanges tirés d'wne Petite Bibliothéque, pub- lished in 1829 and afterwards continued. Of his tales the best are Smarra (1821), Histoire du Roi de Bohéme et de ses sept Chateaux (1830), La Fée aux Miettes (1832), Inés de las Sierras (1887), Légende de Seur Béatrix (1838), together with some fairy stories published in the year of his death, and Franciscus Colwmna, which appeared after it. The Sowvenirs de Jewnesse (1882), already referred to, are in- teresting but untrustworthy, and the Dictionnaire Universel de la Langue Francaise (1823), a book of considerable merit, which, in the days before Littré, was one of the most useful of its kind, is said to have been not wholly or mainly Nodier's. His chief tales are acces- sible in three or four volumes of the Bibliothéque Charpentier, and the best yield to few things in French for charm of style and especi- ally for the rendering of fantastic and picturesque sentiment, but they are very unequal. There is a so-called collection of Gwvres Completes, in 12 vols., 1882, but at that time much of the author's best work had not appeared, and it included but a part of what was actually published.~~

~~NOETUS, a presbyter of the church of Asia Minor about 230 A.D., was a native of Smyrna, where (or perhaps in Ephesus) he became a prominent representative of the particular type of Christology which is now technically called modalistic monarchianism (see vol. xvi. p. 719). His views, which led to his excommunication frem the Asiatic church, are known to us~~

chiefly through the con- troversial writings of Hippolytus, his contemporary.

NOIRMOUTIER, an island of France belonging to the department of Vendée, and protecting the Bay of Bourgneuf on the south-west. Between the island and the mainland is a sandbank laid bare at low water, and crossed by an embankment and carriage road, which is continually kept

in good repair. It was not till about 1766 that people found they could walk across to the island, which hes from north-north-west to south-south-east, and is 11 miles long, its breadth varying from 1 mile in the south part to 3 or 4 miles in the north. It appears to be formed of alluvial deposits gradually accumulated round a rock of no great size situated at the meeting-place of the Gascony and Brittany currents. The area now amounts to 18 square miles, of which about a sixth part is occupied by dunes. The total population was 7726 in 1881. There are two communes: Noirmoutier and Barbatre. The former has about 2029 of its 5908 inhabitants gathered together in a little town with narrow and winding streets. Its castle was once the residence of the abbot of Her. In the church there is a crypt of the 11th century. A mile to the north of the town les a pleasant watering-place, rendered pictur- esque by the La Chaise woods (evergreen oaks and pines), and a grand confusion of rocks, among which the sea has scooped out many a delightful little beach.

A dolmen, several menhirs, and the ruins of a Gallo-Roman villa with its hot baths show that the island must have been occu- pied at an early date; but the first fact in its recorded history is the foundation of the Benedictine monastery of Her by St Philibert about 680. From this monastery the name Noirmoutier (Moustier) is derived, It had already attained to great prosperity when it was pillaged by the Normans in 825 and 848. In 1205 the abbey of Notre Dame la Blanche was built at the north extremity of the island to take the place of a Cistercian convent established in the

le du Pilier, at that time attached to Noirmoutier by a dyke. This abbey was ruined by the Protestants in 1562. In 1676 the island was captured by the Dutch. Having been seized by Charette dur- ing the war of Vendée, it was

~~recovered by the republican general, Haxo, who caused the Vendean leader, d'Elbée, to be shot.~~

~~NOLA, a city of Italy in the province of Caserta (Terra di Lavoro), is pleasantly situated on the plain between Mount Vesuvius and the Apennines, 14 miles east-north- east of Naples on the road to Avellino, and 203 miles south-west of Cancello on the railway to the same town. The more conspicuous buildings are the ancient Gothic cathedral (restored in 1866), with its lofty tower rebuilt since the fire of 1860, the cavalry barracks, the ex-convent of the Capuchins at a little distance from the city, and the seminary in which is preserved the famous Oscan inscrip- tion known as the Cippus Abellanus (from Abella). Tivo fairs are held in Nola, on 14th June and 12th November ; and the 26th of July is devoted to a great festival in honour of St Paulinus, one of the early bishops of the city. The population of the city was 10,771 in 1871, and 8489 in 1881; that of the commune 11,395 in 1871, and 11,931 in 1881.~~

~~Nola (N&da) was one of the oldest cities of Campania. At the time when it sent assistance to N. eapolis against the Roman inya- sion (328 B.c.) it was probably occupied by Oscans in alliance with the Samnites ; but it had evidently passed through an Etruscan period, and had possibly received a Greek colony from Chalcis. The Romans made themselves masters of Nola in 313 8.c. In the Second Punie War it thrice bade defiance to Hannibal ; but in the Social War it was betrayed into the hands of the Samnites, who kept possession till Marius, with whom they had sided, was defeated by Sulla. Whatever punishment Sulla may have inflicted, Nola "remained a municipium, with its own institutions and the use of the Oscan language." Ata later date it became a Roman colony. Marcus Agrippa and Augustus died at Nola. Sacked by Genseric in 455, and by the Saracens in 806 and 904, captured by Manfred in the 13th ceutury, and damaged by earthquakes in the 15th and 16th, Nola lost much of its importance. The remains of two great amphitheatres deseribed by Ambrosio Leone in the first part of the 16th century were used by Carlo Caraffa and Orso Orsini in 1664 to build their palaces in Naples and Nola. Giordano Bruno and the sculptor Giovanni Marliano were natives of the city; and some of the latter's works are preserved in the cathedral.~~

NOLLEKENS, Josepn (1737-1823), sculptor, was born I1th August 1737 in London, where his father, a native of Antwerp, the "old Nollekens" of Horace Walpole, was a painter of some repute. In his thirteenth year he entered the studio of the sculptor Scheemakers, and practised

NO L—

NOL

drawing and modelling with great assiduity, ultimately gaining various prizes offered by the Society of Arts. In 1760 he went to Rome, and he executed a marble bas- relief, Timoclea before Alexander, which obtained a prize of fifty guineas from that society in 1762. Remunerative commissions began to come in, Garrick and Sterne being among the first English visitors who sat to him for busts ; among his larger pieces belonging to this early period perhaps the most important is the Mercury and Venus chiding Cupid. Having returned to England in 1770, he was admitted an associate of the Royal Academy in 1771, and elected a member in the following year. By this time he had become known to George HL, whose bust he shortly afterwards executed, and henceforward, until about 1816, he was continually and very profitably employed as the most fashionable portrait sculptor of his day. His busts were on all hands acknowledged to be excellent likenesses, and there was generally a softness in the expression and a gracefulness in the handling which never failed to please. He himself thought highly of his early portrait of Sterne. Among many others may be specially named those of Pitt, Fox, the prince of Wales (afterwards George IV.), Canning, Perceval, Benjamin West, and Lords Castlereagh, Aberdeen, Erskine, Egre- mont, and Liverpool. He also found leisure to elaborate a number of marble groups and statues, amongst which may be mentioned those of Bacchus, Venus taking off her Sandal, Hope leaning on an Urn, J uno, Petus and Arria, Cupid and Psyche, and (his own favourite performance) Venus anointing Herself; all, however, although remarkable for delicacy of workmanship, are deficient in vigour and originality, and the drapery is pecuharly weak. The most prominent personal character- istic of Nollekens seems to have been his frugality, which ultimately developed into absolute miserliness. He died in London on 23d April 1823, leaving, it is said, a fortune of some £200,000.

NOLLE PROSEQUI (sometimes shortened into nol. pros.) is a technical term of English law, the meaning of which varies as it is used with reference to civil or criminal cases. In civil cases it applies only to actions in the Queen's Bench Division, and there signifies a formal under- taking by the plaintiff that he will proceed no further with the action (se wlterius nolle prosequr). The more modern practice in such cases is to proceed by way of discontinuance. In: proceedings either by indictment or by information, a nolle prosegur or stay of proceedings may be entered by the attorney-general. The nolle prosequi is a matter purely for his discretion, and will not be granted unless very good ground be shown for his interference. The object of it generally is to obtain a stay of proceedings against an accomplice in order to procure his evidence. This object is, however, more usually effected by the prosecution offer- ing no evidence and the judge directing an acquittal.

In America the term bears the same meaning as in England, with one exception. The attorney-general has not the same discretion with which English law invests him. Although in some States the prosecuting officer, may enter a nolle prosequi at his discretion, in others the leave of the court must be obtained.

NOLLET, Juan Anvorns, French physicist, was born at Pimpréz (now in Oise) on 19th November 1700, and died at Paris in 1770. He was of peasant origin, and was educated for the church, entering holy orders and ulti- mately attaining the rank of abbé; but his tastes all lay in the direction of experimental research, especially on the subject of electricity (see vol. viii. p. 6). In 1734 he was admitted a member of the London Royal Society, four years later he entered the Academy of Sciences at Paris, and in 1753 he was appointed to the newly-instituted

NOM—NOWN

chair of experimental physics in the Collége de Navarre. Nollet's strength lay in popular exposition rather than in profound investigation, but he cannot be denied the credit of having greatly helped by his influence and example the cause of electrical science.

NOMANSLAND. See Karrraria, vol. xiii. p. 817.

NOMINALISM. See Scuonastic PHILOSOPHY.

NONCONFORMITY, Law rexatine to. The history of the gradual relief of nonconformists in England from their disabilities will be found under ENGLAND, and under the heads of the various denominations, e.g., BAPTISTS, INDEPENDENTS, METHODISM, QUAKERS, &c. See also Oatus. It is proposed here to note simply the present legal aspects of nonconformity apart from its history, that is, the matters in which the law as to nonconformists still differs from that applicable to members of the Church of England. The differences may be conveniently grouped under six heads.

(1) Judicial notice. The courts, both temporal and spiritual, take judicial notice of the tenets and authorities of the Church of England, the crown being head of the law and of the church. Where the tenets and authorities of a nonconformist body come in question, they must be proved by evidence. By Lord Lyndhurst's Act, 7 and 8 Vict., c. 45, where no particular religious doctrine or mode of worship has been prescribed by the deed or instrument of trust the usage of the congregation for twenty-five years is to be taken as conclusive evidence of the doctrine and worship which may be properly observed in such meeting-houses. (2) Tribunal. Offences against the law ecclesiastical (not being crimes) committed by clergy of the Church of England as a rule come by letters of re- quest from the bishop of the diocese before the Arches Court of Canterbury or the Chancery Court of York (of both of which the same person is now judge). Similar matters arising in noncon- formist bodies can only be tried by the ordinary secular courts, and generally depend upon the question whether a minister has done any act which is not in accordance with the rules governing the par- ticular body of which he is a minister. A nonconformist body is in law nothing more than a voluntary association, whose members may enforce discipline by any tribunal assented to by them, but must be subject in the last degree to the courts of the realm. Brawling in a church by a person in holy orders is an offence within the Church Discipline Act, 8 and 4 Vict., c. 86, and falls under the cognizance of the spiritual courts ; similar conduct by a nonconformist minister in his own place of worship can only be punished as an offence under 9 and 10 Vict., c. 59. (8) Status of ministers. A noncon- formist minister is not in holy orders, and his chapel is not a con- secrated

building. His status is, however, recognized to a limited extent. By the Toleration Act, 1 Will. and M., c. 18, a minister, preacher, or teacher of a nonconformist congregation is exempt froin certain parochial offices, as that of churchwarden. He is also exempt from serving in the militia or on a jury. These privileges only attach where the place of worship of which he is a minister has been duly registered, 18 and 19 Vict., c. 81, unless in the case of bodies subject to special legislation, as Quakers. Registration is not required in the ease of consecrated buildings. By 45 and 46 Vict., c. 50, s. 12, a nonconformist minister eannot be elected an alderman or councillor. He cannot take a degree in divinity at Oxford, Cambridge, or Durham, 34 and 35 Vict., c. 26, and so is debarred from holding any professorship of divinity in those universities. (4) Marriage. Marriage by a person in holy orders was probably necessary at common law, at any rate from the Reformation up to 1836. (See Marrrace.) And from the date of Lord Hardwicke's Marriage Act, 26 Geo. II., c. 88 (1758), up to 1836 the ceremony must have been performed in a consecrated building. The first Act of Parliament that relieved dissenters (other than Jews and Quakers) from these restrictions was the Marriage Act of 1836, 6 and 7 Will. IV., ¢. 85. Since that Act the eeremony of marriage may be performed in a nonconformist place of worship, but it must be after due notice to the superintendent registrar and in his presence or in that of a registrar, and the build- ing must be one that is duly certified for marriages. These pre- liminaries (except the first, and that only where the marriage is not by banns, licence, or special licence) are not necessary where the marriage takes place in a church. Marriage by banns, licence, or special licence cannot take place except inachurch. (5) Burial. By the Burial Laws Amendment Act, 1880, 48 and 44 Vict., c. 41, burial may take place in a churchyard without the rites of the Church of England. But in such a case notice must be given in a specified form, which is unnecessary where the burial service is conducted by a clergyman of the Church of England. (6) Parish ofices. By 1 Will. and M., c. 18, s. 5, a dissenter chosen church- warden and scrupling to take the oaths may execute his office by

deputy. His acceptance of office is made optional by the Act; there is nothing to prevent his discharging it if he see fit todo so. This seems to be

~~still the law, although a declaration was substituted for the oath by 5 and 6 Will IV., c. 62, s. 9.~~

~~The Colonies.—In crown colonies ecclesiastical jurisdiction may be conferred by the sole authority of the crown. In colonies which have parliamentary representation the crown cannot give to a metropolitan bishop jurisdiction or coercive legal authority over suffragan bishops or over any other person. In colonies of the former kind the Church of England may still preserve the privileges which attach to her in the mother country; in colonies of the latter kind she is in the same position as any other religious body, simply a voluntary association. Since the Irish Church Act, 1869, 32 and 33 Vict., c. 42, the Church of Ireland has been practically in the same position as the Church of England in colonies which have representative government.~~

~~NONJURORS in English history are the small minority of the beneficed clergy who incurred the penalties of sus- pension and deprivation for refusing to swear allegiance to William and Mary in 1689, The party, which was headed by Archbishop Sancroft and Bishop Ken, with five other members of the episcopal bench, included such men as Jeremy Collier, George Hickes, William Sherlock, Charles Leslie, and Henry Dodwell. See ENGLAND, vol. vi. p. 378.~~

~~NONNUS, Greek epic poet, author of the Dionysiaca, was a native of Panopolis in the Egyptian Thebaid. He can scarcely have been earlier than the 5th century of our era, but probably wrote in the first half of it, as his versi- fication is imitated by Proclus, who was born 412 a.pD, Nothing is known of his personal history, but his extensive mythological erudition almost proves him to have been a grammarian. His principal work, the Dionystaca, an epic in forty-eight books on the history of Bacchus, is a vast storehouse of legendary fable, embellished, especially in the long episode of Bacchus's Indian expedition, with not a little of the poet's own invention, From one point of view it may be described as the swan-song of the ancient mythology ; its spirit, at the same time, is anything but Hellenic. In its vast and formless luxuriance, its beau- tiful but artificial versification, its delineation of action and passion to the entire neglect of character, it resembles the colossal epics of India, while its glittering but too often frigid~~

~~conceits bring it near to the Italian bastard epic of Marino and his school. Like his countryman and near contemporary Claudian, Nonnus is a writer of copious learning and still more copious fancy, eminent in inven- tion, in description, and in melody, whose faults may be charged upon his age, while his merits are his own. This is more particularly the case with the author of the Dionysiaca, whose reforms in versification originated with himself, while they were accepted by all succeeding poets. In his hands, says Hermann, the Homeric hexameter, greatly corrupted by time and licence, though losing some- thing of its dignity, recovered its elegance and harmony, and was framed to so strict a pattern that no one ignorant of prosody could henceforth attempt to write an epic. His influence on the vocabulary of his successors was likewise very considerable. We also possess under his name a paraphrase of the Gospel of St Jolin, which is chiefly interesting as apparently indicating that, notwith- standing his mythological lore, Nonnus conformed to Christianity. The style is not inferior to that of his epic, but, employed in embellishing the simple narrative of the evangelist, it produces an impression of extreme bombast and want of taste.~~

~~The first edition of Nonnus was published by Falkenburg at Antwerp in 1569 from a MS. procured at Taranto by Sambucus, an Hungarian. The standard edition is Graefe's (Leipsic, 1819-26) ; but the most useful is that by Count de Marcellus (Paris, 1856), accompanied by valuable notes and prolegomena, and a French prose translation. The analyses by Ouvaroff (St Petersburg, 1817) and Koehler (Halle, 1853) are useful aids to the study of so long and intricate a poem. The paraphrase on St John is edited~~

~~D034 by Passow (1834), by Marcellus (1861), and in Migne's Patrologia.~~

~~For Nonnus's metrical innovations see Hermann, Orphica, pp. 869-691; and Lehrs, Quastiones Hpice.~~

~~NONPAREIL, the name under which, from its sup- posed matchless beauty, a little cage-bird, chiefly imported from New Orleans, has long been known to English dealers (cf. Edwards, Gleanings, i. p. 132). It is the Emberiza ciris of Linnzus, and the Cyanospiza cirts of most recent ornithologists, belonging to a small group, which, in the present state of knowledge, cannot with certainty be referred either to the Buntings or to the Finches, while~~

some authors have regarded it as a TANAGER (g.v.). The cock has the head, neck, and lesser wing-coverts bright blue, the upper part of the back yellow, deepening into green, and the lower parts generally, together with the rump, bright scarlet, tinged on the latter with purple. This gorgeous colouring is not assumed until the bird is at least two years old. The hen is green above and yellow beneath ; and the younger cocks present an appearance intermediate between the adults of both sexes. The species, which is often also called the Painted Bunting, after wintering in Central America or Mexico, arrives in the southern States of the American Union in April, but does not ordinarily proceed to the northward of South Carolina. In Louisiana, where it is generally known to the French-speaking inhabitants as the Pape—as it was to the Spaniards of Florida as the Mariposa pintada (painted butterfly)—it is said to be very abundant; and on its appearance in spring advantage is, or was, taken of the pugnacious disposition of the males (which so often accompanies a brilliant sexually-distinct plumage) to cap- ture them alive in great numbers by means of the stuffed skin of one so placed in connexion with a cage-trap that they instantly fall into the latter on attacking what they conceive to be a rival. In this way many thousands are said to have been taken formerly. The prisoner usually reconciles himself to his fate, and in a few days will utter his sprightly though not very powerful song ; and, if pro- vided with a mate and proper accommodation, will breed and rear a family in confinement. Belonging to the same genus as the Nonpareil is the Indigo-bird, Cyanospiza cyanea, which, as a summer visitant, is widely diffused from the Missouri to the Atlantic, and extends into the provinces of Ontario and New Brunswick, being every- where regarded with favour. Though wanting most of the bright hues of its congener, the Indigo-bird has yet much beauty, the adult cock being nearly all over of a deep blue, changing, according to the light, to green. The hen is brown above and ochreous-white beneath. This species is represented in the western part of the con- tinent by the Lazuli-Finch, C. amena, the male of which has the upper parts greenish-blue, the wings barred with white, a pectoral band of light chestnut extending to the flanks on each side, and the lower parts white. Of the three remaining species of the genus, C. versicolor shows in the male a plumage beautifully varied with brownish- red, violet, and blue; C. leclanchert is bluish-green above and yellow beneath, with an orange breast ; while C. rositex, though quite distinct, comes nearest in coloration to C. curtis,

~~‘These three have a more southern range than the other three ; but the first of them is believed occasionally to cross the Mexican frontier into the United States. None of the species of Cyanospiza are thought to occur further south than the isthmus of Panama. (A. N.)~~

~~NONSUIT (i.¢., non suit, he does not pursue) is the name given to a judgment whereby an issue is determined against the plaintiff. It was a term peculiar to the English com- mon-law courts before the Judicature Acts, and was simply the expression of the opinion of the court that, apart from the merits, the plaintiff’s case was incomplete. It did not~~

~~and Maubeuge.~~

~~NON—NOR~~

~~in any way act as a bar to his bringing another action for the same cause. It might be entered either at the wish of the plaintiff himself (to whom it was of course much more beneficial than judgment for the defendant) or by direction of the court against the will of the plaintiff. The matter now is of no great importance, for, although judgment of nonsuit still exists, it has, since the Judicature Acts, the: same effect as a judgment on the merits, unless the court otherwise directs. This effect of a nonsuit was specially provided for by the rules of the Supreme Court of 1875. The rules of 1883 do not deal with nonsuit, but no doubt the practice which has existed between 1875 and 1883 will still be followed.~~

~~NOODT, GerwarD (1647-1725), a celebrated jurist, was born at Nimeguen in 1647. He began his studies in his native town, continued them at Leyden and Utrecht, and finished them at Franeker, where he took his doctor’s degree in law. After passing through successive grades of promotion he was ultimately appointed to a law chair at Leyden. It was in the character of a writer on juris- prudence, however, that he acquired his reputation. His Latin style, modelled after the best writers, was pure and precise ; he had, for his time, an intimate acquaintance with the laws, manners, and customs of ancient Rome; his speculations were guided by a simple desire for truth, and his political opinions animated by a spirit of unusual toler- ation. His numerous works, as they successively appeared, soon rose to the rank of standard authorities. Two of his political treatises were translated into~~

~~French by Barbey- rac, and appeared at Amsterdam in 1707 and 1714, under the respective titles of Pouvoir des Souverains and Liberté de Conscience ; and his jurisprudential writings, to which he was still adding when cut off in 1725, were held in high estimation, not in Holland only, but also in Germany and Scotland, till quite the end of last century. The first, edition of his collected works was published at Leyden in 1724, and the last in 1767. That of 1735 and those sub- sequent contain a life of the author by Barbeyrac.~~

~~NORD, the most northern of the departments of France, formed out of Flanders, French Hainault, and the district of Cambrais (Cambrésis), lies between 50° and 51° 6' N. lat., and between 2° 5' and 4° 15' E. long., but in such a way that, while it has a length from south-east to north-west of 112 miles, its breadth is nowhere more than 40 miles, and contracts to 4 at the point where it is crossed by the Lys. Bounded N.W. and N. for 21 miles by the North Sea, it has the Belgian provinces of West Flanders and Hainault on the N.E. and E., the departments of Aisne and Somme on the §., and that of Pas-de-Calais on the W. The Flanders portion to the west of the Scheldt is very flat, the hill at Cassel, only 575 feet high, rising like a mountain, and looking north towards Dunkirk over a stretch of 155 square miles of richly fertile lowlands, which about a thousand years ago were still covered by the sea. To the south-east of the Scheldt the country has the char- acter of the neighbouring district of Ardennes, is better wooded, and contains the highest point in the department (875 feet). The greater part of Nord is in the Scheldt basin, but certain portions belong to those of the Sambre (Meuse), the Oise (Seine), and the little coast-streams the Aa and the Yser. The Scheldt, flowing by Cambrai, Bouchain, Valenciennes, and Condé, receives the Scarpe, which touches Douai, Marchiennes, and St Amand. The Lys, which does not join the Scheldt till it has entered Belgium, passes Armentitres, and receives the Deule, on which Lille is situated. The Sambre passes Landrecies The Aa falls into the port at Gravelines. The climate of Nord is colder than that of France in**

general, the mean temperature being 49° or 50° Falir. The rainfall is 12 inches at Dunkirk and a little more

at Lille. In the arrondissement of Avesnes, rain is more abundant, and cold more severe. In population (1,603,259 inhabitants in 1881) and in agricultural and industrial im- portance Nord is second only to the department of the Seine.

Of the total area (2193 square miles), two-thirds are arable, one- sixth under pasture, and one-eleventh consists of forest. The live- stock comprises 93,000 horses, asses, and mules, 240,000 cattle, 125,000 sheep, 78,000 pigs, 29,000 goats, and 75,000 dogs. The grain crops yield about 19,250,000 bushels, potatoes about half as much. Beetroot, flax, tobacco, chicory, colza, rape-seed, and hops are all of importance. The natural pastures support a good breed of Flemish cows. Stone, marble, clay, and sand are obtained in the department ; but its mineral wealth lies rather in its coal-pits, for the most part belonging to the Anzin Company, which employs 20,000 workmen, and raises 34 million tons per annum. Tron mines also are worked in the arrondissement of Avesnes. The best mineral waters are those of St Amand. There are numerous foun- dries, rolling-mills, steel-works, file-works, agricultural implement factories, and engineering works. More than 240,000 tons of pig- iron and 279,000 tons of malleable iron, cast iron, rails, sheet-iron, and Bessemer steel were produced in 1881. Copper foundries and zinc rolling-mills also exist. Spinning is more extensively prose- cuted in Nord than in any other department, Lille and its suburbs being the principal seat of the industry. About 12,000 persons are employed in flax and tow spinning, 8000 in cotton spinning, and 4000 to 5000 in the manufacture of sewing-thread. Roubaix and Tourcoing spin wool, cotton, and silk. Jute spinning employs more than 20,000 bobbins at Dunkirk. In Roubaix alone there are upwards of 300 weaving factories; carpets (Toureoing and Roubaix), linen (Armentiéres), ribbons, damask, muslins, tulles, laces, &c., are all largely manufactured, and there are also sugar- factories, distilleries, oil-works (scattered throughout the depart- nent), 1000 breweries, glass-works, soap-works, dye-works. The ex- ports of the department comprise corn, fruit, .cggs, vegetables, and butter to England, oil-cake, linseed, oils, colza seed. Consuming 4,500,000 tons of coal, it has to supplement its own production by importing from Pas de Calais, Belgium, or England. Most of the foreign trade passes through Dunkirk, a much larger port than Gravelines. Abundant means of transit exist throughout the department. The total length

of the navigable rivers and canals is 325 miles, and railways to a total length of 450 miles have been constructed between all the most important localities.

Nord forms the archiepiscopal diocese of Cambrai, is comprised in the first or Lille region of corps d'armée, and depends on the court of appeal at Douai. It is divided into seven arrondissements (Avesnes, Cambrai, Douai, Dunkirk, Hazebrouck, Lille, and Valen- ciennes), 61 cantons, and 663 communes. The number of com- munes of importance especially for their industries is very large—St Amand les Eaux (11,184 inhabitants), with mineral waters and an old abbey; Anzin (10,048), near Valenciennes; Armentiéres (25,089); Bailleul (12,712), with antiquities; Bavai (1863), the ancient Bagacum; Bergues (5385), with its old fortifications and a splendid belfry of the 16th century ; Bouvines (565), with an obelisk in memory of the victory of Philip Augustus in 1214 ; Cassel (4276) ; Le Cateau Cambrésis (9564) ; Condé (4621), a fortified town with coal-mines ; Cysoing (3160), with a monument of the battle of Fon- tenoy (1745); Denain (17,202), with coal-pits, iron-works, and a monument of Villars's victory (1712); Fourmies (15,052), with spinning and weaving of woollen goods; Gravelines (8416) ; and Landrecies, a garrison town on the Sambre.

NORDERNEY (:.c., northern island), the most import- ant of the fringe of sand-islands along the coast of East Friesland, belongs to the Prussian province of Hanover. It is 8 miles long and about 1 mile broad, and supports a seafaring and fishing population of (1880) 2114 souls, of genuine old Frisian stock. The village at the south-west end of the island is one of the most popular sea-bath- ing places in Germany, and is visited annually by 9000 visitors, for whose accommodation numerous hotels and lodging-houses have been built. On the south side rises a lighthouse 175 feet high. At low tide Norderney may be reached from the mainland by driving or walking.

NORDHAUSEN, a flourishing town in Prussian Saxony, in the district of Erfurt, is situated on the Zorge, at the south base of the Harz mountains, and at the west end of the Goldene Aue (Golden Plain), a fruitful valley watered by the Helme. It is built partly on the slope of the mountains and partly on

the plain, and the upper and lower parts of the town are connected by flights of steps. Among the churches the most noteworthy are the cathedral,

a late Gothic edifice with a Romanesque crypt, and tlie

church of St Blasius, containing two pictures by Lucas Cranach. Near the medizval town-house stands a Roland's column, the ancient symbol of free commercial intercourse and civic liberty. The chief importance of the place arises from its distilleries, which yearly produce about 8,000,000 gallons of brandy. The breweries are also important, and there are manufactures of leather, tobacco, cotton and linen goods, carpets, chicory, and chemicals. Nordhausen is sometimes called the Cincinnati of Germany on account of its extensive export trade in pork, corned beef, ham, and sausages. In 1880 it contained 26,198 inhabitants, of whom 23,943 were Protestants, 1255 Roman Catholics, and 494 Jews.

Nordhausen, one of the oldest towns in North Germany, was surrounded with walls in the 10th century, and is spoken of as a free imperial town in 1220. Several diets, tournaments, and assemblies of princes were held here during the 12th, 13th, and 14th eenturies. It appears to have usually placed itself under the pro- tection of a prince of the empire, and in 1697 we find the elector of Brandenburg selected for this purpose. It was annexed to Prussia in 1803 and again finally in 1815, having in the interim belonged to the kingdom of Westphalia.

NORDLINGEN, a town of West Bavaria in the district of Schwaben und Neuburg, is situated on the Eger, 40 miles to the north of Augsburg. It was formerly an imperial town, with an independent territory of 35 square miles in extent, and is still surrounded with walls and towers. The most interesting buildings are the Gothic Haupt- kirche and the late Gothic town-house, both of which con- tain paintings by Schaufelein, who was a native of Nord- lingen. There are here manufactures of carpets (sold as Tyrolese carpets), linen and woollen goods, and agricul- tural implements ; and a brisk trade is carried on in geese, goose feathers, cattle, and grain. In 1880 the population was 7837, including 6990 Protestants.

~~From 898, when we first find it mentioned, down to 1215 Nord- lingen was subject to the bishop of Ratisbon ; but soon after the latter date it acquired the freedom of theempire. It was annexed to Bavaria in 1803. Two battles were fought near Nordlingen during the Thirty Years' War, in the former of which (1634) the Swedes sustained their first defeat on German soil, losing 12,000 men. A full account of these battles is given by Colonel Malleson in the Army and Navy Magazine, November 1883.~~

~~NORFOLK, an eastern maritime county of England, Plate is bounded N. and E. by the North Sea, S.E. and 8. by XVI~~

~~Suffolk, S.W. by Cambridge, and W. by Lincoln. It is of an irregular oval form, its greatest length east and west being 67 miles, and its greatest breadth about 42 miles. The area is 1,356,173 acres, or 2119 square miles.~~

~~Coast-line.—Nearly two-thirds of the boundary of the county is formed by tidal water. There are few bays or inlets, and on the northern coast no river mouths. For the most part the coast-line is flat. and low, and has been greatly encroached on by the sea, several villages having been engulfed since the time of William the Conqueror. From the mouth of the Yare to Happisburgh the shore is low and sandy and is skirted by sandbanks. Thence for 20 miles it is formed of cliffs consisting of clay and masses of embedded rocks, the average height being about 50 feet, although in some cases an altitude of 200 feet is reached. 'These cliffs are succeeded by a low shingly or sandy coast stretching as far as St Edmund's Point. The shores of the Wash are formed of mudbanks, whicli are left dry at low water. West of Lynn a considerable extent of land has within recent years been reclaimed from the sea, and farther south an old Roman embankment stretches into Lincolnshire. At various points off the coast there are submarine forests, especially in Brancaster Bay and in the neighbourhood of Cromer and Happisburgh. Fossilized remains of large mammals are sometimes dragged up by the nets of fishermen, and mammoth tusks measur- ing from 6 to 9 feet have been found at Knole Sand off Happisburgh.~~

~~536~~

~~Surface and Greology.—The surface is principally an undulating plain with rising grounds skirting the river valleys and low chalk downs in the north~~

~~and north-west. On the west along the Cambridgeshire border there is a stretch of fen land extending from Welney and Hilgay fen to the Wash. The watershed is nearly in the centre of the county. The principal rivers are the Yare, in the east, with its tributaries, the Bure, the Wensum, and the Waveney ; and the Ouse, in the west, with its tributaries, the Little Ouse, the Wissey, and the Nar. The Yare and its tributaries frequently expand near the sea into broads or meres, covered for the most part by sedges and bulrushes, which afford shelter for a great variety of water-fowl, including the water-hen, wild duck, heron, bittern, king- fisher, mallard, snipe, and teal. The Yare is navigable for small vessels as far as Norwich, the Waveney to Beccles, and the Bure to Aylsham. The Ouse is tidal to Denver, and its tributaries are all to some extent navigable.~~

~~Nearly the whole of Norfolk is occupied by chalk, but on account of drift deposits it forms a comparatively small proportion of its surface. It exists in three forms: chalk marl, which forms part of Hunstanton cliff; lower or hard chalk, much used in west Norfolk for the construction of cottages ; and upper chalk, or chalk with flint, which con- stitutes the bulk of the formation. The other members of the Cretaceous system in Norfolk are gault and lower greensand, which crop out beneath the chalk to the west of the county, and are succeeded by the Kimmeridge clay of oolitic age, which stretches along the coast of the Wash from Hunstanton to King's Lynn, and south nearly to Downham. The Tertiary formation is represented by bands of sand, clay, and shingle in the neighbourhood of Norwich, which contain a fine series of fossils. The drift deposits include the lower glacial beds in the north-east, stretching south to the Yare and Wensum, the middle glacial beds in the neighbourhood of Yarmouth, and the upper glacial beds, consisting of boulder clay, occupying the centre, south, and south-west of the county. A considerable extent of surface is covered by valley gravels. In west Norfolk they occupy sometimes the old beds of rivers which flowed nearly at right angles to those of the present day. In these gravels many flint implements have been found. The fen beds in the south-west were at one time nearly all under water, but this has been carried off by a system of drainage first begun in the reign of Charles I.~~

~~The county is not rich in minerals. It is supposed that beds of coal may probably exist at a depth of 1500 feet. Lime and chalk for building are~~

plentiful. Potter's clay and good brick earth are obtained. In the fen dis- trict there is still a supply of peat. Marl is found in the valley of the Bure, and sand suitable for the manufacture of glass in the neighbourhood of Snettisham.

Climate and Agriculture.—On account of the exposed position of the coast to east and north-east winds, the climate, especially in winter and early spring, is much colder than in the adjacent counties. The air is, however, generally dry, and unhealthy fogs are not common, except in the marshy districts. Norfolk contains a greater variety of soil than any other county in England. In the north and west the soil is generally chalky ; towards the south- east it is a light sand, assuming occasionally the form of blowing sand, but elsewhere capable of cultivation and of average fertility. In the centre and east the prevailing soil is loam of a very varying quality, elnefly light and work- able, but sometimes composed of stiff chalky boulder clay. Alluvial clays and loams occur on the borders of Lincolnshire and Cambridgeshire, and stretch along the river valleys. The marsh lands along the coast are so subject to inunda- tion as to make cultivation difficult ; they afford, however, capital pasturage for stock.

NOR Pao LK

Notwithstanding the natural defects of soil, farming is in a very advanced condition, and, by means of draining, subsoil ploughing, skilful rotation, and the liberal use of artificial manures and feeding stuffs, excellent crops are raised in many districts of the county. The farms are for the most part large and the farm buildings superior. The prevailing system of tenure in west Norfolk is by leases ranging from seven to twenty-one years; in other parts of the county yearly agreements mostly prevail. Accord- ing to the agricultural returns of 1883, the area of cultiva- tion was 1,087,270 acres,—a percentage of about 80 of the total area. Corn crops occupied 438,273 acres, green crops 202,060, rotation grasses 166,891, permanent pasture 264,938, and fallow 15,051. About seven-eighths of the area under corn crops is occupied by wheat and barley, the areas of the two being pretty nearly equal, 179,270 acres and 196,483 acres respectively in 1883, while oats occupied only 32,307 acres. As much attention is paid to the graz- ing of cattle and to the rearing and fattening of sheep, turnips and swedes are

~~extensively grown — occupying 135,116 acres in 1883—while mangolds occupied 46,442 acres, and vetches 11,868 acres, but potatoes only 5269 acres,~~

~~The number of horses in 1883 was 62,613, of which 44,232 were used solely for agricultural purposes. Cattle in the same year numbered 117,497, of which 29,040 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf. Large numbers of lean cattle, principally Irish shorthorns, are brought into the county mainly for winter grazing. The old Norfolk polled stock has been recently revived and is now recog- nized as a distinct breed. Good pasture lands are found in many districts of the county, especially along the river- beds and in the neighbourhood of the fens. Sheep in 1883 numbered 559,146, and pigs 111,349.~~

~~According to the latest return the total number of proprietors in the county was 26,648, possessing 1,234,884 acres, yielding an annual rental of £2,403,795. The estimated extent of common or waste lands possessed by no owner was 12,870 acres. Of the owners 16,552, or about 60 per cent., possessed less than one acre. Eleven proprietors possessed upwards of 10,000 acres—viz., earl of Leices- ter, 43,025; Marquis Townshend, 18,130; marquis of Cholmondeley, 16,995; Rev. H. Lombe, 13,832; Lord Hastings, 12,738; earl of Orford, 12,341; Lord Walsingham, 11,983; Lord Suffield, 11,829; Sir Thomas Hare, 11,033; earl of Kimberley, 10,801 ; Anthony Hainond, 10,039.~~

~~Manufactures.—At an early period Norfolk was one of the princi- pal seats of the cloth trade in England, worsted deriving its name from having been first manufactured at Worstead. The weaving of silk and wool is still carried on at Norwich and also shawl weaving, although the staple trade of the town is now boots and shoes. Silk is also manufactured at Yarmoutli, Wymondham, and North Walsham. Flour-mills are numerous all over the county, and there are agricultural implement works at Norwich, Lynn, Thetford, East Harling, North Walsham, Walsingham, and Kast Dereham. Lime- burning, brick- making, tanning, malting, and brewing are carried on in various districts. The extensive mustard and starch works of Colman & Co. are at Norwich. One of the chief hindrances to the commercial progress of the county is the dangerous nature of the sea-coast, and its unsuitability~~

~~for the formation of harbours. A large trade is carried on, however, at Yarmouth, which is the outlet for the produce of a very extensive district. The other principal port is Lynn, and there is a small trade at Burnham, Cromer, and Wells. The exports are chiefly agri- cultural produce, fish, and manufactured goods, and the imports timber, oil-cake, and provisions. Yarmouth possesses one of the most important herring-fisheries in England.~~

~~Railways.—The county is intersected in all directions by lines of the Great Eastern Railway, and more recently by the Eastern and Midland Railway.~~

~~Administration and Population.—Norfolk comprises 38 hundreds, the city of Norwich (87,842), the municipal borough of King's Lynn (18,539), the principal part (37,151) of Great Yarmouth (46,159), and the principal part (3228) of Thetford (4032), both of which extend into Suffolk. There are also seven urban sanitary districts—Diss (3846), Downham Market (2633), East Dereham (5640), North Walsham (3234), Swaffham (3643), Thetford (4032), and Wells (2645). The county has one court of quarter-sessions and is divided into twenty-five petty and special sessional divisions.~~

~~NO R—~~

~~The city of Norwich and the boroughs of King's Lynn and Great Yarmouth have their own police. One parish, a part of a parish, and a part of an ecclesiastical district are in the diocese of Ely, a part of a parish in the diocese of Lincoln, and the rest of the county in the diocese of Norwich. The county contains 736 parishes, with parts of nine others. For parliamentary purposes it is divided into North Norfolk, South Norfolk, and West Norfolk, each division returning two members; and two members are also returned for the parliamentary boroughs of Norwich city in the southern division and of King's Lynn in the western division. The population in 1801 was 273,371, which in 1821 had increased to 344,365, in 1851 to 442,714, in 1871 had decreased to 488,656, and in 1881 had risen again to 444,749, of whom 215,266 were males and 229,483 females. The number of inhabited houses in 1881 was 100,372, and the average number of persons to the acre 0°33.~~

~~History and Antiquities.—At the Roman conquest Norfolk was inhabited by the Cenomanni, a tribe of the Iceni. The numerous groups of pits on the~~

heaths and along the coast, such as "Grimes Graves" near Weeting and the "shrieking pits" on Aylmerton heath, appear to have been ancient villages. The whole of the district was brought to own allegiance to the Romans during the campaign of Aulus Plautius; but on account of the indignities offered to their queen, Boadicea, the Iceni revolted, and, joining with the Trinobantes, seized Camulodwnum (Colchester), an import- aut Roman colony, massacring every Roman on whom they could lay hands. The Romans had their revenge shortly afterwards in a battle (62 .c.) in which the power of the Britons was finally completely crushed. The name of the tribe was retained in the Ineehilde Way, an old British road passing westward from the Norfolk coast, which was utilized by the Romans. The county was traversed by four other Roman roads, and was the seat of five principal Roman stations Brannodunum (Braneaster), Garianonum (Caistor, near Yarmouth), Venta Icenorwm (Caistor, St Edmund), Sitomagus (Thetford), and Ad-Tuam (Tasburgh). Coins and other remains have been found at all these places. In the Teutonic settlement Norfolk was oceupied by the Angles, and in 870 the kingdom of East Anglia fell in turn before the Danes (see vol. viii. p. 284). New ravages were com- mitted by the Danes from time to time; and in 1004 Sweyn brought his fleet up the river to Norwich, which he plundered and burned. After the Norman Conquest Ralph de Waher or Guader was created earl of Norfolk, but on his rebellion in 1057 the estates and title were conferred on Roger Bigod. Subsequently the title was in disuse, but it was at length revived and bestowed on Thomas Plantagenet, fifth son of Edward I. During a vacancy in the earldom John le Littester, a dyer, rose in rebellion and joined the commons under Wat Tyler. After the suppression of the rebellion the earldom with the title duke of Norfolk was bestowed on the * Mowbray family, who held it till the latter part of the 15th century, when it passed by marriage to the Howards. The duke of Norfolk still exercises a peculiar and permanent jurisdiction, and appoints two coroners for his liberties.

There are few or no traces of Saxon architecture in the county, unless the towers of Dunham-Magna and Newton-by-Castleacre be assigned to this period. The round towers which are specially characteristic of the district are probably Norman. Although there are several fine specimens of Norman architeeture in the county in addition to Norwich cathedral, and a few good examples of Early English, the majority of the churehes are Decorated or

Perpendicu- lar, or a mixture of both styles. The most notable features of the churches are the flint and stone panels, the fine rood-loft screens, and the numerous brasses. Norfolk possessed an unusually large number of monastic foundations, but of these the remains are few and comparatively unimportant. The cathedral-church of Norwich was originally connected with a very richly-endowed Benedictine monastery. A foundation of nearly equal importance was that of Augustinian canons at Walsingham, where there are remains of the church, the refectory, and a Perpendicular gateway. The other principal remains are those at Bacton, Beeston, Binham, Carrow, Castleacre, Thetford, and Wymondham. Ofthe old Norman keeps there are entrenchments and remains of the building at Castleacre, while Castle Rising is still a magnificent ruin, aud Norwich Castle has been restored. Among the more interesting old mansions are the halls of Hunstanton, Oxborough, Blickling, Heydon, and Bar- ningham. The larger mansions, such as Sandringham, Holkham, Rainham, Cossey, Gunton, Houghton, and Shadwell, are, however, of comparatively modern date. Among the eminent persons con- nected with Norfolk are Sir Edward Coke, Lord Cranworth, John Skelton, the earl of Surrey, Sir Thomas Browne, Sir Thomas Gresham, Roger L'Estrange, Horace Walpole, Tom Paine, Theodore Hooke, Mrs Opie, Porson, Harriet Martineau, Bulwer Lytton, Elizabeth Fry, Fowell Buxton, Sir Francis Palgrave, Sir Cloudesley Shovell, Lord Nelson.

See Blomefield, An Essay towards a Topographical History of the County of Norfolk (5 vols., 1739-1775) ; Chambers, General History of the County of Norfolk (11 vols., 1805-1810); White, History of Norfolk (new ed., 1883) ; J. O. Halliwell, Norfolk Anthology (1852); Norfolk Antiquarian Miscellany, edited by W. Rye; and Davies, Norfolk Broads and Rivers, 1883.

NOR 537

NORFOLK, a city and port of entry of the United States in Norfolk county, Virginia, opposite Portsmouth, on the north bank of Elizabeth river, an arm of Chesa- peake Bay. It is the terminus of the Norfolk and Western Railroad (408 miles) and the Norfolk Southern Railroad (74 miles), has easy access to the Norfolk and Princess Anne Canal, the Dismal Swamp Canal (from Elizabeth City to the Pasquotank river), and the Albemarle and Chesapeake

Canal, navigable for vessels of 500 tons, and is connected by regular lines of steamers with Richmond, Baltimore, Philadelphia, and New York. The city lies low, and is somewhat irregular in its arrangement, but the streets are generally wide. The city hall, with a cupola 110 feet high, the custom-house and post-office, the Norfolk academy, the masonic temple, the mechanics' hall, and some of the banks are the most conspicuous of the secular buildings. Apart from its naval yard, one of the largest in the United States, Norfolk has but few manu- facturing establishments, but it carries on a large trade in cotton, fruits, vegetables, and oysters for the northern markets, as well as in maize, wheat, and sugar. Though the harbour has 20 feet of water at high tide, the fairway up to the city is narrow. The population was 14,620 in 1860, 19,229 in 1870, and 21,966 in 1880.

Founded in 1705, Norfolk was incorporated as a borough in 1736, and as a city in 1845. In 1776 it was burned by the British. At the opening of the Civil War it was the chief naval depot of the Confederates, but at an early date in the contest the vessels and

yard were destroyed, and in May 1862 the town was oceupied by the Federal forces.

NORFOLK ISLAND, with the much smaller Nepean Island and Phillip Island, lies about 29° 3' 8. lat. and 167° 58' E. long, 400 miles north-north-west of New Zealand, on a submarine tableland extending 18 miles to the north, and 25 miles to the south, with an average breadth of 18 miles. Measuring about 6 miles in length from north-west to south-east, Norfolk Island has an area of 8607 acres, or 134 square miles. The breakers of the Pacific beating on its high cliff-bound coast render it diffi cult or even impossible to land except at two places, and even there not without danger. With a general elevation of 400 feet above the sea the surface of the island rises in the north- west into Mount Pitt, whose double summit is 1050 feet in height. The soil, of decom- posed basalt, is well watered and wonderfully fertile.

Barnabas, founded by Bishop Patteson, where 150 Mela-

nesian boys and girls receive education.

The following are the main facts in the history of Norfolk Island. 1774. Island discovered by Captain Cook. 1788. Taken possession of by Philip G. King of the "Stirling" and twenty-four convicts from New South Wales. 1805. Settlement abandoned by order issued in 1803. 1826. Island made penal settlement for New South Wales convicts. 1842. Island transferred from New South Wales to Tasinania. , er 194 take the place of the convicts. 1867. Melanesian mission station settled at St Barnabas. 1882. Memorial church to Bishop Patteson erected at a cost of £5000, the windows being designed by Burne Jones and executed by W. Morris.

NORICUM was the ancient name of the country south of the Danube, around the rivers Inn and Drave, and ex- tending on the south to the banks of the Save. The original population appears to have been Illyrian, but in the great emigration of the Gauls the country was occu- pied by a Celtic people, Taurisci or Norici. The latter name seems to be derived from their town of Noreia, now Neumarkt. The country is mountainous, and the soil poor, but it is rich in iron, and has always been one of the great European centres of the trade. A great part of the Roman weapons were made of Noric steel. The country was conquered by the Romans under Tiberius and Drusus in 15 B.c., but for a time retained its old constitution and the name of Regnum Noricum. See Austria, Bavaria, CARINTHIA, &c.

NORMANBY, Constantine Henry Purprs, Marquis or (1797-1863), bore an eminent, though not a leading, part in some of the greatest movements of this century. As governor of Jamaica he had charge of the distribution of the huge compensation to owners upon the abolition of slavery in the West Indies ; it fell to him as lord-lieutenant of Ireland to give effect to the Catholic Emancipation Act; he was English ambassador at Paris during the revolution of 1848, and minister in Tuscany in the years immediately preceding the struggle for Italian unity. The son of the first earl Mulgrave, and born 15th May 1797, he passed through Harrowand Trinity College, Cambridge, and sat for the family borough of Scarborough as soon as he attained his majority. But, speaking in favour of Catholic emanci- pation, and dissenting in other points from the family politics, he thought proper to

resign his seat, and went to live in Italy for some two years. Returning in 1822, he was elected for Higham Ferrers, and made a considerable reputation by political pamphlets and by his speeches in the House. He was returned for Malton at the general elec- tion of 1826, and enrolled himself among the supporters of Canning. Previous to this, in 1825, he made his appear- ance as a novelist with Matilda ; and three years later, in 1828, he produced another, Yes and No. Of the brilliant band of fashionable novelists who started up as by a common impulse in those years, including Ward, Lister, Bulwer, Disraeli, Lord Normanby was probably the least impressive ; yet his Matilda ran through four editions in a year. There is a certain stiffness in the construction of his novels, as if he were either deficient in the story-teller's vivacity and fertility or, oppressed by his own sense of dignity, over-fastidious in his theory of composition. The novels are comparatively short, and move forward steadily to tragic catastrophes that present themselves ahead from a very early stage in the journey. The moral is so obtru- sive that they may almost be called sermons in disguise. Especially is this true of Yes and Wo, in which two oppo- site types of character, the man who says "Yes" with too great facility, and the man who says "No" with too great obstinacy and suspiciousness, are very skilfully con- trasted. It was chiefly character that he aimed at, as became a statesman, and his characters were drawn with fulness and keen insight, though not without too much appearance of labour.

1856. Pitcairn Islanders to the number of

NOR—NOR

A speech put into the mouth of one of his characters

expresses very fairly Lord Normanby's political creed, a creed not uncommon among the aristocracy at the time of

the Reform Bill: "I can't help thinking it but befits a gentleman to move methodically forward with the main body of the age in its regular march of mind, neither seeking foolish forlorn hopes in advance, nor lagging dis- gracefully in the rear." Acting on this principle, Lord Normanby reached the zenith of his career between the age of thirty and forty ; after that he began to lag and to decline in political reputation. He succeeded his father as Earl

Mulgrave in 1831, was sent out as captain- general and governor of Jamaica in the same year, and, in spite of certain defects of manner, gained such credit as an administrator that he was appointed lord-lieutenant of Ireland in 1835, It is significant of the reputation he then held that his appointment was received with enthusiasm as the beginning of a new order in Ireland ; and during his three years of office, one of the most peaceful periods in the history of Ireland, great improvements were made. It is disputed how much was due to him and how much to his subordinate Thomas Drummond. He was created marquis of Normanby in 1838, and held successively the offices of colonial secretary and home secretary in the last years of Lord Melbourne's ministry. From 1846 to 1852 he was ambassador at Paris, and from 1854 to 1858 minister at Florence. He died in London, 28th July 1863. The publication in 1857 of a journal kept in Paris during the stormy times of 1848 (A Year of Revolutions) brought him into violent controversy with Louis Blanc on questions of fact as well as of policy; and his controversies with Lord Palmerston and Mr Gladstone, after his retire- ment from the public service, on questions of French and Italian policy, showed him to have fallen behind "the regular march of the mind" of his age.

NORMANDY (Zerra Northmannorum, Northmannia, Normannia, Normendie, Normandie) is the name which was given to part of northern Gaul in consequence of its occupation in the early part of the 10th century by the Northmen, whose name was on Gaulish soil gradually changed into Normans. Till that time the land which has ever since borne the name of Normandy had no distinct name, nor any separate political being. In ecclesiastical geography it answers very nearly, but not quite exactly, Geogra- to the province of Rouen. This includes the archdiocese phical of Rouen and the six suffragan dioceses of Evreux, Lisieux, ee Séez, Bayeux, Coutances, and Avranches. Politically it — was, at the time of the Scandinavian settlement, part of the great duchy of France, of which it took in nearly the whole of the sea-coast. The name "Neustria" is sometimes used as equivalent to Normandy ; but of the old Neustria Normandy formed only a small part. As France was cut off from Neustria, so Normandy was cut off from France,

Normandy, in its widest extent, reached on the eastern side to the rivers Eu and Epte, of which the Eu empties itself into the English Channel near the

~~town of that nanie, while the Epte flows in the opposite direction and joins the Seine near Vernon. These streams form the boundary during nearly, but not quite, the whole of their course. Along the Epte the boundary of the duchy forsakes that of the ecclesiastical province, as the diocese of Rouen stretched a considerable way on the French side of that river. To the west Normandy is parted from Britanny by the border stream of Couésnon, but the shape of the coast makes the actual frontier very small. To the south the boundary of Normandy towards the duchy of France and the great counties which were parted off from it mainly followed the ecclesiastical frontier. But the diocese of Séez stretched beyond the duchy, while the conquests of William I. added to Normandy part of the diocese of Le Mans, and therefore~~

~~Sea- board.~~

~~Towns.~~

~~Modern divisions.~~

~~Early Seandi- navian settle- ments.~~

~~NORM~~

~~of the province of Tours. The land thus marked out took in the districts of Caux, Talou, Rouen, Evreux, Lisieux, Bayeux (Bessin), Avranches, and Coutances (Cotentin, pagus Constantinus), with the greater part of the Hiesmois and about half the Vexin. 'This last was often a disputed ground between Normandy and France.~~

~~But the main feature of the country is its sea-coast and its great river. A glance at the map (Plate XIII, vol. ix.) will show that the coast of Normandy, long as it seems, is little more than the mouth of the Seine. To the west that mouth is guarded by the peninsula of Coutances, the Danish land which, it has been remarked, is the only peninsula in Europe, besides the older Danish land, which points to the north. To the west this peninsula presents a bold front to the Atlantic, forming with the Breton coast a bay in which lie the Norman islands, Jersey, Guernsey, Alderney, Sark, and some smaller ones. Normandy, in fact, was the seaboard of France in the strict sense, the coast lying between Britanny on the one side and Flanders on the~~

other. It is that part of the Continent which lies most directly opposite Britain. The Norman duchy, in short, as long as it had an independent being, was inter- posed between England and France ; and in that position lies thé key to its whole history.

The chief city of the duchy was always the ecclesiastical metropolis of Rouen (Rothomagus), the great city of the lower Seine. It is to be noticed that Rouen, like the cities of southern Gaul, keeps its own local name and has not taken the name of atribe. Evreux, Séez, Bayeux, Lisieux, Avranches, preserve tribe names. The name Constantia or Coutances belongs of course to the later Roman nomen- clature of imperial times. Other towns which figure in Norman history, as Caen, Falaise, Alengon, are of later origin. Havre de Grace dates only from the 16th century, long after the loss of Norman independence.

In the divisions of modern France, Normandy answers to the departments of Lower Seine (cap. Rouen), Eure (cap. Evreux), Orne (cap. Alengon), Calvados (cap. Caen), Manche (cap. St Lo), and to the modern dioceses of Rouen, Evreux, Séez, Bayeux, and Coutances. The boundaries of Rouen and Evreux have been changed ; Lisieux has been joined to Bayeux, and Avranches to Coutances. The archbishop of Rouen still keeps the title of primate of Normandy; otherwise the name of the duchy has gone out of formal use.

It must be remembered that the land to which the Northmen thus permanently gave their name was only one of several Scandinavian settlements in Gaul, though it was the greatest and the only lasting one. Nor was the whole of the land which became the Norman duchy occupied at once. The whole second half of the 9th century was largely taken up in both Gaul and Britain with Scandinavian inroads, which in both countries led to important Scandinavian settlements. Settlement in Britain came first, and the great settlement in Gaul seems to have been made after its model. By the peace of Wedmore, Ailfred found his own West-Saxon kingdom untouched and indeed enlarged. But a large part of England, over which he claimed at most a vague external supremacy, was left to the Danish invaders. Their king embraced Christianity, and, like his English predecessors, accepted a formal West-Saxon supremacy. A variety of later

~~causes made the history of the Scandinavian settle- ment in England to differ widely from that of the Scandi- navian settlement in Gaul; but in their beginnings the two are exactly alike. The smaller Scandinavian settle- ments, those of Hasting at Chartres, of Ragnald at the mouth of the Loire, had no historical importance. The settlement of Rolf at Rouen grew into the duchy of Normandy. The treaty of Clair-on-Epte followed the model~~

~~of that of Wedmore. The Scandinavian invader embraced Christianity, and he became the man of the king of the Western kingdom. But he received no part of the king's immediate territory. His settlement was made wholly at the cost of the duke of the French. The only difference was that the duke of the French still went on reigning at Paris, though no longer at Rouen, while the English dynasties of Mercia, East Anglia, and Deira came alto- gether to an end. But the two settlements are exactly alike in this, that the converted Northman becomes the man of the king, though the settlement is not made at the cost of the king's immediate dominions. In both cases the king is strengthened, though in different ways. The West-Saxon king received an actual increase of im- mediate territory in the shape of that part of Mercia which formed the lordship of Aithelred and Aithelfled. The Carolingian king received no increase of territory, but his position was distinctly bettered when the great and threatening duchy of France was split into the two rival duchies of France and Normandy. That Normandy was cut off from France in the strict sense, from the duchy of the house of Paris, is a point in its history which must always be remembered. It is the key to that abiding rivalry between France and Normandy which was inherent in the position and history of the two lands. No moment- ary policy on the part of their rulers could ever get over it. It lived on in truth to become no unimportant element in the general history of Europe. The close connexion which arose between Normandy and England handed on to England the inheritance of rivalry which had first begun between France and Normandy, an inheritance which England kept in its fulness for ages after its separation from Normandy. It is likely enough—con- sidering the position of the two kingdoms, we may call it certain—that, had a separate state of Normandy never existed, a rivalry between England and France would have arisen out~~

~~of some other cause. Asa matter of fact, it was out of the older rivalry between France and Normandy that it did arise.~~

~~The settlement of Clair-on-Epte and the beginning of Settle- the Norman state are commonly placed in the year 912. There seems some reason to think that it may have hap- pened a few years later. There is no thoroughly trust- worthy account. The writers in the Western kingdom plainly say as little as they can about the matter ; they disliked the very name of the "pirates," as the Normans are called by Richer of Rheims down to the end of the century and beyond it. The earliest writer on the Norman side is Dudo, dean of St Quentin, who wrote late in the century, a rhetorical writer of the courtly school. But there is no doubt that the chief of the Scandinavian set- tlers was Rolf (in various spellings), known in Latin as Rolf. Rollo and in French as Rou, a viking leader to whom many earlier exploits, real or mythical, are attributed.~~

~~He received, as a grant from Charles the Simple, king of Carolingia or the Western kingdom, a tract of land of which Rouen was the centre and head, a tract certainly stretching as far as the Epte to the east, most likely stretching as far as the Dive to the west. It is an im- portant part of the case that, though the land was cut off from the duchy of France, yet the grant was a grant from the king and not from the duke of the French, and that the king and not the duke received Rolf's homage. The two princes were presently at war, Robert, duke of the French, having been elected as opposition-king in 922. Rolf seems to have stuck faithfully to his own lord, King Charles, alike against Robert and against Robert's son Hugh, called the Great, and the king, Rudolf of Burgundy, whom Hugh set up. The Normans were thus at war with France almost from the moment of their settlement,~~

~~Epte,~~

~~ment of Clair-on-~~

~~Land and people of Nor- mandy.~~

~~and they were rewarded by a further acquisition of terri- tory at the expense of the French duchy, namely, the Bessin or land of Bayeux. France was now nearly or wholly cut off from the sea. The Norman princes further claimed, by virtue of these early grants, a supremacy over both Britanny and Maine, which they were never able fully or lastingly to enforce.~~

~~Of the nature of the settlement made by the Northmen in the part of Gaul which they changed from France to Normandy we can judge only by the results. The new state for a while had no recognized territorial name. To the end of the century it is simply "Terra Northman- norum." ''Northmannia," a name which with Einhard meant Denmark, which in Adam of Bremen commonly means Norway, becomes, in the shapes of "' Nortmannia," "Normannia," "Normendie," and the like, fully estab- lished in the next century as the name of the Norman land in Gaul. In English chronicles it appears as " Ricar- des land," from the princes of that name; it is not "Nor- mandi," "Normandie," '' Normandig," "Normandige," till after the Norman Conquest. The chief again has no cer- tain titles ; at Rheims he was " princeps Northmannorum," or, more heartily, "dux piratarum." In the next century he becomes regularly "dux" or "comes Normannorum aa that is, he was "dux" as regards the Norman people, "comes" as regards his overlord the Western king. The people become definitely "Normanni," "Normend." It is not easy to say to what extent the Scandinavian settlers became mingled with the earlier occupiers of the land, or again how far those earlier inhabitants were of Frankish and how far of Celtic descent. It is plain that the land was parted out among Scandinavian landowners very much as in the Danish districts of England, and many places, just as in those districts, keep the name of the first Scandinavian lord. And it can hardly fail that, after the long harryings which went before the actual settlement, the population of the lands which lay open to the Northmen must have become scanty, and many parts are likely to have been quite forsaken. On the other hand, it is certain that before the end of the 10th century there was an Oppressed peas- antry in the land, and it is hardly likely that descendants of the original conquerors could have sunk so low in so short~~

~~'atime. The actual tillers of the soil were most likely to~~

~~a great extent descendants of the earlier inhabitants; that is, they would belong to the same mixed nationality as the people of the duchy from which Normandy had been cut off, to that mixture of Celtic, Latin, and Teutonic elements which has formed the modern Frenchman. Yet in Normandy, as elsewhere, the tendency would come in which makes the actual cultivators of the soil sink rather than rise, and it is by no means unlikely that the later peasantry of Normandy were largely the descendants of the Scandinavian conquerors. Anyhow, a nobility gradually sprang up among the Normans themselves, consisting chiefly, it would seem, of those who could claim any kind of kindred or affinity, legitimate or illegitimate, with the ducal house. Some of the greatest Norman houses sprang from kinsfolk of wives or mistresses of the dukes who were themselves of very lowly degree. This is always likely to happen when a nobility is first forming. Early in the 11th century the order of " gentlemen " as a sepa- rate class seems to be forming as something new. By the time of the conquest of England the distinction seems to have been fully established.~~

~~The Norman, with the softened form of his name, is distinguished from the Northman by his adoption of the French language and the Christian religion. In the case of Rolf himself, as in the case of Guthrum, his baptism formed one of the terms of the agreement. The convert took the name of Robert, from the duke of the French,~~

~~who acted as his godfather ; but, as in other cases of baptized Danes, he was still always spoken of by his earlier name. Whether Rolf himself learned French we are not told ; his language at the time of his homage is spoken of as English. This doubtless means any Low-Dutch or Scandinavian tongue, as opposed alike to High-Dutch and to French. Among his followers the twofold change took place with very different degrees of speed in different parts of the duchy. At Rouen and Evreux and in the eastern part gener- ally, the first grant to Rolf, the change seems to have been very speedy. In some other parts circumstances made it much slower. Thus, at Bayeux it would seem that an earlier Saxon colony coalesced with the Scandinavians ' at all events, a Teutonic tongue of some kind lived on there long after Rouen had come to speak no tongue but French. In the Cotentin, a still later~~

~~acquisition, both the Northern speech and the Northern creed were kept up by fresh settlements from Scandinavia. The result was a wide distinction between the eastern and the western, the French and the Scandinavian, parts of the duchy, which led to important political consequences as late as the reign of the Conqueror.~~

~~The Cotentin, with its appendage of the Channel Islands, William seems not to have been added to the land of the Northmen Long- till after the accession of its second duke, William surnamed SW: Longsword, about 927. Whether Rolf died, or abdicated, or was killed in battle, and the exact date of his son's accession, do not seem clearly fixed. The certain point is that William became the man of King Charles in 927 j and that he refused all allegiance to the rival king, Rudolf of Burgundy, as long as Charles lived. His own reign lasted till 943. It is one of the most confused periods in the history of Gaul, and a good deal of the confusion is owing to the shifting policy or caprice of William himself.~~

~~He changed sides more than once in the struggles between Lewis, the Carolingian king at Laon, and the more power-~~

~~ful Duke Hugh of Paris. At last, there can be little doubt, he was murdered by the practice of Count Arnulf~~

~~of Flanders. In Normandy itself the history and effects The of his reign are more marked. We see the struggle Heathen between the heathen or Danish party and the Christian, pre which may be also called the French, party. By this must Panty, be understood the party of the French speech and French civilization, not at all a party in the political interest of France. Its policy was to make Normandy a Christian and French-speaking state, an independent member of the Western kingdom, alongside of France and Flanders. The two parties are distinctly marked as geographical. The first years of William's reign are marked by a revolt of the heathen party, who demand the cession of the lands west~~

~~of the Risle. The Christian and French-speaking duke might reign in the region which had adopted his creed and tongue ; the western Normandy should forma separate State, heathen and Scandinavian. Though all this rests~~

~~on the not very high authority of Dudo, it bears the stamp~~

~~of truth ; it falls in with facts earlier and later 3; it is not the kind of story to grow up in the hands of a rhetorical panegyrist. William, successful over the rebels, appears~~

~~as a Christian, not without fits of special devotion, and~~

~~as anxious to take his place among the great princes of the Carolingian kingdom, notwithstanding the reproach~~

~~of pirate origin that still cleaves to him. Yet he does not show himself the enemy of the other side. Himself speaking both tongues, he has his son Richard sent to Bayeux to gain a fuller mastery of the Northern speech, and he seems even to have admitted fresh settlement from the North in the western part of the duchy. The deep and clearly intentional darkness in which contemporary writers~~

~~at Rheims leave the Norman history of this period makes any minute knowledge of this reign quite hopeless. But~~

~~NORM~~

~~we may safely set it down as a time of struggle between the two elements in the land, a time in which things, on the whole, tended to the strengthening of the Christian, French, eastern element,—the influence of Rouen and not that of Bayeux.~~

~~a ED Y 54]~~

~~the making of a nation. And in the making of that nation the Norman duchy had no small share. The close union between Normandy and France which had been brought about by Hugh the Great had a double result. It made Normandy French; in the end it made Gaul French. Up~~

~~Richard It was the long reign of William's son, Richard the | to this time Carolingia had been a kingdom of many nations — pes Fearless, which~~

~~finally settled the position of Normandy | and languages. The kings of Laon were still German ; earless.~~

~~and which had no small influence on the position of France. We must always remember that Normandy and France were alike vassal states of the Western kingdom, the kingdom of the Carolingian king at Laon, a king who, in all but the moral influence of his kingly dignity, was a prince of far smaller power than either of his mighty vassals. Normandy, rent away from France, bound by direct homage to the king at Laon, had hitherto been on the whole an ally of the king who dwelled beyond the dominions of the duke. The fifty years of Richard's reign changed all this. For the events of its early days we are not left wholly to Dudo; the writers at Rheims tell us enough to show that the division between the heathen and the Christian Normans was still strongly marked. The heathen party, strengthened by a new band of settlers from the North, got hold of the young Richard and persuaded or compelled him to fall back to his heathen worship. Richard was the son of William by a Breton mother, one who stood to his father in that doubtful relation which was called the Danish marriage, and who might be spoken of as wife or concubine at pleasure. At Rheims she bore the harsher name ; yet it is a matter of avowed record that her son was received as his father's successor by King Lewis. But the young duke — it is hard not to give him the title, though it is perhaps~~

~~they relied on German memories, on the slight German element still left in their kingdom, on the support of the German king beyond the Rhine. The great county of Flanders, stretching much further to the south than the present use of that name, was a land of the Nether-Dutch speech. The Bretons in the extreme west kept the Celtic tongue which they had brought over from the greater Britain. The lands south of the Loire, nominally part of the kingdom, but seldom playing any part in its history, kept their own variety of the Romance speech, and a national spirit altogether distinct from anything in northern Gaul. Most central of all lay the duchy of France, the land of which Paris was the centre and the cradle, the land of the new-born French speech and French nationality. The supremacy of Gaul was not likely to fall either to its Celtic or to its Nether-Dutch element; it might well fall either to its High-Dutch, its French, or its Aqui- tanian element. The close alliance between Hugh and Richard, between France and Normandy,~~

~~determined to which element it should fall. Had Normandy remained Scandinavian, France, hemmed in between Teutonic Laon and Teutonic Rouen, might never have reached to the head- ship of Gaul. But Richard's French alliance settled the question between French and Scandinavian in Normandy.~~

~~Normandy, itself become French, turned the balance in Nor- favour of the French element; it ruled that France should mandy be the head power of Gaul, that the duke of the French pene~~

~~premature—was presently got hold of by the heathen party, who were just then strengthened by a fresh settlement from the North. The Christians sought help both at Laon~~

~~French.~~

~~and at Paris; king and duke entered the land, seemingly in concert, in two successive years (943, 944). The heathens were defeated; the king occupied Rouen and the whole Norman land, doubtless with the intention of keeping it. Nothing could better suit the king of Laon than to rule at Rouen as well, and to hem in the duke of Paris on both sides. 'The Norman writers tell a romantic tale of the escape of young Richard from captivity at Laon. What is more certain is that Normandy soon rose against Lewis, and that, by the help of a Danish leader, in whom the Normans see the famous king Harold Blaatand, the king was defeated and made a prisoner. The policy of Hugh of France now obtains possession of Lewis and a commendation of Richard to himself. Lewis was released on surrendering Laon; his kingdom was cut down to Compidgne. In 946, in alliance with the Eastern king Otto, the future emperor, Lewis invaded France and Normandy, but the forces of the two kings failed before both Paris and Rouen.~~

~~These events fixed the position of the Norman duchy for some time. It is not clear whether Richard, along with the other princes, renewed his homage to Lewis; it seems certain that he became the man of the duke of the French. Things are thus turned about; Rouen, lately friendly to Laon and hostile to Paris, is now friendly to Paris and hostile to Laon. Normandy is the faithful and powerful ally of France under its successive dukes, Hugh the Great and Hugh Capet. The Norman duke is the son-in-law of the elder,~~

~~the brother-in-law of the younger, of the French princes. It does not appear that Richard ever did homage to King Lothair, the successor of Lewis ; he once at least,~~

~~and the king of the French should be the same person. The first creation of Normandy, a power shorn off from France and shutting out Paris and the whole duchy from the sea, had been a frightful blow to the French power. But the loss was more than made up when the policy of Hugh the Great won back as an ally what he had lost as a ruler, when he was chosen king by the help of the Norman duke, and when his election as king meant the final estab- lishment of France as the leading state of Gaul, of French as its leading speech, of Paris as its ruling city.~~

~~This good understanding between France and Normandy, at all events between the kings of the French and the dukes of the Normans, lasted through the reign of Richard the Fearless, through the reigns of the second and third Richard and that of Robert, till the accession of Robert's son, William the Bastard, afterwards known as the Con- queror and the Great, in 1035. The duke is now the most faithful and the most cherished vassal of the king. His vassalage is not doubtful. If Richard the Fearless, after the recovery of his duchy, no longer acknowledged the supremacy of King Lewis of Laon, he had cordially com- mended himself to Duke Hugh of Paris. When the second Hugh became king, it would have been a mere question of words whether the homage of the Norman vassal was due to the French lord in his kingly or in his ducal char- acter. More than once during this period the Norman dukes appear as the powerful helpers of the Parisian kings. They date their charters by the years of the kings, and recite the consent of their lords to their grants and other acts. All thisis to be carefully noticed, because at a later period of Norman history, the period when Norman history~~

~~France, in 961, appeared in arms against him. At last, in 987, | ismost closely connected with English history, all isdifferent. ~~ of came the change which united the duchy of France with the Yet English dealings both with France and Normandy Ul.~~

~~Western kingdom. Hugh of Paris was chosen to succeed to the crown of the last Lewis of Laon. This revolution, so often mistaken for a mere change of~~

dynasty, was in fact

began early. In the disputes of the early days of Lewis, his uncles Aithelstan and Eadmund successively interfered on his behalf, and, so far as France and Normandy were

Richard theGood.

the enemies of Lewis, this was English interference directed against both Normandy and France. But direct dealings between England and Normandy begin at a later time, in the latter days of Richard the Fearless.

Richard the Fearless died in 996, known to the last at Rheims only as duke of the pirates. Yet he had made his duchy Christian and French. It might be too much to say that every trace even of heathen worship, much less of Danish speech, had died out from the lands of Bayeux and Coutances. The speech at least, we may be sure, lingered some time longer, the more so as we hear of fresh Danish settlements in the latter days of Richard. And, even if speech as well as creed died out, the two left behind them the tradition of local distinction and local enmity between the eastern and the western parts of the duchy. The true Normandy, the land which was still in some measure Teutonic, began on the left bank of the Dive. But Nor- mandy as a state was Christian and French. The French speech of Rouen gradually supplanted the Danish speech of Bayeux. Yet, as commonly happens in such cases, a few Teutonic words, chiefly words of seafaring life, now crept into the Romance tongue of northern Gaul, in addition to the far greater infusion which had found its way in ages before as a result of the Frankish conquest. In Normandy itself the local nomenclature became Teutonic to an ex- tent which makes itself felt on the map. Scandinavian endings like toft and by live on in the shape of té¢ and boewf, and they are constantly coupled, like the by of Lincolnshire and the ton of Pembrokeshire, with the names of Scandinavian settlers. Even in the most French part of the duchy, some places, like Caudebec and Dieppe — the cold beck and the deeps — keep Teutonic names under a very slight disguise. And the Conqueror's own Falaise, bearing a name which has passed into the general voca- bulary of

~~the French tongue, is simply the Teutonic Fals, whether the name dates from Frankish or from Norman settlement.~~

~~Of one effect of the reign of Richard the Fearless we get a picture in the peasant revolt (which has been already spoken of) which marked the beginning of the reign of his son Richard the Good (997). A peasant revolt implies masters, and harsh masters. It is hard to say how far the distinction of oppressor and oppressed coin- cided with distinction of race ; but it is certain that the movement had some special and promising features. The peasants of Normandy set up a commune—or something to which later writers gave a name which became afterwards so well known—more than sixty years before the burghers of Le Mans did the like. We seem to be reading the history of Friesland or of the Three Lands rather than that of any part of the Western kingdom. But the revolt was fully and harshly put down, and the rule of the " gentlemen " was made safe. It is noticed that Richard the Good would have none but gentlemen about him. This seems to mark the final establishment in N ormandy, as in other lands, of the new nobility, the nobility of office, or rather the nobility of kindred to the sovereign. We soon begin to trace the history of the great Norman families, only one or two of which can be seen, and that dimly, before Richard the Good. It illustrates the origin of Norman nobility that Rudolf of Ivry, who put down the revolt, was the duke's uncle, but only because his father,~~

~~NOR 2 AN DY~~

~~a miller, had married the cast-off wife or mistress of~~

~~William Longsword. So at least the story goes, and a~~

~~story of this kind is sure to have this kind of truth ; such~~

~~a rise as it describes was possible and likely. After all, it may be that the revolt was not a mere failure. Villainage~~

~~in Normandy was both lighter and died out earlier than~~

~~in most parts of France.~~

~~The thirty years of the reign of Richard the Good con-~~

~~tinue the period of unbroken friendship between Normandy and France, and also between Normandy and Britanny. But we find the Norman duke warring, sometimes on his own account, sometimes as the ally of the French king, with his neighbour of Chartres, and in the more distant lands of the ducal and even the royal Burgundy. His relations with the North and with England are of more consequence. Richard is charged with bringing two heathen sea-kings, one of whom is said to have been afterwards the famous Saint Olaf, as helpers against Chartres; we hear also of a second quarrel with Aithelred, and even of an English invasion of the Cotentin. It is more certain that in 1002 Aithelred married Richard's sister Emma, a marriage which may be set down as the first link in the chain of events which led to the Norman conquest of England. Eleven years later, when Aithelred was driven from his kingdom, he found shelter with his wife and her children at the court of his brother-in-law. Soon after Althelred's death and Cnut's establishment in England, Emma married Cnut. Unbroken peace reigned between Cnut and Richard, and Emma's children by thelred, Alfred and Eadward and their sister Godgifu, were brought up at the court of their Norman uncle,—another stage in the drama of the Norman Conquest.~~

~~The short reign of Richard's son Richard (1026-1028) Robert,~~

~~was marked only by disputes between the duke and his father of brother Robert, count of Hiesmes, who presently succeeded the Con- to the duchy. He too maintained the French alliance, 2°°"°" and restored King Henry to his crown when he was driven from it by his stepmother Constance. But friendly relations both with Britanny and England now ceased. Robert seems to have married and put away Estrith, the sister of Cnut, either before her marriage with Earl Ulf or more likely after his death. This led to a quarrel between Robert and Cnut, and to an attempted invasion of England on behalf of the banished Aithelings, the sons of Aithelred and Emma. Robert at last made the pil- grimage to Jerusalem, and died on his way back in 1035. He had already made the great men of N: ormandy swear to the succession of his natural son William, born to him of Herleva of Falaise before his accession to the duchy. William the Bastard, one day to be the Conqueror, was about eight years of age at the death of his father.~~

~~There can be no doubt that the succession of William Succes- was most unwillingly accepted. It was the acceptance of sion of one who was at once bastard and minor. The law of W#Jiam. hereditary succession was nowhere very distinctly defined ; but it is clear that the notion of some kind of hereditary succession, as distinguished from election even within a particular family, had made much greater advances in Normandy than it had in England. No princes were more lax as to marriage than the Norman dukes; both William Longsword and Richard the Fearless were thie offspring of unions which were very doubtful in the eye of the church, and Richard the Good and the other children of Richard the Fearless were legitimated only by the after- marriage of their parents. But the son of Robert and Herleva was pre-eminently the Bastard ; there was no pre- tence of marriage of any kind. He was accepted, so far~~

~~as he was accepted, simply because there was no candidate whose right was so distinctly better than his as to unite~~

~~the whole country on his behalf. Of the other members~~

~~NORM~~

~~of the ducal kindred, some were themselves of doubtful legitimacy, while others could claim only through the female line. The result was that the minority of William was a time of utter anarchy, of plots, rebellions, public and private crimes of every kind, but that the young duke was never altogether set aside for any other claimant. And now for the first time since the very earliest days of the Norman state we find France unfriendly. The whole relations between the two powers change from the time of William's accession. It could not be in the beginning the personal act of the boy William himself. But the fact that William came to the duchy as a child had very likely a good deal to do with the change. The alliance had never been a natural one; it had been alliance between prince and prince rather than between people and people, and now, during William's minority, there was no prince in Normandy ready to do to the ruler of France such good service as had been done by earlier Norman princes. While the princes were personal friends circumstances might make it convenient to forget that Normandy was a land lopped away from France; as soon as those circumstances had passed away the French kings and the French people~~

again remembered that Rouen barred the way between Paris and the sea. For a while each power stood in need of the other. Normandy owed to France its introduction into the Christian and Romance-speaking world. France owed to Normandy its new position among the powers of Gaul. As the remembrance of these benefits on each side passed away, the far more natural feeling of rivalry and dislike showed itself again. After the accession of William there still are periods of friendship between France and Normandy ; but they alternate with more marked periods of enmity. The steady and faithful alliance is at an end ; it is significant that the name of the French king disappears from the charters of the Conqueror. If an immediate occasion of quarrel was at any time needed, it could always be found in the disputed frontier of the Vexin, the border district between Rouen and Paris. Old grievances are rubbed up again. Norman pride tells the tale of the Nor- man settlement, of the humiliation of the dukes and kings of Francia. French enmity finds scornful epithets for the intruders who had cut off so goodly a land and so great a city from French dominion.

The first sign of this revival of the older and more natural feeling was shown when King Henry took advan- tage of the weakness of Normandy to advance his fortune at its expense. From this time the relations between king and duke are, among a good many shiftings, more often hostile than friendly. It was also during William's minority that the attempt of the Htheling lfred on the English crown took place. He went with Norman com- panions, and in some accounts the enterprise swells into a Norman invasion. At all events, it marks another step towards a greater Norman invasion.

The ill feeling towards William finally broke out when he had reached an age to act for himself. This was in 1047, and the movement is one of special interest and importance, as bringing out more strongly than anything else the long-abiding distinction between the two parts of the duchy. Eastern or French Normandy, the land of Rouen and Evreux, clave to William; western or Teu- tonic Normandy, the land of Bayeux and Coutances, rose against him. The stirrer up of strife was Guy of Brionne, son of Reginald, count of the Burgundian pala- tinate, by a daughter of Richard the Good. The plan seemingly was that Guy should supplant William in the eastern district, and should leave the barons of the west to themselves. William asked and

obtained help of his lord, the king of the French. It is not easy to see why Henry, who had hitherto acted an unfriendly part towards

ANDY 543

Normandy and who before long acted it again, should

have stepped in, when the dismemberment of the duchy

would seem to have been just what he would have wished. However this may be, the rebels were overthrown in the Estab- fight of Val-és-dunes by the joint forces of king and lishment duke; the power of William over his duchy was fully of ime established ; and, though a difference may to this day be pumice seen between the two parts of Normandy, they never

again appeared in open strife against one another.

That part of the reign of William which comes between

the battle of Val-és-dunes and the invasion of England was the great day of Normandy as a wholly distinct and prac- tically independent power. Under the wise and vigorous rule of its great duke the duchy became one of the most flourishing parts of Gaul and of Europe. We can now for the first time call up a fairly distinct picture of the coun- try. The great Norman families, many of whom after- wards won a second establishment in England, now stand out distinctly. They are wealthy and powerful, but under William's rule they are made to feel that they have a master. Many of them, as we have seen, were the duke's kinsfolk ; some were favourites of his own advancing. The counts of Eu and of Evreux, the lords of Beaumont, Grantmesnil, and Conches, the viscounts of Avranches and Saint-Sauveur, stand out among many others. Greater than all was the mighty house that was formed by the union of the houses of Montgomery and Belléme, a house holding lands both of Normandy and of France, and rank- ing rather with princes than with ordinary nobles. Of those raised by William himself, we see his personal favourite William Fitz-Osbern of Breteuil, and his half-brother Robert, to whom he gave the county of Mortain, while his other half-brother Odo held the bishopric of Bayeux. These were the sons of Herleva by her husband Herlwin of Conteville, whom she married after the death of Duke Robert. That side of the feudal theory by which the noble holds of the prince and does military service for the lands which he holds was never better carried out than it was in Normandy under William. But under him the great lords were not only vassals but sub- jects. The reign of law was enforced ; the towns grew and trade flourished; the settlement of foreigners was encouraged ; Duke William in his own duchy showed all the great qualities which enabled him to become the conqueror and the ruler of England, without that darker side of his character which necessarily followed on his position as conqueror.

Nowhere do these qualities stand out more clearly than His in his dealings with the church. William was neither the Dealings enemy nor the slave of the ecclesiastical power. He held the oe ue supremacy over the spiritual estate with a firm hand. He had the great advantage that the prelates of Normandy were his vassals and subjects, holding their temporal estates of him and not of a king or emperor beyond his dominions. He was advocate of all his own churches ; he bestowed them at his will, and held firmly to

the right of investiture. But he was a church-reformer in the best sense. He chose the best men from all lands for the bishoprics and abbeys in his gift. Among those whom he promoted and befriended are the great naines of Lanfranc and Anselm. Up to this time the Norman bishoprics had been used as provisions for cadets and kinsmen of the ducal family, a custom of which the promotion of his own half-brother Odo during his minority was one of the last and most scandalous examples. Devout and strict in his own life, William backed up every effort for the enforcement of discipline and the improvement of morals. His reign was the great time for the foundation of the Norman monasteries. Some, as Jumidges, Cerisy, Bernay, Mont St Michel, are of older date ; but now every noble became the founder of

BAA NORM

a monastic house. The duke's own foundation of St Ste- phen's at Caen was among the foremost. In short, during the reign of William Normandy was looked on as an eccle- siastical paradise. It is certain that in no part of Europe was law, temporal and ecclesiastical, more strictly enforced.

This time was also a time of wars, during which the borders of the duchy were enlarged. or a short time the friendship with France went on. William repaid the king's help at Val-és-dunes by help in his wars with Geoffrey of Anjou. This led to a long rivalry between Anjou and Normandy, which largely took the shape of a struggle for the county of Maine, which lay between the two. As early as 1048 William extended his frontier in that direction ; in 1063 he obtained possession of Le Mans and the whole county. Meanwhile he had two wars with France. Henry encouraged Norman rebels, and twice, in 1054 and 1058, he invaded Normandy, each time to suffer defeat. At the time of the invasion of England Normandy was strength- ened by the weakness of its neighbours. The crown of France had passed to the minor Philip, and Anjou was divided and torn in pieces by civil disputes. The duchy, under its great duke, was at the very height of its power, prosperity, and renown when the duke of the Normans won himself a higher title.

The conquest of England by William had no direct effect of Nor- on the internal condition of Normandy; but it altogether ee-changed the position of the duchy asa European power. Conquest Save for three short intervals, it

never was again a wholly of Eng- distinct power with a prince to itself. So far its position land. may be said to have been lowered; but, on the other hand,

it became part of a power far greater than the single duchy of Normandy had ever been. For a while England in some sort followed Normandy ; the common sovereign of the two lands could use the strength of England for Nor- man purposes. Then, under the Angevin house, Normandy and England alike became parts of one of those motley dominions, like that of Burgundy under the Valois dukes or of Austria in yet later times, in which a crowd of sepa- rate states are brought together without any tie but that of a common ruler. The result was that Normandy, after handing on to England its tradition of enmity towards France, itself fell back into its old union with France. And it must not be forgotten that Normandy after the Conquest of England was in itself much less strong than Normandy before the Conquest of England. A great part of the goodness, so to speak, of the land had crossed the sea into the conquered kingdom.

The rule of King William in his duchy was on the whole less prosperous than that of Duke William had been. His later years were clouded by revolts and occasional defeats. Maine revolted in 1073, and one stage of the revolt is memorable, because William had to strive, not with a rival prince, but with a commonwealth. Le Mans set up the first commune north of the Loire. But city and county were won back, largely by the work of Englishmen, whom the Conqueror, after overthrowing their own freedom, used to put down freedom elsewhere. In 1076 he was defeated in an attempt on Dol by the forces of Britanny and France. The next year followed the revolt of his own son Robert, and a border warfare on the frontier of Mortagne. In 1083 a single castle in Maine, that of Sainte-Susanne, suc- cessfully withstood him for three years. In 1087 the old dispute with France about the Vexin again arose, and cost William his life at Mantes. But, though this is a different picture from the uninterrupted success of the earlier part of his reign, there is no reason to think that the general peace and prosperity of the duchy was at all disturbed. The fighting was wholly on the borders, and it must have done much less damage to the country at large than the two French invasions of the earlier period.

~~Wars.~~

~~Position~~

~~a WD~~

~~With the death of the Conqueror the most flourishing Anarchy~~

~~state in western Europe became the most wretched. after ‘ William’s successor Robert was incapable of government. ae The land fell back into the same kind of anarchy which ; had been during William’s minority. It was torn in pieces by private wars. More remarkable was the attempt of the city of Rouen to claim the position of a separate commonwealth; as Le Mans had done some years before. Some parts of the duchy were saved from anarchy by dis- memberments which transferred them to other rulers. Robert sold the Cotentin to his brother Henry, by whom it was lost and recovered more than once. His other brother, King William of England, in two invasions occupied a large part of the country. Maine revolted again, but the commune of Le Mans was not restored ; independent counts ruled once more. At last in 1097 Robert went with the crusade, and mortgaged the whole duchy to William, who occupied the country and restored some kind of order. He recovered and lost Maine more than once in warfare with its count, Helias. The death of William Rufus in 1100 again separated Normandy, England, and Maine. Robert came back to Normandy, but his misgovernment again raised up enemies against him. Henry invaded Normandy, and by the battle of Tinchebrai in 1106 the kingdom and the duchy were again united. It seems that Henry scrupled to take the title of duke while Robert lived, and he lived a captive in England till a year before the death of Henry himself in 1135. But Henry was none the less the ruler of Normandy, and he made the Normans pledge themselves to the succession of his children.~~

~~It was now no longer the duke of the Normans who Underthe reigned in England, but the king of the English who Norman reigned in Normandy. England, deeply influenced and eee changed as she had been by the Norman Conquest, had ona now, under the English-born Henry, recovered her position as a power. Men at the time looked on Normandy as conquered by England, and saw in Henry’s victory on Norman ground the reversal of~~

~~his father's victory on English ground forty years before. And there was a sense in which this was true, even though Henry's foreign policy was directed far more to Norman than to English objects. England as a power was far greater than Normandy, and it was growing less and less Norman. It was as king of the English that the sovereign of N ormandy appeared to the world at large. And under his rule the advantage which an island has over a continental dominion was plainly shown. The two great Norman rulers of the day, Henry of England and Roger of Sicily, each kept his island king-dom in perfect peace, and used his continental territory as a battle-ground. Henry's Norman rule was for many years disturbed by the claims of his nephew William, the son of Robert, whose side was taken both by several foreign princes and by a rebellious party in the duchy. Another cause of dispute was found in the affairs of another nephew, Theo- bald count of Chartres, son of Henry's sister Adela. Out of these questions several wars arose between Henry and Lewis VI. of France (1109-1137), supported commonly by the successive counts of Flanders, among whom William, the son of Robert, himself appears, as he held that county for a short time before his death (1127-1128). But there were intervals of peace. The treaty of Gisors in 1113 reads almost as if Lewis, in ceding to Normandy the border- land of Belléme, ceded with it all rights of superiority over the duchy. Yet in 1120 Henry found it convenient to make his son William, who had in 1115 received the hom- age of the Normans as his successor, himself do homage to the French overlord. William died almost directly after-wards in the White Ship, and in 1126 Henry procured the assent of his nobles to the succession of his daughter Matilda as lady of England and Normandy. She was~~

~~Mora AN DY~~

~~now the childless widow of the emperor Henry V., who had been a firm ally of his father-in-law. The next year Henry married his daughter to Geoffrey Plantagenet, son of Falk, count of Anjou and Maine. Anjou, whose counts had been such dangerous neighbours to Normandy, was thus to be united to the duchy and to the kingdom. These schemes in the end took effect. On Henry's death in 1135 the claims of Matilda were cast aside; the rule of a woman was too great a novelty for either kingdom or duchy. England chose Henry's nephew Stephen, the younger brother of Theobald of Chartres.~~

~~Normandy inclined to Theobald himself, but accepted the choice of England. The legitimate male line of the Conqueror was now extinct, and the stronger feeling with regard to legiti- mate birth which had grown up within the last hundred years hindered any such succession as that of the Conqueror himself. In earlier times Robert of Caen, Henry's natural son, renowned in England as earl of Gloucester, would have been a more obvious choice than either Matilda or Stephen, Now he could only assert the rights of his sister, and so plunge England into anarchy. The strife, which in England took a shape for which civil war is far too good a name, took in Normandy the less frightful shape of foreign invasion and conquest. Stephen's claim was from the first disputed in arms by Matilda's husband Geoffrey. Stephen showed himself in Normandy only for a moment in 1137, when his son Eustace did homage to King Lewis. Geoffrey gradually possessed himself of Normandy, partly by French and Flemish help (1139-1145). Five years afterwards he resigned the duchy to his son Henry, who the next year succeeded his father in Anjou and Maine. The next year 1152) he married Eleanor, the divorced wife of Lewis VII. 1137-1180), in her own right countess of Poitou and duchess of Aquitaine. By the union of all these territories a dominion was formed unlike anything which had been seen before in Gaul, but which, as has been remarked already, has had its parallel in later times. Duke Henry, in right of his father, his mother, and his wife, gathered together a crowd of dominions which made him far more powerful than his lord, the king of the French. But there was no connexion between the several duchies and counties that he held beyond the fact that he held them. And when presently the duke became a king the lack of unity became greater still. By the agreement which settled the strife of Stephen and Matilda, the crown of England passed at the death of Stephen to the son of Matilda. In 1154 began the memorable thirty-five years' reign of Henry I. of England. But the king of England was also himself duke of Normandy, count of Anjou, Maine, and Touraine, and in his wife's name count of Poitou and duke of Aqui- taine. During his reign and that of his eldest son the connexion between England and the Continent was at once closer and wider than it ever was before or after.~~

~~With the formation of the great Angevin dominion, the being of Normandy as a separate power comes to an end, The mere union with England had not that effect in any- thing like the same degree. While the same man was~~

of Norman princes, happened also to be king of the island kingdom. After all, a conquest of England by Normandy or of Normandy by England was a less grievance than a conquest of Normandy by Anjou. Normans and Angevins hated one another with the hatred of neighbours ; nothing could be so utterly offensive to all Norman national feeling as the triumphant entry of Geoffrey into Rouen. Each accession which the Angevin prince made to his dominions made matters worse. Normandy became more and more a simple unit in the long roll-call of the possessions of its sovereign, and a unit marked out in a special way. It was not, like England, the possession which gave its ruler his rank among princes. It was not, like Anjou, the home of his direct forefathers. It was not, like Maine, the land of his own birth. What marked it out from his other possessions was that, while he had received all the rest by some form or other of peaceful succession, Normandy alone was a conquered land.

It is not likely that the rule of its Angevin dukes ever called forth much loyalty in the Norman duchy. There was no sign of open discontent, and Henry and Richard were not princes to be lightly thrown aside. The real greatness of the father, the shadowy glory of the son, went for something, even with subjects who had no special love for them or their house. On the death of Richard in 1199 the succession of John was admitted in Normandy, as in England, without dispute. To bring this about it was perhaps reason enough that Anjou took the side of Arthur. But John's victory at Mirabeau put an end to any hope of a division of the dominions of the Angevin house. And when Arthur, in the expressive phrase of Roger of Wen- dover, "vanished," when the French king took on himself

the part of his avenger and declared John to have forfeited Forfeited all fiefs that he held of the French crown, there was no toFrance.

zeal in Normandy to withstand French invasion. The king-duke, to be sure, himself showed as little zeal as any man; but the Normans of an earlier day, with or without the help of their prince, would assuredly have made a stouter resistance than the subjects of John made to Philip Augustus. With wonderful speed (1203-1204) Continental Normandy passed away from an Angevin duke to a French king. One was as much and as little a stranger as

the other ; anda union with the dominions of the Continental overlord might seen: less ignominious than the position of one among many Continental provinces of the island king.

The whole duchy, however, was not lost. The mainland passed to the king of the French ; the islands still clave to their duke. Guernsey, Jersey, Alderney, and their smaller fellows have ever since remained possessions of the kings of England, but forming no part of their kingdom. They still keep their own language, constitution, and laws, and they have never been incorporated with the United King- dom. It is somewhat singular that the kings of England, still holding as they did part of the Norman duchy, should have so soon given up their Norman title. This was done when the treaty of Xaintes (Saintes) between Henry IIL. and Saint Lewis was finally carried out in 1259.

king of the English and duke of the Normans, but had no dominions beyond his kingdom and duchy, there was nothing in the relation to wound Norman national pride. The common sovereign took his highest title from England ; but his policy was apt to be directed at least as much by

Normandy now ceases for a while to have a distinct Hands history. But its earlier history largely influences the " fg

6 : England history which was to come. England, as England, had 4) Quar no real quarrel with France ; but the abiding quarrel be- rel with

tween France and Normandy had drawn England within France.

Norman as by English interests, and the men of Normandy could not forget that England was the conquest of their fathers. And, if English feeling could from one side look on Normandy as a conquered land and on Tinchebrai as the reversal of Senlac, it was equally easy to look on Tinche- brai as a strife between Norman and Norman, in which it was a mere accident that the chosen chief of one and the stronger Norman party, himself the son of the greatest

its range. The kings and the people of England, used to fight with France in a Norman quarrel, kept on the feeling of rivalry towards France, even after

Normandy itself had gone over to the other side. The fact that the English kings kept Aquitaine after the loss of Nor- mandy—for the inheritance of Eleanor was not forfeited by the crime of her son—was the immediate occasion of many of the later disputes between England and France. XVII. —69

546 NiO Ra AWD Y

But the traditional feeling was handed on from the days when Englishmen and Normans. fought side by side against I'renchmen. In Normandy itself the memory of the connexion with England soon died out. We read, and it seems strange as we read, of the quarrel which, in the days of Edward I., arose between the crowns of England and France out of the disputes between Norman subjects of France and Gascon subjects of England. But the national feeling of the English towards France was none the less an inheritance handed on from the Norman fights of Varaville and Noyon.

From the time of John's forfeiture Normandy ccased to be a separate state. It was a dominion of the king of France, though often granted out as a separate apanage to members of the royal family. The land fell back upon its natural geographical position as the northern seaboard of France, though now the seaboard of a France that had been vastly enlarged since the land of the Northmen had been cut off from the old French:duchy. The value of such a province to the kingdom was beyond words; but it was now simply a province of France, keeping much that was characteristic, holding to a strongly-marked pro- vincial life, but not parted off by any distinction that can be called national. One cause of the ease with which the land went back to its old position in the days before Rolf doubtless was that so much of the national strength had been used up in the settlements in England and Sicily. The life of the Normans as a people—though a people, strictly so called, they hardly formed—is very far from being shut up within the duchy of Normandy.

Still, the union between Normandy and France—at all events, the possession of Normandy by the French kings of the house of Paris—was not to be altogether unbroken, The duchy was for a while to go back again to the descend- ants of its ancient dukes. The Normans had forgotten their connexion with England, but it was not always for- gotten by English kings

~~and statesmen. The remarkable thing is that the thought of reunion does not show itself till a much later time, when the immediate tradition must have passed away. In the two great English invasions of France Normandy plays an important part; but it does not appear that the descendants of Rolf and William were any more welcome in their ancestral duchy than in other parts of the French dominion. But Normandy holds quite a different position in the two great parts of the Hundred Years' War. Under Edward IIL. it was often the scene of war, because geographical causes naturally made it so 3 but it was so only as any other part of France might happen to be. The war of Crécy and Poitiers was not in any special way a war for Normandy. Edward was rather a French prince claiming the crown of France than an English king seeking the aggrandizement of his kingdom. When the settlement of Bretigny was made Normandy was not among the lands that were given up to England. It was otherwise with Henry V. He was before all things an English king bent on extending the power of England. If he wished to make Continental conquests, Normandy, both from geographical position and from historical associations, —associations which became keener in some sort as they grew more distant,—was the land which before all others invited his ambition. His war with F rance, his formal union of the crowns of England and F rance, were, We may be sure, only means towards his real design, the annexa- tion of Normandy to the crown of England. In every negotiation he was ready to waive his claim to the French crown ; he always insisted on the cession of the Norman duchy in full sovereignty. His war was before all things a war for Normandy. In his serious invasion of 1417 to be distinguished from the earlier military promenade which led to the fight of Agincourt—he gave himself out,~~

~~though he gave himself out in vain, as the lawful duke~~

~~of the duchy. He thoroughly subdued the duchy as his Recon- first work, and from 1418 to 1450 Normandy again became quest by~~

~~a possession of the English crown. The treaty of Troyes, in its 17th clause, speaks of Normandy as a land conquered from the kingdom of France, yet as actually being at the time a separate possession of the king of England, a land which, by the 21st clause, he was bound, on succeeding to the kingdom of France, to reunite with that kingdom. By that treaty England~~

~~and France were to be united on the same terms as Sweden and Norway, Hungary and Austria, in later times ; but by this clause Normandy is to be part of the kingdom of France, neither part of the kingdom of England nor a separate possession of the common king. Henry never succeeded to the crown of France; he died heir and regent of that kingdom. Normandy therefore was not reunited to I'rance, and Henry, on his deathbed, revealed the object of his whole career. He was prepared for the loss of France, but not for the loss of Normandy. Things might take their course in other ways, but the guardians of his child were to conclude no peace with Charles of France unless Normandy was ceded to the crown of England in full sovereignty. Henry VI. succeeded to both king- doms ; he uses the style of both, and never uses the style of the Norman duchy ; yet in documents of his time the duchy is in a marked way distinguished from the kingdom of France. Such phrases as "oure saide royaurne of Fraunce and oure saide duchie of Normandie" are common. In the journal of the embassy in 1445,) ""Guyenne et Nor- mandie et les autres terres esquelles les rois Dangleterre avoient droit avant la question de la couronne "are pointedly distinguished from the lands which were held or claimed by the English kings only by virtue of their claim to the French crown. That Henry V.'s object, the lasting union of England and Normandy, would have been no gain to England needs no proof; but there can be little doubt that the thirty years of English occupation were a gain to Normandy. As far as was possible in a time of war—yet war between France and England was a less evil than war between Burgundians and Armagnacs—King Henry and John duke of Bedford secured to their conquest a far better administration and more of general wellbeing than it had had or than it had again under French rule. But by this time Normans had become Frenchmen. The best English rule was but the rule of a stranger, and the land willingly went back to that dominion of the house of Paris from which it had twice been cut off, at times five hundred years apart.~~

~~From this time the history of Normandy is simply part of the history of France. It is the record of such events in French history, some of the most important events in later French history among them, as took place within the bounds of Normandy. The duchy still kept a certain separate being, and its people still kept a large measure of separate feeling. Philip of Comines remarks that the Normans were always best pleased to have a duke of their~~

~~own. But such a duke of Normandy, son or brother of the reigning king of France, holding a mere apanage and not a sovereign fief, remained a French subject, and had not the same independent position as a duke of Burgundy or Britanny. Philip of Comines further remarks on the wealth of the duchy—the fruit possibly in some measure of the administration of King Henry and Duke John. Normandy brought in a third of the whole income of the French crown. 'To this day Normandy is easily seen, by those who look below the surface, to be in many things a Separate land from France ; compared with southern Gaul, it has much in common with England. But the history a-ee-ee~~

~~1 Stevenson's Letters and Papers of Henry the Sixth, i. 129.~~

~~of Normandy as a European power ends with the Angevin conquest in the 12th century. Since then it has never stood alone, even as it might still be said to stand alone under the Conqueror and under Henry I. The question from that time was whether Normandy should be a de- pendency of England or an integral part of France. The latter was in every way the more natural condition. The reunion under Henry V. was a striving against manifest destiny. It shows what a great man can do and what he cannot. BE. A. F. NORMANS is the softened form of the word " North- man," applied first to the people of Scandinavia in general, and afterwards specially to the people of Norway. In the form of "Norman" (Northmannus, Normannus, Ne ormand) it is the name of those colonists from Scandinavia who settled themselves in Gaul, who founded the Norman duchy, who adopted the French tongue and French manners, and who from their new home set forth on new errands of conquest, chiefly in the British Islands and in southern Italy and Sicily. From one point of view the expeditions of the Normans may be looked on as continuations of the expedi- tions of the Northmen. As the name is etymologically the same, so the people are by descent the same, and they are still led by the old spirit of war and adventure. But in the view of general history Normans and Northmen niust be carefully distinguished. The change in the name is the sign of a thorough change, if not in the people themselves, yet in their historical position. Their national character remains largely the same; but they have adopted a new religion, a new~~

~~language, a new system of law and society, new thoughts and feelings on all matters. Like as the Norman still is to the Northman, the effects of a settlement of Normans are utterly different from the effects of a settlement of Northmen. There can be no doubt that the establishment of the Norman power in England was, like the establishment of the Danish power, greatly helped by the essential kindred of Normans, Danes, and English. But it was helped only silently. To all outward appear- ance the Norman conquest of England was an event of an altogether different character from the Danish conquest. The one was a conquest by a people whose tongue and institutions were still palpably akin to those of the English. The other was a conquest by a people whose tongue and institutions were palpably different from those of the English. The Norman settlers in England felt no com- munity with the earlier Danish settlers in England. In fact the Normans met with the steadiest resistance in a part of England which was largely Danish. But the effect of real, though unacknowledged, kindred had none the less an important practical effect. There can be no doubt that this hidden working of kindred between conquerors and conquered in England, as compared with the utter lack of all fellowship between conquerors and conquered in Sicily, was one cause out of several which made so wide a difference between the Norman conquest of England and the Norman conquest of Sicily. These two conquests, wrought in the great island of the Ocean and in the great island of the Mediterranean, were the main works of the Normans after they had fully put on the character of a Christian and French-speaking people, in other words, after they had changed from Northmen into Normans. The English and the Sicilian settlements form the main Norman history of the 11th century. The 10th century is the time of the settlement of the North- men in Gaul, and of the change in religion and language of which the softening of the name is the outward sign. By the end of it, any traces of heathen faith, and even of Scandinavian speech, must have been niere survivals. The new creed, the new speech, the new social system, had taken such deep root that the descendants of the Scandi-~~

~~navian settlers were better fitted to be the armed mission- aries of all these things than the neighbours from whom they had borrowed their new possessions. With the zeal Character of new converts they set forth on their~~

new errand very of the much in the spirit of their heathen forefathers. If Britain Nenmans: and Sicily were the greatest fields of their enterprise, they were very far from being the only fields. The same spirit of enterprise which brought the Northmen into Gaul seems to carry the Normans out of Gaul into every corner of the world. Their character is well painted by a contemporary historian of their exploits.! He sets the Normans before us as a race specially marked by cunning, despising their own inheritance in the hope of winning a greater, eager after both gain and dominion, given to imitation of all kinds, holding a certain mean between lavishness and greedi- ness—that is, perhaps uniting, as they certainly did, these two seemingly opposite qualities. Their chief men, he adds, were specially lavish through their desire of good report. They were moreover a race skilful in flattery, given to the study of eloquence, so that the very boys were orators, a race altogether unbridled unless held firmly down by the yoke of justice. They were enduring of toil, hunger, and cold whenever fortune laid it on them, given to hunting and hawking, delighting in the pleasure of horses, and of all the weapons and garb of war. Several of these features stand out veryclearlyin Norman history. The cunning of the Nor- mans is plain enough ; so is their impatience of restraint, unless held down by a strong master. Love of imitation isalso marked. Little of original invention can be traced to any strictly Norman source; but no people were ever more eager to adopt from other nations, to take into their service and friendship. from any quarter men of learning and skill and eminence of every kind. To this quality is perhaps to be attributed the fact that a people who did so much, who settled and conquered in so large a part of Europe, has practically vanished from the face of the earth. If Normans, as Normans, now exist anywhere, it is cer- tainly only in that insular fragment of the ancient duchy which still cleaves to the successor of its ancient dukes. Elsewhere, as the settlers in Gaul became French, the emi- grants from Gaul became English, Irish, Scottish, and what- ever we are to call the present inhabitants of Sicily and southern Italy. Everywhere they gradually lost themselves among the people whom they conquered ; they adopted the language and the national feelings of the lands in which they settled; but at the same time they often modified, often strengthened, the national usages and national life of the various nations in which they were finally merged.

But Geoffrey hardly did justice to the Normans if he Their meant to imply that they were simple imitators of others. faculty of Their position was very like that of the Saracens. Hasty oil writers who forget the existence of the eastern Rome are : apt to claim for the Saracens of Baghdad, or more commonly for those of Cordova, a monopoly of science and art at some time not very clearly defined by dates. In so doing they slur over the real position and the real merit of the Saracens with regard to science and art. In neither de- partment did any Saracen, strictly speaking, invent any- thing ; but they learned much both from Constantinople

eee ee

1 Geoffrey Malaterra, i. 3—" Est quippe gens astutissima, injuriarnm ultrix, spe alias plus Inerandi, patrios agros vilipendens, quexstus et dominationis avida, eujuslibet rei simulatrix, inter largitatem et avari- tiam quoddam medium habens. Principes vero delectatione bone fame largissimi, gens adulari sciens, eloquentiis in studiis inserviens in tantum, ut etiam ipsos pueros quasi rhetores attendas, que quidem, nisi jugo justitiee prematur, effrenatissima est; laboris, inedix, algoris, ubi fortuna expedit, patiens, venationi aeeipitrum exereitio inserviens. Equorum, eeterorumque militie instrumentorum, et vestium luxuria deleetatur. Ex nomine itaque suo terre nomen indiderunt. North quippe Angliea lingua aquilonaris plaga dicitur. Et qnia ipsi ab aquilone venerant terram ipsam etiam Normanniam appellarunt."

Enter- prise,

Litigious- ness,

548

and from Persia, and what they learned they largely deve-

loped and improved. The Normans did just the same.

They adopted the French tongue, and were presently among the first to practise and spread abroad its literature. They adopted the growing feudal

doctrines of France, and worked them, both in Normandy and in England, into a harmoni- ous system. From northern Italy, as it would seem, they

adopted a style of architecture which grew in their hands,

both in Normandy and in England, into a marked and liv-

ing form of art. Settled in Gaul, the Scandinavian from a seafaring man became a landsman. Even in land-warfare he cast aside the weapons of his forefathers; but he soon learned to handle the weapons of his new land with greater prowess than they had ever been handled before. He welcomed the lore of every stranger. Lanfranc brought law and discipline ; Anselm brought theology and philo- sophy. The gifts of each were adopted and bore fruit on both sides of the Channel. And no people ever better knew how to be all things to all men. The Norman power in England was founded on full and speedy union with the one nation among whom they found themselves. The Norman power in Sicily was founded on a strong distinction between the ruling people and the many nations which they kept in peace and prosperity by not throwing in their lot with any one among them.

The quality which Geoffrey Malaterra expresses by the word "'effrenatissima" is also clearly marked in Norman history. It is, in fact, the groundwork of the historic Norman character. It takes in one case the form of cease- less enterprise, in another the form of that lawlessness which ever broke out, both in Normandy and in every other country settled by Normans, when the hand of a strong ruler was wanting. But it was balanced by another quality which Geoffrey does not speak of, one which is not really inconsistent with the other, one which is very promi- nent in the Norman character, and which is, no less than the other, a direct heritage from their Scandinavian fore- fathers. This is the excessive litigiousness, the fondness for law, legal forms, legal processes, which has ever been characteristic of the people. If the Norman was a born soldier, he was also a born lawyer. Randolf Flambard, working together the detached feudal usages of earlier times into a compact and logical system of feudal law, was as characteristic a type of the people as any warrior in the Conqueror's following. He was the organizer of an endless official army, of an elaborate technical system of adminis- tration, which had nothing like it in England

~~before, but which grew up to perfection under Norman rulers. But nothing so well illustrates this formal side of the Norman character as the whole position of the Conqueror himself. His claim to the crown of England is something without earlier precedent, something as far as possible removed from the open violence of aggressors who have no pretexts with which to disguise their aggression. It rested on a mass of legal assumptions and subtleties, fallacious indeed, but ingenious, and, as the result proved, effective. His whole system of government, his confiscations, his grants, all that he did, was a logical deduction from one or two legal principles, arbitrary certainly in their conception, but strictly carried out to their results. Even Norman law- lessness in some sort took a legal shape. In the worst days of anarclry, in the minority of William or under the no-reign of Robert, the robber-baron could commonly give elaborate reasons for every act of wrong that he did.~~

~~It is perhaps less wonderful that this characteristic should have been left out in a picture of the Normans in Apulia and Sicily than if it had been left out ina picture of the Normans in Normandy and England. The circumstances of their Apulian and Sicilian conquests certainly did not tend to bring out this feature of their character so strongly~~

~~NORMANS~~

~~as it was brought out by the circumstances of their Eng- lish conquest. Possibly the same cause may have kept the chronicler from enlarging on their religious charac- ter; yet in Sicily at least they might pass for crusaders, Crusaders in fact they were before crusades were preached. Norman warriors had long before helped the Christians of Spain in their warfare with the Saracens of the Peninsula, and in Sicily it was from the same enemy that they won the great Mediterranean island. Others had done a kin- dred work in a more distant field as helpers of the Eastern emperors against the Turks of Asia. All these might pass for religious wars, and they might really be so 3 it needed greater ingenuity to set forth the invasion of England as a missionary enterprise designed for the spiritual good of the benighted islanders. The Norman, a strict observer Observ- of forms in all matters, attended to the forms of religion ance of with special care. No people were more bountiful to Be ecclesiastical bodies on both sides of the~~

Channel 3 the i foundation of a Benedictine monastery in the 11th cen- tury, of a Cistercian monastery in the 12th, seemed almost a matter of course on the part of a Norman baron. The Conqueror beyond doubt sincerely aimed at being a reli- gious reformer both in his duchy and in his kingdom, while it is needless to say that his immediate successor was exceptionally ungodly, whether among Normans or among other men. But among their countrymen generally strict attendance to religious observances, a wide bounty to religious foundations, may be set down as national characteristics. On the other hand, none were less in- clined to submit to encroachments on the part of the ecclesiastical power, the Conqueror himself least of all.

We thus see in the Scandinavian settlers in Gaul, after they had put on the outward garb of their adopted country, a people restless and enterprising above all others, adopt- ing and spreading abroad all that they could make their own in their new land and everywhere else,—a people in many ways highly gifted, greatly affecting and modifying at the time every land in which they settled, but, wherever they settled, gradually losing themselves among the people of the land. The Norman, as a visible element in the country, has vanished from England, and he has vanished from Sicily. The circumstances of his settlement in his The Con- two great fields of conquest were widely different ; his quest of position when he was fully established in his two insular i realms was widely different; but the end has been the of Sicily same in both cases. Neither island has for ages been in com- any sense a Norman land, and the tongue which the pared. Norman brought with him into both has not for ages been spoken in either. Norman influence has been far stronger in England than in Sicily, and signs of Norman presence are far more easily recognized. But the Norman, as a distinct people, is as little to be seen in the one island asin the other. His disappearance in both cases is an illus- tration of one of the features which we have spoken of in the Norman character, the tendency which in fact made Normans out of Northmen, the tendency to adopt the language and manners of the people among whom they found themselves. But, as far as outward circumstances are concerned, we may say that the same effect has been brought about by different and almost Opposite causes. The whole circumstances of the conquest of England con- strained the conquerors to become Englishmen in order to establish themselves in the conquered land.

~~In William's theory, the forcible conquest of England by strangers was an untoward accident. The lawful heir of the English crown was driven against his will to win his rights by force from outside. But he none the less held his crown as an English king succeeding according to English law. Moreover every Norman to whom he granted lands and offices held them by English law in a much truer sense~~

~~NORMANS~~

~~than the king held his; he was deemed to step into the exact position of his English predecessor, whatever that might be. This legal theory worked together with other causes to wipe out all practical distinction between the conquerors and the conquered in a wonderfully short time. By the end of the 12th century the Normans in England might fairly pass as Englishmen, and they had largely adopted the use of the English language. The fashion-able use of French for nearly two centuries longer was far more a French fashion than a Norman tradition. When the tradition of speaking French had all but died out, the practice was revived by fashion. Still the tradition had its effect. The fashion could hardly have taken root except in a land where the tradition had gone before it.~~

~~The Normans in England therefore became Englishmen, because there was an English nation into which they could be absorbed. The Normans in Sicily could hardly be said to become Sicilians, for there assuredly was no Sicilian nation for them to be absorbed into. While the Normans in England were lost among the people of the land, the Normans in Sicily were lost among their fellow-settlers in the land. The Normans who came into Sicily must have been much less purely Norman than the Normans who came into England. The army of Duke William was un- doubtedly very far from being wholly made up of Normans, but it was a Norman army; the element which was not Norman, though considerable, was exceptional. But we may doubt whether the Norman invaders of Sicily were Norman in much more than being commanded by Norman leaders. They were almost as little entitled to be called pure Scandinavians as the Saracens whom they found in the island were entitled to be called pure Arabs. The conquest of England was made directly from Normandy, by the reign- ing duke, in a comparatively short time, while the conquest of Sicily grew out of the earlier and far more~~

gradual con- quest of Apulia and Calabria by private men. The Norman settlements at Aversa and Capua were the work of adven- turers, making their own fortunes, and gathering round them followers from all quarters. They fought simply for their own hands, and took what they could by the right of the stronger. They started with no such claim as Duke William put forth to justify his invasion of England ; their only show of legal right was the papal grant of conquests that were already made. The conquest of Apulia, won bit by bit in many years of what we can only call free- booting, was not a national Norman enterprise like the conquest of England, and the settlement to which it led could not be a national Norman settlement in the same sense. The Sicilian enterprise had in some respects another character. By the time it began the freebooters had grown into princes. Sicily was won by a duke of Apulia and a count of Sicily. Still there was a wide dif- ference between the duke of the Normans and the duke of Apulia, between an hereditary prince of a hundred and fifty years' standing and an adventurer who had carved out his duchy for himself. And, besides this, warfare in Sicily brought in higher motives and objects. Though crusades had not yet been preached, the strife with the Mussulman at once brought in the crusading element; to the Christian people of the island they were in many cases real deliverers ; still, the actual process by which Sicily was won was not so very different from that by which Apulia had been won. Duke William was undisputed master of England at the end of five years ; it took Count Roger thirty years to make himself undisputed master of Sicily. The one claimed an existing kingdom, and obtained full possession of it in a comparatively short time; the other formed for himself a dominion bit by bit, which rose to the rank of a kingdom in the next generation. When Count Roger at last found himself lord of the whole island, he found himself lord of

men of various creeds and tongues, of whom his own Nor- man followers were but one class out of several. And the circumstances of his conquest were such that the true Nor- mans among his following could not possibly lose them- selves among the existing inhabitants of the island, while everything tended to make them lose themselves among their fellow-

adventurers of other races, among whom, by the time the conquest was ended, they could hardly have been even a dominant element.

As far then as concerned the lands in which the settle- ments were made, the difference lay in this, that, as has been already said, while there was an English nation, there was

no Sicilian nation. The characteristic point of Norman rule Elements

in Sicily is that it is the rule of princes who were foreign of to all the inhabitants of the island, but who were not more foreign to the inhabitants of the island than different classes of them were to one another. The Norman con- queror found in Sicily a Christian and Greek-speaking people and a Mussulman and Arabic-speaking people. The relations between the two differed widely in different parts of the island, according to the way in which the Saracens had become possessed of different towns and districts. In one place the Christians were in utter bondage, in another they were simply tributary ; still, everywhere the Mussul- man Saracen formed the ruling class, the Christian Greek formed the subject class. We speak of the Saracen very much as we speak of the Norman ; for of the Mussulman masters of Sicily very many must have been only artificial Arabs, Africans who had adopted the creed, language, and manners of Arabia. In each case the Arab or the Norman was the kernel, the centre round which all other elements gathered and which gave its character to the whole. Besides these two main races, Greek and Saracen, others came in through the Norman invasion itself. There were the conquerors themselves ; there were the Italians, in Sicily known as Lombards, who followed in their wake ; there were also the Jews, whom they may have found in the island, or who may

have followed the Norman into Sicily, as they certainly — followed him into England. The special character of Norman rule in Sicily was that all these various races flourished, each in its own fashion, each keeping its own creed, tongue, and manners, under the protection of a common sovereign, who belonged to none of them, but who did impartial justice to all. Such a state of things might seem degradation to the Mussulman, but it was deliver- ance to the native Christian, while to settlers of every kind from outside it was an opening such as they could hardly find elsewhere. But the growth of a united Sicilian nation was impossible; the usual style to express

the inhabitants of the island is “omnes” or “ universi Siciliz populi.” In the end something like a Sicilian nation did arise ; but it arose rather by the dying out of several of the elements in the country, the Norman element among them, than by any such fusion as took place in England. That is, as has been already said, the Norman as such has vanished in two different ways. In England the Nor- man duke came in as a foreign intruder, without a native supporter to establish his rule over a single nation in its own land. He could not profess to be, as the count of Sicily could honestly profess to be, a deliverer to a large part of the people of the land. But, coming in by a title which professed to be founded on English law, establish- ing his followers by grants which professed no less to be founded on English law, he planted a dynasty, and estab- lished a dominant order, which could not fail to become English. The Normans in England did not die out ; they were merged in the existing nation. The Normans in Sicily, so far as they did not die out, were merged, not in a Sicilian nation, for that did not exist, but in the common mass of settlers of Latin speech and rite, as dis-

tinguished from the older inhabitants, Greek and Saracen. The Norman conquest of England was at the moment a curse ; the Norman conquest of Sicily was at the moment a blessing. But the gradual and indirect results of the Norman conquest of England are easily to be seen to this day, and they have been largely, though indirectly, results for good. Its chief result has been, not so much to create anything new as at once to modify and to strengthen what was old, to call up older institutions to a new life under other forms. But whatever it has done it has done silently ; there has not been at any time any violent change of one set of institutions for another. In Sicily and southern Italy there is hardly any visible Norman influence, except the great historic fact which we may call the creation of Sicily and southern Italy in their modern sense. The coming of the Norman ruled that these lands should be neither Saracen nor Greek, nor yet Italian in the same sense as northern Italy, but that they should politically belong to the same group of states as the kingdoms and principalities of feudal Europe. William assuredly did not create the kingdom of England ; Roger assuredly did

~~create the kingdom of Sicily. And yet, notwithstanding all this, and partly because of all this, real and distinct Norman influence has been far more extensive and far more abiding in England than it has been in Sicily.~~

~~In Sicily then the circumstances of the conquest led the Norman settlers to remain far more distinct from the older races of the land than they did in England, and in the end to lose themselves, not in those older races of the land, but in the settlers of other races who accompanied and followed them. So far as there ever was a Sicilian nation at all, it might be said to be called into being by the emperor-king Frederick II. In his day a Latin element finally triumphed ; but it was not a Norman or French- speaking element of any kind. The speech of the Lom- bards at last got the better of Greek, Arabic, and French ; how far its ascendency can have been built on any survival of an earlier Latin speech which had lived on alongside of Greek and Arabic this is not the place to inquire.~~

~~The use of language and nomenclature during the time of Norman rule in the two countries forms a remarkable contrast, and illustrates the circumstances of the two as they have just been sketched. The chroniclers of the conquest of Apulia and Sicily use the Norman name in every page as the name of the followers of the conquerors from Hauteville. It was the natural name for a body of men who must, by the time the conquest of Sicily was over, lave been very mixed, but whose kernel was Nor- man, whose strength and feelings and traditions all came froma Norman source. But if we turn to Hugo Falcandus, the historian of Sicily in the 12th century, the Norman name is hardly found, unless when it is used historically to point out (as in Muratori, vii. 260) that the royal house of Sicily was of Norman descent. Of the various " Sicilize populi," we hear of Greeks, Saracens, Lombards, sometimes of Franci, for by that time there were many French- speaking settlers in Sicily who were not of Norman descent. There is a distinction between Christians and Saracens ; among Christians there seems to be again a distinction between Greeks and Latins, though perhaps without any distinct use of the Latin name; there is again a further distinction between "Lombardi" and "Franci" 3 but Nor- mans, as a separate class, do not appear. In England there is no room for such subtleties. The narratives of the con- quest of England use both the Norman and the French names to express the followers of William. In the English~~

~~chronicles “French” is the only name used. It appears also in the Bayeux Tapestry, and it is the only word used when any legal distinction had to be drawn between classes of men in the English kingdom. “Franci” and “ Angli”~~

~~NORG ANS~~

~~are often opposed in Domesday and other documents, and the formula went on in charters long after all real distinction had passed away. That is to say, there were several purposes for which it was convenient to distinguish “English ” and “French ”—the last name taking in all the followers of~~

~~the Conqueror; there were no purposes for which there~~

~~was any need to distinguish Normans as such, either from the general mass of the people or from others who spoke the French tongue. We can see also that, though several languages were in use in England during the time of Nor- man rule, yet England was not a land of many languages in the same sense in which Sicily was. In the 12th cen- tury three languages were certainly spoken in London; yet London could not call itself the “ city of threefold speech,” as Palermo did. English, French, Latin, were all in use in England ; but the distinction was rather that they were used for three different purposes than that they were used by three distinct races or even classes. No doubt there was a class that knew only English ; there may have been a much smaller class that knew only French ; any man who pretended to high cultivation would speak all as a matter of course ; Bishop Gilbert Foliot, for instance, was eloquent in all three. But in Sicily we see the quite different phenomenon of three, four, five classes of men living side by side, each keeping its own nationality and speaking its own tongue. Ifa man of one people knew the speech of any of the others, he knewit strictly as a foreign language. Before the Norman Conquest England had two official tongues ; documents were drawn up sometimes in English, sometimes in Latin, now and then in both. And the same usage went onafter the Conquest; the useof English becomes gradually rarer, and dies out under the first Angevins, but it is in favour of Latin that it dies out. French, the language which the Normans brought with them, did not become an official language in England till after strictly Norman rule had passed away. French documents are unknown till the days of French fashion had come in, that is,~~

~~till deep in the 13th century. So it was in Sicily also; of all the tongues of Sicily French was the most needful in the king's court ("'Francorum lingua que maxime necessaria esset in curia," says Hugo Falcandus, 321); but it was not an official tongue. The three tongues of Palermo are Greek, Arabic, and Latin. King Roger's clock is commemorated in all three. Documents were drawn up in such and so many of these tongues as was convenient for the parties con- cerned ; not a few private documents add a fourth tongue, and are drawn up in Greek, Arabic, Latin, and Hebrew. In neither case is the actual speech of the conquerors one of the tongues in formal use. French, as a separate tongue from Latin, already existed as a literary speech, and no people had done more than the Normans to Spread it as a literary speech, in both prose and verse. But neither in England nor in Sicily did official formalism acknow- ledge even French, much less Italian, as a fit tongue for solemn documents. In England, English, French, Latin, were the three tongues of a single nation ; they were its vulgar, its courtly, and its learned speeches, of which three the courtly was fast giving way to the vulgar. In Sicily, Greek, Arabic, Latin and its children, were the tongues of distinct nations; French might be the politest speech, but neither Greek nor Arabic could be set down asa vulgar tongue, Arabic even less than Greek,~~

~~The different positions then which the conquering Nor- Normans man took in his two great conquests of England and of Sicily in Scot- amply illustrate the way in which. he could adapt limself #4, to any circumstances in which he found himself, the way in which he could adopt whatever suited his purpose in the institutions of any other people, the way in which he commonly lost his national being in that of some other people. From England moreover he spread into Scotland,~~

~~Wales,~~

~~Treland.~~

~~Norman architec- ture in England and in Sicily.~~

~~VORMANS~~

~~Wales, and Ireland, and in each land his settlement put~~

on a somewhat different character, according to the circum- stances of the land. In Scotland he was not a conqueror, but a mere visitor, and oddly enough he came as a visitor along with those whom he had himself overcome in England. Both Normans and English came to Scotland in crowds in the days of Margaret, Edgar, and David, and Scottish national feeling sometimes rose up against them. In Scot- land again the Norman settlers were lost in the mixed nationality of the country, but not till they had modified many things in the same way in which they modified things in England. 'They gave Scotland nobles and even kings ; Bruce and Balliol were both of the truest Norman descent; the true Norman descent of Comyn might be doubted, but he was of the stock of the Francigenz of the Conquest. In Wales the Norman came as a conqueror, more strictly a conqueror than in England ; he could not claim Welsh crowns or Welsh estates under any fiction of Welsh law. The Norman settler in Wales therefore did not to any perceptible extent become a Welshman ; the existing relations of England and Wales were such that he in the end became an Englishman, but he seems not un- naturally to have been somewhat slower in so doing in Wales than he was in England. At least Giraldus Cam- brensis, the Norman Welshman or Welsh Norman, was certainly more alive to the distinction between Normans and English than any other of his contemporaries. In Ireland the Norman was more purely a conqueror than anywhere else; but in Ireland his power of adaptation caused him to sink in a way in which he sank nowhere else. While some of the Norman settlers in Ireland went to swell the mass of the English of the Pale, others threw in their lot with the native Irish, and became, in the well-known saying, Hibernis ipsis Hibermores.

There is yet one point in which we may profitably go back to our comparison between England and Sicily. Both countries are rich in works of architecture raised during the time of Norman rule. And the buildings of both lands throw an instructive light on the Norman national character, as we have described it. Few buildings, at least few buildings raised in any reasonable style of architecture which makes use of the arched construction, can be less like one another than the buildings of the Nor- man kings in England and the buildings of the Norman kings in Sicily. In Sicily the Normans found the two most outwardly civilized of the nations of Europe, the two which had as yet carried the arts to the highest pitch. The Greek had

created the column ; the Roman had developed it; the Roman Greek or Greek Roman had taught the column to bear the cupola; the Saracen had taught it to bear arches of his own favourite pointed shape. Out of these elements the Saracens of Sicily had formed a noble and beautiful style, grand and simple in its construction, rich and graceful in its characteristic detail. With the Saracen and the Greek to his subjects, the Norman had really no need to innovate; he had simply to bid the men of the land to go on working for him instead of for any other. The palaces and churches of the Norman kings at Palermo and Monreale and Cefalu and Messina are in style simply Saracenic; they were most likely the work of Saracen builders; they were beyond doubt built after Saracenic models. In these buildings, as in those of Aquitaine, the pointed arch is the surest sign of Saracenic influence ; it must never be looked on as marking the approach of the Gothic of the North. With that form of art the pointed style of Sicily has nothing in common. A Sicilian church has nothing in common with a French or an English church ; it is sometimes purely Oriental, sometimes a basilica with pointed arches. But, if the Saracen gave the lines of the building, the Greek gave the mosaic decorations of its

dol

walls. In such a case the ruling people, rather the ruling dynasty, had really nothing to add to what they found ready for them. 'They had simply to make Saracen and Greek work in partnership. In England, on the other hand, the Normans did really bring in a new style of their own, their own form of Romanesque, differing widely in- deed from the Saracenic style of Sicily. This Norman form of Romanesque most likely had its origin in the Lombard buildings of northern Italy. But it took firm root on Norman soil; it made its way to England at an early stage of its growth, and from that time it went on developing and improving on both sides of the Channel till the artistic revolution came by which, throughout northern Europe, the Romanesque styles gave way to the Gothic. Thus the history of architecture in England dur- ing the 11th and 12th centuries is a very different story from the history of the art in Sicily during the same time. There were no Greeks or Saracens in England ; there was no Greek or Saracen skill. England indeed had, possibly in a somewhat ruder form, the earlier style of Romanesque once common to England with Italy, Gaul, and Germany. To

~~this style it is no wonder that the Normans preferred their own, and that style therefore supplanted the older one. A comparison of Norman buildings in England and in Normandy will show that the Norman style in England really was affected by the earlier style of England ; but the modification was very slight, and it in no way affected the general character of the style. Thus, while the institutions of England in the 12th century were English with very con- siderable Norman modifications, the architecture of England in that century was Norman with a very slight English modi- fication. The difference then is plain. Where, as in Sicily, the Normans felt that they could not improve, they simply adopted the style of the country. Where, as in England, they felt that they could improve, they substituted for the style of the country their own style,—that is, a style which they had not created but which they had adopted, which they had made thoroughly their own, and which they went on improving in England no less than in Normandy. That is, the discerning Norman, as ever, adapted himself, but adapted himself in an intelligent way, to the circumstances of each land in which he found himself. And this comes out the more clearly if we compare Norman work in England and in Sicily with Norman work in at least some parts of Apulia. At Bari, Trani, and Bitonto we see a style in which Italian and strictly Norman elements are really mingled. The great churches of those cities are wholly unlike those of Sicily ; but, while some features show us that we are in Italy, while some features even savour of the Saracen, others distinctly carry us away to Caen and Peterborough. It is plain that the Norman settlers in Apulia were not so deeply impressed with the local style as they were in Sicily, while they thought much more of it than they thought of the local style of England. In each of the three cases there is adaptation, but the amount of adapta- tion differs in each case according to local circumstances. In Normandy itself, after the separation from England, architecture becomes French, but it is French of a remark- ably good type. 'The buildings of the latest French style keep a certain purity and sobriety in Normandy which they do not keep elsewhere.~~

~~Of all the points here insisted on that which it is most necessary to bear in mind is the Norman power of adapta- tion to circumstances, the gift which in the end destroyed the race as a separate race. English history is utterly misconceived if it is thought that an acknowledged dis- tinction between Normans and English went on, perhaps into the 14th century, perhaps into~~

the 17th. Long before the earlier of those dates the Norman in England had done his work ; he had unwittingly done much to preserve and

strengthen the national life of a really kindred people, and, that work done, he had lost himself in the greater mass of that kindred people. In Sicily his work, far more brilliant, far more beneficent at the time, could not be so lasting. The Norman princes made Sicily a kingdom; they ruled it for a season better than any other kingdom was ruled ; but they could not make it a Norman kingdom, nor could they themselves become national Sicilian kings. The king- dom that they founded has now vanished from among the kingdoms of the earth, because it was only a kingdom and not anation. In every other way the Norman has vanished from Sicily as though he had never been. His very works of building are hardly witnesses to his presence, because, without external evidence, we should never have taken them to be‘his. In Sicily, in short, he gave a few genera- tions of unusual peace and prosperity to several nations living side by side, and then he, so to speak, went his way from a land in which he had a work to do, but in which he never was really at home. In England he made himself, though by rougher means, more truly at home among unac- knowledged kinsmen. When in outward show he seemed to work the unmaking of a nation he was in truth giving no small help towards its second making. (ear. NORMANTON, a township in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on the Calder river, and on several railway lines, 3 miles (by rail) north-east of Wakefield and 24 south-south-west of York. The church of All Saints, an ancient stone structure in the Norman and Perpen- dicular styles, with a square tower rebuilt in 1717, contains a number of interesting monuments. The grammar school was founded about the end of the 16th century. Traces still remain of a moat surrounding the town and connected with a Roman encampment which at one time occupied its site. A mound in the neighbourhood called Haw Hill is supposed to be a barrow. There are numerous collieries in the neighbourhood. The population of the urban sani- tary district (1227 acres) in 1871 was 3448, and in 1881 it was 8038. The parish of Normanton (2517 acres) in- cludes three townships,—Normanton, Snydale, and New- land. Altofts (1698 acres), where Sir Martin Frobisher resided, was made into a separate parish in 1879. NORRIS, Joun (1657-1711), the disciple of Plato

~~and Malebranche, was born in 1657 at Collingbourne-Kingston in Wiltshire, where his father was then incumbent. He was educated at Winchester School, and entered at Exeter College, Oxford, in 1676. In 1680 he took his degree and was elected to a fellowship at All Souls' College. He first made himself known in the university, Anthony Wood tells us, by a translation of Robert Waryng's philosophi- cal poem, Hffigies Amoris, entitled The Picture of Love Unveiled. This appeared in 1682, and was followed in 1683 by his first original work, An Idea of Happiness. With Plato, he places the highest happiness or fruition of the soul in the contemplative love of God—" that primitive and original Beauty, Perfection, and Harmony." Norris's poems, mostly composed about this time, are, in the main, expressions of his habitual mood of devout but somewhat abstract contemplation. They have little poetic richness, but their grave style is often not without impressiveness, and works itself out at intervals into a felicitous stanza or a memorable line.~~

~~tractate aimed at the Calvinistic dissenters. All through his life his intense intellectual activity seemed to make it almost a necessity for him to mingle in whatever contro- versy was going on. But philosophy and philosophical theology formed his central interest. Malebranche's Recherche de la Vérité, which had appeared in 1674, made an easy conquest of the Oxford fellow, to whom its doc- trine appeared no@ more than the consistent and clarified modern expression of that Platonized Christianity which met him alike in St John, in Plotinus, and in Augustine, the father whom he "loved to speak after." Perhaps it would be more correct to say that Norris reads his favourite authors in the light of the theory derived from Malebranche. It is at least doubtful whether he would have reached any definiteness of philosophic theory for himself without thc aid of the French thinker. He makes no secret of his discipleship. Malebranche, he says, "is indeed the great Galileo of the intellectual world. He has given us the point of view, and, whatever further detections are made, it must be through his telescope." Norris's readings in modern philosophy were not confined, however, to Male- branche ; he had studied the works of Descartes himself, and most of what had been written for and against Cartesianism on the Continent. Of English thinkers, More and Cudworth, the so-called~~

Cambridge Platonists, had influenced him most ; and in 1685 his study of their works had ripened into a correspondence with the former. After More's death Norris published the correspondence between them as an appendix to his Platonically conceived essay on The Theory and Regulation of Love (1688).

Some time before this Norris had taken orders, and in 1689, on being presented to the living of Newton St Loe, in Somersetshire, he married, and resigned his fellowship. In the same year he published Reason and Religion, the first of his riper works. The Reflections upon the Conduct of Human Life, which he wrote (also in 1689) "by way of letter to an excellent lady, the Lady Masham," did not advance his interests in that quarter ; for the lady, whose eyes were only weak, was nettled at being set down in the preface as blind. In 1690 Norris published a volume of | Discourses upon the Beatitudes, which proved decidedly popular, and induced the author to follow it up by three more volumes of Practical Discourses between 1690 and 1698. The year 1690 is memorable as the year of the publication of Locke's Hssay, and the book came into Norris's hands just as his volume of Discourses was passing through the press. He at once appreciated its importance, but its whole temper was alien from the modes of thought in which he had been reared, and its main conclusions moved him to keen dissent. He hastened to 'review " it in an appendix to his sermons. These Cursory Reflections constitute Norris the first critic of the Hssay; and they anticipate some of the arguments that have since been persistently urged against Locke from the transcendental side. Though holding to the "grey-headed, venerable doctrine" of innate ideas as little as Locke himself, Norris finds the criticism in the first book of the Lssay entirely inconclusive, and points out its inconsistency with Locke's own doctrine of evident or intuitively perceived truths. He also suggests the possibility of subconscious ideation, on which Leibnitz laid so much stress in the same con- nexion. He next complains that Locke neglects to tell us "what kind of things these ideas are which are let in at the gate of the senses." In other words, while giving a metaphorical account of how we come by our ideas, Locke leaves unconsidered the intellectual nature of the ideas or of thought in itself. Unless we come to some conclu- sion on this point, Norris argues, we have little chance of being right in our theory of how ideas 'come to be united to our mind." He also puts his finger upon the weakness

of Locke's doctrine of nominal essences, showing how it ignores the relation of the human mind to objective truth, and instancing mathematical figures as a case " where the nominal essence and the real essence are all one."

In 1691 Norris was transferred to Bemerton, a pleasant rural charge near Salisbury, where George Herbert had been parish priest in the earlier part of the century. A few miles distant is Langford Magna, where from 1704 onwards Norris had a congenial metaphysical neighbour in the person of Arthur Collier, the future author of Clavis Universalis. The remaining twenty years of Norris's life

were spent at Bemerton, the flight of time marked only by — the works that still came in rapid succession from his pen. In 1691-92 he was engaged in controversy with his old enemies the "Separatists," and with the Quakers, his Malebranchian theory of the divine illumination having been confounded by some with the Quaker doctrine of the light within. In 1697 he wrote An Account of Reason and Faith, one of the best of the many answers to Toland's Christianity not Mysterious. Norris adopts the distinction between things contrary to reason and things above reason, and maintains that the human mind is not the measure of truth. In 1701 appeared the first volume of the systematic philosophical work by which he is remembered, An Essay towards the Theory of the Ideal or Intelligible World. The first volume treats the intelligible world absolutely ; the second, which appeared in 1704, considers it in relation to human understanding. In 1708 Norris wrote A Phalo- sophical Discourse concerning the Natural Immortality of the Soul, defending that doctrine against the assaults of Dodwell. But after the completion of his magnum opus his appearances in print became less frequent. His health was not robust, and perhaps he was a little disappointed at his failure to reach the larger public. Norris died in 1711 at the comparatively early age of 54.

It will hardly be claimed for Norris that he was either an original thinker or a master of style. As Molyneux writes to Locke, he is "overrun with Malebranche and Plato ;" his philosophy is hardly more than an English version of Malebranche, enriched by wide reading of " Platonic" thinkers

~~of every age and country. His style is too scholastic and self-involved. Nevertheless he was an acute and strenuous thinker. His Theory of the Intelligible World isan attempt to explain the objective nature of truth, which he blamed Locke for leaving out of regard. By the intelligible world Norris understands the system of ideas eternally existent in the mind of God, according to which the material creation was formed. This ideal system he identifies with the Logos—the second person of the Trinity, the light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world. For it is these ideas and their relations that are alone the object-matter of science ; whenever we know, it is because they are present to our mind ; or, as Malebranche says, we see all things in God. Matcrial things are wholly dark to us, except so far as the fact of their existence is revealed in sensation. The matter which we say that we know is the idea of matter, and belongs, like other ideas, to the intelligible world. When stripped of its semi-mythical form of statement, Norris's emphatic assertion of the ideal nature of thought and its complcte distinction from sense as such may be seen to contain an important truth. He stands some- what aside from the main course of English philosophical thought. But, as the disciple and correspondent of More, he is, ina sense, the heir of the Cambridge Platonists, while, as the first critic of Locke's Essay, he may be said to open the protest of the church against the implicit tendencies of that work. He occupies a place, there- fore, in the succession of churchly and mystical thinkers of whom Coleridge is the last eminent example. (A. SE.)~~

~~NORRISTOWN, a borough of the United States, capi- tal of Montgomery county, Pennsylvania, lies on the north bank of the Schuylkill river, opposite Bridgeport (with which it is connected by two bridges), and 16 miles north- west of Philadelphia by the Germantown and Norristown branch of the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad. It is a well-built and pleasant town, and contains blast-furnaces and rolling-mills, wool and cotton mills, glass-works, an oil refinery, and various other manufacturing establishments, considerably indebted for their success to the water-power~~

~~D593~~

~~of the Schuylkill river. The hospital for the insane of the south-eastern district of Pennsylvania is situated here. The most conspicuous buildings~~

are the marble county court- house (1855), the music-hall, and the jail. The population was 6024 in 1850, 8848 in 1860, 10,753 in 1870, and 13,063 in 1880. The town occupies the site of the old Swedes' Ford, and owes its name to Isaac Norris, who purchased the ground from William Penn. It was incor- porated as a borough in 1812, and enlarged in 1853.

NORRKOPING, the " Manchester of Scandinavia," a town of Sweden in the province of Ostergotland, 113 miles south-west of Stockholm by rail, situated on both banks of the Motala, the wide and rapid emissary of Lake Wetter, and not far from the head of Bravik Fjord. The river, which here forms the two islands of Laksholm and Brux- holm, is spanned by a number of bridges. Having been burned by the Russians in 1719 and visited by further con- flagrations in 1812, 1822, and 1826, the whole town, since rebuilt, has quite a modern appearance, with wide and regu- lar streets. Among the more conspicuous buildings are St Olaf's church (erected by Gustavus Adolphus in 1616, and rebuilt after 1765-67) ; St Hedwig's, built by the German colony in 1670 ; the town-house, dating froni the beginning of the 19th century; the theatre, the Gustavus orphanage, and the palatial high school (1868). The industrial im- portance of Norrköping has steadily increased from the close of the 18th century Woollen cloth is the great staple (thirty-three factories in 1876), but cotton goods, paper, sugar, flour, tobacco and snuff, soap, starch, &c., are also manufactured. Steamers, gun-boats, and ironclads, as well as smaller craft, are constructed in the ship-yards on the lower Motala. At the close of the 17th century Norr- köping was a place of from 5000 to 6000 inhabitants ; after the Russian invasion it sank to 2600, but afterwards gradually rose, until in 1861 the total amounted to 20,828, and in 1878 to 27,410.

A bull of Pope Lucius III. shows that Norrköping existed in 1185. Margaret held a meeting of the states in the town in 1404. Its fortress, known as Knippingsberg, was destroyed in 1567. At the meeting of the states in 1604 Duke Charles assumed the Swed- ish crown, as Charles IX.; and not long afterwards Duke John of Ostergétland introduced German craftsmen into Norrköping, and thus originated its industrial activity. Under Charles XII. the town suffered not only from war but from pestilence, —2700 of its inhabitants perishing in 1710-11.

NORTH, Lorp (1732-1792). Frederick North, second earl of Guilford, but better known by his courtesy title of Lord North, was prime minister of England during the important years of the American War. The only son, by his first marriage, of Francis, seventh Lord North (grandson of Lord Keeper North), who was created earl of Guilford in 1752, Frederick was born on 13th April 1732, and after being educated at Eton and Christ Church, Oxford, was sent to make the grand tour of the Continent. On his return he was, though only twenty- two years of age, at once elected M.P. for Banbury, of which town his father was high steward; and he sat for the same town in parliament for nearly forty years. In 1759 he was chosen by the duke of Newcastle to be a lord of the treasury, and continued in the same office under Lord Bute and George Grenville till 1765. He had shown himself such a ready debater that on the fall of the first Rockingham ministry in 1766 he was sworn of the privy council, and made paymaster-general by the duke of Grafton. His reputation for ability grew so high that in December 1767, on the death of the brilliant Charles Townshend, he was made chancellor of the exchequer. His popularity with both the House of Commons and the people continued to increase, for his good temper was never ruffled, and his quiet humour perpetually displayed; and, when the retirement of the

duke of Grafton was necessitated by the hatred he inspired and the attacks of Junius, no better successor could be found for the premiership than the chancellor of the exchequer. Lord North succeeded the duke in March 1770, and continued in office for twelve of the most event- ful years in English history. George III. had at last overthrown the ascendency of the great Whig families, under which he had so long groaned, and determined to govern as well as rule. govern by obtaining a majority in parliament to carry out his wishes, and this he had at last obtained by a great expenditure of money in buying seats, and by a careful exercise of his patronage. But in addition to a majority he must have a minister who would consent to act as his licutenant, and such a minister he found in Lord North. How a man of undoubted ability such as Lord North was

could allow himself to be thus used as a mere instrument cannot be explained; but the confidential tone of the king's letters seems to show that there was an unusual intimacy between them, which may account for North's compliance. The path of the minister in parliament was

a hard one ; he had to-defend measures which he had not

designed, and of which he had not approved, and this too in a House of Commons in which all the oratorica] ability

of Burke and Fox was against him, and when he had only the purchased help of Thurlow and Wedderburne to aid him. The most important events of his ministry were

those of the American War of Independence. He cannot

be accused of causing it, but one of his first acts was the

retention of the tea-duty, and he it was also who intro-

duced the Boston Port Bill in 1774. When the war had broken out he earnestly counselled peace, and it was only the earnest solicitations of the king not to leave his sove- reign again at the mercy of the Whigs that induced him to defend a war which from 1779 he knew to be both hope-less and impolitic. At last, in March 17 82, he insisted on resigning after the news of Cornwallis's surrender at York- town, and no man left office more blithely. He had been well rewarded for his assistance to the king: his children had good sinecures; his half -brother, Brownlow North, was bishop of Winchester; he himself was charicellor of the university of Oxford, lord-lieutenant of the county of Somerset, and had finally been made a knight of the Garter, an honour which has only been conferred on three other members of the House of Commons, Sir R. Walpole, Lord Castlereagh, and Lord Palmerston, Lord North did not remain long out of office, but in April 1783 formed his famous coalition with his old subordinate, Fox, and became secretary of state with him under the nominal premiership of the duke of Portland, He was probably urged to this coalition with his old opponent by a desire to show that he could act independently of the king, and was not a mere royal mouthpiece. The coalition minis- try went out of

~~office on Fox's India Bill in December 17 83, and Lord North, who was losing his sight, then finally gave up political ambition. He played, when quite blind, a somewhat important part in the debates on the Regency Bill in 1789, and in the next year succeeded his father as earl of Guilford. He did not long survive his elevation, and died peacefully on 5th August 1792:~~

~~It is impossible to consider Lord North a great statesman, but he was a most good-tempered and humorous member of the House of Commons. In a time of unexampled party feeling he won the esteem and almost the love of his most bitter opponents. Burke finely sums up his character in his Letter to a Noble Lord: 'He was @ man of admirable parts, of gencral knowledge, of a versatile understanding, fitted for every sort of business ; of infinite wit and pleasantry, of a delightful temper, and with a mind most dis- interested. But it would be only to degrade myself," he continues, ""by a weak adulation, and not to honour the memory of a great~~

~~man, to deny that he wanted something of the vigilance and spirit of command which the times required,"~~

~~He knew that he could only~~

~~NOR T~~

~~For Lord North's administration, by far the best authority is The Correspond- ence of George III. with Lord North, edited by W. Bodhain Downe, 2 vols., 1867. The histories of the period may also be consulted, particularly Lord Mahon's History of England from 1713 to 1788, Sir T. B. May's Constitutional History of England from the reign of George III., and Lord Brougham's admirable sketch in his Statesmen of the Reign of George FII.~~

~~NORTH, Str Duptey (1641-1691), political economist, was third son of Dudley, fourth Lord N orth, who pub- lished, besides other things, Passages relating to the Long Parliament, of which he had himself been a member. He was born 16th May 1641. In his early years he was carried off by Gipsies antl recovered with some difficulty by his family,—an incident curiously similar to that which befell Adam Smith in his infancy. He entered the mer- cantile profession, engaged in foreign trade, especially~~

with Turkey, and spent a number of years at Constan- tinople and Smyrna. Some notices of the manners and customs of the East were printed from his papers by his brother. Having returned to London with a consider- able fortune, he continued to prosecute trade with the Levant. His ability and knowledge of commerce attracted the attention of the Government, and he was further recommended by the influence of his brother Lord Guil- ford. During the Tory reaction under Charles IT. he was a pliant instrument in the hands of the court, and was one of the sheriffs forced on the city of London with an express view to securing verdicts for the crown in the state trials of the period. He obtained the honour of knighthood, and was appointed a commissioner of customs, afterwards of the treasury, and again of the customs. Having been elected a member of parliament under James IL, "he took," says Roger North, "the place of manager for the crown in all matters of revenue." After the Re- volution he was called to account for his alleged uncon- stitutional proceedings in his office of 'sheriff, and did not show much highmindedness in his defence. He died 31st December 1691.

The work by which he has obtained an honourable place in the history of political economy is his Discourses upon Trade, principally directed to the cases of the interest, coin- age, clipping and increase of money. This tract was pub- lished anonymously in 1691. It is supposed that for some unknown reason it was suppressed soon after its appearance ; however this may be, it became very scarce, so that, in his brother's words, "it hath been ever since utterly sunk, and a copy not to be had for money." It does not seem to have been much noticed on its publication, or used by subse- quent writers. A copy was purchased at the sale of the Rev. Rogers Ruding, author of a work on the coinage, and from this a gentleman of Edinburgh printed some copies for distribution. Other copies of the original impression were afterwards discovered, and from them J. R. M'Culloch edited the tract in the Select Collection of Early English Lracts on Commerce printed by the Political Economy Club of London in 1856. North is named by Roscher as one of that "great triumvirate" which in the 17th century raised the English school of economists to the foremost place in Europe, the other members of the group being Locke and Petty. His tract, Roscher further remarks, reads like a chapter of the Wealth of Nations, It does, indeed, in a very remarkable manner anticipate the doc- trines of Adam Smith and the later free-trade school. Its author was quite free from the errors and prejudices of

the mercantilism which was dominant in his day, and which had misled on some subjects even so able a writer as Child, against whom, though without naming him, North's arguments on the legal limitation of the rate of interest appear to be in part directed. At the end of the preface to the Discourses are brought together a number of propo- sitions, embodying the author's views, which he announces as "paradoxes, no less strange to most men than true in themselves." They are so remarkable for the time at

NOR—NOR

included in Adams township, was 10,191 in 1880. About a mile to the east of the village the Hudson's Brook is arched over for a considerable distance by a romantic cave from 30 to 60 feet in height. spent the summer of 1838 at North Adams, gives a fine description of the spot.

which they appeared, more than eighty years before Smith's eat work, that they deserve to be quoted in full.

"That the whole world as to trade is but as one nation or people, and therein nations are as persons. That the loss of a trade with one nation is not that only, separately considered, but so much of the trade of the world rescinded and lost, for all is eombined together. That there can be no trade unprofitable to the public, for, if any prove so, men leave it off; and wherever the traders thrive, the publie, of which they are a part, thrive also. That to foree men to deal in any preseribed manner may profit such as happen to serve them ; but the public gains not, beeause it is taking from one sub- ject to give to another. That no laws ean set prices in trade, the vates of which must and will make themselves ; but, when sueh laws do happen to lay any hold, it is so much impediment to trade, and therefore prejudicial. That money is a merehandise, whereof there may be a glut as well as a scarcity, and that even to an inconvenience. 'That a people cannot want money to serve the ordinary dealing, and more than enough they will not have. That no man shall be the richer for the making much money, nor have any part of it, but as he buys it for an equivalent price. That the free coinage is a perpetual motion found out whereby to melt and coin without ceasing, and so to feed goldsmiths and coiners at the public charge. That debasing the coin is defrauding one another, and to the public there is no sort of advantage from it, for that admits no character, or value, but

~~intrinsic. That the sinking money by alloy or weight is all one. That exchange and ready money are the same, nothing but carriage and re-carriage being saved, 'That money exported in trade is an increase to the wealth of the nation, but spent in war and payments abroad is so much impoverishment.. In short, that all favour to one trade or interest against another is an abuse, and cuts so much of profit from the public." The tract closes with these weighty words: 'No people ever yet grew rich by policies ; but it is peace, industry, and free- dom that bring trade and wealth, and nothing else."~~

~~NORTH, Rocer (1650-1733), in writing his Bxamen of Kennet's History of England, and the "Lives" of his brothers, Lord Keeper Guilford, Sir Dudley North, and John, master of Trinity College, Cambridge, became one of the original authorities for the political and social his- tory of the reigns of Charles II. and James II. Hewasa weak man, a humble worshipper of his elder brothers, and especially of the lord keeper, by whose politic energy the family of North had been raised from a very decayed condition ; but the simplicity of his prejudices and the laborious minuteness of his details, notwithstanding the forensic pedantry of his style, give his writings some value. Whatever his great brother did he thought both right and noteworthy ; hence he is a useful contributor to the moral history of the period.~~

~~NORTH, Siz Tuomas, son of Edward North, first Baron North of Kirtling, is memorable as the author of the English version of Plutarch's Lives that supplied Shake- speare with materials for his classical plays. Materials for a biographical notice are extremely scanty ; and neither the exact date of his birth nor that of his death is known. His literary career was long, for he was living in decayed old age in 1603 when a third edition of his Plutarch was published, with a supplement of other translated biogra- phies. His first appearance in literature was in 1557, when Wayland published for him a translation of Guevara's Diall of Princes, a compendium of moral counsels pleasantly interwoven with incidents in the life of Marcus Aurelius. The English of this work is one of the earliest specimens of the more ornate, copious, and pointed style for which educated young Englishmen had acquired a taste in their Continental travels and studies, and which such fashion- able tutors as Ascham and Wilson inculeated by both pre- cept and~~

example. North translated from a French copy of Guevara. ‘The first edition of his Plutarch, translated from the French of Amyot, appeared in 1579.

NORTH ADAMS, a township, manufacturing village, and important railway junction of the United States in Berkshire county, Massachusetts, on the Hoosac river, 143 miles from Boston by the Troy and Boston Railroad. Cotton and wool-weaving and shoemaking are the leading industries. The population of the township, formerly

555

Nathaniel Hawthorne, who

NORTHALLERTON, a market town and parliamentary

borough in the North Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on a small stream, the Sun Beck, a tributary of the Wiske,

and on the North-Eastern Railway, about 40 miles north of Leeds and 17 north of Ripon. It consists principally of a long and wide street running north and south. The church of All Saints is a large cruciform structure in the Early English and Perpendicular styles, with a square tower 80 feet in height rising from the centre. There is a grammar school of royal foundation. Among the chari- ties are a hospital founded in 1476 by Richard Moore and a cottage hospital opened in 1877. A town-hall was erected in 1874. There are no traces of the fortified palace of the bishops of Durham, of the White Friars monastery founded in 1354, or of the Austin priory founded in 1341. The town possesses a manufactory of brattice cloth. The population of the parliamentary borough in 1871 (10,381 acres) was 4961, and in 1881 it was 5445. The popula- tion of the urban sanitary district (3650 acres) in the same years was 3164 and 3692 respectively.

Northallerton is supposed to have been a Roman station and subsequently a Saxon burgh. In Domesday it is called Alvertune and Alreton. The prefix “ North ” was added to distinguish it from Allerton Mauleverer. Near it took place (22d August 1138) the Battle of the Standard, wen the Scots under King David were defeated by the English with a loss of 12,000 men. The town was given by William Rufus to the bishops of Durham. The demoli-

tion of their palace was ordered by Henry II. In 1818 the Scots under Robert Bruce plundered the town. It was occupied by Charles I. during the Civil War, and in 1745 the English army encamped on Castlehill above it.

NORTHAMPTON, an inland county of England, is Plate bounded N. by Lincoln, N.W. by Rutland and Leicester, XVH. W. by Warwick, 8.W. and 8. by Oxford, S.E. by Bucking- ham, and E. by Bedford, Huntingdon, and Cambridge. It has an area of 629,912 acres, or about 952 square miles. Its greatest length from north-east to south-west is about 70 miles; in breadth it varies from 7 to 26 miles. The surface is hilly and undulating, but the hills are for the most part small and rounded and the undulations monotonous, notwithstanding that the country is richly cultivated and in some parts finely wooded. The highest summits are Albury (804 feet) and Naseby (697 feet). In the western and south-western districts the scenery be- comes almost picturesque, and in the centre and east, where greater monotony prevails, numerous fine trees add a pleas- ing aspect of richness. For a long period Northampton has been famed for its ash trees, and there are also some very old oaks, as well as a few fine avenues of elm. The north-eastern extremity belongs to the great fen district. The county forms the principal watershed of central Eng- land, nearly all the more important rivers of this region having their sources within its boundaries. The Avon with a westward course forms for some distance the northern boundary of the county, till near Lilbourne it passes in- to Warwickshire. The Nene passes southward through Northampton, whence it takes an easterly course, skirting the eastern boundary of the county. The Welland flows in an easterly direction, forming the boundary of the county with Leicester, Rutland, and Lincoln, The Cherwell, after passing into Oxfordshire, forms for a considerable distance the southernmost portion of the western boundary with that county ; the Leam forms a portion of the boundary with Warwickshire. The Ouse, which rises near Brackley, soon afterwards leaves the county, but again touches it near Stony Stratford, separating it for some distance

from Buckingham. The Grand Junction Canal, which is connected with the Oxford Canal, enters the county at Braunston on the borders of Warwickshire and passes by Daventry and Blisworth into Buckinghamshire,

a branch connecting it with Northampton. The Grand Union Canal unites with the Grand Junction near Daventry and runs north until it joins the Leicester Canal at Foxton, branches passing to Welford and Market Harborough.

Geology.—Lias forms the foundation of N orthampton-

shire, and above it rest the Oolite formations which crop to the surface throughout the greater part of the county. Lias prevails as the surface formation in the west and north-west. Its total thickness is about 800 feet, the Lower Lias clays which stretch in from Warwickshire having a thickness of 500 to 600 feet, the Middle Lias or marlstone of about 30 feet, and the Upper Lias clays, which form numerous outliers scattered over the marl-

stone plateau and also appear along the beds of several of

the streams, a thickness of from 150 to 200 feet. Imme- diately above the lias come the inferior Oolite beds of Northamptonshire sand, which reach their greatest thick- ness in the neighbourhood of Northampton. The sandstone is strongly impregnated with oxide of iron, supposed to have been deposited by the percolations of water through the stone. Brown hematite iron is also found at Adding- ton. The iron of Northamptonshire was made use of by the Romans, but the rise of the modern industry dates from about 1850. In 1881 iron was worked at thirty different places in the county, the total quantity obtained being 1,270,544 tons with an estimated value of £176,427. About one-fourth is smelted in the district, but the greater quantity is sent raw to Merthyr-Tydfil and Staffordshire. East and north-east of the county sandstone is largely quarried for building purposes, and is both easily worked and richly coloured. It is highly fossiliferous, containing many species not known in other districts. The upper division consists of a nearly white silicious sandstone frequently intercalated with clay. Above the sandstone rest beds of Lincolnshire limestone, and, where it is absent, a sandy clay. The slopes of the hills are frequently capped with cornbrash, sometimes overlaid with Oxford clay. Various isolated portions are covered with drift deposits. Where sandstone and limestone join the clay numerous springs occur, the proximity to which has in many cases determined the sites of villages and towns,

Sot and Agriculture.—The climate of N orthamptonshire is mild and genial, while the absence of lofty hills renders it much drier than many other inland districts. The prevailing soil is a rich brown but light and crumbling mould, sometimes with a rocky subsoil. The richest soil is the black mould of the fen district, which is specially suited for grass, as are all the heavier soils, N early all the land is capable of cultivation, although there is some stiff wet soil on the slopes of the hills. In 1883 there were 559,536 acres, or about 88 per cent. of the total area under culti- vation, of which no fewer than 304,654 acres were under permanent pasture, many of the heavier soils having been laid down during the past few years. Leases are the exception, and on this account grass land is more'in re- quest than arable. The farms in general are not large. Isolated houses are rare, both farmers and labourers living for the most part in villages. The farm buildings are thus frequently inconveniently situated as well as badly con- structed, although improvements in both respects are being introduced. The usual rotation of crops is fallow, wheat, beans, and oats on heavy soils; but on the lighter soils wheat, pease or barley, with clover and roots, on a four or five years' rotation is the system generally adopted. Fre- quently the land is left three years in grass. Of the 158,445 acres under corn crops in 1883, 59,613 were under

wheat, 50,866 under barley or bere, 24,914 under oats, 16,770 beans, and 6121 pease. Green crops occupied only 38,143 acres, 23,923 of these being under turnips and swedes, 4894 under mangolds, and only 2520 under pota- toes. Clover occupied 34,137 acres, and fallow 24,157. Horses in 1883 numbered 21,901, of which 16,209 were used solely for agricultural purposes. Cattle numbered 117,790, of which 26,036 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf, the fattening of cattle being the chief occupa- tion of the Northamptonshire farmer. The favourite stock for breeding purjoses is the shorthorn, which has now almost entirely superseded the longhorn ; but the most common custom is to buy in Hereford, Scotch, Welsh, and Irish cattle in the spring and fatten them off the rich pasture with or without artificial food, a few being retained and fed up for the Christmas market. In autumn addi- tional cattle are bought in to eat the coarse grass off the pastures, and these are usually retained during winter. Sheep in 1883 numbered 413,075, of which 255,737 were one year old and above. The most common breed on the rich pastures is the improved Leicester, which is preferred on account of

~~its length of wool; but the Southdown, on account of its superior flesh, is also largely kept.~~

~~According to the latest returns the land was divided among 14,665 proprietors, possessing 592,771 acres, with a gross estimated rental of £1,637,370, an average of about £2 15s. 3d per acre. Of the owners 10,010, or about 79 per cent., possessed less than one acre each ; 83 proprietors possessed between 2000 and 5000 acres, 11 between 5000 and 10,000, and the following over 10,000 each :— Hon. G. W. Fitzwilliam, 18,116 ; duke of Buccleuch, 17,965; Earl Spencer, 17,031; Lord Overstone, 15,046; and the marquis of Exeter, 13,546.~~

~~Manufactures.—The. iron industry is of great importance, and, though only a small proportion of the metal is smelted in the county, the number of furnaces in blast is increasing. The staple and the only manufacture of importance is that of boots and shoes, which is chiefly carried on in Northampton and the towns and villages in the centre of the county and alone the eastern border.~~

~~Railways.—The main lines of the London and North-Western, the Great Northern, and the Midland Railways pass through portions of the county, and branch lines traverse it in all directions.~~

~~Administration and Population.—In Domesday Northampton is mentioned as containing 30 hundreds, but it then included a considerable part of Rutlandshire. These divisions were first re- duced to 28, and in the reign of Henry II. to 20, their present number. The county includes the municipal boroughs of Daventry (3859) and Northampton (51,881); the principal part (20,128) of the city of Peterborough, which was incorporated under the Muni- cipal Act in 1874 ; part (1171) of the borough of Stamford, of which the greater part is in Lincolnshire ; part (2412) of the borough of Banbury, the greater part of which is in Oxfordshire ; the borough of Higham-Ferrcrs (1468); and the urban sanitary districts of Hard- ingstone (4866), Kettering (11,095), Oundle (11,196), and Welling. borough (13,794). Before the Reform Act of 1832 Northampton- shire sent nine members to parliament, two for the shire, two each for the city of Peterborough and the boroughs of Northampton and Brackley, and one for the borough of Higham-Ferrers. By that Act the number was fixed at eight, Brackley and Higham- Ferrers being~~

disfranchised, while the county was formed into two divisions, a northern and a southern, each returning two members. There are two courts of quarter-sessions, one for the county and the other for the liberty or soke of Peterborough, and nine petty and special sessional divisions, exclusive of the liberty of Peterborough. The boroughs of Northampton and Stamford have commissions of the peace and separate courts of quarter-sessions. The boroughs of Daventry and Higham-Ferrers form parts of the petty and special sessional divisions of Daventry and Wellingborough, the county justices having concurrent jurisdiction. The county contains 344 civil parishes, with parts of four others. It is almost entirely in the diocese of Peterborough. The population of Northamptonshire in 1801 was 181,757, which in 1821 had increased to 162,483, in 1871 to 248,891, and in 1881 to 272,555 (185,662 males and 186,893 females), The number of inhabited houses in 1881 was 57,540, and the average number of persons to.an acre 0°48.

History and Antiquities. —The Coritani, who at the time of the Roman invasion inhabited N orthamptonshire, are supposed to have been dependent on the Iceni. Of this period the only remains are a few traces of camps and earthworks, the principal being those at Borough Hill near Daventry, where some rude pottery of supposed British origin has been discovered ; at Arbury Hill near Staverton ; and at Rockingham, on the site of the present old castle. Under

OO

ee

NORTHAMPTON 557

the Romans Northamptonshire formed part of Flavia Cesariensis. It was crossed by two great Roman roads, the Watling Street and the Ermine Street: the former entered the county near Stony Stratford and passed by Towcester and Weedon to Lilbourne, where it crossed the Avon; the latter crossed over from Castor near Peterborough into Lincolnshire. From the large number of remains discovered within its limits Northamptonshire would appear to have been very extensively occupied by the Romans. The principal Roman stations. within its limits were Irchester, on the north side

of the Nene, where numerous pieces of pottery, coins, and slabs with inscriptions have been found ; Castor, the seat of a celebrated Roman pottery, the extent of which and the finish of whose workman- ship are attested by the tesselated pavements and other relics, as well as by the kilns for bricks and earthenware, that have been dug up ; Benaventa, supposed to be Borough Hill, where excavations have brought to Tight traces of very extensive buildings ; Lactodurum, supposed to be Towcester, where, however, very few Roman remains are now visible ; Isannavatia, probably at Burnt Walls, a large field covered with remains of Roman buildings; and Tripontium, sup- posed to be Lilbourne, where there are traces of camps on both sides of the river. There were also encampments at Arbury Hill, Barrow Hill, Castle Dykes, Chesterton, Guilsborough, Hunsborough, Rains-borough, Sulgrave, and Wallow Bank, besides numerous small camps and posts at other places, especially along the valley of the Nene, which is thickly strewn with tesselated pavements and other remains.

Northampton formed part of Middle Anglia, and was included in the Saxon kingdom of Mercia. In the time of Tostig, and according to some at an earlier period, it was attached to Northumberland, and formed no part of Mercia. When the Northumbrians in 1065 rebelled against Tostig and chose Morkere for their earl they marched southwards.to Northampton, where they were met by Harold and received from him the confirmation of Morkere in the earldom ; but the shires of Northampton and Huntingdon were detached from it, and bestowed on Siward's.young son Waltheof, who became earl of Northampton and Huntingdon. After the Conquest the district became, on account of its extensive forest, a favourite resort of the kings of England, who occupied the castles of Northampton and Rockingham. During the Civil War Northamptonshire was the scene of many skirmishes in addition to the great fight at Naseby, while the battle of Edgehill took place on its borders.

Although Northamptonshire was rich in monastic foundations, remains, except of the abbey-church of Peterborough, afterwards the cathedral, are of small importance, the principal being the foundation and parts of the walls of St James's Abbey at Duston near Northampton, part of the church of the Cistercian abbey of Pipewell near Daventry and of the Cluniac priory at Daventry, and the priory church at Ashby. At Geddington, and also at

~~Northampton, there is an Eleanor cross in good preservation, For the architecture of its churches Northampton holds a place scarcely inferior to any other English county. 'To the Saxon period belong the tower of Earls Barton church, which stands on an eminence, probably the mound of an old English strong-house ; the tower and other portions of Brigstock ; the ground plan and other portions of Wittering ; the remarkable tower of Barnack ; and Brixworth church, constructed in part of Roman materials, and supposed to include part of a Roman basilica. Of Norman, besides the cathe- dral of Peterborough, the finest examples are St Peter's and St Sepulchre's, Northampton, and the tower of Castor. Higham-Ferrers, formerly a collegiate church, Early English and Decorated, is one of the most remarkable churches in the county, both on account of the beauty of its architecture and the number of monuments and brassesit contains. Of the other churches, most of them represent- ing more than one style of architecture, Early English, Decorated, and Perpendicular, the standard of excellence is generally so high that it is impossible to select a few for special notice in preference to others.~~

~~The last surviving fragments of the enclosing wall of Northampton,~~

~~Castle were only demolished in 1878. A gateway at Rockingham, and earthworks at Higham-Ferrers and Brackley are worthy of men- tion. Some castellated ruins remain of Fotheringhay Castle, which was founded soon after the Conquest by Simon de St Liz, was rebuilt by Edmund, son of Edward III., and for many years was a favourite residence of the princes of the house of York. To it Mary Queen of Scots was removed in September 1586, and it was the scenc of her trial in the October following, and of her execution, 8th February 1587. The current statement that the castle was razed by James 1. after his accession to the English throne is a mistake, but it was allowed to go to decay, and its materials were gradually used for other buildings. Barnwell Castle, founded by William the Con- queror, and an interesting example of the defensive construction of the period, is still a fine ruin, which includes four of the round towers and an imposing gateway. Holdenby Manor House, where Sir Christopher Hatton was born, and where Charles I. was staying when he was carried away by Cornet Joyce, has been demolished. Among the ancient mansion-houses are Castle Ashby, the seat of the Comptons, the oldest portion belonging to the reign~~

of Henry VIIL. ; Althorp, the seat of the Spencers, of various dates ; Drayton House,

of the time of Henry V1. ; the vast pile of Burghley House, founded by Lord Burghley, but more than once altered and enlarged ; and Kirby Hall, built by Sir Christopher Hatton.

There are histories of Northamptonshire by Norden (written 1610, pub. 1720), Bridges (1746, 1791), Baker (vol. i. 1822, 2 parts of vol. ii. 1841), and Whellan (1849, 2d edition 1874). See also Sternberg, The Dialect and Folklore of North- amptonshire (1851); Architectural Notices of the Churches in the Archdeaconry of Northampton (1848-49); Hudson, Brasses of Northamptonshire (1853); and North, Church Bells of Northamptonshire (1878).

:

NoRTHAMPTON, a municipal and parliamentary borough, and the county town of Northamptonshire, is situated on the slope and summit of an eminence rising above the river Nene, on the main line of the London and North- Western Company, on several branch railway lines, and on a branch canal connecting it with the Grand Junction Canal, 65 miles north-north-west from London. hs divided into four nearly equal parts by two main streets, each about a mile in length, running north and south and east and west, and crossing each other at right angles. In the centre of the town there is a very spacious market square, with a fine drinking fountain, erected in 1860 on the site of the old cross, destroyed by the fire of 1675 which levelled a great part of the town. The older houses are substantially built of stone, the newer ones of brick with stone facings. Formerly there were seven

parish churches, but of these only four now remain, All All

Plan of Northampton.

church of St Giles's was originally a cruciform structure of the beginning of the 12th century, but has been greatly changed, and, besides a fine Norman doorway, contains specimens of Early English, Decorated, and

Perpendicular. St Peter's, near the ancient castle, is supposed to be of the same date with it, and its interior is a fine specimen of Norman architecture. St Sepulchre's, one of the four round churches still remaining in England, is supposed to have been built by the Knights Templars at the close of the 11th century. The Roman Catholic cathedral, in the Gothic style, was founded in 1844, and greatly enlarged in 1863. Among the educational establishments are a free grammar school (1552), a Government school of art (1871), and a blue- coat school, in addition to charity, church, and school-board schools. The charitable foundations comprise St John's Hospital, founded in the 12th century ; St Thomas Hospital, founded 1450, in honour of Thomas Becket ; the general

infirmary (1747), the general lunatic asylum (1837), the union workhouse (1837), and the Royal Victoria Dispens- ary (1844). Among the public buildings are the town-hall in the Gothic style (1864), the county-hall in the Grecian, the corn exchange buildings in the Italian, the county jail, the borough jail, the barracks, and the theatre. There isa fine public promenade, and a racecourse with an area of 117 acres. A new cattle market was opened in 1873. Northampton is unrivalled in England for the manufac- ture of boots and shoes. There are also currying works, breweries, maltings, iron-foundries, flour and paper mills, and brick and tile works. The population of the muni- cipal borough (area 1342 acres) in 1801 was 7020, which in 1831 had increased to 15,357, in 1851 to 26,658, in 1871 to 41,168, and in 1881 to 51,881, of whom 25,249 were males and 26,632 females. The parliamentary borough was enlarged in 1868 to 2046 acres, and the population in 1871 was 45,080, which in 1881 had in- creased to 57,544,

There is a tradition that Northampton was founded by Belinus, a British king, while according to some it is of Roman origin. Neither of these suppositions is supported by any tangible evidence. In the Saxon Chronicle it is called Hamptune. From 917 to 921 it was in possession of the Danes, and in 1010 was nearly wholly de- stroyed by Sweyn. Aftcr the Norman Conquest it was defended by embattled walls, bastion towers, and a strong fortress. North- ampton has been more than once the scenc of a parliament. The priory of St Andrew, founded before the Norman Conquest, was rebuilt

~~by Simon de St Liz, and was of very great extent. During the Civil War the town was fortified for the Parliament. The borough received its charter of incorporation from Henry IL, which was subsequently extended by the 36 of George III., and this con- tinued to be the governing charter until the passing of the Muni- cipal Act of 1835, when the government was vested in a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen councillors, the town being divided into three wards. Northampton has returned two members to parlia- ment since the time of Edward I,~~

~~NORTHAMPTON, a. city of the United States, the county seat of Hampshire county, Massachusetts, is situated on the west side of the Connecticut river, 17 miles by rail north of Springfield, and is connected with Hadley by a bridge 1230 feet long. The village of North- ampton hes in rich alluvial meadow-land, about a mile from the bank of the river, and with its semi-rural streets and venerable trees has the reputation of being one of the prettiest villages in New England. Of note among its buildings are Smith College (1871; endowment, $500,000) for the higher education of women, the free pubhe library (18,000 volumes) and memorial hall, the Clarke institution for deaf-mutes (1867 ; endowment, $300,000) on rising ground to the west, and the State lunatic asylum (1858; 460 patients). A tramway runs 3 miles to Florence, a manufacturing village producing sewing-machines, silk goods, paper, &c. The population of the township was 5278 in 1850, 6788 in 1860, 10,160 in 1870, and 12,172 in 1880.~~

~~Nonotuck, bought from the Indians in 1653, became the village of Northampton in 1654, and was incorporated as a city in 1883.~~

~~Jonathan Edwards was pastor from 1727 to 1750, and David'~~

~~Brainerd died under his roof in 1747, Timothy Dwight, Arthur, Benjamin, and Lewis Tappan, and W. D. Whitney were born at Northampton.~~

~~NORTHAMPTON, Henry Howarp, EArt or (c, 1539- 1614), the second son of the earl of Surrey, the poet, born about 1539, was restored in blood by the first parliament of Ehzabeth. He bore a high character for learning, but during the greater part of Elizabeth's reign he remained in obscurity, sharing the fortunes of his family. Towards the end of the century he attached himself first to Essex and afterwards to Cecil, and took part in the secret~~

cor- respondence of the latter with J ames VI. of Scotland. When James became king of England, Lord Henry Howard at once sprang into favour. Though a Catholic in princi- ple, he was ready to attend the Protestant service to please

the king, and it is probable that he was one of the few who, in consideration of the services which they were able to render, were authorized by the authorities of that church to take this course. He was a good flatterer, and in 1603 he became a privy councillor. In 1604 he was made lord warden of the Cinque Ports and earl of North. ampton. In 1608 he became lord privy seal, and in 1612 one of the commissioners of the treasury,

In politics he gave his support to the Spanish alliance and to the toleration of the Catholics, believing, as was said by a Catholic agent, that the restoration of the Catho- he religion in England was the only bulwark against Puri- tan democracy. After the signature of the treaty with Spain in 1604 he accepted a pension from the king of Spain. After Salisbury's death in 1612 he won over Carr, who was then earl of Rochester, to his interests by coun- tenancing the favourite's intimacy with his great-niece, Lady Essex, and by supporting the divorce which made a marriage possible between them. Rochester, who soon became earl of Somerset, placed himself completely at Northampton's service in supporting an alliance with Spain. Northampton died in 1614, before the detection of the murder of Overbury, which brought about the fall of Somerset, and ultimately the exclusion from office of the Howard family.

NORTHAMPTON, Spencer Compton, EArt or (1601- 1643), born in 1601, was the son of the Lord Compton who obtained a large fortune by his wife, the daughter of Sir John Spencer, the rich lord mayor, and who was created earl of Northampton in 1618. The young Lord Compton accompanied Prince Charles to Spain in 1623. He suc- ceeded to the earldom in 1630. Though he sometimes appeared at court ceremonies, he preferred a home life. In the Civil War he took the king's side, opposing Lord Brook in Warwickshire in 1642, and taking part in the battle of Edgehill. When Banbury was taken he was placed in command of the garrison, and was active on the Royalist side in Staffordshire and N orthamptonshire, as well

as in his own county of Warwick. On 19th March 1643 he was dismounted in the fight at Hopton Heath near Stafford. His life was offered to him, but he answered that "he scorned to take quarter from such base rogues and rebels as they were," and was immediately slain.

NORTH BIERLEY, an urban sanitary district in the West Riding of Yorkshire, England, about 2 miles south of Bradford, includes the villages of Bierley Lane, Wibsey, and Low Moor, and other smaller hamlets, There are extensive collieries in the district as well as blast and puddling furnaces and rolling-mills, the ironworks at Low Moor employing between 3000 and 4000 persons. The church of the Holy Trinity at Low Moor was erected in 1606 in the Early English style, but has undergone restora- tion. The manor of North Bierley originally belonged to the Swillingtons of Swillington, who were strong adherents of the house of Lancaster. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 4309 acres) in 1871 was 18,616, and in 1881 it was 20,935; that of the township of North Bierley (area 3342 acres) in the same years was 14,433 and 15,620.

NORTH CAROLINA, one of the original thirteen States Plate that formed the American Union, is situated on the Atlantic XVIII. seaboard between 33° 50' and 36° 33' N. lat. and between 75° 27′ and 84° 20' W. long. It stretches 500 miles east and west across the entire breadth of the Atlantic slope of the Appalachians in a long narrow rudely triangular belt, its western extremity, less than 20 miles wide, resting on the highest plateau and summits of that continental system of mountains, while its eastern end spreads out to a breadth of 200 miles in a low, level, and gently undulating plain on the Atlantic coast, with a curving shore-line of more

mMORTH CAROLIRA

than 300 miles. Its area is 52,286 square miles, of which 3620 are covered by water.

Physical Features.—The western section is a rugged mountainous plateau ; it forms a narrow, irregular, much indented trough, lying between the bifurcating chains of the western and dominant arm of the southern prolonga- tion of the Appalachians,—the Smoky Mountains and the Blue Ridge,—the former being the western boundary of the State. The length of

~~this plateau from north-east to south- west is more than 200 miles, its breadth 15 to 50 miles, and its area nearly 6000 square miles. The Smoky chain has a general elevation of from 5000 to 6000 feet, rising in many summits to 6500 feet and upwards, but is broken down by half a dozen deep water-gaps or cafions to the level of 2000 and even 1200 feet. The Blue Ridge, which constitutes the eastern boundary of the plateau, is a very sinuous and angular and straggling mountain chain, with a general elevation of from 3000 to 4000 feet and upwards, a few of its higher summits, about midway in the State, reaching nearly 6000 feet.~~

~~These two bounding chains are connected by many north and south cross-chains, of equal elevation with themselves, or greater, and separated by deep valleys. On one of these cross-chains, called the Black Mountains, is Mitchell's Peak, the highest point east of the Mississippi, its altitude being 6688 feet (400 feet above Mount Washington in New Hampshire), The cross-valleys or river-basins have an altitude of from 2000 to 3000 feet, with smaller benches and marginal plateaus of from 3500 to 4000 feet. Seen from the east or Atlantic side, the Blue Ridge appears as a steep, ragged, and broken escarpment, springing suddenly 2000 to 3000 feet above the Piedmont plateau at its base. This plateau has along its western margin an altitude of 1200 to 1500 feet above sea-level, and is mountainous, with high and precipitous spurs projected eastward and southward from the Blue Ridge.~~

~~This middle region of the State is a country of hills and valleys and rolling uplands, its prominent topographical features being a succession of broad-backed swells with eastward or south-eastward trends, constituting the water- sheds between a number of large rivers, which take their rise in the Piedmont or on the flanks of the Blue Ridge, and reach the Atlantic through a system of wide valleys, 300 to 500 feet below the intervening divides. The area of this region is about 20,000 square miles ; its alti- tude, descending gradually from 1000 to about 200 feet, averages about 650 feet. Eastward, to the sea, lics a great champaign, 100 to 120 miles wide, and 20,000 square miles in area. The surface is generally quite level, but in places undulating and hilly towards the western border, especially near the larger rivers. Towards the coast it is diversified by numerous and extensive sounds, bays, rivers, lakes, marshes, swamps, and islands, the whole surface for 50 miles~~

inland from Hatteras and the eastern shore being less than 20 feet above sea-level. The sea is walled off from this low-lying territory by a-long linear chain of sand- islands or dunes, ranging from 75 to 100 feet and upwards in height, and separated in half a score places by inlets which connect the sounds with the ocean.

Rivers and Drainage.—The features above described give the main outlines of the drainage system, the Blue Ridge being obviously the chief factor. The streams which rise east of that chain empty into the Atlantic, either directly through the territory of this State or by crossing also that of South Carolina ; those which rise west of it seek the Mississippi and the Gulf of Mexico, partly by way of the Tennessee, many of whose chief affluents have cut their

d09

way in a north-westerly course across the mountain plateau and through the Smoky range, and partly by way of the Ohio, leaving the plateau in a north-easterly direction and reaching that river by the Kanawha through Virginia. Several of the most considerable rivers take their rise in the midland region. The numerous rivers of the eastern section, as they approach the sounds and the sea, broaden into bays of 2, 3, and 5 miles width, through which the movement of the tide is felt to a distance of 50 and 60 miles inland, and many of them are navigable for more than a hundred miles to the lower falls near the western border of the alluvial region.

Climate.—In climate North Car@lina resembles France and Italy. The position of the eastern end on the Atlantic and its projection southward beyond the parallel of 34’, together with the near approach of the Gulf Stream, give this part of the State a sub-tropical climate, its isotherm (66°) being that of the southern half of the Gulf States and of Nicolosi in Sicily, while the great elevation and inland recession of the western section bring its climate to that of the cold temperate zone, the isotherm for the higher plateaus (51°) being that of New England and Upper Canada. The average annual mean temperature of the State is 59°; for the eastern region it is 61°, for the middle 58°, and for the mountainous region 52°. The summer temperature is, for the State 77°, and for the several regions respectively 79°, 77°, 70° ; and the winter temper- ature, 43° for the State, and for the

regions named 46°, 44°, 38°. During a recent winter of unusual severity the thermometer several times indicated 30° and 40° below zero in Michigan and New England, while in North Carolina 10° above zero was reached but once. The aver- age of the minimum temperature for the State is 15°, for the middle region 13°, and for the west 8°; a record of 10° is rarely made east of the Blue Ridge, or of 0° west of it. The mean annual rainfall is nearly double that of England and France, the average for the State being 52 inches, and for the east, middle, and west respectively 60, 45, 58 inches. This precipitation is distributed nearly uniformly through the different seasons, with a slight pre- ponderance in the amount of summer rain and a corre- spondingly less quantity in the autumn. Notwithstanding this large amount of rainfall, the tables of humidity show that the climate is as dry as that of France; and the cultivation of the vine, cotton, silk, &c., furnishes the strongest practical proof of the fact. The prevalent winds are westerly, south-west winds being more common in the east, north-west winds in the middle, and west winds in the mountain region. The rain-bearing winds are mostly from the west and south-west, but the winter rains often come from the north-east. Situated westward of the track of the Atlantic cyclones, and sheltered by high mountains and by distance from the western tornado, the State enjoys almost complete immunity from these destructive visita- tions. The climate is favourable to human health, except in limited malarial tracts in the lowlands on some of the rivers. The death-rate for this State is less than the aver- age for the United States, and one of the two areas where consumption is unknown is found here. :

Geology.—The geological structure of the State is very simple; the formations are arranged quite regularly in zones parallel to the Appalachian axis and the Atlantic coast, and belong almost entirely to two horizons, the: Archean (or Azoic) and the Tertiary. The rocks of the several subdivisions of the former, the Laurentian, Montal- ban, Huronian, &c., occupy the western and middle regions and succeed each other in broad terranes, consisting of granites, gneisses, and schists, separated by narrow belts of quartzites, limestones, sandstones, and slates. The dip of these rocks is almost uniformly eastward and generally at a

high angle. Across the middle of the State lies an exten- sive zone, 20 to 40 miles wide, of the Archean slates, with a predominance of chlorite and felsite slates, schists, clay slates, and shales, with steep westerly dips. This is

TERTIARY & SSS adateRnany ESS Esoz0I10

(TRIAssic)

SLATES 3 GNEISSES

Geological Map of North Carolina.

succeeded in the region of Raleigh by another terrane of gneisses and schists about 20 miles wide, inclined eastward at high angles and disappearing southward and eastward under the Tertiary formation, and giving place in turn, farther eastward, to an equal breadth of slates and felsites, with occasional bosses of granite), which are only seen where they have been uncovered in the beds and blufis of the larger rivers. The whole eastern region is mantled over with a thin covering of Tertiary rocks. These consist of sands, gravels, and clays, and of shingle beds and earths rudely stratified, towards the western border. . The thick- ness of this formation ranges from a few feet to 25 and 50 feet, occasionally reaching 100 and 200 feet. Through- out the eastern and larger part of the division, in the ravines and in the beds and banks of the streams, are numerous outcrops of Middle Tertiary marls, Lower Ter- tiary shell-limestones, and coarse chalk beds. And in the southern half of this section, in the river beds and near the water-line of their banks, the Cretaceous formation appears in beds of half-compacted greensand, occasionally filled with shells. Overlying the Tertiary are sporadic ‘ patches of Quaternary clays, gravels, and shingle beds, the latter chiefly near the great channel ways of the rivers, where they sometimes reach a thickness of 30 and 50 feet. The Mesozoic formation is represented by two long narrow trough-like terranes of Triassic sandstones, conglomerates, clay slates, and shales, with bituminous coal. One of these, 5 to 6 miles wide with a south-easterly dip of 10° to 20°, enters the State from South Carolina a few miles west of the Pedee river and, passing within 10 miles (west) of Raleigh, disappears within 15 miles of the Virginia line ; the other, about 40 miles long and 2 to 4 miles wide, lies along the valley of

the Dan river, nearly east and west in direction and near the Virginia line. These beds have a north-westerly dip of 30° to 70°. The rocks of these two belts have a thickness of several thousand feet and are evidently the remnant fringes of a broad, flat anticlinal which has suffered extensive erosion. These two outcrops converge in the direction of the Richmond coal-beds, and were no doubt once continuous with them and with the Mesozoic of New Jersey and Connecticut. The former of these belts carries a 6-foot seam of bituminous, the other a 3-foot seam of semi-bituminous coal. Both are of good quality, but have been little worked. The Palzozoic rocks are entirely wanting, and the Primordial cross the State line from Tennessee only in a few places along the Smoky Mountains. Minerals.—In consequence of the wide distribution of the older rocks there is a notable abundance and variety of minerals. More than 180 species have been discovered, some of great rarity; and one of them has recently yielded to science two new metallic chemical elements. Nearly a score different species of gems have been found, including the diamond, ruby, sapphire, emerald, beryl, lazulite, amethyst, garnet, agate, and zircon. There occur also many minerals having special applications in the use-

ful arts, viz. mica, corundum, asbestos, baryte, chromic iron, garnet, zircon, kaolin, black oxide of manganese, talc, pyrophyllite, &c. Mica is found in large veins or dykes in all the terranes of Montalban gneisses, but the most extensive and valuable mines are found in the mountain region, where workable veins are numerous and extensive and the sheets of mica of unusual size and excellence. Corundum is about as widely distributed as mica, and occurs in the same series of rocks, as well as in some of the slate belts. 'The chief sources of supply of both corun- dum and mica for the arts, in the United States and in Europe, are the deposits of the mountains of this State. In this region are also numerous beds of white and variously-coloured marbles. Building stones of every variety are found in nearly all the sections, and whetstone, millstone, and grindstone grits, as well as potter's clay and fire- clay; and in the seaboard section are immense beds of peat. Iron, copper, and gold ores are coextensive with the outcrops of the metamorphic rocks. Several parallel ranges of magnetic and hematite iron-ore beds cross the State in a north-east direction, in both the middle and the

~~mountain regions. These ores are of a high grade and are in great demand at the Bessemer furnaces in Pennsyl- vania and elsewhere. Beds of limonite are numerous and extensive in all parts of the State. Blackband ore is associated with the coal, and spathic ore occurs as the gangue of several copper and gold mines in the middle region. Iron for domestic consumption has been manu- factured for a hundred years.in the middle region and half as long in the other sections. Gold occurs in both placers and veins from Halifax county on the upper margin of the eastern champaign, within 110 miles of the sea-coast, through all the intermediate sections to Cherokee county in the extreme south-west. The more extensive and pro- ductive deposits are found in the midland region in the southern half of the great slate belt, and in the central part of the Piedmont region among the foot hills and spurs of the mountains. These placers consist of coarse shingle in the beds of the streams and the bordering level bottoms ; climbing the slopes and benches of the hills adjacent, they pass insensibly from half-stratified shingle, gravel, and sand beds into unstratified earths with mingled fragments of stone. These deposits cover several hundred square miles of territory, and are of Quaternary or more recent age. Compared with those of California, they are of very slight thickness, generally not above 5 or 10 to 20 feet, and only occasionally reaching 40 and 50 feet. The most important and valuable vein mines are also found in the midland region. One of these, the Gold Hill mine near Salisbury, has been wrought to a depth of 750 feet, and its total produce exceeds two million dollars of bullion. In the same section are several noted silver mines,—Silver Hill, Silver Valley, and others. Many of the gold veins of the midland region carry also copper ores, and there are numerous copper veins in various parts of the middle and western regions. The more common ore is chal- copyrite, but there are also important lodes of grey copper.~~

~~Soils.—The soils of the eastern region are transported sands, gravels, and clays, of Tertiary and Quaternary origin, the assorted detritus of the abraded hills of the metamorphic rocksin the midland country to the westward. The upland soils of the region (the com- mon characteristic cotton soils) are generally sands and loams of moderate fertility, with here and there considerable areas in long narrow ridges or oval patches called pine barrens, that are very sandy and sterile. Between these, on the benches and lower levels, stretch wide and fertile alluvial tracts, especially along the~~

borders of the streams and the shores of the sounds and bays. On the flattish swells between the lower reaches of the great bay-like rivers and around the margins of the lakes, as well as along the borders of many of the crecks, are extensive tracts of swampy lands with a black peaty soil of great depth and inexhaustible fertility. These soils resemble those of the prairies of the north-western States, but contain a larger percentage of organic matter, and are more produc-

tive and more durable, producing 50 to 60 bushels of corn (maize) to the acre for a hundred years in succession without rotation and without manure. In the middle and western regions of the State the soils are of every variety of texture and composition and of every grade of fertility. They may be generally described as clayey, sandy, and gravelly loams ; but there is a considerable proportion of clay soils, not only in the alluvions of the numerous creek and river bottoms, which are commonly of this description, but on the uplands as well ; these are the more productive and durable. There are no prairie lands in the State, and the highest and ruggedest mountains are covered with"soil and forests to their summits.

Forests. —The whole area of the State was originally forest-covered, and about two-thirds of it is still in the primitive condition, except that the woods are much denser in consequence of the cessation of the annual burnings by which the Indians kept down the brush and preserved them in an open park-like condition. The great variety of soils, together with the wide range of climate, gives rise to a remarkably rich and varied flora. While the higher mountains of the western section are covered with forests of spruces and firs and other trees common to Canada and the lake States, the seaboard section borrows from the Gulf States their live oak aud long-leaf pine, their magnolias and palmettos. Of twenty-two species of oak found in the United States east of the Rocky Mountains, nineteen occur here; of eight pines, all are found in one section or another; of five maples, all; of nine hickories, six; of seven magnolias, all ; of five birches, three; andsoon. And nearly every one of the twenty kinds of timber used in New York ship- yards is found here. There are three well-marked and broadly-distinguished forest regions in the State, corresponding to the three

~~geographical divisions. Pines, chiefly the species australis and txda, constitute the characteristic feature of the eastern forests, giving place in the lower swampy tracts, especially in the seaboard section, to the cypress and juniper. Oaks predominate in the middle and western regions, but the mountain forests contain oak, chestnut, hemlock, and white pine. The oaks, however, are also found in some of their species as a subordinate constituent of the forests throughout the eastern region, and several species of pine (chiefly P. mitis) are frequently mingled with the oaks to the western ex- tremity of the State. The chestnut (Castanea vesew) is very abun- dant, and, reaching a diameter of 8 to 10 feet and a height of 80 and 100 feet, often constitutes extensive forests throughont the mountains. The poplar (Liriodendron tulipifera) is found in all the sections, but is most abundant in the western, where it equals the chestnut in dimensions. Hickories are distributed throughout the State wherever the soil is above average quality. This timber exceeds all the others in weight and strength. The total number of species of trees found in the State is 112, and there are just twice as many of shrubs, many of them 20 feet and upwards in height, which together give these forests everywhere an aspect of wonderful richness and variety, " comparing favourably with almost any portion of the tropics." 1 Among the trees are many valuable and popular cabinet woods, such as the walnut, holly, cherry, ash, cedar, birds-eye-maple, sycamore, &c. These forests are rapidly increasing in value as those of the northern States disappear and as the demand for timber increases.~~

~~Population.—In 1790, at the first United States census, the population was 390,000. In 1860, the year before the beginning of the Civil War, it had risen to 992,622, of whom 361,522 were coloured. In 1870 it was 1,071,361, an increase during this decade of less than 8 percent. In 1880 it was 1,899,750 (531,277 coloured, and 1280 Indians). The foreign-born population numbered but 3742. The increase during the ten years 1870-80 was 30°6 per cent.; the number of persons to the square mile was 29. The people of this State are among the most rural in the United States. The largest city does not contain 20,000 people, and only four exceed 4000, viz., Wilmington, 17,350; Raleigh, 9265; Charlotte, 7094; New Berne, 6448.~~

~~Industries. Agricultural pursuits engage three-fourths of the in- habitants, cotton and rice being staple products of the east, and hay, live stock,~~

buckwheat, and other north-temperate zone products, of the mountain region ; in one section or another may be found every agricultural product grown between the great lakes and the Gulf, except the orange. Indian corn occupies the largest acreage, and this and the other cereals are common to all sections. Cotton ig raised in two-thirds of the counties. It is the chief market crop of the eastern and of the southern half of the middle region. The limit of cotton culture has extended northward 20 to 50 miles in the last fifteen ycars, and the produce has increased nearly threefold. In the northern half of the middle and Piedmont districts tobacco replaces cotton as the market crop. Within ten years its culture has extended into a large portion of the mountain region. The northern tier of counties, next to the Virginia border, is known as the Bright Tobacco Belt, — the larger part of the ycllow or gold-leaf tobacco of commerce being produced in this narrow zone. This crop has also largely increased in the last ten years. The cultivation

1 See Dr Cooper, in 'Forests and Forest Trees of North America," Smithsonian Report, 1858.

of the vine is also increasing in all sections of the State. Accord- ing to Humboldt's thermal criteria the whole State lies within the zone most favourable to this industry. His conclusions are con- firmed by experience in every part of the State, and by the fact that several of the most popular grapes have originated here, such as the Catawba, Isabella, and Scuppernong,

The following table gives the principal crops and their relative amounts at the two last enumerations : —

1870. 1880.

TM TAMICOLT 55/4 /<.0.62.0) s1rsierer0.0:e 18,454,215 28,019,839 bushels. Wheat 2,859,879 3,397,393, Oats 3,220,105 3,838,068 ,, IV) ao oe odes 00 DECEnteTD 852,006 285.160 ie Potatoes, Irish……. 788,808 722,773 ys

.. SWECb 55. cccccccee 3,071,840 4,576,148, RICE MRc reise telscs hicie es cities 2,059,281 5,609,191 pounds. MoDewuote 6c cake oisoweeae 11,150,087 26,986,213 —,, Cotione oe oes. o. Mewnsies melageGRh 389,598 bales.

The total number of farms in 1880 was 157,609 ; the average size 142 acres.

Mining and other Industries. —These, although of verysubordinate intcrest, have long given occupation to a small portion of the popu- lation. Gold was first discovered in 1819, and between that date and 1850 hundreds of gold and copper mines were opened in the middle and western sections, and many thousands of the population were occupied in these industries. The total product of the gold mines between those dates is estimated at about $10,000,000. In the last few years mining industries have received a new impulse. Iron ores are mined on a considerable scale for export, many new gold and copper mines have been opened, and the amount of the output of the various mining industries is increasing very notably. Mica mining began fifteen years ago in the mountain region, and has grown to considerable importance, much the larger part of this material found in commerce being produced here. The annual yield is about 40,000 Ib, and is continually increasing.

The fisheries of the eastern rivers and sounds are large and profit- able, and give employment to several thousand people. And in this region the getting of lumber, both in the pine forests and in the cypress and juniper swamps, has been an important source of profit since its first settlement.

The manufactures of North Carolina occupy a very subordinate place, and are mainly domestic and auxiliary to the one dominant agricultural intcrest. The value of the total annual output, as given by the census of 1880, is $20,095,037. Of this sum $2,554,482 is derived from the manufacture of cotton goods, $2,215,154 from that of tobacco, $1,758,488 from turpentine and tar.

Railroads and Waterways.—In ten years the number of miles of railroad has been nearly doubled and is now within a few score miles of 2000. There are 1000 miles of waterways open to steamboat navigation, including rivers,

bays, sounds, and canals, forming a nexus of lines of communication extending over the whole eastern and seaboard region and connecting with the various ports along the coast from Wilmington to Norfolk in Virginia.

Government, Taxes, Education.—The executive power is vested in a governor, lieutenant-governor, secretary of state, auditor, trea- surer, superintendent of public instruction, and attorney-general, who are elected by ballot and hold office four years. The legisla- tive power is vested in a general assembly, which consists of a senate of 50 members and a house of representatives of 120 members, who are elected for two years and hold biennial sessions. The judicial power is vested in a supreme court, superior courts, and courts of justices of the peace. The supreme court consists of a chief justice and two associate justices. The State is divided into nine judicial districts, and there is one superior court judge to each. The judges of the supreme and superior courts are elected by popular vote for a term of eight years. 'I'he justices of the peace, who administer the law in the counties, are appointed by the legislature. A capitation tax, which may not exceed $2, is levied for the support of a system of education. Other State taxes are levied ad valorem, and amount at present to 25 cents on each $100 worth of property, and this on a very low valuation. The public debt is $5,706,616. The total assessed valuation of property is $156,100,202; the real value is about $800,000,000. A system of public schools is cstablished by law and supported by funds derived from State taxes, and increased by county and municipal levies. The schools are required to be kept open four months in the year. The reccipts of the school fund for 1880 were $553,464.

History.—The coast of North Carolina was the scene of the first effort of the English to colonize America. In the years 1585 to 1587 Sir Walter Raleigh despatched hither five fleets in succession, and planted three small colonies, which disappeared one after the other and left no trace. In consequence of these failurcs, due in large measure to the peculiar conformation of this diflicult coast and the want of good harbourage, the next expedition, twenty years later, was directed to strike the coast farther north, about the mouth of the James river, where the first permanent settlement was effected ; and no further attempt at direct colonization from Europe was made for three quarters of a century. Thus, instead of being the first of the American colonies in point of time, the colony of

Carolina came very near being the last. The southern bound- ary of the colony of Virginia was the parallel of 36° 30’ N. lat., although the whole contiuent was still called by that name, and all the country south of this limit to the Gulf was granted by Charles II. in 1663 and 1665 to a company of English noblemen styled the lords proprietors, with full powers of colonization and government. In this territory, called Carolina in compliment to the royal grantor, the colony of Carolina was planted by them under a new form of colonial government called the proprietary government, consist- ing of a governor appointed by themselves, a legislative assembly elected by the freeholders, and a council of twelve, six appointed by the governor and six by the assembly. Colonists were eagerly solicited for the new ‘‘ plantations” by liberal grants of lands, and by a guarantee of full religious liberty and of exemption from taxa- tion except with the consent of the legislature. These favourable terms were so much in contrast with the state of things in some of the other colonies, especially in Virginia, where tithes were rigor- ously exacted for the support of the Established Church, dissent punished as a crime, and laws enacted which allowed only the alternatives of conforinity or enforced exile, that the new colony soon received a large accession of Quakers and other Dissenters. In 1669 the first legislative assembly met, and a new and remarkably liberal government was successfully organized. The next year an attempt was made to introduce a new system of government and form of social order called the Fundamental Constitutions, drawn up by the celebrated. philosopher John Locke at the request of the lords pro- prietors ; but this and several subsequent attempts were so stoutly resisted by the colonists that the absurd and tyrannous scheme was formally abandoned in 1698. And so strong was the spirit of liberty that one of the lords proprietors who had been sent over as governor was deposed and exiled for extortion, and another governor with his council was imprisoned for misgovernment and infringement of the guaranteed rights of the colony, a new governor and legislature elected, and the government carried on for two years by the colonists themselves. In 1729 the proprietary was replaced by the royal authority, the form of government remaining unchanged. At this date also

the territory of Carolina was formally divided into the two colonies of North and South Carolina. The population at this time, estimated at 13,000, was mostly limited to the seaboard region, within 50 miles of the coast. Ten years later a great tide of emigra- tion set in upon the interior and midland country, both from the older settlements to the north, especially from Virginia and Pennsyl- vania, and from the British Islands and the continent of Europe ; so that in less than forty years the population wanted little of 300,000, and at the beginning of the revolution of 1776 a continuous chain of settlements extended from the sea-coast to the mountains. The new-comers were generally of the best class of immigrants, Scotch, Scotch-Irish, English, Swiss, Germans, and Dutch. They were Presbyterians, Moravians, Lutherans, Huguenots, and Quakers. Devoted to liberty and impatient of tyranny and of privilege, these people were attracted to the colony not alone or chiefly by the fame of its broad aud fertile ‘‘ mesopotamias” and its salubrious climate, but above all else by the liberal and popular form of its govern- ment, especially by its freedom of religion. When attempts were made, as they frequently were, in violation of guaranteed rights, to establish the English Church and collect church rates, they were everywhere met with stubborn and not always passive resistance. The execution of the famous Stamp Act in 1766 was forcibly re- sisted, and the royal vessel bringing the obnoxious papers was not even allowed to enter port. Extortion practised by the officers of the crown in some of the interior counties led to repeated remon- strances and appeals for redress to the governor and afterwards to parliament, and finally ended in 1771 in insurrection and open war. The controversy culminated in the battle of Alamance, in which the recusants were defeated by Governor Tryon. And thus, in one way and another, a spirit of suspicion or resentment, of irri- tation or open hostility, was constantly kept alive in the colony. This spirit found expression in the famous Mecklenburg resolu- tions adopted by the Scotch-Irish settlers about Charlotte in May 1775, in which ‘‘all laws and commissions by authority of king and parliament” are declared to be annulled and vacated, and a new government was organized for the county recognizing only the authority of the provincial congress. Thus North Carolina was fully ripe for measures of open and combined resistance when move- ments were begun towards a union of the colonies for this purpose, and was the first of all the colonies to instruct its delegates to the continental congress to vote for formal independence of the British crown. Early in 1776 the militia of the

colony met and defeated on the lower Cape Fear river a body of 1500 British troops under skilful officers, directed by the royal governor and supported by a British fleet of thirty sail off the port of Wilmington. The colony furnished its full quota of troops to the continental armies north and south, and lost most heavily in the fall of Charleston. But beyond this, situated far from the seat of war and weakened by the pressure of several recent settlements of adherents of the British crown, the colony did not bear a conspicuous part in the revolution until in the later campaigns, during the closing years of the war, its

NOR—NOR

| territory became the theatre of the conflict.

The defeat and capture of an important detachment of Cornwallis's army under Fergusou at King's Mountain in 1780 by a sudden gathering of untrained backwoodsmen and hunters, chiefly from the mountain settlements, checked the victorious march of the British ; and a similar volunteer gathering of her yeomanry from all the surrounding region at the battle of Guilford Court House in 1781 contributed largely to give the victory of Cornwallis the character of a defeat, and forced his speedy retreat to the coast and ultimately to Yorktown for the final catastrophe.

On the formation of the Federal Union, North Carolina, having had abundant and long experience of usurpation and misgovern- ment, did not make haste to enter the new compact, but moved with slow and cautious steps, and was one of the last of the colonies to adopt the constitution. At the breaking out of the war between the States in 1861, North Carolina, strongly averse to secession, sought by every means to avert the conflict, remaining unmoved after all the surrounding States had seceded, and was forced into the struggle last of all the Southern States, and when there remained only the alternative of a choice of sides. Being near the seat of war and yet for the most part outside of it, the State contributed more largely to the commissary supplies of the Confederacy, and also sent into the field a larger number of troops and lost more men in battle than any other State, her soldiers having a conspicuous share in all the great battles from Bull Run to Petersburg. Since the close of the war, which left her utterly bankrupt, North Carolina has entered on a career of prosperity

~~unexampled in her previous history. Population has increased far more rapidly than at any previous period, the number of miles of railroad has been doubled, the area of land under cultivation enlarged, agriculture improved in its methods and results, and industries diversified to an extent and with a rapidity never known before. (WiC. KS)~~

~~NORTHCOTE, James (1746-1831), historical and por- trait painter, was born at Plymouth on the 22d October 1746. Though he early showed an inclination for art, his father, a poor watchmaker of the town, insisted that he should be bound with himself for an apprenticeship of seven years. During his spare hours the boy was dili- gent with brush and pencil, and on the expiry of the term, in 1769, he started as a portrait painter. Four years later he went to London, and was admitted as a pupil into the studio and house of Reynolds, who had been the object of his warmest admiration from early boyhood. At the same time he studied from the round and the life in the Academy schools, making, it would seem, rather slow pro- gress in the technical processes of art. In 1775 he left Reynolds, and about two years later, having acquired the requisite funds by portrait-painting in Devonshire, he set out for Italy. There he remained for three years, study- ing the portraits of Titian, looking, as he tells us, twice at Michelangelo for every time he looked at Raphael, and forming the resolution that in the future he would paint portraits for bread and historical subjects for fame. On his return to England he revisited his native county, and then settled in London, where Opie and Fuseli were his rivals. He was elected associate of the Academy in 1786, and full academician in the following spring. The Young Princes murdered in the Tower, his first 1mportant histori- cal work, dates from 1786, and it was followed by the Burial of the Princes in the Tower, both paintings, along with seven others, being executed for the Shakespeare gallery of Alderman Boydell. The Death of Wat Tyler, now in the Guildhall, was exhibited in 1787 ; and shortly afterwards Northcote began a set of ten subjects, entitled the Modest Girl and the Wanton, which were completed and engraved in 1796. They were suggested by the Pamela of Richardson and the Idle and Industrious Apprentices of Hogarth,—a painter for whom Northcote rofessed little admiration. The series was popular at the time, but neither in truth of dramatic conception nor in technical qualities does it approach the parallel works of the older master. Among the productions of Northcote's later years are the Entombment and~~

the Agony in the Garden, besides many portraits, and several animal sub-jects, like the Leopards, the Dog and Heron, and the Lion, which were more successful than the artist's efforts

NOR—NOR

in the higher departments of art, as was indicated by Fuseli's caustic remark on examining the Angel opposing Balaam—-"' Northcote, you are an angel at an ass, but an ass at an angel." The works of the artist number about two thousand. By unwearied diligence, combined with extreme frugality, he was enabled to accumulate, before his death on 13th July 1831, a fortune of £40,000.

His works possess a certain dignity, and they tell their story clearly ; but they are marred by defective drawing and dull colour- ing, and by the gross anachronisms and inconsistencies in costume common to the historical painters of the period. Northcote was emulous of fame as an author, and his first essays in literature were contributions to The Artist, edited by Mr Prince Hoare. In 1813 he embodied his recollections of his old master in a Life of Reynolds. His Fables—the first series published in 1828, the second posthu- mously in 1833—were illustrated with woodcuts by Harvey from Northcote's own designs. In the production of his Life of Titian, his last work, which appeared in 1830, he was assisted by William Hazlitt, who previously, in 1826, had given to the public in the New Monthly Magazine his recollections of Northcote's pungent and cynical '' conversations," the bitter personalities of which caused much trouble to the painter and his friends.

NORTHFLEET, a village and urban sanitary district in the county of Kent, forming part of the parliamentary borough of Gravesend, is situated on the Thames and the North Kent Railway, 20 miles east of London and 2 west of Gravesend. The church of St Botolph, chiefly in the Later Decorated style, dates from the middle of the 13th century ; but the nave is of later date, and the old tower, having fallen down, was rebuilt in 1628. The church con-tains a brass of the 14th century and other interesting monuments. The nave and chancel have undergone modern restoration. Huggens College, with residences for forty decayed gentry, was established in 1847. A factory club for the use of those engaged in the chemical works was opened in 1878.

Besides chemical manufac- tures there are chalk, lime, cement, and brick works, and a large shipbuilding yard. Rosherville pleasure-gardens are in the neighbourhood. The population of the urban sanitary district (3934 acres) in 1871 was 6515 and in 1881 it was 8790.

NORTH SEA. The North Sea or German Ocean lies between Great Britain and the continent of Europe. It communicates with the North Atlantic by the Straits of Dover in the south, and by the Pentland Firth and the various openings between the Orkney and Shetland Islands in the north. Between the Shetlands and Nor- way it passes by a wide opening into the sub-polar basin, now generally known as the Norwecian Sza (g.v.), of which indeed it may be regarded as a southern extension. It has communication with the Baltic by the Skagerrack and the Cattegat. The shores of the North Sea have from the earliest times been inhabited by brave and hardy races of men famous for their maritime exploits; and at the present day it is surrounded by many of the most prosper- ous and enterprising commercial nations, and is, in conse- quence, one of the most important highways of the world. Its fisheries give employment to thousands of persons, and are the most valuable that exist. Lighthouses are situated on nearly every available point where they are required, and there are numerous light-ships along the coasts.

The North Sea lies between the parallels of 51° and 61° N. lat. and 2° 30' W. and 8° E. long,, its greatest length being about 600 miles, its breadth (from St Abb's Head to the shores of Denmark) 360 miles, and its area about 140,000 square miles. It may be said to be without islands if we except the Orkneys, the Shetlands, and those islands which are situated along the coasts. Its coasts present considerable variety in appearance and geological formation. Scandinavia, composed of ancient rocks, is elevated, deeply indented by fjords, and skirted with num- erous islands. The coasts of Britain are bold and rocky in

the north, while towards the south they present a succes- sion of low rocky or chalky cliffs and sandy beaches. Den- mark, Germany, Holland, and Belgium have low shores, composed of recent formations, and deeply indented. Many parts of Holland and Belgium are indeed below the level of the sea, and are protected from inundation by artificial dykes and extensive natural sand dunes. The sea has repeatedly broken through these artificial and natural barriers and submerged large tracts of country. The Dollart Zee and the Zuyder Zee were formed in this way in 1277 and 1282. Some of the most important rivers of Europe enter the North Sea, as the Elbe, Weser, Ems, Rhine, Scheldt, Thames, Humber, Tyne, Tweed, Forth, and Tay. If we include the Baltic, which enters into it, we may regard the North Sea as receiving the drainage of about one-fourth of the European continent.

Its greatest depth is in a deep gully following closely the trend of the southern portion of the Scandinavian pen- insula, where soundings of 160, 200, 300, and 400 fathoms are common. It has been suggested that this deep gully, which extends into the Skagerrack, may have been the bed of ariver at a time when the continent of Europe stood at a higher level, and that the Elbe and some of the other rivers now entering the Balticand North Sea may have united and flowed into the Norwegian basin of the Atlantic through this depression. With the exception of this gully the depth of the North Sea is less than 100 fathoms. It is to be noticed, however, that the bottom of the whole basin is very irregular. The southern half is the shallower, and, generally speaking, the depths in this portion are greater on the eastern and western sides than in the centre, where the Dogger Bank is situated. On this bank the depth is from 8 to 16 fathoms, whereas in the ‘Silver Pit ” immedi- ately to the south there is a depth of 45 fathoms. Similar irregularities are met with in various other parts of this sea- bed, and are called by the fishermen “ pits” and “banks,” with various distinguishing names. In the northern half the depth gradually increases towards the north, until a depth of 2000 fathoms is reached in the Norwegian Sea. It is probable that these irregularities met with in the bottom of the North Sea are chiefly due to the moraines and detrital matter left by the great glacier which filled it during the Glacial period. There are besides a great number of shoals and sandbanks lying along the coasts of Holland, Belgium, France, and Britain, which assume the form of ridges

~~running in a direction nearly parallel to the shores, and consist of sand and detrital matter brought down by rivers and arranged apparently by tide streams. The deposits vary considerably in their composition. In the shallow parts a sand predominates, composed of frag- ments of quartz, felspars, micas, hornblende, augite, mag- netite, and calcareous fragments consisting of triturated pieces of mollusc shells, Echinoderms, Polyzoa, Alcyonarian spicules, calcareous Algæ,and many Foraminifera. In the deeper water we generally find a mud or clay composed of the above-mentioned mineral and organic fragments, with the addition of fine argillaceous matter, very minute mineral particles, and Diatom frustules. In some places we have stones and gravel, and indeed stones may be met with in all the varieties of deposit.~~

~~Fogs, mists, and rain occur at all seasons. The winds are variable, the moisture-laden winds from the south-west being the most prevalent, and storms are frequent. The currents depend chiefly upon the direction of the winds, and the navigation is most difficult. The great tidal wave from the Atlantic on reaching the British Islands breaks into two portions, one passing through the Straits of Dover and the other round the north of Scotland into the North Sea. These two portions meeting produce nodal lines, where they partially neutralize each other, for instance in~~

~~the Straits of Dover, and less distinctly in lines stretching from the Wash and Moray Firth to the north of Denmark. The North Sea lies between the January isotherms of 31° and 40°, and the July isotherms of 55° and 65° Fahr., so that the difference between the mean winter and summer temperature is about 24°. The temperature of the surface water ranges in January between 39° and 45° Fahr., and in July between 53° and 63°. Hence the contrast between the temperature of the water and that of the air is greater in winter than in summer, and indeed except during the warmest months the air is colder than the water. In the southern part of the North Sea, south of the Dogger Bank, where the sea is comparatively shallow, there is in summer only a difference of a degree or so between the surface and the bottom water, the bottom water being a little the colder. The difference is greatest in the hollows like the "Silver Pit," where the depth reaches 45 fathoms. The tempera- ture along the British coast appears to be~~

in summer about 3° colder both at the surface and at the bottom than along the coast of Denmark. We have no very reliable informa- tion as to the temperature of the water at different depths during the winter months, but we know it takes a very long time before the cooling of the surface water affects the temperature at the depth of a few fathoms, therefore it is most probable that the water at the bottom in the southern part of the sea is much warmer than the surface or intermediate water, and this is likely to be the case especially in the "pits" where the depth is greatest. This is very probably the chief reason why such large catches of soles and other fish are made in these " pits" during very cold winters.

North of the Dogger Bank there is a very considerable difference of temperature between the surface and the bot- tom water in summer. Off Aberdeen there is a difference of

: 11°, the surface temperature in summer being 56° Fahr. i Surface ;

cone

Fig. 1.—Distribution of temperature in the Faroe Channel.

and the bottom 45°, while in the Norwegian gully there is a difference of 17°. Farther north in the Norwegian Sea, at a depth of 300 or 400 fathoms, the water is below : 32° Fahr. all the year round. The specific gravity ranges

55°

>t Ff. Urtie".

AN ous BANK coast coast

Fig. 2,—Section showing distribution of temperature in summer in the North Sea along a meridian line.

between 1:0249 and 1:0270, the saltest water being found at the bottom in the Norwegian gully. The lightest water is found in the Skagerrack where the Baltic water enters the North Sea, and in the southern half of the sea where the Continental rivers discharge their waters.

The North Sea has an abundant flora. Algz in great abundance and variety grow on all the shores and in all the

shallower waters, while a few species are found at depths of even 50 and 100 fathoms. The surface and subsurface waters swarm with Diatoms, Peridinias, Coccospheres, and other minute Alge. It is a matter of observation that where there is a low specific gravity, indicating a mixture of fresh with salt water, there is usually a great abundance of Diatomacez in the surface waters. This is

the case in bays and estuaries, and in the arctic and antarctic

regions, where melting ice lowers the specific gravity. The North Sea has all the characteristic features of a great bay, and has a great abundance of plant life. Its surface or intermediate waters are at times quite discoloured by the enormous abundance of Diatoms or Peridinias which are met with in vast floating banks. The cause of the rapid and great development of these minute organisms at particular times and places appears to depend on physical conditions which are not at present understood. With such a vast food supply it is not surprising that a prolific fauna swarms in the North Sea. Everywhere on the bottom we find Foraminifera, Sponges, Coelenterates, Echinoderms, Worms, Polyzoa, Tunicata, Molluscs, Crustacea, and Fishes. At all depths in the intermediate water we find Protozoa, Medusz, Copepods, Amphipods, Schizopods, Sagitta, and various other pelagic animals, together with a great abun- dance of the larvee of animals living on the bottom. The invertebrates living on the bottom and in the water at various depths, in their adult as well as in their larval stages, supply food for those fishes which are so much de- sired for the table. Most valuable food fisk, as the cod, haddock, herring, sprat, holibut, sole, coal-fish, and many others, frequent the North Sea, and are captured in great numbers by the fishermen of all the nations occupying the seaboard. There are also important fisheries for crusta- ceans such as lobsters, crabs, prawns, and shrimps, and for molluses such as oysters, mussels, whelks, and periwinkles. Whales and porpoises are numerous, and sea-birds are found in vast numbers on the islands along the shores. The annual value of the North Sea fisheries of various kinds is enormous. In a recent lecture the duke of Edin- burgh estimated that the labours of British fishermen supplied

annually "fish food amounting to about 615,000 tons weight, which at £12 per ton represents a money value of £7,380,000." By far the larger part of this comes from the North Sea. If we consider that these waters are also fished by Norwegians, Danes, Germans, Dutchmen, Belgians, and Frenchmen, we may form some idea of its fertility. It is very probable that the annual value of all the fisheries exceeds £25,000,000.

No systematic investigation of the North Sea has yet been undertaken, and in consequence our knowledge is in many respects very meagre. This is all the more astonishing when we remember the value of the fisheries and the enterprise of the nations engaging in them. The Admiralty employed a ship for several seasons to examine the currents and tides; the results are published in the North Sea pilot and admiralty tide tables. The German ship " Pom- merania "' was engaged during the year 1872 in examining the North Sea. See Die Expedition zur physicalisch-chemischen und biologischen Untersuchung der Nordsee im Sommer 1872 (Berlin, 1875). (J. MU.)

NORTHUMBERLAND, the northernmost county of Plate England, is of a somewhat triangular form, roughly re- XIX.

sembling that of England itself. It lies between 54° 47' and 55° 46' N. lat. and 1° 25' and 2° 41' W. long,, and is in its extremes about 70 miles long and 53 broad. Its area is 2016 square miles, ranking it fifth among English counties. Northumberland lies entirely on the easterly slope of the country. Its boundaries are the German Ocean, Scotland, and the counties of Cumberland and Durham. In physical aspect it is a tumbled incline of fells and ridges, intersected by valleys and subsiding eastwards from the hill-borders of Scotland and Cumberland into lessening undulations and a shelving coast. The Cheviot range (separating Northumberland from Scotland) is divided by

Ne re © eu ee

nature into two groups. What may be called the northern Cheviots are green hills of conical and high-arched forms, finely grouped, with the peat-capped Cheviot itself (2676 feet) at their centre, deep steep glens radiating into all parts of their mass, and generally more or less of hollow and enclosed

ground separating them from the slopes at their base. The southern Cheviots (south-westwards from Thirl- moor) are the highest part of the county,—moory hills, lower and more confluent, and sometimes curiously equal-topped. On the Cumberland side of the county these watershed heights sink into a monotonous rolling tract, separated only by the river Irthing from the "wastes" of Bewcastle. They again swell up in the south-west towards Killhope Law (2208 feet) and the Pennine range. Few eminences break the general incline, which stretches in a far-spread billdwy sea of confluent hills that for six months of the year mingle their browns, russets, and duns in a pattern of Oriental richness, and at all times communicate a fine sense of altitude and expanse. The Simonside Hills (1447 feet) form one not very conspicuous exception. The configuration of much of these uplandshas a certain linearity in its details due to groups and ranges of ridges, crags, and terrace-like tiers, picturesquely termed " edges" (escarp- ments) by the country folk, and generally facing the interior, like broad ends of wedges. The line of pillared crags and prow-like headlands between the North and South Tynes along the verge of which the Romans carried their wall is a fine specimen. Passing eastwards from the uplands we exchange the moors for enclosed grounds, " drystone " walls for hedgerows, rare sprinklings of birch for a sufficiently ' varied wooding, and towards the south-east we approach the smoke of the coal-field and the roar of the Tyne.

The chief rivers and valleys are the Derwent, the Irthing, the Tyne (with its North and South branches, the Allendales, and Redesdale), the Wansbeck with its twin the Font, the Coquet, the Alne, the Till with its feeders the Breamish, Glen, and College, and the Tweed. The Tyne is the "coaly Tyne" only from Wylam downwards. For 19 miles (its tidal portion) it has been dredged into a small estuary,—"a river of coal, iron, and chemicals." The rivers and streains in general are greatly diversified with numbers of rocky gorges and rich "denes." The deepest glen-scenery is at the head of the Breamish and College burns ; and the North Tyne gathers its waters from surrounding moorlands into a vale of surpassing beauty.

The coast is a succession of sands, flat tidal rocks, and low cliffs. Its bays are edged by blown sandhills; its borders are severely wind-swept. Several islands lie over against it. Holy Island, the classic Lindisfarne, 1051 acres in extent, but half "links" and sandbanks, is annexed to the mainland and

~~accessible to conveyances every tide. The Farne Islands area group of rocky islets farther south, —the scene of many saintly austerities, and of the nobler devotion of Grace Darling.~~

~~Geology.—The core of the county, in a geological aspect, is the northern Cheviots from Redesdale head nearly to the Tweed. Its oldest rocks are gritty and slaty beds of Silurian age, about the head of the rivers Rede and Coquet and near the Breamish south of Ingram,—a part of the great Silurian mass of the southern uplands of Scot- land. Even before the times of the Old Red Sandstone these rocks had been crushed and folded, upraised into a continental land, and much wasted. The largest hollows in that ancient continent held the great lakes in which the "Old Red" was deposited. Volcanic activity near one of the lake-group (now to be known as Lake Cheviot) resulted in the felspathic porphyrites passing into the syenites and granites that form the mass of the northern Cheviots.~~

~~Round this core there now lie relays of Carboniferous strata dipping east and south, much faulted and repeated~~

~~BERL AN D 565~~

~~in places, but passing into Coal-measures and Magnesian Limestone in the south-eastern part of the county. The dawn of the Carboniferous ages saw the volcanic piles of the Cheviots becoming shapeless with waste. Then ensued a general settling down of the land, the gathering of a long series of deposits around its subsiding borders, the burying of Cheviot-land, and the gradual formation of the whole great succession of the Carboniferous system. The builders thereof were three. After every sufficient subsidence the limestone sea that covered Derbyshire sent incursions of marine life northwards ; the waste of the land in the north then spread out in sheets of sand and silt; and over the mud-flats thus prepared came slow migrations of dense plant-growth. Limestones, sandstones, shales, and coals were the result ; and the whole system now consists of—(1) the Carboniferous Limestone series in three divisions, first detected by the accurate eye of George Tate of Alnwick ; (2) the Millstone Grit ; and (3) the Coal-measures. Lowest in Northumberland lies Tate's Tuedian group, the first envelope of sinking Cheviot-land. Some reddish shore-like conglomerates lie in places at its base, as at Roddam Dene ; its shales are often tinged with~~

distemper greens ; its coals are scarcely worthy of the name; its limestones are thin, except near Rothbury ; and its marine fossils are few and incursive. The Tuedian group is overlaid by the Carbon- aceous group; its shales are carbonaceous-grey, its coals, though mostly small, very numerous, its limestones often plant-limestones, and its calcareous matter much diffused. Upon this lies the Calcareous group ; its lime occurs in well-individualized marine beds, cropping up to the surface in green-vested strips; its fossils are found in recurrent cycles, with the limestones and coals forming their extremes. These three groups now range round the northern Cheviots in curved belts broadening southwards, and occupy nearly all the rolling ground between the Tweed and the South Tyne, the sandstones forming the chief eminences. The middle division becomes thinner and more like the Coal- measures in passing northwards, and the upper division, thinning also, loses many of its limestones. The Millstone Grit is a characterless succession of grits and shales. The Coal-measures possess the same zone-like arrangement that prevails in the Limestone series, but are without limestones. They also are divided, very artificially, into three groups. The lowest, from the Brockwell seam downwards, has some traces of Gannister beds, and its coal-seams are but thin. The famous Hutton collection of plants was made chiefly from the roof-shales of two seams,—the Bensham and the Low Main. The unique Atthey collection of fishes and Amphibia comes from the latter. The Coal-measures lie along the coast in a long triangle, of which the base, at the Tyne, is produced westwards on to the moors south of that river, where it is wedged against lower beds on the south bya fault. The strata within the triangle give signs of departing from the easterly dip that has brought them where they are, and along a line between its apex (near Amble) and an easterly point in its base (near Jarrow) they turn up north-eastwards, promising coal-crops under the sea.

The top of the Coal-measures is wanting. After a slight tilting of the strata and the denudation that removed it, the Permian rocks were deposited, consisting of Magnesian Limestone, -a thin fish-bed below it, and yellow sands and some Red Sandstone (with plants of Coal-measure species) at the base. These rocks are now all but removed. They form Tynemouth rock, and lie notched-in against the 90- fathom dyke at Cullercoates, and again are touched (the base only) at Seaton Sluice. No higher strata have been pre- served. The chief faults of the county extend across it. Its igneous

rocks, other than the Cheviot porphyrites and a few contemporaneous traps in the lowest Carboniferous, are all intrusive. An irregular sheet of basalt forced between

planes of bedding (perhaps at the close of the Carbon- iferous period) forms the crag-making line of the Great Whinsill, which, with many shifts, breaks, and gaps, ex- tends from Greenhead near Gilsland to the Kyloe Hills. Numbers of basalt dykes cross the county, and were prob- ably connected with the plateau of Miocene volcanic rocks in the Hebrides. Everywhere the Glacial period has left rocks rounded and scored, and rock-fragments from far and near rubbed up into boulder-clay. The glaciers at first held with the valleys, but as the ice-inundation grew they spread out into one sheet,—the Cheviot tops, heavily ice-capped, alone rising above it. Two great currents met in con- fluence around these hills,—one from across the western watershed, the other skirting the coast from the north. Boulders from Galloway, Criffel, the English lake district, and other places adjacent, and from the Lammermuirs and Berwickshire, lie in their track. Of moraines there are only a few towards the hills. The "great submergence" has left no unequivocal signs of its presence. Glaciated shell-fragments have been detected at Tynemouth. Lami- nated brick clays occur among the boulder-clays. Sheets and mounds of gravel of the nature of kames exist here and there on the low grounds, and stretch in a chain over the low watershed between Haltwhistle and Gilsland, sparsely dotting also some more upland valleys. An upper boulder-clay, containing flints, skirts the coast.

The older valleys are all pre-Glacial, and may date from the Miocene period. They are much choked up with Glacial deposits, and lie so deep below the surface that, if they were cleared-out arms of the sea, one of them, 140 feet deep at Newcastle, would extend for miles inland. After the departure of the glaciers the streams here and there wandered into new positions, and hence arises a great variety of smooth slope and rocky gorge. In the open country atmospheric waste has hollowed out the shales at their outcrops, leaving the sandstones, d&c., as protruding "edges," roughened here and there into crags. In the lower grounds, where this surface-dissection first began, the "edges" have much run together; on the heights,

whose turn came last, they are often prominent and crest-like, but have glacier-rounded brows. Many old tarns are now sheeted over with peat. The sloping peat-fields are often the sites of straggling birch-woods, now buried.

Minerals, &c.—The main portion of the great northern coal-field that extends into Northumberland is an uneven triangle, with its base stretching 14 miles inland from the mouth of the Tyne, and its apex on the coast 24 miles northwards. There are eighteen or twenty seams of work- able thickness, all of them of varieties known as bituminous or "caking" coal, amounting in the aggregate to nearly 60 feet in thickness, The familiar "Wallsend" was the product of a seam now worked out (the High Main), and its name has sunk into a trade term. The Low Main or Hutton seam ranks first in thickness and value ; it runs nearly through the whole length of the northern coal-field, and yields at one point or another the best description of three varieties of coal, viz., household, gas, and steam coals, —in Northum- berland chiefly steam coal. The seams below it, including five seams averaging about a yard in thickness, are still unworked at Newcastle. The best coking coals are fur- nished from the lower seams. Three little coal-basins lie against a fault on the moors south of the Tyne. In the Limestone series there also exist coal-seams of some value, worked here and there, generally singly and for land sale purposes. The Scremerston lower coals, eight of which are workable seams with an aggregate thickness of 23 feet, form a little coal-field in the Carbonaceous group in the north of the county. Numberless little seams are dug into by farmers and shepherds for their own use, chiefly in the same group in the southern half of the county,

NORTAUMSERLAND

According to the mineral statistics the output of coal from the 176 collieries worked in Northumberland in 1882 was 14,518,789 tons, as against 36,299,597 tons from the whole coal-field, and 156,499,977 tons from the United Kingdom. The net quantity of coal in Northumberland available for the future was estimated before the Coal Commission in 1870 as 2,576,000,000 tons, besides 403,000,000 tons under the sea within 2 miles

of land. About 350 millions of tons have since been realized. The rate of production is increasing annually.

The "lead-measures" in Northumberland chiefly lie in South Tynedale and Allendale, and belong to the Upper Limestone series or Yoredale rocks. From these lead- mines in 1882 there were raised 6817 tons of ore, having a value of £54,719. The product of the ore was 5252 tons of lead and 9547 ounces of silver. The industry has recently suffered from the effects of foreign competition.

The Cleveland ironstone and cheap foreign import have repressed iron-mining in Northumberland. Anabundance of nodular calcareous ironstone in the Upper Limestone series awaits future development. For many years a shale bed at Redesdale furnished Sir W. G. Armstrong with some of his best materials, but it was abandoned in 1877.

Among other mineral products are building freestones in profusion ; millstone grits, not at all restricted to the strata bearing the name ; fireclays, chiefly of value among the Coal-measures ; brick clays from glacial beds; and disin- tegrated shales. The Whinsill yields hard paving-stones and kerbstones ; Newcastle grindstones, from a hard sand- stone near the town, are as familiar as " Wallsend" ; and limekilns are numerous in the broad belt occupied by the upper limestones. The uplands are rich in springs issuing from the sandstones and limestones. Chalybeate springs or "red wells" abound; "sulphur wells" (sulphuretted hydrogen) are by no means rare.

Natural History.—The fauna and flora of the county have been worked out with a care and completeness chiefly due to the Naturalists' Field Clubs of Tyneside and Ber- wickshire. The catalogue of plants in Northumberland (with Durham) contains 936 species out of the 1425 of the British list, Ireland excluded. The facies of the flora is intermediate between the northern and southern types of the island. Forty-six species enter Northumberland from the south which do not reach Scotland. There is a distinct preponderance of damp-loving kinds. No plants are restricted to the county. Numerous aliens, enume- rated as 117 species, grow upon the large ballast-hills beside the Tyne and elsewhere, and there are 87 other "casual introductions." The cloudberry ripens on most of the watershed hills above 1250 feet.

~~The richness of bird-life in the county is accounted for by the situation of the coast in a frequented track of migration to and from the north, and by the diversity of its own phy- sical features. Of the entire catalogue of British birds, in all about 395 species, two-thirds (267) have been metgn Northumberland and Durham, 91 of which are residents, 40 spring and autumn migrants thatcome to nest,54 autumn and winter visitants, and 79 casual visitants. Moorfowl abound on the fells, though less numerously than of old.~~

~~Among the larger fauna of the county are the half-wild white cattle of Chillingham Park, the representatives, ac- cording to the best authorities, of the aboriginal cattle of the British forests, and degenerated descendants of the great Urus, or Bos primigenius.~~

~~Climate.—The climate is bracing and healthy. In spring east winds prevail over the whole county. The lambing season in the higher uplands is fixed for the latter half of April, and is even then often too early. In summer and autumn west winds are general. The mean temperature in the shade at Alnwick and North Shields in the winter and summer quarters of the year, dur ing four years of observation, was as follows :—Alnwick, summer~~

~~52°°9, winter 38°°9; North Shields, summer 55°-1, winter 39°°0. At Greenwich during the same years it stood as—summer 59°°9, winter 39°°4. The rainfall gradually increases as the country rises from the coast. The average rainfall during the six years 1877-82 was :—at Tynemouth (65 feet above the sea), 27°78 inches; in New- castle (105 feet), 30°28 inches; near Belford (240 feet), 30°41 inches; near Haltwhistle (380 feet), 40°41 inches; near Rothbury (400 feet), 37°50 inches; at Allenheads (1853 feet), 47°65 inches; and at Broadstruther (1672 feet), about five miles north of the Cheviot, 60°93 inches. East winds, in summer, bring rain to the interior. The smell from the coal-field, the lighter grime of which is detected as far as Cumberland, is taken by the shepherd for a sign of wet.~~

~~Governmental and Lcclesiastical Divisions.—Northumberland comprises the nine wards (answering to hundreds and wapentakes) of Bamburgh, Glendale, Coquetdale, Morpeth, Tynedale, Castle, Norhamshire,~~

Islandshire, and Bedlingtonshire. The last three formed detached portions of Durham until 1844. It contains 76 mother-parishes and 162 benefices, together forming (with Alston and Nenthead in Cumberland) the diocese of Newcastle, erected in 1882. There are 541 civil parishes in which poor-rate is separately levied. The county has one court of quarter-sessions, is divided into 13 petty and special sessional divisions, and for par- liamentary purposes into a northern and a southern division, each of which returns two members. Berwick-upon-Tweed (which has been joined to this county for election purposes) and Newcastle- npou-Tyne have separate courts of quarter-sessions and commissions of the peace, and, together with Morpeth and Tynemouth, the latter of which has also a commission of the peace, are municipal and parliamentary boroughs. Berwick and Newcastle each return two members, and Morpeth and Tynemouth each one.

Population and People. —The population in 1881 numbered 434,086 persons, 215,882 males and 218,204 females, —showing an increase since 1871 of 47,440 persons, and of 256,008 since the first census in 1801. The average number of persons to an acre was 0°34, and of acres to a person 2°97. The number of inhabited houses was 70,682. The population of its chief towns was as follows :—Newcastle-upon-Tyne, 145,359 (or with Gateshead upon the Durham side, 211,162) ; North Shields and Tynemouth, 44,118 ; Berwick-on-Tweed, 13,998 ; Alnwick, 7440; Morpeth, 6946; and Hexham, 5919. The Tyne ports are rapidly becoming one continu- ous town. Walker had a population of 9522 persons, Wallsend 6515, and Willington Quay 5105. Persons engaged as miners or in mine service numbered 21,607, of whom 20,752 were coal-miners. Persons engaged in agriculture numbered 18,901.

In physique the Northwmnbriau is stalwart and robust, and seldom corpulent. The people have mostly grey eyes, brown hair, and good complexions. 'lhe inhabitants of the fishing villages appear to be Scandinavian ; and parts of the county probably contain some admixture of the old Brit-Celt, and a trace of the Gipsy blood of the Faas of Yetholm. The natives have fine characteristics: they are clean, thrifty, and plodding, honest and sincere, shrewd, and very independent. Their virtues lie rather in solidity than in aspiration.

Northumbrian speech is characterized by a ‘‘rough vibration of the soft palate” or pharynx in pronouncing the letter 7, well known as the burr, a peculiarity extending to the town and liberties of Berwick, and absent only in a narrow strip along the north-west. Over the southern part of the county there is the same duplication of vowel-sounds, such as ‘‘ pedl” for ** pool,” that is met in the English countiesadjacent. Many charming Old-English forms of speech strike the ear, such as ‘‘ to butch a beef,” 7.¢., to kill a bullock, and curious inversions, such as ‘‘they not can help.” There is the Old-English distinction in the use of ‘‘ thou” to familiars and ‘‘ ye” to superiors.

Ownership of Land.—According to the Owners of Land Returns 1873, the distribution of land-property in Northumberland was as follows:—there were 22 proprietors of more than 10,000 acres ; of 100 and less than 1000, 507; of 10 and less than 100, 771; of 1 and less than 10, 820; and of less than 1, 10,036. The gross estimated rental was £2,144,743. Six proprietors held lands exceeding 20,000 acres. The duke of Northumberland, the largest land-proprietor in England, held 181,616 acres ; the earl of Tankerville, Chilling- ham Park, held 28,930; Sir John Swinburne of Capheaton, 28,057; Walter C. Selby of Biddlestone, 25,327; Sir W. C. Trevelyan (now Sir Charles) of Wallington, 21,342; and the lords of the Admiralty, who held the old Derwentwater estate, 20,642. The mansions and parks attached to these estates are all beautiful or interesting. Biddlestone is uplying, but in some respects is the original of Scott’s Osbaldistone Hall.

Agriculture, &c.—More than half ofthe county is pastoral. South of the river Coquet there is a single broad tract of cultivation towards the coast that sends lessening strips up the valleys into the interior. From the Coquet uorthwards another breadth of enclosed ground stretches almost continuously along the base of the Cheviot hills. In the basin of the Till it becomes eminently fertile, and towards the Tweed the two breadths unite. In the porphyritic Cheviots the lower hills show a great extent of sound surface and good grass. The average hill-farms support about one sheep to two acres. A coarser pasturage covers the Carboniferous hills, and the propor-

~~tion of stock to surface is somewhat less. Their highest fells are a rough-and-tumble of bogs, hags, and sandstone scars, with many acres dangerous to shcep and worth less thau nothing to the farmer. The lower uplands are a patchwork of coarse grasses (mown by "the muirmen" into "bent-hay"') and heather, or, in the popu- lar terms, heather and " white ground," for it is blanched for eight months in the year. Heather is the natural cover of the sandstones (which form most of the eminences) and of the sandy glacier-débris near them. The limestone crops are bright green strips or gairs. Sheets of boulder-clay are common on the eastern sides of emi- nences, in the valleys, and on the low grounds. On the uplands they grow bents ; lower down they are apt to be cold and strong, but are much relieved by patches and inworkings of gravel, especially north of the Wansbeck. The prevalent stream-alluvium is sandy loam, with a tincture of peat. The arable regions are very variable. Changes of soil are probably as numerous as fields. Fencing has now reached the watershed tracts; draining is following; but there is room to doubt whether the latter will be altogether an unmixed good. The peat mosses act retentively, like sponges, softening the air, nourishing the early-springing deer-grass and cotton-grass, and preventing precipitation of drainage on the rivers, which are now more liable to floods than formerly.~~

~~Northumberland contains 1,290,312 acres. In the Agricultural Returns for 1883 the cultivated area of the county stands as 712,615 acres, exclusive of orchards and market gardens, embracing—corn crops, 126,439 acres (wheat 19,980, barley 40,696, and oats 58,989); green crops, 55,202 acres (turnips and swedes 46,066, and potatoes 5384); clover, sanfoins, and grasses under rotation, 84,562 acres ; per- mauent pasture not under rotation, exclusive of heath or mountain land, 431,031 acres. Of orchards there were 184 acres; of market gardens, 659; of nursery gardens, 81; and of woods(in 1881), 39,977. Since 1866 55,626 acres have been reclaimed from mountain land. The corn area has meanwhile diminished by 27,277 acres, and turnip-culture has not increased; but. the permanent pastures are more extensive by nearly one-fourth, or 101,207 acres. The turnip-culture of the northern parts of the county takes rank with the best districts in Scotland. A five- or four-course shift is the usual rotation.~~

~~By the census of live-stock (1883) the returns are as follows :— horses and ponies, 18,147, including 13,538 used for agricultural purposes ; cattle, 93,550, of which 21,930 were in milk or in calf; sheep, 880, 230, including 336,702 under one year old ; pigs, exclusive of those kept in towns and by cottagers, 14,883. The sheep, which are celebrated, fall into three groups. The half-breds—crosses between the Leicester (or Shropshire) and Cheviot breeds—occupy the lower enclosed grounds, the pure Cheviots are on the uplands, and the hardier blackfaced breeds lie out on the exposed heathery heights. The cattle are chiefly shorthorns and Galloways.~~

~~The size of the agricultural holdings was returned in 1875 and 1880. Holdings of 50 acres and under numbered in these years 3070 and 3329 respectively ; of 100 to 300 acres, 1813 and 1273; of 1000 acres and upwards, 38 and 36. Leases of fourteen and nineteen years " usually without compensation clauses, and more or less restricted as to cropping," have hitherto been in fashion. In the large part of the county owned by the duke of Northumberland (nearly one-seventh of the whole) there obtains a system of yearly agreements, except in the case of hill-pastures. In the recent uncer- tain years annual arrangements have been more in favour generally. Large farms have now much absorbed the smaller holdings of earlier times. In Allendale the mining population includes many small occupiers, and the commons are still unbroken. In other parts of the county the commons have mostly been divided. Between 1702 and 1877 commons to the number of 59, and with an aggregate extent of 194,917 acres, are known to have been enclosed. There is no authentic account of the unenclosed remainder.~~

~~The management of many Northumbrian farms is excellent, 'far in advance of ordinary practice." Wages are high, but " the cost per acre of labour does not exceed and is often much lower than that of districts where wages are from 25 to 40 per cent. lower. This is attributable to (1) the superior quality of the labour, both physical and moral, (2) the extensive use of women-workers (the employment of whom is not found to be demoralizing when properly safe-guarded), and (3) more systematic and economical manage-ment" (Coleman, Report, Royal Commission, 1882).~~

The practice of paying wages in kind has passed greatly into disuse. Some of the shepherds still receive "stock-wages," being allowed to keep forty or fifty sheep and several cows on their employers' farms in lieu of pay. This arrangement, which makes them really copartners, has probably done much to render them the singularly fine class of men they are.

Manufactures, &c.—The manufactures of this county chiefly come from the Tyne, which is a region of ironworks, blast -furnaces, shipbuilding-yards, ropeworks, coke-ovens, alkali-works, and manu- factories of glass, pottery, and fire-bricks, from Newcastle to the sea (see NEWCASTLE). There is great activity in all trades con- cerned in pit-sinking and mine-working. In the other parts of the county there are a few small cloth-iills, a manufactory of

NORTH UE

potteries, and numbers of small brick

568:

tan-gloves at Hexham, some aud tile works. ;

Fisheries.—The Tyne is the most productive salmon-netting river from a commercial point of view in England and Wales. The richness of its fisheries is mentioned in the time of Henry I. Ac- cording to Professor Huxley's report, the estimated catch in 1882 was 41,110 salmon and 10,336 salmon-trout. The salmon catch has doubled within the last four years, and is not known to have been exceeded except in three abnormal years, 1871-73. The fish taken by the Berwick Salmon Fishery Company in 1882 were 8808 salmon, 3104 grilse, and 12,390 trout. Bull-trout abound in the Coquet. The sea- fisheries include herrings, whitefish, and some crabs and lobsters. In 1872 the number of boats employed was 1163, chiefly cobles. Beyond Holy Island the boats and fishing are essentially Scotch. e

Antiquities, &c.—The pre-Roman antiquities of Northumberland are camps, cairns, standing-stones (both monoliths and fragment- ary circles), sculptures on rock, hand-made pottery, and weapons, ornaments, &c., of stone, bronze, iron, jet, glass, and gold. The camps are entrenched

~~enclosures rudely rounded or quadrate, with their main entrances and those of the hut-circles, or foundations of huts, always facing sunrise. They differ from the camps of the Romans in their want of symmetry, and in an absence of plan in distribution, due to the desultory clan-warfare of their inhabitants. The primitive village of Greaves Ash near the Breamish, the strong defensive earthwork at Elsdon, and the camps at Old Bewick, Lordenshaw near Rothbury, and Warden Hill near Hexham are a few instances from among the great numbers that are preserved on the eminences girdling the northern Cheviots and on the lower untilled grounds. Traces of occupation by Romans, Saxons, and marauders of later times sometimes mingle with the remains of the original occupants. The sculptured cups and circles, now familiar to antiquaries, were first brought into observation at Rowtin Linn near Ford in 1852. Numerous instances and varied designs have since been found, both on ‘‘fast” rock and on slabs associated with burials. The uplands are dotted with round barrows and cairns containing cists and interments, sometimes cremated, some- times inhumed, and in some instances both together. The county scarcely affords material as yet for a separation into periods of stone, bronze, aud iron. The older interments are associated only with stone, but not necessarily precedent to bronze ; in the “‘ late Celtic” or ‘early iron” ages all three were in use together.~~

~~In Roman military antiquities this is the premier county of Britain. For the great wall between the Tyne and the Solway, see HADRIAN’S WALL. The Roman road from London nearly bi- sects the county, and still goes familiarly under the name of ‘‘ the Watling Street.” It passes numbers of quadrangular camps, three of which were permanent stations. Its eastern branch, the Devil’s Causeway, leaves it near the Tyne for Berwick. In the south-west of the county lay the Maiden Way, making for Liddisdale. Coal, iron, and lead appear to have been worked by the Romans. Numer- ous heaps of heavy iron slag, mingled with charcoal, are the sites of little ‘‘bloomeries” on the uplands. They may be of different ages, from that of the Britons downwards.~~

~~Of Anglo-Saxon buildings the Danes left almost nothing. The crypt of Wilfrid’s abbey of St Andrew at Hexham is one undoubted remnant; portions of several other churches are very doubtfully pre-Norman. Some thousand Saxon styeas found buried at Hex- ham, the “fridstool” there, and~~

~~an ornate cross now shared be- tween Rothbury and Newcastle are the other principal vestiges of Saxon times. 'The Black Dyke, a bank and ditch crossing the line of the Roman wall about three miles east of the Irthing, is supposed by some antiquaries to be the continuation of the Catrail at Peel Fell ; the latter was the probable boundary-fence between the Saxon Ber- nicia and the British Strathclyde.~~

~~The ecclesiastical architecture of the county suffered greatly at the hands of the Scots. Nota few of the churches were massive~~

~~Lindisfarne Priory, the oldest monastic ruin in the county, dates from 1098.~~

~~Hexham Abbey Church (early 12th century), raised |~~

~~over the crypt of Wilfrid's cathedral, has been termed a **text-book |~~

~~of Early English architecture ;" it lacks the nave, destroyed by the Scots under Wallace. and has been well restored. Hulne Abbey, now surrounded by the sylvan loveliness of the Alnwick demesnes, was the first Carmelite monastery in Britain. Besides these there are fragments of New- minster Abbey (1189), Alnwick Abbey (1147), and others. An exquisitely graceful fragment of Tynemouth church is associated with some remains of the older priory. Among churches ought first to be named St Nicholas's, Newcastle (1350), the prototype of St Giles's, Edinburgh, and now the cathedral-church of the new diocese. There is a massive Norman church at Norham, and other Norman and Early English churches at Mitford, Bamburgh, Wark- worth, Alnwick (St towers. its heavy semicircular girders, is said to be now unique.~~

~~"Tt may be said of the houses of the gentry herein," writes old~~

~~| which under the Of Brinkburn Priory the church remains, |~~

~~'1879.~~

~~ke ants of Egbert of Wessex structures, tower-like in strength, and fit to defend on occasion. | S~~

~~BERLAN D-~~

~~Fuller, “ ‘quot mansiones, tot munitiones,’ as being all castles or castle-like.” Except a few dwellings of the 16th century in New- castle, and some mansions built after the Union, the older houses are all castles. A survey of 1460 inentions thirty-seven castles and seventy-eight towers in Northumberland, not probably including all the bastle-houses or small peels of the yeomen. At the Conquest Bamburgh, the seat of the Saxon kings, was the only fortress north of York. Norham Castle was built in 1121. None of the baronial castles are older than the time of Henry I. A grass mound repre-sents Wark Castle. Alnwick Castle is an array of walls and towers covering about five acres. The interior was restored in Italian palace style by the late Duke Algernon. Warkworth, Prudhoe, and Dunstanburgh castles are fine groups of ruins. Dilston Castle has still its romantic memories of the carl of Derwentwatcr. Bel- say, Haughton, Featherstone, and Chipchase castles are joincd with modern mansions. ‘The peel-towers of Elsdon, Whitton (Rothbury), and Embleton were used as fortified rectory-houses. Seaton Delaval was the work of Vanbrugh.~~

~~The place-names of the county may be viewed as its etymological antiquities. The Danish test-word by we find to be absent. Saxon tons, hams, cleughs (clefts or ravines), and various patronymics are met with in great numbers ; and the Gaelic knock (hill) and Cymric caer, dwr (water), eefn (ridge), bryn (brow), &c., mingle with the Saxon. Many curiosities of nomenclature exist, some strange, some expressive, ¢.g., Blink-bonny, Blaw-wearie, Skirl-naked.~~

~~A few gleanings of folk-lore still remain for the discriminating collector. The virtues of certain holy wells in ailments or barren- ness and of a south-running stream in sickness, the powcrs of lrish men and cattle over ae and snake-bites, and the growing of boulders in the earth like bulbs are still latently believed in by many ; and there‘is a general aversion to burying on the sunless side of the churchyard, which is left to suicides and unchristened infants.~~

~~The literary antiqnities are the Border ballads.“ I never heard the old song of Percy and Douglas, that I found not my heart more moved than with a trumpet” (Sir Philip Sidney).~~

Bibliography.—See Hodgson's unfinished county History, 1820-40, a marvel of minute local fidelity ; Hodgson Hinde's General History, added thereto, 1858; also Skene's Celtic Scotland, Green's Making of England, and Freeman's Norman Conquest, as more recent authorities. In antiquities : Bruce, Roman Wall, 1874, Wallet Book, 1863, Lapidariwm, 1875, and Descriptive Catalogue of Antiquities at Alnwick Castle, 1880; Hartshorne, Feudal and Military Antig. of Northumber- land, 1858; Wilson, Churches of Lindisfarne, 1874; Wallis, Natural Hist. and Antiq. of Northwmberland, 1769 ; Greenwell, British Barrows, 1877; and the Archxologia Ailiana, being | repel of the Antiquarian Society of New- castle. In natural history: Tate and Baker, " Flora of Northumberland," &c., vol. vi. of Tyneside Naturalists' Transactions ; Hancock, 'Birds of Northuinber- land," in vol, xii.; 'Catalogue of the Mammalia," in vol. vi.; and much valu- able matter on antiquities, natural history, &c., both in these and in the Bev- wickshire Naturalists' Transactions; and Storer, Wild White Cattle of Britain, In geology: the maps of the Geological Survey (now completed), and memoirs which will accompany them; G. Tate, careful and clear-sighted, in 'Tate and Baker's "Flora"; Bruce's Roman Wall, 4thed. In agriculture: Cole- man's Report to the Royal Commission, 1882 ; John Gray of Dilston, " Report,' Agricultural Journal, 1841; Bailey and Culley, 1813. On dialect, &c., Murray, "Northumbrian Speech," Philological Journal, 1870-72 ; Brockett's Glossary of North Country Words and Phrases, 1846. Murray's Handbook is a very useful but not very accurate companion for the traveller in Northumberland. The library of the Lit. and Phil. Society at Neweastle is one of the best provincial libraries in the kingdom. (H. M.)

NORTHUMBERLAND, Kinepom or. The history of Anglo-Saxon England is the history, not of a heptarchy of independent and equal or nearly equal kingdoms united by any kind of federal bond, but of the rise and progress of the kingdom of Northumberland from the end of the 6th to the middle of the 8th century under Ethelfrith and the descendants of Edwin of Deira, the predominance of Mercia during the latter half of the 8th century under Offa, and the gradual union of England under the descend- between the close of the 8th century and the Norman Conquest. The present article is chiefly concerned with the first of these periods chrono- logically, and geographically with the portion of Britain Northumbrian kings at the time of their greatest power extended from the Humber to the Forth, and was

bounded on the east by the German Ocean and on the west by an irregular and gradually receding line, at times overstepped, of the country more or less mount-

‘ ainous retained by the Celts of Strathclyde and Cumbria

between the Clyde and the Mersey (see Plate it, vol: viii.). The first settlements of the Angles in these regions and the foundation of the kingdoms of Bernicia

Michael’s), &c., most of them with square | and Deira have been spoken of in vol. viii. p. 270.

The stone roof of the little church at Bellingham, with | z : somewhat modified; the former kingdom corresponded

Bernicia and Deira were Celtic names, Bryneich and Deifr,

generally with the modern counties of Durham and

“ROR TRUM BER LAN D

Northumberland and the Lothians, the latter with York- shire, and when the two became united in one kingdom it received the name of Northumberland.

The history of Bernicia between the establishment of Ida as its king and the reign of his grandson Ethelfrith (592-617), and of Deira prior to the reign of Edwin (616- 633), the son of Ailla, is obscure. The skilful piecing together of the notices of Nennius, Bede, and the early English chroniclers by Palgrave, Lappenberg, Skene, and others cannot be regarded as a completely successful re- construction of the chronology of the Northumbrian kings. The chief difficulty, though only one of many, is that six of twelve sons of Ida are said to have reigned in Bernicia from his death (559) to the accession of Ethelfrith, his grandson (592 or 594), a period of only thirty-three or thirty-five years, which, though not quite incredible, ap- pears short in comparison with the parallel reigns of Aula of Deira (559-588) and his son Edwin (616-633), while their names and order of

~~succession do not agree in the earliest authorities. Another is that Bebba, the British princess from whom Bamburgh, the chief fortress of Bernicia, was named, was according to the Saxon Chronicle wife of Ida, but according to Nennius of Ethelfrith. Whatever may be the truth as to the earlier history, more light dawns with Ethelfrith, in whose reign the attempt to unite Bernicia and Deira commenced. 'The most powerful and covetous of glory of kings," as he is called by .Bede, Ethelfrith "wasted the race of the Britons more than all the chiefs of the Angles, and made more land than any of them subject to or inhabited by Angles, exterminating or sub- duing the indigenous tribes" (Bede, i. 34). By one of these victories, that of Catraeth ? (596), commemorated in the verse of Aneurin, he overcame the Britons, who were driven back into Cumbria, and by another at Degsastan (?Dawston in Liddisdale) over Aidan, king of the Scots of Dalriada, in 603, he put a stop to incursions of the Scots down to Bede's own day. A third victory at Caerleon (Chester on the Dee) 613%, followed by the slaughter of the monks of Bangor, marks the fact that the Northum- brian Angles were still heathens fighting against Christian Celts. It was these successes that led to the extension of Northumberland to the borders of Cumberland and West- mareland, and the first permanent inclusion of part at least of the district between the Tweed and the Forth in the kingdom of the northern Angles. Ethelfrith married a sister of Edwin and daughter of Ailla of Deira, and after Aflla's death, during the minority of Edwin, seized Deira, over which he reigned for twelve years. The young Edwin took refuge first amongst the Britons and afterwards with Redwald, king of East Anglia, who re- stored him to his kingdom by the defeat and death of Ethelfrith at a battle on the Idle, a tributary of the Trent, in 617. This turn of fortune drove Eanfrid, Oswald, and Oswy, the sons of Ethelfrith, into exile amongst the northern Celts, and Edwin, like Ethelfrith, ruled over the whole Angles north of the Humber to the Forth ; for, whether Edinburgh was his foundation or a fortress of the Celts (Dunedin), the tradition which linked its modern name with his can scarcely be without meaning. Through his example the Angles were converted to Christianity by Paulinus, a monk sent from Canterbury with letters from Boniface V. to the king and his wife Ethelberga, the daughter of Ethelbert of Kent. The story of the origin of the Northumbrian Church, with its inci- dents of the destruction of the idols by the heathen arch- priest Coifi, the speeches at the council of the witan which decided in favour of the new faith, the host of catechumens eager for~~

baptism in the nearest rivers, the Glen in Bernicia, the Swale in Deira, and the Trent in the country of the Lindissi, the erection of a stone church

dedicated to St Peter at York surrounding the wooden oratory in which Edwin had himself been baptized, after- wards itself enclosed in the minster, forms one of the most vivid passages of Bede. As the scene of these incidents was his native country, and their time about half a century before his birth, there is no reason to doubt the substan- tial truth of a narrative derived at first, or at furthest at second hand.

'Deda, a priest of Bardney, a man of singular veracity," he mentions in one place, "told me that one of the oldest persons (in the province of the Lindissi, modern Lincoln) had informed him that he himself had been baptized by Paulinus at noon in the pre- sence of Edwin, with a great multitude of the people, in the river Trent . . . he was also wont to describe the personal appearance of Paulinus, tall of stature, a little stooping, his hair black, his visage meagre, his nose very slender and aquiline, his aspect both venerable and majestic."

The same historian testifies to the dignity of Edwin's reign, shown by the "tufa," or standard of feathers on a spear-head, borne before him in war and peace. A woman with a new-born child might walk through his dominion without harm, and cups were provided at the springs on the wayside for travellers. Such a time was fitted for the reception of the new religion of peace, but Edwin's days ended in war, and he perished at Heathfield (Hatfield in Yorkshire) in a battle against the heathen host led by Penda, king of Mercia, and the British King Ceadwalla (633). His death permitted the return of the sons of Ethelfrith. The eldest, Eanfrid, who is supposed to have been in exile amongst the Picts, obtained Bernicia, while Deira fell to Osric, the son of his uncle Alfric. Eanfrid, who relapsed to paganism, held his kingdom only a year; and in 634 Ceadwalla defeated Osric at York, and killed by treachery Eanfrid, who had made overtures of peace. Eanfrid's brother Oswald recovered both Bernicia and Deira by the great victory of Heavenfield near Hexham in 635. 'The most Christian king of the Northumbrians," as Bede emphatically calls him, Oswald restored Christianity throughout his whole territory, but under the monastic form he

had learnt during his exile in Iona, and with the usages as to Easter and the tonsure which distinguished the Celtic from the Roman Church. At his request Aidan, a monk of Jona, came to instruct the Angles in the Chris- tian faith, and was in 634 or 635 consecrated as bishop of Lindisfarne, the Holy Island, which became the Iona of the eastern coast.

The powerful and wise rule of Oswald not only reunited Bernicia and Deira, but subjected races of all the four lan- guages (for we may be sure Bede's expression ""'all the nations of the four languages " is an hyperbole), the Britons, the Picts, the Scots, and the Angles, to his dominion.

In 642 he fell in a battle against Penda of Mercia at Maserfield, which, whether it be the place of that name now called Winwick in Lancashire or Oswestry (Oswald's tree) in Shropshire, shows that he' was still further enlarg- ing his realm. His successor Oswy revenged his death by the defeat and death of Penda at the river Winwaed, now Winmore, near Leeds (655), which resulted in the conversion of Mercia. In his reign Wilfrid, an energetic and ambitious monk, persuaded the Northumbrians at the council of Whitby to conform to the Roman usage as to Easter and the tonsure, and Colman, the third Celtic bishop of Lindis- farne, returned to Iona with the Scottish monks and the relics of Aidan. The successful advocate of the Roman rites became bishop of York, with a diocese including all Northumberland and the Pictish subjects of Oswy, thus completing the scheme of Gregory I. and Augustine for the ecclesiastical organization of England.

On the death of Oswy in 670 the Picts revolted, but his son Egfrid succeeded in quelling the revolt and in extending his father's kingdom both against the Mercians

mov ile <——— 7.3

570 Non ra

on his southern and the Pictish kings on his northern |

border. In 684, tempted by his good fortune, he sent his general Berct to ravage Ireland, then, says Bede, a peace- ful and friendly country, which

implies that his dominions had now touched some parts of the western shores, and next year he himself invaded the territory of the northern Picts, where he was defeated and slain by their king Bredei or Brude at Nechtan's Mere (Dunnichen? in Forfarshire) in 685. The result was that not only the Picts recovered their own land and ceased to pay tribute, but some of the Britons also became independent. The Northumbrian Church under the able leadership of Wilfrid shared in the extension of the kingdom, and it also shared in its repulse. A bishopric established under Trumwine at Abercorn in Linlithgowshire, in the country of the Angles, but close to the arm of the sea dividing the Angles and the Picts (Bede, iv. 26), had to be abandoned. The Forth was destined to be the limit of Northumbrian sovereignty to the north. Shortly before the close of this reign a dispute between the king and Wilfrid led to the division of the diocese of York into two bishoprics—York, of which Bosa was made bishop, and that of Lindisfarne or Hexham, whose first bishop was Eata. A new bishopric was erected for the district of the Lindissi (Lincoln), who had been conquered by Egfrid. To this or the next reign belong the earliest fragmentary memorials of the Northumbrian or Northern English dialect which have come down to our time—the Runic inscription of the crosses at Ruthwell and perhaps those at Thornhill in Dumfriesshire and at Bewcastle in Cumberland. It was during the same period that CapMon a a monk of Whitby, the earliest English poet, died 680), and Breve (q.v.), the monk of Wearmouth and Yarrow, the earliest English historian, except the anony- mous authors of the A.S. Chronicle, Aldhelm, and Eddi, the writer of Wilfrid's life, was born (672 or 674). To their influence, and to the learned—which succeeded the warlike—epoch of Northumberland during the next century down to the death of Alcuin of York in 804, may be ascribed the fact that, while Saxon Wessex became the dominant state, the language and the land south of the Forth received from the Angles the name of English and England. Egfrid was succeeded by his brother Aldfrid, an ille- gitimate son of Oswy (685-705), who "retrieved," in the words of Bede, "the ruined state of the kingdom, though within narrower bounds." It was in his reign that Cuth- bert, a monk of Melrose, which had been founded by Bishop Eata, became bishop of Lindisfarne. His preaching commenced the Christianization of the country between the Forth and the Tweed, and his fame quickly gathering a legendary halo of miracles led to his being adopted as the patron saint of Durham and the north of England, as well as of southern Scotland. While no serious attempt was

~~made to regain the lost territory in the country of the Northern Picts, Egfrid, his son Osred (705-716), and Osred's successors, Coenred (716-718), Osric (718-729), and Ceolwulf (729-737), some of whom were descendants of a different branch of the family of Ida, gradually extended the limits of their kingdom to the west, and, following the coast, established themselves in Galloway and as far as Cunningham (Bede, v. 12), the northern district of modern Ayrshire. Shortly before 731, when Bede concluded his history, an Anglian see had been created at Whithorn (Candida Casa) in Galloway, of which Pechthelm was the first bishop, and which lasted till 803. The last of the important kings of Northumberland,~~

~~defeating the Britons in Kyle, and, in alliance with Angus Macfergus, king of the Picts, took Allclyd (Dumbarton), the chief town or fortress of the Strathclyde Britons, in 756. These were uncertain conquests.~~

~~| passage of the 4.8. Chronicle :~~

~~Bi hi ADS~~

~~The epoch of Northumbrian greatness closes with Oswy. It is significant that two of the last-named kings, Ceolwulf and Eadbert, resigned the crown for the tonsure. External circumstances combined with the enervation of the royal race to produce the decline of Northumberland. Its southern neighbour, Mercia, was ruled by two powerful kings,—Ethelbald, who ravaged Northumberland m Toi, and after his death the great Offa (757-796), the con- temporary of Charlemagne; while a series of Northum- brian kings, of whom we know little save the names and the dates of their mostly violent deaths—Oswulf (758), Ethelwald (765), Alchred (774), Ethelred (779), Alfwold (788), Osred (792), another Ethelred (796), whose wife, Ethelfreda, was a daughter of Offa—wasted in intestine struggles the kingdom of their predecessors. ;~~

~~On its northern boundary a vigorous line of Pictish kings, beginning with Angus Macfergus (731-761), the ally of Eadbert against the Britons of Strathclyde, whose chief seat was Scone, threatened, and there is no doubt often passed, the boundary of the Forth, but the Angles retained Lothian during the 8th and the first half of the 9th cen- tury, and it was not till a century after the union of the Scots and Picts under Kenneth Macalpine~~

(844), in the reign of Indulph (954-962), that Edinburgh became Scot- tish instead of Northumbrian ground. In 793 the heathen Northmen signalized the commencement of the attacks which were for several centuries to vex the coast of Britain by the sack of Lindisfarne, and in the following year of Yarrow. Though this descent was repelled, the Danish vikings with increased numbers renewed their raids in the following century. Before its close the southern half of Northumberland had received a large infusion of Danish population. Their distant kinship in race and not so dis- tant likeness of language favoured their settlement in the territory of the Angles. With the close of the 8th century the history of the kingdom of Northumberland practically ends, though a few names of kings of pure Anglian race are recorded in the 9th century.

It may be convenient to trace the subsequent fate of this king-

dom and its parts. In 827 Eadred, king of Northumberland, sub- mitted to Egbert, the founder of the greatness of Wessex, and agreed to pay tribute in order to stay the progress of that kingdom at the Humber.

In 875 the Danish host, now too large for and weary of mere raids, divided itself between Guthorm, who led his division against southern England, where its final repulse by Alfred made him the hero of his race, while Healfdene, with no Alfred amongst the Angles to oppose him, conquered Northumberland and settled his followers on the east coast, throughout the whole of ancient Deira, the southern part of ancient Bernicia, and as far west as the central districts of Anglian Cumberland. Wherever the "by" replaced the older name or gave a new name to the settlement, wherever the "+" still lingers instead of "the" as the article, linguistic scholars see certain marks of Danish occupation. This occupation retarded the northern advance of the Wessex kings, the descendants of Alfred, and a century elapsed before Edward the Elder in 924 received again at Bakewell in Derbyshire the homage of the Northum- prians, as Egbert in 827 is said to have done almost at the same point, whose position on the extreme southern border of Northum- berland is significant. This homage is recorded in the contested 'And then chose him for father and lord the king of the Scots and the whole nation of the Scots

'and Regnwald and the sons of Eadulf and all those who dwell

in Northumbria, as well Angles as Danes, Northmen, and others." But the dispute as to the precise nature and extent of the sub- mission does not concern the present subject so much as the evi- dence it affords of the mixed population of Northumberland, and of the absence of any prominent sovereign of the whole country whose name could be mentioned by the Chronicle. In the reign of Athel-

| on the son of Edward the Elder, the great mieten ad : | burgh (937), by which he defeated the united forces of Olaf Cuaran, Eadbert (737-758), pushed his arms as far as the Clyde, | Pa ee

the son of Sitric, the Danish king or earl, his father-in-law Con- stantine, king of the Scots, another Olaf, the son of Godfry, king of the Irish Danes, and the British prince of Cumbria, made the conquest of Northumberland south of the Solway and the Tweed more of a reality. Norse mercenaries under Egil, the hero of the Icelandic saga, fought in the army of Athelstan, and a few years

later the aid of Eric Blood-Axe, son of Harold the Fairhaired, had to be purchased by giving him the rule over Northumberland, which he was intended, but was unable, to hold as a barrier against the Scots and Danes. The conquest of the Northumbrian Danes was only completed in 954, when Eadred, the third son of Edward the Elder, who was king of Wessex, was able to substitute Oswulf, an earl of his own choice, for their last king, Eric, who is called by the English chroniclers simply "the son of Harold," and is supposed by Adam of Breimen to have been the son of Harold (Blue-tooth), king of Denmark, but by the best modern writers to be Eric Blood-Axe, who had returned to Northumberland and was slain at Stanemoor (954).! Eadgar (959-975), the successor of Eadred, divided Northumberland into two earldoms, which answered roughly to the ancient Deira and Bernicia, but probably more nearly to the modern county of York, of which Oslac was earl, and modern Northumberland and Durham, which Oswulf retained. The dis- memberment of the ancient kingdom had commenced in the earlier reign of Edmund, who in 945 ceded Cumbria to Malcolm I. of Scot- land on condition that he should be "his fellow-worker both by land and sea," a

~~remarkable expression in the A.S. Chronicle, indicating alliance rather than homage.~~

~~Lothian was either ceded between 970 and 975 by Eadgar to Kenneth, the son of Malcolm I., upon condition that it should retain its Anglian speech and customs, which is the account given by John of Wallingford, or conquered by the defeat of Eadulf Cudel, its ruler in the time of Canute, by Malcolm II. at the battle of Carham in 1018, as is stated by Simeon of Durham. It secms not impossible that both statements may be true, and that an earlier almost compulsory union was followed by a morc complete annexation. For England was already threatened by the last and most formidable invasion of the Danes, which was to end in its con- quest by Canute (1017). This conquest for a brief space included not only Northumberland but Scotland (1031-35). In the confused period between the Danish and the Norman conquests of England, the succession of the Northumbrian earls appears to have been this. The two earldonis of Oslac and Oswulf had been united under Wal- theof (975), who was deposed by Aithelred in favour of Waltheof's son Uhtred (1000). Uhtred defeated the Scots near Durham, and received the hand of Algifa, Athelred's daughter. He submitted to Canute, but was slain soon after his submission by a private enemy, and Eric, the husband of Canute's sister Gytha, became earl, though the northern portion of his earldom was left to the charge of Eadulf Cudel, a brother of Uhtred, whose signal defeat at Carham, we have seen, finally united Lothian to Scotland. Two obscure sons of Eadulf, Ealred and a second Eadulf, afterwards appear as earls in Bernicia in the time of Hardicanute. Both were assassinated, the latter by Siward the Strong, a Danish follower of Canute, who married a daughter of Ealred, and in 1041 reigned over all Northumberland. He was the famous earl in the narrative of whose exploits it is diffieult to separate legend from history, but to the latter apparently belongs his allianee with Malcolm Canmore, and the aid he gave in recovering his father's kingdom from Maebeth, the representative of the Celtic party in Scotland. On his death in 1055, Edward the Confessor appointed Tostig, one of the sons of Godwin, earl of Northumberland, including the detached shires of Northampton and Huntingdon. Deposed by the Northumbrians, he took refuge with his brother-in-law, the Flemish Baldwin, at Bruges. After taking part in the early designs of William the Conqueror against England, he joined in the expedition of Harold Hardrada~~

~~against his brother Harold, and was slain at Stamfordbridge (25th September 1066). After the Conquest Yorkshire was incorporated in England. Morkere the son of /Elfgar earl of Mercia, and Copsige, a thane who had acted as deputy of Tostig, still retained the northern districts, and, though they submitted to William, the subjugation was almost nominal. Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmorcland, and Durham were not sufficiently subdued to be included in the Domesday survey, though some parts of southern Westmoreland and Cumberland are contained in the description of the West Riding of Yorkshire, and parts of Lancashire in that of Cheshire. Frequent risings and constant changes of its earls prove the difficulty which the Norman kings experienced in governing the unruly northern province: Robert of Comines was slain at Durham in 1069; Cospatric was deprived for rebellion in 1070; Waltheof, who also rebelled, was executed in 1076; Walcher, who held it along with the bishopric of Durham, was murdered in 1080; Alberic resigned the dignity in 1085, and was succeeded by Robert de Moubray, after whose for- feiture in 1095 Northumberland was united by Rufus to the crown. In the reign of Henry II. the earldom was conferred on Henry, earl of Huntingdon, the son of David I. of Scotland ; after his death it was surrendered in 1154 by Maleolm IV., but its possession was always coveted and sometimes almost obtained by the Scottish kings, until the final result of the wars of the Plantagenets was to leave Scotland independent, but to fix its boundaries north of the~~

~~1 See Munch, Chronicle of Man, p. 29; and Vigfusson, Corpus Poeticum Boreale, i. p. 259, ii. p. 494 (Oxford, 1883).~~

~~Tweed, the Cheviots, and the Solway. Richard II. in 1377 regranted the earldom to Henry Percy, and the memory of its former inde- pendence probably prompted the ambition of the earls of this powerful house, which played so great a part in English history in~~

~~the 15th and 16th centuries (see PERcy).~~

~~To sum up the results of a somewhat complex and here necessarily compressed history. The ancient kingdom of Northumberland, formed by the union of all the north- eastern part of Britain between the Humber and the Forth under the Anglian kings, and the more or less complete conquest of the British or Cymric western part between the Mersey and the Clyde,~~

was ruled by the Anglian kings from the middle of the 6th to the 9th century. A great portion of it was resettled by the Danes towards the close of that century. It was conquered by the West-Saxon kings in the 10th century, but they had to allow its Danish earls to remain its real governors until shortly before the Norman Conquest, and before its close, or in the beginning of the 11th century, to cede the northern part of Cumbria and the northern part of Bernicia beyond the Tweed to the Scottish kings. Of their dominions the former, Gallo- way (the shires of Wigtown, Kirkcudbright, and part of Dumfries), became for a time an outlying district, but after David I. an integral part, though it retained for some time longer its Celtic speech and customs, while the latter, Lothian, preserving its Anglian speech and customs, became the seat of the court and the source of the civilization of Scotland. The portion of the Northumbrian kingdom which remained English was divided into the shire of York, the earldom or county of Northumberland in the modern sense, and the later counties of Cumberland, Westmore- land, and part of Lancashire. The preponderating influence in government as in language passed during the Middle Ages, and still continues to belong, to southern England, which possesses the capital London, its greatest river the Thames, and its most fertile lands. The discovery of the coal and ironstone, the sinews of manufactures, in the North, and the later development of the Mersey, the Clyde, the Humber, the Tyne, and the Forth, as the channels of commerce in modern times, have revived the iniportance of the districts comprised within the ancient kingdom of Northumberland. Whatever may be its future, its earliest history forms a memorable chapter in that of Great Britain.

Of original authorities the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle and Bede are the most important, but the former was written in Wessex, and magnifies the West-Saxon kings. After Bede, Simeon of Durham is the most trustworthy English chronicler of nortltern affairs. Eddi's Life of Wilfrid and Bede's Life of Cuthbert are of value for the history of the church. The Chronicles of the Picts and Scots, edited by Mr Skene for the record series of the Lord Clerk Register, Adamnan's Life of Columba, and the Seottish Chronicles of Fordun and Wynton, supplement, unfortunately in a fragmentary manner, the English writers. Some additional information may be antici- pated from the cdition of the passages in the Norse sagas bear- ing upon English history to be published in the English series of chronicles and memorials. The best

modern writers to consult for Northumbrian history are Lappenberg, History of the Angio- Saxons (1880); Skene, History of Celtie Scotland, vol. i. (1876) ; Robertson, Seotland wader her Early Kings; Freeman, History of the Norman Conquest, and Old English History for Children (1869); and J. R. Green's The Making of England. (4a. M.)

NORTH-WESTERN PROVINCES, Tue, a lieutenant- governorship of British India, lying between 23° 51' and 31° 5' N. lat. and between 77° 3' and 84° 43' E. long., is bounded on the N. by Tibet, on the N.E. by Nepal and Oudh, on the S. by the Chutid Nagpur districts of Bengal, Rewah, the Bundelkhand states, and the Central Provinces, and on the W. by Gwalior, Rajputana, and the Punjab, with an area under British administration of 81,858 square miles. The administrative headquarters and seat of the heutenant-governor are at Allahabad.

Physical Aspects—The North-Western Provinces occupy, roughly speaking, the upper basin of the Ganges and the Jumna. The province of OUDH (q.v.) has since 1877 been

572

under the administrative charge of the lieutenant-governor at Allahabad, but in respect of its land and courts it still remains a distinct chief-commissionership. With this ex- ception, the North-Western Provinces include the whole upper portion of the Gangetic basin from the Himalayas and the Punjab plain to the Vindhydn plateau and the low-lying rice-fields of Bengal. Taken as a whole, the lieutenant-governorship consists of the richest wheat-bear- ing country in India. It contains many of the most famous cities of Indian history and is studded with thriving villages, interspersed at distances with large commercial towns. Except during the hot months, when the crops are off the fields, the general aspect is that of a verdant and welltilled but monotonous plain, merging into hilly or mountainous country at the extreme northern and southern edges of the basin.

The extreme north-western or Himalayan region comprises the native state of GarhwéAl, with the British districts of Dehra Dun, Garhwal, and Kumaéun. The economic value of this mountainous tract is confined to the

growth of tea in Kumaun and the export of forest produce. South of the Himalayas, from which it is separated by valleys or diins, is the Siwdlik range, which slopes down to the fruit- ful plain of the Doab (two waters), a large irregular horn- shaped tongue of land enclosed between the Ganges and Jumna. The great boundary rivers flow through low-lying valleys fertilized by their overflow or percolation, while a high bank leads up to the central upland, which, though naturally dry and unproductive except where irrigated by wells, has been transformed into an almost unbroken sheet of cultivation by various canals and their distributaries. This favoured inter-fluvial region may be fitly regarded as the granary of upper India. North of the Ganges, and enclosed between that river and the Himalayas and Oudh, lies the triangular plain of Rohilkhand. This tract presents the same general features as the Gangetic valley, varied by the damp and pestilential submontane region of the Tarai on the north-east, at the foot of the Kumaun hills. South of the Jumna is the poor and backward region of Bundel-khand, comprising the districts of Jalaun, Jhansi, Lalitpur, Hamirpur, and Banda, besides several petty native states under the administrative control of the Government of India. The soil is generally rocky and unfertile, and the population impoverished, scanty, and ignorant. The south- ernmost portion of Bundelkhand is much cut up by spurs of sandstone and granite hills, running down from the Vind- hyan system; but the northern half near the Jumna has a somewhat richer soil, and comes nearer in character to the plain of the Dodb. Below the junction of the Ganges and the Jumna at Allah4bad the country begins to assume the appearance of the Bengal plains, and also once more expands northwards to the foot of the Nepél Himalayas. This tract consists of three portions, separated by the Ganges and the Gogra. The division south of the Ganges comprises portions of Allahabéd, Benares, and Ghazipur, together with the whole of Mirz4pur, and in general features somewhat resembles Bundelkhand, but the lowlands along the river bank are more fertile. The triangular tract between the Ganges and the Gogra and the boundary of Oudh is the most fertile corner of the Gangetic plain, and contains the densest population. It comprises part of Allahabad, Jaunpur, parts of Benares and Ghazipur, and the whole of Azamgarh. The trans-Gogra region, com- prising Basti and Gorakhpur districts, presents a wilder, submontane appearance. But even here cultivation has widely extended, and the general aspect is that of a well-tilled and verdant plain.

Besides the three great rivers—the Ganges, Jumna, and Gogra—there are the following secondary streams, each with numerous minor tributaries :—the East and West Kali

NORTH -WE's TE rN PF Orr PoC ae

and the Hindan flow through the Dodb; the Chambal intersects the trans-Jumna tract; in Bundelkhand the principal streams are the Betwaé and the Ken; the Rdém- ganga, rising in Garhwal, pursues a very tortuous course through Rohilkhand; the Gumti enters the Provinces from Oudh, and flows past Jaunpur to join the Ganges ; the trans-Gogra region is divided into two nearly equal parts by the Rapti. All the drainage of the country falls directly or indirectly into the Ganges.

Climate, &c.—The climate of the North-Western Provinces as a whole may be classed as hot and dry. The Himalayan districts are, of course, cool, and have a much greater rainfall than the plains. They are succeeded by a broad submontane belt, the Tarai, which is rendered moist by the mountain torrents, and is covered by forest from end to end. This region bears a singularly bad reputation as the most unhealthy in all India, and in many parts only the acclimatized aborigines can withstand its deadly malaria. The plain country is generally warm and dry, the heat becoming more op-pressive as the general level of the country sinks towards Allahabad and Benares, or among the hills of Bundelkhand. The monthly temperature of twelve stations in 1881-82 was as follows :—maxi- mum, 112° Fahr.; minimum, 40°71 Fahr.; general mean, 77°°8 Fahr. The maximum was 82° at Chakrata in Dehra Din, 109° in Meerut, 114° in Allahabad, and 116° in Jhansi; the minimum was 28° at Chakrata, 35° at Meerut, 41° at Allahabad, and 44° at Jhansi. The general mean was 57°°7 at Chakrata, 76°°8 at Meerut, 78°°4 at Allahabad, 78°°8 at Benares, and 79°°1 at Jhansi. The total rain- fall during the same year amounted to 54°03 inches at Chakrata, 97°49 at Dehra, 29°63 at Meerut, 35°48 at Bareli, 34°01 at Allaha- bad, 33°77 at Benares, and 52°62 at Jhansi. The chief discase is fever, to which a large proportion of deaths are due.

Population.—The North-Western Provinces contain a denser population than any country of Europe, excepting Belgium and England. The census of 1881 rcturned the population of the Brit-

; i ; Division, District. “Area. POP” | pivision.| District, | Area, Popula- Meerut | DelraDin 1193} 144,070 |) Jhansi ../ Jaliun ..!1469| 418,142 Sahdran- | 2221} 979,544 Jhansi ..| 1567] 333,227 pur Lalitpur..| 1947] 249,088 Muzaffar- | 1656] 758,444 || Allahé- | Cawnpur | 2370! 1,181,396 nagar bad Fatehpur |1639| 683,745 Meerut ..! 2379 | 1,313,137 Banda….] 3061 698,608 Buland- {1915} 924,822 Allahabad | 2833 | 1,474,106 shahr Hamirpur | 2288 | 507,387 Aligarh ..| 1955 | 1,021,187 Jaunpur. .| 1554 | 1,209,663 Rohil- | Bijnaur ../1868| 721,450 || Benares | Azamgarh ! 2147 | 1,604,654 khand | Murdda- | 2282 | 1,155,173 ! Mirzapur | 5224 | 1,136,796 bad Benares ..| 998] 892,684 Budaun .| 2002] 906,451 Ghazipur | 1478 | 1,014,099 | Bareli ….| 1614 | 1,030,936 Gorakh | 4598 | 2,617,120 | Shahja- 1746 | 856,946 pur hanpur | Basti ….| 2753 | 1,630,612 Pilibhit ..| 1372 451,601 Ballia ….] 1144 924,763 Agra ..’ Muttra ..| 1453] 671,690 || Kuinaun | Almora ../6000] 498,641 Agra ….| 1850] 974,656 |) Garhwal..| 5500] 345,629 Farrukha-|1719| 907,608 Tarai ….) 938} 206,993 bad Garhwal or Tehri 4180 | 199,836 Mainpuri’ | 1697 | 801,216 | (native state) Etawah ..| 1694} 722,371} Rampur (native 945 | 541,914 Etah ….| 1739 756,523 | state)

Mohammedans muster strongest in the northern divisions of Meerut and Rohilkhand, where they number 2,327,620. In Benares, Allahabad, Agra, and Kumaun divisions they form a percentage respectively of 10°7, 9°5, 8°7, and 8°4 of the popula- tion. Many of the descendants of converts forced to embrace Islam at the sword’s point retain several Hindu customs and adhere to purely Hindu observances and ceremonies.

Most of the people are gathered into small villages. There are, however, no fewer than 238 towns with a population exceeding 5000, and containing an aggregate of 3,513,107 inhabitants. No other part of India contains so large a proportion of celebrated cities, though recent changes have made over Delhi, the most famous of all, to the adjacent province of the Punjab. Thirteen towns contained in 1872 a population exceeding 50,000—namely, (1) Benares, 199,700; (2) Agra, 160,203; (3) Cawnpur, 155,444; (4) Allahabad, 148,547; (5) Bareli (Bareilly), 113,417; (6) Meernt, 99,565; (7) Shahjahanpur, 74,830; (8) Murddabad, 67,387; (9) Farrukhabad, 62,437 ; (10) Kofl (Algarh), 61,730 ; (11) Saharan- pur, 59,194; (12) Gorakhpur,

57,922 ; and (18) Mirzapur, 56,378. Eighteen towns contain a population of between 20,000 and 50,000.

"The other places of interest in the provinces are—the hill sanataria

NO R—

of Naini Tal, Mastiri (Mussooree), and Landaur, the sacred town of Hardwar, the ruined sites of Kanauj and Hastinapur, the deserted Mughal capital of Fatehpur Sikri, and the ancient temples and fortresses of Mahoba and Kalinjar. Most of the great towns lie along the banks of the Ganges and the Jumna.

Agriculture.—Of a total area of 81,858 square miles, 38,169 were returned as under cultivation in 1881-82. Eleven great canal irri- gation works have been undertaken by Government :—(1) Ganges Canal, (2) Eastern Jumna Canal, (3) Agra Canal, (4) Din Canals, (5) Rohilkhand Canals, (6) Bijnaur Canals, (7) Bundelkhand Lakes, (8) Lower Ganges Canal, (9) Bundelkhand survey, (10) Sardah Canal survey, and (11) Betwa Canal. The total area irrigated in 1881-82 by Government works amounted to 1,395,217 acres. There are two principal harvests, in autumn and spring. The great agricultural staple is wheat. The chief commercial crops include indigo, cotton, sugar, oil-seeds, and opium. The cultivation of tea is confined to the submontanc districts of Kumdaun, Garhwal, and Dehra Din. The produce is chiefly manufactured into green tea, which finds a ready sale across the frontier in Central Asia, and is also exported to England. Rice and sugar-cane grow chiefly in the river valleys or in irrigated fields ; wheat is raised on the uplands by the aid of canals and wells ; millets and cotton grow on the drier soils, while tobacco, vegetables, and other richer crops occupy manured plots in the neighbourhood of villages. The three principal recognized tenures are—(1) zaminddri, in which the whole land is held and managed in common, the rents and profits of the entire estate being thrown into a common stock and divided among the shareholders ; (2) pattidart, in which the lands are held severally by the different proprietors, all of whom are jointly responsible for the Government revenue ; (3) bhdydchéra, in which portions of the soil are held severally, while other portions may be held in common, with joint responsibility for the Government demand. In the hill tracts the peasantry are well off and independent ; in the more

~~favoured plain districts they are in fairly comfortable circumstances; but in Bundelkhand they still suffer from the effects of former misrule and from the effects of recent famines.~~

~~Commerce and Trade ; Communication, d&c.—The exports of the North-Western Provinces are principally confined to its raw agri- cultural produce—wheat, oil-seeds, cotton, indigo, sugar, molasses, timber and forest produce, dye-stufls, ghi, opium, and tobacco. The imports consist mainly of Manchester piece-goods, metal-work, manufactured wares, salt, and European goods. The principal manufactures are sugar, indigo, and coarse cotton cloth. Orna- mental metal-work is made at Benares. The only factories on the English model are the Elgin and Muir cotton mills at Cawnpur, the Shahjahanpur rum distillery, and breweries at Mastiri and Néini Tal. The largest and most valuable portion of the trade of the Pro- vinces is now conducted by rail direct with Calcutta, but the great waterways of the Ganges and Jumna still carry a large part of the heavy traffic. The Gogra forms the main channel for the grain and cotton of Gorakhpur, Basti, and Azamgarh, and for the forest pro- duce of Nepal. The lines of railway are the East Indian, which enters the North-Western Provinces from Bengal, and has its ter- minus at Delhi; the Sind, Punjab, and Delhi line ; the Oudh and Rohilkhand Railway; and the Rajputana State Railway, connecting Agra with Bhartpur. The great trunk road traverses the heart of the Provinces.~~

~~Administration.—The North-Western Provinces are under the administrative charge of a lieutenant-governor, who resides at Alla- habad. The total revenue (including that of Oudh) in 1881-82 amounted to £9,075,727, and the expenditure to £4,362,274. The chief item of receipt is the land-tax, which produced during the same year £5,751,104. Education is making steady progress throughout the central Gangetic plain, though still very backward in the Himalayan districts, in Bundelkhand, and in the remoter parts of Rohilkhand and the trans-Gogra tract. The total number of colleges and schools in the North-Western Provinces in 1881-82 was 5063, with a roll of 170,966 pupils, of whom 142,190 were Hindus and 24,437 Mohammedans. The principal institutions for higher English education are the Muir Central College at Allahabad, and the Government and Church Missionary Society's Colleges at Agra. The Benares College gives high~~

Sanskrit education, while Delhi College, just beyond the borders, gives instruction in Arabic and Persian. Primary education is afforded by a complete system of village schools, the Provinces being divided into three circles of inspection, and elementary instruction is now brought within easy reach of all who choose to avail themselves of it.

History.—The traditions of the Mahdbhdrata cluster round the city of Hastinapur in Meerut district, which, with Indraprastha, whose shapeless ruins are still to be seen near Delhi, formed the re- spective capitals of the Pandavas and Kauravas, The earliest empire in this part of India, however, of which any certain monuments re- main was that of the Buddhist dynasty of Magadha, which attained its greatest development under Asoka (see vol. xii. p. 784 sq.).

Continuous history begins with the Mohammedan invasion of Mahmud of Ghazni, who sacked the sacred cities of Kanauj and Muttra in 1017 a.p. Mohanuned Ghori, however, was the real

NO XK 573

founder of the Moslem power in Hindustan. In 1193 the seat of the Moslem empire was fixed at Delhi, where it remained, with few intermissions, till the British conquest.

The British first came into connexion with the North-Western Provinces as they advanced along the valley of the Ganges from Bengal. In 1768 the nawab wazir of Oudh, with the phantom emperor Shah Alam, invaded Bengal. They received a crushing defeat at Baxar, and the emperor, with Balwant Sinh, r4jé of Benares, joined the British camp. In 1775 the nawédb of Oudh, Asaf-ud-daula, ceded Benares, Jaunpur, and Ghazipur to the British, retaining Allahabad and Korah, which had been taken from the emperor in the previous year, when the British sold them to Oudh.

The nawab wazir, having agreed to pay a subsidy for the English troops maintained for his aid, and being always in arrear, signed in 1801 the treaty of Lucknow, by which he made over to the British the whole of his Oudh dominions in the Doab, together with Rohilkhand. For Lord Lake's campaign in 1808 against Sindhia, which brought the whole remaining

~~portion of the North-Western Provinces under British rule, see vol. xii. p. 804. The Himalayan districts of Kumaun and Garhwal were not acquired until after the Gurkha war of 1814-15, while the Delhi territory remained the personal apanage of the Mughal royal family until 1832, when it passed to the direct government of the East India Company.~~

~~The first half-century of the British occupation was a period of peacefwl progress. The Dodb especially rose into a great agricul- tural and commercial tract, filled with new and growing cities, such as Cawnpur, Meerut, Aligarh, Rurki (Roorkee), and Sahdran- pur. This peaceful period was interrupted by the mutiny of 1857, which first broke out in the North-Western Provinces, and pro- duced more disastrous effects in this tract than in any other part of India. Since the repression of the rebellion the principal event of importance in the Provinces has been the rapid development of the railway system, which is revolutionizing the commercial condition of the country and throwing open fresh outlets for its agricultural wealth. The outlying chief-commissionership of Oudh was placed under the administration of the lieutenant-governor of the North-Western Provinces from January 1877. CW. Weeki.)~~

~~NORTH-WEST TERRITORY was at first the vague general designation of all that portion of British North America which lay to the north-west of the provinces of the St Lawrence basin. In the British North America Act of 1867 provision was made for the eventual admission into the Dominion of Canada of Rupert's Land and the North- Western Territory. When, in 1869-70, the territories of the Hudson's Bay Company (Rupert's Land, &c.) were incorporated with Canada, the province of Manitoba was formed out of the district lying between 49° and 50° 30' N. lat. and between 96° and 99° W. long,, and "any por- tion of Rupert's Land and the North-West Territory out- side" of those limits was to be governed by the lieutenant- governor of Manitoba under the name of the North-West Territories. In 1876 the district of Keewatin (or Kewatin) was constituted; in 1881 the limits of Manitoba were shifted north to 52° 30' and west to 101° 20'; and in 1882 the four new districts of Assiniboia, Saskatchewan, Alberta, and Athabasca were organized. (1) Keewatin (395,000 square miles) lies due north of Manitoba, and extends as far as Boothia,on the Arctic Ocean, (2) Assiniboia (about 95,000 square miles) lies west of Manitoba between 101° 20' W. long, and~~

the line dividing the 10th and 11th ranges of townships of the Lands System Survey, and is bounded northward by the 9th correction line (near 52° N, lat.). It contains Fort Pelly, Fort Ellice, Qu'Appelle, and Regina (on the Canadian Pacific Railroad), the last of which has been chosen as the future capital of the province. (3) Saskatchewan (about 114,000 square miles) lies north of Assiniboia, and extends north to the 18th correction line (about 54° N. lat.) and east to the Nelson river and Lake Winnipeg. It contains Battleford, Carleton, Prince Albert. (4) Alberta (100,000 square miles) is all the country due west of Assiniboia and Saskatchewan as far as the boundary of British Columbia. (5) Athabasca (122,000 square miles) is the country due north of Alberta as far as the 32d correc- tion line (about 60° N. lat.). The term North-West Terri- tories is now used to indicate, not only the unorganized region to the north-west, but all the unorganized region of British North America, inclusive even of Labrador.

574

NORTHWICH, a market town of Cheshire, England, is situated at the confluence of the rivers Weaver and Dane, near the Trent and Mersey Canal, and near the main line of the London and North-Western Railway in the Chester branch of the Cheshire lines, 18 miles north-east of Ches- ter and 22 south-west from Manchester. The streets are narrow and irregular, and many of the houses are screwed and bolted together to keep them secure from subsidences arising from the dissolving of the salt strata (180 feet in thickness), caused by the pumping of brine for the pur- pose of evaporation. Among the public buildings are the market-house, the drill-hall, and the Victoria club. Salt springs in Northwich were known to the Romans. By the Britons it was called the Black Salt Town. The substratum of rock-salt upon which the town rests was first discovered in 1670. It consists of two beds, a lower and an upper, which lie horizontally, the lower about 330 feet from the surface. In the lower stratum there exist several mines in the neighbourhood of the town. From two of these, each 40 acres in extent, the rock-salt is pro- duced. The average quantity of salt exported from the town annually amounts to over 500,000 tons. Many of the inhabitants are engaged in building flat boats to convey the salt to Liverpool; and shipbuilding, rope and sail making, brick making, iron and brass founding, and tanning are also carried on. One mile from the town the

river Weaver trustees have constructed an hydraulic lift to connect their navigation with the Trent and Mer- sey Canal on the higher level. By the river vessels of 500 tons burden can approach the town. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1920 acres) in 1881 was 12,246.

At the time of the Norman survey Northwich constituted part of the demesne of the earls of Chester. In the reign of Richard III. it passed to the crown, and afterwards was granted to the Derby family, who sold it a century ago; in recent years the manor was acquired by the local board by purchase. The town in

1643 was fortified by the Parliament, was taken by the Royalists, but was retaken by the Parliamentarians.

NORTON, Hon. Mrs Caro.ing ExizaBetu (1808-1877), afterwards Lady Stirling-Maxwell, ranks high among the women of letters of the 19th century. She was born in 1808. One of the three beautiful granddaughters of Sheridan, daughters of his son Thomas, "three Graces" of London society in the reign of George IV., she showed literary ambition and faculty before she was out of her teens. Her first publication, made at the age of seventeen, was a merry satire, Zhe Dandies' Rout, illustrated by herself, full of girlish high spirits and wit. The preference shown for mournful and tender themes in her subsequent writings is in strange contrast with this opening jew desprit. Her first essay in serious verse was made in 1829 with The Sorrows of Rosalie, the next in 1831 with The Undying One, a version of the legend of the Wandering Jew. Fluent melody of versification, richness and felicity of language, great tenderness of sentiment, and rhetorical luxuriance of illustration showed that she had inherited no small portion of her grandfather's genius, and brought her at once into fame. Her portrait appeared in Fraser's Magazne in 1831 as that of " the leader of the female band." Curiously enough, the author of the accompanying notice describes her as " happy in all the appliances of wealth and fame," and asks, "Of a life like hers what can be told?" at the very time when, according to her own subsequent account, she was "learning the law respecting women, piecemeal, by suffering from every one of its defects of protection." She had made an unfortunate marriage in 1827 with the Hon. George Norton, brother of Lord Grantley ; then, after three years of protests on her part and

~~good promises on his, she had taken the decisive step of leaving his house for her sister's, had "condoned" on~~

~~NOR—NOR~~

~~further good promises, and had returned, to find matters worse. The husband's unmanly persecutions culminated in 1836 in an action brought against Lord Melbourne for seduction of his wife, which the jury decided against Mr Norton's claims without leaving the box. Mrs Norton made her own unhappy experience a plea for addressing to the queen in 1855 an eloquent letter on the law concern- ing divorce, and her writings had considerable influence in ripening opinion for recent changes in the legal status of married women. During the reign of William IV., Mrs Norton was at the height of her literary reputation, con- tributing many criticisms, sketches, tales, and songs to various periodicals and annuals, and using pencil as well as pen. She was not a mere writer of elegant trifles ; she was one of the priestesses of the "'reforming" spirit ; she appeared at her best in such works as A Votce from the Factories (1836), a most eloquent and rousing condemna- tion of child labour. In a similar vein of warm sympathy with the unfortunate, she addressed a poem in 1845 to the prince of Wales, exhorting this Child of the Islands to use his power for social reforms. Aunt Carry's Ballads, dedicated to her nephews and nieces, are written with playful tenderness and grace of the most charming kind. Later in life she produced three novels, Stuart of Dunleath (1851), Lost and Saved (1863), and Old Sir Douglas (1868). All three are written with great power and freshness of style, enthusiastic facility in the exposure of social impostures and in the exhibition of ideals of generous conduct. Her heroines are too painfully tried by calami- tous misunderstandings and injuries, especially Eleanor Raymond, the heroine of the first, whose long series of misfortunes finds hardly any relief from childhood till death. This may have been due to the writer's moral pur- pose, originating in her own bitter experience, of cham- pioning the wrongs of her sex; but it is a singular fact, pointing to temperament as the cause, that Johnson made the same complaint about the novel of her great-grand- mother, Frances Sheridan. Mrs Norton's last poem was the Lady of La Garaye (1861), her last publication the half humorous, half heroic story of The Rose of Jericho in 1870. She died on the 14th of~~

June 1877. Mr Norton died in 1875; and Mrs. Norton in the last year of her life was married to Sir W. Stirling-Maxwell.

NORWALK, a township of the United States, in Fair- field county, Connecticut, on Long Island Sound, 43 miles north-east of New York, at the terminus of the Danbury and Norwalk Railroad. It contains the borough of Nor- walk, dating from 1836, and the city of South Norwalk, incorporated in 1870, the population of township, borough, and city in 1880 being respectively 13,956, 5308, and 3726. Vessels drawing 6 feet of water ascend the Nor- walk river at low tide, and there is regular steamboat communication with New York. The shallo6w waters of the bay at the mouth of the river form a good locality for oyster-culture, and about three hundred families in South Norwalk are engaged in this industry. Locks, knobs (of New Jersey clay), and iron bolts and screws are manufac- tured in the township on a very extensive scale ; and there are also iron-foundries, shipyards, flour-mills, planing-mills, felt factories, hat factories, carriage-works, shoe factories, &c. Norwalk was settled about 1640 and incorporated as a town in 1653. The settlement was burned by Governor Tryon's Hessians in 1779.

NORWALK, a post-village of the United States, capital of Huron county, Ohio, 58 miles east of Toledo by the Lake Shore and Michigan Southern Railway and also on the Wheeling and Lake Erie Railroad, is a flourishing little place of 5704 inhabitants (1880), containing planing- mills, grist-mills, manufactories of sewing-machines, organs, carpet-sweepers, and shoes, and breweries.

Plate Xx.

Configu- ration.

575

RQEWsA Y

Part I.—GEoGRAPHY.

ORWAY comprises the western and northern divi- sions of the Scandinavian peninsula. It is bounded N. by the Arctic Ocean, W. by the Norwegian Sea and the North Sea, 8. by the Skagerrak, and E. by Sweden, Finland, and Russia. It lies between 57° 59' (Lindesnes, or The Naze) and 71° 11' (Knivskjerodden, close to the North Cape) N. lat. and 4° 30'5 (Utver, off Sogne Fjord) and 31° 12'5 (René, adjacent to Vardo) E. long. The length of the coast-line, exclusive of fjords, bays, and islands, is 3018 miles, and the area 122,780 square miles. The country, which has its greatest breadth, 280 miles, at the 61st parallel of latitude, is comparatively narrow, measur- ing only 70 miles across between the 64th and the 68th parallels.

The Scandinavian peninsula constitutes for the most part a rocky region, of which the loftiest tracts lie on the Norwegian side. The interior of Finmark, the most northerly district of Norway, has no considerable heights ; but the frontier between Sweden and Norway, from Tromsé stift (69° N. lat.) to the southern part of Throndhjem stift (63° N, lat.), is marked by a continuous mountain range, called Kjélen (the keel), which, geologically, extends in lower levels still farther south as the frontier between the two countries. In this range are specially conspicuous the alpine regions occupying the interior of Troms6 stift, with peaks reaching a maximum altitude of 5475 feet,—the ice- clad tract of Sulitjelma east of Salten Fjord (6178 feet), the heights east of Throndhjem Fjord (4560 feet), and those east of Roros (4680 feet). From this region the loftiest line of the rocky mass takes a direction bearing west-south- west, under the name of the Dovre Fjeld, commencing with a plateau only 2000 feet high, but rising farther west into mountainous tracts like those of Snehetten, whose summit (7566 feet) was long regarded as the highest in Norway, Rundane (6930 feet), the Jotun Fjelde, where the loftiest peak of Norway, or indeed of northern Europe, occurs (Galdhépiggen, 8400 feet), and terminating at its western extremity, north of Sogne Fjord, in the snow-field known as Justedalsbre, where Lodalskaupen reaches the height of 6790 feet. From the Jotun Fjelde the ridge extends southwards, under the name of the Lang Fjelde, comprising the Fille Fjeld (Suletind, 5807 feet; Jokuleggen, 6247 feet), the Hemsedal Fjeld, Hallingskarvet (6430 feet), Hallingjékelen (6539 feet), Hardangervidden (Haarteigen, 6063 feet), and is gradually lost in more moderate eleva- tions towards the extreme south of the country. Thus a

glance at the map will show that the ridge of highest points which traverses the Scandinavian peninsula runs almost parallel to the west coast of Norway, and that the

lines retain on the whole this relative position in their.

various deviations. The narrower part of the mountain mass occurs on the side of the ridge facing the Norwegian Sea, the broader part on that facing the Baltic and its arms. In the latter direction, 7.c., eastward, the surface of the country presents a comparatively uniform slope, alike in Sweden and in the part of Norway lying south of the Dovre Fjeld and east of the Lang Fjelde. West of the ridge, on the other hand, the rocky mass maintains on the whole a higher elevation, sinking comparatively slowly and here and there in ledges towards the sea, so that in various localities its final descent to the ocean is exceedingly abrupt, or it terminates in lofty precipitous islands.

In Norway the mountainous region constitutes chiefly |

a vast plateau extending well-nigh over the whole country,

the general outline of which has been noted above. From this tableland rise the summits of the mountains, and the rocky mass itself is intersected by wide fissures, forming valleys, lakes, and fjords. The roads across the mountain ridge traverse the valleys, and hence can afford no standard by which to measure its height. Its elevation is estimated at from 2000 to 4000 feet in different localities. From the position of this mountain ridge it naturally follows that the longest valleys and the longest rivers are found in the "east country," ¢.¢., the part of Norway lying to the east of the Lang Fjelde and south of the Dovre Fjeld, - whereas on the west coast the valleys are invariably short, and many of the fissures are occupied by deep fjords pene- trating far into the interior. Such parts of the country as may justly be entitled plains (as, for instance, Romerike in east Norway, and Lister and Jederen on the south-west coast) are exceedingly limited as to both number and ex- tent. tances, and even then only exceptionally by large vessels. It is only in those comparatively frequent cases where the rivers expand into lakes that they can, strictly speaking, be navigated by ships. On the other hand, the water- falls in Norway are exceedingly numerous, and many of

them remarkable for their height, body of water, and great beauty. The most important rivers are enumerated below.

(1) The Klar Elv flows from Femundsé into Sweden. (2) The Tista (7 miles) flows through Femsé and thence into the sea at Fre- derikshald. (3) The Glommen, the largest river in the Scandinavian peninsula (850 miles), rises in Sondre (South) Throndhjem amt, north of Roros, flows through Osterdal, and disembogues by two arms into the Skagerrak at Frederikstad. It is navigable for large ships 7 miles from its mouth up to Sarpsborg, where it forms the celebrated Sarpfos (69 feet). The Glommen has numerous tributaries, of which the most considerable is the Vormen, flowing out of Lake Mjosen. (4) The Gudbrand Laagen (50 miles), rising in

| Lesjeskogen Vand (a lake with two outlets) on the Dovre Fjeld and

flowing through Gudbrandsdal, forms Lake Losna and falls into Lake Mjosen at Lillehammer. (5) The Drams Elv (163 miles, reckoned from the source of the Begna), the outlet of Lake Tyri- fjord, falls at Drammen into Drammen Fjord, an arm of Christiania Fjord. The chief tributaries of the Drams Elv are the Rands Elv, which flows through Rands Fjord; the Begna (87 miles), which rises in the Fille Fjeld and passes through Valders; and the Hallingdal Elv (113 miles), which has its source in Halling- skarvet and flows through Hallingdal and Lake Kroéderen. The two first of these tributary streams unite at Honefos, at the northern extremity of Lake Tyrifjord. (6) The Nummedal Laagen (143 miles) rises in the mountain lake Normands Laagen on Hardanger- vidden (Waste of Hardanger), flows through Nummedal, passes the mining town of Kongsberg, and falls into the Skagerrak at Laurvik. (7) The Skien Elv (126 miles) receives the drainage of eastern Thelemark and falls at Skien into Skien Fjord. (8) The Nisser Elv (112 miles), from Nisser Vand, falls into the sea at Arendal. (9) The Topdal Elv (84 miles) rises in western Thelemark and disembogues at Christiansand. (10) The Otteren (140 miles) flows through Seetersdal, where it expands into several lakes, and falls at Christiansand into the Skagerrak. (11) The Mandal Elv (85 miles) reaches the Skagerrak at Mandal. (12) The Sire-aa (84 miles) traverses Siredal, forms Siredal Vand, and disembogues into the North Sea. (13) The Bjoreia (22 miles) rises on Hardanger- | vidden, forms the celebrated Voringfos (474 feet high), and

~~dis- charges itself inté Hardanger Fjord. (14) The Rauma (36 miles), from Lesjeskogen Vand, flows through Romsdal and has its outlet at Veblungsnes into Romsdal Fjord. (15) The Driva (70 miles), from Snehetten on the north side of the Dovre Fjeld, flows through Drivdal and disembogues into Sundal Fjord. (16) The Orkla (98 miles), flowing from Opdal through Orkedal, discharges itself into Throndhjem Fjord. (17) The Gula (78 miles), rises in close proxi- mity to the springs of the Glommen and flows through Guldal to Throndhjem Fjord near the embouchure of the Orkla. (18) The Nea (70 miles), from Selbusjé, the river on which Throndhjem is situated, forms the Lerfos. (19) The Namsen Elv (85 miles) flows through Namdal and enters Namsen Fjord at Namsos. (20) The | Ros Elv (16 miles), the outlet of Ros Vand, falls into Ranen Fjord. | (21) The Ranen Elv (42 miles), from the frontier range, disem-~~

~~Hence the rivers are navigable only for short dis- Rivers.~~

~~Lakes.~~

~~5/6~~

~~bogues into Ranen Fjord. (22) The Salten Elv (438 miles) falls into Salten Fjord. (28) The Maals Elv (74 miles) flows into Malangen Fjord. (24) The Skibotten Elv (43 miles) falls into Lyngen Fjord. (25) The Reisen Elv (70 miles), from the Swedish — Norwegian frontier, disembogues into Reisen Fjord. (26) The Alten Elv (98 miles), from the Finmark plateau, flows past Kautokeino and falls into Alten Fjord ; it is navigable with boats for a considerable dis- tance. (27) The Tana Elv (175 miles), which constitutes through- out a great part of its course the frontier between Norway and Finland, disembogues into Tana Fjord; it also is navigable with boats for a considerable distance. (28) The Neiden Elv (50 miles) is in south Varanger. (29) The Pasvik Elv (77 miles), which for part of its course constitutes the Russian frontier, drains the great Enare Lake and flows into Kloster Fjord, an arm of Varanger Fjord. (30) The Jakobs Elv (15 miles), the last frontier river bordering on Russia, disembogues close to King Oscar II.'s Chapel.~~

~~The fresh-water lakes of Norway must, as already stated, be generally regarded as mere river expansions. Hence they are, as a rule, long and narrow, and, to judge from the~~

~~soundings hitherto made, exceedingly deep.~~

~~The most important are ;—Fzmundso in Osterdal, 35 miles long, 2300 feet above the sea; Oieren (Glommen); Mjésen, the largest inland lake of Norway, 57 miles long, with a surface-area of 200 square miles, 400 feet above the sea, and 1483 feet in depth, the bottom being 1083 feet beneath the level of the North Sea ; Rands- fjord, 43 miles long; Tyrifjord, comparatively quadrangular in form; Kréderen (the Hallingdal Elv), Nordsjo, Hiterdal Vand, Tinsjé, Siljord Vand, Bandak Vand, Nisser Vand, in Thelemark ; Bygdin, Gjende, 3314 feet above the sea; Vinster Vandene (Jotun Fyelde), Hornindal Vand (in Nordfjord), Selbusjo (Throndhjem), Ros Vand, possibly the largest inland lake of Norway next to Mjosen, and by comparison of a somewhat more quadrangular form, in Helgeland; and Alte Vand (Tromsé stift). A map of Norway on a large scale shows a prodigious number of smaller sheets of water, more particularly in Christiansand stift. The total surface- area of all the fresh-water lakes of Norway is estimated at 2930 square miles, or 2°38 per cent. of the area of the land.~~

~~Southen The numerous and in many cases very extensive fjords,~~

~~coast.~~

~~Western coast.~~

~~as well as the height and contour of the country, give to the different parts of the coast of Norway a remarkably varied character. For long distances the mainland does not come into direct contact with the sea, girdled as it is by a belt of islands, holms, and skerries, more or less thickly set, which forms the so-called "skjeergaard " (fence of skerries) or outer coast. Between this wall of islets and the mainland, accordingly, extends a connected series of sounds—'"leder" (roads), as they are called—of the greatest importance for coastal navigation, since they admit of the employment of smaller and weaker vessels. The whole of the coast from Svinesund, the terminal point of the southern frontier towards Sweden, as far as Lister, is comparatively low. Of its most noteworthy fjords the first in order is that of Christiania, 90 miles long from south to north, or from the Ferder lighthouse to Chris- tiania. Here, at its head, it forms Bunde Fjord, extending north to south ; and some distance down Drammen Fjord. Farther~~

west comes Langesund Fjord, which enters Skien Fjord in a northerly direction. The remaining fjords on this tract of the coast are of minor importance. Of islands must be mentioned those in close proximity to Christiania : —Jeléen, in the vicinity of Moss; the Hvaléer, off the eastern shore of Christiania Fjord ; Néteré and Tjomé, off the western shore ; Jomfruland, in the vicinity of Krageré; and Troméen, near Arendal. The navigable roads or sounds on this part of the coast are not strictly connected, though comparatively considerable in extent. Open tracts, un-protected by a belt of islets and skerries, occur at the mouth of Langesund Fjord, and along the coast westwards from Lindesnes. At Lister the coast begins to rise, and continues to do so as far as the flats of Jeederen, where the land has a gentle slope towards the interior of the country. This tract, with the sole exception of Egeréen, has no girdle of skerries, nor is it anywhere intersected by any considerable fjords.

From Bukken Fjord, however, which lies fully exposed to the sea, the "skjergaard," in a stricter sense, com-

NO RoW ey

[COASTS AND FJORDS.

mences, to continue almost uninterruptedly along the whole west coast. Bukken Fjord sends off several arms, the principal of which are Stavanger Fjord and Lyse Fjord, the latter noted for its great narrowness and its lofty precipitous walls. The roads or navigable sounds between Bukken Fjord and Bergen are open to the sea at the mouths of the larger fjords only. Of such the most noteworthy is Hardanger Fjord, which, beginning at Bom-melen and piercing the country for 80 miles in a north- easterly direction, sends off several arms. That nearest the head is the picturesque Sor Fjord, lying north and south. From Bergen northwards to Cape Stad there is, if the mouths of the fjords be excepted, a well-protected "led" or road. At the 61st parallel of latitude we have the longest fjord of Norway, Sogne Fjord, which penetrates 100 miles into the country, everywhere shut in by high and precipitous rocky walls. Northwards, its chief arms are Fjerland Fjord, Sogndal Fjord, and Lyster Fjord; east- wards, Aardal Fjord and Leirdal Fjord; southwards, Aurland Fjord, together with Neré Fjord, the grandest of them all. Off the north shore of Sogne Fjord we have the most westerly

~~islands of Norway, viz., Utveer, and farther north the lofty islands of Alden, Kinn, Batalden, and Skorpen. Here Dals Fjord and Forde Fjord, and farther north Nord Fjord, of very considerable extent, penetrate into the country. Off Nord Fjord lies the island of Bre- mangerland, with a mountain summit, the Hornelen, rising to the height of 2940 feet. The land at Stad projécts into the sea without any belt of islets ; the protecting fence, however, soon recommences farther towards the north-east. * On this part of the coast, that of Romsdal, several large fjords penetrate deep into the country, such as Stor Fjord in Séndmére, with numerous arms, the most important being Hjérund Fjord and Sunelv Fjord, Romsdal Fjord, Sundal Fjord, and Surendal Fjord. To an exposed tract of coast, Hustadviken, south of Christiansund, succeeds Throndhjem Led (Throndhjem Road), shut off from the sea by the large low islands of Smolen and Hiteren, the latter of which is the largest island in southern Norway. From Throndhjem Led the broad and extensive Throndhjem Fjord stretches in several directions, first south-east- wards, then eastwards, and finally north-eastwards, for about 80 miles into the country, as far as Stenkjer on Beitstad Fjord.~~

~~North of Throndhjem Fjord an outer coast with a navi- gable "road" extends almost unbroken to the North Cape. Among other fjords in Nordre Throndhjem amt Folden Fjord and Namsen Fjord must be mentioned; off the latter, the low-lying group of islands bearing the name of Vigten project far into the sea, surrounded, as in the case of Smélen and Hiteren, by an extremely shoaly ""skjzergaard," which stretches right up to Vest Fjord, and renders an approach to land very difficult and dangerous. The coast of Nordland is distinguished by a chain of lofty picturesque islands, as Torghatten, with its natural tunnel, 400 feet above the sea, which runs from south-west to north-east for a length of 520 feet, Veegé, Dénnesé, Lovunden, Treenan, Hestmandé, Luré, Fuglé, and Landegode. The mainland, too, exhibits magnificent mountain summits, viz., the Seven Sisters on Alstenden, Strandtinderne, and the snow-field Svartisen. The fjords, though not so long as in southern Norway, are still of very considerable size, as, for example, Bindal Fjord, Vel Fjord, Vefsen Fjord, Ranen Fjord, Salten Fjord, Folden Fjord, Tys Fjord, and Ofoten Fjord. Off Salten are the well-known Lofoten Islands, skirting westerly the broad arm of the sea called Vest Fjord, which termi- nates in Ofoten Fjord. The Lofotens consist of a chain of islands separated from each other by broader~~

and narrower channels. The mountains on the outermost group are not particularly high—indeed the principal island, Rést, is

Northern distance to the Swedish frontier is only 6 miles.

GEOLOGY. |

remarkably low; but otherwise the islands exhibit a chain of granite peaks to be counted in hundreds, strangely charac- teristic with their jagged, fantastic outlines, and towering to a height of from 2000 to 3500 feet above the level of the sea. This truly alpine scenery is rendered the more imposing in character by the fact of its rising directly from the sea. The Lofotens are connected on the north with the group of islands called Vesteraalen, which, in their south- ern parts, fully equal the Lofotens in grandeur. Within these groups of islands lies the largest island in Norway, Hind6en (area, 865 square miles), with the lofty peak, Mosadlen. From the innermost creek of Ofoten Fjord the North

NOR WA Y

577

ous, being nowhcre broken by channels through which ice-cold water from the depth of the Polar Sea would otherwise find a passage to the "sejlled" or navigable roads along the coast, and to the deep fjords that penetrate so far into the country. The Norwegian fjords have as a rule the remarkable characteristic that the bottom for great distances lies deeper, and in some eases very considerably deeper, than the surface of the coastal banks ; thus, for example, the Norwegian Channel is upwards of 400 fathoms deep in the Skagerrak, Stavanger Fjord has a depth of 380 fathoms, Hardanger Fjord 355, Sogne Fjord 670, Nord Fjord 340, Throndhjem Fjord 300, Rancn Fjord 235, Vest Fjord 340, Alten Fjord 225, and Varanger Fjord 230. These maximum depths occur in many cases at a great distance from the sca.

For our knowledge of the geology of Norway we are Geology.

chiefly indebted to the results brought to light by the

fjords of Hindéen, in Troms6 amt, there is also a chain of large | Royal Norwegian Geological Survey, under the direction a as, islands, as Senjen, Kvalé, Ringvasé, and others. Of large | of Professor Kjerulf. To the geologist Norway presents ~ fjords may be mentioned Malangen Fjord, Bals Fjord, Ulfs | @ region of the highest interest, alike from the structure

Fjord, Lyngen Fjord, as also Kveenang Fjord, with the grand | of the country itself and from the fact of the rock-surface scenery of the Kvenang peaks. In Finmark, the large | almost everywhere lying bare and being intersected by coast islands Séré, Stjerné, Seiland, Kvalé, Ingé, Mageré | natural profiles of valleys and ravines. Extensive tracts extend to the North Cape ; but here the © skjergaard," or consist of the Archean formation, with its strata of gneiss, Arehzan outer coast, comes abruptly to an end. The coast of east | hornblende schist, and quartz,—the first of these forming forma- Finmark presents a totally different character: flat mount- | the lower, the last the upper section, both of great depth, 4. ain wastes descend precipitously to the ocean without any | The beds are generally folded, and in part vertical. This islands beyond, save Vardé, with two low islets at the | formation occurs particularly in Romsdal, in the vicinity farthest eastern extremity of Norway. The fjords of Fin- | of Arendal, east of Christiania Fjord (gneiss), in Thele- mark are broad and long, as Alten Fjord, Porsanger Fjord, | mark, Hallingdal, Nordfjord (quartz), along the shores Laxe Fjord, Tana Fjord, all extending southwards, and of Sogne Fjord, throughout the inner tracts of east Fin- Varanger Fjord, which takes a westerly direction. The | mark. Above this formation is the Sparagmite, chiefly farther east one proceeds the lower does the country be- | consisting of fragmentary rocks in thick strata, with felspar come; the sharp peaks disappear and give way to a low- | embedded. The lowest beds are grey and red Sparagniite, lying, monotonous landscape on the north side of Varanger | partly accompanied by deep masses of conglomerate. To Fjord ; the south side, however, exhibits a more varied | this formation belongs the blue quartz, widely distributed aspect, especially where, between the tributary fjords, | throughout central Norway, as also subordinate green and several islands occur. 'The total area of the islands of | black clay schist and black limestones. In the latter, which Norway amounts to 8460 square miles. constitute the upper part of the formation, the Primordial

Sea-bed — The form of the sea-bed off the shores of Norway has been inves- | Zone, we meet with the first traces of animal life—the oldest

tigated, partly by the Coast Survey and partly by the Norwegian North Atlantic Expedition, 1876-78. (See NorrH Sea aud Nor- WEGIAN SEA.) The hundred-fathom line of the North Sea extends west of the British Islands, and north of Shetland towards Norway, off Cape Stad. But the bank bounded by this line does not fully reach the Norwegian coast. From off Stad (62° N. lat.) a depres- sion in the sea-bed, called the Norwegian Channel, stretches along the west and south eoasts of Norway, southward and eastward, almost to Christiania Fjord and the Cattegat. The deepest part of this channel, upwards of 400 fathoms, extends through the Ska- gerrak between Arendal in Norway and the Scaw. Off Lister the depth is 200 fathoms, and off Bommelen, the shallowest part, 120 fathoms. Thence it incrcases in a northerly direction, reaching 200 fathoms off Sogne Fjord, after which the channel finds an outlet into the deep basin of the Norwegian Sea. The breadth of the Nor- wegian Channel, computing by the hundred-fathom line, is from 50 to 70 miles ; it is narrowest in the southernmost part, off Lindesnes. Its walls shelve gradually down on either side, and the bottom is comparatively wide and flat. The bank extending between the coast and the inner slope of the channel is exceedingly narrow, being only from 7 to 10 miles broad. The Norwegian Channel thus constitutes a definite boundary between the plateau of the North Sea, with the countries rising from it, and the land of Norway. North of Stad occurs an expansion of the Norwegian coastal bank. Its outcr slope rapidly descends towards the deep basin of the Nor- wegian Sea. Whilc the hundred-fathom line keeps comparatively close to the Norwegian coast as far as the Russian frontier—off the Lofotcns only does it extend a little more than 40 miles from land—the two-hundred-fathom line, which, off Romsdal, at Storeggen, runs at a distance of 40 miles from the shore, takes a northward direction, the coast, on the other hand, deflecting towards the north- east and north-north-east. Accordingly the distance between them continues to increase till, off the coast of Helgeland, it reaches 130 miles. Off the Lofotens and Vesteraalen it again approaches the land, at its nearest point—off Andenes in Vesteraalen—being scarcely 10 miles distant. North of Vesteraalen, the two-hundred-fathom line, or the edge of the coastal bank, makes another bend towards the north, and draws off from the coast of Norway. 'The Barents Sea, which

bounds Norway on the north, is a comparatively shallow ocean tract, the greater part of its bed ranging between 100 and 200 fathoms below the surface. Norway is thus encompassed by a series of rampart-like coastal banks, in the strictest sense continu-

trilobites. The Sparagmite formation extends throughout a great part of central Norway, Osterdal, Gudbrandsdal, Land. In other parts the Primordial Zone is met with immediately above the Archzean rocks. Then succeeds the

Silurian system, also of wide extent, occurring in a series Silurian Charac- System.

of beds distinctly marked off by their fossils. teristic strata in this system are the orthoceratite limestone with graptolithic schist (Lower Silurian), next lime sand- stone, pentamerous limestone, coral limestone, along with other strata, such as red clay schist, limestones, and marl slate (Upper Silurian). The Silurian beds are almost every- where greatly bent, compressed, and dislocated ; the strike is in the great majority of cases from south-west to north- east. At and around Christiania, in the tracts bordering on Lake Mjésen and Skien Fjord, the Silurian beds occur without being metamorphosed, except locally at their con- tact with eruptive rocks. In the environs of Bergen, the outer part of Hardanger Fjord, the Hardanger Waste, in Sondre Throndhjem amt we meet with regionally metamorphic schists and limestones containing Silurian fossils. In the medial of the three sections of the Throng- hjem schist8 occur Upper Silurian fossils. The Silurian system in Norway extends in the direction of south-west to north-east, straight across the southern part of the country, from Hardanger Fjord to some distance east of Throndhjem Fjord, as also from Skien Fjord to Lake Mjésen. Above the Silurian system is found, in various localities, more particularly west of Christiania Fjord, a sandstone formation, to some extent along with conglo- merates, of which the geological age remains uncertain, no fossils having as yet been found init. With this forma- tion the series of stratified rocks in southern Norway may be said to terminate, since the next fossil-bearing strata are diluvian, containing Pleistocene animal remains. ; AVII. — 73

Local forma- tions.

~~Eruptive rocks,—granite. .~~

~~Minerals.~~

~~578~~

~~In various parts of the country we meet with extensive and highly-remarkable beds, geologically established with special local designations, and which, on the discovery of fossils indicating the sections, will, no doubt, at some later period be classed under the names given to the great and generally accepted formations with more precision than is possible at present. Such are, farthest north, the Gaisa series and the Raipas series in Finmark ; in the Throng- hjem region, the older of the Throndhjem schists, con- glomerate and the sandstone series, and the Gula schists ; in central Norway, environing the Jotun Fjelde, the alpine quartz. Of Mesozoic beds (Oxford clay) a few only still remain on the island of Andé in Vesteraalen ; they consist of sandstone, coal, and oil-shale, with embedded Jurassic fossils.~~

~~The eruptive rocks—granite, syenite, porphyry, gabbro, norite, serpentine, greenstone, é&c.—have broken through the beds of the various formations in a variety of ways, at one time as vast masses in continuous streains, at another time as isolated dome-like summits or simply cutting up- wards as dykes. Old granite occurs in Christiansand stift, 'Thelemark, the Hardanger Waste, where it extends over ex- tensive tracts and at its boundaries is seen to break through the Archean formation, sending off multitudinous coarse-grained dykes, as also on the east side of the mouth of Christiania Fjord, in Aadal and in Hedal, south of Valders, and in Osterdal. Very extensive tracts of granite are met with along the coast of Romsdal and in Nordre Throndhjem amt, where the coast, called Fosen, exhibits its charac- teristic rounded forms. Up through Nordland we pass numerous granite tracts of considerable extent. The whole of the Lofotens and Vesteraalen, together with all the outer- most islets, holms, and skerries along the coast of Nordland, consist exclusively of granite. The interior of Finmark also has very large granite tracts. Extensive masses of post-Silurian granite and syenite, as also of porphyry in sheets, occur to the west and north of Christiania Fjord ; it is at the borders of these masses that the Silurian sys- tem here becomes prominent. The largest tract of gabbro is that of the Jotun~~

Fjelde ; this rock is also met with extensively in Throndhjem stift and in Tromso stift. Norite occurs chiefly near Sogne Fjord and at Egersund. Serpentine, in tracts of very considerable extent, is met with principally throughout Throndhjem stift. Dykes of post-Silurian porphyry, but more especially of greenstone, pierce in large numbers the Silurian system of eastern Norway ; similar dykes, however, are also seen here and there throughout the country traversing both schist and granite.

Notwithstanding its great abundance of rocks, Norway cannot be said to be rich in valuable ores or minerals. Thus, for example, true coal does not occur ; Jurassic has been found on Andéen, but only in seams extremely limited in extent. Gold is met with very sparingly in veins of quartz at Eidsvold, in the rivers of Finmark, and along with silver in the Kongsberg mines. The latter metal is found as native silver in veins of calcareous spar at Kongs- berg, where the state owns a silver mine of considerable value. Copper occurs in numerous localities, as Thelemark, Réros in the Throndhjem district, many parts of the west coast, more especially at Vigsnees on Karméen, and in north- ern Norway at Kaafjord in Alten. Nickel is produced in some parts from sulphuretted iron ore, particularly on the island of Senjen in Tromsé amt. Iron ores are met with in southern Norway, particularly along the coast near Arendal. According to the geological survey, the presence of ore is intimately connected with the eruptive rocks, at the limits of which they are accordingly to be looked for, both in the Archean and in the later formations; thus on the confines of the oldest granite we find alike iron and

NOWWAYT

[GEOLOGY.

copper ore ; on those of gabbro, sulphuretted iron ore con- taining nickel and apatite.

Volcanoes, ina strict sense, and their subsequent results, such as hot springs, have not been met with in Norway.

The portion of the earth’s crust now visible in Norway has Geo- obviously in the lapse of time undergone very great changes with logical respect to the

position of its Both the oldest formation and the later systems are almost every- where greatly bent, compressed, and distorted,—and also denuded, and their parts forcibly dislocated, alike as regards situation and relative height. Formations that in the interior lie at a height of several thousand feet arc on the coast found level with the surface of the sea. Strata resting on the summits bordering a lake or the shores of a fjord are again seen on islands in such lakes or fjords, and level with the surface of the latter. One side of a valley ex- hibits a profile which, in regard to the height of the various strata, differs materially from the profile of the opposite side. The whole rocky sheet is cut up in varions directions, and the several laminz are uow sunk bencath, now raised above, those adjoining them. These dislocations have been occasioned by fissures, which in many places can be pointed out, and the number of such provable faults of dislocation increases almost every year. The direction of the fissures is manifestly of the greatest assistance in indicating the form exhibited by the surface of the country. The subsidence be- tween two fissures produces a valley, a fjord, its rise on the other hand a height, a promontory. Professor Kjerulf has succeeded in showing that the entire system embracing the valleys and fjords of southern Norway may be casily referred to four principal directions, corresponding very uearly to the four quarters of the globe, round which the principal directions of the valleys and fjords are found grouped with predominant frequency. The same applies to northern Norway, and can also be shown to distinguish the fjords of Spitz- bergen, Iceland, and Greenland; the same directions are again met with in the lines of the Icelandic volcanoes, springs, lava-dykes, and volcanic eruptions.

Vestiges left by the ice age are very conspicuous and varied Influence

throughout Norway. The rock-surface exhibits almost everywhere, of the and more especially when sheltered by loose snuperincumbent layers, ice age. a ground, polished, and striated aspect ; up toa height of 4000 to

5000 feet the striation runs in the direction of the valleys, or from

the lofty inland tracts, towards the sea. Bonlders of foreign origin

are found scattered over the mountains, in the fields, and in the

loose layers covering the surface ; their origin can often be deter- mined with certainty. Old moraines, consisting of gravel-walls lying transversely to the direction of the stri, indicate by their position the fronts of the ancient glaciers, and by their numerous

serial lines an equal number of breaks in the retreat of the ice into

the country. Layers of clay and banks of mussel-shells, in which

are embedded the remains of arctic marine animals, indicate the sedimentary deposit of the material carricd down by the rivers of

the ancient glaciers to the sea.

At the present day perpetual snow is found in Norway only in Snow-elevated localities. The most celebrated masses are the following— masses. (1) the Justedalsbre, between Sogne Fjord and Nord Fjord. It occupies an area of 580 square miles, reaches an altitude of 5000 feet, descends with its snow-cap to between 4000 and 4500 feet, and sends off numerous glaciers on cither side; several of these extend very nearly down to the sea, as the Boiumbre in Fjerland, in Sogn,

426 fect above the sca ; the largest of the Justedal glaciers is the Nigardsbre. (2) The Folgefon, between Hardanger Fjord (Sor Fjord) and Aakre Fjord, with an area of 108 square miles aud an altitude of 5270 feet. It sends off only three glaciers. (8) Hallingskarvet. (4) The snow-ficlds of the Jotun Fjelde, east of Sogne Fjord. (5) The snow-fields of Snehetten. (6) The Store Borge Fjeld in Helgeland. (7) Svartisen, the largest snow-field but one in Norway, between Ranen Fjord and Salten Fjord in Nordland. It sends off a number of glaciers, some of which reach almost to the séa-levcl at the heads of the fjords. (8) The Suli- tjelma snow- field, east of Salten Fjord, on the Swedish frontier. (9) The Jéknl Fjeld, between Kveenang Fjord and Ox Fjord, on the boundary of Finmark. It sends off magnificent glaciers towards the sea. Onc of these, in Jékel Fjord, a branch of Kvenang Fjord, extends down to the water's edge, so that fragments of its ice fall into the fjord and float as small icebergs on the surface, the sole instance of the kind in Norway. (10) Seiland snow-field, ou the island of Seiland, near Hammerfest, the most northerly névé in Europe. 'The limit of perpetual

~~snow in Norway is estimated at 3080 feet on the island of Seiland, 5150 feet on the Dovre Fjeld, : from 4100 to 4900 feet on the Jotun Fjelde, from 3100 to 4100 feet on the Justedal snow-fields, and from 3100 to 4100 feet on the Folgefon.~~

~~Traces of relative changes of level between land and sea are Marine observed in numerous localities. he highest marine terraces (in terraces, which the remains of marine animals have been found) are met beach- with in the east part of the country and near Throndhjem at 600 lines. feet above the sea-level; at the heads of the fjords on the west coast~~

~~parts, their level, and their surface. changes.~~

~~Tempera- ture.~~

~~NO RK~~

~~they lie lower. This obviously proves these districts, at the termina- tion of the ice age, while the glaciers were still in process of melting, to have been relatively lower than at present. And we have further indication of the fact that the interior lay higher during the ice age in the "giant kettles" occurring near the level of the sea, since these are believed to have been formed at the foot of cataracts in the glaciers, the substratum of which must, of course, have been above the level of the sea. Along the whole coast, in numerous localities, from Séndhordland (between Stavanger Fjord and Hardanger Fjord) nearly to the North Cape, and along the fjords, are found ancient beach-lines cut out in the solid rock. Their real significance as sea-level marks is shown by their perfectly horizontal direction, by their extending in several localities on the same level as the most elevated of the marine terraces (¢.g., that of Throndhjem), by the circumstance that in other places they run in a line continuous with the surface of adjoining terraces, and finally by the sea- wrought caverns found on the same level. It is in northern Nor- way especially that beach-lines largely occur. In several localities there are two parallel lines, the one above the other. Throughout extensive tracts these lines can be referred to particular levels, thus indicating a pause in the rise of the land that afforded sufficient time for the action of the sea, or pointing to the presence of certain climatic influences favourable to this production periodically alter- nating with unfavourable intervals. No change of level in the Norwegian coast within recent years can be scientifically shown. Earthquakes are of rare occurrence in Norway.~~

~~The following is a summary of the results arrived at by the Norwegian Meteorological Institute (1867-83). The number of stations is from forty to fifty. The coldest parts of Norway, where the mean annual temperature is below 32° Fahr., are the highest regions of the country and the interior of Finmark (Karasjok, 26°:4); on the sea-shore it is only at Varanger Fjord that it falls below 32°. The highest mean annual temperature (44°:6) is that of Skudes- nes ; and the outer coastal margin from the mouth of Sogne Fjord to Lindesnzes has a mean annual temperature of 44°. The interior of southern Norway and that of Finmark have the longest winter (200 days with a mean annual tempera- ture of under 32°) and the lowest winter~~

temperature, the mean temperature of the coldest day being under 14°. From the interior districts towards the coast the climate becomes everywhere milder in winter. From Lindesnzs an exceed- ingly narrow strip of land stretches along the west coast northwards right to the mouth of Throndhjem Fjord where the lowest mean temperature of any day exceeds 32°. Rést, the outermost of the Lofoten Islands, belongs to this strip of coast (32°°9 in January). The January isotherm for 32° reaches beyond Tromsé up to the 70th parallel of latitude; on the one side it extends down to the southern coast of {celand, on the other to the alpine districts of Norway. In January the interior of Finmark has a temperature of 2°-5, central Norway, at an altitude of 1600 feet, 11°°3. The winter isotherms follow the contours of the coast and lie very close together. The summer is hottest in south-eastern Norway (Christiania, July, 61°°9); next come Hardanger (July, 58° °3) and Sogn (Sogndal, July, 60° 3). Karasjok has in July a mean temperature of 57°°2. On the coast the summer is colder than some distance inland ; it is coldest on the Finmark coast (Vardé, July, 47°-7) and in the lofty inland tracts (Roros, 52°, 2000 feet above the sea). The interior of Finmark has a higher tempera- ture (upwards of 57°) than any part of the outermost coastal margin as far south as Jeederen (59° N. lat.). The temperature in July (50°‘2) at the North Cape (71° N. lat.) is the same as in the southern part of Iceland (63° to 64° N. lat.). The isotherm for 52° passes through the Lofotens (68° N. lat.) and the Shetland Isles (62° N. lat.) ; that for 56° extends from Jederen straight across the North Sea to the northern part of Scotland. On re- ducing the temperature to the sea-level we get for the south-eastern part of Norway a maximum of heat exceed- ing 60°. The interior having a warm summer and a cold winter, and the coast a cool summer and a mild winter, the annual range of temperature is greatest throughout the inland regions (55° in Finmark, 45° in central Nor-

CLIMATE. |

m ACY 579

way) and least on the coast—from Lindesnes to Vardo. In Osterdal and the interior of Finmark the mercury sometimes freezes (— 40°). Along the outermost line of coast, from Romsdal to Jederen, the mercury never sinks below 12°. At Karasjok a temperature of — 58° has been observed. The

highest known readings are those observed at Christiania (90°) and in Finmark (96° in the vicinity of Varanger Fjord). Throughout a tract extend-ing straight across the country near the 65th parallel of latitude the maximum temperature does not reach that observed in the south-east and in Finmark. Along the coast the highest temperature is from 77° to 79°, and on the outermost skerries it hardly reaches 75°. The diurnal range of the temperature of the air is greatest in the south-east (Christiania, 15° in July, 3° in January), least on the coast (only 5° in July). In Finmark it is inappreciable during the dark season, when the sun is below the horizon throughout the twenty-four hours. At Vardé it is 5° in July. In spring the heat everywhere makes its way from the coast towards the interior of the country (in Finmark from north to south); in autumn the cold passes from the interior towards the sea (in Finmark from south to north). The thermic anomaly is in Nor- way during the winter months always positive; along the west coast it reaches as much as 36° in January, and off the Lofotens amounts to even 43°, the highest value it anywhere attains on the globe ; even in central Norway it is +11° in January. In July it is greatest in Lapland, viz., +9°. Along anarrow strip of the south-western coast of Norway it is negative in the month of July, though hardly — 2°; hence this strip of coast is comprised in the negative thermic anomaly of the North Atlantic during

. summer. The tension of vapour is at all seasons of the year greatest Relative

on the coast and least in the interior of the country. hwnmid-

The relative humidity is greatest on the coast of Finmark '-

(82 per cent. per annum). Leirdal in Sogn, which lies under the lee of the Justedalsbra, has an annual relative humidity of only 65 per cent. In winter it is greatest in the cold tracts of the interior (85 per cent.) and least on the west coast (70 per cent.) ; in summer it is greatest on the coast (upwards of 80 per cent.) and least in the interior (Christiania, 60 per cent.). On the driest days it can sink as low as 20 or even 12 per cent.

Just as the isotherms exhibit a tendency to follow the Isobars.

contours of the coast, so likewise do the isobars. In the mean for the year there is a maximum of pressure (reduced to the level of the sea and to the gravity at 45° lat.) in south-eastern Norway comprised within the isobar for 29°88 inches. The isobar for 29°84 inches extends from the north of Scotland over Bergen, Dovre, Throndhjem, and parallel with the coast of Nordland to Lapland. The isobar for 29°80 inches passes across Shetland and the coasts of Romsdal, Nordland, and Finmark to the south side of Varanger Fjord. The isobar for 29°76 inches passes a little to the north of the Faroe Islands, across the Lofotens, and along the Finmark coast to Vardé. Out in the Norwegian Sea there is a minimum pressure of air (29°72 inches), with its longitudinal axis stretching from south-west to north-east, between Iceland and Nor- way; it extends into the Barents Sea, between Beeren Eiland, Novaya Zemlya, and Finmark. In January the normal isobars take approximately the same course. Cen- tral Norway has a maximum of 29°97 inches. The isobar for 29°80 inches extends from the north coast of Ireland across Scotland to Stad and Lapland; that for 29°60 inches passes from the Faroe Islands towards the north- east, off the coast of Norway. The least pressure of air in January is at the North Cape (29°64 inches). A mini- mum occurs east of Iceland (29°45 inches, a still lower

Winds,

580

(29-37 inches) west of Iceland, and another not quite so low in the Barents Sea to the north-east of the North Cape (29°56 inches). In July there is a minimum of pressure (29°80 inches) over central Norway (61° N. lat.). Along the part of the country adjoining the coastal region we have a maximum zone with a pressure of 29°85. In the sea between Iceland and Norway a trifling minimum (29°76 inches) occurs. It is obvious that the distribution of pressure must be regulated by that of temperature,—a maximum pressure of air over the colder, a minimum over the warmer localities.

As a consequence of this normal distribution of the press- ure of the air the prevailing winds in winter blow from the land to the sea, with a deviation to the right. These are accordingly north-easterly along the Skagerrak, southerly along the west coast, south-westerly in northern Norway. They

are for the most part cold winds, and cool down the surface of the sea throughout the nearest tracts. In summer sea-winds prevail; they blow along the land with the land to the left, more especially in southern Norway, where the coast of the Skagerrak has south-westerly, Lindesnees westerly, and the west coast northerly winds. In northern Norway the prevailing summer winds are northerly. The winds blowing along the coast, in one direc- tion or another, up or down, are twice as numerous as those blowing across it, from the land or the sea. In accordance with the greater value of the normal gradient in winter than

NiO Rw AY

[CLIMATE.

fall on the coast in all months of the year from the North Cape to the Lofotens. The amount of precipitation is greatest on the coast, between Sogne Fjord and Stad, where it amounts to 77 inches. West of a line from the coast of Romsdal to Christiansand it is above 40 inches. In the Lofotens it reaches 45 inches. Throughout the south-east and in Finmark it falls as low as 12 inches. In the former region, however, exceptions occur; thus, for example, a short distance north of Christiania the annual rainfall is 40 inches, whereas in the city itself it amounts to only 26 inches. In the south-east the amount of precipitation is greatest during the months of July and August, on the west coast late in autumn or in the beginning of winter. The amount of precipitation is least in spring. Thunderstorms are not very frequent in Norway.

with southerly to south-westerly winds or (especially throughout the interior) on very hot days. In winter the heavy gales from the west and south-west on the west coast are often accompanied with thunder and lightning of an exceedingly dangerous character, the clouds hanging very low. Not less than a hundred churches in Norway have been struck and destroyed by lightning during the last 150 years, and of these not less than forty on the coast, in the winter thunderstorms, as far north as the Lofotens. At the North Cape, too, thunderstorms occur in winter.

They Thunder- occur chiefly in summer, either during rainy weather and storms.

~~in summer, the force of the wind on the coast is greatest in winter ; during that season it rarely ceases to blow on the coast ; but the number of calm days is very considerable~~

~~The mild climate Norway enjoys must be chiefly ascribed to the Tempera- high temperature of the water that laves her shores. (See Non- ture of WEGIAN SEA.) The fjords are filled with the heated water of the water in Atlantic, which in their deepest parts exhibits a constant tem- fjords.~~

~~Clouds.~~

~~in the interior of the country in and around the locality of the maximum barometric pressure. In summer calm weather is comparatively frequent on the coast (maximum zone of pressure), but not to the same extent in the interior. Upon the whole, the force of the wind on the coast is at all seasons of the year much greater than in the inland tracts. Storms are frequent on the coast (30 stormy days a year), rare in the interior (4 stormy days a year). Their most fre- quent direction is the sameas that of the prevailing winds, viz., for the whole country on an average from the south- west, then from the west and the north-west. They are most frequent in winter, particularly during December and January (4 a month), rarest in summer (hardly 1 a month).~~

~~The amount of cloud in Norway is on the whole con- siderable. The coast of Finmark has the largest proportion (upwards of 3 cloudy days to 1 clear day). In the interior of the country the amount of cloud approximates 50 per cent: The summer months are somewhat clearer than those of winter.~~

~~perature as high as, in the north even higher than, the mean annual temperature of the air, representing an amount of heat which during the coldest of winters can be reduced only to a slight extent. Thus in the depths of the Skagerrak channel the tempera- ture is 42°, that of Sogne Fjord is 48°7, of Throndhjem Fjord 42°°8, of Ranen Fjord 40°°6, of Salten Fjord 38°71, of Vest Fjord 42°°8, of Alten Fjord 39°-2, aud of Varanger Fjord 37° °6. Where the tem- perature at a depth of 100 to 200 fathoins is above 32° the water does not freeze; hence the open coasts and fjords of Norway. It is only in the innermost and more continentally situated arms of fjords into which rivers discmbogue, as also along shallow stretches of coast—the~~

coast of Lister, for example—that the sea is found to freeze in winters of exceptional severity. The cold prevailing land-winds in winter cool the surface of the sea on the coasts; therefore the surface-temperature increases outwards to- wards a thermal axis extending off the coast of Norway, and the isotherms of the sea-surface assume the same linguiform shape as those of the air. In winter the surface of the sea on the coast has a higher temperature than the air. The surplus heat is in January 4° at the Skagerrak, 10° at the North Cape. In summer the surface of the sea is in part very slightly colder than the air. Thus upon the whole the sea exerts a direct influcnce in raising the temperature of the air; and the prevailing direction of the wind from the south-west tends to diffuse this heated air over the nearest

Fog.gs : inland tracts, in particular those of the west coast. In summer

i aa 2 og frequent ye, ae see =. . d the coast Norway is indebted, as regards climate, to the long days which, by

eos ied arin te Malan de n the south-east reason of her high northern latitude, she enjoys. ‘The heated water

part of the country the reverse is the case. In winter a | on the banks and in the fjords having during winter rendered im-

frosty fog hangs over the inner extremities of the fjords | possible the formation of ice on the coast, and thus provided against

when the cold is severe and the wind blows out from the | #8Y Waste during summer of solar energy in a melting process, the

land over the open water of the fjord sun can freely exert his beneficent influence, working, so to speak,

;. . eae well-nigh—in Finmark actually—without intermission throughout Rain. The number of days with rain or snow is upon the whole | the short period of vegetation.

~~greatest on the coast, from Jeederen to Vardé, least in the south-east part of the country. At the North Cape, in the Lofotens, along the west coast between Stad and Sogne Fjord, precipitation occurs on as many as 200 days of the year. On the Dovre Fjeld and on the coast bordering the Skagerrak the number of rainy days amounts to about 100 a year. The number of days with snow is least at Lister, increasing from 20 a year in that locality to 50 on the coast of Nordland in the vicinity of Throndhjem Fjord, on the Dovre Fjeld, and in Christiania, to 90 at Andenzs and Vardé, and to 100 at the North Cape. From Vardé to Andenzs, on the Dovre chain, and in the high mountain tracts snow occurs more frequently than rain. Snow can~~

~~The current sets as a rule along the Norwegian coast from the mouth of Christiania Fjord, passing round Lindesnes and thence on to the North Cape and the Russian frontier. In the Skagerrak the water is much less salt than on the west coast, being mixed with fresh water from the great rivers in the south-east part of the country, and those emptying into the Baltic. The tidal water is scarcely appreciable east of Lindesnes ; its height increases, how-ever, rapidly northwards (Lindesnes 1 foot, Stavanger 8 feet, Bergen 4 feet, Throndhjem 8 feet, Hammerfest and Vardoé 9 feet). In narrow sounds the tidal current is often exceedingly strong ; the following are examples—the Moskenstrém or Malstrom in the Lofotens, the Saltstrém at Bodé, the Rystrém at Tromso.~~

~~The forest growth of Norway consists chiefly of pine and fir, Flora.~~

~~which clothe the slopes of the mountain valleys, especially in southern Norway (as those of the Glommen and its tributaries, those of the Drammen, Laurvik, Skien, Arendal, and Christiansand~~

~~Fauna.~~

~~—of European carnivoree—the bear, the lynx, and the wolf.~~

~~FLORA AND FAUNA. |~~

~~districts, and those drained by the rivers disemboguing at Fre- derikshald). Extensive forests of Coniferous trees are also found in Throndlijem stift and the amt of Nordland. The Coniferous woods of Bergen and Tromsé stifts~~

~~consist—with a solitary excep- tion—of fir alone. The extreme limit of the fir belt in southern Norway is from 2200 to 3000 feet above the sea; throughout the Throndhjem region, from 1600 to 2000 feet; at Talvik in Alten (70° N. lat.) it docs not exceed 700 feet. With the sole exception of the birch, none of the foliferous trees indigenous to the country form woods of great extent. The birch, reaching higher up the mountain sides than do any of the Conifers, forms a belt above them, which is, however, exceedingly narrow in southern Norway. Next come the dwarf birch (Betwla nana) and various species of willows, and, last of all, between this and the snow-limit, the lichen belt. But the line of demarcation between this region and the willow belt is not distinctly traceable, the dwarf birch and some few of the willows—more especially the creeping rotundi- folious varieties (Salix herbacea or polaris)—extending occasionally to the very edge of the snow-fields. Other plants also, such as the snow ranunculus, the Alpine heather, and numerous mountain plants, many of them distinguished by their beautiful flowers, grow abundantly here. The region of the Dovre is especially note- worthy, as the tract in which the alpine flora of Northern Europe is found in greatest variety, and within comparatively narrow limits. In the fertile and less elevated districts of Norway the forest growth, apart from Conifers, includes the ash, elm, lime, oak, beech, and black alder. The aspen, white alder, mountain ash, and bird cherry thrive at a considerable elevation, and are occasionally found even in the birch zone. The oak still grows abundantly on the south-eastern coast, from Jarlsberg-Laurvik amt to Christian- sand, but is nowhere found in extensive forests. The only locality in which the beech can be said to thrive is Jarlsberg-Laurvik amt.~~

~~The vast fir and pine forests are still the haunts of the largest The numbers of the last-mentioned, however, have, in southern Norway, been steadily and one may almost say unaccountably decreasing during the last twenty years; and the wolf may be now regarded as the most rare of all Norwegian beasts of prey. In Finmark it still abounds, constituting the worst enemy to the herds of reindeer. The bear also is less frequently met with, a fact to be accounted for by the immense quantities of timber felled of late throughout the country. The animal is most numerous now in Throndhjem, Nordland, and Romsdal amts; it occurs with com- parative frequency in the amts of Bratsberg, Ncdenxs, Buskerud, Hedemark, and Christian, and is not absolutely rare in Nordre Bergenhus amt. About 150 are annually killed~~

~~throughout Nor- way ; in 1849 the number was twice as great. The lynx does not appear to have suffered any diminution within the last twenty years ; as many as 120 are aunually killed. Nordre Throndhjem amt would appear to be its northern limit. This animal is most destructive to hares and all kinds of feathered game. In the great forests—cspecially where the soil is marshy, and there is a mingled growth of ash, mountain ash, and willow (Salix caprea)—the elk occurs, and indeed appears to be increasing in numbers in some places, notwithstanding the vast quantities of timber felled, a fact chiefly attributable doubtless to the rapid decrease of its worst enemies, the wolf and the bear. It is most numerous in Hedemark and Buskerud, and in some parts of Akershus and Smaalenene, though considerable nuinbers have been met with of late throughout Nordre Throndhjem amt; in a westerly direction it has penetrated as far as Nedenes amt. The elk is not found in the west of Norway, but its place is partially taken by the red deer, which selects as its haunts the largest of the wooded islands on the coast and the numerous semi-insular projections of the mainland. It is most abundant on the island of Hiteren, at the mouth of Throndhjem Fjord. The wild desolate wastes of the fields are the home of the glutton and the reindeer, the lemming and the polar fox. Large herds of reindeer still roam throughout the alpine region of the fjelds between eastern and western Nor- way, and on the Dovre mountains, the Rundanc, and the high- lands between Gudbrandsdal and Osterdal, and Gudbrandsdal and Valders ; but this noble animal has hecome scarcer of late years, owing chiefly to the numbers killed by peasant hunters, who fire their rifles into the midst of the herd, sometimes maiming at a shot half-a-dozen animals, which they cannot hope to secure, and whicli afterwards become the prey of the glutton. In some years, and in certain localities, the lemming makes its appearance in countless multitudes, to be attacked by its numcrous enemies, particularly birds of prey, among which are the snowy and the short-eared owl; the common kestrel too, and the rough-legged buzzard, are scen in large numbers at such times, sweeping over the wastes of the fjelds. The lemming has an enemy among ruminants even, the reindeer crushing it with a stroke of his cloven hoof for the sake of the vegetable matter it contains. Hares are found all over the country np to the snow-limit. In Finmark occur several specics of small inammals of Russian origin.~~

~~The sea that washes the shores of Norway abounds in fish; and~~

hence the coast, with its numberless islands, holms, and skerries, is a favourite haunt for such birds and mammals as prey upon fishes and other marine animals. When the herring approaches the coast to spawn, it is hotly pursued by the whale ; and in Finmark when shoals of capelan make for the coast in spring, accompanied by cod, which gorge themselves with this their favourite food, the fin- whale (Balznoptera musculus) and the blue-whale (Balanoptera sibbaldi) are also exceedingly numerous, and their presence has given rise to a most important branch of the fishing industry. The waters of the fjords, and the holms and islets of the coast, abound in the spotted seal (Phoca vitulina), and the Phoca barbata is not uncommon in some localities on the outerniost skerries.

Feathered game—capercally, black-cock, hazel grouse—is still Avi- abundant in the forests, though less plentiful now than formerly, fauna.

owing to the reckless manner in which they have been destroyed by amateur sportsmen. The woodcock is distributed pretty equally over the whole country ; besides the lynx, it has enemies in the marten, fox, and weasel, the birds of prey most destructive to it being the sparrow-hawk and the great eagle owl. The finest ptar- migan are found in the birch region of the fjelds; but in southern Norway they often prefer the more elevated tracts of the willow zone during summer, though even then they are most abundant in the birch zone. The "rype" must be regarded as the most important of Norwegian game birds, on account of its numbers no less than of its flavour. It is extensively snared in winter, and of late years dogs have been used to hunt it. On the numerous islands lying off the northern coast, where the vegetation is strikingly similar to that of the birch belt and willow region of the fjelds, ptarmigan are plentiful. The treeless island of Smolen, in the bailiwick of Nordmére, where they occur in great num- bers, is the most southerly of the insular localities they fre- quent. The marshy tracts of the fjelds are the breeding-grounds of numerous varieties of fen-fowl, the lapwing (Charadrius apri- ciarius) and the dotterel plover (Charadrius morinellus) occurring in great numbers. The double snipe and the teal, which also breed in the willow belt, are frequently shot by sportsmen when

in pursuit of ptarmigan. In the numerous mountain tarns various species of divers are met with, for instance the Fuligula marila and the Fuligula clangula, The partridge, which has strayed across from

| Sweden, is now pretty evenly distributed throughout the amts of

Akershus, Buskerud, Hedemark, and Christian; but in severe winters, when the fall of snow is exceptionally heavy, nearly every bird perishes, and several years elapse before the stock is recruited by immigration from the neighbouring kingdom. Almost every species of sea-fowl occurring in northern Europe that prey upon fish is found along the coasts, some of them breeding together in countless thousands in certain localities. The coast north of Stad is their chief haunt. The so-called "fugleberge" (bird cliffs) are chiefly frequented by the Mormon fratereula, the flesh, eggs, and feathers of which provide the owners of these preserves with some of the chief necessaries of life. The great black-banded loom occurs in tarns and mountain-lakes all over the country.

Of the various species of freshwater fish the Salmonide# are beyond Fish.

comparison the most important to the inhabitants. In the more extensive of the lakes, which are generally of great depth, trout attain almost the size of salmon, weighing up to 30 Ib. In some lakes the red charr attains a weight of 12 tb, as does also the Fin- mark variety of this fish, which, in common with the sea-trout, remains during most of the year in deep sea-water, ascending the rivers in the spawning season only. Mountain-trout are found to thrive best in certain lakes and tarns within the birch and willow belts ; but, owing to the abundance of food they can obtain, do not readily take the fly, hence they must be fished for with live bait or netted. Asa rule, however, the great mountain-lakes yield excellent sport to the angler. The Mjésen abounds in grayling and charr ; there is good grayling fishing too in the Tyrifjord and Randsfjord. Next to these species the perch, pike, bream, and eel are found in greatest numbers ; but the eel is met with almost exclusively in a few rivers of southern Norway. Norway, notwith- standing the great number of its rivers which empty their waters into the sea, will not, owing to their inaccessible character, bear comparison with Great Britain or Ireland as a salmon-producing country. The most destructive

encmies of freshwater fish in Nor- way are the otter, the loom, the duck, and the osprey.

The sea being very deep, both in the fjords and off the coast, such fishes and marine animals as affect great depths are there abundant. Some species are of great economic importance. On the banks off the coast of Finmark, at a depth of 150 to 200 fathoms, large num- bers of the Greenland shark (Scymnis glacialis) are annually cap- tured, their livers yielding a large quantity of oil. During the first half of the present century the sun fish, or basking shark (Selache maxima), abounded on the coast, its capture forming an important branch of the fishing industry. It is now but rarely met with ; and the fishery has been discontinued. No species of fish can compare in point of importance with the herring and the cod, which, taken in immense quantities on the western coast, consti- tute one of the chief sources of national wealth.

Popula- tion.

Agricul- ture.

Fisheries.

Manufac- tures.

Mines.

Com- meree,

582

-

Part II.—SrTatTISTICs.

The population of Norway on the 31st of December 1882 was 1,913,000, of whom 1,509,000 were living in the country districts, and 404,000 in the towns. Subjoined are the figures for each of the eighteen counties (amter) into which the kingdom is divided :—

Smisglenene: 2.2… 020—6-- 114,000 | Stavanger …….----+— 118,000 UNIONISTS) « < ci c'cisvcicielerecicicice 100,000 | Sondre Bergenhus ..... 121,000 (se eaate Shon sn oocec oenSS 104,000 | Nordre Bergenhus ..... 88,000 Jarlsberg and Laurvik ... 92,000| Romsdal .....+++--- 125,000 IBGRES MONO... «cic cer sicisioice ie 87,000 | Séndre Throndhjem ……. 123,000 Hedemark……..123,000 | Nordre Throndhjem ……. 84,000 (WWE Abcocsoopeconors 113,000 | Nordland .. Ac . 116,000 INGUIGMECS) scuciscieleteicicelois w\es) 79,000 | Tromso ……..— 60,000 Lister and Mandal …….. 77,000 | Finmark saeco ld)

Of the towns the following seven had the largest population (Christiania and Bergen being each a separate amt) :—Christiania, 119,407 ; Bergen, 43,026 ; Throndhjem (1875), 22,152; Stavanger (1879), 28,500; Drammen, 19,582 ; Christiansand, 12,282; and Christiansund, 9025.

Norway isthe most sparsely-populated country in Europe, having an average of about eighteen persons to the square mile. The dis- tribution is very unequal: the greatest density is in Christiania stift, which eoutains about seven-twentieths of the whole popula- tion in seven-hundredths of the total area of the country. The density is relatively great along the coast. The districts which lie more than 600 to 700 feet above the sea are comparatively sparsely peopled. Notwithstanding the great emigration to America and Australia which has taken place in recent years, the population of the country has steadily advanced. About 1660 it numbered only 300,000, while at the beginning of the present century it was 800,000.

According to the returns completed in 1875, the owners of real property in the rural districts numbered 173,183, the total value of their properties being stated at £42,390,000. 24,713 English square miles of the southern stifts are estimated to be under wood, while the whole arable land of the country in 1875 amounted to 738 square miles, with a production valued at £2,794,000. At the same date the live stock included 151,903 horses, 1,016,617 eattle, 1,686,306 sheep, 322,861 goats, 101,020 pigs, and 96,567 reindeer.

The fisheries form one of the most important sourees of the national wealth. In 1881 they employed upwards of 120,000 men, and the aggregate profits were estimated at about £1,111,000. The principal are the eod fisheries,

~~along the inner coasts of the Lofoten Islands, where, in 1881, 26,850 meu on 6153 boats caught 28,400,000 fish, valued at £312,400. In the same year the cod fishery in Finmark yielded about 13,000,000 fish, at a value of £131,000 ; those on the coast of Séndmére produced only one-fourth of this amount. Next come the herring fisheries, which in 1881 yielded 2,412,630 bushels, valued at about £277,800. 6,165,000 mackerel (£42,700) were also taken. The summer fisheries of coal-fish, ling, salmon, trout, lobsters, and oysters at the same time gave a total of £222,200.~~

~~Manufacturing establishments in 1878 numbered 2628, employing an aggregate of 41,391 hands. The leading place here is taken by the saw-mills, of which there were 112 driven by steam (3402 hands) and 630 by water (4274 hands). Next come 551 cotton-mills (2037 workmen), 199 brick-works (3540 workmen), 123 eod-liver- oil works (598 workmen), 112 shipbuilding yards (2388 workmen), and 27 wood-fibre factories (805 workmen).~~

~~Mines are a considerable source of wealth to the eountry, their production in 1879 being estimated at £202,200. To this sum must be added £11,310 for apatite, £6150 for felspar, and £24,360 as the value of hewn stone exported in that year. The most import- ant mines are:—the silver mines at Kongsberg, which in 1879 produeed 9415 tb of silver, and a surplus of £3750 ; the eopper works at Roros, producing 6880 tons, valued at £17,800 ; the copper pyrite mines at Vigsnes, with a production of 39,898 tons, and a value of £69,440; the niekel-works at Senjen in Nordland, which yielded 3828 tons, valued at £5000; the iron-works of Nes and Egeland, which produeed 2400 tons, at a value of £1050 ; and the iron-works of Holden, with 5660 tons, worth £2500. It must, how- ever, be mentioned that the production of the mines since 1879 has been diminishing.~~

~~The foreign trade of Norway is steadily increasing. Its aggregate value in 1882 was estimated at £15,724,500 (imports, £8,916,700 ; exports, £6,807,800). The principal imports were :—eorn, 1,100,000 quarters, £1,836,650 ; beef and pork, £202,660 ; butter, £310,570 ; colonial wares, £894,950; and manufactured goods, £1,305,560. Among the exports the leading place is taken by timber (£2,549,450), of which the greater part was sent to England. 'The fishery pro- ducts sent abroad were valued at~~

~~£1,444,450, and the metals at £117,450. The port of Christiania has the largest trade, the imports in 1882 having been worth £4,082,800, and the exports £1,409,200 ; next to Christiania come Bergen and Throndhjem. The mereantile marine of Norway some years ago passed through a period of stagnation, but revived somewhat in 1880 and 1881. At the elose of the latter year it eonsisted of 7977 vessels (7618 sailing vessels and 359 steamers), with an aggregate tonnage of 1,520,407. The gross freight earned was £5,021,200, of which not less than~~

~~NORWAY~~

~~[POPULATION AND INDUSTRY.~~

~~£3,969,500 were derived from the earrying trade. The largest shipping ports are those of Stavanger (669 vessels, 120,017 tons), Arendal (412 vessels, 171,858 tons), Bergen (348 vessels, 84,870 tons), Christiania (318 vessels, 105,193 tons), and Drammen (281 vessels, 85,028 tons).~~

~~The Norwegian railways have a total length of 973 English miles. Railways.~~

~~(1) From Christiania along the eastern coast of Christiania Fjord to the Swedish frontier (Smaalensbanen), including the inner or eastern line between the station of Ski and the town of Sarpsborg, 156 miles. (2) The Trunk Railway (Hovedbanen), between Chris- tiania and Eidsvold by Lake Mjosen, 42 miles. (3) From Lillestrom on the Trunk Railway to the Swedish frontier (Kongsvingerbanen), 71 miles. (4) From Eidsvold to Hamar (Hedemarksbanen), 36 miles. (5) From Hamar to Throndhjem (Rérosbanen), consisting of four administratively separate sections—Hamar to Grundset, 24 miles; Grundset to Rena, 16 miles; Rena to Stéren, 199 miles ; aud Stéren to Throndhjem, 31 miles. (6) From Throndhjem to the Swedish frontier (Merakerbanen), 63 miles. (7) From Chris- tiania to Drammen, 33 miles. (8) From Drammen along the west- ern coast of Christiania Fjord to Skien (Grevskabsbanen), with a branch line from Skopum, 98 miles. (9) From Drammen to Randsfjord Lake (including branch lines from Hougsund to Kongs- berg and from Vikersund to Lake Kréderen), 89 miles. (10) From Stavanger to Egersund (Jederbanen), 47 miles. (11) From Bergen to Vossevangen, 67 miles. The first three are~~

~~commonly called the eastern railways (Ostbanerne), (5) and (6) the northern (Nord- banerne), and the last three the western (Vestbanerue).~~

~~With improved means of communication the Norwegian post- Post- In 1882 there were Office.~~

~~office has made corresponding advances. forwarded a total of 18,990,100 letters, of which 11,749,600 were inland, and 2,240,400 were sent abroad ; 2,728,800 letters were in the same period reecived from foreign countries. 'The Government telegraphs had at the close of 1882 a line length of 47,065 miles, with a wire length of 85,485 miles. The telegrams transmitted in that year reached a total of 880,876. :~~

~~As regards primary edueation Norway takes a leading place Educa- In the country districts 207,922 tion.~~

~~among the states of Europe. children were instructed in 6408 schools by 3374 teachers and 108 preceptresses in 1878; in the same year 40,826 children in the towns were instrueted by 372 teachers and 367 preceptresses in 144 schools. There are, besides, 147 citizen-schools, middle-schools, and higher-schools, with a staff in 1878 of 824 teachers and 466 pre- eeptresses ; the scholars numbered 16,800 (9150 boys and 7650 girls). The university, that of Christiania, has 50 professors and 1000 students.~~

~~Service in the army or navy, without the right of providing a Army substitute, is obligatory on all males who have completed their and twenty- third year; the only exemptions are in favour of eeclesiasti- navy.~~

~~eal functionaries, pilots, and the inhabitants of Finmark. To the navy are drafted all conscripts who have made a voyage to foreign parts of at least twelve months, all conscripts from Nordland and Tromsé, and a certain number of those from southern Norway who are accustomed to the sea. The army is made up of the troops of the line, the landvern, and the landstorm ; the term of service is seven years in the line, and three in the landvern. The land- storm consists of every man eapable of bearing arms, under fifty years of age, who does not belong to the line or the landvern. The troops of the line in continuous service number 1850 non- commissioned officers and men, and consist partly of volunteers ; the other troops of the line in time of~~

~~peace are called out for drill only in summer. For infantry recruits the minimum period of drill is forty-two days, for cavalry and artillery ninety days ; for those who have passed out of that category it is only twenty-four days. The military schools are at Christiania. The average annual conscription is 6800 men. The total establishment of the army on 30th June 1878 was 68,809 men, viz., infantry 60,672 (48,275 combatants), cavalry 2735 (1848 combatants), artillery 5150 (2867 combatants). The commissioned officers numbered 703. The numbers on a peace footing were :—for the line 15,878 (war complement 3203), for the reserve 17,089, for the landvern 12,846. There were also 532 musicians.~~

~~The navy is manned in part by volunteers. The term of service is from the age of twenty-two to that of thirty-five. The schools for naval instruction are at Horten, where also is the chief royal dockyard. The fleet consists of two wooden steam frigates, two wooden steam corvettes, four monitors, two first-class gunboats, several second and third class gunboats, two training ships, and some transports. There is also a torpedo service.~~

~~The constitution of Norway primarily rests on the "fundamental Consti- law," or grundlov, which was promulgated at Eidsvold on the 17th tution.~~

~~of May 1814, and afterwards, on the union with Sweden, agreed to, with slight modifications, in Christiania on the 4th of November in the same year. To this must be added the Swedish succession ordinance of the 26th of September 1810, accepted by Norway in November 1814, and the rigsact, or charter of union, of 1815. By the first-mentioned Norway is a free, independent, indivisible kingdom, united with Sweden under the same king. The form of~~

~~Non WwW A 583~~

~~nor.' The towns of Christiania and Bergen form counties by them- Adminis- selves. The dioceses are Christiania, Hamar, Christiansand, Bergen, trative Throndhjem, and Tromsé. Christiania stift embraces the counties divisions of Smaalenene, Akershus, Buskerud, part of Bratsberg, Jarlsberg and~~

~~and Laurvik; Hamar those of Hedemark and Christian ; Chris- officers.~~

CONSTITUTION. |

government is a limited monarcliy, and the throne is hereditary in the male line. Evangelical Lutheranism is the established religion. In their foreign relations the two kingdoms are regarded as one. The one cannot make war without the other, and there is a common diplomatic corps, which is controlled by the ministry of foreign affairs

in Stockholm. In all other respects each kingdom is regarded as

tiansand those of Bratsberg (part of), Nedenes, Lister and Mandal,

Execu- sovereign and independent. The executive is vested in the king, | Stavanger; Bergen, besides Sondre and Nordre Bergenhus, takes in

tive. who comes of age when he is eighteen. His person is inviolable, | part of Romsdal ; Throndhjem the rest of Romsdal, with Séndre and all responsibility for his official acts rests with the council of | and Nordre Throndhjem; Tromsé the three northern counties. state. This body consists of two ministers, and at least seven (at | Each diocese is divided into deaneries (provstier), each under a present nine) councillors, chosen by the king from among the | dean, who is elected by the clergy of the district concerned ; each citizens, of at least thirty years of age. One minister and two | amt is divided into bailiwicks (fogderier), each presided over by councillors must always be with the king when he is not in Norway. | a sheriff or foged, appointed by the king to watch over the main- The others form, under the presidency of the remaining minister, or | tenance of the law, carry out judgments, and collect taxes and cus- of the viceroy if there be one, the Government in Christiania; its | toms. In each town similar functions are assigned to the byfoged authority is decisive, except in cases reserved for the king, when it | or town sheriff, who, however, has a more extended authority. only advises. As viceroy in Norway the king can nominate only | The sheriff in the country has generally in each parish a substitute the crown prince. Formerly the Government in Christiania was | or lensmand. 1n the larger towns there are additional officers presided over by a governor, but this office was never filled after | charged with municipal and police affairs. As regards courts of 1855, and in 18/3 it was abolished (on the accession of Oscar II.). | justice, only the supreme court and the

rigsret, already spoken of, Each of the seven councillors has charge of one of the seven state | are fixed by the constitution. Couris of first instance are held in departments (finance, justice, home affairs, church, war, navy and | the towns by the sheriff and in the country by district judges, who post-office, and audit). The king can declare war and conclude | travel on circuit twice or thrice a year. rom the inferior courts peace, make alliances and treaties, and has the supreme command of | cases are in second instance carried on appeal to the superior dio- army and navy ; but for offensive war the consent of parliament is | cesan courts, of which there are four—one at Christiania (in two necessary. The king appoints to all public offices, and can dismiss | divisions), one at Christiansand, one at Bergen, and one at Throndat pleasure his council of state and other Government functionaries, | hjem. From these courts cases relating to values of more than 400 the highest officials of church and state, the heads of the army, | crowns (about £22) and criminal cases proceed to the supreme court and the commandants of fortresses. He can also issue provisional | of the kingdom, which, according to the fundamental law, is com- ordinances relating to trade, taxation, industry, and legal procedure, | posed of a president (justitiarius) and at least six assessors. 'The provided they are not contrary to the fundamental law of the | municipal court of Christiania consists of a president and seven country and the laws agreed upon by parliament; these ordinances | assessors; from this court there is direct appeal to the supreme are in force till next meeting of parliament. court of the kingdom. ;

Legis- While the king has thus the exccutive power, the right of legis- The kingdom of Norway has its own national flag, red, divided National

lature, lation and taxation is exercised by the people through their repre- | by a dark-blue, white-bordered cross into four parts. In the flag, sentatives in the parliament or storthing, which statedly meets in | upper square, next to the staff, the union mark is placed. The

Christiania in the beginning of February every year. The king can, however, when circumstances require it, summon an extraor- dinary storthing. The elections are for a period of three years. The number of members is, by a law passed in 1878, fixed at 114,— 38 from the towns and 76 from the country. 'he members are not chosen directly, but by electors nominated by

the voters. Several little towns are grouped into one electoral district. In the country there is an elector for cvery hundred voters in the parish (herred). The electors afterwards meet in each county, and choose the number of members fixed by law. Only citizens who have the right to vote are eligible, and they must, moreover, be at least thirty years of age and have been ten years settled in the country. iivery Norwegian citizen, not being a criminal or in foreign service, is entitled to votc, if he has passed his twenty-fifth year, has been settled in the country five years, and has certain property qualifica- tions—a public appointment, ownership or tenancy of land, or, in towns, ownership of property worth at least 600 crowns (about £38). Immediately after the opening of parliament one-fourth of its members are elected to constitute the "upper house" or lagthing.; the remaining three-fourths form the lower house or odelsthing. In practice this means a division between the legislative and the con- trolling powers of parliament. Every bill or proposed enactment must be introduced either by a member or by Government through a councillor in the odelsthing. If it passes it is sent to the upper house, and if carried there also the royal assent gives it the force of law. If rejected by the upper house it goes back, with or without remark, to the lowcr house, where it is again discussed. If again car- ried it is sent once more to the upper house, and if it fails to obtain the requisite majority of votcs the whole parliament now meets, and two-thirds decide the motion. To give legal sanction to a resolu- tion of parliament thus carried the royal assent is still required. The royal veto in ordinary questions is not absolute ; a resolution passed unchanged by three successive regular parliaments becomes law tpso facto; but it is otherwise where alterations in the funda- mental law are involved. Parliament also fixes taxation, its enact- inents with regard to which continue in force only until the Ist of July of the year in which the next ordinary parliament meets. Parliament alone has control of the members of the council, of the supreme court of justice, and of its own members ; for crimes in their public capacity these can be put on their trial at the instance of the lower house before the supreme court of the kingdom (rigs- retten), which is composed of the supreme court of justice and the upper house of parliament. The proceedings of parliament and of its divisions are carried on, when not otherwise determined by special vote, with open doors, and published. The members of the council are not allowed to take part in the proceedings. By the fundamental law Norwegians only, with a few exceptions, are eligible for public

appointments. ; cme Administratively Norway is divided into six dioceses (stifter), with a bishop at the head of each, and into eighteen counties (amter) under the civil administration of an amtmand or gover-

Norwegian escutcheon is a crowned golden lion on a red field, armed with the battle-axe of the tutelary saint, St Olaf. " (H. MO.—H. RA.—O. A. 0.)

Part HT.—History.

The early history of Norway is exceedingly obscure. The scanty allusions to Scandinavia and its inhabitants which we find in the classical writers refer to the inhabit- ants of Denmark and of the south of Sweden. The first mention of names which can be identified with any cer- tainty as those of known Norwegian tribes is found in Jordanes, a writer of the 6th century. The traditions of the earlier times which are preserved in Norse literature can scarcely be said to afford any sure ground for history, for whatever truth may be in them seems to be almost hopelessly concealed beneath an overgrowth of mythological and genealogical legend. It is, however, certain that the first settlers after the nomad tribes of Lapps or Finns, whose traces are still found far south of their present limits, were the ancestors of the present inhabitants,—Ger- manic tribes closely akin to the Danes, Swedes, and Goths.

The time of their immigration is unknown, but is conjec- Early tured with probability to have been at the latest not immi-

long after the commencement of the present era. The way by which they came has been the subject of a lengthened controversy. Munch and his school held that the first proper Norwegian settlements took place in the north, and spread thence down the western coast and the centre of the country. Later historians incline to the more probable theory that the country was settled by immigra- tion from the south. To some extent the theory of a northern immigration derived its vitality from a view of early Norwegian history which is now generally rejected. Until recently the collection of old Norse poetry which passed under the name of the Hddas was regarded not merely as the peculiar inheritance of the Norse branch of the Scandinavian family but as the oldest and most primi- tive relic of Germanic mythology and legend. It fell in

1 This territorial division is the only one which has been known in Norway since that into "fylkis," which had become antiquated even in the days of Harold Haarfager. These fylkis were more numerous than the present amter.

Early viking expedi- tions.

naturally with this view to regard the Norse people as leaving their primitive home at a later time, and as travel- ling by a different route from the rest of their kin. And plausible arguments could also be drawn from archeology. There is a well-marked distinction between the older and younger iron ages in Scandinavia. The older age, which is more fully developed in Denmark and the southern part of the Scandinavian peninsula, is marked by greater refine- ment of workmanship, and is more under the influence of southern art. The younger age, which is best marked in Norway and in Sweden proper, is rougher, and has more the appearance of an independent growth. It seemed natural, therefore, to regard the comparatively sudden transition to the more recent archeological period as evi- dence that the land had been occupied by a new people, closely akin indeed to the earlier inhabitants of the south, but which had come fresh from the common home and had not been subjected to the same influences. For various reasons, however, this more recent period cannot well be put farther back than the end of the 7th century, a date which brings the supposed northern immigration so near historic times that if it had taken place it must have been distinctly commemorated in tradition ; and, at the same time, it is now generally admitted that even the oldest of the Eddic poems must be referred to a period close to or within the limits of authentic history. In all probability, therefore, we may regard the change of custom and the rise of the earliest poetry as marking a period of development and expansion which affected all the Scandi- navian peoples, but which, we may well suppose, presented peculiarly individual characteristics in the isolated districts of Norway.

Towards the end of the 8th century we first hear of that phase of history which made the Scandinavian peoples well known during the next two hundred years to the nations of north-western Europe. In 787, if we may trust a record of later date, the ships of the Northern sea rovers first

~~appeared on the English coast, and in 793 and 794 they plundered Lindisfarne and Monkwearmouth. Thence- forward we find them in continually increasing numbers on the coasts of Scotland and Ireland, in England and France, and on the southern coasts of the North Sea, isolated ex- peditions going as far as Spain and the Mediterranean. It is not easy to determine the share taken by the Danes and Norwegians respectively in these earlier expeditions, for the contemporary chroniclers confounded them under common names. But the geographical relations of the two peoples naturally led them into different tracks. The coasts which lay nearest to the Danes were those of the southern shores of the North Sea and the English Channel ; but the nearest way for the Norsemen of western Norway lay straight across to the Shetlands and Orkneys and thence south along the Scottish coasts. It seems probable, therefore, that the first expeditions which ravaged the coast of Northumberland, and which swept down by the Hebrides to Ireland, and thence in some instances to the more southern coasts of France, before Flanders and the northern coasts of France began to suffer, started from the western coasts of Norway. Some years later, when the Danish expeditions become numerous and powerful, they fall with heaviest force on Flanders, England, and France. Of course, when the rovers increased in number and their excursions became wider, we find these kindred peoples in the same countries and joining in common ex- peditions. At an early period they come into collision in Treland. Northumberland seems for a while to have been almost common ground, and Rollo, the chief who completed the permanent settlement in Normandy, is generally ad- mitted to have been a Norseman, although the point is contested by Danish writers. But on the whole it was~~

~~nN OR Ww Be~~

~~| HISTORY.~~

~~in the north and west that the Norse vikings had their chief haunts and formed their settlements. At first even the largest viking expedition had no further aim than plunder : they simply devastated the coasts on which they landed and returned with their booty to their native country, or sold it in foreign parts; but after a time we find them making permanent settlements, either attracted by the richer countries or driven from their own by the~~

pressure of population or by political reverses. In the middle of the 9th century the Norse kingdom of Dublin was founded. In the latter half of the century the Danes, with a possible admixture of Norsemen, had obtained a permanent footing in England. Towards the end of the century the Scottish islands, which had hitherto formed a temporary refuge and starting-poimt for vikings, were occupied by permanent Norse settlers, and the colonization of Iceland was comnienced.

Before the end of the 9th century we know comparatively little of the internal condition of Norway. 'The land is divided into fylkis, which in point of relative size answer roughly to the English shire. The word is connected etymologically with "folk," and seems to indicate that the fylki was originally a district peopled by a subdivision of the race. In the case of many of the fylkis this is borne out by the formation of the individual name, while in others the name seems to have applied directly to the district itself. There seems to have been an early union between some of these fylkis, having laws and customs of their own. The Zgil's Saga tells us that Gula-thing was originally constituted from Horda-fylki, Sygna-fylki, and Firda-fylki ; and this seems confirmed by the three twelves which form so conspicuous an element in the Icelandic law courts. In this case Horda-fylki may give us the name of the race by which that part of the country was originally settled, while the others are simply names of dis- tricts subsequently occupied by the same tribe. At a later time the whole country was divided into great districts, each with a common thing and a body of law of its own. These law districts, which corresponded to natural divisions of Norway of considerable importance in its history, were the district of the Frosta-thing, which comprehended the northern fylkis as far south as Sogne Fjord ; that of the Gula-thing, which comprehended the south-western fylkis ; and that of the Uplands and Vik, which included all the country south and east of the central mountain chain, and which had in old times its only common meeting-place in the Eidsifia-thing, but from which at a later time the Vik district with its Borgar-thing was separated. Within the fylki we find a minor subdivision called the herad, at the head of which stood the hersir, who held his office by hereditary right, and who, like the Icelandic godi, pre- sided over the civil and religious affairs of the district. At the head of each fylki stood as a rule the king, though occasionally we find more than one king in a fylki, or more than one fylki under the rule of a king. In at

least one district of the country, also, the chief power is in the hands of a race of jarls, a title which in later times was conferred by the kings, but which at this early period, although in- ferior to that of king, does not appear to be necessarily subordinate. It is difficult to define precisely the positior of these petty kings. They seem to have represented the fylki in external affairs and to have been its leaders in war, but their power depended greatly on their personal qualities and the extent of their private possessions. That they had no very deep hold is clear from the readiness with which they disappear after the union of the kingdom. But both in fylki and herad every matter of importance was deter- mined at the thing, the meeting of the free people. In some respects the condition of the people in Norway differed materially from that of other Germanic peoples at a similar

Primitive territorial divisions.

stage of development. Owing probably to the nature of the country, we find no trace of the village community which has played so important a part in kindred races, As far back as we can go the ground was owned by indi- vidual proprietors, who partly held it in their own use and partly let it out to men who were practically their depend- ents. These proprietors, with the hersir families at their head, formed something closely resembling a landed aristo- cracy. The most powerful members of the class, distin- guished by their descent, possessions, and personal qualities, scarcely acknowledged a superior. They were surrounded by a band of dependents trained to arms, and were accus- tomed to foreign expeditions, which increased their wealth, power, and warlike habits. Nor did the law of equal succession which at all times prevailed in Norway at all break up the power of these great families. The more common practice seems to have been, not to divide the lands, but to give the younger and more restless members their share of the inheritance in movable goods and let them seek a settlement for themselves. After the lands were settled such a practice must eminently have tended to increase the readiness to undertake foreign expeditions, while at the same time the wealth and power acquired in these expeditions fostered the increase of powerful families at home.

~~About the end of the 9th century Norway first became a united kingdom, and from that time we have a compara- tively full and authentic record of its history. On the west side of the Vik, the present Christiania Fjord, lay a~~

~~Vestfjold small district called Vestfjold, ruled over by arace of kings~~

~~kings,~~

~~Harold Fairhair,~~

~~descended, according toa not very trustworthy legend, from the Swedish Upsala kings. The whole country round the Vik stood, as might be expected from its situation, in closer relation to Denmark and Sweden than the rest of Norway did. According to one version of history the Vest- fjold kings occupied for a short time the Danish throne, while according to another they were tributaries of Den- mark. There was a well-known trading-place within their territory ; and probably at an early time they shared ex- tensively in the traffic of the neighbouring seas and in the expeditions of the Danes. The first clearly discernible figure amongst these Vestfjold kings is Halfdan the Black, who, partly by family connexions and partly by conquest, included within his kingdom the country around the head of the Vik, and thence inland to Lake Mjésen. Halfdan died at a comparatively early age, leaving a son, Harold, who afterwards bore the famous name of Harold Fairhair, and who, according to the commonly received story, suc- ceeded his father in 860, being then ten years of age. Mr Vigfusson contends, however, with considerable prob- ability, that Harold's reign, as well as the colonization of Iceland, has been antedated by nearly thirty years, and it seems, to say the least, improbable that the events during the first ten years of his accession could have taken place in his early youth. But, setting aside the question of chronology, the story of Harold's reign, as given in Norse history, appears to be substantially trustworthy. After obtaining a firm hold on his father's dominions, he went north through Gudbrandsdal and descended upon thecountry of Throndhjem, which he speedily brought to subjection ; and in the three or four subsequent years he had subdued the whole country as far south as Sogne Fjord. He ap- pears to have received material assistance from two great chiefs, Earl Hakon, whose descendants are conspicuous in subsequent history as the Hlada jarls, and Earl Rognwald of Meeri, the ancestor of the dukes of Normandy and the~~

Orkney earls. The country south of Sogne Fjord was still unsubdued, nor was its conquest apparently attempted for some years later. It was the most warlike part of Norway, and from it probably issued the greater part of

the Norwegian viking expeditions, which were now in their fullest vigour. The western chiefs appear at length to have taken the initiative, and to have gathered together a great force, summoning aid apparently even from their kinsmen beyond the western sea. Harold sailed south to meet them, and a fierce battle took place at Hatfrs Fjord, near Stavanger, in which he gained a complete victory ; the hostile force was entirely broken, and from this time his rule over all Norway appears to have been undisputed. Every man was forced to own him as master; new taxes and obligations were imposed ; the fylkis were put under the rule of earls, and the hersirs became or were replaced by the king's lendermenn,—a title which becomes familiar in subsequent history. These lendermenn, however, must not be mistaken for an official nobility deriving their main strength from the king. They became the king's men, bound to support him and to follow him in war, and they received lands from him in return, from which they derived their name ; but they were still for a long time merely the old hersirs under another name, powerful local chiefs who were ready at any moment, if the occasion seemed to require it, to lead against the king their dependents and the free proprietors by whom they were surrounded. But many of the leading men refused to live in Norway upon these terms. They sailed with their families and depend- ents, some of them to Iceland, but many more to the Scot- tish islands, which had long been a favourite resort of the western Norwegians ; and thence for years they kept up a series of raids upon Norway. Harold for a while endeavoured to encounter them on the Norway coast, but finding this interminable he at last crossed the sea with a great force and fell upon the vikings from the northern islands as far south as Man. Orkney, and probably the Hebrides, were placed under Norwegian earls, and from this time we hear comparatively little of marauding ex- peditions from these islands to Norway. Many of those driven out in this western expedition settled ultimately in Iceland, the colonization of which was completed

during Harold’s reign (see IckLAND). Harold in his later years divided his kingdom among his sons, giving a predomi- nance among them to his favourite Erik Blood-axe. He died at an advanced age c. 933 a.p.

On Harold’s death Erik attempted to make himself sole king of Norway, and defeated and slew two of his brothers to whom vassal kingdoms had been assigned by their father ; but his tyrannical and unpopular character fostered the reaction which naturally set in against the strong rule of

Harold. Hakon, a younger son of Harold, who was brought Hakon, up at the English court, and was afterwards known as 8° of

Athelstan’s foster-son, was sent for from England. He was presented by Earl Sigurd, the son of Earl Hakon (Harold’s early supporter), at a great thing at Throndhjem, and there, after promising that he would restore the old rights which his father had taken away, he was accepted asking. In the words of the saga, the tidings flew through the land like fire in dry grass that the Throndhjem people had taken to themselves a king like in all things to Harold Fairhair, except that Harold had enslaved and oppressed all the people in the land, while this Hakon wished good to every one and offered back the odal rights which Harold had taken away. The people flocked to him from all sides, and Erik soon found himself compelled to leave the country, and sailed west to the Orkneys. Hakon’s reign was true to the promise of its commencement. In the Uplands and in Vik he left his kinsmen in possession of the vassal kingdoms ; Ear] Sigurd ruled under him in the north, and the rest of the kingdom he took into his own hand. The landowners were freed from the burdens and vassalage of Harold’s days, although some of the least oppressive taxes appear to have been continued, and the Gula-thing and XVII. — 74

Erik Blood- axe,

Karl Hakon the Great.

Olaf Tryggva- son.

Frosta-thing were reorganized, with probably several amendments on their respective laws, and were extended to their later boundaries. In one respect Hakon was not in accord with his subjects. He had been brought up as a Christian at Athelstan's court, and attempted to intro- duce Christianity into the land; but in this attempt he signally failed, and at one time seems nearly to have broken with his people in consequence. On the whole, however, Norway enjoyed under Hakon internal peace. The troubles which beset his reign, more especially towards its close, arose from Denmark and the sons of Erik Blood-axe.

It is not easy to trace Erik's career after he fled to the Orkneys. According to the Norse sources, he received Northumberland from Athelstan as a vassal kingdom not long after leaving Norway. In the English sources we find him represented as holding Northumberland not under but in opposition to the English king. It is probable enough that he may have held it in both relations ; but, however that may be; he certainly ruled for a time at York, and fell in England c. 952. At the time of his death his wife Gunhild went to the Orkneys with her children and thence to Denmark. She was a famous character in the history of the time, and to her the Norse tradition attributes much of the evil that appears in the career of her husband and children. According to one account she was the sister of Harold Bluetooth, but it is scarcely credible that the rela- tionship between two such well-known figures in the 10th century should be unknown to the principal Norse writers. The favourable reception which she and her children met with in Denmark is sufficiently accounted for by Erik's own Danish descent, and the relations which then existed between Denmark and Norway. Shortly after their arrival in Denmark Erik's sons commenced a series of expeditions against Norway which lasted during the rest of Hakon's reign; at last, after gaining many victories over the in- vaders, Hakon was taken by surprise and slain c. 961.

On Hakon's death the sons of Erik, with Harold, after- wards called Greyfell, at their head, got possession of the western part of Norway, but Vik and the Uplands remained under their former kings, and Earl Sigurd still kept firm hold of the Throndhjem country. Earl Sigurd was treacher- ously slain, and was succeeded by his son, Earl Hakon the Great ; and for many years afterwards the history of the country is a series of struggles

between the sons of Erik and Hakon, mixed up with occasional interferences from Den- mark. At length Harold Greyfell was slain in Denmark, and Hakon succeeded with the help of the Danes in driving the sons of Erik out of the country. For a time he remained in nominal dependence on Denmark, but this was soon shaken off, and in the latter part of his life Hakon, though he never assumed the title of king, ruled in entire independence over the whole north and west of Norway. Latterly he excited animosity by some reckless outrages on the feelings of the people ; a rising took place against him in the Throndhjem country, in which he was slain c. 995, and at the very time of the rising Olaf Tryggvason landed in Norway.

Olaf was a great-grandson of Harold Fairhair. His father, Tryggve, had been treacherously slain by the sons of Erik, and his mother had with difficulty escaped with him, After some strange adventures the boy was received and brought up at the court at Novgorod, and then in his early youth took to a viking life. He soon became a famous leader, and plundered far and wide. In 991 we hear of him in England as one of the chiefs who fought the battle of Maldon, and he appears there again in 994, He sailed on his Norwegian expedition from Ireland, and found the whole country well disposed to receive him as king. Olaf's short reign of five years was chiefly occupied with his efforts to Christianize the country. He had been baptized

|.youth in foreign expeditions. When about nineteen he

some time during his English expedition, and had taken up Christianity in a more serious manner than was gener- ally the case with the Northern converts of his class, who as a rule submitted to baptism as a convenient or neces- sary transaction. Olaf's Christianity does not appear to have been of a very deep or enlightened type, but he was thoroughly in earnest about it, and set himself to enforce its supremacy with the whole energy of his character. And in an incredibly short time, if he had not exactly succeeded in making his subjects Christian, he had at least made it very unsafe for them to be anything else. By force, or gifts, or persuasion, or even by torture if necessary—for his anger was sometimes cruel enough—he had soon scarcely left a man of note unbaptized in Nor- way. Even Iceland was persuaded to accept the faith by his energetic handling of the Icelanders at his court. Of course this wholesale conversion was of a very nominal

~~character, and even Olaf himself always appears to be little more than a loyal and devoted heathen vassal of the new faith. Perhaps the strangest thing is not merely that he attained his end so rapidly, but that he did so without rousing and alienating the people. His splendid personal appearance, his wonderful strength and skill in arms, his inexhaustible courage and energy, and the frank chivalrous nature—bright and joyous when in quiet, but capable of terrible passion when enraged—seem to have overawed and attracted every one at the time, and have made him since the favourite hero of Norse history. In the fifth year of his reign (c. 1001) Olaf undertook an expedition to the Baltic, and a league was formed against him by the kings of Denmark and Sweden, and by Earl Erik, the son of Hakon, who had fled into Sweden after his father's death. Olaf went with a powerful fleet, he himself commanding his great ship the "Long Serpent," the largest and best manned that had ever sailed from Norway. His foes lay in wait for him on his return under Swold, an island off the German coast which cannot now be identified, and there took place the most famous and picturesque battle in Norse history. Olaf's ships were induced by treachery to pass by the island behind which the forces of his ene- mies lay, while the hostile chiefs watched them as they sailed by. At last when all were gone on their way to Norway but the few ships which with Olaf himself brought up the rear, the enemy rowed out and fell upon them. Olaf bound his ships together with the "Long Serpent" in the centre, and his foes surrounded him on all sides. One after another the ships were taken and cleared of men, and at last the crew of the "Long Serpent" were left alone, under a shower of spears and arrows, with the whole enemy around them and with fresh men continually attempting their decks. The saga tells us that Olaf's men grew so mad with rage that they leaped at the ships that surrounded them, not seeing that they were often so far off, so that they fell into the sea and perished. At length almost none were left, and Olaf leaped over- board in his armour. His people at home could scarce believe that he could have perished, and for many years stories were circulated that he had been seen in foreign countries ; but, however that may be, says the chronicler, Olaf Tryggvason came back no more to his kingdom in Norway.~~

~~The two kings and Earl Erik divided Norway among them, but in reality the greater part of the country was held by Earl Erik and his brother Earl Svend, under a little more than nominal vassalage. In the south some of the districts~~

were more directly dependent on Denmark and Sweden. Fourteen years afterwards another descendant of Harold Fairhair appeared in the country. Olaf, son of Saint Harold Grinske, had, like most of his race, spent his early Olaf.

SS a

HISTORY. |

came back to Norway with a small band of well-tried men, and went first to his kinsmen in the Uplands, where some of the small kings of Harold's race still remained in a not very close dependence on Denmark. Erik was by this time dead ; Olaf succeeded in driving Svend out of the land, and became in a short time more thoroughly king of all Norway than any one had been since Harold Fairhair. He rebuilt Nidaros (the modern Throndhjem), which had been founded by Olaf Tryggvason, and which may be called henceforward the capital of Norway. Like Olaf Tryggvason, he was a zealous adherent of Christianity, and, as soon as he was firmly settled, proceeded to enforce it on his subjects. The previous conversion of the land had been superficial, so that, except in the parts of the country which came most into relations with foreign countries, the old religion had still a strong hold, and in some districts was predominant. Under Olaf heathen worship was suppressed with the utmost severity, and Christianity may be said to have become the professed religion of the land. Olaf's rule was firm and powerful. Equal justice was dealt out, as far as practicable, to every one, often in a summary fashion. The great families had flourished under the earls, and seem to hawe been almost wholly independent within their own districts, but, as they one after the other came into collision with the king, they had to yield. Olaf was in many ways a greater man than Olaf Tryggvason: his aims were higher, and he understood them more thoroughly ; but he lacked some of the gifts of his brilliant predecessor. Olaf Tryggvason was the very incarnation of the old popular ideal, and, had the times been favourable, might well enough have passed into tradition, Christianity and all, as one of the

"sir who had come back again to earth. But the other In 1035 Magnus, Olaf's son, who had remained in Russia, Magnus, Olaf was in some ways a new force in Norway. He was | was sent for by some of the leading men,

and was readily ae a aiming at a united Christian kingdom under a strong | accepted as king. Magnus, or rather the chiefs in his Gai.

central power, and these ideas, in so far as they were intelligible, were repugnant to the Norse chiefs. And, besides, his character was somewhat still and reserved, not always destitute even of traits of cunning, so that altogether, though every one was forced to respect his courage and ability, and his own followers were devotedly attached to him, most of the Norwegian chiefs never wholly under- stood or trusted him. In one way or another he incurred

NO nh Ww A Y

587

of Canute, made Norway bitterly regret the loss of Olaf. The resentments which had been awakened by his stern, just rule passed out of sight, and men only remembered his great qualities, and that in his time the land was free from foreign interference. His devoted adherence to Christianity, especially in his later days, gave a definite direction to these reminiscences; he was regarded as a martyr and saint, and miracles were reported to have been wrought by him even under the very nose of his Danish successor. Olaf was rightly regarded as the patron saint of the new Christian monarchy. It was he who not only had Christianized the land, but had for the first time thoroughly united the kingdom. His reign had given rise to a feeling of unitedness and independent existence which the country never had before and never afterwards wholly lost. For nearly a century afterwards Norway was ruled in internal peace by the kings of his race. The church was organized and became powerful. The private viking ex- peditions gradually ceased, for it began to be considered a scandal to plunder in Christian lands ; and possibly also the practice grew more dangerous. Swein Asleifson, in the middle of the 12th century, is the last recorded viking of the old type, and he dwelt in the Orkneys. At the same time several of the kings made greater foreign expe- ditions, which probably afforded a sufficient vent for their more restless subjects. The central authority of the king grew stronger and more stable. His court and personal following were better organized. The lendermenn, although still remaining chiefs of the landed aristocracy, ceased to exercise the same

~~semi-independent power in their own districts, and came into closer relations with the king and court.~~

~~name, for he was still very young at the time, had settled the quarrel with Denmark by coming to an agreement with Hardicanute, that when one died the other should succeed to his crown. In 1042 Hardicanute died, and Magnus peacefully took possession of his kingdom. But troubles soon arose from Svend Estridsen, nephew of Canute the Great, who attempted to seize Denmark, and who had entered into terms with a formidable Norse ally. Harold,~~

~~the enmity of many of the most powerful men in the west and north, and he had a dangerous foreign enemy. Canute was at the height of his power, had claims, he~~

~~Sigurd's son, known sometimes as Hardrada (hard coun- Harold sel), the half-brother of Olaf, was one of the last and most ed famous of the great viking chiefs. His father was a small ™°*~~

~~thought, upon Norway, and was, moreover, deeply irri- tated by an expedition which Olaf had made upon Den- mark along with the king of Sweden. He had con- nexions with many of the chiefs, which he fostered as much as possible, and in 1028 he came with a great force to Norway; Olaf could make no head against him, and was compelled to fly to Russia. But after a while Olaf heard that there was for a time no ruler in Norway, and re- solved to attempt to win back his kingdom. He obtained assistance in Sweden, gathered his friends from Norway, and then went over the mountains into the Throndhjem country. The chiefs who were most bitterly opposed to him drew together a great force and met him at Stikkle- stad, and there, when only thirty-five years old, he was defeated and slain in August 1030. There is a singular change to be observed in the narrative of this latter part of Olaf's life. He seems to have become more devoted to Christianity, and in every way more thoughtful and gentle. The stories about him look as if his adversities had forced him to take a retrospect of his life and prepare for a new career; and if he had been the victor at Stikklestad it is hard to say what influence he might not have exercised~~

~~Upland king of Harold Fairhair's race; he had fought when a boy at Stikklestad, had gone to the East and taken service with the Greek emperor, and was now come back to the North with great wealth and fame. Fora short time he entered into league with Svend, but an arrangement was soon brought about by which he and Magnus were made friends, and Harold became joint king of Norway. Magnus died in the following year (1047), leaving Den- mark to Svend and Norway to Harold; Harold was not, however, inclined to relinquish Denmark, and wasted it year after year by terrible incursions; at last he under- took a more formidable task, and fell in England in 1066 with the very flower of Norway at the battle of Stamford Bridge.~~

~~Harold's son, Olaf Kyrre (the quiet), ruled Norway in Olaf peace for twenty-seven years, a peace which may in some Kyrre.~~

~~respects have been due to the way in which the country had been drained of its hottest blood by Harold's expedi- tions. During this reign the country attained considerable prosperity, trade increased, and, among other merchant towns, Bergen, which soon attained the first place, was~~

~~founded. But Olaf's son Magnus (known sometimes as Magnus Magnus Barefoot), who succeeded his father in 1093, reigned Barefoot. in a manner more like his grandfather. He was continu-~~

~~upon subsequent history. A short experience of Danish rule under Svend, the son~~

~~Eystein and Sigurd Jorsala- fari.~~

~~Period of~~

~~anarchy.~~

~~Magnus, son of Erling Skakke.~~

~~The Bir- kebeinar.~~

~~Sverri.~~

ally occupied in foreign expeditions, and at last fell in Ireland in 1103.

The three sons of Magnus succeeded to the kingdom at his death. One of them died in youth, but Sigurd and Eystein reigned long together, Eystein being a king like Olaf Kyrre, while Sigurd inherited to the full the warlike qualities of his family. The great external event of the reign is Sigurd's expedition to the East, from which he gained the name of Jorsalafari (the traveller to J erusalem). The account given by the saga of the origin of that expe- dition is characteristic and probably enough true. Many men had already been to Jerusalem and to Constantinople, and there they had got renown, and had all kinds of news to tell when they came home, and those who had taken service at Constantinople had the best luck in the way of gain; so the people bade one of the kings undertake the expedition. Sigurd went with a great force, fought many battles by the way, gained much plunder in heathen lands, and visited Jerusalem and Constantinople. Sigurd survived Eystein, and died in 1130. In his last year he showed traces of insanity. He was the last true representative of Harold Fairhair's great race, and with him the classical period of Norwegian history may almost be said to come to an end.

With the death of Sigurd commences a long period of internal strife. His son Magnus was forced to share the sovereignty with a colleague, Harold Gilchrist, who pro- fessed to be a natural son of Magnus Barefoot, and who in a short time succeeded in deposing his colleague. Harold was slain in 1136 byanother pretender. Parties had formed themselves amongst the lendermenn aristocracy, who took as their nominal heads the sons and grandsons of Harold Gilchrist, often mere children ; the church hierarchy, now growing powerful, interfered in the struggle, and the whole land was divided by bitter feuds. The disorganization of the country was shown by the appearance of bands of armed disorderly men, generally at first on the Swedish frontier. Unity at last seemed likely to be secured by an innovation in the succession. A powerful chief named Erling Skakke managed to get his son Magnus, who by his mother's side was a grandson of Sigurd Jorsalafari, accepted as king, first by the leading party and then practically by the whole country. He came to terms with the hierarchy ; an agree- ment

was entered into in 1164, by which various privileges were secured to the church, and a definite rule of succession was adopted. The kingdom was to be held as a fief of St Olaf, and the church dignitaries were to have a powerful voice in the succession. In return for these concessions Magnus was solemnly crowned by the archbishop of Throndhjem, and his defective claim was thus strengthened by a new form of legitimation.

There seemed every reason to suppose that the kingdom would now rest firmly on the united support of the aristo- cracy and the church, but in reality the basis proved to be an insecure one. The aristocracy stood no longer as formerly in close connexion with the mass of the free people, and they had not yet become welded together in a separate organized order. One of the troops of adven- turers which had appeared in the previous state of con- fusion, and had been the followers of one of the various claimants to the throne, was known as the Birkebeinar. They were on the verge of extinction when they secured a leader of no common type. Sverri was a Faroe Islander. He seems to have been well enough aware himself that he had no claims to royal birth, but he gave himself out as the son of Sigurd, the son of Harold Gilchrist, and as such was accepted by the Birkebeinar. In a little while it became clear that his talents for command were of the first order, and the little troop of disorderly men became in his hands a disciplined military force. A fierce struggle

ensued with Magnus, who in the end was defeated and slain in 1184 at Fimreite on Nord Fjord. Sverri became king, and represented himself as maintaining the old law of succession and the old order of things as against the arrangement of 1164. But in reality his reign was the commencement of a new phase. The older kings were within very narrow limits absolute, and claimed the king- dom as an odal right ; but they were confronted and con- trolled by the mass of free landowners under their local aristocratic chiefs. A change had gradually taken place, and it seemed as if a separate aristocracy were to detach themselves from the people, and, with the help of the church, take the administration into their own hands. Sverri struck the hardest blows at both. He effectually prevented the formation of a powerful

nobility, and he wholly repudiated the domination of the church. He had hammered out for himself a theory of church and state not unlike that of Henry VIIL, and held that the king derived his title from God, and was entitled to an equal supremacy over both. The church retaliated by excom- munication, for which, however, Sverri and his followers cared nothing, and by which their position does not seem

to have been in the least affected. New officials appear

in the administration of local affairs who were appointed and directly controlled by the king, and if his plans had been fully carried out it seems likely that the whole power would have been centralized under his hands. He had to fight, however, for his kingdom to the very end, and at his death in 1202 it seemed doubtful what turn affairs would take.

The party strife continued with scarcely an intermission until long after Sverri's death. The party of the Birke- beinar, however, kept well together and were on the whole the stronger. Their rivals had their chief seat in the south, and were closely connected with Denmark. At last Hakon, a grandson of Sverri, was placed on the throne in 1217, and in 1240 the last of the rival claimants to the throne fell, and the whole country was once more at peace under one king. The stormy times of Norway's history appear suddenly to pass away, and the stillness that ensues is likened by one of its historians to "the stillness on a battlefield after the battle." Hakon died in 1263. There are only two external events of note in his long reign. The one is the acquisition of Iceland, which, like the parent country, had been thoroughly worn out by the struggles of its chiefs. The other is Hakon's Scotch expedition in 1261; which was put an end to by a storm and by the not very important battle of Largs, and which showed con- clusively how much the seamanship and fighting power of Norway had declined. Hakon's son Magnus surrendered the Hebrides to Scotland by the treaty of Perth in 1268. There is some dispute whether or not this was done under condition of a tribute, but there seems to be no doubt that the tribute, if due, was at all events never paid. Magnus was known by the surname of Lagabetr (law reformer), a designation which indicates the chief work of his reign. The great changes that had taken place during the long period of the civil wars must have rendered some alteration of the old law imperatively necessary ;

~~and, while something had been done in Hakon's reign, the work was completed under Magnus. In place of the old provincial laws a new law book was prepared for the whole kingdom, compiled from the older laws with the changes that seemed necessary. Many of these changes relate to customs and rights which had their origin in heathen times. Others show the altered relation of classes. A conspicuous feature is the new importance of the king's officials and the increased power and position of the king himself. Magnus died in 1280 and was succeeded by~~

~~Hakon, grandson of Sverri.~~

~~Magnus Laga- beetr.~~

~~Erik, son of~~

~~his son Erik, whose only child, the Maid of Norway, Magnus.~~

~~Hakon, son of Magnus, abolishes the Len- dermenn.~~

~~LITERATURE. |~~

~~perished at sea when on her way to Scotland. In 1299 Erik died and was succeeded by his brother Hakon, who died in 1319, and whose only daughter carried the Norwegian crown into the Swedish line. During the reign of Hakon the lendermenn, who had so long been conspicuous in Norse history, finally disappeared. Hakon abolished them by a decree, without apparently even con- sulting his council, and without encountering the slightest resistance. They do not even reappear in the minority which followed, and which must have afforded them a very favourable opportunity of recovering their power. They occupied, in truth, an anomalous and untenable position.~~

~~They had long ceased, as we have seen, to be the chiefs~~

~~Union with Swedish crown.~~

~~Union with Denmark.~~

~~Reverts to Sweden,~~

~~and representatives of the free landowners, and they had failed to assert themselves as a separate power by the side of the king. Under Magnus Lagabetr they had acquired the title of barons, but even under long minorities they never got any real hold of power. The king was too strong for them after they had lost their old position, and he preferred ruling through officers of his own who were wholly dependent on him. Neither was there any room for the growth of a nobility of another type. On the one hand the position of the king was too absolute, and on the other hand the people were too firmly rooted in their old traditional independence. The mass of the small landowners, among whom the greater families, by the partition of their domains, gradually sank back, were ready to obey the king and his officers ; but they were not the material on which an intermediate power could be rested. They admitted that the king had an odal right to his kingdom and a definite claim for services and pay- ments, but in the same way they themselves had an im- memorial odal right to their lands. The situation of Norway during the Middle Ages might be shortly described as an absolute monarchy resting almost directly on one of the most democratic states of society in Europe. Titles appear, but they represent little or nothing. The ruling officials or deputies of the king are occasionally oppressive, but there is no permanent subjection to them.~~

~~From the time of the union with the Swedish crown the history of Norway is bound up with that of the other Scandinavian countries. With Sweden she entered the Calmar union in 1397, but when that union was broken in the beginning of the 16th-century she remained with Den- mark, and during the whole time of union can scarcely be said to have had a history of her own. The Danish kings were accepted in Norway with only an occasional show of dissent and resistance. One of her oldest and most famous colonies, the Orkney and Shetland Islands, was in 1468 given in pledge, never to be redeemed, to the Scottish king by Christian I. The commercial towns fell under the iron rule of the Hanseatic League and all the old enterprise seemed to have perished. Intellectual life appeared to fall as low ascommercial prosperity. The vigorous Norse- Icelandic literature was supplanted after the time of Hakon Magnusson by versions of foreign legends and history, but even that disappeared, and, as the manuscript copies grew scarcer, it appears as if for a while the Nor- wegians had ceased to read as well as to write. The Re- formation spread more slowly into~~

Norway than into the other Scandinavian countries, and had to be encouraged by the Danish kings by methods not altogether dissimilar to those by which Christianity had at first been introduced. But better times began to dawn during last century. Re- strictions were removed from lands and the administration was improved. The material prosperity of the country rapidly increased and a new life began to appear.

By the terms of the peace of Kiel (14th January 1814) Norway was to be transferred from Denmark to Sweden. The Norwegians were at first inclined to resist this, but

their means of resistance were small and the Swedes offered liberal terms. In the same year the constitution was solemnly ratified, and Charles XIII. was taken as king. Since then the country has been peaceful and prosperous. The only serious political troubles have been those arising from the question whether the king has an absolute veto upon alteration of the fundamental law of the kingdom.

Bibliography.—P. A. Munch, Det Norske Folk's Historie (Chris- tiania, 1852-63); J. E. Sars, Udsigt over det Norske Historie (Christiania, 1873-77); R. Keyser, Norges Stats- og Retsforfatning (Christiania, 1867). Different views of the part taken by Norway and Denmark in the viking expeditions are represented in Gustav Storm's Kritiske Bidrag til Vikingetiden's Historie (Christiania, 1878); and J. C. H. R. Steenstrup's Inledning i Normannertiden (Copenhagen, 1876). See also Konrad Maurer's Die Bekehrung des Norwegischen Stammes zum Christenthume (Munich, 1855). The original sources are only accessible to English readers in Laing's Chronicle of the Kings of Norway (London, 1844), a translation from Heimskringla, which does not, however, represent the best versions of some of the sagas. Valuable historical notes are to be found in Messrs. Vigfusson and Powell's Corpus Poeticum Boreale (Oxford, 1883). (A. GL)

Part IV.—LITERATURE.

~~The literature of Norway bears something of the same relation to that of Denmark that American literature bears to English. In each case the development and separation of a dependency have produced a desire on the part of persons speaking the mother-tongue for a literature that shall ex- press the local emotions and conditions of the new nation. Two notable events led to the foundation of Norwegian literature : the one was the creation of the university of Christiania in 1811, and the other was the separation of Norway from Denmark in 1814. These events were the signals for intellectual and political independence. Before this time Norwegian writers had been content, as a rule, to publish their works at Copenhagen, which was the metropolis of the realm ; they had now a capital of their own in Christiania. The great distinction, however, between Norway and America was that the former was sufficiently ancient and sufficiently neighbouring to contribute to the glory of Denmark a great many young men who quitted the colonial and narrow circle into which they were born, and became to all intents and purposes Danish writers. The first name on the annals of Danish literature, Peder Clausson, is that of a Norwegian; and if all Norse writers were removed from that roll, the list would be poorer by some of its most illustrious names, by Holberg, Tullin, Wessel, Treschow, Steffens, and Hauch.~~

~~We must first examine what was done in Norway itself during the colonial period. The first book printed in the country was an almanac, brought out in Christiania in 1643 by a wandering printer named Tyge Nielsen, who brought his types from Copenhagen. But the first press set up definitely in Norway was that of Valentin Kuhn, brought over from Germany in 1650 by the theologian Christian Stephensen Bang (1580-1678) to help in the circulation of his numerous tracts. Bang's Christianix Stads Beskrifuelse, 1651, is the first book published in Norway. The name which next detains us is that of Christen Jensen (d. 1653), a priest who collected a small glossary or glosebog of the local dialects, and which was published in 1656. Gerhard Milzow (1629-1688), the author of a Presbyterologia Norwegica, 1679, was also a Norse priest. The earliest Norwegian writer of any original merit was Dorthe Engelbrechtsdatter (1634-1716), afterwards the wife of the pastor Ambrosius Hardenbech (see vol. vili. p. 214). She is the author of several volumes of religious poetry, of a very lacrymose and lamentable order, which have enjoyed great popu- larity down to the present day. The~~

hymn-writer Johan Brunsmann (1637-1707), though a Norseman by birth, belongs by education and temper entirely to Denmark. Not so-Peder Dass (1647-1708) (see vol. vi. p. 831), the

most original writer whom Norway produced and retained at home during the colonial period. Another priest, Jonas Ramus (1649-1718), wrote two important posthumous works in prose, Worriges Kongers Historie (History of the Norse Kings) in 1719, and Worriges Beskrivelse, 1735. The celebrated missionary to Greenland, Hans Egede (1686- 1758), wrote several works on his experiences in that country. Peder Hersleb (1689-1757) was the compiler of some popular treatises of Lutheran theology. Frederik Nannestad, bishop of Throndhjem (1693-1774), deserves mention as the founder of the periodical press in Norway, having started a weekly gazette in 1760. The missionary Knud Leem (1697-1774) published a number of philo- logical and topographical works regarding the Lapps of Finmark, one at least of which, his Beskrivelse over [in- markens Lapper, 1767, still possesses considerable interest. The famous Erik Pontoppidan (1698-1764) cannot be re- garded as a Norwegian, for he did not leave Denmark until he was made bishop of Bergen, at the age of forty-nine. On the other hand the far more famous Baron Ludvig Holberg (1684-1754), the chief of Danish writers, belongs to Denmark by everything but birth, having left Norway in childhood.

A few Norsemen of the beginning of the 18th century distinguished themselves, chiefly in science. Of these Johan Ernst Gunnerus (1718-1773), bishop of Throndhjem, was the most eminent ; he was the first man who gave close attention to the Norwegian flora. He founded the Norwegian Royal Society of Sciences in 1760, in unison with his friends Gerhard Schéning (1722-1780) the his- torian and Hans Strém (1726-1797) the zoologist. Of these three friends Schéning deserves the greatest promi- nence in this place, because he wrote more in Danish and less in Latin than the other two. In belles-lettres Norway began to show vitality only when the century had reached its half-way point. Peder Christofer Stenersen (1723-1776), a writer of occasional verses, merely led the way for Christian Braumann Tullin (1728-1765), a lyrical poet of exquisite genius, whose

~~talent is claimed by Den- mark as one of the jewels in the crown of her literature, but who must be mentioned here, because his poetry was not only mainly composed in Christiania, but breathes a local spirit. He has been called the Father of Danish lyrical verse. From Tullin's day for about thirty years Denmark was principally supplied with poets from Norway. That portion of the chronicle of Danish literature which extends between the great names of Evald and Baggesen presents us with hardly a single figure which is not that of a Norseman. The director of the Danish national theatre in 1771 was a Norwegian, Niels Krog Bredal (1733-1778), who was the first to write lyrical dramas in Danish, and who exercised wide influence. A Norwegian, Johan Nor- dah] Brun (1745-1816), was the principal tragedian of the time, in the French taste. It was a Norwegian, J. H. Wessel (1742-1785), who laughed this taste out of fashion. In 1772 the Norwegian poets were so strong in Copen- hagen that they formed a Norske Selskab (Norwegian Society), which exercised a tyranny over contemporary letters which was only shaken when Baggesen appeared. Among the leading writers of this period we can but just mention, besides those above named, Claus Frimann (1746- 1829), Peter Harboe Frimann (1752-1839), Claus Fasting (1746-1791), Johan Wibe (1748-1782), Edvard Storm (1749-1794), C. H. Pram (1756-1821), Jonas Rein (1760- 1821), Jens Zetlitz (1761-1821), and Lyder Christian Sagen (1771-1850), all of whom, though Norwegians by birth, find their place in the annals of Danish literature. To these poets must be added the philosophers Niels Treschow (1751-1833) and Henrik Steffens (1773-1845), and in later times the poet Johannes Carsten Hauch (1790-~~

~~ff OR W 2°~~

~~[LITERATURE,~~

~~1872). There is no example of a writer of importance, born in Norway since 1800, who is counted among Danish authors.~~

~~The first form which Norwegian literature took as an independent thing was what was called "Syttendemai- Poesi," or poetry of the seventeenth of May, that being the day on which Norway obtained her independence and pro- claimed her king. Three poets, called the Trefoil, came forward as the inaugurators of Norwegian thought in 1814. Of these Conrad Nicolai~~

Schwach (1793-1860) was the least remarkable. Henrik Anker Bjerregaard (1792- 1842), born in the same hamlet of Ringsaker as Schwach, had a much brighter and more varied talent. His poems, collected at Christiania in 1829, contain some charming studies from nature. He brought out a tragedy of Mag- nus Barfods Sénner (Magnus Barefoot's Sons) and a lyrical drama, Ljeldeventyret (The Adventure in the Mountains), 1828. The third member of the Trefoil, Mauritz Chris- topher Hansen (1794-1842), was a laborious and fecund worker in many fields. His novels, of which Ottar de Bretagne, 1819, was the earliest, were much esteemed in their day, and after Hansen's death were collected and edited, with a memoir by Schwach. Hansen's Poems, printed at Christiania in 1816, were among the earliest publications of a liberated Norway, but were preceded by a volume of Smaadigte (Short Poems) by all three poets, edited by Schwach in 1815, as a semi-political manifesto. These writers, of no great genius in themselves, did much by their industry and patriotism to form a basis for Nor- wegian literature to be built upon. They wrote, however, on national themes without much knowledge, and in com- plete bondage to the conventional forms in vogue in Copenhagen in their youth.

The creator of Norwegian literature, however, was the poet Henrik Arnold Wergeland (1808-1845), a man of great genius and enthusiasm, who contrived within the limits of a life as short as Byron's to concentrate the labours of a dozen ordinary men of letters. He held views in most respects similar to those pronounced by Rousseau and Shelley; he never ceased to preach the dignity of man, the worth of liberty to the individual and of independence to the nation, and the relation of republican politics to a sound form of literature. His own ideal of literature, however, was at first anything but sound. He was the eldest son of Professor Nikolai Wergeland (1780- 1848), who had been one of the constitutional assembly who proclaimed the independence of Norway in 1814 at Eidsvold. Nikolai was himself pastor of Hidsvold, and the poet was thus brought up in the very holy of holies of Norwegian patriotism. His earliest efforts in literature were wild and formless. He was full of imagination, but without taste or knowledge. He published poetical farces under the pseudonym of '"Siful Sifadda," trifles unworthy of attention. These were followed, in 1828, by Sinclazr's Death, an unsuccessful tragedy; and in 1829 by a volume of lyrical and patriotic poems, which attracted the liveliest attention to his

~~name. At the age of twenty-one he became a power in literature,—nay more, an influence in the state. But these writings were coldly received by connoisseurs, and a monster epic, Skabelsen, Mennesket, og Mesias (Creation, Man, and Messiah), which followed in 1830, showed no improvement in style. From 1831 to 1835 Wergeland was submitted to severe satirical attacks from Welhaven and others, and his style became improved in every respect. His popularity waned as his poetry im- proved, and in 1840 he found himself a really great poet, but an exile from political influence. His Jan van Huy- sums Blomsterstykke (J. van Huysum's Flower-piece), 1840, Svalen (The Swallow), 1841, Jéden (The Jew), 1842, Jédinden (The Jewess), 1844, and Den Hngelske Lods~~

~~LITERATURE. |~~

~~(The English Pilot), 1844, form a series of narrative poems in short lyrical metres which remain the most in- teresting and important of their kind in Norwegian litera- ture. He was less successful in other branches of letters; in the drama, neither his Campbellerne (The Campbells), 1837, Venetianerne (The Venetians), 1843, nor Sdkadetterne (The Cadets), 1848, has achieved any lasting success, while his elaborate contribution to political history, Norges Konstitutions Historie, 1841-43, is forgotten. The poems of his last five years, however, enjoy as true a popularity as ever, and are not likely to lose it. The only influence which Wergeland, in spite of his genius, has had on Nor- wegian literature is the removal of traditions and the release of style in various directions. His obscurity and extravagance have stood in the way of his teaching, and his only disciples in poetry have been Sylvester Sivertson (1809-1847), a journalist of talent whose verses were col- lected in 1848, and Christian Monsen (1815-1852).~~

~~A far more wholesome and constructive influence was that of Johann Sebastian Cammermeyer Welhaven (1807- 1873), who was first brought to the surface by the con- servative reaction in 1830 against the extravagance of the radical party. His first publications were polemical, and were mainly directed against Wergeland. A savage attack on Henrik Wergeland's Poetry, published in 1832, caused a great sensation, and produced an angry pamphlet in reply from the father, Nikolai Wergeland. 'The con- troversy became the main topic of the day, and in 1834 Welhaven pushed it into a~~

wider arena by the publication of his beautiful cycle of satirical sonnets called Worges Dexmring (The Dawn of Norway), in which he preached a full conservative gospel. Norway has not followed Wel- haven in politics, but it certainly has in literature. The salutary character of his advice was instantly felt by the younger men of letters. As a poet and as a critic he continued to do admirable work. He published volumes of lyrical and romantic poems in 1839, 1845, 1848, 1851, and 1860 ; and he enriched the language by two excellent critical studies, one on Holberg, 1854, and the other on EHvald and the Norwegian Club, 1863. His collected works appeared in eight volumes in 1867-68. He was assisted in his controversy with Wergeland by Henrik Hermann Foss (1790-1853), author of Tidsnornerne (The Norns of the Age), 1835, and other verses.

Andreas Munch (b. 1811), the oldest now-living Norwegian author of any repute, has been one of the most rapid and industrious of poetical writers. He took no part in the feud between Werge- land and Welhaven, but addicted himself to the study of Danish models independently of either. He published a series of poems and dramas, one of which latter, Kong Sverres Ungdom, 1837, attracted some notice, without securing much position. His popu- larity commenced with the appearance of his Poems Old and New in 1848, and has only lately begun to decline. Andreas Munch makes little or no appeal to the highest poetical susceptibilities ; his work is melodious, facile, and graceful, but without depth of feeling or artistic beauty. His highest level as a poet was reached by his epic called Kongedatterens Brudefart (The Bridal Journey of the King's Daughter), 1861. 'T'wo of his historical dramas have enjoyed a popularity greatly in excess of their merit ; these are Solomon de Caus, 1854, and Lord William Russell, 1857. Munch published a fragment of an autobiography in 1874, with the title of Barndoms- og Ungdoms-minder (Memoirs of Childhood and Youth).

A group of minor poetical writers may now be considered. Magnus Brostrup Landstad (1802-1881) was born on Maaso, an island in the vicinity of the North Cape, and therefore in higher latitudes than any other man of letters. He was a hymmn-writer of merit, and he was the first to collect, in 1853, the Norske Follce- viser, or Norwegian folk-songs. Landstad was ordered by the Government to prepare an official national hymn-book, which was brought out in 1861. Peter Andreas Jensen (1812-

1867) published volumes of lyrical poetry, mostly to edification, in 1838, 1849, 1855, and 1861, and two dramas. He was also the author of a novel, Hn Erindring (A Souvenir), in 1857. Aasmund Olafsen Vinje (1818-1870) was a peasant of remarkable talent, who was the principal leader of the movement known as the " maalstrev," an

effort to distinguish Norwegian from Danish literature by the adop- tion of a peasant dialect, or rather a new language arbitrarily formed on a collation of the various dialects. Vinje wrote a volume of lyrics, which he published in 1864, and a narrative poem, Storegut (Big Lad), 1866, entirely in this fictitious language, and he even went so far as to issue in it a newspaper, Délen ('Ihe Dalesman), which appeared from 1858 to Vinje's death in 1870. In these efforts he was supported by Ivar Aagen, to whom we shall return, and by Kristoffer Jansen (b. 1841), now the only remaining "'maalstreever," who resides in the United States, and who is the author of various important works,—an historical tragedy, Jon Arason, 1867 ; several novels, —Fraa Bygdom, 1865 ; Torgrim, 1872; Fra Dansketidi, 1875 ; Han og Ho, 1878; and Austanfyre Sol og Vestanfyre Maane (East of the Sun and West of the Moon), 1879; besides a powerful but morbid drama in the ordinary language of Norway, Ln Kvindeskjebne (A Woman's Fate), 1879. Superior to all the preceding in the quality of his lyrical writing was the late bishop of Christiansand, Jérgen Moe (1813-1882), author of three little volumes of exquisite verses, published in 1850, 1851, and 1853. He is, however, better known by his labours in compara- tive mythology, in conjunction with P. C. Asbjérnsen.

The mixture of such opposite elements as the wild genius of Wergeland and the cold critical judgment of Welhaven would seem to have formed a singularly happy basis for the writers of the next generation to build a literature upon. The now-living poets of Norway may hold their own without fear of too severe a rivalry, not merely with those of Denmark and Sweden, whom they easily excel, but with those of the great powers. There can be no reason- able question that Ibsen and Bjornson are the two most original figures of their generation in the Teutonic world of imagination.

~~But their energy, and that of their companions, has been almost entirely confined to two fields,;—the drama and the novel. The narrative and epical forms of poetry, and even the lyric in its more ambitious directions, have not flourished in the modern Norwegian school. The most conspicuous name in Norwegian literature is that of Henrik Ibsen (b. 1828). His early efforts were not remark- able, and to this day he has not succceded in any field but the drama, where he isa master. His first tragedy, Catzlina, 1850, was a work of little importance. It was not until 1856 that he came forward with a romantic drama, Gildet paa Solhaug (The Feast at Solhaug), in which an individual style was noticcable. Two successive tragedies, Fru Inger til Osteraad, 1857, and Hermaendene paa Helgeland (The Warriors on Helgeland), 1858, displayed a sudden development of power. In 1863, at last, he wrote an his- torical tragedy, Kongsenunerne (The Pretenders), which is a work of maturer genius. He had by this time, however, been drawn into a new channel. In 1862 he began his series of lyrico-satirical dramas on modern Norwegian life with his Kjwrlighedens Komedie (Love's Comedy), a brilliant study, which was succeeded by two masterpieces of a similar kind, Brand in 1866, and Peer Gynt in 1867. These were long dramas, written entirely in octosylabic rhyming verse. In De Unges Forbwnd (The Young Men's League), 1869, which was a political satire of much force, he abandoncd verse, and has since written all his dramas in prose. In 1871 he collected his lyrical poems, and in 1873 he published Kejser og Galilwer (Emperor and Galilean), a double drama of portentous size, on the career of Julian the Apostate. Since that time he has published, about once in every two years, satirical comedies of great pungency and wit, laying bare some sore of modern social life among his countrymen,—Samfundets Stotter (The Pillars of Society), in 1877; Hi Dukkehjem (A Doll's House, or Nora), in 1879; Gengangere (Ghosts), in 1881; and En Folkefiende (Au Enemy to the People), in 1883. The last of these is a humorous apology for the poet's severity as a satirist, which in his latest works has seemed excessive even to his greatest admirers. He has lived in voluntary exile from Norway since 1864.~~

~~It has been a misfortune to Bjornstjerne Bjéruson (b. 1832) that he was born four years later than Ibsen, with whose powers his might else be more exactly matched. It is possible that in some respects his mind is more richly endowed than Ibsen's, and it would seem to be more versatile ; the elder~~

poet, however, is the superior artist, and has his qualities under more severe control. Bjornson has made several false starts ; Ibsen scarcely one. ‘The first successes of Bjoruson were made in the field of the novel, where he adapted from the German school of ‘“‘ dorfgeschichten,” a species of realistic and yet romantic tale of life among the peasants in the mountains, which was singularly charming and attractive. Of these the two first, Synnéve Solbakken, 1857, and Arne, 1858, were among the best, and made his name famous. His ambition, however, was to excel in dramatic writing, and after three comparative failures— Halte Hulda (Halting Hulda), 1858 ; dfellem Slagene (Between the Battles), 1859 ; and Kong Sverre (King Sverre), 1861—he made a great success with his heroic trilogy of Sigurd Slembe in 1862. In the meantime small sketches of peasant life, and the exquisite little story called En Glad Gut (A Merry Lad), had supported his repu- tation. In 1863 he brought out a tragedy of Maria Stuart 7 Skot- land, and in 1865 a little comedy De Nygifte (The Newly-married

592

Couple), which enjoyed an overwhelming success. Another story, Fiskerjenten (The Fisher-Girl), in 1868, was found less fresh and unaffected than his early stories, and he returned to his charming pristine manner in Brudeslaaten, 1873. Since that year he has published but one novel, Magnhtld, 1877, and a slight study of Italian life, Kapiejn Mansana, 1879, neither quite worthy of his genius. All his other productions have been dramatic. Fired with emulation for Ibsen, he has written Sigurd Jorsalfar, in 18738, an historical saga-drama, and a series of satirical comedies,—En Fallit (A Bankruptcy), 1875, an admirable piece ; Redaktéren (The Editor), 1875 ; Kongen (The King), 1877, a political manifesto in four acts ; Leonarda, 1879; Det ny System (The New System), 1879 ; En Handske (A Glove), 1883 ; and Over .divne (Beyond his Reach), 1883,—the last a very singular study of epileptic hysteria as a fac- tor in religious enthusiasm. Bjornson is a republican of the most advanced order, and his views are pushed forward too crudely for artistic effect in several of his later works.

Two writers of novels who owe much to the example of Ibsen and Bjornson are Jonas Lie (b. 1883) and Alexander Kielland (b. 1849). Lie was late in developing his talent, and has lost much time in wavering between the

~~sentimental and the realistic schools of treatment. He has finally thrown in his cause with the latter in his last novel Livs- Slaven, 1883. His best books have been stories of seafaring life—Den Fremsynte (The Man with the Second Sight), 1870; Tremasteren Fremtiden (The Threemaster '' Future B): 1872; Lodsen og hans Hustru (The Pilot and his Wifc), 1874 ; and Rutland, 1880. His tales of town-life—Zhomas Ross, 1878, and 'Adam Schrider, 1879—have less of the novelist's illusion. Kielland may prove to possess a stronger talent than Lie; his progress has been more rapid and steady, and he has a clearer idea of what he wishes to do. He began by being strongly influenced by Zola in his Garman og Worse, 1879, and his Arbeidsfolk (Working People), 1880. His latest works have shown steady improvemeut in style and a growing independence of French models. From this, the youngest of distinguished Norwegian writers, we may turn back to a few older names which close the list of novelists. Nicolai Ramm Ostgaard (1812-1873) to some extent preceded Bjornson in his graceful romance En Fjeldbygd (A Monntain Parish), in 1852. Frithjof Foss, who wrote under the pseudonym of Israél Dehn (b. 1830), attracted notice by a series of no less than seven separate stories published between 1862 and 1864, but has been silent since. The two most important women-novelists have been Jacobine Camilla Collett (b. 1813), a cousin of the poet Wergeland, author of Amimandens Ditire (The Governor's Daughters), 1855, an excellent novel, and many other volumes ; and Anna Magdalene Thorescn (b. 1819), a Dane by birth, author of a series of novels.~~

~~'The labours of Peter Christen Asbjornsen (b. 1812), in conjunction with Bishop Moe, in the collection of the old Norse folk-tales, de- mand prominent recognition in any skctch of Norwegian literature. Before they were twenty years of age these friends began to write down the stories of the peasants. In 1888 Asbjérnsen first made public some of the results of his investigations in a little publication for children called Nor. Not until 1842 did the first authorized edition of the Norske Folkeeventyr see the light. It was followed in 1845 by Huldreeventyr, or stories about the fairies or sirens which haunt the mountain dairies, by Asbjérnsen alone. Of these a second series appeared in 1848, and in 1871 a new series was published again by Asbjorusen alone of the Folkeeventyr. It was from minstrels, boatmen, vagabonds, and paupers that the best stories were collected, and it is a significant fact that most of these professional reciters are now dead. Had~~

~~Asbjornsen and Moe neglected the duty of preserving the ancient legends, they would now, in all probability, be entirely lost. What has been done by Asbjornsen for the peasant-stories has been done for the dialects in which they were composed by Ivar Aasen (b. 1813). Since 1850~~

~~he has received a pension from the state to enable him to study the peasant-patois, and his great dictionary, Norsk Ordbog, first printed in 1858, and his other linguistic publications have been the result. He is the creator of the artificial language, the " maal," which Vinje, K. Jansen, and others have written in; and he has published in it a valuable collection of proverbs, 1851.~~

~~The principal historian of Norway has been Peter Andreas Munch (1810-1863), whose multifarious writings include a grammar of Old Norse, 1847 ; a collection of Norwegian laws until the year 1387, 1846-49 ; a study of Runic inscriptions, 1848 ; a history and de- scription of Norway during the Middle Ages, 1849 ; and a history of the Norwegian people, in 8 vols., 1852-63; Jakob Aall (1773-1844) was associated with Munch in this work. Jakob Rudolf Keyser (1803-1864) performed services scarcely less important in printing and annotating the most important documents dealing with the medieval history of Norway. Carl Richard Unger (b. 1817) has taken part in the same work and edited Morkinskinna in 1867. Sophus Bugge (b. 1838) is a leading philologist of a younger school, and Oluf Rygh (b. 1838) has contributed to the archeological part of history. The modern language of Norway found an admirable grammarian in Jakob Olaus Lokke (1829-1881). A careful historian and ethnographer was Ludvig Kristensen Daa (1809-1877). Ludvig Daae (b. 1834) has written the history of Christiania, and has traced the chronicles of Norway during the Danish possession. Bernt Moe (1814-1850) was a careful biographer of the heroes of Eidsvold. Eilert Lund Sundt (1817-1875) published some very curious and valuable works on the condition of the poorer classes in Norway. Professor J. A. Friis (b. 1821) has published the folk-lore of the Lapps in a series of very curious and valuable volumes.~~

~~In jurisprudence the principal Norwegian authorities are Anton Martin Schweigaard (1808-1870) and Frederik Stang (b. 1808). Peter Carl Lasson~~

~~(1798-1873) and Ulrik Anton Motzfelt (d. 1865) were the lights of an earlier generation. In medical science, the great writer of the beginning of the century was Michael Skjel- derup (1769-1852), who was succeeded by Frederik Holst (b. 1791). . Daniel Cornelius Danielsen (b. 1815) is a prominent dermatologist ; but probably the most eminent of recent physiologists in Norway is Carl Wilhelm Boeck (b. 1808). The elder brother of the last- mentioned, Christian Peter Bianco Boeck (1798-1877), also demands recognition as a medical writer. Christopher Hansteen (1784-1873) was prominent in several branches of mathematical and chemical literature, and was mt a of mathematics at the university for nearly sixty years. Michael Sars (b. 1805) has obtained a European reputation through his investigations in invertebrate zoology. He has been assisted by his son Georg Ossian Sars (b. 1887). Balta- zar Michael Keilhau (1797-1858) and Theodor Kjerulf (b. 1825) have been the leading Norwegian geologists. Mathias Numsen Blytt (1789-1862) represents the section of botany. His Norges Flora, part of which was published in 1861, was left incomplete at his death. Niels Henrik Abel (1802-1829) was a mathematician of extraordinary promisc ; Ole Jakob Broch (b. 1818) must be men- tioned in the same connexion. Marcus Jakob Monrad (b. 1816), an Hegelian, is the most prominent philosophical writer of modern Norway. Among theological writers may be mentioned Hans Nielsen Hauge (1771-1824), author of the sect which bears his name; Svend Borchman Hersleb (1784-1836) ; Stener Johannes Stenersen (1789-1835) ; Wilhelm Andreas Wexels (1797-1866), a writer of extraordinary popularity ; and Carl Paul Caspari (b. 1814),~~

~~the learned professor of theology in the university of Christiania. No very recent compendium of Norwegian literature exists. La Norvége Litiératre, by Paul Botten-Hansen (1824-1869), is an admirable piece of biblio- graphy so far as it reaches, put comes down no farther than 1866. Professor L. Dietrichson published in 1866 the first and only part of an Omrids af den Norske Poesis Historie (Outline of the History of Norwegian Poetry). J. B. Halvorsen is now publishing a Norsk Forfatier-Lexikon, 1814-1880 (Norwegian Dictionary of Authors); this promises to be a very valuable work, but has not as yet proceeded beyond the letter B. In English see the earlier chapters of Gosse's Northern Studies (1879 ; 2d edition, 1882). (BE. W. G.)~~

NORWEGIAN SEA. The sub-polar regions of the Atlantic lying between the Scandinavian peninsula and Greenland have been in recent years carefully investigated by Norwegian expeditions under Professors Mohn and Sars ; and, as the sea immediately to the west of Norway has not hitherto been known by any distinctive name, Mohn has proposed the name of "Norwegian Sea,"—a suggestion which has been now generally adopted. The Norwegian Sea, therefore, includes the whole of the region between Greenland and Norway, a portion of which, to the north- west of the island of Jan Mayen, is sometimes known as the Greenland Sea. The Norwegian Sea is a well- marked basin cut off from the Atlantic by submarine ridges connecting the north of Scotland, the Faroe Islands, Ice- land, and Greenland. On the summit of these ridges

there is an average depth of about 250 fathoms. Between Spitzbergen and Lapland there is a wide opening into the Barents Sea, where the depth is from 100 to 200 fathoms. Between Spitzbergen and Greenland a wide and deep open- ing extends into the frozen Arctic Ocean, with a depth of 9500 fathoms. 'The surrounding land is almost everywhere high, rugged, deeply indented with fjords, and skirted with outlying islands, which are mostly composed of stratified rocks and ancient geological formations. Jan Mayen, situ- ated near the centre of the basin, Iceland, and the Faroe Islands are of volcanic origin.

The marked peculiarity of the Norwegian Sea is the striking contrast in the climate of its eastern and western portions. If we draw a line from the east side of Iceland to the south end of Spitzbergen we have, generally speaking,

MOR WEG

on the west of this line a sea covered with ice during the whole of the year, throughout nearly its entire extent. It is only rarely that the east coast of Greenland can be ap- proached through the lanes and openings formed in the ice, An arctic current passes southward along the coast of Greenland, carrying with it vast fields of hummocky ice, and enters the North Atlantic through the straits which separate Iceland from the coast of Greenland. To the eastward of this line we have a sea free from ice throughout the year. A warm current—the so-called ex- tension of the Gulf Stream—passes between the coasts of Scotland and Iceland, and carries a large amount of

~~heat to the shores of Norway and Lapland,' rendering them relatively mild and habitable. The prevailing wind over the western part of the Norwegian Sea is from the north- east, while that over the eastern is from the south-west, in each case corresponding with the direction of the ocean currents. With respect to the relations of the barometric minimum to the prevailing winds and currents see MErEor- OLOGY, vol. xvi. p. 139.~~

~~In March and April a very extensive seal fishery is carried on to the north and east of Jan Mayen along the edge of the ice-fields,—as many as 300,000 young seals having been captured in one season. Large numbers of polar bears are at this time noticed in the neighbourhood of the seal rook-erles, and are captured on the ice at great distances from land, Later in the season there is a right whale fishery to the north and west of the island of Jan Mayen, A large number of small vessels from Hammerfest and Lapland ports visit the coasts of Spitzbergen each season to collect eider-down, and to engage in the walrus and shark fisheries. Narwhals (Monodon) are also captured along the edge of the ice-floes. Guillemots, little auks, gulls, and other sea-birds are found in vast numbers near the coast of Spitzbergen and along the edge of the pack-ice. Along the coast of Nor- way there are valuable cod, mackerel, herring, and lobster fisheries. The Norwegian Sea has a depth almost rivalling that of the great Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, that of the whole of the central parts exceeding 1000 fathoms, while to the south-east of Jan Mayen there is a depth of 2000 fathoms, and off Spitzbergen of 2500 fathoms.~~

~~The bottom in the western portion is composed of a~~

- ~~mixture of mud and stones formed from the detrital matter~~

~~carried from the land by floating ice, and containing not more than 5 or 6 per cent. of carbonate of lime. In the deeper parts of the eastern portion we have a fine mud or clay containing sometimes 50 per cent. of carbonate of lime, and a total absence of the ice-borne stones and gravel so abundant in the western portion. The carbonate of lime consists chiefly of the shells of Globigerina which have fallen from the surface, and some other species of Fora- minifera (the most frequent of which is Biloculina) which live on the bottom. In some places this deposit approaches in character the G'lobigerina ooze or mud of the Atlantic, but is very poor in pelagic shells~~

when compared with the deposits in lower latitudes. The pelagic Foraminifera and Pteropod shells so abundant in tropical parts of the Gulf Stream are killed off and fall to the bottom as they are carried into the colder areas of the North Atlantic. The upper layer of this deposit is of a brownish colour, and is less compact and contains more lime than the deeper layers, which have a blue or greyish colour. In this respect it agrees with the deposits found at similar depths around all continental shores. The deposits along the Norwegian coast, in depths less than 1000 fathoms, consist chiefly of detrital matter from the shores, the mineral particles consisting of quartz, felspars, mica, hornblende, magnetite, and fragments of rocks, Around Jan Mayen and Iceland the deposits consist largely of volcanic sand. In all the deposits there are many Diatom frustules.

PAN SHA 593

The isotherms of the. atmosphere receive a very remarkable de- flexion to the north along the coast of Norway, as may be seen by reference to the article METEOROLOGY, figs. 8-11 (vol. xvi. pp. 138, 135, 136). A similar remarkable deflexion takes place with the isotherms of the ocean, showing the temperature of the sea surface, In January the warmest water is found at a distance of over 100 miles from the coast, and ranges from 46° Fahr. in the south. to 36° Fahr. in the north. In July and August the warmest water is found close along the shore, the range being from 60° Fahr. in the south to 47° Fahr. in the north. This is due to the cooling effect of the

sagt Hs = ry : cS o 90° a, >

= oe ne ™.

=F ice

Map of Norwegian Sea.

~~In the western part of the Norwegian Sea ice-cold water is found at the surface~~

~~land in winter and its warming effect in summer.~~

~~throughout the year. The deeper parts are wholly filled with ice- cold water, this temperature being met with off the coast of N orway at a depth of 400 or 600 fathoms. The remarkably mild and genial temperature of Norway, considering its latitude, is to be accounted for (1) by the warm current from the south which flows north- wards over the banks and fills up the deep fjords beyond with water of a relatively high temperature ; (2) by the banks which extend along its shores with a depth of between 100 and 200 fathoms, — sometimes stretching out several hundred miles from the land and thus keeping the ice-cold water of the basin out of the deep bays and fjords. The water at the bottom of the deep fjords usually ranges from 40° Fahr. to 43° Fahr, throughout the year. In summer the surface is warmer than the bottom water in these fjords, but in winter it is several degrees colder (see Norway, p- 580). The bottom water in the fjords is not affected by the cold of winter or heat of summer, owing to the great depth in connexion with the slow rate at which changes of temperature are communicated through the water. The specific gravity ranges from 1°0265 along the coast of Norway to 1-0250 among the ice-floes off the coast of Greenland.~~

~~The narrow and deep channel running between the Faroe Islands and the north of Scotland must be specially referred to on account of the deep-sea investigations which have been there carried on. Indeed the widespread interest taken at the present time in the deep sea arose in a great degree from the interesting discoveries made in this channel by Dr Carpenter and Wyville Thomson in 1868 and 1869, in H.M.S. “ Porcupine” and’ “ Lightning.” Two areas were found, one having at the bottom a temperature of 30° Fahr. and the other a temperature of 45° Fahr, The faunas in the two~~

areas were likewise characterized by remarkable differences. There appears to have been no suspicion that a submarine ridge separated the bottom water of the one area from that of the other. The re- searches carried on in H.M.S. ‘‘Challenger” showed that in all cases there were indications of submarine ridges separating areas 1n which a difference of temperature was found at the bottom. In the years 1880 and 1882 this channel was again investigated by H.M.S. *« Knight Errant ” and ‘‘ Triton.” A ridge, now called the Wyville Thomson ridge, was discovered running in a north-north-west direc- tion from the north of Scotland to the Faroe banks, and separating the warm and cold areas. The average depth on this ridge is 250 fathoms, but there is a small saddle-back in the northern portion of it with a depth of a little over 300 fathoms. Ice-cold water was traced to the top of this ridge, and through the saddle-back to the south-west margin. Here the cold water is met by the warm current passing to the north-east, a mixture takes place, and the whole flows towards the north-east. No true ice-cold current appears to pass into the Atlantic through the Faroe channel (see the map). That the ridge is swept by strong tidal currents as well as by the steady flow to the north-east is shown by the fact that no fine deposit is allowed to accumulate on it, and by the particles of sand and gravel from the ridge which are spread over the sea- bottom to the north-east. Over the ridge large smooths and well- ings up of water take place at certain times as the great tidal wave passes through this channel into the North Sea. The top of the ridge, which is about 5 miles wide, is covered with gravel and rocks, many of them rolled and glaciated, consisting of granite, gneiss, mica-schists, sandstone, limestone, diorites, &c. On both sides of the ridge a mud is found containing Foraminifera shells, Diatoms, and minute mineral fragments, such as quartz, mica, hornblende, augite, felspars, magnetite, glauconite, &c. Mineral particles from the ridge are much more numerous and larger in the cold than in the warm area, thus indicating the direction in which the currents sweep. The stones resemble those of the Orkneys, and were most probably carried to their present position by glaciers or icebergs during the Glacial period. Since temperature is the most important factor in the distribution of marine specics it is not astonishing to find a considerable difference in the fauna on each side of the ridge. Mr Murray states that in the ‘‘ Knight Errant” dredgings, of seventy-one species from the warm area and forty-seven from the cold area, the depths being about the same and the distance only about 40 miles apart, there were only two common to both

~~areas. The animals from the cold area are chiefly arctic forms, and re-semble closely those from similar depths off the east coast of North America, while those from the warm area have a southern and abyssal character. We have indeed in the Faroe channel a curious mixture of arctic, abyssal, and modified British faunas, the distribution and limits of which have not yet been worked out. A thorough investigation of this channel in its hydrographical and biological relations is still a great desideratum.~~

~~The Norwegian Sea exhibits an abundant pelagic fauna and flora. The warm water of the Gulf Stream very frequently brings to the coasts of Norway animals usually met with only at lower latitudes. Diatoms and other minute Algæ are found in vast banks, especially in the neighbourhood of the melting ice, giving the water a peculiar green colour. This green-coloured water is re- garded by the whalers as one of the best indications of good fishing grounds. Entomostraca, Meduse, Ctenophora, Siphonophora, Pteropods, and Radiolarians are also to be found in great abundance on the whaling grounds. The deep-sea dredgings of the Norwegians do not show such an abundant or rich fauna as is met with at similar depths in more southern latitudes.~~

~~See Wyville Thomson, The Depths of the Sea (2d ed., London, 1874); "Pre- liminary Report of the Scientific Exploration of the Deep Sea in H.M. Survey- ing-vessel 'Porcupine' during the Summer of 1869, conducted by Dr Carpenter, Mr J. Gwyn Jeffreys, and Professor Wyville Thomson," in Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xviii. p. 397 (1870); The Norwegian North-Atlantic Expedition (1876-78), by Professors Mohn, Sars, and others; 'Exploration of the Faroe Channel during the Summer of 1880, in H.M.'s hired ship 'Knight Errant,' by Staff-Commander Tizard, R.N., and John Murray, with subsidiary reports by various scientific men," in Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. xi. p. 638 (1882); and "Remarks on the Soundings and Temperatures obtained in the Faroe Channel during the Summer of 1882," by Staff-Commander T. 11. Tizard, R.N., in Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxxv. p. 202 (1883). (J. MU.)~~

~~NORWICH, a city of England, the capital of Norfolk, a county of itself and a municipal and parliamentary borough, stands mainly on the right bank of the winding Wensum, a little above its confluence with the Yare, by rail~~

being 20 miles west of Yarmouth, 684 north-east of Cambridge, and 114 north-north-east of London. The municipal and parliamentary boundaries enclose an area of 7472 acres ; but the ancient walls (1294-1342), some portions of which remain, with their twelve gate-houses—the last demolished in 1808—were only 4 miles in circuit. Those narrow limits were long ago outgrown, for Evelyn writes in 1671 that "the suburbs are large, the prospects

NOL

INTO oN

sweete, with other amenities, not omitting the flower- gardens, in which all the inhabitants excel." Beneath the low chalky heights of Mousehold Heath, once wooded now heathery, lies antique Norwich. ''A fine old city, truly," to quote George Borrow, "view it from whatever side you will; but it shows best from the east, where the ground, bold and elevated, overlooks the fair fertile valley in which it stands. At the foot of the heights flows the narrow and deep river, with an antique bridge [Bishop's Bridge, 1295] communicating with a long and narrow suburb, flanked on either side by rich meadows of brightest green, beyond which spreads the city; the fine old city, perhaps the most curious specimen extant of the genuine old English town."

In 1094 the seat of the East Anglian bishopric was re- moved by Bishop Herbert de Lozinga or Lorraine from Thetford to Norwich, where in 1096 he laid the foundation of the cathedral, and dedicated it to the Holy Trinity in 1101, establishing at the same time a Benedictine monas- tery. As completed by his successor before the middle of the 12th century the cathedral in style was purely Norman ; and it still retains its original Norman plan to a much greater degree than any other English example of equal magnitude. True, changes and additions were made from time to time in the successive styles—the Early English lady chapel (demolished about 1580) belonging to the middle of the 13th century, the mixed Decorated and Perpendicular spire to the 14th, the west front and porch and the lierne stone vaulting of the nave, with its elabo- rate 328 bosses, to the 15th, and to the 16th the vaulting of the transepts and Bishop Nix's chantry, whilst the fine cloisters, 175 feet square, 12 feet wide, with 45 windows, in style

mainly Decorated, were begun in 1297 and not completed till 1430. The following are the dimen- sions in feet of the cathedral :—total length, 407 ; length of nave, 204; length of transepts, 178 ; breadth of nave and aisles, 72; total height of spire, 315 (in England ex- ceeded by Salisbury only) ; height of tower, 140,%, ; height of nave, 694; height of choir, 834. The chief entrance on the west is a Perpendicular archway, above which is an immense window filled with poor modern stained glass. The nave within is grand and imposing, divided by four- teen semicircular arches of great depth and solidity, whose massive piers are in two instances ornamented with spiral mouldings. The triforium is composed of similar arches. The side aisles are low, their vaultings plain. The choir, extending westward some way beyond the crossing, is of unusual length, and terminates in an apse, with the only fragment of an ancient episcopal chair that has been allowed to remain in situ. The oak stalls and musereres are very richly carved. A curious quatrefoil, opening on the north side of the presbytery, beneath the confessio or relic chapel, deserves mention. There are but two mionu- mental effigies—one of Bishop Coldwell (c. 1499), the other of Bishop Bathurst (1837) by Chantrey. Mural monu- ments are plentiful. Sir William Boleyn, great-grandfather of Queen Elizabeth, is buried on the south side of the presbytery, in the midst of which stood the tomb of Bishop Herbert, the founder. Of three circular apsidal chapels two remain; and in one—the Jesus chapel—the ancient colouring has lately been renewed, this being part of a series of restorations carried out at great cost since 1801. Two richly-sculptured gateways lead to the cathedral—the Erpingham gate (1420) and the Ethelbert gateway (c. 1300). The bishop's palace and the deanery are buildings of high antiquity, but both have undergone many alterations. The latter has a well-restored chapel. A beautiful Early Decorated ruin in the palace garden, known as " Bishop Salmon's gateway," is supposed to have been the porch to the great hall (c. 1319). The grammar-school is a Decorated

NORWICH

edifice of c. 1316, originally a chapel, with a "carnary " or crypt below. Among its scholars have been Coke, Lord Nelson, Rajah Brooke, and George Borrow. St Andrew's Hall (124 by 64 feet) is the seven-bayed nave of the Black Friars' church, rebuilt with the aid of the Erpinghams between

1440 and 1470. A splendid specimen of Perpen- dicular work, with its twenty-eight clerestory windows and chestnut hammer-beam roof, it has served since the Re- formation as a public hall, in which from 1824 have been held the triennial musical festivals, second only in date and in fame equal to those of Birmingham. It was restored in 1863. The guildhall, on the site of an earlier tolbooth, is a fine flint Perpendicular structure of 1408-13; one of its rooms, the mayor's council-chamber, fitted up with furniture of the time of Henry VIIL., is an interesting specimen of a court of justice of that period. Of forty-three churches — Perpendicular flint- work, mostly of the 15th century—St Peter Man- croft, restored in 1880- 83, is by many esteemed the finest parish church in England. Measuring 212 by 70 feet, it has a richly-ornamented tower and fléche, 148 feet high, with a matchless peal of twelve sweet bells,a long light clerestory of thirty- four windows, a beauti- ful carved-oak roof, a remarkable font cover, and the tomb of Sir Thomas Browne. St Andrew, St Stephen, St Michael Coslany, St John Maddermarket, St Lawrence, and St Giles —the last with a tower 126 feet high—are also noticeable. A new Ro- man Catholic church, | about to be built at the cost of the duke of Nor- | folk, will be much the | largest and finest of a

. SCGT sussex STREET >

595

agricultural implements are also made in large quantities. There is one daily paper, and eight others are published weekly. The corporation consists of a mayor, deputy mayor, and sheriff (elected annually), sixteen aldermen, and forty-eight councillors ; and the city has sent two members to parliament since the reign of Edward I. The population has been successively (1801) 36,882, (1831) 61,110, (1871) 80,386, (1881) 87,842—males 40,288, females 47,554 —in 20,764 houses (1881).

Norwich seems to have been the Caer-Gwent of the Britons, the Venta Icenorum of the Romans; and its name of Nord-wic, or ''north-town," which first appears in the Saxon Chronicle under date 1004, is thought to refer to the large and perfect Roman camp of Caister, 3 miles to the south, which by earlier antiquaries was itself identified with Venta Icenorwm, and by tradition is said to have been ''a city when Norwich was none, for

Norwich was built of Caister stone." A Saxon ""burh" appears to have stood at Norwich in 767, but the present castle was probably built or rebuilt

in the reign of Rufus. Only a al its keep remains, which,

AT INT rie ®

crowning the summit of a

steep mound, has been

adapted to prison purposes.

Frequently sacked by the

| Norsemen, Norwich was

Guthrum's headquarters in 878, in 1004 eters by Sweyn, and in 1017 was SaneaTe Sree Canute's residence. In % D Domesday the city is de- a scribed as having 1320 bur- a gesses with their families, 25 parish churches, and be- tween 800 and 900 acres of land. Ralph de Guaer in 1075, rebelling against the Conqueror, defended the castle unsuccessfully ; in | 1122 Henry I. gave Nor- '| wich a charter containing the same franchise as that of London, and the govern- ment of the city was then separated from that of the castle, the chief magistrate being styled Prepositus or '| provost. In the same reign a colony of Flemish weavers introduced the woollen manufacture at Worstead, about 13 miles from Nor- wich ; and a second colony settled at Norwich itself under Edward III., when the city was made a staple town for the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk. The dauphin plundered and burned. the city in 1216; and in 1272 the priory was burnt in a riot between the monks and thecitizens. The

Seale of % Mile

PF i)

x30

ee

t

number of Nonconform-

ist places of worship.

The museum (1839) has collections of fossils and birds (especially Faptores). It houses the literary institution (1822 ; 26,000 vols.), as also archeological, medical, art, and meteorological societies. Ad- joining it is the free library (1857; 8000 vols.). These two buildings mark the site of the 17th-century palace of the dukes of Norfolk, said to have been the largest town-house in the kingdom out of London. The public library (1784; 50,000 vols.) in 1885 was transferred to its present quarters, a handsome building with Doric portico. The Norfolk and Norwich Hospital, first built in 1772, and rebuilt in 1879-83, is in the Queen Anne style, and on the pavilion system, with 220 beds. Other buildings are the lunatic asylum (1877-80 ; accommodation, 300), the workhouse (1858-60 ; accommodation, 1057), Jenny Lind Infirmary for sick children (1853), St Giles's or the old men's hospital (1249), Doughty's Hospital (1687), an asylum and school for the indigent blind (1805), the cavalry barracks (1791), the drill hall (1866), the agricultural hall (1882 ; 175 by 108 feet), the corn exchange (1861 ; 125 by 81 feet), the post-office (1865), and the theatre (1826). The cemetery (1856 ; 43 acres) has four mortuary chapels and a striking soldiers' monument (1878).

The textile manufactures of Norwich, once so important, have declined ; and now its great industrial establishments are a mustard and starch works employing upwards of 2000 hands, three or four large breweries, and ironworks. Boots, clothing, vinegar, and

Plan of Norwich.

'black death " of 1848-49 cut off two-thirds of the inhabitants, and in 1881 the Norfolk Levellers, under John le Littester, did much damage ; but by 1408 the city had sufficiently recovered to be honoured with a charter, under which it might elect a mayor and two sheriffs. In 1422 the doctrines of the Reformation made their appearance in Norwich; and several persons were executed as Wickliffites or Lollards. Among the list of martyrs is the

name of Thomas Bilney, who was burned in 1531. In 1549 the city was the scene of an insurrection which grew out of the enclosure of commons, and was headed by Robert Kett alias Knight, a tanner. Norwich, in common with all Nor- folk and Suffolk, warmly espoused the cause of the Reformation ; and under Elizabeth the burnings of Roman Catholics rivalled the flames which Protestants had fed in former reigns, whilst martyrdoms for heresy of doctrine even among Protestants themselves were far from uncommon. In 1582 the city contained 5000 Dutch and Walloons, Protestant refwigces from the Low Countries, who did much to foster manufactures. During the Commonwealth the city was put in defence against the royal cause and the castle was forti- fied for the service of Cromwell. But at the Restoration Norwich was amongst the earliest to do homage to Charles. In June 1660 the fee-farm of the city was resigned to him, with a present of £1000 in gold ; and in 1663 the charter of the city was renewed and en- larged. In 1701 the art of printing, which had been introduced in 1570 but discontinued for many years, was revived, and news-

papers began to be printed. The famous ‘‘Norwich school” of landscape painting flourished during the first half of the present century, the principal artists being Crome, Cotman, Stark, and Vincent. Distinguished natives were John Kaye or Caius, Arcli- bishop Parker, Robert Greene, Thomas Legge, Bishop Cosin, Bishop Pearson, ‘Old Crome,” William Taylor, Amelia Opie, Harriet Mar-

tineau, and Dr Crotch, whilst among residents the best known have been Sir Thomas Erpingham, Bishop Hall, and Sir Thomas Browne.

See A. D. Bayne, Norwich, its Political, Religious, and Municipal History (1868); Dean Goulburn, Sculptures in the Roof of Norwich Cathedral, with a History of the See (1876); Jarrold, Handbook to the City of Norwich (1883); and other works cited under NoRFOLK. (F. H. G.)

NORWICH, a city of the United States, one of the county seats of New London county, Connecticut, lies 16 miles from Long Island Sound at the junction of the Yantic and the Shetucket to form the Thames, and 13 miles

~~north of New London by the New London Northern Railroad. The greater part of the city is built on rising ground between the valleys of the confluent streams, and with its white and handsome houses has a highly pictur- esque effect. Besides the court-house (1873), used for county, township, and city affairs, the more conspicuous edifices are the free academy (1856), the Park Church (Con- gregational), and Christ Church (Episcopalian). Among the numerous industrial establishments settled at Norwich, on account of the abundant water-power in the district, are cotton, wool, paper and rolling mills (all on a very large scale), as well as factories for firearms, printing-presses, water-wheels, locks, stoves, belts, bolts, wood-type, carriages, &c. Steamers ply daily between the city and New York, and there is a thriving trade in coal, lumber, and general goods. The population of the town was 14,048 in 1860, 16,653 in 1870, and that of the city 15,112 (of the town 21,143) in 1880.~~

~~In 1659 the Indian chief Uncas, whose grave may still be seen in the old Indian burying-ground, sold the site of Norwich to~~

~~Major John Mason and a body of thirty-four settlers. The incor- poration of the city dates from 1784.~~

~~NORWOOD, a large suburban district of London, county of Surrey, is situated in a hilly and finely-wooded district about 1 mile south-west of Dulwich and 4 south of Lambeth. It is divided into Upper, Lower, and South Norwood, all consisting principally of villa residences and detached houses inhabited by the better classes. Alms- houses for the poor of St Saviour's, Southwark, were opened at South Norwood in 1863, a Jewish convalescent home in 1869, and the royal normal college and academy of music for the blind at Upper Norwood in 1872. There is also a Catholic convent and orphanage of the Faithful Virgin. Red pottery ware is manufactured in the neigh- bourhood. Norwood received its name from an old forest of oak trees. Near it is Gipsy Hill, where at one time dwelt the celebrated Margaret Finch, who died in 1740 at the age of 109, and to whom a monument has been erected in Beckenham churchyard. The population of Norwood (area 1009 acres) in 1871 was 12,536, and in 1881 it was 19,017.~~

NORWOOD, a municipal suburb of Adelaide, South Australia, is situated. about 2 miles north-east of the centre of the city, with which it is connected by a tram- way. It possesses a post and telegraph office, a mechanics' institute, and a branch of the bank of Adelaide. Nor- wood along with Kensington forms a municipality, with an area of 14 square miles and a population in 1881 of

10,087.

NOSE. See SMELL.

NOSSL-BE, an island off Passandava Bay, on the north- west coast of Madagascar, in 13° 23'S. lat. and 45° 59' E. long,, is situated 149 miles from Mayotte, and governed, along with the smaller island of Nossi-komba, by a French

commandant subordinate to the governor of Mayotte.

Nossi-bé is of volcanic formation, the north and south parts of older, the central part of more modern date. Be-

sides a number of true volcanic craters of no great height (the culminating point of the island is only 1486 feet above the sea), M. Velain found a great many crater-lakes or circular troughs level with the ground—the result, prob- ably, of subterranean explosions which did not last long enough to allow the lava to reach the surface (see Nature, March 1877, p. 417). Nossi-bé has an area of 481,840 acres (nearly 750 square miles), of which not more than 1800 or 2000 acres are planted with sugar-cane, coffee, ce. Trade is mainly carried on with Madagascar, though a few vessels come directly from Zanzibar or Bombay. In 1878 the value of the imports was 1,470,449 francs, that of the exports 2,092,385. The population, consisting mainly of Sakalavas, varies considerably in number. Hellville, the European chief town (so called after De Hell, governor of Réunion at the time of the French annexation), had in 1878 from 1200 to 1500 inhabitants and the rest of the island about 6000.

In 1837 Tsiomeika, queen of the Sakalavas, was expelled by the Hovas and fled to Nossi-bé and Nossi-komba. Failing to obtain assistance from the imam of Muscat, she accepted French protec- tion. In 1849 a vigorous attempt was made to expel the French. See Von Jedina in Revue géogr. internat., 1877.

NOSTRADAMUS (1503-1566), the assumed name of MicurL pE NotrEepAME, a French astrologer, who was descended from a family of Jewish origin, and was born at St Remi in Provence 13th December 1503. After completing a course of study in humanity and philosophy at Avignon, he entered the school of medicine at Mont- pellier, where he eventually took the degree of doctor of medicine in 1529. Shortly afterwards he settled at Agen, and in 1544 he established himself at Salon near Aix in Provence. Both at Aix and at Lyons he acquired great distinction byhis devoted and skilful labours during terrible outbreaks of the plague, and he was already well known before he appeared in the character of a seer, In 1555 he published at Lyons a book of rhymed prophecies under the title of Centuries, which secured him the notice of the superstitious Catherine de' Medici of France ; and in 1558 he published a second and enlarged edition with a dedica- tion to the king. The seeming fulfilment of some of his predictions greatly increased his influence, and Charles IX. named him his physician in ordinary. THe died 2d July 1566.

The Centurics of Nostradamus have been frequently reprinted, and have been made the subject of many commentaries. In 1781 they were condemned by the papal court, being supposed to con- tain a prediction of the fall of the papacy. Nostradamus was the author of a number of smaller treatises. Sec especially Bareste, Nostradanvwus (Paris, 1840).

NOTARY or Notary Pustic. In Roman law the nota- rius was originally a slave or freedman who took notes (note) of judicial proceedings in shorthand or cipher. The notary of modern law corresponds rather to the tabellio or tabularius of Roman law than to the noturivs. In the canon law the notary'was a person of great importance, and it was a maxim of that law that his evidence was worth that of two unskilled witnesses.

In most European countries he still holds something of his old position under the canon law. In France, for instance, a document attested by a

notary is said to be "legalized," a term much too strong to express the effect of such attestation in England, where the notary public, in spite of his name, is not recognized as a public officer to such a degree as the notary in other countries. The office of notary in England is a very ancient one. It is mentioned in statute law as early as the Statute of Pro- visors, 25 Edward II. stat. 4. The English notary is a skilled person, nominated since 25 Henry VIII. c. 21 by the archbishop of Canterbury through the master of the facul- ties (now the judge of the provincial courts of Canterbury and York), in order to secure evidence as to the attesta-

NOT—NOT

tion of important documents. tical courts must be notaries.

The office is still nominally an ecclesiastical one, though its duties are mainly of a secular character. "The general functions of a notary consist in receiving all acts and con- tracts which must or are wished to be clothed with an authentic form ; in conferring on such documents the re- quired authenticity; in establishing their date; in preserv- ing originals or minutes of them which, when prepared in the style and with the seal of the notary, obtain the name of original acts; and in giving authentic copies of such acts" (Brooke, On the Office of a Notary, chap. iii.). The act of a notary in authenticating or certifying a document is technically called a "notarial act." In most countries the notarial act is received in evidence as a semi-judicial matter, and the certificate of a notary is probative of the facts certified. But English law does not recognize the notarial act to this extent. An English court will, in certain cases, take judicial notice of the seal of a notary, but not that the facts that he has certified are true, except in the case of a bill of exchange protested abroad.

The most important part of an English notary's duty at the present day is the noting and protest of foreign bills of exchange in case of non-acceptance or non-payment. This must be done by a notary in order that the holder may recover, He also prepares ship protests and protests of other kinds relating to mercantile matters. The office of notary is now usually, though not necessarily, held by a solicitor. In London he must be free of the Scriveners' Company. The principal statutes relating to English notaries are 25 Henry

VIII. c. 21; 41 George III. c. 79; 3 and 4 William IV. c. 70; 6 and 7 Vict. c. 90.

In Scotland, before the reign of James III., papal and imperial notaries practised until the third parliament of that king, held at Edinburgh on the 29th November 1469, when an Act was passed declaring that notaries should be made by the king. It would appear, however, that for some time afterwards there were in Scot- land two kinds of notaries, clerical and legal, —the instruments taken by the latter bearing faith in civil matters. In 1551 an Act was passed directing sheriffs to bring or send both kinds of notaries to the lords of session to be examined; and ina subsequent statute, passed in 1555, it was ordained that no notary, "by whatsoever power he be created," should use the office "except he first present himself to the said lords, showing his creation, and be admitted by them thereto." It does not appear that this statute vested the right of making notaries in the court of session ; but in 1563 it was by law declared that no person should take on him the office, under the pain of death, unless created by the sovereigu's special letters, and thereafter examined and admitted by the lords of session. Since then the court of session has in Seotland excreised full and exclusive authority on the admission of notaries in all legal matters, spiritual and temporal. The position of notaries in Scotland is somewhat higher than it is in England. Certain facts connected with the title to land must be authenticated by notarial instrument, 21 and 22 Vict. c. 76. A notary may exe- cute a deed for a person unable to write, 37 and 38 Vict. c. 94, s. 41. The parish clergyman has notarial powers to the extent of executing a will, —a relic of the old ecclesiastical position of notaries.

In America the duties of a notary vary in different States. 'They are generally as follows :—to protest bills of exchange and draw up acts of honour; to authenticate and certify copies of documents ; to receive the affidavits of mariners and draw up protests relating to the same; to attest deeds and other instruments ; and to admini- ster oaths " (Bouvier, Law Dictionary).

NOTICE. The primary meaning of notice is know- ledge (notitia), as in "judicial notice ;" thence it comes to signify the means of bringing to knowledge, as in "notice to quit;" at last it may be used even for the actual

~~writing by which notice is given. The most important legal uses of the word are judicial notice and the equitable doctrine of notice. Judicial notice is the recognition by courts of justice of certain facts or events without proof. Thus in England the courts take judicial notice of the existence of states and sovereigns recognized by the sovereign of England, of the dates of the calendar, the date and place~~

~~All registrars of ecclesias-~~

~~of the sittings of the legislature, &c. The equitable doc- trine of notice, so called because it was a doctrine formerly peculiar to the courts of equity, is that a person who purchases an estate, although for valuable consideration, after notice of a prior equitable right, will not be enabled by getting in the legal estate to defeat that right. On the other hand, a purchaser for valuable consideration without notice of an adverse title is as a rule protected in his enjoyment of the property. Other common uses of the word are notice to quit, notice of dishonour, notice of action (generally necessary in case of a breach of duty~~

~~created by statute), notice of trial, notice in lieu of~~

~~service of a writ (where the defendant is a foreigner out of the jurisdiction), notice to produce, &c. Notice may be either express or constructive. The latter is where knowledge of a fact is presumed from the circumstances of the case, ¢.g., notice to a solicitor is usually constructive notice to the client. Notice may be either oral or written. It is usually advisable to give written notice even where oral evidence is sufficient in law, as in the case of notice to quit. The American use of notice is practically the same as in England.~~

~~NOTKER, a name of somewhat frequent occurrence in the ecclesiastical history of the Middle Ages. Among those by whom it was borne two are specially distinguished. Norker Batputus (c. 840-912) was a native of northern Switzerland, and, having become a monk of the monastery of St Gall, hcld the position of "magister" in its school for many years. He was canonized in 1513. Balbulus compiled a martyrology and was the author of other works, but is mentioned principally in connexion with his services to~~

~~church music and with the "sequences" of which he was the composer. See Hymns, vol. xii. p. 583. Norker Laseo, also a monk of St Gall, died on 29th June 1022. His translations of the Old Testament Psalms, the De Consolatione of Boetius, the Categories of Aristotle, and some other works into Old High German are of con- siderable philological interest. See vol. x. p. 517.~~

~~NOTO,a city of Italy, in the province of Syracuse (Sicily), 24 miles south-west of Syracuse by road on the way to Modica, Built on a new site after the earthquake of 1693, it is laid out in modern style, and contains a number of handsome mansions belonging to the provincial aristocracy. The population of the city was 15,925 in 1881; that of the commune, 16,590 in 1871, reached 18,239 in 1881.~~

~~Netum or Neetum (Néyrov) was one of the cities left to Hiero of Syracuse by the treaty of 263 B.c. Like Messina and Tauro- menium (Taormina) it was a federata civitas in the time of Cicero, and at a later date it still enjoyed the rare privileges of a Latin town. Under the Saracens it was a place of importance and gave its name to one of the divisions of the island, Val di Noto. It was one of the last of the towns of Sicily to surrender to Roger the Norman. In 1837 it was made capital of the province instead of Syracuse, but this dig- nity was restored to the larger city by the new Italian parliament.~~

~~NOTTINGHAM or Norts, an inland county of England, Plate is bounded N. by Yorkshire and Lincolnshire, W. by XX1~~

~~Derbyshire, 8. by Leicestershire, and E. by Lincolnshire. It is of an irregular oval shape, its length from north to south being about 50 miles, and its greatest breadth from east to west about 25 miles. The area is 527,752 acres, or nearly 825 square miles.~~

~~The surface, though for the most part low, generally presents a pleasant diversity of hill and dale. The northern part is included in the great plain of York, and in the extreme north there is some extent of marshes. The valley of the lower Trent and that of the Idle are also very flat. In the south-west, between Nottingham and Warsop, the undulations swell into considerable elevations, reaching near Mansfield a height of about 600 feet. This district~~

includes Sherwood Forest, of which, in 1609, there were 44,839 acres enclosed, 9486 woods, and 35,080 waste.

598

Some portions of it are still retained in their original con- dition, and there are several very old oaks. The county generally is finely wooded, although to the east of the valley of the Soar there is a considerable stretch of wolds. The principal rivers are the Trent, the Erewash, the Soar, and the Idle. The Trent, which enters the county near Thrumpton, where it receives the Erewash from the north and the Soar from the south, flows north-east past Notting- ham and Newark, where it takes a more northerly direction, forming the northern part of the eastern boundary of the county till it reaches the Isle of Axholm (Lincolnshire). The Soar forms for a short distance the boundary with

Leicester, and the Erewash the boundary with Derby. |

The Idle, which is formed of several streams near Sher- wood Forest, flows northwards to Bawtry, and then turns eastward to the Trent. The Idle has been made navigable from Bawtry to the Trent. There are also several canals.

Geology and Minerals—The oldest rocks of the county are the Coal-measures, which, forming part of the Yorkshire, Nottingham, and Derby coalfield, stretch in from Derby, occupying principally the district west of a line drawn from Nottingham to Kirkby, although coal is obtainable below the other rocks as far east as Lincolnshire, at a depth of probably less than 4000 feet. The principal workable seams are the Top Hard, the Deep Soft, the Deep Hard, and the Kilbourne coal. In 1881 there were thirty-nine collieries, producing together 4,758,060 tons. Ironstone is found, but not in sufficient quantities to make its work- ing profitable. The Coal-measures are bounded by a narrow strip of Permian rocks, consisting chiefly of magnesian limestone, which is overlaid by the Middle Permian marls and sandstones. Red and white sandstone, freestone, and magnesian limestone are quarried in the neighbourhood of Mansfield. The lower beds of the limestone are made use of for paving-stones. The remainder of the county is occupied chiefly by the New Red Sandstone. The higher ridge between the

~~Idle and the Trent is occupied by the Upper Keuper marls and sandstones. Lias occurs south- east from Cropwell to the neighbourhood of Newark. Along the valleys and on the tops of the hills there is generally a coating of drift. The banks of the Trent are occupied by river gravels, and along the Idle there is a large deposit of mud as well as of gypsum, the latter being dug for manure and for plastering and floors. Valuable beds of gypsum also occur in various parts of south Not- tinghamshire.~~

~~Agriculture.—As the higher regions of Derby and York- shire attract the rain-clouds, the climate of Nottingham is much above the average in dryness, and on that account crops ripen nearly as early as in the southern counties. The soil of about one-half the county is gravel and sand, including Sherwood Forest, where it inclines to sterility, and the valley of the Trent, where there is a rich vegetable mould on a stratum of sand or gravel. The land along the banks of the Trent is equally suitable for crops and pasture. The farms generally are of moderate size, the great majority being under 300 acres. Most of the immediate occupants are tenants-at-will. Considerable improvements have taken place in the farm buildings and cottages, most of them being now built of brick and tile. According to the agricultural returns for 1883, there were 454,217 acres, or nearly nine-tenths, of the total area under crops. Corn crops occupied 142,305 acres, of which 51,250 were under wheat, 47,479 under barley or bere, and 27,090 under oats. Green crops occupied 50,151 acres, 34,925 of these being occupied by turnips and swedes, 6613 by potatoes, and 4685 by vetches. As many as 185,060 acres were in permanent pasture, while 54,684 were under clover, and 21,956 fallow. A common custom is to fallow the arable land once in three years.~~

~~NO TTI INCH ea~~

~~There were 1806 acres under orchards, 685 under market gardens, 146 of nursery grounds, and 26,387 of woods. The soil in many places is supposed to be specially suited for apples and pears, but, although they are grown in con- siderable quantities, there are not many orchards of large size. Hops were at one time extensively grown in the clay districts, which produce stronger plants, though less rild in flavour, than are grown in Kent and Sussex, but in 1883 they occupied only 33 acres. The total number of horses~~

~~in 1883 was 20,511, of which 15,191 were used solely for agricultural purposes. Cattle numbered 76,229, of which 24,822 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf. Shorthorns are the favourite breed. Dairy farming is pretty common. Sheep numbered 211,893 and pigs 30,371. The old forest breed of sheep is almost extinct,~~

~~Leicesters and various crosses being common.~~

~~According to the latest return there were 14,519 proprietors, pos- sessing 507,337 acres with a gross annual rental of £1,560,853, or an average of about £3, 2s. per acre. The estimated extent of com- mons and waste lands is 1450 acres. Of the owners, 9891, or about sixty-eight per cent., possessed less than one acre, twenty-six pos- sessed between 2000 and 5000 acres, nine between 5000 and 10,000 acres, and the following six above 10,000 acres each, viz., duke of Portland, 35,209; duke of Newcastle, 34,468 ; Earl Manvers, 26,460 ; Henry Savile, 17,821 ; Lord Middleton, 14,185 ; Earl Howe, 11,601.~~

~~Manufactures.—Nottinghamshire has for more than a century been the ceutre of the hosiery trade of England, and it is now equally famous for its lace manufactures. Besides the numerous silk-mills and worsted-mills, there are also cotton-mills, bleach works, sailcloth works, paper works, iron- and brass-foundries, engineering-shops, chemical works, malt works, tanneries, and breweries.~~

~~Railways.—The county is traversed in various directions by branches of the Midland, the Great Northern, the Manchester, Shet- field, and Lincoln, and the London and North-Western Railways.~~

~~Administration and Population.—Nottinghamshire comprises six wapentakes—Bassetlaw, Broxtow, Bingham, Newark, Rushcliffe, and Thurgarton; and the municipal boroughs of East Retford (population 9748), Newark (14,018), and Nottingham (186,575). In addition to these three boroughs there are eleven urban sanitary districts, viz., Arnold (5745), Beeston (4479), Heanor (6822), Hucknall Torkard (10,023), Hucknall-under-Huthwaite (2028), Ilkeston (14,122), Mansfield (13,653), Mansfield Woodhouse (2618), Sutton in Ashfield (8523), Warsop (1329), and Worksop (11,625). The county has one court of quarter-sessions, and is~~

divided into seven petty and special sessional divisions. The boroughs of Newark and Nottingham have commissions of the peace and separate courts of quarter-sessions, and the borough of East Retford has a commission of the peace. Before the Reform Bill of 1882 the county sent eight members to parliament, and it now returns ten. For parliamentary purposes it is divided into North Nottinghan- shire and South Nottinghamshire, each returning two members, as does also each of the boroughs of Nottingham, Newark, and East Retford. The parliamentary borough of East Retford has an area of 207,906 acres, including, in addition to the municipal borough, the wapentake of Bassetlaw ; on the other hand, the parliamentary borough of Nottingham is now less extensive than the municipal borough. Nottinghamshire is in the province of York, and was almost entirely in the diocese of Lincoln, but an Act of 1878 has provided for the formation of the new diocese of Southwell, which comprises Derbyshire and Nottinghamshire. The county forms an archdeaconry with ten deaneries, comprising 273 civil parishes, townships, or places, and parts of five others. The population, which in 1801 was 140,350, had increascd in 1821 to 186,878, in 1851 to 270,427, in 1871 to 319,758, and in 1881 to 391,815, of whom 190,778 were males and 201,037 females. The number of inhabited houses was 82, 435, and the average number of persons to an acre 0°74.

History and Antiquities.—There is some probability that the numerous caves in Nottinghamshire were occupied by the early inhabitants, but there are no architectural remains which can be proved of earlier date than the Roman invasion. The ancient Fosse Way entered the county from Leicester near Willoughby-on-the- Wolds, where Roman coins and other remains have been found, and proceeded by East Bridgford—supposed by some to be the Roman Margidunum—and Newark, entering Lincoln near South Scarle. Several Roman roads crossed it in various directions. A camp on Holly Hill near Arnold is supposed to have been a central Roman station, and Nottingham may possibly occupy the site of Causennis. Broughton and Attenborough werealso Roman stations ; near Mansfield have been discovered the remains of a Roman villa, and a variety of relics have been found near Newstead and in other places. The remains of an ancient fortress at Brent's Hill near Barton are supposed to be those of a British camp, although it also

~~LOoerr iy Goa M~~

~~At Oxton there |~~

~~in all probability was occupied by the Romans. is a tumulus where coins with ashes have been discovered. Few or no events of historical importance took place within Nottingham. shire during the early centuries of the present era with the excep- tion of the defeat of Alfred the Great at Nottingham Castle in 868. During the 10th century it was frequently invaded by the Danes, whose predominance in it is sufficiently attested by the retention of such suffixes in the proper names as ‘‘beck,” ‘‘holme,” ‘‘thwaite,” ‘‘thorpe,” and “by.” in Nottingham were given to Roger de Buseli, and 55 to William de Peverel, who received the title of earl of Nottingham, and had an honour court, which still exists, for the recovery of debts and damages. The county was the frequent scene of contests during the reigns of the early Norman sovereigns, and it occupied a conspicuous position during the parliamentary wars, the castles of Newark and Nottingham being more than once besieged and taken by each of the parties. Legend speaks of the county as the chief scene of the adventures of the fa- mous outlaw Robin Hood, and at the verge of Sher- wood Forest there exists a curious amphitheatre called Robin Hood’s Hill.~~

~~At the dissolution of the monasteries there were no fewer than forty religious houses in Nottingham- shire, eight of them in the neighbourhood of the town of Nottingham, including a cell, three hospitals, a house dedicated to St Se- pulchre, and monasteries of Grey Friars and White Friars. There were hos- pitals at Bawtry, Blyth, Bradebusk near Gonal- stone, Newark, Southwell, and Stoke; colleges at Bingham, Clifton, Rud- dington, Sibthorpe, South- wall and Tuxford; a Benedictine priory at Blyth, and a nunnery of the same order at Wall- ingwells ; Premonstraten- sian abbeys at Broadholme and Welbeck ; a Carthu- sian priory at Beauvale; Austin abbeysat Newstead and Radford, and Austin priories at Felley, Newark, Shelford, and Thurgarton ; a Cluniac monastery at Lenton, a Gilbertine priory at Mattersey, and a Cis- tercian abbey at Rufford. The only important monastic remains are those at Newstead, but the building has been partly transformed into a mansion-house, which was formerly the a oe of Lord Byron. There are also traces of monastic ruins at Beauvale,~~

Mattersey, Radford, and Thur- garton. The finest parish church in the county is that of Newark. The churches of St Mary, Nottingham, and of Southwell were collegiate churches; the latter contains examples of Norman and the former of Early English. Balderton, Bawtry, Hoveringham, Mansfield, and Worksop are also partly Norman, and Coddington, Hawton, and Upton St Feter near Southwell Early English. Of the old castles, Nottinghain and Newark are the only ones of which there are remains, but there are several interesting old mansions, such as Kingshaugh, Scrooby, Shelford, and Southwell.

For the town and county of Nottingham see Domesday Book relating to Nottingham ; Thoroton, Antiquities of Nottinghamshire (1677) ; Deering, Notting- hamia vetus et nova (1751); Throsby, History of Nottingham (1795); Bailey, Annals of Nottinghamshire (1856); Wylie, Old and New Nottingham (1858, 1865); Felkin, History of Machine-wrought Hosiery (1867); J. H. Brown, Historical

Sketch of Nottingham Castle (1878); Thomas Chambers Hine, Nottingham, its Castle (1876 ; supp., 1879); Briscoe, Old Nottinghamshire (1881),

NorTriINGHAM, a municipal and parliamentary borough of England, a county in itself and the chief town of Nottinghamshire, is finely situated on an acclivity of a rock rising above the Trent and on several railway lines, 128 miles north-north-west of London and 15} east of Derby. It is connected both with the Midland and Great Northern railway systems, while by means of the Trent, the Gran- tham Canal, and the Nottingham, Cromford, and Erewash Canal it has convenient water-communication with the

At the Conquest 174 manors |

599

counties of Lincoln, Leicester, Stafford, and Derby. To- wards the north the town is sheltered by a chain of hills, but fine and varied views are commanded towards the south. In the neighbourhood there are many picturesque walks, and the corporation has laid out and ornamented

a picturesque arboretum. Though the older streets are

narrow and irregular, the rapid increase of the town has almost completely altered its character in this respect, most of the new streets being spacious, and some of them con- taining fine ranges of buildings. A new bridge across the Trent was opened in 1871. Nottingham possesses one of the largest market-places in England, its total area being about 5} acres. Shortly after the Conquest a wall was built across the market, dividing it into two parts—the

STS

E ve On eo) ® ns eS a SE

-

Plan of Nottingham.

Norman and the Saxon. There are three old parish churches—St Mary's Church, a fine cruciform structure, lately restored, now entirely in the Perpendicular style, and possessing a fine tower rising from the centre in two stages, crowned with battlements and pinnacles ; St Peter's, which was nearly all rebuilt in the Perpendicular style in the 15th century, and has been enlarged at different times ; St Nicholas, a plain building in red brick with stone facings, erected in 1676. There are numerous fine modern churches, but special mention may be made of the Roman Catholic cathedral of St Barnabas, in the Early English style, by Pugin, erected in 1842-44. Among the secular buildings are the exchange hall which is now used as the town-council chamber; the town or guild hall (rebuilt 1741), a plain stuccoed building; the municipal offices (formerly the post-office, 1848), in the classic style, with a Doric portico; the corn exchange; the county hall; the new post-office, erected in 1868 in the Italian style; the people's hall (1854) ; the Albert Hall, for concerts (1876), a Gothic building with a tower; and the masonic hall (1880). For the Midland Counties Art Museum a lease has been obtained by the corporation of the castle build- ings for 500 years, and the exhibition was opened by the prince of Wales in 1878. The town also possesses a free

museum of natural history, a mechanics' institute, and a free public library with nearly 40,000 volumes. Among the educational establishments the principal are Uni- versity College, for which a splendid range of buildings was opened in 1881; the free grammar school, founded in

1513, for some time in disuse, but revived in 1807, and now, since its removal in 1868 to new buildings, known as the High School; the Nottingham High School for girls ; the blue-coat school, founded in 1723 ; the people's college, founded in 1846 for children of the working classes, and now under the direction of the Board as a middle-class school; the Congregational institute for the education of students, chiefly for evangelistic and mission work ; and the Nottingham school of art, for which a fine building was erected in 1865 in the Italian style, and which is attended by over 500 students. There are a large number of bene- volent institutions, including the general hospital, founded in 1781, and possessing an endowment of over £26,000, the garden hospital, the children's hospital, the nursing institution, the Nottingham and Midland eye infirmary, the dispensary, the lunatic hospital, the lunatic asylum for Nottinghamshire, the Nottingham borough asylum, the Midland institution for the blind, the homes for aged poor, incurable orphans, and deserted infants, and the hospital for women. There are also a large number of almshouses and other charities.

Nottingham has been a manufacturing town for more than 600 years, and towards the close of the last century became an import- ant seat of the stocking trade. It was here that Richard Arkwright in 1769 erected his first spinning frame, and here also Hargreaves had the year previously removed with his spinning jenny after his machine had been destroyed by a mob at Blackburn. While Leicester became the centre of woollen hosiery, Nottingham has devoted itself chiefly to cotton, silk, and merino hosiery. Up to 1815 point lace was also an important manufacture. In 1808 and 1809 John Heathcoat of Nottingham obtained patents for machines for making bobbin net, which inaugurated a new era in the lace manufacture. Besides hosiery and bobbin net lace manu- facture, the industries include bleaching, the dyeing, spinning, and twisting of silk, the spinning of cotton and

~~woollen yarn, tanning, engineering, and brewing. There is also an extensive trade in malt.~~

~~The population increased from 31,638 in 1801 to 79,604 in 1851, to 86,621 in 1871, and to 111,648 in 1881, of whom 51,892 were males and 59,756 females, Up to 1877 the municipal and parlia- mentary limits were coextensive, but in that year the municipal limits were increased from 1996 to 9960 acres, with a population in 1881 of 186,575, of whom 87,633 were males and 98,942 females. The number of inhabited houses in the parliamentary area in 1881 was 23,128, while 915 were uninhabited and 318 building. In the municipal area there were 38,548 inhabited houses, 1429 unill- habited, and 767 building.~~

~~Nottingham, or Snotingaham, is supposed to have been a Celtic settlement. It first became important in the 9th century. For some time after Alfred's defeat in 868 the town was in the hands of the Danes, and constituted one of their five boroughs, but it was restored and repeopled by Edward the Elder, who erected a portion of the town wall, rebuilt the castle, and threw a bridge over the Trent (920-4). The growing importance of Nottingham is evidenced by the fact that Athelstan, the successor of Edward the Elder, established there a royal mint. In 1013 the town submitted to Sweyn. After the Conquest Nottingham Castle was rebuilt to over- awe the people north of the Trent, its governorship being bestowed on William de Peverel, reputed natural son of the Conqueror. And it was whilst residing in it that Roger Mortimer, earl of March, and Isabella, widow of Edward II., were seized in the dead of night by Edward III. in 1330. Parliaments were held at Nottingham in 1334, 1337, aud 1357, and it was the scene of the conference of the judges with Richard II. in August 1387. Several important persons have been imprisoned in the castle, among others David II. of Scot- land. Edward IV. assembled his troops at Nottingham in 1461 ; and it was the headquarters of Richard ITI. before the battle of Bosworth in 1485. In 1642 Charles I. finally broke with the Parlia- ment by setting up his standard at Nottingham, and during the ensuing civil war the castle was held by each of the two parties more than once. In 1644 it was dismantled by Cromwell's orders ; but in 1674-79 it was re-erected in the Palladian style by the duke of Newcastle. During the Reform riot in 1831 it was partly de- stroyed by fire. The town received a charter from Henry II. con- firming privileges~~

~~granted to it by Henry I. In the reign of Henry VI. it was constituted a county under the title of ‘‘the town and~~

~~James II., but restored by William ITI.~~

~~NOT—NOV~~

~~county of the town of Nottingham.” A surreptitious surrender of its charter was obtained by Charles II., but he was persuaded sub-~~

~~sequently to grant it a new one. This charter was withdrawn by~~

~~Since the reign of Edward I. Nottingham has returned two members to parliament. In 1870 it was made the scat of a suffragan bishop in the diocese of Lincoln.~~

~~‘NOTTINGHAM, Earis or. I. Heneace Frvcu (1621- 1682), first earl, lord chancellor of England, was descended from an old family, many of whose members had attained to high legal eminence, and was the eldest son of Sir Heneage Finch, recorder of London, by his first wife Frances, daughter of Sir Edmund Bell of Beaupré Hall, Norfolk. In the register of Oxford university he is. entered as born in Kent, 23d December 1621, and probably his native place was Eastwell in that county. He was educated at Westminster and at Christ Church, Oxford, where he remained till he became a member of the Inner Temple in 1638. He was called to the bar in 1645, and soon obtained a lucrative practice, acquiring from his persuasive powers the titles of “the silver-tongued lawyer” and “the English Cicero,” and from his graceful action that of the “English Roscius.” He was chosen a member of the convention parliament of April 1660, and shortly afterwards was appointed solicitor-general, being created a baronet the day after he was knighted. In May of the following. year he was chosen to represent the university of Oxford, and in 1665 the university created hima D.C.L. In 1670 he became attorney-general, and in 1675 lord chancellor. He died in Great Queen Street, Lincoln’s Inn Fields, 18th December 1682, and was buried in the church of Ravenstone in Bucks.~~

~~The contemporaries of Lord Chancellor Nottingham of both sides of politics agree in their high estimate of his integrity, moderation, and~~

~~eloquence, while his abilities as a lawyer are sufficiently attested by the fact that he is still spoken of as ‘‘ the father of equity.” His most important contribution to the statute book is “‘The Statute of Frauds.” While attorney-general he superintended the edition of Sir Henry Hobart’s Reports, 1671. He also published Several Speeches and Discourses in the Tryal of the Judges of King Charles L., 1660; Speeches to both Houses of Parliament, 1679; Speech at the Sentence of Viscownt Stafford, 1680. He left Chancery Reports in MS., and notes on Coke’s Jnstitutes.~~

~~See Burnet, History of His Own Time (1724-34) ; Wood, Athenee Oxoniensis (1691); Horace Walpole, Royal and Noble Authors (1758); Lord Campbell, Lives of the Lord Chancellors (1649); Foss, Judges of England (1848-64) ; and Black- stone, Commentaries,~~

~~II. Danren Frou (1647-1730), second earl, son of the preceding, entered parliament for Lichfield in 1679. He was one of the privy councillors who in 1685 signed the order for the proclamation of the duke of York, but during the whole of the reign of James II. he kept away from the court. At the last moment he hesitated to join in the invitation to William of Orange, and after the abdication of James II. he was the leader of the party who were in favour of a regency. He declined the office of lord chan- cellor under William and Mary, but accepted that of secretary of state, retaining it till December 1693. Under Anne he in 1702 again accepted the same office in the ministry of Godolphin, but finally retired in 1704. On the accession of George I. he was made president of the council, but in 1716 he finally withdrew from office. He succeeded to the earldom of Winchelsea 9th September 1729, and died 1st January 1730.~~

~~NOVALIS. See HaRDENBERG, vol. xi. p. 472. ;~~

~~NOVARA, a city of Italy, the chief town of a province, stands between the Agogna and the Terdoppio on a hill 545 feet above sea-level in the plain between the Sessia and the Po. It is an important railway junction, 30 miles west of Milan, on the main line from Turin to Venice, which there connects with the continuation of the St Gotthard line and the Simplon route, as well as with a line to Alessandria and Genoa. Previous to 1830 Novara was still surrounded by its old Spanish ramparts, which were entered by only four gates, and gave the place a~~

~~Plate IV.~~

~~'pronounced against the followers of Fra Dolcino.~~

~~NOV—NOV~~

~~heavy appearance from the outside; it is now an open modern-looking town. Part of the old citadel is used as a prison. Of the churches it is enough to mention the cathedral, originally dating from 400, but (with the excep- tion of the octagonal dome-roofed baptistery, separated from the west end by an atrium) rebuilt in the Roman- esque style between 1860 and 1870 after designs by Antonelli; the church of 8. Gaudenzio (so called after Bishop Gaudentius (0b. 417), who is buried under the high altar), rebuilt by Pellegrino Pellegrini Tibaldi, with its strange tower, more than 269 feet high; and San Pietro del Rosario, in which the papal anathema was The city also contains handsome market-buildings erected in 1817-42, a large hospital originally dating from the 9th century, a court-house constructed in 1346, a muni- cipal library of 30,000 volumes (located in the market-buildings), a theatre, a statue of Cavour by Dini (1863), and another of Charles Albert. Besides being the largest grain market in the north-west of Italy, Novara trades in silk, linen, &c., and manufactures cotton, waxcloth, pot- tery, and starch. The communal population was 20016 in 1871, and 33,077 in 1881; that of the city was 15,232 (or, with its suburbs, S. Martino, 8. Andrea, 8. Agabio, Bicocea, and Torrion, 26,206) in 1881.~~

~~Novara, the ancient Novaria, according to Pliny of Gaulish, according to Cato of Ligurian origin, was a municipal city of some importance during the Roman empire. Dismantled in 386 by Maximus for siding with his rival Valentinian, it was restored by Theodosius ; but it was afterwards ravaged by Radagaisus (405) and Attila (452), A dukedom of Novara was constituted by the Lom- bards, a countship by Charlemagne. In 1110 the city was taken and burned by the emperor Henry V. Before the close of the 12th century it accepted the protection of Milan, and thus passed into the hands first of the Visconti and secondly of the Sforzas. In 1706 the city, which had long before been ceded by Maria Visconti to Amadeus VIII. of Savoy, was occupied by the Savoy troops. At the peace of Utrecht it passed to the house of Austria along with the duchy of Milan; but, having been occupied by Charles Emmanuel in 1734, it was granted to him in the~~

following year. Under the French it was the chief town of the department of Agogna. Restored to Savoy in 1814, it was in 1821 the scene of the defeat of the Piedinontese by the Austrians, and in 1849 of the more disastrous battle which led to the abdication of Charles Albert and an Austrian occupancy of the city. Natives of Novara are C. Albucius Silus (ancient rhetorician) and Gaudenzio Ferrari (many of whose works are preserved in the city); and Peter Lombard was born at Lumello in the neighbourhood. The chapel-mastershi has been held by some of the greatest Italian musicians, Paganini, Mercadante, La Coccia, &c.

NOVA SCOTIA, originally Acadia, a province of the Dominion of Canada, lies between 43° 25’ and 47° N. lat. and 59° 40’ and 66° 25’ W. long., and is composed of the peninsula proper and the adjoining island of Carr Breton (q.v.), Which is separated from the mainland by the Gut of Canso. It is bounded on the N. by Northumberland Strait (which divides it from Prince Edward Island) and the Gulf of St Lawrence, N.E., S.E., and §. by the Atlantic Ocean, and W. by the Bay of Fundy and New Brunswick, being connected with the latter province by a narrow isthmus 134 miles wide. The extreme length from south-west to morth-east is 350 miles, the breadth 120 miles, and the area 20,907 square miles (13,382,003 acres).

Physical Features.—The province is intersected by chains of lofty hills, in most instances running parallel with the coast-line. The Cobequid Mountains, stretching in a long line from east to west and terminating in Cape Chignecto, form the chief ridge, Several of the elevations are as high as 1100 feet, and are cultivable almost to their summits. Lying on each side of this range are two ex- tensive tracts of arable land which yield profitable crops. A. sharply-outlined ridge of precipices runs for 130 miles along the Bay of Fundy from Briar Island at the farthest extremity of Digby Neck to Capes Split and Blomidon.

601

Here and there masses of trap rocks, averaging from 200 to 600 feet in height and crowded with stunted firs, over- hang the coasts. Beyond them lies the garden of Nova Scotia, the valley of the Annapolis, full of varied scenery, and unrivalled for its fruit, flowers, and cereals. The general slope of the country is south-easterly, in which direction there are several chains

~~of lakes, the source of many rivers and streams of moderate length. The south- eastern coast is remarkable for its harbours, twelve of which are capable of affording shelter to ships of the line, while between Canso and Halifax, a distance of 110 miles, there are fourteen ports which possess ample accommo- dation for merchantmen of average size. The principal inlets are Bay Verte, Tatamagouche, and St George's Bay in Northumberland Strait ; Chedabucto Bay at the head of the Gut of Canso; Halifax Harbour, Margaret's and Mahone Bays on the south-east coast ; St Mary's Bay on the south-west; Annapolis Basin, Minas Basin and Channel, and Cobequid Bay on the west. Of these the most remarkable is Minas Basin, the eastern arm of the Bay of Fundy ; it penetrates some 60 miles inland, and terminates in Cobequid Bay, where the tides rush in with savage impetuosity, rising sometimes as high as 60 feet, while on the opposite coast, in Halifax Harbour, the spring tides scarcely exceed 7 or 8 feet. The principal inlets in Cape Breton are Aspy Bay, St Anne's Bay, Sydney Harbour, Miré Bay, and St Peter's Bay. All along the coast of Nova Scotia there are many small islands, the south-east shore being literally studded with them. The chief are Caribou and Pictou in Northumber- land Strait; St Paul, Scatari, and Isle Madame off the coast of Cape Breton. Sable, a dangerous and sandy island, almost barren, lies 150 miles east of Halifax, and has long been noted as the scene of fearful shipwrecks. Its length is 25 miles by about 14 miles in breadth, the eastern end being in 43° 59' N. lat. and 59° 45' W. long. An effective humane establishment is maintained on this island by the provincial Government. Other islands are Cape Sable, Seal, and Mud in the south, and Long Island at the entrance of St Mary's Bay. The principal capes (apart from those of Cape Breton) are Malagash, John, and St George on the northern coast ; Porcupine, Canso, Sambro Head,. Pennant Point, Crown Point, and La Have on the south-east ; Sable on the south; St Mary, Split, Chignecto, and Blomidon on the west. The interior of the country is traversed and watered by many rivers and lakes, which cover an estimated area of 3000 square miles. The rivers are, with few exceptions, navigable for coasting vessels for distances averaging from 2 to 20 miles. The principal are the Annapolis, Avon, Shubenacadie, East, Middle, and West, St Mary's, Musquodoboit, La Have, Mersey. The Annapolis river, which is navigable for a long distance, takes its rise in King's county, flows be- tween the North and South Mountains through a fertile tract of territory and discharges into Annapolis Bay. The~~

Shubenacadie flows from the Grand Lake in Halifax county, receives the waters of ten other streams, and, after winding through Hants county, empties itself into Minas Basin. It is navigable for craft of large size, and its

'banks are rich in forest trees. The East, West, and Middle

rivers, also navigable for similar vessels, discharge into Pictou Harbour. The La Have empties into the Atlantic, the Avon into the Bay of Fundy, and the Mersey into Liverpool Harbour. The Medway, Shelburne, Clyde, Tusket, St Mary's, and several others have their sources in the numerous lakes which lie in the interior. The largest of the latter is Lake Rossignol, situated in Queen's county, and more than 20 miles long. Ship Harbour Lake, 15 miles in length, and Grand Lake are in Halifax county, College Lake is in the eastern part of XVII. — 76

602

the peninsula. The Bras d'Or Lake (Cape Breton) may be best described as an imprisoned sea. It is 50 miles long and of great depth, bordered by the counties of Victoria, Inverness, Richmond, and Cape Breton ; it is full of fish, and expands into several streams and bays, each of which affords excellent sport to the angler.

Geology.—The Lower Cambrian runs along the whole extent of the Atlantic seaboard in one uninterrupted line. To the north of this stretches an extensive district coin- posed of rocks of Upper Silurian and probably others of Lower Silurian age. Along the section on the south coast of the Bay of Fundy, and at Minas Basin and Channel, is to be found the New Red Sandstone formation. Grey granite, gneiss, and mica-slate prevail along the shore. Trap rocks, often embedded in clay-slate, abound in several sections of the province, and the newer Red Sandstone prevails in the western division. There are vast Carboniferous beds, occupying a large area, and forming a source of great wealth to the inhabitants. Millstone grit, the gypsiferous series, limestones, slates, the metamorphic series, the Huronian, d&c., are also to be noted. The Carboniferous plain of New Brunswick is connected with that of Nova Scotia at its eastern extremity. The coal-fields of the latter are especially valuable and productive. They are situated in Cape Breton, Cumberland, Pictou, Inverness, and Rich- mond counties. In

~~1882 there were twenty-one collieries in operation, which produced 1,365,811 tons of coal, consumed principally in Quebec, New Brunswick, New- foundland, Prince Edward Island, and the United States. About 4235 persons are employed in this industry. The coal is bituminous and very rich in quality. In the Carboniferous areas there are immense deposits of pyro-schist or bituminous shale, "capable," says Dawson, "of yielding as much as 63 gallons of oil, or 7500 feet of illuminating gas per ton. Owing to the great cheapness of petroleum little attention has been paid to these shales for some years, but it is likely that they will before long again be in demand."~~

~~Gold is found in workable quantities, the production in 1882 being 14,107 ounces. The gold district includes Caribou, Gay's River, Montagu, Oldham, Renfrew, Sher- brooke, Stormont, Tangier, Uniacke, Waverley, Wine Harbour, and unproclaimed,—thirty mines in all. Iron ore abounds also in profitable quantities, and of excellent quality ; the production in 1882 was 42,135 tons. Other minerals, such as manganese ore, gypsum, barytes, &c., abound. A fair business is annually done in coke, fire- clay, building-stone, and grindstones. Some veins of copper, silver, lead, and galena, especially rich in quality, exist. There are many curious and beautiful fossils, besides amethysts, agates, chalcedonies, jaspers, cairngorms, &c.~~

~~Climate and Vegetation.—The climate of Nova Scotia somewhat resembles that of New Brunswick. There are extremes of heat and cold, and sudden changes of tempera- ture, varying Sometimes in one day as much as 50°. Con- sidering its northern latitude, it is remarkably temperate on the whole. The extreme of cold is about 20° below zero in the depth of winter, and the greatest heat is 98°. The climate varies in the different counties, those in the west averaging from 6° to 8° Fahr. warmer than those in the east. The coldest period is from the end of December to the first week in March, during which the weather is tolerably uniform. The spring is usually brief and chilly, but the autumn, which is the most favoured season of the year, is delightfully pleasant. Vegetation develops rapidly. At certain times dense fogs line the banks along the Atlantic coast, but they are not considered unhealthy.~~

Nova Scotia is a valuable agricultural country ; wheat, oats, rye, barley, buckwheat, Indian corn, potatoes, tur-

high lands are as productive as the intervales. produce in 1881 was of barley, 47,567 of rye, buckwheat, 37,220 of pease and beans, 8128 of grass and

in the sister province. birch, maple, hemlock, yield of timber is very great, amounting in value to $1,587,941.

thelist. At factory in Halifax.

weonping paper, machinery, nails, gunpowde

N@VA SCOTIA

nips, beets, tomatoes, &c., grow in abundance, while apples, pears, plums, berries, gooseberries, perfection. air in some districts. of commerce, and quantities have been exported to Eng-

cherries, strawberries, raspberries, cran- currants, and other fruits ripen to Even grapes and peaches grow in the open The Nova Scotia apple is an article

land. ‘The orchards of Annapolis and King’s counties ex- tend along the roadsides for upwards of 50 miles. The soil is of various degrees of fertility. The intervale lands,

which form an extensive part of the country, are rich, and yield largely. The uplands, lying between the hilly

sections and the rivers, are of moderate capacity. The The 529,251 bushels of wheat, 228,748 1,873,113 of oats, 339,718 of

clover seeds, 7,378,387 of potatoes, 1,006,711 of turnips, 326,143 of other roots, and 597,731 tons of hay. Of live

stock there were 57,167 horses, 33,275 working oxen,

137,639 milch cows, 154,689 other horned cattle, 377,801

sheep, and 47,256 swine.

The forests of Nova Scotia are extensive and valuable, the principal trees found in New Brunswick also growing They are chicfly pine, oak, tamarack, spruce, butternut, ash, &c. The the shipments in 1881

Industrics, Commerce, d&e.—Nova Scotia is not strong as a manu- facturing country, but every year some new industries are added to yresent there are two sugar-refineries and a cotton- Coarse "homespuns," coarse flannels, bed- linen, blankets, carpets, and tweeds are made in considerable quantities. Tanning is extensively carried on, and there are several factories where household and other furniture, agricultural imple- nents, boots and shoes, saddlery, harness, tobacco, printing and pails and wooden ware, fuse r, carriages, and sleighs, &c., are made. In 1881 the province contained 1190 saw-mnills, 263 grist-mills, 151 tanneries, 68 carding and weaving establishments, 8 breweries, and various other manufactories ; 217,481 tb of maple sugar were produced. The value of the boots and shoes manufactured was $754,128, of iron smelted $720,000, and of sugar refined $1,702,000. 'The ex- ports of mining produce amounted to $676,078, of agricultural products to $830,804, of manufactures to $487,508, and of animals and their produce to $836,052. The total exports were $9,217,295 and the total imports $8,701,589. Shipbuilding is extensively carried on. In 1882 there were 122 vessels built, tonnage 31,361 ; and 174 vessels of all classes were registered. In the same year 6615 craft, representing a tonnage of 709,167, were engaged in the coasting trade. The total number on the registry books of the province was 3026, tonnage 546,778.

Next to Newfoundland, Nova Scotia possesses the largest and most valuable fisheries in British North Aimerica. Along the entire coast, extending over 1000 miles, food fish of almost every descrip- tion (salmon, trout, cod, holibut, haddock, bass, mackerel, herring, shad, lobsters, &c.) may be taken. Immense quantities of these are shipped to the West Indies, the United States, various ports in Canada ; and of late years several varieties have been welcomed in British markets. In 1882 fish to the value of $4,437,364 were exported. About 19,000 men are employed in this industry.

Most of the principal birds of North America are to be found in Nova Scotia, and the game of the country includes moose, caribou, duck, teal, geese, woodcock, partridge, snipe, plover, &c. The game laws are very strict, and are rigidly enforced. The wild animals remaining in the province are bears, wolves, foxes, wild-cats, and a few others.

Communication.—Nova Scotia is well furnished with railways, there being nearly 600 miles in operation at the present time. The Intercolonial runs from Halifax to Amherst, 138 miles, and thence to St John, N.B., and Quebec. There are two canals in the province, one from Halifax to Cobequid Bay, and the other, the St Peter's, con- necting St Peter's Bay on the southern side of Cape Breton with the Bras d'Or Lake. The roads of Nova Scotia are exceedingly good and well maintained. Telegraphic lines are established nearly all over the province, and connect with the United States system.

Government, Finance, d&c.—The executive authority is in the hands of a lieutenant-governor and a council of eight members, four with portfolios and four without. Thirty-eight representatives are elected every four years to the house of assembly, and twenty legislative councillors are appointed for life by the local govern-

ment. The lieutenant-governor is appointed by the governor- general of Canada in council. The system of administration is known as responsible government. The province returns twenty- one members to the Dominion House of Comnions, and ten senators are appointed by the crown to the senate of Canada. They hold their positions for life. The province has the right to make its own civil laws, but in all criminal cases the form which obtains in all the courts is the criminal law of the Dominion. 'The judiciary consists of a chief justice, an equity judge, and five puisne judges, a supreme court having law and equity jurisdiction throughout the province, a vice-admiralty court, and a court of marriage and divorce. In each county there is a court of probate. There are also seven county court judges.

Nova Scotia forms the ninth military district in the militia of Canada. The established strength of the active force by arms is composed of 1 troop of

cavalry, 1 field battery of artillery, 17 bat- teries of garrison artillery, 9 battalions of infantry and rifles; total, 318 officers, and 3638 non-commissioned officers and men. The period of service in time of peace is three years. British regiments of the line are also stationed at Halifax.

The public revenue of the province is a little more than half a niillion dollars annually, and the expenditure is about the same. The chief source of revenue is the yearly subsidy granted to the province by the Dominion, under the terms of the British North America Act of 1867. In 1882 it amounted to $380,000. The remainder of the revenue is dcrived from the sales of wild lands, royalties from mines, miscellaneous fees, marriage and other licences.

Religion, Education, &c.—There are two Roinan Catholic dioceses in Nova Scotia—the archdiocese of Halifax and the diocese of Arichat ; the clergy of the two combined number 76. A Church of England sce was established at Halifax in 1787 ; the bishop, who has jurisdiction in Prince Edward Island also, has under him an archdeacon and 85 clergymen. The synod of the maritime provinces in connexion with the Presbyterian Church in Canada includes 101 ministers in Nova Scotia. The Methodist Church has 100 clergymen and supernumeraries, and the Baptist denomination has 104. The following table shows the number of the adherents of the various bodies :—

Church of England ..... 60,255 Tiatheransin.clesee ented ac seicine 5,639 Church of Rome .. .117,487 AA ENISUST: asso cs.scjecireu sic etic ce 1,536 Presbyterians … 112,488 Other denominations ..... 8,331 Baptists .....005 … 83,761 URS oceania coca cnerne merpane 1g) MMC CNOOISUS 5… cinvcviee se siecle 50,811 Nolereed'stateds:....<..2.4. 02 1,618 Ofmio religion: fs. secan.- ss) 121 — — Congregationalists ..... 3,506 | Mota ere cycvs sec cetnc oe 440,572

The free-school system is in operation, the whole community paying for its maintenance. The total Government expenditure for this service in 1882 was $173,877 ; the local expenditure, county fund, was $106,948; the total expenditure for public schools amounted to $571,389. In this year there were 1910 schools in operation, taught by 1975 teachers, and attended by 81,196 pupils. Besides the public schools and academies, there are a model

~~and a normal school, several couvents, and six colleges, viz., Dalhousie College and University, St Mary's (R.C.) College, the Presbyterian College, Acadia College (Baptist) at Wolfville, St Francis (R.C.) Col- lege at Antigonish, and King's College and University (Episcopal) at Windsor, which was founded in 1787.~~

~~The public charitable institutions receiving aid from the province are the insane asylum, poor's asylum and provincial city hospital, blind asylum, transient poor and visiting dispensary, and the deaf and dumb asylum, which is also helped by the New Brunswick Government. Several other institutions are maintained by societies and the benevolence of private individuals.~~

~~Population.—The province is divided into eighteen counties (including Cape Breton), as follows (1881) :—~~

~~Counties. Pop. Capitals. || Counties. Pop. Capitals. Halifax ….} 67,917 | Halifax. ; Cuinberland | 27,368 | Amherst. Lunenburg ..} 28,583 | Lunenburg. Colchester ..| 26,720 | Truro. Queen's ….{ 10,577 | Liverpool. Pictow cae ee 35,535 | Pictou.~~

~~Shelburne ..} 14,913 | Shelburne. Antigonish ..} 18,060 | Antigonish.~~

~~Yarmouth ..| 21,284 ; Yarmouth. Guysborough } 17,808 | Guysborough. Dicey… fers = 19,881 } Digby. Inverness ..| 25,651 | Port Hood. Annapolis ..} 20,498 | Annapolis, Richinond ..} 15,121 | Arichat. IRIN EES) cre cre 23,469 | Kentville. : Cape Breton | 31,258 | Sydney. FEVENTU GSW «sa su0 23,359 | Windsor, | Victoria …{ 12,470 | Baddeck.~~

~~The total population was 440,572, including 220,538 males and 220,034 females. In 1871 the population was 387,800. There are 2125 Indians in Nova Scotia, principally Malicites and Micmacs. The inhabitants consist chiefly of Scotch, English, Irish, American, German, Acadian French, Dutch, freed negroes, of whom there are 7062, and various other nationalities.~~

~~Besides Halifax, the capital, of which the population in 1881 was 36,100, the chief towns are Pictou (3403), New Glasgow (2595), Sidney (Sydney),~~

C.B. (3667), North Sydney (5484), Yarmouth (6280), Liverpool (3000), and Lunenburg (4007). Windsor (3019), possessing one of the principal colleges in the province, is also the

centre of a large trade in gypsum. Annapolis, formerly Port Royal, Truro, Amherst, Antigonish, and Pugwash are also rising and thriving towns.

History.—Nova Scotia was first visited by the Cabots in 1497, but it was 1604 before any attempt at colonization by Europeans was made. This was the expedition headed by De Monts, a Freuch- man, which tried to form settlements at Port Royal, St Croix, and elsewhere, and endured severe hardships until 1614, when the English colonists of Virginia made a descent upon them, claimed the terri- tory in right of the discovery by the Cabots, and expelled them from the soil. In 1621 Sir William Alexander obtainced a grant of the whole peninsula, and it was named in the patent Nova Scotia instead of Acadia, the old name given the colony by the French. Alexander intended to colonize the country on an extensive scale, but the attempt was frustrated (1623) by the French. During the reign of Charles I. the Nova Scotia baronets were created, and their patents ratificd in parliament. Their number was not to exceed 150, and in exchange for their titles and grants of land they agreed to con- tribute aid to the settlement. Cromwell despatched a strong force to the possession in 1654. In 1667 it was ceded by the treaty of Breda to the crown of France. But the restless English colonists, unmindful of treaty obligations, attacked the French from time to time at various points, until in 1713 the latter relinquished all claim to the country. England neglected it until 1749, when, the designs of the French again becoming marked, the Government inade strenuous exertions to induce British settlers to go there. More than 4000 emigrants with their families sailed for the colony ; and Halifax was founded. But the French settlers, who enjoyed privi- leges as neutrals, still embraced a considcrable portion of the population, and, with their allies the Indians, proved exceedingly troublesome to the English. They were finally expelled; and in 1758 a constitution was granted to Nova Scotia. By the treaty of Paris in 1763 France resigned all pretension to the country. In 1784 New Brunswick and Cape Breton were separated front Nova Scotia ; but in 1819 the two latter divisions were reunited, and in 1867 they became part of the Dominion of Canada.

~~See Campbell, Nova Scotia in its Historical, Mercantile, and Industrial Rela- tions (Montreal, 1873); Dawson, Acadian Geology (Montreal, 1878); Fletcher in Report of the Geological Survey of Canada (1879-80); Pub. Docs, 'Nova Scotia aud Dominion of Canada (1882-83)." (G. ST.)~~

~~NOVATIANUS, Roman presbyter, and one of the earliest antipopes, founder of the sect of the Novatiani or Novatians, was born about the beginning of the 3d century. On the authority of Philostorgius (1. Z., viii. 15), he has often been called a native of Phrygia, but perhaps the historian intended by this nothing more than to indicate the Montanistic complexion of Novatian's creed. Of the facts of his life very little is known, and that only from his opponents. His conversion is said to have taken place after an intense mental struggle; he was baptized by sprinkling, and without episcopal confirmation, when on a sick-bed in hourly expectation of death; and on his re- covery his Christianity retained all the stern and gloomy character of its earliest stages. He was ordained to the priesthood at Rome by Fabian, or perhaps by an earlier bishop ; and during the Decian persecution he maintained very strenuously the severer view of the church's disci- plinary function, which would have excluded for ever from ecclesiastical communion all those (lapsi) who after baptism had ever sacrificed to idols,—a view which had frequently found expression within the church previously, and which had indeed been the occasion of the schism of Hippolytus. Bishop Fabian suffered martyrdom in January 250, and, when Cornelius was elected his successor in March or April 251, Novatian objected to the new bishop on account of his known laxity on the above-mentioned point of disci- pline, and allowed himself to be consecrated bishop by the minority who shared his views. He and his followers were excommunicated by the synod held at Rome in October of the same year. He is said by Socrates (H/. E., iv. 28) to have suffered martyrdom under the emperor Valerian. After his death the Novatians, in spite of much opposition, increased, and spread rapidly to almost every province of the empire ; they called themselves kaapot, or Puritans, and insisted on rebaptizing their converts from the Catholic view. The eighth canon of the council of Nice provides in a spirit of considerable liberality for the readmission of the clergy of the xa@apot to the Catholic~~

Church, and the sect finally disappeared some two centuries after its origin. Novatian has sometimes been confounded with his contemporary Novatus, a Carthaginian presbyter, who held similar views.

Novatian was the first Roman Christian who wrote to any con- siderable extent in Latin. Of his numerous writings three are extant: (1) a letter written in the name of the Roman clergy to Cyprian in 250; (2) a treatise in thirty-one chapters, De Triniiate ; (3) a letter written at the request of the Roman laity, De Cibis Judaicis. They are well-arranged compositions, written In an elegant and vigorous style. The best editions are by Welchman (Oxford, 1724) and by Jackson (London, 1728) ; they are translated in vol. ii. of Cyprian's works in the Ante-Nicene Theol. Libr, (Edin- burgh, 1869). The Novatian controversy can be advantageously studied in the Epistles of Cyprian.

NOVATION isa term derived from the Roman law, in which novatio was of three kinds—substitution of a new debtor (expromissio or delegatio), of a new creditor (cessio nominum vel actionum), or of a new contract. In English law the term (though it occurs as early as Bracton) is scarcely yet naturalized, the substitution of anew debtor or creditor being generally called an assignment, and of a new contract a merger. It is doubtful, however, whether merger applies except where the substituted contract is one of a higher nature, as where a contract under seal supersedes a simple contract. Where one contract is re- placed by another, it is of course necessary that the new contract should be a valid contract, founded upon sufficient consideration (see Contract). The extinction of the previous contract is sufficient consideration. The question whether there is a novation most frequently arises in the course of dealing between a customer and a new partner- ship, and on the assignment of the business of a life assurance company with reference to the assent of the policyholders to the transfer of their policies. The points on which novation turns are whether the new firm or com- pany has assumed the liability of the old, and whether the creditor has consented to accept the liability of the new debtors and discharge the old. The question is one of fact in each case. See especially 35 and 36 Vict. c. 41, s. 7, where the word "novations" occurs in the marginal note to the section, and so has quasi-statutory sanction. Scotch law seems to be more stringent than English law in the application of the doctrine of

novation, and to need stronger evidence of the creditor's consent to the transfer of liability. In American law, as in English, the term is something of a novelty, except in Louisiana, the only State where the civil law prevails.

NOVA ZEMBLA, or, more correctly, NovAYA ZEMLYA (i.e. "New Land"), is a large island, surrounded by many small ones, situated in the ARcTIc OcEAN (see vol. ii., plate xxvi.), and belonging to the Russian empire. It lies be- tween 70° 30' and 77° N. lat. and between 52° and 69° E. long., in the shape of an elongated crescent 600 miles in length, with an average width of 60 miles, and an esti- mated area of 40,000 square miles, separating the Kara Sea on the east from that part of the Arctic Ocean which is often called Barents's Sea. The north-eastern extre- mity of Novaya Zemlya lies a little to the west of the meridian of the peninsula of Yalmal, from the extremity of which it is only 160 miles distant. Its southern part, bending towards the south-east, appears as a continuation of the Vaigatch (Vaygach) Island, from which it is sepa- rated by the Kara Strait, 30 miles in width,—the island itself being separated from the continent by the narrow Ugrian Strait, only 7 miles broad. Novaya Zemlya is cut through about the middle by a narrow winding channel, the Matotchkin (Matochkin) Shar, which also connects the Arctic Ocean with the Kara Sea.

While the eastern coast runs as a regular curve, with deeper indentations only in its middle, the western is deeply indented by numerous and in some cases fjord-like

lat.; Méller Bay,

NOV—NOV

bays, studded, like the rest of the coast, with many islands. Amongst the principal on the western coast are several parallel fjords at the southern extremity and the wide bay of Sakhanikha. bounded on the north by Cape Podrezoff, which forms the southern extre- pee

mityof Gusinaya |

Zemlya or Goose

~~Then farther north is the Kostin Shar,~~

~~Land, in 72° N.~~

~~40 miles wide, between Goose Land and Britvin Promontory, has several fjord-like bays, with good anchorages. A broad — — indent- ation between Britvin and Suk- hoi Nos Promon- tories, which has received the general name of Marquis de Traversé Bay, includes several bays with good anchorages for larger — vessels. Several other large and deep bays follow until Admiralty Penin- sula (75° N. lat.) is .reached ; of these the chief are Krestovaya and Mashigin. on, Nordenskjéld's Bay is worthy of notice. Orography and Geology. — The interior of Novaya Zemlya is almost unknown ; still, the broad features of its structure can be inferred from data obtained at various points on the coast. Two orographical regions must be distinguished. The first of these, south of lat. 72°, appearing as a continua- tion of the Pay-Kho mountains, is a plateau of moderate height, with several low parallel ridges (2000 feet) running north-west, and separated by level valleys dotted with numerous lakes. It consists of gneisses and clay-slates, with layers of augitic porphyry (north of Kostin Shar), and thick beds of Silurian and perhaps Devonian limestones, continued on Vaigatch Island, where they are partially covered with Carboniferous deposits. On the north- west it terminates in the low plateau (300 to 400 feet) of Goose Land. The middle and northern parts of Novaya Zemlya, on the other hand, form an alpine region with isolated peaks and a complicated system of spurs and deep valleys, extending even under the sea. Instead of being, as it has been frequently described, a single chain running in the main direction of the island closer to its western coast, it appears to be rather a system of shorter chains running due north-east, and disposed in échelons displaced east- wards as they advance towards the north. They terminate seawards in several promontories having the same direc- tion; but the difference of the geological structure on the two sides of the Matotchkin Shar would suggest that it is rather a combination of two longitudinal valleys connected by a transverse cleft than one transverse valley. The highest parts of the alpine region (the Mitusheff Kamei, 3200 feet ; Wilezek, 3900 feet; and other peaks to the west rising perhaps to 4000 and 4650 feet) are in the neighbourhood of this channel; south of the eastern en-~~

~~Map of Nova Zembla.~~

~~Farther~~

~~NOW NO aw Bb A~~

~~trance is a peak about 5000 feet in height. Farther north the region sinks much lower, while that part of northern Novaya Zemlya which bends eastward seems to consist of a more massive swelling of land, covered with an immense ice-sheet descending north and south to the sea-coast. The whole of the alpine region is covered with fields of snow descending in broad strips along the slopes of the isolated peaks, and feeding glaciers in the deeper valleys.~~

~~The geological structure of the central region is of the most varied description. The primary rocks which appear at Mitusheff Kameii are overlaid with thick beds of quartz- ites and clay-slates containing sulphite of iron, with sub- ordinate layers of talc or mica slate, and thinner beds of fossiliferous limestone, Silurian or Devonian. More recent clay-slates and marls belonging to the middle Jurassic occur in the western coast-region about Matotchkin Shar. About 74° N. lat. the crags of the eastern coast are composed of grey sandstone, while in 76° Barents's Islands, and possibly a much greater part of the northern coast, show Carboni- ferous strata. 'Traces of Eocene deposits, produced under a warmer climate, which are so widely developed in other parts of the polar basin, have not yet been discovered on Novaya Zemlya. During the Glacial period its glaciers were much larger than at present, whilst during a later portion of the Quaternary period (to judge by the marine fossils found as high as 300 feet above the sea) Novaya Zemlya, like the whole of the arctic coast of Russia, was submerged for several hundred feet. At present it appears to partake of the movement of upheaval common to the whole of northern Russia.~~

~~Climate.—Though inilder than that of north-eastern Siberia, the climate of Novaya Zemlya is colder even than that of Spitzbergen. The average temperature about the Matotchkin Shar has been found from three years' observations to be 17° Fahr., and it decreases towards the south, being only 14°°9 at Kamenka (70° 35' N.). At Shallow Bay, in 73° 55', it has been found to be 19°°6. In the middle parts of the western coast the average~~

~~temperature of the winter is — 4°; that of the summer at Matotchkin Shar is 36°°5, — that is, lower than at Boothia Felix, or Melville Island. On the western coast also warm west winds bring considerable moisture, which is condensed by the mountains, and thus a cloudy sky inter- cepts the already scanty sunlight. On the eastern coast the summer temperature is less still, the average for the year being probably 2° Fahr. lower than that of corresponding latitudes of the western coast. The coastsof Novaya Zemlya are less icebound than might be supposed owing to the influence of a warm current which flows along the coast on the north-west, and which may be considered as a continuation of the Gulf Stream. 'There are years in which the island can be circunnavigated without difficulty. The southern shores, besides experiencing the cold influence of the Kara Sea, are washed by a cold current which issues from Kara Strait and flows northwards along the south-western coast.~~

~~Flora.—Grass does not grow to any extent except in Goose Land, where the soil is covered with finer débris. Elsewhere even the leaved lichens are precarious, though the leather lichens flourish, especially the Vermicaria geographia. Of Phanerogams, only the Dryas octopetala covers small areas of the débris, and is interspersed with isolated Cochlcaria, Stercocaulon paschale, and Papaver nudi- caule, Silene acaulis, Saxifraga oppositifolia, Arenaria rubella, five or six species of Draba, as well as the Dryas octopetala and Myosotis, are found where the débris permits. Where a layer of thinner clay has been deposited in sheltered places, the surface is covered with Platypetalum purpurascens, Saxifrage, and Draba alpina ; and a carpet of mossces allows the Salix polaris to develop its two dwarf leaflets and its catkins. Wherea thin sheet of humus, fertilized by lemmings, has accumulated in the course of ages, the Rhodiola rosea, the Krigon uniflorum, a Ranuneulus nivalis, or an Oxyria reniformis make their appearance, with here and there a Vaceinium (which, however, never flowers). Even where a carpet of plants has developed under specially favourable circumstances, they do not dare raise their stems more than a few inches, and their brilliant flowers spring direct from the soil, concealing the developed leaflets, whilst their horizontally-spread roots grow out of proportion ; only the Salix lanata rises to 7 or 8 inches, send- ing out roots 1 inch thick and 10 to 12 feet long. understands how these plants propagate ; vegetation seems to be maintained, at least partially, by seeds bronght by~~

birds or by currents. All this, of course, applies only to the better-known neighbourhoods of Matotchkin and Kostin Straits; north of 74° N.

One hardly

605

but very few species have been found at all (Saxifraga oppositi- folia, Papaver nudicaule, Draba alpina, and Oxyria digyna). In all, the phanerogamic flora of Novaya Zemlya and Vaigatch now numbers 185 species, of which 30 have not yet been found on the main island, but may yet be discovered in its southern part. Of the total, 131 are Dicotyledons. As to the much -discussed genetic connexions of the Novaya Zemlya flora, it appears, according to M. Kjellmann's researches, that it belongs to the Asiatic arctic region rather than to the Europcan. Eleven species are what Hooker and Grisebach regard as old glacial, 56 are purely alpine, and 6 have been found in other alpine regions of Europe ; 36 non-alpine species belong to the flora of middle Europe, 41 to the Scandinavian flora, and only 16 to that of arctic Russia, whilst 29 have not been found in Europe at all. Altogether, 156 species are European (132 from arctic Europe), and 177 Asiatic (164 from arctic Asia), whilst 11 are wanting in both arctic Europe and Asia.

auna.—The desolate interior of Novaya Zemlya shows hardly a trace of animal life, save perchance a solitary vagrant bird, a few lemmings, an ice-fox, a brown or white bear, and at times immigrant reindeer. Even insects are few ; the very mosquitoes of the tundras are wanting, and only a solitary bee flies among the scanty flowers. The sea-coast, however, is occupied by countless nuinbers of birds, which come from the south for the breeding season, and at certain parts of the sea-coast the rocks are covered with millions of Uria troile, and the air is resonant with their cries, while numberless flocks of ducks, geese, and swans swarm every summer on the valleys and lakes of the southern part of the island. Whales, walruses, seals, and dolphins are still abundant. Only two species of fish are of any importance,—the goltzy (Salmo alpinus) in the western rivers, and the omud (Salmo omul) in the eastern.

~~The following is a list of the land mammals (some of them not satisfactorily determined) :—Ursus arctos and maritimus, Rangifer tarandus (Pallas), Vulpes vulgaris and lagopus, Canis lupus, Cuni- culus torquatus (Pallas), perhaps Mus grenlandica, or Myodes obensis. The birds are :—Stryx nictea, Falco buteo, 7 'ringa maritima, Plectrophanes nivalis, Otocorys alpestris, and Strepsilas ecollaris, all endemic ; many species of ducks, Harclda glacialis being the most common, Somatcria spectabilis and mollissima in company with the Ccphus Mandtii ; several species of geese and swans (Cygnus musicus included) ; as also Larus glaueus, Uria troile, U. bruen-nichti, and Alea ptetorhina. The marine mammals are :—the walrus, Odobenus rosmarus ; seals, Phoea vitulina, P. leporina, P. grenlandiea (O. Miller) in the Kara Sea, P. barbata (2); and dolphins, Delphinus Orca and D. delphis (2).~~

~~The numbers of sea mammals in the sea around Novaya Zemlya and the vast quantities of birds attracted Russian hunters as soon as they became acquainted with the northern Ural, and even in the 16th century they had extended their huts (stanovishteha) to the extreme north of the island. Many of them wintered for several consecutive years on Novaya Zemlya without suffering great losses from scurvy ; but no inhabitants have ever tried to establish themselves permanently on the island. The hunters were very often extremely successful ; but the industry has always been sub- ject to great vicissitudes. During the last twenty-five years the Archangel aud Kola hunters have but rarely visited Novaya Zemlya ; on the other hand, both it and the Kara Sea are now more and more visited by Norwegians. A few Samoyede families, recently settled by the Russian Government at Karmakuly, have remained there for several consecutive years, living chiefly by hunting the reindeer which abound on the eastern coast, and of which two varieties are distinguished, one like that of Spitzbergen.~~

~~History.—Novaya Zemlya seems to have been known to Nov- gorod hunters in the 11th century ; but its geographical discovery was four centuries later, at the time of the great movement for the discovery of the north-eastern passage. In 1553 Sir Hugh Willoughby sighted what was probably Goose Land; Chancellor penetrated into the White Sea. In 1556 Burrough reached the southern extremity of the island (the first western European to do so). William Barents touched the island (1594) at Sukhoi~~

Nos (73° 46'), and followed the coast northward to the Orange Islands and south- ward to the Kostin Shar. Rumours of silver ore having been found induced the Russian Government to send out expeditions to the island during the second half of the 18th century. Yushkoff visited it in 1757 ; and in 1760 Savva Loshkin cruised along all the eastern coast, spent two winters there, and in the next year, after having reaclicd Cape Begehrte (Begheerte), returned along the western coast, thus accomplishing the first cireumnavigation ; but the valuable records of his voyage in Russian archives have been lost. In 1768 Rozmysloff reached Goose Land and penetrated into the Kara Sea by the Matotchkin Shar, where he spent the winter ; in the following year he pursued the exploration of the Kara Sea, but was compelled to return and abandon his ship. Pospeloff investigated the alleged discovery of silver at Silver Bay in 1806. The first real scientific information about the island is due to the expeditions of Count Litke in 1821, 1822, 1828, and 1824, Nearly the whole of the western coast as far as Cape Nassau, as well

as the Matotchkin channel, was visited and mapped during these expeditions, and abundance of most valuable scientific information obtained. In 1832 Pakhtusoff mapped the eastern eoast as far as Matotchkin Shar; and in 1835 Pakhtusoff and Tsivolka mapped the coast as far as 74° 24'. The next expedition was that of Karl Baer in 1838, whose matchless deseriptions still are the most valuable of all our sources of information about this region.

A new cra of scientific exploration of Novaya Zemlya and of the neighbouring seas begins in 1868. The measurements of temperature made in that year by Bessels and by Dufferin between Bear Island and Novaya Zenilya, and partly those made by Yar- jinsky in his dredgings off the Murman coast, established the existence of a warm current crossing Barents's Sea, and led to the publieation of Petermann's remarkable treatise on the Gulf Stream. The existenee of the warm current was further confirmed by the measurements of Yarjinsky in 1869, by Maydell and Middendortf in 1871, and by the more reeent and closer investigations of And- reeff in 1880-82. On the other side, since 1868 the Norwegian sea-

hunters, availing themselves of the suggestions of Mohn, Nordenskjold, and Petermann, have brought in most valuable geographical information. In 1870 Johannesen penetrated as far cast as 79° E. long.,, in 76° 13’ N. lat., and afterwards accomplished the second circumnavigation of Novaya Zemlya. The measure- ments of Johannesen, Ulve, Mack, Torkildsen, Qvale, and Nedrevaag enabled the first map of the Kara Sea worthy of the name, as also of northern Novaya Zemlya, to be drawn up. These and subsequent explorations led the way for Nordenskjild’s famous voyages (see Potar Recions). Two recent undertakings must be mentioned, however, — the establishment of a permanent station on Novaya Zemlya, the wintering at Karmakuly of Lieutenant Tyaghin, and the crossing of the island in 1878 by M. Grinevetskiy from Karma- kuly to the eastern coast ; and the last Dutch expedition of the ‘“‘Dijmphna,” which, along with the steamer ‘¢ Varna,” wintered in the Kara Sca. (Pras kK.)

NOVEL. See RoMANCE.

NOVELLO, Vincent (1781-1861), an artist whose efforts to diffuse an increased taste for classical music in England fifty years ago have been crowned with perma- nent success, was born in London 6th September 1781. He was organist at different times of the Sardinian, Spanish, and Portuguese chapels, and of St Mary’s chapel, Moorfields. He was an original member of the Phil- harmonic Society, of the Classical Harmonists, and of the Choral Harmonists. He composed an immense quantity of sacred music, much of which is still deservedly popular ; but his great work lay in the introduction to England of unknown compositions by the great masters. The Masses of Haydn and Mozart were absolutely unknown in England until he edited them, as were also the works of Palestrina, the treasures of the Fitzwilliam Museum, and innumerable great compositions now well known to every one. To his zeal is due the store of sacred music published, first by his son, and then by Novello, Ewer, and Co. ; and it is not too much to say that benefit is still derived from the impulse given to English taste by these publications. Novello died at Nice on 9th August 1861.

NOVEMBER (or Novembris, sc. mensis, from novem), the ninth month of the old Roman year, which began with March. By the Julian arrangement, according to which the year began with 1st January, November, while

~~retain- ing its old name, became the eleventh month and had thirty days assigned to it. The 11th of November was held to mark the beginning of winter (hiemis initium); the sacred banquet called "epulum Jovis" took place on the 13th. The principal November festivals in the calendar of the Roman Church are :—All Saints' Day on the Ist, All Souls' on the 2d, St Martin's on the 11th, the Presenta- tion of the Virgin on the 21st, St Cecilia's on the 22d, St Catherine's on the 25th, and St Andrew's on the 30th. St Hubert is commemorated on the 3d. In the English calendar All Saints' and St Andrew's are the only feasts retained, and the " Papists' Conspiracy," for which a par- ticular service is appointed, is commemorated on the 5th. The eve of St Andrew's is a fast. The Anglo-Saxon name of November was Blotmonath (blood month), the latter name probably alluding to the custom of slaughtering~~

~~NOV—NOV~~

~~cattle about Martinmas for winter consumption. In the calendar of the first French republic November reappeared partly as Brumaire and partly as Frimaire.~~

~~NOVERRE, JEAN Grorces (1727-1810), an artist to whom the action and music of the modern ballet may almost be said to owe their existence, was born in Paris 29th April 1727. He first performed at Fontainebleau in 1743, and in 1747 composed his first ballet for the Opéra Comique. In 1755 he was invited by Garrick to London, where he remained two years. Between 1758 and 1760 he produced several ballets at Lyons, and pub- lished his Lettres sur la Danse et les Ballets. He was next engaged by the duke of Wiirtemberg, and afterwards by the empress Maria Theresa, for whom he wrote many celebrated works at Vienna. In 1775 he was appointed Maitre des Ballets at the Académie ; this post he retained until the Revolution reduced him to poverty, which he en- dured with dignity until his death, at St Germain, in 1810.~~

~~Noverre's life-work consisted in the reduction of the ballet to an artistic and consistent form by aid of intelligible pantomime, appropriate action, correct costume, and, above all, music well adapted to the sentiment and situations of the drama ; and it is to his efforts in these several directions that the~~

~~modern ballet owes the high esteem in which it has so long been held in Paris and elsewhere.~~

~~NOVGOROD, a government of north-western Russia, bounded on the W. and N. by St Petersburg and Olonetz, on the 8.E. by Vologda, Yaroslavl, and Tver, and on the S.W. by Pskov, has an extreme length from south-west to north-east of 400 miles, and an area of 47,240 square miles. Its southern part is occupied by the Valdai or Alaun plateau, which has the highest elevations of middle Russia (800 to 1000 feet), and contains the sources of all the great rivers of the country. It is deeply furrowed by valleys with abrupt slopes, which give it the aspect of a highland region, and descends rapidly towards the valley of Lake Ilmen in the west, which is only 107 feet above the sea-level. The north-eastern part of the government belongs to the lake district of north-western Russia. This tract, gently sloping towards Lakes Ladoga and Onega in the north, is covered with innumerable sheets of water, of which Byelo-ozero (White Lake) and Vozhe are the largest, while more than 3000 smaller ones are figured on the maps. Immense marshes, relics of former lakes, covered with thin forests of birch and elm, occupy the flat depressions and cover more than one-sixth of the government; several of them have an area of from 300 to 450 square miles. In summer they are quite impassable; they admit of being crossed only when frozen. Six centuries ago they were even less accessible, and were perhaps the best protection Novgorod possessed against its enemies ; but the slow upheaval of north-western Russia, going on at a rate of three or more feet per century, powerfully contri- buted towards the drainage of the country, as the rivers more deeply excavated their gently-sloping beds. Of recent years artificial drainage has been carried out on a large scale. The forests still occupy more than two-thirds of the government.~~

~~Geologically, Novgorod exhibits in the west vast beds of Devonian limestones and sandstones; these are else- where overlaid with Carboniferous limestone, dolomite, sandstones, and marls. The Devonian gives rise to salt- springs, especially at Staraya Russa, and contains iron-ores, while the later formation has coal strata of inferior quality. The whole is covered with a thick sheet of boulder-clay, very often arranged in ridges or asar, the bottom moraine of the north European ice-sheet of the Glacial period. Numerous remains of the neolithic stone age are found, especially~~

around the deposits of extinct lakes. The numerous rivers of Novgorod are distributed between the Arctic Ocean, Baltic Sea, and Caspian Sea basins; the last

NOV 7G OF ROD

two basins are further connected by the Mariinsk, Tikhvin, and Vyshnii-Volocliok canals, while the Alexander-von- Wiirtemberg canal connects the tributaries of the White Sea with those of the Baltic. The chief river is the Volkhoff, which flows from Lake Ilmen into Lake Ladoga. Other navigable rivers are the Syas, also flowing into Lake Ladoga, and the Sheksna and the Mologa, tributaries of the Volga. A brisk traffic is steadily carried by the Nov- gorod rivers, as all boats from-the Volga to St Petersburg pass through this government, while the goods embarked within the province itself amount to more than 7,000,000 ewts., worth from 6,000,000 to 7,000,000 roubles.

The climate is very harsh, the yearly average temperature at Novgorod being only 38°°8 Fahr. (14°°5 in January, 62°°5 in July). The severe climate, the marshy or stony soil, and the want of graz- ing-grounds render agriculture unprotitable ; though it is carried on everywhere, only rye, oats, barley, and somc tobacco arc raised, and this to so small an amount that nearly 1,000,000 quarters of grain have to be imported every year. Neither gardening nor the raising of cattle is very flourishing ; in 1877 there were only 212,000 horses, 364,000 cattle, and 253,000 sheep. A number of petty trades are successfully carried on in the villages, all kinds of wooden wares being made and exported ; the preparation of timber, pitch, tar, and charcoal is general, and shipbuilding is widely diffused in several districts. The fisheries on the great lakes are valued at 170,000 roubles annually, and, owing to the proximity of the capital, hunting is still profitable. But the greater number of the inhabitants are dependent on the river-boat traffic ; and nearly one- fourth of the able-bodied male population are driven in search of work to other parts of Russia. The Novgorod carpenters and masons still maintain their old-established renown. The industrial estab- lishments are few ; in 1879 they numbered 245 (steam flour-mills, distilleries, paper-mills, glass-works, and saw-mills), employing about 4500 hands, and turned out an aggregate production worth 6,313,000 roubles.

~~Trade, which is animated in several towns and at several points of the river-system, is chiefly in grain and timber, and in manufactures and grocery wares from St Petershurg. The fairs are numerous, and several of them (Kirilovsk monastery, Staraya Russa, and Tcherepovets) show considerable returns. The inhabitants are almost exclusively Great Russians, but they are distinguished by some historians from the Great Russians of the basin of the Oka, as showing some remote affinities with the Little Russians. They be-long mostly to the Greek Church, but there are many Noncon- formists. Lutherans and Catholics number respectively 4000 and 2000. Novgorod, apart from the usual schools and gymnasiums, is better provided with educational institutions than many other governments of Russia, and, through the successful efforts of its zemstvo, primary education is more widely diffused in the villages. The government is but thinly inhabited, the population (1,011,500 in 1870) being only 1,090,000 in 1884. The chief towns. of the eleven districts are :—Novgorod, Borovichi (10,000 inhabitants), Byelozersk (6000), Tcherepovets (3600), Demiansk (1500), Kiriloff (3200), Krestsy (3200), Staraya Russa (6000), Ustyuzhna (7000), and Valdai (3800).~~

~~NOVGOROD, capital of the above government, is situ- ated 119 miles to the south of St Petersburg, on the low flat banks of the Volkhoff, some two miles below the point where it leaves Lake Ilmen. The present town is but a poor survival of the wealthy city of medieval times. It consists of a kremlin (old fortress) and of the city, which stands on both banks of the river, here connected by a hand- some bridge. The kremlin was much enlarged in 1044, and again in 1116. Its stone walls, originally palisades, were begun in 1302, and much extended and embellished in 1490. It is very spacious, and formerly a great number of churches and shops with wide squares stood within the enclosure. Its valuable historical monuments include the cathedral of St Sophia, begun in 1045 by an architect from Constantinople to take the place of the original wooden structure (989), destroyed by fire in that year. Some changes were made in the walls in 1688 and 1692, and the windows were enlarged, but otherwise (notwithstanding several fires) the building remains unaltered. It contains many highly-prized relics. Another ancient building in the kremlin is Yaroslaff's Tower, in the square where the Novgorod wyetche (common council) met, and which still bears the name~~

of “the court of Yaroslaff”; the tower was the gridnitsa or chancellery of the secretaries of the wyetche.

607

Several other remarkable monuments of Russian architect- ure still exist at Novgorcd, such as the church of St Nicholas, erected in 1135, and churches of the 14th and 15th centuries. Within the town itself there are four monasteries and couvents; and the large number in the immediate neighbourhood shows the great extension the city formerly had. A monument to commemorate the thousandth anniversary of the foundation of the Russian state (the calling in of the Varangians by Novgorod in 862) was erected in 1864. It consists of a large globe on a massive pedestal, surrounded by numerous statues com- memorating the leading events of Russian history. Another monument commemorates the campaign of 1812. On the whole, apart from its old churches and some portions of its walls, Novgorod has nothing to recall the leading part it has played in the history of Russia. Since the diversion from it of the great commercial highways of north-western Russia its commercial influence has been very limited. Its merchants still send tiniber, grain, and hay to St Peters- burg; but the total production of its manufacturing estab- lishments—paper-mills, flour-mills, saw-mills, glass-works, brick-works, match-works, and distilleries—does not reach 1,000,000 roubles. A trunk railway, 45 miles long, con- nects the city with Tchudovo on the Moscow and St Petersburg Railway. The population is 17,500.

The date at which the Slavonians on their northward advance first erected forts on the Volkhoff (where it leaves Lake Ilmen and where it flows into Lake Ladoga) is unknown. That situated ona low terrace close by Lake Ilmen was soon abandoned, and Novgorod or “ New-town ” arose on another which extended a mile lower on both banks of theriver. The older fort (Gorodische) still existed in the 13th century. It is certain that, even in the 9th century, the new city on the Volkhoff, whilst maintaining close relations with Kieff, already exercised a kind of supremacy over the other towns of the lake region, when its inhabitants in 862 invited the Varan- gians to the defence of the Russian towns of the north. Down to the end of the 10th century Novgorod was in some sort dependent on Kieff; yet it must

~~have maintained its internal autonomy, for in 997 its inhabitants obtained from their own Prince Yaroslaff a charter which granted them self-government, a jurisdiction of their own, and the rule of their proper vyetche. For five centuries this charter continued to be regarded as the chief written testimony of the independence of Novgorod, and was ever resorted to in the struggles with the princes. From the end of the 10th century the princes of Novgorod, chosen either from the sons of the great princes of Kieff (until 1136) or from some other branch of the family of Rurik, were always elected by the vyetche, and swore to maintain the free institutions of the town; but they were only its military defenders. Their delegates were merely assessors in the courts which levied the fixed taxes meant to defray the maintenance of the military force raised by the prince. The vyetche expelled the princes as soon as they provoked discontent. Their election was often a subject of dispute between the wealthier merchants and landowners and the poorer classes ; and Novgorod, which was dependent for its corn supply upon the land of Suzdal, was sometimes compelled to accept a prince from the Suzdal branch instead of from that of Kieff, which was more popular among the poorer classes. After 1270 the city often refused to have princes at all, and the elected mayor (posadnik) was the representative of the executive in its limited attributes. Novgorod in its transactions with other cities took the name of "Sovereign Great Novgorod" (Gospodin Velikii Novgorod). The Suprenie power and the supreme jurisdiction were in the hands of the vyetche, whose resolutions were carefully inscribed by its secre- taries (diaki). The city, which had a population of more than 80,000, was divided into sections (kontsy), radiating from its centre, and corresponding to some extent to the prevailing occupations of the inhabitants ; each constituted a distinct commune which enjoyed a large share of independence. The kontsy were subdivided into streets (wlitsy), which also corresponded to the prevailing occupa- tions of their inhabitants (artisans or merchants), and each of which was quite independent with regard to its own affairs, such as the election of priests, the maintenance of order, jurisdiction in inferior matters, trade, food supply, &c.~~

~~Trade was carried on by corporations which embodied, not only the merchants proper or gost, but also the poorer classes ; in fact, it was the chief source of income, and, owing to the existence of numerous trading~~

corporations, everybody was enabled to participate in itmore or less. Novgorod, owing to its very advantagcous posi- tion, made great advances in trade. By the Volkhoff and the Neva it had direct communication with the Hanseatic and Scandinavian cities. The Dnieper brought it into connexion with the Bosphorus,

and it was intermediary in the trade of Constantinople with northern Europe. The rich gifts offered by the corporations to the churches of Novgorod are a present testimony of the aneient wealth of the city.

The Novgorod ukshuyniki (who often associated robbery with trade) at an early date penetrated to the shores of the White Sea, hunted on Novaya Zemlya in the 11th century, colonized the basins of the northern Dwina, deseended the Volga, and, as early as the 14th eentury, extended their dominions over the "Ugra," beyond the Ural, into Siberia. The Zavolotchie, or the basin of the northern Dwina, was early colonized, and forts were erected to maintain the dominions, while two great colonies, Vyatka and Vologda, organized on the same republican principles as the metropolis, favoured the further colouization of north-eastern Russia.

At the same tine a number of flourishing minor towns (prigorody), such as Novyi Torg (Torzhok), Novaya Ladoga, Pskov, and many others, arose in the lake region. Pskov soon became quite inde- pendent of the metropolis, and had a history of its own ; the others enjoyed a large measure of independence, still figuring, however, as subordinate towns in all those circumstances which implied a com- mon action of the whole region. Several contemporary testimonies state the population of Novgorod in the 14th century to have reached 400,000, and add that the pestilences of 1467, 1508, and 1533 carried off no fewer than 134,000 persons. 'These figures, however, seem to relate rather to the Ilmen region; but it may be safely admitted that, before the visitations referred to, the city, with the suburbs, had a population of nearly 100,000.

Throughout its history Novgorod has had to sustain many con-

tests. Its struggle against the Suzdal region began as early as the 12th century. In the following century it had to contend with the Swedes and the Germans, who were animated not only by the desire of territorial extension throughout the lake region but also by the spirit of religious proselytism. The advances of both were checked by the battles at Ladoga and Pskov in 1240 and 1242. Protected as it was by its marshes, Novgorod escaped the Mongol invasion, and was able to repel the attacks of the princes of Moscow by whom the Mongols were supported ; but it was compelled to pay a tribute, which soon became a tribute to Moscow (end of the 14th century). It also successfully resisted the attacks of Tver, and aided Moscow in its struggle against this powerful neighbour, but it soon itself experienced the power of the growing Moscow state. The first serious invasion of its independence, in 1332, was turned back only with the aid of the Lithuanians. Buta severe blow was inflicted In 1456 by the Great Prince of Moscow, Vasilii Temnyi, who, taking advantage of the internal troubles of the city, and finding supporters among the Novgorod boyars, succeeded in im- peng a heavy tribute. Ivan III. took possession of the Zavo- otchie colonies and the Perm region, and began two bloody wars, during which Novgorod fought for its liberty under the leadership of Martha Posadnitsa. In 1475 Ivan III. entered Novgorod, abol- ished its charters, and carried away 1000 of the wealthier families, substituting for them families from Moscow ; the old free city now recognized his sovereignty. A century later Ivan IV. (the Terrible) abolished the last vestige of the independence of the city. Hav- ing learned of the existence of a party favourable to Lithuania, he took the field in 1570, and entered Novgorod (much weakened by the recent pestilences) without opposition. His followers seized nearly all the heads of monasteries and beat them to death with sticks. Ata given signal a general pillage began: the shops were destroyed, the mcrehandize thrown out, the wealthier of the mer- chants and clergy killed and thrown into the Volkhoff, whilst other plundering parties burned and pillaged all stores in the villages. No less than 15,000 men, women, and children were kiHed at Novgorod alone (60,000 according to some authorities). A. famine ensued, and the district of Novgorod fell into utter destitution. Thousands of families were transported to Moscow, Nijni-Novgorod, and other towns of the principality

of Moscow. In the beginning of the 17th century Novgorod was taken and held for seven years by the Swedes; and in the 18th century the founda- tion of St Petersburg ultimately destroyed its trade. Its position, however, on the water highway from the Volga to St Petersburg, and on the trunk road from Moscow to the eapital, still gave it some commercial importance ; but even this was brought to an end by the opening of the Vishera canal and the Nicholas Railway, which passes 45 miles to the east of Novgorod. (PAs)

NOVI, or (to distinguish it from Novi di Modena, &c.) Novi Licurg, a city of Italy, in the province of Alessan- dria (Piedmont), at the foot of the Apennines and on the edge of a fertile plain, about 20 miles south of the river Po. It is of importance mainly as the meeting-place of the railways from Alessandria, Genoa, and Piacenza, and is one of the leading seats of the silk industry in Italy. The ruins of its ancient castle, its collegiate church, the Piazza del Duomo with its central marble fountain, and some of the picturesque old palaces of the Genoese nobility are

the chief objects of interest, though the city also possesses its theatres, public library, antiquarian museum, literary academy, &c.

The population of the city was 9917 in 1881; that of the commune 11,445 in 1861, and 13,783 in 1881.

Novi begins to appear as Corte Nova in the 10th century, and in the Middle Ages it was a frequent object of dispute between Tortona, Milan, Pavia, and Genoa. In 1480 Nicolao Ghirardengo, a native of the town, set up his printing-press within its walls. In August 1799 was fought the great battle of Novi, in which the French under Joubert were defeated by the Russians under Suwaroff, and in November of the same year there was a lesser conflict, in which the French proved victorious over the Austrians.

NOVIBAZAR, NovipazaR, or YENIPAZAR (i.e, New Market), on the Rashka, a tributary of the Ibar and subtributary of the Danube, is the chief town of a sanjak in the Turkish vilayet of Bosnia (formerly of Kossovo), which was occupied by Austria-Hungary in 1879 in accordance with the terms of the treaty of Berlin. Owing to the configuration of the country it is

~~a point of great strategical importance, commanding the lines of communi-cation between Bosnia and Rumelia, and between Servia and Montenegro. The site was formerly occupied by the old Servian town of Rassia mentioned by Byzantine writers in the 9th century. In the neighbourhood is the old church of St Peter and St Paul, the metropolitan church of the bishopric of Rassia, in which Stephen Nemanya passed from the Roman to the Greek Church in 1143. According to Dr Blau, the sanjak hada male population of 83,983 in 1871, that of the town is estimated at from 9000 to 12,000.~~

~~NOVO-BAYAZET, or Novum Bayazer, a town of trans-Caucasian Russia, at the head of a district (area 2390 square miles, population 67,800) in the Erivan government, 60 miles east-north-east of Erivan, and about 4 east of Goktchi Lake, lies 5870 feet above the sea on the rocky ravine of the Kavar-tchai. An Armenian village which had stood here from an carly date was destroyed by Nadir Shah of Persia in 1736, and it was not till the Turkish war of 1828-29 that the site was again occupied by Armenian refugees from the Turkish town of Bayazet or Bayazid. The name Novuii Bayazet was adopted at the organization of the Erivan government in 1850. From 4518 in 1865 the population had increased by 1873 to 5363, still mainly Armenians. There are seventeen villages in the district, each with more than 1000 inhabitants.~~

~~NOVOGEORGIEVSK, a town, and a fortress of Russia. (1) The former, usually known under the name of Kriloff, in the government of Kherson, district of Alexandriya, stands at the junction of the Tyasmin with the Dnieper, 9 miles to the north-west of the Krementchug railway station. Its fort was erected by the Poles in 1615 to protect the passage across the Dnieper, and to guard the steppe on the left bank of the river. The 10,500 inhabit- ants of Kriloff now carry on a lively trade in timber, grain, and cattle, and have a few flour-mills and candle- works. (2) NovocrorcizevsK or Moptin is a first-class fortress of Russia in Poland, at the junction of the Nareff with the Vistula, 19 miles to the north-west of Warsaw. It constitutes the right flank of the line of defence of the Vistula against attack from the west, the centre of this line being at Warsaw, and the left flank at Ivangorod ; 12,000 men are needed for its defence, and the fortifica- tions can shelter~~

~~from 48,000 to 50,000 men. The small town of Novoye Myesto, opposite the fortress, has 5500 inhabitants.~~

~~NOVOMOSKOVSK, a district town of Russia, in the government of Ekaterinoslaff, 19 miles to the north-east of the capital of the province. Including several villages which have been incorporated with it, it extends for nearly 7 miles along the right bank of the Samara, a tributary~~

~~of the Dnieper. In the 17th century the site was occupied by several villages of the Zaporog Cossacks, which were known under the name of Samartchik, and derived their wealth from valuable fisheries. In 1687 Prince Golitzyn founded here the Ust-Samara fort, which was destroyed after the treaty of the Pruth ; it was rebuilt again in 1736, and the settlement of Novoselitsy established, which re- ceived a municipal constitution about the end of the last century. The very fertile surrounding country was rapidly colonized, and now has several villages each of more than 5000 and one above 10,000 inhabitants. The population of Novomoskovsk, which numbers 11,000, is chiefly engaged in agricultural pursuits. Some are employed in tanneries, and there is also some trade in horses, cattle, tallow, skins, tar, and pitch. As many as 150,000 head of cattle change hands at the yearly fair. In the immediate neigh- bourhood is the Samarsko-Nikolaevskii monastery, which is visited by many pilgrims.~~

~~NOVOTCHERKASSK, capital of the province of the Don Cossacks, is situated 737 miles south-south-east from Moscow, and 40 miles from the sea of Azoff. It was founded in 1805, when the inhabitants of the Tcherkassk stanitsa (now Old Tcherkassk) were compelled to leave their abodes on the banks of the Don on account of the frequent in- undations. They were settled on a hill, 300 feet above the low plain, at the junction of the Don with the Aksai, and it was the intention of the authorities to create there, around the chief town of the Don Cossacks, a large agri- cultural colony ; but the want of drinking water proved a great obstacle, and it was decided to transfer Novotcher- kassk to another site, when Nicholas I. after a visit in 1837, ordered that it should remain where it was. In 1863 a water-supply was obtained by the construction of an aqueduct 18 miles long, with a steam-engine pumping 325,000 gallons per day. In the following year the~~

town was brought into railway communication with Voronesh and Rostoff, from which last it is 32 miles distant. It is finely situated, and an extensive view over the low prairies of the Don is obtained from the top of the hill. The town has a public garden, a theatre, a clubhouse, and is adorned by the palace and gardens of the ataman of the Cossacks, and by a monument to Platoff. The educational institutions include a gymnasium for boys, and another for girls, besides several lower schools. Since the introduction of a water-supply and the construction of a branch rail- way line to the Grushevskiya coal-mines, Novotcherkassk has been developing rapidly ; wide suburbs extend to the south-west, and the right bank of the Aksai is dotted with the villas of the Cossack officials. Manufactures, how- ever, make but slow progress ; there are only a few candle- works, brick-works, distilleries, tobacco-works, and manu- factories of champagne, with an aggregate production in 1879 of 240,000 roubles (out of a total for all the province of 1,909,000 roubles). An active trade is carried on in corn, wine, and timber (exports), and manufactures and grocery wares (imports). There are two fairs of some local importance. The population of the town is 34,000.

NOWGONG or Ndocdon, a district in the chief-com- missionership of Assam, India, lying between 25° 45’ and 26° 40’ N. lat. and 92° and 93° 50‘ E. long., is bounded on the N. by the Brahmaputra, separating it from Darrang, KE. and S. by Stbsdgar and the Nagdé and Khasi Hills. The district, which has an area of 3417 square miles, con- sists of a wide plain much overgrown with jungle and cane- brakes, intersected by numerous offshoots and tributaries of the Brahmaputra, and dotted with shallow marshes. It is estimated that about a hundred minor streams become navigable in the rainy season. The Mikir Hills cover an area of about 65 miles by 35 in the south of the district ; the highest peak is about 3500 feet. The slopes are very

steep, and are covered with dense forest.

The Kamakhyaé, Hills area small range near the bank of the Brahmaputra,

~~about 1500 feet high. On the summit of the highest peak is a celebrated temple of Kamakhyd, the local goddess of~~

~~love, where three annual festivals are held, attended by crowds of pilgrims from all parts of the country. Only~~

~~about one-ninth of the area of the district has been as yet brought under cultivation. abound.~~

~~Wild beasts of all kinds~~

~~The population in 1881 was 310,579, of whom about 12,000 were~~

~~Mohammedans and the rest mainly aborigines or semi-Hinduized aborigines and Hindus in about equal proportions.~~

~~The great bulk of the aborigines consists of the cognate tribes of Mikirs, Lalangs,~~

~~and Cacharis. The population of the town of N owgong was only~~

~~4200 in 1881.~~

~~The staple crop is rice. Tea cultivation and manufacture are carried on by means of European capital and under European supervision. The principal means of communication are afforded by the rivers. The chief road, that from N. owgong town to Gauhati in Kamrip, runs for 44 miles through the district, but is un- bridged. Re climate of Nowgong is extremely unhealthy.~~

~~NOY, Wiutr1AM (1577-1634), attorney-general, was born, it is believed, on the family estate of Pendrea in Bur- yan, Cornwall, in 1577, his father belonging to a family whose pedigree is included in the visitation of Cornwall in 1620. He matriculated at Exeter College, Oxford, 27th April 1593, and looked back upon his academical life with such affection that, twenty years later, when the privileges of that institution were invaded by Lord Petre, he pleaded its cause gratuitously and successfully. His legal career began at Lincoln's Inn, and throughout life he was a diligent student of the grounds and precedents on which English law is based. From 1603~~

~~until his death he was elected, with one exception, to each parliament, sitting invariably for a constituency of his native county. or several years his sympathies were in antagonism to the wishes of the court, so that his historical knowledge was freely laid at the service of the opposition. Every commission that was appointed numbered Noy among its members, and even those who were opposed to him in politics acknowledged his learning. A few years before his death he was drawn over to the side of the court, and in October 1631 he was created attorney-general, but was never knighted. It was through his advice that the impost of ship-money was levied, and popular feeling vented its rage against him for its disastrous revival. Noy had long been a martyr to disease of the stone, and his death occurred, under circum- stances of great agony, 9th August 1634; two days later he was buried at New Brentford church. Though he was of a reserved, almost morose disposition, and after his change of principles had little regard for the feelings of his old friends, many acts of kindness which he showed can be gleaned from the literature of his time. His prin- cipal works, On the grounds and maxims of the laws of this kingdom (1641) and The compleat lawyer (1661), went through many editions. Further particulars concerning him and his children may be found collected in Davies Gulbert's Cornavall, iii. 143-60, and in the Bibliotheca Cor- nubrensis, vols. i. and iii.~~

~~NOYON, a city of France, department of Oise, 67 miles north-north-east of Paris by the railway to Brussels, is built at the foot and on the slopes of a hill, and traversed by a small stream, the Verse, which joins the Oise a mile farther down. The old cathedral of Notre Dame, con- structed during the latter half of the 12th century, is a fine example of the mixture of Romanesque and Gothic architecture. In plan it is a Latin cross, with a total length from east to west of 343 feet, and from north to south of 66. The west front has a porch, added in the 14th century, and two unfinished towers, their upper por- tions dating from the 13th century ; its decorations have been greatly mutilated. The nave (167 feet long and 66~~

~~See Plate~~

broad) consists of eleven bays, including those of the west front, which, in the interior, forms a kind of transept. In the windows of the aisles, the arches of the triforium, and the windows of the clerestory the round type is main- tained; but double Pointed arches appear in the lower gallery ; and the vaults of the roof, originally six-ribbed, were rebuilt after the fire of 1293 in the prevailing Poimted style. Side chapels were added in the north aisle in the 14th century and in the south aisle in the 15th and the 16th, one of the latter (15th) is especially rich in decora- tions. The flying buttresses of the building are at present (1884) being restored in the style of the 12th century. From the north-west corner of the nave runs the western gallery of a fine cloister, erected in 1230 ; and next to the cloister is the chapter-house of the same date, with its entrance adorned with statues of the bishops and other sculpture. The bishops' tombs within the cathedral were destroyed during the Revolution. The chapel of the bishops' palace is an example of the Early Pointed style ; the second bishops' palace is a brick and stone structure in the Renaissance style; the canons' library was built of wood in the 15th century; and the town-house (Gothic and Renaissance) dates from 1485-1523, Among the town manuscripts is the Red Book or communal charter of Noyon. Remains of the Roman walls may be traced in the founda- tions of various houses. Noyon has a good trade, and contains large sugar-refineries, chemical-works, tanneries, and cotton-spinning mills. The population of the com- mune and that of the city were respectively 6268 and 5236 in 1872, and 6252 and 5780 in 1881.

Noyon, the ancient Noviomagus Veromanduorum, was Christian- ized by St Quentin at the close of the 3d century ; and in 531 St Medard, bishop of the district of Vermandois, transferred his see thither from St Quentin. The episcopate of St Eligius (640-648), the burial of Chilperic II., the coronation of Pippin the Short in 752, and on the same occasion the coronation of his infant son Carloman with the title of king of Noyon, the coronation of Charlemagne in 771, the plunder of the town by the Normans in 859 and 880, the ex- pulsion of the castellan by the inhabitants, and in 997 the recog- nition of the overlordship of the count of Flanders are the chief points in the history of Noyon down to the 10th century. In the {1th the city, passing under the French crown, became one of the ceclesiastical peerages of the kingdom ; and at the beginning of the 12th century it easily obtained a communal charter through the favour of its bishops. The extent of the

bishopric was considerably curtailed in 1135 by the breaking off of the diocese of Tournay. Noyon was ravaged by the English and the Burgundians during the Hundred Years' War. In 1516 truce was signed at Noyon by Francis I. and Charles V. The city was captured by the Spaniards in 1552, and afterwards by the Leaguers, who were expelled in 1594 by Henry IV. It lost its bishopric in 1791, and is at present only the chief town ofa canton in the arrondissement of Compiégne. Calvin was born at Noyon in 1509.

See Le Vasseur, Annales de Pfiglise Cathédrale de Noyon, 1633; Lafons de Melicocq, Rech. hist. sur Noyon, 1889; Barthélemy, Monogr. de lV Eglise Notre

Dame de Noyon; Vitet, Mongr. de UV Eglise de N. D. de Noyon, 1845; and Moet de la Forte Maison, Antiquités de Noyon (1845).

NUBIA, a country of north-east Africa, bounded on

XV. (andthe N. by Egypt, on the 8. by Abyssinia, Senaar, and

Plate II.

vol, i.)

' Kordofan, and on the E. and W. by the Red Sea and the Libyan Desert respectively. It thus comprises the whole of the Nile valley, from Assuan (Oswan, Syene) near the first cataract southwards to Khartum (Khartoum) at the confluence of the White and the Blue Niles, stretching in this direction for about 560 miles between 16° and 24° N. lat., and for nearly the same distance east and west between 31° and 39° E. long. But Nubia has at no time formed a strictly political, ethnical, or even administrative expression. Unless it can be identified with the Nob or Nub— that is, "Gold"— region of the hieroglyphic records, the term was unknown to the ancients, by whom everything south of Egypt was vaguely called Ethiopia, the land of the dark races. It is first associated historically, not with any definite geographical region, but with the Nobate, a negro people removed by Diocletian from the western oasis to the Nile valley above Egypt (Dodecaschœnus), whence

the turbulent Blemmyes had recently been driven east- wards. From Nuba, the Arabic form of the name of this people, comes the modern Nubia, a term about the precise meaning of which no two writers are of accord. Locally it is restricted to a comparatively small district, the Wady al-Nuba, reaching from Sebu‘ along the Nile southwards to the north frontier of Dongola. Officially it finds no recognition as an administrative division of the khedive’s possessions, the region commonly understood by Nubia, as above roughly defined, being completely absorbed for administrative purposes, partly in the government of Upper Egypt, but mainly in that of Egyptian or Eastern Sudan (Soudan).! Within these two governments it com- prises the whole of the four mudirfehs (provinces) of Berber, Také, Dongola (Donkola), and Sudkin (more correctly Sawdkin), besides parts of Massowah, Kharttim, and Esneh (Upper Egypt), with a total area of about 345,000 square miles, and a population vaguely estimated (1878, 1882) at from 1,000,000 to 1,500,000.

But, apart from political and ethnical considerations, Nubia is physically a sufficiently intelligible expression. Merging westwards in the sands of the Libyan desert, and limited eastwards by the Red Sea, it comprises the whole of the rugged and mainly arid steppes and plateaus through which the united White and Blue Niles, after their junction at Khartim, force their way down to Upper Egypt. In this section, which may be regarded as the upper course of the Nile proper, there occurs a continuous series of slight falls and rapids, including all the historical “ six cataracts,” beginning a few miles below Khartum (the sixth at J. Garri), and terminating at Phile, close to the Egyptian frontier. Between these extreme points the

total fall in a distance of 1150 miles is about 760 feet

(from 1160 feet above sea-level at Khartim to 400 at Phils), Here the river describes two great bends, the

first, from Kharttim to Merawi (Napata) below the fourth

cataract, comprising the Bahivida desert on the west, the second, thence to Egypt, comprising the Nubian desert on the east,—the two roughly

corresponding to the conven- tional divisions of Upper and Lower Nubia respectively. Throughout the whole of this section the Nile receives no affluents on its left bank, and on its right one only, the Atbara, which joins it from Abyssinia just above Al- Meshérif (Berber). Hence all Nubia west of the Nile, and most of the region east of the Nile—that is, from the Atbara confluence to Egypt—are mainly arid wastes, rocky in the east, sandy in the west, relieved on both sides by some grassy steppe lands, and by a few small oases. Of the Nubian, which is sometimes called the Korosko, desert, and the northern section of which is named from its nomad Bish4ri inhabitants, the prevailing features are bare or scrubby sandstone plains broken by moderately high rugged granite hills and ranges, such as the J. Jerfa, J. Elbe', J. Kawewad, and J. Shikr, and intersected in many places by numerous small "khérs" or wadies running in various directions across the plateau. The wells and oases occur- ring along these depressions afford the only means of com- munication across this region, as well as in the more sandy Bahitda wilderness on the opposite side of the Nile. Thus are formed all the great caravan routes, of which the most important are—(1) from Derr and Korosko across the Ababdeh country by the Hurat wells southwards to Abu Hamid, 230 miles, shorter by about one-third than the long and difficult water journey between these two points ; (2) from Ambukél to Khartim, which describes an are of 200 miles to the southern curve enclosing the Bahiida desert; (3) from Berber eastwards to the Red Sea at Sudkin, 280 miles, difficult, with little fodder and rare

Uo

1 See Behm in Bevilkerung der Erde for July 1882.

Nee ib A

wells, but of vital strategic and commercial importance as affording the most direct access from the coast to the in- terior, and the shortest highway from the Nile to Suakin, the only outport of Nubia; (4) a better but much longer route from Tokar below Sudkin by the Khér Barka south- wards to Kassala on the Mareb, a tributary of the Atbara, and thence through the Shukurieh country westwards to Khartim. This route, which has been recently explored by G. Casati,! traverses the province of Taka, the most fertile and productive region in the whole of Nubia. Taka, being well

~~watered by the Atbara, Mareb, and other streams from Abyssinia, is a true African tropical land, covered in some places with dense forest, in others with extensive pastures and arable tracts. Hence this route has lately been proposed in preference to that from Sudkin to Berber for the projected line of railway from the coast to the interior.~~

~~Besides Téké the only other fertile and permanently inhabitable region is the valley of the Nile itself. But this valley, expanding above Kharttim into open alluvial plains, is in Nubia proper confined mainly to very narrow limits, with a mean breadth of scarcely more than half a mile (Burckhardt), The river is here almost everywhere hemmed in between granite and sandstone hills, which approach at some points to the very banks, at others run transversely to it, thus giving rise to the continuous wind- ings and rapids which characterize its course throughout Nubia. Nor does the Nile now flood its banks to the same extent as formerly in this region, as appears from the "nilometer" discovered by Lepsius. But it is a mistake to suppose, as is often stated, that no rising takes place.~~

~~In Také much humus and alluvial soil overlie the older crystalline beds and later sedimentary rocks. Elsewhere throughout Nubia these rocks are now mostly denuded, and consist mainly of new sandstones, with large masses of granite, porphyry, and trachyte cropping out in many places. The extensive syenite range on the Egyptian frontier is pierced for 80 miles by the Nile, and runs thence interspersed with sandstones eastwards to the Red Sea, where it forms the bold headland of Ras Bends, pro- jecting round the Gulf of Berenice. Westwards the same system develops the J. Kukur, beyond which it extends to about 25° E. long. in the direction of the Libyan desert. Higher up, at the second or "Great" cataract of Wady Halfa, the sandstone is broken through by huge masses of granite and diorite rising 500 feet above the river-bed. Still farther south sandstones also prevail throughout Dongola, where the Nile presents the aspect of a mountain stream rushing for 250 miles over rapids. At Batn-al- Hajar the granite hills attain an altitude of 2000 feet above the river, and in this district the sandstone mostly disappears under the eruptive basalts, trachytes, diorites, phonoliths, and large beds of shale.~~

None of the porphyries appear to be metalliferous, and the only gold mines hitherto discovered are those in the east about Mount Elbe‘, which were worked by the ancient Egyptians, and even during medieval times, but which are now abandoned, although apparently not yet quite exhausted (Linant de Bellefonds). This auriferous district of Nob or Nub, which according to some authorities has given its name to the whole country, lies close to the Red Sea in 22° N., nearly opposite Jidda. The only other minerals of economic importance are salt and alum, occur- ring at various points on the plateaus. The granites and syenites afford magnificent building materials, largely utilized by the ancient Egyptians.

The greater part of the land lies almost within the rain- less zone, for the tropical rains are now arrested about the

1 Esploratore for August 1883, and Boll. Ital. Geogr. Soc., July 1883, p. 538.

latitude of Khartim (Petherick), beyond which point very little moisture is precipitated in any part of the Nile basin. Hence the Nubian climate, while intensely hot (108° to 114° Fahr. in the shade in May on the eastern plateau) is excessively dry and not unhealthy. The plague, formerly endemic in Egypt, never originates in Nubia 3 nor does the cholera penetrate up the Nile valley beyond Wady Halfé. North of this point, however, the riverain parts are often rendered dangerous, especially to strangers, by the exhalations from the stagnant pools left after the subsi- dence of the Nile waters. It is noteworthy that here the right bank being periodically flooded is much more fertile than the left, although all the finest ruins lie on the left side. The contrast is probably due to the Libyan sands continually moving eastward and encroaching on the narrow arable zone along the great artery.

Except in Taka, the natural flora is very poor, all the arable dis- tricts being required for the cultivation of useful plants. Amongst these the most important are the dém palm, durra (Sorghum vulgare), of which several varietics have the stalk from 7 to 10 feet high, maize, dokhn (panicum), barley, lentils, tobacco, beans, and melons. Cotton and the vine flourish in several places, and the dates of Ibrym and Sokkot are much prized. The

~~banks of the Nile are often fringed with the mimosa ; senna abounds in moist, the tama- rind in sandy places ; several varieties of gum trees occur in the south, and symka is common, its seed yielding oil, its leaves good camel fodder.~~

~~Wild animals are rare except in the Takd forests, where the elephant, lion, panther, rhinoceros, giraffe, hyena, and wild boar are met with. The crocodile and hippopotamus infest all the streams : many species of large and small snakes occur, but few are poisonous ; the stork, wild goose, partridge, ibis, are amongst the chief repre- sentatives of the local avifauna. There is a good breed of horses ; the camel and ass are used as mounts, the ox and buffalo (not numerous) as pack animals and in irrigation, of which there are two methods (as in Egypt),—the sdkiya, worked by oxen and liable to a tax of £3, and the shaduf, a hand lever and bucket, rated at 380s. (Petherick).~~

~~The population being almost exclusively agricultural and pastoral, the Rdgetries are unimportant, and limited mainly to coarse cottons and woollens, pottery, and household utensils made of the date tree. The exports also are confined to senna, some grain, leeches, musk, and honey. But although the local traffic is small there is a very large transit trade, carried on chiefly by caravans between Central Africa and Egypt. In this way considerable quantities of ivory, gold dust, ostrich feathers, and slaves have from the remotest times been brought down from the interior through Nubia to the seaports on the Mediterranean and the Red Sea. Of late years the slave trade had been almost entirely suppressed.~~

~~Few ethnological questions are beset with greater difficulties than those connected with the origin and affinities of the Nubian race ; and, although much light has recently been thrown on the subject by Lepsius in the learned introduction to his Nubische Grammatik, there are several points which still remain matter of conjecture. As an ethnical expression the term Nuba or Nubian itself has become equivocal. Rejected by the presumable descendants of Diocletian's Nobate, who now call themselves Berber, Barabira, it has become synonymous in the Nile valley with '*slave," or "Negro slave." This is due to the large number of slaves drawn by the Arab dealers in recent times from the Nuba tribes of Kor- dofan, who appear to~~

constitute the original stock of the race. On the other hand, the expression has never at any time been applied to all the inhabitants of the region we now call Nubia. At present this region is occupied by peoples of three distinct stocks—the com- paratively recent Semitic Arab intruders, mainly in Upper Nubia ; the Hamitic Ababdeh and Beja (Bisharin), everywhere between the Nile and the Red Sea ; and the Negro or Negroid Nubas (Bardbira), in Lower Nubia, where they are now almost exclusively confined to the banks of the Nilc, from Assuan southwards to Dongola.

That these Nilotic Nubas are closely allicd to those of Kordofan may now be regarded as placed beyond reasonable doubt. And, as the latter are admittedly of Negro stock and speech, it follows that the former also, hitherto affiliated by some to the Fulahs of west Sudan, by others to the Hamitic Beja, must henceforth be regarded as essentially a Negro people. But, whereas the Kordofan Nubas have preserved their racial purity, those of the Nile, while preserving their Negro speech intact, have in their new homes become physi- cally modified, mainly by the admixture first of Hamitic (Beja), then of Semitic (Arab), and even of European blood. Ethnologically the modern Nubians are therefore to be considered as a very mixed people, forming the transition between the three great Hamitic, Semitic, and Negro branches of the human family who converge in the Nile basin. Their ultimate affiliation to the last-named rather

than to either of the two others is determined partly by their physical appearance, which is still fundamentally of a Negro type, and partly by their language, which differs dialectically only from the Negro speech of the Kordofan Nubas. aay :

This conclusion, based on physical and linguistic grounds, 1s fully confirmed by what is known of the earliest migrations and history of the Nilotic peoples. The first inhabitants of the region beyond Egypt appear to have been the Uaua, whose name occurs in an inscription on a tomb at Memphis of the Vith Dynasty (about 2500 B.c.), and again constantly in subsequent inscriptions down to the time of the Ptolemies, as the leading Negro race to the south of Syene. It thus appears that throughout the historic period down to the arrival of the Romans the Nile above Egypt was

~~occu- pied by a Negro people. Egyptian monuments are found as far south as Mount Barkal (Napata), but no Egyptian settlements beyond Syene. Hence these Uaua Negroes probably remained unaffected, or very slightly affected, by foreign elements until about the 3d century of our era, when their domain began to be encroached upon from the east by the Hamitic Blemmyes, who have been clearly identified with the present Beja or Bisharin of the Nubian desert. It was owing to the incessant raids of these troublesome marauders that Diocletian withdrew the Roman garrisons above the cataracts, and called in the warlike Nobatz to protect the Egyptian frontier from their attacks. These Negro Nobate, originally from Kordofan, as is now evident, had advanced to the Great Oasis of Khargeh in Upper Egypt, whence they passed into the Nile valley between the cataracts. Here they absorbed the older Uaua of kindred stock, and ultimately came to terms with the Blemmyes. The two races even became intermingled, and, making common cause against the Romans, were defeated by Maximinus in 451 (Priscus). Thus were the Nilotic Nubas in the first instance affected by Hamitic elements.~~

~~Then came the conversion (545) of this new Negroid race to Christianity, and the growth of the Nubian political power in the upper Nile basin. Silko, founder of the famous Christian kingdom of Dongola, so named from its capital, called himself king of the Nobads and of all Ethiopians, that is, of the Nilotic Nubas and Hamitic Blemmyes. But the latter remaining pagan were soon after driven from the Nile valley eastwards to the kindred Mega- bares, Memnons, and other Hamitic nomads, who, with the Troglo- dytes, had from time immemorial held the whole steppe region between the Nile and the Red Sea from Axum to Egypt. Here their most collective name was Bugaite (Bovyaeral), as appears from the Axumite inscription, whence the forms Buja, Beja, which occur in the oldest Arab records, and by which they are still known.~~

~~Soon after overrunning Egypt (689) the Arabs themselves pene- trated into Lower Nubia, where the two Jawdabareh and Al- Gharbiya tribes became powerful, and amalgamated with the Nubas of that district. But their further progress was long arrested by the Dongolawi kings, who even reduced them for a short time. At length, however, after flourishing for 700 years, this native Christian state was in the 14th century overthrown by the Arabs,~~

aided by a detachment of Bosnians sent from Turkey by Sultan Selim (Burckhardt), These Bosnians (Kalaji, as they called themselves) also settled in the country and intermarried with the Arabs and Nubians, their descendants still holding sundry tracts between Assuan and Derr. Hence it is that the Nubians of this dis- trict, fairest of all the race, still claim Arab and Osmanli (Bosnian) descent. And thus were the Nilotic Nubas affected in the second instance by Semitic and European elements.

Nevertheless the type remains essentially Negro, being character- ized by a very dark complexion, varying from a mahogany brown and deep bronze to an almost black shade, with tumid lips, large black animated eyes, dolichocephalous head (index Nos. 73, 72), hair often woolly or strongly frizzled, and scant beard worn under the chin like the figures of the fugitives (Uaua ?) in the battle- pieces sculptured on the walls of the Egyptian temples. At the same time, the nose is much larger and the zygomatic arches less prominent than in the full-blood Negro. The features are at times almost quite regular, with a decidedly Egyptian cast (Lepsius) ; and the Nilotic Nubians are on the whole a strong muscular people, essentially agricultural, more warlike and energetic than the Egyptians, whom they also greatly excel in moral qualities. Many find employment as artisans, small dealers, porters, and soldiers in Egypt, where they are usually noted for their honesty, and frank and cheerful temperament. Since the overthrow of the native Christian state all have become Mohammedans, but not of a fana- tical type. Although a native of Dongola, the present (1884) Mahdi has found his chief support, not amongst his countrymen, but amongst the more recently converted Kordofan Negroes and the nomad Arabs and Beja. Nor do they appear at any time to have displayed a love of letters, and it remains uncertain whether to the Nubians or to their Hamitic neighbours are to be attributed the numerous still undeciphered rock inscriptions occurring along the Nile valley from Phile to Khartim. On the other hand, the colossal ruins reaching as far south as Meroe date almost exclu- sively from the Egyptian period.

The Nuba language itself does not appear to have ever been cul-

tivated, or even committed to writing until recently, although

Eutychius of Alexandria (930) includes the ‘‘Nubi” among the

six kinds of writing which he mentions in a somewhat doubtful

passage as current amongst the Hamitic peoples. There is no pre- sent native literature, and most of the men speak Arabic as well as their mother tongue, which is very sonorous and expressive. Its distinctly Negro character is betrayed in the complete absence of grammatical gender, in its primitive vowel-system and highly- developed process of consonantal assimilation, softening all harsh combinations, lastly, in the peculiar infix 7 inserted between the

verbal root and the plural pronominal object, asin at tokki-j-ir = I

shake them. Asin Bantu, the verb presents a multiplicity of forms,

including one present, three past and future tenses, with personal endings complete, passive, interrogative, conditional, elective, nega- tive, and otherr forms, each with its proper participial inflexions.

In Lepsius’s grammar the verbal paradigm fills altogether 110 pages.

Of the Nilotic as distinguished from the Kordofan branch of the Nuba language there are three distinct dialects current from Assuan ” along the Nile southwards to Meroe, as under :—

I. NortHern: Dialect of Bant Kenz or Mattokki, from the first cataract to Sebi‘ and Wady al-‘Arab, probably dating from the Diocletian period.

II, Centrrau: The Mahat or Marist, from Korosko to Wady Halfa (second cataract). Here the natives are called Saidokki, in contradistinction to the northern Mattokki.

III. SourHerN: Dongolawi, throughout the province of Dongola from the second cataract to J. Déja near Meroe, on the northern frontier of the Arab district of Dar-Shdaikiya (Sheghya). By the Mahasi people it is called Biderin Bannid, “‘ language of the poor,” or, collectively with the Kenz, Oshkirin Bannid, ‘‘ language of slaves.”

~~The northern and southern varieties are closely related to each other, differing considerably from the central, which shows more marked affinities with the Kordofan Nuba, possibly because the Saidokki people are later arrivals from Kordofan.~~

~~Bibliography.—C. R. Lepsius, Nubische Grammatik, Berlin, 1880, and Briefe aus Aegypten, Aethiopien, é&c., Berlin, 1852; Vivien de Saint Martin, Le Nord de U Afrique dans Vantiquité, Paris, 1863; Linant de Bellefonds, L' Htbaye, pays habité par les Arabes Bicharieh, Paris, 1868 ; J. Petherick, Egypt, the Soudan, and Central Africa, London, 1861; E. Rtippell, Reisen in Nubien, Kordofan, &c., Frankfort a. M., 1829; Caillaud, Voyage a Meroe, Paris, 1826; Reinisch, Die Nuba-Sprache, Vienna, 1879; Memoirs of the Société Khediviale de Géographie, Cairo, 1880-83 ; J. L. Burckhardt, Z'ravels in Nubia, &c., London, 1819; G. Wad- dington and B. Hanbury, Journal ofa visit to some parts of Ethiopia, London, 1822; E. F. Gau, Nubische Denkmdler, Stuttgart, 1821; F. Werne, Feldzug von~~

~~Senaar und Taka, &c., Stuttgart, 1851; G. Melly, Khartoun and the Niles London, 1851. (A. H. K.)~~

~~NUGEENAH. See Nacina.~~

~~NUGENT, Rozert (d. 1788), who ultimately became Earl Nugent, was a native of Westmeath in Ireland, and a Roman Catholic, tersely described by Richard Glover as "a jovial and voluptuous Irishman who had left Popery for the Protestant religion, money, and widows." His change of religion took place at a very early period in life ; the widow whom he married in 1736 was a daughter of Craggs, the postmaster-general, and a lady who had already been twice given in marriage. Her property comprised the borough of St Mawes in Cornwall, and Nugent naturally sat for that constituency from 1741 to 1754, after which date he represented Bristol until 1774, when he returned to his old love. At first he was numbered among the ad- herents of the little court of "only Fred," but with his usual skill he made his peace with the ministry of George II. at the right moment. A speaker of great liveliness joined to good sense—Horace Walpole said that he seemed now and then on the precipice of absurdity, but that he kept clear of it—his support of the ministry was so useful that he became in 1767 Viscount~~

Clare, and in 1776 Earl Nugent, both Irish peerages. He died 13th October 1788.

Lord Nugent was the author of some poetical productions, several of which are preserved in the second volume of Dodsley's Collections. One of these pieces, an ode to William Pulteney, in which he com- bined a description of his own change of religion with compliments on Pulteney's attempts ''to prop a nation's frame,"" was much ad- mired at the time, and fragments of itare still quoted. A haunch of venison which Lord Clare sent to his fellow-countryman and fellow-poet Goldsmith gave rise to one of the most spirited poetic epistles in the language.

NUISANCE, in English law, is either public or. private. A public or common nuisance is defined by Mr Justice Stephen as "an act not warranted by law, or an omission to discharge a legal duty, which act or omission obstructs or causes inconvenience or damage to the public in the

exercise of rights common to all Her Majesty's subjects " (Digest of the Criminal Law, p. 120). A common nui- sance is punishable as a misdemeanour at common law, where no special provision is made by statute. In modern times many of the old common law nuisances have been the subject of legislation. For instance, under the Public Health Act, 1875, many nuisances are punishable by im- position of a penalty after summary conviction, and local authorities are empowered to take measures for their sup- pression. The same Act, 38 and 39 Vict. c. 55, in s. 16 gives a definition of nuisances for the purposes of the Act. In some cases the common law and statutory remedy appear to be concurrent. It is no defence for a master or employer that a nuisance is caused by the acts of his 'servants, if such acts are within the scope of their employ- ment, even though such acts are done without his know- ledge and contrary to his orders. Nor is it a defence that the nuisance has been in existence for a great length of time, for no lapse of time will legitimate a public nuisance. Examples of public nuisances are the obstruction of high- ways, bridges, and navigable rivers, the keeping of dis- orderly houses and gaming houses, and the carrying on of offensive trades.

~~A private nuisance is an act or omission which causes inconvenience or damage to a private person, and is left to be redressed by action. It is not easy to define what amount of infringement of the rights of property will give a right of action. » There must be some sensible diminution of these rights affecting the value or convenience of the property. "The real question in all the cases is the question of fact, whether the annoyance is such as materially to interfere with the ordinary comfort of human existence " (Lord Romilly in Crump v. Lambert, 1867). A private nuisance, differing in this respect from a public nuisance, may be legalized by uninterrupted use for twenty years. It used to be thought that, if a man knew there was a nuisance and went and lived near it, he could not recover, because, it was said, it is he that goes to the nuisance and not the nuisance to him. But such is not the law now. In such a case the newcomer has his civil remedy if the nuisance has not existed for twenty years, and of course his remedy at criminal law irrespective of time if the nuisance be public.~~

~~The remedy for a public nuisance is by information, indictment, summary procedure, or abatement. An information lies in cases of great public importance, such as the obstruction of a navigable river by piers. In some matters the law allows the party to take the remedy into his own hands and to "'abate" the nuisance. Thus, if a gate be placed across a highway, any person lawfully using the highway may remove the obstruction, provided that no breach of the peace is caused thereby. The remedy for a private nuisance is by mandamus, injunction, action for damages, or abate- ment. An action lies in every case for a private nuisance ; it also lies where the nuisance is public, provided that the plaintiff can prove that he has sustained some special injury. In such a case the civil is in addition to the criminal remedy. In abating a private nuisance, care must be taken not to do more damage than is neces- sary for the removal of the nuisance.~~

~~In Scotland there is no recognized distinction between public and private nuisances. The law as to what constitutes a nuisance is substantially the same as in England. A list of statutory nui- sances will be found in the Public Health (Scotland) Act, 1867, 30 and 31 Vict. c. 101, s. 16. It resembles, but is not quite coincident with, the list in the English Public Health Act. The remedy for nuisance is by interdict or action.~~

The American law on the subject is practically the same as the English law.

NUKHA, a town of Russia in the Caucasian govern- ment of Elizabethpol (formerly of Baku), and previous to 1819 the capital of the khanate of Sheki, lies 173 miles east-south-east of Tiflis, at the foot of the main chain of the Caucasus, the cupola of the church in the fortress being 2454 feet above the sea-level in 41° 12’ 18” N. lat. and 47° 12’ 7” E. long. The fortress is a four-cornered

enclosure 3000 feet in circumference, erected by Hosein Khan in 1765, and contains the palace, built somewhat later in the original Persian style under the shadow of a splendid group of plane trees. The town contains four churches and thirty-one mosques. Most of its 3000 houses are built of mud and roofed with reed-thatch, which is well suited for the breeding of silkworms, but apt to catch fire. In 1861 the number of silk-winding establish- ments was fifty, one of them with hundreds of basins in the European style, and worked by steam ; but owing to the ravages of gattine the silk industry has greatly declined since 1864, At that time the trade of the town amounted to from two to three million roubles. In connexion with the silkworm plantation of Tsar-Abat (more than a mile long by 14 furlongs broad, and enclosed by a stone wall) there was a Government school of sericulture up to 1863. The population of Nukha was 22,618 in 1861, and 20,917 in 1873 (mainly Tatars, but 3500 Armenians). Besides the town there were in the district (1442 square miles) twenty- one villages each with more than 1000 inhabitants.

Nukha was a mere village up to the middle of the 18th century, when it was chosen by Hajji Tchelyabi, the founder of the khanate of Sheki, as his residence. The Russian occupation dates from 1807, though the annexation was not completed till 1819.

NUMANTIA, a town in Hispania Tarraconensis, of great natural strength, is famous for the memorable siege by the Romans under Scipio Africanus the younger. -The siege began in 134 B.c.; the city was defended with the utmost bravery and tenacity, but after enduring the last extreme of famine the Spaniards were forced to surrender at discretion in 133. The inhabitants

were sold as slaves and the town levelled to the ground. The victor was honoured with the title Numantinus by his countrymen. The site of Numantia is to be sought at or near the modern village of Puente de Garray, about four miles to the north of the town of Soria (Old Castile).

NUMA POMPILIUS, the second of the legendary kings of Rome, was a Sabine, a native of Cures; his father's name was Pompo and his wife was daughter of Tatius, the Sabine colleague of Romulus. His election, which was made by the Roman people and ratified by the senate, took place at the close of a year's interregnum, during which the sovereignty had been exercised by the members of the senate in rotation. He is represented as having been a quiet unambitious man (Tacita was his favourite muse) ; but even the ancients perceived the difficulty of making him a disciple of Pythagoras of Samos. His peaceful reign of forty-three years was marked by the creation of many of the most characteristic institutions of Rome ; it was he who set up the worship of the god Terminus, appointed the festival of Fides, built the temple of Janus, reorganized the calendar, fixed days of business and days of cessation therefrom, instituted the flamens of Mars and Quirinus, the virgins of Vesta, the salii, the fetiales, the pontifices ; in a word, the city which had been founded by means of violence and arms he succeeded in " founding anew upon principles of justice, law, and morality." He derived his inspiration from Egeria or AXgeria, his spouse, whom he used to meet unattended in the grove of the Camenz, where a perennial spring gushed from a dark recess, He was above eighty when he died of a gentle decline. His daughter Pompilia, wife of the pontifex Numa Marcius, was the mother of Ancus Marcius. Livy (xl. 29) tells a curious story of the finding at the foot of the Janiculum in 181 3.c. of two stone chests, with inscriptions in Greek and Latin, one purporting to con- tain the body of Numa and the other his books. The first when opened was found to be empty, but the second con- tained fourteen books relating to philosophy and pontifical law, which, being perceived to have "a tendency to under-

mine the established system of religion," were forthwith publicly burned.

NUMBERS, Boor or. See PENTATEUCH.

~~NUMBERS, Partition or. This subject, created by Euler, though relating essentially to positive integer numbers, is scarcely regarded as a part of the Theory of Numbers. We consider in it a number as made up by the~~

~~addition of other numbers: thus the partitions of the suc- cessive numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, &c., are as follows :—~~

~~1;~~

~~Be, 13~~

~~3, 21, 111;~~

~~4, 81, 22, 211, 1111;~~

~~5, 41, 32, 311, 221, 2111, 11111;~~

~~6, 51, 42, 411, 38, 321, 3111, 222, 2211, 21111, 111111.~~

~~These are formed each from the preceding ones ; thus, to form the partitions of 6 we take first 6; secondly, 5 pre- fixed to each of the partitions of 1 (that is, 51); thirdly, 4 prefixed to each of the partitions of 2 (that is, 42, 411); fourthly, 3 prefixed to each of the partitions of 3 (that is, 33, 321, 3111); fifthly, 2 prefixed, not to each of the partitions of 4, but only to those partitions which begin with a number not exceeding 2 (that is, 222, 2211, 21111); and lastly, 1 prefixed to all the partitions of 5 which begin with a number not exceeding 1 (that is, 111111); and so in other cases.~~

~~The method gives all the partitions of a number, but we may consider different classes of partitions: the par- titions into a given number of parts, or into not more than a given number of parts; or the partitions into given parts, either with repetitions or without repetitions, de. It is possible, for any particular class of partitions, to obtain~~

~~- methods more or less easy for the formation of the parti- tions either of a given number or of the successive numbers 1, 2, 3, &c. And of course in any case, having obtained the partitions, we can count them and so obtain the number of partitions.~~

~~Another method is by Arbogast's rule of the last and the last but one; in fact, taking the value of a to be unity, and, understanding this letter in each term, the rule gives b; ¢, B2; d, be, B; e@, bd, c, bc, bt, &c., which, if 6, ¢, d, ¢, c&c., denote 1, 2, 3, 4, &c., respectively, are the partitions of 1, 2, 3, 4, &c., respectively.~~

~~An important notion is that of conjugate partitions. a, ul and summing the columns instead of the lines, we obtain the conjugate partition 2211; evidently, starting from 2211, the conjugate partition is 42. If we form all the partitions of 6 into not more than three parts, these — ' 6, 51, 42, 33, 411, 321, 222, and the con- ie ee | LTD 201s 2211, 922, S111, s2i3s; where no part is greater than 3; and so in general we have the theorem, the number of partitions of into not more than & parts is equal to the number of partitions of n with no part greater than k.~~

~~We have for the number of partitions an analytical theory depending on generating functions; thus for the partitions of a number with the parts 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, &c., without repetitions, writing down the product~~

~~L+a.l-a?.lta3.1+a4…, =1ltoetar+203…Ner.., it is clear that, if a%, w®, aY,...are terms of the series x, x*, o8,..for which a+B+y+..=~%, then we have in the development of the product a term x", and hence that in the term Wz" of the product the coefficient WV is equal to the number of partitions of 2 with the parts 1, 2, 3,.., without repetitions ; or say that the product is the gener- ating function (G. F.) for the number of such partitions. And so in other cases we obtain a generating function.~~

~~Thus a partition of 6 is 42; writing this in the form~~

~~NUM—NUM~~

~~Thus for the function~~

~~1~~

~~1l-x%.1l—-2?.1-2%... observing that any factor 1/l—2 is=1+a'a"..., we see that in the term Vz" the coefficient is equal to the number of partitions of », with the parts 1, 2, 3,.., with repetitions.~~

Introducing another letter z, and considering the function l+az. ltatz. l+ae…,=l+2 (w@tart..)...Marmt.., we see that in the term Vxz”z* of the development the co- efficient WV is equal to the number of partitions of x into & parts, with the parts 1, 2, 3, 4,..., without repetitions.

And similarly, considering the function I

,=l+aet2ett+.. Nat...,

aS — ae ae =1+2 (e+ a+ oe Ne ee + Nanak + ee

we see that in the term Vx”z* of the development the co- efficient WV is equal to the number of partitions of » into k parts, with the parts 1, 2, 3, 4,..., with repetitions. We have such analytical formulz as i 200 Pac

= SE i oe ane which lead to theorems in the Partition of Numbers. A remarkable theorem is

L-av.l—2?.1-28.l-at.. =l-w—22t+a5tal—g—ol+...,

where the only terms are those with an exponent }(3n7?2), and for each such pair of terms the coefficient is (~)”1. The formula shows that except for numbers of the form 1(3n?+:n) the number of partitions without repetitions into an odd number of parts is equal to the number of partitions without repetitions into an even number of parts, whereas for the excepted numbers these numbers differ by unity. Thus for the number 11, which is not an excepted number, the two sets of partitions are

11, 821, 781, 641, 682, 542 10.1, 92, 83, 74, 65, 5321,

in each set 6. We have 1-2. 1+”. 142%. 1l+at.1408…=1; or, as this may be written, L+a.l+2?.1+et.1+08…= = =1+a+e7+e+...,

showing that a number can always be made up, and in one way only, with the parts 1, 2, 4, 8,... The product on the left-hand side may be taken to & terms only, thus if k=4, we have

1-16

l+a.1l+2?.1+a4.1+28, = ee =ltatae?... +05;

that is, any number from 1 to 15 can be made up, and in one way only, with the parts 1, 2, 4, 8; and similarly any number from 1 to 2*—1 can be made up, and in one way only, with the parts 1, 2, 4,..2*-1. A like formula is 1-23 1-2 1-27 lee' 2 1 1-2 ®.1-8° .1 ° 2 1-2″ a 1-a? that is, attita. ee tl+ae. c+ lee oo M41 te" =e Ope-™ fite…fe° ta",

showing that any number from —40 to+40 can be made up, and that in one way only, with the parts 1, 3, 9, 27 taken positively or negatively; and so in general any number from — 4(3*—1) to +4(3*—1) can be made up, and that in one way only, with the parts 1, 3, 9,..3*-! taken positively or negatively. (A. ©.)

NUMBERS, Turory or. The Theory of Numbers, or higher arithmetic, otherwise arithmology, is a subject which, originating with Euclid, has in modern times, in the hands of Legendre, Gauss, Lejeune-Dirichlet, Kummer, Kronecker, and others, been developed into a most exten- sive and interesting branch of mathematics. We distin- guish between the ordinary (or say the simplex) theory and the various complex theories.

NUMBERS

In the ordinary theory we have, in the first instance,

positive integer numbers, the unit or unity 1, and the other We introduce the zero 0, which

numbers 2, 3, 4, 5, &c. is a number sui generis, and the negative numbers — ap

—2, —3, —4, &c., and we have thus the more general notion of integer numbers, 0, +1, +2, £3, &c. 3; +land

~l are units or unities. The sum of any two or more numbers is a number; conversely, any number is a sum of two or more parts; but even when the parts are positive a number cannot be, in a determinate manner, represented as a sum of parts. The product of two or more numbers is a number ; but

(disregarding the unities +1, — 1, which may be introduced as factors at pleasure) it is not con- versely true that every number is a product of numbers. A number such as 2, 3, 5, 7, 11, &¢., which is not a product of numbers, is said to be a prime number ; and a number which is not prime is said to be composite. A number other than zero is thus either prime or composite ; and we have the theorem that every composite number is, in a deter- minate way, a product of prime factors.

We have complex theories in which all the foregoing notions (integer, unity, zero, prime, composite) occur ; that which first presented itself was the theory with the unit 7 (#= —1); we have here complex numbers, a + 02, where a and 6 are in the before-mentioned (ordinary) sense positive or negative integers, not excluding zero; we have the zero 0, = 0 + 0%, and the four units 1, —1, 1, — 1. A number other than zero is here either prime or else composite ; for instance, 3, 7, 11, are prime numbers, and 5, =(2+7)(2 —2), 9,=3. 3, 13, =(3 + 2%)(3 — 22), are com- posite numbers (generally any positive real prime of the form 4n+3 is prime, but any positive real prime of the form 4n+ 1 isa sum of two squares, and is thus composite). And disregarding unit factors we have, as in the ordinary theory, the theorem that every composite number is; Im 4 determinate way, a product of prime factors.

There is, in like manner, a complex theory involving the cube roots of unity —if a be an imaginary cube root of unity (a?+a+1=0), then the integers of this theory are a+ba (a and 6 real positive or negative inte- gers, including zero)—a complex theory with the fifth roots of unity—if a be an imaginary fifth root of unity (at+a3+a?+a+1=0), then the integers of the theory are a-+ba+ca*+da3 (a, b, ¢, d, real positive or negative integers, including zero); and so on for the roots of the orders 7, 11, 13, 17,19. In all these theories, or at any rate for the orders 3, 5, 7 (see No. 37, post), we have the foregoing theorem: disregarding unit factors, a number other than zero is either prime or composite, and every composite number is, in a determinate way, a product of prime factors. But coming to the 23d roots of unity the theorem ceases to be true. Observe that it is a particular case of the theorem that, if Y be a prime number, any integer power of WV has for factors only the lower powers of V,— for instance, V?= V.N*; there is no other decomposition N®=AB. Thisis obviouslytrue in the ordinarytheory, and it

is true in the complex theories preceding those for the 3d, 5th, and 7th roots of unity, and probably in those for the other roots preceding the 23d roots; but it is not true in the theory for the 23d roots of unity. We have, for instance, 47, a number not decomposable into factors, but 473, = AB, isa product of twonumbers each of the forma + ba +... + ka2l (aa 23d root). The theorem recovers its validity by the introduc- tion into the theory of Kummer's notion of an ideal number.

The complex theories above referred to would be more accurately described as theories for the complex numbers involving the periods of the roots of unity: the units are the roots either of the equation x?~1+%?-?...42+1=0

p-l

(p a prime number) or of any equation x * +..4+1=0

615

belonging to a factor of the function of the order p-1(n particular, this may be the quadric equation for the periods each of $(p-1) roots); they are the theories which were first and have been most completely considered, and which led to the notion of an ideal number. Buta yet higher generalization which has been made is to consider the complex theory, the units whereof are the roots of any given irreducible equation which hag integer numbers for its coefficients.

There is another complex theory the relation of which to the foregoing is not very obvious, viz., Galois's theory of the numbers composed with the imaginary roots of an irreducible congruence, F(a) = 0 (modulus a prime number

p); the nature of this will be indicated in the sequel,

In any theory, ordinary or complex, we have a first part, which has been termed (but the name seems hardly wide enough) the theory of congruences; a second part, the theory of homogeneous forms (this includes in particular the theory of the binary quadratic-forms (a, 8, c)(2, yyy; and a

~~third part, comprising those miscellaneous investiga- tions which do not come properly under either of the fore- going heads.~~

~~Ordinary Theory, First Part.~~

~~1, We are concerned with the integer numbers 0, +1, +2, +3, &c., or in the first place with the positive integer numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, &c. Some of these, 1, 2, 3, 5, 7, &c., are prime, others, 4, = 22, 6, =2. 3, &c., are composite ; and we have the fundamental theorem that a composite number is expressible, and that in one way only, as a pro- duct of prime factors, W=a%b8cY…(a, b, ¢,.. primes other than 1; a, B, y,.. positive integers).~~

~~Gauss makes the proof to depend on the following steps : (1) the product of two numbers each smaller than a given prime number is not divisible by this number ; (2) if neither of two numbers is divisible by a given prime number the product is not so divisible ; (3) the like as regards three or more numbers ; (4) a composite number cannot be resolved into factors in more than one way.~~

~~2. Proofs will in general be onlyindicated or be altogether omitted, but, as a specimen of the reasoning in regard to whole numbers, the proofs of these fundamental propositions are given at length. (1) Let p be the prime number, aa number less than p, and if possible let there be a number 6 less than p, and such that ab is divisible by p; it is further assumed that b is the only number, or, if there is more than one, then that 6 is the least number having the property in question ; 6 is greater than 1, for a being less than p is not divisible by p. Now p asa prime number is not divisible by b, but must lie between two consecutive multiples mb and (m+ 1)b of &. Hence, ab being divisible by p, mab is also divisible by p; moreover, ap is divisible byp, and hence the difference of these numbers, = a(p — mb), must also be divisible by p, or, writing p — mb =0', we have ab' divisible by p, where 0' is less than 6; so that b is not the least number for which ab is divisible by p. (2) If a andb are neither of them divisible by p, then a divided by p leaves a remainder a which is less than p, say we have a= mp +a 5 and similarly 6 divided by p leaves a remainder 8 which is less than p, say we have b=np+f; then~~

ab=(mp +a)(np +), =(mnp+na+mp) p+aB, and af is not divisible by p, therefore ad is not divisible by p. (3) The like proof applies to the product of three or more factors a, b, c,... (4) Suppose that the number WN, =a%bBey … (a, b, ¢,... prime numbers other than 1), is decomposable in some other way into prime factors : we can have no prime factor p, other than a, 8, ¢,..., for no such number can divide a%b8cY…; and we must have each of the numbers a, b,c,..., for if any one

616

of them, suppose a, were wanting, the number V would not be divisible by a. Hence the new decomposition if it exists must be a decomposition V= at bP'cy' ...; and here, if any two corresponding indices, say 4, o', are different from each other, then one of them, suppose a, is the greater, and we have V+p* =68c7 …= at'-4 DB'cY'. That is, we have the number V/+p* expressed in two different ways as a product, the number a being a factor in the one case, but not a factor in the other case. Thus the two exponents cannot be unequal, that is, we must have a=a', and similarly we have B=', y=y', .. .; that is, there is only the original decomposition V= abbey …

3. The only numbers divisible by a number V = ab8c7. . are the numbers a" b?'cv'.., where each exponent a' is equal to or greater than the corresponding exponent a. And conversely the only numbers which divide WV are those of the form a*bcV…, where each index a' is at most equal to the corresponding index a; and in particular each or any of the indices a may be =0. Again, the least common multiple of two numbers W=a%b8cy . . and WM =a'b8'ev … is a'b8"cy"..., where each index a" is equal to the largest of the corresponding indices a, « ;— observe that any one or more of the indices a, P, y,.., a', B', y',..., may be =0, so that the theorem extends to the case where either of the numbers J, WV', has prime factors which are not factors of the other number. And so the greatest common measure of two numbers V=abPcY .. and W' =a b8'o"... is a*"08'c"..., where each index a" is equal to the least of the corresponding indices a and a'.

4, The divisors of W=a%b8cY.. are the several ternis of the product (l+a..+a%(1+6..+08)\(l+c..+c%), where unity and the number J itself are reckoned each of them as a divisor. Hence the number of divisors is =(4+1) (6+1)(y+1)..., and the sum of the divisors is (att1 1b +1 — 1eyt1-1)..

~~- (a—1)(6-1)(e-1).. ;~~

~~5. In N=a%bSev.. the number of integers less than V and prime to it is $(J), -¥(1 — =) (a — i) € — *) ce To find the numbers in question write down the series of numbers 1, 2, 3,... 17; strike out all the numbers divisible by a, then those divisible by 6, then those divisible by c.., and so on; there will remain only the numbers prime to NV. For actually finding the numbers we may of course in striking out those divisible by 6 disregard the numbers already struck out as divisible by a, and in striking out with respect to c disregard the numbers already struck out as divisible by a or 6, and so on; but in order to count the remaining numbers it is more convenient to ignore the previous strikings out. Suppose, for a moment, there are only two prime factors a and 0, then the number of~~

~~terms struck out as divisible by a is=W. Ze and the a~~

~~number of terms struck out as divisible by 6 is= WN. es but then each term divisible by a will have been twice struck~~

~~out; the number of these is = Nop and thus the number~~

~~of the remaining terms is V (1 — sata): which is a~~

~~1 1 ae.~~

~~=N (a — “) (a = i) . By treating in like manner the case of three or more prime factors a, b, ¢,.. we arrive at the general theorem. The formula gives aly — ll {viz., N=1, there is no factor 1 -3); and it is necessary to~~

~~consider $(1) as being =1. The explanation is that $(1)~~

~~NUMBERS~~

~~properly denotes the number of integers not greater than N and prime to it ; so that in VW=1 we have 1 an integer not: greater than WV and prime to it; but im every other case the two definitions agree.~~

~~6. If WV, WW’, are numbers prime to each other then d(VN’)=¢(N)¢(N), and so also for any number~~

of numbers having no common divisor; in particular

b(a%bBer . .) = h(a) P(bP)h(c7) .. .; (a4) = a% (a — *), and the theorem is at once verified. We have V=2¢(J'), where the summation extends to all the divisors WV' of N, unity and the number JW itself being included; thus 15 = $(15) + $(5) + $(3) + P(1), =8 +4424 1.

7. The prime factor of the binomial function 7%—1 is (e™=))@—1)... ~ (aNla—(eX 1)... of the degree ¢(V); say this is called [7-1], and we have aN—1=TH [a — 1], where the product extends to all the divisors WV' of WV, unity and the number J included. For instance

[e¥-1]= and we have (a!5 — 1) = [ae — 1] [a> — 1] (a? -1][% — 1], =(8— a?.. —at+1)(et+ a +22+04+1)(e+e+1)(%-1).

8. Congruence to a given modulus. A number # is congruent to 0, to the modulus V, «=0 (mod. WN), when z is divisible by V; two numbers 2, y are congruent to the modulus VW, z=y (mod.), when their difference a—y divides by N, or, what is the same thing, if —-y=0 (mod. WV). Observe that, if #y=0 (mod. 1), and x be prime to V, then y=0 (mod. J).

9. Residues to a given modulus. For a given modulus N we can always find, and that in an infinity of ways, a set of V numbers, say WV residues, such that every number whatever is, to the modulus J, congruent to one and only one of these residues. For instance, the residues may be 0, 1, 2, 3,...W—1 (the residue of a given number is here simply the positive remainder of the number when divided by WV); or, WV being odd, the system may be

0, £1, £2,.. +4(N-1),

, @ rational and integral function

(#5—1)(%-1)

A = — — y = ~~ 5 es pees e+e—atte—aetl1;

and JV even, 0, £1, £2,.. $3(N-2), +N.

~~10. Prime residues to a given modulus. Considering only the numbers which are prime to a given modulus J, we have here a set of ¢(V) numbers, say ¢(V) prime residues, such that every number prime to J is, to the modulus WV, congruent to one and only one of these prime residues. For instance the prime residues may be the numbers less than WV and prime to it. In particular, if V is a prime number 7p, then the residues may be the p—1l numbers, 1, 2, 3,...p9—1.~~

~~Tn all that follows the letter .y, in the absence of any statement to the contrary, will be used to denote an odd prime other than unity. A theorem for p may hold good for the even prime 2, but it is in general easy to see whether this is so or not.~~

~~11. Fermat's theorem, #?-!1—-1=0 (mod. p). The gener- alized theorem is ##%)-1=0 (mod. WY). The proof of the generalized theorem is as easy as that of the original theorem. Consider the series of the ¢(¥) numbers a, 6, c,... each less than WV and prime to it; let x be any number prime to J, then each of the numbers wa, x0, xe, . . is prime to V, and no two of them are congruent to the modulus J, that is, we cannot have #(a—6)=0 (mod. 1); in fact, z is prime to WN, and the difference a—6 of two positive numbers each less than WV will be less than J. Hence the numbers xa, xb, xc,...are in a different order congruent to the numbers a, 6, ¢,...3; and multiplying to- gether the numbers of each set we have z?™abc..=abc..~~

~~NU™' BERS~~

~~(mod. JV), or, since a, 0, ¢,.. are each prime to WV, and therefore also the product abc..is prime to WV, we have #P™) = 1, or say eP)—1=0 (mod. J).~~

~~In particular, if V be a prime number =p, then 4(W) is =p—1, and the theorem is #?-!-1=0 (mod. p), x being now any number not divisible by p.~~

~~12. The general congruence f(x)=0 (mod. p). f(x) is written to denote a rational and integral function with integer coefficients which may without loss of generality be taken to be each of them less than p; it is assumed that the coefficient of the highest power of x is not=0,. If there is for « an integer value a such that f(a) =0 (mod. Pp, throughout), then a is said to be a root of the congru- ence~~

f(x) =0 ; we may, it is clear, for a substitute any value whatever a′=a+kp, or say any value a′ which is=a, but such value ’ is considered not as a different root but as the same root of the congruence. We have thus S(a)=0; and therefore f(x) = f(x) -—f(a), = («-a) J\(x), where J\(z) is a function of like form with f(x), that is, with integer coefficients, but of the next inferior order n—1. Suppose there is another root b of the congruence, that is, an integer value 6 such that /(b)=0; we have then (b-a)7,(6) = 0, and b-a is not =0 (for then 6 would be the same root as a). Hence J,(6) = 0, and flat) = (wa) (F(x)—F,(0)}, = (ea) («—8) f(a), where

o(#) is an integral function such as f(x), but of the order n—2; and so on, that is, if there exist » different (non-congruent) roots of the congruence J© = 0, then J(«)=A(e- me—b)...(@—k), and the congruence may be written A(w—a)(a—6)..(e-k)=0. And this cannot be satisfied by any other value 7; for if so we should have A(l—a)(t—b)... (¢—k)=0, that is, some one of the con- gruences (1—a)=0, &c., would have to be satisfied, and / would be the same as one of the roots a, b, c,...%. That is, a congruence of the order z cannot have more than n roots, and if it have precisely » roots a, b, c,..k, then the form is f(x) = A(x—a)(a—6)...(a—k), =0.

Observe that a congruence may have equal roots, viz., if the form be /(«) = A(a—a)*(«—b)8…,=0, then the roots a, 6,..are to be counted a times, @ times, .. . respect- ively ; but clearly the whole number of roots a+f+.. is at most =n.

It is hardly necessary to remark that this theory of a congruence of the order n is precisely analogous to that. of an equation of the order », when only real roots are attended to. The theory of the imaginary roots of a congruence will be considered further on (see No. 41).

13, The linear congruence az=c(mod. 6). This is equivalent to the indeterminate equation ax+by=c; if a and 6 are not prime to each other, but have a greatest commou measure g, this must also divide c; supposing the division performed, the equation becomes a’x+b’y=c, where a’ and 0’ are prime to each other, or, what is the same thing, we have the congruence a’z=c’ (mod. 0’). This can always be solved, for, if we consider the 0’ numbers 0, 1, 2,...6’-1, one and only one of these will be=c’ (mod. 0’),

Multiplying these by any number a’ prime to 0’, and taking the remainders in regard to 6’, we reproduce in a different order the same series of numbers 0,1, 2,...6’—1; that is, in the series a’, 2a’,... (0-1) a’ there will be one and only one term=c’ (mod. 0’), or, calling the term in question a, we have «=a. as the solution of the congruence wx=c’ (mod. b’); a’a—c’ is then a multiple of 0’, say it is= — 0’B, and the corresponding value of yis y=. We may for a write a+ mb’, m being any positive or negative integer, not excluding zero (but, as already remarked, this is not considered as a distinct solution of the congruence) ; the corresponding value of y is clearly = 8 — ma’.

The value of x can be found by a process similar to that for finding the greatest common measure of the two

617

numbers a’ and c’; this is what is really done in the appa- rently tentative process which at once presents itself for small numbers, thus 6z=9 (mod. 35), we have 36x = 54, or, rejecting multiples of 35, +=19, or, if we please, x= 35m+19,

In particular, we can always find a number & such that w&=1 (mod. 0’) ; and we have then w=c’£ as the solution of the congruence a’x=c’. The value of & may be written

f= = (mod. 6’), where = stands for that integer value

€ which satisfies the original congruence a’§=1 (mod. 6’);

and the value of « may then be written # = ——— (mod. 0’). a

Another solution of the linear congruence is given in No. 21. 14, Wilson’s theorem, 1.2.3…p—-1+1=0 (mod. p). It has been seen that for any prime number p the con- gruence «?-!—]1=0 (mod. p) of the order p—1 has the p-1 roots 1, 2,...7-—1; we have therefore a?-1 1=(4-1)(v-2)...(e-p—1), or, comparing the terms independent of x, it appears that 1.2.3…p—-1= =— 1,thatis, 1.2:3…9—1+41 = 0 (mod. p), -—the required theorem. For

instance, where p=5, then 1,2.3.4+1=0 (mod. 5), and where »=7, then 1.2.3.4.5.6 +1 = 0 (mod. 7).

15. A proof on wholly different principles may be given. Suppose, to fix the ideas, »= 7; consider on a circle 7 points, the summits of a regular heptagon, and join these in any mauner so as to form a heptagon; the whole number of heptagons is 3.1.2.3.4.5.6. Now of these we have (7 — 1),=3, which are regular heptagons (convex or stellated) ; the number of remaining heptagons must be divisible by 7, for with any one such heptagon we con- nect the 6 heptagons which can be obtained from it by making it rotate through successive angles of 7 360°. That is, 3.1.2.3.4.5.6-3(7—1)=0 (mod. 7), whence 1.2.3.4.5.6-7+41=0, or finally 1.2.3.4.5.6+1=0 (mod. 7). It is clear that the proof applies without altera- tion to the case of any prime number p. aaa

If p is not a prime number, then 1.2.3…p—-1=0 (mod. p); hence the theorem shows directly whether a number p is or is not a prime number; but it is not of any practical utility for this purpose.

16. Prime roots of a prime number—application to the binomial equation x? -1=0. Take, for instance, aI By what precedes we have

28 — 1 =[x8- 1].[a — 1].[a2 -1][e—1), = (a? -2+1)(e?+a4+1)(e+1)(a-1); and we have a — 1 = (–1)(« — 2)(— 8)(a ~ 4)(% — 5)(a—6) (mod. 7) ; whence also

(a? — + 1)(a®+a+41)(+1)(% — 1) = (x — 1)(— 2)(— 8)(a— 4)(a — 5) (a — 6). These two decompositions must agree together, and we in fact have 5 x? —~x+1= (x—8)(x—-5), a + 2+ 1 = (x — 2)(x— 8), e+l=x“-6,%-l=2-1. In particular, we thus have 3, 5, as the roots of the con- gruence «*— x2+1=0, that is, [~®- 1]=0, and these roots 3, 5, are not the roots of any other of the congruences {#®-—1]=0, [z?-1]=0, [x-1]=0; that is, writing a=3 or 5 in the series of numbers a, a’, a3, a4, a5, a, we have a® as the first term which is=1 (mod. 7); the series in fact are By 9, 27, 81, 248, 729 =8, 2,6, @ 5a

5, 25, 125, 625, 3125, 15625=5, 4, 6, 2, 3, 1

And so in general the congruence «?1—1=0 (mod. p) has the p—1 real roots 1, 2, 3,...%—1, hence the con gruence [x?-1~1]=0, which is of the order ¢(p—1), has this number $(p — 1) of real roots ; and, calling any one of XVII. — 78

618

these g, then in the series of powers g, 9', 9,--- Guar, the first term which is = 1 (mod. 7) is g?1, that is, we have I Ps Pro GP =1, 2, 3,...p—1 in a different order. Any such number g is said to be a prime root of p, and the number of prime roots is ¢(p—1), the number of in tegers less than and prime to p — 1.

The notion of a prime root was applied by Gauss to the solution of the binomial equation «? — 1=0, or, what is the same thing, to the question of the division of the circle (Kreistheilung), see Equation, Nos. 30 and 31 (vol. viil., p. 507); and, as remarked in the introduction to the pre- sent article, the roots or periods of roots of this equation present themselves as the units of a complex theory in the Theory of Numbers.

17. Any number z less than p is=g™, and, if m is not prime to p—1, but has with it a greatest common measure e, suppose m= ke, p—1=ef, then

cag, efagf= gh@-Y=1,

that is, a/=1; and it is easily seen that in the series of powers 2, x,...a, we have afas the first term which is =1 (mod. p). A number =g", where m is not prime to p-1, is thus not a prime root; and it further appears that, g being any particular prime root, the ¢(p— 1) prime roots are=the numbers g™, where m is any number less than p—land prime toit. Thus in the foregoing example p=, where the prime roots were 3 and 5, the integers less than 6 and prime to it are 1, 5; and we in fact have 5 = 35 and 3=5° (mod. 7).

18. Integers belonging to a given exponent ; index of a number. If, as before, p—1=ef, that is, if f be a sub- multiple of p—1, then any integer x such that #/ is the lowest power of x which is=1 (mod. p) is said to belong to the exponent f. The number of residues, or terms of the series 1, 2, 3,...2—1, which belong to the exponent f is $(f), the number of integers less than

~~f and prime to it; these are the roots of the congruence [zf—1]=0 of the order $(f). It is hardly necessary to remark that the prime roots belong to the exponent p — 1.~~

~~A number x«=g” is said to have the index m; observe the distinction between the two terms exponent and index; and further that the index is dependent on the selected prime root g.~~

~~19. Special forms of composite modulus. If instead of a prime modulus p we have a modulus p” which is the power of an odd prime, or a modulus 2p or 2p™ which is twice an odd prime or a power of an odd prime, then there is a theory analogous to that of prime roots, viz., the numbers less than the modulus and prime to it are congruent to successive powers of a prime root g; thus, if p™ = 8”, we have 2, 4, 8, 16, 32, 64=2, 4, 8, 7, 5, 1 (mod. 9), and if 2p™=2.3?, we have 5, 25, 125, 625, 3125, 15625=5, 7, 11,~~

~~13, 17, 1 (mod. 18). As regards the even prime 2 and its powers—for the modu- lus 2 or 4 the theory of prime roots does not come into existence, and for the higher powers it is not applicable ; thus with modulus =8 the numbers less than 8 and prime to it are 1, 3, 5, 7; and we have 3?=5?=72=1 (mod. 8).~~

~~20. Composite modulus W=a%bbcy . . . —no prime roots—irregularity. In the general case of a composite modulus it has been seen that, if x is any number less than WV and prime to it, then «®@%)-1=0 (mod. J). But (except in the above-mentioned cases p™, 2p™, 2 or 4) there is not any number a such that a?) is the first power of a which is=1; there is always some submultiple~~

~~eel a eis 1=54(¥) such that a‘ is the first power which is =1.~~

~~For instance, say VW = 24, $(17) =8, then the numbers less than 24 and prime to it are 1,5,7, 11, 13,17,19,23; and we have 11=1, 52=72=13? =172=19=232=1 (mod. 24),~~

~~NUMBERS~~

~~that is, 1 has the exponent 1, but all the other numbers have the exponent 2. So again where VY =48, the 16 numbers less then 48 and prime to it have, 1 the exponent 1, and 7, 13, 17, 23, 25, 31, 35, 41, 47 each the exponent 2, and the remaining numbers 5, 11, 19, 29, 37, 43 each the ex- ponent 4. We cannot in this case by means of any single root or of any two roots express all the numbers, but we can by means of three roots, for instance, 5, 7, 13, express all the numbers less than 48 and prime to it; the numbers are in fact =5% 7P137, where a=0, 1, 2, or 3, and f and y each = 0 or 1.~~

~~[Comparing with the theorem for a prime number p, where the several numbers 1, 2,3, ...7—1, are expressed by means of a single prime root, = g*, where a = 0, 1, 2,...p—1, we have the analogue of a case presenting itself in the theory of quadratic forms,—the "irregularity" of a deter- minant (post, No. 31); the difference is that here (the law being known, V= a composite number) the case is not re- garded as an irregular one, while the irregular determinants do not present themselves according to any apparent law.|~~

~~21. Maximum indicator—application to solution of a linear congruence. In the case 1 =48 it was seen that the exponents were 1, 2, 4, the largest exponent 4 being divisible by each of the others, and this property is a general one, viz., if W=abPcY.. in the series of expo- nents ¢ (or, as Cauchy calls them, indicators) of the numbers less than V and prime to it, the largest exponent J is a multiple of each of the other exponents, and this largest exponent Cauchy calls the maximum indicator ; the maxi- mum indicator J is thus a submultiple of (1), and it is the smallest number such that for every number 2 less than WV and prime to it we have #!—1=0(mod. WV). The values of J have been tabulated from V=2to 1000. Reverting to the linear congruence ax = (mod. 0), where a and 0 are prime to each other, then, if J is the maximum indicator for the modulus 2, we have a/=1, and hence it at once appears that the solution of the con- gruence is x=ca!-1,~~

~~22. Residues of powers for an odd prime modulus. For the modulus p, if g be a prime root, then every num- ber not divisible by p is = one of the series of numbers 959°, ...g®-1; and, if & be any positive number prime to p—1, then raising each of these to the power & we re- produce in a different order the same series of numbers 9,9°,+—g27}, which numbers are in a different~~

order =1,2,....p—1, that is, the residue of a Ath power may be any number whatever of the series 1, 2,...p—1.

But, if £ is not prime to p — 1, say their greatest common measure is e, and that we have p—1=ef, k=me, then for any number not divisible by p the kth power is =one of the series of f numbers g*, 9%,....g”.; there are thus

ii only f, =e —1), out of the p — 1 numbers 1, 2,3,....p— 1,

which are residues of a kth power.

23. Quadratic residues for an odd prime modulus. In particular, if /=2, then e=2, f=4(p—1), and the square of every number not divisible by p is=one of the 3(p — 1) numbers g’,. g4,...g?~1; that is, there are only 4(p—-1) numbers out of the series 1, 2, 3,...2—1 which are resi- dues of a square number, or say quadratic residues, and the remaining }(p—1) numbers are said to be quadratic non-residues of the modulus p,—we may say simply, resi- dues and non-residues. But this result can be obtained more easily without the aid of the theory of prime roots. Every number not divisible by p is, to the modulus p,= one of the series of numbers +1, £2, +3,..+4(p-1); hence every square number is=one of the series of num- bers 12, 22, 32,.. 4(p—1)?; and thus the p—1 numbers

1, 2, 3,....p—1, are one-half of them residues and the

NUMBERS

other half non-residues of p. Thus in the case p=11 every number not divisible by 11 is, to this modulus, =one of the series +1, +2, +3, +4, 45; whence the square of any such number is = one of the series 1, 4, 9, 16, 25, or say the series 1, 4, 9, 5, 3; that is, we have residues |, 3, 455,—. : . 9. non-residues |. 2, . a Ghainecs . dO | : Calling as usual the residues a and the non-residues 6, we

— i il : have in this case Ti (2b- 2a) = Ti (33 — 22), =1, a posi-

tive integer ; this is a property true for any prime number of the form 4n+3, but for a prime number of the form 4n+1 we have 2b—2a=0; the

demonstration belongs to a higher part of the theory.

It is easily shown that the product of two residues or of two non-residues is a residue; but the product of a residue and a non-residue is a non-residue.

24, The law of reciprocity—Legendre's symbol. The question presents itself, given that P is a residue or a non-residue of @, can we thence infer whether Q is a residue or a non-residue of P? In particular, if P, Q, are the odd primes p, g, for instance, given that 13 = R(17), can we thence infer that 17 = R(13), or that 17 = WR(13) % The answer is contained in the following theorem : if p, g, are odd primes each or one of them of the form 4n+1, then p, g, are each of them a residue or each of them a non-residue of the other ; but, if p, g, are each of them of the form 4n + 3, then according as p is a residue or a non- residue of g we have g a non-residue or a residue of p.

The theorem is conveniently expressed by means of Legendre's symbol, viz., p being a positive odd prime, and (any positive or negative number not divisible by p,

then (2) denotes+ 1 or—1 according as @ is or is not

a residue of p; if, as before, g is (as p) a positive odd prime, then the foregoing theorem is

(2X f=

The denominator symbol may be negative, say it is —p,

we then have as a definition (5) = (2) observe that SO.; Q me A (=) is not = &) —and we have further the theorems

-1\ ,f@-D (2\, 8e-D (ee at " Ga a viz., — 1 is a residue or a non-residue of p according as p=lor=3 (mod. 4), and 2 is a residue or a non-residue of p according as p=1 or 7, or=3 or 5 (mod. 8). If, as definitions, (a = +1 and (4) = +1, these may be

written

(GME)=ak? aa (2)(Z) =a”

We have also, what is in fact a theorem given at the end

of No. 23, QQ) (2\(2 (Pp a p \ Pp) The further definition is sometimes convenient— (2) =o, when p divides Q. The law of reciprocity as contained in the theorem

(2X 4)=-atm

is a fundamental theorem in the whole theory; it was enunciated by Legendre, but first proved by Gauss, who gave no less than six demonstrations of it.

25. Jacobi’s generalized (a, Jacobi defined this as follows: the symbol (wee -), where p, p’, p”,.. are positive odd primes equal or unequal, and Q is any

619

positive or negative odd number prime to pp’p” ... , denotes +1 or—1 according to the definition

(sqhr-)=(2(8X8)—

the symbols on the right-hand side being Legendre’s symbols ; but the definition may be regarded as extending to the case where Q is not prime to pp’p”..., then we have Q divisible by some factor p, and by the definition of Legendre’s symbol in this case we have (2) = 0; hence in the case in question of Q not being prime to pp’p”.. the value of Jacobi’s symbol is = 0.

We may further extend the definition of the symbol to the case where the numerator and the denominator of the symbol are both or one of them even, and present the definition in thé most general form, as follows: suppose that, p, p’, p”,... being positive or negative even or odd primes, equal or unequal, and similarly g, q’, q’,... being positive or negative even or odd primes, equal or unequal, we have P=pp’p”... and Q=qq’q”..., then the symbol

(3) will denote +1, —1, or 0, according to the definition

(9) SENG) EXE

the symbols on the right hand being Legendre's symbols. If P and @ are not prime to each other, then for some pair of factors p and g we have p= +4, and the corre-

sponding Legendrian symbol (4) is=0, whence in this

case (-7) = 0.

It is important to remark that ($ =+1 is not a sufficient condition in order that Q may be a residue of P; if P= 2¢pp'p"..,-p,p',p", .. being positive odd primes, then, in order that @ may be a residue of P, it must be a residue of each of the prime factors p, p', p",.., that is, we must have (2) = +1, (5) =+1, (5) =+1,... as many

\p P p equations as there are unequal factors p, p', p",..of the modulus P.

Ordinary Theory, Second Part,—Theory of Forms.

26. Binary quadratic (or quadric) forms—transforma-

tion and equivalence. We consider a form ax" + bay +cy?, =(a, b, c)(x, y)*,

or when, as usual, only the coefficients are attended to, =(a, b,c). The coefficients (a, 6, c) and the variables («, y) are taken to be positive or negative integers, not excluding zero. The discriminant ac — 0? taken negatively, that is, 6? —ac, is said to be the determinant of the form, and we thus distinguish between forms of a positive and of a negative determinant.

Considering new variables, ax+ By, yx + Sy, where a, B, y, 5, are positive or negative integers, not excluding zero, we have identically a

(a, b, c)(ax+ By, yet dy)? =(a', 0', c')(x, y)*,

where a'=(a, 6, c)(a, y)*, =a? + 2bay +cy?, b= (a, b, c)(a, y)(B, 5), =aaB+b(ad + By)+cy6, ce' =(a, 8, c)(B, 5)*, = a8? + 2686 + cd? ;

and thence b — ac' =(ad — By)? (6? — ac).

The form (a’, 0’, c’) is in this case said to be contained in the form (a, }; c); and a condition for this is obviously that the determinant D’ of the contained form shall’ be equal to the determinant D of the containing form multi- plied by a square number ; in particular, the determinants must be of the same sign. If the determinants are equal, then (a6 — By)?=1, that is, a8 —By=+1. Assuming in this case that the transformation exists, and writing a8 — By =«, and writing also

620

1 U , ipl /, xe’ =axn+ By, eS (6ar’ — By’), = a’a’ + B’y’, then conversely 1 oy. gy SUPPOSE, y! =ya+t by y= = (-ye’ tay’), =x +5Y’s

where a’, f’, y’, & are integers ; and we have, moreover, i 1 a8! — By’ = (a8 — By), = =e

that is, a’s’ — B’y’ = + lor — 1 according as a8 — Byis = +1 or—1. The two forms (a, 6, c), (a’, 0, c’) are in this case said to be equivalent, and to be, in regard to the particular transformation, equivalent properly or improperly accord- ing as a5 — By(=a‘8 — f’y’)is =+lor=—1. We have, therefore, as a condition for the equivalence of two forms, that their determinants shall be equal; but this is not a suffi- cient condition. It is to be remarked also that two forms of the same determinant may be equivalent properly and also improperly; there may exist a transformation for which aS — By is= +1, and also a transformation for which aS- By is =—1. But this is only the case when each of the forms is improperly equivalent to itself; for instance, a form x2 — Dy’, which remains unaltered by the change «, y, into z, —y (that is, a, B, y, ‘=1, 0, 0, —1, and therefore aS — By = — 1), is a form improperly equiva- lent to itself, A form improperly equivalent to itself is said to bean ambiguous form. In what follows, equivalent means always properly equivalent.

27. Forms for a given determinant—classes, &c. In the case where D, =0? —ac, is a square the form (a, 6, c)(x, y)? is a product of two rational factors; this case may be ex- cluded from consideration, and we thus assume that the determinant D is either negative, or, being positive, that it is not a square. The forms (a, 6, c) of a given positive or negative determinant are each of them equivalent to some one out of a finite number of non-

equivalent forms which may be considered as representing so many distinct classes. For instance, every form of the determinant — 1 is equivalent to (1,0,1), that is, given any form (a, b, c) for which b?-ac = —1, it is possible to find integer values a, 8, y, 6, such that ad-By=+1, and (a, b, c)(aa + By, yx + Sy)? = (1, 0, 1)(*, y)?, that is, = x? + 97. Or, to take a less simple example, every form of the deter- minant — 35 is equivalent to one of the following forms: (1, 0635), (6, -, 7), (S21, 12), (4 es) 3), (6, 1, 6); for the first six forms the numbers a, 20, c have no common factor, and these are said to be properly primitive forms, or to belong to the properly primitive order ; for the last two forms the numbers a, 6, c have no common factor, but, and ¢ being each even, the numbers a, 26, c have a common factor 2, and these are said to be improperly primitive forms, or to belong to the improperly primitive order. The properly primitive forms are thus the six forms (1, 0, 35), (5, 0, 7), (3, +1, 12), (4, £1, 18); or we may say that there are represented hereby six properly primitive classes. Derived forms, or forms which belong to a derived order, present themselves in the case of a determinant D having a square factor or factors, and it is not necessary to consider them here.

It is not proposed to give here the rules for the deter- mination of the system of non-equivalent forms; it will be enough to state that this depends on the determination in the first instance of a system of reduced forms, that is, forms for which the coefficients a, 6, c, taken positively satisfy certain numerical inequalities admitting only of a finite number of solutions. In the case of a negative de- terminant the reduced forms are no two of them equivalent, and we thus have the required system of non-equivalent forms ; in the case of a positive determinant, the reduced forms group themselves together in periods in such wise that the forms belonging to a period are equivalent to each other, and the required system of non-equivalent forms is

NUMBERS

obtained by selecting one form out of each such period. The principal difference in the theory of the two cases of a positive and a negative determinant consists in these periods ; the system of non-equivalent forms once arrived at, the two theories are nearly identical.

~~28. Characters of a form or class—division into genera. Attending only to the properly primitive forms—for in- stance, those mentioned above for the determinant — 35 — the form (1, 0, 35) represents only numbers f which are residues of 5, and also residues of 7; we have, in fact, f=a + 35y*, =22 (mod. 5), and also=x?(mod.7). Using~~

~~the Legendrian symbols (5) and (2), we say that the~~

~~form (1, 0, 35) has the characters (5), (Z) =++4, Each of the other forms has in like manner a determinate character + or — in regard to a and also in regard to (2) ; and it is found that for each of them the characters are + + or else — — (that is, they are never + — or — +).~~

~~We, in fact, have :~~

~~(5)(4)~~

~~(Oo) of ae~~

~~(4,1, 9) Ae~~

~~(oe~~

~~(3, + 1, 12)~~

~~and we thus arrange the six forms into genera, viz., we have three forms belonging to the genus (5); (7) =++, and three to the genus (5); (7) = — —, these char- acters + + and — — of genera being one-half of all the combinations + +, — —, + —, — +.~~

~~The like theory applies to any other negative or positive determinant; the several characters have reference in some cases not only to the odd prime factors of D but also to the numbers 4 and 8, that is, there is occasion to consider~~

~~(=*) ,=(- ie and 2 4(f?-1) 7 (5), =(1) , and there are various cases to be con~~

~~Gf,~~

~~sidered according to the form of D in regard to its simple and squared factors respectively ; but in every case there are certain combinations of characters (in number one-half of all the combinations) which correspond to genera, and the properly primitive forms belong to different genera accordingly, the number of forms being the same in each genus.~~

~~The form (1, 0,D) has the characters all +, and this is said to be the principal form, and the genus containing it the principal genus. For a given determinant, the characters of two genera may be compounded together according to the ordinary rule of signs, giving the char acters of a new genus; in particular, if the characters of a genus are compounded with themselves, then we have the characters of the principal genus.~~

~~29. Composition of quadratic forms. Considering X, Y, as given lineo-linear functions of (#, y), (#', y'), defined by the equations :~~

~~X= porn' + prey' + py' + psyy's~~

~~Y= qopeu! + qyeey! + gaye + g3yy's the coefficients 7; Py, Po Ps Yor Uv Ya Ys May be so con- nected with the coefficients (A, B, C), (a, 8, c), (a, &, ¢'), of three quadratic forms as to give rise to the identity~~

~~(A, B, OVX, Y)2=(, 6, e)(a, y)?. (a, OY, ca', y's~~

~~and, this being so, the form (A, B, C) is said to be com- pounded of the two forms (a, 0, c) and (a', 0', c'), the order of composition being indifferent.~~

~~also the Legendrian symbols~~

~~NUMBERS~~

~~The necessary and sufficient condition in order that it may be possible to compound together two given forms~~

~~(a, 6, c), (a', 6', c'), is that their determinants shall be to each other in the proportion of two square numbers; in particular, the two forms may have the same determinant D ; and when this is so the compound form (4, B, C) will also have the same determinant D. The rules for this composition of~~

~~two forms of the same determinant have been (as part of the general theory) investigated and established. The forms compounded of equivalent forms are equivalent to each other; we thus in effect compound classes, viz., considering any two classes, the composition of their representative forms gives a form which is the representative of a new class, and the composition of any two forms belonging to the two classes respectively gives a form belonging to the new class. But, this once under- stood, it is more simple to speak of the composition of forms, that is, of the forms belonging to the finite system of representative forms for a given determinant; and it will be enough to consider the properly primitive forms.~~

~~30. The principal form (1, 0, D) compounded with any other form (a, 6, c) gives rise to this same form (Ca earale the principal form is on this account denoted by 1, viz, denoting the other form by 4, and expressing composition in like manner with multiplication, we have1.¢=¢. The form may be compounded with itself, giving a form denoted by $7; compounding this again with ¢, we have a form denoted by ¢°; and soon. Since the whole number of forms is finite we must in this manner arrive at the principal form, say we have ¢”= 1, » being the least expo- nent for which this equation is satisfied. In particular, if the form ¢ belong to the principal genus, then the forms ¢*, $,...¢”-1 will all belong to the principal genus, or the principal genus will include the forms 1, ¢, ¢%,... 6-1, the powers of a form ¢ having the exponent n.~~

~~31. Regular and irregular determinants. The principal genus may consist of such a series of forms, and the deter- minant is then said to be regular ; in particular, for a nega- tive determinant D,= — 1 to — 1000, the determinant is always regular except in the thirteen cases — D = 243, 307,~~

~~339, 459, 576, 580, 675, 755, 820, 884, 891, 900, 974~~

~~(and, Perott, in Crelle, vol. xev., 1883, except also for — D=468, 931); the determinant is here said to be ir- regular. Thus for each of the values — D = 576,580,820, 900, the principal genus consists of four forms, not 1, 4, ¢, 4°, where #*=1, but 1, $,),,, $4, where ¢?=1, ¢,2=1, and therefore also ($¢,)? = 1.~~

Compounding together any two forms, we have a form with the characters compounded of the characters of the two forms ; and in particular, combining a form with itself, we have a form with the characters of the principal form. Or, what is the same thing, any two genera compounded together give rise to a determinate genus, viz., the genus having the characters compounded of the characters of the two genera ; and any genus compounded with itself gives rise to the principal genus.

Considering any regular determinant, suppose that there is more than one genus, and that the number of forms in each genus is=n; then, except in the case n= 2, it can be shown that there are always forms having the exponent 2n. For instance, in the case D = — 35 we have two genera each of three forms ; there will be a form g having the exponent 6, —g°=1; and the forms are 1, g, g?, g3, g4, g°, where 1, 9', g', belong to the principal genus, and g, g?, 9°, to the other genus. The characters refer to (5); (7); and

the forms are

a atare (ip 0, 35) 1 pee) (3, re AL, 12) g GL oe (5, 0, 7) 9 ae lp 9) gf (3, a 12) re

621

An instance of the case n=1 is D= —2 1, there are here four genera each of a single form 1, c, C, CC, where c? = 1, c7=1; an instance of the case n=2 is D= — 88, there

are here two genera each of two forms l, c, and Crees, where c?= 1, c,?=1, thus there is here no form having the exponent 2n. (See Cayley, Tables, dc., in Crelle, vol. lx., 1862, pp. 357-372.) We may have Qk+1 genera each of m forms, viz., such a system may be represented by al ae oes ee, es relies e)(1, ¢;) toe cl; C1); where O91, ct=1, ¢42=1, ... @,.1=1; there is no peculiarity in the form ¢, we may instead of it take any form such as c¢, cc,¢, &c., for each of these is like ¢, a form belonging to the exponent 2n, and such that the even powers give the principal genus.

32. Ternary and higher quadratic forms—cubic forms, &c. The theory of the ternary quadratic forms

(a, 6, c, a', B', c')(a, y, 2)®, =aa* + by? + cx? + Qa'yx + QW'ex + 2c ; or when only the coefficients are attended to & Ht ay

2

has been studied in a very complete manner 3 and those of the quaternary and higher quadratic forms have also been studied ; in particular the forms 22+ 2+ 2%, a2 + 242242 composed of three or four squares ; and the like forms with five, six, seven, and eight squares. The binary cubic forms (a, , ¢, d(x, y)8, = ax + 3bx2y + 3cay? + dy?, or when only the coefficients are attended to (a, 6, c, d), have also been considered, though the higher binary forms have been scarcely considered at all. The special ternary cubic forms ax? + by? + ca + Gleyz have been considered. Special forms of the degree » with n variables, the products of linear factors, present themselves in the theory of the division of the circle (the Kreistheilung) and of the complex numbers connected therewith ; but it can hardly be said that these have been studied as a part of the general theory of forms.

Complex Theories.

33, The complex theory which first presented itself is that of the numbers a+¢ composed with the imaginary i, = / — 1; here if aand bare ordinary, or say simplex posi- tive or negative integers, including zero, we regard a + 67 as an integer number, or saysimply as a number in this complex theory. We have here a zero 0 (a=0, =0) and the units 1, 7, — 1, —2, or as these may be written 1, ¢, 22, 23 (¢4=1); the numbers a + 01, a — b¢, are said to be conjugate numbers, and their product (a+ 0i)(a — 61), =a? +62, is the norm of each of them. And so the norm of the real number a is =a', and that of the pure imaginary number 07 is = 62, Denoting the norm by the letter V, V(a+b7) =a? +62,

Any simplex prime number, =1 (mod. 4), is the sum of two squares a*+ 6%, for instance 13=9-+4, and it is thus a product (a= 07)(a — b2), that is, it is not a prime number in the present theory, but each of these factors (or say any number @+ 62, where a?+6? is a prime number in the simplex theory) is a prime; and any simplex prime number, = 3 (mod. 4), is also a prime in the present theory. The number 2, = (1 +7)(1—2), is not a prime, but the

factors 1+7, 1-7 are each of them prime; these last differ only by a unit factor <—1 +7=7(1-72)—so that 2,= —7(1+7)3, contains a square factor.

In the simplex theory we have numbers, for instance 5, — 5, differing from each other only by a unit factor, but we can out of these select one, say the positive number, and attend by preference to this number of the pair. It is in this way—viz., by restricting a, 6, c,... to denote terms of the series 2, 3, 5, 7, .. . of positive primes other than unity— that we are enabled to make the definite statement, a posi- tive number J is, and that in one way only, = a%dPc . .. ; if V be a positive or negative number, then the theorem of

course is, V is, and that in one way only, =(—1)”a*6Be7. .,

622

where m=O, or 1, and a, 6,c,.. 4, B, y,. are as before. To obtain a like definite statement in the present theory we require to distinguish between the four numbers a+bi, —a—bi, —b+a, b— ai, which differ from each other only by a unit factor—1,7. Consider a number a 07 where a and 8 are the one of them odd and the other even (a and 6 may be either of them =0, the other is then odd), every prime number a+ bi other than +1 +z is necessarily of this form, for if a@ and b were both even the number would be divisible by 2, or say by (1 +2)?, and if a and 6 were both odd it would be divisible by 1+7; then of the four associated numbers a+b:-—a—li, b+az, b— az, there is one and only one, a+¢, such that 6 is even and a+b—1 is evenly even; or say one and only one which is =1 (mod. 2(1+2)). We distinguish such one of the four num bers from the other three and call it a priomary number ; the units +1, +2, and the numbers +1+7 are none of them primary numbers. We have then the theorem, a number WV is in one way only =#””(1 +7)” A*B8 .., where m=0, 1, 2, or 3, 2 is =0 or a positive integer, A, B,... are primary primes, a, 8,... positive integers. Here? is a unit of the theory, 1 +7 is a special prime having reference to the number 2, but which might, by an extension of the definition, be called a primary prime, and so reckoned as one of the numbers A, B,...; the theorem stated broadly still is that the number J is, and that in one way only, a product of prime factors, but the foregoing complete state- ment shows the precise sense in which this theorem must be understood. A like explanation is required in other complex theories; we have to select out of each set of primes differing

only by unit factors some one number as a primary prime, and the general theorem then is that every number WV is, and that in one way only, =P. A*BSC7V…, where P is a product of unities, and A, B, C,..are primary primes.

34, We have in the simplex theory (ante, No. 10) the theorem that, » being an odd prime, there exists a system of p—1 residues, that is, that any number not divisible by p is, to the modulus p, congruent to one, and only one, of the p — 1 numbers 1, 2, 3,...—1. The analogous theorem in the complex theory is that for any prime number »p other than +1+¢ there exists a system of M(p)-1 residues, that is, that every number not divisible by p is, to the modulus p, congruent to one of these V(p)—1 numbers.

But p may be a real prime such as 3, or a complex prime such as 3+22; and the system of residues presents itself naturally under very different forms in the two cases respectively. Thus in the case p= 3, (3) =9, the residues may be taken to be ,

eo

4, 147, 247, 2, 1422, 242%,

being in number &(3)-1=8. And for p=3+ 2%, N(3 + 27) =13, they may be taken to be the system of residues of 13 in the simplex theory, viz., the real numbers ee. eae 12. We have in fact 5 +¢= (2 + 32)(1 —2), that is, 5+7¢=0 (mod. 2+ 32), and consequently a+ 6¢=a-— 5b, a real number which, when a+ 07 is not divisible by 3 + 22, may have any one of the foregoing values 1, 2, 3,...12.

‘ Taking then any number «# not divisible by p, the V(p)-1 residues each multiplied by # are, to the modulus p, congruent to the series of residues in a different order ; and we thus have,—say this is Fermat’s theorem for the complex theory—aMv)-1]=0 (mod. p), with all its con- sequences, in particular the theory of prime roots.

In the case of a complex modulus such as 3+ 22, the theory is hardly to be distinguished from its analogue in the ordinary theorem ; a prime root is=2, and the series of powers is 2, 4, 8, 3, 6, 12, 11, 9, 5, 10, 7, 1, for the

modulus 3+ 2¢ as for the modulus 13. But for a real prime such as 3 the prime root isa complex number; taking

oy ad

NUMBERS

it to be =2+7, we have (2+7)§—1=0 (mod. 3), and the series of powers in fact is 2 7, ¢, 2 22, 2, 1 + 22, 22, 1+, 1, viz., we thus have the system of residues (mod. 3).

We have in like manner a theory of quadratic residues ;

a Legendrian symbol G2 (which, if p, g, are uneven

primes not necessarily primary but subject to the condition that their imaginary parts are even, denotes +1 or —1 according as p#a-1) is =1 or = —1 (mod. gq), so that

&] = +2 or =i according as p is or is not a residue

of q), a law of reciprocity expressed by the very simple

form of equation [P] = [.g.pe and generally a system g P

of properties such as that which exists in the simplex theory.

The theory of quadratic forms (a, 6, c) has been studied in this complex theory ; the results correspond to those of the simplex theory.

35. The complex theory with the imaginary cube root of unity has also been studied ; the imaginary element is here y, =4(-1+ Vv —3), a root of the equation y?+y+1=0; the form of the complex number is thus a+by, where a and 6 are any positive or negative integers, including zero. The conjugate number is a+by?,=a-—b-—by, and the product (a+by)(a+ by'), =a?-— ab+0?, is the norm of each of the factors a+ by, a+ by. The whole theory corresponds very closely to, but is somewhat more simple than, that of the complex numbers a + 0.

36. The last-mentioned theory is a particular case of the complex theory for the imaginary Ath roots of unity, » being an odd prime. Here a is determined by the equation

— = i that is, as-1+a%-24 … +a+1=0, and the'

-1

form of thecomplexnumberis/(a), =a + ba+ca2…-+ha~*, where a, 6, c,...&, are any positive or negative integers, including zero. We have A-—1 conjugate forms, viz., F(a), f(a2),.... f(a*—1), and the product of these is the norm of each of thefactors N/(a), = Vf(a?),... = Nf(a—}), Taking g any prime root of A, g-!-1=0 (mod. A), the roots a, a2,...a*—1, may be arranged in the order

a, 09, a9,...a9%-*; and we have thence a grouping of the

roots in periods, viz., if A—1 be in any manner whatever

expressed as a product of two factors, A-1=ef, we may with the A—1 roots form e periods 7, 7,,...e-1, each of froots. For instance \=13; a prime root is g = 2, and

X\—1=ef=3.4; then the three periods each of four roots

are

Mae +eb+al+a5, m=a?+a+all+ ql, Mg=at+aS+a? +07,

So also if ef =2.6 then the 2 periods each of 6 roots are M=e at eta? +a? +al0, m=e+ao+a8+4+al+ar+a7;

and so in other cases. In particular, if f=1 and conse-

quently e=A-1, the e periods each of f roots are in fact

the single roots a, a9,... 7 We may in place of the original form of the complex number | fla)=atbatca2…+had-2,

~~consider the new form f(y)=an+6n,...+l), _,, which when f=1 is equivalent to the original form, but in any other case denotes a special form of complex number ; instead of A—1 we have only e conjugate numbers, and the product of these e numbers may be regarded as the norm of f(7).~~

~~37. The theory for the roots a includes as part of itself the theory for the periods corresponding to every decom- position whatever 4 — 1=ef of A—1 into two factors, but~~

~~NU wa Bek RS~~

~~each of these may be treated apart from the others as a theory complete in itself. In particular, a simple case is that of the half-periods e=2, f=4(A — 1); and, inasmuch as the characteristic phenomenon of ideal numbers presents itself in this theory of the half-periods (first for the value A= 23), it will be sufficient, by way of illustration of the general theory, to consider only this more special and far easier theory ; we may even assume A = 23.1~~

~~For the case in question, 4 — 1 =ef = 2. 4(X- 1), we have the two periods 19, 7,, each of 4(A—1) roots; from the expressions for 4, 7,, in terms of the roots we obtain at once 7)+%,=—1, and with a little more difficulty om = —4(A—1) or #(A+1) according as X is =1 or 3 (mod, 4), that is, in the two cases respectively ae are the roots of the equation 4?+7-—4(A—1)=0, and 7? +n+4(A+1)=0. And this equation once obtained there is no longer any occasion to consider the original equation of the order A—1, but the theory is that of the complex numbers ay) +by,, or if we please a+b, composed with the roots of this quadric equation,—say the complex numbers a+ by, where aand 6 are any positive or negative integer numbers, including zero. In the case A=23 the quadric equation is 7?+7+6=0. We have N(a+ by) =(a + by)(a + bn.) = a2 — ab +4(A + 1)0?; and for 4=23 this is V(a+6n)=a2- ab+66% It may be remarked that there is a connexion with the theory of the quadratic forms of the determinant — 23, viz., there are here the three improperly primitive forms (2, 1, 12), (4, 1, 6), (4, —1, 6), 23 being the smallest prime number for which there exists more than one improperly primitive form.~~

~~38. Considering then the case A = 23, we have No: My» the~~

roots of the equation 7?+7+6=0; and a real number P.

is composite when it is=(a+by)(a+bn,), =a? — ab + 622, viz., if 4P=(2a—6)?+ 2302, Hence no number, and in particular no positive real prime P, can be composite unless it is a (quadratic) residue of 23; the residues of 23 are 1, 2, 3, 4,6, 8, 9, 12, 13, 16, 18; and we have thus, for instance, 5, 7, 11, as numbers which are not composite, while 2, 3, 13, are numbers which are not by the condition precluded from being composite: they are not, according to the foregoing signification of the word, composite (for 8, 12, 52, are none of them of the form x? + 23y?), but some such numbers, residues that is of 23, are composite, for instance 59, = (5— 2n))(5—2y,). And we have an indi- cation, so to speak, of the composite nature of all such num- bers ; take for instance 13, we have (yn —4)(n+5)= — 2.13, where 13 does not divide either 7 — 4 or 7 +5, and we are led to conceive it as the product of two ideal factors, one of them dividing y — 4, the other dividing 7+5. It appears, moreover, that a power 13? is in fact composite, viz., we have 138= (31 —12y,)(81-12n,), (2197 =961 +3724 864): and writing 13=

1 Tn the theory of the roots a, ideal numbers do not present them- selves for the values \=38, 5, or 7; they do for the value A=23. It is stated in Smith's "Report on the Theory of Numbers," Brit. Assoc. Report for 1860, p. 136, that "for the intermediate cases A=11, 18, 17, and 19, it is uncertain whether they do or do not present them- selves." The writer is not aware whether this question has been settled ; but in Reuschle's Zafeln, 1875, no ideal factors present them- selves for these values of); and it is easy to see that in the theory of the half-periods the ideal factors first present themselves for the value \=23. It may be remarked that the solution of the question depends on the determination of a system of fundamental units for the values in question X=11, 18, 17, and 19; the theory of the units in the several complex theories is an important and difficult part of the theory, not presenting itself in the theory of the half-periods, which is alone attended to in the text.

every positive real prime which is a residue of 23 is thus a product of two factors ideal or actual. And, reverting to the equation (y—4)(7+5)= —2.13,

or as this.may be written

(m — 4)(m+5)= — X/1= 19 8/1 =m, 8/31—12y, 2/31 124, we have (, — 4)? and (1 — 1))(31 — 12) each = 14 + 55m, or say

m-t= x/1—% 8/31 —12%;

and similarly

m+5=- A/1—m, 8/31—12m,, so that we verify that y, — 4, 7, +5, do thus in fact each of them contain an ideal factor of 13.

39. We have 2= 71 — No x = M1 Viz., the ideal multi- plier ./I— renders actual one of the ideal factors /1=n, of 2, and it is found that this same ideal multi-

plier /1—%) renders actual one of the two ideal factors of any other decomposable number 3, 13, &c.,

M1 = 2g T= m9=14%, 9/381= 12m T= m= — 5-9, &e. Similarly the conjugate multiplier "1 — n, renders actual the other ideal factor of any number 2, 3, 13, &e. We have thus two classes, or, reckoning also actual numbers, three classes of prime numbers, viz., (1) ideal primes rendered actual by the multiplier ./1—%, (2) ideal primes rendered actual by the multiplier 4/1 —7,, (3) actual primes. This is a general property in the several complex theories ; there is always a finite number of classes of ideal numbers, distinguished according to the multipliers by which they are rendered actual; the actual numbers form a " principal" class.

40. General theory of congruences—irreducible func- tions. In the complex theory relating to the roots of the equation 77+7+6=0 there has just been occasion to consider the equation (7 — 4)(y+5)= — 2.13, or say the congruence (7 —4)(7+5)=0 (mod. 13); in this form the relation 1?+7+6=0 is presupposed, but if, dropping this equation, 7 be regarded as arbitrary, then there is the congruence 7?+7+6=(7-—4)(n+5) (mod. 13). For a different modulus, for instance 11, there is not any such congruence exhibiting a decomposition of 7?+%+6 into factors. The function 7?+7+6 is irreducible, that is, it is not a product of factors with integer coefficients; in respect of

the modulus 13 it becomes reducible, that is, it breaks up into factors having integer coefficients, while for the modulus 11 it continues irreducible. And there is a like general theory in regard to any rational and integral function /(#) with integer coefficients; such function, assumed to be irreducible, may for a given prime modulus p continue irreducible, that is, it may not admit of any decomposition into factors with integer coefficients ; or it may become reducible, that is, admit of a decomposition F(a) = $(a)¥(a)x(a) .. (mod. p). And, when this is so, it is thus a product, in one way only, of factors (2), ¥(a), x(#),.., which are each of them irreducible in re- gard to the same modulus p; any such factor may be a linear function of x, and as such irreducible ; or it may be an irreducible function of the second or any higher degree. It is hardly necessary to remark that in this theory func- tions which are congruent to the modulus p are regarded as identical, and that in the expression of /'(#) an irre- ducible function $(#) may present itself either as a simple factor, or as a multiple factor, with any exponent. The decomposition is analogous to that of a number into its prime factors; and the whole theory of the rational and integral function /'("") in regard to the modulus p is in many respects analogous to that of a prime number re- garded asa modulus. The theory has also been studied where the modulus is a power 7".

624

41, The congruence -imaginaries of Galois. If F(#) be an irreducible function to a given prime modulus p, this implies that there is no integer value of x satisfying the congruence F(x) = 0 (mod. p); we assume such a value and call it z, that is, we assume /'(7) =0 (mod. Pp); the step is exactly analogous to that by which, starting from the notion of a real root, we introduce into algebra the ordinary imaginary i= " —1. For instance, w— a+s3 is an irreducible function to the modulus 7, there is no integer solution of the congruence 2?—2+3=0 (mod. 7). Assuming a solution 7 such that 1+3=0 (mod. 7), we have, always to this modulus, 7?=7 3, and thence 23, a4, d&c., each of them equal to a linear function of 7. We consider the numbers of the form a+ i, where a and 6 are ordinary integers which may be regarded as having each of them the values 0, 1, 2, 3, 4,5, or 6; there are thus 7?,=49, such numbers, or, excluding zero, 48 numbers ; and it is easy to verify that these are in fact the numbers i, 2%... 1, #8, =1, that is, we have

~~i a prime root of the congruence a“8—1=0(mod. 7). The irreducible function may be of the third or any higher degree ; thus for the same modulus 7 there is the cubic function 2? — «+2, giving rise to a theory of the numbers of the form a+ bi + ci, where 7 is a congruence-imaginary such that 2? -7+2=0 (mod. 7); and instead of 7 the modulus may be any other odd prime p.~~

~~Ordinary Theory, Third Part.~~

~~42, In what precedes no mention has been made of the so-called Pellian equation «?— Dy*=1 (where D is a given positive number), and of the allied equations x? — Dy? = — iF or=+4, The equations with the sign + have always a series of solutions, those with the sign — only for certain values of D; in every case where the solutions exist a least solution is obtainable by a process depending on the expression of /D as a continued fraction, and from this least solution the whole series of solutions can be obtained without difficulty. The equations are very interesting, as well for their own sakes as in connexion with the theory of the binary quadratic forms of a positive non-square determinant.~~

~~43. The theory of the expression of a number as a sum of squares or polygonal numbers has been developed apart from the general theory of the binary, ternary, and other quadratic formstowhich it might be considered as belonging. The theorem for two squares, that every prime number of the form 42+ 1 is, and that in one way only, a sum of two squares, is a fundamental theorem in relation to the com- plex numbers a+0¢. A sum of two squares multiplied by a sum of two squares is always a sum of two squares, and hence it appears that every number of the form 2%(4n + 1) is (in general in a variety of ways) a sum of two squares.~~

~~Every number of the form 42+ 2 or 8x+3 is a sum of three squares ; even in the case of a prime number 82+ 3 there is in general more than one decomposition, thus 59 =25 42549 and=49+9+1. Since a sum of three squares into a sum of three squares is not a sum of three squares, it is not enough to prove the theorem in regard to the primes of the form 82+ 3.~~

~~Every prime number is (in general in more than one way) a sum of four squares; and therefore every number is (in general in more than one way) a~~

sum of four squares, for a sum of four squares into a sum of four squares is always a sum of four squares.

Every number is (in general in several ways) a sum of m+2 (m+2)gonal numbers, that is, of numbers of the form 4m(x?—x)+a; and of these m—2 may be at pleasure equal to 0 or 1; in particular, every number is a sum of three triangular numbers (a theorem of Fermat's).

The theorems in regard to three triangular numbers and

NUM—NUM

to four square numbers are exhibited by certain remark- able identities in the Theory of Elliptic Functions ; and generally there is in this subject a great mass of formulee connected with the theory of the representation of numbers by quadratic forms. The various theorems in regard to the number of representations of a number as the sum of a definite number of squares cannot be here referred to.

44, The equation «+ =z, where A is any positive integer greater than 2, is not resoluble in whole numbers (a theorem of Fermat's). The general proof depends on the theory of the complex numbers composed of the Ath roots of unity, and presents very great difficulty ; in parti- cular, distinctions arise according as the number A does or does not divide certain of Bernoulli's numbers.

45. Lejeune-Dirichlet employs for the determination of the number of quadratic forms of a given positive or nega- tive determinant a remarkable method depending on the summation of a series =f-%, where the index s is greater than but indefinitely near to unity.

46. Very remarkable formule have been given by Legendre, Tchebycheff, and Riemann for the approximate determination of the number of prime numbers less than a given large number x. Factor tables have been formed for the first nine million numbers, and the number of primes counted for successive intervals of 50,000 ; and these are found to agree very closely with the numbers calculated from the approximate formule. Legendre's expression

zi log 2 — A' different from unity ; Tchebycheff's depends on the log- arithm-integral li(z); and Riemann's, which is the most accurate, but is of a much more complicated form, con- tains a series of terms depending on the same integral.

The classical works on the Theory of Numbers are Legendre, Théorie des Nombres, 1st ed. 1798, 3d ed. 1880; Gauss, Disquisi- tiones Arithmetice, Brunswick, 1801 (reprinted in the collected works, vol. i, Gottingen, 1863; French trans., under the title

Recherches Arithmétiques, by Poullet-Delisle, Paris, 1807); and Lejeune-Dirichlet, Vorlesungen tber Zahlentheorie, 3d ed., with

extensive and valuable additions by Dedekind, Brunswick, 1879-81. We have by the late Prof. H. J. 8. Smith the extremely valuable series of "Reports on the Theory of Numbers," Parts I. to VI., British Association Reports, 1859-62, 1864-65, which, with his own original researches, will be printed in the collected works now in course of publication by the Clarendon Press. Sce also Cayley, "Report of the Mathematical Tables Committce," Brit. Assoc. Re- port, 1875, pp. 305-306, for list of tables relating to the Theory of Numbers, and Mr. J. W. L. Glaisher's introduction to the actor Table for the Sixth Million, London, 1883, in regard to the approxi- mate formule for the number of prime numbers. (A. C.)

NUMENIUS, one of the so-called Neo-Pythagoreans, and a forerunner of the Neo-Platonists, was a native of Apamea in Syria, and flourished during the latter half of the second Christian century. He was a somewhat volu- minous writer in philosophy and philosophical biography, but all that is known of his opinions is found in passing references by Clement of Alexandria, Origen, Eusebius, and one or two of the Neo-Platonists. He seems to have taken Pythagoras as his highest authcrity, and at the same time to have been unaware of any discrepancy be- tween his own views and those of Plato, whom he further described as an " Atticizing Moses," and as deriving all his knowledge, like Pythagoras, from the East. He held a kind of trinity, the members of which he designated as mdémmos, ékyovos, and dmdéyovos respectively,—the first being the supreme deity, or pure vots, the second the demiurge, and the third the world.

~~NUMERALS. The use of visible signs to represent numbers and aid reckoning is not only older than writing but older than the development of numerical language on the denary system ; we count by tens because our ancestors counted on their fingers and named numbers accordingly. So used, the fingers are really numerals, that is, visible~~

~~is of the form where A is a constant not very~~

~~NUMERALS~~

~~numerical signs ; and in antiquity the practice of counting by these natural signs prevailed in all classes of society. Even at this day if a Wallachian peasant wants to multiply 8 by 9 he effects this by making the fingers of each hand, counting from the thumb, represent the numbers from 6 to 10 consecutively. He therefore sets his question by stretching out the ring finger of the right hand and the middle finger of the left. He then counts that in the direction from the thumb there is one more finger on the right hand and two on the left. Multiplying 1 by 2 he gets 2 as the units of the product sought. Again the out- stretched fingers are respectively the third and fourth from the thumb ; adding 3 and 4 he gets 7 for the tens of the product. By this rule he does not need to know the multiplication table above 4 times 4. In the later times of antiquity the finger symbols were developed into a system capable of expressing all numbers below 10,000. The left hand was held up flat with the fingers together. The units from 1 to 9 were expressed by various positions of the third, fourth, and fifth fingers alone, one or more of these being either closed on the palm or simply bent at the middle joint, according to the number meant. The thumb and index were thus left free to express the tens by a variety of relative positions, ¢.g., for 30 their points were brought together and stretched forward ; for 50 the thumb was bent like the Greek I' and brought against the ball of the index. The same set of signs if executed with the thumb and index of the right hand meant hundreds instead of tens, and the unit signs if performed on the right hand meant thousands.!~~

~~The fingers serve to express numbers, but to make a permanent note of numbers some kind of mark or tally is needed. Thus the Romans kept count of years by yearly driving a nail into the temple of Minerva. The nail in this case is a sort of hieroglyphic, and in all systems of hieroglyphics signs for~~

numbers naturally occur. A single stroke is the obvious representation of unity ; higher numbers are indicated by groups of strokes. But when the strokes become many they are confusing, and so a new sign must be introduced, perhaps for 5, at any rate for 10, 100, 1000, and so forth. Intermediate numbers are ex- pressed by the addition of symbols, as in the Roman system CCXxxvi = 236. This simplest way of writing numbers is well seen in the Babylonian inscriptions, where all numbers from 1 to 99 are got by repetition of the vertical arrow- head Y= 1, and a barbed sign ¢=10. But the most inter- esting case is the Egyptian, because from its hieratic form sprang the Phoenician numerals, and from them' in turn those of Palmyra and the Syrians, as illustrated in table 1. Two things are to be noted in this table—first, the way in which groups of units come to be joined by a cross line, and then run together into a single symbol, and, further, the substitution in the hundreds of a principle of multipli- cation for the mere addition of symbols. The same thing appears in Babylonia, where a smaller number put to the right of the sign for 100 (Y~) is to be added to it, but put to the left gives the number of hundreds. Thus

for a thousand, a myriad, 100,000 (a frog), a million (a nan with arms stretched out in admiration), and even for ten millions. –

Alphabetic writing did not do away with the use of numerical symbols, which were more perspicuous and com- pendious than words written at length. But the letters "1 The system is described by Nicolaus Rhabda of Smyrna (8th century A.D.), ap. N. Caussinus, De eloquentia sacra et humana, Paris, 1636. Bede gives essentially the same system, and it has survived in the East to the present day ; see especially Rédiger, " Ueber die im Orient gebriiuchliche Fingersprache, &c.," D. Af. G., 1845, and Palmer in Journ. of Philology, ii. 247 sqq.

625

of the alphabet themselves came to be used as numerals. One way of doing this was to use the initial letter of the name of a number as its sign. This was the old Greek notation, said to go back to the time of Solon, and usually named after the grammarian Herodian, who described it about 200 a.v. I stood for 1, II for do, & for 10, H for 100, X for 1000, and M for 10,000; H with A in its bosom was 50, with H in its bosom it was 500.

Another way of using the alphabet depended on the fixed order of its letters. The simplest application of this principle is to use consecutive letters for consecutive numbers. Thus the 24 letters of the Ionic alphabet stood for the numbers 1 to 24, as we still see in the letters attached to the books of the Iliad. Another way common to the Greeks, Hebrews, and Syrians, and which in Greece gradually displaced the

Syriac. Palmyrene. Pheenician. — Hieratic. — Hieroglyphic. ta iy fil er} i c Wy Hy yy fi 2 1) Ii (| ie in| 3 eel Vit | 4 mn} 4 ==) fe Nill fl) HM} 5 ——— g tI Ce in| 6 = Ny \ HHH 7U min} 7 Pia NY Wun | Ba MN} 8 fp MNS MYM | QOD Mn} 9 DA | 7 — 9| AKX N| 10 We j= {I BN 1a) aa r=! ms} mmm— s| 8S} mma! a9 ° 3 0 3g ~ NN | 20 jo 13 = \YA INN] 92 we 2 =H % ANN! 30 co AD AW end NANN]| 40 7. 7788 hy 5 annnn| so ooo 832 hed +4) — nnannn; ¢o 7° ?| “B85 | WHY 2] Ann Anan] 70 oc00) =2838| AYYY #4) annnannnt! so J — -78328 | ~HYAH 24; nannannann!] 90 Cd PHY Pl lol N J 92 | 100 Cl ny (ey ten a ?? | 200 Cc} > o PPP | 300

Table 1.

Herodian numbers, was to make the first nine letters stand for the units and the rest for the tens and hundreds. With the old Semitic alphabet of 22 letters this system broke down at n=400, and the higher hundreds had to be got by juxtaposition ; but when the Hebrew square character got the distinct final forms 4, B,], 5, y these served for the hundreds from 500 to 900. The Greeks with their larger alphabet required but three supplemental signs, which they got by keeping for this purpose two old Pheenician letters which were not used in writing (F or s=1=6, and 9 = P=90), and by adding sampi 7» for 900.2

2 The Arabs, who quite changed the order of the alphabet and extended it to twenty-eight letters, kept the original values of the old letters (putting G» for D and ¢4 for v’), while the hundreds from 500 to 1000 were expressed by the new letters in order from & to é. In the time of Caliph Walid (705-715 a.p.) the Arabs had as yet no signs of numeration.

XVIT. — 79

~~Among the Greeks the first certain use of this system seems to be on coins of Ptolemy II. The first trace of it on Semitic ground is on Jewish coins of the Has- moneans. It is the foundation of gematria as we find it in Jewish books and in the apocalyptic number of the beast (IDP j71) = 666). gematria is; the name is borrowed from the Greek.~~

~~The most familiar case of the use of letters as numerals is the Roman system. Here C is the initial of centum and M of mille; but instead of these signs we find older~~

~~forms, consisting of a circle divided vertically for 1000 and horizontally, ©, or in the cognate Etruscan system divided into quadrants, , for 100. From the sign for 1000, still sometimes roughly shown in print as C19, comes D, the half of the symbol for half the number ; and the older forms of L, viz., L or J, suggest that this also was once half of the (Etruscan A) is half of xX, which The system, therefore, is hardly alphabetic in origin, though the idea has been thrown out that the signs for 10, 50, and 100 were originally the~~

~~hundred symbol. So V itself is not a true Roman letter.~~

~~Greek X, W, &, which were not used in writing Latin.! When high numbers had to be expressed systems such~~

~~as we have described became very cumbrous, and in alpha-~~

~~betic systems it became inevitable to introduce a principle of periodicity, by which, for example, the signs for 1, 2, 3,~~

~~&c., might be used with a difference to express the same~~

~~number of thousands. Language itself suggested this~~

~~principle, and so we find in Hebrew Sor in Greek a= 1000. So further BMv, BM., or simply B.=20,000 (2 myriads). If now the larger were always written to the left of the smaller elements of a number the diacritic mark could be dispensed with in such a case as Boda (instead of ora) = 2831, for here it was plain that B= 2000, not 9, since otherwise it would not have preceded = 800. We have here the germ of the very important notion that~~

the value of a symbol may be periodic and defined by its position, The same idea had appeared much earlier among the Babylonians, who reckoned by powers of 60, calling 60 a soss and 60 sixties a sar. On the tablets of Senkerah a list of squares and cubes is given on this principle, and here the square of 59 is written 58°1—that 1S, 58 × 60+1; and the cube of 30 is 7°30—that is, 7 sar+ 30 soss=7 × 6024+ 30×60. Here again we have value by position ; but, as there is no zero, it is left to the judgment of the reader to know which power of 60 is meant in each case. The sexagesimal system, long specially associated with astronomy, has left a trace in our division of the hour and of the circle, but as language goes by powers of 10 it is practically very inconvenient for most purposes of reckon- ing. The Greek mathematicians used a sort of decimal system ; thus Archimedes was able to solve his problem of stating a number greater than that of the grains of sand which would fill the sphere of the fixed stars by dividing numbers into octades, the unit of the second octade being 10° and of the third 10°. So too Apollonius of Perga teaches multiplication by regarding 7 as the pythmen of 70, 700, and so forth. One must then find successively the product of the several pythmens of the multiplier and the multipli- cand, noticing in each case what are tens, what hundreds, and so on, and adding the results. The want of a sign for zero made it impossible mechanically to distinguish the tens, hundreds, &c., as we now do. : Very early, however, a mechanical contrivance, the abacus, had been introduced for keeping numbers of different de- nominations apart. This was a table with compartments or columns for counters, each column representing a dif- ferent value to be given to a counter placed on it. This might be used either for concrete arithmetic—say with

1 See further Fabretti, Paldéographische Studien.

But we do not know how old

columns for pence, shillings, and pounds ; or for abstract reckoning—say with the Babylonian sexagesimal system. An old Greek abacus found at Salamis has columns which, taken from right to left, give a counter the

~~value of 1, 10, 100, 1000 drachms, and finally of 1 talent (6000 drachms) respectively. An abacus on the decimal system might be ruled on paper or on a board strewed with fine sand, and was then a first step to the decimal system. Two important steps, however, were still lacking; the first was to use instead of counters distinctive marks (ciphers) for the digits from one to nine; the second and more import- ant was to get a sign for zero, so that the columns might be dispensed with, and the denomination of each cipher seen at once by counting the number of digits following it. These two steps taken, we have at once the modern so-called Arabic numerals and the possibility of modern arithmetic ; but the invention of the ciphers and zero came but slowly, and their history is a most obscure problem.~~

~~What is quite certain is that our present decimal system, in its complete form, with the zero which enables us to do without the ruled columns of the abacus, is of Indian origin, From the Indians it passed to the Arabians, probably along with the astronomical tables brought to Baghdad by an Indian ambassador in 773 a.p. At all events the system was explained in Arabic in the early part of the 9th century by the famous Abu Ja'far Mohammed al-Kharizmi, and from that time continued to spread, though at first slowly, through the Arabian world.~~

~~In Europe the complete system with the zero was derived from the Arabs in the 12th century, and the arithmetic based on this system was known by the name of algoritmus, algorithm. This barbarous word is nothing more than a transcription of Al-Kharizmi, as was conjectured by Reinaud, and has become plain since the publication of a unique Cambridge MS. containing a Latin translation—perhaps by Adelhard of Bath—of the lost arithmetical treatise of the Arabian mathematician.? The arithmetical methods of Khdrizmi were simplified by later Eastern writers, and these simpler methods were introduced to Europe by Leonardo of Pisa in the West and Maximus Planudes in the East. The term zero appears to come from the Arabic sifr through the form zephyro used by Leonardo.~~

~~Thus far recent inquirers are agreed. The disputed points are—(1) the origin and age of the Indian system, and (2) whether or not a less developed Indian system, without the zero but with the nine other ciphers used on an abacus, entered Europe before the rise of~~

Islam, and prepared the way for a complete decimal notation. (1) The use of numerals in India can be followed back to the

> hae fue ae ge OO NéndGhat(Indian)3 — = = ¥ nae | u | oe five — —-£= 4+ £4 eID Y F Devandgari 5 +X "ee8 & Me Ce 39 Eastem Arabice «=| 2 3 § 8B Y VY 4 9 0 Ghobar? l Ute ¥Y 64 Y Jo Boetius8 i a = 2 Gg B zt 8 2

Nana Ghat inscriptions, supposed to date from the early part of the 3d century B.c. These are signs for units, tens, and hundreds, as in the other old systems we have dealt with. Like the Indian alphabet, they are probably derived from abroad, but, as in the case

-2 Published by Boncompagni in Trattati d' Aritmetica, Rome, 1857.

3 From Sir E. C. Bayley's paper in J. R. A. S., 1882.

4 From Burnell's South Indian Paleography, 1874.

5 Of the 10th century. (From Burnell, op. cit.)

6 Of the 10th century; from a MS. written at Shirdz. Woepcke, Mémoire sur la propagation des chiffres Indiens.)

7 From a MS. at Paris. (From Woepcke, op. cit.)

8 Erlangen (Altdorf) MS. (From Woepcke, op. cit.)

(From

NUM—NUM

of the alphabet, their origin is obscure. The forms of the later Indian nuinerals for the nine digits appear to be clearly derived from the earlier system. In table 2 the first two lines give forms earlier than the introduction of the system of position, while the Devanagari in the third line was used with a zero and position value. The ''cave" numerals were employed during the first centuries of the Christian era. The earliest known example of a date written on the modern system is of 738 A.D., while the old system is found in use as late as the early part of the 7th century (Bayley). On the other

~~hand, there is some evidence that a system of value by position was known to Sanskrit writers on arithmetic in the 6th Christian century. These writers, however, do not use ciphers, but symbolical words and letters, so that it is not quite clear whether they refer to a system which had a zero, or to a system worked on an abacus, where the zcro is represented bya blank column. Therc is no proof as yet for the use of any system of position in India before the 6th century, and nothing beyond conjecture can be offered as to its origin.~~

~~(2) In Europe, before the introduction of the algorithm or full Indo-Arabic system with the zero, we find a transition system in which calculations were made on the decimal system with an abacus, but instead of unit counters there were placed in the columns ciphers, with values from one to nine, and of forms that are at bottom the Indian forms and agree most nearly with the numerals used by the Arabs of Africa and Spain. For among the Arabs themselves there were varieties in the forms of the Indian numeral, and in particular an eastern and a western type. The latter is called ghobar (dust), a name which seems to connect it with the use of a sand-spread tablet for calculation. The abacus with ciphers instead of counters was used at Rheims about 970-980 by Gerbert, who afterwards was pope under the title of Sylvester II., and it became well known in the 11th century. Where did Gerbert learn the use of the abacus with ciphers? There is no direct evidence as to this, for the story in William of Malmesbury, that he stole it from an Arab in Spain, is generally given up as fabulous. On the other hand, no evidence is offered for an earlier use of the abacus with ciphers, except a passage describing the system in the Geometria ascribed to Boetius. If this book is genuine the Indian numerals were known in Europe and applied to the abacus in the 5th century, and Gerbert only revived the long- forgotten system. On this view we have to explain how Boctius got the ciphers. The Geometria ascribes the system to the ‘ Pytha- gorici ”—1.e., the Neo-Pythagoreans—and it has been thought pos- sible that the Indian forms for the numerals reached Alexandria, along with the cruder form of value by position involved in the use of the abacus without a zero, before direct communication be- tween Europe and India ceased, which it did about the 4th century A.D. It is then further conjectured by Woepcke that the ghobar numerals of the western Arabs were by them borrowed from the system of Boctius before the full Indian method with the zero reached them; and thus~~

~~the resemblance between these forms and those in MSS. of Boetius, which are essentially the same as in other MSS. of the 11th century, would be explained. This view, however, presents great difficulties, of which the total dis- appearance of all trace of the system between Boetius and Gerbert is only one. We have no proof that the Indians ever used such an abacus, or that they had value by position at so early a date as is required, and the ghobar numerals are too similar to those of the eastern Arabs to make it very credible that the two systems had been separated for centuries. The genuineness of the Geometria is still ably maintained by Cantor, but it has been attacked on other grounds than that of the passage about the abacus; and on the whole it is still an open question whether the abacus with ciphers is not the outcome of an carly imperfect knowledge of the Arabic system, Gerbert or some other having got the signs and a gencral idea of value by position without having an explanation of the zero.~~

~~See Cantor, Geschichte der Mathematik, vol. i., Leipsic, 1880, as the most recent general account of the subject ; also Chasles, papers in the Comptes Rendus, 1843; Friedlein, Die Zahlzeichen und das elementare Rechnen der Griechen und Rémer, &c., 1869; Woepcke, Sur lVintroduction de larithmétique Indien en occident, Rome, 1859, and Memoire sur la propagation des chiffres Indiens, Paris, 1863. For the palzographiy of the Indian nuimcrals see Burnell, Elements of S. Indian Palxography, 1874; and Sir E. C. Bayley in J. R. A. S., 1882, 1883. For Boetius compare Friedlein's edition of his arithmetic and geoinetry, Leipsic, 1867, and Weissenborn in Zeitsch. Math. Phys., xxiv. Other references to the copious literature will be found in Cantor and Friedlein, who also discuss the subject of the notation for fractions, which cannot be cntered on here. For systems passed over here, see Pihan, Exposé des signes de numération usités chez les peuples orientauz, Paris, 1860. (QW. R-8.)~~

~~NUMERIANUS, M. Auretius, Roman emperor, accom- panied his father, the emperor Carus, on the Persian expedition beyond the Tigris, and along with his absent brother, Carinus, was proclaimed emperor on the death of the former (December 283). Having resolved to abandon the campaign, he was returning towards Europe when he mysteriously died before Chalcedon was reached, eight months afterwards. Arrius Aper, prefect of the pretorians,~~

his father-in-law, suspected of having murdered him, was hastily stabbed by Diocletian, his successor. Numerianus is represented as having been a man of considerable literary attainments, as well as of singular gentleness, amiability, and purity.

NUMIDIA was the name given to a large tract of country in the north of Africa, extending along the Medi- terranean Sea from the confines of Mauretania to those of the Roman province of Africa. The term was, however, employed in very different senses, and within very different limits, at different periods of time. When Carthage was at the height of its power, and the Romans first came into contact with the nations of northern Africa, the name of Numidia was applied to the whole country from the river Mulucha (now called the Muliya), about 100 miles west of Oran, to the frontier of the Carthaginian territory, which nearly coincided with the modern regency of Tunis. It is in this sense that the term is employed by Polybius, and all succeeding historians down to the close of the Roman republic. The Numidians, as thus defined, were divided into two great tribes, the Massyli on the east, and the Masszsyli on the west,—the limit between the two territories being the river Ampsaga, which enters the sea to the west of the remarkable promontory called Tretum, now known as the Seven Capes. At the time of the Second Punic War the eastern tribe was under the government of Masinissa, who took part with the Romans in the contest, while his rival Syphax, king of the Massesylians, supported the cause of the Carthaginians. In consequence of this, after the close of the war, Syphax's dominions were forfeited, and united with those of Masi- nissa, who now ruled the whole Numidian people from the frontier of Mauretania to the boundary of the Cartha- ginian territory. That monarch, who attained to a great age, retained the whole of these extensive dominions till his death in 148 B.c., as was the case also with his son and successor Micipsa; but after the death of the latter in 118, the ambition of his nephew JucurrHa (¢.v.) in- volved him in a war with Rome, which ended in his defeat and death in 106.

Numidia was not, however, incorporated with the Roman empire until a later period. After the death of Jugurtha the western portion of his

dominions was added to those of Bocchus, king of Mauretania, while the remainder con- tinued to be governed by native princes until the civil war between Cesar and Pompey, in which Juba, then king of Numidia, having espoused the cause of the latter, and supported Scipio and Cato in Africa, was defeated by Ceesar, and put an end to his own life (46 B.c.). Numidia, in the more restricted sense which it had now acquired, became for a short time a Roman province, but in the settle- ment of affairs after the battle of Actium (30) it was restored to Juba IT., son of the preceding monarch, who had acquired the favour of Augustus. A few years later, however, Juba was transferred to the throne of Mauretania, including the whole western portion of the ancient Numi- dian monarchy as far as the river Ampsaga, while the Roman province of Numidia, which was now definitely constituted, comprised only the tract between that river and the Tusca, which formed the western limit of the Roman province of Africa. But though thus restricted in extent—-so as nearly to correspond with the modern French province of Constantine, while the kingdom of Numidia in the wider sense had included the whole of Algeria—the Roman province of Numidia attained a high degree of pros- perity and civilization, and was studded with numerous towns, the importance of which is attested by inscriptions still extant, as well as by the massive remains of their ancient monuments and works of public utility. This period of prosperity continued to be favoured by unbroken

Defini- tion.

How

it illus- trates history.

628

peace for more than four centuries, until the invasion of the Vandals in 428 a.p. reduced it to a condition of gradual decay; and the invasion of the Arabs in the 8th century again brought desolation upon the land, which was aggravated by continual misgovernment until the conquest of Algeria by the French within the present century.

~~The physical character of the country has been already described in the article AtcErRia. It may be briefly observed that the whole tract of northern Africa from the river Mulucha to the frontiers of the regency of Tunis may be divided into three parallel zones or regions : the Tell, or fertile district near the sea, the broad inland plateaus beyond it, and the Sahara, or barren region to the south of these uplands, sloping thence down to the great desert which is generally known by that name. The central upland tract assumes a more rugged and moun- tainous character in the eastern district, which formed the Roman province of Numidia, and now constitutes the French province of Constantine. But this elevated region breaks down abruptly towards the east, where it sends out only a few offshoots into the plains of Tunis, as well as to the south where it faces the wide expanse of the Sahara. It is here that is situated the mountain group called the Aures (the Mons Aurasius of Procopius), of which the highest summit, called by the Arabs Jebel Chellia, attains to an elevation of 7580 feet.~~

~~The name of the Numidians appears to have been nothing more than a Latinized form of the Greek term Nomades, vaguely applied by them to the wandering tribes of northern Africa. It could never have had any~~

~~et~~

ethnographical signification ; and there can be no doubt that the people thus designated were merely a portion of the great Berber race, which extended in ancient times from the shores of the Atlantic to the confines of Egypt, and which still, under the name of Kabyles, forms a por- tion of the population of both Algeria and Tunis. The Geetulians, who at the same period occupied the southern slopes of the mountains towards the Sahara, appear to have stood in much the same relation to the Numidians that the tribes called Tuaricks or Tuareg do at the present day to the comparatively civilized Kabyles of Algeria. But the Roman authority over these wanderers of the desert was of a very precarious character, and a line of outposts near the foot of the mountain range formed the limit of their practical dominion towards the south.

The chief towns of Numidia under the Romans were :—Cirta, the capital, in the interior, subsequently called Constantina, which name it still retains; Rusicada, on the coast, serving as its port, on the site now occupied by Philippeville ; and east of it the more important city of Hippo Regius (well known as the see of the celebrated Augustine), near the modern Bona. South of Cirta, in the interior, were Theveste (now Tebessa) and Lambesa (now Lambessa), with extensive Roman remains. But there were not less than ten towns with the title of "colonize," and in the 5th century the Votetva cnumerates no less than 123 episcopal sees.

For details concerning the condition of Numidia as a Roman province, see Corp. Inser. Lat., vol. viii. (1881). A more popular account will be found in the Algérie Romaine of G. Boissiere (2 vols 8vo, Paris, 1883). (iE: plein)

NUMISMATICS

HE science of numismatics treats of coins and medals.

It acquaints us with the metals used in their com-

position, their various inscriptions and devices, their

mechanical execution and artistic merit. It tells us of

the different denominations of coins, their relation to one another, and the laws by which they were regulated.

The earliest known coins were issued by the Grecks in the 7th century before the Christian era. By the 4th century the whole civilized world used money, each state generally having its proper coinage. This has continued to be the case to the present time ; so that now there are few nations without a metal currency of their own, and of these but a small proportion are wholly unacquainted with the use of coins. The number of varieties of coins and medals of which specimens are preserved in collec- tions may be estimated at not less than several hundred thousand ; and future discoveries will probably greatly in- crease thissum. A series of monuments of such length and completeness affords, as might be expected, very import- ant illustration to history and to kindred branches of knowledge. This is, indeed, the real value of numismatics, and the student will do well to keep it constantly before him.

Coins, although they confirm history, rarely correct it, and never very greatly. The earliest belong to a time and to nations as to which we are not otherwise wholly ignorant, and they do not afford us that precise information which would fill in any important details of the meagre sketch of contemporary history. We gain from them scarcely any direct historical information, except that certain cities or princes issued money. When in later times the devices and inscriptions of the coins give more detailed information, history is far fuller and clearer, so that the numismatic evidence is rarely more than corroborative. There are, indeed, some remarkable exceptions to this rule; as in the

case of the Bactrian coins, which have supplied the outlines of a portion of history which was otherwise almost wholly lost. The value of the corroborative evidence afforded by coins must not, however, be overlooked. It chiefly relates to chronology, although it also adds to our knowledge of the pedigrees of royal houses. But perhaps the most interesting manner in which coins and medals illustrate history is in their bearing contemporary, or nearly con- temporary, portraits of the most famous kings and captains, from the time of the first successors of Alexander the Great, to the present

~~age, whereas pictures do not afford portraits in any number before the latter part of the Middle Ages ; and works of sculpture, although occupying in this respect the same place as coins in the last-mentioned period and under the Roman empire, are neither so numerous nor so authentic. There is no more delightful companion in historical reading than a cabinet of coins and medals. The strength and energy of Alexander, the ferocity of Mithradates, the philosophic calmness of Antoninus, the obstinate ferocity of Nero, and the brutality of Caracalla are as plain on the coins as in the pages of history. The numismatic portraits of the time following the founding of Constantinople have less individuality ; but after the revival of art they recover that quality, and maintain it to our own day, although executed in very different styles from those of antiquity. From this last class we can form a series of portraits more complete and not less interesting than that of the ancient period.~~

~~While coins and medals thus illustrate the events of Mytho- history, they have an equally direct bearing on the belief logy.~~

~~of the nations by which they were issued ; and in this reference lies no small part of their value in connexion with history. The mythology of the Greeks,*not having been fixed in sacred writings, nor regulated by a dominant priesthood, but having grown out of the different beliefs~~

~~Geo- graphy.~~

~~Art.~~

~~NUWISMATALCS~~

~~of various tribes and isolated settlements, and having been~~

~~allowed to form itself comparatively without check, can~~

~~scarcely be learned from ancient books. Their writers give us but a partial or special view of it, and modern authors, in their attempts to systematize, have often but increased the confusion. The Greek coins, whether of kings or cities, until the death of Alexander, bear sacred subjects only. Afterwards, on the regal coins, the king's head usually occupies the obverse~~

~~and a sacred subject is placed on the reverse. The coins of Greek cities under the em- pire have usually an imperial portrait and a reverse type usually mythological. The whole class thus affords us invaluable evidence for the reconstruction of Greek mytho- logy. We have nowhere else so complete a series of the different types under which the divinities were represented. There are in modern galleries very few statues of Greek divinities, including such as were intended for architectural decoration, which are in good style, fairly preserved, and untouched by modern restorers. If to these we add reliefs of the same class, and the best Graeco-Roman copies, we can scarcely form a complete series of the various repre- sentations of these divinities. The coins, however, supply us with the series we desire, and we may select types which are not merely of good work, but of the finest. The mythology of ancient Italy, as distinct from that of the Greek colonies of Italy, is not so fully illustrated by the coins of the country, because these are for the most part of Greek design. There are, however, some remarkable exceptions, especially in the money of the Roman common- wealth, the greater number of the types of which are of a local character, including many that refer to the myths and traditions of the earliest days of the city. The coins of the empire are especially important, as bearing representa- tions of those personifications of an allegorical character to which the influence of philosophy gave great prominence in Roman mythology.~~

~~Coins are scarcely less valuable in relation to geography than to history. The position of towns on the sea or on rivers, the race of their inhabitants, and many similar particulars are positively fixed on numismatic evidence. The information that coins convey as to the details of the history of towns and countries has a necessary connexion with geography, as has also their illustration of local forms of worship. The representations of natural productions on ancient money are of special importance, and afford assistance to the lexicographer. This is particularly the case with the Greek coins, on which these objects are frequently portrayed with great fidelity. We must recollect, however, that the nomenclature of the ancients was vague, and frequently comprised very different objects under one appellation, and that therefore we may find very different representations corresponding to the same name.~~

The art of sculpture, of which coin-engraving is the off- spring, receives the greatest illustration from numismatics. Not only is the memory of lost statues preserved to us in the designs of ancient coins, but those of Greece afford admirable examples of that skill by which her sculptors attained their great renown. The excellence of the designs of very many Greek coins struck during the period of the best art is indeed so great that, were it not for their smallness, they would form the finest series of art-studies in the world. The Roman coins, though at no time to be compared to the purest Greek, yet represent worthily the Grzco-Roman art of the empire. From the accession of Augustus to the death of Commodus they are often fully equal to the best Graeco-Roman statues. This may be said, for instance, of the dupondii struck in honour of Livia by Tiberius and by the younger Drusus, of the sestertii of Agrippina, and of the gold coins of Antoninus Pius and

the two Faustinas, all which present portraits of remark- able beauty and excellence. The medizval Italian medals are scarcely less useful as records of the progress and char- acteristics of art, and, placed by the side of the Greek and Roman coins, complete the most remarkable comparative series of monuments illustrating the history of the great schools of art that can be brought together. ‘ Ancient coins throw as great light upon the architecture as upon the sculpture of the nations by which they were struck. Under the empire, the Roman coins issued at the city very fre- quently bear representations of important edifices, The Greek imperial coins struck in the provinces present similar types, representing the most famous temples and other structures of their cities, of the form of some of which we should otherwise have been wholly ignorant. The little- known art of painting among the ancients does not re- ceive so much illustration from the coins. The best Greek pieces are of too severe a style to admit of an approach to pictorial treatment, although we perceive such a tendency in the works of important schools, and during the period of decline. The Roman coins sometimes present groups which have a very pictorial character, traceable to the tendency of the sculpture of the period ; this is principally about the time of the Antonines. They are, however, never so pictorial in treatment as the medixval Italian medals. The art of gem-engraving among the ancients is perhaps most nearly connected with their coinage. The subjects of coins

~~and gems are so similar and so similarly treated that the authenticity of gems, that most difficult of archeological questions, receives the greatest aid from the study of coins.~~

~~After what has been said it is not necessary to do more Litera- than mention how greatly the study of coins tends to ture. illustrate the contemporary literature of the nations which issued them. Not only the historians, but the philosophers and the poets, are constantly illustrated by the money of their times. This was perceived at the revival of letters : and during the last two centuries coins were very fre- quently engraved in the larger editions of the classics. A want of technical numismatic knowledge in the editors, and the carelessness of the artists, combined to deprive these illustrations of much of their value. Probably in part on this account, but chiefly in consequence of the change from historical to textual criticism, ancient coins have been little used in this manner by the new school. This neglect is being remedied, although the full value of coins and medals in illustration of the literature of modern as well as of ancient times is not as yet suffi- ciently perceived.~~

~~The science of numismatics is of comparatively recent Origin origin, The ancients do not seem to have formed collec- of the tions, although they appear to have occasionally preserved 8“ie2c% individual specimens for their beauty. Petrarch has the credit of having been the first collector; but it is prob- able that in his time ancient coins were already attract- ing no little notice. The importance of the study of all coins has since been by degrees more and more recognized, and at present no branch of the pursuit is left wholly unexplored.~~

~~Besides its bearing upon the history, the religion, the Practical manners, and the arts of the nations which have used money, use. the science of numismatics has a special modern use in relation to art. Displaying the various styles of art pre- valent in different ages, coins supply us with abundant means for promoting the advancement of art among our- selves. If the study of many schools be at all tinies of advantage, it is especially so when there is little originality in the world. Its least value is to point out the want of artistic merit and historical commemoration in modern coins, and to suggest that modern medals should be exe-~~

cuted after some study of the rules which controlled the

great works of former times.—

Definitions.—The following are the most necessary numismatic definitions.

1. A coin isa piece of metal of a fixed weight, stamped by author- ity of government, and employed as a circulating medium."

2. A medal is a piece, having no place in the currency, struck to commemorate some event or person. Medals are frequently com- prised with coins in descriptions that apply to both equally ; thus, in the subsequent definitions, by the term coins, coins aud medals must generally be understood. ; :

8. The coinage of a country is usually divided into the classes of gold, silver, and bronze (copper), for which the abbreviations AY, At, and Ai are employed in catalogues. In each class are comprised, not only the coins of the metal from which it takes its name, with no more than a necessary or inseparable proportion of alloy, but coins of other metallic substances, usually base, and always com- pound, which were generally struck in the place of the purer pieces. The principal metallic substances thus used were electrum for gold, billon for silver, brass for copper, and potin for silver and copper.

ae Electrum (#exrpov, jrexrpos), a compound metallic substance, consisting of gold with a considerable alloy of silver. Pliny makes the proportion to have been four parts of gold to one of silver.? The material of early coins of Asia Minor struck in the cities of the western coast is the ancient electrum. It appears here to have at first consisted of three parts of gold to one of silver; but after- wards the proportion of silver was increased, though perhaps not everywhere. Gold largely alloyed with silver, not struck by the ancient Greeks or their neighbours, should be termed pale gold, as in the case of some of the late Byzatitine coins.

5. Billon, a term applied to the base metal of some Roman coins, and also to that of some medieval and modern coins. It is silver with a great proportion

~~of alloy. When the base silver coins are replaced by copper washed with silver the term billon becomes in- appropriate,~~

~~6. Brass, a compound metallic substance employed forcoins. It may be used as an equivalent to the orichaleum of the Romans, a fine kind of brass of which the sestertii and dupondii were struck, but it is commonly applied indiscriminately to the whole of their copper currency.~~

~~7. Potin, a term applied to the base metal of which some ancient coins are composed. It is softer than billon.~~

~~8. Various other metallic substances have been used in coinage. The so-called "glass coins" of the Arabs are merely coin-weights.~~

~~9. The forms of coins have greatly varied in different countries and at different periods. The usual form in both ancient and modern times has been circular, and generally of no great thickness.~~

~~10. Coins are usually measured by Mionnet's scale, from which the greatest dimension is taken, or, when they are square, the greatest dimension in two directions. This is, however, a very unsatisfactory scale, as its divisions are of an arbitrary character, and the instruments for applying it are such as make exactness scarcely possible. A gauge graduated to inches and decimal parts of an inch or to millimétres is far more satisfactory.~~

~~11. The weight of a coin is of great importance, both in deter- mining its genuineness and in distinguishing its identity. To ascertain exact weight even to the tenth of a grain is therefore necessary, and this cau only be done by the careful use of excellent scales.~~

~~12. The specific gravity of a coin may be of use in determining the metals in its composition.~~

~~13. Whatever representations or characters are borne by a coin constitute its type. The subject of each side is also called a type, and, when there is not only a device but an inscription, the latter~~

1 This definition excludes, on the one hand, paper currencies and their equivalents among barbarous nations, such as cowries, because they are neither of metal nor of fixed weight, although either stamped or sanctioned by authority, and, on the other hand, modes of keeping metal in weight, like the so-called Celtic ‘‘ring-money,” because they are not stamped, although perhaps sanctioned by authority. The latter has attracted so much attention that it must not be passed by without some further notice. There seems to be no reasonable doubt that the Celtic gold rings all weigh multiples of the same unit, but very seldom multiples of one another. From their form it is probable that most of them were used as ornaments, and as such they would probably have been generally made to weigh an exact weight without fractions, on the same principle that the ancients frequently avoided fractions of their measures in architecture. They belong to a time anterior to the introduction of money among the Celts, or before its general use, and one, therefore, at which precious metal must have been weighed when employed in barter. Hence an additional reason, and prob- ably the main one, why their weight is always some multiple of the same unit. Ina primitive state of society in the present day a woman often wears her dowry in coins as ornaments ; and thus these Celtic rings may have been both ornaments and substitutes for money.

2 Hist. Nat., xxxiii. 23; comp. xxxvii. 11. Pliny distinguishes two kinds of ‘‘‘electron,”— amber, and this metallic substance. In Greek poetry the name seems to apply to both, but it is generally difficult to decide which is meant in any particular case. Sophocles, however, where he mentions T4760 Zdpdewy

HAextpov, . . . Kal rov “Ivdtxov xpvoov” (Ant. 1037-39), can scarcely be doubted to refer to the metallic electrum. : ‘

NUMISMATICS

[DEFINITIONS.

may be excluded from the term. This last is the general use. No distinct rule has been laid down as to what makes a difference of type, but it may be considered to be an essential difference, how- ever slight.

~~14. A difference too small to constitute a new type makes a variety.~~

~~15. A coin is a duplicate of another when it agrees with it in all particulars but those of exact'size and weight. Strictly speak- ing, ancient coins are rarely, if ever, duplicates, except when struck from the same die.~~

~~16. Of the two sides of a coin, that is called. the obverse which bears the more important device or inscription. In early Greek coins it is the convex side; in Greek and Roman imperial it is the side bearing the head ; in medieval and modern that bearing the royal effigy, or the king's name, or the name of the city ; and in Oriental that on which the inscription begins. The other side is called the reverse.~~

~~17. The field of a coin is the space unoccupied by the prin- cipal devices or inscriptions. Any detached independent device or character is said to be in the field, except when it occupies the exergue.~~

~~18. The exergue is that part of the reverse of a coin which is below the main device, and distinctly separated from it; it often bears a secondary inscription. Thus, the well-known inscription CONOB occupies the exergue of the late Roman and early Byzan- tine gold coins.~~

~~19. The edge of a coin is the surface of its thickness.~~

~~20. By the inscription or inscriptions of a coin all the letters it bears are intended ; an inscription is either principal or secondary.~~

~~21. In describing coins the terms right and left mean the right and left of the spectator, not the heraldic and military right and left, or those of the coin.~~

~~22. A bust is the representation of the head and neck ; it is com- monly used of such as show at least the collar-bone, other busts being called heads.~~

~~28. A head properly means the representation of a head alone, without any part of the neck, but it is also commonly used when any part of the neck above the collar-bone is shown. The present article follows custom in the use of the terms bust and head.~~

~~24. A bust or head is either facing, usually three-quarter face, or in profile, in which latter case it is described as to right or to left. Two busts may be placed in various relative positions which cannot be described in English without circumlocution.~~

~~25. A bust wearing a laurel-wreath is said to be lawreate.~~

~~26. A bust bound with a regal fillet (diadem) is called diademed.~~

~~27. A bust of which the neck is clothed is said to be draped.~~

~~28. An object in the field of a coin which is neither a letter nor a monogram is usually called a symbol. This term is, however, only applicable when such an object is evidently the badge of a town or individual. The term adjunct, which is sometimes em- ployed instead of symbol, is manifestly incorrect.~~

~~29. A mint-mark is a difference placed by the authorities of the mint upon all money struck by them, or upon each new die or separate issue.~~

~~30. A coin is said to be surfrappé when it has been struck on an older coin, of which the types are not altogether obliterated.~~

~~31. A dowble-struck coin is one in which the die or dies have shifted so as to cause a double impression.~~

~~82. A coin which presents two obverse types, or two reverse types, or of which the types of the obverse and reverse do not correspond, is called a mule ; it is the result of mistake or caprice.~~

~~Arrangement of Coins.—No uniform system has as yet been applied to the arrangement of all coins. It is usual to separate them into the three great classes of ancient coins (comprising Greek and Roman), mediszval and modern, and Oriental coins. The de- tails of these classes have been differently treated, both generally and specially. The arrangement of the Greek series has been first geographical, under countries and towns, and then chronological, for a further division; that of the Roman series, chronological, without reference to geography ; that of the medieval and~~

modern, the same as the Greek ; and that of the Oriental, like the Greek, but unsystematically,—a treatment inadmissible except in the case of a single empire. Then, again, some numismatists have sepa- rated each denomination or each metal, or have separated the denominations of one metal and not ofanother. There has been no general and comprehensive system, constructed upou reasonable principles, and applicable to every branch of this complicated science. Without laying down a system of rules, or criticizing former modes of arrangement, we offer the following as a classifica- tion which is uniform without being servile.

1. Greek Coins.—All coins of Greeks, or barbarians who adopted Greek money, struck before the Roman rule or under it, but with- out imperial effigies. The countries and their provinces are placed in a geographical order from west to east, according to the system of Eckhel, with the cities in alphabetical order under the provinces, and the kings in chronological order. The civic coins usually pre- cede the regal, as being the more important. The coins are further

arranged chronologically, the civic commencing with the oldest and ending with those bearing the effigies of Roman emperors. The gold coins of each period take precedence of the silver and the silver of the copper. The larger denominations in each metal are placed before the smaller. Coins of the same denomination and

They are flat and broad, but thin, and generally have on the ob- verse the portrait of a Roman emperor. It may be observed that the common division of Greek coins is into autonomous and im- perial, the former comprising all execpt those of the Roman period which have the effigies of emperors.

period are arranged in the alphabetical order of the magistrates' names, or the letters, &c., that they bear. 2. Loman Coins.—All coins issued by the Roman commonwealth

~~The different monetary systems of the Greeks grew out of the use Mone- of different standards of weight; in other words, their coins were tary sys- divisions of various talents. To investigate the origin of these tems.~~

~~and empire, whether struck at Rome or in the provinces. The arrangement is chronological, or, where this is better, under geo- graphical divisions.~~

~~3. Medixval and Modern Coins of Europe.—aAll coins issued by Christian European states, their branches and colonies, from the fall of the empire of the West to the present day. This class is arranged in a geographical and chronological order, as similar as possible to that of the Greek class, with the important exception of the Byzantine coins and the coins following Byzantine systems, which occupy the first place. The reason for this deviation is that the Byzantine money may be regarded not only as the principal source of medieval coinage but as the most complete and important medieval series, extending as it does without a break throughout the Middle Ages: The regal coins usually precede the civic ones, as being the more important ; and the medals of each sovereign or city follow the coins.~~

~~4. Oriental Coins.—All coins bearing inscriptions in Eastern languages, excepting those of the Jews, Phcenicians, and Cartha- ginians, which are classed with the Greek coins from their close connexion with them. These coins should be arranged under~~

~~monetary systems would demand a complete examination of Greek metrology, which could not be attempted in the present article. It will be well, however, to state in a few words the theory of Dr Brandis, at once the latest and the most satisfactory, though it cannot be said to completely solve the hard series of problems which the documents set before us.~~

~~The source of the Greek systems of weight has been referred to Babylonia, no link having been established with the different metrology of Egypt, a circumstance which may make us pause before finally accepting the results of the inquiry. The Babylonian weights had a twofold form,—the heavy talent, sometimes called the Assyrian, and the light talent, sometimes called the Baby- lonian. The heavy talent is the double of the light. Their weights and those of their divisions are thus stated by Dr Brandis on the evidence of~~

~~the inscribed weights found at Nimrid, the ancient Calah, in Assyria (see NINEVEH), which are now in the British Museum. The result is approximately true, but it has been shown by a careful reweighing of the objects that the maximuin weights rise somewhat higher and the minimum fall somewhat lower than is indicated in the table.~~

~~the following divisions: Ancient Persian, Arab, Modern Persian, Grammes. Grains.~~

~~Indian, Chinese, and coins of the far Kast. . Heavy Talent 60,600 =936,000; known range 62,400 to 57,600 grammes. This method of arrangement will be found to be as uniform as ae 1,010 a afm; én) ee is oo ae~~

~~it can be made, without being absolutely mechanical. It differs in | . ,# Mina 1683 = 260; ,, " 17°33 ,, 16s,~~

~~some important particulars from most or all of those which have ape ee ar = er voee se . 7 '~~

~~previously obtained ; but these very differences are the result of dy Mina 8-415= 130; ,, — 8°66 ,, AS 96~~

~~the consideration of a complete collection, and have therefore an inductive origin. A general uniformity is no slight gain, and may well reconcile us to some partial defects. These defects may be remedied in large collections by the use of "cross-references " from one cabinet to another, and by the formation of independent series to illustrate the general one. A series illustrative of Greek art, and another of Greco-Roman, might be formed. A series of portraits, and another of reverse types, would be equally valuable. Others might be made to show the changes of the coinage in relation to the condition of a state, with careful indications of the weight and composition of the examples, and others to illustrate the history of a particular country or city. Thus, the Byzantine copper coinage exhibits the success or disaster of the imperial arms, and the financial state of the empire in its fluctuations, while nothing can be more interesting than to see at one view the numismatic history of a great city. We have coins of Rome under the commonwealth and the empire, under the Ostrogoths, the Byzantines, the medieval senate, and the popes. The series of London would be not the least~~

curious. It would begin with the Roman coins issued by the mint of Londinium at the time of Diocletian and his colleagues, comprising those of the usurpers Carausius and Allectus; then, having not long after ceased for a time, it would recommence with the Saxon pennies, including a specimen of those of King Alfred,. which have for their reverse type the monogram of the city's name; and, continuing through the medieval period, it would conclude with modern tokens and medals, among the latter of which might be placed a copy of that famous one of the first Napoleon, with the inscription "Frappée a Londres," which was intended to commemorate the success of the Boulogne expedition.

I.—GREEK COINS.

The heavy talent is supposed to have found its way to Greece by sea from the Pheenician coast-towns, the light talent by land through Lydia. In adopting the Babylonian weights the Phe- uicians and Greeks made an important deviation. They accepted the sixtieth of the mina as their shekel or stater, but allowed only fifty instead of sixty of these units to their mina, retaining the sexagesimal division in counting sixty mine to the talent. Thus the Phoenician and Greek talents contained 3000 shekels or staters, not 3600 sixtieths of the mina.

Two talents thus arose,—that by which the earliest Phocaic gold money was struck, derived from the heavy Babylonian, with a stater having a maximum weight of 256 grains, and the Euboic talent, derived from the light Babylonian, with a stater of 130 grains or a little more. The Phocaic was a modification of the Babylonian heavy talent, the Euboic of the light, each having the same stater as the parent weight, but a lower talent. The relation of gold to silver in the earliest days of coined money, about 700 3.0., and for long after, was 13} to 1 ; consequently it was inconvenient to use the same standard for the two metals. Two systems for silver money are supposed to have arisen from this necessity, and it is here that the most brilliant but least conclusive part of the theory of Dr Brandis begins. The sixtieth of the heavy Babylonian mina weighed 260 grains, its sixtieth again weighed 4°3 ; this multiplied by 13°3 gives us the Pheenician drachm of 57 grains, introduced into Greece, and the basis of the so-called Greeco-Asiatic or Phe- nician silver standard. Four of these drachms produced the Phe-

nician stater at its maximum of 230 grains. Thus fifteen staters were equal to one gold sixtieth (230 × 15+-134=2583, nearly 260). Dr Brandis therefore calls this the fifteen-stater system. The Lydians, on the other hand, are supposed to have originated a silver stater by multiplying the sixtieth of the light mina, 180 grains, by 13°3 and

General There are some matters relating to Greek coius in general | dividing this by ten, so as to obtain a silver stater of about 170 charac- which may be properly considered before they are described in | grains, current long after in Asia Minor. Ten of these staters would ter. geographical order. These are their general character, the chief | thus be equal to one gold sixtieth. This, therefore, is called the

denominations, with the different talents of which they were the divisions, their devices and inscriptions, their art, and the mode of striking.

The period during which Greek coins were issued was probably not much less than a thousand years, commencing about the

ten-stater system. The monetary standards of the Greeks (expressed in grains) may be referred to the two original talents in the following manner : —

Heavy TALENT.

paar : Normal, Actual.

begi eps of the 7th century B.C. and generally ending at the Phocaic talent…….. 780,000 768,000 ; used for gold in Asia Minor.

death of Gallienus (268 a.p.). If classed with reference only to Pheenician 690,000 660,000; ,,, gold and silver.

their form, fabric, and general appearance they are of three prin- Macedonian . 7 » 3 on Silver,

cipal types,—the archaic Greek, the ordinary Greek, and the Greco- pel ” 3 1 gold and silver. : : : Aiginetic …….. f 582,000; ,, silver.

Roman. The coins of the first class are of silver, electrum, and 2 .

sometimes gold. They are thick lumps of an irregular round : oy ae ee ee

form, bearing on the obverse a device, with in some cases an accom- toe. oem eerie

panying inscription, and on the reverse a square or oblong incuse { Attic 20.22.02… cc… 22222..408,000; 5, gold and silver.

stamp (quadratum ineuswm), usually divided in a rude manner. 2 (CH aMVHEN shaacocooscosunnoc 270,000 ; silver.

The coins of the second class are of gold, electrum, silver, and bronze. They are much thinner than those of the preceding class, and usually have a convex obverse and a slightly concave or flat reverse. The obverse ordinarily bears a head in bold relief. The coins of the third class are, with very few exceptions, of bronze.

The following table exhibits the weights of the principal denomi- Denomi- The Corinthian talent is excluded nations.

nations of the Greek systeins. as simply a differently divided variety of the Attic, the Rhodian as a degraded Attic. In the subsequent account of Greek money the metrology of each class will be carefully noted.

Types.

Classes.

Types of

632

| Attic. figinetic. | Phoenician. | Persic. |

Grains Grains. Grains. Grains. |

Distater or Tetradrachm…. 270 an 224 354 | Stater or Didrachm …….. 135 194 112 rig Hemistater or Drachm 67°5 97 56 88 Bhindior TRetrobol …. ese… 45° a 3t 59 Bourth om Triobol! ……2 sae. 83°75 48 28 44 Sixth or Diobol …….. | 22°5 32 18 29 Kighth or Triheniiobol…… i 16°8 24 14 22 Twelfth or OBol. ….. ssseeees : 11°25 16 9 14

The Rhodian drachm weighed 60 grains. The Babylonian weight is somewhat lower than the Persic, and it wants the distater. The term stater is usually applied to the didrachm, but also to the tetradrachm, and at Cyrene to the drachm.!

The bronze standards have been less fully discussed. Some notice of them will be given under different geographical heads.

In the types of Greek coins (using the term in its restricted sense) the first intention of the designers was to indicate the city or state by which the money was issued. The necessity for dis- tinctive devices was most strongly felt in the earlier days of the art, when the obverse of a coin alone bore a design, and, if any inscription, only the first letter, or the first few letters, of the name of the people by whom it was issued. The motive which dictated the kind of type to be selected was undoubtedly a religious one.2 There are some isolated instances in which the religious character of a type is doubtful; but these, if proved, would be only exceptions to a general rule. The piety of that age adopted religious devices, and for a long time it was held to be impious to substitute any other representations for them. To the same cause may, perhaps, be partly aseribed the preference on the most ancient coins for devices of a symbolieal character to actual representations of divinities, although the difficulty of portraying the human form in the infancy of art must have had considerable influence in this direction.

Greek coins, if arranged according to their types, fall into three classes: (1) eivic coins, and regal without portraits of sovereigns ; (2) regal coins bearing portraits; and (3) Greco-Roman coins, whether with imperial heads or not. The coins of the first class have either a device on the obverse and the quadratum incuswm on the reverse, or two devices; and these last are again either independent of each other, though connected by being both local, or—and this is more common—that on the reverse is a kind of complement of that on the obverse. It will be best first to describe the

character of the principal kinds of types of the first class, and then to notice their relation. It must be noted that a head or bust is usually an obverse type, and a figure or group a reverse one, and that, when there is a head on both obverse and reverse, that on the former is usually larger than the other, and represents the personage locally considered to be the more important of the two. We must constantly bear in mind that these types are religious and local if we would understand their meaning. ‘‘I do not believe,” Burgon says, “ that the types of coins are, on any occa- sion, original compositions, but always copied (from the earliest to the lowest times) from some sacred publicmonument. Thus, when we find what is called a Beeotian buckler on coins, we are not to look upon the representation as a Beotian buckler, but as the buckler of some Beotian hero well known to the ancient inhabitants of that country, and accounted to be sacred by them. In like manner, when we find Minerva represented on coins we are not to under- stand the type as a Minerva, but the Minerva of that place; and, in some cases which might be brought forward, the individual statucs which are represented on coins, or ancient copies, will be found to exist. The only example of originality of composition apparent on coins is where types have been doubled or halved, to express similar modifieations of value.”

In the following list the types of Greek coins of cities, and of

eivie,&c., kings, not having regal portraits, are classed in a systematic order,

coins.

without reference to their relative antiquity.

1. Head or figure of a divinity worshipped at the town, or by the people, which issued the coin, as the head of Pallas on coins of Athens, and the figure of Heracles on coins of Beotian Thebes. Groups are rare until the period of Greco-Roman coinage.

2. Sacred natural or artificial objects,—(a) animal sacred to a divinity of the place, as the owl (Athens) and the tortoise (Aigina); (6) sacred tree or plant, as the silphium (Cyrene) and the olive- branch (Athens); (c) arms or implements of divinities, as the arms of Heracles (Erythra), the tongs of Vulean (Aisernia).

It is difficult to connect many objects comprised in this class with local divinities. The reason of this appears to be that the Hellenes, wherever they colonized, and nowhere more than in Greece, found an earlier system of low nature-worship, and en-

1 This information on Greek weights and coinages is wholly derived from Mr B. V. Head's published statements of Dr Brandis's results (Nwmismata Orientalia, " Lydia," 1877, pp.1sq.; Num. Chron., 1875, pp. 245 sq.; Proceedings of Institute of Bankers, 1879; Guide to the Coins of the Ancients, 1881). The writer is, however, responsible for the doubts expressed as to Dr Brandis's theory.

2 See Burgon, in Numismatic Journal, vol. i. pp. 97 sq.

NUQt sw A FP O*s

[GREEK COINS.

deavoured to incorporate it into their own more intellectual mythology, sometimes with but partial success.

3. Head or figure of a local genius, —(a) river-god, as the Gelas (Gela); (2) nymph of a lake, as Camarina (Camarina); (c) nymph of a fountain, as Arethusa (Syracuse).

4, Head or figure of a fabulous personage or half-human monster, as a Gorgon (Neapolis Macedoni), the Minotaur (Cnossus).

5. Fabulous animal, as Pegasus (Corinth),a griffin (Panticapseum), the Chimera (Sicyon).

6. Head or figure of a hero or founder, as Ulysses (Ithaca), the Lesser Ajax (Locri Opuntii) , Taras, founder of Tarentum (Tarentum).

7. Objects connected with heroes, —animal connected with local hero, as the Calydonian boar or his jaw-bone (Aitolians). Arms of heroes also occur as types, but their attribution to particular personages is difficult or impossible.

8. Celebrated real or traditional sacred localities, as mountains on which divinities are seated, the labyrinth (Cnossus).

9. Representations connected with the public religious festivals and contests, as a chariot victorious at the Olympic games (Syracuse).

The relation of the types of the obverse and reverse of a coin is a matter requiring careful consideration, since they frequently illustrate one another. As we have before observed, this relation is either that of two independent objects, which are connected only by their reference to the same place, or the one is a kind of complement of the other. Among coins illustrating the former class we may instance the beautiful silver didrachms of Camarina, having on the obverse the head of the river-god Hipparis and on the reverse the nymph of the lake carried over its waters by a swan,' and those of Sicyon, having on the obverse the Chimera and on. the reverse a dove. The latter class is capable of being separated into several divisions. When the head of a divinity occurs on the obverse of a coin, the reverse is occupied by an object or objects sacred to that divinity. Thus the common Athenian tetradrachms have on the one side the head of Pallas and on the other an owl and an olive- branch; the tetradrachms of the Chalcidians in Macedonia have the head of Apollo and the lyre ; and the copper coins of Erythre have the head of Heracles and his weapons. The same is the case with subjects relating to the heroes: thus there are drachms of the Aitolian League which have on the obverse the head of Atalanta and on the reverse the Calydonian boar, or his jaw-bone and the spear-head with which he was killed. In the same manner the coins of Cnossus, with the Minotaur on the obverse, have on the reverse a plan of the Labyrinth. Besides the two team devices there are often others of less importance, which, although always sacred, and sometimes symbols of local divinities, are generally indicative of the position of the town, or have some reference to the families of magistrates who used them as badges. Thus, for example, besides such representations as the olive-branch sacred to Pallas on the Athenian tetradraechms, as a kind of second device dolphins are frequently secn on coins of maritime places; and almost every series exhibits many symbols which can only be the badges of the magistrates with whose names they occur. Regal coins of this class, except Alexander's, usually bear types of a local character, owing to the small extent of most of the kingdoms, which were rather the

~~territories of a city than considerable states at the period when these coins were issued.~~

~~The second great class—that of coins of kings bearing portraits—Regal, Religious feeling affords the with por- clue to the long exclusion of regal portraits,—the feeling that it traits.~~

~~is necessarily separate from the first.~~

~~would be profane for a mortal to take a place always assigned hitherto to the immortals. Were there any doubt of this, it would be removed by the character of the earliest Greek regal portrait, that of Alexander, which occurs on coins of Lysimachus. This is not the representation of a living personage, but of one who was not only dead but had received a kind of apotheosis, and who, having been already called the son of Zeus Ammon while living, had been treated as a divinity after his death. He is therefore portrayed as a young Zeus Ammon. Probably, however, Alexander would not have been able, even when dead, thus to usurp the place of a divinity upon the coins, had not the Greeks become accustomed to the Oriental " worship " of the sovereign, which he adopted. This innovation rapidly produced a complete change ; every king of the houses which were raised on the ruins of the Greek empire could place his portrait on the money which he issued, and few neglected to do so, while the sovereigns of Egypt and Syria even assumed divine titles.~~

~~The reign of Alexander produced another great change in Greek coinage, very different from that we have noticed. He suppressed the local types almost throughout his empire, and compelled the towns to issue his own money, with some slight difference for mutual distinction. His successors followed the same policy ; and thus the coins of this period have a new character. ~ The obverses of regal coins with portraits have the head of the sovereign, which in some fewinstances gives place to that of his own or his country's tutelary divinity, while figures of the latter sort almost exclusively occupy the reverses. Small symbols, letters, and monograms on the reverses distinguish the towns in this class.~~

~~Greco- toman.~~

Tnscrip- tions.

GRECO-ROMAN COINS. |

The Greco-Roman coins begin, at different periods, with the seizure by Rome of the territories of the Greek states. They are almost all bronze ; and those in that metal are the most character- istic and important. In their types we see a further departure from the religious intention of those of earlier times in the rare admission of representations, not only of eminent persons who had received some kind of apotheosis, such as great poets, but also of others who, although famous, were not, and in some cases probably could not have been, so honoured. We also observe on these coins many types of an allegorical character.

The following principal kinds of types may be specified, in addi- tion to those of the two previous elasses. (1) Head or figure of a famous personage who either had received a kind of apotheosis, as Homer (Smyrna), or had not been so honoured, as Herodotus (Halicarnassus) and Lais (Corinth). (2) Pictorial representations, always of a sacred character, although occasionally bordering on caricature. We may instance, as of the latter sort, a very remark- able type representing Pallas playing on the double pipe and seeing her distorted facc reflected in the water, while Marsyas gazcs at her from a rock,—a subject illustrating the myth of the invention of that instrument (Apamea Phrygia). (3) Allegorical types, as Hope, &c., on the coins of Alexandria of Egypt, and many other towns. These were of Greek origin, and owed their popularity to the sculpture executed by Greeks under the empire ; but the feeling which rendered sucli subjects prominent was not that of true Greek art, and they are essentially characteristic of the New Attic school which attained its height at Rome under the early emperors. Of this kind of type we must again speak in noticing the Roman eoinage.

Those types which were common to this and the older classes were also much developed in their subjects. Thus, for instance, groups frequently took the place of single figures ; and the repre- sentations of sacred localities acquired a great prominence, the most eommon being of buildings, which are generally temples. In the architectural types a tendency to pictorial representation is evident in the eonstant endeavours to depict edifices in perspective.

~~There is a class of coins which is always considered as part of the Greco-Roman, although in some respects distinct. This is the colonial series, struck in Roman colonize, and having almost always Latin inscriptions. As, however, these colonise were towns in all parts of the empire, from Emerita in Spain (Merida) to Niniva Claudiopolis (Nineveh) in Assyria, in the midst of a Greek popula- tion and often of Greek origin, their coins help to complete the series of civic money, and, as we might expect, do not very markedly differ from the proper Greek imperial coins except in having Latin inscriptions and showing a preference for Roman types.~~

~~We have now to speak of the meaning of the inscriptions of Greek coins. These are either principal or secondary; but the former are always intended when inscriptions are mentioned with- out qualification, since the secondary ones are non-essential. The inscription of civic money is almost always the name of the people by which it was issued, in the genitive plural, as AOBHNAION on coins of the Athenians, SYPAKOSION on coins of the Syracusans. The inscription of regal money is the name, or name and title, of the sovereign in the genitive,as AAERANAPOY, or BAZIAEQS AAEBRANAPOY, on coins of Alexander the Great. This genitive form implies a nominative understood, which has been generally sup- posed to be véuoua, money." There are four instances in which a nominative of this kind occurs in coins, PANOZ EMI SHMA, "¢T am the badge of Phanes," on an archaic coin of Halicarnassus; TOPTYNOS TO HTAIMA, "the struck" money of Gortys, if the form suggested by M. Frangois Lenormant be admissible, on an archaic coin of Gortys; and ZEYOA KOMMA, "'the stamp" or 'coin of Seuthes," as well as 2EYOA APTYPION, the "silver piece" or ''money of Seuthes." The balance preponderates in favour of the idea that such a word as véucoua, or the more definite term for a piece of gold (xpuaois), silver (dpy'pov), or copper (xaxots), was intended. Yet the instances are not sufficient to establish the case. Besides their disagreement, it must be remem- bered that the coins of Phanes and Gortys belong to the infaney of money in Asia Minor and Crete, and that Seuthes was a semi-barbar- ous chieftain. Any one familiar with Greek epigraphy will see the danger of resting on such evidence. In the eighth edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica a different explanation was offered on the authority of the late Mr Burgon, who generously communicated it to the writer. He supposed the inscription to relate to the type, and that the~~

nominative understood is the name of that type. It should be remarked that the type of the reverse of a civic coin is usually a complement of that of the obverse, and that the converse may be inferred of regal coins; there is thus in general virtually but one type, that of the tutelary divinity or sacred symbol of the city or sovereign. Athenian coins with the inscription AOH[NAION] have as their obverse type the head of Athene ; the meaning of the inscription, according to Burgon's explanation, would be, not "' the money of the Athenians," but " Athene of the Athenians." When the name of the divinity represented is written, the nominative understood is supplied. Thus on coins of Syracuse, with the

head of Arethusa as the obverse type, we read APEOOZA— rev.) ZYPAKOZSION, "Arethusa of the § racusans," and on others with the head of Zeus, ZEYS EAEY@EPIOS. =YPAKOSION, "Zeus the giver of liberty of the Syracusans." There are instances in which the names of the divinity and of the people occur together, as EIPHNH AOKPON, "Irene of the Locrians," on a coin of the Locri Epizephyrii, the obverse having the head and name of ZEY, as though the sense were Zeus (and) Irene of the Locrians. In the case of regal coins Burgon's theory cannot be applied in strictness, In most cases we could supply the name of the divinity represented on the reverse, as, for the gold staters of Alexander, [NIKH] AAEZANAPOY, and for the silver, [ZEY>] AAEZANAPOY;; but when the type, as of almost all the Ptole- maic coins, is a symbol, in this case the eagle, some modification is needed. If we suppose that the nominative, understood when none is expressed, or implied when a divinity is named, is some word expressing the idea conveyed by the badge, as Zeus by the eagle, we shall probably be not far from the truth. The secondary inscriptions either describe secondary types, as AQAA, "rewards," accompanying the representation of the arms given to the victor in the exergues of Syracusan decadrachms,! or are the names of magistrates or other officers, or in regal coins those of cities, or are those of the engravers of the dies, of whom sometimes two were employed, one for the obverse and the other for the reverse, or are dates. These inscriptions are often but

abbreviations or monograms, especially when they indicate cities on the regal coins.

The importance of Greek coins as illustrating the character of Art of contemporary art cannot be easily overrated. They are beyond all coins,

other monuments the grammar of Greek art. Their geographical and historical range is only limited by Greek history and the Greek world; as a series they may be called complete ; in quality they are usually worthy of a place beside contemporary sculpture, having indeed a more uniform merit; they are sometimes the work of great artists, and there is no question of their authenticity, nor have they suffered from the injurious hand of the restorer. 'Thus they tell us what other monuments leave untold, filling up gaps in the sequence of works of art, and revealing local schools known from them alone.

The art of coins belongs to the province of relief, which lies between the domains of sculpture and of painting, partaking of the character of both, but most influenced by that which was dominant in each age. Thus in antiquity relief mainly shows the rule of sculpture, in the Renaissance that of painting.

Sculpture best represents character (4@os), painting expression (ra dy). Character is the permanent aspect of the face and figure as denoting the dominant quality. Thus a great statue may be not unfairly described by a single epithet. Expression is the transient but intense effect of some sudden feeling. 'A single figure in a painting' requires a fuller description than a statue ; the char- acter is seen beneath the expression. Seulpture aims at embodying the ideal, and when it represents the real it must show the fulness of all qualities and even of all potentialities. Repose is the con- dition of sculpture. Painting having for its purpose the repre- sentation of light (colour), and the effects of light in bodies, can only deal with the circumstances of the moment. Movement is implied in painting.? Sculpture that is pictorial and painting that is sculpturesque belong to the decline of art. Expression of a supreme kind is, however, found in sculpture of high quality, especi- ally in that kind of relief which lies nearest to sculpture, alto- rilievo ; and character is seen in noble portraits which endeavour to represent the man in his completeness. But such sculpture is properly in

groups and such painting in the single form. The group suggests the treatment of painting, the single form in pictorial art that of sculpture. Relief, as intermediate between sculpture and painting, admits separately of movement and the momentary action, but the movement must be of the most dignified and rhythm. ical kind, otherwise it will need colour to counteract confusion by a higher harmony, and the momentary action must be of supreme importance. Observe the dignity and rhythm of the Panathenaic frieze of the Parthenon, the want of colour in the Amazon frieze of the Mausoleum, contrasting it with the noble fragmentary chariot frieze, and the supreme moment chosen in the metopes of the Parthenon.

Relief is usually divided into three kinds, low, middle, and high (basso-, mezzo-, and alto-rilievo), and it is convenient to retain these terms while adimitting that they are only roughly correct. Work to be viewed in a feeble light and from a distance must have clearness in the most necessary outlines, and that simplicity which equally marks the Panathenaic frieze. It admits of simple and generalmovement. This is low relief, and must not be too much raised from the background. HIgh relief differs from sculpture in the round in that it is not necessarily detached from the back- ground, nor usually of the full depth of true proportion, and in

1 It is scarcely to be doubted that the arms on the Syracusan decadrachms represent a reward given to an Olympic competitor or competitors on return- ing home.

2 On the whole subject ef. C. O. Miiller, Archdologie der Kunst, §§ 25-27.

consisting of groups to be seen from a distance, so simply treated as to be free from confusion due to the shadows upon them, and not to cast shadows. It should thus be simple in the forms. It admits of expression of

the highest kind, which is almost suggested by the relation of the figures which constitute a group, but it does not allow movement. Middle relief, inasmuch as it is used for objects to be seen near, is delicate in its outlines and nay be elaborate in its details. The sculptured columns of the temple of Artemis at Ephesus show the delicacy of the method and coins and gems its delight in elaboration. All coins should be treated in this manner, and it is usual in the entire range of those of the Greeks, although the influence of sculpture on relief of other kinds is con- stantly traceable.

It may be expected that Greek coins will bear the impress of the sister arts of sculpture and painting, filling up the gaps in the sequence of examples of the art of which we have remains, telling us somewhat of that which has but a written tradition. Our first duty is to endeavour to place the Jocuments in the best order, separating the geographical from the historical indications, first examining the evidence of local schools, then those of the suc- cession of styles. It is from coinsalone that we can discover the existence of great local schools, reflecting the character of the differ- ent branches of the Hellenic race. In tracing the changes in these schools we gain a great addition to our ideas of the successive styles, and can detect new examples of those which owe their fame to the leading masters. But in dealing with works in relief we have the advantage due to their intermediate character. In our larger geographical horizon we can trace the character of the successive styles, not of sculpture only, but also of sculpture and painting.

Greek coins clearly indicate three great schools, each with its subordinate groups. The school of central Greece holds the first place, including the northern group centred in Thrace and Mace- donia, and the southern in the Peloponnesus, with the outlying special schools of Crete and Cyrene. The Jonian school has its northern group, Ionia, Mysia, and Aolis, and its southern, Rhodes and Caria. Beyond these are certain barbarous and semi-barbarous groups, of which the most important is that of eastern Asia Minor, Persia, and Pheenicia, with Cyprus. The school of the West com- prises the two groups of Italy and Sicily.

The whole duration of the schools is limited, by the repulse of the Persians and the accession of Alexander, from 480 to 332 B.C. Before this age all is archaic, and it is hard to trace local character- istics. After it, the

~~centralizing policy of the sovereigns and the fall of the free cities destroyed local art. In certain cultivated centres under enlightened kings a local art arose, but it speedily became general, and we have thus to think of a succession of styles during the rest of the life of Greek art. The century and a half of the local schools is significantly the great age of this art.~~

~~In the study of each school we have first to determine its char- acter, and then to look in its successive phases for the influence of the great masters of style. Two dangers must be avoided. We must not too sharply divide the sculptors and the painters as if they always were true to the special functions of their arts. It is well to bear in mind that the earliest great painter, Polygnotus, was a por- trayer of character, kadds 70oypdgos, 7Ocxds, as Aristotle calls him, whereas the latest great sculptors represented expression. Thus sculpture first weighed down the balance, afterwards painting; but it must be remembered that relief can be truer to painting than sculpture in the round, which is more limited by the conditions of the material and mechanical necessities. Our second danger is due to the ease with which local qualities may be ascribed to the in- fluence of a leading style. It is also to be borne in mind that the movement of art in coins was during one period slower than in sculpture,—hence an influence more general than particular. Phidias and Myron do not make their mark so much as Polyclitus. In all cases the direct influence of great masters is to be looked for later than their age. The style of their time is prevalent in the coins, their actual works do not produce imitations till later, and as this is so we must regard the reflexions as influenced by the atmosphere in which they were produced. A Hera of the age of Polyclitus may be truer to the style of this artist than a later one which was produeed under the influence of his famous statue.~~

~~The school of central Greece in its southern group, comprehending Attica, is remarkable for its widespread extent. It has its colonies in Magna Grecia at Thurium, an Athenian foundation, probably at Terina, and in Macedonia at Amphipolis and Chalcidice under Athenian rule. It alone shows instances comparable to the works of Phidias, though its most numerous fine works are of the age of Polyclitus and that of Praxiteles and Scopas. Its qualities may be seen by comparison of the same subjects as treated by the other schools and groups. The earliest works are marked more than any others by~~

the qualities of high promise which characterized the Aiginetan marbles,—the same dignified self-restraint and calm simplicity. Next we perceive a series strong in style, and showing that lofty dignity, that reposeful embodiment of character, which are the stamp of the works of Phidias and his contemporaries. The subjects are more remarkable for fidelity, breadth, and boldness

NOM TSM A Tor ©

[LocAL SCHOOLS,

than for delicacy of execution or elaboration of ornament. Every subject is ideal, even the portrayal of animal form. Thus the char-

acter shows us what divinity is intended and the ideality what

is intended by the representation of beast or bird. From these works we pass to those which reflect the style of the time of Praxiteles and Scopas, when the influence of painting began to be felt, and art inclined towards feeling and descended to sentiment. Still, to the last, character rules these coins, and the chief difference we see is in the increased love of beauty for its own sake and the fondness for representing movement, not to the exclusion of repose, but by its side. In other respects there is little change except in the finer execution and more ornamental quality of the work. Even when the greatest achievement of the Sicilian school, the head of Persephone on the decadrachms of Syracuse, is copied by the Locrians and 'the Messenians, the superior quality. of the school of Greece asserts itself, and the copy is better than the original: there is less artifice and more breadth. The northern group is at first ruder, in the age of Phidias severer, and afterwards it merges into the greater softness of its southern rival. If it copies, as Larissa may copy Syracuse and Neapolis in Campania, it again asserts its superior simplicity, and we prefer the copy to the original.

The Ionian school lacks the sequence which the rest of the Greek Ionia,

world affords. It is broken by the baneful influence of the Persian dominion, and consequently the best works belong to the earliest and latest part of the period. 'The earliest coins, of the A'ginetan age, present nothing special; the

~~later, of the time of Praxiteles and Scopas, comprise works not inferior to those of central Greece, and remarkable, like the Western and the Cretan, as the sole records of a school otherwise unknown. 'They are markedly characterized by the qualities of the style of feeling, that of Praxiteles and Scopas ; but more than this, they are the expression of that style in pictorial form. They represent expression, and they treat it as it could not be treated in sculpture in the round, portraying locks streaming in the air and flowing draperies. At the same time, they are true to the highest qualities of art. Each divinity is at once recognized. Persephone has not the maidenly sweetness she wears in Hellas, but the melancholy foresight of her fate; she has not the character but the expression of the goddess. It must be remembered that, while Hellas produced the great sculptors, western Asia Minor bred the great painters after Polygnotus, himself a sculptor in painting rather than a painter. In the native land of Zeuxis, Parrhasius, and Apelles we see the evidence of the rule of painting. The execution of even the smallest works of this school is marked by the subtlest modulations of form, and here again we see the quality of the painter, who, having to represent solid objects on a plane, must have the highest knowledge of anatomy. 'The power of ex- pression and the knowledge of what underlies the surface of the face are carried even in the smallest works just alluded to, as the Cyzicene hecte, to a degree of excellence which baffles modern critical power. The technical skill is inferior to that of the West, yet the skill in modelling is far greater, and has no parallel in the medallic work of any other time or country.~~

~~The school of the West, if we except such outlying examples of The the art of Hellas as those of Thurium and Terina, has its highest West.~~

~~expression in Italy, its most characteristic in Sicily. It has distinctive qualities throughout the age. Even in the earlier period we trace a striving after beauty and a delicacy of finish, with a weakness of purpose, that mark the school with an influence increasing to a time long after the extinction of its rivals. We trace neither clearness of character nor force of expression. The Persephone of Syracuse is merely a beautiful girl. More than this, her beauty is shown off by the portrayal of the artifices of civilized life, emphasized by tricks of style. At the same time there is a knowledge of the capacity of the materials and the form of the coin, and a masterly power of~~

finish, on the whole a com- pleteness of technical skill which is unequalled. The result in the lower subjects is splendid, if wanting in variety, but in the higher we miss the noble achievements of the greater schools. So far there is a general agreement in the northern and southern groups. Yet the Italian shows a nobler and simpler style, with some affinity to that of central Greece, which we look for in vain in Sicily, though we are dazzled by the rich beauty of the magnificent series of coins which marks her wealthiest age. Sicilian art has this apparent advantage, that the great cities, save Syracuse, perished in the Carthaginian invasion, or under the tyranny of the elder Dionysius. Thus we have no important works save of Syracuse during the second half of our period, and cannot judge fully to what this school would have fallen. The key to this exceptional development of Greek art is fonnd in the absence of sculptors or painters in the West, except only Pythagoras of Rhegium at the very beginning of the age, whose influence is thought to be trace- able on the money of his native town.. The Western art is that of engravers accustomed to minute and. decorative work, uninfluenced by sculpture or painting. Their designs will not bear enlargement, which only enhances the charm of those of the other leading schools. Those of the great Syracusan decadrachms are small ; those of the minute hecte of Cyzicus are large.

HISPANIA. |

Crete. The most important of the lesser schools is the Cretan. Crete,

retaining the primitive life of older Hellas, was never truly civilized,

but enjoyed to the last the privileges and exhibited the faults of

an undeveloped condition. Producing in the age of high art neither sculptor nor painter of renown, the Cretans, to judge from their coins, were copyists of nature or art. At first rude, their work acquires excelleuce in design, but never in execution. While we see their poor reproductions of the designs of the Peloponnesus, we are amazed by their skill in portraying nature. Their gods are seated in trees with a background of foliage. Their bulls are sketched as they wandered in the meadows. All fitness for the mode of relief, as well as for the material and the shape of the coin, is entirely ignored. Hence a delight in foreshortening, and a free choice of subject with

~~no reference to the circle in which it must be figured. In spite, however, of their skill, the Cretans never attempted the three-quarter face, which is at once the best suited to the surface of a coin and the most trying to the skill of the artist. Yet their work is delightfully fresh, as if done in the open air. There is no idealism, but much life and movement. In a word, the school is naturalistic and picturesque. Its works are of the highest value in the study of Greek art, but as examples of the application of that art to coins they are to be used with caution. Nowhere else do we see the artist so freely copying nature and art, nowhere so unshackled by academic rules, nowhere so little aware of the limitation of his province.~~

~~It is important to study the mode in which Greek money was coined, because the forms of the pieces thus receive explanation, and true coins are discriminated from such modern falsifications as have been struck, and in some degree from those which have been cast. Our direct information on the subject is extremely scanty, but we are enabled by careful inference to obtain a very near approximation to the truth on all the most important points.~~

~~The only single ancient Greek die of the authenticity of which we are persuaded was seen by Burgon in the East. He de- scribed it, from recollection, as a piece of copper or bell-metal, in the shape of a truncated cone, flat at the top and bottom, about 34 inches in height, and from about 3 inches in diameter at the bottom to 2 at the top. In the upper surface was cut the die for the reverse of a tetradrachm of a Seleucid king of Syria, with the type of Apollo seated on the omphalos. There appears to have~~

~~. been no trace of any method of fitting this to the die of the obverse. From the appearance which the coins present, it 'may be inferred that the Greeks placed a ball of metal, carefully adjusted to the proper weight, and cold, between two dies, and then struck the upper die a powerful blow with a very heavy hammer. 'There was no collar to give the coins an exactly circular form. The dies must have been of hard metal, though softer than modern ones. Some Greek coins have been found of the same die, but such as the writer has seen did not present any evidence as to the wear to which their dies had been subjected. The Roman coins appear to have been struck in the same manner, but with a more careful adjustment of the two sides, yet~~

~~without a collar. Their dics, although hard, must have been, like the Greek dies, softer than those of the moderns, since, in the case of coins from the same die, we can trace the increase of imperfections through wear, and this notwithstand- ing the short period for which each die was used and the relatively few coins struck from it. In the case of Greek coins, there is similar evidence, in the great number which have bad or imperfect impressions, although not worn, since all these can scarcely owe their inferiority to insufficient force having been used in striking them. Some few Greek and Roman coins were cast and not struck ; others were first cast to give them their general form, and then struck. Both cases, however, form very rare exceptions, and are confined to particular groups of coins and not to isolated examples.~~

~~Greek We may now pass on to notice the Greek coinage of each country,~~

~~coinage following Eckhel's arrangement. The series begins with Spain,~~

~~of the far Gaul, and Britain, constituting the only great class of barbarous~~

~~West. Greek coinage. It must not be supposed that the money of the whole class is of one general character ; on the contrary, it has very many divisions, distinguished by marked peculiarities ; it has, however, everywhere one common characteristic, — its devices are corrupt copies of those of Greek or Roman coins. The car- liest of these barbarous coinages begin with the best imitations of the gold and silver money of Philip II. of Macedon. They probably first appeared to the north of his kingdom, but the gold soon spread as far as Gaul, and even found their way into southern Britain, by which time the original types had almost disappeared through successive degradations. Next in order of time are the silver imitations of Roman family coins, the victoriati and denarii of the commonwealth, which began in Spain and passed into Gaul and Britain, being current in those countries with the gold money of Greek origin. The copper money of Spain follows the imitated silver types ; that of Gaul and Britain, though showing Roman influence, is more original. It is useless to attempt a very minute classification of the subjects of these barbarous types, since the eats by whom they were executed did not properly understand them.~~

~~Mode of coining.~~

Side by side with these large coinages we find Greek money of colonies in Gaul and Spain, and a far ampler issue of Phoenician coins by the Carthaginian kings and cities of the Peninsula. The coinage of Hispania, corresponding to the modern Spain and Spain. Portugal, was issued during a period of about four centuries, closing in 41 4.p. There are four classes of money, which in the order of their relative antiquity are Greek, of two groups, Carthaginian, Romano-Iberian, and Latin. The first or older group of Greek money belongs to the widespread currency which reveals the inari- time power of the Ionians of Phocea. It consists of fractions of the drachm of the Phocean standard, from the diobol or third downwards. Its later pieces are of the Phocean colony of Emporie, founded by the earlier settlement of Massilia. Nextin order and in part contemporary, beginning before the middle of the 4th ceutury B.c., come the drachms of Emporie, which betray the influence of Siculo-Punic art. Their standard is probably Carthaginian. Of the neighbouring Rhoda, a Rhodian colony, there is similar money. Carthaginian coins of Spain begin in the same period with the issues of the great colony of Gades, following the same weights as the Emporian drachms. These are followed by the issues of the Barcides from 234 to 210 B.c., with Carthaginian types and of Pheenician weight, struck of six denominations, from the hexadrachm to the hemidrachm. Sefior Zobel de Zangréniz has classed them to Spain, on the grounds of provenance and the possession of the silver mines by the Barcide kings, against Miiller, who attri- butes them to Africa. The types are Carthaginian, and present some interesting subjects. The true Iberian currency begins not long after the Punic. The later drachms of Emporie, ultimately following the weight of the contemporary Roman denarius, have Iberian legends, and form the centre of a group of imitations issued by neighbouring native tribes with their distinctive in- scriptions. This coinage ceased when the Roman province was formed in 206 B.c. A little before this date the Romans had begun to introduce Latin money ; about this time, however, they took the backward step of permitting native coinages of Latin weight. Probably they found that native legends and types were more welcome to their subjects than those of Rome. Consequently this coinage of Spain

~~under the republic, which lasted until 133 3.c., may be almost considered national. The two provinces Hispania Citerior and Hispania Ulterior have this marked difference: the coins of the nearer province, of silver and bronze, have always Iberian inscriptions on the reverse, and are clearly under distinct Roman regulation ; those of the farther are apparently of independent origin, and consequently bear Iberian, Pheenician, Libyo-Pheenician, and Latin legends, but they are of bronze alone. The interest of these coins lies, mainly in their historical and geographical information. They bear the names of tribes, often the same as those of the town of mintage. The art is poor, and lacks the quaint originality and decorative quality of that of Gaul. Ultimately the native money was wholly Latinized (133 3B.c.), though political circumstances for a time renewed it under Sertorius (80-72 3B.c.) in the modified form ofa bilingual currency. The purely Latin issues of the two provinces, and under the empire more largely (from 27 B.c.) of the three, Tarra- conensis, Betica, and Lusitania, present little of interest. They closed in the reign of Caligula (37-41 a.p.), though in later times purely Roman money in gold and silver was issued at different times in Hispania down to the establishment of the Visigothic kingdom.~~

~~The imperial money of Hispania introduces us to one of the two great classes of provincial coins under the empire ; the larger of these was the Greek imperial, bearing Greek inscriptions, the smaller the Roman colonial, with Latin inscriptions, deriving its name from the circumstance that among Greek-speaking nations the colonia were distinguished by the use of the Latin language on their money. In the comage of Hispania, issued by a nation adopting Latin for official use, the aspect of the coinage is colonial, though it was not wholly issued by colonies. Many of the Spanish towns belong to the kin- dred class of municipia; others are neither colonize nor municipia. In Hispania the obverse of the coin bears, as usual in the colonial class, the head of the emperor or of some imperial personage, the reverse a subject proper to the town. The priest gniding a plough drawn by a yoke of oxen is peculiarly proper toa colonia, as portray- ing the ceremony of describing the walls of the city, so also an ox, with the same reference, the altar of the imperial founder, or, as connected with his cultus, a temple, probably in some cases that of Roma and Augustus. Other types, however, portray the old temples in restored Roman shapes, or indicate directly by fishes, ears of corn, and more rarely bunches of grapes, the products of the~~

~~country, not, as in Greek cities, those products in relation to religion. Some original and grotesque types have a markedly local character.~~

~~-The money of Augusta Emerita (Merida) in Lusitania, a colony of~~

~~pensioners (emeriti), is specially interesting, including as it does the silver issues of P. Carisius, the legatus of Augustus.~~

~~The coinage commonly called that of Gaul belongs to the people The more properly than to the country ; for it comprehends pieces issued Gauls, by the Gauls or other barbarians from the borders of Macedonia and Illyricum to the English Channel and the Bay of Biscay, through Pannonia, part of Germany, Helvctia, and Gaul. It in-~~

~~Massilia.~~

~~Gaul.~~

~~Britain.~~

~~636~~

~~fluenced the money of northern Italy, and, crossing the Channel, produced that of Britain, which has its own distinctive features. Four classes of coinage are found in these vast limits. Arranging them by date, they are the money of the Greek colony of Massilia and her dependencies, that of the Gauls and other barbarians of central and western Europe, those which can be classed to the tribes and chiefs of Gaul, and the imperial coinage of that country. The coins here attributed to the Gauls and other barbarians arc by some numismatists classed to Pannonia. It is quite true that the silver money of this class is not found in Gaul, but in the case of the gold it is impossible to draw a distinct geographical line. Further, no nation is so likely to have struck the bulk of these pieces as the plunderers of the Greek cities; at the same time, there are Thracian and other barbarous mintages which are not Gaulish. The gold money cannot be limited to any one country ; it is common to all, having evidently spread as a safe commercial medium ; the silver, on the other hand, remained limited to the neighbourhood of the Macedonian territory. Thus, though we may separate certain eastern issues,~~

~~the general designation of the whole group as issued by the Ganls and other barbarians is safest, so long as the great class of gold remains common to the whole region, and even in some varieties to Britain apart from the true British coinage—unless, indeed, its presence there is due to commerce.~~

~~The great mart of Massilia (Marseilles), founded about 600 B.c. by the Phoczans, was the centre of the Greek settlements of Gaul and northern Spain. Emporie was her colony, with other nearer towns of inferior fame. Yet Massilia always held the first place, as is proved by the abundance of her money. At first it consisted of Phoeean obols, part of the widespread Western currency alrcady noticed in speaking of Emporie. These were succeeded by Attic drachms, some of which, about Philip of Macedon's time, are beau- tiful in style and execution. Their obverse type is the head of Artemis, crowned with olive, at once marking the sacred tree, which had grown from a branch carricd by the colonists, so tradition said, with a statue of the goddess, from Ephesus, and proclaiming the value of the olive-groves of Massilia. On the reverse we note the Asiatic lion, common to it and the last colony of Phocza, the Italian Velia in Lucania.~~

~~The coinage of the Gauls clearly had its origin in their predatory incursions into Greece. They there found the money of Philip and Alexander still the great currency. Civilized enough to convert their spoil from metal into money, they speedily coined gold and silver, of which the earliest examples imitate, often with no small intelligence, the gold staters or didrachms of Philip and the silver staters or tetradrachms of Alexander. From the greater rarity of Alexandrine types in silver and their absence in gold, it may be conjectured that the earliest issues were struck in Philip's reign, though the mass of the coinage must be later. The money of Gallia before the complete Roman conquest, to which it may be anterior in its commencement by half a century, belongs in the gold to degraded types of the earlier widespread currency. The undoubted gold and electrum of this class, identified as bearing regal or geo- graphical names, are extremely limited. By far the most interesting coin of the group is the gold coin which bears the name at full length of the brave and unfortunate Vercingetorix. The silver money is comparatively common. The name of the Helvetian prince Orgetorix is likewise traced on Gaulish coins, on which it appears allied.with those of native chiefs, and in a special coinage of his own, remarkable for the~~

characteristic Swiss type of the bear. The bronze money of Gaul is still more abundant than the silver, and has a special interest from its characteristic types. The Roman coins recall those of Hispania, but are limited to a few colonise. They range in date from Antony and Augustus to Claudius. The principal issues are the well-known money of Lugdunum (Lyons) and Nemausus (Nimes). Those of Lugdunum may have been struck in a district around the city; the type of the famous altar of Lyons, that of Roma and Augustus, is worthy of note. The type of Nemausus, commemorating the conquest of Egypt in the crocodile and palm, is further remarkable as sometimes struck in the shape of the hind-leg of a deer, and is therefore called the pied de biche.

The ancient coinage of Britain is the child of that of Gaul, retain- ing the marks of its parentage, yet with characters of its own due to independent growth. Money first came in trade by the easiest sea-passage, and, once established in Kent, gradually spread north and west, until the age of the earlier Roman wars, when it was issued in Yorkshire, probably in Lincolnshire, and in a territory of which the northern limits are marked by the counties of Norfolk, Cambridge, Huntingdon, Bedford, Buckingham, Oxford, Gloucester, and Somerset, The oldest coins are gold imitations of Philip's staters, which, whether struck in Gaul or Britain, had a circulation on the British side of the Channel. They are the prototypes of all latermoney. From a carcful comparison of their weights with those of later coins, and from a study of the gradual degradation of the types, Evans places the origin of the coinage between 200 and 150 B.c. Its close may be placed about the middle of the 1st cen- tury A.D. The inscribed coins occupy the last century of this period, being contemporary with uninscribed ones. The uninscribed coins

are of gold, silver, bronze, and tin, the gold being by far the most common. There is small variety in the types, nearly allin gold and silver, and some in copper, presenting in more or less degraded form the original Gaulish type for gold. It may be suspected that all new types and the extremely barbarous descendant of the tin series are of the age of the inscribed coins, or but little

~~earlier. The Channel Islands are remarkable for a peculiar coinage of billon, a very base silver, presenting the usual types modified by Gaulish grotesqueness. The place of this group in the British series is merely accidental ; in character as in geography it is Gaulish.~~

~~The inscribed coins are evidently in most cases of chiefs, though it is certain that one town (Verulainium) and some tribes had the right of striking money. The most interesting coins are those of known chiefs and their families—of Commius, probably the active prince mentioned by Cesar, of Dubnovellaunus, mentioned in the famous Ancyra inscription, which has been called the will of Augustus, and most of all the large and interesting series of Cuno- belinus, Shakespeare's Cymbeline, his brother Epaticcus, and his father Tasciovanus. It is evident from the coins and historical evidence collected by Evans that Tasciovanus had a long reign. His chief town, as we learn from his money, was Verulamium. His coins are in three metals, repeat the traditional types, and present new ones, some showing a distinctly Roman influence. The money of Epaticcus is seanty, but that of Cunobelinus, with Camulodunum (Colchester) for his chief town, iseven more abundant than his father's, indicating a second long reign, and having the same general charac- teristics. The gold shows a modification of the traditional type, the silver and bronze the free action of Roman influence and a remark- able progress in art. With the death of this prince not long before 43 A.D. British coinage probably ceases, none being known of his sons, Adminius, Togodumnus, and the more famous Caractacus, though the coins of the Iceni may have continued as late as 50 A.D.1~~

~~The ancient coins of Italy occupy the next place. to have been struck during a period of more than 500 years, the oldest being probably of the beginning of the 6th century B.c., and the latest somewhat anterior to the time of Julius Cesar. The larger number, however, are of the age before the great extension of Roman power, which soon Iced to the use of Roman money almost throughout Italy. There are two great classes, which may be called the proper Italian and the Greco-Italian ; but many coins cannot be referred to either, since they present peculiarities of both. The proper Italian coins are of gold, silver, and bronze. Of these, the gold coins are extremely rare, and can never have been struck in any large numbers. The silver are comparatively common, but the bronze are very numerous and~~

characteristic. Some of the silver coins have an incuse device on the reverse, which is almost always a repetition of that on the obverse; they are of Greek cities, but their fabric is peculiar to Italy. There are also a few with a design on the obverse and a perfectly plain reverse. The most remarkable bronze coins of this class are of the kind called es grave, some of which were the early proper coinage of Rome, although others are known to have been struck by other Italian cities, These are very thick coins, some of which are of great size, while most have a rude appearance. The designs of the Italian coins are generally, if not always, of Greek origin, although the influence of

'the native mythology may be sometimes traced. The inscriptions

are in Latin, Oscan, or Etruscan, and follow a native orthography ; sometimes on the earlier coins they are retrograde. The art of this class is generally poor, or even barbarous. The denominations are common to Greek money, except in the case of the bronze, which follows a native system. Of this system the early proper Roman coins afford the best known examples. The Greco-Italian coins are of gold, silver, and bronze. 'The silver and bronze are very common, and the gold comparatively so, although struck by few states or cities. In form the silver and bronze coins are thicker than those of Greece of the same period, but there is not the same difference in the gold. The designs are of Greek origin, although here, as in the proper Italian coins, but less markedly, native influence can be detected. This influence is evident in the frequent occurrence of types symbolically representing rivers, showing a bias towards the old nature-worship, and still more in the use of Latin inscriptions, with half-Italian forms of the letters on coins otherwise Greek. Of the best art of ancient Italian money we have already spoken, and we shall have occasion to mention some of its most beautiful examples. The denomi- nations of the gold and silver coins are unquestionably derived from those of Greece, according to the weight of the Attic talent, the heaviest, gold piece being the stater or 3000th part of that talent ; in silver there are few tetradrachms, the didrachms are extremely common, and smaller denominations are usually not rare. We thus learn that the silver currency was chiefly of didrachms, smaller pieces being less used, and larger ones scarcely used at all. It is important here to notice that the interchange of the native or Italian bronze

coinage with the Greek silver coinage led to a double standard, silver and bronze. The bronze standard, as might be suspected, was of Itahan origin, the silver of foreign introduction.

1 This summary is from Evans's Coins of the Ancient Britons, London, 1864.

They appear Italy.

Greek towns of Italy.

ITALY. |

The peculiarity of the Italian bronze is that in its oldest cast form it was of such weight as to show the absence in some parts of the country of silver equivalents. It was long after silver had been introduced everywhere, with struck bronze equivalents, before the heavy coinage (zs grave) went out of circulation. The silver money is at first remarkable for the evidence it affords of its ex- traneous character in presenting two standards. Afterwards it be- comes equivalent to the bronze, or supphes equivalent picces, and is quite regular. 'The original condition of the Italian currencies is best illustrated by the money of Etruria about 300 B.c. Etruria, be it remembered, was an carly goal of Oriental commerce by sea. At the great mart of Populonia, and in the country round, we find not only silver coins of two different foreign standards, the Attic and the so-called Persic, but also cast ws grave and later struck bronze pieces issued before the cast money had fallen into disuse. Without discussing the origin of these various currencies it is enough to note that they bear witness to the effects of a widely- spread conimerce, and show that here was the meeting-point of the native system and of foreign ones.

In Italy the es grave long ruled. Originally it was libral, the principal coin being the as, nominally of the weight of a Roman libra or pound. In the coinage of Rome the as does not seem to have ever exceeded the weight of ten ounces, or ten-twelfths of its proper weight. On the other hand, the es grave of Etruria is occasionally heavier. 'The Romans made the quarter denarius, called the sestertius, the silver equivalent of the libral as; the carliest weight of this coin was about 17156 grs.; and, the value of silver to

~~bronze being as 1 to 250, we thus obtain 4290, or about ten libral ounces, as the original weight of the libral as. The suc- cessive reductions of the as belong to Roman numismatics, and it is only necessary here to add that they affected the local bronze coinages as Italy fell under the rule of the republic. The silver coinages, on the other hand, survived for a longer time throughout the Greek cities. Their coin corresponding to the sestertius, as the equivalent of the libral as, was the Attic diobolon, which, originally of 22°5 grs., was at ouce reduced to about 18, and of course reduced the didrachm at the same time, which, really Attic, became appa- rently Pheenician ; it was the principal silver coin of the cities of Magna Grecia. The purely Italian currency rules in northern and middle Italy. The great Greek coinages are of the wealthy marts which dotted the coasts of Campania, Calabria, Lucania, and the Bruttii. Similarly we find Etruscan inscriptions on the coins of Etruria, and Oscan on those of middle and lower Italy, where they are eclipsed in number and style by the Greek issues.~~

~~Beginning in the north of Italy, the first coins that strike us are those of Populonia in Etruria. The silver money of this place is generally of the peculiar fabric in which the reverse is left perfectly plain. The es grave of upper and middle Italy is of great import- ance. It presents the great oblong masses of uncertain weight, multiples of the as, which wear an aspect of great antiquity, though the elephant on one shows us that they were cast after the wars of Pyrrhus. Latium is particularly rich, even when we exclude the coinage of Rome (to be treated later). Samnium shows us a curious revival of native silver money after the local coinage of the Italian towns had been almost abolished by Rome. It was the result of the Social or Marsic War of the confederate tribes, who struck for Italy against the Roman supremacy during the years between 90 and 88 B.c. The coins present the head of Italia, and reverse types of which the most striking are warriors, varying in number, taking an oath over a sacrificial pig, and a bull for Italy goring the pro- strate wolf of Rome. The inscriptions are Oscan or Latin.~~

~~Certain of the Greek towns of Italy deserve special mention for the splendour of their coinage,—beautiful in style and delicate in execution. In Campania (leaving the Romano- Campanian for later notice) the two most interesting currencies are of Cume and Neapolis, the modern Naples. Cume~~

presents silver money of the archaic and the early fine style, in which last we first observe the peculiar naiveté of westcrn Greek art before it had attained elabora- tion. The abundant silver coins of Neapolis are of the early and the late fine periods and of the decline. The types are usually the head of the siren Parthenope, more rarely Hera and Pallas, favourite goddesses of the Greeks of Italy ; the reverse presents the man-headed bull common on Campanian money, here not a river- god as in Sicily, but the tauromorphous Dionysus. The bronze money is of good style, and age has beautified it with the rich blue or green patina due to the sulphurous soil. When we reach Calabria the Greek money startles us in astonishing wealth of beauty in the currency of the opulent and luxurious mart of Tarentum, second only to Syracuse in the whole West, of all the main periods of art, and including in the age of its greatest prosperity and its fall (the time of the contest with Rome) the most abundant gold issues of any Greek city. The gold money of Tarentum is a delight to the eye, with the varied beauty of its gem-like types, which, while they show the gem-engraver's art, prove the medallist's know- ledge of the rich but opaque metallic material. Several heads of divinities adorn these coins, and the chief reverse typcs relate to the legendary founder, Taras, son of Poseidon. Always a youth,

n UPS eA TICs

637

he appears as a charioteer, perhaps as a horseman, and riding on a dolphin, ——the familiar Tarentine type. 'The most remarkable sub- ject represents him with outstretched arms running to Poseidon seated ona chair. The silver coinage is chiefly of Attic didrachms, of low weight to admit the interchange of their sixth, the diobol, with the Roman libral as. The prevalent type is Taras seated on a dolphin ; in earlier money the type is single, and repeated incuse on the reverse ; afterwards this subject occupies the reverse, and, itself a charming composition, is delightfully varied. On the early fine coins the people or deinos, personified generally as a youth, often holding a spindle, occupies the obverse, but gives place to a horse- man in various attitudes, giving great scope to the engraver's skill ; probably he is Taras himself, save when he is a full-grown warrior. These representations illustrate the famed horsemanship of the Tar- entines, and

~~refer to contests and games which were probably local. Heraclea in Lucania shows us didrachms of the fine age, with heads of Pallas and subjects connected with Heracles: the coutest with the Nemean lion is most skilfully treated, and the series is very char- acteristic of the gem-engraver's art. The powerful city of Meta- pontum begins with early coins having the incuse reverse, and then displays a long series stretching down to the decline of art. The constant type, which recurs with the heraldic instinct of the West, is the ear of bearded wheat, reminding us of the ''golden harvest" (xpvoobv Oépos) which the Metapontines dedicated at Delphi. Like the Tarentine badge, it first occupies the obverse, then the reverse, balanced by a charming series of heads of divinitics. Persephone is the most appropriate counterpart ; we also note heads of Con- cordia ('Ouévoa) and Hygieia, marked by an ingenuous grace peculiar to the early fine work of the Western school, of Leucippus the founder as a helmeted warrior (occurring on a rare tetradrachm and the usual didrachms), and many other types of unusual variety and originality of conception.~~

~~The ancient Sybaris, famous for her luxury, has left archaic coins ; she was destroyed by Croton in 510 3.c., restored for a time, and then became an Athenian colony, speedily receiving the name of Thurium about 448 B.c. The result of the support of Athens in the days of Pericles was the issuc of a splendid series of coins, Not only is the face of the coin occupied by the head of Pallas, and the great currency, as at Athens, of tetradrachms, but the severe beauty of the style points to the direct influence of the art of central Greece. 'The head of Pallas is covered by a helmet adorned with a splendid figure of the sea-monster Scylla. The reverse shows a bull butting (Oovpios), in a strikingly ideal form. Probably the obverse type affords the nearest reflexion of the masterpiece of Phidias, or at least the closest following of his style. The finest coins are unsigned tetradrachins, but didrachms of cognate style give the beginning of the name of the engraver ®. He reappears at Terina (of which town presently).~~

~~Velia, the last colony of Phocea, whose citizens sailed away to the far west rather than submit to the Persian tyrant (544 B.c.), shows coins from its foundation. The pieces of fine work witness to an Asiatic origin in the types of the lion, devouring the stag or as a single device, while the obverse displays the head of Pallas somuch in favour in Magna Grecia. 'The style,~~

which lacks strength but not beauty, is Italian, and we see no trace of the pictorial qualities of Ionian art, which indeed had not taken its mature form when the exiles left the mother country.

The Bruttii are the first native Italians whom we find striking a fair Greek coinage. Their gold and silver is of late style, the gold presenting the head of Poseidon and Amphitrite on a sea-horse, the silver the head of Amphitrite and the figure of Poscidon, both with other subjects. Caulonia has early coins running down to the early fine period, mythologically interesting in type, and the later with a beautifully-designed stag on the reverse. Jl'or Croton the ruling type is the tripod. The eagle occurs on the obverse and the tripod on the reverse. The bird of Zeus is inferior to that at Agrigentum, as this again is inferior to the cagle of Elis. We note also beautiful types of Heracles seated, one of marvellously delicate work, on the reverse of which Apollo aims an arrow at the Python from behind his tripod,—a remarkable composition. The other Heracles types form a most interesting series of recollections, "'memory sketches," of a famous statue, the pose of which recalls the so-called Theseus of the Parthenon, while the obverse presents the head of the Hera Lacinia worshipped on the promontory close by. The latest coins, like the parallel ones of Metapontum, are weak and pretty. The money of the Locri Epizephyrii affords two curious types of reverse, Eirene seated, of fine style, with the legend EIPHNH AOKPON, and the later yet more remarkable subject of Roma seated while Pistis crowns her, the legend being POQMA TITZTIS AOKPOQN. The historical reference is as yet un- discovered. There are beautiful coins of the little-known town of Pandosia, bearing the head of the nymph Pandosia(?); the reverse has the river Crathis, a splendid head of the Lacinian Hera, and Pan, being signed by an engraver who may be the saine as the ® of Thurium, though the style is different and the execution gem-like.

Rhegium was closely connected with Messenc in Sicily opposite, and thus the great Sicilian currency of tetradrachms prevails.

Bicily.

Anaxilaus, tyrant of Rhegium from 494 to 476 B.c., early in his rule acquired Messene through Samian adventurers. The coins of both towns at first present Samian types, and then, the Samians having been expelled, Anaxilaus commemorates his Olympic vic- tory in the mule-car. As this race only lasted from 500 to 448 B.C., its occurrence here, represented only in the style of the earliest quarter of the 5th century, is historically valuable. The same type appears at Messene and lasts longer. In botli cases the reverse bears a running hare, a symbol of Pan.

The little-known town of Terina is illustrious as having produced a series of silver didrachms which, on the whole, is the most beautiful in Italy. The obverse has the head of a goddess, who is portrayed winged on the reverse, —a wonderfully fine subject, well conceived and inost delicately executed in a variety of different attitudes, some recalling the Nices which adorn the balustrade of the temple of Wingless Victory at Athens. Very curiously, the money of Terina begins with an archaic coin which bears on the reverse the named figure of Wingless Victory, surrounded by the olive-wreath. Does all this indicate a religious connexion with Athens? Though the Athenian temple was not built till half a century or more after the date of the earlier coin, we may well think that the worship was of older date. The artist of the later coins, who signs ®, is clearly the ® of Thurium, Athenian in style if not in nationality, and perhaps he had seen the sculptures at Athens. At Terina he rules art; at Thurium he is one of several engravers; at Heraclea and Neapolis he merely introduces the stronger style ; perhaps he appears once more executing a master- piece at Pandosia. He must have had a long life and wide renown. It is significant that at Terina the later coins have a merit most unusual in the West. 2

The coinage of Sicily is Greek. The Hellenic and Carthaginian colonies of the coast left the barbarous natives undisturbed in the inland country, and both issued Greek money, the Punic with a tincture of Pheenicjan style. The coinage ranges from the 6th cen- tury B.c. until the subjugation of the island by the Romans, after which a few cities struck colonial or imperial coins for a short space. The marked periods are those of the preponderance of Syracuse from 480 to 212 B.c., interrupted by the great Carthaginian wars, which were fatal to the cities of the southern coast. The coinage isin gold, mainly issued at Syracuse, in silver, and in bronze. The standard is Attic,

~~except the earliest money of the Chalcidian colonies Himera, Messene, and Naxos, which follows the AAginetan weight. The metrology of Sicily-has a distinct relation to that of Italy. Here also there is a.double standard, silver and bronze, and in consequence an intrusive silvgMpoin, differing but little from the obol, weighing 13°5 instead of 1°25 grs., the silver equivalent of the bronze litra, whose name it borrows. g The litra in bronze was the Sicilian ponnd, equal to half an "Att® mina, and to two-thirds of the Roman libra or pound. So important was the litra in Sicily that the silver litra supplanted the obol, and the didrachm was sometimes called a stater of ten litre, the decadrachm a piece of fifty litre, pentecontalitron. The leading coin is the tetradrachm, not, as in Italy, the didrachin.~~

~~The Sicilian money is of extremely careful artistic work, not un- frequently even in the case of bronze allowing for a more rapid execution of the die; and the highest technical excellence is attained. The art is that of the southern branch of the great Western school, generally more skilful than the art of southern Italy, but less varied. The earlier fine work has a naive beauty peculiar to the West and al- most confined to Sicily ; all that follows is evidently gem-engravers' work. These coins are remarkable for the frequency of artists' signatures, which for the short period of highest skill are almost universal on the larger silver money of Syracuse, and occur less frequently on that of the other great cities. "As in Italy, the decline is more rapid than elsewhere in the Greek world, in consequence of the inherent weakness of the style; but it is in part due to the calamities of the island, as of lower Italy.~~

~~The fame won by the tyranni and other leading aristocrats of Sicily in the great national contests of Hellas, in the race with the quadriga, the mule-car, and the horse, led to the introduction and supremacy of types commemorating these victories, probably in most cases those achieved at Olympia. That these victories are intended is shown principally by the mode in which a chariot is portrayed at the critical moment of passing the turning — post, by the occurrence of the turning-post itself, by the correspondence of the cities issuing the type with those commemorated by Pindar, in whose Olympic Odes the six victories in the chariot-race are all won by Sicilians, and by the direct evidence of Aristotle (ap. Poll., v. 75) that Anaxilaus of Rhegium recorded on his coins his Olympic victory with~~

the mule-car. It is obvious that no success could be So appropriately figured on the coinage. The religious idea was maintained ; the charioteer or the horseman was not the victor, but at the same time the renown of the city was indissolubly connected with the citizen who won it. Hence these types are confined to states ruled by tyranni or oligarchies ; outside Sicily they are only found at Rhegium when it was closely connected with Sicily, at Cyrene, and in the money of Philip II. of Macedon. The horseman

NUMAT SM ATA CS

[SICILY.

is not a frequent type ; the mule-car is limited to Messene (and Rhegium); but the quadriga becomes the stereotyped subject for the reverse of the great Sicilian tetradrachms,—the bulk of the coiage,—and only escapes heraldic sameness by a charming variety in the details. In the age of finest art a divinity of the city takes, in Homeric guise, the place of the charioteer, or Nice herself so wins the victory ; commonly she hovers above about to crown the charioteer. Yet more interesting are the types connected with nature-worship, especially those portraying river-gods in the form of a man-headed bull, or a youth with the budding horns of a calf, or in the shape of a dog, where Pheenician influence is found, and also the subjects of the nymphs of fountains. . These types occur on either side of the coin. 'The obverse of all is usually held by the head of a divinity, Persephone and Pallas taking the first place.

The leading position which Syracuse held in the island makes it Syra- proper to notice her splendid currency first, the finest for knowledge cuse.

of the materials, for skill in suitably filling the space, and for deli- cacy of execution in the whole range of Greek money, though we iniss the noble simplicity of Greece, the strong feeling of western Asia Minor, and the simple picturesqueness of Crete. 'These larger qualities are sacrificed to am excess of richness and even to tricks of art. Yet the beauty of the coins and their complcteness,—the artist having satisfied his intention, command our admiration; and our interest is raised by the story they tell of the vicissitudes of the great city of the West, the mother of liberty and the slave of tyrants, great in commerce, rich, luxurious, loving the arts, yet able to

~~defend herself even under base rulers against all the power of Carthage and of Athens. Syracuse was founded in 734 8.0. by Archias of Corinth, an origin which, remembered on both sides, served her well in later history. In the 6th century, under the oligarchy of the Geomori, she issued her most archaic silver money, which, primitive as it is, gives promise of the care of the later coinage, aud begins the agonistic types, thus indicating some early victory at a great Hellenic contest. Gelon, tyrant of Gela, won the chariot race at Olympia in 488 B.c., secured Syracuse in 485 B.c., and, when the Carthaginians, probably by agreement with Xerxes, invaded Sicily, utterly routed them at the great battle of Himera (480 B.c.), the Salamis of the West. These events find their record in the issue and subjects of his Syracusan money, which, however, was struck, as usual in that age, in the name of the people. The chariot type is varied, for Nice appears hovering above the vic- torious charioteer, about to crown the horses, and the coins issued after the great battle show the lion of Libya bencath the car in the exergue (Head, Syracuse, 9). These last pieces are fixed in date by the famous story how Gelon's wife Demarete, having gained favour- able terms for the vanquished Carthaginians, was presented by them with a hundred talents of gold, by means of which she coined the great silver pieces of fifty litre or ten drachms, which were called after her demaretia. They bear the head of Nice, or it may be Pallas, crowned with olive, and the quadriga and lion. The battle of Himera and the death of Gelon (478 B.c.) fix the date of these remarkable coins, which close the archaic series of Syracuse and give usa fixed point in Greek art, at about 479 B.c. There is a touch of Egyptian in their style which makes us think that Syracuse may have been influenced through Naucratis.~~

~~Hieron (478-467 8.c.), the brother and successor of Gelon, con- tinues the same types, alluding, as Head well remarks (loc. ctt.), to his great victory over the Etruscans off Cume (474 B.c.), by the marine monster in the exergue of the reverse which denotes the vanquished maritime power. It is to be noted that as Gelon intro- duces the Nice in the chariot type, so in the horseman type we now~~

~~- first see Nice crowning the rider. Gelon had won an Olympic victory~~

~~in the four-horse contest, Hieron in the horse-race, though he also won with the four horses in the Pythian games. With Hieron's money we say farewell to archaic art. The female heads on the obverse now have the eye in profile and show beauty and variety, and the horses are even exceptionally represented in rapid action. With the short rule of Thrasybulus, the last brother of the house, it came to an end, and the age of the democracy (466-406 B.c.) began. The victories by land and sea of Gelon and Hieron had established the power of the city on a sure basis, and fifty years of prosperity followed. To the earlier part of this age belong the beautiful transitional coins in which the female heads are marked. by a youthful simplicity of beauty combined with fanciful and even fantastic treatment of the hair; the reverses remain extremely severe. Towards the close of this age there are very fine works, the first signed coins, with the old dignity yet with greater freedom of style, the horses of the quadriga in rapid movement. The contest with Athens and the victory of Syracuse (415-412 B.c.) seem to have given the impulse of which we here see the effect. To the democracy also belong the earliest gold and bronze pieces.~~

~~The tyranny of Dionysius and his successors (406-345 B. c.) is the age of the most splendid Syracusan coins, and that which shows the distinct beginning of decline. The wealth and rosperity of Diony- sius led to the issue of the magnificent decadrachms, commonly but erroneously called medallions, with the heads of Persephone and Arethusa and the victorious chariot, as well as a variety of~~

~~Other cities of Sicily.~~

~~SICILY.~~ |

~~signed tetradrachms. The tyrant, defeated at Olympia by a com- bination, seems to commemorate on these coins the victory he could have won, and this explanation appears to be confirmed by such indications, never all combined, as the fallen turning-post, the broken rein, and the affrighted charioteer. The Dionysian dynasty closed in nine years of anarchy, until Syracuse appealed to Corinth,~~

~~and Timoleon was sent to restore order (344 B.c.). The triumph of~~

~~this public-spirited statesman is witnessed by various changes in the coinage. The chief silver piece is now a didrachm of Corinthian type, corresponding in weight to the tridrachm of Corinth, and with the same types, the head of Pallas and the Pegasus; the smaller coins present some Corinthian subjects. The democracy was over- thrown in 317 B.c. aud the city seized by Agathocles (317-289 B.c.), the worst of the tyrants of Syracuse. In the course of his reign he adopted the royal style, and his coins, a reflexion of earlier work, give his name first without and then with the title king,—a double innovation. The tyrant Hicetas (287-278 B.c.), and the next ruler, Pyrrhus king of Epirus (278-276 B.c.), continue the coinage, Pyrrhus issuing money in the name of the Syracusans and also striking his own pieces. The departure of Pyrrhus led to the establishment by a native, the second Hieron, of a dynasty which, so long as he ruled (276-216 B.c.), restored the ancient prosperity and preponderance of the rule of his namesake. At first content with inscribing his name alone, he soon not only takes the title of king, conferred on him in the early years of his reign, but also places his portrait on the money. Of his time is the beautiful portrait of Queen Philistis, supposed to be his consort. The heads have merit, but the reverse has become merely heraldic. The money of the short reign of Hieronymus (216-215 z.c.) and of the brief democracy which fell before the Romans (215-212 B.c.) close the independent series of this great city. But her name still appears in bronze money issued after the conquest.~~

~~Taking the rest of the money of Sicily in alphabetical order, we first note a very fine bronze coin bearing a beautiful female head, perhaps that of Sicilia, crowned with myrtle, and a lyre, the date of which is later than Timoleon's Syracusan issues, on one of which it is restruck. This coin is conjecturally attributed to Adranum. AStna, better known as Catana, is represented by a unique tetradrachm, with a wonderful head of Silenus, and Zeus as the god of the volcano hard by enthroned and hurling a thunder-bolt. 'The first great town is Agrigentum, represented by archaic, transitional, and fine coins, the fine series ending with the over- throw of the city by the Carthaginians in 406 B.¢.,—a blow from which it never recovered. The usual types are the eagle and the crab, but in the age of finest art we see two eagles devouring a hare, and a victorious chariot ; these occur in the rare decadrachm and the tetradrachms. The eagle is superior to that of Croton, inferior to that of Elis. Is it a sea-eagle, while the~~

Olympian bird is the golden cagle? Many of the bronze coins are of good work. The type most worthy of note is the head of a river-god, with the name Acragas, which was that of the stream of the town, and on the reverse an eagle standing on an Jonic capital, the Olympic turning- post. The success of Agrigentum at the games is attested by Pindar, while Virgil (4in., tii. 704), Gratius (Cyneg,, 526), and Silius Italicus mention its ancient renown for horses. The lofty site (arduus Acragas), overlooking the sca and on the bank of the stream of the same name, makes the eagles, the crab, and the river appropriate devices, showing that Greek types have a local fitness, while chosen with a religious intention.

The money of Camarina is of especial beauty and interest. The fifth of Pindar's Olympic Odes, to Psaumnis the Camarinzan, affords an excellent commentary upon it. The earliest coin we know is a didrachm of about this time, whereas there are many pieces of from fifty to a hundred years earlier of most of the other important cities of Sicily. Camarina, however, was then but lately inhabited (véoucov édpav), having been recently twice devastated by the Syracusans. This piece has on the obverse a helmet upon a round shield and on the reverse a pair of greaves, between which is a dwarf palm (Chamexrops humilis). The arms are those of some divinity or hero ; the palm may represent the sacred grove (@\cos ayvév) in which the temple of the chief divinity probably stood. This piece is followed by tetradrachms and didrachins of the best period, most beautiful in style, and varying a little from difference of age. The tetradrachms bear on the obverse the head of Heracles in the lion's skin, and on the reverse Pallas as a victor at the Olympic games in a quadriga. It was Pallas, protector of the city (roAcdoxe Taddds), whose sacred grove was made more illustrious by the success of Psaumis. The didrachms have on the obverse the head of a river-god, portrayed as a young man with small horns and with wet hair. Of the two rivers of Camarina, the Oanus and the Hipparis, the Hipparis is here represented, for in one case the name is given on the coin. Pindar seems to show the same preference, for, while he merely mentions the Oanus (rorapdv . . . "Qavov), he speaks of the sacred channels by which the Hipparis watered the city (ceuvods dxerods, "Immapis ofa dpdeorparéy). Ou thé reverse the nymph Camarina ('OQkeavod Ov-yarep

.. Kayaplya) is seen carried across her lake (éyywpiay . Aiuvay) by a swan swimming with expanded wings, while she aids

it by spreading her veil in the manner of a sail. Some of these didrachms have on either side, around the chief device, fresh-water fishes. The series of Catana comprises fine archaic tetradrachms and others of the time of the best art. The archaic tetradrachms have the types of a river in the form of a man-headed bull and of the figure of Nice. The head of Apollo succeeds, with for reverse the victorious quadriga, in one case passing the turning-post, an Ionic column.

Gela is represented by coins of which the archaic tetradrachms must be especially mentioned. They have on the obverse the fore- part of the river-god Gelas, whence the city took its name. The Gelas is represented as a bull, having the face of a bearded man. On the reverse is a victorious quadriga at the Olympic games, in some examples represented passing an Ionic column, as on coins of Catana. A tetradrachm of the later period of the age of good art has types of the head of the Gelas as a young man horned, surrounded by three fishes, and on the reverse Nice in a biga with a wreath above. The money of Himera is of great interest. The oldest didrachms of Himera, which probably began in the 6th century B.c., bear on the obverse a cock and on the reverse an incuse pattern. They are succeeded by transitional tetradrachms, which bear on the one side a victorious quadriga and on the other a nymph sacrificing, near whom a little Silenus stands under the stream of a fountain issuing from a lion's head in a wall. Leontini is represented by tetradrachms with the head of Apollo and the victorious car, which gives place to a lion's head. The series of Messene begins, when the town was called Zancle, or, as it is written upon the coins, Dancle, with early drachms or smaller pieces of the /Kginetan weight, and of very archaic work. On the obverse is a dolphin, and around it a sickle, and on the reverse is a shell in the midst of an incuse pattern. The place is said to have received its name on account of the resemblance of the harbour to a sickle (fd-y«ov or fayKAn). Next to these first coins of Zancle may be placed, as the oldest piece of the Attic weight, a tetradrachm with the

~~Samian types, a lion's scalp on one side and.on the other the head of a bull, and bearing the inscription MEXSENION. This coin was doubtless struck during the rule of the Samians, who took the place about 494 B.c., at the instigation of Anaxilaus tyrant of Rhegium, by whom they were subsequently expelled (Thucyd., vi. 4). The next pieces are the earliest of those which have on the obverse the mule-car and on the reverse a running hare, like the contemporary coins of Rhegium, with the same devices and equally of the rule of Anaxilaus. These types cease at Rhegium, though they continue at Messene, some of the tetradrachms bearing them being of the age of fine art. When the town had been seized by the Mamertini, money was struck with their name, thus borne by the later coins, which are of bronze. They are good, but not of the best style. Naxos is represented by handsome transitional tetra- drachms and others of the fine period, and by smaller silver pieces, chiefly of the earlier time.~~

~~There are some coins of the city of Panormus, but most of those which have been classed to it are of the Carthaginians, issued both — in Sicily and in Africa. Nothing is more probable than that many of these pieces were struck at Panormus, but there is no sure means of distinguishing any such, and, if there were, the mere fact of their having been issued at the place would not justify us in classing them to it. Segesta is represented by coins of the archaic and of the good period. We first notice the head of the nymph Segesta and a hound, probably a river-god, then the same type for obverse associated with a young hunter accompanied by two hounds,—a charming composition. Another interesting type is a victorious car driven by Persephone, who carries ears of corn.~~

~~In the series of the city of Selinus the first coins are didrachms, bearing on the obverse a leaf and on the reverse an incuse square. The city and the river of the same name no doubt derived their name from the plant oé\wov, the leaf of which must be here in- tended. There is some difficulty as to its identification; the plant sacred at Selinus appears to be, as Colonel Leake stpposes, wild celery (Apium graveolens) ; but it does not follow that the "selinon " with which the victors at the Isthmian and Nemean games were crowned was really the same species. Tetradraclims and didrachms of transitional and of good art have devices of more than usual interest. The obverse exhibits a river-god, sometimes the Sclinus, sometimes the Hypsas,~~

sacrificing at the altar of Aisculapius, while on the didrachm a wading-bird is sometimes seen behind him, as if departing. This subject appears to allude to the draining of the pestiferous marshes. The reverse of the tetradrachms generally shows a quadriga in which Apollo stands drawing his bow, while Artemis 1s charioteer. The reference must be equally to the driving away of the pestilence.

We have still to mention the main characteristics of the true Siculo- Siculo-Punic coins, that is, those actually struck by the Cartha- Punic ginians in Sicily. A careful examination shows that the Punic money. money must be separated into three distinct divisions—the coinage of the Carthaginians in Africa, in Sicily, andin Spain. The Sicilian coins are adjusted to the Attic talent, like those of the Greek cities of the island, and show Greek style modified by barbarian influence. The known towns are Solus, Motya, Panormus (?), and Heraclea

The Tauric Cherson- ese, &c.

Thracc.

640

Minoa. The leading types are imitated from Syracusan money. This series must not be confounded with the large Attic issues of Carthage, which are distinguished by special types not found in Sicilian money, such as the horse's head and the palm-tree ; the head of Persephone links these coins with the true Siculo-Punic.

The islands near Sicily issued coins which belong to the Cartha- ginian series, except Lipara, of which there is heavy bronze inoney on the Sicilian system, having on the obverse a head of Hephestus, or sometimes a figure of the same divinity seated, holding a hammer and a vase, which he seems to have just formed.

In the Tauric Chersonese there are interesting coins, in the three metals, of the city of Panticapaum, the modern Kertch. Their obverse usually bears the head of Pan and their reverse a griffin and other subjects ; some are of fine Greek style. The money of Sarmatia, of Dacia, and of npper and lower

~~Meesia is chiefly bronze of the Greco-Roman class. In Sarmatia we may notice the autono- nous and imperial pieces of Olbia, and in Dacia the series bearing the name of the province. The Roman colonia Viminacium in upper Mesia is represented by numerous coins of a late time. Of Istrus, in lower Moesia, there are drachms having a strange type on the obverse, representing two beardless heads, those of the Dioscuri, side by side, the one upright and the other upside down ; on the reverse is an eagle devouring a fish. The style of these coins, it may be noticed, is in general fair, though it sometimes approaches to barbarism. There are abundant Greek imperial coins of Marcianopolis and Nicopolis, while Tomi is represented in this class as well as by autonomous money.~~

~~The coins of Thrace are of high interest. Here and in Macedonia we observe the early efforts of barbarous tribes to coin the produce of their silver mines, and the splendid issues of the Greek colonies ; and we see in the weights the influence of the Asiatic Greeks, the Athenians, and the Persians. The oldest coins are of the 5th century B.C., aud there are others of all subsequent times, both while the country was independent and while it was subject to the Romans, until the cessation of Greek coinage. Some of the best period are of the highest artistie merit. So long as they maintain any general distinctive peculiarities of fabric and design, that is, from their commencement until the age of Philip, the Thracian coins resemble those of Macedonia. The money of Abdera com- prises tetradrachms and smaller coins of the periods of archaic and tine art, all but the latest of the Phcenician standard, ultimately superseded by the Persic. The principal type is a seated griffin. The reverse type, an incuse square, has at first four divisions, but in the age of the finest art contains a variety of beautiful subjects. Juus is remarkable for the great beauty of some of its coins. These are tetradrachms of Attic weight, of the late archaic and best ages. The interesting turning-point from growth to maturity is seen in a vigorous head of Hermes in profile, wearing the petasus. A little later is the splendid series of facing heads, the broad, severe, and sculptural treatment of which is truly admirable, and far superior to the more showy handling of the same subject in later drachms. A goat is the reverse type of the larger coins. The money of the city of Byzantium begins with coins on the Persic standard of good style, having on the obverse a bull above a dolphin and on the reverse an incuse square of four divisions, and closes with the series of bronze coins~~

issued under the empire. The Roman colonia of Deultum and the city of Hadrianopolis deserve a passing notice. Of Maronea, anciently famous for its wine, there is an interesting series beginning with small archaic coins. After these we notice fine tetradrachms of Phoenician weight, having on the obverse a prancing horse and on the reverse a vine within a square. The standard changes to Persic, of which there is a beautiful series of didrachms. Then the series is interrupted by the rule of the Macedonian kings, and resumed in a barbarous coinage of the native Thracians, issued in the second and first centuries before the Christian era, consisting of spread Attic tetradrachms with the types of the head of beardless Dionysus crowned with ivy and on the other side his figure. The Greek imperial coins of Pautalia and Perinthus are worthy of notice. Among those of the latter town we may mention fine pieces of Antoninus Pius and Severus, and large coins, commonly called medallions, of Caracalla and other emperors. 'The money of the imperial class issued by Philippo- polis, Serdica, and Trajanopolis should also be noticed. In the Thracian Chersonese the most important series is one of small autonomous silver pieces, probably of the town of Cardia. There is a limited but highly interesting gronp of coins of Thracian kings and dynasts. The earliest are of kings of the Odryse, including Seuthes I., who began to reign in 424 B.c., and whose money bears the two remarkable inscriptions EEYOA—KOMMA and ZEYOA APILYPION. It closeswith the issues of Roman vassals ; they begin with Coson, who puts on his gold staters the type of the Junia family, the first consul between his lictors, marking his allegiance to Brutus, and an eagle. Lysimachus, commonly classed as king of Thrace, belongs to the group of Alexander's western successors. Among the islands of Thrace, Imbros with its trace of Pelasgic worship, and, equally with Lemnos, showing evidence of Athenian dominion, and Samothrace with the Asiatic worship of Cybele

NUMISMATICs

—activity.

| THRACE.

yield in interest to Thasos. Here a long and remarkable cur- rency begins with very early Persic didrachms, the obverse type a centaur carrying a nymph, the reverse an incuse square of four divisions. Under the Athenian

supremacy we see a decline of weight, and in style the attainment of high excellence. The design of the obverse now reminds us of the work of Alcamenes at Olympia, grand in spite of careless execution. After this we observe coins of Pheenician weight, bearing for their obverse types the head of Dionysus. These are of the best period of art, and some tetra- drachms are among the very finest Greek coins. The head of Dionysus is treated in a sculptural style that is remarkably broad and grand. The massive, powerful features, and the formal hair, nearly falling to the neck in regular curls like those of the full beard, are relieved by a broad wreath of ivy-leaves, designed with great delicacy and simplicity. The reverse bears a Heracles kneel- ing on one knee and discharging his bow,—a subject powerfully treated. Of a far later period there are large tetradrachms, much resembling those of Maronea, with the same type of the beardless Dionysus, but on the reverse Heracles. There are coins of Peonian kings, which are chiefly silver, and have a resemblance to those of the Macedonian sovereigns, although they are somewhat barbarous. They range from 359 to 286 B.c.

The money of Macedonia both civic and regal is of great variety Mace-

and interest. end of the 6th century B.c. The old pieces are of silver, bronze having come into use a century later, and gold about the middle of the 4th century p.c. The character of the coinage resembles that of Thrace ; the carliest pieces are of the Pheenician, Babylonic, and Attic standards, the heavier form of the Babylonic, the Persic, appearing later. The most remarkable denominations are the Pheenician octadrachms and dodecadrachms. The largest coins are of the time of Alexander I. and somewhat earlier, and indicate the metallic wealth of the country more than its commercial Philip II. adopted for gold money, which he was the first Macedonian king to issue, the Attic weight, striking staters on that system, while he maintained the Pheenician standard for his silver comage. Alexander the Great made the weight of the gold and silver moncy the same by employing the Attic system for both ; and from his time no coins of kings of Macedonia in these metals were struck on any other system. The series of Roman Macedonia begins with coins of the ‘‘regions’’ issued by permission of the senate and bearing the name of the Macedonians, from 158 to 146 B.o. ; others follow of the Roman province. The coinage of Acanthus comprises fine archaic tetradrachms of Attic weight and others of

~~Pheenician weight and very vigorous in style, of the commcnce- ment of the period of good art. The type of their obverse is a lion seizing a bull. The money of Mneia is chiefly interesting from its bearing the head of the hero Aineas; and on one extraordinary coin of archaic fabric, an Attic tetradrachm, the subject is the hero carrying Anchises from Troy, preceded by Creusa carrying Ascanius ; this is in date before 500 B.c., and is preserved in the Berlin Museum. The town of Amphipolis is represented by a long series. There are Phoenician tetradrachms having on the obverse a head of Apollo, facing, sometimes in a splendid style, which recalls the art of the immediate successors of Phidias, as seen, for instance, in the famous bronze female head in the British Museum. The reverse type is a flaming torch in an incuse square. 'There are also many Greek imperial bronze pieces of this city. The territory of Chalcidice is eminent for the excellence of some of its silver coins. These are Phcenician tetradrachms of the best period struck by the Chalcidian League (392-379 8.c., and later), Olynthus being probably the mint. The obverse bears the head of Apollo in profile crowned with laurel. It is in very high relief and treated with great simplicity, though not with the severity of somewhat earlier pieces. The delicacy of the features is balanced by the simple treatment of the hair and the broad wreath of laurel. On the reverse isa lyre. There is an early series of coins of Lete. Some are of a remote date and none later than about the time of Alexander I. The obverse type is a satyr with a nymph, and on the reverse is an incuse square divided fourfold, first diagonally and then in squares. Mende has money of Attic weight, the types being con- nected with Silenus, who on a tetradrachm of fine art is portrayed reclining, a wine-vase in his hand, on the back of an ass; the reverse bears a vine. Of Neapolis (Datenon) there are early coins with the Gorgon's head and the incuse square, which changes, as at. Lete, and in the period of fine art gives way to a charming head of Nice crowned with olive. There is a very early Attic tetradrachm of Olynthus, with a quadriga, and an eagle within a double square, the only coin, save Philip's gold and silver and the money of Cyrene, which repeats the idea of the great Sicilian currencies, the record of Olympic victory. Orthagoria, better known as Aristotle's birthplace Stageira, has a few remarkable coins of good art and a peculiar style. The coins of Philippi in the three metals are mainly of the time of Philip II., who, having found a rich gold mine near Crenides, changed its name to~~

~~Philippi. The gold coins are Attic staters, the silver pieces of the Pheenician or Macedonian weight, like Philip's own money. All bear the head of young~~

~~It begins at an early time, probably towards the donia.~~

~~Kings of Mace- donia.~~

~~MACEDONIA. |~~

~~Heracles in a lion's skin, and a tripod. Imperial pieces were struck by the city as a colonia. There isa long series of Thessalonica, beginning with Greek bronze coins, the latest of which are asses with on the obverse the Roman head of Janus in strange combination with a Greek inscription. Then follow pieces of imperial time and others with imperial effigies. Uranopolis has a few coins with very curious astronomical types, probably issued by the eccentric Alex- archus, brother of Cassander. The issues of the Thraco-Macedonians are extremely interesting. They are all just anterior UO, OH ihe may be contemporary with, Alexander I. of Macedon. The leading coins are octadrachms of the Phenician standard. They have usually but one type, the reverse bearing a quadripartite incuse square. Their sudden appearance and heavy weight are due to the working of the silver mines on the border of Macedonia and Thrace. The usual types are a warrior leading a horse or a yoke of oxen. The coins bear the names of the Bisalte, Getas king of the Edoni (whose only two coins, differing dialectically in their inscriptions, were found in the Tigris in 1818, and are now in the British Museum), the Orrescii, and other tribes. Besides these there arc very curious Pheenician dodecadrachms of an unknown tribe, bearing the un- usual type of an ox-car, in which is a figure seated, and on the reverse a triquetra.~~

~~The oldest coins of the Macedonian kings are of Alexander I., from 498 to 454 B.c., the contemporary of Xerxes. These are Phoenician octadrachms, having on the obverse a hero by the side of a horse, and coins of a lower denomination with the same or a similar type. The money of Alexander's successors illustrates the movement of art, but it is not until the reign of Philip II. that we have an abundant coinage. He first strikes gold pieces, chiefly Attic didrachms, from the produce of his mine near Philippi. They are of fair but somewhat careless style, and bear on the obverse the head of Ares. On the reverse is a victorious Olympic biga. These coins were~~

afterwards known as @:Aurmetou and the gold money of Alexander as ’A\e£avdpetox—appellations which robably did not include larger or smaller pieces. Horace calls the gold coins of Philip “‘ Philips” (‘‘regale nomisma Philippos,” Epist. ii. 1, 232), The silver coinage of Philip is mainly composed of tetradrachms of the Pheenician talent. Their type of obverse is a head of Zeus, and of reverse either a mounted hero wearing a causia or a victor in the horse-race with a palm,—these last coins being the best of Philip’s, although the horse is clumsy.

The coinage of Alexander the Great, both in the number of the cities where it was issued and in its abundance, excels all other Greek regal money ; but its art is, without being despicable, far below excellence. The types are not remarkable in themselves, and there is a great sameness characterizing the entire series. The system of both gold and silver is Attic. The gold coins are distaters or gold tetradrachms, staters or didrachms, hemistaters or drachms, with their half or a smaller denomination. The types of the distaters or staters, which last were the most common pieces, are for the obverse the head of Pallas and for the reverse Nice bearing a trophy-stand. The largest silver piece is the decadrachm, which is of extreme rarity. The types of the tetradrachms and most of the lower coins are on the obverse the head of Heracles in the lion’s skin and on the reverse Zeus seated, bearing on his hand an cagle. The head has been supposed to be that of Alexander, but this is not the case, although there may be some assimilation to his portrait. The great currency was of tetradrachms. The coinage was struck in different cities, distinguished by proper symbols and monograms. The classification of the series is difficult, but is gradually advancing. The bronze money is not remarkable.

The coinage of Alexander is followed by that of Philip Arrhidzus, with the same types in gold and silver. That of Alexander IV. was alone issued by Ptolemy I. In these coins the types of Alexander were modified. Meanwhile Seleucus, Lysimachus, and Antigonus, king of Asia, struck Alexander’s money with their own names, and the tetradrachms of Macedonia were generally of this kind until the time of Philip V. The same coinage, marked by a large flat form, was reissued later by the cities of western Asia, when the Romans, after the battle of Magnesia in 190 B.c., restored the liberties which Alexander had granted. The series of Alexandrine money is

~~interrupted by various small coinages and the later issues of Lysimachus, king of Thrace, with the first Greek regal portrait, the head of Alexander with the ram's horn, as the son of Zeus Ammon, sometimes a work worthy of Lysippus and an excellent indication of his style. The reverse has a figure of Pallas holding a little Nice. The coins of Demetrius I. (Poliorcetes) comprise fine tetradrachms, some of the types of which have an historic reference. They bear either on the obverse his portrait with a bull's horn and on the reverse a figure of Poseidon, or on the one side a winged female figure (Nice or Fame) on the prow of a galley, blowing a trumpet, and on the other Poseidon striking with his trident. The latter types cannot be doubted to relate to the great naval victory which Demetrius gained over Ptolemy. The tetradrachms of Antigonus I. (Gonatas), which are of inferior style and work to those of Demetrius, have types which appear to refer in like manner to the great event of his time.~~

~~NUMISMATICS~~

~~64]~~

~~The obverse type is a Macedonian buckler with the head of Pan in the midst, and the reverse type Pallas Promachus. The head of Pan isssupposed to have been taken as a device in consequence of the panic which led to the discomfiture of the Gauls at Delphi. The money of Demetrius IT. is unimportant, but Antigonus Doson is represented by tetradrachms with the head of Poseidon, and Apollo seated on a galley. The tetradrachins of Philip V. have on the obverse a head in the helmet of Perseus, representing Philip in the character of that hero, or else the hero himself, perhaps assimi- lated to the king. The reverse bearsa club. Other tetradrachms and smaller coins have a simple portrait of Philip. The tetra- drachms of Perseus are of fair style, considering the time at which they were struck. They bear on the one side the king's head and on the other an eagle on a thunderbolt.~~

~~The coin systems of northern Greece, Thessaly, Epirus, Acarnania, and Atolia present certain difficultics which if we consider them as originally figinetan, modified in the west by Corinthian, and later by Roman, influence. The coinage of Thessaly presents very few specimens of a remote period, while pieces of the best time are numerous. These are in general re- markably like the finest coins of Sicily and Italy, although the~~

~~style is simpler. The prevalence of the horse and horseman is significant. The money of the Thessalian Confederacy, being of late date (196-146 B.c.), is of little interest. The commonest types are the head of Zeus crowned with oak and the Thessalian Pallas Itonia in a fighting attitude. The coinage is resumed in imperial times. Of the town of Gomphi or Philippopolis there is a beautiful drachm, having on the obverse a female head, facing, which is prob- ably that of a nymph as the city. The coins of Lamia are also to be noticed for their beauty. The drachms bear the head of Lamia, the mistress of Demetrius Poliorcetes, and young Heracles, who probably represents Demetrius. The series of Larissa begins with archaic pieces and some of the early period of good art, but some- times of rather coarse execution. "The small silver pieces have very interesting reverse types relating to the nymph of the fount- ain, and to be compared for mutual illustration with the didrachms of Terina and with some of thosc of Elis. These are followed by coins of fine work. The usual obverse type is the head of Larissa, the nymph of the fountain, facing, and on the reverse is generally a horse, either free or drinking. The head is treated in a very rich manner, like that of the fountain-nymph Arethusa, facin g, on tetra-drachms of Syracuse ; indeed, the resemblance to the Sicilian type is most remarkable. If it be a copy, it is simpler and bolder than the original. The bronze money is also good. The coins of Phar- salus and Phere are also worthy of note. Of the tyrants of Phere Alexander is represented by coins.~~

~~The coinage of Illyria is usually of inferior or rude art; the pieces Illyria.~~

~~are Aiginetic, ultimately changing to Attic. Of Apollonia there is a large series. The earliest have the Corcyrean types of the cow and the calf and the floral pattern ; the latest, usually, the head of Apollo and three nymphs dancing round a fire, the outer ones holding torches. Dyrrachium, which never bears on its coins the mote famous name of Epidamnus, is represented by an important series. First there are Aiginetan didrachms with Corcyreean types. These are succeeded by tridrachms with Corinthian types, and, of course, on the Attic standard; and then the old types are resumed, but apparently without a return to the former weight. Dyrrachium, it must be remembered, was founded partly by Corcyrean and partly by Corinthian colonists.~~

~~The coins of Epirus are of higher interest and beauty than those Epirus.~~

~~of Illyria. Of the. Epirots there are bronze coins of the regal period, and both silver and bronze of the republic (238-168 B.c.), with the heads of the Dodonzan Zeus and Dione, together or apart. The city of Ambracia is represented by beautiful silver pieces, with on the one side a veiled female head and on the other a kind of obelisk. The series of Greek imperial money of Nicopolis must also be mentioned. The coinage known to us of the kings of Epirus begins under Alexander I. His coins have been found in the three metals, but they are rare. It is probable that both gold and silver were struck in Italy while he was in that country. 'The coins of Pyrrhus in all metals are of high interest, and remarkable for their beauty, though the style is usually florid. There can be little doubt that they were for the most part struck in Italy and Sicily, at Tarentum and Syracuse. The tetradrachm has for the type of the obverse a head of the Dodonzean Zeus crowned with oak and for that of the reverse Dione seated. A fine didrachm bears on the obverse a head of Achilles helmeted, with for the reverse Thetis on a sea-horse carrying the shield of her son. Among the copper coins of Pyrrhus we must remark the beautiful ones with the portrait of his mother Phthia.~~

~~The coinage of the island of Corcyra begins with very early di- Corcyra.~~

~~drachms and drachms of the 6th century. The types are the~~

~~cow suckling the calf and the floral pattern, as at Dyrrachium.~~

~~These leading subjects are varied in later times by others illustrating~~

~~the Corinthian origin of the nation, its maritime power, and the~~

~~fame of its wine. Not the least curious are the bronze pieces with~~

~~galleys bearing their names, as Strength, Freedom, Glory, Orderly XVII. — 81~~

~~Corcyra, Thes- disappear saly.~~

~~Aear- nania.~~

~~AXtolia.~~

~~Locris.~~

~~Phocis.~~

~~Beeotia.~~

~~Attica,~~

~~Government, Chace, Corcyra, Comus, Cypris, Victor of People, Victory, Youth, Pallas, Foremost, Preserver, Fame, Light-bearer. The abundant bronze series goes on under the emperors.~~

~~The coins of Acarnania are not remarkable for beauty or for variety in their types. The money of several cities in the 4th century B.c. is that of Corinthian colonies. We must mention that of the Acarnanian League (229-168 B.c.), which bears the head of the Achelous as'a man-headed bull and the seated Apollo Actius. Of Leucas there are silver coins and an abundant series in bronze.~~

~~In AXtolia the gold and silver coins of the AEtolian League have some merit (279-168 B.c.). The gold pieces have on the obverse the head of Pallas or that of Heracles in the lion's skin and on the reverse Aitolia personified, seated on Gaulish"and Macedonian shields,—a curious historical type. These subjects reeur, with others indicating the hunter-life of the population, on the silver money ; of especial interest is the head of Atalanta and the Caly- donian boar, and the spear-head with which he was slain, in both silver and bronze. On some of the copper the spear-head and the jaw-bonce of the boar are seen.~~

~~The coinage of Loeris, Phocis, and Beeotia is entirely on the figinetie standard. The coins of the Loeri Epienemidii are mainly didrachms, struck at Opus, with the head of Persephone and the figure of the Lesser Ajax ina fighting attitude, sometimes acecom- panied by his name. 'These coins were struck between 869 and 338 B.C., and are remarkable for the manner~~

~~in which a Syracusan head is copied, and, as appears in other cases in Thessaly and elsewhere, not weakened but presented in a stronger and purer form. So much higher was the conception of art in Hellas than in the West.~~

~~The money of Phocis begins at a very early age, perhaps the 7th century B.c., and extends in silver down to the conquest by Philip (346 B.c.). The prevalent types area bull's head and that of a goddess or nymph. Delphi, geographically included in Phocis, strikes very remarkable money, wholly distinct in types from the Phocian. The principal subjects are heads of rams and goats, the symbols of Apollo as a pastoral divinity, a dolphin (Apollo Delphinius), the omphalos and tripod, and a negro's head, which has not been satisfactorily explained. The Amphietyonic Council struck beautiful didrachms, probably on the occasion of Philip's presidency (346 B.c.), with the head of Demeter, and the Delphian Apollo seated on the omphalos. Under Hadrian and the Antonines there is an imperial coinage of Delphi, some pieces bearing the representation of the temple of Apollo, on one type the letter E SUP ay eee the columns of the face, representing the mystic Delphic EI, on which Plutarch wrote a treatise.~~

~~The coinage of Beeotia is chiefly of a period anterior to the reign of Alexander, under whom the political importance of Thebes and the whole country came to an end. The main characteristic of the money is the almost exclusive use of the Bcotian shield as the obverse type, marking the federal character of the issues. These were struck by various cities, or by Thebes as ruling the League. The earliest pieces are drachms, presumably of Thebes, and cer- tainly of Haliartus and Tanagra, issued between 600 and 550 B.c. These are followed by didrachms of the same and other cities until the time of the Persian War. The result of the unpatriotic policy of Thebes and most of the towns of Beeotia was the degradation of the leading city, and the coins reveal the curious fact that Tanagra then became the centre of the League-coinage. We now notice the abandonment of the old incuse reverse and the adoption of regular types, the wheel at Tanagra and the amphora at Thebes. These types increase and indicate several cities during the short period of Athenian influence (456-446 3.c.). The democratic institutions were next overthrown, and Thebes became again the head of Beotia, and struck alone and in her own name, not in that of the League. To the earlier part of this period belong splendid didrachms with reverse types chiefly~~

~~representing Heracles, subsequently varied by heads of Dionysus in a series only less fine. With the peace of Antalcidas (387 B.c.) Thebes lost her power, the League was dis- solved, and the other Beotian cities issued a coinage of some merit. In 379 B.c. Thebes became the chief state in Greece, and the patri- otic policy of Pelopidas and Epaminondas is shown in the issue of the Beeotian coins at the great city without any name but that of a magistrate. Among those which occur is EILAM or EILAMI, who can scarcely be any other than the illustrious general. The battle of Cheeronea (388 B.c.), swiftly followed by the destruction of Thebes, closes the historic coinage, save only for the appearance of new League-money of Attic weight, with the head of Zeus and the figure of Poseidon, issued between 288 and 244 B.c. (On the whole subject see Head's Coinage of Beotia.)~~

~~In Attica the great series of Athens is dominant, Eleusis alonc in that country having issued an unimportant bronze coinage of good style while Athens was independent. The Athenian money begins with the issues which were struck under Solon's monetary law, practically adopting the Euboic standard instead of the figi- netic, by which the Attie weights were divided into the commer- celal and the monetary. The monetary standard beeame so famous through the widespread traffic of Athens as to give the name Attic to all subsequent measures which followed it except the~~

~~but among distant barbarians, so that imitations reach us from the~~

~~Corinthian, and the term Euboic gradually fell into disuse. The earliest coins are tetradrachms of full weight (270 grains), with an extremely archaic head of Athene helmeted to the right, and within an incuse square an owl to the right with the letters AOE. These may be early in the 6th century B.c. Soon afterwards a sprig of olive appears in the upper left corner of the square. The coins of the age of the Persian War have olive-leaves forming an upright wreath on the helmet of Athene. To this period belongs the decadrachm with the owl facing, its wings open. In the same age a erescent is added—symbol of the lunar character of the goddess—between the olive-sprig and the owl. These types continue during the period of fine art, with slight modifica- tion and the abandonment of the ineuse square, but with no mark of the splendour of Athens as the centre of Greek sculpture. No doubt commercial reasons dictated this conservative policy,~~

which makes the coinage of Athens a disappointment in numisniatics. Her money was precious for its purity not only in the Greek world

Punjab and from southern Arabia, and any change would have injured their wide reception. There are many divisions of silver coinage with the types a little varied, and some different ones; and during the age of supremacy gold was issued in small quantities and bronze introduced. The Maccdonian empire put an end to the autonomy of Athens, and when the money is again issued it is of a wholly new style and the types are modified. The great scries of spread tetradrachms may be dated from the accession of Philip V. (220 B.c.), and lasted until the capture of the city by Sulla (86 B.c.). The obverse type is a head of Athene with a richly-adorned helmet, unquestionably borrowed from the famous statue by Phidias in ivory and gold, but a poor shadow of that splendid original, and an owl on an amphora within an olive-wreath. The earliest coins have the monograms of two magistrates, the later the names of two who are annual, and one changing abont every month, but ultimately dropped. The occurrence in these of the names of Antiochus IV. (Epiphanes), before he came to the throne, of Mithradates VI. and his creature Aristion, helps to fix the dates. The abundance of this money shows the great commercial importance of Athens in these later times. Remarkable bronze coins of a later age bear two representations of the Acropolis and the great edifices. Both have on the obverse a head of Minerva. The reverse of one represents the Acropolis, with the grotto of Pan, the statue of Pallas Pro- machus, the Parthenon, and the Propylwa, with the steps leading up to the latter. The reverse of the other shows the theatre of Dionysus, above which are caverns in the rock, and higher still the Parthenon and the Propylea. There are also Greek imperial pieces of Megara.

The money of the islaud of Aigina is of especial interest, since Augina. with it Greek coinage is said to have originated. ‘he story is that, at a time when Algina was a dependency of Argos, Phidon king of Argos struck the first Greek money there, probably in the seventh century B.c. It is said that previously silver was formed into spikes (68eNoxot), of which six made a handful (dpaxu%), and that thus the name of the drachm and its sixth, the obolus, originated : but this account may be an invention of later times. There can be no doubt, however, that the earliest Aginetan coins are of

~~extreme antiquity. The weight is of course on the Mginetic standard. The oldest pieces are very primitive didrachms, bearing on the obverse a turtle and on the reverse a rude incuse stamp. Afterwards the stamp becomes less rude, and later has a peculiar shape. There are some coins of the early part of the fine period of excellent work. The great currency,was of didrachms. The bronze coins are not remarkable, but some appear to be of an earlier time than most Greek pieces in this metal.~~

~~The series of Achaia begins under the Achzean League, some time Achaia. after 330 B.c., when we first find coins of the Achwans, with no distinction of cities,—a purely federal coinage. The silver coins, like the later ones, are either Attic tetrobols or Mginetic hemi- drachms. Then follows the money of the ten cities of the Old League, beginning about 280 8.c.—Dyme, Patre, Tritea, Phare, fEgium, Bura, Ceryneia, Leontium, AMigira, and Pellene. In 251 B.c. Sicyon, Corinth, and Megara added their strength to the little alliance ; the towns of Arcadia and Argolis followed, then Sparta, Messene, and Elis. The type of the silver is the head of Zeus Homagyrius, the reverse with the monogram of the Acheans in a laurel-wreath. After the earliest money the reverse bears the sym- bols or monograms of the cities which struck. The oldest bronze repeats the silver types ; the rest bears a standing Zeus and a seated Demeter, with the name of the city at full length.~~

~~Corinth is represented by a very large series of coins, the weight Corinth. of which is always on the Corinthian standard, equivalent to Attic but differently divided,—the Corinthian tridrachm, the chief coin, corresponding to the Attic didrachm. The oldest pieces, of the 6th century B.c., bear on the obverse Pegasus with the letter 9, koppa, the initial of the name of Corinth, and on the reverse an incuse pattern. In course of time the head of Athene in an incuse square oecupies the reverse. The incuse square disappears, as generally elsewhere, in the early period of fine art. Of the age of the excel-~~

~~Elis.~~

~~Cephal- lenia, &c.~~

~~Messene.~~

lence and decline of art we find beautiful work, though generally wanting in the severity of the highest Greek art. Pegasus is ordi- narily seen galloping, but sometimes standing or drinking, the koppa is usually retained, and the helmet of Athene, always Corinthian, is sometimes bound with an olive-wreath. The smaller coins have the same reverse, but on the obverse a charming series of types, principally female heads, mostly representing Aphrodite. There are some drachms with Bellerophon in a combatant attitude mounted on Pegasus on the one side and the Chimera on the other. The autonomous bronze money is poor, but often of fair work, and interesting, especially when the type rclates to the myth of Bel- lerophon. Under the Romans this city was made a colonia ; and we have a large and interesting series of the bronze coins struck by it as such, including the remarkable type of the tomb of Lais. The colonies of Corinth form a long and important series, struck by Acarnanian towns with Corcyra, and in the west by Locri Epizephyrii in Italy and Syracuse. They range from the time of Timoleon, about 340 B.c., to the age of the earlier successors of Alexander, perhaps having ended in the time of Pyrrhus, probably shortly after 295 B.c. The colonies broke loose from Corinth and struck their own money, retaining the old types for commercial purposes, and Syracuse and Locri found it advisable to follow the same course, which in the case of Syracuse was not uninfluenced by gratitude to the mother-city and her noble citizen Timoleon. ‘he coins are distinguished by the absence of the koppa and bear the names or monograms of the cities.

There are bronze coins of Patra as an important Roman colonia, and silver and bronze money of Phlius, both of the period of good art. The coinage of Sicyon, on the Aginetic standard dominant in the rest of the Peloponnesus, is disappointing for a famous artistic centre. It begins shortly before the period of fine art ; in that age the silver is abundant and well executed, but the lcading types, the Chimera and the flying dove within an olive-wreath, are wearying in their repetition, and good work could not make the Chimera an agreeable subject. Small coins with types of Apollo are the only subjects which suggest the designs of the great school of Sicyon.

~~The money of Elis, or the Eleans, is inferior to none in the Greek world in its art, which reaches the highest level of dignified restraint, and in the variety of its types, which are suggested by a few subjects. The leading types are connected, as we might expect, with the worship of Zeus and Hera and Nice, the divinities of the great Panhellenic contest at Olympia. The prevalent repre- sentations are the eagle and the winged thunderbolt of Zeus, the head of Hera, and the figure of Nice. The series begins early in the 5th century B.c. with coins, some of which are didrachms (Aginetic), having as subjects an eagle carrying a serpent or a hare and on the reverse a thunderbolt or Nice bearing a wreath,—archaic types which in their vigour promise the excellence of later days. From 471 to 421 B.c., while Elis was allied with the Spartans, such types continue ; the eagle and Nice (sometimes seated) are both treated with great force and beauty, and the subject of seated Zeus is re- markable for its dignity. The Argive alliance (421-400 B.c.) seems marked by the pre-eminence given to Hera, whose head may suggest the famous statue of Polyclitus at Argos. This alliance broken, the old types recur. Magnificent eagles, some admirably designed on a shield, and eagles' heads, the seated Nice, and fantastically varied thunderbolts mark this age. The types of an eagle struggling with a serpent and an eagle's head are marked with the letters AA. Professor Gardner has conjectured that they may be the work of the great sculptor Deedalus of Sicyon, who at this very time produced a trophy for the Eleans at Olympia. The political events of the age do not seem any longer to affect the coinage. Thus the return of the heads of Hera has no historical significance that we can trace. They are remarkable for their beauty, which is still severe, while around there are marks of the luxurious style of decline, and here the cagle-types have lost their vigour. The age of Philip is soon reached, and shows a marked decline in the coinage. It closes with imperial money, some types of which have a local interest, notably two of Hadrian bearing the head and figure of Zeus, copied from the famous statue by Phidias, of which the earlier currency appears to present no reflexion.'——~~

~~Cephallenia gives us the early silver coins of Cranii, the money of Pale, of charming style, with the figure of Cephalus on the reverse, and that of Same, all cities of this island. Of the island of Zacyn- thus there are silver pieces, usually of rather coarse work, but sometimes of the style of the best~~

Cephallenian money. The coins of Ithaca are of bronze. They are of interest on account of their common obverse type, which is a head of Ulysses.

Returning to the mainland, we first notice the money of Messene, or the Messenians. The earliest coin isa splendid Mginetic didrachm having on the obverse a head of Persephone, and excels in design the similar subjects on the money of Syracuse, from which it must have been copied, for it is of about the time of Epaminondas. Still more than the Locrian type this shows the purer style of Greece, which, copying Syracusan work, raised its character.

1 See Professor Gardner's Elis, on the whole subject.

reverse is a figure of Zeus Ithomatas. The other silver coins are of about the period of the Achean League. The bronze money is plentiful, but not interesting. Lacedemon, as we might have ex- pected, has uo early coins, the silver money being, like so much of that of the Greek cities, of the age of the Achwan League. Among the types of the autonomous bronze pieces may be noticed the head of the Spartan lawgiver Lycurgns, with hisname. The series of Argos in Argolis begins with coins of an early period.. The standard is Aiginetic. The first pieces are the drachm with a wolf on the obverse, and on the reverse A, the initial letter of the name of the people, in an incuse square ; the hemidrachm, with the forepart of a wolf; and the diobolon, with a wolf's head. Among coins of the period of good art we must especially notice those which have for the obverse type the head of Hera wearing a stephanos,—a design which is not equal to that of the coins of Elis, the style being either careless or not so simple. The reverse type of one of these coins, a drachm, represents Diomedes stealthily advancing with the palladium in his left hand and a short sword in his right. Of the town of Treezen there are silver coins of the best period of art.

Of the money of Arcadia some pieces are doubtless among Arcadia.

~~the most ancient struck by the Greeks; and the types of these and later coins are often connected with the remarkable myths of this primeval part of Hellas, showing particularly the remains of its old nature-worship. The first series to be noticed is that of the Arcadian League ; it begins about 500 B.c. with hemidrachms having the type of Zeus Lycus seated, the eagle represented as if flying from his hand, and a female head. Of a later time, from the age of Epaminondas, there are coins with the head of Zeus, and Pan seated on the Arcadian Olympus, a series of which the didrachms are very fine. The coins of Herea begin deep in the 6th century B.C. The earliest have for obverse type the veiled head of Hera, and on the reverse the beginning of the name of the town, sometimes between wavy ornaments. The antiquity of Mantinea is in like manner attested by its money. The silver coins of a very early time have on the obverse a bear, representing Callisto the mother of Arcas, who was worshipped here, and on the reverse the letters MA, or three acorns, in an incuse square. Later coins, especially the bronze, have subjects connected with the worship of Poseidon at this inland town. The silver money of Megalopolis is important for art, as we know the city to have been founded in 370 B.c. The types are the same as those of the Arcadians of the same period, the headsof Zeus and of Pan. The silver coins of Pheneus must be noticed as being of fine work. The didrachms of the age of Epaminondas have Fitead of Persephone, and Hermes carrying the child Arcas. The obverse type is interesting as a copy, improved on the original, of the Syracusan subject, as in Locris and Messene. As in Locris, the merit is in the greater force and simplicity of the face, here most snecessful, the hair being treated more after the Syracusan manner than after that of the Messenians, who simplified the whole subject. The finest coin attributed to Stymphalus isa magnificent didrachm of the age of Epaminondas, with a head of the local Artemis laureate, and Heracles striking with his club, no doubt a subject connected with the Stymphalian birds. The smaller silver coins have on the one side a head of Heracles and on the other the head and neck of a Stymphalian bird, most resembling those of a vulture. There were representations of these birds in the temple of Artemis. The series of Tegea is not important, but two of the reverse types of its bronze coins are interesting as relating to the story that Athene gave a jar containing the hair of Medusa to her priestess Sterope, daughter of Cepheus, in order that she might terrify the Argives should they~~

~~attack Tegea in the absence of Cepheus, when Heracles desired his aid in an expedition against Sparta.~~

~~The peculiar position of Crete and her long isolation from the Crete~~

~~political, artistic, and literary movements of Hellas have been already touched on. Itis not until the age when the Macedonians and the Achean League are striving for the leadership of Hellas that Crete appears in the field of history, but then only as the battle-ground of rival powers. The most remarkable influence of this age was when Athens, by the diplomacy of Cephisodorus, succeeded about 200 B.c. in drawing the Cretans into a great league against Philip V. of Macedon. That this project took actual shape is proved by the issue at all the chief mints of the island of tetradrachms with the well- known types of Athens, to be distinguished from the Atticizing types of other cities at thistime. In the meanwhile the inborn love of adventure in her youth had been satisfied by hired service to the surrounding kingdoms, and hence grew a piratical instinct which ultimately cost the Cretans their freedom at the hand of Rome. The oldest coins are probably of about 500 x.¢., but few cities seem to have issued many until a hundred years later. Then there is a great outburst of coinage, sometimes beautiful, sometimes barbarously careless, which lasts until Alexander's commercial policy is seen in the appearance of his money with Cretan symbols in lieu of the old autonomous money. As Alexander's successors grew weak and no one of them could control Crete, the old rights were restored and the Cretan cities again coin their own types until the Roman conquest (67 or 66 B.c.). The chief issue is of silver : bronze is less abundant ; and gold is unknown. The Cretan types~~

~~have a markedly local character, yet they copy in some instances other coinages. The chief divinities on the picces are Zeus, Hera, Poscidon, Heracles, and Britomartis, and the leading myths are those of Minos, the story of the Minotaur and the labyrinth being prominent, and also that of Europa. There is frequent reference to nature-worship as in Sicily, yet with a distinctive preference for trees, the forms of which, however, lend themselves readily to the free represeutation of Cretan art, which may in part explain their prominence. The weight is at first Aginetic, falling almost~~

~~to Attic; and in the resumption of the coinage after Alexander's time it is Attic. :~~

~~Of the island in general there are Roman silver coins of the earlier emperors, some of which are of fine work for the period. The inscriptions are in Latin, or partly in Latin and partly in Greek. In the autonomous civic series there are didrachms ot Aptera. The obverse bears a female head wearing a stephane and the reverse a warrior before a sacred tree. Of Chersonesus, the port of Lyctus, called on the coins Chersonasus, there are di- drachms of coarse style, mainly copied from the splendid piecc of Stymphalus in Arcadia, The head of Artemis is here appropriated to Artemis Britomartis, who had a temple at the place, and the reverse of Heracles striking with his club is varied by the sub- stitution of the figure of Apollo seated. The silver money of Cnossus is of great interest. The oldest coins are archaic in style, and may be as early in date as the expedition of Xerxes, They bear the figure of the Minotaur as a bull-headed man, kneeling on one knee, and a meander-pattcrn, in one case enclosing a star (the sun), in another a female head (Ariadne?). The antiquity of these coins disproves the supposition that the Cretan labyrinth at Cnossus was an invention of the later poets. Of the early time of good art there are didrachms of Cnossus with the head of Perse- phone and an unknown divinity, and the labyrinthine pattern enclosing the sun or the moon or a bull's head for the Minotaur, and at length becoming a regular maze. To this time belongs the wonderful coin in the Berlin Museum with Minos seated, his name in the field, and the head of Persephone within the meander-pattern. In the later age of fine art a head of Hera wearing a stephanos occupies the obverse of didrachms and drachms, and the reverse has a maze through which the way may be clearly traced. The head is closely copied from the same type of Argos, and despite its beauty shows a distinct inferiority, unlike the copies of Syracuse by artists of the mainland. This series closes with Alexander's empire, and the native coinage disappears until the league of Cephisodorus revives it with the Athenian tetradrachm of Attic weight, bearing the name of the Cnossians. It is of inferior style, and is followed by base coins with heads of Minos and Apollo, and the Labyrinth, either square as before or in a new circular form, which is interesting as showing it was a mere matter of tradition. There are interesting coins of Cydonia, some of them of beautiful style and work. One~~

~~is remarkably like a coin of Aptera, and bears an engraver's name, Neuantus,—a point showing the im- portance attached by the Cretans to the designs of their money. The head is that of a Menad, and the reverse has a figure of the traditional founder Cydon, stringing his bow. The style is good, but the execution poor, A drachm presents a most beautiful repetition of the subject of Cydon. Gortys, or Gortyna, is repre- sented by most remarkable coins, which generally allude to the myth of Europa. Didrachms of archaic style have on the obverse Europa carried by the bull and on the reverse the lion's scalp. These pieces are followed by a remarkably fine class of spread didrachms ; the best are of about 400 B.c. 'They have on the obverse Europa seated in a pensive attitude on the trunk of a tree, doubt- less the sacred plane at Gortyna, mentioned by Pliny, which was said never to shed its leaves, and on the reverse a bull suddenly turning his head as if stung by a fly. Nothing in Greek art exceeds the skill and beauty of these designs. The truth with which the tree is sketched, one engraver even indicating the letters cut by visitors in the trunk, and the graceful position of the forlorn Europa are as much to be admired as the fidelity with which the bull is drawn, even when foreshortened, sharply turning his head, with his tongue out and his tail raised. These designs, beautiful in them- selves, are strikingly deficient in fitness, and afford equally strong illustrations of the excellencies and of the one great fault of the art of Cretan coins. Many pieces of the same class are of rude execu- tion. There is a tetradrachm of the Athenian group having the symbol of a butting bull. Later silver coins have the head of Minos. The coins of Hierapytna are remarkable for bearing the representation of a date-palm. Of Itanus there are remarkable coins, the earlier, some of which are of good style, with the subject of a Tritonian sea-god (Glaucus?) and two sea-nonsters, changed for a head of Athene and an eagle, the Triton frequently appearing in the field as asymbol. Lyctus, on the coins Lyttus, is represented by strangely rude pieces, with the types of a flying cagle and a boar's head which is curiously foreshortened. The coins of Phestus form a most interesting series. Among the didrachms are some of ad- mirable work, with on the obverse Heracles slaying the Hydra with his club and on the reverse a bull. Others have on the obverse~~

~~Heracles seated on the ground, resting. Another noticeable obverse type is the beardless Zeus seated in a tree, with his Cretan name LEAXANOS, where the LE stands for the digamma. On his knee is a cock in the attitude~~

~~of crowing, showing that he was a god of the dawn. The most remarkable coins of Phestus are, however, those that bear representations of Talus, the man of brass, said to have been made by Hephestus or Dedalus. One of these is a di- drachm, on which he is portrayed as a winged youth, naked, bear- ing in each hand a stone, and in a combatant attitude. This figure is accompanied by his name. A similar design is seen ona bronze coin. The reader will recollect that Apollonius Rhodius (Argonaut., iv. 1638 sq.) relates that Talus prevented the Argo- nauts from landing in Crete by hurling stones at them, until he was destroyed by the artifice of Medea.~~

~~The important town of Polyrrhenium, or Polyrrhenia (but one p on the coins), is represented by carefully-executed coins with a head of Zeus and a bull's head. A later piece has a remarkable obverse type, a whiskered head of Apollo, probably a Macedonian sovereign in that character. This is of Attic weight. Presus has on its earlier coins the Gorgon's head and an archer, or an archer and an eagle ; later, Zeus seated, and, after the Cretan fashion, fore- shortened. The coins of Priansus comprise didrachms of an unusual style and type, a head of a goddess or nymph, the hair, bound by narrow bands crossed diagonally, filling the large field. Priansus also shows the remarkable type of Persephone seated beside a date-palm, placing her right hand on the head of a serpent, in reference to the myth of the birth of Zagreus. As usual, the figure is foreshortened. The reverse has a standing figure of Poseidon. Rhaucus has Poseidon beside his horse. The rare didrachm of Sybrittia, or Sybrita, may fitly close the series ; the obverse has a charming subject, Dionysus seated on a running panther, and the reverse Hermes drawing on his right buskin,—a delightful figure. Another beautiful type is a seated Dionysus.~~

~~The coinage of Eubœa is all on the native standard, of which the Eubœa. Attic was a variety. It includes some of the very earliest Greek money. The older coins comprise tetradrachms, didrachms, and smaller pieces; the later are uniformly tetrobols. The pieces which bear the name of the Eubœans date from the fine period to the fall of Hellenic liberty, the silver lasting only to Alexander's time. They bear the head of a nymph and that of anox. One variety is very beautiful. The great cities have a far more interest- ing series. Carystus begins in the time of the Persian War with the type of the cow and calf, as in Corcyra, and its special badge is the cock. Chalcis, the~~

mother of Western colonies, has already in the 6th century a long series with the wheel-type and an incuse diagonally divided, and later, a nymph's head and an eagle devouring aserpent. TEretria begins as early as Chalcis, but the obverse type is the Gorgon's head. This is succeeded by the same type and a panther's head, and fine late archaic coins bear the cow and the cuttle-fish. Of Histiza the usual type is the head of a Menad and a female figure seated on the stern of a galley.

Among the other islands classed after Euboea, Amorgos must not Cyclades be passed by, as a bronze coin of Agiale, one of its towns, preseuts and Spo- the curious type of a cupping-glass. The silver money of Carthea rades, and Coressus in Ceos is extremely old, beginning in each case in the 6th century and ending early in the 4th. The weight is Agine- tic, and there are didrachms and smaller coins. The usual types of { Carthea are an amphora and then a bunch of grapes; that of Coressus is a cuttle-fish and dolphin. Naxos is represented by early Aginetic didrachms and coins of the fine period, the latter being chiefly bronze pieces of remarkably delicate and good work. The types are Dionysiac. Of Paros there are early Aiginetic didrachnis with the type of a kneeling goat and beneath a dolphin. Of the third and second centuries B.c. there are Attic didrachms with a head, possibly of Artemis, at first of a charming style, and a goat on the reverse. 'There are very archaic AXginetic didrachms of Siphnos. Some of the bronze pieces are of the best period and very fine. Of Tenos there are silver coins of the age of the kings. The head of the bearded Ammon occurs on tetradrachms following the Attic standard, and on smaller pieces that of the younger Ammon, both heads laureate as well as horned ; the reverse type is Poseidon. {

The coinage of Asia begins with that of Asia Minor. It falls Asia into certain great classes—first, the ancient gold and electrum, Minor. Lydian and Greek, in time succeeded by electrum or gold and silver, all struck in the west and mainly on the coast. Then the Persian dominion appears in the silver money of the satraps, : circulating with the gold and silver of Persia, and the Greek . money is limited to a few cities of the coast, none save the elec- trum of the great mint of Cyzicus uninterrupted by the barbarian.

~~With the decay of the barbarian empire the renewed life of the Greek cities is witnessed by a beautiful coinage along the coast from the Propontis to Cilicia. On Alexander's conquest autonomy is granted to the much-enduring Hellenic communities, and is again interrupted, but only partially, by the rule of his successors, for there was no time at which Asia Minor was wholly parcelled out among the kings, Greek or native. The Romans, after the battle of Magnesia (190 B.c.), repeated Alexander's policy so far as the cities~~

~~Oldest coinage.~~

~~- way into the currencies, but was as yet limited to Samos.~~

~~Bos- porus, Colchis, Pontus.~~

~~Paphla- gonia,~~

~~ASIA MINOR. |~~

~~of the western coast were concerned, and there is a fresh outburst of coinage, which, in remembrance, follows the well-known types of Alexander. When the province of Asia was constituted and the neighbouring states fell one by one under Roman rule, the auto- nomy of the great cities was generally reduced to a shadow. Still the abundant issues of imperial coinage, if devoid of high merit, are the best in style of late Greek coins, and for mythology the richest in illustration.~~

~~The oldest money is the electrum of Lydia, which spread in 'very early times along the western coast. This coinage, dating from the 7th century B.c., has an equal claim with the Aiginetic silver to be the oldest of all money. Probably the two currencies arose at the same period, and by interchange became the recognized cur- rency of the primeval marts; otherwise we can scarcely explain the absence of Asiatic silver, though it is easy to explain that of European electrum or gold. The electrum of the coins is gold—the precious metal washed down by the Pactolus—with a native alloy of a fourth part of silver. Its durability recommended it to the Lydians, and it had the advantage of exchanging decimally with gold, then in the ratio 13°3 to silver. Bat this commercial advan- tage allowed the issue of~~

~~electrum coins on silver standards, while it was natural to coin them on those of gold; hence a variety of weight-systems perplexing to the metrologist. The first coins were undoubtedly struck by a Lydian king, probably as early as about 700 B.c. They follow the Babylonic silver standard. The ob- verse is plain and merely marked with lines, the original rough surface of the die, while the reverse has three depressions, an ob- long one flanked by two squares. Later the same people issued money on the Pheenician silver standard. This double currency, as Head suggests, was probably intended for circulation in the interior and in the coast towns to the west, the Babylonic weight being that of the land trade, the Pheenician that of the commerce by sea. Ultimately Croesus abandoned electrum, and, reducing the Pheenician weight by one-fourth, the proportion of silver in the electrum, he produced a Babylonic gold stater, and again by simi- larly reducing the Babylonic weight he obtained a Euboic gold stater. His silver was Babylonic only, the silver stater exchanging as the tenth of the Euboic gold stater. These results are ex. plained by the metrological data given earlier in this article. The Greek marts of the western coast were not long in imitating the example of Lydia ; hence a series of early electrum staters, on the Pheenician weight, of Miletus, Ephesus, Cyme, Chios, Clazomene, Lampsacus, Abydos, and Samos, with smaller pieces which add other mints to the list. The Euboic weight naturally found its Phocea, Teos, and Cyzicus, with other towns, followed from a very early period the Phocaic standard, which for practical purposes may be called the double of the Euboic. Consequently their stater was twice as heavy as the Euboic gold stater. They alone before Croesus issued gold money, which was superseded at Phocwa and Cyzicus by electrum. This is the main outline of the native coinage of Asia Minor before the Persian conquest. Its later history will appear under the several great towns, the money of Persia being treated in a subsequent place.~~

~~The first countries of Asia Minor are Bosporus and Colchis, the coins of the cities of which are few and unimportant. The auto- nomous coinages of the cities of Pontus are more numerous, but none of them are archaic or deserve to be characterized as fine. There are also imperial pieces. The bronze coins are sometimes large and often thick. The only place meriting a special notice is Amisus, which almost alone of the cities of Pontus seems to have issued autonomous silver money. This is continued under the emperors in~~

the form of Roman denarii and larger pieces. The common sub- jects of the bronze money of this place relate to the myth of Perseus and Medusa, a favourite one in this country.

The regal coins are of the old kingdoms of Pontus and of the Cimmerian Bosporus, of the two united as the state of Bosporus and Pontus under Mithradates VI. (the Great), and as reconstituted by the Romans when Polemon I. and II. still held the kingdom of Mithradates, which was afterwards divided into the province of Pontus and the kingdom of Bosporus. The early coinage of the kingdom of Bosporus is of little interest. Of that of Pontus there are tetradrachms, two of which, of Mithradates IV. and Pharnaces I., are remarkable for the unflinching realism with which their barbarian type of features is preserved. Mithradates VI. king of Bosporus and Pontus, is represented by gold statcrs and tetra- drachms. The portrait on the best of these is fine despite its dramatic quality, characteristic of the later schools of Asia Minor. The kings of Bosporus struck a long series of coins for the first three centuries after the Christian cra. Their gold money is gradu- ally depreciated and becomes elcctrum, and ultimately billon and bronze. They bear the heads of the king and the emperor and are dated by the Pontic era. ; ; >

In Paphlagonia we must specially notice the coins of the cities Amastris and Sinope. The silver pieces of the former place bear a youthful head in a laureate Phrygian cap, probably representing Men or Lunus,—Amastris, the foundress, being seated on the reverse.

On the late bronze money the bust of Homer occurs. There are

also bronze coins of the imperial class. The silver pieces of Sinope are plentiful. The types are the head of the nymph Sinope and, as at Istrus, an eagle preying ona dolphin. Bithynia is represented Bithy- by a more important series. Of the province generally there are nia, Roman silver medallions of the weight of cistophori (to be presently described), with Latin inscriptions, and imperial bronze pieces with Greek inscriptions.

There is a long series of imperial bronze of Apamea as aecolonia. The ordinary silver coins of Chalcedon strikingly resemble on both sides those of Byzantium, a circum- stance confirmatory of the statement that the two cities were colonized at nearly the same time from Megara. Of Cius, also « called Prusias ad Mare, there are gold staters and smaller imperial silver pieces. Hadriani and Hadrianutherze issued imperial bronze money. Of Heraclea there are silver coins of good style ; these are of the Persic standard. The obverse type is a head of Heracles, either bearded or beardless, in the lion's skin ; the most interesting reverse type is a female head wearing a tiara on which are three turrets, probably that of the town personified, Of the tyrants of Heraclea there are silver coins of Clearchus, of Timotheus and Dionysius ruling together, and of Dionysius ruling alone. Of the imperial class there is a large series of Nicwa, and there are many coins of Nicomedia. The series of Bithynia closes with the money of its kings, consisting of Attic tetradrachms and bronze pieces. The tetradrachms bearing the name of Prusias are of Prusias I. and IJ. The bronze coins with the same name, some of which are fine, cannot be otherwise classed than to Prusias I. or IL. , since we do not know by which of the two they were issued. Of N icomedes II. and III. there are only tetradrachms,

The fine Greek coinage of Asia may be considered to begin with Cyzicus. Mysia. Cyzicus is in numismatics a most important city. The famous electrum Cyzicene staters were struck here for nearly a cen- tury, from 478 to 387 B.c., as Head conclusively argues (Nam. Chron., 1876, p. 277). During that whole period they were not only the leading gold coinage in Asia Minor but the chief currency in that metal for the cities on both shores of the f£gean ; for it must be remembered that their alloy of silver was not allowed any value, | The actual weight is of the Phocaic standard, just over 248 grains, so as to be equivalent to a Babylonic gold stater. The division was the hecta or sixth. The abundance of the staters and hectx: and the variety of their types, which usually are common to both denomi- nations, led some numismatists to suppose that Cyzicus was a cen- tral mint striking for neighbouring cities their own coinage, but our present knowledge of the types of these cities shows that this was not the case. But it is certain that the staters of Cyzicus served as gold for other great marts which struck little or no money in that metal, and contented themselves with issuing the hecta; hence an instinct that they were striking for the use of others may have led

~~the Cyzicene moneyers to use great freedom in the choice of subjects. Many they invented and some they borrowed, retaining for themselves the distinctive badge of the tunny-fish beneath the type. This type occupied the obverse of the coin, while the reverse was invariably the quadripartite incuse square in four planes of the so-called mill-sail pattern. The coins are very thick and the edges are rude. The art is frequently of great beauty, though sometimes careless. After the earlier examples it shows the dominant influence of painting, being characterized by flowing lines and an intensity of expression in some of the finest examples, and always recalling painting or relief rather than sculpture in the round. The subjects are heads, figures, groups, and animals. The silver coinage of Cyzicus is distinctly local. "It comprises beautiful tetradrachms of the Rhodian standard. The obverse bears a head of Persephone with a veil on the back, wound round her head, and a wreath of ears of corn. This is an example of the best Greek art, equally simple, delicate, and graccful, and in the expressive style of the Ionian school. Above the head is the inscription ZOTEIPA, which may be compared with KOPH ZOTHIPA KYZIKHNOQN, on a late copper coin, accompanying a head which is probably that of the younger Faustina in the character of Per- sephone. The reverse type of the finest tetradrachms is a lion's head in profile above a fish. Both late autonomous and imperial coins in bronze are well executed and full of interest, the two classes running parallel under the earlier emperors.~~

~~Lampsacus is represented by a long series of coins. There are Lamp- archaic and fine silver coins with a janiform female head, and on sacus. the reverse that of Athene in a Corinthian helmet, besides a few of other types. Contemporary with the later silver are electrum staters of Rhodian weight with a half-Pegasus and peculiar quad- ripartite incuse square. These are succeeded by splendid gold staters with various types of obverse and the half-Pegasus on the reverse. The most remarkable type is a bearded head with streaming hair in a conical cap, bound with a wreath, singularly pictorial in treatment as well as in expression, and roughly executed as if by a great artist unused to medal work. In contrast to this is a most carefully executed head of a Menad with goat's ear, still markedly in a painter's style. This head is in repose; that of another Mwnad with human ear is marked by its expression of~~

Per- gamum.

The Troad.

Afolis.

Lesbos.

646

frenzy. Of Parium there are very early silver coins, interrupted and resumed in the period of good art. The leading type is the Gorgon's head. — The money of the great city of Pergamus or Pergamum 1s chiefly of a late time. i " the good period, the former being very rare ; the leading type is an archaic figure of Pallas. The silver coinage is next supplied by the money of the kings of Pergamum, followed by cistophori, which began mnder the kingdom. The bronze pieces of the city are numer- ous, both autonomous and imperial, the two classes overlapping, and there are medallions of the emperors. Asculapius is especially prominent under the Roman rule. The chief coins of the kings are Attic tetradrachms, with on the obverse a laureate head, supposed to be that of Philetxrus, the founder of

the state, and on the reverse a seated Athene, the common type of

Lysimachus, from whom Phileterus revolted. This type is but twice varied by the heads of later kings. The inscription is always SLAETAIPOY, a monogram somctimes indicating the name of the king by whom the coin was issued. The absence of the regal style is noticeable, and, though in the usual type the diadem is generally shown as wound round the laurel-wreath, it does not always appear. There are also unimportant bronze coins of the kings. The cisto- phorus was so called from its obverse type, the cista mystica, a basket from which a serpent issues, the whole enclosed in an ivy-wreath. The reverse type represents two serpents, and between them usually a bow-case. The half and the quarter of the cistophorus have on one side a bunch of grapes on a leaf or leaves of the vine, and the elnb with the lion's skin of Heracles within an ivy-wreath. They were tetradrachms equal in weight to three Attic drachms or three denarii, and the half and the quarter would be exchangeable with Roman coins, three quinarii and a quinarius

~~and sestertius respectively. These coins became abundant when the kingdom of Pergamum was transformed into the province of Asia, and are struck at its chief cities, Pergamnm, Parium, Adramyttium, Thyatira, Sardis, Smyrna, Ephesus, Tralles, Nysa, Laodicea, and Apamea. They have at first the names of Greek magistrates, afterwards coupled with those of Roman proconsuls or propretors. The silver medal- lions of Asia, the successors of the cistophori, range from Mark Antony to Hadrian and Sabina. They bear no names of cities, but some may be attributed by their references to local forms of worship. The obverse bears an imperial head, the reverse a type either Greek or Roman. The art is the best of this age, more deli- cate in design and execntion than that of any other pieces, the Roman medallions excepted.~~

~~The coinage of the Troad is interesting from its traditional allusions to the Trojan War. Of Abydos there is a fine gold stater, with the unusual subject of Nice sacrificing a ram, and the eagle, which is the most constant type of the silver money, —a series chiefly notice- able for the coarse style and bad fabric of the late Attic tetradrachms. One of the few imperial coins commemorates the legend of Hero and Leander. The late tetradrachms of Alexandria Troas bear the head of Apollo Smintheus, and on the reverse his figure armed with a bow; the inscription is ATTOAAQNOS ZMIOEQE AAEZ- ANAPEQN. There is a long series of the town as a colonia, of extremely poor work. Dardanus has remarkable silver coins, both early and fine. Ilium Novum strikes late Attic tetradrachms with a head of Athene, and on the reverse the same goddess carrying spear and distaff, with the inscription AODHNAZ IATAAOZ. On the autonomous and imperial bronze we notice incidents of the tale of Troy, as Hector in his car, or slaying Patroclus, or fighting .; the other side, for this coin is autonomous, shows the wolf and twins, and again the flight of Aineas. Of Scepsis, which is said to have been the capital of a Dardanian kingdom for a long period between the fall of Troy and the age of Alexander, there are early silver coins, and some of its bronze money is of good style. The island of Tenedos is represented by very carly coins, and others of the fine and late periods. The usual obverse type of all the silver pieces is a Janus- like combination of two heads, probably those of a Zeus and a Hera; and the reverse type of all but the oldest is a two-headed axe,~~

~~In Aolis the most noteworthy coins are the late tetradrachms of Cyme and Myrina, both of the time of decline, yet with a certain strength which relieves them from the general weakness of the work of that age. Cyme has the head of the Amazon Cyme, and a horse within a laurel-wreath; Myrina, a head of Apollo and his figure with Instral branch and patera. The rest of the coins of these and other towns are bronze, autonomous and impcrial.~~

~~Lesbos is remarkable for having coined in base as well as pure silver, its early billon coins being peculiar to the island, and not easily classed to the cities like the silver. They are of various weights, as if the alloy had not been reckoned at first, but afterwards admitted, unlike the electrum of the coast, in which the silver was always excluded from the value. Methymna has very interesting archaic silver coins, with the boar and the head of Athene, her helmet adorned with a Pegasus rising above her forehead. There are later coins of about 400 B.c. and about Alexander's time. The types are the head of Athene and the lyre. The weight is Attic. Of Mytilene there are few coins until late in the Persian dominion.~~

~~NUMISMATICe~~

~~There are, indeed, small gold and silver pieces of~~

~~The local worship of~~

~~[ASIA MINOR.~~

~~The types are the head of Apollo and the lyre. The style is fine for the period, with the strongly expressive quality that marks the contemporary western Asiatic currencies, and the execution is care- ful. There is a long and important series of the imperial time, including very interesting commemorative coins, some probably of persons of legend as Nausicaa, or of remote history as Sappho, others of benefactors of the city as Theophanes the friend of Pompey, from whom he obtained for this his native place the privileges of a free city. The usual style for these persons is hero or heroine, but Theo- phanes is called a god, and Archedamis, probably his wife, a goddess.~~

~~The money of Ionia is abundant and beautiful. the first city of interest. Here we observe a very early tetradrachm of Attic weight with the types of a lion gnawing his prey, and the forepart of a winged sow. Drachms and smaller coins follow with the forepart of the sow and an incuse. Then there is the break frequently noticeable in Asia Minor, and the coinage begins anew with splendid coins of the age before Alexander, having for types the head of Apollo, three-quarter face, and aswan. The chief pieces, the gold drachm and a half or octobol, and the silver stater or tetra- drachm, present two types of the head of Apollo, very grand on the gold and the silver, with the signature of Theodotus, the only known Asiatic engraver, and richly beautiful on the other silver piece. These coins are marked by the intense expression of the school of western Asia Minor. Colophon has a very early Attic didrachm, followed by transitional Persic coins with the head of Apollo and the lyre, next the common break, during which the famous pieces with a regal portrait, to be noticed under Persia, were probably issued, and then, about Alexander's time, an over- refined repetition of the earlier type.~~

~~The money of Ephesus is historically interesting, but very dis- Ephesus.~~

~~appointing in its art, which is limited by the small range of subjects and their lack of beauty. The leading type is the bee; later the stag and the head of Artemis appear. Thus the subjects relate to the worship of the famous shrine. The oldest coins are electrum and silver, both on the Phcenician standard. The type is a bee and the reverse is incuse. The silver coinage continues with the same types, unbroken by the Persian dominion, until in 394 B.c. a remark- able new coin appears. When Conon and Pharnabazus defeated the Lacedemonian fleet and liberated the Greek cities of Asia from Spartan tyranny a federal coinage was issued by Rhodes, Cnidus, Samos, and Ephesus, with their proper types on the reverse, but on the obverse the infant Heracles strangling two serpents ; these are Rhodian tridrachms. About this time the Rhodian standard was introduced, and a series of tetradrachms began with the bee, having for reverse the forepart of a stag looking back, and behind him a date-palm. This type continues till 301 B.c. on the Rhodian standard, which is then abandoned, and the Attic supersedes it for ashort time. Bronze now begins. The head of Artemis asa Greek goddess next occupies the obverse, and the mint of Ephesus also issues~~

tetradrachms of Lysimachus. He subsequently gave the city the name of Arsinoe, his wife, and a few coins record this short-lived change. The next coins repcat the head of Artemis, and the fore- part of the stag and the palm-tree again occupy the reverse. The head is specially beautiful, and the whole coin of most careful work. The Ptolemaic rule is commemorated by the splendid octadrachm of Queen Berenice II. struck here. At this time the Attic standard was abandoned, and the Rhodian, then very popular in the com- merce of the eastern Mediterranean, was adopted. The city after- wards fell into the hands of Antiochus III. About this time Alexandrine tetradrachms were here minted ; it would seem most reasonable to date them from the peace of 189 3.c., when the Romans endeavoured to conciliate the cities of the coast, but | there are reasons for supposing that they began earlier with a monetary alliance between Ephesus and the great Phcenician mart Aradus. The Attic weight was thus restored, and there is a long issue of drachms on that standard, with the types of the bee, and the stag standing on the nearer side of the palm-tree. To the same age belong the Ephesian tetradrachms of the kings of Pergamum, to whose territory the Romans had assigned Ephesus, and undated cis- tophori. Whenin 133 3.c. the Roman people inherited the kingdom of Pergamum, an issue of dated cistophori began at Ephesus, which was the chief city of the Roman province of Asia, This is not interrupted by the revolt, when Ephesus took the side of Mithra- dates (87-84 B.c.), which, however, is marked by a series of gold" Attic didrachms anda solitary coin of strange weight, which may be a half-aureus issued by Sulla (84 B.c.), as Mommsen ingeniously supposes. The Roman rule is next marked by the issue of procon- sular cistophori. After the disturbance caused by the civil wars these cease, and there are only bronze pieces, which we may sup- pose to be of the latest days of the republic. The impcrial money follows, of far higher interest than the autonomous. There are many representations of the temples of the city, including that of the famous shrine of Artemis, which shows the bands of sculpture on the columns, as well as many other remarkable subjects, parti- cularly the Zeus of rain seated on Mount Prion, a shower falling from his left hand, while below are seen the temple of Artemis and the river-god Caster ; on another coin the strange Asiatic figure

Clazomene is Ionia.

~~Miletus.~~

~~Smyrna,~~

~~Teos.~~

~~Chios.~~

~~Samos.~~

~~Caria,~~

~~ASIA MINOR. |~~

~~of the goddess, frequent in this series, stands between the personified rivers Caster and Cenchrius (see Head's Ephesus).~~

~~Erythre has fine coins, mainly transitional, with a horseman about to mount his steed, and a flower. These are Persic, and after a long pause there is a series of Rhodian weight of about Alexander's age, and later, having Attic types connected with Heracles. The series of autonomous bronze is large. The money of the Ionian Magnesia begins with the issue of Themistocles, when he was dynast under Persian protection. In the decline of the Oriental power the city strikes her own money, with the types of an armed horseman and a humped bull butting, surrounded by the labyrinth pattern which symbolizes the river Meander. The weight is Persic. After along pause we observe the currency recommencing with spread tetradrachms of the decline of art, more delicately executed than those of Cyme and Myrina, with a bust of Artemis and a figure of Apollo standing on a meander and leaning against a lofty tripod, the whole in a laurel-wreath. The great city of Miletus is dis- appointing in itsmoney. The period of its highest prosperity is too early for an abundant coinage, yet in the oldest electrum issues we see the lion of Miletus. It is not, however, until the confederacy with Athens after the battle of Mycale that there is a common silver coinage, with the lion's head and a star, of Attic weight. Later money with the same types seems to show the influence of the Carian princes. It closes with beautiful coins bearing the head of Apollo facing and the lion looking back at a star, with the inscrip- tion ET AIAYMON IEPH, showing, whatever be the word~~

~~under- stood, that this was the "sacred" money of the famous temple at Didyma. Next come fine coins of about Alexander's time, differing from the last in having the head in profile. The weight is equally Phenician. The types continue through a series of various stand- ards with very rare Attic gold staters. Phocea is represented by two very interesting currencies: an electrum series of hecte like that of Cyzicus, but of inferior purity, characterized by a seal, the badge of the town, beneath the type; and also a widespread early silver coinage, apparently common to the Western colonies of the city. The autonomous money is wholly anterior to the Persian conquest. Smyrna first strikes late Attic tetradrachms, with the turreted head of Cybele or the city or the Amazon Smyrna, and an oak-wreath sometimes enclosing a lion. A rare silver coin presents on the reverse the seated figure of Homer, also occurring in the autonomous bronze, of which there is very much, partly of imperial time as well as a long series of imperial bronze. Among the bronze coins we notice those with the head of Mithradates. The earlier imperial coins are of delicate work. Those of the young Vespasian are historically interesting.~~

~~Of Teos there are early Mginetic didrachms, bearing on the one side a seated griffin with curled wings and on the other a quadri- partite incuse square. These ceased at the moment when the popu- lation left the town, destroyed by the Persians, and fled to Abdera, where we recognize their type on the coinage of the time. There are much later coins of less importance.~~

~~Chios and Samos, islands of Ionia, are represented by interesting currencies. Chios struck electrum and abundant silver. The type was a seated sphinx with curled wing, and before it stands an amphora, above which is a bunch of grapes; the reverse has a quadripartite incuse. The coins begin before the Persian conquest (490 B.c.), and are first archaic and then of fine style. There is apparently a gap in the later Persian period. Afterwards there is a cessation of money until Sulla's time, when silver is again struck and bronze seems to begin.~~

~~The coinage of Samos is artistically disappointing, but as a whole has many claims to interest. The earliest money must have in- cluded electrum, but we are unable to discriminate between the rival claims of Lesbos and~~

Samos; some pieces, however, cannot reasonably be doubted to belong toSamos. The silver begins before 494 B.c., when history comes to our aid to make a marked division. The types are the well-known lion's scalp and bull's head, of Oriental origin, both probably connected with the worship of Hera. They are continued in the next period, and the Athenian conquest (489 B.c.) is only marked by the introduction of the olive-spray as a constant symbol on the reverse and the more important change from degraded Pheenician to Attic weight. Notwithstand- ing the regularity of their coin type, the Samians, having joined the anti-Laconian alliance after Conon's victory in 394 3.c., struck the coin with Heracles strangling the serpents already noticed under Ephesus ; the Rhodian weight is thus introduced. We next notice an Alexandrine tetradrachm of the class of those issued after the battle of Magnesia. There is nothing further of interest until the long series of imperial money, which, though wanting in beauty of style, is not without interesting types. Of the mythological subjects the most remarkable is the Asiatic figure of the Samian Hera, which clearly associates her with the group of divinities to which the Ephesian Artemis belongs. Very noticeable also are the representations of Pythagoras, seated or standing, touching a globe with a wand (see Professor Gardner's Samos).

The money of Caria does not present any one great series, Auto- nomous silver coins are not numerous except at Cnidus, and rarely

of good style. Antiochia has late Attic silver pieces ; as this city was founded by Antiochus I., its coinage is important as fixing the date of similar money of Miletus. There are imperial coins of this town, and of Aphrodisias, worthy of notice. Cnidus is repre- sented at first by archaic coins going down to about 480 3.c. Their weight is Mginetic, and the types are a lion's head and the head of Aphrodite. There are, after a break, coins of Rhodian weight, about 400 B.c., others preceding Alexander, and others, again, after hisage. An imperial coin represents the famous statue of Aphrodite by Praxiteles. Of Halicarnassus there are small silver pieces of

~~the age of good art, and others of subsequent times, including that of the Carian kings, and the silver money continues after Alexander. Among the imperial types the head of Herodotus is noteworthy. There is late silver money of Iasus with the head of Apollo, and~~

~~a youth swimming beside a dolphin around which his arm is thrown.~~

~~It is interesting to compare this type with the similar subjects of Tarentum. Idyma has silver pieces of fine style on which the head of Apollo is absolutely facing, as sometimes at Catana in Sicily ; the reverse type is a fig-leaf. Myndus on its late silver perhaps shows in the head-dress of Isis a trace of the Ptolemaic occupation.~~

~~Taba has also late silver ; and of Termera we have the rare coin of its tyraut Tymncs, dating about the middle of the 5th century and struck on the Persic system.~~

~~The Carian kings prove their wealth by their series of coins, which bear the names of Mausolus, Hidrieus, and Pixodarus,~~

~~Artemisia, the widow of Mausolus, being absent. The weight is~~

~~Rhodian ; the types are the three-quarter head of Apollo, and Zeus Labrandcus standing, holding the labrys or two-headed axe. Mau- solus strikes tetradrachms, Pixodarus gold of Attic weight. His silver is the best in the scries, and clearly shows the Ionian style in its quality of expression.~~

~~Calymna heads the islands of Caria.~~

~~curious archaic Persian double drachms bearing a barbarous hel- and Cos. meted male head and on the reverse a lyre incuse. Later there are coins of about 400 B.c. The series of Cos begins with small archaic pieces, the type a crab and the reverse incuse. Next come fine coins of transitional style and Attic weight, with the types of a discobolus before a tripod, and a crab. he wrestlers of Aspendus may be compared with the remarkable obverse type. The common break then interrupts the issue, and a new coinage occurs before the time of Alexander. The weight is Rhodian, the types the head of Heracles and the crab, After Alexander there is another currency which~~

ceases about 200 B.c. It is resumed later with the new types of the head of Aisculapius and his serpent. This continues in Roman times. The bronze of that age comprises a coin with the head of Hippocrates and on the reverse the staff of Xenophon's head likewise occurs, and the portrait of Nicias tyrant in Cos (c. 50 B.c.) on his bronze. Imperial money ends the series. Of the island of Megiste there are charming little silver pieces of about 400 B.c. with Rhodian types, the head of Helios in profile and the rose.

The island of Rhodes, great in commerce and art, has a rich Rhodes. series of coins. The want of variety in the types—at the city of Rhodes almost limited to the head of Helios and the rose—is dis- appointing, but happily the principal subject could not fail to illus- trate the movements of art, one of which had here its centre, and the continuity of the money affords valuable metrological evidence.

The city of Rhodes was founded ¢. 408 B.c. on the abandonment by their inhabitants of the three chief towns of the island, Camirus, Ialysus, and Lindus. The money of Camirus seems to begin before 480 B.c. The type is the fig-leaf, the weight Aiginctic, later degraded or changed to Persic. The coins of Ialysus, of the 5th century, follow the Rhodian standard. Their types are the forepart of a winged boar and an eagle's head of a vulturine type. The money of Lindus, apparently before 480 3.c., is of Phoenician weight, with the type ofa lion's head. The people of the new city of Rhodes adopted another standard, the Attic, and very shortly abandoned it, except for gold money, using instead that peculiar weight which has been called Rhodian but may better be considered to be heavy Pheenician ; this they retained until the last years of their independ- ent coinage, when they resumed the Attic. The types are the three- quarter face of Helios and the rose. The first series was issued from the building of Rhodes to 304 B.c., the chief coins being the gold stater and the silver tetradrachm. There isa grandeur and noble outlook in the countenance of Helios which well befits his character, but the pictorial style is evident in the form of the hair and the expression, which, with all its reserve, has a dramatic quality. From 304 to 186 B.c. there isa change of type, and the head of Helios is radiate. The profile head which now also occurs, and the constant pictorial handling of the hair, not, as before, in its outlines only, but also in its masses, show the qualities of Lysippus. It is perplexing to note that the standard of weight is

~~below that of those coins which Ptolemy I. struck for Alexander 1V. on the Rhodian weight ; but this difficulty disappears if we regard the standard as Phenician, and both the Rhodians and Ptolemy as borrowers. The Alexandrine tetradrachms, which were issued after the battle of Magnesia, find a place in the Rhodian mintage.~~

~~Its money begins with Calymna~~

~~Lycia.~~

~~Pamphy- lia.~~

~~Pisidia, &c.~~

~~Cilicia.~~

~~648~~

~~Small coins follow this currency. In 166 B.c. favourable political circumstances cause a new issue of money. The Attic gold staters of this age have a strikingly dramatic style, pointing to the great local school; the silver, with the head of Helios in profile,—in the gold it is three-quarter face,—is still marked by careful execution. In the latest coins, from 88 to 43 B.c., the Attic standard, now universal, whether the chief coin was called drachm or denarius, again appears. During the age after Alexander there is an abundant bronze coin- age, with some pieces of unusual size. The series closes with a few imperial coins ranging from Nerva to Marcus Aurelius. ;~~

~~The early coinage of Lycia introduces us at once into a region of Asiatic mythology, art, and language, raising many questions as yet without an answer. The standard of the oldest coins is Persic, and it falls perhaps under Athenian influence, until it becomes equivalent with the Attic. The Lycian character belongs to the primitive alphabets of Asia Minor, which combine with archaic Greek forms others which are unknown to the Greek alphabet, and it expresses a native language as yet but imperfectly understood. 'he art is stiff and delights in animal forms, some- times of monstrous types, which recall the designs of Phcenicia and Assyria. The most remarkable symbol is the so-called triquetra, an object resembling a ring, to which three or four~~

hooks are attached. It is supposed to be a solar symbol like the swastika. The oldest money, probably dating from about 480 Bc., has a boar or his fore-part and an incuse. 'his is succeeded by a series in which the hooked ring is the usual reverse type. It bears Lycian inscriptions, which may usually denote tribes ; one certainly indi- cates the town of Tlos. — This coinage probably reaches as late as Alexander's time. It is followed by silver and bronze money of the Lycian League before Augustus and under his reign, but ceasing in that of Claudius,—the usual types of the chief silver piece, a hemidrachm, being the head of Apollo and the lyre. Besides this general currency there are some special ones of towns not in the League. The imperial money rarely goes beyond the reign of Augustus, and is resumed during that of Gordian III. There isa remarkable coin of Myra of this emperor, showing the goddess of the city, of a type like the Ephesian Artemis, in a tree; two woodcutters, each armed with a double axe, hew at the trunk, from which two serpents rise as if to protect it and aid the goddess. Phaselis is an exceptional town, for it has early Greek coins, the leading type being a galley.

The coinage of Pamphylia offers some examples of good art dis- tinctly marked by the Asiatic formality. Aspendus shows a remark- able series of Persic didrachms, extending from about 480 B.c. to Alexander's time. The oldest coins have the types of a warrior and the triskelion or three legs, more familiarly associated with Sicily ; it is probably a solar symbol. One has an extraordinary reverse type, in which the triskelion is engraved upon an advancing lion, also held to have a solar meaning. These coins are followed by a long series with the types of two wrestlers engaged and a slinger. The main legend is almost always in the Pamphylian character and language. There are also very curious imperial types. The money of Perga is very interesting. It begins in archaic style, and is resumed after the age of Alexander with Greek types of the Artemis of Perga. Her figure in a remarkable Asiatic form occurs in the long imperial series. Bronze coins earlier in date than the silver money with the Greek types have the Pamphylian title of the goddess, read by W. M. Ramsay (Hellenic Journad), FANAZZA> IIPHITA®, "of the queen of Perga." Side has at first Persic didrachms of about 480 B.c., their types the pome- granate and dolphin and mystical eye, or pomegranate and dol- phin and head of Athene ; then there are satrapal money of about 400 B.c. and late Attic tetradrachms, their types

being the head of Athene and Nice, of about the first century B.c., for they are imitated by Amyntas, king of Galatia.

The money of Pisidia is chiefly imperial. There is a long series of this class of the colonia Antiochia. The autonomous coins of Selge have the wrestlers and the slinger of Aspendus in inferior and even barbarous copies. Of Isauria and Lycaonia a few cities strike coins of imperial class or time.

Cilicia, a coastland, is numismatically of high interest. Celen- deris, a colony of Samos, has archaic coins of Aginetic weight, their type a goat, the reverse being incuse. These arc followed by a splendid coinage of transitional and fine art, with a horseman seated sideways on the obverse and on the reverse a goat kneeling on one knee. The latest, about 400 B.o., are free from stiffness, and the horseman may be favourably compared with the similar types of Tarentum. The weight is the Persic didrachm. Mallus has a most interesting series of silver coins, some with curious Asiatic types. Of Nagidus there are Persic didrachms of good style, one interesting type being Aphrodite seated, before whom Eros flies crowning her, with, on the other side, a standing Dionysus. Soli has silver coins of the same weight, the types being the head of Athene, one variety imitated from remote Velia, and a bunch of grapes; they are anterior to Alexander. The coinage of Tarsus begins with rough and thick tetradrachms of Attic weight, evidently issued soon after Alexander's reign, and for no long time subse-

quently. The types are the Baal of Tarsus and a lion. 'The auto- nomous bronze of the Seleucid age shows the remarkable subject of the pyre of Sandan, the local form of Heracles; and there is a long and curious imperial series.

The coinage of the great island of Cyprus is, as we might expect Cyprus.

from its monuments, almost exclusively non-Hellenic in character. The weight-system, except of gold, which is Attic, is Pérsic, save only in the later coins of the kings of Salamis, who strike on the reduced Rhodian

~~standard. The art is usually very stiff down to about 400 B.c., with types of Egypto-Phcenician or Pheenician or of Greek origin. The inscriptions are in the Cyprian character, belonging to the intcresting group of alphabets of Asia Minor, of which the Lycian and Pamphylian are instances. The character has been read, and the attributions of the coins are thus taking shape. The prevalent types are animals or their heads, the chief subjects being the bull, eagle, sheep, lion, the lion seizing the stag, the deer, and the mythical sphinx. The divinities we can recog- nize are Aphrodite, Heracles, Athene, Hermes, and Zeus Ammon. But the most curious mythological types are a goddess carried by a bull or by a ram, in both cases probably Astarte, the Phcenician Aphrodite. The most remarkable symbol is the well-known Egyp- tian sign of life. The coins appear to have been struck by kings until before the age of Alexander, when civic money appears. There are two well-defined currencies, that of the kings of Salamis,~~

~~who claimed a Greek origin, and that of the Pheenician dynasty of~~

~~Citium. The coins of the Salaminian line are in silver and gold. The earlier have Cyprian, the later Greek inscriptions, the types generally being native, though after a time under Hellenic influ- ence. They are of Evagoras I., Nicocles, Evagoras II., Pnytagoras, and Nicocreon, and the coinage is closed by Menelaus, brother of Ptolemy I., who, of course, does not take the regal title. The kings of Citium from 448 to 332 3B.c., Baalmelek, Azbaal, Melekiaton, and Pumiaton, strike silver and in one case gold, their general types being Heracles, and the lion seizing the stag. Bronze begins soon after 400 B.c., and of the same age there are autonomous pieces, one of Paphos in silver, and several of Salamis in bronze. There is Greek imperial money from Augustus to Caracalla, The most remarkable type is the temple at Paphos, represeuted as a structure of two stories with wings. Within the central portion is the sacred stone, in front a semicircular court.~~

~~The earliest coinage of Lydia is no doubt that of the kings, already described. 'The next currency must have been of Persian darics (gold) and drachms (silver), followed by that of Alexander, the Seleucids, and the Attalids of Pergamum, and then by the cistophori of the province of Asia. There is an abundant bronze coinage of the cities, autonomous from the formation of the province, and of imperial time, but mostly of the imperial~~

~~class. The largest curren- cies are of Magnesia, Philadelphia, Sardis, Thyatira; and Tralles. The art is not remarkable, though good for the period, and the types are mostly Greek.~~

~~The coinage of Phrygia has the same general characteristics as Phrygia,~~

~~that of Lydia. Among noteworthy types must be noticed Men or Lunus, the Phrygian moon-god, and the legendary Minos. There are curious types of Apamea, surnamed Kibotos or the Ark, and more anciently Celene. One of Severus represents the legend of the invention of the double pipe, a type already described. Of the same and later emperors are coins bearing the famous type of the ark of Noah and the name NOE. The town of Cibyra is remark- able for a silver coinage, of which the large pieces have the weight of cistophori. They are of the first century B.c., and were prob- ably struck by one or more tyrants of the four confederate cities of which Cibyra was the head, a state which came to an end 84 B.C.~~

~~Galatia has little to offer of interest. perial coins for the province, and there is imperial money of Ancyra and Pessinus, besides other series of less importance. The only remarkable regal issue is that of Amyntas, Strabo's contemporary, who struck tetradrachms, imitating the late money of Side.~~

~~With the coinage of Cappadocia we bid farewell to Greek art and Cappa- enter on thedomain of Oriental conventionalism, succeeded by inferior docia,&c.~~

~~Roman design coarsely executed. There isone large imperial series, that of Cesarea, which numismatists have unduly increased by the introduction of many uncertain coins, all of which cannot even be proved to be Asiatic. The issues range from Tiberius to Gordian III., and are in silver and bronze. The most common type is the sacred Mount Argeus, on which a statue is sometimes seen,—a remarkable type curiously varied. There are scanty issues of a few other towns. There is an interesting series of coins of the kings of Cappadocia, who struck Attic drachms, and far more rarely tetra- drachms. The usual names are Ariarathes and Ariobarzanes, the first being that of the old line who claimed descent from one of the Persian chiefs who slew the Magian. The earliest coins are of Aria- rathes IV. (220-163 n.c.). The rare tetradrachms of Orophernes, a successful claimant in the next~~

reign, bear a fine portrait. There are also tetradrachms of Ariarathes V. and of another king of the same name, a son of Mithradates of Pontus, put by him on the Cappadocian throne. The coins of Archelaus, the last king set up

Lydia.

Trajan issued bronze im- Galatia.

Syria.

Comma- gene,

SYRIA. |

by Antony, havea good head on the obverse. Of Armenia there are a few silver and bronze coins of late sovereigns.

The great series of Syrian money begins with bronze coins of Trajan, struck, according to his custom, for the province. From these we pass to the money of the Seleucid kings of Syria, only rivalled for length and abundance by that of the Ptolemies, which it excels in its series of portraits, though it is far inferior in its gold money and wants the large and well-executed bronze pieces which make the Egyptian currency complete. The gold of the Seleucids is scarce, and their main coinage is a splendid series of tetradrachms bearing the portraits of the successive sovereigns. The reverse types are varied for the class of regal money. The execution of the portraits is good, and forms the best continuous history of portraiture for the third and second centurics before our era, 'The reverses are far less careful. The weight is Attic, but the cities of Phoenicia were ultimately allowed to strike on their own standard. Seleucus I. began by striking gold staters and tetra- drachms with the types of Alexander the Great. The same king, like his contemporaries, then took his own types: for gold staters, his head with a bull's horn, and on the reverse a horse's head with bull's horns ; for tetradrachms, Alexander's head in a helmet of hide with bull's horn and lion's skin, and Nice crowning a trophy, or the head of Zeus, and Athene fighting in a car drawn by four or two elephants with bull's horns. The Zeus and elephant-car type is remarkable for presenting in some cases the names of Seleucus I. and his son Antiochus I. as colleagues, Antiochus I., like his

~~father, first struck tetradrachms with Alexandrine types, and then with his own head, Heracles seated and Apollo on the omphalos occupy- ing the reverse. The portrait of Antiochus has a characteristic realism, though marked by the deep recession of the eye which is a characteristic of the school of Lysippus. The tetradrachms assigned to Antiochus II., Seleucus II., Antiochus Hierax (a doubt- ful attribution), Seleucus III.,and young Antiochus his son are not specially noteworthy. Antiochus III. is represented by a fine and interesting series. He alone of the Seleucids seems to have struck the great octadrachm in gold in rivalry of the Ptolemies. His por- trait is vigorous, and the elephant which varies the seated Apollo on the reverse of his silver tetradrachms relieves the heraldic dry- uess of that type. There are rare copper coins of the rebel satraps Molon and Acheus. The regal series is continued under Seleucus IV., and again becomes interesting with the money of Antiochus IV. (Epiphanes). His portrait is extremely characteristic, marked by the mad obstinacy which is the key to the tyrant's history. The most remarkable coin is a tetradrachm with the head of Antiochus in the character of Zeus, an instance of audacity un- exampled in coinage. In his time mints became numerous in the bronze coinage, and there is a remarkable series in that metal with Ptolemaic types, marking his short-lived usurpation in Egypt. Passing by his son Antiochus V., we note a great change in the coinage of Demetrius I. 'he silver tetradrachms now bear both mints and dates, a custom that generally prevails henceforward. In one type the heads of Demetrius and Queen Laodice occur side by side. One of these coins in the British Museum is struck on a tetradrachm of Timarchus, the revolted satrap of Babylon, who takes the style '' Great King." With Alexander I. (Balas) Tyre and Sidon begin to strike royal tetradrachms on their own Pheenician weight. The money of Demetrius II. follows, then that of the young Antiochus VI., with the most carefully executed portrait in the whole series, which, despite its weakness, has a certain charm of sweetness that marks it asa new type in art. The saine artist's hand seems apparent in the fine portrait of the cruel usurper Tryphon, whose features have a beauty of expression that must surely be ideal, and also in the picturesque spiked Macedonian helmet with a goat's horn and cheek-picce which occupies the reverse, ou which is written after '' King Tryphon" the strange title ' auto- crator." Antiochus VII. continues the series with, amongst other coins, the solitary bronze piece of Jerusalem, bearing the lily and the Seleucid anchor. On his money of Tarsus we note~~

the first appearance of the pyre of the local Oriental divinity. The restored Demetrius II. now reappears, the Pheenician money with his beard- less head, the rest usually with the beard he had grown in his Parthian captivity. Alexander II. (Zebina) follows, and then Cleopatra, widow of Demetrius II., Alexander I., and Antiochus VII., next appears as colleague of her son Antiochus VIII. Her coarse features are in keeping with the vileness of her character. Antiochus VIII. alone amid the subsequent Seleucids has an interesting coinage, and the empire closes with the coarse money of the Armenian Tigranes, his portrait with the lofty native tiara, and for reverse Antioch seated, the Orontes swimming at her feet.

There is a copper coinage of the cities of Commagene, Samosata, and Zeugma, and less important mints. The money of Samosata is of the time of the kings of Commagene and also imperial, this showing the type of the city derived from the famous statue of Antioch. The series of Zeugma is imperial, and has the subject of a temple on a mountain. The money of the kings of Commagene is in bronze, of late date, and not of much interest.

Cyrrhestica has brouze coins of a few cities, nearly all imperial, Cyrrhes- The last bear the tica.

the chief mints being Cyrrhus and Hierapolis. inscription OKAX ZYPLAZ TEPOIOAITON, and have figures of the goddess seated on a throne flanked by lions or riding on a lion, thus directly connecting her with Cybele.

Of Chalcidene there are bronze coins of Chalcis and of the Chalci- tetrarchs, and Palmyrene shows only the small bronze pieces of dene, &c.

Palmyra, the money of Zenobia and the family of Odenatlus being found in the scries of Alexandria.

Seleucis and Pieria, the brother states (on the coins AAEA®QN AHMOQN), have bronze coins, dated (149-147 B.c.) and undated. But the bulk of the money of this territory is of the great city of Antioch on the

Orontes. Alexandria in quantity, is of far less interest from the want of variety in the types, but it is curious chronologically. The coinage is both autonomous bronze before and of Roman times, and imperial base metal and bronze. The base metal money is at first of debased silver, then of potin, and at last of bronze washed with silver. The imperial bronze coins have at the same time both Greek and Latin inscriptions, the last with 8.C. Trajan combines the Greek inscription with the Latin $.C., aud when the city had been made a colonia by Caracalla this is indicated in Greek inscriptions from Elagabalus downwards. No less than four eras are used. The era of the Seleucids, the dates being from 97 to 37 B.c., occurs on the autonomous money ; so also the Pharsalian era, from 38 to 22 B.c., and on imperial coins as late as Titus; the Actian era on autono- mous coins, from 6 Bc. to 138 A.D., continuing under the early emperors ; and the Cesarian era on the autonomous class, from 55 to 158 A.D. The mass of imperial coins and all after Titus are dated by the tribunitian years of the emperors. The leading types are the figure of Antioch seated, the river Orontes swimming at her feet, from the famous statue by Eutychides, and the eagle on a thunderbolt, a palm in front. Under Hadrian the eagle is repre- sented carrying an ox's leg, a reference to the story of the foundation of the city when an eagle carried off part of the sacrifice and de- posited it on the site which was consequently chosen. There are few other types. The art is rude, though certain base metal coins show a largeness and decision in the heads, while wanting Hellenic refinement. The imperial series is very full and has an historical value as showing what emperors ruled Syria. It includes money of Sulpicius Antoninus, the Uranius Antoninus of Roman gold also struck in Syria. The series ends with Valerian, though it begins anew in the Roman provincial money of the reform of Diocletian, to be noticed later.

Of Apamea there are bronze coins of the age of the Selcucids, Apamea, the elephant type which occurs being appropriate. At Emesa in the &c.

bronze imperial money Sulpicius Antoninus reappears, one of his coins having for reverse the characteristically Syrian type of a sacred conical stone in a temple. The money of Gabala is autono- mous and imperial, with, in this class, curious mythological types. Laodicea has an important series. It begins with Phenician tetra- drachms and bronze money of the later Seleucids. The tetradrachms have a turreted and veiled female bust of the

~~city, a favourite Syrian and Pheenician type. These autonomous coins are followed by an imperial coinage like that of Antioch ; from Caracalla downwards Laodicea is a colonia; the inscriptions become Latin, then, very strangely, Greek on the obverse of the coins and Latin on the reverse. Seleucia has a similar autonomous and imperial currency, but does not become a colonia. There is a curious type of an apparently open shrine of Zeus Casius containing a sacred stone.~~

~~In Ceele-Syria there is bronze of Damascus, late autonomous and Cele- The imperial money of Syria.~~

~~imperial; the city becomes a colonia. Heliopolis, a colonia, shows a great temple in perspective, another temple containing an ear of corn as the central object of worship, and a view of the Acropolis with the great temple upon it, and steps leading up the rock.~~

~~The coinage of Pheenicia is a large and highly interesting series. Pheeni- The antonomous money is here important, and indicates the cia.~~

~~ancient wealth of the great marts of the coast. The earliest coins were struck during and shortly after the Persian rule, and the most important classes have not been certainly fixed. It is therefore needful to speak of them before describing the attributed money of the cities. These coins are of Phoenician weight, except one class, which follows the Persie standard. The great currency is of silver octadrachms. The types, limited in number, are Oriental in character ; the leading one is the war-galley ; the king of Persia also occurs, and the fish-god Dagon. The art is hard, but hasa force that reminds us of archaic Greek; it is, however, Oriental. The inscriptions are in the Pheenician character. Three great classes are distinguished. Octadrachms range from about 400 B.c. to Alexander's time. The types are a war-galley in full sail and the king in a car ; then for the obverse the war-galley beneath the walls of a fort, and below two lions. Didrachms with a similar obverse have for reverse the king slaying a lion. Octadrachms follow with the war-galley and the king in his car apparently followed by a vassal, These coins have been assigned to Sidon. A series of tetradrachms is of less importance. The obverse has a~~

~~This long series, second only to that of Antioch.~~

~~NUS sa A TICs~~

~~The independent Jewish coinage begins with the famous shekels. Jewish They have been assigned to various periods, but the preponderance coinage.~~

~~650~~

~~dolphin or the king as an archer on a sea-horse, the reverse an owl with the Egyptian symbols of sovereignty, the crook with the flail~~

~~| PALESTINE.~~

~~Sidon. The undoubted money of Sidon begins with Alexandrine gold and | as both types of year 1 have an inscription modified on the coins silver, dated shortly after the king's reign. This was followed by | of years 2 to 5. There are bronze ''half-shekels" and '' quarter- other Alexandrine money, interrupted by that of Ptolemy II., | shekels" of the year 4. These maybe later. The certain coins of Arsinoe II., and Ptolemy III. Ptolemy LV. also struck here and | the successors of Simon are small bronze pieces of John Hyrcanus, Antiochus [V. in bronze ; and later Seleucids issued tetradrachms | of Judas Aristobulus, of Alexander Jannzeus, who strikes bilingual from 151 to1143B.c. The era of the autonomy of Sidon was 111 B.c. | Hebrew and Greek and also Hebrew coins, showing his native name There are tetradrachms dated by this reckoning with the head of | to have been Jonathan, and of Antigonus, who has the Hebrew the city and an eagle on a rudder, across him a palm. In the | name Mattathiah. The Maccabean coinage is followed by that of bronze we observe the type of Europa carried by the bull. Some | the Herodian family, equally of bronze, the two most important issues pieces of this class have Phcenician as well as Greek inscriptions. | being those of Herod the Great and Herod Agrippa II. The money The imperial money shows a curious shrine on wheels. In the | of the procurators of Judea, in part parallel with the Herodian, time of Elagabalus Sidon is characterized as a colonia. The type | is of small'bronze coins, struck between 6-7 A.D. and 58-59 A.p., the of a temple of Astarte as a local Aphrodite is worth notice. The | latest period of their administration being as yet unrepresented. series closes with Julia Mesa. Tripolis has an~~

~~interesting but | These are followed by two important classes, the money of the first limited autonomous and impcrial series. The worship of the | revolt (66-70 A.p.) and that of the second (suppressed 185 A.D.). Dioscuri is here associated with Asiatic religion. Architecturally | Both risings caused the issue of native silver coinage, some of which these coins are highly curious. may be assigned with certainty to each, while the assignment of~~

~~Tyre, The early money that can be classed with eertainty to Tyre | others is doubtful. Of the first revolt are silver and bronze pieces exhibits similar historical vicissitudes to that of Sidon. Before she | with the name of Eleazar the priest, silver of Simon, and large gained her independence the Seleucids struck here from 149 to 125 | and smaller bronze pieces with the name of Simon the prince of B.c., and in that very year the autonomous era begins. The tetra- | Israel. Of the second revolt are restruck denarii with the name of drachms dated by this cra bear the head of the Tyrian Heracles in | Simon, which appears to have been that of the leader surnamed a Greek form, and the eagle on a rudder, across him the palm. The | Bar-cochab or Bar-coziba. Of the first or.second revolt are shekels latest coin of this series known to us is a didrachm of 66 4.p. There | with the name of Simon, the obverse type a gate of the temple, is also autonomous bronze. The imperial class begins with Severus, | and on the reverse a bundle of branches and a citron, symbols of the and under him the constitution of the colonia is shown; but the | feast of tabernacles. Though these differ, it is rash to assign one most interesting type is a serpent coiled round an egg, between a | variety to the carlier and another to the later revolt. Besides this date-palm (the phoenix or trec of Phcenicia) and a murex, the shell | native currency there are coins struck in Palestine by Vespasian, which produced the Tyrian purple. The series ends with Gallienus. | Titus, and Domitian. (See Madden's Jewish Coinage, new ed.)~~

~~Aradus has Alexandrine coins, and acquired its independence in 258 Of Roman Arabia there are bronze imperial coins of Bostra and Arabia,~~

~~B.c. From this date it struck, first its chief coins with Alexandrine | less important mints. In Mesopotamia the colonia of Carrhe Assyria,~~

~~types, then drachms with the types of Ephesus, the bee, and the stag | deserves notice, and the city of Edessa, which issues imperial Baby-~~

~~on this side of the date-palm, and lastly tetradrachms with the bust | money as a colonia, and has a series of coins of its kings, striking lonia.~~

~~of the city and Niee holding an aplustre and a palm within a wreath. | with Roman emperors in silver and bronze. Curiously, this and~~

~~These are of heavy Pheenician weight. The imperial coinage ranges | the colonial issue are long contemporary. The colonial coinages of~~

~~from Tiberius to Gordian III. Nisibis and of Rhesena, which became a colonia, close the group. Palestine. In Galilee there are a few autonomous and imperial coins of | Assyria is remarkable for the imperial money of the ancient city~~

~~across it. These are after 400 B.c. and have been given to Tyre, but the Egyptian influenee would perhaps suggest some town nearer the southern border of Palestine. A third class of money of the same age is of Persic weight. The earliest pieces have a head sup- posed to be of Melkarth and a war-galley, the later examples bearing dates. The dated series continues, but the obverse type changes to Dagon. Theseare assigned to Aradus. The series bearing the names or symbols of cities would not be difficult to elass were it not for their constant interruption by Ptolemaic and Seleucid coins and by the issue of Alexandrine tetradraehms. Berytus has bronze, both autonomous and of the city asa colonia. The types of interest are the founding of the colonia, Poseidon, not always of a purely Greek type, Poseidon and the nymph Berytus, the temple of the saine divinity, and the eight Pheenician gods or Cabiri.. To Byblus we may class with certainty a Pheenician currency, that of the native kings from about 400 B.c. to Alexander'sage. The imperial coinage presents a very curious perspective representation of a temple in Greco-Pheenician style, with a conical edifice in the eourt. Czesarea ad Libanum shows in its imperial money a strange type of Elagabalus, a half-figure of the Syrian goddess in a shrine. She wears a eap like a papyrus head and is enwrapped in shapeless drapery. The shrine is of Egyptian style, and a sceptre with a bird upon it is beside the goddess. Marathus has a very fine Phee- nieian tetradrachm of 226 B.c., with the head of the city turreted and a youth holding an aplustre and seated on bucklers. This is a work of Greek design and style, as is also a small coin~~

of the year following with the head of Queen Berenice II., then reigning. The copper is dated from 198 to 153 B.o.

Ptolemais, which was a great mint under the earlier Ptolemies ; and other towns are represented. In Perza there is an imperial series of Gadara. Samaria has money of Cexsarea, both autonomous and imperial, the last for the most part colonial, and also imperial of Neapolis, among the types of which occurs the interesting subject of Mount Gerizim surmounted by the Samaritan temple. The coinage of Judea is an interesting series. The money of Jerusalcin is of high interest, and more extensive than appears at first sight. Here was struck the coin of Antiochus VII., with the native lily as a type, the series of the Maccabean princes, that of the Roman procurators, and the bronze coius countermarked by the tenth legion, quartered by Titus in the ruins of the city. One of these bears the remarkable symbol of a pig. After the reduction of Judea in the reign of Hadrian, Jerusalem was rebuilt as a colonia with the name "lia Capitolina. The earliest coin commemorates the foundation. The coinage lasts as late as Hostilian. Ascalon strikes autonomous silver and bronze, including remarkable tetradrachms with the por- traits of Ptolemy Auletes, of his elder son Ptolemy XIV., and of his daughter Cleopatra. There is also money of Gaza of some import- ance, and of Joppa, both previously mints of the earlier Ptolenties.

of evidence would class them to Simon Maccabeus, to whom the right of coining was granted by Antiochus VII. The series is of shekels and half-shekels, of the weight of Phceenician tetradrachms and didrachms. The obverse of the shekel bears the inscription "the shekel of Isracl," and for type the pot of manna, or it may be a sacred vessel of the temple, above which is the initial of the word year, and the letter indicating the year of issue. The reverse reads " Jerusalem the Holy," and the type is a flowering branch, either Aaron's rod that budded ora native lily. The half-shekel differs in having the inscription "half-shekel" on the obverse. The types are markedly peculiar ; the obverse inscription is equally so, for the regular formula of the neighbouring cities would give nothing but the name of the city ; but the reverse inscription is like that of Tyre and Sidon, for instance, "of Tyre sacred and inviolable," of Sidon the same. This agreement is confirmatory of the assign- ment to Simon Maccabeus. This coinage bears the dates of years 1, 2, 3, 4 (rare), and 5 (one specimen only). 'There is

~~great diffi- culty as to the date. It may be reckoned from the beginning of Simon's actual rule (142 B.c.), or from that of his official rule, which is stated to have been used by the Jews as an era (141 8.c.), or from the decree of Antiochus VII. granting him the right of coinage (c. 140-139 B.c.). On the whole, the evidence in favour of the oflicial date is best. Any one of the three modes of dating would allow five annual issues. 'There is another explanation which must not be hastily dismissed. It may be that the computation is by sab- batical years, and the fact that there are two types of year 1 lends some colour to this supposition, though if it be admitted there would be a gap of six years between the first and second issues,~~

~~of Nineveh, which appears as a colonia with the name Niniva Claudiopolis. The money of Babylon struck by the usurpers Molon and Timarchus has been noticed under the Seleucids.~~

~~The coins of Africa are far less numerous than those of the other two continents, as Greek, Pheenician, and Roman civilization never penetrated beyond Egypt and the northern coast to the west. The series of Egypt is first in geographical order. been here assigned of a date anterior to Alexander. The old Egyptians kept their gold, electrum, and silver in rings, and weighed them to ascertain the value. During the Persian rule the Persian money must have been current, and the satrap Aryandes is said to have issued a coinage of silver under Darius I. In the papyri of this age the argenteus of the temple of Ptah is mentioned, and this has been thought to be a coin of Persian type generally assigned to Pheenicia. (Revillout, in Revue Eqyptologique.) With Alexander a regular Greek coinage must have begun, and some of his coins may be of Egyptian mints. With Ptolemy [. the great Ptolemaic currency begins which lasted for three centuries. The characteristics of this coinage are its splendid series of gold pieces and the size of the bronze money. The execution of the earlier heads~~

~~As yet no coins have Egypt.~~

~~EGYPT. |~~

~~is good; afterwards they become coarse and careless. At first the fine pieces were issued by the Pheenician, Cyprian, and other foreign mints, the Egyptian work being usuallyinferior. While the Seleucids were still striking~~

~~good coins, the Ptoleimies allowed their money to fall into barbarism in Egypt and even in Cyprus. 'he obverse type is a royal head, that of Ptolemy I. being the ordinary silver type, while that of Arsinoe II. was long but not uninterruptedly continued on the gold. 'The head of Zeus Ammon is most usual on the bronze coinage. A type once adopted was usually retained. Thus Ptolemy I., Arsinoe II., Ptolemy IV., Cleopatra I., have a kind of commemoration in the coinage on the analogy of the priesthoods established in honour of each royal pair. The almost universal type of reverse of all metals is the Ptolemaic badge, the cagle on the thunderbolt, which, in spite of variety, is always heraldic. For art and iconography this series is far inferior to that of the Seleu- cids. The weight after the carlier part of the reign of Ptolemy I. is Pheenician for gold and silver and either Attic or Egyptian for the bronze. The chief coins are octadrachms in gold and tetradrachms in silver, besides the abundant bronze money. Ptolemy I. appears to have issued his money while regent for Philip Arrhideus ; it only differs in the royal name from that of Alexander ; but as yet it has not been possible to separate Ptolemy's coinage from that of the other generals. He then struck money for Alexander IV. on the Attic standard with the head of Alexander the Great, with the horn of Ammon in the elephant's skin and Alexander's reverse. He soon adopted a new reverse, that of Pallas Promachus, and next lowered the coins to the Rhodian standard. This money ho continued to strike after the young king's death until he himself took the royal title, when he issued his own money, his portrait on the one side and the cagle and thunderbolt with his name as king on the other, and adopted the Phenician standard. This typein silver, with the inscription " Ptolemy the king," is thenceforward the regular cur- rency. He also issued pentadrachms in gold, and he or his successor octadrachms in silver. Ptolemy II. (Philadelphus), the richest of the family, continued his father's coinage, and, having acquired the cities of Phcenicia, struck money there with his father's title Soter, while the Egyptian coinage merely bore the title of king: the one was a commemorative coinage, the other, though bearing the portrait of Ptolemy I., was issued in the name of the reigning sovereign. Phil- adelphus probably began the issue of the gold octadrachms with the busts of Ptolemy I. and Berenice I., Ptolemy II. and Arsinoe II., and certainly struck beautiful octadrachms in gold and decadrachms in silver of Arsinoe II., the gold being long afterwards continued. The Pheenician octadrachms and tetradrachms are dated by the king's reign. Philadelphus~~

also began the great bronze issues of the system which includes the largest coin, sometimes exceeding 1400 grains in weight. Ptolemy III. (Euergetes I.) continued his father's coinages, after a while abandoning the dates in Pheenicia. He also struck fine gold octadrachms with his own portrait. His queen Berenice II., striking in her own right as heiress of the Cyrenaica and also as consort, but with the royal title only given to heiresses in the Ptolemaic line, issued a beautiful currency with her portrait, both octadrachms and decadrachms like those of Arsinoe, and a coinage for the Cyrenaica of peculiar divisions. Under Ptolemy IY. (Philopator) the coinage in its scantiness bears witness to the decline of the state, but the gold octadrachms are continued with his portrait and that of Arsinoe III. Ptolemy VY. (Epiphanes) still strikes octadrachms with his portrait, and begins the continuous series of the tetradrachms of the threc great cities of Cyprus, which, bearing regnal years, afford invaluable aid in the classing of his and the later coinages. Among thc money of the regency of Cleo- patra I. must be noticed a copper coin with her portrait. Contem- poraneously with it begins the series of Ptolemy VI. (Philometor), broken by the invasion of Antiochus IV. (Epiphanes). This and the moncy of Philometor's brother and successor Ptolemy Physcon are only remarkable for the many dates they bear, and so with the coin- age of succeeding kings, all showing a gradual degradation of art and ultimately a great debasement in metal. In the latest series, the money of the famous Cleopatra VII., it is interesting to note the Egyptian variety of her head, also occurring on Greek im- perial money and on that of Ascalon. In Egypt we have the best executed and one of the youngest portraits, and it shows that her face was marked by strong characteristics of acuteness and mobility rather than of beauty.

Under the Roman rule the imperial money of Alexandria, the coinage of the province of Egypt, is the most remarkable in its class for its extent and the interest and variety of its types; and it deserves a more careful study than it has received. It begins under Augustus and ends with the usurper or patriot Achilleus, called on his money Domitius Domitianus, overthrown by Diocletian, thus lasting longer than Greek imperial money elsewhere. In the earlier period there are potin coins continuing the base tetradrachms struck by Auletes, and bronze money of several sizes. The types are very various, and may be broadly divided into Greek, Graeco-Roman, and Greco-Egyptian. The Greco-Roman types have the closest analogy to those of

Rome herself ; the Greco-Egyptian are of high interest as a special class illustrative of the latest phase of Egyptian mythology.

NUMISMATICS

651

These native types do not immediately appear, but from the time of Domitian they are of great frequeucy. The money of Trajan, Hadrian, and Antoninus Pius is abundant and interesting. A coin of Antoninus, dated in his sixth year, records the beginning of a new Sothiac cycle of 1460 years, which happened in the emperor's second year (139 a.p.). The reverse type isa crested crane, the Egyptian bennu or phenix, with a kind of radiate nimbus round its head, and the inscription AION. Under Claudius II. (Gothicus) and thenceforward there is but a single kind of coin of bronze washed with silver. In this series we note the money of Zenobia, and of the sons of Odenathus, Vabalathus and Athenodorus.

Coins of the nomes of Egypt were struck only by Trajan, Hadrian, and Antoninus Pius. Their metal is bronze, and they are of different sizes. They were struck at the metropolis of each nome, and their types relate to the local worship, and so illustrate the Egyptian religion under a form modified by Greek influence. The inscrip- tions are the names of the nomes. There is an exceptional coin of the town of Pelusium.

Passing by the unimportant coinage of the Libyans, we reach the Cyrene.

interesting series of the Cyrenaica, the one truly Greek currency of Africa. 1t begins under the line of Battus (640-450 3.c.), and reaches to the Roman rule as far as the reign of Augustus. There are coins without the name of any city, which we may consider to be of the Cyrenaica generally, and others of Cyrene, Barca, Euesperides, and smaller towns. The weight of the gold always, and of the silver until some date not long after 450 B.c., is Attic; afterwards it is Phoenician, of the Samian variety. The ruling types are the silphium plant and its fruit, and the head of Zeus Ammon, first bearded then beardless. The art is vigorous, and in the transitional and fine period has the best Greek qualities. It is clearly an out- lying branch of the school of central Greece. The oldest coins are of the class which is without

the name of any city. So archaic are they that they may vie in antiquity with the first issues of Lydia and of Mgina, and date in the 7th century B.c. The money of Cyrene begins later, it may be a little before the fall of the kings in 450 B.c. It comprises a fine gold series of Attic staters with the types of the Olympian Zeus, more rarely Zeus Ammon, and a victorious quadriga. Barca hasa smaller coinage than Cyrene. It comprises a wonderful tetradrachm (Pheenician), with the head of Ammon bearded, boldly represented, absolutely full face, and three silphiums joined, between their heads an owl, a chameleon, and a jerboa. The money of Euesperides is less important. The Ptole- maic currency of the Cyrenaica has been already noticed.

Syrtica and Byzacena offer little of interest. Their coins are late bronze, first with Punic inscriptions, then in imperial times with Latin and Punic or Latin. Latin and Greek are used in the same coins at Leptis Minor in Byzacena.

In Zeugitana the great currency of Carthage is the last repre- Carthage.

sentative of Greek money, for, despite its Orientalism, its origin is Hellenic, and of this origin it is at first not unworthy. Its range in time is from about 400 B.c. to the fall of Carthage in 146 B.c. The earliest coins are Attic tetradrachms of the class usually called Siculo- Punic. It has been usual to consider these coins as having been wholly struck by the Carthaginians in Sicily, like the undoubted Sicilian money of their settlements there and those absolute imi- tations of Syracusan money which may be as reasonably classed to the island. But those who insist on the attribution of the whole so-called Siculo-Punic class to Sicily leave Carthage without any but a provincial coinage for at least half a century. It is far more reasonable to infer that the earliest coinage of Carthage was struck for the whole dominion, that with purely Sicilian types being limited to Sicily. The next issues are of gold and electrum and silver, degenerating into potin. The weights are extremely difficult. In the silver money the Phcenician standard is almost universal, and we note the drachm, didrachm, tetradrachm, hexadrachm, octa- drachm, decadrachm, and dodecadrachm. Coins are also found which appear to follow the Persic standard, unless they are octobols and their doubles. While the silver is thus explicable, the gold and electrum

~~money is very puzzling, and its very varying weights can only be explained by the theory that silver was the standard, and gold was constantly fluctuating in its relation. The earlier types are the horse or half-horse crowned by Nice and the date- palm, the head of Persephone and the horse and palm-tree, a female head in a cap, in splendid style, and a lion and a palm, and a head of young Heracles and a horse's head witha palm. It will be noted that the horse and the palm-tree are most constant. On the later coins the obverse is uniformly occupied by the head of Persephone and the reverse by the horse, sometimes with the palm, the horse's head and Pegasus being rare varieties. The bronze money imitates the later silver. The few inscriptions are extremely difficult. One that seems certain is NWN Np, the "new city," Carthage. The art of the earlier coins is sometimes purely Greek of Sicilian style. There is even in the best class a curious tendency to exaggeration, which gradually develops itself and finally becomes very barbarous. Roman Carthage has a bronze coinage which is insignificant. There are a few other towns which issued money with Roman legends, Utica, however, having first Punic and then~~

~~Numidia.~~

~~Oldest Roman money.~~

~~Gold and silver.~~

~~652 NUMISMWATICS [ROMAN COINS.~~

~~Latin inscriptions. The denarii of Clodius Macer, who revolted in 68 A.D., are curiously illustrative of his policy, which was to restore the Roman republic.~~

~~The cities of Numidia have Punic inscriptions, and there are interesting coins of Juba I., his denarii presenting his portrait of a characteristic Libyan type. Of Mauretania there are civic coins, chiefly using Punic characters, and an interesting regal series, mainly denarii, of Bogud II., Juba IJ. with his consort Cleopatra, daughter of Mark Antony and the famous Egyptian queen, and of Ptolemy their son, the last of the great family of the kings of Egypt.~~

JI].—Romawn Corns.

The Roman coinage is of two great classes,—the republican, commonly called the family coinage, and the imperial ; the first lasted from the origin of money at Rome to the reform of Augustus in 16 B.c., and the second from this date to the fall of the Western empire in 476 A.D. The origin of the republican coinage is one of the hardest problems in archeology. The evidence of the money is at variance with that of the ancient writers, and in setting these aside we are at variance with the best authorities of our time ; but the general principles. of criticism must be maintained here as in other matters of early Roman story.

The oldest money of Rome was of bronze, and it is stated that it was first cast as ws rude. This statement is confirmed by the dis- covery of shapeless masses of bronze, evidently broken off from large quadrilateral masses, and then rendered of a roughly uniform weight. To the «s rude succeeded the ws signatwm, the stamped bronze. This step is attributed to Servius Tullius by ancient authority; it is said that he adopted the types of a sheep, ox, or pig; and large masses of bronze have been found which present animal types, in- cluding the pig. These are held to represent the coinage tradition- ally attributed to the regal age, though it is admitted that they are for the most part contemporary with the first circular money, the libral, the origin of which Mommsen dates about 450 n.c, All the masses, however, which bear a distinct type are clearly later than 300 B.c., as is proved by their style; and in the case of the elephant type we are forced, by the first appearance of the animal in Italy under Pyrrhus, to adopt a still later date. Moreover, the date of 450 n.c. is too early for the origin of circular money ; con- sequently the idea of any trace of the supposed regal coinage must be abandoned, though the late ingot may be descended from a currency intermediate between the zs rude and the libral circular money. The first regular Roman coinage consists of a series of cast pieces, the as of a pound weight, libral, and its chief divisions, the semis (half), triens (third), quadrans (fourth), sextans (sixth), and uncia (twelfth). The as was not cast of full weight ; the older specimens usually weigh from 11 to 9 uncie, on an average 10. The origin of this system is assigned by Mommsen to the decemvirs, on the ground of their legal institution, and particularly from the condition in the Lex Julia Papiria (430 n.c.) that fines should not be paid in cattle but in money.

Admitting the law to be correctly stated in its original form, it proves no more than that money was current in Rome. The libral coinage cannot, either in style or in types, possibly be much anterior to 350 B.c. It is easy to mistake barbarism for archaism, but a practised eye will sco that the types of these coins do not present a trace of archaisin, and are imitations of the types which originated in the latter part of the 5th century, and were in fashion in the fourth. The heads of Jupiter and the beardless Hercules are of this class. We must therefore suppose

that the fines were paid in metal by weight or in Greek money, °

which if it was bronze no doubt was also weighed.

At first there was no corresponding gold or silver, but the pound of bronze was held to be equal to a scruple of silver. Campanian gold and silver money with the name of the Romans or Rome was next struck to supply the want. The silver is of Greek weight, with types usually connected with Roman legend. Froin one of the earlier reverses being distinctly borrowed from the moncy of the Syracusan tyrant Agathocles, who began to reigu in 317 3B.c., we cannot date the first issue before about 300 3.c. The scanty gold in two or three groups is evidently of later dates ; it presents great metrological difficulties. The libral as fell in course of time from a weight of 10 to one of 8 uncie, and was at length reduced toa weight of 4, or that of a triens, and thus became triental. This is shown by the colonial coins of Italy to have occurred about 269 B.C., probably in that very year, when the silver coinage of Rome began. The dupondius (2 asses), tressis (3), and decussis (10) were now issued at Rome, also the semuncia (3 oz.) and the quadruncia (t 0z.). Casting was ultimately abandoned and all coins struck, and by about 254 B.c., or soon after, the triental system became sextantal ; the multiples of the as and divisions of the uncia now cease. The silver coinage was first issued in 269 B.c.; it consisted of the denarius of 4 scruples or 72 grains (72 denarii being struck to the pound), the quinarius of 2 scruples, and the sestertius of 1. As the old as libralis was equal to 24 triental asses, the new sestertius was equal to the as libralis ; as the coin was still in circulation this was inevitable, and the words sestertius and ces grave are uscd synony- mously. The relative value of silver to bronze being thus main-

~~tained, the silver sestertius was exchanged for the old as of 10 uncie, which was a real coin, whereas the new as of 4 uncie (tri- ental) was a mere token. The value in the bronze, X, was inscribed on the denarii instead of IV. The bronze money soon became a token currency. The victoriatus was issued in 228 B.c., not much after the denarius; it was of 3 scruples, or three-fourths of the heavier coin, and was intended to serve in the provinces for the Illyrian drachms of light Attic weight ; it could passat Rome. The first purely Roman gold money is that of Sulla, probably struck in Greece. Julius Cesar struck similar coins in 49 3.c. To Octavian is due the settlement of the gold coinage. In 217 B.c. the standard was reduced ; the denarius was struck at 80 to the pound, aud the as became uncial. The denarius remained stationary for nearly three centuries, and its purity was maintained. The fate of the divisions of the denarius is too complicated to be here noticed, but it may be remarked that in 104 B.c. the quinarius appeared with the type of the victoriatus, which had disappeared, but with its own mark Q. When the as fell from sextantal to uncial, the value changed from one-tenth to one-sixteenth of the denarius, but, as troops were still paid at 10 asses to the denarius, the X almost always appears as the mark of value on the silver piece. By this reduction the relation of silver to bronze fell to less than half the original value still current in accounts, and became 1 to 112. Thus the bronze money represented more than double its metal value. In 89 B.c. the semuncial as was introduced, and from 80 B.c. bronze coinage ceased until Augustus issued his new currency in that metal.~~

~~The Roman coinage was struck both in the city and elsewhere. Types. Consequently the Roman, Italian, and other issues must be care- fully discriminated. In the city the right of striking was dele- gated to the monetary triumvirs, who could coin individually or together, but asa rule they acted independently. The earlier bronze and silver coins have fixed types. The obverse types are—for the as the head of Janus Bifrons, for the semis that of Jupiter, the triens Pallas, the quadrans Hercules, the sextans Mercury, and the uncia Roma. The reverse type is always a prow. The marks of value are—for the as I, for the semis 8, and a certain number of balls equivalent to the value in ounces for the lower denominations.~~

~~The original types of the denarius were for the obverse the head of Roma with a winged helmet and the mark of value X behind, and for the reverse~~

~~the Dioscuri on horseback charging. In 100 Bc. a new type is introduced for the obverse, and a new reverse appears a century earlier, but the great abundance of types dates from 93 B.C. These are so characteristic that it is necessary to notice them particularly. The primary religious motive is to be traced in them as in the types of Greek money, but their having been selected to distinguish families instead of cities or peoples gives them a char- acter of their own. It is this character which ultimately rendered the introduction of contemporary portraits almost a matter of course. The subject of the obverse is usually the head of a divinity, or a personification, or a traditional or an historical personage, ultimately one living, and the reverse bears a mythological, syin- ? bolical, traditional, or historical subject.~~

~~The following are the chief classes to which the types may be reduced. :—~~

~~1. Head or figure of a divinity worshipped at Rome ; as head of Jupiter (fam. Petillia), figures of the Dioscuri (Junia) or of a divinity worshipped by the family or individual striking the coin, as head of Neptune (Pompeia, coin of Sextus Pompeius).~~

~~2. Sacred natural or artificial object ; as pontifical implements (Antonia). This class is not large ; sacred animals rarely occur.~~

~~3. Head or figure of a personification of a country or town ; as heads of Hispania (Carisia), Roma (Julia), Alexandria (Amilia),~~

~~4. Head or figure of an allegorical personage ; as heads of Pavor : (Hostilia), Pallor (id.), Honos and Virtus (Fufia, Mucia).~~

~~5. Fabulous monster ; as Scylla (Pompeia).~~

~~6. Head or figure of an ancestral personage ; as head of Numa (Calpurnia), Ancus Marcius (Marcia).~~

~~7. Events connected with ancestors ; as figure of Marcus Lepidus, as TVTOR REG{[IS], crowning Ptolemy Epiphanes (Aimilia).~~

8. Places connected with historical exploits, and of a votive character ; as pharos of Messene (Pompeia, of Sextus, probably) commemorating the sea-fight off Messene, 38 3.c.).

9. Symbolical representations of contemporary events; as a general welcomed on landing by a country or city (Minatia).

10. Heads of living personages exercising dictatorial power, or in very high authority ; as head of Sulla (Cornelia).

11. Representations connected with military matters ; as legion- ary standards (Antonia).

Besides the principal designs there are symbols and numerals, generally to be regarded as having been indicative of successive : issues from the mint. The inscriptions, which are in the nomina- tive, are usually on the obverse the name of the personage repre- sented and on the reverse the name of the person who issued the coin; the latter sometimes occurs on the obverse. Some of the most curious types strikingly illustrate Roman instinct. Being the choice of a multitude of persons of different families, they have an individuality lacking to the money of the Greek cities, which

Augustus.

IMPERIAL ROMAN. |

gave little choice to the coining authority or to the artist, and to the Greek royal coinages, which slipped speedily into heraldry. The family coins show a delight in recording the achievements of the house, and sometimes are so personal as to rank with modern medals, the spirit of which is even outdone in such a subject as Sulla's dream. With the Greeks the historical sense is latent until the age of the kings, and then does not pass beyond portraiture and at first a scanty symbolical commemoration of events; with the Romans, even before portraits are introduced, the desire to record events is intensely strong. Thus we have not only such legendary subjects as the rape of the Sabines and Tarpeia crushed beneath the bucklers, which may be classed with the Greek mythi- cal types, but also past historical events, as Marcus Amilius Lepidus crowning, Ptolemy Epiphanes, to whom he was

governor, and Paullus Mumilius raising a trophy, while Perseus, king of Macedon, and his two children stand before him, and also events of the present, as the reverse type of Brutus, the cap of liberty between two daggers with the inscription EID MAR, and on a piece of Sextus Pompey the pharos of Messene above a Roman galley and for reverse Scylla striking with a rudder. The special mythology and superstition of Rome is not less fully illustrated, as well as the coming in of Greek ideas, in such a manner that many types thoroughly Greek alternate with purely Roman ones. The art of the republican coins reflects that of contemporary Greek money, but is never equal to the better style of the late Hellenic issues.

The history of the imperial coinage is full of metrological diffi- culties. These arise from the conditions fixed by Augustus (16-15 B.C.), by which the emperor alone coined gold and silver, the senate alone bronze. Consequently the senate was wholly at the mercy of the emperor. Augustus struck the aureus at 40 to the pound, equal to 25 denarii at 84 to the pound. He introduced a new bronze coinage in two metals, the sestertius of 4 asses and dupondius of 2, both in fine yellow bronze (orichalcum), and the as semis and quadrans in common red bronze. The finer coins were struck on the standard of the as of a quarter of an uncia, the inferior ones on that of the half uncia. This gives the following proportionate values :—

coinage, which had long been quite irregular in weight, reduced the chief gold piece to yd of the pound, and issued the solidus, a piece destined to play a great part in commercial history. It was never lowered in weight, though many centuries later it was debased, long after it had become the parent of the gold coinages of Westerns and Kasterns alike throughout the civilized world. The index LX XII is sometimes found on the first solidi; and after 367 a.p., when the edict of Constantine was renewed, the Greek equivalent OB was constantly used. Under Constantius II. (360 A.p.) and Julian the silver denarius or argenteus was suppressed, and the siliqua of z{zth of the pound took its place. 'The follis having been withdrawn by Arcadius and Honorius, was reissued a century later by Zeno, with XL to

~~indicate the value of 40 denarii. It will be seen that a fuller system of bronze was originated by Ana- stasius, the Byzantine emperor.~~

~~Under Augustus the Roman monetary system became the official Provin- standard of the empire, and uo local mint could exist without the cial Thus the Greek imperial money is strictly mints.~~

~~imperial licence. Roman money coined in the provinces, with the legends and types of the towns. Many cities were allowed to strike bronze, several silver, and one, Cesarea in Cappadocia, gold. The silver becomes limited about Nero's time, but lasts under the Antonines. A fter- wards there are a few currencies of base metal. The bronze in- creased in mints and quantity in the second century, but, through the dcbasement of the Roman silver, one city after another ceased to strike about the middle of the third. Only Alexandria and Antioch survived by following the tactics of Rome with their own base metal coins. Purely Roman gold and silver was coined in certain of the provinces, in Spain and Gaul, and at the cities of Antioch and Ephesus. When the base silver had driven the Greek imperial bronze out of circulation, Gallienus established local mints which struck in pure Roman types. Diocletian increased the number of these mints, which lasted until the fall of the empire of the West, and in the Kast longer. These mints were, with others added later, Londinium (or Augusta), Camulodunum, Treviri, Lugdunum, Arc- late (or Constantina), Ambianum, Tarraco, Carthago, Roma, Ostia, Aquileia, Mediolanum, Siscia, Serdica, Sirmium, Thessalonica, Con- stantinopolis, Heraclea, Nicomedia, Cyzicus, Antiochia (ultimately~~

~~eos cae ee so Theapolis), and Alexandria. A few were speedily abandoned. 1 7 98 56 The obverse type of the imperial coins is the portrait of an Types 1 9 imperial personage, emperor, empress, or Cesar. It begins under and~~

~~The as is nearly equal in size and weight to the dupondius, but is distinguished by its metal and inferior fabric. All the bronze bears the letters 8.C., senatus consulto. Emperors not acknowledged by the senate are without bronzc money ; thus we have no specimens of Otho or Pescennius Niger.~~

~~Julius Cesar, though the republican money goes on under Augustus, inscrip- in whose reign the privileges of the moneyers ceased. The type tions.~~

~~only varies in the treatment of the head or bust, — if male, laureate, radiate, or bare; if female, sometimes veiled, but usnally bare. The reverse types of the pagan period are mythological of divinities, allegorical of personifications, historical of the acts of the emperors.~~

~~Changes Neroreduced the aureus to ¢,th of the pound, and the denarius to | Thus the coins of Hadrian, besides bearing the figures of the chief under gth, its purity being officially redneed. Under Trajan there was a | divinities of Rome, commemorate by allegorical representations of later em- further debasement of the denarius. Marcus Aurelius fixed the | countries or cities the emperor's progresses, and by actual repre- perors. aureus, which had recovered its weight, at qsth of the pound; the | sentations his architectural works. The inscriptions are either~~

~~denarius had already been further debased, and under Septimius Severus it was half alloy. Caracalla introduced a new coin, called after him the argenteus Antoninianus. It was struck at 7th to ath of the pound, and seems to have been originally a double denarius struck on a lower standard. The characteristic of this coin is that the head of the emperor is radiate as Sol, that of the empress on a crescent as Luna. Under Elagabalus the taxes were paid in gold alone ; this was ruinous, for the treasury paid in debased silver at nominal value, which had to be used to purchase gold by the taxpayer at real value. Under Severus Alexander there was the latest large issue of denarii and sestertii. 'The senate made another effort to continue a bronze currency by striking under Philip the large bronze quinarius or Philippus ereus, while the base metal argenteus had become a piece of bronze washed with silver. At length in the time of Gallienus the argenteus contained no silver whatever. Aurelian (270-275 a.D.) attempted a reform of the coinage by which the previous coin was reduced from its nominal to its intrinsic value. The coins were now of tinned bronze and marked with their real value, 20 or 21 denarii of account, the signs X XI, KA (Greek), and XX being used as indexes of value. These coins replace at once the base silver and the bronze, which now disappear. The moneying right of the senate had become illusory by the deprecia- tion of silver, which had ceased to have~~

~~any real value. Aurelian entircly suppressed this right ; Tacitus and Florian restored it for a~~

~~simply descriptive, such as the emperor's names and titles in the nominative on the obverse, or partly on the obverse and partly on the reverse, and the name of the subject on the reverse; or else they are dedicatory, the imperial names and titles being given on the obverse in the dative and the name of the type on the reverse. Sometimes the reverse bears a directly dedicatory inscrip- tion tothe emperor. The inscriptions on the carlier imperial coins from Tiberius to Severus Alexander are generally chronological, usually giving the current or last consulship of the empcror and his tribunitian year. In the latter part of the third century the mints are indicated by abbreviations in the exergue of the reverse, with also the number of the issue. There are sometimes signs of value in the field of the reverse. These characteristics apply to the pagan empire ; under the Christian empire there are modifica- tions, mainly in the character of the reverse types. These are generally allegorical and free from pagan intention, though their source is pagan, as in the common types of Victory. Purely Christ- ian types are rare. The most remarkable is the Christian mono- gram formed of the Greek letters XP. The inscriptions are simpler, and in the reverses necessarily show the same change as the types. Of great interest is the inscription HOC SIGNO VICTOR ERIS, on coins dating not long after the victory of Constantine over Licinius. There is some variety in both types and inscriptions, but little that is absolutely new.~~

~~few ycars, after which the 8.C. disappears from the coinage. The reform of Aurelian caused an outbreak at Rome which was of a serious character, but it was maintained by him and by Tacitus.~~

~~The art of Roman imperial coins, although far inferior to that Art of | of Greek, is well worthy of study in its best ages, for its intrinsic imperial | merit, for its illustration of contemporary sculpture, and on account coins.~~

~~Aurelian also suppressed all local mints but Alexandria. the work of Diocletian to restore the issue of relatively pure money in the three metals. Before 293 a.p. the coinage of silver recom- mences with the denarius of the standard of Nero, ;/;th of the pound, marked with the figures XCVI. Between 296 and 301 a.p. two tinned bronze coins were struck, the follis~~

~~and the centenionalis. The follis was marked X-XI, like the similar but very much smaller coin of Aurelian. The denarius was the unit of reckoning. Constantine, probably in 312 a.p., desiring to rectify the gold~~

~~It was |~~

~~of the influence it exercised on medieval and modern art. These coins were first designed under the revival of Greek art, during the influence of the New Attic school. The Romans had properly no art of their own. Their greatest temples and the statues of their gods were copies or imitations by Greeks of Greek originals, besides such earlier statues as were brought from Greece. The Greeks who were first called in to work for their masters were the artists of a school which was emphatically imitative, not in any way inventive, and their successors were debased by the false taste of their patrons.~~

~~Byzan- tine em- pire.~~

~~654 NUMISMATICS5 [BYZANTINE.~~

~~There is a marked inferiority in the Roman coinage to the Greco- Asiatic work of the same times. With a tendency to follow the dramatic styles, the artists who worked at Rome had power enough to produce fine and highly characteristic portraits, of which the famous bust, miscalled Clytie, is the most striking example. Thus, though the grandeur and the purity of design and execution of the older masters are gone, we have in their place a strikingly faithful portraiture, which is deeply gratifying to the historical sense. The best age is the Augustan, which may be said to last through the rule of the Claudian emperors, and is decidedly under New Attic influence. This is succeeded by the second, that of the Antonines, from Trajan to Commodus. The Augustan work is larger and more refined, that of the Antonines more elaborate and laborious. Then follows a swift decline, with a temporary revival in the age of Diocletian and Constantine, when an attempt, neces- sarily weak, was made to improve the art of the coins; thence- forward it slowly declined. In the Augustan age two manners may be recognized, the Greek and the Greco-Roman, the one repeating earlier works, the other portraying living persons and events. Under the Antonines we notice, as a distinct reaction against the poor idealism of the age, which~~

~~even occasionally endeavoured to treat portraits in an ideal style, a vigorous realism which looks like the actual parent of the Italian Renaissance in its classical phase. Midway between these stands the realistic style of the age. Among the finest examples of art in the Roman coinage are the portraits of Livia as Pietas, Justitia, and Salus, and that of the elder Agrip- pina. For stern realism the head of Nero is most remarkable, the growth of whose bad passions may be seen in the increasing brutality of his features and expression. The medallion series is full of charming subjects, though when they have been treated by Greek artists of earlier ages the contrast is trying .; the most satisfactory are the representations of older statues; the purely new composi- tions are either poor inventions, or have a theatrical air that removes them from the province of good art.~~

~~III.—Mzpiavau AND MopErn Corns oF EUROPE.~~

~~The period of the medieval and modern coins of Europe must be considered to begin about the time of the fall of the Western empire, so that its length to the present day is about 1400 years. It is impossible to separate the medieval and modern coins, either in the entire class, because the time of change varies, or in each group, since there are usually pieces indicative of transition which display characteristics of both periods. The clearest division of the subject is to place the Byzantine coinage first, then to notice the characteristics of its descendants, and lastly to sketch the monetary history of each country.~~

~~The Byzantine moncy is usually held to begin in the reign of Anastasius (491-518 4.p.), The coinage is always in the three metals, but the silver money is rare, and was probably struck in small quantities. Atfirst both the gold and the silver are fine, but towards the close ofthe empire they are much alloyed. The gold coin is the solidus of Constantine, with its half and its third, the so-called semissis and tremissis. The chief silver coin was the miliarision, of a lower weiglit than the solidus, and its half, the keration. Heraclius, in 615 A.D., coined a larger piece, the hexagram, weighing 105 grains. This coin was discontinued, and afterwards the miliarision and keration were coined until the conquest of Constantinople by the Latins. The silver money of the restored Greek empire is obscure. In 498 Anastasius introduced a new copper coinage, bearing on the reverse, at and~~

~~about his time, the following indexes of value as the main type: M, K, I, E, A, I, B, and A, or 40 nummi, 20, 10, 5, 4, 3, 2, and 1. These coins bear beneath the indexes the abbreviated name of the place of issue. Justinian I. added the regnal year in 538 A.D., his twelfth year. The money of this class presents extraordinary variations of weight, which indicate the condition of the imperial finances. The Alexandrian coins of this class begin under Anastasius and end with the capture of the city by the Arabs. They have two denominations, iB and §, or 12 and 6, and there is an isolated variety of Justinian with AI (33). The Alexandrian bronze never lost its weight, while that of the cm- pire generally fell, and thus some of the pieces of Heraclius, while associated with his sons Heraclius Constantinus and Heracleonas, have the double index IB and M. The Vandals of Carthage had a peculiar double system of their own with the indexes XLII, XX, XII, and III. Under Basil I. the bronze money appears to have been reformed, but the absence of indexcs of value makes the whole later history of the coinage in this metal very difficult. There was one curious change in the aspect of the money. Early in the 11th century the solidus begins to assume a cup-shaped form, and this subsequently became the shape of the whole coinage except the smaller bronze pieces. These novel coins are called nummi scyphati. The types, except when they refer simply to the sovereign, are of a religious, and consequently of a Christian character. This feeling increases to the last. Thus, on the obverse of the earlier coins the emperors are represented alone, but from about the 10th century they are generally portrayed as aided or supported by some sacred personage or saint. On the reverses of the oldest coins we~~

~~have such types as a Victory holding a cross, but on those of later ones a represeutation of Our Saviour or of the Virgin Mary. Sub- sequently some allegorical religious types are introduced, as that of the Virgin Mary supporting the walls of Constantinople. The principal inscriptions for a long period almost invariably relate to the sovereign, and express his name and titles. The secondary inscriptions of the earlier coins indicate the town at which the piece was struck, and, in the case of the larger bronze pieces, the year of the emperor's reign is also given. From about the 10th century there are generally two principal inscriptions, the one relating to the emperor and the other to the sacred figure of the reverse, in the form of a prayer. The secondary inscriptions at the same time are descriptive, and are merely~~

abbreviations of the names or titles of the sacred personages near the represcnta- tions of whom they are placed. From the time of Alexius I. (Comnenus) the principal inscriptions are almost disused, and descriptive ones alone given. These are nearly always abbre- Viations, like the secondary ones of the earlier period. The lan- guage of the inscriptions was at first Latin with a partial use of Greek; about the time of Heraclins Greek began to take its place on a rude class of coins, probably local; by the 9th century Greek inscriptions occur in the regular coinage ; and at the time of Alexius I. Latin wholly disappears. The Greek inscriptions are remarkable for their orthography, which indicates the changes of the language. Of the art of these coins little need be said. It has its importance in illustrating contemporary ecclesiastical art in the West, but is generally inferior to it both in design and in execution.

Besides the regular series of the Byzantine empire, in which we Cognate include the money assigned to the Latin emperors of Constantinople, groups. there are several cognate groups connected with it, either because of their similarity, or because the sovereigns were of the imperial houses. There are the coinages of the barbarians to be next noticed, and the money of the emperors of Nicea, of Thessalonica, and of Trebizond. The last group consists of small silver pieces, which were prized for their purity ; they were called Comnenian aspers (dopa Kouvyjvara), the princes of Trebizond having sprung from the illustrious family of the Comneni.

The coinage of the other states of Christian Europe will be best Periods

understood if we view it generally in successive periods, afterwards of other more particularly describing the currencies of the chief countries. Euro- The periods have been well defined as—(1) transitionary period, pean from Roman to true medieval coinage, from the fall of Rome (476) coinage. to the accession of Charlemagne (768) ; (2) true medieval age, dur- ing which the Carlovingian money was the currency of western Europe, from Charlemagne to the fall of the Swabian house (1268) ; (3) carly Renaissance, from the striking of the florin in Florence (1252) to the classical Renaissance (1450); (4) the classical Renais- sance, from 1450 to 1600 ; (5) the modern period. (C. F. Keary in the Antiquary, 1883.)

1. The Roman money was adopted and imitated by the barbarian Transi- conquerors of the empire. They struck in gold, silver, and bronze, tional ; gold being the favourite metal. The names of the kings soon appear upon the silver and bronze, but the gold money is at first a copy of the Byzantine, then monograms of kings appear, and at last their names in full save when the money in the Frankish series is of civic issues. The currencies of this period are those of the Ostrogoths in Italy, the Vandals in Africa, the Visigoths'in Spain, the Franks in Gaul, and the Lombards in Italy. The most im- portant coinages of this age are of gold.

2. The inconvenience of gold money when it represents a very Media-

large value in the necessaries of life must have caused its abandon- val ; ment and the substitution of silver by the Carlovingians. The denier (denarius) or penny of about 24 grains was at first practically the sole coin. The solidus in gold was struck but very rarely, perhaps as a kind of proof of the right of coining. The Byzantine solidus or bezant was used and probably the equivalent Arab gold. The Arab silver piece, the dirhem, was almost exactly the double of the denier, and seems to have been widely current in the north. The new coinage spread from France, where it was first royal and then royal and feudal, to Germany, Italy, where the Byzantine types did not wholly disappear, England, Scandinavia, Castile, and Aragon. In Germany and France feudal money was soon issued, and in Italy towns and ecclesiastical foundations largely acquired the right of coinage from the empire, which was elsewhere rare. The consequence of the extended right of coinage was a deprecia- tion in weight, and in the middle of the 12th century the one-sided pennies called bracteates appeared in Germany, which were so thin that they could only be stamped on one side. The types of this whole second coinage are new, except when the bust of the emperor is engraved. The most usual are the cross; and the church asa temple also appears, ultimately taking the form of a Gothic build- ing. There are also sacred figures, and more rarely heads in the later age.

3. The true herald of the Renaissance was the emperor Frederick II. Of early In restoring the gold coinage, however, he followed in the steps of Renais- the Norman dukes of Apulia. With a large Arab population, these sance ;

FRANCE. |

princes had found it convenient to continue the Oriental gold money of the country, part of the great currency at that time of all the western Moslems, and Roger II. also struck Latin coins of his own as DVX APVLIAE, the first ducats. Frederick II., continuing the Arab coinage, also struck his own Roman gold money, solidi and half solidi, with his bust as emperor of the Romans, Cwesar Augustus, and on the reverse the imperial eagle. But the calami- ties which overwhelmed the Swabian house and threw back the Renaissance deprived this effort of any weight, and it was left to tke great republics to carry out the idea of a worthy coinage,—a necessity of their large commercial schemes. The famous gold florin was first issued in 1252. The obverse type is the standing figure of St John the Baptist, the reverse bears the lily of Florence. The weight was about 54 grains, but the breadth of the coin and the beauty of the work gave it dignity. The commercial greatness of Florence and the purity of the florin caused the issue of similar coins in almost all parts of Europe. Venice was not long in striking (in 1280) a gold coin of the same weight as the florin, but with the types of a standing figure of Christ, and the doge receiving the gonfalon at the hands of St Mark. It was first called the ducat, the name it always bears in its inscription ; later it is known as the zecchino or sequin. Though not so largely imitated as the florin, the extreme purity of the sequin was unquestioncd toa time within the memory of living persons. Genoa likewise had a great gold currency, and the other Italian states struck in this metal. It is significant of the power of the Italian republics that the later Mameluke sultans of Egypt found it convenicnt or necessary for their position between Europe and India to adopt the weight of the florin and sequin for their gold money. Many varieties of gold money appear in course of time in France, England, and toa less extent in other countries. The nced for a heavier silver coinage caused the issue of the large denier (grossus denarius), afterwards called the gros and groat. This coin appears in the 14th century, and at the same time the large German bracteates are issued. The types are now very various and distinctly worthy of the art of the time, which as yet is purely decorative and conventional, so that portraits are not possible. The religions intention also is gradu- ally giving way to the desire to produce a beautiful result, and the symbol of the cross is varied to suit the decorative needs of the coin. Heraldic subjects also appear, and in the shield, which is frequently a reverse type, we see the origin of the usual modern

a finer style but one especially adapted to coins or medals. The object which the artists strove to attain was to present a portrait or to commemorate an action in the best manner possible, without losing sight of the fitness of the designs to the form and use of the piece on which they were to be placed. For the successful attain- ment of this purpose the style of the later pre-Raphaelites was eminently suited. Its general love of truth, symmetrical group- ing, hard drapery, and severely faithful portraiture were qualities especially fitted to produce a fine portrait and a good medal. It is to be noted that their idea of portraiture did not depend on such a feeling for beauty as influenced the Greeks. Rather did it set upon it the moral attainments and capabilities of the subject. The German art, a product of engravers in metal, is really goldsmith's work, except in Albert Diirer's case. Thus it is not so suitable to numismatic designs. The portraits of the German coins and medals are sometimes even more characteristic than those of the Italian, and the groups often show great vigour ; but both are less appropriate. They display also too great a profusion of detail, by which the effect of the boldness of the outlines is frequently lost ; yet they have much originality and vigour, and will reward an attentive study. Both these schools, but especially the Italian,; afford the best foundation for a truly excellent modern medallic art. The finest coins and medals of Italy and Germany have an object similar to that which it is sought to fulfil in the English, and their nearness in time makes many details entirely appropriate. Thus, without blindly imitating them, modern artists may derive from them the greatest aid.

There are some delicately beautiful Italian medals of the 16th century, too closely imitated from the Roman style.

It is not intended here to enter in any detail into the various divisions of the subject already treated in its main outlines. The questions that would require consideration are of too complicated and technical a nature to be illustrated within reasonable limits : the principal matters of inquiry may, however, be indicated.

~~The money of the Iberian Peninsula begins with the Visigothic Portu-~~
~~series, which consists of gold pieces. The money of Portugal is gal. regal,~~
~~and not of great interest except as affording indications of the wealth and~~
~~commercial activity of the state in the early part of the 18th century. The~~
~~coinage of Spain is almost without excep- Spain.~~

~~reverse of the most important coins.~~

~~4, 5. With the classical Renaissance we find ourselves in the eal Re-~~
~~presence of modern ideas. The elaborate systems of coinage of the naiss-~~
~~various states of Europe are soon to begin, and the prevalence of a ane, and~~
~~general currency to become for the time impossible. Silver money~~

~~Of classi-~~

~~Modern. now gains new importance with the issue of the thaler or dollar in~~

~~Germany, in 1515. This great coin speedily became the chief Euro- pean~~
~~piece in its metal, but as it was coined of various weights and varying purity~~
~~it failed to acquire the general charaeter of the denier. 'The style of this age~~
~~is at first excellent. The medals gayc the tone to the coinage. Art had wholly~~
~~thrown off the rules of the age before and attained the faculty of portraiture~~
~~and the power of sunply representing objects of nature and art. Great~~
~~masters now executed medals and even coins, but speedily this work~~
~~became a mere inatter of commerce, and by the beginning of the modern~~
~~period it was fast falling into the poverty and barbarism in which it has ever~~
~~since remained. The details of the numismatics of these two periods belong~~
~~to the notices of the money of the several countries.~~

~~Moneyof A word must be added on money of account. While the denier~~
~~aeeount. was the chief and practically the sole coin, the solidus passed from~~

~~Art.~~

~~use as a foreign piece into a money of account. The solidus was the German~~
~~schilling (shilling), which contained usually 12 deniers. As there were 20~~
~~shillings to the pound of silver, we obtain the reekoning by £s. d., libri,~~

~~solidi, and denarii. The pound as a weight contained 12 ounces, and its two-thirds was the German mark of 8 ounces.~~

~~It would be interesting, did space permit, to notice fully the art of this entire class, to examine its growth, and to trace its decline, but, as with that of Greek and Roman coins, we must mainly limit ourselves to the best period. This is a spaec of about a hundred and fifty years, the age of the classical Renaissance, from the middle of the 15th century to the close of the 16th. The finest works are limited to the first half century of this period, from a little before 1450 to about 1500, in Italy, and for as long a time, beginning and ending somewhat later, in Germany. 'The artists were then greater than afterwards, and medal-making had not degenerated into a trade; but with the larger production of the period following the work was more mechanical, and so fell into the hands of inferior men. The medals of this first period may not unworthily be placed by the side of its sculpture and its painting. Not only have some of its medallists taken honourable places in a list where there was no room for ignoble names, but to design medals was not thought an unworthy occupation for the most famous artists. There are, as we should expect, two principal schools, the Italian and the German. The former attained a higher excellence, as possessing not merely.~~

~~tion regal, but a more curious class than that of Portugal. The coins of the early contemporary kingdoms, such as those of Aragon, and of Castile and Leon, are especially worthy of examination. We may mention as of a very peculiar character a large gold piece in the coinage of the latter state, called the Dobla de la Vanda, from its bearing the shield of the famous order of knighthood of the Vanda or Band. Of this there are examples assigned to John I. (1379-90) and John II. (1406-54). The money of the sole monarchy is less worthy of notice. The city of Barcelona is represented by coins bearing the names of various kings. The medals of Spain are not important.~~

~~The coinage of France forms a large series. It begins with the France.~~

~~money of the Merovingian dynasty. 'This consists almost wholly of gold pieccs, imitated from those of the late Roman and Byzan- tine rulers, as already mentioned, the commonest denomination being the tremissis, or third part of the son d'or (solidus). The coins are rare, and bear cither the names of a king and a city or of a moneyer,and acity. They are barbarous in~~

their art. Under the princes of the Carlovingian dynasty the principal coins are deniers, and after a time oboles also, gold money being extremely rare. They bear the name of the king and that of the city where they were struck, and have a more original character than the carlier pieces, although they are still barbarous. The moncy of the Capetian house begins with coins like those of the line preceding it. By degrees the coinage improves. In the 13th century gold pieces were issued. There are several denominations of these and of silver coins, but to some different names are applied for various types with the same weight, as the denier Parists of Paris, and the denier Tournots of Tours, both of base metal. At the time of Philip VI. the coins are fine. The modern coinage may be con- sidered to begin under Henry II., whose portrait is of good work. During this period there is no very remarkable feature in the current money, except the occurrence in the 17th century of the pieces of the sort termed pied fort, which we must regard as a kind of pattern. The scignorial coins of France during the Middle Ages are important. The medals are far more interesting than the modern coins. Their interest begins in the age of the last Valois kings and Henri IV.; there is a long and historically important series of Lonis XIV., and another of a new artistic character under the first republic and the reign of Napoleon I. Almost every great event, from the beginning of the power of that cmperor until his

England,

fall, is commemorated in this last series, unequalled in its class for | include works by Warin, the Simons, and the Roettiers, besides the

completeness. The designs, notwithstanding their false classical style and that manncrism which appears to be essential to modern French art, are executed with great care and skill.

The English coinage begins with two uncertain classes, which, wherever struck, certainly formed the currency of the country during the interval from the departure of the Romans, about 450 A.D., until the issue of money with royal names by the Saxon kings, towards the end of the 8th century. One of these classes con- sists of imitations of the latest Roman copper money, and

the other of the small silver pieces to which the name of sccattas is applied, having rude types which are sometimes of Roman origin, but some- times original, and occasionally with Runic inscriptions. The former were first issued and then the latter. The regular coinage begins no doubt under the so-called Heptarchy. There is moncy of the king- doms of Mercia, Kent, the East Angles, and Northumbria. The chief coins are silver pennies, but sceattas also occur; and of Northumbria there are stycas, which are pieces of a base metal in the composition of which copper is the largest ingredient. The most interesting coins of this group are those of Offa, king of Mercia ; these are silver pennies, remarkable for their quaint designs and their relatively careful execution. Of this period, but extending into the earlier part of that of the sole monarchs, there are coins issued by the archbishops of Canterbury and York. The money of the sole monarchs, whether Saxons or Danes, is strictly a continuation of that of the Heptarchy ; it consists almost wholly of silver pennies, which latterly were cut into halves and quarters to form halfpennies and farthings. Under the Normans and earlier Plantagenets the same coinage continues ; but under Edward III. there is regular gold money, of which the chief piece is the noble of six shillings and eightpence ; and the silver groat now appears. The obvcrse type of the noble, representing the king in a ship, probably com- memoratcs Edward's victory over the French fleet off Sluys in 1340. At this time there is a visible improvement in the art of the coin- age, which moves with the succession of styles until the close of the Tudor age. Of Henry VIII. we have gold and silver coins of most existing denominations, as well as of earlier ones long since abandoned. The finest piece is the sovereign, a large flat coin of gold, bearing on its obverse the figure of the king (whence its name) on his throne. The reign of Queen Elizabeth marks the transition from the Gothic to the modern style and the introduction of the new mnethod of coining with the use of the mill. The coinage of Charles I. presents great varieties owing to the civil war. The scarcity of gold in the royal treasury during the troubles induced the king to coin twenty- and ten-shilling pieces of silver, in addition to the crowns and sinallcr denominations. One of the most remark- able of his pieces is a crown struck at Oxford. It bears on the obverse the king on horseback, with a representation of the town beneath the horse, and on the reverse the heads of the " Oxford Declaration." Of equal interest are the siege-pieces of many castles famous in the annals of those days. The coinage of the Common- wealth is of a plainncss proper to the principles of

those who sanc- tioned it. The great Protector, however, caused money to be designed of his own bearing his head. It is not certain that this was ever sent forth, and it is therefore put in the class of patterns. Simon, the chief of English medallists, designed the coins which are unequalled in the whole series for the vigour of the portrait (a worthy presentment of the head of Cromwell) and the beauty and fitness of every portion of the work. Henceforward there is a decline in the coinage, although skill is perceived in the portrait of William III., whose grand features could scarcely have failed to stimulate an artist to more than a common effort. Queen Anne's money is also worthy of note, on account of the attempt, on Dean Swift's suggestion, to commemorate current history on the copper coinage, which led to the issue of the famous farthings. These have been the cause of an extraordinary delusion, to the effect that a very small number (some say three) of these pieces were struck, and that their value is a thousand pounds each, instead of usually some shillings. In consequence many imitations have been forged, and such are constantly brought to collectors by unfortunate labourers and the like, who imagine that they possess the greatest numis- matic treasure in the world. After this there is little to remark, except the baseness of the art of the coins under the first three Georges, until the genius of Pistrucci gave a worthier form to the currency. Besides the regal coinage there is scarcely any baronial money, the class being represented by a few pieces, generally struck by personages of the royal house, and all belonging to the period of the close of the Norman line and the beginning of the Plantagenet.

The English medals are far more interesting for their bearing on events than as works of art. The best are almost all by foreigners, but the fine pieces of the Simons form notable exceptions. The medals of the Tudors are good in style, and show some excellent portraits, in particular those by Trezzo and Stephen of Holland. There is one of Mary Queen of Scots by Primavera, representing her in middle life, which is perhaps her most characteristic portrait. Elizabeth's are of historical importance, and the same is the case with the richer series of the Stuart period, often of fine style. These

excellent coin engravers Briot and Rawlins. The most curious pieces are those popular issues relating to current events, such as the so-called " Popish plot." From this time there are no works deserving notice except

military and naval medals, the historical interest of which makes some amends for their poverty of design and execution. The English tokens form a curious class. They are of two periods: the earlier, which are generally of copper, were issued at the middle of the 17th century and somewhat later; the later, which are mainly of copper, were struck during the scarcity of the royal coinage in this metal at the end of the last century, and during the earlier years of the present century. Both were chiefly coined by tradesmen, and bear their names. The colonial money of England was until lately unimportant, but now it is not unworthy of the wealth and activity of the dependencies. The money struck by the English kings for their French dominions forms a peculiar class, mainly French in its character, termed the Anglo- Gallic. This may be used to fill some gaps in the regal series of England ; for instance, it supplies us with money of Richard I., of whom no English coins bearing his name are known.

The coinage of Scotland is allied to that of England, although Scot-

generally ruder ; but it seems to have been more influenced in the land. early period from England, and towards its close from France. The oldest pieces are silver pennies or sterlings, resembling the contemporary English money, of the beginning of the 12th century. In the 15th and 16th centuries there is an important coinage, both in gold and silver, not the least interesting pieces being those of Queen Mary, many of which bear her portrait. The indifferent execution of the coins of this period is traceable to the disturbed state of the kingdom.

The money of Ireland is more scanty and of less importance than Ireland. that of Scotland. The pieces most worthy of notice are the silver pennies of the early Danish kings. Of later times there is little that is interesting, except the forced currency of James IJ. during his attempt to maintain himself in the island.

Belgium occupies the next place in our arrangement. Its coin- Belgium

age comprises many pieces struck by foreign rulers, and has little and of an independent character in either the regal or the seignorial class. Holland. It closely resembles the money of France and Germany. The series of Holland is similar in character until the period of the revolt of the provinces. The

medals are highly interesting, more especially those which were struck by the Protestants in commemoration of current events. Most of these are of silver, but a few are in gold. There is also a remarkable series of bronze medallets or jettons, which form a continuous commentary on history during the 16th and early part of the 17th centuries. Both are interesting, as largely illustrating not only local events but also those of the chief Euro- pean states. Such are the i recording the raising of the siege of Leyden, likened to the destruction of Sennacherib's army, the assassination of William the Silent, and the discomfiture of the Armada, affording striking indications of the zeal, the piety, and the confidence in the right which built up the great political struc- ture of the Dutch republic. After this time the medals lose much of their interest.

The money of Switzerland illustrates the varying fortunes of Switzer- this central state, and the gradual growth of the stronghold of land. European freedom. First we have the gold money of the Frankish kings, among whose mints Basel, Lausanne, St Maurice, Sitten (Sion), and Zurich already appear. The silver deniers, which Charle- magne made the coinage of the empire, are issued by fewer mints ; the dukes of Swabia struck coins in Switzerland, and the empire granted during the 10th and to the 13th century the right of coinage to various ecclesiastical foundations, bishoprics, and abbeys. Bern and Zofingen were allowed mints by the emperor Frederick II., and the civic coinage of Switzerland then began in the period of the bracteates. Other towns gained the same right, as well as the counts of Kyburg, Hapsburg, &c. The 14th century witnessed the | rise of the Swiss confederation, and by degrees the cantons struck their own money. These, together with the coins of some few sees and abbacies, form the bulk of Swiss money of the medizval and modern periods. The separate cantonal coinage, interrupted by the French occupation, was finally suppressed in 1848, when a uni- form currency was adopted by the whole republic. The monetary systems of the cantonal and ecclesiastical mints were extremely com- plicated. This was partly due to the variety of coins, partly to the debasement practised by the ecclesiastical mints. Geneva had a peculiar systein of her own.

The most interesting coinages are thosc of Basel (the see, can- ton, and city), Bern, a large series, the see of Chur, the abbey of St Gallen, the great

~~issue of Geneva (the bishopric, the city, and the canton), the see of Lausanne, Lucerne, the Forest Cantons, the bishopric of Sitten, and the long currency of Zurich. Some of the earlier large coins of the Middle Ages, particularly thalers, are interesting for their bold work and their sacred and heraldic sub- jects. Throughout the Swiss series we are awakened to a higher than archeological sentiment by the traditions and records of two great periods, the age when the Irish missionaries planted the~~

~~Modern~~

~~ITALY. |~~

~~faith in the wild valleys of the Alps, and the days when the cantons fought for freedom and smote their powerful oppressors on every side. The medals of Switzerland are mostly of modern times, and lack beauty and historical value.~~

~~Italy, with Sicily, has peculiarfeatures. Here the barbaric coinages~~

~~Italy and were mixed with the Byzantine issues which marked the recovery~~

~~Sicily.~~

~~of the Eastern empire, and left a lasting influence in the north at Venice, and in the south at Beneventum. Later the Arab conquest left its mark in the curious Oriental coinages of the Normans of Sicily and the emperor. Frederick II., mixed after his fashion with Latin coinage. The earliest money is that of the barbarians, Ostro- goths and Lombards, and local Byzantine issues in Sicily. This 1s followed by the deniers of Charlemagne and his successors, sup- planted by the gold currencies of the Normans and Frederick II. The age of the free cities is marked by the great coinages of Florence, Venice, and Genoa, while the Angevin and Aragonese princes coined in the south, and the popes began to issue a regular currency of their own at Rome. The Italian princes of the next period coined in Savoy, and at Florence, Modena, Mantua, and other cities, while Rome and the foreign rulers of the south continued their mintages, Venice and Genoa of the republics alone surviving. The Italian monetary systems have already been touched on in the introductory notice. For art the series is invaluable. First~~

~~in Italy the revival influenced the coins, and in them every step of advance found its record, The Italian medals are without rivals in the works of modern times.~~

~~Following the geographical order which is best suited to the Italian coinage, we first notice the money of Savoy, which is in- ferior in art to that of the rest of the country. It begins in early times, and merges in the class of the Sardinian kingdom, which becomes the kingdom of Italy. Genoa is the first of the great re- publics. She struck gold money from the time of the general origin of civic coinage in that metal; these arc ducats and their divisions, and after a time their multiples also. In the 17th cen- tury there are very large silver pieces. In the money of Mantua there first oceur really fine coins of Gianfrancesco III. (1484-1519) and Vincenzo IT. (1626-1627), these last splendid examples of the late Renaissance, in large pieces of gold and silver; the portrait is fine, and the hound on the reverse a powerful design. The vicissi- tudes of the story of Milan find their record in no less than nine groups of money—Carlovingian deniers, money of the republic, then imperial again, next of the Visconti family, succeeded by that of the Sforza line, next of Louis XIL of France, of the re- stored Sforza, of Charles V. by Spanish right and his successors of Spain, and lastly of Austria. There are extremely fine coins of the 15th century, showing great beauty in their portraits. The money of Florence is disappointing in its art. The Athens of the Middle Ages had the same reason as her prototype to preserve as faithfully as might be the types and aspect of her most famous coin, the gold florin, and thus those who expect to see in this series the story of Italian art will be much disappointed. The silver florin was first struck in 1181. It is heavier than the denier, weighing about 27 grains, and bears the lily of Florence and the bust of St John the Baptist. These are thenceforward the leading types, the flower never changing, but the representation of the saint being varied. On the gold florin the Baptist is represented standing, while in the contemporary silver florins he is seated. In the 14th century the arms of a moneyer appear in the field, two such offieers having had the right of striking yearly, each for six months. The coins of the duchy from 1532, in spite of their new types, are not a fine series ; the best are those of Alessandro, designed by Cellini.~~

Venice as a mint even surpasses Florence in conservatism, and, the early style being distinctly Byzantine, this is the more striking in a great artistic city. We find Venice as an imperial mint issuing Carlovingian deniers, but the doges begin to coin, placing their own names on their currency, in the 12th century. The most famous silver coin, the matapane, was first struck in the brilliant time of Enrico Dandolo (1192-1205). This coin is a grossus weighing about 33 grains, with on the obverse St Mark giving the standard or gonfalon to the doge, both figures standing, and on the reverse the seated figure of the Saviour. The famous Venetian zecchino or sequin, the rival of the florin of Florence, appears to have been first issued under Giovanni Dandolo (1280-1289). On the obverse St Mark gives the gonfalon to the kneeling doge, and on the reverse is a standing figure of the Saviour within an oval nimbus. The matapane slightly changes after the second third of the 14th century, and at its close becomes a new coin, the grossetto. Niccolo Trono (1471-1473) introduces his portrait on most of his coins, but this custom is not continued. By the latest part of the 15th century large silver coins appear. The archaic style changes in the begin- ning of the 16th century, but there is no later movement. The large silver pieces increase in size, and large gold is also struck ; the last doge, Ludovico Manin (1788-1797), issued the 100-sequin piece in gold, a monstrous coin, worth over £40. The doges of Venice issued a peculiar silver token or medallet, the osella, five of which they annually presented to every member of the Great Council. Antonio Grimani instituted this custom in 1521, and it

remiss w ATIC sS

—

657

lasted to the end of the republic. Two dogaressas struck similar medallets. Their types are usually allegorical ; some are comme- morative. Asa class they resemble the Dutch copper jettons, but are less historieal and hence less interesting.

The series of the coins of Rome is rather of historical than of artistie merit. The popes begin to strike money with Adrian I, (772-794 A.D.), whose deniers are ina Byzantino-Lombard style that charac- terizes the coinage of

Beneventum. Before the papal coinage closes the senate asserts the right toa mint. We then see on the silver the styleof thesenate and Roman people, and ROMA CAPUT MUNDI. Some coins have the figures of St Paul and St Peter, others Rome seated anda lion. Charles of Anjou, king of Sicily, strikes as a senator. The gold ducat of abont 1300 imitates the types of the Venetian sequin, St Peter here gives the gonfalon to a kneeling senator. The arms of the imoneying senator next appear in the field. There are small copper pieces of the famous tribune Rienzi. The papal coinage is resumed at Avignon; and Urban V., on his return to Rome, takes the sole right of the mint. The subsequent coins, though they have an interest from their bearing on the history of art, are disappointing in style. There is indeed a silver coin of Julius II. struck at Bologna and attributed to Francia, with a very fine portrait. We have beautiful gold coins of Giovanni Benti- voglio, lord of Bologna, who employed Francia at his mint, and we know that the artist remained at his post after Julius II. had taken the city, There are also pieces of Clement VIL. by Cellini, vigorous in design but careless in execution. The papal portraits are highly characteristic and interesting. It is, however, in the fine series of papal medals that we find a worthier artistic record.

The coinage of Sicily, afterwards that of the Two Sicilies, or Naples and Sicily, begins with the Normans, Theirs is a curiously mixed series. The gold money is almost wholly Arabic, though Roger II. struck the Latin ducat, the earliest of its class ; the silver is Arabic, except the great Latin scyphati of Roger II. with Roger ITI. ; the copper is both Latin and Arabic. The gold series of the emperor Frederick IJ. shows the first sentiment of reviving classi- cal art, its work being far in advance of the age. These are Latin coins ; he also struck small Arabic pieces in gold. Under Conrad, Conradin, and Manfred there is an insignificant coinage, copper only, but with Charles of Anjou (1266-1285) the gold money in purely medizval style is very beautiful, quite equal to that of his brother St Louis of France. After this time there is a great issue of gigliati, silver coins with for reverse a cross fleurdelisée cantoned with fleurs-de-lis, These coins acquired a great reputation in the Levant, and were even struck by the emirs of Asia Minor. With Alphonso, the founder of the Aragonese line, we note the old style of the coins, which are in singular contrast to his fine medals. Good portraiture begins on the money of Ferdinand I., his successor. The later coinage is interesting only for its illustration of the vary- ing fortunes of the Two

Sicilies. There is a curious early gold coinage of the Lombard dukes of Beneventum, which follows the Byzantine type.

Italian medals are next in merit to the works of the Greek die- Italian engravers. Their true beginning and highest excellence are under medals. Vittore Pisano, the Veronese painter, who worked from 1439 to 1449. They are of two classes, the finer and more original, struck in the 15th century, and the more classical of the 16th, after which the style declines rapidly. In spite of classical influence, the earlier medals are independent works, marked by simple vigorous truth- fulness. The designs are skilful and the portraits strongly charac- teristic, but deficient in beanty. As the art became popular the execution of medals passed into the hands of inferior artists, and by degrees striking became usual for the smaller pieces ; at the same time, a slavish imitation of thc classical style weakened or destroyed originality and stamped the works with the feebleness of coples. Yet the delicacy of design and technical skill of these later medals often give them an undeniable charm. The great medallists of the first age are Pisano, Matteo de' Pasti, Enzola, Boldu, Sperandio, Gentile Bellini, Bertoldo, Gambello, Filippino Lippi, and Francesco Francia, who in style belongs to the next age, in which must be mentioned Pomedello, Benvenuto Cellini, Leone Leoni, Giovanni Cavino ''the Paduan," Pastorino of Siena, Giacomo da Trezzo, and Pietro Paolo Galeotto, called Romano. Among the most important works are all the medals of Pisano, particularly those of Alphonso the Magnanimous, with the reverses of the boar-hunt and the eagle and lesser birds of prey, those of Sigismondo di Malatesta, his brother surnamed Novello, Lionelle d'Este, John VIII. (Paleeologus), Nicolo Piccinino, Inigo d'Avalos (marquis of Pescara), Gianfrancesco di Gonzaga (marquis of Mantua), Ludovieo III. of the same family, the great humanist Vittorino da Feltre, and of the artist himself, a portrait eminently witnessing his fidelity to nature. He is great in portraiture, great in composition and design, and marvellously skilful in depicting animals. Pisano alone represents the moral qualities of his subjeet in their highest expression and even capa- bility. That he has high ideal power is seen at once if we compare with his portrait Pasti's inferior though powerful head of Sigis- mondo di Malatesta. Pasti's medal of Isotta, wife of Sigismondo, is also noteworthy ; likewise Gentile Bellini's head of Mehemet

XVII. — 83

Germany.

German medals,

Norway,

Denmark .

and Sweden.

658 NUMISMATICS [GERMANY.

II., the conqueror of Constantinople, —interesting works, lacking Pisano's technical skill. In the later age Cavino executed a wonderful series of imitations of Roman sestertii, which have been frequently mistaken for originals. In art these Italian works fre- quently surpass the originals in spite of a degree of weakness in- separable from copies. A comparison of the Italian with the Roman pieces is thus most instructive. The works of Pastorino of Siena are especially charming. Historically the Italian medals supply the defects of the coinages of Florence and Rome, and in a less degree of Venice. The papal series is invaluable as a continuous chronicle of art. : ,

The money of Germany is like that of Italy far too various for it to be possible here to do more than sketch some of its main features. he metrological systems are Merovingian, Carlovingian, that of the bracteates, and those of the later medieval and modern issues in a complicated form. There are several classes, the coinages of the emperors, the electors, the smaller lords, the religious houses, and the free towns. The art is behind that of Italy in time, and on the whole far inferior to it in merit. Some of the later medieval examples are of good style, and the Renaissance is ushered in by some beautiful pieces. Yet other coins of this very time are surprisingly barbarous, and there is an immediate decline in the better works. The imperial money, even when limited to what is strictly German by the exclusion of the issues of the French and Italian mints, forms a large series. It begins with the deniers of Charlemagne ; and, except the solidus of Louis

I., for a long time there is no gold. The true bracteates begin under Frederick I. ; the money of Frederick II. is chiefly of Sicily and Italy, and his gold Sicilian coins do not belong to the German series. Under the house of Austria there are fine dollars of Maximilian I., and a splendid double dollar on which the emperor appearsasa horseman. It is after this time that art declines. Passing in review the currencies of the chief states, we are arrested by the historical dollars of Louis I., king of Bavaria, which have the merit of an excellent purpose. The series of Brandenburg, ultimately merging in that of Prussia, is not note- worthy but for some fine early medals. Brunswick shows the ex- ceptional great mining-thalers, generally spread coins, multiples of the dollar 14, 2, 8, 4, 5,8, and 10. Cologne has a representative series. Striking under the Merovingian kings and the Carlovingian emperors, it continued an imperial mint until the reign of Otho IV. (1198-1218). The archbishops began to coin under Bruno (953-965), aud only ceased in 1801. The city had also the right of coinage after the emperors ceased to exereise it, but her money is unim- portant. The wealthy mart of Hamburg is chiefly remarkable for the great gold pieces of the 16th and 17th centuries, of the weight of 24, 5, and 10 ducats, with the types of the city and the fleet and allegorical subjects. The city of Magdeburg shows a varicty of bracteates. Mainz has the same features as Cologne, Merovingian and Carlovingian money, the imperial mint going on to the reign of Sigismund, who granted the city the right of coinage in 1420, so that a few civic coins were issued before the privilege was sur- rendered to the archbishops in 1462. The archbishops have a series of coins from 1021 to 1818. These comprise remarkable large bracteates of the 12th century, with curious ecclesiastical types, combining figures of saints and prelates with architectural detail. Of Nuremberg there is a long gold series, but the artistic fame of the city is not supported by her coinage. The electors palatine have a series in which we note the florin of Rupert IV. (1356-1390), followed by ducats. .The money of the archbishops of Salzburg comprises some early pieces, but ranges mostly from the end of the 15th century, and is strong in gold. The Saxon lines are well represented. They begin with large bracteates of the 12th or 13th century, but the most interesting coins are of the age of the Reformation, bad in style and execution, but bearing characteristic portraits. The grandmasters of the Teutonic Order struck money second in importance to that of the knights of St John issued at Rhodes and Malta. The archbishops of Treves coined

similar issues to those of their brethren of Cologne and Mainz to the year 1803.

The German medals stand in importance next to those of Italy. They have this distinctive peculiarity of origin, that their first artists, instead of being, as in Italy, painters or sculptors, were gold- smiths, the craftsmen of Nuremberg and Augsburg. Consequently minute work and love of chasing make them technically inferior as medals to the Italian works, though these qualities are balanced by great vigour and truthfulness. Later in origin than the rival school, the German dates from the early part of the 16th century. Albert Diirer is the greatest medallist, and his medals are wholly superior to those of a mere worker in metal. Heinrich Reitz is next in merit. The portrait of Albert Diirer's father by the artist, and a female bust in very low relief, are of high excellence. For historical interest the heads of Luther, Erasmus, Charles V., Maxi- milian and Mary of Burgundy are very noteworthy. The subject of German medals has not yet been sufficiently studied.

The coins of the Scandinavian states, Norway, Denmark, and Sweden, are almost wholly regal, there being few ecclesiastical and civic pieces. The origin of the types is clearly English and due to the Danish conquest of England. The Norwegian series

begins with the pennies of Harold Hardrada, slain at Stamford Bridge ; there are next bracteates, and then coins of the Danish kings. The money of Denmark begins with pennies of Cnut (Canute), which are like his English mintage ; so also are those of Hardi- canute, but Magnus and Svend Estridsen have some very Byzantine obverse types, which is curious in connexion with the relations of the Norsemen to the Byzantine emperors. Later coins are of German types and barbarous work. A good medisval style begins with Erik of Pomerania. Later coins are not remarkable. Sweden has very few early coins, their denominations being the penny and the bracteate. There are good medieval coins of Albert of Mecklen- burg (1863-1387). The money of Gustavus Adolphus is historically interesting. Under Charles XII. there is highly curious money of necessity. The daler is struck as a small copper coin, sometimes plated. The types include the Roman divinities. At the same – time and later there was a large issue of enormous

~~plates of copper, stamped with their full value in silver money as a countermark.~~

~~The Russian coinage begins in the 15th century. It consists of Russia,~~

~~very curious little silver pieces struck under Byzantine influence. Poland, Gold is common in the reign of Peter the Great and of fair style, and though the silver is at first of the old barbarous type. Nicholas Hungary. introduced a platinum coinage of about two-fifths the value of gold. The series of Poland begins in the 11th century with bracteates. There is a regular coinage from Uladislaus Jagello (1382-1434). The town of Dantzic, while part of the kingdom, is remarkable for the issue of large gold pieces with the kings' portraits and civic reverses, the most important being of the 16th and 17th centuries. Hungary has its own coinage from Stephen I. (1000-1038). Under Charles Robert of Anjou (1308-1342) the florin is introduced, and appears also with the type varied asa ducat. The money of the illustrious John Hunyady as regent is of high interest. The abund- ance of gold about this time and onwards shows the metallic wealth of the land. The Hungarian nioney of the house of Austria presents no noteworthy features. The coinage of the Transylvanian princes of the 16th and 17th centuries is chiefly of ducats, witnessing, like the Hungarian, to the wealth of the soil. There are early coins of the patriarchate of Aquileia and of the kingdom of Servia, now revived after four centuries and a half of subjugation, whence the only interest of the modern money as well as of that of Roumania and Greece.~~

~~There is a most interesting class of coins struck during the Crusa- Middle Ages within the limits of the present Turkish empire, ders. the money of the Crusaders and other Latin princes of the East.~~

~~The multitude of states thus designated have been classed by Schlumberger, the authority on the subject, in the following order,~~

~~the chief divisions of which are here given :—first group, princi- palities of Syria and Palestine, counts of Edessa, princes of Antioch,~~

~~kings of Jerusalem, counts of Tripoli, fiefs of Jerusalem, crusaders~~

who struck imitations of Arab coins, kings of Cyprus, lords of Rhodes, grandmasters of the order of St John at Rhodes, to which

may be added the later grandmasters at Malta; second group,

Latin emperors of Constantinople, Frankish princes and lords of Greece and the Archipelago whose power was due to the crusade

of 1204, such as the princes of Achaia, the dukes of Athens, Neapolitan kings who struck money for their Eastern possessions,

Latin lords of the Archipelago, the Genoese at Chios, the Gattilusi

at Mytilene, the Genoese colonies, the Venetian colonies, the Turko-

man emirs of western Asia Minor who struck Latin coins. The / most important currencies are the copper of the counts of Edessa,

the billon and copper of the princes of Antioch and the kings of Jerusalem, the silver and copper of the counts of Tripoli, and the

gold imitations of Arab dinars, the currency in that metal of the

crusaders of Palestine. These Bisantit Sarracenati, or Saracen |

bezants, are at first imitations of Fatimite dinars, known to have

been struck by Venetian moneyers at Acre, and probably at Tyre

and Tripoli also. After these coins had been current for nearly a century and a half they were forbidden on account of their Moham- medan aspect by Pope Innocent IV. The Venetians then issued

gold and silver coins with the same aspect but with Christian in- scriptions. The kings of Cyprus issued a really good coinage in

the three metals and in billon. The last money of the kingdom is

the fixed currency of the gallant Bragadin during the war which

lost the island to the republic. The coinage of the order of St John : begins on the conquest of the island of Rhodes and the suppression

of the Templars; the earliest coins known are of Foulques de Villaret, the first grandmaster at Rhodes in the earliest years of the

14th century, and the last of the Rhodian series are of Villiers de l'Isle-Adam, the gallant defender of the island who was forced to capitulate to the Turks and sail for a new home in 1528. The coin-

age is of fine gold, silver, billon, and copper. On the establishment

of the order at Malta in 1530 it is resumed there till the capture of

the island by the French at the close of last century ; it has little interest except as showing the wealth of the order. The other currencies of the crusaders, notwithstanding their great historical interest, are far less remarkable numismatically. f

Of the money of America little need be said here. Neither the Americ®

coinages of the Spanish and Portuguese dependencies, and of the

Ancient Persia.

ANCIENT PERSIA. |

states which succeeded them, nor those of the English colonies and of the United States, present much that is worthy of note. In style they all resemble those of the parent countrics, but, originating in the decline of art, they are inferior in style and work. They are most remarkable in the south for the abundance of gold and silver. The chief coin is the dollar. Some coins are of historical interest, and there are a few rarities, such as the colonial money of Lord Baltimore struck for Maryland, the pine-tree coins of Massa- chusetts, and the hog-money of Bermuda.

IV.—ORIENTAL Corns.

~~Oriental coins may: be best classed as ancient Persian, Arab, modern Persian and Afghan, Indian, and Chinese, and other issues of the far Kast. The first place is held by the money of the old Persian empire, the Parthians, and the Sasanians. The conquests of the Arabs introduce a new currency, carried on by the Moslem inheritors of their empire. The modern Persian and Afghan money, though of Arab origin, is distinguished by thc use of the Persian language with Arabic. The Indian currencies, though Greek, Sanskrit, Arab, and Persian in their inscriptions, must be grouped together on account of their mutual dependence. They rise with the Bactrian kings, whose Greek types are gradually debascd by the Indo-Scythians and Guptas ; these are followed by a group of currencies with Sanskrit legends ; next follow the money of Arab conquerors and the great series of the Pathans of Delhi and sub- sidiary dynasties, with Arabic inscriptions; the main series is con- tinucd in the currency of the Moguls, who largely use Persian, and the last series is closed by local currencies mainly with Sanskrit or Arabic legends. The Chinese coinages form the source and centre of the group of the far East, which, however, includes certain ex- ceptional issues. The order throughout is historical, each empire or kingdom being followed by the smaller states into which it broke up, and then by the larger ones which were formed by the union of these fragments.~~

~~The Persian coinage was originated by Darius I. (Hystaspis) about the time that he organized the empire in satrapies (516 B.c.). The regular taxation thus introduced made a uniform coinage necessary. Avoiding the complex gold system of Crcesus, which was intended to accommodate the Greek cities in commercial relation with Lydia, Darius chose two weights, the gold stater of Croesus of 126 grains and the silver drachm of 84. He raised the weight of both, the gold to about 130 grains and the silver to 86. Thus one gold piece was equal to twenty silver. The gold coin was called the daric, the silver the siglus. The metal was very pure, especially that of the daric. Thus not only were the Lydian gold and silver coins of inferior weight thrown out of circulation, but the Persian gold, from its purity, became dominant, and was the chief gold currency of the ancient world so long as the empire lasted. he issuing of gold was a royal prerogative. Silver money was coined not only by the king but in the provinces by satraps, who used local types, and by tributary states. The following classes must be distinguished : (1) regal, (2) provincial with regal types, (8) satrapal, (4) of~~

tribu- tary states. The art of Persian coins varies according to the locality, from the beautiful work of the west coast of Asia Minor to the more formal style of Cilicia and the thoroughly hieratic stiffness of Pheenicia and Persia.

The regal coinage is of darics and double darics in gold and of sigli in silver. The obverse type is the king as an archer, the reverse an irregular oblong incuse. The darics show differences of style, and must extend through the whole period of the empire. The sigli no doubt run parallel with them. Both these denomina- tions are uninscribed. The double darics are of late style, and nearly all bear either Greek letters or monograms or symbols, some- times both. They are undoubtedly of the last age of the empire or subsequent to its fall.

The provincial coins with regal types appear to be mostly Pheenician ; the most important classes have been already noticed. But they also occur beyond this territory, as at Mallus in Cilicia, where the Persian regal archer is combined with the reverse of Heracles straugling the Nemean lion, with the inscription MAA.

The satrapal coinage is very important and interesting. It belongs mainly to Cilicia. The most remarkable series is that with a bearded head wearing a tiara, with various reverses, certainly struck at Colophon, Cyzicus, and Lampsacus, and in one instance bearing the name of the satrap Pharnabazus, but usually the word “king” inGreek, The coin of Colophon shows a splendid portrait, one of the finest instances of Ionian work. It has been held to represent Artaxerxes IJ. (Mnemon), but has been lately assigned to Pharnabazus on the ground that the head-dress is not the proper regal kidaris. This isan objection, yet it seems inconceivable that the king of Persia would have countenanced the issue of the portrait of a satrap at a time when no Greek dynast dared to place his head on his own coinage. Of other satrapal issues those of Datamcs, of Tiribazus, and Cilician issues, struck at Tarsus, are specially note- worthy. Their inscriptions are Aramaic.

The coinages of the tributary states have been in part noticed in

Oils Aer ecs

~~their geographical order ; it is difficult to separate them from the provincial issues with regal types.~~

~~The conquest of Alexander did not wholly destroy the independ- Par- Within less than a century the warlike Parthians, thians.~~

~~ence of Persia. once subjects of Persia, revolted (249-8 B.C.) against the Seleucids and formed a kingdom which speedily became an empire, ultimately the one successful rivalof Rome. Their money is Greek in standard and inscriptions, as well as in the origin of types. The coins are silver, following the Attic weight, the chief piece being the drachm, though the tetradrachm is not infrequent; there are also bronze coins, but none in gold are known. The drachm has the head of the king on the obverse, diademed or with a regal head-dress, and on the reverse the founder Arsaces seated, holding a strung bow, the later tetradrachms varying this uniformity. Every kind is styled Arsaces, to which many of the later sovereigns add their proper names. The inscriptions are usually long, reaching a climax in such as BASIAEQS BASIAEON APZAKOY METAAOY AIKAIOY ETHSANOYS OEOY EYITIATOPOS SIAEAAH- NOZ of the 11th Arsacid, Mithradates III., where we see the double influence of Persian and Seleucid styles and the desire to conciliate the Greek cities. Very noticeable are the coins which bear the portraits of Phraataces (14th king) and his mother, the Italian slave Musa, with the title queen (OEAXD OYPANIAS MOYEH> BAZIAIZ2H2).~~

~~The Persian line of the Sasanians arose about 220 a.p., and Sasan- wrested the empire from the Parthians in 226-7, under the leadership ians.~~

~~of Ardashir or Artaxerxes. This dynasty issued a national and thus Oriental coinage in gold and silver. "The denominations follow the Roman system, and there are but two coins, equivalent to the aureus or solidus and the denarius. The obverse has the king's bust, usually wearing a very large and elaborate head-dress, varied with each sovereign, and on the reverse the sacred fire-altar, ordi- narily flanked by the king and a priest. The attachment which Ardashir, the founder, bore to Zoroastrianism established this national reverse type, which endured through the four hundred years of the sovereignty of his line. The inscriptions are Pahlavi.~~

The Arab coinage forms the most important Oriental group. It Caliph- has a duration of twelve centuries and a half, and at its widest ates.

geographical extension was coined from Morocco to the borders of China. When the Arabs made their great conquests money be- came a necessity. They first adopted in the East imitations of the current Persian silver pieces of the last Sasanians, but in Syria and Palestine of the Byzantine copper, in Africa of the gold of the same currency. Of these early coins the Sasanian imitations are very curious with Pahlavi inscriptions and shorter ones in Arabic (Cufic). The regular coinage with purely Moslem inscriptions begins with the issue of a silver coin at Basrah, in 40 a.u., by the caliph 'Ali; after subsequent efforts thus to replace the Sasanian currency, the orthodox mintage was finally established, in 76 A.u., by 'Abd al-Melik. The names of the denominations and the weight of that of gold arc plainly indicative of Byzantine influence. There were three coins. The dinar of gold took its name from the aureus or denarius aureus, of which the solidus must have been held to be the representative, for the weight of the Arab coin, 66 grains and a fraction, is clearly derived from the Byzantine gold piece. The dirhem of silver is in name a revival of the Greek drachm ; it weighs at most 45 grains and a fraction. The copper piece is the fels, taking its name from the follis of the Greek empire. Commercially the gold easily exchanged, and the silver soon passed as the double of the Carlovingian denier. For long these were the only coins issued, except, and this but rarely, half and quarter dinars. There are properly no types. There was indeed an attempt in the early Byzantino-Arab money to represent the caliph, and in the course of ages we shall observe some deviations from the general practice of Islam, particularly in the coinage of the atabegs and in Mohammedan coinages not of the Arab group, the modern Persian and that of the Moguls of Delhi. The inscriptions are uniformly religious, save in some Tatar coinages and that of the Turks. In general the coins are for the first five centuries of their issue remark- ably uniform in fabric and general appearance. They are always flat. and generally thin. The whole of both sides of the coins is occu- pied by inscriptions in the formal Cufic character, usually arranged horizontally in the area with a single or double band around. Towards the fall of the caliphate a new type of coin begins, mainly differing in the greater size of the pieces. There are new multiples of the dinar and ultimately of the dirhem, and the silver pieces frequently have their inscriptions within and

around a square, a form also uscd for gold. The Cufic character becomes highly ornamental, and speedily gives way to the flexuous naskhi of modern writing. The inscriptions are religious, with the addition of the year by the era of the Flight, the month sometimes being added, and the mint occurs uniformly on silver and copper, but does not appear on the gold until after the fall of the Omayyad dynasty. Subsequently the official name of the caliph occurs. The religious part of the inscriptions is various, the most usual formulz being the profession of the Moslem faith: ‘‘There is no deity but God ; Mohammed is the apostle of God,” to which the Shi’ites or

Omay- yads,

‘Abba- sids.

followers of ‘Ali in Persia aud Africa add ‘‘‘Ali is the friend of God.” The Moorish coins give long formule and religious citations and ejaculations, and they, like the money of the Pathans of Delhi of the Indian class, have occasionally admonitions urging or suggest- ing the purer use of wealth. As Arab and other dynasties arose from the dismemberment of the caliphate, the names of kings occur, but for eenturies they continued to respect the authority of their religious chief by coining in his name, even in the case of the shadowy ‘Abbasids of Egypt, adding their own names even when at war with the caliph, as though they were mere provincial governors. After the fall of the caliphate nine new denominations came in, chiefly of heavier weight than the dirhem and dinar, but the influence of the commercial states of Italy made the later Egyptian Mamelukes, the Turks, and the later Moors adopt the gold sequin. In more modern times the dollar found its way into the Moslem coinage of the states bordering on the Mediterranean. It can be readily seen that Arab coins have no art in the same sense as those of the Greeks. The beautiful inscriptions and the arabesque devices of the pieces of the close of the Middle Ages have, however, a distinct artistic merit.

The Omayyad coins owe their only historical value to the evidence which the silver affords of the extent of the empire at different times. The first separation of that empire dates from the overthrow of this dynasty by the ‘Abbasids, speedily followed by the formation of the rival Omayyad

caliphate of the West with its capital at Cordova. The ‘Abbasid money has the same interest as that which it suc- ceeded, but its information is fuller. Towards tlic fall of the line it becomes very handsome in the great coins, which arc multiples of the dinar. The Spanish Omayyads struck silver almost exclu- sively. Their rise was followed by that of various lesser lines — the Edrisids (A) and Aghlabids (4 chiefly) in western Africa, the Beni Tulin (4), and, after a short interval, the Ikhshidids (47), both of Turkish origin, in Egypt. Meanwhile a new caliphate arose in western Africa which subducd Egypt, the Fatimite of the line of ‘Ali, and for a while the allegiancc of the Moslems was divided between three rival lines, the Omayyads of Spain, the Fatimites of Africa, and the ‘Abbasids of Baghdad. The Fatimites introduced a new type of dinar, with the inscriptions in concentric circles, and struck Tittle but gold. In the interim the Persians, who had long exercised a growing influence at the court of Baghdad, revived their power in a succession of dynasties which acknowledged the supremacy of the caliphate of Baghdad, but were virtually inde- pendent. These were the Tahirids, Saffarids, Samanids, Ziyarids, and Buweyhids, who mostly struck silver, but the last gold also. As the Persians had supplanted the Arabs, so they were in turn forced to give place to the Turks. The Ghaznawids formed a

owerful kingdom in Afghanistan (47, AX), aud the Seljuks estab- fished an empire (4), which divided into several kingdoms, occupy- ing the best part of the East. Of these dynastics the Seljuks of Rum or Asia Minor first strike a modern type of Arab coinage (M&). The Seljuk dominions separated into many small states, the central ruled by atabegs or generals, and the similar Turkoman Urtukees. The atabcg money and that of the Turks of the house of Urtuk are mainly large copper pieces bearing on one side a figure borrowed from Greek, Roman, Byzantine, and other sources. They form a most remarkable innovation. In the same age the great but short-lived empire of Kharezm arose in the far East. The first caliphate to disappear was that of Spain, which broke up into small dynasties, some claiming the prerogative of the caliphates. They chiefly struck base silver (billon) coins. The Christian kings gradually overthrew most of these lines. In the meantime various Berber families had gained power in western Africa and the Murabits (Almoravids) and Muwahhids (Almohadis) crossed the straits and restored the Moslem power in Spain. They struck gold money of fine

~~work, and that of the later Muwahhids is remarkable for its size aud thinness. At the fall of the Muwahhids the only powerful kingdom remaining was the Arab house of Granada, which, sup- ported by the Berbers of Africa, lingered on until the days of Fer- dinand and Isabella. The Fatimite dynasty was supplanted by the Kurdish line of the Eiyubis, the family of Saladin, who ruled Egypt, Syria, and Mesopotamia, with a number of vassal states, some governed by princes of their own family, some by the older lines of the atabeg class which they allowed to survive. In Egypt the Eiyubi coinage is of gold, elsewhere of silver and copper. 'The caliphate of Baghdad, which latterly was almost limited to that town, though its abundant heavy gold coinage at this very time indicates great wealth, was overthrown by the new power of the Mongols (1263 a.p.), who established a group of empires and kingdoms, comprising the whole Eastern world eastward of the Euphrates and thence extending northward and reaching into Europe. The most important of these states for their money are that of the Mongols of Persia, founded by Hulagu, the conqueror of Baghdad, and that of the khans of the Golden Horde. Both struck silver, but there is also gold coinage of the Mongols of Persia, who more frequently use the Mongol character for their names and titles than is done under the kindred line. The power of the Mongols was held in check by the Mameluke kings of Egypt,~~

~~slave-princes, who struck money in the three metals. The Mongol power waned, but was revived by Timur, who during his rule (1397) recovered all that had been lost. He and his successors struck silver, copper, and brass money. The Turks, whose power had been gradually growing, after a desperate struggle with Timur, gradually absorbed the whole Mohammedan world west of the Tigris, except only Morocco, where they had but a momentary dominion. Their money, of gold, silver, base metal, and bronze, is devoid of historical interest. In Tunis and Moroceo a group of Berber lines long maintained themsclves, but at length only one survived, that of the sherifs of Morocco, claiming Arab descent, now ruling as the sole independent Moslem dynasty of northern Africa. Its recent coinage is singularly barbarous. It may be remarked that Tunis and Egypt have long coined Turkish money in their own mints, the more western state latterly adding the name of its hereditary prince to that of the sultan.~~

~~The coins of the shahs of Persia have their origin with Isma'il Persia. (1502). They are struck in the three metals, and are remarkable for the elegance of their inscriptions, sometimes in flowing Arabic, sometimes in the still more flexuous native character. The in- scriptions are at first Arabic; after a time the religious formule are in this language and the royal legend in Persian, usually as a poetical distich. The Persian series is also remarkable for the autonomous issucs of its cities in copper, the obverse bearing some type, usually an animal. The coins of the Afghans form a class resembling in inscriptions those of the Persians, and equally using Persian distichs. They commence with Ahmad Shah Durani.~~

~~The Indian series begins with the money of the Greek kings of India. western India, commonly known as Bactrian,—a misnomer, only the earlier sovereigns having ruled Bactria. Between Alexander's money and the Greco-Indian series there is a curious class, the very rare gold and silver of Andragoras, dynast of Parthia, and the silver of an Indian prince, Sophytes. The Greco-Indian weight is at first Attic; coins are struck of gold, silver, bronze, and rarely nickel. The gold stater is limited to the earlier kings; the silver tetradrachm is struck at first with divisions; the Persic didrachm and drachm ultimately supersede it ; the bronze is either round or of the square form peculiar to India. The types are Greek and very various. 'The inscriptions are at first Greek, but at an early time a native Indian inscription appears as a concession ; it occupies the reverse of bronze, and in time of silver money, and gives a translation of the Greek inscription. The character used is of two Indian alphabets, the common one being styled Bactrian Pali. Diodotus, the first Graeco-Indian king, revolted against the Syrian ruler about 250 B.c. ; his money is Greek in its art. Under Euthydemus I., the next king, begins that peculiar style which gives these coins their special interest. It is realistic and vigorous, In portraiture reminding us of the best Italian medals. This is in part due to the leading away of the artists from Greek models to portray another race, for the heads are unmistakably Indian ; but it is also significant of an innate strength not to be traced in the portraits of the Ptolemies and the Seleucids. Here we plainly see the first impulse of Greece in the formation of Indian art, after it had been influenced by working in a new atmosphere. The portrait of Demetrius in an elephant's skin is very remarkable, and should be compared with the wholly ideal treatment of that of Alexander on the coins~~

of Alexander IV. struck in Egypt. After one reign later the order of kings becomes obscure, but the style gives the relative ages of groups, which must be the money of con- temporary lines. Agathocles is noticeable for having struck com- memorative coius of Alexander the Great, Diodotus, and Euthy- demus I. Another characteristic portrait is that of Antimachus in the petasus or Greek hat. Eucratides struck the only Greek gold medal known to us, the great piece weighing twenty staters, now in the French cabinet. The later Greek money is of less interest ; it cnds with Hermeus, perhaps about 508.c. Then follows a group of dynasts with barbarous names, who adhere more or less closely to Greek originals. A Parthian class breaks in in consequence of the conquests of Mithradates I. The Indo-Scythian class, which | is of much interest, is fixed approximately to periods by finds | in which aurei occur ranging from the earlicr Roman emperors to the Antonines. This coinage is of gold and bronze, silver being | almost unknown. The weights are Roman. The types are usually

the figure or the bust of the king, and on the reverse a divinity. The inscriptions are first Greek and the ordinary Indian of the Greco- Indian coins, then, strangely, Greek only, barbarous enough. Cad- phiscs strikes the double aureus and the aureus. Under Canerces and his successors we notice aurei with an uncommon variety of divini- ties of Indian, Persian, Greek, and Roman mythology, as well as Buddha. The Gupta series is contemporary with the Indo-Scythian. It was struck in Kanauj, in the centre of northern India. It isa remarkable gold coinage, good and debased, as well as bronze. The mythological types are Indian alone, interesting and in good native style, which now first appears on coins in a pure form. The inscriptions are in Sanskrit letters. There is a series of silver coins struck in Cacch (Cutch) by the Sah kings of Saurastran ; they are derived from the later money of the Greco-Indian class. The

China.

INDIA, CHINA. |

types are royal portraits and Buddhist emblems, &c., of no great interest.

Quite as early as the invasion of Alexander, if not earlier, is a most curious class of square silver and bronze coins, punch-marked with a variety of

~~devices, which circulated in northern India, and Poh originated the square bronze coinage of the Greco-Indian~~

~~ings.~~

~~The Arabs in the first days of conquest had subdued Sind, and founded an independent state on the banks of the Indus ; but it is hard to subdue India from this direction, and the strangers decayed and disappeared. The Pathan kings came of the Ghuri stock which rose on the ruins of the empire of Ghazneh. Mohammad ibn Sam made Delhi his capital, and here he and his successors, Pathans or slave-kings, ruled in great splendour, latterly rivalled by a line of Pathans of Bengal. Of the Pathans of Delhi we have an abundant coinage, the principal picces being the gold mohur of about 168 grains, and the silver rupee of about the same weight, besides many pieces of bronze, and at one period of base metal. The coins are large and thick, with the profession of Islam or the style of the caliph on one side, on the other the name and titles of the reigning king. Mohammad ibn Taghlak struck coins with a great variety of in- scriptions, some in the name of the shadowy 'Abbasid caliphs of Egypt, whose successors were for a time similarly honoured by later sovereigns. Towards the close of the rule of the Pathans several dynasties arose in central and southern India and struck similar money, the kings of Guzerat, of Malwa, and of the Deccan. The Pathan lines closed with Shér Shah, an Afghan, the last ruler of Bengal. Babar, the Turki, of the family of Timur, seeking a king- dom, adventured on the conquest of Hindustan; and after long wars with Shér Shah, carried on by Babar's son Humayun, the famous Shah Akbar, grandson of the invader, was at length peaceably settled on the throne of Delhi, and he and his successors, the so-called Moguls of Delhi, practically subducd the whole of India. They retained the existing standard, but used the Arabic and Persian languages like the shahs of Persia. Akbar (1556) issucd a splendid coinage in gold and silver, far more elegant than that of the Pathans, but the inoney of his son, Jahangir, is still more remarkable. He issucd the famous zodiacal mohurs and rupees, as well as those astonishing Bacchanalian mohurs on which he is represented holding the wine- cup. Scarcely less strange is the money of the beautiful queen Nur- Jahan. Under Shah Jahan there is a visible falling away in the merit of the coins, and an ordinary modern style is rcached in the reign of Aurungzeb. To the close of the rule~~

~~of Shah 'Alam, the last Mogul who actually reigned, gold and silver money is abundant. Latterly, native states coin with Arabic and also with Sanskrit inscriptions. The most important are the kings of Oude, the nizams of the Deccan, and the kings of Mysore, besides the maha- rajas of Indore and the kings of Nepal. The coinage of Tipu Sultan (Tippu Sahib) is extremely curious from his innovations in the calendar. Besides these there area multitude of small states. Most of the Indian princes acknowledged the emperor of Delhi, but some struck independently. At last the English coinage of India has swept away nearly all these moneys, though some native states still issue their own, while those under English protection occasionally acknowledge on their coins the supremacy of the queen as empress.~~

~~It is not yet possible to give a full summary of the strange coinages of China and the farther Kast, the published rescarches having been generally uncritical and unsupported by the examination of native literary sources. Thus only some general facts may be safcly stated.~~

~~The money of China, more certainly than the square punch- marked coinage of India, may claim an origin independent of the Lydian and Greek issues. The oldest specimens may be assigned to the 6th century before our era, a time at which the existing coins of other nations could scarcely have been known in the far East ; nor is there any connexion in form, type, or metal with the other currencies. Like nearly all subsequent Chinese money, the carliest is of bronze and cast. The shapes of the coins are most eccentric, representing knives, and, in De la Couperie's opinion, mining-tools. To these succeed the well-known round pieces with a square hole in the centre for the purpose of stringing them together, the coins to which the name "cash" is applied by Europeans. The value of these coins depended on the weight, which is inscribed upon them. We must, however, bear in mind that we have frequently to deal with a merely conventional weight and value due to financial schemes. Thus the inscription always records official value, but not always true weight or true value. There is no type whatever, but always an inscription on one or both sides. The occurrence of an occasional symbol cannot be held to bea deviation from this rule. The main inscription is usually placed opposite the four sides of the central square on the~~

~~obverse. As a rule this inscription at its fullest gives the emperor's official name during life, and the value~~

~~NUMMULITE. See Foraminirera, vol. ix. p. 380.~~

~~NUN. See Monacuism, vol. xvi. p. 698.~~

~~NUNCIO, or Nuntius Apostouicus. See LEGATE, vol. xiv. p. 412.~~

~~of the coin and an indication of its authoritative exactness. When a reverse inscription is introduced, it gives the value of the coin. The inscriptions are in Chinese characters of different kinds, and under the present dynasty Manchu has also been employed. Some coins bear indications of mints. The most interesting Chinese coins are those of small rival dynasties and of rebels, the study of which is important for the elucidation of the obscurities of the history of the country. The Chinese medals are talismans, usually larger than the coins, and bear both subjects and inscriptions. They are distributed by Taouist and Buddhist priests of temples. The money of Corea and Annam is similar to that of China, and Chinese coins were long the currency of Java, which more recently has issued the money of its Mohammedan princes.~~

~~The empire of Japan shows in its coinage that Chinese source Japail.~~

~~modified by the influence of native independence which marks all its institutions. Thus, while the copper currency closely resembles that of China, there is also a gold and silver coinage. The gold consists of plates of the form of a flattened oval with large inscrip- tions in indian ink painted on the surface, and small contermarks punched intoit. The "cobang," which is the largest coin, was chiefly used for presents by the Japanese princes. Its intrinsic value is~~

~~'about £25. 'There are several lesser denominations in gold, anda~~

series of silver pieces, the larger ingots, used as presents to in- feriors, and the smaller, which are sometimes of a long rectangular shape, more properly a silvercurrency. There are also temple medals of a magical character like those already noticed as cast in China.

BisiioGRaPuy. Periodicals: Numismatic Chronicle, London; Zeitschrift fiir Ela Berlin; Numismatische Zeitschrift, Vienna; Revue Numismatique,

'aris.

Greek. General :—Eckhel, Doctrina Numorwm Veterum; Sestini, Classes Gener- ales; De Dominicis, Repertorio Nwmismatico ; Rasche, Lexicon ; Leake, Nuwmis- nuta Hellenica; Lenormant, La Monnaie dans l Antiquité; Mionnet, Descrip- tion de Médailles eee Grecques et Romaines; Catalogue of Greek Coins in the British Museum, by R. 8. Poole, editor, B. V. Head, and Professor Percy Gardner [Italy, Sicily, Thrace, Macedon, Thessaly to Epirus, Locri to Eubeea, Seleucid kings, Ptolemies, in progress]; B. V, Head, Guide to Coins of Ancients ; P. Gardner, Types of Greek Coins; Kenner, Stift St Florian; Imhoof Blumer, Monnaies Grecques. Metrology : —Hultsch, Gr. u. Rém. Metrologie; Brandis, Miinz- Mass- und Gewichtswesen; B. V. Head, papers in Nwm. Chron. ; Michael Soutzo, ''Systémes Monétaires de l'Asie Mineure et de la Gréce," in Rev. Rou- maine d'Archéologie, &c., Bucharest, 1883. Spain :—Heiss, Description générale des Monnaies antiques de UV Espagne ; Delgado, '"Nuevo Método de Clasificacion de las Medallas autonomas de HEspafia," in Memorial Numismdtico; Zobel de Zangroniz, Estudio histérico de la Moneda antiqua Espaftola. Gaul :—Duchalais, Description des Médailles Gauloises; De la Saussaye, Numismatique de la Gaule Narbonnaise; Hucher, L'Art Gaulois; De Sauley, in Revue Numismatique. Britain :—J. Evans, British Coins. Italy :—Carelli, Numorum Ital. Vet, Tub. CCII., ed. Cavedonius, Leips., 1850; Sambon, La Presqw'tle italique ; Millingen, various papers. Greece:—Beulé, La Monnaie d' Athénes; Hon. L. Warren, Greek Federal Coinage; L. Miiller, Numismatique d'AlexandreleGrand. Asia Minor :— Waddington, Voyage en Asie Mineure; Id., Mélanges; Pinder, Ueber die Cisto- phoren; B.V. Head, ''Coinage of Lydia and Persia," ''Syracuse," 'Boeotia," '' Ephesus," in Numismata Oricntalia; P. Gardner, 'Saimos," ibid.; Duc de Luynes, Satrapies; Id., Nwmismatique et

~~Inscriptions Cypriotes. Asia :—Six, “Monnaies phéniciennes,” in Num. Chron., 1877; De Saulcy, Nwmismatique de la Terre Sainte; F, Madden, “Jewish Coinage,” in Nwmismata Orientalia. Africa :—Zoega, Numi Agyptii Imperatorii; L. Miiller, Nwmismatique de Vancienne Afrique.~~

~~Roman. Mommsen, Hist. de la Mon. Rom., Fr. trans. by De Blacas and De Witte; Cohen, Médailles dela République romaine; 1d., Médailles de VEmpire 3 D’Ailly, La Monnaie romaine; Frohner, Médaillons de V Empire ; H. Grueber, Catalogue of Roman Medallions in the British Museum; De Witte, Empereurs des Gaules.~~

~~Medizval and Modern. Lelewel, Numismatique du Moyen Age; C. ¥. Keary, Coinage of Western Europe from Honorius to Charlemagne. Spain :—Heiss, Mon- naies des Rois Wisigoths; Id., Monedas Hispano-Christianas ; Campaner y Fuertes, Numismatica Balear. France :—Gariel, Monnaies Carolingiennes; Hoffmann, Monnaies royales de France ; De Saulcy, Recueil de Documents relatifs a U Histoire des Monnaies depuis Philippe H.; Poey d’Avant, Monnaies féodales; Trésor de Numismatique. England, &c.:—Hawkins, Silver Coins of England (2d ed. by R. Kenyon); Kenyon, Gold Coins of England; Hildebrand, Anglo-Stichsiske Mynt, 2d ed., 1881; De Saulcy, Histoire nuwmismatique de Henri V. et Henri VI. @ Angleterre; Ruding, Annals of the Coinage of Great Britain, 3d ed. ; Cochran- Patrick, Records of the Coinage of Scotland ; Aquilla Smith, various papers on Irish coinage. Holland:—Van der Chijs, Verhandelingen, witgegeven door Teyler’s Tweede Genootschap. Switzerland :—Von Haller, Schweizerisches Mtinz- und Medaillen-Cabinet ; R. 8. Poole, Catalogue of Swiss Coins in the South Ken- sington Museum. Italy :—Friedlinder, Italicinische Schawmiinzen; Heiss, Mé- dailleurs de la Renaissance; Armand, Médaillewrs Italiens, 2d ed. Germany :— Dannenberg, Deutsche Miinzen der Sdichsischen u. Frénkischen Kaiserzeit; Schluin- berger, Bracteates d’ Allemagne. Latin (Hast) :—Schlumberger, Numismatique de VOrient latin. America:—Dickeson, American Nwmismatic Manual; Weyl, Fonrobertsche Sammlung,~~

~~Oriental. P. Gardner, “The Parthian Coinage,” in Numismata Orientalia ; De Longpérier, Les Médailles des Rois Perses de la Dynastie Sassanide; Soret, “‘Numismatique musulmane,” and other papers chiefly in the Revue~~

de Numis- matique Belge; Catalogue of Oriental Coins in the British Museum, by Stanley Lane-Poole, ed. R. 8. Poole, vols. i.viii.; Frochn, Recensio Num. Muhammedan orum; Tiesenhausen, Monnaies des Khalifes orientaux (in Russian); Codera y Zaidin, Numismatica Arabo-espanola ; Thomas, Chronicles of the Pathans, and various papers; Rhys Davids, Ancient Coins and Mcaswres of Ceylon. ;

Notwithstanding the general books covering many sections for which no special works are indicated, it will be felt that this list is very deficient. This is partly due to the multitude of essays in various periodicals, but mainly to the neglect of certain branches of the subject and to the want of full catalogues of the great collections of Europe. (R. 8. P.)

NUNEATON, a market-town of Warwickshire, England, is situated near the Leicestershire border, on a branch of the river Anker, on the Coventry Canal, and on three railway lines, 97 miles north-west of London, and 22 east

of Birmingham. It consists principally of one long street with a cross street leading to the market-place. The church of St Nicholas isa large and handsome structure in various styles of architecture, and consists of nave, chancel, and aisles, with a square embattled tower having pinnacles at the angles. It contains several interesting monuments. The new church of St Mary the Virgin was erected in 1877 on the ruins of the old priory. A free grammar- school was founded in the reign of Edward VI., and an English free school for the instruction of forty boys and thirty girls by Richard Smith in 1712. A library and reading-room was established in 1851, and a literary institute in 1865. The ribbon industry is of less import- ance than formerly, but there are ironworks, cotton, hat, elastic, and worsted factories, currieries, and tanneries. Nuneaton derives its name from a priory of nuns founded here in 1150. In the reign of Henry IIL. a weekly market was granted to the prioress. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 6021 acres) in 1871 was 7399, and in 1881 it was 8465.

NUNEZ or Nontus, Pepro, Portuguese cosmographer, was born at Alcacer do Sal in 1492, and died at Coimbra, where he was professor of

mathematics, in 1577. He published several works, including a copiously-annotated translation of portions of Ptolemy (1537), and a treatise in two books, De arte atque ratione navigandi (1546). See NAVIGATION.

NUNEZ CABEZA DE VACA, Atvaro (c. 1490-1564), Spanish explorer, was the lieutenant of Pamfilo Narvaez (supr. p. 234) in the expedition which sailed from Spain in 1527; when Narvaez was lost in the Gulf of Mexico, Cabeza de Vaca succeeded in reaching the mainland some- where to the west of the mouths of the Mississippi, and, striking inland with three companions, succeeded, after long wandering and incredible hardship, in reaching the Pacific coast in 1536. Returning to Spain in 1537, he was ap- pointed " adelantado" or administrator of the province of Rio de la Plata in 1540. Sailing from Cadiz in the end of that year, after touching at Cananea (Brazil), he landed at the island of St Catharine in the end of March 1541. Leaving his ships to proceed to Buenos Ayres, he set out in November with about 150 men to find his way overland to Ascension (Asuncion) for the relief of his countrymen there. After an interesting journey through the country of the Guaranis, the little band reached their destination in the following year. After various successes in war and diplomacy, in his dealings with the Indians, Nufiez quar- relled with his countryman Domingo de Irala, whose jealousy he had excited, and the final result was that he was sent home under arrest in 1544, and banished to Africa by the council of the Indies. Eight years afterwards he was recalled, and appointed to a judgeship in Seville, where he died in 1564.

The Naufragios (" Shipwrecks") of Cabeza de Vaca, which re- late to the Florida expedition and his journey through what is now New Mexico, appeared at Valladolid in 1544; the work has frequently been reprinted, and an annotated English translation was published by Buckingham Smith in 1851. His Comentarios

chronicle the events of the South American expedition. Both works occur in Barcia's Hist. Prim. d. 1. Ind. Occ.

NUREMBERG (in German, WViirnberg), the second town of Bavaria in size and the first in commercial importance, is situated in the district of Middle Franconia, in a sandy but well-cultivated plain, 95 miles to the north-west of Munich. It is divided by the small river Pegnitz into two parts,

~~called respectively the Lorenzerseite and the Sebalderseite, after the two principal churches.~~

~~Formerly among the richest and most influential of the free imperial towns, Nuremberg is one of the few cities of Europe that have retained their medieval aspect sub- stantially unimpaired. It is still surrounded with its~~

~~ancient feudal walls and moat, though of late several breaches have had to be made to meet the exigencies of modern traffic. Of the 365 towers which formerly strengthened the walls, nearly 100 are still im situ, and a few of the interesting old gateways have also been preserved. Most of the streets are narrow and crooked, and the majority of the houses have their gables turned towards the street. The general type of architecture is Gothic, but the rich details, which are lavished with especial freedom in the interior courts, are usually borrowed from the Renaissance. Most of the private dwellings date from the 16th century, and there are almost none of earlier date than the 15th century. A praiseworthy desire to maintain the quaint picturesqueness of the town has induced most of the builders of new houses to imitate the lofty peaked gables, oriel windows, and red-tiled roofs of the older dwellings ; and it is easy for the visitor to Nuremberg to~~

~~*Plan of Nuremberg. 1. Church of St Sebald. 8. Town House. a*~~

~~*Museum. 2. Library. 4. Church of Our Lady. 6. Church of St Lawrence.*~~

~~*fancy himself carried back to the Middle Ages. Altogether it is difficult to conceive of a more piquant contrast than that afforded by the two chief towns of Bavaria—Munich, stamped with the brand-new impress of the 19th century, and Nuremberg, presenting a faithful picture of a well-to- do town of 300 years ago.*~~

~~A good survey of this interesting town may be obtained from the old burg or castle, picturesquely perched on the top of a rock on the north side of the town. It is supposed to have been founded by the emperor Conrad II. about the year 1024, and dates in its present form mainly from the reign of Frederick Barbarossa (c. 1158). It was restored in careful harmony with its original appearance in 1854-56, and part of the interior is fitted up as a residence for the royal family. The two Late Romanesque chapels, one above the other, are interesting ; the lower was the burial-place of the burggraves. Among the in- struments of torture preserved in the castle is the famous "Tron Virgin" of Nuremberg. In the court is a linden tree said to be over 700 years old. The castle of Nurem- berg was a favourite residence of the emperors of Germany, and the imperial regalia were kept here from 1424 to 1806.~~

~~Nuremberg contains numerous interesting churches, the finest of which are those of St Lawrence, St Sebald, and Our Lady, three Gothic edifices of the 13-15th centuries. All three are notable for their elaborately-carved doorways, in which free play has been given to the exuberant fancy of the Gothic style, and all three enshrine valuable treasures of art. In the church of St Lawrence, the largest of the three, is the masterpiece of the sculptor~~

~~Adam Krafft, consisting of a ciborium or receptacle for the host, in the form of a florid Gothic spire 65 feet high ; the carving of this work is exquisitely minute and delicate. In front of the altar hangs a curious piece of wood-carving by Veit Stoss, representing the Salutation. The shrine of St Sebald, in the church of St Sebald, consisting of a bronze sarcophagus and canopy, in the richest Gothic style, adorned with numerous statues and reliefs, is looked upon as one of the greatest achievements of German art. It was executed by Peter Vischer, the celebrated artist in bronze, who was occupied on the work for thirteen years (1506-19) and has here shown himself no unworthy rival of Lorenzo Ghiberti. The church of Our Lady possesses some fine old stained glass windows and some paintings by Wohlgemuth. The Aegidienkirche, a building of last century, contains a good altarpiece by Van Dyck.~~

The town-house, an edifice in the Italian style, erected in 1616-19, contains frescos by Diirer and a curious stucco relief of a tournament held at Nuremberg in 1446. The new law courts, the hospitals, and the barracks are also imposing structures, but the most interesting secular build- ings in the town are the houses of the old patrician families, already referred to. Among the most characteristic of these are the old residence of the counts of Nassau, and the houses of the Tucher, Funk, and Peller families. A special interest attaches to the dwellings of Albert Diirer, Hans Sachs, the cobbler-poet, and Johann Palm, the patriotic bookseller who was shot by order of Napoleon in 1806. Statues of Diirer, Sachs, and Melanchthon (the reputed founder of the grammar-school) have been erected ; and the streets are further embellished with several fount- ains, the most noteworthy of which are the Schone Brunnen, in the form of a large Gothic pyramid, adorned with statues (1385-96) and the Ga&nseminnchen or goose-mannikin, a clever little figure by Labenwolf. On the way to the cemetery of St John, which contains the graves of Diirer, Sachs, Behaim, and other Nuremberg worthies, are Krafft's Stations, seven pillars bearing stone reliefs of the Passion, and ranked among the finest works of the well- known sculptor.

The charitable, educational, scientific, and artistic insti- tutions of Nuremberg are on a scale worthy of its ancient dignity. The Germanic National Museum, established in an old Carthusian monastery, has one of the most important historical collections in Germany. It includes a picture-gallery with works by Holbein, Diirer, Wohlgemuth, é&c. The Bavarian Industrial Museum is also a very creditable institution. The municipal library contains about 800 manuscripts and 50,000 printed books, some of which are of great rarity.

Though not of so great relative importance as of yore, Nurem- berg still occupies a high place among the industrial and commercial centres of Europe. The principal manufactures are lead pencils, colours, gold and silver wire, gold and silver foil, railway plant, tobacco, playing-cards, and lastly the ‘“‘ Dutch” toys and fancy articles in metal, carved wood, ivory, &c., which are collectively known as “Nuremberg wares.” A great proportion of the toys exported from Nuremberg are really made by the peasants of Thuringia. The pencil manufactory of Faber, the railway works

of the Nuremberg Company, and Zeltner's ultramarine factory are among the most important of their class in Europe. Large quan- tities of Nuremberg manufactures are sent to India and America, the exports to the United States alone being valued at £800,000 in 1882. Brewing, lithography, and map-publishing are also exten- sively carried on. Nuremberg is the chief market on the Continent for hops, and in 1882 the "turn over" in the trade in this article was £4,000,000. The bronze foundry established by Professor Burgschmiet, and now carried on by Professor Lenz, produces numerous admirable and important castings ; and in the artistic handicrafts generally Nuremberg artisans are honourably distin- guished. In addition to numerous railways, trade is facilitated by the Ludwig canal, connecting the Danube and the Main. The railway from Nuremberg to Firth was the first in Germany.

Nuremberg's money-market is also of some importance. ; The population of Nuremberg at the height of its prosperity has

been estimated at as high a figure as 150,000, but there seems good reason to believe that it did not exceed 40,000 to 50,000 souls. In 1818 it had sunk to 27,000, but since then it has steadily in- creased. At the census of 1880 the town contained 99,519 inhabit- ants, 76,886 of whom were Protestants, 19,143 Roman Catholies, and 3032 Jews. According to a local estimate the population had risen to 103,255 at the beginning of 1883. Several of the patrician families of Nuremberg can trace their descent in a direct line for four or five centuries, and stil] occupy the houses built by their forefathers. A few of them are said to possess very complete and interesting domestic archives.

History.—The first authentic mention of Nuremberg, which seems to have been called into existence by the foundation of the castle, occurs in a document of 1050; and about the same period it received from Henry III. permission to establish a mint, a market, and a custom-housc, It is said to have been destroyed by the emperor Henry VY. in 1105, but if this was the case the town must have been very speedily rebuilt, as in 1127 we find the emperor Lothair taking it from the duke of Swabia and assigning it to Henry the Proud, duke of Bavaria. We now first hear of an imperial officer styled

the burggrave of Nuremberg, who, however, seems to have been merely the military governor of the castle, and to have exercised no sway over the citizens. This office came into the hands of the counts of Hohenzollern at the beginning of the 18th century, and ‘ burggrave of Nuremberg” is still one of the titles of their descendant, the emperor of Germany. The government of the town was vested in the patrician families, who, contrary to the usual course of events in the free towns, succeeded in perma- nently excluding the civic guilds from all share of municipal power. Conrad III. (1188-1152) reunited Nuremberg to the empire, and for the next three or four centuries the town was specially favoured by the German monarchs, who frequently resided and held diets here. In 1219 Frederick II. conferred upon it the rights of a free imperial town, and in 1355 it witnessed the promulgation of the famous “Golden Bull” of Charles IV, At the beginning of the 15th century the burggraves of Nuremberg, who had in the meantime raised themselves to the rank of princes of the empire; were invested with the margraviate of Brandenburg, and sold the castle of Nuremberg to the town. They, however, reserved certain rights, which resulted in keenly-contested feuds between the burghers and the margraves Albert Achilles (1449), Frederick (1502), and Albert Alcibiades (1552),

The quarrel with the margraves, however, did not interfere with the growth of the town’s prosperity, which reached its acme in the 16th century. Like Augsburg, Nuremberg attained great wealth as an intermediary between Italy and the East on the one hand, and northern Europe on the other. Its manufactures were so well known that it passed into a proverb —“Nuremberg’s hand goes through every land.” Its citizens lived in such luxury that Aineas Sylvius (Pope Pius II., 1405-1464) has left it on record that a simple burgher of Nuremberg was better lodged than the king of Scotland. The town had gradually extended its sway over a terri- tory nearly 500 square miles in extent, and was able to furnish the emperor Maximilian with a contingent of 6000 troops. But perhaps the great glory of Nuremberg lies in its claim to be the principal font of German art. Its important architectural features have already been described. The love of its citizens for sculpture is abundantly manifest in the statues and carvings on their houses. Adam Krafft (c. 1455-1507), Veit Stoss (c. 1450-1532), and Peter Vischer (c. 1455-1529) form a trinity of sculptors of which any city might be proud. In painting Nuremberg is not less prominent, as the names

of Wohlgemuth (1484-1519) and Albert Diirer (1471- 1528) sufficiently indicate. In the decorative arts the Nuremberg handicraftsman attained great perfection in ministering to the luxurious tastes of the burghers, and a large proportion of the old German furniture, silver-plate, stoves, and the like, which we now admire in industrial museums, was made in Nuremberg workshops. Wenzel Jamnitzer (1508-1585), the worker in silver, is perhaps eminent enough to be added to the above list of artists. Its place in literary history—by no means an unimportant one—Nuremberg owes to Hans Sachs (1494-1576) and the other meistersiinger. A final proof of the vigorous vitality of Nuremberg at this period may be found in the numerous inventions of its inhabitants, which include watches (at first called "Nuremberg eggs"), the air-gun, gun-locks, the terrestrial and celestial globes, the composition now called brass, and the art of wire-drawing.

Nuremberg was the first of the imperial towns to throw in its lot with the Reformation (in 1525), and it embraced Protestantism with its wonted vigour. Its name is associated with a peace con- cluded between Charles V. and the Protestants in 1532. The first blew to its prosperity was the discovery of the sea-route to India in 1497 ; and the second was inflicted by the Thirty Years' War, during which Gustavus Adolphus was besieged here in an entrenched camp by Wallenstein. During the eight or ten weeks that the blockade lasted no fewer than 10,000 inhabitants of Nuremberg are said to have died of want or disease. The downfall of the town was accelerated by the illiberal and short-sighted policy of

its patrician rulers ; and the French Revolution reduced it to such a degree that in 1796 it offered itself and its territories to the king of Prussia on condition that he would pay its debts (9,000,000 guldens). Prussia, however, refused the offer. In 1803 Nuremberg was allowed to maintain its nominal position as a free city, but in 1806 it was annexed to Bavaria. During this century its progress has been one of uninterrupted prosperity, and it is now the chief commercial town in South Germany.

Authorities.—Priem, Geschichte der Stadt Niirnberg (1874); Daniel, Handbuch der Geographie (new ed., 1881); Jahresbericht der Handels- und Gewerbekammer Sir Mittelfranken, 1882; Schrag, Newester Weqweiser

durch die Stadt Niirnberg (13th ed., 1883). Various illustrated works on the artists and art-treasures of Nuremberg have been published by Schrag of Nuremberg. (J. F. M.)

NURSIA. See Sasrnzs.

NUT. The term nut is applied to that class of fruit which consists generally of a single kernel enclosed in a hard shell. Botanically speaking, nuts are one-celled fruits with hardened pericarps, more or less enveloped in a cupule or cup, formed by the aggregation of the bracts. In com- merce, however, the term has a wider application and em- braces many fruits having hard woody indehiscent shells or coverings without reference to their enclosed seeds or kernels, besides leguminous pods, and even tuberous roots. A great number of nuts enter into commerce for various purposes, principally as articles of food or sources of oil, and for several ornamental and useful purposes. For the most part the edible nuts are very rich in oil, with only a small percentage of the other carbohydrates, starch, sugar, &c., and they also contain a large proportion of nitrogenous constituents. Thus possessing rich nutrient principles in a highly-concentrated form, nuts are by themselves rather difficult of digestion, and the liability of many of them to become rancid is also a source of danger and a hindrance to their free use. Oleaginous nuts used for food are like-wise employed more or less as sources of oil, but on the other hand there are many oil-nuts of commercial import- ance not embraced in the list of edible nuts. The follow- ing is an alphabetical enumeration of the more important nuts, and of products passing under that name, used either as articles of food or as sources of oil :—

Name. Source. Locality. Remarks, Almond ..... Amygdalus communis,|$. Europe....| Food, oil. See vol. var. B., dulcis . p. 595. Almond (bitter)| Amygdalus communis, seuss Oil. See vol. i. p. var, A., amara 595. PATSTIULU oss arte oie Tubers of Bunium fleauo-| Great Britain | Food. swum and other species Bamnbarra Voandzeia subterranea ..| W. Africa....| Food. ground nut Ben nut ..... Moringa pterygosperma |B. Indies ....| Oil. See Orts. Bitter nut .|Carya amara (swamp|N. America ..| See Hickory, vol. hickory) xi. p. 790. Brazil nut .| Bertholletia excelsa ..... 8. America ..| Food, oil. See vol. iv. p. 241, Bread nut .»| Brosimum Alicastrum ..| W.

Indies …. sod. ets i Souari | Caryocar nuciferwm ….|Guiana …... Food. nu Cahoun nut ..) Attalea Cohune …..... Honduras… ..| Oil. Candle nut ….) Alewrites triloba…..... 8. Sea Islands| Oil. See Orzs. Cashew nut ….) Anacardiwm occidentale |W. Indies .. ..| Food, oil. See vol. Veep. Lios Chestnut …... Castanea vescn……..... 8. Europe…. Hood. See vol. v.

. 608.

Cob, filbert, or | Corylus Avellana …... England, ee Haze, vol. xi, hazel Spain p. 548, Cob nut of Ja-|Omphalea diandra…... W. Indies ….| Food. maica Cocoa nut -| Cocos nucifera ……..... E. Indies ….| Food, oil. See vol. vi. p. 103. Cola nut …... Cola acuminata …..... W. Africa ….| Food. Dika nut …... Irvingia Barteri…..... W. Africa ….| Food, oil. Gingko nut ….| Salisburia adiantifolia..|Japan …... Food, oil.

Ground nut ….| Arachis hypogea…..... FPYOpIGSIs. ous See Grounp Nut, : vol. xi. p. 221. Hickory nut ..|Caryaalba ……..... N. America ..| See Hickory, vol.

xi. p. 790. Hogmut) ...0.. Carya porcina …..... ..|N, America .. Rian: by animals. Mocker nut….| Carya tomentosa …..... N. America ..| See Hickory, vol. xi. p. 790. Moreton Bay Castanospermum australe | Australia …. Boca! chestnut Nutmeg …... Myristica moschata ….| EB. Indies …. Spice. See NutMEc. | Nutmeg (wild) | Myristica — M. tom-| Tropies …... Spice. See NutMEc. : entosa, &¢. Olivesnutine ee Elexocarpus Ganitrus, &c.| BE. Indies ….| Food. Palm nut…... Elais guineensis …..... W. Africa….| Oil. See Pau. Pecan nut | Carya oliveformis …... N. America ..| Food, oil. See Hick ORY, Vol. xi. p. 790. Pekea nut -| Caryocar butyrosum ….|Guiana …... Food. ‘ iis

NU R—NUT

Name. Source. Locality. Remarks. Physic nut ….| Curcas purgans …..... Tropical Oil. See Orts. America Pine nut …... Pinus Pinea, &e. Food, Pistachio nut ..| Pistachia vera……... ..| Food. Quandang nut..| Fusanus acuminatus ….| Australia ….) Food. Ravensara nut | Agathophyllum aromati- | Madagascar ..} Spice. cum Rush nut…... Cyperus esculentus …...

~~8. Europe…./ Food. Sapucaya nut ..| Lecythis Ollaria …..... Brazil, cssiesese Food.~~

~~Tahiti chestnut Walnuts… Water chestnut~~

~~8. Sea Islands | Food. .... + e| Asia, Europe | Food, oil. Food.~~

~~Inocarpus edulis Juglans regia .. Various species of T'rapa| Kashmir, &c.~~

~~There remain to be enumerated a number of nuts of commercial value for turnery and ornamental purposes, for medicinal use, and for several miscellaneous applications in the arts. These include :—~~

~~Name. Source. Loeality. Remarks. Betel nut …... Areca Catecht …..... E. Indies ….) See vol. iii. p. 616. Bladder nut ..| Staphylea pinnata …... Cent. Europe | Necklaces. Boomah nut ..| Pycnocoma macrophylla | Africa …... Tanning.~~

~~Bonduc nut ….| Gwilandina Bonduc ….| India.…..... Medicine, beads.~~

~~Clearing nut ..| Strychnos potatorum ….|India.…..... Clearing water.~~

~~Coquilla nut ..| Attalea funifera …..... Brazil …... Turnery.~~

~~Corozo nut or | Phytelephas macrocarpa | Brazil …... See vol. xiii. p. 524,~~

~~vegetable ivory~~

~~Cumara nut ..| Dipterix odorata.…..... Brazil 26)... 3 Perfume.~~

~~Grugru nut ….) Acrocomia sclerocarpa ..|S8. America ..| Beads.~~

~~Horse chestnut | Zsculus Hippocastanwm | Europe …... Starch. See vol. y. p. 608.~~

~~Marking nut ..| Semecarpus Anacardiwm | EB. Indies …. Marking ink and varnish,~~

~~Nut galls …...| Quercus infectoria …... Levant …... Dyeing and ink making, See GALLS, vol. x. p.~~

~~45,~~

~~Poison nut ….|Strychnos Nua-Vomica ..|B. Indies ….] Medicine. See Nux VoMIca.~~

~~Sassafras nut ..| Nectandra Puchury ….|8. America ..| Aromatic.~~

~~Snake nut ….| Ophiocaryon paradoxum |8. America .. Curiosity.~~

~~Soap nut …... Sapindus Saponaria ….| W. Indies…. Bia orna- mental.~~

~~The application of the term nut to many of these pro- ducts is purely arbitrary, and it is obvious that numerous other bodies not known commercially as nuts might with equal propriety be included in the list. Most of the nuts of real commercial importance are or will be separately noticed, and here further allusion is only made to a few which form current articles of commerce, not otherwise treated of.~~

~~The Bread nut of Jamaica is the fruit of a lofty tree, Brosmum Alicastrum, It is about an inch in diameter, and encloses a single seed, which, roasted or boiled, is a pleasant and nutritious article of food.~~

~~The Souari or Surahwa nut, called also the "Butter nut of Demerara," and by fruiterers the "Suwarrow nut," is the fruit of Caryocar nuciferum (Rhizobolacex), a native of the forests of Guiana, growing 80 feet in height. This is perhaps the finest of all the fruits called nuts. The kernel is large, soft, and even sweeter than the almond, which it somewhat resembles in taste. The few that are imported come from Demerara, and are about the size of an egg, somewhat kidney-shaped, of a rich reddish-brown colour, and covered with large rounded tubercles.~~

~~The Pekea nut, similar in appearance and properties, is the produce of Caryocar butyrosum, growing in the same regions of tropical America.~~

~~The Jamaica Cob nut is the produce of a euphorbiaceous tree, Omphalea diandra, the seeds of which resemble in taste the ordinary cob or hazel nut. The seed, however, contains a deleterious embryo, which must not be eaten.~~

~~Cola, Kola, or Goora nuts are the produce of Cola acuminata (Sterculiacex), a tree native of tropical Africa, now introduced into the West Indies and South America. The nuts form an important article of commerce through- out Central Africa, being used over a wide area as a kind of stimulant condiment. The nuts, of which there are numerous varieties, are found to contain a notable propor- tion of theine, as much as 2°13 per cent., besides theobro- mine and other important food-constituents, to which~~

~~circumstances, doubtless, their valuable properties are due.~~

~~Coquilla nuts, the large seeds of the palm, Attalea Junifera, the piassaba of Brazil, are highly valued for turnery purposes. They have an elongated oval form, 3 to 4 inches in length, and being intensely hard they take a fine polish, displaying a richly-streaked brown colour.~~

~~The Marking nut, Semecarpus Anacardium, is a fruit closely allied in its source and properties to the Casnzw Nor (q.v.). The marking nut is a native of the East Indies, where the extremely acrid juice of the shell of the fruit in its unripe state is mixed with quicklime, and used as a marking-ink. . The juice also possesses medicinal vir- tues as an external application, and when dry it is the basis of a valuable caulking material and black varnish. The seeds are edible, and the source of a useful oil.~~

~~Physic nuts are the produce of the euphorbiaceous tree, Curcas purgans, whence a valuable oil, having similar purgative properties to castor oil, is obtained. The plant is a native of South America; but is now found through- out all tropical countries.~~

~~Pine nuts are the seeds of several species of Pinus, eaten in the countries of their growth, and also serving to some extent as sources of oil. Of these the most important are the Stone Pine, Pinus Pinea, of Italy and the Mediter- ranean coasts, and the Russian Stone Pine, Pinus Cembra. The Pinus~~

Sabiniana of California and P. Gerardiana of the Himalayas similarly yield edible seeds. 'These seeds possess a pleasant, slightly resinous flavour.

The Pistachio nut is the fruit of Pistacia vera, L. (Anacardiacer). Tt is a native of Syria. Although a remarkably delicious nut and much prized by the Greeks and other Eastern nations, it is not well known in Britain. It is not so large as a hazel nut, but is rather longer and much thinner, and the shell is covered with a somewhat wrinkled skin, The small nut of Pistacia Lentiscus, L., not larger than a cherry stone, is also occasionally imported from Smyrna, Constantinople, and Greece.

Ravensara nuts, the fruit of Agathophyllum aromaticum (Lauracex), a native of Madagascar, is used as a spice under the name of the Madagascar clove nutmeg.

The Sapucaya nut, a Brazilian fruit, is seen occasionally in fruit-shops. It is produced bya large tree, Lecythis Ollaria, or "'Cannon-ball tree." Its specific name is taken from the large urn-shaped capsules, called "monkey-pots" by the inhabitants, which contain the nuts. The sapucaya nut has a sweet flavour, resembling the almond, and if better known would be highly appreciated. It is, how- ever, scarce, as the monkeys and other wild animals are said to be particularly fond of it. This nut, which is of a rich amber-brown, is not unlike the Brazil nut, but it has a smooth shell furrowed with deep longitudinal wrinkles.

Soap nuts are the fruits of various species of Sapindus, especially S. Saponaria, natives of tropical regions, They are so called because their rind or outer covering contains a principle, saponine, which lathers in water, and so is useful in washing. 'The pods of Acacia concinna, a native of India, possess the same properties, and are also known as soap nuts. (J. PA.)

NUTATION. See Asrronomy, vol. ii. pp. 794-5.

NUTCRACKER, the name given by Edwards in 1758 (Gleanings, No. 240) to a bird which had hitherto borne no English appellation, though described in 1544 by Turner, who, meeting with it in the Rheetic Alps, where it was called '"'Nousbrecher" (hodie "Nussbrecher"), translated that

term into Latin as Vucifraga. In 1555 Gesner figured it and conferred upon it another designation, Caryocatactes, It is the Corvus caryocatactes of Linnzeus and the Nucr- Jraga caryocatactes of modern ornithology. Willughby and Ray obtained it on the road from Vienna to Venice as

they crossed what must have been the Sémmerring Pass, 26th September 1663. The first known to have occurred in Britain was, according to Pennant, shot at Mostyn in Flintshire, 5th October 1753, and about fifteen more examples have since been procured, and others seen, in the island. In further continuation of the particulars already given (Crow, vol. vi. p. 618), it may here be stated that a careful monograph of the species by the Ritter Victor von T'schusi-Schmidhoffen was printed at Dresden in 1874 with the title of Der Lannenheher, which is one of its many German names. Contrary to what was for many years believed, the nest of the Nutcracker seems to be in- variably built on the bough of a tree, some 20 feet from the ground, and is a comparatively large structure of sticks, lined with grass. The eggs are of a very pale bluish-green, sometimes nearly spotless, but usually more or less freckled with pale olive or ash-colour, The chief food of the Nutcracker, though it at times searches for insects on the ground, appears to be the seeds of various conifers, which it extracts as it holds the cones in its foot, and it has been questioned whether the bird has the faculty of cracking nuts—properly so called—with its bill, though that can be used with much force and, at least in confinement, with no little ingenuity. The old supposi- tion that the Nutcrackers had any affinity to the Wood- peckers (Picidx) or were intermediate in position between them and the Crows (Corvidx) is now known to be wholly erroneous, for they undoubtedly belong to the latter Family. (A. N.) NUTHIATCH, in older English Nurwacx, from its habit of hacking or chipping nuts, which it cleverly fixes, as though in a vice, in a chink or crevice of the bark of a tree, and then hammers them with the point of its bill till the shell is broken. This bird was long thought to be the Sttta europxa of Linneus; but that is now admitted to be the northern form, with the lower parts white, and its buff-breasted representative in central, southern, and western Europe, including England, is known as Sttta cesta. It is not found in Ireland, and in Scotland its appearance is merely accidental. Without being very plentiful anywhere, it is generally distributed

in suitable localities throughout its range—those localities being such as afford it a sufficient supply of food, consisting during the greater part of the year of insects, which it diligently seeks on the boles and larger limbs of old trees; but in autumn and winter it feeds on nuts, beech-mast, the stones of yew-berries, and hard seeds. Being of a bold disposi- tion, and the trees favouring its mode of life often grow- ing near houses, it will become on slight encouragement familiar with men; and its neat attire of ash-grey and warm buff, together with its sprightly gestures, render it an attractive visitor. It generally makes its nest in a hollow branch, plastering up the opening with clay, leaving only a circular hole just large enough to afford entrance and exit; and the interior contains a bed of dry leaves or the filmy flakes of the inner bark of a fir or cedar, on which the eggs are laid. In the Levant occurs another species, S. syriaca, with somewhat different habits, as it haunts rocks rather than trees; and four or five representatives of the Euro. pean arboreal species have their respective ranges from Asia Minor to the HImalayas and Northern China. North Aimerica possesses nearly as any ; but, curiously enough, the geographical difference of coloration is just the reverse of what it is in Europe—the species with a deep rufous breast, S. canadensis, being that which has the most north. ern range, while the white-bellied S. carolinensis, with its western form, S. aculeata, inhabits more southern latitudes. The Ethiopian Region seems to have no representative of the group, unless it be the HWypositta corallirostris—of Madagascar. Callisitta and Dendrophila are nearly allied XVII. — 84

666

genera, inhabiting the Indian Region, and remarkable for their beautiful blue plumage ; but some doubt may for the present be entertained as to the affinity of the Australian Sittella, with four or five species, found in one or another part of that continent, which doubt is increased by the late Mr Forbes's discovery (Proc. Zool. Soctety, 1882, pp. 569-571) that the genera Acanthisitta and Xenicus, pecu- liar to New Zealand, and hitherto generally placed in the Family Sittide, belong really to the Mesomyodian group and are therefore far removed from it. The unquestioned members of the Sittidx seem to be intermediate between the Paride and the Certhiidx, and some authors comprehend them in either one or the other of those groups. (A. N.) NUTMEG. The spice known in commerce under this name is the kernel of

the seed of Myristica fragrans, Houtt., a dicecious evergreen tree, about 50 to 60 feet high, found wild in the Banda Islands and a few of the neighbouring islands, extending to New Guinea but not to the Philip- pines. Nutmeg yj and mace are al- most exclusively obtained from the ji Banda Islands, al- "Vai though the culti- vation has been attempted with varying success in Singapore, Penang, Bengal, Réunion, Brazil, French Guiana, and the West In- dies. The trees yield fruit in eight years after sowing 'the seed, reach their prime in twenty-five years, and bear for sixty years or longer. Almost the whole surface of the Banda Islands is planted with nut- meg trees, which thrive under the shade of the lofty Canarium commune. The light volcanic soil, shade, and excessive moisture of these islands, where it rains more or less during the whole year, seem exactly to suit the requirements of the nutmeg tree. In Bencoolen the tree bears all the year round, but the chief harvest takes place in the later months of the year, and a smaller one in April, May, and June. In the Banda Islands the fruits are collected in small neatly-made oval baskets at the end of a bamboo, which prevents bruising, the baskets being open for half their length on one side and furnished with a couple of small prongs projecting from the top, by which the fruit-stalk is broken, the fruit falling into the basket. The ripe fruit is about 2 inches in diameter, of a rounded pear-shape, and when mature splits into two halves, ex- posing a crimson arillus surrounding a single seed. When the fruit is collected the pericarp is first removed; then the arillus is carefully stripped off and dried, in which state it forms the mace of commerce. The seed consists of a thin hard testa or shell enclosing a kernel, which, when dried, is the nutmeg. To prepare the nutmegs for use, the seed enclosing the kernel is dried at a gentle heat in a drying-house over a smouldering fire for about two months, the seeds being turned every second or third day. When thoroughly dried the shells are broken with a wooden mallet or flat board and the nutmegs picked out

Flowers, Fruit, and Seed of Nutmeg.

and sorted, the smaller and inferior ones being reserved for the expression of the fixed oil which they contain, and which forms the so-called oil of mace.

The dried nutmegs are then rubbed over with dry sifted lime. The process of liming, which originated at the time when the Dutch held a monopoly of the trade, was com- menced with the view of preventing the germination of the seeds, which were formerly immersed for three months in milk of lime for this purpose, and a preference is still manifested in some countries for nutmegs so prepared. It has, however, been shown that this treatment is by no means necessary, since exposure to the sun for a week destroys the vitality of the kernel. Nor is the dry liming process needful, for nutmegs keep well in their natural shell, in which form they are usually exported to China. -The weight of the shells, however, adds one-third to the cost of freight, hence this plan is not generally adopted. Penang nutmegs are never limed. The entire fruit preserved in syrup is used as a sweetmeat in the Dutch East Indies.

"Oil of mace," or nutmeg butter, is a solid fatty substance of a reddish-brown colour, obtained by grinding the refuse nutmegs to a fine powder, enclosing it in bags and steaming it over large cauldrons for five or six hours, and then com- pressing it while still warm between powerful wedges, the brownish fluid which flows out being afterwards allowed to solidify. Nutmegs yield about one-fourth of their weight of this substance. It is partly dissolved by cold alcohol, the remainder being soluble in ether. The latter portion, about 10 per cent. of the weight of the nutmegs, consists chiefly of myristin, which is a compound of myristic acid, C,,H.,0,, with glycerin. The fat which is soluble in alcohol appears to consist, according to Schmidt and Roemer (Arch. Pharm. [3], xxi. pp. 34-48), of free myristic and stearic acids ; the brown colouring matter has not been satisfactorily investigated. Nutmeg butter yields on dis- tillation with water a volatile oil to the extent of about 6 per cent., consisting almost entirely of a hydrocarbon called myristicene, C,)H,,, boiling at 165° C. It is accom- panied by a small quantity of an oxygenated oil, myristicol, isomeric with carvol, but differing from it in not forming a crystalline compound with hydrosulphuric acid. Mace con- tains a similar volatile oil, macene, boiling at 160° C., which is said by Cloéz to differ from that of nutmegs in yielding a solid compound when treated with hydrochloric acid gas.

The annual imports of nutmegs to the United Kingdom amount to from 400,000 to 800,000 ib, each ib consisting of about 110 fair-sized nutmegs,

~~and of mace from 60,000 to 80,000 Ib per annum. The former are valued at from three to five shillings per tb, and mace at from one to three shillings per Ib.1 Long, wild, or male nutmegs, the produce of J. tomentosa and M. fatua, are sometimes imported in small quantities. Several species of AMyristica yield fatty oils, which form commercial products, but none of these are remarkable for fragrance.~~

~~The name nutmeg is also applied to other fruits or seeds in different countries. The Jamaica or calabash nutmeg is derived from Monodora Myristica, the Brazilian from Crypto- carya moschata, the Peruvian from Laurelia sempervirens, the New Holland or plume nutmeg from Atherosperma moschata, the Madagascar orclove nutmeg from Agathophyllum aroma- tecum, and the Californian or stinking nutmeg from Torreya myristica. The cotyledons of Nectandra Puchury were at one time offered in England as nutmegs.~~

~~Seemann, in Hooker's Journ. Bot., 1852, p. 83; Collingwood, Journ, Lin. Soc. Bot., 1869, p. 45; Lumsdaine, Pharm. Journ. [1], xi. p. 516; Wallace, Malay Archipelago, i. p. 452, 1869 ; Bickmore, Travels in E. Indian Archipelago, 1868, p. 225; Pharmacographia (2d. ed.), p. 502; Journ. Pharm. Soc. [3], xiii. p. 304.~~

~~1 This spice seems to be an especial favourite with the people of the United States, since the export to that country exceeds that to all Europe combined.~~

~~a re~~

~~667~~

~~WUPRIT EON~~

~~BY the term nutrition, employed in its widest sense,~~

~~is understood the process, or rather the assemblage of processes, concerned in the maintenance and repair of the living body as a whole, or of its constituent parts or organs. The term has, however, usually been limited in~~

~~systematic treatises on physiology to a study, mainly |~~

statistical, of the relations which exist between a living being and the medium which it inhabits, embracing a determination of the gains and losses of the organism under the different conditions to which it may be exposed. Such a statistical study has already been pursued in the article Dietetics, and we shall therefore in the present article, restricting our attention to the animal kingdom, consider nutrition in the more general sense above referred to, including—(1) a study of the function of digestion ; (2) a sketch of the processes concerned in

the absorption of matter into the blood ; (3) an account of |

the chemical processes which have their seat in the tissues and organs of the body ; (4) an account of the processes

whereby redundant matters, or such as are the products of |

waste, are removed from the animal economy ; (5) a refer- ence to the transformations of energy which are associated with the'exchange of the matters of the body ; (6) a brief reference to the processes of growth, decay, and death. With the exception of the chemical processes concerned in respiration, which will be treated of at length under

that head, this article will therefore include a short dis- |

cussion of the chemical operations of the body generally, and particularly as they are exemplified in the case of man,

General Introductory Considerations.—There is no con- ception which we can form in reference to a living being, however rudimentary its structure, which is so general as the following :—a living animal, so long as it manifests those attributes which characterize it as living, is the seat of continual transformations of potential into kinetic energy.

Such transformations are connected with oxidation of organic matters which, primarily derived from the vegetable kingdom, have been assimiluted, i.e., have been converted into the substance of the animal, and are effected through the agency of oxygen gas introduced into the body in the process of respiration. The act of living is an act of com- bustion in

which the animal body actually burns, and the energy at the disposal of the body, and which is employed in raising its temperature or effecting the movements which are essential to its continued life, is energy which was potential in the organic constituents burned. The main products of the combustion of the body are carbonic acid and water, besides certain other less 'completely oxidized substances, which are the analogues of the sooty and tarry products of combustion in a furnace. Of these products some, as carbonic acid and a part of the water formed, are removed from the body almost as soon as they are formed, while others are thrown off at intervals.

It follows from what has been stated that the act of living necessarily implies not only transformation of energy but actual waste of the matter of the body, and that if an animal is continuously to manifest the pheno- mena of life it must be supplied with oxidizable organic matter to take the place of that which has been oxidized. Accordingly, animal life is impossible unless the creature, besides receiving continual supplies of oxygen gas, receives at intervals supplies of food. The food of an animal con- sists (1) of oxidizable organic matters which, although they inay have been derived in part or wholly from some other animal body, have primarily been built up through the instrumentality of vegetable organisms,—these organic

matters, including large quantities of water, which form an important part of the substance of the body, and the presence in and passage of which through the organism is essential to the physical processes which have their seatin it,

In brief, the animal body is the seat of processes of dis- integration associated with the manifestation of kinetic energy, and of processes of integration in which oxidizable matters take the place of the oxidized constituents, If life is to continue, in a sense, indefinitely it is essential that the processes of integration and disintegration should balance, 7.¢., that the receipts of the body in assimilable oxidizable matter should balance the expenditure of the body both in matter and energy. There are, it will be

| observed, very close analogies between an animal and

such a mechanism as a steam-engine, the energy at the disposal of both being primarily derived from the oxida- tion of combustible matters. Some

of the most salient points of difference must, however, not be lost sight of. (1) The waste of the essential parts of such a machine as a steam-engine is insignificant, and bears no definite rela-

| tion to the work done. The kinetic energy of the machine | is primarily due to oxidation processes taking place in the

furnace, and in no respect to changes in the substance of the machine. The animal, on the other hand, wastes con-

| tinuously in all its parts and organs, and much of its energy

is derived immediately from material which has becoine part and parcel of the various mechanisms. (2) Any sub- stance capable of being rapidly oxidized (burned), and thus of generating heat, may be used as fuel for a steam- engine, provided its combustion admits of being conducted with safety in its furnace, whilst the substances which can form the food of animals belong to a limited number of groups, which include but a comparatively small number of bodies. The constituents of food have not only to supply energy to the body, but they must further be cap- able of prior conversion into the very substance of the animal body, into its very "flesh and blood."

Moreover, the constituents of food must be free from all traces of the peculiar substances which we term "poisons," and which by their presence have the power of impairing and arresting the action of various organs of the body.

I.—Function or DIGESTION.

Hunger and Thirst.—These terms are used to express peculiar sensations which are produced by and give ex- pression to general wants of the system, satisfied respect- ively by the ingestion of organic solids containing sub- stances capable of acting as food, and by water or liquids and solids containing water.

Hunger is a peculiarly indefinite sensation of craving or want which is referred to the stomach, but with which is often combined, always indeed in

its most pronounced stages, a general feeling of weakness or faintness. The earliest stages are unattended with suffering, and, leading the animal to wish and seek for food, are characterized as "appetite for food." Hunger is normally appeased by the introduction of solid or semi-solid nutriment into the stomach, and it is probable that the almost immediate alleviation of the sensation under these circumstances is in part due to a local influence, perhaps connected with a free secretion of gastric juice. Essentially, however, the sensation of hunger is a mere local expression of a general want, and this local expression ceases when the want is satisfied, even though only liquid and no solid food is introduced into the stomach, or even though no food be introduced into the stomach, the needs of the economy :

matters belong to a few well-defined groups ; (2) of mineral | being satisfied by the introduction of food through other

channels, as, for example, when food which admits of being readily absorbed is injected into the large intestine.

Thirst is a peculiar sensation of dryness and heat local- ized in the tongue and throat. Although thirst may be artificially produced by drying, as by the passage of a cur- rent of air over the mucous membrane of the above parts, normally it depends upon an impoverishment of the system in water. And, when this impoverishment ceases, in which- ever way this be effected, the sensation likewise ceases. The injection of water into the blood, the stomach, or the large intestine appeases thirst, though no fluid is brought in contact with the part to which the sensation is referred.

The sensations the causes of which we have briefly attempted to trace lead us, or when urgent compel us, to take food and drink into the mouth. Once in the mouth, the entrance to the alimentary canal, the food begins to undergo a series of processes, the object of which is to extract from it as much as possible of its nutritive con- stituents. It cannot be sufficiently emphasized that food in the alimentary canal is, strictly speaking, outside the confines of the body; as much so as the fly grasped in the leaves of the insectivorous Dionea is outside of the plant itself. 'The mechanical and chemical processes to which the food is subjected in the stomach and

intestines are pro- cesses which have their seat and conditions outside the body which it is destined to nourish, though unquestion- ably the body is no passive agent, and innumerable glands have to come into action in order to supply the chemical agents which shall dissolve and render assimilable those constituents of the food which are capable of being ab- sorbed into the organism, and of forming part and parcel of its substance.

Structure of the Organs of Digestion in Relation to their Function.—The processes to which the food is subjected, though manifold, are divisible into two great groups: (1) the food must be subjected to the action of certain juices which dissolve insoluble alimentary matters, and modify these no less than certain of the soluble alimentary sub- stances ; and (2) it must be mechanically mixed with those juices, and propelled more or less slowly from beginning to end of the alimentary canal. In accordance with this twofold function the alimentary canal is divisible into two distinct but intercalated anatomical tubes,—(1) an internal tube of mucous membrane, and (2), investing this closely, an external muscular tube.

The musculo-membranous double tube thus formed is not, indeed, regularly tubular throughout. At the beginning it forms the irre- gular cavity of the mouth, which contains the tongue aud the mas- ticatory teeth. Thence it passes through the fawces and beneath the pendulous wela and soft palate into the pharynx. Afterwards it proceeds as a regular tube, the esophagus, or gullet, until the level of the diaphragm is reached,—the muscular partition be- tween the thorax and the abdomen. Having passed through this structure, the narrow tube of the cesophagus suddenly dilates at the cardiac orifice into the bag called the stomach, at the further or pyloric orifice of which the tube resumes its narrow uniform calibre, and forms successively the duodenum, the jejunwm, and the tlewm,— parts of the small intestine, of which, in man, the duodenum takes up twelve fingers' breadth, the ileum the lower three-fifths, and the jejunum the remainder of the total length of 20 feet. The small intestine diminishes somewhat in calibre from duodenum to ileum, and at the lower end of the latter opens suddenly into the much wider large intestine, which it joins, not at the extreme end, which is a cul-de-sac, the caput cexcwm colt, but at a point a little lower down. The margins of the aperture by which the small opens into the large intestine point or project into the latter in such a manner that,

while they readily permit the passage of matters from small to large intestine, any backward movement of the contents of the large intestine would have the effect of compressing the lips of the opening and closing it; this arrangement constitutes the so-called ilio-cacal valve. Connected with the caput cxwcum coli is a small diverticulum like a narrow glove finger, called the vermiform appendage. The first and greater part of the large intestine is known as the colon, the last as the rectwm. The total length is from 5 to 6 feet. Its lower orifice is called the anus.

Both muscular and membranous (mucous) tubes are continuous

from mouth to anus, and at these, the superior and inferior orifices, the mucous membrane which constitutes what we have hitherto termed the membranous tube is continuous with the skin which covers the general surface of the body. This mucous membranc is covered throughout at its free surface by an epithelium, and gives lodgment to glands, whose characters differ in different parts of the tube in accordance with the function of the part. Below the epithelium is a connective tissue analogous to the cwtts vera of the skin, which in parts has the character of ordinary fibro- areolar tissue, but in all parts from the stomach downwards has the character of so-called adenoid connective tissue, as it is found in the follicles of lymphatic glands. Its meshes support a rich supply of fine blood-vessels,lymph- atic vessels, and doubtless also & of delicate nervous filaments. Besides these elements there are found numerous small bundles, or in parts even sheets, of in- voluntary muscular fibres, which probably give to the mucous membrane the power of limited self-contraction, of such a nature as to further the flux and- reflux of fluids in the myriad lymphatic vessels of the part, and perhaps to influence in no small Neston the outpouring of the secretion of cer- tain of the glands. To the fairly continuous tract or sheet of in- voluntary muscle which lies at the base or deepest part of the mucous membrane or mucosa the term of musculartS mucosa (tunica) is Fic. 1.—Divisions of the Alimentary

applied. Canal. M, mouth; Ph, pharynx; Cs,

In addition to the glands which lieembeddedinand open upon the surface of the mucous membrane of the alimentary canal, others of larger size and not

~~in immediate relation with its walls communi- cate with the interior of the tube by ducts which open into it, and~~

~~cesophagus; 8, stomach; D, duo- denum; J, jejunum; I, ileum; AV, appendix vermiformis; AC, ascend- ing colon; HF, hepatic flexure; TC, transverse colon; SF, splenic flexure; DC, descending colon; Sg, sigmoid flexure ; R, rectuin; L, larynx; e, Eus- tachian tube; G, gall-bladder; H, hepatic duct; DC', common bile-~~

~~duct; P, pancreatic duct. (From~~

~~Turner's Anatomy, fig. 177.)~~

~~which pour into it their secre- tion ; such glands are the salivary glands, the pancreas, and the liver.~~

~~The muscular tube in the greater part of its extent consists of two layers of involuntary, non-striated, pale, muscular fibres,—an inner layer whose fibres encircle the tube, and an outer one whose fibres ruu parallel to the long axis of the tube. But this is not the arrangement of every part. There is an apparent rather than a real exception in the stomach, where some layers of fibres of the circular coat course over the dilated walls of the alimentary tube in an oblique direction, giving rise to an oblique layer. In the cesophagus or gullet, besides the typical circular and longitudinal layers, there is at the upper part a second longitudinal layer which takes up a position internal to—that is, nearer the mucous mem- brane thau—the circular layers. In the upper part of the gullet also the muscular fibres are not unstriped, but, although certainly involuntary, are striated like voluntary muscles.~~

~~In the mouth the muscular tube is most irregular and most defective, for the mucosa is in parts directly applied to the bony boundaries, as over the hard palate and gums ; in another part it invests the muscular prominence of the tongue ; whilst in other regions it lies upon the constrictors of the pharynx and the inner aspect of certain other muscles, as those of the cheeks, lips, and floor of the mouth. The membranous tube is united to the mus- cular tube by a loose layer of connective tissue containing many blood-vessels~~

and lymphatic vessels and nerves for the supply of the mucosa ; it is often called the submucosa.

The mucous membrane is the seat of various secreting glands, which lie embedded in its substance and open upon its surface,— simple or branched tubular recesses running through the depth of the layer, lined by epithelium, continuous with, though not always resembling, that of the surface, and opening at the surface by minute pores. In the mouth, pharynx, and cesophagus those form the acinows or racemose glands, which, according to certain sub- ordinate features which they present, and also according to certain of the characters of the fluids which they secrete, are separated into mucous and serous glands. In the stomach they are represented

: NUTRITION

by the simple or branched tubular gastric glands. In the duo- denum we find them as simple tubular deep sockets, the glands or crypts of Lieberkiihn, and also as the compound acinous glands of Brunner, which dip below the level of the mucosa and lie in the submucosa. In the jejunum, ileum, and large intestine they appear again as the crypts or follicles of Lieberkiihn.

The membranous tube is not everywhere exactly concentric and conterminous with the muscular tube. In the mouth and pharynx it is almost entirely so, but at the gullet the muscular tube so tightly encloses the membranous that the latter is forced into longitudinal plications to find room for itself. In the stomach the membranous layer is raised into ridges or rwgx, which intersect and give the surface a honeycomb-like aspect. In the upper part of the small intestine the membranous tube is raised into deep annular or, more correctly, crescentic folds, running across the direction of the gut like incomplete diaphragms, or a series of membranous ledges ; these are the valvulw conniventes. In the colon the two tubes are so disposed as to form a regular series of saccules or pouches, adding largely to the capacity of the gut. All these foldings greatly increase the superficies of the membranous tube. A further enlargement is effected in the small intestine in an ex- ceedingly interesting fashion ; the surface of the mucosa is thickly studded with innumerable fine short projections resembling the pile of velvet. These are invested by surface epithelium, and amongst them,

~~at their feet, open the before-mentioned crypts of Lieberkiihn, They are the so-called vild¢, Each contains a lymph- atic vessel, blood-vyessels, and involuntary muscular fibres, all sup- ported by adenoid connective tissue like that of the mucosa below ; the lymphatic is in the axis of the villus, the muscles form the next layer, and the blood-vessels lie immediately beneath the epithelium. When the muscular layer of the villus contracts it must of necessity compress the lymph-vessel, whilst causing no impediment to the flow of blood.~~

~~We have described the mucosa of the stomach and intestines as containing a framework of adenoid reticular tissue like the tissue of lymphatic follicles. It is, indeed, identical with this, —a net- work of branched cells with oval nuclei, the meshes of which are crowded with lymph-corpuscles with round nuclei. At certain points in the intestines the adenoid tissue of the mucosa presents local nodular enlargements; the mucosa at these points becomes so much thicker that it swells up at the free surface beneath the epithelium into rounded eminences about as large as millet-seeds or the heads of small pins ; and at the under surface of the mucosa it dips into the submncous tissue in a similar manner. At the base of this nodule of adenoid tissue in the submucosa there is usually a network of wide, thin-walled, lymphatic vessels. Many of these rounded masses are scattered irregularly over the small and large intestines as the solitary follicles or glands, but at the lower end of the ileum they form little colonies, often covering an area an inch or more in length, situated at that part of the intestine which is remote from the attachment of the mesentery. They then con- stitute the so-called Peyer's patches.~~

~~Nodular adenoid masses are, however, not limited to the adenoid mucosa of the intestines. They are occasionally, though rarely, found in the stomach ; they exist beneath the mucous membrane of the tongue, and a colony of them forms the mass of the tonsil on each side, —the almond-shaped body situated between the posterior and anterior pillars of the fauces.~~

~~The intrinsic nerves of the alimentary tube consist of two sys- tems of nervous networks with ganglion-cells lying at the nodes ; one is found in the submucous layer (plewus of Meissner), the other lies between the~~

longitudinal and circular muscles (plewus of Aucr- bach, or plexus myentericus).

The whole of the intestines, and the stomach as well, are stis- tained in the abdominal cavity by sheets of delicate membrane, formed by folds of peritoneum, and called, in the case of the intes- tinal portion of the tube, the mesentery. Between the layers of the mesentery run the vessels and nerves for the supply of the bowel. In addition to blood-vessels there are numerous thin-walled lymph- atic vessels called dacteals, which are fed by the rich network of lymphatic vessels of the mucosa and submucosa, and which run in the mesentery to the back of the abdominal cavity. Here they are collected into a large lymphatic reservoir, the receptaculum chyli, from which a duct, the thoracic duct, proceeds along the side of the vertebral column to open into the venous system at the junction of the subclavian and jngular veins on the left side of the neck, The lacteal and lymphatic vessels, whose course has been briefly sketched, are interrupted at many points by the presence of lymph- atic glands. These may be simply regarded as labyrinthine sys- tems of vessels into which the simple afferent lymphatic or lacteal vessels open, and each of which is surrounded and penetrated by adenoid connective tissue, like that of the intestinal mucosa. After a meal the lacteal vessels are filled with a milky fluid, the chyle. They were discovered by Aselli in the year 1626.

It must not be thought that the glands of the mucous membrane of the alimentary canal are alone engaged in the preparation of the solvent digestive fluids. Other organs there are lying away from

the alimentary canal which pour their secretions into it by ducts at various points. In the neighbourhood of the mouth there are three pairs of salivary glands. The parotid glands lie outside the cheek over the lower jaw, just in front of the meatus of the car. The ducts of this pair course along the cheeks and pierce them opposite the second upper molar tooth on each side; these are the two ducts of Stenson. A second pair of glands, the submawillary, lies be- neath the ramus of the lower jaw and beneath the floor of the mouth ; their ducts run forward to open beneath the tongue ; these are the ducts of Whar- ton. The third pair, the sublingual, lies on the floor of the mouth,

beneath the mucous membrane anterior to the openings of the ducts of Wharton. The ducts of these glands are numer- ous and open by many apertures on the floor of the mouth, some opening into the ducts of Wharton. These constitute the ducts of Rivinus. About three or four inches below the pylorus the dnets of two large glands open into the small intestine by a common orifice ; these are the ducts of Wirsung, or panereatic ducts, from the pancreas on the left, and the (4 common bile-duct from the liver on "4 the right.

Movements of the Alimentary Canal.— When food isintroduced into the mouth it is submitted Fic. 2.—Nutritive System of Dog, to the operation of mastication, @ SS°Pnasus or gullet; B, lungs;

5s ; C, vena cava; D, liver; E, sto- The incisors or cutting teeth mach; F, spleen; G, receptacu- me ie B 5 lun chyli; H, pancreas; I, duo- divide it into portions of suitable en: Fag of biliary : aha and hepatic ducts; jejunuin ; size, which are thrust under the Pheu: Mt eweum ; Ny colon: broad faces of the molar or grind- 0, rectum pom ee D ss supra-renal capsules above ; ing teeth by the alternate move- urinary bladder; 8, thoracic duct; ments of tongue and cheeks, 1, parotid gland; 2 salivary ; : gland of neck; 3, subinaxillary Softer portions of food are and other, salivary glands; 4, . jugular and subclavian veins; 5 crushed between tongue and hard Jse¥lar and thymus and thyroid palate, especially such as are gaads; 6, entrance of thoracic ken f. best id en ten uct into left subclavian vein, ta en tor t elr Sapl proper 1€S8 near epee 2 a . ma | 1 rags 8, right auricle ; 9, left ventricle : t please the palate and - oe 10, right ventricle 3 11, gall-blad- the flow of saliva. Mastication der; 19, vena porta 3 18, anes. . enteric glands; 1 ymphatic consists of movements of the vessels ; 15, lacteal vessels ; 16, lower jaw upon the upper, viz., — of the portal vein ; 17, . ureters. (1) vertical movements brought "°*"S about by the temporal and the internal pterygoid and masseter muscles on the one hand, and by the digastric, mylo-hyoid, and other depressor muscles attached to the lower jaw on the other ; (2) horizontal movements, for- wards and backwards, effected by the external pterygoid muscles ; when one of these muscles alone contracts, the forward movement of the chin is changed toa forward and lateral movement by the rotation of the jaw around the opposite condyle as a pivot; after being moved forward the jaw is retracted by the horizontal fibres of the

temporal muscle ; (3) grinding movements effected by a combina- tion of the various muscles already mentioned.

That the tongue and cheeks are not frequently nipped be- tween the teeth is an indication of the perfect co-ordination of a very complex series of movements. The controlling sensations are chiefly conveyed along the fibres of the fifth cranial nerve. The motor fibres of the same nerve supply the chief but not all the muscles of mastication.

After the food has been reduced to a proper consistency by the combined influence of the mechanical movements of the jaws, tongue, and cheeks, and the action of the saliva, it is rolled into a mass or bolus ready for swallow- ing. The bolus is pushed on the dorsum of the tongue, which is hollowed into a shallow trough to receive it. It is easy to conceive how this shape of the tongue is brought about when we consider that the tongue is provided with vertical fibres, with horizontal antero-posterior fibres, and

with horizontal lateral fibres, in addition to its extrinsic muscles. The tip of the tongue is then raised against the hard palate in such a manner as to form an angle in which the bolus lies. By the approximation of the tongue to the palate the angle is lessened and the bolus is, in consequence, driven backwards. This constitutes the first stage in the act of swallowing, and is a voluntary act. At the end of the first stage the morsel of food has passed beyond the level of the anterior pillars of the fauces. The acts of the second stage are very complicated, and prob- ably are entirely involuntary. The posterior pillars of the fauces approach one another in the middle line, and the uvula falls into the space left between them. The fleshy curtain thus extemporized is then drawn up towards the hind wall of the pharynx, which is drawn a little forwards and upwards to meet it. Thus the passage into the nose is completely shut. Meanwhile the vocal cords of the larynx draw near to one another ; the epiglottis is pushed backwards over the larynx, and the whole larynx is drawn suddenly upwards and forwards beneath the root of the tongue. In this manner the entrance into the respiratory passages is protected. Finally, the anterior pillars of the fauces are made to meet over the tongue in order to pre- vent the regurgitation of the food. There is but one way open to the bolus; the sudden drawing forward of the larynx and

~~the base of the tongue in fact "cuts the ground" from under the ball of food, which thereupon falls into the grasp of the "constrictors" and enters upon the third and final stage in the act of deglutition. This, even more certainly than the second stage, is purely involuntary. The constrictors contract from above down- wards and force the morsel of food into the upper portion of the esophagus. Once in the gullet, the mass of food is driven downwards by the so-called " peristaltic" move- ments of the tube—the circular fibres contract one after another from above downwards, lessening the calibre of the tube in successive stages, whilst the longitudinal fibres seem to have the function of drawing the tube over the bolus as a stocking is drawn over the foot.~~

~~Deglutition is a reflex act, in so far as it is involuntary, the centre for which lies in the medulla oblongata; de- struction of this centre implies incapacity to swallow. The centre, though normally under the influence of the higher centres, may, however, act quite independently of these, as is evidenced by the fact that animals in which the cerebral hemispheres were absent have occasionally sur- vived for a short time, and have still been able to suck and swallow. Although the excised gullet often exhibits a true peristalsis, which doubtless depends upon a local nervous mechanism, the normal movements in the body seem to be regulated from the medulla oblongata.~~

~~At the entrance of the stomach the food meets the barrier opposed by the contracted cardiac orifice; the contraction must be overcome before the food can gain admittance. The relaxation is certainly an active process under the control of the medulla oblongata through the vagus nerve, since section of the vagi causes a block to the progress of food from the cesophagus into the stomach.~~

~~In the stomach the food is detained for a period which varies very greatly with its digestibility, but which in the human subject is not often longer than four or five hours. It is subjected to a rubbing and rolling action of the stomach-walls and a modified peristalsis, which causes the food to move slowly from the cardiac orifice along the greater curvature to the pylorus, whence it returns along the small curvature to the cardiac end again. The gastric movements are slight at first, but gradually increase in vigour. The pylorus is tightly closed at the beginning of a meal, but becomes more and~~

more relaxed as digestion proceeds, so that, whilst at first only the finer parts of the

nUTRILTIOCS

gastric contents can pass, afterwards the coarser parts and even solid lumps of imperfectly-digested aliments are permitted to escape into the duodenum. We possess little accurate knowledge as to the nervous mechanism of the stomach. Are the movements caused immediately by the local nervous ganglia situated in its walls? Or does the impulse to move descend directly from the encephalic centre along the pneumogastric nerves? All that we know is (1) that movements of an excised stomach are induced with great difficulty, (2) that stimulation of the vagus will often cause movements of the stomach, and (3) that sec- tion of the vagi impedes the passage of food out of the stomach. The movements of the stomach have been said to cease altogether during sleep.

When the gastric contents, to which the term chyme is often applied, pass through the pylorus into the duodenum, they begin to move onward by the pure peristaltic action of the small intestines. The powerful annular fibres con- tract one after another, driving the food onward, as water may be squeezed along an india-rubber tube by the com- pression of the hand, The longitudinal fibres contract in such a manner that the intestine is drawn over the advanc- ing mass. The movements always occur (in health at least) in a direction from the stomach to the ileo-cecal valve; here they stop and never pass as a continuous wave to the large intestine.

Peristalsis may be exhibited by an excised intestine in- dependently of any extrinsic nervous apparatus. Stimu- lation of the vagus nerve, as a rule, excites the intestinal movements, while excitation of the splanchnic nerves tends to still them. When the blood stagnates in the intestinal vessels active peristalsis ensues. As the splanchnic nerves are also the vaso-motor nerves of the intestines, excitation of them produces constriction of the blood-vessels and com- parative bloodlessness.

After passing through the ileo-czecal valve the intes- tinal contents, which have been very greatly diminished in amount owing to the process of absorption that has gone on, quickly assume the characteristic appearance

~~of feces. The undigested and insoluble parts of the food, mixed with mucus, with epithelial débris, and with some sub- stances derived from the secretions of the alimentary canal, notably with some biliary products, must be cast out ; this is effected by the act of defecation. The anus is normally kept firmly closed by the contraction of two sphincter muscles,—the external, which is one of the skeletal muscles, and the internal, which is formed by a special development of the lowest rings of the circular layer of muscles of the intestine. In the act of defecation these sphincters are relaxed, while the contraction of the rectum forces its contents downwards. The levatores ani are brought into play by the will and exert an action similar to that previously referred to as performed by the longi- tudinal fibres of the intestine. Of special influence in aiding the expulsion of the contents of the bowel is the contraction of the abdominal muscles which follows a pre- liminary fixation of the diaphragm by a deep inspiration.~~

~~The act of defecation is essentially a reflex act. The centre which presides over the sphincters of the anus lies in the lumbar portion of the spinal cord. This centre is under the control of the brain, under the influence of which its activity is either increased or inhibited.~~

~~Vomiting, or the ejection of the contents of the stomach through the mouth, is an act of considerable complexity ; (1) the cardiac orifice of the stomach is relaxed or, to be accurate, thrown open by the operation of some reflex nervous mechanism with which the vagus is connected ; (2) contraction of the muscular coat of the stomach ocenrs; (8) the abdominal walls are powerfully compressed, and the diaphragm is at the same time strongly fixed by closure of the glottis. As concurrent phenomena in ordinary vomiting may~~

~~be mentioned the sense of nausea and the free flow of saliva which . occurs during and indeed before the act.~~

~~Nea iT a ON~~

~~Vomiting may, within certain limits, be inhibited by taking a series of deep and rapid inspirations at a time when the sense of nausea is becoming unbearable.~~

~~*True vomiting seems to be impossible without the aid of the abdominal muscles, as, for example, when the abdomen is laid open. In such conditions emctics cause active opening of the car- diac orifice and movements of the stomach-walls, but not the full and free expulsion of the contents. Vomiting is usually a reflex act, the centre for which lies in the medulla oblongata near the centre for respiration, though it is reasonable to suppose that it may occur not only as a reflex act but as a result of direct stimula- tion of the ccutre or centres associated with it.*~~

~~*Secretions of the Alimentary Canal.—Production of the Alimentary Juices, —We have described the movements of the alimentary tube by which the food is triturated and agitated, and finally propelled from mouth to anus. One object of these movements is to mix together the food and certain solvent juices which are poured upon the food at various points. We have now to give an account of these juices and their properties. They are produced in, or by the agency of, the epithelium cells lining the interior of glands which are either situated in the walls of the alimentary canal or which empty their secretion into it. Though these cells derive the materials necessary to their metabolic activity from the blood, the substances which they elaborate and which are characteristic of the secre- tions that they help to form are not found in the blood, but are products of the activity of the protoplasm of the cells themselves. The act of secretion is a function of the living cell, and not a mere act of filtration or diffusion through the vascular walls to the cell-substance. It often involves the elaboration of entirely new substances. The act of secretion is, or may be, under the control of the nervous system; it may be started, inhibited, and the products of the secretion may be variously modified, by the stimulation of distant nerves. In some glands cer- tainly, and possibly in all, the elaboration of the specific secretion of the gland takes place in two well-defined stages, and the two stages are indicated by differences in the anatomical appearances of the gland-cells.*~~

~~*The characteristic constituents of the several juices which are specially concerned in the chemical changes of the alimentary canal are certain so-called "unorganized " ferments, which we shall, following the suggestion of Kiihne, denominate enzymes, Like all ferments, these are capable, under suitable circumstances, of initiating specific changes in certain bodies with*~~

which they are brought into contact, changes which may be incommen- surably great when contrasted with the magnitude of the mass of the ferment engaged. 'Unorganized " or, as they have also been called, "unformed" ferments differ, how- ever, from the "organized" or "formed" in that, whilst they are the products of the activity of living cells, when once formed they cease to be living, are unconnected with any organized form, and have no power of reproduction or increase.

The enzymes for the most part exert their action un- impaired in the presence of certain bodies which kill the great majority of organized ferments ; thus salicylic acid does not hinder peptic and tryptic digestion, whilst it prevents the putrefactive changes which are very apt to occur in the latter case, and which are connected with the developinent of organized ferments. Certain enzymes, as the diastatic ferment of saliva and pancreatic juice, are, however, destroyed by salicylic acid.

As will be shown in detail in the sequel, the secreting cells of glands which produce enzymes exhibit marked differences corresponding to different states of activity. In the case of the secreting cells of the pancreas the cells appear to produce and store up for a time a body, a zymogen, from which subsequently the tryptic enzyme trypsin is set free. The progress of research may perhaps

establish the existence of zymogens corresponding to the other enzymes.

Usually the glandular organs which produce the aliment- ary Juices contain stored up within them their character- istic enzymes, which may be extracted by digesting the comminuted organ in water, or still better in glycerin, which dissolves them nearly all, and furnishes solutions which preserve their activity long unimpaired, Enzymes are all insoluble in strong alcohol, so that the tissues from which they are to be extracted may be first de- hydrated by digestion in absolute alcohol and afterwards extracted with glycerin. Solutions of enzymes are rendered inactive by boiling or by exposure to a temperature above 70° ©. The principal enzymes of the alimentary canal belong either to the group of proteolytic or to that of diastatie or amylolytic ferments: the enzymes of the first group (pepsin and

~~trypsin) dissolve proteids and effect their more or less perfect decomposition ; the enzymes of the second class (as ptyalin and the diastatic ferment of the pancreas) dissolve starch and produce from it a series of bodies which will be discussed in reference to the action of saliva on starch,~~

~~Besides the proteolytic and amylolytic ferments, there occur in the alimentary canal a curdling ferment, an inverting ferment, and perhaps a fut-decomposing ferment.~~

~~All enzymes exert a more energetic action at a moder- ately high than at a low temperature, though the influence of a rise in temperature is more marked in some cases than in others. The reaction of the medium in which they are placed influences remarkably the activity of cer- tain enzymes ; thus pepsin, the proteolytic ferment of the stomach, is inactive in neutral or alkaline solutions, the pre- sence of a free acid being essential to its activity, whilst trypsin, the proteolytic ferment of the pancreas, acts with feebleness in solutions which are neutral or faintly acid, since it needs for the full exercise of its powers a decidedly alkaline medium. 'The enzymes appear to possess the power of rapidly inducing, at the temperature of the animal body, in bodies subjected to them similar chemical operations to those which can be brought about with great slowness by prolonged heating with dilute mineral acids, or by the prolonged action of boiling water or superheated steam. These operations are of the nature of hydrolytic decomposi- tions, that is to say, such as are connected with the union of the elements of water with the decomposing body.~~

~~Salivary Glands and Secretion of Saliva.—There are no secreting glands in the body which have been sub- jected to so elaborate a study as the salivary glands, whether we consider their structure or the circumstances which influence or accompany the act of secretion. We shall therefore give the results of researches on these glands at much greater length than those referring to the other glands concerned in the preparation of the aliment- ary juices.~~

~~As has been already said, the saliva is secreted by several glands of which the ducts pour their secretion into the cavity of the mouth, where it is mingled and constitutes the "mixed saliva." The chief of these glands are~~

the parotid, the submaxillary, and the sublingual glands, though their secretion is mixed with that of small glands (mucous and serous) scattered through the mucous membrane of the mouth and tongue, which are included under the term "buccal" glands.

The salivary glands all belong to the group of acinous or compound racemose glands. According to the researches of Heidenhain, they may, however, be divided into two groups, which he has denominated serous or albuminous and mucous glands, according to the structure of the cells of their acini, their chemical characters, and the nature of the secretion which they elaborate.

To the group of serous glands belong the parotid of man and the majority of animals, the submaxillary gland of the rabbit, and some of the glands of the tongue; to that of mucous glands belong the submaxillary and sublingual glands in most animals, some of the glands of the tongue, and the cesophageal glands. Glands belonging to the former of these classes secrete a fluid containing some, though it may be only a small quantity, of a proteid coagul- able by heat, and resembling, if not identical with, serum- albumin ; the mucous glands, on the other hand, as their name implies, secrete a liquid free from albumin, but con- taining more or less mucin.

In the serous glands the epithelium lining the acini is composed of comparatively small, rounded, or polygonal cells, of which the outlines are not very distinct until acted upon by certain reagents. No cell-wall is present ; the protoplasm, which is not coloured by carmine, presents many dark granules, and surrounds an irregularly saccular or rounded nucleus which is coloured by carmine.

In the mucous glands the characteristic (mucous) cells of the alveoli are large and clear, very faintly granular, with a rounded or oval nucleus near their periphery sur- rounded by a trace of protoplasm. They possess a cell-wall, and a strongly refracting process which springs from the cell in the neighbourhood of the nucleus.

~~In addition to the characteristic mucous cells there are found in the alveoli of most mucous salivary glands when examined in a state of rest, situated at some parts of the periphery, #.e., lying more internal than, or nearer to, the membrana propria than the mucous cells, half-moon-shaped aggregations of small cells, possessed of a round nucleus easily stained with carmine, and containing albumin ; to these aggregations the term of demilunes or lunule of Gianuzzi has been applied. In some cases we find alveoli in which these small cells are not arranged in demilunes, but form a row of cells lying external to the mucous cells, and completely encircling them (see fig. 3).~~

~~As has been said, in certain mucous glands the mucous cells are supplemented by the cells of the demilunes, though there are other mucous glands, as those of the tongue, where the typical mucous cells alone occur, There are glands, and the submaxillary of man is an example, which are termed mixed glands, inasmuch as some of the acini have all the characters of serous, others of mucous glands. The submaxillary gland of the guinea-pig possesses, accord- ing to Klein, a structure undistinguishable from that of the pancreas.~~

~~We shall not enter, in this place, into a detailed descrip- tion of the innervation of any one of the salivary glands, but shall confine ourselves to the following statements.~~

~~Each salivary gland is supplied by at least three classes of fibres, viz., secretory, vaso-constrictor, and vaso-dilator fibres, of which the first and the third are conveyed to the glands in branches of cerebral nerves ; these are, the chorda tympani for the submaxillary and sublingual, and the auriculo-temporal (which, however, derives them through communications with the otic ganglion from the glosso- pharyngeal nerve) for the parotid. The second class, the vaso-constrictor or vaso-motor fibres, run in sympathetic trunks. When, therefore, one of the cranial branches supplying a gland is stimulated there occur two acts, viz., secretion and simultaneous dilatation of blood-vessels ; that these two acts are not absolutely interdependent is proved by the fact that certain drugs paralyse the one set of fibres, but leave the other intact. When, on the other hand, the sympathetic filaments supplying the gland are stimulated, the blood-vessels~~

of the gland contract, and there is produced a small quantity of saliva differing in physical characters and chemical composition from that obtained under the circumstances first referred to, Accord-

NOTH

ing to Heidenhain, however, in each of the two kinds of nerves supplying a salivary gland there exist, besides the vascular nerve-fibres, secretory and trophic fibres, though the number of one or other of these classes may be insigni- ficant,—the secretory predominating in the cranial nerve branches, the trophic in the sympathetic. Stimulation of secretory fibres leads, according to Heidenhain, to an

| eee

ae ha Wain ee aN N@ieee Fia. 3.—Sections of a Mucous Gland of the Dog. A, during rest; B, after activity. (From Quain's Anatomy, fig. 505.)

increased flow of water, stimulation of the trophic to an increased secretion of specific substances and to an in- creased production of protoplasm.

When a salivary gland passes from the state of rest into that of activity it is at once the seat of an increased blood flow, which is associated with the dilatation of the blood- vessels of the organ. Under these circumstances, the blood leaving the gland presents a florid arterial colour, instead of the venous colour which characterizes the blood of the organ when at rest. This vascular dilatation is explained by the coming into action of the before-mentioned vaso- dilator fibres ; it is independent of the act of secretion.

As was shown in a now classical investigation of Ludwig, when the salivary glands are thrown into activity there is arise in temperature, so that the temperature of the saliva leaving the submaxillary gland may exceed by 1° °5 C. that of the blood flowing to the gland. This rise in temperature cannot be explained by a study of the chemical characters of the salivary secretion, but is doubtless the result of the increased metabolic changes which necessarily accompany the act of secretion in the gland-cells, and which chiefly affect their protoplasm.

~~*That the secretion of saliva (and indeed secretion in general) is not a mere act of filtration was proved by Carl Ludwig when he showed that saliva can be secreted*~~

~~*ATPR EPI ON*~~

~~*by a gland though the pressure within it is many times higher than that of the blood circulating through the On many grounds it may be positively asserted thatthe secreting cells are the primary*~~

~~*arteries which supply it.*~~

~~*agents in the withdrawal from the blood of the water necessary for the secretion, though the exact nature of the process is yet unknown; similarly, on the grounds stated below, we know that within the protoplasm of the gland- cells are formed the characteristic soluble constituents of the secretion.*~~

~~*The researches made during the last few years by Heiden- hain, and fully confirmed by a large number of observers, have demonstrated that in the salivary glands, as indeed in all secreting glands, structural and perfectly obvious microscopic changes occur, which stand in close relation to the different conditions of functional activity.*~~

~~*The resting gland-cell is large, but possesses compara- tively little protoplasm, and therefore comparatively little matter which can be stained by colouring bodies, especially by carmine ; it contains instead a store of material which has been elaborated in, or at the expense of, the protoplasm. This material does not constitute the specific matter of the secretion, but is its antecedent. That it differs chemically in the case of the mucous glands is proved by the fact cited by Heidenhain, and discovered by Watney and Klein, viz., that, whilst mucin is stained by hematoxylin, its antecedent (mucigen) is not affected by that colouring matter ; in all other respects the two bodies are identical. When, however, a gland passes into a state of activity, as, for example, by the irritation of its so-called secretory (trophic?) nerves, the gland-cells undergo the following changes, which may proceed simultaneously though not necessarily so:—the stored-up matter previously referred to is converted into soluble constituents of the*~~

~~secretion, and at the same time there occurs a growth of the proto- plasm of the cells, at the expense doubtless of the richer supply of lymph which during the secretory act bathes the gland;~~

~~The period of activity in so far as the gland-cell is |~~

~~concerned is indeed a period of removal of ready-made constituents of secretion, in some cases, as in the mucus- bearing cells of the mucous glands, a period of destruc- tion of cells laden with such constituents; but at the same time in all cases a period in which the protoplasmic constituents of the cells generally increase, and active pro- liferation of secreting cells occurs.~~

~~Whilst we have in a few sentences sketched the general characters of the changes which glands undergo during secretion, our picture is wanting in all details, and the reader is referred for further information to works on histology and physiology.~~

~~Glands of the Stomach and Secretion of Gastric Juice,— In vol. vii. p. 225 a brief description has been given of two kinds of glands which are found embedded in the mucous membrane of the stomach, and which are concerned in the preparation of the secretion of this organ, the so-called gastric juice. 'The first kind of glands, the "mucous glands of the stomach," so called from their having been formerly erroneously supposed to be engaged in the secre- tion of mucus only, are situated chiefly at the pyloric end (figs. 4, 5) of the stomach. The second kind, the so- called "peptic glands," owe their name to the view that they alone secreted the digestive gastric juice, and are found in most animals in the mucous membrane of other parts of the stomach than the pylorus. The pyloric glands are tubular glands, simple or compound, composed of a basement membrane lined by two kinds of epithelium- cells, (1) cylindrical epithelium-cells confined to the neck of the gland, (2) cylindrical or cubical epithelium-cells lining the part of the tube below the neck, and which,~~

~~though not very different in form from the cells of the neck, possess an entirely different function. The peptic glands of the older writers, now~~

usually called " glands of the fundus," present three varieties of epithelium cells. Their "neck" is lined by cylindrical epithelium similar to that of the neck of the pyloric glands. The deeper part of the glands is lined by small cubical "central " cells, below which and interposed between them and the base ment membrane is a discon- tinuous layer of large ovoid "border " cells, the so-called "peptic cells" of older writers.

During active digestion the cubical cells of both py- loric glands and glands of

s Fig. 5. Fie. 4.—Pyloric Gland, from a section of the Dog's stomach (Ebstein). m,

mouth; n, neck; tr, deep portion of a tubule cut transversely, Quain's Anatomy, fig. 515.)

Fig. 5.—Cardiac Gland, from the Dog's stomach (Klein and Noble Smith). Highly magnified. , base or fundus of a tubule; d, duct or mouth of gland; ¢, central cells; p, parietal cells. (From Quain's Anatomy, fig. 517.)

the fundus become swollen and granular ; after a period of

rest they return to their original size and assume a com-

paratively clear appearance. 'The ovoid cells also swell during digestion, but in other respects remain unchanged.

When the stomach is inactive, i.e. in the fasting con- dition, its mucous membrane is pale and the organ contains no fluid; the mucous membrane in the pyloric region presents an alkaline reaction. When, however, food enters the stomach, or the mucous membrane . is subjected to mechanical stimulation, an acid juice, the so-called gastric juice, is poured out, the act of secretion being accompanied by a reddening of the mucous membrane.

Evidence appears to be most conclusive in support of the view that the three kinds of epithelium-cells found in the stomach and its glands possess entirely separate func- tions. The epithelium-cells which line the interior of the stomach, and which, like those of the neck of both kinds of glands, are

cylindrical in shape, appear to be mucus- forming cells. The cubical cells which are found in the deeper parts of the pyloric glands appear functionally to be identical with the central cells of the glands of the fundus, both being engaged in forming the chief ferment of the gastric juice, viz., pepsin, whilst the ovoid cells of the glands of the fundus are the sole elaborators of the acid of the gastric juice. The glands which possess these

XVII.—85

(From

674

acid-forming cells have of late been termed (Langley) oxyntic glands (d£veuw, to render acid).

No accurate estimate can be formed of the amount of gastric juice secreted during twenty-four hours. It has been calculated to be between 20 and 30 pints.

Secretion of the gastric juice may occur after all the nerves going to the stomach have been divided, though it is for a time arrested after division of the pneumogastric nerves. It is probable that the process of gastric digestion is essentially under the control of an intrinsic nervous mechanism situated in the mucous membrane, though this is normally influenced by the higher nerve centres.

Liver and Secretion of Bile.—The structure of the liver has already been sufficiently described (vol. vii. p. 229 sq.), and need not be further alluded to in this place. The secretion of the liver, the bile, is being continually formed, though not always at the same rate. In animals possessed of a gall-bladder it is stored in the intervals of digestion in this reservoir. When food is taken into the stomach the bile begins to be secreted in larger quantities, the maximum being reached about six hours after the meal. 'As the so-called acid "chyme," to be afterwards referred to, passes the opening of the bile-duct in the duodenum, it is probable that a stream of bile is poured upon it by the reflex contraction of the gall-bladder. During the time when bile is being secreted much heat is evolved in the liver. The bile, as will be

shown in the sequel, should be looked upon as a liquid containing only certain, for the most part useless, by-products resulting from great chemical operations going on in the liver. Little is known as yet of the exact changes which occur in the liver-cells during activity, nor of the manner in which the nervous system influences the secretion of bile.

Pancreas and the Secretion of Pancreatic Juice.—The pan creas possesses a structure which presents great resemblance to that of serous salivary glands, and its alkaline secretion was until lately looked upon as closely resembling the saliva.

The secreting cells of the pancreas, which differ but little microscopically from those of such a salivary gland as the parotid, exhibit very marked differences, which correspond to different states of functional acti- vity. During a period of glandular reposethe cells con- tain innumerable granules, which are congregated atthat side of the cell which lies towards the centre of the acini (fig. 6, B). The A B outer or peripheral Frc. 6.—Pancreas of Rabbit. A, during rest; B, in

. activity. a, inner granular zone; 0, outer trans- ah ma of ed ah parent zone; ¢, lumen; d, indentation at junction—the smaller par

of two cells. (From Foster's Physiology, fig. 43.) of the resting cell—is clear. After a period of glandular activity the granular half of each cell is found to have diminished greatly (fig. 6, A); the whole cell is clear and distinctly smaller than before, and its behaviour towards colouring matters is very different. The pancreas, when perfectly fresh and just removed from the yet warm body of an animal which is killed, does not contain, ready formed, all ferments which will in the sequel be referred to as characterizing the pancreatic juice. If we treat the gland, for instance, with glycerin, which possesses the power of extracting and dissolving all the ferments, we fail to obtain a solution which possesses the power of digesting proteids ; but, instead, we find a substance in the solution from which, by the addition of a little acetic acid, the pro- teolytic ferment may be formed.

HUTRITIOEa

The cells of the pancreas thus elaborate a substance which is the antecedent of the proteolytic ferment, and which yields it when it passes into the pancreatic ducts ; it is customary to speak of this body as zymogen or ferment- former, because it gives rise to one of the chief enzymes or ferments of the juice. The secretion of pancreatic fluid is slight except during digestion. After the taking of a full meal the secretion is suddenly exalted, reaching its maxi- mum two or three hours afterwards. The secretion then diminishes until a period which extends from the fifth to the seventh hours, when a rise occurs, which lasts to between the ninth and eleventh hours after food. The secretion then gradually sinks, until it absolutely ceases. Stimulation of the gastric mucous membrane starts the secretion of pancreatic juice ; it is arrested during nausea and vomiting, as also when the central end of the divided pneumogastric is stimulated.

Intestinal Glands and their Secretion.—The mucous mem- brane of both the small and the large intestine contains embedded in its substance innumerable simple tubular glands, the so-called crypts or glands of Lieberkithn, which are lined by a single layer of cylindrical epithelium con- tinuous with and resembling that covering the exposed surface of the intestine. Very little is known as to the function of these glands, whose office is probably widely different in different sections of the intestinal tube, particu- larly in the large as distinguished from the small intestine. We do know that the epithelium-cells of these glands are capable of forming mucus, and that in the small intes- tine they are doubtless the source whence is derived the so-called intestinal juice or "succus entericus" which is poured into the intestine in large quantities under par- ticular circumstances, as, for instance, when all the nerves supplying the gut are divided.

Physical and Chemical Properties of the Several Alimentary Tunes.

The mixed saliva of man is, when perfectly fresh, a clear, transparent, viscid liquid, which, on microscopic exa- mination, is found to contain cells of squamous epithelium derived from the mouth, besides certain globular cells derived from the salivary glands and called "salivary cor- puscles." Its reaction is alkaline; it has a specific gravity of about 1°003, and contains about five or six parts per thousand of solid matters. Its solid constituents

consist (1) — of certain saline matters transuded from the blood and, in addition, of a small quantity of a soluble sulphocyancde, detected by the reddish tinge caused by the addition of solution of ferric chloride to the saliva; (2) small quantities of soluble proteids, coagulable by heat ; (3) mucin, to which saliva owes its viscidity, and which is thrown down when the liquid is acidulated with acetic acid ; (4) a ferment or enzyme called ptyalin, salivary diastase, or the diastatic ferment of saliva, The last-mentioned is the most import- ant constituent. It possesses the power of rapidly render- ing cooked starch soluble, though its action on raw starch is but very slight. — Not only does it dissolve starch, but it progressively decomposes the complex starch molecules into isomeric bodies of less complexity. Starch has a chemical composition which may be represented by the empirical formula (C,,H,,0,»),, the exact value of m being yet a matter of doubt. The salivary diastase, under suitable conditions, as has been said, first converts insoluble into soluble starch (hence it is sometimes termed an amylolytic ferment) which, it has been surmised, probably has the composition (C,,H,)0,9);9 This soluble starch, like the insoluble body, gives a beautiful blue colour with iodine. By the further action of the ferment the soluble starch yields a series of dextrins which are isomeric with starch, though they possess smaller molecular weights and differ-

WUT Rel 1 Oo N 675

ent reactions, and at the same time a sugar which, from its identity with that which is produced in the process of malting of barley, is called "maltose," and which, though possessing many of the reactions of grape-sugar, is an isomer of cane-sugar ; when crystallized it has the com- position C,,H,,0,, + H,0.

The changes which are brought about by the action of the salivary ferment on the starchy constituents of food are hastened by a temperature near that of the mammalian body. Boiling destroys the diastatic power, as also does the presence of strong acids or alkalies. A very feeble acid reaction does not absolutely stop the characteristic action.

~~*Whilst the saliva of man and some few animals possesses*~~

~~*the remarkable diastatic ferment just referred to, this is*~~

~~*absent from the saliva of the majority of animals, so that we are forced to conclude that the saliva is an alimentary juice which subserves mechanical rather than essential chemical functions.*~~

~~*Gastric Juice.—This is a thin colourless or straw-coloured liquid of strongly acid reaction, and of a mawkish taste. Its specific gravity varies between 1:001 and 1:010, and it contains from 4 to 1 per cent. of solid matters.*~~

~~*The gastric juice contains (1) free hydrochloric acid, (2) certain mineral matters, and (3) a ferment or enzyme called pepsin. It has been much disputed whether the gastric juice contains the hydrochloric acid in a free con- dition, but the question may be considered to have been settled in the affirmative by many facts, amongst which one of the most striking is that the gastric juice behaves towards certain organic colouring matters as only liquids do which contain free mineral acids. The pepsin, which has never been separated in a pure condition, is soluble in water, weak spirit, and glycerin, and confers upon all these solvents its characteristic property, viz., that of dissolving, in the presence of a dilute free acid, 'and at a suitable tempera- ture, insoluble proteids, and of converting these into soluble and diffusible modifications termed peptones. Peptones differ from other albuminous or proteid bodies in their greater diffusibility, as well as in their much higher solubility in pure water. They are not coagulated by heat or by nitric acid, and are not thrown down by many mineral salts which precipitate other soluble proteids.*~~

~~*Gelatin under the same conditions is converted into an ungelatinizable modification, the so-called gelatin-peptone. Boiling destroys the activity of solutions of pepsin. If their reaction ceases to be acid, and, further, if the acid reaction be not due to a free acid, no action is exerted upon proteids. A temperature approximately the same as that of the mammalian body is that most favourable to gastric digestion, 'The accumulation of the products of*~~

gastric digestion, viz., peptones, hinders the continued activity of the juice. Pepsin, though probably containing nitrogen, is not a proteid body.

In addition to pepsin the gastric juice contains an entirely independent ferment which is called the "'curdling ferment" or the "rennet ferment," because of its power of rapidly inducing at the temperature of the body the coagulation of the casein of milk, which it converts into cheese. Un- like pepsin, this ferment will act in solutions which contain no trace of free acid.

The following table (Hermann) shows the average com- position of the gastric juice of man, the dog, and the sheep.

Man. | Dog. Sheep. v. ee, 994°4|978°1 971-2| 986-1 PIV GROGMEOTIC ACIC. ...,.0ssse0eeneseee0e 0-2) 3:3 Brew yoo) Organic constituents (pepsin, we.)...| 38924 Wink, eS) eae Mineral matters v.sceesscsessseeeeeseseees i 22, 65 oa So

Bile.—Bile is a bitter liquid of golden-red colour in man and carnivorous animals, but green in herbivorous animals. It is commonly viscid owing to admixture with mucus derived from the walls of the gall-bladder and hepatic ducts. Its reaction is neutral or faintly alkaline. It contains about 14 per cent. of solid constituents. (1) It includes the sodium salts of certain so-called bile-acids, which in man are glycocholic and taurocholic acids. The former has the formula C,,H,,NO,, and is readily decom- posed into glycin, C,H,NO,, and an acid termed cholic acid, C,,H,,O; ; the latter has the formula C,,H,,NSO., and can be split up into a base called taurin, C, »H,NSO,, and into cholicacid. (2) It contains bile- colouring matters, of which the chief 1s a red one termed bilirubin, C,,H,,.N.O3, with which is closely connected the green colouring matter of the bile of herbivores, termed biliviridin, C,,H,,.N.O, ; bilirubin is unquestionably derived from the decomposition of the blood-colouring matter or hemoglobin. (8) It has fats, and a body called cholesterin, which belongs to the class of alcohols and has the composition C,,H,,O+H,O. (4) It includes saline matters which are rich in sodium salts. Whilst the bile-acids and the bile-colouring matters are formed in the liver itself, the cholesterin of the bile is probably derived entirely from the blood, which obtains it from the nervous organs, in the white matter of which it is abundantly present.

The proportion of the constituents of the bile present in this liquid is shown by the following analyses.

Composition of Human Bile.

a) | @Q) A ett Shea tne pnt deilei ais apieauahtadtdanengatee sv ounmmea esse 860°0 | 822°7 | Sodium glycocholate and taurocholate ……..666 102°0 | 107°9 LMPCIN AUS COLOUTING IMAGUELS \sscniconcssressaceenssons 266; 22°1 Gere em ion ca vaccasacacseenaiadtceas ons goecavcavessaathees 16 | 4v.g Hat ivenirahenspan (MIC CID MIM.:..c.cet-ceeccereenerccren ss 3°2 | Wis OPE UAES iiiluciiceubass ax Socaveaagras-craacas aeoseat | 65| 10°8

The amount of bile secreted by man has been estimated at from about 136 grains to about 309 grains per kilo- gramme (2°20 tb) of body-weight ; but in certain cases, through abnormal circumstances, the total amount of bile secreted in twenty-four hours has been found to be less than this, viz., to vary between about 16 and 21 oz.

The action of the bile in digestion, it must be admitted, seems trifling and out of proportion to the size of the gland and the amount of the secretion. It is a weak solvent for fats; it has the power of emulsifying fats, especially, perhaps, when added to the pancreatic juice ; and it may help the passage of fat through animal mem- branes. At least it is certain that, when filter-paper is wetted with bile, oils filter through it more readily than when it is wetted with water. The most important use of the bile is, however, as an adjuvant to pancreatic digestion. The pancreatic juice, as will be stated more particularly below, contains a ferment which is either a proteid body or inseparably connected with a proteid body. Strangely, though this ferment possesses the power of dissolving proteids under suitable circumstances, in the presence of pepsin and any free acid it is itself destroyed. It would then be acted upon by the pepsin passing ito the duodenum from the stomach if the conditions were favourable. To prevent this untoward accident the alkaline bile is poured over the acid contents of the stomach as they pass the duo- denum ; these are neutralized, and a precipitate is thrown down which mechanically entangles the pepsin that may be in the mixture. Although the definable uses of the bile are small, the part which it plays in the economy is of essential importance. Animals

whose bile is allowed to escape externally soon grow lean and ill-conditioned. The

fat which should be absorbed in the alimentary canal remains in part in the feces, which acquire a peculiar putrescent odour.

Pancreatic Juice.—If we except the gastric juice, the chemical action exerted by the pancreatic juice is the most potent and useful of any of the digestive secretions.

When freshly secreted and perfectly normal, the pan- "creatic juice is a clear viscid liquid of strongly alkaline reaction and highly coagulable by heat. Its solid con- stituents may reach the proportion of 10 per cent.

It contains (1) water, (2) various albuminous bodies which cause the liquid to be coagulable by heat, and of which one is intimately connected, or indeed perhaps identical, with the ferment trypsin, (3) a number of ferments, (4) traces of products of digestion, as leucin and tyrosin, (5) salts. The ferments of the pancreatic juice are the following :—(1) a proteolytic ferment termed trypsin, (2) a diastatic ferment, (3) a ferment which acts on fats, (4) a curdling ferment (').

The first-named ferment, unlike pepsin, which is quite inactive under this condition, acts most energetically in solutions which contain a free alkali or an alkaline carbon- ate, although it possesses some action when the reaction is neutral or even faintly acid. Like pepsin, trypsin dis- solves insoluble proteids and converts them into peptones ; it possesses, however, an activity which surpasses that of pepsin, inasmuch as it splits up certain of the peptones formed into simpler bodies, such as leucin, C,H,,NO,, and tyrosin, C,H,,NO,, the former of which is an organic body allied to the fatty acid group, and the latter to the aroma- tic group. According to the views of Kiiline, the molecule of an albuminous or proteid body is capable of being broken up under the influences of such ferments as pepsin and trypsin into the allied bodies of smaller molecular weight, the peptones, which, though possessing general and common reactions, may by their behaviour towards certain chemical agents as well as towards ferments be sub- divided into

~~two groups, a hemi-group and an anti-group. Kiihne believes that both pepsin and trypsin decompose the proteids with the production of so-called hemi-peptones and anti-peptones, and that, whilst neither pepsin nor trypsin can further decompose anti-peptones, trypsin possesses the power of splitting up hemi-peptones into simpler bodies.~~

~~The amylolytic or diastatic ferment of the pancreatic juice resembles that of the saliva in its action. Whilst the saliva of most animals contains no such ferment, the pancreatic juice of all animals is very rich in diastatic ferment, so that the action of the pancreatic juice on starch is much greater than that of saliva.~~

~~Thefat-decomposing ferment—sometimes, though errone- ously, called the 'emulsifying ferment "—of the pancreas is present in exceedingly small quantity and is very readily destroyed, so that its existence has sometimes, though erroneously, been denied. It breaks up the neutral fats in part into their respective fatty acids and glycerin. This slight acidification unquestionably facilitates the formation of an emulsion of the remaining fats.~~

~~All these ferments are influenced by temperature in nearly the same manner as the ferments of saliva and gastric juice. Boiling destroys them absolutely, cold retards their activity, the body temperature is very favour- able to them. The most suitable medium for them is the alkaline juice in which they occur, and the alkalinity of which is due to sodium carbonate.~~

~~The following is an analysis of the pancreatic juice of the dog :—~~

~~WY arer CiIe OG OWES) xc. saevesavasendoedurvmesee sam 900°8 OURS oresaccenetess eae Peat asaitin Simei ohatetap sented ieee 99-2 Organic matters es… 1s eteace es soeunesoeeere eee 90°4 TilippanicwMAPbELS…….. 00… ..-20.cessescegcuPeneerense 8°8~~

~~NUTR LT ron~~

~~Intestinal Juice.—This juice, which is also called not unfrequently by its Latin name succus entericus, is a thin, yellowish, alkaline, albuminous liquid of specific gravity 1°01, concerning which we possess very little~~

~~*certain in- formation. It has been said to act upon fibrin alone of the albuminous bodies; it not only contains a small quantity of a diastatic ferment but probably also a so- called inverting ferment, possessing the power of converting cane-sugar into grape-sugar.*~~

~~*Fate of Food-Stuffs in the Alimentary Canal.—The food which is introduced into the mouth is an exceedingly complex substance. Leaving out of account those sub- stances which are insoluble and incapable of absorption, and which are also not amenable to the influences of the digestive juices, we may classify the true food-stuffs as follows.*~~

~~*(1) Albuminous matters, including (a) the true proteids, such as albumen of egg, casein of milk, myosin of muscle, fibrin of blood, &c., and (b) the albwminoid bodies, such as gelatin from tendons and bones, chondrin from cartilages, and elastin from various elastic structures ; (2) hydrocarbons or fats, of which those chiefly used for food are stearin, olein, and palmitin; (3) carbohydrates ; (4) the various inorganic salts; (5) water. The third group includes the amyloids or starch-like bodies, the saccharoses like cane-sugar, the glucoses like the grape-sugar and fruit-sugar found in honey and in ripe fruits, the sugar of milk, &c. In addition to these may be mentioned allied bodies, cellulose, pectin, arabin, mucilage, &c., which in some animals, or in some conditions, are certainly digest- ible. In a subdivision of the same group we may place the various vegetable acids, lactic, acetic, citric, malic, &c., which are essentially foods.*~~

~~*It may be premised that the fate which befalls a given example of ingested food does not depend solely upon the theoretical power of the digestive juices to act upon it. Thus digestible food may be imperfectly digested owing to being passed into the stomach in lumps and masses, which the juices cannot permeate and the stomach cannot crush; or starch may be so incorporated and en- capsuled with fat that the saliva and even the pancreatic juice may fail to reach it; or digestion from one cause or another may be so prolonged that fermentative changes, to which most samples of food are inevitably liable from containing organized ferments or '" germs," may have time to begin and to alter materially the sequence of events. Hence we shall feel no surprise that much food escapes altogether the action of digestion. The most perfect and economical feeding is that in*~~

which the least quantity of food is passed through the alimentary canal unchanged. When, however, the just quantity is taken, and the digest- ive organs are sound, the following is the order of the changes which occur.

Food placed in the mouth at once excites the flow of mixed saliva and mucus. Solid food is broken up, rubbed together with the juices of the mouth and entangled air-bubbles, and rolled into a slimy bolus. Soluble con- stituents of it thus have an opportunity of becoming dis- solved at once; sugar, dextrin, vegetable acids, and many inorganic salts would, in part at least, pass into solution in the mixed saliva. The process of mastication, besides triturating the food and mixing it with the alkaline saliva, permits it to become raised nearly to the body-temperature, in which condition the dextrin and the starches readily fall a prey to the ptyalin, and begin to be converted into dextrins and maltose. This change is very rapidly effected — it begins instantly if the starch is already boiled; so that, unless the food is "bolted," a considerable quantity of soluble dextrin and sugar is formed before the bolus is swallowed. The act of deglutition passes the softened bolus into the stomach, where already a certain quantity of acid gastric juice is ready to receive it. The presence of food in the stomach is a greater stimulus to the gastric flow than its presence in the mouth: the juice is more rapidly secreted, but still it is comparatively poor in pepsin

NU @e Irie N

and still more so in free acid; but after a time, as more food is added, and as the first-coming food begins to be dissolved and absorbed, the proportion of pepsin is in- creased. The movements of the stomach mix intimately the acid juice and the alkaline food; the first effect of this is a neutralization of the mass, but, as the secretion of juice goes on for some time after the last portion of an ordinary meal has been swallowed, the mass becomes more and more acid. The amylolytic action of the swallowed saliva is gradually checked, and the still unchanged starch remains unchanged so long as it lingers in the stomach. Such saline and other dissolved matters as are still soluble in slightly acid solutions remain dissolved, and, with the water which is swallowed, may pass at once into the blood-vessels by absorption. Other salts, as the carbonates and phosphates of the alkaline earths, become dissolved in the presence of an

acid. The gelatigenous tissues—con- nective tissue holding together in its meshes fibres of muscle, globules of fat, strands of nerve, &c.—are dissolved. The skins or pellicles of the fat-vesicles suffer the same fate. The elastic sarcolemma is now thought to be similarly affected. Asa consequence the proteid and fatty portions of the organs referred to escape and fall into smaller fragments. Muscular fibres readily split into fibrille and disks, and are then in the very best physical condition for the free play of the gastric juice. The fat escapes, flows together to form larger globules, but is otherwise unchanged, Cane-sugar, which is of no use to the organism until it is converted into maltose or glucose, finds in some slight degree the condition for this conversion in the com- bined action of the gastric juice and the gastric mucus, although we are still in great doubt as to where the greatest conversion takes place. The all-important change which the food undergoes in the stomach is, however, the change of its proteid element into the more diffusible form of peptones, about which it will be enough to say that it is not a mere solution of proteid in a dilute acid, although this may be the first step in the operation, but probably a decomposition of the original proteid molecule. The obvious effect of gastric digestion is to reduce the food toa grey pulpy mass called chyme, in which condition it passes into the duodenum along with more refractory or less perfectly digested portions of food such as may still remain in the stomach at the end of the normal period of gastric digestion. The presence of food in the stomach, as has been re- marked, is of itself a stimulus to the secretion of bile and pancreatic fluid ; by the time, therefore, that the chyme passes into the duodenum, a considerable quantity of the fresh juices is prepared for it. Not only so; the contact of the acid chyme with the duodenal membrane at once brings on a reflex contraction of the ducts and gall-bladder of the liver, by which a sharp stream of alkaline fluid is at once poured out, wherewith the chyme is drenched. So far as the mixture is made perfect and the point of neutraliza- tion is reached, a precipitate of parapeptones and peptones is formed, carrying down with it the active pepsin. But the acidity of the chyme is not at once overcome ; not until the middle of the small intestine is reached does the acid reaction entirely disappear; and we may therefore assume that a kind of exotic gastric digestion may go on in the parts of chyme which still remain acid. But when- ever the reaction ceases to be strongly acid the pancreatic juice takes up the work of digestion. Proteids are changed into soluble peptones, and the conversion of starch into dextrin

~~and maltose begins again with redoubled vigour. Fats are seized upon, resolved into glycerin and their fatty acids, and emulsified both by bile and by pancreatic fluid. The resulting fatty acids combine with the alkalies of the mass to form soaps, which in turn aid the process of emulsification. The chyme, which, from being grey, be-~~

~~came of a golden-orange colour when saturated with bile, acquires a decidedly cream-like appearance from the emul- sion that is formed.~~

~~It is still an interesting question whether pancreatic proteolysis ever, in health, goes beyond the formation of peptones, as it may certainly do in artificial digestion in the laboratory. Some leucin and tyrosin undoubtedly appear in the small intestine ; but, inasmuch as they are bodies which, if formed, would be rapidly absorbed, it is im- possible to say whether any considerable amount of proteid matter suffers this fate, or whether leucin and tyrosin are formed, as it were, accidentally, from the too long staying of an excess of proteid in the alimentary canal. Leucin and tyrosin are never found in the feeces,~~

~~As the remnant of food passes down the intestine, changes allied to putrefaction invariably occur. Lactic acid is always to be detected in the small intestine, and the amount of it increases as the ileo-cecal valve is approached. Possibly the butyric acid fermentation likewise occurs as a constant, if not an essential, phenomenon of intestinal digestion. At least the gases of the small intestine always contain a small amount of hydrogen; but if we are to gauge the butyric acid fermentation by the amount of hydrogen detected, we must assume it to be of very small proportions. We are so ignorant of the nature of the enteric or intestinal juice that we need not here speculate as to the changes in the remnant of food which the addi- tion of it may bring about. Let it suffice to say that the intestinal contents pass through the ileo-cecal valve with none of the odour and little of the appearance of fecal matter. While in the large intestine they become reduced in bulk, and approach a solid consistency by the abstrac- tion of water from them. Their reaction becomes distinctly acid once more ; but now, from inward processes of putre- faction and fermentation which were started already in the small intestine, putrefactive gases may arise, light~~

car- buretted hydrogen, carbonic acid, sulphuretted hydrogen, . nitrogen, and hydrogen. The feces themselves are com- monly acid ; besides the indigestible parts of food, such as horny matter and cellulose (the denser sorts at least), and the undigested but digestible overplus of starch, proteid, &ec., they contain derivatives from the bile which cause the characteristic colour, and some final decomposition products of elements of food, such as indol.

IT.—ABsorPTION oF NUTRITIVE MATTERS INTO THE Boop.

The complex processes of digestion result in the conver- sion of insoluble and indiffusible food-stuffs into soluble and diffusible sugars and peptones. These, with the soluble saline matters, the finely-divided or emulsified fats and water, are (if we except the small quantity of soaps formed in the course of pancreatic digestion, and the small amount of soluble leucin and tyrosin evolved in the same process) the only contents of the alimentary canal capable of entering the organism from the outer world. They are not indeed the only soluble and absorbable bodies in the intestine ; a large part of the digestive juices themselves are reabsorbed, and may possibly do duty over again in their respective secretions. But these are not foods. How, it may now be asked, do these soluble or finely-divided substances pass the confines of the body? From what has already been said about the organs of digestion it will be evident that, from the stomach downwards, the alimentary cavity is separated from an infinite number of thin-walled vessels by a delicate layer of columnar epithelium and a filmy basement membrane. There seems at first sight to be no difficulty in understanding how water and dissolved and diffusible matters may pass these barriers with the greatest readiness by physical processes of diffusion which

are so simply imitated in the laboratory. We know also that, in fact, solutions do with the greatest ease and rapid- ity pass through such a membrane as the conjunctiva, by the readiness with which the pupil may be dilated on putting a drop of atropinized fluid beneath the eyelid. But it is by no means clear that the process is so simple in the living intestine. A fresh specimen of epithelium scraped from the interior of the mouth of a pig may be bathed in a solution of colouring matter and yet admit no trace of the

colour into the substance of its cells so long as they remain alive. It is only when they cease to be living protoplasm that the physical processes of diffusion come into play and that the cell-substance takes up the colour. Guided by this simple observation we shall hesitate to assume, because we have water containing soluble sugars, salts, and peptones on one side of the epithelium of the alimentary tract, while on the other we have fluids differently constituted, that therefore we must needs have a process of transfusion tending to the passage of the dis- 'solved substances from one side to the other. This "absorption" of matters, even simple saline solutions, at the surface of the intestine may be, and most probably is, a vital operation. Be the nature of the process what it may, it is easy to conceive how fluids at least arrive at the interior of the blood and the lymph capillaries of the alimentary mucous membranes. The case of the particles of emulsified fat presents more difficulty ; but even here there are only two possibilities open to us. Either the fine globules pass through the columnar cells, or they pass between them; if they pass through them they must traverse the thick striated inelastic end of the cells in a manner which it is somewhat difficult for us to picture; if they only pass between the cells it is difficult to explain why so many of the acutest observers have described the occur- rence of fat-particles within the epithelial cells of recent preparations of intestinal mucous membranes.

Once through the epithelial layer the absorbed matters pass into the blood-vessels or the lymphatics in some way the details of which are as yet mere matters of speculation. The axial lymphatic vessels of the villi—the so-called lacteal radicles—have a special interest, since villi are pre-eminently the absorbent rootlets of the body. As soon as they become filled, the layer of muscular fibres investing them contracts and empties the contents of the lacteal towards the deeper vessels of the mucosa. The subsequent expansion of the radicle will evidently favour the refilling of it.

It is very disputable where absorption takes place. The filtrate obtained from the contents of, the stomach yields very little peptones, the inference being that much has already become absorbed by the gastric capillaries, hemic or lymphatic. There seems to be no reason why water, salines, and dissolved sugars should not also be taken up at the same place. In the large intestine water at least is absorbed, for the contents become drier as they

~~pass along the bowel. But it is the small intestine chiefly which is the scene of most extensive absorption of digested products; here fats are demonstrably taken into the organ- ism ; and here, doubtless, more than elsewhere, peptones, sugars, and other soluble bodies suffer the same fate.~~

~~Blood-vessels and lymph-vessels are both sharers of the work, though to what extent each is employed is a matter of surmise rather than of observation. The lacteals cer- tainly absorb the largest part of the fat, though, as the relative amount of fat in the portal vein increases after a meal, fat must also be absorbed by the blood-capillaries. The material absorbed into the portal vein is at once submitted to the smaller circulation of the liver and the activity of the liver-cells ; that absorbed into the lacteals traverses many lymphatic glands before it reaches the~~

~~thoracic duct and the general circulation at the root of the neck. Thus in both ways of absorption the raw material is immediately passed into certain organs before it reaches the common stock of blood. That changes are effected in the constitution of the just-received food-stuffs during their stay in these organs there is every reason to bélieve ; for, on the one hand, the blood issuing from the liver in the hepatic veins differs from the blood entering it by the portal vein ; and, on the other, the contents of the thoracic duct differ from the contents of vessels nearer the absorbent radicles, as, for example, the contents of the mesenteric lacteals. The nature of these changes must be discussed in the next section.~~

~~TIJ].—CHEMICAL PROCESSES IN THE TISSUES AND ORGANS OF THE Bopy.~~

~~While it is probable that the liver modifies the recently- digested raw material of food before it reaches the common stock of the blood, it is quite unknown what (or, indeed, if any) difference exists between the action of the liver on blood laden with raw material immediately after a meal and its action on blood traversing its capillaries during a fast. Does the liver exert an action on recently-imported fat, peptones, and sugar in any sense different from the action it exerts on fatty, albuminous, and sugary matters as they exist in the common stock of blood? Or—which is the same question—do the fats, albuminous matters, and sugars of the portal blood differ at all from the fats, albuminous matters, and sugars of ordinary blood? While~~

~~this question remains unanswered it will be well to consider the liver as like any other tissue drawing on the common source of nutriment, the blood, for its own particular pur- poses, and not as an organ akin to the special digestive organs, devoted to the elaboration of food for the benefit of the other tissues.~~

~~It need not be so, however, with the lymphatic struc- tures with which the chyle of the lacteals comes into con- tact before it is poured into the blood. Chyle from the thoracic duct at its entrance into the veins is of course mixed with the general lymph of the body,—the juice of the tissues which is collected in the lymph-vessels and carried back to the blood. It is a milky fluid which coagulates on standing, the clot of which after some time becomes tinted red at the surface from the presence of immature red corpuscles. The coagulum consists of fibrin~~

~~resembling that of the blood. Other constituents of chyle—~~

~~are white corpuscles, oil-globules coated with albuminous matter, t.e., emulsified, and exceedingly fine fatty granules usually spoken of as the "molecular basis of chyle." Chyle obtained from vessels nearer the intestines has very little fibrin, very few white corpuscles, and no red cor- puscles, It is probable, therefore, that the raw matters of digested food are undergoing a process of manufacture into blood during their passage through the lymphatic glands to reach the thoracic duct.~~

~~When once they arrive at the blood, the imported mate- rials of food are lost beyond our power to follow them individually. The question now becomes one of the inter- changes between the blood generally and the tissues. That such an interchange occurs there can be no doubt; for if all food be withheld from an animal the tissues rapidly grow less in quantity, while the blood maintains a fairly constant composition. If such an animal be fed, the tissues regain their former weight, and may even store up an overplus of matters, while again the blood remains of approximately constant composition. The tissues can both take away from the blood and give to the blood such matters as are necessary. But the matters taken from the blood are not in the same form as the matters given up to the blood. When blood is made to circulate through living tissues of~~

Ora ear oO N

whatever kind the blood entering the tissue always has a different composition from the blood which leaves it. The tissues, therefore, are laboratories in which materials abstracted from the blood are transformed. To these chemical operations of transformation which occur in living tissues the term "metabolic" has been applied, a term first used by Schwann, and happily reintroduced by Michael Foster.

What now becomes of the products of the metabolic activity of the tissues? We have hitherto considered the tissues as taking matter from the blood, changing the form of it, and giving it back to the blood ; but this is far from being the true account of the process. It does indeed represent all that we know of the metabolism of many tissues. In muscle, for example, matters are drawn from the blood, converted to other shapes within the tissue, and sooner or later cast out into the blood-current again. The same may be said of nerve-tissue and possibly of some other tissues. In secreting glands the case is different. Some only of the products of tissue-metabolism are returned to the blood; others are poured into the ducts of the glands as the glandular secretion, and so leave the body altogether. This happens, for example, in the digestive glands, the milk-glands, and the kidneys. In a third order of tissues the case is different again, for liere some of the products of metabolism may be retained in the tissue for an indefinite time. This occurs in certain tissues which have been called storage tissues, and of which fat is a typical example. Lastly, the liver is a complex organ whose metabolic products are disposed of in all three ways,—part being cast at once into the blood, part being accumulated in the tissue itself as glycogen and passing into the blood at intervals as the body needs it, and a third part being poured into the biliary ducts in order that it may escape into the intestine. It will be well, therefore, to recognize three methods of the disposal of metabolic products, and to classify the tissues accordingly.

Metabolism of Muscular Tissue.—To arrive at a know- ledge of the chemico-vital changes occurring in any tissue we must compare the matters entering the tissue with the matters issuing from it. It is only from such a compari- son that we can infer the changes which go on within the tissue. In the case of muscle there is yet another method by which we can obtain

inferences as to the nature of the metabolic changes. We have reason to believe that the tissue-changes of active muscles are simply the exaggerated form of changes which constantly occur. If we may assume this, a comparison of the chemical composition of muscle before and after a period of activity will help us to a knowledge of the changes that occur in muscular action, and, by implication, a knowledge also of the com- mon metabolic changes of the tissue. Nowa comparison of muscle before and after action shows that during activity the quantity of CO, becomes very largely increased ; at the same time the muscle becomes of acid reaction from the development of lactic acid; the amount of bodies soluble in water decreases, while the amount of bodies soluble in alcohol increases; the amount of glycogen decreases, while that of sugar increases ; and, finally, bodies develop which have a strong affinity for oxygen. If we compare the matters entering and issuing from muscular tissue we shall find that muscle gives up much CO, during activity, that the issuing blood is rich in reducing substances, and that it acquires sarcolactic acid. The circumstance of most importance in this comparison is that carbon dioxide is liberated in large amount without the immediate inter- action of oxygen; the CO, is produced from some body in the muscle which already contains within itself the O necessary for its formation. The fact of next importance is the absence of all indications of a large expenditure of

nitrogen. Relying on these discoveries, physiologists have supposed that the metabolic changes of muscle follow some such course as the following. Non-nitrogenous organic material, along with oxygen, is absorbed into the tissue from the blood. In the tissue-cells it is elaborated with nitrogenous matter already in the tissue into a complex body called inogene substance, containing a nitrogenous factor linked to carbon, hydrogen, and oxygen. During the life of the tissue, and to a much greater extent during muscular activity, this inogene substance is split up into a nitrogenous portion and a non-nitrogenous portion, of which the former is retained in the tissue to be again worked up into inogene substance, while the latter is resolved into more stable bodies which escape. The full number of the effete bodies is not at present known to us; it doubtless includes more than carbon dioxide and

~~sarcolactic acid, but these are the only bodies whose existence has been definitely determined.~~

~~Metabolism of Glandular Organs.—Of late years very much light has been shed on the processes of gland- ular cells, but it has been chiefly on their anatomical aspect. We know very little, indeed, of the nature of the chemical changes going on within the glandular cells, because, although we can ascertain approximately the com- position of those products of the changes which escape into the glandular duct, we as yet know so little of those products which escape into the blood. We know, how- ever, that mucin is capable of being formed in the interior of epithelial cells out of some non-mucous antecedent. We also have some reason for supposing that the gastric glandular cells—the border-cells—select phosphate of sodium and sodium chloride from the blood, and these bodies have been shown to be capable of interacting in such a way as to yield free hydrochloric acid. In the secretion of milk it is tolerably certain that the fat and the casein are both formed out of proteid matter within the glandular cells. Even the milk-sugar has been thought to be elaborated out of some non-saccharine substance, or even out of some substance that is not a carbohydrate. In the case of the pancreas we know nothing of the actual chemical decompositions that occur, but we do know that they occur in two well-marked stages. In the first a body is formed which is stored in the gland-cells, as the inogene substance is supposed to be stored in muscle; in the second this body is resolved into other but still complex bodies, of which the trypsin ferment of the secretion is one. Among the glandular organs we may mention the kidney, respecting whose secretive activity it is far from certain that it entirely consists of physical filtration or powers of mere selection. No doubt many of the con- stituents of urine are simply filtered off from the blood, while others are undoubtedly abstracted owing to some peculiar attraction which the renal cells exert upon them. But there is some reason to think that others may be formed within the kidney-tissues as products of cell-meta- bolism. As yet we have no definite knowledge concerning the nature of the metabolic changes.~~

~~Metabolism in the Storage Tissues.—Of these the first that we shall describe is adipose tissue or fat. Fat appears to be accumulated in ordinary connective-tissue corpuscles. What metabolic changes occur in connective-~~

tissue cor- puscles which are not accumulating fat we do not know ; but under certain conditions of overfeeding the metabolism is so varied that fat is deposited within the cell. At first it appears in the form of fine granules ; these soon coalesce to globules, which afterwards enlarge by the confluence of granules subsequently formed. The exact changes of which this fat is the outcome, or one of the products, are entirely obscure. It is enough if we can establish the probability that fat may be derived from the proteid proto-

plasmic matter of the fat-cell. We are not here guided, as in the case of muscle, by analysis of the blood approach- ing the adipose tissue and the blood leaving it. Never- theless, there is little doubt that fat may be derived from the proteid elements of food through the activity of living tissue-cells. That proteid matter readily lends itself to a decomposition of which fat is one product is seen in the formation of fat-like "adipocere" in the nitrogenous tissues of dead bodies which have been for some time buried or immersed in water; and it is likewise seen in the process of "ripening" in cheese, in which the fat increases while the albuminous matter diminishes. But in addition to these general facts, suggestive though they are, there are not wanting proofs of a more particular kind that fat may result from proteid decompositions. If dogs are fed on starch and fat with no proteid food at all, the carbon stored up in the body can all be accounted for by reference to the fat of the food and the proteid matter of the body which, in the state of starvation, came to be disintegrated. In many other cases it seems clear that the fat stored up by animals during fattening unquestionably comes in part from the nitrogenous matters of food. But a considera- tion of the relative amount of carbon and nitrogen con- tained in proteids and in urea, which is the final product of the oxidation of proteid matter, would alone lead us strongly to suspect such an origin of fat. If all its nitrogen reappeared in the form of urea, 300 grains of protéid would give rise to 100 grains of urea. But 100 grains of urea contain but 20 grains of carbon, whereas 300 grains of proteid matter yield 159 grains of carbon. What has become of the deficit of carbon? If it has not been burnt off as carbon dioxide, it must remain within the body in some non-nitrogenous form.

If fat may be derived from proteids in the body, it is now equallycertain that in some animals at least fat may come from carbohydrates of the food. Lawes and Gilbert have conclusively shown that as much as 40 per cent. of the stored-up fat in well-fattened pigs could not possibly have come from the nitrogenous parts of the food, and that it must have been derived from the carbohydrates.

All these facts render it very probable that the fat- forming tissues pick out from the blood albuminous or non-nitrogenous matter, transform it, retain the fatty element and discharge the rest. But it must not be for- gotten that fat of food may, on finding itself in the blood, be taken up by appropriate tissue-cells and stored up without undergoing further change. Even this, although it seems so probable, may not at once be assumed to occur in such a simple manner. It is true that, if an animal be fed on fat resembling the fat of its own tissues, it might be assumed that the fat which it stores is simply absorbed by the tissue-corpuscles as an amœba absorbs its food. But if this were really the manner of the process we should expect that allied fats substituted for the natural fat would be equally well taken up and stored. 'This, how- ever, is not at all the case. Dogs fed on a mixture of palmitin and olein, but no stearin, are found on analysis to have stearin in their body-fat; just as dogs fed on palmitin and stearin, but no olein, are found to have an abundance of olein stored up. And, even when fed on spermaceti, a dog was found to present mere traces of it in the fat accumulated in its tissues during the experiment. In short, all facts go to show that the accumulation of fat does not take place without some display of formative or transformative energy.

The last tissue whose metabolism we shall discuss is the hepatic tissue of the liver. Hitherto we have considered the liver as a digestive gland secreting the bile for the purposes of digestion ; but the liver has other functions which overshadow entirely its function as a digestive organ.

"oUPTrRIT IOS

It seems to have the power of accumulating amyloid material very much as adipose tissue accumulates fat. It would probably be a mistake to regard these two functions of the liver as altogether independent of one another, although it is necessary to state that a direct dependence has not yet been

established. There can, however, be little doubt that the hepatic tissue draws to itself a variety of matters from the blood flowing into it by the portal vein and hepatic artery, and elaborates these constituents into various products, some of which escape into the blood again, others of which appear as the bile, while a third order remain in store within the substance of the liver. But, although these products are probably associated more or less intimately in their origin, they have, in the natural development of physiology, been studied independently of one another for the most part.

If an animal be richly fed on starchy or saccharine food it is found, within a short time of the digestion of the food, that the liver contains a large quantity of a starchy body called glycogen (CgH, 05), In order to obtain glycogen from liver-substance it is necessary to make usc of the tissue of an animal just killed, for the starchy body undergoes an extremely rapid post-mortem con- version into a sugar. Liver taken quickly from the still warm body of a rabbit is rapidly divided into small pieces and plunged at once into briskly boiling water. The high temperature prevents the post-mortem change and leaves the glycogen in a condition to be separated. The pieces of liver may then be pounded with sand and water, and the mixture acidulated and filtered. From the filtrate the glycogen may be precipitated by alcohol, and the preci- pitate may be purified by boiling in caustic potash and afterwards neutralizing and reprecipitating with alcohol. Or the albuminous matters may be thrown down by a solution of mercuric iodide in iodide of potassium before precipitating the glycogen with alcohol. Glycogen so prepared is a white amorphous powder resembling starch in chemical composition ; it is colourless and tasteless. Its aqueous solution is milky, and generally opalescent. ¥

Other tissues and organs besides the liver have been found to contain glycogen. For example, muscles contain some glycogen, which diminishes during muscular activity, while it has been de- tected in the tissues of embryos and of young animals, as well as in newly-formed pathological growths.

There can be little doubt that glycogen is manufactured mainly out of carbohydrates conveyed to it in the portal vein. Ifa rabbit be starved for some days, the whole of the glycogen disappears from the liver ; but the

store is at once, in the course of a few hours, replenished if starch or sugar of whatever sort (cane, grape, or milk) be introduced into the alimentary canal. The metabolic a of the liver-cells in respect of glycogen-production are not,

owever, limited to starches or sugars, If glycerin be injected into the intestines the amount of glycogen in the liver is at once in- creased. But some preparation of the glycerin is necessary before the liver-cells are able to appropriate it; and this preparation is accomplished in the true digestive organs, since glycerin introduced into the blood by subcutaneous injection does not bring about any increase in the glycogen of the liver. Even albuminous bodies, such as fibrin and albumin, freed from all trace of amyloid matter, seem in the case of carnivorous animals to yield glycogen in the laboratory of the hepatic tissue. The same may be said of gelatin. Now it is easy to form a chemical conception of the manner in which such a body as grape-sugar leads to the storing of glycogen, for the dehydration of the sugar would be all the change required for the conversion. But we can at present form no picture of the operation in the case of glycerin at of the albuminous matters ; and the fact that these substances also are amenable to the liver- cells should make us hesitate to assume at once that in the case of sugar the process is the simple one of dehydration. We must wait for further light to be shed upon the interdependence of what we may for the moment call the biliary metabolism and the glycogenic metabolism of liver-cell before we speculate as to the exact nature of the changes.

The liver has, beyond a doubt, the faculty of manufacturing an

'amyloid body out of various raw matters brought within the range

of its activity, and of storing it up for future use. The use to which it is put has been the subject of much speculation and experimental inquiry. The ainyloid matter when drawn upon may leave the liver in the form in which it exists there, or it may be converted into some other modification and afterwards trans- ferred to the blood. 'The fact that other tissues besides the liver contain glycogen, and the fact that some, as muscle, seem to make use of glycogen in the act of contraction, have been thought to support the hypothesis that the glycogen is conveyed by the blood to their tissues and then consumed. According to this theory the

=

nur ah Yr Pt ON 681

hepatic metabolism ends in the production of glycogen, which merely waits to be cast out into the blood-current at the call of the body generally. Against this hypothesis, as a complete ex- planation of the use of liver-glycogen, it may be urged that the glycogen of muscle at least disappears on starvation long before the store of glycogen in the liver has been used up. Moreover, the glycogen of muscle is by no means invariably present, and is certainly not indispensable to the activity of the tissue. We may therefore conclude that the use of glycogen by the tissues (when we judge of it by the case of muscle) is not constant enough or important enough to account for the large store of glycogen in the liver. But, ifthe hepatic glycogen does not leave the liver as such, it must undergo some other change in the liver ; and the circum- stance above referred to, that glycogen so readily becomes converted into sugar post mortem, at once leads us to inquire whether a similar conversion is not normally effected during life. The inquiry be- comes of especial value when we remember that the blood contains a constant proportion of sugar in its composition, which argues such a constancy of supply as could not be due to the direct importation of sugar during the irregular periods of the daily meals. As the amount of sugar in the blood is constant, the periodic introduction of carbohydrate into the organism must be followed by some temporary storing of it in some organ from which it may be constantly, and without intermission, doled out. Now the body contains in many parts the means of the conversion of starches into sugar. The salivary or pancreatic juices with the utmost readiness at the body-temperature change glycogen into a sugar. Many tissues, as well as blood, are said to effect the same conver- sion, although it is denied that the blood does so unless the blood- corpuscles have been first destroyed. The liver itself, as we have already seen, may bring about the same change, at least after death ; but the activity of the converting substance may be prevented by subjecting it to a temperature of boiling water. If the liver con- tain the ferment-like body during life, unless its activity be restrained in some way or other, the glycogen which is formed in the liver will be speedily changed into sugar. In regard to the existence of this starch-converting body it is significant that, while it certainly may arise

~~in the blood when the blood-corpuscles are destroyed, the liver is known to be the seat of an extensive destruc- tion of blood-corpuscles. Considerations of this sort, however, are of little cogency ; it would bea strong presumption of the existence of the ferment in question if sugar could be proved to be normally present in the hepatic tissue during life, but the experimental proof of this is beset by great difficulties, and discordant results have been obtained by the different observers. Claude Bernard, to whose researches we owe so mnuch of our knowledge on this interesting question, detected small but perceptible quantities of sugar in quite fresh liver-substance ; but other observers, among whom Dr Pavy is to be reckoned the first, have failed to find even a trace. Further, Bernard was able to make out a decided differ- ence between the amount of sugar contained in the portal vein and the hepatic vein respectively when there was no starch or sugar in the food to load the portal vein. In such circumstances the blood issuing from the liver by the hepatic vein was found to contain a small quantity of sugar in excess of the blood entering the portal vessels. The most accurate and reliable investigations have, how- ever, conclusively proved that this difference does not exist. The matter, therefore, still awaits some crucial test not yet devised. In the meantime we may accept the hypothesis of a conversion of liver-glycogen into soluble sugar as one which, however probable, is not supported by sufficient evidence. Amongst those who have rejected this hypothesis some have had recourse to other assump- tions to account for the fate of glycogen in the body ; and it has been suggested that glycogen undergoes conversion into fat either in the liver itself or partly there and partly in some other tissue. This suggestion has little direct evidence to support it. It is true that animals, especially the pig, have the power of storing up fat in their bodies which they cannot have obtained otherwise than from the carbohydraceous constituents of .their food. It is also true that the hepatic tissue is often found to contain fat in con- siderable quantities. But it is easy to see how these facts admit of simple explanation without assuming a conversion of glycogen into fat within the liver-cells. The chemical nature of such a con- version is difficult to unagine ; but it would be rash to assume that the metabolic powers of animal protoplasm are not sufficient to accomplish it.**

~~With regard to the metabolism of liver-tissue which leads to the production of bile we possess but little direct knowledge. The secretion of bile is not a~~

mere act of filtration of already-formed matters from the blood ; but we have at present no conception of the chemical changes which occur in the interior of the liver-cells in the elabora- tion of bile. There is strong reason to think that the bile-pigments are derived from the colouring matter of

blood, not only from the circumstance of the large destruc- tion of blood-corpuscles which takes place in the liver but also from the resemblance or identity of bilirubin and heematoidin, a body derived from extravasated blood. A large number of facts point very clearly to the conclu- sions (1) that the liver is an organ in which chemical changes of great magnitude and importance have their seat, (2) that their operation consists in great part in decomposition of proteids.

The high temperature of the blood which leaves the liver, and which is the hottest blood of the body, is the chief proof of the correctness of the first of these con- clusions, whilst the second rests upon many considerations. The bile-acids unquestionably do not exist in the blood, but are the results of proteid metabolism within the liver-cells. There are strong grounds for believing that urea, CH,N,O,, as well as uric acid, has its principal origin in the liver, which is equivalent to localizing the chief seat of proteid metabolism in this organ.

Diabetes.—In connexion with the glycogenic function of the liver it is necessary to refer to a disease which is of special interest to physiologists, from the ease with which the symptoms may be artificially reproduced. The disease itself may be defined as the appearance of large quantities of sugar in the urine, while the total amount of the urine excreted is also increased. Now diabetes of a temporary nature may be produced in animals in a variety of ways. If certain fibres of the medulla oblongata near what is known as the vaso-motor centre be divided, as they may be by means of a special instrument, without producing any serious abnormal motor or sensory symptoms, there follows very speedily the excretion of large quantities of sugar in the urine. It is evident that this result is due in some way to an abnormal influence of the nervous system. The path by which the abnormal influence is trans- mitted has been carefully traced down the spinal cord to the first thoracic sympathetic ganglion ; if this path be interrupted at any point symptoms follow similar to those caused by the

local injury to the medulla oblongata. The circumstance that interruption of this nervous pathway at any point causes the appearance of sugar in the urine at once leads to the suspicion that the escape of sugar is not directly caused by the shock of the operation or injury. We are rather brought to the conclusion that the natural absence of sugar from the urine is due to a restraining influence of the nervous system acting continually in a manner to be discussed hereafter, and that the division of the path by which the continual restraint is exercised merely intercepts the inhibitory influence. This is confirmed by the observation that the medulla is in communica- tion with certain afferent nerves, through which also the restraint may beremoved. These nerves are the vagi ; division of them leads to a transieut appearance of sugar iu small amount in the urine ; but stimulation of their cerebral ends brings about the escape of sugar toa remarkable degree. This clearly can only be due to an inhibition by afferent nerves very similar to the inhibition of the heart which follows stimulation of the cerebral end of the abdominal sympathetic nerve in the frog.

The intercepting of this hypothetical restraint by the anatomical section of nerves is not the only way of artificially bringing about diabetes. Sugar may appear in the urine during the action of curare and after a suitable dose of morphia, and also after the injection of dilute saline solutions into the blood-vessels. The probable relationship of these various methods of causing diabetes will be referred to later.

There can be no question that diabetes is a disease affecting the glycogenic function of the liver. In many cases of natural or pathological diabetes, if all carbohydrates be withheld from the patient, the urine becomes free or almost free from sugar; and in like manner, if an animal be starved until there is every reason to suppose that its liver has become free from glycogen, and after- wards it be subjected to the operation for producing artificial diabetes, no sugar appears in the urine. Similarly, if an animal be drugged with arsenic, which leads to a rapid loss of all the glycogen of the liver, and afterwards poisoned with curare, the latter drug no longer brings about diabetes. In short, if the liver contains no glycogen no sugar can appear in the urine. This being so, in what special way is the glycogenic function modified in diabetes ? If we assume that the function of the liver is to seize upon all sugar passing along the portal veins from the intestinal

canal and store it up as glycogen, in order that it may be piecemeal returned to the blood to be burnt off in distant organs, we can easily review the various conceivable ways in which diabetes might be caused. It must, in the first place, be premised that the blood is unable to contain more than a certain percentage of sugar. When this per- centage is overtopped the excess of sugar escapes in the urine. Of

this there is direct experimental proof in the facts that if sugar be slowly injected into the jugular vein, no escape of it by the kidneys takes place, because the organism can make use of a small excess of sugar ; but if it be injected quickly diabetes ensues from the too rapid accumulation of it in the blood. Accepting this, we can readily see that diabetes might be caused (1) by the failure of the liver to pick out the sugar in the portal vein in order to store it, (2) by an unusually large escape of glycogen from the liver in the form of sugar, (3) by the failure of the distant organs whose func- tion it is to burn off the daily quantum of sugar.

It is not improbable that there may be different sorts of diabetes arising from different causes. Thus it has been said that the diabetes of curare-poisoning appears even when the liver has previously been emptied of glycogen by starving the animal. When we reflect that muscles are the organs especially affected by curare, the fact Gf it be a fact) just mentioned at once suggests that the sugar which appears in the urine during curare-poisoning is duc to some defect in the muscular tissue, in consequence of which the glycogen normally used up by it fails to be used and passes back into the blood. Further, the failure of glycogen-using organs may be due to no disqualification of theirs for the work of utilizing normal glycogen, but to some abnormal constitution of the glycogen (or the sugar) offered to them. Again, the diabetes caused by copious injection of dilute saline solutions into the blood-vessels may be due to the large destruction of blood-corpuscles which follows such in- jections, and the consequent production of a large quantity of the starch-converting substance which is known to arise in the disin- tegration of blood-cells. But the common form of artificial diabetes—'puncture diabetes," as it is sometimes called—the

diabetes of anatomical nervous lesions, is undoubtedly due to defects in the hepatic apparatus brought about by the injury. Thus the puncture of the medulla oblongata is of no avail to cause diabetes if the liver has first been deprived of its glycogen by starving the animal experimented upon. It is, however, far from necessary to suppose that the puncture diabetes is due to any incapacity of the liver- cells for their usual metabolic changes; this may be the cause of some kinds of pathological diabetes, but it is almost certainly not the cause of the traumatic variety, and for the following reason. If sugar be freely administered to an animal in which the diabetic nervous lesion has been established, although it is impossible to load the liver with glycogen as, in such conditions, it would become loaded during health, yet a certain amount of glycogen does become stored in the liver. The liver seems still to possess the power of converting the sugar of food into a store of starch, but not the ful- ness of opportunity which it has in health.

The conditions which deprive the liver of the opportunity of storing glycogen are to be sought in an altered vaso-motor mechan- ism. The circumstance that the " diabetic centre" in the medulla coincides with part of the general vaso-motor centre at once leads to the vaso-motor theory of diabetes ; but it may be admitted that this consideration is almost the strongest support of the theory. How a vaso-motor paralysis brings about diabetes we have as yet no clear picture. Verhaps it is by permitting such a rapid current of blood through the vessels that there is not time enough for the usual transmutations. If we may assume this to be the method by which diabetes is produced, then the vaso-motor theory receives much support from the following consideration. Inasmuch as diabetes is caused by a local (hepatic) dilatation of blood-vessels leading to a superabundant torrent of blood, if means be taken to provide other channels for the blood and so relieve the superabund- ance, diabetes should be prevented. This may be done by dividing the splanchnic nerves and dilating the enormous vascular tracts of the abdominal organs. In these circumstances the diabetic puncture makes but a trivial change in the circulation of the liver compared with that which it makes when the blood-pressure is normal; and, as might have been foretold from the vaso-motor theory, no diabetes follows. If diabetes from nervous lesions is a vaso-inotor phenomenon, other forms of artificial diabetes are not so. Arsenic and antimony seem to destroy the

power of the hepatic cells to manufacture glycogen; sugar ingested with the food passes, in consequence of the failure, directly into the blood and out of it into the urine. Ligature of the bile-duct also rapidly leads to profound disorganization of the hepatic tissues, in conse- quence of which imported sugar passes the portal system unheeded and escapes by the kidneys.

Metabolism of the Blood.cWe have hitherto regarded the blood as subordinately related to the great processes of the body, as playing the mechanical part of a carrier, and as if it had no direct interest in the metabolic opera- tions themselves ; the reader, however, need scarcely be re- minded that, but for the respiratory exchanges between the blood on the one hand and the anatomical elements of the tissues on the other, all metabolic processes would be im- possible. In the article Rusprration, and in treating

OU a ies Me

the particular section "the respiration of the tissues," the influence of those exchanges on metabolism will be care- fully considered.

The older physiologists regarded the blood as the very seat of the chemical changes of the body,—a view which is almost entirely opposed to that which we now hold, and which is disproved by many facts.

We have little or no evidence that the blood exhibits transformations of matter such as we have been discussing in the case of the tissues generally. There are few such transformations known to us in which carbonic acid is not one of the most abundant end-products of the change, and therefore, when we find that blood removed from contact with the tissues and freed from carbon dioxide produces very little of this body, although an abundance of oxygen be supplied to it, we have the right to suspect strongly that it is due to the absence of any active metabolism.

It is not certain that blood (or lymph), without the intervention of some other tissue, has even the power of converting non-coagulating albumins fresh from the digest- ive organs into the characteristic fibrin-formers. It is true that when lactate or caprate of soda is injected into the blood of an animal it is readily oxidized; but this may easily be due to the operation of

some organ through which the blood passes, and which finds the bodies referred to suitable to its own metabolic processes ; and this view of the case is further strengthened when we find that formiate of sodium, which also is a readily oxidized body, passes through the same ordeal unchanged.

Nevertheless, the blood is to a certain extent an active living tissue. The white corpuscles, at least, are definite living structures whose life-history, could we but decipher it, would be found to be a history of constant metabolic processes. Towards these elements of the blood the fluid plasma must behave as towards any other tissue-element, supplying them with raw material, and receiving from them the end-products of their internal chemical decom- position ; and therefore the blood, as a whole, must be classed among the metabolic tissues. The production of the anatomical elements of the blood does not concern us here ; it may suffice to say that the white cells are added to the blood or lymph from certain structures of which the spleen, thymus body, lymphatic glands, and mucosa of the alimentary canal are the chief, and that probably the red corpuscles are developed from the white ones. It may also be pointed out that there are certain parts of the body—e.g., the spleen, liver, marrow of bones, &c.—where there is evidence to show that red corpuscles undergo rapid and wholesale destruction, either for the production of some secretion, or possibly because the corpuscles have become old and unfit for work, and their invaluable con- stituent, iron, is wanted for younger and more active corpuscles.

TV.—PRocessts oF EXCRETION.

The blood, as has been more than once said, is subject to continual additions and subtractions on the part of the tissues. The subtractions effected by the tissues are made good in part by the importation of fresh material of food from the alimentary canal. The analogous counterbalanc- ing operations which serve to check the accumulation of used-up tissue-substance in the blood take place in certain organs called excretory. Ina strict sense, all organs which cast out material from the body are excretory ; the digestive glands, for example, pour their secretions into the aliment- ary canal, i.¢., outside the strict limits of the body. But so much of their constituents are reabsorbed before the alimentary canal is traversed that

they may, for practical purposes, be regarded as never having left the body. Even the constituents of tears, when these do not fall over the

ew Tak Ott OW'

cheeks or escape at the nose, are reabsorbed from the nasal mucous membrane. With respect to the alimentary secre- tion, it is merely a small proportion of the bile which remains in the feces that is to be regarded as truly excretory in the sense of being utterly lost to the organism. If excreta are those substances which the body rejects utterly, then we may reckon as excreta (1) the urine, (2) the sweat and oily secretions of the skin, (3) the milk, (4) certain elements of bile contained in the faeces, (5) the gaseous and watery losses at the lungs, (6) the exuvi- ated horny scales of skin and nails and hair, (7) the pro- ducts of the generative organs, but not those constituents of feeces which are but the undigested remains of food. Among these (if we except the milk and the generative secretions whose elaboration is so peculiar and exceptional) the urine and the excretory products of the lungs and skin are those of paramount importance. The excretion from the lungs will be treated under RESPIRATION ; we shall therefore here concern ourselves with the excretion of kidneys and skin.

Kidneys and their Excretion.—Urine is a clear amber- coloured fluid, somewhat acid in reaction, with a peculiar aromatic odour and bitter saline taste. Its specific gravity varies, consistently with health, within wide limits, being affected very greatly (a) by the quantity of liquid consumed by the individual in a given time, (6) by the greater or less activity of the secretion of sweat. Whilst the average specific gravity may be stated to be about 1-020, it is often temporarily much lower and occasionally considerably higher. Asarule the specific gravity is higher in summer than in winter. The average quantity of urine passed by a healthy adult may be reckoned at 52 fluid ounces, though it is affected by the same causes as those which

influence the specific gravity no less than by individual

peculiarity and other circumstances.

The urine is essentially a watery solution of certain organic matters, of which much the most abundant and important is urea, and of mineral salts,

of which the most abundant is common salt (sodium chloride).

Urea.—A well-nourished man passes, on an average, about 33° grammes (500 grains) of urea in twenty-four hours. This body, which has the composition CH,N,O, is looked upon by chemists as carbamide, 7.¢., it is the amide of carbonic acid, and on this view may be written CO(NH,),. It is isomeric with ammonium cyanate. This body represents the chief product of the metamorphosis of albuminous or proteid substances in the body.

Even during starvation the destruction of proteid matter continues, and the amount of urea may reach about 230 to 310 grains. The quantity is, however, specially and directly affected by the amount of proteid matter contained in the food; so that, for instance, by consuming a sufficient quantity of meat certain persons have excreted as much as 1540 grains of urea. The excretion of urea, which is a measure of the metamorphosis of proteids in the body, is not, as was formerly supposed, directly influenced by the amount of mechanical work done by the body, the greater activity of the muscles not being necessarily accompanied by their greater waste ; indzrectly, however, the excretion of urea is increased by bodily exertion, inasmuch as man and other animals appear instinctively to desire and to need a larger quantity of proteid food when much work is to be done than when the body is comparatively at rest.

It was formerly believed that urea was a direct result of the oxidation of proteids in the body. The view actually held is, that it is the product of a synthesis occurring in the body in which a body or bodies resulting from the oxidation of the proteids take part. It has recently been shown that when salts of ammonia are introduced into the system the nitrogen of the ammonia is excreted

683

as urea; in this case it is obvious that a synthesis must have occurred in which the ammoniacal salt introduced has taken a part no less than some other body. It has, for instance, been surmised that in the oxidation of the proteid molecule cyanic acid arises, and that in the presence of ammonia ammonium cyanate is formed, which in the organism, as outside, may be changed into urea ; or, again, that cyanic acid is formed, which, uniting

~~with the elements of water, gives rise to urea, carbonic acid being separated in the reaction.~~

~~Uric acid combined with bases exists in small quantities in the urine of man, about 7 to 10 grains being passed by an adult in twenty-four hours, though individual peculiarities appear to affect ina remarkable manner the excretion of this constituent (maxi- mum limits of quantity °3086 to 15°48 grains). In some animals, as in snakes and birds, uric acid and its salts represent the chief nitrogenous excretory product, i.e, take the place of the urea of the urine of man and carnivorous animals.~~

~~Uric acid has the composition C;H,N,0;. Its constitution is yet involved in great doubt, in spite of the most profound and ex- tensive researches which have been made on its more or less imme- diate relations, and in spite of the fact that its synthesis has recently been effected. It may be looked upon in all probability as a derivative of cyanic acid, CNOH, and glycocin, C,H;NO,, and there are many facts which seem conclusively to show that in the system it does not arise directly from a decomposition of proteids, but is the result of a synthesis in which derivatives of these bodies take a part.~~

~~Xanthin, CsH4N,O., hypoxanthin, Cs;H,N,O, and guanin, C;H;H;O, are immediate derivatives of uric acid, of which the first is a constant constituent of urine, and the second occurs in certain states of disease.~~

~~Hippuric acid, C,Hy,NO., benzo-amido-acetic acid, is present in small quantities in the urine of man (about 15 grains a day), but is the chief nitrogenous constituent of the urine of herbivorous animals, It is formed whenever benzoic acid, or a body which can yield benzoic acid in the organism, is ingested.~~

~~In addition to the organic matters already enumerated the urine contains small quantities of other bodies, amongst which may be mentioned (1) colouring matters, of which one alone is known with any degree of accuracy, and is termed wrobilin, a derivative proxi- mately of the biliary colouring matters, and more remotely of the blood-colouring matter, and (2) minute traces of ferments.~~

As has already been said, the chief salt of the urine is common salt ; there are, however, also excreted in the urine considerable quantities of phosphates and sulphates. The two latter salts re- present in part similar salts introduced as such into the system, but in part they are the products of oxidation of organic bodies which contain sulphur and phosphorus respectively ; to the former belong the proteids, to the latter certain phosphorus- containing fatty bodies of great complexity, which occur widely diffused throughout the body, but particularly in the white matter of the great nerve-centres and in the nerves.

The changes which urine undergoes after it is passed may be briefly referred to. The faint acid reaction proper to freshly-drawn urine is increased, probably in consequence of an acid-fermentation process started by the mucus accidentally present. The visible effect of this is the deposit of acid urates or free uric acid. Ina short time, especially if the urine be kept at a warm temperature, the acid-fermentation is overwhelmed by a fermentation for which organic germs are needed, and which leads to the resolution of urea into carbonate of ammonia. The reaction becomes alkaline, and the smell stronglyammoniacal. Precipitates of ammonia, urate, and ammonio-magnesian phosphate are deposited, the odour becomes putrefactive and multitudes of micro-organisms develop whose germs have been derived from the surrounding air.

Kidney.—The urine is excreted continuously in the kidneys, two organs situated at the back of the abdominal cavity. The fluid is continuously poured by two ducts called wreters into a common reservoir situated in the pelvis, and known as the urinary bladder. From this reservoir the urine is intermittently ejected by the urethra. The two kidneys never secrete symmetrically ; they exhibit an alternation of vascular and secretory activity. Similar variations have been observed in the different portions of one kidney,—first one and then another region of the kidney will be found to be in full activity. Nevertheless, when one kidney is extirpated or unfitted for its function, the other may be capable of the whole work of excretion.

The excretory portion of the kidney, like the secretory

portion of all glandular organs, consists of tubes of base- ment membrane lined with cells of peculiar attributes and surrounded by capillaries for blood and lymph, which allow their fluids to come into close communication with the secreting cells. The complex disposition of the tubes, of which there are hundreds in each kidney, has been traced after an infinite amount of patient research. An account of the arrangement of the tubuli uriniferi falls beyond the scope of the present article.

Excretion of Urine—A review of the constituents of the urme discloses that the function of the kidneys is to separate from the blood chiefly (1) nitrogenous crystalline bodies which are undoubtedly the end-products of the oxidation of nitrogenous bodies, and (2) inorganic salts and water. We have now to describe the probable manner in which this separation is effected. Ever since the whole course and form of the renal tubules became mapped out, and the existence of a double system of capillaries was established, it has been the habit of physiologists to regard the excretion of urine as a twofold operation. Sir William Bowman, so long ago as 1842, in the course of a histo- logical investigation of the structure of the kidney, came to the conclusion that the watery portions of the urine are excreted in the capsule, while the solid parts are removed from the blood surrounding the lower parts of the renal tubule. Ludwig, about the same time, advanced the theory that the whole of the urine is separated from the blood in the glomeruli, but that it is separated in an extremely watery condition, the object of the complicated renal tubules being to permit of the reabsorption of the water, and to bring the urine into a suitable state of concentration for removal from the body. The progress of investigation has completely vindicated the theory proposed by Bowman, which now rests not merely on inference from anatomical structure, but upon a sound basis of physiological facts.

Not only is the process twofold in respect of the two classes of constituents secreted; it may be twofold also in respect of the processes of the act. There is at least much reason for thinking that the water is separated from the blood mainly, though not entirely, by a physical pro- cess of filtration, while some, if not all, of the specific elements of the urine are secreted by a peculiar selective or elaborative action of living epithelial cells. The reason for supposing that the excretion of water is mainly a pro- cess of filtration is

the simple one that the flow of urine seems, in a general way, to obey the same laws of pressure as the flow of water through a filter. For example, what- ever tends to increase the blood-pressure in the branches of the renal artery tends to increase the flow of urine in a given time. If the heart beats more quickly than usual more urine is excreted. If cold contracts the superficial vessels of the skin, and drives a larger quantity of blood upon the kidney, or if the same result ensues from moderate stimulation of the splanchnic nerves, the blood-pressure in the renal artery becomes raised, and an enlarged secretion follows. If the spinal cord be divided in the lower part of the cervical region, the great fall of blood-pressure which results is associated with suppression of the excre- tion of urine. Further, if the pressure in the ureters be allowed to reach the value of 10 to 40 mm. (3937 to 15748 inches) of mercury the transfusion of fluid from the blood is prevented. Now the blood-pressure in the renal artery is about 120 to 140 mm. (4°7244 to 5:5118 inches) of mercury. Secretion stops, therefore, long before the pressure in the glandular ducts reaches that of the glandular vessels,—a relationship between pressure and secretion the very reverse of that which obtains in the case of the salivary gland. These facts sufficiently justify the conclusion that the secretion of water in the kidney is a process of filtration. But there are other facts which

UTR Ieee

demand the assumption that even the separation of water is in part an act of living protoplasm. The free inges- tion of water by drinking is one of the most certain ways of producing a copious flow of urine; and yet there is no evidence to show that in most cases this effect is brought about by a raising of the blood-pressure. On the contrary, if one animal be bled into the veins of another there is no increase produced in the amount of urine excreted, and it is difficult to imagine that the blood- pressure may be more easily raised by the drinking of water, however freely, than by introducing into the blood- vessels of one animal the quantity of blood proper to two. In such cases we must assume that the outflow of water from the blood is due to the activity of living cells aiding the normal influence of pressure.

While the secretion of water cannot wholly be ascribed to physical processes, there is no doubt that the secretion of some other bodies is a

selective act of living protoplasm taking place independently of, or it may be in opposition to, physical processes. The first substance whose secretion was experimentally proved to be due to the renal epithe- lium was sulphindigotate of soda, or indigo-carmine. If this substance be injected into the blood-vessels of an animal in which the blood-pressure has been so far lowered by division of the spinal cord below the medulla that the flow of urine has stopped altogether, it can be traced in a short time into the epithelium of the renal tubules, and through them into the lumen of the duct. The absence of the usual flow of water has left the granules stranded at the place where they entered the renal system of tubes. No trace of the substance was found by the original ob- server, Heidenhain, in the glomeruli or capsules; but it may be stated that later experimenters have succeeded, by injecting the drug freely and pursuing it over longer inter- vals, in tracing it into the glomerular cells also.

Sulphindigotate of soda is not a normal constituent of the urine ; but there is little doubt that what happens in the case of this body happens also in the case of some of the usual constituents. Thus, uric acid has been detected within the epithelium of the renal tubules; and by a com- paratively new and beautiful observation it is placed beyond doubt that urea also enters the secretion at the same cells rather than through the glomeruli. This proof was rendered practicable by the discovery that in the frog the kidney is supplied with blood from two separate and distinct sources. The renal artery supplies the glomeruli with blood, while the so-called renal portal vein, a branch from the femoral vein which runs along the outer border of the kidney, supplies the capillary network surrounding the uriniferous tubules. If the renal artery be tied and the blood-supply shut off from the glomeruli, sugar when introduced into the circulation is not excreted with urine, although it readily is when the vascular supply of the kid- ney is untouched. But in the same circumstances, when the action of the glomeruli is eliminated, urea is readily excreted. Urea and sugar are therefore removed from the blood by different organs; or at least the renal epithelium of the tubules can excrete urea, although it cannot excrete sugar. At the same time that urea is being excreted a copious flow of water is determined, which most presum- ably escapes at the point where the urea is excreted. This fact is significant when we remember that ligature of the renal artery usually stops the flow of water, and that sul- phindigotate of soda injected

into the circulation when the glomeruli are tied out of it may be traced into the same epithelium, but gives rise to no flow into the bladder.

The renal epithelium, then, has the power of attracting to itself and removing from the blood certain elements which the latter already contains. It may now be asked whether the kidney has the power of elaborating any of

NPE IP ON

685

the components of its excretion from antecedent forms | '5 fatty acids (formic, acetic, butyric, &c., but not lactic),

which it obtains from the blood. In other words, is the kidney a simple separating or straining mechanism, or are the constituents of the urine, like the constituents of bile or saliva, elaborated in the course of metabolic changes going on within the secreting epithelium ?

This question has already been touched in discussing the metabolism of liver-cells. There is little doubt that the kidney exhibits some metabolic activity. Inasmuch as the blood of herbivorous animals contains no trace of hippuric acid, this must presumably be formed within the kidney. If blood containing sodium benzoate and glyco- cin be passed through the vessels of a fresh kidney, hippuric acid arises. The kidney, therefore, must be assumed to be capable of elaborating hippuric acid out of simpler antecedent forms. But it is not certain that it has any further power. With regard to urea, it appears cer- tain that the activity of the kidney is confined to strain- ing it off from the blood. Normal blood contains about 1 part of urea in 4000, while the blood of the renal vein contains less than this. Urea, therefore, is separated from the blood in the kidney. If the kidneys be extirpated, or if their blood-vessels be ligatured so as to exclude them from the circulation, or if the ureters be tied (the effect of which is speedily to unfit the kidney-epithelium for the work of excretion), then the amount of urea increases in the blood up to 1 part in 300 or 400, while much urea is voided in the fluids ejected from the stomach and intestines during such experiments. Similar experiments in birds have led to similar results in the case of uric acid. All these facts point to the conclusion that urea and the allied bodies in urine

are derived proximately from the blood rather than elaborated in the kidney itself. We are there- fore justified in regarding the kidneys as almost exclusively an apparatus for purifying the blood from the injurious pro- ducts of the cell-metabolism of other organs and tissues.

Excretions of the Sweat-Glands.—The second great ex- cretory system is that of the skin, which supplements in important particulars the excretory functions of the kidneys. This function of the skin is effected in great measure by certain glands, called sweat-glands, opening on the sur- face of the skin. There are, indeed, other glands besides the sweat-glands connected with the skin, viz., the sebaceous glands, which open chiefly into the sacs of hair-follicles and secrete an oily material which keeps the surface of the skin supple and water-tight. The sebaceous secretion resembles in its formation the secretion of milk. Inasmuch as it is not reabsorbed, it is a true excretion; but there is reason to believe that the material removed from the blood is elaborated out of complex fat-yielding molecules con- tained in the blood very much as the milk is secreted. We know very little either of the nature of the bodies ex- creted or of the processes of their formation. The chief excretory products of the skin are furnished by the sweat- glands, and constitute sweat. In addition, however, there is constantly being thrown off from the skin a certain quantity of carbonic acid.

Nature of Sweat.—It is impossible to collect sweat for analysis under perfectly normal conditions; either the body must be subjected to great heat to adduce a copious flow, or a part of the body must be enclosed in an air-tight bag of india-rubber. In both cases the conditions are abnormal. So far as can be ascertained, sweat is a colourless clear fluid of acid reaction and characteristic odour. The odour varies with the part of the skin from which the sweat is obtained. It consists of water con- taining 1°81 per cent. of solids. The solids are (1) sodium chloride and other inorganic salts, (2) urea and other nitrogenous bodies, (3) fats and cholesterin (which are not altogether due to contamination with sebaceous matter),

(5) a trace of pigment. In addition to these bodies the skin excretes a small amount of carbon dioxide. Although the excretion of the skin is small in amount (if we except the water), if the escape of it be prevented by

~~varnishing the skin death very quickly ensues. This is probably due to the retention of some poisonous substance, the nature and production of which are very little understood.~~

~~In concluding these remarks on excretory organs it may be pointed out that the lungs (looked at as excretory organs), the kidneys, and the skin are all engaged in the great task of ridding the system of its superfluous matters, and that each supplements the action of the others. The lungs are the great excretors of carbonic acid, which is the chief oxidation product of the body, though they share with the kidneys and skin the task of getting rid of water. The kidneys have thrown upon them the task of removing from the system nearly the whole of the nitrogenous waste products and the superabundant salts, besides being the greatest excretors of water. The skin, on the other hand, looked upon as an excretory organ, is second in import- ance to the kidneys as a remover of water, and comes next to the lungs in separating carbonic acid. The skin, it must be remembered, however, has many functions besides those of an excretory organ, for, besides being an organ of sense, it takes the chief part in regulating the temperature of the animal body.~~

~~V.—TRANSFORMATIONS OF ENERGY ASSOCIATED WITH THE EXCHANGE OF THE MATTERS OF THE Bopy.~~

~~The chemical changes which occur in all the tissues and organs of the body are, it has been stated, in the main, processes of oxidation, in which energy that was potential in the organic compounds and the oxygen that takes part in them become in great part kinetic. This energy takes the form of mechanical work and heat; the mechanical work is in part expended within the body itself and ultimately takes the form of heat; in part, however, it is expended upon the objects of the external world, and, though even then ultimately transformed into heat, this is not heat which is available for the purposes of the body. There can be no doubt, however, that a large portion of the total heat evolved in the body is the immediate result of chemical operations, and has not in the first instance taken the form of mechanical work.~~

~~In the article Dietetics (¢.v.) attention has been drawn to the amount of energy which is stored up in the organic matters constituting the food of~~

animals, and which can approximately be estimated by determining the amount of heat which the organic matters evolve when burned in a calorimeter. An approximate estimate is thus formed of the energy which is at the disposal of the animal or man whose diet is subjected to study. Thus it has been calculated that the available energy derived from the oxida- tion of the organic matters of the food of a well-fed man amounts to about 2,700,000 units of heat, the unit chosen being the amount required to heat 1 gramme of water 1° C. When the man is doing no external work this energy is dis- sipated from the body almost entirely as heat, and, accord- ing to the calculations of Helmholtz, the losses of heat are approximately distributed as follows :—

(ihe ae Percentage of

Employed in raising the temperature of Heat, total Heat rabies nent into the Ellneiinty pease GAUTIE) Wr onenscbenernareetee acter cae ereeeet 70,157 2°6

Employed in warming inspired air…… 70,032 2°6

Employed in bringing about the vaporiza- tion of water in the lungs…… 397,536 147

Lost by radiation, conduction, and evapora- tion from Thepekatisens sieves: sektec ss cee 2,162,275 80°1

2,700,000 100-0

686

The total income and expenditure of energy of an average man in twenty-four hours is thus calculated to correspond to the amount of heat required to raise 595 tbs of water from the temperature of melting ice to that of boiling water.

Where, it will be asked, does this transformation of energy chiefly have its seat? The answer to this question is that it is firstly in the muscles, then in the glands of the body. At all times, whether in rest or activity, heat is

~~*evolved, but the quantity increases in the case both of glands and of muscles as they pass from the former into the latter condition. In the resting body, it has been remarked, the losses of energy are represented by the loss of heat, for the mechanical work done within it takes the form of heat within the body itself. It is difficult, nay, impossible, to calculate the amount of energy which in the first instance takes the form of mechanical work in the body, and which is always transformed into heat. The case of the heart is one in which, however, an approximate calculation can be made. Upon fairly reliable data it has been calculated that the work expended by the heart of a man in twenty- four hours amounts to not less than 627,768 foot-pounds, an amount of work which is equivalent to nearly 45 pound- units of heat, and which represents the energy evolved as heat in the complete combustion of about 386 grains of carbon.*~~

~~*These calculations enable one to form some idea of the magnitude of the nutritive processes which have their seat in the muscular substance of the heart; and to a less degree the same is the case with all the other muscles which are engaged in so-called opus vitale, that is, in the performance of internal work absolutely essential to the continuance of the life of the organism.*~~

~~*The proportion of the total energy of the body which takes the form of mechanical work varies within very wide limits. Assuming that the conversion of potential into kinetic energy in equal times were a constant quantity, it would follow that all external work done diminished the amount of heat set free from the body. To a certain extent it is probable that such a relation exists. It is, however, to be remembered that when external work has to be done there is invariably an increased consumption of organic constituents of food, and therefore an increased store of available energy. The working animal consumes more O and produces more CO, than the resting animal. Different animals, like steam-engines of different construction, vary in the proportion borne by the external work they are capable of performing to the total energy which becomes kinetic. Experiments made with the separate muscles of animals, no less than observations on the relation between the external mechanical work done by and the total heat evolved in the body of animals, have, however, shown that animals are more economical machines than the most perfect steam-*~~

engines. Whilst the latter cannot convert more than one-eighth of their available energy into work, the animal may yield as much as one-fifth of its energy in the form of available external work.

VI.—Growtn, DEcay, anD DEATH.

In the adult body in a state of health the income of matter balances as nearly as possible the expenditure, and therefore the weight of the body and its dimensions remain nearly constant, and the same is approximately true of the different organs and tissues which compose the body, as well as of the anatomical elements which enter into their formation. Even when the conditions to which the organ- ism is subjected undergo great variations—as, for instance, when from a state of rest it passes into a state of great activity, or when the temperature of the medium which it inhabits undergoes great changes—and when, to meet

¢

NUTRITION

these variations in external circumstances, the rate of the exchanges of matter has to undergo great fluctuations, the weight of the body remains nearly constant. his remarkable result is one which doubtless depends upon a great many factors which are for the most part hidden from us.

In the growing body matters are, however, very different ; in it normally the income must be always so much in excess of the expenditure that an accumulation of capital may occur, and that the body may increase in weight and in dimensions. The growing body is always the seat of a more active exchange of matter than the fully-developed body, ze. weight for weight, it requires more food and oxidizes it more rapidly.

The increase of weight and of dimensions occurs in part by addition of matter to, and increase in weight and in dimensions of, individual organs and their constituent anatomical elements; in part, however, it is due to an actual multiplication of anatomical elements occurring at a rate which greatly exceeds that which occurs in the adult body. To what an extent this multiplication occurs and how it gradually diminishes is evident when we

reflect that the whole organism was originally derived from a single cell, the ovum.

Upon what depends this tendency to multiplication of anatomical elements, and this tendency to increase in size of individual anatomical elements or of organs, until a certain approximate limit has been attained, is absolutely unknown. We know to a certain extent that the process of growth depends upon and is influenced by certain cir- cumstances, as amount of food, temperature, blood-supply to the particular organ, and so on, but yet the knowledge is wanting which would tell us why, when a certain limit has been attained, the processes of income and expendi- ture balance and growth ceases.

That the nervous system has a great influence upon nutrition and therefore upon growth is certainly known, and in great measure explicable. By its control over the blood-supply to organs and tissues the nervous system exerts a remarkable influence, as well as by its relations more or less direct upon the anatomical elements through nerve-fibres, which, inasmuch as they appear to influence in a direct manner the nutrition of anatomical elements, have been surmised to exist, and have received the name of "trophic fibres." Yet, even apart from the influence exerted by the nervous system, it appears to be a property of individual anatomical elements that, consistently with health, they shall only develop at a certain rate and attain a certain maguitude,

Scarcely less mysterious than the primary causes of growth is the fact that every organism having arrived at maturity remains in a state of apparent structural and functional integrity for a term which possesses an approxi- mately constant mean value for each species, and then sooner or later necessarily passes into a condition of gradually lessening efficiency, which ultimately terminates in death, Were the animal organism a machine undergoing a constant though very slow process of waste, its decay and ultimately its death would be more obvious than they actually are. The organism, however, differs from the machine in that its matter is continually the seat of change, and that during long periods (i.e., during healthy adult life) the processes of gain and loss of matter appear to be going on with perfect evenness and equality. Why, then, the ultimate deteriora- tion

resulting in waste and then in death? The answer is that the organ as a whole unquestionably does suffer by work, and, though at first the degree of impairment is so slow as to be imperceptible, it doubtless is a continuous process.

A general impairment of the mechanism of the body as

NU T—

it passes from the age of mature or adult life into old age is evidenced (1) by a diminished rate in the exchange of matter of the body ; (2) by a diminished power manifested by the organism as a whole, as well as by each of its individual organs, to accomplish work ; (3) by a general loss of weight of the body and of its essential tissues and organs, though the weight of the body as a whole may increase by the development and storage of fat ; (4) by a tendency to structural change of organs or parts of organs whose proper function is essential to life, as, for example, of the circulatory, respiratory, and nervous apparatuses ; (5) by a readiness to be injuriously affected by external circumstances, which at an earlier period produce no ob- vious effect upon the body or only temporary impairment of its functions. The gradual and general deterioration of the organism thus evidenced is usually interrupted by the supervention of some process impairing so greatly the functions of a vital organ that the organ ism as a whole

ceases to perform the functions which characterize it as |-

living, and death results. Whatever the remote cause of death, the proximate cause is in every case an arrest of the circulation of the blood, putting an end to the exchanges of matter and energy which are the most characteristic of the accompaniments of life. (A. G.*)

NUTTALL, THomas (1786-1859), botanist and orni- thologist in the United States of America, where he lived and worked from 1808 until 1842, was born at Settle in Yorkshire in 1786, and spent some years as a journeyman printer in England. Soon after going to the United States he was induced by Professor Barton to apply himself to the study of the plants of that region; and in pursuance of his investigations he undertook many long and arduous

~~as well as dangerous journeys, usually spending the summers in the field and the winters in working out the materials accumulated during his expeditions, In 1822 he was appointed curator of the botanic gardens of Harvard university, but continued his explorations, and in 1834 crossed the continent to the Pacific Ocean, and visited the Sandwich Islands. Some property having been left him in England on condition of his residing on it during part of each year, he left America in 1842, and did not again revisit it, except for a short time in 1852. He died at St Helen's, Lancashire, 10th September 1859.~~

~~Almost the whole of his scientific work was done in the States, and his published works appeared there. The more important of these are, The Genera of North American Plants, and a Catalogue of the Species for the year 1817, 2 vols. (1818) ; Journal of Travels into the Arkansas Territory during the year 1819 (1821); The North American Sylva, 3 vols. (1842-1849) ; Manual of the Ornithology of the United States and of Canada (1834 and 1840) ; and numerous papers on similar subjects in the various American scientific periodicals.~~

~~NUX VOMICA, a poisonous drug, consisting of the seed of Strychnos Nux-Vomica, L., a tree indigenous to most parts of India, and found also in Burmah, Siam, Cochin China, and northern Australia. The tree, which belongs to the natural order Loganiacez, is of moderate size, with a short, thick, often crooked stem, and ovate entire leaves, marked with 5 or 6 or 7 veins radiating from the base of the leaf. The flowers are small, greenish-white, and tubular, and are arranged in terminal corymbs. The fruit is of the size of a small orange, and has a thin hard shell, enclosing a bitter, gelatinous, white pulp, in which from 1 to 5 seeds are vertically embedded. The seed is disk-shaped, rather less than 1 inch in diameter, and about 4 inch in thickness, slightly depressed towards the centre, and in some varieties furnished with an acute keel-like ridge at the margin. This is particularly the case with the seeds imported from Bombay and collected in that province. Those imported from Madras and Cochin China have usually a rounded margin (Pharm. Journ. [3], xii. p.~~

~~N Y B 687~~

1053). The acute margin is considered in commerce indi- cative of superior quality, seeds so characterized yielding the largest quantity of the active principles. The external surface of the seed is of a greyish-green colour and satiny appearance, due to a coating of appressed silky hairs. The interior of the seed consists chiefly of horny albumen, which is easily divided along its outer edge into two halves by a

Flowers, Fruit, and Seed of Nux Vomica.

fissure, in which lies the embryo. The latter is about three-tenths of an inch long, having a pair of heart-shaped membranous cotyledons,

The drug owes its poisonous property chiefly to the alkaloids strychnia and brucia, the mixed alkaloids found in the seed being in the proportion of about 1 per cent. of the former to 2 per cent. of the latter. These alkaloids occur in the seeds in combination with a probably complex body which has been named strychnic or igasuric acid. Brucia is distinguished from strychnia by giving a red colour when moistened with strong nitric acid, and by being soluble in 150 parts of boiling water, while strychnia requires 2500 parts for its solution. It is remarkable that although the pulp contains strychnia it is not poisonous to birds, being eaten by the hornbill, Buceros malabaricus, and other species. Parasitic plants of the natural order Loranthacee, when growing on Strychnos Nux-Vomica, acquire the poisonous properties of the latter.

Nux Vomica seeds are imported into Great Britain from Bombay, Madras, and Cochin China to the average extent of about 200 tons per annum, valued at £1600.

NYANZA. For Albert Nyanza and Victoria Nyanza, see NILE, supr. pp. 504, 505.

NYASSA, Laker. See ZAmBzst.

NYBORG, a town and seaport of Denmark on the east side of the island of Fiinen, 28} miles by rail east of Odense, and the point from which the steam-packets cross the Great Belt to Korsér in Zealand. The fortress, built by Christian IV. and Frederick III, was dismantled in 1869, and the ruins of

the castle are now used as a prison. From 4812 in 1870 the population increased to 5402 by 1880.

As early as the 12th century the town was founded and a castle erected on Knudshoved (Canute's Head) by Knud, nephew of Walde- mar the Great ; and from the 18th to the 15th century Nyborg was one of the most important places in Denmark, a seat of the royal eourt, and a frequent meeting-place of the estates. In 1531 the

people of Liibeek took the town by storm. In 1658 it surrendered to the Swedes ; but Peter Bredal, icebound in the harbour, held

them at bay till he was able to make his escape. By the defeat of the Swedes under the walls of the fortress in 1659 the country was freed from their dominion. In 1808 the marquis La Romana, who with a body of Spanish troops garrisoned the fortress for France, revolted from his allegiance and held out till he and a portion of his men got off with the English fleet.

NYIREGYHAZA, a town of Hungary, in the district of Szaboles, is situated at the junction of the river Theiss and the railways of the north-east of Hungary, 30 miles to the north of Debreczin. It contains four churches, a gymnasium, and a mineral bath. The inhabitants of the town, who numbered 24,102 in 1880, are engaged in agriculture, wine-growing, and the manufacture of soda, matches, and saltpetre. The annual fairs are largely fre- quented. A little to the north-west is the famous wine- producing district of Tokay, which yields about 18 million gallons of wine annually, including 3 or 4 million gallons of genuine Tokay.

NYKOPING, a city of Sweden, the chief town of the province of Nyképing (Sédermanland), is situated on both banks of a stream which unites Lakes Yngaren, Tisaren, &c., with By Fjord, and so with the Baltic. Connected by a branch line with the railway from Stockholm to the Norwegian frontier, it lies about 100 miles by rail south- west of Stockholm. The ruins of its once famous castle, the governor's residence, the churches of St Nicholas and All Saints, the town-house (1662), and the hospital are the more noteworthy buildings. The population was 4825 in 1862, 4813 in 1880.

Nyképing (7.¢, New-Market, Latinized as Nicopia) begins to ap- pear as a regular town with churches and monasteries early in the 13th century. Its castle was the seat of the kings of Soderman- land, and after those of Stockholm and Calmar was the strongest in Sweden. The death of Waldemar in 1298, the starving to death of Dukes Waldemar and Eric in 1318, the marriage and the deaths both of Charles IX. and his consort Christina of Holstein, the birth of their daughter Princess Catherine, and in 1622 the birth of her son Charles X. are the main incidents of which it was the scene. Burned down in 1665 and again damaged by fire in 1719, it still remained the seat of the provincial authorities till 1760. The town was burned by Albert of Mecklenburg's party in ed an accidental conflagration in 1665, and by the Russians in '

NYLGHAU, or Ni-@at, one of the largest of the antelopes, a handsome and graceful animal, with short, straight, erect horns, pointed and turned slightly forwards at the tips, and present in the male only (see Plate IL, vol. ii.). It has a short erect mane, and the male has also a tuft of hair upon the throat. When adult the sexes are very different in colour, the male being generally of a dark iron-grey or slate colour, approaching black on the head and legs, while the female and young are of a bright light- brown or fawn colour. In both male and female at all ages the lips, chin, and under-parts as well as two trans- verse stripes on the inner sides of the ears and rings on the fetlocks are white, and the mane and tip of the tail black. The horns are black, and from 8 to 9 inches long. The male stands about 4 feet 4 inches high at the shoulder, the female is smaller. The tail is 18 to 21 inches in length.

The nylghau is one of the few true antelopes occurring in India, and is peculiar to that country, being found from near the foot of the HImalayas to the south of Mysore, though rare to the north of the Ganges and also in the extreme south. It is most abundant in central India, and does not occur in Assam or the countries to the east of the Bay of Bengal. It frequents forests and low jungles, though often found in tolerably open plains, associating in small herds. One, or very often two, young are pro- duced at a birth, and when caught early they are readily tamed. They are often kept in captivity in the mena- geries of the native princes, and also in Europe, but the temper of the old males is uncertain. When fighting

they drop on their knees, and then, advancing in this position until within convenient distance, make a sudden spring, butting with their horns with great force.

The first description of this animal, accompanied by a rude figure, was given by Dr Parsons in a paper entitled " An Account of a Quadruped brought from Bengal, and now to be seen in London," published in the Philosophical Transactions for 1745. No name was assigned to it, but the author identified it with an animal called '"' Biggel," seen in the stables of the viceroy of Goa by John Albert de Mandelsloe in his voyage through the Indies in 1638. In 1767 and the following years several living specimens were sent to England, from which Dr William Hunter drew up an excellent account of the characters of the male, female, and young, and of their habits in captivity, which, with a very spirited figure by Stubbs (often since copied), was published in the Philosophical Trans- actions for 1770. Dr Hunter was apparently unaware of Parsons's paper, and gives the animal the native name of "Nyl-ghan," signifying in Persian "blue bull." On Parsons's description Pallas founded his Antilope tragocamclus (Spicilegia Zoologica, i. p. 9, 1767), which was therefore its earliest specific name, though others have been used in later times, especially 4. picta, given by Pallas (Spicilegia, xii. p. 14, 1777) to the animal described by Hunter under the supposition that it was a different species. It has also had several generic names, Boselaphus, Damalis, Portax, &c., the first-named being the one to which preference is now usually given.

NYMPH. The belief that the nature which surrounds mankind—the woods, the springs, the hills—is full of a life resembling, yet different from, human life is universal in a primitive stage of thought. At Psophis in Arcadia a row of tall cypress trees was called ai rdpOevor, the damsels. In other places the name xépar was used, but the general term for the spirits who dwell in external nature was vipdar, All three words have the same meaning. There is a close relation between the souls of dead men and the life of nature; the Nymphs often play the part of death and carry away human beings to dwell with them. This idea appears in a slightly different form when heroes and favoured mortals live in communion with them. The connexion of a human being with a Nymph has something unnatural about it, and almost always brings some disaster on the mortal. Yet another form of the idea appears in

the word vupddAnrros ; he whose mind the Nymphs take possession of loses his human wit and becomes mad, but has wisdom more than human. The worship of the Nymphs was practised throughout the classical period in places where they seemed to have chosen a home for themselves, in shady groves and beside springs of clear water. It retained its primitive simplicity. No temple, no statue, no priest was needed; the offer- ings of a rural people were placed on the simple altar. The cultus is therefore not often mentioned in literature ; but it appears to have been closely connected with the household life of the people, and to have had a strong hold on them. Among the ceremonies of marriage an acknowledgment of the power of the Nymphs was in- cluded. The bride, herself a viudy, was sprinkled with water from the fresh spring of the Nymphs, or she went to bathe in the spring.

The Nymphs, the ever-youthful spirits of nature, pro- tected and nourished children (xovporpd¢dot) ; they were themselves often, especially in Asia Minor, the mothers of the heroes of the land. In the Troad, Hermes and the Sileni sport with them in the mountain caves. Their life was long, according to Hesiod 9720 times that of man; it was a common belief that they were born and died along with the trees of the forest. It was usual to distinguish Nymphs of the rivers and fountains, Naiads, from those of the forests and mountains, Dryads, Hama- dryads, Oreades; but they were all Kotpar Avds, the maidens of heaven, or, in more anthropomorphic language, the daughters of Zeus. The worship of the Nymphs became more fashionable in later time, and shrines of Nymphs (vvpdaia) were built even in cities.

O

The history of the symbol O is parallel to that of . E. Each represents several sounds which are dis- tinguished habitually in speech without any difficulty, but for which, owing to the imperfection of the English alpha- bet, there are no separate symbols. Probably the confusion is worst in English ; but French and Italian also have more sounds for each of these symbols than can be properly included under them, and so they distinguish these some- times by diacritical marks, as 0 or 6, and sometimes they do not distinguish at all.

The different sounds which O is used to denote in English lie, with one exception, on the line between the pure a-sound and the pure u-sound. We have already seen that e denotes several different sounds on the other line—that between pure a and pure 7%. The difference be- tween the sounds on these two lines is this. In the a—7 line only the tongue is employed ; it is raised more and more for each successive sound. But in the a—wz line the tongue is not the only agent; the cavity of the mouth is also contracted, so that the passage is narrowed, and the lip-aperture is lessened more and more for each sound ; in technical phrase the lips are "rounded," so that for the aperture is the smallest possible to allow of the utter- ance of a true vowel, hence the great ease with which the u-sound passes into a w, in which there is friction caused by the still greater closing of the lips, and therefore we have a consonant not a vowel sound.

The following different sounds—-denoted by O in English—are readily discriminated. Beginning from the a-end of the line, we come first to the sounds heard in "not" and in "lord"; for both of these the back of the tongue is much depressed and the lips are only slightly rounded. 'The difference between the two sounds consists in this—for the first the back of the tongue is more con- vex than for the second ; the passage is therefore some- what narrowed, and the two corresponding sounds are therefore (here and in all the other similar pairs) known technically as "narrow" and "wide," or as "open" and "close." The narrow sound is written by o in English when 7 or / follows, and the wide is written aw as in "law," or au as in " Paul," or even a as in "pall." The next pair may be exemplified by "pole" and "pour," narrow and wide respectively ; for these the tongue is higher and the rounding greater. Here again several digraphs represent the same sound, as in " foal," '" soul," "hoe," "grow." Next the doubled o is generally used to represent the last sound in the scale, the close w, for which the. tongue is highest and the "rounding" greatest, as in "pool"; but in "rule" and others the same symbol is used for this sound as would be used in other European languages. Lastly—the exception mentioned above—o is one of the symbols employed to denote the neutral vowel, as in "son," as well as w in "sun" and a in " final."

The modified German o—written 6 or oe—is a sound unknown in English. It is produced by putting the tongue into the position for the sound denoted

by a in "fate" or ein "'féte ""—a middle sound in the line between aand t —and then by rounding the lips. It thus com- bines the specialities of the two scales of vowel-sound—the 2-scale and the w-scale.

In Italian there are an "open" o (marked 6) and a "close" o (marked 6). The "open" o corresponds to the open or wide sound described above. The "close" o is not quite the same as the "narrow" o of English, but comes a little nearer to wu.

?

In the form of the symbol there is no recorded variation, except that in old Latin it was sometimes square, as ©. In Greek two symbols were employed —O and Q2—for short and long o respectively. But it is not improbable that the second of these denoted at first not merely long 0 but a more open sound, more near to the sound of "law" in English,

OAJACA, or Oaxaca, the chief town of the province of the same name in Mexico, lies 1600 feet above the sea in a beautiful valley on the left bank of the Atoyac, or Rio Verde, which reaches the Pacific after a course of about 170 miles. The city is surrounded by luxuriant gardens, orchards, and cochineal plantations; its streets are wide and regular, and among its public buildings are the cathedral, the bishop's palace (fashioned after the type of a similar ancient edifice at Mitla), and the Dominican monastery and church. Chocolate, cigars, cotton-cloth, wax candles, &c., are manufactured. The population was 26,228 in 1877. The city, which dates from 1522, was visited by a severe earthquake in 1870.

OAK (Anglo-Saxon, de or ec), a word found, vari- ously modified, in all Germanic languages, and applied to plants of the genus Quercus, a well-marked section of the natural order Corylacex (Cupulifere of De Candolle), in- cluding some of the most important timber trees of the north temperate zone. All the species are arborescent or shrubby, varying in size from the most stately of forest trees to the dwarfish bush. Monecious, and bearing their male flowers in catkins, they-are readily distinguished from the rest of the Cupuliferous family by their peculiar fruit, an acorn or nut, enclosed at the base in a woody cup, formed by the consolidation of numerous involucral bracts developed beneath the fertile flower, simultaneously with

~~a cup-like expansion of the thalamus, to which the bracteal scales are more or less adherent. The ovary, three-celled at first, but becoming one-celled and one-seeded by abortion, is closely invested by the perianth, toothed on~~

~~Fic. 1.—Inflorescence of Oak. a, b, ¢, Quercus Robur. (From Behrens, Allge- meine Botanik, pp. 209, 210.) d, e, Q. sessiliflora (Smith); half natural size. (From Kotschy, Die Hichen Europa's, Vienna, 1862, plate xxxii.)~~

~~the margin, and adherent below; the male flowers are in~~

~~small clusters on the usually slender and pendent stalk,~~

~~forming an interrupted catkin ; the stamens vary from six to twelve. The alternate leaves are more or less deeply sinuated or cut in most of the species, but in some of the deciduous and many of the evergreen kinds are nearly or quite entire on the margin. The oaks are widely distri- buted over the temperate parts of Europe, Asia, North~~

~~Africa, and North America. In the western hemisphere~~

~~they range along the Mexican highlands and the Andes far~~

~~into the tropics, while in the Old World the genus, well XVII.—87~~

~~represented in the Himalayas and the hills of China, exists likewise in the peninsula of Malacca, in Java, and in some other islands of the archipelago, several species occur- ring in the Moluccas and Borneo. On the mountains of Europe and North America they grow only at moderate elevations, and none approach the arctic circle. The mul- titude of species and the many intermediate forms render their exact limitation difficult, but those presenting suffi- ciently marked characters to justify specific rank probably approach 300 in number.~~

~~The well-known Q. Robur, one of the most valued of the genus, and the most celebrated in history and myth, may be taken as a type of the oaks with~~

sinuated leaves. Though known in England, where it is the only indigenous species, as the British oak, it is a native of most of the milder parts of Europe, extending from the shores of the Atlantic to the Ural; its most northern limit is attained in Norway, where it is found wild up to lat. 63°, and near the Lindesnees forms woods of some extent, the trees occa- sionally acquiring a considerable size. In western Russia it flourishes in lat. 60°, but on the slope of the Ural the 56th parallel is about its utmost range. Its northern limit

nearly coincides with that of successful wheat cultivation.

Southwards it extends to Sardinia, Sicily, and the Morea. In Asia it is found on the Caucasus, but does not pass the Ural ridge into Siberia, In Britain and in most of its Con- tinental habitats two varieties exist, regarded by many as distinct species: one, Q. pedunculata, has the acorns, gen- erally two or more together, on long stalks, and the leaves nearly sessile; while in the other, Q. sessiijlora, the fruit is without or with a very short peduncle, and the leaves are furnished with well-developed petioles. But, though the extreme forms of these varieties are very dissimilar, in- numerable modifications are found between them; hence it is more convenient to regard them as at most sub-species of Q. Robur. The British oak is one of the largest trees of the genus, though old specimens are often more remark- able for the great size of the trunk and main boughs than for very lofty growth. The spreading branches have a tend- ency to assume a tortuous form, owing to the central shoots becoming abortive, and the growth thus being continued laterally, causing a zigzag development, more exaggerated in old trees and those standing in exposed situations ; to this peculiarity the picturesque aspect of ancient oaks is

Fic. 2.—Q. pedunculata ; halfnatural size. (From Kotschy, op. cit., plate XxVii.)

largely due. When standing in dense woods the trees are rather straight and formal in early growth, especially the sessile-fruited kinds, and the gnarled character tradi- tionally assigned to the oak applies chiefly to its advanced age. The broad deeply-sinuated leaves with blunt rounded

lobes are of a peculiar yellowish colour when the buds unfold in May, but assume a more decided green towards midsummer, and eventually become rather dark in tint; they do not change to their brown autumnal hue until late in October, and on brushwood and saplings the withered foliage is often retained until the spring. The catkins appear soon after the young leaves, usually in England towards the end of May ; the acorns, oblong in form, are in shallow cups with short, scarcely projecting scales ; the fruit is shed the first autumn, often before the foliage changes. Vast oak forests still covered the greater part of Eng- land and central Europe in the earlier historic period ; and, though they have been gradually cleared in the pro- gress of cultivation, oak is yet the prevailing tree in most of the woods of France, Germany, and southern Russia, while in England the coppices and the few fragments of natural forest yet left are mainly composed of this species. The pedunculated variety is most abundant in the southern and midland counties, the sessile-fruited kinds in the northern parts and in Wales, especially in upland districts; the straighter growth and abundant acorns of this sub- species have led to its extensive introduction into planta- tions. The name of "durmast" oak, originally given to a dark-fruited variety of Q. sessiliflora in the New Forest, has been adopted by foresters as a general term for this kind of oak; it seems to be the most prevalent form in Germany and in the south of Europe. A variety of the sessile oak with sweet acorns appears to be the Q. Hsculus of some writers. Many of the ancient oaks that reniain in England may date from Saxon times, and some perhaps from an earlier period ; the growth of trees after the trunk has become hollow is extremely slow, and the age of such venerable giants only matter of vague surmise. The cele- brated Newland oak in Gloucestershire, known for cen- turies as "the great oak," was by the latest measurement 474 feet in girth at 5 feet from the ground. The Cow- thorpe oak, standing (a ruin) near Wetherby in Yorkshire, at the same height measures 38} feet, and seems to have been of no smaller dimensions when described by Evelyn two centuries ago; like most of the giant oaks of Britain, it is of the pedunculate variety.. The preservation of these old trees has been in past times largely due to the survival of the reverence in which the oak was held by Celt and Saxon,—a feeling which seems to have been shared by several Aryan races. The great regard paid to the oak probably originated in the value attached to its timber and fruit; the largest and most durable of European trees, its wood was looked upon as the most precious produce of the forest. With both

Greek and Roman it was the favourite timber for house, bridge, and ship building; and the furrowed columns with spreading base that upheld their stone-built temples of historic age seem to indicate the oak-trunk as their archaic prototype. The tree was not in less esteem among the Teutonic nations; the long ships of the Northmen were hewn from the same "heart of oak" of which the war-ships of England were until lately con- structed. The Anglo-Saxons employed oak timber not only for their dwellings and their fleets but occasionally for more sacred architecture,—the church till recently standing at Greenstead in Essex, and supposed to have been erected in the 10th century, was wholly formed of oak trunks roughly squared. The few ancient timber mansions still existing in England are generally built entirely of oak, which in many cases remains sound after the lapse of several hundred years, sometimes outlasting the brick and stone with which the structures have been repaired. The great oak woods that in early days covered the larger part of Britain had in Tudor times become so reduced that an Act was passed in the reign of Henry VIII. to enforce their preservation, and by the end of the 16th century oak plant-

ing became common. At present large quantities of timber are still obtained from hedgerows and copsewoods ; but, although some attempts have been made to renew the royal forests, much of the oak timber employed in Britain is im- ported from abroad. Many of the Continental woods are failing to produce their former supply ; the large quantity still obtained from the port of Memel, and formerly drawn from Prussia and nearer Poland, is now brought thither from the distant forests of the Dnieper and the Don.

The wood of the British oak, when grown in perfection, is the most valuable produced in temperate climates, The heart-wood varies in colour from dark brown to pale yellowish-brown ; hard, close-grained, and little liable to split accidentally, it is, for a hard wood, easy to work. Under water it excels most woods in durability, and none stand better alternate exposure to drought and moisture, while under cover it is nearly indestructible as long as dry-rot is prevented by free admission of air. Its weight varies from 48 to about 55 Ib the cubic foot, but in very hard slowly-grown trunks sometimes

approaches 60 tb. The sap-wood is lighter and much more perishable, but is of value for many purposes of rural economy. 'The relative

»/ BS. DM, % y < if Wy \

Fia, 3.—Q. sessiliflora ; half natural size, (From Kotschy, op. cit., plate xxxii.)

qualities of the two varieties have been the frequent sub- ject of debate, the balance of practical testimony seeming to establish the superiority of Q. pedunculata as far as durability in water is concerned ; but when grown under favourable circumstances the sessile oak is certainly equally lasting if kept dry. The wood of the durmast oak is commonly heavier and of a darker colour, hence the other is sometimes called by woodmen the white oak, and in France is known as the "chéne'blanc." The oak of Britain is still in great demand for the construction of merchant shipping, though teak has become in some measure its substitute, and foreign oak of various quality and origin largely takes its place. Its great abundance of curved trunks and boughs rendered the oak peculiarly valuable to the shipwright when the process of bending timber artificially was less understood ; the curved pieces are still useful for knees. The younger oaks are employed by the carpenter, wheelwright, waggon-builder, and for innumerable purposes by the country artisan. The most durable of fences are those formed of small oaks, split lengthwise by the wedge into thin boards. The finely- grained heart-wood is sought by the cabinetmaker for the manufacture of furniture, and high prices are often given for the gnarled and knotted portions of slowly-grown trees, to be sawn into veneers. Oak was formerly largely used by wood-carvers, and is still in some demand for those artists, being harder and more durable than lime and other woods that yield more readily to the sculptor's tool. Oak

was thus applied at a very early date; the shrine of Edward the Confessor, still existing in the abbey at West- minster, sound after the lapse of 800 years, 1s of dark- coloured oak-wood. The wood, of unknown age, found submerged in peat-bogs, and of a black hue, is largely used in decorative art under the name of " bog-oak."

The oak grows most luxuriantly on deep strong clays, calcareous marl, or stiff loam, but will flourish in nearly any deep well-drained soil, excepting peat or loose sand ; in marshy or moist places the tree may grow well for a time, but the timber, is rarely sound ; on hard rocky ground and exposed hillsides the growth is extremely slow and the trees small, but the wood is generally very hard and durable. The oak will not bear exposure to the full force of the sea gale, though in ravines and on sheltered slopes oak woods sometimes extend nearly to the shore. The cultivation of this tree in Europe forms one of the most important branches of the forester's art, It is frequently raised at once by sowing the acorns on the ground where the trees are required, the fruit being gathered in the autumn as soon as shed, and perfectly ripe seeds. selected ; but the risk of destruction by mice and other vermin is so great that transplanting from a nursery-bed is in most cases to be preferred. The acorns should be sown in November on well-prepared ground, and covered to a depth of 1} or 2 inches; the seeds germinate in the spring, and the seedlings are usually transplanted when one or two years old to nursery-beds, where they are allowed to grow from two to four years, till required for the plantation. Some authorities recommend the tap-roots to be cut in the second year, with the view of increasing the ball of fibre ; but, if the trees are removed from the seed- bed sufficiently early, the root is best left to its natural development. The oak requires shelter in the early stages of growth ; in England the Scotch pine is thought best for this purpose, though Norway spruce answers as well on suitable ground, and larch and other trees are sometimes substituted. The conifers are allowed to grow to a height of from 3 to 5 feet before the young oaks are planted, and are gradually thinned out as the latter increase in size. The distance between the oaks depends upon the growth intended before thinning the young wood ; usually they are placed from 8 to 12 feet apart, and the superabundant trees cut out as they begin to interfere with each other. The lower branches often require removal, to ensure the formation of a tall straight trunk, and this operation should be performed before the superfluous shoots get too large, or the timber will be injured ; but, as with all trees, un- necessary pruning should be avoided, as every branch removed lessens the vigour of growth. Where artificial copsewood is the object, hazel, hornbeam, and other bushes may be planted between the oaks ; but, when large timber is required, the trees are best without undergrowth.

~~The oak, after the trunk is felled, throws up shoots from the cut stump more surely and abundantly than most trees ; hence it is well adapted for the formation of brush- wood, of which great quantities are employed in Britain for the manufacture of crates and hoops, and for many other uses. Where the underwood consists mainly of oak it is generally cut once in twenty years, but in some places fifteen years are thought sufficient, while on poor land thirty years are sometimes allowed to intervene between the cuttings. Oak coppices are generally cut in the spring, because the bark is then more readily separated, and large timber trees are very often felled at the same period 3 but winter felling is probably best when sound heart-wood is the chief thing in view. The growth of the oak is slow, though it varies greatly in different trees; Loudon states that an oak, raised from the acorn in a garden at Sheffield Place, Sussex, became in seventy years 12 feet in circum-~~

~~ference; but the increase of the trunk is usually very much slower, and when grown for large timber oak can rarely be profitably felled till the first century of its growth is com- pleted. The tree will continue to form wood for 150 or 200 years before showing any symptoms of decay. As firewood oak holds a high position, though in Germany it is considered inferior to beech for that purpose. It makes excellent charcoal, especially for metallurgic pro- cesses; the Sussex iron, formerly regarded as the best produced in Britain, was smelted with oak charcoal from the great woods of the adjacent Weald, until they became so thinned that the precious fuel was no longer obtainable.~~

~~An important product of oak woods is the bark that from a remote period has been the chief tanning material of Europe. The most valuable kind is that obtained from young trees of twenty to thirty years' growth, but the trunks and boughs of timber trees also furnish a large supply ; it is separated from the tree most easily when the sap is rising in the spring. It is then carefully dried by the free action of the air, and when dry built into long narrow stacks until needed for use. The value of oak bark depends upon the amount of tannin contained in it, which . varies much, depending not only on the growth of the tree but on the care bestowed on the preparation of the bark itself, as it soon ferments and spoils by exposure to~~

wet, while too much sun-heat is injurious. That obtained from the sessile-fruited oak is richer in tannic acid than that yielded by Q. pedunculata, and the bark of trees growing in the open is more valuable than the produce of the dense forest or coppice. The bark of young oak branches has been employed in medicine from the days of Dioscorides, and is occasionally used in modern practice, chiefly as an astringent : in decoction it is given as a gargle for throat affections depending on relaxation, and is administered in dysenteric hemorrhages and some forms of diarrhœa ; it was regarded by the practitioners of a former age as useful in consumption, a disease from which tanners are said to be nearly exempt. Poultices made of the crushed or pow- dered bark have been used with advantage where astringent external applications are indicated ; as a tonic it has in modern medicine given place to other remedial agents. The astringent principle is a peculiar kind of tannic acid, called by chemists querct-tanmc, which, yielding more stable compounds with gelatine than other forms, gives oak bark its high value to the tanner. According to Neubauer, the bark of young oaks contains from 7 to 10 per cent. of this principle ; im old trees the proportion is much less.

The acorns of the oak possess a considerable economic importance as food for swine. In the Saxon period the 'mast " seems to have been regarded as the most valuable produce of an oak wood ; nor was its use always confined to the support of the herds, for in time of dearth acorns were boiled and eaten by the poor as a substitute for bread both in England and France, as the sweeter produce of Q. Esculus is still employed in southern Europe. Large herds of swine in all the great oak woods of Germany depend for their autumn maintenance on acorns; and in the remaining royal forests of England the inhabitants of the neighbouring villages yet claim their ancient right of "pannage," turning their hogs into the woods in October and November. Some trees of the sessile-fruited oak bear sweet acorns in Britain, and several varieties were valued by the ancient Italians for their edible fruit. A peculiar kind of sugar called quercite exists in all acorns. A bitter principle to which the name of quercin has been applied by Gerber, its discoverer, has also been detected in the acorn of the common oak; the nutritive portion seems chiefly a form of starch. A spirit has been distilled from acorns in process of germination, when the saccharine principle is most abundant.

oA IN

The British oak grows well in the northern and middle States of America; and, from the superiority of the wood to that of Q. alba and its more abundant production of acorns, it will probably be much planted as the natural forests are destroyed. The young trees require protection from storms and late frosts even more than in England ; the red pine of the north-eastern States, Pinus resinosa, answers well as a nurse, but the pitch pine and other species may be employed. In the southern parts of Australia and in New Zealand the tree seems to flourish as well as in its native home.

The oak in Europe is liable to injury from a great variety of insect enemies: the young wood is attacked by the larvee of the small stag-beetle and several other Coleoptera, and those of the wood-leopard moth, goat moth, and other Lepidoptera feed upon it occasionally ; the foliage is de- voured by innumerable larve ; indeed, it has been stated that half the plant-eating insects of England prey more or less upon the oak, and in some seasons it is difficult to find a leaf perfectly free from their depredations. The young shoots are chosen by many species of Cynipide and their allies as a receptacle for their eggs, giving rise to a variety of gall-like excrescences, from which few oak trees are quite free.

Of the European timber trees of the genus, the next in importance to the British oak is Q. Cerris, the Turkey oak of the nurserymen. This is a fine species, having when young straighter branches than Q. Robur, but in old age the boughs generally curve downwards, and the tree acquires a wide spreading head; the bark is dark brown, becoming grey and furrowed in large trees; the foliage varies much, but in the prevailing kinds the leaves are very deeply sinuated, with pointed, often irregular lobes, the footstalks short, and furnished at the base with long linear stipules that do not fall with the leaf, but remain attached to the bud till the following spring, giving a marked feature to the young shoots. The large sessile acorns are longer than those of Q. Robur, and are dark- brown when ripe ; the hemispherical cups are covered with long, narrow, almost bristly scales, giving them a mossy aspect; the fruit ripens the first autumn. The foliage in some of the numerous varieties is almost evergreen, and in Britain is retained long after the autumnal withering.

This oak abounds all over the Turkish peninsula, and forms a large portion of the vast forests that clothe the slopes of the Taurus ranges and the south shores of the Black Sea; it is likewise common in Italy and Sardinia, and occurs in the south of France and also in Hungary. It was introduced into England by Miller about 1735, and is now common in parks and plantations, where it seems to flourish in nearly all soils) The Turkey oak in southern England grows twice as fast as Q. Robur ; in the mild climate of Devonshire. and Cornwall it has reached a height of 100 feet and a diameter of 4 feet in eighty years, which is about the limit of its profitable growth for timber. The wood is hard, heavy, and of fine grain, quite equal to the best British oak for indoor use, but of very variable durability where exposed to weather. The ships of Greece and Turkey are largely built of it, but it has not always proved satisfactory in English dockyards. The heart-wood is dark in colour, takes a fine. polish, and from the prominence of the med- ullary rays is valuable to the furniture maker ; it weighs from 40 to 50 ib the cubic foot. The comparatively rapid growth of the tree is its great recommendation to the planter; it is best raised from acorns sown on the spot, as they are very bitter and little liable to the attacks of vermin; the tree sends down a long tap- root, which should be curtailed by cutting or early transplanting, if the young trees are to be removed. It seems peculiarly adapted for the mild moist climate of Ireland. It succeeds in many parts of the United States, but is less hardy than the native species. It would appear well fitted for New Zealand planting. Acorns are pro- duced on the Turkey oak in great abundance in some seasons, but in cold wet years do not always ripen in Britain ; notwithstanding their bitterness they are greedily eaten by swine. Some southern varieties of this tree bear acorns comparatively sweet, and they are sometimes eaten after being roasted, in which process the tannic acid is partly destroyed. Dalechamps says that some of the esculent acorns of southern Europe occasionally prove unwholesome, causing effects resembling those of poisoning by Loliwm temulentum.

~~In North America, where the species of oak are very numerous, the most important member of the group is Q. alba, the white oak, abounding all over the eastern districts of the continent from Lake Winnipeg and the St Lawrence countries to the shores of the Mexican Gulf. In aspect it more nearly resembles Q. Robur than any other species, forming a thick trunk with spreading base and, when~~

~~GA K 693~~

~~growing in glades or other open places, huge spreading boughs, less twisted and gnarled than those of the English oak and covered with a whitish bark that givesa marked character to the trec. The leaves are large, often irregular in form, usually with a few deep lobes dilated at the end; they are of a bright light green on the upper surface, but whitish beneath; they turn to a vio- let tint in au- tumn. The egg — shaped acorns are placed singly ortwo together oushortstalks; they are in most years sparingly pro- duced, but are occasionally borne in some abundance. On rich loams and the alluvial soils of river- valleys, when~~

~~well drained, Fic. 4.—Q. alba pinnatifida; one-third natural size, (From the treeattains Michaux, Histoire des chénes de 1 Amérique.)~~

~~a large size, often rivalling the giant oaks of Europe ; trunks of 3 or 4 feet in diameter are frequently found, and sometimes these dimensions are greatly exceeded. The wood is variable in quality and, though hard in texture, is less durable than the best oak of British growth ; the heart-wood is of a light reddish brown varying to an olive tint ; a Canadian specimen weighs 523 tb the cubic foot. In the States it is largely used in shipbuilding, for house timber, and many other purposes ; wheels and the frames of waggons and sleighs as well as casks are often made of it; large quantities are exported to England from Canada. The young-wood is very strong, flexible, and elastic; it is split into thin strips, to be made into baskets. The large roots, often presenting a very fine grain and taking a good polish, are sought for by the cabinetmaker. The bark is inferior to that of many oaks, "The acorns are sweet, and were formerly eaten by the Red Men, but are too scantily produced in most seasons to be of much economic importance. White oaks have often been planted in England, but the trees do not grow as~~

~~fast as in their native land, while the wood is inferior. According to some American authorities, the timber of Q. alba is of better quality in the southern and middle States than in Canada and New England.~~

~~Q. obtusiloba, the post oak of the backwoodsman, a smaller tree with rough leaves and notched upper lobes, produces an abundance of acorns and good timber, said to be more durable than that of the white oak.~~

~~The pin oak, sometimes called the " over-cup " oak, Q. macrocarpa, is remarkable for its large acorns, the cups bordered on the edge by a fringe of long narrow scales ; the leaves are very large, some- times from 10 inches to a foot in length, with very deep lobes at the lower part, but dilated widely at the apex, and there notched. The tree is not of large growth, but its tough wood is useful for bolts and trenails ; it is sometimes called the "' burr-oak."~~

~~The true over-cup oak, Q. lyrata, is a large tree, chiefly found on swampy land in the southern States; the lyrate leaves are dilated at the end; the globose acorns are nearly covered by the tuberculated cups.~~

~~In the woods of Oregon, from the Columbia river southwards, an oak is found bearing some resemblance to the British oak in foliage and in its thick trunk and widely-spreading boughs, but the bark is white as in Q. alba; it is Q. Garryana, the western oak of Nuttall. This tree acquires large dimensions, the trunk being often from 4 to 6 feet in diameter; the wood appears to be good, but experience has scarcely tested its durability ; the acorns are produced in great quantity, and are used by the Indians as food.~~

~~The red oak, Q. rubra, has thin large leaves on long petioles, the lobes very long and acute, the points almost bristly ; they are pink when they first expand in spring, but become of a bright glossy green when full-grown ; in autumn they change to the deep purple- red which gives the tree its name. Common throughout the northern and middle States and Canada, the red oak attains a large size only on good soils ; the wood is of little value, being coarse and porous, but it is largely used for cask-staves; the bark is a valuable tanning material. ;~~

~~A species nearly allied is the scarlet oak, Q. coccinea, often~~

confounded with the red oak, but with larger leaves, with long lobes ending in several acute points; they change to a brilliant scarlet with the first October frosts, giving one of the most striking

wi (

Fia. 5.—Q. rubra; one-fourth natural size, (From Michaux, op cit. plate xxv).

of the various glowing tints that render the American forests so beautiful in autumn. The trunk, though often of considerable size, yields but an indifferent wood, employed for similar purposes to that of Q. rubra ; the bark is one of the best tanning materials of the country. Both these oaks grow well in British plantations, where their bright autumn foliage, though seldom so decided in tint as in their native woods, gives them a certain picturesque value.

Nearly akin to these are several other forms of little but botanical interest ; not far removed is the black or dyer's oak, Q. tinctoria, a large and handsome species, with a trunk sometimes 4 feet in diameter, not uncommon in most forests east of the Mississippi, especially in somewhat upland districts. The leaves are frequently irregular in outline, the lobes rather short and blunt, widening towards the end, but with setaceous points; the acorns are nearly globular. The wood is coarsely grained, as in all the red-oak group, but harder and more durable than that of Q. rubra, and is often employed for building and for flour-barrels and cask-staves. The bark, very dark externally, is an excellent tanning substance ; the inner layers form the quercitron of commerce, used by dyers for communicating to fabrics various tints of yellow, and, with iron salts, yielding a series of brown and drab hues; the colouring property depends on a crystalline principle called quercitrin, of which it should contain about 8 per cent. The cut-leaved oaks are represented in eastern Asia by several species, of which Q. mongolica is widely spread over Dahouria, north China, and the adjacent countries; one of the Chinese silkworms is said to feed on the leaves, =.

The chestnut oaks of America represent a section distin- guished by the merely serrated leaves, with parallel veins running to the end of the serratures. @Q. Prinus, a beau- tiful tree of large growth, and its sub-

~~species Q. castanea and Q. montana, yield timber little inferior to white oak. Q. Chinquapin or prinoides, a dwarf variety, often only a foot in height, forms dense miniature thickets on the barren uplands of Kansas and Missouri, and affords abundant sweet acorns; the tree is called by the hunters of the plains the "shin-oak."~~

~~Evergreen oaks with entire leaves are represented in North America by Q. virens, the live oak of the southern States ; more or less abundant on the Atlantic coasts of Carolina and Florida, its true home is the country around the 4 Mexican Gulf, where it rarely grows more than 50 or 60 miles inland. The oval leaves are dark-green above, and whitish with stellate hairs beneath, the margin entire and slightly recurved. The live oak is one of the most valu- able timber trees of the genus, the wood —~~

~~being extremely durable, both exposed { to air and under water; heavy and a . ; close-grained, it is perhaps the best of spit er Nar bd the American oaks for shipbuilding, Kotschy, op. cit., plate x1.)~~

~~and is invaluable for water-wheels and mill-work. Live oaks grow but slowly, and few large trees are left in the settled districts ; but when standing in open places the trunk sometimes attains a great size, and an old tree, with its far-spreading boughs, often clothed with the beard-like "Spanish moss," has a peculiarly~~

~~S~~

~~venerable aspect. One growing at Grove Creek, near Charleston, is said to have attained a girth of 45 feet at the ground ; trees of 12 feet in circumference were formerly not unfrequent. The stalked oblong acorns in elongated cups are pleasant in taste, and were eaten by the Indians of Texas. The tree in England is scareely hardy, though it will grow freely in some sheltered places. Many varieties of Q. virens are found in the Mexican isthmus.~~

~~The evergreen oak of southern Europe is Q. Jdex, usually a smaller tree, frequently of rather shrub-like appearance, with abundant glossy dark-~~

green leaves, generally ovate in shape and more or less prickly at the margin, but sometimes with the edges entire ; the

Fic. 7.—Q. Ilex (L.); half natural size. (From Kotschy, op. cit. plate xxxviii.)

under surface is hoary ; the acorns are oblong on short stalks. The ilex, sometimes called by gardeners the "holm oak" from its resemblance to the holly, abounds in all the Mediterranean countries, showing a partiality for the sea air. The stem sometimes grows 80 or 90 feet in height, and old specimens are occasionally of large diameter ; but it does not often reach a great size. In its native lands it attains a vast age; Pliny attributes to several trees then growing in Rome a greater antiquity than the city itself. The wood is very heavy and hard, weighing 70 tb the cubic foot; the colour is dark brown ; it is used in Spain and Italy for furniture, and in the former country for firewood and charcoal. In Britain the evergreen oak is quite hardy in ordinary winters, and is useful to the ornamental planter from its capacity for resisting the sea

les ; but it generally remains of small size. . Ballota, an allied orm, abundant in Morocco, bears large edible acorns, which form an article of trade with Spain ; an oil, resembling that of the olive, is obtained from them by expression. . Gramuntia, another allied species, also furnishes a fruit which, after acquiring sweetness by keeping, is eaten by the Spaniards.

In America several oaks exist with narrow lanceolate leaves, from which characteristic they are known as 'willow oaks." @. Phellos, a rather ce large tree found on swampy land in the southern States, is the most important of this group; its timber is of indif- ferent quality.

The cork oak, Q. Suber, has been de- scribed in a preced- ing article (Corx). In Spain the wood is of some value, being hard and close-grained, and the inner bark is<@™ used for tanning. From its rugged silvery bark and Fic. 8,—Q. Vallonea; half natural size. (From Kotschy, dark-green foliage, op. cit., plate vii.)

' it is a handsome tree, quite hardy in Cornwall and Devonshire, where it has grown to a large size.

The valonia of commerce, one of the richest of tanning materials, is the acorn of Q. Zgilops, a fine species indigenous to Greece and the coasts of the Levant, and sometimes called the "Oak of Bashan." The very large acorns are remarkable for their thick cups with long reflexed scales ; the leaves are large, oblong, with

deep serratures terminating in a bristle-like point. The cups are the most valuable portion of the valonia, abounding in tannic acid ; immature acorns are sometimes exported under the name of "eamatina." The allied Q. Vallonea likewise yields valonia.

Some oaks are of indirect importance from products formed by their insect enemies. Of these the Aleppo gall (see GaLis) is yielded by Q. infectoria. . coccifera, a small bush growing in Spain and many countries around the Mediterranean, furnishes the kermes dye (KERMES). Q. persica, or according to some Q. mannifera, attacked by a kind of Coccus, yields a sweet exudation which the Kurds eollect and use as manna, or asa substitute for honey or sugar in various confections (see MANNA). (C. P. J.)

OAKAPPLE, or Oakeatt. See GALts, vol. x. p. 45.

OAKLAND, a city of the United States, in Alameda county, California, lies opposite San Francisco, of which it is practically a residential suburb, on the eastern shore of San Francisco Bay, at the terminus of the Central Pacific Railroad. Its beautiful situation, its shady streets, and the excellent quality of its buildings make it a distinctly attractive place. A branch of the bay, dividing the city into East and West Oakland, forms a good harbour, but is obstructed by a bar. The railway pier, 2 miles long, con- tains a number of warehouses and is traversed by a broad carriage road. Among the local industrial establishments are flour-mills, planing-mills, potteries, tanneries, and a jute-factory turning out 5,000,000 sacks per annum. Oakland, deriving its name from a grove of oaks in the midst of which it was built, was incorporated as a city in 1854. Its population was 1549 in 1860, 10,500 in 1870, and 34,555 in 1880.

OAKUM is a preparation of tarred fibre used in ship- building, for caulking or packing joints of timbers in wood vessels and the deck planking of iron and steel ships. Oakum is made by preference from old tarry ropes and

cordage of vessels, its teasing and preparation being a common penal occupation in prisons.

OAMARU, a municipal borough on the coast of Otago, New Zealand (South Island), 73 miles by rail north from Dunedin, and in 45° 5'§. lat. and 171° 2' E. long., isa thriv- ing seaport. It is the outlet of the largest agricultural district in New Zealand, and comprises land of exceptional fertility. It is on the main railway between Christchurch and Dunedin, and is connected by branch lines with fertile inland districts. A breakwater and mole, constructed of blocks of concrete like those used at Port Said in Egypt, en- close a large and commodious basin in what was an open roadstead ; and the harbour, when completed, will be one of the safest in the colony, and capable of accommodat- ing very large ships. Steamers run three or four times a week between Oamaru and Dunedin. The town is well supplied with gas and water, and is built of white Oamaru limestone, an excellent building-stone abundant in the district. The population in 1881 was 5791; and the capital value of the rateable property in 1883 was £810,428.

Coal is obtained at the entrance of Shag Valley, 40 miles to

the south. The district is famed for its stock, and the fine quality of its grain, which is often equal to that of South Australia ; also for the character of the English grasses laid down there, which flourish in a rich black loam on a limestone formation. The local industries comprise flour- mills, an elevator in connexion with storing grain, a woollen factory, the Oamaru stone company, a boot and shoe factory, a meat-preserving factory, breweries, and a bacon-curing factory. There are several public buildings, including a grammar school, a hospital, an athenzeum, and a public hall.

OAR-FISH, a fish of the family of ribbon-fishes (Trachypteridx), to which great interest is attached no less on account of the extraordinary shape of its body than of its internal organization, which is unmistakably that of a deep-sea fish. As in the other members of this family, the body is much elongated and compressed, sword-shaped ;

but in the oar-fish this character is excessive, the length

of the body being about fifteen times its depth. The head likewise is compressed, short, resembling in its form that of a herring ; the eye is large ; the mouth is small, and provided

with very feeble teeth. A long many-rayed dorsal fin, of

which the very long anterior rays form a kind of high crest, extends from the top of the head to the end of the tail; the anal and perhaps the caudal fins are absent ; but the ventrals (and by this the oar-fish is distinguished from

Oar-fish.

the other ribbon-fishes) are developed into a pair of long filaments, which terminate in a paddle-shaped extremity, but are too flexible to assist in locomotion. The whole body is covered with a layer of silvery epidermoid sub- stance, which easily comes off and adheres to other objects.

Oar-fishes are the largest deep-sea fishes known, the majority of the specimens observed measuring 12 feet in length ; but some are recorded to have exceeded 20 feet. Their range in the great depths of the ocean seems to extend over all seas, from the North Sea to the South Atlantic, from Mauritius and Japan to the coasts of New Zealand. But, however numerous they may be in the depths which are their home, it is only by rare accident that specimens reach the surface; and of these a very small proportion only have come under the observation of naturalists, and been actually recorded. Thus from the coasts of Great Britain only about twenty captures are known in the long space of a century and a half, and not more than thirteen from those of Norway. Oar-fishes have been considered by naturalists to have given rise to some of the tales of "sea-serpents," but their size as well as the facility with which they are secured when observed render this solution of the question of the existence of such a creature improbable. When they rise to the surface of the water they are either dead or in a helpless and dying condition. The ligaments and tissues by which the bones and muscles were held together whilst the fish lived under the immense pressure of great depths have then become loosened and torn by the expansion of the internal gases ; and it is only with difficulty that the specimens can be taken entire out of the water, and preserved afterwards, Every specimen found has been more or less mutilated ; and especially the terminal portion of the tail,

which seems to end in a delicate tapering filament, has never been per- fect ;—it is perhaps usually lost as a useless appendage at a much earlier period of the life of the fish.

OASES. Throughout the great belt of desert extending from the west coast of Africa to central Asia, various fer- tile tracts occur, clothed with vegetation and watered by springs, to which the name oases has been applied. Those which are best known are met with in the central and eastern portions of the Great Sahara and in the Libyan Desert. In that region they consist generally of deep de- pressions or valleys, locally termed "'wadis," where the water comes to the surface in natural springs, or where it may be procured by sinking wells. Under the influence of these beneficent springs vegetation bursts forth and covers a more or less extensive area, which becomes a halting-place for travellers in the desert, and frequently supports a con- siderable population. Many of the oases are situated in the mountainous regions, where the ground is sufficiently

elevated to precipitate the moisture in the atmosphere, The rain which falls, however, is rapidly absorbed by the rocks or sandy soil, and much of it collects in depressions at no great depth from the surface. The Arabs have long been in the habit of tapping these subterranean waters by sinking wells, a copious supply being usually obtained at depths varying down to 200 fathoms. Indeed, so rapidly does the water ascend when the aqueous strata are pierced in certain localities that the well-sinkers are sometimes suffocated ere they reach the surface. In the Algerian Sahara a large number of artesian wells have been sunk by the French, resulting in the formation of oases, which have to some extent affected the habits of the native tribes by inducing them to become cultivators of these fertile tracts. It is evident, therefore, that, notwithstand- ing the arid climate which prevails generally throughout the African deserts, a tolerably plentiful supply of water can be obtained by artificial means at various points. The springs, being essential to the very existence of the oases, are naturally guarded with care so as to prevent the sands encroaching on them. Should they cease to flow, the decay of the vegetation rapidly ensues and the oases disappear. Another characteristic feature of these fertile tracts is the palm-

tree forests, which are admirably adapted to such unfavourable conditions. The date and the dim palm are the commonest species met with in the forests ; they are highly prized by reason of the produce which they yield to the cultivators of the soil and the shelter which they afford from the scorching sun. Indeed, so service- able are they that in some cases the Arabs artificially create an oasis with the aid of a few palm trees by digging holes deep enough to allow the roots to pierce the aqueous strata,

From the accounts given by various travellers it would appear that, while the larger oases cover extensive tracts, the smaller ones are liable to be effaced by drifting sand. As an example of one of the largest, Air or Asben may be mentioned, which measures 180 miles from north to south. Such extensive fertile tracts are dotted over with villages, whose inhabitants carry on the cultivation of the soil and export various articles of produce. By means of irrigation different cereals are successfully cultivated, such as barley, rice, and millet.

In the western Sahara the chief oases are :—(1) Tuat, about 1000 miles to the south-west of Tripoli, the principal town being In- salah (‘Ain Salah) ; (2) Taudeni, south-west of Tudt ; (3) “Arawan, south of Taudeni and north of Timbuktu ; and (4) Walata, south- west of ‘Arawan. In the eastern portion of the Great Desert the important oases are :—(1) Fezzan, the capital of which is Morzuk, lying to the south-south-east of Tripoli; (2) Ghaddmes, north-west of Fezzan ; (3) Tibesti, south of Fezzan ; (4) Bilma,west-south-west of Tibesti; and (5) Air or Asben, west from Bilma and north-west from Lake Tchad. The last is perhaps one of the most remarkable oases in the African desert, forming a tableland whose average elevation is 2000 feet, with peaks rising to a height of 5000 feet. Heavy tropical rains are precipitated by this lofty plateau, and hence the valleys are clothed with vegetation. This oasis is richly cultivated, producing barley, maize, and millet. The capital is Agades, a town with 7000 inhabitants, which is situated on the caravan route between Morzik and Sokoto, and constitutes one of the important centres of trade in central Africa.

In the Libyan Desert the chief. oases are :—(1) Khargeh or Kharija (the outer oases), sometimes termed the oasis magna, about 120 miles to the

west of Thebes; (2) Dakhel or Dakhila (the inner oases), Situated to the west of Khargeh ; (3) Farafreh (Fardfira), north-west of Dakhel ; (4) Bahriya (northern), to the north of Fara- freh ; (5) Siwa (the famous oasis of Jupiter Ammon), at the northern limits of the Libyan Desert ; and (6) the Kufra group, south-west of Siwa. Perhaps the most fertile of these tracts is Dakhel, which was first made known to Europeans in 1819 by Sir A. Edmonstone. The chief produce consists of dates, rice, olives, and apricots, but durra, barley, lemons, citrons, and figs also grow on the rich soil of this oasis. It contains eleven villages, the total population being estimated at 6000.

Similar fertile tracts, though of smaller extent, occur in Arabia and in that part of Persia lying tothe west of the Salt Desert. In

696

central Asia the great desert of Gobi, ranging from Turkestan to Manchuria, is interspersed with a few oases, the chief one being Kami, which is characterized by a rich growth of vegetation.

OAT, Avena sativa, L., one of about forty species mostly dispersed through the temperate regions of the Old World. It belongs to the tribe Avenex of the order Graminex or Grasses. The spikelets form a loose panicle, familiar in the cultivated oat, the flowering glume having its dorsal rib prolonged into an awn, which is in some species twisted and bent near the base. ;

The origin of the cultivated oat is generally believed to be A. fatua, L., or 'wild oat." Prof. J. Buckman suc- ceeded in raising "the potato-oat type" and "the white Tartarian oat" from grain of this species.1 Mr A. Stephen Wilson, however, thinks that as yet there is no real proof of this relationship, be- F'l cause his own cultivation of the wild oat made no difference upon it;? but there appears to be a great tendency in the oat to de- generate on stiff clay soils into "weed oats," a fact which may perhaps ac- count for this divergence of opinion. Lindley had previously suggested that the cultivated oat was a domesticated variety of some wild species, and that it might not improb- ably be referred to A. f strigosa, Schreb., "the # bristle-pointed oat," which is the origin of the Scotch oat, according to Buck- man. The white and black varieties of this species, Mr Wilson ob- Fy serves, were

cultivated in Fic. 1.—Panicle of A. fatua, var. sativa. England and Scotland Cietaseae from remote times, and "are frequently mentioned in Rogers' History of Agriculture and Prices… and they are still grown as a crop in Orkney and Shetland."* Both these species are found in Europe, North Africa, Siberia, and north-west India. The "naked oat," A. nuda, L., is probably only a race of A. sativa ;> it was found by Bunge in waste ground about Pekin. "According to Lindley,"

Fig. 3.

Fic. 2.—Spikelet of A. fatwa, var. sativa; with two fertile florets, and one ter- minal, rudimentary. (After Nees.) ;

Fia. 8.—Spikelet of Wild Oat, A. fatua; glumes hairy and long-pointed ; awn

twisted at base. (After Buckman.)

writes Mr Wilson,® "the naked oat is the pilcorn of the old agriculture, and we see from Rogers' that it was in

Science and Practice of Farm Cultivation, p. 172 (1865). A Bushel of Corn, p. 145. 3 Op. cit., p. 145. Hooker's Students' Flora, p. 466 (1870).

De Candolle, Géographie Botanique, ii. p. 941.

1 4 5

& Op. cit., p. 146. ? Rarer Kinds of Grain, vol. ii. p. 178.

OAT—OAT

cultivation in England in the 13th century." Both this and the "' common otes," A. vesca, are described by Gerard.§ Parkinson tells us that in his time [early in the 17th century] the naked oat was sown in sundry places, but "nothing so frequent" as the common sort. The chief differences between A. fatua and A. f., var. sativa, accord- ing to Buckman,' are, that in the former the chaff-scales which adhere to the grain are thick and hairy, and in the latter they are not so coarse and are hairless. The wild oat,

moreover, has a long stiff awn, usually twisted near the base. In the cultivated oat it may be wanting, and if present it is not so stiff and is seldom bent. The grain is very small and worthless in the one, but larger and full in the other. Mr Wilson adds that in the point of attach- ment "in the wild oat the hanger terminates in a little oval spatula, . . . forming a kind of ball-and-socket connexion. . . . In the cultivated oat the continuity of the vascular tissue in the hanger is not broken off by any point of the kind." 10 There are now many varieties of the cultivated oat. With regard to the antiquity of the oat, De Candolle observes that it was not cultivated by the Hebrews, the Egyptians, the ancient Greeks, and the Romans.' Central Europe appears to be the locality where it was cultivated earliest, at least in Europe, for grains have been found among the remains of the Swiss lake-dwellings perhaps not earlier than the bronze age,!® while Pliny alludes to bread made of it by the ancient Germans. Pickering also re- cords Galen's observations (De Alim, Fac., i. 14), that it was abundant in Asia Minor, especially Mysia, where it was made into bread as well as given to horses ; he also states that ten varieties were introduced by Mohammed Ali into Egypt for fodder, and that it was seen by Bruce wild in Abyssinia, sometimes tall enough to conceal horse and rider (Grev.). And he adds that eastward from Syria it is called "'sulu" by the Tatars, and was observed by Kaempfer and others in Japan ; that it was brought over by colonists, and is now cultivated in north-east America; and that it has now become naturalized in parts of South America.

Besides the use of the straw when cut up and mixed with other food for fodder, the oat grain constitutes an important food for both man and beast. Being cultivated best in comparatively low temperatures, it has long formed the staple food for Scotland, north England, and Derbyshire, as well as for Germany, wherever wheat does not flourish. It is extensively grown in all the northern States of the American Union, and in New England its production largely exceeds that of wheat. The oat grain (excepting the naked oat), like that of barley, is closely invested by the husk. "This latter is used both in Scotland and Wales for the preparation of a kind of porridge . . . called sowans and sucan."1® Oatmeal is made from the kiln-dried grain from which the husks have been removed ; and the form of the food is the well-known " porridge." In Ireland it is mixed with Indian-corn meal and is called "stirabout." Groats or grits are the whole kernel from which the

~~husk is removed. Their use is for gruel, which used to be consumed as an ordinary drink in the 17th century at the coffee-houses in London. The meal can be baked into "cake" or biscuit, as the Passover-cake of the Jews ; but it cannot be made into loaves in consequence of the great difficulty in rupturing the starch grains, unless the tempera- ture be raised to a considerable height. With regard to the nutri- tive value. of oatmeal, as compared with that of wheat flour, it contains a higher percentage of albuminoids than any other grain, viz., 12°6—that of wheat being 10°8—and less of starch, 58°4, as against 66°83 in wheat. It has rather more sugar, viz., 5°4—wheat having 4°2—and a good deal more fat, viz., 5°6, as against 2°0 in flour. Lastly, salts amount to 3°0 per cent. in oat, but are only 1°7 in wheat. Its nutritive value, therefore, is higher than that of ordinary seconds flour." (G. H.)~~

~~8 Herball, p. 68 (1597). 10 Op. cit., p. 148. 1. See Wilson, op. cit., p. 141; AGRICULTURE, Vol. i. pp. 359, 360 ; and Morton's Cyclopedia of Agriculture, s.v. 12 Op. cit., ii. p. 988, with reff. Pickering, Chron. Hist. of Pl., p. 451. HLN., xviii. 17. 15 Op, cit., p. 341. E. Smith, Foods, p. 167. Letheby, Lectures on Food, pp. 6, 7 (1870).~~

~~9 Op. cit., p. 169.~~

~~OATES~~

~~OATES, Trrus (c. 1650 to 1705), was, according to one account, the son of an Anabaptist preacher, chaplain to Pride, and, according to another, of Samuel, the rector of All Saints' Church, Hastings. He was admitted on 11th June 1665 to Merchant Taylors', having, according to one authority, been previously at Oakham. There he remained a year, more or less, "and seems afterwards to have gone to Sedlescombe school in Sussex, from whence he passed to Caius College, Cambridge, on 29th June 1667, and was admitted a sizar of St John's, 2d February 1668/9, aged 18." Upon very doubtful authority he is stated to have been also at Westminster School before going to the uni- versity. On leaving the university he apparently took Anglican orders, and officiated in several parishes, Hastings among them. Having brought malicious charges in which his evidence was rejected, he narrowly escaped prose- cution for perjury. He next obtained a chaplaincy in the navy, from which he appears to have been speedily dismissed for bad~~

conduct and with the reputation of worse. He now, it is said, applied for help to Dr Tonge, rector of St Michael's in Wood Street, an honest half-crazy ian, who even then was exciting people's minds by giving out quarterly "treatises in print to alarm and awake his majesty's subjects." Oates offered his help, and it was arranged that he should pretend to be a Roman Catholic so as the better to unearth the Jesuit plots which possessed Tonge's brain (Lingard). Accordingly he was received into the church by one Berry, himself an apostate, and entered the Jesuit College of Valladolid as Brother Ambrose. Hence he was soon expelled. In October 1677 he made a second application, and was admitted to St Omer on 10th Decem- ber. So scandalous, however, was his conduct that he was finally dismissed in 1678. Returning in June 1678 to Tonge, he set himself to forge a plot by piecing together things true and false, or true facts falsely interpreted, and by inventing treasonable letters and accounts of prepara- tions for military action. The whole story was written by Oates in Greek characters, copied into English by Tonge, and finally told to one of Charles IT.'s confidential servants named Kirkby (Lingard). Kirkby having given the king his information, Oates was sent for (13th August), and in a private interview gave details, in forty-three articles, of the plot and the persons who had engaged to assassinate Charles. The general improbability of the story was so manifest, and the discrepancies were so glaring, that neither then nor at any subsequent time did Charles express any- thing but amused incredulity. To bolster up the case a fresh packet of five forged letters was concocted (31st August); but the forgery was transparent, and even Sir William Jones, the attorney-general, though a violent upholder of the plot, dared not produce them as evidence.

Oates now (6th September) made an affidavit before Sir Edmondbury Godfrey to an improved edition of his story, in eighty-one articles. Among the persons named was Coleman, secretary to the duchess of York, whom Godfrey knew, and to whom he sent word of the charges. Coleman in turn informed the duke, and he, since the immediate exposure of the plot was of the utmost consequence to him, induced Charles to compel Oates to appear (28th September) before the privy council. Here Oates. delivered himself of a story the falsehood of which was so obvious that the king was able to expose him by a few simple questions. At this moment an accident most fortunate for Oates took place. Amongst the papers seized at his request

were Coleman's, and in them were found copies of letters written by the latter to Pére la Chaise, suggesting that Louis should furnish him with money, which he would use in the French and Catholic interest among members of parliament. Among them, too, were these passages: "Success will give the greatest blow to the Protestant religion that it has re-

ceived since its-birth"; 'we have here a mighty work upon our hands, no less. than the conversion of three kingdoms, and by that perhaps the utter subduing of a pestilent heresy, which has so long domineered over great part of the northern world." The credit of Oates was thus, in the eyes of the people, re-established, and Coleman and others named were imprisoned. Charles was anxious for his brother's sake to bring the matter to a conclusion, but he dared not appear to stifle the plot; so, when starting for Newmarket, he left orders with Danby that he should finish the investigation at once. But Danby purposely delayed ; an impeachment was hanging over his head, and anything which took men's minds off that was welcome. Possibly, too, he was sincerely desirous of frustrating Charles's Catholic sympathies and secret dealings with France. Shaftesbury, with very different views, was eager in his patronage of the plot and its founder.

On 12th October occurred the murder of Godfrey, and the excitement was at its highest pitch. That Oates could ever have induced any one to believe in his tales is incred- ible to one who does not recollect the victories of Catholic France, the relaxing of the penal laws, the activity of the Jesuits, the fear of a standing army and of James, the agitation of the opposition led by Shaftesbury, and the ignorance and apprehension of the designs of the court. On 21st October parliament met, and, though Charles in his speech had barely alluded to the plot, all other business was put aside and Oates was called before the House. Here he gave details of a pretended apportioning by Oliva, the general of the Jesuit order, of all the chief posts to leading Roman Catholics in the country. The proceedings which followed are best read in the parlia- mentary history. A new witness was wanted to support Oates's story, and in November Bedloe came forward. At first he remembered little; by degrees he remembered everything that was wanted. Not even so, however, did their witness agree together, so, as a bold stroke,

Oates, with great circumstantiality, accused the queen before Charles of high treason. Charles both disbelieved and exposed him, whereupon Oates carried his tale before the House of Commons. The Commons voted for the queen's removal from court, but, the Lords refusing to concur, the matter dropped. It was not, however, until 18th July 1679 that the slaughter of Jesuits and other Roman Catholics upon Oates's testimony and that of his accomplices was to some extent checked. Sir George Wakeman, the queen's physician, was accused of purposing to poison the king, and the queen was named as being concerned in the plot. The | refusals of Charles to credit or to countenance the attacks on his wife are the most creditable episodes in his life. Scroggs had intimation that he was to be lenient. Sir Philip Lloyd proved Oates to have perjured himself in open court, and Wakeman was acquitted. On 26th June 1680, upon Oates's testimony, the duke of York was pre- sented as a recusant at Westminster, and in November the informer gave evidence in the trial of Strafford. But the panic had now worn itself out, and the importance of Oates rapidly declined ; so much so that after the dissolu- tion in 1682 he was no more heard of during Charles's reign, but enjoyed his pension of £600 or £900, it is un- certain which, in quiet. Shortly before the death of Charles, James brought, and won, a civil action against Oates, with damages of £100,000; in default of payment Oates was taken to prison; while there he was indicted for perjury, and was tried in May 1685, soon after the acces- sion of James II. He was convicted, and received an awful sentence, the execution of which was expected to kill him, and which was rigorously carried out; but to the astonishment of all he survived.

Oates was in prison for three and a half years.

XVII.—88

Upon

the flight of James, and during the excitement against the Catholics, he partially gained his liberty, and brought an appeal against his sentence before the Lords, who, while admitting the sentence to be unjust, confirmed it by a majority of thirty-five to twenty-three. The Commons, however,

~~passed a bill annulling the sentence ; and a con- ference was held in which the Lords, while again acknow- ledging that legally they were wrong, adhered to their former determination. The matter was finally settled by Oates receiving a royal pardon, with a salary of £300 a year. In November 1689 he was again seen in West- minster Hall, when Peterborough, Salisbury, and others were impeached. In 1690, finding that there was no hope of preferment in the English Church, he became a Baptist, but in less than a year was ejected from their body. In 1691 he became acquainted with William Fuller, whom he induced to forge another plot, though not with the success he had himself attained. He appears to have lived after this chiefly in retirement, though we read in Evelyn that in 1696 he dedicated to William a book against James. He died 13th July 1705.~~

~~Authorities. — Oates's, Dangerfield's, and Bedloe's Narratives ; State Trials; Journals of Houses of Parliament; North's Examen ; the various memoirs and diaries of the period ; Fuller's Narrative ; Dryden's Absalom and Achitophel ; Burnet's History ; Narcissus Luttrell's Relation. Lingard gives an exhaustive and trustworthy account of the Popish terror and its victims; and the chief inci- dents in Oates's career are graphically described by Macaulay. On~~

~~the question of the place of his education see Notes and Queries, 22d December 1883. (O. A.)~~

~~OATH, Anglo-Saxon adh, a word found throughout the Teutonic languages (Gothic aiths, modern German ed), but without ascertainable etymology. The verb to swear is also Old Teutonic (Gothic svaran, modern German schworen); this word, too, is not clear in original meaning, but is in some way connected with the notion of answering, —indeed it still forms part of the word answer, Anglo-Saxon and-swarian; it has been suggested that the swearer answered by word or gesture to a solemn formula or act. Among other terms in this connexion, the Latin jurare, whence English law has such derivatives as jury, seems grounded on the metaphorical idea of binding (root ju, as in jungo) ; the similar idea of a bond or restraint may perhaps be traced in the Greek épxos. It may be worth notice that the Latin sacramentum (whence modern French serment) does not really imply the sacredness of an oath, but had its origin in the money paid into ceurt in a~~

~~Roman lawsuit, the loser forfeiting his pledge, which went to pay for the public rites (sacra); thence the word passed to signify other solemn pledges, such as military and judicial oaths.~~

~~The subject of oaths and swearing, difficult in itself, has been made more obscure by the unsatisfactory methods employed by most writers on it. This is not due to want of ability in the writers themselves, among whom are included such men as Calvin and Paley, but to their not having followed their subject on the lines of historical development ; on the contrary, the usual plan has been to accommodate to modern views, and discuss with modern arguments, an institution which originated in an early stage of knowledge, and has been confused by the changes it has undergone while being carried on into the midst of new ideas. The student who finds, by consulting modern theo- logical and legal authorities, how indefinite are their views of the binding operation of an oath and the consequences of breaking it (apart from prosecution for perjury) will understand that its meaning must be sought, not among those who now administer and take it, but in the history of older states of culture in which it arose. The very formula, 'so help you God," by which legal oaths are administered in England, has not for ages had any precise signification.~~

~~An oath may be defined as an asseveration or promise~~

~~made under non-human penalty or sanction. Writers, viewing the subject among civilized nations only, have sometimes defined the oath as an appeal toa deity. It will be seen, however, by some following examples, that the harm or penalty consequent on perjury may be considered to result directly, without any spirit or deity being men- tioned ; indeed it is not unlikely that these mere direct curses invoked on himself by the sWearer may be more primitive than the invocation of divinities to punish. Oaths scarcely belong to the lowest or savage level of life, unless when rude tribes may have learned them from more civilized neighbours. Their original appearance may rather have been in a somewhat higher barbaric stage of~~

~~society, where legal forms had already come into use, and.~~

~~oaths were needed as a means of strengthening testimony or promise. Examples of the simplest kind of curse-oath may be seen among the Nagas~~

of Assam, where two nien will lay hold of a dog or a fowl by head and feet, which is then chopped in two with a single blow of the dao, this

being emblematic of the fate expected to befall the perjurer.

Or a man will stand within a circle of rope, with the im- plication that if he breaks his vow he may rot as a rope does, or he will take hold of the barrel of a gun, a spear- head, or a tiger's tooth, and solemnly declare, "If I do not faithfully perform this my promise, may I fall by this!" (Butler in Journ. Asiatic Soc. Bengal, 1875, p. 316). Another stage in the history of oaths is that in which the swearer calls on some fierce beast to punish him if he lies, believing that it has the intelligence to know what he says and the power to interfere in his affairs. In Siberia, in lawsuits between Russians and the wild Ostyaks, it is described as customary to bring into court the head of a bear, the Ostyak making the gesture of eating, and calling on the bear to devour him in like manner if he does not tell the truth (Erman, 7ravels in Siberia, vol. i. p. 492, London, 1848). Similar oaths are still sworn on the head or skin of a tiger by the Santals and other indigenous tribes of India. To modern views, a bear or a tiger seems at any rate a more rational being to appeal to than a river or the sun, but in the earlier stage of nature-religion these and other great objects of nature are regarded as animate and personal. The prevalence of river-worship is seen in the extent to which in the old and modern world oaths by rivers are most sacred. In earlier ages men swore inviolably by Styx or Tiber, and to this day an oath on water of the Ganges is to the Hindu the most binding of pledges, for the goddess will take awful vengeance on the children of the perjurer In New Guinea certain tribes are reported to swear by the sun, or a mountain, or a weapon, that the sun may burn them, or the mountain crush them, or the weapon wound them if they forswear themselves. The Tunguz brandishes a knife before the sun, saying, "If I lie may the sun plunge sickness into my entrails like this knife." The natural transition from swearing by these great objects of nature to invoking gods conceived in human form is well shown in the treaty-oath between the Macedonians and the Carthaginians recorded by Polybius (vii. 9); here the sun and moon and earth, the rivers and meadows and waters, are invoked side by side with Zeus and Hera and Apollo, and the gods of the Carthaginians. The heaven-god, able to smite the perjurer with his lightning, was invoked by the Romans, when a hog was slain with

~~the sacred flint representing the thunderbolt, with the invocation to Jove so to smite the Roman people if they broke the oath (Liv., i. 24; Polyb., iii. 25). Another form of this Aryan rite was preserved by the old Slavonic nation of Prussia, where a man would lay his right hand on his own neck and his left on the holy oak, saying, '"'May Perkun (the thunder- god) destroy me!" The oaths of the lower culture show~~

~~Om~~

~~a remarkable difference from those of later stages. In the apparently primitive forms the curse on the perjurer is to take effect in this world, as when an African negro swears by his head or limbs, which will wither if he lies; this kind of oath by the swearer's body is still found in both the Eastern and the Western worlds, and generally with the same implication of evil to fall on the part sworn by. But as nations became more observant, experience must have shown that bears and tigers were as apt to kill truth-tellers as perjurers, and that even the lightning- flash falls without moral discrimination. In the Clouds of Aristophanes, indeed, men have come openly to ridicule such beliefs, the Socrates of the play pointing out that notorious perjurers go unharmed, while Zeus hurls his bolts at his own temple, and the tall oaks, as if an oak- tree could perjure itself. The doctrine of miraculous earthly retribution on the perjurer lasted on in legend, as where Eusebius relates how three villains conspired to bring a false accusation against Narcissus, bishop of Jeru- salem, which accusation they confirmed by solemn oath before the church, one wishing that if he swore falsely he might perish by fire, one that he might die of the pesti- lence, one that he might lose his eyes; a spark no man knew from whence burned to ashes the first perjurer's house and all within, the second was consumed by the plague from head to foot, whereupon the third confessed the crime with tears so copious that he lost his sight (Euseb., Z/ist. Eccl. vi. 9). Asa general rule, however, the supernatural retribution on perjury has been transferred from the present world to the regions beyond the grave, as is evident from any collection of customary oaths. A single instance will show at once the combination of retributions in and after the present life, and the tendency to heap up remote penalties in the vain hope of securing present honesty. The Siamese Buddhist in his oath, not content to call down on himself various kinds of death if he breaks it, desires that he may afterwards be cast into~~

hell to go through innumerable tortures, among them to carry water over the flames in a wicker basket to assuage the thirst of the infernal judge, then that he may migrate into the body of a slave for as many years as there are grains of sand in four seas, and after this that he may be born a beast through five hundred generations and an hermaphrodite five hundred more.

The forms of oath belonging to all nations and ages, various as they are in detail, come under a few general heads. It may be first observed that gestures such as grasping hands, or putting one hand between the hands of another in token of homage, are sometimes treated as of the nature of oaths, but wrongly so, they being rather of the nature of ceremonies of compact. The Hebrew practice of putting the hand under another's thigh is usually reckoned among oath-rites, but it may have been merely a ceremony of covenant (Gen. xxiv. 2, xlvii. 29 ;* see Joseph., Ant., 1.16). Even the covenant among many ancient and modern nations by the parties mixing their blood or drinking one another's is in itself only a solemn rite of union, not an oath proper, unless some such cere- mony is introduced as dipping weapons into the blood, as in the form among the ancient Scythians (Herod., iv. 70) ; this, by bringing in the idea of death befalling the cove- nant-breaker, converts the proceeding into an oath of the strongest kind. The custom of swearing by weapons, though frequent in the world, is far from consistent in meaning. It may signify, in cases such as those just mentioned, that the swearer if forsworn is to die by such a weapon; or the warrior may appeal to his weapon as a powerful or divine object, as Parthenopzeus swears by his spear that he will level to the ground the walls of

Thebes (4Eschyl., Sept. contra Theb., 530; see the custom |!

WII 699

of the Quadi in Ammian. Marcellin., xvii.) ; or the weapon may be a divine emblem, as when the Scythians swore by the wind and the sword as denoting life and death (Lucian, Toxaris, 38). Oaths by weapons lasted into the Christian period ; for instance, the Lombards swore lesser oaths by consecrated weapons and greater on the Gospels (see Ducange, s.v. "' Juramenta super arma"; Grimm, Deutsche Rechtsalterth., p. 896). Stretching forth the hand towards the object or deity sworn by is a natural

gesture, well shown in the oath of Agamemnon, who with uplifted hands (Avi yefpas dvaoydv) takes Heaven to witness with Sun and Earth and the Erinnyes who below the earth wreak vengeance on the perjurer (Homer, Ji, xix. 254; see also Pindar, Olymp., vii. 120). The gesture of lift- ing the hand towards heaven was also an Israelite form of oath: Abraham says, "I have lifted up my hand to Jehovah," while Jehovah Ilimself is represented as so swearing, "For I lift up My hand to heaven, and say, I live for ever" (Gen. xiv. 22; Deut. xxxii. 40; see Dan. xi. 7; Rev. x. 5). This gesture established itself in Christendom, and has continued to modern times. In England, for example, in the parliament at Shrewsbury in 1398, when the Lords took an oath on the cross of Canterbury never to suffer the transactions of that parlia- ment to be changed, the members of the Commons held up their hands to signify their taking upon themselves the same oath (J. E. Tyler, Oaths, p. 99). In France a juror takes oath by raising his hand, saying, "Je jure!" The Scottish judicial oath is taken by the witness holding up his right hand uncovered, and repeating after the ushers" I swear by Almighty God, and as I shall answer to God at the great day of judgment, that I will," é&c. In the ancient world sacrifice often formed part of the ceremony of the oath; typical examples may be found in the Homeric poems, as in Agameminon's oath already mentioned, or the compact between the Greeks and Tro- jans (1, iii. 276), where wine is poured out in libation, with prayer to Zeus and the immortal gods that the perjurer's brains shall, like the wine, be poured on the ground ; the rite thus passes into a symbolic curse-oath of the ordinary barbaric type. Connected with such sacri- ficial oaths is the practice of laying the hand on the victim or the altar, or touching the image of the god. A classic instance is in a comedy of Plautus (udens, v. 2, 45), where Gripus says, "Tange aram hanc Veneris," and Labrax answers "Tango" (Greek instance, Thucyd., v. 47 ; see Justin, xxiv. 2). Thus Livy (xxi. 1) introduces the phrase "touching the sacred objects" (tactis sacris) into the picturesque story of Hannibal's oath. Details of the old Scandinavian oath have been preserved in Iceland in the Landnamabék (Islendinga Ségur, Copenhagen, 1843): a bracelet (baugr) of two rings or more was to be kept on the altar in every head court, which the godi or priest should wear at all law-things held by him, and should redden in the blood of the bullock sacrificed, the witness pronouncing the remarkable formula: "Name I to witness that I take oath by the ring, law-oath, so help me Frey, and Niord, and almighty Thor," (hialpi mer svi Freyr, ok Nidrdr,

ok hinn almattki Ass), &c. This was doubtless the great oath on the holy ring or bracelet which the Danes swore to King Alfred to quit his king- dom ("on tham halgan beage," Anglo-Sax. Chron. ; "in eorum armilla sacra," Ethelwerd, Chron., iv.). An oath, though not necessarily expressed in words, is usually so. In the Homeric instances the prayer which constitutes the oath has a somewhat conventional form, and in the classical ages we find well-marked formulas. These are often refer- ences to deities, as "'by Zeus!" "TI call Zeus to witness"

'(vat pa Aia ; iorw Zeds); "by the immortal gods!" "I call

to witness the ashes of my ancestors" (per deos immor-

700

tales; testor majorum cineres). Sometimes a curse is invoked on himself by the swearer, that he may perish if he fail to keep his oath, as "the gods destroy me," "let me perish if," &c. (dii me perdant; dispeream si). An important class of Roman oaths invokes the deity to favour or preserve the swearer in so far as he shall fulfil his promise— "as the gods may preserve me," "as I wish the gods to be propitious to me" (me ita di servent ; ita deos mihi velim propitios). The best Roman collection is to be found in the old work of Brissonius, De Formulis et Solemnibus Populi Romani Verbis, Paris, 1583. Biblical examples of these classes of oaths are "as the Lord liveth" (1 Sam. xiv. 39, and elsewhere), "so do God to me, and more also" (2 Sam. iii. 35, and elsewhere).

The history of oaths in the early Christian ages opens a controversy which to this day has not been closed. Under Christ's injunction, 'Swear not at all" (Matt. v. 34; also James v. 12), many Christians seem at first to have shrunk from taking oaths, and, though after a time the usual customs of judicial and even colloquial oaths came to prevail among them, the writings of the Fathers show efforts to resist the practice. Chrysostom perhaps goes furthest in inveighing against this "snare of Satan": "Do as you choose; I lay it down as a law that there be no swearing at all. If any bid you swear, tell him, Christ has spoken, and I do not swear" (Homil. ix. in Act. Apostol.; see a collection of patristic passages in Sixt. Senens., Bibliothec. Sanct., vi. adnot. 26). The line mostly taken by influential teachers,

~~*however, was that swearing should indeed be avoided as much as possible from its leading to perjury, but that the passages forbid- ding it only applied to superfluous or trifling oaths, or those sworn by created objects, such as heaven or earth or one's own head. On the other hand, they argued that judicial and other serious swearing could not have been forbidden, seeing that Paul in his epistles repeatedly introduces oaths (2 Cor. i. 23; Phil. i. 8; Gal. i. 20). Thus Athanasius writes: "TI stretch out my hand, and as I have learned of the apostle, I call God to witness on my soul" (Apol. ad Imp. Const.; see Augustine, De Mend., 28; Epist., cl., iii. 9; cL, iv. 250; Lnarr. in Psalm. \xxxviii. (4); Serm., 307, 319). This argument is the more forcible from Paul's expressions being actually oaths in accepted forms, and it has also been fairly adduced that Christ, by answering to the adjuration of the high priest, took the judicial oath in solemn form (Matt. xxvi. 63). The passages here referred to will give an idea of the theological grounds on which in more modern times Anabaptists, Mennonites, and Quakers have refused to take even judicial oaths, while, on the other hand, the laws of Christendom from early ages have been only directed against such swearing as was considered profane or otherwise improper, and against perjury. Thus from the 3d or 4th century we find oaths taking much the same place in Christian as in non-Christian society. In the 4th century the Christian military oath by God, Christ, the HIoly Spirit, and the majesty of the emperor is recorded by Vegetius (Ret Milt. Inst., ii. 5). Constan- tine's laws required every witness in a cause to take oath ; this is confirmed in Justinian's code, which even in somé cases requires also the parties and advocates to be sworn (Cod. Theod., xi. 39; Justin. Cod., iv. 20, 59). Bishops and clergy were called upon to take oath in ordination, monastic vows, and other ecclesiastical matters (see de- tails in Bingham, Antig. of Chr. Church, xvi. 7). By the Middle Ages oaths had increased and multiplied in Christendom far beyond the practice of any other age or religion. The Reformation made no change in principle, as 1s seen, for instance, in Art. xxxix. of the church of England: '" As we confess that vain and rash swearing is forbidden Christian men by our Lord Jesus Christ, and*~~

~~*Oe i a*~~

~~*James HIs apostle, so we judge, that Christian Religion doth not prohibit, but that a man may swear when the Magistrate requireth, in a cause of faith*~~

~~and charity, so it be done according to the Prophet's teaching, in justice, judgement, and truth." But about this time began a legal reformation, which has for reasons of public policy con- tinually reduced the number of oaths required to be taken, and apparently tends toward their total abolition.~~

~~The history of swearing in early Christendom would lead us to expect that the forms used would be adopted with more or less modification from Hebrew or Roman sources, as indeed proves to be the case. The oath introduced in the body of one of Constantine's laws—" As the Most High Divinity may ever be propitious to me" (Ita mihi summa Divinitas semper propitia sit)—follows an old Roman form. The Roman oath by the genius of the emperor being objected to by Christians as recognizing a demon, they swore by his safety (Tertull., Apol., 32). The gesture of holding up the hand in swearing has been already spoken of. The Christian oath on a copy of the Gospels seems derived from the late Jewish oath taken holding in the hand the scroll of the law (or the phylacteries), a ceremony itself possibly adapted from Roman custom (see treatise "Shebuoth" in Gemara). Among the various mentions of the oath on the Gospels in early Christian writers is that characteristic passage of Chrysostom in a sermon to the people of Antioch: " But do thou, if nothing else, at least reverence the very book thou holdest forth to be sworn by, open the Gospel thou takest in thy hands to administer the oath, and, hearing what Christ therein saith of oaths, tremble and desist " (Serm. ad Pop. Antioch., Homil. xv.). The usual mode was to lay the hand on the Gospel, as is often stated in the records, and was kept up to a modern date in the oath in the university of Oxford, "tactis sacrosanctis Evangeliis" ; the practice of kissing the book, which has now almost superseded it in England, appears in the Middle Ages (J. E. Tyler, Oaths, pp. 119, 151). The book was often laid on the altar, or (after the manner of ancient Rome) the swearer laid his hand on the altar itself, or looked towards it; above all, it became customary to touch relics of saints on the altar, a ceremony of which the typical instance is seen in the representation of Harold's oath in the Bayeux tapestry. Other objects, as the cross, the bishop's crosier, &c., were sworn by (see Ducange, s.v. "Jurare"). An oath ratified by contact or inspection of a sacred object was called a "corporal" or bodily oath, as distinguished from a merely spoken or written oath ; this is well seen in an old English coronation oath, "so~~

~~helpe me God, and these holy euan- gelists by me bodily touched vppon this hooly awter." The English word signifying the "sacred object " on which oath is taken is halidome (Anglo-Saxon, hdligdém ; German, hetligthuwm); the halidome on which oaths are now sworn in England is a copy of the New Testament. Jews are sworn on the Old Testament; the sacred books of other religions are used in like manner, a Mohammedan swearing on the Koran, a Hindu on the Vedas.~~

~~Among the oath-formulas used in Christendom, that taken by provincial governors under Justinian is typical of one class: "I swear by God Almighty, and His only begotten Son our Lord Jesus Christ, and the Holy Ghost, and the Most Holy Glorious Mother of God and ever Virgin Mary, and by the Four Gospels which I hold in my hand, and by the Holy Archangels Michael and Gabriel," &c. The famous oath of the kings Louis and Charles at Strasburg in 842 (a.D.) runs: " By God's love and the Christian people and our common salvation, as God shall give me knowledge and power," &c. Earlier than this, as in the oath of fealty in the capitularies of Charle- magne in 802, is found the familiar form "'Sic me adjuvet~~

~~OA~~

~~Deus," closely corresponding to above-mentioned formulas of pre-Christian Rome. This became widely spread in Kurope, appearing in Old French "Si m'ait Dex," German "So mir Gott helfe," English "So help me God." A re- markable point in its history is its occurrence in the "So help me Frey," &c., of the old Scandinavian ring-oath already described. Among the curiosities of the subject are quaint oaths of kings and other great personages: William Rufus swore "by that and that" (per hoc et per hoc); William the Conqueror "by the splendour of God," John "by God's teeth"; other phrases are given in Ducange (Z.c.), as "per omnes gentes," "per coronam," "par la sainte figure de Dieu," "par la mort Dieu," «ec.~~

~~Profane swearing, the trifling or colloquial use of sacred oaths, is not without historical interest, formulas used being apt to keep up traces of old manners and extinct religions. Thus the early Christians were reproved for continuing to say "mehercle /" some of them not knowing that they were swearing by Hercules (Tertull., De Idol., 20). Oaths by deities of pre-~~

Christian Europe lasted into the modern world, as when a few generations ago Swedish peasants might be heard to swear, "Odin take me if it is not true!" (Hylten-Cavallius, Warend och Wirdarne, vol. i, p. 228). The thunder-god holds his place still in vulgar German exclamations, such as "Donner!" (Grimm, Deutsche Mythologie, pp. 10, 166). The affected revival of classical deities in Italy in the Middle Ages still lingers in such forms as "per Bacco!" "cospetto di Bacco!" (by Bacchus! face of Bacchus!). In France the concluding oath of the last paragraph has dwindled into "mordieu!" or "morbleu !" much as in England the old oaths by God's body and wounds became converted into "'oddsbodikins!" and " zounds!"

The oaths now administered among civilized nations are chiefly intended for maintaining governments and securing the perform- ance of public business. They fall under the headings of political, ecclesiastical, and legal. In England the coronation oath is to be administered by one of the archbishops or bishops in the presénce of all the people, who, on their parts, reciprocally take the oath of allegiance to the crown.

The archbishop or bishop shall say: " Will you solemnly promise and swear to govern the people of this kingdom of England and the dominions thereto be- longing according to the statutes in parliament agreed on, and the laws and customs of the same?" The king or queen shall say: 'I solemnly promise so to do." Archbp. or bp. ' Will you to your power cause law and justice, in mercy, to be executed in all your judgements?" XK. or Q. 'I will." Archbp, or bp. '* Will you, to the utmost of your power, maintain the laws of God, the true profession of the Gospel, and the Protestant reformed religion established by the law? And will you promise unto the bishops and clergy of this nation, and to the churches committed to their charge, all such rights and privileges as by law do or shall appertain unto them, or any of them?" K.orQ. "All this I promise to do." After this the king or queen, laying his or her hand upon the holy Gospels, shall say: 'The things which I have here before promised I will perform and keep; so help me God," and then shall kiss the book.*

The chief officers of state take an "official" oath well and truly to serve his (or her) majesty. Special oaths are taken by privy councillors, archbishops

~~and bishops, peers, baronets and knights, recruits, and others. The old oath of allegiance, as administered (says Blackstone) upwards of 600 years, contained a promise "to be true and faithful to the king and his heirs, and truth and faith to bear of life and linib and terrene honour, and not to know or hear of any ill or damage intended him without defending him there-from " (Blackstone, Commentaries, book i. chap. x.). In the reign of William III. it was replaced by a shorter form, and in the present reign stands: "I do swear that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty Queen Victoria, her heirs and successors, according to law." Statutes of Charles II. and George I. enacted that no member should vote or sit in either house of parliament without having taken the several oaths of allegiance, supremacy, and abjuration. The oath of supremacy in the reign of William III. was: "I A B doe swear that I doe from my heart abhorr detest and abjure as impious and hereticall this damnable doctrine and position that princes excommunicated or deprived by the Pope or any authority of the see of Rome may be deposed or murdered by their subjects or any other whatsoever. And I doe declare that no forreigne prince person prelate state or potentate hath or ought to have any jurisdiction power superiority preeminence or authoritie ecclesiastical or spiritual] within this realme. Soe," &. The oath of abjuration introduced in the time of William III. recognizes the king's rights, engages the juror to support him and disclose all traitorous conspiracies against him, promises to maintain the Hanoverian Protestant succession, and expressly renounces any claim of the descendants of the late Pretender. This oath was not~~

~~et 701~~

~~only taken by persons in office, but might be tendered by two justices to any person suspected of disaffection. In modern times a single parliamentary oath was substituted for the three, and this was altered to enable Roman Catholics to take it, and Jews were enabled to sit in parliament by being allowed to omit the words "on the true faith of a Christian." In its present form the parliamentary oath consists of an oath of allegiance and a promise to maintain the succession to the crown as limited and settled in the reign of William III. The "judicial" oath taken by judges of the Court of Appeal or of the HIgh Court of Justice, and by justices of the peace, is "'to do right to all manner of people after the laws and usages of this realm, without fear or~~

*favour, affection or ill-will." Jurors are sworn, whence indeed their name (juratores) ; in felonies the oath administered is: "You shall well and truly try and true deliverance make between our sovereign lady the Queen and the prisoner at the bar whom you shall have in charge, and a true verdict give according to the evidence." In misdemeanours the form is: " Well and truly try the issue joined between our sovereign lady the Queen and the defendant, and a true verdict," &c. The oath of the jurors in the Scottish criminal courts is: 'You [the jury collectively] swear in the name of Almighty God and as you shall answer to God at the great day of judgment that you will truth say and no truth conceal in so far as you are to pass upon this assize."' The oldest trace of this form of oath in Scotland is in Reg. maj., i. cap. 11, copied from Glenville, which points to an origin in the Norman inquest or "recognition." In the ancient custom of compurgation, once prevalent in Europe, the accused's oath was supported by the oaths of a number of helpers or compurgators who swore to their belief in its validity. A remnant of it lasted on till the 17th century in the "ex officio " oath of a clergyman cited before the ecclesiastical court for misconduct, who might be required to call his neighbours as compurgators to swear to their belief in his inno- cence. Thejusjurandum or decisory oath of Roman law, which was of greater authority than res judicata (Digest xii. 2, 2), is still repre- sented in modern law by the serment décisoire of the Code Civil, and the "rceference to the oath of the party" of Scotch law (see the case of Longworth v. Yelverton, in Law Reports, 1 Scotch Appeals, 218). Such an oath is final and conclusive. It has something in common with the old "wager of law" in England, abolished by 3and 4 William IV. c. 42,s. 18, in so far as it makes an oath the jinis litiwm. The decisory oath was formerly used in the ecclesiastical courts (Burn, Eccl. Law, s.v. '*Oaths"). It seems to be still used in admiralty cases in Massachusetts (Dunlop, Adm. Pr., 290). Witnesses are sworn: '* The evidence you shall give… shall be the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth. So," &c. Where a witness is sworn on the wir dire, the oath is: " You shall true answer make to all such questions as the court shall demand of you. So help you God." As to wit- nesses of religions other than Christian, an oath is to be adminis- tered to them in such form and with such ceremonies as they may declare to be binding. The great number of oaths formerly required have been much reduced by modern legislation, in many cases a voluntary declaration before a justice, notary, &c., being substituted. Many alterations of the*

English law as to oaths have been made of late years in relief of those conscientiously objecting. Quakers, Moravians, and Separatists are allowed to make affirmation, whether as witnesses or on other occasions, where an oath was formerly required. Thus a Quaker in the witness-box affirms by answering "Yea!" and when taking his seat in parliament substitutes for "swear" the words 'solemnly, sincerely, and truly declare and affirm," and omits "So help me God." The Evidence Further Amendment Act, 1869 (82 and 83 Vict. c. 68, s. 4), allowing affirma- tions in place of oaths in certain cases in judicial proceedings, is by the Evidence Amendment Act, 1870 (33 and 34 Vict. c. 49), extended to proceedings before all persons having authority to administer oaths. It was specially intended to meet the case of an arbitrator. But the right to affirm in lieu of taking the parlia- mentary oath has been held not to apply to the case of avowed atheists, as appears from the case of Mr Charles Bradlaugh, elected member for Northampton, but not permitted to take the affirmation and sit (1883 ; see Clarke v. Bradlaugh, 7 Q. B. D. 38). False witness given under affirmation is punishable as perjury. Profane swearing and cursing is punishable by law, any labourer, sailor, or soldier being liable to forfeit 1s., every other person under the de- gree of a gentleman 2s., and every gentleman or person of superior rank 5s., to the poor of the parish.

The administering or taking of certain oaths is criminal in English and Scotch law. It is a felony punishable by penal servi- tude for life (a) to administer or cause to be administered or aid or assist at the administering of any oath or engagement purporting or intending to bind the person taking the same to commit treason or murder or any felony which on the 12th of July 1812 was punishable with death ; (6) to take any such oath or engagement, not being compelled thereto (52 George III. c. 104,81). Itisa felony punishable with penal servitude for seven years (a) to administer or cause to be administered or aid or assist at or be present and consenting to the administering or taking of any oath

or engagement purporting or intending to bind the person tak- ing the same to engage in any mutinous or seditious purpose ; to disturb the public peace; to be of any association, society, or confederacy formed for any such

purpose ; to obey the orders or commands of any committee or body of men not lawfully consti- tuted, or of any leader or commander, or other person not having authority by law for that purpose ; not to inform or give evidence against any associate, confederate, or other person ; not to reveal or discover any unlawful combination or confederacy or any illegal act done or to be done, or any illegal oath or engagement which may have been administered or tendered to or taken by any person, or the import of any such oath or engagement ; (0) to take any such oath or engagement, not being compelled thereto (37 George IIL c. 123, s. 1), Compulsion is no defence unless the person taking the oath or engagement within fourteen days (in the case of oaths falling under 52 George III. c. 104) or within four days if not

prevented by actual force or sickness, and then within four days

after the cessation of the hindrance produced by such force or sick- ness (in the case of oaths falling under 37 George III. ¢. 128), declares the circumstances of the administration of the oath by information on oath before a justice of the peace or a secretary of state or the privy council, or, if on active service, to his command- ing officer. The Draft Criminal Code proposes to incorporate these provisions with little alteration. The Irish Act (50 George III. c. 102) is more stringent than 37 George III. c. 123, as the person administering the oath is punishable with penal servitude for life, the person taking the oath is punishable as in England and Scot- land. A club or society in which members are required or per- mitted to take au unlawful oath is unlawful, and the members may be proceeded against either summarily or by indictment (39 George III. c. 79, 57 George III. c. 19). The latter statute, as appears from the preamble, was specially aimed at the corresponding societies which existed in Great Britain at the time of the French Revolution.

Politicians and moralists have placed much reliance on oaths as a practical security. It has been held, as Lycur- gus the orator said to the Athenians, that "an oath is the bond that keeps the state together" (Lycurg., Leocr., 80; see Montesquieu, Spirit of Laws). Thus modern law- books quote from the leading case of Omychund »v. Barker : 'No country can subsist a twelvemonth where an oath is thought not binding ; for the want of it must

~~necessarily dissolve society." On the other hand, wherever the belief in supernatural interference becomes weakened, and oaths are taken with solemn form but secret contempt or open ridicule, they become a serious moral scandal, as had already begun to happen in classical times. The yet more disastrous effect of the practice of swearing is the public inference that, if a man has to swear in order to be believed, he need not speak the truth when not under oath. The early Christian fathers were alive to this depreciation of ordinary truthfulness by the practice of swearing, and opposed, though unavailingly, the system of oaths which more and more pervaded public business. How in the course of the Middle Ages oaths were multiplied is best seen by examining a collection of formulas such as the Book of Oaths (London, 1649), which range from the coronation oath to the oaths sworn by such as valuers of cloths and the city scavengers.! Oaths of allegiance and other official oaths are still taken throughout Europe, but experience shows that in times of revolution they are violated with little scruple, and in the case of the United Kingdom it is doubtful whether they have any more prac- tical value than, if so much as, simple declarations. The question of legal oaths is more difficult. On the one hand, it is admitted that they do induce witnesses, especially the ignorant and superstitious, to give evidence more truth- fully than they would do on eyen solemn declaration. On the other hand, all who practise in courts of justice declare that a large proportion of the evidence given under oath is knowingly false, and that such perjury is perceptibly detrimental to public morals. The lowering of truth in ordinary intercourse, which follows from the requirement of swearing as a confirmation in public matters, femains~~

~~1 As to reform of the excessive multiplication of oaths see Paley, Moral Philosophy, book iii. part i. chap. 16; and J. E. Tyler, Oaths.~~

~~much as it was in ancient times. One noteworthy point is that an effect is now produced by oaths foreign to their proper purpose, which is to use the sanction of religion for the enforcement of obligations; now, however, the oath has passed into a sanction of the religion, so that an oath taken in legal form is construed as a confession of faith in Chris- tianity, or at least in the existence of God. — (E. B. T.)~~

~~OBADIAH (7°12), OPserov, ABdiov, Abdias) is a name pretty frequent in the Old Testament, meaning " servant" or worshipper "of Jehovah." It is synonymous with Abdi and Abdeel, and of a type common in Semitic proper names; compare the Arabic 'Abdallah, Taimallat, 'Abd Manat, &c., the Hebrew Obed Edom, and many Pheenician forms. The name of Obadiah is prefixed to the fourth and shortest book of the minor prophets, and as no date or other historical note is added it is not surprising that an early Hebrew tradition recorded by Jerome (Comm. in Ob.) identified the prophet with the best-known Obadiah of the historical books, the protector of the prophets in the reign of Ahab (1 Kings xviii.). His tomb was shown in Samaria with those of Elisha and John the Baptist, and the Epitaphium Paulx describes the wild performances, analogous to those of modern dervishes, that took place before these shrines.~~

~~Tt is now agreed on all hands that it is vain to connect Obadiah the prophet with any other Obadiah of the Old Testament, and that our only clue to the date and compo- sition of the book lies in internal evidence. The prophecy is directed against Edom. Jehovah has sent a messenger forth among the nations to stir them up to battle against the proud inhabitants of Mount Seir, to bring them down from the rocky fastnesses which they deem impregnable. Edom shall be not only plundered but utterly undone and expelled from his borders, and this he shall suffer (through his own folly) at the hand of trusted allies (vers. 1-9), The cause of this judgment is his cruelty to his brother Jacob. In the day of Jerusalem's overthrow the Edomites rejoiced over the calamity, grasped at a share of the spoil, lay in wait to cut off the fugitives (vers. 10-14). But now the day of Jehovah is near upon all nations, Esau and all the heathen shall drink full retribution for their banquet of carnage and plunder on Jehovah's holy mountain. A rescued Israel shall dwell in Mount Zion inrestored holiness ; the house of Jacob shall regain their old possessions ; Edom shall be burned up before them as chaff before the flame ; they shall spread over all Canaan, over the mountain of Esau and the south of Judah as well as over Gilead and the Philistine and Pheenician coast. The victorious Israel- ites shall come up on Mount Zion to rule the mountain of Esau, and the kingdom shall be Jehovah's (vers. 15-21).~~

~~In vers. 10-14 the expositor finds sure foothold. The calamity of Jerusalem can only be the sack of the city by Nebuchadnezzar ; the malevolence and cruelty of Edom on this occasion are characterized in similar terms by several writers of the exile, but by none with the same circumstance and vividness of detail as here (Ezek. xxv. 8, 12 sg. xxxv.; Lam. iv. 21; Psalm cxxxvii.). It is impossible to doubt that these verses were written under the lively and recent impression of the events to which they refer ; to regard them as predictive (Caspari, Pusey, &c.) is to misuriderstand the whole character of prophetic foresight, and to ascribe them with Hitzig to the Persian or Greek period is equally unreasonable. The opening verses of the prophecy, on the other hand, present a real difficulty. Obad. 1-6, 8 agree so closely and in part verbally with Jer. xlix. 14-16, 9, 10, 7 that the two passages can- not be independent; nor does it seem possible that Obadiah quotes from Jeremiah, for Obad. 1-8 is a well- connected whole, while the parallel verses in Jeremiah appear in different order, interspersed with other matter,~~

~~OBA—~~

~~and in a much less lucid connexion. In Jeremiah the picture is vague, and Edom's unwisdom (ver. 7) stands without proof. In Obadiah the conception is quite de- finite. Edom is attacked by his own allies, and his folly appears in that he exposes himself to such treachery. Again, the probability that the passage in Jeremiah incor- porates disjointed fragments of an older oracle is greatly increased by the fact that the prophecy against Moab in the preceding chapter uses, in the same way, Isa. xv., xvi., and the prophecy of Balaam. In spite of the objections of Blau (4. D. WM. G., xx. 173 sq.) there is no good reason to doubt that the prophecy against Edom ascribed to Jere- miah is really from his pen ; it is earlier than the fall of Jerusalem,! and is one of a circle of prophecies in which Nebuchadnezzar (the lion ascending from Jordan, ver. 19) appears as the instrument of divine judgment on the nations, This being so, it seems necessary to conclude, with Ewald (Propheten, i. 489 sq.), Graf (Jeremia, p. 558 sq.), and others, that Jeremiah and our book of Obadiah alike quote from an older oracle. Ewald supposes that the treacherous allies of Edom are the Arameans and the time that of Ahaz (2 Kings xvi. 6); but the tone of the prophecy seems rather to refer it to a later date, when Edom had been for some time independent and~~

~~powerful ; and it is not improbable that in Obad. 1-8 we have the first mention of that advance of the Arabs upon the lands east of Palestine which is referred to also in Ezek. xxv. (comp. Moas, vol. xvi. p. 535). That the book of Obadiah, short as it is, is a complex document might have been suspected, apart from Jer. xlix., from an apparent change of view between vers. 1-9 and vers. 15 sg. In the former verses Esau is destroyed by his allies, and they occupy his territory, but in the latter he perishes with the other heathen in the day of universal retribution, he disappears before the victorious advance of Israel, and the southern Judeans occupy his land.~~

~~The eschatology of Obadiah contains little that is pecu- liar. The conceptions of the "rescued ones" (mpd), of the sanctity of Zion, of the kingship of Jehovah, are the com- mon property of the prophets from the time of Isaiah. The restoration of the old borders of Israel and the conquest of Edom and the Philistines are ideas as old as Amos ix., Isa. xi. 14; but the older prophets more often represent this conquest as a suzerainty of Israel over its neighbours, as in the days of David, while in Obadiah, as in other later books, the intensified antithesis—religious as well as political—hbetween Judali and the surrounding heathen finds its expression in the idea of a consuming judgment on the latter,—the great "day of Jehovah." This view is not, however, original in Obadiah ; it is already expressed in Zephaniah. Between Joel and Obadiah there are points of material and verbal agreement, so close as to imply that Joel used the earlier book (Joel iii. 19,—Ob. 10, 14; Joel iii. 3,—Ob. 11; Joel ii. 32, ii, 17,—Ob. 17). Another charac- teristic common to Obadiah with the latest prophets is that, while he uses the words house of Jacob and house of Joseph, the northern tribes have become to him a mere name; the~~

~~restoration he thinks of is a restoration of the kingdom of.~~

~~Jerusalem, and even Gilead is to be occupied not by Joseph but by Benjamin.~~

~~An indication of the place where Obadiah wrote seems to lie in ver. 20, where he speaks of " the exiles in this 97." The word as pointed has been variously explained to mean " bulwark" or "army"; it may also be read as "sand" or "sea-coast"" (Ewald), but, as the text of the verse is not sound and cannot be translated without some correction, it is unsafe to build on~~

~~this obscure allu- sion. Thc prominence given to Edom, and the fact that Chaldea is not mentioned at all, make it probable that the book was not written in Babylonia. The same verse speaks of exiles in Sepharad.~~

~~1 In ver. 12 " have assuredly drunken" should be " shall assuredly drink,"~~

~~OBE 703~~

~~Sepharad is probably Sardis, the Gparda of Darius in the Behistun inscription. Many of the Jews were doubtless sold as slaves by Nebuchadnezzar. Lydia was a great slave-market, and Asia Minor was a chief seat of the Diaspora at an early date (comp. Gutschmidt, Neue Beitrdge, p. 77), so that this identification does not supply ground for Hitzig's argument that Obadiah was written in the Greek period, when we read of many Jews being transplanted to Asia Minor (Jos., Ant., xii. 3). Schrader, however CEG EE 116 sy.; K.A.T., 446), thinks of a Shaparda mentioned by Sargon, and lying in south-west Media.~~

~~Literature.—The commentaries on the minor prophets (see Hosea); Jager, Ueber das Zeitalter Obadia's, Titbingen, 1837; Caspari, Der Pr. Obadia, 1842; Delitzsch in Z. f. Luth. Th., 1851. A fuller list is given by Reuss, Gesch. des A.T. (1881), p. 449. (W. R. 8.)~~

~~OBAN, a seaport town and parliamentary burgh of the Western Highlands of Scotland, is situated in Argyllshire, 70¢ miles north-west of Callander by rail, and 96 from Glasgow. It lies along a deep and sheltered bay in the Firth of Lorn opposite the island of Kerrera, and its villas are scattered over the hill-slopes behind. The public build- ings comprise six churches, a court-house, four banks, a high school, and a large number of hotels. There are no manu- factures except the distilling of whisky ; but eleven fairs for cattle, sheep, horses, &c., are annually held in the town. A considerable trade is carried on in connexion with the fisheries, particularly in herrings. Oban is an important centre of the Highland tourist traffic. The rental of the burgh increased from £1719 in 1847 to £7160 in 1864, and upwards of £20,000 in 1882; and the population, which was only 1480 in 1831 and 2413 in 1871, reached 3991 in 1881, or, within the extended area, 4330.~~

A Renfrew trading company erected what was practically the first house in Oban in 1713; a custom-house was built in 1763; in 1786 the hamlet was made a Government fishing-station ; in 1791 a plan was drawn up for laying out a large village ; and in 1796 the Stevensons started a shipbuilding-yard, which remained in opera- tion for about thirty years. Made a burgh of barony in 1811, Oban became a parliamentary burgh in 1832, and adopted the Lindsay Act in 1862.

OBELISK. See ALExanprta, vol. i. p. 495; Arcut- TECTURE, vol. ii. p. 390; and Eeyprv, vol. vii. pp. 768, 778. The obelisk known as "Cleopatra's Needle," re- ferred to in vol. i. p. 495 as having been offered to the English Government by Mehemet Ali, but declined, has since been brought to London, and placed on the Thames Embankment in 1878. The other was conveyed to the United States and erected in Central Park, New York, in

1880.

OBERAMMERGAU, a small village in the mountain valley of the Ammer, in Upper Bavaria, lies 2760 feet above the sea, and about 45 miles to the south-west of Munich. In 1880 it contained 1349 inhabitants, who were mainly engaged in making toys and in carving cruci- fixes, images of saints, and rosaries. Many of the houses are adorned with quaint frescos of Biblical subjects. The interest of Oberaminergau to the outer world is derived from the Passion Plays which are performed here by the villagers at intervals of ten years (the last in 1880), and are now attended by many thousands of European and American visitors.

The Oberammergau Passion Play, or dramatic representation of the sufferings of Christ, is not a survival of a medieval mystery or miracle-play, but took its rise from a vow made by the inhabitants in 1638, with the hope of staying a plague then raging. The original text and arrangements were probably made by the monks of Ettal, a monastcry a little higher up the valley ; but they were carefully remodelled by the parish priest at the beginning of the present century, when the Oberammergau play obtained exemp- tion from the general suppression of such performances by the Bavarian Government. The music was composed by Rochus Dedler, schoolmaster of the parish in 1814. The performances take place on the Sundays of summer, in a large open-air theatre holding 6000 persons, and

each lasts about nine hours, with a short intermission at noon. Each scene from the history of Christ is prefaced by a tableau of typical import from the Old Testament. About 700 actors are required, all belonging to the village. The proceeds of the performances are devoted to the good of the com-

munity, after defrayal of the costs and payment of a small remu—

neration to the actors. The villagers regard the Passion Play as a solemn act of religions worship, and the performances are charac- terized by the greatest reverence. The principal parts are usually hereditary in certain families, and are assigned with regard to moral character as well as dramatic ability. It is considered a disgrace not to be allowed to take part in the play, and the part of Christ is looked upon as one of the greatest of earthly honours. In the years intervening. between the representations the villagers are carefully drilled in dramatic performances by their pastor, and most witnesses agree in rating very highly the results produced by the combined religious fervour and artistic instinct of these Alpine

peasants. It is to be feared, however, that the concourse of.

fashionable visitors who now flock to the performance will gradu- ally have the effect of impairing its genuineness and simplicity.

Edward Devrient (in 1850) was among the first to direct general attention to Oberammergau ; and numerous German monographs have since appeared on the same subject. A short notice of the play is also given by Hase, Das Geistliche Schauspiel (Hngl. tr. by A. W. Jackson, 1880). English accounts of the per- formances have been given by Blackburn (new ed., 1880), MacColl (reprinted from the Times, 1880), Molloy (1880), Oxenham (1880), and others. An English version of the text of the Passion Play has been published by E. Childe (1880). Articles on the subject have also appeared in the following magazines =—Cen- tury, 1883; Blackwood's, vol. evii.; Contemporary, vol. xviii.; Macmillan's, vol. ii.; Harper's, vols. xlii. and xliii.; Once a Week, vol. xxiii.

~~OBERHAUSEN, a Prussian town of recent origin, in the province of the Rhine, is situated 5 miles from the east bank of that river and 20 miles to the north of Diissel- dorf. Its importance is due to the fact of its being one of the busiest railway junctions in Germany, and to the ex- tensive coal-pits in the vicinity. The town also possesses iron-works, rolling-mills, zinc smelting-works, railway work- shops, and manufactures of wire-rope, glass, porcelain, and soap. The annual export of coals is estimated at about 700,000 tons. The first houses of Oberhausen were built in 1845, and it received its municipal charter in 1875. In 1880 it contained 16,680 inhabitants, of whom 12,079 were Roman Catholics.~~

~~OBERLIN, a village of the United States, in Russia township, Lorain county, Ohio, 35 miles west-south-west of Cleveland by the Lake Shore and Michigan Railway, has a population of 3242 (1880), and is well known as the seat of Oberlin College. This institution for liberal education, open to all irrespective of sex or colour, was founded in 1833 by the Rev. John J. Shipherd and Philo P. Stewart, and named in honour of J. F. Oberlin; by the year 1835 it comprised a theological seminary, a college proper, a ladies' department, and a preparatory school; and since then a conservatory of music has been added. In 1883 nine distinct buildings were occupied by the various sections ; the total number of teachers was 73, and of pupils 1474 (698 male, 776 female, 78 coloured), and the library contained 20,000 volumes.~~

~~OBERLIN, Jean Fripsric (1740-1826), pastor and philanthropist, was the son of a teacher, and was born 31st August 1740 at Strasburg, where he studied theology. In 1766 he became Protestant pastor of Waldbach, a remote and poverty-stricken region in the Steinthal (Ban de la Roche) in Alsace. At once he set himself to better the material equally with the spiritual condition of the inhabit- ants. He began by constructing roads through the valley and erecting bridges, inciting the peasantry to the enterprise by himself taking a mattock and commencing operations. His example proved equally effectual in introducing an improved system of agriculture, with the result that the sterile Waldbach soon "began to blossom as the rose." Substantial cottages were erected, various industrial arts were introduced, and activity and comfort began to prevail in homes formerly tenanted by listless and ignoble poverty. Regarding the intellectual~~

~~needs of his parishioners Oberlin was also keenly solicitous. He founded an itinerant library, originated infant schools—the first that have existed—and established an ordinary school at each of the five villages in the parish. In the work of education he received great assistance from Louise Scheppler, who lived in his house in the capacity of servant and housekeeper. By his unselfish~~

~~devotion to their interests Oberlin won so entirely the confidence of his parishioners that he was consulted in the most minute domestic affairs, and his word became the recognized unwritten law of the district. He died 1st June 1826, and was interred with great manifestations of honour and affection at the village of Fouday. Since his death the Steinthal has suffered no interruption to its prosperity. When he began his labours its inhabitants did not number more than 500 ; in the beginning of the century they had increased to about 3000; and now they are supposed to number about 6000.~~

~~Among the numerous narratives of the labours of Oberlin mention may be made of Sims, Brief Memorials of Oberlin, London, 1830 ; Memoirs of Oberlin, with a short notice of Lowisa Scheppler, London, 1838, 2d ed. 1852; H. Ware, Biography of Oberlin, Boston, 1845 ; Spach, Oberlin le pastewr, Strasburg, 1865, 2d ed. 1868 ; Riff, Dret Bilder wus dem Leben von Papa Oberlin, Strasburg, 1880; and Butler, Life of J. F. Oberlin, 1882. The collected writings of Oberlin were published by Burkhardt at Stuttgart in 1843, in 4 vols.~~

~~OBERLIN, Jirumie Jaques (1735-1806), archeologist, brother of Jean Frédéric Oberlin noticed above, was born at Strasburg 8th August 1735. While studying theology at the university he devoted special attention to Biblical archeology. In 1755 he was chosen professor at the gymnasium of his native town, in 1763 librarian to the university, in 1770 professor of rhetoric, and in 1782 of logic and metaphysics. Oberlin published several manuals on archeology and ancient geography, and made frequent excursions into different provinces of France to investigate antiquarian remains and study provincial dialects, the result appearing in Essai sur le patois Lorrain, 1775; Dissertations sur les Minnesingers, 1782-89 ; and Observa- tions concernant le patois et les mours des gens de la cam- pagne,~~

~~1791. He also published several editions of Latin authors. He died 10th October 1806.~~

~~OBERON (Auberon, Alberon), king of the fairies, husband of Titania, first appears in literature as protector of the hero in Huon de Bordeaux, a chanson de geste, dating from about the 12th century (see FRanc#, vol. ix. p. 638). The name corresponds to the German Alberich or Elferich (elf-king). The fairy element in the legend of Huon has been treated in modern times by Wieland in the poem, and by Weber in the opera, of Oberon ; and the story of the elf-king's quarrel with Titania, as every one knows, supplies an important motif in Shakespeare's Mrdsummer Night's Dream.~~

~~OBESITY. See CorPuLENce, vol. vi. p. 435.~~

~~OBI. See Srperta.~~

~~OBLIGATION, in law, is a term derived from the Roman law, in which obligatio signified a tie of law (wn- culum juris) whereby one person is bound to perform or forbear some act for another. The obligatio of Roman law arose either from voluntary acts or from circumstances to which legal consequences were annexed. In the former case it was said to arise ex contractu, from contract, in the latter quasi ex contractu, ex delicto, or quasi ex delicto,—that is to say, from tort, or from acts or omissions to which the law practically attached the same results as it did to contract or tort. Obligatio was used to denote either end of the legal chain that bound the parties, the right of the party who could compel fulfilment of the obligatio, the creditor, or the duty of the party who could be compelled to fulfilment, the debitor. In English law obligation has only the latter sense. Creditor and debtor have also lost their Roman law signification ; they have been narrowed to mean the parties where the obligation is the payment of a sum of money. In English law obligation is used in at least four senses—(1) any duty imposed by law; (2) the special duty created by a vinculum juris ; (3) not the duty, but the evidence of the duty,—that is to say, an instrument under seal, otherwise called a bond; (4) the~~

~~OB O—~~

operative part of a bond. The third use of the word is chiefly confined to the older writers. Simplex and duplex oblagatio were the old names for what are now more com- monly called a single and a double or conditional bond. The party bound is still called the obligor, the party in whose favour the bond is made the obligee. The fourth like the third, is a use scarcely found except in the older

writers. The word "bond" is of course a mere translation of obligatio. Obligations may be either perfect or im- perfect. A perfect obligation is one which is directly

enforceable by legal proceedings; an imperfect or moral obligation (the naturals obligatio of Roman law) is one in which the wnculum juris is In some respects incomplete, so that it cannot be directly enforced, though it is not entirely destitute of legal effect. A perfect obligation may become imperfect by lapse of time or other means, and, conversely, an imperfect obligation may under certain circumstances become perfect. Thus a debt may be barred by the Statute of Limitations and so cease to be enforceable. The obligation, however, remains, though imperfect, for if there be a subsequent acknowledgment by the debtor, the debt revives, and the imperfect obligation becomes again perfect. At one period there was some doubt among English lawyers whether a moral obligation could be regarded as sufficient consideration for a contract; it has now, however, been long decided that it cannot be so regarded.

The Scotch law as to obligations closely follows the Roman. As in English law, the term obligation is used to express the instru- ment itself by which the obligation is imposed. The bond or uni- lateral obligation of Scotch law is a simple coutract to pay the sum borrowed, &c., with interest. The English bond is generally a con- tract to pay double the sum of the debt, with a condition that the bond is to be void if the debt be paid by a certain day. In Scotch law gratuitous obligations rank in competition with the claims of creditors ; in English law a voluntary bond, though effectual against – the grantor, cannot be set up against creditors. Bonds in Scotland which are heritable securities still rank as immovables for certain purposes, though they have been made movables as regards the succession of the

creditor, unless executors are expressly excluded (31 and 32 Vict. c. 101, s. 117).

American law is in general agreement with English, except in the case of Louisiana, where the terms obligor and obligee are used in as wide a sense as the debitor and creditor of Roman Jaw. By art. 8522 of the Louisiana civil code obligor or debtor means the person who has engaged to perform some obligation, obligee or creditor the person in favour of whom some obligation is contracted, whether such obligation be to pay money or to do or not to do something. The term obligation is important in America from its use in art. i. s. 10 of the constitution of the United States, " No State shall pass any law. . . impairing the obligation of contracts." This does not affect the power of Congress to pass sucha law. Con- tracts between private individuals are of course within the provision. So. are private conveyances, charters of private corporations, and statutory and other grants by a State. On the other hand, marriage and divorce, and arrangements which are political in their nature, such as charters of municipal corporations, licences to carry on particular trades, or regulations of police, are not within the pro- vision. In order to fall within it, the law must act upon the terms of the agreement, and not merely upon the mode of pro- cedure. If it act not upon the terms but upon the remedy, it im- pairs the obligation if it purport to be retrospective, but it is valid so far as it applies to subsequent contracts.

OBOE, or Havutrsoy. The oboe is an instrument con- taining a conical column of air, which is set in vibration by means of a double-tongued reed. A series of holes pierced in the side of the pipe permits the instrumentalist to progressively shorten the column by the successive opening of the lateral holes, and thus produce a series of fundamental sounds, the scale of which, in the primitive instruments without keys, does not exceed the extent of an octave. All wind instruments with a conical column of air, whatever may be the mode by which that is set in inotion, are subject to the laws of vibration of open pipes, according to which, by a stronger pressure in blowing, the oboe reproduces each of its fundamental sounds in the octave higher, and thus acquires a scale of two octaves, which, partially chromatic in the old instruments, has be-

come completely chromatic by the adoption of keys. This extension of compass is further augmented in modern in- struments, in the grave sounds by keys permitting lengthen- ings of the primitive column of air, and in the acute by the employment of other partial sounds than the first of the harmonic series. In the present day the mean chro matic extent of the oboe is comprised between the notes

= and == be :

The double reed is the most simple, as it is probably the oldest, of all reed contrivances. It is sufficient to flatten the end of a wheat straw to constitute an apparatus cap- able of setting in vibration by the breath the column of air contained in the rudimentary tube; the invention of this reed is certainly due to chance. An apparatus for sonorous disturbance thus found, it was easy to improve it: for the wheat stalk a reed stalk was substituted, and in the extremity of its pipe another reed stalk much shorter in length was inserted, pared and flattened at the end; and then came the lateral holes, probably another discovery of the great inventor chance. For the reed tube a wooden one was substituted, still preserving the reed tongue, and it is in this form, after having played an im- portant part amongst the sonorous contrivances of antiquity, that we find the ancestor of the oboe playing a part no less important in the 16th century, in which it formed the interesting families of the cormornes, the corthols, and the cervelas. All these families have disappeared in the instru- mental combinations of Europe, but they are still to be found in Eastern wind instruments, such as the Caucasian salamourt, the Chinese kwantze, and the hitshiriki of Japan. It is important to remark that the column of air ina cylin- drical pipe, disturbed by any reed, submits to the laws of vibration of stopped pipes; accordingly, to produce a sound of a given pitch, the pipe must be theoretically half as short as an open pipe would be to obtain a note of the same pitch. Moreover, open pipes under an increasing pressure of blowing, produce, in subdividing the air column, the harmonics according to the arithmetical progression 2, 3, 4, 5, &c., while the stopped pipes can only produce the odd harmonics in the series. In other words, the conical pipe reproduces its fundamental sounds in the interval of the octave, the cylindrical in that of

the twelfth. A double reed associated with a cylindrical pipe can only be used for columns of air of small diameter. Practice has demonstrated that the reed stalk of which the tongue reed is made should not be of narrower internal diameter than the pipe containing the column of air it is to act upon. By the flattening necessary to form the tongues of a double reed, it must be tolerably large, from which it happens that its proper sound is relatively grave, and will only agree with instruments not above the region of the male voice. It must be remembered that the reproduction of fundamental sounds in the twelfth is only possible by an artifice of modern invention. But it is evident that chance has again intervened to show that a very small double reed can set in vibration columns of air of considerable diameter, provided that the column becomes gradually narrower towards its superior extremity where it receives the reed, so as to terminate in a diameter equivalent to that of the reed itself. It is impossible to say when it was that man first employed the phenomena of double reeds and conical pipes, but the knowledge of them must at least have been later than that of the cylindrical pipe, which we may regard as directly furnished by nature. That antiquity made use of them, however, has been proved by M. Gevaert in his admirable Histoire de la musique dans Vantiquité ; but this learned author shows that the double-reed pipes held but

an insignificant place in the instrumental music of ancient Greece and Rome.

The instrument we call oboe appears for the first time in Sebastian Virdung's Musica getutscht und auszgezogen (1511). It there bears the name of schalmey, and is already combined with an instrument of similar construction called bombardt. This beginning of the oboe family suggests the possibility of Virdung's schalmey having existed in the Middle Ages. Where, when, and how it was introduced into western Europe is at present unknown, but the zamr-al- kebir still used in Moslem countries is practically identical with it, a circumstance which suggests the possibility of its having been brought into Europe by the crusaders. —

~~The manufacture of musical instruments could not remain unaffected by the great artistic movement known as the Renaissance ; accordingly, we find them not only improved and purified in form in the 16th century, but also ranged in complete families from the soprano to the bass. Pree- torius, in his Syntagma Musicum (1615-20), gives us the full nomenclature of the family with which we are con- cerned, composed of the following individuals.~~

~~(1) The little schalmey, he says, rarely employed ; it measured about 17 inches in length, and had six lateral~~

~~holes. Its deepest note was 6] (2)~~

~~The discant schalmey (fig. 1), the primitive type of the modern oboe; its length was about 26~~

~~inches, and its deepest note == (8)~~

~~The alto pommer (fig. 2), 304 inches long, with~~

~~its deepest note S2— . (4) The tenor pommer (fig. 3), measuring about 4 feet 4 inches; besides the six lateral holes of the preced- 7 ing numbers there were four keys which gave the grave —~~

~~notes Sa (5) The bass pommer, hav- ing a length of nearly 6 feet, and six lateral holes and four keys which gave @: =~~

~~SS + + (6) The great double quint pommer, measuring about 9 feet 8 inches in length;~~

~~the four keys permitted the production of the notes~~

~~=a These be se 3 instruments, and. especially numbers (2), (3), (4), and (5), occupied an important place on the Continent in the in- strumental combinations of the last three centuries. The following illustration (fig. 4), borrowed from a picture,~~

~~Fia. 1 Fie. 2. BIG S:~~

painted in 1610 by Van ee ee aie ait r- : . - The discan e alto he tenor Alsloot, represents six musi Schalmey. Pessoa: Sater,

cians playing the following instruments indicated in the order of their position in the picture : a bass oboe, bent over and become the bassoon, an alto pommer, a cornet (German ‘“‘zinke”’), a discant schalmey, a second alto pommer, and a trombone.?

The 17th century brought no great changes in the con- struction of the four smaller instruments of the family.

1 This picture, belonging to the National Museum of Madrid, repre- sents a procession of all the religious orders in the city of Antwerp on the festival of the Virgin of the Rosary.

? For further details see Mahillon’s catalogue of the Musée du Con- servatoire royal de musique de Bruxelles.

O i

Of much extended use in France, they were there called “haulx bois,” or “haultbois,” to distinguish them from the two larger instruments which were designated by the

ALSLOOT: [616 –

words “gros bois.” Haultbois became hautbois in French, and oboe in English, German, and Italian; and this word is now used to distinguish the present smaller instrument of the family.

The little schalmey and tenor pommer seem to have dis- appeared in the 17th century; it is the discant schalmey and the alto pommer which by improvement have become two important elements in modern instrumentation. The oboe, as such, was employed for the first time in 1671, in the orchestra of the Paris opera in Pomone by Cam-

bert. The first two keys, ., date from the end of the 17th century. In 1727 Gerhard Hoffmann of Ras-

~~tenberg added the keys oa t=], A Parisian maker,~~

~~Delusse, furnished, at the end of the 18th century, much appreciated improvements in the boring of the instrument. The Méthode of Sellner, published at Vienna in 1825,~~

~~allows nine keys, = = , and~~

~~one which, when opened, established a loop or ventral seg- ment of- vibration in the column of air, facilitating the production of sounds in the octave higher. Triebert of Paris owes his great reputation to the numerous improve- ments he introduced in the construction of the oboe.~~

~~The alto pommer became but slowly transformed : it was Oboe di called in French "hautbois de chasse," in Italian 'oboe caccia.~~

~~di caccia." In the 18th century we find it more elegant in form, but with all the defects of the primitive instru- ment. The idea of bending the instrument into a half circular form to facilitate the handling is attributed to an oboist of Bergamo, one Jean Perlendis, who was estab- lished at Strasburg about 1760. The fact of the instru- ment's resembling a kind of hunting-horn used at that time in England probably gained for it the name of "corno~~

~~inglese," which it still retains ("cor anglais" in French). Cor The first employment of it in the orchestra is referred to anglais.~~

~~Gluck, who had two "cors anglais " in his Alceste, as played at Vienna in 1767. But it was not until 1808 that the cor anglais was first heard in the Paris opera; it was played by the oboist Vogt in Alexandre chez Apelle by Catel. The improvements in manufacture of this instrument closely followed those introduced in the oboe. The 18th century produced an intermediate oboe between (2) and (3), which was called "hautbois d'amour," and was frequently employed by J.S. Bach. It wasa third lower than the ordinary oboe, and fell into disuse after the death of the great German composer. It has been resuscitated by the firm of C.~~

~~Fagott.~~

Bassoon.

OBOE

Mahillon of Brussels, and reconstructed with the improve- ments of modern manufacture.

After the 16th century we find the instruments which were designated by the name of "' gros bois," the (5) and (6) of Pre- torius, transformed into shorter instruments, the fagott and contra- fagott ; so called because the column of air, the same as in the pommer, was formed of two conical tubes which communicated with the lower part of the instrument, and were pierced in a single piece of wood. It is probably owing to the aspect of this double pipe that the satirical name of fagot was given, preserved in Italian as fagotto, and in German as fagott. A canon of Ferrara named Afranio has been cited as the author of the transformation, about 1539, of the bass pommer, but Count Valdrighi, the curator of the Estense library,! and Wasielewski,? who has reproduced the draw- ing of Afranio's invention, deprive him of the merit of the innova- tion. The fagottino is transformed in the same fashion.

Sigismund Scheitzer of Nuremberg acquired a great reputation in the 16th century for making the " basson," a French word sub- stituted for the old fagot, and adopted in England as bassoon. His

instrument had only two keys, We cannot tell

when the bassoon gained its present form, but it was probably at the end of the 17th century. It was made in exactly the same style as the fagottino represented in fig. 5. It appeared for the first time

Fic, 5.

—The Fagottino, at the beginning of the 17th century.

in the orchestra with the oboe in Pomone (1671). It had three keys

*then, a The BD key rendering a lengthening bw **

of the instrument necessary, we may suppose it took its modern

form at that epoch. The fourth key, — —¦ j, dates from

1751. The bassoon appears with four keys in the HIneyclopédie of Diderot and D'Alembert (Paris, 1751-65). The number of keys increased by the beginning of the present century to eight, viz.,

ge, and two keys to facilitate the pro- ad duction of acute harmonics. It has since been improved by Almen- rider in Germany, Savari, and more recently Triebert and Goumas, Paris, and C. Mahillon, Brussels,

The reform in the construction of the flute due to Theobald Boehm of Munich about 1840, a reform which principally consisted in the rational division of the tube by the position of the lateral holes, prompted Triebert to try to adapt the innovation to the oboes and bassoons; but he failed, because the application of it denaturalized the timbre of the instruments, which it was necessary, before all things, to preserve. But his efforts did not remain sterile. In 1856 a French bandmaster, M. Sarrus, thought out the construc- tion of a family of brass instruments with conical tubes pierced at regular distances, which, diminishing the length of the air column, has rendered a series of fundamental sounds easy,—more equal and free in timbre than that of the oboe family. Gautrot of Paris realized tle inventor's idea, and, under the name of "sarrusophones,"

has created a complete family, from the sopranino in ED to the con-

trabass in B>, of which his firm preserves the monopoly.

In 1868 the firm of C. Mahillon, Brussels, produced a reed con- trabass of metal, destined to replace the old contrabassoon of wood, since much used in orchestras and military bands. The first idea of this instrument goes back to 1839, and is attributed to Schéll- nast and Son of Pressburg. It is a conical brass tube of very large proportions, with lateral holes placed as theory demands, in geo- metrical relation, with a diameter almost equal to the section of the tube at the point where the hole is cut. From this it results that for each sound one key only is required, and the seventeen keys give the player almost the facility ofa keyboard. The com-

~~pass written for this contrabass is comprised between 4~~

~~Ce £ and aa but sounds an octave lower.~~

~~1 Musurgiana, IJ phagotus @ Afranio. 2 Geschichte der Instrumentalmusik im 16en Jahrhundert.~~

~~707~~

~~We now turn to another kind of reed and its association with Clarinet,~~

~~two kinds of cylindrical and conical pipes,—the beating reed, which is formed of a single tongue, and engenders vibrations in the column of air to which it is applied by the contact of the tongue with the frame of a groove to which it is adapted. The beating reed,~~

~~; though not having the extreme antiquity of the double reed,~~

was used at a very early period, for we find it applied to the chalumeaus of ancient Egypt, still in use under the name of arghoul, to the Greek auloi, and the Roman tibiw.? The beating reed is a piece of reed growth, closed at the upper end by the natural knot, beneath which a tongue is partly detached by a longitudinal slit. We do not see the probable operation of chance so clearly here as in the double reed. It may have been the inconvenience resulting from the employment of double-tongued reeds of large dimensions to make cylindrical pipes of a certain diameter speak that urged the invention of a more commodious substitute. With double auloi it would have been almost im- possible to blow two double reeds at one time, while, on the contrary, it is easy to sound two pipes furnished with beating reeds introduced simultaneously into the player's mouth. Such as these are the actual Egyptian arghoul and zummédrah. It is in the beating reed and cylindrical tube, a combination bequeathed to us by remote antiquity, that we find the principle of one of the leading instruments of the modern orchestra, the clarinet or clarionet.

The European chalumeau of the Middle Ages, in English '"shawm," differed but little from the ancient Egyptian chalumeau: its tube was of wood, and the upper part of the tube communicated with the bore by an opening made laterally and longitudinally, on the edges of which the reed-tongue was bound by repeated turns of string. Neither in the Middle Ages nor in the 16th century do we find the chalumeau much employed. Pretorius, who in his Theatrum instrumentorum has given exact drawings of the instru- ments he knew, does not cite the chalumeau. But there exists in the fine collection of the Liceo Musicale at Bologna a double chalu- meau of wood covered with leather, the make of which takes it back to the 16th century. Drawings of this instrument occur in the Encyclopédie of Diderot and D'Alembert, and in the Muzykaal Kunstwoordenboek of J. Verschure-Reynvaan (Amsterdam, 1795). The chalumeau was pierced with eight holes and with two keys, and produced the folloving series of fundamental sounds —

0 12 8 4 5 6 7 8 key key

The present writer has had the good fortune to find quite re- cently two examples in the National Museum at Munich, and has been kindly

~~authorized by Herr von Hefner-Alteneck, director of the museum, to reproduce them for the museum of the conserva- toire at Brussels. For one of these see fig. 6. It is from this reproduction that he has been enabled to deterinine the exact nature of the improvement of the chalumeau, about 1690, by Christopher Denner of Nuremberg, an improvement which has gained for him the reputation of having invented the clarinet. Every clarinet player knows. that it is sufficient for one of the upper keys not to we close the hole for it to produce, instead of the fundamental sound, the interval of the twelfth above it,—in other words, the second partial. This phenomenon is easily explained: the communication between the external air and the upper part of the air-column in the instrument forms a ventral segment or loop of vibration and forces the column to divide, and, as a cylindrical pipe affected by a reed sounds harmonically after the manner of stopped pipes, the possible par- tial after the fundamental is naturally the second. 'This pheno- menon must have struck Denner, and have suggested to him the idea of obtaining the same result according to a regular manner and at the will of the executant. He arrived at it by raising a little the key governed by the thumb of the left hand, which~~

~~when opened conjointly with the A key produced the BD of the chalumeau. This change of position of the key did not hinder the production of the Bb, but doubled at one stroke the extent of compass of the instrument in giving it the following notes—~~

~~Fic. 6.—The Chalumeau.~~

~~eee eS Ss == This was Denner's in- 012 8 45 67 8&key~~

~~vention; he did not invent the clarinet, but he was the first to make use of the artifice already referred to which permits instru- ments of cylindrical bore to produce fundamental sounds and their twelfths.~~

~~3 FP. A. Gevaert, Histoire de la musique dans [antiquité.~~

~~Basset horn.~~

~~Clarinet d'amour~~

Saxo- phone.

708. O'BR—OBS

About the middle of last century the clarinet was lengthened

and a key was added, =| which filled the vacant space

oe between the two registers. Two new keys were also added,

| oe it is said, by Barthold Fritz of Brunswick (0d. io te

Fic. 7.—The Clarinet.

1766). The sixth key, = — c=] is attributed to the clarinetist

Lefebvre, Paris, about 1791. In 1810 Ivan Muller carried the num- ber of keys up to thirteen, in which state the instrument has come to us, and is the system most employed. It has been improved by the Belgian makers, Bachmann, the elder Sax, C. Mahillon, and Albert, who have collectively established the reputation of Belgian clarinets. In Paris, Lefebvre, Buffet-Crampon, and his successor Goumas—in London, Rudall, Bose, and Carte, justly own a high position among famous clarinet-makers. 'The firm of C. Mahillon, Brussels, have in-

vented the mechanism with double effect known by the name of OF key. Invented in 1862, itis now universally adopted. In 1842 the Parisian maker Buffet, advised by a professor named Klosé, adopted from Boehm's flute the invention of movable rings. HIs clarinet has consequently been ranked as of Boehm's system, although the lateral division of the tube does not follow that which that clever maker applied to his flute. The clarinet was first employed in a theatre in 1751, in the pastoral by Rameau entitled Acante et Céphise. The imperfections of the instrument at that time obliged them to be made in nearly every key. To avoid the burden of this the 18th-century players varied the key of their instruments by added joints. About the middle of the 18th century the clarinet was introduced in military music and by degrees sup- planted the oboe. The instruments used at first were in C and F. About 1815 they were replaced by the BD and Eb clarinets. Besides

~~*the high clarinets, the basset horn (Italian, corno di bas- setto) was soon known in Germany ; a clarinet in F with the grave*~~

~~*fifth of the one in C, it was made to descend easily to =*~~

~~*a with the help of supplementary keys, and to diminish the length of the tube it was bent back upon itself in the part nearest to the bell, —the curve being enclosed in a kind of box which concealed the artifice. The invention of the basset horn is attributed toa Bavarian maker at Passau, who was living about 1770, but whose name is now unknown. Obtaining the improvements given to it by Theodore Lotz of Pressburg in 1782, and Ivan Muller in 1812, and those of contemporary makers, the basset horn has become the*~~

~~*beautiful alto clarinet which is generally used in the key of Eb.*~~

~~*It would appear that the first idea of the bass clarinet emanated from Henri Greuser of Dresden, who made the first one in 1793. It was not used in the orchestra until 1836, when Meyerbeer made magnificent employment of it in the Huguenots.*~~

~~*The almost forgotten clarinet d'amour was made in G and F, the fourth and fifth below the clarinet in C. It differed from other clarinets in the bell, which, retracted in the lower part, affected ae pear-shaped contour that distinguishes the modern cor anglais.*~~

~~*A few words remain to be said about the combination of the beating reed with a conical tube, which goes no farther back than the beginning of this century. A fagottino in F, called " dolcino," was at that time used, the air-column of which was more decidedly*~~

~~*conical than that of the fagottino properly so called. The double reed was replaced in it by a beating reed attached to a mouthpiece like that of the clarinet but smaller. This instrument seems not to have had success. But the most important combination of beating reed and conical tube was accomplished in 1846 by Adolphe Sax, a Belgian established in Paris, who invented the family of saxophones. This instrument is a brass tube pierced to produce the following*~~

~~Oe Se~~

~~Poy S495 O- F S$ MO Ag 18, Ae aS In virtue of the principle previously explained, the saxophone 'foctaves," and, setting out from the fourth fundamental, each note can be reproduced in the next upper octave by the help of two keys successively employed, which, by opening, form a loop. Four more keys disposed at the upper end permit the production of~~

~~2 te 2 &~~

~~= which completes the compass of the saxo- phone. Four instruments of the saxophone family are now used, viz., the soprano in Bb, a major second below the note written ; the alto in ED, a fifth below the soprano ; the tenor in BD, an octave~~

~~below the soprano ; and the baritone in ED, an octave below the alto. These instruments fill an important place in the military music of France and Belgium. The brilliant success which Ambroise Thomas has achieved by using the beautiful tone of the alto saxo- phone in the ghost scene in Hamlet is well known. CV; M,): 2~~

~~O'BRIEN, Witt1am SmirH (1803-1864), the head of the 'Young Ireland" party, was born on 17th October 1803, and received his education at Harrow and at Cam- bridge. HIe entered parliament in 1826 as member for Ennis, and from 1835 to 1848 represented the county of Limerick. Although he spoke in 1828 in favour of Catholic emancipation, he for many years continued to differ on other points from the general policy of O'Connell. HIe, however, opposed the Irish Arms Act of 1843, and in January 1844 became an active member of the Repeal Association. Though he was destitute of oratorical gifts, his chivalrous devotion to the welfare of his country secured him enthusiastic attachment as a popular leader. In July 1846 he with the "Young Ireland" party left the Repeal Association, and in the beginning of 1847 he established the Irish Confederation. The French Revolution of 1848 stimulated his hopes of success, and incited him to more extreme efforts against the English rule. In May 1848 he was tried at Dublin for sedition, but the jury disagreed. In the following July he established a war directory, and attempted to make a rising among the peasantry of Ballin- garry, but although he was at first joined by a large~~

~~following the movement wanted cohesion, and the vacil- lating crowd dispersed as soon as news reached them of the approach of the dragoons. O'Brien was arrested at Thurles, tried, and sentenced to death. The sentence was commuted to transportation for life. In July 1854 he received his liberty on condition of never revisiting the United King- dom ; and in May 1856 he obtained a full pardon. Hence- forth he kept aloof from all political movements. In 1856 he published Principles of Government, or Meditations in Exile. He died at Bangor, North Wales, 18th June~~

~~1864~~,

~~OBSERVATORY~~

~~P to a comparatively recent date an "observatory" was a place exclusively devoted to the taking of astronomical observations, although frequently a rough account of the weather was kept. When the progress of terrestrial magnetism and meteorology began to make regular observations necessary, the duty of taking these was often thrown on astronomical observatories, although in some cases separate institutions were created for the purpose. Of late years, as the work to be done in astro-~~

~~nomical observatories is increasing, there seems to be a general tendency to have the magnetical and meteoro- logical observations taken in separate establishments ; but, as the exclusively magnetical or meteorological observa- tories now existing are generally very small institutions and of recent creation, the astronomical observatories will be chiefly considered in this article.~~

~~Up to about 300 B.c. it can scarcely be said that an observatory existed anywhere, as the crude observations~~

~~Or SHR VY ATO RY~~

~~of the heavens then taken were only made by individuals and at intervals, employing the simplest possible appara- tuses. But, when philosophical speculation had exhausted its resources, and an accumulation of facts was found to be necessary before the knowledge of the construction of the universe could advance farther, the first observatory was founded at~~

Alexandria, and continued in activity for about four hundred years, or until the middle or end of the 2d century of the Christian era. It was here that Hipparchus, the founder of modern astronomy, by repeat- ing observations made by his predecessors, discovered the precession of the equinoxes, and investigated with consi- derable success the motions of the sun, moon, and planets. His work was continued by more or less distinguished astronomers, until Ptolemy (in the 2d century 4.p.) gave the astronomy of Alexandria its final development. When science again began to be cultivated after the dark ages which followed, we find several observatories founded by Arabian princes; first one at Baghdad (and possibly one at Damascus), built by the caliph Al-Mamun early in the 9th century, then one on the Mokattam near Cairo, built for Ibn Yunis by the caliph Hakim (about 1000 s.p.), where the Hakimite tables of the sun, moon, and planets were constructed. The Mongol khans followed the ex- ample; thus arose the splendid observatory at Merdgha in the north-west of Persia, founded about 1260 a.p. by Hulagu Khan, where Nasir al-din Tusi constructed the Ilohkhanic tables; and in the 15th century the observa- tory at Samarkand was founded by Ulug Begh, and served not only in the construction of new planetary tables but also in the formation of a new catalogue of stars.

With the commencement of scientific studies in Europe in the 15th century the necessity of astronomical ob- servations became at once felt, as they afforded the only hope of improving the theory of the motions of the celestial bodies. Although astronomy was taught in all univer- sities, the taking of observations was for two hundred years left to private individuals. The first observatory in Europe was erected at Nuremberg in 1472 by a wealthy citizen, Bernhard Walther, who for some years enjoyed the co-operation of the celebrated astronomer Regiomontanus. At this observatory, where the work was continued till the founder's death in 1504, many new methods of observing were invented, so that the revival of practical astronomy may be dated from its foundation. The two celebrated observatories of the 16th century, Tycho Brahe's on the Danish island of Huen (in activity from 1576 to 1597) and that of Landgrave William IV. at Cassel (1561-97), made a complete revolution in the art of observing. While the credit of having vastly improved the astronomical in- struments perhaps should be divided equally between Tycho Brahe and the landgrave's astronomer Biirgi, the former may claim the honour of having been the first

to see the necessity of carrying on for a number of years an extensive and carefully-planned series of observations with various instruments, worked by himself and a staff of assistants. In this respect his observatory (Uraniburgum) resembles our modern larger institutions more closely than do many observatories of much more recent date. The mighty impulse which Tycho Brahe gave to practical astro- nomy at last installed this science at the universities, among which those of Leyden and Copenhagen were the first to found observatories. We still find a large private observa- tory in the middle of the 17th century, that of Johannes Hevelius at Dantzic, but the foundation of the royal observatories at Paris and Greenwich and of numerous university observatories shows how rapidly the importance of observations had become recognized by governments and public bodies, and it is not until within the last hundred years that the development of various new branches of

astronomy has enabled private observers to compete with public institutions.

The instruments employed in observatories have of course changed considerably during the last two hundred years. When the first royal observatories were founded, the principal instruments were the mural quadrant for measuring meridian zenith distances of stars, and the sextant for measuring distances of stars inter se, with a view of determining their difference of right ascension by a simple calculation. These instruments were intro- duced by Tycho Brahe, but were subsequently much im- proved by the addition of telescopes and micrometers. When the law of gravitation was discovered it became necessary to test the correctness of the theoretical con-

clusions drawn from it as to the motions within the solar

system, and this necessarily added to the importance of observations. By degrees, as theory progressed, it made greater demands for the accuracy of observations, and accordingly the instruments had to be improved. The transit instrument superseded the sextant and offered the advantage of furnishing the difference of right ascension directly ; the clocks and

~~chronometers were greatly im- proved ; and lastly astronomers began early in the 19th century to treat their instruments, not as faultless appara- tuses but as imperfect ones, whose errors of construction had to be detected, studied, and taken into account before the results of observations could be used to test the theory. This century has also witnessed the combination of the transit instrument and the mural quadrant or circle in one instrument,—the transit or meridian circle.~~

~~While the necessity of following the sun, moon, and planets as regularly as possible increased the daily work of observatories, other branches of astronomy were opened and demanded other observations. Hitherto observations of the "fixed stars" had been supposed to be of little importance beyond fixing points of comparison for obser- vations of the movable bodies. But when many of the fixed stars were found to be endowed with "proper motion," it became necessary to include them among the objects of constant attention, and in their turn the hitherto totally neglected telescopic stars had to be observed with precision, when they were required as comparison stars for comets or minor planets. Thus the field of work for meridian instru- ments became very considerably enlarged.~~

~~In addition to this, the increase of optical power of tele- scopes revealed hitherto unknown objects—double stars and nebulze—and brought the study of the physical con- stitution of the heavenly bodies within the range of obser- vatory work. Researches connected with these matters were, however, for a number of years cliiefly left to amateur observers, and it is only within the last fifty years that many public observatories have taken up this kind of work. The application of spectrum analysis, photo- graphy, photometry, &c., in astronomy has still more increased the number and variety of observations to be made, so that it has now become necessary for most observatories to devote themselves to one or two special fields of work.~~

~~It would be difficult to arrange the existing observatories into classes either according to the work pursued in them or their organization, as the work in many cases at different times has been directed to different objects, while the organization depends mostly on national and local circum- stances. As already alluded to above, one of the principal characteristics of the larger~~

observatories of the present day is the distribution of the work among a number of assistants under the general superintendence of a director. This applies principally to the great observatories, where the sun, moon, planets, and a limited number of fixed stars are without interruption being observed, but even among

these institutions hardly two are conducted on the same principles. Thus in Greenwich the instruments and ob- servations are all treated according to strict rules laid down by the astronomer-royal, while in Washington or Pulkowa each astronomer has to a certain extent his choice as to the treatment of the instrument and arrangement of the observations. The same is the case with the smaller institutions, in most of which these arrangements vary very much with change of personnel.

The way in which the results of observations are pub- lished depends principally on the size of the institutions. The larger observatories issue their " Annals " or " Observa- tions " as separate periodically-published volumes, while the smaller ones chiefly depend on scientific journals to lay their results before the public, naturally less fully as to details. Among these journals the principal are :—Berliner Astronomisches Jahrbuch (for the years 1776 to 1829), Monatliche Correspondenz (edited by Von Zach, 28 vols., 1800-13), Astronomische Nachrichten (founded 1821; 107 vols. in 4to, still appearing with two vols. per annum), Memoirs of the Royal Astronomical Society (47 vols. 4to, from 1822), and Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society (44 vols. 8vo, from 1827).

Subjoined is a catalogue of public and private observa- tories now in activity or which have existed within the last hundred years.

Great BRITAIN AND IRELAND.

A. Public Observatories.

Greenwich, royal observatory, lat. + 51° 28' 38"°4. Founded in 1675 for the promotion of astronomy and navigation. The observations have therefore from the first been principally intended to determine the positions

of standard stars, the sun and planets, and above all to follow the motion of the moon with as little interruption as possible, both on and outside the meridian. Since 1873 spectro- scopic observations and a daily photographic record of sun-spots have been taken. The observatory is under the direction of the astronomer-royal ; and from the time of its first astronomer, F'lam- steed, the institution has always maintained its place in the fore- most rank of observatories. Thus the observations of Bradley (0d. 1762) form the foundation of modern stellar astronomy ; but it was especially during the directorship of Airy (1835-81) that the observa- tory rose to its present high state of efficiency. There are now a chief assistant, eight assistants, and a staff of computers employed. The principal instruments now in use are :—a meridian circle by Simms (and Ransomes and May as engineers), erected in 1850, having a circle of 6-feet diameter and a telescope of 8-inches aperture ; a large chronograph (1854) ; an altazimuth by Simms and Ransomes and May, for observations of the moon, erected in 1847, with 3- feet circles and 4-inch telescope ; an equatorial refractor by the same makers (O.G. 12°8 inches, by Merz), mounted in the " English" manner with long polar axis, chiefly used for spectroscopic work ; photoheliograph by Dallmeyer of 4-inches aperture, smaller equatorials, clocks, &c. The standard '"'motor clock" is the centre of a system of electrically-controlled clocks scattered over many provincial towns in the three kingdoms. The magnetical and meteorological department was founded in 1888 ; it contains a complete set of instruments giving continuous photographic records of magnetic declination, horizontal and vertical force, barometric pressure, dry and wet bulb thermometers, &c. The Observations are published with all details from 1750, beginning with 1836 in annual bulky 4to volumes; special results—e.g., five Star Catalogues, Neduetions of Lunar and Planetary Observations—are published in separate volumes.

Oxford, Radcliffe Observatory, lat. + 51° 45' 36-0, long. 025™ 25-6 W. Founded in 1771 by the Radcliffe trustees at the instance of Pro- fessor Hornsby. Observations were regularly made, but none were published until Manuel J. Johnson was appointed Radcliffe observer in 1839, when systematic observations were commenced with an 8-feet transit instrument by Bird (1773) and a 6-feet mural circle by Jones (1836). Johnson was succeeded in 1860 by Rev. R. Main, who died in 1878, and was followed in

~~1879 by E. J. Stone. Helio- meter (74 inch) by Repsold (1849) ; meridian circle by Troughton and Simms, mounted in 1861, formerly belonging to Mr Carrington, self-recording meteorological instruments. The staff now consists of three assistants. Besides the annual 8vo volumes of Observations (from 1840), two catalogues of respectively 6317 and 2386 stars, chiefly circumpolar (1860 and 1870) have been published.~~

~~Oxford, university observatory, lat. + 51° 45’ 342, long. 0h5™ 0s4W. Finished in 1875; is under the Savilian professor of astronomy ;~~

~~CBSE RVaA POR F~~

~~there are two assistants. 124-inch equatorial refractor by Grubb, and a 13-inch reflector made and presented by Mr De La Rue. The former is used for micrometer work (chiefly on clusters of stars) and photometric observations ; the latter for taking lunar photo- graphs, by means of which the director, Professor Pritchard, has investigated the libration of the moon. No. 1 of Astronomical Observations (8vo) was published in 1878.~~

~~Cambridge, lat. + 52° 12’ 51”°6, long. 02 Om 228°8 E. Founded by the’university senate in 1820. Directors: G. 3B. Airy, 1828 to 1835; J. Challis, to 1861; J. C. Adams. Chiefly devoted to meridian work,—up to 1870 with a 5-inch transit by Dollond and a mural circle by Jones; a new meridian circle by Simms, of 8-inches aperture and 8-feet circles, was then erected, and is being used for determining the places of all the stars down to 9°0 mag. between + 25° and + 380° decl. The “Northumberland equatorial” was mounted in the “ English” fashion in 1838; the object-glass by Cauchoix is of 114-inches-aperture and 19-feet focal length. The Observations from 1828 to 1865 are published in 21 4to volumes.~~

~~Durham, lat. + 54° 46’ 6-2, long. 02 6™ 198-8 W. Founded in 1841, principally by private subscription; is under the direction of the professor of mathematics and astronomy in the university. There is a small meridian circle by Simms, and an equatorial refractor by Fraunhofer of 64-inches aperture, with which minor planets, comets, and double stars have been observed. The results from the years 1846-52 have been published in 2 8vo volumes.~~

Liverpool (Bidston near Birkenhead), lat. + 58° 24' 4", long. Oh 12m 178-2 W. Founded in 1838 by the municipal council ; transferred in 1856 to the Docks and Harbour Board ; moved to Birkenhead in 1867. Specially intended for testing the rates of chronometers under different temperatures. Transit instrument by Troughton and Simms, and an 8-inch equatorial by Merz.

Kew (Richmond), lat. + 51° 28' 6", long. 02 1™ 1581 W. The central meteorological observatory of the United Kingdom, with self-registering meteorological and magnetical instruments. Estab- lished in 1842 under the auspices of the British Association, after- wards transferred to the Royal Society. A photoheliograph was employed at Mr De La Rue's expense to take daily sun-pictures from 1863 to 1872.

Edinburgh, voyal observatory, lat. + 55° 57' 2372, long. 0b 12m 438-0 W. Founded in 1811 by subscription ; the building on the Calton Hill erected in 1818. In 1834 the founders handed over the administration to the Government, and in 1846 the owner- ship was similarly transferred. Since 1834 the observatory has been under the direction of the astronomer-royal for Scotland, who is also professor of practical astronomy in the university ; there are two assistants. Professor T. Henderson (1833 to 1845) commenced extensive meridian observations of fixed stars, since continued by his successor, C. Piazzi Smyth. The mural circle of 6-feet diameter and 8-feet transit are now out of date. A reflector of 2-feet aperture by Grubb (silver on glass) was erected in 1872, but, has never been

uite finished nor come into use. Observations with deep-soil thermometers have been carried on since 1837, and delicate spectro- scopic investigations made by the present astronomer, partly abroad. Observations and results have been published in 14 4to volumes,

Glasgow, lat. + 55° 52' 42"°8, long. 0b 17™ 108°6 W. Organ- ized in 1840 by subscription, aided by subsidies from the university and the state ; is under the professor of astronomy. Meridian circle by Ertel with 42-inch circles, and telescope of 6-inches aper- ture ; equatorial of 9-inches aperture. A catalogue of 6415 stars from meridian observations made since 1860 was published in 1883 by the present director, R. Grant. The

~~observatory was (1868-83) one of the seven first-class meteorological stations.~~

~~Dublin, situated about 4 miles north-west of Dublin at Dunsink, lat. + 58° 23' 13"°0, long. 0b 25™ 218 W. Belongs to the univer- sity ; erected in 1785; is under the direction of the " Andrews professor of astronomy and royal astronomer of Ireland." There is one assistant. In 1808 a reversible meridian circle by Ramsden and Berge of 8-feet diameter was put up, with which Brinkley observed assiduously till 1827, though of his results those relating to stellar parallax were affected by certain instrumental errors which rendered them of novalue. Sir W. R. Hamilton (1827-65) devoted himself exclusively to mathematics. In 1868 was crected an equatorial refractor, object-glass of 11$-inches aperture by Cauchoix (formerly belonging to and given by Sir J. South), which has been used by Briinnow and his successor R. S. Ball (since 1874) for researches on stellar parallax. A meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 6°4-inches aperture was mounted in 1873 and a large chronograph in 1882; they are used for observing stars possessing special interest (red stars, stars with proper motion, &c.). Astro- nomical Observations and Researches made at Dunsink, parts 1-5, 4to, 1870-84.~~

~~Armagh, lat. + 54° 21' 12°7, long. 02 26™ 358-5 W. Founded and endowed by Archbishop Robinson in 1791. Possessed very few instruments until the observatory was enlarged by Archbishop Lord John Beresford in 1827, when a mural circle and a transit by Jones were provided, with which T. R. Robinson (director from 1823 to 1882) observed the stars contained in the catalogue of 5345~~

~~Oma ky ATO R Y~~

~~stars published in 1859. With the mural circle, to which had been added a 7-inch telescope by T. Grubb (in 1862), about 3000 stars have been observed since 1864, and these are now (1884) ready for press. There is also a 15-inch reflector. Armagh was (1868-83) one of the seven first-class meteorological observatories.~~

~~Cork, observatory of Queen's College, lat. + 51° 58' 30", long. 0b 33m 58s W. Erected in 1878 at the expense of Mr Crawford of Cork ; 8-inch~~

~~refractor, 4-inch siderostat and transit circle, by Grubb. Managed by the professor of natural philosophy.~~

~~B. Private Observatories now existing.~~

~~Mr J. G. Barclay's observatory, Leyton, Essex, lat. + 51° 34' 34", long. 02 0™ 08-9 W. In activity since 1862 ; 10-inch refractor by Cooke; chiefly devoted to double stars ; small transit circle. Four parts of Observations have been published (4to, 1863-77).~~

~~Mr A. A. Common's observatory, Ealing, London, W. Silvered- glass reficctor of 36-inches aperture (mirror by Calver, mounting by the owner), erected in 1879; chiefly used for celestial photo- graphy. Also 18-inch silvered-glass reflector erected in 1876.~~

~~Colonel Cooper's observatory, Markree Castle, Sligo, lreland, lat. 54° 10' 31"°8, long. Oh 33m 484 W. Founded by the late E. J. Cooper, who in 1834 erected an equatorial refractor of 13°3-inches aperture (glass by Cauchoix). In addition to numerous other observations this instrument was from 1848 to 1856 used for determining the approximate places of 60,000 stars near the ecliptic (Markree Catalogue, 4 vols. 8vo, 1852-56). The obser- vatory was restored in 1874, and the refractor has since been used for double-star observations. Therc is also a transit circle by Ertel.~~

~~Earl of Crawford's observatory, Dun Eclit, Aberdeenshire, lat. + 57° 9' 36", long. 02 9m 40s W. Founded in 1872; is one of the best-equipped observatories existing; has 15-inch equatorial refractor by Grubb, large chronograph (driven by same clock as the refractor), 12-inch silvered reflector by Browning, two 6-inch and several smaller refractors, meridian circle by Simms similar to the one at Cambridge, numerous spectroscopes and minor in- struments, also a large library, and a collection of physical instru- ments. Cometary and spectroscopic observations and reduction of the observations made by the Venus expedition to Mauritius in 1874 have hitherto principally occupied the staff. Three 4to volumes of Publications and very frequent Dun Eeht Circulars, distributing news of discoveries (chiefly relating to comets), have been issued.~~

~~*Mr E. Crossley's observatory, Bermerside, Halifax, Yorkshire. Equatorial refractor by Cooke of 9°3-inches aperture, crected in 1871, chiefly used for observations of double stars.*~~

~~*Dr W. Huggins's observatory, Upper Tulsc Hill, London, lat. +51° 26' 47", long. 02 0™ 278-7 W. Founded in 1856; furnished with an 8-inch refractor (glass by Clark, mounting by Cooke). In 1870 was erected an equatorial mounting which could carry either a 15-inch refractor or a Cassegrain reflector of 18-inches aperture, both made by Grubb for the Royal Society ; mounting improved in 1882 to carry both instruments simultaneously. With these Dr Huggins has made his well-known spectroscopic observations and photographs of stellar spectra, the solar corona, &c., the results being published from time to time in the Philosophical Trans- actions.*~~

~~*Mr G. Knott's observatory, Cuckfield, Sussex (from 1860 to 1873 at Woodcroft, lat. + 51° 0' 41", long. 0h 0™ 34s W., sinee then at 'Knowles Lodge, Cuckfield). 7°3-inch refractor by Clark, used for observing double stars and variable stars,*~~

~~*Mr kh. S. Newall's observatory, Gateshead, Newcastle-on-Tyne. A refractor of 25-inches aperture by Cooke was mounted in 1870, but appears to have been little used.*~~

~~*Earl of Rosse's observatory, Birr Castle, King's county, Ireland, lat. + 58° 5' 47", long. 0b 31™ 408-9 W. In 1839 the late carl made and mounted a reficctor of 3-feet aperture (remounted as equatorial in 1876), and in 1845 he completed the celebrated reflector of 6-feet aperture and 54-feet focal length. These instruments, particularly the latter, were used from 1848 to 1878 for observations of nebule, and revealed many new features in these bodies ; results published in the Phil. Trans. for 1844, 1850, 1861, 1868, and collected systema- tically in the Z'rans. Roy. Dubl. Soe., 1879-80. Experiments were made by the present earl to determine the amount of heat radiated from the moon (Phil. T'rans., 1873).*~~

~~*Rugby School (Temple Observatory). Founded in 1872 in memory of the bishop of Exeter ; with 84-inch equatorial refractor by Clark, used for observations of double stars and of stellar spectra.*~~

Stonyhurst College observatory, Lancashire, lat. + 58° 50’ 40”, long. 0 9™ 528-7 W. An 8-inch equatorial refractor by Troughton and Simms, mounted in 1867, used for spectroscopic and micrometric observations; a complete set of self-recording magnetic instruments. From 1868 to 1888 the observatory was one of the seven first-class meteorological stations. ;

Colonel Tomline’s observatory, at Orwell Park, Ipswich, lat. + 52°0' 33”, long. 0b 4™ 558-8 E. Founded in 1874; hasa 10-inch refractor by Merz, used for observations of comcts.

711

Owing to the limited space at our disposal we are obliged to pass over several smaller private observatories,

C. Private Observatories now discontinued.

Mr Bishop’s observatory, South Villa, Regent’s Park, London, lat. + 51° 31’ 29”°9, long. 02 0™ 378-1 W. In activity from 1836 to 1861, then removed to Twickenham, and discontinued in 1874 ; has a 7-inch refractor by Dollond, with which Mr Hind discovered ten minor plariets and several comets, and constructed maps of stars near the ecliptic.

Mr R. C. Carrington’s observatory, Redhill, lat. + 51° 14’ 25”3, long. 02 0™ 4183 W. Lstablished in 1854; hasa 44-inch refractor, and transit circle of 5-inch aperture (now at Radcliffe Observa- tory). With the latter a catalogue of the positions of 3735 stars within 9° of the pole, with the former regular observations of sun- spots, were made from 1853 to 1861.

Rev. W. R. Dawes’s observatory, first at Ormskirk (1830-39), lat. + 53° 34’ 18”, long. 0b 11™ 368 W. ; afterwards at Cranbrook, Kent (1844-50), lat. + 51° 6’ 31’, long. 02 2™ 108-8 E. ; then at Wateringbury, near Maidstone, lat. + 51° 15’ 12”, long. 02 1™ 395°8 E., till 1857 ; and finally at Hopefield, Haddenham, lat. + 51° 45’ 54”, long. 0 3™ 438-4 W., till Mr Dawes’s death in 1868. Possessed at first only small instruments, then successively a 6-inch refractor by Merz, a 74-inch and an 8}-inch refractor by Clark, and an 8-inch refractor by Cooke, with all of which a great many

~~*measures of double stars were made, which were published in the Afemoirs of the Royal Astronomical Society.*~~

~~*Mr De La Rue's observatory,Cranford, Middlesex, lat. + 51°28' 578, long. 08 1™ 378-5 W. Established in 1857; with 13-inch reflector, de- voted to solar and lunar photography. The Kew photoheliograph was employed here from 1858 to 1863 to take daily photographs of the sun, The reflector was presented to the Oxford observatory in 1874.*~~

~~*Mr Isaae Fletcher's observatory, Tarnbank, Cumberland, lat. + 54° 39' 13"°7, long. 0h 18m 448-5 W. Established in 1847; in 1859 a 93-inch refractor by Cooke was mounted and used for observing double stars.*~~

~~*Mr Groombridge's observatory, Blackheath, lat. + 51° 28' 2"°7, long. 02 0™ 08-6 EK. In 1806 Mr Groombridge obtained a new transit circle of 4-feet diameter by Troughton, with which he up to 1816 observed stars within 50° of the pole. The resulting catalogue of 4243 stars was published in 1838.*~~

~~*Sir William and Sir John Hersehel's observatory at Slough near Windsor, lat. + 51° 30' 20', long. 0b 2m 24s W. William Herschel settled at Datchet in 1782, and at Slough in 1786, and erected several 20-feet reflectors (of 18-inches aperture), and in 1789 his 40-feet reflector of 4-feet aperture. The latter was comparatively little used (two satellites of Saturn were discovered with it), while the former served to discover about 2500 nebule and clusters, 800 double stars, and two satellites.of Uranus, as also to make the innumerable other observations which have made the name of Herschel so celebrated. Sir J. Herschel used a 20-feet reficctor at Slough from 1825 to 1833, and from 1834 to 1838 at the Cape of Good Hope, to examine the nebule and double stars of the whole of the visible heavens, discovering 2100 new nebule and 5500 new double stars.*~~

~~*fev. T. J. Hussey's observatory, Hayes, Kent, lat. + 51° 22' 38", long. 02 0™ 38-6 E. In activity from about 1825 for about twelve years ; 63-inch refractor by Fraunhofer, used for making one of the star maps published by the Berlin Academy, also small transit circle by Simms.*~~

~~Mr Lassell's observatory, from about 1820 to 1861 at Starfield near Liverpool, lat. + 58° 25' 28', long. 0b 11™ 38-7 W.; contained reflectors of 9 and 24 inches aperture; employed for observations of the satellites of Saturn, Uranus, and Neptune, and of nebule. The 2-feet reflector was used at Malta in 1852-58, and a 4-feet reflector was mounted in 1861, also at Malta, and used till 1864 for observa- tions of satellites and nebule. The eighth satellite of Saturn, the two inner satellites of Uranus, and the satellite of Neptune were discovered at Starfield by Mr Lassell.~~

~~Dr Lee's observatory, Hartwell, Bucks, lat. + 51° 48' 36", long. 0b 3m 248-3 W. In 1836 Dr Lee came into possession of Captain Smyth's 6-inch refractor, and mounted it at Hartwell House, where it continued to be occasionally employed for double-star observa- tions and other work up to about 1864.~~

~~Captain Smyth's observatory, Bedford, lat. + 52° 8' 27'-6, long. ob 1m 5250 W. In 1830 Captain (afterwards Admiral) Smyth erected a 6-inch refractor by Tulley, and observed the double stars and nebuls contained in his " Bedford Catalogue" (1844), forming vol. ii. of his Cyele of Celestial Objects.~~

~~Sir James South's observatory, from 1816 to 1824 at Blackman Street, Southwark, long. 02 0™ 218-8 W. Here South took transit observations of the sun, and he and J. Herschel measured double stars, in 1821-23. In 1826 South erected an observatory at Camp- den Hill, Kensington, lat. + 51° 30' 12", long. 0h 0™ 468:8 W., and procured a 12-inch objcct-glass from Cauchoix. As Troughton, however, failed to make a satisfactory mounting, the glass was~~

~~712 ORSrt RV ATOR ®~~

~~never used until after it had been presented to Dublin university in 1862.~~

~~Lord Wrottesley's observatory, from 1829 to 1841 at Blackheath, lat. + 51° 28' 2", long. 02 0m 28-7 E., where a catalogue of the right ascensions of 1818 stars was formed from observations with a transit instrument by Jones. In 1842 a new observatory was built at Wrottesley Hall, lat. + 52° 37' 2'°3, long. Ob 8m 538°6 W., where the transit and a 73-inch refractor~~

~~by Dollond were mounted. Observations were here made of double stars, and for testing J. Herschel's method of finding the annual parallax of stars.~~

~~FRANCE.~~

~~Paris, national observatory, lat. + 48° 50' 11"-8, long. 02 9™ 208°9 E. Founded in 1667, when the construction of a large and monu- mental building was commenced by the architect Perrault. J. D. Cassini's observations made the institution for some time the most celebrated observatory existing, but later the activity declined, although several eminent men, as Bouvard and Arago, have held the post of director. Since 1854, when Leverrier assumed the directorship, the observations have been conducted with more regu- larity, and, together with a number of most important theoretical works, published in the Annals (35 volumes of Observations, 16 of Memoirs). The observations are now chiefly taken in order to re- determine the positions of Lalande's 50,000 stars. The principal instruments now in use are:—a meridian circle by Secretan and Kichens, with an object-glass of 9°5-inches aperture and 12-feet focal length, another by Eichens (given by M. Bischoffsheim) of 7°5-inches aperture and 7-feet focal length, a 15-inch equatorial refractor by Lerebours and Briinner, a 12-inch equatorial refractor by Secretan and Eichens, two refractors of 9°5-inches aperture, &c. A refractor of 29-inches aperture by Martin is being mounted. A silvered glass reflector of 4-feet aperture was mounted in 1875, but has never been used. Thc meteorological bureau was after Leverrier's death (1877) separated from the observatory.~~

~~In addition to this national observatory there were during the latter half of last century several minor observatories in Paris, which only lasted for some years. Among these were the observa- tory at Collége Mazarin, lat. + 48° 51' 29", where Lacaille observed from 1746 to 1750, and from 1754 to 1762, and the observatory at the Keole Militaire, lat. + 48° 51' 5", built in 1768 and furnished with an 8-feet mural quadrant by Bird, with which D'Agelet observed telescopic stars (1782-85), and which was afterwards (1789- 1801), under Lalande's direction, employed for observing more than 50,000 stars, published in the Histoire Céleste (1801).~~

~~Meudon, close to Paris. Founded in 1875; devoted to physical astronomy, and especially to celestial photography, under the direc- tion of J. Janssen.~~

Montsouris, situated in the Montsouris Park, south of Paris, lat. + 48° 49' 18", long. 0h 9m 205-7 E. Founded in 1875 for the train- ing of naval officers.

Lyons, old observatory in lat. 45° 45' 46", long. 02 19™ 18° E., at the Jesuit college. A new observatory was erected in 1877 at St Génis-Laval, at some distance from the city. 'Transit circle by Eichens (2-feet circles, 6-inch O.G.), 6-inch refractor by Briinner.

Marseilles, lat. 43° 18' 19-1, long. 0 21™ 348-8 E. Originally belonging to the Jesuits, taken over by the ministry of the navy in 1749. It was here that Pons made his numerous discoveries of comets. A new building was erected in 1869; 94-inch equatorial refractor, reflector of 32-inches aperture and 16-feet focal length. The present director, Stephan, has discovered and micrometrically measured several hundred very faint nebulz.

Toulouse, lat. 43° 36' 477-0, long. 02 5™ 518-0 E, Erected in 1840 (Darquier had observed at the Lyceum towards the end of last century); restored a few years ago, when an equatorial refractor by Briinner was procured.

Nice, founded and endowed by M. Bischoffsheim for the Bureau de Longitude (1880), situated at Mont Gros, north-east of Nice. Is being furnished with first-class instruments, among which are a refractor of 80-inches aperture by Henry Brothers (mounting by Kichens), a meridian circle by Briinner of 8-inches aperture, and large spectroscopes, &c.

GERMANY.

Altona, lat. + 58° 32' 45"°8, long. 02 39™ 468°1 E. Founded in

1823 by the Danish Government to assist in the geodetic operations |

in Holstein. A meridian circle by Reichenbach (of 4-inches aper- ture and 3-feet circle) and several theodolites were procured, to which, in 1858, was added a 44-inch equatorial by Repsold. The observatory is best known by the fact that the Astronomische Nachrichten, the principal astronomical

~~journal, was published here from 1821 (by Schumacher up to 1850, by Peters from 1854). The observatory was moved to Kiel in 1872.~~

~~Berlin, royal observatory, lat. + 52° 30' 16"°7, long. 08 53™ 345-9 E. Was erected in 1705 as part of the building of the Academy of Sciences (lat. + 52° 31' 12"°5, long. 0b 58™ 35s E.), a very unsuit- able locality. After the death of Bode in 1826, who had founded the Astronomisches Jahrbuch (from 1776), a new observatory was built in the southern part of the city under the direction of Encke,~~

~~finished in 1835. With the observatory is now connected a com- puting office, where the Jahrbuch is edited. The instruments now in use are:—an equatorial refractor by Utzschneider and Fraun- hofer, of 9-inches aperture and 14-feet focal length (with which Neptune was found in 1846 in the place indicated by Leverrier ; used at present for observations of minor planets), a meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 4-inches aperture (lately used by Auwers to observe stars between + 15° and +25° decl.), another by the same makers of 7-inches aperture, now used to observe stars between +25° and +30° decl.~~

~~Bonn, university observatory, lat. + 50° 43' 4570, long. Oh 28m 2383 BE. Finished in 1845 (a temporary observatory had been used by Argelander from 1841 to observe stars from + 45° to + 80° decl.) ; meridian circle by Pistor of 44-inches aperture, helio- meter by Merz of 6-inches aperture. The former was used by Argelander for observing stars between — 15° and — 31° decl., aud afterwards for determining 33,000 places of stars in the northern heavens. The observatory is chiefly known by the zone observa- tions, made from 1852 to 1859 with a small comet-seeker, on which Argelander's great atlas of 324,198 stars between the North Pole and —2° decl. is founded; many other investigations on proper motions, variable stars, &., were also made by Argelander. The zone work is now being continued with a 6-inch refractor from —2° to —81° decl. by the present director, Schonfeld, who had already, with Kriiger, assisted Argelander in the northern zones. With the meridian circle stars between +40° and +50° decl. are now being observed. A new meridian circle of 6-inches aperture by Repsold has recently been mounted. Seven 4to volumes of Observations have been published.~~

~~Bothkamp, Herr von Biilow's observatory, lat. 54° 12' 96, long. Qh 40m 308°8 E. Situated a few miles from Kiel, founded in 1870, the principal instrument being an equatorial refractor of 11-inches aperture by Schréder, with spectroscopic and photographic appli- ances, with which Dr Vogel obtained valuable results from 1871-74, published in three 4to parts of Beobachtwngen. The observations have only quite recently been recommenced.~~

~~Bremen. Inthe third story of his house in Sandstrasse, Olbers (died 1840) had his observatory, lat. 58° 4' 38", long. 02 85m 10s E. ; though the principal instrument was only a 33-inch refractor by Dollond, many comets and the planets Pallas and Vesta were dis- covered and observed here.~~

~~Breslau, lat. + 51° 6' 56"“1, long. 1» 8™ 98-1 E. In a small and unsuitable locality, where a few small instruments are placed.~~

~~Dresden, Baron von Engelhardt's observatory, lat. + 51° 2' 16"°8, long. 0b 54™ 5488 E. A 12-inch equatorial refractor by Grubb (mounted 1880), used for observations of comets and double stars.~~

~~Diisseldorf (Bilk, originally a suburb, now part of the city),~~

~~lat. + 51° 12' 25", long. 0 27™ 58°5 E. Founded and endowed by~~

~~Professor Benzenberg (died 1846); best known by the discovery of twenty-one minor planets by R. Luther ; the principal instrument is a 44-inch refractor.~~

~~Gotha. In 1791 an observatory was founded by Duke Ernest II. at Seeberg, lat. + 50° 56' 5"-2, long. 0h 42™ 5588 E., on a hill a few miles from Gotha, the chief instrument being a large transit instru- ment by Ramsden. 'Through the labours, principally theoretical, of the successive directors, Zach, Lindenau, Encke, and Hansen, the institution ranked with the first observatories, but the distance from Gotha and the decay of the buildings made it necessary to build a new observatory at Gotha in 1857, lat. + 50° 56' 37°, long. 0h 42™ 5085 E. This observatory received the instruments. from Seeberg, including a small transit circle by Ertel (made in 1824), also a new equatorial by Repsold of 43-inches aperture.~~

~~Géttingen, university observatory, lat. + 51° 31’ 477-9, long. 0b 39m 468-5 E. An observatory had existed here during the 18th century, where Tobias Mayer worked. In 1811 a new building was constructed. Besides his mathematical works, Gauss found time to engage in important geodetic and maguetic observations. In 1867-69 a catalogue of stars between the equator and — 2° decl. was made by Copeland and Borgen. The principal instruments. are a meridian circle by Repsold (44-inches aperture), another by Reichenbach (44-inches), several refractors from 3 to 5 inches aper- ture, &c.~~

~~Hamburg, lat. + 58° 38’ 7-0, long. 02 89™ 588-7 EK. Built in the year 1825. With a meridian circle of 4-inches aperture by Repsold, C. Riimker observed the places of 12,000 stars. An equa- torial refractor of 10-inches aperture was mounted in 1868, used for observations of star-clusters, comets, and minor planets.~~

~~Kiel, royal observatory, lat. + 54° 20’ 29”°7, long. Oh 40™ 358°8 E. Contains the instruments removed from Altona in 1872, also an 8-inch refractor by Steinheil. The office of the Astronomische~~

~~Nachrichten has been here since 1872.~~

~~Kénigsberg, university observatory, lat. + 54° 42’ 50-6, long. 1h 21 588-9 E, Built 1813; Bessel was the director till his death in 1846, and nearly’all his celebrated investigations were carried out here, c.g., observations of fundamental stars, zone observations of stars from —15° to +45° decl., researches on refraction, helio- nietric observations, by which the annual parallax of the star 61~~

~~OBSERVATORY~~

~~Cygni was first determined, &c., published in the first 21 volumes of the Beobachtungen auf der k. Sternwarte zu Kénigsberg. The instruments are a meridian circle by Reichenbach and Ertel, of 4-inches aperture (mounted 1819), another of the same dimensions by Repsold (1841), a 6-inch heliometer by Utzschneider (1829), &c.~~

Leipsie, university observatory lat. + 51° 20’ 2075, long. Ob 49m 308-2 E. Erected 1787-90 on the “Pleissenburg” ; possessed only small instruments, the largest being a 44-inch refractor by Fraunhofer (1830) with which from 1848 D’Arrest observed minor planets, comets, and nebule. In 1861 a new observatory was erected under the direction of Bruhns, lat. + 51° 20’ 6”°3, long. oh 49m 348-0 E., with a refractor of 84-inches aperture by Steinheil and a meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 6°3-inches aperture mounted. The former is used for observing double stars, nebulz, and comets, the latter for observing stars between +5° and +15° decl. In 1881 Dr Engelmann mounted an 8-inch equatorial re- fractor by Clark and Repsold in a small private observatory close to the university observatory.

Lilienthal, near Bremen, lat. + 58° 8’ 25’, long. 04 36™ 1s E, J. H. Schréter’s private observatory ; from 1779 to 1813. Con- tained a number of reflectors by Herschel and Schrader, the largest being of 27-feet focal length and 20-inches aperture (movable round the eye-piece), used for physical observations, chiefly of planets. Destroyed during the war in 1818; the instruments (which had been bought by the Government in 1800) were, for the greater part, sent to the Gottingen observatory.

Mannheim, lat. + 49° 29’ 10:9, long. 02 33" 508-5 E. Built in 1772; except C. Mayer’s observations of distant companions to bright stars, very few observations were published until the observa- tory was restored in 1860, when a 6-iuch refractor by Steinheil was procured, with which Schénfeld determined the positions of 500 nebule. In 1879 the observatory was moved to Karlsruhe.

Munich, at Bogenhausen, royal observatory, lat. + 48° 8’ 457°5, long. 02 46m 265-1 E. Founded in 1809; a meridian circle by Reichenbach was mounted in 1824, an 11-inch equatorial refractor by Fraunhofer in 1835. The former was used from 1840 for zone observations (about 80,000) of telescopic stars, the resulting 34,000 places of which were published in six catalogues; the latter was for some years used by Lamont for observing satellites and nebule. Afterwards Lamont chiefly devoted his attention to terrestrial inagnetism.*

Potsdam, lat. + 52° 22’ 56”, long. 02 52m 178 E. “ Astrophysical observatory,” founded in 1874, devoted to spectroscopic, photo- graphic,

~~and other physical observations. An equatorial refractor by Schroder of 11}-inches aperture, another by Grubb of 8-inches aperture, spectroscopes, photometers, &c. Results are published in 4to volumes,~~

~~Spires, observatory of the lyceum, lat. + 49° 18' 56', long. Oh 33m 45s°5 i.., established in 1827. With a meridian circle by Ertel, Schwerd observed in 1827-29 the positions of circumpolar stars. Discontinued many years ago.~~

~~Strasburg, university observatory, lat. + 48° 34' 597-7, long. 0h 31™ 45-7. Finished in 1881 (observations made in a temporary observatory from 1872) ; an 18-inch equatorial refractor by Merz; altazimuth of 5}-inches aperture, meridian circle of 64-inclies aper- ture, and a 63-inch orbit sweeper, all by Repsold.~~

~~Wilhelmshafen (Prussia), naval observatory, lat. + 58° 31' 52:2, long. 0 32™ 358-2 E.; situated on the Jahde to the north of Olden- burg. Founded in 1874; meridian circle by Repsold of 44-inches aperture, and meteorological, magnetical, and tide-registering instruments,~~

~~AUSTRIA-HUNGARY.~~

~~Vienna, imperial and royal observatory, lat. + 48° 12' 355, long. 1h 6m 318:7 E. On the university building an observatory was founded in 1756. Owing to the unsuitable locality and the want of instruments, very few observations of value were taken until the observatory was rebuilt in 1826, when some better instruments were procured, especially a meridian circle of 4-inches aperture, and a 6-inch refractor by Fraunhofer (mounted in 1832), used for observations of planets and comets. The Annalen commenced to appear in 1821; besides observations made at Vienna, they have contained Piazzi's original observations and Oeltzen's catalogue of stars between + - 45° and + 80° decl. from Argelander's observa- tions. From 1874 to 1879 a large and magnificent building (with four domes, the central one being 45 feet in diameter) was erected at Wiahring, north-west of the city, lat. + 48° 13' 557-4, long. 1h 5m 218-5 E. In addition to the old instruments, two equatorial refractors were erected, one by Clark of 113-inches aperture, another by Grubb of 27-inches aperture (mounted 1882),~~

~~Vienna (Josephstadt), private observatory of Th. von Oppolzer, lat. + 48° 12’ 53”°8, long. 1) 5™ 258-3 E. Established in 1865 ; 5-inch refractor by Merz, 4-inch meridian circle. ;~~

~~Prague, university observatory, lat. + 50° 5’ 18-8, long. 0h 57m 418-4 KE. Founded in 1751 at the Collegium Clementinum, on a high tower. Very few astronomical observations have been taken here; at present only magnetic and meteorological work is~~

~~713~~

~~attended to, asa 6-inch refractor by Steinheil and a 4-inch meridian circle cannot be mounted for want of a proper locality.~~

~~Senftenberg (in the east of Bohemia), lat. + 50° 5’ 55”, long. 1h 5m 51s EK. Baron von Senftenberg’s observatory ; established in 1844. Observations of comets and planets made with small instruments till the owner’s death (1858).~~

~~Olmiitz, lat. + 49° 35’ 40”, long. 189m 08 E. Herr von Unkrechts- berg’s observatory ; 5-inch refractor by Merz. Julius Schmidt observed planets and comets from 1852 to 1858.~~

~~Kremsmiinster (Upper Austria), lat. + 48° 37 23”°8, long. Ob 56™ 328:2 E. Founded in 1748 at the gymnasium of the Bene- dictines. 3-inch meridian circle (mounted in 1827), used for observ- ing minor planets; 54-inch refractor (mounted in 1856), used for comets and minor planets.~~

~~Pola (sea-coast, Austria), naval observatory, lat. + 44° 51’ 49”, long. Oh 55m 238-5 E. Founded in 1871; meridian circle of 6-inches aperture by Simms, 6-inch refractor by Steinheil, mag- netic and meteorological instruments. Twenty-eight minor planets were discovered here from 1874 to 1880 by J. Palisa.~~

~~Cracow, university observatory, lat. + 50° 3/ 50” 0, 15 19m 515-1 FE. Possesses only small instruments.~~

~~Budapest (Ofen), royal observatory. Founded 1777 ; a new build- ing was erected in 1818, and new instruments (a 6-inch refractor by Fraunhofer and a meridian circle by Reichenbach) provided, with which comets and planets were observed. N othing has been heard of this observatory for the last fifty years.~~

~~O'Gyalla (near Komorn, Hungary), lat. +47° 52' 43-4, long. 1h 12m 458-6 KE, Nicolas de Konkoly's observatory. Established in 1871, rebuilt and enlarged in 1876, devoted to spectroscopy and physical astronomy generally ; there is a large workshop attached. A 10-inch silvered glass reflector by Browning was in use up to 1881, when it was disposed of and a 10-inch equatorial refractor (O.G. by Merz) mounted in its place; also a 6-inch refractor by Merz, and many spectroscopes and minor instruments. Results are published in 4to volumes.~~

~~Kaloeza (south of Budapest), lat. + 46° 31', long. 1» 15m + Ff, Observatory of the Jesuit college, founded in 1878 by Cardinal Haynald ; 7-inch refractor by Merz.~~

~~Herény (Vas, Hungary), lat. + 47° 16' 37", long. 1) 6m 248-7 I, K. and A. von Gothard's observatory. Founded in 1881; 10-inch reflector by Browning.~~

~~long.~~

~~SWITZERLAND.~~

~~Zurich, lat. + 47° 22' 40-0, long. 04 34m 128°6 E. An observa- tory existed since 1759 ; handed over to the Polytechnic School in 1855 ; new building erected in 1868. A 6-inch refractor by Merz and Kern, two transit instruments, &c. Sun-spots are regularly observed, but the institution is chiefly devoted to educational purposes.~~

~~Neuehdtel, lat. + 46° 59' 51"°0, long. 0b 27™ 508-2 E. Erected in 1858 ; meridian circle of 4}-inches aperture by Ertel.~~

~~Geneva, lat. + 46° 11' 58"'8, long. 0b 24™ 368°8 E. Founded in 1773 ; a new building erected in 1830. The observatory has been the centre of the~~

~~*important geodetic operations carried on in Switzer- land since 1861. A 10-inch refractor (O.G. by Merz) was presented by the director Plantamour in 1880.*~~

~~*SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.*~~

~~*Aludrid, royal observatory, lat. + 40°24'29"°7, long, 0b 14m 458-4 W. Observations are made of comets, sun-spots, &c., with an equatorial by Merz.*~~

~~*Cadiz, naval observatory, at San Fernando, lat. + 86° 27' 41°, long. 02 24m 498-6 W. Founded in 1797. ;*~~

~~*Lusbon, royal observatory, lat. + 38° 42' 31"°3, long. 0h 36™ 448-7 W. A large refractor was mounted in 1863.*~~

~~*Coimbra, university observatory, lat. + 40° 12' 25':8, long. 0h 33m 3455 W. Founded 1792. An astronomical ephemeris has been published from 1804.*~~

~~*Treny.*~~

~~*Turin, university observatory, lat. + 45° 4'6", long. 0b 30™ 488°4 FE. Founded in 1790 by the Acadeiny of Science ; rebuilt in 1820 on a tower of the Palazzo Madama, where a meridian circle by Reichen- bach of 4-inches aperture was mounted ; handed over to the uni- versity in 18665.*~~

~~*Milan, originally observatory of Brera College, now royal observatory of Brera, lat. + 45° 27' 59"-2, long. 0b 36m 468-1 E. Founded in 1763. The publication of an annual ephemeris from 1775 to 1875 and important theoretical works absorbed most of the time of the directors Oriani and Carlini, and the instruments were rather insufficient. In 1875 an 8-inch refractor by Merz was mouuted, with which Schiaparelli has made valuable observations of Mars. An 18-inch refractor has been ordered from Merz.*~~

~~*Padua, university observatory, lat. + 45° 24' 275, long. Ob 47m 298-0 E. Founded in 1761. In 1837 a meridian circle by Starke of 4-inches aperture*~~

was mounted, with which stars from Bessel's zones were re-observed ; the results were published in five

XVII. — go

catalogues. A 44-inch refractor by Merz and Starke (1858) has served to observe comets, spectra of solar prominences, &c.

G@allarate, near Lago Maggiore, from 1860 to 1879, Baron Dembowski's observatory. From 1852 to 1859 Baron Dembowski had observed double stars at Naples with a 5-inch dialyte by Plossl, and a small transit circle by Starke. From 1860 he used a 7 -inch refractor by Merz. :

Modena, university observatory, lat. + 44° 38' 52"°8, long. oh 43m 4958 FE, Founded in 1819. There is a meridian circle by Reichenbach, but very little astronomical work has been done.

Bologna, university observatory, lat. + 44° 29' 47°70, long. Oh 45m 948-5 KE. Founded in 1724 on a tower of the university building. Ephemerides were published from 1715 to 1836, but observations have only been made occasionally. A 3inch meri dian circle was mounted in 1846. :

Florence. In 1774 a muscum of science and natural history was established, part of which was used as an observatory, lat. + 48° 46' 4-1, long. Oh 45m 18°5 E. Very few observations were made; only Donati's discoveries of six comets and his early observa- tions of star-spectra deserve to be noticed. A new observatory was finished in 1872 at Arcetri, but is very badly built, so that two fine refractors by Amici of 11- and 94-inches aperture (the niountings unfinished) can only find limited application.

Rome, observatory of the Roman College, lat. + 41° 53' 63) OU long. 0b 49m 548-7 EF, Established in 1787. Little was done until De Vico became director in 1838, when numerous observations of satellites, comets, &c., were commenced with a 63-inch refractor by Cauchoix. In 1853 a new observatory was erected on the unfinished piles of the church of St Ignatius, and furnished with a 9-inch refractor by Merz, a meridian circle by Ertel of

33-inches aperture (in use from 1842), a 38-inch refractor for observing sun-spots, &c. With these instruments, to which were later added powerful spec- troscopes, Secchi has made a great many observations, chiefly relating to spectrum analysis and physical astronomy.

Rome, observatory of the Capitol, lat. + 41° 53' 33"°6. Estab- lished in 1848; belongs to the university ; small transit circle and a 43-inch refractor by Merz. The latter is used by Respighi for observations of solar prominences.

Naples, royal observatory, situated at Capo di Monte, lat. +40° 51' 45'°4, long. 0b 57™ 08:9 E. Erected in 1812-19 (an observ- atory commenced in 1790 at the Royal Museum had been left un- finished) ; furnished with a number of instruments, among which a 4-inch meridian circle and two repeating circles by Reichenbach, a 64-inch equatorial by Reichenbach and Fraunhofer, &c. Very little was done until De Gasparis entered the observatory, where he has discovered nine minor planets and made other observations, partly with a 6-inch Merz refractor.

Palermo, royal observatory, lat. +88° 6' 44", long. 0 53™ 258-0 E. Erected in 1790 on a tower of the royal palace. 'The principal in- struments were a reversible vertical circle by Ramsden of 5-feet dia- meter, with a 3-inch telescope, and a transit instrument of 3-inches aperture. With these Piazzi observed the stars contained in his celebrated Catalogue of 7641 Stars (1814); this work led him to the discovery of the first minor planet, Ceres, on 1st January 1801. The activity was revived in 1857, when a meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 5-inches aperture was mounted and a 93-inch re- fractor ordered from Merz. The latter has been used by Tacchini for spectroscopic work, chiefly on the sun.

Etna. Jn 1879-80 an observatory was built at the "Casa deg!' Inglesi," 9650 feet above the sea. During the summer months a 12-inch object-glass by Merz is to be used here for solar observa- tions, while there is to be a duplicate mounting for it at Catania for use during the winter.

: GREECE.

Athens, lat. + 37° 58’ 20”, long. 15 34™ 558:‘7 E. Commenced in 1845 ; founded by Baron Sina. There isa refractor of 64-inches aperture, which has been used by Julius Schmidt (died 1884) for observations of the physical appearance of the moon, planets, and comets.

RvssIiA.

St Petersburg, observatory of the Academy of Sciences, lat. + 59° 56’ 29”°7, long. 24 1m 138-5 K. Founded in 1725, restored in 1803 ; meridian circle by Ertel and other instruments. A small university observatory was founded in 1880.

Pulkowa, Nicholas Central Observatory, lat. + 59° 46’ 187:7 long. 2% 1 185-7 E. Finished in 1839. ‘Was under the direction of F. G. W. Struve till 1861, since then of his son O. Struve ; the staff consists now of the director, four astronomers, four assistants, two computers, anda secretary. The principal instruments are:—a transit instrument by Ertel of 6-inches aperture and 84-feet focal length ; a vertical circle by Ertel of 6-inches aperture and 64-feet focal length (the circle of 34-fect diameter has been redivided by Repsold),—these two instruments have been used for determining standard places of stars for the epochs 1845 and 1865; a meridian circle by Repsold (6-inches aperture, 4-fcet circles), used since 1841 to observe all stars north of—15° decl. down to the 6th mag., and

all others observed by Bradley ; a prime vertical transit by Rep- sold with 64-inches aperture, used for determining the coustant of aberration ; a 74-inch heliometer by Merz, which has been very little used ; an equatorial refractor by Merz of 22-feet focal length and 14‘9-inches aperture (remounted by Repsold in 1880), which has been used incessantly by O. Struve since 1841 to observe double stars. A 30-inch refractor is now in process of construction, the object-glass being made by Clark, the mounting by Repsold. In addition to numerous memoirs and papers by the various astro- nomers, published by the Academy of St Petersburg, the Pulkowa Observations are published in large 4to volumes (10 vols. published up to 1883).

Abo (Finland), university observatory, lat. + 60° 26’ 56”’‘8, long. 1h g9m gs-3 E. Founded in 1819. With the meridian circle by Reichenbach of 4-

~~inches aperture, Argclander observed the 560 stars (chiefly stars with proper motion) contained in the Abo catalogue. In consequence of a great fire in 1827 the university and observatory were moved to Helsingfors.~~

~~Helsingfors (Finland), university observatory, lat. + 60° 9' 43"°3, long. 1539™ 498-2 E. Erected in 1832-35 ; furnished with a 63-inch refractor and the instrnments from Abo, including a transit instru- ment by Fraunhofer of 54-inches aperture. With the last-named instrument, furnished with a divided arc, Kriiger has observed the stars between + 55° and + 65° decl.~~

~~Dorpat, university observatory, lat. + 58° 22' 47"°1, long. 1» 46m 5386 EK. Founded in 1808; from 1814 under the direc- tion of F. G. W. Struve. With a meridian circle by Reichenbach observations were made from 1822 to 1843 of 2874 stars, chiefly double stars (Struve's Positiones mediw, 1852), while the 93-inch refractor by Fraunhofer was used from 1824 to 1837 for measuring double stars (AMensure mierometriex, 1837, also Catalogus novus stel- larum dupliciwm, 1827). Dorpat was also the centre of important geodetic works. Midler, who succeeded Struve in 1840, continued the observations of double stars. The meridian circle has been used since 1870 for observations of stars between + 70° and + 75° decl.~~

~~Vilna, lat. + 54° 41' 0", long. 12 41™ 1189 EK. Founded in 1753. From time to time observations of planets have been made with a 6-inch refractor (Merz, 1845) and minor instruments. Of late years the observatory has been devoted to astronomical physics ; a photo- heliograph was in operation from 1869 to 1876.~~

~~Warsaw, university observatory, lat. + 52° 13' 57, long. 1h24m7s-4E, Erected in 1820-24 ; meridian circle by Reichenbach, 6-inch refractor by Merz.~~

~~Plonsk (Poland), Dr Jedrzejewicz's observatory, lat. + 52° 37'38"'8, long. 1» 22m 4s EK, Established in 1875; a 63-inch refractor by Steinheil is being used for observations of double stars.~~

~~Moseow, university observatory, lat. + 55° 45' 19":8, long. 9h 30m 178'0 E, An observatory was built in 1825-32; the present building was erected~~

~~about 1850. There is a 10°7-inch refractor by Merz (used for observations of planets and comets and spectroscopic observations of the sun), a meridian circle by Repsold of 5°3-inches aperture, &c. The Annals, published since 1874, contain many researches on the nature of comets by the director, Bredichin.~~

~~Kasan, university observatory, lat. + 55° 47’ 247-2, long. 3h 16m 288-9 E. Founded in 1814, restored in 1842; 10-inch re- fractor by Merz, meridian circle by Repsold.~~

~~Kharkoff, lat. + 50° 0’ 10”°2, long. 25 24m 548-7 E.~~

~~Kieff,university observatory, lat. + 50° 27’11“‘1, long, 24 2™ 08°6 I. Erected in the years 1840-45; has a 9-inch refractor, a meridian circle, and smaller instruments.~~

~~Odessa, university observatory, lat. + 46° 28’ 367°2, long. gh 3m 9s-4 E. Recently established ; 5-inch refractor by Steinheil.~~

~~Nikolaief’, naval observatory, lat. + 46° 58’ 20°, long. gh 7m 548°] E, Erected in 1824; meridian circle by Ertel with 4-inches aperture, 94-inch refractor by Repsold.~~

~~Tiflis, Founded in 1863 to assist the geodetic operations in the Caucasian provinces.~~

~~Swepgen, Norway, AND DENMARK.~~

~~Stockholm, lat. + 59° 20’ 33”°2, long. 12 12™ 1480 E., is under the Academy of Sciences. Founded in 1750; is best known by Wargentin’s observations of Jupiter’s satellites, carried on for many years, Meridian circle by Ertel of 43-inches aperture, 7 inch equa torial refractor by Repsold ; the latter is now being employed by Gyldén for researches on the annual parallax of bright stars.~~

~~Upsala, university observatory, lat. + 59° 51’ 31“‘5, long. 1h 10™ 308-6 E. Founded in 1730, but very little was done until the observatory acquired~~

~~a 9-inch refractor by Steinheil, which has been used by the present director, Schultz, for micrometric observa- tions of 500 nebule.~~

~~Lund, university observatory, lat. + 55° 41' 52"0, long. Oh 52m 458-0 E. Built in 1866 (an observatory had existed since about 1760, but only with very small instruments) ; 94-inch equa- torial refractor, object-glass by Merz, used for observations of double stars and minor planets ; meridian circle by Repsold of 6}-inches aperture, used for observing stars between + 35° and + 40° decl.~~

~~Christiania, university observatory, lat. + 59° 54' 4877, long.~~

~~Oph y ATOR ¥~~

~~Oh 42m 5386 KE. Erected in 1831; meridian circle by Ertel of 4-inches aperture, now used to observe stars between + 65° and + 70° decl.; a 43-inch equatorial by Repsold, and a 7-inch re- fractor by Merz; magnetical instruments (which were extensively used by the first director, Hansteen).~~

~~Copenhagen, university observatory, lat. 55° 40' 58"-0, long. 0b 50™ 198°8 K. Founded in 1641 on the top of a high tower ; the locality was so very unsuitable that Romer (the inventor of the transit instrument and modern equatorial, died 1710) established his own observatory at Vridlosemagle, at some distance from the city. The observatory on the tower was burned in 1728, restored in 1741 and 1780. A new observatory was erected in 1861, lat. +55° 41' 18"°6, long. 02 50m 198-2 EK. It is furnished with an equa- torial refractor by Merz of 11-inches aperture, with which D' Arrest made observations of 1900 nebule ; a meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 44-inches aperture, with which Schjelerup observed 10,000 stars between +15° and — 15° deck. ; and a meridian transit instrument of 64-inches aperture, intended for zone observations of very faint stars.~~

~~HoLuANpD AND BELGIUM.~~

~~Leyden, university observatory, lat. + 52° 9' 20', long. 0h17™ 568-2 E. Founded already in 1682, but the instruments were always very small, and hardly any observations were taken until Kaiser became director in 1837. A 6-inch refractor by Merz was now provided, and in 1858-60 a new~~

~~*observatory was erected, and furnished with a 7-inch refractor by Merz and a meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 6°8-inches aperture. These instruments have since been in constant use, the refractor for measures with a double- image micrometer, the meridian circle principally for observations of stars between + 30° and + 85° decl., and of southern standard stars. There is a large collection of minor instruments and appa- ratuses for special researches. Annalen der Sternwarte in Leyden appear in 4to volnines.*~~

~~*Utrecht, university observatory, lat. + 52° 5' 10°°5, long. Oh 20™ 318'7 KE. Seems to have existed already during the 18th century ; a new building was erected in 1855, but there are only small instruments, except a 10-inch object-glass by Steinheil on Ganss's plan, which seems to be a failure.*~~

~~*Lrussels, royal observatory, lat. + 50° 51' 107, long. 0h 172856 EK. Erected in 1829-34. A transit instrament by Gam bey and a mural circle by Troughton have been used for observations of stars having proper motion, but the institution was while under the direction of Quetelet chiefly devoted to physics and meteorology. In 1877 a 6-inch refractor by Merz was mounted, and a meridian circle by Repsold and a 15-inch refractor by Cooke have been inounted in a temporary manner, pending the erection of a new observatory at some distance from the city. The Annales de U Observatoire de Bruxelles (28 vols. 4to) contain, besides the obser- vations, many investigations on special subjects.*~~

~~*UNITED STATES.*~~

~~*Albany (New York), Dudley Observatory, lat. + 42° 39' 497°5, long. 45 54m 598-2 W. Erected in 1851-56 by subscription ; equa- torial refractor by Fitz of 13-inches aperture, meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 8-inches aperture, now used for observing stars between + 1° and + 5° decl., transit instrument of 6°4-inches aper- ture by the same makers.*~~

~~*Allegheny (Pennsylvania), lat. + 40° 27'41"°6, long. 5220 28-9 W. Founded in 1860 in connexion with the university; 13-inch equatorial refractor by Fitz (improved by Clark), mounted in 1867 ; several spectroscopes and other instruments for researches on solar energy.*~~

Tevet (Massachusetts), lat. + 42° 22’157°6, long. 4850™ 78-3 W. Founded in 1857 as an annex to the college; 7}-inch refractor by Clark.

Annapolis (Maryland), lat. + 38° 58’ 53”°5, long. 52 5™ 5685 W. U.S. Naval Academy observatory, used for instruction only ; 4-inch meridian circle by Repsold, 74-inch refractor by Clark, and smaller instruments.

Ann Arbor (Michigan), lat. +42° 16’ 48”°0, long. 58 34m55s-2 W. Belongs to the university of Michigan ; erected in 1854; meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 64-inches aperture, 125-inch equa- torial refractor by Fitz. The observatory is known by the works of the successive directors, Brinmnow and Watson ; the latter dis- covered twenty-one minor planets here.

Cambridge (Massachusetts), Harvard College observatory, lat. + 42° 29' 48”°3, long. 4h 44m 318:0 W. Erected in 1839. Equa- torial refractor of 15-inches aperture by Merz, with which W. C, Bond discovered a satellite of Saturn (Hyperion) in 1848, and which was afterwards used by G. P. Bond to observe the nebula of Orion, — it is now employed by Pickering for extensive photometric observa- tions of fixed stars and satcllites ; a meridian circle by Troughton and Simms with 8inches aperture, mounted in 1870, used for obser vations of standard stars and stars between + 50° and + 55° decl. The Annals of the observatory (13 vols. 4to) form one of the most important collections of astronomical researches. Since 1877 the

means of the institution have been increased by public subscription, and a large staff of assistants has since been actively employed on photomctric and meridian work.

Chieago (Illinois), Dearboru Observatory, lat. + 41° 50’ 1-0, long. 5h 50m 268‘8 W. Attached to the university ; founded by sub- scription in 1862. The principal instrument is an 184-inch equa- torial refractor by Clark (mounted in 1864, but not used till 187 Dy with which Burnham has continued his observations and discoverics of donble stars, eommenced with a 6-inch refractor. There is also a 6-inch meridian circle by Repsold.

~~Cincinnati (Ohio), lat. + 39° 6' 26'°5, long. 54 37m 588-9 W. In 1842 an observatory was founded by subscription, and furnished with an equatorial refractor of 11}-inches aperture by Merz. In 1873 the observatory was removed toa distance from the city, to Mount Lookout, lat. + 39° 8' 35"°5, long. 54 37m 415-4 W. 'The refractor has been almost exclusively devoted to observations of double stars (Publications of the Cincinnati Observatory, 5 parts, 8vo).~~

~~Clinton (New York), Litchfield Observatory of Hamilton College, lat. + 43° 3'17"-0, long. 58 1™ 378-4 W. Erected by subscription, 1852-55 ; equatorial refractor of 134 inches by Spencer, employed by C. H. F. Peters for construction of celestial charts (Nos. 1-20 published in 1882), in the course of which work he has discovered forty-one minor planets. :~~

~~Georgetown (District of Columbia), college observatory, lat. +38° 54' 262, long. 54 8m 188-3 W. Erected in 1844; 6-inch re- fractor and small meridian circle, both by Simms.~~

~~Glasgow (Missonri), Morrison Observatory, lat. + 39° 16' 168, long. 62 11™ 188-0 W. Founded in 1876; attached to the univer- sity ; 124-inch equatorial refractor by Clark, used for observations of comets, planets, and double stars; meridian circle by Simms of 6-inches aperture.~~

~~Hanover (New Hampshire), Dartmouth College observatory, lat. + 43° 42' 15", long. 42 49m 85:0 W. Founded in 1853; 9inch equatorial by Clark, used by C. A. Young (up to 1878) for spectro scopic observatious of the sun ; meridiau circle by Simms of 4-inches aperture.~~

~~Hastings (New York), Prof. Henry Draper's observatory, lat. + 40° 59' 25", long. 4 55m 2987 W. Built in 1860; 28-inch re- flector by the owner, 11-inch refractor (with photographic lens) by Clark, both used np to the owner's death (1882) for celestial and spectrum photography. 'The first photograph of the nebula of Orion was taken here in 1880.~~

~~Madison (Wisconsin), Washburn Observatory, lat. + 48° 4' 36"°7, long. 55 57m 378°9 W. Erected at the expense of Governor Wash- burn in 1878 ; belongs to the university. Meridian circle by Repsol of 4°8-inches aperture,~~

~~15}-inch equatorial refractor by Clark, used for observations of nebula and double stars. Publications in 8vo volumes,~~

~~Mount Hamilton (California), Lick Observatory of the university of California, lat. + 37° 21' 3", long. 8h 6™ 268:7 W., about 4250 feet above sea-level. Is being erected in pursuance of the will of the late James Lick, and is to contain a 36-inch refractor by Clark. The suitability of the site was tested in 1879 by Burnham, who observed for some weeks with his 6-inch refractor, A 12-inch re- fractor and a 5-inch photoheliograph were used for observing the transit of Venus in 1882.~~

~~New Haven (Connecticut), Winchester Observatory of Yale College, lat. + 41° 18' 36"°5, long, 42 51™ 428°2 W. An observatory had existed since 1830, possessing among other instruments a 9-inch refractor by Clark and a meridian circle by Ertel. In 1880 a bureau for verifying chronometers and thermometers was estab- lished, and in 1881 the observatory was rebuilt, and furnished with a 6-inch heliometer by Repsold, and an 8-inch equatorial refractor by Grubb.~~

~~New York, L. M. Rutherfurd's observatory, lat. + 40° 48' 48"°5, long. 45 55m 5686 W. 18-inch refractor by Rutherfurd and Fitz, used for celestial photography.~~

~~Northfield (Minnesota), Carleton College observatory, lat. + 44° 27' 40"°8, long. 62 12™ 358-9 W. Erected in 1878 ; 84-inch refractor by Clark.~~

~~Princeton (New Jersey). Attached to the college are two observatories, — the "J. C. Green School of Science observatory," lat. + 40° 20' 57°°8, long. 45 58m 378-6 W., erected in 1877, and furnished with a 94-inch refractor by Clark; and the Halsted ob- servatory, in which a 23-inch refractor by Clark was mounted in~~

~~1883.~~

~~Rochester (New York), Warner Observatory, lat. + 48° 8' 15", long. 55 11™ 203 W. Erected by H. H. Warner in 1879-80; has a 16-inch refractor by Clark.~~

~~Washington (D.C.), U.S. naval observatory, lat. + 38° 53’ 38”°8, long. 55 8m 128-1 W. Observations were commenced in a temporary observatory in 1838 ; the naval observatory was organized in 1842 ; observations commenced in 1845. For some years a large amount of zone observations were taken with three meridian instruments, but as Manry, who held the office of superintendent from 1844 to 1861, devoted himself exclusively to meteorology, the astronomical work was considered of less importance. Since 1861 the observa-~~

~~tions have again been published in annual 4to volumes, the appendices to which contain many important memoirs by the five astronomers attached to the institution. In addition to these and the super- intendent (a naval officer) there are three assistants. The instru- ments are :—a mural circle by Troughton and Simms of 4 inches ; » transit instrument by Ertel of 5-3-inches aperture,—these two instruments have been used to observe a catalogue of 11,000 fixed stars ; a 9°6-inch equatorial refractor by Merz, used for observing minor planets and comets; a meridian circle by Pistor and Martins of 8°5-inches aperture, mounted in 1865, and used for observing standard stars and planets; a 26-inch equatorial refractor by Clark, mounted in 1873, and used for observations of satellites and difficult double stars,—with this instrument Hall discovered the satellites of Mars in 1877. A new observatory is now being built, the former locality being too near the Potomac river.~~

~~Wiiliamstown (Massachusetts), lat. + 42° 42’ 49”, long. 4h 59m 338-5 W. Founded in 1836; 74-inch refractor by Clark ; meridian circle of 44-inches aperture by Repsold, mounted in~~

~~1882.~~

~~MEXxICco.~~

~~Chapultepee (about 2 miles south-west of Mexico), national observatory, lat. + 19° 25’ 17°5, long. 6» 36™ 388:2 W. Erected in 1877-80; a 15-inch equatorial refractor by Grubb was procured in 1882; there is also an altazimuth by Simms, &c. In 1883 the observatory was moved to Tacubaya.~~

SovutH AMERICA.

Santiago (Chili), national observatory, lat. — 33° 26’ 42”°0, long. 4h 49m 498-4 W. In 1849 the U.S. Government sent an astronomical expedition to Chili to observe Venus and Mars, in order to deter- inine the solar parallax. When the expedition returned in 1852, the Government of Chili bought all the instruments—a 6-inch meridian circle by Pistor and Martins, a 64-inch refractor by Fitz, &c. Meridian observations of southern stars, observations of Mars in opposition, of the parallax of a Centauri, &c., were carried on by Moesta till 1863 (from 1860 in a new observatory). Since the retirement of Moesta very little has been heard of the institution, although it soon after received a 94-inch refractor by Merz and Rep- sold. ‘Two volumes of Observations have been published.

Lima (Peru). In 1866 a meridian circle of 7-inches aperture and 2 104-inch refractor were procured from HIchens, but we are not aware of any astronomical work having been done at Lima.

Rio de Janeiro (Brazil), imperial observatory, lat. — 22° 54’ 23”°8, long. 2452 418-4 W. Founded in 1845; no work done until 1871. The principal instruments are a meridian circle by Dollond, an altazimuth, a 94-inch refractor by Henry, &c. A Budlletin was com- menced in 1881,

Cordova (Argentine Republic), national observatory, lat. — 81° 25’ 15’‘4, long. 4h 16™ 4581 W. rected in 1871, under the direction of B. A. Gould, who has here constructed his Urano- metria Argentina, an atlas of all the stars visible to the naked eye from the south pole to +10° decl., with their apparent magnitudes. With a meridian circle by Repsold of 5-inches aperture 105 000 zone observations of stars between — 23° and — 80° decl. have been unade, while an 11-inch refractor by Fitz, with photographic object- glass, has been employed for taking photographs of southern star- clusters. The results are being published in 4to volumes.

AFRICA.

*Cape of Good Hope, royal observatory, lat. — 33° 56’ 3”*4, long. 1h 13™ 558°0 E. Founded in 1820; erected in 1825-29, about 34 miles from Cape Town. Observations were commenced by Fallows in 1829 with a transit*

instrument by Dollond of 5-inches aperture and a mural circle by Jones. After the death of Fallows (1881), T. Ifenderson observed from 1832-33, chiefly the moon and Mars for determining their parallaxes, and a Centauri for annual parallax. Ife was succeeded as "His Majesty's astronomer" by Thomas Maclear, who undertook to verify and extend the arc of meridian measured by Lacaille in 1751-53, which work occupied the observa- tory staff for a number of years. The results of the meridian observations were therefore first published by Maclear's successors in the form of three star catalogues for 1840, 1850, and 1860. In 1849 a 7-inch equatorial refractor by Merz was mounted, and in 1855 a new meridian circle, a facsimile of the one at Greenwich, superseded the older instruments. With the equatorial comets, occultations of stars, &c., were observed. Maclear was succeeded by E. J. Stone (1870 to 1879), who, in addition to bringing out much of his predecessor's work, devoted himself and the staff to observations of stars, embodied in a catalogue of 12,441 stars for the epoch 1880. Under the present astronomer, D. Gill, standard stars between the equator and — 28° decl., as also stars suitable for investigations on refraction, are observed, while a 4-inch heliometer by Repsold is privately employed by the astronomer for researches on annual parallax.

Besides the observatory of Laeadlle in Cape Town, already men- tioned (lat. — 33° 55' 16'°1, long. 14 138™ 418 E.), another temporary observatory, at Feldhausen, lat. — 33° 58' 56"°6, long. 11 13™ 515 E.,

6 miles from Cape Town, deserves to be mentioned. It was here that Sir John Herschel observed nebule and double stars from 1834 to 1838 with a reflector of 184-inches aperture ; the results were pub- lished in a large 4to volume in 1847.

Durban (Natal). Erected in 1882; 8-inch equatorial refractor by Grubb.

Algiers (Algeria), national observatory, lat. + 36° 45' 2"°7, long. oh 12m 118-4 WW. Recently founded.

St Helena, lat. — 15° 55' 26"°0, long. 02 22™ 548-6 W. Erected in 1829, with a transit instrument and mural circle; M. Johnson observed the places of 606 southern stars from 1829 to 1833.

INDIA.

Madras, Government observatory, lat. + 13° 4’ 8”‘1, long. 5h 20m 598‘4 EK. In operation since the beginning of this century. In 1831 a transit instrument and a mural circle, both of 3inches aperture, by Dollond were mounted, and with these T. G. Taylor observed 11,000 stars, published in a large Catalogue (1845) ; a Sub sidiary Catalogue of 1440 stars appeared in 1854. Taylor’s successor, Jacob, chiefly devoted himself to double stars. A meridian circle by Simms was mounted in 1858, and in 1865 an 8-inch equatorial refractor, also by Simms, was put up, and the observations have been vigorously continued under the direction of Pogson. Eight volumes in 4to of Observations were published from 1832 to 1854. In a small private observatory at Madras, E. B. Powell observed double stars with a 4-inch refractor by Simms from 1858.

LIucknow, An observatory was founded by the king of Oude, and observations were made with a transit instrument and mural circle by Major Wilcox from 1841 till his death in 1848. Both eae and manuscripts were destroyed during the mutiny in

1857.

Trivandrum, lat. + 8° 30’ 32”, long. 52 7™ 598 E. Founded by the rajah of Travancore in 1836, and furnished with a 5-inch re- fractor and a transit instrument by Dollond, and two mural circles by Jones and Simms. The building was badly constructed, and the instruments could not be properly placed, so that no astronomical work could be done, but valuable magnetical and meteorological observations were made by J. A. Broun from 1852 to 1863.

CHINA.

Peking. The Jesuit missionaries under Verbiest erected in 1673 uew instruments in the old observatory built in 1279 by Ko Show King. Observations were made and published at least up to 1770. The Russian embassy now maintains a meteorological observatory at Peking.

~~Long Kong. In 1888 the colonial Government established an observatory, furnished with a 6-inch refractor, a small transit instrument, and full equipment of magnetical and meteorological instruments.~~

~~TURKESTAN.~~

~~Tashkend. Founded in 1874 to assist in the geodetic operations of the Russian general staff; 6-inch refractor and meridian circle by Repsold.~~

~~AUSTRALIA,~~

~~Paramatta(New South Wales), lat. — 33° 48'50", long. 10h 4m 65-3 E. Erected by Sir Thomas Macdougall Brisbane, in 1821; handed over to the New South Wales Government in 1826 ; furnished with a transit instrument and a mural circle by Troughton, with which observations of southern stars were made by C. Riimker and Dunlop in the years 1822 to 1826, and from which a catalogue of 7385 stars was deduced (1835). The value of this catalogue is, however, lessened by instrumental imperfections. Observations were also made of comets, double stars, and nebule. From about 1835 no observa- tions seem to have been made; the observatory was abolished in~~

~~1855.~~

~~Sydney (NewSouth Wales), lat. — 38°51' 41"°1, long. 108 4™50s°6 E. Founded in 1855; furnished with the instruments from Para- matta, and a very inferior meridian circle by Jones (improved by Simms). In 1861 a 74-inch refractor by Merz, and in 1874 an 114-inch equatorial refractor by Schroder were mounted, and have been regularly used for observations of double stars. In 1879 a meridian circle by Simms of 6-inches aperture was acquired.~~

~~Windsor (New South Wales),lat. — 33°36' 28''9,long.103™ 218-7 E. Private observatory of MrJ. Tebbutt, who has devoted himself since 1861 to discoveries and observations of comets, using a 43-inch refractor by Cooke.~~

~~Melbourne (Victoria), lat. —37° 52' 7:2, long. 95 39™ 388°8 E. Founded in 1853 at Williamstown. In 1861 a meridian circle by Simms of 5-inches~~

~~aperture was mounted, but in 1868 the observa- tory was moved to Melbourne, lat. — 37° 49’ 58”°4, long. 9239™ 545‘8 E. The instrumental equipment was further increased by “ the great Melbourne telescope,” a Cassegrain reflector, equatorially mounted, of 4-feet aperture and 20-feet focal length, made by Th. Grubb and erected in 1869, since when it has been used for observations of nebule and lunar photography ; there is also an 8-inch refractor by Cooke, used for observations of comets, &c. The results of the meridian work from 1861 to 1875 are published in five 8vo volumes,~~

~~OBS—OCC~~

~~and a First Melbourne Catalogue of 1227 stars was published in~~

~~1874.~~

~~Adelaide (South Australia), lat. — 34°55’ 33’°8, long, 92 14m 218-3 EB.~~

~~Abo, 714.~~

~~Adelaide, 717.~~

~~Albany, 715.~~

~~Algiers, 716.~~

~~Allegheny, 715.~~

~~Altona, 712.~~

~~Amherst, 715.~~

~~Annapolis, 715.~~

~~Ann Arbor, 715.~~

~~Armagh, 710.~~

~~Athens, 714.~~

~~*Bedford (Smyth), 711.*~~

~~*Berlin, 712.*~~

~~*Berinerside*~~

~~*711.*~~

~~*Birr Castle (Rosse), 711.*~~

~~*Blackheath (Groom- bridge), 711.*~~

~~*a ai (Wrottesley),*~~

~~*12.*~~

~~*Bologna, 714.*~~

~~*Bonn, 712.*~~

~~*Bothkamp, 712.*~~

~~*Bremen, 712.*~~

~~*Breslau, 712.*~~

~~*(Crossley),*~~

~~*Cambridge, U.S., 715.*~~

~~*Cape of Good Hope, 716.*~~

~~*Chapultepec, 716.*~~

~~*Chicago, 715.*~~

~~*Christiania, 714.*~~

~~*Cincinnati, 715.*~~

~~*Clinton, 715.*~~

~~*Coimbra, 713.*~~

~~*Copenhagen, 715.*~~

~~*Cordova, 716.*~~

~~*Cork, 711.*~~

~~*Cracow, 713.*~~

~~*Cranbrook (Dawes), 711.*~~

~~*Cranford (De La Rue),*~~

~~*711.*~~

~~*Cuckfield (Knott), 711.*~~

~~*Dorpat, 714..*~~

~~*Dresden, 712.*~~

~~*Dublin, 710,*~~

~~*Dun Echt (Crawford),711.*~~

~~*Durban, 716.*~~

~~*Durham, 710.*~~

~~*Diisseldorf, 712.*~~

~~*Ealing (Cominon), 711.*~~

~~*Edinburgh, 710.*~~

~~*va7*~~

~~*In operation since 1861 ; has been gradually improved, and contains now an 8-inch equatorial by Cooke, and a transit circle has been*~~

~~*ordered.*~~

~~*INDEX OF OBSERVATORIES.*~~

~~*Geneva, 713, Georgetown, 715. Glasgow, 710. Glasgow, U.S., 715. Gotha, 712. Gottingen, 712. Greenwich, 710. Hamburg, 712. Hanover, U.S., 715. Hartwell (Lee), 711. Hastings, U.S., 715. Hayes (Hussey), 711. Helsingfors, 714, Herény, 713.*~~

~~*Hong Kong, 716. Hopefield (Dawes), 711. Kaloeza, 713.*~~

~~*Kasan, 714. Kensington (South), 711. Kew, 710.*~~

~~*Kharkoff, 714.*~~

~~*Kieff, 714.*~~

~~*Kiel, 712. Konigsberg, 712. Kremsiniinster, 713.*~~

~~*Brussels, 715. Ludapest, 713. Cadiz, 713. Cambridge, 710.*~~

~~*Etna, 714.*~~

~~*Florence, 714.*~~

~~*Gallarate, 714. Gateshead (Newall), 711.*~~

~~*Leipsic, 713.*~~

~~*Leyden, 715.*~~

~~*Leyton (Barclay), 711. Lilienthal, 713.*~~

~~*Lima, 716. Lisbon, 713. Liverpool, 710. Lucknow, 716. Lund, 714. Lyons, 712. Madison, 715.*~~

~~*| Madras, 716.*~~

~~*Madrid, 713. Mannheim, 713.*~~

~~*Markree (Cooper), 711.*~~

~~*Marseilles, 712. Melbourne, 716, Meudon, 712. Milan, 713. Modena, 714. Montsouris, 712. Moscow, 714.*~~

~~*Mount Hamilton, 715.*~~

~~*Munich, 713. Naples, 714. Neuchatel, 713. New Haven, 715. New York, 715. Nice, 712*~~

~~*Oliniitz, 713.*~~

~~*Ormskirk (Dawes), 711.*~~

~~*Ome Park (Tomline),*~~

~~*1,*~~

~~*Oxford (Radcliffe), 710.*~~

~~*Oxford (Univ.), 710.*~~

~~*Padua, 713,*~~

~~*Palermo, 714.*~~

~~*Paramatta, 716.*~~

~~*Paris, 712.*~~

~~*Peking, 716.*~~

~~*Plonsk, 714.*~~

~~*Pola, 713,*~~

~~*Potsdam, 713.*~~

~~*Prague, 713,*~~

~~*Princeton, 715.*~~

~~*Pulkowa, 714.*~~

~~*Redhill (Carrington) 711*~~

~~*Eipents Park (Bishop), ils*~~

~~*Rio de Janeiro, 716.*~~

~~*Rochester, U.S., 715.*~~

~~*Rome (Capitol), 714.*~~

~~*Rome (Coll. Rom.), 714.*~~

~~*Rugby, 711.*~~

~~*@. i p.)*~~

~~*Slough (Herschel), 711,*~~

~~*Southwark (South), 711.*~~

~~*Spires, 713. :*~~

~~*Starfield (Lassell), 711.*~~

~~*Stockholm, 714.*~~

~~*Stonyhurst, 711.*~~

~~*Strasburg, 713.*~~

~~*Sydney, 716.*~~

~~*Tarnbank (Fletcher), 711.*~~

~~*Tashkend, 716.*~~

~~*Tiflis, 714,*~~

~~*Toulouse, 712.*~~

~~*Trivandrum, 716.*~~

~~*Tulse Hill (Huggins), 711.*~~

~~*Turin, 713.*~~

~~*Upsala, 714.*~~

~~*Utrecht, 715.*~~

~~*Vienna, 713.*~~

~~*Vienna (Oppolzer), 713.*~~

~~*Vilna, 714.*~~

~~*Warsaw, 714.*~~

~~*Washington, 715.*~~

~~*Wateringbury (Dawes), (fit*~~

~~*Wilhelmshafen, 713.*~~

~~*Nikolaieff, 714. Northfield, 715. Odessa, 714. O'Gyalla, 713.*~~

~~*St Helena, 716.*~~

~~*St Petersburg, 714. Santiago, 716. Senftenberg, 713.*~~

~~*Williamstown, 716. Windsor, N.8.W., 716. Wrottesley Hall, 712. Zurich, 713,*~~

OBSIDIAN, a volcanic glass, said to have been named after its discoverer Obsidius. It is usually of black, brown, or grey colour, and in some varieties banded or striated. The colour is generally due not so much to the vitreous mass itself as to the presence of minute foreign bodies or micro- lites, which in some cases appear to be incipient crystals. of felspar, while in others they probably-consist of such minerals as augite, hornblende, biotite, and magnetite. These microscopic enclosures are occasionally arranged in curved lines, producing beautiful examples of fluidal struc- ture (see Gronoey, vol. x. p. 280, fig. 2). Spherulites are not uncommon in obsidian, and are sometimes sufii- ciently large to impart a distinctly globular structure to the stone. Other varieties are rich in microscopic pores, or may even present to the naked eye a vesicular texture. It is notable that certain kinds of obsidian possess a peculiar metallic sheen, which has been attributed by Professor Zirkel to the presence of minute ovoid enclosures, and not to a porous structure, as had been previously suspected. There can be no doubt that obsidian has been formed by the rapid cooling of a felspathic lava. It is found chiefly in Iceland, the Lipari Islands, Melos and other isles of the Greek archipelago, the Caucasus, Siberia, Mexico, Peru, and New Zealand.

Obsidian breaks with a beautifully conchoidal fracture, yielding sharp-edged fragments, which have been largely used in various parts of the world as arrow-points, spear- heads, and rude knives. For these purposes it was exten- sively employed, under the name of ztztlz, by the ancient Mexicans, who quarried it at the Cerro de las Navajas, or " Hill of Knives," near the head-waters of the Great Barauca. Obsidian has also been used as a mirror,—a purpose for which its strong lustre has recommended it. By the ancient Greeks and Romans it was worked as a gem-stone ; and, in consequence of its having been often imitated in black glass, there arose among collectors of gems in the last century the curious practice of calling all antique pastes "obsidians." Even at the present day the bottle-green varieties of obsidian are occasionally cut and polished as ornamental stones. They bear some re- semblance to peridotes and tourmalines, but are deficient in hardness. ;

OCCAM, Wixt1am oF (d. ¢. 1349), the great English schoolman (Doctor invincibilis), was born in the village of Ockham in the county of Surrey in

~~the end of the 13th~~

~~century. Scarcely any traces of his early life remain. Un- attested tradition says that the Franciscans persuaded him while yet a boy to enter their order, sent him to Oxford to Merton College, and to Paris, where he was first the pupil, then the successful rival, of the celebrated John Duns Scotus. He was at the height of his fame as a lecturer in the university of Paris when the famous quarrel arose between Philip the Fair and Pope Boniface VIII., but it does not appear that he took any part in the strife. He probably left France about 1314, and there are obscure traces of his presence in Germany, in Italy, and in England during the following seven years. We only know that in 1322 he appeared as the provincial of England at the celebrated assembly of the Franciscan order at Perugia, and that there he headed the revolt of the Franciscans against Pope John XXII. His share in this revolt and his writings to justify his position gave rise to his trial for heresy before the bishops of Ferrara and Bologna, which resulted in his imprisonment for seventeen weeks in the dungeons of the papal palace at Avignon. He and his companions—Michael of Cesena, general of the order, and Bonagratia—managed to escape, and found their way to Munich, where they formed the most conspicuous members of that band of Franciscans who aided Louis of Bavaria in his long contest with the papal curia. "Defend me with the sword and I will defend you with the pen," was Occam's proposal to Louis ; and from their haven of refuge at Munich the recusant Franciscans sent forth books and pamphlets refuting the extravagant pretensions of papal authority. Michael of Cesena died in 1342, and Occam, who had received from him the official seal of the order, was recognized as general by his party. The date of his death and the place of his burial are both uncertain. He probably died at Munich in 1349, and was buried in the graveyard of the Franciscan convent. Some writers assert that he was reconciled to Rome, and in proof of submission sent the official seal to William Farinerius, who had been ap- pointed general of the order by the pope; others declare that, like Cesena and Bonagratia, he died excommunicate,~~

~~William of Occam was the most prominent intellectual leader in an age which witnessed the disintegration of the~~

1 The famous Disputatio super Potestate Prelatis Ecclesiv, atque Principibus Terrarum commissa, which belongs to this controversy, and has been commonly attributed to Occam, was probably written by Peter Dubois, a Parisian lawyer.

yaks) ore OC & Gi

old scholastic realism, the rise of the theological scepticism of the later Middle Ages, the great contest between pope and emperor which laid the foundations of modern theories of government, and the quarrel between the Roman curia and the Franciscans which showed the long-concealed antagonism between the theories of Hildebrand and Francis of Assisi; and he shared in all these movements.

The common account of his philosophical position, that he reintroduced nominalism, which had been in decadence since the days of Roscellinus and Abelard, by teaching that universals were only flatus vocis, is scarcely correct. The expression is nowhere found in his writings. He revived nominalism by collecting and uniting isolated opinions upon the meaning of universals into a compact system, and popularized his views by associating them with the logical principles which were in his day commonly taught in the universities. He linked the doctrines of nominalism on to the principles of the logic of Psellus, which had been intro- duced into the West in the Swmmule of Peter of Spain, and made them intelligible to common understandings. His philosophical teaching contains little that was new ; and all the details of nominalism had been taught by writers who preceded him. The problem of medizval philosophy, however differently stated, was the same question which faces modern thinkers. How comes it that things which are seen as separate individual objects can be thought of in classes, and so science created? What underlies the possibility of using common nouns when everything appre- hended by the senses is a separate subsisting phenomenon ? Realism solved the problem by supposing something i rerum natura which actually corresponded to the class, and whose proper name was the common noun ; nominalisin explained that the logical faculties of the mind grouped individuals by its own powers, and that universals were creations of the mind which thought. The three chief positions in the nominalist solution of the possibility of a common knowledge were all the

~~common property of scho- lastic thinkers before Occam's day. It had been currently taught (by Aigidius and by Antonius Andreas) that the principal use of universals, whatever they were in them- selves, was to serve as logical predicates, and in this way bring a variety of subjects together, or, in other words, group individual things ina class. Many of the schoolmen (Walter Burleigh, Durandus, &c.) declared that this logical function of universals was the one thing about them that deserved notice and constituted their essential nature. Durandus and others had asserted that all that universals did was in this logical fashion to bring together several 'individual objects in such a way that they could be denoted by the same common term. These propositions really ex- haust the essential doctrines of nominalism, and they were all stated and were the common property of scholastic philosophy before Occam's time. What he did was to make nominalism simpler by introducing a way of putting the theory suggested by the Byzantine logic. Psellus and his followers explained many difficulties in logic by showing that in speech words were used like the figures of arithmetic or the signs of algebra. There is no reason why z should mean four sheep except the will of the algebraist who starts with that assumption. In the same way, there is no reason why the word "triangle" should stand for the thought it expresses, or the thought for the infinitude of individual triangles ; but by swppositio the one is used for the other, and we can reason with word or thought just as the algebraist can do with his signs. Universals, said Occam, bore the same relation to the infinite number of individuals that signs do to the things signified. The universal, be it a thought or a word, is nothing but a sign which by suppo- sitio is beforehand taken to denote a number of individual things, and is thus the common noun denoting them all.~~

~~This way of explaining community of knowledge and of defending nominalism went a good deal deeper, and became a theory of knowledge which led Occam into what was called theological scepticism. Most of the adherents of the mystical schools of the Middle Ages held that the doc- trines of the church were isolated truths, each of which was to be received by a species of enthusiastic intuition, and were incapable either of systematic arrangement in a body of divinity or of being intelligibly comprehended by the mind. Before Occam appeared, mystics taught a theory of theological scepticism which declared that the truths of the~~

~~Christian faith were to be taken on trust, although the reason might find logical flaws in each one of them. Occam made this theological scepticism almost a commonplace by basing it on his theory of knowledge. All knowledge, he taught, contained a double inadequacy, which arose from the needs of thinking and of expressing thought in language. Words were but signs, inadequate representations of the thoughts they stood for, and the thoughts themselves were inadequate symbols used by sup- positio instead of the individual objects which they repre- sented. The real individual thing was apprehended by a vis inturtiva, in sense, Vision, or touch, &c., but, when the mind begins to think or to argue, error may creep in, for thoughts are inadequate expressions, stereotyped aspects, and words are only signs of signs. Theological knowledge is like all other knowledge, theological argumentation has the inadequacy that belongs to every process of thought. The Centilogium Theologicum usually appended to Occam's Commentary on the Sentences of Peter the Lombard contains a consistent application of this theory of knowledge to theo- logical dogmas, every one of which is shown to be irrational, but at the same time true in the vision of faith. The most interesting application of his method, however, is to be found in the Z'ractatus de Sacramento Altaris, in which, while accepting as a matter of faith the medizeval doctrine of the real presence, Occam shows that a much more rational theory might be propounded, and actually sets forth a theory of the Eucharist which was afterwards adopted almost verbatim by Luther, and which is now known as consubstantiation.~~

~~Occam was best known during his lifetime and in the succeeding centuries for the part he took in the prolonged contest between Louis of Bavaria and the papal curia. Louis had been legadly elected emperor of Germany, but the pope, who claimed that his power to crown gave him the right to veto any election, refused to acknowledge Louis, and espoused the cause of his rival. The contest was prolonged during more than a quarter of a century, and its interest lies chiefly in the writings of a group of men who, sheltered at Munich, published their views on the relations between civil and religious authority, and on the rights of nations. 'The most remarkable of the many publications which this controversy called forth was undoubtedly the Defensor Pacis of Marsilius of Padua, which appeared in 1324 or 1326, and which was the pre- diction of the modern, as Dante's De Monarchia (1311- 13) was the epitaph of the medizval state. Occam published several~~

~~treatises in which, while he confines him- self more to the details of the controversy going on before him, there are evident traces of sympathy with the opin- ions of Marsilius. Pope Clement VI. has left on record that Marsilius "was taught his errors by and got them from" William of Occam; if this be true, the Italian jurist must have had private intercourse with the great English schoolman, for all Occam's genuine writings on the contro- versy appeared after the Defensor Pacis. In the Opus nonaginta dierum (1330-33), and in its successors, the Tractatus de dogmatibus Johannis XXII, papx (1333-34), the Compendium errorum Johannis XXII, pape (1335-38),~~

~~OCEKE—OCH~~

~~and in the Defensorium contra errores Johannis XXII. papx | far~~

~~(1335-39), Occam only incidentally expounds his views as a publicist ; the books are mainly, some of them entirely, theological, but they served the purpose of the emperor and of his party, because they cut at the root of the spirit- ual as well as of the temporal supremacy of the pope. In his writing Super potestate summi pontificis octo questio- num decisiones (1339-42) Occam attacks the temporal supremacy of the pope, insists on the independence of kingly authority, which he maintains is as much an ordi- nance of God as is spiritual rule, and discusses what is meant by the state. His views on the independence of civil rule were even more decidedly expressed in the Zractatus de jurisdictione imperatoris in causis matrimonialibus, in which, in spite of the medizval idea that matrimony is a sacrament, he demands that it belongs to the civil power to decide cases of affinity and to state the prohibited de- grees. His last work, De Electione Caroli VI, restates his opinions upon temporal authority and adds little that is new.~~

~~In all his writings against Pope John XXII. Occam inveighs against the pope's opinions and decisions on the value of the life of poverty in the practice of religion. The Compendium errorum selects four papal constitutions which involved a declaration against evangelical poverty, and insists that they are full of heresy. Occam was a sin- cere Franciscan, and believed with his master that salvation was won through rigid imitation of Jesus in His poverty and obedience, and up to his days it had always been~~

~~pos- sible for Franciscans to follow the rules of their founder within his order. But Pope John XXII. took advantage of a dispute between the more zealous Franciscans and others who had departed from the strict rule of their founder to condemn the doctrine of evangelical poverty, and to excommunicate. those who held it. This made many Franciscans question whether, when the pope set his opinion against that of Francis their founder, the pope could be infallible; and some of them were so convinced of the necessity of evangelical poverty for a truly Christian life that they denounced the pope when he refused them leave to practise it as Antichrist, or the being who stood between Christians and the means of holy living. After Occam's days the opinions of Francis prevailed in many quarters, but the genuine Franciscans had no place within the church. They were Fraticelli, Beghards, Lollards, or other confraternities unrecognized by the church, and in steady opposition to her government.~~

~~There is no good monograph on Occam. For an account of his logic, see Prantl, Geschichte der Logik (1855-70); for his philosophy, see Stock), Geschichte der Philosophie des Mittclalters (1864-66), vol. ii.; for his publicist writings, see Riezler, Die literarischen Wider- sacher der Pépste zur Zeit Ludwig des Baiers (1874). See also Lindsay's article on "Occam and his connexion with the Reforma- tion," in the Brit. Quart. Review, July 1872. (1, BL Ls)~~

~~OCEAN. See Sza.~~

~~OCEANIA. See Potynesta.~~

~~OCELOT. The smaller spotted or striped species of the genus I'elis (see MamMaLta, vol. xv. p. 435), of both the Old and the New World, are commonly called tiger-cats. Of these, one of the best-known and beautifully marked forms, peculiar to the American continent, has received the name of Ocelot (Felis pardalis), though zoologists are still un- decided whether under this designation several distinct species have not been included, or whether all the ocelots are to be referred to a single species showing great indivi- dual or racial variation. Their fur has always a tawny yellow or reddish-grey ground colour, and is marked with black spots, aggregated in streaks and blotches, or in elon- gated rings enclosing an area which is~~

rather darker than the general ground colour. They range through the wooded parts of tropical America, ffOm Arkansas in the north as

719

south as Paraguay, and in their habits resemble the

sy x)

Ocelot.

other smaller members of the cat tribe, being ready climbers and exceedingly bloodthirsty.

OCHINO, Brrnarpino (1487-1564), Italian Reformer, was born at Siena in 1487. At an early age he entered the order of Observantine Friars, and rose to be its general, but, craving a stricter rule, transferred himself in 1534 to the newly-founded order of Capuchins. He had already become famous for zeal and eloquence, and was the intimate friend of the noble Spaniard Juan de Valdés, of Bembo, Vittoria Colonna, Pietro Martire, Carnesecchi, and others destined to incur the suspicion of heresy, either from the moderation of their characters or from the evangelical tincture of their theology. In 1538 he was elected vicar- general of his order ; in 1539, urged by Bembo, he visited Venice and delivered a remarkable course of sermons, show- ing a decided tendency to the doctrine of justification by faith, which appears still more evidently in his dialogues published the same year. He was suspected and denounced, but nothing ensued until the establishment of the Inquisi- tion in Rome in June 1542, at the instigation of the austere zealot Caraffa. Ochino almost immediately received a cita- tion to Rome, and set out to obey it about the middle of August. According to his own statement, he was deterred from presenting himself at Rome by the warnings of Cardinal Contarini, whom he found at Bologna, dying of poison administered by the reactionary party. He turned aside to Florence, and after some hesitation escaped across. the Alps to Geneva. He was cordially received by Calvin, and published within two years several volumes of Prediche, controversial tracts rather than sermons, explaining and vindicating his change of religion. He also addressed replies to Vittoria Colonna, Tolomei, and other Italian sympathizers who were reluctant to go

to the same length as himself. His own breach with the Roman Church was decisive and irreparable, and illustrated the justice of Luther's description of justification by faith alone as the articulus stantis vel cadentis ecclesix, the vital point whose: acceptance or rejection drew everything else along with it. In 1545 he became minister of the Italian Protestant congregation at Augsburg, which he was compelled to. forsake when, in January 1547, the city was occupied by the imperial forces. He found an asylum in England, where he was made a prebendary of Canterbury, received a pension from Edward VI.'s privy purse, and composed his capital work, the Tragedy. This remarkable performance, originally written in Latin, is extant only in the translation

of Bishop Ponet, a splendid specimen of nervous English. The conception is highly dramatic; the form is that of a series of dialogues. Lucifer, enraged at the spread of Christ's kingdom, convokes the fiends in council, and re- solves to set up the pope as Antichrist. The state, repre- sented by the emperor Phocas, is persuaded to connive at the pope's assumption of spiritual authority ; the other churches are intimidated into acquiescence ; Lucifer's pro- jects seem fully accomplished, when Heaven raises up Henry VIIL and his son for their overthrow. The conception bears a remarkable resemblance to that of Paradise Lost ; and it is nearly certain that Milton, whose sympathies with the Italian Reformation were so strong, must have been acquainted with it. Several of Ochino's Prediche were also translated into English by a lady, Anna Cook, after- wards wife of Sir Nicholas Bacon; and he published numerous controversial treatises on the Continent. In 1553 the accession of Mary drove him from England, He became pastor of the Italian congregation at Zurich, com- posed principally of refugees from Locarno, and continued to write books which, repeating the history of his early works, gave increasing evidence of his alienation from the strict orthodoxy around him. The most important of these was the Labyrinth, a discussion of the freedom of the will, covertly assailing the Calvinistic doctrine of predestination. In 1563 the long-gathering storm of obloquy burst upon the occasion of the publication of his Thirty Dialogues, in one of which his adversaries maintained that he had justi- fied polygamy under colour of a pretended refutation. His dialogues on divorce and the Trinity

were also obnoxious. No explanation was allowed. Ochino was banished from Zurich, and, after being refused a shelter by other Protestant cities, directed his steps towards Poland, at that time the most tolerant state in Europe. He had not resided there long when an edict appeared banishing all foreign dis- sidents. ~Flying from the country, he encountered the plague at Pinczoff; three of his four children were carried off; and he himself, worn out: by misfortune, expired in solitude and obscurity at Schlakau in Moravia, about the end of 1564. His reputation among Protestants was at the time so bad that he was charged with the author- ship of the treatise De tribus Impostoribus, as well as with having carried his alleged approval of polygamy into practice. It was reserved for his recent biographer Dr Benrath to justify him, and to represent him as a fervent evangelist and at the same time asa speculative thinker with a passion for free inquiry, always learning and unlearning and arguing out difficult questions with himself in his dialogues, frequently without attaining to any absolute conviction. The general tendency of his mind, neverthe- less, was counter to tradition, and he is remarkable as resuming in his individual history all the phases of Pro- testant theology from Luther to Socinus. He is especially interesting to Englishmen for his residence in England, and the probable influence of more than one of his writings upon Milton.

All attainable information respecting Ochino is collected in Dr Benrath's excellent German biography, translated into English by Miss Helen Zimmern, with a preface by the Rev. W. Arthur, London, 1876. (R. G.)

OCHRE. See PIicMENTs.

OCKLEY, Staon (1678-1720), Orientalist, was born at Exeter in 1678. He was educated at Queens' College, Cambridge, and graduated B.A. in 1697, M.A. in 1701, and B.D. in 1710; he became fellow of Jesus College and vicar of Swavesey, and in 1711 was chosen Arabic pro- fessor of the university. He hada large family, and his latter days were embittered by pecuniary embarrassments, which form the subject of a chapter in D'Israeli's Calamities of Authors. The preface to the second volume of his History of the Saracens is dated from Cambridge castle,

where he lay a prisoner for debt. He died in the year 1720. His chief work is The History of the Saracens, in 2 vols. 8vo, 1708-18, which long enjoyed a

~~great reputa- tion; unfortunately Ockley took as his main authority a MS. in the Bodleian of Pseudo-Wakidi's Futtéh al-Sham, which is rather historical romance than history.~~

~~O'CLERY, Micuaezt (born ¢. 1575). See Centric Lrrer- ATURE, vol. v. p. 307.~~

~~O'CONNELL, Dante (1775-1847), born on 6th August, 1775, near Cahirciveen, a small town in Kerry, Ireland, was sprung from a race the heads of which had been Celtic chiefs, had lost their lands in the wars of Ireland, and had felt the full weight of the harsh penal code which long held the Catholic Irish down. His ancestors in the 18th century had sent recruits to the famous brigade of Trish exiles in the service of France, and those who remained at home either lived as tenants on the possessions of which they had once been lords, or gradually made money by smug- gling, a very general calling in that wild region. Thus he inherited from his earliest years, with certain traditions of birth, and high station, a strong dislike of British rule in Treland and of the dominant owners of the soil, a firm attachment to his proscribed faith, and habitual skill in evading the law; and these influences may be traced in his subsequent career. O'Connell learned the rudiments at a school in Cork, one of the first which the state in those evil days allowed to be opened fcr Catholic teach- ing; anda few years afterwards he became a student, as was customary with Irish youths of his class, in the colleges of St Omer and Douai. His great abilities, it is said, were there perceived by the principals, and their peculiar training undoubtedly left a permanent mark on his mind and nature, for the casuistry and the diction of the Romish priesthood distinctly appear in his speeches and writings, and he had much of the ecclesiastic in his manners and bearing. These years, too, in France had, in another way, a decided effect in forming his judgment on political questions of high moment. He was an eye-witness on more than one occasion of the folly and excesses of the French Revolution; and these scenes not only increased his love for his church, but strongly impressed him with that dread of anarchy, of popular movements ending in blood- shed, and of communistic and socialistic views which characterized him in after life. To these experiences, too, we may partly ascribe the reverence for law, for the rights of property, and for the monarchical form of government which he appears to have sincerely felt;**

and, demagogue as he became in a certain sense, they gave his mind a deep Conservative tinge. In 1798 he was called to the bar of Ireland, and though, as professing a still degraded creed, he was shut out from the chance of promotion, though he could not even obtain a silk gown, and though, what was of more importance, he was subjected in a variety of ways to caste hostility, he rose before long to the very highest eminence among contemporary lawyers and advocates. This position was in the main due toa dexterity in con- ducting causes, and especially in examining witnesses, in which he had no rival at the Irish bar, and here his pro- found sagacity, observant cunning, and intuitive knowledge of the native character enabled him to accomplish wonders, even at the present day not wholly forgotten. He was, however, a thorough lawyer besides, inferior in scientific learning to two or three of his most conspicuous rivals, but well read in every department of law, and especially a master in all that relates to crintinal and constitutional jurisprudence. As an advocate, too, he stood in the very highest rank ; in mere oratory he was surpassed by Plun- ket, and in rhetorical gifts by Bushe, the only speakers to be named with him in his best days at the Irish bar ; but his style, if not of the most perfect kind, and often

ee

OrC ONDE LL

disfigured by decided faults, was marked by a peculiar subtlety and manly power, and produced great and striking effects. On the whole, in the art of winning over juries he had scarcely an equal in the law courts.

To understand, however, O'Connell's greatness we must look to the field of Irish politics. From early manhood he had turned his mind to the condition of Ireland and the mass of her people. The worst severities of the penal code had been, in a certain measure, relaxed, but the Catholics were still in a state of vassalage, and they were still pariahs compared with the Protestants. The rebellion of 1798 and the union had dashed the hopes of the Catholic leaders, and their prospects of success seemed very remote when, in the first years of the present century, the still unknown lawyer took up their cause. Up to this juncture the question had been in the hands of Grattan and other Protestants, and of a small knot of Catholic nobles and prelates ; but their efforts had not accomplished much, and they aimed only

~~at a kind of compromise, which, while conceding their principal claims, would have placed their church in subjection to the state. O'Connell inaugurated a different policy, and had soon given the Catholic movement an energy it had not before possessed. Himself a Catholic of birth and genius, unfairly kept back in the race of life, he devoted his heart and soul to the cause, and his character and antecedents made him the champion who ultimately assured its triumph. Having no sympathy with the rule of "the Saxon," he saw clearly how weak was the hold of the Government and the Pro- testant caste on the vast mass of the Catholic nation ; having a firm faith in the influence of his church, he per- ceived that it might be made an instrument of immense political power in Ireland ; and, having attained a mastery over the lawyer's craft, he knew how a great popular movement might be so conducted as to elude the law and yet be in the highest degree formidable. With these convictions, he formed the bold design of combining the Irish Catholic millions, under the superintendence of the native priesthood, into a vast league against the existing order of things, and of wresting the concession of the Catholic claims from every opposing party in the state by an agitation, continually kept up, and embracing almost the whole of the people, but maintained within constitu- tional limits, though menacing and shaking the frame of society. He gradually succeeded in carrying out his pur- pose : Catholic associations, at first small, but slowly assum- ing larger proportions, were formed in different parts of the country ; attempts of the Government and of the local authorities to put them down were skilfully baffled by legal devices of many kinds; and at last, after a conflict of years, all Catholic Ireland was arrayed to a man in an organization of enormous power, that demanded its rights with no uncertain voice. O'Connell, having long before attained an undisputed and easy ascendency, stood at the head of this great national movement ; but it will be observed that, having been controlled from first to last by himself and the priesthood, it had little in common with the mob rule and violence which he had never ceased to regard with aversion. His election for Clare in 1828 proved the forerunner of the inevitable change, and the Catholic claims were granted the next year, to the intense regret of the Protestant Irish, by a Government avowedly hostile to the last, but unable to withstand the overwhelming pressure of a people united to insist on justice. The result, unquestionably, was almost wholly due to the energy and genius of a single man, though the Catholic question would have been settled, in all~~

~~probability, in the course of time ; and it must be added that O'Connell's triumph, which showed what agitation. could effect in Ireland, was far from doing his country unmixed good.~~

~~721~~

~~O'Connell joined the Whigs on entering parliament, and gave effective aid to the cause of reform. The agitation, however, on the Catholic question had quickened the sense of the wrongs of Ireland, and the Irish Catholics were engaged ere long in a crusade against tithes and the established church, the most offensive symbols of their inferiority in the state. It may be questioned whether O'Connell was not rather led than a leader in this; the movement, at least, passed beyond his control, and the country for many months was terrorized by scenes of appalling crime and bloodshed. Lord Grey, very properly, proposed measures of repression to put this anarchy down, and O'Connell opposed them with extreme vehemence, a seeming departure from his avowed principles, but natural in the case of a popular tribune. This caused a breach between him and the Whigs; but he gradually returned to his allegiance to them when they practically abolished Irish tithes, cut down the revenues of the established church, and endeavoured to secularize the surplus. By this time O'Connell had attained a position of great emi- nence in the House of Commons: as a debater he stood in the very first rank, though he had entered St Stephen's after fifty ; and his oratory, massive and strong in argu- ment, although too often scurrilous and coarse, and marred by a bearing in which cringing flattery and rude bullying were strangely blended, made a powerful, if not a pleasing, impression. O'Connell steadily supported Lord Melbourne's Government, gave it valuable aid in its general measures, and repeatedly expressed his cordial approval of its policy in advancing Irish Catholics to places of trust and power in the state, though personally he refused a high judicial office. These were not the least useful years of his life, and they clearly brought out the real character and tend- encies of his views on politics. Though a strict adherent of the creed of Rome, he was a Liberal, nay a Radical, as regards measures for the vindication of human liberty, and he sincerely advocated the rights of conscience, the emancipation of the slave, and freedom of trade. But his rooted aversion to the democratic theories imported from France, which were gradually winning their way into Eng- land, only grew~~

stronger with advancing age; he denounced Chartism in unmeasured terms ; the sovereign had no more loyal subject ; and if, as became him, he often condenmned the tyranny of bad Continental Governinents, he reverenced the constitution and laws of England interpreted in a gener- ous spirit. His conservatism, however, was most apparent in his'antipathy to socialistic doctrines and his tenacious regard for the claims of property. He actually opposed the Irish Poor Law, as encouraging a communistic spirit; he declared a movement against rent a crime ; and, though he had a strong sympathy with the Irish peasant, and advo- cated a reform of his precarious tenure, it is difficult to imagine that he could have approved the cardinal principle of the Irish Land Act, the judicial adjustment of rent by the state.

O'Connell changed his policy as regards Ireland when Peel became minister in 1841. He declared that a Tory régime in his country was incompatible with good govern- ment, and he began an agitation for the repeal of the union. One of his motives in taking this course no doubt was a strong personal dislike of Peel, with whom he had often been in collision, and who had singled him out in 1829 for what must be called a marked affront. O'Connell, nevertheless, was sincere and even consistent in his con- duct : he had denounced the union in early manhood as an obstacle to the Catholic cause ; he had spoken against the measure in parliament ; he believed that the claims of Ireland were set aside or slighted in what he deemed an alien assembly ; and, though he had ceased for some years to demand repeal, and regarded it as rather a means

than an end, he was throughout life an avowed repealer. It should be observed, however, that in his judgment the repeal of the union would not weaken the real bond be- tween Great Britain and Ireland ; and he had nothing in common with the rebellious faction who, at a later period, openly declared for the separation of the two countries by force. The organization which had effected such mar- vellous results in 1828-29 was recreated for the new pro- ject. Enormous meetings, convened by the priesthood, and directed or controlled by O'Connell, assembled in 1842-43, and probably nine-tenths of the Irish Catholics were unanimous in the cry for repeal.

O'Connell seems to have thought success certain ; but he had not perceived the essential difference between his earlier agitation and this. The enlightened opinion of the three kingdoms for the most part approved the Catholic claims, and as cer- tainly it condemned repeal. After some hesitation Peel resolved to put down the repeal movement. A vast in- tended meeting was proclaimed unlawful, and O'Connell was arrested and held to bail, with ten or twelve of his principal followers. He was convicted after the trials that followed, but they were not good specimens of equal justice, and the sentence was reversed by the House of Lords, with the approbation of competent judges. The spell, however, of O'Connell's power had vanished ; his health had suffered much from a short confinement ; he was verging upon his seventieth year; and he was alarmed and pained by the growth of a party in the repeal ranks who scoffed at his views, and advocated the revolutionary doctrines which he had always feared and abhorred. Before long famine had fallen on the land, and under this visitation the repeal movement, already paralysed, wholly collapsed. O'Connell died soon afterwards, on 15th May 1847, at Genoa, whilst on his way to Rome, profoundly afflicted by his country's misery, and by the failure of his late high hopes, yet soothed in dying by sincere sympathy, felt throughout Ireland and largely in Europe, and expressed even by political foes. He was a remarkable man in every sense of the word ; Catholic Ireland calls him her "Liberator" still; and history will say of him that, with some failings, he had many and great gifts, that he was an orator of a high order, and that, agitator as he was, he possessed the wisdom, the caution, and the tact of a real statesman. O'Connell married in 1802 his cousin Mary O'Connell, by whom he had three daughters and four sons. Of the latter, all have at one time or another had seats in parliament. (w. 0. M.)

O'CONNOR, Frarcus Epwarp (1796-1855), Chartist leader, was born in 1796, and entered parliament as member for the county of Cork in 1832. Though a zealous supporter of repeal, he endeavoured to supplant O'Connell as the leader of the party, an attempt which aroused against him the popular antipathy of the Irish. When, therefore, in 1834 he was unseated on petition, he resolved to go to England,where he established the Worthern Star newspaper, and became a vehement advocate of the Chartist movement. In 1847 he was returned for Notting- ham, and in 1848 he presided at a Chartist demonstration in London, which caused great alarm.

(See CHARTISM, vol. v. p. 434.) The eccentricity and extravagance which had characterized his opinions from the beginning of his career gradually became more marked until they developed into insanity. He began to conduct himself in a strange and disorderly manner in the House of Commons, and in 1853 he was found to be of unsound mind by a commis- sion of lunacy. He died at London 30th August 1855, and was buried in Kensal Green cemetery.

OCTAVIA. (1.) Octavia, daughter of Caius Octavius, preetor, 61 B.c., and sister of the emperor Augustus, was married to C. Marcellus, one of the bitterest enemies of Julius Cesar. In 41 her husband died, and she was

married immediately to Antony, with the design of secur- ing peace between her brother and her new husband. Her beauty and her high character are praised in the warmest terms by all authorities, and at first Antony devoted him- self to her, and seemed to have forgotten his jealousy of her brother and his old love for Cleopatra. But his affec- tion for his wife was not strong enough to counterbalance the feelings that weighed against it. In the year 36 he went off to the Parthian war and to meet Cleopatra, and, when in the following year Octavia brought out troops and money to him,.he refused to see her and bade her go back to Rome. She sent the money to him and returned

'to his house, where she educated his son by a former wife

along with her own children. In 32 Antony formally divorced her, but she always protected his children, even those of Cleopatra. She died 11 3B.c., and was buried with the highest honours by the state. (2.) Octavia, daughter of the emperor Claudius, was married in her twelfth year to NzRo (q.v.). A Latin tragedy on her fate is attributed, though wrongly, to Seneca.

OCTOBER, the eighth month of the old Roman year, which began in spring. By the Julian arrangement, while retaining its old name, it became the tenth month, and had thirty-one days assigned to it. The meditrinalia, when a libation of new wine was made in honour of Meditrina, were celebrated on the 11th, the faunalia on the 13th, and the equiria, when the "equus October" was sacrificed to Mars in the Campus Martius, on the 15th. The principal ecclesiastical feasts in October are those of St Luke on the 18th

~~and of St Simon and St Jude on the 28th. By the Slavs this is called "yellow month," from the fading of the leaf; to the Anglo-Saxons it was known as Winter- fylleth, because at this full moon (fylleth) winter was supposed to begin. It corresponds partly to the Vendé- miaire and partly to the Brumaire of the first French republic.~~

~~OCTOPUS. See Currierisy, vol. vi. p. 735; and Mo.iusca, vol. xvi. p. 669 sq.~~

~~OCYDROME, a word formed from Ocydromus, meaning " swift-runner," and suggested by Wagler in 1830 as a generic term for the New-Zealand bird called in the then unpublished manuscripts of the elder Forster Rallus troglo- dytes, and so designated in 1788 by Gmelin, who knew of it through Latham's English description. Wagler's sug- gestion has since been generally adopted, and the genus Ocydromus is accepted by most ornithologists as a valid group of Rallide ; but the number of species it contains is admittedly doubtful, owing to the variability in size and pluinage which they exhibit, and their correct nomencla- ture must for the present be considered uncertain. Mr Buller in his Birds of New Zealand identifies the " Wood- hen," observed in great abundance on the shores of Dusky Bay in 1773 by Cook and his companions on his second voyage, with the Gallirallus fuscus described and figured by Du Bus in 1847, and accordingly calls it O. fuscus ; but it cannot be questioned that the species from this locality—which appears to have a somewhat limited range in the Middle Island,! and never to be met with far from the sea-coast, where it lives wholly on crustaceans and other marine animals—is identical with that of the older authors just mentioned. In 1786 Sparrman, who had also been of Cook's company, figured and described as Rallus australis a bird which, though said by him to be that of the southern coast of New Zealand, differs so much from the &. troglo- dytes as to compel a belief in its specific distinctness ; and~~

~~1 Tt also occurs in Stewart Island, and singularly enough on the more distant group known as the Snares. The Gallirallus brachy- pterus of Lafresnaye, of which the typical (and unique ?) specimen from an unknown locality is in the Caen Museum, has also been referred to this species, but the propriety of the act may be doubted.~~

~~indeed his species has generally been identified with the common ‘“ Weeka” of the Maories of the Middle Island, which can scarcely be the case if his statement is abso- lutely true, since the latter does not appear to reach so far to the southward, or to affect the sea-shore. It may there- fore be fairly inferred that his subject was obtained from some other locality. The North Island of New Zealand has what is allowed to be a third species, to which the name of Ocydromus earli is attached, and this was formerly very plentiful; but “its numbers are rapidly decreasing, and there is every chance of its soon being as extinct as is the species which tenanted Norfolk Island on its discovery by Cook in 1774, and was doubtless distinct from all the rest, but no specimen of it is known to exist in any museum.! Another species, O. sylvestris, smaller and lighter in colour than any of the rest, was found in 1869 to linger yet in Lord Howe’s Island (Proc. Zool. Society, 1869, p. 472, pl. xxxv.). Somewhat differing from Ocydromus, but appa- rently very nearly allied to it, is a little bird peculiar, it is believed, to the Chatham Islands (bis, 1872, p. 247), and now regarded by Captain Hutton as the type of a genus Cabalus under the name of C. modestus, while other natu- ralists consider it to be the young of the rare Rallus dieffen- bacht. So far the distribution of the Ocydromine form is wholly in accordance with that of most others characteristic of the New-Zealand sub-region; but a curious exception is asserted to have been found in the Gallirallus lafresnay- anus of New Caledonia, which, though presenting some structural differences, has been referred to the genus Ocydromus.~~

~~The chief interest attaching to the Ocydromes is their inability to use in flight the wings with which they are furnished, and hence an extreme probability of the form becoming wholly extinct in ashort time. Of this inability there are other instances among the Rallidz (see Moor- HEN, vol. xvi. p. 808); but here we have coupled with it the curious fact that in the skeleton the angle which the scapula makes with the coracoid is greater than a right angle, a peculiarity shared only, so far as is known, among the Carinate by the Dodo. The Ocydromes are birds of dull plumage, and mostly of retiring habits, though the common species is said to show great boldness towards man, and, from the accounts of Cook and the younger Forster, the birds seen by them displayed little fear. It is also declared that they will interbreed with common poultry, and more than one writer vouches for the truth of this extraordinary statement. It is to be hoped that~~

the naturalists of New Zealand will not allow the form to become extinct if any effectual means can be taken to per- petuate it ; but, should that fate be inevitable, it at least behoves the present generation to see that every possible piece of information concerning the birds be recorded, and every possible preparation illustrating their structure be made, while yet there is time ; for, though much has been written on the subject, it is obvious from one of the latest papers (Z'rans. New Zealand Institute, x. p. 213) that there is still more to be learned, some of which may throw further light on the affinities of the birds of the extinct genus Aptornis. (A. N.)

ODDFELLOWS, a name adopted by the members of certain social institutions having mystic signs of recogni-

1 As before stated (Nestor, p. 354 ante), the younger Forster remarked that the birds of Norfolk Island, though believed by the other naturalists of Cook's ship to be generally the same as those of New Zealand, were distinguished by their brighter colouring. There can now be little doubt that all the land-birds were specifically distinct. It seems to be just possible that Sparrman's R. australis, which cannot be very confidently referrel] to any known species of Ocydromus, may have been from Norfolk Island ; but there is little probability of the point ever being determined, though it seems to be worth the atten- tion of ornithologists.

tion, initiatory rites and ceremonies, and various grades of dignity and honour. The objects the associations have in view are purely social and benevolent ; the sphere of their operations is confined wholly to their own members, and secrecy is enjoined in regard to all benevolent acts. As in the case of most other institutions of a similar kind, a claim of venerable antiquity has been set up for the order of Oddfellows,—the most common account of its origin ascribing it to the Jewish legion under Titus, who, it is asserted, received from that emperor its first charter written on a golden tablet. Statements even more im- probable and fantastic have been made regarding its foundation, but Oddfellows themselves now generally admit that the institution cannot be traced to an earlier period than the first half of the 18th century, and explain the name as adopted at a time when the severance into sects and classes was so wide that persons aiming at social

~~union and mutual help were a marked exception to the general rule. Mention is made by Defoe of the society of Oddfellows, but the oldest lodge of which the name has been handed down is the Loyal Aristarcus, No. 9, which met in 1745 "at the Oakley Arms, Borough of Southwark ; Globe Tavern, Hatton Garden; or the Boar's Head in Smithfield, as the noble master may direct." The earliest lodges were supported by each member and visitor paying a penny to the secretary on entering the lodge, and special sums were voted to any brother in need. If out of work he was supplied with a card and funds to reach the next lodge, and he went from lodge to lodge until he found employment. Now there is a regular system of periodical dues and collections, with occasional fees proportioned to the dignities or degrees conferred in the lodges. At first each lodge was practically independent of the others, and had its own special rules and government, but a close bond of unity gradually grew up between the large majority of the lodges until they adopted a definite common ritual and became confederated under the name of the Patriotic Order. Towards the end of the century many of the lodges were broken up by State prosecutions on the suspi- cion that their purposes were "seditious," but the society, changing its name and location, continued to exist in a sort of moribund condition, as the Union Order of Oddfellows, until in 1809 several of the members endeavoured to resuscitate its dormant energies. Finding, however, that it was impossible to excite an interest in anything higher than convivial meetings, they in 1813, at a convention in Manchester, formally seceded from the Union Order and formed the Independent Order of Oddfellows, Manchester Unity, which increased with enormous rapidity, and now overshadows all the minor societies in England. Accord- ing to the Oddfellows' Magazine for October 1883, the membership of the order in 1834 was 32,832, which in 1837 had increased to 80,570 and in 1845 to 239,374, while in January 1883 the numbers had risen to 565,368, the lodges amounting to 4251. In 1881 the receipts were £761,695, the payments £531,335, and the capital £5,291,891. In 1850 the society was legalized and recog- nized by the state in a corporate capacity. The Oddfellows' Magazne, issued by the society, and up to October 1883 published quarterly, now appears monthly. In England there are a large number of minor orders of Oddfellows, which either existed before the Manchester Unity, have seceded from it, or have had an independent origin. Among them are the Ancient Independent Order or Kent Unity, Woolwich,~~

1805, revived 1861; the Nottingham Ancient Imperial Order, 1812; the London Unity, 1820;

| the Boston Unity, 1832; the Kingston Unity, 1840; the

Norfolk and Norwich Unity, 1849; and the Derby Mid- land United Order, 1856. : Oddfellowship was introduced into the United States

724

~~from the Manchester Unity in 1819, and the grand lodge of Maryland and the United States was constituted 22d February 1821. At first the progress of the order was slow, but, as may be supposed from the social characteristics and proclivities of the Americans, as soon as it had gained a firm hold its principles spread with great rapidity, and it now rivals in membership and influence the Manchester Unity, from which it severed its connexion in 1842. In 1843 it issued a dispensation for opening the Prince of Wales Lodge No. 1 at Montreal, Canada. The American society, including Canada and the United States, has its headquarters at Baltimore. In 1882 the membership was said to be 500,000, the income 6,000,000 dollars, and the annual sum disbursed for the relief of members of the order 2,000,000 dollars. Organizations, connected either with the United States or England, have been founded in Germany, Switzerland, Gibraltar and Malta, Australia, New Zealand, the Fiji Islands, the Hawaiian Islanas, South Africa, South America, the West Indies, and Barbados.~~

~~The rules of the different societies, various song-books, and a number of minor books on Oddfellowship have been published, but the most complete and trustworthy account of the institution is that in The Complete Manual of Oddfellowship, its History, Prin- ciples, Ceremonies, and Symbolism, privately printed, 1879.~~

~~ODENATHUS, or Opnamnatuus ('Odaivafos, n3"N), prince of Palmyra. See PaAtMyra and PrrsiA.~~

~~ODENSE, a city of Denmark, the chief town of the province of the same name, forming the northern part of the island of Fiinen (Fyen), lies about 4 miles from Odense Fjord on the Odense Aa, the main portion on the north side of the stream and the modern Albani quarter on the south side. It is a station on the railway route between Copenhagen and western Denmark, and a ship canal 10 feet deep constructed in 1796-1804 affords direct communication with the sea. St Canute's Church, formerly connected with the great Benedictine monastery of the same name, is one of the largest and finest edifices of its kind in Denmark. It is constructed of brick in a pure Gothic style. Originally dating from 1081-93, it was rebuilt in the 13th century, and has been restored since 1864. Under the altar lies Canute, the patron saint of Denmark, who intended to dispute with William of Nor-~~

mandy the possession of England, but was slain in an insurrection at Odense in 1086; Kings John and Christ- ian Il. are also buried within the walls. Our Lady's Church, built in the 13th century and restored in 1851-52 and again in 1864, contains a fine carved altar-piece by Claus Berg of Liibeck. Odense castle was erected by Frederick IV., who died there in 1730. The provincial infirmary (1862), the new post-office, the Franciscan hospital, presented to Fiinen in 1539 by King Christian IIL, Frederick VITI.'s foundation (1862), the episcopal library (25,000 volumes), and Karen Brahe's library may also be mentioned. As an industrial town Odense has made great progress since the middle of the century ; besides a large number of breweries and distilleries, it contains glove-fac- tories, match works, mineral-water works, tobacco-factories, chemical works, &c. The population was 5782 in 1801, 11,122 in 1850, 16,970 in 1870, and 20,804 in 1880.

—Odense, or Odinsey, originally Odinsoe, i.¢., Odin's sanctuary, is one of the oldest, as it has long been one of the most import- ant, citiesof Scandinavia. St Canute's shrine was a great resort of pilgrims throughout the Middle Ages. In the 16th century the town was the meeting-place of several parliaments, and down to 1805 it was the seat of the provincial assembly of Finen. It was the first place in Denmark to introduce gas-light (in the close of 1853). Haus Andersen was born in Odense, and Kingo, the Danish hymn- writer, was bishop of the diocese. Paludan-Miiller, a native of the

neighbouring town of Kjerteminde, was educated in the Odense

cathedral school. ODER (Latin, Viadrus; Slavonic, Vjodr), one of the principal rivers of Germany, rises on the Odergebirge in

ODE—ODE

the Moravian tableland, in 49° 43' N. lat. and 17° 35' E. long., at a height of 1950 feet above the sea, and 14 miles to the east of Olmiitz. Itis 550 miles long from its source to its mouth in the Baltic Sea, and drains an area of about 50,000 square miles. The first 45 miles of its course lie within Moravia; for the next 15 it forms the frontier be- tween Prussian and Austrian Silesia ; while the remaining 490 miles belong to Prussia, where it

traverses the provinces of Silesia, Brandenburg, and Pomerania. It flows at first towards the south-east, but on quitting Austria turnstowards the north-west, maintaining this direction as far as Frank- fort, beyond which its general course is nearly due north. As far as the frontier the Oder flows through a well-defined valley, but, after passing through the gap between the Moravian mountains and the Carpathians and entering the Silesian plain, its valley is wide and shallow and its banks generally low. In its lower course it is divided into numer- ous branches, forming a large quantity of islands. The main channel follows the left side of the valley and finally expands into the Pommersche or Stettiner Haff, which is connected with the sea by three arms, the Peene, the Swine, and the Dievenow, forming the islands of Usedom and Wollin. The Swine, in the middle, is the main channel for navigation. The chief tributaries of the Oder on the left bank are the Oppa, Glatz Neisse, Katzbach, Bober, and Lausitz Neisse ; on the right bank the Malapane, Bartsch, Faule Obra, and Warthe. Of these the only one of im- portance for navigation is the Warthe, which through the Netze is brought into communication with the Vistula. The Oder is also connected by canals with the Havel and the Spree. The most important towns on its banks are Ratibor, Oppeln, Brieg, Breslau, Glogau, Frankfort, Ciistrin, and Stettin, with the seaport of Swinemiinde at its mouth. Glogau and Ciistrin are strongly fortified, and Swinemtinde is also defended by a few forts.

The navigation of the Oder is rendered somewhat difficult by the rapid fall of its upper course, amounting above Brieg to 2 feet per mile, and by the enormous quautities of débris brought into it by its numerous mountain tributaries. The German authorities, how- ever, have been unwearied in their efforts to improve the channel, and have now succeeded in securing a minimum depth of 3 feet at low water throughout almost the whole of the Prussian part of the river. Their most important undertaking was the diversion of the river into a newand straight channel in the Oderbruch below Frank- fort, by which an extensive detour was cut off and a large tract of swampy country brouglit under cultivation. The Oder at present begins to be navigable for barges at Ratibor, where it is about 100 feet wide, but the navigable channel will probably soon extend up- wards to Oderberg. Sea-going vessels cannot go beyond Stettin. A second Oder-Spree canal, leaving the Oder opposite the mouth of the Warthe and joining

the Spree near Berlin, has been determined on; and a canal connecting the Oder and the Danube has also been planned. The traffic on the Oder, which is steadily increasing, is mainly concerned with agricultural produce and timber. Some idea of its extent may be gathered from the fact that 280 river-steamers and 2800 other vessels passed through the Oderbruch (up and down) in 1881 with cargoes amounting in all to 166,500 tons. The river is here about 750 feet wide and 8 feet deep. The fishing is important, particularly in the neighbourhood of Stettin.

Those interested in river navigation or engineering may be referred to the following works : Becker, Zur Kenniniss der Oder und thres Fldchengebiets (1868) ;

"Die Deutschen Wasserstrassen " in the Statistik des Deutschen Reiches for 1874 5 Haase, Regulation der deutschen Hauptstrome (Breslau, 1880).

ODESSA, one of the most important seaports of Russia, ranks in the empire by its population (225,000) and foreign trade after St Petersburg, Moscow, and Warsaw. It is situated in 46° 28' N. lat. and 30° 44' E. long., on the southern shore of a semicircular bay, at the north-western angle of the Black Sea, and is 933 miles distant from Moscow and 403 miles from Kieff. Odessa is the proper seaport for the basins of two great rivers of Russia, the Dnieper, with its tributary the Bug, and the Dniester ; the entrances to the mouths of both these offering many difficulties for navigation, trade has from the remotest antiquity selected this spot, which is situated half-way between the estuaries, while the flat ground of the neighbouring steppe allows

ODESSA

easy communication with the lower parts of both rivers. The dimans or lagoons of Haji-bey and Kuyalnik, which penetrate far inland from the neighbourhood of Odessa, are separated from the sea by flat sandy isthmuses. The bay of Odessa, which has an area of 14 square miles and a depth of 30 feet, with a soft bottom, is a dangerous anchorage on account of its exposure to easterly winds. The ships lie, therefore, in two harbours, both protected by moles,—the "quarantine harbour," from 4 to 21 feet deep, and the so-called "practical harbour," for coasting vessels, with a

maximum depth of 11 feet. A new one, 1100 yards long and 660 yards wide, was constructed a few years ago. The harbours freeze for a few days in winter, as also does the bay itself occasionally, navigation being interrupted every year for an average of sixteen days. Odessa experiences the influence of the continental

climate of the neighbouring steppes; its winters are cold (the average temperature for January being 23°°2, and the isotherm for the entire season that of Kénigsberg), its summers are hot (72°°8 in July), and the yearly average

Ee

JBarcholomen Fir! >

Plan of Odessa.

temperature is 48°°5. The rainfall is scanty (ninety-two rainy days, with 14 inches of rain per annum); and one of the plagues of the city is the chalky dust, which is raised in clouds by the strong winds to which it is exposed. The city is built on a terrace from 100 to 150 feet in height, which descends by steep crags to the sea, and on the other side is continuous with the level of the steppe, which is covered with a layer of "black earth"; the subsoil consists of clay, gravel, and a soft Tertiary sandstone, which is used for building, but readily disintegrates under atmospheric agencies, Catacombs whence this sandstone has been taken extend underneath the town and the suburbs, not without some danger to the buildings. The water-supply is inade- quate. Drinking-water was formerly shipped from the Crimea, and the poorer classes had to supply themselves from cisterns and bad wells. An aqueduct, 27 miles long, now brings water from Mayaki on the Dniester.

The general aspect of Odessa is that of a wealthy west-

'| the number exceeds 225,000.

~~European city. Its chief embankment, bordered with tall and handsome houses, forms a fine promenade; a superb flight of steps descends to the sea from its central square, which is adorned with a statue of Richelieu. The central parts of the city have broad streets and squares, bordered with fine buildings and mansions in the Italian style, and with good shops. But even on the best streets poor houses surrounded with open yards occur side by side with richly- decorated palaces; and in close association with elegant carriages and rich dresses one sees the open car of the peasant and the dirty dress of the Jew or the Bulgarian. The cathedral, finished in 1849, can accommodate 5000 persons ; it contains the tomb of Count Worontzoff, a former governor-general, who contributed much towards the de- velopment and embellishment of the city. The " Palais Royal," with its parterre and fountains, and the spacious public park are fine pleasure-grounds, whilst in the ravines that descend to the sea the dirty houses of the poorer classes are massed. 'The shore is occupied by immense granaries, some of which look like palaces, and large storehouses take up a broad space in the west of the city. Odessa, which has a circumference of 6 miles, consists of the city proper, containing the old fort (now a quarantine establishment) and surrounded by a boulevard, where was formerly a wall marking the limits of the free port, of the suburbs Novaya and Peresyp, extending northward along the lower shore of the bay, and of Moldavanka to the south-west. A number of villas and cottages surround the city; the German**

colonies Liebenthal and Lustdorf are bathing-places.

Odessa is the real capital, intellectual and commercial, of the so-called Novorossia, which includes the governments of Bessarabia and Kherson. In the official subdivision of Russia it is only the chief town of the district of the same name in the government of Kherson. It constitutes at the same time an independent " muni- cipal district" or captaincy (gradonachalstvo), which covers 182 square miles and includes a dozen villages, some of which have from 2000 to 3000 inhabitants. Odessa, like St Petersburg and Moscow, received in 1863 a new municipal constitution, with an elective mayor, municipal assembly, and executive council. It is also the chief town of the Novorossian educational district, and has a university, which replaced Richelieu Lyceum in 1865, and now has about 400 students. The young scieutific society at the university is very active in investigating the

natural history of southern Russia and of the Black Sea, and has already published some valuable Transactions. There are also an historical society with a museum containing rich collections from the Hellenic, Genoese, Venetian, and Mongolo-Tatar periods of the history of the Black Sea coast, a society of agriculture, a public library, and many educational institutions.

The population of Odessa is rapidly increasing. In 1814, twenty years after its foundation, it had 25,000 inhabitants; this figure steadily grew in succeeding years, Worontzoff allowing all sorts of people, runaway serfs included, to settle in the steppes of Bess- arabia and Kherson, while at the same time the privileges of a free port, granted in 1817 and abolished only in 1857, attracted great numbers of merchants of all nationalities. In 1850 Odessa had 100,000 inhabitants, 185,000 in 1873, and at present (1884) Of these the great majority are Great Russians and Little Russians ; but there are also large numbers of Jews (67,000, exclusive of Karaites, against 50,000 in 1873), as well as of Italians, Greeks, Germans, and French (to which nation- alities the chief merchants belong), as also of Roumanians, Ser- vians, Bulgarians, Tatars, Armenians, Lazes, Georgians, &c. These nationalities do not live in perfect harmony, and the continual commercial antagonism between the Greeks and the Jews often leads to scenes of disorder. A numerous floating' population of labourers, attracted at eertain periods by pressing work in the port, aud afterwards left unemployed owing to the enormous fluctuations in the corn trade, is one of the features of Odessa. It is estimated that there are no less than 35,000 people living from hand to mouth in the utmost misery, partly in the extensive labyrinth of the catacombs beneath the city. —

The leading occupations of the inhabitants are connected with exporting, shipping, and manufactures. These latter have extended rapidly within the last twenty years, but their aggregate produc- tion (in the gradonachalstvo of Odessa) does not exeeed 20,000,000 roubles (about £2,000,000). To this total the principal items are contributed by the steam flour-inills (about £650,000 in 1879), the manufacture of tobacco (£200,000) and of machinery (£200,000), after which come tanneries, soap-works, chemical-works, biscuit-

factories, rope-works, and carriage-works. The foreign trade, chiefly in corn, has immensely increased of late, since Odessa was brought into railway communication with central Russia. Grain was exported in 1880 to the amount of 1,040,400 quarters (2,445,120 quarters in 1878). This figure is subject, however, to great fluctuations. The' other articles of export are flour, wool, tallow, hides, cattle (about 140,000 head), soap, ropes, and spirits, the value of the aggregate amount of exports reaching 42,000,000 roubles in 1880, against 65,000,000 roubles in 1879, and 85,815, 000 in 1878. 'The chief articles of import are tea (£1,600,000 in 1881), coffee, rice, cotton, tobacco, coal, oil, leather, paper, fruits, wine, and all kinds of manufactured ware, for an aggregate sum of 47,775,000 roubles in 1880. Odessa also carries on a brisk trade with other seaports of Russia, and, besides the 1508 ships (282 Russian and 650 English) engaged in foreign trade which entered the port of Odessa in 1879, it was visited by 2700 coasting vessels. Odessa is in regular steam communication with all the chief ports of the Black Sea and the Mediterranean, as also with London. The Russian Navigation Company sends its steamers by the Snez Canal to Chinese, Indian, and Russian Pacific ports, and has a numerous fleet on the Dnieper, Dniester, and Bug. The commercial fleet of Odessa in 1880 numbered 101 steamers (44,000 tons) and 178 sailing ships (19,800 tons). Thé total revenue of the town in 1882 was 1,938,000 roubles, and the expenditure 1,883,000 roubles, —the chief items being, for charitable institutions 434,000 roubles, for the army 213,000, for administration and police 309,000, and for public instruction 138,000.

History.—The bay of Odessa was colonized by Greeks at a very early period, and their ports—Istrianorum Portus and Isiacorum Portus on the shores of the bay, and Odessus and the modern Skopeli at the mouth of the Tiligul diman—carried on a lively trade with the neighbouring steppes. These towns disappeared in the 3d and Ath centuries, leaving nothing but heaps of ruins ; and for ten cen- turies thenceforward no settlements in these tracts are mentioned. All that is known is that in the 6th century the space between the mouths of the Dnieper aud the Duiester was oceupied by the Antes, and in the 9th century by the Tivertsy, both of Slavonian origin. In the 14th century this region belonged to the Lithuanians, and in 1396 Olgerd defeated in battle three Tatar chiefs, one of whom, Bek- Haji, had reeently founded, at the place now occupied by Odessa, a fort which

received his namie. The Lithuanians, and subsequently the Poles, kept the country under their dominion until the 16th century, when it was seized by the Tatars, who still permitted, how- ever, the Lithuanians to gather salt in the neighbouring lakes. Later on the Turks left a garrison at Haji-bey, and founded in 1764 the fortress Yanidunia. In 1769 the Zaporog Cossacks made a raid on Haji-bey and burned its suburbs, but could not take the fort ; and, after the destruction of the Zaporojskaya Sech, the runaway Zapo- rogians settled close by Haji-bey in what is now the " quarantine ravine." In 1787 the Cossack leader Chepega again attacked Haji- bey and burned all its storehouses, and two years later the Russians, under the French captain De Ribas, took the fortress by assault. In 1791 Haji-bey and the Otchakoff region were conceded to Russia. De Ribas and the French engineer Voland were entrusted in 1794 with the erection of a town and the construction of a port at Haji- bey ; the former was allowed to distribute about 100,000 acres of land freely to new settlers, and two years later Haji-bey, renamed Odessa, had 3153 permanent inhabitants, besides the military, and was visited by 86 foreign vessels. In 1803 Odessa became the chief town of a separate municipal district or eaptaincy, the first captain being the duke of Richelieu, who did very much for the development of the young city and its improvement as a seaport. In 1824 Odessa beeame the seat of the governors-general of Novorossia and Bessarabia. Since that time it has steadily increased its foreign trade and extended its commercial relations. In 1866 it was brought into railway connexion with Kieff and Kharkoff via Balta, and with Jassy in Roumania. (CEPAT HS) 2

ODEY POOR, or Uparrur. v. p. 768.

ODIN, or Wopan. See GERMANY, vol. x. p. 474, and MyrTHotocy, above, p. 156.

ODOACER, or Opovacar (c. 434-493), the first bar- barian ruler of Italy on the downfall of the Western empire, was born in the district bordering on the middle Danube about the year 434. In this district the once rich and fertile provinces of Noricum and Pannonia were being torn piecemeal from the Roman empire by a crowd of German tribes, among whom we discern four, who seem to have hovered over the Danube from Passau to Pesth, namely, the Rugii, Scyrri, Turcilingi, and Heruli. With all of these Odoacer

was connected by his subsequent career, and all seem, more or less, to have claimed him as

See CoutTia Nagpur, vol.

belonging to them by birth; the evidence slightly pre- ponderates in favour of his descent from the Scyrri.

His father was Aidico or Idico, a name which suggests Edeco the Hun, who was suborned by the Byzantine court to plot the assassination of his master Attila. There are, however, some strong arguments against this identification. A certain Edica, chief of the Scyrri, of whom Jordanes speaks as defeated by the Ostrogoths, may more probably have been the father of Odoacer, though even in this theory there are some difficulties, chiefly connected with the low estate in which he appears before us in the next scene of his life, when as a tall young recruit for the Roman armies, dressed in a sordid vesture of skins, on his way to Italy, he enters the cell of Severinus, a noted hermit-saint of Noricum, to ask his blessing. The saint had an inward premonition of his future greatness, and in blessing him said, "Fare onward into Italy. Thou who art now clothed in vile raiment wilt soon give precious gifts unto many."

Odoacer was probably about thirty years of age when he thus left his country and entered the imperial service. By the year 472 he had risen to some eminence, since it is expressly recorded that he sided with the patrician Ricimer in his quarrel with the emperor Anthemius. In the year 475, by one of the endless revolutions which marked the close of the Western empire, the emperor Nepos was driven into exile, and the successful rebel Orestes was enabled to array in the purple his son, a hand- some boy of fourteen or fifteen, who was named Romulus after his grandfather, and nicknamed Augustulus, from his inability to play the part of the great Augustus. Before this puppet emperor had been a year on the throne the barbarian mercenaries, who were chiefly drawn from the Danubian tribes before mentioned, rose in mutiny, demand- ing to be made proprietors of one-third of the soil of Italy. To this request Orestes returned a peremptory negative. Odoacer now offered his fellow-soldiers to obtain

for them all that they desired if they would seat him on the throne. On the 23d August 476 he was proclaimed king; five days later Orestes was made prisoner at Placentia and be- headed ; and on the 4th September his brother Paulus was defeated and slain in the pine-wood near Ravenna. Rome at once accepted the new ruler. Augustulus was compelled to descend from the throne, but his life was spared.

Odoacer was forty-two years of age when he thus be- came chief ruler of Italy, and he reigned thirteen years with undisputed sway. Our information as to this period is very slender, but we can perceive that the administra- tion was conducted as much as possible on the lines of the old imperial government. The settlement of the barbarian soldiers on the lands of Italy probably affected the great landowners rather than the labouring class. To the herd of colont and serv, by whom in their various degrees the land was actually cultivated, it probably made little differ- ence, except as a matter of sentiment, whether the master whom they served called himself Roman or Rugian. We have one most interesting example, though in a small way, of such a transfer of land with its appurtenant slaves and cattle, in the donation made by Odoacer himself to his faithful follower Pierius.1 Few things bring more vividly before the reader the continuity of legal and social life in the midst of the tremendous ethnical changes of the 5th century than the perusal of such a record.

The same fact, from a slightly different point of view, is illustrated by the curious history (recorded by Malchus) of the embassies to Constantinople. The dethroned emperor Nepos sent ambassadors (in 477 or 478) to Zeno emperor

1 Published in Marini's Papirt Diplomatici (Rome, 1815, Nos, 82 and 83) and in Spangenberg's Juris Romani Tabulx (Leipsie, 1822, pp. 164-173), and well worthy of careful study.

O'D O—O0'D O

of the East, begging his aid in the reconquest of Italy. These ambassadors met a deputation from the Roman senate, sent nominally by the command of Augustulus, really no doubt by that of Odoacer, the purport of whose commission was that they did not need a separate emperor. One was

sufficient to defend the borders of either realm. The senate had chosen Odoacer, whose knowledge of military affairs and whose statesmanship admirably fitted him for preserving order in that part of the world, and they therefore prayed Zeno to confer upon him the dignity of patrician, and entrust the "diocese" of Italy to his care. Zeno returned a harsh answer to the senate, requiring them to return to their allegiance to Nepos. In fact, how- ever, he did nothing for the fallen emperor, but accepted the new order of things, and even addressed Odoacer as patrician. On the other hand, the latter sent the orna- ments of empire, the diadem and purple robe, to Con- stantinople as an acknowledgment of the fact that he did not claim supreme power. Our information as to the actual title assumed by the new ruler is somewhat confused. He does not appear to have called himself king of Italy. His kingship seems to have marked only his relation to his Teutonic followers, among whom he was "king of the Turcilingi," "king of the Heruli," and so forth, according to the nationality with which he was dealing. By the Roman inhabitants of Italy he was addressed as "'dominus noster," but his right to exercise power would in their eyes rest, in theory, on his recognition as patricius by the Byzantine Augustus. At the same time, he marked his own high pretensions by assuming the prefix Flavius, a reminiscence of the early emperors, to which the barbarian rulers of realms formed out of the Roman state seem to have been peculiarly partial. His internal administration was probably, upon the whole, wise and moderate, though we hear some complaints of financial oppression, and he may be looked upon as a not altogether unworthy pre- decessor of Theodoric.

In the history of the papacy Odoacer figures as the author of a decree promulgated at the election of Felix IT. in 483, forbidding the pope to alienate any of the lands or ornaments of the Roman Church, and threatening any pope who should infringe this edict with anathema. This decree, a strange one to proceed from an Arian sovereign, was

probably suggested by some of the Roman counsellors of

the king, and seems to have been accepted at the time with- out protest. It was, however, loudly condemned in a synod held by Pope Symmachus (502) as an unwarrantable inter- ference of the civil power with the concerns of the church. The chief events in the foreign policy of Odoacer were his

Dalmatian and Rugian wars. In the year 480 the ex-emperor Nepos, who ruled Dalmatia, was traitorously assassinated in Diocletian's palace at Spalato by the counts Viator and Ovida. In the following year Odoacer invaded Dalmatia, slew the murderer Ovida, and reannexed Dal- matia to the Western state. In 487 he appeared as an invader in his own native Danubian lands. War broke out between him and Feletheus, king of the Rugians. Odoacer entered the Rugian territory, defeated Feletheus, and carried him and "his noxious wife" Gisa prisoners to Ravenna. In the following year Frederick, son of the captive king, endeavoured to raise again the fallen fortunes of his house, but was defeated by Onulf, brother of Odoacer, and, being forced to flee, took refuge at the court of Theo- doric the Ostrogoth, at Sistova on the lower Danube. This Rugian war was probably an indirect cause of the fall of Odoacer. His increasing power rendered him too formid- able to the Byzantine court, with whom his relations had for some time been growing less friendly. At the same time, Zeno was embarrassed by the formidable neighbour- hood of Theodoric and his Ostrogothic warriors, who were

almost equally burdensome as enemies or as allies. In these circumstances arose the plan of Theodorie's invasion of Italy, a plan by whom originated it would be difficult to say. Whether the land when conquered was to be held by the Ostrogoth in full sovereignty, or administered by him as lieutenant of Zeno, is a point upon which our infor- mation is ainbiguous, and which was perhaps intentionally left vague by the two contracting parties, whose chief anxiety was not to see one another's faces again, The details of the Ostrogothic invasion of Italy belong properly to the life of Theodoric. It is sufficient to state here that he entered Italy in August 489, defeated Odoacer at the Isontius (Isonzo) on the 28th of August, and at Verona on the 30th of September. Odoacer then shut himself up in Ravenna, and there maintained himself for four years, with one brief gleam of success, during which he emerged from his hiding-place and fought the battle of the Addua (11th August 490), in which he was again defeated. A sally from Ravenna (10th July 491) was again the occasion of a murderous defeat. At length, the famine in Ravenna having become almost intolerable, and the Goths despair- ing of ever taking the city by assault, negotiations were opened for

~~a compromise (25th February 493). John, archbishop of Ravenna, acted as mediator. It was stipu- lated that Ravenna should be surrendered, that Odoacer's life should be spared, and that he and Theodoric should be recognized as joint rulers of the Roman state, The arrangement was evidently a precarious one, and was soon terminated by the treachery of Theodoric. He invited his rival to a banquet in the palace of the Lauretum on the 15th of March, and there slew him with his own hand. " Where is God?" cried Odoacer when he perceived the ambush into which he had fallen. "Thus didst thou deal with my kinsmen," shouted Theodoric, and clove his rival with the broadsword from shoulder to flank, Onulf, the brother of the murdered king, was shot down while attempting to escape through the palace garden, and Thelan, his son, was not long after put to death by order of the conqueror. 'Thus perished the whole race of Odoacer. Literature.—The chief authorities for the life of Odoacer are the so-called "Anonymus Valesii," generally printed at the end of Ammianus Marcellinus ; the Life of Severinus, by Eugippius ; the chroniclers, Cassiodorus and '"Cuspiniani Anonymus" (both in Roncalli's collection) ; and the Byzantine historians, Malchus and John of Antioch. A fragment of the latter historian, unknown when Gibbon wrote, is to be found in the fifth volume of Miiller's Fragmenta Historicorum Grecorum. Among modern students, Pallmann (Geschichte der Volkerwanderung, vol. il.) has investi- gated the history of Odoacer the most thoroughly. (TH) O'DONNELL. (1) Henry Joszpy (1769-1834), count of La Bisbal, a native of Spain, was descended from the O'Donnells who left Ireland after the battle of the Boyne ;) he early entered the Spanish army, and in 1810 became general, receiving a command in Catalonia, where in that year he earned his title and the rank of field-marshal. Henry Joseph afterwards held posts of great responsibility under Ferdinand VII., whom he served on the whole with constancy ; the events of 1823 compelled his flight into France, where he was interned at Limoges, and where he died in 1834. (2) Leoporp (1809-1867), Duke of Tetuan, Spanish general and statesman, the second son of Henry Joseph O'Donnell, was born at Santa Cruz, Teneriffe, on 12th January 1809. He fought in the army of Queen Christina, where he attained the rank of general of division; and in 1840 he accompanied the queen into exile. He failed in an attempt to effect a rising in her favour at Pamplona in 1841, but took a more successful part in the movement which led to the overthrow and exile of Espartero~~

1 A branch of the family settled in Austria, and General Karl O'Donnell, count of Tyrconnel (1715-1771), held important commands during the Seven Years' War. The name of a descendant figures in the history of the Italian and Hungarian campaigns of 1848 and 1849,

in 1843. From 1844 to 1848 he served the new Govern- ment in Cuba; after his return he entered the senate. In 1854 he became war minister under Espartero, and in 1856 he plotted successfully against his chief, becoming head of the cabinet from the July revolution until October. This rank he again reached in July 1858 ; and in December 1859 he took command of the expedition to Morocco, and received the title of duke after the surrender of Tetuan. Quitting office in 1863, he again resumed it in June 1865, but was compelled to resign in favour of Narvaez in 1866. He died at Bayonne on 5th November 1867.

ODORIC (c. 1286-1331), styled of Pordenone, one of the notable travellers to the farther East in the Middle Ages, and a Beatus of the Roman Church, was born at Villa Nuova, a hamlet near the town of Pordenone in Friuli, in or about 1286, and, according to ecclesiastical biographers, in early years took the vows of the Franciscan order and joined their convent at Udine, the capital of Friuli. Under Cura (vol. v. p. 628) the remarkable opening of communication, both commercial and ecclesi- astical, with that country during the first half of the 14th century has been spoken of. There had arisen also during the latter half of the 13th century an energetic missionary action, extending all over the East, on the part of both the new orders of Preaching and Minorite (or Dominican and Franciscan) Friars, and houses of those orders, of the last especially, became established in Persia, in what is now southern Russia, in Tartary, and in China.

Friar Odoric was despatched to the East about 1316-18, and did not return till near 1330, but, as regards inter- mediate dates, all that we can deduce from his narrative or other evidence is that he was in western India soon after 1321, and that he spent three years in China between 1322 and 1327. His route to the East lay by Constan- tinople and Trebizond to Erzeroum, and thence to Tabriz and Sultdniya, in all of which places the order had houses. From Sultdniya he proceeded by Kashin and Yezd, and turning

thence followed a somewhat devious route by Persepolis, Shirdz, and Baghdad to the Persian Gulf. At Ormuz he embarked for India, landing at Tana, still the chief station of the island of Salsette, and which was then one of the chief ports of western India. At this city four brethren of his order, three of them Italians and the fourth a Georgian, had shortly before met death at the hands of the Mohammedan governor, who held the place under the dominion of the sovereign of Delhi (then Ghaids- suddin Tughlak). The bones of the martyred friars had been collected by Friar Jordanus of Severac, a Dominican, who carried them to Supera—the Suppara of the ancient geographers, near the modern Bassein, about 26 miles north of Bombay—and buried them there. Odoric tells that he disinterred these relics and carried them with him on his farther travels. In the course of these he visited Malabar, touching at Pandardni (20 miles north of Calicut),

at Cranganore, and at Quilon, proceeding thence, apparently, :

to Ceylon and to the shrine of St Thomas at Mailapur near Madras. From India he sailed in a Chinese junk to Sumatra, visiting various ports on the northern coast of that island, then Java, the coast (it would seem) of Borneo, Champa (South Cochin China), and Canton, at that time known to western Asiatics as Chin-Kaldn or Great China (Mahdchin). Thence he went on to the great ports of Fuh- keen, at one of which, Zayton or Chwanchow (see Curn- CHEW, vol. v. p. 673), he found two houses of his order ; in one of these he deposited the bones of the brethren who had suffered in India. From Fu-chau he struck across the mountains into Che-keang and visited Hang-chow, then renowned under the name of Cansay ("'King-sze," or royal residence) as one of the greatest cities in the world, of the splendours of which Marco Polo, Ibn Batuta, and others

obdDO—ODO

have given such notable details. Passing northward by Nan-king and crossing the Great Kiang, Odoric embarked on the Great Canal and travelled to CamBatuc or Peking, where he remained for three years, attached, no doubt, to one of the churches founded by Archbishop John of Monte Corvino, at this time in extreme old age. Turning west- ward in the neighbourhood of the Great Wall and through Shensi, the adventurous traveller entered Tibet, and appears to have visited Lhasa. But no distinct

~~indication of his homeward route is given, though it may be gathered from fragmentary notices that he passed through Khorasan, and so probably by Tabriz to Europe, reaching Venice in the end of 1329 or beginning of 1330. During a part at least~~

~~of these long journeys the companion of Odoric was Friar ; James, an Irishman, as appears from a record in the public books of Udine, showing that shortly after Odoric's death a present of two marks was made to this Irish friar, Socto beati Odorict, amore Dei et Odorici. Shortly after his return Odoric betook himself to the Minorite house attached to St Antony's at Padua, and it was there that in May 1330 he related the story of his travels, which was taken down in homely Latin by Friar William of Solagna. Travelling towards the papal court at Avignon, Odoric fell ill at Pisa, and, turning back to Udine, the capital of his native province, died in the convent there, 14th January 1331. The fame of his vast journeys appears to have made a much greater impression on the laity of his native territory than on his Franciscan brethren. The latter were about to bury him without delay or ceremony, but the "gastald ' or chief magistrate of the city interfered and appointed a public funeral ; rumours of his wondrous travels, and of posthumous miracles were diffused, and excitement spread like wildfire over Friuli and Carniola; the ceremony had to be deferred more than once, and at last took place in presence of the patriarch of Aquileia and all the local dignitaries. The sanctity of Odoric was now fully recog- nized, and was taken up at last by his own community,~~

~~who employed an eminent preacher to declaim to the people the history and pious deeds of this brother, whom~~

~~they probably had regarded till now only as an eccentric, who told questionable stories about the Grand Cham and islands of the anthropophagi. Popular acclamation made him an object of devotion, the municipality erected a noble shrine for his body, his fame as saint and traveller had spread far and wide before the middle of the century, but it was not till four centuries later (1755) that the papal authority formally sanctioned his beatification. A bust of Odoric was set up at Pordenone in 1881.~~

The numerous MSS. of Odoric's narrative that have come down to our time (upwards of forty are known), and chiefly from the 14th century, show how speedily and widely it acquired popularity. It does not deserve the charge of general mendacity brought against it by some, though the language of other writers, who have spoken of the traveller as a man of learning, is still more injudicious. Like most of the medizval travellers, he is indiscriminating in accepting strange tales ; but, whilst some of these are the habitual stories of the age, many particulars which he relates attest the genuine char- acter of the narrative, and some of those which Tiraboschi and others have condemned as mendacions interpolations are the very seals of truth. Odoric's credit was not benefited by the liberties which Sir John Mandeville took with it. The substance of that knight's alleged travels in India and Cathay is stolen in bulk from Odoric, though largely amplified with fables from other sources and from his own invention, and garnished with his own unusually clear astronomical notions. We may indicate a few passages which stamp Odoric as a genuine and original traveller. He is the first European who distinctly mentions the name of Sumatra. The cannibalism and community of wives which he attributes to certain races of that island do certainly belong to it, or to islands closely adjoining. His description of sago in the archipelago is not free from errors, but they are the errors of an eye-witness. In China his mention of Canton by the name of Chin-Kalan, his description of the custom of fishing with tame cormorants, of the habit of let- ting the finger-nails grow extravagantly, and of the compression of women's feet, as well as of the division of the empire into twelve

ODY—G@co

provinces, with four chief ministers, are all peculiar to him among the travellers of that age ; Marco Polo omits them all.

The narrative was first printed at Pesaro in 1513, in what A postolo Zeno calls lingua incul/a e rozza, probably, therefore, in a Venetian dialect. Ramiusio's collection first contains it in the 2d vol. of the 2d edition (1574), in which are given two versions, differing curiously from one another, but without any prefatory matter or explanation. Another (Latin) version is given in the Acta Sanctorum (Bollandist) under 14th January. 'The curious discussion before the papal court respecting the beatification of Odoric

forms a kind of blue- book issued ex typographia rev. cameree apostoliex, Rome, 1755. Pro- fessor Kunstmann of Munich devoted one of his valuable papers to Odoric's narrative (Histor. -Polit. Blattern von Phillips und Gérres, vol. xxxviii.). The collection called Cathay and the Way Thither, by Colonel Yule (Hak. Soc., 1866), contains a careful translation and commentary, &c. A new edition in Italian has been recently issued in Italy, but it is not of value. (Gal, SG)

ODYSSEUS is of all the Greek heroes the most typical representative of the Greek race. The quality on which he prides himself (Od., ix. 19) is his cunning and ready wit ; his inventive genius never fails in the greatest danger. But his cunning is not of the narrow kind that is incom- patible with real wisdom ; he is not troubled by scruples, but he uses nobly and liberally a power that he has acquired by craft; he is fond of adventure and yet full of prudence, very cautious and yet in case of need brave. {t is a character that in the hands of Homer is very fine, but which in those of almost all other writers becomes repulsive. He was son of Laertes and Anticleia, and king of Ithaca, a small rocky island on the western side of Greece. He married Penelope, but very soon after his marriage he was summoned to the Trojan war. Unwill- ing to go, he feigned madness, yoked an ox and a horse together, but Palamedes discovered his deceit by means of his care for his infant child Telemachus ; afterwards Odysseus revenged himself by compassing the death of Palamedes. Obliged to go to the war, he distinguished himself as the wisest councillor of the Greeks, and finally, the capture of Troy, which the bravery of Achilles could not accomplish, was attained by Odysseus's stratagem of the wooden horse. After the death of Achilles the Grecks adjudged his armour to Odysseus as the man who had done most to make the war successful. When Troy was captured he set sail for Ithaca, but was carried by un- favourable winds to the coast of Africa. After encountering many adventures in all parts of the unknown seas, among the lotus-eaters and the Cyclopes, in the isles of AZolus and Circe and the perils of Scylla and Charybdis, among the Lestrygons, and even in the world of the dead, having lost all his ships and companions, he barely escaped with his own life to the island of Calypso, where he was detained eight years, an unwilling lover of the beautiful nymph. Then at the command of Zeus he was sent homewards, but was again wrecked on the island of Phzacia, whence he was conveyed to Ithaca in one of the

wondrous Pheacian ships. Here he found that a host of suitors, taking advantage of the youth of his son Telemachus, were wasting his property and trying to force Penelope to marry one of them. The stratagems and disguises by which he with a few faithful friends slew the suitors are described at length in the Odyssey.

There is no doubt that the personality of Odysseus developed out of some germ in primitive religious myth : but it is almost hopeless to seek for the early form, so completely has it been transformed. In many heroes of poetry and mythology the chief interest lies in tracing the growth of the conception from the divine form of early religion to the Greek hero of poetry; but in the case of Odysseus the supreme interest attaches to the perfect form as it appears in Homer, the typical representative of the old sailor-race whose adventurous voyages educated and moulded the Hellenic race. The period when the char- acter of Odysseus grew among the Ionian bards was when

the Ionian ships were beginning to penetrate to the farthest shores of the Black Sea, and to the western side of Italy, but when Egypt had not yet been freely opened to foreign intercourse by Psammetichus and his successors. The tale of Odysseus gives us the form in which the voyages, the perils, the strange races of foreign lands, and the rich spoils of the sailors were mirrored in the minds of the nation and sung by its poets.

GECOLAMPADIUS,! Jonn (1482-1531), was born at Weinsberg, a small town in the north of the modern king- dom of Wiirtemberg, but then belonging to the Palatinate. He went to school at Weinsberg and Heilbronn, and when twelve years old entered the university of Heidelberg, where he took his bachelor's degree in 1501. He seems at first to have intended to study for the profession of law, and went to Bologna, but soon returned to Heidelberg and betook himself to theology. He became a zealous student of the new learning and passed from the study of Greek to that of Hebrew. He went from Heidelberg to Tiibin- gen, and thence to Stuttgart, making the acquaintance of Erasmus, Hedio, and Reuchlin, and after some earlier essays in preaching became pastor at Basel in 1515, serving under Christopher von Uttenheim, the evangelical bishop of Basel. From the beginning the sermons of (icolampadius had "Christ the crucified" as their

theme, and his first reformatory zeal showed itself in a protest against the introduction of legends of the saints into Easter sermons. While in Basel, preaching did not absorb all his energies ; he was in daily intercourse with learned friends at the university, and pursued his literary researches and humanist studies. In 1518 he published his Greek Grammar. The same year he was asked to become pastor in the high church in Augsburg. Germany was then ablaze with the questions raised by Luther's theses, and his introduction into this new world seems to have compelled Cicolampa- dius to severe self-examination, which ended in his enter- ing a convent and becoming a monk. A short experience sufficed to convince him that the monkish was not the ideal Christian life (amisi monachum, invent Christianum), for in the beginning of 1522 he became private chaplain to the famous Franz von Sickingen. He left his service in the end of the same year and returned to Basel. Zwingli's famous disputation at Zurich (in 1523) fired the minds of many in Switzerland, and among others stirred CZcolam- padius to make a more decided stand for reformation. He began to imitate Zwingli and preach Reformed doctrine. To his surprise he found that the humanists of the university did not countenance him in his zeal for evangelical truth. When "disputations" were held, they prohibited the students and teachers from attending. After more than a year of earnest preaching, after four public disputations had been held, in which the popular verdict had been given in favour of CEcolampadius and his friends, the authorities of Basel began to see the necessity of some reformation. They began with the convents, and Cicolampadius was able to refrain in public worship on certain festival days from some practices he believed to be superstitious. Basel was slow to accept the Reformation; the news of the Peasants' War and the inroads of Anabaptists prevented progress; but at last, in 1525, it seemed as if the authorities were resolved to listen to schemes for restoring the purity of worship and teaching. In the midst of these hopes and difficulties CGicolampadius married, in the beginning of 1528, Wilibrandis Rosenblatt, the widow of Ludwig Keller, who proved to be non rixosa vel garrula vel vaga, he says, and made him a good wife. After his death she married Capito, and, when Capito died, Bucer. She died in 1564. In 1528 the mass and image worship were at

1 Hussgen or Heussgen, changed to Hausschein, and then into the Greek equivalent. XVII. — 92

last abolished by authority, and Gécolampadius's five years' struggle was ended. He lived on, growing in influence in Basel and throughout south Germany, three years longer, and died in November 1531.

Ccolampadius was not a great theologian, like Luther, Zwingli, or Calvin, and yet he was a trusted theological leader. With Zwingli he represented the Swiss views at the unfortunate con- ference at Marburg, and had proved himself, by his defence of Zwingli's doctrine of the Lord's Supper against both Brenz and Luther, an able controversialist. He was a man of very wide sym- pathies. His readincss to sympathize with the early Reformatory movements in France and his eager welcome of the Waldenses were of great value to the Swiss Church.

Compare Herzog, Leben Joh. Gicolampads u. die Reformation der Kirche zu

Basel, 1843; Hagenbach, Johann Zicolampad u. Oswald Myconius, die Reformatoren Busels, 1859.

OEDENBURG (Hungarian, Sopron), one of the oldest and most prepossessing towns in Hungary, the chief place of a district of its own name, lies 3 miles to the west of the Lake of Neusiedl and 35 miles to the south-south-east of Vienna. It possesses several churches (one of which was built with the contents of a Turkish military chest found buried here), three convents, a Protestant lyceum with a theological department, a Roman Catholic gymnasium, several other schools and charitable institutions, a museum, and a theatre. The inhabitants, most of whom are of German descent, are mainly engaged in making wine, of which the district yields a quality little inferior to Tokay. The crystallized fruits of Oedenburg form a well-known article of commerce ; and a trade in grain and manufactures of beetroot-sugar, starch, and cloth are also carried on. Large cattle-markets are held here. The population in 1880 was 23,222.

Oedenburg, the Roman station Sopronium, was created a royal free town in the 11th century in return for help afforded to the king of Hungary against the Bulgarians. In 1619 it was pillaged by Bethlen Gabor. Ata diet held here

~~in 1681 the Hungarian Pro- testants presented the so-called " Oedenburg Articles," claiming the~~

~~restitution of their churches and estates. 'The province of Oedenburg is rich in corn, fruit, cattle, and coal.~~

~~CiDIPUS, a Theban hero, is placed by genealogists among the descendants of Cadmus. His father Laius ordered him to be exposed as soon as he was born; he grew up ignorant of his parentage, and meeting his father once in a narrow way he quarrelled with him and slew him. The country was ravaged by a monster, the Sphinx ; Cidipus by his cunning solved the riddle that the Sphinx proposed to its victims, freed the country, and married his own mother, Jocaste, or, as Homer calls her, Epicaste. In the Odyssey it is said that the gods disclosed the impiety. Epicaste hanged herself, and CEdipus lived as king in Thebes tormented by the Erinnyes of his mother. In the tragic poets the tale takes a different form. Cidipus ful- fils an ancient prophecy in killing his father ; he is the blind instrument in the hands of fate. The further treat- ment of the tale by A®schylus is unknown. Sophocles describes in his @dipus the King how Cidipus was re- solved to pursue to the end the mystery of the death of Laius, and thus unravelled the dark tale, and in horror put out his own eyes. The sequel of the tale is told in Gdipus at Colonus. Banished from the land by his sons, he is tended by the loving care of his daughters. He comes to Attica and dies in the grove of the Eumenides at Colonus, in his death welcomed and pardoned by the fate which had pursued him throughout his life. This view of the myth, which reads in it a parable of the mystery of life, of the overwhelming might of fate and the weakness of man, of the final reconciliation of discord in death, is due to the tragic poets, is unknown in the epic poets, and is still more foreign to the primitive mythic form, where CEdipus and his father embody the vicissitudes of the annual life of nature: the son, the young year, slays his father, the old year, is wedded to his own mother, but finally loses his eyes, his light, and his life. The winter~~

~~king is a god who slays his own father ; this is a trait that occurs time after time in mythology. OEHLENSCHLAGER, Apam Gorrios (1779-1850), the greatest of modern Danish poets, was born in Vesterbro, a suburb of~~

Copenhagen, on the 14th of November 1779. His father, a Schleswiger by birth, was at that time organist to, and later on became keeper of, the royal palace of Fred- eriksberg ; he was a very brisk and cheerful man. The poet's mother, on the other hand, who was partly German by extraction, suffered from depressed spirits, which after- wards deepened into melancholy madness. Adam and his sister Sofia were allowed their own way throughout their childhood, and were taught nothing, except to read and write, until their twelfth year. At the age of nine Adam began to make fluent verses. Three years later, while walking in Frederiksberg Gardens, he attracted the notice of the poet Edvard Storm, and the result of the conversa- tion was that he received a nomination to the college called "Posterity's High School," an important institution of which Storm was the principal. Storm himself taught the class of Scandinavian mythology, and thus Oehlenschliger received his earliest bias towards the poetical religion of his ancestors. Most other branches of study the boy con- tinued to neglect, and thought most about the romances and dramas which he proposed to write. He was confirmed in 1795, and was to have been apprenticed to a tradesman in Copenhagen. To his great delight there was a hitch in the preliminaries, and he returned to his father's house. He now, in his eighteenth year, suddenly took up study with great zeal, but soon again abandoned his books for the stage, where a small position was offered him. In 1797 he actually made his appearance on the boards in several successive parts, but soon discovered that he pos- sessed no real histrionic talent, even though he was trained by the great actor Michael Rosing. The brothers Oersted, the eminent savants, with whom he had formed an in- timacy fruitful of profit to him, persuaded him to quit the stage, and in 1800 he entered the university of Copenhagen as a student. He was doomed, however, to disturbance in his studies, first from the death of his mother, next from his inveterate tendency towards poetry, and finally from the attack of the English upon Copenhagen in April 1801, which, however, inspired a dramatic sketch which is the first thing of the kind by Oehlenschlager that we possess. His promise was already widely felt, and, even in 1800, Baggesen, in departing for Germany, had publicly invested the youth with the laurel that he himself was resigning. It was in the summer of 1802, when Oehlenschliger had an old Scandinavian romance, as well as a volume of lyrics, in the press, that the young Norse philosopher, Henrik Steffens, came back to Copenhagen after a long visit to Schelling in Germany full of new

romantic ideas. His lectures at the university, in which Goethe and Schiller were for the first time revealed to the Danish public, created a great sensation. Steffens and Oehlenschlager met one day at Dreier's Club, and after a conversation of sixteen hours, which has become famous in the history of anecdote, the latter went home, suppressed his two coming volumes, and wrote at a sitting his splendid poem Guldhornene, in a manner totally new to Danish literature. The result of his new enthusiasm speedily showed itself in a somewhat hasty volume of poems, published in 1803, now chiefly remembered as containing the lovely piece called Sanct-Hansaften-Spil. The next two years saw the production of several exquisite works, in particular Thors Reise til Jotunheim, the charming poem in hexameters called Langelandsreisen, and the be- witching piece of fantasy Aladdin's Lampe. At the age of twenty-six Oehlenschliger was now universally recognized, even by the opponents of the romantic revival, as the lead- ing poet of Denmark. He found no difficulty in obtaining

a grant for foreign travel from the Government, and he left his native country for the first time, joining Steffens at Halle in August 1805. Here he wrote the first of his great historical tragedies, [akon Jarl, which he sent off to Copenhagen, and then proceeded for the winter months to Berlin, where he associated with Humboldt, Fichte, and the leading men of the day. In the spring of 1806 he went on to Weimar, where he spent several months in daily intercourse with Goethe. The autumn of the same year he spent with Tieck in Dresden, and proceeded in Decem- ber to Paris. Here he resided eighteen months and wrote his three famous masterpieces, Baldur hin Gode, Palnatoke (1807), and Axel og Valborg (1808). In July 1808 he left Paris and spent the autumn and winter in Switzerland as the guest of Madame de Staél-Holstein at Coppet, in the 'midst of her famous circle of wits. In the spring of 1809 Oehlenschliger went to Rome to visit Thorwaldsen, and in his house wrote his tragedy of Correggio, in German ; he translated this into Danish the following year. After an absence of nearly five years he hurriedly returned to Den- mark in the spring of 1810, partly to take the chair of zsthetics at the university of Copenhagen, partly to marry the sister-in-law of Rahbek, to whom he had been long betrothed. His first course of lectures dealt with his Danish predecessor Evald, the second with

Schiller. From this time forward his literary activity became very great ; in 1811 he published the Oriental tale of Ali og Gulhyndi, and in 1812 the last of his great tragedies, Starkodder. From 1814 to 1819 he, or rather his admirers, were engaged in a long and angry controversy with Baggesen, who repre- sented the old didactic school, This contest seems to have disturbed the peace of Oehlenschlager's mind, and to have undermined his genius. His talent may be said to have culminated in the glorious cycle of verse-romances called Helge, published in 1814, The tragedy of Lagbarth og Signe, 1815, showed a distinct falling-off in style. In 1817 he went back to Paris, and published Hroars Saga and the tragedy of Fostbridrene. In 1818 he was again in Copen- hagen, and wrote the idyll of Den lille Hyrdedreng and the Kddaic cycle called Nordens Guder. His next productions were the tragedies of Hrik og Abel (1820) and Veringerne i Miklagaard (1826), and the epic of Lrolf Krake (1829). It was in the last-mentioned year that, being in Sweden, Oehlenschliger was publicly crowned with laurel in front of the high altar in Lund cathedral by Bishop Esaias Tegnér, as the "Scandinavian King of Song." His last volumes were Tordenskjold (1833), Dronning Margrethe (1833), Sokrates (1835), Olaf den Hellige (1836), Knud den Store (1838), Dina (1842), Erik Glipping (1843), and Kiartan og Gudrun (1847), none of which, with the ex- ception, perhaps, of Dina, can in any way be said to be worthy of his early reputation. On his seventieth birthday, 14th November 1849, a public festival was arranged in his honour, and he was decorated by the king of Denmark under circumstances of great pomp. Just two months later, on the 20th of January 1850, he sank, conscious to the last, and was buried in the cemetery of Frederiksberg.

With the exception of Holberg, there has Leen no Danish writer who has exercised so wide an influence as Oehlenschliger. His great work was to awaken in the breasts of his countrymen an enthusiasin for the poetry and religion of their ancestors, and this he performed to so complete an extent that his name remains to this day synonymous with Scandinavian romance. He supplied his countrymen with romantic tragedies at the very moment when all eyes were turned to the stage, and when the old-fashioned pieces were felt to be inadequate. His plays, partly, no doubt, in consequence of his own early familiarity with acting, fulfilled the stage-requirements of the day, and were popular beyond all expectation. Several of them still keep the

~~stage in spite of their rhetoric. The earliest are the best,—Oehlenschliger's dramatic masterpiece being, without doubt, his first tragedy, Hakon Jarl. In his poems and plays alike his style is limpid, elevated, profuse ; his flight is sustained at a high pitch without visible excitement.~~

~~731~~

~~His fluent tenderness and romantic zest have been the secrets of his extreme popularity. Although his inspiration came from Germany, he is not much like a German poet, except when he is consciously following Goethe ; his analogy is much rather to be found among the English poets, hiscontemporaries. Hismission towardsantiquity reminds us of Scott, but he is, as a poet, a better artist than Scott ; he has sometimes touches of exquisite diction and of overwrought sensibility which recall] Coleridge to us. In his wide ambition and profuseness he possessed some characteristics of Southey, although his style has far more vitality. With all his faults he was a very great writer, one of the principal pioneers of the romantic move- ment in Europe, and he will probably not cease to retain the posi- tion which he won so easily at the summit of the Scandinavian Parnassus, (E. W. G.)~~

~~OELS, the chief town of a circle in Prussian Silesia, and the capital of a mediatized principality of its own name, lies in a sandy plain on the Oelsa, 18 miles to the north- east of Breslau. The prince's chateau, dating from 1558, contains a good library and a collection of pictures. The Schlosskirche was originally built about 980. The other buildings are unimportant. The inhabitants, numbering 10,157 in 1880, are chiefly engaged in making shoes and growing vegetables for sale at Breslau. There is also a manufactory of agricultural implements, and a trade is carried on in grain and flax.~~

~~The town of Oels was founded about 940, and appears as the capital of an independent principality at the beginning of the 14th century. The principality, with an area of 750 square miles and about 150,000 inhabitants, passed through various hands and was finally inherited by the ducal family of Brunswick in 1792. The present proprietor is the reigning duke of Brunswick,~~

~~See W. Hausler, Geschichte des Fiirstenthums Oels (Breslau, 1888),~~

~~CGaNANTHIIC ACID anp ETHIER. Liebig and Pelouze, by distilling large quantities of wine, obtained from the very last fractions of the distillate an oil which in a very high degree exhibited the generic smell common to all wines,—the smell which a small remnant of any kind of wine left in an open bottle exhibits after the '" bouquet " is gone. They recognized the oil as the ethyl-ether of a particular acid of the composition (C,,H,,0;)H,, which they called "cenanthic acid." An oil similar to Liebig and Pelouze's cenanthic ether was isolated by Wohler from quince-peel. Liebig and Pelouze's results were called in question by Delfis, who by experiments of his own arrived at the result that their cenanthic acid is identical with pelargonic, CyH,,O,.H, which latter is known as a com- ponent of the volatile oil of Pelargoniwm roseum. A. Fischer examined an " cenanthic ether" manufactured by Lichtenberger at Hambach in the Rhenish Palatinate, and found it to be a mixture of the ethyl-ethers of caprylic and capric acids, C,H,,O, and C,,H,)O,, and fatty acids higher than capric. The general impression amongst chemical wine-specialists seems to be that Liebig and Pelouze's cenanthic acid was a mixture of capric, caprylic, and other fatty acids. The notion of cenanthic acid must not be — mixed up with that of cenanthylic acid, C,H,,0,.H, the acid of primary heptyl-alcohol, C,H,,O. The aldehyde C,H,,0, intermediate between the two, is procured by the destructive distillation of castor oil, and from it the acid is easily prepared by oxidation with dilute chromic acid,~~

~~GiNOMAUS was king of Olympia, where his wooden house was still shown in the Altis, the sacred precinct, when Pausanias visited it. It was fated that he should be slain by the husband of his daughter Hippodamia. His father, the god Ares-Hippios, gave him winged horses swift as the wind, and he promised his daughter to the man who could outstrip him in the chariot race ; those suitors who were beaten died by his hand. Pelops, by the treachery of Myrtilus, the charioteer of Ginomaus, won the race and married Hippodamia. Pelops is conceived as a stranger from Asia Minor, and Ginomaus is obviously the repre- sentative of a race of Ares-worshippers who weretconquered by, or amalgamated with, an immigrant race, who brought~~

with them the new religion of Zeus, but who kept up the old worship of Ares in the country where they settled. OESEL, one of the largest islands in the Baltic, form- ing with Abro, Mohn, Runo, &c., a district of the Russian government of Livonia, lies across the mouth of the Gulf of Riga, between 57° 55' and 58° 40' N. lat., has a length from. south by west to north by east of about 45 miles, and according to Strelbitsky contains an area of 1010 square miles. It is separated from Courland to the south by the Strait of Dosmesnes, from the island of Dagé to the north by the Séla Sound, and from the smaller island of Mohn on the north-east by the Little Sound. Its undulat- ing surface, well watered by numerous streams, and con- sisting mainly of clay and disintegrated limestone, is largely occupied by woodland and pasture, but also allows the cul- tivation of considerable quantities of grain, flax, hemp, and potatoes. The coasts are bold and steep, and, especially towards the north and west, form precipitous limestone cliffs. Like those of Shetland, the Oesel ponies are prized for their smallness. The population, numbering 50,566 in 1870, is mainly Protestant in creed, and, with the exception of the nobility, the clergy, and some of the townsfolk, Esthonian by race. The chief town, Arensburg (Esthonian, Kurre Saare), on the south coast at the mouth of the Peddus, is a place of from 3000 to 4000 inhabitants, with two churches (a Greek and a Lutheran), two hospitals, an orphanage, and a trade in grain, potatoes, whisky, and fish. Oesel at an early period belonged to the Teutonic knights, and was goveruced by its bishops till 1561, when it passed into the hands of the Danes. By them it was surrendered to the Swedes by the peace of Broémsebro (1645), aud, along with Livonia, it was united

to Russia in 1721. Arensburg, dating as a castle from the 14th century, became a town in 1563.

CTA. See THESSALY.

OFEN. See Bupa, vol. iv. p. 423.

OFFENBACH, the principal manufacturing town in the grand duchy of Hesse-Darmstadt, lies on the left bank of the Main, 5 miles above Frankfort. The most inter- esting building in the town is the old

Renaissance chAteau of the counts of Isenburg, while the most conspicuous modern edifices are the five churches, the synagogue, the new residence of the Isenburg family, and the town-hall. The manufactures of Offenbach are of the most varied description, including carriages, machinery, hardwares, chemicals, aniline dyes, soap, perfumery, candles, chicory, gingerbread, tobacco and cigars, shoes, hats, felt goods, wax-cloth, paper, varnish, white lead, types, canvas, and woollen cloth. Its characteristic industry, however, is the manufacture of portfolios, pocket-books, albums, and other fancy goods in leather, which are largely exported to England, the United States, and other countries, The population in 1880 was 28,449, including 17,566 Pro- testants and 8782 Roman Catholics,

The earliest mention of Offenbach is in a documeut of 970. In 1486 it came into the possession of the imperial counts of Isenburg, and in 1816, on their mediatization, was assigned to HIesse. It owes its prosperity partly to the fact that it became the residence of the Isenburg family in 1685, but mainly to the industry of the

French Protestant refugees who settled here at the end of the 17th and the beginning of the 18th century.

OFFENBACH, Jacquxs (1819-1880), the inventor of the latest form of the modern opéra bouffe, was born at Cologne, of Jewish parents, 21st June 1819. HIs talent for music was developed at a very early age; and in 1833 he was sent to Paris to study the violoncello at the conservatoire, where, under the care of Professor Vaslin, he became a fairly good performer, notwithstand- ing his utter want of that earnestness which alone can make a true artist. In 1834 he was admitted into the orchestra of the Opéra Comique as a "ripieno" violon- cellist ; and here his unrivalled tact and natural quickness of perception enabled him to acquire an amount of experl-

OHES—OGD

ence which he was not slow to turn to profitable account. HIs next appointment was that of conductor at the Thédtre Frangais, where, in 1848, he made his first success as a com- poser in the ' Chanson de Fortunio," in Alfred de Musset's play Le Chandelier. From this time forward his life be-

came a ceaseless struggle for the attainnient of popularity. HIs power of production was inexhaustible ; and, since he was ready to repeat himself without scruple whenever it answered his purpose to do so, the demand upon his ideas was invariably met with a rapidity which fairly astonished both theatrical managers and the general public. HIs first complete work, Pepito, was produced at the Opéra Comique in 1853. This was soon followed by a crowd of dramatic trifles, which daily gained in favour with Parisian audiences, and eventually effected a complete revolution in the popular taste of the period. Encouraged by these early successes, Offenbach now boldly undertook the deli- cate task of entirely remodelling both the form and the style of the light musical pieces which have so long been welcomed with acclamation by the frequenters of the smaller theatres in Paris. With this purpose in view he obtained a lease of the Théatre Comte in the Passage Choiseul, re-opened it under the title of the Bouffes Parisiens, and night after night attracted crowded audiences by a succession of brilliant trifles which never failed to make their mark, though not one of them pos- sessed substance enough to enable it to retain its vitality after the appearance of its successor upon the stage. Be- ginning with Les Deuw Aveugles and Le Violoneux, the series was continued with almost unexampled rapidity, until, in 1867—twelve years after the opening of the theatre—its triumph culminated in La Grande Duchesse de Gérolstein, perhaps the most popular opéra bouffe that ever was written, not excepting even his Orphée aux Enfers, produced in 1858. From this time forward the success of Offenbach's pieces became an absolute certainty. HIe never failed. Without a trace of true genius or a thought of re- verence for art, he possessed a talent so brilliant and a facility of invention so prolific that, in place of following the public taste, as he had so cleverly done at the outset of his career, he was able to lead it whither he would; and the new form of opéra bouffe, which he had gradually endowed with as much consistency as it was capable of assuming, was accepted as the only one worth cultivating. That it should live is simply impossible. It has, indeed, found iniitators in Lecocq and other aspirants of a younger generation; and some of these have attained successes not much less brilliant than those of Offenbach himself. But to be really enduring an art-form must be based upon some stronger principle than a mere desire for the attainment of popular favour; and so far is this from being the case with what is now universally accepted as the genuine opéra bouffe that it would be

impossible to strain the point so far as to admit its connexion with any form of art whatever. But no artistic consideration dimmed the brilliancy of Offenbach's success. His theatre continued to flourish, and his works found their way to every town in Europe in which a theatre existed. Their want of refinement formed no obstacle to their popularity, and perhaps even contributed to it. In twenty-five years he produced no less than sixty-nine complete dramatic works, some of which were in three or even in four acts. Among the latest of these were Le Docteur Ox, founded on a story by Jules Verne, and La Botte au Lait, both produced in 1877, and, though not among his brightest triumphs, sufficiently successful to show that the reign of his popularity has not yet come to an end. Offenbach died in 1880.

OGAM. See Centric Lireratur, vol. v. p. 306.

OGDEN, a flourishing city of the United States, in

OG D—

Weber county, Utah, 37 miles by rail north of Salt Lake City, at the confluence of the Weber and Ogden rivers. It is one of the most important railway junctions of the Western States; the Union Pacific, the Central Pacific, and the Utah Central Railroads, as well as a line which will ultimately joi the Northern Pacific at Garrison, all meet at this point. The ground-plan of the city is spacious, the drainage good, and the climate exceedingly healthy. In manufactures and general industry it bids fair to rival Salt Lake City. Conspicuous among its buildings are the court-house with its white cupola, and the central school, which is one of the best in Utah. The popula- tion was 3127 in 1870, and 6069 in 1880.

OGDENSBURG, a city and port of entry of the United States, in St Lawrence county, New York, on the St Lawrence river, at the mouth of the Oswegatchie, 72 miles below Lake Ontario. It is an important railway junction (the terminus of the Ogdensburg and Lake Champlain, the Utica and Black River, and the Rome, Watertown, and Ogdensburg Railroads), and the headquarters of the Northern Transportation Company's line of steamers; and ferry steamers connect it with Prescott on the Canadian side of the river. Ogdensburg is regularly laid out, and shade- trees are so numerous that it is popularly called "' Maple City." Among its buildings

that used by the United States post-office and courts and the great Roman Catholic church of St Jean Baptiste are of some note. A very ex- tensive trade is carried on in timber and flour. The popu- lation was 7409 in 1860, 10,076 in 1870, and 10,341 in

1880.

The site of Ogdensburg was first occupied by the Indian settle- ment of La Presentation founded by Abbé Piquet for the Christian converts of the Five Nations. Garrisoned by the British in 1776, the fort continued to be held by them after the revolution till 1796 (Jay's treaty). In 1812 it was attacked and in 1813 captured by a British force ; and again in 1838, having become a rallying point for the Canadian malcontents under Von "Schultze, it was regularly besieged and taken. The village was incorporated in 1817, and named after Samuel Ogden, the proprietor. 'The city charter 'dates from 1868.

OGLETHORPE, Jamzs Epwarp (1696 1785), general, the founder of the State of Georgia, was born in London 21st December 1696, the son of Sir Theophilus Ogle thorpe of Godalming, "Surrey. He entered Corpus Christi College, Oxford, in 1714, but in the same year joined the army of Prince Eugéne. Through the recommendation of the duke of Marlborough he became aide-de-camp to the prince, and he served with distinction in the campaign against the Turks, 1716-17, more especially at the siege and capture of Belgrade. After his return to England he was in 1722 chosen member of parliament for Hazlemere. He devoted much attention to the improvement of the circumstances of poor debtors in London prisons; and for the purpose of providing an asylum for persons who had become insolvent, and for oppressed Protestants on the Continent, he projected the settlement of a colony in 'America between Carolina and Florida.

OGOWAY, or OcowE (Ogooawai, Ogobat), a river of West Africa which falls into the Atlantic in the neigh- bourhood of 1° S. lat., or 400 miles north of the mouth of the Congo. The extent of its delta (70 to 80 miles from north to south), and the immense volume of water which it brings down when in flood, gave origin to the belief that it must either be a bifurcation of the Congo or one of the

leading arteries of the continent. The former view was set aside by the fact that the two rivers did not rise at the same season of the year; but so recently as 1876 Czerny advocated the identity of the Ogoway with Schwein- furth's famous Uelle (Welle), with Nachtigal's Bahr-Kuta, and with Barth's river of Kubanda, thus taking it right across to the neighbourhood of the Nile basin. It appears, however, that the head-streams of the Ogoway rise in the hilly country about 200 or 300 miles from the coast of the Atlantic (though the actual course of the river is 500 to 600 miles), and its extraordinary volume is to be explained by their draining an extensive tract on both sides of the equator which is deluged with tropical rains. Savorgnan de Brazza claims to have reached (1882) the sources of the river in a rugged, sandy, and almost treeless plateau, which forms the watershed between its basin and that of the Congo, whose main stream is only 140 miles distant. Cutting its way athwart the gneiss and schists of the various ranges of the Sierra Complida, the main stream of the Ogoway (often called the Okanda from one of the tribes on its banks) is interrupted with cataracts and rapids (at Fare, 26 feet, and Dume, for example) till within a comparatively short distance from the confluence with its principal left-hand affluent, the Ngunie, in 0° 35' S. lat. and 10° 25' E. long. Even in the upper part of its course, however, it often attains a great width, and below this confluence it spreads out into an average of 8000 feet, at the same time showing a tendency to split into a number of secondary channels, some of which connect it on the north with the great Ajingo Lake, and on the south with the still larger Jonanga Lake. The northmost branch of the delta—the Nazareth river, which falls into Nazareth Bay to the north of Cape Lopez—has in the driest period of the year a depth of from 20 to 30 feet, and its water is drinkable even at flood-tide. The southern arms discharge into the extensive Cama or Nkomi Lagoon and the Rio Fernéo Vaz. With the exception of the Ngunie, which has been ascended 40 miles as far as the Samba falls, the affluents of the Ogoway—the Passa, Lolo, Shebe, Ivindo, Ofue, &c.—are but very partially known ; and some of those from the north may prove to have a longer course than is at present supposed. The Ogoway rises in March and April, and again in October and No- vember ; it is navigable for steamers in its low-water con- dition as far as the junction of the Ngunie.

~~Though Bowditch called attention in 1817 to the exist- ence of the river, it was not till 1857-59 that its explora- tion was begun by Du Chaillu. It has since been made known by the labours of Serval and Griffon du Ballay, R. B. N. Walker, Aymés, the marquis de Compiégne, A. Marche, Oskar Lenz, and Savorgnan de Brazza. English and German factories were founded about 1868 at Adelina Longa (Adafilinaftlonga), and at Franceville, a station of the International African Association, in 1880.~~

~~See Petermann's Mittheil., 1872, pp. 5- 10; 1875, pp. 121-130; 1879, pp. 103-108 ; and 1883, pp. ne 184, with map; Proc. LR. G. Soc., 1873 (Walker's narrative) ; Bull, de la Soc. de Géogr., Paris, 1877 ; Zeitsch. der Ges. f. Erdk., Berlin, 1875 and 1876 (the former Lenz's narrative, the latter a résumé of the course of discovery by Czerny).~~

~~OGYGES, in the legends of Attica and Beeotia, was an early king in whose reign a great flood had overwhelmed the land. A similar legend was current in Phrygia, where the flood was said to have taken place in the reign of Nannacus. No facts are known connecting Ogyges with any religious cultus in Greece, and it is highly probable that the tale was of Oriental origin, introduced into this district of Greece by foreign colonists or traders. The Gephyrzi, who emigrated from Beeotia into Attica, and who are said by Herodotus to have been of Phoenician origin, may have brought the story of the flood with them.~~

~~Plate XXII.~~

~~In the peribolos of Zeus on the banks of the Ilyssus at Athens a hole was shown through which the waters of the flood had run off, and where religious rites were regularly performed, but this hole was associated rather with Deu- ealion than with Ogyges.~~

~~OHIO, the third of the States of the American Union in point of wealth and population, is situated between 38° 27' and 41° 57' N. lat. and between 80° 34' and 84° 49' W. long., and is bounded on the N. by Michigan and Lake Erie, on the E. by Pennsylvania, on the E. and S$. by the Ohio river, which separates it from the States of West Virginia and Kentucky, and on the W. by~~

~~Indiana. The greatest length from north to south is about 210 miles, the greatest breadth from east to west about 225 miles and the area 40,760 square miles.~~

~~Physical Features.—The surface consists of an undulat- ing plain, generally ranging in elevation between 1550 and 430 feet above sea-level, the portions below 500 feet or above 1400 being comparatively insignificant. The largest connected areas of high land extend from east to west across the central and northern central districts. In some limited districts of central Ohio, especially along the ridge of high land just referred to, and also in a few thousand square miles of north-western Ohio, the natural drainage is somewhat sluggish, and, while the land is covered with its original forest growth, it inclines to swampy conditions; but when the forests are removed and the waterways opened most of it becomes arable, and all of it can be made so without excessive outlay by means of open ditches.~~

~~The chief feature in the topography of Ohio is the water- shed, which extends across the State from north-east to south-west, and divides its surface into two unequal slopes, the northern, which is much the smaller, sending its waters into Lake Erie and the Gulf of St Lawrence, while the drainage of the other is to the Gulf of Mexico by the Ohio river. The average height of the ridge is about 1100 feet, but it is cut by several gaps, in which the elevation is reduced to about 950 feet. The relief of the State is chiefly due to erosive agencies. The entire drain- age area of such a river as, for example, the Muskingum or the Scioto, may be conceived as originally a plain, all portions of which were at approximately the same elevation above the sea. Across this area one main furrow has been drawn, deepening and widening as it advances, and a countless number of narrower and shallower valleys are tributary to it. Fragments of the old plain still remain in the isolated "hills" or tablelands that bound the valleys, and which, though often separated by intervals of miles, still answer to each other with perfect correspondence of altitude and stratification. They rise to a maximum height of 600 feet above the river-channels in the main valleys.~~

~~Geology.—The rocky floor is entirely composed of un- altered stratified rocks of Paleozoic age. Not a single trap dyke or volcanic vent intersects~~

them, and not a trace of igneous metamorphism is shown in any portion of their extent. These strata are disposed in plains so nearly horizontal that the dip is nowhere heavy enough to be safely determined by a clinometer. Not only are sharp flexures wanting, but faults deserving the name are found in but a single corner of a single county. A few low folds, one of which is of preponderating importance, traverse the State and redeem its surface from geological monotony. The only structural irregularity is an occasional case of overlap, but even this is seldom of such a character as to interfere with the easy reading of the record. The aggre- gate thickness of the entire series will reach 5000 feet if the maximum of each stratum is taken into the account, but if the average measurements are used the thickness does not exceed 3500 feet. The main elements of the scale,

OHI—OHTI

which extends from the Lower Silurian (upper portion) to the Upper Coal-measures inclusive, are given below, and

WG eos

VT Ra Na A KORN TT. Gui AK. ¥

Geological Map of Ohio.

the geological sketch-map shows how the surface of the State is distributed among the principal formations.

Feet.

OE a 0—300 . Upper barren measures ……:..000c008 300 Upper productive Coal-measures …… 200 Lower barren measures ……000.000. 500 >Carboniferous. Lower productive Coal-measures (includ-

ing Conglomerate group of Penna) ... 500 Maxvillo LAMCBENE oo i… ccc. sc ciecdoess 25 A cntauk WaWGrly BION se. nics. siaee veaiyieccesat¥ee 500 = Ohio Black Shale (including Cleveland,

Erie, and Huron Shales) 300

(Maximum 1500) Devonian.

poe aU ee 25 Corniferous Limestone .....0000 75 Lower Helderberg Limestone ..... 50 Niagafa, Lamestone' 66.600 ecasecs caesssves 150 rae Mhows og ee ee ee 50 Upper Silurian.

Clinton Limestone

Cincinnati group Lower Silurian.

The Cincinnati group, which constitntes the surface rock for about 4000 square miles in the 'south-western corner of the State, consists of alternating layers of blue limestone and calcareous shale, both of which contain great numbers of admirably-preserved fossils. The group is undoubtedly equivalent in part to the Hudson River group of the general scale, and by some geologists the name is counted a synonym, but it has not been proved that the Lower Silurian deposits of south-western Ohio can be definitely correlated with the subdivisions of the series in New York. The formation everywhere yields a cheap and excellent supply of building stone, which is also burned into a dark lime, valued for its hydraulic properties. The shales contain notable quantities of alkalis and phosphates, and the soils into which they very readily weather are proverbial for their fertility. The water-supply of the formation is poor, or rather wanting, the impervious shales refusing admission to the rainfall.

The Cincinnati axis, a low fold which traverses the State from south — west to north-east, constitutes its most infinential geologi- eal feature. It entered Ohio from Kentucky at the close of Lower Silurian time, and gradually extended itself to the northward, until it had converted the western half of the State into dry land. It has left a clear record of its successive stages in the strata which compose it. It did not advance steadily and equally, and the occa- sional relapses which it experienced have given rise to cases of over-lap. It has a low, flat summit, and, on account of the soluble and easily-eroded materials of which it consists, it has suffered more from denuding agencies than the Upper Silurian strata that enclose

~~eee ee ee eee ee ee~~

~~OVE EO~~

~~it, and consequently is now cut down to a lower level than they. In other words, the axis has been converted into a basin.~~

~~The Clinton Limestone generally rises in a terrace-like outcrop around the margin of the eroded Cincinnati beds, and its base is marked by the finest line of springs in the State. In its most characteristic pliases it is a crystalline limestone that takes a good polish. In very many localities it yields small quantities of petro- leunm, which seems to be indigenous. The supply is too limited to be valuable.~~

~~The Niagara group, also of Upper Silurian age, is of much greater thickness and of proportionally greater economic and scientific importance than the Clinton limestone. As at the Falls, it here consists of a stratuin of shale overlain by a massive limestone. It forms the surface rock for about 3000 square miles, but through much of this area it is concealed by heavy beds of Glacial Drift, by which its importance as a factor in the topography and the eco- nomic geology of the district is much reduced. In composition the limestone is almost a typical dolomite, but it is still fossiliferous, the fossils occurring as internal casts. It contains a large and in- teresting fauna. From near the base of the Niagara beds the 'Dayton " stone, one of the most valuable building stones of the State, is derived. The formation yields excellent building stones at other horizons also, and its upper beds furnish lime.~~

~~The Lower Helderberg Limestone occupies even a wider area as a surface formation than the last-named, but is largely covered with Drift deposits. There are whole counties of which it is known to constitute the rocky floor, in which it does not once rise to the surface. It is seen to the best advantage in the north of High- land county, where it yields a remarkably even-bedded building stone, Like the Niagara Limestone, it is a dolomite in composi- tion. It is poor in fossils, but the few that it contains are highly characteristic.~~

~~The transition from Upper Silurian to Devonian time which is made in ascending to the next stratum in the scale, the Corniferous Limestone, is accomplished without any structural break or irregu- larity, but there is an abrupt lithological change, the latter stratum being a true carbonate of lime, and an abundant and pronounced Devonian fauna appears in its very lowest beds. 'The Corniferous Limestone forms a narrow belt on each side of the axis, from central Ohio northward, but by the overlap of the next succeeding formations it is entirely lost in southern Ohio. Even where it constitutes the highest bedded rock it is largely obscured by Drift deposits. At Kelly's Island, Sandusky, Marion, Delaware, and Columbus it is largely worked for building stone, lime, and fur- nace flux. The earliest vertebrate remains of the Ohio scale are found in this stratum. The box-like skull of a large ganoid fish, Macropetalichthys sullivanti, Newberry, occurs near the base of the series, and the teeth and bones of other ganoids aud selachians are frequently met with in the higher beds. In the State quarries at Columbus these remains constitute a veritable bone bed, a layer 4 to 6 inches in thickness being in large part composed of them.~~

~~A heavy deposit of black shale, the Ohio Shale of the table, and the Huron shale of Newberry, directly overlies the Corniferous Limestone in northern and central Ohio, and extends across the State from north to south. It is composed of two black shales, the Cleveland and the Huron, including a blue shale, the Erie, be- tween them. The latter is 1200 feet thick in north-eastern Ohio, but rapidly wedges out as it is followed westward to the axis, and the Cleveland and Huron seem here to be welded into one mass. The black shale contains an average of 8 or 10 per cent. of bituminous matter, a chief source of which is found in a resinous disk of microscopic size that exists in the shale in immense num- bers, which Dawson has named Sporangites huronensis. Apart from this minute form the shale is almost barren of fossils, but a few have been discovered iu it, mostly at the ceutres of the great concretions which it contains. The gigantic placoderm, Dinichthys herzeri, Newberry, was first found in these concretions. Though dating back almost to the first appearance of fishes, Newberry has shown that its nearest relationship is with the Lepidosiren of the present day, which zoologists unite in counting as the highest of the entire class. The shale is undoubtedly the source of the natural gas and petroleum of north-eastern Ohio.~~

The Waverly group, which occupies about 7000 square miles of the surface of the State, is in all respects an important formation. It consists of the Bedford shale, the Berea grit, the Berea shale, the Cuyahoga shale, and the Logan group. The Berea grit has unusual geological interest. Its outcrop is a shore-linc across the entire State, and it marks with perfect distinctness the eastern limit of the Cincinnati axis at this date. It is everywhere a quarry stonc. The Berea stone and the Amherst stone of northern Ohio and the original Waverly stone of the lower Scioto valley belong to this horizon. In strength, dnrability, beauty, and the economy with which they can be worked, they stand at the head of the building stones of the State, the value of the annual products of these quarries exceeding $1,000,000. 'The stone is distributed as far cast as the seaboard, and as far west as Duluth. Some of it

has even found market in England. The Berea grit is the reservoir

of the gas and oil distilled from the underlying shales, and it is also the great source of salt water for Ohio. Another building stone of great excellence and beauty comes from the base of the Cuyahoga shale in southern Ohio,—the Buena Vista stonc of the Ohio valley.!

The Carboniferous Conglomerate and the Coal-measures have an aggregate thickness of at least 1500 feet, and cover more than 10,000 square miles of the surface of Ohio. The beds of coal, iron- ore, fire-clay, limestone, and cement rock that they contain render insignificaut the contributions made by all other formations to tho mineral wealth of the State. The Lower Coal-measures, which are here made to include the Conglomerate group of coals of Pennsy)l- vania, contain the seams of coal enumerated below, whiich are dis- tributed through 500 to 800 feet of strata. The names of the scams that are used in the Pennsylvania scale are adopted here.

13. Upper Freeport coal …….. THONGS -Brookvilles coale… .casss.c a 6 12. Lower Freeport ,, ... 10 | 5 Tionesta PRS coc naiet tere 5 11. (Upper Kittanning) ,, ... 4° Wpper NMETCEN, 5). canccucesseaad 4 10. Middle Kittanning ,, ... 9 | 3. Lower Mercer,, ...: 3 9. Lower Kittanning ,,

..... Sez QuakcertGwi 4,0 so. csc sce ee ok 2 8. Clarion Upper 7 t ae Saronicoal 4, 3… .scesesses 1 7. Clarion Lower Sseelieace =

All these coals belong to the bituminous division, Thus far

they are almost entirely worked in level free mines, and very little is taken from seams less than 3 feet in general thickness. The average thickness in the important fields is 5 feet, and the maximum (a small area of a single district) 13 feet. All of the seams enumerated above arc worked, but they have very uncqual values. The Middle Kittanning seam is by far the first. The Upper Freeport rauks next in value. The Sharon coal is the most valuable in proportion to its area, furnishing, in fact, the standard of comparison for the open-burning coals of the entire Alleghany field. Both it and the Middle Kittauning seam are used in the raw state in the manufacture of iron, a fact which sufficiently attests their purity and general excellence. In the remaining divi- sions of the Coal-measures there are 10 or 12 additional seams that are of workable thickness at some of the localities in which they occur, but, with one notable exception, these seams are less steady and reliable than those of the lower measures. 'The exception is the Pittsburg coal, which is, all things considered, the most im- portant seam of the entire coal-field to which it belongs. It is especially valued as a gas coal, and for the production of steam. Its northern outcrop passes through niue counties, with an approxi- mate length of 175 miles, not counting the sinuosities. The area commonly assigned to it in Ohio exceeds 3000 square miles, but the seam has been proved for only a small fraction of the area claimed. In the production of bituminous coal in the United States Ohio ranked third in 1880, the output for that year being about 6,000,000 tons, but the production is rapidly increasing, and the State inspector of mines reckoned the output in 1882 at 8,000,000 tons.

Iron ore is worked at many horizons in the Coal-measures, in seams ranging from 6 inches to 19 feet in thickness. The char- coal iron of the Hanging Rock district of southern Ohio is chiefly applied to the highest uses, as the manufacture of car-wheels and castings for agricultural and other machinery. Of the 99 fur- nace-stacks that now stand in Ohio, almost all depend in part, and about half depend entirely, on native ore. The amount mined annually exceeds 500,000 tons. In iron and steel industries

Ohio ranks next to Pennsylvania, the value of the annual product being $35,000,000. The clays of the Coal-measures are the basis of a large and rapidly growing manufacture of stonc and earthen ware. Ohio now produces one-third of the total product of the United States. In connexion with the salt production, which is large, about half of the bromine of the world is produced in Ohio. The brine of the Tuscarawas valley yields nearly 1 lb of bromine to 1 barrel of salt.

Three-fourths of Ohio are covered with the various deposits of the Drift period, which consists of " till" or boulder clay, and of the stratified sands and clays ofthe later stages of the period. These deposits sometimes have a thickness of 300 feet,—their average in north-western Ohio being not less than 50, and in central Ohio not less than 25 feet. In the regions which they cover they exercise a controlling influence upon the relief, drainage, soils, and water- supply. They have filled the valleys of earlier drainage systems, and in many cases have obliterated all traces of their existence. The till is filled with boulders of northern origin derived from the highlands of Canada and from intervening districts. Blocks of large size are sometimes found, some of them showing 2000 cubic feet above ground. In many instances they can be referred by their mineralogical characters to particular localities, or even to particu- lar ledges, from a score of miles to 400 milesdistant. The stratified Drift contains vast accumulations of sand, gravel, and clay, all of great economic value. Brick clays of good quality are everywhere accessible. The terminal moraine that forms the boundary of the

1 In the total value of quarry products Ohio ranks first among the States, more than $2,500,000 being reported in the census of 1880.

Glacial deposits is not in all cases as conspicuous as in the States to the east of Ohio, but even where it is least distinct soil and vegetation unite to mark the limit of glacial advance very plainly. The moraine passes through the counties of Columbiana, Stark, Wayne, Richland, Holmes, Licking, Fairfield, Ross, Highland, Adams, and Brown, as recently determined by Professor G. F. Wright.

~~Soils, Forests.—The division of the State into a drift- covered and driftless region coincides with the most im- portant division of the soils. Below the line of the ter- minal moraine these are "native," or, in other words, they are derived from the rocks that underlie them, or that rise above them in the boundaries of the valleys and uplands. They consequently share the varying constitution of these rocks, and are characterized by considerable inequality and by abrupt changes. All are fairly productive, and some, especially those derived from the abundant and easily- soluble limestones of the Upper Coal-measures, are not surpassed in fertility by any soils of the State. Large tracts of these excellent native soils are found in Belmont, Monroe, Noble, and Morgan counties. Among the thinner and less productive soils, which occupy but a small area, are those derived from the Devonian shales. They are, however, well adapted to forest and fruit production. The chestnut and the chestnut oak, both valuable timber-trees, are partial to them, and vineyards and orchards thrive remarkably. The native soils of the Waverly group and of the Lower Coal-measures agree in general characters. They are especially adapted to forest growth, reaching the highest standard in quality of timber product. When these lands are brought under the exhaustive tillage that has mainly prevailed in Ohio thus far, they do not hold out well, but the farmer who raises cattle and sheep, keeps to a rotation between grass and small grains, and does not neglect fruit can do well upon them. The cheap lands of Ohio are found in this belt. The other great division of the soils of Ohio—viz., the Drift soils—are by far the most import- ant, alike from their greater area and their intrinsic excel- lence. Formed by the commingling of the Glacial waste of all the formations to the north of them, over which the ice has passed, they always possess considerable variety of**

~~composition, but still in many cases they are' strongly |~~

~~coloured by the formation underneath them. When any stratum of uniform composition has a broad outcrop across the line of Glacial advance, the Drift beds that cover its southern portions will be found to have been derived in large part from the formation itself, and will thus resemble native or sedentary soils. Western Ohio is underlain with Silurian limestones, and the Drift is consequently limestone Drift. The soil is so thoroughly that of limestone land that tobacco, a crop which rarely leaves native limestone~~

~~soils, is grown successfully in several counties of western Ohio, 100 miles or more north of the terminal moraine. The native forests of the Drift regions were, without exception, hard-wood forests, the leading species being oaks, maples, hickories, the walnut, beech, and elm. The walnut, sugar maple, and white hickory are limited to warm, well-drained limestone land ; the white oak charac- terizes the upland clays, while the red maple, the elin, and several of the oaks stand for the regions of sluggish drainage. 'This noble growth is rapidly disappearing, but several million acres still remain.~~

~~Climate.—There is a difference of at least 40° Fahr. be- tween the average summer and winter temperatures. A central east-and-west belt of the: State is bounded by the annual isotherms of 51° and 52°, the average winter tem- perature being 30° and the average summer temperature 73°. Southern Ohio has a mean annual temperature of 54°, and northern Ohio 49°. The annual range is not less than 100°, and sometimes 130°, the extreme of summer heat reaching 100° in the shade, while 'cold waves" in winter~~

~~may depress the mercury to 30° below zero, Extreme changes are liable to occur in the course of a few hours, especially in winter, when the return trades are violently displaced by north-west winds. In such cases the tem- perature sometimes falls 60° Fahr. in twenty-four hours ; changes of 20° or 30° in a day are not unusual. Still the climate proves itself excellently adapted to the finer growths of vegetation, while its effects on human life and on the domestic animals favour a symmetrical development and a high degree of vigour. The rainfall varies between an average of 46 inches in the Ohio valley and an average of 32 inches on the shore of Lake Erie (spring 10 to 12 inches, summer 10 to 14 inches, autumn 8 to 10 inches, winter 7 to 10 inches). The annual range is considerable. In some years there is an insufficient supply and in some there is a troublesome excess, but disastrous droughts on the large scale are unknown, and disastrous floods are rare.1 The vast body of water in Lake Erie favourably modifies the climate of the northern margin of the State. The belt immediately adjoining is famous for the fruits that it produces. Extensive vineyards and orchards have been planted along the shore and on the islands adjacent, and have proved very~~

successful. The Catawba wine here grown ranks first among the native wines of eastern North America. Melons of excellent quality are raised in almost every section of the State. The peach is the least certain of all the fruits that are largely cultivated ; there is rarely, however, a complete failure on the uplands of southern Ohio. The winters of Ohio are very variable. Snow seldom remains for thirty days at a time over the State at large, but an ice crop rarely fails in northern Ohio, and not oftener than once in three or four years in other por- tions of the State. In the southern counties cattle, sheep, and horses often thrive on pasture grounds through the entire winter.

Population.—The following table gives the population from 1840 to 1880 :
—

i Density

POPULATION. — – per sq. Total Males. | Females. | mile. 1840 1,519,467 784,100 735,367 37°3 1850 1,980,329 1,016,808 963, 521 48°6 1860 ABR) at 1,190,162 1,149,349 57 °4 1870 | 2,665,260 1,337,550 1,827,710 | 6573 1880 3,198,062 | 1,613,936 | 1,584,126 | 78°5

In 1880 the coloured population numbered 24 per cent. of the whole, and the foreign-born 124 per cent. (from Germany 6 per cent., and from the United Kingdom 44 per cent.).

Agriculture.—This is the leading industry, employing in 1880 397,495 persons, or about two-fifths of the total number reported as engaged in occupations of all sorts. In 1881 nearly 50,000,000 bushels of wheat and nearly 112,000,000 bushels of Indian corn were produced, the total production of cereals in the State for that year being 188,933,067 bushels, an average of sixty bushels to each inhabitant. The reported orchard products of the year would furnish ten bushels of fruit to each inhabitant, and the dairy products an average of 26 tb. The domes- tic animals reach a total of 10,000,000. In number and quality of thorough-bred cattle Ohio is scarcely second to any State; in the average of its herds it ranks second to

1 Quite recently, however, the Ohio river has twice attained a height. unprecedented in its former recorded history. In February 1883 the water

rose to a height of 66 feet 4 inches, and in February 1884 to. 71 feet 02 inch above the channel bar at Cincinnati, the last rise being nearly 7 feet in excess of the highest mark recorded previous to 1883. These great floods covered the sites of large and prosperous towns,

swept away hundreds of dwellings, and inflicted deplorable losses on the residents in the great valley.

Or. eo

Illinois alone. The sheep-growing counties are supplied with the best breeds of sheep, and the wool of south-eastern Ohio has long been famous for unusual strength of fibre. The annual production of wool exceeds 20,000,000 ib, Ohio holding the first rank in this respect among the States of the Union. In the origination of agricultural machinery Ohio has taken a leading part, and in the present manufacture it easily holds the first rank, the value of the annual product exceeding $15,500,000, or one-fourth of the entire product of the United States. The average yield of wheat in the State has been doubled within the last ten years through the use of artificial fertilizers and improved methods of cultivation. An efficient system of crop reports is carried on by a State board of agriculture, and thorough control of the artificial manures sold in the State is maintained by constantly repeated chemical analyses. A State meteorological bureau also renders special service to the agricultural interest.

Manufactures, Towns and Cities—The manufactured products of the State, according to the census of 1880, have more than twice the value of the farm products, reaching an aggregate of nearly $350,000,000. As a necessary result of the recent development of mining and manufacturing in Ohio, its cities and villages are gaining rapidly in population and wealth. Cincinnati, the largest city of the State and the eighth in the Union, had a popu- lation of 255,139 by the census of 1880. The same census credits it with about 30 per cent. of the manufactures of the State, but the reports of its chamber of commerce give it a much greater total than the census tables. Cleve- land, the second city of Ohio and the eleventh of the United States, had 160,146 inhabitants, Columbus, the State capital, 51,647, and Toledo 50,137. Dayton (38,678) and Springfield (20,730) in south-western Ohio, Youngs- town (15,435), Akron (16,512), and Canton (12,258) in the north-eastern

~~quarter of the State, and Zanesville (18,113) in the central district are all thriving and ener- getic cities.~~

~~Government and Administration.—All legislative power is vested in a general assembly consisting of a senate and house of representa- tives. Senators and representatives are elected biennially. The executive department consists of a governor, a lieutenant-governor, a secretary of state, a treasurer, and an attorney-general, all elected for a term of two years, with an auditor, elected for four years. The supreme executive power is vested in the governor, who is com- mander-in-chief of the militia, and may grant reprieves and pardons, The lieutenant-governor is president of the senate. There is also elected triennially a State commissioner of common schools. For the control and superintendence of all public works a board of public works is created, consisting of three members, each elected for three years. There arc appointed by the governor, by and with the consent of the senate, a cominissioner of railroads and telegraphs for two years, a superintendent of insurance for three years, an inspector of mines for four years, a commissioner of statistics of labour for two years ; also a supervisor of public printing, a State librarian, an inspector of leaf tobacco, and a State inspector of oils for two years each, and three commissioners of fisheries for three years each. To investigate the whole system of public charities and the correctional and penal institutions of the State, eight per- sons, four from each of the leading politieal parties, are appointed by the governor for four years each to constitute a board of State charities. The judicial power is vested in a supreme court, district courts, common pleas courts, probate courts, and justices of the peace; and the legislature may create courts inferior to the supreme court in one or more counties. The supreme court consists of five judges, elected for five years each. There are nine common pleas districts with three judges each, holding office for five years ; each district is divided into three parts, with one judge (and more if the legisla- ture so provide) for each part. The district court is composed of the judges of the common pleas district together with one of the supreme court judges, any three forming a quorum. The original jurisdiction of the district court is concurrent with that of the supreme court ; each county has a probate court for probate and testamentary matters. Townships are supplied with justices of the peace. All judges and justices are elected by the~~

~~people. Clerks of the courts are elected by the people also. The State is divided~~

~~TS~~

~~into two United States districts, a northern and a southern. Each district is divided into an eastern and western division. All elec- tions are by ballot, and every sane male citizen, twenty-one years old and a resident of the State for one year next preceding elec-~~

~~tion, may vote. Education is provided tor by taxation and funds arising from the sale of public lands. The insane, blind, and deaf and dumb are supported by the State. A sinking fund, sufficient for discharging annually the interest of the public debt and not less than $100,000 of the principal thereof, is provided from the proceeds of the public works, sale of canal, school, and ministerial lands, and taxation. The State at present is represented in the Congress of the United States by two senators and twenty-one representatives. The legislature of the State is empowered to lay off new or change existing counties. The electors in each county elect three commissioners, for three years each, who constitute the county board. They have the care of the county property, fix the taxes, regulate roads, and provide for idiots, lunatics, and~~

~~paupers. The other officers are three infirmary directors, an auditor,~~

~~a secretary of the commissioners, a recorder, a surveyor, a clerk of the court of common pleas, who is also clerk of the district court,~~

~~each elected for three years ; also a treasurer, a sheriff, a coroner,~~

~~and a prosecuting attorney, each elected for two years. Ina county that has in it a city of over 180,000 population there is a board of control, consisting of five members, each elected for three years,~~

~~which has a final action and jurisdiction in all matters involving expenditure of money. Each county must contain at least 400- square miles of territory. Counties are subdivided into townships,~~

the power to do which resides in the county commissioners. Each

township must contain at least 22 square miles, and be at least one election precinct. The officers are three trustees, a clerk, a treasurer,

such constables as the trustees may designate, and an assessor,

elected annually. The trustees oversee elections, provide for the repairing of roads, make regulations preventing the spread of diseases, provide for cemeteries and libraries if the voters deter-

mine to have them, and afford relief to the poor.

Education.—The Continental Congress in 1785, in an ordinance for the survey of the lands north-west of the Ohio, reserved lot number 16 in every township, equivalent to one-thirty-sixth of the township, for the support of public schools. These provisions did not apply to the Virginia military and Connecticut reserves, equal in area to about one-fourth of the entire State, nor to the United States military reservation, embracing nearly 4000 square miles. The convention that framed the State constitution in 1802 requested and obtained of Congress a concession of one-thirty-sixth of the lands in the Virginia and United States military reservations, and a like proportion for education in the Connecticut reserve,—a portion of the latter, however, being set apart in the United States military reservation, the remainder from the public lands in the north- western part of the State (1834). Prior to 1827 the only revenues obtained from such lands were of the nature of rents, and were wholly inadequate. In the year named a law was passed providing for the sale of the school lands, other laws also being enacted for the establishment of a fund for the support of common schools. The result of the sales is somewhat disappointing, since the en- tire proceeds realized up to 15th November 1882 amount to but $3,686,511°56. This is known as the common school irreducible fund. The State early undertook to supplement the revenue thus acquired by a general tax ; the present law provides for a tax of one mill on the dollar. Opportunity for special levies was given as early as 1821 to district officers. At present the law authorizes every board of education to determine the amount of tax to be levied as a contingent fund for all school expenses, not exceeding seven mills on the dollar. As early as 1827 the legislature adopted the policy of making offenders against

the laws contribute to the support of the schools by appropriating fines collected to the school funds. This policy still continues. The receipts for school purposes in 1882 exceed $12,000,000 :—

Miateyhax: Clem) itess siecrecsece ese cseiecie cise «crete $1,589,263 °51

Interest on irreducible fund, 1881 ……. 229,692 °71 From rents and interest due for sale of lands…. 20,739°23 PAMANCEONMNANG ISS, vic. .-oe ccissusee see e+ ce oe 3,472,577 °04 From interest and rent of lands, 1882 ……. 250,431°94 ibeeei eres, GEDA co nae aannocooennee menanens 6,168,036°89 ROBO L DOM S LSS Beer asars acs'e ccarcrerPeieisyeve eee arsicrealeye 510,646°81

Of 1,081,321 young persons of school age 751,101 are enrolled and 483,232 are in daily attendance. The school sessions average 31 weeks in the year, and 24,135 teachers are employed; the illiterates above ten years of age form only 4 per cent. of the total population. The total expenses for the common schools in 1882 were $8,820,914 °95. r

Higher education was not neglected by the first settlers of the State. In the Ohio Company's purchase two entire townships were granted, upon which the Ohio university was established. In the Symmes's purchase a township of land was granted, which when located served as the foundation for the Miami university. There are now 62 such institutions for learning in the State, em- ploying 457 teachers, having 11,314 students, receiving $411,309 and expending $405,573, with a property valued at $6,203,691.

XVII.—93

738

Of these, 25 are enabled by their charters to confer collegiate degrees. Among the oldest and most prominent of the colleges are Antioch, Denison, Kenyon, Marietta, Oberlin, Ohio Wesleyan, Otterbein, St Xavier's, Western Reserve, and Wittenberg ; of those more recently founded three deserve special mention, viz., the university of Cincinnati, the Case School of Applied Science at Cleveland, and the Ohio State university at Columbus. The first two are founded upon private munificence, and each is entering

upon a career of great promise. The third, established upon a gift of public lands from the general Government, is specially charged with instruction in the sciences relating to agriculture and the mechanic arts, and is also required to include military training. In addition, therefore, to the ordinary courses of an American college, this institution is obliged to provide full facilities in applied science, aud the State makes use of its faculty and equipment for all its official scientific work. The chemical work of the State Board of Agriculture and also of the State Geological Survey is performed here. The Agricultural Experiment Station and the State Meteoro- logical Bureau are both at the university.

Finance.—The receipts of the Ohio treasury for 1882 were $6,270,396°22, and the disbursements $5,630,219°29. The funded State debt at 15th November 1882 was $4,901,665, all at 4 per cent., and the irreducible debt (trust) was $4,393,014°71, making a total State debt of $9,294,679°71, while the municipal and local debts amount to $45,766,351°22, making a total public debt of $55,061,030°93. The value of the realty was $1,116,681,655, and personalty $518,229,079, or a total valuation of $1,634,910,734. The State tax paid was $4,735,748, while the total tax was $30,618,785. Banks numbered 413, with a capital stock of $38, 452,855°30 ; 189 were national, with a stock of $31, 464,000, valued at $1,133,792°40. There were 6189 miles of railway,— receipts $46, 759,399, expenditure $32, 063, 654.

History.—Ohio was discovered by La Salle, probably as early as 1670, and the French took formal possession of the whole north- west in 1671. In 1749 all English settlers were warned by the French commandant at Detroit to retire from the region north of the Ohio. The settlements had been made under the third charter granted by King James I. to Virginia (12th March 1611), which ceded to the colony all of the present State of Ohio lying south of 41° N. lat., and that granted by Charles II. to Connecticut (23d April 1662), which ceded to the colony all the territory of the present State lying north of 41° N. lat. The conflicting claims were set at rest by the treaty of Paris in 1763, by which France surrendered to Great Britain all her lands in the north and west as far as the Mississippi. During the progress of the American Revolution, and while the States were struggling to form a union on the basis of the articles of confederation submitted for ratifica- tion in

1777, a controversy arose as to the rae ownership of unoccupied lands. The States appealed to their charters, as did Virginia and Connecticut, for their title to the lands north-west of the Ohio. The opposing States claimed that the unoccupied lands, though charter lands, should be surrendered for the common bene- fit, to become the property of the new union. The controversy was settled in some cases, as in that of New York, by the abandon- ment of all claims by the State ; in others, among them Virginia and Connecticut, compromises were entered into by which the States made large reservations in the acts of surrender. Virginia reserved for military bounty lands about 3,710,000 acres, lying between the Scioto and Little Miami rivers, and bounded on the south by the Ohio river. Connecticut reserved as a foundation for her school fund a tract extending 120 miles westward of the Pennsylvania line, bounded on the south by 41° N. lat., and by the Connecticut line on the north. The land area extended to about 3,667,000 acres. In 1800 Connecticut surrendered all juris- dictional right over these lands to the United States.

Among the last and most important acts of the Congress of the old confederation was its passing the ordinance of 1787, providing a government for the territory north-west of the Ohio. The ordinance is a remarkable document in many particulars, and especially for the clause in its sixth article, which reads: "There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in said territory, otherwise than in the punishment of crimes, whereof the party shall have been duly convicted,"'—a clause which, after appearing in many State documents, at last became the property of the nation when it was adopted as the thirteenth amendment of the constitution of the United States. The passing of the ordinance was closely connected with the purchase of a million and a half of acres upon the Ohio, and in the Muskingum valley, by the Ohio Company. On 9th July 1788 General St Clair, the governor, and his associates, Judges Parsons, Varnum, and Symmes, formally established the government of the Territory at Marietta, the newly-formed settle- ment of the company, situated on the Ohio at the mouth of the Muskingum, and named after Marie Antoinette. The next con- siderable purchase of land was made by Judge Symmes, who secured upwards of 311,000 acres on the Ohio, between the Great and Little Miami rivers. The site of Cincinnati was purchased from J udge Symmes by Mathias Denman of New J ersey, whose surveys

marked out in the winter of 1788-89 the town that has since grown to be the leading city of the State. Two expeditions sent against hostile Indians at the head-waters of the Miamis in 1790 and 1791 resulted in such disastrous failure that the settlers began to despair of protection. However, in 1794 General Wayne won a decisive victory over the united tribes near the rapids of the Maumee, and at the treaty of Greenville, contracted a year later with eleven chiefs, secured peace. As a result, the rapid immigration which followed enabled the residents of the Territory to avail themselves of the provisions of the ordinance in organizing a representative government for the Territory by electing a legislature, which held its first session in Cincinnati 24th September 1799. By authority of Congress a convention which met at Chillicothe in November 1802 drafted and on the 29th day of the month signed and ratified for the people the first constitution of Ohio. Several stipulations relative to school lands were made by the convention in the consti- tution submitted to Congress, which were conceded, and the State was adinitted 19th February 1803 as the fourth under the constitution of the United States, and the seventeenth in the roll of the States. Chillicothe, which in 1800 had been made the seat of government for the North-West Territory, continued to be the capital of the State until 1810, when the Government removed to Zancsville for two years. Returning to Chillicothe, it chose Columbus in 1816 as the permanent capital of the State. :

In 1821 a movement for internal improvements was inaugurated, which culminated in the construction of a canal from the Ohio to Lake Erie through the valleys of the Scioto and the Muskingum, and another from Cincinnati to Dayton. Fortunately the movement for common schools began at the same period. The canals set free the locked-up produce of the interior, and the State entered upon a new life. The completion of the Cumberland road in 1825, as far as Wheeling on the Ohio, gave the State an outlet to the sea- board. While the canals were yet incomplete the construction of railroads was undertaken. The Mad River and Lake Erie Railroad from Dayton to Sandusky was the first, being chartered in 1832 and actively begun in 1835. In 1852 three through lines had been opened across the State ; and its whole social and economic history thenceforward assumed a

~~new character. Since 1840 Ohio has been the third State in the Union in point of population.~~

~~The present constitution of the State is the result of a revision of that of 1802 by a convention which assembled in Columbus 6th May 1850, and sat during part of its session at Cincinnati. It completed its work 10th March 1851, and the people ratified the revised constitution 17th June 1851. A second convention of revision was assembled in Columbus 14th May 1873, which, like its predecessor, sat also in Cincinnati. The constitution submitted, practically a new one, was rejected by the people at the October election of 1874. (EK. O.—J. T. S.)~~

~~OHIO RIVER. See Mississrprt, vol. xvi. p. 518.~~

~~OHM, Grore Simon (1781-1854), was born at Erlangen in 1781 and educated at the university there. He became professor of mathematics in the Jesuits' college at Cologne in 1817 and in the polytechnic school of Nuremberg in 1833, and in 1852 professor of experimental physics in the university of Munich. He died 6th July 1854.~~

~~His writings are numerous, but, with one important exception, not of the first order. The exception is his pamphlet published in Berlin in 1827, with the title Die galvanische Kette mathematisch bearbeitet. This work, the germs of which had appeared during the two preceding years in the journals of Schweigger and Poggendorff, has exerted most important influence on the whole development of the theory and applications of current electricity. Now- adays "Ohm's Law," as it is called, in which all that is most valuable in the pamphlet is summarized, is as universally known as anything in physics. It may be doubted whether Ohm's investigation could have been made but for the magnificent work of Fourier on the Conduction of Heat. In fact, the equation for the propagation of electricity formed on Ohm's principles is identical with that of Fourier for the propagation of heat; and if, in Fourier's solution of any problem of heat-conduction, we change the word "temperature" to "potential" and write "electric current" instead of "flux of heat," we have the solution of a corresponding problem of electric conduction. The basis of Fourier's work, without which even his splendid mathe- matical powers would have been of~~

no avail, was his clear conception and definition of conductivity. But this involves an assumption, undoubtedly true for small temperature-

OIL—

gradients, but still an assumption, viz., that, all else being the same, the flux of heat is strictly proportional to the gradient of temperature. An exactly similar assumption is made in the statement of Ohm's law, z.¢., that, other things being alike, the strength of the current is at each point proportional to the gradient of potential. It happens, however, that with our modern methods it is much more easy to test the accuracy of the assumption in the case of electricity than in that of heat; and it has accordingly been shown by Maxwell and Chrystal that Ohm's law is true, within the limits of experimental error, even when the currents are so powerful as almost to fuse the conduct- ing wire. The value of Ohm's work was but imperfectly recognized until it was stamped by the award of the Cop- ley medal of the Royal Society in 1841.

OIL-CAKE. The solid compressed mass remaining after the expression of oil from the many oil-yielding seeds, nuts, &c., forms a material of considerable commercial importance. Tt retains after the most perfect treatment by pressure no inconsiderable portion of oil, with practically the whole of the albuminous matter, sugar, mucilage, and the starchy components of the seeds, &c., thus forming in most cases a concentrated nutritious food for cattle and sheep, specially valuable for fattening store animals for the market. The only commercial cakes which are unfit for animal food are such as contain purgative or other active principles, as, for example, the cakes of castor-oil seed, croton seed, purging- nut seed, and mustard seed. The most valuable and at the same time the most abundantly produced feeding-cake is that obtained from ordinary LINSEED (q.v.). Next in value is the cake yielded by rape seed, but its wholesomeness is frequently marred by the presence of a large proportion of acrid mustard seed ; the best is that yielded by the German green rape seed (Brassica rapa oleifera). Cotton-seed cake is also a feeding stuff of considerable importance. It is prepared in two forms, either as decorticated cake, in which the husks of the cotton seed are removed previous to the expression of the oil, or as undecorticated cake, which may contain as much as 40 to 50

per cent. of indigestible woody husk. Among other cakes useful for feeding purposes may be enumerated ground-nut cake from Arachis hypogea, palm-kernel cake from the seeds of the oil palm, sesame or til cake from the seed of Sesa- mum orientale, and hemp cake from the seed of Cannabis sativa. The following table indicates the average composi- tion of a few of the principal commercial cakes.

(a ieee leeele me le celles SS |22\ea|8a/8 | 4 | & a |os|80|/80/] © 5 S3 60) e° |s s 2 AS 2) 28] o8 2 Dats mo | 88168] 98 B ad Seles |ss(se/2| 8 |a A ee (ee sol m | A |e ‘\iG i Ca eRINOm oes enero 12°41 | 10°82] 9°28} 11°46 | 8-06 | 10-00 9°50 CON) @Riiece os onoepemo a soc 15°64] 8°72]16°05| 6°07] 11°34 | 8°26 8°43 Albuininous bodies*.....| 27°87 | 33°81 | 41°25 | 22°94 | 36°87 | 21°50 30°40 Mucilage, sugar, and digest- pte Srorononcee :..| 23°79 | 28°05 | 16°45 | 32°52 | 25°05 | 48°00 40°95 Woody fibre…….+--- 14°85 | 11°49] 8°92} 20°99) 8°14] .. Mineral matter ……. 5°44] 710] 8°05] 6°02] 10°54! 12°24 | 10°72 *Containing nitrogen …... 4:46| 5°41| 6°58] 8°67] 5°90} 3°30 4°50

Oil-cake should be thoroughly dried by exposure before beitig packed or stored, otherwise it is apt to heat, and turn sour and mouldy, in which condition it becomes injurious to cattle. The cake also made from rancid seed is fre- quently deleterious, and so disagreeable in taste as to be refused by animals. Oil-cakes of high value are subject to adulteration; and compounds of varying composition are prepared and sold under commercial brands simply as feeding cake or mixed cake with no indication of their component materials. These are usually largely intermixed with bran, husks, ground rice, and maize siftings, &c.

OIL 739

OIL CITY, a city of the United States, in Venango

county, Pennsylvania, at the junction of Oil Creek with

the Allegheny river, lies 132 miles north-north-east of Pitts-

burg by the Allegheny Valley Railroad, in the heart of the Venango petroleum district, and possesses the principal oil

exchange of the world, the transactions in 1883 alnounting to 1,129,199,500 barrels, valued at $1,209,654,064. The business part of the city is on the low ground north of the river, the residences occupying the south side and the high bluffs on the north side. Besides manufactories con- nected with the oil industry, the city has machine-shops, foundries, flour- mills, and breweries. Founded in 1860, and partially destroyed by flood in 1865 and by flood and fire in 1866, Oil City was incorporated as a city in 1871. Its population was 7315 in 1880, and now (1884) is esti- mated at 10,000.

OILS. The term oil is a generic expression under which are included several extensive series of bodies of diverse chemical character and physical properties. In its most comprehensive ordinary acceptation the word embraces the hard solid odourless waxes, tallows, and fats, the viscid fluid fixed oils, the odorous essential oils, and the solid, fluid, and volatile hydrocarbons obtained in nature or by destructive distillation. Further, in former days, when substances were principally classified by obvious physical characteristics, the word applied to various substances which, beyond an oily consistency, possess no other pro- perties in common with ordinary oils. Thus we have still in common use for sulphuric acid the term "oil of vitriol," a substance which, it need hardly be said, is widely different from any oil. Leaving out of account bodies of this nature, the remaining diverse bodies have in common the char- acters that they are compounds consisting principally, in some cases exclusively, of carbon and hydrogen, that they are mostly insoluble in water, and that they are all readily inflammable. The mineral hydrocarbons obtained either in nature or by destructive distillation do not come within the range of this article (see NAPHTHA, PARAFFIN, PETRO- LEUM), which is restricted to the series of neutral bodies formed naturally within animal or vegetable organisms. These bodies are divided into two well-defined groups—the fixed oils and fats, and the essential or volatile oils.

FIxEep OILS.

The fixed or fatty oils, although varying considerably in external appearance, form in reality a well-defined and homogeneous group of substances having great similarity of chemical composition. They appear to

be essential con- stituents of the most highly-organized forms of animal and vegetable life, being found in plants chiefly in the seed, and in animals chiefly enclosed in the cellular tissue and in special body cavities, but some proportion of fatty matter is found in almost all tissues and organs. Although oils and fats are universally distributed and perform most important functions in animal and vegetable life, those used for technical purposes are not drawn from any very great number of sources; and many bodies might be uti- lized for the production of oil which at present are not so employed.

As found in commerce, oils possess a faint characteristic taste, a slight odour, and some amount of colour, generally brownish yellow. These characteristics, however, are due to certain impurities ; in a really pure condition most oils have scarcely any characteristic taste, odour, colour, or physiological influence. In a few cases only they have special properties which appear to be inseparable char- acteristics, such as the purgative principle of castor oil, croton oil, and some others. At the ordinary tempera- tures most vegetable oils are fluid, but a few, produced especially by tropical plants, such as palm oil, cocoa butter,

Chinese tallow, &c., are solid fats. Animal fats are for the most part solid, the oils of marine animals and neat's-foot oil being important exceptions. The various solid fats differ greatly in consistency, and the hardness of individual samples is largely affected by the nature of the food and by the health of the animal yielding them, and by some other circumstances. The relative fluidity or solidity of the various oils and fats depends on the proportions of the three principal constituents of all oils—olein, stearin, and palmitin, The fluid oils contain olein in larger proportion, that body being itself liquid at ordinary temperatures, while solid stearin and palmitin predominate in the hard fats. The viscosity of the fluid oils also ranges between wide limits. The rate of flow of an oil, which is a matter of considerable importance in several industrial applica- tions, is estimated by coniparison with the standard rate at which water of the same temperature flows through an aperture of fixed dimensions. The most viscid of the fluid oils is castor oil, which at a temperature of 15° C. is more than two hundred

times thicker or more slow-flowing than water. Olive oil at the same temperature is more than twenty times thicker, and linseed and hemp oils, though among the most limpid of fixed oils, still flow about ten times as slowly as water.

Oils communicate to paper and like substances a stain which remains an irremovable translucent grease spot. They are almost entirely insoluble in water, and, except- ing croton and castor oils, in cold alcohol, but in boiling alcohol they dissolve more freely, and they are perfectly soluble in ether, bisulphide of carbon, chloroform, benzol, and light petroleum spirit, In their pure condition they are neutral bodies, but, on their becoming rancid, free fattyacids are developed which give them an acid reaction. Exposed to air they absorb oxygen freely, and the class containing linoleic acid, known as drying oils, of which linseed oil is the type, thereby harden into a solid translucent semi- elastic caoutchouc-like body, a property of the utmost value in the arts. When they are exposed in thin layers over a great surface the absorption of oxygen proceeds with such energy that heat is evolved sufficient to produce spontane- ous combustion, a circumstance frequently exemplified in the heating and igniting of heaps of oily cotton waste. The non-drying oils also on exposure to air thicken and become greasy ; they acquire the peculiar disagreeable smell and acrid taste known as rancidity, owing to a kind of fer- mentation being set up in them through the agency of Impurities, whereby the fixed fatty acids they contain are decomposed, and odorous volatile fatty acids formed by oxidation at their expense.

The specific gravity of all oils is lower than that of water, ranging from ‘900 in the case of cocoa butter to ‘970, the specific gravity of castor oil. Most fluid oils have @ specific gravity between ‘915 and -930. The specific gravity of oils varies with the temperature far more than 1s the case with water. It is found that for each degree Centigrade rise of temperature whale oil increases in volume 1 per 1000, rape oil 0°89, and olive oil 0°83.

When a solid fat is heated slowly till it melts and is allowed gradually to cool, it remains fluid till it falls con-

siderably under the temperature at which it melted, and

~~at the moment of solidification there is a sensible increase in its temperature. Butter, for example, melts at 30° to 31°5 C., but does not resolidify till it falls to 19° or 20° C. These phenomena have been investigated in the case of the pure fats stearin and palmitin by Duffy (Chem. Soc. Qu. J., v. 197), who finds that these bodies undergo with great readiness three isomeric modifications, each having a dis- tinct melting point widely apart from each other (stearin from beef giving 51°, 63°, and 67 *), the solidifying point being slightly under the lowest of the three. The freezing~~

~~Ol Ls~~

~~point of the ordinary fluid oils ranges down to from — 27° to — 28° C. for hemp oil, nut oil, and linseed oil, while olive oil solidifies at +2° to 4° C. Fluid oils heated to from 280° to 300° C., and solid fats to from 300° to 325° C., undergo destructive distillation, resolving into a mixture of rich inflammable gases and a peculiarly irritating acrid vapour, acrolein.~~

~~Oils and fats are compounds of carbon, hydrogen, and oxygen, in proportions ranging, as a rule, for carbon be- tween 76 and 80 per cent., hydrogen from 11 to 13 per cent., and oxygen from 10 to 12 percent. Their proximate constitution was first demonstrated by Chevreul, who in- deed, in the great series of classical researches embodied in his Lecherches sur les corps gras @origine animale (1823), established the modern chemistry of oils.~~

The phenomena of saponification, as exemplified on a great scale in the important industry of soap-making, furnished the key for discovering the intimate constitution of oils. Oils and fats treated with alkalis, alkaline earths, and basic metallic oxides in presence of water undergo decomposition and enter new combinations. A soap is formed by the union of the alkaline body with acid con- stituents of the oil, known as fatty acids, and the sweet body, glycerin, is liberated. The saponification of stearin with sodic hydrate, for example, may be thus represented :—

(CygH,0) \ 3Na | 9 3CysHe50 OH," | Cay | n+ ON Vie et Or OEE boy,

Sodic Stearate of hydrate. sodium (soap).

'By heating oil with steam under a pressure of from 10 to 12 atmospheres, or with water superheated to about 220° C., the oil is decomposed into free fatty acid and glycerin. Thus, again taking the simple fat stearin, we have : —

——e wt CO} 0,43#20= Sua | 04+ OF | Oy Water.

In the above reactions it will be observed that three molecules of water are required for the formation of free stearic acid and glycerin from one molecule of stearin, and to that extent the resulting pro- ducts are heavier than the original. Reading the equation in the inverse manner we find the formation of stearin takes place by the substitution of the three acid residues of stearic acid C,,H,;0 for the three hydroxyls H.O in the molecule of glycerin. No fat or oil is found in nature consisting of a single chemical fat such as stearin alone. All are mixtures of at least two and for the most part three or more simple fats or glycerides of fatty acids closely allied in nature and constitution. Thesc glycerides or combinations of glycerin and fatty acids are in their chemical relations ethers. Glycerin itself is a triatomic alcohol, and bears to the fatty acids and re- sulting ethers the same relation which a basic substance bears to an acid and to the salt which results from their combination, In all natural fats glycerin combines, as in stearin, by having substi- tuted for its three replaceable hydrogen atoms three equivalents of fatty acids, whence the natural simple fats are all triacid com-

~~potitide —tristearin ase | O,, tripalmitin Cae at O~~

~~Stearin. Glycerin.~~

~~Stearin. Stearic acid. Glycerin.~~

~~triolein aa | Op &c., though commonly called stearin,~~

~~palmitin, and en &c. (For further information as to the con- stitution of glycerides see GLYCERIN, vol. x. p. 697.) The three simple fats above named form by far the largest and most important constituents of all oils and fats, the only others which bulk largely being the glycerides of linoleic acid in drying oils, and of physetoleic acid characteristic of marine oils. The number of fatty acids found combined with glycerin in oils is, however, vety considerable. They constitute members of homologous series, the first or stearic series of which possess the common formula C,,H,,0, Belonging to it are the following :—~~

~~Boiling and | Substances in which chiefly~~

~~Melting point. found. AGehiCwn nse Co Hy O2 118° C. Butter fat. Butyile feeeneee Cy Hg Og 156° C. Butter fat. Caprorc ee. cae Cg Hy202 194° C. Cocoa-nut oil, butter fat. Capnylice eres | Cg Hyg02 . 239° Cocoa-nut oil, butter fat. CHDHG sdoapsencn CioH2902 | Melt. pt. 39° | Cocoa-nut oil, butter fat. LENO .ceoadonac C9H2402 », 436; Cocoa-nut oil, bayberry oil. Myristic …..... | Cy4Hog02 $ 53°°8| Oil of mace, &c. Palmitic …..... CigH3902 i 62° | Lard, palm oil, &c. ISUCCLEICS 5 Aemgionae CigH3g02 . 69°‘2| Tallow, &c. | Arachidie -| Ca9H 4902 a 75° | Ground nut oil. IBGHEMICH Ac sna. Co2H 4409 64 75° | Ben oil. WenOMe = 3… 02) Co7H5409 a 78° | Beeswax. MGUSSICN 2.8. 42.) | CspHg002 i 88° | Beeswax.~~

~~eS~~

~~O1LS~~

~~Another, the oleic series, contains two atoms less of hydrogen than the allied stearic series, having the general formula C,,H,,, -0.. To it belong the~~

following :—

Boiling and | Substances in which chiefly

Melting point. found. CNOEONIC Tai… <<< C4 Hg Og | Boil. pt. 72° | Croton oil. Hypogeic or CigH39O2 | Melt. pt. 84° | Earth-nut oil and whale oils. Physetoleic OVEIC, ooo eccs sac CigH3402 coud Most fats and fluid oils. HBTUSBIC) — ocauiiee Coo 4209 of 83° | Rape and mustard oils.

To these there remain to be.added, not members of either series, two important fatty acids, —linoleic acid, C,gH,,0., characteristic of linseed oil and other drying oils, and ricinoleic acid CjgH3,03, the chief product of the saponification of castor oil. Among saponifiable bodies the true waxes are distinguished from other solid fats by containing no glycerin. They are principally ethers of the higher monatomic solid alcohols—cetylic and ceryliec alcoliol, &c. Thus spermaceti, the solid wax obtained from the head matter of the

sperm whale, is a cetyl palmitate oun? bo. Certain of the

16**33

vegetable waxes—c.g., Japanese wax—contain some proportion of glycerides. Extraction of Ol.

The ordinary method for separating vegetable oils and fats from the nuts, seeds, &c., of which they form con- stituent parts is by pressure, with or without the assistance of heat. They are also obtained by the agency of solvents, principally by the use of bisulphide of carbon and the light petroleum spirit benzin, these being methods of pro- duction of comparatively recent introduction. Animal oils and fats are principally isolated by simple melting or "rendering" by heat. The degrees of heat and pressure necessary for separating the several fats vary very much with the fluidity of the oils themselves, the proportion in which they are present in the substances, and the nature and consistence of the associated materials. Sperm oil is indeed obtained direct in its fluid condition from the head of the sperm whale. Virgin olive oil is obtained with the gentlest pressure, and

palm oil and several other vegetable fats and waxes are liberated by the agency of boiling water.

Vegetable Oil Pressing.—Pliny describes in detail the apparatus and processes used for obtaining olive oil among his Roman contemporaries, by which it appears that they derived a knowledge of the screw press from the Greeks, and applied it to the pressure of oil from pulped olives. In the East, where vegetable oil forms a most important article for food and for other personal and domestic purposes, various ingenious applications of lever presses and of combined lever and wedge presses have been in use from the earliest times. The Chinese employ the same series of operations which are followed in the most advanced oil mills of modern times, viz., bruising and reducing the seeds to meal under an edge-stone, heating the meal in an open pan, and pressing out the oil in a wedge press in which the wedges are driven home by hand hammers. The apparatus used in Europe in modern times for the extrac- tion of oil by pressure consists of forms of the screw press, the Dutch or stamper press, and the hydraulic press. With the screw press, even of the most improved form, the amount of pressure practically obtainable is limited from the failure of its parts under the severe inelastic strain which can be put on it. It is on this account only used in the pressure of olives and of animal fats, where the power necessary is not great. The Dutch or stamper press, which has played an important part in the oil industry, was invented, as its name indicates, in Holland in the 17th century. The invention of the hydraulic press in 1795 effected the greatest revolution in the oil industry, bringing a new, easily controlled, and almost unlimited source of power into play, and on the great scale that apparatus has

practically superseded all other means of pressing. The sequence of operationsin treating oil-seeds for the separation of their contained oils is ordinarily as follows :—(1) the crushing and

7Al

grinding of the seed or other substance, (2) heating the oleaginous meal so prepared, and (3) expression of the oil by mechanical power.

~~*Grinding.—As a preliminary operation oil-seeds are freed from dust, sand, and other impurities by sifting in an inclined revolving cylinder or screening machine, covered with woven wire having meshes varying according to the size and nature of the seed operated upon. In earlier times the seeds were pounded to meal by means of stamper mills. These consisted of a series of heavy wooden stampers or pestles made to rise and fall by the action of cams or wypers fixed on a revolving shaft, a pair of such stampers falling alternately with heavy force into an egg-shaped mortar about two-thirds filled with seed. As the process proceeded the material became heated, and from time to time had to be sprinkled with water. Stampers are now seen only in smal] old-fashioned establish- ments. Ina modern oil-mill the screened seed is passed through crushing rollers to bruise or open the husk. The crushing rollcrs consist of a pair of cast-iron rollers horizontally mounted, commonly of unequal size, the larger being 4 feet in diameter, while the smaller is about 1 foot. The larger roller is revolved by power and the smaller moves by simple friction against the other. Between these rollers the seed is fed by a hopper, and in passing through it is bruised and broken and so prepared for the thorough grinding it receives under the revolving edge-stones to which it next passes. These are a pair of circular stones having a diameter of about 7 feet with a thickness at their running edge of 16 inches, each weighing from 24 to 34 tons. They are made of very compact limestone, granite, or fine-grained sandstone, and are mounted ona vertical driving shaft, to which they are attached by a horizontal axle pass- ing through their centre. They revolve on a bed of similar hard compact stone, and the compound rubbing and bruising effect of their rotary motion quickly reduces the bruised seeds to a fine meal. The stones are provided with sweepers, which in their revolution bring the material pressed out towards the side again into their path, and there is a separate sweeper for clearing out the finished meal from the bed of the machine by way of a slide or door provided in the side. The edge-stones revolve about twenty times per minute, and a charge of seed which is slightly moistened during the process is sufficiently ground on an average in about twenty-five minutes.*~~

~~*Heating.—In dealing with certain oils which are easily separated, and especially with oils used in cookery and otherwise consumed, where it is desirable to preserve the pleasant, bland, and faint fruity or nutty taste, the*~~

ground oleaginous meal is taken direct to the press and pressed for cold-drawn or virgin oil. The cake from such cold pressing, as it still retains a large proportion of oil, is subse- quently broken up, reduced to meal, and heated ; after which it is again subjected to pressure to obtain a further flow of oil. Ordin- arily, however, the meal is artificially heated previous to any pressure, and it depends greatly on the nature of the seed and the individual manufacturer's method of working whether the material is fully pressed at first or twice submitted to the operation. The warming of the seed meal renders the contained oil more fluid and conse- quently more readily separable with moderate pressure. It also enables the oil-presser to obtain a larger proportion of the contained oil, coagulates and holds back the albuminous constituents of the seeds, and similarly dries'and retains mucilaginous matter. On the other hand, oil from heated meal usually is more highly coloured and harsher to the taste than cold-drawn oil; and the quality is seriously deteriorated if by chance the heat applied should exceed at most 80° C. The heat is applied either in open shallow iron kettles or pans heated over a direct fire or through a sand-bath ; but preferably, and now generally, the meal is heated by steam circulating freely between the casings of a jacketed or double-walled pan or pans. Mechanical stirrers are kept in continuous rotation within the pan, to ensure a uniform warming effect throughout the mass. A highly-approved and convenient form of heating apparatus consists of a double steam kettle, one pan being placed above the other, each steam-jacketed and provided with mechanical stirrers. In this machine the heating action is continuous. The meal is first heated for ten or fifteen minutes in the upper pan, which is closed over with a sheet-iron cover, after which a slide in the bottom of the pan is opened and the charge is shot down into the lower pan, where it is raised to the full heat, while the upper pan is again re- charged and worked up. When fully heated in the lower pan the charge is swept out at a door in the side of the pan by the action of the mechanical stirrers, and falling into a funnel is passed in measured quantities direct into bags, and without delay prepared for and placed in the press. The kettles are of a capacity sufficient to heat seed for charging three single presses at each operation. form of heating kettle is also now in use in which the object is effected by direct injection of steam into the mass, whereby the meal is not only heated but a beneficial amount of moisture is distributed throughout the material. In mills of the most recent construction such steam kettles are used in connexion with an im-

~~proved form of crushing rollers,—employment of edge-mills being dispensed with. These rollers consist of a series of four or five chilled iron or steel cylinders mounted in vertical order like the bowls of~~

~~a calender. The seeds pass in succession 'between the first and second rollers in the series, then between the second and third, and so on till they are delivered by the lowest, sufficiently bruised, crushed, and ground.~~

~~Pressing.—With the least possible delay the meal is transferred from the heating kettles, so that the oil may be pressed out while the material still retains its heat. Measured quantities, say 10 to 12 tb of meal, are filled into woollen bags of strong, thick texture, sufficiently open and porous to allow free flow of the expressed oil, yet having consistency enough to resist rupture by the enormous pressure to which it is subjected. Each bag is further placed within "hairs," thick mats of horse-hair bound with leather. In some methods of working press-cloths—not bags—are used ; and the con- struction of recent presses is such as to dispense altogether with the use of bags or other coverings. The essentials of proper oil-pressing are a slowly accumulating pressure, so that the liberated oil may have time to flow out and escape, a pressure that increases in pro- portion as the resistance of the materials increases, and that main- tains itself as the volume of material decreases through the escape of the oil. These essentials the Dutch or stamper press and the hydraulic press fulfil perfectly, and the prevalence of hydraulic pressure over the other and older method is only due to the greater convenience and ultimate economy of the power. Previous to the early years of the present century the Dutch press was almost ex- clusively employed in Europe for pressing oil-seeds. It consists of two principal parts, an oblong rectangular box with an arrangement of plates, blocks, and wedges, and over it a framework with heavy stampers, the fall of which produces the pressure. The press box is made either of cast-iron or, according to the older method, of strongly-bound oaken planks. At each extremity of the box there is placed a bag of oil-meal between two perforated iron plates, under which are a perforated bottom and channels for conducting away the expressed oil. Next are inserted filling-up pieces of wood, two of which—the speering-blocks—are oblique or bevelled on one**

face, forming ways for the two wedges which press against them. Be- tween the speering-blocks, and separated also by a filling piece, are inserted the two wedges, one being the ordinary or driving wedge by which the pressure is applied to the seed-bags, and the other an inverted or spring wedge, which is only driven down to loosen and free the various parts when the pressing operation is complete. The sob which drives home the ordinary wedge is a heavy log of wood about 16 feet long by 8 inches square, and it falls about fif- teen times a minute through a maximum distance of 22 inches by the action of a pair of cams or wypers fixed on a revolving shaft. As soon as the pressure is complete the stamper suspended over the inverted wedge is brought into action, aaa by a single heavy blow knocking the wedge out of its key-like position it frees the Various parts of the apparatus for the removal of the pressed cakes. In a double stamper press about 12 cwt. of finished cake is made per day. Since the introduction of the Bramah press, numerous modifications have been invented with the special object of improv- ig its convenience as an oil-press. The various forms devised for oil-extracting may be comprehended under standing or vertical

where great pressures are not essential, isa drum or box press, so called because on the platen are placed two circular metal tubs, one within the other, the inner perforated throughout for the escape of the oil. At the top of the press is secured a strong metal plate or table the same diameter as the inner box, and the seed is pressed by the working up of the ram carrying the box against the surface of this table. Within the perforated box the seed-bags are deposited with metal plates between them. Experience, however, has demon-

The final pressure applied in ordinary practice on the seed-trays in an hydraulic press is equal to a weight of about 300 tons. "This weight is allowed to remain on for seven minutes, and the whole operation of charging, pressing, and emptying a press may be finished in ten minutes. A Blundell double press is capable of working off about 5 cwt. of seed per hour. A form of press of the most recent and improved construction, called the ' pack press," dispenses with bags, seed-boxes, and hair-mats, Consolidated cakes of seed enclosed in press-cloths to the number of sixteen for one charge are simply placed between corrugated plates. To enable the press to be charged with sufficient rapidity, and to allow the

large number of bags to occupy as small a vertical space as practicable when placed in the press, a moulding or form machine, such as was invented by John Bennie of Glasgow and patented in October 1880, or a similar machine, worked on a modified principle, patented by Francis Virtue, is employed. In these machines, by mechanical contrivances, the measured quantity of heated meal is placed in a trapeziform tray

enclosed in a cloth and submitted to a pressure which reduces the thickness of the mass from about 3 inches to a little more than 1 inch and forms it into a solid cake, in which state it packs in small space in the press. The whole time occupied in filling and forming a cake and placing it in the press is not more than a quarter of a minute, and a set of three pack presses in a day of ten hours will work off nearly 9 tons of seed, yielding in the case of linseed about 108 cwt. of cake, and 54 cwt. of oil. It is claimed for the pack press that it extracts a much larger proportion of oil than that worked with seed-boxes.

Horizontal presses are not much in favour in the United Kingdom, but in many Continental mills where two pressings are the rule a set of horizontal presses are kept for the first operation.

The oil, during the process of pressure, works its way from the centre to the edge of the cake, whence it exudes. For this reason an oblong form is the most favourable for the easy separation of the oil, and the trapeziform shape oil-cakes usually present has been selected on account of the wedge-like steadiness the mass has under pressure, and the readiness with which the entire cake frees itself once it is moved the smallest distance from the thin end of the box or tray in which it is pressed. The edges to which the oil is pressed almost invariably retain a considerable proportion of oil. They are pared off, and the parings are returned to the edge-stones to be ground up and again pressed with fresh meal. The oil from the presses flows into the receiver tanks placed under the level of the floor, from which it is pumped into the storage tanks, where it is permitted to settle and clarify. After mechanical impurities and water, &c., have separated themselves, the oil is in some cases ready for the market, but for the most part it has to undergo a process of refining.

Extraction by Solvents.—The only method of obtaining vegetable oils which has come into practical competition with pressing is that in which the solvents bisulphide of carbon (CS,), the light spirit of petroleum, and common ether are used. In ordinary pressing about 10 per cent. of oil remains in the finished cake, while by means of solvents practically the whole of the oil may be separated. Solvents might therefore be used for extracting that remaining percentage of oil from any oil-cake were such desirable, or they can be employed for treating fresh unpressed seed. Asa matter of fact, it is desirable to leave a proportion of oil in the cake which is used for feeding purposes, because its food valne depends to no small extent on the oil it contains, and the perfect separation of oil in the solvent process is a drawback, on account of the poverty in fatty matter of the exhausted meal.

Extraction by the agency of bisulphide of carbon was first intro- duced in 1848 by Jesse Fisher of Birmingham. Twelve years later a patent was secured by E. Deiss of Brunswick, but for several years afterwards the process made litile advance. The colour of the oil produced was high, and its taste sharp; it retained traces of sulphur, which showed themselves disagreeably in the smell of soaps made from it, and in the blackening of paints in which it was used ; and the meal left by the process was so tainted with evil-smelling car- bon bisulphide that cattle would not taste it. These drawbacks have now been perfectly surmounted, and the process appears likely to come into extended use on the Continent.

The seed for treatment with bisulphide of carbon is prepared as for pressing, except that it is not reduced to a fine meal, which would prevent the percolation of the solvent freely through the mass. It is only bruised and placed in a series of four or five up- right cylinders, which are hermetically closed and provided with a complicated arrangement of pipes leading to and from each other in various ways,—all being controlled by stop-cocks. Into the first cylinder A bisulphide of carbon is admitted from an overhead reservoir, till the whole mass is saturated with the fluid. After allowing the bisulphide to act on the contents of the cylinder for about fifteen minutes, communication between cylinders A and B is opened, the fluid from A passss into B, and a fresh supply of bisulphide comes from the reservoir into A. Again, after the lapse of fifteen minutes, the pipe leading into cylinder C

~~is opened, and the fluid contents of B enter C. B is filled from A, which again is replenished from the reservoir. The extraction thus goes on, pure bisulphide of carbon always entering the weakest, most nearly exhausted cylinder, and passing on with gradually increasing per- centage of oil to cylinders having more and more oil in their con- tents, till at the end, in the most recently charged cylinder the bisulphide is fully saturated with oil and passes off to the distil- ling apparatus, where the oil and the bisulphide are separated. When the contents of a cylinder have been fully extracted that vessel is isolated from the others, the remaining bisulphide of car- bon is forced out by the admission of compressed air, and there- after steam is run through the exhausted meal till not a trace of the solvent remains. The bisulphide, boiling at 46° C., is easily separated from the oil by simple distillation, and the last traces of the sulphur compound are removed by blowing steam through the oil in the distilling apparatus. Careful provision is made for the prevention of cscape and for the recovery aud proper storing of the bisulphide of carbon in use.~~

~~Ot Aas~~

~~In addition to the use of bisulphide of carbon claimed under his patent of 1855 (English patent 1856), E. Deiss enumerates as solvents chloroform, ether, and benzin or benzol. In 1863 an English patent was secured by Messrs Richardson, Lundy, and Irvine for obtaining oil from crushed seeds, or from refuse pressed cake, by the solvent action of " volatile hydrocarbons from petro- leum, earth oils, asphaltum oil, coal oil, or shale oil, such hydro- carbons being required to be volatile under 212° Fahr." Since that time the development of the American petroleum industry and improvements in the apparatus employed have raised this system of extraction to the rank of a competing practical method of oil production. The most approved apparatus for this method of ex- traction at present in use is that of Vohl. In the separation of oil from oil-seeds by means of light petroleum spirit heat is required. Vohl uses a light petroleum spirit boiling at not more than 60° C., which he calls canadol, and by a very ingenious arrangement of ex- tractors, boiling and collecting kettle, and condenser, all brought into connexion by a system of pipes, he percolates the crushed seed in the extractor cylinders with heated canadol, which passes down into the kettle laden with extracted oil. Here the volatile canadol is distilled off~~

~~by steam heat, and passes into the condenser, whence it again goes into the extractors, still further exhausting the seed and carrying an, additional portion of fixed oil into the kettle. In this way the original charge of canadol keeps circulat- ing till it completely exhausts the charge of seed in the extractors. The canadol is then distilled off from the fixed oil collected in the kettle, the condensed spirit going this time into a separate receiver, and finally the oil is perfectly freed from canadol by having steam blown through it. As pure petroleum spirit extracts neither resinous nor gummy matters from the oil-seed, and moreover takes up little or uo colouring matter, the oil obtained by this solvent is remarkably pure, and the process is quite adapted for extracting even the oils used for food and for pharmaceutical purposes. The extraction of oils by means of ether, although presenting many advantages, has never been successfully undertaken on a com- mercial scale, chiefly through the apparently insurmountable waste of the costly menstruum.~~

~~Refining.—The refining of vegetable oils is generally carried on as a separate industry. A kind of clarification of an expressed oil takes place by simple settling in oil-tanks, but the action is too tedious and the result too imperfect for practical purposes. The all but universal method of oil-refining now practised was invented and patented by Charles Gower in 1792. It consists of treating the oil with a small percentage of sulphuric acid, which, owing to the avidity with which it takes wp water, acts on the suspended impurities by depriving them of the water they contain, and then carbonizes the substances themselves, which precipitate in dark- coloured flocky masses. To a certain extent also the acid influences the oil itself, liberating fatty acids and combining with the freed glycerin ; and these new products remain dissolved in the oil. It is thus of great importance to use no more than that proportion of sulphuric acid which is capable of separating the impurities. The ordinary operations of refining are briefly as follows. The oil is placed in a large tank, within which is a coil of pipe for heating by steam. When the oil is sufficiently hot, sulphuric acid is slowly added to the extent of from } to 14 per cent. of commercial acid, according to the nature and impurities of the oil. After the con- tents of the tank have been in vigorous agitation for about an hour, it is left at rest for about five hours to allow the charred impurities to collect and precipitate. The oil is then conveyed into a washing vat, where it is mixed with about 20 per cent. of~~

boiling water, with the addition of a little soda, and kept briskly stirred for an hour. From this the mixture passes to clearing tanks, in which the oil is allowed to rest about a week in order to thoroughly separate the remaining water. 'The addition of about 5 per cent. of common salt, by increasing the specific gravity of the water, considerably hastens this separation. Finally the oil is passed through a filter composed of alternate layers of tow, dried moss, canvas, and similar porous substances. Numerous modifica- tions of the above scquence and other processes of refining have been introduced, and more or less adopted. One of the best distinct processes is that of Bareswil, which consists in heating the oil and adding to it 2 to 3 per cent. of caustic soda. Thereby a corresponding proportion of soap is formed, which, rising to the surface as a strong frothing scum, brings with it the impurities which are rendered insoluble. The scum is subsequently allowed to precipitate, in doing which it perfectly clarifies the oil. The coagulum so formed is used as a lubricant. Rudolph von Wagner proposed the use of concentrated chloride of zinc, instead of sul- phuric acid, in refining ; and various other mineral acids as well as salts and tannin have also been suggested and tried. The most recent process of refining, and certainly the simplest and most cx- peditious if experience demonstrates its sufficiency, is that intro- duced by Mayer of the Hernalser Actien-Oelfabrik. It consists simply in submitting oil direct from the press to the action of a centrifugal machine. Thereby the albuminoid, mucilaginous, and other impurities are driven against the sides of the drum, on which

they deposit as a solid coating, leaving the oil pure and clear. The effect is, of course, due to the difference in density between the oil and its suspended impurities.

Animal Fat Rendering.—The animal fats, butter only excepted, are liberated from the cells in which the fatty matter is enclosed by the agency of heat alone. The heat applied melts the fat, and by thereby causing its expansion as well as by acting on the moisture in the tissue it bursts the cell membrane and allows the liquid fat to flow together. The process is a noxious and disagreeable one owing to the intolerable stench given off by the putrefying animal matter while under the influence of heat ; and it is

~~practically im- possible to have the fatty matter heated on a large scale in its pure and sweet condition. It becomes an object of importance, therefore, to prevent the escape of such disagreeable fumes into the air, and the apparatus used is principally modified with that view. The simplest method of tallow-rendering consists in cutting the fatty matter by hand or machine into small fragments, which are placed in a copper vessel, with a small quantity of water, over an open fire. While the fire is applied the mass is kept stirring, and gradually the oil exudes and collects as the membraneous matter—greaves or cracklings—becomes shrunken and shrivelled. The fat is then ladled out of the boiler and strained through a sieve or filter, and the greaves, placed in a hair or woollen bag, are submitted to press- ure, by which a further portion of tallow is separated. The pressed greaves are useful for dog's food or for feeding swine, &c., or they may be still a source of tallow, which can be obtained by treating them with bisulphide of carbon or with petroleum spirit. An im- proved method of rendering tallow consists in crushing the suet under a pair of edge-stones, whereby the cells are ruptured, and heating ihe product over an open fire with about one-fifth part of water acidified with from two to seven parts of strong sulphuric acid added in the boiler. The means, however, of most effectually separating animal fat and at the same time avoiding the pollution of the air consists in the use of air-tight cylinders or kettles heated by steam. According to certain methods of working, superheated steam is forced into the kettle and acts direct on the shred suet, &c. ; in other cases the steam circulates in a coiled pipe within the vessel ; and a third way consists in the usc of steam-jacketed rendering vessels. Strained tallow, however prepared, is further purified or refined before using by melting and thorough washing with hot water, after which it is allowed to cool slowly, so as to throw down impurities with the separating water. The same cffect is also pro- duced by blowing steam through molten tallow (comp. Larp, vol. xiv. p. 312).~~

~~Classification and Enumeration of Ouls and Fats.~~

~~There is no strictly systematic plan upon which oils and fats can be satisfactorily classified and arranged. The scheme which follows brings the various commercial pro- ducts into convenient groups, the distinctions of which are of prominent importance.~~

I. Fluid Oils. a. Non-drying or greasy oils, containing chiefly olein. b. Drying oils, containing linolein. c. Fish or train oils, containing physetolein. Il. fats and Waxes. a. Solid glycerides, principally palmitin and stearin. b. Non-glycerides or waxes.

In a pure condition the non-drying oils undergo little change through the influence of the atmosphere, but by degrees a process of slow fermentation is set up by the agency of the natural impurities they contain, developing an offensive rancid smell, and rendering the oils thick and greasy. Even in very thin layers, however, they never dry. Under the influence of nitrous acid and mercuric nitrate the olein of non-drying oils undergoes a molecular change into elaidin, and the oil becomes solid. Castor oil, the characteristic glyceride of which is ricinolein, occupies an intermediate position between drying and non-drying oils. The influence of nitrous acid on ricinolein changes the molecular constitution of the body forming ricinclaidin, with simultaneous solidification, as in the case of olein. The drying oils are those which contain as principal con- stituents linolein or analogous glycerides. They absorb oxygen from the atmosphere with much rapidity, giving off at the same time carbonic acid and water, whereby the composition of the oil is modified, the proportion of oxygen much increased, and the physical properties of the oils changed. 'They do not solidify under the influence of nitrous acid. The fish oils do not dry on exposure to the

air, but they thicken and present physical features inter- mediate between drying and non-drying oils.

The following list embraces the whole of the oils, fats, and waxes ordinarily met with in commerce. Such of them as are of considerable importance are indicated by an asterisk, and notices of these will follow or be found under their own headings, or under the name of the pro- ducing material. The oils, &c., of local, limited, or other- wise minor lmportance are marked with an obelisk.

1. Non-DRyiIne OILs.

~~4. VEGETABLE Fars.~~

~~Yield Specific~~

~~Name of Oil. Source. Per Gravity. Principal Use. cent. *Ground-nut | Arachis hypogwa ….| 38-50] 0°918 | Food; soap. Joicial GaccoonD Moringa pterygo- | 30-35 | 0°912 | Perfumery; personal. sperma *Almond .| Amygdalus-communis | 45-55 | 0°915 ve HECACH serstejels Amygdalus persica ..) 32-85] 0°916 Perfumery; medicine. ¦Plum-kernel | Prunus domestica ….| 25-30 | 0°9127 : tCherry-ker- | Prunus Cerasus…... 25-30 | 0°923 | Food; burning; soap. nel tApple-seed | Pyrus Malus …..... 12-15 Food ; burning. tQuince…...} Cydonia vulgaris ….| 15 Bo Food. tCashew ….| Anacardiwm occiden- | 40-50| 0°916 | Food. tale ¦Spindle-tree | Huonymus ewropwus | 28-29 | 0:938 | Burning; surgery. tHorse-chest- | 4isculus Hippocas- | 6-8 | 0°927 | Medicine. nut tanum *Cotton-seed | Gossypium sp. ..... 15-20 | 0°9306 | Soap and lubricant. Tea-seed ….| Camellia theifera ….| 30-85} 0°927 | General use in China. Brazil-nut ..| Bertholletia excelsa ..| 60-67 | 0°9185 | Food. tJungle-al- | Terminalia Catappa..| 28 | 0°918 | Food. mond CO Zama Brassica campestris ..| 35-45 | 0°9150 | Lighting. BRapeN «cctnie Brassica campestris, | 30-40 | 0°9139 | Lightingand lubricant. var. Napus *Mustard ….| Brassica sp. ..... 15-25 | 0°917 | Soap-making. Radish-seed | Raphanus sativus ….| 45-50 | 0°917 | Food. *Sesaine or | Sesamum orientale 50-66 | 0°9235 | Food ; soap-making. Gingelly Mie accor Olea europea …... 80-50 | 0°91 Food ; burning, &c. Beech-nut ..| Fagus sylvatica …... 20 | 0°9225 | Food ; burning. Hazel-nut ..| Corylus Avellana ….| 50-60} 0°9243 ee >, perfumery ; urning. MIZE, 0s os Zea Mays (germ) ....| 15 | 0°9215 | Burning; wool; oiling. ¦Cyperus-root] Cyperus esculentus 20 | 0°924 | Food. *Castor …...| Ricinus communis 50-60 | 0°9667 Medicines soap ; lubri- cant. *Croton…...| Croton Tigliwm…... 30-40 | 0°942 | Medicine. Purging-nut | Jatropha Curcas 30-40 | 0°915 | Medicine; soap; lubri- : A cant. Animal Oils— *Neat's – foot se 0915 Sheep's 3 0°9175 |) Fine machinery oil. EVOTEE) 2512/2 SNE ee 0°913 THO ocineteers Yellow of eggs …... 10-13 ae~~

~~2. Drytne OILs.~~

*Candle-nut | Alewrites triloba ….| 55-60 | 0°940 | Burning; paint; soap. NVCOM) . . nares Alewrites cordata ….| 85-41 ne Varnish and paint. +tGrape-seed..| Vitis vinifera …... 10-20 | 0°9202 | Food ; burning; soap. *Linseed ….| Linum usttatissimum | 20-83 | 0:9350 | Paint; varnish; lino-leum, &c. Pumpkin- Cucurbita Pepo …... 20-25 | 0°9231 | Food; burning seed Koeme…... Telfairia pedata 38 ae Food. *German se- | Camelina sativa ….| 25-28 | 0°9228 | Burning; soap ° same tCress-seed Lepidium sativum.…| 50-60 | 0924 | Burning; soap. *Poppy ….....| Papaver somniferum. .| 50-60 | 0°9250 | Food ; paints ; soap. + Mexican Argemone mexicana ..| 25-80} 0°919 | Burning; medicine. poppy tWeld-seed ..| Reseda Luteola …... 30 | 0°9058 | Burning; paints. +Belladonna | Atropa Belladonna ..\ .. 0:925 | Food; burning. Le a Nicotiana Tabacum ..| 30-32 | 0-9232 | Burning. see *Sunflower ..| Helianthus annuus ..| 28-30 | 0:9260 | Food ; paints; soap. *Madia ….....| Madia sativa …..... 35-40 | 0°9286 | Burning; soap; lubri- cant. PINTECT) 6060s Guwizotia oleifera, ...| 40-45 | 0°9242 | Soap ; lubricant. *Safflower….| Carthamus tinctorius | 30-35 oe Food ; burning. *Hemp ….....| Cannabis sativa…... 80-35 | 0°9276 | Lubricant; varnish. PNAC veins. oc6 Juglans regia …..... 40-50 | 0°9250 | Food ; oil-painting. +Pine-tree.…| Pinus sylvestris…... 25-30 | 0°9312 | Paints and varnishes. tRed ae Pinus Abies …..... 25-30 | 0°9288 | Paints and varnishes. see 3. TRAIN AND FisH OILs. Walrus .| Trichecus rosmarus .. 09250 |) Burning; lubricant; a Mecaessart Various species…... 58 currying leather, &c. orpoise ….| Delphinus phocena .. 0°9220 'ami . * 'le- ; ns turning ; lubricant ; Bottle-nose he aed globi 0°9180 fibre dressing, &c. 2 *Sperm .| Physeter macro- 0°910 | Lubricant. cephalus PAVING Songs Various species…... ne Burning; lubricant, &c. Sod. whens Livers of Gadus mor- 0°925 rhua, &c. (| Medicinal; currying Shak 2… 2. Livers of Squalus, 0:875 leather. : various species HTS lie eatesesst ates Varioustish ~..... Burning ; lubricant.*

*Yeeld|| a. : Name of Oil. Source. ae cay Principal Use. tDika butter | Irvingia Bartert ….| 60-65] 0°820 | Food; candles; soap. tJavaahnond | Canariwm commune..| 40 ms Food. oil *Chinese ve- | Stillingia sebifera ….| 20-30} 0°918 | Candles; soap. getable tal- low Pekea butter | Pekea butyrosa …... An Food. Soap-tree oil | Sapindusemarginatus| 30 Soap-making. Carapa oil ..| Carapa guyanensis ..| 60-70 a Soap; medicine. Piney tallow | Vateria indica …... ae 0°9150 | Candles. Borneo tal- | Hopea*

*macrophylla .. ee Mee low *Cocoa butter | Theobroma Cacao …..| .. tCokum but- | Garcinia indica…... 10 ter ; tChaulmoo- {| Gynocardia odorata ..| 50 Medicine. gra oil *Oil of mace | Myristica moschata ..| 20-23 | 0-990 Medicine ; perfumery. tOtoba butter] Myristica Otoba…... Sie a oe tal- | Myristica Becuhyba . ; Medicine ; candles. ow *Shea butter | Bassia Parkii…..... 40 | 0°953 | Candles; medicine. *Ghee butter | Bassia butyracea …..| .. Ae Food ; medicine. ee but- | Bassia latifolia …... 35-40 | 0°972 | Soap; candles. er tBayberry oil | Lawrus nobilis …... Veterinary medicine. tAvocado oil | Persea gratissima …. as Soap, *Palm oil …..} El@is guineensis …..] .. 0°945 | Soap and candles. *Palm-seed oil) Elais guineensis …..| 45-60] 0°952 | Soap and candles. *Cocoa-nut oil} Cocos nucifera …... AG 56 Soap and candles, ; 5. ANIMAL Fats. ya C2) if eames Sus scrofa domestica. . 0°940 | Food; candles; lubri- cant. Horse fat ..| Equus caballus …... Ai Currying:; lubricant. *Butter…...| Milk of Ruminants .. ; si Food. *Tallow (ox)..| Bos tawrus ……..... 0°920 | Soap; candles; lubri- cant. Beef marrow | Bos taurus ……..... 16 Pomade. *Tallow QUUSIOTHES: . wove cas 0°913 | Food; soap; candles. (sheep) Goose fat ..| Anas anser……..... Pomade. 6. WAXES. a. Vegetable— * Japanese Rhus succedanea …7| .. 1006 | Candles. wax Ocuba wax..| Myristica Ocuba we 0920 | Candles. Cow-tree wax) Galactodendron amer-| .. nid Candles. icanum Myrtle-berry) Myrica cerifera…... 20-25 | 1:005 | Candles. wax Carnahuba | Corypha cerifera 0‘995 | Candles. wax Palin tree | Ceroxylon andicola .. 0:995 | Candles, wax b. Animal— *Beeswax …..| Apis mellifera, &c. . 0°963 | Candles, &c. *Insect wax ..| Coccus ceriferus…... 0970 | Candles, &c. *Spermaceti..| Physeter macro 0°943 | Candles; surgery.*

cephalus

Oil Testing.—The presence of mineral oils in any fixed oil is easily detected by the process of saponification, as well as by a peculiar fluorescence they impart to the mixture. In the saponi- fication test the oil is made into a soap, with either soda or potash, the product mixed with sand, and the whole treated with light solvent petroleum spirit, which extracts the mineral oil. The in- crease in quantity of solution over the solvent used is the measure of the proportion of adulterants in the oil. Smell, taste, specific gravity, and viscosity, all to a certain extent give indications of the nature of an oil. The elaidin proof—that is, the solidification or non-solidification of an oil under

the influence of nitrous acid, and the length of time required for solidifying when such a change ensues—is a valuable indication of the nature of an oil ; and siniilar trustworthy conclusions may be drawn by observing the heat de- veloped by mixing one part of sulphuric acid with three parts of the oil to be tested, a test first suggested by Maumené, and elabo- rated by Fehling. The colour reactions which result from treat- ment with acids of different strengths, mixed acids and alkalis, &c., are the most important tests. The following tabular statement of several such tests is extracted from Schaedler's Technologie der Fette und Oele (Berlin, 1883). The first column shows the colour reactions produced by nitric acid of sp. gr. 1°18 to 1°20 on equal proportions of oil ; the second the effect of fuming nitric acid of sp. gr. 1°40 to 1°45 on four or five times the amount of oil; the third the colour reaction from the use of sulphuric acid of sp. gr. 1°60 to 1°70; and the fourth the effect of a diluted mixture of nitric acid and sulphuric acid on equal volume of oils. In the fifth column is given in hours the time a non-drying oil takes to solidify under the influence of nitrous acid, after which comes the appearance of emulsions formed by treatment with alkaline leys of 1°33 sp. gr. The last two columns are devoted to the effects produced by a solu-

Ol!

tion of chloride of zinc and of hydrochloric acid with the addition of about 2 per cent. of sugar.

ie] td ; . i) a si 2 S 8 aS. B | vei o 3 c0°S

Indies and Italy, olive oil from Italy, the south of France, and Mediterranean ports generally. Palm oil is received exclusively from the west coast of Africa, and cocoa-nut oil from the East Indies and Ceylon. Of seeds imported as sources of oil, linseed is principally derived from the East Indies and Russia, cotton seed from Egypt, and rape from Russia and the East Indies. The following table, from the Board of Trade Returns, gives the imports and exports of oils and fats into the United Kingdom for 1882 :—

Imports. EXPORTS. Quantities. Value. Quantities. Value. 1. Orns AND Fats, . Fish, train or blubber 14,303 tuns | £420,466 1,624 tuns | £49,082 Sperm or head matter 1,642 tuns 111,197 119 tuns 9,053 BAINITINED Ns

cievereicisre vit 67,877 cwts. 157,617 9,988 cwts. 25,714 (CIS) wane OnemoIne 163,970 cwts. 264,551 24,288 cwts. 40,057 WOCOR=NU sce. oa 133,782 cwts. 210,054 134,368 cwts. 205,788 (OUR: one pomOnpeneos 23,450 tuns 947,154 3,668 tuns 166,693 PEC EUT IMs os) sirevensysvere tetera" 813,870 cwts. | 1,240,866 428,162 cwts.| 642,203 sted) Senyeweedencer 14,507 tuns 476,807 1,162 tuns 37,279 Unenumerated…... aoe 116,229 = 20,175 10.2900 WR on omoben 667,153 cwts. | 1,866,360 43,682 cwts.{ 127,258 Tallow and stearin 1,116,581 cwts. | 2,252,517 218,852 cwts.} 428,460 WGK © alot cotecinelines COU uss 129,926 16,441 cwts. 55,074 Butter and butterine | 2,169,717 cwts. | 11,350,909 85,249 cwts.| 478,963 Oil (not essential or ; 14,041,900 galls. | 1,444,071 medicinal) Produce of the United Grease, tallow, and Kingdom. 239,710 cwts.| 372,229 animal fat 2. Ort SEgps, &¢. JED CGY = 00 eee 2,483,132 qrs. 5,245,513 6,050 qrs. 13,179 Rape …..| 548,806 qrs. | 1,032,829 41,782 qrs. | 100,895 (CORT) nee See 209,689 tons | 1,562,852 64 tons 543 Nuts and kernels 57,962 tons 726,428 27,606 tons 330, 877 Oil seeds unenumer- 120,963 qrs. 262,029 90,280 qrs. 201,543 ated Oil-seed cake …... 190,427 tons | 1,460,378 2,246 tons 14,732

Subjoined are notices of various oils and fats of considerable com- mercial importance to which special articles are not devoted in other parts of this work. In several cases notices of oils will be found under special headings, incorporated with descriptions of other products of the plants and animals whence they are obtained. Here drying and non-drying oils are dealt with together in alpha-

is 745

betical order, after which vegetable fats and animal oils and fats are noticed in groups. ;

1. Liquid Vegetable Oils.—Almond oil, the produce of both the sweet and the bitter almond, is a pale straw-coloured oil, having a pleasant nutty taste and sometimes—when pressed from bitter almonds—an odour of the essential oil of bitter almonds. The oil consists almost entirely of olein, remains fluid to ~15° C., and solidifies at 20°C. It is used in food, and in medicine is employed as a demulcent and mild laxative ; but the readiness with which it becomes rancid interferes with, its free use in these capacities.

It produces a fine firm soap, and is also largely used by perfumers. The oil ismuch adulterated with the allied peach-kernel oil, and sesame oil, nut oil, &c. It is chiefly expressed in England from almonds imported from the Mediterranean and the East Indies. Peach-kernel owl (from Amygdalus persica), Apricot oil (from Prunus armeniaea), Plum oil (from P. domestica), and Cherry oil (from the kernels of species of Cerasus) are a series of oils allied both in sources and properties frequently mixed with or sold as almond oil. Ben oil 1s obtained from the seeds of Moringa pterygosperma and M. aptera, trees native of Egypt, Syria, and the East Indies, and cultivated in America. The oil, cold-drawn, is clear, bland, and odourless, with little tendency to rancidity, but the product of final hot press- ing is coloured, and has a bitter taste and purgative properties. The oil contains, in addition to palmitin, stearin, and olein, the glycerides of behenic acid C,,H4,0,, and myristic acid C,,H,0, Ben oil is used by ra for obtaining essential oils by enfleurage, as a hair oil and ointment, as a salad oil in the West Indies, and as a lubricant for watches and small machinery. It is, however, princi- pally consumed in the regions of its production. Candle-nut oil is obtained from the nuts of Alewrites triloba, a tree native of the South Sea Islands, but grown also generally throughout tropical countries. The nuts are about the size of a horse-chestnut, with kernels which yield as much as from 60 to 66 per cent. of oil. The name given to these fruits is due to the fact that they are used in the Sandwich Islands, spitted on a stick, as lamps or candles, in which condition they burn with a clear steady light. The oil, cold-pressed, is a clear, almost colourless, rather viscid fluid, witha pleasant taste and smell, and medicinal properties akin to those of castor oil. HIot-pressed, it has a brown colour and a rather disagreeable odour and taste. It contains glycerides of linoleic acid and myristic acid in addition to those of palmitic acid and oleic acid, and possesses strong drying properties which make it useful for varnishes, and otherwise as a substitute for linseed oil; it is also an excellent illuminant and a valuable soap-making inaterial. On account of the cheapness of linseed oil, and the superior value of linseed cake, candle-nut oil does not find a very extensive market in Europe, but it is the basis of an industry of some importance in tle South Sea Islands, whence a large quantity of the oil is annually exported to the west coast of America. The nuts of Aleurites cordata yield Wood oil, a power- fully drying oil, of much importance in China and Japan for use as a natural varnish and in medicine. It does not

enter into Western commerce. Cotton-séed oil, obtained from the decorticated seed of the varieties of cultivated cotton, is now, on account of the enormous extent of its production, one of the most important of the fluid vegetable oils. Its preparation is quite a recent industry, dating only from 1852, when the first importation of the material was inade from Egypt. Since that period the trade has developed with extraordinary rapidity. Egyptian seed, containing about 25 per cent. of oil, is chiefly pressed in European countries (England, France, Germany); the American seed pressed in the United States shows not more than 20 per cent. of oil. The oil as expressed

**has a dark-brown turbid appearance, owing to the presence of a resin with albuminous impurities, and in the early days of the industry much difficulty was experienced in refining the product sufficiently for commercial purposes. It is now purified by as far as possible coagulating and separating the impurities by treatment with boiling water and steam. After the coagulum so formed has precipitated and been separated, the oil is treated with weak alka- line ley, briskly agitated, and allowed to settle, when the coloured resinous matter goes to the bottom; over that comes a proportion of saponified oil, and the clear refined oil forms the upper portion. The refined oil has a clear straw-yellow colour, a taint earthy odour, and a pleasant nut-like flavour. It consists entirely of a mixture of palmitin and olein, the former beginning to solidify and separate out between 12° C. and 6° C. There is no doubt that cotton-seed oil is very extensively and generally used to adulterate other and more costly oils, especially olive oil. It also is largely used in soap-making, and it constitutes a principal ingredient in compound lubricating oils. The quantity of cotton seed available for pressing annually is estimated to be not less than 800,000 tons, from which about 120,000 tons of oil and 250,000 tons of oil-cake may be produced. German Sesame or Cameline oilis procured from the small yellow or ruddy seeds of the cruciferous plant called Gold of Pleasure, Camelina sativa (Myagrum sativum, Linn.). The oil has a golden-yellow colour, a distinctive smell, and a somewhat sharp taste. In addition to other glycerides it contains that of erucasic acid, and of some analogue of linoleic acid. The oil dries*

XVII. — 94

only slowly on exposure to the air, and its chief applications are found in soap-making and for burning in lamps. It is principally produced and consumed in Germany and Russia. Grape-seed oil is used in the south of Germany and north of Italy for food and for burning in lamps. The seeds yield from 10 to 20 per cent. of a pleasant browuish-yellow very fiuid oil, which dries very slowly on exposure to the air. Growund-nut oil (sce Ground Not) is an excellent edible oil, largely used as a substitute for olive oil, and to no small extent passing into consumption either separately or mixed with olive oil under the name of the latter. The inferior hot-pressed qualities are employed in soap-making, being a principal staple of the soap industry of Marseilles, into which city not less than from 700,000 to 800,000 tons of the nuts are annually im- ported from West Africa. Madia oil is obtained from the fruit of Madia sativa, a plant native of Chili, but introduced into Europe within this century on account of its oil-yielding propcerties. The seeds contain from 85 to 40 per cent. of a dark-yellow oil, of peculiar smell and mild taste, which has a tendency to become rancid. It has only faint drying properties, and occupies a place intermediate between drying and non-drying oils. When cold-pressed, madia oil may be used for food purposes, but it is principally consumed in lamps, or employed as a lubricant and in soap-making. Maize oil is a product of the seed-germs, which, in the preparation of maize meal and starch and fermented and distilled liquors from maize, have to be removed as carrying in them a disagreeable acrid substance. The germ contains about 15 per cent. of a clear golden- yellow oil, useful for burning, or oiling wool, and for lubricating machinery. Niger oil is the produce of the seeds (properly achenes) of Guizotia oleifera, a plant native of the east coast of Africa, but cultivated throughout India and to some extent in Germany. The fruits, which are small, tooth-like in form, and shining black in colour, contain from 40 to 45 per cent. of oil, which first came into the English market about 1851. The oil is limpid, clear, pale-yellow in colour, with a pleasant nutty mild flavour. It possesses little drying property, and is not fitted for use either in paints or varnishes. It is much used in India—in the Deccan especially—as a substitute for ghee with the poorer sections of the population, and in other parts of the country both as a culinary oil and for burning. In Western countries niger oil is principally employed in soap-making and as a lubricant. Nut oil is the produce in

Europe of the nuts of the walnut tree, Juglans regia, andin America a similar oil is obtained from hickory nuts, Carya alba. The Euro- pean walnut kernels yield from 40 to 50 per cent. ofa fine limpid oil, which when cold-pressed is almost colourless, with a sweet nutty taste and pleasant odour, but the hot-pressed oil has a greenish- yellow colour and a rather sharp taste. Nut oil consists in large proportion of linolein, with olein and the glycerides of myristic and lauric acid. It is one of the most fluid of all oils, and, as it possesses with colourlessness strong drying properties, it is much valued by artists for oil-painting ; it also yields a fine transparent varnish. In the hilly districts of northern India and Persia—the native regions of the walnut—the oil is used for culinary purposes and for lighting. Several closely-allied nuts, both in Europe and in America, yield oil similar in quality to that of the walnut. Para-nut or Brazil-nut oil, yielded by the kernels of Bertholletia excelsa, is employed in South America as a food-oil and for soap- making. To a limited extent it is also pressed in Eugland and Germany from nuts which become unfit for table use. The oil be- comes rapidly rancid. Sapueaia oil, yielded by Lecythis ollaria, also a South-American tree, allied to the Bertholletia, is analogous in properties and uses. Pine oils are got from the seeds of various

species of pine and fir trees containing some proportion of resinous"

matter ; they have a turpentine odour and possess powerful drying properties. They are useful for mixing painters' colours, for making varnishes, and for burning in lamps. Poppy oil is yielded by the seeds of the opium poppy (see Opium). In the valley of the Ganges, the great region of opium culture, the poppy seed is con- sumed as an article of food by the native population, and is their principal source of oil. The exceedingly minute seeds contain as much as 60 per cent. of a fine transparent, nearly colourless limpid oil, of pleasant taste and faint characteristic odour. The qualities obtained by cold and hot pressing respectively are distinguished from each other, the former being an esteemed salad oil, while the latter, of yellow colour, sharp taste, and linseed-oil-like odour, is used for soap-making, &c. Poppy oil consists principally of the glyceride of linoleic acid, linolein, and has therefore powerful drying properties, on which account it is much used by artists. To some extent the finer qualities are used for adulterating olive oil. Purging-nut oil is obtained from the seeds of

Jatropha Cureas, a small tree native of India, but cultivated in tropical countries. It is a violent purgative, and contains, like castor oil, ricinoleic acid. It is comparatively limpid and odourless, and forms an excellent lamp oil. It is also used in the soap trade and as a lubricant. Saffower oil is yielded by the seeds (achenes) of the composite plant Carthamus tinetorius, which coutain from 80 to 35 per cent. of a light-yellow clear limpid oil. It is extensively used in Egypt, the East Indies, and China (where the plant is cultivated as

OT L®*

a source of the dye-stuff safflower), its principal applications being for culinary purposes and burning, and also as an ointment in para- lytic affections and ulcers. A thick sticky charred oil is obtained from the seed in India by a process partly of burning and partly of distillation. The dark fluid so obtained is used by the native agriculturist for greasing leather-work exposed to the action of water. Sesame or Gingelly oil, one of the most highly esteemed of vege- table oils, is the produce of Sesamus orientale. The plant is grown especially in India as an annual; it ripens in about three months, and two crops are reaped yearly. 'The seeds are very small, weigh-ing not more than one-tenth of a grain, and they vary in colour from a dirty white through brown to nearly black. They are highly oleaginous, containing as much as from 50 to 56 per cent. of a clear limpid oil of a pale-yellow colour, inodorous, bland and sweet of taste, and not liable to rancidity. It consists of about three parts of olein to one part of stearin and palmitin, with a small propor- tion of the glyceride of myristic acid ; and it does not solidify till it reaches 5° C. Both seed and oil are of much importance in the East Indies and China as food substances. 'The seed itself is used directly as food ; the oil comes next to cocoa-nut fat in the variety and extent of its applications for food, personal use, and soap- making ; and the pressed cake is even an article of food among the poorer classes. As a salad oil the cold-pressed qualities are in every respect equal to the finest olive oil, its mild piquancy of taste causing it to be preferred by many. Indeed sesame oil may be used with advantage for every purpose to which olive oil is applied, excepting, probably, the Turkey-red dyeing, and it is in extensive consumption in food, lighting, soap-making, and as a lubricant. The oil is the subject of much adulteration, especially with the cheaper

ground-nut oil. It can by itself, or as an adulterant of olive oil, be readily recognized by a peculiar green coloration it takes when shaken up with mixed sulphuric and nitric acids, a reaction peculiar to sesame oil. Sesame seed is principally crushed at Marseilles and Trieste, to which ports it comes partly from the Levant, but more largely from the East Indies and Java. The quantity of seed imported into France alone yearly is not less than from 70,000 to 80,000 tons. Sunflower oil isa clear pale-yellow limpid oil, with scarcely any smell and a mild pleasant character- istic taste, obtained from the so-called seeds (achenes) of the sun- flower plant, Helianthus annuus, which yield when freed from their husk about 30 per cent. of the oil. It contains glycerides of acids allied to linoleic acid, and possessing certain drying properties. It is of much importance in tlie east of Russia as an article of food, the sunflower being extensively cultivated in the government of Saratoff solely for its oil seed. ea-seed oil is a commercial pro- duct in China, where itis used for food, lighting, and soap-making. It is said to yield a fine hard soap. The oil contains 75 per cent. of olein and 25 parts of stearin, has a yellow colour, and is destitute of taste and smell.

2. Vegetable Fats.—Among the numerous solid oils of the vege- table kingdom only a very few occupy a place of great importance in Western commerce. Those which hold a foremost position—palm oil, palm-nut oil, and cocoa-nut oil—are referred to under their proper headings. Of the others the following enter more or less into general commerce. Dika butter is a solid fat yielded by the drupes of Irvingia Barteri, a tree native of the Gaboon coast of Africa. The kernels are bruised and pounded into a cake, which is used by the natives for food as dika bread, and they contain more than 60 per cent. of solid oil, which can be separated either by boil- ing or by pressure with heat. It consists principally of glycerides of lauric and myristic acids, with only a little palmitin. Dika fat is used in soap and candle making. Chinese tallow is a white hard fat formed on the surface of the seeds of the tallow tree, Siillingia sebifera, native of China, but introduced into the North-West Provinces of India. The tallow is in China separated by steaming the seeds till they become soft, beating with stone mallets, and straining the mass through hot sieves. The fat melts at 44°‘5 C., and consists principally of palmitin with only a little olein. Chinese tallow has long been valued in China for makiug candles used in Buddhist

worship, and it is now an article in English commerce, being imported for candle arid soap making. The seeds themselves, after separation of the fat, yield an oil fluid at ordinary temperatures. Carapa (or Crab-wood) oil is a soft white fat obtained from the seeds of Carapa guyanensis, a tree native of Brazil and Guiana and of the west coast of Africa. A similar fat is also ex-pressed from the seeds of the allied C. moluccensis, from the coasts of India and Ceylon. 'The fat has a slightly aromatic odour and a powerfully bitter taste, said to be due to the presence of strychnine. It is imported into the European markets for soap-making, and in its native regions it possesses a great reputation as an ointment in rheumatic affections. Piney tallow is a hard solid fat obtained from the seeds of the Indian copal tree, Vateria indica. The substance hasa feeble but pleasant smell, and a slightly yellow colour ; it melts at 36°°5 C., and consists of three parts palmitin and one part olein. It is prized for candle-making on account of the pleasant odour given off by the glowing wick. Cokwm butter is a solid white or greenish-yellow, pleasant-smelling, rather friable fat obtained from

Gi is

the seeds of Garcinia indica, a tree native of western India. It contains, besides stearin and olein, the glyceride of myristic acid, and various free fatty acids of the volatile class. It is principally used in India to adulterate ghee, and for various medicinal uses ; but it is described as forming an excellent substitute for spermaceti and to beapplicable for soap-making. The seeds of Gareinia pietoria and other allied species yield a similar fat. O22 of maee is the solid oil obtained from the Nurmsc (q.v.). Shea butter, the fat of the seeds of the tropical African tree Bassia Parkit, is at ordinary tempera- tures of a buttery consistency, with a dirty or greenish-white colour and a pleasant aromatic odour and taste. It consists principally of stearin and olein, and isan important article of food in the basin of the Niger and the adjoining regions. In European commerce it is employed for soap and candle making and in the preparation of pomades. Ghee or Indian butter, the solid fat obtained from the seeds of Bassia butyracea, an allied tree native of the sub- Himalayan ranges of northern India, is a most important food substance among the natives of the North-West Provinces, possess- ing a delicate white colour, the consistency of lard, and a pleasant odour and taste. In the hot climate of India it will keep many months

without acquiring bad odour or taste, on which account it is highly valued not only for food but also as an ointment, when perfumed, by the wealthier classes. It makes excellent soap and candles. Mahwa butter, obtained from the seeds of Bassia latifolia; a tree cultivated generally throughout India, is used as a substitute for or as an adulterant of ghee. It possesses a greenish-yellow tinge, and becomes rancid more readily than genuine ghee. The fat is imported into England for soap and candle making. The seeds of Bassia longifolia and B. elliptiea, natives of India, yield similar fats. Bayberry oil is the fat obtained from the seeds of the common bay or sweet laurel. It possesses a buttery granular consistence, a yellowish-green colour, a strong aromatie flavour, and a sharp bitter taste, due to the presence of an aromatie oil. It is pressed from the seeds principally in the south of Europe, Switzerland, and Holland, and finds its chief application in veterinary practice. Avocado oil is the produce of the fruit of the avocado pear tree, Persea gratissima, an edible fruit, native of the West Indies, but transported to other tropical regions. The fat consists of 80 per cent. of olein and 70 per cent. of lauro-stearin and palinitin, and is largely used in America for soap-making, In addition to the cocoa-nut palm and the oil palm, a large number of trees belonging to the same order, Palmacex, yield useful fats, which, however, are little known in ordinary commeree.

3. Animal Otls.—The only liquid animal oil of considerable importance other than the marine oils is Neat's-foot oil, a prepara- tion from the feet of the common ox. For obtaining it the feet are split up and boiled in water over an open fire, or, preferably, treated with superheated steam in a closed cylinder. 'The oil is skimmed from the surface of the decoction, and after some time it deposits a thick greasy fat, from which the liquid portion is sepa- rated. Neat's-foot oil has a brownish colour and a mild animal taste and odour, and does not readily become rancid. It is very valuable for watchmakers' purposes, and for oiling fine machinery generally, and is in great demand in eonnexion with the tools and machines of engineers. It is much adulterated, generally with fish oils. A large quantity of ox-foot oil is Prepated in and exported from the River Plate region in South America. Sheep's-foot oil and Horse-foot oil are made to a limited extent, and sold as neat's- foot oil. gg oil is obtained as a by-product of the preparation of egg albumen from the yolk or yellow of hens' and ducks' eggs. It is extracted either by pressure or by ether from the hard-boiled yolks, and has a fine

brownish-yellow colour and a mild taste, except when extracted by ether, which brings with it a disagreeable fatty constituent. It is now being used to a considerable extent in place of olive oil in the manufacture of chamois or shamoy leather. The Seal oil of commerce is obtained from the bodies of nearly thirty species of SEAL (q.v.). The blubber or fat consists of a layer of variable thickness lying between the skin and the muscular tissue. Skin and blubber are first removed together from the carcases of the animals, and when the products are landed the fat is removed from the skin and reduced to oil, either by slow maceration and exudation in large vats or by rendering with steam. When heaped up in great wooden vats the mere pressure of the mass causes a flow at first of a fine clear oil, which is saved as a separate commer- cial quality known as "'pale seal." Fermentation and putrefaction meantime progress in the mass, which begins to give off an almost unbearable stench, and the exuding oil gradually assumes a dark-brown colour, with a disagreeable animal odour and taste. By degrees the exudation of oil ceases, and finally the remaining oil is obtained by boiling up the mass with fatty muscular scraps, the product of which also forms a separate class of seal oil. he oil rendered by the action of steam heat on the fat has the advantage of being promptly obtained, free from the disagreeable odour of the greater portion of the seal oil obtained in open vats. According to its quality seal oil varies in specific gravity from 0°915 to 0°930; at a temperature of 5° C. a proportion of stearin solidifies out, and at — 2° to — 8° C, it entirely solidifies. In chemical composition it

| 747

consists principally of a glyceride of physetoleic acid with propor- tions of the glycerides of stearic acid, palmitic acid, a little oleic acid, and traces of some of the volatile acids. The oil is only very slightly soluble in alcohol, a circumstance which affords a means of detecting adulterations. It is used for the various purposes to which the allied whale oils are applied ; regarding these see WHALE. Shark oil, obtained from the liver of various species of shark, is analogous in properties and applications to Cop- Liver O1n (q.v.). Shark oil is distinguished from all others by its low specific gravity, which ranges from 0°870 to 0°880. It contains, but in different proportions, the same constituents as cod-liver oil ; particularly it is rich in iodine ; and it possesses a peculiar, highly- disagreeable odour and a very

~~acrid taste. Under the name of Fish oil may be embraced the oil obtainable by boiling from the refuse of various fish as well as from the entire fish which may for any reason be unfit or not applicable for human food. Such oils have a fishy odour and taste, a brownish colour, and a specific gra- vity ranging from 0°925 to 0930. The most important of these products is Menhaden oil, obtained from the MENHADEN (g.v.) on the west coast of North America.~~

~~4, Animal Fats.—The few solid animal fats which enter into commerce are articles of such importance that they have special articles devoted to them (see LARD, vol. xiv. p. 312, and TALLow), or of so little consequence that they do not demand special notice. Bear's grease, beef marrow, and goose fat are highly valued for use in pomades for the hair, but comparatively little of what passes under these. names is obtained from the sources to which they are attributed.~~

~~5. Wasxes.—The waxes of both animal and vegetable kingdoms will be dealt with under the heading Wax.~~

~~ESssENTIAL OILs.~~

~~The essential or volatile oils constitute a very extensive class of bodies which possess in a concentrated form the odour characteristic of the plants or vegetable substances whence they are obtained. The oils are usually contained in special cells, glands, cavities, or canals within the plants, either in a separate condition or intermixed with resinous substances, and in the latter case the mixtures form oleo- resins, balsams, or resins, according as the product is viscid or solid and hard. A few do not exist ready formed in the plants whence they are obtained, but result from chemical change of inodorous principles,—examples of this class being oil of bitter almonds and essential oil of mustard, Essential oils are for the most part insoluble, or only with difficulty and sparingly soluble, in water ; but in alcohol, ether, the fatty oils, and mineral oils they dissolve freely. They ignite with great ease, and burn with a fierce smoky flame, depositing a large amount of carbon. In many important respects they differ from the fatty oils: they are not oleaginous to the touch, and make no permanent grease spot; they distil at various tempera- tures unchanged ; they have an~~

aromatic smell and hot burning taste ; and in chemical constitution they present no relationship to the fats and oils.

Crude essential oils are at ordinary temperatures nearly all limpid liquids, but some are viscid ; and the essential oil or otto of roses is solid. Many on exposure to low temperatures separate into two portions, one solid, called "stearoptene," the other liquid, called "'eleeoptene." The essential oils possess high refractive power. Their influ- ence on the plane of polarized light is various: some rotate to the right, others give left-handed rotation, while with several no effect is visible. In their fresh condition many are colourless, but some are yellow or brown, others be- come brown by exposure, and in exceptional instances oils are green or blue in colour. They are all powerfully acted on by oxygen, which affects their colour, consistency, odour, and constitution. In specific gravity they range from about 0°850 to 1142, most of them being specifically lighter than water, and averaging 0°90. In chemical con- stitution the essential oils are diverse, but they are invari- ably rich in carbon. They consist, first and principally, of hydrocarbons, associated with which generally are, secondly, oxygenated compounds, sometimes the product of oxidation of the hydrocarbons, although in many

748

instances there is no obvious relation between the bodies. A third class of essential oils, limited in number, consists of those into the composition of which sulphur enters. Of the hydrocarbons which constitute the principal pro- portion of essential oils terpene, C,)H,,, is the most im- portant. 'Terpene is the chief constituent of the various kinds of oil of turpentine ; and a hydrocarbon of precisely the same composition is contained in the oils of bergamot, orange, and other species of C7trus, and in a great number of other essential oils. But although agreeing in chemical formula these terpenes differ considerably in physical pro- perties, such as specific gravity, boiling point, and rotatory influence on the plane of polarization. Under the name of terpenes are also included two series of hydrocarbons, polymeric with the C,,H,, series, having respectively the formule C,,H,, and Cy)H,. The former of these, C,;Ho,, is of comparatively frequent occurrence, being found in the essential oils of cloves, cubebs, patchouli,

~~and several others. The terpenes of formula C,)H,,, by their oxida- tion in presence of water, give off indirectly peroxide of hydrogen, H,O,, and yield cymene, C,)H,,, a hydrocarbon found naturally in the essential oils of cumin, thyme, and some others. The property of evolving peroxide of hydro- gen, possessed by cymene in common with terpene, explains the well-known oxidizing and antiseptic influence of com- mon turpentine oil, and has been turned to account in the preparation called "sanitas," a disinfectant and antisep- tic agent, consisting of an aqueous solution of oxidized turpentine oil prepared by blowing air into a mixture of turpentine oil and water. The oxygenated bodies in essential oils when formed by direct oxidation of the hydro- carbon generally have feebly acid properties developing through viscid oleo-resins and balsams into solid resins. The oxygenated compounds are very varied in their consti- tution, some being of the nature of acids or aldehydes, while others exhibit the characters of alcohols or of ethers. The most characteristic oxygenated compounds in essential oils are camphors, the type of which is common or Japan camphor, C,,H,,O. Compounds isomeric with common camphor occur in the volatile oil of Pyrethrum parthenium, wormwood, mint, and other labiate plants, and in chamomile and galbanum. Camphors isomeric with Borneo camphor, C,)H,,O, are found in coriander oil, cajeput oil, and Indian geranium oil. Isomeric camphors having the formula C,,H,,O0 form the menthol of peppermint and the euca- lyptol of Lucalyptus Globulus, and patchouli camphor has the composition C,,H,,O. The other oxygenated bodies in crude essential oils mostly ally themselves with compounds of the aromatic series, so called on account of the large proportion of its members that are represented by natural products obtained in essential oils, balsams, and resins. The essential oils which contain sulphur, of which the allyl sulphide, C,H), or oil of garlic is a type, have generally a pungent, penetrating, and disagreeable odour.~~

~~The essential oils are obtained from their sources in four principal ways,—by distillation, by expression, by enfieurage or absorption, and by maceration. The process of distillation is the most important, and is applicable to a large number of substances owing to the ease with which essential oils distil unchanged. Their general insolu- bility in water is turned to account in the process, the odoriferous materials being placed in a simple still with a small quantity of water, the steam from which carries~~

over with it the vapour of the essential oil. In distilling from certain bodies it is necessary to cohobate or return into the still the first distillate, and that opera- tion may require to be repeated more than once before the raw material is quite exhausted. Again, in dealing with some substances, solutions of common salt or of chloride of calcium must be used in place of pure water, and these, by raising the boiling point, send over the vapour more richly laden with essential oil. After con- densation and resting a sufficient time, the distillate separates into two portions, the oil floating or sinking according to its specific gravity. The process of capression is applicable to the obtaining of the essential oils which reside in the rind of the orange, lemon, and other citric fruits. HInflewrage is a method by which the odours

OLL s

of several substances are dealt with. The aroma in sucli eases is present toa small extent, and is too tender and liable to loss and deterioration to permit of being separated by way of distillation. The process consists of exposing the flowers in contact with purified lard or with fine olive oil in suitable frames, whereby the fatty substances take up and become impregnated with the essential oil. The pro- cess is principally employed in preparing pomades and perfumed oils (see PERFUMERY), as is also the analogous method of maceration, which consists in extracting the aromatic principles by macerating the raw materials in heated oil or molten fat, whereby the essential oils dissolve out into the fat. By subsequently digesting the im- pregnated fats and oils prepared either by enfleurage or maceration with spirit 60° over proof the essential oils are obtained as alcoholic essences, in which form they are much used for perfumery and flavour- ing purposes, &c. Alcoholic solutions of essential oils prepared by macerating the raw materials in alcohol also form a part of the tinctures of pharmacy.

Essential oils have a wide range of uses, of which the principal are their various applications in perfumery. Next to that in many ways they play an important part in connexion with food. The value of flavouring herbs, condiments, and spices is due in largest measure to the essential oils they contain; and, further, the com- mercial value of tea, coffee, wine, and other beverages is largely dependent on the delicate aroma which they owe to

minute quan- tities of such oils. For the flavouring of liqueurs, of aerated beverages, and of other drinks essential oils are extensively used, and their employment is not less considerable in the manufacture of confectionery and in the preparation of many dietetic articles. In the cheaper kinds of confectionery a large quantity of artificial oils called fruit essences are now employed, although the flavours as such are distinctly crude, and the wholesomeness of the prepara- tions is more than doubtful. The acetate of amyl gives an imitation jargonelle-pear flavour ; valerate of amyl yields apple flavour ; a mix- ture of butyrate of ethyl and butyrate of propyl gives the so-called pine-apple flavour. Formic ether has a peach-like odour, and is used for flavouring factitious rum, and there are numerous other artificial compounds used in flavouring and in perfumery. Many of the essential oils form most important medicinal agents. In the arts the cheaper oils, such as oil of turpentine, are used in the manufacture of varnishes; the redueing influence of the oil of cloves is utilized in the silvering of mirror glass; and oils of tur- pentine, lavender, and spike are used as vehicles for painting, more particularly for the painting of pottery and glass. —

The essentials oils are subject to extensive adulteration. The presence of fatty oil is easily detected by the formation of a per- manent grease spot on paper on whieh the suspeeted mixture is dropped. The admixture of fixed oil may also be demonstrated by distillation, when the volatile portion goes over, leaving the fatty oil, or by treatment of the suspected sample with strong spirit, which dissolves out the essential oil, and leaves the fatty oil as a separate layer. The presence of spirit of wine in an essential oil may be readily proved by shaking up a speeimen of the oil with a measured quantity of water in a graduated glass. If the oil is pure there will be little or no change in the volume of the water layer after the complete separation of the oil and water by repose ; but if, on the other hand, the oil has been mixed with spirit, the water will have extracted the spirit and deereased the apparent amount of essential oil, and increased the watery layer in propor- tion to the extent of the falsification. In dealing with very small samples a test by sight is obviously inapplicable, and in such eases the existence of alcoliol in the watery solution may be demonstrated by the molybdenum test. This consists of treating a drop or two of water separated from the oil under examination with a solution of molybdic acid in ten parts of sulphuric aeid. If the water contains alcohol, a characteristie intense blue reaction at

once exhibits itself. The behaviour of essential oils towards alcohol is also made the basis of a test of their purity. The test is effected by mixing the essential oil with two volumes of absolute alcohol, and there- after observing the volume of diluted alcohol sp. gr. 0°889 required to render the clear solution opalescent. The falsification of a costly essential oil with one of inferior value is a fraud which can only be detected with much difficulty. In practice a fair estimate of the purity of an essential oil and of its individual character may be made by some experience of its smell as rubbed on the hands ; colour, boiling point, specific gravity, and other physical properties may also be usefully observed in aiding to form an estimate of the genuineness and value of a sample. Colour tests with various reagents are also used for the identification of the various essential oils. Among these are Frohde's test (a solution of molybdate of sodium in sulphuric acid), sulphuric acid itself, fuming mitric acid, alcoholic solution of hydrochloric acid and picric acid, &c.

In the following list the essential oils ordinarily met with in commerce, with their sources, general applications whether in medicine, in perfumery, in the arts, or as flavouring materials, and some of their physical properties, are tabulated. The specific gravities and power of turning the plane of polarization, given for a column 10 inches long, are extracted from Dr Gladstone's paper

OITS—OK E

on Essential Oils (Jowr. Chem. Soc., new ser., vol. ii., 1864). Such of the oils as are of sufficient importance are separately noticed in their proper places.

um

F Rotation . sieti oy . or acolumn) Princip: ppli- Name of Oil. Source. Sp. gr. (Meas mater long. Aniseed ……. Pimpinella anisatum) 09852 — Vl Med., flavouring. Australian sas- | Atherosperma 'mos- | 1°0425 + 7° Medicine. safras chata 13oN Oe oeeree Laurus nobilis *S808 — & Med. Bergamot…... Citrus Bergamia….| °8825 + 23° Med., perf., flav. Birch-bark ….| Betula alba …….. 9005 + 38° serie Bitteralmonds | Amygdalus commu- Be as Med., flav. nis, Var. Amara Buchu leaves ..; Barosma species…. be Med.

Cajeput…….. Melaleuca Cajuputi 9203 0° Med. CmlaIns) 6 «6 6 Acorus Calamus ….| °9388 + 43°°5 osnn Caraway …... Carum Carui …... “8845 + 63° Med., flav. Cardamoms….| Amomum species oe on, Med., flav. Cascarilla…... Croton Eluteria ….| °8956 + 26° Ames CPC Eip Saaeeane Cinnamomum Cassia} 1:0297 0° Med., perf., flav. (OGLE ane eerste | Juniperus virgini-| 9622 + 3° Perf. + ana WEdrat 000% +s Citrus medica …... “8584 +156° Perf. Chamoinile «| Matricaria Chamo- sé a Med. milla Citronella…... | Andropogon Nardus} 8908 – 4 Perf. CLOMESI ss: 0:5 ‘ Caryophyllus aroma- | 1:0475 – £ Med., perf., flav., ticus arts. Copaiba …... Copaifera officinalis 878 or Med. Coriander…... ! Coriandrum sativum | °87‘75 + 21°? Med., flav. C@ubeDS 22.0: 005 Piper Cubeba …... “9414 oe Med. Cumin’... ... wee) Cuminum Cyminum me i Med., flav. 1000 Aaeeeeee | Anethum graveolens | °8922 +206° Med., flav. ID1GIeRe aaenos Sambucus nigra ….} °8584 + 14°°5 stieee HBS O Lies… «/ale ie o= Claviceps purpurea oe ae Med. Eucalyptus ….| Hucalyptus species..| °8812 – 136° Med., flav., arts. Remme lars ssi is | Feniculum vulgare Sp at Med., flav. Bee nubis aeence Allium sativum …. ae ae Med. GINGED scion. oe | Zingiber officinale .. Ae aH Med., flav. Indian geranium Andropogon Schen-} 9043 – £ Med., perf. anthus Jasmine …... Jasminwm species .. iis ae aoe Ahouath ese Saeaaioc Juniperus communis fe Be Med. Lavender…... | Lavandula vera ….| *8903 — 20° Med., arts. MGGMION oes es .| Citrus Limonum….| *8498 +164 Med., perf., flav. Lemon-grass ..! Andropogon citratus| °8932 – 38° ee TEMES ss ss sie | Citrus Limetta…... Gc te Med., flay. Marjoram…... | Origanum Majorana ne Be Med., flav. Melaleuca ….’ Alelaleuca ericifolia 9030 + 26° Med. IMB bees eteniate | Mentha viridis . “9342 -116° Med., flav. Mustard …...., Brassica Vigra… .. + + ae me Med. Myrrh ….....| Balsamodendron 1:0189 — 136° Med. Myrrha Myrtle ….. ..+| Myrtus communis . 8911 + 21° Med. INGTON! 0.51 0% Citrus vulgaris ….| *8789 + 15° Med., perf., flav. Nutmeg …... Myristica moschata 8826 + 44° Med., flav. Orange-peel….| Citrus vulgaris . 8509 + 32°? | Med., perf., flav. Orange-peel oltree 8864 +216° aoe (Florence) PAMBISYine.< 6-50 Apium Petroselinum| °9926 = 9° Flav. Patchouli…... Pogostemon Patchouli] °9554 ae Perf. Pennyroyal….| Mentha Pulegium .. oe ao Med Peppermint….| Mentha Piperita….| *9028 – 72° Med., perf., flav. Petitgrain .| Citrus vulgaris ….) ‘8765 + 26° erf. Pimento …... Eugenia Pimenta ..| 1°037 50 Med., flav. MOR Aaoonooone Rosa damascena ….| *8912 – 7° Med., perf., flav. Rosemary ; ine officin- | ‘9080 + 17° Med.,

*perf. alis Rosewood .| Convolvulus scopa-| 9064 — 16° Perf. rius PEUG Sirs jos ateiaterrias Ruta graveolens …. at se Med. BAGS occ cae cee Salvia officinalis …. a ay Med., flav. Sandalwood ..| Santalum album….| *9750 — 50° Med., perf. Sassafras …... Sassafras officinalis | 1:090 : Med., perf., flav. SEAN Waemamancic Juniperus Sabina .. aS ¢ Med. Spearmint ….| Mentha viridis ….| 914 ae Med., perf., flav. SPIKer a… sense Lavandula Spica ae = Med., arts. Star anise…... Illicium anisatum .. ste a Med., flav. ABV MNO... ore eee Thymus vulgaris….| *8848 oe Med., perf. Turpentine ….| Pinus species …... 'S727 = ie Med., arts. Valerian. ..... Valeriana officinalis ne aa Med. ' Verbena …... Aloysia citriodora ..| *8812 — & Perf. Vetivert …... Andropogon muri-| 1:007 ue Perf. catus Wintergreen .. Cn aaa procum- | 1°1423 + 3 Med. ens Wormwood ….| Artemisia Absinth-| 9122 Med., fiav.*

Apart from the oil of turpentine, commerce in essential oils is

limited as regards bulk, although the value of the various articles is considerable. The cultivation of plants for their odoriferous principles and the extraction of essential oils are characteristic industries of Grasse, Nice, and Cannes, in the south of Francee. About Mitcham in Surrey, and in Herefordshire and Bedfordshire, several plants, principally lavender and other labiates, are largely cultivated as sources of essential oils ; but the localities whence the greater bulk of oils are drawn are widespread and as numerous as are the materials themselves. (Qi, TRANS) OISE, a department of northern France, three-fourths of

which belonged to Ile-de-France, and the rest to Picardy,

749

is situated between 49° 4' and 49° 46' N. lat. and 1° 40' and 3° 10' E. long., and is bounded on the N. by Somme, on the E. by Aisne, on the 8. by Seine-et-Marne and Seine- et-Oise, and on the W. by Eure and Seine-Inférieure. Its greatest length is 75 miles from north-west to south- east, whilst its breadth from north to south varies from 30 to 44 miles. The department is a moderately elevated plateau with pleasant valleys and fine forests, such as those of Compitgne, Ermenonville, Chantilly, and Hallatte, all in the south. It belongs almost entirely to the basin of the Seine, —the

Somme and the Bresle, which flow into the English Channel, draining but a small area. The most important river is the Oise, which flows through a broad and fertile valley from north-east to south-west, past the towns of Noyon, Compiégne, Pont St Maxence, and Creil. On its right it receives the Bréche and the Thérain, and on its left the Aisne, which brings down a larger volume of water than the Oise itself, the Authonne, remarkable for the clearness and copiousness of the springs from which it rises, and the Nonette, which irrigates the valley of Senlis and Chantilly. The Ourcq, a tributary of the Marne, in the south-east, and the Epte, a tributary of the Seine, in the west, also in part belong to the department. These streanis are separated by ranges of slight elevation or by isolated hills, the highest point (770 feet) being in the ridge of Bray, which stretches from Dieppe to Précy-sur- Oise. The lowest point is at the mouth of the Oise, only 66 feet above sea-level. Although the rainfall is under the average of France, several of the valleys are, owing to their nearness to the sea and the large extent of forests, moist and marshy. The climate is very variable, but the range of temperature is moderate. The population was 404,555 in 1881.

The area of Oise is 2260 square miles, of which four-fifths are arable, one-sixth woods, and one-twentieth pasture-lands. There are 54,000 horses, 5000 asses or mules, 111,000 head of cattle, 517,000 sheep (yielding in 1878 3,700,000 Ib of wool), 44,000 pigs, 7000 goats, and 29,000 beehives. In 1882 the produce amounted to 911,335 quarters of wheat, 123,460 of rye, 1,031,700 of oats, with large quantities of beetroot, potatoes, and fodder, besides barley, meslin, buckwheat, colza, hemp, flax, &c. Vegetables, fruits, and milk are supplied to Paris ; and wine and cider (6,646,919 gallons in 1882) are made, the latter being the drink principally consumed in the department. Industrial pursuits engage more than 160,000 of the population. A number are employed in quarrying building stone, in digging potter's clay and sand for glass-making, and in cutting turf. There are 697 steam and several hydraulic mills. The forges of Montataire near Creil employ 2000 workmen ; but agricultural implements, metal utensils, optical glasses, paper, pasteboard, and various kinds of toys and small wares in bone, horn, mother-of-pearl, and ivory are made in the small workshops which are common everywhere. Chantilly employs 2000 women in making the lace for which it is famous. Beauvais, the chief town, besides its clock-making industry, has a national carpet factory, which rivals that of

Gobelins at Paris. There are in the department forty-five woollen-mills with 54,000 spindles, and nine cotton-mills with 28,000; and the making of cauvas, woollen fabrics, blankets, hosiery, boots and shoes, revolvers, &c., is also . carried on, as well as boatbuilding. Sugar is extensively made from beetroot, and the manufactures of pottery, porcelain, and glass are also considerable. Commerce is greatly facilitated by the Oise and the Aisne, and by the lateral canal of the former. There are more than 400 miles of railway ; and the roads are numerous and good. Oise contains four arrondissements—Beauvais, Clermont, Compiégne, Senlis—37 cantons, and 701 communes. It constitutes the diocese of Beauvais. The principal towns are Beauvais (popu- lation 17,516), Compiégne (13,567), Senlis (6870), Clermont (5628), Noyon (5780), Creil (7099), an important railway centre, with earthenware manufactures, and Montataire (5385).

OKEN, Lorenz (1779-1851). Under this name the great naturalist of the transcendental or deductive school is commonly known; but his real name was Lorenz Ockenfuss, under which he was baptized at Bohlsbach, Baden, being born in that small Swabian village on the lst of August 1779. As Ockenfuss he was entered at the natural history and medical classes in the university

of Wiirzburg, whence he proceeded to that of Gottingen,

7950

where he became a privat-docent, and abridged his name to Oken. As Lorenz Oken he published in 1802 his small work entitled Grundriss der Naturphilosophie, der Theorve der Sinne, und der darauf gegriindeten Classification der Tluere, the first of the series of works which placed him at the head of the "natur-philosophie" or physio- philosophical school of Germany. In it he extended to physical science the philosophical principles which Kant had applied to mental and moral science. Oken had, however, in this application been preceded by Fichte, who, acknowledging that the materials for a universal science had been discovered by Kant, declared that nothing more was needed than a systematic co-ordination of these materials ; and this task Fichte undertook in his famous Doctrine of Science (Wissenschaftslehre), the aim of which was to construct a priori all knowledge. In this attempt, however, Fichte did little more than indicate the

~~path ; it was reserved for Schelling fairly to enter upon it, and for Oken, following him, to explore its mazes yet farther, and to produce a systematic plan of the country so surveyed.~~

~~In the Grundriss der Naturphilosophie of 1802 Oken sketched the outlines of the scheme he afterwards devoted himself to perfect. The position he advanced in that re- markable work, and to which he ever after professed ad- herence, is this,—"that the animal classes are virtually nothing else than a representation of the sense-organs, and that they must be arranged in accordance with them." Agreeably with this idea, Oken contends that there are only five animal classes :—(1) the Dermatozoa, or Inverte- brates ; (2) the Glossozoa, or Fishes, as being those animals in which a true tongue makes, for the first time, its appear- ance ; (3) the Lhinozoa, or Reptiles, wherein the nose opens for the first time into the mouth and inhales air; (4) the Otozoa, or Birds, in which the ear for the first time opens externally ; and (5) the Ophthalmozoa, or Mammals, in which all the organs of sense are present and complete, the eyes being movable and covered with two lids.~~

~~In 1805 Oken made another characteristic advance in the application of the a priori principle, by a book on generation (Die Zeugung, Frankfort), wherein he main- tained the proposition that "all organic beings originate from and consist of vesicles or cells. These vesicles, when singly detached and regarded in their original process of production, are the infusorial mass or protoplasma (ur- schleim) whence all larger organisms fashion themselves or are evolved. Their production is therefore nothing else than a regular agelomeration of Infusoria,—not, of course, of species already elaborated or perfect, but of mucous vesicles or points in general, which first form themselves by their union or combination into particular species." This doctrine is strikingly analogous to the generalized results of the ablest microscopical observations on the de- velopment of animal and vegetable tissues which have been prosecuted of late years.~~

~~One year after the production of this remarkable treatise, Oken advanced another step in the development of his system, and in a volume published in 1806, in which Kieser assisted him, entitled Bedtrdge zur vergleichenden Zoologie, Anatomie, und Physiologie, he demonstrated that the intestines~~

originate from the umbilical vesicle, and that this corresponds to the vitellus or yolk-bag. Caspar Fried- rich Wolff had previously proved this fact in the chick (Theoria Generationis, 1774), but he did not see its applica- tion as evidence of a general law. Oken showed the im- portance of the discovery as an illustration of his system. In the same work Oken described and recalled attention to the corpora Wolffiana, or "primordial kidneys," as they are now termed and recognized.

The reputation of the young privat-docent of Gottingen had meanwhile reached the ear of Goethe, and in 1807

OKEN

Oken was invited to fill the office of professor extraordi- narius of the medical sciences in the university of Jena. He accepted the call, and selected for the subject of his inaugural discourse his ideas on the "'Signification of the Bones of the Skull," based upon a discovery he had made in the previous year. This famous lecture was delivered in the presence of Goethe, as privy-councillor and rector of the university, and was published in the same year, with the title, Ueber die Bedeutung der Schddelknochen.

With regard to the origin of the idea, Oken narrates in his Isis that, walkmg one autumn day in 1806 in the Harz forest, he stumbled upon the blanched skull of a deer, picked up the partially dislocated bones, and con- templated them for a while, when the truth flashed across his mind, and he exclaimed, "It is a vertebral column !" At a meeting of the German naturalists held at Jena some years afterwards Professor Kieser gave an account of Oken's discovery in the presence of the grand-duke, which account is printed in the Zageblatt, or "proceedings," of that meeting. The professor states that Oken communi- cated to him his discovery when journeying in 1806 to the island of Wangeroog. On their return to Gittingen Oken explained his ideas by reference to the skull of a turtle in Kieser's collection, which he disarticulated for that purpose with his own hands. "It is with the greatest pleasure," writes Kieser, 'that I am able to show here the same skull, after having it thirty years in my collection. The single bones of the skull are marked by Oken's own handwriting, which may be so easily known." There was a cause, as we shall presently see, for this circumstantial testimony.

~~Oken, having delivered and printed his introductory lec- ture in 1807, informs us (Jsts, No. 7) that he presented copies to Goethe and to other members of the grand-duke's Government. "Goethe was so pleased with my discovery as to invite me to stay with him during the Easter week of 1808 in his house at Weimar, which invitation I accepted."~~

~~The range of Oken's lectures at Jena was a wide one, and they were highly esteemed. They embraced the sub- jects of natural philosophy, general natural history, zoology, comparative anatomy, the physiology of man, of animals, and of plants. The spirit with which he grappled with the vast scope of science is characteristically illustrated in his essay Ueber das Universum als Fortsetzung des Sinnensys- tems, 1808. In this work he lays it down that "organism is none other than a combination of all the universe's activities within a single individual body." This doctrine led him to the conviction that "world and organism are one in kind, and do not stand merely in harmony with each other."~~

~~In the same year he published his Erste Ideen zur Theorie des Lichts, &c., in which he advanced the propo- sition that "light could be nothing but a polar tension of the ether, evoked by a central body in antagonism with the planets, and heat was none other than a motion of this ether,"—a sort of vague anticipation of the doctrine of the "correlation of physical forces."~~

~~In 1809 Oken extended his system to the mineral world, arranging the ores, not according to the metals, but agree- ably to their combinations with oxygen, acids, and sulphur. In 1810 he summed up his views on organic and inorganic natures into one compendious system. The first edition of the Lehrbuch der Naturphilosophie appeared in that and the following years, in which he sought to bring his different doctrines into mutual connexion, and to "show that the mineral, vegetable, and animal kingdoms are not to be arranged arbitrarily in accordance with single and isolated characters, but to be based upon the cardinal organs or anatomical systems, from which a firmly established number of classes would necessarily be evolved ; that each class,~~

~~OK~~

~~moreover, takes its starting-point from below, and conse- quently that all of them pass parallel to each other ;" and that, 'as in chemistry, where the combinations follow a definite numerical law, so also in anatomy the organs, in physiology the functions, and in natural history the classes, families, and even genera of minerals, plants, and animals present a similar arithmetical ratio."~~

~~The Lehrbuch procured for Oken the title of Hofrath, or court-councillor. In 1812 he was appointed ordinary professor of the natural sciences.~~

~~In 1816 he commenced the publication of his well-known periodical, entitled Jsvs, eine encyclopddische Zeitschrift, vorziighich fiir Naturgeschichte, vergleichende Anatomie, und Physiologie. In this journal appeared essays and notices not only on the natural sciences but on other subjects of interest ; poetry, and even comments on the politics of other German states, were occasionally admitted. This led to representations and remonstrances from the Governments criticized or impugned, and the court of Weimar called upon Oken either to suppress the Zsis or resign his professor- ship. He chose the latter alternative. The publication of the Isis at Weimar was prohibited. Oken made arrange- ments for its issue at Rudolstadt, and this continued unin- terruptedly until the year 1848.~~

~~The independent spirit manifested by Oken excited his courtly enemies to harsher measures. An accusation was preferred against him as a member of a forbidden "secret democratic society" ; he stood his trial and was acquitted. He thereupon retired for a while into private life, occupying himself with the editorship of the Zs¢s and with a series of natural-history manuals in which he considered that he had arranged for the first time the genera and species in accordance with the only true or physio-philosophical principles, stating briefly everything of vital importance respecting them, and maintaining that it was the first attempt to frame a truly scientific history of nature.~~

~~In 1821 Oken promulgated in his Jss the first idea of the annual general meetings of the German naturalists and medical practitioners, which happy idea was realized in the following year, when the first meeting was held at Leipsic. They have been continued ever since in Germany ; and similar annual scientific gatherings have been origin- ated in other countries. The~~

~~British Association for the Advancement of Science was at the outset avowedly organ- ized after the German or Okenian model.~~

~~In 1828 Oken resumed his original humble duties as privat-docent in the newly-established university of Munich, and soon afterwards he was appointed ordinary professor in the same university. In 1832, on the proposal by the Bavarian Government to transfer him to a professor- ship in a provincial university of the state, he resigned his appointments and left the kingdom.~~

~~Switzerland has the honour of affording the final place of refuge, with means of an independent pursuit of science, to this philosophic and patriotic naturalist. Oken was appointed in 1833 to the professorship of natural history in the then recently-established university of Zurich. There he continued to reside, fulfilling his professional duties and promoting the progress of his favourite sciences, until his death in the seventy-second year of his age (11th August~~

~~1851).~~

~~All Oken's writings are eminently deductive illustrations of a foregone and assumed principle, which, with other philosophers of the transcendental school, he deemed equal to the explanation of all the mysteries of nature. According to him, the head was a repetition of the trunk—a kind of second trunk, with its limbs and other appendages ; this sum of his observations and comparisons —few of which he ever gave in detail—ought always to be borne in mind in comparing the share taken by Oken in homological anatomy with the progress made by other cultivators of that philo-~~

~~sophical branch of the science. The idea of the analogy between the skull, or parts of the skull,~~

~~iN 751~~

~~and the vertebral column had been previously propounded and ventilated in their lectures by Autenreith and Kielmeyer, and in the writings of J. P. Frank. By Oken it was applied chiefly in illustration of the mystical system of Schelling—the " all-in-all" and "all-in-every-part." From the earliest to~~

~~the latest of Oken's writings on the subject, "' the head is a repetition of the whole trunk with all its systems: the brain is the spinal cord; the cranium is the vertebral column; the mouth is intestine and abdomen ; the nose is the lungs and thorax ; the jaws are the limbs ; and the teeth the claws or nails." Spix, in his folio Cephalogenesis (1818), richly illustrated comparative craniology, but presented the facts under the same transcendental guise ; and Cuvier ably availed him- self of the extravagances of these disciples of Schelling to cast ridi- cule on the whole inquiry into those higher relations of parts to the archetype which Professor Owen has called "general homologies."~~

~~The vertebral theory of the skull had practically disappeared from anatomical science when the labours of Cuvier drew to their close. In Owen's Arehetype and Homologies of the Vertebrate Skele- ton the idea was not only revived but worked out for the first time inductively, and the theory rightly stated, as follows :—"The head is not a virtual equivalent of the trunk, but is only a portion, 7.e., certain modified segments, of the whole body. The jaws are the 'hemal arches' of the first two segments ; they are not limbs of the head" (p. 176).~~

~~Vaguely and strangely, however, as Oken had blended the idea with his @ priort conception of the nature of the head, the chance of appropriating it seems to have overcome the moral sense of Goethe,—unless indeed the poet deceived himself. Comparative osteology had early attracted Goethe's attention. In 1786 he published at Jena his essay Ueber den Zwischenkieferknochen des Menschen und der Thiere, showing that the intermaxillary bone existed in man as well as in brutes. But not a word in this essay gives the remotest hint of his having then possessed the idea of the vertebral analogies of the skull. In 1820, in his Morphologie, he first publicly stated that thirty years before the date of that publi- cation he liad discovered the secret relationship between the verte- bree and the bones of the head, and that he had always continued to meditate on this subject. The circumstances under which the poet, in 1820, narrates having become inspired with the original idea are suspiciously analogous to those described by Oken in 1807, as producing the same effect on his mind. A bleached skull is accidentally discovered in both instances : in Oken's it~~

~~was that of a deer in the Harz forest ; in Goethe's it was that of a sheep picked up on the shores of the Lido, at Venice.~~

~~It may be assumed that Oken, when a privat-docent at Gottingen in 1806, knew nothing of this unpublished idea or discovery of Goethe, and that Goethe first became aware that Oken had the idea of the vertebral relations of the skull when he listened to the intro- ductory discourse in which the young professor, invited by the poet to Jena, selected this very idea for its subject. It is incredible that Oken, had he adopted the idea from Goethe, or been aware of an anticipation by him, should have omitted to acknowledge the source—should not rather have eagerly embraced so appropriate an opportunity of doing graceful homage to the originality and genius of his patron.~~

~~The anatomist having lectured for an hour plainly unconscious of any such anticipation, it seems hardly less incredible that the poet should not have mentioned to the young lecturer his previous conception of the vertebro-cranial theory, and the singular coinci- dence of the accidental circumstance which he subsequently alleged to have produced that discovery. On the contrary, Goethe permits Oken to publish his famous lecture, with the same unconscious- ness of any anticipation as when he delivered it ; and Oken, in the same state of belief, transmits a copy to Goethe, who thereupon honours the professor with special marks of attention and an invita- tion to his house. No hint of any claim of the host is given to the guest ; no word of reclamation in any shape appears for some years. In Goethe's Tages- und Jahres-Hefte, he refers to two friends, Reimer and Voigt, as being cognizant in 1807 of his theory. Why did not one or other of these make known to Oken that he had been so anticipated? "I told my friends to keep quiet," writes Goethe in 1825! Spix, in the meanwhile, in 1815, contributes his share to the development of Oken's idea in his Cephalogenesis. Ulrich follows in 1816 with his Schildkrotenschddel ; next appears the contribution, in 1818, by Bojanus, to the vertebral theory of the skull, amplified in the Paragon to that anatomist's admirable Anatome Testudinis Europex (1821). And now for the first time, in 1818, Bojanus, visiting some friends at Weimar, there hears the rumour that his friend Oken had been anticipated by the great poet. He communicates it to Oken, who, like an honest man, at once published the statement made by Goethe's~~

friends in the Jsts of that year, offering no reflexion on the poet, but restricting him- self to a detailed and interesting account of the circumstances under which he himself had been led independently to make his discovery, when wandering in 1806 through the Harz. It was enough for him thus to vindicate his own claims ; he abstains from any comment reflecting on Goethe, and maintained the same blame-

less silence when Goethe ventured for the first time to claim for himself, in 1820, the merit of having entertained the same idea, or made the discovery, thirty years previously.

The German naturalists held their annual meeting at Jena in 1836, and there Kieser publicly bore testimony, from personal know- ledge, to the circumstances and dates of Oken's discovery. How- ever, in the edition of Hegel's works by Michelet, Berlin, 1842, there appeared the following paragraph :—"The type-bone is the dorsal vertebra, provided inwards with a hole and outwards with processes, every bone being only a modification of it. This idea originated with Goethe, who worked it out in a treatise written in 1785, and published it in his Morphologic, 1820, p. 162. Oken, to whom the treatise was communicated, has pretended that the idea was his own property, and has reaped the honour of it." 'This accusa- tion again called out Oken, who thoroughly refuted it in an able, circumstantial, and temperate statement, in part vil. of the Isis, 1847. Goethe's osteological essay of 1785, the only one he printed in that century, is on a different subject. In the Morphologie of 1820-24 Goethe distinctly declares that he had never published his ideas on the vertebral theory of the skull. He could not, therefore, have sent any such essay to Oken before the year 1807. Oken, in reference to his previous endurance of Goethe's pretensions, states that, "being well aware that his fellow-labourers in natural science thoroughly appreciated the true state of the case, he confided in quiet silence in their judgment. Meckel, Spix, Ulrich, Bojanus, Carus, Cuvier, Geoffroy St Hilaire, Albers, Straus-Durckheim, Owen, Kieser, and Lichtenstein had recorded their judgment in his favour and against Goethe. But upon the appearance of the new assault in Michelet's edition of Hegel he could no longer remain silent."

~~Oken's bold axiom that heat is but a mode of motion of light, and the idea broached in his essay on generation (1805) that "all the parts of higher animals are made up of an aggregate of Infusoria or animated globular monads," are both of the same order as his proposition of the head being a repetition of the trunk, with its vertebre and limbs. Science would have profited no more from the one idea without the subsequent experimental discoveries of Oersted and Faraday, or from the other without the microscopical observations of Brown, Schleiden, and Schwann, than from the third notion without the inductive demonstration of the segmental constitution of the skull by Owen. It is questionable, indeed, whether in either case the discoverers of the true theories were excited to their labours, or in any way influenced, by the a priori guesses of Oken ; more probable is it that the requisite researches and genuine deductions therefrom were the results of the correlated fitness of the stage of the science and the gifts of its true cultivators at such particular stage.~~

~~Oken's real claims to the support and gratitude of naturalists rest on his appreciation of the true relations of natural history to intellectual progress, of its superior teachings to the mere utilitarian~~

~~applications of observed facts, of its intrinsic dignity as a science. The following is a list of Oken's principal works :—Grundriss der Natur-philosophie, der Theorie der Sinne, und der darauf gegrtindeten Classification der Thiere (1802); Die Zeugung (1805); Abriss der Biologie (1805); Beitrage zur vergleichenden Zoologie, Anatomie, und Physiologie (along with Kieser, 1806-7) ; Ueber die Bedeutung der Schddelknochen (1807); Ueber das Universum als Fortsetz- ang des Sinnensystems (1808); Erste Ideen zur Theorie des Lichts, der Finsterniss, der Farben, und der Wirme (1808); Grundzeichnung des natiirlichen Systems der Erze (1809); Ueber den Werth der Naturgeschichte (1809); Lehrbuch der Natur-philosophie (1809-11, 24 ed. 1831, 8d ed. 1843; Eng. tr., Elements of Physio- philosophy, 1847); Lehrbuch der Natwrgeschichte (1813, 1815, 1825); Handbuch der Naturgeschichte zum Gebrauch bei Vorlesungen (1816-20); Naturgeschichte fir Schulen (1821); Esquisse d'un Systeme d Anatomie, de Physiologie, et d' Histoire Naturelle (1812); Allgemeine Naturgeschichte (1833-42, 14 vols.). He also con- tributed a large number of papers to the Isis and other journals. (RB~~

~~ae)~~

~~OKHOTSK. See Maritime Province, vol. xv. p. 548,~~

~~OLAND, or OELAND, next to Gottland, the largest of the islands belonging to Sweden, stretches for 85 miles along the east coast of the southern extremity of that country, from which it is separated by the Calmar Sound, about 5 miles broad at the narrowest point, and not more than 10 fathoms deep in the central portion. Its greatest breadth does not exceed 8 or 9 miles, and its area is estimated at 510 square miles. Consisting for the most part of Silu- rian limestone, and thus forming a striking contrast to the mainland with its granite and gneiss, Oland is further re- markable on account of the peculiarities of its structure. Down the west side for a considerable distance runs a limestone ridge, rising usually in terraces, but at times in steep cliffs, to an extreme height of 200 feet; and along the east side there is a parallel ridge of sand (resting on limestone), never exceeding 90 feet. These ridges, known as the Western and Eastern Landtborgar, are connected to- wards the north and the south by belts of sand and heath ; and the hollow between them is occupied by a desolate and~~

~~OK H—~~

~~OLB~~

~~almost barren tract: the southern portion or Allvar (form- ing fully half of the southern part of the island) presents a surface of bare red limestone scored by superficial cracks and unfathomed fissures, and calcined by the heat refracted from the surrounding heights; and the northern portion is covered at best with a copse of hazel bushes. Outside the ridges, however, Oland has quite a different aspect,— the hillsides being not unfrequently adorned with clumps of trees, and the narrow strip of alluvial coast-land with its cornfields and villages and church towers presenting an appearance of fruitfulness and prosperity. There are only a few small streams in the island; and only one lake, Hornsjé, about 3 miles long, deserves to be mentioned. Of the fir woods which once clothed a considerable area in the north the Boda crown-park is the only remnant. Grain, sandstone, and alum are exported from the island,— the alum mines at South (Sddra) Mockleby being in fact the most extensive in Sweden, and~~

~~*furnishing 7000 tons per annum. The only town is Borgholm, on the west coast, with one of the finest castle-ruins in Sweden. The town was founded only in 1817, and has not more than 800 or 900 inhabitants; but the castle, dating at' least from the 13th century, was long one of the strongest fortresses and afterwards one of the most stately palaces in the country. The island, which bears the title of a countship, was joined in 1824 to the province of Calmar. Its inhabitants, formerly styled Oningar, and showing con- siderable diversity of origin in the matter of speech, local customs, and physical appearance, numbered 22,820 in 1805, 37,270 in 1865, and 37,975 in 1874.*~~

~~*From the raid of Ragnar Lodbrok's sons in 775 Oland is frequently mentioned in Scandinavian history, and especially as a battle- ground in the wars between Denmark and the northern kingdoms. In the Middle Ages it formed a separate legislative and administra- tive unity. See Linne, Olandska och Gothlandska Resa (1741); Marryat, One, Year in Sweden (Lond., 1862) ; Andersson, Botaniska Resa genom Oland (1865).*~~

~~*OLAUS MAGNUS or MAGNT (Magnus, 2.e., Store, being the family name, and not a personal epithet) was born in 1490 and died at Rome in 1558. Like his elder brother, Johannes Magnus, he obtained several ecclesiastical prefer- ments (a canonry at Upsala and at Linköping), and was employed on various diplomatic services; but on the success of the Reformation in Sweden his attachment to the old church led him to accompany his brother into exile. Settling at Rome, he ultimately became his brother's successor in the titular archbishopric of Upsala. Olaus Magnus is best remembered as the author of Historia de Gentibus Septentrionalibus (Rome, 1555), a work which long remained for the rest of Europe the chief authority on Swedish matters and is still a valuable repertory of much curious information in regard to Scandinavian customs and*~~

~~*folk-lore.*~~

~~*OLBERS, Hervrice Witnetm Marratas (1758-1840), a distinguished astronomer, was born 11th October 1758 at Arbergen, a village near Bremen, where his father was minister. He studied medicine at Géttingen, 1777-80, attending at the same time Kaestner's mathematical course ; and in 1779, while watching by the sick-bed of a fellow- student, he devised a*~~

~~method of calculating cometary orbits which made an epoch in the treatment of the sub- ject, and is still extensively used (see Comer, vol. vi. p. 182). The treatise containing this important invention was made public by Baron von Zach under the title Ueber die leichteste und bequemste Methode die Bahn eines Cometen zu berechnen (Weimar, 1797).~~

~~OL B—OLD~~

~~part of each night (he never slept more than four hours) was meantime devoted to astronomy, the upper portion of his house being fitted up as an observatory. He paid special attention to comets, and that of 1815 (period seventy-four years) bears his name in commemoration of its detection by him. He also took a leading part in the discovery of the minor planets, re-identified Ceres on the~~

~~anniversary of its discovery by Piazzi, 1st January 1802,~~

~~and detected Pallas on the 28th of March following. His bold hypothesis of their origin by the disruption of a~~

~~prunitive large planet (Monatliche Correspondenz, vol. vi. p.~~

~~88), although now discarded, received strong confirmation~~

~~from the finding of Juno by Harding, 2d September 1804,~~

~~and of Vesta by himself, 29th March 1807, in the precise regions of Cetus and Virgo where the nodes of such sup- posed planetary fragments should be situated. Olbers was deputed by his fellow-citizens to assist at the baptism of the king of Rome, 9th June 1811, and he was a member After sonie years of suffering from asthma, he died 2d March 1840, at the He was twice married, and one son~~

~~of the corps législatif in Paris 1812-13.~~

~~age of eighty-one. survived him.~~

~~Notices of his life and works will be found in Liographische~~

Skizzen verstorbener Bremischer Aerzte, by Dr G. Barkhusen(Bremen, 1844); Allgemeine geographische Ephemeriden, vol. iv. p. 283, 1799 ; Nouvelle Biographie Générale ; Abstracts Phil. Trans., vol. iv. p. 268, 1843 ; Astronomische Nachrichten, vol. xxii. p. 265, also appended to A. Erman's Briefwechsel zwischen Olbers und Bessel (2 vols. Leipsic, 1852). A list of Olbers's extremely interesting contribu- tions to scientific periodicals is given at p. xxxv. of the 3d ed. of his Leichteste Methode, and his unique collection of works relating to comets now forms part of the Pulkowa library.

OLBIA, Oxzroporis, or BorysTHEnis, in the south of Russia, on the right bank of the Borysthenes, near its mouth, was a colony of Miletus, 655 B.c. It was the great station for the trade with the interior, and a wealthy city from a very early time. Inscriptions, published in the Corpus Inscr, Grexe., vol. ii, especially the famous decree in honour of Protogenes, throw much light on its internal history in the few centuries before and after the Christian era, They show it as a Greek city, maintaining its inde- pendence with difficulty against the barbarians who con- tinually threatened it; but the Greek life and the Greek names gradually gave place to Scythian, the city was finally merged in the surrounding tribes, and its civilization and importance disappeared. It is a commonplace among archeologists to speak of the trade-route which led across country to the northern sea from Olbia, and a find of archaic Greek coins in Prussia is appealed to as a proof ; but it has recently been proved that this find of coins was an imposture. Though it is probable that such trade- routes did exist at an early time, it is highly improbable that Greek traders used them. The natives brought down their goods to the Greek colonies, and the trade was there conducted, not by money, but rather by barter. The most interesting point about the religion of Olbia is the cult of Achilles Pontarches, the Ruler of the Sea, a deity who was extensively worshipped along the northern coast of the Black Sea. He was evidently a

god of the native races, in whom some analogy of name or character made the Greeks recognize their hero Achilles. Hence arose the legend, known already to Pindar, that Achilles lived on in the White Isle in the Black Sea, a god surrounded by the other heroes. Olbia was destroyed by the Getz about 70-60 B.c., but revived, and was a flourishing city when Dio Chrysostom visited it about 100 a.p.

OLDBURY, a township of Worcestershire, England, comprising the two parishes of Oldbury and Langley, is situated on the Birmingham Canal and on the London and North-Western and Great-Western Railways, 5 miles west of Birmingham and 3 east of Dudley. Coal, iron, and limestone abound in the neighbourhood, and the town

possesses chemical works, railway-carriage works, iron, edgetool, nail, and steel works, maltings, corn-mills, brick and tile kilns, and a manufactory of glass shades. There are no public buildings of importance. The population of the urban sanitary district (1678 acres) in 1871 was 16,410, and in 1881 it was 18,841.

OLDCASTLE, Sir Joun (d. 1417), who had married Johanna, heiress of the noble family of Cobham, and in her right sat in the House of Lords as Lord Cobham, was a nobleman who at once enjoyed the personal friendship of Henry IV. and was a professed follower of Wickliffe and an adherent of Lollardy. His reputation both as soldier and as statesman stood so high that he was selected by the king to command the English auxiliaries sent by Henry to assist the duke of Burgundy in 1411; and his.known friendship for the poor preachers and his maintenance of the popular religious cause gained him the title of "the good Lord Cobham." On the death of the earl of Salisbury in one of the revolts against the house of Lancaster, Old- castle became the recognized leader of the Lollards ; his castle of Cowling became their headquarters ; he sheltered their preachers, and openly defied the prohibitions and pro- clamations of the bishops. He publicly professed his faith in the principal Lollard doctrines and refused to believe what the church taught on the eucharist, penance, the power of the keys, image-worship, and pilgrimages. The house of Lancaster had secured the throne by making promises to the people and to the nobles, and had won the

~~support of the church by promising to put down heresy. This had set the Lollards in opposition to the new dynasty, and their discontent was increased by the ecclesiastical measures of the king. See Lornarps. In consequence Lollardy remained a constant source of danger during the reign of Henry IV., giving strength to more than one re- bellion, and Henry V., on his accession in 1413, determined to extirpate the heresy. While Henry IV. lived Oldcastle was protected, but in the year of the king's death he was accused in convocation of heresy and of harbouring the poor preachers. Henry V. did all in his power to protect him, laboured to make him give up his opinions, but, finding him inflexible, forbade him to appear at court, and permitted the bishops to proceed against him. A citation was served on him. He refused to receive it. It was accordingly posted on the doors of Rochester Castle. He refused to obey it, was excommunicated, seized, and examined, when he boldly confessed his opinions, and was imprisoned in the Tower, forty days being given him to recant. He made his escape, and his freedom was the signal for a Lollard revolt. The preachers and their followers met in St Giles's fields, and only the vigilance of the king prevented a rising. The enactments against Lollardy became even more severe than formerly. Magis- trates were directed to seize suspected heretics and to hand them over to the bishops for trial ; and a conviction was punished by death and forfeiture of goods. Oldcastle for some years eluded the vigilance of his enemies, but in 1417 he was seized while in hiding in Wales, taken to London, and burned. His execution was peculiarly barbarous. He was suspended from a gallows by an iron chain, a fire was kindled beneath him, and he was slowly burned to death.~~

~~In Mr Wright's collection of political songs there are one or two ballads on Sir John Oldcastle, alluding in no very complimentary terms to his Lollardism. Henry's victories had raised the war-spirit of the English people, and it was thought disgraceful that a knight and a gentleman who in his earlier days had gained the reputation of being a skilful soldier should be associated with people many of whom professed to believe that all wars were sinful. This popular contempt has perhaps led to the idea ably advocated by Mr Gairdner~~

~~that Shakespeare's character of Sir John Falstaff was meant to represent Sir John Oldcastle.~~

~~Compare Lechler's Johann Wiclif, vol. ii. ch. iii. ; Gairdner and Spedding,~~

~~XVII. — 95~~

~~Studies in English History, ch. iii.~~

~~754~~

~~OLD CATHOLICS, the self-assumed name of a new party in religious Christendom, which, like the Reformers .of the 16th century, has for its avowed aim the restoration of the ancient standard of Christian belief and practice ; but, while the Reformers took for their model the supposed doctrines and institutions of the apostolic age, the Old Catholics have agreed to accept the decrees of the first seven general councils (down to the second of Nicxa, 787 A.D.) as authoritative and binding on the church at large. Like the Reformation, Old Catholicism may be said to have had its representatives within the Roman Church long before its formal organization; but the immediate occasion of the movement arose out of the assembling of the cecumenical council at Rome in 1869 by Pope Pius IX. That pontiff had previously given indications of a tendency towards a reactionary policy which contrasted strongly with the liberal measures which characterized his earlier career. Of such indications the dogma of the Immaculate Conception (8th December 1854) and the "Syllabus" of 1864 were the most notable instances. The "Syllabus" was a formal repudiation of the chief doctrines and theories which during the preceding twenty years had been put forward by writers of various schools of thought, but representing opinions unfavourable to the teachings of Catholicism or the claims of the Papacy; and speculations which called in question the existence of a Divine Being were condemned in the same category with views inimical to the temporal power of the Roman curia. It was for the purpose of giving more emphatic recognition and sanction to the tenets of the "Syllabus" that the cecu- menical council of 1869 was professedly convened, and the announcement that such a solemn expression of the convictions of the church at large was thus to be invited was hailed by the organs of the Catholic press through- out Europe with unqualified approval. Not until the council was on the eve of assembling did it become vaguely rumoured that among the doctrines which would be brought forward for its acceptance and ratification was that of the Papal Infallibility. The mere~~

~~report was, however, looked upon as a matter of such grave import that Prince Hohen- lohe, the chief minister of Bavaria, was induced to use the most strenuous exertions to prevail upon the Catholic powers to combine to prevent the promulgation of such a dogma, but without success.~~

~~The council which assembled at Rome (8th December 1869) was more deserving of the name of "cecumenical" than any which had ever before obeyed the behest of em- peror or pope, being attended by delegates from nearly all parts of the world. It included 49 cardinals, 9 patriarchs of the Eastern communion, 4 primates, 121 archbishops, 479 bishops, and 52 abbots and other monastic dignitaries. The total number on the day of opening was 719, increased by the 15th of January to 744. As a representative body it was, however, very unequally composed, the numerous holders of Italian bishoprics (many of which are of but small extent) constituting a large majority of the entire number. A proposal to rectify this practical inequality by dividing the whole council into eight or six sections represent- ing national elements was summarily rejected. On the other hand, the superiority of the minority in learning and reputation was obvious. It included such names as Schwarzenberg, Mathieu, Darboy, Rauscher, Simor, Ginoulhiac, MacHale, Dupanloup, Ketteler, Strossmayer, Clifford, Kenrick, Maret, and Hefele ; while in the long list of those who eventually recorded their placets in favour of the new decree scarcely a name of real eminence appears. Dr Déllinger, the foremost scholar of Catholic Germany, was not among the "fathers" of the council, but his disapproval of the new dogma was notorious, as also was that of the Comte de Montalembert in France. After~~

~~OLD CHaTmroniecs~~

~~protracted sittings, extending over seven months, and characterized mainly by a series of discreditable man- ceuvres designed to break the firm phalanx of the minority, who could only record their protests and utter eloquent remonstrances, the Constitutio (as it was termed) was finally laid before the council, and carried with eighty-eight dissentients, while ninety-one abstained altogether from recording any vote. The supremacy of the Roman pontiff over even an cecumenical council was thus declared in terms more explicit and emphatic than had ever before been employed (Friedrich,~~

Documenta, ii. 316), while the new dogma was enunciated in the following terms :— 'We teach and define . . . that the Roman pontiff, when he speaks ex cathedra, that is, when in discharge of his office of Pastor and Doctor of all Christians he defines, in virtue of his supreme apostolic authority, a doctrine of faith or morals to be held by the Universal Church, is endowed with the divine assistance promised to him in Blessed Peter, with that infallibility with which our divine Redeemer willed that the church should be furnished in defining doctrine of faith or morals, and, therefore, that such

definitions of the Roman pontiff are irreformable of themselves and not in virtue of the consent of the church." :

When the above dogma was promulgated in its entirety (18th July 1870) in the presence of 535 fathers, only two dissentient votes were recorded. The rest of the minority had decided on quitting Rome before the final event, a resolution confirmed by the oppressive heat of the weather and the threatening aspect of the political horizon. It has since been asserted on good authority that the action of the Papal party was largely influenced by the empress of France and her advisers ; and it cannot be doubted that at Rome, not less than in Paris, it was ardently hoped that this bold proclamation of Ultramontanist doctrine would have been followed by the triumph of the French arms over those of Prussia.

The conduct of the different members of the opposition on their return to the isolation of their respective dioceses can only be described as a series of pitiable tergiversations. The "sacrificio dell' intelletto," as it was termed, was the plausible maxim adopted by one and all. Seventeen of the German bishops almost immediately receded from the position they had taken up at Rome and gave in their assent to the dogma, publishing at the same time a pastoral letter in which they sought to justify their change of sentiment on the ground of expediency in relation to the interests of the church (Michelis, Der neue Fuldaer Hurten- brief, 1870). Their example was followed by all the other bishops of Germany as well as by those of Bavaria. Dar- boy and Dupanloup in France adopted a like course and took with them the entire body of the Gallican clergy. Each bishop demanded in turn the same submission from the clergy of his diocese, the alternative being suspension

~~from pastoral functions, to be followed by deprivation of office. It may be urged as some extenuation of this general abandonment of a great principle, that those who had refused to subscribe to the dogma received but lan- guid support, and in some cases direct discouragement, from their respective Governments. The submission of the illustrious Hefele was generally attributed to the influence exerted by the court of Wiirtemberg.~~

~~The universities, being less directly under the control of the church, were prepared to show a bolder front. Dr von Schulte, professor at Prague, was one of the first to publish a formal protest. A meeting of Catholic professors and distinguished scholars convened at Nuremberg (August 1870) recorded a like dissent, and resolved on the adoption of measures for bringing about the assembling of a really free council north of the Alps. The "Appel aux Evéques Catholiques" of M. Hyacinthe Loyson (better known as "Father Hyacinthe"), after referring to the overthrow of "the two despotisms," "the empire of the Napoleons and the temporal power of the popes," appealed to the Catholic~~

~~Oo la~~

~~bishops throughout the world to put an end to the schism by declaring whether the recent decrees were or were not binding on the faith of the church. This appeal, on its appearance in La Laberta early in 1871, was suppressed by the order of the king of Italy. On the 28th of March Dr Déllinger, in a letter of some length, set forth the reasons which compelled him also to withhold his submission alike as "a Christian, a theologian, an historical student, and a citizen." The publication of this letter was shortly followed by a sentence of excommunication pronounced against Dr Déllinger and Professor Friedrich, and read to the different congregations from the pulpits of Munich. The professors of the university, on the other hand, had shortly before evinced their resolution of affording Dr Déllinger all the moral support in their power by an ad- dress (3d April 1871) in which they denounced the Vatican decrees with unsparing severity, declaring that, at the very time when the German people had "won for themselves the post of honour on the battlefield among the nations of the earth," the German bishops had stooped to the dishon- ouring task of 'forcing consciences in the service of an unchristian tyranny, of reducing~~

~~many pious and upright men to distress and want, and of persecuting those who had but stood steadfast in their allegiance to the ancient faith" (Friedberg, Aktenstiicke z. ersten Vaticanischen Concul, p. 187). An address to the king, drawn up a few days later, received the signatures of 12,000 Catholics. The refusal of the rites of the church to one of the signataries, Dr Zenger, when on his deathbed, elicited strong expressions of disapproval; and when, shortly after, it became neces- sary to fill up by election six vacancies in the council of the university, the feeling of the electors was indicated by the return of candidates who were all distinguished by their avowed dissent from the new decrees. In the follow- ing September the demand for another and a free council was responded to by the assembling of such a congress at Munich. It was composed of nearly 500 delegates, con- vened from almost all parts of the world ; but the Teutonic element was now as manifestly predominant as the Latin element had been at Rome. 'The proceedings were pre- sided over by Professor von Schulte, and lasted three days. Among those who took a prominent part in the delibera- tions were Landammann Keller, Windscheid, Déllinger, Reinkens, Maassen (professor of the canon law at Vienna), Friedrich, and Huber. The arrangements finally agreed upon were mainly provisional ; but one of the resolutions plainly declared that it was desirable if possible to effect a reunion with the Oriental Greek and Russian Churches, and also to arrive at an "understanding" with the Pro- testant and Episcopal communions.~~

~~In the following year lectures were delivered at Munich by various supporters of the new movement, and the learning and oratorical powers of Reinkens were displayed with marked effect. In France the adhesion of the abbé Michaud to the cause attracted considerable interest, not only from his reputation as a preacher, but also from the notable step in advance made by his declaration that, inas- much as the adoption of the stand-point of the Tridentine canons would render reunion with the Lutheran and the Reformed Churches impossible, the wisest course would be to insist on nothing more with respect to doctrinal belief than was embodied in the canons of the first seven cecumenical councils. The approximation which took place in the same year between the Old Catholics, as they now began to be termed, and the historical little Church of Utrecht must not be left unnoticed. Dr Dollinger, in delivering his inaugural address as rector of the university of Munich, expressed his conviction that theology had received a~~

fresh impulse and that the religious history of Europe was entering upon a new phase.

Cw rH Ui os

755

Othercircumstances contributed toinvest Old Catholicism with additional importance in the eyes of mere observers. It was evident that the relations between the Roman curia and the Prussian Government were becoming extremely strained. In February 1872 appeared the first measures of the Falk ministry, having for their object the control of the influence of the clergy in the schools; and when Cardinal Hohenlohe presented himself at Rome in the following May the world was startled at the refusal of Pius IX. to receive the accredited minister of the Prussian court. In the same year two humble parish priests, Renftle of Mering in Bavaria and Tangermann of Unkel in the Rhineland, set an example of independence by refusing to accept the decrees. The former, driven from his parish church, was followed by the majority of his congregation, who, in spite of every discouragement, con- tinued faithful to him; and for years after, as successive members were removed by death, the crosses over their graves recorded that they had died "true to their ancient belief." Tangermann, the poet, expelled in like manner from his parish by the archbishop of Cologne, before long found himself the minister of a much larger congregation in the episcopal city itself. These examples exercised no little influence, and congregations of Old Catholics were shortly after formed at numerous towns and villages in Bavaria, Baden, Prussia, German Switzerland, and even in Austria. At Warnsdorf in Bohemia a congregation was collected which still represents one of the most important centres of the movement. In September the second con- gress was held at Cologne. It was attended by some 500 delegates or visitors from all parts of Europe, and the English Church was represented by the bishops of Ely and Lincoln and other distinguished members. The general scope of the proceedings was the formation of a more definite organization ; and the question of reunion with other churches was again a prominent topic of discussion. Among those present was the late Dean Stanley, and the striking accounts which he forwarded to The Times of the

whole congress did much to awaken in England a more widely-extended interest in the movement.

In the month of May in the following year (1873) the celebrated Falk laws were enacted, whereby the articles 15 and 18 of the Prussian constitution were modified, so as to legalize a systematic state supervision over the educa- tion of the clergy of all denominations, and also over the appointment and dismissal of all ministers of religion. The measure, which at the time was interpreted as what Prince Bismarck afterwards openly declared it to have been, viz., a direct response to the Vatican decrees, inspired the Old Catholics with a not unreasonable expectation that the moral support of the Government would henceforth be enlisted on their side. On the 11th of August Dr Reinkens, having been duly elected bishop of the new community, received his consecration at Rotterdam, as ‘“‘ missionary-bishop of Germany,” at the hands of Bishop Heykamp of Deventer. The archbishop of Utrecht, on whom it would otherwise have devolved to perform the ceremony, had died somewhat suddenly a few days before, and the Ultramontanists did not scruple to interpret the event as a sign of the divine displeasure. In the mean- time the extension of the movement in Switzerland had been proceeding rapidly, and it was resolved that Constance should be elected as the centre for the third congress. The proceedings occupied three days (12th to 14th September), and were of an animated and interesting character,—the intelligence that the Prussian Government had resolved on recognizing the election of Bishop Reinkens contributing not a little to inspirit those who were present. English and American theologians, of widely different schools, listened to the discussions with sympathizing apprecia-

tion, and even bore a part. The subjects which chiefly occupied the consideration of the assembly were the insti- tution of a synod as the legislative and executive organ of the church, and schemes of reunion with the Greek, the African, and the Protestant communions. The unanimity which prevailed was remarkable, and not less so were the indications that the breach between the Papacy and Old Catholicism had become decisive and final. On the 20th of September the election of Bishop Reinkens was

formally recognized by the German Government, and on the 7th of October he took the oath of allegiance to the king.

The following year (1874) was marked by the assembling of both a synod and a conference at Bonn, and of a congress at Freiburg in the Breisgau. The acts of the synod were mainly directed to modifications of the Roman discipline and the removal of prevalent abuses. At the congress Bishop Reinkens spoke in hopeful terms of the results of his observations during a recent missionary tour through- out Germany. The conference, held on the 14th, 15th, and 16th of September, had for its special object the discussion of the early confessions as a basis of agreement, though not necessarily of fusion, between the different communions above-named, 'The meetings, presided over by Dr Dollinger with an ability and tact which excited general admiration, successively took into consideration the /tlioque, the sacra- ments, the canon of Scripture, the episcopal succession in the English Church, the confessional, indulgences, prayers for the dead, and the eucharist. Some divergence of views inevitably disclosed itself in the course of the discussions, but the same conciliatory tone and feeling marked the close as well as the commencement of the proceedings, and by both the English and the Continental religious press the final results were hailed as eminently auspicious. As the direct results of these deliberations it has since been decided to abolish compulsory confession and fasting, to employ the vernacular in public worship, to recognize the marriage of priests as lawful, and to allow them to administer in their churches the communion in both kinds to members of the Anglican persuasion.

Since 1874 Old Catholicism has found new adherents in other lands,—in Austria, in Italy, and in Mexico; but the controversial spirit which in past history has either broken up such organizations or largely impaired their efficiency has also marred the success of this interesting movement. In Switzerland, where important conferences were success- ively convened (at Solothurn in 1871, at Olten in 1872, 1873, and 1874), the unanimity of the "Christian Catholics," as they preferred to call themselves, seemed at one time in danger of being shipwrecked on the question of episco- pacy. It was not until 18th September 1876 that the conflict of opinions was so far composed as to allow of the consecration of Bishop Herzog by Bishop Reinkens, The reforms introduced by M. Hyacinthe Loyson in his church at

Geneva have received only a partial assent from the general body. Among the more practical results of his example is to be reckoned, however, the fact that in French Switzerland nearly all the clergy, in German Switzerland about one half, are now married men. But the congrega- tions, which in 1876 had reached the number of fifty-five, have dwindled to thirty-five. The number of children in the different schools is stated to be somewhat under 4000 (Nippold, Handbuch der neuesten Kirchengeschichte, ii. 466-

478).

In Germany, since the year 1878, the position of the Old Catholics has been one of considerable difficulty. While their representatives have scrupulously abstained from any course of action which could tend to embarrass the Government in its political contests, the most influential organs of that Government have systematically decried the movement and have undisguisedly aimed at its complete

OL D—

CO

| extinction. This change of policy is mainly due to the altered relations with the papal court. The present pontiff, skilfully ignoring the original and genuine causes in which Old Catholicism took its rise, has sought to represent its leaders as actuated by revolutionary designs and aiming at the subversion of existing institutions, while the Papacy itself has been described as the chief bulwark against social democracy and nihilistic tendencies. The Prussian Government has responded by a series of concessions to the Roman Catholic clergy, while the favour once shown to the seceding party is at an end. Bishop Reinkens himself, though he still receives a salary from the state, no longer draws it under the head of expenditure for Catholic worship. In Bavaria Professor Friedrich has been constrained to transfer his services from the theolo- gical to the philosophical faculty at Munich, and the little Old Catholic congregation has been deprived of its church. Huber's valuable literary powers have been lost to the cause by his premature decease. In France the place of M. Michaud, who has been appointed professor in the university of Bern, is in some measure filled by the return of Father Hyacinthe from Geneva. Under

such conditions the continued progress of the party and even its existence are obviously seriously imperilled. But, even if, like the Albigenses, the Lollards, and other similar movements to which the assumptions of the Papacy have at different times given rise, Old Catholicism should be destined to extinction, it will not the less have left on permanent record an ex- ample of loyalty to conscientious convictions the influence of which will long survive.

Authorities.—The literature of the subject is now voluminous, but the following are among the best sources of information. (a) As regards the proceedings at the Vatican Council and the more immediate results of the decrees : Friedberg (Dr Emil), Sammlung der Aktenstiieke zum ersten Vatieanischen Coneil mit einem Grundrisse der Geschichte desselben, 1872; Friedrich (Dr J.), Tagebuch wihrend. des Vatieanischen Coneils gefiihrt, 2d ed., 1873; Id., Le Conetle du Vatican, Brussels, 1871; Id., Gesch. des Vatikanischen Konzils, vol.i., 1877; Frommann (Theodor), Gesch. u. Kritik d. Vatieanisehen Coneils von 1869 und 1870, Gotha, 1872; Janus, Der LPapst und das Coneil, 1869 (a reprint of articles in the Augsburg Allgem. Zeitung); An Inside View of the Vatiean Counei1 (Archbishop Kenrick's Speech, edited by L. W. Bacon), New York ; Catholie Reform, by Father Hyacinthe, with preface by Dean Stanley, 1874 ; Quirinus, Rémische Briefe vom Coneil, 1870, of which an English translation has also appeared ; Von Schulte (Dr J. F.), Conetlien, Ptipste, und Bisehife, 1871. (b) The proceedings of the successive congresses will be best studied in the Stenographischer Berichte, published at Munich, Cologne, Constance, &c. ; those of the con- gress of Constance were summarized in an English form, with other elucidatory matter, by Professor John Mayor. (ce) For the questions involved in the consecration of Bishop Reinkens: Rechtsqutachten tiber die Frage der Anerkennung des altkatholisehen Bischofe Dr Reinkens in Bayern, Munich, 1874; Friedberg (Dr Emil), Der Staat und d. Bisehofswahlen in Deutschland, Leipsic, 1874; Von Sybel (F.), Das altkatholische Bisthum und das Verm égen d. rémiseh-katholisehen Kirehengesellsehaften in Preussen, Bonn, 1874. (d) Reinkens's own speeches and pastorals, some of which have been translated into English, give his personal views and experiences ; the Life of Huber has been written and published by Eberhard Stirngiebl ; and the persecutions to which the Old Catholic clergy have been exposed have been set forth in a

pamphlet by Professor John Mayor, Facts and Doewments, London, 1875. (e) An out- line of the whole movement from its first commencement to the year 1875 will be found in The New Reformation, by "Theodorus" (J. Bass Mullinger); and an excellent résumé of the main facts in the history of the movement in each European country, as connected with other developments of liberal thought, and with political history, is given in the second volume of Dr F. Nippold's Handbuch der neuesten Kirchengesehiehte, vol. ii., 1883. (f) The recognized organ of the movement, the Deutscher Merkur (formerly the Rheiniseher Merkur), is still published weekly by P. Neusser of Bonn. (J. B. M.)

OLDENBURG, a grand-duchy of Germany, with an area of 2480 square miles, consists of three widely separated portions of territory,—(1) the duchy of Oldenburg, (2) the

principality of Liibeck, and (3) the principality of Birken-

feld. It ranks tenth among the states of the German

OLD NS UR G

empire and has one vote in the federal council and three inembers in the reichstag.

I. The duchy of Oldenburg, comprising fully four-fifths of the entire area and population, lies between 52° 29' and 53° 44'N. lat. and 7° 37' and 8° 40' E. long., and is bounded on the N. by the German Ocean and on the other three sides by Hanover, with the exception of a small strip on the east, where it is conterminous with the territory of the free city of Bremen. It forms part of the north-western German plain defined by the Weser and the Ems, and, except on the south, where the Dammergebirge attain a height of 300 feet, it is almost entirely flat, with a slight inclina- tion towards the sea. In respect of its soil it is divided broadly into two parts,—the higher and inland-lying "Qeest," consisting of sandy plains intermixed with ex- tensive heaths and moors, and the "marsh lands" along the coast, consisting of rich but somewhat swampy alluvial soil. The latter, which compose about one-fifth of the duchy, are protected against the inroads of the sea by dykes as in Holland; and beyond these are the so-called "'watten," generally

covered at high tide, but at many points being gradually reclaimed. The climate is temperate and humid; the mean temperature of the coldest month at the town of Oldenburg is 26° Fahr., of the warmest 66°. Storms are numerous and somewhat violent, owing to the almost entire absence of trees; and fogs and ague are pre- valent in the marsh lands. The chief rivers are the Hunte, flowing into the Weser, and the Hase and Leda draining into the Ems. The Weser itself forms the eastern boundary for 42 miles, and internal navigation is greatly facilitated by a new canal, passing through the heart of the duchy and connecting the Hunte and the Ems. On the north there are several small coast streams conducted through the dykes by sluices, the only one of importance being the Jade, which empties itself into the Jadebusen, a deep gulf affording admirable accommodation for shipping. The duchy also contains numerous small lakes, the chief of which is the Diimmer See in the south-east corner, measur- ing 4 miles in length by 2} in width. About 30 per cent. of the area of the duchy is under cultivation and 17 per cent. under pasture and meadows, while the rest consists mainly of moor and heath. The forests occupy a very small proportion of the whole, but there are some very fine old oaks. In the Geest the principal crops are rye, oats, potatoes, and buckwheat, for which the heath is sometimes prepared by burning. Large tracts of moorland are, how- ever, useful only as producing an abundant supply of turf and peat for fuel, or as affording a scanty subsistence to the flocks of small coarse-woolled Oldenburg sheep. The rich soil of the marsh lands produces good crops of wheat, oats, rye, hemp, and rape, but is especially adapted for grazing. The fat cattle and horses raised on it are highly esteemed throughout Germany, and the former are exported in large numbers to England. Bee-keeping is also much in vogue on the moors. The live stock of Oldenburg forms a great part of its wealth, and the ratio of cattle, sheep, and horses to the population is one of the highest among the German states. There are few large estates, and the ground is mostly in the hands of small farmers, who enjoy the right of fishing and shooting on their holdings. Game, however, is scarce; but the fishing is fairly productive. The mineral wealth of Oldenburg is very small, and there are no mineral springs.

The industries are comparatively insignificant, though recently somewhat stimulated by the extension of the railway system and other causes. Woollen and cotton fabrics, stockings, jute, and cigars are made at Varel,

Delmenhorst, and Lohne; cork-cutting is extensively practised in some districts, and there are a few iron- foundries. Trade is relatively of more importance, chiefly

owing to the proximity of Bremen. The agricultural pro- duce of the duchy is exported to Scandinavia, Russia, England, and the. United States, in return for colonial goods and manufactures. Varel, Brake, and Elsfleth are the chief commercial harbours. In 1881 the ports of the duchy owned a merchant fleet of 345 vessels of 70,000 tons, and they are entered and cleared annually by from 2000 to 2500 vessels with an aggregate burden of 125,000 tons. Shipbuilding and boat-building are carried or at the above-named seaports and on the tributaries of the Ems. Before 1866 Oldenburg was destitute of railways, but it is now traversed by various lines. The high-roads are good ; in the north some of them are laid with "klinkers" like those in Holland. ;

II. The principality of Liibeck, formed of the old bishopric of that name, has an area of 209 square miles, and shares in the general physical characteristics of East Holstein, within which it lies. On the north-east it extends to the Baltic Sea, and on the south-west it is bounded by the Trave. The chief rivers are the Schwartau, a tributary of the Trave, and the Schwentine, flowing northwards to the Gulf of Kiel. The scenery of Liibeck is often pictur- esque, especially in the vicinity of the Ploner See and the Eutiner See, the most important of the small lakes with which it is dotted. Agriculture is practised here even more extensively than in the duchy of Oldenburg, about 75 per cent. of the area being cultivated. The population in 1880 was 34,973.

III. The principality of Birkenfeld, 194 square miles in extent, lies in the midst of the Prussian province of the Rhine, about 30 miles to the west of the Rhine at Worms and 150 miles to the south of the duchy of Oldenburg. It is a hilly district, intersected by the spurs of the Hoch- wald, which attain a height of over 2000 feet ; the valleys, however, are fertile and produce wine and grain in con- siderable abundance. About two-fifths of the surface are covered with forests. Iron-founding, cotton-spinning, and other manufactures are carried on; but the characteristic industry (having its seat

in Oberstein) is the polishing of agates, of which great numbers are found within the prin- cipality (compare Onyx), Birkenfeld is traversed from end to end, a distance of about 25 miles, by the Nahe, which rises close to its northern frontier. The population in 1880 was 38,685.

The total population of the grand-duchy of Oldenburg in 1880 was 337,478, showing an inerease of 1°10 per cent. per annum sinee the eensus of 1875, and an average of 186 persons to the square mile. The bulk of the inhabitants are of the Saxon stoek, but to the north and west there are numerous descendants of the ancient Frisians. The differences between the two raees are still to some extent pereeptible, but Low Gerinan (" Platt-deutsch") is nniver- sally spoken, exeept in one limited district, where a Frisian dialect has maintained itself. In general eharacteristies the Oldenburg peasants resemble the Duteh, and the absence of large landowners has contributed to make them sturdy and independent. Oldenburg has the eredit of showing almost the lowest average of illegitimate births among the German states, amounting in 1881 to only 5 per eent. This is in signifieant eontrast to the high rate (15 per cent.) among the semi-feudatory peasants of MuckLenbune (g.v.). The population of Oldenburg is somewhat nnequally distributed, some parts of the marsh lands containing over 300 persons to the square mile, while in the Geest the number oceasionally sinks as low as 40. Nearly 80 per cent. of the inhabitants are returned as belong- ing to the "rural" population. The only town with more than 10,000 inhabitants is Oldenburg, the eapital of the grand-duchy. The war-harbour of Wilhelmshaven, with 12,000 inhabitants, on the shore of the Jadebusen, was built by Prussia on a piece of land bought from Oldenburg. The chief towns of Birkenfeld and Liibeek are Birkenfeld and Eutin, with 2539 and 4574 inhabitants respectively. Oberstein in Birkenfeld has 4803; in the 12th eentury it was a lordship holding directly of the empire.

Oldenburg is a Protestant country, and the grand-duke is required to be a member of the Lutheran Church. Roman Catholicism, low- ever, preponderates in the south-western provinces, which formerly belonged to the bishoprie of Miinster. Oldenburg Roman Catholies are under the sway of the bishop of Minster, who is represented

by an official at Vechta; and the Catholics of Birkenfeld belong to the diocese of Treves. At the census of 1880 there were in the grand-duchy 260,416 Protestants, 74,254 Roman Catholics, and

1654 Jews. The educational system of Oldenburg is on a similar'

footing to that of north Germany in general, though the scattered position of the farmhouses interferes to some extent with school attendance. The proportion of Oldenburg recruits in 1882 unable to read or write was only 0°27 per cent., which compares favour- ably with the average of 1°54 for the whole empire. There is no university in Oldenburg territory, but an ample supply of primary, secondary, and special schools.

The constitution of Oldenburg, based upon a decree of 1849, revised in 1852, is one of the most liberal in Germany. It provides for a single representative chamber, elected indirectly by universal suffrage and exercising concurrent rights of legislation and taxation with the grand-duke. The chamber, which consists of thirty-four members (twenty-six for Oldenburg and four for each of the princi- palities), meets at regular intervals of three years. The executive consists of three ministers, who are aided by a committee of the landtag, when that body is not in session. The local affairs of Birkenfeld and Libeck are entrusted to provincial councils. All citizens are alike in the eye of the law, and all exemptions and privileges have been abolished. The municipal communities enjoy an unusual amount of independence.

The finances of each constituent state of the grand-duchy are managed separately, and there is also a fourth budget concerned with the joint administration. The last generally shows a sum of about £50,000 on each side, the expenditure including a matricular contribution of £33,500 to the imperial treasury. In the budget of 1882 the revenues of the duchy of Oldenburg, the principality of Ltibeck, and the principality of Birkenfeld were estimated at £289,965, £40,419, and £48,864, while the estimated expenditure was in each case somewhat less. The duchy of Oldenburg has a debt of nearly £2,000,000 and Liibeck one of £2000, while Birken- feld and the grand-duchy as a whole are free of debt. An annual allowance of about

£13,000 is made to the grand-duke, and he is believed to derive as much more from his private estates, The troops of Oldenburg furnish the German army with a regiment of infantry, a regiment of cavalry, and two batteries of artillery.

History.—The earliest recorded inhabitants of this district were the Germanic Chauci, who were afterwards merged in the Frisians. Old chroniclers delight in tracing the genealogy of the counts of Oldenburg up to Wittekind, the stubborn opponent of Charlemagne ; but their first historical representative is Elimar I., who flourished atthe close of the 11th century. His descendants appear as vassals of the powerful Saxon dukes, but attained the rank of independent princes of the empire on the dissolution of the Saxon power by Frederick Barbarossa (c. 1180). The countship of Delmenhorst at this time formed part of the Oldenburg dominions, but was after- wards frequently separated from them, and was not lastingly united under the same ruler till the beginning of the 17th century. The northern and western parts of the present duchy of Oldenburg were in the hands of more or less independent Frisian princes, who had generally remained pagans ; and Oldenburg history for the next two centuries is largely concerned with feuds with these small potentates, and gradual extension of territory at their expense. Bremen and Miinster were also frequently at war with the counts of Oldenburg. In 1448 Count Christian VIII. was elected king of Denmark, and, a little later, duke of Holstein and Schleswig, the latter event pregnant with important consequences for future history. Oldenburg was made over to his brother Gerhard, an ambitious prince, whose turbulent disposition resulted in an abdica- tion in favour of his sons, forced on him by a league of Hamburg, Liibeck, and Bremen. Protestantism was introduced by Anton I. (1531-1573), who, however, remained loyal to Charles V. in the Schmalkald war, and was thus enabled to increase his territories, On the accession of Anton Giinther in the beginning of the 17th century Oldenburg and Delmenhorst were finally welded into one, and about the same period the last free Frisian states, Jever and Kniphausen, were also absorbed by Oldenburg. Anton Giinther proved himself the wisest prince who had ruled in Oldenburg, and by his prudent neutrality in the Thirty Years' War secured for his domains immunity from the devastations to which most other German states were exposed. He also obtained from the emperor the right

~~*to levy tolls on vessels passing up the Weser, a lucrative grant, which soon formed one-fifth of his revenues. On his death without issue in 1667 the succession passed to the Danish reigning house, after the claims of the Holstein-Gottorp and Holstein-Sonder- burg branches of the family had been compromised. Oldenburg remained under the sway of the Danish monarchs for about a cen- tury,—a period, on the whole, of peaceful development. At length, in 1773, the Danish monarch agreed to a family compact, in accord- ance with which he resigned Oldenburg to the Holstein-Gottorp line in return for a renunciation on their part ofall claim to Schleswig and Holstein. The head of the Holstein-Gottorp family at this time was the grand-duke Paul of Russia (afterwards the emperor Paul I.); but he handed over Oldenburg, which was now created a duchy,*~~

~~*OL D—OLD*~~

~~*to his cousin Frederick Augustus, bishop of Liibeck, representative of a younger line, The bishop's son, who followed his father in 1785, was a man of weak intellect ; and his cousin, Peter Frederick Louis, who acted as administrator and eventually succeeded to the*~~

~~*throne, is the direct progenitor of the present grand-duke. Peter*~~

~~*had the task of managing the duchy in the troublous times of the*~~

~~*Napoleonic wars, and, though he joined the Confederation of the*~~

~~*Rhine, had afterwards to see his domains forcibly annexed to France*~~

~~*on his refusal to exchange them for Erfurt. This led him to join*~~

~~*the allies, and his services were rewarded at the congress of Vienna*~~

~~*by the addition of Birkenfeld to his dominions, which were also — raised to the rank of a grand-duchy. The secularized bishopric of*~~

~~*Liibeck had been already added to Oldenburg in 1803. Oldenburg*~~

~~*did not escape the revolutionary wave that swept over Kurope in*~~

~~*1848, but no very serious disturbances took place, and the grand-*~~

~~*duke granted a constitution in 1849. This constitution was of an*~~

~~*ultra-liberal character, and, as the country had hitherto been ruled*~~

~~*in the spirit of an enlightened but absolute despotism, strengthened*~~

~~*by the absence of a privileged class of nobles, the unimportance of*~~

~~*the towns, and the comparative independence of the peasantry, it*~~

~~*was inevitable that it should not work at once without friction, In*~~

1852 it had to submit to some modification, which, however, still left it one of the most liberal constitutions in Germany. In 1864 the grand-duke seemed at first inclined to insist upon his claims to the Schleswig-Holstein succession, but he ultimately resigned them in favour of Prussia. In 1866 he sided with that power against Austria, and in 1871 the grand-duchy became a member of the German empire.

See Halem, Gesch. d. Herzogth. Oldenburg (1794-96) ; Runde, Oldenburgische Chrontk (3d ed., 1863); Bése, Das Grossherzogthum Oldenburg (1863); Kollinann, Das Herzogthum Oldenburg in seiner wirthschaftlichen Entwickelung wihrend der letzten 25 Jahre (1879); the publications of the Statistical Bureau of Oldenburg; the annual Hof- wnd Staatshandbuch des Grossherzogthums Oldenburg.

OLDENBURG, the capital of the grand-duchy of that name, is a quiet and pleasant-looking town, situated 24 miles to the west of Bremen, on the Hunte, which is navigable for river-craft up to this point. The inner or old town, with its somewhat narrow streets, is surrounded by avenues laid out on the site of the former ramparts, beyond which are the villas, parks, and gardens of the more modern quarters. Oldenburg has almost nothing to show in the shape of interesting old buildings. The Lambertikirche, though dating from the 13th century, has been so transformed in the present century as to show no trace of its antiquity. The palaces of the grand-duke and the town-house are Renaissance buildings of the 17th and 18th centuries. Among the other prominent buildings—all modern—are the theatre, the law-courts, the gymnasium, the commercial school, the three hospitals, and the new Roman Catholic church, The grand-ducal picture-gallery in the Augusteum includes works by Veronese, Velazquez, Murillo, and Rubens ; and there are collections of modern paintings and sculptures

in the two palaces. The public library contains 150,000 vols., and the duke's private library has 50,000. There is also a museum with a collection of antiquities and a cabinet of natural history. The industries of Oldenburg, which are of no great importance, include iron-founding and the making of tobacco, soap, and leather. A considerable trade is carried on in grain, and the horse-fairs are largely frequented. The population in 1880 was 20,575, or, includ- ing the suburban village of Osternburg on the other side of the Hunte and the Hunte-Ems Canal, 24,678. About four-fifths of these are Protestants.

According to popular tradition Oldenburg was founded by Walbert, grandson of Wittekind, and named after his wife Altburga ; but the first historical mention of it occurs in a document of 1108. It was fortified in 1155, and received a municipal charter in 1845. The subsequent history of the town is merged in that of the grand- duchy. (J. F.E. of.)

OLDHAM, a municipal and parliamentary borough and important manufacturing town of south-east Lancashire, is situated on an eminence near the source of the Medlock, at the junction of several railway lines, 6 miles north-east of Manchester. By the Oldham canal it has water-com- munication with Manchester, Ashton, Stockport, and Rochdale. Although consisting chiefly of monotonous rows of workmen's houses, interspersed with numerous im- mense factories and workshops, Oldham has some good

streets and a number of imposing public buildings.] A daughter and co-heiress of this Alwardus conveyed Werneth Hall

Among these the principal are the town-hall, a fine struc- ture in the Grecian style, with a tetrastyle portico copied from the Jonic temple of Ceres near Athens, enlarged by a new wing erected in 1880 at a cost of £24,000, the nucleus of much more extensive municipal buildings ; the lyceum, in the Italian style, erected in 1854 and enlarged in-1880; the public baths, erected in 1854—partly by money raised for a meniorial to Sir Robert Peel—and en- larged in 1880; the workmen's hall, erected in 1844

and enlarged in 1854; the Werneth mechanics' institute, 1867 ; the infirmary, erected in 1870 and enlarged in 1877; and the new post-office, 1877. There is a grammar school, founded in 1611; but a more important educational en- dowment is the blue-coat school, for which a sum of £40,000 was left in 1808. On account of a legal dispute the money was allowed to accumulate for over twenty years, so that the school started with an endowment of £100,000. The town possesses a commodious general market, opened in 1856, and also a fish market, opened in 1873. Both the gasworks and waterworks have since 1853 been in the hands of the corporation. Additional reservoirs have been added to meet the increasing needs of the town, their total capacity being now 1,233,500,000 gallons. During the cotton famine occupation was given to many of the distressed operatives in laying out 72 acres as a public park, which, under the name of the Alexandra Park, was opened in 1865, at a cost of about £37,000. The town, which is one of the most important seats of the cotton manufacture in the world, owes its prosperity in great part to its situation on the edge of the Lanca- shire coal-field, where the mineral is very easily wrought. There are many valuable seams of coal in the immediate neighbourlood of the town, those in highest repute being the Black Mine and Bent Mine coals. From entries in the church registers it would appear that linens 'were manufactured in Oldham as early as 1630. Watermills were introduced in 1770, and with the adoption of Ark- wright's inventions the cotton industry spread with great rapidity. After the introduction of steam power the town, owing to its proximity to the coal-beds, soon assumed a leading place in the manufacture of cotton. The total number of persons engaged in the industry is over 30,000, the annual consumption of cotton being over 700,000 bales, or about one-fourth of the whole quantity of cotton im- ported into the United Kingdom. The principal manufac- tures are fustians, velvets, cords, hats, shirtings, sheetings, and nankeens. There are also large foundries and mill and cotton machinery works, the most extensive establishment being that of Platt and Co. The gas-meters made at Oldham have a high reputation, and there are also several large manufactories of sewing-machines. The town is divided into eight wards, and is governed by a mayor, eight alder- men, and twenty-four councillors. The area of the town- ship is coextensive with that of the municipal borough, and comprehends 4730 acres, of which 13 are water. The parliamentary borough has an area of 12,310 acres, and, in addition to Oldham, includes the townships of

Cromp- ton, Royton, and Chadderton, and part of the parish of Ashton-under-Lyne. Within the present century the growth of Oldham has been very rapid. In 1714 the population numbered only 1750, which in 1801 had in- creased to 12,024, in 1841 to 42,595, in 1861 to 72,333, in 1871 to 82,633, and in 1881 to 111,343. The popula- tion of the parliamentary borough in 1871 was 113,100, and in 1881 it was 152,513.

The name Oldham is of Saxon origin. A Roman road, of which some traces are still left, passes through the township, but it does not appear to have been a Roman station. It is not mentioned in

Domesday ; but in the reign of HIenry III. Alwardus de Aldholme is referred to as holding "two bovats of land in Vernet (Werneth)."

and its manor to the Cudworths, a branch of the Yorkshire family, with whom it remained till the early part of last century. From the Oldhams was descended HIugh Oldham, who died bishop of Exeter in 1519. In 1826 the town was placed under the care of a board of commissioners, and in 1849 it received municipal govern- ment. Since 1832 it has returned two members to parliament.

OLDHIAM, Joun (1653-1683), a satirist of the Restora- tion period, achieved notoriety by his Satires on the Jesutts, published during the heat of the excitement caused by the revelations of Titus Oates and the murder of Godfrey in 1678. In such a time of national panic and hatred ' who peppered the highest was surest to please," and Oldham's satires could hardly be surpassed for energy of invective and copiousness of coarse extravagant irony. They were extravagant enough to pass in a more sober age for bur- lesques of anti-Popish frenzy. . Oldham was at the time a tutor in ajudge's family. HIe was the son of a Non- conformist minister, born at Shipton, near Tedbury in Gloucestershire, in 1653, was a B.A. of Oxford (Edmund HIall), and had been for some three years an usher in a school at Croydon. Before he appeared as a satirist, and while he was still an usher, his verses, circulated in MS., had attracted the attention of Will's Coffee-house, and Rochester with some of his boon companions had sallied down to Croydon to see what the new poet was like. It was prob- ably an extravagantly humorous dithyrambic drunkard's soliloquy that roused their curiosity, and when they found him a tall, thin, consumptive, harsh-featured

cynic they apparently left him to his drudgery. After the success of his Satires on the Jesuits, Oldham wrote more satires, imitations of Horace and Juvenal, and one of them, a satire on poets, setting forth bitterly their degradation, their poverty, their humiliating adulation of patrons, is often quoted as an index to the condition of men of letters in those days. He died prematurely(1683) at the age of thirty, and was eloquently lamented by Dryden as the " Marcellus of our tongue."

'« Farewell, too little and too lately known, Whom I began to think and call my own;

For sure our souls were near allied, and thine Cast in the same poetic mould as mine."

Oldham's verse was rugged, and his rage, as Pope said, "too like Billingsgate" ; but " maturing time," as Dryden hoped, might have softened these faults. Donne and Cowley were his literary models, and he poured into their forms great warmth of feeling, wealth of incident, and commanding force of language.

OLDYS, Witt1am (1696-1761), a useful bibliographer, was the natural son of Dr Oldys, chancellor of Lincoln, and was born in 1696. He was a good scholar, but of in- temperate habits, and never succeeded in freeing himself from the thraldom of Grub Street,—unless, indeed, when he was employed for some years by Harley, earl of Oxford, as librarian. He is best known by his British Librarian, an esteemed but unfinished work, which began to appear in 1737 (see BrBLioGRAPHY, vol. ili, p. 652). He was ap- pointed Norroy king-at-arms by the duke of Norfolk. His death took place on 15th April 1761. A MS. collection of notes by Oldys on various bibliographical subjects and a copy of Langbaine's Lives copiously annotated by him are preserved in the British Museum.

OLEANDER is the common name for the shrub known to botanists as Werium Oleander. It is a native of the Mediterranean and Levant, and is characterized by its tall shrubby habit and its thick lance-shaped opposite leaves, which exude a milky juice when punctured. The flowers are borne in terminal clusters, and are like those of the comimon periwinkle (Vinca), but

are of a rose colour, rarely white, and the throat or upper edge of the tube of the corolla is occupied by outgrowths in the form of lobed

760

and fringed petal-like scales. the thickened stigma. The fruit or seed-vessel consists of

two long pods, which, bursting along one edge, liberate a

ra Avi \y OU J BY i)

number of seeds, each of which is provided with a tuft of silky hairs like thistle down at the upper end. The genus belongs to the family of Apo- . cynacezx, a family \ that, as is usual where the juice has a milky appear- ance, is marked by its poisonous pro- perties. Cases are recorded by Lind- ley of children poisoned by the flowers. The same author also narrates how in the course of the Peninsular War some French soldiers died in consequence of employing skewers made from freshly-cut twigs of oleander for roasting their meat. The oleander was known to the Greeks under three names, viz., rhododendron, nerion, and rhododaphne, and is well described by Pliny (xvi. 20), who mentions its rose-like flowers and poisonous qualities, at the same time stating that it was considered serviceable as a remedy against snake-bite. The modern Greeks still know the plant as pododédvy, although in a figure in the Rinuccini MSS. of Dioscorides a plant is represented under this name, which, however, has rather the appearance of a willow herb, Hpilobium. The oleander has long been cultivated in greenhouses in England, being, as Gerard says, "'a small shrub of a gallant shewe"; and of late numerous varieties, differing in the colour of their flowers and in the mutation of their stamens into petals so as to form double flowers, have been introduced.

OLEARIUS, Apam, a German traveller whose true name was Oelschliiger, was born at Aschersleben near Magdeburg in 1600, and died at Gottorp 22d February 1671. After studying at Leipsic he became librarian and court mathematician to Duke Frederick III. of Holstein- Gottorp, and in 1633 he was appointed secretary to the ambassadors Philip Crusius and Otto Briiggemann or Brugman sent by the duke to Muscovy and Persia in

~~the hope of making arrangements by which his newly-founded city of Frederikstad should become the terminus of an overland silk-trade. It is by his admirable narrative of this legation (Beschreibung der moskowitischen und per- sischen Reise, Schleswig, 1647, and afterwards in several enlarged editions) that Olearius is best known, though he also published a history of Holstein, and a translation of the Gulistan (Persianisches Rosenthal, Schleswig, 1654), to which was appended a translation of the fables of Lok-man.~~

~~The embassy to which Olearius was attached made two different journeys. The first (22d October 1633 to 6th April 1635) was by Hamburg, Liibeck, Riga, Dorpat (five months' stay), Revel, Narva, Ladoga, and Novgorod to Moscow, and back again by a somewhat different route. The second (22d October 1635 to 1st August 1639) was by a similar route to Moscow, thence to the Volga, down the river to Astrakhan, acrossthe Caspian to Nizovaya, and so on, by Shemakha, Ardebil, Sultanieh, Kaswin, &c., to Ispahan, and then back again by Resht and Lenkoran to Astrakhan, Kazan, Moscow, &c. Paul F'lem- Ing the poet and Mandelslo, whose travels to the East Indies are usually published with those of Olearius, accompanied the embassy.~~

~~OLEO-MARGARINE. The process by which the French chemist Mége-Mouriés sought to convert ordinary~~

~~Nerium Oleander.~~

~~OL E—~~

~~The hairy anthers adhere to | animal fat into butter has already been described under | Burrer (vol. iv. p. 592).~~

~~OLE~~

~~The following account of the mode of manufacture as carried on by the "Commercial Manufacturing Company" in New York is abridged from a report by Mr Victor Drummond, secretary to the British Embassy in Washington, in 1880.~~

Fresh fat from recently killed cattle is soaked in tepid water for one hour, then thoroughly washed with cold water, and, after having been soaked in cold water, assorted, the pieces less rich in "oil" being rejected and put aside for the manufacture of tallow. The fat thus selected is hashed up (almost minced) by machinery and melted down in water-jacketed caldrons, the water being heated by means of steam, so that the fat never becomes hotter than 124° Fahr. Through the action of this heat the fat divides into three parts, namely, shreds of membrane below, a scum of an emulsion of fat and water above, and clear oil between the two. The oil is drawn off and kept for thirty to thirty-six hours at a temperature of 85° Fahr., when a portion of the stearin and palmitin crystallizes out, while the more easily fusible components remain as a mother liquor, which is then squeezed out by hydraulic pressure. This oil, which on cool- ing freezes into a semi-solid fat, constitutes oleo-margarine, and is recommended as an excellent substitute for melted butter. Of the oil considerable quantities are worked up into imitation butter. For this purpose it is violently churned yp with milk for about twenty minutes, a little arnotto being added to produce a yellow colour. The emulsion is run direct on a mass of pounded ice to cause it to solidify without crystallization. After having been again churned up with fresh milk, it is kneaded to remove the excess of water, salted (in short, manipulated as genuine churned butter is), and sent out into the market.

The report includes a comparative analysis of real and of the Commercial Company's imitation butter, of which the following is a somewhat condensed copy :—

Real Butter. Imitation. 1. Glycerides of non-volatile fatty acids 51-4 56°3 2. Glycerides of butyric and other vola- RG Rn eo eptgn sas di we 74 18 a ee re cs 0-2 0°6 Pe BRIM oe Statice Maciek tare Vdeniais (6-0 cee aya 5'1 Fe aloe wiak woeinidies cess 23°8 249

Oleo-margarine,—that is, ordinary fat minus part of the palmitin and stearin—is necessarily somewhat richer in those components (2) which are characteristically pre- dominant in butter, but still falls far short of what real butter naturally contains. The physiological action of these butter-glycerides, as we may call them, has never been made out; possibly they

may account to some extent for butter being more easily digestible than ordinary fat.

Hehner and Angell have the merit of being the first to work out an easy and straightforward method for de- tecting (considerable) admixtures of ordinary animal fat, and consequently also of such things as oleo-margarine, with real butter. It consists in determining the percentage of insoluble and non-volatile acids contained in the pre- viously dehydrated and filtered article. By their modus operandi all ordinary animal fats yield close upon 95 per cent., while genuine butter yields only 86°5 to 87°5, at most 89 per cent., of fixed fatty acids. Easier and more decisive is the method of Reichert, who saponifies 2:5 grammes of the dry filtered article with 1 gramme of caustic potash dissolved in alcohol, expels the alcohol, decomposes the soap, after addition of 50 cubic centimetres of water, with 20 c.c. of dilute sulphuric acid (1 vol. of vitriol, 10 vol. of water), and distils off (exactly) 50 ¢.c., to determine therein the volatile acids by ascertaining the volume of a dilute standard solution of caustic alkali which is required to neutralize them. Real butter (per 2°5 grammes) yields 12 to 13 milligrammes, ordinary fats only 1°8 to 2°7, of volatile acids, calculated as butyric, $C_4H_8O_2$.

OLERON, an island lying off the west coast of France, opposite the mouths of the Charente and Seudre, and in- cluded in the department of the Charente-Inférieure, has an area of 59 square miles. It is about 18 miles in length from north-west to south-east, and 7 in extreme breadth ; the width of the strait separating it from the mainland

OLG—

is at one point less than a mile. The greater part of the island is very fertile, but there are also some extensive salt marshes, from which a considerable quantity of salt is made. The chief products are corn, wine, fruit, and vege- tables. The population of the island, which is mostly Protestant and supplies excellent sailors, numbered 18,244 in 1881; that of the chief town, Chateau d'Oleron, on the south-east coast, was 1727. Other towns are Saint-Georges d'Oleron (4943) and Saint-Pierre d'Oleron (1535). Oleron, the Uliarus Insula of Pliny, gave its name to a medieval code of maritime laws, for the origin and history of which see Sea Laws.

~~OLGA, wife of Igor, prince of Kieff, and afterwards (from 945) regent for Sviatoslaf her son, was baptized at Constantinople about 955 and died about 969. She was afterwards canonized in the Russian church, and is now commemorated on 11th July. See Russtra.~~

~~OLIVA, FeRNAN PEREZ DE, Spanish man of letters, one of the earliest writers of didactic prose in that language, was born at Cordova about 1492, and, after studying at Salamanca, Alcala, Paris, and Rome, was appointed to the chair of moral philosophy at Salamanca, where he died in 1530. HIs principal work, a Dialogue on the Dignity of Man, which he did not live to complete, was finished by Francisco Cervantes de Salazar, and published in 1546. HIs metrical translations from Euripides and Plautus are unimportant.~~

~~OLIVARES, Gasparo DE GUZMAN, ConDE DUQUE DE (1587-1645), Spanish statesman, was born at Rome on 6th January 1587, where his father, Count Enrique, who after- wards became viceroy successively of Sicily and Naples, was at the time ambassador to Pope Sixtus V. HIs grandfather, Count Pedro (1502-1562), had been a prominent figure at the courts both of Charles V. and of Philip Il. After studying at Salamanca Olivares received, through the in- fluence of his uncle the duke of Uceda, the appointment of gentleman of the bedchamber to the prince of Asturias. By his winning manners and valued, if not always very creditable, services he so ingratiated himself with the heir- apparent that the latter, on his accession as Philip IV. in 1621, forthwith made him his prime minister, conferring on him the title of Duque de San Lucar de Barrameda. It was the ambition of Olivares to regain for his country by arms and intrigue the influence it had formerly possessed in Europe, but his abilities, great as they were, were very un- equally matched with those of Richelieu, his rival in policy, and twenty-two years of almost autocratic power accord- ingly had no other result than deep national humiliation as well as personal disgrace (see Spain). The expedients to which he was compelled to resort in order to raise money for his long and unsuccessful war with the Dutch and for the support of his armies in Germany and Italy raised throughout the Spanish peninsula a spirit of discontent, which came to a crisis in 1640, when Catalonia rebelled, calling in the aid of the French, and Portugal declared its independence, electing the duke of Braganza as king. All his~~

~~attempts at pacification having failed, the enemies of Olivares succeeded in supplanting him in the king's favour in 1643. He was banished to Toro (Zamora) where he died in 1645.~~

~~. See De la Rocca, Hist. dw ministére dw Comte-duc ad' Olivares (Cologne, 1673).~~

~~OLIVE (Olea europea), the well-known plant that yields the olive oil of commerce, belongs to @ section of the natural order Oleacex, of which it has been taken as the type. The genus Olea includes about thirty-five species, very widely scattered, chiefly over the Old World, from the basin of the Mediterranean to South Africa and New Zealand. The wild olive, or oleaster, is a small tree or bush of rather straggling growth, with thorny branches~~

~~OL i 761~~

~~and opposite oblong pointed leaves, dark greyish-green above and, in the young state, hoary beneath with whitish scales ; the small white flowers, with four-cleft calyx and corolla, two stamens, and bifid stigma, are borne on the last year's wood, in racemes springing from the axils of the leaves ; the drupaceous fruit is small in the wild plant, and the fleshy pericarp, which gives the garden olive its economic value, is hard and comparatively thin. In the cultivated forms the tree acquires a more compact habit, the branches lose their spinous character, while the young shoots become more or less angular ; the leaves are always hoary on the under-side, and are generally lanceolate in shape, though varying much in breadth and size in the different kinds. The fruit is subject to still greater altera- tions of form and colour; usually oval or nearly globular, in some sorts it is egg-shaped, in others much elongated ; while the dark hue that it commonly assumes when ripe is exchanged in many varieties for violet, green, or al- most white. At pre- sent the wild olive is found in most of the countries around the Medi- Wig terranean, extend- Wi ing its range on the west to Portugal, and eastward to the vicinity of the Cas- pian, while, locally, it occurs even in Afghanistan. An undoubted native of Syria and the mari- 5 cone P aria of Asia A, Olea europewa (from nature). B, opened flower ; Minor, its abund- '6, vertical section (after Luerssen, Med.-Pharm. ance in Greece and #anik, 1882).~~

the islands of the Archipelago, and the frequent allusions to it by the earliest poets, seem to indicate that it was there also indigenous ; but in localities remote from the Levant it may have escaped from cultivation, reverting more or less to its primitive type. It shows a marked preference for calcareous soils and a partiality for the sea-breeze, flourishing with especial luxuriance on the limestone slopes and crags that often form the shores of the Greek peninsula and adjacent islands.

The varieties of olive known to the modern cultivator are extremely numerous,—according to some authorities, equalling or exceeding in number those of the vine. In France and Italy at least thirty kinds have been enumer- ated, but comparatively few are grown to any large extent. None of these can be safely identified with ancient descrip- tions, though it is not unlikely that some of the narrow- leaved sorts that are most esteemed may be descendants of the famed "Licinian" (see below). Italy retains its old pre-eminence in olive cultivation ; and, though its ancient Gallic province now excels it in the production of the finer oils, its fast-improving culture may restore the old prestige. The broad-leaved olive trees of Spain bear a larger fruit, but the pericarp is of more bitter flavour and the oil of ranker quality. The olive tree, even when free increase is unchecked by pruning, is of very slow growth; but, where allowed for ages its natural development, the trunk sometimes attains a considerable diameter. De Candolle records one exceeding 23 feet in girth, the age being sup- posed to amount to seven centuries. Some old Italian olives have been credited with an antiquity reaching back

XVII.—96

762

to the first years of the empire, or even to the days of republican Rome; but the age of such ancient trees is always doubtful during growth, and their identity with old descriptions still more difficult to establish. The tree in cultivation rarely exceeds 30 feet in height, and in France and Italy is generally confined to much more limited dimensions by frequent pruning. The wood, of a yellow or light greenish-brown hue, is often finely veined with a darker tint, and, being very hard and close- grained, is valued by the cabinetmaker and ornamental turner.

~~The olive is propagated in various ways, but cuttings or layers are generally preferred ; the tree roots in favour- able soil almost as easily as the willow, and throws up suckers from the stump when cut down. Branches of various thickness are cut into lengths of several feet each, and, planted rather deeply in manured ground, soon vegetate ; shorter pieces are sometimes laid horizontally in shallow trenches, when, covered with a few inches of soil, they rapidly throw up sucker-like shoots. In Greece and the islands grafting the cultivated tree on the oleaster is a common practice. In Italy embryonic buds, which form small swellings on the stems, are carefully excised and planted beneath the surface, where they grow readily, these "uovoli" soon forming a vigorous shoot. Occasionally the larger boughs are inarched, and young trees thus soon obtained. The olive is also sometimes raised from seed, the oily pericarp being first softened by slight rotting, or soaking in hot water or in an alkaline solution, to facili- tate germination. The olives in the East often receive little attention from the husbandman, the branches being allowed to grow freely and without curtailment by the pruning-knife ; water, however, must be supplied in long droughts to ensure a crop; with this neglectful culture the trees bear abundantly only at intervals of three or four years; thus, although wild growth is favourable to the picturesque aspect of the plantation, it is not to be recommended on economic grounds. Where the olive is carefully cultivated, as in Languedoc and Provence, it is planted in rows at regular intervals, the distance between the trees varying in different "olivettes," accord- ing to the variety grown. Careful pruning is' practised, the object being to preserve the flower-bearing shoots of the preceding year, while keeping the head of the trec low, so as to allow the easy gathering of the fruit; a dome or rounded form is generally the aim of the pruner. The spaces between the trees are occasionally manured with rotten dung, or other nitrogenous matter ; in France woollen rags are in high esteem for this purpose. Various annual crops are sometimes raised between the rows, and in Calabria wheat even is grown in this way ; but the trees are better without any intermediate cropping. Latterly a dwarf variety, very prolific, and with green fruit, has come into favour in certain localities, especially in America, where it is said to have produced a crop two or three seasons after planting. The ordinary kinds do not become profitable to the grower until from five to seven years after the cuttings are placed in the olive- ground, Apart from occasional damage by weather or organic foes, the olive crop is~~

somewhat precarious even with the most careful cultivation, and the large untended trees so often seen in Spain and Italy do not yield that certain income to the peasant proprietor that some authors have attributed to them ; the crop from these old trees is often enormous, but they seldom bear well two years in succession, and in many instances a luxuriant harvest can only be reckoned upon every sixth or seventh season. The fruit when ripe is, by the careful grower, picked by hand and deposited in cloths or baskets for conveyance to the mill; but in many parts of Spain and Greece, and

Oh T¥ &

generally in Asia, the olives are beaten down by poles, or by shaking the boughs, or even allowed to drop naturally, often lying on the ground until the convenience of the owner admits of their removal; much of the inferior oil owes its bad quality to the carelessness of the proprietor of the trees. In southern Europe the olive harvest is in the winter months, continuing for several weeks; but the time varies in each country, and also with the season and the kinds cultivated. The amount of oil contained in the fruit differs much in the various sorts; the pericarp usually yields from 60 to 70 per cent. The ancient agriculturists believed that the olive would not succeed if planted more than a few leagues from the sea (Theophrastus gives 300 stadia as the limit), but modern experience does not confirm the idea, and, though showing a preference for the coast, it has long been grown far inland. A. calcareous soil, however dry or poor, seems best adapted to its healthy development, though the tree will grow in any light soil, and even on clay if well drained; but, as remarked by Pliny, the plant is more liable to disease on rich soils, and the oil is inferior to the produce of the poorer and more rocky ground the species naturally affects. The olive suffers greatly in some years from the attacks of various enemies. A fungoid growth has at times infested the trees for several successive seasons, to the great damage of the plantations. A species of coccus, C. olex, attaches itself to the shoots, and certain lepidopterous caterpillars feed on the leaves, while the "olive-fly" attacks the fruit. In France the olivettes suffer occasionally from frost ; in the early part of the last century many trees were cut to the ground by a winter of exceptional severity. Gales and long-continued rains during the gathering season also cause mischief.

~~The unripe fruit of the olive is largely used in modern as in ancient times as an article of dessert, to enhance the flavour of wine, and to renew the sensitiveness of the palate for other viands. for this purpose the fruit is picked while green, soaked for a few hours in an alkaline ley, washed well in clean water, and then placed in bottles or jars filled with brine; the Romans added amurca to the salt to increase the bitter flavour of the olives, and at the present day spices are sometimes used.~~

~~The leaves and bark of the tree are employed in the south, as a tonic medicine, in intermittent fever. A resinous matter called "olive gum," or Lucca gum, formed by the exuding juice in hot seasons, was an- ciently in medical esteem, and in modern Italy is used as a perfume.~~

~~In England the olive is not hardy, though in the southern counties it will stand ordinary winters with only the protection of a wall, and will bear fruit in such situa- tions ; but the leaves are generally shed in the autumn, and the olives rarely ripen.~~

~~The genus Olea includes several other species of some economic importance. The olive of America, 0. americana, a rather small tree, growing in the southern parts of the United States, with broadly-lanceolate leaves and com- pound racemes of small white fragrant flowers, is remark- able for the extreme hardness of its wood, which, resist- ing ordinary tools, is called devil-wood by the southern lumberers and squatters. O. paniculata is a larger tree, attaining a height of 50 or 60 feet in the forests of Queensland, and yielding a hard and tough timber. The yet harder wood of O. laurifolia, an inhabitant of Natal, is the black ironwood of the South African colonist. The white or yellowish sweet-scented flowers of O. fragrans, a Chinese species, are employed to communicate their aroma to some of the finer teas; the oblong serrated leaves are said to be used for the adulteration of inferior kinds. Some other species of olive furnish hard and close-grained wood, but are not yet of much general interest.~~

~~OLI—OLTI~~

~~At what remote period of human progress the wild oleaster passed under the care of the husbandman and became the fruitful garden olive it is impossible to conjecture ;—history aud tradition are alike silent regarding~~

~~the origin of most of the more valued plants of cultivation, and we know little more of the later evolution of the olive than of the remoter genealogies of our present wheat and maize. The frequent reference in the Bible to the plant and its produce, its implied abundance in the land of Canaan, the import- ant place it has always held in the economy of the inhabitants of Syria, lead us to consider that country the birthplace of the culti- vated olive. An improved variety, possessed at first by some sinall Semitic sept, it was probably slowly distributed to adjaeent tribes ; and, yielding profusely, with little labour, that oily matter so essen- tial to healthy life in the dry hot climates of the East, the gift of the fruitful tree beeame in that primitive age a symbol of peace and goodwill among the warlike barbarians. At a later period, with the development of maritime enterprise, the oil was conveyed, as an article of trade, to the neighbouring Pelasgic and Ionian nations, and the plant, doubtless, soon followed.~~

~~Hehn remarks that in the Homeric world, as depicted in the Iliad, olive oil is known only as a luxury of the wealthy, —an exotic pro- duct, prized chiefly for its value in the heroic toilet ; the warriors anoint themselves with it after the bath, and the body of Patro- clus is similarly sprinkled ; but no mention of the culture of the plant is made, nor does it find any place on the Achillean shield, on which a vineyard is represented. But, although no reference to the cultivation of the olive occurs in the Ziad, the presence of the tree in the garden of Alcinous and other familiar allusions show it to have been known when the Odyssey was written. Whenever the introduction may have taken place, all tradition points to the limestone hills of Attica as the seat of its first cultivation on the Hellenic peninsula. When Poseidon and Athene contended for the future city, an olive sprang from the barren rock at the bidding of the goddess, the patron of those arts that were to bring undying influenee to the rising state. That this myth has some relation to the first planting of the olive in Greece seems certain from the remarkable story told by Herodotus of the Epidaurians, who, on their crops failing, applied for counsel to the Delphic oracle, and were enjoined to erect statues to Damia and Auxesia (symbols of fertility) carved from the wood of the true eae olive, then possessed only by the Athenians, who granted their request for a tree on condition of their making an annual sacrifice to Athene, its patron; they thus obeyed the command of the Pythian, and their lands beeame again fertile. The sacred tree of the~~

goddess long stood on the Acropolis, and, though destroyed in the Persian invasion, sprouted again from the root,—some suckers of which were said to have produced those olive trees of the Academy in an after age no less revered. By the time of Solon the olive had so spread that he found it necessary to enact laws to regulate the cultivation of the tree in Attica, from which country it was probably distributed gradually to all the Athenian allies and tributary states. To the Ionian coast, where it abounded in the time of Thales, it may have been in an earlier age brought by Pheenieian vessels ; some of the Sporades may have reeeived it from the same source ; the olives of Rhodes and Crete had perhaps a similar origin. Samos, if we may judge from the epithet of Jischylus (éAaépuros), must have had the fruitful plant long be- fore the Persian wars. It is uot unlikely that the valued tree was taken to Magna Grecia by the first Achezan colonists, and the asser- tion of Pliny (quoted from Fenestella), that no olives existed in Italy in the reign of Tarquinius Priscus, must be received with the caution due to many statements of that industrious compiler. In Latin Italy the cultivation seems to have spread slowly, for it was not until the consulship of Pompey that the production of oil be- eame sufficient to permit of its exportation. In Pliny's time it was already grown abundantly in the two Gallic provinces and in Spain ; indeed, in the earlier days of Strabo the Ligurians sup- plied the Alpine barbarians with oil, in exchange for the wild produce of their mountains ; the plant may have been introduced into those districts by Greek settlers in a previous age. Africa was indebted for the olive mainly to Semitic agencies. In Egypt the culture never seems to have made much progress; the oil found in Theban tombs was probably imported from Syria. Along the southern shore of the great inland sea the tree was carried by the Pheenicians, at a remote period, to their numerous colonies in Africa,—though the abundant olives of Cyrene, to which allusion is made by Theophrastus, and the glaucous foliage of whose descend- ants still clothes the rocks of the deserted Cyrenaica, may have been the offspring of Greek plants brought by the first settlers. The tree was most likely introduced into southern Spain, and per- haps into Sardinia and the Balearic Islands, by Pheenician mer- chants; and, if it be true that old olive trees were found in the Canaries on their rediscovery by medieval navigators, the vener- able trees probably owed their origin to the same enterprising pioneers of the ancient world. De Candolle says that the means

~~by which the olive was distributed to the two opposite shores of the Mediterranean are indicated by the names given to the plant~~

~~by their respective inhabitants,—the Greek éala passing into the Latin olea and oliva, that in its turn becoming the wlivo of the modern Italian, the olivo of the Spaniard, and the olive, olivier, of the French, while in Africa and southeru Spain the olive retains' appellatives derived from the Semitic zait or seit; but the complete subjugation of Barbary by the Saracens sufficiently accounts for the prevalence of Semitic forms in that region; and accytwno (Arab. zeitén), the Andalusian name of the fruit, locally given to the tree itself, is but a vestige of the Moorish conquest. Yielding a grate- ful substitute for the butter and animal fats consumed by the raees of the north, the olive, among the southern nations of antiquity, became an emblem not only of peace but of national wealth and domestic plenty ; the branches borne in the Panathenea, the wild olive spray of the Olympic victor, the olive crown of the Roman conqueror at ovation, and those of the equites at their imperial review alike typified gifts of peace that, in a barbarous age, could be secured by victory alone. Among the Greeks the oil was valued as an important article of diet, as well as for its external use. The Roman people employed it largely in food and cookery,—the wealthy as an indispensable adjunct to the toilet ; and in the luxurious days of the later empire it became a favourite axiom that long and plea- sant life depended on two fluids, " wine within and oil without." Pliny vaguely describes fifteen varieties of olive cultivated in his day,—that called the " Licinian" being held in most esteem, and the oil obtained from it at Venafrum in Campania the finest known to Roman connoisseurs; the produce of Istria and Betica was regarded as second only to that of the Italian peninsula. The gourmet of the empire valued the unripe fruit, steeped in brine, as a provocative to the palate, no less than his modern representative ; and pickled olives, retaining their characteristic flavour, have been found among the buried stores of Pompeii. The bitter juice or refuse deposited during expression of the oil (called amurca), and the astringent leaves of the tree have many virtues attributed to them by aneient authors. The oil of the bitter wild olive was employed by the Roman physicians in medieine, but does not appear ever to have been used as food or in the culinary art.~~

~~In modern times the olive has been spread widely over the world ; and, though the Mediterranean lands that were its ancient home still yield the chief supply of the oil, the tree is now culti- vated successfully in many regions unknown to its early distributors. Soon after the discovery of the American continent it was conveyed thither by the Spanish settlers. In Chili it flourishes as Inxu- riantly as in its native land, the trunk sometimes becoming of large girth, while oil of fair quality is yielded by the fruit. To Peru it was carried at a later date, but has not there been equally successful. Introduced into Mexico by the Jesuit missionaries of the 17th century, it was planted by similar agency in Upper California, where it has prospered latterly under the more careful management of the Anglo-Saxon conqueror. Its cultivation has also been attempted in the south-eastern States, especially in Carolina, Florida, and Mississippi. In the eastern hemisphere the olive has been established in many inland districts, which would have been anciently considered ill adapted for its culture. To Armenia and Persia it was known at a comparatively early period of history, and inany olive-yards now exist in Upper Egypt, where the cultivation is said to be increasing. The tree has lately been introduced into Chinese agriculture, while in the present genera- tion it promises to become an important addition to the resources of the Australian planter. In Queensland the olive has found a climate specially suited to its wants; in South Australia, near Adelaide, it also grows vigorously ; and there are probably few coast districts of the vast island-continent where the tree would not flourish. It has likewise been successfully introduced into some parts of the Cape Colony. (C. P. J.)~~

~~OLIVES, Mount or, or Mount OLIVET (épos €Acu@vos or tov éda@v, in Mishna and Midrash p'nyn7n or~~

~~nnvinin, now Jebel al-Tir), is the hill facing the~~

~~Temple Mount on the east, and separated from it by the Kidron (see vol. xiii. p. 636 sg.). Here our Lord sat when He delivered His great eschatological address (Mark xiii, 3). That the ascension took place from the summit of the Mount of Olives is not necessarily implied in Acts i. 12, and appears to be excluded by Luke xxiv. 50, for Bethany lies at the back of the hill and almost a mile from the top. But since Constantine erected the basilica of the~~

ascension on the spot marked by a certain sacred cave (Euseb., V. Const., iii. 41) the site of the ascen- sion has been placed here and marked by a succession of churches. The present building is quite modern. Close to the chapel of the ascension is the vault of St Pelagia, and a little way down the hill is the labyrinth of rock-hewn sepulchral chambers now called the "Tombs of the Pro-

phets." A chapel bearing the name of 'Omar, and said to occupy the place where he encamped when Jerusalem surrendered to the Moslems, formerly stood beside the church of the ascension (Mokaddast).

OLIVETANS, a monastic order, that of Our Lady of Monte Oliveto, following the Benedictine rule, was founded about the year 1313 by Bernardo Tolomei of Siena (see Monacuism). The mother-house at Monte Oliveto Mag- giore, about 19 miles to the south of Siena, is a favourable specimen of a great Benedictine monastery ; the church and library contain some fine inlaid work by Fra Giovanni da Verona (1502-1505), and the court has celebrated frescos by Luca Signorelli and Ant. Bazzi (Soddoma).

OLMSTED, Denison (1791-1859), man of science, was born at East Hartford, Connecticut, U.S.A., on 18th June 1791, and became a student of Yale, where he graduated in 1813, and acted as college tutor from 1815 to 1817. In the latter year he was appointed to the chair of chem- istry, mineralogy, and geology in the university of North Carolina. This chair he exchanged for that of mathe- matics and physics at Yale in 1825; in 1836, when this professorship was divided, he retained that of astronomy and natural philosophy. He died at New Haven, Connec- ticut, on 13th May 1859.

His first publication (1824-25) was the Report of his geological survey of the State of North Carolina. It was followed by various text-books on natural philosophy and astronomy, but he ts chiefly known to the scientific world for his observations on hail (1830), on meteors, and on the aurora borealis. For his conclusions on the last-named subject see vol. viii. of the Smithsonian Contributions.

OLMUTZ (Slavonic, Olomouc or Holomauc), the second city and the ecclesiastical metropolis of Moravia, and one of the strongest fortresses in the Austrian empire, is situ- ated on the March, about 110 miles to the north of Vienna. Like most Slavonic towns, it contains several large squares, the chief of which is adorned with a trinity column, 115 feet high. The most prominent church is the cathedral, a Gothic building of the 14th century, containing the tomb of King Wenceslaus III., who was murdered here in 1306. The principal secular buildings are the archbishop's palace, the town-house, the arsenal, the barracks, and the various schools, convents, and hospitals. The old university is now represented by a theological faculty attended by about a hundred students. Its library formerly possessed an im- portant collection of Slavonic works, which was carried off by the Swedes during the Thirty Years' War. There is also an industrial museum. The manufactures of Olmiitz itself are comparatively insignificant, but it is important as the emporium of a busy mining and industrial district and as a mart for Russian and Moldavian cattle. The population in 1880 was 20,176, besides which there is a garrison of about 6000 men. German is the predominant language. The chief part of the fortifications, which were originally constructed in the time of the wars with Frederick the Great, consists of a girdle of about twenty outlying forts. In case of attack the adjacent district can be flooded with the water of the March.

Olmiitz is said to occupy the site of a Roman fort founded in the imperial period, the original name of which, Mons Julii, has been gradually corrupted to the present form. At a later period Olmiitz was long the capital of the Slavonic kingdom of Moravia, but it ceded that position to Briinn in 1640. During the Thirty Years' War it was occupied by the Swedes for eight years, and in 1758 it successfully resisted Frederick the Great during a siege of seven weeks, In 1848 Olmiitz was the scene of the emperor Ferdinand's abdication, and in 1850 of an important conference, for an account of which see GERMANY and AusTRIA. The bishopric of Olmiitz was founded in 1073, and raised to the rank of an archbishopric in 1777. The bishops were created princes of the empire in 1588. The archbishop is the only one in the Austrian empire who is elected by the cathedral chapter.

OLONETZ, a government of north-western Russia, ex- tending from Lake Ladoga almost to the White Sea, is

~~bounded on the W. by Finland, on the N. and E, by~~

~~Archangel and Vologda, and on the 8. by Novgorod. The area is 57,440 square miles. Its north-western por- tion belongs orographically and geologically to the Finland region; it is covered with hills reaching 1000 feet in height, and with numberless smaller ridges and hollows running from north-west to south-east. The rest of the government is a flat plateau sloping towards the marshy lowlands of the south. The geological structure is very varied. Granites, syenites, and diorites, covered with Laurentian metamorphic slates, occur extensively in the north-west. Near Lake Onega they are covered with Devonian sandstones and limestones, yielding marble and sandstone for building ; to the south of that lake the Car- boniferous limestones and clays make their appearance. The whole is covered by vast beds of boulder-clay,—the bottom moraine of the great ice-sheet of the Glacial period. The entire region bears traces of glaciation, either in the shape of scratching and elongated grooves on the rocks, or of eskers (asar, selgas) running parallel to the glacial stria- tion. Numberless lakes, more than 2000 being already laid down on the maps, still occupy the depressions of the surface, while a great many more have left evidence of their past existence in the shape of extensive marshes. Lake Onega covers 3765 square miles and reaches a depth of 125 fathoms. Lakes Seg, Vyg, Lache, and Vodlo cover from 140 to 480 square miles each, and their crustacean fauna shows a former connexion with the Arctic Ocean. The south-eastern part of Lake Ladoga belongs also to the government of Olonetz. Altogether, the area covered by lakes, marshes, and rivers reaches one-fifth of the whole surface. The rivers belong to the Baltic and White Sea basins. To the former system belong Lakes Ladoga and Onega, which are connected by the Svir and receive numer- ous streams; of these the Vytegra, which communicates with the Mariinsk canal-system, and the Oyat, an affluent of Lake Ladoga, are important for navigation. No less than 4,000,000 cwts. of timber, fire-wood, stone, metal, and flour are annually shipped on waters belonging to this government. The Onega river, which has its source in the south-eastern parts of the government and flows into the White Sea, is of minor importance. Seventy per cent. of the area of~~

~~Olonetz is occupied by forests; those of the crown, maintained for shipbuilding purposes, cover more than 800,000 acres.~~

~~The climate is harsh and moist, the average yearly temperature at Petrozavodsk (61° 8' N. lat.) being 33°:6 Fahr. (12°°0 in January, 57°°4 in July) ; the thermometer rarely falls under — 30° Fahr. The population, which numbered 321,250 in 1881 (296,400 in 1873), is made up of Great Russians and Finns; Karelians and Tchudis are estimated at about 52,000 each. The people mostly belong to the Greek Church, or are Nonconformists. Sparse though it is, the~~

~~population is still too dense in certain places when the smallness~~

~~of the area available for agriculture (only the summits of the selgas, or elongated ridges separated by marshes) is taken into account. The villages are mostly small, and in several parts of the government are still aggregated into federations of communes. Only 765,000 acres were under crops in 1877. Cattle and horse breeding, which are much interfered with by plague, are insignificant. The chief source of wealth is the timber-trade, next to which come fishing and hunting. Mushrooms and berries are exported to St Peters- burg. There are also quarries and iron-mines, and some 1600 men find employment in saw-mills, tanneries, iron-works, distilleries, and flour-mills. More than one-fifth of the entire male population leave their homes every year in search of employment. The govern- ment is divided into seven districts, the chief towns of which are the capital Petrozavodsk (12,000 inhabitants), Kargopol, Olonetz, Povyenets, Vytegra, and Pudozh. Olonetz includes the " Olonetz Mining District," a territory belonging to the crown, which covers 432 square miles and extends partly into the Serdobol district of Finland. The iron-works were begun by Peter I. in 1701-14. There is a population of about 60,000, who were, until 1864, serfs to the crown.~~

~~Olonetz was colonized by Novgorod in the 11th century, and though it suffered much from Swedish invasion its towns soon became wealthy trading centres. Ivan JII. annexed it to the principality of Moscow.~~

~~OLO—~~

~~OLORON-SAINTE-MARIE, the chief town of an arron- dissement in the department of Basses-Pyrénées, France, lies about 21 miles south-west of Pau, at the confluence of the mountain torrents (locally known as "gaves") Aspe and Ossau, which unite to form the Oloron, a tributary of the Pau. The united population of Oloron and of Sainte- Marie, on the opposite bank of the Aspe, is 7746. Oloron, curiously clustered on the summit and slopes of a steep hill, has remains of old ramparts and pleasant promenades with beautiful views. The only building of interest, the church of the Sainte-Croix, belongs mainly to the 11th century ; it contains a large altar of gilded wood, constructed in the Spanish style of the 17th century. The church of Sainte- Marie, which formerly served as the cathedral of Oloron, is a medley of various styles from the llth to the 15th century, and its sculptures are more antique than tasteful. The fairs and markets of Oloron for cattle, horses, wool, and hams are much frequented. It manufactures woollen goods, textile fabrics, and caps (bérets), and has also tan- yards and flour-mills.~~

~~Oloron, formerly Iluro, an ancient episcopal town, was destroyed by the Saracens, and afterwards by the Normans, and was re- built in 1080 by the viscount of Béarn. At the Reformation the place became a centre of Catholic reaction. In the 17th century it carried on a considerable trade with Aragon, until the Spaniards, jealous of its prosperity, pillaged the establishments of the Oloron merchants at Saragossa in 1694,—a disaster from which it only slowly recovered. 'The bishopric was suppressed in 1790.~~

~~OLYBRIUS, Roman emperor from 11th July to 23d October 472, was a member of the Anician family and a native of Rome, where he lived until the sack of Genseric in 455. He then went to Constantinople, where in 464 he was made consul, and about the same time married Placidia, daughter of Valentinian III. In 472 he was sent to Italy by the emperor Zeno to assist Anthemius against Ricimer, but, having entered into negotiations with the latter, was himself proclaimed emperor, and, on the murder of his rival, ascended the throne unopposed. His reign was as uneventful as it was brief. He died from natural causes.~~

OLYMPIA. The purpose of this article is to give a short but clear summary for English readers of the principal results obtained by the German exploration of Olympia in 1875-81, and recorded in the five volumes of the Ausgrabungen published at Berlin. While the sketch is necessarily confined to salient features and essential points, two aims have been kept in view :—first, to omit nothing that is important to the general study of antiquity ; secondly, to make the outlines, however slight, sufficiently precise and consecutive to serve as an introduction toa more special archeological study. Having enjoyed the advantage of seeing the excavations, under the courteous guidance of Dr. Treu (then at the head of the German archeological mission), at the close of the third campaign in June 1878, the writer is able to speak of the ground not from a book-knowledge alone. A few words must be premised on the geography and history of Olympia, so far as an acquaintance with the broader aspects of these must be presupposed in an intelligent survey of the topography.

On the western side of the Peloponnesus, the Alpheus, the chief river of the peninsula, issues from the central highlands of Arcadia. Increased by the tributary streams of the Ladon and the Erymanthus, it then flows, in a broad bed, between hills which gradually subside, until it enters on the sandy levels of the coast, and reaches the sea be- tween two long lagoons. The district traversed by its lower course is that which was anciently called Pisatis, extending from the mouth of the Alpheus to the Eryman- thus, between Elis on the north and Triphylia on the south. The alpine character of Arcadia has here entirely

disappeared. There are few steep cliffs or rocks; the.

Ob ¥ 765

banks of the river are generally covered with alluvial earth; and rich vegetation prevails, with abundance of evergreen trees and bushes. Cornfields, vines, and currants are plentiful; even the sandy tracts, coated with a rich mud, prove fertile. Cattle-breeding prospers on the higher ground of Mount Pholoe ; and the lagoons yield fish. The stay-at-home character of the inhabitants which the his- torian Polybius notices was a natural result of their en- vironment. While the region was ill-suited to the secure development of a strong state, it was eminently favourable to a life of

quiet industry, and was open on every side to peaceful intercourse with the neighbouring country. The ° ancient landing-place was at the mouth of the Alpheus,— about 3000 metres above the present mouth. The site of the modern town of Pyrgos—then much nearer the sea— may be that of the ancient Dyspontium. The only modern landing-place is at Catdcolo, where a mole has been constructed by French engineers. It is visited by coasting steamers, being one of the export-stations of the currant-trade. In the valley of the Alpheus, a few miles east of the point at which it enters on the flat seaboard, there existed a primitive shrine of the Pelasgian Zeus. As in other places associated with his worship, the low range bounding the Alpheus on the north was called Olympus, while the name of Ossa was given to the hill-boundary of the valley on the south. When the worship of the Hel- lenic Zeus had been established on this spot, the place acquired the name of Olympia.

Olympia is on the right or north bank of the Alpheus (now the Ruphia), about 16 kilometres east in a straight line from the modern Pyrgos. The course of the river is here from east to west, and the average breadth of the valley is about 1000 metres. At this point a small stream, the ancient Cladeus, flows from the north, into the Alpheus. The area known as Olympia is bounded on the west by the Cladeus, on the south by the Alpheus, on the north by the low heights which shut in the Alpheus valley, and on the east by the ancient race-courses. One group of these heights terminates in a conical hill, about 122 metres high, which is cut off from the rest by a deep cleft, and descends abruptly on Olympia. This hill is the famous Cronion (Kpoviov), sacred to Cronus, the father of Zeus.

The natural situation of Olympia is, in one sense, of great beauty. When Lysias, in his Olympiacus (spoken here), calls it 'the fairest spot of Greece," he was doubtless thinking also—or perhaps chiefly—of the masterpieces which art, in all its forms, had contributed to the embellish- ment of this national sanctuary. But even now the praise seems hardly excessive to a visitor who, looking eastward up the valley of Olympia, sees the snow-crowned chains of Erymanthus and Cyllene rising in the distance. The valley, at once spacious and definite, is a natural temenos. Nowhere could the Greek Zeus be more fitly honoured by the display of human gifts,

physical or mental ; nowhere could the divided communities of Hellas find a more con- venient or attractive place of peaceful re-union.

The importance of Olympia in the history of Greece has, in fact, this twofold character: it is at once religious and political. The religious associations of the place date from the prehistoric age, when, before the states of Elis and Pisa had been founded, predecessors—perhaps ancestors—of the Hellenes worshipped the "heaven-father" in this valley. The political associations may be said to date from the time when the Achzans founded Pisa, and combined the Pelasgian worship of the god Zeus with a local cult of their own ancestor, the hero Pelops. It was then, and in honour of Pelops, that games were probably instituted for the first time at Olympia. The addition of Hera and of the mother of the gods to the specially honoured deities must have come early in the Hellenic period. Elis and

Pisa were at first associated, as equal states, in the control of the Olympian festival. Sixteen women, representing eight towns of Elis and eight of Pisatis, wove the festal peplus for the Olympian Hera. Olympia thus became the centre of an dudixtvovia, or federal league under religious sanction, for the west coast of the Peloponnesus, as Delphi was for its neighbours in northern Greece. It suited the interests of Sparta to join this amphictyony ; and, before the regular catalogue of Olympic victors begins in 776 B.c., Sparta had formed an alliance with Elis. Aristotle saw in the temple of Hera at Olympia a bronze disk, recording the traditional laws of the festival, on which the name of Lycurgus stood next to that of Iphitus, king of Elis. Whatever may have been the age of the disk itself, the relation which it indicates is well attested. Elis had from the first been stronger than Pisa. Elis and Sparta, making common cause, had no difficulty in excluding the Pisatans from their proper share in the management of the Olympian sanctuary. Pisa had, indeed, a brief moment of better fortune. The ascendency of Pheidon of Argos enabled him to reassert the old Achzan claim by celebrating the 28th Olympiad under the presidency of the Pisatans. This festival, from which the Eleans and Spartans were excluded, was afterwards struck out of the official register, as having no proper existence. At last, about 570 B.c., the destruc- tion of Pisa by the combined

forces of Sparta and Elis put an end to the long rivalry. Not only Pisatis, but also the district of Triphylia to the south of it, now became depend- ent on Elis. So far as the religious side of the festival was concerned, the Eleans had now an unquestioned supre- macy. It was at Elis, in the gymnasium of the city, that candidates from all parts of Greece were tested, before they were admitted to the athletic competitions at Olympia. To have passed through the training (usually of ten months) at Ehs was regarded as the most valuable preparation. Elean officials, who not only adjudged the prizes at Olympia, but decided who should be admitted to compete, marked the national aspect of their functions by assuming the title of Hellanodice.

Long before the overthrow of Pisa the list of contests at Olympia had been so enlarged and diversified as to invest the celebration with a Panhellenic character. Exercises of a Spartan type—testing endurance and strength with an especial view to war—had almost exclusively formed the earlier programme. But as early as the 25th Olympiad —.e., several years before the interference of Pheidon on behalf of Pisa—the four-horse chariot-race was added. This was an invitation to wealthy competitors from every part of the Hellenic world, and was also the recognition of a popular or spectacular element, as distinct from the skill which had a merely athletic or military interest. Horse-races were added later. For such contests the hippodrome was set apart. Meanwhile the list of contests on the old racecourse, the stadion, had been enlarged. Besides the foot-race in which the course was traversed once only, there were now the diaulos or double course, and the "long" foot-race (dolichos). Wrestling and box- ing were combined in the pancration. Leaping, quoit- throwing, javelin-throwing, running, and wrestling were combined in the pentathlon.

After the conquest of Messenia Spartan ambition had turned towards Arcadia. The aim of the Spartans was nothing less than the subjugation of the entire Pelo- ponnesus. But the decided check which the aggressors experienced in their new attempt produced a change of design, It became evident that a policy of forcible an- nexation could be pushed no further. Yet Sparta might at least aspire to the hegemony of the peninsula. The other states of the Peloponnesus, while remaining independent, might be virtually under Spartan control. And for the

~~establishment of such a hegemony what agency could be more suitable than that of Olympia? In the Olympian amphictyony, Sparta, closely allied with Elis, already held a commanding position. The rising popularity of the festival was constantly tending to make Olympia the religious and social centre of Peloponnesian life—indeed, in some sense, of the Hellenic world. As the Eleans, there- fore, were now the religious supervisors of Olympia, so the Spartans aimed at constituting themselves its political protectors. Their military strength—greatly superior at the time to that of any single Hellenic state—readily enabled them to do this in the most effectual manner. Spartan arms could enforce the sanction which the Olympian Zeus gave to the oaths of the amphictyones, whose federal bond was symbolized by common worship at his shrine. Spartan arms could punish any violation of that 'sacred truce '' which was indispensable if Hellenes from all cities were to have peaceable access to the Olym- pian festival. And in the eyes of all Dorians the assured dignity thus added to Olympia would be enhanced by the fact that the protectors were the Spartan Heraclide.~~

~~Thus, under the permanent guarantee of the strongest military power, and at the same time under auspices which, for a large part of the Greek world, were the most illustrious possible, Olympia entered on a new phase of brilliant and secure existence as a recognized Panhellenic institution. This phase may be considered as beginning after the de- struction of Pisa, about 570 B.c. And so it continued to be to the last. While the details of the scene and of the festival were the subjects of endless modification or change, Olympia always remained a central expression of the Greek ideas that the body of man has a glory as well as his intellect and spirit, that body and mind should alike be disciplined, and that it is by the harmonious discipline of both that men best honour Zeus. The significance of Olympia was larger and higher than the political fortunes of the Greeks who met there, and it survived the overthrow of Greek independence. In the Macedonian and Roman ages the temples and contests of Olympia still interpreted the ideal at which free Greece had aimed. Philip of Macedon and Nero are, as we shall see, among those whose names have a record in the Altis. Such names are typical of long series of visitors who paid homage to Olympia. Even those who were least in sympathy with the old spirit of the festival could~~

still feel that the place was représent- ative and unique. According to Cedrenus, a Greek writer of the 11th century (Zdvoyis 'Ioropiay, i. 326), the Olympian festival ceased to be held after 393 a.p., the first year of the 293d Olympiad. The list of Olympian victors, which begins in 776 B.c. with Corcebus of Elis, closes with the name of an Armenian, Varastad, who is said to have be- longed to the race of the Arsacid. In the 5th century the desolation of Olympia had set in. The chryselephant- ine statue of the Olympian Zeus, by Phidias, was carried to Constantinople, and perished in a great fire, 476 a.D. The Olympian temple of Zeus is said to have been destroyed, either by the Goths or by Christian zeal, in the reign of Theodosius IT. (402-450 a.p.).

The German excavations at Olympia were begun in 1875. After six campaigns, of which the first five lasted from September to June, they were completed on the 20th of March 1881. The result of these six years' labours was, first, to strip off a thick covering of earth from the Altzs, the consecrated precinct of the Olympian Zeus. This covering had been formed, during some twelve centuries, partly by clay swept down from the Cronion, partly by deposit from the overflowings of the Cladeus. The task presented to the German explorers may be judged by the fact that the coating of earth over the Altis had an average depth of no less than five metres.

Their work could not, however, be restricted to the Altis. It was necessary to dig beyond it, especially on the west, the south, and the east, where several ancient buildings existed, not included within the sacred precinctitself. The complexity of the task was further increased by the fact that in many places early Greek work had later Greek on top of it, or late Greek work had been overlaid with Roman. In a concise survey of the results obtained, it will be best to begin with the remains external to the precinct of Zeus.1

I.—REMAINS OUTSIDE THE ALTIS.

A. West Side.—The materials and the technical character of the wall bounding the Altis on the west are the same as those which belong to the western portion of the south Altis wall. Both be- long to the earlier part of the Macedonian age, and to a time at which the Altis received its largest

traceable extension to west, north-west, and south-west. In the west wall were two gates, one at its northern and the other at its southern extremity. Each

-Se ees 8 oe

;

(| SOuTNH o teeea quent oe

» Boum esis =

Plan of Olympia.

gate was mpéarvdos, having before it on the west a colonnade con- sisting of a double row of four columns. A third and smaller gate, at about the middle point of the west wall, and nearly opposite the Pelopion in the Altis, was probably of a later age.

West of the west Altis wall, on the strip of ground between the Altis and the river Cladeus (of which the course is roughly parallel to the west Altis wall), the following buildings were traced. The order in which they are placed here 1s that in which they succeed each other from north to south.

1. Just outside the Altis at its north-west corner was a Gymna- sium.

uoit-throwing, javelin-throwing, running. 'The great length of the east portico is thus explained.

2. Immediately adjoining the gymnasium on the south was a Palestra, the place of exercise for wrestlers and boxers. It was

1 Permission to use the accompanying plan of Olympia has kindly been given by the publisher, Herr Weidmann of Berlin.

in the form of a square, of which each side was about 64 metres long, enclosing an inner building surrounded by a Dorie colon- nade. Facing this inner building on north, east, and west were rooms of different sizes, to which doors or colonnades gave access. The chief entrances to the palestra

were at south-west and south-east, separated by a long Ionic porch which extended along the south side.

3. Near the palestra on the south a Byzantine church forms the central point in a complex group of remains. (a) The church itself occupies the site of an older brick building, which is perhaps a remnant of the "workshop of Phidias" seen by Pausanias. (6) North of the church is a square fountain-house, of the Hellenic age. (c) West of this is a small circular structure, enclosed by square walls. An altar found (im sitw) on the south side of the circular enclosure shows by an inscription that this was the Heroon, where worship of the heroes was practised down to a late period. (d@) East of the fountain-house stood a large building, of Roman age at latest, arranged round an inner hall with colonnades, Its particular destination is uncertain. (e) So, too, is that of a long and narrow building on the south of the Byzantine church. It may have been the priests' house mentioned by Pausanias, or it may have been occupied by the gadpivra, those alleged " descend-

\s

==

ants of Phidias" (Pans. v. 14) whose hereditary privi- lege it was to keep the v® | statue of Zeus clean. The gh so-called "workshop of ui Phidias" (see a) evidently owed its preservation to the fact that it continued to be used for actual work, and the adjacent building would have been a con- venient lodging for the English Feet artists. ma 4. South of the group described above occur the remains of a large build- ing, dating from the late Hellenic or early Macedonian age. It is an oblong, of which the north and south sides measure about 80 metres, the east and west about 73. Its orientation differs from that of all the other build- ings above mentioned, being not from north to south, but from west-south-west to east-north-east. and there are signs that it was built before the west Altis wall. Externally it is an Ionic peri- pteros, enclosing suites of rooms, large and small, grouped round a small interior Doric peristyle. In Roman times it was altered in such a way as to distribute the rooms into (apparently) four quarters, each having an atrium with six or four columns. The most prob- able conjecture is that it was used as a lodging for distinguished visitors during the games,

such as the heads of the special missions from the various Greek cities (dpxi@éwpo.), or Roman officials. Traces existing within the exterior porticos on north, west, and east indicate much carriage traffic.

B. South Side.—Although the limits of the Altis on the south (t.e., on the side towards the Alpheus) can be traced with approxi- mate accuracy, the precise line of the south wall becomes doubtful after we have advanced a little more than one-third of the distance from the west to the east end of the south side. The middle and eastern portions of the south side were places at which architect- ural changes, large or small, were numerous down to the latest times, and where the older buildings met with scant mercy. The westernmost and best-defined part of the south-wall line is, as already stated, coeval with the west wall, belonging to the early Macedonian age.

1. The Council Hall (BovXevryjpiov, Paus. v. 23) was just out- side the Altis, nearly at the middle of its south wall. It comprised

° Métre:

two séparate Doric buildings of identical form, viz., oblong, having a single row of columns dividing the length into two naves, and terminating to the east in a semicircular apse. The orientation of each was from west-south-west to east-north-east, one being south-south-east of the other. In the space between stood a small square building. In front, on the east, was a portico extending along the front of all three buildings ; and east of this again a large trapeze-shaped vestibule or fore-hall, enclosed by a colonnade. This bouleuterion would have been available on all occasions when Olympia became the scene of conference or debate between the representatives of different states, whether the subject was properly political, as concerning the amphictyonic treaties, or related nore directly to the administration of the sanctuary and festival. Two smaller Hellenic buildings stood immediately west of the bouleu- terion. The more northerly of the two opened on the Altis. Their purpose is uncertain.

2. Close to the bouleuterion on the south, and running parallel with it from south-west by west to north-east by east, was the South Portico, a late but

handsome structure, closed on the north side, open on the south and atthe east and west ends The external colonnade (on south, east, and west) was Doric; the interior row of columns Corinthian. It was used as a promenade, and as a place from which to view the festal processions as they passed towards the Altis.

8. East of the bouleuterion was a gateway of Roman age, with triple entrance, the central being the widest, opening on the Altis from the south. North of this gateway, but at a somewhat greater depth, traces of a pavement were found in the Altis. This was manifestly the gateway by which the sacred processions entered the Altis in Roman times. The older processional route, however, prob- ably struck the sonth boundary of the Altis at a point somewhat to the west of the Roman gate, proceeding past the front of the bouleuterion and the eastern end of the south portico.

C. Hast Side.—The line of the east wall, running due north and south, can be traced from the north-east corner of the Altis down about three-fifths of the east side, when it breaks off at the remains known as " Nero's house." These are the first which claim atten- tion on the cast side.

1. Pausanias mentions a building called the Leonidaion, crected by the Elean Leonidas " outside the Altis, and near the Processional Gate." This Leonidaion was the point from which he set out on many of his walks in the Altis. Its original form is traceable in Hellenic remains at the south-east angle of the Altis, which show that the Leonidaion—an oblong structure with colonnade on north, west, and south—stood within the Altis. But the Greek Leonidaion was afterwards absorbed into a Roman house which projected be yond the Altis on the east, the south part of the east Altis wall being destroyed to admit of this. A piece of leaden water- pipe found in the house bears NER, AVG. Only a Roman master could have dealt thus with the Altis, and with a building which, like the Leonidaion, stood within its sacred precinct. It cannot be doubted that the Roman house—from which three doors gave access to the Altis—was that occupied by Nero when he visited Olympia. Later Roman hands again enlarged and altered the building, which may perhaps have been used for the reception of Roman governors. But Pausanias, who speaks only of a Leonidaion, shows that the

old Greek name was retained, even when the building of Nero's time had placed the new Leonidaion beyond the limits of the Altis.

2, Following northwards the line of the east wall, we reach at the north-east corner of the Altis the entrance to the Stadion, which extends east of the Altis in a direction from west-south-west to cast-north-cast. The apparently strange and inconvenient posi- tion of the Stadion relatively to the Altis was due simply to the necessity of obeying the conditions of the ground, here determined by the curve of the lower slopes which bound the valley on the north. The German explorers excavated the Stadion so far as was necessary for the ascertainment of all essential points. Weak walls had originally been built on west, east, and south, the north boundary being formed by the natural slope of the hill. The walls were afterwards thickened and raised. The space thus defined was a large oblong, about 214 metres in length by 32 in breadth. There were no artificial seats. It is computed that from 40,000 to 45,000 spectators could have found sitting-room, though it is hardly probable that such a number was ever reached. The exact length of the Stadion itself—which was primarily the course for the foot-race—was 192°27 metres,—an important result, as it determines the Olympian foot to be 0°3204 metre. In the Heraion at Olympia, it may be remarked, the unit adopted was not this Olympian foot, but an older one of 0°297 metre. The starting- point and the goal in the Stadion were marked by limestone thresholds. Provision for drainage was made by a channel running round the enclosure. The Stadion was used not only for foot-races but for boxing, wrestling, leaping, quoit-throwing, and javelin- throwing.

The entrance to the Stadion from the north-cast corner of the Altis was a privileged one, reserved for the judges of the games, the competitors, and the heralds. Its form was that of a vaulted

Ct Ya Te

tunnel, 100 Olympian fect in length. Dating from about 350-300 B.c., it is one of the oldest examples of vaulted work in cut stone. To the west was a vestibule, from which the Altis was entered by a handsome gateway.

3. The Hippodrome, in which the chariot-races and horse-races werc held, can no longer be accurately traced. The overflowings of the Alpheus have

washed away all certain indications of its limits. But it is clear that it extended south and south-east of the Stadion, and roughly parallel with it, though stretching far beyond it to the east. From the state of the ground the German explorers inferred that the length of the hippodrome was 770 metres or 4 Olympic stadia.

D. North Side.—If the northern limit of the Altis, like the | west, south, and east, had been traced by a boundary wall, this would have had the effect of excluding from the precinct a spot so sacred as the Cronion, the hill inseparably associated with the oldest worship of Zeus at Olympia. It seems therefore unlikely that any such northern boundary wall ever existed. But the line which such a boundary would have followed is partly represented by the remains of a wall,running from east to west immediately north of the treasure-houses (see below), which it was designed to protect against the descent of earth from the Cronion just above. This was the wall along which, about 157 A.p., the main water-channcl constructed by Herodes Atticus was carried.

Having now surveyed the chief remains external to the sacred precinct on west, south, east, and north, we procced to notice those which have been traced within it.

IJ.—REMAINS WITHIN THE ALTIS.

The form of the Altis, as indicated by the existing traces, is not regularly rectangular. The length of the west side, where the line of direction is from south-south-east to north-north-west, is about 195 metres. The south side, running nearly due east and west, is about equally long, if measured from the end of the west wall to the point which the east wall would touch when produced due south in a straight line from the place at which it was demolished to make way for " Nero's house." The east side, measured to a point just behind the treastire-houses, is the shortest, about 180 metres. The north side is the longest. A line drawn eastward behind the treasure-honses, from the Prytaneion at the north-west angle, would give about 250 metres.

The remains or sites within the Altis may conveniently be classed in three main groups, viz.—(A) the chief centres of re- ligious worship ; (B) votive

~~buildings; (C) buildings, &c., connected with the administration of Olympia or the reception of visitors.~~

~~A. Chief Centres of Religious Worship.—l. The earliest Hellenic phase of the sanctuary, when a pre-Hellenic worship of Zeus was combined with a cult of the hero Pelops, is recalled by the Altar of Zeus. This, the central object of the older temenos, stood a little east of the Pelopion, and after the Altis had been enlarged was still nearly at its centre. The basis was of elliptic form, the . length of the lozenge being directed from south-south-west to north- north-east, in such a manner that the axis would pass through the Cronion. The upper structure imposed on this basis was in two tiers, and also, probably, lozenge-shaped. This was the famous 'Cash-altar" at which the Iamide, the hereditary gens of udvreis, practised those rites of divination by fire (uayrixy 50 éur'pwy) in virtue of which more especially Olympia is saluted by Pindar as 'mistress of truth" (déorow' ddadelas). The steps by which the priests mounted the altar seem to have been at north and south.~~

~~2. The Pelopion, to the west of the Altar of Zeus, was a small precinct in which, from the time when Pisa was founded by the Acheans, sacrifices were offered to the Achezan #pws Pelops. The traces agree with the account of Pausanias. Walls, inclined to each other at obtuse angles, enclosed a plot of ground having in the middle a low tumulus of elliptic form, about 35 metres from east to west by 20 from north to south. A Doric propylaion with three doors gave access on the south-west side.~~

~~The three temples of the Altis were those of Zeus, Hera, and the Mother of the gods. All were Doric. All, too, were completely surrounded by a colonnade, 7.e., were " peripteral."~~

~~3. The Temple of Zeus, south of the Pelopion, stood on a high substructure with three steps. The colounades at the east and west side were of six columns each ; those at the north and south sides (counting the corner columns again) of thirteeneach. The cella had a prodomos on the east and an opisthodomos on the west. The cella itself was divided longitudinally (i. ¢., from east to west) into three partitions by a double row of columns. The central partition, which was the widest, consisted of three sections. The west section was shut off ; it contained the throne and image of the~~

~~Olympian Zeus. The middle section, next to the east, contained a table and stele. Here, probably, the wreaths were presented to the victors. The third or easternmost section, which had side porticos, was. open to the public. This temple was most richly adorned with statues and reliefs. On the east front Peeonius had represented in twenty-one colossal figures the moment before the contest between Ginomaus and Pelops. The west front exhibited the fight of the~~

~~Ob YM Pl A~~

~~Lapithe and Centaurs, and was connected with the name of Alca- menes. The Twelve Labours of Heracles were depicted on the metopes of the prodomos and opisthodomos ; and of these reliefs much the greater part was found,—enough to determine with certainty all the essential features of the composition. It was near this temple, at a point about 35 metres east-south-east from the south-east angle, that the explorers found the fragment of a flying goddess of victory—the Nice of Pxonius.~~

~~4, The Temple of Hera (Heraion), north of the Pelopion, was raised on two steps. It was originally built as a temple in antis, and afterwards converted into a peripteros, having colonnades of six columns each at east and west, and of sixteen each (counting the corner-columns again) at north and south. It was smaller than the temple of Zeus, and, while resembling it in general plan, differed from it by its singular length relatively to its breadth. When Pausanias saw it, one of the two columns of the opisthodomos (at the west end of the cella) was of wood; and for a long period all the columns of this temple had probably been of the same material. A good deal of patch-work in the restoration of particular parts seems to have been done at various periods. The cella—divided, like that of Zeus, into three partitions by a double row of columns—had four "tongue-walls," or small screens, projecting at right angles from its north wall, and as many from the south wall. Five niches were thus formed on the north side and five on the south. In the third niche from the east, on the north side of the cella, was found one of the greatest of all the treasures which rewarded the German explorers,—the Hermes of Praxiteles (1878).~~

~~5. The Temple of the Mother of the Gods (Metroon) was again considerably smaller than the Heraion. It stood to the east of the latter, and had a~~

~~different orientation, viz., not west to east, but west-north-west to east-south-east. It was raised on three steps, and had a peripteros of six columns (east and west) by eleven (north and south), having thus a slightly smaller length relatively to its breadth than either of the other two temples. Here also the cella had prodomos and opisthodomos. this temple had once been very rich and varied. There are indica- tions that in Roman times it underwent a restoration, conducted, apparently, with little taste or skill.~~

~~B. Votive Edifices.—Under this head are placed buildings erected, either by states or by individuals, as offerings to the Olympian god.~~

~~1. The twelve Zvreaswre-houses on the north side of the Altis, immediately under the Cronion, belong to this class. We have seen that on the north side the limit of the Altis does not seem to have been defined by a wall, as on the other three sides. Here, then, we cannot distinguish with the same precision between objects within or without the precinct. The row of treasure-houses is, however, so situated that they are most naturally regarded as standing within the Altis, with a single exception. This is the easternmost of the twelve, the treasure-house dedicated by the state of Gela, which projected on the east beyond the line of the east Altis wall. It was evidently the oldest of the series. Originally planned as a small Doric temple in antis, of which the longer sides were the north and south, it was afterwards adorned on the south side with a colonnade, having six columus in front. Doric cut stone-work, overlaid with coloured terra-cotta plates, occurred here, as in monuments found at Gela itself, at Selinus, and elsewhere in Sicily.~~

~~The same general character—that of a Doric temple in antis, facing south—is traceable in all its younger neighbours on the west. In the cases of six of these the fragments are sufficient to aid a reconstruction. Two—viz., the 2d and 3d counting from the west—had been dismantled at an early date, and their site was tra- versed by a roadway winding upward towards the Cronion. This roadway seems to have been older at least than 157 A.p., since it caused a deflexion in the watercourse along the base of the Cronion constructed by Herodes Atticus. Pausanias, therefore, would not have seen treasure-houses Nos. 2 and 3. This explains the fact that, though we can trace twelve, he names only ten.~~

~~As the temples of ancient Greece partly served the purposes of banks, in which precious objects could be securely deposited, so the form of a small Doric chapel was a natural one for the " treasure- house" to assume. Each of these treasure-houses was erected by a Greek state, either as a thank-offering for Olympian victories gained by its citizens, or as a general mark of homage to the Olympian Zeus. The treasure-houses were designed to contain the various dva0#uara or dedicated gifts (such as gold and silver plate, &c.), in which the wealth of the sanctuary partly consisted. The temple inventories recently discovered at Delos illustrate the great quantity of such possessions which were apt to accumulate at a shrine of Panhellenic celebrity. Taken in order from the west, the treasure-houses were founded by the following states:—1, Sicyon ; 2, 3, unknown; 4, Syracuse (referred by Pausanias to Carthage); 5, Epidamnus; 6, Byzantium ; 7, Sybaris; 8, Cyrene; 9, Selinus ; 10, Mctapontum ; 11, Megara ; 12, Gela. It is interesting to remark how this list represents the Greek colonics, from Libya to Sicily, from the Euxine to the Adriatic. Greece proper, on the other hand, is represented only by Megara and Sicyon. The dates of the founda- tions cannot be fixed.~~

~~a short space west-south-west of the Heraion.~~

~~The adornment and painting of~~

~~769~~

~~2. The Philippeion stood near the north-west corner of the Altis, It was dedicated by Philip of Macedon, after his victory at Cheronea (338 B.c.). Asa thank-offering for the overthrow of Greek freedom, it might seem strangely placed in the Olympian Altis. But it is, in fact, only another illustration of the manner in which Philip's position and power enabled him to place a decent disguise on the real nature of the change. Without risking any revolt of Hellenic feeling, the new "captain-general" of Greece could erect a monument of his triumph in the very heart of the Panhellenic sanctuary. The building consisted of a circular Ionic colonnade (of eighteen columns), about 15 metres in diameter, raised on threc steps, and enclosing asmall circular cella, probably adorned with fourteen Corinthian half-columns.~~

3. The Exedra of Herodes Atticus stood at the north limit of the Altis, close to the north-east angle of the Heraion, and immediately west of the westernmost treasure-house (that of Sicyon). It con- sisted of a half-dome of brick, 16°6 metres in diameter, with south- south-west aspect. Under the half-dome were placed twenty-one marble statues, representing the family of Antoninus Pius, of Marcus Aurelius, and of the founder, Herodes Atticus. In front of the half-dome on the south, and extending slightly beyond it, was a basin of water for drinking, 22 metres long. The ends of the basin at north-north-west and south-south-east were adorned by very small open temples, each with a circular colonnade of eight pillars. A marble bull, in front of the basin, bore an inscription saying that Herodes dedicates the whole to Zeus, in the name of his wife, Annia Regilla. The exedra must have been seen by Pausanias, but he does not mention it.

C. It remains to notice those features of the Altis which were connected with the management of the sanctuary or with the accommodation of its guests.

1, Olympia, besides its religious character, originally possessed also a political character, as the centre of an amphictyony. It was, in fact, a sacred 7é\ts. We have seen that it had a bouleu- terion for purposes of public debate or conference. So also it was needful that, like a Greek city, it should have a public hearth or prytaneion, where fire should always burn on the altar of the Olympian Hestia, and where the controllers of Olympia should exercise public hospitality. The Prytaneion was at the north-west corner at the Altis, in such a position that its south-east angle was close to the north-west angle of the Heraion. It was apparently a square building, of which each side measured 100 Olympian feet, with a south-west aspect. It contained a chapel of Hestia at the front or south-west side, before which a portico was afterwards built. The dining-hall was at the back (north-east), the kitchen on the north-west side. On the same side with the kitchen, and also on the opposite side (south-east), there were some smaller rooms.

2. The Poreh of Echo, also called the " Painted Porch" (c7od motxthy), extended to a length of 96 metres along the east Altis wall. Raised on three steps, aud formed by a single Doric colonnade, open towards the Altis, it afforded a place from which spectators could conveniently view the passage of processions and the sacrifices at the great altar of Zeus.

3. Before the Porch of Echo, and east of the Altar of Zeus, was the Proedria, a structure 20 metres long, containing places of honour for officials and visitors of distinction. A flight of steps, curved inwards in a semicircle, gave access from the west. At either end of the Proedria (north and south) stood a colossal Ionic column. These columns, as the inscriptions show, once supported statues of Ptolemy and Berenice.

4. The Agora was the name given to that part of the Altis which had the Porch of Echo and Proedria on the east, the Altar of Zeus on the west, the Metroon on the north, and the precinct of the Temple of Zeus on the south-west. In this part stood the altars of Zeus Agoraios and Artemis Agoraia.

5. The Zanes (Zéves) were brazen images of Zeus, the cost of making which was defrayed by the fines exacted from competitors who had infringed the rules of the contests at Olympia. These images stood at the northern side of the Agora, in a row, which extended from the north-east angle of the Metroon to the gate of the private entrance from the Altis into the stadion. Sixteen pedestals were here discovered in situ. A lesson of loyalty was thus impressed on aspirants to renown by the last objects which met their eyes as they passed from the sacred enclosure to the scene of their trial.

6. Arrangements for Water-supply.—A copious supply of water was required for the service of the altars and temples, for the pri- vate dwellings of priests and officials, for the usc of the gymna- sium, palestra, &c., and for the therm which arose in Roman times. In the Hellenic age the water was derived wholly from the Cladeus and from the small lateral tributaries of its valley. A basin, to serve as a chief reservoir, was built at the north-west corner of the Altis ; and a supplementary reservoir was afterwards constructed a little to the north-east of this, on the slope of the Cronion. A new source of supply was for the first time made available by Herodcs Atticus, c. 157 ap. At a short distance

east of Olympia, near the village of Miraka, small streams flow from comparatively high ground through the side- valleys which descend towards

~~the right or northern bank of the Alpheus. From these side-valleys water was now conducted to Olympia, entering the Altis at its north-east corner by an arched canal which passed behind the treasure-houses to the reservoir at the back of the exedra. The large basin of drinking-water in front of the exedra was fed thence, and served to associate the name of Herodes with a benefit of the highest practical value. Olympia further possessed several fountains, enclosed by round or square walls, chiefly in connexion with the buildings outside the Altis. The drainage of the Altis followed two main lines. One, for the west part, passed from the south-west angle of the Heraion to the south portico outside the south Altis wall. The other, which served for the trea- sure-houses, passed in front of the Porch of Echo parallel with the line of the east Altis wall. The whole subject of the water-works of Olympia was exhaustively investigated by Herr Graber, and has been explained by him in vol. v. of the Excavations, pp. 26 sq. Such, in brief outline, are the more important results of the German exploration of Olympia, an enterprise alike honourable to the Government which undertook it and to the eminent men by whom it was conducted. The work of excavation was from the outset guided by scientific knowledge, and the results were at no point confused or obscured by rash and unsound theories. The general out- come of the undertaking is certainly greater than could have reasonably been anticipated at its commencement. In the Olympia seen by Pausanias there was, of course, very much of which not the slightest trace has been found,—such, for instance, as the temples of Eileithyia, of Aphrodite Urania, and of Demeter Chameune. In regard to particular works of art, many hopes of discovery. have been disappointed, nor can "the survival of the fittest" be always acknowledged in the salvage from so many cen- turies of ruin. On the other hand, the German campaigns had their welcome surprises and their strokes of good fortune, such as the finding of the Hermes and the Nice. Above all, they have their reward in this, that the topo- graphy of Olympia is now thoroughly ascertained. We now know with certainty the exact position of the prin- cipal buildings, the plan of the Altis and its relation to its whole environment, and all the main local conditions of the festival. In reading an Olympian ode of Pindar, the modern student can now call up the scene with ade- quate fulness of detail. Precious as are the particular works of ancient art which have been discovered, and valu- able as are the results of the study of art and architecture, the largest gain of all consists in the vivid and suggestive light~~

~~thus shed on a great centre of Hellenic history and life. (&. On9?)~~
~~OLYMPIAS, the ambitious and energetic wife of Philip IL., king of Macedonia, and the mother of Alexander III., commonly called The Great, was daughter of Neoptolemus I., king of Epirus, who claimed to be descended from Pyrrhus, son of Achilles. Plutarch tells us that it was while being initiated in the Samothracian mysteries, in which she was an enthusiastic participant, that Philip, still very young, fell in love with her. The marriage took place in 359 B.c., shortly after his accession, and Alexander was born in 356. There was also a daughter, named Cleopatra. The fickleness of Philip and the vehement and jealous temper of Olympias led to a growing estrange- ment, which became complete when Philip married a second wife, Cleopatra, in 337. Alexander, who strongly sided with his mother, withdrew, along with her, into Epirus, whence they both returned in the following year, after the assassination of Philip, which Olympias is said to have countenanced. During the absence of Alexander, with whom she had regular correspondence on public as well as domestic affairs, she had great influence in Macedonia, and by her arrogance and ambition gave great trouble to Antipater,—so great, indeed, that on the death of her son (323) she found it prudent to withdraw into Epirus.~~

~~OL Y—~~

~~OL %~~

~~Here she remained until 317, when, allying herself with Polysperchon, by whom her old enemy had been succeeded in 319, she took the field with an Epirote army; the op- posing troops at once declared in her favour, and for a short period Olympias was mistress of Macedonia. Cas- sander, Antipater's son, speedily, however, returned from the Peloponnesus, and, after an obstinate siege, compelled the surrender of Pydna, where she had taken refuge. One of the terms of the capitulation had been that her life should be spared; but this did not protect her against trial for numerous and cruel executions (including that of Nicanor, Cassander's brother) of which she had been guilty during her short lease of power. Condemned without a hearing, she was put to death tumultuously by the friends of those whom she had slain, and Cassander is said to have denied her remains the rites of burial (316).~~

~~OLYMPUS, the name of many mountains in Greece and Asia Minor, and of the fabled home of the gods, and also a city name and a personal name.~~

~~I. Of the mountains bearing the name the most famous is the lofty ridge on the borders of Thessaly and Macedonia. The river Peneus, which drains Thessaly, finds its way to the sea through the great gorge of Tempe, which is close below the south-eastern end of Olympus and separates it from Mount Ossa. The highest peak of Olympus is over 9000 feet high ; it is covered with snow for great part of the year. Olympus is a mountain of massive appearance, in many places rising in tremendous precipices broken by vast ravines, above which is the broad summit. The lower parts are densely wooded; the summit is naked rock. Homer calls the mountain dydvvidos, paxpds, ToAvderpas 5 the epithets vidoels, roAvdevdpos, frondosus, and opacus are used by other poets. The modern name is "EAvpmo, a dialectic form of the ancient word.~~

~~The peak of Mount Lyceus in the south-west of Arcadia was called Olympus. East of Olympia, on the north bank of the Alpheus, was a hill bearing this name; beside Sellasia in Laconia another. The name was even commoner in Asia Minor : a lofty chain in Mysia (Keshish Dagh), a ridge east of Smyrna (Nif Dagh), other mountains in Lycia, in Galatia, in Cilicia, in Cyprus, &c., were all called Olympus.~~

~~II. A lofty peak, rising high above the clouds of the lower atmosphere into the clear ether, seemed to be the chosen seat of the deity. Homer distinguishes between Olympus, which is the mountain, and the heaven or ether; but later poets use the terms as practically equivalent. In the elaborate mythology of Greek literature Olympus was the common home of the multitude of gods. Each deity had his special haunts, but all had a residence at the court of Zeus on Olympus ; here were held the assemblies and the common feasts of the gods.~~

~~III. There was a city in Lycia named Olynipus ; it was a bishopric in the Byzantine time.~~

~~TY. A semi-historical musician, named Olympus, was connected with the development of flute music about 700 B.c. It is probable that he introduced the double flute, and increased the number of holes in the instrument and~~

the tones of which it was capable: on the right flute were three holes for the low notes, on the left four for the high notes. He also brought into use compositions for the flute without words (xpotpara). It is said that he was an elegiac poet, but this is apparently a misconception. It is difficult to say whether Olympus is an actual histori- cal person, or whether he merely represents in an indivi- dualized form the influence which Phrygian music, used in the Phrygian religion, began to exert on the Ionian cities about 700 B.c. The growth of intercourse between Phrygia and Ionia at this time is certain (see PuRyGtra). In any case, the musical innovations associated with the name of Olympus were the beginning of a richer and more

varied school of lyric poetry, as well as of music, in the Greek world.

On the musician see, besides the general works on Greek litera- ture, Ritschl, "Olympos der Aulet," in Opuse., i. ; Flach, Gesch. d. griech, Lyrik, 1883; Westphal, Aletrik, &c.

OLYNTHUS was an important city of Chalcidice (see vol. xv. p. 137), situated in a fertile plain at the head of the Toronaic gulf between the peninsulas of Sithonia and Pallene, at some little distance from the sea, and about 60 stadia from Potidea. The district belonged origin- ally to a Thracian people, the Bottizi; and it is said that it was given over to the Greek colonists of Chal- cidice at the Persian invasion. It fell under Athenian influence during the 5th century, but regained its free- dom during the invasion of Brasidas (424 B.c.). It became the head of a great confederacy, and its power excited the jealousy of Sparta. A war broke out 383-379, and Olyn- thus was compelled to become a member of the Spartan confederacy. No long time afterwards the Athenians made themselves masters of several towns which had pre- viously been under the influence of Olynthus, and then a new and more dangerous enemy appeared on the northern frontier. Philip of Macedon found the city his most powerful rival, and directed all his strength against it. The Athenians made an alliance with Olynthus, but did not give any active aid, though Demosthenes tried hard to induce them to oppose Philip before he grew too strong. The famous series of Olynthiac orations was delivered by him at this crisis. After a long

~~siege the city was cap- tured by treachery in 347 B.c. ; it was razed to the ground, and the people sold as slaves.~~

~~OMAHA, the largest city in Nebraska, U.S., is situ- ated on the west bank of the Missouri, 600 miles from its confluence with the Mississippi, in 41° 15' 43" N, lat. and 95° 55' 47" W. long. (time 1>16™ after that of Wash- ington). The lower part, situated mainly on a terrace, is principally devoted to business ; the upper part, on the bluffs, to the finer residences, parks, and churches. It was founded in 1854, and in 1855 it became the capital of Nebraska Territory, when its inhabitants numbered little over 100; Lincoln, however, is the capital of the State. The population (1883 in 1860, 16,083 in 1870) was 30,518 in 1880, and in 1883 had risen to 49,710, its present growth surpassing that of any former period. Omaha con- tains the most extensive smelting and refining works in the Union. The number of men employed is 300, and the production of metals in 1882 was—lead, 43,711,921 b; gold, 16,272 oz. fine; silver, 4,853,851 oz. fine; sulphate of copper, 152,041 tb. Other manufactures amount to over $7,000,000 annually. The educational institutions include Creighton College, Brownell Hall for young ladies, a medical college, and a business college. The high school building, erected at a cost of $250,000, is one of the finest in the country. There are besides ten free schoolhouses, containing seventy-four schoolrooms. Among the public buildings are the post-office and court-house, an opera- house seating 1700 people, many hotels, and numerous churches. The streets are wide and cross at right angles, and the business portions are in process of being paved. The city is lighted by gas and the electric light. Street railways penetrate in all directions. Omaha is also an important railroad centre.~~

~~OMAN, or 'OMAN. See ARABIA.~~

~~'OMAR. See MoHAMMEDANISM, vol. xvi. pp. 563, 574.~~

~~'OMAR KHAYYAM. The great Persian mathemati- cian, astronomer, freethinker, and epigrammatist, GhiyAth- uddin Abulfath "Omar bin Ibréhim al-Khayyd4mi, who de- rived the epithet Khayyam (the tentmaker) most likely from his father's trade, was born in or close by Nishapur, and is stated to have died there in 517 a.u. (1123 a.p.).~~

This date is accepted by most Eastern and Western writers, but the renowned vizier of the Seljik sultans Alp Arslan and Malikshah, Niz4m-ulmulk of Tus, whose birth is fixed in 408 a.H.(1017 a.D.), expressly states in one of his writings that 'Omar was of the same age as himself, and attended with him the lectures of the imém Muwaffak in the college of Nishapir. However that may be, there cannot be the slightest doubt that at an early age 'Omar entered into a close friendship both with Niz4m-ulmulk and his school- fellow Hasan ibn Sabbah, who founded afterwards the terrible sect of the Isma'ilis or Assassins. The three friends pledged themselves by a solemn promise that he who should first gain an influential position in the world would lend a helping hand to the other two and promote their success in life. When Niz4m-ulmulk was raised to the rank of vizier by Alp Arslan (1063-1073 a.p.) he re- membered this covenant and bestowed upon Hasan ibn Sabbah the dignity of a chamberlain, whilst offering a similar court office to 'Omar Khayyém. But the latter contented himself with an annual stipend which would enable him to devote all his time to his favourite studies of mathematics and astronomy, and he soon proved his gratitude for the liberality of his patron and friend by the publication of his standard work on algebra, written in Arabic. This and other treatises of a similar character—for instance, on the extraction of cube roots and on the explanation of difficult definitions in Euclid—raised him at once to the foremost rank among the mathematicians of that age, and induced Sultan Maliksh4h to summon him in 467 a.H. (1074 a.D.) to institute astronomical observa- tions on a larger scale, and to aid him in his great enterprise of a thorough reform of the calendar. A twofold fruit resulted from "'Omar's elaborate research in the sultan's observatory,—a revised edition of the Zij or astronomical tables, and the introduction of the Ta'rfkh-i-Malikshahi or Jalali, that is, the so-called Jaldlian or Seljuk era, which commences in 47] a.H. (1079 a.p., 15th March).

Great, however, as "'Omar's scientific fame has always been throughout the East, it is nearly eclipsed by his still greater poetical renown, which he owes to his rubd'is or quatrains, a collection of about 500 epigrams, unequalled by any of his predecessors or followers. The peculiar form of the ruba'{i—viz., four lines, the first, second, and fourth of which have the

same rhyme, while the third usually (but not al- ways) remains rhymeless—was first successfully introduced into Persian literature as the exclusive vehicle for subtle thoughts on the various topics of Stfic mysticism by the sheikh Abt Sa‘id bin Abulkhair,! but ‘Omar differs in its treatment considerably from Abu Sa‘id. Although some of his quatrains are purely mystic and pantheistic, most of them bear quite another stamp ; they are the breviary of a radical freethinker, who protests in the most forcible manner both against the narrowness, bigotry, and un- compromising austerity of the orthodox ulemd and the eccentricity, hypocrisy, and wild ravings of advanced Siufis, whom he successfully combats with their own weapons, using the whole mystic terminology simply to ridicule mysticism itself. There is in this respect a great resem- blance between him and Hafiz, but ‘Omar is decidedly superior, not so much on account of his priority as for his more concise, more simple, and yet infinitely more energetic style. He has often been called the Voltaire of the East, and cried down as materialist and atheist. As far as purity of diction, fine wit, crushing satire against a debased and ignorant clergy, and a general sympathy with suffering humanity are concerned, ‘Omar certainly reminds us of the great Frenchman; but there the com- parison ceases. Voltaire never wrote anything equal to

1 Died Jan. 1049. Comp. Ethé’s edition of his ruba‘is in Sitzwngs- berichte der bayr. Akademie, 1875, pp. 145 sq., and 1878, pp. 38 sq.

fate which dooms to slow decay or sudden death and to eternal oblivion all that is great, good, and beautiful in this world. There is a touch of Byron, Swinburne, and even of Schopenhauer in many of his rub4‘is, which clearly proves that the modern pessimist is by no means a novel creature in the realm of philosophic thought and poetical imagination,

The Leyden copy of ‘Omar Khayydm’s work on algebra was noticed as far back as 1742 by Gerald Meerman in the preface to his Specimen calculi fluxionalis ; further notices of the same work by Sédillot appeared in the Nouv. Jour. As., 1834, and in vol. xiii. of the Notices et Extraits des MSS. de la Bibl. roy. The complete text, together with a French translation (on the basis of the Leyden and Paris copies, the latter first discovered by M. Libri,

see his Histoire des sciences mathématiques en Italic, i. 300), was edited by F. Woepcke, L'algebre d' Omar Alkhayydmt, Paris, 1851. Arti- cles on 'Omar's life and works are found in Reinaud's Géographie @ Aboulféda, pref., p. 101; Notices et Lxtraits, ix. 148 sq.; Garcin de Tassy, Vote sur les Ruba'iydt de 'Omar Khaiydm, Paris, 1857 ; and Rieu, Cat. Pers. MSS. in the Br. Mus., ii. p. 546. The quatrains have been edited at Calcutta, 1836, and Teheran, 1857 and 1862; text and French translation by J. B. Nicolas, Paris, 1867 (very incorrect and misleading) ; a portion of the same, ren- dered in English verse, by E. Fitzgerald, London, 1859, 1872, and 1879. A new English version was published in Triibner's " Orien- tal Series," 1882, by E. H. Whinfield, and the first critical edition of the text, with translation, by the same, 1883, (H. £.)

OMAYYADS. See MonamMepanism.

OMEN. See Aucurs, Divination, and Maatc.

OMSK, the chief town of the government of Akmolinsk and capital of western Siberia, stands at the junction of the Om with the Irtish, on the great highway of Siberia, 1795 miles east of Moscow. Distant as it is from the great line of steamboat communication leading to Tomsk, the true commercial capital of western Siberia, Omsk has a purely administrative importance ; its "fortress," or old earthwork, is now almost entirely abandoned. 'The town, situated in a wide steppe, broken only by the gently- sloping hill occupied by the fort, is almost entirely of wood. It has a military school, a lyceum, several lower schools, and a small public library. A "West Siberian branch of the Russian Geographical Society," opened in 1877, issues valu- able publications. Its industries (candlemaking, tanning, and the like) are insignificant ; but the trade, chiefly in cattle, skins, and furs imported from the Kirghiz Steppe, and partly also in tea, is of some importance. The popu- lation, which is entirely Russian, numbers about 31,000, of

whom about 5000 are military.

*The '*fort" of Omsk was erected in 1716 to protect the series of block- houses on the Russian frontier, and, as two lines of block- houses—that of the Ishim and that of the Irtish—met at this point, it became a military*

~~centre. In consequence of frequent incur- sions of the Kirghiz about the end of the last ceutury, a stronger earthwork, with bastions and a stone gate, was erected on the right bank of the Om. From being a district town of the government of Tobolsk, Omsk became in 1839 the seat of the administration of western Siberia in anticipation of a further advance of the Russians towards the south. Since the conquest of Turkestan it has lost even this strategic importance.~~

~~ON, or Hxtroporis. See Eeypr, vol. vii. p. 769.~~

~~ONEGA, next to Ladoga the largest lake in Europe, having according to Strelbitskiy an area of 3763 square miles, is situated in the heart of the government of Olonetz in European Russia, and, discharging its waters by the Svir into Lake Ladoga, belongs to the system of the Neva. The lake basin lies north-west and south-east, the same direction which is common to the lakes of Finland and to the line of glacier-scoring observed in this region. A straight line drawn from the village of Lumbuzha at the head of Povyenets Bay on the north to Oshta in the south measures 145 miles, but a considerable portion of it lies actoss the Zaonezhe peninsula. The greatest width is 50~~

~~OM A—ONE~~

~~'Omar's fascinating rhapsodies in praise of wine, love, and all earthly joys, to the fervent effusions of his heart so full of the most tender feelings and affections, and his passionate denunciations of a malevolent and inexorable~~

~~miles. Between the northern and southern divisions of the lake there is a considerable difference ; while the latter has a comparatively regular outline, and contains hardly any islands, the former splits up into a number of inlets and is full of islands and submerged rocks. It is thus the northern division which brings the coast-line up to 860 miles and causes the navigation of the lake to be so dan- gerous that previous to 1874, when additional buoys and beacons were laid down, the loss of life from shipwreck was about eighty persons perannum. The north-western shore between Petrozavodsk and the mouth of the river Lum- buzha consists of dark clay slates generally in horizontal~~

~~Strata and broken by raised parallel bands of diorite.~~

~~These bands extend far into the lake and are locally known as "hogs' backs." The eastern shore (as far as the mouth of the Andoma) is for the most part alluvial, with out- croppings of red granite and in one place (the mouth of the Pyalma) diorite and dolomite. To the south-east are sedimentary Devonian rocks, and the general level of the coast is broken by Mount Andoma and Cape Petropav- lovskii (160 feet above the lake); to the south-west a quartzy sandstone (well known as a building and monu- mental stone in St Petersburg) forms a fairly bold rim. Onega lies 236 feet above the sea. Towards the centre of the southern section a considerable area is upwards of 165 feet deep, and at one place a depth of 738 feet has been reached. The most important affluents, the Vodka, the Andoma, and the Vuiterga, come from the east. The Kumsa, a northern tributary, is sometimes represented in maps as if it connected the lake with Lake Seg, but the latter drains to the White Sea, and proposals to restore by means of a canal the communication which formerly existed here between the Arctic and Baltic basins have not yet been carried out. Lake Onega remains free from ice for 209 days in the year (middle of May to second week of December). The water is at its lowest level in the beginning of March ; by June it has risen 2 feet, A considerable population is scattered along the shores of the lake, mainly occupied in the timber trade, fisheries, and mining industries. Salmon, palya (a kind of trout), bur- bot, pike, perchpike, and perch are among the fish caught in the lake. Steamboats were introduced in 1832,~~

~~It is to be noted that the river Onega, which after a course of about 260 miles reaches the Gulf of Onega, an inlet of the White Sea, has no connexion with Lake Onega. At the mouth of this river (on the right bank) stands the district town and port of Onega (2275), which dates from settlements made by the people of Novgorod in the 15th century, and known in history as the Ustenskaya or Ustyanskaya volost. It has a cathedral (St Michael and the Holy Trinity), erected in 1796,~~

~~ONEIDA COMMUNITY, in Madison co., New York, is a society which has attracted wide interest on account of its pecuniary success and its peculiar religious and social principles. Its founder, organizer, and controlling mind~~

was John H. Noyes, who in 1834, while a student and licentiate of the theological seminary of Yale College, was led by his study of the New Testament to believe that the gospel of Christ, when fully accepted, secures present salvation from sin, and that the second coming of Christ, instead of being a future event, took place, according to promise, within a single generation of His first coming. Other religious doctrines at variance with popular theology were developed by Mr Noyes, such as that God is a dual being, Father and Son; that God is in no sense responsible for the existence of evil, but that the author of evil, as the © author of good, was uncreated ; that, the second coming of Christ being past, we are now living in a new dispensation of grace; that personal spiritual communication with Christ and His risen church is possible, and when perfected secures salvation from all evil, including disease and death itself.

These doctrines found their practical expression in a

‘ON E—‘ON E

social system of pure communism. In the Oneida Com- munity, founded in 1848, “not one said that aught of the things which he possessed was his own, but they had all things in common.” The Community was a large family or brotherhood, numbering at one time over three hundred members, the common bond being paramount. The children were regarded as belonging primarily to the Community ; and it was a favourite theory, which they made some attempts to realize, that children should be begotten and reared only under the best conditions. So far as their experiments in this direction extended, the results, they claimed, justified their theories, and they adduced in con- firmation the testimony of critical observers like Professor Goldwin Smith, who wrote after a visit to the Community as follows :—

“ Undeniably, they are a fine, healthy-looking, merry set of children. They are reared under conditions of exceptional advan- tage, which could not fail to secure health to the offspring of any but positively diseased parents. The nurseries, with everything about them, are beautiful. Large playrooms are provided for exer- cise in winter. The nurses are not hirelings, but members of the Community who voluntarily undertake the office. Every precaution is taken against the danger of infection. A simple and wholesome dietary is

enforced, and no mother or grandmother is permitted to ruin digestion and temper by administering first a poison from the confectioner's and then another poison from the druggist's."

But, while the Oneida Communists extended the pente- costal principle to all social relations, they yet maintained strict order among themselves. The thousands of visitors who annually inspected their dwellings and factories, and admired their lawns and gardens, discovered none of the usual signs of lax social morality. Credit for this is unquestionably due in part to the strong personal influence of Mr Noyes, but credit is also due to the members for voluntarily subjecting themselves to a system of self-control in the intercourse of the sexes called 'male continence," and to 'mutual criticism," which last was in fact exalted into their principal means of government. The system is one of plain truth-telling, and was termed "mutual" because it was expected that all, or nearly all, would alternate as critic and subject. Sometimes persons were criticized by a standing committee selected for the purpose by the Community, sometimes by committees of their own selection, sometinies by the whole Community. The critics were expected in all cases to speak the truth with- out fear or favour, that the subject might see himself, whatever his faults or virtues, as others saw him.

Radical as its theories and practices were, the Oneida Community was able to conduct its experiment with much success for thirty years. About that time public opinion, aroused by the clergy of the surrounding region, demanded that its social practices should be abandoned; and this was accordingly done in 1879, under the counsel of its

founder and president, Mr Noyes, who had many times-

previously expressed his willingness to conform to the wishes of the public respecting the practical assertion of his social principles. This important change led to other changes in the society, including the introduction of marriage and family life; and in 1880 communism of property gave place to joint-stock, and the Community was legally incorporated as the Oneida Community, Limited. Each member now has a separate individual interest re- presented by shares of stock, in place of the undivided interest he formerly had in the common property. These changes were so wisely

managed that the complex manu- facturing and commercial businesses of the society were not seriously disturbed. In the division of the property of the Community, prior to its reorganization into a joint- stock company, a guarantee of support was first offered to all elderly and infirm persons in lieu of stock ; secondly, a guarantee was pledged for the support and education of the children of the Community till sixteen years of age ; thirdly,

labour in the new company was guaranteed to all members of the old society ; fourthly, some co-operative features were preserved, such as common dwellings and lawns, a common laundry, library, reading-room, &c.

Although the Oneida Community was started with very limited capital (the inventoried valuation of its property in 1857 being only $67,000), and hard work and poor fare were the lot of its members for many years, yet in dustry and business integrity brought their usual rewards, and upon the reorganization the members were able to divide $600,000. The last annual report of the Oneida Community, Limited, filed with the secretary of state at Albany, New York, shows that its assets, lst January 1884, were $785,656,—a sum covering, not only its capital stock of $600,000, but a surplus fund of $24,050, and all liabilities against the company.

The Oneida Community, Limited, owns water-powers and factories at Wallingford, Connecticut, and Niagara Falls, New York, as well as at Community, New York ; but its business is principally carried on at the two places last named. At Wallingford there existed, previous to the reorganization, a branch community, varying from thirty to sixty members, and having a common interest in the parent society,—both men and means being transferred from one society to the other as occasion required.

The Oneida Community has been often described by writers not connected with the society, the most noteworthy being Colonel T. W. Higginson, Professor Goldwin Smith, Charles Nordhoff in Communistic Socicties of the United States, and William H. Dixon in New America. The Community also published many pamphlets and larger works in exposition of its principles and social life, and a newspaper during its entire career of thirty years.

These may be consulted in several of the public libraries of the United States, and also in the British Museum, which has a complete set of the publications of the Oneida Community. The following list in- cludes the more important books and pamphlets :—AHistory of American Socialisms, by John H. Noyes, 1870; Bercan, Homc- Talks, Salvation from Sin, Male Continence, Scientific Propaga- tion, Dixon and his Copyists, all by the same author ; Report on the Health of the Children of the Oneida Community, by Dr T. R. Noyes ; Foot-Notes, by Alfred Barron; Mutual Criticism, and American Communities, by William Alfred Hinds. (W. A. H.)

'ONEIZA, or 'ANEYsA, a town in the Neftid or sand country of Al-Kasfm and, after Ridd, the most consider- able place in Nejd or highland Arabia, appears to have been founded about 500 years ago,! near the now ruined village of Jennah (settled some centuries before by colonists of the Bani Khalid). These new places were in the circuit of the old Bani Tamim towns destroyed by the sword of Khalid b. Walid, whose sites are now named Al-'Eyaria (Manzil "Eyar) and Al-Owshazia. Colonists of the Kaisite stock of Sbeya Arabs were the first builders of 'Oneiza, and the emirs of the township are still of this blood. After them came in colonists of the Tam{fm, who now form the chief element in the population. The old faction warfare between the villages Jennah and "Oneiza was incessant, and the Bani Khalid had'the greatest name in Nejd till the rise of the Wahhabite power. Jennah then made alliance with the Montefik Arabs in the north ; 'Oneiza sided with the Wahhabites, and, these soon overrunning all, a part of the Jennah villagers abandoned their country, and went to live in Mesopotamia, and the rest came in to inhabit 'Oneiza. The site of their old village is now in the orchards of 'Oneiza, enclosed by the common town-wall.

'Oneiza is built upon an old sez (freshet) strand (2600 feet above sea-level), and has been sometimes damaged by floods; the houses are of clay; the population, greatly increased, as Mr Doughty was told, in the fifteen years preceding his visit, was computed by him at nearly 7000. The site is near the great Wadi al-Romma (comp. Yakut,

1 The name belonged to the site before there was a town (see Bekri

and Yakut), and the same place is probably meant by the dual 'Onei- zatein in 'Antara's Jfo'allaka.

Plate XXII.

774 ON K—ONT

ill. 738), and beyond the wadi, at 11 miles' distance, is the other great township of Middle Nejd, Boreida, less than 'Oneiza, with a population probably of 5000.

The people of these and the neighbouring towns, as Al- Russ,! are in great part caravaners and merchants; they are the Lombards of Arabia, and are called in the Mecca country '"'the easterlings," and in the Syrian and Mesopo- tamian border-lands the 'Azeil. These world-wandering men are commonly of easy, liberal mind in doctrines of religion, whilst the large half of their home-dwelling fellow-citizens are sour Wahhdbites. In these upper parts of the peninsula we see yet some remains of the ancient Arabian civilization, Here is found the art, elsewhere lost, of stone-cutting and well-building ; and at 'Oneiza are gold- smiths whose work is among the best seen in the bazaars of Mecca. '"Oneiza has an appearance of commercial pros- perity, but the poor farmers are much indebted to the money-lenders. The townsmen are among the greatest coffee-drinkers in Arabia. The horse-dealers of 'Oneiza procure young horses from the nomads round the town, even as far as Yemen, and ship these (known in India as "'Oneiza horses") at Koweyt for Bombay.

When Ibrahim Pasha marched to Nejd against the Wahhabite power this town was held by a resident for Ibn Sa'id. Ibrahim shelled the clay fortress, but allowed the governor to depart with arms and baggage. After the building of Al-Riad 'Oneiza fell again to the Wahhabites. Jellowwy, a brother of the Wahhabite prince Feysel ibn Sa'ud, was resident, but, bearing himself oppressively, he was expelled, as had been determined in a secret council of the sheikhs. This brought Ibn Sa'id with all Nejd under arms, and the Shammar prince Ibn Rashid, to recover the rebellious town. He encamped upon the borders of the Wadi al-Romma, and lay there till the second year (1853-54), but attempted nothing (since Arabs cannot be commanded or led to storm a clay town-wall even if, as in this case, it is no

more than 18 inches thick), and then departed, making peace with the townsmen upon their own terms. A second war followed after eight years. Abdullah al-Aziz al- Mohammed, the natural prince of Boreida, worsted by the Wah- habite faction, fled to 'Oneiza ; and a little later, when he was going to take refuge with the sherif of Mecca, the Wahhabites lay in wait for him in the desert and killed him. Word being carried to 'Oneiza, the townsmen sent out armed men, who overtook and fought with them because they had killed the guest of 'Oneiza, thus drawing a new conflict on the town. Mohammed, another brother of the prince Ibn Sa'td, came against 'Oneiza, and all subject Arabia in arms with him; and to meet this multitude 'Oneiza had little more than 1000 men. The Wahhabites had cannon, but could not handle them ; the 'Oneizians, in their walled township, followed their daily labours at leisure. The citizens made one sally in force, but after heavy fighting were driven back with a loss of 200 men. There were two slighter skirmishes in long months of warfare. At length the besiegers, impatient of the time vainly spent, drew homeward, and Ibn Sa'ud returned to Al-Riad.

ONKELOS. See Tarcum.

ONOMACRITUS was a seer, priest, and poet of Attica about 530-480 B.c. HIs importance lies in his connexion with the religious movements in Attica during the 6th century. HE had great influence on the development of the Orphic religion and mysteries; and the works of Museeus, the legendary founder of Orphism in Attica, are said to have been reduced to order by him (see ORPHIEUS). HE was in high favour at the court of the Pisistratide till he was detected by Lasus of HErmione making an inter- polation in an oracle of Muszus, and was banished by HIp- parchus. When the Pisistratidee were themselves expelled and were living in Persia, Onomacritus is said to have fur- nished them with oracles encouraging Xerxes to invade Greece and restore the tyrants in Athens. HE is also said to have interpolated HOmer, and has in modern times been considered by some critics to have remodelled the HOmeric poems.

ONTARIO is the name given under the confederation of the provinces of British North America to what was previously known as Upper Canada (see Canada). The

~~i ee ? Near Al-Russ is Al-Ethella, the site, probably, of Jarada, the ancient metropolis of Kasim,~~

~~river Ottawa, through a considerable part of its course, forms the eastern boundary separating it from the province of Quebec. Its southern and south-western boundaries are the Lakes Ontario, Erie, St Clair, Huron, and Superior, with the St Lawrence, Niagara, St Clair, Detroit, and St Mary rivers. The northern and western boundaries, which had remained without precise determination so long ag the region beyond was the hunting-ground of the Hudson's Bay Company, were defined in 1878 by arbitrators named by the Dominion and provincial Governments. By this award the boundary line is traced from a point deter- mined by a line produced due north from the head of Lake Temiscaming to James Bay, along the south shore of Hudson's Bay westerly to the mouth of the Albany river, and so by the river and lakes to the head of Lake Joseph, and by Lac Seul and the English river to a point of intersection with the meridian line drawn from the north-western angle of the Lake of the Woods on the United States boundary. The legislature of Ontario ac- cepted this award as determining the limits, and defining the boundary line between the provinces of Ontario and Manitoba, but the Dominion Government withheld its assent, and the final decision is now referred to the privy council, The area of the province within the limits thus defined would be 197,000 square miles. Its area as given in the census returns of 1881 is 101,733 square miles.~~

~~Geology and Minerals.—The shores of Lakes Erie and Ontario belong to the great plain of Canada, underlaid by Silurian and Devonian limestone and shales, above which rest beds of clay and gravel. Its average breadth is about 70 miles, and, though technically a plain, it is not merely undulating, but is broken by shelving rocks and precipices. To the north of the province a spur from the Laurentian chain in Quebec forms an extensive hilly region, and runs southwards to the coasts of Lake Huron and the Georgian Bay. Within the province there is a great variety of mineral wealth yet only partially developed. Iron, of which, according to the census returns, the annual yield is about 92,000 tons, is found in large quantities to the north of Lake Ontario, between the Georgian Bay and the Ottawa river. Magnetic iron is obtained in various beds, red hematite in the Bruce copper-mines near Lake Huron, and bog iron in the sandy tracks which flank the~~

Laurentian hills. Copper is found in the same region as iron, the Bruce mines yielding ore to the annual value of £50,000. Silver abounds on the shores of Lake Superior, especially in the neighbourhood of Thunder Bay,—Silver Islet, where the ore is dug 500 feet below Lake Superior, containing one of the richest veins in the world. Gold is obtained in the same region, but the yield is so uncertain as to discourage regular enterprise. There are petroleum wells of immense value in the western districts of the province, the annual yield being nearly 16,000,000 gallons of crude petroleum. Salt brine is drawn up from deep wells at Goderich and the neighbourhood, the annual yield being about 500,000 gallons. Mica is extensively worked, Marble equal to that of Carrara is quarried in several districts. The principal other minerals are galena, plumbago, antimony, arsenic, manganese, cale-spar, and gypsum.

Agriculture and Trade.—The oldest settled districts of the province on the shores of Lakes Ontario and Erie, and on the intervening peninsula of Niagara, are favoured in many respects by geographical position, soil, and climate. The fertile area stretching westward between Lake Eric and the Georgian Bay is often styled the "Garden of Canada." The settled portions include upwards of 9,000,000 acres, much of which has been long cleared and brought into a high state of cultivation. Thousands of acres are planted as orchards; and the apple crop is a

otra k! 0

profitable branch of farm produce. In the still earlier settled district of Niagara, which lies between the two great lakes, the extremes alike of summer heat and winter cold are tempered by those large bodies of water. There accordingly the peach, grape, and plum flourish ; orchards of apple and pear trees cover large areas; and, as seen from Queenston heights, the landscape looks like a garden. The vine is indigenous, and grows luxuriantly in the woods, as do all the smaller fruits.

But the energy of more recent settlers has greatly ex- tended cultivation. Bands of pioneers, lumber-men, and free-grant settlers have carried the axe and the plough into the Muskoka, Nipissing, and other northern districts ; and those regions are now accessible by steamboat and rail- way. The rich mineral regions of Lake Superior are also filling up with settlers. The town

~~of Prince Arthur's Landing, at the head of the lake, is now the terminus of the Canadian Pacific Railway, and already numbers fully 2000 inhabitants.~~

~~According to the census of 1881, 19,259,909 acres were in occupation, of which 11,294,109 were improved, 304,815 being in gardens and orchards, and 10,989,294 under cultivation in pasture or grain and root crops. Much of the land is well adapted for wheat, but in many places the crop has been grown too often. Barley, oats, and pease are common crops. Maize and tomatoes ripen well. Tobacco and sugar are profitable crops in some districts. The growth of flax is largely on the increase. As the soil in nearly every part of the province is admirably adapted for root crops, cattle are very largely kept, although there are no extensive grazing districts. The beef trade with England has become very extensive, and dairy-farming is largely prosecuted, especially the making of cheese, a large number of cheese factories being now established on the co-operative principle. Honey is an important source of revenue, about 1,200,000 ib being exported annually. There is a very large export of timber, including pines, oak, elm, hackmatack, birch, maple, walnut, and hickory. In the official returns of the exports of the different provinces some of the most valuable produce of Ontario is included in the shipments from the ports of Quebec. According to the trade and navigation tables for 1883, the total value of goods entered for consumption was $44,452,804, or £9,134,143, and of exports $32,890,019, or £6,758,242. The splendid natural water communications have been extensively supplemented by railways, of which there are about 4000 miles in operation. There are very extensive saw-mills at Ottawa. The manufacture of agricultural implements employs a large number of persons through- out the province, as does also that of machinery, sewing-machines, and edged tools. Among the principal other manufactures are woollen goods (especially tweeds), cottons, leather, paper, soap, and iron and hardware. According to the census returns the total capital invested in the various industries, not including agriculture but includ- ing cheese factories, was $80,950,847, the number of hands employed 118,308, and the total value of products**

~~$157,989,870.~~

Population.—The population in 1871 amounted to 1,620,851; in 1881 it had increased to 1,923,228. Of this, the population of twelve towns of upwards of 5000 inhabitants numbered in 1871 179,829. In 1881 the towns of a population exceeding 5000 had increased from twelve to nineteen, with inhabitants numbering 288,964, leaving the remaining population as occupants of the small towns, rural villages, and farms. At the end of 1883 the population was estimated at 1,935,130 (urban, orilli ; rural, 1,263,213).

Classified according to race, those of European origin were as follows in 1881 :—

\Uivtic ceerncreee eC eReeenr GOVP2OZeES Wisse ene caccbrusiccwsscense 2 Siar? i 535,835 | Scandinavian…..... il, 2a ..878,536 | Russians and Poles …... 787

US OES OAM ME CML ANSMecsegmee ceuinores «0s 687

...102,743 | Spanish and Portuguese 285

OP WER || JAW. aebedsansscocconsceoases 254

6,397

In addition to those from other provinces, the United

States, d&c., there were 15,325 Indians and 12,097 Africans. Classified according to religion, the principal denomina-

tions were in 1881 as follows :—

Methodists.....- 5 O75 080 | uthebans meyescsecsane: 37,901 Presbyterians …..... 417,479 | Congregationalists …... 16,340 Episcopalians …..... 366,529 | Dieciples'..... 010. 16,051 Roman Catholics …... S20sso0M Ouakerse …,.c0-e: seks se. 6,307 1 Bi) OUHISES) pococqenonondoone 106,680

The capital of the province is Toronto (population in 1881, 86,415); next in point of wealth, population, and general local advantages is the city of Hamilton (35,961) ; Ottawa (27,412) is the capital of the Dominion ; the

other large centres of population are London (19,746), Kingston (14,091). Next to these are Guelph, St Catherine's (on the Welland Canal), Brantford, Belleville, St Thomas, Stratford, Chatham, Brockville, Peterborough, Port Hope, Woodstock, Galt, and Lindsay, with populations ranging from 9890 to 5080. Cobourg (4957) is the seat of Victoria College.

Education.—One of the most distinctive features of the province is its system of public instruction, to which special attention has been given from an early period. So early as 1797 lands were set apart for educational pur- poses ; and there now exists a thoroughly efficient system of public schools, high schools and collegiate institutes, provincial college and university, under the administration of a minister of education as the head of this department. The management of all funds for general educational pur- poses, the provincial school inspectors, normal and model schools, &c., are under the direct charge of the educational department. Under its control the local government is vested in boards of school trustees elected by the rate- payers in rural districts or townships, villages, towns, counties, and cities, in accordance with a general system of municipal organization. Each local board determines the required rates to be levied for school purposes, purchases sites, builds schoolhouses, appoints teachers from among those duly qualified and holding Government certificates, and determines and pays their salaries. The councils of county municipalities have certain powers and duties con- ferred on them in reference to the townships, villages, and towns within each county. They also select duly qualified inspectors, appoint county boards for the exami- nation of third-class teachers, and levy a rate equivalent to the amount of the legislative educational grant to be expended in the payment of one-half of the salaries of their teachers and school inspectors. Collegiate institutes and high schools (in which a higher English course is taught, along with classics, mathematics, and French and German, to pupils admitted from the public schools on an entrance examination) are under the management of special boards of trustees appointed by city or county councils, with the power of requiring the council to raise all funds requisite for the efficient maintenance of the schools. Provincial normal schools for training teachers are estab- lished at Toronto and Ottawa, with model schools attached to them; and each county town maintains a model school for training third- class teachers. The school-system is thus mainly dependent on county and

local rates levied for the purpose by councils and school-boards elected by the people. This general system is modified in one respect. In any locality where Roman Catholics reside in sufficient numbers, they may require their share of the school funds

and rates to be applied for the maintenance of separate schools, under their own special school-board; but their teachers must hold the same Government certificates as others. The system includes provision for enforcing attendance of all children of school age, and, at the option of the trustees, making education free of all charge. The report of the minister of education for 1882 shows that there were in all 104 collegiate institutes and high schools, 501% public schools, and 193 Roman Catholic separate schools. The system thus thoroughly organized has be- come a model for the other provinces of the Dominion, with the exception of Quebec, where the Roman Catholic Church has the control of the public schools, and a sepa- rate school-system is allowed for the Protestant minority.

Upper Canada College, founded at Toronto on the model of the great public schools of England, was en-

dowed with public lands, from which it now derives an.

annual income of $15,000 in addition to its fees. The University of Toronto and University College are endowed with lands from the proceeds of which an annual income of upwards of $67,000 is derived. The university pre- scribes the requirements in all examinations, appoints ex- aininers, and confers degrees in the faculties of law, medi- cine, and arts. University College gives instruction in the departments of arts and science; but denominational and other colleges are admitted to affiliation, and their students can proceed to degrees in the university. University powers are also exercised by Victoria College, Cobourg, under the control of the Methodist Church ; Queen's Col- lege, Kingston, under the control of the Presbyterian Church ; and Trinity College, Toronto, and the Western University, London, both under the control of the Church of England.

~~Administration.—Like the other provinces of Canada, Ontario is under a lieutenant-governor, appointed for a term of four years by the governor-general in council ; the executive council numbers 6 ministers responsible to the local legislature or house of assembly, which consists of 88 members. The province is represented by 24 senators in the Dominion Senate, and by 92 members in the House of Commons. In addition to the counties and repre- sentative towns there are four provisional districts :— Algoma, Muskoka, Parry Sound, and Manitoulin.~~

~~History.—Lakes Ontario and Nipissing were visited by Cham- plain in 1615, and Lake Superior by traders in 1660. Perrot took possession of the district round Lake Huron in 1671. La Salle founded Niagara in 1679, and in the same year the lakes were explored to Lake Michigan. A fort was built at Toronto in 1749.~~

~~Forming originally part of French Canada, Ontario, then consist- ing of a few forts and trading ports, was conceded with that pro-~~

~~vince to Britain. Having previously formed part of the province of~~

~~Quebec, it was, under the name of Upper Canada, formed in 1791 into a distinct province, the first parliament being held at Niagara, 17th November 1792. During the war with the United States in 1812-15 the province was the seat of several conflicts. Political dissent prevailed in it from 1820 until, in 1837, it culminated in re- bellion. In 1867 Upper Canada, under the name of Ontario, was made the chief province of the Dominion of Canada. (D. W.)~~

~~ONTENIENTE, an old town of Spain, in the province of Valencia, stands on an elevation on the right bank of the Clariano or Onteniente, a sub-tributary of the J ucar, about 11 miles south-south-west from JAtiva, It has three churches, a good town-hall, and a palace of the dukes of Almodovar. Linen and woollen cloth, paper, brandy, and earthenware are manufactured ; and there is also some trade in the cereals, wine, and oil produced in the neigh- bouring district, which is very fertile. In 1877 the ayun- tamiento had a population of 11,727.~~

~~ONTOLOGY. See Mrrapuystc,~~

ONYX, a variety of agate consisting of layers of varie- gated chalcedony, arranged in parallel bands. The colours of the successive strata vary in different stones, but in the

typical onyx they are black and white. If one of the layers consists of the brown chalcedony known as "sard" or the red variety called "carnelian," the resulting stone is'termed a '"'sardonyx." It was probably this kind of stone that originally suggested the name "onyx" (from évvé, a nail), since the contrast between its layers remotely resembles that between the flesh-coloured part of the finger-nail and the white /unula at its root. It was the practice of certain Greek writers to restrict the word évv€ to the mineral in its natural condition, and to designate it, when worked into ornamental forms, by the diminutive évixvov. When an onyx presents a thin layer of whitish chalcedony spread over a black ground, the upper stratum often exhibits a bluish tinge, and collectors at the present day term such a stone a nicolo, evidently a corruption of the Italian diminu- tive onicolo, or "little onyx."

India has for ages yielded the finest onyxes, and hence

jewellers are in the habit of applying the expression " Ori-

ental onyx" to any stone distinguished by beauty of natural colour and by regularity of its layers. The true Indian stones are found as pebbles, associated with moss-agate,

jasper, and other silicious minerals in river-gravels, the

materials of which have been derived originally from the agate-nodules of trap-rocks, such as those which occur on an enormous scale in the Deccan. As far back as the first cen- tury the author of the Periplus of the Red Sea mentions the onyx among the products of Plythanz, a locality which may probably be identified with Paithon on the Godavari, whence agates are obtained even at the present day. He further states that the onyxes were taken down to Bary- gaza, the modern Broach, where a great trade in agates is still carriedon. It appears that the lapidaries of Broach and of

~~Cambay are now supplied with raw stones chiefly from Ratanpur, in the territory of the rajah of Rajpipla, where the gravels are systematically worked for the sake of their agates, jasper, onyx, and other silicious stones, See Ball's Zeonomic Geology of India, 188], p. 508.~~

~~The principal European locality for onyx is the neighbour- hood of Oberstein on the Nahe, a river which flows into the Rhine at Bingen. Near Idar, about two miles from Ober- stein, is a trap-hill called the Galgenberg, which for cen- turies was largely worked by means of tunnels driven into the hillside, in order to extract the nodules of agate which are embedded in the melaphyre forming the rock. When these nodules are broken open they occasionally yield a banded chalcedony which serves admirably for onyxes. The quarries have, however, been abandoned for many years in consequence of the discovery of larger and finer nodules in Uruguay, principally among the gravels of the Tarquarie and the Rio Pardo, These agates are still sent over in large quantities to Oberstein, where the cutting and polish- ing of such silicious stones form almost the sole industry of the locality. Coming from South America, they are commonly known in trade as "Brazilian agates"; and it is from these agates that most of our onyx is now obtained.~~

~~It is but rarely that the South-American agates present in their natural condition sufficient diversity of colour to constitute a good onyx, but for many years it has been the practice of the German agate-workers to colour these stones artificially. By this means an agate of dull colour may be rapidly converted into a deep-tinted onyx, the success- ive layers becoming sharply defined and vividly coloured during the process of staining. How this dyeing is effected has been described in the article AGatTs, vol. i. p. 277.~~

~~The onyx is largely employed for ring-stones, brooches, beads, and other ornamental objects; but its chief use is as a material for camei and intagli. By taking advantage of the different tints of the strata in this stone, a skilful artist is enabled to produce effects of a very pleasing character. Among the finest examples of ancient stone-~~

~~engraving which have descended to us are certain vessels in onyx, elaborately ornamented with cameo-work, such as the Cup of the Ptolemies, the Farnese Tazza, and the Mantuan or Brunswick Vase.~~

~~According to the Authorized Version of the Old Testament, the onyx formed the eleventh stone in the breast-plate of the high priest; but it is more probable that this stone (ane) is the beryl,~~

~~and that the onyx is nom, Exod. xxxix. 11 (E. V. diamond).~~

~~It is pointed out by the Rev. C. W. King that the earliest men- tion of the onyx as a precious stone is to be found in the inscrip- tions of the Parthenon, which date from the Peloponnesian War (431-404 B.c.), where a large engraved onyx is mentioned as an offering. It is to be specially noted that ancient writers applied the term évvé to two entirely different stones. While onc of them was the true onyx of modern mineralogists, as described above, the other was merely a stalagmitic variety of carbonate of lime, a mineral much softer, less precious, and much more widely distri- buted than the chalcedonic onyx, yet resembling it in so far as it also presents a parallel-banded structure. This mineral is still known as "onyx-marble" (see MARBLE, vol. xv. p. 529).~~

~~OODEYPORE, or Uparpur. See vol. v. p. 768.~~

~~OPAH (Lampris luna), a pelagic fish of the family Coryphenide or Dolphins. It differs from the typical dolphins (Coryphxna) materially in the shape of its body and the structure of the ventral fins. Instead of being elongate, the body is compressed and deep (more so than in the bream), and destitute of distinct scales. A long dorsal fin, high, and pointed anteriorly, runs along nearly the whole length of the back; the caudal is strong and deeply cleft. The ventral fins are broad paddles pointed at the extremity, and composed of numerous rays. This latter character is quite exceptional in the order of spiny- rayed fishes, but finds its explanation in the habits of the fish. A pelagic fish with so deep a body and go short a tail as those of the opah requires additional propelling power to be able to find or pursue its prey; and therefore to the ordinary function of the ventral fins, which in other fishes is confined to balancing the body in the water, has been superadded that of locomotion.~~

In its gorgeous colours the opah surpasses even the dolphins, all the fins being of a bright scarlet. It is only occasionally found near the shore; its real home is the Atlantic, especially near Madeira and the Azores, but many captures are recorded from Great Britain, Ireland, and Scandinavia ; it strays as far north as Iceland and New- foundland, and probably southwards to the latitudes of the coast of Guinea. It is rare in the Mediterranean. The name opah, which is now generally used, is derived from the statement of a native of the coast of Guinea who happened to be in England when the first specimen was exhibited (1750), and who thought he recognized in it a fish well known by that name in his native country. From its habit of coming to the surface in calm weather, show- ing its high dorsal fin above the water, it has also received the name of "'sun-fish," which it shares with Orthagoriscus and the basking shark. It grows to a length of 4 to 5 feet and a weight exceeding 100 ib, and is highly esteemed on account of the excellent flavour of its flesh.

OPAL, a natural form of hydrated silica, occurring in a '"'norodine" condition, 2.¢., it has apparently hardened from a gelatinous state. During consolidation it has suffered con- traction unequally in different directions ; and thus, though amorphous, it behaves in polarized light like a doubly-refracting body.

The beautiful variety known as noble or precious opal is remarkable for its play of iridescent colours. In the "harlequin opal" these rainbow-tints are flashed forth from small flakes, forming a kind of polychromatic mosaic, while in other kinds of opal the colours are disposed in broad bands or in irregular patches of comparatively large area. The tints vary with the angle at which the light is incident, and with the relative position of the stone

OPE oR

and the observer, so that by moving the opal a brilliant succession of flashes of fire may be obtained. Careful examination of a precious opal shows that these flashes are reflected from surfaces of irregular dimensions, situated at different depths in the translucent stone, and intersecting at various angles. The colours are not due to the presence of any material pigment in the mineral, but are optical effects due to certain structural peculiarities,

~~According to Sir David Brewster the colours of the opal may be referred to the presence of multitudes of micro- scopic pores arranged in parallel lines, the differences of tint arising from differences in the magnitude of these cavities. M. Descloizeaux, a very high authority on the optical properties of minerals, has also connected the iridescence of the opal with a regular system of internal cavities, but at the same time seems disposed to think that the colours bear some relation to the presence of a small quantity of organic matter in the mineral. Mr Crookes refers the colours to delicate strie or minute fissures lying in different planes within the opal. The whole subject has been exhaustively studied by H. Behrens, who explains the colour as due not to reflexion from the walls of cavities but to the interposition of very thin lamellz possessing a different index of refraction from that of the matrix in which they are embedded. He has detected in the opal a variety of microscopic enclosures, including flecks of hydrophane and delicate laminae of ferric oxide. On the whole, therefore, it seems likely that the iridescence of the opal is simply a case of the well- known colours of thin plates. A ray of light is reflected from the anterior surface of an attenuated film ; another ray, having traversed the lamina, is reflected from the posterior surface ; and the meeting of these rays differing in phase gives rise to interference phenomena.~~

~~The noble opal, in consequence of its brilliant iridescence, is valued as an ornamental stone. It is displayed to best advantage when cut en cabochon or with a convex surface. Pliny relates that the rich Roman senator Nonius was proscribed by Mark Antony for the sake of a magnificent opalus which he possessed, a stone as large as a hazel nut, and valued at 20,000 sesterces.~~

~~The precious opal occurs in veins in trachytic rocks, chiefly in Hungary. The best-known localities are Czerwenitza and Kaschau, but the most brilliantly-coloured stones are said to come from Kremnitz and Dubnik. It is found also in Honduras, principally near Gracias a Dios, where it occurs in like manner, forming veins in volcanic rocks. The American opal is generally less milky and less fiery than the Hungarian. Of late years some very brilliant opal has been sent into the market from Queensland. This is found as thin films spread over the walls of fissures in ironstone nodules, occurring in the neighbourhood of the Baracorra river. It is gener- ally too~~

thin to be cut en cabochon, but is largely used for camet, the iridescent layers showing to great advantage against the iron- stone matrix, which when polished assumes a dark-brown colour. The so-called "black opals," which have lately become popular, consist of this matrix penetrated in all directions by veins and spots of opal, forming a mixture sometimes known as "root of opal." Certain stones sold as black opals have evidently been modified in colour by staining or by heat.

See Brewster, 'On the Cause of the Colours in Precious Opal," Edin. New Phil. Journ., xxxviii., 1845, p. 885; Descloizeaux, Manuel de Minéralogie, vol. i., 1862, p. 22; Crookes, "On the Spectral Phenomena of Opals," Quart. Journ. Science, vi., 1869, p. 481; and especially Belirens, " Mikroskopische Untersuch- ungen tiber die Opale," Sitzwngsber. d. k. k. Akad. d. Wissenschaften, Wien: math.-naturwiss. Classe, 1xvi., 1871, p. 519. Fora mineralogical description of the varieties of opal see MINERALOGY, vol. xvi. p. 390.

OPENSHAW, a township of Lancashire, England, is situated on the Manchester and Stockport Canal, about 34 miles east from the Manchester exchange. The church of St Barnabas dates from 1838-39, and that of St Clement from 1871. The mechanics' institute (1872) comprises assembly rooms with a reading-room and library. The town possesses railway-carriage and locomotive works, engineering shops, iron-foundries, cotton-mills, dyeworks, chemical-works, and breweries. The area of the township is 579 acres; population in 1871, 11,108; in 1881, 16,153.

XVIT. — 98

778

OPERA. See Drama, vol. vii. p. 437, and Muste.

OPHICLEIDE is a brass musical instrument with keys. It belongs to that class of instruments in which the column of air is set in vibration by a trembling of the lips applied to the edge of a hemispherical cup at the extremity of the tube, called the '"'embouchure." The lips vibrate from the action of the breath and play the part of reeds ; the degree of pressure of the embouchure determines the rapidity of their vibration, on which,

concurrently with the length of the tube, depends the pitch, or relative position, of the sound produced.

The name "ophicleide" is compounded of two Greek words, dus, serpent, and xAeides, keys,—the instrument owing, in fact, its origin to the appli- y cation of keys to the serpent, a wind | instrument the invention of which is generally attributed to Edme Guil- laume, canon of Auxerre, somewhere about 1590, He contrived it to serve as a bass to the zinken, instruments now entirely obsolete.

The serpent, represented by fig. 1, is composed of two pieces of wood, hollowed out and cut to the desired contour. 'They are joined together by gluing so as to form a tube, and are bound with leather to ensure solid- ity. The upper extremity ends with a bent brass tube or crook, to which the mouthpiece is applied. The tube is pierced laterally with six holes, the first three of which are covered by three fingers of the right hand, and the others by the corresponding fingers of the left hand. When all the holes are thus closed the instrument will produce the following sounds, of which the first is funda- mental and the rest are harmonics :—

——————e =]

ct on ee ve a ;

r ¢ ££ «4 a eo

The instrumentalist fills up the gaps in the diatonic or natural scale by the successive opening of the lateral holes after the manner practised in fingering the flute. The serpent remained in its primitive form for nearly two centuries, and then only it was attempted to improve it by adding keys. From the time of its origin it had served principally as an accompaniment to the liturgical chanting, but towards the middle of the 18th century it began to be employed as a bass for military music, and, notwithstanding its numerous imperfections, it was but slowly given up.

Fig. 2 represents a curious serpent made, about 1830, by L. Embach and Co., Amsterdam. The six lateral holes are here placed more rationally along the tube, but, being beyond the reach of the fingers, they are covered by

open keys, besides which the instrument also bears six closed keys for the following tones :—

Fig. 1.—The Serpent.

The primitive form of the serpent was most inconvenient, and it was a musician named Régibo, belonging to the orchestra of the church of St Pierre at Lille, who, about 1780, first thought of giving it the shape of a bassoon (Gerber, Lesxicon der Tonkiinstler, Leipsic, 1790). The merit of this innovation was rapidly recognized in England and Germany. Still to follow Gerber (Lexicon, 1812), one Frichot, who was established in London, published in 1800 a description of an instrument, entirely of brass, manu- factured by J. Astor, which he claimed as his invention,

calling it the basshorn, but which was no other in principle than the new serpent of Régibo. It only made its way to France and Belgium after the passage of the allied armies in 1815. We here reproduce (fig. 3) the drawing of a wooden serpent with bell and mouthpiece of brass, after a scale published by B. Schott of Mainz, in 1816. The English brass basshorn was designated on the Continent the English or the Russian basshorn, the "serpent / anglais," or the " basson russe." Under |fff this last name all instruments of the |§| form, whether of wood or brass, were later (. confounded in France and Bel- gium. The ' bas- gon russe" re- mained in great vogue until the appearance of the ophicleide, to dis- appear with it in the complete re- volution brought about by the in- vention of pistons.

The invention of the ophicleide is generally but falsely attributed to Alexandre Frichot, a professor of music at Lisieux, department of Calvados, France. The instru- ment, which the inventor called " basse-trompette," was approved of as early as 13th November 1806 by a com- mission composed of professors of the Paris Conservatoire, but the patent bears the date 31st December 1810. The ""basse-trompette," which Frichot in his specification had at first, in imitation of the English basshorn, called 'basse cor," was, like the English instrument, entirely of brass, and had, like it, six holes; it only differed in a more favourable disposition brought about by the curvings of the tube, and by the application of four crooks which permitted

~~the instrument to be tuned "in C low pitch and C high pitch for military bands, in C¥ for churches, and in D for concert use." The close relationship between the two instruments suggests the question whether this was the Frichot who worked with Astor in London in 1800.~~

~~The first idea of adding keys to instruments with cupped mouthpieces, unprovided with lateral holes, with the aim of filling up some of the gaps between the notes of the harmonic scale, goes back, according to Gerber (Lexicon of 1790), to Kélbel, a hornplayer in the Russian imperial band about 1754, Weidinger, trumpeter in the Austrian imperial band, improved upon this first attempt, and applied it in 1800 to the trumpet. But the honour be- longs to Joseph Halliday, bandmaster of the Cavan militia, of being the first to conceive, in 1810, the disposition of a certain number of keys along the tube, setting out from its lower extremity, with the idea of producing by their successive or simultaneous opening a chromatic scale throughout the extent of the instrument. The bugle- horn was the object of his reform; the only scale of which, he says, in the preamble of his patent, "until my invention~~

~~contained but five tones, viz., a~~

~~My improvements on that instrument are five keys, to be used by the performer according to the annexed scale, which, with its five original notes, render it capable of pro- ducing twenty-five separate tones in regular progression." Fig. 4 represents the keyed bugle of Joseph Halliday.~~

~~Fia. 8.—Wooden Serpent.~~

~~Fig, 2.—Serpent by Embach.~~

~~OPHICLEIDE~~

~~It was not until 1815 that the use of the new instru- ment spread upon the Continent. We find in the account-books of a Belgian maker, Tuerlinckx of Mechlin, that his first supply of a bugle-horn bears the date of 25th March 1815, and it was made "aen den Heer Muldener, lieutenant in het régiment duc d'Y ork."~~

The acoustic principle inaugurated by Halliday consisted in binding together by chromatic degrees

the second and third harmonics, ——— to iil — Fig. 4.—Keyed a Bugle, = He attained it, as we have just seen, by the help

of five keys. The principle once discovered, it became easy to extend it to instruments of the largest size, of which the com- pass, like the "basson russe," began at the lowest sound. It

was simply necessary to bind the fundamental ———=

a ed to the next harmonic sound — ——— by a larger number

of keys. This was done in 1817 by Jean Hilaire Asté, known as Halary, a professor of music and instrument-maker at Paris, We find the description of the instruments for which he sought a patent in the Rap- port de Académie Royale des Beaux-Arts de UInstitut de France, meeting of 19th July 1817. These instruments were three in number :—(1) the clavi-tube, a keyed trumpet; (2) the quinti-tube, or quinti-clave ; (3) the ophicleide, a keyed serpent. The clavi-tube was no other than the bugle-horn slightly modified in some details of construction, and

reproduced in the different tonalities Ab, F, Eb, D, C, Bb, A, and AD, The quinti-tube had nearly the form of a bassoon, and was, in the first instance, armed with eight keys,

and constructed in two tonalities, F and ED. This was the instrument afterwards named 'alto ophicleide." The ophicleide, of which we reproduce a drawing (fig. 5), had the same form as the quinti-tube. It was at first ad- justed with nine or ten keys, and the number was carried on to twelve,— each key to give a semitone (additional patent of 16th August 1822). The ophicleide or bass of the harmony was made in C and in Bb, the contra- bass in F and in Eb.)

It is certain that from the point of view of invention Halary's labours had only secondary importance; but, ifthe principle of keyed chro- matic instruments with cupped mouthpiece ? goes back to Halliday, it was

Halary's merit to know how to take advantage of the prin- ciple in extending it to instruments of diverse tonalities, in group- ing them in one single family, that of the bugles, in so complete a manner that the improvements of modern manufacture have not widened its limits either in the grave or the acute direction. Keyed chromatic wind instruments made their way rapidly ; to their in- troduction into military full or brass bands we can date the regenera- tion of military music. After pistons had been invented some forty years, instruments with keys could still reckon their partisans.

1 The report of the Académie des Beaux-Arts on the subject of this invention shows a strange misconception of it, which it is interesting to recall. "As to the two instruments which M. Halary designs under the names of ' quinti-clave' and ' ophicleide,' they bear a great resemblance to those submitted to the Academy in the sitting of the 11th of March 1811 by M. Dumas, which he designed under the names of 'basse et contrebasse guerriéres.'. . . The opinion of our commission on the quinti-clave and ophicleide is that M. Halary can only claim the merit of an improvement and not that of an entire invention ; still, for an equitable judgment on this point, we should compare the one with the other, and this our commission cannot do, not having the instruments of M. Dumas at our disposal." This is what the commission ought to have had, but it would have sufficed had they referred to the report of the sittings of 6th and 8th April, in which it is clearly explained that the instruments presented by M. Dumas were bass clarinets (Moniteur Universel of 19th April 1811).

2 We designedly omit the employment of the word "brass"' to qualify these instruments. The substance which determines the form of a column of air is demonstrably indifferent for the timbre or quality of tone so long as the sides of the tubes are equally elastic and rigid.

Fic, 5.—Ophicleide of Halary.

Now these have utterly disappeared and pistons or rotary cylinders remain absolute masters of the situation.

~~The invention of the piston is due to Stoelzel, a Silesian, and Bliimel of Waldenburg (patent of 12th April 1818). It was first signalized by G. B. Bierey, leader of the National Theatre of Breslan, in No. 18 of the Allgemeine musikalische Zeitung (Leipsic, 1815). The inventors first applied their discovery to the horn, trumpet, and trombone, and this application consisted of only two pistons, or "ventile," as they called them. We have seen up to this point that chromatic intervals were produced in instruments with cupped mouthpiece by shortenings of the tube by means of lateral openings. It is evident that a column of air so cut off must be very inferior in sonorousness to one vibrating from the mouthpiece to the ex- tremity of the bell ; this has been the capital defect of keyed instru- ments. Stoelzel and Bliimel proceeded in contrary fashion: they produced chromatic intervals by lengthening the tube, just as in the trombone with slides. They introduced contrivances the move- ment of which permitted an instantaneous communication between the principal tube and two additional tubes, lowering the instru- ment respectively a tone and a half-tone, or by their simultaneous employment one tone and a half. As these combinations did not suffice to peng a complete chromatic scale, a third piston with an additional tube of a tone and a half was soon afterwards added by the inventors.~~

~~Suppose an instrument giving without pistons the harmonics~~

~~S— = = = ey~~

~~by the union of the first and third,~~

~~us by joining all three pistons,~~

~~=~~

~~—a~~

~~Here is the whole theory of the fingering of these instruments @ pistons, of which the compass downwards is only bounded by the first harmonic.~~

~~A serious defect exists, however, in these piston instruments,—the want of truth of intonation whenever a note is produced by more than one piston.~~

Let us take, for ex-

ample, the low G as This note

is produced, as we have just seen, by the union of the first and third pistons ; in employing the first piston the pitch of the instrument is lowered a major second, and to produce the lowering to a fourth (two tones and a half) a further lowering of a minor third (one tone and a half) is necessary. Now the additional pipe to produce this lowering from C is neces- sarily proportionately shorter than what is required for a pipe already lowered a tone by the employment of the first piston. It there- fore results, as will be seen from this special case, that all notes produced by several pistons at one time are too high in pitch.

The invention of Stoelzel and Bliimel, like all new ideas, was not accepted without opposition ; notwithstanding its crushing superiority it had a lively struggle to sustain, and it is only within the last thirty years that the system of keys has been

Fic. 6.—Ophicleide with pistons.

Diseases of the con- junctiva,

finally superseded by pistons. We close this article with the curious representation (fig. 6) of an ophicleide with pistons manufac- tured about 1886 by C. Mahillon of Brussels, then at the beginning of his career. (V. M.)

OPHIR (pix), a place famous among the Hebrews

for its gold from the time of Solomon, whose Red Sea fleet, in conjunction with the Phoenicians, went to Ophir and brought thence a vast treasure of gold with precious stones and "almug" wood (1 Kings ix. 28, x. 11). It is quite plain from Gen. x. 29 that Ophir belonged to southern Arabia, from which the Phcenicians still derived gold and precious stones in the time of Ezekiel (xxvii. 22). All attempts to place Ophir in India or on the east coast of Africa (Sofdla) are at variance with Gen. x. It is true that Indian products

~~were also brought to Solomon (1 Kings x. 22), but these are not said to have come from Ophir, and therefore we cannot even be sure that Ophir was the emporium where the Indian trade and the Western met, as they did in southern Arabia in later times,—unless, indeed, the "almug" or "algum" wood is, as has been conjectured, the Indian sandalwood.~~

~~'OPHITES. See Gnosrics.~~

~~OPHTHALMOLOGY. The scientific development of the diagnosis and treatment of diseases of the eye belongs to the last hundred years. Helmholtz's invention of the ophthalmoscope is little more than thirty years old. Our knowledge of the refraction and accommodation of the eye has been worked out by Airy, Young, Sanson, Purkinje, Donders, Sneller, Helmholtz. Many of the major opera- tions have been perfected by Von Graefe and his followers in quite recent times. Finally, the important relations of ophthalmology to general medicine have been worked out principally by Hutchinson, Hughlings Jackson, Clifford Allbut, and Gowers within the last few years.~~

~~Acute Catarrhal Conjunctivitis begins with a feeling of stiffness of the lids, and pain as if from a particle of grit in the eye. The secretion increases, is at first watery, and is afterwards yellow and muco-purulent, collecting at the inner canthus and gumming the eyelids together. The conjunctiva, especially that on the lids, is reddened, and in severe cases may be so swollen as to overlap the cornea. The eye is generally well in a fortnight. The disease is caused by cold winds, and by irritating particles, and in one form is undoubtedly contagious. The eye must be left uncovered, bathed occasionally with an astringent lotion, and at night some ointment should be applied to the edges of the lids to prevent their adhesion and consequent reten- tion of the secretion.~~

~~Chronic conjunctivitis may result from the above, or be due to the irritation of dust. It occurs frequently from overstrain of hypermetropic eyes. The symptoms are~~

~~'similar, but less severe, and require similar treatment with~~

~~correction of the hypermetropia where present.~~

Purulent Ophthalmia) (ophthalmia of the newly born) is caused by contact of pus from a gonorrheal or leucorrheal discharge or from another eye similarly affected. It is one of the forms'of Egyptian ophthalmia. In children both eyes are generally affected ; in adults usually one. The symptoms begin, from one to three days after infection, with a watery discharge, which increases rapidly in amount, and becomes yellow and purulent. The conjunctiva becomes greatly congested and swollen, bleeding readily. The lids are so stiffened with infiltration that they can hardly be separated. When they are slightly opened quantities of pus escape. There is great pain in the eye, fever, and sleeplessness. The cornea is much endangered ; it may be perforated, may slough wholly or in part, and the eyeball may be destroyed. If one eye only is affected the other must

i ' The term 'ophthalmia " is now limited to conjunctival inflamma- ions.

be protected. Locally the greatest cleanliness is necessary, and the discharge must be constantly removed. Once daily the conjunctiva should be touched with a strong solution of nitrate of silver, and in the interval frequently bathed with astringent solutions. Recently, powdered iodoform has been much recommended as a local applica- tion. In adults leeching the temple and the continuous application of ice to the eye may be needed. The attend- ants must be warned of the danger of conveying infection to their own eyes.

Diphtheritic Conjunctivitis is characterized by the forma- tion of a yellowish false membrane on the conjunctiva, which becomes thickened and almost solid from infiltration, and by great liability to sloughing of the cornea. It occurs most frequently in North Germany, attacking weakly children during epidemics of ordinary diphtheria, and, like it, often proves fatal by exhaustion. It should be treated by the internal administration of tonics and stimu- lants, and by the loeal use of ice, antiseptic lotions, and the strictest attention to cleanliness.

Chronic Granular Conjunctivitis is a contagious disease arising from prolonged overcrowding under bad sanitary conditions. It is thus specially common among the Jewish and Irish poor, and among workhouse children. The mucous membrane of the lids becomes reddened, thickened, and studded over with small firm "granulations," like boiled sago grains. The

friction of these bodies produces a vas- cular opacity of the cornea (pannus), at first limited to the upper half of the cornea, but in bad cases involving its whole surface. There is considerable pain and discharge, and the eyelids are kept half-shut. There is a peculiar liability to acute exacerbations. The conjunctiva finally shrinks to a dense white scar, which curves the tarsal cartilage inwards, and brings the edge of the lids and the eyelashes to rub on the cornea, and increase its opacity.

It must be persistently treated by strong astringent or caustic applications to the conjunctiva. The pannus, as a rule, disappears with the granulations that caused it. If not, a zone of conjunctiva round the cornea may be divided ; or, as a last resort, the eye may be inoculated with pus from a purulent case, All acute exacerbations must be treated by soothing applications. Incurving of the tarsal cartilage and displacement of the lashes need special surgical operations, which are more or less successful.

If a case occurs in a school or in barracks it must be at once isolated.

Pterygium is a triangular thickening of the exposed part of the conjunctiva, which may or may not be vascular. Its apex is towards the cornea, over which it tends to grow, and thus to interfere with vision; otherwise it causes no irritation. Pterygium is a disease of middle life and of warm climates. If it cause no deformity or interference with sight it should be left alone. If large it may be dissected up from the apex and cut off, or transplanted into another part of the conjunctiva, where it will shrivel up.

The diseases of the cornea are of extreme importance, Diseases from their great frequency and from the fact that a small of the lesion may seriously affect the perfect transparency and °°!" regularity of curvature so necessary for clear vision.

Chronic Interstitial Keratitis attacks young persons, nearly all of whom, as was first pointed out by HIutchin- son, can be shown to be the subjects of hereditary syphilis, and who present some or all of the following physio-gnomical characters :—a depressed bridge of the nose, scars at the angle of the mouth, and notched and peg- shaped central upper incisor teeth. The disease affects both eyes, one generally some time before the other. It begins by the appearance of cloudy spots in the cornea, which spread until the

whole cornea has a ground-glass appearance, not uniform throughout but with denser

OPereaatLMW0L 0G Y

opacities here and there. The corneal surface is "steamy." The ciliary zone of vessels, immediately round the cornea, is congested, and iritis isa frequent complication. Asa rule pain and photophobia are not great. The cornea seldom clears in less than a year, and even then only im- perfectly. Internally, minute doses of mercurials, or where there is decided struma the syrup of the iodide of iron should be given. Locally, atropine should be used to prevent iritis. As the cornea clears, some stimulant, as the dusting of fine calomel powder, may hasten the absorp- tion of the exudation.

Phiyctenular Ophthalmia occurs in strumous or weakly children, especially after hooping-cough or measles. There is great intolerance of light, the slightest attempt to separate the lids causing a gush of tears. The patient is generally kept in bed in a dark room and buries his head in the pillow to exclude the light. The conjunctiva is reddened generally, but spots of localized congestion are seen near little greyish or yellowish elevations on the conjunctiva, or on the cornea near its margin, These papules or pustules may succeed each other in crops for a long time. On the cornea they give rise to vascular ulcers, which may be single or so numerous as to constitute a condition of pannus. As they heal the vessels shrink, and a small white speck is left to mark the seat of the ulcer. As regards treatment, the patient must have a shade or dark glasses, and be sent out of doors daily when the weather permits. Tonics and nourishing food are required. Locally,'so long as the secretion is watery atropine must be used; later, mild astringent lotions ; and finally, to aid the healing of the ulcer and clearing of the residual opacities, some mercurial ointment or calomel powder should be applied.

Ulcers of the Cornea.—Ulcers occur under many forms, to which very various names have been given. All the forms have certain symptoms in common with each other and with the above diseases. There is great pain in and about the eye, great intolerance of light (especially in super- ficial ulcers), and congestion of the ciliary zone. They generally leave an opacity, which greatly interferes with sight if in the centre of the pupil. In severe

~~inflammatory or suppurative ulceration the above symptoms are well marked ; the base of the ulcer is greyish in colour, its edges irregular, and the surrounding cornea infiltrated. It ex- tends superficially and deeply, and may cause hypopyon (pus in the base of the anterior chamber), and even per- foration of the cornea, or iritis. The weak ulcer has little pain or congestion, and seems simply a loss of substance at one part of the cornea. It causes distorted or multiple images. Its existence is a sign of lowered health, and calls for local stimulation and tonic treatment. The small central ulcer of children is a small greyish funnel-shaped spot in the centre of the pupil, with little pain or congestion. It sometimes goes on to abscess, but usually heals quickly. The senile or serpiginous ulcer is a very serious form. There is great pain and photophobia, and unless treated the ulcer gradually eats its way across the cornea, or extends at its margins so as to isolate the central part of the cornea.~~

~~The treatment of corneal ulcers varies very much with the type of disease and with its several stages. In the acute cases the eyes should be shaded, sometimes bandaged ; atropine applied locally allays pain ; eserine is said to act similarly by reducing tension, and is preferable where con- junctival discharge is aggravated by atropine. The weak ulcer should be touched with a nitrate of silver solution, the senile bathed with a quinine lotion. Iftheinflammatory ulcer be not checked by atropine, and if hypopyon increase, tension may be diminished by incising the cornea at its margin, or through the base of the ulcer (Saemisch), or by performing iridectomy.~~

~~Abscess of Cornea may result from injury or ill-health.~~

~~781~~

~~It begins as a yellow spot in the substance of the cornea, with some surrounding haze. It may become absorbed, or burst forwards and be converted into an inflammatory ulcer, or backwards, giving rise to hypopyon. If hot fomentations and atropine do not check it, it must be treated surgically like the inflammatory ulcer,~~

~~Staphyloma of the Cornea is a bulging forward in whole or in part of the new tissue which replaces the cornea after ulceration or sloughing. It has a bluish or greyish colour, and may be slight in amount, or so great as to keep~~

the eyelids widely separated and cause great irrita- tion. When there is no irritation it may be left alone; when it is increasing an iridectomy may check its progress, When it is large and causes irritation the eye may be removed entirely, or in part so as to leave a stump on which to fit an artificial eye.

Conical Cornea occurs principally in young women whose health has been much reduced from some chronic cause. The cornea becomes thinned in the centre, and is slowly bulged forward. The condition, which is easily recognized from the glistening appearance and the conical

'form of the cornea, causes great myopia, which can be only

imperfectly remedied by biconcave lenses obscured except at a small central aperture or slit. In severe cases opera- tion may be of some service.

Keratitis Punctata is usually secondary to some deeper- seated disease, ¢.g., iritis, choroiditis, or sympathetic ophthalmitis. Minute greasy-looking dots are deposited at the back of the lower part of the cornea, generally arranged as a triangle with its apex upwards. The ocular tension and amount of aqueous humour increase. The treatment is that of the causal disease, usually iodide of potassium or a mercurial, with atropine locally.

Arcus Senilis is a whitish crescent or ring just inside the corneal margin. It is a senile change, a fatty degen- eration of the corneal tissue, not necessarily accompanied by fatty degeneration elsewhere. It does not influence the healing of corneal wounds in any way.

In Acute Iritis the iris changes in colour and its fibres Diseases lose their definition and look muddy. The pupil becomes of the small, irregular in outline, and sluggish or immobile when ™

stimulated by light. There is a pink zone of congestion round the cornea (the ciliary zone). The aqueous humour is turbid ; it may contain blood, and even pus. There is more or less pain in the eye and temple, which is usually worst at night ; there is intolerance of light, great increase in the secretion of tears, and impairment of sight. In most cases lymph escapes from the posterior surface of the iris and fixes its margin to the lens at one or more

points, or all round, and may even occlude the pupil. In some cases the exudation is entirely serous and no ad- hesions are formed (serous iritis). Iritis is one of the symptoms of secondary syphilis; it is caused by rheu- matism, by ulcers and diffuse inflammations of cornea, by injuries to the cornea, iris, and lens, and forms part of nearly all cases of sympathetic ophthalmitis. The syphilitic form usually involves both eyes; it produces much exudation and often little yellow nodules, and rarely relapses. Rheumatic iritis is generally serous, unilateral, and recurs frequently. Atropine must be freely applied locally to prevent the formation of adhesions, or to break down such as may have already formed. The temple may be leeched, and opiates given if pain is severe. In the syphilitic forms calomel must be given ; in the rheumatic alkalis and colchicum. The eyes must be protected by a shade. Traumatic iritis should be treated by continuous cold and leeching. If it is due toa swollen lens, the latter must be removed. After the disease is past the pupil is frequently irregular from adhesions (synechiz) of the iris to the lens-capsule. If adhesions have been broken down

Diseases of the ciliary region,

small brown specks will be seen in the pupil. The whole free edge (exclusion), or the whole posterior surface (total posterior synechiz), may adhere to the lens-capsule, and the pupil may be completely covered with a film of lymph (occlusion). These three last conditions are apt to cause secondary glaucoma.

Coloboma of the Iris is a congenital defect in the iris. The defect is always in the lower part, and gives the pupil a balloon shape. It may or may not be accompanied by a similar defect in the choroid and retina.

From the intimate association of their vascular supply, the ciliary body, iris, cornea, sclerotic, and choroid are frequently affected together. Diseases in this region all agree in their tendency to relapse frequently during a very chronic course, and to involve separate patches.

Sclerotitis (episcleritis) forms a low painful swelling, of a peculiar rusty colour, under the conjunctiva in the ciliary region. It lasts for months, with frequent relapses. The subjects of this disease are mostly rheumatic or anemic women. Internally, iodide of potassium is some- times useful. If that fail small doses of mercury should be given. Locally, atropine, blistering the temple, or massage of the swelling through the upper lid may be tried.

Irido-cyclitis, inflammation of the iris and ciliary body, is characterized by congested patches of a violet colour in the ciliary region, cloudy areas in the cornea, and attacks of iritis with much plastic exudation. There is great pain and intolerance of light. It relapses frequently, each attack leaving more cloudiness of cornea and more iritic adhesions, till ultimately the sclerotic presents a bluish bulging in the ciliary region (ciliary staphyloma), the cor- nea is opaque, its curvature irregular, and the sight gone.

Lrido-chororditis resembles a mild attack of iritis ; there is little pain or photophobia, Small deposits form on the back of the cornea (keratitis punctata). Recent choroid- itis and sometimes opacities in the vitreous may be seen with the ophthalmoscope if the pupil be clear. This also relapses frequently, with the formation of much iritic adhe- sion, and sometimes of secondary glaucoma. This occurs mostly in delicate young persons, and generally involves both eyes. The treatment consists of atropine locally, disuse of the eyes, and tonics with iodide of potassium internally ; only in mild cases is a good result obtained. The iritic exudation is generally too plastic to be absorbed.

Wounds or Diseases in the Ciliary Region are extremely liable to involve the other eye sympathetically. There are two affections of very different moment. In sympa- thetic wrritation the eye is tender and irritable, cannot bear a bright light, and is easily fatigued by continued strain of the accommodation, as in reading or other close work. This condition usually yields speedily when the other eye is removed, which should be advised without hesitation. Sympathetic inflammation is of much more serious mo- ment. It may begin quite insidiously, or with acute pain and intolerance of light. Once begun, it becomes an inde- pendent disease, little influenced by treatment directed to the exciting eye, and usually ending at last in irrepar- able blindness. The symptoms are deposits on the back of the cornea

(keratitis punctata), violet-coloured ciliary congestion, often great tenderness of the ciliary region, the iris muddy and in severe cases buff-coloured, and with many large blood-vessels on its surface. Extensive iritic adhesions form which' cannot be absorbed. The process is an irido-cyclitis or irido-choroiditis. It may be set up two months or many years after the injury; the eye 18 never safe. Treatment must evidently be mainly preventive. All blind eyes liable to cause sympathetic inflammation should be at once removed. If some vision be left in the wounded eye, and the patient can be kept

under observation, it may be left,—the patient being warned of the danger to the other eye. The inflam- mation once arisen, the exciting eye, if blind, must be removed ; but not if there be any sight in it, as it may be eventually the better eye of the two. The patient must be kept in a dark room and not allowed to use his eyes. Atropine solution must be applied locally. After the in- flammation is quite quiescent removal of the lens with a portion of the iris may be of use in giving an artificial pupil.

Cataract.—Cataract is an opacity of the crystalline Diseases lens. It is due to some alteration in the structure and of the relationship of its fibres, as the result either of some senile seca change or defect of development, of local interference with . its nutrition (as in glaucoma), of some general diseases such as diabetes, or of local injury to the lens or its capsule. For practical purposes all cataracts are classified under three categories. (A) They may be hard or soft; below the age of thirty-five, and in diabetes of any age, cataracts are soft. (B) They may be general or partial, according to the amount of lens involved in the opacity. General cataract may be nuclear (beginning from the centre) or cortical (spreading inward from the periphery); or both conditions may coexist. Partial cataract may be (1) lamellar, where one or several of the concentric layers in an otherwise transparent lens becomes opaque. This form is often congenital. It is said to be frequently caused by infantile convulsions. (2) Pyramidal cataract is a small white spot on the lens-capsule in the centre of the pupil. This is the result of corneal perforation in purulent oph- thalmia. The cornea falls against the lens-capsule when the aqueous humour is evacuated, and becomes adherent to it. The aqueous, refilling after the healing of the per- foration, tears away the cornea and leaves the spot of lymph on the capsule.

~~(3) In posterior polar cataract the opacity begins at the posterior pole of the lens. It indicates deep-seated disease. (C) Cataract may be primary or secondary, according as it arises in an eye otherwise healthy or depends on some other disease in it. Cataracts arising from injury to the lens are called traumatic.~~

~~Symptoms and Treatment of Cataract.—Vision becomes gradually impaired. If the cataract be small and central, vision improves in a dull light or when the eyes are shaded. On ophthalmoscopic examination (see below) the opaque parts appear either as dark striz converging towards the centre or as a dark central mass. The fundus, if visible, appears red. An attempt should be made to ascertain if it is healthy. On oblique illumination by a convex lens the opaque parts now appear white and the rest of the pupil black. When the cataract is ripe the pupil is filled by a homogeneous pearly-white or amber-coloured opacity. The rest of the eye is healthy if the pupil reacts to light, and the patient can tell the direction of a candle-flame at four feet distance. Asa palliative atropine may be used if it be found to improve vision. To remove the cataract operation is required. Operation is undesirable in pyra- midal, secondary, and immature cataract, and usually if, while the cataract in one eye is ripe, the other eye remains good, unless the patient specially desires the operation.~~

~~The Operation.—In the soft cataract of infancy, youth, and diabetes the needle operation should be chosen. The pupil having been dilated by atropine, a fine needle is passed through the cornea near its margin, and lacerates the lens-capsule freely. The lens, acted on by the aqueous humour, swells up and gradually dissolves,—the process of solution taking from two to three months, and generally needing one or two repetitions of the needling. In hard cataracts the lens must be extracted entire. The follow- ing is the most usual operation. With a narrow knife an incision is made through the upper part of the cornea at its junction with the sclerotic, in length somewhat less~~

~~Glau- coma.~~

~~OPHTHALMOLOGY~~

than half the corneal circumference. A portion of iris is drawn through the corneal incision and cut off (iridectomy). Then the lens-capsule is lacerated by a needle. The lens is forced out of the eye by gentle pressure on the sclerotic below. All fragments of lens-substance are carefully removed, the edges of the incision are brought together, the eyes bandaged, and the patient kept in bed for a few days. Ninety-five per cent. of the cases do well, the others going wrong from hemorrhage into the eye, iritis, or sup-puration of the eye. In lamellar cataract two courses are open. If dilatation of the pupil by atropine enables the patient to see clearly, the removal of a portion of iris (artificial pupil) will be sufficient ; if not, the solution of the lens must be effected by the needle operation. In traumatic cataract the pupil is kept dilated by atropine to prevent iritis. If severe iritic or glaucomatous symptoms arise an incision must be made in the cornea, and the softened lens removed along a grooved scoop or by suction.

After the cataract is removed strong convex glasses must be worn for near vision and a somewhat weaker pair for distant vision. Their use must not be allowed till at least two months after the operation.

Dislocation of the Lens may arise from a blow or spon- taneously. The lens may pass into the anterior or posterior chamber. If in the posterior chamber it may be invisible, but the iris will be tremulous and the refraction very hyper- metropic. If the dislocation be partial the edge of the lens may be seen with the ophthalmoscope as a dark curved line. The lens generally becomes opaque. It may, and often does, cause glaucoma.

Glaucoma is a most serious disease, characterized in all its forms by increased tension of the eyeball, impairment of sight, and ultimate irremediable blindness. Its course is usually chronic, lasting sometimes many years ; sometimes absolute blindness comes on in a few hours or days.

In the chronic form the earliest symptoms are rapid onset of presbyopia, making it necessary to change the spectacles frequently, and attacks of mistiness of sight, during which artificial lights appear surrounded by coloured rings. Gradually sight is impaired and the field of vision contracted. The pupil is dilated and sluggish ; the cornea may be "steamy" and insensitive, the anterior chamber shallow. Large veins pierce the

sclerotic a little way from the corneal margin. The lens may have a greenish hue (hence the name), or may become opaque. The optic disk, if visible ophthalmoscopically, is "cupped" or hollowed, and in advanced cases also atrophied. The retinal vessels bend abruptly in rising over its edge, or in deep cupping seem to have their course interrupted for a short distance. The arteries pulsate either spontaneously or on slight press- ure on the eyeball. The tension (ascertained by pressing the eyeball against the floor of the orbit) is variously increased. This form may be painless throughout, and the gradual impairment of vision may lead to the fatal error of a diagnosis of cataract. More usually there are occa- sional acute attacks. Acute glaucoma comes on suddenly ; there is much pain in the eye and temple and congestion of the globe; increase of tension and loss of sight are extremely rapid.

All the symptoms depend on the increased tension of the intraocular fluids. The loss of sight and contraction of the visual field result from compression of the retina and its vessels. Pressure on the ciliary nerve paralyses the iris and the accommodation (hence the presbyopia), and renders the cornea insensitive. The anterior chamber is shallowed by the lens being driven forwards, and the disk is cupped by being driven backwards through the lamina cribrosa, the least resistent part of the sclerotic. The veins of the sclerotic are enlarged in order to relieve the ob-

structed vasa vorticosa. 'The explanation of the increase of tension is not yet complete. In most cases it is probably due to deficient removal of fluid. Normally this takes place through the suspensory ligament of the lens, round the free edge of the iris, leaving the anterior chamber at the angle of junction of the iris and cornea. Block- ing of any part of this channel (most often at the above angle) would cause increase in the tension. Increased blood-supply is also in many cases a cause. Glaucoma is most common after forty. It may be either primary or secondary to some disease or injury of the eye.

Eserine applied locally has proved useful in some early cases of glaucoma. Iridectomy—that is, the removal of a portion of iris through an incision in the cornea—is the most successful mode of checking the disease. In

secondary glaucoma the treatment must be directed to the cause, if it is removable.

Muscx Volitantes.—The floating bodies, specks, &c., so Diseases

often complained of are usually of no importance. occur most frequently in myopic eyes. Pathological muscc, however, depend on the presence of opacities in the vitre- ous, detectable by the ophthalmoscope. They are of very various sizes and shapes, from large masses, as in recent hemorrhage, to strings, specks, knotted bodies, or finely sparkling particles (cholesterin), or as a diffuse cloud or haze obscuring the retina. From the rate at which the bodies move an opinion may be formed of the fluidity of the vitreous. Disease of the vitreous is usually secondary to disease of some of the surrounding parts, as in high de- grees of myopia, in hemorrhagic and syphilitic choroiditis and retinitis, and diseases of the ciliary region. Heemor- rhage is frequent after blows on or wounds of the eye.

Disseminated Choroiditis is usually a symmetrical dis- ease, arising from acquired or inherited syphilis. There are no characteristic symptoms, but the ophthalmoscope shows in the early stage (rarely observed) yellowish patches (of exudation), over which, unless obscured by haze, the retinal vessels are seen to pass. Later, when the exuda- tion gives place to atrophy, white patches are seen of various sizes with masses of black pigment on or around them, distributed irregularly over the choroid. The re- tinal vessels may be seen to pass unaltered over some of the white areas. Sometimes the patches of atrophy in- volve merely the superficial layers and expose the deeper larger choroidal vessels. Vision is impaired, especially if the yellow spot is involved. The treatment is that for syphilis, with rest and protection of the eyes from light. This at least helps to prevent fresh accessions of the disease if it cannot restore the atrophied choroid. Similar spots are seen in non-syphilitic subjects, probably as the result of choroidal hzemorrhage.

In myopia the choroid is frequently atrophied near the disk, especially at its outer edge, forming what is variously known as "posterior staphyloma," "myopic crescent," or "sclerotico-choroiditis posterior." This pos- terior staphyloma varies much in shape, sometimes sur- rounding the disk, sometimes limited to the yellow spot, causing then greatly impaired central vision.

~~Tubercles are sometimes deposited in the choroid, appear- ing as small yellow spots. Their presence may be of assistance in forming a diagnosis of tubercular disease.~~

~~Rupture of the Choroid from injury is generally seen as a long curved line of atrophy with the concavity towards the disk.~~ ,

~~Coloboma of the choroid is a congenital defect, indicated by a large white patch of atrophy at the lower part, often embracing the disk,—the surface of the sclerotic often looking uneven. It may exist independently of similar defect in the iris.~~

~~Sarcoma of the Choroid is a malignant tumour, usually~~

~~They of the vitreous.~~

~~Diseases of the choroid.~~

~~Diseases of the retina~~,

~~784~~

~~pigmented, which tends to destroy the eye, to spread along the optic nerve, and to cause metastalic deposits elsewhere in the body. It causes defect of sight, and if the media are clear may be seen by the ophthalmoscope. It often causes glaucoma and cataract. The tumour must be excised with as much of the optic nerve and orbital tissue as can be reached.~~

~~Detachment of the Retina is a separation of the retina from the choroid by an effusion of serum or of blood, or by the growth of a tumour between them. It occurs most frequently in myopia and from blows on the eye (also from dislocation of the lens and in albuminuria). The detachment varies greatly in extent; it is most usually situated at the lower part of the retina. It causes blind- ness on the corresponding opposite part of the visual field. With the ophthalmoscope, instead of the red appearance, a greyish reflexion is seen, generally uneven on the surface, with the retinal vessels, reduced in size and dark in colour, coursing over it. The grey surface may be seen to undulate with movements of the eye. Treatment is generally unsatisfactory.~~

~~Myopic cases should avoid stooping and strain of the eyes to prevent its extension.~~

~~Embolism of the Central Artery of the Retina is a plugging of this vessel by a small body, usually detached from one of the valves of a diseased heart. The eye becomes sud- denly blind, and on ophthalmoscopic examination the red reflex is found to be replaced by a diffuse white mist, except at the yellow spot where a "cherry-red" spot appears ; and the retinal vessels are often reduced to mere threads. After a time the haze passes off the retina, but an atrophied disk and narrowed blood-vessels are left. Treatment is useless. If the embolism is impacted in one of the branches of the retinal artery these appearances will be localized, and a blind spot will correspond to the affected area.~~

~~Albuminuric Retinitis occurs in an advanced stage of chronic Bright's disease of the kidneys, usually when the general health has become much impaired. It is especially associated with the granular kidney, and is not seldom the first indication of this serious disease. It causes defective sight, and some of the following characteristic ophthalmo- scopic appearances. In the early stage (rarely observed) a greyish haze presents itself at the centre of the retina (from the presence of an albuminous fluid) ; later, pearly-white sharply-defined spots of various sizes appear, often grouped round the yellow spot (due to fatty degeneration of the coagulated albumen and nerve-fibres). With these there may be found many small hemorrhages, or a condi- tion of optic neuritis. Vision is seldom completely lost, and may, except in the severest cases, be expected to im- prove somewhat, especially in the albuminuria associated with pregnancy. Its treatment is that of its cause.~~

~~Syphilitic Retinitis is usually a symptom of the second- ary stage, affecting both eyes, and producing dimness of vision and night-blindness. Ophthalmoscopically the disk appears hazy, the vessels full and tortuous, the retina also hazy or showing white misty patches, especially near the yellow spot. It is much benefited by a mercurial course,~~

~~Hemorrhage Retinitis is indicated by the appearance all over the retina of small flame-shaped hemorrhages with dilated veins. It is perhaps due to gout (Hutchinson).~~

~~Hemorrhages may result from vascular degeneration. They seriously damage sight if they occur at the yellow spot.~~

~~Pigmentary Retinitis is a peculiar chronic disease affecting both eyes symmetrically. It is either congenital or begins early in life and advances gradually till it produces com- plete blindness. Its cause is not well known. It is strongly hereditary, occurring often in several members of one family; it has been found also in the descendants of~~

~~OPEHYTEHREMOLOG Y~~

~~parents nearly related to each other, and it is common among deaf-mutes. In many cases no cause can be assigned. Its earliest symptom is an inability to get about in the dusk (night-blindness). Then follows a gradual contrac- tion of the field of vision, the patient feeling as if he looked through a tube, seeing objects clearly within his field in good daylight, but nothing beyond. Eventually this central vision also fails. The ophthalmoscopical ap- pearances are symmetrical in both eyes, and are equally characteristic. At the periphery of the retina masses of black pigment are distributed in an irregularly reticulated or lace-like manner over the retina and along the retinal vessels. The disk is pale and "waxlike," and the retinal vessels are much contracted,—it may be, reduced to mere threads. As the visual field contracts the retinal pigment approaches the disk. Treatment is of little use. Galvanism has lately been recommended.~~

~~Glioma of the Retina is a tumour of excessive malignancy, arising in the retina and rapidly filling the eye, and spread- ing from the eye along the optic nerve to the brain, or through the sclerotic to the orbit. It occurs in young children. 'Thorough and early removal of the eye with the optic nerve may prevent its recurrence.~~

~~The optic nerve may be inflamed in any part of its Diseases course, within the skull, in the orbit, and within the eye, of the~~

~~To the physician the most important of these inflamma- ae~~

~~retina,~~

~~tions is that of the intraocular end of the nerve or papilla, known as Optic Neuritis or Papillitis (choked disk), on account of its frequent association with tumour of the brain, of which it is one of the most diagnostic symptoms. The signs may be well marked to the ophthalmoscope before there is the slightest impairment of sight. At first the disk is seen swollen, reddened, its edge indistinct, and the veins distended and tortuous. Later, the swelling of the disk increases, obscuring the disk itself, and extending beyond its edge. The surface has a greyish appearance, streaked with reddish lines, which are enlarged blood- vessels. The retinal arteries and veins at their commence- ment are obscured by the exudation ; at the edge of the swollen disk they bend downwards to reach the retina, over which they pursue a tortuous course, the veins being much distended. Small hemorrhages are often seen on the disk and retina. All traces of the exudation may pass away. More usually the disk becomes atrophied, of a pale-white colour, with an indistinct margin and shrunken retinal vessels.~~

~~Papillitis of both eyes sometimes also arises from lead- poisoning or anzemia. Papillitis of one eye, with subse- quent atrophy, is generally due to local injury to the nerve.~~

~~Atrophy of the Optic Nerve is sometimes primary, 7.e., arises without previous neuritis. In this case the disk becomes gradually of a pale-white or pale-greyish colour, its edge more than usually distinct, and the vessels may not be contracted. Priniary atrophy of the optic nerve is one of the most marked symptoms of locomotor ataxia. Many of the cases where no cause is ascertainable are undoubtedly precursory to the usual symptoms of ataxy. Vision always suffers in this form more or less.~~

~~Atrophy of the disk may be secondary to glaucoma, neuritis, pigmentary retinitis, and some forms of choroid- itis, When unilateral it may be due to embolism, or, if it follow an injury to the head, to fracture of the optic canal, or to a retrobulbar neuritis,~~

~~Amblyopia, Amaurosis, &c.—Amblyopia means defect- ive sight ; amaurosis, blindness without sufficient obvious cause. Such defective sight is not uncommon in a squint- ing eye, or one of a different refractive power from its fellow. Tobacco amblyopia occurs in adults from excessive tobacco-~~

smoking, especially when combined with alcoholic excess. There is loss of visual acuteness, as tested by read-

&c.

OP hm AL MO LOG Y

ing, of one-fifth to one-tenth, and green and red blindness in the centre of the field. The disk may be normal or havea muddy colour. It usually recovers under abstinence from smoking and alcohol and the use of small doses of strychnia.

Hemianopsia means loss of one-half of the visual field. It is generally bilateral and affects corresponding halves of the two retinz, e.g., the two right halves or the two left ; rarely the two inner halves or the two outer are involved. The dividing line is usually vertical, or nearly so, bending so as to avoid the fixation point. It is due to some disease of the brain, or of one optic tract. (It will be remembered that each optic tract divides at the optic commissure, and supplies one-half of each retina, the right tract going to the right halves, the left to the left.)

Night-blindness without organic change may be due to exposure to bright sunlight, sleeping in moonlight, or to scurvy. Snow-blindness is a similar condition, with con- gestion of the eyelids and intolerance of light.

785

the strain on the internal recti. Myopic eyes are liable to various affections, —muscx volitantes, opacity and fiuidity of vitreous, choroidal hemorrhage, and detachment of retina.

Astigmatism is either regular or irregular. Regular astigmatism is due to the fact that the surfaces of the cornea and lens are not segments of spheres. The principal abnormality is in the cornea, and it is found that the meridians of greatest and least curvature (the principal meridians) are always at right angles to each other, and that the intermediate meridians pass by regular gradation from the one to the other. It is evident that rays of light from a point passing through the plane of greatest curvature will have

met before those passing through the plane at right angles to it, which will form a line, that similarly the first set of rays will have crossed and will in their turn form a line by the time the second have reached their focus, and that between these two points the image will be circular or oval, but blurred. In no case will the image be a point, and hence vision will never be distinct. If one of the principal meridians be emmetropic the astigmatism is "simple" ; if both be either hypermetropic or myopic it is "compound"; if one be hypermetropic and the other myopic it is " mixed."

If spherical lenses do not raise the sight of otherwise healthy eyes to the normal standard astigmatism is probable. On ophthalmo- scopic examination the disk will be found oval, and altering its

Errors of In Hypermetropia parallel rays falling on the eye meet in a point | shape when the lens is removed from the eye; with the direct refrac- behind the retina. This is due in most cases to shortening of the | method the vessels are not seen with equal distinctness, and may

tion.

axis of the eye (axial hypermetropia), in rarer cases to absence of the lens, and is the physiological condition, after the age of fifty- five, of all previously normal eyes, owing to diminution of the refractive power of the lens. Clear vision is obtained only when the entrant rays are focused on the retina. In the hypermetropic eye this is effected by increase in the refractive power of the lens by the action of the ciliary muscle. In slight hypermetropia this is easily accomplished, and no complaint may be made. In higher degrees the continuous severe strain on the accommodation in read- ing and other fine work gives rise to aching, watering, and misti- ness of the eyes (accommodative asthenopia). These symptoms may first appear after an exhausting illness or prolonged strain of the eyes,—in both cases from reduction of the tone in the ciliary muscle, Convergent squint isa common symptom. In the highest degrees, where no amount of accommodation gives distinct vision, the attempt is given up, and no complaint made. In most cases the continuous use of the accommodation produces a spasm of the ciliary muscle, which renders some of the hypermetropila " latent," what remains being the "manifest"' hypermetropia. Both together constitute the "total" hypermetropia. To ascertain the hyper- metropia place the patient 20 feet from Snellen's test- types. If

pass across the field in the two principal meridians in the same direction but at different rates if the astigmatism be compound, in opposite directions in "mixed" astigmatism. If the patient look at an arrangement of radiating lines of equal thickness he will not see them all with equal distinctness. Astigmatism is corrected by neutralizing the inequality of the refractive

surfaces by means of cylindrical lenses. In many cases the vision cannot be brought up to the nornial standard.

There are many ways of estimating astigmatism. One method is to find by the test-types the spherical lens which gives the best distant vision ; then, by means of a narrow slit in a metal disk, to find the plane in which vision is further most improved. Spherical lenses are placed in front of this slit till the one which gives the best attainable vision is found; this gives the cylindrical lens necessary for this plane. A similar inquiry is conducted with the plane at right angles to this. Spectacles are ordered compounded of the spherical lens and the two cylindrical lenses with their axes at right angles to each other.

Irregular astigmatism depends on irregularities in the surface of the cornea or in the refractive power of the lens. It can seldom be remedied.

a weak convex lens makes sight no worse try stronger and stronger glasses till the best vision is obtained. This gives the " manifest" hypermetropia. If there be no improvement with convex glasses the hypermetropia may be all latent. Paralyse the accommodation by putting a drop of atropine solution and test the " total" hyper-

Presbyopia.—From ten years onwards the "near"' point of the Dis- eye gradually recedes, owing to increasing firmness of the lens and orders of probably diminishing power in the ciliary muscle. Presbyopia has accom- been arbitrarily fixed as commencing when the near point recedes moda- to 9 inches, because then discomfort in reading is generally com- tion.

metropia. For the ophthalmoscopic tests, see below. Children with asthenopia should wear constantly glasses which nearly correct the hypermetropia. For adults it is not usually necessary to wear glasses for distant vision. For reading the manifest hypermetropia should be corrected, the strength of the glasses being increased as often as asthenopic symptoms reappear.

In Myopia or Short-sight the retina lies behind the focal point of parallel rays entering the eye; it will therefore be at the con- jugate focus of some point at a definite distance from the eye,—its "far point." Objects beyond

~~this point are seen indistinctly. Within this point and up to the "near" point objects are distinctly seen. Myopia is generally due to elongation of the posterior part of the eye, the sclerotic and choroid at the macula being thinned and bulging backwards. In severe cases the bulging is general, thinning all the coats and enlarging the eye. Myopia is highly hereditary. It rarely begins before seven, and rarely advances after twenty-five. It is always aggravated, and may be produced, by using the eyes on fine work, especially in a bad light and in a stooping position. Myopia results also from increased curvature of the cornea, as in interstitial keratitis and conical cornea. ;~~

~~The symptoms of myopia are well known. Distant vision is indistinct, and fine work or printed type is held near the eyes. In high degrees after reading for a time the letters seem to be blurred and to run into each other, while the eyes ache and water owing to inability of the internal recti to keep up the necessary convergence (muscular asthenopia). Divergent squint may be present. The eyes are often kept half shut (hence the name "myopia") to exclude the excess of light. Ophthalmoscopic examination often shows the "myopic crescent" at the outer side of the disk, or all round it, or at the macula. The other tests are described below. As regards treatment, all myopics should work in a good light, and not ina stooping position. If desired, concave lenses may be given for dis- tant vision. For near vision in high myopia concave lenses not fully corrective may be given, to enable the patient to hold his work at a greater distance and to avoid stooping. If there is muscular asthenopia prisms with their bases inwards may be used to relieve~~

~~plained of. In normal eyes it begins about forty, in hypermetropia earlier, and in myopia later. There is no increased difficulty in seeing distant objects, but ordinary type has to be held incon- veniently far away. The treatment consists in giving glasses to enable the patient to read at 9 inches. In practice it is usually sufficient to enable him to read at 12 inches' distance. As age advances the presbyopia increases, and it is necessary from time to time to increase the strength of the spectacles.~~

~~Paralysis of the Acecommodationis not uncommon after diphtheria ; it forms one of the symptoms of paralysis of the third nerve.~~

Spas of the Accommodation is common in hypermetropia, and is sometimes present in the opposite condition of myopia.

In strabismus the two eyes are not directed to the same point in Strabis. The deviation may be inwards or outwards, downwards or mus or upwards,— the first two forms being by far the most common. Jn- squint.

space.

ward or Convergent Strabismus is due either (1) to paralysis of the external rectus muscle or (2) to over-developmient of theinterni. (1) Paralytic convergent squint is the result of some affection of the sixth nerve or its nerve-centre, owing generally either to syphilis or to nervous exhaustion. It varies in amount from slight weak- ness to complete paralysis of the muscle. When the paralysis is complete the eye is turned inwards and cannot be moved outwards beyond the middle of the fissure of the eyelids. In minor degrees, where the deformity is not so evident, it may be difficult to tell which is the squinting eye. If the patient be told to look at an object held a short distance in front of him, and a piece of ground glass be placed before the squinting eye, neither eye will move ; if the sound eye now be covered the squinting eye will turn outwards to fix the object, while the sound eye will move a greater distance inwards; the "secondary" is greater than the "primary" squint. The reason of this is that the nerve to the paralysed externus and that to the sound internus of the other eye, which work together, both receive the same stimulus from the will, and that the sound muscle acts more strongly than the other. Owing to the displace- ment of the yellow spot double vision is produced, the false image being projected towards the side of the paralysed muscle (homony-

XVII. — 99

Diseases of the eyelids,

Diseases of the laerymal appara- tus.

mous diplopia). The diplopia is always most distressing, and may cause giddiness when the strabismus is slight. The treatment

probes are passed through the stricture. Abscesses when formed must be opened, and when inflammation has subsided the stricture

consists in the use of iodide of potassium in the syphilitic, and in nervine tonics in the neurasthenic cases. The muscle may be fara- dized to keep up its tone. In bad cases tenotomy of the internal rectus may be necessary. The squinting eye may be covered to pre- vent the diplopia. (2) Convergent strabismus from over-development of the internal recti ("concomitant" strabismus) is almost always due to hypermetropia. Its production depends on the intimate relation between accommodation and convergence, every degree of the one evoking a constant quantity of the other, so that nor- mally the two eyes are converged upon the object accommodated for. In hypermetropia clear vision needs an excess of accommoda- tion which in its turn produces an excess of convergence, so that the two eyes meet in a point nearer than that looked at ; they squint, in short. The eyes may squint only during accommodation for a near object (periodic squint), but generally the internal recti be- come so developed as to produce a constant convergence. If either eye is used indifferently for vision the squint is "alternating." Generally one eye is habitually used, the sight in the other eye becoming defective. The amount of squint bears no ratio to the amount of hypermetropia, being frequently absent in the higher degrees where accommodation fails to give clear sight and is not exercised. Double vision does not occur, because the image of the squinting eye is unconsciously suppressed. .

In periodic squint glasses to correct the hypermetropia ought to be given. For permanent squint division of the tendons of one or both internal rectimuseles is necessary. The operation diminishes the power of these muscles by allowing them to become attached to the globe farther back. Care must be taken not to produce too great an effect, it being preferable rather to leave a little convergence.

In rare cases myopta is associated with convergent squint.

Divergent Strabismus arises from weakness of the internal rectus, asin myopia. In the condition known as muscular asthenopia it is present only

~~after a prolonged effort of convergence. It arises also where the sight is defective, as with corneal opacities, or from unskilful operation for convergent squint. It can generally be improved by tenotomy of the external and "advancement " of the internal rectus muscle. :~~

~~In paralysis of the superior oblique muscle the deviation is slight. Owing to interference with the movement downward and outward, double vision is present when the eyes are directed below the hori- zontal line.~~

~~Paralysis of the Third Nerve causes ptosis, loss of accommodation, and dilatation of the pupil, and the eye can be moved only slightly downwards and outwards. All the branches are seldom affected alike.~~

~~Ophthalmia Tarst (blepharitis) is a chronic inflammation of the follicles of the eyelashes and their glands, attacking strumous children, especially after measles. The edges of the lids are covered with small scabs, which gum the lashes into pencils; when the scabs are removed small freely-bleeding ulcers are exposed. The conjunctiva is also reddened. Eventually the lashes either fall out or become misdirected, the border of the lids looks thickened and bald, and the eyes continually water from eversion of the orifice of the tear-duct. The scabs must be removed daily by means of an alkaline lotion, and a weak mercurial ointment applied to the lids. In bad cases the lashes must be pulled out, and the ulcers touched with nitrate of silver.~~

~~A Stye is an abscess in a Meibomian gland, or in the cellular tissue of the lid. Styes are apt to occur in crops, and generally point to some derangement of health. They should be poulticed till the matter points, then opened with a lancet. Tonics are needed internally.~~

~~Chalazion is a cyst ina Meibomian gland. It forms a small pea- sized painless swelling under the skin of the lid. It should be opened from the conjunctival surface and its contents expressed,~~

~~Lipithelioma (rodent ulcer) occurs in old people, grows slowly, forming a hard irregular mass, with an ulcerated surface covered by scabs ; it may extend in all directions, destroying the tissues it reaches. The treatment consists in complete removal by the knife or chloride of zinc paste.~~

~~The lacrymal gland sometimes suppurates, and must be treated like any other abscess. Most of the diseases of this system arise in the punctum, canaliculi, lacrymal sac, or nasal duct, and all cause overflow of tears on the cheek. The punctum may be everted, from disease of the conjunctiva, paralysis of the facial nerve, or the dragging of a scar in the cheek. The canaliculus may be constricted or obliterated. The nasal duct may be obstructed from chronic disease of its mucous membrane or bony wall. The result of this is the retention of tears in the lacrymal sac, then the formation by distension of this sac of a small tumour at the inner angle of the eye, from which first clear mucus, and possibly, at a later period, also pus may be pressed back into the eye. Finally, if the case is neglected an abscess may form which may burst externally and cause a troublesome fistula. The treatment in the first placee must be the dilatation of the stricture. The canaliculus is first slit on its conjunctival surface along its whole length, then successively larger~~

~~dilated. The sac may be washed with astringent solutions. When the stricture is due to bone-disease its cure is not hopeful. |~~

~~Blows may rupture the coats of the eye,—the sclerotic and Injuries | underlying coats being generally injured. Hemorrhage takes place of the between the coats and into the chambers of the eye. The eye may eyeball. be removed at once ; if any perception of light remain, the excision should be delayed to see if there be any chance of the eye being saved. Usually the eye shrinks and becomes quite useless.~~

~~Blows may cause damage to the interior of the eye without injuring the outer coats. There may be hemorrhage into the anterior or the posterior chamber,—the latter a most serious con- dition, seldom completely recovered from. The choroid may be ruptured, the lens dislocated, or the iris torn from part of its ciliary attachment ; and the retina is not seldom detached from the choroid.~~

~~Wounds.—Small foreign bodies—bits of steel, &c.—are often impacted in the cornea. They should be removed as soon as possible, as they give rise to great pain, and may seriously injure the cornea. If there is much after-irritation atropine should be used freely to the eye.~~

Burns with caustic alkalis and acids or molten lead are common.

When seen the whole conjunctiva should be carefully freed from all of the irritant. If lime has been the cause, a weak acid lotion should be used. Then oil should be dropped into the conjunctival sac, and any inflammatory symptoms treated as they arise. If the epithelial layer of the cornea only has been destroyed, it often clears to a wonderful extent ; but deeper injuries may cause severe ulcerative inflammation of the cornea, and the conjunctiva may slough in part, with ultimate formation of a scar binding the lid to the eye (symblepharon).

Penetrating Wounds.—Such wounds of the cornea and sclerotic, if only the foreign body be not in the eye, generally do well. Usually some of the deeper structures are involved, and these cases are always very serious. The eye may be rapidly lost from general inflammation, or if not it may become completely blind. In almost any case, especially where the wound is in the ciliary region, the other eye is apt to be sympathetically involved. If the injured eye therefore is blind, and if there is inflammation in the ciliary region, it must be at once excised. If the eye be not blind, the ciliary region quiet, and no foreign body in the lens or vitreous humour, the eye may be preserved,—the danger of involvement of the other eye being put before the patient. In such cases it is impossible to lay down any general rules. Each case must be judged on its own merits by the ophthalmic surgeon.

Usk oF THE OPHTHALMOSCOPE.

The ophthalmoscope consists of a small mirror with a small Use of aperture in the centre. Most instruments have now in addition a the oph- series of concave and convex lenses arranged on a disk so that they thalmo- can be brought successively behind the central perforation.

Rays of light entering the eye in any given direction are reflected by the choroid along the same direction. Ordinarily, therefore, the fundus cannot be seen, because an eye so placed as to see the emerging rays intercepts the entrant ones. The ophthalmoscope, by placing the source of light in front of the observer's eye, enables it to see and examine the interior of the other eye.

There are two methods of examination,—the indirect and the direct. (1) The indirect method, which forms a real, inverted, and slightly magnified image in front of the observed eye, may be illustrated thus. Place a convex lens of 2-inch focus in front of this page, and let these represent crystalline lens and retina respect- ively. Place now a second similar lens in front of the first, and the print will be seen inverted and slightly magnified. (2) The direct method forms a virtual, erect, much magnified image. Place one of the above lenses within 2 inches of the page and your own eye close to it. The letters will appear erect and enlarged.

To use the ophthalmoscope,—place the patient in a dark room, with a lamp to one side of and a little behind the head. If the indirect method is to be employed, sit in front of the patient, with the mirror in your right hand before your right eye, the large lens in your left. Reflect the light from a distance of about 2 feet into one of the eyes, and when you see a red reflexion place the lens in front of it, and you will obtain the inverted image of the fundus.

(A) Begin your examination with the optic disk by telling the patient to direct the observed eye a little inwards. Note the follow- ing points :—(aa) the colour of the disk, normally a yellowish pink, but varying considerably owing to tint of surrounding choroid, &c. ; (0) a paler spot in its centre, which may be due to the funnel-shaped expansion of the nerve, the physiological cup ; (c) the distinctness of the edge (spots of black pigment here are of no importance) ; (d) when the lens is removed from the eye the image of the disk remains of the same size if the eye is emmetropic, becomes smaller if the eye is hypermetropic, and larger if it is myopic, and alters in shape if there is astigmatism. (B) The retinal vessels appear as

red lines, the arteries paler and about two-thirds the size of the darker veins. They arise in the centre of the disk, run usually in pairs, branching as they pass over the retina. Note their light central streak, their amount of tortuosity, and the presence or absence of white lines by their side. (C) Note the usually uniform redness of the choroid. In light-haired and dark-haired persons the vessels appear as dark or light red bands on the general red

ground. (D) The yellow spot is indicated either by a deeper redness of the choroid or by a bright yellow spot surrounded by a shifting white halo.

By the direct method the mirror is used without the large lens,—if necessary, one of the smaller lenses being placed behind the cen- tral perforation. (A) Examine the crystalline lens (see "'cataract" above). (B) Opacities in the vitreous humour are detected as mov- ing bodies when the eye is moved about and then brought to a standstill. (C) Ascertain the refraction. The eye is ametropic if the vessels are seen distinctly at more than 18 inches' distance. It is hypermetropic if the observer on moving his head finds the vessels moving in the same direction ; myopic if they go the opposite way. To measure the amount of ametropia needs practice and power of the observer to relax his accommodation completely. Rays leaving the hypermetropic eye are divergent ; to be seen clearly by the observer they must be rendered parallel. The strongest convex lens, therefore, which, placed behind the central aperture, gives a clear image of the fundus is the measure of the hypermetropia. Similarly the lowest concave lens with clear image indicates the amount of myopia. (D) To examine the details of the fundus, the mirror is approached closely to the observed eye.

Retinoscopy.—The observer sitting at a distance of 4 feet from the patient reflects the light into his eye, after dilating the pupil with atropine, and rotates the mirror slightly. A shadow will be seen to cross the pupil,—in myopia of more than 1D (5) in the same direction as the rotation, in all other cases in the opposite direc- tion. This method is useful in determining and correcting the refraction where the patients are too young or too stupid to assist with their answers. (A. BR.)

OPIE, Ameria (1769-1853), the wife of John Opie, noticed below, was the daughter of Dr Alderson, a phy- sician in Norwich, and was born there in 1769. The cir- cumstances of her early life gave the bent to her after-career. In her girlhood she beguiled the solitude of her father's summerhouse by composing songs and tragedies; on her visits to London the superior society into which the accom- plishments of her mind and the graces of her person intro- duced her served to stimulate her aspirations ; and after her marriage in 1798 she was encouraged by her husband to become a candidate for literary fame. Accordingly, in 1801 she published a novel

entitled Father and Daughter. Although this tale showed no artistic ability in dealing either with incidents or with characters, yet it was the work of a lively fancy and a feeling heart, and speedily brought its author into notice. She was encouraged to publish a volume of sweet and graceful poems in 1802, and to persist in the kind of novel-writing which she had so successfully commenced. Adeline Mowbray followed in 1804, and Simple Tales in 1806. The death of her husband in 1807 and her return to Norwich did not slacken her industry. She published Zemper in 1812, Tales of Real Life in 1813, Valentine's Hve in 1816, Tales of the Heart in 1818, and Madeline in 1822. At length, in 1825, her assumption of the tenets and garb of the Quakers checked her literary ardour and changed her mode of life. Beyond a volume entitled Detraction Displayed, and several contributions in prose and verse to various periodicals, nothing afterwards proceeded from her pen. The rest of her life was spent in travelling and in the exercise of Chris- tian benevolence. She died at Norwich in 1853. A Life of Mrs Opie, by Miss C. L. Brightwell, was published in 1854.

OPIE, Joun (1761-1807), historical and portrait painter, was born at St Agnes near Truro in May 1761. He early showed a taste for drawing, and for scholarship also, hav- ing at the age of twelve mastered Euclid and opened an evening school for arithmetic and writing. Before long he won some local reputation by portrait-painting; and in 1780 he started for London, under the patronage of Dr Wolcot (Peter Pindar), who hoped to win credit, and still more substantial benefits, from the fame of his young protégé. Opie was introduced to the town as "The

Cornish Wonder," a self-taught genius. The world of fashion, ever eager for a new sensation, was attracted ; the carriages of the wealthy blocked the street in which the painter resided, and for a tiie he reaped a rich harvest by his portraits. But soon the fickle tide of popularity flowed past him, and the painter was left neglected. He now applied himself with redoubled diligence to correcting the defects which marred his art, meriting the praise of his rival Northcote—" Other artists paint to live; Opie lives to paint." At the same time he sought to supplement his early education by the study of Latin and French and of the best English classics, and to polish the rudeness of

his provincial manners by mixing in cultivated and learned circles. In 1786 he exhibited his first important historical subject, the Assassination of James L., and in the follow- ing year the Murder of Rizzio, a work whose merit was recognized by the artist's immediate election as associate of the Academy, of which he became a full member in 1788. He was employed on five subjects for Boydell's "Shakespeare Gallery"; and until his death, on the 9th of April 1807, his practice alternated between portraiture and historical work. His productions are distinguished by breadth of handling and a certain rude vigour, individu- ality, and freshness. They are wanting in grace, elegance, and poetic feeling. Opie is also favourably known as a writer on art by his Life of Reynolds in Wolcot's edition of Pilkington, his Letter on the Cultivation of the Fine Arts in England, in which he advocated the formation of a national gallery, and his Lectures as professor of painting to the Royal Academy, which were published in 1809, with a memoir of the artist by his widow.

OPITZ, Martin. See Germany, vol. x. p. 530.

OPIUM (6ruov, dim. from omés, juice), a narcotic drug prepared from the juice of the opium poppy, Papaver som- niferum, L., a plant probably indigenous in the south of Europe and western Asia, but now so widely cultivated that its original habitat is uncertain. The medicinal pro- perties of the juice have been recognized from a very early period. It was known to Theophrastus by the name of pnkoévov, and appears in his time to have consisted of an extract of the whole plant, since Dioscori- des about 77 A.D. draws a distinction between pnkdvevor, which he describes as an extract of the en- tire herb, and the more active dds, de- rived from the cap- sulesalone. From the Ist to the 12thcentury the opium of Asia Minor appears to have been the only kind known in commerce. In the 13th century opium thebarcum is mentioned by Simon Januensis, physician to Pope Nicholas IV., ta aeons peed Fic. 1.—Opium Poppy (Papaver somniferwm, L.). 16th century opium is mentioned by Pyres (1516) as a production of the kingdom of Cous (Kuch Behar, south-west of Bhutan) in Bengal and of Malwa.' Its introduction into India appears to have been connected with the spread of Islam. The opium monopoly was the property of the Great

1 Aromatum Historia, ed. Clusius, Ant., 1574.

Mogul and was regularly sold. In the 17th century Kaemp- fer describes the various kinds of opium prepared in Persia, and states that the best sorts were flavoured with spices and called "'theriaka." These preparations were held in great estimation during the Middle Ages, and probably supplied to a large extent the place of the pure drug. Opium is said to have been introduced into China, probably by the Arabs (1280-95), during the reign of Taitsu, and its use seems to have temporarily ceased in 1368. It appears to have been commonly used in that countryas a medicine before the trade with India commenced.! Ina Chinese herbal compiled more than two centuries ago both the plant and its inspissated juice are described, together with the mode of collecting it, and in the General HIstory of the Southern Provinces of Yunnan, revised and republished in 1736, opium is noticed as acommon product. Up to this date, however, it was imported in comparatively small quantity by the Chinese solely as a remedy for dysentery, diarrhoea, and fevers, and was usually brought from India by junks as a return cargo. In the year 1757 the monopoly of opium cultiva- tion passed into the hands of the East India Company through the victory of Clive at Plassey. Up to 1773 the trade with China had been in the hands of the Portuguese, but the quantity annually exported to that country rarely exceeded 200 chests. In that year the East India Company took the trade under their own charge, and in 1776 the annual export reached 1000 chests, and 4054 chests in 1790. Although the importation was forbidden by the Chinese emperor Keaking in 1796, and opium-smoking punished with severe penalties, which were ultimately increased to transportation and death, the trade continued and had increased during 1820-30 to 16,877 chests per annum. In 1839 a proclamation was issued threatening hostile measures if the English opium ships serving as depéts were not sent away. The demand for removal not being complied with, 20,291 chests of opium (of 1494 Ib each), valued at £2,000,000, were destroyed by the Chinese commissioner Lin ; but still the British sought to smuggle cargoes on shore, and some outrages committed on both sides led to an open war, which was ended by the treaty of Nanking in 1842 (see Cura, vol. vy. p.651). From that time to the present, in spite of the remonstrances of the Chinese Government, the exportation of opium from India to China has continued, having increased from 52,925

~~piculs (of 1334 tb) in 1850 to 96,839 piculsin 1880. It~~

~~appears to be certain, however, that, while the court of Peking was endeavouring to suppress the foreign trade in opium from 1796 to 1840, it did not or could not puta stop to the home cultivation of the drug, since a Chinese censor in 1830 represented to the throne that the poppy was grown over one-half of the province of Chekeang, and in 1836 another, Cho Tsun, stated that the annual produce of opium in Yunnan could not be less than several thousand piculs. At present it is estimated that south-western China, including Szechuen, produces not less than 224,000 piculs, while the entire import from India does not exceed 100,000 piculs. Opium is now produced in nine out of the eighteen provinces of China. The comparative cheapness of the Chinese opium, the lighter duties levied upon it, and the mereasing care taken in its cultivation are enabling it to compete successfully with the Indian drug even in eastern China, where, however, it has hitherto been chiefly used to mix with and cheapen the foreign article. A time is confi-

~~dently anticipated by the Chinese when Indian opium will be~~

~~entirely supplanted by the native drug. See Commercial Reports, China, No. 2 (1881), p. 138.~~

~~a Mr R. Saunders of Ghazipur suggests (Pharm. Journ., [3], iv. p. 652) that it was introduced from Nepal and afterwards supplied by the Dutch, who purchased the drug for export long before the East India Company held possessions in India.~~

~~Ow iu a~~

~~The amount of opium imported into Great Britain in 1861, 1871, and 1881 was 284,005, 591,466, and 793,146 Tb respectively, and the exports for the same years 290,120, 307,399, and 401,883 ib.~~

~~Production and Commerce.—Although the collection of opium is possible in all places where there is not an ex- cessive rainfall and the climate is temperate or subtropical, the yield is smaller in temperate than in tropical regions, and the industry can only be profitably carried on where labour and land are sufficiently cheap and abundant; hence production on a large~~

scale is limited to comparatively few countries. The varieties of poppy grown, the mode of cultivation adopted, and the character of the opium produced differ so greatly that it will be convenient to con- sider the opiums of each country separately.

Turkey.—The poppy cultivated in Asia Minor is the variety glabrum, Boissier, distinguished by the sub-globular shape of the capsule and by the stigmata or rays at the top of the fruit being ten or twelve in number. The flowers are usually of a purplish colour, but are sometimes white, and the seeds, like the petals, vary in tint from dark violet to white. The cultivation is carried on, both on the more elevated and lower lands, chiefly by peasant proprietors. A naturally light and rich soil, further improved by manure, is neces- sary, and moisture is indispensable, althongh injurious in excess, so that after a wet winter the best crops are obtained on hilly ground, and in a dry season on the plains. The land is ploughed twice, the second time crosswise, so that it may be thoroughly pulverized; and the seed, mixed with four times its quantity of sand, to prevent its being sown too thickly, is scattered broadcast, about # to 1 tb being used for every toloom (1600 square yards). The crop is very uncertain owing to droughts, spring frosts, and locusts, and, in order to avoid a total failure and to allow time for collecting the produce, there are three sowings at intervals from October to March,—the crops thus coming to perfection in succes- sion. But notwithstanding these precautions quantities of the drug are wasted when the crop is a full one, owing to the difficulty of gathering the whole in the short time during which collection is possible. The first sowing produces the hardiest plants, the yield of the other two depending almost entirely on favourable weather. In localities where there is hoar frost in autumn and spring the seed is sown in September or at latest in the beginning of October, and the yield of opium and seed is then greater than if sown later. After sowing, the land is harrowed, and the young plants are hoed and weeded, chiefly by women and children, from early spring until the time of flowering. In the plains the flowers expand at the end of May, on the uplands in July. At this period gentle showers are of great value, as they canse an increase in the subsequent yield of opium. The petals fall in a few hours, and the capsules grow so rapidly that in a short time—generally from nine to fifteen days—the opium is fit for collection. This period is known by the cap- sules yielding to pressure with the fingers, assuming a

lighter green tint, and exhibiting a kind of bloom called "cougak," easily rubbed off with the fingers ; they are then about 14 inches in diameter. The incisions are made by holding the capsule in the left hand and drawing a knife two-thirds round it, or spirally beyond the starting-point (see fig. 2, a, p. 790), great care being taken not to let the incisions penetrate to the interior lest the juice should flow inside and be lost. (In this case also it is said that the seeds will not ripen, and that no oil can be obtained from them.) 'The operation is usually performed after the heat of the day, commencing early in the afternoon and continuing to nightfall, and the exuded juice is collected the next morning. This is done by scraping the capsule with a knife and transferring the concreted juice to a poppy-leaf held in the left hand, the edges of the leaf being turned in to avoid spilling the juice, and the knife-blade moistened with saliva by drawing it through the month after every alternate scraping to pre- vent the juice from adhering to it. When as much opium has been collected as the size of the leaf will allow, another leaf is wrapped over the top of the lump, which is then placed in the shade to dry for several days. The pieces vary in size from about 2 oz. to over 2 Ib, being made larger in some districts than in others. The capsules are generally incised only once, but the fields are visited a second or third time to collect the opium from the poppy-heads subsequently developed by the branching of the stem. The yield of opium varies, even on the same piece of land, from 4 to 74 chequis (of 1°62 Tb) per toloom (1600 square yards), the average being 14 chequis of opium and 4 bushels (of 50 Tb) of seed. The seed, which yields 35 to 42 per cent. of oil, is worth about two-thirds of the value of the opium. The whole of the operation must, of course, be com- pleted in the few days—five to ten—during which the capsules are capable of yielding the drug. A cold wind or a chilly atmosphere at the time of collection lessens the yield, and rain washes the opium off the capsules. Before the crop is all gathered in a meeting

or FU

of buyers and sellers takes place in each district, at which the price to be asked is discussed and settled, and the opium handed to the buyers, who in many instances have advanced money on the stand- ing crop. When sufficiently solid the pieces of opium are packed in cotton bags, a quantity

of the fruits of a species of Rumex being thrown in to prevent the cakes from adhering together. The bags are then sealed up, packed in oblong or circular baskets, and sent to Smyrna or other ports on mules. On the arrival of the opium at its destination, in the end of July or beginning of August, it is placed in cool warehouses to avoid loss of weight. until sold. When transferred to the buyer's warehouses the bags arc opened aud eachi piece is examined by a public inspector in the presence of both buyer and seller, the quality of the opium being judged by appearance, odour, colour, and weight. It is then sorted into three qualities :—(1) finest quality ; (2) current or second ; (3) chicanti or rejected pieces. A fourth sort consists of the very bad or wholly factitious pieces. The substances used to adulterate opium are grape-juice thickened with flour, fig-paste, liquorice, half-dried apricots, inferior gum tragacanth, and sometimes clay or pieces of lead or other metals. The chicanti is returned to the seller, who disposes of it at 20 to 30 per cent. discount to French and German merchants for the manufacture of morphia. After inspection the opium is hermetically sealed in tin-lined boxes containing about 150 tb. Turkey opium is principally used in medicine on account of its purity and the large percentage of morphia that it contains, a comparatively small quantity being exported to China.

A number of varieties exist in commerce, differing in certain qualities, and, to a certain extent, in external character. These are generally exported under the names of the districts where they are prepared, but are more generally known in English commerce by the name of the port from which: they are shipped. Thus, Constan- tinople opium includes the produce of Bogaditz, Karahissar Sahib, Kutchaya, Balukhissar, Kurkagatsch, Ghéve, Beybazar, Angora, Malatia, and Tokat, as well as Macedonian opium from Salonica. Smyrna opium comprises opium from Afium Karahissar, Ushak, Akhissar, Tanshanli, Isbarta, Koniyeh, Bulladan, Hamid, and Magnesia, and the Yerli} varieties. In English commerce these are roughly divided into shipping, druggist's, and manufacturer's opium.

Shipping opium includes varieties of a pale or yellowish colour internally, of a soft consistence, and free from poppy débris, &c., or "chaff," as it is technically called. Such opium affords a large amount of extract, and leaves very little insoluble residue when dis- solved in water, and on this account is preferred in countries where opium-smoking or eating is practised. The

principal varieties used for this purpose are Malatia (including that of Kharput), Tokat, Salonica, Balukhissar (including the produce of Kurkagatsch), Bogaditz, and the finest qualities of Angora and Yerli. The chief markets are China, Peru, the West India Islands, British Guiana, and Brazil ; and the United States also purchase the same kinds for reshipment.

Druggist's opium includes the varieties purchased for nse in medicine in European countries and the United States. It is generally of firmer consistence and rather darker colour than ship- ping opium. The finest varieties of this kind in English commerce are Beybazar, Yerli, Karahissar (including Adet, Amasia, and Akhissar opiums), "Current" Smyrna, and Angora. Ushak, Yerli, and Karahissar opiums are purchased chiefly for the American market, and the Ghéve or Ismid opium for the Continental.

Manufacturer's opium includes chicanti or low-priced qualities of all varieties, and is used only for the manufacture of morphia. Persian opium is used for this purpose when Turkey opium is dear.

Malatia opium usually occurs in pieces of irregular shape, weigh- ing from 14 to 3 ib, and about 1} to 2 inches thick, the " paste" or substance being soft and pale and remarkably free from foreign matter or "chaff," and the exterior being covered with a bright bluish green leaf; the paste of Tokat is similar, but usually of thinner consistence and darker colour. Bogaditz opium is met with in smaller pieces, usually 2 to 3 oz., and is covered with a yellowish green leaf, the surface being rough with Rumeza fruit. Occasionally, however, pieces are met with from 1 to 1} tb in weight, still more rarely up to 4 tb in weight, approaching more nearly to the Baluk- hissar and Kurkagatsch varieties, which are usually similar to the Bogaditz, but in larger pieces. Karahissar opium is in rather large conical lumps ; formerly the pieces frequently bore the impress of a poppy-head pressed into the top. The Adet, Akhissar, and Amasia opiums are very similar in appearance, and usually pass under the name of Karalissar. Angora opium usually occurs in small pieces carelessly prepared, so as to be rough and unsightly in appearance although of good quality. Occasionally samples of good colour, soft consistency, and excellent quality are met with, and these are always used as shipping opium. Yerli is a fine pasty or gummy opium,

with a rough surface and with much Rwmex fruit adhering to it. Ghéve or Ismid? opium is usually in small rounded cakes, weighing eS ee

1 The word yerli means 'grown near," and is applied to opium produced in the immediate neighbourhood of Smyrna. '

2 Ghéve is the commercial name for opium from Geiveh on the river Saka-ria, running into the Black Sea. It appears to find its way to Constantinople via the port of Ismid, and hence is known also by the latter name.

about 2 to 3 oz. in weight. The pieces, known in trade as " Con- stantinople pats," have a smooth shining appearance, with the midrib of the poppy-leaf they are wrapped in forming a median line on the surface. 'he interior often shows layers of light and dark colour. Yoghourma is a very inferior opium, and, as its name im- plies, is "remade" or made up at the port of shipment. It is usually sold to morphia manufacturers at a price determined by analysis.

In Macedonia opium culture was commenced in 1865 at Istip, with seed obtained from Karahissar in Asia Minor, and has since extended to the adjacent districts of Kotchava, Stroumnitza, Tikvish, and Kinprulu-veles. The crop in 1882 was 135,000 tb of opium and 500, 000 to 600,000 tb of seed, most of the drug being exported under the name of Salonica opium to Great Britain at prices ranging from 12s. 6d. to16s. per tb. Macedonian opium, especially that pro- duced at Istip, is very pure, yielding about 11 per cent. of morphia, and is considered equal to the Malatia produce. The Turkish Government encourage the development of the industry by remit-ting the tithes on opium and poppy-seed for one year on lands sown for the first time, and by distributing printed instructions for cultivating the poppy and preparing the opium. In these directions it is pointed out that the opium crop is ten times as profitable as that of wheat. Four varieties of poppy are distin- guished,—two with white flowers, large oval capsules without holes under their " combs " (stigmas), and bearing respectively yellow and white seed, and the other two having red or purple flowers and seeds of the same colour, one bearing small capsules perforated at the top, and the other larger oval capsules not perforated. The white varieties are recommended

as yielding a more abundant opium of superior quality. The yellow seed is said to yield the best oil ; that obtained by hot pressure is used for lamps and for paint, and the cold-pressed oil for culinary purposes.

Opium is also grown in Bulgaria, but almost entirely for home consumption ; any surplus produce is, however, bought by Jews and Turks at low prices and sent to Constantinople, where it is sold as Turkish opium. It is produced in the districts of Kustendil, Lowtscha, and Halitz, and is made into lumps weighing about 4 0z., of a light-brown colour internally, and containing a few seeds; it is covered with leaves which have not been identified. Samples that have been analysed by Herr Thcegarten have yielded from 7 to 19 per cent. of morphia, and only 2 to 3 per cent. of ash, and are therefore of excellent quality. ,

India.—The poppy grown in India is generally the saine as that used in Persia, but in the Himalayas a red-flowered variety with black seeds ismet with. The largest amount of opium is produced in the central tract of the Ganges, extending from Dinajpur in the east to Agra in the west, and from Gorakhpur in the north to Hazaribagh in the south, and comprising an area of about 600 miles long by 200 broad. The region next in importance consists of the tableland of Malwa and the slopes of the Vindhya Hills in Indore.

The opium industry in Bengal is a Government monopoly, and the districts are divided into two agencies, Behar and Benarcs, which are under the control of officials residing respectively at Patna and Ghazipur. In 1883 463,829 acres were under poppy cultivation in the Behar agency, and 412,625 in that of Benares. Any one who chooses may undertake the industry, but cultivators are obliged to sell the opium exclusively to the Government agent at a price fixed beforehand by the latter, which is approximately 3s. 6d. per Ib, the Government selling it at about lls. per Ib. The peasant is, however, said to be fully remuncrated by the price he receives. It is considered that with greater freedom the cultivator would

| produce too great a quantity, and loss to the Government would

soon result. Advances of moncy are often made by the Govern- ment to enable the ryots to grow the poppy.

~~In Malwa the cultivation is free and extremely profitable, the crop realizing usually from three to seven times the value of wheat~~

~~| or other cereals, and in exceptionally advantageous situations from~~

~~twelve to twenty times as much. On its entering British territory a~~

~~heavy duty is imposed on Malwa opium, so as to raise its price to an equality with the Government article. The tax was formerly collected at Indore only, but since other stations have been made at Ujjain, Jaora, and Udaipur the export has increased to 500 chests 'amonth. Malwa opium is shipped from Bombay.?*~~

~~The area under poppy cultivation outside these districts is com- paratively small, but it appears to be increasing: throughout the plains of the Punjab. The poppy is grown for opium, according to Stewart (Punjaub Plants, Lahore, 1869, p. 10), in the valley of tho Bias east of Lahore. It is cultivated up to 7500 feet above sea-level, the opium of Kulu in this district being considered of excellent quality. In Nepal, Bashahr, and Rampur, aud at Doda Kashtwar in the Jammu territory, opium is produced and exported to Yarkand, Khotan, Aksu, and various Chinese provinces.~~

~~The land intended for poppy culture is usually selected near vill- ages, in order that it may be more easily manured and irrigated. On arich soil a crop of maize or vegetables is grown during the rainy season, and after its removal in September the ground is~~

~~caus At eer aE ee ea ee 3 In 1882-83 India exported to China and other places a total of 91,798 chests (126,789 ewts.) of opium, valued at £11 481,376.~~

~~powdered poppy petals, and powdered seeds of various kinds are easily detected by breaking up the drug in cold water. F lour, potato- flour, ghee, and ghoor (crude date-sugar) are revealed by their odour and the consistence they impart. Various other adulterants are sometimes used, such as the inspissated juice of the prickly pear, extracts from tobacco,~~

stramonium, and hemp, pulp of the tamarind and bael fruit, mahwah flowers, and gums of different kinds. The price paid to the cultivator is regulated chiefly by the amount of water contained in the drug. When received into the Government stores the opium is kept in large wooden boxes hold- ing about 50 maunds and occasionally stirred up, if only a little below the standard. If containing much water it is placed in shallow wooden drawers and constantly tured over. During the process it deepens in colour. From the store about 250 maunds are taken daily to be manufactured into cakes,

Various portions, each weighing 10 sers (of 2; Tb), are selected by test assay so as to ensure the mass being of standard consist- ence (70 per cent. of the pure dry drug and 30 per cent. of water), and are thrown into shallow drawers and kneaded together. The mass is then packed into boxes all of one size, and a specimen of each again assayed, the mean of the whole being taken as the average. Before evening these boxes are emptied into wooden vats 20 feet long, 34° feet wide, and 1} feet deep, and the opium further kneaded and mixed by men wading through it from end to end until it appears to be of a uniform consistence, Next morning the manufacture of the opium into balls commences. The work. man sits on a wooden stand, with a brass cup before him, which he lines with the leaves of poppy petals before-mentioned until the thickness of half an inch is reached, a few being allowed to hang over the cup; the leaves are agglutinated by means of "lewa," a pasty fluid which consists of a mixture of inferior opium, 8 per cent. of pasewa, and the ***'dhoe" or washings of the vessels that have contained opium, and the whole is made of such consistence that 100 grains evaporated to dryness over a water-bath leave 53 grains of solid residue. All the ingredients for the opium-ball are furnished to the workmen by measure. When the inside of the brass cup is ready a ball of opium previously weighed is placed on the leafy case in it, and the upper half of it covered with leaves in the same way that the casing for the lower half was made, the overhanging leaves of the lower half being pressed upwards and the sphere complished by one large leaf which is placed over the upper half. The ball, which resembles a Dutch cheese in size and shape, is now rolled in '*** *poppy trash" made from the coarsely- powdered leaves, capsules, and stalks of the poppy plant, and is placed in an earthen cup of the same size as the brass one; the cups are then placed in dishes*

and the opium exposed to the sun to dry for three days, being constantly turned and examined. If it becomes distended the ball is pierced to liberate the gas and again lightly closed. On the third evening the cups are placed in open frames which allow free circulation of the air. This operation is usually completed by the end of July.. The balls thus made consist on the average of—

prepared for the poppy-culture. Under less favourable circum- stances the land is prepared from July till October by ploughing, weeding, and manuring. The seed is sown between the Ist and 15th of November, and germinates in ten or fifteen days. The fields are divided for purposes of irrigation into beds about 10 feet square, which usually are irrigated twice between November and February, but if the season be cold, with hardly any rain, the operation is repeated five or six times. When the seedlings are 2 or 3 inches high they are thinned out and weeded. The plants during growth are liable to injury by severe frost, excessive rain, insects, fungi, and the growth of a root-parasite (Orobanche indica). The poppy blossoms about the middle of February, and the petals when about to fall are collected for the purpose of making "leaves" for the spherical coverings of the balls of opium. These are made by heat- ing a circular-ridged earthen plate over a slow fire, and spreading the petals, a few at a time, over its surface. As the juice exudes, more petals are pressed on to them with a cloth until a layer of sufficient thickness is obtained. The leaves are forwarded to the opium-factories, where they are sorted into three classes, series to size and colour, the smaller and dark-coloured being reserve

for the inside of the shells of the opium-balls, and the larger and least coloured for the outside. These are valued respectively at 10 to 7 and 5 rupees per maund of 82? tb. The collection of

6

Fic. 2.—Opium Poppy Capsules, &c., 3 natural size. a, capsule showing mode of incision practised in Turkey ; 0, capsule as incised in India ; c, nushtur, or instrument used in India for inaking the incisions. Drawn from specimens in the Museum of the Pharmaceutical Society of Great Britain. :

opium commences in Behar about 25th February, and continues to about 25th March, but in Malwa is performed in March and April. The capsules are scarified vertically (fig. 2, 6) in most dis- tricts (although in some the incisions are made horizontally, as in Asia Minor), the "nushtur" or cutting instrument being drawn

c A gltce > ro Standard Opipmiee.....sacses.-coccik 5 '50 chittacks. twice upwards for each incision, and repeated two to six times at iawe aie il eee een te pha 4 rl ae — ' intervals of two or three days. The nushtur (fig. 2, c) consists of Leaves (poppy petals)..... 0: 508088 three to five flattened blades forked at the larger end, and separated WOCNY REE 5 Boned. 95 ov on he ain srs 0 ,, 050 ,,

about one-sixteenth of an inch from each other by winding cotton thread between them, the whole being also bound together by thread, and the protrusion of the points being restricted to one-twelfth of an inch, by which the depth of the incision is limited. The operation 1s usually performed about three or four o'clock in the afternoon, and the opium collected the next morning. In Bengalasmall sheet-iron scoop or "seetoah" is used for scraping off the dried juice, and, as it becomes filled, the opium is emptied into an earthen pot carried for the purpose. In Malwaa flat scraper is employed, a small piece of cotton soaked in linseed oil being attached to the upper part of the blade, and used for smearing the thumb and edge of the scraper to prevent adhesion of the juice ; sometimes water is used instead of oil, but both practices injure the quality of the product. Sometimes the opium is in a fluid state by reason of dew, and in some places it is rendered still more so by the practice adopted by collectors of washing their Scrapers, and adding the washings to the morn- ing's collection. The juice, when brought home, is consequently a wet granular mass of pinkish colour, from which a dark fluid drains to the bottom of the vessel. In order to get rid of this fluid, called "pasewa" or "pussewah," the opium is placed in a shallow earthen vessel tilted on one side, and the pussewah drained off, The residual mass is then exposed to the air in the shade, and regularly turned over every few days, until it has reached the proper consistence, which takes place in about three or four weeks, The drug is then taken to the Government factory to be sold. It is turned out of the pots into wide tin vessels or "tagars," in which it is weighed in quantities not exceeding 21

~~Ib. It is then examined by a native expert (purkhea) as to impurities, colour, fracture, aroma, and consistence. To determine the amount of moisture, which should not exceed 30 per cent.,a weighed sample is evaporated and dried in a plate on a metallic surface heated by steam. Adul- terations such as mud, sand, powdered charcoal, soot, cow-dung,~~

~~2 sers 1°18 chittacks.~~

~~The average number of cakes that can be made daily by one man is about 70, although 90 to 100 are sometimes turned out by clever workmen. The cakes are liable to become mildewed, and require constant turning and occasional rubbing in dry " poppy trash" to remove the mildew, and strengthening in weak places with fresh poppy leaves. By October the cakes are dry and fairly solid, and are then packed in chests, which are divided into two ticrs of twenty square compartments for the reception of as many cakes, which are steadied by a packing of loose poppy trash.! Each case con- tains about 120 catties (about 160 Ib). The chests need to be kept in a dry warehouse for a length of time, but ultimately the opium ceases to lose moisture to the shell, and the latter becomes extremely solid. This is known as "provision " opium.~~

~~For home consumption Bengal opium is prepared in a different shape, and is known as Abkari or excisable opium. It is exposed to the heat of the sun until it contains only 10 per cent. of moist- ure; and is then formed into square cakes of 2 tb each, which are wrapped in oiled paper, or it is made into flat square tablets. In this form it has not the aroma of the ball-opium.~~

~~The care bestowed on the selection and preparation of the drug in the Bengal opium-factories is such that the merchants who purchase it rarely require to examine it, although permission is given to open at each sale any number of chests or cakes that they may desire.~~

~~In Malwa the opium is manufactured by private enterprise, the Government levying an export duty of 600 rupees (£60) per chest. It is not made into balls but into rectangular or rounded masses, and is not cased in poppy petals. It contains as much as 95 per cent. of dry opium, but is of much less uniform quality than the Bengal drug, and, having no guarantee as to purity, is not con-~~

1 This is purchased from the ryots at 12 annas per maund.

Or Fy it

sidered so valuable. The cultivation in Malwa does not differ in any important particular from that in Bengal. The opium is col- lected in March and April, aud the crude drug or "chick" is thrown into an earthen vessel and covered with linseed oil to prevent evapo- ration. In this state it is sold to itinerant dealers. It is after- wards tied up in quantities of 25 Ib and 50 tb in double bags of sheet- ing, which are suspended to a ceiling out of the light and draught to allow the excess of oil to drain off. This takes place in seven to ten days, but the bags are left for four to six weeks until the oil re- maining on the opium has become oxidized and hardened. In June and July, when the rains begin, the bags are taken down and emptied into shallow vats 10 to 15 feet across, and 6 to 8 inches deep, in which the opium is kneaded until uniform in colour and consistence and tough enough to be formed into cakes of 8 or 10 ounces in weight. These are thrown into a basket containing chaff made from the capsules. They are then rolled in broken leaves and stalks of the poppy and left, with occasional turning, for a week or so, when they become hard enough to bear packing. In October and November they are weighed and sent to market, packed in chests containing as nearly as possible 1 picul=1333 fb, the petals and leaves of the poppy being used as packing materials. The production is said to amount to about 20,000 chests annually.

The amount of opium revenue collected in India was £10, 480,051 in 1881. It is a remarkable fact that the only Indian opium eycr seen in England is an occasional sample of the Malwa sort, whilst the Government monopoly om is quite unknown ; indeed, the whole of the opium used in medicine in Europe and the United States is obtained from Turkey. This is in some measure due to the fact that Indian opium contains less morphia. It has recently been shown, however, that opium grown in the hilly districts of the Himalayas yields 50 per cent. more morphia than that of the plains, and that the deficiency of morphia in the Indian drug is due, in some measure, to the long exposure to the air in a semi- liquid state which it undergoes. In view, therefore, of the probable decline in the Chinese demand, the cultivation of the drug for the European market in the hilly districts of

India, and its preparation after the mode adopted in Turkey, viz., by drying the concrete juice as quickly as possible, might be worthy of the consideration of the British Government.

Persia.—The variety of poppy grown in Persia appears to be P. somniferum, var. y. album (P. officinale, Gm.), having roundish ovate capsules. It is most largely produced in the districts of Ispahan, Shiraz, Yezd, and Khonsar, and to a less extent in those of Khora- san, Kermanshah, and Fars. The Yezd opium is considered better than that of Ispahan, but the strongest or Theriak-c-Arabistant is produced in the neighbourhood of Dizful and Shuster, east of the river Tigris. Good opium is also produced about Sari and Balfarush in the province of Mazanderan. The capsules are incised vertically, or in some districts vertical cuts with diagonal branches are made. The crop is collected in May and June and reaches the ports for exportation between September and January. Al- though the cultivation of opium in Persia was probably carried on at an earlier date than in India, Persian opium was almost unknown in England until about the year 1870, except in the form of the inferior quality known as " Trebizond," which usually contains only 0°2 to 8 per cent. of morphia. This opium is in the form of cylindrical sticks about 6 inches long and half an inch in diameter, wrapped in waxed paper. Since 1870 Persian opium has been largely exported from Bushire and Bandar-Abbas in the Persian Gulf to London, the Straits Settlements, and China. At that date the annual yield is said not to have exceeded 2600 cases ; but, the profits on opium having about that time attracted attention, all available ground was utilized for this to the exclusion of cereals, cotton, and other produce. The result was a severe famine in 1871-72, which was further aggravated by drought and other cir- cumstances. Notwithstanding the lesson thus taught, the cultiva- tion is being extended every year, especially in Ispahan, which abounds in streams and rivers, an advantage in which Yezd is defi- cient. About Shiraz, Behbehan, and Kermanshah it now occupies much of the land, and has consequently affected the price and growth of cereals. The trade—only 300 chests in 1859—gradually increased until 1877, when the Persian opium was much adulter- ated with glucose. The heavy losses on this inferior opium and the higher prices obtained for the genuine article led toa great improve- ment in its preparation, and in 1880 the export had increased to 7700 chests. About five-sixths of this total finds its way to the

Chinese market, chiefly by sea, although some is carried overland through Bokhara, Khokand, and Kashgar ; a considerable quantity is exported by way of Trebizond and Samsun to Constantinople, and the remainder to Great Britain. The produce of Ispahan and Fars is carried for exportation to Bushire, and that of Khorasan and Kirman and Yezd partly to Bushire and partly to Bandar- Abbas. The Shuster opium is sent partly via Bushire to Muscat for transhipment to Zanzibar, and part is believed to be smuggled into India by way of Baluchistan and Mekran. Smaller quantities grown in Teheran, Tabriz, and Kermanshah find their way to Smyrna, where it is mixed with the local drug for the European

fol

market, the same practice being carried on at Constantinople with the Persian opium that arrives there from Samsun and Trebizond. For the Chinese market the opium is usually packed in chests containing 10} shahmans (of 13} fb), so that on arrival it may weigh 1 Chinese picul (= 1333 Ib), 5 to 10 per cent. being allowed for loss by drying. At Ispahan, Shiraz, and Yezd the drug, after being dried in the sun, is mixed with oil in the proportion of 6 or 7 tb to 141 Ib of opium, with the object, it is said, of suiting the tastc of the Chinese,—that intended for the London market being usually free from oil.

Persian opium, as met with in the London market, occurs in several forms, the most common being that of broad rounded cones weighing 6 to 10 oz. or more, or rarely twice that size. These are packed in poppy trash, or are wrapped separately in paper, or some- times in poppy, fig, or vine leaves. Ispahan opium also occurs in the form of parallelepipeds weighing about 16 to 20 0z.; sometimes flat circular pieces weighing about 20 oz. are met with. The opium is usually of much firmer and smoother consistence than that of Turkey, of a chocolate-brown colour and cheesy appearance, the pieces bearing evidence of having been beaten into a uniform mass previously to being made into lumps. The odour differs but slightly, except in oily specimens, from that of Turkey opium. Great care is now taken to prevent adulteration, and consequently Persian opium can be obtained nearly as rich in morphia as the Turkish drug,—on the average from 8 to 12 per cent. The greater propor- tion of the Persian opium imported into

London is again exported, a comparatively small quantity being used, chiefly for the manu- facture of morphia when Turkey opium is dear, and a little in veterinary practice. According to Dr Reveil, Persian opium usually contains 75 to 84 per cent. of matter soluble in water, and some samples contain from 18 to 30 per cent. of glucose.

China.—The variety of poppy grown in China appears to be chiefly the P. somniferum, y. album, especially in the low lands, but red and purple varieties are also met with. The production is principally carried on in the south-western provinces of Szechuen, Yunnan, and Kweichow. It is grown to a less extent in Shanse, Shense, and Shantung in the north, as well as in eastern Mongolia and north-eastern Manchuria and Shingking; but in these pro- vinces the richest soil and the utmost care are necessary to ensure the success of the crop, and the area under opium cannot be greatly extended. Formerly the province of Shense produced 30 per cent. of the native product, but since the famine caused by the neglect of cereals for opium the extension of the cultivation has been rigidly prohibited in Shense, Honan, and Chihli. In Kwangtung the soil and climate have been found unsuitable, and in Fuhkeen sugar proves equally remunerative, if not more so. There can be no question, however, that, as already stated, the cultivation of the poppy is extending rapidly, in spite of prohibitory edicts issued from time to time ; four-fifths of the opium at present used in China is home-grown. According to Consul Spence's report (1882) the poppy is cultivated chiefly on land near villages where manure and labour cau be easily obtained. As soon as the summer crop has been reaped the land is ploughed and cleaned, roots and weeds are burnt and the resulting ashes scattered over the ground, and dressings of night-soil are liberally applied. The seeds are sown in November and December in drills 18 inches apart. InJanuary, when the plants are a few inches high, the rows are thinned and earthed up so as to leave a free passage between. The ground is afterwards weeded occasionally and the earth stirred up. The poppy blooms in March or April, according to the situation. As. soon as the capsules begin to form, dressings of liquid manure are given, and in April and May the opium is collected. Vertical in- cisions are made in the capsules as in India. In some districts, however, a vertical shaving appears to be taken off the surface of the capsule. The excreted juice is scraped off and transferred to a small pot suspended at the waist. The mode of preparation for the market has not

been described, but, from the occasional samples that have been sent to England, the opium appears to have undergone manipulation, since it has a uniform pasty consistence and is with- out any trace of the granular structure indicative of unmixed opium like that of Turkey. The colour is darker and the consistence softer than that of Persian opium, but the odour is good. Some of the Szechuen opium appears to have been mixed with oil. The Yunnan and Szechuen opiums are made into flat cakes, and are wrapped in white paper. Chekeang opium is in the form of treacly extract, and is sold in jars containing 2 to 4lb. The yield of opium is calculated at 350 oz. per acre. The Shense drug is highly esteemed because it has a flavour resembling the Patna kind and gives 85 to 90 per cent. of extract. Yunnan opium comes next and Szechuen third in value.

The use of foreign opium by the Chinese bears some relation to its introduction, whicli was in the following order :—Patna, Malwa, Benares, and Persian. Thus the Patna opium is preferred along the south-eastern coast as far north as the Yangtsze river, except in the district about Ningpo. Malwa is chiefly consumed in the northern provinces, including part of Kwangtung, Kwangse, Keangse, and Ganhwuy, while Benares is the favourite kind in

Formosa and some parts of Fuhkeen. Persian replaces the Malwa toa limited extent on account of its lower price ; it goes principally to the province of Kwangse. Malwa opium is reputed to have a strong flavour and biting taste, and to be more stimulating ; it is said to causc heartburn in those unaccustomed to its use, to induce an unhealthy action of the skin, and to prove irritating to the nervous system. Patna is considered mild but narcotic. Persian is also reckoned hot and acrid, and apt to cause dysentery. In some respects the native opium is comparable to the Malwa, having a coarser and more fiery flavour than the Patna, and also has the dis- advantage of causing troublesome eruptions on the skin. Itis said to be frequently adulterated with seaweed, jelly, oil, &c. It seems worthy of inquiry how far this difference of flavour and action may be due to the oil with which both Malwa and Chinese opiums are often prepared. The native opium is said to have the advantage over the foreign that the habit of

smoking it can be broken off with comparative ease, which is not the case with the Indian drug.

Eigypt.—The variety grown in Egypt is the same as in Asia Minor. The cultivation is carried on in Upper Egypt near Esneh, Kenneh, and Siout. 'The capsules are incised in March by drawing a knife twice round them horizontally. The concreted juice is scraped off next day by a scoop-knife, collected on a leaf, and placed in the shade to harden. Good samples, which are of rare occurrence, yield 9 to 12 per cent. of morphia; but, asa rule, the plant is grown in too moist a soil, scarification is not always per- formed at the right date, and adulteration is extensively practised, so that the average yield of morphia is only 3 to 4 per cent. As met with in English commerce Egyptian opium is in the form of hard, flat, circular cakes about 4 inches in diameter, covered with poppy and other leaves, but free from the Rumex fruits usually seen on Turkey opium. The fracture is porous, dark liver-coloured, with shining embedded particles and reddish yellow points, aud occasionally starchy granules. The total amount ex- ported in 1879 was valued at £2310, of which there was sent to Italy. £990, France £630, Greece £540, and Turkey £150. It is not now regularly imported into Britain owing to its inferior quality. M. Gastinel found that, when cultivated in his garden at Cairo, the poppies yielded 10 to 12 per cent. of morphia when the cap- sules were nearly ripe, while opium collected immediately after the flowering was over contained only 8 to 4 per cent. ;

Algeria.—Opium has been grown in Algeria, but this kind is not known in English commerce.

Mozambique.—A company was cstablished in Lisbon in 1877, with a grant of 50,000 acres of land in Mozambique, and certain exclusive privileges ; the cultivation was commenced in 1879 and was carried on at Chaima between the Mulo and Quaqua rivers. The ground has been sown with Malwa seed, the plants thrive well, and the capsules are larger than those grown in India. The collection of opium is made about seventy-five days after the seed has been sown, and the yield compares favourably with that ob- tained in India. It is said to be mixed on the spot with 80 to 100 per cent. of a special matter known only to the cultivators. The mixture is made into balls weighing about 1 fb; these are packed in boxes with poppy trash

and covered with a layer of indigenous cotton. The yield from the first crop amounted only to a few pounds, and upou examination proved to be of modcrate quality only. It was of soft consistence, brownish colour, and yielded 4 per cent. of morphia and 4°38 per cent. of narcotin, and 40-9 per cent. of moisture. In 1884 specimens were sent to the London-market in the form of spherical balls, having the size and general appearance of Malwa and evidently intended to compete with it in the Chinese market.

Ausiralia.—Experiments in opium-cultivation have been made during the last ten years in the neighbourhood of Melbourne, near Bairnsdale in Gippsland, and at Dromana on Port Phillip Bay, and a few cwts. of opium have been obtained. The first specimens col- lected contained only 2 per cent. of morphia and about 8 per cent. of narcotin ; in subseqcent experiments opium yielding 4 to 10 per cent. of morphia was obtained. The secd, procured from Smyrna, was sown in June, July, and the beginning of August, and the opium collected in the summer months of J anuary, February, and March. The plants attained a height of 5 to 7 feet, and cach produced three or four large white flowers. The East India variety, with double purple or nearly black flowers, was found to produce only one flower and give but little opium. It seems probable that, with greater care in selection of sheltered hilly localities and rich soil for the cultivation of the poppy, and attention to the very important point of collecting the juice at exactly the right time, opium of very excellent quality might be produced in Australia in sufficient quantity to meet the local demand.

Hurope.—Experiments made in England, France, Italy, Switzer- land, Greece, Spain, Germany, and even in Sweden prove that opium as rich in morphia as that of Eastern countries can be pro- duced in Europe. In 1880 Mr Young, a surgeon at Edinburgh, succeeded in obtaining 56 Ib of opium from an acre of poppies, and sold it at 36s. per tb. In France the cultivation has been carried on since 1844 at Clermont-Ferrand by M. Aubergier. The juicc, of which a workman is able to collect about 9°64 troy oz. in a day,

or ir wu i

is evaporated by artificial heat immediately after collection. The Juice yields about one-fourth of its weight of opium, and the percent- age of morphia varies according to the variety of poppy used, the purple one

giving the best results. By mixing assayed samples he is able to produce an opium containing uniformly 10 per cent. of morphia. It is made up in cakes of 50 grammes, but is not pro- duced in sufficient quantity to become an article of wholesale commerce. Some specimens of French opium have been found by Guibourt to yield 22°8 per cent. of morphia, being the highest percentage observed as yet in any opium. Experiments made in Germany by Karsten, Jobst, and Vulpius have shown that it is possible to obtain in that country opium of excellent quality, con- taining from 8 to 18 per cent. of morphia. It was found that the method yielding the best results was to make incisions in the poppy- heads soon after sunrise, to collect the juice with the finger imime- diately after incision, and evaporate it as speedily as possible, the colour of the opium being lighter and the percentage of morphia greater than when the juice was allowed to dry on the plant. Cutting through the poppy-head caused the shrivelling up of the young fruit, but the heads which had been carefully incised yielded more seed than those which had not been cut at all. Newly- manured soil was found to act prejudicially on the poppy. The giant variety of poppy yielded most morphia.

The difficulty of obtaining the requisite amount of cheap labour at the exact time it is needed and the uncertainty of the weather render the cultivation of opium too much a matter of speculation for it ever to become a regular crop in most European countries,

North America.—In 1865 the cultivation of opium was attempted in Virginia by Mr A. Robertson, and a product was obtained which yielded 4 per cent. of morphia. In 1867 Dr H. Black grew opium in Tennessee which contained 10 per cent. of morphia. Opium pro- duced in California by Dr H. Flint in 1873 yielded 73 per cent. of morphia, equal to 10 per cent. in perfectly- dried opium. The ex- pense of cultivation exceeded the returns obtained by its sale. As in Europe, therefore, the high price of labour militates against its production on a large scale.

Chemical Constitution.—The activity of opium is princi- pally due to the vegetable alkaloid morphia or morphine, which opium of good quality contains to the extent of 8 to 17 per cent., the average amount being 10

~~percent. Opium yielding less than this is considered of inferior grade and below the commercial standard for use in medicine.~~

~~Morphia is interesting as being the first one that was discovered of the now large class of bodies known as alka- loids. Its basic nature was first clearly pointed out in 1816 by Sertiirner. It exists in opium in combination with sulphuric and meconic acids. Lactic acid has also been found in opium, but is believed to be formed in it subsequently to the collection of the drug.~~

~~Besides morphia several other basic substances have been detected in different varieties of opium, but only in minute quantities, rarely amounting to I percent. These are narceia ; codeia, 02 to 0°4 per cent.; thebaia, 0°15 to 1:0 per cent.; papaveria, 1:0 per cent.; cryptopia, meco- nidia, hydrocotarnia, laudanosia, protopia, codamia, gnos- copia; also a few other bodies of a feebly alkaline or neutral character, viz., narcotin, 2 to 8 per cent.; pseudo- morphin, 0°02; lanthopin, '005 ; and meconoiosin.~~

~~Opium also contains in considerable quantity a resinoid body which is soluble in its own weight of water, but is thrown down when this solution is diluted with ten times its bulk of water ; 11 per cent. of caoutchouc ; a gum dis- tinct from gum arabic; pectin; albumen ; wax, consisting of palmitate and cerotate of cerotyl; and 4 to 8 per cent. of calcareous salts. Sugar has been frequently found in opium, but whether natural or added as an adulteration is not known. The amount of -caoutchouc present has probably some bearing on the value of opium for smoking, since the Chinese estimate its value roughly by the "touch," t.¢., the rapidity or slowness with which a thread drawn out from the mass will break by its own weight.~~

~~Of the alkaloids above mentioned only three are used to any extent in medicine, viz., morphia, codeia, and narcotin. Narceia has also been used in medicine in France.~~

~~Morphia, CyyAHyyNO3.—Turkey opium of good quality and freed from moisture contains from 10 to 15 per cent. of morphia, and if less than 10 per cent. be present it is probably more or less adulter- ated. Persian opium is very variable in this respect, when of good~~

~~OPIUM~~

quality yielding from 8 to 13 per cent., while the variety met with in the form of sticks sometimes contains only 0°2 to 3 per cent. Indian opium is remarkable for the low percentage of morphia, the average yield being only 3 to 4 per cent., although samples of the kinds known as Khandesh and Garden Patna have afforded on analysis 6 to 7 per cent. Chinese opium is similar in this respect, giving, asarule, only 3 to 7 per cent. of this alkaloid. The amount of morphia present in opium bears no relation to the preference exhibited by smokers, opium containing a large quantity of morphia being generally considered by them as inferior in quality and apt to cause headache. For use in medicine those containing a large percentage of morphia are the most esteemed. Opium dried as soon as possible after being collected is usually much richer in morphia than that kept for some time in a moist state and exposed to the air ; and poppies grown on the hills yield an opium containing more morphia than those cultivated on the plains. Guibourt found that opium twenty years old contained less morphia than when previously analysed in the fresh state. To ascertain the percentage of morphia, the merchant extracts, by means of an instrument like a cheese-cutter, a small cylinder of opium about the thickness of a penholder and about 2 inches long, out of one-third of the pieces in a chest, and it is considered that the analysis of these pieces will fairly represent the value of the chest. Various methods are adopted for estimating the morphia, most of which depend upon the fact that this alkaloid can be precipitated from its salts by ammonia, and that it is insoluble in ether and only very slightly soluble in cold water. When pure it forms colourless shining prismatic crystals having an alkaline reaction. It unites with acids to form salts, most of which are soluble in water. It is soluble in 36 parts of boiling and 100 of cold alcohol, in 500 of boiling water, and very slightly in chloroform. It is also soluble in the fixed and volatile oils, and in solution of the fixed caustic alkalis and lime water, but only very slightly in caustic ammonia. With nitric acid it gives a red colour passing into yellow, with test solution of ferric chloride a blue colour which is destroyed by free acids or alcohol, and with sulphuric acid and bichromate of potash a greenish but not a purple or violet colour. Heated in the open air it burns readily, a portion being volatilized. The salts chiefly used in medicine are the hydrochlorate, sulphate, and acetate ; and for subcutaneous in- jection the tartrate has been recommended by Erskine Stuart, since it is more soluble, and more concentrated solutions can be used of it than of the other salts.

Heated in a sealed tube with hydrochloric acid, morphia is decomposed and an alkaloid named "apomorphia," ©,,H),NO.,, formed, which is one of the most speedy and effectual emetics known, and is of great value in cases of accidental poisoning, the subcutaneous injection causing the emptying of the contents of the stomach in a few minutes even when all ordinary emetics fail to act. In minute doses it has also valuable expectorant properties. It is soluble in ether and 50 parts of alcohol and in 68 parts of boiling water, but the solution soon decomposes, and assumes a green colour ; consequently it should be made fresh for use in medicine.

Codeia, C\3H.,NOs, exists in opium in combination with meconic acid, and remains in solution after the morphia is precipitated by ammonia; it may be obtained by evaporating the solution and purifying the crystals that form by dissolving them in hot ether, from whicli it crystallizes out on cooling in rather large octahedral prisms. It differs from morphia in not being soluble in solution of caustic potash or soda, while with nitric acid (sp. gr. 1°200) it gives a yellow solution which does not become red. It is soluble in 17 parts of boiling and 80 of cold water. Codeia has been found also in Turkish, French, and Indian opiums.

Narcotin, Co,H.,N O,.—This substance exists chiefly in a free state in opium ; being insoluble in cold water, it is left behind in consider- able quantity when opium is macerated in that liquid, although a small portion, probably in combination with sulphuric acid, is dis- solved. It is, however, very soluble in ether and benzol, and may be readily obtained by means of these solvents from the crude drug. It is doubtful if it should be classed with the alkaloids, for, although it forms definite compounds with some of the mineral acids, it does not exert any influence on vegetable colours. It differs from morphia in being insoluble in the caustic alkalis and not producing a blue colour with ferric salts.) When heated on a piece of paper over a candle it leaves a greasy stain.

Narceia, Cy7HogN Og, has been also used occasionally in medicine. Its alkaloidal character has been disputed ; but it is now generally classed as an alkaloid. It differs from morphia in giving a blue colour with dilute mineral acids, but does not give a blue colour with ferric salts or a red colour with nitric acid. For recent details concerning the less important

alkaloids reference may be made to Dr Hesse's papers, translated in the Pharm. Journ. and Trans., September 1870, p. 205, and January 1872, p. 549.

Opium of good quality for medicinal use should not lose more than 12% per cent. of water in drying, should not yield more than 8 per cent. of ash from the dried drug, and ought to afford at least 60 per cent. of matter soluble in water. It should be of somewhat tenacious consistence, yellowish brown colour, strong narcotic odour, and bitter taste. The preparation of crude opium most largely

used in medicine is the tincture, commonly known as "laudanum." It is composed of 14 oz. of powdered opium and 1 pint of spirit of wine of specific gravity 0°920. This name was, however, at first applied toa solid preparation, a pill-mass made of opium and various aromatics, which in the London Pharmacopeia of 1639 consisted of saffron, castor, ambergris, musk, and oil of nutmeg. The liquid preparation which bears the name of laudanum was apparently first introduced by the celebrated Dr Sydenham, and was inserted in the London Pharmacopeia for 1721. It also contained aromatics.

Physvological Action.—See Narcotics, supra, pp. 231-2.

Medicinal Uses.—The chief value of opium is to relieve pain, to relax spasm, to allay both local and general irrita- tion of the nervous system, and to procure sleep. Its power of diminishing secretions is taken advantage of in the cure of catarrh, bronchorrhoea, diarrhoea, and other forms of inflammation of the mucous membranes accompanied with excessive secretion, and also in diabetes. It is found of great value when conjoined with emetics in improving or stimulating the secretions of the skin. Its use is dangerous in inflammation of the brain or determination of blood to the head. The action of opium is exerted much more powerfully in proportion upon infants than upon adults, as small a dose as one drop of laudanum having proved fatal to an infant. For remedies in cases of poisoning see Poisons. Morphia differs slightly in its properties from opium. It is less stimulant, and does not produce the full diaphoretic action ; it causes less

~~headache, nausea, and constipation. When used hypodermically its action is more rapid and. smaller doses are required. Codeia is used in diabetes, in coughs, &c. Narceia is considered to be purely hypnotic. Narcotin is official in the pharmacopeia of India as a tonic in general debility arising from prolonged lactation, and in convalescence from acute febrile and inflammatory diseases.~~

~~Opium-eating.—Opium, like many other poisons, pro- duces after a time a less effect if frequently administered as a medicine, so that the dose has to be constantly increased to produce the same result on those who take it habitu- ally. When it is used to relieve pain or diarrhcea, if the dose be not taken at the usual time the symptoms of the disease recur with such violence that the remedy is speedily resorted to as the only means of relief, and thus the habit is exceedingly difficult to break off. Opium-eating is chiefly practised in Asia Minor, Persia, and India. Opinions differ widely as to the injurious effect of the habit; the weight of evidence appears, however, to indicate that it is much more deleterious than opium-smoking. It has been practised in India from very ancient times; some idea of its prevalence there may be gathered from the fact that the mere licence fees for one year amounted to £493,343, and that some of the opium dealers in Calcutta have each no less than seventeen shops where this drug only is sold.~~

~~The following statistics collected by Vincent Richards regarding Balasor in Orissa throw some light on the influence of this practice on the health. He estimates that onc in every 12 or 14 of the population use the drug, and that the habit is increasing. Of the 613 opium-eaters examined by him he found that the average age at which the habit was commenced was 20 to 26 years for men and 24 to 30 yearsfor women. Of this number 143 had taken the drug for from 10 to 20 years, 62 for from 20 to 30 years, and 38 for more than 30 years. The majority took their opium twice daily, morning and evening, the quantity taken varying from 2 to 46 grains daily, large doses being the exception, and the average 5 to 7 grains daily. The dose, when large, had been increased from the beginning ; when small, there had usually been no increase at all. The causes which first led to the increase of the drug were disease, example, and a belief in its aphrodisiac powers. The diseases for which it was chiefly taken were malarial fever, dysentery, diarrhcea, spitting of blood, rheumatism, and elephantiasis, A number~~

began to take it in the famine year, 1866, as it enabled them to exist on less food and mitigated their sufferings ; others used it to enable them to undergo fatigue and to make long journeys. Mr Richards concludes that the excessive use of opium by the agricultural classes, who are the chief consumers in Orissa, is very rare indeed. Its moderate use may be and is indulged in for years without producing any decided or appreciable ill effect except weakcuing the reproductive powers,

XVII. — 100

794

the average number of the children of opium-eaters being 1°11 after 11 years of married life. It compares favourably as regards crime and insanity with intoxicating drinks, the inhabitants of Balasor being a particularly law-abiding race, and the insane forming only 0°0069 per cent. of the population. Dr W. Dymock of Bombay, speaking of western India, concurs in Mr Richards's opinion regard- ing the moderate use of the drug. He believes that excessive indulgence in it is confined to a comparatively small number of the wealthier classes of the community. Dr Moore's experience of Raj- putana strongly supports the same views. It seems probable that violent physical exercise may counteract in great measure the dele- terious effect of opium and prevent it from retarding the respiration, and that in such cases the beneficial effects are obtained without the noxious results which would accrue from its use to those en- gaged in sedentary pursuits. There is no doubt that the spread of the practice is connected with the ban imposed in Mohammedan countries on the use of alcoholic beverages, and to some extent with the long religious fasts of the Buddhists, Hindus, and Mos- lems, in which opium is used to allay hunger. ;)

To break off the habit of opium-eating is exceedingly difficult, and can be effected only by actual external restraint, or the strongest effort of a powerful will, especially if the dose has been gradually increased. Various remedies have been proposed to support the system while the habit is being dropped, the most recent of which are coca and strychnia. ; .

The habit is not confined to India, Persia, and Turkey, but is unfortunately practised in other forms in Western countries. In a few districts of England

more opium is consumed than in the rest of the United Kingdom, and in the United States it is calcu- lated that the number of opium-eaters is 82,696, and the average umount of opium consumed by each opium-eater in the State of Michigan is estimated at 1 oz. avoirdupois per week. Advanced opium-eaters also use in addition chloral and chloroform or ether. Of late years also the practice of using hypodermic injections of morphia has been followed as a luxury by many who have first experienced the speedy relief from pain obtained by its use.

Opiwm-smoking.—This is chiefly practised by the inhabitants of China and the islands of the Indian Archipelago, and in the countries where Chinese labour is largely employed. It is said to have com- menced in China forty or fifty years before the English began to import opium into that gs In 1858 it was estimated that about 2,000,000 of Chinese smoked opium, and in 1878 from one- fourth to three-tenths of the entire population of 400,000,000.

For smoking the Chinese use an extract of opium, the privilege of preparing and the exclusive right to deal in which is let to the highest bidder by the Government for a fixed term of years. The present holder of the monopoly in Hong-Kong pays 205,000 dollars annually. The same arrangement is in vogue in Singapore, French Cochin China, and Macao. The process of preparation is thus described by Mr Hugh M'Callum, Government analyst at Hong- Kong :—

—{The opium is removed from its covering of leaves, &c., moistened with a little water, and allowed to stand for about fourteen hours 3 it is then divided into pans, 23 balls of opium and about 10 pints of water going to each pan; it is now boiled and stirred occasionally until a uniform mixture having the con- sistence ofa thin paste is obtained. This operation takes from five to six hours. The paste is at once transferred to a larger pan and cold water added to about 3 gallons, covered, and allowed to stand for from fourteen to fifteen hours. A bunch of 'tang suin' (amp-wick, the pith of some plant) is then inserted well into the mass, and the pan slightly canted, when a rich, clear, brown fluid is thus drawn off, and filtered through 'chi mui' (paper made from bamboo fibre). The residue is removed to a calico filter and thoroughly washed with boiling water, the wash water being reboiled

and used time after time. The last washing is done with pure water; these washings are used in the next day's boiling.

"The residues on the calico filters are transferred to a large one of the same

material and well pressed. This insoluble residue, called 'nai chai' (opium dirt), is the perquisite of the head boiling coolie, who finds a ready market for it in Canton, where it is used for adulterating, or rather in manufacturing, the moist inferior kinds of prepared opium. The filtrate or opinm solution is concen- trated by evaporation at the boiling point, with occasional stirring until of a proper consistence, the time required being from three to four hours ; it is then removed from the fire and stirred with great vigour till cold, the cooling being accelerated by coolies with large fans. When quite cold it is taken to the hong and kept there for some months before it is considered in prime condition for smoking. As thus prepared it has the consistence of a thin treacly extract, and is called boiled or prepared opium. In this: state it is largely exported from China to America, Australia, &c., being carefully sealed up in smal! pots having the name of the maker (i.e., hong) on each. 'The Chinese recognize the following grades of opium :—(1) 'raw opium,' as imported from India ; (2) 'prepared opium,' opium made as above ; (3) 'opium dross,' the scrapings from the opium pipe; this is reboiled and manufactured as a second-class prepared opium ; a Chinese doctor stated lately at a coroner's inquest on a case of poisoning that it was more poisonous than the ordinary pre- pared opium ; (4) 'nai chai' (opium dirt), the insoluble residue left on exhaust- ing the raw opium thoroughly with water. The opium is sent every day from the hong (i.e., shop or firm) to the boiling-house, the previous day's boiling being then returned to the hong. The average quantity boiled each day is from six to eight chests of Patna opium, this being the only kind used."

By this process of preparation a considerable portion of the nar- cotin, caoutchouc, resin, oil, or fatty and insoluble matters are removed, and the prolonged boiling, evaporating, and baking over a naked fire tend to lessen the amount of alkaloids present in the extract. The only alkaloids likely to remain in the prepared opium, and capable of producing. well-marked physiological results, are morphia, codeia, and narceia. Morphia, in the pure state, can

UPTiLvu mM

be sublimed, but codeia and narceia are said not to give a sub- limate. Even if sublimed in smoking opium, morphia would, in M'Callum's opinion, probably be deposited in the pipe before it reached the mouth of the smoker. The bitter taste of morphia is not noticeable when smoking opium, and it is therefore possible that the pleasure derived from smoking the drug is due to some product formed during combustion. This supposition is rendered probable by the fact that the opiums most prized by smokers are not those containing most morphia, and that the quality is judged by the amount of soluble matter in the opium, by its tenacity or "touch," and by peculiarities of aroma,—the Indian opium, especially the Patna kind, bearing much the same relation to the Chinese and Persian drug that champagne does to vin ordinaire. Opium-smoking is thus described by Mr Theo. Sampson of Canton :—

'*The smoker, lying on his side, with his face towards the tray and his head resting on a high hard pillow (sometimes made of earthenware, but more fre- quently of bamboo covered with leather), takes the pipe in his hand ; with the other hand he takes a dipper and puts the sharp end of itinto the opium, which is of a treacly consistency. Twist- ing it round and round he gets a large drop of the fluid toadhere to the dipper; still twisting itround to prevent it falling he brings the drop over the flame of the lamp, and twirl- ing it round and round he roasts it; all this is done with acquired dexterity. The opium must not be burnt or made too dry, but roasted gently till it looks like burnt worsted ; every now and then he takes it away from the flame and rolls it (still on the end of the dipper) on the flat surface of the bowl. When it is roasted « and rolled to his satisfaction he gently heats) the centre of the bowl, where there is a small

orifice ; then he quickly thrusts the end of the — ;

dipper into the orifice, twirls it round smartly, F16. 3.—Opium-smoking Appa- and withdraws it; if this is properly done, the tus. a, pipe; 6, dipper; ¢, opium (now about the size of a grain of hemp- lamp.

seed or a little larger) is left adhering to the bowl immediately over the orifice. It is now ready for smoking.

“The smoker assumes a comfortable attitude (lying down of course) at a proper distance from the lamp. He now puts the stem to his lips, and holds the bowl] over the lamp. The heat causes the opium to frizzle, and the smoker takes three or four long inhalations, all the time using the dipper to bring every particle of the x ge to the orifice as it burns away, but not taking his lips from the end of the stem, or the opium pellet from the lamp til! all is finished. Then he uses the flattened end of the dipper to scrape away any little residue there may be left around the orifice, and proceeds to prepare another pipe. The preparations occupy from five to ten minutes, and the actual smok- ing about thirty seconds. The smoke is swallowed, and is exhaled through both the mouth and the nose.”

Large quantities of morphia are exported to China from Europe for the purpose of preparing the so-called ‘cure for opium-smok- ing,” which consists of one-third of a grain of hydrochlorate of mor- phia mixed with a little powdered rice. The powders are taken at gradually increasing intervals, until the morphia is left off altogether.

Mr. Allen Williams, in a work recently published, states that there are now nearly a million persons in the United States who indulge in opium-smoking, and the habit seems to be on the in- crease in New York and other eastern cities, as well as in the west. The records of the National Bureau of Statistics show that, while the number of the Chinese in the United States has remained uearly stationary since 1876, the amount of opium imported has increased from 189,354 Tb of the crude and 49,375 tb of the pre- pared drug in 1872 to 248,211 tb of the former and 77,196 tb of the latter in 1880. Of the crude opium a certain quantity appears to be re-exported to the West Indies ; the larger proportion of the prepared drug is used in San Francisco.

So far as can be gathered from the conflicting statements pub- lished on the subject, opium-smoking may be regarded much in the same light as the use of alcoholic stimulants. To the great majority of smokers who use it moderately it appears to act asa stimulant, and to enable them to undergo great fatigue and to go for a considerable time with little or no food. According to the reports given by authorities on the subject, when the smoker has plenty of active work it appears to be no more injurious than

smoking tobacco. When carried to excess it becomes an inveterate habit ; but this happens chiefly in individuals of weak will-power, who would just as easily become the victims of intoxicating drinks, and who are practically moral imbeciles, often addicted also to other forms of depravity. The effect in bad cases is to cause loss of appetite, a leaden pallor of the skin, and a degree of leanness so excessive as to make its victims appear like living skeletons. All inclination for exertion becomes gradually lost, business is neglected, and certain ruin to the smoker follows. There can be no doubt that the use of the drug is opposed by all thinking Chinese who are not pecuniarily interested in the opium trade or cultivation, for several reasons, among which may be mentioned the drain of bullion from the country, the decrease of population, the liability to famine through the cultivation of opium where cereals should be grown, and the corruption of state officials.

See Pharmaceutical Journ., [1] xi. p. 269, xiv. p. 395; [2] x. p. 484; Impey, Report on Malwa Opium, Bombay, 1848; Report on Trade of Hankow, 1869; New

OP O—

Remedies, 1876, p. 229; Pharmacographia, 1879, p. 42; Journal of the Society of / aoe United States Dispensatory, 1883, p. 1054; The Friend of China, 1883, dec. "

OPODELDOC, a name now applied to a liniment com- posed of soap, camphor, the volatile oils of rosemary and origanum, solution of ammonia, and spirit of wine. It is made of such a consistence that it is solid at ordinary temperatures, but melts with the warmth of the hand. The origin of the name is lost in obscurity, but is believed to have been first applied to a plaster, invented by Mindererus or Paracelsus, and used for bruises and external injuries. In the Hdinburgh Pharmacopeia (1721) opodeldoc was official under the name of unguentum opodeldoch, and then consisted of thirteen aromatic ingredients besides Venice soap, camphor, and spirit of wine. Its first appear- ance in the London Pharmacopeia seems to have been in 1746 under the name of linimentum saponaceum. In the British Pharmacopeia of 1867 it is represented by the liniment of soap, which differs from the earlier prepara- tions in being fluid at ordinary temperatures.

OPORTO (a.e., GO Porto, The Port), the second city of the kingdom of Portugal, the capital of Entre Douro e Minho, the best-cultivated and the most fruitful province of the country, is situated on both banks of the Douro, about 3 miles from its mouth, in 41° 9' N. lat. and 8° 37' W. long. The part south of the Douro is known as Villa Nova da Gaia. The mouth of the river is obstructed by a very dangerous shifting sandbank, protected by a light-house and a castle situated in the village of Sao Jodo da Foz, which, along with Campanha, Paranhos, and Sordello, completes the suburbs. The population of the city is 80,295, and with the suburbs 108,346.

The view of the town from the river is singularly at- tractive and quaint. It possesses many buildings of 'interest, and picturesque thoroughfares, which, however,

eta La 5 ER: RR 3

Oporto and Mouth of the Douro.

from the situation of the city, are very steep and irre- gular. The principal edifices are the cathedral and the archbishop's palace—the latter, containing a fine staircase, conspicuously situated on a high rock—and the Torre dos Clerigos, a granite tower 210 feet high, built in 1748, commanding a splendid view, and visible at sea a long way off. The English factory (built in 1790), including a library, reading-room, and ballroom, is one of the largest buildings, while the exchange (once the monastery of S. Francisco) is perhaps the finest and most elaborately de- corated structure in the country. The walls and floor of the hall are entirely covered with beautiful inlaid devices in polished native-coloured woods of all hues brought from the virgin forests of the Brazils. The museum, the public library, containing over 80,000 volumes, the barracks, the Da Miseracordia Hospital, and the opera-house are the other most important public buildings. The Rua Nova dos In- glezes is the most frequented street, and the Rua das Flores is one of the most interesting from the rich display of gold-work, for which the town is famous, both in its shop windows as well as—more characteristically and attract- ively—on the persons of the fishwomen in their everyday garb. The Praca de San Ovidio, situated on the heights, and laid out in terraces of flowers, deserves a visit from the

traveller, while the Largo da Torre da Marva is interesting as standing on the site of the ancient Cale, from which

oP 9 795

the kingdom derives its name (Porto Cale). The chapel of Cedo Feita, said to have been founded in 559 by the Visigothic king Theodomir (but much more probably not till the 12th century), is very curious ; the church of Nossa Senhora da Lapa, a well-known landmark, is a handsome Corinthian edifice. The city at one time had no less than 80 monasteries and chapels. The English community main- tain a chaplain and a doctor, and have a cemetery for their own dead. Railways run from Oporto to Lisbon, and up the valley of the Douro to Pezo da Regoa, and recently a junction has been made with the line through Spain to Paris, whereby the long journey from Lisbon to that capital via Madrid is vastly shortened ; a branch also runs to the frontier town of Valenga on the Minho. Oporto pos- sesses good schools, a medical college with numerous chairs, and a botanical garden. Several newspapers appear daily.

The industries of Oporto are the most important and numerous in the kingdom, employing about 6000 hands, the chief being paper, linen, wool, cotton, silk, and gold manufactures, brocade, lace, glove, button, and pottery making. Oporto is chiefly famous for the export of the wine which bears its name, of which the great storehouses are on the south side of the river. The vines from which it is made grow on the Alto Douro, a hilly and pre- cipitous region lying about 60 miles up the river, and having an area of 27 miles in length by 5 or 6 in breadth, cut off from the sea, and shut in from the north-east by a range of mountains. The trade was established in 1678, but the shipments for some years did not exceed 600 pipes (of 115 gallons each). In 1708 Lord Methven made a treaty with Portugal, under which Portu- guese Wines were admitted on easier terms than those of Gascony, and henceforward "port" began to be drunk. In 1747 the export reached 17,000 pipes. In 1754 the great wine monopoly company of Oporto originated, under which the shipments rose to 33,000 pipes. At the beginning of the present century the policy of the Government more and more favoured port wine, besides which the vintages from 1802 to 1815 were splendid both in Portugal and in Madeira,—that of 1815 has, in fact,

never been excelled. For the next few years the grape crop was not at all good, but the 1820 vintage was the most remarkable of any. It was singularly sweet and black, besides being equal in quality to that of 1815. This henceforth became the standard taste and colour for true port, and to keep up the vintage of following years to this exceptional standard adulteration by elder-berries, syrup, and jeropiga was resorted to. This practice did not long continue, for it was cheaper to adulterate the best wines with inferior sorts of port wine itself. There is scarcely a Portuguese wine, says Crawfurd, in skilful and intelligent hands not capable of being made both sound and palatable without recourse to any sort of adulteration. Port is now one of the purest wines. In 1852 the Oidiwm which spread over Europe destroyed most of the Portuguese vineyards. In 1867 the second monopoly company was abolished, and since then the exports have been increasing till 1877, when the amount shipped was 61,278 pipes, of which England absorbed 38,898. Since 1863 the total exported has been 782,171 pipes (521,531 to England). In England port is adulterated with the red Spanish wine of Tarragona, which is a true wine, but procurable at half the cost of the cheapest port. The port wine duties are, however, not oppressive, and, though the Phylloxera has produced great ravages, the trade is still very pros- perous. Brand wines are those made of different vintages blended together ; " vintage" is a wine blended by nature herself, and is of rare occurrence.

Besides wine Oporto exports oranges (228,000,000 in 1878), onions, shipped as of Spanish growth, and varying vastly in amount accord- ing to the season, and olives (which go to Brazil alone, although they are cheaper and finer-flavoured when truly ripe than those of any other country). An important trade is done in live cattle. Portugal is one of the few countries never visited by the cattle- plague. They are sent to England as fat cattle, and are said to yield the finest grass-fed beef admitted into the country. About 15,000 head were imported in 1878. Feijées or haricot (mostly the black, feijao pret) beans form a considerable item of export to Brazil : 975,000 kilos were shipped in 1877. They are identical with those from Sorrento, and are a little dearer, but of a distinctly finer quality. Cork and sumach are also among the exports. The imports are numerous: codfish (bacalh&o), a national dish, in immense quantities, as well as coals and ore, are brought from Newfoundland, and cottons and yarns from Great

Britain (mostly), France, and Holland. Iron and steel goods were in 1877 imported from England to the amount of 7,000,000 kilos, paying a 5 per cent. ad valorem duty ; in 1878, however, Sweden and Norway entered strongly into competition. Coal is also imported from England, and costs the consumer in Oporto twice its cost there. In 1878 of

215 steamers which entered Oporto (no vessel, owing to the danger- ous bar, comes into this port to call simply) 153 were British. — History.—The history of Oporto dates from an early period. Before the Roman invasion, under the name of Gaia, or Cago, it was a town with a good trade; the Alani subsequently founded a city on the opposite or northern bank, calling it Castrum Novum. About 540 a.p. the Goths under Leovogild obtained possession of the northern district, who yielded place in 716 to the Moors under Abdul Hassan, who then conquered the whole of that region. The Christians, however, again gained possession by the overthrow of the Moors, when it became the key of their position for the long period during which the latter held sway in the southern provinces of Portugal. The Moors once more became its masters for a short period, till in 1092 it was brought by Dom Alfonso Frederico finally under Christian domination. The town is renowned also in English military annals from the duke of eo ages famous passage of the Douro in its immediate neighbourhood, close to where the fine bridge of the northern railway now spans the river, by which he surprised and put to flight Soult's army, capturing the city on the lith May 1809. It sustained a severe siege in 1833 during the civil war headed by Dom Miguel, and was bravely defended by Dom Pedro with 7500 men, but with the loss of 16,000 of its

inhabitants. ; See Commercial Reports for 1878-79 ; Report of Wine Committee of House of Commons in 1879; Crawfurd, Portugal, Old and New, 1872. (H./0. FE.)

OPOSSUM. The animals to which this name is applied are the only non-Australian members of the Marsupials or pouched animals, being found throughout the greater part of the continent of America, from the United States to Patagonia, the number of species being largest in the more tropical parts (see MammaL1a—Marsupialia, vol. xv. p. 380). They form

the family Didelphyidz, distinguished from the other Marsupial families by their equally deve- loped hind-toes, their nailless but fully opposable hallux, and by their dentition, its formula being 7% ci pm3 m4, total 50, a number only exceeded among heterodont Mammalia by the Australian Myrmecobius fasciatus. The peculiarity in the mode of succession of these teeth has been explained in the article referred to, where also (p. 378) a figure of the teeth may be seen. Opossums are small animals, varying from the size of a mouse to that of a large cat, with long noses, ears, and tails, the latter being as a rule naked and prehensile, and with their great toes so fully opposable to the other digits as to constitute a functionally perfect posterior pair of "hands." These oppos- able great toes are without nail or claw, but their tips are expanded into broad flat pads, which are no doubt of the greatest use to such a climbing animal asan opossum. On the anterior limbs all the five digits are provided with long sharp claws, and the pollex or thumb is but little opposable. Their numerous teeth are covered with minute sharply- pointed cusps, with which to crush the insects on which they feed, for the opossums seem to take in South America the place in the economy of nature filled in other countries by the true Lnsectivora, the hedgehogs, moles, and shrews.

The family consists of two well-recognized genera only, viz., Didelphys, containing all the members of the family, with the exception of the Yapock, a curious animal which forms by itself the second genus, Chironectes, and is dis- tinguished from all other opossums by its webbed feet, non-tuberculated soles, and peculiar coloration. Its ground colour is light grey, with four or five sharply-contrasted brown bands passing across its head and back, giving it a very peculiar mottled appearance. It is almost wholly aquatic in its habits, living on small fish, crustaceans, and other water animals; its range extends from Guatemala to southern Brazil.

The other genus of opossums, Didelphys, is an extremely heterogeneous one, and has been split up into several groups, some of which perhaps ought also to be recognized as genera. The first of these consists of three or four large dull-coloured long- and coarse-haired species, with perfect marsupial pouches, large leafy ears, and greatly-developed muscular ridges on their skulls. The best known of these, and indeed of all the family, is the Virginian Opossum,

OP O—

Ce cial o

Didelphys virginiana, an animal spread over all temperate North America ; it is extremely common, being even found living in the towns, where it acts as a scavenger by night, retiring for shelter by day upon the roofs of the houses or into the sewers. It produces in the spring from six to sixteen young ones, which are placed by the mother in her pouch immediately after birth, and remain there until able to take care of themselves; the period of gestation is from fourteen to seventeen days. Another very similar species is found in central and tropical South America, and is known as the Crab-eating Opossum (D. cancrivora). The second group, or sub-genus, named Metachirus, con- tains a considerable number of species found all over the tropical parts of the New World. They are of medium size, with short close fur, very long, scaly, and naked tails, and have less developed ridges on their skulls. They have as a rule no pouches in which to carry their young, and the latter therefore commonly ride on their mother's back, holding on by winding their prehensile tails round hers. The accompanying woodcut represents Lord Derby's Opossum (D. derbiana) carrying its young in this manner.

i

Didelphys derbiana.

The third group is Micoureus (Grymexomys of Burmeister), differing only from Metachirus by the comparatively smaller size of its members and by certain slight differences in the shape of their teeth. Its best-known species is the Murine Opossum (D. murina), no larger than a house-mouse, of a bright-red colour, which is found as far north as central Mexico, and extends thence right down to the south of Brazil. The last sub-genus contains three or four wonder- fully shrew-like species, of very small size, with short, hairy, and non-prehensile tails, not half the length of the trunk, and with wholly unridged skulls. The most striking mem- ber of the groupis the Three-striped Opossum (D. tristriata), from Brazil, which is of a reddish-grey colour, with three clearly-defined deep-black bands down its back, very much as in some of the striped mice of Africa. This sub-genus

~~has been named Hemiurus or "half-tail" by Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire (Microdelphys of Burmeister), and should perhaps be allowed full generic rank.~~

~~The numerous fossil remains referable to species of the Didel- phyidz are of special interest as showing some of the connecting links in geographical distribution between the opossums and the Australian Marsupials, now so widely and absolutely separated. They consist of the bones of a considerable number of species from the Eocene and Early Miocene deposits of central France, one or two Eocene species having also been found in southern England. These ancient opossums have been separated generically from Di- delphys on account of certain differences in the relative sizes of the lower — but as nearly the whole of the species have been formed on lower jaws only, of which some hundreds have been found, it is impossible to judge how far these differences are correlated with other dental or osteological characters. In the opinion of Dr Filhol, who has devoted considerable attention to the subject, the fossils themselves represent two genera, Peratherium, containing~~

~~OP P—~~

~~the greater part of the species, about twenty in number, and Amphi- perathertum, with three species only. All are comparatively small animals, few of them exceeding the size of a rat.~~

~~Besides these interesting European fossils, a certain number of Didelphian bones have been found in the caves of Brazil, but these are either closely allied to or identical with the species now living in the same region. @, Wy)~~

~~OPPELN (Polish, Oppolie), the chief town of a district of its own name and the seat of government for Upper Silesia, Prussia, lies on the right bank of the Oder, 50 miles to the south-east of Breslau. It contains the oldest Christian church in the district, founded at the close of the 10th century, and a ducal palace of the 15th century, on an island in the Oder. The most prominent among the other buildings are the offices of the district authorities, the town-house, the normal seminary, and the hospital. The Roman Catholic gymnasium is established in an old Jesuit college. The industries of Oppeln include the manufacture of Portland cement, soap,~~

~~cigars, and lime ; and a trade is carried on by rail and river in cattle, grain, and the mineral produce of the district. The population in 1880 was 14,447, of whom 10,772 were Roman Catholics. The upper classes speak German, the lower Polish.~~

~~Oppeln was already a flourishing place at the beginning of the 11th century, and after 1132 was the capital of an independent duchy, which became a fief of Bohemia in 1327, and was absorbed by the empire in 1556.~~

~~OPPENHEIM, a small town in the grand-duchy of Hesse-Darmstadt, Germany, is picturesquely situated on a hill on the left bank of the Rhine, 20 miles to the south of Mainz. It contains (1880) 3288 inhabitants, half Roman Catholics and half Protestants, who cultivate the vine and manufacture tacks, quinine, and leather.~~

~~Oppenheim, which occupies the site of the Roman castle Bau- conica, was formerly much larger than at present ; and in the early Middle Ages it was a free town of the empire and one of the most important members of the Rhenish League. It lost its independ- ence in 1898, when it was given in pledge to the elector palatine. During the Thirty Years' War the town was alternately occupied by the Swedes and the Imperialists, and in 1689 it was entirely destroyed by the French under Melac. The only relic of its former importance is the church of St Catherine, one of the most beautiful Gothic edifices of the 13th and 14th centuries in Germany, recently carefully restored at the expense of Government.~~

~~OPPIAN. The literary history of the three Greek poems on fishing, hunting, and fowling respectively which have come down to us from antiquity under the name of Oppian involves several perplexing questions. According to Suidas, Eusebius, and Syncellus, the author was a native of Anazarbus or Corycus in Cilicia, and flourished in the reign of Marcus Aurelius. Athenzeus also, who almost certainly wrote under Septimius Severus, speaks of Oppian as a predecessor and near contemporary. According to an anonymous biographer, he was the son of a philosopher of Anazarbus named Agesilaus, who having incurred the dis- pleasure of Severus by neglecting to wait upon him was banished to Malta. Young Oppian accompanied his father, and by the exercise of his poetical talents obtained his re- call, and was further rewarded by a piece of gold for every line he~~

had written. He died prematurely upon his return to his native country, and was honoured by an epitaph, which has been preserved, celebrating his precocious genius, but affording no clue to his works or his date. On turning to Oppian himself we find that his poem on fish and fishing (Halieutica) is actually addressed to an emperor Antoninus who can have been no other than Marcus Aurelius, since the monarch's son is frequently mentioned, and the other Antonine princes were childless. The author seems to speak of himself as a Cilician. On the other hand, the poem on hunting (Cynegetica) is no less unmistakably addressed to the successor of Severus, Antoninus Caracalla, and the writer represents himself as a citizen of Pella or Apamea in Syria. The style of the two poems, moreover, is dis- similar, the former being polished and poetical, the latter

OMe 197

inelegant and commonplace. If the Cynegetica had been the earlier this might have been explained, but the reverse is the fact. There seems no alternative, therefore, but to divide the authorship, and the allusions of the author of the Halieutica to Commodus make it almost certain that he must have written between the elevation of that prince to the dignity of Augustus and the death of Marcus (177- 180 a.D.), while the Cynegetica seem to have been composed after the death of Severus (211 a.p.). The improbability of two poets of the same name and writing on such simi- lar subjects having been such near contemporaries may be escaped by the supposition that the later writer was not really named Oppian, but has been confounded with his prede- cessor from their poems being transcribed together. This is the more probable as the poem on fowling (Ixeutica), which seems to resemble the Cynegetica in style, but 1s only extant in a prose epitome, is attributed in some MSS. to a certain Dionysius. In this case Oppian's premature death and his epitaph may be accepted as historical and genuine. The story of his deliverance of his father must be apocryphal, and the imperial reward is probably founded upon a too literal interpretation of the epithet " golden" applied to his verses.

The Halieutica are indeed excellent verses. Oppian has made the most of his subject, which he has adorned with all the resources of aquatic fancy and fable, and to which he has ingeniously imparted human interest by

~~constant parallels between the existence of fishes and the pursuits and perils of human life. His matter is arranged to the best advantage: "he loves descriptions," says M. Henri Martin, "' but not digressions." Though careless of fact in comparison with poetic embellishment, he has a first-hand acquaintance with his theme as a sportsman and a lover of nature. His diction is choice, his style animated, and his versification sonorous. Rhetorical display, the accumula- tion of detail, and an occasional inaptness in his compari- sons are his only serious faults. The writer of the Cyne- getica, who sometimes copies and spoils him, is a far in- ferior writer, frequently tasteless, generally awkward and dry. Some of his descriptions, however, possess merit ; he is a naturalist as well as a poet, and his observation of nature is often remarkably close, although, like his pre- decessor, he abounds in fables. His poem seems to want a final book, in which the stratagems of the chase would have been more fully described, The poetical qualities of the Ixeutica, if any, have evaporated in the paraphrase ; the descriptions of the fowler's snares are clear and precise.~~

~~The Halieutica were first printed in 1478, in the metrical Latin version of L. Lippus. The editio princeps of the original was pub- lished by Junta at Florence in 1515; the Haliewtica and Cyne- getica were printed together by Aldus in 1517; the Jxeutica did nat appear till 1704. The principal modern editions are those by Schneider (Strasburg, 1776), who first distinguished between the two Oppians, and by Lehrs (Paris, 1846, along with the Bucolic poets), who adopted a number of ingenious emendations by Koechly. Copious scholia on the Halicutica were edited by Bussemaker (Paris, 1849). The best authorities on the literary questions connected with the Oppians are Ferdinand Peter, Comimentatio, Zeitz, 1840 ; Henri Martin in the Journal général del Instruction Publique, vols. xxxi. and xxxii.; and Ausfeld, De Oppiano, &c., Gotha, 1876. The English translation of the Halieutica by Diaper, completed by Jones (Oxford, 1722), is not deficient in spirit, but much too diffuse. The French prose translations by Limes and Belin de Ballu have been superseded by Bourquin's, Coulommiers, 1877. (R. G.)~~

~~OPPIUS, Carus, was an intimate friend and confidant of Julius Cesar. He managed the dictator's private affairs, and took no public office, but during the time when Cesar was absent from Rome he, together with Balbus,~~

exercised very great influence on public business. According to Suetonius, many authorities considered Oppius to have written the histories of the Spanish, African, and Alexan- drian wars which are printed among the works of Cesar. Niebuhr unhesitatingly assigns the African war to Oppius.

OPTICS, Gzomerricat. The subject of optics is so extensive that some subdivision of it is convenient if not necessary. Under the head of Licur will be found a general sketch accompanied by certain developments. The wave theory and those branches of the subject which are best expounded in connexion with it are reserved for treat- ment ina later volume. The object of the present paper is to give some account of what is generally called geo- metrical optics,—a theoretical structure based upon the laws of reflexion and refraction. We shall, however, find it advisable not to exclude altogether the conceptions of the wave theory, for on certain most important and practical questions no conclusions can be drawn without the use of facts which are scarcely otherwise interpretable. Indeed it is not to be denied that the too rigid separation of optics into geometrical and physical has done a good deal of harm, much that is essential to a pro- C per comprehension of the subject havy- ing fallen between the two stools.

Systems of Rays im General.—In the investigation of this subject a few preli- minary propositions will be useful.

Tf a ray AB (fig. 1) travelling in a homogeneous medium suffer reflexion at a plane or curved surface BD, the total path between any two points A, C on the ray isa minimum, 2.¢, AB+ BC is less along the actual path than it would be if the point B were slightly varied.

For a variation of B in a direction perpendicular to the plane of reflexion (that of the diagram) the truth of this statement is at once evident. Fora small variation BB' in the plane of reflexion we see that the difference AB' — AB is equal to the projection of BB' upon AB, and that the difference CB — CB' is equal to the projection of BB' upon BC. These projections are equal, since by the law of re- flexion AB and BC are equally inclined to BB', and thus the variation of the total path, AB'+B'C-(AB+ BC), vanishes,

A corresponding proposition holds good in the case of refraction. If we multiply the distances travelled in the first and second media respectively by the refractive indices appropriate to the media, the quantity so obtained is a minimum for the actual path of the ray from any point to any other. It is sufficient to consider the case of a varia- tion of the point of passage in the plane of refraction.

In the first medium (fig. 2) »AB' — »AB= ,BB'cos ABD, and in the second medium p' CB — p' CB' = p' BB' cos CBD. The whole variation of the A quantity in question is therefore BB' (wu cos ABD — p' cos CBD).

Now by the law of refrac- tion the sines of the angles of incidence and refraction are in the ratio p':p, and accordingly

» cos ABD -f cos CBD=0.

In whichever direction, therefore, the point of tran- sition be varied, the varia- tion of the quantity under consideration is zero. It is evident that the second pro- position includes the first, since in the case of reflexion the two media are the same.

Fig. 2.

GPTICS

The principle of the superposition of variations now allows us to make an important extension. If the quantity, which we may denote by 2s, be a minimum for separate variations of all the points of passage between contiguous media, it is also a minimum even when simultaneous varia- tions are admitted. Howeveer many times a ray may be reflected or refracted at the surfaces of various media, the actual path of the ray between any two points of its course makes Zs a minimum. Even if the variations of refrac- tive index be gradual instead of sudden, the same principle holds good, and the actual path of the ray makes /yds, as it would now be written, a minimum.

The principle itself, though here deduced from the laws of reflexion and refraction, is an immediate consequence of the fundamental suppositions of

~~the wave-theory of light, and if we are prepared to adopt this point of view we may conversely deduce the laws of reflexion and re- fraction from the principle. The refractive index p is in- versely proportional to the velocity of propagation, and the principle simply asserts that in passing from any point to any other the light follows the shortest course, that is, the course of earliest arrival.~~

~~If two points be such that rays issuing from one of them, and ranging through a finite angle, converge to the other after any number of reflexions and refractions, the value of 2s from one focus to the other must be the same for all the rays.~~

~~Thus, in order to condense rays issu- ing from one point S upon a second point H by a single reflexion (fig. 3), dctines the reflecting surface must be such that SP + HP =const., 1.¢., must be an ellipsoid of revolution with S and H for foci.~~

~~Again, if it be required to effect the same operation by a single refraction at the surface of a medium whose index is #, we see that P~~

~~the surface (fig. 4) must be such that Ss SP+HP=const.~~

~~If S be at an in- Fig. 4.~~

~~finite distance, 7.¢., if the incident rays be parallel, the surface is an ellipsoid of revolution with H for focus, and of eccentricity w-1 (u>1).~~

~~Another important proposition, obvious from the point of view of the wave-theory, but here requiring an independ- ent proof, was enunciated by Malus. It asserts that a system of rays, emanating originally from a point, retains always the property of being normal to a surface, whatever reflexions or refractions it may undergo in traversing singly- refracting media.~~

~~Suppose that ABCDE, A'B'C'D'E' .. . (fig. 5) are rays originally normal to a , surface AA', which undergo reflexions or refractions at BB', CC', &ce. On every ray take points E, EF', &e., such that Zps is the same along the courses AE, A'E', &c. We shall prove that the rays in the final medium are~~

normal to the surface EE'. For by hypothesis 2ps along ABCDE is the same as along

Fig. 5. A'B'CTDE,, and, by the property proved above to attach to every ray, 2us reckoned along the neighbouring hypo-

OPTiIiCcs

thetical course A'BCDE' is the same as along A'B/C'D''E'. Hence Zps along A'BCDE" is the same as along ABCDE, or (on subtraction of the common part) the same along A'B, DE' as along AB, DE. But since AB is perpendicular to AA', the value along A'B is the same as along AB, and there- fore the value along DE' is the same as along DE; or, since the index is the same, DE= DF', that is, EE' is perpendi- cular to DE. The same may be proved for every point E' which lies infinitely near E, and thus the surface EE' is perpendicular to the ray DE, and by similar reasoning to every other ray of the system. It follows that reflexions and refractions cannot deprive a system of rays of the pro- perty of being normal to a surface, and it is evident that a system issuing from a point enjoys the property initially.

Consecutive rays do not in general intersect one another ; but if we select rays which cut the orthogonal surface along a line of curvature, we meet with ultimate intersec- tion, the locus of points thus determined being a caustic curve to which the rays are tangents. Other lines of cur- vature of the same set give rise to similar caustic curves, and the locus of these curves is a caustic surface to which every ray of the system is a tangent. By considering the other set of lines of curvature we obtain a second caustic surface. Thus every ray of the system touches two caustic surfaces.

In the important case in which the system of rays is symmetrical about an axis, the orthogonal surface is one of revolution. The first set of lines of curvature coincide with meridians. The rays corresponding to any one meridian meet in a caustic curve, and the surface which would be traced out by causing this to revolve about the axis is the first caustic surface. The second set of lines of curvature are the circles of latitude perpendicular to the meridians. The rays which are normal along one of these circles form a cone of revolution, and meet in a point situ- ated on the axis of symmetry.

The second caustic surface of the general theorem is therefore here represented by a portion of the axis.

The character of a limited symmetrical pencil of rays is illustrated in fig. 6, in which BAC is the ortho- gonal surface, and HFI the caustic curve having a cusp at F', the so-called geometrical focus. The distance FD between F and the point where the extreme ray BHDG cuts the axis is called the longitudinal aberration. On account of the sym- metry FD is an even function of AB. If the !

il be small, we ma C penci ' y in general consider FD to be proportional to AB?, although in particular cases the aberration may vanish to this order of approximation. Let us examine the nature of the sections at various points as they may be exhibited by holding a piece of paper in the solar rays converging from a common burning-glass of large aperture. In moving the paper towards the focus nothing special is observed up to the position HI, where the caustic surface is first reached. A bright ring is there formed at the margin of the illuminated area, and this gradually contracts. At D the second caustic surface DF is reached, and a bright spot develops itself at the centre. A little farther back, at EG, the area of the illuminated patch is a minimum, and its boundary is called the least circle of aberration. Farther back still the outer boundary corre- sponding to the extreme rays begins to enlarge, although

Fig. 6.

709

the circle of intersection with the caustic surface continues to contract. Beyond F the caustic surfaces are passed, and no part of the area is specially illuminated.

As a simple example of a symmetrical system let us take the case of parallel rays QR, OA (fig. 7), incident upon a spherical minor AR. By the law of reflexion the angle ORg= angle ORQ = angle gOR. Hence the triangle RgO is isosceles, and if we denote the radius of the surface OAA by 7, and the angle AOR by a, we have

Oq

~ 2 cosa

If F be the geometrical focus, OF=AF=4r. If a be a small angle, the longitudinal

Fig. 7.

aberration Fg=Og -OF =$47 (sec a—1)=)a2r, in which AR=ra. Focal lines.—In the general case of a small pencil of

rays there is no one point which can be called the geo-

metrical focus. Consider the corresponding small area of the orthogonal surface and its two sets of lines of curvature. Of all the rays which are contiguous to the central ray there are only two which intersect it, and these will in general intersect it at different points. These points may be regarded as foci, but it is in a less perfect sense than in the case of symmetrical pencils. Even if we limit ourselves to rays in one of the principal planes, the aberration is in general a quantity of the first order in the angle of the pencil, and not, as before, a quantity of the second order. If, however, we neglect this aberration and group the rays in succession according to the two sets of lines of curvature, we see that the pencil of rays passes through two focal lines perpendicular to one another and to the central ray, and situated at the centres of curvature of the orthogonal surface. At some intermediate place the section of the pencil is circular.

It happens not unfrequently that the pencil under con- sideration forms part of a symmetrical system, but is limited in such a manner that the central ray of the pencil does not coincide with the axis of the system. The plane of the meridian of the orthogonal surface is called the primary plane, and the corresponding focus, situated on the caustic surface, the primary focus. The secondary focus is on the axis of symmetry through which every ray passes, The distinction of primary and secondary is also employed when the system, though not of revolution, is symmetrical with respect to a plane passing through the central ray, this plane being considered primary.

~~The formation of focal lines is well shown experimentally by a plano-convex lens of plate-glass held at an obliquity of 20° or 30° in the path of the nearly parallel rays, which diverge from a small image of the sun formed by a lens of short focus. The convex face of the lens is to be turned towards the parallel rays, and a piece of red glass may be interposed to mitigate the effects of chromatic dispersion.~~

~~To find the position of the focal lines of a small pencil incident obliquely upon a plane refracting surface of index p.~~

~~The complete system of rays issuing from Q (fig. 8) and refracted at the plane surface CA is symmetrical about the line QC drawn through Q perpendicularly to the surface. Hence, if QA be the central ray of the pencil, the secondary focus q, lies at the inter- section of the refracted ray with the axis. If @ be the angle of incidence, ¢' of refraction, AQ=u, Aq.=v., then~~

~~eT (1).~~

~~To find the position of the primary focus q,, let QA' be a neigh- bouring ray in the primary plane (that of the paper) with angles of incidence and refraction ¢ + 6¢ and ¢'+6¢', Aqg;=v. We have AA' cos $=uUd¢, AA' cos '=12,65¢' ; moreover, by the law of refraction, cos ¢ bf =p Cos P'b¢' ;~~

~~800~~

~~and thus : iy cine tacat (2). u ~~ cos?d~~

~~If the refracting surface be curved, with curvature r~1, we get by similar reasoning~~

~~24) 2 —~~

~~Mcos'p cos'p wcosd ell civees (8)3 Vy u r iy Lk Kel: 5 (4); % r ;~~

~~in which (1) and (2) are of course included as particular cases.~~

~~D~~

Fig. 8.

When the incidence is direct, cos ¢' = 1, cos = 1, and vw = %. In this case (3) and (4) become oc oF To find the positions of the focal lines of a pencil refracted obliquely through a plate of thickness t and index m. If be the angle of incidence (and emergence), ¢' the angle of refraction of the ray QAST (fig. 9), ity Sq.=V, AQ=u, we get

by successive applications of (1) and (2) =u + = S, on Diet eaganeeoaals (6) ; Vg=U+ ~ Fiala dices CA: If the incidence be direct, Y=, =U+ eee (8).

Thus, if we interpose a plate between the eye and an object, the effect is to bring the object apparently nearer by the amount

(ult

i On this result is founded a method for determining the refractive index of materials in the form of plates.

Prism.—Byaprism is meant in optics a portion of transparent material limited by two plane faces which meet ata finite angle ina straight line called the edge of the prism. A section perpendicular to the edge is called a principal section.

Parallel rays, refracted successively at the two faces, emerge from the prism as a system of parallel rays. The angle through which the rays are bent is called the deviation.

The deviation depends upon the angles of incidence and emergence ; but, since the course of a ray may always be reversed, the deviation is necessarily a symmetrical func- tion of these angles. The deviation is consequently a maximum or a minimum when a ray within the prism is equally inclined to the two faces, in which case the angles of incidence and emergence are equal. It is in fact a mini- mum ; and this position of the prism is described as the

Fig. 9.

OP TICE

position of minimum deviation, and is usually adopted for the purposes of measurement.

The relation between the minimum deviation D, the angle of the prism A z, and the refrac- tive index yp is readily found. In fig. 10 the internal angles ¢', y are each equal to 42. The external an- gles ¢, w are also equal, and are con- — nected with ¢' by the law of refrac-

Fig. 10. tion sn $= sin $'. The deviation is 2(4—¢'). Hence sing sin 4(D +7) ;

~ sing' sings ?

and this is the formula by which the refractive index is usually determined, since both D and 7 can be measured with great precision.

The instrument now usually employed for this purpose is called a goniometer or spectrometer. Parallel rays are provided by a collimator, consisting of an object-glass and telescope-tube, by means of which the subject of examina- tion, either a fine slit or a set of cross wires, is seen as if it were at an infinite distance. The parallel rays from the collimator, after reflexion from a face or refraction through the body of the prism, are received by a telescope also provided with a set of cross wires at its focus. The table upon which the prism is supported, as well as the telescope, are capable of rotation about a vertical axis, and the position of either can be read off at any time by means of graduated circles and verniers.

As a preliminary to taking an observation it is neces- sary to focus the collimator and telescope. The first step is to adjust the eye-lens of the telescope until the cross wires are seen distinctly and without effort. The proper posi- tion depends, of course, upon the eyesight of the observer, and is variable within certain limits in virtue of the power of accommodation. It is usually best to draw out the lens nearly to the maximum distance consistent with dis- tinct vision. The telescope is now turned to a distant object and focused by a common motion of the cross wires and eye-lens, until both the object and the cross wires are seen distinctly at the same time.

‘The final test of the adjustment is the absence of a relative motion when the eye is moved sideways across the eye-piece. The colli- mator is now brought opposite to the telescope and adjusted until the cross wires in its focus behave precisely like the distant object.

To measure the angle of a prism it may be placed with its edge vertical upon the table, in a symmetrical position with respect to the collima- tor (fig. 11). The telescope is then successively brought into such positions that the cross wires of the telescope coincide with the cross wires of the collimator when seen by reflexion in the two faces.

The difference of the read- ings is twice the angle of the prism.

Another method is also Bae AP often employed in which the telescope is held fixed and the prism is rotated. The angle between the two posi- tions of the table found by use in succession of the two faces is the supplement of the angle of the prism.

or rics

Suppose next that we wish to determine D for the given prism and for sodium light. The’slit of the collimator is backed by a sodium flame, the telescope is adjusted for direct vision of the slit, and the reading taken. The prism is now placed upon the table, and rotated until the devia- tion of the light from its original direction when seen through the prism isa minimum. The difference of the readings for the two positions of the telescope is the value of D. The angle to be observed may be doubled by using the deviation in both directions. In this case no direct reading in the absence of the prism is required.

The following table of indices of refraction is taken from Watt’s Dictionary of Chemistry, article ‘ Light.”

Index of Index of Name of Substance. amachon Name of Substance. Haltaction.

Chromate of lead .. 2°50 to 2°97 || Phosphoric acid …. 1°534 Diamond ……— ..| 2°47 to 2°75 || Sulphate of copper ..| 1°531 to 1°552

PROSPHOPUA. <),.. 0… 00. 2°224 Canada balsam …... 1°532 Glass ofantimony .. 2°216 Clie acid: 5.5). com 1527 Sulphur (native) .... 2115 Crown glass -»»| 1°525 to 1°534 RROD Miraritens. «is 4+ 0% « 1°95 INt ok abo agg OeIde Done ec 1-514 Borate of lead …... 1°866 Plate PIASs 2.60600. | 1°514 to 1°542 Carbonate of lead ….) 1°81 to 2°08 {| Spermaceti …..... 1°503 BED ONG N, sarsVOUS /.(0 eiciace tain ares 1°764 Sulphate of potassium 1°500 WPOUTMEMN 50… 06 -e2.ns 1°668 Ferrous sulphate …. 1°494 Topaz (colourless).... 1°610 Tallow} WAR... c0c00. 1:492 CRE yllincifars, sis Siete verstelos eis 1°598 Sulphateofmagnesium 1°488 Tortoise-shell…..... 1‘591 Iceland spar …..... 1°654 MSTA. oie see vse e 1°585 (Ove Gh tiles os on goqeor 1°488 PUIG GIARS) voic.c cies alee 5k GO USSF | Guatinn 2i5)< 65,0. st0 earstereroiate 1:476 Rock-crystal …..... 1°547 BONA 2 cchgeis sre sean 1:475 Rock-salt…….....05 1°545 ARB EIN yei ages over Protelsea cots 1-457 Apophyllite …..... 17543 TPUORS AB 5g e-ciea) 1°436 ColophOny? jsysssievien oe 17543 | CORE CREB oS ae anOp oon. 1310 DUREE ceva icietrer 1535 Tabasheer af 11115

A selection from some results given by Hopkinson,! relating to Chance’s glasses, may be useful to those engaged in the designing of optical instruments. D is the more refrangible of the pair of sodium lines ; } is the most refrangible of the group of magnesium lines ; (G) is the hydrogen line near G.

| Double

Hard xtra . Extra

Soft : Light Dense Extra

Crown Light : é Dense 4 oa Crown. Flint. Flint. Flint. Flint. Dense Flint.

Specific : : c , ; : c 4 Grecite f 2°48575 | 2°55035 5 86636 | 3°20609 | 3°65865 | 3°88947 | 4°42162 is! eee 1518625 | 1°510916 | 1°536450 | 1°568558 | 1°615701 | 1642874 | 1°701060 CL… ..| 19514568 | 1°511904 | 1°537673 | 1°570011 | 1°617484 | 1644866 | 1°703478 D …...| 19517114 | 1°514591 | 1°541011 | 1°574015 | 1°622414 | 1°650388 | 1‘710201) eee 1°520331 | 1‘518010 | 1°545306 | 1°579223 | 1°628895 | 1657653 |

1°719114 OR ssteracaee 1°520967 | 1°518686 | 1°546166 | 1°580271 | 1°630204 | 1°659122 | 1°720924 We sired 1‘523189 | 1°520996 | 1°549121 | 1°583886 | 1‘634748 | 1°664226 | 1°727237 (eC) Wesecc 1°527994 | 1°526207 | 1°555863 | 1°592190 | 1°645267 | 1°676111 | 1°742063 OMe oc 1°528358 | 1°526595 | 1°556372 | 1°592824 | 1°646068 | 1°677019 | 1°743204 bh… | 1°580902 | 1°529359 | 1°560010 | 1°597332 | 1°651840 | 1°683577 | 1°751464 ABE seveweis. oc 1°532792 | 1°531416 | 1°562760 | 1°600727 | 1°656219 | 1-688569 | 1°757785

To determine the index of refraction of a liquid it must of course be placed in a hollow prism, whose faces are formed of some trans- parent material, usually of glass. The following results of Dale and Gladstone show the influence of temperature upon the refract- ing power of some important liquids. They relate to the soda flame, or the line D in the solar spectrum.

Tempera- | Bisulphide of Alcohol ture. Carbon. Water Ether, Absolute. Ce 1°6442 1°3330 ae ala 10° 1°6346 1:3827 1°3592 13658 20° 1°6261 1°3320 1°3545 1°3615 Ser 1°6182 1°3309 1°3495 1°3578 40° 1°6103 1:3297 ee 1°3536 50° a 1°3280 1°3491 60° 1°3259 1°34387

Refractive Indices of Bisulphide of Carbon for the several

Fixed Lines. Temperature. A B D E F ni i 16142 1°6207 1°6333 1°6465 1°6584 1°6836 86°°5 1°5945 1°6004 1°6120 1°6248 1°6362 1°6600 Difference ….| 0°0197 0°0203 0°0213 0°0217 0°0222 0-0236

The rapid alteration of refractive power with temperature is a serious obstacle to the use of bisulphide of carbon prisms for exact

1 Proc. Roy. Soc., June 1877.

purposes. Not only does the dispersive power vary from day to day, but inequalities of temperature in the various parts of the liquid at any one moment disturb the optical uniformity, and are thus the cause of bad definition. A difference of 1° Cent. alters the index about as much as a change in the light from one of the two D lines to the other, so that a

~~variation of one degree within the prism may be expected to prevent the satisfactory resolution of this double line.~~

~~Excellent results have recently been obtained by Liveing with prisms containing aqueous solution of iodide of potassium and mercury. This liquid can be brought up to a density as high as three times that of water, and gives a powerful dispersion. Some difficulty has, however, been experienced in finding a suitable cement for the faces. Bisulphide of carbon prisms are usually cemented with a mixture of glue and treacle.~~

~~For many purposes the deviation of the light in passing through an ordinary prism is objectionable. In such cases recourse may be had to direct vision prisms (fig. 12), in which two materials, usually flint and crown, are sO com- bined that the re- fractions are equal and opposite for a selected ray, while the dispersions are as unequal as may be. The direct vision prism may be contrasted with the achromatic lens (see Licut). In the first the object is to obtain dispersion without refraction, and in the second to obtain refraction without dispersion.~~

~~Compound prisms, composed of a flint between two crowns, are also made, in which the action of the crown is not carried so far as to destroy the deviation due to the flint. By this construction a larger angle is admissible for the more dispersive material, but it is not clear that any sufficient advantage is gained.~~

~~The principle of the compound prism is carried to its limit by employing media of eyual refracting power for the part of the spectrum under examination. For this pur- pose bisulphide of carbon and flint glass may be chosen. With Chance's "dense flint" the refractions are the same, and the difference of dispersions is about as great as for "double-extra-dense flint" and crown. A dozen glass prisms of 90° may be cemented in a row on a strip of glass and immersed in a tube of bisulphide of carbon closed at the ends by glass plates. To vary the ray, which passes with- out deviation, ether may be mixed with the bisulphide.?~~

~~The formation of a pure spectrum, which may be either thrown upon a screen or photographic plate, or received at once by the eye armed with a magnifier, has been explained under Licut. It sometimes happens that the~~

object is not to see the spectrum itself, but to arrange a field of view uniformly illuminated with approximately homogeneous light. For this purpose the pure spectrum is received upon a screen perforated by a narrow slit parallel to the fixed lines. The light which passes this second slit (eye- slit) is approximately homogeneous. Suppose that it corre- sponds to the red of the spectrum. The eye, placed im- mediately behind the eye-slit, receives only red light, and, if focused upon the prism, sees a red field of view whose brightness is uniform if the light falling in different direc- tions upon the original slit be uniform. 'To secure the fulfilment of the last condition we may use the light from an overcast sky, or that of the sun reflected from a large surface of white paper. If it be desired to work by arti- ficial light, an Argand gas flame diffused by an opal globe will be found suitable. When the adjustments are correct the tint should be perfectly uniform. Any difference of colour on the two sides of the field of view is an indication that the screen is not in its proper place.

The most important application of this arrangement is to the investigation of compound colours, as carried out by Maxwell. If light be admitted also through a second slit,

2 See "Investigations in Optics," Phil. Mag., January 1880. 3 "Theory of Compound Colours," Phil. Trans., 1860. XVII. — Io1

Fig. 12.

802

displaced laterally from the position occupied by the first, a second spectrum overlapping the former will be thrown upon the screen, and a second kind of light will be admitted to the eye. In this way we may obtain a field of view lighted with a mixture of two or more spectrum colours, and we may control the relative proportions by varying the widths of the slits. For instance, by mixing almost any kind of red with any kind of green not inclining to blue we may match the brightest yellows, proving what so many find it difficult to believe, that yellow is a com- pound colour. In Maxwell's systematic examination of the spectrum, mixtures of three colours were used, and the proportions were adjusted so as to match the original white light incident upon the apparatus.

~~A similar arrangement (with one original slit) was em- ployed by Helmholtz in his examination of a fundamental question raised by Brewster. The latter physicist main- tained that there was abundant evidence to show that light of definite refrangibility was susceptible of further analysis by absorption, so that the colour of light (even of given brightness) could not be defined in terms of refrangibility or wave-length alone. The appearances which misled Brewster have since been explained as the effect of contrast or of insufficient purity. It is obvious that light, e.g., from the red end of the spectrum, may be contaminated with light from some other part, say the yellow, in such propor- tion that though originally entirely preponderant it may fall into the second place under the action of a medium very much more transparent to yellow than to red. To obtain light of sufficient purity for these experiments Helmholtz found it advisable to employ a double prismatic analysis. A spectrum is first thrown upon a screen per- forated by a slit in the manner already described. The light which penetrates the second slit, already nearly pure, is caused to pass a second prism by the action of which any stray light is thrown aside. Using such doubly puri- fied light, Helmholtz found the colour preserved, whatever absorbing agents were brought into play. Light of given refrangibility may produce a variety of effects, visual, thermal, or chemical, but (apart from polarization) it is not itself divisible into parts of different kinds. If yellow light produces the compound sensation of yellow, we are to seek the explanation in the constitution of the retina, and not in the divisibility of the light.~~

~~In all accurate work with the prism the use of a collimating lens to render the incident light parallel is a matter of necessity. If the incident rays diverge from a point at a finite distance, the pencil after emergence will be of a highly complicated character. 'There are, however, cases in which a collimator is dispensed with, and thus it is a problem of interest to find the foci of a thin pencil origin- ally diverging from a point at a moderate distance. Even when a collimator is employed, the same problem presents itself whenever the focusing is imperfect. For the sake of simplicity the pencil is supposed to pass so near the edge of the prism that the length of path within the glass may be neglected in comparison with the dis- tances of the foci.~~

We denote as usual the angles of incidence and emergence by ¢, ¥, and the corresponding angles within the glass by ¢', Y. The distance AQ from the edge of the prism to original source is denoted by w; the corresponding distanees for the primary and secondary foci %, 9, by 7, V. By suecessive applications of the results already proved for a single refraction, we get i — cos*¢' cos*y nee so that

V — cos*d' cos*y — (wu? —1) tan®@ + u? 9 V, cos*p cosy' (u?—1) tan'y+p2 (2).

In order that the primary and secondary foci may coincide we must have y=¢; that is to say, the ray must pass with minimum deviation. This is sometimes given as a reason why this arrange- ment should be adopted in spectroscopes ; but in reality, since the slit is parallel to the edge of the prism, a slight elongation in this direction of the image of a point is without detriment to the defini- tion. Hence a good image will be seen when the telescope is adjusted for the primary focus ; and it is not clear that any improve-

OTrTiICs

ment would arise from coincidence of the two foci, the question being in fact one of aberration. The position of minimum devia- tion is, however, usually adopted for the sake of definiteness, and sometimes it is convenient that the fixed lines and the extremities of the slit (or the markings produced by dust) should be in focus together.

The deviation is a symmetrical function of ¢ and y, and therefore is not altered by an interchange of these angles. The correspond- ing values of v are thus by (1) reciprocals, and their product is equal to w. This principle has been ingeniously applied by Sehuster! to the adjustment for focus of the telescope and collimator of a spectroscope. The telescope is so placed that the deviation necessary to bring the object upon the cross wires is greater than the minimum, and the prism is adjusted in azimuth until the effect is produced, that position being chosen for which the angle of incidence is greater than the angle of emergence, so that 2, is greater than wv. After focusing the telescope the prism is turned into the other position which gives the same deviation, and the collimator is focused, the teleseope

~~remaining untouched. The prism is next brought back to the first position, and the telescope is again focused. A few repetitions of this operation, always focusing the telescope in the first position of the prism and the collimator in the second, will bring both into perfect adjustment for parallel rays.~~

~~Lenses.—The usual formula for the focal length of lenses~~

~~(vol. xiv. p. 593),~~

~~ignores the fact that the various parts of a lens bounded by spherical surfaces have not the same focus, and is appli- cable in strictness only when the aperture is small. It is~~

~~not necessary here to repeat the process by which (1) is usually obtained, but before passing on to give the form- ulz for the aberration of lenses it may be well to exhibit the significance of (1) from the point of view of the wave- theory. Taking the case of a convex lens of glass, let us suppose A~~

~~that parallel p rays DA, EC, ~· GB (fig. 13) fall upon the lens ACB, and are collected by it to a focus at F. The points D, G E, G, equally~~

~~distant from~~

~~B Fig. 13.~~

~~ACB, lie upon a front of the wave before it impinges upon~~

~~the lens. The focus is a point at which the different parts of the wave arrive at the same time, and that such a point can exist depends upon the fact that the propagation is slower in glass than in air. The ray ECF is retarded from having to pass through the thickness (¢) of glass by the amount (u—1)t. The ray DAF, which traverses only the extreme edge of the lens, is retarded merely on account of the crookedness of its path, and the amount of the re- tardation is measured by AF—CF. If F is a focus these retardations must be equal, or AF -CF=(u-1)t.~~

~~Now if y be the semi-aperture AC of the lens, and f be the focal length CF,~~

AF — OF = {2+ ?} -f=4 e approximately, fez

2(u—1)t

In the case of plate-glass —1=4 nearly, and then the rule (2) may be thus stated: the semt-aperture is a mean proportional between the focal length and the thickness. The form (2) is in general the more significant, as well as the more practically useful, but we may of course express the thickness in terms of the curvatures and semi-aperture by

means of 3 ee | t =4°(- a *) i

1 Phil, Mag., February 1879.

whence

OPTICS

In the preceding statement it has been supposed for simplicity that the lens comes to a sharp edge. If this be not the case we must take as the thickness of the lens the difference of the thicknesses at the centre and at the cir- cumference. In this form the statement is applicable to concave lenses, and we see that the focal length is positive when the lens is thickest at the centre, but negative when the lens is thickest at the edge.

To determine practically the focal length of a convex lens we may proceed in several ways. A convenient plan is to set up a source of light Q (fig. 14) and . ascreengata / distance — ex- ceeding four

Fig. 14.

times the focal length, and to observe the two positions of the lens A, A' at which the source is in focus upon the

screen. These positions are symmetrically situated, and the distance between them is observed. Thus

AQ=4Qq+hAA', Apa

~~From the measured values of Qg and AA', f can be deduced.~~

~~If A and A' coincide, the conjugate foci Q and ¢ are as close as possible to one another, and then f= 4Qq.~~

~~The focal length on a concave lens may be found by com- bining it with a more powerful convex lens of known focus.~~

~~Aberration of Lenses.—The formula (1) determines the point at which a ray, originally parallel to the axis and at but a short distance from it, crosses the axis after passage through the lens. When, however, the ray considered is not quite close to the axis, the point thus determined varies with the distance y. In the case of a convex lens the ray DH (fig. 15), distant HC (=y) from the axis,~~

~~A~~

~~= Oe Fig. 15. crosses it after refraction at a point F' which lies nearer to the lens than the point F determined by (1), and corre- sponding to an infinitely small value of y. The distance EF is called the longitudinal aberration of the ray, and may be denoted by 6/.~~

~~The calculation of the longitudinal aberration as dependent upon the refractive index («) and the anterior and posterior radii of the surfaces (7, 3) is straight forward, but is scarcely of sufficient interest to be given at length in a work like the present. It is found that~~

~~i ie uit 1\5-2)} = =a les SARs f? ...(3); r, 8, and f being related as usual by (1).~~

~~The first question which suggests itself is whether it is possible so to proportion 7 and s that the aberration may vanish. Writing~~

~~for brevity R, S, F respectively for r~1, s~', f-1, and taking a= SO that —S= (G/u)-R, we get .~~

~~Li fseet Lyi by~~

~~aa has =e (2u+1)~~

=6{VII+2)-Ro oi 9)

= G{R%u+2)—RG(Qu+1)+uG?}

pPF3 4-1 (ui Huey 4

803

Since » >1, both terms are of the same sign ; and thus it appears that the aberration can never vanish, whatever may be the ratio of r tos. Under these circumstances all that we can do is to ascertain for what form of lens the aberration is a minimum, the focal length and aperture being given. For this purpose we must suppose that the first term of (4) vanishes, which gives

—2(u+2)(u—1) a BJ Sia suvlcioleishs SaeatiRe (5). The corresponding value of—s is

—ga ut 2)(u—1)

44-2? ft errr? eer (6) 3 so that sn M(2u+1) $3 4+, —Qu? atufevare (elevates eetetni startin (7)

In the case of plate-glass 1~=1°5 nearly, and then from (5), (6), (7) 7 is r=j5V;—s=ohs =—s:7r=6;1.

Both surfaces are therefore convex, but the curvature of the anterior surface (that directed towards the incident parallel rays) is six times the curvature of the posterior surface. By (3) the outstanding aberration is

The use of a plano-convex lens instead of that above determined does not entail much increase of aberration. Putting in (3) s=o, and therefore by (1) r=4/, we get

This is on the supposition that the curved side faces the parallel

rays. If the lens be turned round so as to present the plane face to the incident light we have r=, -s=4/, and then OR St oisereiniacramieetsysieveoe ee 10

~~nearly four times as great.~~

~~For a somewhat higher value of » the plano-convex becomes the form of minimum aberration. If s=oo in (6), 4+m—2y?=0, whence u»=1°69.~~

~~If u be very great, we sce from (5) and (6) that 7 and s tend to become identical with f.~~

~~For the general value of » the minimum aberration corresponding~~

~~to (7) is by (4) : pha ew~~

~~Sf 8(u—-1)*(u+2) The right-hand member of (11) tends to diminish as pm increases,~~

~~catiesectnse (11).~~

~~but it remains considerable for all natural substances. If w=2, ey, Hat of: fF 16"~~

~~Oblique Pencils.—Hitherto we have supposed that the axis of the pencil coincides with the axis of the lens. If the axis of the pencil, though incident obliquely, pass through the centre of the lens, it suffers no deviation, the surfaces being parallel at the points of incidence and emer- gence. In this case the primary and secondary foci are formed at distances from the centre of the lens which can only differ from the distance corresponding to a direct pencil by quantities of the second order in the obliquity. Hence, if the obliquity be moderate, we may use the same formulze for oblique as for direct pencils.~~

~~The consideration of excentrical pencils leads to calcula- tions of great complexity, upon which we do not enter.~~

~~Chromatic Aberration.—The operation of simple lenses is much interfered with by the variation of the refractive index with the colour of the light. The focal length is decidedly less for blue than for red light, and thus in the ordinary case of white light it is impossible to obtaina perfect image,~~

~~however completely thé spherical aberration may be corrected. From the formula for the focal length we see that~~

~~so that~~

~~or the longitudinal chromatic aberration varies as the focal length and as the dispersive power of the material com-~~

~~posing the lens. The best image will be formed at a posi- tion midway between the two foci, and the diameter d of the circle over which the rays are spread bears the same ratio to the semi-aperture of the lens (vy) that of bears to Ff. Hence op Ge er Y.~~

~~The diameter of the circle of chromatic aberration is thus proportional to the aperture and independent of the focal length ; and, since the linear dimensions of the image are proportional to the focal length, the confusion due to chromatic aberration may be considered to be inversely as the focal length. Before the invention of the achromatic object-glass this source of imperfect definition was by far the most important, and, in order to mitigate its influence, telescopes were made of gigantic length. Even at the present day the images of large so-called achromatic glasses are sensibly impaired by secondary chromatic aberration, the effect of which is also directly as the aperture and inversely as the focal length.~~

~~Achromatic Object-glasses.—It has been shown in vol. xiv. p. 595 that the condition of achromatism for two thin lenses placed close together is~~

~~(VB tle Gee il (i ee (0 Rate csorsaroteac (i).~~

~~in which /, f' are the focal lengths of the two lenses, and du/(4—1), du'/(w'—1) the dispersive powers of the two kinds of glass. In practice crown and flint glass are used, the dispersive power of the flint being greater than that of the crown. Thus /" is negative and numerically greater than f, so that the combination consists of a convex lens of crown and a concave lens of flint, the converging power of the crown overpowering the diverging power of the~~

flint. When the focal length F of the combination is given, the focal lengths of the individual lenses are determined by (1) in conjunction with

The matter, however, is not quite so simple as the above account of it might lead us to suppose. In consequence of what is called the irrationality of spectra, the ratio of dis- persive powers of two media is dependent upon the parts of the spectrum which we take into consideration. What- ever two rays of the spectrum we like to select, we can secure that the compound lens shall have the same focal length for these rays, but we shall then find that for other rays the focal length is slightly different. In the case of a single lens the focal length continually diminishes as we pass up the spectrum from red to violet. By the use of two lenses the spectrum, formed as it were along the axis, is doubled upon itself. The focal length is least for a certain ray, which may be selected at pleasure. Thus in the ordinary achromatic lens, intended for use with the eye, the focal length is a minimum for the green, and Increases as we pass away from the green, whether towards red or towards blue. Stokes has shown that the secondary colour gives a sharp test of the success of the achromatizing process.

—"The secondary tints in an objective are readily shown by direct- ing the telescope to a vertical line separating light from dark, such as the cdge of a chimney seen in the shade against the sky, and covering half the object-glass with a screen having a vertical edge. So delicate is this test that, on testing different telescopes by well- known opticians, a difference in the mode of achromatism may be detected. The best results are said to be obtained when the secondary

green is intermediate between green and yellow. This corresponds to making the focal length a minimum for the brightest part of the spectrum.

'"To enable me to form a judgment as to the sharpness of the test furnished by the tint of the secondary green, as compared with the performance of an object-glass, I tried the following experiment. A sct of parallel lines of increasing finencss was ruled with ink on

OPrics

~~a sheet of white paper, and a broader black object was laid upon it as well, parallel to the lines. The paper was placed, with the black lines vertical, at a considerable distance on a lawn, and was viewed through two opposed prisms, one of crown glass and the other of flint, of such angles as nearly to achromatize each other in the positions of minimum deviation, and then through a small telescope The achromatism is now effected, and varied in char- acter, by moving one of the prisms slightly in azimuth, and after each alteration the telescope was focused afresh to get the sharpest vision that could be had. I found that the azimuth of the prism was fixed within decidedly narrower limits by the condition that the secondary green should be of. such or such a tint, even though no attempt was made to determine the tint otherwise than by memory, than by the condition that the vision of the fine lines should be as sharp as possible. Now asmall element of. a double object-glass may be regarded, so far as chromatic compensation is concerned, as a pair of opposed prisms ; and therefore we may infer that the tint of the secondary green ought to be at the very least as sharp a test of the goodness of the chromatic compensation as the actual performance of the telescope." !~~

~~In the case of photographic lenses the conditions of the problem are materially different. It is usually considered to be important to secure "coincidence of the visual and chemical foci," so that the sensitive plate may occupy the exact position previously found by the eye for the ground glass screen. or this purpose the ray of minimum focus must be chosen further up in the spectrum. If, however, the object be to obtain the sharpest possible photographs, coincidence of visual and chemical foci must be sacrificed, the proper position for the sensitive plate being found by trial. The middle of the chemically-acting part of the spectrum, which will vary somewhat according to the photographic process employed, should then be chosen for minimum focus.~~

~~When the focal lengths of the component lenses have been chosen, it still remains to decide upon the curvatures of the individual faces. Between the four curvatures we have at present only two relations, and thus two more can be satisfied. One of these is given by the condition that the first term in the expression for the aberration—that proportional to the square of the aperture—shall vanish for parallel rays. As to the fourth condition, various~~

pro- posals have been made. If equal and opposite curvatures are given to the second and third surfaces, the glasses may be cemented together, by which some saving of light is effected. Herschel proposed to make the aberration vanish for nearly parallel, as well as for absolutely parallel, rays. This leads to a construction nearly agreeing with that adopted by Fraunhofer.

The following results are given by Herschel? for the radii of the four surfaces, corresponding to various dispers- ive powers, and to mean refractive indices 1°524 (crown) and 1°585 (flint). The focal length of the combination is taken equal to 10, and, as well ag the radii, is measured in arbitrary units; so that all the numbers in the table (with the exception of the first column) may be changed In any proportion.

: ° : , . ve Focal Focal Ratio of | Radius of| Radius of | Radius of | Radius of Dispersive) First Second Third Fourth Tae @ Tenele of Powers. | Surface. | Surface. | Surface. | Surface. liens Teens ss pas is ct A 2 a 50 6°7485 4°2827 4°1575 14°3697 50 100000 55 6°7184 3°6332 3°6006 14°5353 4°5 8°1818 60 6°7069 3°0488 3°0640 14°2937 4°0 66667 65 6°7316 2°5208 2°5566 13°5709 ii) 5°3846 70 6°8279 2°0422 2°0831 12°3154 30 4°2858 75 70816 1°6073 1°6450 10°5186 o55 3°8333

The general character of the combination is shown in fig. 16. The radii of the first and fourth surfaces within prac- tical limits are so nearly constant that Herschel lays down

1 Proc. Roy. Soc., June 1878. 2 Phil. Trans., 1821.

OPTICS

the following rule as in all probability sufficiently exact for use. A double object-glass will be free from aberration, provided. the radius of the exterior surface of the ; crown lens be 6°720 and of the flint 14:20, the focal length of the combin ation being 10°000, and the radii of the interior surface being computed from these data, by the formule given in all elementary works on optics, so as to make the focal lengths of the two glasses in the direct ratio of their dis- persive powers.

Numerous experiments have been made with the view of abolishing the secondary spectrum. Theoretically, if three different kinds of glasses are combined it will gen- erally be possible to make the focal lengths of the com- bination equal for any three selected rays of the spectrum. Or the ingredients of one of the glasses may be mixed in such proportions as to suit the requirements of the problem when combined with crown. In this way Stokes has succeeded in constructing a small object-glass free from secondary colour, but it is doubtful whether the practical difficulties could be overcome in the construction of a large object-glass, where alone the outstanding chro- matic aberration is important.

The practical optician is not limited to spherical surfaces, and the final adjustment of the aberration of large object- glasses is controlled by the action of the polishing tool. It is understood that some of the best makers apply a local correction, according to the methods developed by Foucault for mirrors. The light from a natural or artificial star is allowed to fall upon the lens. At the focus is placed a small screen, which is gradually advanced so as to cut off the light. The eye is immediately behind the screen and is focused upon the lens. If there are no imperfections the illumination falls off very suddenly, the surface of the mirror passing from light to dark through a nearly uniform grey tint. If, however, from uniform aberration, or from local defects, any of the light goes a little astray, the corre- sponding parts of the surface will show irregularities of illumination during the passage of the screen, and in this manner a guide is afforded for the completion of the figuring.

Téppler! has developed the idea of Foucault into a general method for rendering visible very small optical differences. Instead of a mere point of light, it is advis- able to use as source an aperture (backed by a bright flame) of sensible size, and bounded on one side by a straight edge. An image of this source is formed at a considerable distance by a lens of large aperture and free from imper- fections, and in the plane of the image is arranged a screen whose edge is parallel to the straight edge of the image, and can be advanced gradually so as to coincide with it. Behind this screen comes a small telescope through which the observer examines the object placed near the lens. When the light is just cut off by the advancing screen, the apparatus is in the most sensitive state, and the slightest disturbance of

the course of the rays is rendered evident. To show the delicacy of the arrangement Téppler intro- duced into the cone of light a small trough with parallel glass sides containing distilled water. A syphon dipped under the surface and discharged distilled water from another vessel, and it was found almost impossible so to control the temperatures that the issuing jet should remain invisible. Not only were sound-waves in air, generated by electric sparks, rendered visible, but their behaviour when reflected from neighbouring obstacles was beautifully exhibited.

An apparatus on this principle may often be employed

Fig. 16.

1 Pogg. Ann., exxxi., 1867.

805

with advantage in physical demonstrations,—for instance, for the exhibition of the changes of density in the neigh- bourhood of the electrodes of a metallic solution under- going electrolysis. The smallest irregularity that could be rendered visible would be such as would retard trans- mitted light by a moderate fraction of the wave-length. In objectives for photographic use the requirements are

|.in many respects different from those most important in

the case of telescopes. A flat field, a wide angle of view— in some cases as much as 90°—freedom from distortion, and a great concentration of light are more important than a high degree of definition. Asa rule, photographs are not subjected to the ordeal of a high magnifying power. Usually the picture includes objects at various distances from the camera, which cannot all be in focus at once. That the objects at one particular distance should be de- picted with especial sharpness would often be rather a disadvantage than otherwise. A moderate amount of "diffusion of focus" is thus desirable, and implies residual aberration. In some lenses an adjustment is provided by means of which the diffusion of focus may be varied according to the circumstances of the case.

~~For landscapes and general purposes a so-called single lens is usually employed. This, however, for the sake of achromatism, is compounded of a flint and a crown cemented together ; or sometimes three component lenses are used, the flint being encased in two crowns, one on each side. To get tolerable definition and flatness of field a stop must be added, whose proper place is some little distance in front of the lens. .~~

~~For portraiture, especially before the introduction of the modern rapid dry plates, a brilliant image was a necessity. This implies a high ratio of aperture to focal length, which cannot be attained satisfactorily with any form of single lens. To meet the demand, Petzval designed the " portrait-lens," in which two achromatic lenses, placed at a certain distance apart, combine to form the image. This construction is so successful that the focal length is often no more than three times the available aperture. When stops are employed to increase the sharpness and depth of focus they are placed between the lenses.~~

~~Vision through a Single Lens.—A single lens may be used to improve the vision of a defective eye, or as a magnifying glass. A normal eye is capable of focusing upon objects at any distance greater than about 8 inches. The eyes of a short-sighted person are optically too powerful, and can- not be focused upon an object at a moderate distance. The remedy is of course to be found in concave glasses. On the other hand, persons beyond middle life usually lose the power of seeing near objects distinctly, and require convex glasses.~~

~~A not uncommon defect, distinct from mere short or weak sight, is that known as astigmatism. In such cases the focal length varies in different planes, and at no distance is the definition perfect. Many people, whose sight would not usually be considered inferior, are affected by astig- matism to a certain extent. If aset of parallel black lines ruled upon white paper be turned gradually round in its own plane, it will often be seen more distinctly and with greater contrast of the white and black parts in one azimuth than in another. When the focal line on the retina is parallel to the length of the bar, the definition (as in the case of the spectroscope) is not much prejudiced, but'it is~~

~~2 Even when the optical differences are not small it is well to re- member that transparent bodies are only visible in virtue of a variable illumination. If the light falls equally in all directions, as it might approximately do for, an observer on a high monument during a thick fog, the edge of (for example) a perfectly transparent prism would be absolutely invisible. If a spherical cloud, composed of absolutely transparent material, surround symmetrically a source of light, the illumination at a distance would not be diminished by its presence.~~

~~otherwise when the bars are turned through a right angle so as to be perpendicular to the focal line.~~

~~In extreme cases a remedy may be applied in the form of glasses of different curvatures in perpendicular planes, so adjusted both in form and position as to compensate the corresponding differences in the lens of the eye.~~

~~The use of a lens as a magnifier has been explained under Microscope. The simplest view of the matter is that the lens, consistently with good focusing, allows of a nearer approach, and therefore of a higher visual angle, than would otherwise be possible.~~

~~Telescope, &c.—In a large class of optical instruments an wnage of the original object is first formed, and this image is examined through a magnifier. If we use a single lens merely for the latter purpose, the field of view is very restricted. A great improvement in this respect may be effected by the introduction of a field-lens. The~~

~~ideal position for the field-lens is at the focal plane of~~

~~the object-glass. The image is then entirely uninfluenced, and the only effect is to bend round the rays from the margin of the field which would otherwise escape, and to make them reach the eye-lens, and ultimately the eye. If the field-lens and the eye-lens have nearly the same~~

~~focal length an image of the object-glass will be formed~~

~~upon the eye-lens, and through this small image will pass every ray admitted by the object-glass and field-lens.~~

~~However, to obtain a sufficient augmentation of the field of view it is not necessary to give the field-lens the exact position above mentioned, and other considerations favour a certain displacement. For example, it is not desirable that dust and flaws on the field-lens should be seen in focus. In Huygens's eye-piece the field-lens is dis- placed from its ideal position towards the object-glass. In Ramsden's eye-piece, on the other hand, the focal plane of the object-glass is outside the system. This eye-piece has the important advantage that cross wires can be placed so as to coincide with the image as formed by the object-glass. The component lenses of a Ramsden's eye-piece are some- times achromatic. or further particulars, with diagrams, on the subject of eye-pieces, see Microscopn.~~

~~In large telescopes the object-glass is often replaced by @ mirror, which may be of speculum metal, or of glass coated chemically with a very thin layer of polished silver. The mirror presents the advantage (especially important for photographic applications) of absolute achromatism. On the other hand, more light is lost in the reflexion than in the passage through a good object-glass, and the surface of the mirror needs occasional re-polishing or re-coating. For fuller information see TELESCOPE.~~

~~The function of a telescope is to increase the "apparent magnitude" of distant objects; it does not increase the "apparent brightness." If we put out of account the loss of light by reflexion at glass surfaces (or by imperfect reflexion at metallic surfaces) and by absorption, and suppose that the magnifying power does not exceed the ratio of the aperture of the object-glass to that of the pupil, under which condition the pupil will be filled with light, we may say that the "apparent brightness" is absolutely unchanged by the use of a telescope. In this statement, however, two reservations must be admitted. Jf the object under examination, like a fixed star, have no sensible apparent magnitude, the conception of "apparent brightness" is altogether inapplicable, and we are con- cerned only with the total quantity of light reaching the eye. Again, it is found that the visibility of an object seen against a black background depends not only upon the "apparent~~

~~brightness" but also upon the apparent magnitude. If two or three crosses of different sizes be~~

~~cut out of the same piece of white paper, and be erected "~~

~~against a black background on the further side of a nearly~~

~~Orrres~~

~~dark room, the smaller ones become invisible in a light still sufficient to show the larger. Under these circum- stances a suitable telescope may of course bring also the smaller objects into view. The explanation is probably to be sought in imperfect action of the lens of the eye when the pupil is dilated to the utmost. The author of this article has found that in a nearly dark room he becomes distinctly short-sighted, a defect of which there is no trace whatever in a moderate light.! If this view be correct, the brightness of the image on the retina is really less in the case of a small than in the case of a large object, although the so-called apparent brightnesses may be the same. However this may be, the utility of a night-glass is beydnd dispute.~~

~~The general law that (apart from the accidental losses mentioned above) the "apparent brightness" depends only upon the area of the pupil filled with light, though often ill understood, has been established for a long time, as the following quotation from Smith's Optics (Cambridge, 1738), p. 118, will show.~~

~~"Since the magnitude of the pupil is subject to be varied by various degrees of light, let NO be its semi-diameter when the object PL is viewed by the naked eye from the distance OP ; and upon a plane that touches the eye at O, let OK be the semi-diameter of the greatest area, visible through all the glasses to another eye at P, to be found as PL was; or, which is the same thing, let OK be the semi-diameter of the greatest area inlightened by a pencil of rays flowing from P through all the glasses ; and when this area is not less than the area of the pupil, the point P will appear just as bright through all the glasses as it would do if they were removed ; but if the inlightened area be less than the area of the pupil, the point P will appear less bright through the glasses than if they were removed in the same~~

~~proportion as the inlightened area is less than the pupil. And these proportions of apparent brightness would be accurate if all the incident rays were transmitted through the glasses to the eye, or if only an insensible part of them were stopt."~~

~~nae Power of Optical Instruments.—According to the principles of common optics, there is no limit to the resolving power of an instrument. If the aberrations of a microscope were perfectly compensated it might reveal to us worlds within a space of a millionth of an inch. In like manner a telescope might resolve double stars of any degree of closeness, The magnifying power may be exalted at pleasure by increase of focal length and of the power of eye-pieces ; and there are at any rate some objects, such as the sun, in dealing with which the accompanying loss of light would be an advantage rather than the contrary. How is it, then, that the power of the microscope is subject to an absolute limit, and that if we wish to observe minute detail on the over-lighted disk of the sun we must employ a telescope of large aperture? The answer requires us to go behind the approximate doctrine of rays, on which com- mon optics is built, and to take into consideration the finite character of the wave-length of light.~~

~~A calculation based upon the principles of the wave- theory shows that, no matter how perfect an object-glass may be, the image of a star is represented, not by a mathe- matical point, but by a disk of finite size surrounded by a system of alternately dark and bright rings. Airy found that if the angular radius of the central disk (as seen from the centre of the object-glass) be 6, 2R the aperture, A the wave-length, then r QR? showing that the definition, as thus limited by the finite- ness of A, increases with the aperture.~~

~~In estimating theoretically the resolving power of a telescope on a double star we have to consider the illu- mination of the field due to the superposition of the two independent images. If the angular interval between the components of the double star were equal to 20, the central~~

~~1 Camb. Phil. Proc., vol. iv.~~

~~Q=sibrenlsys~~

disks would be just in contact. Under these conditions there can be no doubt that the star would appear to be fairly resolved, since the brightness of the external ring systems is too small to produce any material confusion, unless indeed the components are of very unequal magni- tude. The diminution of star disks with increasing aper- ture was observed by W. Herschel; and in 1823 Fraun- hofer formulated the law of inverse proportionality. In investigations extending over a long series of years, the advantage of a large aperture in separating the components of close double stars was fully examined by Dawes.

The resolving power of telescopes was-investigated also by Foucault, who employed a scale of equal bright and dark alternate parts; it was found to be proportional to the aperture and independent of the focal length. In tele- scopes of the best construction the performance is not sensibly prejudiced by outstanding aberration, and the limit imposed by the finiteness of the waves of light is practically reached. Verdet has compared Foucault's re- sults with theory, and has drawn the conclusion that the radius of the visible part of the image of a luminous point was nearly equal to half the radius of the first dark ring.

The theory of resolving power is rather simpler when the aperture is rectangular instead of circular, and when the subject of examination consists of two or more light or dark lines parallel to one of the sides of the aperture. Supposing this side to be vertical, we may say that the definition, or resolving power, is ¢ndependent of the vertical aperture, and that a double line will be about on the point of resolution when its components subtend an angle equal to that subtended by the wave-length of light at a distance equal to the horizontal aperture.

The resolving power of a telescope with a circular or rectangular aperture is easily investigated experimentally. The best object is a grating of fine wires, about fifty to the inch, backed by a soda-flame. The object-glass is provided with diaphragms pierced with round holes or slits. One of these, of width equal, say, to one-tenth of an inch, is inserted in front of the object- glass, and the telescope, carefully focused all the while, is drawn gradually back from the grating until the lines are no longer seen. From a measure-

ment of the maximum distance the least angle between con- secutive lines consistent with resolution may be deduced, and a comparison made with the rule stated above.

Merely to show the dependence of resolving power on aperture it is not necessary to use a telescope at all. It is sufficient to look at wire-gauze backed by the sky, or by a flame, through a piece of blackened cardboard pierced by a needle and held close to the eye. By varying the distance the point is easily found at which resolution ceases ; and the observation is as sharp as with a telescope. The function of the telescope is in fact to allow the use of a wider, and therefore more easily measurable, aperture. An interesting modification of the experiment may be made by using light of various wave-lengths.

In the case of the microscope the wave-theory shows that there must be an absolute limit to resolving power independent of the construction of the instrument. No optical contrivances can decide whether light comes from one point or from another if the distance between them do not exceed a small fraction of the wave-length. This idea, which appears to have been familiar to Fraunhofer, has recently been expanded by Abbe and Helmholtz into a systematic theory of the microscopic limit. See Mrcro- SCOPE.

Similar principles may be applied to investigate the resolving power of spectroscopes, whether dispersing or diffracting. Consider for simplicity any combination of prisms, anyhow disposed, but consisting of one kind of glass. Let @ be the width and yu the

index of a parallel beam passing through, and let the thicknesses of glass traversed by the extreme rays on either side be ¢, and ¢,.

807

It is not difficult to see that, if the index be changed to «+ 6m, the rays will be turned through an angle 6 given by

i= Ou(ty — by) ;

~~a Now, if the two kihds of light correspond to a double line which the instrument can just resolve, we have @=A/a, and thus t,-h=r/dp,~~

~~a formula of capital importance in the theory of the dispersing spectroscope. In a well-constructed instrument, 4, the smaller thickness traversed, may be small or negligible, and then we may state the law in the following form:—the smallest thickness of prisms necessary for the resolution of a double line whose indices are w and «+ du is found by dividing the wave-length by dz.~~

~~As an example, let it be required to find the sinallest thickness of a prism of Chance's "extra dense flint," necessary for resolution of the soda-lines.~~

~~By Cauchy's formula for the relation between mu and \ we have~~

~~w=A+Ba7-?, du= —2BrA~7 Or. ' i the results given by Hopkinson for this kind of glass we~~

~~n B='984×10-™, the unit of length being the centimetre. For the two soda-lines A=5'889 × 107%, dA= '006 × 10°; and thus the thickness ¢ necessary to resolve the lines is »4 1984~~

~~~2B6A 1°968dA the meaning of which is that the soda-lines will be resolved if, and will not be resolved unless, the difference of thicknesses of glass traversed by the two sides of the beam amount to one centimetre. In the most favourable arrangement the centimetre is the length of the base of the prism. It is to be understood, of course, that the magnifying power applied is sufficient to narrow the beam ultimately to the diameter of the pupil of the eye ; otherwise the full width would not be utilized.~~

~~The theory of the resolving power of a diffracting spectroscope, or grating, is even simpler. Whatever may be the position of the grating, a double line of wave-lengths \ and +6) will be just resolved provided~~

~~=1°'02 centimetre,~~

~~ee!~~
~~~

~~A mn' where 7 is the total number of lines in the grating, and m is the order of the spectrum under examination.~~

~~If a grating giving a spectrum of the first order and a prism of extra dense glass have equal power in the region of the soda-lines, the former must have about as many thousand lines as the latter has centimetres of available thickness.~~

~~The dispersion produced by a grating situated in a given manner is readily inferred from the resolving power. If a@ be the width of the beam after leaving the grating, the angle 60, corresponding to the limit of resolution, is A/a, and thus~~

~~66 mn~~

~~dd a Thus the dispersion depends only upon the order of the spectrum, the total number of lines, and the width of the emergent beam.~~

~~An obvious inference from the necessary imperfection of optical images is the usclessness of attempting anything like an absolute destruction of aberration. In an instrument free from aberration the waves arrive at the focal point in the same phase. It will suffice for practical purposes if the error of phase nowhere exceeds 4. This corresponds to an error of 3A in a reflecting and 4A in a (glass) refracting surface, the incidence in both cases being per- pendicular.~~

~~If we inquire what is the greatest admissible longitudinal aberra- tion in an object-glass according to the above rule, we find~~

of=a˙ : ’ a being the angular semi-aperture.

In the case of a single lens of glass with the most favourable curvatures, 6f is about equal to fa?; so that a must not exceed A/f. For a lens of 3-feet focus this condition is satisfied if the aperture do not exceed 2 inches.*

When parallel rays fall directly upon a spherical mirror the longitudinal aberration is only about one-eighth as great as for the most favourable-shaped single lens of equal focal length and aper- ture. Hence a spherical mirror of 3-fect focus might have an aper- ture of 24 inches, and the image would not suffer materially from aberration. !

On general optics the treatises most accessible to the English reader are Parkinson’s Optics (8d ed., 1870) and Glazebrook’s Physical Optics (1883). Verdet’s Lecons d’optique physique is an excellent work. Every student should read the earlier parts of Newton’s Optics, in which are described the funda- mental experiments upon the decomposition of white light.

1 For fuller information on the subject of the preceding paragraphs see Lord Rayleigh’s papers entitled “ Investigations in Optics,” Phzt. Mag., 1879, 1880.

808

ORACLE. It was a universal belief in the ancient world that there is a capacity in the human mind to divine the will of God (pavrixéy re 7 Wux7, Plato, Phedr., 242 C). This capacity is not equally. developed in all men, and, practically, a very few persons, in whom it is strong, are distinguished from the massas pavreis. These are able to understand the methods by which the gods reveal their intentions to men. There occur cases where the gods speak directly to men, where a divine voice is heard issuing its commands or warnings, but these in- stances are confined, except in a few remarkable historical cases (such as the appearance of Pan to the Athenian messenger, 490 B.c., Herod., vi. 105), to the heroic age and to epic poetry. Setting these aside, we find that the divine will was revealed to the interpreting medium in two ways—by inspiration and by signs. In the former case the divine influence overpowers the soul of the medium and

takes entire possession of it for the time. The medium cannot himself bring on a revelation, but is at rare intervals affected by the power of the god, his con- sciousness ceases, and the god speaks through him words which he is himself unable to control or even to under- stand. So, for example, the prophetes of Apollo Ptoios gave a response in the Carian language, which no one except the questioner could understand (Herod., viii. 135). The second method of revelation, by signs, required a distinct art of interpretation ; certain events, phenomena in the heavens or in bird or animal life, the conduct of sacrificial animals and the appearance presented by their entrails, &c., presaged the will of the god to him who pos- sessed the art of interpreting them. The second method was called artificval (evrexvos), in opposition to the first, which is direct and artless (dreyvos).

In every case the revelation of the divine will is depend- ent on the direct act of the god; he affects the soul of the ».avres when and where he pleases ; he sends, when he chooses, the signs from which his intentions can be inferred. There was, however, a belief that at certain places the god gave revelations 'more frequently than at others. Such places were generally characterized by some marked physical feature. At these places there were established regular institutions, with a staff of priests and prophets, to which the neighbours resorted for counsel; the Latin term "oracle" (in Greek pavreia, ypyorjpwa) is the general 'name. With regard to these institutions we have to consider (1) their method of interpretation, in so far as this is not most naturally given under the articles treating of the particular localities, and (2) their rank and influ- ence among the Greeks.

1, The methods of interpretation varied greatly. Even at the same oracle several methods were often practised side by side. In the most primitive the spirits of the dead appeared and conversed directly with the inquirer. This method was rare in Greece; but an undoubtedly good example is recorded (Herod., v. 92) in Thesprotia, where Periander sent to consult the shade of his wife Melissa ; a Biblical instance is the apparition of the shade of Samuel to Saul. The visit of Odysseus to the lower world is ob- viously a mere poetical version of the consultation of a Beeotian oracle of Tiresias, where the hero spoke directly to his devotees. In the oracle of Trophonius at Lebadea in Beotia the method of inquiry was certainly modelled after the idea of a descent to the infernal world. Beside the oracle were the two

springs of Memory and Oblivion, which, according to the mystic teaching, were the two foun- tains of the lower world. The inquirer descended into an underground place, and, it is said, saw such sights that he never smiled again. This method belonged to a very primitive stage of Greek history ; and it is certain that Greek religion in general, and many oracles in particular,

ORACLE

had experienced a long development before the time which we know best. Probably this method was originally more widely practised than we can actually trace.

The common method of revelation in hero-oracles, and in the oracles of some gods, was through dreams. Hero- oracles were certainly in their earliest form simply oracles of the dead; the word 7pws is a generic term for a dead man. We can trace occasional survivals of the most primi- tive form of the hero-oracle. The person who seeks advice goes to sleep over the actual grave, and the dead man appears in a dream. A type of the usual method, which was called "incubation" or éyxotnous, is the oracle of Amphiaraus near Oropus, beside the spring where the hero had risen from the earth to become a god. The in- quirer, after abstaining from wine for three days and from all food for twenty-four hours, slept in the temple on the skin of a ram which he had sacrificed. The oracles of Gea or Ge are closely connected with those of the dead and of heroes. The arth is giver of responses, as being the home of the dead, who sleep in her womb, but who can be called forth to give counsel to their descendants living on earth, arth-oracles also belong to a primitive stage of Hellenic religion, and had in historical times either given place te oracles of more developed Hellenic type or occupied a very secondary position. In Olympia it is prob- able that the oracle of Ga was the oldest institution, and it is universally recognized in ancient and modern times that the Delphic oracle originally belonged to the same goddess. Probably the cleft in the earth in the Delphic adyton was originally conceived as the passage of communication between the dead uncer the earth and the living on its surface. A uniform tradition (Paus., x. 5, 3; Aisch., Cho., 1 sq.) recognizes one most important fact : in the progress of Greek history, as religious thought developed, there was a

progressive development in the character of the Delphic oracle. Ga was replaced by Themis, a more moralized conception of the Earth-goddess, as the incarnation of natural order and law; but Apollo, the highest creation of Hellenic religion, finally occupies Delphi as the prophet and counsellor of his people. The oracles of Apollo work through inspiration. In Delphi the seer was a woman, Pythia, who was thrown into a state of ecstatic frenzy by the influence of a vapour ascending from a cleft in the earth within the adyton, and while in this state uttered words and cries which contained the answer of Apollo. All the methods of interpretation by signs were practised at different oracles in Greece ; even in Apolline oracles, such as the Delphic, the artificial method was employed along with that by inspiration.

2. The original purpose of the oracles was not to fore- tell the future, but to give counsel as to conduct in doubtful and difficult situations. In cases where human prudence and skill seemed to fail, recourse was had to the oracle, and the god gave advice to his people. Now it was the universal practice that the priests should take the answers, usually incoherent and unintelligible, of the seers and re- duce them to form, often metrical; practically the oracles were worked by the priests, and it is obvious that their character depended entirely on the character of the priests and of the nation asa whole. The influence of the oracles could be good only so long as the priests were not only honest and of lofty intentions, but also in a more advanced intellectual position than the people. In the early age of Greek history, when there was no education except what was to be gained by wide intercourse, the priests of such an oracle as Delphi occupied a most advantageous position. To Delphi as the yfjs dpudados, the central point of the civilized world, came embassies from every Greek city, and even from great non-Greek states such as Lydia and Phrygia. It was a knot where every strand in civilized

life was united. In accordance with this we find that almost all the great lawgivers and sages of the 8th and 7th centuries B.c. were in close relation with the Delphic oracle. All questions of colonization were referred to the oracle, and it is due a good deal to this central guiding influence that the overflow of the teeming popu- lation of Greece was directed so

systematically. It is instructive to compare the position of the oracles in Greece with those of the kindred races of Asia Minor. In the latter country the god is supreme over his people, the government is a pure theocracy, and the priests, as interpreters of the divine will, are absolute masters of the servants of the god. In Greece it is wholly different. In both cases the oracles are the creation of the national genius,—in Asia Minor Oriental and stationary, in Greece living and progressive. In the earliest time we can trace the influence of the oracles discouraging the relentless blood-feud, distinguishing classes of murder, and allowing purification aud expiation in suitable cases. They make the sanctity of oaths between man and man a special duty ; Apollo regards even hesitation to keep a pledge as already a sin (Herod., vi. 86; cf. i. 159). They are the centre of unions or amphictyonies which bind their mem- bers to observe certain duties and show mercy to their fellow-members ; and Delphi, as the oracle of an amphic- tyony including great part of Greece, had an important share in promoting that ideal unity of the whole country which, though never realized, yet floated always before the Greek mind. The oracles did something towards uniting the efforts of Greeks against foreigners, and towards spreading Greek influence abroad in a systematic way.

As education became more general the qualification of superior knowledge necessary to the proper working of the oracles was more difficult to keep up. At the same time the growth of political life in the states intensified their mutual enmities, and made it impossible for the oracles to maintain an attitude of perfect justice, neutral- ity, and superiority. Though the custom continued till a late period in Greek history that each state should consult the oracle in difficulties, yet complaints of partiality be- come frequent. Concurrently with the degradation in this respect there grew a demoralization in the whole tone of the oracles: they were consulted by all in the most trivial matters. It became an object to the priests to facilitate the access of votaries who contributed to the wealth of the temple. Whereas originally the Delphic oracle spoke only once a year, the number of days on which it was open to inquirers was gradually increased; and other oracles in like manner turned their attention to the wants of every applicant. In Dodona a large number of leaden tablets have been discovered containing the questions addressed to the god by inquirers; they range in date from the

end of the 5th century B.c. onwards, and do not give any very high idea of the kind of difficulties in which the god was asked to advise his worshipper.

See Carapanos, Dodone, also an important article in Fleckeisen's Jahrbiicher for 1883. The most complete work on oracles is Bouchy Leclere's Histoire de la divination dans Vantiquité. (W. M. RA.)

ORAN (Arabic, Wahrdn), the chief town of the depart- ment and military division which form the western part of the French colony of Algeria, lies at the head of a bay on the Mediterranean, in 35° 44' N. lat., and almost on the meridian of Greenwich. The population of the town in 1881 was 58,530; that of the commune, including town and suburbs, 59,377. In 1876, when the total for the town, besides 3728 in prisons, hospitals, &c. (5030 in 1881), was 45,640, 11,047 were French, 4948 Jews, 4782 natives, and 24,863 foreigners. The town is cut in two by the ravine of Oued Rekhi, now partly covered over by boule- vards and buildings. West of the ravine lies the port, and

809

above this the old Spanish town with the ancient citadel looking down on it. On the east side the modern castle and the modern town (built since the Spanish occupation) rise like an amphitheatre, and here, too, are the Moorish houses of the Jews' quarter. Taken altogether, Oran has the shape of a triangle, the sea forming the base, and the angles at north-west, north-east, and south being respect- ively the Fort de la Moune, the modern castle, and Fort St André. Ramparts and forts are mainly of Spanish con- struction ; to the east they have béen rebuilt since the French occupation in advance of their old position. Of the six gates, three are on the west side, two on the south, and one on the east. The modern castle was formerly the seat of the beys of Oran ; it is now occupied by the general in command of the military division, and also serves as barracks, and accommodates most of the military depart- ments. The old castle was the residence of the Moham- medan rulers previous to the Spanish conquest, and continued to be the residence of the governors of the town up to the earthquake of 8th and 9th October 1790. The portion of the building which still remains is used as barracks and a military prison. Immediately behind, the Mourdjadjo hill rises to a height of 1900 feet; on the way up are passed

Fort St Grégoire, the votive chapel commemorative of the cholera of 1849, and Fort Santa Cruz, crowning at a height of 1312 feet the summit of the Aidour. Lastly, Fort de la Moune (so called from the monkeys which are said to have haunted the neighbour- hood) rises between the sea and the road from Oran to Mers al-Kebir. In the Spanish town the streets are steep, sometimes even becoming stairs; the "places" are mere widenings of the street. In the French town the streets are well laid out and fit for carriages, and there are various public squares, notably the Place d'Arnies ; the houses too, in spite of the risk from earthquakes, are built in the French style, several stories high. It is only in the Jews' quarter that the houses are of a peculiar type,—one-storied, with white-washed or red-washed walls, and enclosing an inner court shaded by a vine. Oran is the see of a bishopric dependent on the archbishopric of Algiers. The cathedral (St Louis) is an ancient mosque which has suc- cessively been a Roman Catholic chapel, a synagogue, and again a Catholic church according as the town changed hands. The last restoration was in 1839. A fine picture representing the landing of St Louis at Tunis deserves to be mentioned. The grand mosque (in Rue Philippe) was erected at the end of last century in commemoration of the expulsion of the Spaniards, and with money paid as ransom for Christian slaves. The minaret is one of the prettiest in Algeria. Other mosques have been utilized for military purposes. Permanent quarters have not yet been assigned to the prefecture, the courts of justice, and other civil offices; the bank alone occupies a building of an imposing character. The military hospital contains 1400 beds. Oran is well supplied with water; and a number of beautiful promenades greatly increase its at- tractions. The main peculiarity of the streets is the mixture of races, each with its own type and costume. Arabs, Spaniards, and Turks, successive masters of the town, have all left descendants; and with these are mingled black-gabardined Jews, Spanish immigrants of recent date in Andalusian garb, French soldiers of all branches of the service, Moors with nonchalant gait, and negroes, who serve as porters and day-labourers for the community. The negroes occupy a whole village on the outskirts of the town. While industrially of no import- ance, Oran is admirably situated for commerce. From Cartagena to Oran is the shortest passage between Europe and Algeria, and there is regular communication with Mar- seilles, Cette, and Port Vendres in France, with Barcelona, XVII. — 102

Valencia, Cartagena, Malaga, and Gibraltar in Spain, and with the various ports on the Barbary coast. A railroad (261 miles) runs to Algiers and is joined at Perregaux by the line from Arzeu to Saida and the Kreider, which serves the high halfa (esparto) plateaus. There is also a railway to Sidi Bel-Abbés. Previous to the French occupation there was no port at Oran, vessels anchoring at Mers al-Kebir at the north-west entrance of the bay. Mers al-Kebir is now reserved for the navy, and a harbour of 60 acres has been constructed by means of a pier 3280 feet long from Fort de la Moune, and two cross piers. A geographical society was founded at Oran in 1878.

If Oran was not already occupied in the time of the Romans, its foundation must be ascribed to the Andalusian seamen who settled there in the beginning of the 10th century. Rapidly rising into importance, it was taken and retaken, pillaged and rebuilt, by the various conquerors of northern Africa. Almoravides, Almohades, and Merinides succeeded each other, and in the space of half a century the town changed hands nine times. At length, in the latter half of the 15th century, it was subject to the sultans of Tlemcen, and reached the height of its prosperity. Active com- merce was maintained with the Venetians, the Pisans, the Genoese, the Marseillese, and the Catalans, who imported the produce of their looms, glass-wares, tin-wares, and iron, and received in return ivory, ostrich feathers, gold-dust, tanned hides, grain, and negro slaves from the interior of Africa. Admirable woollen cloth and splendid arms were locally manufactured. The magnificence of its mosques and other public buildings, the number ofits schools, and the extent of its warehouses shed lustre on the city ; but wealth and luxury began to undermine its prosperity, and its ruin was hastened by the piracy to which the Moorish refugees from Spain betook them- selves. Animated by the patriotic enthusiasm of Cardinal Ximenes, the Spaniards determined to put a stop to those expeditions which were carrying off their countrymen, destroying their commerce, and even ravaging their country. Mers al-Kebir fell into their hands on 23d October 1505, and Oran in May 1509. The latter victory, obtained with but trifling loss, was stained by the massacre of a third of the Mohammedan population. From 6000 to 8000 prisoners, 60 cannon, engines of war, and a considerable booty from the wealth accumulated by piracy fell into the hands of the conquerors. Car-

~~dinal Ximenes introduced the Catholic religion, with its churches, convents, Inquisition, &c., and also restored and extended the forti- fications. Oran became the penal settlement of Spain, but neither the convicts nor the noblemen in disgrace who were also banished thither seem to have been under rigorous surveillance ; fétes, games, bull-fights, &c., were held. Meanwhile the Turks had become masters of Algeria, and expelled the Spaniards from all their pos- sessions except Oran. The bey, finally settling at Mascara, watched his opportunity ; and at length, in 1708, the weakness of Spain and the treason of the count of Vera Cruz obliged the city to capitu- late. The Spaniards recovered possession in 1732, but found the maintenance of the place a burden rather than a benefit, all the neighbouring tribes having ceased to have dealings with the Chris- tians. The earthquake of 1790 furnished an excuse for withdrawing their forces, Commencing by twenty-two separate shocks at brief intervals, the oscillations continued from 8th October to 22d November. Houses and fortifications were overthrown, and a third of the garrison and a great number of the inhabitants perished. Famine and sickness had begun to aggravate the situation when the bey of Mascara appeared before the town with 30,000 men, By prodigies of energy the Spanish commander held out till August 1791, when, having made terms with the dey of Algiers, he was allowed to set sail for Spain with his guns and ammunition. The bey Mohammed took possession of Oran in March 17 92, and made it his residence instead of Mascara. On the fall of Algiers the bey placed himself under the protection of the conquerors. The French army entered the town 4th January 1831, and took formal pos- session on the 17th of August.~~

~~ORANG. See Aps, vol. ii. p. 149,~~

~~ORANGE (Citrus Aurantium), the plant that produces the familiar fruit of commerce, is closely allied to the citron, lemon, and lime, all the cultivated forms of the genus Citrus being so nearly related that their specific demarca- tion must be regarded as somewhat doubtful and inde- finite. Risso and Poiteau have described eighty kinds of orange (including the bergamots), chiefly differing in the external shape, size, and flavour of the fruit ; but all may probably be traced to two well-marked varieties—the Sweet or China Orange and the Bitter Orange or Bigarade,— though several of these modifications seem to indicate~~

crossing with the lemon or citron, if, indeed, they do not rather point to a more remote common origin from a primi- tive citrine type.

The bitter orange, by some made a sub-species (C. vui- garis), is a rather small tree, rarely exceeding 30 feet in height. The green shoots are furnished with sharp axillary spines, and alternate evergreen oblong leaves, pointed at the extremity, and with the margins entire or very slightly serrated ; they are of a bright glossy green tint, the stalks

Orange (Citrus Auwrantium), from nature, about one-third natural size. a, diagram of fruit, after Laurssen, Med.-Pharm. Botanik,

1882.

distinctly winged and, as in the other species, articulated with the leaf. The fragrant white or pale pinkish flowers appear in the summer months, and the fruit, usually round or spheroidal, does not perfectly ripen until the following spring, so that flowers and both green and mature fruit are often found on the plant at the same time. The bitter aromatic rind of the bigarade is rough, and dotted closely over with concave oil-cells ; the pulp is acid and more or less bitter in flavour. The sweet orange generally has the shoots destitute of spines, the petioles less distinctly winged, and the leaves more ovate in shape, but chiefly differs in the fruit, the pulp of which is agreeably acidu- lous and sweet, the rind comparatively smooth, and the oil-cells convex. The ordinary round shape of the sweet orange fruit is varied greatly in certain varieties, in some being greatly elongated, in others much flattened ; while several kinds*have a conical protuberance at the apex, others are deeply ribbed or furrowed, and a few are dis- tinctly "horned " or lobed, by the partial separation of the carpels. The two sub-species of orange are said by some authorities to reproduce themselves infallibly by seed ; and, where hybridizing is prevented, the seedlings of the sweet and bitter orange appear to retain respectively the more distinctive features of the parent plant ; but where grow- ing wild for successive generations they show a tendency to degenerate, the progeny of the sweet orange being apt to assume the broadly-winged petioles and spiny shoots of the bigarade.

~~Though now cultivated widely in most of the warmer parts of the world, and apparently in many completely naturalized, the diffusion of the orange has taken place in comparatively recent historical periods. To ancient Medi- terranean agriculture it was unknown; and, though the later Greeks and Romans were familiar with the citron as an exotic fruit, their "Median Apple" appears to have been the only form of the citrine genus with which they were acquainted. The careful researches of Gallesio have~~

~~proved that India was the country from which the orange spread to western Asia and eventually to Europe. Oranges are at present found wild in the jungles along the lower mountain slopes of Sylhet, Kumaon, Sikkim, and other parts of northern India, and, according to Royle, even in the Nilgiri Hills; the plants are generally thorny, and present the other characters of the bitter variety, but occasionally wild oranges occur with sweet fruit; it is, however, doubtful whether either sub-species is really in- digenous to Hindustan, and De Candolle is probably cor- rect in regarding the Burmese peninsula and southern China as the original home of the orange. Cultivated from a remote period in Hindustan, it was carried to south-western Asia by the Arabs, probably before the 9th cen- tury, towards the close of which the bitter orange seems to have been well known to that people ; though, according to Mas'tidi, it was not cultivated in Arabia itself until the beginning of the 10th century, when it was first planted in 'Oman, and afterwards carried to Mesopotamia and Syria. It spread ultimately, through the agency of the same race, to Africa and Spain, and perhaps to Sicily, following everywhere the tide of Mohammedan conquest and civilization. In the 12th century the bigarade was abundantly cultivated in all the Levant countries, and the returning soldiers of the Cross brought it from Palestine to Italy and Provence. An orange tree of this variety is said to have been planted by St Dominic in the year 1200, though the identity of the one still standing in the garden of the monastery of St Sabina at Rome, and now attributed to the energetic friar, may be somewhat doubt- ful. No allusion to the sweet orange occurs in contem- porary literature at this early date, and its introduction to Europe took place at a considerably later period, though the exact time is unknown. It was commonly cultivated in Italy early in the 16th century, and seems to have been known there~~

~~previously to the expedition of Da Gama (1497), as a Florentine narrator of that voyage appears to have been familiar with the fruit. The importation of this tree into Europe, though often attributed to the Portu- guese, is with more probability referred to the enterprise of the Genoese merchants of the 15th century, who must have found it growing abundantly then in the Levant. The prevailing European name of the orange is sufficient evidence of its origin and of the line taken in its migration westward. The Sanskrit designation nagrungo, becoming narungee in Hindustani, and corrupted by the Arabs into naéranj (Spanish naranja), passed by easy transitions into the Italian arancia (Latinized aurantium), the Romance arang?, and the later Provengal orange. The true Chinese variety, however, was undoubtedly brought by the Portu- guese navigators direct from the East both to their own country and to the Azores, where now luxuriant groves of the golden-fruited tree give a modern realization to the old myth of the gardens of the Hesperides! Throughout China and in Japan the orange has been grown from very ancient times, and it was found diffused widely when the Indian Archipelago was first visited by Europeans. In more recent days its cultivation has extended over most of the warmer regions of the globe, the tree growing freely and producing fruit abundantly wherever heat is sufficient and enough moisture can be supplied to the roots ; where night-frosts occur in winter or spring the culture becomes more difficult and the crop precarious.~~

~~The orange flourishes in any moderately fertile soil, if~~

~~it is well drained and sufficiently moist ; but a rather stiff loam or calcareous marl, intermingled with some vegetable humus, is most favourable to its growth. Grafting or budding on stocks raised from the seed of some vigorous~~

~~1 The modern Arabic name, Bortukdn (that is, Portuguese), shows that the China apple reached the Levant from the West.~~

~~SH~~

~~variety is the plan usually adopted by the cultivator. The seeds, carefully selected, are sown in well-prepared ground, and the seedlings removed to a nursery-bed in the fourth or fifth year, and, sometimes after a second~~

transplantation, grafted in the seventh or eighth year with the desired variety. When the grafts have acquired sufficient vigour, the trees are placed in rows in the permanent orangery. Propagation by layers is occasionally adopted; cuttings do not readily root, and multiplication directly by seed is always doubtful in result, though recommended by some authorities. The distance left between the trees in the permanent plantation or grove varies according to the size of the plants and subsequent culture adopted. In France, when the trunks are from 5 to 64 feet in height, a space of from 16 to 26 feet is left between; but the dwarfer trees admit of much closer planting. In the West Indies and Azores an interval of 24 or even of 30 feet is often allowed. The ground is kept well stirred between the trunks, and the roots manured with well-rotted dung, guano, or other highly nitrogenous matter; shallow pits are sometimes formed above the roots for the reception of liquid or other manures; in dry climates water must be abundantly and frequently supplied. The trees require regular and careful pruning, the heads being trained as nearly as possible to a spherical form. Between the rows melons, pumpkins, and other annual vegetables are fre- quently raised. In garden culture the orange is often trained as an espalier, and with careful attention yields fruit in great profusion when thus grown. In favourable seasons the oranges are produced in great abundance, from 400 to 1000 being commonly borne on a single plant in full bearing, while on large trees the latter number is often vastly exceeded. The trees will con- tinue to bear abundantly from fifty to eighty years, or even more ; and some old orange trees, whose age must be reckoned by centuries, still produce their golden crop ; these very ancient trees are, however, generally of the bitter variety. Oranges intended for export to colder climates are gathered long before the deep tint that indicates ma- turity is attained, the fruit ripening rapidly after picking ; but the delicious taste of the mature China orange is never thus acquired, and those who have not eaten the fruit ina perfectly ripe state have little idea of its flavour when in that condition. Carefully gathered, the oranges are packed in boxes, each orange being wrapped in paper, or with dry maize husks or leaves placed between them. The immense quantities of this valuable fruit imported into Britain are derived from various sources, but those kinds in most esteem are the produce of the Azores, whence, in 1878, 410,101 boxes, each holding 400 "St Michael's" oranges, are said to have been sent to Great Britain alone. Large numbers are also exported to England from Sicily, Portugal, and

Spain, and a considerable amount from other Mediter- ranean countries. North America is largely supplied from Jamaica and the Bahamas; but the extensive and rapidly increasing cultivation of the tree in Florida will probably in a few years supersede the foreign importation. In that State the bitter orange has grown, from an unknown period, in a wild condition, and some of the earlier botanical ex- plorers regarded it as an indigenous tree; but it was undoubtedly brought by the Spanish colonists to the West India Islands, and was probably soon afterwards trans- planted to Florida by them or their buccaneering enemies. The climate of Florida seems remarkably adapted for orange culture, and orangeries are becoming yearly more numerous and extensive,—the wild stocks, or those raised from wild seed, being generally employed by the grafter. In the other Gulf States this branch of agricultural industry is pursued to some extent; and in California the orange groves are productive and increasing.

Orange cultivation has been attempted with success in several parts of Australia, especially in New South Wales, where the orange groves near Paramatta yield an abundant colonial supply. The orangeries of Queensland and South Australia are likewise producing well, though, as yet, Australian fruit is chiefly consumed at home. In many of the Pacific Islands the plant has been long established : Tahiti exports oranges largely to San Francisco, and in Fiji the culture promises to become of considerable importance.

Certain varieties of orange deserve mention, from the peculiar character of their fruit. The Mandarin orange of China, sometimes made a distinct species, C. nobilis, is remarkable for its very flat spheroidal fruit, the rind of which readily separates with the slightest pressure ; the pulp has a peculiarly luscious flavour when ripe. The small Tangerine oranges, valued for their fine fragrance, are derived from the Mandarin. " Maltese" or "Blood" oranges, much grown in southern Italy, are distinguished by the deep-red tint of the pulp. The Bergamot has been already described (see vol. ili. p. 587). Orange plantations in Europe suffer much at times from a disease called by the French charbon, caused by a fungus (Demathium monophyllum), which rapidly spreads over stems, leaves, and green fruit.

~~Several insect enemies attack the plant, of which the scale-like Coceus citri is the most injurious in Europe ; in the Azores C. Hesperidis takes its place. Cold weather in winter has sometimes proved destructive in Provence, and many planta- tions were destroyed by the hard frosts of 1789 and 1820,~~

~~Besides the widespread use of the fruit as an agreeable and wholesome article of diet, that of the sweet orange, abounding in citric acid, possesses in a high degree the antiscorbutic properties that render the lemon and lime so valuable in medicine ; and the free consumption of this frnit in the large towns of England during the winter months has doubtless a very beneficial effect on the health of the people. The juice is sometimes employed as a cooling drink in fevers, as well as for making a pleasant beverage in hot weather ; it is likewise an essential ingredient in ‘“orange wine.”~~

~~The bitter orange is chiefly cultivated for the aromatic and tonic qualities of the rind, which render it a valuable stomachic. Planted long ago in Andalusia by the Moorish conquerors, it is still ex- tensively grown in southern Spain, —deriving its common English name of “ Seville” orange from the abundant groves that still exist around that city, though the plant is now largely cultivated else- where, The fruit is imported into Great Britain’ and the United States in considerable quantities for the manufacture of the favourite confection known as orange marmalade, which is prepared from the pulp and rind, usually more or less mingled with the pulp of the China orange. In medicine the dried peel is largely employed as an aromatic tonic, and often, in tincture and infusion, as a mere vehicle to disguise the flavour of more nauseous remedies. The essential oil of the rind is collected for the use of the perfumer, being obtained either by the pressure of the fresh pecl against a piece of sponge, or by the process known as écuelle, in which the skin of the ripe fruit is scraped against a series of points or ridges arranged upon the surface of a peculiarly-shaped dish or broad funnel, when the oil flows freely from the broken cells, Another fragrant oil, called in France essence de petit gram, is procured by the distillation of the leaves, from which also an aromatic water is prepared. ‘The flowers of both sweet and bitter orange yield, when distilled with water, the “oil of Neroli” of the druggist and per- fumer, and likewise the fragrant liquid known as “ orange – flower water.” The candied peel is much in request by cook and con- fectioner ; the favourite liqueur sold as “ curacoa”’ derives its aromatic~~

flavour from the rind of the bigarade. The minute imma- ture oranges that drop from the trees are manufactured into "issue- peas" ; from those of the sweet orange in a fresh state a sweetmeat is sometimes prepared in France. Orange trees occasionally acquire a considerable diameter ; the trunk of one near Nice, still standing in 1789, was so large that two men could scarcely embrace it ; the tree was killed by the intense cold of the winter of that year. The wood of the orange is of a fine yellow tint, and, being hard and close-grained, is valued by the turner and cabinetmaker for the manufacture of small articles; it takes a good polish.

Although the bitter "Poma de Orenge" were brought in small quantities from Spain to England as early as the year 1290, no attempt appears to have been made to cultivate the tree in Britain until about 1595, when some plants were introduced by the Carews of Beddington in Surrey, and placed in their garden, where, trained against a wall, and sheltered in winter, they remained until de- stroyed by the great frost of 1739-40. In the last century the tree became a favonrite object of conservatory growth; in the open air, planted against a wall, and covered with mats in winter, it has often stood the cold of many seasons in the southern coun- ties, in such situations the trees occasionally bearing abundant fruit ; but in Great Britain the orange can only be regarded as an object of ornamental culture. The trees are usually imported from

ORANGE

Italy, where, especially near Nervi, such plants are raised in great numbers for exportation ; they are generally budded on the stocks of some free-growing variety, often on the lemon or citron.

For details of orange varieties, cultivation, &c., see Risso and Poiteau, His- totre et culture des Orangers (edited by A. Du Breuil, Paris, 1872); for early history and diffusion, G. Gallesio, Traité du Citrus, Paris, 1811. (C. P. J.)

ORANGE, a city of France, the chief town of an arron- dissement in the department of Vaucluse, is situated 18 miles north of Avignon on the railway from Lyons to Marseilles at some distance from the left bank of the Rhone, in the midst of meadows, orchards, and mulberry plantations,

watered by a stream called the Meyne, and overlooked by the majestic summit of Mount Ventose, which lies 22 miles to the east. The district is highly fertile, and the city deals largely in silks, woollens, and fruits, and also till quite recently in wines and madder. The population of the city numbers 6860. Orange is in- teresting mainly from its Roman remains. The triumphal arch is not only far finer than any other in France, but ranks third in size and importance among those still ex- tant in Europe. Measuring 72 feet in height, 69 feet in width, and 26 feet in depth, it is composed of three arches supported by four Corinthian columns. On three sides it is well preserved, and displays remarkable variety and elegance in its sculptured decorations. To judge from a partly decipherable inscription, the arch seems to have been erected in the reign of Tiberius. It suffered from being used as a fortification in the Middle Ages. Another most imposing structure is the theatre, built against the hill commanding the town. The facade, which is 118 feet high, 340 feet long, and 13 feet thick, is pierced by three square gates surmounted by a range of blind arches and a double row of far-projecting corbels. Of the seats occu- pied by the spectators—to the number, it might be, of 7000—only the lower ranges remain. By many this theatre is regarded as the most beautiful, or at least the most im- posing, of the Roman monuments of France. The princes of Orange made it an outwork of the castle which they erected on the hill, and which was demolished by De Gri- gnan after he had taken the town for Louis XIV. Up to the beginning of the present century it was filled with hovels and stables; these are now quite swept away, and the preservation of the building assured. In the neigh- bourhood of the theatre traces have been found of a hippo- drome capable of containing 20,000 persons ; and statues, bas-reliefs, and ruins of an aqueduct also serve to show the importance of the Roman town. Several of the churches at Orange are very old. Notre Dame, the old cathedral, originally erected by the prefect of Gaul, was ruined by the Barbarians, rebuilt in the 11th century, and damaged by the Protestants. A statue of Rambaud II. count of Orange and that of Gasparin the celebrated agriculturist may also be mentioned.

Orange (Arausio), capital of the Cavari, became after Cesar an important Roman colony. Its ramparts and fine buildings were eget destroyed by the Alemanni and Visigoths, and partly ruined

y the erections of the Middle Ages. Orange was included in the kingdom of Austrasia, fell into the hands of the Saracens, and was recovered by Charlemagne. It became an independent count- ship in the 11th century; and Count Bertrand de Baux (d. 1181) received from Frederick I. the title of prince of Orange. On the death of Philibert of Chalons in 1530 the inheritance fell to his sister's son, René (Renatus) of Nassau Dillenburg, stadholder of the Netherlands, who, dying childless, chose (1544) as his successor his cousin William, afterwards William I. Though Francis I., king of France, whose predecessors had long claimed to be suze- rains of the principality, caused it to be declared part of the domain of Provence, Henry IT. recognized William's rights in the treaty of Cateau Cambresis, and " prince of Orange"' remained the title of the stadholders from Maurice to William III. In 1672 Louis XIV. seized the principality and handed it over to the count of Auvergne in compensation for his loss of the marquisate of Bergen-op-Zoom confiscated by William ; but the claims of the house of Nassau were acknowledged by the peace of Ryswick. On William's death there were two claimants, John William Friso of Nassau — Dietz, desig- nated heir by William's will, and Frederick I. king of Prussia, who

held that he was nearer of kin and had been appointed by the will of Frederick Henry. Thereupon Louis XIV. declared the princi- pality forfeited to the French crown and bestowed it on the prince of Conti, who also had pretensions. The parlement of Paris de- cided that this prince should have the dominium utile; and its finding was confirmed by the treaty of Utreclit, which, however, left the title and coat of arms to the king of Prussia, who is still styled prince of Orange (Prinz von Oranien). John William Friso, however, also took the title, and his descendants, the stadholders and kings of the Netherlands, have all been designated princes of Orange- Nassau.

ORANGE, a city of the United States, in Essex county, New Jersey, 16 miles west of New York by two lines of railway, and connected by tramway with Newark, 3} miles distant. Beautifully situated on rolling ground about 190 feet above the sea, Orange has become a favourite place of residence for New York business men. To the west lies Llewelyn Park, an area of 750 acres, studded with villas and laid out in common; and the summit of

Orange Mountain (650 feet), a little farther west, is also occupied with villas. Hat-making is largely carried .on in the city. The population was 9348 in 1870 and 13,207 in 1880. In 1860 the township of Orange received a town charter ; and in 1872 the town, diminished by East Orange and parts of South and West Orange, was raised to the rank of a city.

ORANGEMEN, an association of Irish Protestants, originating and chiefly flourishing in Ulster, but with ramifications in other parts of the United Kingdom, and in the British colonies. Orangemen derive their name from William III., but neglect the example of that tolerant prince. They are enrolled in lodges, and it is said that the initiated can always recognize each other. Much may be learned from their toasts, about which there is no conceal- ment. The commonest form is "the glorious, pious, and immortal memory of the great and good King William, who saved us from popery, slavery, knavery, brass money, and wooden shoes," with grotesque or truculent additions according to the orator's taste. The brass money refers to James II.'s finance, and the wooden shoes to his French allies. The final words are often "a fig for the bishop of Cork," in allusion to Dr Peter Browne, who, in 1715, wrote cogently against the practice of toasting the dead. Orangemen are fond of 'beating drums and flaunting flags with the legend "no surrender," in allusion to Londonderry.

Orangeism is essentially political, and may be useful in so far as it reminds Irish Protestants of their origin and of their common rights under the British crown. But its original object was the maintenance of Protestant ascendency, and too much of its spirit still survives. By repeating irritating watchwords, and publicly keeping anniversaries painful to their neighbours, Orangemen have done much to inflame sectarian animosity ; if their celebrations were private, little could be said against them. The first regular lodges were founded in 1795, but the system existed earlier. The Brunswick clubs, founded to oppose Catholic emancipation, were sprigs from the original Orange tree. The orange flowers of the Liliwm bulbiferum are worn in Ulster on the lst and 12th July, the anniversaries of the Boyne and Aughrim. Another great day is the 5th of November, when William III. landed in Torbay.

ORANGE RIVER FREE STATE, an independent republic adjoining the Cape Colony, South Africa (see vol. vi., Plate I.), is bounded on the N. by the Vaal river, S. by the Orange river, E. by the Caledon river and Drakensberg mountains, and W. by a line dividing it from Kimberley and the diamond fields of Griqualand West. The area is 70,000 square miles, and the population in 1880 was 133,518. Of this total 61,022 were whites or of European extraction (mostly Dutch), and 72,496 coloured or of native races.

The country, which has an average elevation of 4500 feet above the sea, consists of a series of extensive undulating plains, bounded or diversified by detached rocky hills. These plains slope from the central watershed northward and southward respectively to the Vaal and Orange rivers, and are intersected at various intervals by the Wilge, Rhenoster, Valsch, Vet, Modder, and Riet rivers, empty- ing their waters into the Vaal river, and by the Caledon, which joins the Orange river. The southern and eastern districts are covered with luxuriant grasses, affording excellent pasturage for stock. In the western districts the grasses are gradually being supplanted by a dwarf bush vegetation. The river-banks are fringed with willow, mimosa, and other indigenous trees, and shrubs and trees of larger growth are found on the eastern mountain ranges; but generally the country is woodless, and to remedy this Government offers premiums for the encouragement of tree-planting. The geological characteristics are similar to those of the inland districts of Cape Colony. The south-western portion is an extension of the Karroo or lacustrine formation of South Africa, consisting of sand- stone and shales intersected by intrusive igneous rocks. In this formation occurs the diamond mine of Jagersfontein, near the village of Fauresmith, which has been worked for several years past. The north-eastern part, again, con- sists of sandstones and carbonaceous shales resting con- formably on the Karroo formation, and containing horizon- tal coal-seams, classed as of the Triassic period. The coal outcrops in the Kronstad and Heilbron districts are being utilized. In the Drift deposits along some river-beds, such as the Sand, Caledon, and Vaal rivers, there are accumu- lations of pebbles, consisting of agate, jasper, chalcedony, carnelian, white quartz, garnets, and occasionally diamonds.

The climate is salubrious, and specially remarkable for its dryness. Thousands of wild game formerly occupied the plains of the state, but their numbers and variety have of late greatly diminished, and some have been entirely exterminated. The lion, giraffe, elephant, and rhinoceros are no longer found. But in a few districts there may still be seen considerable herds of antelopes, such as the springbok, blesbok, and wildebeeste or gnu. The resources of the state are agricultural, pastoral, and mineral. The principal occupations of the inhabitants are the breeding of cattle, daorses, goats, merino sheep, and ostriches. Agri- culture is attended to on a larger or smaller scale accord- ing to the capabilities of the various farms, and vineyards and orchards are planted on many properties. The staple articles of export, however, are wool, skins, ostrich feathers, and diamonds, all of which are shipped from the seaports of the Cape Colony and Natal.

Bloemfontein, the capital and seat of government, is situated about the centre of the state, in 28° 56' S. lat. and 26° 18' E. long. It is an agreeable town, with a population of about 3000, and has a handsome range of public offices, where the volksraad or assembly of the people meets, a high court (consisting of a clief-justice and two puisne judges), a municipal burgher council, two banks, two newspapers, two hotels, clubs, a college, schools, and several churclies, including the Dutch Reformed church, the Anglican church with a resident bishop, and Wesleyan, Lutheran, and Roman Catholic churches. The Dutch language is officially used in the volksraad and the courts of justice, but English is spoken by the community generally.

The other towns or villages of the state are—Fauresmith, Eden- burg, Philippolis, Jacobsdal, Boshoff, Winburg, Hoopstad, Kron- stad, Heilbron, Frankfort, Harrismith, Ladybrand, Ficksburg, Bethulie, Bethlehem, Smithfield, Rouxville, and Wepener.

At the commencement of this century the country was inha- bited by sections of aboriginal tribes—Bushmen, Korannas, and Bechuanas ; and soon afterwards a number of Griquas from the north-west of the Cape Colony came in among them. A chronic state of warfare prevailed between these races. In 1824 nomad farmers from the Colony, seeking pastures for their flocks, crossed the Orange river and settled in the territory. These were fol- lowed in 1835-36 by large bodies of Dutch Boer emigrants who

left the Colony in order to be beyond British control. They formed arude government for themselves, and in attempting to exercise authority came into collision with the Griquas, who claimed pro- tection from the Colony, with which they were allied by treaty. The British governor, Sir P. Maitland, intervened in 1845, assisting the Griquas with troops, and defeating the Boers at Zwart Koppics ; and, to prevent further collisions, a resident was appointed. In 1848 Governor Sir H. Smith visited the territory, and came to the conclusion that peace could not be maintained among the mixed elements forming the population without the establishment of a regular government. He therefore issued a proclamation, after- wards confirmed by the crown, annexing the territory to the empire under the name of the Orange River British Sovereignty. Thereupon some of the Boers, under their leader Pretorius, took up arms and expelled the British magistrates ; but a military force was brought against them by Sir H. Smith in person, and, after a short but sharp encounter at Boomplaats, the Boers were defeated, and the crown's authority re-established and maintained from that time until towards the close of 1853. During this period many Europeans and colonists of European descent tock up their abode in the sovereignty. But disturbances again occurred, arising from long-standing disputes between the native tribes ; and, in order to chastise the most powerful of them—the Basutos—for certain acts of outrage, Governor Cathcart in 1852 moved a large military expedition against their chief, Moshesh, and the battle of the Berea was fought, after which the chief, on behalf of the tribe, gave in his submission. After this expedition the British Govern- ment resolved to withdraw from the territory. Sir George Clerk was deputed as a special commissioner to carry out the abandon- ment of the country ; and, notwithstanding the protests of many inhabitants, he formally handed it over to a body of Boer delegates in terms of a convention entered into on the 23d February 1854. They were released from their allegiance, and permitted to consti- tute an independent republican community of their own, under the title of the " Orange River Free State." Since that time the government has been in the hands of a president assisted by an executive council, with a volksraad or congress elected by the people, exercising all legislative functions.

~~In the south-eastern portion of the State, and entirely surrounded by it, is a small independent native territory, of which the principal village is Thaba-Nchu, where 10,000 of the Baralong tribe reside, peaceably ruled by their chief according to their own laws.~~

~~ORANIENBAUM, a town of European Russia, with a population of about 4000, lies 100 feet above the sea on the south coast of the Gulf of Finland opposite Cronstadt, and is well known for its imperial palace and as a summer resort for the inhabitants of St Petersburg, from which it is 24 miles distant by rail.~~

~~In 1714 Menshikoff, to whom the site was presented by Peter the Great, erected for himself the country seat of Oranienbaum ; confiscated, like the rest of his estates, in 1727, it became an imperial residence. In 1743 the empress Elizabeth assigned the place to Peter Theodorovitch, who built there a castle, Peterst@lt (now de- stroyed), for his Holstein soldiers. The rise of the town was fostered by the appointment in 1764 of an official for the reception and enter- tainment of foreign immigrants entering Russia via Cronstadt.~~

~~ORATORIANS. See Nert.~~

~~ORATORIO. See Music.~~

~~ORCAGNA (c. 1316 c. 13761), whose full name was ANDREA DI Cronz, called ARcAGNUOLO,? was the son of a very able Florentine goldsmith, Maestro Cione, said to have been one of the principal artists who worked on the magnificent silver frontal of the high altar of San Gio vanni, the Florentine Baptistery. The result of Orcagna's early training in the use of the precious metals may be traced in the extreme delicacy and refined detail of his principal works in sculpture. He had at least three brothers who all practised some branch of the fine arts: Lionardo or Nardo, the eldest, a painter; Matteo, a sculptor and mosaicist ; and Jacopo, also a painter. They were fre- quently associated with Orcagna in his varied labours.~~

~~From the time of Giotto to the end of the 14th century~~

~~‘ The dates of Orcagna’s birth and death are not exactly known, According to Vasari, he died in 1389 at the age of sixty ; but a docu- ment dated 1376 provides a guardian for Tessa and Romola, daughters of Orcagna’s widow Francesca (see Bonaini, Afem. Ined., pp. 105-6). Possibly, therefore, 1876 was the year of his death ; and if Vasari is right about his age his birth would have been in 1316. Milanesi, the~~

~~able editor of Vasari, is inclined to think that Orcagna died in 1368, when he is known to have been seriously ill.~~

- ~~Of this form, sometimes spelt Orcagnuolo, Orcagna is a corruption.~~

~~ORA—ORC~~

~~Orcagna stands quite pre-eminent even among the many excellent artists of that time. In sculpture he was a pupil of Andrea Pisano; in painting, though indirectly, he was a disciple of Giotto. Few artists have practised with such success so many branches of the arts. Orcagna was not only a painter and sculptor, but also a worker in mosaic, an architect, and a poet. His importance in the history of Italian art rests not merely on his numerous and beau- tiful productions, but also on his widespread influence, transmitted to his successors through a large and carefully- trained school of pupils. In style as a painter Orcagna comes midway between Giotto and Fra Angelico: he com- bined the dramatic force and realistic vigour of the earlier painter with the pure brilliant colour and refined unearthly beauty of Fra Angelico. His large fresco paintings are works of extreme decorative beauty and splendour,—com- posed with careful reference to their architectural sur- roundings, arranged for the most part on one plane, with- out the strong foreshortening or effects of perspective with which the mural paintings of later masters are so often marred.~~

~~1. Orcagna as a Painter.—His chief works in fresco were at Florence, in the church of S. Maria Novella. He first covered the walls of the retro-choir with scenes from the life of the Virgin. These, unfortunately, were much injured by damp very soon after their completion, and towards the end of the following century were replaced by other frescos of the same subjects by Ghirlandaio, who, according to Vasari, made much use of Orcagna’s motives and invention. Orcagna also painted three walls of the Strozzi~~

~~chapel, at the north-east of the same church, with a grand series of frescos, which still exist, though in a much injured and "restored" state. On the northern end wall is the Last Judgment, painted above and round the window, the light from which makes it difficult to see the picture. In the centre is Christ floating among clouds, surrounded by angels; below are kneeling figures of the Virgin and St John the Baptist, with the twelve apostles. Lower still are patriarchs, prophets, and saints, with the resurrection of the blessed and the lost. The finest com- position is that on the west wall, unbroken by any win- dow. It represents paradise, with Christ and the Virgin enthroned in majesty among rows of brilliantly-coloured cherubim and seraphim tinged with rainbow-like rays of light. Below are long lines of the heavenly hierarchy mingled with angel musicians ; and lower still a crowd of saints floating on clouds. Many of these figures are of exquisite beauty, especially the few that have escaped restoration. Faces of the most divine tenderness and delicacy occur among the female saints; the two central angels below the throne are figures of wonderful grace in pose and movement; and the whole picture, lighted by a soft luminous atmosphere, seems to glow with an unearthly gladness and peace. Opposite to this is the- fresco attri- buted by Vasari to Orcagna's brother Bernardo, or rather Nardo (i.e. Lionardo); it was completely repainted in 1530, so that nothing but the design remains, full of horror and weird imagination. To some extent the painter has followed Dante's scheme of successive circles.~~

~~These paintings were probably executed soon after 1350, and in 1357 Orcagna painted one of his finest panel pictures, as a retable for the altar of the same chapel, where it still remains. In the centre is Christ in majesty between kneeling figures of St Peter and St Thomas Aquinas, attended by angel musicians; on each side are standing figures of three other saints. It is a work of the greatest beauty both in colour and composition; it is painted with extreme miniature-like delicacy, and is on the whole very well preserved. This retable is signed, "An. dni. mecclvii Andreas Cionis de Florentia me pinxit."~~

~~'ORC GN A~~

~~Another fine altar-piece on panel by Orcagna, dated 1363, is preserved in the Cappella de' Medici near the sacristy of Sta Croce; it represents the~~

four doctors of the Latin church. According to Vasari, Orcagna also painted some very fine frescos in Sta Croce, similar in subjects to those attributed to him in the Campo Santo of Pisa, and full of fine portraits. These do not now exist. In the cathedral of Florence, on one of the northern piers, there hangs a nobly-designed and highly-finished picture on panel by Orcagna, representing S. Zanobio enthroned, trampling under his feet Cruelty and Pride; at the sides are kneel- ing figures of SS. Eugenius and Crescentius,—the whole very rich in colour. The retable mentioned by Vasari as having been painted for the Florentine church of S. Pietro Maggiore is now in the National Gallery of London. It is a richly decorative composition of the Coronation of the Virgin, between rows of saints, together with nine other subjects painted in miniature. Other paintings on panel by Orcagna were sent by the Pope to Avignon, but cannot now be traced. The frescos also have been destroyed with which, according to Vasari, Orcagna decorated the fagade of S. Apollinare and the Cappella de' Cresci in the church of the Servi in Florence.!

2. Orcagna as a Sculptor and Architect?—In 1355 Or- cagna was appointed architect to the chapel of Or San Michele in Florence. This curiously-planned building, with a large upper room over the vaulting of the lower part, had been begun by Taddeo Gaddi as a thank-offering for the cessation of the plague of 1348. It took the place of an earlier oratory designed by Arnolfo del Cambio, and was the gift of the united trade-guilds of Florence. As to the building itself, it is impossible to say how much is due to Taddeo Gaddi and how much to Orcagna, but the great marble tabernacle was wholly by Orcagna. This, in its combined splendour of architectural design, sculptured reliefs and statuettes, and mosaic enrichments, is one of the most important and beautiful works of art which even rich Italy possesses. It combines an altar, a shrine, a reredos, and a baldacchino. In general form it is perhaps the purest and most gracefully designed of all specimens of Italian Gothic. It is a tall structure of white marble, with vaulted canopy and richly-decorated gables and pin- nacles, reaching almost to the vaulted roof of the chapel. The detail is extremely delicate, and brilliant gem-like colour is given by lavish enrichments of minute patterns in glass mosaic, inlaid in the white marble of the structure. It is put together with the greatest care and precision ; Vasari especially notes the fact that the whole was put together without any cement, which

might have stained the purity of the marble, all the parts being closely fitted together with bronze dowels. The spire-like summit of the tabernacle is surmounted by a figure of St Michael, and at a lower stage on the roof are statuettes of the apostles. The altar has a relief of Hope between panels with the Marriage of the Virgin and the Annunciation. On the right side, looking east, of the base of the tabernacle are reliefs of the Birth of the Virgin and her Presentation in the Temple; on the left, the Nativity and the Adoration of the Magi; and behind, the Presentation of Christ in the

1 The magnificent but much injured frescos of the Last Judgment, Hell, and the Triumph of Death in the Pisan Campo Santo, described with great minuteness and enthusiasm by Vasari, are attributed by him to Orcagna, but internal evidence seems to show that they are productions of the Sienese school. Crowe and Cavalcaselle attribute them to the two brothers Lorenzetti of Siena, but they have been so injured by wet, the settlement of the wall, and repeated retouchings that it is difficult to come to any clear decision as to their authorship. It appears, however, much more probable that they are the work of Bernardo Daddi.

2 Orcagna was admitted as a member of the Sculptors' Guild in 1352. His name occurs in the roll as "Andreas Cionis vocatus Arcagnolus, pictor."

Temple, and the Angel warning the Virgin to escape into Egypt. Above the last two subjects are large reliefs of the Death of the Virgin, surrounded by the apostles, and higher still her Assumption ; she stands in a vesica, and is borne by angels to heaven. On the base of the Virgin's tomb is inscribed " Andreas Cionis pictor Florentinvs oratorii archimagister extitit hvjvs mecclix." Orcagna's own portrait is given as one of the apostles. In addition to these richly-composed subject-reliefs the whole work is adorned with many other single figures and heads of pro- phets, angels, and the Virtues, all executed with wonderful finish and refinement. The shrine, which forms an aum- bry in the reredos, contains a miraculous picture of the Madonna. A fine bronze screen, with open geometrical tracery, encloses the whole. No work of sculpture in Italy is more magnificent than this wonderful tabernacle, both in general effect and in the delicate beauty of the reliefs and statuettes with which it is so lavishly enriched. It cost the

enormous sum of 96,000 gold florins. Unfor- tunately it is very badly placed and insufficiently lighted, so that a minute examination of its beauties is a work of difficulty.

No mention is made by Vasari of Orcagna's residence in Orvieto, where he occupied for some time the post of "capo- maestro" to the duomo.! He accepted this appointment on 14th June 1358 at the large salary (for that time) of 300 gold florins a year. His brother Matteo was engaged to work under him, receiving 8 florins a month. When Orcagna accepted this appointment at Orvieto he had not yet finished his work at Or San Michele, and so was obliged to make long visits to Florence, which naturally interfered with the satisfactory performance of his work for the Orvietans. The result was that on the 12th of September 1360 Orcagna, having been paid for his work up to that time, resigned the post of "'capo-maestro" of the duomo, though he still remained a little longer in Orvieto to finish a large mosaic picture on the west front. When this mosaic (made of glass tesseree from Venice) was finished in 1362, it was found to be uneven in surface, and not fixed securely into its cement bed. An arbitration was therefore held as to the price Orcagna was to receive for it, and he was awarded 60 gold florins.

Vasari mentions as other architectural works by Orcagna the design for the piers in the nave of the Florentine duomo, a zecca or mint, which appears not to have been carried out, and the Loggia dei Lanzi in the Piazza della Signoria. It is, however, more than doubtful whether Orcagna had any hand in this last building, a very grace- ful vaulted structure, with three semicircular open arches on the side and one at each end, intended to form a shel- tered meeting-place for the Priori during elections and other public transactions. This loggia was ordered by the General Council of Florence in 1356, but was not actually begun till the year 1376, after Orcagna's death. The architects were Benci di Cione (possibly a brother of Orcagna) and Simone di Francesco Talenti, both men of considerable reputation in Florence. The sculptured re- liefs of the seven Virtues in the spandrels of the arches of the loggia, also attributed to Orcagna by Vasari, were later still. They were designed by Angelo Gaddi (1383-1386), and were carried out by three or four different. sculptors.

Pupils of Orcagna named by Vasari are Bernardo Nello, a Pisan, Tommaso di Marco, a Florentine, and, chief of all, Francesco Traini, whose grand painting on panel of St Thomas Aquinas enthroned with the arch-heretics at his feet still hangs in the churcli for which it was painted,—Sta Caterina at Pisa. Orcagna had, in ad- dition to the two daughters mentioned above, a son named Cione,

who was a painter of but little eminence. Some sonnets attributed to Orcagna exist in MS. in the Strozzi and Magliabecchian libraries

1 See Milanesi, Storia dell' Arte Toscana, p. 238 (Siena, 1873); Luzi, Duomo @ Orvieto ; and Vasari, ed. Milanesi, i. p. 617 (Florence, 1878).

in Florence. They have been published by Trucchi (Poesie inedite, ii. p. 25, Prato, 1846). They are graceful in language, but rather

artificial and over-elaborated.

Authorities.—Vasari, ed. Milanesi, i. p. 593 (Florence, 1878); Giornale degli Archivi Toscani, iii. p. 282, &c.; Passerini, Curiosita storico-artistiche ; Gaye, Carteggio inedito, i. pp. 500-513, ii. p. 5 ; Rosini, Storia della pittura, vol. i.; Bal- dinucci, Professori del disegno, vol. i., Rumohr, Ricerche Italiane, ii., and Antologia di Firenze, iii.; Crowe and Cavalcaselle, Painting in Italy, i. p. 425 (London, 1864); Perkins, Tuscan Sculptors, p. 77 (London, 1865). (J. H. M.)

ORCHESTRA. See Music, supra, p. 98.

ORCHHA, or Txurti, a native state in Bundelkhand, Central India, lies between 24° 26' and 25° 34' N. lat., and between 78° 28' 30" and 79° 23' E. long., to the south of the British district of Jhansi. The area is about 2000 square miles; the population in 1881 was 311,514. A great portion of the area is covered with hill jungle and poor soil, and is thinly peopled. The present capital, Tehri, situated in the south-west corner of the state, is a poor ill- built town, the only good house being the palace of the raja. Orchha is the oldest and highest in rank of all the Bundela principalities,

~~and was the only one not held in subjection by the peshwa. The chief received the title of maharaj4 in 1865.~~

~~ORCHIDS. The word Orchis is used in a special sense to denote a particular genus of the Orchid family (Orchidacex) ; very frequently, also, it is employed in a more general way to indicate any member of that large and very interesting group. It will be convenient here to use the word Orchis as applying to that particular genus which gives its name to the order or family, and to employ the term ‘“‘orchid” in the less precise sense.~~

~~The flowers of all orchids, though extremely diverse within certain limits, and although superficially very dif- ferent from those of other monocotyledons, are all formed upon one common plan, which is only a modification of that observable in such flowers as those of the narcissus or snowdrop (Galanthus). The conformation of those flowers consists essentially in the presence of a six-parted perianth, the three outer segments of which correspond to a calyx, the three inner ones to a corolla. These segments’ spring apparently from the top of the ovary,—the real explanation, however, being that the end of the flower-stalk or “‘thalamus,” as it grows, becomes dilated into a sort of cup or tube enclosing and indeed closely adhering to the ovary, so that the latter organ appears to be beneath the perianth instead of above it as in a lily, an appearance which has given origin to the term “inferior ovary.” Within the perianth, and springing from its sides, or apparently from the top of the ovary, are six stamens~~

~~ps~~

~~e: ; e~~

~~Fig. 1. Fig. 2,~~

~~Fic. 1.—Diagram of the flower of Orchis. s, si, sl, the three divisions of the outer perianth ; pl, pl, the two lateral divisions of the inner perianth ; ps, the superior division or the labellum, which may become inferior by the twisting of the ovary; ¢, the fertile stamen, with its two pollen-masses in the anther-lobes; ¢, the one-celled ovary cut transversely, having three parietal placentas.~~

~~*Fig. 2.—Flower of an Orchid. 8, 8, 8, the three outer divisions of the perianth ; ", p, 1, the three inner, 2 being the labellum, here inferior by the twisting of the ovary ; c, spur of the labellum ; 0, the twisted ovary ; st, the stigma ; a, the anther, containing pollen-masses.*~~

~~*whose anthers contain pulverulent pollen- grains. These stamens encircle a style which is the upward continuation of the ovary, and which shows at its free end traces of the*~~

~~*ORC—ORC*~~

~~*three originally separate but now blended carpels of which the ovary consists. An orchid flower (disregarding for*~~

~~*Fig. 3. Fig. 4.*~~

~~*Fia. 3.—Upper part of an Orchid flower. The outer divisions of the perianth are seen, and two of the inner, the third or labellum being removed. The two anther lobes are seen with pollen-masses attached to the upper part of the stigma by viscid matter, re.*~~

~~*Fic, 4.—Pollen-masses of an Orchid, with their caudicles and common gland.*~~

~~*the moment a very small number of exceptions) has an*~~

~~*inferior ovary like that just described, but with the ovules*~~

~~*on the walls of the cavity (not in its axis or centre), a*~~

~~*six-parted perianth, a stamen or stamens, and a style or*~~

~~*styles. The main distinguishing features consist in the fact that one of the inner pieces of the perianth becomes in course of its growth much larger than the rest, and usually different in colour, texture, and form. So different is it that it receives a distinct name, that of the "lip" or*~~

~~*"labellum." In place of the six stamens we commonly find*~~

but one (two in Cypripedium), and that one is inseparably

blended with the style to form the "column," bringing about the condition technically called '" gynandrous."

Moreover, the pollen, instead of consisting of separate

cells or grains, consists of cells aggregated into " pollen-

masses," the number varying in different genera, but very generally two, four, or eight, and in many of the genera provided at the base with a strap-shaped stalk or "caudicle" ending in a flattish gland or "viscid disk" like a boy's sucker. The style has very generally at its upper part a peculiar pouch-like process called the "rostellum," in which the viscid disk of the pollen-masses is concealed till released in the manner presently to be mentioned. It would appear, then, that the orchid flower differs from the type in the irregularity of the perianth, in the suppression of five out of six stamens and of two out of three styles, and in the union into one column of the one stamen and the one style which remain in the adult flower. In addition to these modifications, which are common to nearly all orchids, there are others generally but not so universally met with; among them is the displacement of the flower

| arising from the twisting of the inferior ovary, in conse-

quence of which the flower is so completely turned round that the "lip," which originates in that part of the flower, conventionally called the posterior or superior part, or that nearest to the supporting stem, becomes in course of growth turned to the anterior or lower part of the flower nearest to the bract, from whose axil it arises. Other common modifications arise from the union of certain parts of the perianth to each other, and from the inordinate outgrowths from the lip,

These statements are borne out by evidence derived from a variety of sources, such as that afforded by the pro- gressive development of the parts of the flower from their earliest to their most complete condition, by the anatomy or internal organization of the parts of the flower, by the number and distribution of the vascular bundles which run through the cellular

tissue, by the comparative morphology of the floral organs of the different genera of the order, and by teratology, or the study of unusual or monstrous forma-

tions, which reveals the existence of a complete series of in- termediate forms constituting a regular gradation from the ordinary irregular gynandrous flower to regular flowers with six separate stamens such as we have takén as the type.

What brings about—what has brought about—this ex- traordinary series of changes, by virtue of which a flower typically as regular as a snowdrop becomes transmuted into the forms often more grotesque and extraordinary than can be found in any other group of plants? To the first part of the question the reply is that the present form has been inherited from generation to generation of orchids ; to the second part the answer most in accordance with the present state of knowledge is that these modifications are associated with the structure and habits of insects and their visits to the flowers. Cross fertilization, or the im- pregnation of any given flower by pollen from another flower of the same species on the same or on another plant, has been proved to be of great advantage to the plant by securing a more numerous or a more robust offspring, or one better able to adapt itself to the varying conditions under which it has to live. This cross fertilization is effected by the agency of insects. They are attracted to the flower by its colour or its perfume ; they seek, collect, or feed on its honey, and while so doing they remove the pollen from the anther and convey it to another flower, there to germi- nate on the stigma when its tubes travel down the style and their contents ultimately come in near apposition, per- haps in actual confluence, with the " oosphere " or immature egg, which becomes in consequence fertilized, and there- after gradually develops into a new plant. To facilitate the operations of such insects, by compelling them to move in certain lines so as to secure the due removal of the pollen and its subsequent deposit on the right place, the form of the flower and the conformation of its several parts are modified in ways as varied as they are wonder- ful. Other insects visit the flower with more questionable result. For them the pollen is an attraction as food, or some other part of the

flower offers an inducement to them for a like object. Such visitors are clearly prejudicial to the flower, and so we meet with arrangements which are calculated to repel the intruders, or at least to force them to enter the flower in such a way as not to effect mischief. It would be quite impossible within the limits of this article to go into detail on this subject. All we can do is to give one or two illustrations, referring the reader desirous of fuller information to Darwin's Fertilization of Orchids.

In the common orchids of British meadows, Orchis Morio, mascula (Shakespeare's long purples), &., the general struc- ture of the flower is as we have described it. In addition there is in this particular genus, as indeed in many others, a long tubular spur or horn projecting downwards from the back of the lip, whose office it is to secrete and store a honeyed juice ; the forepart of the lip forms an expanded plate, usually larger and more brightly coloured than the other parts of the flower, and with hairs or ridges and spots of various kinds according to the species. The re- maining parts of the perianth are very much smaller, and commonly are so arranged as to form a hood overarching the "column." 'This column stands up from the base of the flower, almost at right angles to the lip, and it bears at the top an anther, in the two hollow lobes of which are concealed the two pollen-masses, each with its caudicle terminating below in a roundish gland, concealed at first in the pouch-like rostellum at the front of the column. Below the anther the surface of the column in front is hollowed out into a greenish depression filled with viscid fluid,—this is the stigma. The other parts of the flower need not detain us. Such being in general terms the mechanism of the flower of a common orchis, let us now see how it acts. A bee, we will assume, attracted by the

colour and perfume of the flower, alights on that part of it which is the first to attract its attention,—the lip. There, guided by the hairs or ridges before-mentioned, it is led to the orifice of the spur with its store of honeyed juice. The position of this orifice, as we have seen, is at the base of the lip and of the column, so that the insect, if of suffi- cient size, while bending his head to insert his proboscis into the spur, almost of necessity displaces the pollen- masses. Liberated from the anthers, these adhere to the head or

~~back of the insect by means of the sticky gland at the bottom of the caudicle. Having attained his object the insect withdraws, taking with him the pollen-masses, and visits another flower. And now occurs another device or adaptation no less marvellous than those of which men- tion has been made. 'The two anther-cases in an orchis are erect and nearly parallel the one to the other; the pollen-masses within them are of course in like case, as may be thus represented |], but immediately the pollen- masses are removed movements take place in the caudicle so as to effect the bending of this stalk and the placing the pollen-mass in a more or less horizontal position, thus ==, or, as in the case of O. pyramidalis, the two pollen-masses originally placed parallel || diverge from the base like the letter VY. The movements of the pollen-masses may readily be seen with the naked eye by thrusting the point of a needle into the base of the anther, when the disks adhere to the needle as they would do to the antenna of an insect, and may be withdrawn. Sometimes the lip is mobile and even sensitive to impressions, as are also certain processes of the column. In such cases the contact of an insect or other body with those processes is sufficient to liberate the pollen often with elastic force, even when the anther itself is not touched. In other orchids movements take place in different ways and in other directions. The object of these movements will be appreciated when it is remembered that, if the pollen-masses retained the original direction they had in the anther in which they were formed, they would, when transported by the insect to another flower, merely come in contact with the anther of that flower, where of course they would be of no use ; but, owing to the divergences and flexions above alluded to, the pollen- masses come to be so placed that, when transplanted to another flower of the same species, they come in contact with the stigma and so effect the fertilization of that flower. These illustrations are comparatively simple ; it would have been easy to select others of a more com- plicated nature, but all evidently connected with the visits of insects and the cross fertilization of the flower. In some cases the form of the male flowers is so different from that of the female that before the different flowers had been found on the same spike, and before the facts of the case were fully known, they were taken to be representatives of distinct genera.~~

~~The floral structure is so curious that perhaps less attention has been paid to the vegetative organs than the pecu- liarities of their organization~~

demand. We can only allude to some of these points. The orchids of British fields | are all of terrestrial habit, and their | roots are mostly tuberous (fig. 5), the tubers being partly radical partly bud- like in their character. There is often a marked alternation in the production *”¢; Wie dete bbl of vegetative and flowering shoots re- Testrial Orchid. spectively ; and, sometimes, from various circumstances, the flowering shoots are not produced for several years in suc- cession. This fact will account for the profusion with which

XVII. — 103

818

some orchids, like the common bee orchis for instance, are found in some seasons and their scarcity in others. Tropical orchids are mostly epiphytal, —that is, they grow upon trees without deriving nourishment from them. They are fre- quently provided with ‘ pseudo-bulbs,” large solid swellings of the stem, in the tissues of which water and nutritive materials are stored. Very generally, too, such plants have aerial roots, of thick or thin wire-like form, covered with a spongy white investment, the constituent cells of which are found under the microscope to contain spiral fibres tightly coiled up within them. By these “air-roots” the plants are able to absorb watery vapour and perhaps actual water.

The number of species of orchids is greater than that of any other monocotyledonous order—not even excepting grasses—amounting to between 4000 and 5000 at least. This large number is partly accounted for by the diligent search in all countries that has been made for these plants for purposes of cultivation, —they being held at present in the greatest esteem by plant-lovers, and prices being paid for new or rare varieties which recall the days of the tulipo- mania. It must be admitted, however, that orchid-lovers have better reasons to support their fancy than had the speculative growers and barterers of tulips.

The economic uses of orchids are not remarkable. When we have mentioned vanilla, which consists of the pods of an orchid, we have mentioned about the only economic product that now comes into market. Salep, still used in

the Levant, consists of the dried tubers of some terrestrial orchid, and contains a relatively large amount of nutritious matter.

Cypripedium demands notice, inasmuch as it, with one or two other genera, constitutes a tribe of the order in which two stamens are present, one on each side of the column instead of one only at the top. What may be considered the normal number of stamens is, as has been said, six, arranged in two rows. In most orchids the only stamen developed to maturity is the posterior one of the three opposite to the lip (anterior before the twisting of the ovary), the other two, as well as all three inner ones, being entirely absent, or present only in the form of rudiments. In Cypripedium all three of the outer stamens are wanting, but the two lateral ones of the inner series are present, the third being undeveloped. This arrangement may be understood by reference to the following dia- gram, representing the relative eee of the stamens in orchids generally and in Cypripedium. The letter L indicates the position of the labellum ; the large figures indicate the developed stamens ; the italic figures show the position of the suppressed stamens,

"4 4 6 4 65 6 6 2 3 2 3

L L Arrangement of stamens Arrangement of stamens in Orchis. in Cypripedium.

ORCHIL. See Arcum, aes

ORCHOMENUS, the name borne by two cities of ancient Greece.

I. A Beeotian city, situated in the angle between the Cephissus and its tributary the Melas, on a long narrow hill which projects south from Mount Acontium. Its position is exceedingly strong, being defended on every side by precipice or marsh or river, and it was admirably suited to be the stronghold of an early kingdom. The acropolis is at the north end of the hill, on a peak which is overhung by Acontium, but at a distance sufficient to be safe from an enemy with the weapons of early warfare posted on the mountain. At the foot of the acropolis are the springs of the Melas. Orchomenus was the capital of the Minyz, a race famous in the half-legendary history of early Beeotia ; the sway of the Minyz once extended

~~over Beeotia, including even Thebes, but the fKolic Beeotians who made Thebes their stronghold broke the power of the Orchomenian kings. The most remark- able relic of the early power of Orchomenus is the so-called "treasury," which is said to be the oldest in Greece, It was larger than the buildings of similar style at Mycenze (see Mycrnm), and the admiration which Pausanias ex- presses for it is justified by the beautiful ornamentation, especially of the roof, which has been brought to light by Schliemann's excavations. The monument, undoubtedly~~

~~OR C—~~

~~called Anchisia.~~

~~ORD~~

~~the tomb of some ancient ruler, or of a dynasty, lies outside the city walls. The worship of the Charites (see Graces) was the great cultus of Orchomenus, and the site of the temple is now occupied by a chapel, the Koiuyous ris Ilavayias. The Charites were worshipped under the form of rude stones, which had fallen from heaven during the reign of Eteocles ; and it was not till the time of Pausanias that statues of the goddesses were placed in the temple. Near this was another temple dedicated to Dionysus, in whose festival, the "Ayproivia, are apparent the traces of human sacrifice in early times. The city was destroyed by the Thebans in the 4th century ; the men were slain, and the women and children sold as slaves. About thirty years later, after the battle of Cheronea (338 B.c.), Philip of Macedon restored the city. The name is spelt on the dialectic inscriptions and coins '"Epydépevos. It is mentioned in the Homeric catalogue.~~

~~Il. An Arcadian city, situated in a district of the same name, north of Mantinea and west of Stymphalus. The district was mountainous, but embraced two valleys,— the northern containing a lake which is drained, like all Arcadian lakes, by a katabothron; the southern lying under the city, separated from Mantinea by a mountain ridge The old city occupied a strong and lofty situation ; in the time of Strabo it was a ruin, but Pausanias mentions that a new town was built below the old. A primitive wooden image of Artemis Cedreatis stood in a large cedar tree outside the city. Orchomenus is mentioned in the Homeric catalogue with the epithet~~

roAvpndos. It sent soldiers to Thermopyle and to Platza. The native form of the name was 'Epydpevos.

ORDEAL (Anglo-Saxon orddl, ordzl, judgment) corre- sponds to modern German wrtheil, but bears the special sense of the medizval Latin Dei judicium, a miraculous decision as to the truth of an accusation or claim. (The word is adopted in the late Latin ordalium, French ordalie. The ordeal had existed for many ages before it was thus named in Europe. In principle, and often in the very forms used, it belongs to ancient culture, thence flourishing up to the medieval European and modern Asiatic levels, but dying out before modern civilization. Some ordeals, which possibly represent early stages of the practice, are simply magical, being processes of divination turned to legal purpose. Thus in Burmah suits are still determined by plaintiff and defendant being each furnished with a candle, equal in size and both lighted at once,—he whose candle outlasts the other being adjudged, amid the acclama- tions of his friends, to have won his cause (Shway Yoe, The Burman, vol. ii. p. 254). Even quainter is a Dyak ordeal in Borneo, where the two parties are represented by two shell-fish on a plate, which are irritated by pouring on some limejuice, and the one first moving settles the guilt or innocence (as has been before arranged) of its owner (St John, Lorests of the Far East, vol. i. p. 89). The adminis- tration of ordeals has been much in the hands of priests, and they are more often than not worked on a theological basis, the intervention of a deity being invoked and assumed to take place even when the process is in its nature one of symbolic magic. For instance, an ancient divining instrument consisted of a sieve held suspended by a thread or by a pair of shears with the points stuck into its rim, and considered to move at the mention of the name to be discovered, &c. Thus girls consulted the "sieve-witch" (kooKkivdpavrts) about lovers (Theocr., Zdyll., lil, 31). This coscinomancy served in the same way to discover a thief, when, with prayer to the gods for direc- tion, the names of the suspected persons were called over to it (Potter, Greek Antiquities, vol. i. p. 352). When a suspended hatchet was used in the same way to turn to the guilty, the process was called axinomancy. The sieve-

Opie Ay Ih

ordeal remained popular in the Middle Ages (see the de- scription and picture in Cornelius Agrippa, De Occ. Phil.) ; it is mentioned in Hudibras (ii. 3) : *¢, , , th' oracle of sieve and shears That turns as certain as the spheres."

From this ancient ordeal is evidently derived the modern Christian form of the key and Bible, where a Psalter or Bible is suspended by a key tied in at Psalm 1. 18: "When thou sawest a thief, then thou consentedst with him" ; the bow of the key being balanced on the fingers, and the names of those suspected being called over, he or she at whose name the book turns or falls is the culprit (see Brand, Popular Antiquities, ed. Bohn, vol. iii. p. 351).

One of the most remarkable groups of divinations pass- ing into ordeals are those which appeal to the corpse itself for discovery of its murderer. The idea is rooted in that primitive state of mind which has not yet realized the full effect of death, but regards the body as still able to hear and act. Thus the natives of Australia will ask the dead man carried on his bier of boughs who bewitched him ; if he has died by witchcraft he will make the bier move round, and if the sorcerer who killed him be present a bough will touch him (Eyre, Australia, vol. ii, p. 344). That this is no isolated fancy is shown by its recurrence among the negroes of Africa, where, for instance, the corpse causes its bearers to dash against some one's house, which accuses the owner of the murder (J. L. Wilson, Western Africa, p. 231; Waitz, vol. ii, p. 193). This somewhat resembles the well-known ordeal of the bier in Europe in the Middle Ages, which, however, seems founded on a different principle, the imagination that a sympathetic action of the blood causes it to flow at the touch or neigh- bourhood of the murderer. Apparently the liquefaction of the blood which in certain cases takes place after death may have furnished the ground for this belief. On Teutonic ground, this ordeal appears in the Nibelungenlied, where the murdered Siegfried is laid on his bier, and Hagen is called on to prove his innocence by going to the corpse, but at his approach the dead chief's wounds bleed atresh. The typical instance in English history is the passage of Matthew Paris, that after Henry II.'s death at Chinon his son Richard came to view the body, " Quo superveniente, confestim erupit sanguis ex naribus regis mortui; ac si indignaretur spiritus in adventu ejus, qui ejusdem mortis causa esse credebatur, ut videretur sanguis clamare ad Deum." In Shakespeare (Rich. LIL, act 1, se. 2):

~~‘*O gentlemen, see, see! dead Henry’s wounds Open their congeal’d mouths, and bleed afresh !”~~

~~At Hertford assizes (4 Car. I.) the deposition was taken as to certain suspected murderers being required to touch the corpse, when the murdered woman thrust out the ring finger three times and it dropped blood on the grass (Brand, vol. ili, p. 231); and there was a case in the Scottish High Court of Justiciary as late as 1668 (T. F. Thiselton Dyer, Folklore of Shakespeare, p. 487). Durham peasants, ap- parently remembering the old belief, still expect those who come to look at a corpse to touch it, in token that they bear no ill-will to the departed (W. Henderson, Solklore of Northern Counties, p. 57).~~

~~Certain ordeals are closely related to oaths, so that the two shade into one another. Let the curse which is to fall on the oath-breaker take effect at once, it then becomes a sign condemning the swearer,—in fact, an ordeal. Thus the drinking of water on which a curse or magical penalty has been laid is a mere oath so long as the time of fulfil- ment is unfixed (see OaTH). But it becomes an ordeal when, as in Brahmanic India, the accused drinks three handfuls of water in which a sacred image has been dipped; if he is innocent nothing happens, but if he is guilty sick- ness or misfortune will fall on him within one to three~~

~~weeks (for accounts of these and other Hindu ordeals see Ali Ibrahim Khan in Asiatic Researches, vol. i. p. 389, and Stenzler’s summary in Z. D. Jf. G., vol. ix.). The earliest account of such an ordeal is in Numbers v., which describes the mode of administering to a woman charged with unfaithfulness the bitter water mixed with the dust of the tabernacle floor, with the curse laid on it to cause her belly to swell and her thigh to fallif guilty. Ewald (Antiqui- ties of Israel, 236) regards the draught as in itself harmless, and the operation of this curse on the guilty as due to the influence of the mind on the body. But the term “ bitter” is applied to the water before it has been cursed, which suggests that it already contained some drug, as in the poison-water ordeal still in constant use over a great part of Africa. Thus the red water of Guinea is a decoction made by pounding in a wooden mortar and steeping in water the inner bark of one of~~

~~the mimosas, producing a liquor like that of a tan-vat, astringent, narcotic, and when taken in sufficient quantity emetic. The accused, with solemn ceremony and invocation, drinks freely of it; if it nauseates him and he throws it up he is triumphantly acquitted, but if he becomes dizzy he is guilty, and the assembly fall on him, pelt him with stones, and even drag him over the rocks till he is dead. Here the result of the ordeal depends partly on the patient's constitution, but more on the sorcerer who can prepare the proper dose to prove either guilt or innocence. Among the various drugs used in different parts of Africa are the mbundu root, the Calabar bean, the tangena nut (Zanghinia venenrflua, a strong poison and emetic). The sorcerers who administer this ordeal have in their hands a power of inflicting or remitting judicial murder, giving them boundless influence (details in J. L. Wilson, Western Africa, pp. 225, 398 ; Burton, Lake Regions of Central Africa, vol. ii. p. 357 ; Bosman, "Guinea," in Pinkerton's Voyages, vol. xvi. pp. 398, &c.). The poison-ordeal is also known to Brahmanic law, decoc- tion of aconite root being one of the poisons given, and the accused if not sickening being declared free (Stenzler, /.c.). Theoretically connected with the ordeal by cursed drink is that by cursed food, which is, however, distinguished among this black catalogue by being sometimes an effect- ual means of discovering the truth. The ordeal by bread and cheese, practised in Alexandria about the 2d century, was practically the same as that known to English law five to ten centuries later as the corsned or "trial slice" of consecrated bread and cheese which was administered from the altar, with the curse that if the accused were guilty God would send the angel Gabriel to stop his throat, that he might not be able to swallow that bread and cheese. In fact, if guilty and not a hardened offender he was apt to fail, dry-mouthed and choking through terror, to get it down. The remembrance of this ancient ordeal still lingers in the popular phrase, " May this bit choke me if I lie!" In India the corresponding trial by rice is prescribed in the old laws to be done by suspected persons chewing the consecrated grains of rice and spitting them out, moist and untinged with blood, on a banyan leaf ; this or the mere chewing and swallowing of a mouth- ful of rice-grains is often used even by the English as a means of detecting a thief. A classical mention of the ordeals by carrying hot iron in the hands and by passing through the fire is made more interesting by the guards who offer to prove their innocence in this way offering further to take oath by the gods, which shows the intimate~~

~~connexion between oaths and ordeals (Soph., Ant., 264, see also Aschyl., fr. 284).~~

~~Fev 5° Eroupor kal pvdpous alpev xepoiv kal wip diéprew, kal Oeods dpxwmorey 7d pre Spdcar unre TH Evverdévar~~

~~Td mpaypa BovdevoarTt ujT eipyarpevyr~~

~~820~~

~~The passing through the fire is described in the Hindu codes of Yajnavalkya and others, and is an incident in Hindu poetry, where in the Rdmdyana the virtuous Sité thus proves her innocence to her jealous husband Rama (Stenzler, p. 669; Pictet, Origines Indo-E'uropéennes, part li, p. 457). It was not less known to European law and chronicle, as where Richardis, wife of Charles the Fat, proves her innocence by going into a fire clothed in a waxed shift, and is unhurt by the fire (Grimm, Deutsche Rechts-alterthtimer, p. 912). Yet more minutely prescribed in the Hindu ordeal-books is the rite of carrying the glowing hot iron seven steps, into the seven or nine circles traced on the ground, the examination of the hands to see if they show traces of burning, and the binding them up in leaves. The close historical connexion of the Hindu ordeal laws with the old European is shown by the correspondence of minute details, as where in a Scandinavian law it is pre- scribed that the red-hot iron shall be carried nine steps (Grimm, op. cit., p. 918). In Anglo-Saxon laws the iron to be carried was at first only one pound weight, but Athelstan's law (in Ancient Laws and Institutes of England, iv. 6) enacts that it be increased to weigh three pounds. Another form well known in old Germany and England was the walking barefoot over glowing ploughshares, generally nine. The law-codes of the early Middle Ages show this as an ordinary criminal procedure (see the two works last referred to), but it is perhaps best remembered in two non-historical legends. The German queen Kunigunde, "hee dicens stupentibus et flentibus universis qui aderant, vomeres candentes nudo vestigio calcavit et sine adustionis molestia transiit" (Vita Henrie, ap. Canisium, vi. 387). Queen Emma, mother of Edward the Confessor, accused of familiarity with Alwyn bishop of Winchester, triumphantly purges herself and him by the help of St Swithin,—each of the two thus acquitted giving nine manors to the church of Winchester, in memory of the nine~~

ploughshares, and the king being corrected with stripes (John Bromton; see Freeman's Norm. Cong., vol. ii. App.). To dip the hand in boiling water or oil or melted lead and take out a stone or ring is another ordeal of this class. The traveller may find some of these fiery trials still in use, or at least in recent memory, in barbaric regions of Africa or further Asia,—the negro plunging his arm into the caldron of boiling oil, the Burman doing feats with melted lead, while the Bedouin will settle a conflict of evidence by the Opposing witnesses licking a glowing hot-iron spoon (Burckhardt, Arabien, pp. 98, 233). This latter feat may be done with safety by any one, provided the iron be clean and thoroughly white hot, while if only red-hot it would touch and burn the tongue. Probably the administerers of the ordeal are aware of this, and of the possibility of dipping the hand in melted metal ; and there are stories of arts of protecting the skin (see the recipe in Albertus Magnus, De Mirabil- tbus), though it is not known what can be really done beyond making it horny like a smith's, which would serve as a defence in stepping on hot coals, but not in serious trials like that of carrying a heavy red-hot iron. The fire- ordeals are still performed by mountebanks, who very likely keep up the same means of trickery which were in official use when the accused was to be acquitted. The actual practice of the fire-ordeal contrasts shamefully with its theory, that the fire rather than harm the innocent re- strained its natural action. Thus it stands in the Hindu code of Manu (viii. 115): "He whom the flame does not burn, whom the water does not cast up, or whom no harm soon befals, is to be taken as truthful in his oath." The water-ordeal here referred to is that well known in Europe, where the accused is thrown bound into the water, which receives him if innocent, but rejects him if guilty. The manner of carrying out this test is well explained in the

directions given by Archbishop Hinemar in the 9th cen- tury: he who is let down into the water for trial is to be fastened by a rope, that he may not be in danger if the water receives him as innocent, but may be pulled out. In the later Middle Ages this ordeal by "swimming" or "fleeting" became the most approved means of trying a suspected witch: she was stripped naked and cross bound, the right thumb to the left toe, and the left thumb to the right toe. In this state she was cast into a pond or river, in which it was

thought impossible for her to sink. (Brand, vol. iil. p. 21.) The cases of "ducking" witches which have occurred in England within the last few years are remains of the ancient ordeal.

If there is one thing that may be predicated of man in a state of nature it is that two disputants tend to fight out their quarrel. When in the warfare of Greeks and Trojans, of Jews and Philistines, of Vandals and Alamans, heroes come out from the two sides and their combat is taken to mark the powers of the opposing war-gods and decide the victory, then the principle of the ordeal by battle has been practically called in. Among striking instances of the Teutonic custom which influenced the whole of medizval Europe may be cited the custom of the Franks that the princes, if they could not quell the strife, had to fight it out between themselves, and Wippo's account of the quarrel between the Christian Saxons and the Pagan Slavs as to which broke the peace, when both sides demanded of the emperor that it should be settled by duel, which was done by choosing a champion on each side, and the Christian fell. The Scandinavian term "holmgang" refers to the habit of fighting duels on an island. A passage from old German law shows the single combat accepted as a regular legal procedure : "If there be dispute concerning fields, vineyards, or money, that they avoid perjury let two be chosen to fight, and decide the cause by duel" (Grimm, Rechtsalterth., p. 928), In England, after the Conquest, trial by combat superseded other legal ordeals, which were abolished in the time of Henry III. Among famous instances is that of Henry de Essex, hereditary standard-bearer of England, who fled from a battle in Wales, in 1158, threw from him the royal standard, and cried out that the king was slain. Robert de Montfort afterwards, accusing him of having done this with treasonable intent, offered to prove his accusation by combat, and they fought in presence of Henry II. and his court, when Essex was defeated, but the king spared his life, and, his estate being confiscated, he became a monk in Reading Abbey. A lord often sent his man in his stead to such combats, and priests and women were ordinarily represented by champions. The wager of battle died out so quietly in England without being legally abolished that in the Court of King's Bench in 1818 it was claimed by a person charged with murder, which led to its formal abolition (Ashford v, Thornton in Barnewall and Alderson, 457; see details in H. C. Lea, Superstition and Loree, ii.). A distinct connexion may, however, be traced between the legal duel and the

illegal private duel, which has disappeared from England in our own time, but still flourishes in France and Germany. (E. B. T.)

ORDER, or Orprnation (Ordo seu sacra ordinatio), one of the seven sacraments of the Roman Catholic Church (see SAcRAMENT), is the rite by which the ministers of that church, in their respective ranks as priests, deacons, subdeacons, acolytes, exorcists, lectors, and doorkeepers (ostiarii), receive power and grace for the discharge of their several functions. The nature of these functions is stated in separate articles (see ACOLYTE, &c.). The sacrament of order or ordination cannot be administered except by a bishop. The seven ranks just mentioned are themselves called "orders," the first three being distinguished as the

"major" or " holy" orders (ordines majores, sacra); the others are "minor" (ordines minores). Within the order of the priesthood itself there are various degrees of power and dignity :—(1) that of priest, pure and simple ; (2) that of bishop; (3) that of archbishop; (4) that of patriarch (see BisHop, &c.). For a brief statement of the points of difference as to ecclesiastical orders between the Roman Catholic and the Orthodox Greek Churches, see vol. xi. p. 159. The Church of England expressly recognizes the diaconate and the priesthood, but no others, as distinct orders; bishops and archbishops are "ordained and conse- crated." In the 25th Article the name of sacrament is deliberately withheld from orders. Compare the articles CierGy, Eprscopacy, INDEPENDENTS, MonacHisM, PREs-BYTERIANISM.

ORDERICUS VITALIS, the author of a History of con- siderable value in relation to England and Normandy in the 11th and 12th centuries, was born in the year 1075 at Atcham near Shrewsbury. His father, Odeler of Orleans, was one of the followers of Roger Montgomery, a powerful baron who had accompanied William the Conqueror from Normandy, and in whom that monarch reposed especial confidence. Roger had at one time cruelly despoiled the abbey of St Evroul en Ouche, and in his latter years sought to make reparation by bestowing large gifts of benefices and lands on the society. In this manner Odeler also became interested in St Evroul. He was a married priest, and Orderic, the eldest of his three sons, who had at first

been sent by him to receive his education at Shrewsbury, was now at the age of ten years dedicated to the monastic life and sent to St Evroul. It was a Benedictine foundation, and at this time perhaps the most celebrated of all the schools in Normandy (Gallia Christiana, xi, 814-6). On the 21st of September 1085 the youthful Orderic received the tonsure and was admitted one of the oblates of the monastery. It was the feast of St Maurice, the commander of the legendary Theban legion, and Orderic's name, which seems to have been displeasing to the Norman ear, was now changed into that of Vitalis, one of Maurice's lieutenants. In March 1093 he was ordained a deacon, but was not admitted to priestly orders until 1107. We have it on his own testi- mony that he was treated with kindness in his new home, and his uneventful life was chiefly passed in a routine of religious observances and of such studies as the Benedict- ine rule was then interpreted to admit; but from this number, he tells us, pagan history was excluded. The discipline of the society at St Evroul was well maintained, and not a few of its members were worthy representatives of that spirit of devotion to learning by which their order was long so honourably distinguished. Orderic's superiors appear to have soon discerned his aptitude for literary labours, and at the suggestion of two of their number (Roger and Guérin) he first commenced to write the history of the foundation. Among his fellow-monks were men who had taken part in the expeditions of the Normans in Italy and Sicily, in the Crusades, and in the wars waged by William the Conqueror and his sons, and to such associations, as well as to the advantages which a resident at St Evroul would enjoy owing to its being a great centre of intercommunication, we must attribute much of the remarkably varied and minute information with which the Historia abounds. Travel, again, appears to have had for Orderic a special charm ; and, notwith- standing the difficulties interposed by his monastic vow, he twice revisited his native country, Croyland and Worcester having been his principal places of sojourn. We also find him at Cambrai, and in 1132 at Cluny at a great gathering of its celebrated order. In the year 1141, being, as he tells us, worn out with age and

infirmities, he was fain to bring his historical labours to a close, and it is inferred that his death occurred soon after. Although compelled to quit his

~~native country at so early an age, Orderic seems always to have felt himself an exile. In the title of his work he is careful to describe himself as "Angligena," and throughout the narrative he gives special prominence to whatever relates to England.~~

~~The Historia Ecclesiastica is divided into three parts. Of these the first, in two books, gives an outline of the history of the church from the commencement of the Christian era to the death of Pope Leo IV. in 855, a list of the popes from that date to Innocent II. being appended. The second part—the first in order of com- position (see supra)—is the Historia Uticensis, or history of the monastery of St Evroul from its foundation by Abbot Ebrulf in the year 560 to the narrator's own time; it contains many interesting sketches of the abbots and other members or benefactors of the society. The third part—the only genuinely historical portion of the work—is in seven books, and is devoted to a general account of events in Western Christendom from Carolingian times down to the year 1141. With the year 1084 (after a considerable break in the narrative) the work begins to assume its peculiar value as a storehouse of information with respect to the history and social condition of England and Normandy in the latter part of the llth and first half of the 12th century. In striking contrast to the ordinary chroniclers of his age, Orderic collected and recorded with scrupulous care numerous facts and incidents which others would have deemed too insignificant for notice. But there is no work relating to the same period, says Guizot, which throws so much light on the political, civil, and religious aspects of society in the West, and the conditions of feudal, monastic, and ordinary life. These merits, however, are in no slight degree obscured by Orderic's singularly involved style and turgid diction, while his absolute disregard of method renders his uarrative at times difficult to comprehend and follow.~~

~~In addition to the Historia there exists in the library at Rouen a manuscript edition of the Norman history of William of Jumiéges, which M. Leopold Delisle feels no hesitation in assigning to Orderic (see his Lettre d M. Jules Lair, 1873).~~

~~The best edition of the Historia is that edited by M. Auguste Le Prévost, in five volumes (1838-55). In the concluding volume (pp. i.-cvi.) there is an~~

~~admirable account and criticism of Orderic by M. Leopold Delisle. The edition in Migne's Patrologia, vol. clxxxviii., though a later publication, is a reprint of the less accurate text of Duchesne. A French translation by M. Guizot, in 4 vols., 8vo, was published at Caen in 1821-27; and there is an~~

~~English version (with Guizot's preface) by Thomas Forester, 4 vols., 1853-56, in Bohn's Antiquarian Library.~~

~~ORDERS OF KNIGHTHOOD. See KnicutHoop.~~

~~ORDINARY is the legal name for a bishop or other person with original ecclesiastical jurisdiction when exercis- ing the functions of his office. He is so called " quia habet ordinariam jurisdictionem in jure proprio et non per depu- tationem " (Coke upon Littleton, 96a). The word is also used in a non-ecclesiastical sense. By the Divorce Act, 1857, 20 and 21 Vict. c. 85 8q., the judge appointed by that Act had the title of Judge Ordinary. This title has now, however, become obsolete owing to the incorporation of the Divorce Court with the High Court of Justice by the Judicature Act, 1873. In Scotland the judge before whom a cause depends in the Outer House is called the Lord Ordinary in that cause, and the judge who officiates in the Bill Chamber is called the Lord Ordinary on the Bills. In the United States the ordinary possesses, in the States where such an officer exists, powers vested in him by the constitution and acts of the legislature. In South Carolina he is a judicial officer.~~

~~OREBRO, one of the most important cities in Sweden, the chief town of a province of its own nanie, lies on both sides of the Svarta about a mile above its entrance into Lake Hjelmar, and 160 miles by rail west of Stockholm. In great part rebuilt since the fire of 1854, it has quite a modern appearance. Besides the principal church, dating from the close of the 14th or beginning of the 15th century, but modernized in the 19th, the more conspicuous buildings are the castle, on an island in the middle of the stream, the new Gothic town-house, the theatre, and the hospital. In front of the town-house stands a statue by Qvarnstrém, erected in 1865, representing Engelbrecht, the nobleman who was elected administrator of the kingdom in 1435; and~~

~~Plate DOT.~~

in front of the principal hotel is an obelisk in honour of the Swedish Reformers Olaus and Laurentius Petri. Orebro has railway connexion with the mining districts round about, and carries on a trade with Stockholm by means of the Hjelmar Canal. The population was 2147 in 1749, 4227 in 1840, 9056 in 1865, and 11,785 in 1880.

Orebro was in existence in the 11th century. Its castle, erected by Birger Jarl in the 13th century, plays an important part in the early annals of Sweden ; and no fewer than twenty diets or important assemblies have been held either in castle or town. It is sufficient to mention the Orebro concilium of 1537, the diet of 1540 in which the crown was declared hereditary, and that of 1810 when Bernadotte was elected crown prince.

OREGON, one of the Pacific States of the American Union, is bounded N. by Washington Territory, E. by Idaho Territory, 8. by Nevada and California, and W. by the Pacific, and lies between 42° and 46° 15' N. lat. and 116° 45' and 124° 30' W. long. It has an area of 94,560 square miles, besides 1470 square miles of water- surface ; its average width from east to west is 345 miles, and from north to south 276 miles.

The State is divided by the Coast, Cascade, and Blue Mountains into well-marked sections, The Cascade range extends in an almost due north and south direction, parallel with the Pacific coast, and a little over 100 miles from it, entirely across the State, and thence northerly through Washington Territory into British Columbia; still farther north it forms the undefined boundary between the latter province and Alaska, In Oregon the range is heavily timbered, chiefly with coniferous evergreens, the principal trees being yellow, sugar, and scrub pine, yellow and white fir, several varieties of spruce, red and white cedar, yew, juniper, tamarack, and cypress; there is also a consider- able quantity of maple, ash, and alder, and some oak in the western foot-hills to the south. Its most striking feature is the number of beautiful cone-shaped peaks, ris- ing above the line of perpetual snow. Several quite low passes exist, which, however, are very little used. Com- mencing at the southern boundary of Oregon, the first of these peaks is Mount Pitt (9818 feet), flanked on all sides by outlying spurs and foot-hill ranges. Forty miles to the north stands Mount Scott (9016 feet), the eastern

slope of which, covered with ashes and light débris, is compara- tively easy of ascent; on the west the bluffs are almost perpendicular walls of igneous rock, sheltering great masses of snow. Mount Scott overlooks Mystic or Crater Lake, an elliptically-shaped basin of water about 5 miles long by 3 miles broad, entirely surrounded by unbroken cliff-walls ranging from 500 to 2000 feet; this occupies the crater of a gigantic old volcano of which Mount Scott is a portion of the eastern rim, all the rest having been carried away by erosion and other causes. Forty miles farther north is Diamond Peak (8807 feet high), which also gives evidence of being the south-eastern portion of an old crater rim. The portion of the mountain-chain from Mount Scott to Diamond Peak was a region of numer- ous volcanoes and of very extensive local lava-flows. It has a very high average elevation, and in it all the prin- cipal rivers of western Oregon have their sources: the Willamette, running to the north-west ; the Des Chutes, running to the north-east; the head-water streams of Klamath river, flowing to the south, and breaking through the range to the west; the Rogue river, flowing to the south-west; and the Umpqua to the west and north. The Three Sisters (in reality five) are the next marked peaks (about 9000 feet); they seem to be portions of an old crater rim, 12 miles in diameter, now broken and worn away. Mount Jefferson (about 10,200 feet) comes next, and then Mount Hood, the highest of all (11,225 feet). To the north of this the Columbia breaks through the range, having cut for itself a cafon, 4000 feet in depth,

through the overlying lava and far into the previously- formed conglomerate on which it rests.

Eastern Oregon is in its southern part a vast volcanic plateau, rocky and sterile, lacking water, and possessing few natural attractions. The great interior basin, with- out outlet to the ocean, extends far up into the State. In this region are a few lakes, generally alkaline and marshy sinks, fed by little streams which have their origin in the small neighbouring mountain masses. The principal vege- tation consists of several varieties of sage brush, dwarf pine, and juniper, the last furnishing the winter food of immense numbers of deer, which, during the summer, range through the highlands and glens of the Cascades. Many small peaks and ranges rise

~~from the plateau, all probably of volcanic origin, and some of them made up almost exclusively of blocks and masses of obsidian. From near its junction with the Boisée to the northern line of the State the Snake river forms the eastern boundary of Oregon, and nowhere in the world is there to be found a more perfect and impassable barrier than is formed by this river and its tremendous cafion, of which the walls (con- sisting of basaltic and kindred rocks) are from 2000 to 5000 feet in height, and so steep and precipitous that the most skilful mountaineer can scarcely find a place to ascend or descend them. In several cases the columnar black basalt takes wonderful shapes and produces most fantastic effects. The Snake in this part of its course is not navigable, and can never be made so. The northern portion of eastern Oregon is far superior in all its phy- sical characteristics to the southern. Confused masses, known as the Blue and Powder River Mountains, lie in the north-east, modifying the climate for the better, and giving many rich valleys and table-lands to the agricul- turist. 'The Grande Ronde, Umatilla, John Day, Burnt, and Powder rivers are the principal streams, and their main and tributary valleys are very lovely. The mount- ains are covered with pine of a very fair quality, with fir, cedar, and some maple, all of which is being rapidly cleared away. In the valleys cottonwood, willow, birch, aspen, and poplar grow freely. The hills are well stocked with the larger game, as bear, deer, mountain sheep, grey wolves, panthers, foxes, d&c., the valleys and lakes with feathered game in considerable variety, and the streams with trout and salmon. Many mines of gold and silver have been found in the Blue and Powder River Mount- ains, but none of remarkable richness. Nearly all the untimbered plains and valleys of north-eastern Oregon are covered with a rich growth of the hardy and nutritious "bunch grass." The soil is very deep, and, coming, as it does, from the disintegration of volcanic rocks, is very fertile. The Des Chutes river drains most of the eastern slope of the Cascades, flowing in a wild turbulent stream through a deeply-cut cafion. The river is so swift, crooked, and with such rugged banks and so many jagged rocks that it is deemed impracticable even for the lumberman's use in floating logs to the Columbia. ;~~

~~The warm oceanic current from Japan, flowing south along the coast, is the cause of the mild climate of western Oregon, and of the heavy and incessant rains with which it is visited, These rains, continued through the centuries,~~

have chiselled away the mountains, and, with other geo- logical agencies, produced the three principal valleys into which this portion of the State may be considered as divided,—the Willamette, Umpqua, and Rogue river valleys. The Willamette valley has an area of about 8000 square miles, and contains more than half the popu- lation and wealth of the entire State. Its lower portions are level loamy plains, covered with rank grass, and here and there great areas of lowland timber, such as alder, maple, ash, cottonwood, poplar, &c., and a vast profusion of

shrubbery. All about these lower plains are well-marked terraces, composing the higher levels, and from these, east, west, and south to the encircling mountains, are spread away the rolling fertile uplands, gradually merging into the dense fir and pine forests which crown the higher summits. Many things attest the former presence of an arm of the sea extending from Puget Sound to the southern end of the valley. Many basaltic ridges yet remain, but this rock has been largely washed away. Western Oregon is well supplied with the ordinary building stones, as granite, syenite, and sandstone. Marble and limestone are found in the extreme south-west, and a valuable cement stone in the valley of the Umpqua. The Umpqua is a rapid mountain stream, and its valley is narrow but extremely fertile. This and Rogue river break through the Coast range in cafions, deep, rugged, and heavily timbered. The valley of Rogue river is beautiful, with a delightful climate, but it has always been very difficult of access, and has only now been reached for the first time from the north by the railroad. Much gold has been taken from the placer mines of the valley, and the sands and gravels of nearly all the tributary valleys carry the precious metal. The country lying between the Coast range and the ocean is narrow and very rugged, with some small cultivable valleys very difficult of access. There are no good harbours on the coast, but the Government is making efforts to improve Coos and Yaquina bays and Port Orford.

The Columbia river enters the Pacific Ocean near the 46th degree of north latitude; it drains by means of its tributaries the western slope of the Rocky Mountains, from about the 42d to the 53d parallel, a distance of 900 niles. The area of its drainage-basin is nearly 245,000 square miles. The route of

communication by the Columbia has been of the greatest importance in the early develop- ment of Oregon, and its value increases daily. The head of navigation for sea-going ships is at Portland, about 100 miles up the Columbia and 12 miles up the Willamette. From this point up to the Cascades, river craft go freely with plenty of water at all seasons of the year, with, generally, the exception of a short time each winter when the river is frozen. The cascades of the Columbia are due north from Mount Hood, just on the central line of the range where it is cut through by the river. The obstruction to navigation here is complete ; but the Government has for several years been engaged in the construction of a canal which will make navigation continuous 45 miles farther, up to the Dalles, at the eastern base of the Cascades. Here there is another total obstruction, the river flowing swiftly through intricate channels, which seem to have been originally great cracks in a field of lava; surveys have been made, however, and plans prepared for improvements. Above the Dalles the Columbia is navigable for 190 miles and the Snake for 180. The Northern Pacific Railroad passes down on the Oregon side, through the cafion of the Columbia. The Columbia is noted for its beautiful scenery, for the great quantity of salmon taken from its waters, and for the dreaded bar at its mouth. The dangers from this bar have been greatly lessened of late years by improved pilot- age and more accurate knowledge of the phenomena ; and further ameliorations by the general Government are in contemplation.

The south-west warm winds from the Pacific distribute vapours over western Oregon abundantly in autumn, winter, and spring in dews, fogs, rains, and occasional snows, and over eastern Oregon in less amounts. The north-west summer winds are cool. The average tempera- ture in western Oregon is—in spring 52°, in summer 67', in autumn 53°, and in winter 39° Fahr, The thermometer

seldom rises above 90° in the hottest days of the summer, and rarely falls below 20° in the winter. In the thirteen years 1849-51 and 1858-68, two-thirds of the days were pleasant, and only one-third were either showery or rainy or snowy in the north-west part of the State. In the Willamette valley the average yearly rainfall is 44 to 54 inches, which is about the same as at

Philadelphia and at Davenport (Iowa). In the Umpqua and Rogue river valleys it is somewhat less. Thunder-storms seldom occur in the State, and cyclones and tornadoes are unknown.

Geology.—The geological history of the Cascade and Coast ranges of Oregon is very interesting. For an immense period before these ranges existed the primeval ocean washed the western shores of the great Rocky Mountain chain, and throughout the Paleozoic era and the whole Triassic and Jurassic periods of the Mesozoic era nuimer- ous rivers kept bringing down débris until an enormously thick mass of off-shore deposits had accumulated. This marginal sea- bottom became the scene of intense aqueo-igneous action in its deeply-buried strata, producing a line of weakness, which, yielding to the horizontal thrust produced by the secular contraction of the interior of the earth, was crushed together and swollen up into the Sierra Nevada and Cascade Mountains at the end of the Jurassic period. The range thus produced, as far as can be ascertained, was not of very great height, though probably higher to the south than tothe north. It existed for unknown centuries, and in its turn was the theatre of erosion and plant-growth, and was roamed over by the now extinct fauna of the Cretaceous and Tertiary periods, It was not yet covered by the great lava-flow and mountain range of the modern Cascades, but by forests of conifers and oaks. Beneath the overlying lava, where the Columbia breaks through the range, there is found along the water's edge, and for about 15 feet up- wards, a very coarse conglomerate of rounded porphyritic pebbles and boulders of all sizes up to 6 feet in diameter, held together by au imperfectly-lithified earthy paste. Above this conglomerate is a very distinct irregular old ground-surface bed, in which are found silicified stumps with roots extending over a diameter of 20 feet and penetrating into the boulder material beneath, evidently in situ. Resting directly on this forest ground-surface, and therefore en- closing the erect stumps, is a layer of stratified sandstone, 2 or 3 feet thick, filled with beautiful and perfect impressions of leaves of several kinds of forest trees, possibly of the very trees about whose silicified bases they are found ; this layer is not continuous, like the ground-surface on which it rests. Above this leaf-bearing stratuin rests a coarse conglomerate similar to that beneath at the water-level. Scattered about in the lower part of this upper con- glomerate and in the stratified sandstone, and sometimes lying in the dirt-bed beneath it, fragments of silicified drift-

wood are found. Above this last conglomerate, and resting upon it, rise the layers of lava, mostly columnar basalt, one above another, to a height of more than 3000 feet. The following order of events has been deduced from these facts by Professor Le Conte, their first observer.

The region of the Columbia river was a forest, probably a valley, overgrown by conifers and oaks. The subsoil was a coarse boulder drift produced by erosion of some older rocks. An excess of water

'came on, either by floods or changes of level, and the trees were

killed, their leaves shed and buried in mud, and their trunks rotted to stumps. Then came ona tumultuous and rapid deposit of coarse drift, containing drift-wood, which covered up the forest ground and the still remaining stumps, to a depth of one, perhaps several, hundred feet. The surface thus formed was eroded into hills and dales, and then followed the outburst of lava in successive flows, and the silicification of the wood and cementation of the drift by the percolation of the hot alkaline waters containing silica, Finally followed the process of erosion by which the present stream, channels, and valleys, whether main or tributary, have been cut to their enormous depths. The great masses of sediment sent down to the sea by the erosion of the primary Cascade range, form- ing a thick off-shore deposit, gave rise in turn at the end of the Miocene to the upheaval of the Coast range, the Cascade Mountains being at the same time rent along the axis into enormous fissures, from which outpoured the grand lava-floods, building the mount- ains higher, and covering the country for great distances. This is probably the grandest lava-flow known to geology, covering as it does an area of about 200,000 square miles. Commencing in middle California as separate streams, in northern California it becomes a flood, completely mantling the smaller and flowing around the greater inequalities. In northern Oregon and Washing- ton it becomes an absolutely universal flood, beneath which the whole original face of the country, with its hills and dales, mount- ains and valleys, lies buried several thousand feet. It covers the greater portion of northern California and north-western Nevada, nearly the whole of Oregon, Washington, and Idaho, and runs far into British Columbia on the north. The average thickness is

probably not far from 2000 feet, and the greatest (shown where the Columbia, Des Chutes, Snake, Salmon, and other rivers cut through it) about 4000 feet. To produce this many successive flows took place, and a very long period of time must have elapsed during which the volcanic actions were going on. During the period of these Cascade eruptions the Coast range was being slowly elevated, and became in its turn the scene of local volcanic action, which was, however, not very severe. At last the great fissure eruptions in the Cascades drew to a close by the fissures becoming blocked up ; the volcanic action was concentrated in a few localities, and the period of crater-eruptions followed. These eruptions con- tinued for a long time, almost to our own day, and to them the upbuilding of the snow-clad peaks is due. By the formation of the Cascade range there came into existence a grand interior basin, the waters of which collected into secondary reservoirs, some of very large extent, and were carried off by the rivers which have cut their way from the interior to the sea. The Columbia and its tributaries drained the northern part of this immense basin, and it was at this period, doubtless, that the Great Salt Lake of Utah assumed its once colossal proportions and found its outlet to the sea by the Snake and Columbia rivers. Then came the lava-floods, since denuded in places, exposing the Tertiary and Cretaceous beds, and furnishing evidence of the former condition of the region by the fossils found therein. At the end of the Miocene the Coast range was upheaved, and the lava-flows from the Cascade fissures commenced, but it was long before these reached the entire extent of the basins of Oregon, which continued to exist and to be endowed with life well into the Pliocene. The principal fossil beds of the State are those of the John Day, Des Chutes, and Grande Ronde countries, and near Christmas Lake in southern Oregon. The Glacial, Champlain, and Terrace epochs are very well illus- trated in several places, and have left marked evidences of their existence.

Fauna and Flora.—Since the occupation of the State by civilized men the grizzly, black, and cinnamon bears, grey wolf, coyote, panther, catamount, wild cat and polecat, deer, antelope, elk, and mountain sheep have slowly retreated from the settlements to the recesses of the hills. Fur-bearing animals have increased since the Hudson's Bay Company withdrew from the country. Silver foxes, martens, hares, rabbits, squirrels, raccoons, porcupines, beaver, otter, musk-rats, and seals are found in greater or less

abundance within the State. Salmon, sturgeon, trout, holibut, smelt, and other fish in countless numbers exist in the Columbia and its branches and in the bays and coast rivers, and oysters, shrimps, crabs, and clams along the shores. Eagles, hawks, cormorants, pelicans, gulls, cranes, albatross, vultures, buzzards, ravens, crows, Jays, robins, swallows, sparrows, rice-birds, yellow-birds, humming- birds, swans, geese, ducks, pigeons, and many other varieties of birds are found. Reptiles and insects are numerous.

The trees of Oregon include—Rhamnus Purshiana (bearberry), Acer cireinatwm (vine maple), A. macrophyllwm (large-leaved maple), Prunus (Cerasus) cmarginata, var. mollis (wild cherry), P. (C.) demissa (choke-cherry), Nuttallia cerasiformis (seam-berry, or squaw-berry), Cercocarpus ledifolius (mountain mahogany), Pyrus rivularis (Oregon crab-apple), P. sambucifolia (mountain ash), Crategus Douglasii (black haw), C. rivularis, Amelanchier canadensis (service-berry), Cornus Nuttallit (dog-wood), Sambucus glauca (elder), Arbutus Menzicsii (laurel, madrofio), Arctostaphylos pungens (manzanita), Fraxinus oregana (Oregon ash), Umbellularia (Oreodaphne) californica (myrtle), Myrica californica, Quercus chrysolepis (live oak), Q. densiflora, Q. Garryana (white oak), Q. Kelloggii (black oak), Castanopsis chrysophylla (chinquapin), Betula oceidentalis (birch), Alnus rhombifolia (alder), Salix lasiandra (willow), Populus tremuloides (quaking asp), P. trichocarpa, Taxus brevifolia (yew), Juniperus occidentalis (juniper), Cupressus (Chame- cyparis) Lawsoniana (Port Orford cedar), C. (Chamecyparis) Nut- kaensis (Sitka cedar), Thuya gigantea, Liboecdrus deeurrens (thick- barked cedar), Sequoia sempervirens (redwood), Abies concolor, A. grandis (white fir), A. nobilis, A. amabilis, A. subalpina, A. (Pseudotsuga) Douglasti, A. (Tsuga) Mertensiana (hemlock), .4. (Tsuga) Pattoniana (mountain hemlock), A. (Picea) Engelmanni, A. (P.) Sitchensis, Larix Lyallii (larch), L. occidentalis (larch, or tamarack), Pinus contorta (black pine, or jack pine), P. albicaulis, P. Lambertiana (sugar pine), P. monticola (silver pine), P. ponde- rosa, P. tuberculata.+

Agriculture, Manufactures, Commerce.—Wheat is the chief crop for home use and for export. All the smaller cereals are grown and produce largely. Flax is indigenous in southern and eastern Oregon ; it is cultivated both for seed and for lint. Maize gives a fair harvest, though the nights are too cool

~~for the best results. Vegetables of all kinds common to the temperate zone flourish, and orchard and garden fruits are sure. One species of clover is indigenous, but all varieties grow and spread rapidly over fields, pastures, and burnt forest lands.~~

~~Subjoined are the agricultural statistics for the years specified.~~

~~1 See List of the Trees of Oregon, published by Prof. G. H. Collier.~~

~~OREGON~~

~~1850. 1860. 1870. 1880.~~

~~Farm Produce.~~

~~Wheat, bushels…..... | 211,948 826,776 | 2,840,706 / 7,480,010 Oats, ee oe | 61,214 885,673 | 2,029,909 | 4,385,650 Barley, tie tat Coe 26,254 210,736 920,977 MIAN COM, 4,00 = een clet 2,918 76,122 72,138 126,862 Rye, 5 106 2,704 3,890 13,305 Buckwheat, ,, .../ sista 2,749 1,645 6,215 Potatoes, ISEINA ant pooooome unos dou 373 27,986 75,357 266,187 Hops) pounds' .....! 8 493 9,745 244,371 Tobacco ,, GQoutDS OOD 325 405 3,847 17,325 Liwe Stock and their Products. Value of live stock …... $1,876,189 | $5,946,255 | $6,828,675 | $13,808,392 Number of horses …..... 8,046 86,772 51,702 124,107 3 mules and asses | 420 980 2,581 2,804 as working oxen .. 8,114 7,469 2,441 4,182 Sc milch cows .. 9,427 53,170 48,325 59,549 a other cattle .. 24,188 98,492 69,431 352,561 3 BED. cos 15,382 86,052 318,123] 1,088,162 REE LPINS aoniacone: 30,235 81,615 119,455 156, 222 Pounds of butter …... 211,464 1,000,157 1,418,373 2,443,725 we (clreeset ete 36,980 105,397 79,838 153,198 » WOO] .....| 29,686 219,012 | 1,080,638 | 5,718,524 Farm Lands and Machinery. Number of farms . 1,164 5,806 7,587 16,217 Aéres in) ssevsese| 489,808} 2,060,539 | 2,889,952) 4,214,719 Ratio of improved land in 80°7 43°5 46°7 52°2 farms to total farm area, Value of farms ……..... $2,849,170 | $15,200,593 | $22,352,989 $56,908,575 » inplements and $183,423 $952,313} $1,293,717 | $2,956,178 machinery The statistics of manufactures are as follows :—~~

Manufactures, 1850. 1860. 1870. 1880. Establishments ..... 52 809 969 1,080 Capital .....| $848,600 | $1,837,238 | $4,376,849 | $6,812°056 Hands employed (average) .. 285 978 2,884 3,473 Wrest ce cee $388,620 | $635,256 | $1,120,173} $1,677,046

| Value of materials ..... $809, 560 | $1,431,952 | $3,419,756 | $6,954,436 » products ..... | $2,236,640 | $2,976,761 | $6,877,387 | $10,981,282 The principal industries ranked as follows in 1880 :— & Establish- ' Value of | Value of Selected Industries, ments. Capital. Material. | Product Meus and grist inill pro- 106 $1,286,200 | $2,978,714 | $8,475,531 ucts ee sash, doors, and 248 1,808,275 | 1,475,322 2,284,155 inds Woollen woods… 2… es… 10 566,800 227,486 549,080 Foundry and machine — shop 16 260,500 121,911 352,300 products Tin-ware, copper-ware, and 46 283,150 151,475 311,650 sheet-iron ware Other industries ..... 654 2,157,181 | 1,999,528 3,958,566 Total of all industries ....| 1080 $6,312,056 | $6,954,436 |. $10,981,232

Oregon has three ports of eutry—Astoria on the Columbia, Portland on the Willamette, and Coos Bay on the southern coast. The exports to foreign ports for the twelve months ending 31st July 1882 were $9,970,410; exports to domestic ports, $5,899,738 ; total exports, $15,870,148 ; wheat, $6,677,418 ; flour, $2,853,792 ; salmon, $2,484,761; wool, $1,488,360; oats, $417,640; lumber, $228,392. The salmon-canning business began in 1866 with a product of 4000 cases, valued at $64,000 ; the average annual value for the six years 1878-83 exceeded $2,000,000. Between Astoria and the cascades of the Columbia river there are about forty canneries. Over 1500 boats are employed in the fishery.

Railroads and Steamers.—In 1865 there were in Oregon 19 miles of railway open ; in 1875, 248 ; in 1880, 582; on 1st March 1884, 900 miles. Steamers ply twice a week between Portland and San Francisco (670 miles), and at frequent intervals on the Columbia river for 725 miles, on the Willamette 138 miles, and on the Snake river 180 miles.

Government and Finanec.—The statutes of Iowa and New York were the models of the provisional government of Oregon, and legislation has continued generally on these lines. The courts consist of a supreme court, with appellate jurisdiction, situated in Salem, the capital, and five circuit or

district courts, with county courts and justices' courts in every precinct of city and county. Cities have police courts also. There is a United States district court for Oregon, and a United States circuit court for Oregon with California and Nevada. The State debt in 1880 was $511,376, and local, county, city, and school debt was $377,126. The gross value of all property, as compiled from records in the office of the secretary of state in 1889, was $85,531,716; indebtedness, $22,300,912 ; exemption, $4,973,058 ; taxable property, $59,257,746 ; State tax, $325,917°38 ; wealth per head, $493°90.

Education.—In 1848 Congress granted to Oregon one-eighteenth of all the public domain for free schools. This area (3,387,520

OR E—

acres) was received by the State on its admission to the Union for the education of all its youth of both sexes. Congress also granted about twenty-six townships (500,000 acres) for a State university, and 90,000 acres for an agricultural college. A portion of these lands has been sold, and the proceeds have been made an irre- ducible fund for the objects named. The free-school system has been established in every county and almost every settlement. In Portland and other cities grades have been established from 'primary " to 'high school." The State university is established at Eugene City, and an agricultural college at Corvallis, This public-school system is supplemented by many corporate academies, seminaries, and colleges, and by parochial and private schools representing different denominations. A school for mutes and one for the blind have been established at Salem by the legislature. Ten institutions report as endowments $290, 132, yielding an annual income of $16,050, and thirteen report $35,166 from tuition, and a total annual income of $61,070. The number of children of school age (four to twenty years) is 65,216; enrolled in public schools 37,748, in private schools 5101. Public school expenses for the year ending 1st March 1882 amounted to $338,386 ; the

ublic schoolhouses numbered 1061, of the value of $684,298. The

nited States Indian Industrial Training School at Forest Grove, which numbers 146 pupils, taken from schools on the reservation, has become a

marked success. Of 119,482 white persons over ten years of age in 1880 only 3°6 per cent. were unable to write.

Charitable and Penal Institutions, —A State asylum for the insane at Salem has over 300 inmates. The State penitentiary is at Salem , the convicts are employed under contractors in various industries, subject to constant watch of officials.

Religion.—The statistics of 1875 report 351 religious organiza- tions of all denominations, with 242 church edifices, 320 clergymen, 14,324 communicants, and 71,630 adherents. The estimated value of church property was $654,000. The rank of the several denomina- tions in respect to numbers is approximately as follows: Methodists,

3aptists, Roman Catholics, Presbyterians, Episcopalians, Congre- gationalists, and five minor sects. The increase in seven years by immigration and other gains has been at least 35 per cent.

The Press.—Ovegon has 74 newspapers—72 in English and 2 in German. A weekly newspaper is published in every shire town, aud in many of the larger villages. Four daily papers are issued in Portland.

Cities and Chief Towns.—PoRTLAND (9.v.), on the Willamette, 115 miles from the ocean, is the chief city of the Pacific coast north of San Francisco (population in 1880, 17,577); Astoria is a commercial city of 3000 inhabitants, with large salmon-canning establishments, which do an annual business of over $2,000,000 ; Oregon City, at the falls of the Willamette, is a flourishing manufacturing town ; Salem (the capital), Albany, Corvallis, Eugene City, Roseburg, The Dalles, Pendleton, Union, and Baker City are places of rapidly- growing importance. :

Population.—The following statistics show the growth of the State during the last three decades : —

Census, Males. Females. Total. Pee UR ed 1850 8,278 5,016 13,294 (yl 1860 31,646 20,819 52,465 0°6 1870 53,131 37,792 90,928 0°9 1880 103,381 | 71,887 | 174,768 1°8

~~Of the total population in 1880 174 per cent. (80,503) were of foreign birth, 9472 being Chinese, 5034 Germans, 1557 Scandi- navians, 7918 British, and 3019 British Americans.~~

~~History. — Oregon at first included all the United States territory between the Pacific Ocean and the Rocky Mountains north of the 42d parallel, and thus had a total area of over 300,000 square miles. The Greek pilot De Fuca, in the service of Spain, in 1592, Admiral Fonte in 1640, and others had visited and mapped the coast as far as the 55th parallel. In 1792 Captain Robert Gray of Boston, in the ship "Columbia," discovered and ascended the river as far as Gray's Bay, and named the river after his vessel. Oregon was afterwards held by the United States Government to have been included in the sale of "Louisiana" by France in 1803. In 1804-5 Lewis and Clark explored the Columbia to its mouth and reported the great resources of the country. In 1810 Captain Winship, a New Englander, built the first house in Oregon, on the Columbia ; and in 1811 John Jacob Astor of New York estab- lished a fur-trading post 15 miles from the ocean at Astoria on that river. In 18138, during the war, his agent sold it to the North-Western Fur Company, who called it Fort George. Though restored to the United States after the war, it was held by the company, and in 1821 it passed, with their other possessions, into the hands of the Hudson's Bay Company. The British laid claim to Oregon by virtue of Drake's discovery of the coast in 48° N. lat. in 1558, of Cook's visit to De Fuca Strait in search of a north-west passage in 1778, and of the survey of the coast from 80° to 60° N.~~

~~lat., by order of the British Admiralty, made by Vancouver (who was with Cook in 1778), to find a north-west passage, and his dis- covery and ascent of the Columbia to the site of the present city of Vancouver in 1792.~~

~~OREL, or ORLoFF, a government of central Russia, bounded by Smolensk, Kaluga, and Tula on the N., and by Voronezh, Kursk, and Tchernigoff on the S., with an area of 18,040 square miles. The surface is an undulating plateau gently sloping towards the west ; the highest hills do not reach 900 feet, and none of the valleys are less than 450 feet above the sea. Geologically Orel consists prin- cipally of Lower Devonian limestones,~~

marls, and sand- stones, covered with Jurassic clays, the last appearing at the surface, however, only as isolated islands, or in the valleys, being concealed for the most part under thick beds of cretaceous chalk, marls, and sands. The Carboni- ferous limestones and clays (of the so-called Moscow basin) appear in the north-west only at a great depth. The Jurassic clays and marls are covered at several places with a stratum of clay containing good iron-ore, while the Devonian sandstones and limestones are worked for build- ing purposes. The whole is buried under a bed, from 30 to 40 feet thick, of boulder-clay and loess, the last covering extensive areas besides the valleys. The soil—a mixture of "black earth" with clay—is fertile, except in the Desna region, which is covered with sands and tough clays. The principal rivers are the Don, which forms the eastern boundary of the government and has many tribu- taries, the chief being the Sosna; the Oka, which rises in the district of Orel and receives the navigable Zusha and

XVII. — 104

826

many smaller streams; and the Desna, with the Bolva, draining the marshy lowlands in the west. On the Oka, Zusha, Desna, and Bolva there is a brisk traffic in corn, oil, hemp, timber, metal, glass, china, paper, and building-stone. Marshes occupy large areas in the basin of the Desna, as also in several parts of that of the Oka; they are mostly covered with forests, which occupy from 50 to 65 per cent. of the districts of Bryansk, Trubtchevsk, and Karatcheff, while towards the east, in the basin of the Don, wood is so scarce that straw is used for fuel. The climate is moderate, the average yearly temperature at Orel being 41°*2 (14°°8 in January and 67°:0 in July).

The population, 1,596,900 in 1870, and 1,877,100 in 1881, con- sists almost exclusively of Great Russians belonging to the Greek Chnrch ; the Nonconformists are reckoned at about 12,000, the Catholics at 3000, and the Jews at 1000. The chief oecupation is agriculture, which is most productive in the east and towards the centre of the government. In 1877 59 per cent. of the province was under crops, the estimated yield being 7,196,000 quarters of corn and 1,212,000 quarters of potatoes. Of the grain

not used in the distilleries a large proportion is exported to the Baltic. Hemp and hemp-seed oil are extensively exported from the west to Riga, Libau, and St Petersburg. Tobacco is also cultivated with profit. Cattle-breeding and horse-breeding, though somewhat depressed within the last twenty years, are still in a better condition than in neighbouring governments,—the Orel breeds, both of carriage and of cart horses, being held in estimation throughout Russia. In 1881 there were 500,000 horses, 340,000 cattle, and 790,000 sheep. Bee-culture is widely diffused in the forest districts, as are also the timber-trade and the preparation of tar and pitch. Manufac- tures are rapidly increasing ; in 1879 there were 540 larger indus- trial establishments, employing 14,130 hands, and producing cast-irou rails, machinery, locomotive engines and railway waggons, glass, hemp-yarn and ropes, leather, timber, soap, tobacco, chemical produce, &c. There are also distilleries and a great many smaller oil-works and flour-mills. Karatcheff and Syevsk are important centres for hemp-carding ; Bolkhoff and Elets are the chief centres of the tanning industry ; while the districts of Elets, Dmitroff, and partly Mtsensk supply fiour and various food-pastes. At Bryansk a Government cannon-foundry employs 700 hands. The so-called "Maltsoff's works" in the district of Bryansk are worthy of men- tion as an industrial colony comprising several iron, machinery, glass, and rope works, where thousands of peasants find temporary or permanent employment; they have their own teclinical school, employ engineers of their own training, and have their own narrow- gauge railways and telegraphs, both managed by boys of the tech- nical school. Numerous petty trades are carried on by peasants, along with agriculture. The fairs held in many villages are animated, and have some importance for the cattle trade. Orel is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which are Orel (76,700 inhabitants), Bolkhoff (29,020), Bryansk (12,660), Dmitrovsk (6560), Elets (41,450), Karatcheff (11,200), Kromy (8050), Livny (21,170), Maloarkhanghelsk (3920), Mtsensk (14,200), Syevsk (9650), and Trubtchevsk (5170). ;

In the 9th century the country was inhabited by the Syeveryanes on the Desna and the Vyatichees on the Oka, who both paid tribute to the Khazars. The Syeveryanes recognized the rule of the princes of the Rurik family from 884, and the Vyatichees from the middle of the 10th century ; but the two peoples followed different histori- cal lines, the former entering into the

Suzdal principality, while the latter fell under the rule of that of Tchernigoff. In the 11th century both had wealthy towns and villages ; during the Tartar invasion these were all burned and pillaged, and the whole territory, lying as it did on the two chief lines of the Tartar advance, became a desert, where the Nogays encamped with their herds. With the fall of the Great Horde the western part of the country fell under Lithuanian rule and was the subject of repeated struggles between Lithuania and Moscow. In the 16th century the Russians began to erect new forts or to fortify the old towns, and the territory was rapidly colonized by immigrants from the north. In 1610 the towns of the present government of Orel (theu known as the Ukrayna or " border-region ") had an active share in the insurrection against Moscow under the pscudo-Demetrius, and suffered much from the civil war which ensued. They continued, however, to be united with the rest of Russia, and in the next century formed a basis for further Russian advance towards the south.

OREL, capital of the above government, lies at the confluence of the Oka with the Orlik, on the great line of railway to the Crimea, 238 miles south-south-west from Moscow. It has railway connexion also with Smolensk and the Baltic ports in the west, and with Saratoff, Tsari- tsyn, and Novotcherkassk in the south-east. It was founded

in 1566, but developed slowly, and had only a very few houses at the beginning of the last century. The cathedral, begun in 1794, was finished only in 1861. The town now possesses a military gymnasium (corps of cadets), a few secondary schools, a public library, and a theatre ; large storehouses for grain and timber, a spacious gostinoy dvor with numerous shops, and the offices of the municipal bank are perhaps its best buildings. The manufactures are rapidly increasing ; in 1879 the hemp-carding, hemp-spinning, and rope-making industries produced 1,020,000 roubles, the flour-mills about 300,000 roubles, and the aggregate from all the manufactures exceeded 2,000,000 roubles. Orel is one of the chief markets of central Russia for the trade in corn and hemp, as also in hemp- seed oil and tallow, which are shipped down the Oka or sent by rail. Metal wares, tobacco, kaolin, and glass ware are also exported, while salt, groceries, and

manufactured goods are imported for distribution throughout the villages of the government, or to be sent to the Don Cossacks. The population, 45,000 in 1875, was 76,700 in 1881.

ORENBURG, a government of south-eastern Russia, bounded on the N. by Ufa and Perm, on the 8. and E. by the steppe of the Orenburg Kirghiz, and on the W. by Samara, has an area of 73,890 square miles. Situated at the southern extremity of the Urals and extending to' the north-east on their eastern slope, Orenburg consists of a hilly tract bordered on both sides by steppes. The central ridge occasionally reaches an elevation of about 5000 feet ; there are several parallel ridges, which, however, nowhere exceed 2600 feet, and gradually sink towards the south. A great variety of geological formations are repre- sented within the government. Diorites and granites enter it from the north and appear at many places from under the Silurian and Devonian deposits. The Carboniferous limestones and sandstones, as also softer Permian, Jurassic, and Cretaceous deposits, have a wide extension in the south and east. Magnetic iron, copper, silver, and lead ores, auriferous sands, and salt from the lakes constitute the mineral wealth of Orenburg, along with its very fertile "black earth," which covers wide areas around the Urals. It is traversed from north to south by the Ural river, which also forms its southern boundary ; the chief tributaries are the Sakmara and the Ilek. The upper courses of the Byelaya and the Samara, tributaries of the Kama and the Volga, also lie within the government, as well as the affluents of the Tobol on the eastern slope of the Ural range. Numerous salt lakes occur in the district of Tchelabinsk ; but several parts of the flat lands occa- sionally suffer from want of water. Thirteen per cent. of the surface is under wood. The climate is continental and dry, the average temperature at Orenburg being 37°°4 Fahr, (4°°5 in January, 69° °8 in July). Frosts of — 38°, and heats of 98° are not uncommon.

The population (900,550 in 1870) numbered 1,120,700 in 1881. The increase is largely due to immigration, an extensive tract of uncultivated land which formerly belonged to the Bashkirs having recently been purchased by the Government officials and leased to immigrants from the interior of Russia. The inhabitants are mainly Great Russians, Bashkirs (26 per cent.), and Kirghiz (about 5 per cent.). The majority belong to the Greek Church, or are Nonconformists ; 27 per cent. are Mohammedans. The chief

occupations are agriculture and cattle-breeding. Although only 3°2 per cent. of the area is under crops, grain is both distilled and exported. In 1881 there were in the province 581,000 horses, 441,000 cattle, 880,000 sheep, and 65,000 pigs. Notwithstanding the abundance of iron and copper ore, mining is but little deve- loped. The industrial establishments (distilleries, tanneries, flour- mills, &c.) are few, and their aggregate production in 1879 was only 5,195,000 roubles, employing about 2200 workmen. The export trade in corn, skins, and tallow is of some importance, and the fairs at Orenburg, Troitsk, and Tchelabinsk yield large returns. There are five districts, the chief towns of which are Orenburg

(35,600 inhabitants), Orsk (14,350), Tchelabinsk or Tchelaba (9000), Troitsk (8300), and Verkhneuralsk (10,350).

ORE—ORE

The territory of the Orenburg Cossacks, which extends as a narrow strip up the Ural river, occupies the whole of the govern- ment east of the Ural mountains, and joins, by a narrow line of posts, the former line of blockhouses of the Siberian Cossacks, has an area of 85,820 square miles, with a population in 1880 of 290,800 Cossacks and 16,460 peasants ; 25,000 were Moslem Bashkirs.

ORENBURG, capital of the above government, is situ- ated on the right bank of the Ural river, 933 miles by rail south-east from Moscow. 'The fortress, which has eleven bastions and a circumference of 6300 yards, has lost its importance since the recent advances of Russia towards the south-east, and is falling into decay. The town, on the other hand, is rapidly increasing, and now includes the former suburbs of Golubinaya and Novaya. The population is 35,600. Orenburg has a military cadet school, two lower military schools, a lyceum, and various primary schools,—one of them for Kirghiz children. The inhabitants are chiefly occupied in agriculture and trade. The manufactures are few, but the trade is steadily increasing ; the imports include cotton, silk, furs, wool, cattle, and horses, while cotton and woollen stuffs, cotton yarn, leather, colours, sugar, and grain are exported. Orenburg is connected by rail with Samara on the Volga and with Moscow.

~~The government of Orenburg was formerly inhabited by the Kirghiz in the south and the Bashkirs in the north. The latter were brought under the rule of Russia in 1557, and the fort of Ufa was erected a few years later in order to protect them against the raids of the Kirghiz. The frequent risings of the Bashkirs and the continuous attacks of the Kirghiz led the Russian Govern- ment in the 18th century to erect a line of forts and blockhouses on the Ural and Sakmara rivers, which was afterwards extended south-westwards towards the Caspian, and eastwards towards Omsk. The central point of these military lines was the fort of Orenburg, originally founded at the confluence of the Or with the Ural (now Orsk), and afterwards removed (in 1740) 120 miles lower down the Ural river to its present site. In 1778 it was besieged by Pugatchoff, the leader of the great revolt of the peasantry, supported by the Bashkirs. The government of Oren- burg was created in 1774, embracing a wide territory which reached to the Volga, to the Caspian, and to Perm, the limits to the eastward being undefined. In 1865 this was divided into two governments,—Ufa in the north and Orenburg in the south. The steppe of the Kirghiz, which extends south of the Ural river towards the Caspian and the Sea of Aral, continued under the jurisdiction of the governor-general of Orenburg. Recently the steppe of the Orenburg Kirghiz has been incorporated with the newly-created provinces of Turgay and Uralsk ; and the territory of the Orenburg Cossacks, formerly independent, has been brought Within the government of Orenburg, and subdivided into districts.~~

~~ORENSE, an inland province of Spain, is bounded on the N. by Pontevedra and Lugo, on the E. by Leon and Zamora, on the S. by Portugal ('Traz oz Montes), and on the W. by Portugal (Entre Douro e Minho) and Pontevedra, and has an area of 2738 square miles. Its general char- acter is mountainous, and its products are those common to all Gazicta (¢.v.), of which historical province it formed a part. The principal rivers are the Minho and the Sil. The population in 1877 was 388,835; only one town (Orense) had a population exceeding 10,000.~~

~~ORENSE, capital of the above province, and the see of a bishop, suffragan to Santiago, stands on the western slope of Montealegre, on the left bank of the Minho. The river is here crossed by a bridge—one of the most remarkable in Spain—of seven arches, 1319 feet in length, and at its highest~~

point 135 feet above the bed of the river, built by Bishop Lorenzo in 1230 and repaired about the middle of the 15th century. The principal feature of the town is the Gothic cathedral, also dating from Bishop Lorenzo's time (1230) ; it isa comparatively small and unimportant build- i. : (13) ”] ing, but has a miraculous image, El Santo Cristo,” of wide celebrity in Spain, which was brought from Cape Finisterre in 1330. The three warm springs to the west of the town, known as Las Burgas, attract a considerable number of summer visitors ; the waters are similar to those of Carlsbad.

The trade and manufactures of the place are unimportant.

827

Orense—the Agus Originis, or perhaps Salientis, of the Romans—in 1877 had a population, within the ayunta- miento, of 12,586.

ORESTES, son of Agamemnon and Clytemnestra. According to the legend in Homer, he was absent from Mycenze when his father returned from the Trojan War, and was murdered by Aigisthus. Eight years later Orestes returned, and revenged his father's death by slaying his mother and her paramour. Pindar mentions that his nurse saved him and conveyed him out of the coun- try when Clytemnestra wished to kill him. The tale is told much more fully and with many variations in the tragedians. He was preserved by his sister Electra, and conveyed to Phanote on Mount Parnassus, where king Strophius took charge of him. In his twentieth year he was ordered by the oracle to return home and revenge his father's death. According to Aischylus, he met his sister Electra before the tomb of Agamemnon, whither both had gone to perform rites to the dead; a recognition takes place, and they arrange how Orestes shall accomplish his revenge. Orestes, after the deed, goes mad, and is pur- sued by the Erinnyes, whose duty it is to punish any violation of the ties of family piety. He takes refuge in the temple at Delphi; but, though Apollo had ordered him to do the deed, he is powerless to protect his suppliant from the consequences. At last Athena receives him on the acropolis of Athens and arranges a formal trial of the case before twelve Attic judges. The Erinnyes demand their victim ; he pleads the orders of Apollo; the votes of the judges are equally divided, and Athena gives her cast- ing vote for acquittal. 'The Erinnyes are propitiated by a new ritual, in which they are worshipped as Eumenides (the Kindly), and

~~Orestes dedicates an altar to Athena Areia. Such is the account in which authorities generally agree, but Euripides introduces a different series of adven- tures after Orestes has taken refuge at Delphi. Apollo orders him to go to Tauris, carry off the statue of Artemis which had fallen from heaven, and bring it to Athens. He repairs to Tauris with Pylades, and the pair are at once imprisoned by the people, among whom the custom is to sacrifice all strangers to Artemis. The priestess of Artemis, whose duty it is to perform the sacrifice, is Iphigeneia, the daughter of Agamemnon, who had been transported hither by the goddess when her father was about to offer her (see IpHicENEIA). She offers to release Orestes if he will carry home a letter from her to Greece ; he refuses to go, but bids Pylades take the letter while he himself will stay and be slain. After a conflict of mutual affection, Pylades at last yields, but the letter brings about a recognition between brother and sister, and all three escape together, carrying with them the image of Artemis.~~

~~Orestes appears also as a central figure in the legends of many other places. In Cappadocia he introduced the worship of Artemis Tauropolos at Comana and Castabala. Near Gythium in Laconia was a stone called Zeus Cappotas ; here the madness left Orestes. In Troezen there was before the temple of Artemis a stone on which Orestes was purified, and a hut in front of the temple of Apollo Thearius in which he stayed till the purification was accomplished. Seven stadia from Megalopolis, on the left of the road to Messene, was a shrine of the Maniwz, ¢.e., the Erinnyes. Immediately beyond it was a tumulus, on the summit of which was an upright stone like afinger, Aax7v\ov Myfua, where Orestes bit off his own finger in his madness. Beyond the mound was another shrine of the Erinnyes, worshipped now as Eumenides in association with the Charites (see Graczs). Here the Erinnyes, who had hitherto appeared black to Orestes, appeared white to him, and the madness left him. Then he cut off his hair as an offering at a place Koupetov. The name of the tumulus is clearly connected with the belief still frequently occurring that a hand appears out of the tomb of any person who has murdered a mother or been murdered by her. The. tumulus itself was obviously one of those graves, which were especi- ally common in Lydia, a tumulus with a pillar on the apex; such tumuli were found in Laconia, where, as Atheneus says, they were called "the graves of the Phrygians who came with Pelops."~~

In these legends it is apparent that Orestes is the guilt-laden mortal who is purified from his sin by the grace of the gods ; his purification is a type of the merciful justice which the gods in- tend should be shown to all persons whose crime is mitigated by extenuating circumstances. These legends belong to an age when higher ideas of law and of social duty were being established ; the implacable blood-feud of primitive society gives place to a fair trial of the culprit, and in Athens, when the votes of the judges are evenly divided, mercy prevails. In the religion of Delphi similar ideas underlie the ancient festival Septerion: init Apollo himself is the murderer, and his example sets forth to mankind the method of purification which heaven opens to such sinners, if they are not entirely and wilfully guilty. Orestes is not a figure of the Apollo religion, but is clearly connected with the cultus of the Erinnyes ; and his relation to these goddesses, and the intention of the myth, are very plain in the Megalopolitan legend above mentioned. The Treezenian legend has no appearance of being really ancient, just as the tales that connect Orestes with the district Orestea in Arcadia, or Orestias in Epirus, are obviously fictions of a later time. On the other hand, the Orestes of Tauric and Cappadocian legend isa different person, connected with the spread of Artemis-worship ; it is not improbable that a similarity of name caused the identification of two heroes belonging respectively to the cultus of Artemis and of the Erinnyes.

Orestes had an historic part assigned to him as Greek mythology became systematized. Phocian auxiliaries restored him to the throne of his father, and, according to HHellanicus, he began the HHolic migration to Asia Minor. HHe was buried on the road from Tegea to Thyrea, and HHerodotus (ii. 67) tells a quaint story of the manner in which the Spartans discovered his bones and, in obedience to an oracle, carried them to Sparta.

ORFA. See Epzssa, vol. vii. p. 652.

ORFILA, Marutev JosepH BonaVENTURE (1787-1853), the founder of modern toxicology, and one of the most eminent of the French school of medicine during its brightest period, was by birth a Spaniard, having been born at Mahon in Minorca on 24th April 1787. An island merchant's son looked naturally first to the sea for a pro- fession ; but a voyage at the age

~~of fifteen to Sardinia, Sicily, and Egypt did not prove satisfactory. He next took to medicine, which he studied at the universities of Valencia and Barcelona with so great applause that the local authorities of the latter city granted him a pension to enable him to follow his studies at Madrid and Paris, preparatory to appointing him professor. He had scarcely settled for that purpose in Paris when the outbreak of the~~

~~logical action, and on the means of detecting them. Few branches of science, so important in their bearings on every-day life and so difficult of investigation, can be said to have been created and raised at once to a state of high advancement by the labours of a single man.~~

~~ORFORD, Earts or, See WALPOLE.~~

~~ORGAN. The notes of the organ are produced by pipes, which are blown by air under pressure, technically called wind. Pipes differ from one another in two principal ways—(1) in pitch, (2) in quality of tone. first a series of pipes producing notes of similar quality,~~

~~but differing in pitch. Such a series is called a stop. Stops.~~

~~Each stop of the organ is in effect a musical instrument in itself. (2) The pipes of different stops differ, musically speaking, in their quality of tone, as well as sometimes in their pitch. Physically, they differ in shape and general arrangement. 'The sounding of the pipes is determined by the use of keys, some of which are played by the hands, some by the feet. A complete stop possesses a pipe for every key of some one row of manuals or pedals. If one stop alone is caused to sound, the effect is that of performance on a single instrument. There are such things as incom- plete stops, which do not extend over a whole row of keys ; and also there are stops which have more than one pipe to each key. Every stop is provided with mechanism by means of which the wind can be cut off from its pipes, so that they cannot sound even when the keys are pressed, This mechanism is made to terminate in a handle, which is commonly spoken of as the stop. When the handle is pushed in, the stop does not sound; when the handle is pulled out, the stop sounds if the keys are pressed. An organ may contain from one to four~~

manuals or keyboards and one set of pedals. There are exceptional instruments having five manuals, and also some having two sets of pedals, half octaves, from C to g pedal is two and a half octaves, from C to f. This repre- sents the pitch in which the notes of the pedal are written ; but the pedal generally possesses stops sounding one octave lower than the written note, and in some cases stops sounding two octaves below the written note. Each

wn

(1) Consider .

The usual compass of the manuals is four and a Com- inclusive. The compass of the pass.

manual or pedal has as a rule one soundboard, on which Sound- all its pipes are placed. Underneath the soundboard is board, the windchest, by which the wind is conveyed from the ©

Spanish war, in 1807, threatened destruction to his pro- spects. But he had the good fortune to find a parent in a merchant uncle at Marseilles, and a patron in the good

and great Vauquelin the chemist, who braved the wrath of Napoleon against the Spaniards, claimed him as his pupil, guaranteed his conduct, and saved him from expulsion from Paris. Four years afterwards he graduated, and immedi- ately became a private lecturer on chemistry in the French capital. In 1819 he was appointed professor of medical jurisprudence, and four years later he succeeded Vauquelin as professor of chemistry in the faculty of medicine at Paris, In 1830 he was nominated dean of that faculty, a high medical honour in France. Under the Orleans dynasty, honours were lavishly showered upon him: he became successively member of the council of education of France, member of the general council of the department of the Seine, and commander of the Legion of Honour. The republic of 1848 put an end to these adventitious dis- tinctions ; and chagrin at the treatment he experienced at the hands of the Governments which succeeded that of Louis Philippe is supposed to have shortened his life. He died, after a short illness, in March 1853.

Orfila's chief publications are four in number :—On General Toxt- ecology (1814), On Medical Jurisprudence (1823), A Treatise on Chemistry (1817), and Medieo-legal Exhumations (1836); but he also wrote many valuable papers, chiefly on subjects connected with medical jurisprudence. HIs fame will rest mainly on the first- named (7'raité de Toxicologie Générale), published when he was only in his twenty-seventh year. It is a vast mine of experimental

observation on the symptoms of poisoning of all kinds, on the appearances which poisons leave in the dead body, on their physio-

e

bellows, through the soundboard, to the pipes. In large organs there may be two or more soundboards for one manual or pedal. The windchest contains the mechanism of valves by which the keys control the admission of wind to the soundboard. The soundboard contains the grooves which receive the wind from the valves, and the slides by which the handles of the stops control the transmission of the wind through the soundboard to the pipes of the different stops.

The grooves of the soundboard are spaces left between wooden bars glued

on to the table of the

soundboard. There

is usually one groove

for every key. The ' grooves of the bass

notes, which have to

supply wind for large

pipes, are broader

than those of the

~~treble. The bass bars~~

~~are also thicker than~~

~~those of the treble, |~~

~~that they may the~~

~~better support the fro.1, —A portion of the table with the open great weight which grooves seen from below.~~

~~rests on the bass portion of the soundboard. 'The table~~

~~Pipes. Pipes are divided first in- $4.5 —A section abrightangles to | #gainst it. The free end of this wire is touched with the to flue-pipes and reed-pipes. fig. 2. tuning tool until a satisfactory note is produced. Flue-pipes are blown by a wind mouthpiece characteristic The pitch of the different stops is commonly denoted by Foot- of the organ, while in reed-pipes the wind acts on a metal | the conventional approximate length of the pipe sounded length, tongue vibrating on a7 by C, the lowest key of the manual. Even in incomplete ¥ am, reed, and the motion of stops which have no bass, the length of the pipe which C ~ the tongue , determines would have if the stop were extended down serves to the speech of the pipe. indicate the pitch. Pipes are made either The conventional length of the C-pipe for stops having of wood or of metal. Wood the normal pitch of the keys is 8 feet; a pipe having flue-pipes are generally of twice this length sounds the octave below, a pipe having the form of a rectangular half that length the octave above, and so on. Thus stops parallelepiped, metal flue- ° which sound the octave below the normal pitch of the keys pipes of a cylindrical ; are spoken of as 16-foot stops. Even where the pipes are shape. Reed-pipes are 7" o* Hahei Ng Adon it appears | stopped so that the actual length is only 8 feet, they are conical or pyramidal, and of the stops; the sinall circles show the | spoken of as having "16-foot tone." Similarly 32-foot widen towards the top, les for the wind. stops sound two octaves below the normal pitch of the Some flue-pipes are made with stopped ends; these asa | keys. But if these notes are produced by stopped pipes, rule sound a note about an octave lower than the corre- | whose actual length is only 16 feet, they are spoken of as sponding open having " 32-foot tone." Sixteen-foot and 32-foot stops~~

are pipes of the same [specially characteristic of the pedal, where the names also length. Suchare signify the length of the open pipe which would sound the the stopped dia- note actually produced by the lowest C. In old organs, pason, bourdon, where the modern compass was not adopted, it was not and stopped flute. unusual to find stops spoken of as of 12 feet or of 24 feet. Reson- The general ele- In these cases the lowest note was frequently F. Old auce of mentary theory of English organs, however, more often had G for their lowest Pipes. the resonance of a note. The designation of the stops in these cases had be-

ORGAN

forms the top of the grooves. closed below with ==> leather, except the opening left ineach, which is closed by the key-valve or pallet,

The sliders are connected with the draw-stops or stop- handles, which are covered in with stout wpper boards, on which the pipes stand. The stop-handles are pulled out, and holes are then bored straight

\

boards, sliders, and table to Jit yy pa

admit the wind from the TT AUNT

VAAN

The grooves are generally

rr Rearas —S

Fic. 2, —A section of a groove, with the table, windchest, and pallet.

grooves to the pipes. When the sliders are shifted by pushing in the handles, the holes no longer correspond, and the pipes are silenced.

pipe is tolerably

829

pieces is a much more difficult matter, into which we cannot here enter.

In reed-pipes which are simply conical the resonance of the body is nearly the same as that of an open pipe of the same length. Where the form is irregular no simple rule can be given. But the resonance of the body of the pipe is generally the same as the note produced. The tongue of a reed-pipe alter- nately opens and closes the aperture of the reed. In this way it admits pulses of wind to the body of the pipe; these, if they recur at the proper intervals, maintain its vibration, which takes place when the note produced cor- dn anlar responds to the resonance of the pipe. The reed itself has its vibrating length determined by a wire which presses

INNANNANNN Bien ANANASAANARAAAARARAN AANA

Fic. 6.—Mouthpieces in somewhat

Of

come rather anomalous, and need not be entered into.

simple. The effec- stops higher than the normal pitch of the keys, the octave tive length of the is denoted by 4 feet if made with open pipes, 4-foot tone pipe is determined if stopped ; the twelfth is commonly spoken of as 23, the by measuring from fifteenth or double octave as 2 feet. Higher-sounding stops

the upper lip to the open end in open pipes, and from the upper lip to the stopper n é % d and back be ou Fra. 5.—a, an open diapason ; b, a stopped diapason ; stopped pipes. To " ¢, an oboe; and d, a trumpet,—c and d being forms this is added an ° teed-pipes.

allowance for the effect of each opening, since the condition of perfect freedom from constraint. does not subsist at the opening itself. The corrected length is traversed twice (backwards and forwards) by sound, in the time of one vibration of the resultant note. This describes in a rough and general manner the way in which any disturbance gives rise to the note of the pipe; but the theory of the mouth-

p

are occasionally used, but these generally form part of "mixtures," and the foot-lengths of the separate ranks are not usually given.

The true or accurate lengths of the pipes vary within considerable limits. The base of the scales (dimensions) varies according to the standard of pitch, and the voicing and the complicated natural laws of pipes produce other deviations from simple relations, so that the conventional dimensions can only be regarded as a simple means of classifying the stops according to their pitch-relations. For this purpose they are essential; they are continually appealed to in discussion and description ; and they are almost invariably marked on the stop-handles in all countries, so that a moderate knowledge of foreign nomen- clatures, combined with the habit of seizing the meaning

Manuals.

Great organ.

of the figures such as 16, 8, 4, on the stop-handles, will frequently suffice as a key to the complexities of a foreign organ.

Each of the manuals, or rows of keys, of an organ con- stitutes a separate organ, which is more or less complete in itself. The names of the different manuals or organs are great organ, swell organ, choir organ, and solo organ. The fifth manual, where it occurs, is the echo organ. The above is the usual order in point of development and frequency of occurrence, although the solo is sometimes preferred to the choir organ. The great organ is in a certain sense the principal department of the organ. It may be regarded as formed by a completely developed series of those funda- mental stops which constitute the solid basis of the tone of the instrument. If an instrument be constructed with only a single manual this necessarily assumes, in general, the characteristics of a great organ. The great organ is called "grande orgue" in French, and first manual or " haupt- werk " in German.

~~*It is proposed to describe the principal organ-stops under the heads of the manuals to which they belong. The enumeration will not be exhaustive, but will include all the usual types.*~~

~~*The great organ commences generally with stops of 16-foot length or tone in large instruments. In some cases a 32-foot sounding stop is introduced, but this cannot be said to be a proper characteristic of the great organ. The foundation tone is of 8 feet; the stops of higher pitch serve to add brilliancy; those of 16 feet, which sound the octave below the normal pitch, serve to add gravity and weight to the tone. Sixteen-foot stops are commonly spoken of as "doubles," their conventional length being twice that of stops of normal pitch.*~~

~~*The 16-foot stops are the 16 double open diapason, and the 16 bourdon or double stopped diapason, to which, in very large instruments, there may be added a 16 double trumpet. The double open diapason on the great organ consists usually of metal pipes, having moderate "scale" or transverse dimensions. These are of the same general character as the pipes of the ordinary open diapason, though they are made somewhat less powerful. In the better instruments of the second class as to size this stop alone would probably be regarded as representing suitably and sufficiently the class of doubles on the great organ. It gives great body to the general tone, and appears de- cidedly preferable to the bourdon, which frequently takes its place. The 16 double dulciana may be regarded as a variation of the double open diapason. It is sometimes used where the full effect of a double open is not considered desirable. It possesses the light and not full tone of the dulciana. It does not appear to be peculiarly suitable for the purposes of a double.*~~

~~*The 16 bourdon or double stopped diapason, when used on the great organ, is made of rather small scale and light tone. It gives great body to a large great organ, and affords interesting combinations with other stops, such as the 4-foot flute. It is used either alone in smaller organs of the second class or in addition to a double open in larger instruments. The notes are produced from wooden pipes of rectangular section, stopped at the end, and having half the conventional length,*~~

~~The 16 double trumpet is a trumpet (large reed stop) sounding the octave below the normal pitch. It is used generally in instruments of the largest size, but is some- what more common in Germany. It is useful in giving a massive character to the tone of the full great organ, which is otherwise apt to become disagreeable on account of the great development of stops of a piercing character. If, however, the double trumpet is rough in tone, it is apt to communicate to the whole a corresponding impression.~~

~~ORGAN~~

~~The judicious balancing of such elements as the double trumpet and the piercing stops such as mixtures is one of the principal features of a good German great organ.~~

~~We now proceed to the 8-foot stops (the reeds come at Great An ordinary great organ organ may contain 8 stopped diapason, 8 open diapason ® 'et~~

~~the end according to ordinary usage).~~

~~(one or more), 8 gamba, and 8 hohlfléte. The 8 stopped diapason on the great organ is usually of wood, of mode- rate scale, and some considerable fulness of tone. The actual lengths are about half the conventional lengths. These pipes are sometimes made of metal. Few stops admit of more variety and individuality in their quality of tone than the stopped diapason; but too frequently the great organ stopped diapason fails to attract attention on its merits, being regarded simply as an inconsiderable por- tion of the foundation tone.~~

~~If there is any one stop which in itself represents the organ as a whole it is the open diapason. The pipes of this stop are the typical metal pipes which have always been characteristic of the appearance of the organ. A single open diapason stop is capable of being used as an organ of sufficient power for many purposes, though of course without variety. The pipes of this stop are called "principal" in German, this appellation apparently corre- sponding to the fact that they are the true and original organ-pipes. The English appellation of " diapason" has been taken to mean that these are the normal pipes which run through the whole compass. This, however, does not appear to be the actual derivation of the term ; originally it is~~

~~technically applied to the organ-builder's rule, which gives the dimensions of pipes; and it appears that the application to the stop followed on this meaning.~~

~~The scales, character, and voicing of the open diapason vary with fashion, and are different in different countries. We may distinguish three principal types. The old English diapasons of the days before the introduction of pedal organs into England were characterized by a rich sweet tone, and were not very powerful. They were generally voiced on a light wind, having a pressure equivalent to that of a column of water of from 2 to 24 inches. The scale was in some cases very large, as in Green's two open diapasons in the old organ at St George's, Windsor ; in these the wind was light and the tone very soft. In other cases the scale was smaller and the voicing bolder, as in Father Smith's original diapasons in St Paul's Cathedral, But on the whole the old English diapasons presented a lovely quality of tone. English travellers of those days, accustomed to these diapasons, usually found foreign organs harsh, noisy, and uninterest- ing. And there are many still in England who, while recognizing the necessity of a firmer diapason tone in view of the introduction of the heavy pedal bass, and the corresponding strengthening of the upper departments of the organ tone, lament the disappearance of the old diapason tone. However, it is possible with care to obtain diapasons presenting the sweet characteristics of the old English tone, combined with sufficient fulness and power to form a sound general foundation. And there can be no doubt that this should be one of the chief points to be kept in view in organ design.~~

~~The German diapason was of an entirely different character from the English. The heavy bass of the pedals has been an essential characteristic of the German organ for at least two or three centuries, or, as it is said, for four. The development of the piercing stops of high pitch was equally general. Thus foundation work of comparatively great power was required to maintain the balance of tone; the ordinary German diapason was very loud, and we may almost say coarse, in its tone when compared with the old English diapason. The German~~

stop was voiced as a rule on from 33 to 4 inches of wind, not quite twice the pressure used in England.

The French diapason is a modern variety. It may be described as presenting rather the characteristics of a loud gamba than of a diapason. In other words, the tone tends towards a certain quality which may be described as "tinny" or metallic, or as approaching to that of a string instrument of rather coarse character. Some modern English builders appear to aim at the same model, and not without success.

The tone of a diapason must be strong enough to assert itself.

831

If any such use is made of the flute it is desirable that it should not be too strong; but its habitual use to give point to the diapasons is in every way to be deprecated. If the diapasons are not strong enough, let them be altered ; but that the diapasons of any organ should never be heard without the accompaniment of a 4 flute is a barbarism. The ordinary use of the 4-foot stops is to add a degree of loudness to the diapasons. This is accompanied with a certain measure of keenness, which may become disagree- able if the 4-foot tone is disproportionately strong. The ordinary practice is to use the 4-foot tone very freely.

It is the foundation of the whole organ tone. It is the voicer's business to satisfy this condition in con- junction with the requirement that the tone shall be full

The 22 twelfth stop sounds fiddle g on the C key. It Great is composed of diapason pipes, rather small and gently organ voiced. Its use is said to be to thicken the tone, which oan at it certainly does. a

and of agreeable quality.

The 8 spitzfléte may be regarded as a variety of open diapason. The pipes taper slightly towards the top, and the quality is slightly stringy. This stop was much used at one time in place of a second open diapason. But it appears better that, where two open diapasons are desir- able, they should

~~both be of full diapason quality, though possibly of different strengths and dimensions. The ad- mixture of stringy qualities of tone with the diapasons is always to be deprecated.~~

~~The 8 gamba was originally an imitation of the viola da gamba, a sort of violoncello. When made of a light quality of tone it is a pleasing stop; but its use in the great organ instead of a second open diapason is greatly to be deprecated for the reasons just stated. It is frequently found that, where a gamba is provided on the great organ, it is necessary to remove it from the compositions (mechanical arrangements for pulling out the stop-handles in different combinations), as the tone does not blend.~~

~~The 8 hohlfléte is an open flute, usually of wood, and of small scale. If made to a moderate scale and fully voiced it possesses a full pleasant tone, which is a useful support to the foundation tone of the great organ. The 8 clarabella differs from the hohlfléte in being usually of rather large scale, and having the open pipes only in the treble. In old organs a separate bass was generally provided ; now it is more usual to supply the stop with a stopped bass. The dulciana and keraulophon, though sometimes found on the great organ, are regarded as more appropriately placed elsewhere.~~

~~But how far the particular effect pro- duced is desirable is another question. It is generally necessary that this stop should be accompanied by the fifteenth or other octave sounding stop of higher pitch. But in some cases the twelfth can be used with notes of lower pitch only. One such combination is—twelfth, full-toned 8-foot harmonic flute, soft reed in 16-foot pitch. This combination is sometimes used in single notes for solo purposes. The sound of the twelfth appears to be masked or absorbed by the volume of tone of lower pitch. These combinations require careful handling, as the effect of the twelfth is offensive if it remains distinctly perceptible.~~

~~The 2 fifteenth, or superoctave, of the great organ con- sists of diapason pipes sounding notes two octaves above the normal pitch of the keys. The 2 piccolo is a fluty stop of less power, having the same pitch. The 2-foot tone is commonly used as giving a degree of loudness to the great organ beyond that obtainable with the 4-foot tone.~~

The modern great organ fifteenth is generally a very powerful stop, and requires great caution in its use in organs of moderate size, or in limited spaces. The old English high pitched stops had little power, and their brilliancy was capable of pleasing without offence. The modern great organ up to fifteenth can only be heard with comfort in very large spaces. Under such suitable circumstances the fifteenth is capable of giving to the whole tone a ringing or silvery character, which lends itself specially to contrast with the tone of reeds. This peculiar keen tone, however, requires for its full develop- ment the mixtures.

Mixture, sesquialtera, furniture, cymbal, scharf, cornet, are various names applied to a description of stop which

Great The 4-foot stops of the great organ comprise the 4 prin- organ gipal and the 4 flute. The 4 principal is the octave of the | possesses several ranks, or several pipes to each note. The 4 feet. nen diapason, generally of somewhat reduced scale and | pipes of each note sound a chord, which is generally com-

light but bright quality of tone. The use of the word "principal " in connexion with this stop is purely English, and is said to be connected with the use made of it as the standard of tuning for the whole organ. The Germans and French both designate this stop as '" octave."

Of the 4 flute there are several varieties,—open, stopped, wood, metal, and harmonic. The harmonic flute has open metal pipes of double the conventional length, which speak their octave. This is determined partly by the voicing, partly by making a small hole about the middle of the length, which determines the motion as that of the two separate lengths between which the hole lies. Harmonic flutes have a sweet but full and powerful tone. Other flutes are generally rather light, except the waldflote, which is a powerful stop of a somewhat hooting quality.

The great organ flute is frequently used to give bril-

liancy to light combinations. Thus it may be used with

~~the stopped diapason alone, or with the 16 bourdon alone, or with any of these and either or both of the open dia- pasons. Where the diapasons are scarcely strong enough to assert themselves in accompaniment, it is a very common practice to put the 4 flute into the diapason composition,~~

~~posed of concordant notes of the harmonic series whose fundamental is the proper note of the key. Modern mix- tures generally consist of fifths and octaves. Their com- position is not the same throughout the whole range of the keyboard, A three-rank mixture may consist of the following (the numbers signify intervals, reckoned along the scale)— C — ce (tenor) 15— 19 — 22 c# to top 8—12—15. For a somewhat larger full mixture this may be modi- fied as follows— C — ¢' (middle) ef to top~~

~~15 — 19 — 22 1— 8—12—15. A sharp mixture suitable for a large instrument may be~~

~~as follows— Five Ranks. C —c 15—19— 22 — 26 — 29 ce — fe 8—12—15 —19—22 ie lS BT LS Sal) e"totop 1— 5— &8—12—165.~~

~~The last two compositions are given by Hopkins in his great treatise on the organ.~~

~~Great organ reeds.~~

~~Swell organ~~

~~832~~

~~The early mixtures generally included the tierce (17th, or two octaves and a third). The German practice was to unite this with a twelfth, carrying the combination 12-17 throughout the keyboard under the name of sesquialtera. It isagreed that there is no direct derivation of this use from the word, and that the name should be sexta. The combination is, however, not now usually provided. The old English sesquialtera was ordinarily simply a form of mixture, as was the furniture. The mounted cornet con- sisted usually of five ranks—~~

1— 8 —12— 15 — 17. It extended from middle c upwards. The pipes were raised on a small soundboard of their own; they were of very large scale and horn-like tone. The stop was used for re- inforcing a melody. It is now obsolete.

The question of the employment and composition of mixtures is of the greatest importance with respect to the good effect of the full organ proper, «.e., without reeds. With reference to the whole question of keen-toned stops it may be laid down that their free employment in the great organ does not produce a good effect unless the organ is situated in a very large space. If this is the case, properly proportioned mixtures are capable of giving to the tone of the full diapason work a character which is brilliant without being overpowering. The contrast between this class of tone and that afforded by the reeds is one of the most charming and legitimate effects within the range of the instrument.

We now pass to the reeds. The 16-foot trumpet has been already alluded to, and there remain 8 trumpet and 4 clarion or octave trumpet. These are both stops of great power. The best trumpets possess also richness and smoothness of tone. Stops of this class can be used with the diapasons only, producing what may be described as a rich-toned blare of moderate strength. The more usual employment of the reeds is in connexion with the entire great organ, the whole forming the ordinary fortissimo of the instrument.

The second department of the English organ is the swell organ. The whole of the swell pipes are enclosed in a box, faced on one or more sides with a set of balanced shutters. When these are closed the tone is almost com- pletely muffied. When the shutters are opened, by means of a pedal usually, the sound bursts out. In order that the use of the swell may be effective, it is necessary that the shutters should close tightly, and that there should be a sufficient volume of tone to produce an effect when they are opened. The swell is of entirely English origin; it has been introduced in Germany to a very small extent, but more widely in France. It is usually called "recitatif" on the Continent. The chief characteristic of the swell is the rich and powerful volume of reed-tone of a peculiar character which it contains. But other stops are also of im- portance. We consider them in order. The 16

bourdon, small scale, is very commonly used in swells. It assists in giving body to the tone. It occupies, however, a large space within the swell box ; and where the choice between it and a 16-foot reed has to be made there can be no doubt that the reed should be preferred, as it contributes so much more to the development of the characteristic swell tone. The 16 contra fagotto and the 16 bass oboe are two alternative forms of 16-foot reed. The first is the more powerful of the two. Either of these stops imparts great richness to the tone of the other swell reeds, giving specially to the bass the peculiar quality which suggests great power.

The 8-foot diapason work is principally valuable for the soft effects obtained from it. The diapasons are voiced less loudly than for the great organ; and within the shutters they sound very soft indeed. The dulciana is the

OR GA WN

| softest stop generally available ; and either this or some

similar stop is introduced into the swell for the purpose of obtaining effects of the most extreme softness. Space within the swell box has generally to be economized. The complete bass of the open diapason or dulciana requires an 8-foot swell box, whereas even a 16-foot reed can be bent round so as to go within a smaller box if necessary. The open diapason and the dulciana are therefore often cut short at tenor ¢, and completed, if desired, with stopped pipes. The 4 principal and the 4 flute stops are similar to the corresponding stops in the great organ, but are somewhat lighter in tone. As in the case of the great diapasons and the 4-foot flute, it sometimes happens that the first reed combination (oboe) is not strong enough. Then the principal is sometimes put into its composition. This almost invariably spoils the effect entirely.

The 2 fifteenth and mixtures are much more pleasing in the swell than in the great organ. The shutters tone them down, so that they cannot easily become offensive. Added to the reeds, they give a peculiar brilliancy to the full swell. But perhaps their most pleasing use is when all the diapason work of the swell is used alone, and as a con- trast to the reeds.

~~The usual reeds are as follows, besides the doubles already mentioned :—8 oboe, 8 cornopean, 8 trumpet, and 4 clarion (octave trumpet). The oboe (hautboy) is a conventional imitation of the orchestral instrument. It is a stop of delicate tone, and perhaps is at its best in solo passages, softly accompanied on another manual. The cornopean has a powerful horn-like tone. It is the stop which, more than any other, gives to the English swell its peculiar character. The trumpet is used in addition to the cornopean in large instruments. The clarion serves to add brightness and point to the whole.~~

~~The third department is the choir organ.~~

~~gamba, 8 keraulophon, and 8 hohlfléte.~~

~~As arule no open diapason is provided for choir organs, unless they are larger than usual ; but a small open is most useful as a means of obtaining a better balance than usual against the other manuals. The stopped diapason is gener- ally made to contrast in some way with that on the great organ. The hohlfléte, or its representative, is generally a lighter stop than what would be put on the great organ. The gamba is better placed in the choir organ than in the great or the swell. Such stops as the gamba and the keraulophon are frequently placed in the swell with the idea of adding to the reediness of the tone. But this is fallacious. Their tone is not strong enough to assert itself through the shutters, and their peculiar character is there- fore lost. On the choir organ, on the other hand, the sort of strength required is just about what they possess, and they show to advantage. The keraulophon is a stop in- vented by Gray and Davison, and has been widely adopted for many years. It has a hole made in each pipe near the top, and gives a peculiar tone very well described by its name (horn-flute). Though not very like the gamba, its tone is so far of the same type of quality that the two stops would hardly be used together. It is generally the case that similar stops of exceptional characters do not combine well, whereas stops of opposed qualities do com- bine well. Thus a gamba and a keraulophon would not combine well, whereas either of them forms an excellent combination with a stopped diapason or a hohlflote.~~

~~The 4 principal is sometimes very useful. A light com- bination on the choir, with excess of 4-foot tone, may often be advantageously contrasted with the~~

more full and solid tone of the great diapasons, or with other attainable effects. The 4 flute is constantly used. The 2 piccolo is frequently found on the choir-organ, but is not particularly useful.

The 8-foot Choir work may contain 8 stopped diapason, 8 open diapason, 8 organ.

Solo | organ.

Pedal organ.

ORGAN

In organs which have no solo manual there is usually @ clarionet (cremona, cromorne, or krummhorn, in old organs sometimes corno di bassetto) on the choir, and often an orchestral oboe (real imitation of the instrument). These are reed-stops. The dulciana and another soft stop, the salicional, salcional, or salicet (of similar strength, but slightly more pungent quality), are often placed on the choir. They are, however, hardly strong enough to be of much use there, and in the swell they are useful for effects of extreme softness. In very large instruments a fifteenth and a mixture are sometimes placed on the choir, which in this case has a complete series of diapason work. If the fifteenth and the mixtures are light enough the result is a sort of imitation of the tone of the old English organ, It also forms a useful echo to the great organ, i.¢., a passage played on the great may be repeated on the similar but fainter tone of the choir with the effect of an echo. In instruments of the largest size the choir is sometimes pro- vided with a very small bourdon of 16-foot tone, which helps to give to the tone the character of that of a small full organ without reeds.

The solo organ is comparatively modern, at all events in its present usual form. A fourth manual was not un- known in old German organs ; but the contents of all four resembled each other in a general sort of way, and there was nothing like the English swell or the modern solo. The solo appears to have arisen with Cavaillé-Coll in France, and Hill in England, as a vehicle for the powerful reed-stops on heavy wind introduced by these builders. Thus the French term for the solo is "clavier des bom- bardes" ; and in the earlier English solos the "tuba mira- bilis " was usually prominent. A solo

organ may suitably contain any of the following stops :—8 tromba (a powerful reed on heavy wind), 8 harmonic flute (powerful tone and heavy wind), 8 clarionet and 8 orchestral oboe (real imi- tations of the instruments), and 8 vox humana (conven- tional imitation of the human voice).

The vox humana is sometimes placed in the swell. The last three stops are reeds. They may be with advantage enclosed in a swell box, having a separate pedal. In very large instruments a complete series of both diapason and reed stops is occasionally placed on the solo: But there does not seem to be much advantage in this arrange- ment.

We now come to the pedal. This forms the general bass to the whole organ. Thirty-two foot stops only occur in the largest instruments; they are as follows:—32 open diapason (wood or metal), 32-foot tone bourdon, and 32 contra trombone, posaune, bombarde, sackbut (reed). The 32-foot open diapason, whether wood or metal, is usually made of large scale, and produces true musical notes throughout. Its musical effect in the lower part of its range is, however, questionable, so far as this depends on the possibility of recognizing the pitch of the notes. It adds great richness to the general effect, particularly in large spaces. The 32-foot tone bourdon is not usually a successful stop. It rarely produces its true note in the lower part of its range. The 32-foot reed on the pedal has long been a characteristic of the largest instruments. With the old type of reed it was rarely pleasant to hear. The manufacture has been greatly improved lately, and these large reeds are now made to produce a fairly smooth effect. Deep reed notes, when rich and good, undoubtedly form one of the principal elements in giving the impression of power produced by large organs. From this point of view they are of great importance. Nevertheless the effect of large pedal reeds is generally more satisfactory to the performer than to the listener.

The 16-foot pitch may be regarded as the normal pitch of the pedal ; the principal stops are as follows :—16 open

diapason (wood or metal), 16-foot tone bourdon, 16 violone (in1itation of double bass), and 16 trombone or posaune (reed). The 16-foot open

diapason on the pedal assumes different forms according to circumstances. As a rule the character is sufficiently indicated by the stop being of wood or metal. The wooden open is generally of very large scale, and produces a ponderous tone of great power and fulness, which is only suitable for the accompaniment of the full organ, or of very powerful manual combinations. Such a stop is, as a rule, unsuitable in organs of: moder- ate size, unless supplemented by lighter 16s for ordinary purposes. The metal open is of considerably smaller scale (in fact all metal pipes are effectively of much smaller scale than wooden pipes of similar diameter). The metal gives a clear tone, lighter than that of large wooden pipes, and pleasanter for ordinary purposes. The metal open combines advantageously with a bourdon. In the largest organs both wood and metal open 16s may be suit- ably provided. Where metal pipes are made a feature in the organ-case, both the double open diapason in the great organ and the metal 16 of the pedal may be properly made of good metal (polished tin or spotted metal), and worked in to the design of the organ-case.1 The same applies to the 32-foot metal opens of the largest instruments. This saves space in the interior, and gives the large pipes room to speak, which is apt to be wanting when they are placed inside. The 16-foot tone bourdon on the pedal may be made of any scale according to circumstances. If it is the chief bass of the organ it is made very large and with great volume of tone. Such stops are unsuitable for soft purposes, and a soft 16, usually a violone, is required in addition. If the loud department of the 16 tone is otherwise provided for the bourdon may be made of moderate strength. It may also be made very soft, like a manual bourdon. These three different strengths ought always to be provided for in an instrument of a complete character. The violone is also made of all three strengths, In a few cases it furnishes the principal bass ; frequently it furnishes the moderate element; and it is often applied to obtain a very soft 16-foot tone. The 16-foot reed is very common. The observations made as to the effect of 32-foot reeds are applicable also in this case.

The 8-foot department of the pedal is only less important than the 16, because it is possible to replace it to a certain extent by coupling or attaching the manuals to the pedals. The usual 8-foot pedal-stops are as follows :—8 principal bass (metal or wood), 8 bass flute (stopped), 8 violon- cello (imitation of the instrument), and 8 trumpet. The remarks

made above as to the scale of open 16s apply with little change to the pedal principal. Only, since the manuals are generally coupled, it is perhaps best to pro- vide the large scale wood-stop, which presents the power- ful class of tone in which the manual diapasons are deficient. The bass flute is almost a necessity in combina- tion with the light 16-foot tone. A composition ought to be provided by which the pedal can be reduced to these two elements by a single movement. The violoncello is sometimes used instead of the bass flute for the last-named purpose, for which, however, it is not so suitable. It is a favourite stop for some solo purposes, but is not of much general utility. The 8-foot trumpet serves to give clear- ness and point to the tone of the 16-foot reed.

In the short preface to Mendelssohn's Organ Sonatas it is stated that everywhere, even in pianissimo, it is intended that the 16-foot tone of the pedal should be accompanied

1 Anything down to one-third tin and two-thirds lead is called tin. But "pure tin" should have over 90 per cent. of tin. Absolutely pure tin could not be worked. Spotted metal is said to have from one- third to two-thirds tin. Under one-third tin no spots are said to rise, and the mixture has the general characters of lead.

XVII. — 105

Second pedal.

Arrange- ment of manuals,

Composi- tions.

General mechan- ism.

834

by 8-foot tone. For the purpose of realizing this as a general direction the soft 16-foot and 8-foot stops afe re- quired ; large instruments are, however, occasionally found which possess nothing of the kind.

~~The following stops of higher pitch are occasionally found on the pedal :—5} twelfth bass, 4 fifteenth bass, mixture, and 4 clarion. These serve to make the pedal tone practically independent of coupling to the manual, which is a matter of great importance, especially in the per- formance of certain compositions of Bach and other writers, who appear to have been independent of couplers.~~

~~The 8-foot and 4-foot reeds on the pedal afford the best, indeed almost the only means of performing some types of composition best known in the works of Bach, in which the pedal sounds a chorale in the 8-foot or 4-foot pitch, whilst an elaborate accompaniment is executed on the manuals. Where these pedal reeds are not present it is necessary to couple to the pedal an 8-foot or a 4-foot manual reed. 'The corresponding manual ceases to be available for the manual part of the composition ; and, as this generally involves two manuals, one of which must possess a 16-foot stop, the performance is sometimes im- practicable, even on large organs.~~

~~In some foreign instruments two sets of pedals are pro- vided, which may be described as great and choir pedals. The great pedal is in the usual position; the choir pedal is in front of the other, and sloping. It is so placed that the feet rest on it naturally when stretched out in front of the performer. There isa choir pedal of this kind in the organ in the minster at Ulm, built by Walcker of Ludwigsburg. It isa very large instrument, having 100 sounding stops. It has no compositions, which indeed are but little known in Germany; and without some arrangement such as this a soft pedal would hardly be obtainable. There are a few other instruments which have choir pedals, but they have not been introduced into England.~~

~~In organs which have a single manual the characteristics of the great and choir organs are usually united. In organs which have two manuals the lower usually repre- sents the united great and choir, the upper is the swell. In organs which have three manuals the lower is usually the choir, but sometimes combines choir and solo, the middle is the great, and the top is the swell. In organs which have four manuals the order is—solo, swell, great, choir, the solo being at the top and the choir at the bottom.~~

~~Compositions are mechanical contrivances for moving the stop-handles in groups at atime. The ordinary form consists of pedals, which project from~~

*the front just above the pedal keys. The arrangements are various. We may refer to the arrangement in the organ at Windsor, given later on. A species of composition was introduced by Willis some years ago, and has been adopted in many large English instruments, which acts by means of a series of brass disks placed just under the front of the keys of each*manual, within reach of the thumb. These act by means of pneumatic levers. A slight pressure on one of the disks sets the machine attached to it in action, and the required change in the stops is made without any exertion on the part of the performer.*

The connexion between the keys and their pallets is made by various mechanisms, some of which are very ancient. In square and trackerwork (fig. 7) the old squares were made of wood. They resemble in function the squares used for taking bell-wires round a corner. The trackers are slight strips of wood, having screwed wires whipped on to their ends, which hold by leather buttons. The trackers play the part of the bell-wires. Where pressure has to be transmitted instead of a pull, thin but broad slips

ORGAN

of wood are used, having pins stuck into their ends to keep them in their places. These are stickers (fig. 8). Backfalls (fig. 9) are narrow wooden levers turning on pins which pass through their centres. = The fan frame (fig. 10) is a set of backfalls having one set of ends close together, usually corresponding to the keys; the other ends are spread widely apart. The roller board (fig. 11) is a more general mode of shift- ing the movements sideways. The roller is a slip of wood, or a bit of metal tube, which turns on two pins inserted in its ends. It NX

as two arms pro- jecting at right angles toits length. One of these re- ceives the pull at one point, the other gives it off at an- other. In case a pull has to be transmitted to more than one quarter, a roller will sometimes have more than two arms. The name of couplers (fig. 12) is given to themechanical stop by which the keys Fic, 9.—Backfall. of one manual are made to take down those of another, or those of the pedal to take down those of the manuals. Some old forms of the mechanism could not be put on while any of the keys were depressed ; others had a tendency to throw the fingers off the keys. These forms have been entirely super- seded. That now used consists

~~of a series of backfalls centred on a movable support. The one set of ends is connected with the moving keys; the other set of ends is pierced by the wires of the trackers or stickers from the keys to be moved. In the one position of the support these ends play freely over the wires; in the other they are brought up against the buttons of the; trackers or against the stickers to be moved. i The usual couplers are—each of the manuals | to the pedal, swell to great, swell to great octave, swell to great sub-octave, swell to choir, choir to great sub-octave, and solo to great. Theswelloc- tave and sub-octave couplers are sometimes placed on the swell itself. The objection to this is, that, if they are used when the swell is coupled to the great organ, as is very commonly the case, the octaves are reached through two couplers. And, as couplers are not generally screwed up quite tight, the octaves are often not sufficiently put down to sound in tune. The choir to great sub-octave coupler was used chiefly as a substitute for a double on the great organ. It is common in organs of the transition period, but 1s not a good arrangement.~~

~~Fic. 7.—A, square; B, tracker ; C, metal square.~~

~~Fic, 8.—A and B as in fig. 7; CO, sticker.~~

~~Fic. 10.—Fan frame,~~

~~Fig. 11.—Roller board.~~

~~Fic. 12.—Coupler.~~

~~The pneumatic lever (fig. 13) consists of a small power bellows attached to each key, so that the depression of the key admits high-pressure wind to the power bellows. The power bellows then performs the work of opening the valves, &c. In large organs the work to be done would be beyond the reach of the most powerful finger without this device. Similar de- vices are sometimes applied to the com- positions and other mechanical arrange- ments.~~

Pneumatre trans- mission, With many other mechanical de- vices, was invented by Willis. It con- sists of a divided pneumatic action. The pneumatic wind, instead of being at once admitted to the power bellows, is made to traverse a length of tubing, at the farther end of which it reaches the work to be done. This principle admits of application to divided organs, the pneumatic transmission passing under the floor, as in the organ at St Paul's Cathedral. It is peculiarly suitable for the pedals of large organs.

Ventils are valves which control the wind-supply of the different groups of stops. They were much recommended at one time as a substitute for compositions. The practical difference is that compositions shift the stop-handles, so that one can always see what there is on the organ ; ventils leave the stop handles unmoved, so that the player is liable to be deceived. Other inconveniences might be mentioned, but it is enough to say that practical opinion appears decidedly to condemn the use of ventils.

The original pedal boards of Germany were flat and of very large scale. The early practice in England was to make them very small, as well as of short compass. Of late the compass C—/', thirty notes, has been universally adopted with scales varying from 2) to 25 inches from centre to centre of the naturals; 23 inches is the scale now recommended. A large number of organs have been provided with what are called concave radiating pedal boards. These are most objectionable. All the best players dislike them. 'The objections are mainly two. They present different scales at different distances from the front; and, except just in front, they become so narrow that the smallest foot can hardly put down the pedals singly. This is fatal to legitimate playing, the essence of which consists in putting the feet over each other freely, so as to use the alternate method as much as possible; and this requires that the back of the pedal board shall be as available as the front. The concave parallel form appears to satisfy all requirements.

The diversities of the arrangements of different organs present a great difficulty. The best players take a certain time to master the arrangements of a strange instrument. With a view to the introduction of uniformity, a conference on the subject was arranged by the College of Organists in London, and a series of resolutions and a series of recom- mendations were published which deserve attention (1881). They go into considerable detail,

and we must refer to the document itself. But we may mention that the parallel concave form is recommended for the pedal board, and 22 inches for the scale. The positions of the stops of the various organs are to be as follows.

iw

>

N SSS m ss MESSBESS SEEK... CC = 17) DoS Ss Se ee

ee ee BT a

aa eee ee SE See 7 = SSS SSES S N WY l \erem7/ a= d

'aes

Fira. 18.—Pneumatic lever.

Left. Right. Swell. Solo. Pedal. Great. Couplers. — Choir.

The order of compositions, &c., from piano to forte is to be in all cases from left to right. The groups of com- positions are to be in the order from left to right—pedal, swell, couplers, great. Some think that too much has been here sacrificed to uniformity. It is thought that, as the swell and great as a rule are provided with composi- tions, their stops are more properly placed on the right, leaving the solo and choir on the left, as the left hand is the more easily spared. Also some prefer to have the compositions arranged with the pianos in the middle and the fortes at the ends, so that the risk of putting down a loud composition in mistake for a soft one is avoided.

Two other points of detail may be alluded to. One is the position of the pedal board with reference to the keys. The height from the middle of the pedals to the great organ keys, it is agreed, should be 32 inches. Butas to the forward position there is a difference. The resolutions say that "a plumb-line dropped from the front of the great organ sharp keys falls 2 inches nearer the player than the front of the

centre short key of the pedal board."

The oldarrangement Great Organ», | ——— S gave usually 14 qe SS Se inches for this dis- an

tance. But it is thought that the change has not gone far enough, and 4 inches has been found

preferable. There is a tar scarcely any single [

arrangement which ; is so important for 2 College of Org anists the comfort of the I player as having

sufficient space in \Magdalen College & this direction (fig. 5° Georges. Windsor 14). The second 4 matter is the provi- sion of some other

means of acting on FG 14.—Relative position of manual and pedal. the swell than by the swell pedal. The use of the swell pedal is inconsistent with the proper use of both feet on the pedal keys; and there is no doubt that incorrect habits in this respect are commonly the result of the English use of the swell pedal. In fact, players sometimes keep one foot on the swell pedal all the time, so that proper pedal playing is impossible. Arrangements have been de- vised by means of which a movable back to the seat can be made the means of acting on the swell. The first "re- commendation " of the College of Organists illustrates the requirement; it is, that "the consideration of organ- builders be directed to the widely-expressed desire for some means of operating on the swell in addition to the ordinary swell pedal."

Ags an example of an organ ofa complete but not enormously large character, we give the details of the organ at St George's chapel, Windsor, which has been recently rebuilt by Messrs. Gray and Davison, according to Mr. Walter Parratt's designs.

—(= oe ey

1 ' 1 ' '

Four manuals, C to a", 58 notes. Clarabellgs…< Scie ment an amenity as oe 8 Pedal, C to f', 30 notes. TPR GHA ci aseraaons a oie aeFeeis

~~xuafereere 4 an tg MRE 6.:0 serine Hees Geet): 4 ” FE SD WRRUIN ci dsials aistatonare stevetaller ciated Seeiow + 2~~

~~Great Organ (34-inch wind). PA cob orectgesct chee eae 2 Double open diapason …….- 16 |Sesquialteral ……. II ranks Large open diapason……. PB he ee oe ss ecte:-eateta get 11 ranks Opendiapasonl %....0.0.. 22-2 208 2 BP || OBA Caius 55.2 aye tele rare aes ae We. Be 8 Stopped diapason ……- S| GUAPO Co oye os. anc varg gisra croc. «Sans os 4~~

~~1 These are the old mixtures.~~

~~Early allusions~~,

~~Key- board~~,

~~836 ‘~~

~~ORGAN~~

~~Solo Organ (6-inch wind).~~

~~Swell Organ (8-inch wind). LLiebli¢h boardony o…..csicc ces: LG | Platimonie Hate ccc: cits «ates § als oie 8 Open diapsson sce c ce ciecsis cee 8 | Orchestral oboe ……e0es 8 Stopped diapason …….000. : ARO TIE eit ixePes vicars eicasis)< e's oe~~

~~RETO gore ag ciclo kone tsa, is se eterenets ’ Yor crloiile se ee eee ee 8 Pedal Organ (4-inch wind). TSSING ji Za Bog ibon Op omeaet aD On amo 4 | Open diapason (wood) . week Octave dulciana …….—.+++-. | WaiGGriel (HaStA)).fa.<6rcie ee orosarnees= wine aah 16 TERE VO OBAUEN cieiicloielels)s s/sictalelelviesernisisy-ame Bourdon (Wood) ……..00eeees 16 Mixture 2……..seeeeeeees ut ranks | Violoncello (metal) ……..+++- 8 COREE FABOFUO® .scye mei oe 20% octets 16 | Trombone (wood tubes) …….—+-- 16 @omGPeae. Gites sarees sais e 78 CUI all oobodonneninnan oudincees a0 8 Couplers. Vox huMaNA…. 0. eee sees eee ee ee 8 Solo to great. Swell to pedal. (OIE arc) WiQRMore man no same odol coc de BN a enite great, Great to pedal.~~

~~Solo to pedal. Choir to pedal.~~

~~Choir Organ (23-inch wind). Pneumatic action to great organ and IDOUCIRIAY ¥ 40.5. seid eaetreme ae 8 | its couplers. Keraulophon …... BNNais ae weugasra isis 8| The arrangement of the stops and Btopped diapason…. sc siseeseaes sce 8] compositions is as follows :— ; IMMORAL a: sallele. <4,iareler nels Aen eree a's 4 4). Left. Over the keys. Right. AOL eee. Lee COONO Grin eCOne saa 4 Solo. Couplers. Swell, BACCO: she as hagas aibrouts. 200% Bieter Hee bencs 2 | Choir, Tremulant. Great. Corno di bassetto (reed)..... 8! Pedal. (Knob below swell keys.)~~

~~Composition Pedals. Great and pedal~~

~~Great to pedal j in and out.~~

~~combined. ae ue] ee un / } aie pm ft ff x i~~

~~Reduce pedal to violone,~~

~~Great to pedal in. rs~~

~~The swell pedals control two sides of the swell box and the orchestral oboe. The vox humana is in a box which is always shut.~~

~~These swell pedals are on a new system, which admits of fixing them at any point, so that the tone can be determined to any strength,~~

~~HISTORY OF THE ORGAN,~~

~~The early history of the organ is very obscure.? As far back as classical times literary allusions occur occasionally to wind instruments involving the use of pipes and chan- nels and reservoirs of air, Some form of bagpipe appears to have been alluded to in this way. Vitruvius has left a description of the hydraulicon, or hydraulic organ. It is clear that it must have been a machine of some com- plexity ; but the way in which it acted is not intelligibly described.~~

~~Athenzus also has an account of the water organ. There is a treatise on pneumatics by Hero of Alexandria, which contains apparently actual~~

~~drawings of a pneumatic organ and of an hydraulic organ, with fairly clear descrip- tions. If these drawings are authentic they are remark- able ; for the pipes shown present very much the appear- ance of modern organ-pipes, and they are arranged in a row with the longest in the middle, just as pipes are often arranged now. 'There is a bit of sculpture on the obelisk of Theodosius at Constantinople (latter part of 4th century) which represents an instrument having eight pipes stand- ing inarow. The mouths are not shown, and the manipu- lation is apparently going on on the farther side, so that its nature is not shown. The wind is furnished by a sort of blacksmith's bellows, on which two men are standing, as if to give the pressure or "weight to the wind." It appears probable that organs were introduced into churches during the latter half of the first millennium a.p. As the keyboard does not appear to have been invented till after the close of this period, the notes can only have been sounded one at a time, and rapid successions can- not have been used. The notes seem to have been few in number, about ten, but each note had latterly a number of pipes.~~

~~A treatise on the construction of organs by a monk named Theophilus is assigned to the early part of the 11th~~

~~1 This stop consists of a soft stop slightly out of tune, waving tone with the dulciana.~~

~~2 These are the old mixtures.~~

~~= As regards this section the writer desires to acknowledge his obli- a to Rimbault's HIstory of the Organ, published with HIopkins's reatise,~~

~~producing a~~

~~century. While some of the practical work is recognizable, most of the descriptions are unintelligible. It appears clear, however, that no keyboard is mentioned.~~

~~The first keyboard is said to have been introduced into the organ in the cathedral at Magdeburg about the close of the 11th century. There were sixteen keys; and a drawing exists in a work of the 17th century* which pur- ports to represent them. They are said to have been an ell long and 3 inches~~

~~broad. The drawing represents a complete octave with naturals and short keys (semitones), arranged in the same relative positions as in the modern keyboard. As it is generally admitted that the semitones were not invented till later, it would seem that this draw- ing is probably not authentic. In early organs with key- boards the keys are said to have required blows of the fist to put them down. In these cases probably sounding the notes of the plain song was all that could be accom- plished.~~

~~As to the precise time and conditions under which the keyboard assumed its present form we know nothing. It is commonly said that the change to narrow keys took place in the course of the 14th century, and that the semitones were introduced about the same time. But all these statements rest on the authority of writers long subsequent to the dates in question, and the actual facts appear to be unknown. Many examples of organ key- boards still exist, both in England and on the Continent, which have black naturals and white short keys (semi- tones). The organ in the church at Heiligenblut in the Tyrol had in 1870 two manuals, one having black naturals and white semitones, the other white naturals and black semitones. In this organ the stops were acted on by iron levers which moved right and left. It possessed a reservoir bellows of great capacity, and was altogether a remarkable instrument. Harpsichords with black key- boards also exist.~~

~~The mode of blowing practised about the time of the in- Bellows.~~

~~*troduction of the first keyboard appears to have been that which ultimately developed into the method still generally used in Germany. There were a great many separate bellows, each like a magnified kitchen-bellows, but provided with a valve, so that the wind could not return into the bellows. One man had charge of two of these. Each foot was attached to one bellows, and the blower held on by a bar above. It was possible, by raising each of the two bellows in turn and then resting his weight upon it, to produce a constant supply of wind with the pressure due to his weight. A great many such bellows were provided, and it seems that each pair required one man ; so that great numbers of blowers were employed. This description is again drawn from the 17th-century work before alluded to ; and its very completeness and the clearness of the accom- panying drawing seem suspicious. A slight modification is enough to change this method into the German one. Instead of fastening the feet to the bellows and pulling them up, the blower treads on a lever which raises the bellows. The bellows being loaded then supplies the wind of itself, The bellows thus used have diagonal hinges, and various expedients are employed to make them furnish steady wind. But the English system of horizontal reser- voirs and feeders appears far superior.*~~

~~*While the notes were still few, and many pipes were connected with each note, the system of forming a chord on each note appears to have originated, which survives in the modern mixture. There was not at that time any- thing of the nature of stops; all the pipes connected with any one note sounded without exception whenever the note was made use of. The object probably was to give eee Se ee ee a el ins ae, el*~~

- ~~*Pretorius, Theatrum Instrumentorum.*~~

~~*Pedal.*~~

~~*Cases*~~,

~~*German organ.*~~

~~*Shortly after this date we find Renaissance cases.*~~

the single notes a powerful and dominating character, so as to enable them to lead the church song.

The invention of the pedal may be set down to the 15th century. About that time the organ assumed on the Con- tinent the general form which it has retained till lately, more especially in Germany. This may be described generally as having a compass of about four octaves in the manuals and of two octaves in the pedal, with occasionally extra notes at the top in both, and frequently "short octaves" at the bottom. German short octaves are as follows. E instead of C. Then the E key sounds C, F=F, FZ=D, G=G, G#=E, and the rest as usual. There were often three, sometimes four, manuals in large organs. The character of all these was in general much the same, but they were more softly voiced in succession, the softest manual being sometimes spoken of as an echo organ, There are one or two examples of the echo as a fourth manual in England at the present time, in organs which have been designed more or less under German inspiration. The old echo was long ago superseded by the swell in England.

A few ancient cases survive in a more or less altered condition.1 Of these the following are worthy of mention, as bearing on the question of date.

Sion (Switzerland). Gothic. A small instrument…….. 1390 Amiens. Originally Gothic. Large, with 16-foot pipes 1429 Perpignan. Gothic. Large, with 32-foot pipes …..... 1490

Liibeck. One of the finest Gothic organsin Europe. 82s…1504 (or, according to Hopkins, 1518).

In all these the cases are sufficiently preserved to make it almost certain that pipes of the same lengths were origin- ally employed. The actual pipes are generally modern. At La Ferté Bernard (dep. Sarthe) part of the substructure is Gothic, and is known to be of date 1501; the organ above is Renaissance, and is known to be of date 1536. At St Maurice, Angers, an organ was built in 1511, with Renais- sance case, two towers of 32-foot pipes, 48 stops, and a separate pedal. An account of the instrument in a procés verbal of 1533 furnishes good evidence. In the 16th cen- tury,

~~therefore, the organ had attained great completeness, and the independent pedal was general on the Continent.~~

~~We cannot follow the history of German organs through the intervening centuries; but we propose to give the items of one of the principal organs of the Silbermanns, the great builders of the 18th century,—namely, that stand- ing in the Royal Catholic Church, Dresden. Without being an enormously large instrument it is complete in its way, and gives a very good idea of the German organ. The account is taken from Hopkins. The date is 1754.~~

~~Great. TINGE PAL... seen 16 SGLAVON 2c Santon saeenss 2 Bourdon …….. 16 tone PUGNEIAM sete caseumeee > 13 HAPIMCI Pall… 028s 8 Oba) Ppaeeesbecodnde Iv ranks Viola da Gamba 8 Chrmleral nctabenodanane III Rohrflote…….. 8 tone (ChoTELE "secnaneonddeeds Vv Glave… wb suses 4 BOO bbe ere cr 16 Spitzflote…….. 4 MENDIMEE, fc0522<000r3 8 (Oybiballiss capponpnenee 23 laine ccesceneeee 4~~

~~Echo. Quintaton ……. 16 tone Octave nceessceereeeces 2 (aga) Saar 8 ODT a caits cay cecesea's 13 Gedaekt ..0 0.2.66 8 tone IEE OE, soononaodoce 1 Unda Maris … 8 tone INDIREUI neccecccces nes Iv ranks Octave maar. air 4 De) 0Xa) Pemeroronataenceen Vv Rohrflote…….. 4 tone Vox humana ……. 8 tone ENDSSAL cee cccee nee 23~~

~~Choir. Gedackt ……., 8 tone WAII) 2) oo Ae 14 HepEONpal 2.6.5.0. 4 UOUE.. cccewetearcets i Rohrflote…….. 4 tone NTRMT ee oc cise encses II ranks INGSSA bis. . <. <0 se. 23 Sesquialtera…….. II OCtAVE oo crct eee nine 2 Chalumeaux ……. 8 tone~~

~~1 In the remarks next following the writer is indebted for informa- tion to Hill's work on organ-cases.~~

~~The manual and pedal appear to terminate on .~~

~~837~~

~~Pedal. Untersatz pees 32 tone WUD athe sonaaaoanencsas Iv ranks PriMcrpale..:..... 16 Pausan (trombone) 16 Octav-bass ……, 8~~

~~Tromipetten…… 8 Octaves…ccs….: 4 CIO Pan gamanneneenee 4 Accessories.~~

~~Tremulant echo. Tremulant great.~~

~~Echo to great. Great to pedal.~~

~~Compass. Manuals—C to @'" in alt, | Pedal—C, to tenor c.~~

~~The chief difference between English organs and those English of the Continent was that until the present century the organs.~~

~~pedal was absolutely unknown in England. The heavy bass given by the pedal being absent, a lighter style of voicing was adopted, and the manuals were usually con- tinued down below the 8-foot C so as to obtain additional bass by playing octaves with the hands. Thus the old or- gan (date 1697) of Father Smith in St Paul's Cathedral had manuals descending to the 16-foot C (C,), with two open diapasons throughout. Green's old organ at St George's, Windsor, had manuals descending to the 12-foot F, also two open diapasons throughout, no F¥. But the more usual practice was to make the manual descend to the 102% G, leaving out the Gg. At the Revolution most of the organs in England had been destroyed. Shortly afterwards Bernard Smith, a German, commonly called Father Smith, and Thomas and René Harris, Frenchmen, were largely employed in building organs, which were wanted everywhere. Father Smith perhaps had the greatest reputation of any builder of the old time, and his work has lasted wonderfully. There is a list in Rimbault of forty-five organs built for churches by him. The list of René Harris is scarcely less extensive.~~

~~The most important step in the development of the old English organ was the invention of the swell. This was first introduced into an organ built by two Jordans, father and son, for St Magnus's church near London Bridge, shal ky~~

~~Burney writes (1771) :—~~

~~'*It is very extraordinary that the swell, which has been intro- duced into the English organ more than fifty years, and which is so capable of~~

~~*expression and of pleasing effects that it may be well said to be the greatest and most important improvement that was ever made in any keyed instrument, should be utterly unknown in Italy ; and, now I am on this subject, I must observe that most of the organs I have met with on the Continent seem to be inferior to ours by Father Smith, Byfield, or Snetzler, in everything but size! As the churches there are very often immense, so are the organs ; the tone is indeed somewhat softened and refined by space and distance ; but, when heard near, it is intolerably coarse and noisy ; and, though the number of stops in these large instruments is very great, they afford but little variety, being for the most part duplicates in unisons and octaves to each other, such as the great and small 12ths, flutes, and 15ths ; hence in our organs, not only the touch and tone, but the imitative stops, are greatly superior to those of any other organs I have met with."*~~

~~*(As to these opinions, compare section on great organ open diapasons above, p. 830.)*~~

~~*In the course of the 18th century most of the old echoes were altered into swells, and the swell came into almost universal use in England. The development of the swell is inseparably associated with the peculiar quality of English swell reeds. These must have originated during the development of the swell. We hear of a "good reed voicer" named Hancock, who worked with Crang, changing echoes into swells. However it originated, the English reed is beautiful when properly made. It has recently entirely superseded the free reed, which had been long used in Germany. The original swells were usually short in compass downwards, frequently extending only to fiddle g. It is only lately that the value of the bass of the swell has been properly appreciated. Short-compass swells may be said to have now disappeared.*~~

~~*Avery's*~~

~~*old Eng- nearly in its original condition.*~~

~~*lish organ.*~~

~~The organ in St Stephen's, Coleman Street, is probably It was built by Avery in 1775. At all events the following arrangements might very well have been the original ones. The pedal clavier without pipes is no doubt a subsequent addition, and 1s~~

~~omitted. Any. Sesquialtera—11r ranks.~~

~~Open diapason. { Mixture—11 ranks.~~

~~Stopped diapason.~~

~~Oh GA WwW~~

~~parts—such as bass with pedals, treble with right hand on a solo stop (¢.g., clarionet), two inner parts with a soft open diapason, or something of the kind—are of much greater difficulty in the first instance. Another distribution is bass with pedals, melody with reed or solo combination in the tenor with left hand (an octave below its true pitch), inner parts with right hand on a soft open diapason, or something that balances. This is of far greater difficulty. All this can be practised with common hymn-tunes ; but the performer who can do these things with ease is in some respects an advanced player.~~

~~Principal. Trumpet. What has been said above has much bearing on the arrangement Balance Twelfth. Clarion. of the different departments of the organ. It is one of the first of tone. Fifteenth. Cornet to middle e—v ranks. requisites that as many balances of tone as possible should be avail- Cesp able between the different manuals and the pedal. HIow many large St di Fift eceh organs there are on which such a balance can hardly be obtained ! one 1 i is | C Fo dees It would be difficult to®lay too much stress on the above observa- — ase | Son , tions with respect to balance between the manuals. This is all-~~

~~important in the performance of organ trios, such as the organ Trios.~~

~~Swell. sonatas of Bach. In these compositions there are generally three~~

~~Open diapason. Cornet—u11 ranks. notes sounding, which may be regarded as belonging to three dif- Stopped diapason. 'Trumpet. ferent voices, of nearly equal strength, but different mean pitch, Principal. Hautboy. and, if possible, different quality ; of these one is appropriated by Compass. each hand and one by the pedal. They are written in threc lines,~~

~~Great and choir—G, toe", | Swell—fiddle g to e'".~~

~~no G, t. i This gives an excellent idea of the old English organ. There are several different accounts of the introduction of~~

~~Pedals in pedals into England. It took place certainly before the England. end of the 18th century, but only in a few instances.~~

~~And, for long after, the usual arrangement was simply to provide a pedal clavier, usually from F, or G, to tenor c or d, which took down the notes of the great organ. Unison diapason pipes (12-foot) were occasionally used. In one or two cases, as in the transition states of the old organ at St George's, Windsor, a 24-foot open diapason was employed as well as the unison stop. But a more usual arrangement, of a most objectionable character, was to combine the G,—c pedal-board with a single octave~~

~~and are intended to be played on two manuals and the pedal. If there is a good choir organ, not too weak in tone, the clearest way is to play these things with a medium strength open diapason on the great organ for the right hand, the full 8-foot choir with or with- out the 4-foot flute with the left, and a metal 16-foot and 8-foot bass flute on the pedal. A usual course in England is to play the treble on aswell reed (oboe) with open swell, tenor on great diapason, and pedal as before ; or treble great diapason, tenor oboe, pedal as be- fore. Here there is some risk of the reed in the tenor being un-~~

~~leasant. We may also suggest harmonic flute solo treble, open~~

~~iapason great tenor, pedal as before. These compositions, how- ever, admit of infinite variety in treatment. It appears probable that they were written for harpsichords, and in any case the inten- tions of the composer have not come down tous. As a matter of fact they are rarely successful on large~~

~~English organs, on account of the want of balance between the manuals. And nothing could point the direction in which improvement is needed more than this observation.~~

~~The fugues of Bach are the classical organ music par excellence. Bach's As to these it is also true that nothing has come down to us as organ to the composer's intentions, except that he generally played the fugues. fugues on the full organ with doubles. It does not seem clear that this was the case with the preludes ; and, any way, the modern organ, with its facilities for managing the stops, appears to coun- tenance a different treatment. The eifect of doubles when a subject or tune is given out in solo is very bad. They may be drawn with pedal was the better, and the practice gradually became | advantage when the parts are moving in massive chords. The usual general of providing a complete pedal-board of 24 octaves practice is perhaps to employ various manual effects of a light char-~~

~~aie 2 acter until the pedal enters, and then to produce full organ in its (C— f'), with at least one stop of 16-foot tone throughout, | various modifications, but always to aim at variety of tone. If a~~

~~even on the smallest organs that pretended to be of any | prelude begins with heavy chords and pedal, then produce full~~

~~real use. The study of the classical works of Bach and | organ at once. If it then passes to lighter matter, reduce to some~~

~~Mendelssohn went hand in hand with this chanee: for | xt¢nt Some begin a fugue on the stopped diapason of the great~~

~~eheebaeari ; avi th ee Gl oa organ, add more as the parts enter, and continue working up at study was impossible without the change, and yet | throughout. But perhaps it is the better practice to throw in~~

~~the desire for the study was one of the principal motives | loud organ during the pedal parts, and soften between times.~~

~~for it. In the meantime Bishop, an English builder,~~

~~One of the greatest requisites in organ-playing is dignity of treat- Dignity had i ted compositi Thi "15 ment. This is continually competing with clearness. 'The chief and diue ih oe ae a Sn ie ee greatly py mode of keeping the different parts distinct, where that is neces- elear-~~

~~sary, is by using reeds of a pronounced character. These reeds ness.~~

~~of so-called pedal-pipes, extending from the 16-foot to the 8-foot C; so that, instead of a uniform progression in ascending the scale, there was always a break or repetition in passing C.~~

~~About the middle of the present century it began to be generally admitted that the German arrangement of the~~

~~(1850) the mechanics of the organ were advanced by the general introduction of the pneumatic lever into large in- struments ; the whole mechanism of the organ was revolu- tionized by Willis's improvements ; and the organ-builders of England, having obtained from the Continent the funda- mental ideas necessary for completeness, advanced to a point at which they appear to be decidedly ahead. The English organ is now probably superior to that of any other country.~~

~~GENERAL REMARKS ON ORGAN TREATMENT. The organ probably presents more difficulties than any other instrument in the way of a sound elementary mastery. A person of ordinary capacity may work at it for years before being able to play passages of moderate difficulty with confidence and correctness.~~

~~Element- 'The special difficulty appears to be chiefly mental, and arises from the ary diffi- number of things that have to be thought of simultaneously. It~~

~~culties.~~

~~does not lie in the execution—at least not chiefly ; for to play a hymn-tune correctly, the bass being taken with the pedals, the tenor with the left hand, and the two upper parts with the right, 1s a matter in which there is no~~

~~execution required ; but it is of great difficulty to an inexperienced player. Other distributions of~~

~~almost invariably verge on the comic, and anything more than the most sparing and careful employment of them is undesirable. Expression is not possible unless the stops are enclosed in a swell box,—a most desirable arrangement. In all cases hurry is to be avoided. A calm steadiness, a minute finish of all the phrasing, forms most of the difference between first and second rate players.~~

~~With reference to the general treatment of modern music we Modern quote the preface to Mendelssohn's Organ Sonatas:—"In these music.~~

~~sonatas very much depends on the correct choice of the stops ; but, since every organ with which I am acquainted requires in this respect special treatment, the stops of given names not producing the same effect in different instruments, I have only indicated cer- tain limits, without specifying the names of the stops. By for- tissimo I mean the full organ; by pianissimo, usually one soft 8-foot stop alone; by forte, full organ without some of the most powerful stops ; by piano, several soft 8-foot stops together ; and so on. In the pedal I wish everywhere, even in pianissimo, 8-foot and 16-foot (tone) together, except where the contrary is expressly in- dicated, as in the sixth sonata [this refers to a passage where an 8-foot pedal is used without 16]. It is therefore left to the player to combine the stops suitably for the different pieces, but particu- larly to see that, in the simultaneous use of two manuals, the one keyboard is distinguished from the other by its quality, without forming a glaring contrast."~~

~~ORG—ORTI~~

~~The treatment thus indicated is very different from that to which the suitability of English swell reeds for solo purposes has given rise. The effects commonly obtained by means of these reeds could hardly be more expressly described than in the final warn- ing sentence above quoted. However, these reed effects possess great clearness, and, with the improved character of modern reeds and the toning down of the swell box, they are probably not so objectionable as what Mendelssohn had in his mind. Indeed the deficiency of good balances between flue stops answering the re-~~

quirements above described is usually such that there is hardly any option but to employ swell reeds in such cases.

Consider particularly the pianissimo balances necessary for carry- ing out the above directions. In the first place it is clear that the soft 8-foot stops alluded to are not stops of extreme softness, such as the dulciana or salicional, as the attempt to produce a melody — on such stops would everywhere be a failure. We must recognize for such purposes a further degree of softuess, which may be denoted by ppp. We may take the average great organ stopped diapason as the measure of loudness of the soft stops pp ; then it is requisite that on the choir or elsewhere there should be stops that will, especially in the tenor, combine and balance singly with the great stopped diapason in two-manual work. Choir stops would have to be decidedly stronger than usual for this purpose. Such a stop might be a small open diapason, or perhaps a gamba or keraulophon. Other balances of various kinds might be suggested. Some such must be present if the smooth and liquid character, which the soft parts of Mendelssohn's works at least were undoubtedly intended to possess, is to be preserved at all.

As a ppp is needed for extreme softness, so an fff is needed to express the exceptional degree of force attainable in modern instru- ments by adding the solo reed (tromba) to the ordinary full organ.

Modern music generally indicates in detail the treatment in- tended by the author. We may mention one matter which has come forward lately ; this is the use of one hand on two manuals. This has become possible in consequence of the modern arrange- ment by which the manuals overhang.

For further details as to the history and construction of the organ, with numerous specifications, we must refer to the work of Hopkins and Riinbault on the organ. (R. H. M. B.)

ORGIES is a name given to certain rites in the worship of Dionysus-Bacchus. The rites, which were restricted to women, were celebrated in the winter among the hills in spots remote from city life. The women met in such places clad in fawn-skins (veSpis), with hair dishevelled, swinging the thyrsus and beating the cymbal; they danced and worked themselves up to a state of mad excitement. The holiest rites took place at night by the light of

torches. A bull, the representative of the god, was torn in pieces by them as Dionysus-Zagreus had been torn ; his bellowing reproduced the cries of the suffering god. The women tore the bull with their teeth, and the eating of the raw flesh was a necessary part of the ritual. Then the dead god was sought for. Some further rites, which varied in different districts, represented the resurrection of the god in the spring. On Mount Parnassus the women carried back Dionysus-Liknites, the child in the cradle. The most famous festival of the kind was the tprernpis, cele- brated every second winter on Parnassus by the women of Attica and Phocis. The celebrants were called Menads or Bacchz. The ecstatic enthusiasm of the Thracian women, KAddwves or Mipadddves, was especially distinguished. There is no doubt that in earlier times the murdered god was represented by a man, and the myths of Pentheus and Orpheus refer to the origina] form of the ritual.

ORIBASIUS. See Mepictryz, vol. xv. p. 804.

ORIFLAMME. See Fiag, vol. ix. p. 279.

ORIGEN (¢. 185-c. 254). Of all the theologians of the ancient church, with the possible exception of Augustine, Origen is the most distinguished and the most influential. HIe is the father of the church's science ; he is the founder of a theology which was brought to perfection in the 4th and 5th centuries, and which still retained the stamp of his genius when in the 6th century it disowned its author. It was Origen who created the dogmatic of the church and laid the foundations of the scientific criticism of the Old and New Testaments. HIe could not have been what he was unless two generations before him had laboured at the problem of finding an intellectual expression and a philo-

sophic basis for Christianity (Justin, Tatian, Athenagoras, Pantenus, Clement). But their attempts, in comparison with his, are like a schoolboy's essays beside the finished work of a master. Like all great epoch-making personali- ties, he was favoured by the circumstances of his life, notwithstanding the relentless persecution to which he was exposed. HIe lived in a time when the Christian communities enjoyed almost uninterrupted peace and held an acknowledged position in the world. By

proclaiming the reconciliation of science with the Christian faith, of the highest culture with the gospel, Origen did more than any other man to win the Old World to the Christian religion. But he entered into no diplomatic compromises; it was his deepest and most solemn conviction that the sacred oracles of Christendom embraced all the ideals of antiquity. His character was as transparent as his life was blameless ; there are few church fathers whose biography leaves so pure an impression on the reader. The atmosphere around him was a dangerous one for a philosopher and theologian to breathe, but he kept his spiritual health unimpaired, and even his sense of truth suffered less injury than was the case with most of his contemporaries. To us, indeed, his conception of the universe, like that of Philo, seems a strange medley, and one may be ata loss to conceive how he could bring together such heterogeneous elements; but there is no reason to doubt that the harmony of all the essential parts of his system was obvious enough to himself. It is true that in addressing the Christian people he used differ- ent language from that which he employed to the cultured ; but there was no dissimulation in that,—on the contrary, it was a requirement of his system. Orthodox theology has never, in any of the confessions, ventured beyond the circle which the mind of Origen first measured out. It has suspected and amended its author, it has expunged " his heresies ; but whether it has put anything better or more tenable in their place may be gravely questioned. Origen was born, perhaps at Alexandria, of Christian parents in the year 185 or 186. As a boy he showed evidence of remarkable talents, and his father Leonidas gave him an excellent education. At a very early age, about the year 200, lie listened to the lectures of Panteenus and Clement in the catechetical school. This school, of which the origin is unknown, was the first and for a long time the only institution where Christians were instructed simultaneously in the Greek sciences and the doctrines of the Holy Scriptures. Alexandria had been, since the days of the Ptolemies, a centre for the interchange of ideas between East and West—between Egypt, Syria, Greece, and Italy; and, as it had furnished Judaism with an Hellenic philosophy, so it also brought about the alliance of Christianity with Greek philosophy. Asia Minor and the West developed the strict ecclesiastical forms by means of which the church closed her lines against heathenism, and especially against heresy ; in Alexandria Christian ideas were handled ina free and speculative fashion and worked out with the help of Greek philosophy. Till near the end of the 2d century the line between

heresy and orthodoxy was less rigidly drawn there than at Ephesus, Lyons, Rome, or Carthage. In the year 202 a persecution arose, in which the father of Origen became a martyr, and the family lost their livelihood. Origen, who had distinguished himself by his intrepid zeal, was supported for a time by a lady of rank, but began about the same time to earn his bread by teaching; and in 203 he was placed, with the sanction of the bishop Demetrius, at the head of the cate- chetical school. Even then his attainments in the whole circle of the sciences were extraordinary. But the spirit of investigation impelled him to devote himself to the highest studies, philosophy and the exegesis of the Sacred Scriptures. With indomitable perseverance he applied

himself to these subjects ; although himself a teacher, he regularly attended the lectures of Ammonius Saccas, and made a thorough study of the books of Plato and Numenius, of the Stoics and the Pythagoreans. At the same time he endeavoured to acquire a knowledge of Hebrew, in order to be able to read the Old Testament in the original. His manner of life was ascetic; the sayings of the Sermon on the Mount and the practical maxims of the Stoics were his guiding stars. Four obolia day, earned by copying manuscripts, sufficed for his bodily sustenance. A rash resolve led him to mutilate himself that he might escape from the lusts of the flesh, and work unhindered in the instruction of the female sex. This step he afterwards regretted. As the attendance at his classes continually increased—pagans thronging to him as well as Christians—he handed over the beginners to his friend Heraclas, and took charge of the more advanced pupils himself. Meanwhile the literary activity of Origen was increasing year by year. He commenced his great work on the textual criticism of the Scriptures; and at the instiga- tion of his friend Ambrosius, who provided him with the necessary amanuenses, he published his commentaries on the Old Testament and his dogmatic investigations. In this manner he laboured at Alexandria for twenty-eight years (till 231-232). This period, however, was broken by many journeys, undertaken partly for scientific and partly for ecclesiastical objects. "We know that he was in Rome in the time of Zephyrinus, again in Arabia, where a Roman official wanted to hear his lectures, and in Antioch, in response to a most flattering invitation from

Julia Mammza (mother of Alexander Severus, afterwards emperor), who wished to become acquainted with his philosophy. In the year 216—the time when the imperial executioners were ravaging Alexandria—we find Origen in Palestine. There the bishops of Jerusalem and Cresarea received him in the most friendly manner, and got him to deliver public lectures in the churches. In the East, especi- ally in Asia Minor, it was still no unusual thing for lay-

men, with permission of the bishop, to address the people.

in the church. In Alexandria, however, this custom had been given up, and Demetrius took occasion to express his disapproval and recall Origen to Alexandria. Probably the bishop was jealous of the high reputation of the teacher ‘ and a coolness arose between them which led, fifteen years later, to an open rupture. On his way to Greece (appa- rently in the year 230) Origen was ordained a presbyter in Palestine by his friends the bishops. This was un- doubtedly an infringement of the rights of the Alexandrian bishop; at the same time it was simply a piece of spite on the part of the latter that had kept Origen so long without any ecclesiastical consecration. Demetrius con- vened a synod, at which it was resolved to banish Origen from Alexandria. Even this did not satisfy his displeasure. A second synod, composed entirely of bishops, determined that Origen must be deposed from the presbyterial status. This decision was communicated to the foreign churches, and seems to have been justified by referring to the self-mutilation of Origen and adducing objectionable doctrines which he was said to have promulgated. The details of the incident are, however, unfortunately very obscure. No formal excommunication of Origen appears to have been decreed ; it was considered sufficient to have him degraded to the position of a layman. ‘The sentence was approved by most of the churches, in particular by that of Rome. At a later period Origen sought to vindicate his teaching in a letter to the Roman bishop Fabian, but, it would seem, without success. Even Heraclas, his former friend and sharer of his views, took part against him; and by

this means he procured his own election shortly afterwards as Successor to Demetrius.

ORIGEN

- In these circumstances Origen thought it best voluntarily

to retire from Alexandria (231-232). He betook himself to Palestine, where his condemnation had not been acknow- ledged by the churches any more than it had been in Phoenicia, Arabia, and Achaia. He settled in Cexsarea, and very shortly he had a flourishing school there, whose repu- tation rivalled that of Alexandria. His literary work, too, was prosecuted with unabated vigour. Enthusiastic pupils sat at his feet (see the Panegyric of Gregory Thaumaturgus), and the methodical instruction which he imparted in all branches of knowledge was famous all over the East. Here again his activity as a teacher was interrupted by frequent journeys. Thus he was for two years together at Czesarea in Cappadocia, where he was overtaken by the Maximinian persecution ; here he worked at his recension of the Bible. We find him again in Nicomedia, in Athens, and twice in Arabia. He was called there to combat the unitarian christology of Beryllus, bishop of Bostra, and to clear up certain eschatological questions. As he had formerly had dealings with the house of Alexander Severus, so now he entered into a correspondence with the emperor Philip the Arabian and his wife Severa. But through all situations of his life he preserved his equanimity, his keen interest in science, and his indefatigable zeal for the instruc- tion of others. Jn the year 250 the Decian persecution broke out, Origen was arrested, imprisoned, and maltreated. But he survived these troubles—it is a malicious invention that he recanted during the persecution—and lived a few years longer in active intercourse with his friends. He died, probably in the year 254 (consequently under Valerian), at Tyre, where his grave was still shown in the Middle Ages.

Writings.—Origen is probably the most prolific author of the ancient church. 'Which of us," asks Jerome, "can read all that he has written?" The number of his works was estimated at 6000, but that is certainly an exaggera- tion. Owing to the increasing unpopularity of Origen in the church, a comparatively small portion of these works have come down to us in the original. We have more in the Latin translation of Rufinus; but this translation is by no means trustworthy, since Rufinus, assuming that Origen's writings had been tampered with by the heretics, considered himself at liberty to omit or amend heterodox statements. Origen's real opinion, however, may frequently be gathered from the Philocalia—a sort of

~~anthology from his works prepared by Basil the Great and Gregory Nazi-anzenus, The fragments in Photius and in the Apology of Pamphilus serve for comparison. The writings of Origen consist of letters, and of works in textual criticism, exegesis, apologetics, dogmatic and practical theology.~~

~~(1) Eusebius collected more than a hundred of Origen's letters, arranged them in books, and deposited them in the library at Cesarea (#7. Z., vi. 36). In the church library at Jerusalem (founded by the bishop Alexander) there were also numerous letters of this father (Euseb., H. Z., vi. 20). But unfortunately they have all been lost except two,— one to Julius Africanus (about the history of Susanna) and one to Gregory Thaumaturgus. There are, besides, a couple of fragments.~~

~~(2) Origen's textual studies on the Old Testament were undertaken partly in order to improve the manuscript~~

~~'tradition, and partly for apologetic reasons, to clear up the~~

~~relation between the LXX. and the original Hebrew text. The results of more than twenty years' labour were set forth in his Hexapla and Tetrapla, in which he placed the Hebrew text side by side with the various Greek versions, examined their mutual relations in detail, and tried to find the basis for a more reliable text of the LXX. The Hexapla was probably never fully written out, but excerpts were made from it by various scholars at Czesarea in the 4th century ; and thus large sections of it have been~~

~~O@ns! Gk N~~

~~saved.! Origen worked also at the text of the New Testa- ment, although he produced no recension of his own.~~

~~(3) The exegetical labours of Origen extend over the whole of the Old and New Testaments. They are divided into Scholia (onpevdoers, short annotations, mostly gram- matical), Homalies (edifying expositions grounded on exe- gesis), and Commentaries (tépot). In the Greek original only a very small portion has been preserved; in Latin translations, however, a good deal. 'The most important parts are the homilies on Jeremiah, the books of Moses, Joshua, and Luke, and the commentaries on~~

~~Matthew, John, and Romans. With grammatical precision, antiquarian learning, and critical discernment Origen combines the allegorical method of interpretation—the logical corollary of his conception of the inspiration of the Scriptures. He distinguishes a threefold sense of scripture, a grammatico- historical, a moral, and a pneumatic,—the last being the proper and highest sense. He thus set up a formal theory of allegorical exegesis, which is not quite extinct in the churches even yet, but in his own system was of fundamental importance. On this method the sacred writings are regarded as an inexhaustible mine of philosophical and dogmatic wisdom ; in reality the exegete reads his own ideas into any passage he chooses. 'The commentaries are of course intolerably diffuse and tedious, a great deal of them is now quite unreadable ; yet, on the other hand, one has not unfrequently occasion to admire the sound lin- guistic perception and the critical talent of the author.?~~

~~(4) The principal apologetic work of Origen is his book xara KéAgov (eight books), written at Caesarea in the time of Philip the Arabian. It has been completely preserved in the original. This work is invaluable as a source for the history and situation of the church in the 2d century ; for it contains nearly the whole of the famous work of Celsus (Adyos éAnO%s) against Christianity. What makes Origen's answer so instructive is that it shows how close an affinity existed between Celsus and himself in their fundamental philosophical and theological presupposi- tions. The real state of the case is certainly unsuspected by Origen himself ; but many of his opponent's arguments he is unable to meet except by a speculative reconstruction of the church doctrine in question. Origen's apologetic is most effective when he appeals to the spirit and power of Christianity as an evidence of its truth. In details his argument is not free from sophistical subterfuges and superficial reasoning.®~~

~~(5) Of the dogmatic writings we possess only one in its integrity, and that only in the translation of Rufinus,' Ilept dpxov (On the Fundamental Doctrines). This work, which was composed before 228, is the first attempt at a dogmatic at once scientific and accommodated to the needs of the church, The material is drawn from Scripture, but in such a way that the propositions of the regula fidei are respected. This material is then formed into a system by all the resources of the intellect and of speculation. Origen~~

thus solved, after his own fashion, a problem which his predecessor Clement had not even ventured to grapple with. The first three books treat of God, the world, the fall of spirits, anthropology, and ethics. 'Each of these three books really embraces, although not in a strictly comprehensive way, the whole scheme of the Christian view of the world, from different points of view, and with different contents." The fourth book explains the

1 Field, Origenis Hexaplorum qua supersunt, 2 vols., Oxon., 1867-74.

2 See Reuss, Geschichte der heil. Schriften d. N. T., 5th ed., $511.

3 Keim, Celsus, 1873 ; Aubé, Hist. des persécut. de Véglise, vol. ii., 1875; Ornsby, " Origen against Celsus," Dublin Review, July 1879, p. 58; Pélagaud, Etude sur Celse, 1878 ; Lebedeff, Origen's Book against Celsus, Moscow, 1878 (Russian) ; Overbeck in the Theolog. Lit. Zeitung, 1878 No. 22, 1879 No. 9; Orig. c. Cels., ed. Selwyn, 1876.

4 There are, however, extensive fragments of the original in existence.

divinity of the Scriptures, and deduces rules for their interpretation. It ought properly to stand as first book at the beginning. The ten books of Stromata (in which Origen compared the teaching of the Christians with that of the philosophers, and corroborated all the Christian dogmas from Plato, Aristotle, Numenius, and Cornutus) have all perished, with the exception of small fragments ; so have the tractates on the resurrection and on freewill.®

(6) Of practical theological works we have still the

potperrixds eis paptipiov and the Ztvraypa rept evy7s. For a knowledge of Origen's Christian estimate of life and his relation to the faith of the church these two treatises are of great importance. The first was written during the persecution of Maximinus Thrax, and was dedicated to his friends Ambrosius and Protoctetus. The other also dates from the Cesarean period; it mentions many interesting details, and concludes with a fine exposi- tion of the Lord's Prayer.

(7) In his own lifetime Origen had to complain of falsi- fications of his works and forgeries under hisname. Many pieces still in existence are wrongly ascribed to him; yet it is doubtful whether a single one of them was composed on purpose to deceive. The most noteworthy are the Dialogues of a certain Adamantius "de recta in Deum fide," which seem to have been erroneously attributed to Origen so early as the 4th century.

Outline of Origen's View of the Universe and of Infe.— The system of Origen was formulated in opposition to the

"Greek philosophers on the one hand, and the Christian

Gnostics on the other.6 But the science of faith, as expounded by him, bears unmistakably the stamp both of Neo-Platonism and of Gnosticism. As a theologian, in fact, Origen is not merely an orthodox traditionalist and believing exegete but a speculative philosopher of Neo- Platonic tendencies. He is, moreover, a judicious critic. The union of these four elements gives character to his theology, and in a certain degree to all subsequent theology. It is this combination which has determined the peculiar and varying relations in which theology and the faith of the church have stood to each other since the time of Origen. That relation depends on the predomi- nance of one or other of the four factors embraced in his theology.

As an orthodox traditionalist Origen holds that Chris- tianity is a practical and religious saving principle, that it has unfolded itself in an historical series of revealing facts, that the church has accurately embedied the substance of her faith in the regula fidet, and that simple faith is suffi- cient for the renewal and salvation of man. As a philo- sophical idealist, however, he transmutes the whole con- tents of the faith of the church into ideas which bear the mark of Neo-Platonism, and were accordingly recognized by the later Neo-Platonists as Hellenic.' In Origen, how- ever, the mystic and ecstatic element is held in abeyance. The ethico-religious ideal is the sorrowless condition, the state of superiority to all evils, the state of order and of rest. In this condition man enters into likeness to God and blessedness ; and it is reached through contemplative isolation and self-knowledge, which is divine wisdom. "The soul is trained as it were to behold itself in a mirror, it shows the divine spirit, if it should be found

worthy of such fellowship, as in a mirror, and thus discovers the traces of a secret path to participation in the divine nature." As a means to the realization of this ideal,

5 See Redepenning, Origenis de principiis, first sep. ed., Leips., 1836 ; Schnitzer, Orig. iiber die Grundlehren des Glaubens, an attempt at reconstruction, 1835.

6 The opposition to the unitarians within the church must also be kept in mind.

? Porphyry says of Origen, kara Tas mepi mpayudrwy Kal rod Oelov dd£as ‘“EAAnvifwy (Euseb., H.#., vi. 19).

XVII. — 106

842

Origen introduces the whole ethics of Stoicism. But the link that connects him with churchly realism, as well as with the Neo-Platonic mysticism, is the conviction that complete and certain knowledge rests wholly on divine revelation, 2.¢., on oracles. Consequently his theology is cosmological speculation and ethical reflexion based on the Sacred Scriptures. The Scriptures, however, are treated by Origen on the basis of a matured theory of inspiration in such a way that all their facts appear as the vehicles of ideas, and have their highest value only in this aspect. That is to say, his gnosis neutralizes all that is empirical and historical, if not always as to its actuality, at least absolutely in respect of its value. The most convincing proof of this is that Origen (1) takes the idea of the im- mutability of God as the regulating idea of his system, and (2) deprives the historical ‘Word made flesh" of all significance for the true Gnostic. To him Christ appears simply as the Logos who is with the Father from eternity, and works from all eternity, to whom alone the instructed Christian directs his thoughts, requiring nothing more than a perfect—z.e., divine—teacher. In such propositions his- torical Christianity is stripped off as a mere husk. The objects of religious knowledge are beyond the plane of history, or rather—in a thoroughly Gnostic and Neo-Pla- tonic spirit—they are regarded as belonging to a supra- mundane history. On this view contact with the faith

of the church could only be maintained by distinguishing an exoteric and an esoteric form of Christianity. This dis- tinction was already current in the catechetical school of Alexandria, but Origen gave it its boldest expression, and justified it on the ground of the incapacity of the Christian masses to grasp the deeper sense of Scripture, or unravel the difficulties of exegesis. On the other hand, in deal- ing with the problem of bringing his heterodox system into conformity with the regula jider he evinced a high degree of technical skill. An external conformity was possible inasmuch as speculation, proceeding from the higher to the lower, could keep by the stages of the re- gula fide, which had been developed into a history of salvation, The system itself aims in principle at being thoroughly monistic ; but, since matter, although created by God out of nothing, was regarded merely as the sphere in which souls are punished and purified, the system is pervaded by a strongly dualistic element. The immuta- bility of God requires the eternity of the Logos and of the world. At this point Origen succeeded in avoiding the heretical Gnostic idea of God by assigning to the Godhead the attributes of goodness and righteousness. The pre- existence of souls is another inference from the immuta- bility of God, although Origen also deduced it from the nature of the soul, which as a spiritual potency must be eternal. Indeed this is the fundamental idea of Origen—"the original and indestructible unity of God and all spirit- ual essences." From this follows the necessity for the created spirit, after apostacy, error, and sin, to return always to its origin in God. The actual sinfulness of all men Origen was able to explain by the theological hypo- thesis of pre-existence and the premundane fall of each individual soul. He holds that freedom is the inalienable prerogative of the finite spirit ; and this is the second point that distinguishes his theology from the heretical Gnosti- cism. The system unfolds itself like a drama, of which the successive stages are as follows :—the transcendental fall, the creation of the material world, inaugurating the history of punishment and redemption, the clothing of fallen souls in flesh, the dominion of sin, evil, and the demons on earth, the appearing of the Logos, His union with a pure human soul, His esoteric preaching of salva- tion, and His death in the flesh, then the imparting of the Spirit, and the ultimate restoration of all: things. The

doctrine of the restoration appeared necessary because the spirit, in spite of its inherent freedom, cannot lose its true nature, and because the final purposes of God cannot be foiled. The end, however, is only relative, for spirits are continually falling, and God remains through eternity the creator of the world. Moreover, the end is not conceived as a transfiguration of the world, but as a liberation of the spirit from its unnatural union with the sensual. Here the Gnostic and philosophical character of the system is particularly manifest. The old Christian eschatology is set aside ; no one has dealt such deadly blows to Chiliasm and Christian apocalypticism as Origen. It need hardly be said that he spiritualized the church doctrine of the resurrection of the flesh. But, while in all these doctrines he appears in the character of a Platonic philosopher, traces of rational criticism are not wanting. Where his funda- mental conception admits of it, he tries to solve historical problems by historical methods, Even in the christology, where le is treating of the historical Christ, he entertains critical considerations ; hence it is not altogether without reason that in after times he was suspected of "Ebionitic " views of the Person of Christ. Not unfrequently he re- presents the unity of the Father and the Son as a unity of agreement and harmony and "identity of will."

Although the theology of Origen exerted a considerable influence as a whole in the two following centuries, it cer- tainly lost nothing by the circumstance that several im- portant propositions were capable of being torn from their original setting and placed in new connexions. It is in fact one of the peculiarities of this theology, which professed to be at once churchly and philosophical, that most of its formulz could be interpreted and appreciated in utramque partem. By arbitrary divisions and rearrangements the doctrinal statements of this "science of faith" could be made to serve the most diverse dogmatic tendencies. This is seen especially in the doctrine of the Logos. On the basis of his idea of God Origen was obliged to insist in the strongest manner on the personality, the eternity (eter- nal generation), and the essential divinity of the Logos.) On the other hand, when he turned to consider the origin of the Logos he did not hesitate to speak of Him as a kticpa, and to include Him amongst the rest of God's spiritual creatures. A xtiopa, which is at the same time opootc.ov TH Oew, was no contradiction to him, simply be- cause he held the immutability, the pure knowledge, and the blessedness which constituted the divine nature to

~~be communicable attributes. In later times both the ortho- dox and the Arians appealed to his teaching, both with a certain plausibility ; but the inference of Arius, that an imparted divinity must be divinity in the second degree, Origen did not draw. With respect to other doctrines also, such as those of the Holy Spirit and the incarnation of Christ, &c., Origen prepared the way for the later dogmas. The technical terms round which such bitter controversies raged in the 4th and 5th centuries are often found in Origen lying peacefully side by side. But this is just where his epoch-making importance lies, that all the later parties in the church learned from him. And this is true not only of the dogmatic parties; solitary monks and ambitious priests, hard-headed critical exegetes,? allegorists, mystics, all found something congenial in his writings. The only man who tried to shake off the theological influence of Origen was Marcellus of Ancyra, who did not succeed in producing any lasting effect on theology.~~

~~The attacks on Origen, which had begun in his lifetime,~~

~~1 "Communis substantia est filio cum patre; dwéppora enim du0- ovetos videtur, 7.¢,, unius substantie cum illo corpore ex quo est dréppota."~~

~~2 H.g., Dionysius of Alexandria ; compare his judicious verdict on the Apocalypse.~~

~~ORI—ORTI~~

~~did not cease for centuries, and only subsided during the time of the fierce Arian controversy. It was not so much the relation between pistis and gnosis—faith and know- ledge—as defined by Origen that gave offence, but rather isolated propositions, such as his doctrines of the pre- existence of souls, of the soul and body of Christ, of the resurrection of the flesh, of the final restoration, and of the plurality of worlds. Even in the 3d century Origen's view of the Trinity and of the Person of Christ was called in question, and that from various points of view. It was not till the 5th century, however, that objections of this kind became frequent. In the 4th century Pamphilus, Eusebius of Ceesarea, Athanasius, the Cappadocians, Didy- mus, and Rufinus were on the side of Origen against the attacks of Methodius and many others. But, when the zeal of Epiphanius was kindled against him, when Jerome, alarmed about his own reputation, and in defiance of his past~~

attitude, turned against his once honoured teacher, and Theophilus, patriarch of Alexandria, found it prudent, for political reasons, and out of consideration for the un- educated monks, to condemn Origen,—then his authority received a shock from which it never recovered. There were, doubtless, in the 5th century church historians and theologians who still spoke of him with reverence, but such men became fewer and fewer. In the West Vincent of Lerins held up Origen as a warning example (Commontt., 23), showing how even the most learned and most eminent of church teachers might become a misleading light. In the East the exegetical school of Antioch had an aversion to Origen; the Alexandrians had utterly repudiated him, Nevertheless his writings were much read, especially in Palestine. The monophysite monks appealed to his authority, but could not prevent Justinian and the fifth cecumenical council at Constantinople (553) from anathe- matizing the teaching of Origen. It is true that many scholars (e.g., Hefele, Conciliengesch., i. p. 858 sg.) deny that Origen was condemned by this council; but Mdller rightly holds that the condemnation is proved (Realency- klop. f. protest. Theol..u. Kirche, vol. xi. p. 118).

Sourees and Literature.—Next to the works of Origen (see Rede- penning, "Des Hieronymus wiederaufgefundenes Verzeichniss der Schriften des Origens," in Ze. f. d. hist. Theol., 1851, p. 66 sq.) the most important sources are :—Gregory Thaumat., Panegyricus in Orig. ; Eusebius, H. £., vi. ; Epiphanius, Her., 64 ; the works of Methodius, the Cappadocians, Jerome (see De wir. tll., 54, 61), and Rufinus; Vincent. Lerin., Commonit., 23 ; Palladius, Hist. Laws., 147 ; Justinian, Hp. ad Mennam (Mansi, ix. p. 487 sq.); Photius, Biblioth., 118, &c. There is no complete critical edition of Origen's works. The best edition is that of Car. and C. Vine. Delarue, 4 vols. fol., Paris, 1733-59,—reprinted by Lommatzsch, 25 vols. 8vo, Berlin, 1831-48, and by Migne, Patrol. curs. compl., ser. Gr,, vols. x1. -xvii. Several new pieces have been edited by Gallandi and A. Mai. Amongst the older works on Origen those of Huetius (printed in Delarue, vol. iv.) are the best; but Tillemont, Fabricius, Walch (Historie d. Ketzereten, vii. pp, 362-760), and Schréckh also deserve to be mentioned. In recent times the doctrine of Origen has been expounded in the great works on church history by Baur, Dorner, Bohringer, Neander, Moller (Geschichte der Kosmologie in der griechischen Kirche), and Kahnis (Die Lehre vom h. Geist, vol. i.) ; compare with these the works on the history of philosophy by Ritter,

Erdmann, Ueberweg, and Zeller. Of monographs, the best and most complete is Redepenning, Origenes, eine Darstellung seines Lebens und seiner Lehre, 2 vols., 1841, 1846. Compare Thomasius, Orig., 1837; Kriiger, "' Ueber das Verhaltniss des Orig. zu Ammonius Sakkas," in the Zischr. f. hist. Theol., 1848, i. p, 46 sg. ; Fischer, Comment, de Orig. theologia et eosmologia, 1846; Ramers, Orig. Lehre von der Auferstehung des Fleisehes, 1851; Knittel, " Orig. Lehre von der Menschwerdung," in the Theol. Quartalsehr., 1872; Schultz, "Christologie des Orig.," in the Jahrb. f. protest. Theol., 1875; Mehlhorn, " Die Lehre von der menschlichen Freiheit nach Orig.," in Zettschr. f. Kirehengesch., vol. ii., 1878 ; Freppel, Origéne, vol. i., 2d ed., Paris, 1875. (A. HA.)

ORIHUELA, a town and episcopal see of Spain, in the southern portion of the province of Alicante, 13 miles north- east from Murcia and about 15 from the sea, is situated in a beautiful and exceedingly fertile " huerta," at the foot

843

of a limestone ridge of moderate height, and on both sides of the Segura, here crossed by two bridges. There are remains of an old fort on the hill commanding the town; and the gateway on the side of Valencia—the Puerta del Colegio—is a fine lofty arch, surmounted by an emblematic statue and the city arms. The most prominent buildings are the episcopal palace (1733), with a frontage of 600 feet, but partly ruinous ; the town-house (1843), containing the municipal archives and a considerable number of curious and important documents of national history ; and the cathedral, a comparatively small Gothic structure built on the site of a former mosque in the 14th century, and enlarged and tastelessly restored in 1829. There are large barracks on the outskirts, and many noblemen have town houses or "palaces" in Orihuela. 'There are also a con- siderable number of convents, now suppressed. The uni- versity of Orihuela, founded in 1568 by the archbishop of Valencia, was closed in 1835, part of the revenue being applied to the support of a college affiliated to the univer- sity of Valencia. Besides numerous primary schools there are a theological seminary anda normal school. The final separation of Orihuela from the diocese of Cartagena took place in 1564. The inhabitants are largely engaged in

agriculture, the trade in fruit (oranges and citrons, pomegranates, dates), as well as in cereals, oil, and wine, being considerable. There is a lively and picturesque weekly market, The manufactures, which are of secondary importance, include textile fabrics, leather, saltpetre, and hats; dyeing is also carried on. The population of the ayunta- miento was 20,929 in 1877,

Orihuela is not mentioned in ancient geography, for a proposed identification with the Orcelis of Pliny is almost certainly wrong. As Auriela or Aurivalet, on the other hand, it figures frequently in the annals of the Moorish period ; in 713 it was held successfully for some time by Theodemir against Abd-al-Aziz. It was conquered by Jayme of Aragon, for his father-in-law Alphonso of Castile, in 1265, It suffered sack during the disturbances at the beginning of the reign of Charles V. (1520), and again in the War of Succession

(1706). Local annals specially mention the plague of 1648, the flood of 1651, and the earthquake of 1829,

ORINOCO, a river in the north of South America, which falls into the Atlantic on the north-east seaboard between 60° 20' and 62° 30' W. long., after draining an area of at least 366,000 square miles (belonging to Venezuela and Colombia) in a course of about 1500 miles, Between the source of its westmost affluent, the Guaviare, and that of its eastmost, the Caroni, there is a difference of 14 degrees of longitude. The head-waters of the main stream rise on the southern slope of the Sierre Parime ; but the branch which keeps the name Orinoco has not yet been traced by any European, and the position of the lake from which, according to native report, it issues can only be vaguely fixed. Michelena y Réjas, who ascended the Orinoco as far as the mouth of the Mawaca (itself about 30 feet deep), found it even there a deep and navi- gable river; and a little way lower down it receives no inconsiderable accession from the Ocamo and Padamo. Below Esmeralda, a settlement in 65° 50' W. long., long known as the limit of definite exploration, occurs one of the most remarkable bifurcations in the world ; while the main stream holds on in a north-west direction, a branch called the Casiquiare turns south and, increased by numerous small tributaries, runs for about 180 miles to the Rio Negro (an affluent of the Amazons) with so rapid a current that, while a boat takes only four natural

days to descend, the return voyage requires twenty to thirty days. In the neigh- bourhood of San Fernando de Atabapo (in 4° 2' N, lat. and 68° 10' W. long., a miserable village, but officially the capital of the Venezuelan province of the Amazons, and famous in the history of the river) the Orinoco is joined by the united waters of the Atabapo, the Ynirida, and the Guaviare,—the Guaviare receiving the Ynirida

about 10 or 15 miles west of San Fernando and then meeting the Atabapo opposite the village. The Guaviare is the first of the great rivers which bring down the waters of the Andes to the Orinoco, and is fit for steam- boat traffic a long way up. From its junction with the Guaviare to the great rapid of Mariapiri (a distance of about 180 miles) the Ynirida, which was explored in 1872 by Frédéric Montolieu, hastens through a rugged country with a swift and frequently interrupted stream; above Mariapiri, and as far as Guacamayo (Montolieu's farthest), it forms, on the other hand, a succession of lakes and lagoons with hardly any current (Bull. Soc. Géogr., Paris, 1880). Though smaller than either the Guaviare, the Ynirida, or the Orinoco, the Atabapo gives its northward direction to the united river, which below the confluence widens out into a noble flood several miles broad, but before long has its channel contracted and twisted and broken by the rough granitic rocks of the country through which it has to force its way. About 80 miles bring the river to the great cataracts of Maypures, and a few miles more to that of Atures; both are complete barriers to upward naviga- tion, and, since Humboldt's glowing description, have been ranked among the most striking pieces of river scenery in South America (Humboldt and Bonpland, Voy. au Nouv. Continent, vol. ii. pp. 360-363). Some distance below Atures is the confluence of the Meta, a powerful many-watered affluent from the Andes, which has been ascended by steamer within 60 miles of Bogoté; but the Orinoco still continues northward till, meeting the Apure, which drains the whole Merida Cordillera, it turns westwards through the great Venezuelan valley. In its onward course it receives a great many tributaries from both north and south, the former being comparatively short, but the latter, especially the Caura and Caroni, rising in the highlands hundreds of miles away. About 50 miles below the mouth of the Caroni and 120 miles from the sea begins the enormous delta, embracing

200 miles of coast. The southmost branch, Boca de Navios or Boca de Varime, continues in the line of the river; the Manamo or Vagre branch strikes off almost at right angles northward to the Gulf of Paria or Golfo Triste. The annual inunda- tion of the Orinoco, which makes a kind of false start in April, and, gradually increasing in May, June, and July, reaches its height in September, is extensive enough to lay the country under water in some places for scores of miles inland. As most of the regions through which it passes are in a state of nature, and there is hardly, with the exception of ANGosTURA (q.v.), a town of any consider- able size on the banks of either main stream or affluents, this noble river-system is but little turned to account for commerce. Not only, however, is it easily navigable for steamers for nearly 800 miles, but, as the lower part of its course lies in the line of the trade-winds, sailing craft are able to make their way slowly upwards against the current. Even at the junction of the Guaviare the height above the sea is only 744 feet.

In 1498 Columbus entered Golfo Triste, and probably observed the northern mouths of the Orinoco, and in 1499 the main channel appears to have been noted by Ojeda. The first to attempt the ascent of the river was Diego de Ordaz in 1535, who reached the mouth of the Meta. For its scientific exploration we are mainly indebted to José Iturriaga and José Solano (1756), Humboldt (1800), and Michelena y Rojas (1855-1856). , degre wae (Madrid, 1741); Michelena y Rédjas, Explora-

ORIOLE, from the Old French Oriol and that from the Latin aureolus, the name once applied to the bird, from its golden colouring, which is now generally admitted to be the Vireo or IcrErus (vol. xii. p. 696) of classical authors—the Oriolus galbula of Linnzeus—but now commonly used ma much wider sense. The Golden Oriole, which is the type of the Family Oriolidz of modern ornithologists, is a far

from uncommon spring-visitor to the British Islands ; but the conspicuous plumage of the male—bright yellow con- trasted with black, chiefly on the wings and tail—always attracts attention, and generally brings about its death. Yet a few instances are known in which it is supposed to have bred in England. The nest is a beautifully interwoven fabric, suspended under the

horizontal fork of a bough, to both branches of which it is firmly attached, and the eggs are of a shining white sometimes tinged with pink, and sparsely spotted with dark purple. On the Continent it is a well- known if not an abundant bird, and its range in summer extends so far to the east as Irkutsk, while in winter it is found in Natal and Damaraland. In India it is replaced by a closely allied form, O. kundoo, chiefly distinguishable by the male possessing a black streak behind as well as in front of the eye; and both in Asia and Africa are several other species more or less resembling O. galbula, but some depart considerably from that type, assuming a black head, or even a glowing crimson instead of the ordinary yellow colouring, while others again remain constant to the dingy type of plumage which characterizes the female of the more normal form. Among these last are the aberrant species of the group Jimetes or Mimeta, belonging to the Australian Region, respecting which Mr Wallace pointed out, first in the Zoological Society's Proceedings (1863, pp. 26-28), and afterwards in his Malay Archipelago (ii. pp. 150-153), the very curious facts—as yet only explicable on the theory of "mimicry"—of which mention has already been made (HoNEy-EATER, vol. xii. p. 139). It is a singular circumstance that this group Jfimeta first received its name from Captain King (Survey dc. of Australia, ii. p. 417) under the belief that the birds composing it belonged to the Family Aleliphagidz, which had assumed the appearance of Orioles, whereas Mr Wallace's investigations tend to show that the imitation (unconscious, of course) is on the part of the latter. The external similarity of the I/imeta and the 7'rogidorhynchus of the island of Bouru, one of the Moluceas, is perfectly wonderful, and has again and again deceived some of the best ornithologists, though the birds are structurally far apart. Another genus which has been referred to the Oriolidx, and may here be mentioned, is Sphecotheres, peculiar to the Australian Region, and dis-tinguishable from the more normal Orioles by a bare space round the eye. A. N.) ORION, the name of a constellation which has been the centre of many legends in Greece. It bears the form of a warrior carrying a club, and wearing a girdle which is composed of three very beautiful stars. Its disappearance in the autumn is the prelude to storms and rain. The legendary hero Orion, or, as Pindar calls him, Oarion, was according to Homer a giant, fairer and taller than the Aloides. Eos, the dawn-goddess, loved him, but the gods were angry; Artemis slew him in Ortygia with kindly shaft. A doubtful passage in the Odyssey calls him a mighty hunter,

~~The later poets give various discrepant accounts of his parentage. They usually connect him with some deed of violence to a maid, either the daughter of CEnopion in Chios, or the nymph Upis in Delos, or even Artemis herself. Others say that Artemis loved him, and was induced, by an artifice of the angry Apollo, to shoot him unwittingly. The Old Testament name of the constellation appears to be késél, the fool or impious (Amos v. 5; Job ix. 9, xxviii. 31). In Arabic and Semitic it is called the giant. Late writers (Cedrenus and the Paschal Chronicle) speak of a Persian identification of Orion with Nimrod. ORISSA, a province of British India, forming a division or commissionership under the jurisdiction of the lieutenant- governor of Bengal, situated between 19° 28' and 22° 34' 15" N. lat. and between 83° 36' 30" and 87° 31' 30" E. long. It forms the extreme south-western portion of Bengal,~~

~~bounded on the N. and N.E. by Chutid Nagpur and Lower Bengal proper, E. and §.E. by the Bay of Bengal, S. by Madras, and W. by the Central Provinces.~~

~~Orissa consists of two distinct territories—a fertile alluvial delta, comprising the three British districts of Cuttack, Balasor, and Puri, occupying an area of 8056 square miles; and a wild region of sparsely populated tributary Hill States, with an area of 16,084 square miles, the latter walling out the former from the central Indian plateau. In the latter district the two small territories of Angul and Banki (area 997 square miles) are subject to British management. Including these, the area of British Orissa is 9053 square miles.~~

~~British Orissa.—The Orissa delta is formed from the deposits of the Mahdnadi, the Bralimani, and the Baitaranf(, which converge towards the coast, to within 30 miles of each other, upon Orissa. The three rivers, together with two minor streams, the Sdélandi and Subanrekha, represent an accumulated drainage of 63,350 square miles, which, during the height of the hot weather, amounts only to a discharge of 1690 cubic feet per second. The average cold-weather discharge is 5360 cubic feet, but during the rains it rises to 2,760,000 cubic feet. This enormous mass of water falls suddenly upon a narrow level strip of country in which the river-beds are~~

~~altogether inadequate to carry it off. The Orissa canal-system now affords an outlet to much of this surplus water, which it also utilizes for irrigation.~~

~~The population of the British districts was 3,730,735 in 1881, dis- tributed over an area of 9053 square miles. The Hindus form the great mass of the population (8,634,049 in 1881), Mohammedans numbering 85,611, and aboriginal tribes still following their primi- tive modes of worship 10,923. The population is entirely rural, the people living almost solely by husbandry. In 1881 there were only five towns in the province containing upwards of 5000 in- habitants :— Cuttack (42,656), the headquarters of the provincial administration, and the starting-point of the great system of canals which irrigate the province ; Puri (22,095), the capital of the third district of Orissa, and the religious capital of the province ; Balasor (20,265), the official headquarters of the district of the same name, and the site of the earliest British factory on the seaboard of Bengal; Kendrapara (15,969) ; and Jaipur (11,283), also a great religious centre, with numerous ruined Sivaite temples.~~

~~The whole of Orissa is holy ground. On the southern bank of the Baitarani shrine rises after shrine in honour of Siva, the All- Destroyer. On leaving the stream the pilgrim enters Jaipur, liter- ally the city of sacrifice, the headquarters of the region of pilgrim- age sacred to the wife of the All-Destroyer. There is not a fiscal division in Orissa without its community of cenobites, scarcely a village without consecrated lands, and not a single ancient family that has not devoted its best acres to the gods. Every town is filled with temples, and every hamlet has its shrine. The national reverence of the Hindus for holy places has been for ages concen- trated on Puri, sacred to Vishnu under his title of Jagannath, the Lord of the World.~~

~~Rice forms the great staple, every variety of it being grown, from the dwarf plant, 18 inches high, on the dry uplands, to the long-stemmed paddy which rears its head above 6 or 7 feet of water. Other crops consist of wheat, many varieties of pulse, oil-seeds, hemp, tobacco, cotton, sugar-cane, betel-leaf, tubers, and vegetables of many kinds. Besides its copious water-supply in time of high flood, the province has a local rainfall of 624 inches per annum. Nevertheless, the uncontrolled state of the water- supply has subjected the country from time immemorial to droughts no less than to~~

inundation. Thus the terrible famine of 1865-66, which swept away one-fourth of the entire population, was followed in 1866 by a flood which destroyed crops to the value of £3,000, 000. Since then much has been done by Government to husband the abundant water-supply.

The early history of the kingdom of Orissa (Odra-desa), as recorded in the archives of the temple of Jagannath, is largely mythical. A blank in the records from about 50 B.c. to 319 A.D. corresponds to a period of Yavana occupation and Buddhist influence, during which the numerous rock monasterics of Orissa were excavated. The founder of the Kesari or Lion dynasty, which ruled from 474 to 1132 a.D., is said to have restored the worship of Jagannath, and under this line the great Sivaite temple at Bhuvaneswar was con- structed. In 1182 a newline (the Gangetic dynasty) succeeded, and Vishnu took the place of Siva in the royal worship. This dynasty was extinguished in 1532-34, and in 1578, after half a century of war, Orissa became a province of the Mogul empire.

In 1751 it passed to the Marhattas and suffered great miseries under their rule till the British conquest in 1803.

Orissa Tributary States.—These form a cluster of eighteen depend- ent territories or chiefships in the mountainous background of the Orissa division, occupying a succession of wooded mountain and rocky ranges, enclosing the rich valleys of the Mahanadi, Brahmani, and Baitaranf. The following table gives a list of the states, with their area in square miles and their population.

TRIBUTARY STATES OF ORIssA IN 1881.

States. Area. | Popu- States. Area, [ee

opu- lation. lation.

1 | Athgarh……; 168] 31,079 || 10 | Khandpara ..| 244 | 66,296 2 | Athmallik….| 730] 21,774 || 11 | Morbhanj ….| 4,243 | 385,737 8 | Baramba ….| 134] 29,772 || 12 | Narsinhpur ..; 199] 32,583 4 \ Bod and 2.064 |) 1805108 |) 1S) ||\aNilgini ©. <…. 278 50,972 5 Khundmal 14 | Nayagarh ….. 588 | 114,622 6 | Daspalla ….| 568] 41,608 || 15 | Pal Lahara

..| 452) 14,887 7 | Dhenkanal ..| 1,463 | 208,316 || 16 | Ranpur…... 203 36,539 8 lehineksl 35 hago |} 312 $8,802 || 17 | Talcher …... 899 35,590 9 | Keunjhar ….| 3,096 | 215,612 |] 18 | Tigaria …... 46 19,850 Total….| 15,187 |1,469,142

The largest town in the whole of the Tributary States is Khand- para, with 5548 inhabitants. It lies on the right bank of the Mahanadi, and is a considerable seat of trade.

Tillage is conducted in two methods, common to the whole Tributary States: (1) rice cultivation in hollows and on low lands which have a command of irrigation ; (2) upland or tala cultiva- tion, upon newly-cleared patches of land, which depends entirely on the local rainfall. In the valleys, where the mountain rivulets can be utilized, the peasants throw a dam across the stream and store up the water. The lower levels thus secure a supply of moist- ure the whole year round, and wet rice cultivation goes on through- out the twelve months. In the uplands the forests are cut down and burnt upon the spot; and the soil, thus enriched with salts, yields abundant crops of early rice, oil-seeds, and cotton. At the end of four or five years such clearings are abandoned for new ones, and the land relapses into jungle.

The states are under the political superintendence of the British commissioner of Orissa.

ORIZABA, or Orizava, a city of Mexico, in the state of Vera Cruz, is situated at a height of 3975 feet above the sea in a well-wooded valley 65 miles south-west of Vera Cruz, on one of the two high roads between that city and Mexico, and since 1872 on the Vera Cruz and Mexico Railway. It is a thriving place of 16,000 inhabitants, has a good exchange, a theatre, and two hospitals, spins cotton, and manufactures cotton and woollen cloth, and trades in tobacco, sugar, rum, and other local products. Originally called Izhuatlan, Orizaba is one of the oldest cities of Mexico. At the time of the Spanish conquest it formed part of the Aztec kingdom. In 1521 the natives massacred a large number of Spaniards. In 1862 Orizaba was the headquarters of the French army, which inflicted a defeat on the Mexicans on the outskirts of the city. Six miles north of the city stands the Pico de Orizaba or Citlal- tepetl, "The Mountain of the Star," an extinct volcano 17,665 feet high, and thus one of the loftiest summits in the continent. It was

ascended by W. F. Reynolds of the United States Topographical Engineers in 1848.

ORKNEY anp SHETLAND, a county of Scotland, formed of two separate groups of islands in the North Sea. The Orkneys are situated between 58° 41' and 59° 24' N. lat. and between 2° 22' and 3° 25' W. long., and are separated from the mainland of Scotland by the Pentland Firth, the breadth of which between Brough Ness in South Ronaldshay and Duncansby Head, Caithness, is about 7 miles. The Shetlands lie to the north-east of the Orkneys, between 59° 50' and 60° 52' N. lat. and between 0° 55' and 2° 14' W. long. 'The distance from Dennis Head in Orkney to Sumburgh Head in Shetland is about 50 miles, but Fair Isle, which is included in Shetland, is situated midway between the two main groups. The total area of the Orkneys and Shetlands is 593,352 acres or about 927 square miles, the area of the Orkneys being 240,476 acres, and that of the Shetlands 352,876 acres.

In the Orkney group there are fifty-six islands and islets,

&?

846

of which twenty-nine are inhabited, the others, which are called "holms," being frequently made use of for pasture. Besides Pomona or the Mainland, which has an area equal to all the others combined, the principal islands are, to the north, Rousay, Westray, Papa-Westray, North Ronaldshay, Sanday, Eday, Stronsay, and Shapinshay, and to the south, Hoy, North Walls, South Walls, Flotta, South Ronaldshay, and Burray. The members of the Shetland group are more

numerous than the Orkneys, consisting of about a hundred islands and islets ; besides the Mainland, the more important are Yell, Unst, and Fetlar to the north, Whalsay and Bressay to.the east, and East and West Burra, Papa-Stour, Muckle Roe, and Foula to the west. Except towards the west the surface of the Orkneys is comparatively flat, and in some cases, as in Sanday, the coast is so low as to be a frequent cause of shipwreck. The island of Hoy consists principally of lofty black barren rocks, of which the

Ward Hill attains a height of 1564 feet. In the southern part of the Main-land, to the west of Kirkwall, the hills also reach a con- siderable elevation, the highest summits being Wideford Hill near Kirkwall (740 feet) and the Ward Hill of Orphir (880 feet) ; and there is another hilly region in the north- west of the Mainland, opposite the island of Rousay. The centre of Rousay is occupied by hills of considerable height. On the west of Hoy perpendicular precipices of great height descend sheer to the Atlantic. The outline of the islands is very irregular, and through the numerous firths and sounds the tides rush with great rapidity, forming occa- sionally whirlpools called roosts, which in stormy weather frequently suck in fishing-boats and prove dangerous even to large vessels.

—The coast-scenery of the Shetland group is strikingly picturesque. The islands present an irregular rocky surface generally rising into hills of considerable elevation, the

highest summit being Roeness Hill (1475 feet) in the Mainland. By the action of the waves the rocks have been worn into numerous fantastic shapes, and the coast-line is also deeply indented by bays and "voes" or sea-lochs, caused partly by denudation and partly by glacial action. The greater part of the coast is stern and precipitous, but Sumburgh Head, the Noup of Noss, Fitful Head, the island of Papa-Stour with its surrounding rocks, Foula (especially on its western side), the Drongs and adjoining rocks of the parish of Northmavine with the coast-line from Roeness Voe to Haevdadal Head, and Unst the most northern of the group may be singled out for their picturesque beauty or impressive grandeur. numerous caves, the more remarkable of which are the immense Orkneyman's Cave near the Bard of Bressay, and the fantastic caves of Papa-Stour.

Geology.—The geological formation of the Orkneys is very similar to that of the adjoining mainland, and con- sists almost entirely of the lower Old Red Sandstone of the flagstone series. A red and yellow sandstone series occupies part of Sanday, Eday, Burray, Flotta, and South Ronaldshay, and a long narrow strip of the Mainland to the south of Kirkwall. The mountainous district of Hoy be- longs to the upper Old Red Sandstone, in which are inter- bedded volcanic rocks consisting of amygdaloidal lavas

~~and ashes, and forming the terraces of the northern slopes of the Hoy hills. These rocks rest unconformably on the lower Old Red Sandstone. North-west from Stromness Bay to Inga Ness there is an outcrop of crystalline rocks consisting of granite and micaceous gneiss. The flagstone series, especially in the neighbourhood of Stromness, contains numerous fossils,—ichthyolites, crustaceans, and plants being all represented. From the character of the striated surfaces of the rocks, and the presence of foreign rocks in the boulder-clay, it has been concluded that the Orkneys were subjected to a glacial action crossing from the North Sea to the Atlantic; and there are also traces of local glaciers, especially at Hoy.~~

~~The geological formation of the Shetlands, like that of the Orkneys, belongs principally to the lower Old Red Sandstone and the metamorphic rocks on which they rest unconformably ; but the proportion between the two species of rocks is reversed, the metamorphic rocks cropping to the surface throughout the greater part of the Shetland group. The central portion of the islands, including the north- western half of the Mainland and its eastern seaboard in~~

~~the parish of Northmavine, Whalsay, Yell, and the western ~~

~~seaboard of Unst, is occupied chiefly by micaceous and hornblendic gneiss with limestones and quartzites. In the southern portion of the Mainland the clay-slate series, with associated limestones and quartzites, prevails. In Unst and Fetlar there are large masses of serpentine and gabbro, and diorite occupies a large area in the districts of Delting and Northmavine. The lower Old Red Sandstone occupies the islands of Foula and Bressay, skirts the eastern sea- board of the Mainland from Lerwick southwards, and in- cludes the greater part of Walls. series of igneous rocks, especially in the western district of Northmavine, and there is also an intrusive series, Even more striking evidence of glacial action exists in Shetland than in Orkney. The metamorphic rocks are very rich in beautiful minerals, especially along the coast of North- mavine, among the varieties being felsite, epidote, actinolite, serpentine, anthophyllite, fluor-spar, steatite, magnetite, and cyanite. deposits of peat.~~

~~Climate and Agriculture.—The temperature, both of the Orkneys and of the Shetlands, presents smaller variations than that of Scotland or England.~~

~~The yearly average is a little over 45° Fahr., the average for the coldest months—~~

~~The action of the sea has formed—~~

~~It is associated with a—~~

~~Both in Orkney and Shetland there are large~~

~~a~~

~~ORR SMe Send SHETL AW D~~

~~January, February, and March—being nearly 39°, and for the warmest months—July, August, and September—about 53°. Though fogs are common, the rainfall is not excess- ive, but it is higher in Shetland than in Orkney. As the temperature is influenced by the Gulf Stream, the coldest month of the year is March, when the tide reaches its lowest point. The soil of Orkney varies in different islands, but generally it is either a sandy loam or a strong but friable clay, and remarkably fertile. Large quantities of seaweed, as well as lime and marl, are available for manure. Since the opening up of more constant communication with the south, and the construction of a complete system of roads, begun in 1857, the system of cultivation has undergone a complete transformation. are now occupied by. farmers from Scotland.~~

~~Between 1875 and 1880 the number of holdings in Orkney in- creased from 3147 to 3319, and their area from 93,618 acres to 104,958. In 1880 2873 holdings, or more than two-thirds of the total number, did not exceed 50 acres each, while 279 ranged from 50 to 100 acres, 131 from 100 to 300, and 36 were above 300. The total number of acres under cultivation in 1883 was 112,148, of which 38,459 were under corn crops, 32,051 rotation grasses, 22,755 permanent pasture, and 1031 fallow. Of the corn crops, 32.781 acres were under oats and 5641 under barley or bere, while 14,387 of the green crops were under turnips and 3104 under potatoes, Horses, which are for the most part a small and active breed, numbered 6092 in 1883, of which 4884 were used solely for agricul- tural purposes. Cattle numbered 25,624, of which 9405 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf.~~

Shorthorned and polled Angus are now the most common breeds, cattle-feeding being largely practised. Sheep, which in 1883 numbered 31,548, are now chiefly Cheviots and a cross between them and Leicesters, but the native sheep (identical with those of Shetland) are still kept in considerable numbers in Hoy and South Ronaldshay. Pigs numbered 4745.

In Shetland there has been no agricultural progress corresponding to that in operation in Orkney, the principal reason being insuffi- ciency of soil, which in many cases has to be made or increased by collecting turf. Between 1875 and 1880 the number of holdings decreased from 3839 to 3604, but the area under cultivation increased from 52,256 to 58,357 acres. In 1880 3529 holdings did not exceed 50 acres each, while 36 ranged from 50 to 100 acres, 30 from 100 to 300, and 11 were above 300. Although there are some good arable farms in a few favoured districts, the majority are small crofts held on a yearly tenancy by the fishermen along with their cottages. For the most part the cottages are only slightly improved specimens of the original cabin, the fireplace of at least the ' but" end being in the centre of the apartment, which was formerly shared with calves, pigs, and other young animals. The cows are now for the most part housed in separate buildings. Originally the rent was paid in kind, and it was a general custom for the landlord or tacksman to compel the crofter to barter a considerable portion of the fruits of his industry for provisions and clothing, and the prac- tice is not yet quite obsolete in certain districts. 'The cottages are*

—generally grouped together in small hamlets called '"touns." The size of a croft varies from 5 to 10 acres; but the old Norwegian measurement by merks is still retained. Originally the land was held on the "'runrig" system —that is, different owners held alter- nate ridges—but now in most cases each holding is separate, The implement anciently used for turning over the soil was the Nor- wegian plough drawn by four oxen abreast, but as the holdings became subdivided and distinctly separated from each other it was superseded by the small sharp spade now in almost universal use, Until lately implements with wheels were scarcely known, and even yet the crofters generally carry out even the manure for the land in straw baskets slung over the shoulders. A system of roads was constructed during the potato famine of 1846-49, and wheeled vehicles are in general use in the

neighbourhood of Lerwick and various other places. According to the agricultural returns of 1883 there were 58,393 acres under cultivation, of which 10,528 were under corn crops, 4511 green crops, and 41,628 permanent pasture. No system of rotation is practised. Of the corn crops 8050 acres were under oats and 2478 under bere ; and of the green crops 3357 acres were under potatoes and 943 under'turnips. Originally the grain supplies were obtained almost wholly from the Orkneys, and fora long period grey and black oats and bere or bigg were the only species grown, but now white oats are quite common. Frequently the grain does not ripen till the end of October or beginning of November. The culture of the cabbage is said to have been intro- duced by a detachment of Cromwell's soldiers, potatoes in 1730, and turnips in 1807. Black and red currants ripen in sheltered

situations. Horses in 1883 numbered 5305, of which only 908 were used solely for agricultural purposes ; cattle numbered 21,345, of which 8132 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf; sheep numbered

Many of the holdings in Orkney'

847

81,163, and pigs 3788. The small ponies peculiar to the islands are now becoming scarce, though entire ponies are greatly in demand for working underground in collieries. The native cattle are a diminu- tive breed with sinall horns and short legs. They are said to possess many of the points of the best breeds. The beef is remarkable for tenderness and flavour ; and, when well fed, the cows yield a large supply of rich milk. In some districts crosses have been intro- duced. The native sheep of Shetland possess many of the charac- teristics of goats. The ewes, as well as the rams, have generally short horns, and the wool is long and of very fine quality. White, black, speckled grey, and a peculiar russet brown called "moorat" are the prevailing colours, It is the common custom to tear out the wool from the roots by the hand, as this is said to ensure a finer second drop. A few black-faced and Cheviot sheep are kept in some places. The Shetland pigs, which are very inferior, are often fed on fish. Large numbers of geese and poultry are kept.

~~According to the Valuation Roll, 1883-84, Orkney was divided among 1149 proprietors, possessing 220,873 acres, with an annual value of about £82,416, or7s 5d per acre. According to the Parlia- mentary Return of 1873 546 of the proprietors, or about 42 per cent. at that date, possessed less than 1 acre, and the following 10 pos- sessed upwards of 5000 acres each :—J. G. M. Heddle, 50,410 ; earl of Zetland, 29,846; D. Balfour, 29,054; R. Baikie, 7846; H. C. Hebden, 7500; F. T. Burroughs, 6693; A.S. Graeme, 6444; trustees of iate J. Stuart of Brugh, 6243; T. Traill, 5780; trustees of the late G. Traill, 5031. Shetland in 1883-84 was divided among 575 proprietors, possessing 352,876 acres, with a total value of £44,108, or nearly 2s 6d per acre. In 1873 240 of the proprietors, or about 45 per cent., possessed less than 1 acre, 15 possessed upwards of 5000 acres, 13 above 10,000, and the following 5 above 20,000 acres each :—trustees of Busta estate, 29,820; curators of W. A. Bruce, 25,180; Lady Nicolson, 24,785; T. M. Cameron, 24,363; A. G. Grierson, 22,006.~~

~~Fauna.—The faunas of the two groups of islands are very similar. Remains of deer have been found in the Orkneys, although few, if any, remained in the time of the Norse jarls. For some centuries hares were extinct, but they were reintroduced about 1830. Rabbits are very numerous in some districts. The otter and walrus are met with. "Seals may occasionally be observed basking on the rocks, especially in the neighbourhood of the Ve Skerries off the western coast of the Mainland (Shetlands); and whales, both large and small, are frequently captured in the baysand sounds. The common porpoise is abundant, and the grampus also haunts the coasts. Nearly all the Falconide found anywhere else in Britain at one time frequented the Orkneys, and the hen-harrier, the merlin, the pere- grine, and the sparrow-hawk are still numerous. The short-eared owl is common, and various other species occasionally haunt the islands. The raven, the Royston crow, the rook, and the jackdaw are all met with. The red grouse, the golden plover, the dotterel plover, and the grey plover are abundant in some districts. The snipe, the woodcock, the common heron, the curlew, the little bittern, the white stork, the white spoonbill, the knot, the ruff, and the common coot frequent the more remote regions. There is an immense variety of water-fowl. Most of the singing birds found in Scotland are either natives or occasional visitants. The great skua gull still breeds in the island of Foula, where its eggs are carefully preserved.~~

Flora.—Although the Orkneys contain some plants which are rare in the British Isles, the flora of the group is much smaller in variety than that of the more mountainous Shetlands. For lists — the reader is referred to the paper on the flora of the Orkneys by W. Irvine Fortescue, and that on the flora of Shetland by Dr Peter White, both contained in Tudor's Orkneys and Shetland, 18838.

Manufactures.—According to Barry the woollen manufacture was at one time of some importance in the Orkneys, but by the end of last century had been superseded by that of linen, introduced about 1747. For the manufacture flax was at one time largely grown. After the introduction of machinery in the south it was no longer possible to continue the manufacture with profit, and, although straw-plaiting for a time took its place, it also succumbed to southern competition. Next to the linen trade the most important industry in the 18th century was the manufacture of kelp, introduced in 1722. With the abolition of the duty on Spanish barilla the manufacture for a time suffered severely, but of late years it has revived and now yields about £1500 annually. It is, however, chiefly on agriculture that the Orkneys depend, and their rapid pro- gress in this respect has been greatly facilitated by the very ample steam communication by three different routes with Scotland. Since 1871 telegraphic communication has extended to Unst, the most northerly of the Shetland group. Straw-plaiting was at one time practised in Shetland, but kelp-making is no longer practised. The staple manufacture is knitted goods. According to Edmonston,

1 Interesting information, not yet altogether out of date, on the agrieulture of the Orkneys will be found in a paper by R. O. Pringle, and on that of the Shetlauds in papers by H. Evershed and R. S. Skirving in the Trans, of the Mighland and Agricultural Society, 1874.

stockings to the value of about £17,000 were annually exported from Shetland about the beginning of the present century. The manufacture of gloves was introduced about 1800, of shawls about 1840, and of veils about 1850. Fair Island has long been famous for its coloured hosiery, into the art of knitting which the inhabit- ants are said to have been initiated by the

wrecked mariners of one of the ships of the Spanish Armada. The various dyes employed are extracted from the plants and lichens of the island.

Fisheries.—For some centuries the neighbourhood of the Orkneys and Shetlands was frequented by the fleet of Dutch vessels connected with the great herring fishery, but Barry states that fishing in his time was almost wholly neglected by the inhabitants of the Orkneys. The principal herring-stations are at Papa-Stronsay, Deersound, Holm, and South Ronaldshay. The greater part of the eatch of spring herrings is despatehed direct to Hamburg. The cod and ling fishing is prosecuted chiefly by the inhabitants of the north isles, both in open boats and in smacks, at the Faroes and near Iceland. Fishing is almost the sole occupation of the Shetland men, the women doing nearly all the farm-work and occupying also every spare moment in knitting both in the house and when carrying their burdens. The Shetland herring fishery has lately (1884) made rapid strides, but the inerease in the take of herrings is partly due to boats from the south. As the herring fishery has increased, the deep-sea ling and cod fishing, formerly the mainstay of the islands, has proportionately diminished. The whole of the fisheries were originally in the hands of the Dutchmen, but in 1712 their supre- maey was destroyed by the imposition of the duty on salt. Until within recent years the boats chiefly used were the old "'sixerns" built in the islands after the model of the Norwegian yawl, but whole or half-decked boats are now rapidly taking their place. The total number of persons now employed in the fisheries of the Orkneys and Shetlands together is about 11,000, Shetland employing over 7430. The number of smaeks belonging to the Orkneys is about 30, employing over 800 men ; Shetland possesses about double this number, and the Shetland smaeks are much more successful than those of Orkney, as more of them frequent the distant fishing- grounds. Shetland possesses, in addition to these, 285 decked first-class and 15 second-class fishing boats.

Administration and Population.—The islands of Orkney and of Shetland form one sheriffdom or stewartry, but the sheriff has a substitute in Orkney and another in Shetland. The county of Orkney and Shetland returns one member to parliament, and Kirkwall is ineluded in the Wick district of burghs, which returns one member.' Orkney includes 18 parishes and Shetland 12. From 24,445 in 1801 the population of Orkney had in 1831

increased to 28,847, and in 1861 to 32,395, but in 1881 was only 32,044, of whom 14,982 were males and 17,062 females. The population of Shetland in 1801 was 22,379, which had increased in 1831 to 29,392, and in 1861 to 81,670, but by 1881 had diminished to 29,705, of whom 12,656 were males and 17,049 females. In Orkney there were 118-88 females to every 100 males, but in Shet- land the proportion is 184-71, by far the largest in any county of Scotland. The number of inhabited islands in Orkney was 29, the Mainland numbering 17,165 persons, while 5 other islands had a population of over 1000 each, viz., South Ronaldshay 2557, Westray 2200, Sanday 2082, Hoy 1380, and Stronsay 1274. Shetland com- prised 80 inhabited islands, of which the Mainland contained 20,821, Yell 2529, and Unst 2178. In the Orkneys the only town is Kirk- wall (3947), a royal and parliamentary burgh, and the villages are Stromness (1705) and St Margaret's Hope (412). Stromness, which received an independent charter in 1817, has risen within the last century from a mere fishing hamlet to a port of some importance. It possesses a fine natural harbour, with a pier accessible to vessels of large tonnage at high tides, and a patent slip. It is the rendez- vous of vessels for the whale fishery at Davis Straits and Greenland. In the Shetlands Lerwick (4045) is the principal town, distant 272 miles from Edinburgh and 95 from Kirkwall. It dates from the beginning of the 17th century. Its harbour can afford safe accom- modation for an immense fleet. Scalloway (648), the only village of the Shetlands, and the original capital, is situated on a fine bay about 6 miles west of Lerwick. It possesses the ruins of an ancient castle, and is the seat of a herring fishery.

History and Antiquities.—Scarcely any information is obtainable from Roman writers regarding the Orkneys, and none regarding the Shetlands, but there is abundant evidence that both groups of islands were originally inhabited by a Pictish population. Of the two forms of Picts' houses—chambered mounds and underground habitations or weems—many are still so entire as to afford an accurate notion of the character of the buildings; and of the barrows or burial-mounds, which number over 2000, the majority belong to the Pictish period. The rings of Brogar and Stenness are the only stone circles in the Orkneys, and there are only five groups in Shetland, three being in Unst and two in Fetlar. "It has been disputed whether the fort- resses known as borgs or broehs are to be attributed to the

Picts or the Norsemen, but the balance of probability seems to indicate that they were erected before the Norse invasion, and in defence against the Northmen. Orkney possessed 70 and Shetland 75, the most

perfect of existing specimens being the tower of Mousa in Shetland. Although few implements, and those of the rudest kind, have been discovered in the Picts' houses, the brochs contain handmills used for grinding corn, stone whorls and bone combs employed in woollen manufactures, and examples of a rude kind of pottery. Various scattered notices occur of early expeditions to the Orkneys, the most important being those of the Dalriadic Scots about the beginning of the 6th century ; but the Picts soon regained their power, and the islands remained in their possession uutil the Norse invasions of the 9th century.

The earliest notice regarding the Christianization of the islands is that of a visit of Cormac and other companions of St Columba to the Orkneys about 565. The Irish monk Dicuil, writing about 825, states that a "certain honest monk had visited" certain islands "in the northern British seas," which are evidently iden- tical with the Shetland Islands. Other proofs of the early Christian-

'ization of the Orkneys and Shetlands are the dedications to St

Columba, St Bridget, St Ninian, and St Tredwell; the designation Papa applied to several of the islands, that being the Norse name for the Irish missionaries ; monumental stones like those on the

-mainland of Scotland bearing the Ogham inscription, four having

been found in Shetland and one in the broch of Burrian in North Ronaldshay in Orkney; the discovery of square-sided bells peculiar to the early ages of the church; and the occurrence of the crescent symbol on various sculptured slabs.

About the end of the 8th century the Orkneys and Shetlands became the rendezvous of the northern vikings, who sailed thence to ravage the coasts

of Norway and the western coasts and islands of Scotland. About 872 the Norse settlement in the islands became perpetual by the flight to it of the jarls, dispossessed of their authority by Harold Haarfager. As the jarls began a retaliatory warfare on the coasts of Norway, Harold fitted out a great expedi- tion against them, and placed the Orkneys and Shetlands under the government of Rognvald, earl of Mceri, who, with the per- mission of Harold, handed it over to his brother Sigurd, Gut- torm succeeded his father Sigurd, but, dying childless about a year afterwards, was succeeded by Hallad, son of Rognvald, who, being unable to cope with the vikings, returned to Norway, Einar, another son of Rognvald, taking his place. He thor- oughly subdued the vikings, and also taught the inhabitants to use peat for fucl, from which he received the name of Torf Einar. The two eldest sons of Einar were slain in battle in England, and the third, Thorfinn Hausakliuf, who succeeded in 950, having married Grelauga, daughter of Duncan, earl of Duncansby, became joint-earl of Orkney and Caithness. - Thorfinn had five sons, all of whom were shortly afterwards slain, except the youngest, Hlodver. He was succeeded, about 980, by Sigurd the Stout, who fought against the Scots, but ultimatcly came to an agreement with Malcolm, king of the Scots, whose daughter he obtained in marriage. Sigurd was slain in a great battle at Clontarf against Brian Boroime, king of Munster, in 1014, upon which King Malcolm of Scotland bestowed the earldom of Caithness on Thorfinn, a son of Sigurd by his daughter, the earldom of the islands being divided among Somerled, Brusi, and Einar, Sigurd's sons by a former marriage. After the death of Somerled and Einar the claim of Brusi to the earldom of the islands was disputed by Thorfinn. An arrangement was finally made that Thorfinn should receive two-thirds of the islands ; but on the death of Brusi he took possession of all the islands; he came to an agreement, however, with Rognvald Brusi- son which lasted for eight years, when Thorfinn, having defeated Rognvald in a sea-fight in the Pentland Firth, took possession of the carldom also. Finally he obtained recognition from the king of Norway, and, after making a pilgrimage to Rome, built Christ's Church in Birsay, where he established a bishop's see. Thorfinn was succeeded, about 1064, by his two sons Paul and Erlend, whom King Magnus (Barefoot) of Norway subsequently replaced by his son Sigurd. He, on his father's death, became king of Norway, and was succeeded in the earldom of the Orkneys by Hakon, Paul's son, and Magnus, Erlend's son, the latter of whom was murdered by the former in

1115. Hakon was succeeded by his two sons Harold and Paul, the former of whom shortly afterwards died, when Kali, a nobleman of Norway, receiving from King Sigurd the gift of half of the Orkneys, surprised Paul and induced him to consent to this arrangement, whereupon, in accordance with a vow he had made, he built a "stone minster" at Kirkwall. Paul was carried off by the vikings, and his place as joiut-earl was taken by Harold, the son of Maddad, earl of Athole. King Eystein super- seded Harold by Erlend, son of Harold the son of Hakon. Erlend fortified himself against Harold in the broch of Mousa in Shetland, until Harold came to an agreement with him. Afterwards Erlend was slain in a battle with Harold and Rognvald, who then reigned jointly till the death of Rognvald in 1158. On account of Harold's support of Sigurd, son of Magnus Erlingson, against King Sverri of Norway, he was deprived of the whole of Shetland. He was succeeded in 1206 by his sons John and David, the former of whom, on the death of his brother seven years afterwards, became sole ruler. He was slain in an inn in Thurso in 1231, and, as the line of

---

OR L—

Norse earls became with him extinct, the earldom of Caithness was granted to Magnus, second son of Gilbride, earl of Angus, who was apparently confirmed in the earldom by the king of Norway. About 1321 the earldom passed from the Augus to the Strathearn line, and about 1379 to Henry St Clair, who erected the castle of Kirkwall. In 1468 the Orkneys and Shetlands were pledged by Christian I. of Denmark for the payment of the dowry of his daughter Margaret, betrothed to James III. of Scotland, and, as the money was never paid, their connexion with the crown of Scotland became perpetual. In 1471 King James III. bestowed the castle and lands of Ravenscraig in Fife on William, earl of Orkney, in exchange for all his rights to the earldom of Orkney, and an Act of Parliament was passed 20th February of the same year annexing the earldom of Orkney and Shetland to the Scottish crown.

In 1540 Kirkwall was visited by James V. In 1564 Lord Robert Stewart, natural son of James V., was made sheriff of the Orkneys and Shetlands, and received possession of the estates of the odallers ; in 1581 he was

created earl of Orkney by James VI., the charter being ratified in 1591 to his son Patrick. In 1615 the earldom was again annexed to the crown. The islands were made the rendez vous of the disastrous expedition of Montrose in 1650.- During the Protectorate the Orkneys were visited by a detachment of Crom- well's troops, who initiated the inhabitants into various industrial arts and new methods of agriculture. In 1707 the islands were

granted to James, twelfth earl, in mortgage, redeemable by thie crown on payment of £30,000, and subject to an annual feu-duty of £500; but in 1766 his estates were sold to Sir Lawrence Dundas of the family of the earls of Zetland.

Among the relics of the Norse settlement in the islands the most remarkable are the inscriptions on the great sepulchral cairn of Maeshow, the Orkahaug of the saga, which was, however, itself of Pictish origin. The topography, both of Orkney and of Shetland, is altogether Norse, and, although the influx of Scottish settlers . gradually extinguished the old Norse tongue, many of the Norse names still linger, and even a form of the old odal succession and mode of land tenure still survives. Norse was generally spoken in the islands in the 16th century; and, according to Barry, in Orkney as late as the end of the 17th century it continued to be spoken in four parishes in the Mainland by the people in their own houses ; but within his recollection it was almost entirely extinct, except in one parish in the heartof the Mainlaud. In Shetland it continued to be spoken much longer, and Low, during his tour in 1774, found the Norse language in Foula, " but much worn out." He states that it was the language of the last age, and he gives several specimens, including the Lord's Prayer and an old ballad (Low's Tour, pp. 105-112). The Shetlanders are still of almost unmixed Norse lineage, and words and phrases of Norse origin still tinge their dialect. Low describes a monument with Runic inscrip- tions in the churchyard of Crosskirk, Northmavine ; and a Runic fragment found at Mail's Voe, Cunningsburgh, Shetland, is now in the museum of the (Scottish) Society of Antiquaries. Broken swords and fragments of shield-bosses have been dug up in many places, and also many of the peculiar brooches buried as relics in the graves of the Norse women during tle Pagan period. At Birsay are remains of an old palace of the jarls.

~~In early times both the archbishop of Hamburg and the arch- bishop of York disputed with the Norwegians ecclesiastical jurisdic- tion over the Orkneys and the right of consecrating bishops ; but ultimately the Norwegian bishops, the first of whom was William the Old, consecrated in 1102, continued the canonical succession. The see remained vacant from 1580 to 1606, and from 1638 till the Restoration ; and, after the accession of William III., episcopacy was in 1697 finally abolished, although many of the clergy refused to conform. Besides the cathedral-church of KirKWALL (q.v.), the most interesting of the old churches are Egilshay church, built about the beginning of the 12th century, and possessing a round tower ; the ruins of the circular church at Orphir; the remains of Christ Church, Birsay, built by Earl Thorfinn in the 11th century ; the chapel of Weir, supposed to have been built in the 12th century ; St Peter's Church, Birsay; and the remains of a chapel on the brough of Deernéss, In Shetland there were at one time three towered churches—St Lawrence in Burra, St Magnus at Tingwall, and Ireland Head ; but of these there are now no remains, There are ruins of an old cruciform church at Culbinsbrough, of an old Norse church dedicated to St Olaf at Papil, and of various chapels~~

~~in several of the islands.~~

~~The earliest written record on the Orkneys and Shetlands is The Orkneyinga Saga, an edition of which, with notes by Joseph Anderson, was published in 1873. Next to the saga in antiquity is Jo Ben's Descriptio Insularum Orchadi- arwm, 1529. Several works on both groups were written during last century, or about the beginning of the present, including Waliace, Account of the Islands of Orkney, 1700 ; Brand, Brief Description of Orkney, Zetland, &c., 1701; Gifford, Description of the Zetland Islands in 1733, published in 1879; Low, Tour through the Islands of Orkney and Shetland in 1774, published in 1879; Barry, History of the Orkney Islands, 1805; Edmonston, Zetland Islands, 1809; and Shirreff, General View of the Agriculture of the Orkney and Shetland Islands, 1814. On the natural history there have been published—Low, Fauna Orcadensis, 1813 ; Baikie and Heddle, Historia Naturalis Orcadensis, part i., 1848; and Crichton, A Naturalist's Ramble to the Orcades, 1866. See also Gorrie, Summers and Winters in the Orkneys, 1868; Hibbert, Description of the Shetland Isles, 1862 ;~~

ORL 849

Reid, Art Rambles in Shetland, 1869; Cowie, Shetland, 1874-80; Tudor, Orkneys and Shetland ; their Past and Present State, 1883; and Rampini, Shetland and the Shetlanders, 1884. — 4b

. F. H.

ORLEANS, a city of France, chief town of he fepant: ment of Loiret, lies on the right bank of the Loire, 75 miles south-south-west of Paris. At Les Aubrais, a mile to the north, is one of the chief railway junctions in the country. Besides the Paris and Orleans Railway, which there divides into two main lines—a western to Nantes and Bordeaux wa Tours, and a southern to Bourges and Toulouse via Vierzon—branches leave Les :Aubrais east- wards for Pithiviers, Chalons-sur-Marne, and Gien, north-west for Chateaudun and Rouen. The whole town of Orleans is clustered together on the right bank of the river and surrounded by fine boulevards, beyond which it sends out suburbs along the various roads. With the suburb of St Marceau on the left bank it is connected by a hand- some stone bridge (1092 feet long and 51 feet wide) of nine arches, erected in the 18th century. Farther up is the railway bridge. The river is canalized on the right, and serves as @ continuation of the Orleans Canal, which unites the Loire with the Seine by the canal of the Loing. Owing to its position on the northmost point of the Loire Orleans has long been the centre of communica- tion between the Loire basin and Paris. Wines, grain, wool, and trees for planting are the main products of the surrounding. districts and the commercial staples of the city, which, while devoted rather to trade than to manu- factures, has establishments for the making of vinegar, blankets, hosiery, worsted, the so-called Rheims biscuits, confectionery, preserved foods, pins, pottery, boilers, paper, cardboard, soap, and dressed skins. The chief interest of the place, however, lies in its public buildings and the historical events of which it has been the scene. Proceed- ing from the railway station to the bridge over the Loire, the visitor crosses Orleans from north to south and passes through the Place du Martroi, the heart of the city. In the middle of the square stands an equestrian statue of Joan of Arc, 30 feet high, in bronze, resting on a granite pedestal surrounded by bas-reliefs representing the leading episodes in the life of the heroine. In 1855 it

took the place of an older statue executed in the beginning of the century, which was then transferred to the left bank of the Loire at the end of the bridge, a few paces from the spot where a simple cross marks the site of the ort des Tournelles captured by Joan of Arc on 7th May 1429. From the Place du Martroi, the Rue Jeanne d'Arc leads to the cathedral of Ste Croix. This church, commenced in 1287, was burned by the Huguenots in 1567 before its comple- tion. Henry IV., in 1601, laid the first stone of the new structure, the building of which has continued until now. It is a Gothic cathedral on a large scale, consisting of a vestibule, a nave with double aisles, a corresponding choir, a transept, and an apse. Its length is 482 feet, its greatest width 206, and the height of the central vaults 108 feet. The west front has two flat-topped towers each of three stories, of which the first is square, the second octagonal, and the third cylindrical, The whole front is Gothic, but was designed and constructed in the 18th century and exhibits all the defects of the period. A central spire 328 feet high, on the other hand, raised about twenty-five years ago, recalls the pure ogival style of the 13th century. In the interior the choir chapels and the apse, dating from the original erection of the building, are worthy of note. In the episcopal palace and the great seminary are several remarkable pictures and pieces of wood-carving ; and the latter building has a crypt which some antiquaries hold to belong to the 6th century. The church of St Aignan, said to have been founded by the son of Constantine, and often rebuilt, contains in a gilded and carved wooden shrine the remains of its patron saint, who occupied the

see of Orleans at the time of Attila's invasion. The crypt dates from the reign of Robert the Pious (the be- ginning of the 11th century). The once beautiful sculp- ture of the exterior has been altogether ruined; the interior has been restored, but not in keeping with the original style. A third church, St Euverte, consecrated to one of the oldest bishops of Orleans (0d. 391), is an carly Gothic building dating from the 12th century. To the west of Rue Royale stand the church of St Paul, whose facade and isolated tower both bear fine features of Renaissance work, and Notre Dame de Recouvrance, re- built between 1517 and 1519 in the Renaissance style and dedicated to

the memory of the deliverance of the city. The Hétel de Ville, built in 1530, was formerly the resi- dence of the governors of Orleans, and was occupied by the kings and queens of France from Francis IJ. to Henry IV. The front of the building, with its different coloured bricks, its balconies supported by caryatides attributed to Jean Gonjon, its gable-ends, and its windows, recalls the Flemish style. There are several niches with statues. Beneath, between the double flight of steps leading up to the entrance, stands a

bronze reproduction of the statue of Joan of Arc, a masterpiece of the princess Mary of Orleans, which is preserved in the Versailles museum. The richly-decorated apart- ments of the first story contain paintings, inter- esting chimneys, and a bronze statuette (also by | the princess Mary) re- presenting Joan of Arc mounted onacaparisoned horse and clothed in the F garb of the knights of F

ORLEANS

are of historical interest. The "White Tower" is the last representative of the towers rendered famous by that siege. Near the Quai du Chatelet a stretch of wall, dat- ing at least from the 9th century, was discovered some years ago; it is supposed to be a portion of the chdtelet or tête du pont of the Roman period. A statue has been erected in front of the town-house to the jurisconsult Pothier, one of the most illustrious of the natives of Orleans. The anniversary of Joan of Arc is celebrated every year with great pomp. After the English had raised the siege the popular enthusiasm improvised a pro- cession, which marched with singing of hymns to the cathedral of St Paul; and the ceremony is still repeated on the first days of May by the clergy and the civil and military functionaries. The population of Orleans is 57,264.

Whether Genabum is to be identified with Orleans or with Gien is matter of dispute; but Aurelianum appears as a flourishing town in the 5th century. St Aignan (as already mentioned) was bishop when, in 451, it was vainly besieged by Attila. Clovis got possession of the city in

498, and in 511 held there the first council assembled in

PLrack "NS of avatae 3 3 by \ SS II ;

the 15th century. The

great hall in which it is ==

placed also possesses a copy of Ingres's picture,

"Joan of Arc at the Consecration of Charles VILI.," anda plaster model of the Bigot tower at Rouen,where the heroine was imprisoned; the chimney is decorated with three bas-reliefs of Domremy, Orleans, and Rheims, all asso- ciated with her life. The historical museum at Orleans is. one of the most interesting of provincial collections ; a special section consists of all the objects—tapestries, banners,, pictures, statuettes—relating to Joan, as well as of arms or bullets found on the battle-field of Patay ; and the numismatic, medizval, and Renaissance departments, and the collection of ancient vases, are all of great value. The city also possesses a separate picture gallery, a sculp- ture gallery, a natural history museum, and four learned societies. The public library (50,000 volumes) comprises among its manuscripts a number dating from the 7th cen- tury, and obtained in most cases from St Benoft on the Loire. At Orleans the general hospital has incorporated the almshouse for the aged, the orphan asylum, the luna- tic asylum, the Hétel Dieu, the maternity hospital, and the preparatory school of medicine and pharmacy. It is one of the finest institutions in France. In the corn-ex- change is embodied a vast cloister formed by 16th-century arcades, once belonging to the old cemetery. Among the private houses those of Agnes Sorel and Francis L., and that occupied by Joan of Arc during the siege of 1429,

Plan of Orleans. France. Though the dignity which it then obtained, of being the capital of a separate kingdom, was lost by its union with that of Paris in 613, Orleans remained during all the medieval period one of the first cities of the French monarchy ; several of the kings dwelt within its walls, or were consecrated in its cathedral; it had a royal mint, was the seat of councils, and obtained for its schools the name of university (1305), and for its soldiery an equal standing with those of Paris. It became the apanage of one of the first princes of the blood under Philip of Valois, who made it a duchy for his second son, and under Charles VL, who bestowed

the duchy on his brother Louis. After the assassination of this last prince by Jean sans Peur, duke of Burgundy (1407), the people of Orleans sided resolutely with the Armagnacs, and in this way brought upon themselves the attacks of the Burgundians and the English. Joan of Arc, having entered the beleaguered city on 29th April 1429, effected the raising of the siege by 7th May by means of an attack on the Fort des Tour- nelles, in the course of which she was wounded. After the Amboise conspiracy (1560) the States-General were con- voked at Orleans, where Francis II. died. In 1562 it became the headquarters of Condé, the Protestant com-

mander-in-chief, and the duke of Guise was assassinated on his way to besiege it. Huguenot and Leaguer were alternately in possession till Henry IV. came in person to take it in 1594. The duchy of Orleans, united to the crown by Louis XII, was again detached in favour of Gaston, brother of Louis XIII., and afterwards for Philip, brother of Louis XIV. and founder of the present house of Orleans. Since 1789 the title "duke of Orleans" has been purely honorary. During the Revolution the city suffered from the sanguinary excesses of Barére and Collot d'Herbois. It was occupied by the Prussians in 1815 and in 1870, As the centre of the preparations made by the Government of the National Defence for raising the siege of Paris, it bore the brunt of numerous battles fought in its vicinity, and of the hostile occupation to which they led.

ORLEANS, Cartes, Duke or (1391-1465), com- monly called Charles d'Orléans, was the eldest son of Louis, duke of Orleans (brother of Charles VI. of France), and of Valentina Visconti, daughter of Galeaso of Milan. He was born on 26th May 1391. Although many minor details are preserved of his youth, nothing except his reception in 1403, from his uncle the king, of a pension of 12,000 livres d'or is worth noticing, until his marriage three years later (29th June 1406) with Isabella, his cousin, widow of Richard IJ. of England. The bride was two years older than her husband, and is thought to have married him unwillingly, but she brought him a great dowry,—it is said, 500,000 francs. She died three years later, leaving Charles a widower and father of a . daughter at the age of eighteen. He was already duke of Orleans, for Louis had been assassinated by the Bur- gundians two years

~~before (1407). He soon saw himself the most important person in France, except the dukes of Burgundy and Brittany, the king being a cipher. This position his natural temperament by no means qualified him to fill. His mother was eager for vengeance for her husband, and for years Charles did his best to carry out her wishes by filling France with intestine war. Of this, however, he was only nominally one of the leaders, the real guidance of his party resting with the great count of Armagnac, whose daughter, Bonne, he married, or at least formally espoused, in 1410. Five years of confused nego- tiations, plots, and fightings passed before the English invasion and the battle of Agincourt, where Charles was joint commander-in-chief. According to one account he was dangerously wounded and narrowly escaped with his life. He was certainly taken prisoner and carried to England, which country was his residence thenceforward for a full quarter of a century. Windsor, Pontefract, Ampthill, Wingfield (Suffolk), and the Tower are named among other places as the scenes of his captivity, which, however, was anything but a rigorous one. He was main- tained in the state due not merely to one of the greatest~~

~~nobles of France but to one who ranked high in the order ‘~~

~~of succession to the crown, He hunted and hawked and enjoyed society amply, though the very dignities which secured him these privileges made his ransom high, and his release difficult to arrange. Above all, he had leisure to devote himself to literary work. But for this he would hardly be remembered as anything better than a more than usually amiable and less than usually able example of the higher feudal nobility, whose political position rather than their personal faults made government difficult or impossible in the later Middle Ages.~~

~~The work which secures a measure of immortality to Charles d’Orléans consists wholly of short poems in the peculiar artificial metres which had become fashionable in France about half a century or more before his birth, and which continued to be fashionable till nearly a century~~

~~after his death. Besides these a certain number of English poems have been attributed to him. It is certain that he studied the language of lis captors,~~

but it is more than doubtful whether the extant English poems which bear his name are genuine, and in any case they are of no value. The ingenuity of a single English critic has striven to attribute to him a curious book in prose, called Le Débat des Hérauts de France et Angleterre, but M. Paul Meyer, in his edition of the book in question, has completely disposed of this theory. For all practical purposes, therefore, Charles's work consists of some hundreds of short poems, a few in various metres, but the majority either ballades or rondels. The chronology of these poems is not always clear, still less the identity of the persons to whom they are addressed, and it is certain that some, per- haps the greater part of them, belong to the later years of the poet's life. But many are expressly stated in the manuscripts to have been "composed in prison," others are obviously so composed, and, on the whole, there is in them a remarkable unity of literary flavour. Charles Orléans is not distinguished by any extraordinary strength of passion or originality of character; but he is only the more valuable as the last and not the least accomplished representative of the poetry of the middle of the Middle Ages, in which the form was almost every- thing, and the personality of the poet, save in rare instances, nothing. Yet Charles d'Orléans is not entirely without differentia. If he were he would hardly hold the place which at present he justly occupies. He is a capital example of the cultivated and refined—it may almost be called the lettered—chivalry of the last chivalrous age, expert to the utmost degree in carrying out the traditional details of a graceful convention in love and literature. But he is more than this; in a certain easy grace and truth of expression, as well as in a peculiar mixture of melancholy, which is not incompatible with the enjoyment of the pleasures, even the trifling pleasures, of life, with listlessness that is fully able to occupy itself about those trifles, he stands quite alone. He has the urbanity of the 18th century without its vicious and prosaic frivolity, the poetry of the Middle Ages without their tendency to tediousness. His best-known rondels—those on Spring, on the Harbingers of Summer, and others—rank second to nothing of their kind.

Poetry, however, could hardly be an entire consolation, and it is not surprising to find that Charles, during all the long years of his captivity,

was perpetually scheming for liberty. But the English Government had too many reasons for keeping him, and it was not till his hereditary foe Philip the Good of Burgundy interested himself in him that the Government of Henry VI., which had by that time lost most of its hold on France, released him in return for an immediate payment of 80,000 saluts @or, and an engagement on his part to pay 140,000 crowns at a future time. The agreement was concluded on 2d July 1440. He was actually released on 3d November following, and almost immediately cemented his friend- ship with Duke Philip by marrying his niece, Mary of Cleves, who brought him a considerable dowry to assist the payment of his ransom. He had, however, some diffi- culty in making up the balance, as well as the large sum required for his brother, Jean d'Angouléme, who also was an English prisoner. The last twenty-five years of his life (for, curiously enough, it divides itself into three almost exactly equal periods, each of that length) were spent partly in negotiating, with a little fighting intermixed, for the purpose of gaining the Italian county of Asti, on which he had claims through his mother, partly in travelling about, but chiefly at his principal seat of Blois. Here he kept a miniature court nicl, from the literary point of view at

least, was not devoid of brilliancy. At this most of the best-known French men-of-letters at the time—Villon, Olivier de la Marche, Chastelain, Meschinot, and others—were residents or visitors or correspondents. His son, afterwards Louis XII., was not born till 1462, three years before Charles's own death. He had become, notwith- standing his high position, something of a nullity in politics, and tradition ascribes his death to vexation at the harshness with which Louis XI. rejected his attempt to mediate on behalf of the duke of Brittany. At any rate he died, on 4th January 1465, at Amboise. Many of his later poems are small occasional pieces addressed to his courtiers and companions, and in not a few cases answers to them by those to whom they were addressed exist. The best edition of Charles d'Orléans's poems, with a brief but sufficient account of his life, is that of C. d'Héricault in the Nouvelle Collection Jannet, Paris, 1874. (G. 8a.) ORLEANS, Duxszs or. The title duke of Orleans was borne by three distinct dynasties of French princes of the blood. The first duke of Orleans was Lours (1371-1407), second son of King Charles V., who was

~~born in 1371, and received the title from his brother Charles VI. in 1392. Both he and his son and heir played very important parts in the history of the Hundred Years' War with England (see France) in opposition to the duke of Burgundy. He had been appointed regent of France during the madness of his brother, Charles VI., and had, by his immorality and his intimacy with the queen, raised a great scandal throughout the kingdom, The duke of Burgundy made himself the mouthpiece of the general discontent, and on 23d November 1407 had the regent murdered in the streets of Paris in revenge for his own father's death. Louis's son CHARLES is the subject of the preceding article. With his son's accession to the throne as Louis XII. the duke- dom of Orleans merged in the crown. It was revived in 1626, when Louis XIII. created his brother, JEAN Bap- TISTE Gaston (1608-1660), the third son of Henry IV., duke of Orleans and Chartres and count of Blois. Gaston of Orleans's fruitless intrigues fill the history of France from the time of Richelieu and Mary de' Medici to that of Mazarin and Anne of Austria. Four times he was banished from France, and more than four times did he sacrifice his associates, who had plotted the overthrow of Richelieu. To him Montmorency, Cing-Mars, and De Thou owed their deaths, and he was only protected from sharing their fate by the fact of his royal birth. On the death of Louis XIII. he was appointed lieutenant-general of the kingdom for the minority of Louis XIV. But Mazarin never meant him to exercise any real power, and when he became convinced that his power was subordi- nate to the cardinal's he entered the ranks of the Fronde (see Mazarin), in which he played a conspicuous part, but always as the tool or the mouthpiece of others. Far more manly and determined was his daughter, best known as La Grande Mademoiselle, who with her own hands directed the guns of the Bastille upon Turenne's soldiers on the day of the battle of St Antoine. He was after- wards exiled to his castle of Blois, where he died without male issue in 1660. The title was at once revived by Louis XIV., who created his brother Puiurprr (1640- 1701) duke of Orleans and of Chartres, and married him to Henrietta, the sister of Charles II. of England. The court was soon entertained by the details of the quarrels between the duke and duchess, and by the former's jealousy even of his brother the king, and, when Henrietta, after successfully detaching Charles from the Triple Alliance and negotiating the treaty of Dover, died suddenly in 1670, the duke was universally accused of poisoning her. In the~~

following year he married Princess Charlotte Elizabeth of Bavaria. In the campaign of 1677 he so

ORLEANS

distinguished himself that Louis XIV. became afraid of his popularity and refused to allow him to go again to the frontier.

He was obliged to waste his time at Paris like other noblemen, in attendance on the court, until his death in 1701. He left one son and three daughters: the daughters married Charles II. of Spain, Victor Amadeus IL. of Savoy, and Prince Charles of Lorraine ; the son was PuiiprE (1674-1723), the regent, who has been spoken of in FRANCE, vol. ix. p. 584. Before succeeding to the dukedom of Orleans in 1701 he had given no indication of political ambition or capacity, yet Louis XIV. distrusted him, and thought to mar his chance of allying himself with any royal or noble family, and to unite his interest with that of his own natural children, by marrying him to his illegitimate daughter by Madame de Montespan, Made-moiselle de Blois. This distrust was increased as the king's legitimate descendants died off, and in his will he left his natural son, the duke of Maine, guardian of the person of his great-grandson and heir, and greatly circumscribed the authority of Orleans as regent. On the death of the grand monarque in 1715 Philippe, guided by the advice of the duke of Saint Simon, induced the parliament of Paris to upset the will and make him regent of the realm with the fullest authority. By the same nobleman's advice he procured the degradation of the natural children of the late king from the precedence above the peers of France which had been conferred on them. Saint Simon hoped he would go yet further, and that he would entrust the nobility with their old political authority ; but the regent had no mind to restore the privileges which Richelieu had had so much difficulty in combating, and which the policy of Louis XIV. had only, after long years, been able to destroy. He determined to hand down to Louis XV. the absolute power of his great-grandfather. Another main object he sought was to keep France at peace, which alone could restore her to her former prosperity. With this in- tention he joined the Quadruple Alliance. He remained in close union with Stanhope, the prime minister of England, and the emperor, whilst Dubois worked out his intentions. This alliance enabled the kingdoms

of England and France to overthrow Alberoni and prevent his disturbing the peace of Europe. In compliance with the wishes of Lord Stair, the able English ambassador, Orleans expelled the Pre- tender from France, and was helped to overthrow the con- spiracy of Cellamare—the French part of Alberoni's scheme by which the bastards of Louis XIV. were to overthrow the regent. Under this peaceful policy France rapidly began to recover prosperity, and Philippe hoped to restore the condition of her finances by listening to the advice of a Scotch adventurer, and buying out the farmers-general of the-taxes, who were the real causes of the financial dis- tress (see Law, Jouy, vol. xiv. p. 367). It should also be noted that the regent showed both courage and deter- mination in putting a stop to the insane speculations of the Rue Quincampoix. He cannot be called a great states-man ; he indeed formed great plans, but left all details of government to Dubois. Yet his real political ability must not be overlooked, as is often done, because the period of the regency is only regarded, as a rule, as a period of wild debauchery, in which the regent ruled a court of bacchanals. Philippe never allowed his pleasures to interfere with his politics. His fidelity to the youthful monarch is no less remarkable in a man of his seemingly abandoned character, hence it is no wonder that when Louis XV. attained his majority he maintained the duke of Orleans and with him Dubois in power. Buta career of debauchery had weakened his physical powers, and, in the very year in which his ward had thus shown his gratitude to him (1728), he died. His character is best painted in an apologue of his mother's. 'The fairies were all invited to my bedside, and,

each giving my son one talent, he had them all. Unhappily an old fairy had been forgotten, who, on arriving after the others, exclaimed, ' He will have all the talents, excepting that of making good use of them.' "

The son of the regent, Louis (1703-1752), who succeeded him as duke of Orleans, played no part in politics, though his name fre- quently occurs in the social history of the time, and fills a great place in contemporary memoirs. Louis's son, Louis PHILIPPE (1725-1785), was equally averse to politics, though he served as a soldier at the battle of Dettingen; his great delight was the theatre, and his place is rather in the history of the Paris

green- rooms than in the history of France. But to Louis PHILIPPE JOSEPH (1747-1793), son of the preceding, a more adventurous life was allotted, and his part in the history of the French Revolution is one of the most difficult problems to solve of that exciting period. He was born at St Cloud in 1747, and bore the title of duke of Montpensier until his grandfather's death in 1752. He then became duke of Chartres, and in 1769 married Louise Marie Adelaide de Bourbon Penthiévre, ouly daughter and heiress of the duke of Penthiévre, grand admiral of France, and the richest heiress of the time. Her wealth made it certain that he would be the richest man in France, and he determined to play a part equal to that of his great-grandfather, the regent, whom he resembled in character and debauchery. As duke of Chartres he opposed the plans of Maupeou in 1771, and was promptly exiled to his country estate of Villers-Cotterets (Aisne). When Louis XVI. came to the throne in 1774 Chartres still found himself looked on coldly at court; Marie Antoinette hated him, and envied him for his wealth, wit, and freedom from etiquette, and he was not slow to return her hatred with scorn. In 1778 he served in the squadron of D'Orvilliers, and was present in the naval battle of Ushant. He hoped to see further service, but the queen was opposed to this, and he was removed from the navy, and given the honorary post of colonel general of hussars. He then abandoned himself to pleasure; he often visited London, and became an intimate friend of the prince of Wales (afterwards George IV.); he brought to Paris the "anglo- mania," as it was called, and made jockeys as fashionable as they were in England. He also made himself very popular in Paris by his large gifts to the poor in time of famine, and by throwing open the gardens of the Palais Royal to the people. Before the meeting of the notables in 1787 he had succeeded his father as duke of Orleans, and showed his liberal ideas, which were largely learnt in England, so boldly that he was believed to be aiming at becoming constitutional king of France. In November he again showed his liberalism in the lit de justice, which Brienne had made the king hold, and was again exiled to Villers-Cotterets. The approaching convocation of the States-General made his friends very active on his behalf; he circulated in every bailliage the pamphlets which Sieyés had drawn up at his request, and was elected in three—by the noblesse of Paris, Villers-Cotterets, and Crépy-en-Valois. In the estate of the nobility he headed the liberal minority under the guidance of Adrien Duport, and led the minority of forty-seven noblemen who seceded from their own estate

(June 1789) and joined the Tiers Etat. The part he played during the summer of 1789 is one of the most debated points in the history of the Revolution. The court accused him of being at the bottom of every popular movement, and saw the "gold of Orleans" as the cause of the Re- veillon riot and the taking of the Bastille, as the republicans later saw the "gold of Pitt" in every germ of opposition to themselves. There can be no doubt that he hated the queen, and bitterly resented his long court disgrace, and also that he sincerely wished for a thorough reform of the government and the establishment of some such constitution as that of England; and no doubt such friends as Adrien Duport and Choderlos de Laclos, for their own reasons, wished to see him king of France. The best testimony for the behaviour of Orleans during this summer is the testimony of an English lady, Mrs Grace Dalrymple Elliott, who shared his heart with Comtesse de Buffon, and from which it is absolutely certain that at the time of the riot of 12th July he was on a fishing excur- sion, and was rudely treated by the king on the next day when going to offer him his services. He indeed became so disgusted with the false position of a pretender to the crown, into which he was being forced, that he wished to go to America, but, as Comtesse de Buffon would not go with him, he decided to remain in Paris. He was again accused, unjustly, of having caused the march of the women to Versailles on 5th October. La Fayette, jealous of his popularity, persuaded the King to send the duke to England on a mission, and thus get him out of France, and he accordingly re- mained in England from October 1789 to July 1790. On 7th July he took his seat in the Assembly, and on 2d October both he and Mirabeau were declared by the Assembly entirely free of any com- plicity in the events of October. He now tried to keep himself as much out of the political world as possible, but in vain, for the court would suspect him, and his friends would talk about his being king. The best proof of his not being ambitious of such a doubtful piece of preferment is that he made no attempt to get himself made king,

regent, or lieutenant-general of the kingdom at the time of the flight to Varennes in June 1791. He, on the contrary, again tried to make his peace with the court in January 1792, but he was so insulted that he was not encouraged to sacrifice himself for the sake of the king and queen, who

persisted in remembering all old enmities in their time of trouble. In the summer of 1792 he was present for . a short time with the arniy of the north, with his two sons, the duke of Chartres and the duke of Montpensier, but had returned to Paris before 10th August. After that day he underwent great personal risk in saving fugitives ; in particular, he saved the life of the count of Champcenetz, the governor of the Tuileries, who was his personal enemy, at the request of Mrs Elliott. It was impossible for him to recede, and, after accepting the title of Citoyen Egalité, conferred on him by the commune of Paris, he was elected twentieth and last deputy for Paris to the Convention. In that body he sat as quietly as he had done in the National Assembly, but on the occasion of the king's trial he had to speak, and then only to give his vote for the death of Louis. HIs compliance did not save him from suspicion, which was especially aroused by the friendship of his eldest son, the duke of Chartres, with Dumouriez, and when the news of the desertion of Chartres with Dumouriez became known at Paris all the Bourbons left in France, including Egalité, were ordered to be arrested on 5th.April. In prison he remained till the month of October, when the Reign of Terror began. HIe was naturally the very sort of victim wanted, and he was decreed 'of accusation" on 3d October. HIe was tried on 6th November and was guillotinced on the same day, with a smile upon his lips and without any appearance of fear. No man ever was more blamed than Orleans ee the Revolution, but the faults of ambition and intrigue were his friends', not his; it was his friends who wished him to be on the throne. Personally he possessed the charming manners of a polished grand seigneur : debauched and cynical but never rude or cruel, full of gentle consideration for all about him but selfish in his pursuit of pleasure, he has had to bear a heavy load of blame, but it is ridiculous to describe the idle and courteous voluptuary as being a.dark and designing scoundrel, capable of murder if it would serve his ambition. The execution of Philippe Kgalité made the friend of Dumouriez, who was living in exile, duke of Orleans. Lovis PHiniprE (1773-1850) was known as duke of Orleans throughout his long emigration and under the Restora- tion, and as duke of Orleans he was called upon to become king of the French in 1830. HIs eldest son, FerDINAND Louis PHILIPPE CHARLES HeEnri (1810-1842), at once took the title of duke of Orleans. HIe was a brave soldier, and served in Algeria from 1834 to 1836. In 1837 he married Princess HIelena of Mecklenburg, and became the father of the count of Paris, who is therefore de jure duke of Orleans. In 1839 he

again went to Algeria, but the fatigues of the campaign were too much for him, and he died at Naples in 1842. With him died the last duke of Orleans, for his son will not take the title; but the whole party which supports him is rightly known as the Orleanist party.

The chief authorities on the three most important dukes of Orleans are :— for Gaston of Orleans, Avenel's Lettres de Richelieu, &c. ; Chéruel, Correspondance de Mazarin; Id., Histoire de France pendant la minorité de Louis XIV.; Id., Histoire de France pendant le ministére de Mazarin ; for the regent Orleans, the portions of Michelet's and Martin's Histories of France; and for Philippe

Egalité, Baschet's Histoire de Philippe Egalité, and the Journal of Mrs Grace Dalrymple Elliott (1859). (H. M. 8.)

ORME, Rosert (1728-1801), author of a History of British India, was the son of John Orme, surgeon in Bom- — bay, and was born at Anjengo, Travancore, in June 1728. He was sent to Harrow school in 1736, and in 1742 toa school near London to obtain an education preparing him for commercial pursuits. In 1744 he became a clerk in the East India Company's service in Calcutta. In 1752 he went to Madras, and in the following year he returned home with Lord Clive, with whom he lived on terms of close intimacy. His knowledge of Indian affairs gave him considerable influence with the company. Returning to Madras in 1755, he was appointed a member of the council, and in this position took an active part in directing the military operations in the Carnatic in 1755-59. By the court of directors he was appointed to succeed Lord Pigot in the government of Madras, and in 1757-59 he was commissary-general. In the latter year bad health com- pelled him to quit India, and he took up his residence in London, where he occupied himself in writing a History of the Military Transactions of the British Nation in Indo- stan from 1745, the first volume appearing in 1763, the second in 1775, and the third in 1778. In acknowledgment of his services he was appointed historiographer to the East India Company with a salary of £400 a year. In

1770 he was chosen a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries. He died at Ealing 13th January 1801.

The Aistory is characterized by great clearness and accuracy ; but, while the minute enumeration of unimportant details lends vivid- ness to certain portions of his narrative, it produces on the whole a feeling of tediousness, and tends to dull the leading episodes. In 1782 Orme also published Historical Fragments of the Mogul Empire from the year 1659, and in 1805 this was reprinted and published along with two other treatises, The Origin of the English Establishment and A General Idea of the Government and People of Hindostan, and preceded by a short Life of the author. He be- queathed several hundred volumes of manuscript collections, and a number of scarce tracts on Oriental subjects, to the library of the East India Company.

ORMONDE, James BUTLER, TWELFTH EARL AND FIRST DuxE oF (1610-1688), was born at London on or about 19th October 1610. He was grandson of Walter, earl of Ormonde, and eldest son of Thomas, Viscount Thurles, and Elizabeth Poyntz.1 His father having been drowned (15th December 1619) during the lifetime of Earl Walter, he became heir to the title and estates. By some legal artifice the boy was made a royal ward, and James I. at once removed him from his Catholic tutor and placed him in the household of Abbot, archbishop of Canterbury, with whom he stayed until 1626, after which he resided with his grandfather. In 1629, by his marriage with his cousin Elizabeth, the daughter of the earl of Desmond, he put an end to the long-standing quarrel between the families. In 1630 he accompanied the old earl to Carrick, and in 1632 succeeded him in the earldom.

He was already noted, as had been many of his race, for his fine presence and great bodily vigour. His active career began with the arrival of Strafford in 1633. In all ways he was forward in assisting the deputy, but showed such independence and masterfulness of character, along with considerable capacity, that Strafford was for a while doubtful whether to crush or to favour him. Reflecting that Ormonde was one of the richest and probably the most influential of the Irish nobility, he decided to secure his interest ; and Ormonde was throughout his government his chief friend and

~~support. Such was the confidence felt in him that in April 1640, when Strafford was with Charles, he was made commander-in-chief of the forces. In August he was appointed lieutenant-general of the kingdom by Strafford, who, upon the death of Wandesford in Decem- ber, urged Charles to make him deputy. His loyalty to his chief was shown by the vehemence with which he defended him against the attacks of the Irish House of Commons. Upon Strafford's death, and, it is said, at his request, Ormonde was offered the vacant Garter, but refused it for reasons characteristic of the man (Carte), On the arrival of the news of the rebellion in 1641 he received another commission as lieutenant-general from Charles him- self, and, though much hampered by the lords justices, he did admirable service in the expedition to the Naas, and in the march into the Pale in 1642, after the rebellion had drawn in the Roman Catholic gentry of English descent. In both of these expeditions the ferocious traditions of Irish warfare were but too faithfully followed. So highly were his ser- Vices regarded that he was publicly complimented by the English Parliament, who, along with their letter of thanks,~~

~~1 His pedigree extends back to Henry IT.'s expedition to Ireland, when Theobald Walter received, in addition to large estates, the here- ditary butlership of Ireland, and the prisage of wines, which formed an important part of the vast wealth which the family always possessed. The title of Ormonde appears to have been granted to James the~~

~~noble earl," who by the female side was a great-grandson of Edward Il. This title, at the request of Henry VIII., the 8th earl resigned to Sir Thomas Boleyn, receiving that of Ossory instead, and regaining that of Ormonde at Boleyn's death. The 9th earl, having borne a chief part in the suppression of the Geraldine rebellion, received a grant of the defeated chieftain's lands, and, in recognition of his further efforts~~

~~when Henry threw off his allegiance to the pope, the title of Viscount Thurles was given him.~~

~~OR M—~~

~~ORM~~

sent him a jewel of the value of £620. On 15th April 1642 he gained the battle of Kilrush against Lord Mount- garret, and on 18th March in the following year that of Ross against Preston. In September 1643, the civil war in England having meanwhile broken out, the opposition between Ormonde, who always stood much upon his dig- nity, and the lords justices became more open and acute. Ormonde, seeing that the large army of Scots in Ulster was both unable to cope with the rebels and was ill-disposed to the king, and that the rebels had been successful at many points, concluded on 15th September the "'cessation" with the latter, having power from Charles to treat with the recusants. He had previously, on 16th September 1642, been made a marquis by the king, and had been offered the lord-lieutenantship. This, however, he declined; but his command was made independent of Leicester. Ormonde now threw himself unreservedly into Charles's cause, and at his command sent a body of troops into England, having first exacted an oath of loyalty from the officers (see Monx); it, however, was shortly afterwards routed by Fairfax at the raising of the siege of Nantwich. On the arrival of the news of the "cessation" Charles, anxious to be quit of the Irish problem, which was complicated by the refusal of the Ulster Scots to concur in the "cessation," and desirous at the same time to see the country in safe hands, again offered Ormonde the supreme post, which he now accepted, receiving his commission in January 1644, with special instructions to do all in his power to keep the Scotch army occupied. In all the complications of Scots, Old Irish, Catholic Irish of English race, and Protestants, and in face of the intrigues of the Pope's nuncio as well as of the attempts of the Parliament's commissioners to Ulster to ruin his power, he showed firmness and ability, and especi- ally did his utmost to assist Antrim in his expedition into Scotland. He kept his post until the ground was cut from beneath him by Glamorgan's treaty with the Catholics in 1646, and until it was clear that he could not long hope to hold Dublin against the Irish rebels. He thereupon applied to the English Parliament, gave Dublin into their hands upon terms which protected the interests of both Protestants and Roman Catholics so far as they had not actually entered into rebellion, and sailed for England at the beginning of August 1647. He attended Charles during August and October at Hampton Court, and, after the king's escape to the Isle of Wight, appears to have been his agent in the preliminary negotiation regarding the "engagement" with the Scots. Having good reason to fear that the Parliament intended to

secure his person, he hurriedly left England and joined the queen and prince of Wales at Paris in March 1648, where he was of great service in dealing with the agents of the revolted Irish. In September of the same year, the pope's nuncio having been expelled, and affairs otherwise looking favourable, he returned to Ireland to endeavour to unite all parties for the king. He concluded a peace with the rebels on the basis of the free exercise of their religion, proclaimed Charles II., and upheld the royal cause with great vigour though with slight success. He was meanwhile urgent with Charles that he should come in person, but was out- witted and overborne by the Scots and their friends at the king's court. Cromwell having become irresistible, and Charles, under the influence of Argyll, having annulled the peace just concluded, Ormonde returned to France in 1650. He had meanwhile, in September 1649, received the Garter from Charles II.

Ormonde now, though in great straits for want of money, resided in constant attendance upon Charles and the queen- mother at Paris, and accompanied the former when, on his dismissal from France, he went to Aix and Cologne. He appears to have incurred the queen's enmity by frus-

trating the attempts which she made to induce the duke of Gloucester to become Catholic. In 1658, at great risk, he went upon a secret mission into England, to gain trust- worthy intelligence as to the chances of a rising. He attended the king at the treaty of Fontarabia, and was actively engaged in the secret transactions immediately preceding the Restoration. In the distribution of honours which followed he had a considerable share: he was at once made lord steward of the household, a privy councillor, lord-lieutenant of Somerset, high steward of Westminster, Kingston, and Bristol, chancellor of Dublin University, Baron Butler of Llanthony, and earl of Brecknock ; and on 30th March 1661 he was created duke of Ormonde in the Irish peerage and lord high steward of England. At the same time large grants, in recompense of the fortune he had spent in the royal service, were made by the king, while in the following year the Irish parliament presented him with £30,000. His losses, however, according to Carte, exceeded his gains by a sum almost incredibly enormous. On 4th November 1661 he once more received the lord-lieutenantship of Ireland, and was busily

~~engaged in the settlement of that country until 1664, His heart was in his government, and he vehemently opposed the bill prohibiting the importation of Irish cattle, which struck so fatal a blow at her trade; and, when it was passed, in order to lessen, as he thought, the misfortune, he prohibited the import of Scotch linen, and, further, obtained leave for a certain number of Irish vessels to trade with the foreign enemies of England. He encour- aged Irish manufactures and learning to the utmost, and it was to his efforts that the Irish College of Physicians owes its incorporation.~~

~~Ormonde's personality had always been a striking one. He had been noted for purity of life and purpose, and for generous and unswerving devotion to the royal cause, when purity and devotion, stimulated by the great argu- ment, were not rare in the court of Charles I. In the court of Charles II. he assumed a still more noteworthy character. At a time when every form of baseness had free course, he figured as almost the sole representative of the high-toned virtues of a nobler generation. Where everything was little he, by force of what is emphatically called "character" far more than by any special ability, was great. The friend and comrade of Strafford, one who had in the royal cause ungrudgingly spent a princely fortune, we see him standing aloof while persons like Bennet intrigued and lied for office or money. Of strict purity of life, he was a living rebuke to the Sedleys and Castlemaines who turned the court into a brothel. Com- pelled to see the councils of the king guided by dishonour, he acquired over him the influence which Charles was always ready to concede to greatness (eg., Pepys, 19th May 1668). Proud of the loyalty of his race, which had been unspotted through five centuries, he bore with silent self-respect calumny, envy, and his seven years' loss of court favour, waiting until his master should be shamed into an acknowledgment of the wrong.~~

~~He soon became the mark for attack from all that was worst in the court. Buckingham especially did his utmost to undermine his influence. In his almost irresponsible government of Ireland during troublous times Ormonde had no doubt acted now and then in a way which offered advantage to men eager for his overthrow. He had billeted soldiers on civilians, and had executed martial law. The impeachment, however, threatened by Buckingham fell through. Nevertlieless, by 1669, constant~~

importunity had had its usual effect upon Charles, and Ormonde was removed from the government of Ireland and from the

1 For a notice of this see Evelyn's Diary, 8th June 1658.

committee for Irish affairs. He made no complaint, in- sisted that his sons and others over whom he had influ- ence should retain their posts, and continued to fulfil with dignified persistence the duties of his other offices. The compromise made by Charles with his conscience was marked by a public declaration that, in spite of what had happened, Ormonde had in no degree lost his con- fidence.

By way of recompense, unsought honours came to him and his family. At the suggestion of Sheldon, Oxford chose him as her chancellor, while Dublin, ignoring Roberts, the new lord-lieutenant, gave to his eldest son Ossory the freedom of the city.

In 1670, while driving through London, he was attacked and dragged out of his carriage by the well-known ruftian Blood, who had been deeply concerned in the attempt upon Dublin Castle in 1663. By whom he was set upon this deed is not known, though Ossory publicly laid it to the charge of Buckingham. Nothing appears to have saved Ormonde's life but the whim of Blood to hang him at Tyburn. The delay thus caused, and Ormonde's vigorous resistance, gave time for rescue. What was the mysterious connexion between Blood and the court has never been discovered ; but it is certain that Charles, when Blood was captured, himself asked Ormonde to pardon him.

In 1671 Richard Talbot came over from Ireland in order, if possible, to secure the repeal of the Act of Settlement in favour of the dispossessed Irish gentry. Ormonde was placed: on the committee of investigation, and did his utmost to frustrate Talbot's endeavours.

The return of Ormonde to favour, and his appointment to the government of Ireland in 1677, were characteristic both of the times and of Charles himself (Carte). It appears probable that it was the result in a great

~~measure of the desire of James to set up a rival to Monmouth, for whom Shaftesbury had requested the lord-lieutenantship. On his arrival in Ireland he was for a considerable time occupied in placing the revenue and the army upon a proper footing. Upon the outbreak of the Popish terror in England he at once took the most vigorous and compre- hensive steps, though with as little harshness as possible, towards rendering the Catholics, who were in the pro- portion of 15 to 1, powerless (Carte). So mild, however, did his measures appear that they served, in spite of the fact that Ireland was kept in perfect peace, as a reason for an attack upon him in England, which was led by Shaftesbury, and from which he was defended with great spirit by his son Ossory. He kept his course, giving even justice to both religious parties, and Charles had the good sense to refuse to remove him.~~

~~Hitherto Ormonde had been singularly fortunate in his family life. But in 1680 he lost his eldest son Ossory, a pure and gallant man, and this was but the beginning of his private sorrows. In 1682 Charles summoned Ormonde to court, and from that time retained him about his person. His first duty was to answer, at the king's request, the memoirs published by the earl of Castlehaven, in which he had reflected upon Charles I. His vigour also during the election of aldermen and during the disputed election of sheriffs for the city after Shaftesbury's acquittal was of the greatest service to the court. On 9th November 1683 an English dukedom was conferred upon him, and in June 1684 he returned to Ireland; scarcely, however, had he set out when intrigues against him once more proved suc- cessful, and he was recalled in October. Before, however, he could give up his government to Rochester, Charles II. died, and Ormonde's last act as lord-lieutenant was to pro- claim James II. in Dublin. On his return to London he was met with all the pomp and ceremony which, while him- self of simple tastes, he had always practised as befitting~~

~~his office and name.~~

~~his intellectuals." on the 1st of August.~~

~~The principal authorities for Ormonde's life are Carte's Life and~~

~~the Carte papers in the Bodleian, the article " Butler" in the Biographia Britannica, Cox's and Leland's Histories of Ireland, and the diaries and memoirs of the period. (O: Be)~~

~~ORMSKIRK, a market-town of Lancashire, is situated on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 11 miles north- east of Liverpool. It consists principally of four streets, diverging at right angles from the market-place. The church of St Peter and St Paul is a spacious edifice in various styles of architecture, with a square embattled tower and steeple, and a Saxon window. To the south-east of the church, and divided from it by a screen, is the Derby chapel, the exclusive property of the earls of Derby, whose vault is contained within. A free grammar school was founded about 1614. Among the other public buildings are the sessions-house and police offices, the working-men's institute, the public library, the dispensary, and the union workhouse. Rope and twine making, iron-founding, and brewing are carried on, and the town has long been famous for its gingerbread. The population of the town and urban sanitary district (area 573 acres) was 6651 in 1881 (6127 in 1871).~~

~~Ormskirk is not found in Domesday ; but the parish according to tradition belonged to Orm, the Saxon proprietor of Halton. The name and church existed in the time of Richard I., when the priory of Burscough was founded. The prior and convent obtained from Edward I. a royal charter for a market at the manor of Ormskirk. On the dissolution of the monasteries the manor was granted to the earl of Derby.~~

~~ORMUS. This is the European form of the name Hor- muz or Hurmuz, applied to a famous city on the shores of the Persian Gulf, which occupied more than one position in the course of history, and which has now long practi- cally ceased to exist. The earliest mention of the name occurs in the voyage of Nearchus (325 B.c.). When that admiral beached his fleet at the mouth of the river Anamis on the shore of Harmozia, a coast district of Karmania, he found the country to be a kindly one, rich in every product except the olive. The Anamis appears to be the river now known as the Minab, discharging into the Persian Gulf near the entrance of the latter. The name Hormuz is derived by some from that of the Persian god Hormuzd, but it is not unlikely that the original etymology was connected~~

~~with khurma, "a date"; for the meaning of Moghistan, the modern name of the territory Harmozia, is "the region of date-palms." The founda- tion of the city of Hormuz in this territory is ascribed by one Persian writer to the Sasanian Ardashir Babegan *(c. 230 a.D.). But it must have existed at an earlier date, for Ptolemy takes note of "Appov(a réArs (vi. 8).~~

~~Hormuz is mentioned by Edrisi, who wrote ¢. 1150, under the title of Hormuz-al-sthiliah, "Hormuz of the shore" (to distinguish it from inland cities of the same name then existing), as a large and well-built city, the chief mart of Kirman. Sirdf and Kish (Kais), farther up the gulf, had preceded it as ports of trade with India, but in the 13th century Hormuz had become the chief seat of this traffic. It was at this time the seat also of a petty dynasty of kings, of which there is a history by one of their number (Turan Shah); an abstract of it is given by the Jesuit Teixeira. According to this history the~~

~~He now lived much in retirement at Cornbury (Oxfordshire), signalizing, however, his loyalty to Protestantism and the Church of England by opposing the attempts of James to assume the dispensing power, in spite of which James to his credit refused to take away his offices, and continued to hold him in respect and favour to the last. On Saturday, 21st July 1688, he died quietly of decay, not having, as he rejoiced to know, -" outlived He was buried in Westminster Abbey~~

~~ORM—ORM~~

~~founder of the dynasty was Shih Mohammed Dirhem-Ku ("the Drachma-coiner"), an Arab chief who. crossed the gulf and established himself here. The date is not given, but it must have been before 1100 a.p., as Ruknuddin Mahmid, who succeeded in 1246, was the twelfth of the line. These princes appear to have been at times in dependence necessarily on the atabegs of Fars, and on the princes of Kirman.~~

~~About the year 1300 Hormuz was so severely and repeatedly harassed by raids of Tartar horsemen that the king and his people abandoned their city on the mainland and transferred themselves to the island of Jerun (Organa of Nearchus), about 12 miles westward, and 4 miles from the nearest shore.~~

The site of the continental or ancient Hormuz was first traced in modern times by Colonel (Sir Lewis) Pelly when resident at Bushire. It stands in the present district of Mindo, several miles from the sea, and on a creek which communicates with the Mindo river,! but which is partially silted up and not now accessible for vessels, There remain

the traces of a long wharf and of extensive ruins.

English Miles wb o rr) 20

Map of the Strait of Ormus.

The island adopted for the new site is of a pear-shape, with the stalk to the north, about 134 miles in circum- ference and 4 miles in longest axis. The rounded southern portion is entirely composed of rugged serrated hills rising some 300 feet above the sea, and of an extraordinary variety of vivid colours, a few white peaks, like snow- covered hills, rising high above the general mass, one to a height of 690 feet. The hills, with the remarkable exception (according to the Persian Gulf Pilot) of the white peaks, and also of a range on the south and south-east, are all of salt. There is also sulphur. The island was devoid of fresh water except in one small well which exists, or formerly existed, at Turan Bagh, all the other water in use being collected in cisterns from rainfall; and of vegetation, with the exception of a very little scrub among the hills and of what was produced in the time of the kings by laborious gardening and irrigation at the spot above mentioned. The new city occupied a triangular plain forming the northern part of the island, the southern wall, as its remains still show, being about 2 miles in extent from east to west. A suburb with a wharf or pier, called Turan Bagh (garden of Turén) after one of the kings, a name now corrupted to Trumpdk, stood about three miles from the town to the south-east.

Oporic (q.v.) gives the earliest notice we have of the new city (c. 1320). He calls it Ormes, a city strongly fortified and abounding in costly wares, situated on an island 5 miles distant from the main, having no trees and

1 It is alleged, however, in the Persian Gulf Pilot, 1864, that this

~~creek, called Khor Mindb, "is in no way connected with" the river flowing past the town and fort of Mindo or Min4b.~~

~~OR MUS~~

~~no fresh water, unhealthy, and (as all evidence confirms) incredibly hot. Some years later it was visited more than once by Ibn Batuta, who seems to speak of the old city as likewise still standing. The new Hormuz, called also Jerun (7.¢., still retaining the original name of the island), was a great and fine city rising out of the sea, and serving as a mart for all the products of India, which were distri- buted hence over all Persia. The hills on the island were of rock-salt, from which vases and pedestals for lamps were carved. Near the gate of the chief mosque stood an enormous skull, apparently that of a sperm-whale. The king at this time was Kutbuddin Tahamtan, the son of Turan Shéh ; and the traveller gives a curious description of hin, seated on the throne, in patched and dirty raiment, whilst holding a rosary of enormous pearls, procured from the Bahrein fisheries, which at one time or another belonged, with other islands in the gulf and on the Oman shores from Ras-al-hadd (C. Rosalgat of the Portuguese) on the ocean round to Julfar on the gulf, to the princes of Hormuz. Abdurazzik, the envoy of Shah Rukh on his way to the Hindu court of Vijayanagar, was in Hormuz in 1442, and speaks of it as a mart which had no equal, frequented by the merchants of all the countries of Asia, among which he enumerates China, Java, Bengal, Tenasserim, Shahr-i-nao (i.e, Siam), and the Maldives. Nikitin, the Russian (c. 1470), gives a similar account ; he calls it "a vast em- porium of all the world."~~

~~In September 1507 the king of Hormuz, after for some time hearing of the terrible foe who was carrying fire and sword along the shores of Arabia, saw the squadron of Alphonso d'Albuquerque appear before his city, an appear- ance speedily followed by extravagant demands, by refusal of these from the ministers of the young king, and by deeds of matchless daring and cruelty on the part of the Portuguese, which speedily broke down resistance. The king acknowledged himself tributary to Portugal, and gave leave to the Portuguese to build a castle, which was at once commenced on the northern part of the island, com- manding the city and the anchorage on both sides. But the mutinous conduct and desertion of several of~~

Albuquerque's captains compelled him suddenly to abandon the enterprise ; and it was not till 1514, after the great leader had cap- tured Goa and Malacca, and had for five years been viceroy, that he returned to Hormuz (or Ormuz, as the Portuguese called it), and, without encountering resistance to a name 'now so terrible, laid his grasp again on the island and completed his castle. For more than a century Ormuz remained practically in the dominions of Portugal, though the hereditary prince, paying from his revenues a tribute to Portugal (in lieu of which eventually the latter took the whole of the customs collections), continued to be the instrument of government. The position of things during the Portuguese rule may be understood from the description of Cesare de' Federici, a Venetian merchant who was at Ormuz about 1565. After speaking of the great trade in spices, drugs, silk and silk stuffs, and pearls of Bahrein, and in horses for export to India, he says the king was a Moor (.¢., Mohammedan), chosen by and subordinate to the Portuguese. 'At the election of the king I was there and saw the ceremonies that they use. . . . The old king being dead, the captain of the Portugals chooseth another of the blood-royal, and makes this election in the castle with great ceremony. And when he is elected the captain sweareth him to be true . . . to the K. of Portugal as his lord and governor, and then he giveth him the sceptre regal. After this… with great pomp… he is brought into the royal palace in the city. The king keeps a good train and hath sufficient revenues, . . . because the captain of the castle doth maintain and defend his right . . . he is honoured as a king, yet he cannot ride abroad with his

train, without the consent of the captain first had" (in Hakluyt).t

The rise of the English trade and factories in the Indian seas in the beginning of the 17th century led to constant jealousies and broils with the Portuguese, and the success- ful efforts of the English company to open traffic with Persia especially embittered their rivals, to whom the possession of Ormuz had long given a monopoly of that trade. The officers of Shah Abbds, who looked with a covetous and resentful eye on the Portuguese occupation of such a position, were strongly desirous of the aid of English ships in attacking Ormuz. During 1620 and 1621 the ships of

Portugal and of the English company had more than once come to action in the Indian seas, and in November of the latter year the council at Surat had resolved on what was practically maritime war with the Portuguese flag. There was hardly a step between this and the decision come to in the following month to join with "the duke of Shiraz" (Im4m Kulf Khan, the gover- nor of Fars) in the desired expedition against Ormuz. There was some pretext of being forced into the alliance by a Persian threat to lay embargo on the English goods at Jashk; but this seems to have been only brought forward by the English agents when, at a later date, their proceed- ings were called in question. The English crews were at first unwilling to take part in what they justly said was "no merchandizing business, nor were they engaged for the like," but they were persuaded, and five English vessels aided, first, in the attack of Kishm, where (at the east end of the large island so called) the Portuguese had lately built a fort,? and afterwards in that of Ormuz itself. The latter siege was opened on the 18th February 1622, and continued to Ist May, when the Portuguese, after a gal- lant defence of ten weeks, surrendered. It is to be recol- lected that Portugal was at this time subject to the crown of Spain, with which England was at peace; indeed, it was but a year later that the prince of Wales went on his wooing adventure to the Spanish court. The irritation there was naturally great, though it is surprising how little came of it. The campany were supposed (apparently without foundation) to have profited largely by the Ormuz booty ; and both the duke of Buckingham and the king claimed to be "sweetened," as the record phrases it, from this supposed treasure. The former certainly received a large bribe (£10,000). The conclusion of the transaction with the king was formerly considered doubtful; but entries in the calendar of East India papers lately published seem to show that James received an equal suin.®

Ormuz never recovered from this blow. The Persians transferred their establishments to Gombroon on the main- land, about 12 miles to the north- west, which the king had lately set up as a royal port under the name of Bandar Abbasi. The English stipulations for aid had embraced an equal division of the customs duties. This division was apparently recognized by the Persians as applying to the new Bandar, and, though the trade with Persia was constantly decaying and precarious, the company held to their factory at Gombroon for the sake of this claim to revenue, which of course

was most irregularly paid. In 1683-84 the amount of debt due to the company in Persia, including their proportion of customs duties, was reckoned at a million sterling. As late as 1690-91 their right seems to have been admitted, and a payment of 3495 sequins was received by them on this account. The factory at Gom-

1 In Barros, Dec. II., book x. c. 7, there is a curious detail of the revenue and expenditure of the kingdom of Ormuz, which would seem to exhibit the former as not more than £100,000.

- The attack on Kishm was notable in that one of the two English- men killed there was the great navigator Baffin.

3 Colonial Series, E. Indies, by Sainsbury, vol. iii. passim, especially see pp. 296 and 329.

broon lingered on till 1759, when it was seized by two French ships of war under Comte d'Estaing. It was re-established, but at the time of Niebuhr's visit to the gulf a few years later no European remained. Niebuhr mentions that in his time (c. 1765) Mulla 'Ali Shah, formerly admiral of Nadir Shah, was established on the island of Ormuz and part of Kishm as an independent chief. On Ormuz the solidly-built Portuguese castle still stands, and some of the immense water-tanks, with fresh water in them, in almost perfect integrity. "With their arched and groined roofs, supported on heavy pillars, they appeared like the crypts of some great cathedral" (Colomb, Slave-catching in the Indian Ocean, 1873, pp. 142-148). Of the city hardly anything stands except a minaret,' by some called a lighthouse, but the traces of buildings are

1 Fraser heard that this was erected by Shah Abbas after the capture.

numerous and extensive. A small band of fishermen and salt-diggers living in mat huts and a small guard from Muscat in the castle form the sole population. The island is, with Kishm and other places near, rented from Persia by the sultan of Muscat, chiefly for the salt and sulphur. Works consulted, besides some of those specifically quoted above, have been Barros, Asia; Commentaries of Albuquerque, trans. by Birch (Hak. Society); Relaciones de Pedro Teixeira (Antwerp, 1610); Narratives in Hakluyt's Collection (reprint of 1809, vol. il.) and in Purchas's Pilgrims, vol. ii.; Pietro della Valle, Persia, lett. xii-xvii. ; Calendar of E. I. Papers, by Sainsbury, vol. iti. ; Ritter, Erdkunde, xii. ; Jowr. Roy. Geog. Soc., Kempthorne in vol. v., Whitelocke in vol. viii., Pelly in vol. xxxiv. ; Fraser, Narrative of a Journey into Khorasan (1825); Constable and Stiffe, Persian Gulf Pilot (1864); Bruce, Annals of the E. I. Company, &c. (1810). Gi Ye), ORMUZD (for Ahura-mazda or Auramazda, " the wise

lord"), the good principle in the dualism of Zoroastrianism, opposed to Ahriman or Angromainyu. (See ZoROASTER.)

END OF VOLUME SEVENTEENTH.

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.

Puares, Vou, XVII.—Directions to Binper.

When insertion throughout the text is desired, the Plates to be placed opposite the

following pages :—

Plate I. page 48 Plate XIII. page 459 > o E..,, #886 iy EV 5, GEG oS seo oS XV. ,, 504 3) NE oto a Mees 5) Bee so JW 3, @ee2 3 VEL" «550 BBS ao ele 5, 4ae6 3) St, «6, 508 ge, VEL. 5, 2e90 1 EX… 4, Ge 2. 286 * DOK. »,,. . Ono » ae 898 se ee. 45 oe ey, OE js een, 4g, team » mL 5, Heo Feo 08 ae Ge

3 el, ET 7 EV. ge

t & f NA!

A < oey WOO cP pgs SRN ys ‘ Poms Yi VaRORTGA way Sot OM 0 > x Paz! | aS . NTETOVOT

Va) ‘

ON ¢; i

*BA: SS == aes, ae he AH ASS ASEE. SASAAAAS. AAAS. SENS aN SA eA NSB. “OOS SAS. **

VA.

SAAN ANAS AS ASS ASASAS AS ASASASASES

2 ———

*Noe — S*F®) e*

@)

N ¥y]

‘

= =

. rv RIV Vo LV

Oe OO | me : 1

Decoration on north chancel wall, Amencharads Rada Church, Sweden.

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

ADois gens ‘ “anit

Painted borders from

~~Kumbla Church, Sweden.~~

~~“NOUIOT HININ “VOINNVIIY@ WIG¥dOTIAING~~

~~ysmquipy ‘uosuyor YW M~~

~~: + + + Speourrey © sumo, Ayano) os or of o% ot SoTUN JO eTROS~~

~~at mar:~~

~~Nn~~

~~~~

~~~~

~~G~~

~~ee Fe Cea ana oom VU~~

~~—) — e — ea ve~~

~~Aouo3y oSpry Fay “NO N WH~~

~~pugesoy “7 Fe~~

~~m H i es S HONVaVH SVM pee Le = «~~

~~a le gee SY Y tip O 3 ae > 5 ? > ; ae, Ne | 3 °o vey *, i ES Be P28 ee | i eP ? foe : . 4, > | = (ee rie S J * Po] | a { | i > oo wv~~

~~Ver WVIONITTY als:~~

~~g Tor YP tAnVeayH zo WIOIF JSAM~~

~~eOl apnzigu0T ¥0~~

~~TAX” TOA~~

~~WT ALVId~~

~~120 Longitude~~

~~a Gish~~

~~VOL. XVII. | NEVADA~~

~~CARSON CITY \y~~

~~Scale of Statute Miles~~

~~Owen's~~

~~Lake~~

~~Seer~~

~~Scale of Statute Miles~~

~~50 100~~

~~a aren Cee~~

~~PLATE Ii.~~

~~m4~~

~~x = < © Taylors~~

~~Bullignville : ee~~

~~∀~~

~~=(~~

~~Longitude 40 West from~~

~~ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITIBN.~~

~~Washington~~

W.&AK Johnston, Edinburgh

;.

a tl RH ee Ae

J,. — Le i = j +, Le . u , : . :

“NOILIGS HLNIN ‘YOINNYLIYS VIGHdOTDAONG

ee <= =

VEZ Y spear PAG

2 S ‘ Me eat rf ‘ om 7 i, SE is U a hioan;. . R ? Rayo “ee SP ot SkeFaquogsy . A OP 3}Sd 5

a OG “te ate tt q

- i \ onl Reo ap sab * pp ey . A Pes 2, OTL jd ay » \» cpayo “6 : {

it

ay ag ov

ly oN EMME T

29 £9 9 sso

“09 “VILOOS VAON “MOIMSNOUE. MOLN

nt

‘VoL. XVII NEWFOUNDLAND | PLATE V

59 58 57 56

|-{

SO a | os er a re

=

English Miles

1

10 Oo 20 30 a0 60

pt

LA/sPOILE

The Dunes\¥

a (to France) ‘

59 58 57 Longisude West 56 from Greenwich 55 54 55

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

a a | 6 Peary i” “wae at ALATA We =

— — — — — =

“NOtLIO3 HININ VOINNVIIYE VIGHdOTSAING WBaqueypg woul yy eM

“yptMupatg jo sey spay OFT

= = = = ——— = =S[S= Teall 0sn3 : , a : cs ae dO ATAP

&

\ lee)

| we fee: oy . aa} . : |% a x, 2 3 ate S ¥ Son *

of g

o? aT PRUs

ae oo naan, a wea‘) ¹, U — wae wan, , “i Stk alll Si tu prs acl et ~ % ee coS cmoncnntape aap a)

tas / aa en — sé sa “YIMUIeK) Jo yey Iprysu0y zi ng eet AY s reqs apse 12. Tt weuaglt ose

ry wa ra = pean ; , i Kom s stpsay \ “T pum ‘ ea i a . 1 . 0 z ° , ooo %, © < ce om ¢ ae - ° s %, L rs a tat ‘ ‘ af L ? p TR , be ~ s, 5 ieee te 7 . y Dior 4 y A ‘ ry 4 Si . Rag 2s ~ er | \\ ; : " G 5 2 youn” ~ le ee eet OS oy " 2 - « % ‘ x Y ‘ 7 a SS - Te Dupre i Yi *. ‘s r ? ey ~ -, ont. rg o>.) ¢ ao : al o ay p f : ‘ iyo nf bp FURS. 6s . ot : rat yes 5 , {i A, 4 Ps on g j 33 or: : 2 5 } VAS See od 9 yr” i ™ bx S “4p up eto : we . rr ‘ 3 2 7 0 : ae Ry ‘ N we ; n § , . adue \ NBs Pegg J . % — er ~~ yale = . Sapa ~ nate . ao ‘ a io = pd “oN tsi sl oo nis: a ” ne — a,

oe) a % a IES: 2, ff bat. 2.9 a 4 ait osnnispltin MAG

Kw y ° ; , fs } — set S

. *

sent SS

yr

. Mop pep op

rehae) op YOURLT | Pay panojoo sumssessog ystmuy |

——— S ——— SSS —

LA ALV Th VINOGWIVO MAN GNV VANIDD MAN MAX TOA

VOL. XVI. EW HAMPSHIRE PLATE VIL

Longitude West 72° from Greenwich

pa

Scale of Miles

5 10 15

o County Towns ~~. Railroads

oe AAS), ssipee Center % beMoulionbarongh 3 > 9

Hemniteer (9S Hopkinton "Wp FY J" XP "Hopkinton & Ne f."3 Yundarton SR

VAS

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION

W& AK. Jchnston. Edinburgh

VOL. XVII.

NEW JERSEY

PLATE VI.

Longitude

Scale of Statute Miles

5 10 20

Capital Cities Railroads

County Towns oe

Milford,

i a 0

Doylestown

Wey Absecom Inlet oP Atlantic City Wr Abisesanw Beach

7 te / Peck's Beach a7 ¥ ry Corson's Inlet \SI/Tudlam's Beach 57 Sealsle City

;

Townsend Inlet

*a * a {if Beach*

os a Me

z Longitude

EY Five Mile Beach VP) Turtle Cut Inlet SPY TwoMile Beach from.

Washington

May Cold Spring Inlet Cape May

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION

W&AXK Johnston, Edinburgh

— ON te a pt al nei, a ovumitien

— — — ooo Seen cnel ie ee i ee — — — — — — — — — — —

PLATE IX.

VOL. XVI NEW MEXICO

4

\ f Apishinpa / 1 , BING wet <,

ee Sff1 M. oN Irinidadé oe

S

Luni

~~*Plateau.*~~

~~*)*~~

~~*TRINCHIERA infers.*~~

~~*. 4 ©Red Clond*~~

~~*ty*~~

~~*\ y Pd “Ancient!*~~

~~*4)*~~

~~*© Lava Flow o*~~

~~*go an Augustine*~~

~~*Org an*~~

~~*~*~~

~~*“““ElPaso del NorteY?*~~

~~*30 peg*~~

~~*Lie &*~~

~~*– e*~~

~~*——-oo*~~

~~*o Fort Quitman*~~

~~*Scale of Miles*~~

~~*30*~~

~~*50 60*~~

~~ee)~~

~~o lo 20~~

~~e County Towns "-*«,Railroads~~

~~W.&AK Johnston. Edinburgh.~~

~~ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.~~

~~2 ra ' — ' a — . i= te 2 =! = a . 'ye — ¢ + e os é~~

- ~~: ~· . 7 * *~~

~~r~~

~~- ', 5 .~~

~~A ; ' «~~

~~: ; . . .~~

~~"NOILIGA HLININ 'VOINNVLIYS VIGHdOTDAON]~~

~~¥ ¢ ' a of he > ae Fae~~

~~YF vuvi~~

~~i f § \ aM take yng . ff a | ee snsusnonpesseerentsettt 5 u~~

~~"> ' 3) ox SY 7 gee ee vain | y3anne fe . | vu Spee~~

~~g Set, ~· Z~~

~~3 P \ j : 2 4 vf | fynnvoinonl HIv1Ww130 '4~~

~~SHIVM HLAOS MAN~~

~~7~~

~~VOL. XVI. NE |~~

~~78 from Greenwich~~

~~Scale of Stainte Miles 0 20 30 = Eee Capital Cities # County Towns © Railroads Candle: ccactas~~

~~RRS~~

~~£2~~

~~re: |~~

~~Yel SS~~

~~hy~~

~~Se te~~

~~ay a~~

~~Pot oY fase) Rese | EE We OEE NLT~~

~~Pete te Ze~~

~~ca Wii~~

~~ewe~~

~~bf $~~

~~Snion~~

~~ae~~

~~4~~

~~a a NY ED~~

~~Ce cy~~

as

ne 8 HN on8 eeu as Sa 2 Be = a

2 Longitude West 1

from Washirigton C0) Longitude East 5S

ENCYCLOPADIA BRIRNA\

PLATE Xf.

auton

MONTPELIEE, Cy — — \

\ % ™ ~.

f ~ aes "1 Wells Rive T 4 els vere¢ R a \ (ra I =\p Middlebury — = i *

9p

as

Wie be G

Yp Hine Walk 4 ¥ + WX Bennington ok Vv ; | \ ) < a = | | \ — hp pars \

Cy peeeiaamaa aia | ae

/ (.

12! ppyustield (Ey \

).

).

().

4 —v

1 oF Yim aA ssa Quy: F Nt Northampton as : ay

5 ; say \ 4

- *x a 7 I: : \ ‘ (Py ee : } oy fo pringaeld.*

}.

Qe you 4 a So See \ et Semel (SSE al = =r

*7 H ; 4 *

— ray

ob j.

;.

e from. Washington

W.&AK Johnston, Eiimburgh

aR NICA NINTH EDITION.

PLATE XII.

NEW YORK—CITY AND VICINITY

VOL. XVII.

Mihi,

K> ZS

DW oe? ee ‘SS f LD

Mi

5

LO Hy Ur,

SH)

KS KS

’ ella DG fay,

uy

U ‘%

Pet)

( ) BSH

MS ls

AMIE yA

R

%

LR ss ty Rs Oe

7 4

a is aS

LIL LIKE Willy Ia te,

EF?! Cohem GOVERNORS ISLAND

” ¥

(3

Pe! BEDLOES |. x

•

OYSTER |. ae

yg My Hips ‘fg LLL

be LI.II/

>I. eee.

re SHOOT

te

Sheepshead. Bay

ERS.

e>

HOFFMAN i.

Jacob Wels. New York. Del.

W&AK Johnston Edinburgh . STREETS

PROJECTED STREETS

FERRIES

AND STATIONS

RAIL ROADS

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

BOUNDARIES

~~CITY AND TOWN~~

~~COUNTY BOUNDARY~~

~~STATE BOUNDARY a tte en~~

~~' RY~~

~~= a~~

~~, O a '~~

~~we Pit ts 7 iw on SS eee te~~

~~=~~

~~i~~

~~=~~

~~ha a te)~~

~~=~~

~~er~~

~~=~~

~~=~~

~~a~~

~~a~~

~~=.~~

~~Ob~~

~~>.~~

$\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{-}$

$\tilde{=}\tilde{=}$

$\dot{t}$

$\tilde{=}.$

$\tilde{-}S$

$\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{-}S$

$\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{=}A$

$\tilde{-}$”

$\tilde{a}$

$\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{=}st$

$\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{=}\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{a}$

$\tilde{=}$

$\tilde{>}.$

=

=. ~

nas

oi

=

=.

=

~

SS

=> *S

=

my

=

Pp

=

=

ones

=. =

rf

~!

Pa me!

~

oa

=

=~

sl

mt

=

fi Rel Lawk. & West RR.

Wie f sy leg a es és z = “ a fj coed \ xi v oS

1

ma: 4 ‘ ‘0

bavbemcicke

est

oon

E » Depo : Wee Sone?

lima}

2

sal

a z

<-

“” ”

Ete

W.& AK. Johnston. Edinburgh

ELEVATEG RAILROAD ROUTES AND STATIONS

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITI

STREET CAR ROUTES

6 ee Station

Siku NEW ZEALAND—mane

168 170 172

SSS ae es

GEOLOGLCAL SKET CH MAP ‘. orth Cape

tertiary Lower Greensand & Coal area. Jurassic

wi Urvils> & ; 14 SMAN 7, » gt ee PIL BAY Oa, e g

rune) vo re 4 We a

, ° nice

d

“Bas

~~jay S~~

~~antexrb~~

~~Bight~~

~~Reference to Counties formed 1876 North Island | South Island 1 Mongonui 17 Whakatane |35 Collingwood 49 Waitaki : 2 Hokianga 18 Cook |34 Waimea 50 Waimate 3. Bay of Islands 19 Wairoa 35 Sounds 51 Watkouaité ae CZ : — 4+ Whangarei 20 Bast Taupo |36 Marlborough 52 Peninsida bd 7 Seatestag . 5 Hobson 21 West Taupo |37 Haikoura 55 Laieri » a Br, fo 6 Rodney 22 Kawhia |38 Cheviot 54 Maniototo BayClutho 7 Waitemata 25 Taranaki 39 Amuri 55 Vineent & Eden 24 Patea |40 Thangahua 56 Lake 9 Manukau 25 Wanganui 41 Buller 57 Tuapeka 10 Coromandel 26 Hawkes Bay 42 Gre 58 Bruce ll Thames 27 Rangitiket 45 Ashley 59 Clutha 12 Waikato 28 Manawatu 44 Akaroa 60 Southland 13 Raglan 29 Waipawa |45 Selwyn 61 Wallace 14 Waipa 30 Wairarapa East 46 Ashburton 62 Fiord 15 Piako 51 Wairarapa West 47 Geraldine 63 Stewart Island 16 Zauranga 52 Hutt 148 Westland~~

~~:†~~

~~:†~~

~~:|-| / ct rs al 170 ongitude East 172 of Greenwich 176~~

~~ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.~~

~~“~~

~~VOL. XVII NILE PLATE XV~~

~~For the lower course of the NILE see Plate VI Vol VI.~~

~~Scale of English Miles~~

~~° 100 200~~

~~Deep Green. shows alteMas up to 500 thet ” loaa~~

2000

“ 5000 » above 5000 Tamits of the Nile Basin <----~

ee,

We

we

uF arts i), Be Sai oh ie

pageeat) > Ty Steaua

Kharst

W&AK Johnston Rdinburgh

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

. = — — — — . 7 & | | @ — r | | | P ‘ ; ‘ — : : | ‘ $ ‘ | i . |

*. . * : , :*

‘

:

J ‘

:

A «

:

| <

- :

‘ ┼ ═

‘ . .

┼,

:

PLATE XVI 40" a:

NORFOLK

VOL. XVIT i]

53% 7

- *Aart com,*

*a() 8 ee ETE ps 3 * A] D\ t85 S an (4 \ a. S — sh — StS of S BATS RY : — EW: ag? i Is Ae ers = 3) NB Cb Ries aS 5 i cy L Sain G4 f\ J) > ay, ~~, 3 t R , co*

a > t 5 y ef Py ae \ a

S S

S

*ta S a % ~ SS se — ; > = ny DS 7] 2 9) : 8 : {§ W/ ek PG es wi, % ae Se) iS % Sy) 5 RY SAS © > : eS gl a Fa: “Se/ DY *S PATON Ee ON, t 5 = rq: xy S ¥ SJ & Ss SEs f= S’S : a8*

PS) SAG > ee, BS

a4

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION,

*ae + r — | A ~ al e - ‘ — v ~ x -? + 7 « < . 2 - : rae ~ . : - ’ ¢ . : ; f . > — ‘ . ll — ‘« = * + — | r . 7*

: — :

aa ,

+ =

: “ :

:

‘ ‘

— —

‘ 2 ‘ ‘ ‘ :

-

t ‘

‘

VOLXVE NORTHAMPTON & BEDFORD | PLATE XVI

50 ; =a! 30°

Scale of Miles on To o.. “ | ee ee Dee eee See ee ee ee eee i ’) | i . Note. : . \ Bytham{ = f 4 G vy \ f N. North Division. 44 | \ \ “% \) & y| | S. South Division

Milto

R

SS Hi Uh ae \ Yen) TL. G’Berkh ampstead <% Z 5S

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION

> Wry AE eT Poh AOA tt eet .) Wi oki re oa a incr ae a F ; a

4 4

‘

PLATE XVIII.

VOR. XVI,

NORTH CAROLINA

Longitude West 79 from Greenwich

Longitude West from 4 Washington ‘tude West from 83 Greenwich

4 Longr

/NORTH CAROLINA |

WESTERN PART

Longitude from 1 Washington

W. &A.K Johnston, Edinburgh

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

NORTHUMBERLAND

10

cdlgetiope

ei

50°

Mii oraz

MS St anhope

~~Wear .~~

~~10°~~

~~ong itude West 2° 'from Greenwich 40~~

~~ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION~~

~~: tS eS SE 2 5 = ' % VAEx Nee Ry ro £6) , " R > =~~

~~fox a 8 eT~~

~~Note N. North Division S. South Division~~

~~igi >~~

~~Ce EA~~

~~SE~~

~~¢ ~)~~

~~=~~

~~(Craw = 5 mae a ott Yaa hg P1901, cers a ait. ay) Ae oy on~~

~~: »: Z iy. . * ws OR \ v e — i © > oe ae" e 4 n GRD oa x ALON > . Ss Y x 2 x ie . a oe Ng ry a . RO. pup DS \3 py BuO Tg aad 2, : ody 2 ye ' hob < eit bs 0» } * BIitp>, P Stn, Z, ., eh tO @ any i z 7 B GPs 3 3 — % fi. We Pot Opie. Ye * py v é > elmore ? -. ~ ¥ . ~ TRALAD , ? a , R $ KA & an 7 eee \ a Ps 3 S —o : LAF) bb SFL, > oe le : : RY S 4~~

~~myo~~

~~obt "500 "te "he erg,~~

~~COC T- 9-69 OR aay perp~~

~~"NOILICA IILNIN "VOINNVLINS ViIGHdIOTIAONS~~

~~‘ i je 3 = ne Ye Nn depuy 7} TS 5S \ ZReis: ‘ “Be C3 x = (pum SOmionwy — ~2 7- |.ph log \ — ‘ : is < poss Bh ASN eee kan aos Oe bs Px) SZ S| a , ae » AN ie~~

~~\)~~

~~as y~~

~~P x~~

~~ae~~

~~ee \ oe~~

~~0f404s~~

~~is, SN, os aes Lj \i~~

~~CY Siee~~

~~=~~

~~NOTTINGHAM~~

~~1~~

~~. ‘ Mati o tho XY y \ ‘~~

~~600~~

~~Op PRS ? Q Barhestone~~

~~4~~

~~Ag Plungar Sta.~~

~~So~~

a U q ond ¥, p SP ’ , yA ord Stat Tre — Bytes i j “h ol os a Alp A: i “Sh “Bishop Vy id ngio } OL IQ oe L Va “ 0 i Bas set P ly h anto < ot oulir . y, “ Harby L re J g ¥ pool \ 2 \ slip Brolyghton i>*

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

i

~ aqryeee es

“NOWLIGS HININ VOINNWLIYG VIDHAOTIAING

Mopror pure uPunquipy amemyor ye vy M

UOISUTYSeY Woy g 18984 ePNgsU0T

oF oc ot at SoTW emg Jo epeIs

27IW INO 40 FIVOS

SOXaHWa100

ALINIDIA ONY Mi fe ILVNNIONIDO AX fed Aye La [-X iL Le ian]

tron) sig Pann sae ay Oe

“4

=

ose qa[ppitg

a es er ve

ys angsankay,

SBUW 40 37¥25

XR Beg a NV’T TLA. oL T 4

©

still

NEALE 7 vi

L Eta Wi

alt

emai

Se

J

saavay ai rts 2 “i)waasie asa mv a . te 5 px gs “ ~

le MJ1S1S LSVa

“tetisis rteoias TL m4 ff.

YPauseetln 7g uroday

TIXX ALV Td . ; OTHO

TAX TOA

= oy NS ome (District) Us | M’Kellar Deel Sy

RES (SS%T

; ad Nottawasaga SON Bay

——S hans,

mec at

+

H

pre:

a a

a

par ea’

45 ae.

a eo ¥ Corw gh ve

<4

, A a WEBS A Atom Me LA TE 2 Ihe 1 J : therstharg 5 i Ro Fe Harp, eee } t ingeville | a 813 feet abové the Sea

ENCYCLOPAEDIA BREAN!

ee

Se

ate

Te, srl

ANAT

= > eh E | e —

2 ass 5

nro

x2

7

ee ST SS

=

= | es

=

ee ee

Ey le

s >

SRE

con

3X

=

tery

VLE

SKETCH MAP OF THE PROVINCE OF

English Miles |} ONTARIO . inng u

a on) | English. Miles e, 20 30 50 ||e— —j00 200 — NPA. = Ce”. aie SN oe SRS 7 — 76 73 74 dle West 79 trom Greenwich 78 17 me. 76 =

J.Barthdlomew, Edin?

BR NICA, NINTH EDITION.

= =

erga he

VOL. XVIT

OREGON PLATE XXIV.

RY edi new

tet 0 JME TACOMAY PNIER

ey oti

: =

Duckworth ; TRAE Af Prairie City

Vy

BEAR CRP

Si ypc BUTTE Ve oe

Scale of Statwe Miles = eenenenieomnele) I §io 20·«S0-a0 “b+ West from 43 Washington 42

Wk A K.Johnston. Edinburgh, and London

mAb

Chey

Vol 18 (Orne-Phthisis)

Britannica 9th

otefeteteitivie?

s. mF

“iat

tee ?

a

Ne eee ey

5

eee

aegumie tend

—— x ert es 30-3555 Cates ere

are soul

nt

nitit it i!

,

ae elie e4

:

ie) ‘thik

Pleas

HP

| hee f a

rile

wit hah shalt aie i rte i ”

}

Sere

=

SPI, Nt visth! i wrtetl

{

+ 4)

tt

=

,. 7

— aS

= Soe ees

- ~~

_ es

=

ae ———— Sts eae a ee —”.~.’ So

7

“=

} ‘

a Hehty VM \epdhds iw Pewee Le

if i

2

Ss — ~

=.

Oy

WW YOEEM MH Jett POE DOD Y bemet /hdbes

ree Sao

‘ ~

hi eatataktiteene

Hints ’ Bt i

Pot ie i}

+

¥ iM

)

af EMU (4) idtohele Wfototel ” f ais >

== Se

—— —

—o

oO

Se

——

5 1%.

—— Se

ve aac a — S

=<

-

—~,

,

tals 0

7

it ‘

ISOS SS

So —

National Library of Scotlan

ACI Ta

B000578750*

ad – —— ER. \7

7

—_

- 7

€ t = “~ 2 ays % o° Xow?

–

‘4

-

. ENUYGL)P IDLY BRAS Nan

- — a oa

Sa BIVoH PRCA

ENCYGLOPADIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

THE

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

DICTIONARY

OF

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XVIII

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCOLXXXV

[All Rights reserved. |

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA.

ORNE

RNE, a department of the north-west of France, about half of which formerly belonged to the province of Normandy and the rest to the duchy of Alencon and to Perche, lies between 48° 10’ and 48° 58’ N. lat., and between 1° E. and 0° 50’ W. long., and is bounded N. by Calvados, N.E. by Eure, 8.E. by Eure-et-Loir, 8. by Sarthe and Mayenne, and W. by Manche. The greatest length from east to west is 87 miles, and the area 2635 square miles. The population in 1881 numbered 376,126. Geologically there are two distinct regions: to the west of the Orne and the railway from Argentan to Alencon lie primitive rocks connected with those of Brittany; to the east begin the Jurassic and Cretaceous formations of Nor- mandy. The latter district is agriculturally the richest part of the department ; in the former the poverty of the soil has led the inhabitants to seek their subsistence from industrial pursuits. Between the northern portions, drain- ing to the Channel, and the southern portion, belonging to the basin of the Loire, stretch the hills of Perche and Normandy, which generally have a height of from 800 to 1000 feet. The highest point in the department, situated in the forest of Ecouves north of Alencon, reaches 1378 feet. The department gives birth to three Seine tribu- taries—the Eure, its affluent the Iton, and the Rille, which passes by Laigle. The Touques, passing by Vimoutier, the Dives, and the Orne fall into the English Channel,— the last passing Sées and Argentan, and receiving the Noireau with its tributary the Vere, which runs past Flers. Towards the Loire flow the Huisne, a feeder of the Sarthe passing by Mortagne, the Sarthe, which passes by Alengon, and the Mayenne, some of whose affluents rise to the north of the dividing range and make their way through it by the most picturesque defiles. Nearly the whole department, indeed, with its beautiful forests containing oaks several centuries old, its green meadows peopled with herds, its limpid streams, its deep gorges, its stupendous rocks, is one of the most picturesque of all France, though neither bathed by the sea nor possessing a truly moun- tainous character. In the matter of climate Orne be- longs to the Seine region. The mean temperature is 50° Fahr.; the summer heat is never extreme ; the west winds are the most frequent; the rainfall, distributed over about a hundred days in the year, amounts to

nearly 3 feet, or half as much again as the average for France.

Arable land occupies seven-twelfths of the surface, woods one-eighth, and pasture land almost as much. The live stock comprises 70,000 horses, 4000 asses, 122,000 sheep (35,500 high-bred), yielding in 1878 660,000 tb of wool of the value of nearly £25,000, 53,000 pigs, 2800 goats, 210,000 horned cattle, 30,000 dogs, 700,000 fowls, 53,000 geese, and 15,800 beehives, each producing on the average 2 lb of wax and 20 tb of honey. Horse-breeding is the most flourishing business in the rural districts ; there are three breeds—those of Perche, Le Merlerault (a cross between Norman and English horses), and Brittany.

|The great Government stud of Le Pin is situated

between Le Merlerault and Argentan. Several horse- training establishments exist in the department. A large number of lean cattle are bought in the neighbouring departments to be fattened; the farms in the vicinity of Vimoutier, on the borders of Calvados, produce the famous Camenbert cheese, and others excellent butter. In 1882 Orne produced 3,288,000 bushels of wheat, meslin 431,000, rye 315,700, barley 1,510,000, oats 3,410,000, buckwheat 600,000, potatoes 654,000, beetroot 939,000 ewt., colza seed 5000 cwt., hemp 8300 cwt., besides fodder in great quantity and variety, pulse, flax, fruits, &c. The variety of production is due to the great natural diversity of the soils. Small farms are the rule, and the fields in those cases are surrounded by hedges relieved by pollard trees. Along the roads or in the enclosures are planted numer- ous pear and apple trees (nearly 3,000,000), yielding 58,000,000 gallons of cider and perry, part of which is manufactured into brandy. Beech, oak, birch, and pine are the chief timber trees in the extensive forests of the department, of which a third belongs to the state. Orne contains iron ore of poor quality, granite quarries employ- ing from 400 to 500 workmen, and a kind of smoky quartz known as Alengon diamond. Its most celebrated mineral waters are those of the hot springs of Bagnoles, which contain salt, sulphur, and arsenic, and are employed for tonic and restorative purposes in cases of general debility. In the forest of Belléme is the chalybeate spring of La Hesse, which was used by the Romans. The other mineral springs of the department are chalybeate or XVIII. — 1

sulphurous. Cotton and linen weaving forms the staple industry of Orne, 51 establishments (123,000 spindles and 12,170 looms) being devoted to cotton, 2 establish- ments (500 spindles) to wool, and 3 establishments (2400 spindles and 2800 looms) to linen. Flers manufactures ticking, table-linen, furniture satin, cotton cloth, and thread, employs 28,000 workmen, and produces to the annual value of £1,520,000. La Ferté Macé employs 10,000 workmen in the hand-loom manufacture of cotton. Alengon and Vimoutier are engaged in the production of linen and canvas, and have also dye-works and bleacheries. About 2000 workmen are employed at Alengon in the making of the lace which takes its name from the town. Foundries, wire-works, and one blast furnace also exist in the department, and cutlery, boilers, and articles in copper,

zinc, and lead are manufactured. ‘Tin wares, pins, and needles are produced at Laigle. Glass-works give employ- ment to 600 workmen, and turn out glass to the value of more than £100,000. There are flourishing paper-mills, tanneries (the waters of the Orne giving a special quality to the leather), and glove-works. There are in all 133 establishments making use of steam (2128 horse-power). There are 848 miles of railway. The department consists of four arrondissements (Alengon, Argentan, Domfront, and Mortagne), 36 cantons, and 511 communes, forms the diocese of Sées, depends on the Caen court of appeal, and is included in the corps d’armée of Le Mans. The com- munes with moré than 5000 inhabitants are Alengon (17,237), Flers (12,304), La Ferté Macé (9396), Argentan (6300), and Laigle (5308).

ORNITHOLOGY

RNITHOLOGY? in its proper sense is the methodi-

cal study and consequent knowledge of Birds with all

that relates to them; but the difficulty of assigning a limit to the commencement of such study and knowledge gives the word a very vague meaning, and practically procures its application to much that does not enter the domain of Science. This elastic application renders it impossible

in the following sketch of the history of Ornithology to draw any sharp distinction between works that are.emphatically ornithological and those to which that title can only be attached by courtesy; for, since Birds have always attracted

far greater attention than any other group of animals with |.

which in number or in importance they can be compared, there has grown up concerning them a literature of corre- sponding magnitude and of the widest range, extending from the recondite and laborious investigations of the morphologist and anatomist to the casual observations of the sportsman or the schoolboy. The chief cause of the disproportionate amount of attention which Birds have received plainly arises from the way in which so many of them familiarly present themselves to us, or even (it may be said) force themselves upon our notice. Trusting to the freedom from danger conferred by the power of flight, most Birds have no need to lurk hidden in dens, or to slink from place to place under shelter of the inequalities of the ground or of the vegetation which clothes it, as is the case with so many other animals of similar size. Besides this, a great number of the Birds which thus display themselves freely to our gaze are conspicuous for the beauty of their plumage ; and there are very few that are not remarkable for the grace of their form. Some Birds again enchant us with their voice, and others administer to our luxuries and wants, while there is scarcely a species which has not idiosyncrasies that are found to be of engaging interest the more we know of them. Moreover, it is clear that the art of the fowler is one that must have been practised from the very earliest times, and to follow that art with success no inconsiderable amount of acquaint- ance with the haunts and habits of Birds is a necessity. Owing to one or another of these causes, or to the combina- tion of more than one, it is not surprising that the obser- vation of Birds has been from a very remote period a favourite pursuit among nearly all nations, and this obser- vation has by degrees led to a study more or less framed on methodical principles, finally reaching the dignity of a

1 Ornithologia, from the Greek épyi6-, crude form of dps, a bird, and -Aoyla, allied to Aédyos, commonly Englished a discourse. The earliest

known use of the word Ornithology seems to be in the third edition of Blount's Glossographia (1670), where it is noted as being '

science, and a study that has its votaries in almost all classes of the population of every civilized country. In the ages during which intelligence dawned on the world's total ignorance, and even now in those districts that have not yet emerged from the twilight of a knowledge still more imperfect than is our own at present," an additional and perhaps a stronger reason for paying attention to the ways of Birds existed, or exists, in their association with the cherished beliefs handed down from generation to generation among many races of men, and not unfrequently interwoven in their mythology.'

Moreover, though Birds make a not unimportant appear- ance in the earliest written records of the human race, the painter's brush has preserved their counterfeit presentment for a still longer period. What is asserted—and that, so far as the writer is aware, without contradiction—by Egyptologists of the highest repute to be the oldest picture in the world is a fragmentary fresco taken from a tomb at Maydoom, and happily deposited, though in a decaying condition, in the Museum at Boolak. 'This picture is said to date from the time of the third or fourth dynasty, some three thousand years before the Christian era. In it are depicted with a marvellous fidelity, and thorough apprecia- tion of form and colouring (despite a certain conventional treatment), the figures of six Geese. Four of these figures can be unhesitatingly referred to two species (Anser albifrons and A. rujficollis) well known at the present day ; and if the two remaining figures, belonging to a third species, were re-examined by an expert they would very possibly be capable of determination with no less certainty.* In later ages the representations of Birds of one sort or another in Egyptian paintings and sculptures become countless, and the bassi-riliext of Assyrian monuments, though mostly belonging of course to a subsequent period, are not without them. No figures of Birds, however, seem yet to have been found on the incised stones, bones, or ivories of the prehistoric races of Europe.

It is of course necessary to name ARISTOTLE (born B.C. Arist

385, died B.c. 322) as the first serious author on Ornithology with whose writings we are acquainted, but even he had,

2 Of the imperfection of our present knowledge more must be said presently.

8 For instances of this among Greeks and Romans almost any dictionary or treatise of ‘‘ Classical Antiquities” may be consulted, while as regards the superstitions of barbarous nations the authorities are far too numerous to be here named.

4 The portion of the picture containing the figures of the Geese has been figured by Mr Lortig (Ride in Egypt, p. 209), and the present writer owes to that gentleman’s kindness the opportunity of examining a copy made on the spot by an accomplished artist, as well as the information that it is No. 988 of Mariette’s Catalogue. See art. MURAL Decoration, vol. xvii. p. 39, fig. 7.

OPN. TY HC L.0 GY 3

as he tells us, predecessors ; and, looking to that portion of his works on animals which has come down to us, one finds that, though more than 170 sorts of Birds are mentioned, yet what is said of them amounts on the whole to very little, and this consists more of desultory observations in illustration of his general remarks (which are to a con- siderable extent physiological or bearing on the subject of reproduction) than of an attempt at a connected account of Birds. Some of these observations are so meagre as to have given plenty of occupation to his many commentators, who with varying success have for more than three hundred years been endeavouring to determine what were the Birds of which he wrote ; and the admittedly corrupt state of the text adds to their difficulties. One of the most recent of these commentators, the late Prof. Sundevall—equally proficient in classical as in ornithological knowledge—was, in 1863, compelled to leave more than a score of the Birds unrecognized. Yet it is not to be supposed that in what survives of the great philosopher’s writings we have more than a fragment of the knowledge possessed by him, though the hope of recovering his Zouxd or his “Avaropuxd, in which he seems to have given fuller descriptions of the animals he knew, can be hardly now entertained. A Latin transla- tion by Gaza of Aristotle’s existing zoological work was printed at Venice in 1503. Another version, by Scaliger, was subsequently published. Two wretched English trans- lations have appeared.

Next in order of date, though at a long interval, comes Carus Purntus SEcunDUS, commonly known as Priny the Elder, who died a.p. 79, author of a general and very dis- cursive Historia Naturalis in thirty-seven books, of which Book X. is devoted to Birds. A considerable portion of Pliny's work may be traced to his great predecessor, of whose information he freely and avowedly availed himself, while the additions thereto made cannot be said to be, on the whole, improvements. Neither of these authors attempted to classify the Birds known to them beyond a very rough and for the most part obvious grouping. Aristotle seems to recognize eight principal groups : —(1) Gampsonyches, approximately equivalent to the Accipitres of Linnzus; (2) Scolecophaga, containing most of what would now be called Oscines, excepting indeed the (3) Acanthophaga, composed of the Goldfinch, Siskin, and a few others; (4) Senipophaga, the Woodpeckers; (5) Peristeroide, or Pigeons ; (6) Schizopoda, (7) Steganopoda, and (8) Barea, nearly the same respectively as the Linnean Gralle, Anseres, and Galline.. Pliny, relying wholly on characters taken from the feet, limits himself to three groups—without assigning names to them—those which have "hooked tallons, as Hawkes; or round long clawes, as Hennes ; or else they be broad, flat, and whole-footed, as Geese and all the sort in manner of water-foule"—to use the words of Philemon Holland, who, in 1601, published a quaint and, though condensed, yet fairly faithful English translation of Pliny's work.

About a century later came AELIAN, who died about A.D. 140, and compiled in Greek (though he was an Italian by birth) a number of miscellaneous observations on the peculiarities of animals. His work is a kind of common- place book kept without scientific discrimination. A con- siderable number of Birds are mentioned, and something said of almost each of them; but that something is too often nonsense—according to modern ideas—though occasionally a fact of interest may therein be found. It contains numerous references to former or contemporary writers whose works have perished, but there is nothing to shew that they were wiser than /¥lian himself.

1This is Sundevall's estimate ; Drs Aubert and Wimmer in their excellent edition of the 'Ioroplat wept (wy (Leipzig: 1868) limit the number to 126.

_ The twenty-six books De Animalibus of ALBERTUS Albertus Macnus (Groot), who died a.p. 1282, were printed in Magnus.

1478 ; but were apparently already well known from manu- script copies. They are founded on the works of Aristotle, many of whose statements are almost literally repeated, and often without acknowledgment. Occasionally Avicenna, or some other less-known author, is quoted; but it is hardly too much to say that the additional information is almost worthless. The twenty-third of these books is De Avibus, and therein a great number of Birds' names make their earliest appearance, few of which are without interest from a philologist's if not an ornithologist's point of view, but there is much difficulty in recognizing the species to which many of them belong. In 1485 was printed the first dated copy of the volume known as the Ortus Sanitatis, to the popularity of which many editions testify.

Though said by its author, Jonann WONNECKE VON CAUB Cuba.

(Latinized as JOHANNES DE CuBA)," to have been composed from a study of the collections formed by a certain noble- man who had travelled in Eastern Europe, Western Asia, and Egypt—possibly Breidenbach, an account of whose travels in the Levant was printed at Mentz in 1486—it is really a medical treatise, and its zoological portion is mainly an abbreviation of the writings of Albertus Magnus, with a few interpolations from Isidorus of Seville (who flour- ished in the beginning of the seventh century, and was the author of many works highly esteemed in the Middle Ages) and a work known as PaystoLocus (q.v.). The third trac- tatus of this volume deals with Birds—including among them Bats, Bees, and other flying creatures; but as it is the first printed book in which figures of Birds are introduced it merits notice, though most of the illustrations, which are rude woodcuts, fail, even in the coloured copies, to give any precise. indication of the species intended to be repre- sented. 'The scientific degeneracy of this work is mani- fested as much by its title (Ortus for Hortus) as by the mode in which the several subjects are treated ;? but the

revival of learning was at hand, and Wint1Am TURNER, a Turner.

Northumbrian, while residing abroad to avoid persecution at home, printed at Cologne in 1544 the first commentary on the Birds mentioned by

Aristotle and Pliny conceived in anything like the spirit that moves modern naturalists.* In the same year and from the same press was issued a

Dialogus de Avibus by GyBertus Loncoutus, and in 1570 Longo- treatise De rariorum us. In this last work, small ©#™s-

Qarus brought out in London his animalium atque stirpium historia.

though it be, ornithology has a good share ; and all three may still be consulted with interest and advantage by its votaries.© Meanwhile the study received a great impulse from the appearance, at Zurich in 1555, of the third book

of the illustrious ConraD GEsNER's Historia Animalium Gesner.

"qvi est de Auium natura," and at Paris in the same year

72 ee

2 On this point see G. A. Pritzel, Botan. Zeitung, 1846, pp. 785-790, and Thes. Literat. Botanic (Lipsie : 1851), pp. 349-352.

8 Absurd as much that we find both in Albertus Magnus and the Ortus seems to modern eyes, if we go a step lower in the scale and consult the 'Restiaries" or treatises on animals which were common from the twelfth to the fourteenth century we shall meet with many more absurdities. See for instance that by PHinirps DE THAUN (PuILiprus TaONENSIS), dedicated to Adelaide or Alice, queen of Henry I. of England, and pro- pably written soon after 1121, as printed by the late Mr Thomas Wright, in his Popular Treatises on Science written during the Middle Ages (London: 1841).

4 This was reprinted at Cambridge in 1823 by the late Dr George Thackeray.

5 The Seventh of Worron's De differentiis animalium Libri Deeem, published at Paris in 1552, treats of Birds ; but his work is merely a compilation from Aristotle and Pliny, with references to other classical writers who have more or less incidentally mentioned Birds and other

animals. ‘The author in his preface states—“Veterum scriptorum sententias in unum quasi cummlum coaceruaui, de meo nihil addidi.” Nevertheless he makes some attempt at a systematic arrangement of Birds, which, according to his lights, is far from despicable.

-{ Of BL ne ie G6

Belon, of Pierre Breton’s (BELLoNIUS) Histoire de la nature des | cited. With certain modifications in principle not very Oyseaux. Gesner brought an amount of erudition, hitherto | important, but characterized by much more elaborate detail, unequalled, to bear upon his subject ; and, making due allow- | Aldrovandus adopted Belon’s method of arrangement, but ance for the times in which he wrote, his judgment must in | ina few respects there isa manifest retrogression. The work most respects be deemed excellent. In his work, however, | of Aldrovandus was illustrated by copper-plates, but none there is little that can be called systematic treatment. | of his figures approach those of his immediate predecessors Like nearly all his predecessors since Aulian, he adopted an | in character or accuracy. Nevertheless the book was alphabetical arrangement,! though this was not too pedanti- | eagerly sought, and several editions of it appeared.® cally preserved, and did not hinder him from placing Mention must be made of a medical treatise by CASPAR Schwenck together the kinds of Birds which he supposed (and gene- | ScHWENCKFELD, published at Liegnitz in 1603, under the feld. rally supposed rightly) to have the most resemblance to that title of Thervotropheum Silesve, the fourth book of which one whose name, being best known, was chosen for the | consists of an “‘ Aviarium Silesiz,” and is the earliest of headpiece (as it were) of his particular theme, thus recog- | the works we now know by the name of Fauna. The nizing to some extent the principle of classification.?_ Belon, author was well acquainted with the labours of his predeces- with perhaps less book-learning than his contemporary, | sors, as his list of over one hundred of them testifies. Most was evidently no mean scholar, and undoubtedly had more | of the Birds he describes are characterized with accuracy practical knowledge of Birds—their internal as well as | sufficient to enable them to be identified, and his obser- external structure. Hence his work, written in French, | vations upon them have still some interest ; but he was contains a far greater amount of original matter ; and his | innocent of any methodical system, and was not

exempt personal observations made in many countries, from | from most of the professional fallacies of his time.*

England to Egypt, enabled him to avoid most of the Hitherto, from the nature of the case, the works aforesaid

puerilities which disfigure other works of his own or of a | treated of scarcely any but the Birds belonging to the orbis

preceding age. Besides this, Belon disposed the Birds | veteribus notus; but the geographical discoveries of the

known to him according to a definite system, which (rude | sixteenth century began to bear fruit, and many animals of

as we now know it to be) formed a foundation on which | kinds unsuspected were, about one hundred years later,

several of his successors were content to build, and even | made known. Here there is only space to name Bonrtivs,

to this day traces of its influence may still be discerned in | CLustus, HERNANDEZ (or FERNANDEZ), MaRcGRAVE,

the arrangement followed by writers who have faintly | NrzREMBERG, and Piso,° whose several works describing

appreciated the principles on which modern taxonomers | the natural products of both the Indies—whether the

rest the outline of their schemes. Both his work and that | result of their own observation or compilation—together

of Gesner were illustrated with woodcuts, many of which | with those of Oxins and Worm, produced a marked effect,

display much spirit and regard to accuracy. . since they led up to what may be deemed the foundation of Belon, as has just been said, had a knowledge of the | scientific Ornithology.®

anatomy of Birds, and he seems to have been the first to This foundation was laid by the joint labours of FRANcIs Wil-

institute a direct comparison of their skeleton with that of | WinLucHBy (born 1635, died 1672) and Jonny Ray (born lughby

Man ; but in this respect he only anticipated by a few | 1628, died 1705), for it is impossible to separate their ™¢4v-

Coiter. years the more precise researches of VoLCHER ColITER, a | share of work in Natural History more than to say that, : Frisian, who in 1573 and 1575 published at Nuremberg | while the former more especially devoted himself to zoology, two treatises, in one of which the internal structure of | botany was the favourite pursuit of the latter. Together Birds in general is very creditably described, while in the | they studied, together they travelled, and together they other the osteology and myology of certain forms is given | collected. Willughby, the younger of the two, and at first in considerable detail, and illustrated by carefully-drawn | the other's pupil, seems to have gradually become the figures. The first is entitled Luvternarwm et internarum | master; but, he dying before the promise of his life was ful- principalium humani corporis Tabulex, é&c., while the second, | filled, his writings were given to the world by his friend which is the most valuable, is merely appended to the | Ray, who, adding to them from his own stores, published Lectiones Gabrielis Fallopii de partibus similaribus humani | the Ornithologia in Latin in 1676, and in English with corporis, &c., and thus, the scope of each work being | many emendations in 1678. In this work Birds generally regarded as medical, the author's labours were wholly over- | were grouped in two great divisions—‘‘ Land-Fowl" and looked by the mere natural-historians who followed, though | ‘ Water-Fowl,"—the former being subdivided into those Coiter introduced a table, ‘“‘ De differentiis Auium," furnish- | which have a crooked beak and talons and those which have ing a key to a rough classification of such Birds as were | a straighter bill and claws, while the latter was separated known to him, and this as nearly the first attempt of the | into those which frequent waters and watery places and kind deserves notice here. those that swim in the water—each subdivision being

eee Contemporary with these three men was Utysszs ALprRo- | further broken up into many sections, to the whole of which

vanaus.

VANDUS, a Bolognese, who wrote an Historia Naturaliwm in sixteen folio volumes, most of which were not printed till after his death in 1605; but those on Birds appeared between 1599 and 1603. The work is almost wholly a compilation, and that not of the most discriminative kind, while a peculiar jealousy of Gesner is continuously displayed, though his statements are very constantly quoted—nearly always as those of " Ornithologus," his name appearing but few times in the text, and not at all in the list of authors

1 Even at the present day it may be shrewdly suspected that not a few ornithologists would gladly follow Gesner's plan in their despair of seeing, in their own time, a classification which would really deserve the epithet scientific.

2 For instance, under the title of '' Accipiter"" we have to look, not only for the Sparrow-Hawk and Gos-Hawk, but for many other Birds of the Family (as we now call it) removed comparatively far from those species by modern ornithologists.

a key was given, Thus it became possible for almost any diligent reader without much chance of error to refer to its

3 The Historia Naturalis of JOHANNES JOHNSTONUS, said to be of Scottish descent but by birth a Pole, ran through several editions during the seventeenth century, but is little more than an epitome of the work of Aldrovandus.

4 The Hierozoicon of Bochart—a treatise on the animals named in Holy Writ—was published in 1619.

5 For Lichtenstein's determination of the Birds described by Marcgrave and Piso see the Adbhandlungen of the Berlin Academy for 1817 (pp. 155 sq.).

6 The earliest list of British Birds seems to be that in the Pinax Rerum Naturalium of CHRISTOPHER MERRETT, published in 1667. In the following year appeared the Onomasticon Zooicon of WALTER CHARLETON, which contains some information on ornithology. An enlarged edition of the latter, under the title of Zercitationes &c., was published in 1677; but neither of these writers is of much authority. In 1684 SrBBaLp in his Scotia illustrata published the earliest Fauna of Scotland.

uinneus.

Barrere.

Méhrin g.

Klein.

_ Catesby,

proper place nearly every bird he was likely to meet with. Ray’s interest in ornithology continued, and in 1694 he completed a Synopsis Methodica Avium, which, through the fault of the booksellers to whom it was entrusted, was not published till 1713, when Derham gave it to the world.?

Two years after Ray’s death, Linnaus, the great reformer of Natural History, was born, and in 1735 ap- peared the first edition of the celebrated Systema Nature. Successive editions of this work were produced under its author’s supervision in 1740, 1748, 1758, and 1766. Impressed by the belief that verbosity was the bane of science, he carried terseness to an extreme which frequently created obscurity, and this in no branch of zoology more than in that which relates to Birds. Still the practice introduced by him of assigning to each species a diagnosis by which it ought in theory to be distinguishable from any other known species, and of naming it by two words—the first being the generic and the second the specific term, was so manifest an improvement upon any thing which had previously obtained that the Linnzean method of differ- entiation and nomenclature established itself before long in spite of all opposition, and in principle became almost

universally adopted. The opposition came of course from those who were habituated to the older state of things, and saw no evil in the cumbrous, half-descriptive half- designative titles which had to be employed whenever a species was to be spoken of or written about. The supporters of the new method were the rising generation of naturalists, many of whose names have since become famous, but among them were some whose admiration of their chief carried them toa pitch of enthusiasm which now seems absurd. Careful as Linneeus was in drawing up his definitions of groups, it was immediately seen that they occasionally were made to comprehend creatures whose characteristics contradicted the prescribed diagnosis, His chief glory lies in his having'reduced, at least for a time, a chaos into order, and in his shewing both by precept and practice that a name was not a definition. In his classifica- tion of Birds he for the most part followed Ray, and where he departed from his model he seldom improved upon it.

In 1745 Barrere brought out at Perpignan a little book called Ornithologie Specimen nowum, aud in 1752 Mourine published at Aurich one still smaller, his Aviwm Genera. Both these works (now rare) are manifestly framed on the Linnzan method, so far as it had then reached; but in their arrangement of the various forms of Birds they differed greatly from that which they designed to supplant, and they deservedly obtained little success. Yet as systematists their authors were no worse than Kiz1n, whose Historix Avium Prodromus, appearing at Liibeck in 1750, and Stemmata Avium at Leipzig in 1759, met with considerable favour in some quarters. The chief merit of the latter work lies in its forty plates, whereon the heads and feet of many Birds are indifferently figured."

But, while the successive editionsof Linnzeus's great work were revolutionizing Natural History, and his example of precision in language producing excellent effect on scientific writers, several other authors were advancing the study of Ornithology in a very different way—a way that pleased the eye even more than his labours were pleasing the mind. Between 1731 and 1743 Marx Carespy brought out in

1 To this was added a supplement by PETIVER on the Bird of Madras, taken from pictures and information sent him by one Edward Buckley of

Fort St George, being the first attempt to catalogue the Birds of any part of the British possessions jn India.

2 After Klcin’s death his Prodromus, written in Latin, had the unwonted fortune of two distinct translations into German, published in the same year 1760, the one at Leipzig and Liibeck by BERN, the other at Danzig by REy@zR—each of whom added more or less to the original.

5)

London his Natural History of Carolina—two large folios containing highly-coloured plates of the Birds of that colony, Florida, and the Bahamas —the forerunners of those numerous costly tomes which will have to be men- tioned presently at greater length? ELEAZAR ALBIN between 1738 and 1740 produced a Natural History of Birds in three volumes of more modest dimensions, seeing that it is in quarto; but he seems to have been ignorant of Ornithology, and his coloured plates are greatly inferior to Catesby’s. Far better both as draughtsman and as authority was George Epwarps, who in 1743 began, under the same title as Albin, a series of plates with letter- press, which was continued by the name of Gleanings in Natural History, and finished in 1760, when it had reached seven parts, forming four quarto volumes, the figures of which are nearly always quoted with approval.*

The year which saw the works of Edwards completed was still further distinguished by the appearance in France, where little had been done since Belon’s days,® in six quarto volumes, of the Ornithologie of MATHURIN JACQUES

Brisson—a work of very great merit so far as it goes, for Brisson,

as a descriptive ornithologist the author stands even now unsurpassed ; but it must be said that his knowledge, according to internal evidence, was confined to books and to the external parts of Birds’ skins. It was enough for him to give a scrupulously exact description of such specimens as came under his eye, distinguishing these by prefixing two asterisks to their namie, using a single asterisk where he had only seen a part of the Bird, and leaving unmarked those that he described from other authors. He also added

information as to the Museum (generally Réaumur’s, of which he had been in charge) containing the specimen he described, acting on a principle which would have been advantageously adopted by many of his contemporaries and successors. His attempt at classifica- tion was certainly better than that of Linnzus ; and it is rather curious that the researches of the latest ornitho- logists point to results in some degree comparable with Brisson’s systematic arrangement, for they refuse to keep the Birds-of-Prey at the head of the Class Aves, and they require the establishment of a much larger number of “ Orders” than for a long while has been thought advisable. Of such “Orders” Brisson had twenty-six, and he gave Pigeons and Poultry precedence of the Birds which are plunderers and scavengers. But greater value lies in his generic or sub-generic divisions, which, taken as a whole, are far more natural than those of Linnzeus, and consequently capable of better diagnosis. More than this, he seems to be the earliest ornithologist, perhaps the earliest zoologist, to conceive the idea of each genus possessing what is now called a “type ”—though such a term does not occur in his work ; and, in like manner, without declaring it in so many words, he indicated unmistakably the existence of subgenera— all this being effected by the skilful use of names. Untfor- tunately he was too soon in the field to avail himself, even had he been so minded, of the convenient mode of nomencla- Immediately on the

3 Several Birds from Jamaica were figured in SLoann’s Voyage, &c. (1705-1725), and a good many exotic species in the Thesaurus, BECh, of SEBA (1734-1765), but from their faulty execution these plates had little effect upon Ornithology.

4The works of Catesby and Edwards were afterwards reproduced at Nuremberg and Amsterdam by SELIGMANN, with the letterpress in German, French, and Dutch. :

5 Birds were treated of in a worthless fashion by one D. B. in a Dictionnaire raisonné et universel des animaux, published at Paris in

1759.

Salerne.

D’Auben- ton.

Butfon and Mont- beillard.

6

was introduced. It is certain that the first four volumes were written if not printed before that method was promulgated, and when the fame of Linnzus as a zoologist rested on little more than the very meagre sixth edition of the Systema Nature and the first edition of his Fauna Suecica. Brisson has been charged with jealousy of if not hostility to the great Swede, and it is true that in the preface to his Ornithologie he complains of the insuffici- ency of the Linnean characters, but, when one considers how much better acquainted with Birds the Frenchman was, such criticism must be allowed to be pardonable if not wholly just. Biisson’s work was in French, with a parallel translation in Latin, which last was reprinted separately at Leyden two years afterwards.

In 1767 there was issued at Paris a book entitled Phistoire naturelle éclaircie dans une de ses parties princi- pales, V Ornithologie. This was the work of SALERNE, published after his death, and is often spoken of as being a mere translation of Ray’s Synopsis, but is thereby very inadequately described, for, though it is confessedly founded on that little book, a vast amount of fresh matter, and mostly of good quality, is added.

The success of Edwards’s very respectable work seems to have provoked competition, and in 1765, at the instiga- tion of Buffon, the younger D’AuBENTON began the pub- lication known as the Planches Enluminéez W histoire naturelle, which appearing in forty-two parts was not com- pleted till 1780, when the plates! it contained reached the number of 1008— all coloured, as its title intimates, and nearly all representing Birds. This enormous work was subsidized by the French Government; and, though the figures are utterly devoid of artistic merit, they display the species they are intended to depict with sufficient approach to fidelity to ensure recognition in most cases without fear of error, which in the absence of any text is no small praise.?

But Burron was not content with merely causing to be published this unparalleled set of plates. He seems to have regarded the work just named as a necessary precursor to his own labours in Ornithology. His Histoire Naturelle, générale et particuliére, was begun in 1749, and in 1770 he brought out, with the assistance of GUBNAU DE MonTBEILLaRrD,' the first volume of that grand undertaking relating to Birds, which, for the first time since the days of Aristotle, became the theme of one who possessed real literary capacity. It is not too much to say that Buffon's florid fancy revelled in such a subject as was now that on which he exercised his brilliant pen ; but it would be unjust to examine too closely what to many of his contemporaries seemed sound philosophical reasoning under the light that has since burst upon us. Strictly orthodox though he pro- fessed to be, there were those, both among his own country- men and foreigners, who could not read his speculative indictments of the workings of Nature without a shudder; and it is easy for any one in these days to frame a reply, pointed with ridicule, to such a chapter as he wrote on the wretched fate of the Woodpecker. In the nine volumes devoted to the Histoire Naturelle des Oiseaux there are passages which will for ever live in the memory of those

1} They were drawn and engraved by MaRTiNneT, who himself began in 1787 a Histoire des Oiseaux with small coloured plates which have some merit, but the text is worthless. The work seems not to have been finished and is rare. For the opportunity of seeing a copy the writer is indebted to Mr Gurney.

2 Between 1767 and 1776 there appeared at Florence a Storia Naturale degli Uccelli, in five folio volumes, containing a number of ill-drawn and ill-coloured figures from the collection of Giovanni Gerini, an ardent collector who died in 1751, and therefore must be acquitted of any share in the work, which, though sometimes attributed to him, is that of certain learned men who did not happen to be ornitho- logists (¢f. Savi, Ornitologia Toscana, i. Introduzione, p. v).

3 He retired on the completion of the sixth volume, and thereupon Buffon associated Bexon with himself.

OM b THO LO G&G ¥

that carefully read them, however much occasional expres- sions, or even the general tone of the author, may grate upon their feelings. He too was the first man who formed any theory that may be called reasonable of the Geographical Distribution of Animals, though this theory was scarcely touched in the ornithological portion of his work, and has since proved to be not in accordance with facts. He pro- claimed the variability of species in opposition to the views of Linneeus as to their fixity, and moreover supposed that this variability arose in part by degradation. Taking his labours as a whole, there cannot be a doubt that he enor- mously enlarged the purview of naturalists, and, even if limited to Birds, that, on the completion of his work upon them in 1783, Ornithology stood in a very different position from that which it had before occupied. Because he opposed the system of Linneus he has been said to be opposed to systems in general ; but that is scarcely correct, for he had a system of his own; and, as we now see it, it appears neither much better nor much worse than the systems which had been hitherto invented, or perhaps. than any which was for many years to come propounded. It is certain that he despised any kind of scientific phraseology —a crime in the eyes of those who consider precise nomenclature to be the end of science ; but those who deem it merely a means whereby knowledge can be securely stored will take a different view—and have done so.

Great as were the services of Buffon to Ornithology in Latham,

one direction, those of a wholly different kind rendered by our countryman Joun LaTHAM must not be overlooked. In 1781 he began a work the practical utility of which was immediately recognized. This was his (General Synopsis of Birds, and, though formed generally on the model of Linnzus, greatly diverged in some respects there- from. The classification was modified, chiefly on the old lines of Willughby and Ray, and certainly for the better ; but no scientific nomenclature was adopted, which, as the author subsequently found, was a change for the worse. His scope was co-extensive with that of Brisson, but Latham did not possess the inborn faculty of picking out the character wherein one species differs from another. His opportunities of becoming acquainted with Birds were hardly inferior to Brisson’s, for during Latham’s long life- time there poured in upon him countless new discoveries from all parts of the world, but

especially from the newly- explored shores of Australia and the islands of the Pacific Ocean. The British Museum had been formed, and he had access to everything it contained in addition to the abundant materials afforded him by the private Museum of Sir Ashton Lever.' Latham entered, so far as the limits of his work would allow, into the history of the Birds he described, and this with evident zest, whereby he differed from his French predecessor ; but the number of cases in which he erred as to the determination of his species must be very great, and not unfrequently the same species is described more than once. His Synopsis was finished in 1785 ; two supplements were added in 1787 and 1802,° and in 1790 he produced an abstract of the work under the title of Index Ornithologicus, wherein he assigned names on the Linnzean method to all the species described. Not to recur again to his labours, it may be said here that between 1821 and 1828 he published at Winchester, in eleven volumes, an enlarged edition of his original work, entitling it A General History of Birds; but his defects as

- See Prof. Mivart's address to the Section of Biology, Rep. Brit. Association (Sheffield Meeting), 1879, p. 356.

5In 1792 SHaw began the Museum Leverianum in illustration of this collection, which was finally dispersed by sale, and what is known to remain of it found its way to Vienna. Of the specimens in the British Museum described by Latham it is to be feared that scarcely any exist. They were probably very imperfectly prepared.

6 A German translation by Bechstein subsequently appeared.

3onna- erre.

/ieillot.

Pennant.

ee. 8. Miiller.

Boddaert.

a compiler, which had been manifest before, rather increased with age, and the consequences were not happy.! About the time that Buffon was bringing to an end his

. studies of Birds, Maupuyt undertook to write the Orni-

thologie of the Encyclopédie Méthodiqgue—a compara- tively easy task, considering the recent works of his fellow- countrymen on that subject, and finished in 1784. Here it requires no further comment, especially as a new edition was called for in 1790, the ornithological portion of which was begun by BonnavTErRE, who, however, had only finished three hundred and twenty pages of it when he lost his life in the French Revolution; and the work thus arrested was continued by VrerLuoT under the slightly changed title of Z'ableaw encyclopédique et méthodique des trois régnes de la Nature—the Ornithologie forming volumes four to seven, and not completed till 1823. In the former edition Mauduyt had taken the subjects alpha- betically; but here they are disposed according to an arrangement, with some few modifications, furnished by D'Aubenton, which is extremely shallow and unworthy of consideration.

Several other works bearing upon Ornithology in general, but of less importance than most of those just named, belong to this period. Among others may be mentioned the Genera of Birds by THomMas PENNANT, first printed at Edinburgh in 1773, but best known by the edition which appeared in London in 1781; the Alementa Ornithologica and Museum Ornithologicum of ScuArrer, published at Ratisbon in 1774 and 1784 respectively ; Perer Brown's New Illustrations of Zoology in London in 1776; Hermann's Tubule Affinitatum Animalium at Strasburg in 1783, followed posthumously in 1804 by his Observa- tiones Zoologice ; Jacquin's Beytraege zwr Geschichte der Voegel at Vienna in 1784, and in 1790 at the same place the larger work of SpaLowsky with nearly the same title ; SparrmMan's Museum Carlsonianum at Stockholm from 1786 to 1789; and in 1794 Hayes's Portraits of rare and curious Birds from the menagery of Child the banker at Osterley near London, The same

draughtsman (who had in 1775 produced a History of British Birds) in 1822 began another series of Figures of rare and curious Birds?

The practice of Brisson, Buffon, Latham, and others of neglecting to name after the Linnean fashion the species they described gave great encouragement to compilation, and led to what has proved to be of some inconvenience to modern ornithologists. In 1773 P. L. 8S. Mtzter brought out at Nuremberg a German translation of the Systema Nature, completing it in 1776 by a Supplement containing a list of animals thus described, which had hitherto been technically anonymous, with diagnoses and names on the Linnean model. In 1783 Boppazrr printed at Utrecht a Table des Planches Enluminéez,3 in which he attempted to refer every species of Bird figured in that extensive series to its proper Linnwan genus, and to assign it a scientific name if it did not already possess one. In like manner in 1786, Scopor1—already the author of a little book published

1 He also prepared for publication a second edition of his Jndex Ornithologicus, but this was never printed, and the manuscript is now in the present writer's possession.

2 The Naturalist's Miscellany or Vivarium Naturale, in English and Latin, of SHAW and NoppgEr, the former being the author, the latter the draughtsman and engraver, was begun in 1789 and carried on till Shaw's death, forming twenty-four volumes. It contains figures of more than 280 Birds, but very poorly executed. In 1814 a sequel, The Zoological Miscellany, was begun by LEACH, Nodder continuing to do the plates. This was completed in 1817, and forms three volumes with 149 plates, 27 of which represent Birds.

3 Of this work only fifty copies were printed, and it is one of the rarest known to the ornithologist. Only two copies are believed to exist in England, one in the British Musenm, the other in private hands. It was reprinted in 1874 by Mr Tegetmeier.

at Leipzig in 1769 under the title of Annus I. [Historico- naturalis, in which are described many Birds, mostly from his own collection or the Imperial

vivarium at Vienna—was at the pains to print at Pavia in his miscellaneous Delco Flore et Faune Insubrice a Specimen Zoologicum* contain- ing diagnoses, duly named, of the Birds discovered and

described by SonnERAT in his Voyage aua Indes orientales Sonnerat.

and Voyage ala Nouvelle Guinée, severally published at Paris in 1772 and 1776. But the most striking example

of compilation was that exhibited by J. F. Gmetin, who Gmelin.

in 1788 commenced what he called the Thirteenth Edition of the celebrated Systema Nature, which obtained so wide a circulation that, in the comparative rarity of the original, the additions of this editor have been very frequently quoted, even by expert naturalists, as though they were the work of the author himself. Gmelin availed himself of every publication he could, but he perhaps. found his richest booty in the labours of Latham, neatly condensing his English descriptions into Latin diagnoses, and bestow- ing on them binomial names. Hence it is that Gmelin appears as the authority for so much of the nomenclature now in use. He took many liberties with the details of Linnus's work, but left the classification, at least of the Birds, as it was—a few new genera excepted."

During all this time little had been done in studying the internal structure of Birds since the works of Coiter already mentioned ®; but the foundations of the science of Embry- ology had been laid by the investigations into the develop- ment of the chick by the great Harvey. Between 1666 and 1669 PERRAULT edited at Paris eight accounts of the dissection by Du Verney of as many species of Birds, which, translated into English, were published by the Royal Society in 1702, under the title of The Natural History of Animals. After the death of the two anatomists just named, another series of similar descriptions of eight other species was found among their papers, and the whole were published in the Mémoires of the French Academy of Sciences in 1733 and 1734. had brought out at Amsterdam an Anatome Animalium, containing the results of all the dissections of animals that he could find ; and the second part of this book, treating of Volatilia, makes a respectable show of more than one hundred and twenty closely-printed quarto pages, though nearly two-thirds is devoted to a treatise De Ovo et

Pullo, containing among other things a reprint of Harvey’s researches, and the scientific rank of the whole book may be inferred from Bats being still classed with Birds. In

But in 1681 Grerarp Buasius Gerard Blasius.

1720 VatentTin1 published, at Frankfort-on-the-Main, his Valentini.

Amphitheatrum Zootomicum, in which again most of the existing accounts of the anatomy of Birds were reprinted. But these and many other contributions,’ made until nearly the close of the eighteenth century, though highly meritori- ous, were unconnected as a whole, and it is plain that no conception of what it was in the power of Comparative Anatomy to set forth had occurred to the most diligent dissectors. This privilege was reserved for GEORGES Cuvier, who in 1798 published at Paris his Zableau Elémentaire de Vhistoire naturelle des Animaux, and thus laid the foundation of a thoroughly and hitherto unknown Sw, De es eS

4 This was reprinted in 1882 by the Willughby Society.

5 DauDIN’s unfinished Traité élémentaire et complet @ Ornithologie appeared at Paris in 1800, and therefore is the last of these general works published in the eighteenth century.

6 A succinct notice of the older works on Ornithotomy is given by Prof, SELENKA in the introduction to that portion of Dr Bronn’s Klassen und Ordnungen des Thierreichs relating to Birds (pp. 1-9) published in 1869; and Prof, Carus’s Geschichte der Zoologie, pub- lished in 1872, may also be usefully consulted for further information on this and other heads,

7 The treatises of the two BARTHOLINIS and BORRICHIUS published at Copenhagen deserve mention if only to record the activity of Danish anatomists in those days.

Cuvier.

Marsigli.

inode of appreciating the value of the various groups of the Animal Kingdom. Yet his first attempt was a mere sketch. ! Though he made a perceptible advance on the classification of Linnzeus, at that time predominant, it is now easy to see in how many ways—want of sufficient material being no doubt one of the chief—Cuvier failed to produce a really natural arrangement. His principles, however, are those which must still guide taxonomers, notwithstanding that they have in so great a degree overthrown the entire scheme which he propounded. Confining our attention here, as of course it ought to be confined, to Ornithology, Cuvier's arrangement of the Class Aves is now seen to be not very much better than any which it superseded. But this view is gained by following the methods which Cuvier taught. In the work just mentioned few details are given; but even the more elaborate classification of Birds contained in his Lecons d' Anatomie Comparée of 1805 is based wholly on external characters, such as had been used by nearly all his predecessors ; and the Fégne Animal of 1817, when he was in his fullest vigour, afforded not the least evidence that he had ever dissected a couple even of Birds ? with the object of determining their relative position in his system, which then, as before, depended wholly on the configuration of bills, wings, and feet. But, though apparently without such a knowledge of the anatomy of Birds as would enable lim to apply it to the formation of that natural system which he was fully aware had yet to be sought, he seems to have been an excellent judge of the characters afforded by the bill and limbs, and the use he made of them, coupled with the extraordinary reputation he acquired on other grounds, procured for his system the adhesion for many years of the majority of ornithologists, and its influence though waning is still strong. Regret must always be felt by them that his great genius was never applied in earnest to their branch of study, especially when we consider that had it been so the perversion of energy in regard to the classification of Birds witnessed in England for nearly twenty years, and presently to be mentioned, would most likely have been prevented.?

Hitherto mention has chiefly been made of works on General Ornithology, but it will be understood that these were largely aided by the enterprise of travellers, and as there were many of them who published their narratives in

separate forms their contributions have to be considered. Of those travellers then the first to be here especially named is Marsieut, the fifth volume of whose Danubius Pannonico- Mysicus is devoted to the Birds he met with in the valley of the Danube, and appeared at the Hague in 1725, followed by a French translation in 1744.4 Most of the many pupils whom Linnzeus sent to foreign countries sub- mitted their discoveries to him, but Kamm, HAssELQvIst, and OsBEcK published separately their respective travels

1 It had no effect on LactipkDE, who in the following year added a Tableau Méthodique containing a classification of Birds to his Discours @ Ouverture (Mém. de U Institut, iii. pp. 454-468, 503-519).

?So little regard did he pay to the Osteology of Birds that, according to De Blainville (Jour. de Physique, xcii. p. 187, note), the skeleton of a Fowl to which was attached the head of a Hornbill was for a long time exhibited in the Museum of Comparative Anatomy at Paris! Yet, in order to determine the difference of structure in their organs of voice, Cuvier, as he says in his Lecons (iv. p. 464), dissected more than one hundred and fifty species of Birds. Unfortunately for him, as will appear in the sequel, it seems not to have occurred to him to use any of the results he obtained as the basis of a classification.

3 It is unnecessary to enumerate the various editions of the Régne Animal. Of the English translations, that edited by Griffiths and Pidgeon is the most complete. The ornithological portion of it contained in these volumes received many additions from JoHN EDWARD Gray, and appeared in 1829.

4 Though much later in date, the Iter per Poseganam Sclavonizx of PILLER and MITTERPACHER, published at Buda in 1783, may perhaps be here most conveniently mentioned.

in North America, the Levant, and China.> The incessant journeys of Paxxas and his colleagues—FALK, GEORGI, Pallas. 8. G. Gmetin, GULDENSTADT, LEPECHIN, and others—in the exploration of the recently extended Russian empire sup- Z plied not only much material to the Commentari and Acta of the Academy of St Petersburg, but more that is to be found in their narratives,—all of it being of the highest interest to

students of Palearctic or Nearctic Ornithology. Nearly the whole of their results, it may here be said, were summed up in the important Zoographia Rosso-Asiatica of the first-named naturalist, which saw the light in 1811,—the year of its author's death,—but, owing to circumstances over which he had no control, was not generally accessible till twenty years later. Of still wider interest are the accounts of Cook's three famous voyages, though unhappily much of the information gained by the naturalists who accompanied him on one or more of them seems to be irretriev- ably lost: the original observations of the elder ForsTER The were not, printed till 1844, and the valuable collection of Forsters. zoological drawings made by the younger Forster still remains unpublished in the British Museum. 'The several accounts by JonNn Wuitr, CoLuins, Puitiies, HunTErR, and others of the colonization of New South Wales at the end of the last century ought not to be overlooked by any Australian ornithologist. The only information at this period on the Ornithology of South America is contained in the two works on Chili by Moxina, published at Bologna in 1776and1782. The travelsof Lz VaILLant in South Africa Le having been completed in 1785, his great Oiseaux d Afrique Vaillant. began to appear in Paris in 1790; but it is hard to speak properly of this work, for several of the species described in it are certainly not, and never were in his time, inhabitants of that country, though he sometimes gives a long account of the circumstances under which he observed them.®

From travellers who employ themselves in collecting the animals of any distant country the zoologists who stay at home and study those of their own district, be it great or small, are really not so much divided as at first might appear. Both may well be named " Faunists," and of the latter there were not a few who having turned their atten- tion more or less to Ornithology should here be mentioned, and first among them Rzaczynsk1, who inl1721 brought out Rzaczyn- at Sandomirsk the Historia naturalis curtosa regni Poloniz, ski. to which an Auctuarium was posthumously published at Danzig in 1742. This also may be perhaps the most proper place to notice the Historia Avium Hungarve of GrossINGER, published at Posen in 1793. In 1734 J. L. Grossin- Friscu began the long series of works on the Birds of 8. Germany with which the literature of Ornithology is Frisch. enriched, by his Vorstellung der Vogel Teutschlands, which was only completed in 1763, and, its coloured plates proving very attractive, was

again issued at Berlin in 1817. The little fly-sheet of Zorn ’—for it is scarcely more—on the Birds of the Hercynian Forest made its appearance at Pappenheim in 1745. In 1756 Kramer published at Kramer. Vienna a modest Hlenchus of the plants and animals of Lower Austria, and J. D. Prrersen produced at Altona in 1766 a Verzeichniss balthischer Vogel; while in 1791 J. B. Fiscuer’s Versuch einer Naturgeschichte von Livland appeared at Konigsberg, next year BESEKE brought out at Besek. Mitau his Beytrag zur Naturgeschachte der Vogel Kurlands,

5 The results of FoRSKAL’s travels in the Levant, published after his death by Niebuhr, require mention, but the ornithology they contain is but scant.

8 Jt has been charitably suggested that, his collection and notes having suffered shipwreck, he was induced to supply the latter from his memory and the former by the nearest approach to his lost specimens that he could obtain, This explanation, poor as it is, fails, however, in regard to sonie species,

7 His earlier work under the title of Petinotheologie can hardly be deemed scientific.

The Nau- manns.

Cetti.

Nozeman.

Briinnich,

Fabricius.

Bartram. Barton.

o, R. Forster.

OEBNIDTHOLOGY

and in 1794 Stemssen’s Handbuch of the Birds of Mecklen- burg was published at Rostock. But these works, locally useful as they may have

been, did not occupy the whole attention of German ornithologists, for in 1791 BrcHsTEIN reached the second volume of his Gemeinniitzage Naturge- schichte Deutschlands, treating of the Birds of that country, which ended with the fourth in 1795. Of this an abridged edition by the name of Ornithologisches Taschenbuch appeared in 1802 and 1803, with a supplement in 1812, while between 1805 and 1809 a fuller edition of the original was issued. Moreover in 1795 J. A. NAUMANN humbly began at Cothen a treatise on the Birds of the principality of Anhalt, which on its completion in 1804 was found to have swollen into an Ornithology of Northern Germany and the neighbouring countries. Eight supple- ments were successively published between 1805 and 1817, and in 1822 a new edition was required. This Naturge- schichte der Vogel Deutschlands, being almost wholly re- written by his son J. F. Naumann, is by far the best thing of the kind as yet produced in any country. The fulness and accuracy of the text, combined with the neat beauty of its coloured plates, have gone far to promote the study of Ornithology in Germany, and while essentially a popular work, since itis suited to the comprehension of all readers, it is throughout written with a simple dignity that commends it to the serious and scientific. Its twelfth and last volume was published in 1844—by no means too long a period for so arduous and honest a performance, and a supplement was begun in 1847 ; but, the editor—or author as he may be fairly called—dying in 1857, this continua- tion was finished in 1860 by the joint efforts of J. H. Buastus and Dr Barpamus. In 1800 BorxwauseEn with others commenced at Darmstadt a Teutsche Ornithologie in folio which appeared at intervals till 1812, and remains unfinished, though a reissue of the portion published took place between 1837 and 1841.

Other countries on the Continent, though not quite so prolific as Germany, bore some ornithological fruit at this period ; but in all Southern Europe only four faunistic products can be named :—the Saggio di Storia Naturale Bresciana of Pruatt, published at Brescia in 1769; the Ornitologia del? Europa Meridionale of Berytnt, published at Parma between 1772 and 1776; the Uccelli di Sardegna of Cxrrtt, published at Sassari in 1776; and the Romana Ornithologia of Git1us, published at Rome in 1781—the last being in great part devoted to Pigeons and Poultry. More appeared in the North, for in 1770 Amsterdam sent forth the beginning of Nozeman’s Nederlandsche Vogelen, a fairly illustrated work in folio, but only

completed by Hovrruyn in 1829, and in Scandinavia most of all was done. In 1746 the great Linnzus had produced a fauna Svecica, of which a second edition appeared in 1761, and a third revised by Rerztusin 1800. In 1764 Briwnice pub- lished at Copenhagen his Ornithologia Borealis, a com- pendious sketch of the Birds of all the countries then sub- ject to the Danish crown. At the same place appeared in 1767 Leew's work De Lapponibus Finmarchizx, to which GuNNERUS contributed some good notes on the Ornitho- logy of Northern Norway, and at Copenhagen and Leipzig was published in 1780 the Fauna Groenlandica of OTHO FAsRIcrvs.

Of strictly American origin can here be cited only Bartram's Travels through North and South Carolina and Barton's Fragments of the Natural History of Pennsyl- vania,! both printed at Philadelphia, one in 1791, the other in 1799; but J. R. Forsrer published a Catalogue of the Animals of North America in London in 1771, and the

See eee

1 This extremely rare book has been reprinted by the Willughby ociety.

greater attention. possess is that given by Merrett in his Pinax Rerum Merrett. Naturalium Britannicarum, printed in London in 1667.3

In 1677 Puor published his Natural History of Oxfordshire, Plot. which reached a second edition in 1705, and in 1686 that

of Staffordshire. and the Peak was sent out in 1700 by Leicu, and one on Leigh.

at Oxford. a well-illustrated folio, of which a second edition in octavo was published in 1768, and considerable additions (forming

9)

following year described in the Phelosophical Transactions a few Birds from Hudson's Bay.? was PENNANT's Arctic Zoology, published in 1785, with a Pennant. supplement in 1787. intended to be limited to North America, but circumstances induced him to include all the species of

Northern Europe and Northern Asia, and though not free from errors it isa praiseworthy performance.

A greater undertaking

The scope of this work was originally

A second edition appeared in The Ornithology of Britain naturally demands The earliest list of British Birds we

1792

A similar work on Lancashire, Cheshire,

Cornwall by BoruAse in 1758—all these four being printed Borlase. In 1766 appeared Pennant's British Zoology, Penuant.

the nominally third edition) in 1770, while in 1777 there were two issues, one in octavo the other in quarto, each called the fourth edition. In 1812, long after the author's death, another edition was printed, of which his son-in-law Hanmer was the reputed editor, but he received much assistance from Latham, and through carelessness many of the additions herein made have often been ascribed to Pennant. In 1769 BerKENHOUT gave to the world his Berken- Outlines of the Natural History of Great Britain and bout. Treland,which reappeared under the title of Synopsis of the same in 1795. Tunsraww's Ornithologia Britannica, which Tunstall. appeared in 1771, is little more than a list of names. In 1781 Nasw's Worcestershire included a few ornithological notices; and Waxcorr in 1789 published an illustrated Walcot. Synopsis of British Birds, coloured copies of which are rare. In 1791 J. Heysuam added to Hutchins's Cumberland a list of Birds of that county, and in 1794 Donovan began Donovan. a History of British Birds which was only finished in 1819 —the earlier portion being reissued about the same time. In 1800 Lewin brought out a very worthless work with Lewin. the same title.

All the foregoing publications yield in importance to two that remain to be mentioned, a notice of which will fitly conclude this part of our subject. In 1767 Pennant, several of whose works have already been named, entered

into correspondence with GuBert WuiIrTE, receiving from Gilbert him much information, almost wholly drawn from his own White. observation, for the succeeding editions of the British Zoology. In 1769 White began exchanging letters of a similar character with Barrington. The epistolary inter- course with the former continued until 1780 and with the latter until 1787. In 1789 White's share of the corre- spondence, together with some miscellaneous matter, was published as Zhe Natural History of Selborne—from the name of the village in which he lived. Observations on Birds form the principal though by no means the whole theme of this book, which may be safely said to have done more to promote alove of Ornithology in this country than any other work that has been written, nay more than all the other works (except one next to be mentioned) put together. It has passed through a far greater number of a og

2 Both of these treatises have also been reprinted by the Willughby Society.

3 In this year there were two issues of this book ; one, nominally a second edition, only differs from the first in having a new title-page. No real second edition ever appeared, but in anticipation of it Sir Tuomas Browne prepared in or about 1671 (?) his ‘‘ Account of Birds found in Norfolk,” of which the draught, now in the British Museum, was printed in his collected works by Wilkin in 1835. Ifa fair copy was ever made its resting-place is unknown.

4 It has been republished by the Willughby Society.

editions than any other work in Natural History in the whole world, and has become emphatically an English classic—the graceful simplicity of its style, the elevating tone of its spirit, and the sympathetic chords it strikes recommending it to every lover of Nature, while the severely scientific reader can scarcely find an error in any statement it contains, whether of matter of fact or opinion. It is almost certain that more than half the

zoologists of the British Islands for the past seventy years or more have been infected with their love of the study by Gilbert White ; and it can hardly be supposed that his influence will cease.!

The other work to the importance of which on Ornith- ology in this country allusion has been made is Brwicx's History of British Birds. The first volume of this, contain- ing the Land-Birds, appeared in 1797?—the text being, it is understood, by Beilby—the second, containing the Water-Birds, in 1804. The woodcuts illustrating this work are generally of surpassing excellence, and it takes rank in the category of artistic publications. Fully ad- mitting the extraordinary execution of the engravings, every ornithologist may perceive that as portraits of the Birds they are of very unequal merit. Some of the figures were drawn from stuffed specimens, and accordingly perpetu- ate all the imperfections of the original; others represent

species with the appearance of which the artist was not

familiar, and these are either wanting in expression or are caricatures ;* but those that were drawn from live Birds, or represent species which he knew in life, are worthy of all praise. It is well known that the earlier editions of this work, especially if they be upon large paper, command extravagant prices; but in reality the copies on smaller paper are now the rarer, for the stock of them has been consumed in nurseries and schoolrooms, where they have been torn up or worn out with incessant use. Moreover, whatever the lovers of the fine arts may say, it is nearly certain that the " Bewick Collector" is mistaken in attach- ing so high a value to these old editions, for owing to the want of skill in printing—indifferent ink being especially assigned as one cause—many of the earlier issues fail to shew the most delicate touches of the engraver, which the increased care bestowed upon the edition of 1847 (published under the supervision of Mr John Hancock) has revealed,— though it must be admitted that certain blocks have suffered from wear of the press so as to be incapable of any more producing the effect intended. Of the text it may be said that itis respectable, but no more. It has given satisfaction to thousands of readers in time past, and will, it may be hoped, give satisfaction to thousands in time to come.

The existence of these two works explains the widely- spread taste for Ornithology in this country, which is to foreigners so puzzling, and the zeal —not always according to knowledge, but occasionally reaching to serious study— with which that taste is pursued.

Having thus noticed, and it is to be hoped pretty thoroughly, the chief ornithological works begun if not

completed prior to the commencement of the present cen- a Se a ee ee ae 1 Next to the original edition, that known as Bennett's, published in 18387, which was reissued in 1875 by Mr Harting, was long deemed the best ; but it must give place to that of Bell, which appeared in 1877, and contains much additional information of great interest. But the editions of Markwick, Herbert, Blyth, and Jardine all possess features of merit. An elaborately prepared edition, issued of late years under the managementof one whogained great reputation as a naturalist, only shews his ignorance and his vulgarity.

3 There were two issues—virtually two editions—of this with the same date on the title-page, though one of them is said not to have been published till the following year. Among several other indicia this may be recognized by the woodcut of the ''Sea Eagle" at page 11 bearing at its base the inscription '' Wycliffe, 1791," and by the addi- tional misprint on page 145 of Sahaniclus for Schaniclus.

5 This is especially observable in the figures of the Birds-of-Prey.

tury, together with their immediate sequels, those which follow will require a very different mode of treatment, for their number is so great that it would be impossible for want of space to deal with them in the same extended fashion, though the attempt will finally be made to enter into details in the case of works constituting the founda- tion upon which apparently the superstructure of the future science has to be built. It ought not to need stat- ing that much of what was, comparatively speaking, only a few years ago regarded as scientific labour is now no longer to be so considered. The mere fact that the prin- ciple of Evolution, and all its admission carries with it,

has been accepted in some form or other by almost all naturalists, has rendered obsolete nearly every theory that had hitherto been broached, and in scarcely any branch of zoological research was theory more rife than in Ornithology. One of these theories must presently be noticed at some length on account of the historical import- ance which attaches to its malefic effects in impeding the progress of true Ornithology in Britain; but charity enjoins us to consign all the rest as much as possible to oblivion.

On reviewing the progress of Ornithology since the end of the last century, the first thing that will strike us is the fact that general works, though still undertaken, have become proportionally fewer, and such as exist are apt to consist of mere explanations of systematic methods that had already been more or less fully propounded, while special works, whether relating to the ornithic portion of the Fauna of any particular country, or limited to certain groups of Birds—works to which of late years the name of “Monograph” has become wholly restricted—have become far more numerous. But this seems to be the natural law in all sciences, and its cause is not far to seek. As the knowledge of any branch of study extends, it outgrows the opportunities and capabilities of most men to follow it as a whole; and, since the true naturalist, by reason of the irresistible impulse which drives him to work, cannot be idle, he is compelled to confine his energies to narrower fields of investigation. That in a general way this is for some reason to be regretted is true ; but, like all natural operations, it carries with it some recompense, and the excellent work done by so-called “specialists” has over and over again proved of the greatest use to advancement in different departments of science, and in none more than in Ornithology.*

Another change has come over the condition of Ornith- ology, as of kindred sciences, induced by the multiplica- tion of learned societies which issue publications as well as of periodicals of greater or less scientific pretension —the latter often enjoying a circulation far wider than the former. Both kinds increase yearly, and the despond- ing mind may fear the possibility of its favourite study expiring through being smothered by its own literature. Without anticipating such a future disaster, and looking merely to what has gone before, it is necessary here to premise that, in the observations which immediately follow, treatises which have appeared in the publications of learned bodies or in other scientific periodicals must, except they be of

prime importance, be hereinafter passed unnoticed ; but their omission will be the less felt because the more recent of those of a “faunal” character have generally been mentioned in a former dissertation (Birps, vol. ili. pp. 737-764) under the different Regions or

4 The truth of the preceding remarks may be so obvious to most men who have acquaintance with the subject that their introduction here may secm unnecessary ; but itis certain that the facts thcy state have been very little appreciated by many writers who profess to give an account of the progress of Natural History during the present century.

countries with which they deal, while reference to the older of these treatises is usually given by the writers of the newer. Still it seems advisable here to furnish some con- nected account of the progress made in the ornithological knowledge of those countries in which the readers of the pre- sent volume may be supposed to take the most lively interest —for example, the British Islands and those parts of the European continent which lie nearest to them or are most commonly sought by travellers, the Dominion of Canada and the United States of America, South Africa, India, together with Australia and New Zealand. The more important Monographs, again, will usually be found cited in the series of special articles on Birds contained in this work, though, as will be immediately perceived, there are some so-styled Monographs, which by reason of the changed views of classification that at present obtain have lost their restricted character, and for all practical purposes have now to be regarded as general works.

It will perhaps be most convenient to begin by mention- ing some of these last, and in particular a number of them which appeared at Paris very early in this century. First in order of them is the Jistoire Naturelle d’une partie dT Oiseaux nouveaux et rares de l’ Amérique et des Indes, a folio volume! published in 1801 by Le Vartuant. This is devoted to the very distinct and not nearly-allied groups of Hornbills and of birds which for want of a better name we must call “Chatterers,” and is illustrated, like those works of which a notice immediately follows, by coloured plates, done in what was then considered to be the highest style of art and by the best draughtsmen procurable. The first volume of a JTistoire Naturelle des Perroquets, a

companion work by the same author, appeared in the same year, and is truly a Monograph, since the Parrots constitute a Family of birds so naturally severed from all others that there has rarely been anything else confounded with them. ‘The second volume came out in 1805, and a third was issued in 1837~38 long after the death of its pre- decessor’s author, by Boursot St-Hitarre. Between 1803 and 1806 Le Vaillant also published in just the same style two volumes with the title of Histoire Naturelle des Oiseaux de Paradis et des Rolliers, swivie de celle des Toucans et des Barbus, an assemblage of forms, which, miscellaneous as it is, was surpassed in incongruity by a fourth work on the same scale, the J/istoire Naturelle des Promerops et des Guépiers, des Couroucous et des Touracos, for herein are found Jays, Waxwings, the Cock-of-the-Rock (Zupicola), and what not besides. ‘The plates in this last are by Barraband, for many years regarded as the perfection of ornithological artists, and indeed the figures, when they happen to have been drawn from the life, are not bad ; but his skill was quite unable to vivify the preserved specimens contained in Museums, and when he had only these as subjects he simply copied the distortions of the “ird-stuffer.” The following year, 1808, being aided by Temminck of Amsterdam, of whose son we shall presently hear more, Le Vaillant brought out the sixth volume of his Oiseaux d’Afrique, already mentioned. Four more volumes of this work were promised; but the means of executing them were denied to him, and, though he lived until 1824, his publications ceased.

A similar series of works was projected and begun about Audebert the same time as that of Le Vaillant by AUDEBERT and a , VIEILLOT, though the former, who was by profession a

mumee painter and illustrated the work, was already dead more than a year before the appearance of the two volumes, bearing date 1802, and entitled Oiseaux dorés ou a reflets métalliques, the effect of the plates in which he sought to heighten by the lavish use of gilding. The first volume

i ele =e 1 There is also an issue of this, as of the same author’s other works, on large quarto paper.

Le Vail- lant,

contains the “Colibris, Oiseaux-mouches, Jacamars et Promerops,” the second the ‘‘ Grimpereaux” and “ Oiseaux de Paradis”——associations which set all the laws of system- atic method at defiance. His colleague, Vieillot, brought out in 1805 a Histoire Naturelle des plus beaux Chanteurs de la Zone Torride with figures by Langlois of tropical Finches, Grosbeaks, Buntings, and other hard-billed birds ; and in 1807 two volumes of a Histoire Naturelle des Oiseaux de Amérique Septentrionale, without, however, paying much attention to the limits commonly assigned by geographers to that part of the world. In 1805 ANsSELME DESMAREST published a Histoire naturelle des Tangaras, Desmarest des Manakins et des Todiers, which, though belonging to the same category as all the former, differs from them in its more scientific treatment of the subjects to which it refers ; and, in 1808, Temmincx, whose father’s aid to Le Temminck. Vaillant has already been noticed, brought out at Paris a Histoire Naturelle des Pigeons illustrated by Madame Knip, who had drawn the plates for Desmarest’s volume.”

Since we have begun by considering these large illustrated works in which the text is made subservient to the coloured plates, it may be convenient to continue our notice of such others of similar character as it may be expedient to mention here, though thereby we shall be led somewhat far afield. Most of them are but luxuries, and there is some degree of truth in the remark of Andreas Wagner in his Report on the Progress of Zoology for 1843, drawn up for the Ray Society (p. 60), that they “are not adapted for the extension and promotion of science, but must inevitably, on account of their unnecessary costliness, constantly tend to reduce the number of naturalists who are able to avail themselves of them, and they thus enrich ornithology only to its ultimate injury.” Earliest in date as it is greatest in bulk stands AupUBon’s egregious Birds Audubon. of America in four volumes, containing four hundred and thirty-five plates, of which the first part appeared in London in 1827 and the last in 1838. It does not seem to have been the author’s original intention to publish any letter- press to this enormous work, but to let the plates tell their own story, though finally, with

the assistance, as is now known, of Wit~iaAm Maccitrivray, a text, on the whole Macgil- more than respectable, was produced in five large octavos livray. under the title of Ornithological Biography, of which more will be said in the sequel. Audubon has been greatly ex- tolled as an ornithological artist ; but he was far too much addicted to representing his subjects in violent action and in postures that outrage nature, while his drawing is very frequently defective.? In 1866 Mr D. G. Exxior began, and Elliot. in 1869 finished, a sequel to Audubon's great work in two volumes, on the same scale—T7he New and Ifitherto unfigured Species of the Birds of North America, containing life-size figures of all those which had been added to its fauna since the completion of the former.

In 1830 Jonnw Epwarp Gray commenced the J/lustra- Gray and tions of Indian Zoology, a series of plates of vertebrated Hardwicke. animals, but mostly of Birds, from drawings it is believed by native artists in the collection of General HARDWICKE, whose name is therefore associated with the work. Scientific

ee

2 Temminck subsequently reproduced, with many additions, the text of this volume in his Histoire naturelle des Pigeons et des Gallinacées, published at Amsterdam in 1813-15, in 3 vols. 8vo. Between 1838 and 1848 M. Fuorent-PRovosT brought out at Paris a further set of illustrations of Pigeons by Mdme. Knip.

3 On the completion of these two works, for they must be regarded as distinct, an octavo edition in seven volumes under the title of The Birds of America was published in 1840-44. In this the large plates were reduced by means of the "camera lucida," the text was revised, and the whole systematically arranged. Other reprints have since been issued, but they are vastly inferior both in execution and value. A sequel to the octavo Birds of America, corresponding with it in form, was brought out in 1853-55 by Cassin as Illustrations of the Birds of California, Texas, Oregon, British and Russian America.

Lear, ever supplied. In 1832 Mr Lxanr, afterwards well known | dissecting. The chief object of the author, who had been as a painter, brought out his

Jllustrations of the Family of | naturalist to the N iger Expedition, and curator to the Psittacide, a volume which deserves especial notice from | Museum of the Zoological Society of London, was to figure the extreme fidelity to nature and the great artistic skill | the animals contained in its gardens or described in its with which the figures were executed. Proceedings, which until the year 1848 were not illustrated.

This same year (1832) saw the beginning of the The publication of the Zoological Sketches of Mr Woxr, marvellous series of illustrated ornithological works by | from animals in the gardens of the Zoological Society, was

Gould. which the name of Joun Gout is likely to be always | begun about 1855, with a brief text by MrrcHeE x1, at that remembered. A Century of Birds from the Himalaya | time the Society's secretary, in illustration of them. After Mountains was followed by The Birds of Europe in five | his death in 1859, the explanatory letterpress was rewritten volumes, published between 1832 and 1837, while in the | by Mr ScuarEr, his successor in that office, and a volume interim (1834) appeared A Monograph of the Ramphastide, | was completed in 1861. Upon this a second series was of which a second edition was some years later called for, | commenced, and brought to an end in 1868. Though a then the Jcones Aviwm, of which only two parts were | comparatively small number of species of Birds are figured published (1837-38), and A Monograph of the Trogomdx in this magnificent work (seventeen only in the first series, (1838), which also reached a second edition. Sailing | and twenty-two in the second), it must be mentioned here, in 1838 for New South Wales, on his return in 1840 he | for their likenesses are so admirably executed as to place at once commenced the greatest of all his works, The Birds | it in regard to ornithological portraiture at the head of all of Australia, which was finished in 1848 in seven volumes, | others. There is not a single plate that is unworthy of the. to which several supplementary parts, forming another | greatest of all animal painters. volume, were subsequently added. In 1849 he began A Proceeding to illustrated works generally of less preten- Monograph of the Trochilide or Humming-birds extending | tious size but of greater ornithological utility than the to five volumes, the last of which appeared in 1861, and | books last mentioned, which are fitter for the drawing-room has

since been followed by a supplement now in course of | than the study, we next have to consider some in which the completion by Mr Satvin. A Monograph of the Odonto- | text is not wholly subordinated to the plates, though the phorine or Partridges of America (1850); The Birds of | latter still form a conspicuous feature of the publication. Asia, in seven volumes, the last completed by Mr Suarpz | First of these in point of time as well as in importance is (1850-83); The Birds of Great Britain, in five volumes | the Vouveau Recueil des Planches Coloriées d'Oiseaua of (1862-73) ; and The Birds of New Guinea, begun in 1875, | TeEMMINcK and LavcrEr, intended as a sequel to the Temminck and, after the author's death in 1881, undertaken by Mr | Planches Hnluminées of D'Aubenton before noticed (page 2™4 | Sharpe, make up the wonderful tale consisting of more | 6), and like that work issued both in folio and quarto U™sie™ than forty folio volumes, and containing more than three | size. 'The first portion of this was published at Paris in thousand coloured plates. The earlier of these works were | 1820, and of its one hundred and two livraisons, which illustrated by Mrs Gould, and the figures in them are fairly | appeared with great irregularity (Ibis, 1868, p. 500), the good; but those in the later, except when (as he occasionally | last was issued in 1839, containing the titles of the five did) he secured the services of Mr Woxr, are not so much | volumes that the whole forms, together with a "Tableau to be commended. There is, it is true, a smoothness and | Méthodique" which but indifferently serves the purpose finish about them not often seen elsewhere ; but, as though | of an index. There are six hundred plates, but the exact to avoid the exaggerations of Audubon, Gould usually | number of species figured (which has been computed at adopted the tamest of attitudes in which to represent his | six hundred and sixty-one) is not so easily ascertained. subjects, whereby expression as well as vivacity is want- | Generally the subject of each plate has letterpress to cor- ing. Moreover, both in drawing and in colouring there is | respond, but in some cases this is wanting, while on the frequently much that is untrue to nature, so that it has | other hand descriptions of species not figured are occasion- not uncommonly happened for them to fail in the chief | ally introduced, and usually observations on the distribu- object of all zoological plates, that of affordiiug sure means | tion and construction of each genus or group are added. of recognizing specimens on comparison. In estimating | The plates, which shew no improvement in execution on the letterpress, which was avowedly held to be of secondary | those of Martinet,

are after drawings by Huet and Prétre, importance to the plates, we must bear in mind that, to | the former being perhaps the less bad draughtsman of the ensure the success of his works, it had to be written to suit | two, for he seems to have had an idea of what a bird when a very peculiarly composed body of subscribers. Never- | alive looks like, though he was not able to give his figures theless a scientific character was so adroitly assumed that | any vitality, while the latter simply delineated the stiff scientific men—some of them even ornithologists—have | and dishevelled specimens from museum shelves. Still thence been led to believe the text had a scientific value, and | the colouring is pretty well done, and experience has proved that of a high class. However it must also be remembered | that generally speaking there is not much difficulty in that, throughout the whole of his career, Gould consulted | recognizing the species represented. The letterpress is the convenience of working ornithologists by almost | commonly limited to technical details, and is not always invariably refraining from including in his folio works the | accurate ; but it is of its kind useful, for in general know- technical description of any new species without first pub- | ledge of the outside of Birds Temminck probably surpassed lishing it in some journal of comparatively easy access. any of his contemporaries. The “Tableau Méthodique ”

An ambitious attempt to produce in England a general | offers a convenient concordance of the old Planches

Fraser, series of coloured plates on a large scale was Mr Fraszr’s | Enluminécs and its successor, and is arranged after the

12

names are assigned to the species figured ; but no text was

Zoologia Typica, the first part of which bears date 1841- 42, Others appeared at irregular intervals until 1849, when the work, which seems never to have received the support it deserved, was discontinued. The seventy plates (forty-six of which represent birds) composing, with some explanatory letterpress, the volume are by C. Cousens and H. N. Turner,—the latter (as his publications prove) a zoologist of much promise, who in 1851 died, a victim to

his own zeal for investigation, of a wound received in

system set forth by Temminck in the first volume of the second edition of his Manuel d Ornithologie, of which something must presently be said.

The Galérie des Oiseaux, a rival work, with plates by

OvuDART, seems to have been begun immediately after the Oudart.

former. The original project was apparently to give a figure and description of every species of Bird; but that was soon found to be impossible ; and, when six parts had

been issued, with text by some unnamed author, the scheme was brought within practicable limits, and the writing of the letterpress was entrusted to VIEILLoT, who, proceeding on ‘a systematic plan, performed his task very creditably, completing the work, which forms two quarto volumes, in 1825, the original text and fifty-seven plates being relegated to the end of the second volume as a supple- ment. His portion is illustrated by two hundred and ninety-nine coloured plates that, wretched as they are, have been continually reproduced in various text-books—a fact possibly due to their subjects having been judiciously selected. It is a tradition that, this work not being favour- ably regarded by the authorities of the Paris Museum, its draughtsman and author were refused closer access to the specimens required, and had to draw and describe them through the glass as they stood on the shelves of the cases.

In 1825 JarpDINE and SELBy began a-series of Jllustra- . tions of Ornithology, the several parts of which appeared at long and irregular intervals, so that it was not until 1839 that three volumes containing one hundred and fifty plates were completed. Then they set about a Second Series, which, forming a single volume with fifty-three plates, was finished in 1843. These authors, being zealous amateur artists, were their own draughtsmen to the extent even of lithographing the figures. In 1828 James

WILson (author of the article ORNITHOLOGY in the 7th and 8th editions of the present work) began, under the title of [dlas- trations of Zoology, the publication of a series of his own drawings (which he did not, however, himself engrave) with corresponding letterpress. Of the thirty-six plates illustrating this volume, a small folio, twenty are devoted to Ornithology, and contain figures, which, it must be allowed, are not very successful, of several species rare at the time.

Though the three works last mentioned fairly come under the same category as the Planches Enluminées and the Planches Coloriées, no one of them can be properly deemed their rightful heirs. The claim to that succession was made in 1845 by Dzs Murs for his Iconographie Ornithologique, which, containing seventy-two plates by Prévot and Oudart} (the latter of whom had marvellously improved in his drawings since he worked with Vieillot), was completed in 1849. Simultaneously with this Du Bus began a work on a plan precisely similar, the Lsqucsses Ornithologiques, illustrated by Severeyns, which, however, stopped short in 1849 with its thirty-seventh plate, while the letterpress unfortunately does not go beyond that belonging to the twentieth. In 1866 the succession was again taken up by the Lxotic Ornithology of Messrs SCLATER and SaLvIN, containing one hundred plates, representing one hundred and four species, all from Central or South America, which are neatly executed by Mr Smit. The accompanying letterpress is in some places copious, and useful lists of the species of various genera are occasionally subjoined, adding to the definite value of the work, which, forming one volume, was completed in 1869.

Lastly here must be mentioned RowLzy’s Ornithological Miscellany in three quarto volumes, profusely illustrated, which appeared between 1875 and 1878. The contents are as varied as the authorship, and, most of the leading English ornithologists having contributed to the work, some of the papers are extremely good, while in the plates, which are in Mr Keulemans’s best manner, many rare species of Birds are figured, some of them for the first time.

All the works lately named have been purposely treated at some length, since being very costly they are not easily accessible. The few next to be

mentioned, being of smaller size (octavo), may be within reach of more persons, and

1 On the title page credit is given to the latter alone, but only two- thirds of the plates (from pl. 25 to the end) bear his name.

therefore can be passed over in a briefer fashion without detriment. In many ways, however, they are nearly as important. volumes, containing one hundred and eighty-two plates, whereof seventy represent Birds, appeared between 1820 and 1821, and in 1829 a Second Series of the same was begun by him, which, extending to another three volumes, contained forty-eight more plates of Birds out of one hundred and thirty-six, and was completed in 1833. All the figures were drawn by the author, who as an ornitho- logical artist had no rival in his time. Every plate is not beyond criticism, but his worst drawings shew more know- ledge of bird-life than do the best of his English or French contemporaries. A work of somewhat similar character, but one in which the letterpress is of greater value, is the

Centurie Zoologique of Lesson, a single volume that, Lesson.

though bearing the date 1830 on its title page, is believed to have been begun in 1829,? and was certainly not finished until 1831. It received the benefit of Isidore Geoffroy St-Hilaire's assistance. Notwithstanding its name it only contains eighty plates, but of them forty-two, all by Prétre and in his usual stiff style, represent Birds. Concurrently with this volume appeared Lesson's T'rracté @ Ornithologie, which is dated 1831, and may perhaps be here most conveniently mentioned. Its professedly system- atic form strictly relegates it to another group of works, but the presence of an " Atlas" (also in octavo) of one hundred and nineteen plates to some extent justifies its notice in this place. Between 1831 and 1834 the same author brought out, in continuation of his Centurie, his Ilustrations de Zoologie with sixty plates, twenty of which represent Birds.

In 1832 Kirrrrrz began to publish some Kupfertafeln zur Kittlitz.

Naturgeschichte der Vogel, in which many new species are figured ; but the work came toan end with its thirty-sixth plate in the following year.

extraordinary series of illustrated publications which, under titles far too numerous here to repeat, ended in or about 1855, and are commonly known collectively as his Voll- stdndigste Naturgeschichte der Végel.8 Herein are contained more than nine hundred coloured and more than one hundred uncoloured plates, which are crowded with the figures of Birds, a large proportion of them reduced copies from other works, and especially those of Gould.

It now behoves us to turn to general and particularly systematic works in which plates, if they exist at all, form but an accessory to the text. These need not detain us for long, since, however well some of them may have been executed, regard being had to their epoch, and whatever repute some of them may have achieved, they are, so far as general information and especially classification is concerned, wholly obsolete, and most of them almost useless except as matters of antiquarian interest. It will be enough merely to name DUMERIL's Zoologie Analytique (1806) and GravENHorst's Vergleich- ende Uebersicht des linnetschen und einiger neuern zoologischen

Systeme (1807); nor need we linger over Suaw's General Shaw and Zoology, a pretentious compilation continued by STEPHENS. Stephens.

The last seven of its fourteen volumes include the Class Aves, and the first part of them appeared in 1809, but, the original author dying in 1815, when only two volumes of Birds were published, the remainder was brought to an end in 1826 by his successor, who afterwards became well known as an entomologist. The engravings which these volumes contain are mostly bad copies, often of bad figures,

In 1828 he had brought out, under the title of Manuel @ Orni- thologie, two handy duodecimos which are very good of their kind. 3 Technically speaking they are in quarto, but their size is so small that they may be well spoken of here. In 1879 Dr A. B. Meyer brought out an Index to them.

Swarinson's Zoological Illustrations in three Swainson.

In 1845 REICHENBACH com- Reichen- menced with his Praktische Naturgeschichte der Vogel the bach.

Illiger.

Vieillot.

Tem- minck.

Ranzani.

Wagler.

Kaup.

though many are piracies from Bewick, and the whole is a most unsatisfactory performance. Of a very different kind is the next we have to notice, the Prodromus Systematis Mammalium et Avium of ItticER, published at Berlin in 1811, which must in its day have been a valu- able little manual, and on many points it may now be consulted to advantage—the characters of the Genera being admirably given, and good explanatory lists of the technical terms of Ornithology furnished. The classifica- tion was quite new, and made a step distinctly in advance of anything that had before appeared.! In 1816 V1EILLOT published at Paris an Analyse d'une nouvelle Ornithologie élémentaire, containing a method of classification which he had tried in vain to get printed before, both in Turin and in London.? Some of the ideas in this are said to have been taken from Illiger ; but the two systems seem to be wholly distinct. Vieillot's was afterwards more fully expounded in the series of articles which he contributed between 1816 and 1819 to the Second Edition of the Nouveau Dictionnaire Histoire Naturelle containing much valuable information. The views of neither of these systema- tizers pleased TemMMINcK, who in 1817 replied rather sharply to Vieillot in some Observations sur la Classification méthodique des Oiseaux, a pamphlet published at Amster- dam, and prefixed to the second edition of his Manuel Ornithologie, which appeared in 1820, an

Analyse du Systeme Général @Ornithologie. This proved a great suc- cess, and his arrangement, though by no means simple,? was not only adopted by many ornithologists of almost every country, but still has some adherents. The follow- ing year RANZANI of Bologna, in his Hlementi di Zoologia—a very respectable compilation—came to treat of Birds, and then followed to some extent the plan of De Blain- ville and Merrem (concerning which much more has to be said by and by) placing the Struthious Birds in an Order by themselves. In 1827 Wactzr brought out the first part of a Systema Aviwm, in this form never com- pleted, consisting of forty-nine detached monographs of as many genera, the species of which are most elaborately described. The arrangement he subsequently adopted for them and for other groups is to be found in his Watiirliches System der Amphibien (pp. 77-128), published in 1830, and is too fanciful to require any further attention. The several attempts at system-making by Kavup, from his Allgemeine Zoologie in 1829 to his Ueber Classification der Vogel in 1849, were equally arbitrary and abortive; but his Shizzirte Entwickelungs-Geschichte in 1829 must be here named, as it is so often quoted on account of the number of new genera which the peculiar views he had embraced compelled him to invent. These views he shared more or less with Vigors and Swainson, and to them attention will be immediately especially invited, while consideration of the scheme gradually developed

} Tliger may be considered the founder of the school of nomencla- tural purists. He would not tolerate any of the “barbarous ” generic terms adopted by other writers, though some had been in use for pany years.

2 The method was communicated to the Turin Academy, 10th January 1814, and was ordered to be printed (Mém. Ac. Se. Turin, 1813-14, p. xxviii); but, through the derangements of that stormy period, the order was never carried out (Mem. Accad. Se. Torino, xxiii. p. xcvii). The minute-book of the Linnean Society of London shews that his Pro- lusio was read at meetings of that Society between 15th November 1814 and 21st February 1815. Why it was not at once accepted is not told, but the entry respecting it, which must be of much later date, in the “ Register of Papers” is “ Published already.” It is due to Vieillot to mention these facts, as he has been accused of publishing his method in haste to anticipate some of Cuvier’s views, but he might well complain of the delay in London. Some

reparation has been made to his memory by the reprinting of his Analyse by the Willughby Society.

8 He recognized sixteen Orders of Birds, while Vieillot had been content with five, and Illiger with seven.

Olt NioPTY ron v Gy

from 1831 onward by CHarLes Lucien BonAPARTE, and Bona- still not without its influence, is deferred until we come parte.

to treat of the rise and progress of what we may term the reformed school of Ornithology. Yet injustice would be done to one of the ablest of those now to be called the old masters of the science if mention were not here made of the Conspectus Generum Avium, begun in 1850 by the

naturalist last named, with the help of ScHLEGEL, and Schlegel,

unfortunately interrupted by its author's death six years later.*

The systematic publications of Grorck Ropert G. R.

Gray, so long in charge of the ornithological collection of @t4Y-

the British Museum, began with A List of the Genera of Birds published in 1840. This, having been closely, though by no means in a hostile spirit, criticized by

STRICKLAND (Ann. Nat. History, vi. p. 410; vii. pp. 26 Strick- and 159), was followed by a Second Edition in 1841, in and.

which nearly all the corrections of the reviewer were adopted, and in 1844 began the publication of Zhe Genera of Birds, beautifully illustrated—first by MircHELL and afterwards by Mr Woir—which will always keep Gray's name in remembrance. The enormous labour required for this work seems scarcely to have been appreciated, though it remains to this day one of the most useful books in an ornithologist's library. Yet it must be confessed that its author was hardly an ornithologist but for the accident of his calling. He was a thoroughly conscientious clerk, devoted to his duty and unsparing of

trouble. However, to have conceived the idea of executing a work on so grand a scale as this—it forms three folio volumes, and contains one hundred and eighty-five coloured and one hundred and forty-eight uncoloured plates, with references to upwards of two thousand four hundred generic names— was in itself a mark of genius, and it was brought to a successful conclusion in 1849, Costly as it necessarily was, it has been of great service to working ornithologists. In 1855 Gray brought out, as one of the Museum publica- tions, A Catalogue of the Genera and Subgenera of Birds, a handy little volume, naturally founded on the larger works. Its chief drawback is that it does not give any more reference to the authority for a generic term than the name of its inventor and the year of its application, though of course more precise information would have at least doubled the size of the book. The same deficiency became still more apparent when, between 1869 and 1871, he published his Hand-List of Genera and Species of Birds in three octavo volumes (or parts, as they are called). Never was a book better named, for the working ornitho- logist must almost live with it in his hand, and though he has constantly to deplore its shortcomings, one of which especially is the wrong principle on which its index is constructed, he should be thankful that such a work exists. Many of its defects are, or perhaps it were better said ought to be, supplied by GreBet's Thesaurus Ornitho- logix, also in three volumes, published between 1872 and 1877, a work admirably planned, but the execution of which, whether through the author's carelessness or the printer's fault, or a combination of both, is lamentably disappointing. Again and again it will afford the enquirer who consults it valuable hints, but he must be niindful never to trust a single reference in it until it has been verified. It remains to warn the reader also that, useful as are both this work and those of Gray, their utility is almost solely confined to experts.

With the exception to which reference has just been made, scarcely any of the ornithologists hitherto named indulged their imagination in theories or speculations. Nearly all were content to prosecute their labours in a plain fashion consistent with common sense, plodding

4 To this very indispensable work a good index was supplied in 1865 by Dr Finsch.

Giebel.

Juinary ystem.

acleay.

Vigors.

3wain- son,

OR Nat Tt © i. O’G ¥

steadily onwards in their efforts to describe and group the various species of Birds, as one after another they were made known. But this was not always to be, and now a few words must be said respecting a theory which was promulgated with great zeal by its upholders during the end of the first and early part of the second quarter of the present century, and for some years seemed likely to carry all before it. The success it gained was doubtless due in some degree to the difficulty which most men had in comprehending it, for it was enwrapped in alluring mystery, but more to the confidence with which it was announced as being the long looked-for key to the wonders of creation, since its promoters did not hesitate to term it the discovery of “the Natural System,” though they condescended, by way of explanation to less exalted intellects than their own, to allow it the more moderate

appellation of the Circular or Quinary System.

A comparison of the relation of created beings to a number of intersecting circles is as old as the days of NIEREMBERG, who in 1635 wrote (Historia Nature, lib. iii. cap. 3)— Nullus hiatus est, uulla fractio, nulla dispersio formarum, invicem connexa sunt velut annulus annulo”; but it is almost clear that he was thinking only of a chain. In 1806 FiscHER DE WALDHEIM, in his Tableawa Synoptiques de zoognosie (p. 181), quoting Niercmberg, extended his figure of speech, and, while justly deprecating the notion that the series of forms belonging to any particular group of creatures— the Mammalia was that whence he took his instance—could be placed in a straight line, imagined the various genera to be arrayed in a series of contiguous circles around Man asa centre. Though there is nothing

to shew that Fischer intended, by what is here said, to do anything else than illustrate more fully the marvellous interconnexion of different animals, or that he attached any realistic meaning to his metaphor, his words were eagerly caught up by the prophet of the new faith. This was WILLIAM SHarps MACLEAY, a man of education and real genius, who in 1819 and 1821 brought out a work under the title of Horxw Entomologice#, which was soon after hailed by Vicors as containing a new revelation, and applied by him to Ornithology in some " Observations on the Natural Affinities that connect the Orders and Families of Birds," read before the Liunean Society of London in 1823, and afterwards published in its Transactions (xiv. pp. 895-517). In the following year Vigors returned to the subject in some papers published in the recently established Zoological Journal, and found an energetic condisciple and coadjutor in Swainson, who, for more than a dozen years—to the end, in fact, of his career as an ornithological writer—was instant in season and out of season in pressing on all his readers the views he had, through Vigors, adopted from Macleay, though not without some modification of detail if not of principle. What these views were it would be manifestly improper for a sceptic to state except in the terms of a believer. Their enunciation must therefore be given in Swainson's own words, though it must be admitted that space cannot be found here for the diagrams, which it was alleged were necessary for the right understanding of the theory. This theory, as originally pro- pounded by Macleay, was said by Swainson in 1885 (Geogr. and Classific. of Animals, p. 202) to have consisted of the following propositions :'—

"1. That the series of natural animals is continuous, forming, as it were, a circle; so that, upon commencing at any one given poirs, and thence tracing all the modifications of structure, we shall be imperceptibly led, after passing through numerous forms, again to the point from which we started.

"9, That no groups are natural which do not exhibit, or show an evident tendency to exhibit, such a circular series.

"3. That the primary divisions of every large group are ten, five of which are composed of comparatively large circles, and five of smaller : these latter being termed osculant, and being intcrmediate between the former, which they serve to connect.

“4, That there is a tendency in such groups as are placed at the opposite points of a circle of affinity ‘to meet each other.’

“5 That one of the five larger groups into which every natural circle is divided ‘ bears a resemblance to all the rest, or, more strictly speaking, consists of types which represent those of each of the four other groups, together witha type peculiar to itself.’ ”

As subsequently modified by Swainson (tom. cit. pp. 224, 225), the foregoing propositions take the following form :—

“ft, That every natural series of beings, in its progress from OES ee ee ee ee ee eer

1 We prefer giving them here in Swainson’s version, because he seems to have set them forth more clearly and concisely than Macleay ever did, and, moreover, Swainson’s application of them to Ornithology —a branch of science that lay outside of Macleay’s proper studies— appears to be more suitable to the present occasion.

a given point, either actually returns, or evinces a tendency to return, again to that point, thereby forming a circle.

“ff. The primary circular divisions of every group are three actually, or five apparently.

“II. The contents of such a circular group are symbolically (or analogically) represented by the contents of all other circles in the animal kingdom.

“TV. That these primary divisions of every group are character- ized by definite peculiarities of form, structure, and economy, which, under diversified modifications, are uniform throughout the animal kingdom, and are therefore to be regarded as the PRIMARY TYPES OF NATURE.

“V, That the different ranks or degrees of circular groups exhibited in the animal kingdom are NINE in number, each being involved within the

other.”

Though, as above stated, the theory here promulgated owed its temporary success chiefly to the extraordinary assurance and perti- nacity with which it was urged upon a public generally incapable of understanding what it meant, that it received some support from men of science must be admitted. OKEN, whose mysticism far surpassed that of the Quinarians. But it is obvious to every one who nowadays indulges in the profitless pastime of studying their writings that, as a whole, they failed in grasping the essential difference between homology (or “ affinity,” as they generally termed it) and analogy (which is only a learned name for an uncertain kind of resemblance)— though this difference had been fully understood and set forth by Aristotle himself—and, moreover, that in secking for analogies on which to base their foregone conclusions they were often put to hard shifts. Another singular fact is that they often seemed to be totally unaware of the tendency if not the meaning of some of their own expressions: thus Macleay could write, and doubtless in perfect good faith (Trans. Linn. Society, xvi. p. 9, note), “ Naturalists have nothing to do with mysticism, and but little with a priori reasoning.” Yet his followers, if not he himself, were ever making use of language in the highest degree metaphorical, and were always explaining facts in accordance with preconceived opinions. FLEMING, already the author of a harmless and extremely orthodox Philosophy of Zoology, pointed out in 1829 in the Quarterly Review (xli. pp. 802-827) some of the fallacies of Macleay’s method, and in return provoked from him a reply, in the form of a letter addressed to Vigors On the Dying Struggle of the Dichotomous System, couched in language the force of which no one even at the present day can deny, though to the modern naturalist its invective power contrasts ludicrously with the strength of its ratiocination. But, confining oursclves to what is here our special business, it is to be remarked that perhaps the heaviest blow dealt at these strange doctrines was that delivered by Renniz, who, in an edition of Montagu’s Ornithological Dictionary (pp. xxxiii-lv), published in_1831 and again issued in 1838, attacked the Quinary System, and especially its application to Ornithology by Vigors and Swainson, in a way that might perhaps have demolished it, had not the author mingled with his undoubtedly sound reasoning much that is foreign to any question with which a naturalist, as such, ought to deal—though that herein he was only

following the example of one of his opponents, who had constantly treated the subject in like manner, 1s to be allowed. This did not hinder Swainson, who had succeeded in getting the ornithological portion of the first zoological work ever published at the expense of the British Government (namely, the Fauna Boreali-Americana) executed in accordance with his own opinions, from maintaining them more strongly than ever in several of the volumes treating of Natural History which he con- tributed to the Cabinct Cyclopedia—among others that from which we have just given some extracts—and in what may be deemed the culmination in England of the Quinary System, the volume of the "Naturalist's Library" on The Natural Arrangement and History of Flycatchers, published in 1838, of which unhappy performance inention has already been made in this present work (vol. ix. p. 350, note). This seems to have becn his last attempt; for, two years later, his Bibliography of Zoology shows little trace of his favourite theory, though nothing he had uttered in its support was retracted. Appearing almost simultaneously with this work, an article by STRICKLAND (Mag. Nat. History, ser. 2, iv. pp. 219-226) entitled Observations upon the Affinities and Analogics of Organ- ized Beings administered to the theory a shock from which it never recovered, though attempts were now and then made by its adherents to revive it; and, even ten years or more later, Kaur, one of the few foreign ornithologists who had embraced Quinary principles, was by mistaken kindness allowed to publish Mono- graphs of the Birds-of-Prey (Jardine's Contributions to Ornithology, 1849, pp. 68-75, 96-121; 1850, pp. 51-80; 1851, pp. 119-130; 1852, pp. 103-122 ; and Trans. Zool. Socicty, iv. pp. 201-260), in which its absurdity reached the climax.

The mischief caused by this theory of a Quinary System was

Fleming.

Strick- land.

Faune,

New Zealand.

very great, but was chiefly confined to Britain, for (as has been already stated) the extraordinary views of its adherents found little favour on the continent of Europe. The purely artificial character of the System of Linnzus and his successors had been perceived, and men were at a loss to finda substitute for it. The new doctrine, londly proclaiming the discovery of a “ Natural” System, led away many from the steady practice which should have followed the tcaching of Cuvier (though he in Ornithology had not been able to act up to the principles he had lain down) and from the extended study of Comparative Anatomy. Moreover, it veiled the honest attempts that were making both in France and Germany to find real grounds for establishing an improved state of things, and con- sequently the labours of Dz BLAINVILLE, HrlENNE, GEOFFROY Sr- Hivarre, and L’HerMinier, of MERREM, JOHANNES MULLER, and Nitzscu—to say nothing of others—were almost wholly un- known on this side of the Channel, and even the value of the investigations of British ornithotomists of high merit, such as MAcARTNEY and MAccILLIVRAY, was almost completely over- looked. ‘True it is that there were not wanting othcr men in these islands whose common “sense refused to accept the metaphorical doctrine and the mystical jargon of the Quinarians, but so strenu- ously and persistently had the latter asserted their infallibility, and so vigorously had they assailed any who ventured to doubt it, that most peaceable ornithologists found it best to bend to the furious blast, and in some sort to acquiesce at least in the phraseology of the self-styled interpreters of Creative Will. But, while thus lamenting this unfortunate perversion into a mistaken channel of ornithological energy, we must not over-blame those who caused it. Macleay indecd never pretended to a high position in this branch of science, his tastes lying in the direction of Entomology ; but few of their countrymen knew more of Birds than did Swainson and Vigors; and, while the latter, as editor for many years of the Zoological Journal, and the first Secretary of the Zoological Society, has especial claims to the regard of all zoologists, so the former’s indefatigable pursuit of Natural History, and conscientious labour in its behalf—among other ways by means of his graceful pencil— deserve to be remembcred as a set-off against the injury he unwit- tingly caused.

It is now incumbent upon us to take a rapid survey of the ornithological works which come more or less under the designation of “ Faune”;! but

these are so numerous that it will be necessary to limit this survey, as before indicated, to those countries alone which form the homes of English people, or are commonly visited by them in ordinary travel.

Beginning with our Antipodes, it is hardly needful to go further back than Mr Buller's beautiful Birds of New Zealand (Ato, 1872-73), with coloured plates by Mr Keulemans, since the publi- cation of which the same author has issued a Manual of the Birds of New Zealand (8vo, 1882), founded on the former; but justice requires that mention be made of the labours of G. R. Gray, first in the Appendix to Dieffenbach's 7Z'ravels in New Zealand (1848) and then inthe ornithological portion of the Zoology of the Voyage of H.ILS. " Erebus" and " Terror," begun in 1864, but left unfinished from the following year until completed by Mr Sharpe in 1876. A considerable number of valuable papers on the Ornithology of the country by Drs Hector and Von Haast, Prof. Hutton, Mr Potts, and others are to be found in the 7rans-

_ actions and Proceedings of the New Zealand Institute.

Australia.

Ceylon.

India.

Passing to Australia, we have the first good description of some of its Birds in the several old voyages and in Latham's works before mentioned (pages 6 and 8). Shaw's Zoology of New Holland (4to, 1794) added those of a few more, as did J. W. Lewin's Natural History of the Birds of New South Wales (4to, 1822), which reached a third edition in 1838. Gould's great Birds of Australia has been alrcady named, and he subsequently reproduced with some additions the text of that work under the title of Handbook to the Birds of Australia (2 vols. 8vo, 1865). In 1866 Mr Diggles commenced a similar publication, The Ornithology of Australia, but the coloured plates, though fairly drawn, are not comparable to those of his pre- decessor. This is still incomplete, though the parts that have appeared have been collected to form two volumes and issued with title-pages. Some notices of Australian Birds by Mr Ramsay and others are to be found in the

Procecdings of the Linnean Society of New South Wales and of the Royal Society of Tasmania.

Coming to our Indian possessions, and beginning with Ceylon, we have Kelaart's Prodromus Faune Zeylunicw (8vo, 1852), and the admirable Birds of Ceylon by Capt. Legge (4to, 1878-80), with coloured plates by Mr Kculemans of all the peculiar species. It is hardly possible to name any book that has been more conscien- tiously executed than this. In regard to continental India many

1 A very useful list of more general scope is given as the Appendix to an address hy Mr Sclatcr to the British Association in 1875 (Report, pt. ii. pp. 114-138).

of the more important publications have been named in a former article (Birps, iii. pp. 762, 763), and since that was written the chief work that has appeared is Blyth's Afammals and Birds of Burma (8vo, 1875).2 Jerdon's Birds of India (8vo, 1862-64 ; re- printed 1877) still reigns supreme as the sole comprehensive work on the Ornithology of the Peninsula. A very fairly executed compilation on the subject by an anonymous writer is to be found in a late cdition of the Cyclopedia of India published at Madras. It is needless to observe that Stray Feathers, an ornithological journal for India and its dependencies, and maintained with much spirit by Mr A. O. Hume, contains many interesting and some valuable papers.

In regard to South Africa, besides the well-known work of South Le Vaillant already mentioned, there is the second volume of Sir Africa. Andrew Smith's Illustrations of the Zoology of South Africa (Ato, 1888-42), which is devoted to birds. This is an important but cannot be called a satisfactory work. Its one hundred and four- teen plates by Ford truthfully represent one hundred and twenty- two of the mounted specimens obtained by the author in his explorations into the interior. Mr Layard's handy Birds of South Africa (8vo0, 1867), though by no means free from faults, has much to recommend it. A so-called new edition of it by Mr Sharpe has since appeared (1875-84), but is executed on a plan so wholly different that it must be regarded as a distinct work. Andersson's Notes on the Birds of Damara Land (8vo, 1872) has been carefully edited by Mr Gurney, whose knowledge of South- African ornithology is perhaps greater than that of any

one else. lt is much to be regretted that of the numerous sporting books that treat of this part of the world so few give any important information respecting the Birds.

Of special works relating to the British West Indies, Waterton's West well-known Wanderings lias passed through several editions since Indies, its first appearance in 1825, and must be mentioned here, though, strictly speaking, much of the country he traversed was not British territory. To Dr Cabanis we are indebted for the ornithological results of Richard Schomburgh's researches given in the third volume (pp. 662-765) of the latter's Reisen im Britisch-Guiana (8vo, 1848), and then in Léotaud's Otscauxr de [tle de la Trinidad (8vo, 1866). Of the Antilles there is only to be named Mr Gosse's excellent Birds of Jamaica (12mo, 1847), together with its I/lustra- tions (sm. fol., 1849) beautifully executed by him. A nominal list, with references, of the Birds of the island is contained in the Handbook of Jamaica for 1881 (pp. 1038-117). a

So admirable a ‘‘ List of Faunal Publications relating to North North American Ornithology" up to the year 1878 has been given by Dr America, Coues as an appendix to his Birds of the Colorado Valley (pp. 567— 784) that nothing more of the kind is wanted except to notice the chief separate works which have since appeared. These may be said to be Mr Stearns's New England Bird Life (2 vols. 8vo, 1881-83), revised by Dr Coues, and the several editions of his own Check List of North American Birds (8vo, 1882), and Key to North American Birds (1884); while it may be added that the conclud- ing volumes of the North American Birds of Prof. Baird, the late Dr Brewer, and Mr Ridgway (the first three of which were pub- lished in 1874) are expected to be issued about the time that these lines will meet the reader's eye. Yet some of the older works are still of sufficient importance to be espccially mentioned here, and especially that of Alexander Wilson, whose American Ornithology, originally published between 1808 and 1814, has gone through more editions than there is room to specify, though mention should be made of those issued in Great Britain, by Jameson (4 vols. 16mo, 1831), and Jardine (3 vols. 8vo, 1832). The former of these has the entire text, but no plates ; the latter reproduces the plates, but the text is in places much condensed, and excellent notes are added.

A continuation of Wilsou's work, under the same title and on the same plan, was issued by Bonaparte between 1825 and 1833, and most of the later editions include the work of both authors. The works of Audubon, with their continuations by Cassin and Mr Elliot, and the Fawna Borcali-Americana of Richardson and Swainson have already been noticed (pages 11 and 15); but they need naming here, as also does Nuttall's Manual of the Ornithology of the United States and of Canada (2 vols., 1832-34 ; 2d ed., 1840) ; the Birds of Long Island (8vo, 1844) by Giraud, remarkable for its excellent account of the habits of shore-birds ; and of course the Birds of North America (4to, 1858) by Prof. Baird, with the co- operation of Cassin and Mr Lawrence, which originally formed a volume (ix.) of what are known as the " Pacific Railroad Reports." Apart from these special works the scientific journals of Boston, New York, Philadelphia, and Washington contain innumerable papers on the Ornithology of the country, while in 1876 the Bulletin of the Nuttall Ornithological Club began to appear and continued until 1884, when it was superseded by The Auk, estab- lished solely for the promotion of Ornithology in America, and

2 This is a posthumous publication, nominally forming an extra number of the Journal of the Asiatic Society; but, since it was separ- ately issued, it is entitled to notice here.

rmany.

italy.

)

pain nd ortugal.

France.

OBRBNITHOULOGY

numbering among its supporters almost every American ornitholo- gist of repute, its editors being Messrs Allen, Coues, Ridgway, Brewster, and Chamberlain.

Returning to the Old World, among the countries whose Orni- thology will most interest British readers we have first Iceland, the fullest—indeed the only full—account of the Birds of which is Faber's Prodromusder islandischen Ornithologie (8vo, 1822), though the island has since been visited by several good ornithologists,— Proetor, Kriiper, and Wolley among them. A list of its Birds, with some notes, bibliographical and biological, has been given as an Appendix to Mr Baring-Gould's Iceland, tts Scenes and Sagas (8vo, 1862); and Mr Shepherd's North-west Peninsula of Iceland (8vo, 1867) recounts a somewhat profitless expedition made thither expressly for ornithological objects. For the Birds of the Feeroes there is Herr H. C. Miiller's Ferdernes Fuglefawna (8vo, 1862), of which a German translation has appeared.! The Ornithology of Norway has been treated in a great many papers by Herr Collett, some of which may be said to have been separately published as Norges Fugle (8v0, 1868; with a supplement, 1871), and The Ornithology of Northern Norway (8vo, 1872)—this last in English. For Scandinavia generally the latest work is Herr Collin's Skandinaviens\Fugle (8vo, 1873), being a greatly bettered edition of the very moderate Danmarks Fugle of Kjerbélling ; but the orni- thological portion of Nilsson's Skandinavisk Fauna, Foglarna (3d ed., 2 vols. 8vo, 1858) is of great merit ; while the text of Sundevall's Svenska Foglarna (obl. fol., 1856-73), unfortunately unfinished at his death, and Herr Holmgren's Skandinaviens Foglar (2 vols. 8vo, 1866-75) deserve naming.

Works on the Birds of Germany are far too numerous to be recounted. That of the two Naumanns, already mentioned, and yet again to be spoken of, stands at the head of all, and perhaps at the head of the "Faunal" works of all countries. For want of space it must here suffice simply to name some of the ornitholo- gists who in this century have elaborated, to an extent elsewhere unknown, the science as regards their own country :—Altum, Baldamus, Bechstein, Blasius (father and two sons), Bolle, Borggreve, whose Vogel-Fauna von Norddeutschland (8vo, 1869) contains what is practically a bibliographical index to the subject, Brehm (father and sons), Von Droste, Gitke, Gloger, Hintz, Alex- ander and Eugen von Homeyer, Jackel, Koch, Konig-Wart- hausen, Kriiper, Kutter, Landbeck, Landois, Leisler, Von Maltzan, Bernard Meyer, Von der Miihle, Neumann, Tobias, Johann Wolf, and Zander.2 Were we to extend the list beyond the boundaries of the German empire, and include the ornithologists of Austria,

Bohemia, and the other states subject to the same monarch, the number would be nearly doubled ; but that would overpass our pro- posed limits, though Herr von Pelzeln must be named.' Passing onward to Switzerland, we must content ourselves by referring to the list of works, forming a Bibliographia Ornithologica Helvetica, drawn up by Dr Stélker for Dr Fatio's Bulletin de la Société Ornitho- logique Suisse (ii. pp. 90-119). As to Italy, we can but name here the Fauna d'Italia, of which the second part, Uceclli (8vo, 1872), by Count Salvadori, contains an excellent bibliography of Italian works on the subject, and the posthumously published Orni- tologia Italiana of Savi (8 vols. 8vo, 1873-77).4 Coming to the Iberian peninsula, we must in default of separate works depart from our rule of not mentioning contributions to journals, for of the former there are only Col. Irby's Ornithology of the Straits of Gibraltar (8vo, 1875) and Mr A. ©. Smith's Spring Tour in Portugal ® to be named, and these only partially cover the ground. However, Dr A. E. Brehm has published a list of Spanish Birds (Allgem. deutsche Naturhist. Zeitwng, iii. p. 481), and The Ibis con- tains several excellent papers by Lord Lilford and by Mr Saunders, the latter of whom there records (1871, p. 55) the few works on Ornithology by Spanish authors, and in the Bulletin de la Socrété Zoologique de France (i. p. 315; ii. pp. 11, 89, 185) has given a list of the Spanish Birds known to him.

Returning northwards, we have of the Birds of the whole of France nothing of real importance more recent than the volume

1 Journal fiir Ornithologie, 1869, pp. 107, 341, 381. One may almost say an English translation also, for Major Feilden's contribution to the Zoologist for hae on the same subject gives the most essential part of Herr Muiller's infor- mation.

2 This is of course no complete list of German ornithologists. Some of the most eminent of them have written scareely a line on the Birds of their own country, as Cabanis (editor sinee 1853 of the Journal fur Ornithologie), Finsch, Nartlaub, Prince Max of Wied, A. B. Meycr, Nathusius, Nehrkorn, Reichenbach, Reiehenow, and Schalow among others.

3 Auscful ornithological bibliography of the Austrian-Hungarian dominions was printed in the Verhandlungen of the Zoological and Botanical Society

of Vienna for 1878, by Victor Ritter von Tschusi zu Schmidhofen. A similar bibliography of Russian Ornithology by Alexander Brandt was printed at St Petersburg in 1877 or 1878.

4 A useful compendium of Greek and Turkish Ornithology by Drs Kriiper and Hartlaub is contained in Mommsen's Griechische Jahrzeiten for 1875 (Heft IIT.). For other countries in the Levant there are Canon Tristram's Fauna and Flora of ine (4to, 1884) and Capt. Shelley's Handbook to the Birds of Egypt (8vo,

eo In the final chapter of this work the author gives a list of Portuguese Birds, including besides those observed by him those recorded by Prof. Barboza du Bocage in the Gazeta Medica de Lisboa, 1861, pp. 17-21

Oiscauz in Vieillot's Faune Francaise (8vo, 1822-29); but there is a great number of local publications of which Mr Saunders has furnished (Zoologist, 1878, pp. 95-99) a catalogue. Some of these seem only to have appeared in journals, but many have certainly been issued separately. Those of most interest to English orni- thologists naturally refer to Britanny, Normandy, and Picardy, and are by Baillon, Beuoist, Blandiu, Bureau, Canivet, Chesnoun, Degland, Demarle, De Norguet, Gentil, Hardy, Lemettcil, Lemon- nicier, Lesauvage, Maignon, Marcotte, Nourry, and Taslé, while perhaps the Ornithologie Parisienne of M. René Paquet, under the pseudonym of Nérée Quépat, should also be named. Of the rest the most important are the Ornithologie Provengale of Roux (2 vols. 4to, 1825-29); Risso's Histotre naturelle… . des environs de Nice (5 vols. 8vo, 1826-27); the Ornithologie du Dauphiné of Boutcille and Labatie (2 vols. 8vo, 1843-44); the Fawne Mert- dionale of Crespon (2 vols. 8vo, 1844) ; the Ornithologie de la Savoic of Bailly (4 vols. 8vo, 1853-54), and Les Richesses ornithologiques du midi de la France (4to, 1859-61) of MM. Jaubert and

Barthélemy-Lapommeraye. For Belgium the Fauwne Belge of Baron Belgium.

De Selys-Longchamps (8vo, 1842), old as it is, remains the classical work, though the Planches coloriécs des Oiseaux de la Belgique of M. Dubois (8vo, 1851-60) is so much later in date. In regard to

Holland we have Schlegel's De Vogels van Nederland (8 vols. 8vo, Holland.

1854-58 ; 2d ed., 2 vols., 1878), besides his De Dieren van Nedcr- land : Vogels (8vo, 1861).

Before considering the ornithological works relating solely to the Europe in British Islands, it may be well to cast a glance on a few of those general.

that refer to Europe in general, the more so since most of them are of Continental origin. First we have the already-mentioned" Manuel @' Ornithologie of Temminck, which originally appeared as a single volume in 1815 ;§ but that was speedily superseded by the second edition of 1820, in twovolumes. Two supplementary parts were issued in 1835 and 1840 respectively, and the work for many years deservedly maintained the highest position as the authority on European Ornithology—indced in England it may almost without exaggeration be said to have been nearly the only foreign ornithological work known ; but, as could only be expected, grave defects are now to be discovered in it. Some of them were already manifest when one of its author's colleagues, Schlegel (who had been employed to write the text for Susemihl's plates, originally intended to illustrate Temminck's work), brought out his bilingual Revue critique des Oiseaux d' Europe (8v0, 1844), a very remarkable volume, since it correlated and consolidated the labours of French and German, to say nothing of Russian, ornithologists. Of Gould's Birds of Europe (5 vols. fol., 1832-87) nothing need be added to what has been already said. The ycar 1849 saw the publication of Degland's Ornithologie Europtenne (2 vols. 8vo), a work fully intended to take the place of Temminck's; but of which Bonaparte, in a caustic but by no means ill-deserved Revue Critique (12mo, 1850), said that the author had performed a miracle since he had worked without a collection of specimens and without a library. Asecond edition, revised by M. Gerbe (2 vols. 8vo, 1867), strove to remedy, and to some extent did remedy, the grosser errors of the first, but enough still remain to make few statements in the work trustworthy unless corroborated by other

evidence. Meanwhile in England Dr Bree had in 1858 begun the publication of The Birds of Europe not observed in the British Isles (4 vols. 8yo), which was completed in 1863, and in 1875 reached a second and improved edition (5 vols.). In 1862 M. Dubois brought out a similar work on the “Espéces non observées en Belgique,” being supplemen- tary to that of his above named. In 1870 Dr Fritsch completed his Naturgeschiehte der Vogel Europas (8vo, with atlas in folio); and in 1871 Messrs Sharpe and Dresser began the publication of their Birds of Ewrope, which was completed by the latter in 1879 (8 vols. 4to), and is unquestionably the most complete work of its kind, both for fulness of information and beauty of illustration— the coloured plates being nearly all by Mr Keulemans, or when not by him from the hardly inferior hand of Mr Neale. In so huge an undertaking mistakes and omissions are of course to be found if any one likes the invidious task of seeking for them; but many of the errors imputed to this work prove on investigation to refer to matters of opinion and not to matters of fact, while many more are explicable if we remember that while the work was in progress Ornithology was being prosecuted with unprecedented activity, and thus statements which were in accordance with the best information at the beginning of the period were found to need modification before it was ended. As a whole European ornitho- logists are all but unanimously grateful to Mr Dresser for the way in which he performed the enormous labour he had under- taken.

Coming now to works on British Birds only, the first of the British present century that requires remark is Montagu’s Ornithological Isles.

Dictionary (2 vols. 8vo, 1802; supplement 1818), the merits of which have been so long and so fully acknowledged both abroad and at home that no further comment is here wanted. In 1831

6 Copies arc said to exist bearing the date 1814.

Rennie brought out a modified edition of it (reissued in 1833), and Newman another in 1866 (reissued in 1883); but those who wish to know the author’s

views had better consult the original. Next in order come the very inferior British Ornithology of Graves (3 vols. 8vo, 1811-21), and a work with the same title by Hunt (3 vols. 8vo, 1815-22), published at Norwich, but never finished. Then we have Selby's Illustrations of British Ornithology, two folio volumes of coloured plates engraved by himself, between 1821 and 1833, with letterpress also in two volumes (8vo, 1825-33), a second edition of the first volume being also issued (1833), for the author, having yielded to the pressure of the " Quinarian " doctrines then in vogue, thought it necessary to adjust his classification accordingly, and it must be admitted that for information the second edition is best. In 1828 Fleming brought out his History of British Animals (8vo), in which the Birds are treated at considerable length (pp. 41-146), though not with great success. In 1835 Mr Jenyns (ow Blomefield) produced an excellent Manual of British Vertebrate Animals, a volume (8vo) executed with great scientific skill, the Birds again receiving due attention (pp. 49-286), and the descriptions of the various species being as accurate as they are terse. In the same year began the Colowred Illustrations of British Birds and their Eggs of H. L. Meyer (4to), which was completed in 1848, whereof a second edition (7 vols. 8vo, 1842-50) was brought out, and subsequently (1852-57) a reissue of the latter. In 1836 appeared Eyton's History of the rarer British Birds, intended as a sequel to Bewick's well-known volumes, to which no important additions had been made since the issue of 1821. The ycar 1837 saw the beginning of two remarkable works by Macgillivray and Yarrell respectively, and each cntituled 4 History of British Birds. Of the first, undoubtedly the more original and in many respects the more minutely accurate, mention will again have to be made (page 24), and, save to state that its five volumes were not completed till 1852, nothing more needs now to be added. The second has unquestionably become the standard work on British Ornithology, a fact due in part to its numerous illustrations, many of them indeed ill drawn, though all carefully engraved, but much more to the breadth of the author's views and the judgment with which they were set forth. In practical acquaint- ance with the internal structure of Birds, and in the perception of its importauce in classification, he was certainly not behind his rival ;'but he well knew that the British public in a Book of Birds not only did not want a series of anatomical treatises, but would even resent their introduction. He had the art to conceal his art, and his work was therefore a success, while the other was unhappily a failure. Yet with all his

knowledge he was deficient in some of the qualities which a great naturalist ought to possess. His concep- tion of what his work should be seems to have been perfect, his execution was not equal to the conception. However, he was not the first nor will he be the last to fall short in this respect. For him it must be said that, whatever may have been done by the generation of British ornithologists now becoming advanced in life, he educated them to do it; nay, his influence even extends to a younger generation still, though they may hardly be aware of it. Of Yarrell's work in three volumes, a second edition was published in 1845, a third in 1856, and a fourth, begun in 1871, and almost wholly rewritten, is still unfinished. Of the compilations based upon this work, without which they could not have been composed, there is no need to speak. Onc of the few appearing since, with the same scope, that are not borrowed is Jardine's Birds of Great Britain and Ireland (4 vols. 8vo, 1838-48), forming part of his Naturalist's Library ; and Gould's Birds of Great Britain has been already mentioned.

A considerable number of local works deserving of notice have also to be named. The first three volumes of Thompson's Natural History of Ireland (8vo, 1849-51) contain an excellent account of the Birds of that island, and Mr Watters's Birds of Ireland (8vo, 1858) has also to be mentioned. For North Britain there is Mr Robert Gray's Birds of. the West of Scotland (8vo, 1871), which virtually is an account of those of almost the whole of that part of the kingdom. To these may be added Dunn's Ornithologist's Guide to Orkney and Shetland (8vo, 1887), the unfinished Historia Naturalis Orcadensis of Baikie and Heddle (8vo, 1848), and Saxby's Birds of Shetland (8vo, 1874), while the sporting works of Charles St John contain much information on the Ornithology of the Highlands.? The local works on English Birds are still more numerous, but among them may be especially named Dillwyn's Fauna and Flora of Swansea (1848), Mr Knox's Ornithological Rambles in_ Sussex (1849), Mr Stevenson's Birds of Norfolk (1866-70), Mr Cecil Smith's Birds of Somerset (1869) and Birds of

? Though contravening our plan, we must for its great merits notice here Mr More's series of papers in The Ibis for 1865, " On the Distri- bution of Birds in Great Britain during the Nesting Season."

2 Did our scheme permit us, we should be glad to mention in detail the various important communications on Scottish Birds of Alston, Messrs Buckley, Harvie-Brown, Lumsden, and others.

Guernsey (1879), Mr Cordeaux's Birds of the Humber District (1872), Mr John Hancock's Birds of Northumberland and Durham (1874), The Birds of Nottinghamshire by Messrs Sterland and Whitaker (1879), Rodd's Birds of Cornwall edited by Mr Harting (1880), and the Vertebrate Fauna of Yorkshire (1881), of which the "Birds" are by Mr W. E. Clarke.

The good effects of "Faunal" works such as those named in the foregoing rapid survey none can doubt. "Every kingdom, every province, should have its own monographer," wrote Gilbert White more than one hundred years ago, and experience has proved the truth of his assertion. In a former article (BirDs, iii. pp. 736-764) the attempt has been made to shew how the labours of monographers of this kind, but on a more extended scale, can be brought together, and the valuable results that thence follow. Important as they are, they do not of themselves constitute Ornithology as a science; and an enquiry, no less wide and far more recondite, still remains. By whatever term we choose to call it—Classification, Arrangement, Systematizing, or Taxonomy—that enquiry which has for its object the discovery of the natural groups into which Birds fall, and the mutual relations of those groups, has always been one of the deepest interest, and to it we must now recur.

But nearly all the authors above named, it will have been seen, trod the same ancient paths, and in the works of scarcely one of them had any new spark of intelligence been struck out to enlighten the gloom which surrounded the investigator. It is now for us to trace the rise of the present more advanced school of ornithologists whose labours, preliminary as we must still regard them to be, yet give signs of far greater promise. It would probably be unsafe to place its origin further back than a few scattered hints contained in the " Pterographische Frag- mente" of Curistian Lupwia Nirzscu, published in the Magazin fiir den neuesten Zustand der Naturkunde (edited by Voigt) for May 1806 (xi. pp. 393-417), and even these might be left to pass unnoticed, were it not that we recog- nize in

them the germ of the great work which the same admirable zoologist subsequently accomplished. In these “Fragments,” apparently his earliest productions, we find him engaged on the subject with which his name will always be especially identified, the structure and arrange- ment of the feathers that form the proverbial characteristic of Birds. But, though the observations set forth in this essay were sufficiently novel, there is not much in them that at the time would have attracted attention, for perhaps no one—not even the author himself—could have then foreseen to what important end they would, in con- junction with other investigations, lead future naturalists ; but they are marked by the same close and patient deter- mination that eminently distinguishes all the work of their author ; and, since it will be necessary for us to return to this part of the subject later, there is here no need to say more of them. In the following year another set of hints— of a kind so different that probably no one then living would have thought it possible that they should ever be brought in correlation with those of Nitzsch—are contained in a memoir on Fishes contributed to the tenth volume of the Annales du Muséum Whistoire naturelle of Paris by ETIENNE GEOFFROY StT-H1LarrE in 1807.2 Here we have it stated as a general truth (p. 100) that young birds have the sternum formed of five separate pieces—one in the middle, being its keel, and two “annexes ” on each side to which the ribs are articulated—all, however, finally uniting to form the single “breast-bone.” Further on (pp. 101, 102) we find observations as to the number of ribs which are attached to each of the “annexes” —there being some-

2 In the Philosophie Anatomique (i. pp. 69-101, and especially pp. 1385, 186), which appeared in 1818, Geoffroy St-Hilaire explained the views he had adopted at greater length.

Nitzsch,

Hi. G. Sty Hilaire. |

ry i The OG Y 1

times more of them articulated to the anterior than to the posterior, and in certain forms no ribs belonging to one, all being applied to the other. Moreover, the author goes on to remark that in adult birds trace of the origin

of the sternum from five centres of ossification is always more or less indicated by sutures, and that, though these sutures had been generally regarded as ridges for the attachment of the sternal muscles, they indeed mark the extreme points of the five primary bony pieces of the sternum.

In 1810 appeared at Heidelberg the first volume of TrEDEMANN's carefully-wrought Anatomie und Natur- geschichte der Vogel—which shews a remarkable advance upon the work which Cuvier did in 1805, and in some respects is superior to his later production of SI. "Weel, however, only noticed here on account of the numerous references made to it by succeeding writers, for neither in this nor in the author's second volume (not published until 1814) did he propound any systematic arrangement of the Class. More germane to our present subject are the Osteographische Beitrége zur Naturgeschichte der Vogel of Nitzsch, printed at Leipzig in 1811—a miscellaneous set of detached essays on some peculiarities of the skeleton or portions of the skeleton of certain Birds—one of the most remarkable of which is that on the component parts of the foot (pp. 101-105) pointing out the aberration from the ordinary structure exhibited by the Goatsucker (Capri- mulgus) and the Swift (Cypselus)—an aberration which, if rightly understood, would have conveyed a warning to those ornithological systematists who put their trust in Birds' toes for characters on which to erect a classification, that there was in them much more of importance, hidden in the integument, than had hitherto been suspected ; but the warning was of little avail, if any, till many years had elapsed. However, Nitzsch had not as yet seen his way to proposing any methodical arrangement of the various groups of Birds, and it was not until some eighteen months later that a scheme of classification in the main anatomical was attempted.

This scheme was the work of Buastus MERREM, who, in a communication to the Academy of Sciences of Berlin on the 10th December 1812, which was published in its Abhandlungen for the following year (pp. 237-259), set forth a Zentamen Systematis naturalis Avium, no less modestly entitled than modestly executed. The attempt of Merrem must be regarded as the virtual starting-point of the latest efforts in Systematic Ornithology, and in that view its proposals deserve to be stated at length. Without pledging ourselves to the acceptance of all its details—some of which, as is only

natural, cannot be sustained with our present knowledge, resulting from the information accumu- lated by various investigators throughout more than seventy years—it is certainly not too much to say that Merrem's merits are almost incomparably superior to those of any of his predecessors as well as to those of the majority of his successors for a long time to come ; while the neglect of his treatise by many (perhaps it would not be erroneous to say by most) of those who have since written on the subject seems inexcusable save on the score of inadvert- ence. Premising then that the chief characters assigned by this ill-appreciated systematist to his several groups are drawn from almost all parts of the structure of Birds, and are supplemented by some others of their more prominent peculiarities, we present the following abstract of his scheme :!—

1 The names of the genera are, he tells us, for the most part those of Linneus, as being the best-known, though not the best. To some of the Linnzean genera he dare not, however, assign a place, for instance, Buceros, Wematopus, Merops, Glareola (Gmelin's genus, by the bye), and Palamedea.

wo)

J. AVES CARINATZ. 1. Aves aeree. A. Rapaces.—a. Accipitres—Vultur, Falco, Sagittarius. b. Striz. B. Hymenopodes.—wa. Chelidones: a. C. nocturne—Capri- mulgus; B. C. diurne—Hirundo.

b. Oscines: a. O. conirostres—Loxia, Frin- gilla, Emberiza, Tangara; p. O. ten- uirostres—Alauda, Motaeilla, Musci- capa, Todus, Lantus, Ampelis, Tur- dus, Paradisea, Buphaga, Sturnus, Oriolus, Gracula, Coractas, Corvus, Pipra?, Parus, Sitta, Certhiz quedam.

C. Mellisuge.—Trochilus, Certhia# et Upupe plurime. D. Dendrocolapte.—Picus, Yun. E. Brevilingues.—a. Upupa; b. Ispide. F. Levirostres.—a. Ramphastus, Scythrops?; b. Psittacus. G. Coceyges.—Cuculus, Trogon, Bucco, Crotophaga. 2. Aves terrestres. A. Columba. B. Galline.

3. Aves aquatica.

A. Odontorhynchi: a. Boscades—Anas; b. Mergus; ¢. Pheni- copter us.

B. Platyrhynchi.—Pelicanus, Phaeton, Plotus.

C. Aptenodytes.

D. Urinatrices: a. Cepphi—Alca, Colymbi pedibus palmatis; b. Podiccps, Colymbi pedibus lobatis.

E. Stenorhynchi. — Procellaria, Diomedea, Larus, Sterna, Rhynehops.

4, Aves palustres.

A. Rusticole: a. Phalarides— Rallus, Fuliea, Parra; 6. Limosuge—Numentus, Scolopax, Tringa, Charadrius, Receurvirostra.

B. Gralle: a. Erodii—Ardew ungue intermedio serrato, Cancroma; b. Pelargi—Ctconia, Mycteria, Tantali quidam, Scopus, Platalea; c. Gerani—Ardex cristate, rues, Psophia.

C. Otis.

II. Aves RATITA.—Struthio.

The most novel feature, and one the importance of which most ornithologists of the present day are fully pre- pared to admit, is of course the separation of the Class ‘Aves into two great Divisions, which from one of the most obvious distinctions they present were called by its author Carinate? and Ratite,® according as the sternum possesses a keel (crista in the phraseology of many anatomists) or not. But Merrem, who subsequently communicated to the Academy of Berlin a more detailed memoir on the “

flat-breasted ” Birds,t was careful not here to rest his Divisions on the presence or absence of their sternal character alone. He concisely cites (p. 238) no fewer than eight other characters of more or less value as peculiar to the Carinate Division, the first of which is that the feathers have their barbs furnished with hooks, in consequence of which the barbs, including those of the wing-quills, cling closely together ; while among the rest may be mentioned the position of the furcula and coracoids,® which kcep the wing-bones apart; the limitation of the number of the lumbar vertebra to fifteen, and of the carpals to two; as well as the divergent direction of the iliac bones,—the corresponding characters peculiar to the Ratite Division being (p. 259) the disconnected condition of the barbs of the feathers,through the absence of any hooks whereby they might cohere ; the non-existence of the furcula, and the coalescence of the coracoids with the scapulz (or, as he expressed it, the extension of the scapuli to supply the place of the coracoids, which he thought were wanting) ; the lumbar vertebrae being twenty and the carpals three in number; and the parallelism of the iliac bones. oe

2 From carina, a keel.

3 From rates, a raft or flat-bottomed barge.

4 ‘< Beschreibung der Gerippes eines Casuars nebst einigen beilaufigen Bemerkungen iiber die flachbriistigen Végel”—Abdhandl. der Berlin. Akademie, Phys. Klasse, 1817, pp. 179-198, tabb. i—ili.

5 Merrem, as did many others in his time, calls the coracoids “ clavi- cule’; but it is now well understood that in Birds the real clavicule form the furcula or ‘‘ merry-thought.”

De Blain- ville.

As for Merrem’s partitioning of the inferior groups there is less to be said in its praise as a whole, though credit must be given to his anatomical knowledge for leading him to the perception of several affinities, as well as differences, that had never before been suggested by superficial

systematists. But it must be confessed that (chiefly, no doubt, from paucity of accessible material) he overlooked many points, both of alliance and the opposite, which since his time have gradually come to be admitted. For instance, he seems not to have been aware of the dis- tinction, already shown by Nitzsch (as above mentioned) to exist, between the Swallows and the Swifts; and, by putting the genus Coracias among his Oscines Tenuirostres} without any remark, proved that he was not in all respects greatly in advance of his age; but on the other hand he most righteously judged that some species hitherto referred to the genera Certhia and Upupa required removal to other positions, and it is much to be regretted that the very concise terms in which his decisions were given to the world make it impossible to determine with any degree of certainty the extent of the changes in this respect which he would have introduced. Had Merrem published his scheme on an enlarged scale, it seems likely that he would have obtained for it far more attention, and possibly some portion of acceptance. He had deservedly attained no little reputation as a descriptive anatomist, and his claims to be regarded as a systematic reformer would probably have been admitted in his lifetime. As it was his scheme apparently fell flat, and not until many years had elapsed were its merits at all generally recognized.

Notice has next to be taken of a Memoir on the Employment of Sternal Characters in establishing Natural Families among Birds, which was read by Dz BLAINVILLE before the Academy of Sciences of Paris in 1815,? but not published in full for more than five years later (Journal de Physique… . et des Arts, xcii. pp. 185-215), though an abstract forming part of a Prodrome @une nouvelle distribu- tion du Régne Animal appeared earlier (op. cit., Ixxxiii. pp. 252, 253, 258, 259; and Bull. Soc. Philomath. de Paris, 1816, p. 110). This is a very disappointing performance, since the author observes that, notwithstanding his new classification of Birds is based on a study of the form of the sternal apparatus, yet, because that lies wholly within the body, he is compelled to have recourse to such outward characters as are afforded by the proportion of the limbs and the disposition of the toes—even as had been the practice of most ornithologists before him! It is evident that the features of the sternum on which De Blainville chiefly relied were those drawn from its posterior margin, which no very extensive experience of specimens is needed to show are of comparatively

slight value; for the number of “échancrures”—notches as they have sometimes been called in English—when they exist, goes but a very short way as a guide, and is so variable in some very natural groups as to be even in that short way occasionally mis- leading.® There is no appearance of his having at all taken Into consideration the far more trustworthy characters furnished by the anterior part of the sternum, as well as by the coracoids and the furcula. Still De Blainville made some advance in a right direction, as for instance by elevating the Parrots‘ and the Pigeons as “ Ordres,” equal in rank to that of the Birds-of-Prey and some others.

‘ He also placed the genus Todus in the same group, but it must be borne in mind that in his time a great many Birds were referred to that genus which (according to modern ideas) certainly do not belong to it, and it may well have been that he never had the opportunity of examining a specimen of the genus as nowadays restricted,

2 Not 1812, as has sometimes. been stated,

3 Cf. Philos. Transactions, 1869, p. 337, note.

- This view of them had been long before taken by Willughby. but abandoned by all later authors.

Cr RITToLec y

According to the testimony of L’Herminier (for whom see later) he divided the “ Passereaux” into two sections, the “faux” and the “vrais”; but, while the latter were very correctly defined, the former were most arbitrarily separated from the “ Grimpeurs.” He also split his Grallatores and Natatores (practically identical with the Grallx and Anseres of Linnzeus) each into four sections ; but he failed to see—as on his own principles he ought to have seen— that each of these sections was at least equivalent to almost any one of his other “ Ordres.” He had, however, the courage to act up to his own professions in collocating the Rollers (Coracias) with the Bee-eaters (Merops), and had the sagacity to surmise that Menura was not a Gallinaceous Bird. The greatest benefit conferred by this memoir is probably that it stimulated the efforts, presently to be mentioned, of one of his pupils, and that it brought more distinctly into sight that other factor,

originally dis- covered by Merrem, of which it now clearly became the duty of systematizers to take cognizance.

Following the chronological order we are here adopting, we next have to recur to the labours of Nirzscu, who, in 1820, in a treatise on the Nasal Glands of Birds—a subject that had already attracted the attention of

Jacopson (Nouv. Bull. Soc. Philomath, de Paris, iii. pp. Jacob | 267-269)—first put forth in Meckel's Deutsches Archiv son.

Str die Physiologre (vi. pp. 251-269) a statement of his

general views on ornithological classification which were Nitasch,

based on a comparative examination of those bodies in various forms. It seems unnecessary here to occupy space by giving an abstract of his plan,> which hardly includes any but European species, because it was subsequently elaborated with no inconsiderable modifications in a way that must presently be mentioned at greater length. But the scheme, crude as it was, possesses some interest. It is not only a key to much of his later work —to nearly all indeed that was published in his lifetime—but in it are founded several definite groups (for example, Passerinz and Picarix) that subsequent experience has shewn to be more or less natural; and it further serves as additional evidence of the breadth of his views, and his trust in the teachings of anatomy; for it is clear that, if organs so apparently insignificant as these nasal glands were found worthy of being taken into account, and capable of form- ing a base of operations, in drawing up a system, it would almost follow that there can be no part of a Bird's organiza- tion that by proper study would not help to supply some means of solving the great question of its affinities. This seems to the present writer to be one of the most certain general truths in Zoology, and is probably admitted in theory to be so by most zoologists, but their practice is opposed to it; for, whatever group of animals be studied, it 1s found that one set or another of characters is the chief favourite of the authors consulted—each generally taking a separate set, and that to the exclusion of all others, instead of effecting a combination of all the sets and taking the aggregate.®

That Nitzsch took this extended view is abundantly proved by the valuable series of ornithotomical observa- tions which he must have been for some time accumulating,

5 This plan, having been repeated by Schépss in 1829 (op. cit., xii. p. 73), became known to Sir R. Owen in 1835, who then drew to it the attention of Kirby (Seventh Bridgewater Treatise, ii. pp. 444, 445), and in the next year referred to it in his own article “ Aves ” in Todd’s Cyclopedia of Anatomy (i. p. 266), so that Englishmen need no excuse for not being aware of one of Nitzsch’s labours, though his more advanced work of 1829, presently to be mentioned, was not referred to by Sir R. Owen.

8 A very remarkable instance of this may be seen in the Systema Avium, promulgated in 1830 by Wagler (a man with great knowledge of Birds) in his Natirliches System der Amphibien (pp. 77-128). He eet a tongue as his chief guide, and found it indeed an unruly member.

1’ Her- ninier,

OG NITAOROG Y

and almost immediately afterwards began to contribute to the younger N aumann’s excellent Maturgeschichte der Vogel Deutschlands, already noticed above (page 9). Besides a concise general treatise on the Organization of Birds to be found in the Introduction to this work (i. pp. 23-52), a brief description from Nitzsch’s pen of the peculiarities of the internal structure of nearly every genus is incorporated with the author’s prefatory remarks, as each passed under consideration, and these descriptions being almost without exception so drawn up as to be com- parative are accordingly of great utility to the student of classification, though they have been so greatly neglected. Upon these descriptions he was still engaged till death, in 1837, put an end to his labours, when his place as Naumann’s assistant for the remainder of the work was taken by Rudolph Wagner; but, from time to time, a few more, which he had already completed, made their posthumous appearance in it, and, even in recent years, some selections from his unpublished papers have through the care of Giebel been presented to the public. Through- out the whole of this series the same marvellous industry and scrupulous accuracyare manifested, and attentive study of it

will shew how many times Nitzsch anticipated the conclusions at which it has taken some modern taxonomers fifty years to arrive. Yet over and over again his de- termination of the affinities of several groups even of European Birds was disregarded ; and his labours, bemg contained in a bulky and costly work, were hardly known at all outside of his own country, and within it by no means appreciated so much as they deserved'—for even Naumann himself, who gave them publication, and was doubtless in some degree influenced by them, utterly failed to perceive the importance of the characters offered by the song-muscles of certain groups, though their peculiarities were all duly described and recorded by his coadjutor, as some indeed had been long before by Cuvier in his famous dissertation? on the organs of voice in Birds (Lecons @anatomie comparée, iv. pp. 450-491). Nitzsch's name was subsequently dismissed by Cuvier without a word of praise, and in terms which would have been applicable to many another and inferior author, while Temminck, terming Naumann's work an " ouvrage de use," —it being in truth one of the cheapest for its contents ever published, —effectually shut it out from the realms of science. unknown until quoted some years after its completion by

a catalogue-compiler on account of some peculiarities of }

nomenclature which it presented.®

Now we must return to France, where, L'Herminier, a creole of Guadaloupe and a pupil of De Blainville's, contributed to the Actes of the Linnzean Society of Paris for that year (vi. pp. 3-93) the " Recherches sur

Yappareil sternal des Oiseaux," which the precept and |

example of his master had prompted him to undertake, and Cuvier had found for him the means of executing. A second and considerably enlarged edition of this very remarkable treatise was published as a separate work in the following year. We have already seen that De Blainville, though fully persuaded of the great value of sternal features as a method of classification, had been compelled to fall back upon the old pedal characters so often employed before ; but now the scholar had learnt to excel his teacher, and not only to form an at least provi-

a Their value was, however, understood by Gloger, who in 1834, as = presently be seen, expressed his regret at not being able to use em. _ ® Cuvier’s first observations on the subject seem to have appeared in the Magazin Encyclopédique for 1795 (ii. pp. 880, 358). However, to this catalogue-compiler the present writer’s grati-

- due, for thereby he became acquainted with the work and its merits.

In Britain it seems to have been positively |

in 1827, |

sional arrangement of the various members of the Class, based on sternal characters, but to describe these characters at some length, and so give a reason for the faith that was in him. There is no evidence, so far as we can see, of his having been aware of Merrem’s views; but like that anatomist he without hesitation divided the Class into two great “coupes,” to which he gave, however, no other names than “ Ovseaux Normaux” and “ Oiseaux Anomaux,’— exactly corresponding with his predecessor’s Carinatx and Ratite—and, moreover, he had a great advantage in founding these groups, since he had discovered, apparently from his own investigations, that the mode of ossification in each was distinct; for hitherto the statement of there being five centres of ossification in every Bird’s sternum seems to have been accepted ag a general truth, without contradiction, wliereas in the Ostrich and the hea, at any rate, L’Herminier found that there were but two such primitive points,* and from analogy he judged that the same would be the case with the Cassowary and the Emeu, which, with the two forms mentioned above, made up the whole of the “ Oiseaua Anomaus” whose existence was then generally acknowledged. These are the forms which composed the Family previously termed Cursores by De Blainville ; but L’Herminier was able to distinguish no fewer than thirty-four Families of “Oiseaua Normaux,” and the judgment with which their separation and defini- tion were effected must be deemed on the whole to be most creditable to him. It is to be remarked, however, that the wealth of the Paris Museum, which he enjoyed to the full, placed him in a situation incomparably more favour- able for arriving at results than that which was

occupied by Merrem, to whom many of the most remarkable forms were wholly unknown, while L'Herminier had at his dis- posal examples of nearly every type then known to exist. But the latter used this privilege wisely and well—not,

after the manner of De Blainville and others subsequent

to him, relying solely or even chiefly on the character afforded by the posterior portion of the sternum, but taking also into consideration those of the anterior, as well as of the in some cases still more important characters presented by the pre-sternal bones, such as the furcula, coracoids, and scapula. L'Herminier thus separated the Families of " Normal Birds" :—

""Passereaux "" — Passercs,

1. " Accipitres" — Accipitres, | 18. Linn.

Linn. 2. " Serpentaires " — Gypogera- | 19. " Pigeons "— Columba, Linn.

nus, Iliger. 20. " Gallinacés "—Gallinacea. 3. "Chouettes""—Striz, Linn. | 21. "Tinamous" — Tinanwus, 4. "Touracos"—Opaetus, Vieillot. Latham.

5

. "Perroquets" — Psittacus, | 22. "Foulques ou Poules d'eau"

Linn. —Fulica, Linn.

6. " Colibris"—Zrochilus, Linn. | 23. " Grues "—Grus, Pallas.

7, "Martinets""—Cypselus, Illi- | 24. " Hérodions "—Herodii, Ili- ger. ger.

8. "Engoulevents"—Caprimul- | 25. No name given, but said to gus, Linn. include "les ibis et les

9. " Coucous "—Cuculus, Linn. spatules." _,

10. "Couroucous"—Trogon, Linn.| 26. "Gralles ou Kchassiers"—

11. “ Rollicrs ”—Galgulus, Bris- Grallx.

son. 27. “ Mouettcs ””—Larus, Linn. 12. “Guépiers ”—Merops, Linn. | 28. “Pétrels”—Procellaria,Linn. 13. “Martins-Pécheurs”—Alcedo,| 29. “ Pélicans”—Pelecanus, Linn. Linn. 30. “ Canards ”—Anas, Linn. 14, “Calaos””—Buceros, Linn. | 381. “Grebes”—Podiceps,Latham.

15. “ Toucans”” — Ramphastos, | 32. “Plongeons” — Colymbus, Linn. Latham.

16. “ Pies ”—-Picus, Linn. 33. “ Pingouins”—Alcea,Latham.

17. “Bpopsides” —. Epopsides, | 34. “ Manchots” — Aptenodytes, Vieillot. Forster.

4 This fact in the Ostrich appears to have been known already-to Geoffroy St-Hilaire from his own observation in Egypt, but docs not seem to have been published by him.

5 Considerable doubts were at that time, as said elsewhere (K1W1, vol. xiv. p. 104), entertained in Paris as to the existence of the A pteryx,

Nitzych.

22

The preceding list is given to shew the very marked agreement of L’Herminier’s results conipared with those obtained fifty years later by another investigator, who approached the subject from an entirely different, though still osteological, basis. The sequence of the Families adopted is of course open to much criticism; but that would be wasted upon it at the present day; and the cautious naturalist will remember that it is generally difficult and in most cases absolutely impossible to deploy even a small section of the Animal Kingdom into line. So far as a linear arrangement will permit, the above list is very creditable, and will not only pass muster, but cannot easily be surpassed for excellence even at this moment. Experience has shewn that a few of the Families are composite, and therefore require further splitting ; but examples of actually false grouping cannot be said to

occur. The most serious fault perhaps to be found is the intercalation of the Ducks (No. 30) between the Pelicans and the Grebes—but every systematist must recognize the difficulty there is in finding a place for the Ducks in any arrangement we can at present contrive that shall be regarded as satisfactory. Many of the excellencies of L'Herminier's method could not be pointed out without too great a sacrifice of space, because of the details into which it would be necessary to enter; but the trenchant way in which he showed that the " Passereaux"—a group of which Cuvier had said "Son caractere semble d'abord purement négatif," and had then failed to define the limits—differed so completely from every other assem- blage, while maintaining among its own innumerable members an almost perfect essential homogeneity, is very striking, and shews how admirably he could grasp his sub- ject. Not less conspicuous are his merits in disposing of the groups of what are ordinarily known as Water-birds, his indicating the affinity of the Rails (No. 22) to the Cranes (No. 23), and the severing of the latter from the Herons (No. 24). His union of the Snipes, Sandpipers, and Plovers into one group (No. 26) and the alliance, especially dwelt upon, of that group with the Gulls (No. 27) are steps which, though indicated by Merrem, are here for the first time clearly laid down; and the separation of the Gulls from the Petrels (No. 28)—a step in advance already taken, it is true, by Illiger—is here placed on indefeasible ground. With all this, perhaps on account of all this, L'Herminier's efforts did not find favour with his scientific superiors, and for the time things remained as though his investigations had never been carried on.

Two years later Nitzsch, who was indefatigable in his endeavour to discover the Natural Families of Birds, and had been pursuing a series of researches into their vascular system, published the result, at Halle in Saxony, in his Observationes de Avium arteria carotide communi, in which is included a classification drawn up in accordance with the variation of structure which that important vessel presented in the several groups that he had opportunities of examin- ing. By this time he had visited several of the principal museums on the Continent, among others Leyden (where Temminck resided) and Paris (where he had frequent intercourse with Cuvier), thus becoming acquainted with a considerable number of exotic forms that had hitherto been inaccessible to him. Consequently his labours had attained to a certain degree of completeness in this direc- tion, and it

may therefore be expedient here to name the different groups which he thus thought himself entitled to

1 With the exception of a brief and wholly inadequate notice in the Edinburgh Journal of Natural History (i. p. 90), the present writer is not aware of attention having been directed to L'Herminier's labours by British ornithologists for several years after; but considering how they were employing themselves at the time (as is shewn in another place) this is not surprising.

OWN FPR RoDoay

J, Avus CarinaT# [L'H. Oiseaux Normaux "]. A, Aves Carinatee aereze.

1. Accipitring [L'H. 1, 2 partim, 3]; 2. Passering [L'H. 18]; 3. Macrochircs [L'H. 6, 7]; 4. Cuculine [L'H. 8, 9, 10 (qu. 11, 12%)]; 5. Pictne [L'H. 15, 16]; 6. Psittacine [L'H. 5]; 7. Lipoglosse [L'H. 18, 14, 17]; 8. Amphibole [L'H. 4].

B. Aves Carinate terrestres. 1. Columbine [L'H. 19]; 2. Gallinaceew [L'H. 20]. C. Aves Carinate aquatics. Gralle.

1. Alectorides (= Dicholophus+ Otis) [L'H. 2 partim, 26 partim] ; 2. Gruine [L'H. 23]; 3. Fulicariew [L'H. 22]; 4. Herodiz [L'H. 24 partim]; 5. Pelargi [L'H. 24 partim, 25]; 6. Odonto- glossi (= Phenieopterus) [L'H. 26 partim] ; 7. Limicole [L'H. 26 peene omnes].

Palmate.

8. Longipennes [L'H. 27]; 9. Nasutx#w [L'H. 28]; 10. Ungwirostres [L'H. 30]; 11. Steganopodes [L'‘H. 29]; 12. Pygopodes [L'H. $1, 32, 33, 34].

II. Aves Ratira#[L'H. "Oiscaux Anomaux"').

To enable the reader to compare the several groups of Nitzsch with the Families of L'Herminier, the numbers applied by the latter to his Families are suffixed in square brackets to the names of the former ; and, disregarding the order of sequence, which is here immaterial, the essential

correspondence of the two systems is worthy of all atten- tion, for it obviously means that these two investigators, starting from different points, must have been on the right track, when they so often coincided as to the limits of what they considered to be, and what we are now almost justified in calling, Natural Groups.? But it must be observed that the classification of Nitzsch, just given, rests much more on characters furnished by the general struc- ture than on those furnished by the carotid artery only. Among all the species (188, he tells us, in number) of which he examined specimens, he found only four varia- tions in the structure of that vessel, namely :—

1. That in which both a right carotid artery and a left are present. This is the most usual fashion among the various groups of Birds, including all the "aerial" forms excepting Passerine, Macrochires, and Prcinx.

2. That in which there is but a single carotid artery, springing from both right and left trunk, but the branches soon coalescing, to take a midway course, and again divid- ing near the head. This form Nitzsch was only able to find in the Bittern (Ardea stellaris).

3. That in which the right carotid artery alone is present, of which, according to our author's experience, the Flamingo (Phenicopterus) was the sole example.

4. That in which the left carotid artery alone exists, as found in all other Birds examined by Nitzsch, and there- fore as regards species and individuals much the most common—since into this category come the countless thousands of the Passerine Birds—a group which out- numbers all the rest put together.

Considering the enormous stride in advance made by L'Herminier, it is very disappointing for the historian to have to record that the next inquirer into the osteology of Birds achieved a disastrous failure in his attempt to throw light on their arrangement by means of a comparison of their sternum. This was BERTHOLD, who devoted a long chapter of his Beitrdge zur Anatomie, published at Gottingen in 1831, to a consideration of the subject. So far as his introduc- tory chapter went—the development of the sternum —he was, for ee

2 Whether Nitzsch was cognizant of L’Herminier’s views is in no way apparent. The latter’s name seems not to be even mentioned by him, but Nitzsch was in Paris in the summer of 1827, and it is almost impossible that he should not have heard of L’Herminier’s labours, unless the relations between the followers of Cuvier, to whom Nitzsch attached himself, and those of De Blainville, whose pupil L’Hermi- nier was, were such as to forbid any communication between the rival schools. Yet we have L’Herminier’s evidence that Cuvier gave him every assistance. Nitzsch’s silence, both on this occasion and after- wards, is very curious; but he cannot be accused of plagiarism, for the scheme given above is only an amplification of that foreshadowed by him (as already mentioned) in 1820 —a scheme which seems to have been equally unknown to L’Herminier, perhaps through linguistic difficulty.

Ok IN me oO LO GY

his time, right cnough and somewhat instructive. It was only when, after a close examination of the sternal apparatus of one hundred and thirty species, which he carefully described, that he arrived (pp. 177-183) at the conclusion—astonishing to us who know of L’Herminier’s previous results —that the sternum of Birds cannot be used as a help to their classification on account of the egregious anomalies that would follow the procceding— such anomalies, for instance, as the separation of Cypsclus from Hirundo and its alliance with Trochilus, and the grouping of Hirundo and Fringilla together. He seems to have been persuaded that the method of Linneus and his disciples was indisputably right, and that any method which contradicted it must therefore be wrong. Moreover, he appears to have regarded the sternal structure asa mere function of the Bird’s habit, especially in regard to its power of flight, and to have wholly overlooked the converse position that this powcr of flight must depend entirely on the structure. Good descriptive anatomist as he certainly was, he was false to the anatomist’s creed; but it is plain, from reading his careful descriptions of sternums, that he could not grasp the essential characters he had before him, and, attracted only by the more salient and obvious features, had not capacity to interpret the meaning of the whole. Yet he did not amiss by giving many figures of sternums hitherto unrepresented. We pass from him to a more lively theme.

At the very beginning of the year 1832 Cuvier laid before the Academy of Sciences of Paris a memoir on the ‘ progress of ossification in the sternum of Birds, of which memoir an abstract will be found in the Annales des Sciences Naturelles (xxv. pp. 260-272). Herein he treated of several subjects with which we are not particularly con- cerned at present, and his remarks throughout were chiefly directed against certain theories which Etienne Geoffroy St-Hilaire had propounded in his Philosophie Anatomique, published a good many years before, and need not trouble us here ; but what does signify to us now is that Cuvier traced in detail, illustrating his statements by the preparations he exhibited, the progress of ossification in the sternum of the Fowl and of the Duck, pointing out how it differed in each, and giving his interpretation of the differ- ences. It had hitherto been generally believed that the mode of ossification in the Fowl was that which obtained in all Birds—the Ostrich and its allies (as L’Herminier, we have seen, had already shewn) excepted. But it was now made to appear that the Struthi- ous Birds in this respect resembled, not only the Duck, but a great many other groups—Waders, Birds-of-Prey, Pigeons, Passerines, and perhaps all Birds not Galli- naceous,—so that, according to Cuvier’s view, the five points of ossification observed in the Galline, instead of exhibiting the normal process, exhibited one quite exceptional, and that in all other Birds, so far as he had been enabled to investigate the matter, ossification of the sternum began at two points only, situated near the anterior upper margin of the side of the sternum, and gradually crept towards the keel, into which it presently extended; and, though he allowed the appearance of detached portions of calcareous matter at the base of the still cartilaginous keel in Ducks at a certain age, he seemed to consider this an individual peculiarity. This fact was fastened upon by Geoffroy in his reply, which was a week later presented to the Academy, but was not published in full until the following year, when it appeared in the Annales du Muséum (ser. 3, ii. pp. 1-22). Geoffroy here maintained that the five centres of ossification existed in the Duck just as in the Fowl, and that the real difference of the process lay in the period at which they made their appearance, a circumstance, which, though virtually proved by the preparations Cuvier had used, had been by him overlooked or misinterpreted. The Fowl possesses all five ossifications at birth, and for a long while the middle piece forming the keel is by far the largest. They all grow slowly, and it is not until the animal is about six months old that they

are united into one firm bone. The Duck on the other hand, when newly hatched, and for nearly a month after, has the sternum wholly cartilaginous.

23

Then, it is true, two lateral points of ossification appear at the margin, but subsequently the remaining three are developed, and when once formed they grow with much greater rapidity than in the Fowl, so that by the time the young Duck is quite independent of its parents, and can shift for itself, the whole sternum is completely bony. Nor, argued Geoffroy, was it true to say, as Cuvier had said, that the like occurred in the Pigeons and true Passerines. In their case the sternum begins to ossify from three very distinct points—one of which is the centre of ossification of the keel. As regards the Struthious Birds, they could not be likened to the Duck, for in them at no age was there any indication of a single median centre of ossification, as Geoffroy had satisfied himself by his own observations made in Egypt many years before. Cuvier seems to have acquiesced in the corrections of his views made by Geoffroy, and attempted no rejoinder ; but the attentive and impartial student of the discussion will see that a good deal was really wanting to make the latter's reply effective, though, as events have shewn, the former was hasty in the conclusions at which he arrived, having trusted too much to the first appearance of centres of ossification, for, had his observations in regard to other Birds been carried on with the same attention to detail as in regard to the Fowl, he would certainly have reached some very different results.

In 1834 GuocErR brought out at Breslau the first (and unfortu- nately the only) part of a Vollsténdiges Handbuch der Natur- geschichte der Vogel Ewropa's, treating of the Land-birds. In the Introduction to this book (p. xxxviii., note) he expressed his regret at not being able to use as fully as he could wish the excellent researches of Nitzsch which were then appearing (as has been above said) in the successive parts of Naumanun's great work. Notwith- standing this, to Gloger scems to belong the credit of being the first author to avail himself in a book intended for practical ornitho- logists of the new light that had already been shed on Systematic Ornithology ; aud accordingly we have the second Order of his arrangement, the Aves Passcring, divided into two Suborders :— Singing Passerines (melodus),

and Passerines without an apparatus of Song-muscles (anomalw)—the latter including what some later writers called Picariz. For the rest his classification demands no particular remark ; but that in a work of this kind he had the courage to recognize, for instance, such a fact as the essential difference between Swallows and Swifts lifts him considerably above the crowd of other ornithological writers of his time.

An improvement on the old method of classification by purely external characters was introduced to the Academy of Sciences of Stockholm by SUNDEVALL in 1835, and was published the following year in its Handlingar (pp. 48-180). This was the foundation of a more extensive work of which, from the influence it still exerts, it will be necessary to treat later at some length, and there will be no need now to enter much into details respecting the earlier per- formance. It issufficient here to remark that the author, even then a man of great erudition, must have been aware of the turn which taxonomy was taking ; but, not being able to divest himself of the older notion that external characters were superior to those fur- nished by the study of internal structure, and that Comparative Anatomy, instead of being a part of Zoology, was something dis- tinct from it, he seems to have endeavoured to form a scheme which, while not running wholly counter to the teachings of Comparative Anatomists, should yet rest ostensibly on external characters. With this view he studied the latter most laboriously, and in some measure certainly not without success, for he brought into promin- ence several points that had hitherto escaped the notice of his pre- decessors. He also admitted among his characteristics a physio- logical consideration (apparently derived from Oken!) dividing the class Aves into two sections Altriccs and Preecoces, according as the young were fed by their parents or, from the first, fed themselves. But at this time he was encumbered with the hazy doctrine of analogies, which, if it did not act to his detriment, was assuredly of no service to him. He prefixed an “Idea Systematis” to his “Expositio”; and the former, which appears to represent his real opinion, differs in arrangement very considerably from the latter. Like Gloger, Sundevall in his ideal system separated the trne Passerines from all other Birds, calling them Volucres ; but he took a step further, for he assigned to them the highest rank, wherein Me ee ee

1 He says from Oken’s Vaturgeschichte fiir Schulen, published in 1821, but the division is to be found in that author’s earlier Lehrbuch der Zoologie (ii. p. 871), which appeared in 1816.

Gloger.

Sunde- vall.

uanicns niinier and Isidore Geoffroy ite Hilaire.

nearly every recent authority agrees with him ; out of them, how- ever, he chose the Thrushes and Warblers to stand first as his ideal “Centrum ”—a selection which, though in the opinion of the pre- sent writer erroneous, is still largely followed.

The points at issue between Cuvier and Etienne Geoffroy St-Hilaire before mentioned naturally attracted the atten- tion of L’Hrrminizr, who in 1836 presented to the French Academy the results of his researches into the mode of growth of that bone which in the adult Bird he had already studied to such good purpose. Unfortunately the full account of his diligent investigations was never published. We can best judge of his labours from an abstract printed in the Comptes Rendus (iii. pp. 12-20) and reprinted in the Annales des Sciences Naturelles (ser. 2, vi. pp. 107-115), and from the report upon them by Istpore Grorrroy St-Hiiaire, to whom with others they were referred. This report is contained in the Comptes Rendus for the following year (iv. pp. 565-574), and is very critical in its character. It were useless to conjecture why the whole memoir never appeared, as the reporter recommended that it should ; but, whether, as he suggested, the author’s observations failed to establish the theories he advanced or not, the loss of his observations in an extended form is greatly to be regretted, for no one seems to have continued the investigations he began and to some extent carried out; while, from his residence in Guadeloupe, he had peculiar advantages in studying certain types of Birds not generally available, his remarks on them could not fail to be valuable, quite irrespective of the interpretation he was led to put upon them. L’Herminier arrived at the conclusion that, so far from there being only two or three different modes

by which the process of ossification in the sternum is carried out, the number of different modes is very considerable— almost each natural group of Birds having its own. The principal theory which he hence conceived himself justified in propounding was that instead of jive being (as had been stated) the maximum number of centres of ossification in the sternum, there are no fewer than nine entering into the composition of the perfect sternum of Birds in general, though in every species some of these nine are wanting, whatever be the condition of development at the time of examination. These nine theoretical centres or " pieces" L'Herminier deemed to be disposed in three transverse series (rangées), namely the anterior or " prosternal," the middle or "mesosternal," and the posterior or "metasternal" —each series consisting of three portions, one median piece and two side-pieces. At the same time he seems, accord- ing to the abstract of his memoir, to have made the some- what contradictory assertion that sometimes there are more than three pieces in each series, and in certain groups of Birds as many as six.! It would occupy more space than can here be allowed to give even the briefest abstract of the numerous observations which follow the statement of his theory and on which it professedly rests, They extend to more than a score of natural groups of Birds, and nearly each of them presents some peculiar characters. Thus of the first series of pieces he says that when all exist they may be developed simultaneously, or that the two side-pieces may precede the median, or again that the median may precede the side-pieces— according to the group of Birds, but that the second mode is much the commonest. The same variations are observable in the second or middle series, but its side-pieces are said to exist in all groups of Birds without exception. As to the third or posterior series, when it is complete the three constituent pieces are developed almost simultaneously ;

1 We shall perhaps be justified in assuming that this apparent incon- sistency, and others which present themselves, would be explicable if the whole memoir with the necessary illustrations had been published.

but its median piece is said often to originate in two, which soon unite, especially when the side-pieces are wanting. By way of examples of L'Herminier's observa- tions, what he says of the two groups that had been the subject of Cuvier's and the elder Geoffroy's contest may be mentioned. In the Galline the five well-known pieces or centres of ossification are said

to consist of the two side-pieces of the second or middle series, and the three of the posterior. On two occasions, however, there was found in addition, what may be taken for a representation of the first series, a little "noyaw" situated between the coracoids—forming the only instance of all three series being present in the same Bird. As regards the Ducks, L'Herminier agreed with Cuvier that there are commonly only two centres of ossification—the side-pieces of the middle series; but as these grow to meet one another a distinct median " noyau," also of the same series, sometimes appears, which soon forms a connexion with each of them. In the Ostrich and its allies no trace of this median centre of ossification ever occurs; but with these exceptions its existence is invariable in all other Birds. Here the matter must be left; but it is undoubtedly a subject which demands further investigation, and naturally any future investigator of it should consult the abstract of L'Herminier's memoir and the criticisms upon it of the younger Geoffroy.

Hitherto it will have been seen that our present busi- ness has lain wholly in Germany and France, for, as is elsewhere explained, the chief ornithologists of Britain were occupying themselves at this time in a very useless way—not but that there were several distinguished men in this country who were paying due heed at this time to the internal structure of Birds, and some excellent descrip- tive memoirs on special forms had appeared from their pens, to say nothing of more than one general treatise on ornithic anatomy.? Yet no one in Britain seems to have attempted to found any scientific arrangement of Birds on

other than external characters until, in 1837, WILLIAM pfac- MACGILLIVRAY issued the first volume of his /istory of gillivray.

British Birds, wherein, though professing (p. 19) "not to add a new system to the many already in partial use, or that have passed away like their authors," he propounded (pp. 16-18) a scheme for classifying the Birds of Europe at least founded on a "consideration of the digestive organs, which merit special attention, on account, not so much of their great importance in the economy of birds, as the nervous, vascular, and other systems are not behind them in this respect ; but because, exhibiting great diver- sity of form and structure, in accordance with the nature of the food, they are more

obviously qualified to afford a basis for the classification of the numerous species of birds” (p. 52). Experience has again and again exposed the fallacy of this last conclusion, but it is no disparag- ment of its author, writing nearly fifty years ago, to say that in this passage, as well as in others that might be quoted, he was greater as an anatomist than as a logician.

2 Sir Richard Owen’s celebrated article ‘‘ Aves,” in Todd’s Cyclo- pedia of Anatomy and Physiology (i. pp. 265-358), appeared in 1836, and, as giving a general view of the structure of Birds, needs no praise here; but its object was not to establish a classification, or throw light especially on systematic arrangement. So far from that being the case, its distinguished author was content to adopt, as he tells us, the arrangement proposed by Kirby in the Seventh Bridgewater Treatise (ii. pp. 445-474), being that, it is true, of an estimable zoologist, but of one who had no special knowledge of Ornithology. Indeed it is, as the latter says, that of Linneus, improved by Cuvier, with an

additional modification of Tlliger’s—all these three authors having”

totally ignored any but external characters. Yet it was regarded ‘‘as being the one which facilitates the expression of the leading anatomical differences which obtain in the class of Birds, and which therefore may be considered as the most natural.”

He was indeed thoroughly grounded in anatomy,! and though undoubtedly the digestive organs of Birds have a claim to the fullest consideration, yet Macgillivray himself subsequently became aware of the fact that there were geveral other parts of their structure as important from the point of view of classification. He it was, apparently, who first detected the essential difference of the organs of voice presented by some of the New-World Passerines (subsequently known as Clamatores), and the earliest intimation of this seems to be given in his anatomical description of the Arkansas Flycatcher, Tyrannus verticalis, which was published in 1838 (Ornithol. Biography, iv. p. 425), though it must be admitted that he did not—because he then could not—perceive the bearing of their difference, which was reserved to be shown by the investigation of a still greater anatomist, and of

one who had fuller facilities for research, and thereby almost revolutionized, as will presently be mentioned, the views of systematists as to this Order of Birds. There is only space here to say that the second volume of Macgillivray's work was published in 1839, and the third in 1840; but it was not until 1852 that the author, in broken health, found an opportunity of issuing the fourth and fifth. His scheme of classification, being as before stated partial, need not be given in detail. Its great mierit is that it proved the necessity of combin- ing another and hitherto much-neglected factor in any natural arrangement, though vitiated as so many other schemes have been by being based wholly on one class of characters.

But a bolder attempt at classification was that made in 1838 by BiytH in the New Series (Mr Charlesworth's) of the Magazine of Natural History (ii. pp. 256-268, 314— 319, 351-361, 420-426, 589-601; iii. pp. 76-84). It was limited, however, to what he called Jnsessores, being the group upon which that name had been conferred by Vigors (Zrans, Linn. Society, xiv. p. 405) in 1823 (see above, p. 15), with the addition, however, of his Raptores, and it will be unnecessary to enter into particulars con- cerning it, though it is as equally remarkable for the insight shewn by the author into the structure of Birds as for the philosophical breadth of his view, which comprehends almost every kind of character that had been at that time brought forward. It is plain that Blyth saw, and perhaps he was the first to see it, that Geographical Distribution was not unimportant in suggesting the affinities and differences of natural groups (pp. 258, 259); and, unde- terred by the precepts and practice of the hitherto dominant English school of Ornithologists, he declared that "anatomy, when aided by every character which the manner of propagation, the progressive changes, and other physiological data supply, is the only sure basis of classi- fication." He was quite aware of the taxonomic value of the vocal organs of some groups of Birds, presently to be especially mentioned, and he had himself ascertained the presence and absence of ceca in a not inconsiderable number of groups, drawing thence very justifiable infer- ences. He knew at least the earlier investigations of

1 This is not the place to expatiate on Macgillivray's merits ; but the writer may perhaps be excused for here uttering the opinion that, after Willughby, Macgillivray was the greatest and most original ornitho- logical genius save

one (who did not live long enough to make his powers widely known) that this island has prdduced. The exact amount of assistance he afforded to Audubon in his Ornithological Biography will probably never be ascertained ; but, setting aside ‘‘all the anatomical descriptions, as well as the sketches by which they are sometimes illustrated,” that on the latter’s own statement (op. e7t., iv., Introduction, p. xxiii) are the work of Macgillivray, no impartial reader can compare the style in which the History of British Birds is written with that of the Ornithological Biography without recogniz- Ing the similarity of the two. On this subject some remarks of Prof, a (Bull. Nutt. Ornithol. Club, 1880, p. 201) may well be consuited,

L’Herminier, and, though the work of Nitzsch, even if he had ever heard of it, must (through ignorance of the language in which it was written) have been to him a sealed book, he had followed out and extended the hints already given by Temminck as to the differences which various groups of Birds display in their moult. With all this it is not surprising to find, though the fact has been generally overlooked, that Blyth’s proposed arrangement in many points anticipated conclusions that were subse- quently reached, and were then regarded as fresh dis- coveries. It is proper to add that at this time the greater part of his work was carried on in conjunction with Mr

BARTLETT, the present Superintendent of the Zoological Bartlett.

Society’s Gardens, and that, without his assistance, Blyth’s opportunities, slender as they were compared with those which others have enjoyed, must have been still smaller. Considering the extent of their materials, which was limited to the bodies of such animals as they could obtain from dealers and the several menageries that then existed in or near London, the progress made in what has since proved to be the right direction is very wonderful. It is obvious that both these investigators had the genius for recognizing and interpreting the value of characters ; but their labours do not seem to have met with much encouragement ; and a general arrangement of the Class laid by Blyth before the Zoological Society at this time ? does not appear in its publications, possibly through his neglect to reduce his scheme to writing and deliver it within the prescribed period. But even if this were not the case, no one need be surprised at the result. The scheme could hardly fail to

be a crude performance—a fact which nobody would know better than its author ; but it must have presented much that was objectionable to the opinions then generally prevalent. Its line to some extent may be partly made out—yvery clearly, for the matter of that, so far as its details have been published in the series of papers to which reference has been given—and some traces of its features are probably preserved in his Catalogue of the specimens of Birds in the Museum of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, which, after several years of severe labour, made its appearance at Calcutta in 1849; but, from the time of his arrival in India, the onerous duties imposed upon Blyth, together with the want of sufficient books of reference, seem to have hindered him from seriously con- tinuing his former researches, which, interrupted as they were, and born out of due time, had no appreciable effect on the views of systematizers generally.

Next must be noticed a series of short treatises communicated by JOHANN Frizpricu BRANnprT, between the years 1836 and 1839, to the Academy of Sciences of St Petersburg, and published in its Mémoires. Inthe year last mentioned the greater part of thesc was separately issued under the title of Beitrdge zur Kenntniss der Naturgeschichte der Vogel. Herein the author first assigued anatomical reasons for rearranging the Order Anseres of Linneus and Natatores of Illiger, who, so long before as 1811, had proposed a new distribution of it into six Families, the definitions of which, as was his wont, he had drawn from external characters only. Brandt now retaincd very nearly the same arrangement as his predecessor ; but, notwithstanding that he could trust to the firmer foundation of intcrnal framework, he took at least two retro- grade steps. First he failed to see the great structural difference between the Penguins (which Illiger had placed as a group, Impennes, of equal rank to his other Families) and the Auks, Divers, and Grebes, Pygopodes—combining all of them to form a “Typus ” (to use his term) Urinatores ; and secondly he admitted among the Natatores, though as a distinct ‘‘Typus” Podoidz,the genera Podoa and Fuliea, which are now known to belong to the Rallide—the latter indeed (see Coot, vol. vi. p. 341) being but very slightly removed from the Moor-1iEN (vol. xvi. p. 808). At

the same time he corrected the error made by Iliger in associating the PHALAROPES (q.v.) with these forms, rightly declaring their ee ee eames eS

2 An abstract is contained in the Minute-book of the Scientific Meetings of the Zoological Society, 26th June and 10th July 1838. The Class was to contain fifteen Orders, but only three were dealt

with in any detail. wii 4

Keyser- ling and Blasius.

Nitzsch,

relationship to Tringa (see SANDPIPER), a point of order which other systematists were long in admitting. On the whole Brandt's labours were of no small service in asserting the prineiple that eon- sideration must be paid to osteology ; for his position was such as to gain more attention to his views than some of his less favourably placed brethren had sueceeded in doing.

In the same year (1839) another slight advance was made in the elassification of the true Passerines, Kuryseriinc and Buasius briefly pointed ont in the Archiv fiir Naturgeschichte (v. pp. 332-334) that, while all the other Birds provided with perfect song-museles had the ‘‘planta" or hind part of the ‘‘ tarsus" covered with two long and undivided horny plates, the Larks (vol. xiv. p. 316) had this part divided by many transverse sutures, so as to be scutellated behind as well as in front; just as is the ease in many of the Passerines which have not the singing-apparatus, and also in the Hoopos (vol. xii. p. 154). The importanee of this singular but superficial departure from the normal strueture has been so need- lessly exaggerated as a character that at the present time its value is apt to be unduly depreciated. In so large and so homogeneous a group as that of the true Passerines, a constant echaraeter of this kind is not to be despised as a practical mode of separating the Birds which possess it ; and, nore than this, it would appear that the discovery thus announced was the immediate means of leading to a series of investigations of a much more important and lasting nature—those of Johannes Miiller to be presently mentioned.

Again we must recur to that indefatigable and most original investigator NirzscH, who, having never inter- mitted his study of the particular subject of his first con- tribution to science, long ago noticed, in 1833 brought out at Halle, where he was Professor of Zoology, an essay with the title Pterylographix Avium Pars prior. It seems that this was issued as.much with the object of inviting assistance from others in view of future labours, since the materials at his disposal were comparatively scanty, as with that of making known the results to which his researches had already led him. Indeed he only com- municated copies of this essay to a few friends, and examples of it are comparatively scarce. Moreover, he stated subsequently that he thereby hoped to excite other naturalists to share with him the investigations he was making on a subject which had hitherto escaped notice or had been wholly neglected, since he considered that he had proved the disposition of the feathered tracts in the plumage of Birds to be the means of furnishing characters for the discrimination of the various natural groups as significant and important as they were new and un- expected.! There was no need for us here to quote this

essay in its chronological place, since it dealt only with

the generalities of the subject, and did not enter upon any systematic details. These the author reserved for a second treatise which he was destined never to complete. He kept on diligently collecting materials, and as he did so

1 It is still a prevalent belief among nearly all persons but well- informed ornithologists, that feathers grow almost uniformly over the whole surface of a Bird’s body ; some indeed are longer and some are shorter, but that is about all the difference perceptible to most people. It is the easicst thing for anybody to satisfy himself that this, except in a few cases, is altogether an erroneous supposition. In all but a small number of forms the feathers are produced in very definite clumps or tracts, called by Nitzsch pteryle# (xrepév, penna, brn, sylva), arather fanciful term it is true, but one to which no objection can be taken. Between these pterylw are spaces bare of feathers, which he named apteria. Before Nitzsch’s time the only men who seem to have noticed this fact were the great John Hunter and the accurate Macartney. But the observations of the former on the subject were not given to the world until 1836, when Sir R. Owen introduced them into his

Catalogue of the Museum of the College of Surgeons in London (vol. iii. pt. ii. p. 311), and therein is no indication of the fact having a taxonomical bearing. The same may be said of Macartney's remarks, which, though subsequent in point of time, were published earlier, namely, in 1819 (Rees's Cyclopedia, xiv., art. " Feathers"). Ignorance of this simple fact has led astray many celebrated painters, among them Sir Edwin Landseer, whose pictures of Birds nearly always shew an unnatural representation of the plumage that at once betrays itself to the trained eye, though of course it is not perceived by spectators generally, who regard only the correctness of attitude and force of expression, which in that artist's work commonly leave little to be desired. Every draughtsman of Birds to be suceessful should study the plan on which their feathers are disposed.

was constrained to modify some of the statements he had published. He consequently fell into a state of doubt, and before he could make up his mind on some questions which he deemed important he was overtaken by death.? Then his papers were handed over to his friend and suc-

cessor Prof. BURMEISTER, now and for many years past of Bur- Buenos Aires, who, with much skill elaborated from meister,

them the excellent work known as Nitzsch's Pterylo- graphie, which was published at Halle in 1840. There can be no doubt that Prof. Burmeister (fortunately yet spared to us) discharged his editorial duty with the most conscientious scrupulosity ; but, from what has been just said, it is certain that there were important points on which Nitzsch was as yet undecided—some of them perhaps of which no trace appeared in his manu- scripts, and therefore as in every case of works posthum- ously published, unless (as rarely happens) they have received their author's "imprimatur," they cannot be implicitly trusted as the expression of his final views. It would consequently be unsafe to ascribe positively all that appears in this volume to the result of Nitzsch's mature consideration. Moreover, as Prof. Burmeister states in his preface, Nitzsch by no means regarded the natural sequence of groups as the highest problem of the system- atist, but rather their correct limitation. Again the arrangement followed in the Prerylographie was of course based on pterylographical considerations, and we have its author's own word for it that he was persuaded that the

limitation of natural groups could only be attained by the most assiduous research into the species of which they are composed from every point of view. The combination of these three facts will of itself explain some defects, or even retrogressions, observable in Nitzsch's later systematic work when compared with that which he had formerly done. On the other hand some manifest improvements are introduced, and the abundance of details into which he enters in his Pterylographie render it far more instructive and valuable than the older performance. As an abstract of that has already been given, it may be sufficient here to point out the chief changes made in his newer arrangement. To begin with, the three great sections of Aerial, Terrestrial, and Aquatic Birds are abolished. The "Accipitres" are divided into two groups, Diurnal and Nocturnal ; but the first of these divisions is separated into three sections :—(1) the Vultures of the New World, (2) those of the Old World, and (3) the genus falco of Linneus. The "Passerine," that is to say, the true Passeres, are split into eight Families, not wholly with judgment ;° but of their taxonomy more is to be said presently. Then a new Order " Prcariz" is instituted for the reception of the Macrochires, Cuculine, Picinx, Psittacine, and Amphibole of his old arrangement, to which are added three* others—Caprimulgine, Todidz, and Lipoglosse—the last consisting of the genera Buceros, Upupa, and Alcedo. The association of Alcedo with the

2 Though not relating exactly to our present theme, it would be improper to dismiss Nitzsch's name without reference to his extra- ordinary labours in investigating the insect and other external parasites of Birds, a subject which as regards British species was subsequently elaborated by Denny in his Monographia Anoplurorum Britannie (1842) and in his list of the specimens of British Anoplura in the col- lection of the British Musenm.

3 A short essay by Nitzsch on the general structure of the Passerines, written, it is said, in 1836, was published in 1862 (Zeitschr. Ges. Naturwissenschaft, xix. pp. 389-408). It is probably to this essay that Prof. Burmeister refers in the Pterylographie (p. 102, note ; English translation, p. 72, note) as forming the basis of the article **Passerine"' which he contributed to Ersch and Grnber's Encyklo- piédie {sect. iii. bd. xiii. pp. 139-144), and published before the Pterylographie.

4 By the numbers prefixed it would look as if there should be four new members of this Order; but that seems to be due rather to a slip of the pen or to a printer’s error.

a

Ole Nd Taro 1 OG Y

other two is no doubt a misplacement, but the alliance of Buceros to Upupa, already suggested by Gould and Blyth in 1838! (Mag. Nat. History, ser. 2, ii. pp. 422 and 589), though apparently unnatural, has been corroborated by many later systematizers; and taken as a whole the estab- lishment of the Pecariz was certainly a commendable pro- ceeding. For the rest there is only one considerable change, and that forms the greatest blot on the whole scheme. Instead of recognizing, as before, a Subclass in the Ratite of Merrem, Nitzsch now reduced them to the rank of an Order under the name “ Platysterne,” placing them between the “ Gallinacee” and “ Grallx,” though admitting that in their pterylosis they differ from all other Birds, in ways that he is at great pains to describe, in each of the four genera examined by him—Struthio, Rhea, Dromexus, and Casuarius.? It is significant that notwith- standing this he did not figure the pterylosis of any one of them, and the thought suggests itself that, though his editor assures us he had convinced himself that the group must be here shoved in (ecngeschoben is the word used), the intrusion is rather due to the necessity which Nitzsch, in common with most men of his time (the Quinarians excepted), felt for deploying the whole series of Birds into line, ‘in which case the proceeding may be defensible on the score of convenience. The extraordinary merits of this book, and the admirable fidelity to his principles which Prof. Burmeister shewed in the difficult task of editing it, were unfortunately overlooked for many years, and perhaps are not sufficiently recognized now. Even in Germany, the author’s own couutry, there were few to notice seriously what is certainly one of the most remark- able works ever published on the science, much less to pursue the investigations that had been so laboriously begun. Andreas Wagner, in his report on the progress of Ornithology, as might be expected from such a man as he was, placed the Pterylographie at the summit of those publications the appearance of which he had to record for the years 1839

and 1840, stating that for “ Systematik ” it was of the greatest importance. On the other hand Oken (Js:s, 1842, pp. 391-394), though giving a summary of Nitzsch’s results and classification, was more sparing of his praise, and prefaced his remarks by asserting that he could not refrain from laughter when he looked at the plates in Nitzsch’s work, since they reminded him of the plucked fowls hanging in a poulterer’s shop—it might as well be urged as an objection to the plates in many an anatomical book that they called to mind a butcher’s—and goes on to say that, as the author always had the luck to engage in researches of which nobody thought, so had he the luck to print them where nobody sought them. In Sweden

1 This association is one of the most remarkable in the whole series of Blyth’s remarkable papers on classification in the volume cited above. He states that Gould suspected the alliance of these two forms “ from

external structure and habits alone ;” otherwise one might suppose that.

he had obtained an intimation to that effect on one of his Continental journeys. Blyth “arrived at the same conclusion, however, by a different train of investigation,” and this is beyond doubt.

- He does not mention Apéeryz, at that time so little known on the Continent.

3 Soine excuse is to be made for this neglect. Nitzsch had of course exhausted all the forms of Birds commonly to be obtained, and speci- mens of the less common forms were too valuable from the curator’s or collector’s point of view to be subjected to a treatment that might end in their destruction. Yet it is said, on good authority, that Nitzsch had the patience so to manipulate the skins of many rare species that he was able to ascertain the characters of their pterylosis by the inspec- tion of their inside only, without in any way damaging them for the ordinary purpose of a museum. Nor is this surprising when we con- sider the marvellous skill of Continental and especially German taxi- dermists, many of whom have elevated their profession to a height of art inconceivable to most Englishmen, who are only acquainted with the miserable mockery of Nature which is the most sublime result of all but a few “ bird-stuffers. ”

- Archiv fiir Naturgeschichte, vii. 2, pp. 60, 61.

27

Sundevall, without accepting Nitzsch's views, accorded them a far more appreciative greeting in his annual reports for 1840-42 (i, pp. 152-160); but of course in England and France® nothing was known of them beyond the scantiest notice, generally taken at second hand, in two or three publications. Thanks to Mr Sclater, the Ray Society was induced to publish, in 1867, an excellent translation by Mr Dallas of Nitzsch's Pterylography, and thereby, however tardily, justice was at length rendered by British ornithologists to one of their greatest foreign brethren.®

The treatise of Kess_Er on the osteology of Birds' feet, published Kessler.

in the Bulletin of the Moscow Society of Naturalists for 1841, uext claims a few words, though its scope is rather to shew differences than affinities ; but treatment of that kind is undoubtedly useful at times in indicating that alliances generally admitted are unnatural ; and this is the case here, for, following Cuvier's method, the author's researches prove the artificial character of some of its associations, While furnishing—almost unconsciously, however-—additional evidence for overthrowing that classification, there is, nevertheless, no attempt made to construct a better one ; and the elaborate tables of dimensions, both absolute and pro-portional, suggestive as is the whole tendency of the author's observations, seem not to lead to any very practical result, though the systematist's nced to look beneath the integument, even in parts that are so comparatively little hidden as Birds' feet, is once more made beyond all question apparent.

It has already been mentioned that MACGILLIVRAY con- Macgil-

tributed to Audubon's Ornithological Biography a series of livray n

descriptions of some parts of the anatomy of American 4

Birds, from subjects supplied to him by that enthusiastic jo,

naturalist, whose zeal and prescience, it may be called, in this respect merits all praise. Thus he (prompted very likely by Macgillivray) wrote :—“TI believe the time to be approaching when much of the results obtained from the inspection of the exterior alone will be laid aside; when museums filled with stuffed skins will be considered insufficient to afford a knowledge of birds ; and when the student will go forth, not only to observe the habits and haunts of animals, but to preserve specimens of them to be carefully dissected” (Ornith. Biography, iv., Introduc- tion, p. xxiv). As has been stated, the first of this series of anatomical descriptions appeared in the fourth volume of his work, published in 1838, but they were continued until its completion with the fifth volume in the following year, and the whole was incorporated into what may be termed its second edition, Zhe Birds of America, which appeared between 1840 and 1844 (see p.11). Among the many species whose anatomy Macgillivray thus partly described from autopsy were at least half a dozen’ of those now referred to the Family 7Zyrannidx (see K1NG-BIRD, vol. xiv. p. 80), but then included, with many others, ac- cording to the irrational, vague, and rudimentary notions of classification of the time, in what was termed the Family “ Muscicapine.” In all these species he found the vocal organs to differ essentially in structure from those of other Birds of the Old World, which we now call Passerine, or, to be still more precise, Oscinian. But by him these last were most arbitrarily severed, dissociated from their allies, and wrongly combined with other forms by no means nearly related to them (Brit. Birds, i. pp. 17, 18) which

5 In 1836JACQUEMIN communicated to the French Academy (Comptes Rendus, ii. pp. 374, 375, and 472) some observations on the order in which feathers are disposed on the body of Birds ; but, however general may have been the scope of his investigations, the portion of them published refers only to the Crow, and there is no mention made of Nitzsch’s former work.

6 The Ray Society had the good fortune to obtain the ten original copper-plates, all but one drawn by the author himself, wherewith the work was illustrated. It is only to be regretted that the Society did not also stick to the quarto size in which it appeared, for by issuing their English version in folio they needlessly put an impediment in the way of its common and convenient use.

7 These are, according to modern nomenclature, Tyrannus caroli- nensis and (as before mentioned) 7. verticalis, Myiarchus crinitus, Sayornis fuscus, Contopus virens, and Empidonax acadicus.

he also examined ; and he practically, though not literally,! asserted the truth, when he said that the general struc- .ture, but especially the muscular appendages, of the lower larynx was “similarly formed in all other birds of this family” described in Audubon’s work. Macgillivray did not, however, assign to this essential difference any systematic value. Indeed he was so much prepossessed in favour of a classification based on the structure of the digestive organs that he could not bring himself to con- sider vocal muscles to be of much taxonomic use, and it

Johannes was reserved to JOHANNES MULLER to point out that the

Miiller.

contrary was the fact. This the great German compara- tive anatomist did in two communications to the Academy of Sciences of Berlin, one on the 26th June 1845 and the other on the 14th May 1846, which, having been first briefly published in the Academy’s Monatsbericht, were afterwards printed in full, and illustrated by numerous figures, in its Abhandlungen, though in this latter and complete form they did not appear in public until 1847. This very remarkable treatise forms the groundwork of almost all later or recent researches in the comparative anatomy and consequent arrangement of the Passeres, and, though it is certainly not free from imperfections, many of them, it must be said, arise from want of material, not- withstanding that its author had command of a much more abundant supply than was at the disposal of Nitzsch. Carrying on the work from the anatomical point at which he had left it, correcting his errors, and utilizing to the fullest extent the observations of Keyserling and Blasius, to which reference has already been made, Miiller, though hampered by mistaken notions of which he seems to have been unable to rid himself, propounded a scheme for the classification of this group, the general truth of which has been admitted by all his successors, based, as the title of his treatise expressed, on the hitherto unknown different types of the vocal organs in the Passerines. He freely

recognized the prior discoveries of, as he thought, Audubon, though really, as has since been ascertained, of Macgillivray ; but Miller was able to perceive their system- atic value, which Macgillivray did not, and taught others to know it. At the same time Miiller shewed himself, his power of discrimination notwithstanding, to fall behind Nitzsch in one very crucial point, for he refused to the latter's Picarie the rank that had been claimed for them, and imagined that the groups associated under that name formed but a third "Tribe "—Prcarii—of a great Order Insessores, the others being (1) the Oscines or Polymyodi —the Singing Birds by emphasis, whose inferior larynx was endowed with the full number of five pairs of song-muscles, and (2) the Zracheophones, composed of some South-American Families. Looking on Miiller's labours as we now can, we see that such errors as he committed are chiefly due to his want of special knowledge of Ornithology, combined with the absence in several instances of sufficient materials for investigation. Nothing whatever is to be said against the composition of his first and second "Tribes"; but the third is an assemblage still more heterogeneous than that which Nitzsch brought together under a name so like that of Miiller—for the fact must never be allowed to go out of sight that the extent of the Picard of the latter is not at all that of the Picarie of the former.? For instance, Miiller places in his

} Not literally, because a few other forms such as the genera Polio- ptila and Ptilogonys, now known to have no relation to the Tyrannide,,. were included, though these forms, it would seem, had never been dis- sected by him. On the other hand he declares that the American Redstart, Muscicapa, or, as it now stands, Setophaga ruticilla, when young, has its vocal organs like the rest—an extraordinary statement which is worthy the attention of the many able American ornithologists.

2 It is not needless to point out this fine distinction, for more than one modern author would seem to have overlooked it.

ORN IPs OL @G Y

third " Tribe" the group which he called ~~Ampelidx, mean~~ ing thereby the peculiar forms of South America that are now considered to be more properly named Cotingidx, and herein he was clearly right, while Nitzsch, who (misled by their supposed affinity to the genus Ampelis—peculiar to

the Northern Hemisphere, and a purely Passerine form) had kept them among his Passerine, was as clearly wrong. But again Miiller made his third “Tribe” Picard also to contain the Z’yrannidx, of which mention has just been made, though it is so obvious as now to be generally admitted that they have no very intimate relationship to the other Families with which they are there associated. There is no need here to criticize more minutely his pro- jected arrangement, and it must be said that, notwithstand- ing his researches, he seems to have had some misgivings that, after all, the separation of the Jnsessores into those “Tribes” might not be justifiable. At any rate he wavered in his estimate of their taxonomic value, for he gave an alternative proposal, arranging all the genera in a single series, a proceeding in those days thought not only defens- ible and possible, but desirable or even requisite, though now utterly abandoned. Just as Nitzsch had laboured under the disadvantage of never having any example of the abnormal Passeres of the New World to dissect, and therefore was wholly ignorant of their abnormality, so Miller never succeeded in getting hold of an example of the genus Pitta for the same purpose, and yet, acting on the clew furnished by Keyserling and Blasius, he did not hesitate to predict that it would be found to fill one of the gaps he had to leave, and this to some extent it has been since proved to do. .

The result of all this is that the Oscincs or true Passercs are found to be a group in which the vocal organs not only attain the greatest perfection, but are nearly if not quite as uniform in their structure as is the sternal apparatus; while at the same time each set of characters is wholly unlike that which exists in any other group of Birds. In nearly all Birds the inferior larynx, or syrinx, which is, as proved long ago by the experiments of Cuvier, the seat of their vocal powers, is at the bottom of the trachea or windpipe, and is formed by the more or less firm union of several of the bony rings of which that tube is composed. In the Ratitw, the genus Rhea excepted, and in one group of Carinatxw, the American Vultures Ccater tile but therein it is believed only, there is no special modification of the trachea into a syrinx ;3 but usually, at a little distance froin the lungs, the trachea is somewhat enlarged, and here is founda thicker and stouter bony ring, which is bisected axially by a septwm or partition extending from behind forwards, and thus dividing the pipe,‘ each half of which swells out below the ring and then rapidly contracts to enter the lung on its own side. The

halves of the pipe thus formed are the bronchi, tubes whose inner side is flattened and composed of the membrana tympani- formis, on the change of form and length of which some of the varieties of intonation depend, while the onter and curved side is supported by bony half-hoops, connected by membrane just as are the entire hoops of the upper part of the trachea. The whole of this apparatus is extremely flexible, and is controlled by muscles, the real vocal muscles of which mention has previously been so frequently made. These vary in number in different groups of Birds, and reach their maximum in the Oscines, which have always five pairs, or even more according to some authorities.© But sup- posing five to be the number of pairs, as it is generally allowed to be in this group of them, two pairs have a common origin about the middle of the trachea, and, descending on its outside, divide at a short distance above the lower end of the tube ; one of them, the tensor postcrior longus, being directed downward and backward, is inserted at the extreme posterior end of the first half-ring of the bronchus, while its countcrpart, the tensor anterior longus, passing from the place of separation downward and forward, is inserted below the extreme point of the last ring of the trachea. Within the angle formed by the divergence of each of these pairs of muscles, a third slender muscle—the sterno-trachcalis —is given off

3 See Brrps, vol. iii. p. 726; but cf Forbes, Proc. Zool. Society, ISSiope 17.85 105.

4 In a few forms belonging to the Spheniscid# and Procellariida, this septwm is prolonged upwards, to what purpose is of course unknown. On the other hand, the Parrots have no septum (see BrRDs, ut supra).

5 See Brrps, vol. iii, p. 726.

on each side and is attached to the steruum.! The fourth pair, the | tensores postcriores breves, is the smallest of all, and, arising near the middle of the

lower end of the trachea, has its fibres inserted on the extremity of the first of the incomplete rings of the bronchi. The fifth pair, the tensorcs antcriorcs, originates like the last from the middle of the trachea, but is somewhat larger and thicker, appearing as though made up of several small muscles in close contact, and by some ornithotomists is believed to be of a com- posite nature. Its direction is obliquely downward and forward, and, attached by a broad base to the last ring of the trachea and cartilage immediately below, reaches the first or second of the half- rings of the bronchi—in the normal Oscines at their extremity; but, in another section of that group, which it will be necessary to mention later, it is found to be attached to their middle. There is no question of its being by the action of the syringeal muscles just described that the expansion of the bronchi, both as to length and diameter, is controlled, and, as thereby the sounds uttered by the Bird are modified, they are properly called the Song-muscles.

It must not be supposed that the muscles just defined were first discovered by Miiller; on the contrary they had been described long before, and by many writers on the anatomy of Birds. To say nothing of foreigners, or the authors of general works on the subject, an excellent account of them had been given to the Linnean Society by YARRELL in 1829, and published with elaborate figures in its Transactions (xvi. pp. 305-821, pls. 17, 18), an abstract of which was subsequently given in the article “Raven” inhis History of British Birds, and Macgillivray also described and figured them with the greatest accuracy ten years later in his work with the same title (ii. pp. 21-37, pls. x.~~xii.), while Blyth and Nitzsch had (as already mentioned) seen some of their value in classification. But Miiller has the merit of clearly outstriding his predecessors, and with his accustomed perspicuity made the way even plainer for his successors to see than he himself was able to see it. What remains to add is that the extraordinary celebrity of its author actually procured for the first portion of his researches notice in England (Ann. Nat. History, xvii. p. 499), though it must be confessed not then to any practical purpose; but more than thirty years after there appeared an English translation of his treatise by Prof. Jeffrey Bell, with an appendix by Garrod con~~ taining a summary of the latter’s own continuation of the same line of research, and thus once more Mr Sclater, for it was at his instigation that the work was undertaken, had the satisfaction of rendering

proper tribute to one who by his investigations had so materially advanced the study of Ornithology.?

It is now necessary to revert to the year 1842, in which Dr Cornay of Rochefort communicated to the French Academy of Sciences a memoir on a new Classification of Birds, of which, how- ever, nothing but a notice has been preserved (Comptes Rendus, xiv. p. 164). Two years later this was followed by a second contri- bution from him on the same subject, and of this only an extract appeared in the official organ of the Academy (ut supra, xvi. pp. 94, 95), though an abstract was inserted in one scicntific journal (L' Institut, xii. p. 21), and its first portion in another (Journal des Découvertes, i. p. 250). The Revwe Zoologique for 1847 (pp. 360-369) contained the whole, and enabled naturalists to consider the merits of the author's project, which was to found a new Classification of Birds on the form of the anterior palatal bones, which he declared to be subjected more evidently than any other to certain fixed laws. These laws, as formulated by him, are that (1) there is a coincidence of form of the anterior palatal and of the cranium in Birds of the same Order; (2) there is a likeness between the anterior palatal bones in Birds of the same Order; (8) there are relations of likeness

between the anterior palatal bones in groups of Birds which are near to one another. These laws, he added, exist in regard to all

1 According to Blyth (Mag. Nat. History, ser. 2, ii. p. 264),

Yarrell ascertained that this pair of muscles was wanting in ''the mina genus" (qu. Gracula?), a statement that requires attention either for confirmation or contradiction.

- The title of the English translation is Johannes Miiller on Certain Variations in the Vocal Organs of the Passeres that have hitherto escaped notice. Jt was published at Oxford in 1878. By some unaccountable accident, the date of the original communication to the

ny of Berlin is wrongly printed. It has been rightly given above,

parts that offer characters fit for the methodical arrangement of Birds, but it is in regard to the anterior palatal bone that they unquestionably offer the most evidence. In thc evolution of these laws Dr Cornay had most laudably studied, as his observations prove, a vast number of different types, and the upshot of his whole labours, though not very clearly stated, was such as to wholly sub- vert the classification at that time generally adoptcd by French ornithologists. He of course knew the investigations of L'Herminier and De Blainville on sternal formation, and lie also seems to have been aware of some pterylological differences exhibited by Birds— whether those of Nitzsch or those of Jacquemin is not stated. True it is the latter were never published in full, but it is quite conceiv- able that Dr Cornay may have known tlieir drift. Be that as it may, he declares that characters drawn from the sternum or the pelvis—hitherto deemed to be, next to the bones of the head, the most important portions of the Bird's framework—arc scarcely worth more, from a classificatory point of view, than characters drawn from the bill or the legs ; while pterylological considerations, together with many others to which some systematists liad attached more or less importance, ean only assist, and apparently must never be taken to control, the force of evidence furnished by this bone of all bones—the anterior palatal.

That Dr Cornay was on the brink of making a discovery of con- siderable merit will by and by appear ; but, with every disposition to regard his investigations favourably, it cannot be said that he accomplished it. No account need be taken of the criticism which denominated his attempt " unphilosophical and one-sided," nor does it signify that his proposals either attracted no attention or were generally received with indifference. Such is commonly the fate of any deep-seated reform of classification proposed by a compara- tively unknown man, unless it happen to possess some extraordinarily taking qualities, or be explained with an abundance of pictorial illustration. This was not the case here. Whatever proofs Dr Cornay may have had to satisfy himself of his being on the right track, these proofs were not adduced in sufficient number nor arranged with sufficient skill to persuade a somewhat stiff-necked generation of the truth of his views—for it was a generation whose leaders, in France at any rate, looked with suspicion upon any one who professed to go beyond the bounds which the genius of Cuvier had been unable to overpass, and regarded the notion of upsetting any of the positions maintained by him as verging alinost upon

profanity. Moreover, Dr Cornay's scheme was not given to the world with any of those adjuncts that not merely please the eye but are in many cases necessary, for, though on a subject which required for its proper compreliension a series of plates, it made eveui its final appearance unadorned by a single ex- planatory figure, and in a journal, respectable and well-known in- deed, but one not of the highest scientific rank. Add to all this that its author, in his summary of the practical results of his in- vestigations, committed a grave sin in the eyes of rigid systematists by ostentatiously arranging the names of the forty types which he selected to prove his case wholly without order, and without any intimation of the greater or less affinity any one of them miglit bear to the rest. That success should attend a scheme so inconclusively elaborated could not be expected.

The same year which saw the promulgation of the crude scheme just described, as well as the publication of the final researches of Miiller, witnessed also another attempt at the classification of Birds, much more limited indeed in scope, but, so far as it went, regarded by most ornithologists of the time as almost final in its operation.

Under the vague title of " Ornithologische Notizen" Prof. Cabanis Cabanis.

of Berlin contributed to the Archiv fiir Naturgeschichte (xiii. 1, pp. 186-256, 308-352) an essay in two parts, wherein, following the researches of Miiller * on the syrinx, in the course of which a correlation had been shewn to exist between the whole or divided condition of the planta or hind part of the "tarsus," first noticed, as has been said, by Keyserling and Blasius, and the presence or absence of the perfect song-apparatus, the younger author found an agreement which seemed almost invariable in this respect, and he also pointed out that the planéa of the different groups of Birds in which it is divided is divided in different modes, the mode of division being generally characteristic of the group. Sucli a coincidence of the internal and external features of Birds was naturally deemed a discovery of the greatest value by those ornithologists who thought most highly of the latter, and it was unquestionably of no little practical utility, Further exantination also revealed the fact * that

3 On the other hand, Miiller makes several references to the labours of Prof. Cabanis. The investigations of both authors must have been proceeding

simultaneously, and it matters little which actually appeared first.

4 This seems to have been made known by Prof. Cabanis the preceding year to the Gesellschaft der Naturforschender Freunde (of. Miiller, Stimmorganen der Passerinen, p. 65). Of course the variation to which the number of primaries was subject had not escaped the observation of Nitzsch, but he had scarcely used it as a classificatory character.

in certain groups the number of “ primaries,” or quill-feathers grow- ing from the manus or distal segment of the wing, formed another characteristic easy of observation. In the Oscines or Polymyodi of Miller the number was either nine or ten—and if the latter the outermost of them was generally very small. In two of the other groups of which Prof. Cabanis especially treated—groups which had been hitherto more or less confounded with the Oscines—the number of primaries was invariably ten, and the outermost of them was comparatively large. This observation was also hailed as the dis- covery of a fact of extraordinary importance ; and, from the results of these investigations, taken altogether, Ornithology was declared by Sundevall, undoubtedly a man who had a right to speak with authority, to have made greater progress than had been achieved since the days of Cuvier. The final disposition of the “Subclass Inscssores””—all the perching Birds, that is to say, which are neither Birds-of-Prey nor Pigeons—proposed by Prof. Cabanis, was into four “ Orders,” as follows :—

1. Oscines, equal to Miiller’s group of the same name ;

2. Clamatores, being a majority of that division of the Picarizx of Nitzsch, so called by Andreas Wagner, in 1841,! which have their feet normally constructed ;

8. Strisores, a group now separated from the Clamatores of Wagner, and containing those forms which have their feet abnor- inally constructed; and

4, Scansores, being the Grimpewrs of Cuvier, the Zygodactyli of several other systematists.

The first of these four “Orders” had been already indefeasibly established as one perfectly natural, but respecting its details more must presently be said. The remaining three are now seen to be obviously artificial associations, and the second of them, Clamatorcs, in particular, containing a very heterogencous assemblage of forms ; but it must be borne in mind that the internal structure of some of them was at that time still more imperfectly known than now. Yet even then enough had been ascertained to have saved what are now recognized as the Families Zodidew and Tyrannid# from being placed as “Subfaniilies” in the same “ Family Colopicride”; and several other in’stances of unharmonious conibination in this “Order” might be adduced were it worth while to particularize them. More than that, it would not be difficult to shew, only the present is not exactly the place for it, that some groups or Families which in reality are not far distant from one another are distributed, owing to the dissimilarity of their external characters, throughout these three Orders. Thus the Podargingw are associated with the Coractidx under the head Clamatores, while the Caprimulgidx, to which they are clearly most allied, if they do not form part of that Family (GOATSUCKER, vol. x. p. 711), are placed with the Strisorcs ; and again the Musophagide also stand as Strisorcs, while the Cuculide, which modern systematists think to be thcir nearcst relations, are considered to be Scansores.

But to return to the Oscines, the arrangement of which in the classification now under review has been deemed its greatest merit, and consequently has been very generally followed. That by virtue of the perfection of their vocal organs, and certain other properties—though some of these last have perhaps never yet been made clear enough ——they should stand at the head of the whole Class, may here be freely admitted, but the respective rank assigned to the various component Families of the group is certainly open to question, and to the present writer seems, in the methods of several systematists, to be based upon a fallacy. This respective rank of the different Families appears to have been assigned on the principle that, since by reason of one character (namely, the more complicated structure of their syrinx) the Oscines form a higher group than the Clamatores, therefore all the concomitant features which the former possess and the latter do not must be equally indicative of superiority. Now one of the features in which most of the Oscines differ from the lower “ Order ” is the having a more or

less undivided planta, and accord- ingly it has been assumed that the Family of Oscines in which this modification of the planta is carried to its extreme point must be the highest of that “Order.” Since, therefore, this extreme modification of the planta is

1 Archiv fir Naturgeschichte, vii. 2, pp. 93, 94. The divisicn seems to have been instituted by this author a couple of years earlier in the second edition of his Handbuch der Naturgeschichte (a work not seen by the present writer), but not then to have received a scientific name. It included all Picariz# which had not “ zygodacty- lous” feet, that is to say, toes placed in pairs, two before and two behind.

exhibited by the Thrushes and their allies, it is alleged that they must be placed first, and indeed at the head of all Birds. The groundlessness of this reasoning ought to be apparent to everybody. In the present state of anatomy at any rate, it is impossible to prove that there is more than a coincidence in the facts just stated, and in the association of two characters —one deeply seated and affecting the whole life of the Bird, the other superficially, and so far as we can perceive without effect upon its organism. Because the Clamatores, having no song- muscles, have a divided planta, it cannot be logical to assume that among the Oscines, which possess song-muscles, such of them as have an undivided planta must be higher than those that have it divided. The argument, if it can be called an argument, is hardly one of analogy; and yet no stronger ground has been occupied by those who invest ° the ‘Thrushes, as do the majority of modern systematists, with the most dignified position in the whole Class. But passing from general to particular considerations, so soon as a practical application of the principle is made its inefficacy is manifest. The test of perfection of the vocal organs must be the perfection of the notes they enable their possessor to utter. There cannot be a question that, sing admirably as do some of the Birds included among the Thrushes,? the Larks, as a Family, infinitely surpass them. Yet the Larks form the very group which, as has been already shewn (Lark, vol. xiv. p. 314), have the planta more divided than any other among the Oscines. It seems hardly possible to adduce anything that would more conclusively demonstrate the

independent nature of each of these characters—the complicated structure of the syrinx and the asserted inferior formation of the planta— which are in the Alaudide associated. Moreover, this same Family affords a very valid protest against the extreme value attached to the presence or absence of the outermost quill-feather of the wings, and in this work it has been before shewn (ut supra) that almost every stage of magnitude in this feather is exhibited by the Larks from its rudimentary or almost abortive condition in Alauda arvensis to its very considerable development in Melano- corypha calandra. Indeed there are many genera of Oscines in which the proportion that the outermost primary bears to the rest is at best but a specific character, and certain exceptions are allowed by Prof. Cabanis (p. 313) to exist. Some of them it is now easy to explain, inas- much as in a few cases the apparently aberrant genera have elsewhere found a more natural position, a contin- gency to which he himself was fully awake. Butas a rule the allocation and ranking of the different Families of Oscines by this author must be deemed arbitrary. Yet the value of his Ornithologische Notizen is great, not only as evidence of his extraordinarily extensive acquaintance with different forms, which is proclaimed in every page, but in leading to a far fuller appreciation of characters that certainly should on no account be neglected, though

2 Prof. Cabanis would have strengthened his position had he included in the same Family with the Thrushcs, which he called Rha- cnemid#, the Birds commonly known as Warblers, Sylviida, which the more advanced of recent systematists are inclined with much reason to unite with the Thrushes, Turdidx ; but instead of that he, trusting to the plantar eharacter, segregated the Warblers, including of course the Nightingale, and did not even allow them the sccond place in his method, putting them below the Family called by him Sylvicolide, consisting chiefly of the American forms now known as Mniotiltidx, none of which as songsters approach those of the Old World.

3 Tt must be observed that Prof. Cabanis does not place the Alaudidx lowest of the seventcen Families of which he makes the Oscines to be composed. They stand eleventh in order, while the Corvidez are last— a matter on which something has to be said in the sequel.

4 By a curious error, probably of the press, the number of primaries assigned to the Paradiseidx and Corvidex is wrong (pp. 884, 335). In each case 10 should be substituted for 19 and 14.

8ona- yarte,

Vewman

O@mNI THO LOG Y

too much importance may easily be, and already has been, assigned to them.!

This will perhaps be the most convenient place to mention another kind of classification of Birds, which, based on a principle wholly different from those that have just been explained, requires a few words, though it has not been productive, nor is likely, from all that appears, to be productive of any great effect. So long ago as 1831, BoNAPARTE, in his Saggio di wna distribuzione metodica degli Animali Vertcbrati, published at Rome, and in 1837 com- municated to the Linnean Society of London, ‘‘A new Systematic Arrangement of Vertebrated Animals,” which was subsequently printed in that Society’s Transactions (xviii. pp. 247-304), though before it appeared there was issued at Bologna, under the title of Synopsis Vertebratorwm Systematis, a Latin translation of it. Herein he divided the Class Aves into two Subclasses, to which he applied the names of Jnscssorcs and Grallatores (hitherto used by their inventors Vigors and Illiger in a different sense), in the latter work relying chiefly for this division on characters which had not before been used by any systematist, namely, that in the former group Monogamy generally prevailed and the helpless nestlings were fed by their parents, while the latter group were mostly Polygamous, and the chicks at birth were active and capable of feeding themselves. This method, which in process of time was dignified by the title of a Physiological Arrangement, was insisted upon with more or less pertinacity by the author throughout a long series of publications, some of them separate books, some of them contributed to the memoirs issued by many scientific bodies of various European countries, ceasing only at his death, which in July 1857 found him occupied upon a Conspectus Gencrum Avium, that in consequence remains unfinished (see p. 14). In the course of

this series, however, he saw fit to alter the name of his two Sub- classes, since those which he at first adopted were open to a variety of meanings, and in a communication to the French Academy of Sciences in 1858 (Comptcs Rendus, xxxvii. pp. 641-647) the denomination Jnscssores was changed to Altrices, and Grallatores to Precoces—the terms now preferred by him being taken from Sundevall's treatise of 1835 already mentioned. 'The views of Bonaparte were, it appears, also shared by an ornithological amateur of some distinction, Hoce, who propounded a scheme which, as he subsequently stated (Zoologist, 1850, p. 2797), was founded strictly in accordance with them ; but it wonld secm that, allowing his convictions to be warped by other considerations, he abandoned the original '' physiological" basis of his system, so that this, when published in 1846 (Zdinb. N. Philosoph. Journal, xli. pp. 50-71), was found to be established on a single character of the feet only ; though he was careful to point out, immediately after formulating the definition of his Subclasses Constrictipedcs and Inconstrictipedes, that the former ''inake, in general, compact and well-built nests, wherein they bring up their very weak, blind, and mostly naked young, which they feed with care, by bringing food to thei for many days, until they are fledged and sufficiently strong to leave their nest," observing also that they ''are princi- pally monogamous" (pp. 55, 56); while of the latter he says that they ''make either a poor and rude nest, in which they lay their eggs, or else none, depositing them on the bare ground. The young are generally born with their full sight, covered with down, strong, and capable of running or swimming immediately after they leave the egg-shell." He adds that the parents, which "are mostly polygamous," attend their young and direct them where to find their food (p. 63). The numerous errors in these assertions hardly need pointing out. The Herons, for instance, are much more ** Constrictipcdcs"' than are the Larks or the Kingfishers, and, so far from the majority of '' Jnconstrictipedes" being polygamous, there is scarcely any evidence of polygamy obtaining as a habit among Birds in a state of nature except in certain of the Gallinz and a very few others. Furthermore, the young of the Goatsuckers are at hatching far more developed than are those of the Herons or the Cormorants ; and, in a general way, nearly every one of the as- scrted peculiarities of the two Subclasses breaks down under careful examination. Yet the idea of a '* physiological" arrangement on the same kind of principle found another follower, or, as he thonght, inventor, in

NEwMAN, who in 1850 communicated to the Zoological Society of London a plan published in its Procecdings for that year (pp. 46-48), and reprinted also in his own journal The Zoologist (pp. 2780-2782), based on exactly the same consider- ations, dividing Birds into two groups, "‘ Hesthogenous ”’—a word so vicious in formation as to be incapable of amendment, but intended to signify those that were hatched with a clothing of down—and “‘Gymnogenons,” or those that were hatched naked. These three systems arc essentially identical ; but, plausible as they may be at

1 A muweh more extensive and detailed application of his method was begun by Prof. Cabanis in the Afuseum Heineanum, a very useful catalogue of specimens in the collection of Herr Oberamtmann Heine, of which the first part was published at Halberstadt in 1850, and the last which has appeared, the work being still unfinished, in 1863.

ol

the first aspect, they have been found to be practically useless, though such of their characters as their upholders have advanced with truth deserve attention. Physiology may one day very likely assist the systematist; but it must be real physiology and not asham.

In 1856 Prof. Gervais, who had already contributed to the Gervais.

Zoologie of M. de Castelnau’s Expédition dans les parties centrales de VAmérique du Sud some important memoirs describing the anatomy of the Hoactzin (vol. xil. p. 28) and certain other Birds of doubtful or anomalous position, published some remarks on the characters which could be drawn from the sternum of Birds (Ann. Se. Nat. Zoologic, ser. 4, vi. pp. 5-15). The considerations are not very striking from a general point of view ; but the author adds to the weight of evidence which some of his predecessors had brought to bear on certain matters, particularly in aiding to abolish the artificial groups ‘‘ Déodactyls,” ‘“Syndactyls, ” and ‘‘ Zygodactyls,” on which so mucli reliance had been placed by many of his countrymen ; and it is with him a great merit that he was the first apparently to recognize publicly that characters drawn from the posterior part of the sternum, and particularly from the **échancrures,” commonly called in English ‘‘ notches” or ‘‘emar- ginations,” are of comparatively little importance, since

their number is apt to vary in forms that are most- closely allied, and even in species that are usually associated in the same genus or unquestionably belong to the same Family,? while these ‘‘ notches” sometimes become simple foramina, as in certain Pigeons, or on the other hand foramina may exceptionally change to ‘‘ notches,” and not unfrequently disappear wholly. Among his chief system- atic determinations we may mention that he refers the Tinamous to the Rails, because apparently of their deep ‘‘notches,” but otherwise takes a view of that group more correct according to modern notions than did most of his contemporaries, ‘The Bustards he would place with the ‘‘ Limicoles,” as also Dromas and Chionis, the SHEATH-BILL (g.v.). Phaethon, the TRopic-BirD (q.v.), he would place with the ‘‘Laridés” and not with the “ Pelécanidés,” which it only resembles in its feet having all the toes connected by aweb. Finally Divers, Auks, and Penguins, according to him, form the last term in the series, and it scems fit to him that they should be regarded as forming a separate Order. It is a curious fact that even at a date so late as this, and by an investigator so well informed, doubt should still have cxisted whether Apteryx (Kiw1, vol. xiv. p. 104) should be referred to the group containing the Cassowary and the Ostrich. On the whole the remarks of this esteemed author do not go much beyond such as might occur to any one who had made a study of a good serics of specimens ; but many of them are published for the first time, and the author is careful to insist on the necessity of not resting solely on sternal characters, but associating with them those drawn from other parts of the body.

Three years later in the same journal (xi. pp. 11-145, pls. 2-4) M. BLaAncnarv published some Recherches sur Ics caractércs ostéo- logiques des Oiscaux appliquécs a& la Classification natwrelle de ces animaux, strongly urging the superiority of such characters over those drawn from the bill or feet, which, he remarks, though they may have sometimes given correct notions, have mostly led to mis- takes, and, if observations of habits and food have sometimes afforded happy results, they have often been deceptive; so that, should more be wanted than to draw up a mere inventory of creation or trace the distinctive outline of each species, zoology without anatomy would remain a barren study. At the same time he states that authors who have occupied themselves with the sternum alone have often produced uncertain results, especially when they have neglected its anterior

for its posterior part ; for in truth every bone of the skeleton ought to be studied in all its details. Yet this dis- tinguished zoologist selects the sternum as furnishing the key to his primary groups or ‘‘ Orders” of the Class, adopting, as Merrem had done long before, the same two divisions Carinatz and Ratitz, naming, however, the former Tvropidosternti and the latter Homalosternii.2 Some unkind fate has hitherto hindered him from making known to the world the rest of his researches in regard to the other bones of the skeleton till he reached the head, and in the memoir cited he treats of the sternum of only a portion of his first “Order.” This is the more to be regretted by all ornithologists, since he intended to conclude with what to them would have becn a very great boon—the shewing in what way external characters coincided with those presented by Osteology. It was also within the scope of his plan to have continued on a inore extended scale the researches on ossification begun by L’Herminier, and thus M.

2 Thus he cites the cases of Machetes pugnax and Scolopax rusti- cola among the “Limicoles,” and Larus cataractes among the “ Laridés,” as differing from their nearest allies by the possession of only one “notch” on either side of the keel. Several additional instances are cited in Philos. Transactions, 1869, p. 337, note.

3 These terms were explained in his great work L’ Organisation du Réegne Animal, Oiseaux (p. 16), begun in 1855, and still (1884) no further advanced than its fourth part, comprehending in all but thirty- two pages of letter-press, to mean exactly the same as those applied by Merrem to his two primary divisions.

Blan- chard.

Eyton.

Des Murs.

32 ORNL Ee Ono G XY

Blanchard’s investigations, if completed, would obviously have taken extraordinarily high rank among the highest contributions to ornithology. As it is, so much of them as we have are of con- siderable importance; for,

in this unfortunately unfinished memoir, he describes in some detail the several differences which the sternum in a great many different groups of his Z'ropidosternii presents, and to some extent makes a methodical disposition of them accordingly. Thus he separates the Birds-of-Prey into three great groups—(1) the ordinary Diurnal forms, including the Falconide and Vulturidz of the systematist of his time, but distinguishing the American Vultures from those of the Old World; (2) Gypogeranus, the SECRETARY-BIRD (g.v.); and (8) the Owls (infra, p. 88). Next he places the Parrots (g.v.), and then the vast assemblage of '' Passereaux '—which he declares to be all of one type, even genera like Pipra (MANAKIN, vol. xv. p. 455) and Pitta—and con- cludes with the somewhat hetcrogeneous conglomeration of forms, beginning with Cypselus (SwIFT, g.v.), that so many systematists have been accustomed to call Picariv, though to them as a group he assigns no name. A continuation of the treatise was promised in a succeeding part of the Annales, but a quarter of a century has passed without its appearance.?

Important as are the characters afforded by the sternum, that bone even with the whole sternal apparatus should obviously not be considered alone. 'To aid ornithologists in their studies in this respect, Eyron, who for many years had been forming a collection of Birds' skeletons, began the publication of a series of plates repre- senting them. The first part of this work, Osteologia Avium, appeared early in 1859, and a volume was completed in 1867. A Supplement was issued in 1869, and a Second Supplement, in three parts, between 1873 and 1875. The whole work contains a great number of figures of Birds' skeletons and detached bones ; but they are not so drawn as to be of much practical use, and the accompanying letter-press is too brief to be satisfactory.

That the eggs laid by Birds should offer to some extent characters of utility to systematists is only to be expected, when it is con- sidered that those from the same nest generally bear an extraordin- ary family-likeness to one another, and also that in certain groups the essential peculiarities of the egg-shell are constantly and dis- tinctively characteristic. Thus no one who has ever examined the egg of a Duck or of a Tinamou would ever be in danger of not referring another Tinamou's egg or another Duck's, that he might see, to its proper Family, and so on with many others. Yet, as has been stated on

a former occasion (Birps, vol. iii. p. 772), the expectation held out to oologists, and by them, of the benefits to be conferred upon Systematic Ornithology from the study of Birds' eggs, so far from being fulfilled, has not unfrequently led to dis- appointment. But at the same time many of the shortcomings of Oology in this respect must be set down to the defective informa- tion and observation of its votaries, among whom some have been very lax, not to say incautions, in not ascertaining on due evidence the parentage of their speciinens, and the author next to be named is open to this charge. After several minor notices that appeared in journals at various times, Drs Murs in 1860 brouglit out at Paris his ambitious Traité général d'Oologie Ornithologique au point de vue de la Classification, which contains (pp. 529-538) a "Systema Oologicum" as the final result of his labours. In this scheme Birds are arranged according to what the author considered to be their natural method and sequence ; but the result exhibits some unions as ill-assorted as can well be met with in the whole range of tentative arrangements of the Class, together with some very unjustifiable divorces. Its basis is the classification of Cuvier, the modifications of which by Des Murs will seldom commend them- selves to systematists whose opinion is generally deemed worth having. Few, if any, of the faults of that classification are removed, and the improvements suggested, if not established by his successors, those especially of other countries than France, are ignored, or, as is the case with some of those of L'Herminier, are only cited to be set aside. Oologists have no reason to be thankful to Des Murs, notwithstanding his zeal in behalf of their study. It is perfectly true that in several or even in many instances he acknowledges and deplores the poverty of his information, but this does not excuse him for making assertions (and such assertions are not unfrequent) based on evidence that is either wholly untrustworthy or needs further enquiry before it can be accepted (Jbis, 1860, pp. 381-885). This being the case, it would seem useless to take up further space by analysing the several proposed modifications of Cuvier's arrange- ment. The great merit of the work is that the author shews the necessity of taking Oology into account when investigating the classification of Birds; but it also proves that in so doing the paramount consideration lies in the thorough sifting of evidence as to the parentage of the eggs which are to serve as the building stones of the fabric to be erected. The attempt of Des Murs was

1M. Blanchard’s animadversions on the employment of external characters, and on trusting to observations on the habits of Birds, called forth a rejoinder from Mr Wallace (Jdis, 1864, pp. 36-41), who successfully shewed that they are not altogether to be despised. ’

praiseworthy ; but in effect it has utterly failed, notwithstanding the encomiums passed upon it by friendly critics (ev. de Zoologie, 1860, pp. 176-183, 313-325, 370-373).2

Until about this time systematists, almost without exception, may be said to have been wandering with no definite purpose. At least their purpose was indefinite compared with that which they now have before them. No doubt they all agreed in saying that they were pro- secuting a search for what they called the True System of Nature ; but that was nearly the end of their agreement, for in what that True System consisted the opinions of scarcely any two would coincide, unless to own that it was some shadowy idea beyond the present power of mortals to reach or evencomprehend. The Quinarians, who boldly asserted that they had fathomed the mystery of Creation, had been shewn to be no wiser than other men, if indeed they had not utterly befooled themselves ; for their theory at best could give no other explanation of things than that they were because they were. The conception of such a process as has now come to be called by the name of Evolution was certainly not novel; but except to two men the way in which that process was or could be possible had not been revealed. Here there is no need to enter into details of the history of Evolution; but the annalist in every branch of Biology must record the eventful Ist of

July 1858, when the now celebrated views of Darwin and Darwin Mr Watuace were first laid before the scientific world,‘ and and must also notice the appearance towards the end of the Wallace

following year of the former’s Origin of Species, which has effected the greatest revolution of human thought in this or perhaps in any century. The majority of biologists who had schooled themselves on other principles were of course slow to embrace the new doctrine ; but their hesita- tion was only the natural consequence of the caution which their scientific training enjoined. A few there were who felt as though scales had suddenly dropped from their eyes, when greeted by the idea conveyed in the now familiar

phrase “ Natural Selection”; but even those who had hitherto believed, and still continued to believe, in the sanctity of “Species” at once perceived that their life-long study had undergone a change, that their old position was seriously threatened by a perilous siege, and that to make it good they must find new means of defence. Many bravely maintained their posts, and for them not a word of blame ought to be expressed. Some few pretended, though the contrary was notorious, that they had always been on the side of the new philosophy, so far as they allowed it to be philosophy at all, and for them hardly a word of blame is too severe. Others after due deliberation, as became men who honestly desired the truth and nothing but the truth, yielded wholly or almost wholly to argu- ments which they gradually found to be irresistible. But, leaving generalities apart, and restricting ourselves to what is here our proper business, there was possibly no branch of Zoology in which so many of the best informed and con- sequently the most advanced of its workers sooner accepted the principles of Evolution than Ornithology, and of course the effect upon its study was very marked. New spirit was given to it. Ornithologists now felt they had something before them that was really worth investigating. Ques- tions of Affinity, and the details of Geographical Distribu- tion, were endowed with a real interest, in comparison with

2 Tn this historical sketch of the progress of Ornithology it has not been thought necessary to mention other oological works, since they have not a taxonomic bearing, and the chief of them have been already named (Brrps, vol. iii. p. 774, note 1).

3 Neither Lamarck nor Robert Chambers (the now acknowledged author of Vestiges of Creation), though thorough evolutionists, rationally indicated any means whereby, to use the old phrase, ‘‘ the transmutation of species” could be effected.

4 Journal of the Proceedings of the Linnean Society, vol. iii., Zoology, pp. 45-62.

which any interest that had hitherto been taken was a trifling pastime. Classification assumed a wholly different aspect. It had up to this time been

little more than the shufiling of cards, the ingenious arrangement of counters in a pretty pattern. Henceforward it was to be the serious study of the workings of Nature in producing the beings we see around us from beings more or less unlike them, that had existed in bygone ages and had been the parents of a varied and varying offspring—our fellow-creatures of to- day. Classification for the first time was something more than the expression of a fancy, not that it had not also its imaginative side. Men's minds began to figure to them- selves the original type of some well-marked genus or Family of Birds. They could even discern dimly some generalized stock whence had descended whole groups that now differed strangely in habits and appearance—their discernment aided, may be, by some isolated form which yet retained undeniable traces of a primitive structure. More dimly still visiqns of what the first Bird may have been like could be reasonably entertained ; and, passing even to a higher antiquity, the Reptilian parent whence all Birds have sprung was brought within reach of man's consciousness. But, relieved as it may be by reflexions of this kind —dreams some may perhaps still call them—the study of Ornithology has unquestionably become harder and more serious ; and a corresponding change in the style of investigation, followed in the works that remain to be considered, will be immediately perceptible.

That this was the case is undeniably shewn by some remarks of Canon TristRAM, who, in treating of the Alaudide and Sasxicoline of Algeria (whence he had recently brought a large collection of specimens of his own making), stated ([bis, 1859, pp. 429-433) that he could "not help feeling convinced of the truth of the views set forth by Messrs Darwin and Wallace," adding that it was "hardly possible, I should think, to illustrate this theory better than by the Larks and Chats of North Africa." It is unnecessary to continue the quotation; the few words just cited are enough to assure to their author the credit of being (so far as is known) the first ornithological specialist who had the courage publicly to recognize and receive the new and at that time unpopular philosophy.! But greater work was at hand. In June 1860 Prof. ParKER broke, as most will allow, entirely fresh ground, and ground that he has since continued to till more deeply perhaps than any other zoologist, by communicating to the Zoological Society a memoir "On the Osteology of Baleniceps," subsequently published in that Society's 7'rans- actions (iv. pp. 269-351). Of this

contribution to science, as of all the rest which have since proceeded from him, may be said in the words he himself has applied (wt supra, p. 271) to the work of another labourer in a not distant field:—“ This is a model paper for unbiassed observation, and freedom from that pleasant mode of supposing instead of ascertaining what is the true nature of an anatomical element.”2 Indeed the study of this memoir, limited though it be in scope, could not fail to convince any one that it proceeded from the mind of one who taught with the authority derived directly from original knowledge, and not from association with the scribes—a conviction that has become strengthened as, in a series of successive memoirs, the stores of more than twenty years’ silent observation and unremitting research

1 Whether Canon Tristram was anticipated in any other, and if so in what, branch of Zoology will be a pleasing inquiry for the historian of the future.

2 It is fair to state that some of Prof. Parker’s conclusions respect- ing Baleniceps were contested by the late Prof. J. T. Reinhardt (Overs, K. D. Vid. Selsk. Forhandlinger, 1861, pp. 185-154; Ibis, 1862, pp. 158-175), and as it seems to the present writer not ineffec- tually. Prof. Parker replied to his critic (dis, 1862, pp. 297-299).

were unfolded, and, more than that, the hidden forces of the science of Morphology were gradually brought to bear upon almost each subject that came under discussion. These different memoirs, being technically monographs, have strictly no right to be mentioned in this place; but there is scarcely one of them, if one indeed there be, that does not deal with the generalities of the study; and the influence they have had upon contemporary investigation is so strong that it is impossible to refrain from noticing them here, though want of space forbids us from enlarging on their contents.2 Moreover, the doctrine of Descent with variation is preached in all—seldom, if ever, conspicu- ously, but perhaps all the more effectively on that account. There is no reflective thinker but must perceive that Morphology is the lamp destined to throw more light than that afforded by any other kind of study on the obscurity that still shrouds the genealogy of Birds as of other animals; and, though as yet its illuminating power is admittedly far from what is desired, it has perhaps never shone more

brightly than in Prof. Parker’s hands. The great fault of his series of memoirs, if it may be allowed the present writer to criticize them, is the indifference of their author to formulating his views, so as to enable the ordinary taxonomer to perceive how far he has got, if not to present him with a fair scheme. But this fault is possibly one of those that are “to merit near allied,” since it would seem to spring from the author’s hesitation to pass from observation to theory, for to theory at present belong, and must for some time belong, all attempts at Classification. Still itis not the less annoying and disappointing to the systematist to find that the man whose life-long application would enable him, better than any one else, to declare the effect of the alliances and differ- ences that have been shewn to exist among various mem- bers of the Class should yet be so reticent, or that when he speaks he should rather use the language of Morphology, which those who are not morphologists find difficult of correct, interpretation, and wholly inadequate to allow of zoological deductions.*

3 It may be convenient to our readers that a list of Prof. Parker’s works which treat of ornithological subjects, in addition to the two above mentioned, should here be given. They are as follows :— In the Zoological Society’s Transactions, 25th November 1862, ‘On the Osteology of the Gallinaceous Birds and Tinamous,”” v. pp. 149-241; 12th December 1865, ‘‘On some fossil Birds from the Zebbug Cave,” vi. pp. 119-124 ; 9th January 1868, ‘‘On the Oste- ology of the Kagu,” vi. pp. 501-521; 18th February 1873, ‘On the Aigithognathous Birds,” Pt. 1. ix. pp. 289-352 ; 15th February 1876, “¢On the Skull of the Agithognathous Birds,” Pt. Il. x. pp. 251-314. In the Proceedings of the same Society, 8th December 1863, ‘* On the systematic position of the Crested Screamer,” pp. 511-518 5, 28th February 1865, ‘On the Osteology of Aficroglossa alecto, pp. 235-238. In the Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society, 9th March 1865, ‘*On the Structure and Development of the Skull in the Ostrich Tribe,” pp. 113-183; 11th February 1869, ‘‘ On the Structure and Development of the Skull of the Common Fowl,” pp. 755-807, In the Linnean Society’s Transactions, 2d April 1874, “On the Morphology of the Skull in the Woodpeckers and Wrynecks,” ser. 2, Zoology, i. pp. 1-225; 16th December WEB) PO Ora the Structure and Development of the Bird’s Skull,” ¢om. cit., pp. 99-154. In the Monthly Microscopical Journal for 1872, ‘‘ On the Structure and Development of the Crow’s Skull,” pp. 217-253 ; for 1873, ‘‘On the

Development of the Skull in the genus Turdus," pp. 102-107, and "On the Development of the Skull in the Tit and Sparrow Hawk," parts i. and ii., pp. 6-11, 45-50. There is besides the great work published by the Ray Society in 1868, A Monograph on the Structure and Development of the Shoulder-girdle and Sternum, of which pp. 142-191 treat of these parts in the Class Aves ; and our readers will hardly need to be reminded of the article Brrps in the present work (vol. iii. pp. 699-728). Nearly every one of this marvellous series of contributions is copiously illustrated by plates from drawings made by the author himself.

4 Ag an instance, take the passages in which Turnix and Thinocorus are apparently referred to the digithognathe (Trans. Zool. Society, 1X. pp. 291 et seqg.; and supra, vol. iii. p. 700), a view which, as shewn by the author (7ransactions, x. p. 310), isnot that really intended by him.

XVIIL — 5

Wagner.

Owen.

Lillje- borg.

Huxley.

34

For some time past rumours of a discovery of the highest interest had been agitating the minds of zoologists, for in 1861 AnpREas WaGNer had sent to the Academy of Sciences of Munich (Sitzwngsberichte, pp. 146-154; Ann, Nat. History, ser. 3, ix. pp. 261-267) an account of what he conceived to be a feathered Reptile (assigning to it the name G'riphosaurus), the remains of which had been found in the lithographic beds of Solenhofen ; but he himself, through failing health, had been unable to see the fossil. In 1862 the slabs containing the remains were acquired by the British Museum, and towards the end of that year Sir R. OwEN communicated a detailed description of them to the Philosophical Transactions (1863, pp. 33-47), proving their Bird-like nature, and referring them to the genus Archxopterye of

Hermann von Meyer, hitherto known only by the impression of a single feather from the same geological beds. Wagner foresaw the use that would be made of this discovery by the adherents of the new Philosophy, and, in the usual language of its opponents at the time, strove to ward off the " misinter- pretations " that they would put upon it. His protest, it is needless to say, was unavailing, and all who respect his memory must regret that the sunset of life failed to give him that insight into the future which is poetically ascribed to it. To Darwin and those who believed with him scarcely any discovery could have been more welcome ; but that is beside our present business. It was quickly seen—even by those who held Archexopteryx to be a Reptile —that it was a form intermediate between existing Birds and existing Reptiles—while those who were convinced by Sir R. Owen's researches of its ornithic affinity saw that it must belong to a type of Birds wholly unknown before, and one that in any future for the arrangement of the Class must have a special rank reserved for it.) It has been already briefly described and figured in this work (Birps, vol. iii. pp. 728, 729).

It behoves us next to mention the "Outlines of a Systematic Review of the Class of Birds," communicated by Prof, LintsERore to the Zoological Society in 1866, and published in its Proceedings for that year (pp. 5-20), since it was immediately after reprinted by the Smithsonian Institution, and with that authorization has exercised a great influence on the opinions of American ornitholo- gists, Otherwise the scheme would hardly need notice here. This paper is indeed little more than an English translation of one published by the author in the annual volume (Arsskrift) of the Scientific Society of Upsala for 1860, and belonging to the pre- Darwinian epoch should perhaps have been more properly treated before, but that at the time of its original appearance it failed to attract attention. The chief merit of the scheme perhaps is that, contrary to nearly cvery precedent, it begins with the lower and rises to the higher groups of Birds, which is of course the natural mode of proceeding, and one therefore to be commended. Other- wise the " principles" on which it is founded are not clear to the ordinary zoologist. Oue of them is said to be " irritability," and, though this is explained to mean, not "muscular strength alone, but vivacity and activity generally,"? it does not seem to form a character that can be easily appreciated either as to quantity or quality; in fact, most persons would

deem it quite immeasurable, and, as such, removed from practical consideration. Moreover, Prof. Lilljeborg's scheme, being actually an adaptation of that of Sundevall, of which we shall have to speak at some length almost immediately, may possibly be left for the present with these

remarks,

In the spring of the year 1867 Prof. HuxieEy, to the delight of an appreciative audience, delivered at the Royal College of Surgeons of England a course of lectures on Birds, and it is much to be regretted that his many engagements hindered him from publishing in its entirety his elucidation of the anatomy of the Class, and the results

' This was done shortly afterwards by Prof. Hickel, who pro- posed the name Sawrure for the group containing it.

2 On this ground it is stated that the Passeres should be placed highest in the Class, But those who know the habits and demeanour of many of the Limicole would no doubt rightly claim for them much more " vivacity and activity " than is possessed by most Passeres,

which he drew from his investigations of it; for never assuredly had the subject been attacked with greater skill and power, or, since the days Buffon, had Ornithology been set forth with greater eloquence. To remedy, in some degree, this unavoidable loss, and to preserve at least a portion of the fruits of his labours, Prof. Huxley, a few weeks after, presented an abstract of his researches to the Zoological Society, in whose Proceedings for the same year it will be found printed (pp. 415-472) as a paper "On the Classification of Birds, and on the taxonomic value of the modifications of certain of the cranial bones observable in that Class." Starting from the basis (which, undeniably true as it is, not a little shocked many of his ornithological hearers) "that the phrase 'Birds are greatly modified Reptiles' would hardly be an exaggerated expres- sion of the closeness" of the resemblance between the two Classes, which he had previously brigaded under the name of Sauropsida (as he had brigaded the Pisces and Amphibia as Ichthyopsida), he drew in bold outline both their like- nesses

and their differences, and then proceeded to inquire how the Aves could be most appropriately subdivided into Orders, Suborders, and Families. In this course of lectures he had already dwelt at some length on the insufficiency of the characters on which such groups as had hitherto been thought to be established were founded : but for the consideration of this part of his subject there was no room in the present paper, and the reasons why he arrived at the conclusion that new means of philosophically and successfully separating the Class must be sought are herein left to be inferred. The upshot, however, admits of no uncertainty: the Class Aves is held to be composed of three “ Orders ”—(I.) Saururm, Hickel; (II.) Ratrra, Merrem ; and (III.) Carmvarm, Merrem. The Saurure have the metacarpals well developed and not ancylosed, and the caudal vertebre are numerous and large, so that the caudal region of the spine is longer than the body. The furcula is complete and strong, the feet very Passerine in appearance. The skull and sternum were at the time unknown, and indeed the whole Order, without doubt entirely extinct, rested exclusively on the celebrated fossil, then unique, Archeopterya (BirDs, vol. iii. pp. 728, 729). The Latitz comprehend the Struthious Birds, which differ from all others now extant in the combination of several peculiarities, some of which have been mentioned in the preceding pages. The sternum has no keel, and ossifies from lateral and paired centres only; the axes of the scapula and coracoid have the same general direction ; certain of the cranial bones have characters very unlike those possessed by the next Order—the vomer, for example, being broad posteriorly and generally intervening between the basisphenoidal rostrum and the palatals and pterygoids ; the barbs of the feathers are disconnected 5 there is no syrinx or inferior larynx ; and the diaphragm is better developed than in other Birds.2 The Ratite are divided into five groups, separated by very trenchant characters, principally osteological, and many of them afforded by the cranial bones. These groups consist of (i.) Struthio (Osrricn, infra, p. 62), (i.) Rua (¢.2.), (iii.) Casuarius and Dromxus (EmEv, vol. viii. I), (va) Dinornis, and (v.) Apteryx (Krw1, vol. xiv. p. 104); but no names are here given tothem. The Carinatz comprise all other existing Birds. The sternum has more or less of a keel, and is said to ossify, with the possible exception of Strigops (Kakapo, vol. xiii. p. 825), from a median centre as well as from paired and lateral centres, The axes of the scapula and coracoid meet at an acute, or, as in

Didus (Dopo, vol. vii. p. 321) and Ocydromus (OcypromE, vol. Xvil, p. 222), at a slightly obtuse angle, while the vomer is

3 This peculiarity had led some zoologists to consider the Struthious Birds more nearly allied to the Manvmalia than any others,

comparatively narrow and allows the pterygoids and palatals to articulate directly with the basisphenoidal rostrum. The Carmatx are divided, according to the formation of the palate, into four " Suborders," and named (i.) Dromexognathx, (ii.) Schizognathe, (iii.) Desmognathez, and (iv.) digithognathe.| The Dromzxognathe resemble the Ratitx, and especially the genus Dromexus, in their palatal structure, and are composed of the T1namous (g.v.). The Schizognathe include a great many of the forms belonging to the Linnean Orders Calline, Gralla, and Anseres. In them the vomer, however variable, always tapers to a point anteriorly, while behind it includes the basisphenoidal rostrum between the palatals; but neither these nor the pterygoids are borne by its posterior divergentends. The maxillo-palatals are usually elongated and lamellar, uniting with the palatals, and, bending backward along their inner edge, leave a cleft (whence the name given to the "Suborder") between the vomer and themselves. Six groups of Schizognathe are distinguished with considerable minuteness :—(1) Charadriomorphe, con- taining Charadriide (PLovER, q.v.), Otidide (BUsTaARD, vol, iv. p. 578), and Scolopacide ; (2) Geranomorphe, including Gruidx (CRANE, vol. vi. p. 546) and Rallidz, between which Psophide and Rhinochetide are intermedi- ate, while the SERIEMa (q.v.) would also seem to belong here ; (3) Cecomorphx, comprising Laride (GULL, vol. xi. p. 274), Procellariide (PETREL, q¢.v.), Colymbide (DIVER, vol, vii. p. 292), and Alcidx (GUILLEMOT, vol. xi. p. 262); 4) Spheniscomorphe, composed of the PENGUINS (q.v.) ; i Alectoromorphe (Fowt, vol. ix. p. 491), being all the

Galline except the Tinamous; and finally (6) Peristero-

morphex, consisting of the Dovus (vol. vii. p. 379) and Piczons (q.v.). In the third of these Suborders, the Desmognathx, the vomer is either abortive or so small as to disappear from the skeleton. When it exists it is always

slender, and tapers to a point anteriorly. The maxillo-palatals are bound together (whence the name of the “ Suborder”) across the middle line, either directly or by the ossification of the nasal septum. The posterior ends of the palatals and anterior of the pterygoids articulate directly with the rostrum. The groups of Desmognathx are characterized as carefully as are those of the preceding “Suborder,” and are as follows :—(1) Chenomorphe, consisting of the Anatidex (Duck, vol. vii. p. 505; Gooss, vol, x. p. 777) with Palamedea, the ScrEAMER (q.v.) ; (2) Amphimorphe, the Fiamincous (vol. ix. p. 286); (3) Pelargomorphx, containing the Ardetde (HRoN, vol. xi. p. 760), Ciconiide (StorK, g.v.), and Tantalidx; (4) Dysporomorphx, the Cormorants (vol. vi. p. 407), FRigaTs-Birps (vol. ix. p. 786), GANNETS (vol. x. p. 70), and Peicans (q.v.); (5) Aetomorphx, comprising all the Birds-of-Prey ; (6) Psittacomorphex, the Parrots (9. v.) ; and lastly (7) Coccygomorphe, which are held to include four groups, viz., (a) Coliide (Movusx-Birp, vol. xvii. p. 6); (6) Musophagide (PLANTAIN-EATERS and TouRA- Koos, g.v.) Cuculide (Cuckow, vol. vi. p. 685), Bucconide, Rhamphastide (Toucans, q.v.), Capitonide, Galbulide (JACAMAR, vol. xili, p. 531); (c) Alcedinide (K1NG- FISHER, xiv. p. 81,) Bucerotide (HorNBILL, xii. p. 169), Upupide (Hoopox, xii. p. 154), Meropidx, Momotidx (Mormot, xvii. p. 3), Coractide (RoLLER, ¢.v.); and (d) Trogonidz (TROGON, g.v.). Next in order come the Celeo- morphe or WOODPECKERS (q.v.), a group respecting the exact position of which Prof. Huxley was uncertain,’

1 These names are compounded respectively of Dromeus, the generic name applicd to the Emeu, ox{¢a, a split or cleft, 5€rua, a bond or tying, atyi@os, a Finch, and, in each case, -yvd0os, a jaw.

- Prof. Parker subsequently advanced the Woodpeckers to a higher rank under the name of Saurognathe (Monthly Microscop. Journal, 1872, p, 219, and Tr. Linn. Soc., ser. 2, Zoology, i. p. 2).

though he inclined to think its relations were with the next group, dgithognathe, the fourth and last of his “ Sub- orders,” characterized by a form of palate in some respects intermediate between the two preceding. The vomer is broad, abruptly truncated in front, and deeply cleft behind, so

as to embrace the rostrum of the sphenoid ; the palatals have produced postero-external angles ; the maxillo-palatals are slender at their origin, and extend obliquely inwards and forwards over the palatals, ending beneath the vomer in expanded extremities, not united either with one another or with the vomer, nor does the latter unite with the nasal septum, though that is frequently ossified. Of the githognathe two divisions are made—(1) Cypselo- morphe, including Z'rochilide (HUMMING-BIRD, vol. xii. p. 357), Cypselide (Swirt, g.v.), and Caprimulgidx (Goat- SUCKER, vol. x. p. 711); and (2) Coracomorphz, which last are separable into two groups, one (a) formed of the genus Menura (LyRE-B1rD, vol. xv. p. 115), which then seemed to stand alone, and the other (b) made up of Polymyodz, Tracheophone, and Oligomyode, sections founded on the syringeal structure, but declared to be not natural.

The above abstract ° shews the general drift of this very remarkable contribution to Ornithology, and it has to be added that for by far the greater number of his minor groups Prof. Huxley relies solely on the form of the palatal structure, the importance of which Dr Cornay, as already stated (p. 29), had before urged, though to so little purpose. That the palatal structure must be taken into consideration by taxonomers as affording hints of some utility there can no longer be a doubt; but the present writer is inclined to think that the characters drawn thence owe more of their worth to the extraordinary perspicuity with which they have been presented by Prof. Huxley than to their own intrinsic value, and that if the same power had been employed to elucidate in the same way other parts of the skeleton—say the bones of the sternal apparatus or even of the pelvic girdle—either set could have been made to appear quite as instructive and perhaps more so. Adventitious value would therefore seem to have been acquired by the bones of the palate through the fact that so great a master of the art of exposition selected them as fitting examples upon which to exercise his skill.* At the same time it must be stated this selection was not premeditated by Prof. Huxley, but forced itself upon him as his investigations proceeded.> In reply to some critical remarks (bis, 1868, pp. 85-96), chiefly aimed at shewing the inexpediency of relying solely on one set of characters, especially when those afforded by the palatal bones were not, even within the limits of Families, wholly diagnostic, the author (Jbis, 1868, pp. 357-362) announced a slight modification of his original scheme,

by introducing three more groups into it, and concluded by indicating how its bearings upon the great question of “Genetic Classifica- tion” might be represented so far as the different groups of Carinate are concerned :—

3 This is adapted from that given in the Record of Zoological Literature (iv. pp. 46-49), which is believed to have not inadequately represented the author’s views.

4 The notion of the superiority of the palatal bones to all others for purposes of classification has pleased many persons, from the fact that these bones are not unfrequently retained in the dried skins of Birds sent home by collectors in foreign countries, and are therefore available for study, while such boues as the sternum and pelvis are rarely pre- served. ‘The conimon practice of ordinary collectors, until at least very recently, has been tersely described to the present writer as being to “shoot a bird, take off its skin, and throw away its characters.”

5 Perhaps this may be partially explained by the fact that the Museum of the College of Surgeons, in which these investigations were chiefly carried on, like most other muscums of the time, contained a much larger series of the heads of Birds than of their entire skeletons, or of any other portion of the skeleton, Consequently the materials available for the comparison of different forms consisted in great part of heads only.

A. Milne- Edwards.

36

Tinamomorphee.

Turnicomorphee.

| Charadriomorphee, Alectoromorpha.

| | | | Cecomorphe. Geranomorphe, Pteroclo- Palamcdea,

morphee, Spheniseo- Actomorphe. Peristero Chenomorphe. morphea. : morphe. Hetero- Amphimorphe. morphee. : Si ican Psittaco- Coceygo-

Agitho- Dysporo- NITODO eee ras seeses IMO tOeerrsesesereasee gnathee. morphe.

The above scheme, in Prof. Huxley's opinion, nearly re- presents the affinities of the various Carinate groups,—the great difficulty being to determine the relations to the rest of the Coccygomorphx, Psittacomorphe, and Aigithognathe, which he indicated "only in the most doubtful and hypothetic fashion." Almost simultaneously with this he expounded more particularly before the Zoological Society, in whose Proceedings (1868, pp. 294-319) his results were soon after published, the groups of which he believed the Alectoromorphz to be composed and the relations to them of some outlying forms usually regarded as Gallina- ceous, the Zurnicide and Pteroclide, as well as the singular Hoacrzin (vol. xii. p. 28), for all three of which he had to institute new groups—the last forming the sole representa- tive of his Heteromorphe. More than this, he entered upon their Geographical Distribution, the facts of which important subject are here, almost for the first time, since the attempt of Blyth already mentioned,! brought to bear practically on Classification, as has been previously hinted (Brrps, vol. iii, pp. 736, 737); but, that subject having been already treated at some length, there is no need to enter upon it here.

Nevertheless it is necessary to mention here vhe intimate connexion between Classification and Geographical Dis- tribution as revealed by the paleontological researches of Prof. ALpHonse Mitnz-Epwarps, whose magnificent Ovseaux Fossiles de la France began to appear in 1867, and was completed in 1871—the more so, since the exigencies of his undertaking compelled him to use materials that had been almost wholly neglected by other investigators. A large proportion of the fossil remains the determination and description of which was his object were what are very commonly called the "long bones," that is to say, those of the limbs. The recognition of these, minute and fragmentary as many were, and the referring them to their proper place, rendered necessary an attentive study of the comparative osteology and myology of Birds in general, that of the "long bones," whose sole char- acters were often a few muscular ridges or depressions, being especially obligatory. Hence it became manifest that a very respectable Classification can be found in which characters drawn from these bones play a rather important part. Limited by circumstances as

is that followed by M. Milne-Edwards, the details of his arrange- ment do not require setting forth here. It is enough to point out that we have in his work another proof of the multiplicity of the factors which must be taken into consideration by the systematist, and another proof of the fallacy of trusting to one set of characters alone. But this is not the only way in which the author has rendered service to the advanced student of Omi- a ee

1 It is true that from the time of Buffon, though he scorned any regular Classification, Geographical Distribution had been occasionally held to have something to do with systematic arrangement ; but the way in which the two were related was never clearly put forth, though people who could read between the lines might have guessed the secret

from Darwin's Journal of Researches, as well as from his introduction to the Zoology of the "Beagle" Voyage.

thology. The unlooked-for discovery in France of re- mains which he has referred to forms now existing it is true, but existing only in countries far removed from Europe, forms such as Collocalia, Leptosomus, Psittacus, Serpentarius, and Trogon, is perhaps even more suggestive than the finding that France was once inhabited by forms, that are wholly extinct, of which, as has been already mentioned (Brrps, vol. iii. pp. 730, 731), in the older formations there is abundance. Unfortunately none of these, however, can be compared for singularity with Archzxopteryx or with some American fossil forms next to be noticed, for their particular bearing on our knowledge of Ornithology will be most conveniently treated here.

In November 1870 Prof. Marsu, by finding the im- perfect fossilized tibia of a Bird in the Middle Cretaceous shale of Kansas, began a series of wonderful discoveries which will ever be associated with his name,? and, making us acquainted with a great number of forms long since vanished from among the earth's inhabitants, has thrown a comparatively broad beam of light upon the darkness that, broken only by the solitary spark. emitted on the recognition of Archxopteryx, had hitherto brooded over our knowledge of the genealogy of Birds, and is even now for the most part palpable. Subsequent visits to the same part of North America, often

performed under circum- stances of discomfort and occasionally of danger, brought to this intrepid and energetic explorer the reward he had so fully earned. Brief notices of his spoils appeared from time to time in various volumes of the American Journal of Science and Arts (Silliman's), but it is unnecessary here to refer to more than a few of them. In that Journal for May 1872 (ser. 3, iii, p. 360) the remains of a large swimming Bird (nearly 6 feet in length, as afterwards appeared) having some affinity, it was thought, to the Colymbidz were described under the name of Hesperornis regalis, and a few months later (iv. p. 344) a second fossil Bird from the same locality was indicated as Ichthyornis dispar—tfrom the Fish-like, biconcave form of its vertebrae. Further examination of the enormous collections gathered by the author, and preserved in the Museum of Yale College at New Haven in Connecticut, shewed him that this last Bird, and another to which he gave the name of Apatornis, had possessed well-developed teeth implanted in sockets in both jaws, and induced him to establish (v. pp. 161, 162) for their reception a "Subclass" Odontor- mithes and an Order Ichthyornithes. Two years more and the originally found Hesperornis was discovered also to have teeth, but these were inserted in a groove. It was accordingly regarded as the type of a distinct Order Odontolcx (x. pp. 403-408), to which, were assigned as other characters vertebra of a saddle-shape and not biconcave, a keelless sternum, and wings consisting only of the humerus. In 1880 Prof. Marsh brought out a grand volume, Odontornithes, being a monograph of the extinct toothed Birds of North America. Herein remains, attri- buted to no fewer than a score of species, which were referred to eight different genera, are fully described and sufficiently illustrated, and, instead of the ordinal name Ichthyornithes previously used, that of Odontotorme was proposed. In the author's concluding summary he remarks on the fact that, while the Odontolcx, as exhibited in Hesperornis, had teeth inserted in a continuous groove—a low and generalized character as shewn by Reptiles, they had, however, the strongly differentiated saddle-shaped vertebree such as all modern Birds possess. On the other hand the Odontotormez, as exemplified in Ichthyornis, having the primitive biconcave vertebrae, yet possessed the highly

? It will of course be needless to remind the general zoologist of

Prof. Marsh’s no less wonderful discoveries of wholly unlooked-for types of Reptiles and Mammals. .

ORNITHOLOGY

specialized feature of teeth in distinct sockets. esperornis too, with its keelless sternum, had aborted wings but strong legs and feet adapted for swimming, while Ichthyornis had a keeled sternum and powerful wings, but diminutive Icgs and feet. ‘These and other characters separate the two forms so widely as quite to justify the establishment of as many Orders for their reception, and the opposite nature of the evidence they afford illustrates one fundamental principle of evolution, namely, that an animal may attain to great development of one set of characters and at the same time retain other features of a low ancestral type. Prof. Marsh states that he had fully satisfied himself that Archxopteryx belonged to the Odontornithes, which he thought it advisable for the present to regard as a Subclass, separated into three Orders—Odontolcx, Odontotorme, and Saurure—all well marked, but evidently not of equal rank, the last being clearly much more widely distinguished from the first two than they are from one another. But that these three oldest-known forms of Birds should differ so greatly from each other unmistakably points to a great antiquity for the Class. All are true Birds; but the Reptilian characters they possess converge towards a more generalized type. He then proceeds to treat of the characters which may be expected to have occurred in their common ancestor, whose remains may yet be hoped for from the Paleozoic rocks if not from the Permian beds that in North America are so rich in the fossils of a terrestrial fauna. Birds, he believes, branched off by a single stem, which gradually lost its Reptilian as it assumed the Ornithic type; and in the existing Ratitx we have the survivors of this direct line. The lineal descendants of this primal stock. doubtless at an early time attained feathers and warm blood, but, in his opinion, never acquired the power of flight, which probably originated among the small arboreal forms of Reptilian Birds. In them even rudimentary feathers on the fore-limbs would be an advantage, as they would tend to lengthen a leap from branch to branch, or break the force of a fall in leap- ing to the ground. As the feathers increased, the body would become warmer and the blood more active. With still more

feathers would come increased power of flight as we see in the young Birds of to-day. A greater activity would result in a more perfect circulation.

Bold as are the speculations above summarized, there seems no reason to doubt the probability of their turning out to be, if not the exact truth, yet something very like it.

From this bright vision of the poetic past—a glimpse, some may call it, into the land of dreams—-we must relapse into a sober contemplation of the prosaic present— a subject quite as difficult to understand. The former efforts at classification made by Sundevall have already several times been mentioned, and a return to their con- sideration was promised. In 1872 and 1873 he brought out at Stockholm a Methodi Naturalis Avium Disponend-arum Tentamen, two portions of which (those relating to the Diurnal Birds-of-Prey and the '"Cichlomorphex," or forms related to the Thrushes) he found himself under the necessity of revising and modifying in the course of 1874, in as many communications to the Swedish Academy of Sciences (K. V.-Ak. Férhandlingar, 1874, No. 2, pp. 21-30; No. 3, pp. 27-30). This Zentamen, containing the

ov

latest complete method of classifying Birds in general, has naturally received much attention, the more so perhaps, since, with its appendices, it was nearly the last labour of its respected author, whose industrious life came to an end in the course of the following year. From what has before been said of his works it may have been gathered that, while professedly basing his systematic arrangement of the groups of Birds on their external features, he had hitherto striven to make his schemes harmonize if possible with the dictates of internal structure as evinced by the science of anatomy, though he uniformly and persistently protested against the inside being better than the outside. In thus acting he proved himself a true follower of his great countryman Linneus ; but, without disparagement of his efforts in this respect, it must be said that when internal and exter- nal characters appeared to be in conflict he gave, perhaps with unconscious bias, a preference to the latter, for he belonged to a school of zoologists whose natural instinct was to believe that such a conflict always existed. Hence his efforts, praiseworthy as they were from several points of view, and

particularly so in regard to some details, failed to satisfy the philosophic taxonomer when generalizations and deeper principles were concerned, and in his practice in respect of certain technicalities of classification he was, in the eyes of the orthodox, a transgressor. Thus instead of contenting himself with terms that had met with pretty general approval, such as Class, Subclass, Order, Sub- order, Family, Subfamily, and so on, he introduced into his final scheme other designations, ‘‘Agmen,” ‘‘ Cohors,” “Phalanx,” and the like, which to the ordinary student of Ornithology convey an indefinite meaning, if any meaning at all. He also carried to a very extreme limit his views of nomenclature, which were certainly not in accordance with those held by most zoologists, though this is a matter so trifling as to need no details in illustration. It is by no means easy to set forth briefly, and at the same time intelligibly, to any but experts, the final scheme of Sunde-vall, owing to the number of new names introduced by hin, nevertheless the attempt must be made; but it must be understood that in the following paradigm, in which his later modifications are incorporated, only the most remark- able or best-known forms are cited as examples of his several groups, for to give the whole of them would, if any explanations were added, occupy far more space than the occasion seems to justify, and without such explanations the list would be of use only to experts, who would rather consult the original work.

First, Sundevall would still make two grand divisions (“Agmina ”) of Birds, even as had been done nearly forty years before; but, having found that the names, Altrices and Precoces, he had formerly used were not always applicable, or the groups thereby indicated naturally disposed, he at first distinguished them as Psilopedes and Ptilopedes. Then, seeing that the great similarity of these two words would produce confusion both in speaking and writing, he changed them (p. 158) into the equivalent Gymnopades and Dasypexdes, according as the young were hatched naked or clothed. The Gymnopedes are divided into two “ Orders ”—Oscines and Volucres—the former intended to be identical with the group of the same name established by older authors, and, in accordance with the observations of Keyserling and Blasius already mentioned, divided into two “Series ”—Laminiplantares, having the hinder part of the “tarsus” covered with two horny plates, and Scutell:- plantares, in which the same part is scutellated. ‘These Laminiplantares-are composed of six Cohorts as follows :—

Cohors 1. Cichlomorphe. S Phalanx 1. Ocreatz.—7 Families: the Nightingales standing first, and therefore at the head of all Birds, with the Redbreast, Redstart, and the American Blue-bird; after them the Chats,

Thrushes proper, Dippers, Water-Chats (Heniewrus), Bush-Chats, and (under the name of Huehline) the singular group commonly known as Pittas or Water-Thrushes.

Phalanx 2. Novempennate.—6 Families: Pipits, Wagtails, American Fly-eatehing Warblers, and Australian Diamond-birds (Pardalotis).

Phalanx 3. Sylviiformes.—17 Familics: divided geographi- cally (?) into two groups—the Old-World forms, and those of the New. The first is further broken up into three sections—(a) 4 Families with modcrately long wings and a slender bill, containing what may be called perhaps the normal Warblers, as the Willow- Wrens, W hitethroats, Sedge-birds, and others; (6) 5 Families, with short wings and a slender bill, what are often called by Indian and African writers Bush-babblers (Bradypterus, Crateropus, and others); (c) 3 Families, with a somewhat stout or blunt bill, the Thick-heads of some writers (Pachyeephalus) and Titmouse Family. The second or American group comprehends 5 Families, Vireos, Cat-birds, Wrens (not, by the way, peculiar to America), and some other forms for which it is impossible to find names that will pass as English.

Phalanx 4. Brachyptere.—3 Families: the short-winged Wren- Warblers, with long tails, of the Australian (Malwrus), Indian, and Ethiopian Regions.

Phalanx 5. Latirostres.—7 Families: the true Flycatchers (Museteapa), and several others of fly-catching habits.

Phalanx 6. Braehypodes.—8 Families: Waxwings, Orioles, Swallow-Flycatchers (Artamus), Caterpillar-catehers (Campophaga), and Drongos (Dicrizws).

Phalanx 7. Dentirostres or Laniiformes.—3 Families : Shrikes, Puff-backed Shrikes.

Phalanx 8. Subcorviformes,—1 Family : Bower-birds and some others.

Cohors 2. Controstres.

Phalanx 1. Decempennatz#.—3 Families : Weaver-birds(Ploceus), Whydah-birds (Vidua), and Hedge-Sparrows (Accentor).

Phalanx 2. Amplipalatales.—2 Families: Grosbeaks, true Finches.

Phalanx 3. Aretipalatales.—6 Familics: Crossbills, Buntings, Rice-birds, and many hard-billed forms which are usually placed among the Tanagers.

Phalanx 4. Stmplietrostres.—4 Families : Tanagers,

Cohors 3. Coliomorphe.

Phalanx 1. Novempennatw.—3 Families: Grackles or American Starlings.

Phalanx 2. Humilinares.—4 Families: peckers, Choughs.

Phalanx 3. Altinares.—3 Families: Nutcrackers, Jays, Crows.

Phalanx 4. Idiodaetylw.—5 Families : Crow-Shrikes, Birds-of- Paradise.

Cohors 4. Certhiomorphe.—38 Families: hatches.

Cohors 5. Cinnyrimorphe.—5 Families: suckers.

Cohors 6. Chelidonomorphe.—1 Family: Swallows.

The Scutelliplantares include a much smaller number of forms, and, with the exception of the first “Cohort ” and a few groups of the fourth and fifth, all are peculiar to

_America,

Cohors 1. Holaspides.—2 Families : Larks, Hoopoes,

Cohors 2. Endaspidew.—3 Families—all Neotropical: Oven-birds (Furnarius), Synallaxis, and the Piculules (Dendrocolaptes).

Cohors 3. Exaspidex.—4 Families: the first two separated as Lysodaetylx, including the King-birds or Tyrants, of which twelve groups are made ; the remaining two as Syndactyle, composed of the Todies and Manakins.

Cohors 4. Pyenaspidewx.—3 Families: Cocks-of-the-Rock (Rupi- cola), to which the Indian genus Calyptomena, Hurylemus, and some others are supposed to be allied, the Chatterers aud Fruit- Crows (Chasmorhynehus, Cephalopterus, and others), as well as Lityra and Lipaugus.

Cohors 5. Taxaspidew.—b5 Families : the very singular Madagas- car form Philepitta; the Bush-Shrikes (Thamnophilus), Ant-Thrushes (Formiearius), and Tapaculos (Picroptochus) of the Neotropical Region; and the Australian Lyre-bird.

We then arrive at the Second Order Volucres, which is divided into two “Series.” Of these the first is made to contain, under the name Zygodactyli,

Cohors 1. Psittae?.—6 Familics : Parrots ‘

Cohors 2. Pici.—6 Families: Woodpeckers, Pieulets (Piewmnus), and Wrynecks;

Cohors 3. Coceyges.—12 Families: divided into two groups— (1) Altinares, containing the Honey-Guides, Barbets, Toueans, Jaca- mars, Puff-birds, and the Madagascar genus Leptosomus ; and (2) Humilinares, comprising all the forms commonly known as Cucu- lide, broken up, however, into three sections ;

True Starlings, Ox-

Tree-creepers, Nut-

Sun-birds, Honey-

while to the second “ Series” are referred, as Anisodactyli,

Cohors 4. Cenomorphe.—4 Families: Plantain-eaters or Toura- cous, Mouse-birds, Rollers, and the peculiar Madagascar forms Atelornis and Brachypteracias ;

cs 5. Ampligulares.—4 Families : Trogons, Goatsuekcrs, and Swifts ;

Cohors 6. Longilingwes or Mellisuge.—12 Families: Humming- birds, arranged in three ‘‘ Series ;”

Cohors 7. Syndaetyle.—4 Families: Bee-eaters, Motmots, King- fishers, and Hornbills ;

Cohors 8. Peristeroidex. —3 Families: Didunculus, with the Dodo, Pigeons, and the Crowned Pigeons (Gowra) separated from the last.

The Dasypexdes of Sundevall are separated into six “Orders”; but these will occupy us but a short while. The first of them, Acciyrtres, comprehending all the Birds- of-Prey, were separated into 4 “Cohorts” in his original work, but these were reduced in his appendix to two— Nyctharpages or Owls with 4 Families divided into 2 series, and Hemeroharpages containing all the rest, and compris- ing 10 Families (the last of which is the Seriema, Dicholophus) divided into 2 groups as Rapaces and Saprophagi—the latter including the Vultures. Next stands the Order Galline with 4 “Cohorts” :— (1) Tetraono- morphx, comprising 2 Families, the Sand-Grouse (Pterocles) and the Grouse proper, among which the Central-American Oreophasis finds itself; (2) Phasianomorphe, with 4 Families, Pheasants, Peacocks, Turkeys, Guinea Fowls, Partridges, Quails, and Hemipodes (Turnix) ; (3) Macro- nyches, the Megapodes, with 2 Families ; (4) the Duodecim- pennatz, the Curassows and Guans, also with 2 Families ; (5) the Struthioniformes, composed of the Tinamous; and (6) the Subgrallatores with 2 Families, one consisting of the curious South-American genera T’hinocorusand Attagis and the other of the Sheathbill (Chionis). The Fifth Order (the third of the Dasypedes) is formed by the Grallatores, divided into 2 “series”—(1) Altenares, consisting of 2 “Cohorts,” /Zerodz with 1 Family, the Herons, and Pelargi with 4 Families, Spoonbills, Ibises, Storks, and the Umbre (Scopus), with Baleniceps ; (2) Humilinares, also consisting of 2

“Cohorts,” Limicole with 2 Families, Sandpipers and Snipes, Stilts and Avocets, and Cursores with 8 Families, including Plovers, Bustards, Cranes, Rails, and all the other “Waders.” The Sixth Order, Natatores, consists of all the Birds that habitually swim and a few that do not, containing 6 Cohorts : — Longipennes and Pygopodes with 3 Families each ; J’ote- palmate with 1 Family; Tubinares with 3 Families; Impennes with 1 Family, Penguins; and Lamellirostres with 2 Families, Flamingoes and Ducks. The Seventh Order, Proceres, is divided into 2 Cohorts—Veri with 2 Families, Ostriches and Emeus ; and Subnobiles, consisting of the genus Apteryx, The Eighth Order is formed by the Sauwrure.

Such then is Sundevall’s perfected system, which has in various quarters been so much praised, and has been partially recognized by so many succeeding writers, that it would have been impossible to pass it over here, though the present writer is confident that the best-informed ornithologists will agree with him in thinking that the com- pilation of the above abstract has been but so much waste of time, and its insertion here but so much waste of space. Without, however, some such abstract its shortcomings could not be made apparent, and it will be seen to what little purpose so many able men have laboured if arrangement and grouping so manifestly artificial—the latter often of forms possessing no real affinity—can pass as a natural method. We should be too sanguine to hope that it may be the last of its kind, yet any one accustomed to look deeper than the surface must see its numerous defects, and almost every one, whether so accustomed or not, ought by its means to be brought to the conclusion that, when a man of Sundevall’s knowledge and experience

“orbes,

OmHNITAOLOGY

could not, by trusting only to external characters, do better than this, the most convincing proof is afforded of the inability of external characters alone to produce anything gave ataxy. The principal merits it possesses are con- fined to the minor arrangement of some of the Oscines ; but even here many of the alliances, such, for instance, as that of Pitta with the true Thrushes, are indefensible on any rational grounds, and some, as that of Accentor with the Weaver-birds and Whydah-birds, verge upon the

ridiculous, while on the other hand the interpolation of the American Fly-catching Warblers, Mniotdtidx, between the normal Warblers of the Old World and the Thrushes is as bad—especially when the genus Mniotdta is placed, not- withstanding its different wing-formula, with the Tree-ereepers, Certhiidx. The whole work unfortunately betrays throughout an utter want of the sense of proportion. In many of the large groups the effect of very slight differ- ences is to keep the forms exhibiting them widely apart, while in most of the smaller groups differences of far greater kind are overlooked, so that the forms which present them are linked together in more or less close union. Thus, regarding only external characters, great as is the structural distinction between the CGannets, Cormorants, Frigate-birds, and Pelicans, it is not held to remove them from the limits of a single Family; and yet the Thrushes and the Chats, whose distinctions are barely sensible, are placed in separate Families, as are also the Chats and the Nightingales, wherein no structural distinc- tions at all can be traced. Again, even in one and the same group the equalization of characters indicative of Families is wholly neglected. Thus among the Pigeons the genera Didus and Didunculus, which differ, so far as we know it, in every external character of their structure, are placed in one Family, and yet on the slightest pre- text the genus Goura, which in all respects so intimately resembles ordinary Pigeons, is set apart as the represen- tative of a distinct Family. The only use of dwelling upon these imperfections here is the hope that thereby students of Ornithology may be induced to abandon the belief in the efficacy of external characters as a sole means of classification, and, by seeing how unmanageable they become unless checked by internal characters, be per- suaded of the futility of any attempt to form an arrange-ment without that solid foundation which can only be obtained by a knowledge of anatomy. Where Sundevall failed no one else is likely to succeed; for he was a man gifted with intelligence of a rare order, a man of cultiva- tion and learning, one who had devoted his whole life to science, who had travelled much, studied much and reflected much, a man whose acquaintance with the literature of his subject probably exceeded that of any of his contemporaries, and a man whose linguistic attainments rendered him the envy of his many friends, Yet what should have been the crowning work of his long life is one that all who respected him, and that comprehends all who knew him, must regret.

Of the very opposite kind was the work of the two men next to be mentioned—GarropD and Forses—both cut short in a career of promise! that among students of Ornithology has rarely been equalled and perhaps never surpassed. The present writer finds it difficult to treat of the labours of two pupils and friends from whose assistance he had originally hoped to profit in the preparation of this very article, the more so that, while fully recognizing the brilliant nature of some of their researches, he is compelled very frequently to dissent from the conclusions at which

1 Alfred Henry Garrod, Prosector to the Zoological Society of London, died of consumption in 1879, aged thirty-three. His successor In that office, William Alexander Forbes, fell a victim to the deadly climate of the Niger in 1888, and in his twenty-eighth year.

they arrived, deeming them to have often been of a kind that, had their authors survived to a maturer age, they would have greatly modified. Still he well knows that learners are mostly wiser than their teachers ; and, making due allowance for the haste with which, from the exigencies of the post they successively held, their investigations had usually to be published, he believes that much of the highest value underlies even the crudest conjectures con- tained in their several contributions to Ornithology. Putting aside the monographical papers by which each of them followed the excellent example set by their predecessor in the office they filled—Dr Muniz ? —and beginning with Garrod's,® those having a more general scope, all published in the Zoological Society's Proceedings, may be briefly con- sidered. Starting from the level reached by Prof. Huxley, the first attempt made by the younger investigator was in 1873, "On the value in Classification of a Peculiarity in the anterior margin of the Nasal Bones in certain Birds." Herein he strove to prove that Birds ought to be divided into two Subclasses—one, called " Holorhinal," in which a straight line drawn transversely across the hindmost points of the external narial apertures passes in front of the posterior ends of the nasal processes of the preemaxille, and the other, called " Schizorhinal," in which such a line passes behind those processes. If this be used as a criterion, the validity of Prof. Huxley's group Schizognathe is shaken ; but there is no need to

enlarge upon the pro- posal, for it was virtually abandoned by its author within little more than a twelvemonth. The next subject in con- nexion with Systematic Ornithology to which Garrod applied himself was an investigation of the Carotid Arteries, and here, in the same year, he made a consider- able advance upon the labours of Nitzsch, as might well be expected, for the opportunities of the latter were very limited, and he was only able, as we have seen (page 22), to adduce four types of structure in them, while Garrod, with the superior advantages of his situation, raised the number to six. Nevertheless he remarks that their " dis- position has not much significance among Birds, there being many Families in which, whilst the majority of the species have two, some have only one carotid." The exceptional cases cited by him are quite sufficient to prove that the condition of this artery has nearly no value from the point of view of general classification. If relied upon it would split up the Families Bucerotide and Cypselide, which no sane person would doubt to be homogeneous and natural. The femoral vessels formed another subject of investigation, and were found to exhibit as much exceptional conformation as those of the neck—for instance in Centropus phasianus, one of the Birds known as Coucals, the femoral artery accompanies the femoral vein, though it does not do so in another species of the genus, C. rufipennis, nor in any other of the Cuculide (to which Family the genus Centropus has been always assigned) examined by Garrod. Nor are the results of the very great labour which he bestowed upon the muscular con- formation of the thigh in Birds any more conclusive when they come to be impartially and carefully considered. Myology was with him always a favourite study, and he

2 Dr Murie's chief papers having a direct bearing on Systematic Murie.

Ornithology are:—in the Zoological Society's Transactions (vii. p. 465), " On the Dermal and Visceral Structures of the Kagu, Sun-Bittern, and Boatbill"; in the same Society's Proceedings —(1871, p. 647) " Addi- tional Notice concerning the Powder-Downs of Rhinochetus jubatus," (1872, p. 664) ''On the Skeleton of Todus with remarks as to its Allies," (1879, p. 552) "On the Skeleton and Lineage of Fregilupus varius" ; in The Ibis—(1872, p.262) "On the genus Colius," (1872, p. 883) " Motmots and their affinities," (1873, p. 181) " Relationships of the Upupide."

8 Garrod’s Scientific Papers have been collected and published in a memorial volume, edited by Forbes. There is therefore no need to give a list of them here. Forbes’s papers are to be edited by Prof. F. J. Bell.

may be not unreasonably supposed to have a strong feeling as to its efficacy for systematic ends. It was in favour of an arrangement based upon the muscles of the thigh, and elaborated by him in 1874, that he gave up the arrange- ment he had published barely more than a year before based upon the conformation of the nostrils. Neverthe- less it appears that even the later of the two methods did not eventually content him, and this was only to be expected, though he is said by Forbes (Zbis, 1881, p. 28) to have remained “satisfied to the last as to the natural- ness of the two main groups into which he there divided birds ”»—Homalogonatz and Anomalogonate. The key to this arrangement lay in the presence or absence of the ambiens muscle, “not because of its own intrinsic import- ance, but because its presence is always associated with peculiarities in other parts never found in any Anomalo- gonatous bird.” Garrod thought that so great was the improbability of the same combination of three or four different characters (such as an accessory femoro-caudal muscle, a tufted oil-gland, and czeca) arising independently in different Birds that similar combinations of characters could only be due to blood-relationship. The ingenuity with which he found and expressed these combinations of characters is worthy of all praise; the regret is that time was wanting for him to think out all their consequences, and that he did not take also into account other and especially osteological characters. Every osteologist must recognize that the neglect of these makes Garrod’s proposed classification as unnatural as any that had been previously drawn up, and more unnatural than many. So much is this the case that, with the knowledge we have that ere his death he had already seen the need of introducing some modifications into it, its reproduction here, even in the briefest abstract possible, would not be advisable. Two instances, however, of its failure to shew natural affinities or differences may be cited. The first Order Galliformes of his Subclass Homalogonate is made to consist of three ‘ Cohorts ”—Struthiones, Gallinacex, and Psittaci—a, somewhat astonishing alliance; but even if that be allowed to pass, we find the second “Cohort” composed of the Families

Palamedeidx, Gallinx, Railide, Otrdidx (containing two Subfamilies, the Bustards and the Flamingoes), Musophagidz, and Cuculide. Again the Subclass Anomalogonatz includes three Orders—Pici- Sormes, Passeriformes, and Cypseliformes—a preliminary to which at first sight no exception need be taken; but immediately we look into details we find the Alcedinide placed in the first Order and the Meropide in the second, together with the Passeres and a collection of Families almost every feature in the skeleton of which points toa separation. Common sense revolts at the acceptance of any scheme which involves so many manifest incongruities, With far greater pleasure we would leave these investiga- tions, and those on certain other muscles, as well as on the Disposition of the deep plantar Tendons, and dwell upon his researches into the anatomy of the Passerine Birds with the view to their systematic arrangement. Here he was on much safer ground, and it can hardly be doubted that his labours will stand the test of future experience, for, though it may be that all his views will not meet with ultimate approval, he certainly made the greatest advance since the days of Miiller, to the English translation of whose classical work he added (as already mentioned) an excellent appendix, besides having already contributed to the Zoological Proceedings between 1876 and 1878 four memoirs replete with observed facts which no one can gainsay. As his labours were continued exactly on the same lines by Forbes, who, between 1880 and 1882, published in the same journal six more memoirs on the subject, it will be convenient here to state generally, and

in a combined form, the results arrived at by these two investigators.

Instead of the divisions of Passerine Birds instituted by Miiller, Garrod and Forbes having a wider range of experi- ence consider that they have shewn that the Passeres con- sist of two primary sections, which the latter named respectively Desmodactyli and Eleutherodactyli, from the facts discovered by the former that in the Zurylemidz, or Broadbills, a small Family peculiar to some parts of the Indian Region, and consisting of some nine or ten species only, there is a strong band joining the muscles of the hind toe exactly in the same way as in many Families that are not Passerine, and hence the name Desmodactyli, while in all other Passerines the hind toe is free. This point settled, the Hleutherodactyli form two great divisions, according to the structure of their vocal organs; one of them, roughly

agreeing with the Cla- matores of some writers, is called Mesomyodi, and the other, corresponding in the main, if not absolutely, with the Oscines, Polymyodt, or true Passeres of various authors, is named Acromyodi— an Acromyodian bird being one in which the muscles of the syrinx are attached to the extremities of the bronchial semi-rings, a Mesomyodian bird being one in which the muscles of the syrinx join the semi-rings in their middle." Furthermore, each of these groups is subdivided into two: the Acromyodi into "normal" and "abnormal," of which more presently ; the Mesomyodi into Homecomeri and Heteromeri, according as the sciatic or the femoral artery of the thigh is developed —the former being the usual arrangement among Birds and the latter the exceptional. Under the head Hetero- mert come only two Families the Cotingide (Chatterers) and DPipride (MANAKINS, vol. xv. p. 455) of most orni- thologists, but these Garrod was inclined to think should not be considered distinct. The J/omawomeri form a larger group, and are at once separable, on account of the struc- ture of their vocal organs, into Z'racheophonex (practically equivalent to the Z'racheophones of Miiller) and Haploo- phone (as Garrod named them)—the last being those Passeres which were by Miiller erroneously included among his Picariz, namely, the Tyrannidx (see Kin@-BrrD, vol. xiv. p. 80) with Rupicola, the Cocks-of-the-Rock. To these are now added Families not examined by him,—but subsequently ascertained by Forbes to belong to the same group,—Duttide, Philepitiidx, and Xenicide (more pro- perly perhaps to be called Acanthisittidx), and it is remarkable that these last three Families are the only members of the JAfesomyodi which are not peculiar to the New World—nay more, if we except the Tyranndz, which in North America occur chiefly as migrants,—not peculiar to the Neotropical Region. The Z'racheo- phone are held to contain five Families—Wurnariide Oven-birds), Pteroptochide (Tapacutos, q.v.), Dendro- colaptidx (Piculules), Conopophagidx, and Formicariide (Ant-Thrushes). Returning now to the Acromyodi, which include, it has just been said, a normal and an abnormal 'section, the latter consists of birds agreeing in the main, though not absolutely, as to the structure of the syrinx with that of the former, yet differing so con- siderably in their osteology as to be most justifiably separated. At present only two types of these abnormal Acromyodi are known—Menura (the LyRx-Birp, vol. xv. p. 115) and Atrichia (the Scrus-BiRD, g.v.), both from Australia, while all the remaining Passeres, that is to say, incomparably the greater number of Birds

in general, belong to the normal section. ‘Thus the whole scheme of the Passeres,1 as worked out by Garrod and Forbes, can be

1 It is right to observe that this scheme was not a little aided by a

consideration of palatal characters, as well as from the disposition of some of the tendons of the wing-muscles.

=

Sir N @irnoLoOgG y

briefly expressed as below; and this expression, so far as it goes, is probably very near the truth, though for simplicity’s sake some of the intermediate group-names might perhaps be omitted :—

PASSHRES, ELEUTHERODACTYLI, ACROMYODI, NoRMALES, ABNORMALES, Menura, Atrichia. MESOMYODI, HoM@OMERI, Tracheophone, Furnartide, Pteroptochide, Dendrocolaptide, Conopo-phagidze, Formicartide. Haploophone, Tyrannide, Rupicola, Pittide, Philepittide, Xenicidx, HETEROMERI, Cotingidx, Pipridx. DESMODACTYLI, Eurylemide.

It will be seen that noattempt is here made to separate the Normal Acromyodians into Families. Already, in The Ibis for 1874 (pp. 406-416), Mr Watxace had published a plan, which, with two slight modifications that were mani- festly improvements, he employed two years later in his great work on Zhe Geographical Distribution of Animals, and this included a method of arranging the Families of this division. Being based, however, wholly on alar char- acters, it has of course a great similarity to the schemes of Dr Cabanis and of Sundevall, and, though simpler than either of those, there is no need here to enter much into its details. The Birds which would fall under the category of Garrod’s Acromyodi normales are grouped in three series :—A. ‘‘Typical or Turdoid Passeres,” having a wing with ten primaries, the first of which is always more or less markedly reduced in size, and to this 21 Families are allotted; B. “Tanagroid Passeres,” having a wing with nine primaries, the first of which is fully developed and usually very long, and containing 10 Families; and C. “ Sturnoid Pusseres,” having

a wing with ten primaries, the first of which is “rudimentary,” with only 4 Families. The remaining Families, 10 in number, which are not nor- mally acromyodian are grouped as Series D. and called “Formicaroid Passeres.”

In The [bis for 1880 (pp. 8340-350, 399-411) Mr SctarEer made a laudable attempt at a general arrangement of Birds,! trying to harmonize the views of ornithotomists with those taken by the ornithologists who only study the exterior ; but, as he explained, his scheme is really that of Prof. Huxley reversed, with some slight modifications mostly consequent on the recent researches of Prof. Parker and of Garrod, and (he might have added) a few details derived from his own extensive knowledge of the Class. Adopting the two Subclasses Carinate and Ratitx, he recognized 3 “ Orders” as forming the latter and 23 the former—a number far exceeding any that had of late years met with the approval of ornithologists. It is certainly difficult in the present state of our knowledge to get on with much fewer groups; whether we call them “ Orders ” or not is immaterial. First of them comes the Passeres, of which Mr Sclater would make four Suborders:—(1) the Acromyodi normales of Garrod under the older name of Oscines, to the further subdivision of which we must immediately return; (2) under Prof. Huxley’s term Oligomyodz, all the Haploophonex, Ieteromeri, and Desmo- dactyli of Garrod, comprehending 8 Families—Oxyrhamph- ide,? Tyrannide, Pipride, Cotingide, Phytotomide,? Pittide, Philepittide, and Eurylemide ;3 (3) Tracheophone,

; 1 An abstract of this was read to the British Association at Swansea in the same year, and may be found in its Report (pp. 606-609).

Not recognized by Garrod.

3 To these Mr Sclater would now doubtless add Forbes’s Xenicide.

containing the same groups asin the older scheme, but here combined into 3 Families only—Dendrocolaptide, Formi- carudex, and Pteroptochide ; and (4) the Acromyodi abnor- males of Garrod, now elevated to the rank of a Suborder and called Pseudoscines.t With regard to the Acromyodi normales or Oscines, Mr Sclater takes what seems to be quite the most reasonable

view, when he states that they “are all very closely related to one another, and, in reality, form little more than one group, equivalent to other so-called families of birds,” going on to remark that as there are some 4700 known species of them “it is absolutely necessary to subdivide them,” and finally proceeding to do this nearly on the method of Sundevall’s Zentamen (see above pp. 37, 38), merely changing the names and position of the groups in accordance with a plan of his own set forth in the Nomenclator Avium Neotropicalium, which he and Mr Salvin printed in 1873, making, as did Sundevall, two divisions (according as the hind part of the “tarsus” is plated or scaled), A. Laminiplantares and B. Scutiplantares—but confining the latter to the Alaudide alone, since the other Families forming Sundevall’s Scutelliplantares are not Oscinian, nor all even Passerine. The following table shews the coniparative result of the two modes as regards the Laminiplantares, and, since the composition of the Swedish author’s groups was explained at some length, may be found convenient by the reader :—

Mr Sclater, 1880. Sundevall, 1872-78.

1. Dentirostres,5— practically equal to 1. Cichlomorphe.

2. Latirostres,°® 3 6. Chelidonomorphe. 8. Curvirostres, ° 4, Certhiomorphe.® 4, Tenuirostres ne 5. Cinnyrimorphe.

5. Conirostres, we 2. Conirostres,

6. Cultrirostres, af 3. Coliomorphee.

These six groups Mr Sclater thinks may be separated without much difficulty, though on that point the proceed- ings of some later writers (a notable instance of which he

himself cites) shew that doubt may still be entertained ;

but he rightly remarks that, “when we come to attempt to subdivide them, there is room for endless varieties of opinion as to the nearest allies of many of the forms,” and into further details he does not go. It will be perceived that, like so many of his predeccssors, he accords the highest rank to the

Dentzrostres, which, as has before been hinted, seems to be a mistaken view that must be con- sidered in the sequel.

Leaving the Passeres, the next ‘ Order” is Picarix, of which Mr Sclater proposes to make six Suborders :—(1) Pici, the Woodpeckers, with 2 Families ; (2) Cypseli, with 3 Families,” practically equal to the Macrochires of Nitzsch ; (3) Anisodactyle, with 12 Families—Colude (MovsE-BIRD, vol. xvii. p. 6), KINGFISHER, vol. xiv. p. 81), Bucerotidx (HoRNBILL, vol. xii. p. 169), Upupide (Hoopos, vol. xii. p. 154), Irrisoride, Meropide, Momotide (Mormor, vol. xvii. p. 3), Todidx (Topy, 9.v.), Coraciide (RoLLER, ¢.v.), Leptosomide, Podargide, and Steatornithide (Guacuaro, vol. xi. p. 227); (4) Heterodactyle, consist- ing only of the Trocons (q.v.); (5) Zygodactyle with 5 Families, Galbulide (JACAMAR, Vol. xiii. p. 531), Bucconide (Purr-Birb, ¢.v.), Rhamphastide (Toucan, q.v.), Capitonde, and Indicatoride (HonEy-cutbE, vol. xii. p. 139) ; and (6) Coccyges, composed of the two Families Cuculide and Musophagidx. That all these may be most conveniently

4 A term unhappily of hybrid origin, and therefore one to which purists may take exception.

5 These are not equivalent to Sundevall’s groups of the same names.

6 Mr Sclater (p. 848) inadvertently states that no species of Sundevall’s Certhiomorphe is found in the New World, having omitted to notice that in the Tentamen (pp. 46, 47) the genera Mniotilta (peculiar to America) as well as Certhia and Sitta are therein placed.

7 Or 2 only, the position of the Caprimulgide being left un- decided, but in 1883 (see next note) put here.

associated under the name Picariz seems likely enough, and the first two “ Suborders” are probably natural groups, though possibly groups of different value. In regard to the rest comment is for the present deferred. The

Lsittaci, Striges, and Accipitres, containing respectively the Parrots (q.v.), OWLS (q.v.), and diurnal Birds-of-Prey, form the next three " Orders "— the last being held to include 3 Families, Lalcondx, Cathartide, and Serpentarvide, which is perhaps the best that can be done with them—the difficult question as to the position of Cariama (SERIEMA, q.v.) being decided against the admission of that form to the last Family, notwithstanding its remarkable resemblance to Serpentarius (SECRETARY-BIRD, g.v.). We have then the Steganopodes to make the Sixth " Order," consisting of the

5 Families usually grouped together as by Brandt (supra,.

25) and others, aud these are followed naturally enough by the Herons (vol. xi. p. 760) under the name of Herodiones, to which the 3 Families Ardedx, Ciconiide (Stork, q.v.), and Plataleidx (SPOONBILL, q.v.) are referred ; but the FLaminGoss (vol. ix. p. 286), under Prof. Huxley's title Odontoglosse, form a distinct " Order." The Ninth "Order" is now erected for the Palamedex (SCREAMER, q.v.), which precede the Anseres—a group that, disen- cumbered from both the last two, is eminently natural, and easily dealt with. A great break then occurs, and the new series is opened by the Eleventh " Order," Columba, with 3 Families, Carpophagide, Columbide, and Gouridex, "or perhaps a fourth," Diduneulidx,1—the Dovos (vol. vii. p. 321) being "held to belong to quite a separate section of the order." The Twelfth "Order" is formed by the Pterocletes, the Sand-Grouse ; and then we have the very natural group Galline ranking as the Thirteenth. The next two are the Opisthocomi and Hemipodii for the Hoactzin (vol. xii. p. 28) and the Turnicide (often known as Button-Quails) respectively, to which follow as Sixteenth and Seventeenth the Fulicariz and Alectorides— the former consisting of the Families Rallide (Ratt, ¢.v.) and Heliornithide, and the latter of what seems to be a very lieterogeneous compound of 6 Families —Aramidz, Eurypygide (SUN Bitter, g.v.), Gruidx (CRANE, vol. vi. p. 546), Psophiidx (TRUMPETER, q.v.), Cariamide (SERIEMA, q.v.), and Otidide? (BUsTARD, vol. iv. p. 578). It is con- fessedly very puzzling to know how these varied types, or some of them at least, should be classed; but the need for the establishment of this group, and especially the insertion in it of certain forms, is not explained by the author. Then we have "Orders" Eighteen and Nineteen, the Limicole, with 6 Families, and Gaviz,

consisting only of Laride (GULL, vol. xi. p. 274), which taken in their simplest condition do not present much difficulty. The last are followed by Tubinares, the PETRELS (q.v.), and these by Pygopodes, to which only 2 Families Colymbidx (Diver, vol. vii. p. 292) and Alcidzx are allowed—the Gruszs (vol. xi. p. 79) being included in the former. The Jmpennes or PENGUINS (¢.2.) form the Twenty-second, and Tinamous (9.v.) as Crypturi complete the Carinate Subclass. For the Ratite only three “Orders” are allotted—Apteryges, Casuarti, and Struthiones.

As a whole it is impossible not to speak well of the scheme thus sketched out; nevertheless it does seem in some parts to be open to amendment, though the task of attempting to suggest any modifications of it by way of improvement is one that the present writer approaches with reluctance and the utmost diffidence. Yet the task, it appears, must be undertaken. From the preceding

1 In the eighth edition of the List of Vertebrated Animals in the Zoological Gardens, which, being published in 1888, may be taken as expressing Mr Sclater’s latest views, the first two Families only are recognized, the last two being placed under Columbida@.

2 Wrongly spelt Otida.

pages, recounting the efforts of many system-makers— good, bad, and indifferent—it will have been seen what a very great number and variety of characters need to be had in remembrance while planning any scheme that will at all adequately represent the results of the knowledge hitherto attained, and the best lesson to be learnt from

-them is that our present knowledge goes but a very little

way in comparison with what we, or our successors, may hope to reach in years to come. Still we may feel pretty confident that we are on the right track, and, moreover, that here and there we can plant our feet on firm ground, however uncertain, not to say treacherous, may be the spaces that intervene. Now that geographical exploration has left so small a portion of the earth’s surface unvisited, we cannot reasonably look for the encountering of new forms of ornithic life that, by revealing hitherto

unknown stepping stones, will quicken our course or effectively point out our path. Indeed, as a matter of fact, the two most important and singular types of existing Birds—Balwxniceps and Mhinochetus—that in later years have rewarded the exertions of travelling naturalists, have proved rather sources of perplexity than founts of inspiration. Should fortune favour ornithologists in the discovery of fossil remains, they will unquestionably form the surest guide to our faltering steps ; but experience forbids us to expect much aid from this quarter, however warmly we may wish for it, and the pleasure of any discovery of the kind would be enhanced equally by its rarity as by its intrinsic worth. However, it is now a well-accepted maxim in zoology that the mature forms of the past are repeated in the immature forms of the present, and that, where Paleontology fails to instruct us, Embryology may be trusted to no small extent to supply the deficiency. Unhappily the embryology of Birds has been as yet very insufficiently studied. We have indeed embryological memoirs of a value that can scarcely be rated too highly, but almost all are of a monographic character. They are only oases in a desert of ignorance, and a really connected and continuous series of investiga- tions, such as the many morphological laboratories, now established in various countries, would easily render possible, has yet to be instituted. No methodical attempt at this kind of work seems to have been made for nearly half a century, and, with the advantage of modern appliances, no one can justifiably doubt the success of a renewal of such an attempt any more than he can possibly foresee the precise nature of the revelations that would come of it.

The various schemes for classifying Birds set forth by the authors of general text-books of Zoology do not call for any particular review here, as almost without exception they are so drawn up as to be rather of the nature of a compromise than of a harmony. The best and most notable is perhaps that by Prof. Carus in 1868 (Handbuch der Zoologie, i. pp. 191-368) ; but it is of course now antiquated. The worst scheme is one of the most recent, that by Prof. Cuaus in 1882 (Grundziige der Zoologie, ii. pp. 818-388). Of most other similar text-books that have come under the writer’s notice, especially those issued in the United Kingdom, the less said the better. It is unfortunate that neither Prof. Gegenbaur nor the late Prof. F. M. Balfour should have turned their attention to this matter; but an improvement may

be expected from Dr Gadow, who is engaged in completing the ornithological portion of Bronn's Thicrreich, so long left unfinished.

Birds are animals so similar to Reptiles in all the most Relatio

essential features of their organization that they may be said to be merely an extremely modified and aberrant Reptilian type. Huxley twenty years ago,? and there are now but few zoologists to dissent from his statement, which by another man of science has been expressed in a phrase even more

3 Lectures on the Elements of Comparative Anatomy, p. 69; see also Carus, Handbuch der Zoologie, i, p. 192.

of Birds]

ORNITEBHOLOGY

pithy—" Birds are only glorified Reptiles." It is not intended here to enter upon their points of resemblance and differences. These may be found summarized with more or less accuracy in any text-book of zoology. We

43° might well be that of a modern Crow. The fossil remains of many other Birds, for example Prof. SEELEY's Znaliornis (Quart. Journ. Geol. Society, 1876, pp. 496-512), Sir R. OwEN's Odontopteryx (Birps, vol. ili. p. 729), Gastornis,

shall content ourselves by remarking that by the naturalist just named Birds and Reptiles have been brigaded together under the name of Sauropsida as forming one of the three primary divisions of the Vertebrata—the other two being

Prof. Copr's Diatryma (Proc. Acad. N. Sc. Philadelphia, April 1876), and some more, are too fragmentary to serve the purposes of the systematist ; but the grand discoveries of Prof. Marsh, spoken of above, afford plentiful hints as

Tchthyopsida and Mammalia. Yet Birds have a right to be considered a Class, and as a Class they have become so wholly differentiated from every

other group of the Animal Kingdom that, among recent and even the few fossil forms known to us, there is not one about the assignation of which any doubt ought now to exist, though it is right to

to the taxonomy of the Class, and their bearing deserves

the closest consideration. First of all we find that, while Antiquity Birds still possess the teeth they had inherited from their of the Reptilian ancestors, two remarkable and very distinct types Ratite

of the Class had already made their appearance, and we Garinate must note that these two types are those which persist at types,

state that some naturalists have even lately refused a place among Aves to the singular Archexopteryx, of which the remains of two individuals—most probably belonging to as many distinct forms!—-have been discovered in the quarries of Solenhofen in Bavaria. Yet one of them has been referred, without much hesitation, by Prof. Vogt to the Class Reptilia on grounds which seem to be mistaken, since it was evidently in great part if not entirely clothed with feathers.2 The peculiar structure of Archxopteryx has already been briefly mentioned and partly figured in this work (Birps, vol. iii. p. 728-9), and, while the present writer cannot doubt that its Bird-like characters predomin- ate over those which are obviously Reptilian, he will not venture to declare more concerning its relations to other Birds, and accordingly thinks it advisable to leave the genus as the sole representative as yet known of the Sub- class Saurure,? established for its reception by Prof. Hackel, trusting that time may shew whether this pro- visional arrangement will be substantiated. The great use of the discovery of Archxopteryx to naturalists in general is well known to have been the convincing testimony it afforded as to what is well called “the imperfection of the Geological Record.” To ornithologists in particular its chief attraction is the evidence it furnishes in proof of the evolution of Birds from Reptiles; though, as to the group of the latter from which the former may have sprung, it tells us little that is not negative. It throws, for instance, the Pterodactyls—so often imagined to be nearly related to Birds, if not to be their direct ancestors—completely out of the line of descent. Next to this its principal advan- tage is to reveal the existence at so early an epoch of Birds with some portions of their structure as highly organized as the highest of

the present day, a fact witnessed by its foot, which, so far as can be judged by its petrified relics,

1 See Prof. Seeley's remarks on the differences between the two specimens, in the Geological Magazine for October 1881.

2 Prof. Vogt lays much stress on the absence of feathers from certain parts of the body of the second example of Archwopteryx now, thanks to Dr Werner Siemens, in the museum of Berlin. But Prof. Vogt himself shews that the parts of the body devoid of feathers are also devoid of skin. Now it is well known that amongst most existing Birds the ordinary "contour-feathers" have their origin no deeper than the skin, and thus if that decayed and were washed away the feathers growing upon it would equally be lost. This has evidently happened (to judge from photographs) to the Berlin specimen just as to that which is in London. In each case, as Sir R. Owen most rightly suggested of the latter, the remains exactly call to mind the very familiar relics of Birds found on a seashore, exposed perhaps for weeks or even months to the wash of the tides so as to lose all but the deeply-seated feathers, and finally to be embedded in the soft soil. Prof. Vogt's paper is in the Revue Scientifique, ser. 2, ix. p. 241, and an English translation of it in The Ibis for 1880, p. 434.

3 Prof. Hickel seems first to have spelt this word Sawriure, in which form it appears in his Allgemeine Entwickelungeschichte der Organismen, forming the second volume of his Generelle Morphologie (pp. xi, and exxxix.), published at Berlin in 1866, though on plate vil. of the same volume it appears as Sawriwri. Whether the masculine or feminine termination be preferred matters little, though the latter 18 Come into general use, but the interpolation of the 7 in the middle of the word appears to be against all the laws of orthography.

the present day, and even now divide the Class into Ratite and Carinatez, the groups whose essentially distinct characters were recognized by Merrem. Furthermore, while the Ratite type ({esperornis) presents the kind of teeth, arrayed in grooves, which indicate (in Reptiles at least) a low morphological rank, the Carinate type (Ich- thyornis) is furnished with teeth set in sockets, and shew- ing a higher development. On the other hand this early Carinate type has vertebrae whose comparatively simple, biconcave

form is equally evidence of a rank unquestion- ably low; but the saddle-shaped vertebrae of the con- temporary Ratite type as surely testify to a more exalted position. Reference has been already made to this com- plicated if not contradictory state of things, the true explanation of which seems to be out of reach at present. It has been for some time a question whether the Ratite isa degraded type descended from the Carinate, or the Carinate a superior development of the Ratite type. Several eminent zoologists have declared themselves in favour of the former probability, and at first sight most people would be inclined to decide with them ; for, on this hypothesis, the easiest answer to the question would be found. But the easiest answer is not always the true one ; and to the present writer it seems that before this question be answered, a reply should be given to another—- Was the first animal which any one could properly call a “ Bird,” as distinguished from a “Reptile,” possessed of a keeled sternum or not? Now Birds would seem to have been differentiated from Reptiles while the latter had biconcave vertebrae, and teeth whose mode of attachment to the jaw was still variable. There is no reason to think that at that period any Reptile (with the exception of Pterodactyls, which, as has already been said, are certainly not in the line of Birds’ ancestors) had a keeled sternum. Hence it seems almost impossible that the first Bird should have possessed one ; that is to say, it must have been practically of the Ratite type. Prof. Marsh has shewn that there is good reason for believing that the power of flight was gradually acquired by Birds, and with that power would be associated the development of a keel to the sternum, on which the volant faculty so much depends, and with which it is so intimately correlated that in certain forms which have to a greater or less extent given up the use of their fore-limbs the keel though present has become pro- portionally aborted. Thus the Carinate type would, from all we can see at present, appear to have been evolved from the Ratite. This view receives further support from a, consideration of the results of such embryological research as has already been made—the unquestionable ossification of the Ratite sternum from a smaller number of paired centres than the Carinate sternum, in which (with the doubtful exception of the Anatidx) an additional, unpaired centre makes its appearance. Again the geographical dis- tribution of existing, or comparatively recent, Ratite forms points to the same conclusion. That these forms—Moa, Kiwi, Emeu and Cassowary, Rhea, and finally Ostrich —

must have had a common ancestor nearer to them than is the ancestor of any Carinate form seems to need no proof. If we add to these the Zpyornis of Madagascar, the fossil fatitx of the Siwalik rocks,! and the as yet but partially recognized Struthiolithus of Southern Russia,? to say no- thing of Gastornis, the evidence is stronger still. Scattered as these Birds have been or are throughout the world, it seems justifiable to consider them the survivals of a very ancient type, which has hardly undergone any essential modification since the appearance of Bird-life upon the earth—even though one at least of them has become very highly specialized.

No doubt the difficulty presented by the biconcave vertebrae of the earliest known representative of the Carinate type is a considerable obstacle to the view just taken. But in the American Journal of Science (April 1879), and again in his great work (pp. 180, 181), Prof. Marsu has shewn that in the third cervical vertebra of Ichthyornis “we catch nature in the act as it were” of modifying one form of vertebra into another, for this single vertebra in Ichthyornis is in vertical section “ moderately convex, while transversely it is strongly concave, thus presenting a near approach to the saddle-like articulation ”; and he proceeds to point out that this specialized feature occurs at the first bend of the neck, and, greatly facilitating motion in a vertical plane, is ‘“ mainly due originally to its predominance.” The form of the vertebrae would accordingly seem to be as much correlated with the mobility of the neck as is the form of the sternum with the faculty of flight. If therefore the development of the saddle shape be an indication of development, as well may be the outgrowth of a keel. However, the solution of this perplexing problem, if a solution be ever found, must remain for future paleontological or embryological dis- coverers. ‘The present writer is far from attempting to decide a question so complicated, though he does not hesitate to say, notwithstanding the weight of authority on the other side, that according to present evidence the probability is in favour of the Carinate having been evolved from a more ancient Ratite type. One thing only is certain, and that is the independent and contempo- raneous existence of each of these great divisions at the earliest period when Birds at all like

recent forms are known to have lived. The facts that each of these types was provided with teeth, and that the teeth were of a dif- ferent pattern, are of comparatively secondary importance.

It seems therefore quite justifiable to continue, after the fashion that has been set, to separate the Class Aves into three primary groups:—I. Sawrure, II. Ratitex, III. Carinate—the earliest members of the two last, as well as possibly all of the first, being provided with teeth. These three primary groups we may call “Subclasses.” Thus we shall have :—

SAURURA, Hackel. Archzopteryx the only known form. RATITA, Merrem. a. with teeth ; a’. with biconcave vertebraze—as yet unknown;

6’. with saddle-shaped vertebre-

—Hesperorms. b. without teeth—recent and existing forms.

‘ For notice of these see the papers by Mr Davies in the Geological Magazine (new series, decade ii., vol. vii. p. 18), and Mr Lydekker in the Records of the Geological Survey of India (xii. p. 52).

? Bull. Acad, Sc. St Petersburg, xviii. p. 158; Ibis, 1874, p. 4.

® Prof. Huxley has termed them “Orders”; but it is more in accordance with the practice of ornithological writers to raise them to a higher rank, and to call the secondary groups “Orders.” ‘There is a good deal to be said in behalf of either view; but, as in most cases of mere terminology, the matter is not worth wasting words over it, so Joug as we bear in mind that what here is meant by an “ Order ” of Aves is a very different thing from an “ Order ” of Reptilia.

ORNITHOLOGY

CARINATA, Merrem. a. with teeth ;

a’, with biconcave vertebrae —Ichthyornis ; b’. with saddle-shaped verte- bree—as yet unknown. b. without teeth—recent and

existing forms.

We have now to consider the recent and existing forms Orders) of toothless Hatitx. These were shewn beyond doubt by Méatile, |

Prof. Huxley to form five separate groups, which we shall here dignify by the name of Orders,* adding to them a sixth, though little is as yet known of its characteristics. Of this, which contains the great extinct Birds of Mada- gascar, he did not take cognizance, as it is here necessary to do. In the absence of any certain means of arranging all of these orders according to their affinities, it will be best to place their names alphabetically, thus :—

JEPYORNITHES. Fam. pyornithide.

Apreryces. Fam, Apterygide (Krwi, vol. xiv. p. 104).

Immanes. Fam. t. Dinornithide; Fam. ii. Pala- pterygide.®

Mercistanes. Fam. i. Casuariide ; Fam. ii. Dromaidz (Emu, vol. viii. p. 171).

Ruez. Fam. Rheide (RHEA, q.v.).

Struruiones. Fam. Struthionide (OstRicH, p. 62 infra).

Some systematists think there can be little question of the Struthiones being the most specialized and therefore probably the highest type of these Orders, and the present writer is rather inclined to agree with them. Nevertheless the formation of the bill in the Apteryges is quite unique in the whole Class, and indicates therefore an extraordinary amount of specialization. Their functionless wings, how- ever, point to their being a degraded form, though in this matter they are not much worse than the Megistanes, and are far above the Immanes—some of which at least appear to have been absolutely wingless, and were thus the only members of the Class possessing but a single pair of limbs.

Turning then to the third Subclass, the Carinate, their Orders of subdivision into Orders is attended with a considerable Carimata

amount of difficulty; and still greater difficulty is presented if we make any attempt to arrange these Orders so as in some way or other to shew their

respective relations—in other words, their genealogy. In regard to the first of these tasks, a few groups can no doubt be at once separated without fear of going wrong. For instance, the Crypturi or Tinamous, the Jmpennes or Penguins, the Striges or Owls, the Psittaci or Parrots, and the Passeres, or at least the Oscines, seem to stand as groups each quite by itself, and, since none of thein contains any hangers-on about the character of which there can any longer be room to hesitate, there can be little risk in setting them apart. Next comes a category of groups in which differentiation appears not to have been carried so far, and, though there may be as little doubt as to the association in one Order of the greater number of forms commonly assigned to each, yet there are in every case more or fewer outliers that do not well harmonize with the rest. Here we have such groups as those called Pygopodes, Ganz, Limicole, Galline, Columb, Anseres, Terodiones, Steganopodes, and Accipitres. Finally there are two groups of types presenting character- istics so diverse as to defy almost any definition, and, if it were not almost nonsense to say so, agreeing in little more than in the differences. These two groups are those known as Picariz and Alectorides; but, while the majority

4 See Ann. Nat. History, ser. 4, xx. pp. 499, 500.

5 On the supposition that the opinions of Dr Von Haast (Trans. and Proc. N. Zeal. Institute, vi. pp. 426, 427) can be substantiated; but they have since been disputed by Prof. Hutton (op. cié., ix. pp. 368- 365), and for the present it is advisable to suspend our judgment.

;

Ost TOO G

of Families or genera usually referred to the former plainly have some features in common, the few Families or genera that have been clubbed together in the latter make an assemblage that is quite artificial, though it may be freely owned that with our present knowledge it is impossible to determine the natural alliances of all of them.!

That our knowledge is also too imperfect to enable systematists to compose a phylogeny of Birds, even of the Carinate Subclass, and draw out their

pedigree, ought to be sufficiently evident. The uncertainty which still pre- _ vails among the best-informed ornithologists as to the respective origin of the Ratite and Carinatz is in itself a proof of that fact, and in regard to some groups much less widely differentiated the same thing occurs. We can point to some forms which seem to be collaterally ancestral (if such a phrase may be allowed), and among them perhaps some of those which have been referred to the group " Alectorides" just mentioned, and from a considera- tion of their Geographical Distribution and especially Isolation it will be obvious that they are the remnants of a very ancient and more generalized stock which in various parts of the world have become more or less specialized. The very case of the New-Caledonian Kagu (Rhinochetus), combining features which occasionally recall the Sun- Bittern (Hurypyga), and again present an unmistakable likeness to the Limicolz or the Rallidx, shews that it is without any very near relation on the earth, and, if con- venience permitted, would almost justify us in placing it in a group apart from any other, though possessing some characteristics in common with several.

It is anything but the desire of the present writer to invent a new arrangement of Birds. Such acquaintance as he possesses with the plans which have been already propounded warns him that until a great deal more labour

has been expended, and its results made clearly known,'

no general scheme of Classification will deserve to be regarded as final. Nevertheless in the best of modern systems there are some points which, as already hinted, seem to be well established, while in them there are also some dispositions and assignments which he is as yet unable to accept, while he knows that he is not alone in his mistrust of them, and he thinks it his duty here to mention them in the hope that thereby attention may be further directed to them, and his doubts either dispelled or established—it matters not which. The most convenient way of bringing them to the notice of the reader will per- haps be by considering in succession the different groups set forth by the latest systematist of any authority—Mr Sclater—a sketch of whose method has been above given. If we trust to the results at which Prof. Huxley arrived, there can be little doubt as to the propriety of

beginning the Carinate Subclass with his Dromxognathe, the Crypturt of Illiger and others, or Tinamous, for their resemblance to the atitx is not to be disputed ; but it must be borne in mind that nothing whatever is knqwn of their mode of development, and that this may, when made out, seriously modify their position relatively to another group, the normal Anseres, in which the investigations of Cuvier and L'Herminier have already shewn that there is some resemblance to the Ratite as regards the ossification of the sternum. It will be for embryologists to determine whether this asserted resemblance has any real meaning ; but of the sufficient standing of the Crypturi as an Order there can hardly be a question.] 1 Heterogeneous as is the group as left by the latest systematist, it is nothing to its state when first founded by Illiger in 1811; for it then contained in addition the genera Glareola and Cereopsis, but the last was restored to its true place among the Anseres by Temminck. The Alectrides of Duméril have nothing in common with the Alectorides

of Tlliger, and the latter is a name most unfortunately chosen, since the group so called does not include any Cock-like Bird.

45

We have seen that Prof. Huxley would derive all other existing Carinate Birds from the Dromexognathe; but of course it must be understood in this, as in every other similar case, that it is not thereby implied that the modern representatives of the Dromeeognathous type (namely, the Tinamous) stand in the line of ancestry.

Under the name Jmpennes we have a group of Birds, the Dmpennes.

Penguins, smaller even than the last, and one over which until lately systematists have been sadly at fault ; for, though we as yet know little if anything definite as to their embryology, no one, free from bias, can examine any member of the group, either externally or internally, without perceiving how completely different it is from any others of the Carinate division. There is perhaps scarcely a feather or a bone which is not diagnostic, and nearly every character hitherto observed points to a low morpho- logical rank. It may even be that the clothing of Hesper- ornis was

not very dissimilar to the “plumage” which now covers the Jmpennes, and the title of an Order can hardly be refused to them.

The group known as Pygopodes has been often asserted to be closely akin to the Zmpennes, and we have seen that Brandt combined the two under the name of Urinatores, while Mr Sclater thinks the Pygopodes “seem to form a natural transition between” the Gulls and the Penguins. The affinity of the Alcide or Auks (and through them the Divers or Colymbidx) to the Gulls may be a matter beyond doubt, and there appears to be ground for considering them to be the degraded offspring of the former ; but to the present writer it appears questionable whether the Grebes, Podicipedide, have any real affinity to the two Families with which they are usually associated, and this is a point deserving of more attention on the part of morphologists than it has hitherto received. Under the name of Gaviz the Gulls and their close allies form a very natural section, but it probably hardly merits the rank of an Order more than the Pygopodes, for its relations to the large and somewhat multiform though very natural group Limicole have to be taken into consideration. Prof. Parker long ago observed (Z’rans. Zool. Society, v. p. 150) that characters exhibited by Gulls when young, but lost by them when adult, are found in certain Plovers at all ages, and hence it would appear that the Gawe are but more advanced Limicole. The Limicoline genera Dromas and Chionis have many points of resemblance to the Laride; and on the whole the proper inference would seem to be that the ZLimicole, or something very like them, form the parent-stock whence have descended the Gavizx, from which or from their ancestral forms the Alcidxe have proceeded as a degenerate branch. If this hypothesis be correct, the association of these three groups would constitute an Order, of which the highest Family would perhaps be Otididx, the Bustards; but until further research shews whether the view can be maintained it is not worth while to encumber nomenclature by inventing a new name for the combination. On the other hand the Petrels, which form the group Zubinares, would seem for several reasons to be perfectly distinct from the Gavix and their allies, and possibly will have to rank as an Order.

Considerable doubt has already been expressed as to the existence of an Order Alectorides, which no one can regard as a natural group, and it has just been proposed to retransfer to the Limicole one of the Families,

Otidide, kept in it by Mr Sclater. Another Family included in it by its founder is Cariamidz, the true place of which has long been a puzzle to systematizers. The present writer is inclined to think that those who have urged its affinity to the Accipitres, and among them taxonomers starting from bases so opposite as Sundevall and Prof. Parker, have more nearly hit the mark, and accordingly would

Gavie

and their

allies.

Tubinares.

‘¢ Alecto-

rides.”

Graliv. Allusion has also been made to the peculiarities of two | of by-gone years, under the name, however meaningless, other forms placed with the last among the Alectorides— | of Rasores. Failing that, the general resemblance of most Hurypyga and Rhinochetus—being each the sole type of a | parts of the osteology of the Sand-Grouse to that of the separate Family. It seems that they might be brought | Pigeons, so well shewn by M. Milne-Edwards, combined with the Gruidx, Psophiidx, and Aramidx into a group | with their Pigeon-like pterylosis, inclines the present writer or Suborder G’rwes,—which, with the Pulicariz * of Nitzsch | to group them as a Suborder of Columbx; but the many Coluibe, and Mr Sclater as another Suborder, would constitute an | important points in which they differ from the more normal Order that may continue to bear the old Linnean name | Pigeons, especially in the matter of their young being Gralle, It must be borne in mind, however, that some | clothed with down, and their coloured and speckled eggs,® members of both these Suborders exhibit many points of | must be freely admitted. Young Sand-Grouse are described resemblance to certain other forms that it is at present | as being not only “Dasypedes” but even “ Praecoces” at necessary to place in different groups—thus some /allide | birth, while of course every one knows the helpless condition to the

Galline, Grus to Otis, and so forth; and it is as | of “Pipers”—that is, Pigeons newly-hatched from their yet doubtful whether further investigation may not shew | white eggs. Thus the opposite condition of the young of the resemblance to be one of affinity, and therefore of | these two admittedly very near groups inflicts a severe taxonomic value, instead of mere analogy, and therefore of | blow on the so-called “physiological” method of dividing no worth in that respect. Birds before mentioned, and renders the Pteroclide so –

We have next to deal with a group nearly as com- | instructive a form. The Colwmbzx, considered in the wide

Gulline. plicated. The true Calling are indeed as well marked a | sense just suggested, would seem to have possessed another section as any to be found; but round and near them cluster | and degenerate Suborder in the Dodo and its kindred, some forms very troublesome to allocate. The strange | though the extirpation of those strange and monstrous Hoactzin (Opisthocomus) is one of these, and what seems to | forms will most likely leave their precise relations a matter be in some degree its arrested development makes its posi- | of some doubt ; while the third and last Suborder, the true tion almost unique,+—but enough has already been said of | Columbe, is much more homogeneous, and can hardly be it before (seevol. xii. p. 28, and supra p. 36). It must for the | said to contain more than two Families, Colwmbide and present at least stand alone, the sole occupant of a single | Didunculide—the latter consisting of a single species Order. Then there are the Hemipodes or Button-Quails, | peculiar to the Samoa Islands, and having no direct con- which have been raised to equal rank by Prof. Huxley as | nexion with the Dididx or Dodos,® though possibly it may Turnicomorphe; but, though no doubt the osteological | be found that the Papuan genus Otidiphaps presents a form differences between them and the normal Gallinx, pointed | linking it with the Columbide. out by him as well as by Prof. Parker, are great, they do The Galline would seem to hold a somewhat central Groups not seem to be more essential than are found in different | position among existing members of the Carinate division,” allied to members of some other Orders, nor to offer an insuperable | whence many groups diverge, and one of them, the Opis- ¢“4am objection to their being classed under the designation |

thocomi or Heteromorphx of Prof. Huxley, indicates, as he | Galline. If this be so there will be no necessity for | has hinted, the existence of an old line of descent, now removing them from that Order, which may then be | almost obliterated, in the direction of the Musophagidex, portioned into three Suborders—Zemipodit standing some- } and thence, we may not unreasonably infer, to the what apart, and Alectoropodes and Peristeropodes, which | Coccygomorphe of the same authority. But these are more nearly allied—the latter comprehending the | “ Coccygomorphs ” would also appear to reach a higher Megapodiidx and Cracidx, and the former consisting of | rank than some other groups that we have to notice, and the normal Galline, of which it is difficult to justify the | therefore, leaving the former, we must attempt to trace recognition of more than a single Family, though in that | the fortunes of a more remote and less exalted line. It two types of structure are discernible, has already been stated that the Gavix are a group closely

ae The Family of Sand-Grouse, Pteroclidz, is perhaps one | allied to though somewhat higher than the Limicolx, and

CLA,

46

now relegate it to that Order. It is doubtless an extremely generalized form,! the survival of a very ancient type, whence several groups may have sprung; and, whenever the secret it has to tell shall be revealed, a considerable step in the phylogeny of Birds can scarcely fail to follow.?

of the most instructive in the whole range of Ornithology. In Prof. Huxtey’s words (Proceedings, 1868, p. 303), they are “completely intermediate between the Alectoromorphex [z.c., Gallinz] and the Peristeromorphe [the Pigeons |. They cannot be included within either of these groups without destroying its definition, while they are perfectly definable themselves.” Hence he would make them an independent group of equal value with the other two. Almost the same result has been reached by Dr Gapow

Cariama is the oldest name for the genus, but being a word of ‘‘ barbarous” origin it was set aside by Illiger and the purists in favour of Dicholophus,

under which name ithas been sevcral times mentioned in the foregoing pages.

2 A brief description of the egg and young of Cariama cristata pro- duced in the Jardin des Plantes at Paris is given in the Zoological Society's Proceedings for 1881, p. 2.

3 This group would contain three families—Rallidw, Heliornithide (the Finfoots of Africa and Sonth America), and the Afesitide of Madagascar—whose at least approximate place has been at last found = aS by M. A. Milne-Edwards (Ann. Se. Naturelles, ser. 6. vii.

o. 6).

4 Mesites, just mentioned, presents a case which may, however, be very similar.

(op. cit., 1882, pp. 331, 332). No doubt there are strong and tempting reasons for taking this step; but peradven- ture the real lesson taught by this aggregation of common characters is rather the retention of the union of the Galline and Columbsx into a single group, after the fashion

that at least two forms of what have here been called Grallz present an affinity to the latter. One of them, Ethinochetus, has been several times thought to be con- nected through its presumed relative Lurypyga (from which, however, it is a good way removed both as regards distribution and structure) with the Heriodiones, Herons. On the other hand the Gaviz would seem to be in like manner related through Phaethon (the TRopic-BIRD, 9.2.) with the Steganopodes or Dysporomorphe of Prof. Huxley, among which it is usually placed, though according to Prof. Mivart (Zrans. Zool. Society, x. pp. 364, 365) wrongly. These supposed affinities lead us to two other groups of Birds that have, it has been proved, some com- mon characters ; and from one or the other (no one yet can say which) the Accipitres would seem to branch off—

® This fact tells in favour of the views of Dr Gadow and those who hold the Sand-Grouse to be allied to the Plovers ; but then he places the Pigeons between these groups, and their eggs tell as strongly the other way.

8 Cf. Phil. Transactions, 1867, p. 349.

7 Cf. Prof. Parker’s remarks in the Philosophical Transactions for 1869, p. 755.

possibly from some ancestral type akin to and now most directly represented by the enigmatical Carcama—possibly in some other way which we can only dimly foreshadow. – The Herodiones are commonly partitioned into three groups —Ardex, Ciconiz, and Platalex, the last including the Tbises—which may certainly be considered to be as many Suborders. Thesecond of them, the Storks, may perhaps be regarded as the point of departure for the Accipitres in the manner indicated,! as well as, according to Prof. Huxley, for the Flamingoes, of which he would make a distinct group, Amphimorphe, equivalent to the Odontoglosse of Nitzsch, intermediate between the Pelargomorphe and the Chenomorphe, that is, between the Storks and the Geese. When the embryology of the Phenicopteridx is investi- gated their supposed relationship may perhaps be made out. At present it is, like so much that needs to be here advanced, very hypothetical; but there is so much in the osteology of the Flamingoes, besides other things, that resembles the Anseres that it would seem better to regard them as forming a Subclass of that group to rank equally with the true Anseres and with the Palamedex (SCREAMER, g.v.), Which last, notwithstanding the opinion of Garrod, can hardly from their osteological similarity to the true Anseres be removed from their neighbourhood.

Whatever be the alliances of the genealogy of the Accipitres, the Diurnal Birds-of-Prey, their main body must stand alone, hardly divisible into more than two principal groups—(1) containing the Cathartide or the Vultures of the New World, and (2) all the rest, though no doubt the latter may be easily subdivided into at least two Families, Vulturidx and Falconide, and the last into many smaller sections, as has commonly been done; but then we have

the outliers left. The African Serpentariidx, though represented only by a single species,? are fully allowed to form a type equivalent to the true Accipitres composing the main body ; but whether to the Secretary-bird should be added the often-named Cariama, with its two species, must still remain an open question.

It has so long been the custom to place the Owls next to the Diurnal Birds-of-Prey that any attempt to remove them from that position cannot fail to incur criticism. Yet when we disregard their carnivorous habits, and certain modifications which may possibly be thereby induced, we find almost nothing of value to indicate relationship between them. That the Striges stand quite independently of the Accipitres as above limited can hardly be doubted, and, while the Psittaci or Parrots would on some grounds appear to be the nearest allies of the Accypitres, the nearest relations of the Owls must be looked for in the multifarious group Picarizx. Here we have the singular Steatornis (GUACHARO, vol. ix. p. 227), which, long confounded with the Caprimulgide (GoaTsuUCKER, vol. ix. p. 711), has at last been recognized as an indepen- dent form, and one cannot but think that it has branched off from a common ancestor with the Owls. The Goat- suckers may have done the like,? for there is really not much to ally them to the Swifts and Humming-birds, the Macrochires proper, as has often been recommended. However, the present writer would not have it supposed that he would place the Striges under the Picariz, for the

: Garrod and Forbes suggest a ‘‘Ciconiiform” origin for the Pubinares (Zool. Voy. ‘ Challenger,” pt. xi. pp. 62, 68).

- It was long suspected that the genus Polyboroides of South

Africa and Madagascar, from its general resemblance in plumage and outward form, might come into this group, but that idea has now been fully dispelled by M. A. Milne-Edwards in his and M. Grandidier’s magnificent Oiseawa de Madagascar (vol. i. pp. 50-66). ; 3 The great resemblance in coloration between Goatsuckers and Owls is of course obvious, so obvious indeed as to make one suspicious of their being akin ; but in reality the existence of the Hkeness is no bar to the affinity of the groups ; it merely has to be wholly disregarded.

last are already a sufficiently heterogeneous assemblage, and one with which he would not meddle. Whether the Woodpeckers should be separated from the rest is a matter of deeper consideration after the deliberate opinion of Prof. Parker, who would lift them as Saurognathe to a higher rank than that in which Prof. Huxley left them as Celeomorphx, indeed to be the peers of Schizognathe, Desmognathx, and so forth ; but this advancement is based solely on the characters of their palatal structure, and is unsupported by any others. That the P%ez constitute a very natural and easily defined group is indisputable; more than that, they are perhaps the most differentiated group of all those that are retained in the “Order” Picarie ; but it does not seem advisable at present to deliver them from that chaos when so many other groups have to be left in it.

Lastly we arrive at the Passeres, and here, as already Passeres,

mentioned, the researches of Garrod and Forbes prove to be of immense service. It is of course not to be supposed that they have exhausted the subject even as regards their Mesomyodi, while their Acromyodi were left almost untouched so far as concerns details of arrangement; but the present writer has no wish to disturb by other than very slight modifications the scheme they put forth. He would agree with Mr Sclater in disregarding the distinc- tions of Desmodactyli and Eleutherodactyli, grouping the former (Lurylemide) with the LHeteromeri and IHaploo-

phone, which all together then might be termed the their Sub-

Suborder Oligomyodt. Suborder the 7’racheophone as left by Garrod, and then as a third Suborder the abnormal Acromyodi, whether they are to be called Pseudoscines or not, that small group con- taining, so far as is known at present, only the two Families Atrichiidxe and Menuridx. Finally we have the normal Acromyodi or true Oscines.

To this would follow as a second orders.

This last and highest group of Birds is one which, as Oseines,

before hinted, it is very hard to subdivide.

Some two or their homo-

three natural, because well-differentiated, Families are to Pie

be found in it—such, for instance, as the Hirundinide or Swallows, which have no near relations ; the Alaudidez or Larks, that can be unfailingly distinguished at a glance by their scutellated planta, as has been before mentioned ; or the Meliphayide with their curiously constructed tongue. But the great mass, comprehending incomparably the greatest number of genera and species of Birds, defies any sure means of separation. Here and there, of course, a good many individual genera may be picked out capable of the most accurate definition ; but genera like these are in the minority, and most of the remainder present several apparent alliances, from which we are at a loss to choose that which is nearest. Sclater's "Laminiplantar" Oscines seem to pass almost imperceptibly into one another. We may take examples in which what we may call the Thrush-form, the Tree- creeper-form, the Finch-form, or the Crow-form is pushed to the most extreme point of differentiation, but we shall find that between the outposts thus established there exists a regular chain of intermediate stations so intimately con- nected that no precise lines of demarcation can be drawn cutting off one froni the other. Still one thing is possible.

ness.

Four of the six groups of Mr.

Hard though it be to find gupposed

definitions for the several groups of Oscines, whether we highrankof

make them more or fewer, it is by no means so hard, if we go the right way to work, to determine which of them is the highest, and, possibly, which of them is the lowest. It has already been shewn (page 30) how, by a woe- ful want of the logical apprehension of facts, the 7'urdidx came to be accounted the highest, and the position ac- corded to them has been

generally acquiesced in by those who have followed in the footsteps of Keyserling and

Turdidx

not borne out by alliances,

nor by size of brain,

48

Blastus, of Prof. Cabanis and of Sundevall. To the present writer the order thus prescribed seems to be almost the very reverse of that which the doctrine of Evolution requires, and, so far from the Turdide being at the head of the Oscines, they are among its lower members. There is no doubt whatever as to the intimate relationship of the Thrushes (Turdidz) to the Chats (Saxicoline), for that is admitted by nearly every systematizer. Now most author- ities on classification are agreed in associating with the latter group the Birds of the Australian genus Petreca and its allies—the so-called "Robins" of the English- speaking part of the great southern communities. But it so happens that, from the inferior type of the osteological characters of this very group of Birds, Prof. PARKER has called them (Trans. Zool. Society, v. p. 152) " Struthious Warblers." Now if the Petreca-group be, as most allow, allied to the Saxicolinz, they must also be allied, only rather more remotely, to the Z'wrdide—for Thrushes and Chats are inseparable, and therefore this connexion must drag down the Thrushes in the scale, Let it be granted that the more highly-developed Thrushes have got rid of the low "Struthious" features which characterize their Australian relatives, the unbroken series of connecting forms chains them to the inferior position, and of itself disqualifies them from the rank so fallaciously assigned to them. Nor does this consideration stand alone. By submitting the Thrushes and allied groups of Chats and Warblers to other tests we may try still more completely their claim to the position to which they have been advanced.

Without attaching too much importance to the system- atic value which the characters of the nervous system afford, there can be little doubt that, throughout the Animal Kingdom, where the nervous system is sufficiently developed to produce a brain, the creatures possessing one are considerably

superior to those which have none. Con- sequently we may reasonably infer that those which are the best furnished with a brain are superior to those which are less well endowed in that respect, and that this infer- ence is reasonable is in accordance with the experience of every Physiologist, Comparative Anatomist, and Palzeon- tologist, who are agreed that, within limits, the proportion which the brain bears to the spinal marrow in a vertebrate is a measure of that animal's morphological condition. These preliminaries being beyond contradiction, it is clear that, if we had a series of accurate weights and measure- ments of Birds' brains, it would go far to help us in deciding many cases of disputed precedency, and especially such a case as we now have under discussion. To the dispraise of Ornithotomists this subject has never been properly investigated, and of late years seems to have been wholly neglected. The present writer can only refer to the meagre lists given by TIEDEMANN (Anat. und Naturgesch. der Vogel, i. pp. 18-22), based for the most part on very ancient observations ; but, so far as those observations go, their result is conclusive, for we find that in the Blackbird, Turdus merula, the proportion which the brain bears to the body is lower than in any of the eight species of Oscines there named, being as 1 is to 67. In the Redbreast, Erithacus rubecula, certainly an ally of the Zurdida, it is as 1 to 32; while it is highest in two of the Finches—the Goldfinch, Carduelis elegans, and the Canary-bird, Serinus canarius, being i in each as 1 to 14. The signification of these numbers. needs no comment to be understood.

Evidence of another kind may also be adduced in proof that the high place hitherto commonly accorded to the Turdide is undeserved. Throughout the Class Aves it is observable that the young when first fledged generally assume a spotted plumage of a peculiar character—nearly each of the body-feathers having a light-coloured spot at

its tip—and this is particularly to be remarked in most groups of Oscines, so much so indeed, that a bird thus marked may, in the majority of cases, be set down with- out fear of mistake as being immature. All the teachings of morphology go to establish the fact that any characters which are peculiar to the immature condition of an animal, and are lost in its progress to

maturity, are those which its less advanced progenitors bore while adult, and that in proportion as it gets rid of them it shews its superiority over its ancestry. This being the case, it would follow that an animal which at no time in its life exhibits such marks of immaturity or inferiority must be of a rank, compared with its allies, superior to those which do exhibit these marks. The same may be said of external and secondary sexual characters. ‘Those of the female are almost invari- ably to be deemed the survival of ancestral characters, while those peculiar to the male are in advance of the older fashion, generally and perhaps always the result of sexual selection.1 When both sexes agree in appearance it may mean one of two things—either that the male has not lifted himself much above the condition of lis mate, or that, he having raised himself, the female has success- fully followed his example. In the former alternative, as regards Birds, we shall find that neither sex departs very much from the coloration of its fellow-species; in the latter the departure may be very considerable. Now, applying

these principles to the Thrushes, we shall find that without nor by exception, so far as is known, the young have their first char-

plumage more or less spotted; and, except in some three or four species at most,? both sexes, if they agree in plumage, do not differ greatly from their fellow-species. Therefore as regards capacity of brain and coloration of plumage priority ought not to be given to the Turdide. It remains for us to see if we can find the group which is entitled to that eminence. Among Ornithologists of the highest rank there have been few whose opinion is more worthy of attention than Macgillivray, a trained anatomist and a man of thoroughly independent mind. Through the insufficiency of his opportunities, his views on general classification were confessedly imperfect, but on certain special points, where the materials were present for him to form a judgment, one may generally depend upon it. Such is the case here, for his work shews him to have diligently exercised his genius in regard to the Birds which we now call Oscines. He belonged to a period anterior to that in which questions that have been brought uppermost by the doctrine of Evolution existed, and yet he seems not to have been without perception that such questions might arise. including among others the Family Corvdx—the Crows, he tells us (Brit. Birds, i. pp. 485, 486) that they “are to be accounted among the most perfectly organized birds,”

justifying the opinion by stating the reasons, which are of a very varied kind, that led him to it. In one of the earlier treatises of Prof. PARKER, he has expressed (7Z'rans. Zool. Society, v. p. 150) his approval of Macgillivray's views, adding that, "as that speaking, singing, mocking animal, Man, is the culmination of the Mammalian series, so that bird in which the gifts of speech, song, and mockery are combined must be considered as the top and crown of the bird-class." Any doubt as to which Bird is here intended is dispelled by another passage, written ten

1 See Darwin, Descent of Man, chaps. xv., xvi.

2 According to Mr Seebohm (Cat. Birds Brit. Museum, v. p. 232) these are in his nomenclature Aerula nigrescens, M. fuscatra, M. gigas, and AM. gigantodes.

3 In this Order he included several groups of Birds which we now know to be but slightly if at all allied ; but his intimate acquaintance was derived from the Corvide# and the allied Family we now call Sturnid#.

In treating of what he termed the Order Vagatores,3 ha

years later, wherein (Monthly Microsc. Journal, 1872, p. 217) he says, " The Crow is the great sub-rational chief of the whole kingdom of the Birds ; he has the largest brain ; the most wit and wisdom ;" and again, in the Zoological Society's Z'ransactions (ix. p. 300), " In all respects, physio- logical, morphological, and ornithological, the Crow may be placed at the head, not only of its own great series (birds of the Crow-form), but also as the unchallenged chief of the whole of the ' Carinate.' "

It is to be supposed that the opinion so strongly expressed in the passage last cited has escaped the observation of recent systematizers; for he would be a bold man who would venture to gainsay it. Still Prof. Parker has left untouched or only obscurely alluded to one other considera- tion that has been here brought forward in opposing the claim of the Z'urdidz, and therefore a few words may not be out of place on that point—the evidence afforded by the coloration of plumage in young and old. Now the Corvide fulfil as completely as is possible for any group of Birds to do the obligations required by exalted rank. To the magnitude of their brain

beyond that of all other Birds Prof. Parker has already testified, and it is the rule for their young at once to be clothed in a plumage which is essentially that of the adult. This plumage may lack the lustrous reflexions that are only assumed when it is necessary for the welfare of the race that the wearer should don the best apparel, but then they are speedily acquired, and the original difference between old and young is of the slightest, Moreover, this obtains even in what we may fairly consider to be the weaker forms of the Corvide—the Pies and Jays. In one species of Corvus, and that (as might be expected) the most abundant, namely, the Rook, C. frugilegus, very interesting cases of what would seem to be explicable on the theory of Reversion occasionally though rarely occur. In them the young are more or less spotted with a lighter shade, and these exceptional cases, if rightly understood, do-but confirm the rule! It may be conceded that even among Oscines? there are some other groups or sections of

1 One of these specimens has been figured by Mr Hancock (N. H. Trans. Northumb. and Durham, vi, pl. 8); see also Yarrell's British Birds, ed. 4, ii. pp. 802, 303.

2 In other Orders there are many, for instance some Humming- birds and Kingfishers ; but this only seems to shew the excellence in those Orders attained by the forms which enjoy the privilege,

groups in which the transformation in appearance from youth to full age is as slight. This is so among the Paride ; and there are a few groups in which the young, prior to the first moult, may be more brightly tinted than afterwards, as in the genera Phylloscopus and Anthus. These anomalies cannot be explained as yet, but we see that they do not extend to more than a portion, and generally a small portion, of the groups in which they occur ; whereas in the Crows the likeness between young and old is, so far as is known, common to every member of the Family. It is therefore confidently that the present writer asserts, as Prof. Parker, with far more right to speak on the subject, has already done, that at the head of the Class Aves must stand the Family Corvidx, of which Family no one will dispute the

superiority of the genus Corvus, nor in that genus the pre-eminence of Corvus corax—the widely-ranging Raven of the Northern Hemisphere, the Bird perhaps best known from the most ancient times, and, as it happens, that to which belongs the earliest historical association with man. There are of course innumerable points in regard to the Classification of Birds which are, and for a long time will continue to be, hypothetical as matters of opinion, but this one seems to stand a fact on the firm ground of proof.

During the compilation of much of the present article the writer flattered himself with the hope that he might at its conclusion have been able to give a graphic illustration of the way in which the various groups of Birds may be conceived to be related to one another in the form of a map, such as has been so usefully furnished by several of his more gifted brethren in regard to other Classes or portions of Classes of the Animal Kingdom. This hope he has been reluctantly constrained to abandon,—whether from the inherent difficulty, perhaps impossibility, of at

_ present executing the task, or from his own want of charto-

graphical skill, it is not for him to say. He may, however, be allowed to express the belief that there is no group in Animated Nature that more assuredly deserves the further attention of the highest zoological intellects than Birds ; and, looking to the perplexities which on all sides beset their scientific study, there is no department of Zoology that will better repay the application of those intellects than Ornithology. (A. N.)

fBlian, 3, 4. Albertus Magnus, 3. Albin, 5. Aldrovandus, 4. Allen, 17,

Alston, 18,

- _Altum, 17. Andersson, 16. Aristotle, 2, 3, 15. Aubert, 3. Audebert, 11, Audubon, 11, 12, 16,

25, 27, 28,

Baikie, 18. Baillon, 17. Bailly, 17,

Baird, 16.

Baldamus, 9, 17. Barraband, 11. Barrere, 5. Barrington, 9. Barthélemy – Lapom-

meraie, 17. Bartholini, 7. Bartlett, 25. Barton, 9. Bartram, 9. Beehstein, 6, 9, 17. Behn, 5.

Beilby, 10.

Bell, F. J,, 29, 39. Bell, T., 10. Belon, 4,

Bennett, 10. Benoist, 17, Berkenhout, 9. Bernini, 9, Berthold, 22, Beseke, 8. Bewiek, 10, 14, 18. Bexon, 6.

Blainville, 8, 14, 20,

21, 22, 29.

Blanehard, 31, 32.

Blandin, 17.

Blasius, G., 7.

Blasius, J, H., 9,

UC ay HAs eB BiG

48.

Blyth, 10, 16, 25, 27,

29, 86.

Boeage, Barboza du, ig,

Boehart, 4.

Boddaert, 7.

Bolle, 17.

Bonaparte, 14, 16, 17,

31,

Bonnaterre, 7.

Bontius, 4.

Borggreve, 17.

Borkhausen, 9.

Borlase, 9.

Borrichius, 7.

Bouteille, 17.

Brandt, A., 17.

Brandt, J. F., 25, 26,

42, 45.

Bree, 17. Brehm, A. E,, 17. Brehm, C. L., 17. Brewer, 16. Brewster, 17. Brisson, 5, 6, 7. Bronn, 7, 42. Brown, P., 7. Browne, Sir T., 9. Briinnieh, 9. Buekley, E., 5. Buekley, T. E., 18. Buffon, 6, 7, 36. Buller, 16. Bureau, 17, Burmeister, 26, 27. Cabanis, 16, 17, 29,

80, 31, 41, 48.

Caius, 3. ; Canivet, 17. Carus, 7, 42. Cassin, 11, 16. Catesby, 5. Caub, 3. Cetti, 9. Chamberlain, 17. Chambers, 32. Charlesworth, 25. Charleton, 4. Chesnon, 17. Clarke, 18,

Claus, 42,

Clusius, 4.

Coiter, 4, 7.

Collett, 17.

Collin, 17.

Collins, 8.

Cope, 43,

Cordeaux, 18.

Cornay, 29, 35.

Coues, 16, 17, 25.

Cousens, 12.

Crespon, 17.

Cuba, 3.

Cuvier, 7, 8, 14, 16,

19, 21, 22, 28, 24, 27, 29, 30, 32, 45,

Dallas, 27.

Darwin, 32, 33, 34, 36,

48,

D’Aubenton, 6, 7, 12.

Daudin, 7.

Davies, 44.

Degland, 17,

Demarle, 17.

Denny, 26.

Derham, 5.

Desmarest, 11,

Des Murs, 13, 32.

Dieffenbaeh, 16.

Diggles, 16.

Dillwyn, 18.

Donovan, 9.

Dresser, 17,

Droste, 17,

Dubois, 17.

Du Bus, 138.

Duméril, 13, 45.

Dunn, 18.

Edwards, 5, 6.

Elliot, 11, 16.

Eyton, 18, 32.

Faber, 17.

Fabricius, 9.

Falk, 8.

Fatio, 17.

Feilden, 17.

Fernandez, 4.

Finseh, 14, 17.

Fiseher, J. B., 8.

Fiseher de Wald- heim, 15.

Fleming, 15, 18.

Florent-Provost, 11.

Fraser, 12.

Fries, 15.

Friseh, 8.

Fritsch, 17,

Forbes, 28, 389, 40,

41, 47.

Ford, 16.

Forskal, 8.

Forster, G., 8.

Forster, J. R., 8, 9.

Gadow, 42, 46.

Garrod, 29, 39, 40,

41, 47.

Gatke, 17,

Gaza, 3.

Gentil, 17.

Georgi, 8.

Gerbe, 17.

Gervais, 31.

Gesner, 3, 4.

Giebel, 14, 21.

Gilius, 9.

Giraud, 16.

Gloger, 17, 21, 28.

Gmelin, J. F., 7, 19.

Gmelin, 8. G., 8.

Gosse, 16.

Gould, 12, 18, 16, 17, TE OR,

Grandidier, 47,

Gravenhorst, 13,

Graves, 18.

Gray, G. R,, 14, 16.

Gray, J. E., 8, 11.

Gray, R., 18.

Griffiths, 8.

Groot, 3.

Grossinger, 8.

Giildenstiidt, 8.

Gunnerus, 9.

Gurney, 6, 16.

Haast, 16, 44.

Wiaickel, 34, 43, 44.

Haneoek, 10, 18, 49.

Hardwieke, 11.

Hardy, 17.

Harting, 10, 18,

Hartlaub, 17.

Harvey, 7.

Harvie-Brown, 18.

Hasselqvist, 8.

Tlayes, 7.

Heetor, 16.

Heddle, 18.

Heine, 31.

Herbert, 10,

Hermann, 7.

Hernandez, 4.

Heysham, 9.

Hintz, 17.

Hogg, 31.

Holland, 3.

Holmgren, 17.

Homeyer, A. von, 17.

Homeyer, E. von, 17.

Houttuyn, 9,

Huet, 12.

Hume, 16,

Hunt, 18.

Hunter, 8, 26.

Hutton, 16, 44.

Huxley, 34, 35, 36,

39, 41, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47,

Illiger, 14, 22, 24, 25,

31, 45.

Irby, 17.

Jiekel, 17.

Jaeobson, 20.

XVIII. — 7

50

Jacquemin, 27, 29.

Jacquin, 7.

Jameson, 16.

Jardine, 10, 13, 16,

18.

_daubert, 17.

Jenyns, 18,

Jerdon, 16.

Johnstonus, 4.

Kalm, 8.

Kaup, 14, 15.

Kelaart, 16.

Kessler, 27.

Keulemans, 13,16, 17.

Keyserling, 26, 28,

29, 37, 47.

Kirby, 15, 20, 24.

Kittlitz, 13.

Kjeerbiélling, 17.

Klein, 5.

Knip, 11.

Knox, 18.

Koch, 17.

Kénig – Warthausen,

17.

Lear, 12,

Legge, 16.

Leigh, 9.

Leisler, 17.

Lemetteil, 17.

Lemonnicier, 17,

Léotaud, 16.

Lepechin, 8.

Lesauvage, 17.

Lesson, 13.

Le Vaillant, 8,11, 16.

Lever, 6.

Lewin, J. W., 16.

Lewin, W., 9.

L’Herminier, 16, 20,

21, 22, 238, 24, 25, 29, 31, 32, 45.

Lichtenstein, 4.

Lilford, 17.

Lilljeborg, 34.

Linneus, 5, 6, 7, 8,

9, 16, 19, 20, 24, 25, 26, 37.

Loftie, 2.

Longolius, 3.

ORN—ORO

Martinet, 6, 12.

Mauduyt, 7.

Max, 17.

Merrem, 14, 16, 19,

20, 21,22, 27, 31, 34, 43, 44.

Merrett, 4, 9.

Meyer, A. B., 13, 17.

Meyer, B., 17.

Meyer, H. L., 18.

Meyer, H. von, 34.

Milne-Edwards, 36,

46, 47.

Mitchell, 12, 14.

Mitterpacher, 8.

Mivart, 6, 46.

Mohring, 5.

Molina, 8.

Montagu, 15, 17.

Montbeillard, 6.

More, 18.

Miihle, 17.

Miiller, H. C., 17.

Miiller, Johannes, 16,

28, 29, 30, 40.

Nitzsch, 16, 18, 19,

20) 21,322) 8205 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 39, 46.

Nodder, 7.

Norguet, 17.

Nourry, 17.

Nozeman, 9.

Nuttall, 16.

Oken, 15, 28, 27.

Olina, 4.

Osbeck, 8.

Oudart, 12, 13.

Owen, 20, 24, 26, 34,

43.

Pallas, 8.

Paquet, 17.

Parker, 33, 35, 41, 45,

46, 47, 48, 49.

Pelzeln, 17.

Pennant, 7, 9.

Perrault, 7.

Petersen, 8.

Petiver, 5.

Philippus Taonensis,

Ray, 4, 5, 6.

Réaumur, 5.

Reichenbach, 18, 17,

Reichenow, 17.

Reinhardt, 33.

Rennie, 15, 18.

Retzius, 9.

Reyger, 5.

Richardson, 16.

Ridgway, 16, 17,

Risso, 17.

Rodd, 18,

Roux, 17.

Rowley, 13.

Rzaczynski, 8.

St-Hilaire, Bourjot,11.

St-Hilaire, E. Geof- froy, 16, 18,21, 23,

24.

St-Hilaire, I. Geof- froy, 13, 24,

St John, 18.

Salerne, 6.

Salvadori, 17,

Salvin, 12, 13, 41

Seeley, 43. Selby, 138, 18. Selenka, 7. Seligmann, 5. Selys – Longchamps, ire Severeyns, 13. Sharpe, 12, 16, 17. Shaw, 6, 7, 18. Shelley, 17. Shepherd, 17. Sibbald, 4. Siemssen, 9 Sloane, 5. Smit, 13. Smith, Alfred C., 17. Smith, Andrew, 16. Smith, Cecil, 18. Sonnerat, 7. Spalowsky, 7. Sparrman, 7. Stearns, 16. Stephens, 13. Sterland, 18. Stevenson, 18.

Tiedemann, 19, 48.

Tobias, 17.

Tristram, 17, 33.

Tschusi-Schmidhofen, Wis

Tunstall, 9.

Turner, H. N., 12.

Turner, W., 3.

Valentini, 7.

Verney, 7.

Vieillot, 7,11, 13, 14,17.

Vigors, 14, 15, 16, 25,

31.

Vogt, 43.

Wagler, 14, 20.

Wagner, A., 11, 27,

80, 34.

Wagner, R., 21.

Walcott, 9.

Wallace, 32, 33, 41,

Waterton, 16.

Watters, 18.

Whitaker, 18.

White, G, 9, 10, 18.

White, J., 8.

Kramer, 8. Lumsden, 18. Miiller, P. L.S., 7. 3. Saunders, 17. Stolker, 17. Willughby, 4, 6, 20, Kriiper, 17. Lydekker, 44. Murie, 39. Phillips, 8. Savi, 6, 17. Strickland, 14, 15. 25.

Kutter, 17. Macartney, 16, 26. Nash, 9. Pilati, 9. Saxby 18. Sundevall, 3, 17, 28, | Wilson, Alexander, 16, Labatie, 17. Macgillivray, 11, 16, | Nathusius, 17. Piller, 8. Schiffer, 7, 27, 30, 31, 34, 87, | Wilson, James, 13. Lacépede,

8. 18, 24, 25, 27, 28, | Naumann, J. A., 9, | Piso, 4. Schalow, 17. 88, 39, 41, 45, 48. Wimmer, 3. Lamarck, 32. 29, 48. 17. Pliny, 3. Schlegel, 14, 17. Susemihl, 17, Wolf, Johann, 17. Landbeck, 17. Macleay, 15, 16. Naumann, J. F., 9,17, | Plot, 9. Schomburgh, 16, Swainson, 13, 14, 15, | Wolf, Joseph, 12, 14, Landois, 17. Maignon, 17. 21, 23. Potts, 16. Schépss, 20. 16. Wolley, 17. Landseer, 26. Maltzan, 17. Neale, 17, Prétre, 12, 18. Schwenckfeld, 4. Taslé, 17. Worm, 4.

Latham, 6, 7, 9, 16. Marcgrave, 4. Nehrkorn, 17. Prévot, 13. Sclater, 12, 13, 16, 27, | Tegetmeier, 7. Wotton, 3.

Laugler, 12. Marcotte, 17. Neumann, 17. Proctor, 17. 29, 41, 42, 45, 46,47. | Temminck, 11, 12, 14, | Wright, T., 3. Lawrence, 16. Markwick, 10. Newman, 18, 31. Quépat, 17, Scopoli, 7. 17, 21, 22, 25, 45. | Yarrell, 18, 29, 49. Layard, 16, Marsh, 86, 387, 43, 44. | Nieremberg, 4, 15. Ramsay, 16, Seba, 5. Thaun, 3. Zander, 17.

Leach, 7. Marsigli, 8, Nilsson, 17. Ranzani, 14. Seebohm, 48. Thompson, 18. Zorn, 8.

ORNITHORHYNCHUS. See Piarypvs.

ORONTES. See Syria.

OROPUS, a Greek seaport, on the Euripus, in the district Tlepaixy, opposite Eretria. It was a border city between Beeotia and Attica, and its possession was a continual source of dispute between the two countries; but at last it came into the final possession of Athens, and is always alluded to under the Roman empire as an Attic town. The actual harbour, which was called Delphinium, was at the mouth of the Asopus, about a mile north of the city. The famous oracle of Amphiaraus was situated in the ter- ritory of Oropus, 12 stadia from the city. A village still called Oropo occupies the site of the ancient town.

OROSIUS, Pavtus, author of the once widely read Historiarum adversum Paganos Lnbri VIT., was born in Spain towards the close of the 4th century; that he was a native of Tarragona is a somewhat precarious inference from his manner of referring to “Tarraco nostra” in Hist. vii. 22. Having entered

the Christian priesthood, he naturally took an interest in the Priscillianist controversy then going on in his native country, and it was in connexfon with this that he went (or was sent) to consult Augustine at Hippo in 413 or 414. After staying for some time in Africa as the disciple of Augustine, he was sent by him in 415 to Palestine with a letter of introduction to Jerome, then at Bethlehem. The ostensible purpose of his mission (apart, of course, from those of pilgrimage and perhaps relic hunting) was that he might gain further instruction from Jerome on the points raised by the Priscillianists and Origenists ; but in reality, it would seem, his business was to stir up and assist Jerome and others against Pelagtus, who, since the synod of Carthage in 411, had been living in Palestine, and finding some acceptance there. The result of his arrival was that John, bishop of Jerusalem, was induced to summon at his capital in June 415 a synod at which Orosius communicated the decisions of Carthage and read such of Augustine's writings against Pelagius as had at that time appeared. Success, however,

was scarcely to be hoped for amongst Orientals who did not understand Latin, and whose sense of reverence was unshocked by the question of Pelagius "et quis est mihi Augustinus?" All that Orosius succeeded in obtaining was John's consent to send letters and deputies to Innocent of Rome; and, after having waited long enough to learn the unfavourable decision of the synod of Diospolis or Lydda in December of the same year, he returned to north Africa, where he is believed to have died. According to Gennadius he carried with him recently discovered relics of the protomartyr Stephen from Palestine to the West.

The earliest work of Orosius, Consultatio sive Commonitorium ad Augustinum de errore Priseillianistarwm et Origenistarwm, explains its object by its title; it was written soon after his arrival in Africa, and is usually printed in the works of Augustine along with the reply of the latter, Contra Priscillianistas et Origenistas Liber ad Orosium. His next treatise, Liber Apologeticus de arbitrii libertate, was written during his stay in Palestine, and in connexion with the controversy which engaged him there. It occurs in the Biblioth. Max. Patr., and also in Hardouin and Mansi. The Historix adversum Paganos was undertaken at the suggestion of Augustine, to whom it is dedicated. When Augustine proposed this task he had already planned and made some progress with his own De Civitate Dei; it is the

same argument that is elaborated by his disciple, namely, the evidence from history that the circum- stances of the world had not really become worse since the intro- duction of Christianity. The work, which is thus a pragmatical chronicle of the calamities that have happened to mankind from the fall down to the Gothic period, has little accuracy or learning, and even less of literary charm to commend it; but its purpose gave it value in the eyes of the orthodox, and the Hormesia, Ormesta, or Ormista (Or[osii] M[undi] Hist[oria]), as it was called, speedily attained a wide popularity. A free abridged translation by King Alfred is still extant (Old English text, with original in Latin, edited by H. Sweet, 1883). The ediio princeps of the original appeared at Vienna (1471); that of Havercamp (Leyden, 1738 and 1767) has now been superseded by Zangemeister, who has edited the Hist. and also the Lib. Apol. in vol. v. of the Corp. Ser. Heel. Lat. (Vienna, 1882). The “sources” made use of by Orosius have been investigated by Morner (De Orosii vita ejusque hist. libr. VIL. adversus Paganos, 1844); besides the Old and New Testaments, he appears to have consulted Livy, Justin, Tacitus, Suetonius, Florus, and a cosmography, attaching also great value to Jerome’s transla- tion of the Chronicles of Eusebius.

OR P—ORP

ORPHEUS, a very important figure in Greek legend. The name is an ancient Indo-European one; the original Arbhu can be traced in the ebhu of the Rigveda and the Alp or Elf of Teutonic folklore. It is, however, impossible to establish any connexion between the Orpheus legend in the highly developed form which alone has come down to us and the beliefs entertained about Ribhu and Elf. In Greece, Orpheus was always associated with the early Thracian race, which was supposed to have inhabited the neighbourhood of Mount Helicon, the district of Pieria in Macedonia, and the coasts and country generally on the north of the Augean Sea. The religion of the Muses and the religion of Dionysus, with both of which Orpheus is connected, are intimately associated with this race (see Musss). Orpheus was son of the river god CHagrus and the Muse Calliope. He played so divinely on the lyre that all nature stopped to listen to his music. When his wife Eurydice died, he went after her to Hades, and the strains of his lyre softened even the stern gods of the dead. Eurydice was released, and followed him to the upper world, but he looked back towards her before

she was clear of the world of death and she vanished again from his sight. The Thracian women, jealous of his unconquerable love for his lost wife, tore him to pieces during the frenzy of the Bacchic orgies ; his head and his lyre floated “down the swift Hebrus to the Lesbian shore,” where a shrine of Orpheus was built near Antissa. The legend, with all its melancholy, its love, and its sympathy with nature, has obviously taken shape in the hands of an early school of lyric poetry, associated with the worship of the Muses ; the ancient Thracian aotdoi are recognized as the earliest Singers in Greece, but their art and their Muse-religion have passed to Lesbos, which was the chief seat of Greek lyric poetry in the 7th and 6th centuries B.c. The tragic death of Orpheus is obviously connected with the Bacchic ritual (see Orc1Es). Orpheus is the representative of the god torn to pieces every year by the envious powers of nature, a ceremony that was duly enacted by the Baccha, in earlier times with a human victim, afterwards with a bull to represent the bull-formed god.

The Orpheus legend is closely analogous with that of Marsyas. Orpheus and Marsyas are embodiments of the supposed origin of music in Thrace and in Phrygia, countries inhabited by kindred races, viz., the influences of nature (both being closely connected with river-worship) and the teaching or gift of a goddess. The melancholy history of both must have its origin in the character of the Thraco-Phrygian people: the divine gift brings sorrow as well as power. ach uses the musical instrument that characterized his country.

The name of Orpheus is equally important in the religious history of Greece; and in this respect also it is associated with Thrace. He was the mythic founder of a religious school or sect, with a code of rules of life, a mystic eclectic theology, a system of purificatory and expiatory rites, and peculiar mysteries. This school is first observable under the rule of Pisistratus at Athens in the 6th century B.c. Its doctrines are founded on two elements—(1) the Thraco-Phrygian religion of Bacchus with its enthusiastic orgies, its mysteries, and its purifica- tions, and (2) the tendency to philosophic speculation on the nature and mutual relations of the numerous gods, developed at this time by intercourse with Egypt and the East, and by the quickened intercourse between different tribes and different religions in Greece itself. These causes produced similar results in different parts of

Greece. The close analogy between Pythagoteanism and Orphism has been recognized from Herodotus (ii. 81) to the latest modern writers. Both inculeated a peculiar kind of ascetic life; both had a mystical speculative

ol

theory of religion, with purificatory rites, abstinence from beans, &c.; but Orphism was more especially religious, while Pythagoreanism, at least originally, inclined more to be a political and philosophical creed.

The rules of the Orphic life (Gios ’Opduixds) prescribed abstinence from beans, flesh, certain kinds of fish, &c., the wearing of a special kind of clothes, and numerous other practices and abstinences, for all of which reasons were given in religious myths (iepot Adyor). The ritual of worship was peculiar, not admitting bloody sacrifices. The belief was taught in the homogeneity of all living things, in the transmigration of souls, in the view that the soul is imprisoned in the body, and that it may gradually attain perfection during connexion with a series of bodies. It is not possible here to treat of the Orphic mysteries (see Lobeck, Aglaophamus). The influence of Orphism on the Eleusinian mysteries has been described under MysTerizs, and points of similarity and diversity noted. Greek litera- ture was always hostile to the Orphic religion (cf. Eur., Hipp., 952 sq.; Plato, Rep., ii, 364; Theophr., Char., 25).

A large number of writings in the tone of the Orphic religion existed and were ascribed to Orpheus, as the poems of the Trojan and Theban cycles to Homer and Hesiod. The real names of the authors of these works were in many cases known to those who inquired into the matter, though the common people believed that all were written before the time of Homer by Orpheus (Herod., ii. 53). Aristotle declared that there had never been a poet Orpheus. The names of poets of the Orphic cycle can be traced as early as 550 B.c. Onomacritus is the most famous of them all (see ONomacritTus). These poems were recited at rhapsodic contests alongside of Homeric and Hesiodic works (Plato, Jon, 536). Orphic hymns were used in the mysteries at Phlya and Eleusis (Paus., 1x. 27, 2; 30, 5; 1. 14). The poems were a favourite sub- ject of study for the Alexandrian grammarians. Again in the controversies between Christian and pagan writers in the 3d and 4th centuries after Christ the Orphic religious poems played a great part: pagan

writers quoted them to show the real meaning of the multitude of gods, while Christians retorted by reference to the obscene and disgraceful fictions by which they degraded the gods.

The Orphic literature was united in a corpus, entitled ra ’Opdid, or Té els ’Oppéa avahepdueva; the different parts were connected, and the wholé prefaced by a dedication to Muszus as son and first initiate of Orpheus. The chief poem was 7 rod ‘Oppéws Peodroyla or pvoroila, which existed in several versions, showing consider- able variations. Tliere was also a collection of Orphic hymns, con- taining numerous liturgic songs used in the mysteries and in cxo- teric ceremonial; also practical treatises, “Epya nal ‘Huépat, and poems on stones, herbs, and plants, &c. These works have been lost, except fragments collected by Lobeck. There exist several poems called Orphic (Argonautica, Hymns, Lithica). These are very late works, composed at the time when paganism was passing away before Christianity.

The story of Orpheus, as was to be expected of a legend told both by Ovid and Boetius (bk. iii. cap, xxxv.), retained its popu- larity throughout the Middle Ages and was transformed into the likeness of a northern fairy tale. In English medizval literature it appears in three somewhat different versions:—Sir Orpheo, a “lay of Brittany” printed from the Harleian MS. in Ritson’s Ancient English Metrical Romances, vol. ii; Orpheo and Heurodis from the Auchinleck MS. in David Laing’s Select Remains of the Ancicnt Popular Poetry of Scotland ; and Kyng Orfew from the Ashmolean MS. in Halliwell’s Illustrations of Fairy Mythology (Shakespeare Soc., 1842), The poems bear trace of French influence,

ORPIMENT (auripigmentum), the trisulphide of arsenic, As,Sg, or yellow realgar, occurs in small quantities as a native mineral of a brilliant golden-yellow colour in Bohemia, Peru, &c. For industrial purposes an artificial orpiment is manufactured by subliming one part of sulphur with two of arsenious acid. The sublimate varies in colour from yellow to red, according to the intimacy of the combination of the ingredients ; and by varying the relative

quantities used many intermediate tones may be obtained. These artificial preparations all contain free arsenious acid, and are therefore highly poisonous. Formerly, under the name of king's yellow, a preparation of orpiment was in considerable use as a pigment, but now it has been largely superseded by chrome-yellow. It was also at one time used in dyeing and calico-printing, and for the unhairing of skins, &c.; but safer and equally efficient substitutes have been found.

ORRERY, Earts or. See Boys.

ORRIS-ROOT consists of the rhizomes or underground stems of three species of Iris, I. germanica, I. florentina, and J, pallida, closely allied plants growing in subtropical and temperate latitudes, but principally identified with North Italy. The three plants are indiscriminately culti- vated in the neighbourhood of Florence as an agricultural product under the name of "ghiaggiuolo." The rhizomes form joints of annual growth from 3 to 4 inches long; they branch and give off rootlets at the joints, and when these attain five years of age they begin to decay. When taken out of the ground the branches and rootlets are trimmed off, the brown bark removed, and the separated joints are put up to dry and mature. In its fresh condition orris-root contains an acrid juice and has an earthy odour, but 'it is quite destitute of the fragrance which ultimately characterizes the substance, and which develops fully only after a lapse of about two years, probably by fermenta- tion. As it comes into the market, orris-root is in the form of contorted sticks and irregular knobby pieces up to 4 inches in length, of a compact chalky appearance, having a delicate but distinct odour of violets. By distil- lation with water a crystalline body known as orris-camphor or oil of orris, possessing the fragrant properties of orris- root, is obtained. It is present in exceedingly small quantity, from 0°10 to 0°80 per cent., and Professor Fliickiger has demonstrated that the crude distillate con- sists only of myristic acid impregnated with or scented by the essential oil of orris, a body which may never be isolated owing to the necessarily minute quantities in which it could be produced. Orris-root has been a well- known and esteemed perfume from early Greek times. It is principally powdered for use in dentifrices and other scented dry preparations; but to some extent the crude oil is distilled for general perfumery purposes. It is also used in small pellets as issue peas.

ORSINI, Fericr (1819-1858), Italian patriot, was born in December 1819 at a small town in the Roman states uot far from Forli. He was educated for the church, but soon abandoned that career, and joined Mazzini's Young Italy Society in 1838. For engaging in revolutionary projects he was arrested Ist May 1844, and sentenced at Rome to the galleys for life, but by the amnesty proclaimed on the accession of Pius IX. he was restored to liberty. In 1848 he became leader of a band of youthful Romagnoli, distinguishing himself greatly at Vicenza and Treviso ; and in 1849 he was chosen a deputy to the Roman parliament. After the suppression of the revolution he became one of the most active agents of Mazzini, and while engaged in a mission to Hungary he was in December 1854 arrested at Hermannstadt and imprisoned at Mantua. A few months afterwards he made his escape by sawing through the bars of his cell, and in 1856 he published a narrative of his prison experiences under the title Austrian Dungeons in Italy. Some time after a rupture with Mazzini he went to Paris with the determination to assassinate Napoleon IIL, whom he regarded as the chief stumbling-block in the way of Italian independence, and the principal cause of the anti-liberal reaction in Europe. While the emperor and empress were returning from the opera on the evening of January 14, 1858, bombs were exploded at their carriage,

OR R—

Ok T

but without inflicting any injury on either. In the attempt Orsini had three associates, Pieri, Rudio, and Gomez. Gomez was pardoned, the sentence against Rudio was commuted on thé scaffold, but Orsini and Pieri were executed 13th March 1858. Orsini, whose action had an important influence in precipitating the campaign of 1859 (see vol. ix. p. 624), met his fate with great dignity and stoicism.

See Memoirs and Adventures of Felice Orsini written by himself, trauslated by George Carbonel, Edinburgh, 1857 ; Lettere Edite ed Inedite di Felice Orsini, 2 vols., Milan, 1861; Z Contemporanet Ltaliani—Feliee Orsini, by Enrico Montazio, Turin, 1862; La Verité sur Orsini, par un aneien Proscrit, 1879.

ORSK (Yaman-kala of the Kirghiz), a district town of Orenburg, Russia, 155 miles to the east-south-east of the capital of the government, on the right bank of the Ural, was originally founded in 1735 as the principal Russian fort against the attacks of the Kirghiz. Though this was afterwards transferred to Orenburg, the town of Orsk has increased rapidly within the last few years, owing to the fertility of the surrounding country, to immigration, and to the growth of trade with the Kirghiz. The population, only 6000 some fifteen years ago, reached 14,350 in 1880, and has since become larger.

ORTELIUS, Orrett, or OERTEL, ABRAHAM, next to Mercator the greatest geographer of his age, was born at Antwerp in 1527, and died in the same city on June 28, 1598. He visited various parts of the Netherlands and Germany (1575), England and Ireland (1577), and Italy on several occasions. His Vheatrum Orlis Terrarum (published at Antwerp in 1570, and reissued in a revised form five times during his lifetime) was the first modern atlas, Mercator having, it is said, delayed the appearance of his collection out of consideration for his friend. Most of the maps were admittedly reproductions, and no attempt was made to reconcile discrepancies of delineation or nomen- elature. To the modern eye even England and Scotland appear with amusing distortions (the Mons Grampius, ¢.g., lies between the Forth and the Clyde); but, taken as a whole, the noble folio, with its well-nigh one hundred maps, and its careful accompaniment of text, was a monument of rare erudition and industry; and the author well deserved the appointment to be cosmographer to Philip II. bestowed upon him in 1575.

See Macedo in Annales des Voyages, ii., and Gérard in Bull. de la soe. géogr. d’ Anvers, 1880.

ORTHONYX, the scientific name given in 1820, by Temminck, to a little bird, which, from the straightness of its claws,—a character somewhat exaggerated by him,— its large feet and spiny tail, he judged to be generically distinct from any other form. Concerning its affinities much doubt has long prevailed, and this has been only lately set at rest. The typical species, O. spinicauda, is from south-eastern Australia, where it is said to be very local in its distribution, and strictly terrestrial in its habits. In

the course of time two other small birds from New Zealand, where they are known as the “ Whitehead” and “Yellowhead,” were referred to the genus, under the names of O. albicilla! and O. ochrocephala, and then the question of its affinity became more interesting. By some systematists it was supposed to belong to the otherwise purely Neotropical Dendrocolaptede, and in that case would have been the sole representative of the Tracheo-

1 Jt may be charitably conjectured that the nomenclator intended to write albicapilla.

phone Passeres in the Australian Region. Others con- sidered it one of the nearest relatives of Menwra, and if that view were correct it would add a third form to the small section of Pseudoscines (see LyRE-BirD, vol. xv. p. 115) ;- while Sundevall, in 1872, placed it not far from Timelia, among a group the proper sorting of which will probably for years tax the ingenuity of ornithologists. The late Mr W. A. Forbes shewed (Proc. Zool. Soc., 1882, p. 544) that this last position was the most correct, as Orthonyx spinicauda proved on dissection to be one of the true Oscines, but yet to stand, so far as is known, alone among birds of that group, or any other group of Passeres, in consequence of the superficial course taken by the (left) earotid artery, which is nowhere contained in the subver- tebral canal. Whether this discovery will require the segregation of the genus as the representative of a separate Family Orthonycide—which has been proposed by Mr Salvin (Catal. Coll. Strickland, p. 294)—remains to be seen. J orbes also demonstrated that one at least of the two New-Zealand species above mentioned, O. ochrocephala, had been wrongly referred to this genus, and they there- fore at present stand as Clitonyx. This isa point of some little importance in its bearing on the relationship of the fauna of the two countries, for Orthonyx was supposed to be one of the few genera of Land-birds common to both. The typical species of Orthonyx—for the scientific name has been adopted in English—is rather larger than a Skylark, coloured above not unlike a Hedge-Sparrow. The wings are, however, barred with white, and the chin, throat, and breast are in the male pure white, but of a bright reddish-orange in the female. The remiges are very short, rounded, and much incurved, showing a bird of weak flight. The rectrices are very

broad, the shafts stiff, and towards the tip divested of barbs. ‘Two other species that seem rightly to belong to the genus have been described—O. spaldingi from Queensland, of much greater size than the type, and with a jet-black plumage, and 0. nove-guinex, from the great island of that name, which seems closely to resemble O. spinicauda. (a. N.) ORTOLAN (French, Ortolan), the Emberiza hortulana of Linnzeus, a bird so celebrated for the delicate flavour of its flesh as to have become proverbial. A native of most European countries—the British Islands (in which it occurs but rarely) excepted—as well as of western Asia, it emigrates in autumn presumably to the southward of the Mediterranean, though its winter quarters cannot be said to be accurately known, and returns about the end of April or beginning of May. Its distribution throughout its breeding-range seems to be very local, and for this no reason can be assigned. It was long ago said in France, and apparently with truth, to prefer wine-growing districts ; but it certainly does not feed upon grapes, and is found equally in countries where vineyards are unknown—reach- ing in Scandinavia even beyond the arctic circle—and then generally frequents corn-fields and their neighbourhood. In appearance and habits it much resembles its congener the YELLOW-HAMMER (q.v.), but wants the bright colouring of that species, its head for instance being of a greenish- grey instead of a lively yellow. The somewhat monotonous song of the cock is also much of the same kind; and, where the bird is a familiar object to the country people, who usually associate its arrival with the return of fair weather, they commonly apply various syllabic interpreta- tions to its notes, just as our boys do to those of the Yellow-hammer. The nest is placed on or near the ground, but the eggs seldom shew the hair-like markings so characteristic of those of most Buntings, Ortolans are netted in great numbers, kept alive in an artificially lighted or darkened room, and fed with oats and other seeds. In a very short time they become enormously fat,

and are then killed for the table. If, as is supposed, the Ortolan be the Miliaria of Varro, the practice of artifici- ally fattening birds of this species is very ancient. In French the word Ortolan is used so as to be almost syn- onymous with the English “ Bunting”—thus the Ortolan- de-neige is the Snow-Bunting (Plectrophanes nivalis), the Ortolan-de-riz is the Rice-bird or

“Bobolink” of North America (Dolichonyx oryzivorus), so justly celebrated for its delicious flavour; but the name is also applied to other birds much more distantly related, for the Ortolan of some of the Antilles, where French is spoken, is a little Ground- Dove of the genus Chamepelia.

In Europe the Beccafico (Figeater) shares with the Ortolan the highest honours of the dish, and this may be a convenient place to point out that the former is a name of equally elastic signification. The true Beccajfico is said to be what is known in England as the Garden-Warbler (the Motacilla salicaria of Linneus, the Sylvia hortensis of many writers); but in Italy any soft-billed small bird that can be snared or netted in its autumnal emigration passes under the name in the markets and cook-shops. The “ Beccafico,” however, is not as a rule artificially fattened, and on this account is preferred by some sensi- tive tastes to the Ortolan. (A. N.)

ORVIETO, a town in Umbria, Italy, on the main road from Florence to Rome, situated on an almost isolated voleanic rock, about 770 feet above the plain. It is now the capital of a province, the seat of a bishop, and in 188] had a population of 8626. The town is of Etruscan origin, and is said to have joined the Volscians in their war against Rome; it is the Urbibentwm of Procopius (with which the Herbanwm of Pliny has been conjecturally identified), and the medieval Urbs Vetus (whence the modern name). Owing to the strong Guelphic sympathies of the inhabitants, and the inaccessible nature of the site, Orvieto has been constantly used as a place of refuge by the popes, of whom no less than thirty-two -have at different times found shelter there. The town is very picturesque, both from its magnificent position and also from the unusually large number of fine 13th-century houses and palaces which still exist in its streets. The chief glory of the place is its splendid cathedral, dedicated to the Virgin ; it was founded in 1290 by Nicholas IV. on the site of an older church ; it was designed by Lorenzo Maitani, a Sienese architect, and from the 13th till the 16th century was enriched by the labours of a whole succession of great Italian painters and sculptors (see OrcaGNa). The exterior is covered with black and white marble; the interior is of grey limestone with bands of a dark basaltic stone. The plan consists of large rectangular nave, with semicircular recesses for altars, opening out of the aisles, north and south. There are two transeptal chapels, and a short choir. The most magnificent part of the exterior is the

west facade, built of richly-sculptured marble, divided into three gables with intervening pinnacles, much resembling the front of Siena cathedral, the work of the same architect. The mosaics are modern, and the whole church has suffered greatly from recent ‘restoration.” The four wall-surfaces that flank the three western door- ways are decorated with very beautiful sculpture in relief, once ornamented with colour, the work mainly of pupils of Niccold Pisano, at the end of the 13th century. This at least is Vasari’s statement. Giovanni Pisano, Arnolfo del Cainbio, and Fra Guglielmo da Pisa were the chief of these. The subjects are scenes from the Old and New Testaments, and the Final Doom, with Heaven and Hell. In the interior on the north, the Cappella del Corporale possesses a large silver shrine, enriched with countless figures in relief and subjects in translucent coloured enamels —one of the most important specimens of early silver-

ot

smith’s work that yet exists in Italy. It was begun by Ugolino Veri of Siena in 1338, and was made to contain the Holy Corporal from Bolsena, which, according to the legend, became miraculously stained with blood during the celebration of mass to convince a sceptical priest of the truth of the doctrine of transubstantiation. This is supposed to have happened in the middle of the 13th century, while Urban IV. was residing at Orvieto; and it was to commemorate this miracle that the existing cathedral was built. On the south side is the chapel of S. Brizio, separated from the nave by a fine 14th-century wrought-iron screen. The walls and vault of this chapel are covered with some of the best-preserved and finest frescos in Italy—among the noblest works of Fra Angelico, his pupil Benozzo Gozzoli, and Luca Signorelli, mainly painted between 1450 and 1501,—the latter being of especial importance in the history of art owing to their great influence on Michelangelo in his early days (see Symonds, Renaissance in Italy—Fine Arts, pp. 278-291). The choir stalls are fine and elaborate specimens of tarsia and rich wood-carving—the work of various Sienese artists in the 14th century. In 16th-century sculpture the cathedral is especially rich, containing many statues, groups, and altar-reliefs by Simone Mosca, Ippolito Scalza, and Gian di Bologna,—some of them well designed and care- fully executed, but all showing strongly the rapid decay into which the art of that time was falling. The well, now disused, called Il pozzo di S.

Patrizio, is one of the chief curiosities of Orvieto. It is 180 feet deep to the water-level and 46 feet in diameter, cut in the rock, with a double winding inclined plane, so that oxen could ascend and descend to carry up the water from the bottom. It was begun by the architect San Gallo in 1527 for Clement VIL., who fled to Orvieto after the sack of Rome, and was finished by Simone Mosca under Paul III. It resembles in many respects the “Well of Joseph” (Saladin) in the citadel of Cairo. The Palazzo Faina has an interesting collection of objects found in Etruscan tombs, of which a large number exist in the neighbourhood of Orvieto. The church of S. Domenico contains one of the finest works in sculpture by Arnolfo del Cambio. This is the tomb with recumbent effigy of the Cardinal Brago or De Braye (1282), with much beautiful sculpture and mosaic. It is signed HOC OPVS FECIT ARNVLFVS. It was imitated by Giovanni Pisano in his monument to Pope Benedict XI. at Perugia.

See Guglielmo della Valle, Storia del Duomo di Orvieto (1791), and Stampe del Duomo di Orvieto (1791); Luzi, Descrizione del Duomo di Orvieto, &c., 1836; Cicognara, Storia della Scultura, 2d ed., 1823-24 ; Perkins, Tuscan Sculptors, 1864; Vasari, Vite det prttori, &c., Milanesi’s ed., 1878-82; Gruner, Die Basreliefs des Doms zu Orvieto, 1858 ; Crowe and Cavaleasclle, Painting in Italy, vols. i. and iii, 1866; Benois, Cathédrale ad Orvieto, 1877. For Etruscan remains see Dennis, Cities of Etruria, ii. p. 36, 1878.

ORYEKHOFF-ZUYEFF, or Oryexnovsxry Pocost, a village of European Russia, in the Pokroff district of the Vladimir government, 12 miles west of Pokroff by rail, on the Klyazma, a subtributary of the Volga. A great cotton factory in the vicinity has become the centre of a new town, which is called after the village, but also frequently Nikolskoye. About 12,600 hands are employed in the cotton manufacture itself, and about 6000 in digging peats and making bricks for the firm. There are forty-two steam engines (978 horse-power), and goods were manufactured to the value of 8,328,000 roubles in 1881 (2,590,000 in 1861). The cotton is procured from Asia and western Europe, and the goods are sold throughout southern and south-eastern Russia.

OSBORN, Suxerarp (1822-187 5), English admiral and explorer, was the son of Lieutenant-Colonel Osborn of the

Madras army, and was born 25th April 1899. Entering

OR Y—

Os ©

the navy as a first-class volunteer in 1837, he was in the following year entrusted, though only a midshipman, with the command of a gunboat, the “ Emerald,” at the attack on Kedah. He was present at the reduction of Canton in 1841, and at the capture of the batteries of Woo- sung in the following year. Having passed lieutenant in 1844, he was in the same year appointed gunnery mate of the “Collingwood,” under Sir George Seymour in the Pacific. On account of his interest in the fate of many of his friends and messmates, he took a prominent part in advocating a new search expedition for Sir John Franklin. When it was agreed upon he was appointed to the com- mand of one of the ships, and performed a remarkable sledge journey to the western extremity of Prince of Wales Island, of which he published an account entitled Stray Leaves from an Arctic Journal, 1852. In the new expedi- tion fitted out in the spring of that year he also took part as commander of the “ Pioneer,” and, after spending two trying winters up Wellington Channel, returned home in 1855. In 1856 he published the journals of Robert M‘Clure, giving a narrative of the discovery of the North-West Passage. Shortly after his return he was called to active service in connexion with the Russian war; and in com- mand of a light squadron of gunboats on the Sea of Azoff he distinguished himself in the destruction of the stores of the enemy at various points on the coast. Receiving post rank, he was appointed to the “ Medusa,” in which he continued to command the Sea of Azoff squadron until the conclusion of peace. As commander of the “ Furious ” he took a prominent part in the second Chinese war, during which he performed the remarkable feat of proving the navigability of the Yang-tsze, by taking the “ Furious ” as far up the river as Hankow, 600 miles from the sea. In 1859 he returned to England in broken health, and to support his family engaged in literary pursuits, contribut- ing many important articles to Blackwood’s Magazine, and publishing in December of that year The Career, Last Voyage, and Fate

of Sir John Franklin. In 1864 he was appointed to the command of the “ Royal Sovereign,” to assist Captain Coles in his experiments regarding the turret system of shipbuilding. Retiring soon afterwards on half pay, he was in 1865 appointed agent to the Great Indian Peninsula Railway Company, and in 1867 man- aging director of the Telegraph Construction and Maintenance Company, for the construction of a submarine system of telegraphy between Great Britain and her Eastern and Australian dependencies. In 1873 he was promoted rear-admiral. Continuing to interest himself in Arctic exploration, he induced A. H. Markham to visit Baffin’s Bay in a whaler to report on the possibility of ice-naviga- tion with the aid of steam. A record of his observations was published under the title of a Whaling Cruise to Bafin’s Bay in 1873, with the result that a new Arctic expedition was fitted out in 1874. Osborn died 6th May

1875.

OSCANS, or Opicans, was the name given both by Greeks and Romans to one of the ancient nations of cen- tral Italy. There can be no doubt that the original form of the name was Opscus, which, as we learn from Festus, was still used by Ennius. This the Greeks softened into Opicus, while the Latin writers always used Oscus as a national appellation, though they occasionally employ the term “opicus” in the sense of barbarous or ignorant. It is singular that, though there can be no doubt the name was a national one, it is not found in history as the name of any particular nation. No mention occurs of the Oscans among the populations of Italy that were succes- sively reduced by the Roman arms; but we learn inciden- tally from a passage in Livy (x. 20) that the language of the Samnites and Campanians was Oscan ; and it is cer-

tain that this continued to be the vernacular tongue of the people of Italy until long after the Roman conquest. Of the ethnical affinities or origin of the Oscans we know nothing, except what may be gathered philologically from the remains of their language ; and their relations with the Samnites and other Sabellian tribes, whom we find during the historical period settled in this part of Italy, are extremely obscure. Perhaps the most plausible theory is that they were in very early times the inhabitants of the regions

subsequently occupied by a race of invaders from the north, who were known as Sabines, Samnites, and Sabellians, but who, being comparatively few in numbers, and in an inferior stage of civilization, gradually adopted the language of the conquered race (see Iraty, vol. xiii.

. 445).

3 It 2 certain that the Oscan language continued in com- mon use as a vernacular dialect till the close of the Roman republic. Ennius boasted that he was possessed of three tongues because he could speak Latin, Greek, and Oscan (Gell. xvii. 17); and at the time of the Social War (88 B.c.) the allies made an attempt to introduce it as the official language, and struck coins with Oscan inscriptions bearing the names of Viteliu (for Italia), Safinim, cc. After the failure of that movement there can be no doubt that the language was never again employed for official purposes, though it would linger long in use among the rustic populations of the mountains. Nor was it altogether without a literature, for the Pabule Atellanex, a kind of rude farces popular among the Romans, not only derived their names and origin from the Oscan district of Campania, but were undoubtedly in the first instance composed and recited in the Oscan dialect. The monuments of the language which have been preserved to us by inscriptions are much more numerous than those of any other ancient Italian dialect. The principal of them are enumerated in the article above referred to, and they are all collected and examined in detail by Professor Mommsen in his Unter- Ltalischen Dialekte (Leipsic, 1850). The general result is that the Oscan language must have resembled the Latin much more closely than any other of the Italian dialects, but wanted almost entirely the Greek or Pelasgic element which is found so distinctly in the more cultivated language, and which formed the basis of the Messapian and other dialects of the southern part of the Italian penin- sula.

See Huschke, Die Oskischen und Sabellischen Denkmdler, Elber- feld, 1856.

OSHKOSH, a city of the United States, capital of Winnebago county, Wisconsin, stretches from the west side of Lake Winnebago for about 3 miles up Fox River to Lake Buttes des Morts, and covers an area of about 8 square miles. By rail the distance from Milwaukee is 84 miles. Oshkosh is

the seat of the United States district court for the eastern district of Wisconsin ; and, besides the court-house, it contains the State normal school, a fine high school, and two opera-houses. The leading industry is the manufacture of sashes, doors, and blinds. Lumber shingles, matches, trunks, and carriages are also manufactured, and there are foundries, match-factories, flour-mills, and breweries. The population was 6085 in 1860, 12,663 in 1870, and 15,748 in 1880. Oshkosh may be said to date from 1836; it was in- corporated in 1853. In 1859, 1866, 1874, and 1875 it suffered severely from conflagrations.

OSIANDER, Anprzas (1498-1552), German Reformer, was born at Gunzenhausen, near Nuremberg, on December 19, 1498. His German name was Heiligmann, or, ac- cording to others, Hosemann. After studying at Leipsic, Altenburg, and Ingolstadt, he was ordained in 1520 to the priesthood, when he became Hebrew tutor in the Augus-

a)

tinian convent at Nuremberg. Two years afterwards ho was appointed preacher in the St Lorenz Kirche, and about the same time he publicly joined the Lutheran party, taking a prominent part in the discussion which ultimately led to the adoption of the Reformation by the city. He married in 1525. As a theologian of recognized ability and influence, he was present at the Marburg con- ference in 1529, at the Augsburg diet in 1530, and at the signing of the Smalkald articles in 1537, and took part in other public transactions of importance in the history of the Reformation ; if he had an exceptionally large number of personal enemies the circumstance can be readily explained by his vehemence, coarseness, and arrogance as a controversialist. The introduction of the Augsburg Interim in 1548 necessitated his departure from Nurem- berg; he went first to Breslau, and afterwards settled at Kénigsberg as professor in the new university there at the call of Duke Albert of Prussia. Here in 1550 he published two disputations, the one De Lege et Hvangelio and the other De Justificatione, which aroused a vehement controversy that was not brought to a close by his death in 1552 (Octo- ber 17). The nature of the dispute has been indicated elsewhere (see LuruErans, vol. xv. p. 85). The party was

afterwards led by Funk, Osiander's son-in-law, but disappeared after his execution for high treason in 1566.

Osiander, besides a number of controversial writings, published a corrected edition of the Vulgate, with notes, in 1522, and a Harmony of the Gospels —the first work of its kind—in 1537. His son Lukas Osiander (1534-1604), a prominent ecclesiastic in Wiir- temberg, published a Biblia Latina ad fontes Hebr. text. emendata cum brevi et perspicua expositione illustrata (1573-86) in seven quarto volumes, whivh was highly appreciated in its day, an Jnsti- tutio Christiane Religionis (1576), and, his best-known work, an Epitome of the Magdeburg Centuries. Several other Osianders, also descendants of Andreas, figure with more or less prominence in the theological literature of Germany.

OSIRIS. See Ecypt, vol vii. p. 716.

OSKALOOSA, a city of the United States, capital of Mahaska county, Iowa, about 55 miles south-east of Des Moines. It lies on high ground between the Des Moines and the South Skunk, in a fine agricultural district, with coal and iron mines in the vicinity; and it contains two colleges—Oskaloosa College (1861), belonging to the "Disciples," and Penn College (1873), a Quaker institu- tion—flour-mills, wool-factories, iron and brass foundries, lumber yards, &c., and an artesian well 2900 feet deep. The population, 3204 in 1870 and 4598 in 1880, is esti- mated at over 7000 in 1884.

OSMAN. This transcription of the Arabic name 'Othman (which first appears in history as borne by the famous companion of Mohammed, and third caliph, see vol. xvi. pp. 548, 563) corresponds to the pronunciation of the Persians and Turks, and is therefore commonly used in speaking of Osman I. Ghazi, the founder of the dynasty of Osmanli or Ottoman Turks. He took the title of sultan in 699 a.u. (1299 a.p.), ruled in Asia Minor, and died in 726 aH. Osman IL., the sixteenth Ottoman sultan, came to the throne in 1616 .D., and was strangled in a sedition of the Janissaries in 1621. See TURKEY.

OSMIUM,, See PLATINUM.

OSNABRUCK, a prosperous manufacturing town of Prussia, the see of a Roman Catholic bishop, and the capital of a district of its own name in the province of Hanover, is pleasantly situated on the Hase, 70 miles to the west of the town of Hanover. The older streets are narrow and crooked, containing many interesting examples of Gothic and Renaissance domestic architecture, while the substantial houses of the modern quarters testify to the present well-being of the town. The old fortifications have been converted into promenades. The Roman Catholic cathedral, with its three towers, is a spacious building of the 12th century, partly in the Romanesque and partly in

the Transitional style; but it is inferior in architectural interest to the Marienkirche, a fine Gothic structure of the 14th century. The town-house contains portraits of the plenipotentiaries engaged in concluding the peace of West- phalia, the negotiations for which were partly carried on here, . Among the other principal buildings are the episco- pal residence, the law courts, the two gymnasia, the com- mercial school, and various other educational and charitable institutions. The museum contains antiquities and objects of natural history. The lunatic asylum on the Gertruden- berg occupies the site of an ancient nunnery. Linen was formerly the staple product of Osnabriick, but no longer takes so prominent a position among its manufactures, which now include paper, dyes, chemicals, machinery, nails, pianos, tobacco, and cotton. There are also large iron and steel works and a rolling mill. A brisk trade is carried on in grain, drugs, linen, and Westphalian hams, and import- ant cattle and horse fairs are held here at regular inter- vals. Osnabriick contains (1880) 32,812 inhabitants, one- third of whom are Roman Catholics. The patriotic writer and philanthropist Julius Méser (1720-94) was a native of Osnabriick, and has a statue in the cathedral square.

Osnabriick is a place of very ancient origin, and in 888 received the right to establish a mint, an annual fair, and a custom-house. It was surrounded with walls towards the close of the 11th century. The bishopric to which it gave name was founded by Charlemagne after the subjugation of the Saxon inhabitants of the district (c. 790), and embraced what was afterwards the

south-west part of the kingdom of Hanover. The town maintained a very independent attitude towards its nominal rulers, the bishops, and joined the Hanseatic League. It reached the height of its prosperity in the 15th century, but the decay inaugurated by the dissensions of the Reformation was accelerated by the trials of the Thirty Ycars' War. The peace of Westphalia decreed that the bishopric of Westphalia should be held alternately by a Roman Catholic and a Protestant bishop, and this curious state of affairs lasted down to its seculariza- tion in 1803. The last bishop was the late duke of York. Since 1859 Osnabriick has again been the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop, who, of course, has no territorial jurisdiction. The revived pro- sperity of the town dates from the middle of last century.

OSORIO, Geronymo (1506-1580), "the Cicero of Portugal," belonged to a noble family, and was born at Lisbon in 1506. After studying languages at Salamanca, philosophy at Paris, and theology at Bologna, he rose through successive ecclesiastical dignities to the bishopric of Sylves. He evaded the necessity of accompanying Dom Sebastian on his first African expedition (which he did all in his power to discourage) only by setting out for Rome, where he was well received by Gregory XIII. The disaster which overtook the Portuguese arms at Alcazarquivir in 1578 had a serious effect on Osorio's health and spirits ; he withdrew into solitude, and died at Tavira on August 20,

1580.

His principal work, a history of the reign of King Emanuel I. (De rebus Emmanuelis Lusitanize regis invictissimi virtute et auspicio domi forisque gestis libri XII., 1571), undertaken at the request of Cardinal Henry, entitles him to considerable literary rank, not only by pure Latinity and artistic arrangement, but also by historical accuracy and insight, as well as by impartiality and clevation of tone. An English translation appeared in 1752; and versions in French, German, and Dutch also exist. Osorio's De gloria libri V. (1552), and his double treatise De nobilitate civili et de nobilitate Christiana (1542) have been often reprinted; of the former D'Alembert is reported to have declared that it was really a production of Cicero's palmed off by the modern as his own. Osorio also published De regis institutione et disciplina libri VIII. (1574) and a large mass of theological matter,

including commen. taries on the Epistle to the Romans, the Gospel according to John, and some of the minor prophets. His Admonitio and Epistola to Queen Elizabeth of England are polemical treatises. The Opera Omnia of Osorio were collected and published at Rome by his nephew in 1592 (4 vols. folio).

OSPREY, or Ospray, a word said to be corrupted from “ Ossifrage,” in Latin Ossifraga or bone-breaker. The Ossifraga of Pliny (1. W., x. 3) and some other classical writers seems, as already said, to have been the LAmMMER- GHYER (vol. xiv. p. 244); but the name, not inapplicable

in that case, has been transferred—through a not uncommon but inexplicable confusion—to another bird which is no breaker of bones, save incidentally those of the fishes it devours! The Osprey is a rapacious bird, of middling size and of conspicuously-marked plumage, the white of its lower parts, and often of its head, contrasting sharply with the dark brown of the back and most of its upper parts when the bird is seen on the wing. It is the Falco haliaetus of Linneeus, but unquestionably deserving generic separation was, in 1810, established by Savigny (Ois, de V Egypte, p. 35) as the type of a new genus which he was pleased to term Pandion—a name since pretty generally accepted. It has commonly been kept in the Family Falconidx, but of late regarded as the representa- tive of a separate Family, Pandionidx, for which view not a little can be said.2 Pandion differs from the Falconidx not only pterylologically, as long ago observed by Nitzsch, but also osteologically, as pointed out by M. Alphonse Milne-Edwards (Ots. Moss. France, ii. pp. 418, 419), and it is a curious fact that in some of the characters in which it differs structurally from the Falconidx, it agrees with certain of the Owls; but the most important parts of its internal structure, as well as of its pterylosis, quite forbid a belief that there is any near alliance of the two groups. The Osprey is one of the most cosmopolitan Birds-of-Prey. From Alaska to Brazil, from Lapland to Natal, from Japan to Tasmania, and in some of the islands of the Pacific, it occurs as a winter-visitant oras a resident. The countries which it does not frequent would be more easily named than those in which it is found—and among the former are Iceland and New Zealand. Though migratory in Europe at least, it is

generally independent of climate. It breeds equally on the half-thawed shores of Hudson's Bay and on the cays of Honduras, in the dense forests of Finland and on the barren rocks of the Red Sea, in Kamchatka and in West Australia. Where, through abundance of food, it is numerous—as in former days was the case in the eastern part of the United States—the nests of the Fish-Hawk (to use its American name) may be placed on trees to the number of three hundred close together. Where food is scarcer and the species accord- ingly less plentiful, a single pair will occupy an isolated rock, and jealously expel all intruders of their kind, as happens in Scotland.? The lover of birds cannot see many more enjoyable spectacles than an Osprey engaged in fishing—poising itself aloft, with upright body, and wings beating horizontally, ere it plunges like a plummet beneath the water, and immediately after reappears shaking a shower of drops from its plumage. The feat of carrying off an Osprey's eggs is often difficult, and attended with some risk, but has more than once tempted the most daring of birds' nesters. Apart from the dangerous situa- tion not unfrequently chosen by the birds for their eyry,— a steep rock in a lonely lake, only to be reached after a

1 Another supposed old form of the name is " Orfraie "; but that is said by M. Rolland (Faune popul. France, ii. p. 9, note), quoting M. Suchier (Zeitschr. Rim. Philol., i. p. 482), to arise from a mingling of two wholly different sources:—(1) Oripelargus, Oriperagus, Orprats, and (2) Ossifraga. " Orfraie" again is occasionally interchanged with Efraie (which, through such dialectical forms as Fresaie, Fressaia, is said to come from the Latin presaga), the ordinary French name for the Barn-Owl, Aluco flammeus (see OWL, infra, p. 91); but the subject is too complex for any but an expert philologist to treat, According to Prof. Skeat's Dictionary (i. p. 408), " Asprey" is the oldest English form ; but " Osprey" dates from Cotgrave at least.

2 Mr Sharpe goes further, aud makes a "Suborder" Pandiones; but the characters on which he founds such an important division are obviously inadequate. The other genus associated with Pandion by him has been shown by Mr Gurney (Zd7s, 1878, p. 455) to be nearly allied to the ordinary Sea-Hagles (Haliaetus), and therefore one of the true Falconide.

3 Two good examples of the different localities chosen by this bird for its nest are illustrated in Ootheca Wolleyana, pls. B. & H.

long swim through chilly water, or the summit of a very tall tree,—their fierceness in defence of their eggs and young is not to be despised. Men and boys have had their head gashed by the sharp claw of the angry parent, and this happening when the robber is already in a pre- carious predicament, and unable to use any defensive weapon, renders the enterprise formidable. But the prize is worthy of the danger. Few birds lay eggs so beautiful or so rich in colouring: their white or pale ground is spotted, blotched, or marbled with almost every shade of purple, orange, and red—passing from the most delicate lilac, buff, and peach-blossom, through violet, chestnut, and crimson, to a nearly absolute black. A few years ago some of the best-informed ornithologists were led to think that perse- cution had exterminated the Osprey from Great Britain, except as a chance visitant. This opinion proved to be incorrect, and at the present time the bird is believed still to breed in at least two counties of Scotland, but the secret of its resorts is carefully guarded by those who wish to retain it as a member of the country's fauna, for publica- tion would doubtless speedily put an end to its occu- pancy. (A. N.) OSRHOENE, or OrrwoEns, the district of western Mesopotamia of which Edessa was the capital (see MEsoporamtia, vol. xvi. p. 47). It may be here added that the older form of the name appears to be Chosroene (Chosdroene). Edessa or Orrhoi thus appears to have been "the city of Chosrau," implying an early Parthian influence. See G. Hoffmann in 7. D. M. G., xxxii. 743. OSSETT-CUM-GAWTHORPE, a township and urban sanitary district in the West Riding of Yorkshire, includ- ing the contiguous hamlets of Ossett, South Ossett, and Gawthorpe, is situated about 3 miles west-north-west of Wakefield, and 14 north-west from the Horbury station on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway. The Great Northern Railway has two stations in the township. The church of the Holy Trinity, a fine cruciform structure in the Early Decorated style, was erected in 1865 at a cost of £20,000. There are woollen cloth and mungo mills, and in the neighbourhood extensive collieries. The population of the township (3105 acres) in 1871 was 9190, and in 1881 it was 10,957. OSSIAN, or O1sin. See Centre Literaturs, vol. v. pp. 311, 318, and Gagtic Litzrators,

vol. x. p. 13. OSSOLI, Saran Marcaret FuLier, MARCHIONESS, (1810-1850), an American authoress, was the eldest child of Timothy Fuller, a lawyer and politician of some emlinence, and was born at Cambridge Port, Massachusetts, 23d May 1810. Her education was conducted by her father, who, she states, made the mistake of thinking to “gain time by bringing forward the intellect as early as possible,” the consequence being “a premature develop- ment of brain that made her a youthful prodigy by day, and by night a victim of spectral illusions, nightmare, and somnambulism.” At six years she began to read Latin, and at a very early age she had selected as her favourite authors Shakespeare, Cervantes, and Moliére. Soon the great amount of study exacted of her ceased to be a burden, and reading became a habit and a passion. Having made herself familiar with the masterpieces of French, Italian, and Spanish literature, she in 1833 began the study of German, and within the year had read some of the masterpieces of Goethe, Kérner, Novalis, and Schiller. Her father dying in 1835, she went in 1836 to Boston to teach languages, and in 1837 she was chosen principal teacher in the Green Street school, Providence, Rhode Island, where she remained till 1839. From this year until 1844 she stayed at different places in the immediate neighbourhood of Boston, forming an intimate acquaintance with the colonists of Brook Farm, and number-

o7

ing among her closest friends R. W. Emerson, Nathaniel Hawthorne, and W. E. Channing. In 1839 she pub- lished a translation of Eckermann’s Conversations with Goethe, which was followed in 1841 by a translation of the Letters of Giinderode and Bettina. Aided by R. W. Emerson and George Ripley, she in 1840 started “he Dial, a poetical and philosophical magazine representing the opinions and aims of the New England Transcendentalists. This journal she continued to edit for two years, and while in Boston she also conducted conversation classes for ladies in which philosophical and social subjects were discussed with a somewhat over-accentuated earnestness, and which may be regarded as perhaps the beginning of the modern movement in behalf of women’s rights. R. W. Emerson, who had met her as early as 1836, thus describes her appearance :—‘“‘ She was then twenty-six years old. She had a face and frame that would indicate fulness and tenacity of life. She was rather under the middle height ; her

complexion was fair, with strong fair hair. She was then, as always, carefully and becomingly dressed, and of ladylike self-possession. For the rest her appearance had nothing prepossessing. Her extreme plainness, a trick of incessantly opening and shutting her eyelids, the nasal tone of her voice, all repelled ; and I said to myself we shall never get far." On fuller acquaintance this unprepossess- ing exterior seemed, however, to melt away, and her inordinate self-esteem to be lost in the depth and univer- sality of her sympathy. She possessed an almost irresist- ible power of winning the intellectual and moral confidence of those with whom she came in contact, and " applied herself to her companion as the sponge applied itself to water." She obtained from each the best they had to give. It was indeed more as a conversationalist than as a writer that she earned the title of the Priestess of Transcendentalism. It was her intimate friends who admired her most. Smart and pungent though she is as a writer, any originality that seems to characterize her views partakes more of wayward eccentricity than either intel- lectual depth or imaginative vigour. In 1844 she removed to New York to become contributor to The Tribune, and in 1846 she published a selection from her criticisms on con- temporary authors in Europe and America, under the title Papers on Art and Literature. The same year she paid a visit to Europe, passing some time in England and France, and finally taking up her residence in Italy. There she was married in December 1847 to the Marquis Giovanni Angelo Ossoli, a friend of Mazzini. During 1848-49 she was present with her husband in Rome, and when the city was besieged she, at the request of Mazzini, took charge of one of the two hospitals while her husband fought on the walls. In May 1850, along with her husband and infant son, she embarked at Leghorn for America, but when they had all but reached their destination the vessel was wrecked on Fire Island beach, and the Ossolis were among the passengers who perished.

The Autobiography of Margaret Fuller Ossoli, with additional Memoirs by J. F. Clarke, R. W. Emerson, and W. E. Channing, was published in 1852, the last edition being that of 1874. See also Margaret Fuller (Marchesa Ossolt), by Julia Ward Howe, 1883, in the Eminent Women Series. Her collected works were also published in 1874.

OSTADE. The Ostades are Dutch painters of note, whose ancestors were settled at Eyndhoven, near the small village of Ostaden, from which they took their name. Early in the 17th century Jan Hendricx, a weaver, moved with his family from Eyndhoven to Haarlem, where he married and founded a large family. The eldest and youngest of his sons became celebrated artists.

I. Aprian OstaDE (1610-1685), the first of Jan Hen- dricx's boys, was born at Haarlem shortly before the 10th December 1610, when he was christened in presence

of several witnesses. His death took place on the 27th April, his burial on the 2d May 1685, at Haarlem. According to Houbraken he was taught by Frans Hals, at that time master of Adrian Brouwer. At twenty-six he joined a company of the civic guard at Haarlem ; at twenty- eight he married his first wife, who lived till 1642. He speedily married again, but again became a widower in 1666. Persons curious of matters connected with the lives of famous men may visit the house in the Kénigsstraat at Haarlem where Adrian Ostade lived in 1657, or that of the Ridderstraat which he occupied in 1670. He took the highest honours of his profession, the presidency of the painters' guild at Haarlem, in 1662. Amongst the treasures of the Louvre collection, a striking picture represents the father of a large family sitting in state with his wife at his side ina handsomely furnished room, sur- rounded by his son and five daughters, and a young married couple. It is an old tradition that Ostade here painted himself and his children in holiday attire ; yet the style is much too refined for the painter of boors, and pitiless records tell us that Ostade had but one daughter. The number of Ostade's pictures is given by Smith at three hundred and eighty-five. It is probable that he painted many more. At his death the stock of his unsold pieces was over two hundred. His engraved plates were put up to auction, with the pictures, and fifty etched plates—most of them dated 1647-48—were disposed of in 1686. At the present time it is easy to trace two hundred and twenty pictures in public and private collec- tions, of which one hundred

and four are signed and dated, seventeen are signed with the name but not with the date, and the rest are accepted as genuine by modern critics,

Adrian Ostade is the contemporary of David Teniers and Adrian Brouwer. Like them he spent his life in the delineation of the homeliest subjects—tavern scenes, village fairs, and country quarters. Between Teniers and Ostade the contrast lies in the different condition of the agri- cultural classes of Brabant and Holland, and the atmo- sphere and dwellings that were peculiar to each region. Brabant has more sun, more comfort, and a higher type of humanity ; Teniers, in consequence, is silvery and sparkling ; the people he paints are fair specimens of a well-built race. Holland, in the vicinity of Haarlem, seems to have suffered much from war; the air is moist and hazy, and the people, as depicted by Ostade are short, ill- favoured, and marked with the stamp of adversity on their features dnd dress. Brouwer, who painted the Dutch boor in his frolics and passion, imported more of the spirit of Frans Hals into his delineations than his colleague ; but the type is tle same as Ostade's, only more animated and vicious. How was it that the disciples of Hals should have fallen into this course, whilst Hals himself drew people of the gentle classes with such distinction? It was probably because of his superiority and the monopoly which he and a few colleagues at Haarlem enjoyed that his pupils were forced into a humbler walk, and into this walk Hals was able to lead them, because he was equally able in depicting the strolling waif or fishwife, or the more aristocratic patrician who strutted about in lace collar, with his rapier at his side. Hals in this form was confined to the city, or to those wanderers from the country who visited towns. Brouwer and Ostade went to the country itself and lived in the taverns and cottages of peasants, where they got the models for their pictures. Neither of them followed the habits of the artists of the Hague, who took sitters into their studios and made compositions from them. Their sitters were people, unconscious that they sat, taken on the spot and from life, and transferred with cunning art to pictures.

But the practice of.

OSTADE

There is less of the style of Hals in Adrian Ostade than in Brouwer, but a great likeness to Brouwer in Ostade's early works. During the first years of

his career, Ostade displayed the same tendency to exaggeration and frolic as his comrade. He had humour and boisterous spirits, but he is to be distinguished from his rival by a more general use of the principles of light and shade, and especially by a greater concentration of light on a small surface in con- trast with a broad expanse of gloom. The key of his harmonies remains for a time in the scale of greys. But his treatment is dry and careful, and in this style he shuns no difficulties of detail, representing cottages inside and out, with the vine leaves covering the poorness of the outer side, and nothing inside to deck the patch-work of rafters and thatch, or tumble-down chimneys and ladder staircases, that make up the sordid interior of the Dutch rustic of those days. His men and women, attuned to these needy surroundings, are invariably dressed in the poorest clothes. The hard life and privations of the race are impressed on their shapes and faces, their shoes and hats, worn at heel and battered to softness, as if they had descended from generation to generation, so that the boy of ten seems to wear the cast-off things of his sire and grandsire. It was not easy to get poetry out of such materials. But the greatness of Ostade lies in the fact that he often caught the poetic side of the life of the peasant class, in spite of its ugliness and stunted form and misshapen features. He did so by giving their vulgar sports, their quarrels, even their quieter moods of enjoy- ment, the magic light of the sungleam, and by clothing the wreck of cottages with gay vegetation.

It was natural that, with the tendency to effect which marked Ostade from the first, he should have been fired by emulation to rival the masterpieces of Rembrandt. His early pictures are not so rare but that we can trace how he glided out of one period into the other. Before the dispersion of the Gsell collection at Vienna in 1872, it was easy to study the steel-grey harmonies and exaggerated caricature of his early works in the period intervening between 1632 and 1638. There is a picture of Rustics, dated 1632, in the Kosloff collection at St Petersburg; a Countryman having his Tooth Drawn, in the Belvedere of Vienna, of a similar date though unsigned ; a Bagpiper of 1635 in the Lichtenstein gallery at Vienna; Cottage Scenes of 1635 and 1636, in the museums of Carlsruhe, Darmstadt, and Dresden; Smokers in the House of Count Berchem at Munich; and Card Players of 1687 in the Lichtenstein palace at Vienna, which make up for the loss of the Gscll collection. The same style marks most of those pieces. About 1638 or 1640

the in- fluence of Rembrandt suddenly changed his style, and he painted the Annunciation of the Brunswick museum, where the angels appearing in the sky to Dutch boors half asleep amidst their cattle, sheep, and dogs, in front of a cottage, at once recall the similar subject by Rembrandt, and his effective mode of lighting the principal groups by rays propelled to the earth out of a murky sky. But Ostade was not successful in this effort to vulgarize Scripture. He might have becn pardoned had he given dramatic force and expression to his picture; but his shepherds were only boors without much emotion, passion, or surprise. His picture was a mere cffect of light, as such masterly, in its sketchy rubbings, of dark brown tone relieved by strongly impasted lights, but without the very qualities which made his usual subjects attractive. When, in 1642, he painted the beautiful interior at the Louvre, in which a mother tends her child in a cradle at the side of a great chimney near which her husband is sitting, tle darkness of a country loft is dimly illumined by a beam from the sun that shines on the cascment ; and one might think the paintcr intended to depict the Nativity, but that there is nothing holy in all the surroundings, nothing attractive indeed except the wonderful Rembrandtesque trans- parency, the brown tone, and theadmirable keeping of the minutest parts. The sparkle of Brouwer is not there; nor as yet the concen- trated evenness of such pictures of Rembrandt as the Meditative Philosopher at the Louvre. Yet there is perhaps morc conscien- tiousness of detail. Ostade was more at home in a similar effect applied to the commonplace incident of the Slaughtering of a Pig, one of the masterpieces of 1648, once in the Gsell collection at Vienna. In this and similar subjects of previous and succeeding years, he returned to the homely subjects in which his power and wonderful observation made him a master. He never seems to have goue back to gospel illustrations till 1667, when he produced the admirable Nativity of Mr Walter of Bearwood, which is only surpassed as regards

arrangement and colour by Rembrandt’s Carpenter’s Family at the Louvre, or the Woodcutter and Children in the gallery of Cassel. Innumerable almost are the more familiar themes to which he devoted his pencil during this interval, from small single figures, representing smokers or drinkers, to vulgarized allegories of the five senses (Hermitage and Brunswick

galleries), half-lengths of fish- mongers and bakers, and cottage brawls, or scenes of gambling, or itinerant players and quacks, and nine-pin players in the open air, The humour in some of these pieces is contagious, as in the Tavern Scene of the Lacaze collection (Louvre, 1653), where a boor squeezes the empty beer-pot in his hands to show that the last drop has been sucked out of it. It would be tedious to enumerate the masterpieces of this kind. But those who have no other opportunities may study with pleasure and advantage the large series of dated pieces which adorn every European capital, from St Petersburg to London. Buckingham Palace has a large store, and many and many a good specimen lies hid in the private collections of England. But if we should select a few as peculiarly worthy of attention, we might point to the Rustics ina Tavern of 1662 at the Hague, the Village School of the same year at the Louvre, the Tavern Court-yard of 1670 at Cassel, the Sportsmen's Rest of 1671 at Amsterdam, and the Fiddler and his Audience of 1673 at the Hague. At Amsterdam we have the likeness of a painter, ina red bonnet and violet coat, sitting with his back to the spectator, at his easel. The colour-grinder is at work in acorner, a pupil prepares a palette, and a black dog sleeps on the ground. The same picture, with the date of 1666, is in the Dresden gallery. Both specimens are supposed to represent Ostade himself. But unfortunately we see the artist's back and not his face. Ostade painted with equal vigour at all times. Two of his latest dated works, the Village Street and Skittle Players in the Ashburton and Ellesmere collections, were executed in 1676 without any sign of declining powers. The priccs which he reccived are not known, but those of the present day are telling when compared with those of the close of last century. Early pictures, which may have been sold by the painter for a few shillings, now fetch £200. Later ones, which were worth £40 in 1750, are now worth £1000, and Earl Dudley gave £4120 for a cottage interior in 1876. The signatures of Ostade vary at different periods. But the first two letters are gene- rally interlaced. Up to 1635 Ostade writes himself Ostaden. —e.9., in the Bagpiper of 1635 in the Lichtenstein collection at Vienna. Later on_he uses the long s (f), and occasionally he signs in capital letters (Strauss collection, Vienna, 1647; and Hague museum, 1673). His pupils are his own brother Isaac, Cornelis Bega, Cornelis Dusart, and Richard Brakenburg.

II. Isaac OsrapE (1621-1649) was christened on the 2dof June 1621, at Haarlem. He began his studies under Adrian, with whom he remained till 1641, when he started on his own account. At an early period he felt the influ- ence of Rembrandt, and this is apparent in a Slaughtered Pig of 1639, in the gallery of Augsburg. But he soon reverted toa style more suited to his pencil. He pro- duced pictures in 1641-42 on the lines of his brother,—amongst these, the Five Senses, which Adrian after- wards represented by a Man Reading a Paper, a Peasant Tasting Beer, a Rustic Smearing his Sores with Oint- ment, and a Countryman Sniffing at a Snuff-box. The contract for these pieces was made before 1643, when Leendert, a dealer, summoned him for a breach of his agreement before the burgomaster of Haarlem. The matter was referred to the guild, and evidence was adduced to prove that Isaac had promised in 1641 to deliver six pictures and seven rounds, including the Five Senses, for 27 florins. Isaac, in his defence, urged that he had finished two of the pictures and two of the rounds, which Leendert had seen, but neglected to fetch; that he had begun the remainder of the series, but that in the meanwhile the value of his works had risen, so that he thought that on that ground alone he was freed from the obligations he hadassumed. The guild decided that Isaac was bound to furnish the pictures before Easter 1643. But they reduced the number of the rounds to five, and assessed the price of the whole at 50 florins. A specimen of Isaac's work at this period may be seen in the Laughing Boor with a Pot of Beer, in the museum of Amsterdam ; the cottage interior, with two peasants and three children hear a fire, in the Berlin museum; a Concert, with people listening to singers accompanied by a piper and flute Player, and a Boor Stealing a Kiss from a Woman, in the

Lacaze collection at the Louvre. The interior at Berlin is lighted from a casement in the same Rembrandtesque style as Adrian's interior of 1643 at the Louvre. The value of these panels, which we saw estimated in 1643 at two florins apiece, was greatly enhanced in the following century, when the Laughing Boor at Amsterdam was sold for 56 florins. But the low price fixed by the guild of Haarlem must have induced Isaac to give up the practice, in which he could only hope to remain a satellite in the orbit of Adrian, and accordingly we find him gradu- ally abandoning the cottage

subjects of his brother for landscapes in the fashion of Esaias Van de Velde and Salomon Ruisdael. Once only, in 1645, he seems to have fallen into the old groove, when he produced the Slaughtered Pig, with the boy puffing out a bladder, in the museum of Lille. But this was a mere accident. Isaac's progress in the new path which he had cut out for himself was greatly facilitated by his previous experience as a figure painter; and, although he now selected his subjects either from village high streets or frozen canals, he was enabled to give fresh life and animation to the scenes he depicted by groups of people full of movement and animation, which he relieved in their coarse humours and sordid appearance by a refined and searching study of picturesque contrasts. Unfortunately he did not live long enough to bring his art to the highest perfection. He died at twenty-eight, on the 16th October 1649.

The first manifestation of Isaac's surrender of Adrian's style is apparent in 1644 when the skating and sledging scenes were executed which we see in the Lacaze collection and the galleries of the Hermitage, Antwerp, and Lille. Three of these examples bear the artist's name, spelt Isack van Ostade, and the dates of 1644 and 1645. The road-side inns, with halts of travellers, form a compact series from 1646 to 1649. In this, the last form of his art, Isaac has very distinct peculiarities. The air which pervades his composition is warm and sunny, yet mcllow and hazy, as if the sky were veiled with a vapour coloured by moor smoke. he trees are rubbings of umber, in which the prominent foliage is tipped with touches hardened in a liquid state by amber varnish mediums. The same principle applied to details such as glazed bricks or rents in the mud lining of cottages gives an unreal and conventional stamp to those particular parts. But these blemishes are forgotten when one looks at the broad contrasts of light and shade and the masterly figures of steeds and riders, and travellers and rustics, or quarrelling children and dogs, poultry, and cattle, amongst which a favourite place is always given to the white horse, who seems as invariable an accompaniment as the grey in the skirmishes and fairs of Wouvermans. But it is in wintcr scenes that Isaac displays the best qualities. The absence of foliage, the crisp atmosphere, the calm air of cold January days, unsullied by smoke or vapour, preclude the use of the brown tinge, and leave the painter no choice but to ring the changes on opal tints of great variety, upon which the figures come out with masterly effect on the light background

upon which they are thrown. Amongst the road-side inns which will best repay attention we should notice those of Buckingham [alace, the National Gallery, the Wallace, Ellesmere, Ashburton, Holford, Robarts, and Bearwood collections in England, and those of the Louvre, Berlin, Hermitage, and Rotterdam museums and the Rothschild collections at Vienna on the Continent. The finest of the ice scenes is the famous one at the Louvre. (J. A. C.)

OSTASHKOFF, a town of Tver, Russia, 163 miles by rail south-east from the capital of that government, on Lake Seliger, has a population of 12,500. The fisheries, which still employ a considerable number of the inhabitants, attracted settlers at an early date, but it is not till 1500 that the Ostashkoff villages are mentioned in Russian annals. The advantageous site, the proximity of the Smolenskiy Jitnyi monastery, a pilgrim-resort on an island of the lake, and the early development of certain petty trades, combined to bring prosperity to Ostashkoff; and its cathedral (1672-85) still contains rich offerings, as also do two other churches of the same century. About 200,000 pairs of boots are now manufactured annually; hatchets, scythes, shears, and similar implements are also made; and tanning is another important industry.

60

OSTEND, a seaport of Belgium, in the province of West Flanders, 70 miles west-north-west from Brussels, is surrounded on the north and west by the sea; its site is an extensive plain, lying below high-water level, the town and surrounding country being protected by a sea-wall built of granite with a brick revetment, upon which the waves generally exhaust their force even in the roughest weather, though the town has occasionally been inundated through a combination of westerly gales and unusually high tides. The port is dangerous in unfavourable weather ; the channel leading into the two interior basins (which are calculated to hold more than a thousand vessels) is formed by two long wooden piers, and at its mouth has a width of only 165 yards. The rise of the tide in the harbour is about 15 feet, and as the bed of the sluice lies 3 feet under low-water mark, the depth at high water should amount to 18 feet; but the entrance to the harbour is obstructed by sandbanks, which frequently shift their posi- tion under the influence of wind and tide, and leave a free depth of only about 9 ->— feet. At the north-west extremity of the sea-wall (digue de mer) is a light- house erected in 1771, and & subsequently modernized, – with a light visible at a distance of 45 miles. The town has an active trade in refined salt, ropes, sails, soap, tobacco, lace, and wool. The imports greatly exceed the exports. In 1883 1345 vessels entered with 175,987 tons cargo, and 1342 cleared with

32,010.

The large fishing popu- lation is chiefly occupied in the cod or herring fisheries; the trade in oysters is important, these being brought over in large quantities from the English coast, principally about Harwich or Col- chester, and fattened in the Ostend oyster-beds. There are no manufactures Eze of any consequence ; and, unlike other Flemish cities, Ostend has no monument or building in any way worthy of notice. The town owes its repute and prosperity chiefly to its sea-beach, which is admirably adapted for bathing purposes, being composed of perfectly smooth sands, firm, level, and of great extent. Ostend is the yearly resort, from August to October, of many thousand visitors, com- prising not only members of the fashionable society of Brussels and the larger provincial towns of Belgium, but also foreigners, principally Germans and Russians. During the season the digue and piers are crowded ; entertain- ments and festivities are offered to guests at the Kursaal, Casino, &c.; a good deal of private and promiscuous gambling is carried on. The influx of bathers and pleasure-seekers has led to thé development of some quieter resorts in the immediate vicinity, such as Blankerbergh (lately a mere fishing village), Heyst, Middelkerk, and others. In 1880 the population of the town wags 16,823.

In the 10th century Ostend was but a cluster of fishermen’s huts. In 1072 Robert I. of Flanders built a church there in honour of St Peter. The place thenceforth grew in importance, and the

|

D> | Soe PJ fi F Ty

OS T—OST

harbour became noted. Margaret of Constantinople, countess of Flanders, raised it to the rank of a city in 1267. In 1445 Philip the Good caused it to be walled round, but the prince of Orange © was the first to fortify it in earnest (1583); anda short time after- wards it sustained a memorable siege, during the reign of Albert and Isabella, being invested on the 5th of July 1601, and taken by Spinola on the 14th of September 1604, after a resistance of more than three years. It was then ina state of almost absolute ruin, but was speedily rebuilt by the archduke, who granted the citizens many privileges. The prosperity of Ostend, however, was constantly

impeded by rivalries and dissensions. In the beginnin, of the 18th century it appeared in a fair way to attain comme eminence, the emperor Charles VJ. having selected it as the scat of the East Indian Company; but the interference of powerful neighbours, and principally of England and Holland, caused a stop to be ae to this by the treaty of Vienna in 1782. Ostend was taken by the French in 1794, and belonged to the republic until 1814, after which it formed part of the Netherlands, and subse- quently, since 1830, of the kingdom of Belgium,

OSTERVALD, Juan Fripiric (1663-1747), Swiss Protestant theologian, was born at Neufchatel on November 25, 1663, was educated at Zurich and at Saumur (where

wf ro

Plan of Ostend.

he graduated), studied theology at Orleans, Paris, and Geneva, and was ordained to the ministry in his native place in 1683. As preacher, pastor, lecturer, and author, he attained a position of great influence in his day, he and his friends J. A. Turretin of Geneva and 8. Werenfels of Basel forming what was once called the “Swiss triumvirate.” He died on April 14, 1747.

His principal works are Traité des sources de la corruption qui régne aujourd huy parmi les Chrétiens (1700), practically a plea for a more ethical and less doctrinal type of Christianity ; Catéchisme ow Instruction dans la Religion Chrétienne, 1702; Traité contre [Impureté, 1707 ; Sermons sur divers Textes, 1722-24; Theologizs Compendium, 1739; and Traduction de la Bible, 1724. All his writings attained great popularity among French Protestants; many were translated into various languages; and ‘‘ Ostervald’s Bible,” in particular, was long well known and much valued in Britain. A Life by Durand was published in London in 1778.

OSTIA, a city of ancient Latium, situated at the mouth of the Tiber, from which circumstance it obviously derived its name. Owing to this position it became from an early period the port of Rome, but its foundation as a regular colony of that city is ascribed by ancient authors to Ancus

_ Marcius, who is said to have at the same time established there extensive salt-works, which long continued to supply Rome and its neighbourhood with that necessary article. As the wealth and importance of Rome itself increased, the prosperity of Ostia naturally rose with it, and it continued throughout the period of the Roman republic to be at once the principal emporium of trade in this part of Italy and the permanent station of the Roman fleet. It was, however, at no period a really good port, and the natural disadvantages of its position were not merely felt the more keenly as its commercial importance increased, but they were continually aggravated by natural causes,—the allu- vial matter continually brought down by the Tiber having filled up the port, and at the same time in great measure blocked the mouth of the river, so as to render it inacces- sible to the larger class of vessels. Strabo gives a lively picture of the difficulties with which these had to contend in his time, and which were only surmounted on account of the great pecuniary advantages arising from its proximity to the capital. The necessity of taking some steps to obviate these evils had indeed already presented itself to the dictator Caesar, who had proposed to construct an artificial port at Ostia, with all the appurtenances requisite for so extensive a trade, but no steps were taken towards the execution of this project till the reign of the emperor Claudius, who constructed an entirely new basin or artificial port at a distance of about two miles north of Ostia, and communicating by an artificial channel with the Tiber on one side and the sea on the other. These works were afterwards largely augmented by Trajan, so that the port came to be known as the Portus Trajani, and the channel from thence to the sea was called the Fossa Tra- jani. This was undoubtedly the same with what is now become the right branch of the Tiber, entering the sea at Fiumicino. From this time the great mass of the trade was transferred to the new port, while that of Ostia con- tinually diminished, though the city itself continued to be a populous and flourishing place throughout the period of the Roman empire. It was not till the close of the western empire that Ostia itself, which was unprotected by walls, and consequently exposed to the attacks of the barbarians, fell into decay ; and after it was plundered by the Saracens in the 9th century the site became alto- gether abandoned, the modern village of Ostia (a very poor place) being situated ata distance of about half a mile from the ruins of the

ancient city. The extent and variety of these, as well as the beauty of the works of art dis- covered on the site, confirm the accounts given by ancient writers of the opulence and prosperity of Ostia in the days of the empire; while those of Porto, as the port of Trajan is still called, are of great interest as exhibiting not only the artificial basin of the port, with its quays and the remains of the surrounding magazines, but a large part of the circuit of walls and towers by which it was protected. Such was the importance of Portus under the Roman empire that it became an episcopal see, and still gives that title to one of the cardinals of Rome.

The continual advance of the coast-line, owing to the alluvial deposits brought down by the Tiber, has left the ruins of Ostia more than two miles from the sea. Those of Portus are separated from it by an equal interval,’and even the tower of Fiumicino, which was built in the last century at the entrance of the right branch of the Tiber— the only one now navigable—is already a considerable distance inland.

For a detailed aceount of the history and topography of Ostia and the neighbouring Portus, as well as of the ehanges in the eoast-line and channel of the Tiber, the reader may consult Nibby, Dintorni di Roma, vol. ii, p. 426-474, 602-660; and an elaborate paper by Preller in the Berichte der Sdchsischen Gesellschaft for 1849.

61

_ OSTIAKS, or Ostyaks, a tribe of Finnish origin, who inhabit the basin of the Obi in western Siberia; a few hundreds also are nomads in the basin of the lower Yenisei. Plano Carpini and Marco Polo in the 13th century knew them on the flat lands of the Obi, and the best investigators (Castrén, Lerberg, A. Schrenck) consider the trans-Uralian Ostiaks and Samoyedes as identical with the Yugra of the Russian annals. During the Russian conquest their abodes extended much farther south than now, and they had numerous settlements on the basin of the Obi, no less than forty-one of their fortified places having been destroyed by the Cossacks in 1501, in the region of Obdorsk alone. Remains of these “towns” are still to be seen at the Kunovat river, on the Obi 20 miles below Obdorsk, and elsewhere. The total number of the Ostiaks may be estimated at a little over 27,000. Those on the Irtish are mostly settled, and have adopted the manner of life of Russians and

Tartars. Those on the Obi are mostly nomads; along with 8000 Samoyedes in the districts of Beryozoff and Surgut, they own 93,600 reindeer. The Obi Ostiaks are Russified to a great extent. They live almost exclusively by fishing, buying from Russian merchants corn for bread, the use of which has become widely diffused.

The Ostiaks call themselves Ass-yakh (people of the Obi), and it is supposed that their present designation is a corruption of this name. By language they belong (Castrén, Metscberichte, Reisebriefe; Ahlqvist, Ofvers. af Finska Vet.-Soc. Férh., xxi.) to the Ugrian branch of the eastern Finnish stem,—a classification eonfirmed by a grammar of their langnage, compiled in 1875, in Hungarian, by Hunfalvy. All the Ostiaks speak the saine language, mixed to some extent with foreign elements ; but three or four leading dialeets ean be distinguished.

The Ostiaks are middle-sized, or of low stature, mostly meagre, and not ill made, however elumsy their appearance in winter, in their thick fur-elothes. The extremities are fine, and the feet are usually small. The skull is braehyeephalic, mostly of moderate size and height. The hair is dark and soft for the most part, fair aud reddish individuals being rare; the eyes are dark, generally narrow ; the nose is flat and broad; the mouth is large and with thick lips; the beard is seanty. The younger men and women are sometimes of an agreeable appearanee. The Mongolian type is more strongly pronouneed in the women than in the men. On the whole, the Ostiaks are not a pure race; the purest type is found among the fishers on the Obi, the reindeer-breeders of the tundra being largely intermixed with Samoyedes (see Castren; Dr Finseh’s Reise nach West-Sibirien, &e.).

Investigators are unanimous in deseribing them as very kind, gentle, and honest; rioting is almost quite unknown among them, as also theft, this last oeeurring only in the vicinity of Russian settle- ments, and the only penalty enforeed being the restitution two- fold of the property stolen. The farther they are removed from eontaet with Russian dealers and traders the higher do their moral qualities become (Middendorff and Castren). ;

They are very skilful in the arts they practise, especially in carving wood and bone, tanning (with egg-yolk and brains), preparation of implements from bireh bark, &c. Some of their carved or deeorated bark implements

(like those figured in Middendorff's Stbirische Reise, iv. 2) show great artistic skill. Only a few have guns, the great majority continuing to hunt with bow and arrows.

Their folk-lore, like to that of other Finnish stems, is imbued with a deep feeling of natural poetry, and reflects also the sadness, or even the despair, which has been noticed among them. The number of those who are eonsidered Christians reaches 2000; but their Shamanism is still retained, hardly anything being borrowed from Christianity beyond the worship of St Nicholas, who is a most popular saint among them.

OSTRACISM, a peculiar political institution in Athens, designed by Clisthenes as a safeguard against any citizen acquiring too great power and aspiring to make himself tyrant of the state. Before it could be carried into effect, a decree of the people had to be passed that an ostracism was necessary. If this was done, the voting was fixed for a special day in the agora. The votes were given accord- ing to tribes; and each citizen wrote on an oyster shell (Sorpaxov) the name of the person who he thought should be ostracized. The person who obtained the majority was exiled for ten years, provided: the votes against him were

6000. If no person were designated on so many shells, the proceedings were at an end. The ostracized person might return at the end of his term of banishment, having then the full rights of citizenship, or his term might be shortened by a special vote of the people. The institution was intended as a precaution in view of the weakness of the central Government, which, having no standing army at its disposal, was liable to be disturbed or overturned by a sudden attack arranged by a powerful partisan. When party strife ran high, ostracism was frequently resorted to with the consent of the two parties, in order to test their strength; but when an ostracism had been arranged in 416 B.c. the parties subsequently compromised their dis- pute and directed their votes against an insignificant person named Hyperbolus. After this the institution fell into disuse. According to Aristotle and Philochorus, the people were required every year in the first assembly of the sixth prytany to determine whether or not an ostracism should take place. The same institution is said to have been in use at Argos, Miletus, and

Megara, and a similar one called petalismus was employed at Syracuse for a short time during the 5th century B.c.; the latter was named from the olive leaves (éraAa) used instead of oyster-shells.

OSTRICH (Old English, £stridge; French, Autruche; Spanish, Avestruz; Latin, Avis struthio). Among exotic birds there can be hardly one better known by report than the strange, majestic, and fleet-footed creature that "scorneth the horse and his rider," or one that from the earliest times to the present has been oftener more or less fully described; and there must be few persons in any civilized country unacquainted with the appearance of this, the largest of living birds, whose size is not insig- nificant in comparison even with the mightiest of the plumed giants that of old existed upon the earth, since an adult male will stand nearly 8 feet in height, and weigh 300 bb.

As to the ways of the Ostrich in a state of nature, not much has been added of late years to the knowledge acquired and imparted by former travellers and natural- ists, many of whom enjoyed opportunities that will never again oceur of discovering its peculiayities, for even the most favourably-placed of their successors in recent years seem to content themselves with repeating the older observations, and to want either leisure or patience to make additions thereto, their personal acquaintance with the bird not amounting to more than such casual meetings with it as must inevitably fall to the lot of those who traverse its haunts. Thus there are still several dubious points in its natural history. On the other hand we unquestionably know far more than our predecessors respecting its geographical distribution, which has been traced with great minuteness in the Vigel Ost-Afrikas of Drs Finsch and Hartlaub, who have therein given (pp. 597-607) the most comprehensive account of the bird that is to be found in the literature of ornithology.! As with most birds, the Ostrich is disappearing before the persecution of man, and this fact it is which gives the advantage to older travellers, for there are many districts, some of wide extent, known to have been frequented by the Ostrich within the present century, especially towards the extremities of its African range— as on the borders of Egypt and the Cape Colony—in which it no longer occurs, while in Asia there is evidence, more or less trustworthy, of its former existence in most parts of the south-western desert-tracts, in few of which it

1 A good summary of it is contained in the Ostriches and Ostrich Farming of Messrs De Mosenthal and Harting, from which the accom. panying figure is, with permission, taken. Von Heuglin, in his Ornithologie Nordost-A frika' s (pp. 925-985), has given more parti- cular details of the Ostrich's distribution in Africa.

is now to be found. Xenophon's notice of its abundance in Assyria (Anabasis, i. 5) is well known. It is probable that it still lingers in the wastes of Kirwan in eastern Persia, whence examples may occasionally stray northward to those of Turkestan,? even near the Lower Oxus ; bag the assertion, often repeated, as to its former occurrence in Baloochistan or Sindh, though not incredible, seems to rest on testimony as yet too slender for acceptance, Apparently the most northerly limit of the Ostrich's ordinary range at the present day cannot be further than that portion of the Syrian Desert lying directly to the eastward of Damascus; and, within the limits of what may be called.Palestine, Canon Tristram (Fauna and Flora of Palestine, p. 139) regards it as but a straggler from central Arabia, though we have little information as to its appearance and distribution in that country. Africa, however, is still, as in ancient days, the continent in which

the Ostrich most flourishes, and from the confines of Barbary to those of the European settlements in the south it appears to inhabit every waste sufficiently exten- sive to afford it the solitude it loves, and in many wide districts, where the influence of the markets of civilization is feebly felt, to be still almost as abundant as ever. Yet even there it has to contend with deadly foes in the many species of Carnivora which frequent the same tracts and prey upon its eggs and young—the latter especially; and Lichtenstein long ago remarked that if it were not for its numerous enemies "the multiplication of Ostriches would be quite unexampled." The account given of the habits of the species by this naturalist, who had excellent Opportunities of observing it during his three years' Sn Rees as ieee

2 Drs Finsch and Hartlaub quote a passage from Remusat's Remarques sur Vextension de Uv Empire Chinoise, stating that in about the seventh century of our era a live " camel-bird" was sent as a present with an embassy from Turkestan to China.

ET NR

OS T—OS W 63

travels in South Africa, is perhaps one of the best we have, and since his narrative! has been neglected by most of its more recent historians we may do well by calling attention thereto. Though sometimes assembling in troops of from thirty to fifty, and then generally associat- ing with zebras or with some of the larger antelopes, Ostriches commonly, and especially in the breeding season, live in companies of not more than four or five, one of which ig a cock and the rest are hens. All the latter lay their eggs in one and the same nest, a shallow pit scraped out by their feet, with the earth heaped around to form a kind of wall against which the outermost circle of eggs rest. As soon as ten or a dozen eggs are laid, the cock begins to brood, always taking his place on them at nightfall surrounded by his wives, while by day they relieve one another, more it would seem to guard their common treasure from jackals and small peasts-of-prey than directly to forward the process of hatching, for that is often left wholly to the sun.? Some thirty eggs are laid in the nest, and round it are scattered perhaps as many more. These last are said to be broken by the old birds to serve as nourishment for the newly- hatched chicks, whose stomachs cannot bear the hard food on which their parents thrive. The greatest care is taken by them not only to place the nest where it may not be discovered, but to avoid being seen when going to or from it, and their solicitude for their tender young is no less. Andersson in his Lake N'gami (pp. 253-269) has given a lively account of the pursuit by himself and Mr Francis Galton of a brood of Ostriches, in the course of which the father of the family flung himself on the ground and feigned being wounded to distract their attention from his offspring. Though the Ostrich ordinarily inhabits the most arid districts, it requires water to drink; more than that, it will frequently bathe, and sometimes even, accord- ing to Von Heuglin, in the sea.

The question whether to recognize more than one species of Ostrich, the Struthio camelus of Linneus, has been for some years agitated without leading to a satis- factory solution. It has long been known that, while eggs from North Africa present a perfectly smooth surface, those from South Africa are pitted (see Brrps, vol. iil. p. 775, note 1). It has also been observed that northern birds have the skin of the parts not covered with feathers flesh-coloured, while this skin is bluish in southern birds, and hence the latter have been thought to need specific designation as S. australis. Still more recently examples from the Somali country have been described as forming a distinct species under the name of S. molybdophanes from the leaden colour of their naked parts.

The genus Struthio forms the type of one group of the Subclass Ratitx, which differs so widely from the rest, in points that have been concisely set forth by Prof. Huxley (Proc. Zool. Society, 1867, p. 419), as to justify us in regarding it as an Order, to which the name Struthiones may be applied (see ORNITHOLOGY, p. 44); but that term, as well as Struthionidx, has been often used in a more general sense by systematists, even to signify the whole of the Ratitz, and hence for the present caution must be

1M. H. K. Lichtenstein, Reise im siidlichen Africa, il. pp. 42-45 (Berlin, 1812).

: By those whose experience is derived from the observation of captive Ostriches this fact has been often disputed. But, to say nothing of the effects of the enforced monogamy in which such birds live, the difference of circumstances under which they find themselves, and in particular their removal from the heat-retaining sands of the desert and its burning sunshine, is quite enough to aecount for the change of habit. Von Heuglin also (p. 933) is explicit on this point. That the female Ostriches while on duty crouch down to avoid detection is only natural, and this habit seems to have led hasty observers to suppose they were really brooding,

exercised as to whether certain fossil remains from the Sivalik formation, referred to “ Struthionide,” be re- garded as true Ostriches or not. The most obvious distinctive character presented by the Ostrich is the pre- sence of two toes only, the third and fourth, on each foot, —a character absolutely peculiar to the genus Struthio.

The great mercantile value of Ostrich-feathers, and the increasing difficulty, due to the causes already mentioned, of procuring them from wild birds, has led to the forma- tion in the Cape Colony and elsewhere of numerous "Ostrich-farms," on which these birds are kept in con- finement, and at regular intervals of time deprived of their plumes. In favourable localities and with judicious man- agement these establishments are understood to yield very considerable profit; while, as the ancient taste for wearing Ostrich-feathers shews no sign of falling off, but seems rather to be growing, it is probable that the practice will yet be largely extended.

Among the more important treatises on this bird may be men- tioned:—E. D' Alton, Die Skelete der Straussartigen Vogel abgebildet und beschrieben, folio, Bonn, 1827; P. L. Sclater, "On the Stru- thious Birds living in the Zoological Society's Menagerie," Trans- actions, iv. p. 353, containing the finest representation (pl. 67), by Mr Wolf, ever published of the male Struthio camelus ; Prof. Mivart, "On the Axial Skeleton of the Ostrich," op. eit., viii. p. 385; Prof. Haughton, "On the Muscular Mechanism of the Leg of the Ostrich," Ann. Nat. History, ser. 3, xv. pp. 262-272; and Prof. Macalister, "On the Anatomy of the Ostrich," Proe. #. Irish Academy, ix. pp. 1-24. (A. N.)

OSTUNI, a city of Italy, in the province of Lecce, 23 miles by rail north-west of Brindisi. It is a bishop's see, has a cathedral of the 15th century with a fine Romanesque facade, several other churches of some interest, a municipal library with a collection of antiquities, and a technical school. The population was 14,422 in 1871 and 15,199 in 1881, that of the commune being 16,295 and 18,226.

OSUNA, a town of Spain, in the province of Seville, distant 48 miles by road and 57 by rail east-south-east from that city, is built in a semicircular form on the slope of a hill, at the edge of a fertile plain watered by the Salado, a sub-tributary of the Guadalquivir. On the top of the hill, which commands an extensive view, stands the collegiate church, a mixed Gothic and cinquecento building, contain- ing several good specimens of Ribera, which, however, as well as the sculptures over the portal, suffered considerably during the occupation of the place by Soult. The vaults, which are supported by Moorish arches, contain the tombs of the Giron family, by

one of whom, Don Juan Tellez, the church was founded in 1534. The university of Osuna, founded also by him in 1549, was suppressed in 1820 ; but the large building is still used as a secondary school, A great number of the inhabitants of Osuna are engaged in agriculture, and the making of esparto mats employs many of the poorer people. Earthenware, bricks, oil, soap, linen, hats, are also manufactured; and barley, oil, and wheat are sent in large quantities to Seville and Malaga. The population of the ayuntamiento in 1877 was 17,211.

Osuna, the Urso of Hirtius, where the Pompeians made their last stand, was afterwards called by the Romans Gemina Urbanorum, from the fact, it is said, that two urban legions were simultancously quartered there. The place was taken from the Moors in 1239, and given by Alphonso the Wise to the knights of Calatrava in 1264. Don Pedro Giron appropriated it to himself in 1445. One of his descendants founded the university, and another, Don Pedro Tellez, was made duke of Osuna by Philip IT. (1562).

OSWALD (c. 604-642), “most Christian king of the Northumbrians,” was the son of King Ethelfrith, and was born about 604. On the death of his father on the battle- field in 617, he and his brothers were compelled to take refuge among the northern Celts, where they are said to have received baptism. ‘The fall of King Mdwin in 633 permitted their return, and after the death of Eanfrid,

who had received Deira, and of Osric, who had’ been | 1839, guards the entrance to the harbour ; it is a place of

chosen to Bernicia, Oswald was called to the throne of the united kingdoms, and established his claim to it by his great victory over Ceadwalla at Heavenfield near Hexham in 635. His beneficent reign, which was chiefly devoted to the establishment of Christianity throughout his dominions, was brought to an end by his defeat and death on August 5, 642 (see NoRTHUMBERLAND). The cross crected by Oswald on the scene of his victory in 635 was afterwards the scene or the instrument of many miracles,

and gradually his name found a place in the calendar, August 5th being the day sacred to his memory. A German “ Spielmannsgedicht ” of the 12th or 13th century takes its name from St Oswald, but the narrative has no relation to anything recorded about the hero in authentic history (see monographs by Zingerle, 1856 ; Strobl, 1870 ; and Edzardi, 1876). Oswald, bishop of Winchester, who died February 29, 992, is also commemorated as a saint (October 15).

OSWALDTWISTLE, a township of Lancashire, Eng- land, is situated on the Leeds and Liverpool Canal and the East Lancashire Railway, 34 miles east-south-east of Black- burn and 24 north of Manchester. It possesses cotton- mills, printworks, bleachworks, and chemical works, and in the neighbourhood there are collieries, stone quarries, and potteries. The population of the township and urban sanitary district (area 4883 acres) in 1871 was 10,283, and in 1881 it was 12,206.

OSWEGO, a city and port of entry of the United States, capital of Oswego county, New York, stretches between 2 and 3 miles along the south-east shore of Lake Ontario, on the low bluffs and hilly ground near the mouth of the Oswego river, which divides it into two nearly equal portions, and is spanned by three iron drawbridges. By the Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western Railroad it is 305 miles from New York, and by the New York, Ontario, and Western Railway 326 miles. The Oswego Canal connects at Syracuse with the Erie Canal. The situation of the city is a beautiful and healthful one: most of the streets are 100 feet wide, and there are two finely-shaded public parks, one on each side of the river. Among the more conspicuous buildings are the conjunct custom-house, post- office, and United States court-house, erected in 1858 at a cost of $120,000, the city-hall, the county court-house, the State armoury, the church of the Evangelists, the large Roman Catholic church in Mohawk Street, the public library (10,000 volumes), the normal and training schools, the city almshouse (2 miles outside the city limits), and the orphan asylum. Falling 34 feet in its passage through the city, Oswego river furnishes a good supply of water- power, rendered available by a canal on each side. Besides the Oswego starch factory (founded in 1848, and now probably the largest in the world, occupying 10 acres of ground, partly with fireproof buildings seven stories high, and producing 35 tons of starch daily), the manufactories

of Oswego comprise flour-mills, large iron-works (making steam-engines, steam-shovels, dredges, é&c.), knitting works, shade-cloth factories, railway carriage works and repair shops, box factories, planing-mills, and a large number of subsidiary establishments. In the extent of its trade Oswego is the principal United States port on Lake Ontario, importing vast quantities of grain and timber, and exporting coal, flour, and salt. The annual duties on imports average over $1,000,000. The inner harbour, formed by the river mouth being enclosed by jetties, has about 3 miles of wharfage, and a depth at low water of from 9 to 13 feet; and the outer harbour, formed by the construction since 1871 of a breakwater 5700 feet long,

has about 4 miles of wharfage, and a depth of 20 feet.

Fort Ontario, rebuilt by the United States Government in

some strength. The population of Oswego was 12,205 in 1850, 20,910 in 1870, and 21,112 in 1880.

Oswego was visited by Champlain in 1615, by the Jesuits Le Mayne in 1654, and by other carly explorers. In 1722 the English established a trading post here, and in 1727 Governor William Burnet (son of Bishop Burnet) erected Fort Oswego. A body of about 700 men, left here by Governor Shirley, constructed in 1755-56 two other forts—Fort Ontario on the east and Oswego New Fort on the west side of the river. In 1756 the place was bombarded and captured by Montcalm; but between 1757 and 1759 new works were constructed by the English, who kept possession till Oswego was transferred to the United States by the Jay treaty in 1796. In 1814 Sir James Yeo took the fortress after a bombardment of three hours. The little hamlet of Oswego, commenced by Neil M‘Mullen, rapidly increased after the intro- duction of steam navigation on the lake (1816) and the construction of the Welland and the Oswego Canal (1828). In 1828 it was incorporated as a Village, in 1848 as a city.

OSWESTRY, a market-town and municipal borough in Shropshire, England, on the borders of Wales, on two railway lines and near the Shropshire Canal, 18 miles north- west of Shrewsbury and 16 north from Welshpool. It is a well-built town with wide and regular streets, although

some of the old wooden houses still remain. There are still some traces of the ancient castle erected in the reign of Stephen. The church of St Oswald, originally conventual, has been very much altered, the original structure having been more than once damaged, and the tower taken down by the Royalists in 1644. It was restored in 1872 ata cost of £10,000. For the free grammar school, founded in the reign of Henry IV., a new building was erected in 1810, which was enlarged in 1863 and 1878. Among the other public buildings are the public hall, the Victoria Rooms, the guildhall, the general market-hall, the literary institute, the union workhouse, and the cottage hospital. The town possesses locomotive repairing works, steam-engine, threshing machine, and agricultural implement works, steam printing works, corn mills, malting works, breweries, and a leather factory. In the vicinity are coal- mines and limestone quarries. The population of the municipal borough (area 1888 acres) in 1871 was 7306, and in 1881 it was 7847.

Oswestry was called by the Britons Tre'r Cadciriau, the town of chairs or seats commanding an extensive view, in reference to the eminences in the neighbourhood. It existed in the 4th century, and, having been given in the 5th century by Cunedda Wledig, prince of North Wales, to his son Oswael, it received the name of Osweiling and subsequently Maserfield. After a battle in 642 between Oswald the Christian king of Northumbria, and Penda the pagan king of Mercia, in which the former was slain, the name was changed to Oswaldstre (Welsh, Croes Oswallt), which was gradually corrupted into Oswestry. On the spot where Oswald was slain a monastery was afterwards erected, and near its site there is a spring still called Oswald's well. In 777 Oswestry was disjoined from Powis and added to Mercia. It stands between Offa's and Wat's dykes. About a mile from the town is an old British earthwork, known as Old Port, a corruption of Old Fort (Welsh, Hén Dinas), and sometimes called Old Oswestry, from a tradition that Oswestry originally occupied its site. Oswestry is not mentioned in Domesday. The castle is said to have been built about 1149 by Madoc, the ruler of Powis Vadog. It was burned in 1216 and in 1233. Edward I. began in 1277 to surround the town with walls, which were about one mile in circumference and had four gates. During invasions of the Welsh the town was burned in 1400 and 1408 ; it also suffered sevcrely from a similar cause in 1542, 1544, and 1567, and in 1559 it was devastated

by the plague. Oswestry was garrisoned for the Royalists, but surrendered 22d June 1644, and a few years afterwards the castle was demolished. The town obtained the grant of a fair from Henry III. It received its first charter from William Fitz- Alan in the reign of Henry II., and a royal charter from Richard II. Its present charter was granted by Charles II.

See Price, History of Oswestry, 1815; Cathrall, History of Oswestry and Topo- graphy of the Borough, 1855; Pennant, Tour: Eyton, Antiquities of Shropshire.

OTAGO. See New ZEALAND.

OTAHEITE, or Tanrtr. See Socrery Isuanps.

OTHO, Marcus Satnvrus, Roman emperor from January 15 to April 15, 69 a.p., was born April 28, 32 A.D… He belonged to an ancient and noble Etruscan

OT

family, settled at Ferentinum in Etruria. His grandfather had been a senator and held the pretorship ; his father had added to the family honours the dignity of a consul- ship. Otho himself first appears in history as one of the most reckless and extravagant of the young nobles who surrounded Nero and shared his revels. But his friend- ship with that emperor was brought to an abrupt close in 58 a.p., when Otho was only twenty-six years old, by his refusal to divorce his beautiful wife Poppzea Sabina at the bidding of Nero, who was enslaved by her charms. The emperor, impatient as usual of anything that hindered the gratification of his passions, at once removed Otho from the scene by appointing him governor of the remote pro- vince of Lusitania. In this honourable exile Otho remaincd for ten years, and, contrary to all expectation, his administration was marked by a moderation unusual at the time. When in 68 his neighbour Galba, the governor of Hispania Tarraconensis, rose in revolt against Nero, Otho at once joined him and accompanied him to Rome. Resentment at the treatment he had received from Nero may very well have impelled him to this course, but to this motive was added before long that of personal ambi- tion. Galba was far advanced in years, and Otho, encouraged by the predictions of

astrologers, aspired to succeed him, and, as a preliminary step, to be adopted as his heir by the empcror himself. With this object in view he set himself to win the affections of the soldiery and the populace in Rome, who, disgusted by Galba's old-fashioned parsimony and severity, were easily brought to look, favourably upon a claimant for the imperial purple whose open-handed generosity and easy manners promised a return of the golden years of Nero. But in January 69 his hopes in this direction were dissipated by Galba's formal adoption of L. Calpurnius Piso as the fittest man to succeed him. Nothing now remained for Otho but to strike a bold blow for the prize which seemed to be slipping from his grasp. Desperate as was the state of his finances, thanks to his previous extravagance, he found money enough to purchase the services of some three-and-twenty soldiers of the pretorian guard, with whom he arranged his plan of operations. On the morning of January 15, five days only after the adoption of Piso, Otho attended as usual to pay his respects to the emperor, and then hastily excusing himself on the score of private business hurried from the Palatine to meet his slender band of accomplices in the forum. By them he was escorted to the preetorian camp, where, after a few moments of surprise and indeci- sion, he was saluted imperator by the assembled troops. At the head of an imposing force he returned to the forum, and at the foot of the Capitol encountered Galba himself, who, alarmed by vague rumours of treachery, was making his way through a dense crowd of wondering citizens towards the barracks of the guard. The cohort on duty at the Palatine, which had accompanied the emperor, instantly deserted him; Galba himself was brutally Imurdered by the fierce preetorians, and his fate was shared by his adopted heir Piso, and by his chief confidants and advisers. The brief struggle over, Otho returned in triumph to the camp. Towards sunset on the same day he proceeded to the senate-house, and there was duly invested by the senators with the name of Augustus, the tribunician power, and the other dignities belonging to the principate. Otho had owed his success largely, not only to the resentment felt by the pretorian guards at Galba's well-meant attempts to curtail their privileges in the Mterests of discipline, but also to the attachment felt in Rome for the memory of Nero; and his first acts as Cmperor showed that he was not unmindful of the fact. He accepted, or appeared to accept, the cognomen of Nero conferred upon him by the shouts of the populace, whom

his comparative youth and the effeminacy of his appear- ance reminded of their lost favourite. Nero’s statues were again set up, his freedmen and household officers reinstalled in their places, and the intended completion of the Golden House announced. At the same time the fears of the more sober and respectable citizens were allayed by Otho’s liberal professions of his intention to govern equitably, and by his judicious clemency towards Marius Celsus, consul- designate, a devoted adherent of Galba. These favourable. symptoms were eagerly seized upon as promising bettcr things than could have been hoped for from one who was only known as yet in Rome as a passionate and reckless profligate and spendthrift.

But any further development of Otho’s policy was speedily checked by the news which reached Rome shortly after his accession, that the army in Germany had declared for Vitellius, the com- mander of the legions on the lower Rhine, and were already advancing upon Italy under the conmand of Vitellius’s two lieutenants, Fabius Valens and Alienus Cecina. After in vain attempting to conciliate Vitellius by the offer of a share in the empire, Otho, with unexpected vigour, prepared for war. His resources were not contemptible. From the remoter provinces, indeed, which had acquiesced in his accession little help was to be expected ; but the legions of Dalmatia, Pannonia, and Meesia were eager in his cause, the pretorian cohorts were in themselves a formidable force, and an efficient fleet gave him the mastery of the Italian seas. Nor was he himself wanting in promptitude. The fleet was at once despatched to secure Liguria, and on March 14 Otho, undismayed by omens and prodigies, started northwards at the head of his troops, in the hopes of preventing the entry of the Vitellian troops into Italy. But for this he was too late. Both Valens and Cecina had already crossed the Alps,—the former by the Cottian, the latter by the Pennine passes,—and all that could be done was to throw troops into Placentia and hold the line of the Po, The campaign opened favourably for Otho, His advanced guard successfully defended Placentia against Cecina, and com- pelled that general to fall back on Cremona. But the arrival of Valens altered the aspect of affairs. The Vitellian commanders now resolved to bring on a decisive battle, and their designs were assisted by the divided and irresolute counsels which prevailed in Otho’s camp. The more experienced officers urged the

importance of avoiding a battle, until at least the legions from Dalmatia had arrived. But the inconsiderate rashness of the emperor's brother Titianus and of Proculus, prefect of the pretorian guards, added to Otho's feverish impatience of prolonged suspense, overruled all opposition, and an immediate advance was decided upon, Otho himself remaining behind with a considerable reserve force at Brixellum, on the southern bank of the Po, At the time when this decision was taken the Othonian forces had already crossed the Po and were encamped at Bedriacum, a small village on_ the Via Postumia, and on the route by which the legions from Dalmatia would naturally arrive. Leaving a strong detachment to hold the camp at Bedriacum, the Othonian forces advanced along tho Via Postumia in the direction of Cremona. At a short distance from that city they unexpectedly encountered the Vitellian troops, and a battle at once ensued. The Othonians, though taken at a dis- advantage, fought desperately, but were finally defeated at all points and forced to fall back in disorder upon their camp at Bedriacum. Thither on the next day the victorious Vitellians followed them, but only to come to terms at once with their disheartened enemy, and to be welcomed into the camp as friends. More unexpected still was the effect produced by the news of the battle at Brixellum. Otho was still in command of a formidable force—the Dalmatian legions had already reached Aquileia ; and the spirit of his soldiers and their officers was still unbroken. But he was resolved to accept the verdict of the battle which his own impaticnce had hastened. He had made a bold throw for success and had failed. He was weary of the suspense and anxieties of a protracted struggle, and he may cven have been sinccre in his pro- fessed unwillingness to cause further bloodshed. In a dignified speech he bade farewell to those about him, and then retiring to rest slept soundly for some hours. Early in the morning he stabbed himself to the heart with a dagger which he had concealed under his pillow, and died as his attendants entered the tent. His funeral was celebrated at once, as he had wished, and not a few of his soldiers followed thcir master's example by killing themselves at his pyre. A plain tomb was erected in his honour at Brixcllum, with the simple inscription "Diis Manibus Marci Othonis." At the time of his death (April 15, 69) he was only in his thirty-eighth ycar, and had reigned just three months. In all his life nothing became him so well as his manner of leaving it ; but the fortitude he then showed, even if it was not merely thc courage of despair, cannot blind us to the fact that he was little better than a reckless

and vicious spendthrift, who was not the less dangerous because his fiereer passions were concealed beneath an affectation of effeminate dandyism. (H. F. P.)

OTHO I. (912-973), called The Great, Holy Roman emperor, was born in 912. After the death of his father, Henry, king of Germany, he was elected and crowned king in 936 at Aix-la-Chapelle; and he occupied the throne upwards of thirty-six years. His reign was one of the most momentous in medizeval history, its chief incident being his assumption of the imperial crown, whereby he rendered impossible the growth of a compact German monarchy. Otho was a man of great ambition, stern and resolute ; and soon after his coronation as king of Germany his leading vassals saw that he intended to claim from them something more than nominal allegiance. First he had to suppress a rebellion headed by Eberhard, duke of Franconia, in association with Thankmar, a son of King Henry by a marriage which had been declared invalid. When this insurrection was put down, Thankmar having died, there was a more formidable rising, in which Eberhard secured the alliance of Otho’s younger brother Henry, of Giselbert, duke of Lorraine, of Frederick, archbishop of Mainz, and of other powerful prelates. The king was again triumphant, and on this occasion he strengthened his position by retaining Franconia in his own hands, and by granting Lorraine to his supporter Conrad, who married Otho’s daughter Liudgard. To his brother Henry, whom he pardoned, he gave Bavaria; and over Swabia, after the death of its duke, he placed his own son Ludolf. His native duchy, Saxony, was entrusted to, Count Hermann, called Billung, a brave noble who had distinguished himself in wars on the eastern borders of Germany. Thus all the great offices of the state were held by Otho’s kinsmen and friends; and he exercised more direct control over his subjects than any sovereign, except Charlemagne, had done before him. In wars with the Eohemians, the Wends, and the Danes Otho was not less successful. In 951 he crossed the Alps to help Queen Adelaide, and, having conquered Berengar II., he married her and became king of Lombardy. On his return to Germany his son Ludolf rebelled against him, and was aided by Duke

Conrad, by Archbishop Frederick of Mainz, and by many discontented magnates. In the midst of the struggle Germany was attacked by the Magyars, whom Duke Conrad had summoned to his aid. This common danger led to the establishment of internal peace, and Otho succeeded in defeating the Magyars. When in 955 they returned in greater numbers than ever, he inflicted on them so decisive a defeat that they did not again invade Germany. In 961, in response to the appeal of Pope John XII, Otho returned to Italy to punish his rebellious vassal Berengar ; and on the 2d February 962 he was crowned emperor by the pope, for the deposition of whom he soon after- – wards summoned a council. At this time Otho remained two years in Italy, and a later visit extended over six years, during which he not only maintained his authority in Lom- bardy, but sought to assert it in southern Italy. In Germany his policy was directed chiefly to the strengthening of the church, which was to act as a counterpoise to the influence of the secular nobles. He died on the 7th May 973, at Memleben, and was buried in Magdeburg, which he had made the seat of an archbishopric.

Sce Képke and Diimmler, Kaiser Otto der Grosse, 1876.

OTHO IL (955-983), Holy Roman emperor, son of Otho I. and Adelaide, was born in 955. In the lifetime of his father he was twice crowned, in 961 as king of Germany, and in 967 (at Rome) as emperor. He became sole ruler after the death of Otho I. in 973. Early in his reign he had to suppress a great conspiracy organized by

H O

his cousin, Duke Henry of Bavaria; and at the same time he was repeatedly attacked by Harold, king of the Danes, In 978, when his authority had been in some measure re-established, he was confronted by a new danger, for Lothair, king of France, suddenly invaded Lorraine. Otho hastily assembled an army, drove Lothair from Lorraine, and pushed on to Paris, which he unsuccessfully besieged. In the treaty by which peace was concluded, France formally recognized the right of Germany to Lorraine. Otho next went to restore order in Rome, from which Pope Benedict VIJ. had been expelled by Crescentius. In southern Italy Otho (who, in virtue of his wife, Theophano, claimed Apulia and Calabria) waged war with the Saracens,

and defeated them in a great battle. On the 13th July 982, however, he himself was defeated, and was very nearly taken prisoner. At a diet in Verona, attended by German and Italian princes, his son Otho, three years of age, was chosen to be his suc- cessor, and arrangements were made for a new campaign in the south. On the 7th December 983 Otho II. died, leaving the empire in a state of confusion, the Danes and the Wends, encouraged by his defeat, having risen against German supremacy. Although warlike and impetuous, Otho II. was a man of refined and scholarly tastes, which had been carefully cultivated by his mother. See Giesebreeht, Geschichte der deutschen Kaiserzett.

OTHO III. (980-1002), Holy Roman emperor, son of Otho II. and Theophano, was born in 980, and crowned king of Germany at Aix-la-Chapelle in 983. After his coronation his kinsman, Duke Henry of Bavaria, who had been imprisoned by Otho IT. in Utrecht, made his escape and seized the young king, in whose name he proposed to govern the empire. His pretensions were resisted, however, and he agreed to submit on condition of being reinstated in his dukedom. During Otho's minority public affairs were administered, with the aid of Willegis, archbishop of Mainz, by his mother Theophano, his grandmother Adelaide, and his aunt Matilda, sister of Otho II. and abbess of Quedlinburg. Otho was a dreamy and imaginative youth of brilliant talents, which were carefully developed by Gerbert, the greatest scholar of the age. In 996, when Otho was declared to have reached his majority, he went to Rome, where Crescentius had made himself supreme. After the death of Pope John XV. Otho caused Bruno, who was related to the Saxon dynasty, to be elected to the holy see; and by him (Gregory V.) Otho was crowned emperor on the 21st May 996. After Otho's departure Crescentius again rose, drove Gregory V. from Rome, and set up an anti-pope. Otho immediately returned, and Crescentius, with twelve of his supporters, was executed. On the death of Gregory V., Otho's tutor, Gerbert, archbishop of Ravenna, was appointed pope; and, in part through his influence, the emperor began to form great plans, deciding to make Rome the centre of the secular as well as of the spiritual world. At the approach of the year 1000, when it was commonly supposed that the earth was about to be destroyed, Otho returned to Germany and made a pilgrimage to the tomb of St Adalbert at Gnesen. Afterwards, in Aix-la-Chapelle, he entered the vault in which the body of

Charlemagne sat upon a throne, and took away the golden cross which hung on the mighty emperor's breast. In 1001 Otho went back to Italy for the purpose of carrying out his far-reaching schemes ; but popular disturbances in Rome compelled him to quit the city ; and on the way to Ravenna, where he proposed to wait for a German army, he died at Paterno, near Viterbo, on the 21st January 1002.

See Wilmans, Jahrbiicher des deutschen Reichs wnter Kaiser Otto III. ; Giesebrecht, Gesehiehte der deutsehen Kaiserzeit.

OT H—OTI

OTHO IV. (c. 1174-1218), Holy Roman emperor, the second son of Henry the Lion, duke of Saxony and Bavaria, of the house of Guelph, was born about 1174. After the banishment of his father to England in 1180, Otho was educated at the court of Richard I., whose sister Matilda was Otho's mother. Otho distinguished himself in the war between England and France, and in 1196 Richard I. made him duke of Aquitaine and count of Poitou. In 1197, when the majority of the German princes, disregarding the previous election of Frederick I1., offered the crown to Philip of Swabia, a party in the Rhine country, headed by the archbishop of Cologne, set up Otho as anti-king, and he was crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle. The result was a eivil war which lasted about ten years, Philip being supported by most of the German princes and by the king of France, Otho by the kings of England and Denmark. For some time Pope Innocent hesitated to take part with either side, but at last he declared for Otho, who promised to make over certain fiefs claimed by the holy see. Notwithstanding the pope's aid, Otho's cause did not prosper; but in 1208 Philip was murdered by Otho of Wittelsbach, and then Otho IV. was universally acknow-

ledged as king. On the 27th September 1209, at Rome,

he was crowned emperor by the pope, to whom he had made new and more important concessions. Otho gave deadly offence to Innocent by seizing Ancona and Spoleto, which had been united to the papal territories ; and, when the emperor, having conquered Apulia, was about to cross to Sicily, the pope excommunicated him, released the German princes from their oath of allegiance, and recognized the right of Frederick II. to the throne. In

1212 Otho returned to Germany, where he acted with so much vigour that he seemed to be capable of defying the papacy; but he immediately lost ground when Frederick Il., a youth of brilliant genius, appeared as his rival. After the battle of Bouvines (July 27, 1214), in which Otho, with King John of England, was defeated by the French, the discredited emperor had no chance of recover- ing his position. He made some ineffectual attempts to assert his claims, but ultimately he contented himself with the principality of Brunswick, which he had inherited when the Guelphic territories were divided in 1202. On the 19th of May 1218 he died at the Harzburg.

See Langerfeldt, Kaiser Otto IV., 1872; Winkelmann, Philipp von Sehwaben und Otto IV., 1878.

OTHO or Fretstnc, German historian, was the son of Leopold IV., margrave of Austria, and of Agnes, the daughter of the emperor Henry IV. He became a priest, and was made provost of the monastery of Neuburg, which had been founded by his father. Soon afterwards he went to Paris to prosecute his studies; and on his way back he joincd the Cistercian order in the monastery of Morimont, in Burgundy, of which he became abbot. In 1137 he was elected bishop of Freising, and this position he held until his death on September 22, 1158.

_ He was the author of two important works, a universal history, im which he brought the record down to 1146, and a history of the Teign of the emperor Fredcrick I. The first of these works was continued (to 1209) by Otho of St Blasien, the second by Ragewin.

tho was nota very accurate historian, but he was much more than a mere chronicler, his materials being clearly and effectively arranged, and his narrative giving evidence of a penetrating and philosophical Judgment. A critical edition of his writings was presented for the first time in the Monwmenta Germaniz, and this was afterwards

separately published with the title, Ottonis Episcopi Frisingensis Opera, 1867,

OTIS, James (1724-1783), was born at Barnstable, Massachusetts, U.S., on February 5, 1724 (o.s.). He graduated with honours at Harvard in 1743, and

for a year or two afterwards devoted himself to the study of literature before reading law. Ho had been a dozen years at the bar, and had risen to professional distinction, when in 1760 he

published a Rudiments of Latin Prosody, a book long ago out of print as well as out of date, but of authority in its time. He wrote also a similar treatise upon Greek prosody ; but that was never published, because, as he said, there was not a fount of Greek letters in the country, nor, if there were, a printer who could have set it up. These, however, were his first and last works upon any other subject than politics. As the long war between Great Britain and France drew towards its close in 1762, measures were taken to enforce anew, in the British colonies in America, the commercial laws which had been in a measure lost sight of. The relaxation had taught the colonists that the burden was heavier than they thought when they bent beneath it; now the war had given them confidence in their own power, and the time had come, therefore, when resistance was inevitable. A trade with the West Indies in colonial vessels had been specially developed. This was in violation of the navigation laws, and to break it up an order in council was sent from England in 1760 directing the issue of writs of assistance, which would authorize the custom-officers to enter any man's house on suspicion of concealment of smuggled goods. The legality of a measure which would put so dangerous a power into the hands of irresponsible men was questioned, and the superior court consented to hear argument. Otis was a law-officer under the crown, and it was his duty to appear on behalf of the Government. He refused, resigned his office, and appeared for the people against the issue of the writs. His plea was profound for its legal lore, fearless in its assertion of the rights of colonial Englishmen, and so fervid in its eloquence that it was said he "was a flame of fire." Though it failed to convince a court where the lieutenant- governor, Hutchinson, sat as chief justice, Otis was from that momenta manof mark. John Adams, who heard him, said, " American independence was then and there born." The young orator was soon afterwards unanimously elected a representative from Boston to the Colonial Assembly. To that position he was re-elected nearly every year of the remaining active years of his life, serving there with his father, who was usually a member, and often speaker, of that body.

Of most of the important state papers addressed to the colonies to enlist them in the common cause, or sent to the Government in England to uphold the rights or set forth the grievances of the colonists, the younger Otis was the author. His influence at home in controlling and directing the movement of events which led to the revolution was universally felt and acknowledged; and abroad no American was so frequently quoted, denounced, or applauded in parliament and the English press, as the recognized head and chief of the rebellious spirit of the colonies! In 1765 Massachusetts sent him as one of her representatives to the first Continental Congress, where he was a conspicuous figure. Four years later his brilliant public career was brought to a close. In consequence of a newspaper controversy with some Tory office-holders in Boston, he was attacked in a darkened room in a public coffee-house by a dozen men, and wounded by a blow upon the head from which he never recovered. His health gave way, and he was subject to frequent attacks of insanity. He was killed by lightning on the 23d May 1783.

A biography of Otis by William Tudor appeared in 1823; and a much briefer one, by Francis Bowen, in 1844.

1 The political writings of Otis were chiefly controversial, and were published in the Boston newspapers. His more important pamphlets were A Vindieation of the Conduct of the House of Representatives of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, published in 1768; The Rights of the British Colonies Asserted and Proved, 1764; A Vindieation of the British Colonies against the Aspersions of the Halifax Gentleman, in his Letter to a Rhode Island Friend,—a letter known at the time as the “ Halifax Libel,” 1765; Considerations on Behalf of the Colonists in a Letter to a Noble Lord, published in England the same year.

68

OTLEY, a market-town in the West Riding of York- shire, is picturesquely situated on the south bank of the Wharfe, at the foot of the precipitous Chevin Hill, 10 miles north of Bradford and 9 south-west of Harrogate. The river is crossed by a stone bridge of seven arches. The church of All Saints contains what is said to be a Saxon doorway belonging to the original building, and several in- teresting monuments. A free grammar school took

its origin from a bequest by Thomas Cave in 1602, and was named in honour of Henry, prince of Wales, son of James I. A mechanics' institute was erected in 1869 in the Italian style, and a court-house in 1875. Worsted spinning and weaving, machine making, tanning and leather dressing, organ-building, and paper-making are the principal indus- tries. Otley is a very old town. It is mentioned in Domesday, the name being possibly derived from Othelai —the field of Otho. The population of the town and urban sanitary district (area 2370 acres) was 5855 in 1871 and 6806 in 1881.

OTRANTO, a city of Italy in the province of Lecce (Terra d'Otranto), 534 miles by rail south of Brindisi on the coast of the Adriatic, within sight on a clear day of the mountains of Albania. Though at present a small place with a communal population of only 2333 (1881), it was formerly one of the most celebrated cities of southern Ttaly, and the seat of an archbishop who bore the title of primate of the Salentines.

Probably of Greek origin, Hydruntum or Hydrus, as it was called, seems for a time to have suffered from the prosperity of Brundusium, but by the 4th century it had become the regular for travellers bound for the East by Apollonia and Dyrrachium.

t remained in the hands of the Greek emperors till its second capture by Robert Guiscard in 1068. In 1480 the Turkish fleet under Achmet, grand-vizier of Mohammed I]I., destroyed the city and massacred or enslaved the inhabitants; and, though Otranto was recovered for Ferdinand by Alphonso, duke of Calabria, and fortified by King Alphonso and Charles V., it never rose to its former importance. During the war of the League of Cambrai, Ferdinand of Aragon expelled the Venetians, who had been for some time in possession of the city. In 1810 Napoleon made Fouché duke of Otranto. The cathedral (S. Annunziata), a three- aisled basilica ending in three apses, contains a mosaic floor dating from 1163, greatly injured by the Turkish horses; and the castle still stands which gave its title to Walpole's well-known novel, The Castle of Otranto.

OTTAWA, the capital of the Dominion of Canada, the seat of the supreme court, and the residence of the governor-general, of the Church of England bishop of Ontario, and of the Roman Catholic bishop of Ottawa, is situated

in 45° 25’ 59” N, lat. and 75° 42’ 4” W. long., in the province of Ontario, on the south bank of the Ottawa (which forms the boundary between Ontario and Quebec), about 90 miles above its junction with the St Lawrence. By the Canadian Pacific Railway, which here crosses from the north to the south side of the Ottawa valley, the city is 120 miles west of Montreal (by. the Canada Atlantic Railway the distance is 116 miles),.and from Prescott on the Grand Trunk Railway and opposite Ogdensburg in New York it is distant 54 miles. The site of Ottawa is sufficiently remarkable, extending as it does for about 2 miles along the Ottawa from the Chaudiére Falls (where the river, narrowed to 200 feet, rushes down about 40 feet over a broken ledge of rock) to the falls at the mouth of the Rideau (a right-hand tributary), and rising about midway into a cluster of hills—Parliament or Barrack Hill (160 feet), Major’s Hill, &c—which front the river with bold bluffs. The Rideau Canal, which skirts the east side of Parliament Hill, separates what is known as the higher from the lower town. To the south of Parliament Hill is the more commercial part of the city, stretching westward to the suburb of Rochesterville and the lumber district round the Chauditre Falls. Major’s Hill, east of the canal, is laid out as a public park ; and

OT L—

wr fs

Sandy Hill, to the south of the lower town, forms a resi- dential quarter. Beyond the Rideau river lies the sub- urban village of New Edinburgh, with the official residence of the governor-general, Rideau Hall. The city of Hull too, on the opposite side of the Ottawa, in the province of Quebec, may be regarded as a suburb of the capital, with which it is connected bya suspension bridge. The Govern- ment buildings, which give the name to Parliament Hill, rank among the finest specimens of architecture in North America. The central pile, or Parliament House, is in Italian Gothic of the 13th century,—the material mainly Potsdam sandstone from Nepean. The main (south) front is 470 feet long and 40 feet high, and in the middle over the principal entrance stands Victoria Tower, 180 feet high, and surmounted by a great iron crown. In the centre of the north front is a semi-detached polygonal (almost cir- cular) hall, 90 feet in diameter, appropriated to the

library. The corner stone of the building was laid by the Prince of Wales in 1860. The total cost was about £1,000,000.

AS)

fan SS

es –

——

<= Gj < fj i A) /

Plan of Ottawa. (For ground plan and elevation see The Builder, 1859 and 1860.) Two extensive blocks of departmental buildings are placed like detached wings forming the sides of the quadrangle in front. Ottawa also contains a Roman Catholic cathedral (Notre Dame) with twin spires 200 feet high, the Gray Nunnery (the mother-house of the province of Ontario), the Black Nunnery, two convents, a Roman Catholic college (Ottawa University), a Roman Catholic hospital, a Protestant hospital, a Protestant ladies' college, a city-hall, a custom-house, the Government normal school for central Canada, the museum of the geological survey, &c. Besides being a great seat of the lumber trade, with saw-mills and match-works, it manufactures flour, cast-iron wares, leather, and bricks. The exports were valued at $1,683,148 in the fiscal year ending June 1874, and at $2,444,723 in the fiscal year 1883,—the im- ports at the same dates amounting to $1,495,169 and $1,562,344. The revenue arising from customs duties amounts to about £260,000 annually. The population of the city (about half being Roman Catholics and half Pro- testants) was 14,669 in 1861, 21,545 in 1871, and 27,412 in 1881.

aaa! ee a Oe ee, eee

EE — —

OT T—OT T 69

Stcamers ply in summer down to Montreal, and for about 900 miles up the river above the falls, as well as through the Rideau Canal to Kingston.

Philemon Wright of Woburn, in Massachusetts, scttled in 1800 at the foot of the portage round the Chaudiére Falls on the site of Hull, and some twenty years later he transferred his claim to the hills on the other side of the river to a teamster named Sparks, who would have preferred the $200 due to him. Sparks Street is now the fashionable commercial street of Ottawa. In 1827 the Rideau Canal was constructed at a cost of $2,500,000 to connect lower Canada with Kingston on Lake Ontario, and in that way prevent the necessity of gun-boats, &c., passing up the St Lawrence exposed to the enemy's fire; and soon afterwards a town sprang up at the Ottawa end, called Bytown after Colonel By, R.E., who had surveyed the eanal. At its incorporation as a city in 1854 Bytown received the name of Ottawa. In 1858 the queen, to whom the matter was referred, selected Ottawa as the capital of the Dominion of Canada,

artly because of the advantages of its site, and partly to avoid invidious preference among the rival claims of Quebec, Montreal, Kingston, and Toronto. The first session of parliament in Ottawa was opened in 1865.

OTTAWA, a city of the United States, capital of La Salle county, IlJinois, on both sides of the Illinois above and below the mouth of the Fox river (which furnishes abund- ant water-power by a fall of 29 feet), on the Illinois and Michigan Canal, and at the junction of the Fox river branch of the Chicago, Burlington, and Quincy Railway with the Chicago, Rock Island, and Pacific Railway, 84 miles south- west of Chicago. Ottawa ships large quantities of produce and live stock, and has manufactories of agricultural imple- ments, carriages, glass, and clothing. The more conspicuous buildings are those occupied by the county courts and jail, and the supreme court for the northern division of the State. Near the south bank of the Illinois there are mineral springs possessing important medicinal properties. In 1880 the population was 7834 (811 in South Ottawa).

OTTENSEN, a town of Prussia, in the province of Schleswig-Holstein, lies on the right bank of the Elbe, immediately below Altona, of which it practically forms a part. It contains numerous villas of Hamburg merchants, and carries on manufactures of machinery, tobacco, soap, gilt frames and

cornices, glass, iron, and other articles. Ottensen, which received its municipal charter in 1871, contained 15,375 inhabitants at the census of 1880. The three “Graves of Ottensen,” besung by the poet Riickert, are those of 1138 citizens, who were expelled from Ham- burg by Marshal Davoust in 1813-14, and perished here, of Charles, duke of Brunswick, who died at Ottensen of wounds received at the battle of Jena, and of Klopstock and his wife Meta. The last alone now remains.

OTTER, a group of animals belonging to the family Mustelidz, of the order Carnivora (see MAMMALIA, vol. xv. p. 439), distinguished from their allies by their aquatic habits. The true otters constitute the genus Lutra of zoologists, of which the common species of the British Isles, L. vulgaris, may be taken as the type. It has an elongated, low body, short limbs, short broad feet, with five toes on each, connected together by webs, and all with short, moderately strong, compressed, curved, pointed claws. Head rather small, broad, and flat; muzzle very broad; whiskers thick and strong ; eyes small and black; ears short and rounded. ‘Tail a little more than half the length of the body and head together, very broad and Strong at the base, and gradually tapering to the end, some- what flattened horizontally. The fur is of very fine quality, consisting of a short soft under fur of a whitish grey colour, brown at the tips, interspersed with longer, stiffer, and thicker hairs, very shining, greyish at the base, bright rich brown at the points, especially on the upper parts and outer surface of the legs; the throat, cheeks, under parts and inner surface of the legs brownish grey through- Out. Individual otters vary much in size. The total length from the nose to the end of the tail averages about

34 feet, of which the tail occupies 1 foot 3 or 4 inches. The weight of a full size male is from 18 to 24 hb, that of a female about 4 fb less.

As the otter lives almost exclusively on fish, it is rarely met with far from water, and usually frequents the shores of brooks, rivers, lakes, and, in some localities, the sea itself. It is a most expert swimmer and diver, easily over- taking and seizing fish in the water, but when it has cap- tured its prey it brings it to shore to devour it. When lying upon the bank it holds the fish between its fore-paws, commences at the head and then eats gradually towards the tail, which it is said always to leave. The female produces three

to five young ones at a time, in the month of March or April, and brings them up in a nest formed of grass or other herbage, usually placed in a hollow place in the bank of a river, or under the shelter of the roots of some overhanging tree. The Common Otter is found in localities suitable to its habits throughout Great Britain and Ireland, though far less abundantly than formerly, for, being very destructive to fish, and thus coming into keen competition with those who pursue the occupation of fish- ing either for sport or for gain, it is rarely allowed to live in peace when once its haunts are discovered. Otter hunting with packs of hounds of a special breed, and trained for the purpose, was formerly a common pastime in the country. When hunted down and brought to bay by the dogs, the otter is finally despatched by long spears carried for the purpose by the huntsmen.

The Common Otter ranges throughout the greater part of Europe and Asia. A closely allied but larger species, LZ. canadensis, is extensively distributed throughout North America, where it is systematically pursued by professional trappers for the value of its fur. An Indian species, Z. nair, is regularly trained by the natives of some parts of Bengal to assist them in fishing, by driving the fish into the nets. In China also otters are taught to catch fish, being let into the water for the TA le attached to a long cord.

Otters are widely distributed over the earth, and, as they are much alike in size and coloration, their specific distinctions are by no means well defined. Besides those mentioned above, the following have been described, Z. californica, North America; L. felina, Central America, Peru, and Chili; JZ. brasiliensis, Brazil; L. maculicollis, South Africa; L.whiteley?, Japan; L. chinensis, China and Formosa, and other doubtful species. A very large species from Demerara and Surinam, with a prominent flange-like ridge along each lateral margin of the tail, LZ. sandbachii, constitutes the genus Pieronura of Gray. Others, with the feet only slightly webbed, and the claws excecdingly small or altogether wanting on some of the tocs, and also with some difference in dental characters, are with better reason separated into a distinct genus called onyx. These are A. inunguis from South Africa and A. leptonyx from Java and Sumatra.

More distinct still is the Sea-Otter (Enhydra lutris). It differs from all other known Carniwora in having but two incisors on each side of the lower jaw,

the one correspond- ing to the first (very small in the true otters) being constantly absent. Though the molar teeth resemble those of Lutra in their proportions, they differ very much in the exceeding roundness and massiveness of their crowns and bluntness of their cusps. The fore feet are very small, with five short webbed toes, and naked palms; the hind feet are altogether unlike those of the true otters, but approaching those of the seals, being large, flat, palmated, and furry on both sides. The outer toe is the largest and stoutest, the rest gradually diminishing in size to the first. The tail is about one-fourth of the length of the head and body, cylindrical and obtuse. The entire length of the animal from nose to end of tail is about 4 feet, so that the body is considerably larger and more massive than that of the English otter. The skin is peculiarly loose, and stretches when removed from the animal so as to give the idea of a still larger creature than it really is. The fur is remarkable for the preponderance of the beautifully soft woolly under fur, the longer stiffer hairs being very scanty. The general colour is a deep liver-brown, everywhere silvered or frosted with the hoary tips of the longer stiff

hairs. These are, however, removed when the skin is dressed for commercial purposes.

Sea-otters are only found upon the rocky shores of certain parts of the North Pacific Ocean, especially the Aleutian Islands and Alaska, extending as ‘far south on the American

—=

The Sea-Otter (Enhydra lutris). From Wolf in the Proceedings of the Loological Society of London, 1865, pl. vii.

coast as Oregon; but, owing to the unremitting persecution to which they are subjected for the sake of their skins, which rank among the most valuable known to the furrier, their numbers are greatly diminishing, and, unless some restric- tion can be placed upon their destruction, such as that which protects the fur seals of the Pribyloff Islands, the species is threatened with extermination, or, at all events, excessive scarcity. When

this occurs, the occupation of five thousand of the half-civilized natives of Alaska, who are dependent upon sea-otter hunting as a means for obtaining their living, will be gone. The principal hunting grounds at present are the little rocky islets and reefs around the island of Saanach and the Chernobours, where they are captured by spearing, clubbing, or nets, and recently by the more destructive rifle bullet. They do not feed on fish, like the true otters, but on clams, mussels, sea-urchins, and crabs, and the female brings forth but a single young one at a time, apparently at no particular season of the year. They are excessively shy and wary, and all attempts to rear the young ones in captivity have hitherto failed,

See Elliott Coues, Monograph of North American Fur-bearing Animals, 1877. (W. H. F.)

OTTOMAN EMPIRE. See Turkey.

OTTUMWA, a city of the United States, capital of Wapello county, Iowa, lies on the Des Moines river (here spanned by a bridge), 75 miles north-west of Burlington by the main line of the Chicago, Burlington, and Quincy Rail- road. An important railway junction, in the heart of the coal-region of Iowa, and in possession of good water-power, Ottumwa, whose existence as a city dates from 1856, is growing in commercial and industrial activity. There is a large pork-packing establishment, killing 100,000 hogs annually. Among the manufactures are waggons and carriages, ploughs, sewing machine attachments, table- cutlery, corn-starch, linseed oil, harness, and furniture. The population was 1632 in 1860, 5214 in 1870, and 9004 in 1880.

OTWAY, Tuomas (1651-1685), the best English tragic poet of the classical school, was the son of the Rev. Humphrey Otway, rector of Woolbeding, near Midhurst in Sussex, and was born at the adjoining village of Trotton, March 3, 1651. He acknowledges his obligations to the care and education of his parents. He went to

school at Wickham, near Winchester, and in 1669 pro- ceeded to Christ Church, Oxford. In 1671 he appeared at the Duke's Theatre, Lincoln's Inn Fields, in the Forced Marriage, a new play by Aphra Behn, but failed ignomini- ously. Declining to take orders, he quitted the university in 1674, and obtained a cornetcy in a troop of horse, Within a twelvemonth he sold his commission, and came to London as a literary adventurer. In 1675 his Alcibiades,

a poor play, was performed with indifferent success at the —

Duke's Theatre. In the following year Don Carlos, a vigorous rhymed tragedy, puerile in conception and show- ing little knowledge of human nature, but full of declama- tory energy, took the town fairly by storm. He followed it up with translations of Racine's Berenice and Moliére's Fourberies. de Scapin, and with a very dull and indecent comedy of his own, Lriendship in Fashion. He next went as a volunteer to the wars in Flanders, an unfortunate expedition which pointed the merciless lampoons of Rochester, to whom Berenice had been dedicated, but with whom he had now quarrelled. It also prompted his mediocre but not uninteresting play, Zhe Soldier's Fortune (1679), in which he has turned his military experience to account. Next year he produced The Orphan, founded upon a novel called Lnglish Adventures, one of the two plays which have placed him in the first rank of English tragic poets; and Caius Marius, a wholesale but acknowledged plagiarism from Romeo and Juliet. In 1682 appeared his masterpiece, Venice Preserved, the plot of which is taken from Saint Réal's Histoire de la Conjuration du Marquis de Bedemar. Its success was decisive, but it brought little pecuniary advantage to the author, who was already sink- ing into abject poverty, and, as appears by some letters attributed by Mr Gosse to this date, was further tormented by a hopeless passion for the beautiful Mrs Barry, the principal female performer in his plays. Some of his letters to her were first published with Rochester's works, and subsequently included in his own. Desponding and broken-hearted, he seems to have given himself up to dissi- pation, and produced but one more insignificant play, The Atheist, a second part of the Soldier's Fortune (1684). On April 14, 1685, he died on Tower Hill, under most

melan- choly circumstances if the tradition can be believed that he was choked by a piece of bread begged from a passer by. There is no absolute confirmation of this sad story, or of a later account which attributes his death to a fever caught by over-exertion in pursuing a robber. Whatever the exact manner of his decease, he certainly expired in obscurity and want. A tragedy called Heroic Friendship was published under his name in 1719. It has generally been regarded as wholly spurious ; but Mr Gosse, his most sympathetic critic, recognizes some traces of his hand. Otway's strong point is pathos. In this respect, though in no other, he is the Euripides of the English stage. When he would excite compassion he is irresistible. Unlike Shakespeare's, however, his pathos springs entirely out of the situation. His characters in themselves are not interesting, but the circumstances in which they are placed afford scope for the most moving appeals, and merit and demerit are altogether lost sight of in the contemplation of human suffering. The love scenes between Jaftier and Belvidera cannot be surpassed; and no plot more skilfully calculated to move the emotions than that of Venice Pre- served was ever contrived by dramatist. It is to be regretted that modern fastidiousness has banished from the stage The Orphan, in which Johnson saw no harm. In everything but pathos Otway is mediocre: he has no deep insight into the human heart; his ideas are circum- scribed and commonplace ; and his attempted eloquence is frequently mere rant. Even the affecting madness of Belvidera verges. dangerously on burlesque, and is no

eR

a

ee,

OU D—O UD 71

doubt parodied in Sheridan's Critic. His boyish Alcibiades is positively absurd, and even Don Carlos produces much the same effect in the closet, though its rattling vigour carried it off well in the theatre at a time when nature was little regarded. It was probably not unknown to Schiller. The comedies and melodramas are simply tire- some, although a certain interest attaches to the military scenes in the Soldier's Fortune. There has hardly

been another instance of a poet whose best and whose worst are at such an immeasurable distance from each other as Otway's; but his supreme excellence in one of the most difficult branches of the dramatic art must always be held to entitle him to an exalted place as a tragic poet. It has been remarked that Dryden, with all his splendour, has but one truly pathetic passage in the whole range of his dramas. Otway, writing simply from the heart, reached at a bound an eminence inaccessible to the laborious efforts of the greater poet. His miscellaneous poems are only interesting in so far as they illustrate his life and character. Of the latter little is known. He was a man about town in a dissipated age; but his references to his parents and friends, and his letters to the object of his unfortunate passion, show that he possessed deep and refined feeling.

See Baker, Biographia Dramatica ; Johnson, Lives of the Poets ; Gosse, Seventeenth Century Studies ; and Ward, History of English Dramatic Literature, vol. ii. (R. G.)

OUDENARDE, or OUDENAERDE, a small town of Belgium, in the province of East Flanders, on the Scheldt, 17 miles south-south-west from Ghent, with a population (1880) of 5880. It has manufactures of cotton and woollen fabrics, lace, tobacco, and starch, dyeing and bleaching establishments, salt refineries, distilleries, and soon. The town-hall, built in 1530 by Van Pede, is remarkable for the elegance of its architecture and the profusion of its ornament; the portal of the council chamber is a masterpiece of wood-carving, executed in 1534 by Paul van der Schelden. Among other buildings of interest are the old church of St Walburga, of the 10th century, partly rebuilt in the 14th, and that of Our Lady of Pamele, an example, rare in Belgium, of the transition Gothic style. 1867 to the memory of the Belgians who fell in Mexico, at the battle of Zacamburo.

The origin of Oudenarde is unknown ; it appears to have been a stronghold of some importanee under the Romans. A fortress was erected there by Count Baldwin of Flanders in 1053. It was besieged in 1452 by the citizens of Ghent, who were repulsed by Simon de Lalaing after a memorable siege. Alexander Farnese took the town in 1581. Close to its walls was fought, on July 11, 1708, the battle of Oudenarde, in which the French were defeated

by the allied army under the command of Marlborough and Prince Eugene. It was retaken by the French in 1745.

OUDH, a province of British India, now under the political administration of the lieutenant-governorship of the North-Western Provinces, but in respect of its land and courts still a distinct chief-commissionership. Lying between 25° 34’ and 28° 42’ N. lat. and between 79° 44’ and 83° 9’ E. long., it is bounded on the N.E. by Nepal, on the N.W. by the Rohilkhand division, on the 8.W. by the Ganges river, on the E. and S.E. by the Benares division. The administrative headquarters of the province are at Lucknow.

Physical Aspects.—Oudh forms the central portion of the great Gangetic plain, sloping downwards from the Nepal Himdlayas in the north-east to the Ganges on the south-west. For 60 miles along the northern border of Gonda and Bahraich districts the boundary extends close up to the lower slopes of the Himalayas, embracing the

damp and unhealthy sub-montane region known as the

tardi, To the westward of this, the northern boundary recedes a little from the mountain tract, and the ¢ardi in

A monument was erected at Oudenarde in –

this portion of the range has been for the most part ceded to Nepal. With the exception of a belt of Government forest along the northern frontier, the rest of the province consists of a fertile and densely peopled monotonous plain. The greatest elevation (600 feet) is attained in the jungle- clad plateau of Khairigarh in Kheri district, while the extreme south-east frontier is only 230 feet above sea- level. Four great rivers traverse or skirt the plain of Oudh in converging courses—the Ganges, the Gumti, the Gogra, and the Rapti. Numerous smaller channels seam the whole face of the country, carrying off the surplus drainage in the rains, but drying up in the hot season. All the larger rivers, except the Gumti, as well as most of the smaller streams, have beds hardly sunk below the general level ; and in time of floods they burst through their con- fining banks and carve out new channels for themselves. Numerous shallow ponds or jhils mark the former beds of the shifting rivers. These jhils have great value, not only as

preservatives against inundation, but also as reservoirs for irrigation. The soil of Oudh consists of a rich alluvial deposit, the detritus of the Himalayan system, washed down into the Ganges valley by ages of fluvial action. Usually a light loam, it passes here and there into pure clay, or degenerates occasionally into barren sand. The uncultivable land consists chiefly of extensive wsar plains, found in the southern and western districts, and covered by the deleterious saline efflorescence known as rek. Oudh possesses no valuable minerals. Salt was extensively manufactured during native rule, but the British Govern- ment has prohibited this industry for fiscal reasons. Nodular limestone (kankar) occurs in considerable deposits, and is used as road metal.

The general aspect of the province is that of a rich expanse of waving and very varied crops, interspersed by numerous ponds or lakes. The villages lie thickly scattered, consisting of low thatched cottages, and surrounded by patches of garden land, or groves of banyan, pipal, and pakar trees. The dense foliage of the mango marks the site of almost every little homestead, —no less an area than 1000 square, miles being covered by these valuable fruit-trees. Tamarinds overhang the huts of the poorer classes, while the neighbourhood ofa wealthy family may be recognized by the graceful clumps of bamboo. Plantains, guavas, jack-fruit, limes, and oranges add further beauty to the village plots. The flora of the Government reserved forests is rich and varied. The sd/ tree yields the most important timber ; the finest logs are cut in the Khairigarh jungles and floated down the Gogra to Bahramghat, where they are sawn. The hard wood of the shisham is also valuable ; and several other timber-trees afford materials for furniture or roofing shingle. Among the scattered jungles in various parts of the province, the mahud tree is prized alike for its edible flowers, its fruits, and its timber. The jhils supply the villages with wild rice, the roots and seeds of the lotus, and the sinmghdra water-nut. The fauna comprises most of the animals and birds common to the Gangetic plain; but many species, formerly common, have now almost, ifmnot entirely, disappeared. The wild elephant is now practically unknown, except when a stray specimen loses its way at the foot of the hills. Tigers are now only found in any numbers in the wilds of Khairigarh. Leopards still haunt the cane-brakes and thickets along the banks of the rivers; and né/gd¢ and antelopes abound. Game birds consist of teal and wild duck, snipe, jungle fowl, and peacock.

Climate.—The climate of Oudh is less damp than that of Lower Bengal, and has greater varieties of temperature. The year falls naturally into three seasons—the rainy, from the middle of June to the beginning of October ; the cold weather, from October to February or March; and the

hot season, from March to June. The mean temperature at Lucknow for the thirteen years ending 1880 was 78°; in 1881 it was the same, the maximum temperature on any one day during the year being 111°, and the minimum 35°. The heat proves most oppressive in the rainy season. The heaviest downpours occur in July and September, but are extremely capricious. The average annual rainfall at Lucknow for the fourteen years ending 1881 amounted to 37°57 inches.

Population.—Oudh is probably more densely peopled than any other equal rural area in the world. The census of 1881 returned the population at 11,387,741 (5,851,655 males and 5,536,086 females), distributed over an area of 24,245 square miles. The following table exhibits the areas and populations of the districts separately.

Divisions. cena Square Miles. PR Mweknowennee: soeeueaeennt: 989 696, 824 eutelomoweer < MU WAO ts osscicesneacnnecrenes 1,747 899,069 Bara lsannkel crac cum ene: a re a Ela sa ven airvasvaa sees ; : SUPA. cay 4, | LAPOOL cya vvevece nes esncnteve Qek2 987,630 Le aaiavaesnaien sere tanten ee F pe ere DMO ic cao caasnencruteee ,081, eeabed) Bahraich (Bhardich) ..... 2,741 878,048 y Cone SERRE So: 280 Lae PUAN | <5 op, nates ; 51, RawBareli < | Sultampar…. 0.0… 1,707 957,912 Partabgarh (Pratapgarh)| 1,436 847,047 TG talPeee ee cick, ee 24,245 | 11,387,741

Divided according to religion, the population consisted of 9,942,411 Hindus, 1,483,448 Mohammedans, 1154 Sikhs, 9060 Christians, and 1673 others. ‘The Mohammedans are subdivided into the four classes of Sayyids, Shaikhs, Pathans, and Mughals, but they have lost greatly in social prestige since the downfall of the royal line. In the higher rank they still number seventy-eight tdlukdars. Some of these, as the rajas of Utraula and Nanpara, trace their descent from local Mohammedan chieftains. Others belong to ancient Hindu families. The Mohammedans still furnish the ablest public

servants in the province, and supply almost entirely the native bar. The lower orders make industrious cultivators and weavers, Among the Hindu population, the Brahmans preponder- ate, numbering 1,364,783, about one-eighth of the entire population. They include, however, only six ¢élukddrs in the whole province, and two of these acquired their wealth during the later days of Mohammedan rule. Large numbers of them follow agriculture, but they make undesirable tenants, —most of them refusing to hold the plough, and cultivating their fields by hired labour. They supply good soldiers, however, and many are employed in trade. The Kshattriyas, or Rajputs, form the great landholding class, but the majority are now in decayed circumstances. The Mohammedans, Brahmans, and Kshattriyas compose the higher social stratum of society, and number altogether about a fourth of the entire popu- lation. Amongst the lower Hindus, the Kayasths, or clerk and scrivener class, number 147,482. The Sudras or lowest class of Hindus include 1,185,512 Ahirs, cattle graziers and cultivators. The best tenantry and most industrious cultivators are to be found amongst the Kurmis, who number nearly 800,000. Of the aboriginal or semi-Hinduized tribes some, such as the Pasis, who number 718,906, make good soldiers, and furnish the greater part of the rural police. Others, like the Bhars and Tharus, live in small isolated groups on the outskirts of the jungle or the hill country, and hold no communication with the outer world. The Nats and Kanjars wander like gipsies over the country, with their small movable villages or wigwams of matting and leaf-screens. The Koris and Chamars, weavers and leather-cutters, reach the lowest depth ofall. In the northern districts many still practically occupy the position of serfs, bound to the soil, having seldom spirit enough to avail themselves of the remedy afforded by the courts of law. They hold the plough for the Brahman or Kshattriya master, and dwell with the pigs in a separate quarter of the village, apart from their purer neighbours.

Fifteen towns in the province have a population exceeding 10,000 persons, according to the census of 1881, namely—Lucknow, 239,773; Faiztbad, 38,828 ; Lucknow Cantonment, 21,530 ; Bahraich, 19,439; Shahabad, 18,510; Tanda, 16,594; Sandila, 14,865; Khairabad, 14,217; Nawabganj, 13,933; Ajudhia, 11,643 ; Rudauli, 11,394 ; Bilgram, 11,067; Mallawan, 10,970; Laharpur, 10,437 ; Hardoi, 10,026. Thirty-six other towns have a population exceed- ing 5000. ‘The general population is essentially rural,

spread over the surface of the country in small cultivating communities, Over 90 per cent. of the population belong to the rural class,

OUDH

Agriculture.—There arc three harvests, reaped respectively in September, December, and March, while sugar-cane comes to maturity in February, cotton in May, and sémwdn in almost any month of the year. The principal September crops are rice, Indian' eorn, and millets. Fine rice, transplanted in August from nurseries near the village sites, forms the most valuable item of the December harvest, the other staples being mustard-secd and pulses. Wheat forms the main spring crop. Sugar-cane occupies the land for an entire year; it requires much labour and several watcrings, but the result in ordinary years amply repays the outlay.

At the date of the annexation of Oudh in 1856, 23,500 villages, or about two-thirds of the entire area of the province, were in tho possession of the great tdélukddrs, heads of powerful clans and representatives of ancient families, a feudal aristocracy, based upon rights in the soil, which went back to traditional times, and which were heartily acknowledged by the subordinate holders. The new settlement paid no regard to their claims, and many landholders were stripped of almost their entire possessions. The mutiny of 1857 suddenly put a stop to this work of disinheritance, and it is hardly to be wondered at that throughout Oudh, the whole tdlukddrt, with a very few isolated exceptions, joined the sepoys. On the restoration of order the principle adopted was to restore to the tdlukdars all that they had formerly possessed, but in such a manner that their rights should depend upon the immediate grant of the British Government. About two-thirds of the number accepted an invitation to come to Lucknow, and there concluded political arrangements with the Government. On the one hand, the télukddrs bound themselves to level all forts, give up arms, and act loyally, to pay punctually the revenue assessed upon them and the wages of the village officials, and to assist the police in keeping order. On the other hand, the British Government conferred a right of property unknown alike to Hindu and to Mohammedan law, comprising full power of alienation by will, and succession according to primogeniture in case of intestacy. The land revenue demand was fixed at one-half the gross rental; subordinate tenure-

holders were confirmed in their ancient privileges; and a clause was introduced to protect the actual cultivators from extortion. Such were the main features of the sanads issued by Sir C. Wingfield in October 1859, which constitute the land system of Oudh to the present day, subject to a few minor modifications. The detailed operations for giving effect to this settlement were carried out by a revenue survey, conducted both by fields and villages, begun in 1860, and finished in 1871. The total assessed area in 1881-82 was 14,877,020 acres, the total assessment as land revenue being £1,449,147, or an average of 1s. 114d. per acre. The total culti- vated area is 8,274,560 acres; cultivable and grazing lands are set down at 4,035,351 acres ; and uncultivable waste at 2,567,109 acres.

The estates on the revenue roll are divided into thrce classes :— (1) those held under the tdlwkddrt rules described above ; (2) those held by ordinary zaménddrt tenure ; and (3) those held in fee-simple. There are altogether about 400 tdlukddrs in the province, of whom about two-thirds, with an area of about 24 million acres, hold their estates under the rule of primogeniture. The zaméinddrt estates, locally known by the name of mu/rdd, may be the undivided pro- perty of a single owner ; but far more commonly they are owned by a coparcenary community who regard themselves as desccndants ofa common ancestor. The fee-simple estates, which are very few in number, consist of land sold under the Waste Land Rules. The sub-tenures under the above estates are—(1) sub-settled villages eomprised within tdlukddrt estates; (2) lands known as str, daswant, nankan, and dihddrt, held by proprietors who have been unable to prove their right to the sub-settlement of a whole village; (3) groves

eld by cultivators, who, according to immemorial custom, give the landlord a certain share of the produce; (4) lands granted, either by sale or as gifts, for religious endowments ; and (5) lands held rent-free by village servauts and officials.

Commerce and Manufactures.—Under native rule the only exports were salt and saltpetre, while the imports were confined to articles of luxury required for the Lucknow court. Since the introduction of British authority, although Lucknow has declined, countless small centres of traffic have sprung up throughout the country. The staple exports consist of wheat and

other food grains, and oil-seeds; the main imports are cotton piece goods, cotton twist, and salt. Cawnpur, though lying on the southern bank of the Ganges within the North-Western Provinces, is, in fact, the emporium for the whole trade of Oudh, by rail, road, and river, The enormous exports of wheat and oil-seeds from Cawnpur represent to a great extent the surplus harvest of the Oudh cultivator. A brisk trade is also earried on with Nepal, along the three frontier distriets of Kheri, Bahraich, and Gonda. The policy of the Nepal court is to compel this traffie to be trans- acted at marts within its own dominions. At all of these a con- siderable number of Oudh merchants are permanently settled, whereas Nepalis rarely cross the frontier to trade except for the purchase of petty neccssaries. The principal exports from Oudh into Nepal are Indian and European piece goods, salt, sugar,

tobacco, spices, and chemicals. The imports from Nepal, which considerably exceed the exports in value, consist chiefly of rice, oil-seeds, ght or clarified butter, metal-wares, timber, spices, drugs, and cattle. . ’

No province of India is more destitute of wholesale manufac- tures than Oudh. Almost all manufactured articles of any nicety require to be imported. The only specialties are gold and silver lace-work, silver chasing, and rich cmbroidery, all confined to Lucknow, and the weaving of a peculiar class of cotton goods, which still flourishes at Tanda.

Communication. —The Oudh and Rohilkhand Railway forms the great trunk of communications. A branch runs from Lucknow through Unao to Cawnpur; and another diverges at Bara Banki for Bahramghat on the Gogra. The whole railway forms a loop- line between the East Indian and the Sind, Punjab, and Delhi systems. Good roads connect all the principal towns, and much traffic passes along the rivers.

Administration.—The administration belongs to the non-regu- lation system, under which a single officer discharges both fiscal and judicial functions. The province contains twelve districts, each under a deputy-commissioner. The chief-commissionership isnow amalgamated with the governorship of the North-Western Provinces. The high court, presided over by the judicial com- missioner, forms the ultimate court of appeal. The

principal items of revenue consist of the land revenue, which stands at about £1,400,000; stamps, £116,770 ; excise, £100,411; forests, £31,114; and cesses ovcr £101,000. In 1881 the total police force numbered. 7634 officers and men, maintained at a cost of £95,815.

History.—At the dawn of history Oudh appears as a flourishing kingdom, ruled over from Sravasti by a powerful sovereign. In its capital Sakya Muni (Buddha) began his labours, and the city long remained a seat of learning for Buddhist disciples. For six centuries Sravasti maintained a high position among the states of northern India, but in the 1st century of our era the Buddhist monarch of Kashmir was defeated by the Brahmanical king of Ujjain, who restored the fanes and holy places of Ajodhya, the Hindu sacred city, which had fallen into decay. A long struggle between Buddhism and Brahmanism followed, and when the Chinese pilgrim Fa Hian (c. 400 a.p.) visited Sravasti, as one of the most famous historical places of his religion, he found the once populous city still marked by lofty walls, enclosing the ruins of numerous temples and palaces, but inhabited only by a few destitute monks and devotees. In the 7th century the desolation was complete. According to local tradition, about the 8th or 9th century the Tharus, an aboriginal tribe, descended from the hills and began to clear the jungle which had overgrown the deserted kingdom, as far as the sacred city of Ajodhya. To the present day these aborigines are the only people who can withstand the influence of malaria, and so become the pioneers of civilization in the jungle tracts. About a century later, a family of Sombansi lineage, from the north-west, subjected the wild: settlers to their sway. The new dynasty belonged to the Jain faith, and still ruled at or near the ruins of Sravasti at the time of the invasion of Mahmuid’s famous general, Sayyid Salar. Towards the close of the 11th century Oudh was added to the kingdom of Kananj by conquest. After its downfall Shahab-ud-din Ghori, or his lieutenant, overran Oudh in 1194. Mohammed Bakhtiyar Khilji was the first Mohammedan to organize the administration, and establish in Oudh a base for his military operations, which extended to the banks of the Brahmaputra. On the death of Kutb-ud-din he refused allegiance to Altamsh as a slave, and his son Ghiyds-ud-din established an hereditary governorship of Bengal. Oudh, however, was wrested from the Bengal dynasty, and remained an outlying province of Delhi. Although nominally ruled in the name of the Delhi empire by great Mohammedan vassals from

Bahraich or Ménikpur, Oudh continued to be a congeries of Rajput principalities and baronies, which made war, collected revenues, and administered justice within their territories at their own pleasure. During the early days of Mohammedan supremacy the Hindu chiefs of southern Oudh were engaged in a desultory warfare with the receding Bhars, an aboriginal tribe who had obtained a tem- porary ascendency after the first Moslem invasions. Upon their subjection the Mohammedan kingdom of Jaunpur arose in the valley of the Ganges. Ibr4him Shah Sharki, the ablest of the Jaunpur rulers, turned his attention to the fruitful province which lay in the direct path between his capital and Delhi. He attempted thoroughly to reduce Oudh to the condition of a Moslem country, and, as long as he lived, the people sullenly acquiesced. But on his death the national spirit successfully reasserted itself under the leadership of Raja Tilok Chand, probably a descendant of the Kanauj sovereigns ; and for a hundred years the land had peace.

During the troubled times which followed the death of Babar, the first Mughal emperor of Delhi, Oudh became a focus of dis- allection against the reigning house. After the final defcat of the Afghan dynasty at Panipat, and the firm establishment of Akbar’s Tule, the province scttled down into one of the most important among the imperial viceroyalties. Under the Mughal dynasty in

(6:

its flourishing days, the Hindu chieftains accepted their position without difficulty. But when the rise of the Mahratta power broke down the decaying cmpire of Aurangzeb, the chieftains of Oudh again acquired an almost complete independence. About 1732 Saddat Ali Khan, a Persian merchant, received the appointment of governor of Oudh, and founded the Mohammedan dynasty which ruled over Oudh down to our own days. Before his death, in 1748, Oudh had become practically an independent kingdom, the rulers retaining the title of nawab wazir, or chief minister of the empire. Saadat Khan was succeeded by his brother-in-law, Safdar Jang, under whose wise rule the conntry enjoyed internal prosperity, although exposed to constant attacks from the Rohillas on one side and the Mahrattas on the other. The next nawab, Shujd-ud-daula, who succceded his father

Safdar Jang in 1753, attempted to take advantage of the war in Bengal between the British and Mir Kasim to acquire for himself the rich province of Behar. He therefore advanced upon Patna, taking with him the fugitive emperor Shah Alam and the exiled nawab of Bengal. The euter- prise proved a failure, and Shuja-ud-daula retired to Baxar, where, in October 1764, Major Munro won a decisive victory, which laid the whole of upper India at the fect of the Company. The nawdb fled to Bareli (Bareilly), while the unfortunate emperor joined the British camp.

By the treaty of 1765 Korah and Allahabad, which had hitherto formed part of the Oudh viceroyalty, were made over to the emperor for the support of his dignity and expenses, all the remain- ing territories being restored to Shuja-ud-dauld, who had thrown himself upon the generosity of the British. A few years later, in 1771, the titular Mughal emperor, Shah Alam, was a virtual prisoner in the hands of the Mahrattas, who extorted from him the cession of Korah and Allahabdd. This was considered to be contrary to the terms of the treaty of 1765, and, as the emperor had abandoned possession of them, the British sold them to the Oudh nawab. Saddat Ali Khan, threatened by Sindhia on the advance of Zaman Shah to the Indus, concluded a new treaty with the British in 1801, by which he gave up half his territories in return for increased means of protection. Rohilkhand thus passed nnder British rule, and the nawdb became still more absolute within his restricted dominions. Saddat’s son, Ghazi-ud-din Haidar (1814), was the first to obtain the title of king. In 1847 Wajid Ali Shah, the last king, ascended the throne. The condi- tion of the province had long attracted the attention of the British Government. The king’s army, receiving insufficient pay, recouped itself by constant depredations upon the people. The Hindu chiefs, each isolated in his petty fort, had turned the surrounding country into ajungle as a meaus of resisting the demands of the court and its soldiery. Before 1855 the chronic anarchy and oppression had reduced the people of Oudh to extreme misery.

A treaty was proposed to the king in 1856, which provided that the sole civil and military government of Oudh should be vested in the British Government for ever, and that the title of king of Oudh should be continued to him and his heirs male, with certain privi- leges and allowances. He refused to sign the treaty, and on the 18th February 1856 the British

Government assumed the admin- istration of the province, Oudh thus becoming an integral part of the British empire.

Immediately after annexation in 1856, Oudh was constituted into a chief-commissionership, and organized on the ordinary British model. In March 1857 Sir Henry Lawrence assumed the admin- istration at Lucknow; and on the 80th of May five of the native regiments broke into mutiny. The remainder of the events con- nected with the siege and recovery of the capital have been narrated in the article on Lucknow. Since 1858 the province has been administered without further vicissitudes. On the 17th of January 1877 Oudh was partially amalgamated with the North- Western Provinces by the unification of the two offices of chief- commissioner and lieuwtenant-governor.

OUDINOT, Cuartes Nicotas (1767-1847), duke of Reggio, one of the most distinguished of Napoleon’s marshals, came of a good bourgeois family in Lorraine, and was born at Bar-le-duc on April 25, 1767. From his youth he had a passion for a military career, and served in the regiment of Médoc from 1784 to 1787, when he retired with the rank of sergeant, and the knowledge that as a bourgeois he could never obtain a commission. The Revolution changed his fortunes, and in 1792, on the out- break of war, he was elected lieutenant-colonel of the 3d battalion of the volunteers of the Meuse. His gallant

| defence of the little fort of Bitche in the Vosges in 1792

drew attention to him; he was transferred to the regular army in November 1793, and after serving in all the numerous actions on the Belgian frontier he was promoted general of brigade in June 1794 for his conduct at the battle of Kaiserslautern. He continued to serve with the greatest distinction on the German frontier under Hoche, Pichegru, and Moreau, and was repeatedly wounded and once (in 1795) made prisoner. He was Masséna’s right hand all through the great Swiss campaign of 1799—first as a general of division, to which grade he was promoted in April, and then as chief of

the staff—and was instru- mental in winning the battle of Zurich. He was present under Masséna at the defence of Genoa, and so distinguished himself at the combat of Monzambano that Napoleon pre- sented him with a sword of honour. On the declaration of the empire he was given the Grand Cross of the Legion of Honour, but was not included in the first creation of marshals. In the same year he received the command of ten battalions of the army of the reserve, which he formed into the famous division of the ‘“ grenadiers Oudinot,” and with which he won the battle of Ostrolenka and decided the fate of at least three great battles—Austerlitz, Fried- land, and Wagram. XVIII, and, unlike many of his old comrades, he remained faithful to his new sovereign, and did not desert to his old master in 1815. He died on September 13, 1847.

Oudinot’s son, Charles Nicolas Victor, second duke of Reggio (1791-1863), served through the later campaigns of Napoleon from 1809 to 1814, but is chiefly known by his capture of Rome from Garibaldi in 1849.

OUGHTRED, Wittram (1574-1660), an eminent mathematician, was born at Eton in 1574, and educated there and at King’s College, Cambridge, of which he became fellow. Being admitted to holy orders, he left the uni- versity about 1603, and was presented to the rectory of Aldbury, near Guildford in Surrey ; and about 1628 he was appointed by the earl of Arundel to instruct his son in mathematics. He corresponded with some of the most eminent scholars of his time on mathematical subjects ; and his house was generally full of pupils from all quarters. It is said that he expired in a sudden transport of joy upon hearing the news of the vote at Westminster for the restora- tion of Charles IT.

He published, among other mathematical works, Clawis Mathe- matica, In 1631; A Description of the Double Horizontal Dial, in 1636 ; and Opuscula Mathematica, in 1676.

OUNCE. See Mammatia, vol, xv. p. 435.

OURO PRETO, a city of Brazil, the chief town of the extensive province of Minas Geraes, lies 170 miles north by west of Rio de Janeiro, in the upper part of the Rio Sao Francisco basin, at a height of 3757 feet above the sea. A steep hill to the north of the peak of Ita- columi (5740) is broken up by

ravines into a number of distinct plateaus ; and it is round these plateaus, generally crowned by a church, that most of the houses of Ouro Preto cluster in irregular and almost independent groups. The streets run up and down hill in such a way as to

‘ Villa Rica was made the capital of the new province.

make riding on horseback hazardous and the use of carriages impossible. The stream which passes through the town and was formerly the scene of the most exten- sive gold washing operations, the Ribeiréo de Ouro Preto or Do Carmo, is a subtributary of the Sao Francisco, Besides the churches, the prominent buildings are the pre- sident’s palace, the town-house, and the prison, all fronting the principal square, the treasury, the theatre (the oldest in Brazil, and restored in 1861-62), and the hospital. The botanical garden, dating from 1825, used to distribute speci- mens of different kinds of tea, but is now practically defunet, A public library has been in existence since before 1865, At present the importance of Ouro Preto is almost entirely administrative ; formerly it was one of the great mining centres of Brazil. Its population is about 8000.

The first “ prospectors,” finding the hills full of a gold ore which, from the presence of silver alloy, turned black on exposure to the air, called them Serra do Ouro Preto, and the village, built in 1701 by Antonio Dias of Taubate, bore at first the same name (meaning Black Gold). In 1711 the settlement was formally constituted as the city of Villa Rica, and for sixty or seventy years it continued to deserve its new title,—the population amounting to 25,000 or 30,000, and 12,000 slaves being employed inits gold mines. When in 1720 Minas Geraes was separated from the captaincy of S. Paulo, In 1788 it was the centre of the disastrous attempt made by Tiradentes, the poet Gonzaga, &c., to found an independent republic in Brazil with Sao Joao d’el Rei as its capital and Villa Rica as its university town (see GonzAGA) ; and in 1821 it took a vigorous part in the successful revolution. A comarca of Ouro Preto was created in 1828, and Villa Rica received back its original name.

OUSEL, or OuzeEt, Anglo-Saxon Osle, equivalent of the German Amsel (a form of the word found in several old English books, and perhaps yet surviving in some parts of the country), apparently the ancient name for what is now more commonly known as the Blackbird, the Z'wrdus merula of ornithologists, but at the present day not often applied to that species, though, as will immediately be seen, used in a compound form for two others. In many parts of Britain the Blackbird is still called the Merle, a name had directly from the French, and abbreviated from the Latin Merula, which has thesame meaning. The adult male of this beautiful and well-known species scarcely needs any other description than that of the poet : —-

" The Ouzel-cock, so black of hue With orange-tawny bill." —Midsummer Night's Dream, act iii. se. 1. But the female is of an uniform umber-brown above, has the chin, throat, and upper part of the breast orange- brown, with a few dark streaks, and the rest of the plumage beneath of a hair-brown. The young of both sexes resemble the mother. The Blackbird is found in every country of Europe, even breeding —though rarely — beyond the arctic circle, and in eastern Asia, as well as in Barbary and the Atlantic islands. Resident in Britain as a species, its numbers yet receive considerable accession of passing visitors in autumn, and in most parts of its range it is very migratory. The song of the cock has a peculiarly liquid tone, which makes it much admired, but it is rather too discontinuous to rank the bird very high asa musician. The species is very prolific, having sometimes as many as four broods in the course of the spring and summer. The nest, generally placed in a thick bush, is made of coarse roots or grass, strongly put together with earth, and is lined with fine grass. Herein are laid from four to six eggs of a light greenish-blue closely mottled with reddish-brown. Generally vermivorous, the Blackbird will, when pressed for food, eat grains and seeds, while berries and fruits in their season are eagerly sought by it, thus earning the enmity of gardeners. More or less allied to and resembling the Blackbird are many other species which inhabit most parts of the world, excepting the Ethiopian Region, New Zealand and Australia proper, and

North America. Some of them have the legs as well as the bill yellow or orange ; and, in a few of them, both sexes alike display a uniformly glossy black. The only other species that need here be mentioned is the Ring-Ousel, Turdus torquatus, which differs from the Blackbird in the dark colour of its bill, and in possessing a conspicuous white gorget—whence its name. It has also very different habits, frequenting wild and open tracts of country, shun- ning woods, groves, and plantations, and preferring the shelter of rocks to that of trees. [ts distribution is accordingly much more local, and in most parts of England it is only known as a transitory migrant in spring and autumn—from and to its hardly as yet ascertained winter quarters. It does not seem to have an extensive range to the eastward, though it has been recorded from Persia. The Water-Ousel, or Water-Crow, now commonly named the " Dipper," —a term apparently invented and bestowed in the first edition of Bewick's British Birds (ii. pp. 16, 17),—not, as is commonly supposed, from the bird's habit of entering the water in pursuit of its prey, but because "it may be seen perched on the top of a stone in the midst of the torrent, in a continual dipping motion, or short courtesy often repeated." This, the Cinclus aquaticus of most ornithologists, is the type of a small but remarkable group of birds, the position of which many taxonomers have been at their wits' end to determine. It would be useless here to recount the various suppositions that have been expressed ; suffice it to say that almost all ornitho- logists are now agreed in regarding the genus Cinclus! as

Cinclus mexicanus.

differing so much from other birds that, though essentially one of the true Passeres (i.e., Oscines), it forms a distinct Family, Cinclide, which has no very near allies. That some of its peculiarities (for instance, the sternum in adult examples having the posterior margin generally entire, and the close covering of down that clothes the whole body—a character fully recognized by Nitzsch) are correlated with its aquatic habit is probably not to be questioned; but this fact furnishes no argument for associating it, as has often been done, with the Thrushes (7'wrdidz), the Wrens (Troglodytidx), or much less with other groups to which it has undoubtedly no affinity. The Dipper haunts rocky Streams, into which it boldly enters, generally by deliber- ately wading, and then by the strenuous combined action of its

wingsand feet makes its way along the bottom in quest of its living prey—freshwater mollusks, and aquatic insects in their larval or mature condition. By the careless and ignorant it is accused of feeding on the spawn of fishes, and it has been on that account subjected to much perse- cution. Innumerable examinations of the contents of its stomach have not only proved that the charge is baseless, but that the bird clears off many of the worst enemies of the precious product. Short and squat of stature, active and

? Some writers have used for this genus the name Hydrobata.

Vo

restless in its movements, silky black above, with a pure white throat and upper part of the breast, to which succeeds a broad band of dark bay, it is a familiar figure to most fishermen on the streams it frequents, while the cheerful song of the cock, often heard in the hardest frost, helps to make it a favourite with them in spite of the obloquy under which it labours. The Water-Ousel's nest is a@ very curious structure,—outwardly resembling a Wren's, but built on a wholly different principle,—an ordinary cup-shaped nest of grass lined with dead leaves, placed in some convenient niche, but encased with moss so as to form a large mass that covers it completely except only a small hole for the bird's passage. The eggs laid within are from four to six in number, and are of a pure white. These remarks refer to the Water-Ousel of central and western Europe, including the British Islands; but, except as regards plumage, it is believed that they will apply to all the other species, about a dozen in number, which have been described. These inhabit suitable places throughout the whole Palearctic Region as well as the southern slopes of the Himalaya and the hill-country of Formosa, besides the Rocky Mountains and a great part of the Andes. Mr Salvin, in a very philosophical paper on the genus (Jbis, 1867, pp. 109-122), refers these species— some of which are wholly black and one slate-coloured—to five well-marked forms, of which the other members are either " representative species " or merely " local races"; but all seem to occupy distinct geographical areas,—that which is represented in the accompanying woodcut having a wide range along the mountainous parts of North America to Mexico; and it is quite possible that their number may yet

be increased, for the general habits of the birds preclude any invasion of territory, and thus produce practical isolation. (A. N.

OUSELEY, Sire Witrram (1769-1842), Orientalist, was the eldest son of Captain Ralph Ouseley, of an old Irish family, and was born in Monmouthshire in 1769. After a private education he went to Paris, in 1787, to perfect himself in French, and in the following year became cornet in the 8th regiment of dragoons. After obtaining the grade of lieutenant he, on the conclusion of the campaign of 1794, sold his commission in order to devote his attention to the study of Oriental literature, especially Persian. In 1795 he published Persian Mis- cellanies ; in 1797, Oriental Collections ; in 1799, Epitome of the Ancient History of Persia; in 1801, Tales of Bakthyar and Observations on Some Medals and Gems ; and in 1804, The Oriental Geography of Ebn Haukal. He received the degree of LL.D. from the university of Dublin in 1797, and in 1800 he was knighted by the Marquis Cornwallis. On his brother, Sir Gore Ouseley, being appointed ambassador to Persia in 1810, Sir William accompanied him as secretary. He returned to England in 1813, and in 1819-23 published, in three volumes, Travels in Various Countries of the East, especially Persia, in 1810, 1811, and 1812. He also published editions of the Travels and Arabian Proverbs of Burckhardt. He was a member of various learned societies, and contributed a number of important papers to the Zransactions of the Royal Society of Interature. He died at Boulogne in September 1842.

OUTLAW, in English law, is a person put out of the protection of the law by process of outlawry. A woman is properly said to be waived rather than outlawed. Out- lawry was usually the result of non-appearance of the de- fendant or accused at the trial, and involved deprivation of all civil rights. It was finally abolished in civil pro- ceedings in 1879 by 42 & 43 Vict. c. 59,§ 3. In criminal proceedings it has become practically obsolete, and the Criminal Code, § 458, proposes to formally abolish it.

In Scotland outlawry or fugitation may be pronounced by the supreme criminal court in the absence of the panel on the day of trial, In the United States outlawry never existed in eivil cases, and in the few eases where it existed in criminal proceedings it has become obsolete.

OUTRAM, Sir James (1803-1863), English general, was the son of Benjamin Outram of Butterley Hall, Derbyshire, civil engineer, and was born 29th January 1803. His father died in 1805, and his mother, a daughter of Dr Jaimes Anderson, the Scottish writer on agriculture, removed in 1810 to Aberdeenshire. From Udny school the boy went in 1818 to Marischal College, Aberdeen; and in 1819 an Indian cadetship was given him. Soon after his arrival in India his remarkable energy attracted notice, and in July 1820 he became acting adjutant to the first battalion of the 12th regiment on its embodiment at Poona, an experience which he found to be of immense advantage to him in his after career. In 1825 he was sent to Khandesh, where he succeeded in training a light infantry corps, formed of the wild robber Bhils, gaining over them a marvellous personal influence, and employing them with great success in checking outrages and plunder. Their loyalty to him had its principal source in their boundless admiration of his hunting achievements, which in their cool daring and hairbreadth escapes have perhaps never been equalled. Originally a ‘puny lad,” and for many years after his arrival in India subject to constant attacks of sickness, Outram seemed to win strength by every new illness, acquiring a constitution of iron, “nerves of steel, shoulders and muscles worthy of a six-foot Highlander.” In 1835 he was sent to Gujerat to make a report on the Mahi Kantha district, and for some time he remained there as political agent. On the outbreak of the Afghan war in 1838 he was appointed extra aide-de-camp on the staff of Sir John Keane, and besides many other brilliant deeds performed an extraordinary exploit in capturing a banner of the enemy before Ghazni. After conducting various raids against different Afghan tribes, he was in 1839 promoted major, and appointed political agent in Lower Sind, and later in Upper Sind. On his return from a short visit to England in 1843, he was, with the rank of brevet lieu- tenant-colonel, appointed to a command in the Mahratta country, and in 1847 he was transferred from Satdéra to Baroda. In 1854 he became chief-commissioner of Oudh, and in 1856 he received the honour of knighthood. Appointed in 1857, with the rank of lieutenant-general, to command an expedition against Persia, he defeated the enemy with great slaughter at Khushab, and otherwise conducted the campaign with such rapid decision that peace was shortly afterwards concluded, his brilliant services being rewarded by the Grand Cross of the Bath. From Persia he was summoned in June to India, with the brief explanation,—“ We want all our best men

here.” Immediately on his arrival in Calcutta he was appointed to command the two divisions of the Bengal army, occupying the country from Calcutta to Cawnpur; and to the military control was also joined the commissioner-ship of Oudh. Already the rebellion had assumed such proportions as to compel Havelock to fall back on Cawnpur, which he only held with difficulty, although a speedy advance was necessary to save the garrison at Lucknow. _On arriving at Cawnpur with reinforcements, Outram, “in admiration of the brilliant deeds of General Havelock,” conceded to him the glory of relieving Luck- now, and, waiving his rank, tendered his services to him as a volunteer. During the advance he commanded a troop of volunteer cavalry, and performed exploits of great brilliancy at Mangalwar, and in the attack at the Alam- bagh ; and in the final conflict he led the way, charging through a very tempest of fire. Resuming supreme com-

OU T—

OV i

mand, he then held the town till the arrival of Sir Colin Campbell, after which he conducted the cvacuation of the residency so as completely to deceive the enemy. In the second capture of Lucknow, on the commander-in-chief’s return, Outram was entrusted with the attack on the side of the Guinti, and afterwards, having recrossed the river, he advanced “through the Chattar Manzil to take the residency,” thus, in the words of Sir Colin Campbell, “putting the finishing stroke on the enemy.” After the capture of Lucknow he was gazetted lieutenant-general, In February 1858 he received the special thanks of both Houses of Parliament, and in the same year the dignity of baronet with an annuity of £1000. When, on account of shattered health, he returned finally to England in 1860, a movement was set on foot to mark the sense entertained, not only of his military achievements, but of his constant exertions in behalf of the natives of India, whose “ weal,” in his own words, “he made his first object.” The move- ment resulted in the presentation of a public testimonial and the erection of statues in London and Calcutta. He died 11th March 1863, and was buricd in Westminster Abbey, where the marble slab on his grave bears the pregnant epitaph “The Bayard of India.”

See James Outram, a Biography, by Major-General Sir F. J. Goldsmid, C.B., K.C.S.L, 2 vols., 1880, 2d ed., 1881.

OVAR, a town of Portugal, in the district of Aveiro (Beira), with a station on the railway 20 miles south of Oporto, lies at the northern end of the Aveiro lagoon, —an extremely unhealthy position. It contains 10,022 inhabitants (1878), and carries on a brisk trade with the colonies and northern Africa.

OVATION, an honour awarded in Rome to victorious generals. It was less distinguished than the triumph (see TRIUMPH), and was awarded either when the campaign, though victorious, had not been important enough for the higher honour, or when the general was not of rank sufficient to give him the right to a triumph. The ceremonial was on the whole similar in the two cases, but in an ovation the general walked or more commonly rode on horseback.

OVEN, a close chamber or compartment in which a considerable degree of heat may be generated either from internal or from external sources. In English the term is generally restricted to a chamber for baking bread and other food substances, being equivalent to the French four or the German Backofen ; but the chambers in which coal is coked are termed coke ovens. See Baxkrne, vol il. 257, and Coxg, vol. vi. 118.

OVERBECK, Jonann Friepricu (1789-1869), the reviver and leader of “Christian art” in the 19th century, was born in Liibeck 4th July 1789. His ancestors for three generations had been Protestant pastors ; his father was doctor of laws, poet, mystic pietist, and burgomaster of Liibeck. Within stone’s throw of the family mansion in the Kénigstrasse stood the gymnasium, where the uncle, doctor of theology and a voluminous writer, was the master; there the nephew became a classic scholar and received instruction in art.

The young artist left: Liibeck in March 1806, and entered as student the academy of Vienna, then under the direction of F. H. Fiiger, a painter of some renown, but of the pseudo-classic school of the French David. Here was gained thorough knowledge, but the teachings and associa- tions proved unendurable to the sensitive, spiritual-minded youth. Overbeck

wrote to a friend that he had fallen among a vulgar set, that every noble thought was suppressed within the academy, and that losing all faith in humanity he turned inwardly on himself. These words are a key to his future position and art. It seemed to him that im Vicnna, and indeed throughout Europe, the pure springs of

OV K—

Christian art had been for centuries diverted and corrupted, and so he sought out afresh the living source, and, casting on one side his contemporaries, took for his guides the early and pre-Raphaelite painters of Italy. At the end of four years, differences had grown so irreconcilable that Overbeck and his band of followers were expelled from the academy. True art, he writes, he had sought in Vienna in vain— ‘Oh! I was full of it; my whole fancy was possessed by Madonnas and Christs, but nowhere could I find response.” Accordingly he left for Rome, carrying his half-finished canvas Christ’s Entry into Jerusalem, as the charter of his creed—“ I will abide by the Bible ; I elect it as my stand- ing-point.”

Overbeck in 1810 entered Rome, which became for fifty-nine years the centre of his unremitting labour. He was joined by a goodly company, including Cornelius, Wilhelm Schadow, and Philip Veit, who took up their abode in the old Franciscan convent of San Isidoro on the Pincian Hill, and were known among friends and enemies by the descriptive epithets—“ the Nazarites,” “the pre-

Raphaelites,” “‘ the new-old school,” “the German-Roman |

artists,” ‘the church-romantic painters,” “the German patriotic and religious painters.” Their precept was hard and honest work and holy living; they eschewed the antique as pagan, the Renaissance as false, and built up a severe revival on simple nature and on the serious art of Perugino, Pinturicchio, Francia, and the young Raphael. The characteristics of the style thus educed were nobility of idea, precision and even hardness of outline, scholastic composition, with the addition of light, shade, and colour, not for allurement, but chiefly for perspicuity and com- pletion of motive. Overbeck was mentor in the movement ; a fellow-labourer writes: —‘‘No one who saw him or heard him speak could question his purity of

motive, his deep insight and abounding knowledge; he is a treasury of art and poetry, and a saintly man.” But the struggle was hard and poverty its reward. Helpful friends, however, came in Niebuhr, Bunsen, and Frederick Schlegel. Overbeck in 1813 joined the Roman Catholic Church, and thereby he believed that his art received Christian baptism.

Faith in a mission begat enthusiasm among kindred minds, and timely commissions followed. The Prussian consul, Bartholdi, had a house on the brow of the Pincian, and he engaged Overbeck, Cornelius, Veit, and Schadow to decorate a room 24 feet square with frescos from the Story of Joseph and his Brethren. The subjects which fell to the lot of Overbeck were the Seven Years of Famine and Joseph Sold by his Brethren. These tentative wail- pictures, finished in 1818, produced so favourable an impression among the Italians that in the same year Prince Massimo commissioned Overbeck, Cornelius, Veit, and Schnorr to cover the walls and ceilings of his garden pavilion, near St John Lateran, with frescos illustrative of Tasso, Dante, and Ariosto. To Overbeck was assigned,

in a room 15 feet square, the illustration of Tasso’s

Jerusalem Delivered; and of eleven compositions the largest and most noteworthy, occupying one entire wall, is the Meeting of Godfrey de Bouillon and Peter the Hermit. The completion of the frescos—very unequal in merit— after ten years’ delay, the overtaxed and enfeebled painter delegated to his friend Joseph Fiithrich, The leisure thus gained was devoted to a thoroughly congenial theme, the Vision of St Francis, a wall-painting 20 feet long, figures life size, finished in 1830, for the church of Sta Maria degli Angeli near Assisi. Overbeck and the brethren set them-Selves the task of recovering the neglected art of fresco and of monumental painting; they adopted the old methods, and their success led to memorable revivals throughout Europe.

Fifty years of the artist’s laborious life were given to

OVE Fe

oil and easel paintings, of which the chief, for size and import, are the following :—Christ’s Entry into Jerusalem (1824), in the Marien Kirche,

Ltibeck ; Christ’s Agony in the Garden (1835), in the great hospital, Hamburg ; Lo Sposalizio (1836), Raczynski gallery, Berlin; the Triumph of Religion in the Arts (1840), in the Stidel Institut, Frankfort ; Piets (1846), in the Marien Kirche, Liibeck ; the Incredulity of St Thomas (1851), in the possession of Mr Beresford Hope, London; the Assumption of the Madonna (1855), in Cologne Cathedral ; Christ Delivered from the Jews (1858), tempera, on a ceiling in the Quirinal Palace,—a commission from Pius IX., and a direct attack on the Italian temporal government, therefore now covered by a canvas adorned with Cupids. All the artist’s works are marked by religious fervour, careful and protracted study, with a dry, severe handling, and an abstcmious colour.

Overbeck belongs to eclectic schools, and yet was creative ; he ranks among thinkers, and his pen was hardly less busy than his pencil. He was a minor poet, an essayist, and a voluminous letter-writer. His style is wordy and tedious ; like his art it is borne down with emotion and possessed by a somewhat morbid “ subjec- tivity.” His pictures were didactic, and used as propa-

.gandas of his artistic and religious faith, and the teachings

of such compositions as the Triumph of Religion and the Sacraments he enforced by rapturous literary effusions. His art was the issue of his life: his constant thoughts, cherished in solitude and chastened by prayer, he transposed into pictorial forms, and thus were evolved countless and much-prized drawings and cartoons, of which the most considerable are the Gospels, forty cartoons (1852) ; Via Crucis, fourteen water-colour drawings (1857) ; the Seven Sacraments, seven cartoons (1861). Overbeck's composi- tions, with few exceptions, are engraved. His life-work he sums up in the words—" Art to me is as the harp of David, whereupon I would desire that psalms should at all times be sounded to the praise of the Lord." He dicd in Rome in 1869, aged eighty, and lies buried in San Bernardo, the church wherein he worshipped. (J. B. A.)

OVER DARWEN, a municipal borough of Lancashire, is situated in the vale of the Darwen river, shut in by heath-covered hills, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 3 miles south from Blackburn and 9 north from Bolton. There are four ecclesiastical parishes, each of which has a handsome church; and among the other public buildings are the market-house, the Liberal and Conservative club-houses, a free public library with 10,000 volumes, and the Peel baths, erected in memory of Sir Robert Peel. The town possesses cotton factories, iron and brass foundries, machine works, paper mills, paper-staining works—the first and probably the largest of their kind. In the neighbourhood there are collieries and stone quarries. The population of the municipal borough (area 5918 acres) in 1881 was 29,744. It includes part of Lower Darwen and Eccleshill, with 2118 inhabitants. The postal designation is Darwen.

Over Darwen was at one time included in Walton-le-dale, which was granted by Henry de Lacy to Robert Banastre in the reign of Henry II. In the 4th of Edward II. (1310) it is mentioned along with Livesey and Tockholes, the three containing a carucate of land in fee of the castle of Clitheroe. In 38 Edward III. (1364) a moiety of the manor of Over Darwen was held by Thomas Molyneux, the other moiety being held by the Osbaldeston family. Subsequently the whole manor became the property of the Traffords, of whom it was purehased in 1810 by the present owners the

Duckworths. Over Darwen was incorporated as a municipal borough in 1878, and a commission of iti peace was granted in

1881.

OVERTURE. See Music, vol. xvii. p. 95 sq. OVERYSSEL, or OVERIJSSEL, a province of Holland, bounded N.W. by the Zuyder Zee, N. by Friesland and

78

Drenthe, N.E. by Hanover (Prussia), S.E. by Westphalia (Prussia), and 8S. and S.W. by Guelderland, with an area of 1291 square miles. The southern district belongs to the basin of the Yssel; the northern is watered by the Vecht and various small streams falling into the Zwarte- water, the river which was for so many generations the object of dispute between Zwolle and Hasselt. A large proportion of the surface is a sandy flat relieved by hillocks, rising at times to a height of 230 feet above the sea. Husbandry, stock-raising, and dairy-farming are the prin- cipal means of subsistence in the province, though the fisheries, turf-cutting, the shipping trade, and a number of manufacturing industries are also of importance. In the district of Twenthe (towards the east) more especially there are a great many cotton-mills and bleaching-works ; brick and tile making is prosecuted in the neighbourhood of the Yssel; and along the coast a good many people are engaged in making mats and besoms. During the present century the province has been opened up by the construction of several large canals—the Dedemsvaart, the Noord-Willems- vaart (between the Yssel and the Zwartewater), the “Overyssel canals” (running near the eastern frontier), &c.; and a fairly complete railway system has come into existence. The province is divided into the three adminis- trative districts of Zwolle, Deventer, and Almelo. Its popu- lation, 234,376 in 1859 and 263,008 in 1875 (134,201 males, 128,807 females), was 247,136 in 1879. Of the total for 1875, 181,863 were Protestants, 76,891 Roman Catholics, and 4018 Jews. The chief town, Zwolle, had in 1879 a communal population of 22,759, and there were fourteen other communes with more than 2000 inhabitants, including Deventer, 19,162; Kampen, 17,444; Almelo, 7758; Hengelo, 6502.

Both the present name Overyssel and the older designation Oversticht are explained by the fact that the province lies mainly on the other side of the Yssel from Utrecht, with which it long constituted an episcopal principality. Vollenhove was bestowed on the bishops in 948, Oldenzaal in 970, the land north-east of Vollenhove in 1042, Deventer in 1046, a part of Salland in 1226, the countship of Goor in 1248, the lordship of Diepenheim in 1331, and that of Almelo in 1406. In 1527 Bishop Henry of Bavaria advised the recognition of Charles V. as protector and ruler of the district, and Oversticht became Overyssel. It was the sixth province to join the Union in 1579. During the French oceupa- tion it bore the name of the department of Bouches de l'Issel.

OVID (P. Oviprus Naso) was the last in order of time of the poets of the Augustan age, whose works have given to it the distinction of ranking among the great eras in the history of human culture. As is the case with most other Roman writers, his personal history has to be gathered almost entirely from his own writings. The materials for his life are partly the record of the immediate impressions of the time in which they were written con- tained in the Amores, partly the reminiscences of his happier days, to which his mind constantly recurred in the writings from his place of exile.

His life is almost coincident in extent with that of the Augustan age. The year of his birth, 43 B.C.,—the year of the consulship of Hirtius and Pansa, which inter- vened between the death of Julius Cxsar and the partition of the Roman world among the Triumvirs,—may be regarded as the last year of the republic. It was the year of the death of Cicero, which marks the close of the re- publican literature. Thus the only form of political life known to Ovid was that of the ascendency and absolute rule of Augustus and his successor. His character was neither strengthened nor sobered, like that of his older con- temporaries, by personal recollection of the crisis through which the republic passed into the empire. There is no sense of political freedom in any of his writings. The spirit inherited from his ancestors was that of the Italian country districts and municipia, not that of Rome. He

was sprung from the Peligni, one of the four smal] mountain peoples whose proudest memories were of the part they had played in the Social War. They had no old race-hostility with Rome, such as that which made the most powerful representative of the Sabellian stock remain till the last her implacable enemy; and their opposition to the senatorian aristocracy in the Social War would predispose them to accept the empire. Ovid belonged by birth to the same social class as Tibullus and Propertius, that of old hereditary landowners; but he was more fortunate than they in the immunity which his native district enjoyed from the confiscations made by the triumvirs. His native town and district, Sulmo, lay high among the Apennines, and is described by Mr Hare as "grandly situated on an isolated platform, backed by snowy mountains." The poet himself describes this district as remarkable for the abundance of its streams and for its salubrity — 'Parva, sed irriguis ora salubris aquis ;"

and he recalls the fresh charm of its scenery from the desolate waste of his Scythian exile. To his early life in such a district he may have owed his eye for natural beauty, and that interest in the common sights of the country which relieves the monotony of his life of pleasure in Rome and the dreary record of the life spent within the walls of Tomi, and enables him to add the charm of natural scenery to the romantic creations of his fancy. The pure air of this mountain home may have contributed to the vigorous vitality which prevented the life of plea- sure from palling on him, and which beats strongly even through all the misery of his exile. But if this vitality —with its natural accompaniment, a keen capacity for enjoyment—was a gift due to his birthplace, it was apparently a gift transmitted to him by inheritance; for he tells us that his father lived till the age of ninety, and that he performed the funeral rites to his mother after his father's death. While he mentions both with the piety characteristic of the old Italian, he tells us little more about them than that "their thrift curtailed his youthful expenses,"! and that his father did what he could to dissuade hin from poetry, and to force him into the more profitable career of the law courts. He had one brother, exactly a year older than himself, who, after showing promise as a speaker, died at the age of twenty. The tone in which Ovid speaks of him is indicative of sincere affection, but not of such depth of feeling as was called forth in Catullus by asimilar loss. The two brothers had been brought early to Rome for their education, where they attended the lectures of the most

eminent rhetoricians of their time. Education had become more purely rhetorical and literary, less philosophical and political, than it had been in a pre- vious generation. Ovid is said to have attended these lectures eagerly, and to have shown in his exercises that his gift was poetical rather than oratorical, and that he had a distaste for the severer processes of thought. Like Pope, “he lisped in numbers,” and he wrote and destroyed many verses before he published anything. The earliest edition of the Amores, which first appeared in five books, and the Herovdes were given by him to the world at an early age. He courted the society of the older and younger poets of his time, and formed one among those friendly coteries who read or recited their works to one another before they gave them to the world. ‘He had only seen Virgil”; but Virgil’s friend and contemporary AEmilius Macer used in his advanced years to read his didactic epic to him; and, although there is no indication in the works of either the reigning or the rising poet of any intimacy between them, even the fastidious Horace sometimes delighted his ears i

1 Kz Ponto, i. 8, 42.

with the music of his verse. He had a closer bond of intimacy with the younger poets of the older generation, Tibullus, whose death he laments in one of the few pathetic pieces among his earlier writings, and Propertius, to whom he describes himself as united in the close ties of comradeship. ‘The name of Meecenas occurs nowhere in his poems. The time of his paramount influence both on public affairs and on literature was past before Ovid entered on his poetical career, but Messala and Fabius Maximus, whose name is mentioned by Juvenal along with that of Mzecenas as the type of a munificent patron of letters in the Augustan age, encouraged his earliest efforts. With their sons he lived in intimacy in after years, and, as he speaks of having known the younger Fabius in his cradle, his friendship with his family must have begun early in his career. He enjoyed also the intimacy of poets and men of literary accomplishment belonging to a younger generation; and with one of them, Macer, he travelled for more than a year. It is not mentioned whether he travelled immediately after the completion of his education, or in the interval between the publication of his earlier

poems and that of the Medea and Ars Amatoria; but it is in his later works, the Yastti and Metamorphoses, that we seem chiefly to recognize the impressions of the scenes he visited. In one of the epistles written from Pontus to his fellow-traveller there is a vivid record of the pleasant time they had passed together. Athens was to a Roman of that time what Rome is to an educated Englishman of the present day. Ovid speaks of having gone there under the influence of literary enthusiasm (“studiosus”); but the impression of his visit which remains on his writings is not of the wisdom taught “among the woods of Academus,” but of the flowers that grow on the neighbour- ing Hymettus. A similar impulse induced him to visit the supposed site of Troy. The two friends saw together the splendid cities of Asia, which had inspired the enthusiasm of travel in Catullus, and had become familiar to Cicero and Horace during the years they passed abroad. They spent nearly a year in Sicily, which attracted him, as it had attracted Lucretius! and Virgil,? by its manifold charm of climate, of sea-shore and inland scenery, and of legendary and poetical association, —a charm which has found its most enduring expression in some of his most delightful tales. He recalls with a fresh sense of pleasure the incidents of their tour (which they made sometimes in a pinnace or yacht, sometimes in a light carriage), and the endless delight which they had in each other’s conversation. We would gladly exchange the record of his life of pleasure in Rome for more of these recollections. The highest type of classic culture realized in ancient Rome—the type realized in such men as Cicero and Catullus, Virgil and Horace, Ovid and Germanicus—shows its affinity to a type which is the result of essentially similar studies in modern times by nothing more clearly than the enthusiasm for travel among lands famous for their natural beauty, their monuments of art, and their historical associations.

When settled at Rome, although a public career, leading to senatorian position, was open to him, and, although he filled various judicial offices, and claims to have filled them well, he had no ambition for such distinction, and looked upon pleasure and poetry as the occupations of his life. He tells us that he was married, when little more than a boy, to a wife for whom he did not care, who, he implies,

was not worthy of him, and from whom he was soon es —(Ctsss—s—~—S —C‘“C;SCCSCSCSS 1 Of. Lucret., i. 726— *“Quae cum magna modis

multis miranda videtur Gentibus humanis regio visendaque fertur."'

2 6 6 Bro 5 " (ae secessu Campanie Sicilizque plurimum uteretur." — Honat.

separated, and afterwards to a second wife, with whom his union, although through no fault of hers, did not last long. But he had other objects of his volatile affections, and one of them, Corinna, after the example of his predecessors Gallus, Propertius, and Tibullus, and their Alexandrian prototypes Callimachus, Philetas, &c., he makes the heroine of his love elegies. It is doubtful whether, like Lesbia, Delia, and Cynthia, she belonged to the class of Roman ladies of recognized position, or to that to which the Chloes and Lalages of Horace's artistic fancy evidently belong. If trust can be placed in the later apologies for his life, in which he states that he had never given occasion for any serious scandal, it is probable that she belonged to the class of ' libertinze." Ovid is not only a less constant but he is a much less serious lover than Catullus, Tibullus, or Propertius. His tone is that either of mere sensual self- regarding feeling or of persiflage. That tone isin many ways offensive to modern taste, but in nothing is it more charac- teristic of his age than in his light-hearted justification of his choice both of a theme and of a career. In his complete emancipation from all sense of restraint or wish for better things, Ovid goes beyond all his predecessors, although Tibullus and Propertius, and even Horace in the ironical dis- claimers of his earlier Odes, give indication of the same state of feeling. In this Ovid reflects the tastes and tone of fashionable, well-born, and wealthy Roman society between the years 20 B.c. and the beginning of our era. The memory of the civil wars no longer weighed on the world. The career of ambition was so far from attracting men that they had to be urged and coerced into filling official places and carrying on the routine duties of the senate. Society was bent simply on amusement. There was less of coarse- ness in the pursuit of pleasure than had prevailed among the contemporaries of Catullus. We find little trace in Ovid of the convivial pleasures which Horace celebrates in his lighter odes, or of the excesses of which Propertius makes confession. Ovid says of himself that he drank scarcely anything but water, and from what he tells us of his appearance and constitution he was evidently not of the temperament to which convivial excesses bring any temptation.2 But probably it was not the fashion of the time to live

intemperately. As a result of the loss of political interests, women came to play a more important and brilliant part in society, and the tone of fashionable conversation and literature was adapted to them. Julia, daughter of the emperor, wag by her position, her brilliant gifts, and her reckless laxity of character the natural leader of such a society. The awakening of the Roman world out of this fool's paradise of pleasure was due to the discovery of her intrigue with Iulus Antonius, son of Mark Antony, and to the open and violent display of anger with which Augustus resented what was at once a shock to his affections and a blow to his policy. Nearly coinci- dently with the publicity given to this scandal appeared the famous Ars Amatoria of Ovid, perhaps the most immoral and demoralizing work ever written, at least in ancient times, by a man of genius. Ovid was the favourite poet of the fashionable world; he lived on terms of intimacy with its leading members, the younger representatives of the old nobility, who had survived the proscriptions and the fatal day of Philippi. His poetical accomplishment would naturally recommend him to Iulus Antonius, of whose gifts Horace has spoken so eulogistically. His marriage with his third wife, a lady of the great Fabian house, and a friend of the empress Livia, had probably taken place before this time. It thus seems likely that he may have been admitted into the intimacy of the

3 Compare Am., ii. 23— '**Graciles, non sunt sine viribus artus ; Pondere, non nervis, corpora nostra carent."

younger society of the Palatine, although in the midst of his most fulsome flattery he does not claim ever to have enjoyed the favour of Augustus. Whether he was in any- way mixed up with this intrigue is not known. But that the work which appeared coincidently with it excited deep resentment in the mind of the emperor, as the pander to the passions by which the dignity of his family had been outraged and his state policy thwarted, is shown by his edict, issued ten years later, against the book and its author. Augustus had the art of dissembling his anger ; and Ovid appears to have had no idea of the storm that was gather- ing over him. He still continued to enjoy the society of the court and of the fashionable world ; he passed before the emperor in the annual procession among the ranks of the equites;

he filled a more important judicial place ; and he had developed a richer vein of genius than he had shown in his youthful prime. But he was aware that public opinion had been shocked, or professed to be shocked, by his last work ; and after writing a kind of apology for it, called the Remedia Amoris, he directed his genius into other channels, and wrote during the next ten years the Metamorphoses and the Fasti. He had already written one work, the Herotdes, in which he had imparted a modern and romantic interest to the heroines of the old mythology,} and a tragedy, the Medea, which must have afforded greater scope for the dramatic and psychological treatment of the passion with which he was most familiar. In the Fasti Ovid ‘assumes the position of a national poet? by imparting poetical life and interest to the ceremonial observances of Roman religion; but it is as the brilliant narrator of the romantic tales that have got so strangely blended with the realistic annals of Rome that he succeeds in the part assumed by him. The Metamorphoses professed to trace the relations of the gods with human affairs from the reign of Chaos to the deification of Augustus; and in the later books that work also may claim something of a national character. But it consists for the most part of a series of tales of the love adventures of the gods with nymphs and heroines, told in a tone of mixed irony and romance. This work, which he regards as his most serious claim to immortality, had not been finally revised at the time of his disgrace, and he committed it to the flames; but other copies were in existence, and the book was given to the world in his absence. He often regrets that it had not obtained his final revisal. The frasti also was broken off by his exile, after the comple- tion and publication of the first six books, treating of the first six months of the year.

The actual offence which gave occasion for his banish- ment is not exactly known. In his frequent references to it he wavers between assertions of his innocence of anything beyond simplicity and error and the admission that, though he had done nothing, he yet deserved his punishment. He had witnessed something which was a cause of pain and offence to the emperor. In a letter to one of his intimate friends, to whom he had been in the habit of confiding all his secrets, he says that had he confided this one he would have escaped condemnation. In writing to another friend in reference to his disgrace, he warns him against the danger of courting too high society—“ prelustria vita.” The cause which excited or renewed the anger of Augustus

was connected with the old offence of writing and publish- ing the Ars Amatoria. All this points to his having been in some way mixed up with some scandal affecting the imperial family. He distinctly disclaims the idea that he had anything to do with any treasonable plot; and he

en eenly modern character of the work appears in his

making a heroine of the time of the Trojan war speak of visiti

“learned” Athens (Heroid., ii. 83). : ‘ eae 2 Animos ad publica carmina flexi” (Trist., v. 23).

OyiIwo

certainly appears to have been the last man who ever could have been made the confederate of a serious conspiracy. All this seems to connect him with one event, coincident in time with his disgrace,—the intrigue of the younger Julia, granddaughter of the emperor, with Silanus,— mentioned by Tacitus in the third book of the Annals, Tacitus tells us how deeply Augustus felt these family scandals, looking upon them as acts of treason and sacrilege, Tt seems, at first sight, strange that the chief punishment fell, not on the real offenders, but on Ovid, who at the worst could only have been the confidant of their intrigue, perhaps may have lent his house as a place of rendezvous for the lovers. To Julia herself was assigned the lighter penalty of seclusion in one of the towns of Italy, and Silanus had no other punishment than that of exclusion from the court. Augustus must have regarded Ovid and his works as, if not the corrupter of the age, yet the most typical representative of that corruption which in its effects on his own family might be regarded as the nemesis attending on, as it was the direct consequence of, the outward success of his policy. The date of this scandal must have been 7 or early in 8 A.D., as Tacitus, under the date 28 a.p., mentions the death of Julia after twenty years of seclusion.

A delay of nearly two years seems to have taken place between the disgrace and the sentence passed on Ovid, and it must have been during this interval that he visited his friend Fabius at Elba,® probably with the view of inducing him to intercede for him. At last the edict, dictated by relentless policy rather than personal vindictiveness, was published. He was left in the

enjoy- ment of the rights of citizenship and in the possession of his property (perhaps through the exercise of the influence of Livia in favour of his wife), but was ordered to leave Rome on a particular day, and to settle at the very out- skirts of civilization,—-in the semi-Greek semi-barbaric town of Tomi, near the mouth of the Danube. He tells vividly the story of the agony of his last night at Rome, of the dangers and hardships of his winter voyage down the Adriatic, and of his desolate feelings on his first arrival at his new abode. But this was merely the beginning of his miseries. For eight years he bore up in his solitude, in the dreariest circumstances, suffering from the unhealthi- ness of the climate and exposed to constant alarm from the incursions of the neighbouring barbarians. He continued to be buoyed up by hopes first of a remission of his sentence, afterwards of at least a change to another place of exile. He wrote his complaints first in a series of books sent successively to Rome, afterwards in a number of poetical epistles, also collected into books, addressed to all his friends who were likely to have influence at court. He believed that Augustus had softened towards him before his death, but his successor was inexorable to his complaints. Perhaps the person who most deeply resented the offence was the one who exercised the greatest influence over both, the empress Livia, whose life and example were a protest against the laxity of the age, and who was an unsympathetic stepmother to the members of the imperial family. His chief consolation was the exercise of his art, and the only expression of a worthy feeling of resistance to his misery is in a letter to his daughter Perilla, in which he asserts that over his genius Augustus had no control:—

‘* Ingenio tamen ipse meo comitorque fruorque: Cesar in hoe potuit juris habere nihil.” —Tristia, iii. 7, 47.

Yet as time goes on he is painfully conscious of failure in power, and of the absence of all motive to perfect his work. He had access to no books except such as he may have brought with him, and the zest for reading, as for all

3 Hx Ponto, ii. 8, 83.

a

OV Pp

other pleasure, was gone. THe recalls the memories of the happy days he had spent at Rome; and the chief relief to the misery of his exile was the receipt of letters from his friends. M. Gaston Boissier says that he left his genius behind him at Rome; and it is true that the works written in exile have not the brilliant versatility, the buoyant spirit, or the finished art of his earlier writings. They harp eternally on the same theme. All his faults of diffuseness and self-repetition appear in an exaggerated form. But there is the same power of vivid realization and expression, the same power of making his thought, feeling, and situ- ation immediately present to the reader. What they lose in art they gain in personal interest. They have, like the letters of Cicero to Atticus, the fascination exercised by those works which have been given to the world under the title of Confessions ; and they are the sincerest expression in literature of the state of mind produced by a unique experience,—that of a man, when well advanced in years, but still retaining extraordinary sensibility to pleasure and pain, withdrawn from a most brilliant position in the centre of social and intellectual life and material civiliza- tion, and cast upon his own resources in a place and among people affording the dreariest contrast to all that had gratified his eye, heart, and mind through the whole of his previous life. How far these letters and confidences are to be regarded as equally sincere expressions of his affection or admiration for his correspondents is another question, which need not be pressed. Even in those addressed to his wife, in which he might be supposed to pour out his heart naturally, there may perhaps be detected a certain ring of insincerity. He pays her compliments, addresses her in the studied language of gallantry, and compares her to Penelope and Laodamia and the other famous heroines of ancient legend. Had she been a Penelope or a Laodamia she would have accompanied him in his exile, as we learn from Tacitus was done by other wives! in the more evil days of which he wrote the record. There is a note of truer affection in the one letter to his daughter Perilla, of whose genius and beauty he was proud, and who in her tastes and character was more in sympathy with him. ‘This is one of several points of resemblance in the position, feelings, and fortunes of Ovid with one whose career and character were so essen- tially different—Cicero. He shows a regard for many of his friends, and dependence on their sympathy and apprecia- tion, and he recalls with some bitterness the coldness with which some of those in whom he had trusted treated him when his disgrace first overtook him. He was moved by the persistent hostility of one whom

he had regarded as a friend to an act of retaliation for which neither his temper nor his genius was adapted,—the composition of a lampoon, the Ibis, in imitation of a poem of Callimachus, called by the Same name. His affections, like his genius, were diffused widely rather than strongly concentrated, and he seems to have had rather a large circle of intimate acquaintances than any close friends to whom he was attached as Cicero was to Atticus, Horace to Mecenas, Catullus to Calvus and Verannius. He was evidently a man of gentle and genial manners; and, as his active mind induced him to learn the language of the new people among whom he was thrown, his active interest in life enabled him to gain their regard and various marks of honour. One of the last acts of his literary career was to revise the Fasti and re-edit it with a dedication to Germanicus. The last lines of the Hz Ponto sound like the despairing sigh of a drowning man who had long struggled alone with the waves :—

‘“‘Omnia perdidimus, tantum modo vita relicta est Prebeat ut sensum materiamque malis.”

Shortly after these words were written the poet died, at the nee ee) Be Dott ied, at ul

1c : i i i ili ‘ Comitati profugos liberos matres, secutz maritos in exilia conjuges”’ (Tac., Hist,, i. 3).

age of sixty-one, in the year 17 a.p., the third year of the reign of Tiberius.

The natural temperament of Ovid, as indicated in his writings, has more in common with the suppleness and finesse of the modern Italian than with the strength and direct force of the ancient Roman, That stamp of her own character and understanding which Rome impressed on the genius of those other races, Italian, Celtic, or Iberian, which she incorporated with herself, is fainter in Ovid than in any other great writer. He ostentatiously dis-claims the manliness which in the republican times was regarded as the birthright not of Romans only but of the Sabellian races from which he sprung. He is as devoid of dignity in his abandonment to pleasure as in the weak- ness with which he meets calamity. He has no depth of serious

conviction, no vein of sober reflexion, and is sus- tained by no great or elevating purpose. Although the beings of a supernatural world fill a large place in his writings, they appear stripped of all sanctity and mystery. It is difficult to say whether the tone in which the adven- tures of the gods and goddesses of mythology are told, or his prayer offered to the gods of heaven and of the sea, when in danger of shipwreck,

**Pro superi viridesque dei, quibus equora cure,”

implies a kind of half-believing return to the most childish elements of paganism, or is simply one of mocking unbelief. He has absolutely no reverence, and consequently almost alone among the greater poets of Greece or Rome (the “sancti” of Lucretius, the ‘‘ pii vates ” of Virgil) he inspires no reverence in his reader. With all a poet’s feeling for the life, variety, and subtlety of nature, he has no sense of her mystery and majesty. Though he can give dramatic expression to pathetic emotion, the profound melancholy of Lucretius, the spiritual sadness, half-relieved by dim spiritual hopes, of Virgil, the thoughtful renunciation with which Horace fronts “the cloud of mortal destiny,” are states of mind which were seemingly inconceivable by hin. Nor is he more capable of sounding the deeper sources of joy than of sorrow. The love which he celebrates is sensual and superficial—a matter of vanity as much as of passion. He prefers the piquant attraction of falseliood and fickleness to the charm of truth andconstancy. Even where he follows Roman tendencies in his art he per- verts them. Didactic poetry has set before itself many false ends in ancient Roman as in modern English litera- ture ; but the pedantry of systematic teaching has never been so strangely misapplied, as it never has been so strangely combined with brilliant power of execution, as in the methodical teaching of the art—‘‘corrumpere et corrumpi.” The Fasti is a work conceived in the prosaic spirit of Roman antiquarianism. But this conception might have been made poetical had it been penetrated by the religious and patriotic spirit in which Virgil treats the origin of ancient ceremonies, or the serious, half mystic spirit in which he accepts the revelations of science. The contrast between the actual trivialities of ancient science and ancient ceremonial, on the one hand, and the new meaning which both were capable of receiving from a reverential treatment, could not be more effectually enforced than by a comparison of passages in the

Georgics and ineid treating the astronomical fancies and religious ceremonies of early ages with the literal definiteness or the light persiflage of the Paste.

These grave defects in strength and gravity of character had an important effect on the artistic result of Ovid's writings. Though he wanted neither diligence, persever- ance, nor literary ambition, he seems incapable of conceiv- ing a great and serious whole. Though his mind works very actively in the way of observing and reflecting on

the superficial aspects of life, yet he has added no great thoughts or maxims to the moral or intellectual heritage of the world. With a more versatile dramatic faculty than any of his countrymen, he has created no great character, comparable either with the grand impersonations of Greek tragedy, or with the Dido and Turnus of Virgil. He has both the psychological power of reading and the rhetorical power of expressing passion and emotion of different kinds ; but he has not a genuine and consistent sense of human greatness or heroism. He represents with impartial sympathy the noble heart of Laodamia and the unhallowed lust of Myrrha. His spirit seems thoroughly ironical or indifferent in regard to the higher ideals or graver convic- tions of men.

But with all the laxity and levity of his character he must have had qualities which made him, if not much esteemed, yet much liked in his own day, and which have perpetuated themselves in the genial amiability of his writings. He claims for himself two social virtues, highly prized by the Romans, " fides" and ' candor,"—the quali- ties of social honour and kindly sincerity, the qualities which made a man a pleasant member of society and a friend who might be relied on in the ordinary relations of life. There is no indication of anything base, anything ungenerous, or anything morose in his relations to others. The literary quality of "candor," the generous appreciation of all sorts of excellence, he possesses in a remarkable degree. He heartily admires everything in the literature of the past, Greek or Roman, that had any merit. In him more than in any of the other Augustan

poets we find words of admiration more than once applied to the rude genius of Ennius and the high spirit of Accius. It is by him, not by Virgil or Horace, that Lucretius is first named and the sublimity of his genius is first acknowledged. The image of Catullus that most haunts the imagination is that of the poet who died so early—

.... ‘hedera juvenalia cinctus Tempora,” as he is represented by Ovid coming to meet the shade of the young Tibullus in Elysium. To his own contemporaries, known and unknown to fame, he is as liberal in his words of recognition. He enjoyed society too in a thoroughly amiable and unenvious spirit. He lived on a friendly footing with a large circle of men of letters, poets, critics, grammarians, &c., but he showed none of that sense of superiority which is manifest in Horace’s estimate of the “tribes of grammarians” and the poetasters of his day. Like Horace, too, he courted the society of the great, and probably he did not maintain an equally independent attitude towards it; but unlike Horace he expresses no contempt for the profane world outside. With his gifts of irony and knowledge of the world one might have expected him to be the social satirist of the later phase of the Augustan age. But he wanted the censorious and critical temper necessary for a social, and the admixture of gall in his disposition necessary for a successful personal satirist. “‘Candidus a salibus suffusis felle refugi”

-is a claim on our regard which he is fully justified in making.

In his exile, and in imitation of his model Callimachus, he did retaliate on one enemy and persistent detractor 3 but the (is is a satire more remarkable for irrelevant learning than for epigrammatic sting.

But his chief personal endowment was his vivacity, and his keen interest in and enjoyment of life. He had no grain of discontent in his composition. Hehad no regrets for an ideal past nor longings for an imaginary future. The age in which his lot was cast was, as he tells us, that in which more than any other he would have wished to live.

1 Ars Amatoria, iii. 121, &e.

OVID

He is its most gifted representative, but he does not rise above it. The great object of his art was to amuse and delight it by the vivid picture he presented of its actual fashions and pleasures, and by creating a literature of romance which reflected these fashions and pleasures, and which could stimulate the curiosity and fascinate the fancy of a society too idle and luxurious for serious intellectual effort. The sympathy which he felt with the love adven- tures and intrigues of his contemporaries, to which he probably owed his fall, quickened his creative power to the composition of the Heroides and the romantic tales of the Metamorphoses. Catullus, by his force of concentration, makes the actual life of his age more immediately present; but none of the Roman poets can people a purely imaginary world with such spontaneous fertility of fancy as Ovid, In heart and mind he is inferior to Lucretius and Catullus, to Virgil and Horace, perhaps to Tibullus and Propertius; but in the power and range of imaginative vision he is surpassed by no ancient and by few modern poets. This power of vision is the counterpart of his lively sensuous nature. He has a keener eye for the apprehension of out- ward beauty, for the life and colour and forms of nature, than any Roman or perhaps than any Greek poet. This power, acting upon the wealth of his varied reading, gathered with eager curiosity and received into a singu- larly retentive mind, has enabled him to body forth scenes of the most varied and picturesque beauty in all the lands of Europe and Asia famous in ancient song and story. If his tragedy the Medea, highly praised by ancient critics, had been preserved, we should have been able to judge whether Roman art was capable of producing a great drama. In many of the Heroides, and in several speeches attributed to his imaginary personages, he gives evidence of true dramatic creativeness. Catullus, in his Aviadne and his Atts, has given a voice to deeper and more powerful feeling, and he presents an idyllic picture of the heroic age with a purer charm. But the range and variety of his art were limited by the shortness as well as the turmoil of his life. Catullus is unsurpassed as the author of an epic idyll. Ovid is not idyllic in his art, or whatever there is of idyllic in it is lost in the rapid movement of his narrative. But he is one, among the poets of all times, who can imagine a story with most vivid inventiveness and tell it with most unflagging animation. An ideal world, poetical and supernatural, but never fantastic or grotesque, of beings rich with the beauty and fulness of youth, play- ing their part in scenes of picturesque beauty, is brought before us in verse and diction of apparently inexhaustible resource

and unimpeded flow, partly created or rising up spontaneously for the occasion, partly borrowed boldly and freely from all his predecessors in Latin poetry, but always full of genuine life and movement. The faults of his verse and diction are those which arise from the vitality of his temperament,—too facile a flow, too great exuber- ance of illustration. He has as little sense of the need of severe restraint in his art as in his life. He is not without mannerism, but he is quite unaffected, and, however far short he might fall of the highest excellence of verse or style, it was not possible for him to be rough or harsh, dull or obscure.

As regards the school of art to which he belongs, he may be described as the most brilliant representative of Roman Alexandrinism. The latter half of the Augustan age was, in its social and intellectual aspects, more like the Alexandrian age than any other era of antiquity. The Alexandrian age was like the Augustan, one of refine ment and luxury, of outward magnificence and literary dilettanteism flourishing under the fostering influence of an absolute monarchy. Poetry was the only important branch of literature cultivated, and the chief subjects of

poetry were mythological tales, various phases of the passion of love, the popular aspects of science, and some aspects of the beauty of nature. These, too, were the chief subjects of the later Augustan poetry. The higher feelings and ideas which found expression in the poetry of Virgil, Horace, Varius, and the writers of an older generation no longer acted on the Roman world. It was to the private: tastes and pleasures of individuals and society that Roman Alexandrinism had appealed both in the poetry of Catullus, Cinna, Calvus, &c., and in that of Gallus, Tibullus, and Propertius. Ovid was the last of this school of writers ; he profited at the very entrance on his poetical career by the artistic accomplishment in form, metre, and diction which had been gained by the slow labours of his predecessors; his fancy was much more active and brilliant than that of any of them; and his spirit was more unreservedly satisfied with the condi- tions imposed both by the art to which he devoted him- self and the political and social circumstances by which he was surrounded. Like all his countrymen, he wanted power to create a new form of art and a new vehicle of expression. But if he could

have foreseen his future fame his literary ambition would have been completely satisfied by the consciousness that he had not only immeasurably surpassed, but had, for all after time, practically superseded his Greek models. He has confined himself to two vehicles of expression—the elegiac metre and the hexameter. In the first the great mass of his poetry is written,—the Heroides, the Amores, the Ars Amatoria, the Remedia Amoris, the Fast, the Tristia, the Hx Ponto, the Ibis, the Medicamina Faciei; in the hexameter we have the work which he regarded as that on which his hope of immor- tality was based, the Metamorphoses, and a fragment of a didactic poem written in the style of the Alexandrians, probably with the mere desire to kill time in the place of his exile, called the Halieutica. Of the first metre he is the acknowledged master. He brought it to its highest perfection, and all the immense mass of elegiac verse published and written in modern times has merely endeavoured to reproduce the echo of his rhythm and manner. In the direct expression and illustration of feel- ing, his elegiac metre has much more ease, vivacity, and sparkle than that of any of his predecessors, while he alone has communicated to it, without altering its essential characteristic of recurrent and regular pauses, a fluidity and rapidity of movement which makes it an admirable vehicle for tales of pathetic and picturesque interest. It was impossible for him to give to the hexameter a greater perfection than it had already attained, but he imparted to it also a new character, wanting indeed the weight, and majesty, and intricate harmonies of Virgil, but rapid, varied, animated, and in complete accord with the swift, versatile, and fervid movement of his imagination. One other proof he gave of his irrepressible energy and vitality by composing, during his exile, a poem in the Gothic language, in praise of Augustus,—the loss of which, what- ever it may have been to literature, is one much to be regretted in the interests of philological science.

Ovid would, in any previous century since the revival of classical studies, have been regarded as a more important representative of ancient life and feeling, and as a greater poet, than he is in the present day. During the earlier period of this revival, the beauty and refinement of ancient literature, and of the life to which that literature is the key, were better appreciated than their moral and Intellectual greatness. As the representative writer of an age of great material civilization and luxury, he gained the attention of a time and a class struggling towards a similar civilization and animated by

the same love of pleasure. It was in his writings that the world of romance and wonder, created by the early Greek Mmagination, was first revealed to the modern world. The vivid, Sensuous fancy through which he reproduced the tales and beings

of mythology, as well as the transparent lucidity, the unfailing liveliness, the ease and directness of the medium through which

this is done, made his works the most accessible and among the most attractive of the recovered treasures of antiquity. His in- fluence was first felt in the literature of the Italian Renaissance, But in the most creative periods of English literature he seems to have been more read than any other ancient poet, not even except- ing Virgil; and it was on the most creative minds, such as those of Marlowe, Spenser, Shakespeare,! Milton, and Dryden, that he acted most powerfully. The continuance of his influence is equally unmistakable during the classical era of Addison and Pope. The most successful Latin poetry of modern times has been written in imitation of him; and the accomplishment by which the faculty of literary composition and the feeling for ancient Roman culture were most developed in the great schools of England and France was the writing of Ovidian elegiacs. His works gave also a powerful stimulus and supplied abundant materials to the great painters who flourished during and immediately subsequent to the Renaissance. The mythological figures and landscapes which crowd the grcat galleries of Europe reproduce on canvas the forms, life, colour, and spirit which first were clothed in words and metre in his Hlegies and Metamorphoses.

But, whatever charm individual readers of ancient literature may still find in him, no one would claim for him anything like the same influence on literature, art, and education in the present day as he formerly enjoyed. Judged by the attention given to their works by professional scholars and also in current criticism, not only Virgil and Horace, but Lucretius and Catullus, appear to be more in esteem than Ovid. This may perhaps be due as much to a loss in imagination as to a gain in critical power. Although the spirit of antiquity is better understood now than it was in the 16th and 17th centuries, yet in the capacity of appreciating works of brilliant fancy we can

claim no superiority over the centuries which produced Spenser, Shakespeare, and Milton, nor over those which produced the great Italian, French, and Flemish painters. Still, whatever be the cause of the change in taste, Ovid is not one of those poets who seem to have much to teach us, or much power to move and interest us now. Perhaps the very liveliness and clearness of his style and manner, which made him the most accessible of ancient authors in times of less exact learning, have tended to deaden curiosity about him in the present day. There is no deep or recondite meaning to be extracted from him. The sensuous and more superficial aspects of the later phase of ancient civilization, of which he is the most brilliant exponent, have much less interest for us than the heroic aspects of its earlier phase, and the spiritual, ethical, and political significance of its maturity. The art which chiefly ministers to pees though it had its place in the great ages of antiquity, had then only a subordinate one; and it is to that place that it has been relegated by the permanent judgment of the world. It is of that art that Ovid is the chicf master, and it is that with which he is identified. There might almost seem to be some danger of his falling into the neglect which has deservedly overtaken the authors of the epics of the Flavian era. It is therefore perhaps worth while to indicate some of the grounds on which his works must continue to hold an important place in any comprchensive study of Roman literature or human culture.

His first claim on the attention of modern readers is that already indicated—the influence which he exercised on the earlier develop- ment of modern art and literature. Just as certain Greek poets and literary periods (the Alexandrian for instance) claim attention as much on account of their influence on the development of Roman literature as on their own account, so, iffor no other reason, the works of Ovid must always retain an importance, second only to those of Virgil and Horace, as one of the chief media through which the stream of ancient feeling and fancy mingled with the great river of modern literature.

He is interesting furthcr as the sole contemporary exponent of the last half of the Augustan age. The whole of that age is a time of which the outward show and theinner spirit are known from the works, not of contemporary historians or prose-writers, but of its poets. The successive phases of feeling and experience through which the world passed during the whole of this

critical period of human affairs are revealed in the poetry of Virgil, Horace, and Ovid. Virgil throws an idealizing and religious halo around the hopes and aspirations of the first rise of the empire. His aim seems to be to bring the new régime into living connexion with the past, not of Rome only but of the civilized world. Horace presents the most complete image of his age in its most varions aspects, realistic and ideal. Ovid, in all his earlier writings, reflects the life of the world of wealth and fashion under theiufluence of the new court. It isa life of material prosperity, splendour, refinement, of frivolity and intrigue, of dilettanteism in literature, of decay in all the nobler energies, of servility and adulation, He is the most characteristic painter such a time could have found. For the continuous study

1 The influence of Ovid on Shakespeare is shown conelusively in the interesting papers on ‘‘What Shakespeare learned at School,” contributed to Fraser’s Magazine (1879, 1880) by Prof. Baynes.

of the Roman world in its moral and social relations, his place is importaut as marking a stage of transition between the representa- tion of Horace, in which the life of pleasure and amusement has its place, but one subordinate to the life of reflexion and of serious affairs, and the life which reveals itsclf in the cynicism of Martial and the morose disgust of Juvenal. : From the times of Ennius and Lucilius, Roman poetry occupied itself much with the lives, pursuits, and personal feelings of its authors, and this is one element of interest which it has in common with such works as the Letters of Cicero and of Pliny. Few poets of any age or country bring themselves into such close relation with their readers as Catullus, Horace, Ovid, and Martial. Ovid is in mind and character perhaps the least interesting of the four. But an exceptional interest attaches to his history. He attracts curiosity by having a secret, which, though it may be guessed with an approach to certainty, is not fully revealed. He excites also personal sympathy by the contrast presented in his writings between the unclouded gaiety of his youth and prime and the long heart-break of his cxile. If we knew him only from the personal impression which he makes in the Amores and the Ars Ama- toria, it would be allowed that few men of equal genius had so little claim on the estcem of the world. In the ten books of complaint which he pours

out from his place of exile, though he shows no sign of a manlier temper than when he wrotc his ‘‘imbelles elegi,” yet by the vividuess with which he realizes the contrast between his past and present, by his keen capacity for pleasure and pain, by the unreserve with which he exposcs all his feelings, he forces himself on our intimacy, and awakens those sym- pathies which all sincere and passionate confessions create, where there is nothing base or malignant in the temper of their author to alienate them. Though his fate does not rouse the powerful interest inspired by the ‘‘fiery courage” and ‘‘ Titanic might” with which Byron struggled during his self-imposed exile, yet to it, too, apply the sympathetic words of Virgil—‘‘ Mentem mortalia tangunt.”

But it was not owing to the historical and personal interest of his works that he gained his great name among his countrymen and the readers of a former generation, nor is it on that ground solely that he claims attention now. He is the last true poet of the great age of Roman literature,—which begins with Lucretius and closes with him, —of the age which drew the most powerful stimulus from the genius and art of Greece, from the sentiment inspired by Rome, and from the Italian love of nature. Among the five or six great poets of that time Ovid is distinguished both as a brilliant artist who brought one branch of poetry to the highest perfection and also as a poet in whom one rich vein of the genius of Italy most conspicuously manifested itself. It is mainly through his reproduction of the forms, metres, and materials of the chicf Alexandrian poets that these have maintained an enduring place in literature. But, great as he was in art and imitative faculty, his spontaneous gifts of genius were still more remarkable. If his works had perished we should have had a most inadequate idea of what the fervid Italian genius could accomplish in ancient times. No other Roman poet can invent and tell a story and make an outward scene and dramatic situation present to the eye and mind with such vivid power. If he does not greatly move the deeper sources of emotion, he has the power of lightly stirring many of them. No Roman poet writcs with such ease, life, and rapidity of movement. None is endowed with such fertility of fancy, such quickness of apprehension. In respect of his vivacity and fertility we recognize in him the countryman of Cicero and Livy. But the type of genius of which he affords the best example is more familiar in modern Italian than in ancient Roman literature. While the scrious spirit of Lucretius and Virgil reappeared in

Dante, the qualities attributed by his latest and most accomplished critic to Ariosto may be said to reproduce the light-hearted gaiety and the brilliant fancy of Ovid.

There were several cditions of Ovid's collected works in the 16th and 17th centuries, the time in which he enjoyed his greatest popularity. Recent editions of the text have been published by R. Merkel and A, Riese. The most important aids to the study of Ovid recently made in England are the editions of the Jbis by Mr Robinson Ellis, and those of the Heroides by Mr A. Palmer. Much light is thrown on the diction of Ovid by Zingerle in his Ovidius und sein Verhdlt- niss 2b den Vorgdngern. The most interesting discussion on the cause of his exile is that of M. Gaston Boissier, which originally appeared in the Revue des Deux Afondes, and now forms part of his volume entitled Z' Opposition sous les Césars. (W. Y¥. S.)

OVIEDO, a city in the north of Spain, capital of a province of the same name,! stands on a gentle northern slope, about 72 miles by rail and diligence to the north EE eee ee

: The province of Oviedo, corresponding to the ancient province and principality of Asturias (9.v.), has an area of 4091 square miles and a population (1877) of 576,352. At that census the aynntamientos (besides the capital) having a population exceeding 10,000 were— Cangas de Tinéo, 22,212; Cudillcro, 10,113; Gijon, 30,591; Grado 20,255; Langréo, 12,832; Lena, 11,657; Llanes, 18,637; Miéres, 12,614 ; Pilona, 18,648 ; Salas, 16,394; Siero, 21,494 ; Tindo, 21,414; Valdés, 22,014; and Villaviciosa, 20,179, a

of Leon, and 14 miles to the south of the Bay of Biscay. About a mile to the north-west is the Sierra de Naranco, a Red Sandstone hill 1070 feet above the sea and about 470 above the town, which is thus shel- tered from the north wind, but subject in consequence to a large rainfall. Most of the town was burnt in 1521, and the reconstruction, till recently, has been irregular, The four main streets are formed by the roads connecting Gijon and Leon (north and south) and Grado and Santander (east and west), which cross each other in a central square, the Plaza Mayor. The streets are clean and

well lighted ; the projecting roofs of the houses give a characteristic effect, and some portions of the old Calle de la Plateria are highly picturesque. In the Plaza Mayor are the handsome Casas Consistoriales, dating from the 17th century ; one or two deserted mansions of the nobility are architecturally interesting. The university, founded by Philip ITI. in 1604, is lodged in a plain building, 180 feet square; connected with it are a small library and physical and chemical museums. The cathedral, an elegant Perpendicular building of the 14th century, occupies the site of an earlier edifice, founded in the 8th century, of which only the Camara Santa remains. The west front has a fine portico of ornamented arches between the two towers. Of these one, very richly adorned, has been completed, and is 284 feet high; the other, which is larger, does not as yet rise above the nave. The interior has some fine stained glass, but has been much disfigured with modern rococo additions. The Capilla del Rey Santo (Alphonso ITI., who died in Oviedo in 843) contains the remains of many successive princes of the house of Pelayo; and the Camara Santa (dating from 802) preserves in an arca the crucifix, sudarium, and other relics saved by Don Pelayo in his flight. The cathedral library has some curious old MSS., mostly from Toledo. On the Sierra de Naranco is the ancient Santa Maria de Naranco, originally built by Ramiro in 850 as a palace, and afterwards turned into a church. Higher up the hill is San Miguel de Lino, also of the 9th century ; and on the road to Gijon, about a mile outside the town, is the Santullano or church of St Julian, also of very early date. The modern town has the usual equipments in the way of hospitals, schools, theatre, casino, and the like; and in the neighbourhood are some pleasant paseos or promenades (San Francisco, Bombé, Jardin Botanico). The industries of the town include hat- making and tanning, and there is also a manufactory of arms. The population of the ayuntamiento in 1877 was 34,460.

Oviedo, founded in the reign of Fruela (762), became the fixed residence of the kings of the Asturias in the time of Alphonso the Chaste, and continued to be so until about 924, when the advancing reconquest led them to remove their capital to Leon. From that date the history of the city was comparatively uneventful. It was twice plundered during the war of independence—by Ney in 1809 and by Bonnet in the following year.

OVIEDO Y VALDEZ, Gonzato FERNANDEZ DE (1478-1557), an early historian of Spanish America, was born at Madrid, of noble Asturian descent, in 1478. He was brought up at the court of Ferdinand and Isabella as one of the pages of Prince John ; in this capacity he was present at the surrender of Granada in 1492, and saw Columbus at Barcelona on his first return from America in 1493. In 1514 he was sent out to San Domingo as supervisor of the gold-smeltings. He only occasionally afterwards visited his native country and the American mainland. Among other offices subsequently added to his original appointment was that of historiographer of the Indies, in the discharge of which he produced, besides some unimportant chronicles, two large works of abiding interest and value—La general y natural Historia de las Indias and Quincuagenas de los Notables de Espatia. He died at Valladolid in 1557,

The History of the Indies first appeared at Madrid in the form ofa Sumario in 1526. Of the full work, consisting of fifty books, the first twenty-one were published at Seville in 1535 a transl. by Eden, 1555; Fr. transl. by Poleur, 1556). The whole has rceeently been published for the first time by the Madrid Royal Academy of History (4 vols. fol., 1851-55). It eontains a large mass of valuable information, but written in a loose rambling moralizing style which makcs it somewhat difficult to use. Aeeording to Las Casas, it is ‘as full of lies almost as pages,” but the judgment of the humane ecclesiastie was, necessarily perhaps, somewhat preju- diced, The Quinewagenas, devoted to reminisecnees of the princi- pal characters who had figured in Spain during his lifetime, consists of a series of imaginary conversations full of gossip and curious anecdote of great interest to the student of history. Several MSS, are extant, but the work has never been printcd.

OWEGO, a post village and township of the United States, capital of Tioga county, New York, lies at the mouth of Owego Creek, on the north side of the Susque- hanna (here crossed by a_ bridge), 237 miles north- west of New York by the New York, Erie, and Western Railroad, which here connects with the Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western and the Southern Central Rail- roads, The village, built at the foot of a considerable hill in the

heart of a fine agricultural district, is a pleasant place with broad maple-shaded side-walks along its principal streets. Grist-mills, soap-works, marble-works, a piano factory, and carriage-works are among the industrial establishments. The population of the village was 4756 in 1870 and 5525 in 1880; that of the whole township 9442 and 9984 respectively.

OWEN, Jonn (Ovenus or Audoenus) (1560-1622), a writer of Latin epigrams, once very popular all over Europe, was of Welsh extraction, and was born at Armon, Caernarvonshire, in 1560. He was educated under Dr Bilson at Wykeham's School, Winchester, and afterwards studied at New College, Oxford, where he received a fellowship in 1584, and took the degree of bachelor of laws in 1590. Throwing up his fellowship during the follow- ing year, he turned schoolmaster, and taught successively at Trylegh, near Monmouth, and at Warwick, where he was master of the free school founded by Henry VIII. He soon became distinguished for his perfect mastery of the Latin language, and for the humour, felicity, and point of his epigrams. As a writer of Latin verse he takes rank with Buchanan and Cowley. Those who, with Dryden, place the epigram "at the bottom of all poetry" will not estimate Owen's poetical genius very high; yet the Continental scholars and wits of the day used to call him "the British Martial." 'In one respect he was a true poet," says a biographer; "namely, he was always poor." He wasa staunch Protestant besides, and could not resist the temptation of turning his wit against Popery occasionally. This practice caused his book to be placed on the Index Prohibitorius of the Roman Church in 1654, and, what was yet more serious, led a rich old uncle of the Roman Catholic communion, from whom he had " great expectations," to cut the epigrammatist out of his will. When the poet died in 1622, his countryman and relative, Bishop Williams of Lincoln, had him buried at St Paul's Cathedral, London, where he erected a monument to his memory bearing an elegant epitaph in Latin.

Owen's Epigrammata are divided into twelve books, of which the first four were published in 1606, and the rest at four different times. Owen frequently adapts and alters to his own purpose the lines of his predecessors in Latin verse, and one such borrowing has become eelebrated as a quotation, though few know where it is to be found. It is the first line of this epigram :—

“Tempora mutantur, nos et mutamur in illis: Quo modo? fit semper tempore pejor homo.” (Lib. 1. ad Edoardum Noel, epig. 58.) This first line is altered from an epigram by Matthew Borbonius, one of a series of mottocs for various emperors, this one being for Lothaire I. ; “Omnia mutantur, nos et mutamur in illis: ~ Illa viees quasdam res habet, illa vices.”

There are editions of the Epigrammata by Elzevir and by Didot;

the best is that edited by Renouard (2 vols., Paris, 1795). Transla- tions into English, either in whole or in part, have been made by Viears, 1619; by Peeke, in his Parnassi Puerperium, 1659 ; and by Harvey in 1677, which is the most eomplete. La Torre, the Spanish epigrammatist, owed much to Owen, and translated his works into Spanish in 1674. French translations of the best of Owen’s epigrams have been published by A. L. Lebrun, 1709, and by Kérivalant, 1819.

OWEN, Joun (1616-1683), theologian, was born of Puritan parents at Stadham in Oxfordshire in 1616. At twelve years of age he was admitted at Queen’s College, Oxford, where he took his B.A. degree in 1632 and M.A. in 1635. During these years he worked with such diligence that he allowed himself but four hours sleep a night, and damaged his health by this excessive labour. In 1637 he was driven from Oxford by his refusal to comply with the requirements of Laud’s new statutes. Having taken orders shortly before, he became chaplain and tutor in the family of Sir Robert Dormer of Ascot in Oxfordshire. At the outbreak of the civil troubles he adopted Parliamentary principles, and thus lost both his place and the prospects of succeeding to his uncle’s fortune. For a while he lived in Charterhouse Yard, in great unsettlement of mind on religious questions, which was removed at length by a sermon which he accidently heard at St Michael’s in Wood Street.

His first publication, in 1642, The Display of Arminian- ism, dedicated to the committee of religion, gained him the living of Fordham in Essex, from which a “scandalous minister” had been ejected. Here he was married, and by his marriage he had eleven children.

Although he was thus formally united to Presbyterianism, Owen's views were originally inclined to those of the Inde- pendents, and, as he acquainted himself more fully with the controversy, he became more resolved in that direction. He represented, in fact, that large class of persons who, falling away from Episcopacy, attached themselves to the very moderate form of Presbyterianism which obtained in England as being that which came first in their way. His views at this time are shown by his Duty of Pastors and People Distinguished. At Fordham he remained until 1646, when, the old incumbent dying, the presentation lapsed to the patron, who gave it to some one else. He was now, however, coming into notice, for on April 29 he preached before the Parliament. In this sermon, and still more in his Thoughts on Church Government, which he appended to it, his tendency to break away from Presbyterianism is displayed.

The people of Coggeshall in Essex now invited him to become their pastor. Here he declared his change by founding a church on Congregational principles, and, in 1647, by publishing Zshcol, as well as various works against Arminianism. He made the friendship of Fairfax while the latter was besieging Colchester, and urgently addressed the army there against religious persecution. He was chosen to preach to Parliament on the day after the execution of Charles, and succeeded in fulfilling his task without mentioning that event, and again on April 19, when he spake thus:—'The time shall come when the earth shall disclose her slain, and not the simplest heretic shall have his blood unrevenged ; neither shall any atone- ment or expiation be allowed for this blood, while a toe of the image, or a bone of the beast, is left unbroken."

He now became acquainted with Cromwell, who carried him off to Ireland in 1649 as his chaplain, that he might regulate the affairs of Trinity College; while there he began the first of his frequent controversies with Baxter by writing against the latter's Aphorisms of Justification. In 1650 he accompanied Cromwell to Scotland, and returned to Coggeshallin 1651. In March Cromwell, as chancellor, gave him the deanery of Christ Church, and made him

vice-chancellor in September 1652. In 1651, October 24, after Worcester, he preached the thanksgiving sermon before Parliament. In October 1653 he was one of several ministers whom Cromwell, probably to sound their views, summoned to a consultation as to church union. In December in the same year he had the honour of D.D. conferred upon him by his university. In the Parliament of 1654 he sat, but only fora short time, as member for Oxford university, and, with Baxter, was placed on the committee for settling the " fundamentals" necessary for the toleration promised in the Instrument of Government. He was, too, one of the Triers, and appears to have behaved with kindness and moderation in that capacity. As vice-chancellor he acted with readiness and spirit when a general rising in the west seemed imminent in 1655 ; his adherence to Cromwell, however, was by no means slavish, for he drew up, at the request of Desborough and Pride, a petition against his receiving the kingship (see Ludlow's Memoirs, ed. 1751, p. 224), During the years 1654-58 his chief controversial works were Divina Justitia, The Perseverance of Saints (against Goodwin), and Vindicte Hvangelice (against the Socinians). In 1658 he took a leading part in the conference which drew up the 'Savoy Declaration. Baxter declares that at the death of Cromwell Owen

jomed the Wallingford House party. This, though

supported by the fact that under the Restoration he had among his congregation a large number of these officers, Owen himself utterly denied. He appears, however, to have assisted in the restoration of the Rump Parliament, and, when Monk began his march into England, Owen, in the name of the Independent churches, to whom Monk was supposed to belong, and who were keenly anxious as to his intentions, wrote to dissuade him from the enter- prise.

In March 1660, the Presbyterian party being upper- most, Owen was deprived of his deanery, which was given back to Reynolds. He retired to Stadham, where he wrote various controversial and theological works, in especial the laborious Theologowmena Pantodapa, a history of the rise and progress of theology. In 1661 was published the celebrated Miat Lux, a work in which the oneness and beauty of Roman Catholicism are contrasted with the confusion and multiplicity of Protestant sects, At Clarendon's

request Owen answered this in 1662 in his Animadversions ; and this led of course to a prolonged controversy, Clarendon now offered Owen perferment if he would conform. Owen's condition for making terms was liberty to all who agree in doctrine with the Church of England ; nothing therefore came of the negotiation,

In 1663 he was invited by the Congregational churches in Boston, New England, to become their minister, but declined. The Conventicle and Five Mile Acts soon drove him to London; and in 1666, after the Fire, he, as did other leading Nonconformist ministers, fitted up a room for public service and gathered a congregation, composed chiefly of the old Commonwealth officers, Meanwhile he was incessantly writing; and in 1667 he published his Catechism, which led to a proposal from Baxter for union. Various papers passed, and after a year the attempt was closed by the following laconical note from Owen: "Tam still a well-wisher to these mathematics." It was now, too, that he published the first part of his vast work upon the Epistle to the Hebrews,

In 1669 Owen wrote a spirited remonstrance to the Congregationalists in New England, who, under the influ- ence of Presbyterianism, had shown themselves perse- cutors. At home, too, he was busy in the same cause. In 1670 Parker attacked the Nonconformists in his own style of clumsy intolerance. Owen answered him 3 Parker

repeated his attack; Marvell wrote The Rehearsal Trans.

prosed ; and Parker is remembered by this alone.

At the revival of the Conventicle Acts in 167 0, Owen was appointed to draw up a paper of reasons which was submitted to the House of Lords in protest. In this or the following year Harvard university invited him to become their president ; he received similar invitations from some of the Dutch universities,

When Charles issued his Declaration of Indulgence in 1672, Owen drew up an address of thanks. This indulg- ence gave the dissenters an opportunity

for increasing their churches and services, and Owen was one of the first preachers at the weekly lectures which the Independents and Presbyterians jointly held in Plummer's Hall. He was held in high respect by a large number of the nobility (one of the many things which point to the fact that Congregationalism was by no means the creed of the poor and insignificant), and during 1674 both Charles and James held prolonged conversations with him in which they assured him of their good wishes to the dissenters. Charles gave him 1000 guineas to relieve those upon whom the severe laws had chiefly pressed. In 1674 Owen was attacked by one Dr Sherlock, whom he easily vanquished, and from this time until 1680 he was engaged upon his ministry and the writing of religious works. In 1680, however, Stillingfleet having on May 11 preached his sermon on "The Mischief of Separation," Owen defended the Nonconformists from the charge of schism in his Brief Vindication. Baxter and Howe also answered Stillingfleet, who replied in Zhe Unreasonableness of Separation. Owen again answered this, and then left the controversy to a swarm of eager combatants. From this time to his death he was occupied with continual writing, disturbed only by an absurd charge of being concerned in the Rye House Plot. His most important work was his Z'reatise on Evangelical Churches, in which were contained his latest views regarding church government. During his life he issued more than eighty separate publications, many of them of great size. Of these a list may be found in Orme's Memoirs of Owen. For some years before his death Owen had suffered greatly from stone and asthma. He died quietly, though after great pain, at Haling, on August 24, 1683, and was buried on September 4th in Bunhill Fields, being followed to the grave by a large procession of persons of distinction. "In younger age a most comely and majestic form; but in the latter stages of life, depressed by constant infirmities, emaciated with frequent diseases, and above all crushed under the weight of intense and unremitting studies, it became an incommodious mansion for the vigorous exer- tions of the spirit in the service of its God,"

For engraved portraits of Owen see first edition of Palmer's Von-conformists' Memorial and Vertue's Sermons and Tracts, 1721. The chief authorities for the life are Owen's Works ; Orme's Afemoirs of Owen ; Wood's Athene Oxonienses ; Baxter's Life ; Neal's History of the Puritans; Edwards's Gangrena ; and the various historics of the Independents. (O. A.)

OWEN, Roserr (1771-1858), philanthropist, and founder of English socialism, was born at the village of Newtown, Montgomeryshire, in North Wales. His father had a small business in Newtown as saddler and ironmonger, and there young Owen received all his school education, which terminated at the age of nine. At ten he went to Stamford, where he served in a draper’s shop for three or four years, and, after a short experience of work in a London shop, removed to Manchester. His success at Manchester was very rapid. When only nineteen years of age he became manager of a cotton mill, in which five hundred people were employed, and by his administrative intelligence, energy, industry, and steadiness soon made it one of the very best establishments of the kind in Great Britain. In this factory Owen used the first bags of

ce se fe oe

>

ae = – te

a i en ee ee ee ee es a

O W

American sea-island cotton ever imported into the country; it was the first cotton obtained from the Southern States of America. Owen also made remarkable improvement in the quality of the cotton spun; and indeed there is no reason to doubt that at this early age he was the first cotton-spinner in England, a position entirely due to his own capacity and knowledge of the trade, as he had found the mill in no well-ordered condition, and was left to organize it entirely on his own responsibility. Owen had become manager and one of the partners of the Chorlton Twist Company at Manchester, when he made his first acquaintance with the scene of his future philanthropic efforts at New Lanark. During a visit to Glasgow he had fallen in love with the daughter of the proprietor of the New Lanark mills, Mr Dale. Owen induced his partners to purchase New Lanark; and after his marriage with Miss Dale he settled there, as manager and part owner of the mills (1800). Encouraged by his great success in the management of cotton factories in Manchester, he had already formed the intention of conducting

New Lanark on higher principles than the current commercial ones. The factory of New Lanark had been started in 1784 by Dale and Arkwright, the water-power afforded by the falls of the Clyde being the great attraction. Connected with the mills were about two thousand people, five hundred of whom were children, brought, most of them, at the age of five or six from the poorhouses and charities of Edinburgh and Glasgow. The children especially had been well treated by Dale, but the general condition of the people was very unsatisfactory. Many of them were the lowest of the population, the respectable country people refusing to submit to the long hours and demoralizing drudgery of the factories ; theft, drunkenness, and other vices were common ; education and sanitation were alike neglected ; most families lived only in one room. It was this population, thus committed to his care, which Owen now set himself to elevate and ameliorate. He greatly improved their houses, and by the unsparing and bene- volent exertion of his personal influence trained them to habits of order, cleanliness, and thrift. He opened a store, where the people could buy goods of the soundest quality at little more than cost price; and the sale of drink was placed under the strictest supervision. His greatest success, however, was in the education of the young, to which he devoted special attention. He was the founder of infant schools in Great Britain ; and, though he was anticipated by Continental reformers, he seems to have been led to institute them by his own views of what education ought to be, and without hint from abroad. In all these plans Owen obtained the most gratifying success. Though at first regarded with suspicion as a stranger, he soon won the confidence of his people. The mills con- tinued to be a great commercial success, but it is needless to say that some of Owen's schemes involved considerable expense, which was displeasing to his partners. Tired at last of the restrictions imposed on him by men who wished to conduct the business on the ordinary principles, Owen formed a new firm, who, content with 5 per cent. of return for their capital, were ready to give freer scope to his philanthropy (1813). In this firm Jeremy Bentham and the well-known Quaker, William Allen, were partners. In the Same year Owen first appeared as an author of essays, in which he expounded the principles on which his system of educational philanthropy was based. From an early age he had lost all belief in the prevailing forms of religion, and had thought out a creed for himself, which he considered an entirely new and original discovery. The chief points in this philosophy were that man's character 1s

made not by him but for him; that it has been formed by circumstances over which he had no control ; that he

KN 87

is not a proper subject either of praise or blame,—these principles leading up to the practical conclusion that the great secret in the right formation of man's character is to place him under the proper influences—physical, moral, and social—from his earliest years. These principles—of the irresponsibility of man and of the effect of early influences— are the keynote of Owen's whole system of education and social amelioration. As we have said, they are embodied in his first work, A New View of Society, or Essays on the Principle of the Formation of the Human Character, the first of these essays (there are four in all) being published in 1813. It is needless to say that Owen's new views theoretically belong to a very old system of philosophy, and that his originality is to be found only in his benevolent application of them. For the next few years Owen's work at New Lanark continued to have a national and even a European significance. His schemes for the education of his workpeople attained to something like completion on the opening of the institution at New Lanark in 1816. He was a zealous supporter of the factory legislation resulting in the Act of 1819, which, however, greatly disappointed him. He had interviews and communications with the leading members of Govern- ment, including the premier, Lord Liverpool, and with many of the rulers and leading statesmen of the Continent. New Lanark itself became a much-frequented place of pilgrimage for social reformers, statesmen, and royal personages, including Nicholas, afterwards emperor of Russia. According to the unanimous testimony of all who visited it, the results achieved by Owen were singularly good. The manners of the children, brought up under his system, were beautifully graceful, genial, and uncon- strained ; health, plenty, and contentment prevailed ; drunkenness was almost unknown, and illegitimacy was extremely rare. The most perfect good feeling subsisted between Owen and his workpeople, and all the operations of the mill proceeded with the utmost smoothness and regu- larity; and the business wasa great commercial success. ~~Hitherto Owen's work had been that of a philanthropist, whose great distinction was the originality and unwearying unselfishness of his methods. His first departure in socialism took place in~~

~~1817, and was embodied in a report communicated to the Committee of the House of Commons on the Poor Law. The general misery and stagnation of trade consequent on the termination of the great war was engrossing the attention of the country. After clearly tracing the special causes connected with the war which had led to such a deplorable state of things, Owen pointed out that the permanent cause of distress was to be found in the competition of human labour with machinery, and that the only effective remedy was the united action of men, and the subordination of machinery. His proposals for the treatment of pauperism were based on these principles. He recommended that communities of about twelve hundred persons each should be settled on quanti~~ ties of land of from 1000 to 1500 acres, all living in one large building in the form of a square, with public kitchen and mess-rooms. Each family should have its own private apartments, and the entire care of the children till the age of three, after which they should be brought up by the community, their parents having access to them at meals and all other proper times. These communities might be established by individuals, by parishes, by counties, or by the state; in every case there should be effective supervision by duly qualified persons. Work, and the enjoyment of its results, should be in common, The size of his community was no doubt partly suggested by his village of New Lanark; and he soon proceeded to advocate such a scheme as the best form for the reorganization of society in general. In its fully developed form—and it cannot be said to have

changed much during Owen's lifetime—it was as follows. He considered an association of from 500 to 3000 as the fit number for a good working community. While mainly agricultural, it should possess all the best machinery, should offer every variety of employment, and should, as far as possible, be self-contained. "As these townships," as he also called them, ''should increase in number, unions of them federatively united shall be formed in circles of tens, hundreds, and thousands," till they should embrace the whole world in a common interest.

His plans for the cure of pauperism were received with great favour. Zhe Times and The Morning Post and many of the leading men of the country

countenanced them; one of his most steadfast friends was the duke of Kent, father of Queen Victoria. He had indeed gained the ear of the country,and had the prospect before him of a great career as a social reformer, when he went out of his way at a large meeting in London to declare his hostility to all the received forms of religion. After this defiance to the religious sentiment of the country, Owen's theories were in the popular mind associated with infi- delity, and were henceforward suspected and discredited. Owen's own confidence, however, remained unshaken; and he was anxious that his scheme for establishing a community should be tested. At last, in 1825, such an experiment was attempted under the direction of his disciple, Abram Combe, at Orbiston near Glasgow; and in the same year Owen himself commenced another at New Harmony in Indiana, America. After a trial of about two years both failed completely. Neither of them was a pauper experiment ; but it must be said that the members were of the most motley description, many worthy people of the highest aims being mixed with vagrants, adventurers, and crotchety, wrong-headed enthusiasts. After a long period of friction with William Allen and some of his other partners, Owen resigned all connexion with New Lanark in 1828. On his return from America he made London the centre of his activity. Most of his means having been sunk in the New Harmony experiment, he was no longer a flourishing capitalist, but the head of a vigorous pro- paganda, in which socialism and secularism were combined. One of the most interesting features of the movement at this period was the establishment in 1832 of an equitable labour exchange system, in which exchange was effected by means of labour notes, the usual means of exchange and the usual middlemen being alike superseded. The word "socialism" first became current in the discussions of the Association of all Classes of all Nations, formed by Owen in 1835. During these years also his secularistic teaching gained such influence among the working classes as to give occasion for the statement in the Westminster fteview (1839) that his principles were the actual creed of a great portion of them. His views on marriage, which were certainly lax, gave just ground for offence. At this period some more communistic experiments were made, of which the most important were that at Ralahine, in the county of Clare, Ireland, and that at Tytherly in Hampshire. It is admitted that the former (1831) was a remarkable success for three and a half years, till the proprietor, having ruined himself by gambling, was obliged to sell out. Tytherly, begun in 1839, was an absolute

failure. By 1846 the only permanent result of Owen's agitation, so zealously carried on by public meetings, pamphlets, periodicals, and occasional treatises, was the co-operative movement, and for the time even that seemed to have utterly collapsed. In his later years Owen became a firm believer in spiritualism. He died at his native town at the age of eighty-seven.

The exposition and criticism of Owen's socialism and of his socialistic experiments belong to the gencral subject (see Socra-

1sM). Robert Owen was essentially a pioneer, whose work and influence it would be unjust to measure by their tangible results, Apart from his socialistic theories, it should, nevertheless, be remembered that he was one of the foremost and most energetic promoters of many movements of acknowledged and endurin

usefulness. He was the founder of infant schools in England; he was the first to introduce reasonably short hours into factory labour, and zealously promoted factory legislation—one of the most needed and most beneficial reforms of the century; and he was the real founder of the co-operative movement. In general education, in sanitary reform, and in his sound and humanitarian views of common life, he was far in advance of his time. Still he had many serious faults; all that was quixotic, crude, and superficial in his views became more prominent in his later years; and by the extravagance of his advocacy of them he did vital injury to the cause he had at heart. In his personal character he was without reproach—frank, benevolent, and straightforward to a fault; and he pursued the altruistic schemcs in which he spent all his means with more earnestness than most men devote to the accumulation of a fortune.

Of R. Owen's numerous works in exposition of his system, the most important are the New View of Society, already mentioned; the Report eommunicated to the Committee on the Poor Law; the Book of the New Moral World; and Revolution in the Mind and Practice of the Human Race, See Life of Robert Owen written by himself, London, 1857, and Threading my Way, Twenty-seven Years of Autobiography, by Robert Dale Owen, his son, London, 1874. There are also Lives of Owen by A. J. Booth (London, 1869) and by W. L. Sargant (London, 1860). For works of a more general eharaeter see G. J. Holyoake, History of Co-operation in England, London,

1875; Reybaud, Etudes sur les réformateurs modernes, Paris, 1856; Adolf Held, Zwei Biicher zur socialen Geschichte Englands, Leipsie, 1881. aks)

OWENSBOROUGH, a city of the United States, capital of Daviess county, Kentucky, on the Ohio, 160 miles below' Louisville. It engages extensively in the manufacture of whisky and the curing of tobacco, and has waggon factories, flour-mills, and foundries. The popula- tion, 6231 in 1880, exceeded 11,000 in 1883.

OWL, the Anglo-Saxon Ule, Swedish Uggla, and German Eule—allallied tothe Latin Ulula, and evidently of imita- tive origin—the general English name for every nocturnal Bird-of-prey,! of which group nearly two hundred species have been recognized. The Owls form a very natural assem- blage, and one about the limits of which no doubt has for a long while existed. Placed by nearly all systematists for many years as a Family of the Order Accipitres (or what- ever may have been the equivalent term used by the particular taxonomers), there has been of late a disposition to regard them as forming a group of higher rank. On many accounts it is plain that they differ from the ordinary diurnal Birds-of-prey, more than the latter do among themselves ; and, though in some respects Owls have a superficial likeness to the GoatsucKERS (vol. x. p. 711), and a resemblance more deeply seated to the GuacHARo (vol. xi. p. 227), even the last has not been made out to have any strong affinity to them. A good deal is therefore to be said for the opinion which would regard the Owls as forming an independent Order, or at any rate Sub-order, Striges. Whatever be the position assigned to the group, its subdivision has always been a fruitful matter of discus- sion, owing to the great resemblance obtaining among all its members, and the existence of safe characters for its division has only lately been at all generally recognized. By the older naturalists, it is true, Owls were divided, as was first done by Willughby, into two sections—one in which all the species exhibit tufts of feathers on the head, the so-called "ears" or "horns," and the second in which the head is not tufted. The artificial and therefore untrustworthy nature of this distinction was shewn by Isidore Geoffroy St-Hilaire (Ann. Sc. Naturelles, xxi. pp. 194-203) in 1830; but he did not do much good in the

1 The poverty of the English language—generally so rich in syhonyms—is here very remarkable. Though four well-known if not common species of Owls are native to Britain, to say nothing of half a dozen others which occur with greater or less frequency, none of them has ever acquired an absolutely individual name, and various prefixes have to be used to distinguish them. In Greece and Italy, Germany and France, almost each indigenous species has had its own particular designation in the vulgar tongue. The English Owlet or Howlet is of course a simple diminutive only.

arrangement of the Owls which he then proposed ; and it was hardly until the publication ten years later of Nitzsch's Pterylographie that rational grounds on which to base a division of the Owls were adduced. It then became inanifest that two very distinct types of pterylosis existed in the group, and further it appeared that certain differ- ences, already partly shewn by Berthold (Beitr. zur Anatomie, pp. 166, 167), of sternal structure coincided with the pterylological distinctions. By degrees other significant differences were pointed out, till, as summed up by Prof. Alphonse Milne-Edwards (Ois. joss. de la France, ii. pp. 474-492), there could no longer be any doubt that the bird known in England as the Screech-Owl or Barn-Owl, with its allies, formed a section which should be most justifiably separated from all the others of the group then known. Space is here wanting to state particularly the pterylological distinctions which will be found described at length in Nitzsch's classical work (English translation, pp. 70, 71), and even the chief osteo- logical distinctions must be only briefly mentioned. These consist in the Screech-Owl section wanting any manubrial process in front of the sternum, which has its broad keel joined to the clavicles united as a furcula, while posteriorly it presents an unbroken outline. In the other section, of which the bird known in England as the Tawny or Brown Owl is the type, there is a manubrial process; the furcula, far from being joined to the keel of the sternum, often consists but of two stylets which do not even meet one another; and the posterior margin of the sternum pre- sents two pairs of projections, one pair on each side, with corresponding fissures between them. Furthermore the Owls of the same section shew another

peculiarity in the bone usually called the tarsus. This is a bony ring or loop bridging the channel in which lies the common extensor tendon of the toes —which does not appear in the Sereech-Owl section any more than in the majority of birds. The subsequent examination by M. Milne-Edwards (Nouv. Arch. du Muséum, ser. 2, i. pp. 185-200) of the skeleton of an Owl known as Phodilus (more correctly Photodilus) badius, hitherto attached to the Screech-Owl section, shews that, though in most of its osteological characters it must be referred to the Tawny Owl section, in several of the particulars mentioned above it resembles the Sereech-Owls, and therefore we are bound to deem it a connecting link between them. The pterylological characters of Photodilus seem not to have been investigated, but it is found to want the singular bony tarsal loop, as well as the manubrial process, while its clavicles are not united into a furcula and do not meet the keel, and the posterior margin of the sternum has processes and fissures like those of the Tawny Owl section. Photodilus having thus to be removed from the Screech-Owl section, Prof. Milne-Edwards has been able to replace it by a new form Heliodilus from Madagascar, described at length by him in M. Grandidier's great work on the natural history of that island (Ocseaux, i. pp. 113-118). The unexpected results thus obtained preach caution in regard to the classification of other Owls, and add to the misgivings that every honest ornithologist must feel as to former attempts to methodize the whole group —misgivings that had already arisen from the great diversity of opinion displayed by previous classifiers, no two of whom seem able to agree. Moreover, the difficulties which beset the study of the Owls are not limited to their respective relations, but extend to their scientific terminology, which has long been in a state so bewildering that nothing but the strictest adherence to the very letter of the laws of nomenclature, which are approved in principle by all but an insignificant number of naturalists, can clear up the confusion into which the matter has been thrown by heed-

attempts very successful.

less or ignorant writers—some of those who are in general most careful to avoid error being not wholly free from blame in this respect.

A few words are therefore here needed on this most unprofitable subject! Under the generic term Strix Linneus placed all the Owls known to him; but Brisson most justifiably divided that genus, and in so doing fixed upon the S. stridula—the aforesaid Tawny Owl—as its type, while under the name of Aso he established a second genus, of which his contemporary's S. otus, afterwards to be mentioned, is the type. Some years later Savigny, who had very peculiar notions on nomenclature, disregard- ing the act of Brisson, chose to regard the Linnwan S. flammea—the Screech-Owl before spoken of—as the type of the genus Strix, which genus he further dissevered, and his example was largely followed until Fleming gave to the Screech-Owl the generic name of Aluco,? by which it had been known for more than three hundred years, and reserved Strix for the Tawny Owl. He thus anticipated Nitzsch, whose editor was probably unacquainted with this fact when he allowed the name Hybris to be conferred on the Sereech-Owl. No doubt inconvenience is caused by changing any general practice ; but, as will have been seen, the practice was not universal, and such inconveni- ence as may arise is not chargeable on those who abide by the law, as it is intended in this article to do. The reader is therefore warned that the word Strix will be here used in what is believed to be the legitimate way, for the genus containing the Strix stridula of Linneeus, while Aluco is retained for that including the S. flammea of the same naturalist.

Except the two main divisions already mentioned, any further arrangement of the Owls must at present be deemed tentative, for the ordinary external characters, to which most systematists trust, are useless if not mislead- ing.? Several systematizers have tried to draw characters from the orifice of the ear, and the parts about it; but hitherto these have not been sufficiently studied to make the If it be true that the predomin- ant organ in any group of animals furnishes for that group the best distinctive characters, we may have some hope of future attempts in this direction,* for we know that few birds have the sense of hearing so highly developed as the Owls, and also that the external ear varies considerably in form in several of the genera which have been examined. Thus in Surma, the Hawk-Owl, and in Vyctea, the Snowy Owl, the external ear is simple in form, and, though pro- portionally larger than in most birds, it possesses no very remarkable peculiarities,—a fact which may be correlated with the diurnal habits of these Owls—natives of the far north, where the summer is a season of

constant daylight, and to effect the capture of prey the eyes are perhaps more employed than the ears.5 In Bubo, the Eagle-Owl, though

1 Jt has been dealt with at greater length in The Ibis for 1876 (pp. 94-105).

2 The word seems to have been the invention of Gaza, the trans- lator of Aristotle, in 1503, and is the Latinized form of the Italian Allocco.

3 It is very much to be regretted that a very interesting form of Owl, Sceloglausx albifacies, peculiar to New Zealand, should be rapidly becoming extinct, without any effort, so far as is known, being made to ascertain its affinities. It would seem to belong to the Strigine section, and is remarkable for its very massive clavicles, that unite by a kind of false joint, which in some examples may possibly be wholly ancylosed, in the median line.

4 This hope is strengthened by the very praiseworthy essay on the Owls of Norway by Herr Collett in the Forhandlinger of Christiania for 1881.

5 But this hypothesis must not be too strongly urged; for in Carine, a more southern form of nocturnal (or at least crepuscular) habits, the external ear is perhaps even more normal. Of course by the ear the real organ of hearing is here meant, not the tuft of feathers often so called in speaking of Owls.

certainly more nocturnal in habit, the external ear, how- ever, has no very remarkable development of conch, which may perhaps be accounted for by the ordinary prey of the bird being the larger rodents, that from their size are more readily seen, and hence the growth of the bird’s auditory organs has not been much stimulated. In Strix (as the name is here used), a form depending greatly on its sense of hearing for the capture of its prey, the ear-conch is much enlarged, and it has, moreover, an elevated flap or operculum. In Asio, containing the lLong-eared and Short-eared Owls of Europe, Asia, and America, the conch is enormously exaggerated, extending in a semicircular direction from the base of the lower mandible to

above the middle of the eye, and is furnished in its whole length with an operculum.! But. what is more extraordinary in this genus is that the entrance to the ear is asymmetrical— the orifice on one side opening downwards and on the other upwards. This curious adaptation is carried still further in the genus WVyctala, containing two or three small species of the Northern hemisphere, in which the asymmetry that in Asio is only skin-deep extends, in a manner very surprising, to several of the bones of the head, as may be seen in the Zoological Society's Proceed- ings (1871, pp. 739-743), and in the large series of figures given by Messrs Baird, Brewer and Ridgway (V. Am. Birds, iii. pp. 97-102).

Among Owls are found birds which vary in length from 5 inches—as Glaucidium cobanense, which is therefore much smaller than a Skylark—to more than 2 feet, a size that is attained by many species. Their plumage, none of the feathers of which possesses an aftershaft, is of the softest kind, rendering their flight almost noiseless. But one of the most characteristic features of this whole group is the ruff, consisting of several rows of small and much- curved feathers with stiff shafts—originating from a fold of the skin, which begins on each side of the base of the beak, runs above the eyes, and passing downwards round and behind the ears turns forward, and ends at the chin— and serving to support the longer feathers of the " disk " or space immediately around the eyes, which extend over it. A considerable number of species of Owls, belonging to various genera, and natives of countries most widely separated, are remarkable for exhibiting two phases of coloration—one in which the prevalent browns have a more or less rusty-red tinge, and the other in which they incline to grey. Another characteristic of nearly all Owls is the reversible property of their outer toes, which are not unfrequently turned at the bird's pleasure quite back- wards. Many forms have the legs and toes thickly clothed to the very claws; others have the toes, and even the tarsi, bare, or only sparsely beset by bristles. Among the bare-legged Owls those of the Indian Ketupa are con- spicuous, and this feature is usually correlated with their fish-catching habits ; but certainly other Owls that are not known to catch fish present much the same character.

Among the multitude of Owls there is only room here to make further mention of a few of the more interesting. First must be noticed the Tawny

Owl—the Strix stridula of Linneus, the type, as has been above said, of the whole group, and especially of the Strigine section as here understood. This is the Syrniwm aluco of some authors, the Chat-huant of the French, the species whose tremulous hooting “tu-whit, to-who,” has been celebrated by Shakespear, and, as well as the plaintive call, “keewick,” of the young after leaving the nest, will be familiar sounds to many readers, for the bird is very generally:distributed throughout most parts of Europe, extending its range through Asia Minor to Palestine, and also to Barbary—but not belonging to the Ethiopian Region or to the eastern half of the Palearctie. It is the largest of the species indigenous to Britain, and is strictly a woodland bird, only occa-

sionally choosing any other place for its nest than a hollow tree. Its food consists almost entirely of small mammals, chiefly rodents ;

1 Figures of these different forms are given by Macgilli Bri Mat oa, ee

OW L

but, though on this account most deserving of protection from al] classes, it is subject to the stupid persecution of the ignorant, and is rapidly declining in numbers.? Its nearest allies in North America are the S. nebuzlosa, with some kindred forms, one of which the S. occidentalis of California and Arizona, is figured below; but none of them seem to have the “merry note” that is uttered by the

As

in A

Np, A S ase \

Sw —

Fie. 1.—Striz occidentalis.

European species. Common to the most northerly forest-tracts of both continents (for, though a slight difference of coloration is observable

between American examples and those from the Old World, it is impossible to consider it specific) is the much larger S. cinerea or S. lapponica, whose iron-grey plumage, delicately mottled with dark brown, and the concentric circles of its facial disks make it one of the most remarkable of the group. Then may be noticed the genus Bubo—containing several species which from their size are usually known as Eagle-Owls. Here the Nearctic and Palearctic forms are sufficiently distinct—the latter, B. ignawus,? the Duc or Grand Duc of the French, ranging over the whole of Europe and Asia north of the Himalayas, while the former, B. virginianus, extends over the whole of North America, A contrast to the generally sombre colour of these birds is shown by the Snowy Owl, Myctea scandiaca, a circumpolar species, and the only one of its genus, which disdains the shelter of forests and braves the most rigorous arctic climate, though compelled to migrate southward in winter when no sustenance is left for it. Its large size and white plumage, more or less mottled with black, distinguish this from every other Owl. Then may be mentioned the birds commonly known in English as " Horned" Owls—the Hibous of the French, belonging to the genus Asio. One, A. otus (the Otus vulgaris of some authors), inhabits woods, and, distin- guished by its long tufts, usually borne erected, would seem to be common to both America and Europe—though experts profess their ability to distinguish between examples from each country. Another species, 4. accipitrinus (the Otus brachyotus of many authors), has much shorter tufts on its head, and they are ia carried depressed so as to escape observation. This is the " Wood- cock-Owl" of English sportsmen, for, though a good many are bred in Great Britain, the majority arrive in autumn from Scandinavia, just about the time that the immigration of Woodcocks occurs. This species frequents heaths, moors, and the open country gene- rally, to the exclusion of woods, and has an enormous geographical range, including not only all Europe, North Africa, and northern Asia, but the whole of America,—reaching also to the Falklands, the Galapagos, and the Sandwich Islands,—for the attempt to

2 All Owls have the habit of casting up the indigestible parts of the food swallowed in the form of pellets, which may often be found in abundance under the Owl-roost, and reveal without any manner of doubt what the prey of the birds has been. 'The result in nearly every case shows the enormous service they render to man in destroy- ing rats and mice. Details of many

observations to this effect are recorded in the Bericht tiber die XIV. Versammlung der Deutschen Ornithologen- Gesellschaft (pp. 80-34).

3 This species bears confinement very well, and propagates freely therein. To it belong the historic Owls of Arundel Castle.

separate specifically examples from those localities only shews that they possess more or less well-defined local races. Commonly od near Asio, but whether really akin to it cannot be stated, is the genus Scops, of which nearly forty species, coming from different parts of the world, have been described; but this number should probably be reduced by one half. The type of the genus, S. giu, the Petit Duc of the French, is a well-known bird in the south of Europe, about as big as a Thrush, with very delicately pencilled plumage, occasionally visiting Britain, emigrating in autumn across the Mediterranean, aud ranging very far to the eastward. Further southward, both in Asia and Africa, it is represented by other species of very similar size, and in the eastern part of North America by S. asio, of which there is a tolerably distinct western form, S. kennicotti, besides several local races. S. asio is one of the Owls that especially exhibits the dimorphism of coloration above mentioned, and it was long before the true state of the case was understood. At first the two forms were thought to be distinct, and then for some time the belief obtained that the ruddy birds were the young of the greyer form which was called S. nevia ; but now the “Red Owl” and the “Mottled Owl” of the older American ornithologists are known to be one species.!_ One of the most remarkable of American Owls is Speotyto cunicularia, the bird that in the northern part of the continent inhabits the burrows of the prairie dog, and in the southern those of the biscacha, where the latter occurs—making holes for itself, says Darwin, where that is not the case,—rattlesuakes being often also joint tenants of the same abodes. The odd association of these animals, interesting as it is, cannot here be more than noticed, for a few words must be said, ere we leave the Owls of this section, on the species which has associations of a very different kind—the bird of Pallas Athene, the emblem of the city to which science and art were so welcome. There can be no doubt, from the many representations on coins and sculptures, as to their subject being the

Carine noctua of modern ornithologists, but those who know the grotesque actions and ludicrous expression of this veritable buffoon of birds can never cease to wonder at its having been seriously selected as the symbol of learning, and can hardly divest themselves of a suspicion that the choice must have been made in the spirit of sarcasm. This Little Owl (for that is its only name —though it is not even the smallest that appears in England), the Chevéche of the French, is spread throughout the greater part of Europe, but it is not a native of Britain. It has a congener in C. brama, a bird well known to all residents in India.

Finally, we have Owls of the second section, those allied to the Screech-Owl, Aluco flammeus, the Effraie? of the French. This,

Mee Malet |

cin ‘

Fia. 2.—Aluco flammeus.

with its discordant scream, its snoring, and its hissing, is far too well known to need description, for it is one of the most widely- spread of birds, and is the Owl that has the greatest geographical Tange, inhabiting almost every country in the world,—Sweden and Norway, America north of lat. 45°, and New Zealand being the principal exceptions. It varies, however, not inconsiderably, both im size and intensity of colour, and several ornithologists have tried

‘See the remarks of Mr Ridgway in the work before quoted (B. N, America, iii. pp. 9, 10), where also response is made to the observations of Mr Allen in the Harvard Bulletin (ii. pp. 338, 339).

Through the dialectic forms Fresaie and Presaie, the origin of the word is easily traced to the Latin prasaga—a bird of bad omen; but It has also been confounded with Orfraie, a name of the OSPREY (vide Pere, DP. 56).

to found on these variations more than half a dozen distinct species. Some, if uot most of them, seem, however, hardly worthy to be considered geographical races, for their differences do not always depend on locality. Mr Sharpe, with much labour and in great detail, has given his reasons (Cat. B. Brit. Muscwm, ii. pp. 291-309 ; and Ornith. Miscellany, i. pp. 269-298; ii. pp. 1-21) for acknowledging four “subspecies” of 4. flammeus, as well as five other species. Of these last, .4. tencbricosus is peculiar to Australia, while 4. nove-hollandiz inhabits also New Guinea, and has a “subspecies,” 4. castanops, found only in Tasmania; a third, A. candidus, has a wide range from Fiji and northern Australia through the Philippines and Formosa to China, Burmah, and India; a fourth, 4. capensis, is peculiar to South Africa; while A. thomensis is said to be confined to the African island of St Thomas. To these may perhaps have to be added a species from New Britain, described by Count Salvadori as Strix aurantia, but it may possibly prove on further investigation not to be an Alucine Owl at all. (A. N.)

OX. See CATTLE.

OXALIC ACID, an organic acid of the formula (COOH),, which, in a general scientific sense, excites our interest chiefly by its almost universal diffusion throughout the vegetable kingdom. ‘Traces of oxalates are contained in the juices of, probably, all plants at certain stages of their growth ; but so are lime-salts, which, in solutions, can coexist with the former only in the presence of free acid. Hence the frequent occurrence in plant-cells of those crystals of oxalates of lime with which all micro-scopists are familiar. In certain alge, if they grow on cal- careous soils, this salt, according to Bracannot, may form as much as one-half of the total dry solids.) Of phanero- gamic tissues, the roots of the officinal kinds of rhubarb may be named as being peculiarly rich in oxalate of lime- crystals. It is perhaps as well to add that the juicy stems of the garden rhubarb, although not free of oxalic, owe their sourness chiefly to malic acid. The strongly sour juices of certain species of Rumex and Acetosella, on the other hand, are exceptionally rich in acid oxalates. The juice of Oxalis Acetosella, when concentrated by evapora-

| tion, deposits on cooling a large crop of crystals of bin-

oxalate of potash. This salt, as an educt from the plant juice named, has been known for some three centuries as “sal acetoselle ” or “salt of sorrel.” Oxalic acid and all soluble oxalates are dangerous poisons, which almost implies that they cannot occur, under normal conditions, in the juices of the higher animals. Yet human urine always contains traces of oxalate of lime, which, when the urine is or becomes alkaline, forms on standing a micro-crystalline deposit. In certain diseased conditions of the system the oxalate is formed more largely, and may be deposited within the bladder in crystals or even develop into calculi.

The discovery of oxalic acid must be credited to Scheele, who obtained it in 1776 by the oxidation of sugar with nitric acid, and called it saccharic acid. In 1784 he proved its identity with the acid of sal acetoselle. Our knowledge of the elementary composition of oxalic acid is the result of the independent labours of Berzelius, Débe- reiner, and Dulong (1814-21).

Its artificial synthesis can be effected in various ways. Thus, for instance, (1) cyanogen, when dissolved in aqueous hydrochloric acid, gradually assimilates 4H,O per N,C, and becomes oxalate of ammonia, C,0,(NH,), (Liebig). Or (2) moist carbonic acid is reduced by potassium to formic acid, CO, + H,O -O=CH,O,, which, of course, assumes the form of potash salt (Kolbe). This latter, when heated beyond its fusing point, breaks up into oxalate and hydrogen, 2CHKO, = H, + C,0,K, (Erlenmeyer). At 350° dry CO, and sodium unite into oxalate C,0,Na, (Drechsel).

Sugar, starch, and many other organic bodies of the “fatty” series, when boiled with nitric acid, yield oxalic acid as a penultimate product of oxidation In this manner oxalic acid used to be produced, industrially, from

starch or molasses ; but this method, though not by any means obsolete, is almost superseded by a new process which we owe to Mr Dale of Manchester.

Mr Dale’s process is founded upon the old observation of Gay-Lussac’s that cellulose, by fusion with caustic potash, is oxidized into oxalate with evolution of (impure) hydrogen. In Mr Dale’s works (at Warrington)

sawdust and wood-shavings do service as cellulose, while a mixed caustic alkali lye of 1:34 to 1°35 specific gravity, containing 1KHO for every 3NaHO, serves as a reagent. Unmixed caustic soda gives no orlittle oxalate. The wood-shavings are soaked in a quantity of lye equal to 30 to 40 per cent. of their weight of dry alkali, and the mixture is evaporated down on iron plates at about 200° C. with constant agita- tion, until it is converted into a homogeneous brown mass completely soluble in water. This mass (which is as yet very poor in oxalate) is then dried up fully at a somewhat lower temperature, and thus converted into a crude oxalate equivalent to 28 to 30 per cent. of its weight of oxalic- acid crystals. Messrs Roberts, Dale, & Co. have come, latterly, to substitute for the iron plates an iron pipe passing slantingly through a heated chamber and provided inside with a revolving screw, which draws in the mixture of wood and alkali below, and conveys it along at such a rate that it comes out above as finished product. The crude oxalate is lixiviated with cold water, when the bulk of the oxalic acid remains as soda salt, while the rest of the alkali passes into solution as, substantially, carbonate. The oxalate, after having been washed with the least suffi- cient quantity of water, is boiled with a dilute milk of lime and thus converted into a precipitate of oxalate of lime, while caustic soda passes in to solution, which is added to the liquors produced in the separation of the oxalate of soda from the surplus alkali. The oxalate of lime is washed and then decomposed by boiling it with three times the calculated amount of dilute sulphuric acid, the sulphate of lime filtered off, and the solution evaporated to crystal- lization. The yield as oxalic acid crystals amounts to 50 to 60 per cent. of the weight of the wood-shavings. The united alkali-liquors are causticized with lime, and thus (apart from the unavoidable losses) the originally employed caustic alkali is recovered in its entirety.

Commercial (oxalic) acid is contaminated chiefly with sulphuric acid and alkali, of which the latter cannot be removed by recrystallization from water, but, according to Stolba, easily and exhaustively by recrystallization from 10 to 15 per cent. hydrochloric acid.

Crystallized oxalic acid forms colourless needles of the composi- tion C,0,H.2H,0. Ht melts at 98° C., and when kept at about this temperature readily loses its crystal-water, but at 110° the dry acid C,O,H, already

begins to volatilize. The latter sublimes most readily at 165° C., without previous fusion, in needles. At higher temperatures it breaks up, more or less completely, into CO, formic acid, CH,0,(or CO+H,O). The crystallized acid dissolves in 10°5 parts of water of 14°°5, also in alcohol. The solution readily neutralizes basic hydrates and carbonates ; in the case of the alkalies and alkaline earths, the point of neutrality to litmus corresponds to the normal salt, 7.¢, to the ratio CO,H : RHO, where R=K, Na, (NH,), 4Ba, &c. The normal salt CO,R com- bines with 1CO,H into‘ binoxalate,” and, in the case of R=K or NH, also with 83CO,H into “ quadroxalate.” Alkaline oxalates are soluble in water—the soda and ammonia salts rather sparingly; of the rest of oxalates, as far as they are normal salts, the majority are insoluble or difficultly soluble in water, and therefore most con- veniently produced, by double decomposition, as precipitates.

Potash Salts. —The normal salt, C,0,K, + H,0, is soluble in 3 parts of water of 16° C. The binoxalate (salt of sorrel) is generally an- hydrous, but occasionally C,0,KH+4H,0, the latter soluble in 26°2 parts of water of 8° C. The elsewhere extinct industry of manufacturing this salt from sorrel-juice survives in the Black Forest. It is used habitually for removing ink and rust-stains from linen, though oxalic acid is better and cheaper. The quadroxalate, C,0,KH +C,0,H, +2H,0, soluble in 20 parts of water at 20° Cz3 often sold as salt of sorrel.

Soda Salts.—The normal salt, C,0,Na,, gencrally forms small

imperfect crystals, soluble in 31°6 parts of water of 18°C. The acid salt, C,0,NaH +H,0, is soluble in 67°6 parts of water at TO™C:

Ammonium Salts.—The normal salt, C,0,(NH,),.+H,0, found native in guano, crystallizes in needles, and is soluble in 28°7 parts of water of 15°C. Itis much used in the laboratory asa most delicate precipitant for lime salts. The binoxalate, C,0,(NH,)H+H,0, dissolves in 16 parts of water of 11°°5. There is a quadroxalate, C,0,(NH,)H + C,0,H, + 2H,0.

Other Salts. —The normal lime salt, as obtained by precipitation of lime salts with alkaline oxalates or oxalic acid, and found in plant cells, is C,0,Ca+3H,O; but 2H,O are easily lost below 110°; the remaining 1H,0 is expelled only above 200°C. Ferrous oxalate, C,0,Fe+2H,0, obtainable by

precipitation of ferrous sulphate with oxalic acid, is a yellow crystalline powder. When heated it breaks up into CO, and finely divided metallic iron, which latter at once burns into red ferric oxide of a state of aggregation which fits it pre-eminently for the polishing of optical glasses. Ferric oxalate dissolves in oxalic acid, the solution, when exposed to the light, giving off CO, with precipitation of ferrous oxalate. Draper recommends it for measuring the chemical in- tensity of light.

Industrially oxalic acid chiefly serves the calico printers as a discharge for certain colours, which, unlike the otherwise equivalent mineral acids, does not attack the tissue. Minor quantitics are used, as solution, for cleaning metallic surfaces. It has been recommended for the metallurgic precipitation of NicKEL (q.1.).

Analysis.—Solid metallic oxalates, when heated, are decomposed without noteworthy climination of carbon. When heated with oil of vitriol they give off the components of the anhydride C,05 as carbonic oxide and carbonic acid gases, without blackening. Oxalate solutions are al by chloride of calcium ; the precipitate (C,0,Ca.#H,O) is insoluble in water, ammonia, ammonia salts, and acetic (though soluble in hydrochloric) acid. Even a mixture of free oxalic acid and gypsum solution deposits oxalate of lime. Oxalic acid is readily oxidized into carbonic acid by the conjoint action of dilute sulphuric acid and binoxide of manganese or permanganate of potash. In the latter case this re- action, even with small quantities, becomes visible by the discharge of the intensely violet colour of the reagent; the change, however, is slow at first; it becomes more and more rapid as thé MnSO, formed increases, and consequently goes on promptly from the first, if ready made MnSO, be added along with the reagent. The ele oa pn test is readily translatable into a titrimetric method for the determination of oxalic acid in solutions. (W. D.)

OXENSTIERNA, AxeEL, Counr or (1583-1654), Swedish statesman, was born at Fané in Upland on the 16th of June 1583. He studied theology at Rostock, Wittenberg, and Jena; and in 1602, having spent some time in visiting German courts, he returned to Sweden to take the oath of allegiance to Charles IX., whose service he entered. In 1606 he was sent as ambassador to the court of Mecklenburg, and in 1609 he became a member

of the Swedish senate. When Gustavus Adolphus succeeded to the throne, in 1611, Oxenstierna was appointed chancellor, and in 1613 he was plenipotentiary in the negotiations for the conclusion of peace between Sweden and Denmark. In 1614 he went with the king to Livonia, and helped to bring about the cessation of hostilities between Sweden and Russia. After the inter- vention of Gustavus in the Thirty Years' War, Oxenstierna was made governor-general of all the districts in Prussia which had been overrun by the Swedes; and, when the Imperialists were preparing to besiege Stralsund, he negotiated with the duke of Pomerania for the substitution of Swedish for Danish troops in the town, going subse- quently to Denmark to obtain the sanction of the Danish king. While Gustavus pushed on to Franconia and Bavaria, Oxenstierna was entrusted with the supreme direction of affairs, both political and military, in the Rhine country, and he took up his headquarters at Mainz. In 1632, when Gustavus fell at the battle of Liitzen, the responsibility for the maintenance of the Protestant cause fell chiefly upon Oxenstierna ; and in one of the greatest crises in the history of the world he displayed splendid courage, discretion, and resource. At a congress held in Heilbronn he was appointed director of the evangelical confederation, and in this capacity he went

——

——

Tel.

OX F—

to France and Holland to secure the aid of these countries against the emperor. On his return he found the Pro- testants in a very desponding mood. The battle of Nérdlingen had been lost; the allies distrusted one another; the troops were dissatisfied and resented any attempt to subject them to strict discipline. Oxenstierna laboured indefatigably to restore the confidence of his party, and to a large extent he succeeded. He then returned, in 1636, to Sweden, where he resigned his exceptional powers and resumed his place in the senate as chancellor of the kingdom. He acted also as one of five guardians of Queen Christina, whom he carefully instructed in what seemed to him the true methods of. administra- tion. Oxenstierna

had the reputation of being one of the wisest statesmen of his age, and during his absence from his country he had drawn up the scheme of a system of government which had been accepted in 1634 by the Swedish estates. Abroad he upheld vigorously the honour of Sweden, and at home he maintained strict economy in public expenditure, while encouraging, according to the ideas of his time, the development of industry and the arts. In 1645, when he went back to Sweden after taking part in the negotiations with Denmark at Brémsebro, he was raised to the rank of count by the ueen. He died on the 28th of August 1654.

See Lundblad, Svensk Plutarch, 1824.

OXFORD, or Oxon, an inland county of England, is bounded N.E. *y Northamptonshire, N.W. by Warwick- shire, W. by Gloucestershire, 8.S.W. and 8.E. by Berks, and E. by Bucks. In shape it is very irregular, its breadth varying from about 7 to 274 miles, and its greatest length being about 52 miles. The total area is 483,621 acres, or about 756 square miles, The character of the scenery varies greatly in different districts. The Chiltern Hills cross the south-western extremity of the county from north- east to south-west. On the west side of the ridge Nettle- bed Hill expands into Nettlebed Common, an extensive table-land, reaching at some points nearly 700 feet above sea-level. The Chiltern district is supposed to have been at one time covered by forest, and there are still many fine beeches, as well as oak and ash trees, although for the most part the district is now utilized as’ a sheep- walk or as arable land. Camden mentions the woods of Oxfordshire as a special feature of the county. The forest of Wychwood extended to 3735 acres of forest proper. In the district of Staunton St John there are considerable traces of natural woodland. The most extensive of the recent plantations is the great belt at Blenheim. Imme- diately to the east of the city of Oxford a range of hills stretches between the valleys of the Thames and Cherwell, the highest point being Shotover Hill, 560 feet. In the central district the surface is less varied, and along the tivers there are extensive tracts of flat land, but the finely cultivated fields and the abundance of wood lend an aspect of richness to the landscape. The northern part of the county is flat and bare, its bleakness and monotony being mereased in some districts by the stone fences. Wych- wood has been recently disafforested by statute.

Oxfordshire abounds in streams and watercourses, the majority of which belong to the basin of the Thames, Which skirts the whole southern border of the county, forming for the most part of its course the boundary with Berks, In the earlier part of its course it is called the Isis. Before reaching the city of Oxford it receives the Windrush, and the united waters of the Evenlode and Glyme. _ It then divides into- various channels, but these Soon unite, and the river flowing round the city receives the united streams of the Cherwell and the Ray, and passes south-east to Dorchester, where it is joined by the Thame. From this point it is called the Thames. The

Windrush and Evenlode both flow south-east from Gloucestershire ; the Cherwell traverses the whole length of the county south from Northamptonshire; and the Thame crosses its south-east corner from Bucks. The Thames is navigable for small craft to Gloucestershire, and for vessels of considerable burden to Oxford. The Oxford Canal, 91 miles long, begun in 1769 and finished in 1790, enters the north-eastern extremity of the county near Claydon, and following the course of the Cherwell passes south to the city of Oxford.

Geology.—The low ground in the north-west, along the vale of Moreton, on the banks of the Cherwell as far as Steeple Aston, and along the banks of the Evenlode, is occupied by the blue clays of the Lower Lias, the higher regions being occupied by the Middle Lias. The Lower Lias contains beds of hard shelly limestone called Banbury marble, which is worked into chimneypieces; and associ- ated with the blue limestone of the Middle Lias there is a valuable deposit of brown hematite iron which is largely worked at Adderbury near Banbury, the total quantity obtained in 1882 being 8614 tons, valued at £1507. At one time the marlstone was covered by the Upper Lias clays, but these are now found only in isolated strips and patches. Beds of Oolite, called Northampton Sands, rest on the higher ridges above the Upper Lias, and the Great Oolite is exposed on both sides of the Evenlode and extensively quarried for building purposes, the upper beds forming also a white limestone containing numerous fossils. Forest marble occupies the greater part of Wychwood Forest, Blenheim Park, and adjoining regions. A wide extent of flat uninteresting country in the south-west, stretching as far

east as the city of Oxford, belongs to the Oxford clay. Coral rag, Kimmeridge clay, and white limestone occur at different places in the neighbourhood of the Thames. There are also various outliers of Upper and Lower Green- sand. At the junction of the Chalk with the Greensand there is a line of springs which have determined the sites of numerous villages. Chalk forms the ridges of the Chil- tern Hills, and Upper Chalk with flint extends eastward a considerable distance beyond them. In the northern and eastern districts there are large accumulations of drift along all the old river valleys; anda considerable breadth of flat country on the banks of the Thames and Cherwell is occupied by alluvial deposits. Ochre of remarkably fine quality is obtained from Shotover Hill.

Climate, Soil, and Agricultuwre.—Tho climate is salubrious and dry, but generally coldcr than the other southern districts of Kng- land, especially in the bleak and exposed regions of the Chiltcrns. Crops are Jatcr in the uplands than in more northerly situations at a lower clevation. Agriculture is in a fairly advanced condition, but the possibilities of improvement are not by any means ex- hausted, as the soil is on the whole above the avcrage in fertility. In the northern districts there is a strong yet friable loam, well adapted for all kinds of crops. The centre of the county is occupied for the most part by a good friable but not so rich soil, formed of decomposed sandstone, chalk, and limestone. A large district in the south-cast is occupied by the chalk of the Chiltern Hills, at one time covered by a forest of beech, but now partly arable and partly used as sheep-walks. The remainder of the county is occupied by a variety of miscellancous soils ranging from coarse sand to heavy tenacious clay, and occasionally very seeding to the agricultural returns of 1888, as many as 417,509 acres, or about eight-ninths of the total of the county, were under cultivation, corn crops occupying 152,437 acres, green crops 52,451, rotation grasses 44,472, and permanent pasture 153,898. Wheatand barley, with 51,796 acres and 47,611 acres respectively, occupy the largest areas among corn crops, and oats and beans come next with 31,771 and 14,389. Potatoes are not much grown, but turnips occupy as many as 34,618 acres. The most common course of crops on lighter soils is a four years’ rotation, somctimes lengthened to six years with pease, oats, or similar crops. On heavier soils the course is first turnips or other roots, second barley or oats, third threo or morc years of clover and grass seed, fourth wheat, and finally beans. Along

the smaller strcams there are very rich meadows for grazing, but those on the Thames and Cherwell are subject to floods. On the

J4

hills there are extensive sheep pastures. Horses in 1883 nuinbered 17,454, of which 13,716 were used solely for purposcs of agriculture. The number of cattle was 50,209, of which 16,914 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf. The dairy system prevails in many places, but the milk is manufactured into butter, little checse being made. The improved shorthorn is the most common breed, but Alderney and Devonshire cows are largely kept. Sheep numbered as many as 270,288, of which 157,248 were one year old and upwards, Southdowns are kept on the lower grounds, and Leicesters and Cotswolds on the hills. Pigs in 1883 numbered 44,682, the county being famous for its ‘‘ brawn.”

According to the latest return, the land was divided among 10,177 proprietors, possessing 452,232 acres, at an annual value of £1,073,246, an average per acre of about £2, 7s. Of the owners, 6838 possessed less than one acre, and the following 10 upwards of 5000 acres, viz., the duke of Marlborough, 21,945; earl of Ducie, 8799 ; earl of Abingdon, 8174; M. P. W. Boulton, 7946; Sir H. W. Dashwood, 7515 ; earl of Jersey, 7048 ; Edward W. Harcourt, 5721; earl of Macclesfield, 5491; Viscount Dillon, 5444 ; and Lord F. G. Churchhill, 5352. Upwards of 30,000 acres were held by various colleges of Oxford, the largest owner being Christ Church, 4837 acres.

Manufactures.—Blankets are manufactured at Witney, and tweeds, girths, and horsecloths at Chipping Norton. There are paper mills at Hampton-Gay, Shiplake, Sandford-on-Thames, Wool- vercot,and Eynshain. Agricultural implements and portable engines are made at Banbury, and gloves at Woodstock, where the polished steel work has long ago ceased. A large number of women and girls are employed in several of the towns and villages in the lace manufacture,

Railways.—The county is traverscd by several branches of the Great Western, which skirts its borders, and by the East Gloucester- shire and the London and North-Western Railways.

Administration and Population.—Oxfordshire comprises fourteen hundreds, the municipal boroughs of Banbury (3600) and Chipping Norton (4167), the greater part of the city of Oxford, of nae the remainder is in Berkshire, and a small portion of the municipal borough of Abingdon, of which the remainder is also in Berkshire. It has one court of quarter sessions, and is divided into ten petty and special sessional divisions. The boroughs of Abingdon and Banbury and the city of Oxford have commissions of the peace and separate courts of quarter sessions. For parliamentary purposes the county is not divided; it returns three members, having previous to the Reform Act of 1832 returned only two. The borough of Woodstock returns one member ; and there are parts of four other boroughs within the county, Oxford city returning two members, and Abingdon, Banbury, and Wallingford one each. The uni- versity of Oxford also returns two members. The county contains 292 civil parishes, with parts ofseven others. It is almost entirely in the diocese of Oxford. The population in 1801 was 111,977, which by 1841 had increased to 163,148, by 1851 to 170,439, by 1871 to 177,975, and by 1881 to 179,559, of whom 88,025 were males and 91,534 females. The average number of persons to an acre was 0°37, and of acres to a person 2°69.

History and Antiquities.—At the Roman invasion the district was inhabited by the Dobuni. To this carly British period probably belong the circle of stones and cromlech near Chipping Norton, the cromlech called the ‘‘ Hoarstone” at Enstone, and the scattered stones called the Devil’s Quoits at Stanton-Harcourt. Icknield Street crossed the centre of the county from Goring in the south- west to Chinnor in the north-east, and joined Watling Street in Northamptonshire. Akeman Strect crossed the county from east to west, entering it from Bucks at Ambrosden, and passing through Chesterton, Kirtlington, Blenheim Park, Stonesfield, and Asthall to Gloucestershire. Between Mongewell and Nuffield there is a vallum with embankment 2% miles in length called Grimes Dyke or Devil’s Ditch; and there are remains of another with the same name between the Glyme and the Evenlode near Ditchley. Traces still exist of Roman and British camps, and on the east side of the Cotswolds the square and the round camps lie together in pairs. Numerous Roman coins have been found at Dorchester, and tes- selated pavements at Great Tew and Stonesfield. Fora long time Oxford was the residence of the monarchs of Mercia. Cuthred of Wessex in

752 disowned the overlordship of Ethelbald of Mercia, whom he defeated at Burford. From this time a portion of Oxford- shire seems to have been subject to Wessex, but Offa of Mercia inflicted in 779 a severe defeat on the West Saxons under Cyne- wulf, after which Oxfordshire probably became Mercian. ‘The district of Oxford was frequently the scene of conflict during the long contests between the Saxons and the Danes, the latter of whom reduced the city of Oxford four times to ashes, and in the 11th century occupied nearly the whole region. In 1387 the insurgent nobles defeated the earl of Oxford at Radcot Bridge near Bampton. In 1469 the farmers and peasants of Yorkshire, to the number of 15,000, under the leadership of Robin of Redesdale, marched to Banbury, and defeated and captured the earl of Pembroke at Danes Moor on the borders of Oxford. During the civil wars the county

OR On PD

was frequently entered by the armies both of the Parliament and the king, the morc important incidents being the seizing of Oxford, Banbury, and Broughton by the Royalists ; the assembling of the adherents of the king at the city of Oxford in 1644; the capture of the city by Fairfax in 1646; the surprise of the Parliamentarians by Rupert at Caversham; their repulse at Chalgrove Field, where Hampden received his death-wound ; and the defeat of the Royalist forces by Cromwell at Islip Bridge.

Some portions still remain of the old Norman castle at Oxford; there are traces of a moat at Banbury; of the castle at Bampton, the seat of Aylmer de Valence in 1313, there are a chamber and other fragments; and Broughton Castle is a good moated house of various periods. Among old mansions, mention may be made of Shirburn Castle, Mapledurham House, Chastleton House, Rousham Park, Crowsley Park, Hardwick House, Shipton Court, Stonor Park, Stanton-Harcourt Manor Housc, and Wroxton Abbey. In regard to Burford Priory, the High Lodge at Blenheim Park, and the old manor houses of Holton and Minster Lovell, the interest is chiefly historical. The most interesting churches, in addition to those in the city of Oxford, are Iffley, Norman, one of the finest specimens of early ecclesiastical architecture in England; Thame, with tombs and brasses ; Bampton, mostly transitional from Early English and Decorated;

Kidlington, Decorated, with a chancel and tower of earlier date ; Ewelme, Perpendicular ; Adderbury, with a chancel built by William of Wykcham,; Bloxham, with spire said to have been erected by Wolsey; Burford, Norman and later; Chipping Norton, with brasses of the 14th century; Dor- chester, once an abbey church; Stanton-Harcourt, with Early English chancel; Witney, Early English and Decorated, with Norman doorway. Among the religious foundations in addition to those in the city were a college and hospital at Banbury ; an abbey of Austin canons at Bicester; a Cistercian abbey at Bruern; a hospital at Burford; an Austin cell at Caversham; an alien priory at Charlton-on-Otmoor ; a Gilbertine priory at Clattcrcote; an alien priory of Black monks at Coggs; an Austin priory at Cold Norton ; a hospital at Crowmarsh ; a priory of Austin canons at Dorchester ; a hospital at Ewelme ; a Benedictine abbey at Eyns- ham; a priory of Austin nuns at Goring ; a preceptory at Gosford; a Benedictine house at Milton; an alien priory at Minster Lovell; an abbey of Austin canons at Osney; a preccptory at Sandford-on- Thames; a Cistercian abbey at Thame ; an establishment of tho Mathurins at Tuffield; a hospital at Woodstock ; and a house of Austin canons at Wroxton. There was a bishopric at Dorchester as a West Saxon see from 684 to 705, which was restored towards the close of the 9th century as a Mercian sec. The bishopric was transferred to Lincoln in 1067, from which Oxfordshire was separated and erected into a seein 1545. The diocese was enlarged by the addition of Berks in 1836 and of Bucks in 1846.

See Plot, Natural History of Oxfordshire, 1677; Walker, Flora of Oxfordshire, 1833 ; Skelton, Antiquities of Oxfordshire, 1823 ; Domesday Book Facsimile, 1862;

Davenport, Lords Lieutenant and High Sheriffs of Oxford, 1868; Id., Oxford- shire Annals, 1869; Phillips, Geology of Oxford and the Thames Valley, 1871.

OXFORD, the county town of Oxfordshire, a cathedral city, a municipal and parliamentary borough, and the seat of a famous university, is situated at a distance of 45 miles west-north-west from London, in the centre of the south midland district. It lies for the most part on a low ridge between the rivers Thames (locally called the Isis) and Cherwell, immediately above

their junction. The soil is gravel lying over extensive beds of Oxford clay. From some points of view the city seems to be surrounded with hills, a line of which runs from Wytham Hill (539 feet) to Cumnor Hurst (515 feet) and Stonesheath (535 feet) on the west of the, Thames valley, while on the east Headington Mill approaches still closer, with Shotover (560 feet) behind it. The river bed is about 180 feet above sea-level. Both the Thames and Cherwell valleys are liable to floods, especially in winter and spring.

University and City Buldings.—The view of the city, whether from the Abingdon road and Hinksey Hills, or from the old approach from London by Headington, or from the top of the Radcliffe, is a sight not to be forgotten. The towers and spires, numerous and yet varied in character, the quadrangles old and new with their profusion of carved stonework, the absence of large factories and tall chimneys, the groves and avenues of trees, the quiet college gardens, the well-watered valleys and encircling hills—all these combine to make Oxford the fairest city in England. The first place in importance as well as grandeur is taken by the buildings of the university, which will be briefly described in order.

ro

“‘inity Versity. ‘ool. School, immediately be-

~hmo-

O48 © F D

First among the institutions ranks the Bodleian Library (see LrprariEs, vol. xiv. p. 519). This noble home of study consists in the first place of the quadrangle once known as the “Schools ”—containing a Jacobean gateway tower, erected 1613-18, which exemplifies the so-called five orders of architecture—and the upper part of an H-shaped building immediately adjoining. In this older part the manuscripts and most of the printed books are preserved ; the fabric of the central part of the H dates from the 15th century, when it housed the library given by Humphrey, duke of Gloucester; while the contents and fittings, even to the readers’ seats, have been hardly altered since the days of Charles I. The present library, founded by Sir Thomas Bodley in 1602, has since 1610 had the right to receive a copy of

every book published in the United Kingdom, and its growth has been accelerated by dona-

95

It contains models, ethnographical collections, English and Egyptian antiquities, and miscellaneous curiosities. The last and not the least of this central group of university

buildings is the church of St Mary the Virgin in the High St Mary’s.

Street, which derives peculiar interest from its long connexion with academic history. Here were held the disputations preparatory to a degree; here, time out of mind, the university sermons have been preached ; and the north-east corner is the ancient seat of the Houses of Convocation and Congregation. Round it were the earliest lecture-rooms, and its bell was the signal for the gathering of the students, as St Martin’s for the townsmen. It has memories too of Wickliffe, of Cranmer, Latimer, and Ridley, of Laud, of Newman, and of Pusey. The tower and spire, of which the height is about 190 feet, date from 1400, the chancel and nave from the succeeding century. The

tions from Selden, Rawlinson, Malone, Gough, Douce, and others. The modern books TH danke : are contained in the ad- jacent circular building known as the “Camera Bodleiana” or “Radcliffe,” built 1737-49 by James|_ ¥§ Gibbs with money left by |”¥ Dr Radcliffe to erect and endow a scientific library. The Radcliffe Library pro- per was removed in 1861 |?24 to the New Museum. The Eg height of the dome is 140 feet. The Bodleian at pre- sent gives a home to the Pomfret and Arundel mar- bles, including the famous Parian Chronicle, to anum- ber of models and pictures, to the Hope collection of 200,000 engraved por- traits, and in the tower to the archives of the uni- The Divinity

es

low the older reading- |® room of the Bodleian, |° with its beautiful roof and |« g pendants of carved Caen |=_—=mai

stone, was finished in 1480, and is still the finest rom in Oxford. The Proscholium, a rare ex- ample of an original am- bulatory, adjoins it on the east, and the Convocation House on the west. To the north of these is the Sheldonian Theatre, built at the expense of Archbishop Sheldon from the designs of Sir Christopher Wren, and opened in 1669. The annual Act or "Enezenia," a commemoration of benefactors, accom- panied by the recitation of prize compositions and the conferment of honorary degrees, has almost invariably been held in this building. It contained also the University Press from 1669 until, in 1713, the Clarendon Building, a conspicuous object in Broad Street, was erected to contain the growing establishment, which was finally moved in 1830 to the present Clarendon Press; the Building is now used for university offices. The Ashmolean Museum, which also faces Broad Street, is an unpretentious edifice, the first public museum of curiosities in the kingdom,—founded by Elias Ashmole, and opened in 1683. The nucleus was formed

design of the porch was the ground of one of the articles

ee A Be

pouTH EXPEC NOAD

|

Ee S? @reegq Stnaes \ g oe: st

Plan of Oxford.

in the impeachment of Laud. Farther down on the south New side of the High Street (the curve of which, lined with Schools.

colleges and churches in its course from the centre of the city at Carfax, leads with beautiful effect to Magdalen tower and bridge) is an extensive building completed in 1882, known as the New Examination Schools, on the site of the old Angel Hotel. The architect was Mr T. G. Jackson, the style Jacobean Gothic. The size and elaborate decoration of the rooms, which form three sides of an oblong quadrangle with an entrance hall

opening on the street, well adapt them for the lighter as well as the graver uses of the university. Farther on, and close to

the Cherwell, is the Botanic Garden, the first of its kind in Botanic England, opened in 1683, the design having been supplied Garden.

by Inigo Jones. The study of plants is unfortunately carried on at a great distance from the home of the other

branches of natural history and science, the New Museum, New

by the collections of John Tradescant, and not till lately which was built between 1855 and 1860 in the south-west Museum.

has the museum been made to serve a scientific purpose.

Obser- vatory.

Claren- don Press.

Taylor Building.

All Souls.

Balliol.

corner of the Park. The architects were Deane and Woodward, and the cost about £150,000. In it are gathered the numerous scientific collections of the uni- versity, from the time of Tradescant and Ashmole to that of the munificent donations of Mr Hope. The general plan isa central hall covered by a glass roof resting on Iron columns. The lecture-rooms and Radcliffe Library surround this on both floors. The chief adjuncts to this building are to the south-west a laboratory, an imitation of the shape of the Glastonbury Kitchen, to the south a chemical laboratory, and to the north-west the Clarendon laboratory of physical science. Ata short distance to the east in the Park is the University Observatory (1873), consisting of two dome-shaped buildings connected by lecture-rooms (see OBSERVATORY). The Clarendon Press in Walton Street is probably the best appointed of provincial establishments. Founded partly with the profits arising from the copyright of Clarendon’s History of the Rebellion, the Press was for long, as we have seen, established in the Clarendon Building. Of the present classical building, completed from Robertson’s designs in 1830, the chief

part forms a large quadrangle. The south side is entirely devoted to the printing of Bibles and prayer-books. All the subsidiary processes of type-founding, stereotyping, clectrotyping, and the like are done at the Press, and the paper is supplied from the University Mills at Wolvercote. Printing in Oxford dates from “1468” (1478%), but ceased after 1486 until 1585, except in 1517, 1518, and 1519. The first university printer was Joseph Barnes, in 1585. The Press is to a large extent a commercial firm, in which the university has a preponderating influence, as well as prior claims in the case of its own works. It is managed by the partners, and governed by eleven dele- gates. Returning towards the centre of the city by St Giles’s, we pass on the right the Taylor Building, partly devoted to the university gallery of pictures, which con- tains more than two hundred and seventy sketches and drawings by Michelangelo and Raphael, besides a Turner col- lection and individual paintings of interest. The rest of the building is divided between the Ruskin School of Drawing and the Taylor Library, which consists chiefly of books in modern European languages. The plan and architecture is Grecian, designed by Cockerell, and completed in 1849. Close by is the Martyrs’ Memorial (1841), commemor- ating the burning of Cranmer, Latimer, and Ridley. It resembles in shape the Eleanor crosses, and is 73 feet in height ; it was the first work which brought Sir George Gilbert Scott into notice.

The colleges may now be described, and for convenience of reference in alphabetical order (see also UNIVERSITIES). All Souls College (Collegiwm Omnium Animarum) occupies a central position, with fronts to Radcliffe Square and the High Street. The chief points of interest are the magnifi- cent reredos in the chapel, coeval with the college, but lost sight of since the Reformation until discovered and restored in 1872-76; the Codrington Library, chiefly of works on jurisprudence; and the turrets (1720) designed by Hawksmoor. The west front is due to Sir Christopher Wren. Founded in 1437 by Archbishop Chichele, with sixteen law fellows out of a foundation of forty, the college has always had a legal character which, combined with an almost entire absence of undergraduates, sufficiently marks it off from all the others. ‘The name records the ancient duty of praying for all who fell in the French wars of the early 15th century. Balliol College, at present the largest in numbers, is also among the oldest. In 1282 the Lady Dervorgilla, widow of John de Balliol, gave effect to his

wishes by issuing statutes to a body of students in Oxford who two years later settled on the present site of the college. The buildings are diverse in

OXFORD

style and date, the two most striking being the newest, the chapel built in 1856-57, in modern Gothic, by Butterfield, and the handsome hall erected by Waterhouge \ in 1876. The King's Hall and College of Brasenose pn… (Collegium Aenei Nast) is the combined work of William nos, _ Smith, bishop of Lincoln, and Sir Richard Sutton. The front quadrangle is among the most regular and, taken in connexion with the Radcliffe and St Mary's church, among the most picturesque in Oxford, remaining exactly as it was built at the foundation of the college in 1509, except that the third story was added, as in several other colleges, in the time of James J. The library and chapel date from the Restoration ; the roof of the latter shows some rich wooden fan-tracery. The name is that of one of the old halls absorbed into the new foundation, and probably signifies brew-house (from bracinum, malt, and ~~house), but is popularly connected with a brazen knocker above the gate, said to have been brought from Stamford after the migration of the university thither in 1334; it is however, first found in the 13th century. Christ Church qiyis (Aides Christe), the greatest and most imposing college, Chun | and projected on a still larger scale as Cardinal College by its first founder, Wolsey, was established by Henry VIII, in 1525. It is of a peculiar dual character, the cathedral being wholly within its precincts, and partly used as the chapel of the house, while the cathedral chapter shares in the government of the whole society. The dean presides over both institutions. The lower part of the great gate~~ way known as Tom Tower is Wolsey's design, the upper and incongruous part is by Wren; the large bell, weighing 7 tons 12 cwts., daily gives the signal for closing all the college gates by one hundred and one strokes at 9.5 p.M. The chief quadrangle, measuring 264 feet by 261 feet, was designed to have cloisters. The present classical buildings of Peckwater quadrangle are not of earlier date than 1705; the library on the south side was built in 1716-61. The latter contains valuable pictures and engravings not yet sufficiently known, as well as extensive collections of books. The hall (built in 1529), from its size (115 feet by 40 feet), the carving of the oak roof, the long lines of portraits, and the beauty of the entrance staircase, is one of the sights of Oxford. The

meadow buildings were erected in 1862-66. It is commonly said that the three great English religious revivals sprang from Christ Church, Wickliffe having been warden of Canterbury Hall, now part of the house, John Wesley a member of the college, and Pusey a canon. Corpus Christi College was founded in 1516 by Bishop Oorp Richard Fox, who expressly provided for the study of Greek and Latin; nor have classical traditions ever left | the ‘garden of bees,” as the first statutes term it. The chief ornament of the college is the library, which is rich in illuminated and early English MSS., and in early printed books. Exeter College may be said to have been founded Exet (as Stapeldon Hall) in 1314, by Walter de Stapeldon, bishop of Exeter; but Sir William Petre in 1566 largely added to the original endowment. Most of the buildings date from the present century; the chapel, the propor- tions of which resemble those of the Sainte Chapelle at Paris, was built in 1856-59 by Sir G. Gilbert Scott, the hall in 1818, the Broad Street front in 1855-58. The secluded gardens are beautifully situated beneath the shadow of the Divinity School and Bodleian. Hertford Hert

College, founded in 1874, is on a site of old and varied history. From the 13th century until 1740 it was occupied by Hart or Hertford Hall; at the latter date Dr Richard Newton refounded the hall with special statutes of his own framing as Hertford College. In 1822 the society of Magdalen Hall, after the fire at their buildings near Magdalen College, migrated thither, and finally the

om

hall was merged in the new college which owes its existence to the munificence of Mr TT. C. Baring. The Welsh College, Jesus, dates from 1571, having been founded by Dr Hugh Price. Sir Leoline Jenkins, principal at the Restoration, was a conspicuous benefactor. The present buildings are of various dates. The direct connexion with the Principality extends to a moiety of the fellows and a majority of the scholars. Keble College is a testimony to the wide-felt reverence for the character and principles of the Rev. John Keble, who died in 1866. In his memory the college was founded with a special view to economical life and Christian training, based on the principles of the Church of England. Since its opening in 1870 its growth

has been continuous. The buildings are the design of Keble's friend Butterfield ; the richly ornamented chapel, the gift of Mr William Gibbs, was completed in 1876, and the library and hall in 1878. The style is Italian Gothic, the material to a large extent red brick relieved by white stone, and in the chapel by marble and mosaics. Bishop Richard Flemmyng founded

. Lincoln College in 1427, with the object, it is believed, of

opposing the doctrines of Wickliffe. Like Exeter and Jesus it boasts a second founder in Thomas de Rotherham, also bishop of Lincoln, in 1478. The library is of consider- able value, both for MSS. and books. The painted windows in the chapel were procured from Italy in the 15th century. Magdalen College is the most beautiful and the most complete in plan of all the colleges. The extensive water-walks in the Cherwell meadows, the deer park, the cloisters with their ivy-grown walls and quaint emblematic sculptures, the rich new buildings of pure Gothic, and, above all, the tower, combine in this conspicuous result. William Patten, better known as William of Waynflete, bishop of Winchester, established the college in 1456 for a president, forty fellows, and thirty scholars with chaplains and a full choir. The cloister quadrangle was first built in 1473, and the chapel in 1474-80; the latter has a decorated interior, an altarpiece of Christ bearing the Cross similar to that in Bolton Abbey, and painted windows. The tower, of exquisite proportions and harmony of detail, was commenced in 1492, and reached its full height of 145 feet in 1505 ; it stood fora few years isolated asa campanile. The custom of singing a hymn on the top at 5 A.M. on May-day has been kept up by the choir since the time of Henry VII. The meadow buildings date from 1733. The muniments and library are valuable, the former containing some 14,000 deeds, chiefly of religious houses suppressed at the Reformation. The high-handed attempt of James II. to force a president

'on the college in 1688 is matter of history. Merton

College is in a very definite sense the oldest ; the earliest extant statutes were given in 1264 by Walter de Merton, and before 1274 it was settled in Oxford, The statutes were a- model for all the more ancient colleges both in Oxford and Cambridge. The founder's special intention was to benefit the order of secular priests, and the first century of his society was more

prolific of great names than any similar period in any college. The fine chapel, which is also the parish church of St John the Baptist, rose gradually between 1330 and 1450, the tower belonging to the later part. The hall, of the 14th century, was thoroughly restored in 1872. The library, built about 1349, is the oldest existing library in England. To the east lie the quiet well-wooded gardens, still bounded on two sides by the city wall. New College, or more pro- perly the college of St Mary Winton, is the magnificent foundation of William of Wykeham, who closely connected it with his other great work Winchester School. Its name 18 still significant, for the first statutes marked a new departure, in the adaptation of monastic buildings and

rules to the requirements of a less fettered body of students ; and they, like those of Merton, were imitated by succeeding societies. The foundation-stone was laid in 1380, and the hall, chapel, and front quadrangle are of that period, except that the third story of the latter was added in 1674. The chapel is noteworthy for the west window, designed by Sir Joshua Reynolds, and the Flemish windows on the south side; the roof was renewed in 1880. The tower is built on one of the bastions of the city wall, and faces the new buildings in Holywell Street, erected in 1872-75, The gardens and cloisters are among _ the most picturesque sights of Oxford, the former encom- passed on the north and east by the city wall, still almost perfect. Oriel College was founded by Adam de Brome Oriel. in 1324, and reconstituted by Edward II. in 1326. The present buildings chiefly date from the first half of the 17th century. The Tractarian movement is closely connected with the college of Newman and Keble. Pembroke College (1624) derives its name from the Pem- chancellor of the university at the time when it was broke established by Richard Wightwick, partly by means of a legacy from Thomas Tesdale. The library contains many memorials of Dr Johnson, who was a member of the college. Queen’s College, so called from its first patroness, Queen’s. Queen Philippa, was founded in 1340 by Robert de Eglesfield, whose name is commemorated yearly in the custom of presenting a needle and thread (“aiguille et fil,” a rebus) to each fellow on New-Year’s Day. The present buildings are not older than the Restoration, while the front dates from the middle of the last century, and the west part of the front quadrangle was rebuilt after a disastrous fire in 1778. The interior of the chapel, which is classical in style, with an apse,

exhibits some fine wood- carving and windows. Queen’s possesses the largest and most valuable collegiate library of printed books, chiefly owing to the munificence of Bishop Barlow in 1691 and of Dr Robert Mason in 1841. On Christmas Day a boar’s head is brought into the hall to the accompaniment of an ancient carol. St John the Baptist’s College was the St John’s. work of Sir Thomas White, a London merchant, in June 1555. Archbishop Laud was closely connected with it, and built, almost entirely at his own expense, the second quadrangle, including the library ; his body rests within the college. The chapel and other parts of the buildings belonged to the earlier foundation of St Bernard’s College. The large gardens are skilfully laid out in alternate lawns and groves. ‘Trinity College, founded in February 1555 Trinity. by Sir Thomas Pope, was the first post-Reformation college and the first established by a layman. The library is the original one of Durham College, in which Richard de Bury’s books were deposited in the 14th century. The gardens are extensive, including a fine lime-tree avenue. University College, the proper title of which is the Great Uni- Hall of the University (Collegium Magne Aulx Universi- Vesity. tatis), is generally accounted the oldest college, although its connexion with Alfred is wholly legendary. It received the first endowment given to students at Oxford in 1249 from William of Durham, but its first statutes date from 1280, and its tenure of the present site from about 1340. None of the present buildings are older than the 17th century. The detached library was built in 1860. Wadham College was founded in 1610 by Dorothy Wadham. Wadham, in pursuance of the designs of her husband Nicholas, who died in 1609. The college buildings, made of exceptionally firm stone, have been less altered than those of any other college. The chapel exhibits a surpris- ingly pure Gothic style considering its known date, the early part of the 17th century. The meetings held in this college after the Restoration by Dr Wilkins, Bishop Sprat, Sir Christopher Wren, and others directly led to the institu-

Wor- cester.

Halls.

City build- ings,

Cathe- dral,

tion of the Royal Society. The gardens lie to the north and east. Worcester College, which has recently cele- brated the sexcentenary of its first building in 1283 as Gloucester Hall, was at first a place of study for Benedictines from all parts of the country, until it was dissolved at the Reformation, when the buildings passed to the see of Oxford. In 1560 the founder of St John's College reopened it as St John the Baptist's Hall, but after changing fortunes, and an attempt in 1689 to form it into a college for students of the Greek Church, it came in 1714 into the hands of the trustees of Sir Thomas Cookes, who founded the present college. The garden front still retains the antique style of Gloucester Hall, looking over the extensive gardens and pond. 'The other buildings rose at various periods in the 18th century, while the splendid interior decoration of the chapel, with its profusion of marble, inlaid wood, and painted panel-work, designed by Burgess, was conipleted in 1870. ;

Until Laud's time the number of private halls was con- siderable; by him five only were allowed to survive:— Magdalen Hall, now merged in Hertford College; St Mary Hall, founded in 1333, now destined to be absorbed into Oriel, as New Inn Hall into Balliol, and St Alban

'-Hall into Merton; and St Edmund Hall, which, though

closely connected with Queen's College, is likely to maintain a separate existence.

The public buildings of the city, as distinct from the university, do not require a detailed notice. The town- hall dates from 1752, the corn exchange and post-office from 1863 and 1882 respectively. The chief hospital is the Radcliffe Infirmary, opened in 1770, and due to the same liberal benefactor who has been mentioned in con- nexion with the Radcliffe Library, and who left funds for the erection of the large and important Radcliffe Obser- vatory, completed in 1795. There are two ladies' halls, Lady Margaret's and Somerville, and High Schools for boys and girls. Port Meadow is a large pasture to the north-west of the city, which has belonged from time immemorial to the freemen of the city. An extensive system of drainage has been recently carried out, involving the formation of

a sewage farm at Littlemore. Water is supplied from large covered tanks on Headington Hill, into which the water is forced from reservoirs at New Hinksey. The University Park, comprising 80 acres, is beautifully situated on the banks of the Cherwell.

The diocese of Oxford now includes the three ‘home counties” of Berkshire (originally in the diocese of Wessex, then till 1836 in that of Sherborne or Salisbury), Buckinghamshire (until 1845 under the see of Lincoln), and Oxfordshire (formerly in the dioceses of Dorchester, Winchester, or Lincoln). The patents for the formation of the bishopric bear dates of 1542 and 1546. The cathedral, already mentioned as part of Christ Church, was at first the church of St Frideswide, begun so far as the present buildings are concerned in about 1160, and forming “‘a fine example of Late Norman and Transitional work of early character.” The nave is pure Norman; the choir, with its richer ornament and delicate pendants, is the Transitional part; the present remarkable east end, having a circular window over two smaller round-headed ones, is believed to be a restoration of the original design. Part of the western end of the nave was destroyed by Wolsey to allow the large quadrangle to be formed. Within the cathedral the most noteworthy objects are the 15th century ‘shrine of St Frideswide,” the modern reredos, and the bishop’s throne, a memorial of Bishop Wilberforce. The stained glass is of different styles. The octagonal spire, 144 feet high, is of a peculiar pitch. The chapter- house on the south side of the nave, and the fine doorway leading from it to the cloisters, are early 13th-century

OR D

work. Of the numerous parish churches some haye already been noticed. All Saints’ was built early in the 18th century, from designs by Dean Aldrich, in a classical style, but with much originality of detail; St Philip and St James’s and St Barnabas’s are among the most recent, the latter being in imitation of Italian style with separate campanile, The Roman Catholic church of St Aloysius in St Giles’s was opened in 1875.

History.—The legends connecting the city with Brute the Trojan, Mempric, and the Druids are not found before the 14th century, and are absolutely without foundation. The name, which is found in the 10th century as Oxenaford, and in the 11th as Oxenford, the Welsh (more modern)

Rhydychain, points to a ford for oxen across the shallow channels of the divided river near Folly Bridge, though many on theoretical grounds connect the first part of the word with a Celtic root signifying water, comparing it with Ouse, Oseney, Exford, and even Isis, The nucleus of the town was probably a nunnery, afterwards a house of sccular canons, founded in honour of St Frideswide in or before the 9th century, on the site of the present cathedral. After the peace of Wedmore (886) Oxford became a border town between Mercia and Wessex, and coins of Alfred with the legend OKSNAFORDA (on some types ORSNAFORDA) seem to prove that a mint was established there before the close of that century. The earliest undoubted mention of the city is in the English Chronicle under the year 912, when Edward the Elder made London and Oxford a part of his own kingdom of Wessex. To this period probably belongs the castle mound, still a conspicuous object on the New Road bctween the railway stations and the city, and similar to those found at Warwick and Marlborough. The subsequent notices of Oxford in the Chronicle before the Conquest prove the rapidly increasin importance of the place, both strategically as the chief stronghol of the valley of the upper Thames—as when the Danes attacked and burned it in 1009 and Sweyn took hostages from it and Winchester in 1018—and politically as a meeting-place for gemots in which the interests of north and south England were alike affected. Witenagemots were held there in 1015, when two Danish thegns were treacherously murdered; in 1036, when Harold was chosen king; and in 1065. In 1018, when Cnut first became king of all England, he selected the same spot for the confirmation by Danes and English of “Edgar’s law.” But the murder of King Edmund in 1016 and the death of Harold in 1039 seem to have given rise to the saying that it was ill-omened for the kings of England to enter or reside at Oxford. The Domesday survey of Oxford (c. 1086) is more than usually complete, and from it we gather that about six-sevenths of the town was held in equal proportions by ecclesiastical owners, by Norman followers of the king, and by citizens, one-seventh being in the king’s hands. The priory church of St Frideswide, and_ the churches of St Mary the Virgin, St Michael, St Peter in the East, and St Ebbe are mentioned ; from other sources it is known that St Martin’s at Carfax was in existence, and not less than seven more before the close of the century. It is a curious fact that, while two hundred and forty-three houses (dom?) paid tax, no less than four hundred and seventy-eight were waste (vastz), and even of the mansiones one hundred and ninety-one

were habitable and not fewer than one hundred and six waste. Oxford grew steadily when governed by the strong hand of Robert d'Oili (10702-1119). The existing remains which may be attributed to his building are the castle tower containing the church of St George and a crypt, the crypt and part of the church of St Peter's in the East, and the tower of St Michacl's; but it is known that he repaired other churches and built bridges. His nephew founded the abbey of Oseney, for Augustinian canons, in 1129. During the 12th century Beaumont Palace, built by Henry I. outside the north wall of the city, was a favourite royal residence, and the birthplace both of Richard I. and of John. In the charter granted by Henry I. the privileges of the town rank with those of London, and a large Jewry was formed near the site of the present town-hall. The flight of the empress Matilda from the castle over the ice-bound river to Abingdon in 1142, when besieged by Stephen, is a well-known incident. If we may trust the Oseney Chronicle it is in 1188 that we find the first traces of organized teaching in Oxford, the germ of the great university which was destined to far outstrip the city in privileges, wealth, and fame (see Universitigs). During the 18th century parliaments were often held in the town, notably the Mad Parliament in 1258, which led to the enactment of the " Provi- sions of Oxford." But this time also witnessed the beginning of the long struggle between the town and university, which produced serious riots, culminating on St Scholastica's day in 1354, and finally subjected the former to serious curtailment of its powers and jurisdiction. History has preserved the names of several heroes in the struggle for civic independence, but the issue was never doubtful, and the annals of the city in succeeding centuries admit of briefer narration. The religious orders found their way early

into Oxford :—in 1221 the Dominicans (whose settlement near the site of the present gas-works is still attested by Blackfriars Street, Preacher's Bridge, and Friar's Wharf) ; in 1224 the Franciscans (who built their house near Paradise Square); soon after 1240 the Car- melites (near Worcester College, to which Friar's Entry led); and in 1252 the Austin Friars, who settled near what is now Wadliam College. The greater orders were not less firmly established, —the Cistercians at Rewley Abbey (de Regali loco, founded about 1280), the Bencdictines scarcely later at Gloucester Hall and

Durham College, now Worcester and Trinity Colleges respectively. In the 13th and 14th centuries, as the university grew, an incrcasing number of students gathered in Oxford, filling the numerous halls and swelling the size, if not the wealth, of the place. The total of students in Henry III.'s time was placed at thirty thousand in con- temporary records seen by Thomas Gascoigne, but this can only be an exaggeration ora mistake. The town was frequently ravaged by plagues, and generally shared in the exhaustion and inactivity which marked the 15th century. The Reformation was unaccom- panied by important incidents other than those which affected the university and the see; but after the troubles of Mary's reign Oxford again began to revive under the personal favour of Elizabeth, which was continued by the Stuart kings. In the civil war Oxford becomes suddenly prominent as the headquarters of the Royalist party and the mecting-place of the king's parlia- ment. It was hither that the king retired after Edgehill, the two battles of Newbury, and Naseby ; from here Prince Rupert made his dashing raids in 1643. In May 1644 the earl of Essex and Waller first approached the city, from the east and south, but failed to enclose the king, who escaped to Worcester, returning once more after the engagement at Cropredy Bridge. The final invest- ment of the city, when the king had lost every other stronghold of importance, and had himself escaped in disguise, was in May 1646 ; and on June 20 it surrendered to Fairfax. Throughout the war the secret sympathies of the citizens were Parliamentarian, but there was no conflict within the walls. In October 1644 a destructive fire burnt down almost every house between George Street and St Aldate's church. Charles II. held the last Oxford parliament in 1681, the House of Lords sitting in Christ Church Hall, the Commons in the Schools. In the first year of George I.'s reign there were serious Jacobite riots, but from that time the city becomes Hanoverian in opposition to the university, the feeling coming to a head in 1754 during a county election, which was ultimately the subject of a parliamentary inquiry. The public works which distinguish the last century have been already men- tioned; the general history of the city proper presents few features of interest. Since the first railway (from Didcot) in 1844 its rate of progress has been accelerated, and it has at length vindicated for itself a vigorous aud independent municipal life.

Oxford grew up, as has been seen, on the slope leading from the ford near Folly Bridge to Carfax. Its earliest trade must have been twofold, partly

with London by way of the Thames, and partly with the west by the ford. No Roman road of importance passed within threc miles of the future town, and the Chiltern Hills prevented a dircct road to the metropolis. The first mention of townsmen is “seo buruhwaru” in the English Chronicle subd anno 1013, and of its trade in the toll paid to the abbot of Abingdon by passing barges from the 11th century (Abingdon Chron., vol. ii. p. 119). When the Domesday survey was made all the churches except St Mary Magdalen were within the line of walls. Mr James Parker estimates the population at that time to have been “not more than 1700,” occupying one hundred and uinety-one mansions and two hundred and forty-three houses. By the close of the 11th century the castle had been partly built, and the walls enclosed a space roughly of the shape of a parallelogram, its greater length lying nearly east and west, dominated by the castle at its western extremity. In Elizabeth’s time, as Ralph Agas’s view shows, nine- tenths of the city was still intra-mural. In 1789 the population was about 8300, but more than half lived outside the walls; in 1831, 20,650 ; in 1881 the municipal borough comprised 35,264, the local board district 38,289, exclusive of about 3000 members of the university. The chief extensions have been towards the north, Including both the fashionable quarter beyond the parks and the poorer suburb of Jericho, and on the south-east, where St Clement’s and Cowlcy St John have greatly increased. The newly built low-lying districts of Oseney town with Botley to tle west, and Grandpont with New Hinksey to the south, are comparatively unhealthy, contrasting in that respect with the houses rising on Headington Hill. The trade of the city has always been varicd Tather than extensive ; there has never been a staple produce, and the few manufactories are of recent introduction. Oxford being an agricultural centre has an important market, but the alternations of university terms and vacations affect the steadiness of general

usiness. The first charter known is one of Henry I., not now extant, mentioning a merchants’ guild (gilda mercatoria). That of Henry IT. specially connects the citizens with London, guia ipst et cives Londinenses sunt de una et eadem consuctudine et lege et libertate, They were to be butlers with the latter at the king’s

coronation—a privilege still retained by their representative. The earliest governing body was thc mayor and burgesses; aldermen were added in 1255, and the full institution from 1605 until 1835 consisted of a mayor, two bailiffs, four aldermen, eight assistants, and twenty-four common council men, together with a high steward, recorder, town-clerk, and inferior officers. At present the government is in the hands of a high steward, recorder, sheriff, and corporation, the latter consisting of a mayor, ten aldermen, and thirty councillors. For the election of the last two classes the city is divided into five wards. There is a local board of forty-seven members and a school board of seven. From the earliest times the city has been represented by two burgesses in parliament.

The chief authorities for the general history of Oxford are the works of Antony Wood, viz., the Hist. and Antiqu. of the University, 1792-96 (in Latin, 1674), Hist. and Antiqu. of the Colleges and Hails, 1786-90, and the Ancient and Present State of the City, 1773; andiIngram, Afemorials of Oxford, 1837 and 1847. There are good local directories and guides. Of a more special kind are James Parker's sketch of the early History of Oxford, 1871; Turner, Selections from

the Records of the City, 1879; Phillips, Geology of Oxford, 1871; and the accounts of All Souls, Exeter, and Magdalen Colleges by Burrows, Boase, and Bloxam

respectively. The Oxford Historical Society publishes works bearing on the history of the place. The history of the university will be found under Uni-VERSITIES, (F. M.*)

OXFORD, Ropert Haruey, First Earu or (1661- 1724), the eldest son of Sir Edward Harley, a prominent landowner in Herefordshire, was born in Bow Street, Covent Garden, London, 5th December 1661. His school days were passed near Burford, in Oxfordshire, in a small school which produced at the same time a lord high treasurer, a lord high chancellor, and a lord chief justice of the common pleas. The principles of Whiggism and Nonconformity were instilled into his mind at an early age, and if he changed the politics of his ancestors he never formally abandoned their religious opinions. At the Revolution of 1688 Sir Edward and his son raised a troop of horse in support of the cause of William IIL, and took possession

of the city of Worcester in his interest. The family zeal for the Revolution recommended Robert Harley to the notice of the Boscawen family, and led to his eléction, in April 1689, as the parliamentary representative of Tregony, a borough under their control. He remained its member for one parliament, when he was elected by the constituency of New Radnor, and he continued to represent it until his elevation to the peerage in 1711. From the first he gave great attention to the conduct of public business, bestowing especial care upon the study of the forms and ceremonies of the House, and acquiring from his labours that distinction which a knowledge of parliamentary precedents always bestows. This reputation marked him out asa fitting person to pre- side over the debates of the House, and from the general election of February 1701 until the dissolution of 1705 he held with general approbation the office of speaker. For a part of this period, from 18th May 1704, he combined with the speakership the duties of a principal secretary of state, displacing in that office the Tory earl of Nottingham, a circumstance which may have impelled that haughty peer to join the Whigs, some years later, in opposition to the treaty of Utrecht. At the time of his appointment as secretary of state Harley had given no outward sign of dissatisfaction with the Whigs, and it was mainly through Marlborough's good opinion of his abilities that he was admitted to the ministry. For some time, so long indeed as the victories of the great English general cast a glamour over the policy of his friends, and the constituencies were enthusiastic in support of a war policy, Harley continued to act loyally with his colleagues. But in the summer of 1707 it became evident to Godolphin that some secret influence behind the throne was opposing his wishes and shaking the confidence of the queen in her ministers. The sovereign had resented the intrusion into the adminis- tration of the impetuous earl of Sunderland, and had persuaded herself that the safety of the church depended on the fortunes of the Tories. These convictions were strengthened in her mind by the new favourite Abigail

Hill (a relative of the duchess of Marlborough through her mother, and of Harley on her father's side), whose soft and silky ways contrasted only too favourably in the eyes of the queen with the haughty manners of her old friend, the duchess of Marlborough. Both the duchess and Godolphin

communicated to Marlborough their belief that this change in the disposition of the queen was due to the sinister conduct of Harley and his relatives, and the persistent protestations of the accused persons to the contrary were accepted with an ill grace. Although Harley was for the present permitted to remain in his office, subsequent experience convinced the chiefs of the Government of the necessity for his dismissal, and an occurrence which showed the remissness of his official conduct, if it did not prove his treachery to the nation, furnished them with an opportunity for carrying out their wishes. An ill-paid and poverty-stricken clerk in Harley's office was detected in furnishing the enemy with copies of many documents which should have been kept from the knowledge of all but the most trusted advisers of the court, and it was found that through the carelessness of the head of the department the contents of such papers became the common property of all in his service. The queen was thereupon informed that Godolphin and Marlborough could no longer serve in concert with a minister whom

they distrusted, and of whose incapacity there were such.

proofs. They did not attend her next council, and when Harley proposed to proceed with the business of the day one of their friends drew attention to their absence, when the queen found herself forced (11th February 1708) to accept the resignation of her secret adviser. At that time it seemed as if Harley's fortunes had sunk for ever. Harley went out of office, but his cousin, who had now become Mrs Masham, remained by the side of the queen, and contrived to convey to her mistress the views of the ejected minister. Every device which the defeated ambition of a man whose strength lay in his aptitude for intrigue could suggest for hastening the downfall of his adversaries was employed without scruple, and not employed in vain. The cost of the protracted war with France, the danger to the national church, the chief proof of which lay in the prosecution of Sacheverell, were the weapons which he used to influence the masses of the people. Marlborough himself could not be dispensed with, but his proud spirit was insulted in a thousand ways, and his relations were dismissed from their posts in turn. When the greatest of these, Lord Godolphin, was sent into private life, five commissioners to the treasury were appointed (10th August 1710), and among them figured Harley as chancellor of the

exchequer. It was the aim of the new chancellor to frame an administration from the moderate members of both parties, and to adopt with but slight changes the policy of his predecessors ; but his efforts were doomed to disappointment. The Whigs refused to join in an alliance with the man whose rule began with the retirement from the treasury of the finance minister idolized by the city merchants, and the Tories, who were successful beyond their wildest hopes at the polling booths, could not understand why their leaders should pursue a system of government which copied the faults of their political opponents. The clamours of the wilder spirits of the party, the country members who met at the “October Club,” began to be re-echoed even by those who were attached to the person of Harley, when, through an unexpected event, his popularity was restored at abound.

(better known by the name of the marquis de Guiscard), °

was being examined before the privy council on a charge of treachery to the nation which had befriended him, when he stabbed Harley in the breast with a penknife (March

Ore 1°O hed

1711). Toa man in good health the wounds would not have been serious, but the minister had been for some time indisposed—a few days before the occurrence Swift had penned the prayer “Pray God preserve his health, everything depends upon it”—and the joy of the nation on his recovery knew no bounds. Both Houses presented an address to the crown, suitable response came from the queen, and on Harley’s reappearance in the Lower House the speaker made an oration which was spread broadcast through the country. On the 24th May 1711 the minister became Baron Harley of Wigmore and earl of Oxford and Mortimer; before the month was ended he was created lord treasurer, and in the following year he became a knight of the Garter. Well might his friends exclaim that he had “ grown by persecutions, turnings out, and stabbings.”

With the sympathy which this attempted assassination had evoked, and with the skill which the lord treasurer possessed for conciliating the calmer members of either political party, he passed through several months of office without any loss of reputation. He rearranged the nation’s finances,

and continued to support her generals in the field with ample resources for carrying on the campaign, though his emissaries were in communication with the French king, and were settling the terms of a peace independently of England's allies. After many weeks of vacillation and intrigue, when the negotiations were frequently on the point of being interrupted, the preliminary peace was signed, and in spite of the opposition of the Whig majority in the Upper House, which was met by the creation of twelve new peers, the much-vexed treaty of Utrecht was at last brought to a conclusion. While these negotiations were under discussion the friendship between Oxford and St John was fast changing into hatred. The latter had resented the rise in fortune which the stabs of Guiscard had secured for his colleague, and when he was raised to the peerage with the title of Baron St John and Viscount Bolingbroke, instead of with an earldom, his resentment knew no bounds. The royal favourite, whose husband had been called to the Upper House as Baron Masham, deserted her old friend and relation for his more vivacious rival. The Jacobites found that, although the lord treasurer was profuse in his expressions of good will for their cause, no steps were taken to ensure its triumph, and they no longer placed reliance in promises which were repeatedly made and repeatedly broken. Even Oxford's friends began to complain of his habitual dilatori- ness, and to find some excuse for his apathy in ill health, ageravated by excess in the pleasures of the table and by the loss of his favourite child. By slow degrees the confidence of Queen Anne was transferred from Oxford to Bolingbroke; on the 27th July 1714 the former surrendered his staff as lord treasurer, and on the lst August the queen died.

On the accession of George I. the defeated minister retired to Herefordshire, but a few months later his impeachment was decided upon and he was committed to the Tower. After an imprisonment of nearly two years the prison doors were opened, and he was allowed to resume his place among the peers, but he took little part in public affairs, and died almost unnoticed 21st May 1724. Harley's political fame may now be dimmed by time, his statesmanship may seem but intrigue and finesse, but his character is set forth in the brightest colours in the poems of Pope and the prose of Swift. The Irish dean was his discriminating friend in the hours of prosperity, his unswerving advocate in adversity. The books and manuscripts which the first earl of Oxford and his son collected were among the glories of their

age. The manuscripts became the property of the nation; the books were sold to a bookseller called Osborne, and described in

a printed catalogue of four volumes, part of which was the work of Dr Johnson, In the recollection of the Harleian manuscripts, the Harleian library, and the Harlevan Miscellany, the family name will never die. (w. P. ©.)

OXUS. ‘This river rises in the lofty table-lands which are intercepted between the two great mountain ranges of central Asia, the Thian Shin and the Hindi Kush, in the region where they approach each other most closely. It flows westwards through a broad valley, receiving numerous affluents from the mountain ranges on either side; then bending to the north-west it traverses the arid deserts of western Turkestan on the borders of Bokhara, descends into and fertilizes the rich oasis of Khiva, and finally disembogues at the southern extremity of the Sea of Aral. Its course is roughly parallel to that of its sister river the Jaxartes, which rises to the north of the Thidn Shan water-parting, and disembogues at the northern extremity of the Sea of Aral.

The name Oxus is that by which the river is mentioned in the writings of the ancient Greek historians. In the older traditions of the Parsi books it is named the Veh- rid, in some form of which originates the classical name which we find it most convenient to use, and also it may be presumed the names of various territories on the banks of its upper waters, such as Wakhan, Wakhsh, and Washgird, which are no doubt identical in formation, if not in application, with the classical Oxiani, Oxii, and Oxi-Petra. The classical names have’ long ceased to be known to the inhabitants of the country. In early Mohammedan history the river was usually styled Al-Nahr, whence the title Ma waré 1 Nahr, or “ beyond the river,” which came to be bestowed on a province of Persia lying to the north of the Oxus, and which in modern use has been rendered Transoxiana. In subsequent Mohammedan writings Al- Nahr gives place to Jaihin, corresponding to the Gihon of the Mosaic garden of Eden. And now the river is known by Asiatics as the Amu Daria, a name of which the origin is uncertain.!

In the most remote ages to which written history carries us, the regions on both sides of the Oxus were subject to the Persian monarchy. Of their populations Herodotus mentions the Bactrians, Chorasmians, Sogdians, and Sace as contributing their contingents to the armies of the great King Darius. The Oxus figures in Persian romantic history as the limit between Iran and Turan, but the substratuin of settled population to the north as well as the south was probably of Iranian lineage. The valley is connected with many early Magian traditions, according to which Zoroaster dwelt at Balkh, where, in the 7th

ARAL SEA f a

Sy

English Miles “Ns

aul 70

Sketeh Map of the Oxus. century B.¢., his proselytizing efforts first came into operation. Buddhism eventually spread widely over the Oxus countries, and almost entirely displaced the religion of Zoroaster in its very cradle. The Chinese traveller Hwen Tsang, who passed through the country in 630-644 A.p., fuund Termedh, Khilm, Balkh, and above all Bamian, amply provided with monasteries, stirpas, and

Natives of western India hold that it implies “mother” of rivers, im correlation with Ab{-sin or “father of rivers,” a title whieh is frequently given to its great southern neighbour, the river Indus.

colossal images, which are the striking characteristics of prevalent Buddhism ; even the Pamir highlands had their monasteries.

Christianity penetrated to Khorasan and Bactria at an early date ; episcopal sees are said to have existed at Merv and Samarkand in the 4th and 5th centuries, and Cosmas (c. 545) testifies to the spread of Christianity among the Bactrians and Huns.

Bactria was long a province of the empire which Alexander the Great left to his successors, but the Greek historians give very little information of the Oxus basin and its inhabitants. About 250 B.c. Theodotus, the “ governor of the thousand cities of Bactria,” declared himself king, simultaneously with the revolt of Arsaces which laid the foundation of the Parthian monarchy. The Greco- Bactrian dominion was overwhelmed entirely about 126 B.c. by the Yuéchi, a numerous people of Tibet who had been driven westwards from their settlements on the borders of China by the Hiongnu, the Huns of Deguignes. From the Yuéchi arose, about the Christian era, the great Indo-Scythian dominion which extended across the Hindi Kush southwards, over Afghanistan and Sind. The history of the next five centuries is a blank. In 571 the Haidthalah of the Oxus, who aresupposed to be descendants of the Yuéchi, were shattered by an invasion of the Turkish khakan; and in the following century the Chinese pilgrim Hwen Tsang found the former empire of the Haidthalah broken up into a great number of small states, all acknowledging the supremacy of the Turkish khakan, and several having names identical with those which still exist. The whole group of states he calls Tukhara, by which name in the form Tokharistan, or by that of Haiathalah, the: country continued for centuries to be known to the Mohammedans. At the time of his pilgrimage Chinese influence had passed into Tokharistan and Transoxiana. Yezdegird, the last of the Sasanian kings of Bokhara, who diedin 651, when defeated and hard pressed by the Saracens, invoked the aid of China; the Chinese emperor, Taitsung, issued an edict organizing the whole country from Ferghana to the borders of Persia into three Chinese administra- tive districts, with 126 military cantonments, an organization which, however, probably only existed on paper.

In 711-12 Mohammedan troops were conducted by Kotaiba, the governor of Khorasan, into the province of Khwarizm (Khiva), after subjugating which they advanced on Bokhara and Samarkand, the ancient Sogdiana, and are said to have even reached Ferghana and Kashgar, but no occuption then ensued. In 1016-25 the govern- ment of Khwarizm was bestowed by Sultan Mahmud of Ghazni upon Altuntash, one of his most distinguished generals.

Tokhéristan in general formed a part successively of the empires of the Sasanian dynasty of Bokhara (terminated 999 A.D.), of the Ghaznavi dynasty, of the Seljukian princes of Persia and of Khorasan, of the Ghori or Shansabanya kings, and of the sultans of Khwarizm. The last dynasty ended with Sultan Jalal-ud-din, during whose reign (1221-31) a division of the Moghul army of Jenghiz Khan first invaded Khwarizm, while the khan himself was besieging Bamian ; Jalal-ud-din, deserted by most of his troops, retired to Ghazni, where he was pursued by Jenghiz Khan, and again retreating towards Hindustan was overtaken and driven across the Indus.

The commencement of the 16th century was marked by the rise of the Uzbek rule in Turkestan. The Uzbeks were no one race, but an aggregation of fraginents from Turks, Mongols, and all the great tribes constituting the hosts of Jenghiz and Batu. They held Kindwz, Balkh, Khwarizm, and Khordsin, and for a time Badakhshan also; but Badakhshdn was soon won by the emperor Baber, and in 1529 was bestowed on his cousin Suliman, who by 1555 had established his rule over much of the region between the Oxus and the Hindi Kish. The Moghul emperors of India occasionally interfered in these provinces, notably Shah Jehan in 1646 ; but, finding the difficulty of maintaining so distant a frontier, they abandoned it to the Uzbek princes. About 1765 the wazir of Ahmed Shah Abdali of Cabul invaded Badakhshan, and from that time until now the domination of the countries on the south bank of the Oxus from Wakhan to Balkh has been a matter of frequent struggles between Afghans and Uzbeks.

The Uzbek rule in Turkestan has during the last twenty years been rapidly dwindling before the growth of Russian power. In 1863 Russia invaded the Khokand territory, taking in rapid succes- sion the cities of Turkestan, Chemkend and Tashkend. In 1866 Khojend was taken, the power of Khokand was completely crushed, a portion was incorporated in the new Russian province of Turkestan, while the remainder was left to be administered by a native chief almost as a Russian feudatory; the same year the Bokharians were defeated at Irdjar. In 1867 an army assembled by the amir of Bokhara was attacked and dispersed by the Russians, who in 1868 entered Samarkand, and became virtually rulers of Bokhara. In1873 Khiva was invaded, and as much of the khanate as lay on the right bank of the Oxus was incorporated into the

Russian empire, a portion being afterwards made over to Bokhara. Russia acquired the right of the free navigation of the Oxus throughout its entire course, on the borders of both Khiva and Bokhara. The administration of the whole of the states on the right bank of the Oxus, down to the Russian boundary line at Ichka

LaoCar

o

WOCAT EN

TLIBRARY *)

ra

S Avi y reat Qin BUEe

1.

Yar, is now in the hands of Bokhara, including Karategin—which the Russians have transferred to it from Khokand—and Darwaz at the entrance to the Pamir highlands. At the present time the statcs on the left bank of the Oxus, from its sources in the Panjah river down to the town and ferry of Khwaja Saleh, are mainly subject to Afghanistan ; from Khwaja Saleh to the frontiers of Khiva and Russia at Ichka Yar the left bank of the Oxus is subject to Bokhara ; from the same point the Afghan boundary is supposed to stretch across the Dasht-i-chul plains of the Turkomans, above Maimana, to Sarakhs, where it meets the Persian frontier.

The regions in which the Oxus takes its birth, and through which it passes until it becomes lost in the Sea of Aral, may be divided into upper, middle, and lower: the upper is constituted by the highlands between the Thidn Shan and the Hindi Kush ranges, and the middle by the plains and uplands which are situated in the broad valley between the western prolongations of the saine ranges; the lower lies in the plains of western Turkestan. Deserip-

tions of the chief provinces and states in the middle and lower regions will be found under Arauan TURKESTAN (vol. i. p. 241), including the eastern khanates of Kunduz, Khilm, Balkh, and Akcha, and the Chahér Wildyat, or Four Domains, viz. the western khanates of Sir-i-pul, Shibrghan, Andkhui, and Mainidna ; also under BADAKH- SHAN, Karatectn, Hissar, BoKHARa, and Kuiva; accounts have also been already given of Baorria, BALKu, and Bamian. Here we shall only treat of the highland regions of the Oxus, and the river itself in its downward course to the Sea of Aral, postponing all other matter to the article TURKESTAN (see also the map of Turkestan).

For a right understanding of the highland region, notice must be taken of its position relatively to the two great longitudinal systems of mountains, the Thi4n Shan and the Indian Caucasus, and their respective prolongations east and west, which form such a prominent feature in the physical geography of the continent of Asia. These mountain systems include between them a belt of table- lands of varying breadth, and generally of considerable altitude. The forces of nature by which both the

mountains and the intermediate table-lands were primarily |

evolved from the earth’s crust appear to have acted con- currently over the entire region, but with greatest elevat- ing effect along the northern edge of the Caucasus; for, though the highest peaks of the Hindi Kush and the Himalayan ranges are more frequently met with on spurs some distance to the south than on the northern water- parting, the elevated masses are here of greatest magni- tude ; here there are mountains whose peaks rise to great altitudes above the sea-level, but which are comparatively insignificant differentially, the visible height above the surrounding table-lands being rarely more than a third, and often less than a tenth, of the height above the sea; and here there are passes across great ranges of which the level is barely distinguishable from that of the surrounding table-lands, so that the traveller may cross a great water- parting without being aware of it, a tussock of grass decid- ing the course of the waters, whether towards the frontiers of China or of Europe or towards the Indian Ocean.

The elevated mass which forms a bridge between the Thién Shan and the Hindu Caucasus, in the quarter where they approach each other most

closely, constitutes the governing geographical and political feature of these regions, and gives birth to all the principal sources of the Oxus. A happy instinct has led the inhabitants to call it the Bam-i-dunia, or Roof of the World; modern European geographers have called it the “heart of Asia,” the “central boss of Asia.” It is the Tsungling of Chinese writers, the northern Imaus of Ptolemy, the Mountain Parnassus of Aristotle, “the greatest of all that exist toward the winter sunrise.” The geographical indications of the Puranas, considered in any but a fabulous light,

Ox US

point to it as Méru, the scene of the primeval Aryan paradise. Old Parsi traditions point to it as the origin and nucleus of the Aryan migrations. And it is here that the Mohammedan invaders are shown, by their iden- tification of the great rivers with the Gihon and Pison of the Mosaic narrative, to have believed that the terres. trial paradise, the cradle of the human race, was situated,

Few regions can present claims to interest and just curiosity so strong and various as this one. Its past history is interwoven with that of all the great Asiatic conquerors, and its position on the rapidly narrowing borderland between the British and the Russian dominions gives it additional interest at the present time. But its geography is most intricate and complicated, and has long been a fruitful subject of controversy. The region is intersected with mountain ridges and depressed river beds which are alike difficult to cross ; its altitude is unfavour- able for the growth of cereals, and it mostly lies buried in snow for half the year ; it is, moreover, sparsely inhabited, and does not produce sufficient food for the requirements of the inhabitants. It interposes a formidable barrier between eastern and western Turkestan across the ancient highway from Europe to China; and, though this barrier has been repeatedly crossed, the extant narratives of the journeys and descriptions of the routes present only occasional glimmerings of truth amidst a mass of error and confusion, and are at times barely available for sober inquiry; genuine facts of observation have been so mixed up with erroneous information that it has become impossible to reconcile conflicting statements or separate the true from the false. Thus within the last quarter of a century maps have been published by eminent. geographers in England

and Germany in which the great cities of eastern Turkestan are placed 3° to 4°, or over 200 miles, too far to the west, and the limits of the “heart of Asia” are materially narrowed,

The interest attaching to the region has even led to the fabrication of spurious documents which have darkened: the mist already enveloping it, and have betrayed eminent geographers into error and confusion.! .

While geography remained under the spell of these mis- chievous fictions, research was impeded, and an insurmount- able obstacle placed in the way of the true delineation of the region ; doubt was even thrown on the accuracy of the work of genuine explorers. But within the last decade the mist in which the “ Roof of the World” had so long been enveloped has been largely dispelled by the labours of Russian and British officers, and also by natives of India trained to geographical exploration and employed in con- nexion with the operations of the Great Trigonometrical Survey of India. In some parts there is still much doubt and uncertainty, but enough is now known to furnish the geographical student with a fairly accurate idea of the general course of the rivers and configuration of the table- lands and mountains.

Two systems of rivers give birth to the sources of the eee ee

1 Thus early in the present ccntury certain papers were lodged in the secret archives of the Russian Foreign Office which purported to give an account of two unpublished records of exploration in this obscure region, one by a German traveller, Georg Ludwig von —, said to have been an employé of the Anglo-Indian Government, the other by a Chinese traveller. They were brought to light in 1861, and excited the curiosity of all who were interested in the geography of this region. A few years afterwards it was discovered that a parallel mass of papers, cmbodying much of the same peculiar geography and nomenclature, but purporting to be the report of a Russian expedition sent through Central Asia to the frontiers of India, existed in the London Foreign Office. All three documents bear indubitable traces of having been fabricated for sale to the British and the Russian Governments by an acute geographer who, while availing himself of such genuine data as were actually within his reach, did not scruple to draw on his own imagination for the filling up of all blanks.

——-

a

Oxus, one to the north rising in and around the Alai plateau, the other to the south rising in the Pamir pla- teaus, of which there are several. The two systems are divided by a great chain of mountains known locally as the Kizil-yart range, but called by Fedchenko (looking from the north) the Trans-Alai range, and by recent Russian surveyors the Peter the Great range; it lies from east to west on the southern border of the Alai plateau, and throws out spurs westwards to Darwaz ; its medium height above the sea-level is 18,000 or 19,000 feet, with occasional peaks rising to 25,000 feet. Of the Oxianian affluents to its north and west the principal are the Wakhsh or Strkh-4b (=the Kizil-su=the Red River), rising in the Alai, and the Mukst and Khing-4b rivers, which join the Wakhsh in the district of Karategin.

The system of southern affluents is, however, the most important of the two politically as well as geographically, comprising as it does the water-partings which define the boundaries between China, Afghanistan, and Bokhara, and all the rivers of what is generally known as the Pamir region. The name Pamir is suggested by Bournouf to have been derived from Upa-Mért, meaning the lands “ beyond the mountain of Meru”; a later and more probable sugges- tion, by Major Trotter, is that it is the Khirgiz equivalent of Bam-i-dinia. It means simply an elevated steppe or plateau. By the people of the country it is not applied, as European geographers apply it, to the entire region, which is one of mountains as well as tablelands, but to each of the plateaus with the addition of a distinctive designation. Thus there is the Pamir-Kalin (great), the Pamir-Khurd (little), the Pamir-Alichur, the Pamir-Khargoshi (of the hare), the Pamir-Sarez (of the water-parting), and the Pamir- Rangkul, on which the Rangkul lake is situated. There is also another, the Pamir-i-Shiva, which, though only recently brought prominently to the notice of European geographers, is of considerable magnitude, elevation, and importance; it lies in that part of Badakhshdn which is enclosed to the north and east by the Panjah river, and to the south and west by a spur from the Hindu Kush range. This spur is an offshoot from the vicinity of the Tirich Mir“peak (25,400 feet) north of Chitral; it

lies between Faizabad and Ishkdshim, sinks to 10,900 feet at the Zebak pass, and then again, ascending to higher altitudes, trends to the north-west, and strikes the western spurs of the Kizil-yart range in the Darwaéz district; it forms the water-parting between the Kokcha river of southern Badakhshdn and the Panjah river. Though a spur from the main range, it is of itself an important range, and has some claim to be regarded as the western boundary of the Pamir table-lands, as it lies immediately over the Shiva Pamir; if the claim be admitted, the breadth of the elevated barrier between the plains of eastern and western Turkestan will be found to be about 250 miles, whereas geographers have hitherto accorded to the Pamir plateau a breadth of only 100 miles. Tho Panjah river flows downwards through the region where the spurs of this western bounding range meet those of the Kizil-yart range, passing between narrow and precipitous gorges which form @ natural gateway to the highlands, though one which in many parts is barely accessible, or has to be quitted altogether for the easier mountain passes on either hand.

The most elevated portion of the highlands occurs on the north-east border, above the plains of Kashgar and Yarkand. Here a chain of mountains, interwoven with the Thi4n Shén and the Kizil-yart ranges, trends to the east and south-east, and throws up peaks of great height, culminating in Tagharma (25,500 feet); viewed from the Plains to the east, it seems to form part of a great chain—

the Belt Tagh of Humboldt—which connects the Thidin

in range with the Hindi Kush; but it is broken

WS 108

through by rivers, and terminates over the plains of the Sarikol district. The line of water-parting which con-

| stitutes the real connexion between the Thian Shd4n and

the Hindu Kush lies more to the west, in hills which, emanating from the Kizil-yart range, pass between the Rangku] Pamir and the Kizil-yart plain, and then bending southwards strike an angle of the Hindu Kush range on

the borders of the Sarikol and Kanjut districts; they are probably nowhere of any great altitude above the general level of the table-lands; but they are of importance in that they may be regarded as the natural boundary between the states of eastern Turkestan now subject to China, and those of western Turkestan subject to Afghan- istan and Bokhara.

The best known river of the Pamir plateaus is the Panjah,1 which receives all the other rivers of this region before it enters the plains; above Kila Panjah it has two important affluents, one from the east rising in Kanjut, and probably about 120 miles long, the other from the north-east rising in the lake of the Great Pamir (Wood's Lake Victoria), and about 80 miles long. From the point of junction to Kila-Bdr-Panjah is 140 miles; here the united waters of the Sochdn and Shakhdara rivers from the east are received; 33 miles lower down, near Kila Wamar, the Bartang river, also from the east, is received. The upper source of the Bartang is the Ak-sti (white water) river, which rises in the Oikul or Gazkul lake of Little Pamir, and, winding round the highlands, passes through the Sarez Pamir, where its name changes to the Murghabi (water fowl), which lower down becomes Bartang (narrow passage). The Aksu-Bartang is probably the longest of the Pamir rivers ; its length exceeds 330 miles, while that of the Panjah from the source of its longest affluent down to the Bartang junction is probably under 300 miles ; thus it has been claimed as constituting, rather than the Panjah, the proper boundary line between Afghanistan and Bokhara. About 120 miles below Kila Wamar the Panjah debouches into the plains after receiving the Wanjab river of Darw4z on its right bank, and the Kof (Kufau) river coming from the Shiva Pamir on its left bank. Fifty miles farther on it receives on its right bank the Yakhst river conveying the waters of a system of valleys lying between the Panjah and the Wakhsh rivers, the courses of which are here nearly parallel; 18 miles onwards it receives (left bank) the Kokcha river of southern Badakhshin, and at this point it loses its individuality and becomes the Amu river; 80 miles to the west the Amu receives the Wakhsh or Surkh-ab river, when the whole of the waters of the Oxianian highlands are brought together into one channel.

Returning to the highlands, we briefly notice the princi- pal lakes. Chief of all is the Great Kéraktl—the Dragon Lake of Chinese writers; it stands in the Khargoshi Pamir, has an area of about 120 square miles, and an altitude

of 12,800 feet; it was long regarded as the source of the Oxus, but has recently been found to have no out- let. The Little Karakil and the Bulankul lakes, areas 15 and 8 square miles, on the Kizil-yart plateau, are probably over 13,000 feet. The Rangkul lake, area 15 square miles, is 12,800 feet. Wood's Victoria, the lake of. the Great Pamir, height 13,900 feet, has an area of 25

1 The name Panjah is conjectured to be derived from a confluence of five rivers; but more probably it is taken from the well-known fort of the same name, which is situated a little below the junction of the two upper affluents of the river. The fort derives its name cithcr from the circumstance of its being built on five mounds, or from a sacred edifice in the vicinity erected over a stone bearing the supposed impress of the palm and fingers (panjah) of Hazrat Ali, the son-in-law of Mohammed ; lower down the river, in Shighnan, there is a fort built over a similar mark, and called the Kila-Bar-Panjah ("the fort over the panjah ").

square miles. The Yashil-Kul, area 16 square miles, height 12,550 feet, is in the Alichtr Pamir, where in 1759 the Chinese troops surprised and defeated the Khwajas of Badakshan. The great Shiva-Kul, lately visited by Dr Regel, has, according to him, an- area ex- ceeding 100 square miles, and an altitude of 11,800 feet, and Wood alludes to it as of considerable magnitude. There are numerous small lakes, of which the most im- portant is the Oikul (13,100 feet), the source of the Ak-st river, in the Little Pamir.

Hill ranges crop up out of the table-lands in various quarters; their general direction is from north-east to south-west ; they form the boundaries between the several Pamirs and the principal water-partings between the valleys. The portion of the Hindu Kush range which lies immediately to the south of this region is of very varying altitude, sinking at the Baroghil pass to 12,000 feet, or only 1000 feet above the adjoining table-lands, but rising to heiglits of 22,600 to 25,400 in peaks to the west of that pass.

In 1872 the Panjah river was adopted by the British and the Russian Governments as the line of boundary between Bokhara and Afghanistan. But rivers which are readily crossed, and pass through valleys both sides of

which have much of life in common, rarely serve as bound- aries between the people residing on the opposite banks. The Panjah river has been found to divide no less than four states, Wakhadn, Shighndn, Roshan, and Darwaz, into two parts each; the first three of these are claimed by Afghanistan and the fourth by Bokhara, by whom they are administered—or at least are attempted to be admin- istered—without regard to the conventional boundary line of the Panjah; presumably, therefore, this line will have to be abandoned for the lines of water-parting along the hill ranges which form the natural boundaries of the several states.

The Pamir plateaus are generally covered with a rich soil which affords very sweet and nourishing grasses, though at too great an altitude for husbandry; there is an unlimited extent of summer pasture lands for the Khirgiz and other nomad tribes and the herdsmen of the surrounding districts. But for the plentiful supply of food for cattle which these regions afford during several months of the year, they could never have been crossed by the great armies and hordes which are said to have passed over them. The culturable areas are small, and are usually restricted to narrow ledges on the margins of the rivers, which, however, when well cultivated and manured yield rich returns ; food stuffs have to be largely obtained from the plains below ; mulberry trees thrive well and are much prized, because their unripened berries are ground to flour and form a serviceable article of food.

Wakhan contains some twenty-five scattered villages with about as many houses in each, and a population estimated at 3000 souls. Shighnan and Roshan may at present be regarded as one state, as they are governed by one ruler; the valleys of Sochdn-o-Gind and Shakhdara belong to the former, and that of Bartang to the latter (villages, 234; houses, 4477 ; souls, 22,000). Darwaz is famous for its difficult roads, called “ averings,” which are carried along the faces of perpendicular precipices, on planks resting on iron bolts driven into the rock ; the roads are, however, said to be much improved since the state came under Bokhara. Darwadz extends over the valley of the Khingab river to the north as well as over the valley of the lower Panjah. It has three amlakdarates on the Khing&b—Upper Wakhia, Lower Wakhia, and Khula4s— and one, Sagridasht, on an affluent of the

Khingab, containing 84 villages with 2458 habitations; it has also three subdivisions on the Panjah—south-eastern or

O XUS

-river from the east bifurcating from the upper Oxus or of

upper Darwaz terminating at Kila Khum, south-western Darwaz terminating at Zigor, and lower Darw4z—which contain 31 villages with 896 habitations on the right bank, including those of the Wanjab affluent, and 45 villages with 1379 habitations on the left bank, including thom of the Kufau river, which comes from the Shiva Pamir,

Russian officers have found that at the point where the Panjah enters the plains the level is about 1800 feet above the mean sea, or 12,100 feet below the sources of the river in Lake Victoria; 50 miles lower down, at the junction with the Kokcha, where the Panjah merges into the Ami Daria, the height is given as 1000 feet; at Kilif (214 miles) it is 730 feet; and at Chaharjui (203 miles), 510 feet,—thence the length of the course of the river to the Sea of Aral is somewhat over 500 miles. -The Aral is 158 feet above the mean sea-level. Thus the average slope of the Amt is about 14 inches in the mile above and 8 inches below Chahdrjui. The river has been reported to be navigable for steamers up to the junction with the Wakhsh or Surkhéb; and in 1878 a Russian steamer ascended it up to Khwaja Saleh, at the junction of the boundaries of Bokhara and Afghanistan.

The testimony of antiquity is almost unanimous in representing the Oxus as having once flowed into the Caspian Sea. Herodotus asserts that in his day the Jaxartes also entered the Caspian, but this statement is so highly improbable that it throws much doubt on his geographical accuracy as regards these regions. Greek historians also mention a river Ochus to the south of the Oxus, flowing towards the Caspian, into which it is supposed to have fallen either directly or after joining a branch of the Oxus; Strabo says that both this river and the Oxus were crossed by Alexander in marching from Samarkand to Merv. Maps recently published by both English and Russian geographers show the supposed ancient beds of the two rivers in the Turkomani deserts, the Oxus flowing southwards from the province of Khiva and joiing the Caspian below the Balkhan Bay, the Ochus flowing

from east to west in a lower latitude, and possibly striking the Oxus before it turns towards the Caspian. The first is called the old Oxus in English and the Uzboi in Russian maps ; the second is called the Onguz in Russian and the Chaharjui in English maps, and is some- times drawn as if it had been a bifurcation from the Oxus at some point near Chaharjui. But the recent explorations of the Russian engineer Lessar have shown that what hitherto has been taken for the dry bed of the Ochus is not the bed of a river, but merely a natural furrow between sand-hills, that it cannot be the continuation either of a

the Tejend river from the south as has been supposed, and also that it does not join the Uzboi, but ceases at a distance of fully 60 miles from the ancient bed of that river. Thus the bed of the Ochus has still to be discovered.

As regards the Oxus, some eminent geographers are Of opinion that it has disembogued into the Aral Sea from time immemorial as at this day; other geographers of equal weight have asserted that the Aral has fluctuated at different periods of. history between the condition of a great inland sea and that of a reedy marsh, according to the varying course of its two feeders the Jaxartes and the | Oxus. Now the position and height of the head of the delta of the Oxus relatively to the Aral and the Caspian Seas are such that comparatively slight changes in the relations of the river to its banks and bed would readily divert its course from one sea to the other. Khwéja-ili, at the head of the delta, is 217 feet above the mean sea; the Aral is 158 feet above and the Caspian 85 feet below the mean sea. The length of channel from Khwaja-ili to the Aral is 110 miles, with a fall of 59 feet, or about 6 inches

ye

:

OX Y—

in the mile; the length of channel from the town of Urganj near Khwaja-ili to the Caspian is about 600 miles, with a fall of (say) 300 feet, or also about 6 inches to the mile. ‘Thus the degree of slope is much the same in both

directions, and consequently the blocking of the channel towards one sea—either naturally as by an accidental deposit of silt, or artificially by the construction of dams for the diversion of the river—would most probably be soon followed by a flow of water towards the other sea. The writings of Strabo, Pliny, and Ptolemy indicate that from 500 B.C. to 600 A.D. the Oxus flowed into the Caspian. About 605 a great change is said to have taken place, which turncd the full stream of the Oxus into the Aral. In subsequent years dams were constructed for irrigation purposes which prevented the stream from reverting to the Caspian. In 1221, during the siege of Urganj by the Turks, the dams were purposely broken down, and the stream was allowed to find its way back to the Uzboi, which had been deserted for several centuries. But by 1643 the Oxus is said to have been again debouching into the Aral, as at the present time.

Authorities. —Colonel Yule's " Essay" in Wood's Oxus, 2d ed. ; Id., " Papers connected with the Upper Oxus Regions," in Jowr. Roy. Geog. Soc., xlii.; Sir Henry Rawlinson, England and Russia in the Fast ; 1d., Review of Yule's " Marco Polo," in Edin. Rev., January 1872; Id., "Monograph on the Oxus," in Jour. Roy. Geog. Soc., xlii.; Id., " Notes on the Ochus," in Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc., Xx.; Id., "Road to Merv," in Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc., March 1879; Price, Mahomedan History ; Lenz, Ancient Course of the Amu-Daria, translated from German by C. G.; Arendarenko, Darwdz and Karateghin, translated from Russian Military Journal by R. M.; General Walker, Map of Turkestan, 6th ed., 1883; "The Russian Pamir Expedition," in Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc., March 1884. (J. T. W.)

OXYGEN. See Cuemistry, vol. v. p. 479 sq.

OXYHYDROGEN FLAME. Hydrogen gas readily burns in oxygen or air with formation of vapour of water. The quantity of heat evolved, according to Thomsen, amounts to 34116 units for every unit of weight of hydrogen burned, which means that, supposing the two gases were originally at the temperature of, say, 0° C., to bring the hot steam produced into the condition of liquid water of 0° C., we must withdraw from it a quantity of heat equal to that necessary to raise 34116 units of weight of liquid water from 0° to 1° C. This heat-disturbance is quite independent of the particular mode in which the 'process is conducted ; it is the same, for instance,

whether pure oxygen or air be used as a reagent, being neither more or less than the balance of energy between 1 part of hydrogen plus 8 parts of oxygen on the one hand and 9 parts of liquid water on the other. The temperature of the flame, on the other hand, does depend on the circumstances under which the process takes place. It obviously attains its maximum in the case of ‘the firing of pure“ oxyhydrogen” gas (we mean a mixture of hydrogen with exactly half its volume of oxygen, the quantity it, combines with in becoming water). It becomes less when the “ oxyhydrogen” is mixed with excess of one or the other of the two co-reagents or an inert gas such as nitrogen, because in any such case the same amount of heat spreads over a larger quantity of matter. To calculate the “calorific effect,” we may assume that, in any case, for every 1 grain of hydrogen burned 9 × 637 =5733 units of heat are spent in #e conversion of the 9 grains of liquid water (theoretically imagined to be) produced into steam of 100° C., and that only the rest of 34116 — 5733 = 28383 units is available for heating up the products of combustion. Now the specific heat of steam (from 120 to 220° C.) has been found to be equal to 0°4805 units; hence, on the basis of certain obvious (but bold) assumptions, in the firing of 9 grains of oxyhydrogen gas, as every 9× 0‘4805 units of heat correspond to an

increase of 1° C. in temperature, the temperature of the flame should be by 28383 + 9 times 0°4805 (or 6564° C.) higher than 100°, or equal to 6664° C.

Let us now consider the case of 1 grain of hydrogen mixed with the quantity of air containing 8 grains of oxygen, 7.¢., the case of 1 grain hydrogen mixed with 8 grains of oxygen and 26°78 grains of nitrogen. Here the temperature ¢ of the flame will be governed by the equa- tion, 28383 = (t-— 100) x 9 × 0°4805+¢ x 26°78 × 0:2438, —the last coefficient being the specific heat of nitrogen. Thus ¢=2655° C., as against the 6664° obtained with pure oxygen. But one of our tacit assumptions is obviously untenable; ready-made vapour of water, if subjected to even the less of the two temperatures, would suffer far-going dissociation involving an absorption of heat and consequently a depression of tempera- ture. Hence

supposing a mass of oxyhydrogen gas to have been kindled, as soon as the temperature has passed a certain point the progress of the process of combina- tion will be checked by that of the corresponding dis- sociation, which latter, as the combustion progresses, will go on at a greater and greater rate, or until it just com- pensates the effect of the process of combination. That is to say, a8 soon as through the combustion of a certain fraction of the oxyhydrogen a certain temperature-(far less than 6664° C.) has been produced, there is no further increase of temperature, and the uncombined gas-residue would remain unchanged, if it were not for the practically unavoidable loss of heat by radiation and conduction, which enables it to become water.

This interesting matter was inquired into experimentally by Bunsen. He exploded fulminating gas mixtures in a close vessel constructed so that the maximum tension attained by the gas-contents during the combustion could be observed and measured, and from this value and the analytical data he calculated the maximum temperature and the proportion of gas-mixture which had assumed the form of a chemical compound at the moment when the maximum temperature prevailed. He found (a) for the case of pure oxyhydrogen gas—maximum temperature = 2844″ C., fraction of burned gas at the respective moment 0°337 ; (b) for the case of a mixture of 1 volume of oxygen, 2 volumes of hydrogen, and 3°78 of nitrogen (very nearly the same as one volume of oxygen in the shape of air)— maximum temperature = 2024° C., burned gas correspond- ing=0°547 of the potential water. Hence we see that the temperature of a pure oxyhydrogen flame is not so much above that produced in the combustion of hydrogen by air as we should have concluded from our calculations. But, whatever the exact numerical value may be, it has long been known that the calorific effect of an oxyhydrogen flame exceeds that of any furnace, and the effect has long been put to practical use in the oxyhydrogen lamp.

The most efficient form of this instrument is that which was given to it long ago by Newman, who pumps pure oxyhydrogen into a strong copper reservoir under 2 to 3 atmospheres’ pressure, lets the gas stream out of a narrow nozzle, and kindles it. The nozzle in the original apparatus consisted of a glass tube about 4 inches long and of gy-inch bore. Newman worked long with this ap- paratus without any accident occurring; but when he once

came to substitute a tube of #y-inch bore the flame travelled back and the apparatus burst like a bomb-shell. Of the many safety arrangements suggested we will mention only that of Hare, who inserts a plug of (microscopically) porous copper between reservoir and nozzle, and forces the gas through this plug by applying a sufficient pressure. The plug of course acts on the principle of the Davy lamp, and offers protection as long as it has not got heated. But it may get hot without the operator noticing it, aud probably has done so occasionally. At any rate, the use of ready mixed oxyhydrogen has long been given up in favour of the very oldest form of lamp, which was invented, before Newman's, by Hare. Hare's lamp, in all essential points, is our present gas-blowpipe as used for glass-blowing. The fuel (hydrogen, or coal-gas, which works as well) streams out of the annular space between two co-

axial tubes, while oxygen is being blown into the hydrogen flame through the ecntral tube. The calorific effeet of a Hare's lamp is of course less than that of Newman's, but still exceeds that of any ordinary fire ; it is inferior only to that of the eleetrie are. Platinum fuses in the flame with facility, and siliea and alumina (though absolutely infusible in the metallurgist's sense) run into viscid glasses. Notwithstanding its enormous temperature, an oxy-hydrogen flame emits only a feeble light; but this arises only from the absenee in it of good radiators. We need only communieate its high temperature to some non-volatile and infusible solid, and a considerable portion of the heat is converted into radiant energy which streams forth as a dazzling white light. In the oxyhydro- gen lamp as used in connexion with the magie lantern or the "solar" mieroseope, a bit of lime fixed to an upright wire serves as aradiator. Magnesia is said to be better, and it has been said that zireonia exeels both. Now that the electric light is com- ing into general use, the oxyhydrogen lamp as a source of light will soon be a thing of the past. It is sure, however, to survive as a powerful producer of intense heat, and not for scientific purposes only. Thanks to the pioneering activity of Deville and Debray, it has found its way into the platinum works, and will hold its ground there until it may be superseded by the electric arc. The

soldering together of the several parts of a platinum apparatus is now done “ antogynically ” (4.¢., Without the interposition of any foreign “ solder ”) by means of the oxyhydrogen blowpipe,—a great improvement over the old process of soldering with gold, which

stripped the platinum-work ofits most valuable character, namely,.

its relative infusibility. (W. D.) OXYNOTUS, the name of a genus of birds now ascer- tained to be peculiar to two of the Mascarene Islands—Mauritius and Réunion (Bourbon)—where the name of Cuisinier is applied to them, and remarkable for the fact, almost if not quite unique in Ornithology,! that, while the males of both species are almost identical in appearance, the females are wholly unlike each other. Though the habits of the Mauritian species, O. rufiventer, have been very fairly observed, there seems to be nothing in them that might account for the peculiarity. The genus Oxynotus is generally placed in the group known as Campophagide, most or all of which are distinguished from the Laniidx (to which they seem nearly allied) by the feathers on the lower part of the back and on the rump having the basal portion of the shaft very stiff and the distal portion soft— a structure which makes that part of the body, on being touched by the finger, feel as though it were beset with blunt prickles. Hence the name of the genus conferred by Swainson, and intended to signify “prickly back.” The males, which look rather like miniature Grey Shrikes (Lanius excubttor and others), are—except on close exami- nation, when some slight differences of build and shade become discernible—quite indistinguishable; but the female of the one species has a reddish-brown back, and is bright ferruginous beneath, while the female of the other species is dull white beneath, transversely barred, as are the females of some Shrikes, with brown. Both sexes of each species, and the young of one of them, are described and figured in The Ibis for 1866 (pp. 275-280, pls. vii. and viii). (A. N.) OYER AND TERMINER, in English law, is one of the commissions by which a judge of assize sits (see AssizE). By the commission of oyer and terminer the commissioners (in practice the judges of assize, though other persons are named with them in the commission) are commanded to make diligent inquiry into all treasons, felonies, and misdemeanours whatever committed in the counties specified in the commission, and to hear and determine the same according to law. The

inquiry is by means of the grand jury ; after the grand jury has found the bills submitted to it, the commissioners proceed to hear and determine (oyer and terminer) by means of the petty jury. The words oyer and terminer are also used to

1 The only other instance cited by Darwin (Descent of Man, ii. pp. 192, 193) is that of two species of Paradisea; but therein the males differ from one another to a far greater degree than do those of Oxynotus.

denote the court which has jurisdiction to try offences within the limits to which the commission of oyer and terminer extends.

By 7 Anne c. 21 the crown has power to issue commissions of oyer and terminer in Seotland for the trial of treason and mis- prision of treason. Three of the lords of justiciary must be in any such commission. An indietment for either of the offences mentioned may be removed by certiorari from the court of oyer and terminer into the court of justiciary.

In the United States oyer and terminer is the name given to courts of eriminal jurisdiction in some States, ¢.g., New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Georgia.

OYSTER. The use of this name in the vernacular js equivalent to that of Ostrea in zoological nomenclature ; there are no genera so similar to Ostrea as to be confounded with it in ordinary language. Ostrea is a genus of Lamel- libranch Molluscs, belonging to the third order Monomya, the valves of its shell being closed by a single large adductor muscle. The degeneration produced by sedentary habits in all lamellibranchs has in the oyster reached its most advanced stage. The muscular projection of the ventral surface called the foot, whose various modifications characterize the different classes of Mollusca, is almost entirely aborted. The two valves of the shell are unequal in size, and of different shape; the left valve is larger, thicker, and more convex, and on it the animal rests in its natural state. This valve, in the young oyster, is attached to some object on the sea-bottom ; in the adult it is some times attached, sometimes free. The right valve is flat, and smaller and thinner than the left. In a corresponding manner the right

side of the animal’s body is somewhat less developed than the left, and to this extent there isa departure from the bilateral symmetry characteristic of lamellibranchs.

The organization of the oyster, as compared with that of a typical lamellibranch such as Anodon (see MoLtusca), is brought about by the reduction of the anterior part of the body accompanying the loss of the anterior adductor, and the enlargement of the posterior region. The pedal ganglia and auditory organs have disappeared with the foot, at all events have never been detected; the labial ganglia are very minute, while the parieto-splanchnic are well developed, and constitute the principal part of the nervous system.

According to Spengel the pair of ganglia near the mouth, variously called labial or cerebral, represent the cerebral pair and pleural pair of a gastropod combined, and the parieto-splanchnic pair correspond to the visceral ganglia, the commissure which connects them with the cerebro-pleural representing the visceral commissure. Each of the visceral ganglia is connected or combined with an olfactory ganglion underlying an area of special- ized epithelium, which constitutes the olfactory organ, the osphradium. This view (which, it may be pointed out, differs from that given under Motzvusca) alone admits of a satisfactory comparison between the lamellibranch and the gastropod ; if the parieto-splanchnic were merely an olfactory ganglion its connexion by a commissure with its fellow would be an abnormality, and the olfactory ganglion in the lamellibranch would innervate the gills, adductor muscle, mantle, and rectum, parts which in gastropods are innervated from the visceral ganglia. The heart and pericardial chamber in the oyster lie along the anterior face of the adductor muscle, almost perpendicular to the direction of the gills, with which in Anodon they are parallel. In Anodon and the majority of lamelli- branchs the ventricle surrounds the intestine; in the oyster the two are quite independent, the intestine pass- ing above the pericardium. The renal organs of the oyster were discovered by Hoek to agree in their mor- phological relations with those of other lamellibranchs.

The generative organs of the oyster consist of a system of branching cavities on each side of the body lying immediately beneath the surface. All the cavities of a side are ultimately in communication with an efferent duct opening on the surface of the body a little above the line of attachment of the gills. The genital opening on each side is situated in a depression of the surface into which the renal organ also opens. The genital products are derived from the cells which line the cavities of the genital organs. The researches of Hoek have shown that in the same oyster the genital organs at one time produce ova, at another spermatozoa, and that consequently the oyster does not fertilize itself. How many times the alternation of sex may take place in a season is not known. It must be borne in mind that in what follows the species of the European coasts, Ostrea edulis, is under consideration. The ova are fertilized in the genital duct, and before their escape have undergone the earliest stages of segmentation. After escaping from the genital aperture they find their way into the infra-branchial part of the mantle cavity of the parent, probably by passing through the supra-branchial chamber to the posterior extremity of the gills, and then being conducted by the inhalent current caused by the cilia of the gills into the infra-branchial chamber. In the latter they accumulate, being held together and fastened to the gills by a white viscid secretion. The mass of ova thus contained in the oyster is spoken of by oyster fishers as “white spat,” and an oyster containing them is said to be “sick.” While in this position the ova go through the series of changes figured in vol. xvi. p. 638 (fig. 6). At the end of a fortnight the white spat has become dark- coloured from the appearance of coloured patches in the developing embryos. The embryos having then reached the condition of “trochospheres” escape from the mantle cavity and swim about freely near the surface of the water among the multitude of other creatures, larval and adult, which swarm there. The larve are extremely minute, about =, inch long and of glassy transparency, except in one or two spots which are dark brown. From the trochosphere stage the free larve pass into that of “‘veligers.” How long they remain free is not known; Prof. Huxley kept them in a glass vessel in this condition fora week. Ultimately they sink to the bottom and fix themselves to shells, stones, or other objects, and rapidly take on the appearance of minute oysters, forming white disks ;’, inch in diameter. The appearance of these minute oysters constitutes what the fishermen call a “ fall of spat.” The experiment by which Hoek conclusively proved the change of sex in the

oyster was as follows. In an oyster containing white spat microscopic examination of the genital organs shows nothing but a few unexpelled ova. An oyster in this condition was kept in an aquarium by itself for a fortnight, and after that period its genital organs were found to contain multitudes of spermatozoa in all stages of development.

The breeding season of the European oyster lasts from May to September. The rate of growth of the young oyster is, roughly speaking, an inch of diameter in a year, but after it has attained a breadth of 3 inches its growth 18 much slower. Prof. Mébius is of opinion that oysters over twenty years of age are rare, and that most of the adult Schleswig oysters are seven to ten years old.

The development of the American oyster, O. virginiana, and of the Portuguese oyster, O. angulata, is very similar to that of 0. edulis, except that there is no period of incubation within the mantle cavity of the parent in the case of these two species. Hencc ; 1s that so-called artificial fertilization is possible; that is to say, < fertilization may be allowed to take place in a tank or aqua- mum in which the conditions are under control. But if it is possible to procure a supply of spat from the American oyster by

Keeping the swarms of larva in confinement, it ought to be pos-

sible in the case of the European oyster. All that would be necessary would be to take a number of mature oysters containing white spat and lay them down in tanks till the larvee escape. This would be merely carrying oyster culture a stcp further back, and instead of collecting the newly fixed oysters, to obtain the frce larvee in numbers and so insure a, fall of spat independently of the uncertainty of natural conditions.

Natural beds of oyster occur on stony and shelly bottoms at depths varying from 3 to20 fathoms. Innature the beds are liable to variations, and, although Prof. Huxley is somewhat sceptical on this point, it seems that they are easily brought into an unproduc- tive condition by over-dredging. Oysters do not flourish in water containing less than 3 per cent. salt; and hence they are absent from the Baltic. The chief enemies of oysters are the dog-whelk, Purpura lapitlus, and the whelk-tingle, Murex erinaeeus, which bore through the shells. Starfishes swallow oysters whole. Cliona, thie

boring sponge, destroys the shells and so injures the oyster; the boring annelid Leweodore also excavates the shell.

The wandering life of the larve makes it uncertain whether any of the progeny of a given oyster-bed will settle within its area and so keep up its numbers. It is known from the history of the Liimfjord beds that the larve may settle 5 miles from their place of birth.

The genus Ostrea has a world-wide distribution, in tropical and temperate seas; seventy species have been distinguished. Its nearest allies are Anomia among living forms, Gryphwa amibng fossils. For the so-called Pearl-Oyster see Peart. (J. T. C.).

Oyster Industry.

The oyster industry of the world is seated chiefly in the United States and France. Great Britain has still a few natural beds remaining, and a number of well-con- ducted establishments for oyster culture. Canada, Holland, Italy, Germany, Belgium, Spain, Portugal, Denmark, Norway, and Russia have also oyster industries, which are comparatively insignificant, and in the case of the two countries last named, hardly worthy of consideration in a statistical statement. Recent and accurate statistics are lacking except in two or three instances. A brief review by countries in the order of their importance is here pre- sented. .

United States.—This is by far the inost extensive of the fishery industries of the country, yielding products three times as valuable as those of the cod fishery and six times those of the whale fishery. In 1880 it employed 52,805 persons, and yielded 22,195,370 bushels, worth to the fishermen $9,034,861. On 13,047,922 bushels there is a rise of value in passing from producers to market, which amounts to $4,368,991, and results either from replanting or from packing in tin cans. The value of the capital invested in the industry is returned as $10,583,295. There are employed 4155 vessels, valued at $3,528,700, and 11,930 boats. The actual fishermen number 38,249, the shoresmen 14,556. Fully 80 per cent. of the total yield is obtained from the watcrs of Chesapeake Bay.

France.—The oyster industry of France employed in 1881 29,4312 men, women, and children in the parks, beds, and preserves. The number of such establishments upon the public domain was 32,364, with an area of 19,891 acres, and 970 establishments upon private property, with an area of 926 acres. From_ these 374,985,770 oysters were dredged during the season of 1880-81, from September 1 to June 15, worth 2,061,758 francs, while the total number of oysters disposed of during this period amounted to 680,372,750, worth 17,951,114 francs. This total includes the oysters dredged in the sea as well as those gathered from the arti- ficial breeding-grounds or parks.

Great Britain.—A brief discussion of the British oyster fisheries may: be found under FisHErtEs, vol. ix. p. 265, A recent estimate® gives the total value of the oysters obtained from British seas at £2,000,000, worth 2d. each, or, perhaps, 240,000,000 in all. An extensive import trade is carried on with the United States, which has grown up within the past decade, as is shown by the following statement* of import values:—1874, $41,419;

1 The statistical summary prepared for the Fisheries Division of the Tenth Census by Mr Ernest Ingersoll shows the details, by States, of the oyster industry of the whole country.

2 Bouchon-Brandely stated in 1877 that the industry of oyster culture in France supported a maritime population of 200,000. It is difficult to reconcile this statement with the official statistics.

3 That of Mr James G. Bertram in Brit. Quart, Rev. for January

1883.

- Derived from the records of the United States Treasury.

1875, $38,733 ; 1876, $99,012 ; 1877, $121,301 ; 1878, $254,815 ; 1879, $306,941 ; 1880, $366,403 ; 1881, $414,584 ; 1882, $372,111 ; 1883, $371,497.

Holland.—Since 1870 the beds in the province of Zealand have been greatly enriched by careful methods of culture and protection; and in 1881 the product amounted to 21,800,000 oysters, worth about 1,350,000 guilders.1 About half the product of the Duteh oyster fishcry is sent to England, and large quantitics of the young oysters are laid down to fatten in the English oyster-beds.

Germany.—Germany has a small oyster industry on the west coast of Schleswig-Holstein.2 According to Lindeman, the largest annual product of these beds has rarely exceeded 4,000,000 oysters. From 1859 to 1879 they were rented to a company in Flensburg for an annual payment of 80,000 marks. In 1879 the lease was trans- ferred to a Hamburg firm, who paid for that year 163,000 marks.

Italy.—Oyster culture in Italy, according to Bouchon-Brandely,? is carried on in only one locality, Taranto, though small quan- tities of natives are obtained from the Gulfs of Genoa and Naples, from the coasts of the Adriatic, and from the ponds of Corsica. The sea of Taranto is leased by the city to a company that pays an annual rent of 38,000 francs. The product of this body of water is estimated variously at from 6,000,000 to 10,000,000 oysters yearly. The entire annual product of Italy does not probably ex- ceed 20,000,000 oysters, valued at about £40,000.

Belgium.—Oyster culture is carried on upon a small scale at Ostend. There being no native beds, the seed oysters are brought from England, a practice which, according to Lindeman, originated as carly as 1765. The product probably does not exceed 10,000 bushels a year, and is consumed chiefly in Germany and Holland, though there is a small exportation.

Spain.—According’ to a recent report by: Don Francisco Sola, there are forty-three establishments in Spain for the cultivation of oysters and other shell-fisheries. The amount of oysters annually produced is estimated at 167,673 kilogrammes (368,880 Ib), valued at 50,296 pesetas (about £2000). These are exported to Algiers, France, Portugal, and South America.

Portugal.—There appear to be no statistics for Portugal. Con- siderable quantities of seed oysters are planted at present in the Bay of Arcachon and

elsewhere in France, and in England the Anglo-Portuguese oyster is apparently growing in favour.*

Denmark, —The very insignificant oyster fishery of Denmark has its seat chiefly in the Liimfjord and at Frederikshaven. All the oyster-beds, being Government property, are carefully protected by law. Statistics for late years are not accessible. In 1847 the product of the Fredcrikshaven beds was about 200,000 oysters; but the yield of late years has been much smaller. The Liimfjord beds were dis- covered about 1851. From 1876 to 1881 the Danish oyster fisheries were leased to a firm in Hamburg, which paid 240,000 kroner (£18,000) as yearly rental.

Russia,—Grimin states that a species of oyster, Ostrea adriatica, is found in considerable numbers along the coast of the Crimea, and is the object of a considerable trade. Oysters brought from Theodosia cost in St Petersburg about 3s, sterling the score.

Norway.—The average value of the yield for the five years ending 1881 was 7600 kroner (£420). The quantity produced in 1881 was 267 hectolitres (785 bushels), valued at 7000 kroner ‘(£390). The industry is seated for the most part in the districts of southern Trondhjem and Jarlsberg, the product of the latter province being nearly half that of all Norway.

Subjoined is a rough estimate of the total number of oysters obtained annually from the sea (North America, 5,572,000,000 ; Europe, 2,331,200,000):—

United States ®....5,550,000,000 | Germany …... ..... 4,000,000 Canadarenescr: ceca 2250003000) |Melainitime… asc. ece 2,500,000

SHSER op sopnnnos Sache 1,000,000 UREN Sl errecncineeeoooue: 680,400,000 | Portugal….....00 800,000 Great Britain …... 1,600,000,000 } Denmark …..... 200,000 LOWES NGL oaneBbacococe 218005000) RUSsia) ...00.0.062s.0- 00s 250,000 Vitalin cs corer 20,000,000 | Norway ….....0 250,000

SS ce

1 Hubreeht, “Oyster Culture and Oyster Fisheries of the Netherlands” (eonferenee paper, International Fisheries Exhibition) ; Hoek, “ Ueber Austernzucht in den Niederlanden” (cireular 2, Deutsche Fischerei- Verein, 1879 ; translated in Report of the United States Fish Commis- sion, part viii. pp. 1029-35).

2 Mobius, Die Auster und die Austernwirthschaft (1877, pp. 126; translated in Report of the United States Fish Commission, part vili. pp. 683-751),

3 Rapport au Ministre de U Instruction sur la pisciculture en France et L’Ostréiculture dans la Méditerranée (Paris, 1878) ; the portion relating to oyster culture in the Mediterranean is translated in the Report of the United States Fish Commission, part viii. pp. 907-28.

“See Renaud, Notice sur I’ Huttre Portugaise et Francaise cultivée

dans la Baie @ Arcachon ; translated in the Report of the United States Fish Commission, part viii. pp. 931-41. * On basis of 250 oysters to the bushel.

Th b ‘ 150 to 400. @ number varies from

OY s TLR

The oyster industry is rapidly passing from: the hands of the fisherman into those of the oyster culturist. The oyster being sedentary, except for a few days in the earliest stages of its existence, is easily exterminated in any given locality ; since, although it may not be possible for the fishermen to rake up from the bottom every individual, wholesale methods of capture soon result in covering up or otherwise destroying the oyster banks or reefs, ag the communities of oysters are technically termed. The main difference between the oyster industry of America and that: of Europe lies in the fact that in Europe the native beds have long since been practically destroyed, perhaps not more than 6 or 7 per cent. of the oysters of Europe passing from the native beds directly into the hands of the consumer. It is probable that 60 to 75 per cent. are reared from the spat in artificial parks, the remainder having been laid down for a time to increase in size and flavour in shoal waters along the coasts. In the United States, on the other hand, from 30 to 40 per cent. are carried from the native beds directly to market. The oyster

fishery is everywhere, except in localities where the natural beds are nearly exhausted, carried on in the most reckless manner, and in all directions oyster grounds are becoming deteriorated, and in some cases have been entirely destroyed. It remains to be seen whether the Government of the States will regulate the oyster fishery before it is too late, or will permit the destruction of these most important reservoirs of food. At present the oyster is one of the cheapest articles of diet in the United States; and, though it can hardly be expected that the price of American oysters will always remain so low, still, taking into consideration the great wealth of the natural beds along the entire Atlantic coast, it seems certain that a moderate amount of protection will keep the price of seed oysters far below European rates, and that the immense stretches of submerged land especially suited for oyster planting may be utilized and made to produce an abundant harvest at much less cost than that which accompanies the complicated system of culture in vogue in France and Holland.

The most elaborate system of oyster culture is that practised at Arcachon and elsewhere in France, and, to a limited extent since 1865, on the island of Hayling, near Portsmouth, in England. The young oysters, having been collected in the breeding season upon tiles or hurdles, are laid down in artificial ponds, or in troughs, where the water is supplied to them at the discretion of their pro- prietors. The oysters are thus kept under control like garden plants from the time they are laid down to that of delivery to commercial control. The numerous modifiea- tions of this system are discussed in various recent reports.®

The simplest form of oyster culture is the preservation of the natural oyster-beds. Upon this, in fact, depends the whole future of the industry, since it is not probable that any system of artificial breeding can be devised which will render it possible to keep up a supply without at least occasional recourse to seed oysters produced under natural conditions. It is the opinion of almost all who have studied the subject that any natural bed may in time be destroyed by overfishing (perhaps not by removing all the oysters, but by breaking up the colonies, and delivering over the territory which they once occupied to other kinds of animals), by burying the breeding oysters, by covering

6 See especially the following English parliamentary papers :— Report of the Commissioners appointed to inquire into the Present State of the Oyster Fisheries of France, England, and Ireland, 1870 ; Report of the Select Committee appointed to inquire what are the Reasons for the Present Searcity of Oysters, &c., 1876 ; Report on the Principal Oyster Fisheries of France, with a short description of the System of Oyster Culture pursued at some of the most important places, &e., 1878.

en

\

O YS

up the projections suitable for the reception of spat, and by breaking down, through the action of heavy dredges, the ridges which are especially fitted to be seats of the colonies.. The immense oyster-beds in Pocomoke Sound, Maryland, have practically been destroyed by over-dredg- ing, and many of the other beds of the United States are seriously damaged. The same is doubtless true of all the beds of Europe. It has also been demonstrated that under proper restriction great quantities of mature oysters, and seed oysters as well, may be taken from any region of natural oyster-beds without injurious effects. Parallel cases in agriculture and forestry will occur to every one. Mobius, in his most admirable essay Die Auster und Dre Austernwirthschaft, has pointed out the proper means of preserving natural beds, declaring that, if the average profit from a bed of oysters is to remain permanently the same, a sufficient number of mother oysters must be left in it, so as not to diminish the capacity of maturing. He further shows that the productive capacity of a bed can only be maintained in one of two ways :— (1) by diminish- ing the causes which destroy the young oysters, in which case the number of breeding oysters may safely be decreased ; this, however, is practicable only under such favourable conditions as occur at Arcachon, where the beds may be kept under the constant control of the oyster- culturist ; (2) by regulating the fishing on the natural beds in such a manner as to make them produce perma- nently the highest possible average quantity of oysters. Since the annual increase of half-grown oysters is estimated by him to be four hundred and twenty-one to every thousand

full-grown oysters, he claims that not more than 42 per cent. of these latter ought to be taken from a bed during a year.

The Schleswig-Holstein oyster-beds are the property of

the state, and are leased to a company whose interest it is to preserve their productiveness. The French beds are also kept under Government control. Not so the beds of Great Britain and America, which are as a general rule open to all comers,? except when some close-time regulation is in force. Prof. Huxley has illustrated the futility of “close-time ” in his remark that the prohibition of taking oysters from an oyster-bed during four months of the year is not the slightest security against its being stripped clean during the other eight months. “ Suppose,” he continues, “that in a country infested by wolves, you have a flock of sheep, keeping the wolves off during the lambing season will not afford much protection if you withdraw shepherd and dogs during the rest of the year.” The old close-time laws were abolished in England in 1866, and returned to in 1876, but no results can be traced to the action of parliament in either case. Prof. Huxley’s conclusions as regards the future of the oyster industry in Great Britain are doubtless just as applicable to other countries,—that the only hope for the oyster consumer lies in the encouragement of oyster-culture, and in the development of some means of breeding oysters under such conditions that the spat shall be safely deposited. Oyster culture can evidently be carried on only by private enterprise, and the problem for legislation to solve is how

SS eee eee Eee ee 1 Bven Prof. Huxley, the most ardent of all opponents of fishery legislation, while denying that oyster-beds have been permanently annihilated by dredging, practically admits that a bed may be reduced to such a condition that the oyster will only be able to recover its former state by a long struggle with its enemies and competition, —in faet that it must re-establish itself much in the same way as they have aequired possession of new grounds in Jutland, a process which, according to his own statement, occupied thirty years (Lecture at the Royal Institution, May 11, 1883, printed with additions in the Hnglish Mlustrated Magazine, i. pp. 47-55, 112-21). : * Connecticut has within a few years greatly benefited its oyster industry by giving to oyster-culturists a fee simple title to the lands under control by them.

” No steamers are allowed to be used.

TER 109

to give such rights .of property upon those shores which are favourable to oyster culture as may encourage com- petent persons to invest their money in that undertaking. Such property right should undoubtedly be extended to natural beds, or else an area of natural spawning territory should be kept under constant control and surveillance by Government, for the purpose of maintaining an adequate supply of seed oysters. ,

The existing legislation in the United States is thus admirably summarized by Lieutenant Francis Winslow :3—

“The fishery is regulated by the laws of the various States, the Federal Government exercising no control, and consequently the conditions under which the pursuit is followed are many and various. At the present time the laws relating to the oyster fishery may be said to be based upon one of two general principles. The first, the basis for the regulations of most of the States, con- siders the oyster-beds to be inalienable common property. Laws based upon this principle are generally of a protective nature, and are in reality regulations of the State, made by it in its capacity of gnardian of the common property. The second principle assumes the right of the State to dispose of the area at the bottom of its rivers, harbours, and estuaries, and, having disposed of it, to consider the lessee or owner as alone responsible for the success or failure of his enterprises, and the State in no way called upon to afford him other assistance than protection in legitimate rights. In general terms, under the first principle the beds are held in common 3 under the second, in severalty. But one State permits the pre- emption of an unlimited tract of bottom, and the holding of it in fee—the State of Connecticut, Rhode Island leases her ground for a term of years, at $10 per acre; but the person holding an area has no legal power of disposing of it beyond the limits of the lease. Massachusetts, New York, New Jersey, Maryland, and Virginia all permit pre-emption of small tracts by individuals for indefinite periods, and on the coast of Long Island the various towns along the shore lease tracts of considerable extent to private cultivators.

“ Various restrictions are also placed upon the time and manner of conducting the fisheries. Some of the States, noticeably Virginia, prohibit entirely the use of the dredge or scrape; others, noticeably New Jersey, prohibit such nse in some localities, and permit it in others. All the States, with one exception, prohibit the use of steam vessels or machinery, or fishing by other than their own inhabit- ants. Connecticut again forms the exception, and quite a large fleet of steam dredging vessels are employed on her beds.

“The laws of the various States have several common features. All general fishing is suspended during the summer months. No night fishing is permitted. No proprietary rights to particular areas are given beyond the right to ‘plant’ a limited number of oysters on bottoms adjoin- ing land owned by the planter, and peace officer’s and local authorities are charged with execution of laws relating to the fishery. In a few States or localities licenees are required to be obtained for cach fishing vessel; and in one State, Maryland, a regular police force and fleet of vessels are maintained to support the law. ‘These regulations are easily evaded, except those relating to the steamers and pre-emption of ground. Naturally, no one will put down oysters without being able to protect them ; and steamers are too readily detected to make their illegal employment possible. In Connecticut and Rhode Island, the beds being virtually private property, there is no restriction of the fishery, exeept that it shall not be conducted at night.”

The method of gathering oysters is simple, and much the same in all parts of the world, the implements in use being nippers or tongs with long handles, rakes, which are simply many-pronged nippers, and dredges. The subjomed account of the American method is abridged from that of Lieutenant Winslow:—

The character of the vessel or boat used depends in a tneasure npon the means. of the fisherman and the constancy of his employment, and is also influenced by the eharacter of the oyster ground, its location, and the laws governing the fish- ing. The last-named condition also decides the implement to be used; when permitted, it is the dredge—either the enormous one employed by the steamers, the smaller toothed rake-dredge, or smooth-scrape. When dredging is prohibited, the tongs, or nippers, with

two handles, sometimes 30 feet long, are uscd. The dredges are usually worked by an apparatus termed a ‘‘winder,” muny forms of which are employed, the best and most recent form being so designed that if, while reeling in, the dredge should ‘hang,” that is, become immovably fixed by some obstruction on the bottom, the drum is at once automatically thrown out of gearing, and the dredge-rope allowed to run out. Small craft use a more simple and less expensive description of winch, and frequently haul in by hand, while the steam dredgers have powerful machinery adapted for this special purpose. The number of men employed varies with the size of the craft; two, three, and four men are sufficient on board the smaller dredgers, while the larger carry ten and twelve.

While a great many oysters are transported in the shell to markets distant from the seaboard, the largest part of the inland consumption is of ‘‘opened” or “shucked” oysters, and nearly every oyster. dealer along the coast employs a larger or smaller number of persons to open the oysters and pack and ship the meats. Some of these establishments are small, having as few as half a dozen people engaged ; others are large buildings or sheds, and employ hundreds of “shuckers.” After having been removed from their shells and thoroughly washed, the oysters thus dealt with are transferred either to small cans, holding a quart of oysters, or to barrels, kegs, or tubs; when packed in tubs, kegs, or batrels, they goin bulk, with a large piece of ice; when packed in the tin cans, the cans are arranged in two rows inside of a long box, a vacant space being left in the centre, between the rows, in which is placed a large block of ice. The cans are carefully soldered up before packing, and together with the ice are laid in saw- dust. Oysters packed in this way can, in cool weather, be kept a week or more, und sent across the continent, or to the remote western towns.

The steaming process is that by which the “cove” oysters are prepared. The term “cove” is applied to oysters put up in cans, hermetically sealed, and intended to be preserved an indefinite time. The trade in coves is confined principally to the Chesapeake region, and the process of preparing them is as follows. The oysters, usually the smaller sizes, are taken from the vessels and placed in cars of iron frame-work, 6 or 8 feet long. These cars run ona light jron track, which is laid from the wharf through the ‘‘steam-chest” or ‘‘ steam- box” to the shucking shed. As soon as a car is filled with oysters

(in the shell) it is run into the steam-chest, a rectangular oak box, 15 to 20 feet long, lined with sheet iron and fitted with appliances for turning in steam ; the doors, which wok vertically and shut closely, are then let down, the steam admitted, and the oysters

3 Catalogue of the Economic Mollusca exhibited by the United States National Museum at the International Fisheries Exhibition, London, 1883.

eo

left for ten or fifteen minutes. The chest is then opened and the cars run into the shucking shed, their places in the chest being immediately occupied by other cars, In the shed thie cars are surrounded by the shuckers, each provided with a knife and a can arranged so as to hook to the upper bar of tlie iron frame-work of the car. The steaming having caused the oyster shells to open more or less widely, there is no difficulty in getting out the meats, and the cars are very rapidly emptied. The oysters are then washed in iced water and transferred to the " fillers'"' table. The cans, having been filled, are removed to another part of the room and packed in a cylindrical, iron crate or basket, and lowered into a large cylindrical kettle, called the 'process kettle" or ''tub," where they are again steamed. After this they are placed, crate and all, in the ''cooling tub;" and when sufficiently cool to be handled, the cans are taken to the soldering table, and there '' capped"—that is, are hermetically closed. From the ''cappers" they are transported to another department, labelled, and packed in boxes for shipment. The whole steaming pro- cess will not occupy an hour from the time the oysters leave the vessel until they are ready for shipment,

The extension of the area of the natural beds is the second step in oyster culture. As is well known to zoolo- gists, and as has been very lucidly set forth by Prof. Mobius in the essay already referred to, the location of oyster banks is sharply defined by absolute physical con- ditions, Within certain definite limits of depth, tempera- ture, and salinity, the only requirement is a suitable plate for attachment. Oysters cannot thrive where the ground is composed of moving sand or where mud is deposited ; consequently, since the size and number of these places are very limited, only a very small percentage of the young oysters can find a resting-place, and the remainder perish. Mobius estimates that for every oyster brought to market from the

Holstein banks, 1,045,000 are destroyed or die. By putting down suitable “cultch” or “stools” immense quantities of the wandering fry may be induced to settle, and are thus saved. As a rule the natural beds occupy most of the suitable space in their own vicinity. Unoccu- pied territory may, however, be prepared for the reception of new beds, by spreading sand, gravel, and shells over muddy bottoms, or, indeed, beds may be kept up in loca- tions for permanent natural beds, by putting down mature oysters and cultch just before the time of breeding, thus giving the young a chance to fix themselves before the currents and enemies have had time to accomplish much in the way of destruction.

The collection of oyster spat upon artificial stools has been practised from time immemorial. As early as the 7th century, and probably before, the Romans practised a kind of oyster culture in Lake Avernus, which still sur- vives to the present day in Lake Fusaro. Piles of rocks are made on the muddy bottoms of these salt-water lakes, and around these are arranged circles of stakes, to which are often attached bundles of twigs. Breeding oysters are piled upon the rookeries, and their young become attached to the stakes and twigs provided for their reception, where they are allowed to remain until ready for use, when they are plucked off and sent to the market. A similar though ruder device is used in the Poquonnock river in Connecti- cut. Birch trees are thrown into the water near a natural bed of oysters, and the trunks and twigs become covered with spat ; the trees are then dragged out upon the shore by oxen, and the young fry are broken off and laid down in the shallows to increase in size. In 1858 the method of the Italian lakes were repeated at St Brieuc under the direction of Prof. P. Coste, and from these experiments the art of artificial breeding as practised in France has been developed. There is, however, a marked distinc- tion between oyster culture and oyster breeding, as will be shown below. The natural beds of France in the Bay of Arcachon, near Auray in Brittany, near Cancale and Gran- ville in Normandy, and elsewhere, are, however, carefully cultivated, as it is necessary that they should be, for the support of the breeding establishments.}

More or less handling or ‘ working” of the oysters is necessary both for natural and transplanted beds. The most elaborate is that which has been styled the ‘‘ English system,” which is carried on chiefly near the mouth of

the Thames, by the Whitstable and Colchester corporations of fishermen and others. This consists in

1 See Report of the United States Fish Commission art viii 739-41, 753-59, 885-903, 931-41, »P * Pp.

OY s Ph

laying down beds in water a fathom or more in depth at low water and constantly dredging over the grounds, even during the close time, except during the period when the spat is actually settling, By this means the oysters are frequently taken out of the water and put back again, and it is claimed that in this way their enemies are bafficd and the ground put in better condition to receive the spat. As a matter of fact, however, the oysters have not for many years multiplied under this treatment, and the system is practically one of oyster-parking rather than one of oyster-culture. One of the advantages of the frequent handling is that the fishermen, in putting the oysters back, can assort them by sizes, and arrange them conveniently for the final gathering for market purposes.

American oyster culture, as practised in the ‘‘ East River” (the western end of Long Island Sound), in eastern Connecticut, and to some extent in Long Island and New Jersey, is eminently success. ful and profitable, and there seems to be no reason to doubt its permaneuce. conducted as it is in close proximity to the natural beds, and with due regard for preservation. In the Long Island Sound alone, in 1879, the labours of 1714 men produced 997,000 bushels, or perhaps 250,000,000 of native oysters, valued at $847,925, while all France produced in the following season 375,000, worth about $412,000, There was also a side product of 450,000 bushels (122,000,000) of transplanted oysters, worth $350,000, handled by the same men in the American beds, while France employed an additional force of 28,000 people to produce 305,000, 000 artificially bred oysters, worth $3,179,000. The Long Island Sound system cousists simply in distributing over the grounds, just before the spawning season, quantities of old oyster shells to which the young oysters become attached, and left undisturbed for from three to five years, when, having reached maturity, they are dredged for use. Spawning oysters are freqnently put down in the spring, two months before the ground is shelled ; this is done even when the natural

beds are near, but is not so essential as when a rather remote piece of bottom is to be colonized.?

An excellent summary ofthe methods of planting in different parts ofthe United States may be found in Winslow's paper already quoted.

The laying down or temporary deposit of dredged oysters in estuaries on floats or in tanks, to fatten, increase in size, or improve in flavour, is a concomitant of oyster culture, and may be used in connexion with any of the systems above referred to. It is in no sense oyster culture, since it has no relation to the maintenance of the supply. A system of this kind has been practised since the 16th century at Marennes and La Tremblade on the west coast of Franee, where oysters from natural beds are placed in shallow basins communicating with the sea during the spring tides, and where they obtain food which gives them a green colour and a peculiar flavour much Pe by Parisian epicures.? Similar methods of parking are practised at Caucale and Granville.

In England, brood oysters are laid down in fattening beds on the coast of Essex and in the Thames estuary, where they acquire deli- cacy of flavour, and to some extent, especially in the Thames, the green colour already referred to. Belgium las also, near Ostend, fattening beds supplied with foreign spat, chiefly from England.

In the United States an extensive business is carried on in laying down seed oysters from the Chesapeake Bay in the estuaries of southern New England and the Middle States.

Oyster-culturists practise in many places what is called ‘‘ plump- ing," or puffing up oysters for market by exposing them for a short time to the effects of water fresher than that in which they grew. By this process the animal does not acquire any additional matter except the water, which is taken up in great amount, but it loses a part of its saltness, and, in flavour, becomes more like an oyster from brackish waters.

There are large oyster reservoirs at Husum in Schleswig- Holstein, and at Ostend, which serve the double purpose of fattening the oysters and of

keeping a uniform supply for the markets at times unsuited to the prosecution of the fishery.

The artificial impregnation of oyster eggs has been successfully accomplished by many experimenters, and in 1888 Mr John A. Ryder of the United States Fish Commission succeeded in confining the swimming embryos in collectors until they had formed their shells and become fixed. The utility of this experiment seems to consist in the greater facility which it gives to oyster-culturists in securing a sure supply of spat, independent of the vicissitudes which currents and changes of weather entail upon those who rely upon its deposit under natural conditions. The spat thus secured can be reared either by the American, English, or French systems. It isnot probable that the common European species, Ostrea edulis, can be so readily handled by this method as the Portuguese species, Ostrea angulata, or the American, Ostrea virginica, though this can only be determined by trial. For the details of Mr Ryder's experiment, see the Bulletin of the United States Fish Commis- sion, vol. ii. pp. 281-94. (G. B. G.)

2 The Oyster Industry, by Ernest Ingersoll (Washington, 1881). 3 Mobius, Die Auster und Die Austernwirthschaft ; and De Bon, Ostriéculture en 1875.

OYSTER-CATCHER, a bird's name which does not seem to occur in books until 1731, when Catesby (Nat. Hist. Carolina, i. p. 85), used it for a species which he observed to be abundant on the oyster-banks left bare at low water in the rivers of Carolina, and believed to feed principally upon those molluses. In 1 776 Pennant applied the name to the allied British species, which he and for nearly two hundred years many other English writers had called the "Sea-Pie." The change, in spite of the mis- nomer—for, whatever may be the case elsewhere, in England the bird does not feed upon oysters —met with general approval, and the new name has, at least in books, almost wholly replaced what seems to. have been the older one! The Oyster-catcher of Europe is the Hematopus ? ostralegus of Linneus, belonging to the group now called Limicole, and is generally included in the Family Charadriide ; though some writers have placed it in one of its own, LFamatopodide, chiefly on account of its peculiar pill—a long thin wedge, ending ina vertical edge. Its feet also are much more fleshy than are generally seen in the Plover Family. In its strongly-contrasted plumage of black and white, with a coral-coloured bill, the Oyster- catcher is one of the most conspicuous birds of the European coasts, and in many parts is still very common. It is nearly always seen paired, though the pairs collect in prodigious flocks ; and, when these are broken up, its shrill but musical cry of " tu-lup," " tu-lup," somewhat pettishly repeated, helps to draw attention to it. Its wariness, how- ever, is very marvellous, and even at the breeding-season, when most birds throw off their shyness, it is not easily approached within ordinary gunshot distance. The hen- bird commonly lays three clay-coloured eggs, blotched with black, in a very slight hollow on the ground, not far from the sea. As incubation goes on the hollow is somewhat deepened, and perhaps some haulm is added to its edge, so that at last a very fair nest is the result. The young, as in all Limicole, are at first clothed in down, so mottled in colour as closely to resemble the shingle to which, if they be not hatched upon it, they are almost immediately taken by their parents, and there, on the slightest alarm, they squat close to elude observation. 'This species occurs on the British coasts (very seldom straying inland) all the year round; but there is some reason to think that those we have in winter are natives of more northern latitudes, while our home-bred birds leave us. It ranges from Iceland to the shores of the Red Sea, and lives chiefly on marine worms, crustacea, and such molluscs as it

is able to obtain. It is commonly supposed to be capable of prizing limpets from their rock, and of opening the shells of mussels; but, though undoubtedly it feeds on both, further evidence as to the way in which it procures them is desirable. Mr Harting informs the writer that the bird seems to lay its head sideways on the ground, and then, grasping the limpet's shell close to the rock between the mandibles, use them as scissor-blades to cut off the mollusc from its sticking-place. The Oyster-catcher 18 not highly esteemed as a bird for the table.

Differing from this species in the possession of a longer

1 It seems however very possible, judging from its equivalents in other European languages, such as the Frisian Oestervisscher, the German Augsterman, Austernfischer, and the like, that the name _ Oyster-catcher" may have been not a colonial invention but indigenous to the mother-country, though it had not found its way Into print before. The French Huttrier, however, appears to be a word coined by Brisson. "'Sea-Pie" has its analogues in the French Pic-de- Mer, the German Meerelster, Secelster, and so forth.

~ Whether it be the Hamatopus whose name is found in some editions of Pliny (lib. x. cap. 47) is at best doubtful. Other editions have Himantopus; but Hardouin prefers the former reading. Both words have passed into modern ornithology, the latter as the generic

hame of the Sriut (g.v.); and some writers have blended the two in the strange and impossible compound Hamantopus.

"Ti

bill, in having much less white on its back, in the paler colour of its mantle, and in a few other points, is the ordinary American species, already mentioned, Hematopus palliatus. Except that its call-note, judging from description, is unlike that of the European bird, the habits of the two seem to be perfectly similar ; and the same may be said indeed of all the other species. The Falkland Islands are frequented by a third, H. leucopus, very similar to the first, but with a black wing-lining and paler legs, while the Australian Region possesses a fourth, H. longirostris, with a very long bill

as its name intimates, and no white on its primaries. China, Japan, and possibly eastern Asia in general have an Oyster-catcher which seems to be intermediate between the last and the first. This has received the name of H. osculans; but doubts have been expressed as to its deserving specific recognition. Then we have a group of species in which the plumage is wholly or almost wholly black, and among them only do we find birds that fulfil the implication of the scientific name of the genus by having feet that may be called blood-red. H. niger, which fre- quents both coasts of the northern Pacific, has, it is true, yellow legs, but towards the extremity of South America its place is taken by H. ater, in which they are bright red, and this bird is further remarkable for its laterally com- pressed and much upturned bill. The South African ZZ, capensis has also scarlet legs; but in the otherwise very similar bird of Australia and New Zealand, H. unicolor, these members are of a pale brick-colour. (A. N.) OZAKA, or Osaka, one of the three imperial cities of Japan (Kioto and Tokio or Yedo being the other two), is situated in a plain in the province of Setsu or Sesshiu, measuring about 20 miles from north to south and from 15 to 20 miles east and west, and bounded, except towards the west, where it opens on Idzuminada Bay, by hills of considerable height. It lies on both sides of the Yodogawa, or rather of its headwater the Aji (the outlet of Lake Biwa), and is so intersected by river-branches and canals as to suggest a comparison with Venice or Stockholm. River steamers ply between Ozaka and its port Hiogo or Kobe, and a railway between the two places, opened in 1873, has since been extended to Kioto and farther. The streets are not very broad, but for the most part they are regular and well kept; the houses, about 20 or 25 feet in height, are all built of wood. Shin-sai Bashi Suji, the principal thoroughfare, leads from Kitahama, the district lying on the south side of the Tosabori, to the iron suspen- sion bridge (Shin-sai Bashi) over the Dotom-bori. The foreign settlement is at Kawaguchi at the junction of the Shirinashi-gawa and the Aji-Kawa. It is almost deserted by the foreign merchants, who prefer to have their establishments at Kobe, but it is the seat of a number of European mission stations. Though the Buddhist temples of Ozaka number 1380 and the Shinto temples 538, few of them are of much note. The Buddhistic Tennoji, founded by Shotoku Tai-shi, and restored in 1664, covers an immense area at the south-east corner of the city, and

has a fine pagoda from which an admirable view of the

country is obtained. Two other Buddhist temples, which form a conspicuous object in the heart of the city, are occupied, one as a Government hospital and the other as a Government school. The principal secular buildings are the castle, the mint, and the arsenal. The castle was founded in 1584 by Hideyoshi; the enclosed palace, “ probably the finest building Japan ever saw,” survived the capture of the castle by Iyeyasu, and in 1867 and 1878 witnessed the reception of the foreign legations by the Tokugawa shoguns; but in the latter year it was fired by the Tokugawa party. Externally the whole castle is protected by a double enceinte of high and massive walls and broad moats—the outer moat from 80 to 120 yards across and

from 12 to 24 feet deep. Huge blocks of granite 40 feet by 10 or 20 feet occur in the masonry. The mint, erected by T. J. Waters, and organized by Major T. W. Kinder and twelve European officials, covers an area of 40 acres, and employs about 600 persons. It was opened in 1871. Both cannon and guns are manufactured in the arsenal. Apart from these Government establishments Ozaka is the seat of great industrial activity, possessing iron foundries, copper foundries, and rolling mills, antimony works, large glass works, paper mills, a sugar refinery, a cotton spin- ning mill, rice mills, an oil factory, sulphuric acid works, match factories, soap works, saké distilleries, a brewery (after the German pattern), shipyards, é&c. Bronzes, sulphuric acid, and matches are among its chief exports. In the surrounding district large quantities of rape-seed are grown. The population in 1872 was 271,992; in

1877, 284,105.

Ozaka owes its origin to Ren-nio Sho-nin, the 8th head of the Shin-Shin sect, who in 1495-6 bnilt, on the site now ocenpied by the castle, a temple which afterwards became the principal residence of his successors. In 1580, after ten years’ successful defence of his position, Ken-nio, the 11th “abbot,” was obliged to surrender ;

and in 1583 the victorious Hideyoshi made Ozaka his capital. The town was opened to foreign trade in 1868. OZANAM, Antotne Friprric (1813-1853), the

greatest name, as far as literary and historical criticism is concerned, of the Neo-Catholic movement in France during the first half of the 19th century, was born at Milan on April 18, 1813. His family is said (as the name suggests) to have been of Jewish extraction, and has a circumstantial though possibly fabulous genealogy of extraordinary length. At any rate it had been settled in the Lyonnais for many centuries. In the third generation before Frédéric it had reached distinction through Jacques Ozanam, a mathematician of eminence. The critic's father, Antoine Ozanam, served in the armies of the republic, but could not stomach the empire, and betook himself to commerce, teaching, and finally inedicine. The boy was brought up at Lyons, and was strongly influenced by one of his masters, the Abbé Noirot. His conservative and religious instincts showed themselves early, and he published a pamphlet against Saint-Simonianism in 1831, which attracted the attention of Lamartine. He was then sent to study law in Paris, where he fellin with the Ampére family, and through them with excellent literary society. He also came under the influence of the Abbé Gerbet, the soberest and most learned member of the religious school of Lamennais and Lacordaire. Ozanam, however, though he joined with all the fervour of youth in the Neo-Catholic polemic, never underwent the uncomfortable experiences of the direct followers of Lamennais. His journal (for in those years every one was a journalist) was not the Avenir, but the more orthodox Z'ribune Catholique of Bailly, and he with some other young nien founded the famous society of St Vincent de Paul, which was occupied in practical good works, Meanwhile he did not neglect his studies. He was called to the bar, and in 1838 won his doctor's degree in letters with a thesis on Dante, which was the beginning of his best-known book. A year later he was appointed to a professorship of commercial law at Lyons, and in another year assistant professor to Fauriel at the Sorbonne. On this latter precarious endowment he married, and visited Italy on his wedding tour. At Fauriel's death in 1844 he succeeded to the full professorship of foreign literature, and his future was thereby tolerably assured. He had, however, by no means a strong constitution, and he tried it severely by combining with his professorial work a good deal of literary occupation, while he still continued his custom of district-visiting as a member of the society of St Vincent de Paul. The short remainder of his life was extremely busy, though it was relieved at intervals by

visits to Italy, Brittany, England, and other places, He produced numerous books, and during the revolution of 1848 (of which, like not a few of his school, he took an unduly sanguine view) he once more became a journalist in the Hre Nowvelle and other papers for a short time, He was in London at the time of the Exhibition of 1851, In little more than two years from that date he died of consumption (which he had vainly hoped to cure by visiting Italy) on September 8, 1853, at the age of forty.

Ozanam deserves the phrase which has been attached to his name at the beginning of this article. He was more sincere, more learned, aud more logical than Chateaubriand, less of a political partisan and less of a literary sentimentalist than Montalembert. Whether his conception of a democratic Catholicism was a possible one is of course a matter of opinion, and it may be frankly admitted that, well ashe knew the Middle Ages, he looked at them too exclusively through the spectacles of a defender of the papacy. He confessed that his object was to “prove the contrary thesis to Gibbon’s.” And no donbt any historian, literary or other, who begins with the desire to prove a thesis is sure to go more or less wrong. But his pictures were not so much coloured by his prepossessions as some contemporary pictures on the other side, and he had not onlya great knowledge of medieval literature, but also a strong-and appreciative sympathy with medieval life.

His chief works (collected in 1855-58) were Bacon et St Thomas de Cantorbéry, 1836; Dante et la Philosophie Catholique, 1839 (2d ed., enlarged, 1845); Etudes Germaniques, 1847-49 ; Documents inédits pour servir & V Histoire d’Italie, 1850; Les Poéttes Franciscatns, 1852. There is an interesting life of him in English by K. O’Meara (2d ed., London, 1878).

OZOCERITH, or OZoKERITE (6fwv, odour-emitting, and Kynpos, wax; smelling wax, mineral wax), is a combustible mineral which may be designated as crude native PARAFFIN (q.v.), found in many localities in varying degrees of purity. The only commercial sources of supply however are in Galicia, principally at Boryslaff and Dzwieniasz. Hofstadter in 1854 examined an ozocerite from “ Boristoff near Drohobiez,” Galicia; he found it to consist chiefly of hydrocarbon which, after crystallization from alcohol, exhibited the composition CH, of the olefines; this, however, is

quite compatible with their being really “»arafiins,” C,H.,42, which latter formula for a large a coincides practically with C,,H,,. At and near Baku and in other places about the Caspian Sea, soft oily native paraffins, known as “ nefto-gil” or “‘ nefte-degil” and “ kir,” are found with other petroleum products. The theory of the formation of ozocerite now generally accepted is that it is a product of the decomposition of organic substances, which was originally like petroleum, but has lost its more volatile components by volatilization. All native petroleum in fact, like crude paraffin oil, holds solid neraffin in solution.

Galician ozocerite varies in consistence from that of a rather firm and hard wax to that of a soft adherent plastic mass, and in colour from yellow to a dark (almost black) green. Its melting-point ranges from 58° to 98° C. (136° to 208° Fahr,); the extra high melting point of the paraffin extracted from it is one of its distinguishing features. Besides the earthy impurities which are always associated with the mineral as found in the “nests” containing it, it is mixed with liquid hydrocarbons, resinous oxygenated compounds, and water. In the following table columns I. and II. show the yield in two distillations of a superior quality of the ozocerite of Boryslaff, as given by Perutz.

Pyrene and chrysene. Coke and loss Water

The purified paraffin of ozocerite makes excellent candles, which are said to give more light, weight for weight, than

OZ4Z0—-0Z0

those made from ordinary paraffin, besides being less easily fusible. Under the name of ceresin or ozocerotin a large proportion of the high-melting paraffin extracted from the mineral goes into commerce, to be used chiefly for the adulteration of beeswax. The various methods of refining used furnish certain proportions of soft paraffin, and of heavy and light oils as bye-products, which take their place in commerce beside the corresponding products from shale and petroleum. ae

A kind of mineral wax known as idrialine accompanies the mercury ore in Idria. According to Goldschmiedt it can be extracted by means of xylol,

amyl-alcohol, or turpentine, and also, without decomposition, by distillation in a current of hydro-

en or carbonicacid. Itisa white crystalline body, very difficultly fusible, boiling above 440° C, (824° F.), of the composition Cy)H»,0. Its solution in glacial acetic acid, by oxidation with chromic acid, yielded to Goldschmiedt a red powdery solid and a fatty acid fusing at 62° C., and exhibiting all the charactcrs of a mixture of palmitic and stearic acids.

OZONE has been defined and to some extent discussed under the heading CuEmisTRY, vol. v. p. 481.

From the time of Van Marum (1785) at least it was known that the passage of electric sparks through air is accompanied by the production of a peculiar smell; but the cause of this remained unknown until 1840, when Schénbein observed that a similar smell is exhibited by electrolytic oxygen (as obtained in the electrolysis of acidu- lated water), and also develops in the atmosphere of a vessel in which phosphorus suffers spontaneous oxidation at ordinary temperatures in the presence of water. The three kinds of odoriferous gas, he found, had the power of decom- posing iodide of potassium with liberation of iodine, and they agreed also in their behaviour to other reagents, whence he concluded that in all the three cases the smell was owing to the same peculiar substance which he called ozone (from dfew, to emit an odour). Numerous experi- ments confirmed his first impression that ozone is chem- ically similar to, though distinctly different from, chlorine, but he got no further towards establishing its nature. Having found, however, that dry phosphorus produces no ozone, and that ready-made ozone is destroyed by being passed through a heated glass tube, he surmised that ozone was a peroxide of hydrogen. This surmise was seemingly raised to a certainty by an investigation of Baumert's, who found that electrolytic (ozonized) oxygen, when de- ozonized by heat, yields water, and ascertained that the weight of water thus produced amounted to H,O=18 parts for every 41 = 4 × 127 parts of iodine which the same quantity of gas would have liberated if it had been de- ozonized by iodide of potassium. This, if true, would prove that ozone is H,O,,—a conclusion which passed current as an established fact, in reference to electrolytic ozone at least, until Andrews showed that Baumert's result was founded

upon incorrect observations. The merit of having discovered the true elementary composition of ozone belongs to Marignac and De la Rive, who proved that it can be produced, as easily and abundantly as in any other way, by the electrification of absolutely pure oxygen gas, whence it at once followed that—unless oxygen be a compound of two or more unknown elements—ozone cannot be anything else than an allotropic modification of oxygen,

With regard to the relations of the two kinds of oxygen to one another, our present knowledge is derived mainly from the work of Andrews and Prof. Tait. The first importaut result which they arrived at was that the ozonization of pure oxygen gas involves a contraction, and that consequently ozone is denser than oxygen gas. Presuming (with all their contemporaries) that in the de-ozoniza- tion of oxygen by iodide of potassium all the substance of the ozone 1s taken up by the reagent with elimination of its equivalent of lodine, they sought to determine the density of ozone by comparing the weight of oxygen-matter which goes into the iodide of potassium with the contraction involved in the process. But they obtained variable results, As their methods became more and more perfect,

the weight of unit volume of ozone grew greater and greater, and at last stood at oo. In other words, what they found and estab- lished finally was that the removal of ozone from oxygen by means of iodide of potassium involves no change of volume whatever, although de-ozounization by heat always leads to a (permanent) increase of volume. This result, to them and everybody else, appeared very singular ; but Andrews, after a while, found the cor- rect explanation. Supposing at a certain temperature and pressure one volume of ordinary oxygen contains a grains of matter, then one volume of ozone, being denser, contains a greater quantity of matter, say @+ grains; when the gas acts on iodide of potassium, the a grains come out as one volume of oxygen, while the x grains of surplus oxygen vanish in the iodide. In the decomposition by heat the x grains of surplus oxygen of course assume the form of x/a volumes of additional oxygen gas. It is no addition to Andrews’s explanation, but merely a close translation of it into the language of Avogadros law, to say that, if oxygen (proper) consists of

molecules O,, ozone must consist of molecules Oy4, (perhaps O41), and that in the iodide reaction this molecule breaks up into one molecule of oxygen gas and x atoms of oxygen which go to the reagent. What did constitute a new discovery was Berthelot's important observation that the conversion of ozonc into ordinary oxygen involves an evolution of heat which amounts to 29,600 units for every 16 parts of oxygen matter available for the liberation of iodine from iodide of potassium. What the real density of ozone is was made out with a high degree of probability by Soret. He took two equal volumes of the same supply of ozonized oxygen, and in one determined the contraction produced by shaking with oil of turpentine (which he assumes to take away the ozone as a whole), while the other served for the (direct or indirect) determination of the expansion involved in the destruction of the ozone by heat. He found this increase to amount to half a volume for every one volume of ozone present ; hence one volume of ozonc contains the matter of one and a half volumes of ordinary oxygen, 7.¢., its density is 1°5 (if that of ordinary oxygen is taken as unity), and its molecular weight is ¢x O,=0,. To check this result Soret determined the rate at which ozone diffuses into air, and compared it with the ratc, similarly determined, for carbonic acid. From the two rates, on the basis of Graham's law, he calculated the ratio of the density of ozone to that of carbonic acid, and found it in satisfactory accordance with O, :CO,=48 : 44.

From the facts that ozone is destroyed (7.e., converted into O,) at 270° (Andrews and Tait), and that this reaction is not reversible, it at once follows that it 1s impossible to convert oxygceu completely into ozone by electric sparks. Supposing the ozonization to have gone a certain way, each additional spark, besides producing ozone, will destroy some of that previously produced.

From Clerk Maxwell's notion concerning the distribution of tem- peratures amongst the molecules of a gas, it would follow that ozonized oxygen, even at ordinary tempcratures, will gradually relapse into the condition of plain oxygen, because, although the temperature as indicated by the thermometer may be only 20° C. (say), there are plenty of molecules at tempcratures above the tem- perature of incipient dissociation (which of course lies below 270°), and any ozone once destroyed will never come back. But, be this as it may, the lower the temperature of the oxygen treated with sparks

the greatcr the chance of the ozone formed to remain alive. This idea forms the basis of an important research by Hautefeuille and Chappuis, who, by operating upon oxygen at very low tem- peratures, produced unprecedentedly large percentages of ozone. By operating at 0° C. they produced a gas containing 14°9 per cent. by weight of ozone (presumably reckoned as O), while at —23° the percentage rosc to 21°4._ They subsequently (1882; Compt. Rend., xciv. p. 1249) succeeded in producing even liquid ozone, by applying a pressure of 125 atmospheres to richly ozonized oxygenat — 100°C. (the boiling point of liquefied ethylene). Liquid ozone is of a dark indigo-blue colour, which, as they tell us, is dis- tinctly visible even in ordinary ozonized oxygen if it is viewed in tubes about one metre long.

According to Carius the coefficient of absorption of ozone by water of +1° C. isabout 0°8; that is to say, one volume of water of 1°, if shaken with excess of pure ozoue at 1° and a pressure of 760 mm., would absorb 0°8 volume of ozone measured dry at 0° and 760 mm. pressure. But it is not certain that Carius's determina- tions are correct.

Antozone.—According to a now obsolete notion of Schonbein's, ordinary oxygen gas is a compound of two kinds of oxygen of which one is positively and the other negatively electrical. Ordinary ozone would be a mixture of the two in equal parts; but certain peroxides, according to Schénbein, contain the onc kind, others the other. He supported his view by many ingenious experimental arguments. Meissner and others, while adopting Schonbein's idea, somehow drifted into the notion that Schonbein's two kinds of oxygen correspond to two different substances, of which ordinary ozone is one. They naturally searched for the other, and of course did not fail to discover it; but their ‘“‘antozone,” when critically looked into, turned out to be peroxide of hydrogen. (W. D.)

MValilea=- 15

Plates IT, and III.

114

P

p is the sixteenth letter of our alphabet. In the original Phoenician form (see ALPHABET) it was not un- like a crook. In Greece it became angular (M), and later the downward strokes were made equal in length (II), though in the old Corinthian the rounded form still occurs, closely resembling the Phcenician type. In old Latin the angular form is found, as in Greece, but also the form with which we are familiar, with the bottom of the curve joined to the straight line. The old guess that P was at first a rude sketch of a mouth must be abandoned unless we are pre- pared tocredit the Phoenicians with having so far anticipated Mr Melville Bell's " visible speech." "4

The sound it denotes is a closed labial, differing from basa surd from a sonant; it is heard only when the lips open; there is then a percussion as the breath escapes, which constitutes thesound. The difference between breath and voice can be easily seen in the production of the two sounds, pand 6, When the lips are closed—as they must be closed (exactly in the same way) for each of the sounds—if we then try to articulate p, no effort can produce any kind of sound till the lips open ; the chorde vocales do not vibrate, and there is therefore nothing in the mouth but mere breath. But if we make as though we would sound 8, while still keeping the lips shut, a certain dull sound is quite audible, produced by the vocalized breath (or voice) within the mouth ; and the action of the top of the larynx in producing this sound may be distinctly felt. Of course this sound is not a 0; that does not come till the lips part.

It is noteworthy how very small is the number of pure English words which begin with p. Such words correspond to words which began with 6 in Greek, Latin, and other members of the parent Aryan speech ; and these are equally few. Nearly all the words which we have in English beginning with p are therefore borrowed, such as " pain," "pair," "police," which came to us from France; others are scientific terms, oftenest modelled upon the Greek. The reason of this deficiency of words in the parent language commencing with 6 is not easy to find.

The Latins denoted the sound of Greek ¢ by the double symbol ph; this is a p followed by a slight breathing, not so strong as an h; thus "philosophia" was pro- nounced not as we now pronounce it, but rather like

“p’hilosop’hia.” But this sound eventually passed into the /-sound, and it is so written in Italian (e.g., “filosofia ”) ; French and English have kept the old spelling, but not the sound. So here, as elsewhere, we have quite unneces- sarily two symbols, ph and f, expressing the same sound.

PACCHIA, GiroLamo prt, and PACCHIAROTTO (or PACCHIAROTTI), Jacopo. These are two painters of the Sienese school, whose career and art-work have been much misstated till late years. One or other of them produced some good pictures, which used to pass as the performance of Perugino; reclaimed from Perugino, they were assigned to Pacchiarotto; now it is sufficiently settled that the good works are by G. del Pacchia, while

nothing of Pacchiarotto’s own doing transcends mediocrity, The mythical Pacchiarotto who worked actively at Fon- tainebleau has no authenticity.

Girolamo del Pacchia, son of a Hungarian cannon- founder, was born, probably in Siena, in 1477. Having joined a turbulent club named the Bardotti, he disappeared from Siena in 1535, when the club was dispersed, and nothing of a later date is known about him. His most celebrated work is a fresco of the Nativity of the Virgin, in the chapel of S. Bernardino, Siena, graceful and tender, with a certain artificiality. Another renowned fresco, in the church of St Catherine, represents that saint on her visit to St Agnes of Montepulciano, who, having just expired, raises her foot by miracle. In the National Gallery of London there is a Virgin and Child. The forms of G, del Pacchia are fuller than those of Perugino (his principal model of style appears to have been in reality Franciabigio) ; the drawing is not always unexcep- tionable ; the female heads have sweetness and_ beauty of feature ; and some of the colouring has noticeable force.

Pacchiarotto was born in Siena in 1474. In 1530 he took part in the conspiracy of the Libertini and Popolani, and in 1534 he joined the Bardotti. He had to hide for his life in 1535, and was concealed by the Observantine fathers in a tomb in the church of St John. He was stuffed in close to a new-buried corpse, and got covered with vermin and dreadfully exhausted by the close of the second day. After a while he resumed work; he was exiled in 1539, but recalled in the following year, and in that year or

soon afterwards he died. Among the few extant works with which he is still credited is an Assump- tion of the Virgin, in the Carmine of Siena.

PACHECO, Francisco (1571-1654), Spanish painter and art historian, born at Seville in 1571, was the pupil of Luis Fernandez, and a diligent and prolific workman, Favourable specimens of his style are to be seen in the Madrid picture gallery, and also in two churches at Alcala de Guadaira near Seville; they are characterized by care- ful drawing and correct if somewhat feeble composition, but prove that he was no colorist. He attained great popularity, and about the beginning of the 17th century opened an academy of painting which was largely attended. Of his pupils by far the most distinguished was Velazquez, who afterwards became his son-in-law. From about 1625 he gave up painting and betook himself to literary society and pursuits; the most important of his works in this department is a treatise on the art of painting (Arte de la Pintura: su anteguedad y grandezas, 1649), which, although characterized by prolixity and pedantry of style, and often nonsensical enough in its theories, is of considerable value for the information it contains, especi- ally on matters relating to Spanish art. He died inl654.

PACHOMIUS, or Pacuumius. See Monacnism, vol. x¥i. pp. 699, 700.

PACHYDERMATA. See Mammatta.

PACIFIC OCEAN

te ancient world was ignorant of the existence of

the vast expanse of water now known as the Pacific Ocean. In Ptolenty's map of the world, constructed in the 2d century of our era (see Map, vol. xv. Pl. VIL), this fact is clearly brought out, for the only space which might possibly represent the Pacific is the Magnus Sinus,

a sea so limited in extent, and represented in such a position, that it probably stands for the Gulf of Siam im the Indian Ocean.

Vague reports of a great ocean lying beyond China Prov'

;

were current in Europe as early as the period of Arabian # qj

supremacy in learning.

cove, Indeed an Arab merchant named~ ~~

reetcrrigc OCEAN

Sulaiman, who visited China in the 9th century, declared that he had sailed upon it. But for several hundred years the reports continued so uncertain, and were so loaded with the wild extravagance of travellers' tales of the period, that it is difficult to get at the facts from which they probably took their origin. During the 13th and 14th centuries Marco Polo and his successors travelled far to the East and came to an ocean of the extent of which they were ignorant, but they partially explored its western coasts. The East was the region towards which all the commerce and enterprise of the Middle Ages tended, and it was the hope of finding a safer and shorter sea route to India that led the Spanish court in 1492 to furnish Columbus with a fleet for the exploration of the Western Ocean. Although convinced of the spherical form of the earth, he greatly under-rated its size, and, accepting the popular estimate of the great breadth of the Asiatic continent, he set out on his voyage confident of soon reaching "the Indies." The glowing descriptions of liis discoveries in that strange new world of the West that rose up before him to bar his advance immediately attracted the attention of adventur- ous Spanish mariners. Headed by Columbus himself, they cruised intrepidly amongst the Caribbean Islands, still lured by the hope of discovering some western passage to the coveted East. Columbus found that what he at first con- sidered a labyrinthine archipelago was a continent of vast extent, but not Asia, and he died without knowing what lay beyond. Spain and Portugal were the rival maritime powers at that time, and both took up the search for new countries with great ardour. Pope Alexander VI, in 1493, fearing that the two nations would quarrel over their colonies, assigned all the new lands that might be discovered west of the Azores to Spain, and all east of those islands to Portugal. The Portuguese accepting the gift followed Vasco da Gama in opening up the road to India by the Cape of Good Hope, and pushed forward their trading and piratical

excursions into the west Pacific far beyond the Spice Islands. The Spaniards confined themselves to the New World, visiting, naming, and plundering the West India Islands and the headlands of Central America. On the 29th of September 1513 Vasco Nufiez de Balbao, the leader of a Spanish party exploring the Isthmus of Panama, saw, from the summit of a mountain, a vast ocean stretching to the west—the very ocean of whose existence Columbus was certain, and which he had so long tried vainly to discover. Because he first saw it on Michaelmas day, Balbao named it the Golfo de San Miguel. Magellan, following the east coast of America farther to the south than any previous explorer, sailed on, in spite of terrific storms, until he found the strait which now bears his name, and, steering carefully through it, on the 27th of November 1520 he swept into the calm waters of that new sea on which he was the first to sail, and which he named the Mar Pacifico.

The victories of Cortez in Mexico about the same date opened the way for the exploration of the west coast of America, where Pizarro's conquest of Peru in 1526 gave the Spaniards a firm footing. From this time an intermnittent trade sprang up between Europe and the Pacific through Magellan Strait, and latterly round Cape Horn. Before long English fleets, attracted more by the prospects of plundering Spanish galleons than of discovering new territories, found their way into the Pacific. Sir Francis Drake, like Balbao, saw the ocean from the Isthmus of Panama, He entered the Pacific in September 1577, being the first Englishman to sail upon it ; some months later he sailed across it to the Moluccas. Alvaro de Mardana, who preceded him, had discovered the Solomon Islands in 1567.

Tasman, Roggewein, Dampier, and other explorers of the

17th century discovered Australia, New Zealand, Tasmania, and many smaller groups of islands. During the 18th century the voyages of Anson, Bass, Behring, the two Bougainvilles, Broughton, Byron, Cook, La Peérouse, and many more practically completed the geographical exploration of the Pacific Ocean. In the beginning of that century the Pacific had a curious fascination for commercial speculators, and the ill-fated Scottish colony founded at Darien in 1698 seemed only to prepare the way for the

English South Sea bubble that burst in 1720. All the navigators who explored these seas believed in the existence of a north-west passage between the Atlantic and Pacific, and made attempts to find it; but its discovery baffled all enterprise until 1850, when Maclure proved that there was such a channel, but that the ice prevented its being of any commercial utility. In the present century D'Entrecasteaux, Krusenstern, Beechy, Fitzroy, and Bennet have taken the lead amongst geographical explorers in the Pacific, although the ranks contain many names scarcely less worthy of remembrance. Within recent years several purely scientific exploring expeditions and British survey- ing vessels have examined the Pacific, investigating its depth, the nature and form of the bottom, the tempera- ture of the water at various depths and its density, as well as the marine fauna and flora. Of those expeditions the voyages of the "Challenger," " Gazelle," and " Tuscarora" are the most important.!

Extent.—The Pacific Ocean? is bounded on the N. by Extent.

Behring Strait and the coasts of Russia and Alaska, on the E. by the west coasts of North and South America ; on the §. the imaginary line of the Antarctic Circle divides it from the Antarctic Ocean, while its western boundary is the east coast of Australia, the Malay Archipelago separating it from the Indian Ocean, and the eastern coasts of the Chinese empire. Some modern geographers place the southern limit of the Atlantic, Pacific, and Indian Oceans at the 40th parallel, and name the body of water which surrounds the earth between that latitude and the Antarctic Circle the Southern Ocean.

Although differing from the Atlantic in its general form, being more nearly land-locked to the north, the Pacific resembles it in being open to the south, forming, in fact, a great projection northwards of that vast southern ocean of which the Atlantic is another arm.

The Pacific is the largest expanse of water in the world, covering more than a quarter of its superficies, and com- prising fully one-half of its water surface. It extends through 132 degrees of latitude, in other words, it measures 9000 miles from north to south. From east to west its breadth varies from about 40 miles at Behring Strait, where Asia and America come within sight of each other, to 8500 miles between California and China on

the Tropic of Cancer, and to more than 10,000 miles on the Equator between Quito and the Moluccas, where the ocean is widest. The area has been variously estimated at from 50,000,000 to 100,000,000 square miles ; but, defining its boundaries as above, Keith Johnston, from careful measure- ments, estimated it, with probably a near approach to the truth, at 67,810,000 square miles.

1 The principal ocean tracks followed by trading vessels in the Pacific are three :—(1) round Cape Horn and along the South Ameri- can coast—the great rush to California on the discovery of gold in 1847 led to the establishment of lines of fast clippers by this route and of steamers from Panama to San Francisco ; (2) from San Francisco to China a regular service was established in 1867 ; (3) the mails began to be carried from Australia to San Francisco in 1873 and to Panama in 1866. ‘The trade with the Pacific will no doubt be greatly increased when the Panama ship-canal is opened for traffic.

2 Formerly called the South Sea, and sometimes still so named by the French and Germans (la Mer du Sud; Stidsee, Australocean), with whom, however, La Mer (L’ Océan) Pacifique, and Grosser Ocean or Stilles Meex are the more usual designations.

Ameri- can coast.

Asiatic coast,

116 Pa UPC “och & N

Coasts, Seas, d&c.—The coast-line of the Pacific and Indian Oceans, taken together, only amounts to 47,000 miles; that of the Atlantic alone measures 55,000, the smaller ocean more than making up for its less extent by its numerous inland seas and inlets of smaller size. Speaking broadly, the eastern boundary of the Pacific is rugged, barren, mountainous, and singularly free from indentations, while its western shores are low, fertile, and deeply indented with gulfs and partially enclosed seas. Behring Strait unites the Arctic Ocean with the Sea of Kamchatka, or Behring Sea, which is bounded on the east by the irregular, low, swampy shores of Alaska, and on the south by the Alaskan peninsula and the Aleutian Islands. Along

British North America the coast is rugged, rocky, considerably indented, and, between the parallels of 50° and 60° N. lat., fringed with islands. The largest of these are Vancouver Island in the Gulf of Georgia, Queen Charlotte Island, Prince of Wales Island, and the islands of King George III.'s Archipelago. The Gulf of California runs northwards in the Mexican coast, reach- ing from 23° to 32° N. lat. It is the one important inlet on the whole west coast of America,—the only others which are worth naming being the Gulf of Panama and the Gulf of Guayaquil. The Mexican shore is low, and contrasts with the coasts to the north and to the south, which are generally steep and rocky, though there are occasional sandy beaches in Peru and Chili. The breadth of the plain between the Rocky Mountains and the sea gradually diminishes towards the south, and the mountain chain of the Andes runs close along the west coast of South America to the very extremity of the con- tinent.

A series of volcanoes, active and extinct, runs round the Pacific, commencing at Cape Horn, passing along the Andes and Rocky Mountains, crossing from the American continent by the Aleutian Islands to Kamchatka, and thence southwards by Japan and the East Indian Archipelago to New Zealand. Earthquakes are frequent all along this line.

There are few islands near the American coast north of Patagonia, and these are small and unimportant; but south of the 40th parallel there is a complete change. The end of the continent seems as if it had been shattered ; there are abrupt bays and jagged chasms; archipelagos of small islands rise up in splintered fragments along the shore. The Strait of Magellan forms a tortuous channel between the mainland and the rocky storm-beaten islands of Tierra del Fuego.

The coast-line on the Asiatic side is longer and greatly diversified. In the north the Sea of Okhotsk is cut off from Behring Sea by the peninsula of Kamchatka, from the extremity of which a chain of islands extends to the borders of the Antarctic Ocean. These islands are of all sizes, ranging from small islets to the island continent of Australia. The island chain hangs in loops along the Asiatic coast, each loop including an almost land-locked sea. These partially enclosed seas are more or less com- pletely cut off from the general oceanic circulation, and they consequently differ considerably

from the Open ocean as regards the temperature of the water, specific gravity, fauna and flora, and nature of the deposits. The Kurile Islands run from Kamchatka to Japan, cutting off the Sea of Okhotsk. The great Japanese Islands, with Saghalien to the north and the Chinese coast on the west, enclose the Sea of Japan, leaving it in communica- tion with the Sea of Okhotsk by the Channel of Tartary to the north, with the ocean on the west by the Straits of La Pérouse and Sangar, and on the south by the Straits of Corea. The Yellow Sea runs into the Chinese coast, and is divided from the Sea of Japan by the peninsula of

Corea. The China Sea, with the two great gulfs of Tonquin and Siam, is marked off from the Indian Ocean by the peninsula of Malacca—remarkable because it rung inthe same direction as the other two peninsulas of the Pacific, Kamchatka and Corea—and the islands of | Sumatra and Java, while Borneo and the Philippine Islands separate it from the Pacific. Between the south coast of China and the north of Australia the East Indian Archj- pelago cuts up the ocean into a network of small seas and narrow channels. The seas are named the Celebes, the Banda, the Sulu, the Java, the Flores, and the Arafura, The more important of the sea passages between the islands are the Straits and Channel of Formosa, which lead north- ward from the Pacific to the China Sea; the Strait of Macassar between Borneo and Celebes ; Molucca Passage between Celebes, the Moluccas, and Jilolo; and Torres Strait between New Guinea and Australia. The east coast of Australia is, as a rule, steep and rocky ; tliere are few inlets, and none of them compare in size with the Gulf of Carpentaria on the north coast. Moreton Bay and Port Jackson are two of the best harbours, and as a haven the latter has few equals in the world. The Great Barrier Reef lies off this coast fora length of more than a thousand miles, the distance between it and the shore varying from 60 to 100 miles. Bass Strait separates Australia from Tasmania on the south; and the two main islands of New Zealand, separated by Cook Strait, lie to the south- east of the continent. The Gulf of Hauraki, the Bay of Plenty, and Pegasus Bay are the chief inlets in these | islands. ewer-System.—The drainage area of the Pacific Ocean | is estimated at 8,660,000 square miles, while that of the Atlantic amounts to more than 19,000,000; the chief / reason for this disparity is that only half a million square | miles of the American continent are drained into the Pacific, the remaining six and a half millions being con-

. nected with the Atlantic river-system, and it is estimated that only one-seventh of the area of the Asiatic continent drains into the Pacific Ocean. The huge wall of the Andes Amer practically reduces the Pacific rivers of South America to the © _ rank of mountain streams; the Biobio and the Maypu in arsed Chili are the only ones exceeding 100 miles in length,— the former having a course of 180, the latter of 160 miles. The Rocky Mountain chain, which forms the watershed of North America, runs parallel to the Pacific coast at a distance of about 1000 miles, and the Cascade and minor ranges which skirt the shore are broken through in several places to give passage to rivers that are, in some cases, of considerable size. The Colorado rises in the State of that name, at the base of the Rocky Mountains, flows south- west through Utah and Arizona, and falls into the head of the Gulf of California. Its course measures about) 1100 miles, and it drains a rugged and barren area of | 170,000 square miles. California has only one river, the Sacramento, 420 miles long. The Oregon (or Columbia) | is formed by the union of two streams rising in the Rocky Mountains, one in British Columbia, the other in Idaho. It is a swift-flowing river, full of rapids and cataracts, and, though it is only 750 miles long, the area which it drains is greater by one-seventh than that drained by the Colorado. The ebb and flow of the tide are perceptible for a hundred miles from the mouth of the Oregon, and the river is navigable for that distance. The Frazer, which has a length of 600 miles, flows southward through British Columbia from the Rocky Mountains, and enters the sea in the Gulf of Georgia opposite Vancouver Island, carrying off the rainfall of 98,000 square miles. The northern limit of the American mountain chains is marked by the rise of the great river Yukon, which traverses Alaska ; and, after a run of more than 2000 miles, it enters

‘mo- ieric . sgsure,

- many streams

rPaetwrihec., ech aN

Behring Sea opposite the island of St Lawrence. Its tributaries have not been fully explored, so the area which they intersect is unknown, but probably it is very large.

The Asiatic division of the Pacific river-system is very much more extensive than the American, and includes of great size and of considerable commercial importance. In the north the Amur is more than 2000 miles long, and it receives many tributaries, which rise on the north in the Stanovoi mountains, and on the west and south on the borders of the great table-land of the Gobi, the central Asiatic desert; altogether its basin measures nearly 900,000 square miles. The Hoang-ho (Hwang-ho or Whang-ho) and the Yangtze-keang both rise near the Kuen-lun mountains of Tibet amongst the extensive terraces which form the eastern slope of the great table-land of Central Asia. The Hoang-ho has a length of 2600 miles, and in its course it sweeps in a northerly curve close to the In-Shan mountains ; then, after being crossed repeatedly by the Great Wall of China, it turns sharply to the south, and finally runs due east into the Yellow Sea. The Yangtze-keang follows a southward direction from its source, but ultimately turns to the north-east and enters the Yellow Sea not far from the mouth of the Hoang-ho. It is one of the longest rivers in the world, for, including its windings, it measures 3200 miles from its source to the sea. These two rivers drain more than a million and a quarter square miles; and it is principally owing to the large amount of suspended matter which they carry down that the sea into which they fall is called the Yellow Sea. The other rivers of importance are the Choo-keang, the Mekong, and the Menam. The last two run into the Gulf of Siam, after watering the peninsula of Siam and Cochin China. Few rivers enter the Pacific on the east coast of Australia, and in conse- quence of the proximity of the mountains to the shore they are short and unimportant.

Atmospheric Pressure and Prevailing Winds.—When the mean atmospheric pressure for the year over the entire surface of the world is considered, it is found that there are two broad belts of high pressure which encircle the globe, one on each side of the equator. There is a wide area of slowly diminishing pressure between them, includ- ing a narrow central band along which the barometric readings attain a minimum. Two other regions of low pressure surround the poles, and extend to a considerable distance. That around the North Pole is connected with an area of still lower pressure over the North Pacific, and there is another permanent depression, which is even deeper, in the vicinity of Iceland. Atmospheric pressure is the fundamental meteorological phenomenon, and the mean pressure for the year affords a

clue to the cause of all such regular and continuous phenomena as trade winds and ocean currents, and to the distribution of temperature. Similarly a study of the isobars at different seasons throws light upon all periodical occurrences in the way of winds and currents.

A low barometer is always accompanied by a high per- centage of atmospheric aqueous vapour ; consequently the equatorial belt of continuous low pressure is a region of almost continuous rain, excessive cloud, and constant calm or light variable winds. The effect of a difference in atmospheric pressure being established between two places 18 to produce a flow of air from the region of high towards that of low pressure, and the winds in their turn largely determine the surface movements or drift currents of the ocean. — The region of calms between the north and south trades in the Pacific is both narrower, more irregular, and less clearly marked than the corresponding belt in the Atlantic. In the East Pacific it lies, at all seasons, con- siderably north of the equator; but during the southern

summer it is found south of the line in the western parts of the ocean, and disappears entirely in the northern summer, as the calms of the Indian Ocean do also. The reason of the southern position of the west end of the calm belt seems to be the simultaneous occurrence of low atmo- spheric pressure in the interior of Australia and an ex- ceptionally high barometer in Asia. In the southern winter the depression over Asia and the increase of pressure over Australia form an unbroken barometric gradient, and the result is that the calms are replaced by a southerly breeze of great regularity. The region of calms included between the zones of the two trade winds, and towards which they blow, is not the only one with which they are associated ; for the opposite meteorological conditions that characterize the northern border of the north-east trades and the southern margin of the south- east winds produce two fringing bands of calms. These regions are characterized by a high barometer, a sunny sky, and occasionally sudden squalls,— contrasting with the depressed barometer and dull, wet weather of the equatorial region. In January the low atmospheric pres- sure over the North Pacific produces winds which affect the climatological conditions of the

shores in very different ways. At Vancouver Island the prevailing wind is south- west, and consequently the winter on the shores of British Columbia is mild and moist. The opposite coast of Asia is visited during the same season by northerly winds,— north-east in Alaska, north-north-east in Kamchatka, and north-west in Japan ; and, asa result, the weather in these regions in winter is dry and bitterly cold. The West Pacific and the Indian Ocean are the regions of monsoons,— winds that blow as steadily as the trades, but which change their direction with the season. During the periods of transition the steady breeze gives place to variable winds, occasional calms, and sometimes terrific hurricanes. The general direction of the monsoons in the Pacific between April and October is southerly and south-easterly, and from November to April they blow from the north-east, and on nearing the continent of Asia from the north-west. Monsoonal winds are found connected with all continents ; they are produced by the great differences in the tempera- ture and pressure which prevail over the land at different seasons as compared with the adjacent ocean. The mon- soons give rise to oceanic currents which flow in the same direction as the wind, and like it run opposite ways during alternate half years. Although the velocity of the wind over the open sea is always greater than that near shore or on land, it was shown by the observations of the “Chal- lenger,” in the Pacific and other oceans, that there is no distinct diurnal variation in the wind’s force at sea, though

very decided periods of maxima and minima were noticed

in the vicinity of land (see Mrrzoronocy, vol. xvi. p. 125).

Currents.—The system of surface circulation in the Currents.

Pacific is much more complicated and less clearly defined than that in the Atlantic, as might be expected from the less constant character of the winds. The latter ocean has two wide channels of communication with the Arctic Sea, while, so far as currents are concerned, the Pacific is land- locked to the north—Behring Strait being narrow and shallow; consequently water enters the Pacific almost entirely from the south, where there is uninterrupted communication with the Antarctic Ocean. There is no direct information as to the movements of ocean water at depths greater than 200 or 300 fathoms; it is known, however, from indirect evidence, that

movements do occur. Although the subject of under-currents at depths less than those just mentioned has been extensively studied, it is only with respect to surface currents that anything very definite is as yet known.

The vast extent of the Pacific Ocean gives full scope for the current-producing action of tides and winds, while the smooth continental boundary on its eastern side, the numerous groups of islands which break its surface, and its indented western coast, combine to modify the direction of the main streams and to produce innumerable minor currents, some permanent, and others varying from time to time in velocity and direction. The chief cause of these currents is believed to be traceable to the direct or indirect action of wind ; but here it is proposed to refer merely to their gencral geography and physical effects, without dis- cussing the theory of their formation.

A general surface drift of the cold waters of the Antarctic Ocean, having a temperature lower than 40° Fahr. at all seasons, bears north-east towards Cape Horn, where it divides into two branches; one, the Cape Horn current, passes on into the Atlantic, and the other sweeps northward along the west coast of South America until it strikes the Peruvian shore, which deflects it westward. The cooling effect of this current on the water all along the coast is illustrated very clearly by the abrupt north- ward turn of the isothermals (see METEOROLOGY, figs. 8 and 9), which is more conspicuous in the chart for the southern winter than in that for the summer. In summer, however, there is a more striking evidence of this current's cooling power to be seen in the arrangement of the isothermals. The northern line of 70° Fahr. reaches as far south as 18° N. lat., and that of 80° makes a short loop from 18° N. to the equator; but the southern isothermal of 80° does not touch the American coast at all, and that of 70° lies farther from the equator than 30° 8. lat., so that the increase of temperature from the south is very gradual; so much so that at the Galapagos Islands, under the equator, the temperature of the surface water is only 70°, while a few hundred miles to the west it is over 80°. Penguins—essentially Antarctic birds—are found living on the shores of these islands. In consequence of this current, the highest surface temperature at all seasons of the year is found distinctly to the north of the equator in the eastern Pacific.

The Peruvian current forms the southern fork of the great equatorial current, which runs due west. This current is very broad, and divided by a narrow counter- current flowing in an opposite direction through its centre. The two branches of the equatorial current occupy very approximately the two areas of falling barometer between the north and south belts of high pressure and the central trough of minimum barometric readings. This difference of atmospheric pressure on each side produces the north- cast and south-east trade winds, and to these the current probably owes its regularity and constant direction. The counter-current lies in the narrow belt of low barometric pressure to which the trades blow, and probably originates from the banking up of the waters to the westward. Its rate and position consequently vary greatly at different times of the year. The “Challenger,” on her cruise between the Sandwich and Society Islands, found these currents to run with considerable force. In the ‘“ Narra- tive” of the cruise (chap. xviii.) the fact is alluded to thus:—

“From Hawaii Island to the 10th parallel the direction of the current was westerly, and its average velocity 18 miles per day, ranging from 10 to 23 miles. From the 10th to the 6th parallel the direction was easterly, and its average velocity 31 miles per day, ranging from 7 to 54 miles per day. From the 6th parallel of north latitude to the 10th parallel of south latitude the direction was again westerly, and the average velocity 35 miles per day, ranging from 17 to 70 miles per day. From thence to Tahiti the general tendency of the current was westerly, but its velocity was variable. The axis of greatest velocity of the counter-equatorial current was between the 7th and 8th parallels of north latitude.

The axis of greatest velocity of the equatorial current was on the parallel of 2° north, where its specd amounted to 3 niles per hour.”

FACIVW IU OC EAW

The equatorial current strikes on the East Indian Archipelago, where it is split up by the narrow channels and shallow waters, and diverted into numberless minor currents. The two main divisions, which have acquired a high temperature from prolonged exposure to the tropical sun, ultimately leave the archipelago; the southern arm curves southwards, carrying its warm water to the east coast of Australia and to New Zealand, whence it igs

diverted towards the cast, and becomes merged again in the general north-easterly antarctic drift. The north equatorial current, which varies in volume and velocity with the monsoons, strikes the coast of Asia between the Philippines and Japan, and is deflected in a north-easterly direction as the Kuro-Siwo or Japan current—wholly a warm oceanic river during the §.E. monsoon similar to the Gulf Stream of the Atlantic. The Japan current sends many branches into the inland seas and channels of the north-eastern coast of Asia, but the main body of water flows northward until it bifurcates in 40° N. lat., send- ing one fork among the Kurile Islands and along the Kamchatka peninsula into Behring Sea, whence it escapes by Behring Strait into the Arctic Ocean.

The general direction of surface circulation in the Pacific may be remembered by supposing the ocean divided into a northern and southern half by the cquatorial counter-current. In the northern half the water circulates in the direction of the hands of a watch, ¢.c., it passes up the west coast and down the east, while in the southern half the rotation is in the opposite direction—down the west coast and up the east; but the latter half does not exhibit the complete cycle so distinctly as the former. The centre of each area of circulation is occupied by a small Sargasso Sea, the northern being the more clearly defined, but neither approaches the well-known Sargasso Sea of the North Atlantic either in definiteness, extent, or amount of weed.

Temperature of Surface Water.—The distribution -of Surfac

temperature in the surface water of the Pacific varies con- ®™?”! The equatorial region is of

siderably during the year. course comparatively little affected by the change of season, but there is 4 general rise of temperature in the northern parts of the ocean, and a fall in the southern, during the northern summer, and a similar rise in the south and fall in the north during winter. The charts exhibit a general northward move in the isothermals during the former season, and a southward tendency in the latter. The change in the position of the lines is greatest in the temperate zones. The charts of ocean surface tempera ture (see Mrrrorotoey, figs. 8, 9) for February and August ‘show the direction of the isothermals at two opposite seasons ; and reference to

them will make it plain that in temperate regions the lines of equal temperature follow the parallels of latitude much more closely in the Pacific than in the Atlantic, while their displacement with the change of season takes place in a direction nearly north and south. There are notable instances of divergence from these rules, such as the peculiarity of the isothermal of 80° already alluded to. Another circumstance is the fact that the temperature of the surface water on the western side of a great continent is much lower than that on the eastern side in the same latitude; it seems as if the west side of

——S

a

2p-sea “ipera- CE

re Orrieé: eer aN

a continent attracted the isothermals, making them con- verge towards the equator. It has already been pointed out that these effects are due to the winds and the cold eurrents which strike the western continental shores and run along the coasts. The surface temperature of the Pacific, between the latitudes of 45° N. and 45° §., no- where at any season falls below 50°. In August the southern isotherm of 50° remains close to the 50th parallel, not diverging more than a degree or two on either side. Between the 45th parallels and the northern and southern limits of the ocean the temperature is almost always below 50°. The southern isotherm of 40° is remarkable for its constant position all the year round, between latitudes 55° and 58°,—a result brought about by the gigantic antarctic icebergs which prevent the surface temperature of the water from rising during the southern summer.

The northern and southern ‘“isocrymes” of 68°, that is the lines which pass over water which has a mean temperature of 68° during the coldest months of the year, lie, according to Dana (Corals and Coral Islands, 1872), between the latitudes of 20° and 30° on each side of the equator, except in the neighbourhood of the South- American coast, where the isocryme runs north in a loop beyond the equator,—a consequence of the cooling effect of

the Peruvian current. These isocrymes mark out an area of great importance ; for the reef-building corals are con- fined within it.

The highest temperature which sea water has been observed to attain is 90° F., and water of this temperature is only met with in the Red Sea. The maximum in the Pacific in the month of August is reached in the boundary between it and the Indian Ocean (in the Malay Archi- pelago) and in a narrow strip along the Mexican coast ; in both these regions the thermometer immersed in the surface water registers 85° as a mean. ‘There is a con- siderable area which in August stretches between New Guinea and Japan, from 10° S. to nearly 30° N., where the surface temperature reaches 84°, but these are excep- tional temperatures. .

When the “Challenger” was cruising in the South Pacific—in 1874 and 1875-—the water was found to be uniformly warmer than the air, the difference in tem- perature between the two averaging 1°°5 to 2° Fahr. In the North Pacific, between the latitudes of 30° and 40°, on the other hand, the atmospheric temperature is about half a degree higher than that of the surface water. Such differences may be explained by considering the effect of warm and cold currents, which alter the temperature of the water much more rapidly than that of the air, and of warm and cold winds, which affect the atmosphere more quickly than the ocean.

_ Deep-Sea Temperature.—The serial temperature sound- ings of the “Challenger” in the Pacific give a very good idea of the distribution of temperature in the deeper waters. ‘There seems to be a slow massive movement of water from the Antarctic Ocean into the Pacific, which is not confined to the surface currents, but affects the whole mass of water down to the bottom. The rate of this motion is quite unknown. In the open sea, far from coasts and barriers, the temperature of the water con- tinually decreases as the depth increases. This is only true for the open ocean, fully exposed to the effects of the mass movement of the water; there is a very different distri- bution of temperature in enclosed seas such as those of the Western Pacific, or even in the ocean when a barrier pre- Sents itself to the moving water. The difference, which is

- brought out by the diagram (Plate II. fig. 1), is due to the

fact that when a barrier exists it retards the motion of the lower portion of the water, which has the lowest tempera- ture, while the higher passes on over it, and fills up the

i A)

area beyond with water at the uniform temperature of the great ocean at the point to which the top of the ridge or obstruction reaches. In the Sulu Sea, for instance, the diagram shows! that the temperature falls steadily and rapidly from 80° at the surface to 50°°5 at 400 fathoms, and then continues at 50°°5 right down to the bottom in 2500 fathoms, instead of sinking to somewhere about 35°, as it is observed to do in the open ocean at that depth. The inference is that the Sulu Sea is surrounded by a ridge rising to at least about 400 fathoms from the surface, which prevents the great ocean circulation from having its cooling effect, and soundings indicate that this is really the case.

During the cruise of the “Challenger” the bottom temperature over the North Pacific was found to be 35°‘1; south of the Sandwich Islands it fell to 35°; in the Low Archipelago it again rose to 35°‘1; on the 40th parallel it fell to 34°-7 in the deep water, but rose to 35°‘4 and 35°°5 in the shallow water of the Patagonian elevation. The thermometer registered 34°°5 at the bottom between Australia and New Zealand; while in that part of the ocean to the north-east of Australia known as the Coral Sea, although the depth was the same (about 2500 fathoms), the bottom temperature was as high as 35°°9. The variations of temperature in the enclosed seas of the Eastern Archipelago were found to be considerable, and nearly all those seas show the phenomenon of constant temperature from an intermediate point to the bottom, consequent on the existence of barriers. The chief details of the thermal conditions of these seas are represented graphically in the diagram (Plate IT. fig. 1). Between the Caroline Islands and Japan the bottom temperature was 35°°3. The bottom temperature in the Pacific is on the average about 1° F. lower than that in the Atlantic.

The temperature of the water at the depth of 300 fathoms is nearly the same (40° to 45°) over the whole of the North Pacific, but above 300 fathoms the water is warmer in the western than in the central portion, while below that depth it is colder in the former than in the latter. The same phenomenon is

noticed between the latitudes of 34° S. and 40° S., but here 700 fathoms marks the plane of constant temperature. Between 33° N. and 40° S. the temperature of the water above 200 fathoms is higher in the North than in the South Pacific, whilst from 200 to 1500 fathoms it is lower in the North, and below the latter depth the condition reverts to what it was above 200 fathoms.

The diagram (Plate II. fig. 2) exhibits the bathymetrical Plate Il. distribution of temperature in a section of the Pacific from a fig. 2.

position in 38° 9’ N. lat. and 156° 25’ W. long. to one in 40° 3/ S, lat. and 132° 58’ W. long. as determined by H.M.S. “Chal- lenger” in 1875, and may be compared with similar diagrams of the ATLANTIC (see vol. ili. p. 23). In order to separate the iso- thermals in the first 200 fathoms sufficiently the scale of depths required to be made large, while in order that the length of the diagram might be kept within reasonable bounds the scale of latitude was made very much smaller. ‘The result of this is to exaggerate the inequalities of the sea bottom, making the slopes very much steeper than they are; this effect is best secn in the way in which islands are represented. The rapid falling off of temperature in the first few hundred fathoms, and then its very slow but stcady decrease to the bottom are to be observed, and the fact that latitude has a great effect on the surface temperature, but

1 The encircled numbers in the diagrams (Plate II. figs. 1 and 2) indicate the ‘‘ Challenger” stations.

2 An excellent example of the existence of a submarine barrier being pointed out by a wide divergence in the temperature in contiguous areas of the ocean is met with in the Faroe Channel (see NORWEGIAN Sea, vol. xvii. p, 594, and Norru Sea, p. 564, fig. 1).

Density of the water.

Plate II. chart.

none at considerable depths, for the isotherm of 40° is constantly between 300 and 400 fathoms, and also that depth alone deter- mines the bottom temperature in the open ocean, the coldest water occurring as a matter of fact under the equator in the deepest troughs open to the south.

Density of the Water.—The specific gravity of ocean water is an index of its salinity, since the researches of various chemists, foremost amongst whom are Forchham- mer and Dittmar, have shown conclusively that the per- centage composition of the salts in sea water is the same in all parts of the ocean, so far at least as regards the principal constituents. Mr J. Y. Buchanan made continu- ous observations on the specific gravity of sea water during the whole voyage of the "Challenger," and has published a very valuable paper on the distribution of salt in the ocean in the "Challenger" Reports (Phys. Chem. Chall. Exp., vol. i. part ii.). The chart in Plate II. showing the geogra- phical distribution of surface density is copied from that paper. The percentage of total salts in sea water, as deduced from the specific gravity, is, according to Buchanan and Dittmar—

TD ss 0¥S1 4 Gonaanepeocen 1:025 1-026 1027 1-028 Percentage…..... 8°3765 3°5049 3°63438 3°7637

The density of the water in different parts of the ocean must obviously change to a certain extent with the season; and it is not only the surface density that is affected in this way; any cause which promotes evaporation tends to increase the salinity of surface water, while any con- ditions that effect condensation of aqueous vapour produce dilution. For instance, in the China Sea during the month of November, at the end of the south-west monsoon, which is a moist wind accompanied by much rain, the specific gravity observed was 102518, and two months later, after the dry north-east monsoon had been blowing for some time, evaporation had proceeded so far that the specific gravity had risen to 1:02534. The climate is the principal factor in determining surface salinity, and the causes which produce well-marked climatic conditions have an equally apparent effect on the density of the water. Thus there are two zones of comparatively high density encircl- ing the globe in the region of the north-east and south-east trade winds, which are dry and promote rapid evaporation ; and similarly the region of calms and rain between the trades is distinguished by the low

specific gravity of the water. North and south of these areas there are two zones where the salinity maintains a mean value, in consequence of there being a balance between evaporation and con- densation; and round the poles there are areas of concentration brought about by the freezing of the sea water and the separation of salt, which of course increases the salinity of the water remaining unfrozen.

The distribution of density differs considerably in the two great oceans. In the Atlantic there are two areas of high specific gravity, one in the north, the other in the south ; while in the Pacific there is only one, situated in the southern division of the ocean in the neighbourhood of the Society Islands. It is neither so large as those of the Atlantic, nor has it so high a specific gravity. The density of the concentration areas in the Atlantic, taking pure water at 4° C. as unity, is 1:02750; that in the saltest portion of the Pacific is only 1:02700. In the North Pacific the salinity is less than in the South, and its distribution is much more uniform. The density in this region never exceeds 1:02650, and the minimum, in the rainy region of the equatorial counter current, is as low as 102485. The South Pacific has water of a relatively high density, its maximum being 1:02750. The water of the seas of the Eastern Archipelago, in the western basin of the Pacific, although exposed to the full force of an equatorial sun, and possessed of a very high surface temperature, is yet surprisingly fresh. The specific

gravity varies considerably with the season, but the aver- age for the year over the greater part of these seas is under 1:02550 ; and there is a large area surrounding the islands of Java and Sumatra where the dilution is greater, the hydrometer only indicating 1:02500. The weak salinity of these waters is largely to be attributed to the extreme humidity of the atmosphere, the frequent and heavy rains, and the fact that so many lofty and exten- sive islands, where the annual rainfall rises above 200 inches, drain into the seas. Water of such a degree of dilution is not met with anywhere else, except near the mouths of rivers and in the vicinity of melting ice, and, as a temporary phenomenon, after prolonged rain in the tropics.

In regions where there is decided and continuous con- centration in progress, the specific gravity of the water is greatest at the surface and

decreases as the depth increases, down to about 800 or 1000 fathoms, after which the density increases slowly with the depth until the bottom is reached. The density of the bottom water of the Pacific is almost the same everywhere ; it only varies from 1:02570 to 1:02590; and the same value holds for the South Atlantic. The North Atlantic has denser water at the bottom, varying from 1:02616 to 1:02632. In those regions where the surface water is being constantly diluted, as is the case in the equatorial belt of calms, the density increases with the depth down to between 50 and 100 fathoms, where there is a maximum, from which the density diminishes, as in the other case, to about 1000 fathoms, and afterwards increases slowly down to the bottom. There is a striking resemblance between the direction of the isohalsines, or lines of equal salinity, and of the isothermals; but the parallelism breaks down, of course, in the case of a subsurface maximum.

I

Depth.—For a long time the opinion that the Pacific Depth

was a comparatively shallow ocean was entertained by Plate

geographers, and it is only the recent soundings of the “Challenger,” “Tuscarora,” “ Gazelle,” and other survey- ing ships that have succeeded in dispelling the illusion. It is now known that the average depth of the Pacific is greater than that of the Atlantic, and that areas of deeper water occur in it than in any other part of the globe. A line running along the western shores of the two Americas and along the eastern shores of the Asiatic continent more or less closely follows a great circle of the globe. On the one side of this line there are the continental masses of the Americas and of Europe and Asia, with an average height of about 800 feet above the level of the sea; and on the other side the vast oceanic depression of the Pacific, with an average depth of about 2500 fathoms. The average level of the continental area may thus be regarded as about three miles above the Pacific depression.

The attempt to divide the ocean ‘into sharply defined basins is more or less unsatisfactory; and for the considera- tion of the depth it is better to view the Pacific as marked off into two portions by an imaginary line passing through Honolulu and Tahiti, on the meridian of 150° W.

The eastern half is remarkable for the comparative absence of islands and the uniform nature of its depth. With the exception of the narrow strip of shallow water surrounding the Aleutian Islands and running along the American coast, the sounding line shows an average depth of from 2000 to 3000 fathoms undiversified by remarkable elevations or depressions, between the northern limit of the ocean and 30° §. lat. There is a great submarine plateau extending from the Patagonian coast (in 76° W. long.) in a westerly direction to 120° W. long., which rises to between 2000 and 1000 fathoms of the surface. This elevated area diminishes in breadth as it proceeds westward, but it is supposed by some authorities to be

| |

EEE =

:

,

:

2A TERE TS ST — RA

RAC ILPFIC OCEAN

connected with the shallow water surrounding the Low Archipelago and the Marquesas Islands (groups which are bisected by the 140th meridian of west longitude) and the Society Islands. If this be the case there is an almost continuous area of elevation stretching between Patagonia and Japan. It has been remarked that many of the sub- merged plateaus of the Pacific have a south-east to north- west trend. The “Challenger” examined the depth of the eastern half of the Pacific in 1875, along a line which extended from 38° N. lat. on the 160th meridian south -east to the Sandwich Islands, and then as nearly as possible along the 150th meridian to the Society Islands in 23° S. lat. From this point the course was again south-east to the 40th parallel of south latitude, which was followed eastward to the Patagonian coast, a visit to Juan Fernan- dez forming a northward digression. The depth was ascertained at fifty points along this route, and it was found to vary on the

whole from 2000 to 3000 fathoms. There were two soundings of over 3000 fathoms between latitudes 38° and 36° N., and one a little to the south of the Sandwich Islands. Between the meridian of 120° W. and the coast of America the soundings showed the depth to vary considerably as the ship was in deep water or over the submerged Patagonian plateau. The actual numbers observed proceeding eastward from 120° W. long. were in fathoms :—2250, 1600, 2025, 2270, 1500, 1825, 1775, 1375, 2160, 2225, 1450, 1325. The soundings made by the United States ship ‘‘ Tuscarora” during 1874 were much more numerous, closer together, and extended along several lines, but the general result was similar to that of the “Challenger” observations. The results of all recent observations are shown on Plate ITI.

The western half of the Pacific Ocean is a complete con- trast to the eastern. Archipelagos and scattered islands are exceedingly numerous; the depth of the ocean is by no means uniform, for shallows and areas of unusual depth occur scattered over it at irregular intervals. Along the Asiatic coast and between the island groups there are a number of partially enclosed seas, and these are separated from the great ocean by submarine plateaus of sufficient extent and height to warrant the supposition that a moderate upheaval would extend the Asiatic continent as far south as Australia, transforming the seas into inland salt lakes. Considerations of the peculiar animal and vegetable life of New Zealand and Australia lend some degree of probability to the speculation that these islands were joined to the main continent of Asia at some very remote period ; and it is even possible to trace the sub- merged coast-line of the great continent which then existed. This line separates the very deep water of the West Pacific from the shallower tvater of the inland seas and archipel- agos ; it runs from Kamchatka, over Japan, Formosa, the Philippines, New Guinea, to Australia and New Zealand. The most conspicuous peculiarity of the West Pacific is the very deep water lying in a crescent shape to the east of the Kurile Islands and Japan. It extends from 50° N. lat. to nearly 20° N. lat., although it is of no great breadth. The average depth of this area is nearly 4000 fathoms, and a narrow strip of still more abysmal depths runs along its western margin, like a ditch across the entrance to the Sea of Okhotsk ; here the United States ship ‘“ Tuscarora ” found depths of over 4600 fathoms. The course of the “Challenger ” led her to explore the seas of the Eastern Archipelago pretty thoroughly, and she carried a line of soundings from the

archipelago to Japan, and thence east- ward across the Pacific, crossing the area of great depth about the centre, off Nippon, where two soundings of 3950 and 3625 fathoms respectively were obtained. Like the East Pacific, the western division of the ocean has an average depth of from 2000 to 3000 fathoms, although a

great number of small depressions exist where the depth is greater, and detached areas of shallower water occur still more frequently. Many of the islands rise from depths of about 3000 fathoms, forming isolated mountains springing from the bed of the ocean, and several peaks which do not rise to the surface have been detected. More usually a number of islands are bound together by submarine elevations, frequently within a few hundred fathoms of the surface, over wide areas. Although the greater part of the sea surrounding New Zealand, the north of Australia, and the adjacent islands is under 1000 fathoms in depth, there are areas of great depression aniongst the islands, and some very deep channels. In 1875 when sounding in the channel between the Carolines and Ladrones, the “Challenger” met with the deepest water of the cruise, 4475 fathoms, or about five miles and a quarter; and this is the greatest depth from which a specimen of the bottom has hitherto been obtained. This abysmal depth only extends over a relatively small area, for the two nearest “‘Challenger” stations, one to the north and one to the south, had depths of 2300 and 1850 fathoms respectively.

The seas branching off from the Pacific are usually relatively shallow. Behring Sea on the north has ex- tremely shallow water in its north-eastern half, where there is a depth of under 100 fathoms ; in the south-western por- tion the depth increases rapidly to between 1000 and 2000 fathoms, except round the coasts and the Aleutian Archi- pelago. The Sea of Okhotsk is still shallower: much of it is within the 100 fathom line; and in its deepest part it does not attain 1000 fathoms. The Yellow Sea is entirely within the hundred fathom line; while the Sea of Japan, only separated from it by the Corean Peninsula, is not inferior in depth to the open ocean, its average depth being from 2000 to 3000 fathoms. The western portion of the Pacific, which lies between the Philippines and the Carolines and Ladrones, is also very deep, its mean depth approaching 3000 fathoms. This sea is of importance, since

it is to the Pacific what the Gulf of Mexico is to the Atlantic—the source of its great northern thermal current. The fact that the temperature at 1500 fathoms over the whole of the North Pacific does not differ by more than 0° °5 F. from that at the bottom appears to indicate that this portion is cut off from the southern division by a ridge rising to within 1500 fathoms of the surface. The existence of such a barrier cannot be said to be proved, but the indications lead to the supposition that it may extend from Japan to the equator, through the Bonin, the Ladrone, and the Caroline Islands.

Taken altogether, so far as present knowledge goes, the bed of the Pacific is more uniform than that of the Atlantic, and its changes of level are less abrupt. Its depth is, on an average, greater, and appears to be more evenly distributed than in the Atlantic, but this appar- ent greater uniformity may be partly due to the fact that the latter ocean, both on account of its smaller size and its greater commercial importance, has been much more care- fully surveyed, and its bathymetrical conditions more exactly ascertained.

DEposIts.

The explorations of the “Challenger,” “‘Tusearora,”

surveying ships have in reeent years given a great amount of information respeeting the uature of the deposits now forming over the floor of the oeean, and the speeimens eolleeted by these expeditions have been made the subject of a eareful investigation by Messrs Murray and Renard. The great extent and depth of the Pacific Ocean make it the most suitable field for the study of the varieties of deep-sea deposits and the eonditions under which they are found. The various kinds of deposits, all of whieh are found in the Pacific Ocean, are elassed as follows :—

XVUL — 16

and other Deposits

Terri- genous deposits.

Blue mud.

Green muds and

sands.

122

Shore formations. Found in inland seas

eee Sula and along the shores Reatmnad of continents. Found around oceanic

islands and along the shores of continents.

Coralline mud and sand. Volcanic mud and sand. Red clay.

Globigerina ooze. Pteropod ooze.

Diatom ooze, Radiolarian ooze.

Found in the abysmal regions of the oceanic basins.

Pelagic deposits,

Terrigenous | deposits, | N

Coral mud and sand. \ J

The terrigenous deposits are found in more or less close proximity to the land, and are chiefly made up of the triturated fragments carried down into the ocean by rivers, or worn away from the coasts by waves or currents. Those found in the deeper water surrounding the land differ from the sands, gravels, and shingles of the shore and shallow water chiefly in the smaller size of the grains and the greater abundance of clayey matter and remains of oceanic organisms. As, however, the water becomes still deeper and the distance from land greater, the deposits assume, more and morc, a deep-sea character until they pass into a true pelagic deposit.

The principal mineralogical constituents -of the terrigenous deposits near continental land are isolated fragments of rocks and minerals coming from

the crystalline and schisto-crystalline series, and from the clastic and sedimentary formations; according to the character of the nearest coasts they belong to granite, diorite, diabase, porphyry, &c., crystalline schists, ancient limestones, and the sedimentary rocks of all geological ages, with the minerals which come from their disintegration, such as quartz, monoclinic and tri- clinic felspars, hornblende, augite, rhombic pyroxene, olivine, muscovite, biotite, titanic and magnetic iron, tourmaline, garnet, epidote, and other secondary minerals. The trituration and decomposition of these rocks and minerals give rise to materials more or less amorphous and without distinctive characters, but the origin of which is indicated by association with the rocks and minerals just mentioned.

Mixed with these are found in many places phosphatic nodules, large quantities of glauconite, and minerals arising from chemical action probably in presence of organic matter.

Blue mud is the most extensive deposit now forming around the great continents and continental islands, and in all enclosed or partially enclosed seas. It is characterized by a slaty colour, which passes in most cases into a thin layer of a reddish colour at the upper surface. These deposits are coloured blue by organic matter in a state of decomposition, and frequently give off an odour of sulphuretted hydrogen. When dried, a blue mud is greyish in colour, and rarely or never has the plasticity and compactness of a trueclay. Itis finely granular, and occasionally contains fragments of rocks 2 cm. in diameter ; generally, however, the minerals which are derived from the continents, and arc found mixed up with the muddy matter in these deposits, haveamean diameter of 0°5 mm. and less. Quartz particles, often rounded, play the principal part ; next come mica, felspar, augite, hornblende, and all the mineral species which come from the disintegration of the neighbouring lands, or the lands traversed by rivers which enter the sea near the placc where the specimens have been collected. These minerals make up the principal and characteristic portion of blue muds, sometimes forming 80 per cent. of the whole deposit. Glauconite, though generally present, is never abundant. The remains of calcareous organisms are at times quite absent, but occasionally they form over 50 per cent. The latter is the case when the specimen is taken at a cousiderable distance from the coast and at a moderate depth. These calcareous fragments consist of

bottom-living and pelagic Foraminifera, Molluscs, Polyzoa, Serpulz, Echinoderms, Alcyonarian spicules, Corals, &c. The remains of Diatoms and Radiolarians are usually present. Generally speaking, as the shores are approached the pelagic organisms disappear ; and, on the con- trary, as we proceed seawards the size of the mineral grains diminishes, and the remains of shore and coast organisms give place to pelagic ones, till finally a blue mud passes into a true deep- sea deposit. In those regions of the ocean affected with floating ice, the colour of these deposits becomes grey rather than blue at great distances from land, and is further modified by the presence of a greater or less abundance of glaciated blocks and fragments of quartz. These deposits are found along the coasts of North and South America, and in all the enclosed and partially euclosed seas, such as the Japan Sea, China Sea, Arafura Sea, Sulu Sea, Banda Sea, Celebes Sea, Sea of Okhotsk, &c.

At some points in the same regions are found green muds and sands, which, as regards their origin, composition, and distribution near the shores of continental land, resemble the blue muds. They are largely composed of argillaceous matter and mineral particles of the same size and kind as the blue muds. Their chief character- istic is the presence of a considerable quantity of glauconitic grains, either isolated or united into concretions by a brown argillaceous matter. The Moraminifera and fragments of Echinoderms and other organisms in these muds are frequently filled with glauconitic substance, and beautiful casts of these organisms remain after

treatment with weak acid. At times there are few calcareous organisms in these deposits, and at other times the remains of Diatoms and Radiolarians are abundant. When these muds | are dried they become earthy and of a grcy-green colour. They frequently give out a sulphuretted hydrogen odour. The green colour appears sometimes to be due to the presence of organic | matter, probably of vegetable origin, and to the reduction of peroxide of iron to protoxide under its influence. The green sands differ from the muds only in the comparative absence of the argillaceous and other amorphous matter, and by the more important part played by the grains of glauconite, to which the green colour is chiefly due. Red mud is found where quantities

Red of ochreous matter are brought down by rivers and deposited along mu: the coast, as in the Yellow Sea, but it is most characteristic in the Atlantic off the Brazil coast of America.

In addition to the terrigenous deposits above referred to, volcanic Vo), muds and sands and coral muds and sands are found around the my shores of oceanic islands either of volcanic or coral origin. The gay, voleanic muds and sands are black or grey, and when dried are rarely coherent. The mineral particles are generally fragmentary, and consist of lapilli of the basic and acid series of modern voleanic rocks, which are scoriaceous or compact, vitreous or crystalline, and usually present traces of alteration. The minerals are sometimes isolated, sometimes surrounded by their matrix, and consist principally of plagioclases, sanidine, amphibole, pyroxene, biotite, olivine, and magnetic iron; the size of the particles diminishes with distanee from the shore, but the mean diameter is generally 0°5 mm. Glauconite does not appear to be present in these deposits, and quartz is also very rare or absent, The fragments of shells and rocks are frequently covered witha coating of peroxide of manganese, Shells of calcareous organisms are often present in great abundance, and render the deposit of a lighter colour. The remains of Diatoms and Radiolarians are usually present.

Coral muds frequently contain as much as 95 per cent. of Cor: carbonate of lime, consisting of fragments of Corals, calcareous mui alge, Moraminifera, Serpule, Molluscs, and remains of other lime- and secreting organisms. There is a large amount of amorphous san calcareous matter, which gives the deposit a sticky and chalky character. The particles may be of all sizes according to the | distance from the reefs, the mean diameter being 1 to 2 mm., but occasionally there are large blocks of coral and large calcareous concretions ; the particles are white and red. Remains of siliceous organisms seldom make up over 2 or 8 per cent. of a typical coral mud. The residue consists usually ofa small amount of argillaceous matter, with a few fragments of felspar and other volcanic minerals ; but off barrier and fringing reefs facing continents there may be a great variety of rocks and minerals. Beyond a depth of 1000 fathoms off coral islands the debris of the reefs begins to diminish, and the remains of pelagic organisms to increase;

the deposit becomes more argillaceous, of a reddish or rose colour, and gradually

{

passes into a Globigerina ooze or a red clay. Coral sands con- tain much less amorphous matter than coral muds, but in other respects they are similar, the sands being usually found nearer the reefs aud in shallower water than the muds, except inside lagoons. In some regions the remains of calcareous algee predominate, and in these cases the name coralline mud or sand is employed to point out the distinction.

The extent and peculiarities of the region in which these terri- genous deposits are laid down are interesting. It extends from high-water mark down, it may be, to a depth of over 4 miles, and ina horizontal direction from 60 to perhaps 300 miles sea- wards, and includes all inland seas, such as the North Sea, Norwegian Sea, Mediterranean Sea, Red Sea, China Sea, Japan Sea, Caribbean Sea, and many others. It is the region of change and of variety with respect to light, temperature, motion, and biological conditions. In the surface waters the temperature ranges from 80° F. in the tropics to 28° F. in the polar regions. From the surface down to the nearly ice-cold water found at the lower limits of the region in the deep sea there is in the tropics an equally great range of temperature. Plants and animals are abundant near the shore, and animals extend in relatively great abundance down to the lower limits of the region, now marked out by these terrigenous deposits. The specific gravity of the water varies much, and this variation in its turn affects the fauna and flora. In the terrigcnous region tides and currents produce their maximum effect, and these influences can in some instances be traced to a depth of 300 fathoms, or nearly 2000 feet. ‘The upper or continental margin of the region is clearly defined by the high-water mark of the coast-line, which is constantly changing | through breaker action, elevation, and subsidence. The lowcror | abysmal margin passes in most cases insensibly into the abysmal region, but may be regarded as ending where the mineral particles from the neighbouring continents begin to disappcar from the deposits, which then pass into an organic ooze or a red clay. ‘

The area covered by terrigenous deposits has been called the) “transitional” or “critical area,” and is estimated at about —

PACIFIC OCEAN

two-eighths of the earth’s surface, while the continents cover three-

eighths, and the deep-sea deposits of the abysmal regions, which

will now be considered, cover the remaining three-eighths. The true deep-sea deposits may be divided into two classes, viz.,

123

deposits bearing the same names situated towards the centres of oceanic areas, with respect both to mineral particles and to re- mains of organisms.

Diatom ooze is of a pale straw colour, and is composed princi-

ta those in which the organic elements predominate, and those in | pally of the frustules of Diatoms. When dry it is a dirty white

Se which the mineral constituents play the chief part. Belonging to | siliceous flour, soft to the touch, taking the impression of the

the former class there are Globigerina, Pteropod, Diatom, and | fingers, and contains gritty particles which can be recognized by

Radiolarian Oozes, and to the latter Red Clay. the touch. It contains on an average about 25 per cent. of carbo-

a Globigerina ooze is the name given to all those truly pelagic | nate of lime, which exists in the deposit in the form of small @lo- 4 deposits containing over 40 per cent. of carbonate of lime which con- | bigerina shells, frag- gs = = a

sist principally of the dead shells of pelagic Foraminifera (Globige- rina, Orbulina, Pulvinulina, Pullenia, Spheroidina) and coccoliths andrhabdoliths. In some localities this deposit contains 95 percent. of

carbonate of lime. The colour is milky white, yellow, brown, or rose, the varieties of colour depending principally on the relative abundance in the deposit of the oxides of iron and manganese. This ooze is fine grained ; in the sat jor some of the Foraminifera

shells are macroscopic. When dried it is pulverulent. Analyses | dant; these are vol- show that the sediment contains, in addition to carbonate of lime, | canic, or, more fre- phosphate and sulphate quently, fragments of lime, carbonate of | and minerals coming ?

magnesia, oxides of |: iron and manganese, and argillaceous mat- ters. The residue is of a reddish-brown tinge. ; Lapilli, pumice, and * glassy fragments, often

altered into palagonite, seem always to be pre- sent, and are frequent- ly veryabundant. ‘The mineral particles are generally angular, and rarely exceed 0°08 mm. in diameter; miono- clinic and triclinic fel- |. spars, augite, olivine, hornblende, and mag- netite are the most fre- quent. When quartz is present, it is in the form of minute, rounded, probably wind-borne grains, often partially covered with

doliths,

ments of Echinoderms and other organisms. The residue is pale white and _ sliglitly plastic ; minerals and ¥ fragments of rocks are 52% in some cases abun- [ef

from continental rocks and transported by glaciers. The fine washings consist essen- tially of particles of 2 Diatoms along with argillaceous and other amorphous matter. It is estimated that the frustules of Diatoms and skeletons of siliceous organisms make up more than 50 per cent. of this deposit.

It has been already mentioned that Radiolarians are seldom, if ever, completely absent from marine deposits. they make up a considerable also found in Diatom ooze and in the terrigenous de- posits of the deeper water surrounding the land. In some regions of the Pa- cific, however, the skele- {i tons of these organisms |, make up the principal part of the deposit, to

Antarctic Ocean.

which the name Radio- i= larian ooze has been given. } The colour is reddish or |.

Radio- larian ooze.

oxide of iron. More rarely there are white and black particles of

tica, bronzite, actinolite, chromite, glauconite, and cosmic dust.

Siliceous organisms are probably never absent, sometimes forming

20 per cent. of the deposit, while at other times they are only

recognizable after careful microscopic examination. In some regions

the frustules of Diatoms predominate, in other the skeletons of iolarians,

Pteropod ooze differs in no way from a Globigerina ooze except in the presence of a greater number and variety of pelagic organisms, and especially in the presence of Pteropod and Heteropod shells, such as Diacria, Atlanta, Styliola, Carinaria, &c. The shells of the more delicate species of pelagic Foraminifera and young shells are also more abundant in these deposits than ina Globigerina ooze. It must be remembered that the name “ Pteropod ooze” is not intended to indicate that the deposit is chiefly composed of the shells of these Molluscs, but, as their presence in a deposit is char- acteristic and has an important bearing on geographical and bathy- metrical distribution, it is desirable to emphasize the presence of Fe shells In any great abundance. It may be pointed out

at there is a very considerable difference between a Globigerina ooze or a Pteropod ooze situated near continental shores and

deep brown, due to the presence of the oxides of iron and manganese. The & mineral particles consist [

of fragments of pumice, lapilli, and volcanic mine- rals, rarely exceeding 0°07 mm. in diameter. There is not a trace of carbonate of lime in the form

of ; shells in some samples of Radiolarian ooze, but other specimens contain 20 per cent. of carbonate of lime derived from the shells of pelagic Foraminifera. The clayey matter and mineral particles are the same as those found in the red clays, which will now be described.

as

Fia. 4.—Radiolarian Qoze from 4475 fathoms in Central Pacific.

Of all the deep-sea deposits red clay is the one which is distri- Red It might be clay

buted over the largest areas in the modern oceans. said that it exists everywhere in the abysmal regions of the ocean basins, for the residue in the organic deposits which have been described under the names Globigerina, Pteropod, Diatom, and Radiolarian oozes is nothing else than the red clay. However, this deposit only appears in its characteristic form in those areas where the terrigenous minerals and calcareous and _ siliceous organisms disappear to a greater or less extent from the bottom. It is in the central regions of the Pacific that the typical examples are met with. Like other marine deposits, this one passes laterally, according to position and depth, into the adjacent kind of deep-sea ooze, clay, or mud.

The argillaceous matters are of a more or less deep brown tint from the presence of the oxides of iron and manganese. In the typical examples no mineralogical species can be distinguished by the naked eye, for the grains are exceedingly fine and of nearly uniform dimensions, rarely exceeding 0°05 mm. in diameter. It is plastic and greasy to the touch; when dried it forms lumps so coherent that considerable force must be employed to break them. It gives the brilliant streak of clay, and breaks down in water. The pyrognostic properties show that it is not a pure clay, for it fuses easily before the blowpipe into a magnetic bead.

Under the term red clay are comprised those deposits in which the characters of clay are not well pronounced, but which are mainly composed of minute particles of pumice and other volcanic material

Distri- bution of de-

posits.

which, owing to their relatively recent deposition, have not under- gone great alteration. Ifthe analyses of red clay are calculated, it will be seen, moreover, that the silicate of alumina preseut as clay (2S8i0,, Al,O3+2H,O) comprises only a relatively small portion of the sediment; the calculation shows always an excess of free silica, which is attributed chiefly to the presence of siliceous organisms.

Microscopic examination shows that a red clay consists of argillaceous matter, minute mineral particles, and fragments of siliceous organisms. The mineral particles are for the greater part of voleanic origin, except in those cases where continental matters are transported by floating ice, or where the sand of deserts has been carried to great distances by winds. These voleanic minerals are the same constituent minerals of modern eruptive rocks enum- erated in the description of volcanic muds and sands ; in the great majority of cases they are accompanied by fragments of lapilli and of pumice more or less altered. Vitreous volcanic matters belonging to the acid and basic series of rocks predominate in the regions where the red clay has its greatest development; and it will be seen presently that the most characteristic decompositions which there take place are associated with pyroxenic lavas. ‘

Associated with the red clay are almost always found concretions and microscopic particles of the oxides of iron and manganese, to which the deposit owes its colour. Again, in the typical examples of the deposit, zeolites in the form of crystals and crystalline spherules are present, along with metallic globules and silicates which are regarded as of cosmic origin. Calcareous organisms are so generally absent that they cannot be regarded as characteristic. On the other hand, the remains of Diatoms, Radiolarians, and Sponge spicules are generally present, and are sometimes very abundant. The ear-bones of various Cetaceans, as well as the remnants of other Cetacean bones and the teeth of sharks, are, in some of the typical samples far removed from the continents, exceedingly abundant, and are often deeply impregnated with, or embedded in thick coatings of, the oxides of iron and man- ganese. Over six hundred sharks’ teeth, belonging to the

genera Carcharodon, Oxyrhina, and Lamna, and one hundred ear-bones of whales, belonging to Ziphius, Balenoptera, Balena, Orca, and Delphinus, along with fifty fragments of other bones, have been obtained in one haul of the dredge in the Central Pacific. The remains of these vertebrates have seldom been dredged in the organic oozes, and still more rarely in the terrigenous deposits.

The abysmal region, in which the true pelagic deposits above described are laid down, shows a marked contrast with the “ tran- sitional” or ‘‘critical area” where the terrigenous deposits are found. The former area comprises vast undulating plains from 2 to 5 miles beneath the surface of the sea, the average being about 3 miles, here and there interrupted by huge volcanic cones (the oceanic islands). No sunlight ever reaches these deep cold tracts. The range of temperature over them is not more than 7°, viz., from 31° to 38° F., and is apparently constant throughout the whole year in each locality. Plant life is absent, and, although animals belonging to all the great types are present, there is no great variety of form oe abundance of individuals. Change of any kind is exceedingly slow.

Leaving out of view the coral and volcanic muds and sands which are found prineipally around oceanic islands, the blue muds, green muds and sands, red muds, together with all the coast and shore formations, are situated along the margins of the continents and in enclosed and partially cnclosed seas. The chief characteristic of these deposits is the presence in them of continental debris. The blue muds are found in all the deeper parts of the regions just in- dicated, and especially near the embouchures of rivers. Red muds do not differ much from blue muds except in colour, due to the presence of ferruginous matter in greater abundance, and they are found under the same conditions as the blue muds. The green muds and sands occupy, as a rule, portions of the coast where detrital matter from rivers is not apparently accumulating at a rapid rate, viz., on such places as the Agulhas Bank, off the east coast of Australia, off the coast of Spain, and at various points along the coast of America. In the tropical and temperate zones-of the great oceans, which occupy about 110° of latitude between the two polar zones, at depths where the action of the waves is not felt, and at points to which the terrigenous materials do not extend, there are now forming vast accumulations of Globigerina and other pelagic Foraminifera,

coccoliths, rhabdoliths, shells of pelagic Molluscs, and remains of otherorganisms. Thesedeposits may perhaps be called the sediments of median depths and of warmer zones, becausc they diminish in great depths and tend to disappear towards the poles. This fact is evidently in relation with the surface temperature of the ocean, and shows that pelagic Foraminifera and Molluscs live in the superficial waters of the sea, whence their dead shells fall to the bottom. Globigerina ooze is not found in enclosed seas nor in polar latitudes. In the sonthern hemisphere it has not been met with south of the 50th parallel. In the Atlantic it is deposited upon the bottom at a very high latitude below the warm waters of the Gulf Stream, and is not observed under the cold descending polar current which

runs south in the same latitude. These facts are readily cxplained if it be admitted that this ooze is formed chiefly by the shells of surface organisms, which require an elevated temperature and wide expanse of sea for their existence.

The distribution of oceanic deposits may be summarized thus. (1) The terrigenous deposits—blue muds, green muds and sands, red muds, voleanic muds and sands, coral muds and sands—are met with in those regions of the ocean nearest to land. ‘With the exception of the volcanic muds and sands and coral muds and sands around oceanie islands, these deposits are found only lying along the borders of continents and continental islands, and in enclosed and partially enclosed seas. (2) The organic oozes and red clay are confined to the abysmal regions of the ocean basins ; a Pteropod ooze is met with in tropical and subtropical regions in depths less than 1500 fathoms, a G@lobigerina ooze in the same regions between the depths of 500 and 2800 fathoms, a Radiolarian ooze in the central portions of the Pacific at depths greater than 2500 fathoms, a Diatom ooze in the Southern Ocean south of the latitude of 45° south, a red clay anywhere within the latitudes of 45° north and south at depths greater than 2200 fathoms.

As long as the conditions of the surface are the same, it might be expected that the deposits at the bottom would also remain the same. In showing that such is not the case, an agent must be taken into account which is in direct correlation with the depth, It may be regarded as established that the majority of the cal- careous organisms which make up the Globigerina and Pteropod oozes live in the surface waters, and it may also be taken for grauted that there is always a specific identity between the cal- careous organisms which live at the surface and the shells of these pelagic creatures found at the bottom. Globigerina ooze is found in the tropical zone at depths which do not exceed 2400 fathoms, but when depths of 3000 fathoms are explored in this zone of the Atlantic and Pacific there is found an argillaceous deposit without, in many instances, any trace of calcareous organisms. Descending from the “submarine plateaus” to depths which exceed 2250 fathoms, the Globigerina ooze gradually disappears, passing

into a greyish marl, and finally is wholly replaced by an argillaceous material which covers the bottom at all depths greater than 2900 fathoms. é

The transition between the calcareous formations and the argil- laceous ones takes place by almost insensible degrees. The thinner and more delicate shells disappear first. The thicker and larger shells lose little by little the sharpness of their contour and appear to undergo a profound alteration. They assume a brownish colour, and break up in proportion as the calcareous constituent disappears. The red clay predominates more and more as the calcareous element diminishes in the deposit. Recollecting that the most important elements of the organic deposits have descended from the super- ficial waters, and that the variations in contour of the bed of the sea cannot of themselves prevent the debris of animals and plants from accumulating upon the bottom, their absence in the red clay areas can only be explained by the hypothesis of decom- position.

Pteropod ooze, it will be remembered, is a calcareous organic deposit, in which the remains of Ptcropods and other pelagic Mollusca are present, though they do not always form a preponderat- ing constituent, and it has been found that their presence is in cor- relation with the bathymetrical distribution.

In studying the nature of the calcareous elements which are deposited in the abysmal areas, it has been noticed that, like the shells of the Foraminifera, those of the Thecosomatous Peropoda, which live everywhere in the superficial waters, cspecially in the tropics, become fewer in number in the deposit as the depth increases. It has just been observed that the shells of fora- minifera disappear gradually along a series of soundings from a point where the Globigerina ooze has abundance of carbonate of lime, towards deeper regions ; but it is also noticed that, when the sounding-rod brings up a graduated series of sediments from a declivity descending into deep water, among the calcareous shells those of the Pteropods and Heteropods disappear first in pro portion as the depth increases. At depths less than 1400 fathoms in the tropics a Pteropod ooze is found with abundant remains of Heteropods and Pteropods ; deeper soundings then give a Globi- gertna ooze without these Molluscan remains ; and in still greater depths, as has

been said above, there is a red clay in which cal- careous organisms are nearly, if not quite, absent.

In this manner, then, it is shown that the remains of calcareous organisms are completely eliminated in the greatest depths of the ocean. For if such be not the case, why are all these shells found at the bottom in the shallower depths, and not at all in the greater depths, although they are equally abundant on the surface at both places? There is reason to think that this solution of calcareous shells is due to the presence of carbonic acid throughout all depths of ocean water. It is well known that this substance, dissolved in water, is an energetic solvent of calcareous matter. The investiga- tions of Buchanan and Dittmar have shown that carbonic acl cxists in a free state in sea water, and Dittmar's analyses also show

sneer AS:

PACIFIC OCEAN

that deep-sea water contains more lime than surface water. This ig a confirmation of the theory which regards earbonie acid as the agent concerned in the total or partial solution of the surface shells before or immediately after they reach the bottom of the ocean, and is likewise in relation with the faet that in high latitudes, where fewer calcareous organisms are found at the surface, their remains are removed at lesser depths than where these organisms are in greater abundance. It has been shown that sea water itself has some effect in the solution of carbonate of lime, and further it is robable that the immense pressure to which water is subjected in great depths may have an influence on its eheniical aetivity. Objections have been raised to the explanation here advanced, on aceount of the alkalinity of sea water, but it may be remarked that alkalinity presents no diffieulty which need be here considered (Dittmar, P/ys. Chem. Chall. Exp., part i., 1884).

This interpretation also explains how the remains of Diatoms and Radiolarians (surface organisms like the Foraminifera) are found in greater abundance in the red clay than in a Globigerina ooze. The aetion which suffices to dissolve the calcareous matter has no effeet upon the silica, and so the siliceous shells accuinulate. Nor is this view of the case opposed to

the distribution of the Pteropod ooze. At first it would be expected that the Foraminifera shells, being smaller, would disappear from a deposit before the Pteropod shells; but if it be remembered that the latter are very thin and delicate, and, for the quantity of carbonate of lime present, offer a larger surface to the action of the solvent than the thicker, though smaller, Globigerina shells, this apparent anomaly will be explained.

The origin of these vast deposits of clay isa problem of the highest interest. It was at first supposed that these sediments were com- posed of microscopic particles arising from the disintegration of the rocks by rivers and by the waves on the coasts. It was believed that the matters held in suspension were earried far and wide by currents, and gradually fell to the bottom of the sea, But the uni- formity of composition presented by these deposits was a great objection to this view. It ean be shown that mineral particles, even of the smallest dimensions, continually set adrift upon dis- turbed waters must, owing to a property of sea water, eventually be precipitated at no great distance from land. It has also been supposed that these argillaceous deposits owe their origin to the inorganic residue of the calcareous shells which are dissolved away in deep water, but this view has no foundation in fact. Everything seems to show that the formation of the clay is due to the decomposition of fragmentary voleanic products, whose presenee ean be detected over the whole floor of the ocean.

These volcanic materials are derived from floating pumice, and

from volcanic ashes ejected to great distances by terrestrial volcanoes, and carried far by the winds. It is also known that beds of lava and of tufa are laid down upon the bottom of the sea. This assemblage of pyrogenic rocks, rich in silicates of alumina, decomposes under the ehemical action of the water, and gives rise, in the same way as do terrestrial volcanic rocks, to argillaceous matters, according to re- actions which can always be observed on the surface of the globe, and which are too well known to need special mention here. _ The universal distribution of pumice over the floor of the ocean is very remarkable, and would at first appear unaccountable; but when the fact that pieces of pumice have been known to float in sea water for a period of over three years before becoming suffici- ently waterlogged to sink is taken into consideration, it will be readily understood how

fragments of this material may be trans- ported by winds and currents to an enormous distance from their point of origin before being deposited upon the bottom. Frag- ments of pumice are dredged in the greatest profusion in the red clay of the Central Pacifie, and much less abundantly in the or. ganic oozes and terrigenous deposits. This is owing to the rate of deposition being much slower in the former than in the latter, where the rapid aceumulation of calcareous and silieeous organisms and continental debris masks their presence.

The detailed microscopic examination of hundreds of soundings has shown that the presence of pumice, of lapilli, of silicates, and of other voleanic minerals in various stages of decomposition can always be demonstrated in the argillaceous matter.

In the places where the red clay attains its most typical develop- ment, the transformation of the volcanic fragments into argillaceous matter may be followed step by step. It may be said to be the direct product of the decomposition of the basic rocks, represented by volcanic glasses, such as hyalomelan and tachylite. This decom- position, in spite of the temperature approximating to zero (32° F.), gives rise, as an ultimate product, to elearly erystallized minerals, which may be poised the most remarkable produets of the eo action of the sea upon the volcanic matters undergoing Gecomposition. These microseopic erystals are zeolites lying free = the deposit, and are met with in greatest abundance in the typical ted-clay areas of the Central Pacific. They are simple, twinned, or cm groups, whieh scareely exceed half a millimetre in oes The crystallographic and chemical study of them shows = they must be referred to christianite. It is known how easily

€ zeolites crystallize in the pores of eruptive rocks in process of

decomposition ; and the crystals of ehristianite, which are observed in eonsiderable quantities in the clay of the centre of the Pacific

Fig. 5.—Crystals of Christianite from the deep water of the Pacific.

(fig. 5), have been formed at the expense of the decomposing volcanie matters spread out upon the bed of that ocean.

In connexion with this formation of zeolites, reference may be made to a chemical process whieh gives rise to the formation of nodules of manganiferous iron. These nodules are almost uni- versally distributed in oceanic sediments, but are met with in the greatest abundance in the red clay. This association tends to show a common origin. It is exactly in those regions where there is an aecumulation of pyroxenic lavas in decomposition, containing sili- cates with a base of manganese and iron, such for example as augite, hornblende, olivine, magnetite, and basie glasses, that manganese nodules occur in greatest numbers. In the regions where the sedimentary action, mechanieal and organic, is, as it were, suspended, and where everything shows an extreme slowness of deposition, —in these calm waters favourable to chemical reac- tions, ferro-manganiferous substances form concretions around organie and inorganic centres.

These concentratious of ferrie and manganic oxides, mixed with argillaceous materials whose form and dimensions are extremely variable, belong generally to the earthy variety or wad, but pass sometimes, though rarely, into varieties of hydrated oxide of manganese with distinct indications of radially fibrous erystalliza- tion.! The interpretation necessary, in order to explain this formation of manganese nodules, is the same as that admitted in explanation of the formation of coatings of this material on the surface of terrestrial rocks. These salts of manganese and iron, dissolved in water by carbonic acid, then precipitated in the form of carbonate of protoxide of iron and manganese, beeome oxidized, and give rise in the calm and deep oceanie regions to more or less pure ferro-manganiferous ee: concretions. At the same time it must be admitted that rivers may bring to the ocean a contribution of the same substances.

Among the bodies which, in certain regions where red clay predominates, serve as centres for these mangani- ferous nodules are the re- mains of vertebrates. These remains are the hardest parts of the skeleton—tympanic bones of whales, beaks of Ziphius, teeth of sharks ; : and, just as the calcareous py¢, ¢—Section of a Manganese Nodule, enclos- shells are

eliminated in ing tympanic bone of a whale, from 2300 great depths, so all the re- fathoms, South Pacific. mains of the larger vertebrates are absent, except the most resistant portions. These bones often serve as a centre for the manganese iron concretions, being frequently surrounded by layers several

1 For the composition of these manganese nodules, see ManGanuse, Vol. xv. Pp.

9.

Cosmic sphe- rules.

126

centimetres in thickness (fig. 6). In the same dredgings in the red-clay areas some sharks' teeth and Cetacean ear-bones, some of which belong to extinct species, are surrounded with thick layers of the manganese, and others with merely a slight coating. . The eosmic spherules incidentally referred to under the descrip- tion of red clay may be here described in greater detail. If a magnet be plunged into an oceanic deposit, especially a red clay from the central parts of the Pacific, particles are extracted, some of which are magnetite from volcanic rocks, to which vitreous matters are often attached ; others again are quite isolated, and differ in most of their properties from the former. The latter are generally round, measuring hardly 0°2 mm., usually smaller; their surface is quite covered with a brilliant black coating having all the properties of magnetic oxide of iron; often there may be noticed clearly marked upon them cup-like depressions (figs. 7 and 8). If these spherules be broken down in an agate mortar, the brilliant blaek coating easily falls away and reveals white or grey metallic malleable nuelei, which may be beaten out by the pestle into thin lamella. This metallie centre, when treated with an acid solu. tion of sulphate of copper, immediately assumes a coppery coat, thus showing that it is native iron. But there are some mal- leable metallic nuclei extracted from the spherules which do not give this reaction; they do not take the copper coating.

Fig. 7. Fic. 7.—Black Spherule with Metallie Nucleus (x60). This spherule covered with a coating of black shining magnetite represents the most

frequent shape. The depression here shown is often found at the surface of these sphcrules, From 2375 fathoms, South Pacific. Fic, 8.—Black Spherule with Metallic Nucleus (x60). The black external coat- ing of magnetic oxide has been broken away to show the metallic nucleus re- presented by the clear part at the centre. From 3150 fathoms.

Fig. 8,

Chemical reactions show that they contain cobalt and nickel ; very probably they constitute an alloy of iron and these two metals, such as is often found in meteorites, and whose presence in large quantities hinders the production of the coppery coating on the iron, G, Rose has shown that this coating of black oxide of iron is found on the periphery of meteorites of native iron, and its presence is readily understood when their cosmic origin is admitted. Indeed, these meteoric particles of native iron in their transit through the air must undergo combustion, and, like small portions of iron from a smith's anvil, be transformed either entirely or at the surface only into magnetic oxide, and in the latter case the nucleus is protected from further oxidation by the coating which thus covers at,

One may suppose that meteorites in their passage through the atmosphere break into numerous fragments, that incandescent particles of iron are thrown off all round them, and that these eventually fall to the surface of the globe as almost impalpable dust, in the form of magnetic oxide of iron more or less completely fused. The luminous train of falling stars is probably due to the combustion of these innumerable particles resembling the sparks which fly from a ribbon of iron burnt in oxygen, or the particles of the same metal thrown off when striking a flint. It is easy to show that these particles in burning take a spherical form, and are surrounded by a layer of black magnetic oxide.

Among the magnetic grains found under the same conditions as those just described are other spherules, which are referred to the chondres, so that, if the interpretation of a cosmic origin for the magnetic spherules with a metallic centre were not established in a manner absolutely beyond question, it almost becomes so when their association with the silicate spherules, which will now be described, is taken into account. It will be seen by the microscopic details that these spherules have quite the

constitution and strueture of chondres so frequent in meteorites of the most ordinary type, and on the other hand they have never been found, as far as is known, in rocks of a terrestrial origin ; in short, the presence of these spherules in the deep-sea deposits, and their association with the metallic spherules, are matters of prime importance.

Among the fragments attracted by the magnet in deep-sea deposits are distinguished granules' slightly larger than the spherules with the shining black coating above described. These are yellowish-brown, with a bronze-like lustre, and under the microscope it is notieed that the surface, instead of being quite smooth, 1s grooved by thin lamella. Their dimensions never attain a millimetre, generally they are about 0°5 mm, in diameter ; they

are never perfect spheres, as in the case of the black spherules with a metallie eentre ; and sometimes a depression more or less marked is to be observed in the periphery. When examined by the miero. scope it is observed that the lamelle which compose them are applied the one against the other, and have a radial eceentrie dis. position. It is the leafy radial structure (radialbldtirig), like that of the chondres of bronzite, which predominates in these spheres, The serial structure of the chondres with olivine is observed mueh less rarely, and indeed there is some doubt about the indications of this last type of structure. Fig. 9 shows the characters and texture of one of these spherules magnified 25 diameters. On aeeount of

their small dimensions, as well as of their friability due to their lamellar structure, it is difficult to polish one of these spherules, and it has been necessary to study them with reflected light, or to limit the observations to the study of the broken fragments, These spherules break up following the lamelle, which latter are

In rotating

seen to be extremely fine and perfectly transparent. between crossed nicols they have the extinctions of the rhombic system, and in making use of the condenser it is seen that they have one optic axis. It is observed also that when several of these lamelle are attached they extinguish exactly at /ijgix

the same time, so that]f everything tends to show } that they form a single individual.

In studying these trans- parent and very thin frag- ments with the aid of a high magnifying power, it is ob- served that they are dotted with brown-black inclu- pyg, 9,—Spherule of Brorizite (x25), from 3500 sions, disposed with a cer- fathoms in the Central South Pacific, show- tainsymmetry, and showing ing eae! Fe the pecniariies (oan to somewhat regular contours ; errs eo See these inclusions are referred to magnetic iron, and their presence explains why these spherules of bronzite are extracted by the magnet. It should be observed, however, that they are not so strongly magnetic as thosc-with a metallic nucleus.

They are designated bronzite rather than enstatite, because of the somewhat deep tint which they present; they are insoluble in hydrochloric acid. Owing to the small quantity of substance, only a qualitative analysis could be made, which showed the presence in them of silica, magnesia, and iron.

The study of deep-sea deposits suggests some interesting conelu- Great

sions.

regions of the ocean.

It has been said that the debris carried away from the land anti-

It is only in exceptional cascs that the finest ocean

terrigenous matcrials are transported several hundred miles from areas

the shores. In place of layers formed of pebbles and clastic elements with grains of considerable dimensions, whieh play so large a part in the composition of emerged lands, the great areas of the ocean basins are covered by the microscopic remains of pelagic organisms, or by the deposits coming from the alteration of voleanic products. The distinctive elements that appear in the river and eoast sediments are, properly speaking, wanting in the great depths far distant from the coasts. To such a degree is this the case that in a great number of soundings, from the centre of the

Paeific for example, no mineral particles on which the mechanical action of water had left its imprint have been distinguished, and quartz is so rare that it may be said to be absent. It is sufficient to indieate these facts in order to make apparent the profound differenees which separate the deposits of the abysmal areas of the ocean basins from the series of rocks in the geological formations, As regards the vast deposits of red clay, with its manganese concretions, its zeolites, cosmic dust, and remains of vertebrates, and the organic oozes which are spread out over the bed of the Central Paeific, Atlantic, and Indian Oceans, have they their analogues in the geological series of rocks? If it be proved that in the sedimentary strata the true pelagic sediments are not represented, it follows that deep and extended oceans like those of the present day cannot formerly have occupied the areas of the present continents, and as a corollary the great lines of the oceanic basins and continents must have been marked out from the earliest geological ages.

Without asserting that the terrestrial areas and the areas covered by the waters of the great ocean basins have had their main lines marked out since the commencement of geological history, it is a fact proved by the evidence of the pelagic sediments that these areas havea great antiquity. The accumulation of sharks' teeth, of the ear- bones of Cetaceans, of manganese concretions, of zeolites, of voleamie material in an advanced state of decomposition, and of cosmic dust, at points far removed from the continents, tends to prove this. There is no reason for supposing that the parts of the ocean where

accumulates at the bottom of the sea before reaching the abysmal 4

€ logi- chs- ps of

ae

rec irie ©UC HAN

these vertebrate remains are found are more frequented by sharks or Cetaceans than other regions where they are never, or only rarely, dredged from the deposits at the bottom. When it is remembered also that these ear-bones, teeth of sharks, and volcanic fragments are sometimes incrusted with

two centimetres of manganese oxide, while others have a mere coating, and that some of the bones and teeth belong to extinct species, it may be concluded with great certainty that the clays of these oceanic basins have accumulated with extreme slowness. It is indeed almost beyond question that the red-clay regions of the Central Pacific contain accumulations belonging to geological ages different from our own. ‘The great antiquity of these formations is likewise confirmed in a striking manner by the presence of cosmic fragments, the nature of which has been described. In order to account for the accumulation of all these substances in such relatively great abundance in the areas where they were dredged, it is necessary to suppose the oceanic basins to have remained the same for a vast period of time.

The sharks’ teeth, ear-bones, manganese nodules, altered volcanic fragments, zeolites, and cosmic dust are met with in greatest abundance in the red clays of the Central Pacific, at that point on the earth’s surface farthest removed from continental land. They are less abundant in the Radiolarian ooze, are rare in the Globt- gerina, Diatom, and Pteropod oozcs, and have been dredged only in a few instances in the terrigenous deposits elose to the shore. These substances are present in all the deposits, but owing to the abundanee of other matters in the more rapidly forming deposits their presence is masked, and the chance of dredging them is reduced. The greater or less abundance of these materials, which are so characteristic of a true red clay, may be regarded as a measure of the relative rate of accumulation of the marine sediments in which they lic. The terrigenous deposits accumulate most rapidly ; then follow in order Pteropod ooze, Globigerina ooze, Diatom ooze, Radiolarian ooze, and, slowest of all, red clay.

From the data now advanced it appears possible to deduce other conelusions important from a geological point of view. In the deposits due essentially to the action of the ocean, the great variety of sediments which may accumulate in regions where the external conditions are almost identical is very striking. Again, marine faunas and floras, at least those of the surface, differ greatly, both with respect to species and the relative abundance of individuals, in different regions of the ocean; and, as their remains determine the character of the deposit in many instances, it is legitimate to conelude that the occurrence of organisms of a different nature

in several beds is not an arguinent against the synchronism of the layers which contain them. In this connexion may be noted the fact that in certain regions of the deep sea no appreciable forma- tion is now taking place. Hence the absence, in the sedimentary series, of a layer representing a definite horizon must not always be interpreted as proof either of the emergence of the bottom of the sea during the corresponding period, or of an ulterior erosion.

The small extent occupied by littoral formatious, especially those of an arenaceous nature, and the relatively slow rate at which such deposits are formed along a stable coast, are matters of importance. In the present state of things there does not appear to be any- thing to account for the enormous thickness of the clastic sediments making up certain geological formations, unless the exceptional eases of erosion which are brought into play when a coast is under- going constant elevation or subsidence are considercd. Great move- ments of the land are doubtless necessary for the formation of thick beds of transported matter like sandstones and conglomerates. Arenaceous formations of great thickness rcquire seas of no great extent and coasts subject to frequent oscillations, which permit the shores to advance and retire. Along these, through all periods of the earth's history, the great marine sedimentary phenomena have taken place.

The continental geological formations, when compared with Marine deposits of modern seas and oceans, present no analogues to the red clays, Radiolarian, Globigerina, Pteropod, and Diatom oozes. On the other hand, the terrigenous deposits of lakes, shallow seas, enelosed seas, and the shores of the continents reveal the equivalents of the chalks, greensands, sandstones, conglomerates, shales, marls, and other sedimentary formations. Such formations as certain Tertiary deposits of Italy and the Radiolarian carth from Barbados, where pelagic conditions are indicated, must be regarded as having been laid down rather along the border of a continent than in a true oeeanic area, The white chalk is evidently not a deep-sea deposit, for the Foraminifera and fragments of other organisms of which it is largely composed arc similar to those found in comparatively shallow water not far from land. The argillaceous and calcareous Toeks recently discovered by Dr Guppy in the upraised coral islands in the Solomon group are identical with the deposits now forming around oceanic

islands, Regions situated similarly to enclosed and shallow seas and the borders of the present contincnts appear to have been, throughout all geological ages, the theatre of the greatest and most remarkable changes ; in short, all, or nearly all, the sedi- mentary rocks of the continents would seem to have been built up m areas like those now occupied by the tcrrigcnous deposits.

During cach era of the earth's history the borders of some lands have sunk beneath the sea and been eovered by marine sediments, while in other parts the terrigenous deposits have been elevated into dry land, and have carried with them a record of the organisms which flourished in the sea of the time. In this transitional area there has been throughout a continuity of geological and biological phenomena.

From these considerations it will be evident that the character of a deposit is determined mueh more by distance from the shore ofa continent than by actual depth ; and the same would appear to be the case with respect to the fauna spread over the floor of the present oceans. Dredgings near the shores of continents, in depths of 1000, 2000, or 3000 fathoms, are more productive both in species and in- dividuals than dredgings at similar depths several hundred miles seawards. Again, among the few species dredged in the abysmal areas farthest removed from land, the majority show archaic characters, or belong to groups which have a wide distribution in time as well as over the floor of the present occans. Such are the Hexactinellida, Brachiopoda, Stalked Crinoids and other Echino- derms, &e.

As already mentioned, the "transitional area" is that which now shows the greatest variety in respect to biological and physical conditions, and in past time it has been subject to the most frequent and the greatest amount of change. The animals now living in this area may be regarded as the greatly modified descendants of those which have lived in similar regions in past geological ages, and some of whose ancestors have been preserved in the sedimentary rocks as fossils. On the other hand, many of the animals dredged in the abysmal regions are most probably also the descendants of animals which lived in the shallower waters of former geological periods, but migrated into deep water to escape the. severe struggle for existence

which must always have obtained in shallower waters influenced by light, heat, motion, and other favourable conditions. Having found existence possible in the less favourable and deeper water, they may be regarded as having slowly spread themselves over the floor of the ocean, but without undergoing great modifications, owing to the extreme uniformity of the conditions and the absence of competition. Or it may be supposed that, in the depressions which have taken place near coasts, some species have been gradually carried down to deep water, have accommodated themselves to the new conditions, and have gradually migrated to the regions far from land. A few species may thus have migrated to the deep sea during each geological period. In this way the origin and distribution of the deep-sea fauna in the present oeeans may in some measure be explained. In like manner, the pelagic fauna and flora of the ocean is most probably derived originally from the shore and shallow water. uring each period of the earth's history a few animals and plants have been carried to sea, and have ultimately adopted a pelagic mode of life.

ISLANDS.

The Pacific Ocean is distinguished from the Atlantic by the greater number of small island groups that diversify its surface. The continental islands, lying along the coasts of America and Asia, have been referred to in speaking of the coasts; the islands of the Malay Archipelago, Australia, New Zealand, and probably New Caledonia belong to the same class. The true oceanic islands on the other hand have no direct geological connexion with the continents; the older sedimentary and metamorphic rocks appear to be quite absent, the islands being either of eruptive or coral formation. The fauna and flora of the oceanic islands present a considerable amount of uniformity, though each island or important group of islands has its peculiar species. There is an entire absence of terrestrial Mammalia. The genera and species are few in number when compared with those of the continents and continental islands from which they would appear to have been originally derived by immigration, and subsequently to have undergone modification. Recent researches appear also to show that the dredgings around oceanic islands yield fewer genera and species than dredgings at similar depths along the shores of continents, although the numbers of individuals of a few species may be extraordinarily abundant.

The most northern oceanic group is the Hawaiian Archipelago or Sandwich Islands (see vol. xi. p. 528), stretching for about 340 miles between the latitudes of 18° 52’ and 22° 15’ N., and the meridians of 154° 42’ and 160° 33’ W.; it consists of eight large islands—Hawaii (Owhyhee), Maui (Mowee), Kahulaui (Tahooroway), Lanai

(Ranai), Molokai (Morotoi), Oahu (Woahoo), Kauai (Atooi), and Niihau (Oneehoow), and four small barren islets, the entire area being 6100 square miles. The islands of this group are mountainous, and abound in active volcanoes; the great lake of fire, Kilauea, on the east side of the Mountain of Mauna Loa (13,760 feet) in Hawaii is probably the largest active crater in the world, while one of the largest known extinct craters is that of Mauna Haleakala (“The House of the Sun”) in Maui, at a height of 10,200 feet above the sea; it is 12 miles in circumference. The Hawaiian Islands being within the zone of coral formation are surrounded by fringing reefs, and there is abundant evidence that gradual upheaval has taken place over the whole area which they occupy. ‘There are beds of coral limestone in Molokai at a height of 400 feet, and in Kauai coral sand is found at an elevation of 4000 feet above the sea; in many.other islands coral and lava are found interstratified.

The three groups of the Bonin Islands known as the Parry, Beechy, and Coffin groups are composed of high rocky islets of a bold and fantastic outline, and are situated between 26° and 27° N. lat.

The Ladrones or Mariana Islands (see vol. xiv. p. 199) have a total area of 395 square miles; they stretch for nearly 450 miles between 13° and 20° N. lat. and 144° 37’ and 145° 55’ E. long. These islands are all of volcanic origin, and their mountains contain several active volcanoes.

The Caroline Archipelago (see vol. v. p. 125) lies about 170 miles to the south of the Ladrones, and, together with the Pelew Islands, has an area of 877 square miles. The Carolines embrace forty distinct island groups, five of which are basaltic and mountainous, though surrounded by coral reefs ; the remaining thirty-five groups are entirely of coral formation, and do not rise much above the sea-level. The Pelew Islands resemble the Carolines in

their physical characters ; they present peculiarities in the arrangement of atolls which will be alluded to below.

The Marshall Islands (see Micronzsta, vol. xvi. p. 256) consist of two chains running parallel to each other, and composed of fourteen and seventeen small groups respec- tively. They lie to the eastward of the Carolines, and are entirely of organic formation.,

The Gilbert Archipelago (see vol. xvi. p. 256) is cut by the equator. It contains sixteen groups of small coral islands, low and barren, but densely populated.

In the South Pacific oceanic islands are scattered with the greatest profusion over a region between 5° and 25° 8. lat. and 180° to 120° W. long. The northern part of the shallow water surrounding Australia, New Zealand, and the Malay Archipelago is occupied by the Solomon Islands, the New Hebrides, the bold rocky and mountain- ous islands of Fiji with fine barrier reefs, the Friendly Islands, and Samoa or the Navigators' Islands. Farther to the south there are the Society Islands, including Tahiti; they are lofty, of volcanic origin, and surrounded by very perfect barrier reefs. The Marquesas or Mendana Archi- pelago, farther to the north, also consists of volcanic islands, but they are not fringed by reefs.

_ The volcanic group of the Galapagos Archipelago is situated under the equator at a distance of 500 or 600 miles from the west coast of South America; it has been minutely described by Darwin.

The extensive Low or Paumotu Archipelago lies to the south-east of the Society Islands, and runs parallel to them. It consists of about eighty atolls, some of them of large size, and all typical examples of this form of coral island.

The total area of the islands of the Pacific is exceedingly small, especially when the vast number of groups that stud the ocean is taken into consideration.

PACU aC 3C OE aw

THirory OF CornaL ISLANDS.

The origin of coral islands was specially studied by Darwin during the voyage of the “Beagle” in 1881-36, and he shortly afterwards published a theory on the subject which has been fully detailed in the article Cora (vol. vi. p. 377). This theory was so simple, and it appeared so complete, that it acquired universa} acceptance; and the continuous action of subsidence in promoting the development of fringing reefs into barriers, and of barriers into atolls, was long unquestioned. In 1851 L. Agassiz! expressed the opinion that the theory of subsidence was insufficient to explain the formation of the coral reefs and keys of Florida. In 1868 Car} Semper stated that an attentive study of the Pelew Islands showed the complete inadequacy of this theory, and in 1868 he reitcrated his convictions.?

In 1880 Mr John Murray published an abstract of his “Chal- lenger” observations,® and gave a theory of coral island formation which claims to account for all the phenomena without calling in the aid of subsidence. It is pointed out that, with hardly an exception, the occanic islands are of volcanic origin, and it is assumed that the various pcaks which deep-sca soundings have shown to be scattered over the bed of the ocean, and rising to within various distances of the surface, are also, primarily, of volcanic origin. There is no evidence of any extensive submerged continent or mass of land such as Darwin’s theory requires, Whether built up sufficiently high to rise above the surface of the sea and thus form islands, or brought up only to varying heights below the sea-level, these volcanic eminences tend to become platforms on which coral recfs nay be formed. The erosive action of waves and tides tends to reduce all volcanic summits down to the lower limit of breaker action, thus producing platforms on which barrier reefs and atolls may spring up. Again, submarine eminences may be brought up to the zone of the reef builders by the deposit of volcanic and organic detritus falling from the surface, as well as through the agency of organisms sccreting lime and silica, which live in profusion at great depths, especially on the tops of submarine peaks and banks. The great profusion of life in the tropical surface waters is insisted upon, and it is pointed out that this pelagic life supplies the reef-building corals with food, and that, when these surface creatures die and their shells fall to the bottom, they carry down with them sufficient organic matter to furnish food to the animals living on

the floor of the ocean. As the result of tow-net experiments in the tropics Mr Murray estimated that, in the surface waters of the ocean, there were ina mass 1 mile square by 100 fathoms, 16 tons of carbonate of lime existing in the form of shells of pelagic Foraminifera and Molluses. In this way it is urged that submarine banks are continually being brought within the zone of reef-building corals. Darwin admitted that reefs not to be distinguished from atolls might be formed on such submarine banks, but the improbability of so many submerged banks existing caused him to dismiss this explanation without further consideration. He was not, however, aware of the great number of submerged cones which recent soundings have made known, nor of the enormous abundance of minute caleareous organisms—such as calcareous alge, Foraminifera, and Molluses in the surface waters—and of the comparatively rapid rate at which their remains might accumulate on the sea bottom. Nor had he any idea of the comparatively great abundauce of animals living at considerable depths.

Coral-reef builders starting on a bank, whether formed by elevation or subsidence, by erosion or the upward growth of aa sea deposits composed largely of organic remains, tend ultimately to assume the atoll or barrier form. When the coral reef or colony approaches the surface, the central portions are gradually placed at a disadvantage as compared with the peripheral parts of the mass, in being farther removed from the food supply which is brought by the oceanic currents, and consequently dwindle and die. In pro- portion as the reef approaches the surface, the centre becomes cut off from the food supply and the conditions become increasingly uncongenial. At last an outer ring of vigorously growing reef corals encloses a central lagoon. The windward side of the reef grows most vigorously, not because of a larger supply of oxygen and greater aeration of the water, but because that is the direetion in which the oceanic currents bring the food to the reef. As the atoll extends seawards from vigorous growth the lagoon becomes larger, chiefly from the removal of lime in solution by the action of the carbonic acid in sea water which flows in and out at each tide. This solvent action of sea water on dead calcareous organ-isms was shown by the “Challenger’s” observations to be unr versal.

Mr Murray reverses the order of growth as given by Darwin for the groups in the Indian Ocean. He regards the Laccadive, Caro- line, and Chagos

archipelagos as various stages in the growth of coral reefs towards the surface, aud he explains the various appear-

1 Bull, Mus. Comp. Zocl., vol. i. 2 Verhandl. Physik. Med. Geselisch. Witrzburg, Ecb. 1, 1868. 3 Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. x. p. 505.

i ee

ances in the Maldive group of atolls without any necessity for {

i by oceanic currents as argued by Darwin. Precisely PE crplsvation is applied to the case of a barrier reef. It commences in the shallow water near the shore, and afterwards extends seawards on a talus built up of lumps of coral broken off by the surf. A very careful examination of the barrier reef at Tahiti was made by Lieutenant Swire of H.M.S. Challenger and Mr Murray, and they found that such an explanation was completely justified by the form and nature of the reef. There was much dead coral on the inner side of the barrier, which in many places was perpendicular or even overhanging; while, on the contrary, the outer surface was all alive, and sloped gradually sea- wards. A section of it, drawn to a true scale, is given in fig. 10,

Sea-tevet

Growing Surface

targltthtt os ~

\

. y 4 _. g

Fic. 10.—Section across the Barrier Reef, Tahiti.

This section shows that a ledge, over which there is a depth of from 80 to 40 fathoms of water, runs out for 250 yards from the edge of the reef. This ledge is covered with luxuriant heads and bosses of coral. Beyond it there is

a steep irregular slope at an angle of about 45°, the talus being formed apparently of coral masses broken off from the ledge, and piled up; this slope is covered with living Sponges, Alcyonarians, Hydroids, Polyzoa, Foraminifera, and other forms of life. The angle of inclination then decreases to 30°, and the ground is covered with coral sand; while beyond 500 yards from the edge of the reef the declivity is

insignificant, only 6°, and there is a bed of mud containing volcanic and coral sand mixed with Pteropod and other shells, in 590 fathoms of water. The vast perpendicular wall of coral limestone descending into unfathomable depiina which has been supposed usually to mark the outside of a coral reef, has always been looked upon as a conclusive proof of great subsidence having taken place; but the depth and the slope of such limestone walls have been greatly exaggerated, and no means have been taken to asccrtain beyond doubt that the rock is formed of coral throughout. The probability is that only the upper portion of such a wall is true coral limestone; and Dr Guppy has recently shown that this is actually the case in some upraised coral islands of the Solomon group. Upheaval has taken place to a considerable extent in the oceanic islands, and more extended examination of the limestone cliffs of other coral islands will probably lead to the discovery of many such cases. Mr Murray holds that the characteristic form of barrier reefs and atolls is in no way dependent on subsidence, that subsidence is not the cause of their peculiar features, that these reefs may be met with indiffcrently in stationary areas, in areas of subsidence, and in areas of elevation, and that elevation and sub- sidence only modify in a minor way the appearance of the islands. The chief phenomena are accounted for—(1) by a physiological fact,—the very vigorous growth of the reef-forming species on the outer or seaward face of the reef where there is abundance of food, and the much less vigorous growth, and even death, of these species on the inner parts of the reefs and in the lagoons, wherc there is much less food, and where there are other conditions inimical to growth ; and (2) by a physical and chemical fact,—the removal of lime in suspension and in solution from the inner portions of the reefs and from the lagoons, where much dead coral is exposed to the

action of sca water containing carbonic acid, the result being the formation, the deepening, and the widening of lagoons and lagoon channels.

For further information on subjects referred to in this article see John Murray, ‘On the Structure and Origin of Coral Reefs and Islands,” Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. x. p, 505; Alex. Agassiz, ‘‘On the Tortugas and Florida Reefs,” Zrans. Amer, Acad., vol. xi. (1883); Archd, Geikic, ‘‘The Origin of Coral Reefs,” Nature, vol. xxix. pp. 107 and 124; John Murray and A. Renard, “On the Nomenclature, Origin, and Distribution of Deep-Sea Deposits,” Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin,, vol. xii, p. 495 (1884); John Murray and A. Renard, ‘On the Microscopic Characters of Voleanie Ashes and Cosmic Dust, and their Distribution in the Deep-Sea Deposits,” Proc. Roy. Soc, Edin., vol. xii, p, 474, 1884, (J. MU.)

PACUVIUS, Marcus (219-129 B.c.), was the second in order of time of the three tragic poets who wrote for the Roman stage in the 2d century B.c. His life was so long that he might be described as a contemporary of all the writers who flourished during the first period of Roman literature. He was born in 219 Bc, when Livius Andronicus and Neevius were introducing their imitations of the Greek tragic and comic drama to Roman audiences ; he was recognized as the chief tragic poet about the time when Cecilius, and after him Terence, were the flourishing authors of Latin comedy; he continued to produce his tragedies till the advent of the younger poet Accius, who lived on till the youth of Cicero; and he died in the year (129 .c.) when Lucilius first appeared as an author. He stood in the relation of nephew as well as pupil to Ennius, by whom Roman tragedy was first raised to a position of influence and dignity. In the interval between the death of Ennius (169) and the advent of Accius, the youngest and most productive of the tragic poets, he alone maintained the continuity of the serious drama, and perpetuated the character first imparted to it by Ennius. Like Ennius he probably belonged to the Oscan stock, and was born at Brundisium, which had become a Roman colony in 244 B.c. To this origin may be attributed the fact that he never attained to that perfect idiomatic purity of style which was the special glory of the early writers of comedy, Neevius and Plautus. The fame of his uncle Ennius may probably have drawn him to Rome, and may have induced him to devote himself to the composition of tragedy. But he obtained distinction also as a painter; and

the elder Pliny mentions a work of his which in his time was still to be ee ee ee eee

Aitatis illius ista fuit laus tanquam innocentie sic Latine loquendi; née omnium tamen; nam jllorum equales Cecilium et Pacuvium male locutos videmus ; sed omnes tum fere, qui nec extra urbem hanc

Vixerant nec eos aliqua barbaries domestica infuscayerat, recte loque-bantur (Cicero, Brutus, 74),

seen in the temple of Hercules in the forum boarium. His relationship to the friend of the great Scipio would naturally recommend him to the consideration of the eminent men of the next generation, who fostered the new literature in his spirit; and thus Cicero, in the De Amicitia, represents C. Lelius as speaking of him as “hospitis et amici mei.” He was less productive as a poet than either Ennius or Accius; and we hear of only about twelve of his plays, founded on Greek subjects (among them the Antiope, Teucer, Armorum Judicium, Dulorestes, Chryses, Niptra, &c., most of them on subjects connected with the Trojan cycle), and one “ Pratexta,” Paulus, written in connexion with the triumph of L. fimilius Paulus, for his victory at Pydna, celebrated in the year 167 B.c., as the Clastidium of Nevius and the Ambracia of Ennius were written in commemoration of great military successes in their time. He continued to write tragedies till the age of eighty, when he exhibited a play in the same year as Accius, who was then thirty years of age. He retired to Tarentum for the last years of his life, and a story is told by Gellius of his being visited there by Accius on his way to Asia, who read to him one of his plays, which was famous in after times, the Atreus. The story is probably, like that of the visit of the young Terence to the veteran Cecilius, due to the invention of later grammarians; but it is invented in accordance with the traditionary criticism of the distinction between the two poets, the older being characterized rather by cultivated accomplishment, the younger by vigour and animation. “ Ambigitur quoties uter utro sit prior, aufert Pacuvius docti famam senis, Accius alti.” 2

He died at the age of ninety, having lived through the

long period from the beginning of the Second Punic War

2 Horace, Z., ii, 1, 54, 55. XVIII. — 17

till after the first outbreak of the revolutionary forces, in the tribunate of Tib. Gracchus, which led ultimately to the overthrow of the republic. His epitaph, said to have been composed by himself, is quoted by Aulus Gellius, with a tribute of admiration to its “modesty, simplicity, and fine serious spirit.”

‘** Adulescens, tam etsi propcras, te hoc saxum rogat Uti se aspicias, deinde quod scriptum ’st legas. Hic sunt poets Pacuvi Marci sita Ossa. Hoc volebam nescius ne esses. Vale.”?

Cicero, who frequently quotes passages from him, with great admiration, appears to rank him first among the Roman tragic poets, as Ennius among the epic, and Cecilius among the comic poets (Cic., De Opt. Gen. Or., 1). Ifa rough parallel might be drawn between the three great original Greek tragic poets and their three Roman imitators, we might perhaps recognize in the imaginative mysticism and soldierly spirit of Ennius an affinity to Aischylus, in the mellow wisdom of Pacuvius to Sophocles, and in the oratorical talent and power of moving the passions attributed to Accius a nearer approach to the genius of Muripides. The office performed by the Roman tragic poets to Roman culture was not only to familiarize their countrymen with the creations of Greek genius, and the heroes and heroines of Greek legend, but to be the moral teachers and moral philosophers of a time before the introduction of definite ethical speculation. The fragments of Pacnvius quoted by Ciccro in illustration or enforcement of his own ethical teaching appeal, by the fortitude, dignity, and magnanimity of the sentiment expressed in them, to what was noblest in the Roman temperament. They are inspired also by that fervid and steadfast glow of spirit which underlay the strong self-control of the Roman character, and which was the most powerful element in Roman oratory. They reveal alsoa gentleness and humanity of sentiment which it was the highest office of the new drama to blend with the severe gravity of the original Roman character. So far too as the Romans were capable of taking interest in speculative questions, the tragic poets contributed to stimulate curiosity on such subjects, and they anticipated Lucretius in using the conclusions of specula-

tive philosophy as well as of common sense to assail some of the pee forms of superstition. Among the passages quoted from

acuvius are several which indicate a taste both for physical and ethical speculation, and others which expose the pretcnsions of religious imposture, ¢.g.—

‘Nam isti qui linguam avium intelligunt, Plusque cx alieno jecore sapiunt quam ex suo, Magis audiendum quam auseultandum censeo.” 2

These poets aided also in developing that capacity which the Roman language subsequently displayed of being an organ of oratory, history, and moral disquisition. The literary language of Rome was in proccss of formation during the 2d centnry z.c,, and it was in the latter part of this century that the series of great Roman orators, with whose spirit Roman tragedy has a strong affinity, begins. But the new creative effort in language was accompanied by considerable crudeness of execution, and the novel word-formations and varieties of inflexion introduced by Pacnvius exposed him to the ridicule of the satirist Lucilius, and, long after- wards, to that of his imitator Persius. But, notwithstanding the attempt to introduce an alien element into the Roman language, which proved incompatible with its natural genius, and his own failure to attain the idiomatic purity of Nevius, Plautus, or Terence, the fragments of his dramas are sufficient to prove the service which he rendered to the formation of the literary language of Rome, as well as to the culture and character of his contem- poraries.

The best account of Pacuvius is to be found in the Rémische Tragédie of O.

Ribbeck, and the best collection of his ‘‘ Fragments” in the Zragicorum Latin- orum Reliquiz of the same author. (W. Y¥. 5S.)

PADANG. See Sumatra.

PADERBORN, an ancient town of Prussia, the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop, is situated in the province of Westphalia and district of Minden, 60 miles to the south- west of Hanover. It derives its name (Latin, Paderex Fontes) from the springs of the Pader, a small affluent of the Lippe, which rise in or close to the town under the cathedral to the number of nearly two

hundred, and with such force as to drive several mills within a few yards of their source. The most prominent building is the cathedral,

1 “ Young man, though thou art in haste, this stone entreats thee

to look at it, and then to read what is written. Here are laid the bones of the poet M. Pacuvius. This I desired to be not unknown to thee. Farewell.”

2 ** For they who understand the notes of birds, and derive their wisdom more from examining the livers of other beings than from their own (wit), I think should be rather heard than listened to.”

the western part of which dates from the 11th, the central part from the 12th, and the eastern part from the 13th century. The exterior is imposing, but heavy, and marred by a want of harmony arising from the successive stages of its construction. Among other treasures of art it contains the silver coffin of St Liborius, a substitute for one which was coined into dollars in 1622 by Duke Christian of Brunswick. The externally insignificant chapel of St Bartholomew ranks among the most interest. ing buildings in Westphalia, dating as it does from 1017 ‘ and possessing the characteristic features of the architec. ture of that early period. The old Jesuit church and the chapel of the convent of Abdinghof are also interesting, The town-hall is a picturesque edifice of the Renaissance, Paderborn formerly possessed a university, with the two faculties of theology and philosophy, but it was closed in 1819. The Roman Catholic gymnasium, however, enjoys a considerable reputation, and there are several other schools, hospitals, and religious endowments, as well as an historical and antiquarian society. The manufactures of Paderborn are unimportant, but the trade in grain, cattle, fruit, and wool has attained considerable dimensions since the opening of the Westphalian railway. The popu- lation in 1880 was 14,689 (12,602 Roman Catholics).

Paderborn is indebted for its development to Charlemagne, who discerned the favourable situation of the village of Patrisbrunnen, aud made it the capital of a bishopric. He frequently visited it, recciving the conquered Saxons here at a diet in 777 and ata later period the Saracen ambassadors

from Saragossa and the suppliant Pope Leo II. Several diets were also held here by the Saxon emperors. About the ycar 1000 the town was enlarged by Bishop Meinwerk and surrounded with walls. It afterwards joined the Hanseatic League, received many of the privileges of a free imperial town, and endeavoured to assert its independence of the bishops. The citizeus gladly embraced the doctrines of the' Refor- mation, but the older faith was re-established by Bishop Theodore, who took the town by force in 1604. The ccclesiastical princi pality of Paderborn, which had an area of close on 1000 square miles, was secularized in 1803 and handed over to Prussia. The bishop, however, was allowed to retain his spiritual jurisdiction. From 1807 to 1814 the territory was included in the kingdom of Westphalia.

PADIHAM, a township of Lancashire, is situated in a wild and dreary district on the precipitous banks of the Calder, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 5 miles south-east from Whalley and 4 north-east from Accrington. It possesses large cotton mills, and both stone and coal are wrought in the immediate neighbour- hood. The church of St Leonard, founded before 145], was frequently altered before it was rebuilt in 1866-68, in the Perpendicular style, at a cost of £11,000. There is a national school connected with a very old endowment. Padiham in 1251 was a manor in the possession of Edmund de Laci. The population of the urban sanitary district of Padiham and Hapton (area 950 acres) in 1871 was estimated at 7361, and in 1881 it was 8974.

PADILLA, Juan Loprz pz, insurrectionary leader in the 'guerra de las comunidades" in which the commons of Castile made a futile stand against the arbitrary policy of Charles V. and his Flemish ministers, was the eldest son of the commendator of Castile, and was born in Toledo towards the close of the 15th century. After the cities, by their deputies assembled at Avila, had vainly demanded the king's return, due regard for the rights of the cortes, and economical administration, to be entrusted to the hands of Spaniards, it was resolved to resort to force, and the " holy junta" was formed, with Padilla at its head. Anattempt was first made to establish a national government in the name of the imbecile Joanna, who was then residing at Tordesillas; with this view they took possession of her person, seized upon the treasury books, archives, and seals of the kingdom, and stripped Adrian of his regency. But the junta soon alienated the nobility

Db the boldness with which it asserted democracy and total abolition of privilege, while it courted defeat in the field by appointing to the supreme command of its forces not Padilla but Don Pedro de Giron, who had no recom- mendation but his high birth. After the army of the nobility had recaptured Tordesillas, Padilla did something to retrieve the loss by taking Torrelobaton and some other towns. But the junta, which was not fully in accord with its ablest leader, neutralized this advantage by grant- ing an armistice; when hostilities were resumed the commons were completely defeated near Villalar (April 23, 1521), and Padilla, who had been taken prisoner, was publicly executed on the following day. His wife, Dota Maria Pacheco de Padilla, bravely defended Toledo against the royal troops for six months afterwards, but ultimately was compelled to take refuge in Portugal.

PADUA (Lat., Pataviwm ; Ital., Padova), a city of north Italy, in 45° 24’ N. lat. and 11° 50’ E. long. on the river Bacchiglione, 25 miles W. of Venice and 18 miles S.E. of Vicenza, with a population in 1881 of 70,753. The city is a picturesque one, with arcaded streets and many

Yee

2 Academy of Science und Art 3 University Library

@ Chamber of Commave

5 Sala dala Ragione and

f Palasso Municipale 6 Communal Palace

Scale of % a Mile

Plan of Padua.

bridges crossing the various branches of the Bacchiglione, which once surrounded the ancient walls. The Pal- azzo della Ragione, with its great hall on the upper floor, is reputed to have the largest roof unsupported by columns in Europe; the hall is nearly rectangular, its length 2674 feet, its

breadth 89 feet, and its height 78 feet ; the walls are covered with symbolical paintings in fresco; the building stands upon arches, and the upper story is surrounded by an open loggia, not unlike that which surrounds the basilica of Vicenza; the Palazzo was begun in 1172, and finished in 1219; in 1306 Fra Giovanni, an Augustinian friar, covered the whole with one roof; originally there were three roofs, spanning the three chambers into which the hall was at first divided ; the internal partition walls remained till the fire of 1420, when the Venetian architects who undertook the restora- tion removed them, throwing all three compartments into One, and forming the present great hall. In the Piazza dei Signori is the beautiful loggia called the Gran Guardia,

begun in 1493 and finished in 1526, and close by is the Palazzo del Capitanio, the residence of the Venetian governors, with its great door, the work of Falconetto of Verona, 1532. The most famous of the Paduan churches is the basilica dedicated to Saint Anthony, commonly called Il Santo; the bones of the saint rest in a chapel richly ornamented with carved marbles, the work of various artists, among them of Sansovino and Falconetto; the basilica was begun about the year 1230, and completed in the following century ; tradition says that the building was designed by Niccola Pisano; it is covered by seven cupolas, two of them pyramidal. On the piazza in front of the church is Donatello’s magnificent equestrian statue of Erasmo da Narni, the Venetian general (1438-41). The Eremitani is an Augustinian church of the 13th century, distinguished as containing the tombs of Jacopo (1324) and Ubertino (1345) da Carrara, lords of Padua, and for the chapel of Sts James and Christopher, illustrated by Mantegna’s frescos. Close by the Eremitani is the small church of the Annunziata, known as the Madonna dell’ Arena, whose inner walls are entirely covered with paintings by Giotto. Padua has long been famous for its university, founded by Frederick II. in 1238. Under the rule of Venice the university was governed by a board of three patricians called the Riformatori dello Studio di Padova. The list of professors and alumni is long and illustrious, containing, among others, the names of Bembo, Sperone Speroni, Veselius, Acquapendente, Galileo, Pompo- nazzi, Pole, Scaliger, Tasso, and Sobieski. The place of Padua in the history of art is nearly as important as her place in

the history of learning. The presence of the university attracted many distinguished artists, as Giotto, Lippo Lippi, and Donatello ; and for native art there was the school of Squarcione (1394-1474), whence issued the great Mantegna (1431-1506).

Padua claims to be the oldest ard in north Italy ; the inhabi- tants pretend to a fabulous descent from the Trojan Antenor, whose relics they recognized in a large stone sarcophagus exhumed in the year 1274. Their real origin is involved in that obscurity which conceals the ethnography of the earliest settlers in the Venetian plain ; but it is supposed that they were either Paphlagonians or Etruscans. Padua early became a populous and thriving city, thanks to its excellent breed of horses and the wool of its sheep. Its men fonght for the Romans at Canne, and the city became so powerful that it was reported able to raise two hundred thousand fighting men. Abano in the neighbourhood was made illustrious by the birth of Livy, and Padua was the native place of Valerius Flaccus, Asconius Pedianus, and Thrasea Petus. Padua, in common with north-eastern Italy, suffered severely from the invasion of the Huns under Attila (452). It then passed under the Gothic kings Odoacer and Theodoric, but made submission to the Greeks in 540. The city was seized again by the Goths under Totila, and again restored to the eastern empire by Narses in 568. Following the course of events common to most citics of north-eastern Italy, the history of Padua falls under eight heads:—(1) the Lombard rule, (2) the Frankish rule, (3) the period of the bishops, (4) the emergence of the commune, (5) the period of the despots, (6) the period of Venetian supremacy, (7) the period of Austrian supremacy, and finally (8) the period of united Italy. (1) Under the Lom- bards the city of Padua rose in revolt (601) against Agilulph, the Lombard king, and, after suffering a long and bloody siege, was stormed and burned by him. The city did not easily recover from this blow, and Padua was still weak when the F ranks succceded the Lombards as masters of north Italy. (2) At the diet of Aix- la-Chapelle (828) the duchy and march of Friuli, in which Padua lay, was divided into four counties, one of which took its title from that city. (3) During the period of episcopal supremacy Padua does not appear to have been either very important or very active. The general tendency of its policy, throughout the war of investitures, was imperial and not Roman ; and its bishops were, for the most part, Germans. (4) But under the surface two important move- ments were taking place. At the beginning

of the 11th century the citizens established a constitution composed of a general council or legislative assembly and a credenza or executive ; and during the next century they were engaged in wars with Venice and Vicenza for the right of water-way on the Bacchiglione and the Brenta,—so that, on the one hand, the city grew in power and self-reliance, while, on the other, the great families of Camposampiero, D'Este,

and Da Romano began to emerge and to divide the Paduan district between them. The citizens, in order to protect their liberties, were obliged to elect a podesta, and their choice fell first on one of the D'Kste family (¢. 1175). The temporary suceess of the Lombard league helped to strengthen the towns; but their ineradicable jealousy of one another soon reduced them to weakness again, so that in 1236 Frederick II. found little difficulty in establishing his vicar Ezzelino da Romano in Padua and the neighbouring cities, where he practised frightful cruelties on the inhabitants. When Ezzelino met his death, in 1259, Padua enjoyed a brief period of rest and prosperity: the university flourished ; the basilica of the saint was begun ; the Paduans became masters of Vicenza. But this advance brought them into dangerous proximity to Can Grande délla Scala, lord of Verona, to whom they had to yield in 1311. (5) As a reward for freeing the city from the Scalas, Jacopo da Carrara was elected lord of Padua in 1318. From that date till 1405, with the exception of two years (1388-90) when Gian Galeazzo Visconti held the town, nine members of the Carrara family succeeded one another as lords of the city. It was a long period of restlessness, for the Carraresi were constantly at war ; they were finally extinguished between the growing power of thie Visconti and of Venice. (6) Padua passed under Venetian rule in 1405, and so remained, with a brief interval during the wars of the league of Cambray, till the fall of the republic in 1797. The city was governed by two Venetian nobles, a podesta for civil and a captain for military affairs; each of these was elected for sixteen months. Under these governors the great and small councils continued to discharge municipal business and to administer the Paduan law, contained in the statutes of 1276 and 1362. The treasury was managed by two chamberlains; and every five years the Paduans sent one of their nobles to reside as nuncio in Venice, and to watch the interests of his native town.

(7 and 8) After the fall of the Venetian republic the history of Padua follows the history of Venice during the periods of French and Austrian supremacy, and must be sought for in the article Iraty. In 1866 the battle of Kéniggratz gave Italy the opportunity to shake off the last of the Austrian yoke, when Venetia, and with Venetia Padua, became part of the united Italian kingdom.

See Chronicon Patavinum (in Muratori's Ann. Med, 4v., vol. iv.); Rolandino and Monaco Padovano (Muratori's Rer. Ital. Scrip., vol. viii.) ; Cortustorum His- toria (ibid. vol. xil.); Gattari, /storia Padovana (ibid., vol. xvii.); Vergerius, Vite Carrariensium Principum (ibid., vol. xvi.); Verci, Storia della Marca Trevigiana; Gennari, Annali di Padova; Cittadella, Storia della domina- sione Carrarese; Litta, Famiglie Celebri, s.v., "Carraresi"; Cantu, Jllustra- ztone Grande del Lombardo- Veneto; Gonzati, La Basilica di Sant' Antonio di Padova. 1. F. B.)

PADUCAH, a city of the United States, the capital of M'Cracken county, Kentucky, on the south bank of the Ohio, at the mouth of the Tennessee river, is, next to Louisville, the most important commercial point in Kentucky. It is on the Chesapeake, Ohio, and South- Western railroads, and is the terminus for five lines of steamboats plying respectively to Evansville (Ind.), Cairo (Ill.), St Louis (Mo.), Nashville (Tenn.) and Florence (Ala.), and a regular stopping point for other lines plying on the Ohio, Tennessee, and Mississippi rivers. It ships tobacco, whisky, pork, lumber, flour, and grain, and contains a number of tobacco factories and warehouses, marine- ways for the building and repair of steamboats, and manufactories of furniture, hubs and spokes, harness, leather, soap, and brooms. Laid out in 1827, Paducah was incorporated as a town in 1830, and as a city in 1856. The population was 2428 in 1830, 4590 in 1860, 6866 in 1870, and 8036 in 1880.

PHONY (Pexonia), a genus of Ranunculacee remark- able for their gorgeous flowers, constructed almost exactly on the same lines as those of the common buttercup except as regards the pistil, which in the pzeonies consists of two or more separate carpels each containing several seeds, and surrounded at the base by a fleshy cup or disk, which grows up around the carpels. The receptacle of the flower, moreover, Instead of being flattish or somewhat convex, Is in peonies a little depressed in. the centre, so that the

stamens become somewhat perigynous as in water-lilies (Nymphea) or roses (Rosa). The carpels when ripe form dry follicles, splitting along one edge so as to expose the numerous shining black seeds, provided with a small fleshy aril, There are but few species, natives of the northern hemisphere of the Old World, and divisible into two main groups—those with herbaceous stems dying down in winter,

and those with shrubby stems (Moutan or Tree Pzsonies),. The herbaceous pzeonies have tuberous roots like those of a dahlia, and bold, much-divided leaves. Their magni. ficent cup-like flowers are, in different varieties, of all shades of colour from white to clear yellow (P. Wittman. nana), rose-coloured, and richest crimson.

PAESTUM (IocewWwvia, Posidonia, mod. Pesto), a Greek city in Lucania, Magna Grecia, near the sea, and about 5 miles south of the river Silarus (Salso). It is said by Strabo (v. p. 251) to have been founded by Trcezenian and Achzan colonists from the still older colony of Sybaris, on the Gulf of Tarentum ; this probably happened not later than about 600 B.c. Herodotus (i. 167) speaks of it as being already a flourishing city in about 540 B.c,, when the neighbouring city of Velia was founded. The name Posidonia was derived from Poseidon, the deity principally worshipped by the Troezenians. For many

years the city maintained its independence, though sur- rounded by the hostile native inhabitants of Lucania. Autonomous coins were struck, of which many specimens now exist.

Fig. 1 shows a didrachm of the 6th century 3.c., an interesting It is struck on a broad thin flan,

example of archaic Greek art. with guilloche pattern round the border. The obverse has a figure of Poseidon wicldingh his trident, with the chla- mys hung across his shoulders. The reverse has the same figure in- cuseé. Both sides have the legend (retrograde) in relief, MOM (OZ). Archaic forms of 2

and Tr are used, Later sil- ver coins (sce fig, 1) have the same figure of Poseidon on the ob- verse, and a bull on the reverse, both in relief, with the legend TOME AANATAM (MOSEIAANIATAS), in whicli the archaic M for & and $ for I occur. Bronze coins of the Roman period have the legend NAIZ (maierov).

After long struggles for independence the city fell into the hands of the native Lucanians (who nevertheless did not expel the Greek colonists), and in 273 B.c. it became 4 municipal town under the Roman rule, the name being changed to the Latin form Pestum. The neighbourhood was then healthy, highly cultivated, and celebrated for its flowers; the “twice blooming roses of Pestum” are mentioned by Virgil (Geor., iv. 118), Ovid (Met., xv. 708), Martial (iv. 41, 10; vi. 80, 6), and other Latin poets. Its present deserted and malarious state is probably owing

Fic, 1.—Two types of silver coins of Posidonia. The larger one, the earlier type, is thin, and is incuse on the reverse. The smaller one is much thicker, and is in relief on both sides, Their weight is nearly the same.

to the silting up of the mouth of the Silarus, which has overflowed its bed, and converted the plain into unproduc- tive marshy ground. Herds of buffaloes, and the few peasants who watch them, are now the only occupants of this once thickly populated and garden-like region. In the 9th century Pestum was sacked and partly destroyed by Arab invaders ; in the 11th century it was further dis- mantled by Robert Guiscard, and in the 16th century was finally deserted. The ruins of Posidonia are, however, among the most interesting of the Hellenic world. Remains of the city wall, sufficient to indicate the whole circuit (an irregular polygon about 3 miles round), still exist. The lower part of one of the gates, a fine specimen of Greek masonry, is still fairly perfect. This is a large square tower with inner and outer doorways, and on each side a projecting bastion, semicircular in plan; the whole is skilfully arranged so as to thoroughly command the door- ways. A ditch, about 40 feet outside the wall, gave additional security. The main wall is 16 feet 6 inches thick. The general design of this fortification

much resembles the very perfectly preserved walls and towers of Messene in the Peloponnesus. For plan and description of this gate see a paper by T. L. Donaldson, Museum of Classical Antiquities, vol. i. p. 35, 1851. Outside the north gate there is a long street of tombs, some of which have been excavated, and have yielded a number of interesting arms, vases, and mural paintings, mostly now in the museum at Naples. The chief glory of Posidonia is its wonderful group of three well-preserved Doric temples.

The largest of these, conjecturally called the “Temple of Poseidon,” is on the whole the most eomplete Greek temple now existing, and,

judging from other specimens of the Doric style, ean hardly be

later than 500 B.c. he characteristics which point to its remote age are the shortness (comparatively speaking) of the columns, their rapid diminution, the eomplete absence of entasis, the great projec- tion of the eapitals, and the massiveness of the entablature. Another

eculiarity is that the columns have twenty-four flutes, while other Dorie examples rarely exceed twenty. The eolumns on the flanks are fourteen in all, about an average number for a Doric hexastyle temple. Fig. 2 gives the plan, in which there is nothing con-

© © © © © © © |

SSAA SS

WE

eS

pe + 410″

606600000)

OO 0GCCOOCCCOCOC® Lied ice cis pave ae as

176—9″

|

Fia. 3. Plan of the (so-called) Basilica,

Fig, 2, Plan of the Great Temple. The shaded part does not now exist.

Jeetural ; the only serious loss is the absence of the greater part of the cella wall, and some of the upper range of interior eolumns ; the Seven eolumns of this upper order which still remain in sitw are Specially valuable, as no other temple still possesses any of them. The peristyle columns are 6 feet 10 inches in diameter at the base,

except those at the angles, which measure 7 feet. The inter- eolumniation at the angles is closer than elsewhere, after the usual Doric rule. The height of the columns, ineluding capitals, is 29 feet. The stylobate consists of three steps, and the eella floor is four steps above the peristyle pavement, 7.¢., nearly 5 feet, an un- usual height. Indieations still exist of the stairs leading to the roof or to the upper floor, which probably formed the internal eeil- ing over the aisles. The main dimensions of the building are, on the top step of the stylobate, nearly 196 feet in length by 79 feet wide, more than double the length of the celebrated temple of Egina, though not quite double the width.

The material of which this and the other temples are built is a coarse calcareous stone from the neighbouring hills, formed by water deposit. None of this stone was, however, left exposed. The whole building, inside and out, like that at Agina and other places, was carefully eovered with a fine hard stucco formed of lime and pounded white marble, whieh took a high polish, and could hardly have been distinguished from real marble. On this was painted the usual eoloured ornaments with whieh all important Greek buildings appear to have been decorated.

Arehaisms of style, like those in this temple, are also to be found in the seanty remains still existing of the temples at Corinth and Ortygia (Syraeuse), the latter probably an even earlier example of the Doric style. The other temples, though fine and well-pre- served, are inferior both in

size and interest. Though Greek in their general outline, and of the Dorie order, yet the details, sueh as eorniees, shafts, aud capitals, are debased in style, and can hardly belong to the autonomous period of Posidonia; more coat they were built under the native Lueanian or Roman

omination, while Hellenic traditions still lingered among the people. The larger of these, popularly ealled “the Basilica,” is quite unique in plan (see fig. 3). It has nine columns (an unequal number) on its ~— and a range of columns down the centre of the cella. It is pseudo-dipteral, and has eighteen columns on the flanks; all that is black in the plan still remains. The columns are very ungraceful in shape, with an extravagant amount of entasis, and a curious circlet of leaves immediately under the eehinus. The most probable explanation of the strange arrange- ment of the cella is that the temple was dedicated to two deities— each half containing one statue.

The third temple, popularly called that of Ceres, is hexastyle peripteral, about 108 feet by 48 on the top of the stylobate, with thirteen columns on the flanks. In plan it is abnormal in having an open vestibule within the peristyle. There is an opisthodomos behind the cella. Its details throughout are very debased and un- Hellenic.

Both these latter buildings offer a striking contrast to the pure aud severe Dorie of the great temple. Ruins and traces of several

‘other buildings within the city wall still exist, all ee of

the Roman period. Part of an amphitheatre, and of what may have been a eircus, can be distinguished, as well as ruins of an aqueduet outside the city. Various mounds and other inequalities in the ground suggest that mueh still remains hidden, and that Pestum would probably afford a rieh harvest to the careful explorer, while a very simple system of drainage might again restore to this once fertile plain its long-lost wholesomeness of air and richness of soil,

See Strabo, v. and vi.; Wilkins, Magna Grecia, 1807; Piranesi, Ville de Pestum, Rome, 1778; Major, Ruins of Pxstum, 1768; La Gardette, Ruines de Pxstum, 1779; Bétticher, Die Tektonik der Hellenen, 1844-52, vol. ii. p. 325, and plates; Fergusson, The Parthenon, 1883, p. 82; Labrouste, Les

Temples de Pestum, 1877. This last work has the best and most accurate drawings, specially exccuted for the Paris Ecole des Beanx Arts. (J. H. M.)

PAEZ, Jos ANTONIO, one of the leaders of the struggle for South-American independence, and the first president (1830-38) of the republic of Venezuela, was born of Indian parents in the neighbourhood of Acarigua in the province of Barinas, and died in exile at New York, May 6, 1873. His military career, which began about 1810, was distinguished by the defeat of the Spanish forces at Mata de la Miel (1815), at Montecal and throughout the province of Apure (1816), and at Puerto Cabello (1823). At first he acted in concert with Bonivar (q.v.), but in 1829 he procured the secession of Venezuela from the republic of Colombia. For his later life see VENEZUELA. His autobiography was published at New York in 1867- 69, and his son Ramon Paez (otherwise known as an author) wrote Public Life of J. A. Paez (1864).

PAEZ, Pxrpro (1564-1622), Jesuit missionary to Abyssinia, was born at Olmedo in Old Castile in 1564. Having entered the Society of Jesus, he was set apart for foreign mission service, and sent to Goa in 1588. Within a year he was despatched from that place along with a

fellow missionary to Abyssinia, but having fallen into the hands of pirates at Ormuz he was detained in that neighbourhood for seven years as a galley slave. Having been redeemed by his order in 1596, he next spent some years in mission work at Diu and Camboya and other places on the west coast of India, and it was not until 1603 that he reached his original destination, landing at the port of Massowab. At the headquarters of his order in Fremona, he soon acquired the two chief dialects of the country, translated a catechism, and set about the educa- tion of some Abyssinian children. He also established a reputation as a preacher, and, having been summoned to court, succeeded in vanquishing the native priests and in converting Za-Denghel, the king, who wrote to the pope and the king of Spain for more missionaries, an act of zeal which involved him in civil war, and ultimately cost him his life (October 1604). Under the succeeding sovereign the influence of Paez became still greater, not only the king but the nobility having abjured Paganism and accepted Christianity. Paez, who

is said to have been the first European to visit the Abyssinian Nile, died of fever in 1622. See Apyssinta, vol. i. p. 65.

PAGANINI, Nicozo (1784-1840), the most extra- ordinary of executants on the violin, past or present, was born at Genoa, February 18, 1784. His father, a clever amateur, imbued him with a taste for music at a very early age, He first appeared in public at Genoa, in 1793, with triumphant success. In 1795 he visited Parma for the purpose of taking lessons from A. Rolla, who, however, said that he had nothing to teach him. On returning home, he studied more diligently than ever, practising single passages for ten hours at a time, and publishing compositions so difficult that he alone could play them. After spending some years in close retirement, he started, in 1805, on a tour through Europe, astonishing the world with his matchless performances on the fourth string alone. In 1827 the pope honoured him with the Order of the Golden Spur ; and, in the following year, he extended his travels to Germany, beginning with Vienna, where he created a profound sensation. He first appeared in Paris in 1831; and on June 3 in that year he played in London, at the King's Theatre. His visit to England was preluded by the most absurd and romantic stories. He was described as a political victim who had been immured for twenty years in a dungeon, where he played all day long upon an old broken violin with one string, and thus gained his wonderful mechanical dexterity. The result of this and other foolish reports was that he could not walk the streets without being mobbed. Here, as in other countries, he amassed a princely fortune, notwithstanding enormous losses caused by his unhappy propensity for speculation. In 1834 Berlioz composed for him his beautiful symphony, Harold en Italie. He was then at the zenith of his fame ; but his health, long since ruined by excessive study, declined rapidly. In 1838 he suffered serious losses in Paris, yet generously presented Berlioz with 20,000 francs in return for his symphony. The disasters of this year increased his malady—laryngeal phthisis—and, after much suffering, he died at Nice, May 27, 1840. Paganini's style was impressive and passionate to the last degree. His cantabile passages moved his audience to tears, while his tours de force were so astonishing that a Viennese amateur publicly declared that he had seen the devil assisting him. No later violinist has as yet eclipsed his fame as an exe- cutant, though he was far from realizing the artistic perfection so nobly maintained by Spohr and Joachim. The best of his imitators was his pupil Sivori.

PAHLAVI, or Peutevi, the name given by the fol- lowers of Zoroaster to the character in which are written the ancient translations of their sacred books and some other

works which they preserve. The name can be traced back for many centuries; the great epic poet Firdausi (second half of the 10th Christian century) repeatedly speaks of Pahlavi books as the sources of his narratives, and he tells us among other things that in the time of the first Khosray (Chosroes I., 581-579 a.p.) the Pahlavi character alone was used in Persia.1 The learned Ibn Mokaffa* (8th century) calls Pahlavi one of the languages of Persia, and seems to imply that it was an official language.2 We cannot deter- mine what characters, perhaps also dialects, were called Pahlavi before the Arab period. It is most suitable to confine the word, as is now generally done, to designate a kind of writing—not only that of the Pahlavi books, but of all inscriptions on stone and metal which use similar characters and are written on essentially the same principles as these books,

At first sight the Pahlavi books present the strangest spectacle of mixture of speech. Purely Semitic (Aramaic) words—and these not only nouns and verbs, but numerals, particles, demonstrative and even personal pronouns—stand side by side with Persian vocables. Often, however, the Semitic words are compounded in a way quite unsemitic, or have Persian terminations. As read by the modern Zoroastrians, there are also many words which are neither Semitic nor Persian; but it is soon seen that this tradi- tional pronunciation is untrustworthy. The character is cursive and very ambiguous, so that, for example, there is but one sign for n, wu, and 7, and one for y, d, and g; this has led to mistakes in the received pronunciation, which for many words can be shewn to have been at one time more correct than itisnow. But apart from such blunders there remain phenomena which could never have appeared ina real language; and the hot strife which raged till recently as to whether Pahlavi is Semitic or Persian has been closed by the discovery that it is merely a way of writing Persian in which the Persian words are partly represented —to the eye, not to the ear—by their Semitic equivalents. This view, the development of which began with Wester- gaard (Zendavesta, p. 20, note), is in full accordance with the true and ancient

tradition. Thus Ibn Mokaffa‘, who translated many Pahlavi books into Arabic, tells us that the Persians had about one thousand words which they wrote otherwise than they were pronounced in Persian.’ For bread he says they wrote LHMA, ¢.¢., the Aramaic lahmd, but they pronounced nén, which is the common Persian word for bread. Similarly psra, the Arainaic besrd, flesh, was pronounced as the Persian géshkt. We still possess a glossary which actually gives the Pahlavi writing with its Persian pronunciation. This glossary, which besides Aramaic words contains also a variety of Persian words disguised in antique forms, or by errors due to the con- tracted style of writing, exists in various shapes, all of which, in spite of their corruptions, go back to the work which the statement of Ibn Mokaffa* had in view.4 Thus the Persians did the same thing on a much larger scale, as when in English we write £ (libra) and pronounce “pound” or write & or & (et) and pronounce “and.” No system was followed in the choice of Semitic forms. Sometimes

1 We cannot assume, however, that the poet had a clear idea of what Pahlavi was.

2 The passage, in which useful facts are mixed up with strange notions, is given abridged in Jihrist, p. 18, more fully by Yakut, i. 925, but most fully and accurately in the unprinted Ma/atih al-olém.

3 Fihrist, p. 14, 1. 13 sg., comp. 1. 4 sg. The former passage was first cited by Quatremére, Jowr. As. (1835), i. 256, and discussed by Clermont-Ganneau, bid. (1866), i. 480. The expressions it uses are not always clear; perhaps the author of the Jihrist has condensed somewhat.

4 Editions by Hoshangji and Haug (Bombay, 1870), and by Sale mann (Leyden, 1878). See also J. Olshausen, ‘ Zur Wiirdigung der Pahlavi-glossare-” in Kuhn’s Zeit. f. vergl. Sprforsch., N.¥., Vie 521 sq.

® 28 itev t

a noun was written in its status absolutus, sometimes the emphatic was added, and this was sometimes written as x sometimes as. One verb was written in the perfect, another in the imperfect. Even various dialects were laid under contribution. The Semitic

signs by which Persian synonyms were distinguished are sometimes quite arbitrary. Thus in Persian khwésh and khwat both mean “self”; the former is written Nrshu (nafshé or najfsheh), the latter pNrshu with the preposition bé prefixed. Personal pro- nouns are expressed in the dative (z.e., with prepositional I prefixed), thus LK (/akh) for tu, “thou,” LNH (/and) for amd, “we.” Sometimes the same Semitic sign stands for two distinct Persian words that happen to agree in sound; thus because hdnd is Aramaic for “ this,” HNa represents not only Persian é, ‘‘ this,” but also the interjection , z.e., “CO” as prefixed toa vocative. Sometimes for clearness a Persian termination is added to a Semitic word; thus, to distinguish between the two words for father, pit and pitar, the former is written aB and the latter abirr. The Persian form is, however, not seldom used, even where there is a quite well-known Semitic ideogram.1

These difficulties of reading mostly disappear when the ideographic nature of the writing is recognized. We do not always know what Semitic word supplied some ambiguous group of letters (e.g., PUN for pa, “to,” or HT for agar, “if”) ; but we always can tell the Persian word— which is the one important thing—though not always the exact pronunciation of it in that older stage of the language which the extant Pahlavi works belong to. In Pahlavi, for example, the word for “female” is written mdtak, an ancient form which afterwards passed through mddhak into mddha. But it was a mistake of later ages to fancy that because this was so the sign T also meant D, and so to write Tfor D in many cases, especially in foreign proper names. That a word is written inan older form than that which is pronounced is a phenomenon common to many languages whose literature covers a long period. So in English we still write though we do not pronounce the gutteral in through, and write laugh when we pronounce laf.

Much graver difficulties arise from the cursive nature of the characters already alluded to. There are some groups which may theoretically be read in hundreds of ways ; the same little sign may be w, 8, n’, N77, 82, 73, and the i too may be either / or kh.

In older times there was still some little distinction between letters that are now quite identical in form, but even the fragments of Pahlavi writing of the 7th century recently found in Egypt show on the whole the same type as our MSS. The practical inconveniences to those who knew the language were not so great as they may seem ; the Arabs also long used an equally ambiguous character without availing themselves of the diacritical points which had been devised long before.

Modern MSS., following Arabic models, introduce dia- critical points from time to time, and often incorrectly. These give little help, however, in comparison with the So-called Pazand or transcription of Pahlavi texts, as they are to be spoken, in the character in which the Avestd itself is written, and which is quite clear and has all vowels as well as consonants. The trans¢ription is not Philologically accurate ; the language is often modernized, but not uniformly so. Pdzand MSS. present dialectical variations according to the taste or intelligence of authors and copyists, and all have many false readings. For us, however, they are of the greatest use. To get a concep- tion of Pahlavi one cannot do better than read the Minéi-Kiaradh in the Pahlavi with constant reference to the

r 1F or examples of various peculiarities see the notes to Noldeke's tanslation of the story of Artachshir 1 Papakdn, Gottingen, 1879.

Pazand.? Critical labour is still required to give an approximate reproduction of the author's own pronuncia- tion of what he wrote.

The coins of the later Sasdnian kings, of the princes of Tabaristan, and of some governors in the earlier Arab period exhibit an alphabet very similar to Pahlavi MSS. On the older coins the several letters are more clearly distinguished, and in good specimens of well-struck coins of the oldest Sdsdnians almost every letter can be re- cognized with certainty. The same holds good for the inscriptions on gems aud other small monuments of the early Sdsdnian period; but the clearest of all are the rock inscriptions of the Sdsdnians in the 3d and 4th centuries, though in the 4th century a tendency to cursive forms begins to appear. Only 7 and v are always quite alike. The character of the language and the system of writing is essentially the same

on coins, gems, and rocks as in MSS.—pure Persian, in part strangely disguised in a Semitic garb. In details there are many differences between the Pahlavi of inscriptions and the books. Persian endings added to words written in Semitic form are much less common in the former, so that the person and number of a verb are often not to be made out. There are also orthographic variations ; ¢g., long é in Persian forms is always expressed in book-Pahlavi, but not always in inscriptions. The unfamiliar contents of some of these inscriptions, their limited number, their bad preservation, and the imperfect way in which some of the most important of them have been published ® leave many things still obscure in these monuments of Persian kings ; but they have done much to clear up both great and small points in the history of Pahlavi.4

Some of the oldest Sasdnian inscriptions are accompanied by a text belonging to the same system of writing, but with many variations in detail,® and an alphabet which, though derived from the same source with the other Pahlavi alphabets (the old Aramaic), has quite different forms. This character is also found on some gems and seals. It has been called Chaldzo-Pahlavi, &c. Olshausen tries to make it probable that this was the writing of Media and the other that of Persia. The Persian dialect in both sets of inscriptions is identical or nearly so.® <

The name Pahlavi means Parthian, Pahlav being the regular Persian transformation of the older Parthava.' This fact points to the conclusion that the system of writing was developed in Parthian times, when the great nobles, the Pahlavans, ruled, and Media was their main seat, "'the Pahlav country." Other linguistic, graphical, and historical indications point the same way ; but it is still far from clear how the system was developed. We know indeed that even under the Achemenians Aramaic writing and speech were employed far beyond the Aramaic lands even in official documents and on coins. The Eranians had no convenient character, and might borrow

2 The book of the Mainyo-i-Khard in the original Pahlavi, ed. by Fr. Ch. Andreas, Kiel, 1882; Id., The Pdézand and Sanskrit Tects, by E. W. West, Stuttgart and London, 1871. West is the greatest living authority on Pahlavi.

3 See especially the great work of F. Stolze, Persepolis, 2 vols., Berlin, 1882. It was De Sacy who began the decipherment of the inscriptions. ;

4 Thus we now know that the ligature in book-Pahlavi whieh means “in,” the original letters of which eould not be made out, is for }*3, “between.” Itis to be read andar.

5 Thus pus, “son,” is written ‘11 instead of 72; pésh, “ before,” is written MNP, but in the usual Pahlavi it is sid=rgyd,

6 What the Fihrist (p. 13 sq.) has about various forms of Persian writing certainly refers in part at least to the species of Pahlavi. But the statements are hardly all reliable, and in the lack of trustworthy specimens little can be made of them.

7 This was finally proved hy Olshausen, following earlier scholars ; see J. Olshausen, Parthava und Pahlav, Mada und Mah, Berlin, 1877 (and in the Monatsd. of the Academy).

the Aramaic letters as naturally as they subsequently borrowed those of the Arabs. But this does not explain the strange practice of writing Semitic words in place of so many Persian words which were to be read as Persian. It cannot be the invention of an individual, for in that case the system would have been more consistently worked out, and the appearance of two or more kinds of Pahlavi side by side at the beginning of the Sas4nian period would be inexplicable. But we may remember that the Aramaic character first came to the Eranians from the region of the lower Euphrates and Tigris, where the complicated cunei- form character arose, and where it held its ground long after better ways of writing were known. In later antiquity probably very few Persians could read and write. All kinds of strange things are conceivable in an Eastern character confined to a narrow circle. Of the facts at least there is no doubt. _

The Pahlavi literature embraces the translations of the holy books of the Zoroastrians, dating probably from the 6th century, and certain other religious books, especially the Mindi-Khiradh (see above) and the Bundehish.1 The Bundehish dates from the Arab period. Zoroastrian priests continued to write the old language as a dead tongue and to use the old character long after the victory of a new empire, a new religion, a new form

of the language (New Persian), and a new character. There was once a not quite inconsiderable profane literature of which a good deal is preserved in Arabic or New Persian versions or reproductions, particularly in historical books about the time before Islam.? Very little profane literature still exists in Pahlavi; the romance of Ardashir has been mentioned above (p. 185, note 1). The difficult study of Pahlavi is made more difficult by the corrupt state of our copies, duc to ignorant and careless scribes. A Pahlavi grammar is of course an impossibility. The necessary preparation for the study is a sound knowledge of New Persian, with which one easily finds the cluc to the inconsiderable grammatical variations of the oldcr language. The lexical peculiaritics of the texts are more consider- able, and partly due to the peculiarities of pricstly thought and speech. Of glossarics, that of West (Bombay and London, 1874) is to be recommended; the large Pahlavi, Gujarati, and English lexicon of Jamaspji Dastur Minocheherji (incomplete, 3 vols., Bombay and London, 1877-82) is very full, but has numerous false or uncer- tain forms, aud must be used with much caution. (TH. N.)

PAINE, Tuomas (1736-1809), the author of The Rights of Man and The Age of Reason, would have had a very different kind of reputation if he had never written these works. Most of those who know him by name as a ribald scoffer against revealed religion are not aware that he has any other title to fame or infamy. But if he had never meddled with religious controversy, his name would have been remembered in the United States at least as one of the founders of their independence. He had a pro- minent reputation when he crossed the Atlantic to stir up the people of the Old World against monarchy and aristo- cracy, taking as his motto “ Where liberty is not, there is my country.” Even after he wrote The Rights of Man, if he had been guillotined by Robespierre, which he very narrowly escaped being, he might have been remembered in Britain as a clever but crazy and dangerous political enthusiast. The final verdict of history upon his useful- ness would have turned on the question whether the United States did well to declare and fight for independ- ence. But The Age of Reason brought his name into disrepute almost as much in the United States as in England. The career of Paine was a very extraordinary one. The son of a Quaker staymaker, of Thetford in Norfolk, he had emigrated to the American colonies some- what late in life, after erratically trying various ways of

making a living as a marine, an exciseman, a teacher of English, and acquiring a reputation in local political

1 The translations edited by Spiegel, the Bundehish by Wester- gaard and Justi, other Pahlavi books by Spiegel and Haug, by Hoshangji, and other Indian Parsees.

? We have also one book, the stories of Kalilag and Damnag, in a Syriac version from the Pahlavi, the latter in this case being itsclf taken from the Sanskrit.

clubs by extreme views and vigour in debate. Born in 1736, he was thirty-eight when he arrived in America, and he apparently went with a purpose, his combative temper attracted by the quarrel then reaching an acute stage, for he carried introductions with him from Franklin to the leaders of the resistance to the mother-country, His opportunity came when these leaders were dispirited and disposed to compromise. He then set the colonists in a flame with a pamphlet entitled Common Sense, a most telling array of arguments for separation and for the establishment of a republic, conveyed in strong direct unqualified language. There is a complete concurrence of testimony that Paine's pamphlet, issued on the 1st January 1776, was a turning-point in the struggle, that it roused and consolidated public feeling, and swept waverers along with the tide. The New York assembly appointed a com- mittee to answer it, but the committee separated with the conclusion that it was unanswerable. When war was declared, and fortune at first went against the colonists, Paine, serving with Washington as a private soldier, com- posed by the light of camp fires a short hortative tract, The Crisis, which was read to the army, and seems to have had a wonderful effect in restoring a courage that was considerably impaired by defeat. Its opening words, "These are the times that try men's souls," became a battle-cry. This and other literary services were recognized by Paine's appointment in the first Congress to be secretary of the committee on foreign affairs. The republic finally established, another phase of his turbulent career was entered on. He determined to return to England, and "open the eyes of the people to the madness and stupidity of the Government." His chief effort in this propagandism was The Rights of Man, written as an answer to Burke's

Reflections on the Revolutions in France. The first part appeared in 1791, and had an enormous circulation before the Government took the alarm and endeavoured to suppress it, thereby exciting the most intense curiosity to see it even at the risk of heavy penalties. Those who know the book only by hearsay as the work of a furious incendiary would be surprised at the dignity, force, and temperance of the style; it was the circumstances that made it inflammatory. Pitt "used to say," according to Lady Hester Stanhope, "that Tom Paine was quite in the right, but then he would add, 'What amI to do? As things are, if I were to encourage Tom Paine's opinions, we should have a bloody revolution.'" Paine accordingly was indicted for treason, but before the trial came off he — was elected by the department of Calais to the French Convention, and was allowed to pass into France followed by a sentence of outlawry. The first years that he spent in France form a curious episode in his life. As he knew _ little of tha language, he could have had but little influence | on affairs, but he was treated with great respect, and did | what he could in the interests of moderation till he incurred the suspicion of Robespierre and was thrown into prison, escaping the guillotine by an accident. He com- pleted the first part of the Age of Reason in the exciting | interval between his accusation and his arrest, and put it | into the hands of a friend on his way to prison. The publication of the work made an instant change in his position on both sides of the Atlantic, the indignation im the United States being as strong as in England Washington, to whom he had dedicated his Rights of Man, declined to take any steps for his release from the prison of the Luxembourg, and he lay there for several | months after the fall of Robespierre. The Age of Reason | can now be estimated calmly. It was written from the | point of view of a Quaker who did not believe in revealed | religion, but who held that "all religions are in their | nature mild and benign " when not associated with political

systems. Intermixed with the coarse unceremonious ridicule of what he considered superstition and bad faith are many passages of earnest and even lofty eloquence in favour of a pure morality founded on natural religion, fully justifying the bishop of Llandaff's saying :—" There is a philosophical sublimity in some of your ideas when speaking of the Creator of the

universe.” The work in short—a second part was published after his release — represents the deism of the 18th century, in the hands of a rough, ready, passionate controversialist. Paine remained in France till 1802, and then returned to America, occupy- ing the rest of his turbulent active life with financial uestions and mechanical inventions. He died in 1809.

PAINT. See PIGMENT.

PAINTING. A general examination of the place of painting among the Fine Arts will be found under that heading. The main ScHoots or Parntine (q.v.) will form the subject of a separate article. For the history of the art, see also ArcH#oLocy (CxassicaL) and the notices of individual painters. The present article is limited to a few practical notes on the methods of painting in oil and water colour, other methods being dealt with under the headings ENamet, Encaustic PAINTING, Fresco, and TEMPERA.

Painting-Room.—The painting-room or atelier should be of sufficient dimensions to allow the artist space to retire from his work, if it is ona scale large enough to require viewing froma distance. For large decorative paintings the room must be spacious. The size and altitude of the window is of great importance. If the opening is con- tracted, the light and shade on the model will be broad and intense, and the colouring sombre, especially in the shadows. If abundance of light is admitted, the tendency will be more towards brightness and purity. Painters generally prefer a window with a northern or eastern aspect.

The painting-room has a great influence in determining not only the effects in the works of individual artists, but the characteristics of whole schools. Leonardo da Vinci was among the first to show partiality to indoor effects and deep shadows. Correggio, the artists of the Bolognese school, Caravaggio, Spagnoletto, and other Neapolitan and Spanish painters followed; the Dutch painter Rembrandt perhaps carried these extreme contrasts of light and shade to the greatest length. The effects thus obtained are, however, more or less artificial, and very unlike the ordinary aspect of the open daylight face of nature.

Painters, unless there happens to be some special reason to the contrary, usually work with the light to the left to prevent the shadow cast from the

brush falling inwards. Some artists who seek to represent open air effects paint from their models in glass-houses, specially constructed for the purpose. The practice has much to recommend it, the diffused light enabling them to approximate more nearly to the truth of nature.

Implements used in Painting.—The easel is a frame, or rest, which supports the picture during its progress. Hasels are of various kinds:—the triangular, supplied with pegs for the adjustment of the height of the work ; the square, or rack easel, which is much more converffent ; and the French studio easel, having a screw at the back and worked by a handle in the front, by which arrange- ment pictures of considerable size and weight can be raised or lowered or inclined forward with great ease. There is also a variety of light portable easels used for out-door sketching.—The palette is the board on which the colours are arranged to paint from; it is usually either of an oval or oblong square form, of light-coloured wood, and, to avoid inconvenience being felt from its weight, it should be thin and well balanced on the thumb. It ought

to be kept clean and the colour never allowed to dry on it.—The palette-knife has a pliable blade, and is used for arranging the colours on the palette, mixing tints, &c. With some painters it not unfrequently takes the place of the brush in the application of colour.—The larger kinds of brushes are made of hog-hair. They are either round or flat, but the latter are generally preferred, though for some purposes round ones are found to be useful. Brushes are also made of sable; these should have the property of coming to a fine point when required. Brushes of badger’s hair are used for “softening ” or ‘‘sweetening,” —that is, blending the ¢olours by sweeping lightly to and fro over them while freshly laid (a practice to be avoided as much as possible). Brushes should be carefully washed after use, either in spirits of turpentine or with soap and tepid water, dried, and the hairs laid smooth with the finger and thumb. A brush in which the colour has been allowed to dry is difficult to clean, and is much injured, if not rendered entirely useless, by such negligence. Not a little depends on the good condition in which the brushes are kept.—The mahl-stick is used to steady the hand while painting details. It is held in the left hand, and the end of the

stick, properly wadded, rests on the canvas. It should be light and firm. Theold painters never used the mahl-stick when working on large pictures, and many artists dispense with it altogether. Rubens mentions being obliged to have recourse to one in his old age.—The dais or throne is a platform varying from a foot to 18 inches in height. Portrait painters, and artists who generally stand while at work, find it desirable to have the sitter or model nearly on a level with the eye.—A mirror hung in a convenient place in the painting-room will be found of great use. It enables the artist to detect faults in drawing to which he might otherwise be blinded from too long gazing at his work, The picture is seen in the mirror reflected in reverse, and errors consequently appear greater than they really are-—The Jlay-figure, a wooden or stuffed doll, usually life-size, is very service- able in painting elaborate dresses and draperies. The best kinds are so constructed that they can be made to assume and retain any posture. Fra Bartolommeo first brought the lay-figure into use.

Materials used in Painting.—These consist of canvases, prepared panels and mill-boards, oils, varnishes, and colours.

1. Canvas is the material now generally used. It is kept in rolls of various width and of three qualities—plain cloth, Roman, and ticken. It is prepared with two kinds of grounds—the hard or oil ground, and the absorbent ground. The ground is generally of a light colour; many artists prefer pure white. The grounds employed by the first oil painters were identical with those of tempera; the surface of the panel was prepared with two or three coats of size, a layer of coarse gesso was then applied, and on this at least eight layers of a finer description were spread, and the surface carefully scraped till it became smooth and white. In the Italian school of a later period, the grounds were generally composed of pipe-clay mixed with chalk. Tt is generally acknowledged that white grounds are in every way preferable, although it matters little whether the brightness reside in the ground or is reproduced at a subsequent stage by painting with a solid body of opaque colour over a dark ground, Velazquez and other Spanish painters used canvases prepared with a red earthy ground. The intention of priming the ground is to prevent the very rapid absorption of colours. Canvas prepared with the object of partially abstracting the oil from the first layers of colour is called “absorbent.” For small cabinet pictures panels of well-

seasoned mahogany are used ; mill-boards, academy boards, and oil paper are serviceable for sketching from nature.

2. Oils and Varnishes.—The introduction of oil paint- ing on the modern methods dates from the time of John Van Eyck. This artist introduced a varnish, probably composed of linseed or nut oil mixed with some resinous substance, which was more siccative than the oil vehicles previously in use, and possessed the property of drying without exposure to the sun or to artificial heat. The oil painting of the early Flemish masters was, strictly speaking, (oil) varnish painting: an oleo-resinous substance, such as amber varnish, was mixed with the colours, and rendered final varnishing unnecessary. The Venetian painters also adopted this vehicle. The term “vehicle” is borrowed from pharmacy. In art it is applied to the fluid used for bringing the pigments into a proper working state. Painters differ greatly as to the vehicles they employ : some use oil only ; others peculiar compounds of their own, made of linseed, poppy, or walnut oils, copal or amber varnishes, drying oil and mastic, &c. Siccatif, a medium specially prepared for oil painting, is now largely used; mixed with spirits of wine, it forms a beautiful transparent varnish.

3. Colours.—The permanent colours are the earths and ochres and those mineral colours which bear the test of fire and lime. Colours prepared from lead and animal and vegetable substances are more or less fugitive. Artist’s colours were originally kept in a dry state, and afterwards in small bladders; they are now enclosed in very con- venient collapsable metal tubes.

The discoveries of modern chemistry have added largely to the simple list of colours known to the old masters, but perhaps with little advantage to their successors, for their is much truth in the maxim that “the shortest way to good colouring is through a simple palette.” Pliny asserts that the ancient Greek painters employed but four colours in their works.

A large proportion of colours, such as the ochres, ver- milion, ultramarine, &c., is derived from minerals; indigo, madder, gamboge, &c., from vegetable, and carmine, Indian yellow, sepia, &c., from animal substances.

The artificial or chemical preparations include Prussian blue, Naples yellow, zinc white, French blue, cobalt, the lakes, &e.

The natural or true pigments are prepared for use by calcining and washing, and for oil painting are ground up in poppy or linseed oils. With two or three exceptions the pigments derived from the mineral kingdom are the most permanent, especially those containing iron or copper. Those derived from animal and vegetable substances have less permanence, but they form an important acquisition to the palette, as they not unfrequently possess a purity and brilliancy of colour which makes it almost impossible to dispense with them.

Colours are opaque or transparent. The former, on account of their solidity and opacity, are employed to represent light. For shadows and glazing transparent pigments are used. Yellow, red, and blue cannot be com- posed, and are called primary colours. The union of two of these in the three combinations of which alone they admit produces secondary colours. White represents light, and in oil painting the only white pigment used is white lead, prepared with great care. The ochres are the most permanent yellows. Their composition is very vari- able, but they may be considered true chemical combinations of clay and oxide ofiron. The native ochres are yellow and red. By calcination the yellow ochres become red. Other yellows are prepared from arsenic, lead, and vegetable substances. Iron is the great colouring principle of red in nature. All the three kingdoms—mineral, animal, and vegetable—contribute to the red pigments. The first supplies vermilion and the red ochres ; the second carmine, obtained from the cochineal insect ; the third

the madder pigments. The principal blue pigments aye ultramarine (native and artificial), cobalt, smalt, Prussian blue, and indigo. Ultramarine is the only pure primary colour ; the finer specimens have neither a tinge of green on the one hand nor of purple on the other. It is obtained from the mineral lazulite or lapis-lazuli, and js probably a volcanic product, as it resists the action of fire, Its scarcity, and consequent high price, have produced many

artificial imitations. These are of many qualities, The inferior are used in paper staining, the finer alone being reserved for artists' use. Cobalt is now prepared ina state of great purity, but it has the objection of appearing violet in artificial light.

In " guides to oil painting" long lists of pigments are generally given; but these serve only to perplex and embarrass. About a dozen colours, judiciously chosen, will be quite sufficient to supply the palette.

Processes and Manipulations.—There are various tech- nical distinctions in the modes of applying the colours toa picture in its successive stages. Glazing is the laying of thinly transparent colours, diluted with a considerable quantity of vehicle, which allows the work beneath to appear distinctly through, but tinged with the colour of the glaze. The Venetian painters, Titian especially, largely employed this process, advancing their pictures as far as possible with solid, opaque colour, and upon this ground glazing repeatedly the richest and purest colours. The process of glazing is generally effected by the applica- tion of diluted transparent colour, but semi-transparent colours are also used when rendered sufficiently trans- parent by the admixture of a large proportion of vehicle. When carried to excess, the result is a 'horny" impure dulness of surface and a heavy and dirty tone of colour. Much practice and experience are required for its proper performance. Scumbling resembles glazing in that a very thin coat is spread lightly over portions of the work, but the colour used is opaque instead of transparent.

Irregularities of surface in such passages of a picture as it may be desirable to repaint are removed by using an instrument especially made for the purpose ; but an old razor, an ordinary pocket-knife, or a piece of window glass, properly broken, will, in skilful hands, answer the purpose equally well. This process should not be attempted till the colour to be removed has hardened, otherwise the pigment will tear off and leave the surface in a condition which it will be found difficult to remedy.

It is the practice of some artists to lay the colours at first cold and pale, gradually strengthening the light and shad, and enforcing the colour in subsequent paintings. When this practice is adopted, the colours used should be as few and as simple as possible. It sometimes happens that

considerable portions of the first painting are apparent through all the subsequent processes, and this early part of the work should be done with great care and judgment. —

The first principle in the application of paint is to avoid unnecessary mixing, or, as it is called, “troubling” oF saddening the tints, the result of which is a waxy surface and muddiness of colour. When this is avoided the touches are clear and distinct, but when the principle is carried to

Pea reel PNG

excess it degenerates into manner ; or it may serve as a convenient screen for the want of accurate observation and thorough execution. ”

Among the masters most remarkable for precision and rapidity of handling are Velazquez, Tintoretto, Veronese, and Rubens. The execution of Leonardo da Vinci is laboured. Vanderwerf, Mengs, and Denner are also ‘nstances of laboured smoothness. The three last-named belong to a class designated “the polishers,”—“‘ little men, who did not see the whole at a time, but only parts of a whole, and thus vainly essayed to make up the whole by a smooth union of parts.”

No two artists employ the same method in painting. Some attain the result aimed at by involved and compli- cated, others by direct and simple methods. The difference in technique between the work of an English artist and artists trained in French or German ateliers may be seen at a glance, and it is of little use attempting to lay down hard and fast rules on the subject. Even among the great Italian painters a wide variety of practice existed. It has been pretty well ascertained, partly from unfinished works, that Titian’s method was to work out the effect of his pictures, as far as possible, with pure white, red, and black, the shadows being left cold. To prevent the yellowing of the oil, and to harden the colour, the picture was exposed to the sun, months were sometimes allowed to elapse, and then the surface of this dead or first colouring was rubbed down with pumice stone and fresh colours and the glazings applied, a considerable period—during which the picture was exposed to the sun—elapsing between successive appli- cations of colour. ‘Titian is said to have been very partial to the use of his fingers when laying on paint, particularly on flesh and glazings.

The practice of Paul Veronese was quite opposed to that of Titian. He sought almost the full effect at once by direct means and simple mixture of tints, seldom repeating his colours, and using few glazings. When the work was well advanced in this way he covered the whole with a thin coat of varnish to bring up the colours, and then re- touched the lights and enforced the shadows with dexterous touches,

It is said of Reynolds, who spent half his life in ex-

periments, that in order to discover their technical secrets he deliberately scraped away and destroyed Venetian pictures of value. The decay of so many of his works shows with how little success these experiments were rewarded. _ Numerous " guides to oil painting" exist, but little real instruction or benefit is to be gained from their perusal. They abound in minute directions how to paint " trunks of trees, heaths, fields, roads, skies (grey, blue, and stormy), sunsets, sunrises, running streams and waterfalls, moun- tains, the smoke or steam of steamers, and chimneys of cottages," as well as "heads, flesh, backgrounds, draperies (blue, red, and black)," with lists of the proper colours to be employed for each. All this, it is hardly needful to say, 1s worse than useless. The surest and safest way for any one who intends to study painting seriously, or to make it his profession, is to place himself under the instruction of an artist of repute, either in his own country or in some foreign atelier; but, even after acquiring a sound technical knowledge of the processes employed in paint- ing, 1t will be found that much remains to learn which no master can teach. It is said of Velazquez that "he dis- covered that nature herself is the artist's best teacher, and industry his surest guide to perfection, and he very early resolved neither to sketch nor to colour any object without having the thing itself before him."

Water-Colour Painting.—The use, in painting, of earths and minerals of different colours, diluted with water, is

of great antiquity. Painting with oils or oleo-resinous vehicles is a comparatively modern invention. Tempera, encaustic, and fresco were ancient modes of water paint- ing. Several of the early Dutch and Flemish

oil painters attained to considerable technical excellence in the sepa- rate practice of water-colour painting ; little more than simple washings of water colour were employed by them, the processes which have in modern times so greatly raised and extended its scope being then unknown.

Painting in water colour owes much of its development to English artists, and may be regarded as a peculiarly national school of art. The first English water-colour painter of note, Paul Sandby, used Indian ink in the earlier stages of his drawings, finishing them with a few tints of thin colour. At this period paintings in water colour were little more than flat washes, and in the early catalogues of the Royal Academy Exhibition were designated “ water-tinted” or “ water-washed drawings.” Improvements were gradually effected, first by varying the ground-work tint with blue and sepia, over which washes of colour, com- mencing with a warm generalizing tint, were struck. John Cozens was the first to substitute a mixture of indigo and Indian red in place of Indian ink as a neutral tint in the early stages of his work, a practice which was long retained. The old water-colour painters used the lead pencil or the reed pen in finishing their drawings. The first to break away from this conventional method was Girtin, who painted objects at once with the tints they appeared to possess in nature. Turner, perhaps the greatest master of the art, was closely associated with Girtin in early life, and in the course of his long career he carried water-colour painting to a degree of perfection which can scarcely be surpassed. Nearly all the great improvements which have taken place of late years in water-colour painting are due more or less to him. John Lewis, De Wint, Prout, Hunt, Cox, Harding, and Copley Fielding have all contributed to the development of the art.

Materials used in Water-Colour Painting.—1. Paper.—A great variety of papers is used, varying in texture from the extreme of roughness to hot-pressed smoothness. In many of Turner’s drawings the paper is tinted. Nothing, how- ever, seemed to come amiss to him; papers of almost any surface or texture were used. David Cox, in many of his later works, employed a rough paper made from old sail- cloth. The paper most generally used is known as “Imperial,” and is made of various degrees of texture and thickness. _Whatman’s papers are also much esteemed.

The proper sizing of the paper is of great importance ; if it is too strongly done the colours will not float or work freely, if too little they are absorbed into the fabric and appear poor and dead. In this last case, gum-arabic dissolved in warm water will improve the effect by bringing up the colour and giving greater depth and richness of tone. The paper is prepared to receive the drawing by being well sponged and stretched upon a drawing-board.

2. Pigments—The permanent earthy minerals were chiefly used in ancient works, and these, with the addition of a few transparent colours, such as ‘sepia, indigo, and Indian ink, satisfied the early ‘water-colour painters of England. Richer and more delicate colours were oradually added, and of late years chemistry has supplied many entirely new ones. No method of giving permanency to some of the transparent yellows, carmine, and other colours obtained from the cochineal insect has yet been discovered, but the improved methods of preparing pigments from the root of the madder plant have rendered the use of carmine not so necessary. The earths and minerals are the most permanent pigments, but when employed with water they are more unmanageable, and flow less freely than the fugitive vegetable colours. Among the earlier water-colour

painters the use of opaque or “body” colour was generally considered illegitimate. Turner was the first to break through this restraint, and since his time the use of opaque colour has been carried perhaps to excess, many modern artists wilfully resigning much of the peculiar freshness and brilliancy of pure water colour for the sake of rivalling the richness and depth of oil painting.

3. Brushes.—Biown sable is the hair generally used ; but brushes are also made of red sable and squirrel or “camel” hair. The brushes are made by the insertion of the hair into quills, the various sizes of brush being recognized by the names of the birds which supply them —eagle, swan, goose, crow, &. Flat brushes in German- silver ferules are also used.

Perhaps as great a variety of practice exists among water-colour painters as among those working in oils; each arrives at his own peculiar method by the teach- ing of experience. As in the case of oil painting, it would serve little

purpose if the attempt was made to lay down rules and methods. All men cannot be painters, and a knowledge of the nature of the materials and of the processes employed does not necessarily carry with it ability to paint. Such essentials as a knowledge of com- position, drawing, light and shade, and colour are all re- quisite, and these can only be obtained after years of study. If possible the guidance of some good master should be sought for at first ; this will shorten the way and prevent the making of some awkward mistakes. (G. RE.)

PAINTING, Housz. See Buriprne, vol. iv. p. 510; and Murat DEcoRATION.

PAISIELLO, or Paxrsretio, GiovANNI (1741-1815), one of the most talented precursors of Rossini in the Italian school of musical composition, was born at Tarento, May 9, 1741. The beauty of his voice attracted so much attention that, in 1754, he was removed from the Jesuit college at Tarento to the Conservatorio di S. Onofrio at Naples, where he studied under Durante, and in process of time rose to the position of assistant master. For the theatre of the Conservatorio he wrote some intermezzi, one of which attracted so much notice that he was invited to write two operas, La Pupilla and Il Mondo al Rovescio, for Bologna, and a third, 1 Marchese di Tulipano, for Rome. His reputation being now firmly established, he settled for some years at Naples, where, notwithstanding the popularity of Piccini, Cimarosa, and Guglielmi, of whose triumphs he was bitterly jealous, he produced a series of highly successful operas, one of which, Z'Jdolo Cinese, made a deep impression upon the Neapolitan public. In 1776 Paisiello was invited by the empress Catherine II. to St Petersburg, where he remained for eight years, pro- ducing, among other charming works, his masterpiece, J/ Barbiere di Siviglia, which soon attained a European reputation. The fate of this delightful opera marks an epoch in the history of Italian art; for with it the gentle suavity cultivated by the masters of the 18th century died out to make room for the dazzling brilliancy of a later period. When, in 1816, Rossini set the same libretto to music, under the title of Almaviva, it was hissed from the stage; but it made its way, nevertheless, and under its true title, J? Barhiere, is now acknowledged as Rossini's greatest work, while Paisiello's opera is consigned to ob- livion, —a strange instance of poetical vengeance, since Paisiello himself had

many years previously endeavoured to eclipse the fame of Pergolesi by resetting the libretto of his famous intermezzo, La serva padrona.

Paisiello quitted Russia in 1784, and, after producing ZI fe Teodoro at Vienna, entered the service of Ferdinand IV. at Naples, where he composed many of his best operas, including Mina and La Molinara. After many Vicissi- tudes, resulting from political and dynastic changes, he

was invited to Paris (1802) by Napoleon, whose fayour he had won five years previously by a march composed for the funeral of General Hoche. Napoleon treated him munificently, while cruelly neglecting two far greater com- posers, Cherubini and Méhul, to whom the new favourite transferred the hatred he had formerly borne to Cimarosa, Guglielmi, and Piccini. But he entirely failed to con. ciliate the Parisian public, who received his opera, Proserpine so coldly that, in 1803, he requested and with some difficulty obtained permission to return to Ttaly, upon the plea of his wife's ill health.

On his arrival at Naples Paisiello was reinstated in his former appointments by Joseph Bonaparte and Murat, but he no longer enjoyed the brilliant reputation for the attain- ment of which he had so industriously laboured. He had taxed his genius beyond its strength, and was unable to meet the demands nowmade upon it for new ideas. His prospects, too, were precarious. The power of the Bonaparte family was tottering to its fall; and Paisiello's fortunes fell with it. The death of his wife, in 1815, tried him severely, His health failed rapidly. His constitutional jealousy of the popularity of others was a continual source of worry and vexation. And on June 5, 1815, he died, a dis. appointed man, notwithstanding his extraordinary successes and well-earned fame.

It is impossible to believe that even the best of Paisiello's operas would be listened to at the present moment with patience, yet they abound with melodies the graceful beauty of which is still warmly appreciated. Perhaps the best known of these charming airs is the famous Wel cor pity from La Molinara, immortalized by Beethoven's delightful variations. The greatest singers of the time spread the fame of this and other similar effusions throughout the length and breadth of Europe. The part of Nina conduced to

one of Pasta’s most splendid triumphs; and of the ninety-four operas which Paisiello is known to have com- posed not one can be said to have been unsuccessful. His church music was very voluminous, comprising one hundred and three masses, besides many smaller works; he also produced fifty-one instrumental compositions of more or less importance, and many detached pieces. MS. scores of many of his operas were presented to the library of the British Museum by the late Signor Dragonetti.

PAISLEY, a municipal and parliamentary burgh of Ren- frewshire, Scotland, is situated on both sides of the White Cart, 3 miles from its junction with the Clyde, and on the Caledonian and the Glasgow and South-Western Railways, 7 miles west-south-west of Glasgow and 17 east-south-east of Greenock. In 1791 fhe river was at great expense made navigable to the town for sloops of about 50 tons burden. The old town, situated on rising ground on the west bank of the river, consists chiefly of long regular streets, and contains the principal warehouses and factories. The new town was begun towards the close of last century, and is built on level ground to the east, at one time form- ing the domains of the abbey. Surrounding the town there are extensive suburbs, occupied chiefly by villa resi- dences. The river is crossed by a railway viaduct, and three bridges for carriage traffic, two of these being of iron and an old one of stone. The abbey of Paisley was founded in 1164, originally as a priory, by Walter, great steward of Scotland. Its lands were erected by James II. into a regality of which the abbot was lord, and the abbey formed the mausoleum of the Stuarts until their accession to the throne. The abbey was burned in 1307 by the English, and in 1561 by Lord Glencairn. In 1484 the grounds were surrounded by a lofty wall of hewn stone about one mile in circumference. In 1553 Claude Hamil- ton, a boy of ten, fourth son of the duke of Chatellerault, was made abbot in commendam, and in 1587 the lands

and abbey were made a temporal barony in his favour. His son was created earl of Abercorn. The abbey lands, after passing from the earl of Abercorn to the earl of Angus and thence to Lord Dundonald, were purchased in 1764 by the earl of Abercorn, with the view of making the abbey his residence, but changing his intention he let the grounds for building sites. The

buildings inhabited by the monks have been totally demolished, but the nave of the abbey church is entire, and has been fitted up as a place of worship. It is one of the finest extant specimens of old ecclesiastical architecture in Scotland, and also con- tains several fine sculptures and monuments. The unroofed transept and the foundations of the choir enclose a burying ground. The chapel of St Mirin, forming part of the transept, and now used as the place of sepulture of the Abercorn family, contains a monument to Mary Bruce, mother of Robert IL, which has been recently recon- structed. ‘The principal secular buildings of the town are the county buildings and prison, erected in 1818 at a cost of £40,000, and afterwards extended ; the John Neilson institution, opened in 1852, a handsome structure occupy- ing a commanding position on the site of the old Roman camp; the George A. Clark town-hall, in the Gothic style, erected in 1882 at a cost of £50,000, and presented to

Ss

e \ is \ ‘FD |p (\

> GA <SSH :

J Bavtholanew Edut

Plan of Paisley.

the town ; the news-room, 1808 ; the grammar school, in the Gothic style, 1864; the Government school of art, 1847; and the theatre. The benevolent institutions include the infirmary, the town hospital or poorhouse, the philosophi- cal institution and humane society, the workhouse, the lunatic asylum, and Hutcheson’s charity school. The Duncan Wright educational endowment provides for natives of the town several school bursaries of the value of from £5 to £10, and several college bursaries of the value of £25. The town possesses three public recreation grounds :—the Fountain Gardens of 6 acres, presented by Mr Thomas Coats in 1868, and containing an elegant structure for a museum and library erected by Sir Peter Coats in 1870; the Brodie Park, 26 acres, laid out in 1877, and presented by the late Robert Brodie of Craigie- hall; and St James’s Park, formed out of the race-

course, which has lately been acquired by the corporation. There are statues of Wilson the ornithologist and Tannahill the poet.

Linen was manufactured at Paisley before the Union, shortly after which coarse linen cloths were succeeded by plain and figured lawns. About the beginning of the 18th century an important manufacturing industry is said to have been originated by Christian Shaw, daughter of the laird of Bargarren. She acquired great skill in the

spinning of yarn, and, with the co-operation of a friend in Holland, originated the manufacture of fine linen thread. From 1760 till 1785 silk gauze was the principal manu- facture. Muslin, cambric, and cotton thread next came into prominence. The shawl manufacture, introduced about the beginning of the present century, the specialty of which was imitation cashmere shawls— “Paisley filled plaids” —is now of minor importance. A wide range of

‘worsted goods, mixed figured fabrics, and light figured

muslins at present employ the looms. The spinning of thread and cotton is perhaps the industry for which the town is best known, although it is almost equally celebrated for its patent manufactures, including soap, starch, corn-flour, and preparations of coffee. There are also exten- sive bleachfields, large dye and print works, engineering works, and some shipbuilding. Since the beginning of the present century the population of the burgh (area 3520 acres) has more than trebled. In 1781 it was 11,000, which in 1791 had increased to 13,800, in 1801 to 17,026, in 1821 to 26,428, in 1831 to 31,460, in 1851 to 48,026, in 1871 to 48,257, and in 1881 to 55,642, of whom 25,832 were males and 29,810 females.

There is no doubt that on the ridge of high ground above the Cart there was a Roman fort and camp, and the supposition that Paisley was the Vanduara of the Romans is supported by the derivation of that name, which means white water. The modern village grew up round the abbey, but the origin of the name Paisley, which was first written Paslet, has been disputed. About the end of the 15th century its growth had excited the jealousy of the ee

burgh of Renfrew, to protect it from the molestations of which Abbot Schaw in 1488 obtained its erection into a free burgh of barony. According to this charter, granted by James IV., it obtained the privilege of returning a member to the Scottish parliament. By the Reform Act of 1888 it was created a parlia- mentary burgh with one representative. The burgh is governed by a provost, feur bgjlies, a treasurer, and ten councillors. Among the eminent persons connected with Paisley are Patrick Adamson, arch-bishop of St Andrews ; Tannahill the poet ; Alexander Wilson the ornithologist ; Watt, author of Bibliotheea Britannica. Motherwell the poet ; and Professor John Wilson, “Christopher North.”

See Crawford, History of Renfrewshire, 3d ed., with additions by George Robertson, 1818; Paisley Directory, 1832-33 ; Swan, Description of the Town and Abbey of Paisley, 1835; Chartulary of the Monastery of Paisley, published by the Maitland Club, 1882; David Semple, Saint Mirin, 1872; Monastery of Paisicy, 1876; J.C. Lees, Abbey of Paisley, 1878.

PAJOU, Avucustin (1730-1809), born at Paris on 19th September 1730, was a member of the Academy and a leading sculptor of the French school during the reigns of Louis XV. and Louis XVI. His portrait busts of Buffon and of Madame Du Barry, and his statuette of Bossuet (all in the Louvre), are amongst his best works. He died at Paris May 8, 1809.

Pienon, Mélanges de la Société des bibliophiles, 1856 ; Madame Du Barry, Mémoire des wuvres de Pajou; Barbet de Jouy, Sculptures mod. au Louvre.

PAKHOL, or Petal, a city and port of China, in the west of the province of Kwang-tung, situated on a bay of the Gulf of Tong-king, formed by a peninsula running south-west from the fu city of Lien-chow, in 21° 30’ N. lat. and 109° 10’ E. long. Dating only from about 1820-30, and at first little better than a nest of pirates, Pakhoi rapidly grew into commercial importance, owing partly to the complete freedom which it enjoyed from taxation, and partly to the diversion of trade produced by the Tai-ping rebellion. The establishment of a Chinese custom-house, and the opening of the ports of Hankow and Haiphong, for a time threatened to injure its prospects; but, foreign trade being permitted in 1876-77, it began in 1879 to be regularly visited by foreign steamers. The average value of the open trade between 1880 and 1882 was £475,000 per annum, and a great deal of

smuggling still takes place. Liquid indigo, sugar, aniseed and aniseed oil, cassia-lignea and cassia oil, cuttle-fish, and hides are the chief exports. With Macao especially an extensive junk trade is carried on, £77,000 worth of

goods being despatched for Pakhoi in the course of a year. A large number of the inhabitants (who exceed 10,000 in all) are engaged in fishing and fish-curing.

PALACKY, FranriSzx (Francis) (1798-1876), the Bohemian historian, was born in the year 1798 in the vil- lage of Hodslavice, in the north-eastern corner of Moravia, where his father was a schoolmaster. His ancestors had secretly remained Protestants through all the persecutions of the 17th century, and only declared themselves as such on the publication of the edict of toleration by the emperor Joseph IT. His mother's name was Anna Krizan; she died in the year 1822, before her son had gained his great reputation. His father, Jiri (George), died in 1836 ; besides Francis they had three other sons and three daughters. Concerning the early years of the future his- torian we are told that he was an indefatigable reader, eagerly devouring all books which came in his way. In 1812 Palacky entered the gymnasium of Pressburg ; his original intention was to become a Protestant clergyman. The national movement then going on in the country aroused the enthusiasm of the youthful student, who was induced to apply himself to the study of his native tongue by the Hssay on the Bohemian Language of Jungmann. While in Pressburg, Palacky assisted the publicist Palko- vich in his journal, 7'ydenntk, and first made his appear- ance as an author with a translation of some of the poems of Ossian (1817), then so popular throughout Europe. After this he was for some time private tutor in various families. In 1823 Palacky removed to Prague, and formed friendships with the leading Czech literati—Jungmann, Presl, Dobrovsky, Hanka, and others. Dobrovsky intro- duced him to Count Sternberg, and he was appointed editor of the new Casoyis Ceskeho Musea, which is still published. In this occupation he continued till 1838. Count Caspar Sternberg and his brother were munificent patrons of the new Bohemian Museum, which had finally been founded after many efforts. The conduct of these men was the more

remarkable that the Bohemian aristocracy had then become almost entirely Germanized.

In 1829 Palacky was appointed public historiographer by the Bohemian states, and made several lengthened tours to consult documents in public libraries at Munich, Berlin, Dresden, Rome, and elsewhere. He then commenced his History of the Bohemian People, which has earned him the undying gratitude of his countrymen. The first volume appeared in German in 1836, but the work was carried on in the Bohemian language from 1848, and was concluded with the year 1526, the period when Ferdinand I. ascended the throne and the political independence of the Czechs ceased. Besides this Palacky obtained a prize from the Bohemian Society of Arts for his work entitled Wiirdigung der alten bihmischen Geschichtschreiber. In the year 1840 he published, in conjunction with Schafarik, Die ciltesten Denkmédler der Bohmischen Sprache. In this he appears as the champion of the early Bohemian manu- scripts, the authenticity of which has been so much dis- puted, adopting among others the glosses in the Mater Verborum in the library at Prague, which have been proved to be forgeries. In the troubled year 1848 Palacky, a man of the student type, was forced into political life, but acquitted himself well. He refused to take a seat in the German parliament at Frankfort when invited to do so, on the ground that as a Czech he had nothing todo with Ger- nan affairs. It was on this occasion that he uttered the memorable sentiment that so essential was Austria to the interests of Europe that, if such an empire had not existed, it would have been necessary to create one—words which were afterwards used by Jellachich as the device on his flag. Before his death, however, Palacky had changed his opinion, and despaired of any help coming from such a

PA L—

roE

| source. Thus in a series of articles which he published

in his old age under the title Radhost, he tells us—“] have thought all my life that the right would prevail, and my mistake has been in believing in the good sengg and spirit of justice of the German people.”

So great was the influence of Palacky at this period that he was offered a portfolio in the ministry of Pillersdorf ; but in a short time the confidence placed in him by the Austrian Government was withdrawn, and he was regarded with suspicion. He soon, however, quitted politics and betook himself to his literary labours. His influence among his countrymen was now at its height. In 1860 he had the misfortune to lose his wife, whom he had married in 1827. In 1861 he was made a life member of the Austrian senate. He died in 1876, busy with litera- ture to the end.

The great work of Palacky, his History of the Bohemian People, is indeed a monument of conscientious labour. His love of truth and marvellous accuracy are conspicuous on every page. To enable the Bohemians ~~to resist the insidious attempts at their denationalization which had been steadily pursued by their enemies during the 17th and 18th centuries, it was necessary to bring before them the great past which they had been taught to forget. This Palacky has done, and his work has become a national monument. 'The occupation of the last years of his life was the rewriting of some of the chapters, which had seemed to him imperfectly executed, owing to the want of original documents or the censorship of the Austrian Government. In 1845 the first part of his third volume appeared, dealing with the life and religious opinions of Huss. As the work was published, it had already undergone serious mutilation at the hands of the appointed censors, but the Bohemians saw the history of Huss presented to them in its true colours; and so great was the sensation created that a Roman Catholic publicist named Helfert was commissioned to write an account of Huss and Jerome, his disciple, with the view of counter~~ acting the effects of Palacky's work. This book duly appeared at Prague in 1857. Palacky, however, must be considered to have triumphed in the controversy. He published two other polemical works on the same subject in German: in 1868 appeared Die Geschichte des Hussiten- thums und Prof. C. Héfler, and in 1871 another work

entitled Zur Béhmischen Geschichtschreibung. Besides the

interesting portion of his work dealing with Huss and the subsequent Hussite wars, Palacky appears to great advan- tage when dwelling upon the most prosperous periods of Bohemian nationality, as the reigns of Charles

IV. and George Podébrad. No pains were spared by him in his researches. Dr Kalousek tells us in his interesting memoir that, when he visited Rome in 1837 to consult the library of the Vatican, he read through 45,000 documents in ten weeks and copied 400 of them with his own hand. ‘The work is a monument of erudition ; but it may perhaps be said to be written in a somewhat dry and frigid style. It has become familiar to general readers in a German translation. Palacky also founded an historical school in Bohemia, foremost among his pupils being Vaclav Tomek and Antonin Gindely.

PALADIN (Lat., palatinus) literally means a courtier, a member of a royal household, one connected with a palace. The palatium of the Roman emperors on the Palatine Hill supplied a name for all the royal and imperial residences in medizeval Europe, and a correspond- ing adjective and noun for royal officials and dependants. From being applied to the famous twelve peers of Charlemagne, the word paladin became a general term in romance for knights of great prowess.

PALAICHTHYES. See Icuruyoxocy, vol. xii. p. 685.

PALHOGRAPHY

ALEOGRAPHY is the study of ancient handwriting from surviving examples. While epigraphy (see InscRrIPTIONS) is the science which deals with inscriptions engraved on stone or metal or other enduring material as memorials for future ages, paleeography takes cognizance of writings of a literary, economical, or legal nature, written generally with stile, reed, or pen, on tablets, rolls, or books. The boundary, however, between the two sciences is not always to be exactly defined. The fact that an inscription occurs upon a hard material in a fixed position does not necessarily bring it under the head of epigraphy. Such specimens of writing as the graffiti or wall-scribblings of Pompeii and ancient Rome belong as much to the one science as to the other; for they neither occupy the position of inscriptions set up with special design as epigraphical monuments, nor are they the movable written documents with which we connect the idea of paleography. But such exceptions only slightly affect the broad distinction just specified.
.

The scope of this article is to trace the history of Greek and Latin paleography from the earliest written docu- ments in those languages which have survived. In Greek paleography we have a subject which is self-contained. The Greek character, in its pure form, was used for one language only ; but the universal study of that language throughout Europe, and the wide diffusion of its litera- ture, have been the cause of the accumulation of Greek MSS. in every centre of learning. The field of Latin paleography is much wider, for the Roman alphabet has made its way into every country of western Europe, and the study of its various developments and changes is essential for a proper understanding of the character which we write.

Handwriting, like every other art, has its different phases of growth, perfection, and decay. A particular form of writing is gradually developed, then takes a finished or calligraphic style and becomes the hand of its period, then deteriorates, breaks up, and disappears, or only drags on. an artificial existence, being meanwhile superseded by another style which, either developed from the older hand or introduced independently, runs the same course, and, in its turn, is displaced by a younger rival. Thus in the history of Greek writing we see the uncial hand passing from early forms into the calligraphic stage, and then driven out by the minuscule, which again goes through a series of important changes. In Latin, the capital and uncial hands give place to the smaller character ; and this, after running its course, deteriorates and is superseded almost universally by the modern Italian hand dating from the Renaissance.

Bearing in mind these natural changes, it is evident that a style of writing, once developed, is best at the period when it is in general use, and that the oldest examples of that period are the simplest, in which vigour and naturalness of handwriting are predominant. On the other hand, the fine execution of a MS. after the best period of the style has passed cannot conceal deteriora- tion. The imitative nature of the calligraphy is detected both by the general impression on the eye and by uncertainty and inconsistencies in the forms of letters. It is from a failure to keep in mind the natural laws of development and change that early dates, to which they have no title, have been given to imitative MSS. ; and on the other hand, even very ancient examples have been post-dated in an incredible manner.

Down to the time of the introduction of printing,

writing ran in two lines—the set book-hand and the cursive. MSS. written in the set book-hand filled the place now occupied by printed books, the writing being regular, the lines kept even by ruling, and the pages provided with regular margins. Cursive writing, in which the letters employed were fundamentally the same as in the set hand, was necessary for the ordinary business of life. The set book-hand disappeared before the print- ing press; cursive writing necessarily remains.

Materials,—Before passing to the discussion of Greek and Latin handwriting, the materials employed and the forms which they took may be briefly noticed. The various works on paleography enumerate the different substances which have been put in requisition to receive writing. Metals, such as gold, bronze, lead, tin, have been used; leaden plates, for example, in addition to those which have been found buried with the dead and bearing inscriptions of various kinds, were also used in the Venetian states down to the 14th or 15th century as a material on which to inscribe historical and diplo- matic records. The ancient Assyrians reeorded their history on sun-dried or fire-burnt bricks; and inscribed potsherds or ostraka have been gathered in hundreds in the sands of Egypt. Such hard materials as these, however, would have no extensive use where more pliant and convenient substances, such as animal skin or vegetable growths, could be had. We have therefore practically to confine our attention to such materials as papyrus, vellum, and paper, the use of which became so universally estab- lished. But midway between the hard and soft substances, and partaking of the nature of both, stand the waxen tablets made of wood coated with wax, on which the writing was scratched with the point of the sédws or graphium. These tablets were called by the Greeks déAros, deArioy or SeAriStov, wruxtiov or wruKtiov, wivas, wwvaxis, Xc., and in Latin tabule or tabelle, or cere; and two or more, put together and connected with rings or other fastenings which served as hinges, formed a caudex or codex. A codex of two leaves was called 8/Oupo: or dirruxa, diptycha ; of three, rpirruxa, triptycha; and so on. From the early specimens which have survived, and which will be examined below, the triptycha appear to have been most commonly used. The tablets served for the ordinary affairs of life, for accounts, letters, drafts, school exercises, &e. The various

references to them by classical writers need not be here repeated; but their survival to a late time should be noted. St Augustine refers to his tablets, and St Hilary of Arles also mentions their use for the purpose of correspondence ; and there remains the record of a letter written in tabella as late as 1148 a.p. (Watten- bach, Schriftwesen, 2d ed., p. 46). They were very commonly used through the Middle Ages in all the west of Europe. Specimens inscribed with money accounts of the 13th and 14th centuries have survived in France; and similar documents of the 14th and 15th centuries are to to be found in several of the municipal archives of Germany. Reference to their use in England occurs in literature; and specimens of the 14th or 15th century have been dug up in Ireland. Similarly in Italy their use is both recorded and proved by actual examples of the 13th or 14th century. With the beginning of the 16th century their general employment seems to have come to an end; but a few survivals of this custom of writing on wax have lingered on to modern times. It is said that sales in the fish-market of Rouen are still noted down on this material.

Among the Romans ivory was sometimes substituted for wood in the waxen tablets, as appears from passages in classical authors. The large consular diptychs are examples of the custom. The rich carvings with which these were embellished have secured their preservation in several instances; and they were often kept in the churches in the Middle Ages and inscribed with lists of bishops or abbots and benefactors.

The employment of Papyrus (¢.v.) as an ordinary writing material in ancient Egypt, and, exported from thence, in Greece and Italy, is well known. The most ancient examples of Greek writing which will have to engage our attention are those which are found in the papyrus rolls of Egypt of the 2d century B.c. Thougl superseded in course of time by vellum, this material continued to be used by Greek scribes down to the 9th century. The earliest Latin writing on papyrus is contained in some fragments recovered at Herculaneum. Dating from the 5th to the 10th century are the papyrus deeds of Ravenna; and papal documents on the same substance extend from the 8th to the 11th century. Papyrus was also used for documents in France under the Merovingian kings. It was also made up into books, for the

reception of literary works, in which form it was sometimes strengthened by the addition of vellum leaves which encased the quires ; and, as far as can be ascertained from extant remains, it was used thus in Italy and France down to the 10th century.

Skins of animals have doubtless served as a writing material from the very earliest period of the use of letters. Instances of the use of leather in western Asia are recorded by ancient writers; and from Herodotus we learn that the JIonians applied to the later-imported papyrus the name dup6épa, by which they already desig- nated their writing material of leather. The Jews also have retained the ancient Eastern custom, and still in- scribe the law upon leathern rolls. The use of parcli- ment (zepyaunvy, charta pergamena) may be considered a revival of the ancient use of skins, now prepared by a new method attributed to Eumenes IL, king of Pergamum (197-158 B,c.), who was opposed by the jealousy of the Ptolemies in his endeavours to establish a library in his capital. They forbade the export of papyrus, and so compelled him to revert to the ancient custom, The new material was prepared in such a way as to be fit to receive writing on both sides, and could thus be conveni- ently made up into book-form, the cwudriv. The ancient name dupGépa. (Lat., membranx) was also transferred to the new invention. By common consent the name of parchment has in modern times given place to that of vellum, a term properly applicable only to calf-skin, but now generally used to describe a medizeval skin-book of any kind. Parchment is a title now usually reserved for the hard sheep-skin or other skin material on which law- deeds are engrossed.

Purple-stained vellum was used by the Romans for wrappers for their papyrus rolls. In the 3d century it is recorded that entire volumes were made of this ornamen- tal substance and written in gold or silver 3 and it was against luxury of this kind that St Jerome directed his often-quoted words in his preface to the book of Job, Examples of such costly MSS. of the 6th century have survived to the present day, as the Codex Argenteus of the Gothic Gospels at Upsala, the fragments of the illustrated Genesis at Vienna, the leaves of the purple Gospels in the Cottonian Library and elsewhere, the Codex Rossanensis, lately discovered, and some others. Some richly stained leaves of the 8th century remain in the Canterbury

Gospels (Royal MS., 1 E. vi.) in the British Museum. On the Continent the great impetus given to the production of

splendid MSS. under the rule of Charlemagne revived the art of staining; and several fine examples of it exist jp MSS. of the 8th, 9th, and 10th centuries. At a later period, when the art was forgotten, the surface only of the vellum was painted in imitation of the older staining which soaked into the substance of the skin. Other colours besides purple were sometimes employed, particularly in the period of the Renaissance, to paint or stain vellum; but MSS. so treated are rather to be regarded as curiosities produced by the caprice of the moment.

Cotton paper (charta bombycina) is said to have been known to the Chinese at a remote period, and to have passed into use among the Arabs early in the 8th century, It was imported into Constantinople, and was used for Greek MSS. in the 13th century. In Italy and the West it never made much way. Rag paper came into general use in Europe in the 14th century, and gradually displaced vellum. In the 15th century MSS. of vellum and paper mixed were common. See PAPER.

With regard to the forms in which writing material was made up, the waxen tablets have already been referred to, and will be more minutely described below. Ancient papyri usually appear in the form of rolls; vellum was made up into books. The roll («tAwSpos, volumen ; later, cidytapiov, eihytdv, éeiAnwa, rotulus) was the ordinary form of written documents known to the ancients. When a work was contained in several rolls, a single roll was called BiPros, BiBriov, volumen, charta; later, téuos. From the circumstance of the Bible filling many rolls it acquired such titles as pandectes and bibliotheca, the latter of which remained in use down to the 14th century. The title of the work was written at the end of the roll; and at the same place was recorded the number of columns and lines, orixo., Which it contained —probably for the purpose of estimating the price. To roll and unroll was eiAety and eedeiv, plicare and explicare ; the work unrolled and read to the end was the liber explicitus. Hence comes the com- mon explicit written at the end of a work ; and, from the analogy of incipit aber in titles, the word

was afterwards taken for a verb, and appears in such phrases as explicit liber, explicit, expliceat, ke.

The book-form was adopted from the waxen tablets, and the name caudex or codex was also taken over. It has been inferred, from the terms in which Martial speaks of vellum books, that they were articles of luxury at Rome; and, although no examples have survived from classical times, and none were found in the ruins of Herculaneum, the sumptuousness of the earliest extant volumes supports this view. The shape in which they are made up during the early centuries of the Middle Ages is the broad quarto.

The quires or gatherings of which the book was formed generally consisted, in the earliest examples, of four sheets folded to make eight leaves (rerpas or rerpadiov, quaternto), although occasionally quinterns, or quires of five sheets (ten leaves), were adopted. Sexterns, or quires of six sheets (twelve leaves), came into use at a later period. The quire-mark, or “signature,” was usually written at the foot of the last page, but in some early instances (e.g., the Codex Alexandrinus) it appears at the head of the first page. The numbering of the separate leaves in a quire, m the fashion followed by early printers, came in in the 14th century. Catch-words to connect the quires date back to the 12th century.

No exact system was followed in ruling the lines and in arranging the sheets when ruled. In the case of papyri it was enough to mark with the pencil the vertical marginal lines to bound the text ; the grain of the papyrus was a sufficient guide for the lines of writing. With the firmer material of vellum it became necessary to rule lines to keep the writing even. These lines were at first drawn

with a hard point, almost invariably on the hair (or outer) side of the skin, and strongly enough to be in relief on the flesh (or inner) side. Marginal lines were drawn to bound the text laterally ; but the ruled lines which guided the writing were not infrequently drawn right across the sheet. Each sheet should be ruled separately ; but two or more sheets were often laid and ruled together, the lines being drawn with so much force that the lower sheets also received the impressions. In rare instances lines are found ruled

on both sides of the leaf, as in some parts of the Codex Alexandrinus. In this same MS. and in other early codices the ruling was not always drawn for every line of writing, but was occasionally spaced so that the writing ran between the ruled lines as well as on them. In making up the quires, care was generally taken to lay the sheets in such a way that hair-side faced hair-side, and flesh-side faced flesh-side; so that, when the book was opened, the two pages before the reader had the same appearance, either the yellow tinge of the hair-side, or the fresh whiteness of the flesh-side. In Greek MSS. the arrangement of the sheets was afterwards reduced to a system: the first sheet was laid with the flesh-side down- wards, so that that side began the quire ; yet in so early an example as the Codex Alexandrinus the first page of a quire is the hair-side. In Latin MSS. also the hair-side appears generally to have formed the first page. Ruling with the plummet or lead-point came into ordinary use in the 12th century; red and violet inks were used for orna- mental ruling in the 15th century. The lines were evenly spaced by means of prickings in the margins; in some early MSS. these prickings run down the middle of the page.

Inks of various colours were employed from early times. Red is found in initial lines, titles, and colophons in the earliest vellum MSS. For purposes of contrast it was also used in glosses, as in the Lindisfarne Gospels and in the Durham Ritual. In the Carlovingian period entire volumes were occasionally written with this ink. Other coloured inks—green, violet, and yellow—are also found at an early date. Writing in gold and silver was inscribed on purple vellum in ancient MSS., as has been noted above; under Charlemagne it again came into fashion. Gold was then applied to the writing of ordinary vellum MSS. It was also injroduced into English MSS. in the 10th century.

With regard to writing implements, it will be here enough to note that for writing on waxen tablets the pointed stilus or graphium was used; that the reed (xaAapos, calamus or canna) was adapted for both papyrus and vellum, and that in Italy at least it appears to have been used as late as the 15th century ; and that the quill pen can be traced back to the 6th century of our era.

GREEK WRITING.

The period which has to be traversed in following the history of Greek palzography begins with the 2d century B.¢. and ends at the close of the 15th century. For all this long period the subject is illustrated by a fair amount of material, more or less connected in chronological sequence. Greek writing in MSS., as far as we know it from extant remains, passed through two courses,—that of the uncial or large letter, and that of the minuscule or small letter. The period of the uncial runs from the date of the earliest specimens on papyrus to the 9th century, that of the minuscule from the 9th century to the inven- tion of printing, An established form of writing, however, cannot, any more than any other human habit, be suddenly abandoned for a new one ; and we are therefore prepared to find the uncial character continue to be used after the first introduction of the smaller hand. It did in fact sur-

vive for special purposes for some three centuries after it had ceased to be the common form of book-writing. Inversely, no fully developed handwriting suddenly springs into existence ; and we therefore look for the first beginnings of the minuscule hand in documents of far higher antiquity than those of the 9th century.

Uncial.—The term uncial has been borrowed from the nomenclature of Latin paleography! and applied to Greek writing of the larger type to distinguish it from the minus- cule or smaller character. In Latin majuscule writing there exist both capitals and uncials, each class distinct. In Greek MSS. pure capital letter-writing was never employed (except occasionally for ornamental titles at a late time). As distinguished from the square capitals of inscriptions, the uncial writing has certain rounded letters, as €, C, W, modifications in others, and some extending above or below the line.

Uncial Greek writing in early times is found in two forms,—the set and the cursive. In examining the set or, as it may be termed, the literary hand, we find that regard must be had to the material on which it was written. For the material has always had more or less influence on the character of the writing. To the substitution of a soft surface for a hard one, of the pen for the graving tool, we undoubtedly owe the rounded forms of the uncial letters. The square-formed capitals were more easily cut on stone or metal;

the round letters more readily traced on skin or wax or papyrus with stile, reed, or pen. Again, the earliest specimens of Greek uncials are found on papyrus ; and this delicate and brittle material naturally required a light style of penmanship. When the firmer material of vellum came into use, there followed a change in the style of writing, which assumed the calligraphic form, which will be considered in its place.

The earliest examples of Greek uncial writing are on papyrus, and have been discovered in Egypt and in the ruins of Herculaneum. When we turn to the literary remains with the view of following the course of the set hand, a difficulty arises at the outset; for in some of the most ancient specimens (and notably the Evddgov rexvy referred to below) there is a fluctuation between set and cursive writing which makes it no easy matter to decide how they should be classed. In the same way, when we come to consider the first examples of cursive hand, we shall find much in them which might be termed a set cast of writing. In fact, in the period when these ancient examples were produced, the formal and cursive styles were not so distinctive as they afterwards became. For our present purpose we may class the literary works in this doubtful style of writing under the book-hand, and place the documents among the specimens of cursive.

With regard to the different dates to be assigned to these early relics, those which have been recovered from Herculaneum have a limit, after which they cannot have been written, in the year of the destruction of the city, 79 a.p. But how far before that date they may be set it is hazardous to conjecture, although the greater number probably fall within the Ist century of our era. In the case of most of the Egyptian papyri there is no such limit either way. In some instances, however, literary remains have been found in company with deeds bearing an actual date, and in two of them the documents are written on the backs of the literary papyri. The work on astronomy entitled Eiddgov rexvj, among the papyri of the Louvre (WV. et Extr., pls. i~x.),? is endorsed with deeds of 165 and

1 §t Jerome’s often-quoted words, “uncialibus, ut vulgo aiunt, litteris,” in his preface to the book of Job, have never been explained. Of the character referred to as “uncial” there is no doubt, but the derivation of the term is unknown.

2 Notices et Extraits des Manuscrits, vol. xviii., Paris, 1865.

164 B.c., and may consequently be at least as old as the first half of the 2d century B.c. The writing of the text of this MS8., as has been already noticed, is of a rather cursive character. But the fragments of a work on dialectics in the same collection (W. et £ztr., pl. xi.), which is endorsed with a deed of 160 B.c., is written in set uncials of a perfectly simple style, formed with fine and even strokes. The columns of writing lean out of the per- pendicular, to the right, a peculiarity which is seen again in the orations of Hyperides (below). So far as one may venture to take this specimen as a standard whereby to judge of the age of others, a simple and fine and light stroke, without exaggeration of forms in the letters, and unrestraint in the flow of the writing seem to be the chief characteristics of this class of hand in the centuries immediately preceding the Christian era. And these characteristics are generally to be observed in all docu- ments which there is reason to assign to this period.

Not inconsiderable fragments of the Ziad dating from the pre-Christian period have also come down to us, First in importance stands the fragmentary papyrus of bk. xviii, found in a tomb near Monfalat in 1849-50. It may be confidently dated as early as the lst century B.c. The text is written in slender uncials, formed with regularity and generally upright, the inclination, if any, being to the left. This tendency to incline-the letters back is a mark of age which repeats itself in the earliest forms of the set minuscule hand. Breathings and accents and various cor- rections have been added by a later hand in this papyrus, which is now in the British Museum (Cat. Anc. MSS., i. pl. 1.).! Another papyrus of a portion of the Jad, on the back of which is a work of Tryphon, the grammarian, was found at the same time, but remains in private hands. Among the papyri of the Louvre are also some fragments of the Ziad, viz., of bk. xiii. (WV. e Evxtr., pl. xii.) and of bks. vi. and xviii. (pl. xlix.), all of a date previous to the Christian era. The fragment of bk. vi. is of particular interest as being written ina hand which is much more set and formal than is generally found in papyri, in rather narrowed letters, among which the normal form of capital A appears. In the

other fragments are seen here and there accents and breathings which from all accounts are ancient, although not to be taken as the work of the first hand. Not being applied systematically, they are probably added by some teacher for instruction on particular points. But the Homeric papyrus which has hitherto had the widest reputation is that which bears the name of its former owner, Bankes, who bought it at Elephantine in 1821. It contains the greater part of the last book of the Ihad. The writing, however, differs very essentially from that of the other Homeric fragments just noticed. It is less free, and wants the spirit and precision of the others, and in the form of letters it approaches more nearly to the cast of those in the early MSS. on vellum. For these reasons it seems better to date this papyrus after the time of our Lord, perhaps even in the 2d century.

A fragment of papyrus containing a copy in duplicate of some lines supposed to be taken from the Temenides of Euripides, together with a few lines from the Medea and some extracts from other works, has been lately published (H. Weil, Un Papyrus inédit de la bibl. de M. A. Firmin- Didot, Paris, 1879). The writing is in set uncials earlier than the year 161 B.c., a document of that date having been added.

But the most important discovery hitherto made among the papyri from Egypt is that of four of the orations of the Athenian orator Hyperides, all of which are now in the British Museum. The papyrus containing the orations

1 Catalogue of Ancient MSS. in the British Museum—Port les Greek, 1881.

for Lycophron and Euxenippus is in unusually good pre- servation, being 11 feet in length and having forty-nine columns of writing. Other portions of the same roll are extant, containing fragments of a third oration against Demosthenes. The writing is particularly elegant, and jg evidently by a skilled penman, considerable play being exhibited in the formation of the letters, which, while still set uncials, are often linked together without raising the pen. The columns of writing incline to the right, There can be no hesitation in placing this papyrus as far back at least as the Ist century B.c. (see editions of Professor Babington, 1853; Cat. Anc. MSS., pls. 2, 3; Pal. Soc.,? pl. 126). Of much later date, however, is the papyrus containing the

funeral oration on Leosthenes, 323 Bc. The writing differs entirely from that of the other orations, being in coarsely-formed uncials, sometimes wide apart and in other places cramped together ; and the forms of the letters are irregular. This irregularity is not the rough and hasty character of writing of an early age, such as that of the Evddgou rexvy, where, in spite of the want of regularity, it is evident that the scribe is writing a natural and practised hand. Here we have rather the ill-formed character bred of want of skill and familiarity with the style of writing. On the back is a horoscope, which has been shown to be that of a person born in 95 A.D. It was at one time assumed that this was an addition written after the oration had been inscribed on the other face of the papyrus, But from the evidence of the material itself the contrary appears to be the fact; and we may accordingly accept the theory that, as no work intended for sale would have been so written, the text of the oration probably represents a student's exercise,—a view which is also supported by the numerous faults in ortho- graphy. This specimen of writing, then, may be assigned to the 2d century of our era.

Lastly, among the discoveries in Egypt in Greek litera- ture is the fragment of writings of the poet Aleman, now in the Louvre, which, however, appears to be not older than the lst century B.c., the hand being light and rather sloping, and inclining in places to cursive forms. It is of interest as having scholia in a smaller hand, and a few accents and breathings added probably, as in the case of the fragment of Homer quoted above, by a teacher for the purpose of demonstration (VV. e¢ £véir., pl. 1.). It may be also added that some early documents are extant written in a set hand (¢g., WV. et £xtr., pl. xvii., Nos. 12, 13).

Turning to the remains discovered at Herculaneum, it is to.be regretted that there exist hardly any sufficiently trustworthy facsimiles. The so-called facsimiles engraved in the Herculanensia Volumina are of no paleographical value. They are mere lifeless representations, and only show us that the texts of the different papyri are usually written in neatly-formed and regularly-spaced uncials. The character is better shown in two autotypes (Pal. Soc., pls. 151, 152) from the works of Philodemus and Metrodorus, although the blackening of the material by the action of the heated ashes threw great difficulty in the way of getting satisfactory reproductions by photography. In the first of these specimens the writing is very beauti- fully

formed and evenly spaced, in the second it is rougher. But it is well to remember, when we have facsimiles from the Herculaneum papyri before us, that in many cases the material will have shrunk under the heat of the destroying shower, and that the writing, as we see it, may be much smaller than it was originally, and so have a more delicate appearance than when first written.

Very few waxen tablets inscribed with Greek uncial writing have survived. Two of them found at Memphis are preserved in the British Museum, and on one of them

2 Paleographical Society, Facsimiles, 1873-88.

are traced some verses in large roughly-formed letters, the date of which can only be conjectured to fall in the Ist century (Verhandl. d. Philologen-Versamml. zu Wireburg, 1869, p. 244). Another set of five tablets is in the Cabinet des Médailles at Paris, containing scribbled alphabets, and a contractor’s accounts in a later and more current hand (Rev. Archéol., viii. p. 461). A tablet from which the wax has worn, and which is inscribed with ink upon the wood, in characters of the 4th century, as is thought, is described in Trans. Koy. Soc. Lit., 2d ser.,

ol. x.

, With the introduction of vellum as a writing material, the uncial characters entered on a new phase. As already observed, the firmer and smoother ground offered by the surface of the vellum to the pen of the scribe would lead to a more exact and firmer style in the writing. The light touch and delicate forms so characteristic of calligraphy ou papyrus gave place to a rounder and stronger hand, in which the contrast of fine hair-lines and thickened down- strokes adds so conspicuously to the beauty of the writing of early MSS. on vellum. Of such MSS., however, none have survived which are attributed to a higher antiquity than the 4thcentury. And here it may be remarked, with respect to the attribution to particular periods of these early examples, that we are not altogether on firm ground. Internal evidence, such, for example, as the presence of the Eusebian Canons ina

MS. of the Gospel, assists us in fixing a limit of age, but when there is no such support the dating of these early MSS. must be more or less conjectural. It is not till the beginning of the 6th century that we meet with a MS. which can be approximately dated ; and, taking this as a standard of comparison, we are enabled to distinguish those which undoubtedly have the appearance of greater age and to arrange them in some sort of chronological order. But these codices are too few in number to afford material in sufficient quantity for training the eye by familiarity with a variety of hands of any one period—the only method which can give entirely trustworthy results.

The earliest examples of vellum uncial MSS. are the three famous codices of the Bible. Of these, the most ancient, the Codex Vaticanus, is probably of the 4th century. The writing must, in its original condition, have been very perfect asa specimen of penmanship; but nearly the whole of the text has been traced over by a later hand, perhaps in the 10th or 11th century, and only such words or letters as were rejected as readings have been left untouched. Written in triple columns, in letters of uniform size, without enlarged initial letters to mark even the beginnings of books, the MS. has all the simplicity of extreme antiquity (Pal. Soc, pl. 104). The Codex Sinaiticus (Pal. Soc., pl. 105) has also the same marks of age, and is judged by its discoverer, Tischendorf, to be even more ancient than the Vatican MS. In this, how- ever, a comparison of the writing of the two MSS. leads to the conclusion that he was wrong. The writing of the Codex Sinaiticus is not so pure as that of the other MS., and, if that is a criterion of age, the Vatican MS. holds the first place. In one particular the Codex Sinaiticus has been thought to approach in form to its possible archetype on papyrus. It is written with four columns toa page, the open book thus presenting eight columns Im sequence, and recalling the long line of columns on an unfolded roll. The Codex Alexandrinus is placed In the middle of’ the 5th century. Here we have an advance on the style of the other two codices. The MS. 18 written in double columns only, and enlarged letters stand at the beginning of paragraphs. But yet the writing 18 generally more elegant than that of the Codex Ninaiticus, Examining these MSS. with a view to ascer-

tain the rules which guided the scribes in their work, we find simplicity and regularity the leading features; the round letters formed in symmetrical curves; € and C, &c., finishing off in a hair-line sometimes thickened at the end into a dot; horizontal strokes fine, those of €, H, and © being either in the middle or high in the letter; the base of A and the cross-stroke of II also fine, and, as a rule, kept within the limits of the letters and not projecting beyond. Here also may be noticed the occurrence in the Codex Alexandrinus of Coptic forms of letters (e.g.,4, JU, alpha and mu) in the titles of books, &c., confirniatory of the tradition of the Egyptian origin of the MS.

TEKNQUNCOYTTeG promroeve TACE NAAFOEIAIKAOWCeANTS Att NGAABOMENSTITOTOYTI Pe

Greek Uncial (Cod. Alex.), 5th century.

(rexvwy cov mwepimarouv Tas ev GAnGera Kabws evTo Anv edaBomev aro Tov [Lat]p[o]s.—2 John 4.)

In the 5th century also falls the illustrated Homer of the Ambrosian Library, sadly mutilated. Some fifty frag- ments remain, cut out for the sake of the pictures which they contain; and all the text that is preserved is that which happened to be on the backs of these pictures. Here the writing shows differences from that of the three codices just noticed, being taller ; and, to instance particu- lar letters, the cross-stroke of € is abnormally low down, and the shape of A and P (the latter not produced below the line) and the large bows of B are also points of difference. Jt has been suggested that the MS. was written in the “ie of Italy by a Latin scribe (Pal. Soc., pls. 39, 40, 50,

51).

To the 5th century may also belong the palimpsest MS. of the Bible, known from the upper text as the Codex Ephraemi, at Paris (ed. Tischendorf, 1845), and the Octateuch, whose extant leaves are divided between Paris, Leyden, and St Petersburg—both of which MSS. are prob- ably of Egyptian origin. Of the end of the 5th or beginning of the 6th century is the illustrated Genesis of the Cottonian Library, now unfortunately reduced to fragments

by fire, but once the finest example of its kind (Cat. Anc. MSS., i. pl. 8). And to about the same time belong the Dio Cassius of the Vatican (Silvestre, pl. 60) and the Pentateuch of the Bibliothtque Nationale (Id.,

We GL)s – In dhe writing of uncial MSS. of the 6th century there is a marked degeneration. The letters, though still round, are generally of a larger character, more heavily formed, and not so compactly written as in the preceding century. Horizontal strokes (e.g., in A, II, T) are lengthened and finished off with heavy points or finials. The earliest ex- ample of this period which has to be noticed is the Dios- corides of Vienna, which is of particular value for the study of the palzography of early vellum MSS. _ It is the earliest example to which an approximate date can be given. There is good evidence to show that it was written early in the 6th century for Juliana Anicia, daughter of Flavius Anicius Olybrius, emperor of the West in 472. Here we already notice the characteristics of uncial writing of the 6th century, to which reference has been made. To this century also belong the palimpsest Homer under a Syriac text, in the British Museum (Cat. Anc. MSS., i. pl. 9); its companion volume, used by the same Syrian scribe, in which are fragments of St Luke's Gospel (Jbid., pl. 10) ; the Dublin palimpsest fragments of St Matthew and Isaiah (T. K. Abbot, Par Palimpsest. Dubl.), written in Egypt ; the fragments of the Pauline epistles from Mount Athos, some of which are at Paris and others at Moscow (Silvestre,

pls. 63, 64; Sabas, pl. A), of which, however, the writing has been disfigured by retracing at a later period; the Gospels written in silver and gold on purple vellum, whose leaves are Scattered in London (Cott. MS., Titus C. xv.), Rome, Vienna, and its native home, Patmos; the frag- mentary Eusebian Canons written on gilt vellum and highly ornamented, the sole remains of some sumptuous volume (Cat, Anc. MSS., i. pl. 11); the Coislin Octateuch (Silvestre, pl. 65); the Genesis of Vienna, one of the very few early illustrated MSS. which have survived (Pal. Soc., pl. 178). Tischendorf has given facsimiles of others, but too insufficiently for the critical study of palzeography.

Reference may here be made to certain early bilingual Greco-Latin uncial MSS., written in the 6th and 7th ‘centuries, which, however, have rather to be studied apart, or in connexion with Latin paleography; for the Greek letters of these MSS. run more or less upon the lines of the Latin forms. The best-known of these examples are the Codex Bezz of the New Testament, at Cambridge (Pal. Soc., pls. 14, 15),and the Codex Claromontanus of the Pauline epistles, at Paris (Pal. Soc., pls. 63, 64), attributed to the 6th century; and the Laudian MS. of the Acts of the Apostles (Pal. Soc. pl. 80) of the 7th century. To these may be added the Harleian glossary (Cat. Anc. MLSS., i. pl. 13), also of the 7th century.

An offshoot of early Greek uncial writing on vellum is seen in the Mceso-Gothic alphabet which Ulfilas constructed for the use of his countrymen, in the 4th century, mainly from the Greek letters. Of the few extant remains of Gothic MSS. the oldest and most perfect is the Codex Argenteus of the Gospels, at Upsala, of the 6th century (Pal. Soc, pl. 118), written in characters which com- pare with purely written Greek MSS. of the same period. Other Gothic fragments appear in the sloping uncial hand seen in Greek MSS. of the 7th and following centuries.

About the year 600 Greek uncial writing passes into a new stage. We leave the period of the round and enter on that of the oval character. The letters €, 9, O, C, instead of being symmetrically formed on the lines of a circle, are made oval ; and other letters are laterally compressed into a narrow shape. In the 7th century also the writing begins to slope to the right, and accents are introduced and afterwards systematically applied. This slanting style of uncials continued in use through the 8th and 9th cen- turies, becoming heavier as time goes on. In this class of writing there is again the same dearth of dated MSS. as in the round uncial, to serve as standards for the assign- ment of dates. We have to reach the 9th century before finding a single dated MS. in this kind of writing. It is true that sloping Greek uncial writing is found in a few scattered notes and glosses in Syriac MSS. which bear actual dates in the 7th century, and they are so far useful as showing that this hand was firmly established at that time; but they do not afford sufficient. material in quan- tity to be of really practical use for comparison (see the tables of alphabets in Gardthausen’s Griech. Paldog.). Of more value are a few palimpsest fragments of the Elements of Euclid and of

Gospel Lectionaries which occur also in the Syriac collection in the British Museum, and are written in the 7th and 8th centuries. There is also in the Vatican a MS. (Reg. 886) of the Theodosian code, which can be assigned with fair accuracy to the close of the 7th century (Gardth., Gr. Pal., p. 158), which, however, being calligraphically written, retains some of the earlier rounder forms. This MS. may be taken asan example of transitional style. In the fragment of a mathematical treatise from Bobio, forming part of a MS. rewritten in the 8th century and assignable to the previous century, the slanting writing is fully developed. The formation

P Ab ae @en 2rrny

of the letters is good, and conveys the impression that the scribe was writing a hand quite natural to him.

lTpe TMPETIAN TCOTEPE VY eXH rp OC TMA €TEWwP 0 NEV Ep e c TOP

Greek Uncial (Mathemat. Treatise), 7th century. (rpwt[or] wlev] y[ap] ravt[os] orepeov oxnp[aros] Mpos Ts METEWPOY EvXEpedTEp—)

It should be also noticed that in this MS.—a secular one —there are numerous abbreviations (Wattenbach, Script, Gr. Specim.,! tab. 8). An important document of this time is also the fragment of papyrus in the Imperial Library at Vienna, which bears the signatures of bishops and others to the Acts of the council of Constantinople of 680. Some of the signatures are in slanting uncials (Wat- tenb., Seript. Gir. Specim., tabb. 12, 13 ; Gardth., Gr. Pal, tab. 1). Of the 8th century is the collection of hymns (Brit. Mus., Add. MS. 26113) written without breathings or accents (Cat. Anc. MSS., i. pl. 14). To the same cen- tury belongs the Codex Marcianus, the Venetian MS. of the Old Testament, which is marked with breathings and accents. The plate reproduced from this MS. (Wattenb., Script. Gr. Specim., tab. 9) contains in the second column a few lines written in round uncials, but in such a laboured style that nothing could more clearly prove the discontinu- ance of that form of writing as an ordinary hand. In the middle of the 9th century at length we find a MS. with a date in the Psalter of Bishop Uspensky of the year 862 (Wattenb., Script. Gir. Specim., tab.

10). A little later in date is the MS. of Gregory of Nazianzus, written between

867 and 886 (Silvestre, pl. 71); and at the end of the

9th or beginning of the 10th century stands a lectionary in the Harleian collection (Cat. Anc. MSS., i. pl. 17). But by this time minuscule writing was well estab- lished, and the use of the more inconvenient uncial was henceforth confined to church-service books. Owing to this limitation uncial writing now underwent a further calligraphic change. As the 10th century advances the sloping characters by degrees become more upright, and with this resumption of their old position they begin in the next century to cast off the compressed formation and again become rounder. All this is simply the result of calligraphic imitation. Service-books have always been the MSS. in particular on which finely-formed writing has been lavished ; and it was but natural that, when a style of writing fell into general disuse, its continuance, where it did continue, should become more and more traditional, and a work of copying rather than of writing. In the 10th century there are a few examples bearing dates. Facsimiles from two of them, the Curzon Lectionary of 980 and the Harleian Lectionary of 995, have been printed (Pal. Soc., pls. 154, 26, 27). The Bodleian commentary on the Psalter (D. 4, 1) is likewise of great paleeographic value, being written partly in uncials and partly in minus- cules of the middle of the 10th century (Gardth., Gr. Pal., p. 159, tab. 2, col. 4). This late form of uncial writing appears to have lasted to about the middle of the 12th century. From it was formed the Slavonic writing m use at the present day.

Under the head of late uncial writing must be classed a few bilingual Graco-Latin MSS. which have survived, written in a bastard kind of uncial in the west of Europe. This writing follows, wherever the shapes of the letters permit, the formation of corresponding Latin characters,— the purely Greek forms being imitated in a clumsy fashion. Such MSS. are the Codex Augiensis of Trinity

College, Cambridge, of the end of the 9th century (Pal.

1 Scripture Grece Specimina, Berlin, 1883.

Soc. pl 127), and the Psalter of St Nicholas of Cusa (pl. 128) and the Codex Sangallensis and Boernerianus of the 10th century (pl. 179). The same imitative characters are used in quotations of Greek words in Latin MSS. of the same periods.

Cursive-—The materials for the study of early Greek cursive writing are found in papyri discovered in Egypt and now deposited in the British Museum, the Louvre, the library of Leyden, and the Vatican. The earliest of these to which an exact date can be assigned are contained in the collection of documents of a certain Ptolemy, son of Glaucias, a Macedonian Greek, who became a recluse of the Serapeum at Memphis in 173-172 B.c., and collected or wrote these documents relating to himself and others connected with the service of the temple in the middle of the 2d century B.c. A series of these and other documents can be selected so as to give a fairly continuous course of cursive handwriting from that period for several centuries. The papyri are supplemented by the ostraka or potsherds on which were written the receipts for payment of taxes, &e., in Egypt under the Roman empire, and which have been found in large quantities. Lastly there are still extant a few specimens of Greek cursive writing on waxen tablets ; and in documents of the 6th and 7th cen- turies from Naples and Ravenna there are found subscrip- tions in Latin written in Greek characters (Marini, I papiri diplom., 90, 92, 121; Cod. Dipl. Cavensis, vol. ii, No. 250).

Facsimiles of the cursively written papyri are found scattered in different works, some dealing specially with the subject. By far the most plentiful and best executed are those which reproduce the specimens preserved at Paris in the atlas accompanying Wotices et Extraits des Manuscrits, vol, xviii.

In the earliest examples of cursive writing we find the uncial character in use, and, as has been already remarked, many of the specimens fluctuate between the more formal or set book-hand and the cursive. As time goes on the two styles diverge more widely. The uncial book-hand had, as we have seen, a disposition to become more formal ; cursive writing naturally has the opposite tendency, to become more flowing and disintegrated, the more exten- sively it isused. But the fact that there existed in Egypt in the 2d

century B.c. a cursive hand not differing very materially from a more formal contemporary hand seems to indicate that the two styles had diverged at no very long time before. It cannot, however, be supposed that a cursive form of Greek writing did not exist still earlier. The highly developed calligraphy of the earliest examples proves that Greek writing, as we there see it, was then no newly-discovered art. Judging by the analogy of later reforms, it is perhaps not going too far to conjecture that in the papyri under consideration we see the results of a calligraphic reform, in which a new model was perfected from earlier styles.

The cursive hand in its best style (e.g., WV. e¢ Extr., pls. XXVlil., xxix.) is very graceful and exact. This elegance 1s indeed characteristic of most of the writings of the 2d century B.c., and if a criterion can be established for assist- ing in the difficult problem of dating the early papyri, this simplicity and evenness of writing appears to be the best.

ppyeuaren oy, FOTOS] oprennrr Cyr fe aA Pe 0 . UM PETINN HITNNAS Greek Cursive, 163-162 B.c.

(up vpwv nu xpnuariCoueva evAaPeiay mpoopwuevwv nuwy Se)

Tn the course of successive centuries the cursive hand

becomes slacker and more sloping. There is more com- bination of letters, and a continual disintegration, so to say, of the forms of the letters themselves. Naturally the letters which undergo most change are those which lend themselves most readily to combination with others. Alpha, for example, a letter in constant use, and appearing in frequently recurring words (as xai), quickly altered its shape. In the earliest papyri it is seen more cursively written than most of its fellows. psilon, again, isa letter which soon took a second form. It was found easier to make the cross-bar in conjunction with the upper half of the curve of the letter than by a separate stroke after the formation of the full curve ©. The upper half of the letter naturally linked itself with the next following letter ; and the epsilon thus broken is found as early as a hundred years B.c., and runs through succeeding centuries. The tau was treated in the same way. In the specimen

given above it may be seen how the scribe first made half the horizontal stroke and attached it to the main limb by one action of the pen “, and then added the other half separately. By this device he avoided moving his hand far back. Next, to write the letter in one stroke, some- thing like a y, wasa natural development. The transforma- tion of pz follows on the same lines; and the n-shaped nu comes from the capital letter quickly written, just as the same shape was derived in the Roman alphabet. Such a form as the sickle-shaped rho } is one that would be expected; but the system of breaking-up is in no form better illustrated than in the case of delta. This letter, it might be thought, would, from its original shape, resist combination more than any other, yet even in the 2d century B.C. this combination is accomplished, and delta occasionally appears open on the right side and linked with the following letter 4

Minuscule—The gradual disintegration of the pure forms of the early uncials by this progressive development of more cursive characters led eventually to the formation of minuscule letters. By the beginning of the 6th cen- tury most of the letters which are afterwards recognized as minuscules in form had become individually developed. For example, the three letters B, H, and K, which in their capital or uncial shapes are quite distinct, had, at this period, acquired alternative shapes which are not very dissimilar from one another, and which by a careless reader may be confused. ‘The letter B in cursive writing lost its loops and was joined by a tag to the following letter—a process by which it became very like the Latin w. So the H readily passed through the formN to h.; and K became u. The A developed at the apex an elongation of the right side of the triangle, which, for junction with the next letter, was bent over, and hence resulted the small 6. The transformation of M through XY to p, and of N through V top, is obvious. This development, however, of minuscules from the old uncials was a work of time. The incipient changes in individual letters can be detected in papyri of the 2d and Ist centuries B.c.; but a fully developed minuscule hand, used as an independent form of writing, had no existence for some centuries to come. Arrived, however, at the end of the 6th century, we find a document of 600 a.p. given in facsimile in the Motices et Extracts (pl. xxiii, No. 20), the writing of which is so full of the smaller letters that the hand is practically a minuscule one. This document and six others which are extant formed part of the business papers ofone Aurelius Pachymius, a

dealer in purple dye, and, ranging in date from 592 to 616 a.D., are valuable material for elucidating the history of the Greek minuscule character. After an interval of eighty years another important document presents itself, in which the two styles of writing, the old uncial and the new minuscule, are seen on the same page. This is the frag-

mentary papyrus at Vienna, originally brought from Ravenna, which contains the subscriptions of bishops and others to the acts of the synod of Constantinople of 680 A.D. A facsimile was first printed by Lambecius (Comm. de Bibl. Czxsar., ed. Kollar, lib. viii. p. 863), and is repro- duced by Wattenbach (Script. Gr. Specim., tabb. 12, 13), whose latest opinion, however, with regard to the document is, that the writing is too uniform to be the actual subscrip- tions, but that it is the work of a scribe imitating to some extent (and certainly so far that he has repeated the uncials and minuscules as he found them) the peculiarities of the original. This appears to be really the case, but the document being a nearly contemporary copy continues to have considerable paleographical value. An analysis of the alphabets of this papyrus and of the one of 600 A.D. cited above is given by Gardthausen (G'r. Pal., taf. 4). The facsimile of the will of Abram, bishop of Harmonthis (Pal. Soc., pl. 107), may also be referred to as showing the mixture of large and small letters in the 8th century ; and in the single surviving specimen of Greek writing of the Imperial Chancery, containing portions of a letter addressed apparently to Pepin le Bref on the occasion of one of his wars against the Lombards in 753 or 756, appears a@ hand which approaches nearest to the set minuscule book-hand of the next century (Wattenb., Script. Gr. Specim., tabb. 14, 15).

Arrived at this matured stage of development, the minuscule character was in a condition to pass into the regular calligraphic form of writing. In the documents quoted above, it appears generally in a cursive form, and in this form it was undoubtedly also used for literary works. An example of such book-writing in the 8th century has been given in facsimile by Gardthausen (Beitr. zur griech. Pal., 1877, taf. 1). But in the 9th century the minuscule hand assumed a set form from which the writing of the succeeding centuries developed as from a new basis.

The establishment of this set hand is to be ascribed to the fact of the minuscule being now generally adopted as the recognized literary hand, in place of the larger and more inconvenient uncial, and its consequent introduction into vellum books. As we have already seen, uncial writing was influenced in the same way when applied to vellum. The firmer surface of the skin offered to the calligrapher a better working ground for the execution of his handiwork ; and thus may be explained the almost sudden appearance of the beautiful and regular writing which presents itself in the minuscule MSS. of the 9th century.

Greek MSS. written in minuscules have been classed as follows :—(1) codices vetustissimi, of the 9th century and to the middle of the 10th century; (2) vetusti, from the iniddle of the 10th to the middle of the 13th century ; (3) recentiores, from the middle of the 13th century to the fall of Constantinople, 1453 ; (4) novell, all after that date.

Of dated minuscule MSS. there is a not inconsiderable number scattered among the different libraries of Europe. Gardthausen (G'r, Pal., 344 sg.) gives a list of some thousand, ending at 1500 a.p. But, as might be expected, the majority belong to the later classes. Of the 9th century there are not ten which actually bear dates, and of these all but one belong to the latter half of the century. In the 10th century, however, the number rises to nearly fifty, in the 11th to more than a hundred.

_ In the period of codices vetustissimé the minuscule hand 1s distinguished by its simplicity and purity. The period has been well described as the classic age of minuscules. The letters are symmetrically formed ; the writing is com- pact and upright, or has even a slight tendency to slope to the left. In a word, the beauty of this class of minuscule

FALTASGh 2? Hh

writing is unsurpassed. But in addition to these general characteristics there are special distinctions which belone to it. The minuscule character is maintained intact, with. out intrusion of larger or uncial-formed letters. With its cessation as the ordinary literary hand the uncial character had not died out. We have seen that it wag still used for liturgical books. It likewise continued to survive in a modified or half-uncial form for scholia, rubrics

titles, and special purposes—as, for example, in the Bodleian Euclid (Pal. Soc., pl. 66)—in minuscule written M89. of the 9th and 10th centuries. These uses of the older character sufficed to keep it in remembrance, and it is therefore not a matter for surprise that some of its forms should reappear and commingle with the simple minuscule, This afterwards actually took place. But in the period now under consideration, when the minuscule had been cast into a new mould, and was, so to say, in the full vigour of youth, extraneous forms were rigorously excluded.

CAAN Got rusdou: haraaurakh ly h arwo Greek Minuscule (Euclid), 888 a.p.

(em To ABI emlredov dixa TunOhoerat OMN emmrédou’ dia ra avra 5} KL at] 7 do)

The breathings also of this class are rectangular, in unison with the careful and deliberate character of the writing ; and there is but slight, if any, separation of the words. In addition, as far as has hitherto been observed, the letters run above, or stand upon, the ruled lines, and do not depend from them as at a later period. The exact time at which this latter mechanical change took place cannot be named ; like other changes it would naturally establish itself by usage. But at least in the middle of the 10th century it seems to have been in use. In the Bodleian MS. of Basil’s homilies of 953 a.p. (Pal. Soc., pl. 82) the new method is followed; and if we are to accept the date of the 9th century ascribed to a MS. in the Ambrosian Library at Milan (Wattenb., Script. Gr. Specim., tab. 17), in which the ruled lines run above the writing, the practice was yet earlier. Certain scribal peculiarities, however, about the MS. make us hesitate to place it so early. In the Laurentian Herodotus (W. and V., Hxempla,! tab. 31), which belongs to the 10th century, sometimes the one, sometimes the other system is followed in different parts of the volume; and the same peculiarity happens in the MS. of Gregory of Nazianzus of 972 aD. in the British Museum (Pal. Soc., pl. 25 ; Haempla, tab. 7). The second half of the 10th century therefore appears to be a period of transition in this respect.

The earliest dated example of codices vetustissimi is the copy of the Gospels belonging to Bishop Uspensky, written in the year 835. A facsimile is given by Gardthausen (Bettrége) and repeated in the Hxvempla (tab. 1).

Better specimens have been photographed from the Oxford Euclid of 888 a.p. (Pal. Soc., pls. 65, 66; Hxempla, tab. 2) and from the Oxford Plato of 895 a.p. (Pal. Soc., pl. 81; Exempla, tab. 3). Sabas (Specim. Palzograph.) has also given two facsimiles from MSS. of 880 and 899. To this list may be added a facsimile of the Chronicles of Nicephorus in the British Museum, which falls within the 9th century (Cat. Ane. MSS., i. pl. 15), and also one of the Aristotle of Milan, which may be of the 9th or early 10th century (Pal. Soc., pl. 129; Wattenb., Seript. Gr. Specim., tab. 16). Of the year 905 is the Catena on Job at Venice (Zxempla, tab. 4); and other facsimiles of MSS. of this class are taken

1 Wattenbach and Von Velsen, Exempla Codicum Grecorum, litt. minusc. scriptorum, Heidelberg, 1878.

from a MS. of the Gospels in the British Museum (Cat. Ane. MSS., i. pl. 16), the Ambrosian Plutarch (Wattenb. Script. Gr. Specim., tab. 20), and the Ambrosian MS. of the Prophets (tab. 17), the last having,among other peculiarities, an unusual method of distinguishing the sigma at the end of a word by an added dot. These few facsimiles are all that are at present available for the purpose of studying minuscule book-writing of the first class.) They are, how- ever, all reproduced by photography, and serve sufficiently to show the character of writing which we are to look for in other, undated, examples of the same time.

After the middle of the 10th century we enter on the period of the codices vetusti, in which it will be seen that the writing becomes gradually less compact. The letters, so to say, open their ranks; and, from this circumstance aloue, MSS. of the second half of the century may generally be distinguished from those fifty years earlier. But altera- tions also take place in the shapes of the letters. Side by side with the purely minuscule forms those of the uncial begin to reappear, the cause of which innovation has already been explained. These uncial forms first show themselves at the end of the line, the point at which most changes first gained a footing, but by degrees they work back into the text, and at length become recognized

members of the minuscule characters. In the 11th and 12th centuries they are well established, and become more and more prominent by the large or stilted forms which they assume. The change, however, in the general character of the writing of this class of codices vetusti is very gradual, uniformity and evenness being well main- tained, especially in church books. Among the latter, a trilingual Psalter of the year 1153, in the British Museum (Pal. Soc., pl. 132), may be noted as an example of the older style of writing being adhered to at a comparatively late time. On the other hand, a lighterand more cursive kind of minuscule is found contemporaneously in MSS. of a secular nature. In thishand many of the classical MSS. of the 10th or 11th centuries are written, as the MS. of Aischylus and Sophocles, the Odyssey and the Apollonius Rhodius of the Laurentian Library at Florence, the Anthologia Palatina of Heidelberg and Paris, the Hippo- erates of Venice (Hxempla, tabb. 32-36, 38, 40), and the Aristophanes of Ravenna (Wattenb., Script. Gr. Specim., tab. 26). Ina facsimile from a Plutarch at Venice (Zz- empla, tab. 44), the scribe is seen to change from the formal to the more cursive hand. This style of writing is distin- guishable byits light and graceful character from the current writing into which the minuscule degenerated ata later time. The gradual rounding of the rectangular breathings takes place in this period. In the 11th century the smooth breathing, which would most readily lend itself to this modification, first appears in the new form. In the course of the 12th century both breathings have lost the old square shape; and about the same time contractions become more numerous, having been at first confined to the end of the line. Facsimiles from several MSS. of the codices vetusti and the following class have been published by the Palsographical Society and by Wattenbach and Von Velsen in their Hxempla.

When the period of codices recentiores commences, the

Wargo sri popes uemer=roys Wri: x . r) “ Ca [vd 2 No Use dpand co plows ocb rae iraubyairrgs Dare po Bou rarpOT yoUPde Harter Cod duar ne noc Greek Minuscule (Odyssey), 13th century. (} GAdvers B71 Tpov evinrnoas Toy GAHTHY

ds tpa pwvhoas opéaAas ZAAaBev adtap ddvoceds audivduou mpds yoova kabéCero SovaArxijos)

Greek minuscule hand undergoes extensive changes. The

contrast between MSS. of the 13th century and those of a hundred years earlier is very marked. In the later examples the hand is generally more straggling, there is a greater number of exaggerated forms of letters, and marks of contraction and accents are dashed on more freely. There is altogether a sense of greater activity and haste.

The increasing demand for books created a larger supply. Scholars now also copied MSS. for their own use, and hence greater freedom and more variety appear in the examples of this class, together with an increasing use of ligatures and contractions. The introduction of the coarse cotton paper into Constantinople in the middle of the 13th century likewise assisted to break up the formal minuscule hand. ‘To this rough material a rougher style of writing was suited. Through the 14th and 15th centuries the decline of the set minuscule rapidly advances. In the MSS. on cotton paper the writing becomes even more involved and intricate, marks of contraction and accents are combined with the letters in a single action of the pen, and the general result is the production of a thoroughly cursive hand. On vellum, however, the change was not so rapid. Church books were still ordinarily written on that material, which, as it became scarcer in the market (owing to the injury done to the trade by the competition of cotton paper), was supplied from ancient codices which lay ready to hand on the shelves of libraries. The result was an increasing number of palimpsests. In these vellum liturgical MSS. the more formal style of the minuscule was still maintained, and even on paper church services are found to be in the same style. In the 14th century there even appearsa partial Renaissance in the writing of church MSS., modelled to some extent on the lines of the writing of the 12th century. The resemblance, however, is only superficial; for no writer can entirely disguise the character of the writing of his own time. And lastly there was yet another check upon the absolute disintegration of the minuscule in the 15th century exercised by the professional seribes who worked in Italy. Here the rag-paper, which had never made its way in the East, was the only paper in use. Its smoother surfaceapproximated more nearly to that of vellum; and the minuscule hand as written by the Greek

scribes in Italy, whether on paper or vellum, re- verted again to the olderstyle. The influence of the Renais- sance is evident in many of the productions of the Italian Greeks which were written as specimens of calligraphy and served as models for the first Greek printing types.

The Greek minuscule hand had, then, by the end of the 15th century, become a cursive hand, from which the modern current hand is directly derived. We last saw the ancient cursive in use in the documents prior to the forma- tion of the set minuscule, and no doubt it continued in use concurrently with the book-hand. But, as the latter passed through the transformations which have been traced, and gradually assumed a more current style, it may not unreasonably be supposed that it absorbed the cursive hand of the period, and with it whatever elements of the old cursive hand may have survived.

LATIN WRITING.

In writing a history of Latin palzography, it will be first necessary, as with the Greek, to follow its development in two main divisions—the set book-hand and the cursive. Under the former head will be first ranged the capital, uncial, and half-uncial hands found in early MSS.; on the other side will be traced the course of Roman cursive writing in the waxen tablets and papyri. Next will be shown how this cursive hand was gradually reduced into forms of writing peculiar to different countries on the continent of Europe (reserving for separate examination

the development of the Irish and English schools), and finally how, in the revival of learning under Charlemagne, the reformed Caroline minuscule became the standard on which the writing of all the Western nations was finally modelled. .

Capital.—The oldest form of book-writing which we find employed in Latin MSS. is in capitals ; and of these there are two kinds—the square and the rustic. Square capitals may be defined as those which have their horizon- tal lines at right angles with the vertical strokes ; rustic letters are not less accurately formed, nor, as their title would seem to imply, are they

rough in character, but, being without the exact finish of the square letters, and being niore readily written, they have the appearance of greater simplicity. In capital writing the letters are not all of equal height ; F and L, and in the rustic sometimes others, as B and R, overtop the rest. In the rustic the forms are generally lighter and more slender, with short horizontal strokes more or less oblique and wavy. Both styles of capital writing were obviously borrowed from the lapidary alphabets employed under the empire. But it has been observed that scribes with a natural conservatism would perpetuate a style some time longer in books than it might be used in inscriptions. We should therefore be prepared to allow for this in ascribing a date to a capital ~~written MS., which might resemble an inscription older by a cen~~ tury or more. Rustic capitals, on account of their more convenient shape, came into more general use; and the greater number of the early MSS. in capitals which have survived are consequently found to be in this character.

In the Huempla Codicum Latinorum of Zangemeister and Wattenbach are collected specimens of capital writing, which are supplemented by other facsimiles issued by the Palzographical Society. The earliest application of the rustic hand appears in the papyrus rolls recovered from the ruins of Herculaneum (Zxempla, tabb. 1-3), which must necessarily be earlier than 79 a.p. In some of these speci- mens we see the letters written with a strong dashing Stroke ; in others they are mixed with cursive and uncial forms. In the vellum MSS. the writing in the earliest instances is of a perfectly exact character. MSS, of this class were no doubt always regarded as choice works, The large scale of the writing and the quantity of material required to produce a volume must have raised the cost to a height which would be within reach of only the wealthy. Such are the two famous copies of Virgil in the Vatican— the Codex Romanus, adorned with paintings, and the Codex Palatinus (Zxempla, tabb. 11, 12 3; Lal. Soe, plas 113-115), which may be even as early as the 3d or 4th century, for in the regularity of their letters they resemble very nearly the inscriptions of the lst and 2d century. There are no marks of punctuation by the first hand; nor are there enlarged initial letters.

TESTATVAQVEDEOSITEAVALSEADLAOELLACOGL
ISIAMITALOSTOSLISTALCAIERATOEDERA

Roman Rustic Capitals (Virgil), 3d or 4th century

(Testaturque deos iterum se ad proelia cogi Bis iam Italos hostis haec altera foedera)

In a third and younger MS. of Virgil, the Schede Vaticans (Lxempla, tab.13; Pal. Soe., pls. 116, 117), the imitation of the lettering of inscriptions is far less appar- ent, and the writing may be said to have here settled down into a good working book hand ; but, like the MSS. just noticed, this volume also was doubtless prepared for a special purpose, being adorned with well-finished paintings of classical style. In assigning dates to the earliest MSS. of capital-writing, one feels the greatest hesitation, none

FAD A @ GR 4.P H Y¥

of them bearing any internal evidence to assist the process, It is not indeed until the close of the 5th century that we reach firm ground,—the Medicean Virgil of Florence having in it sufficient proof of having been written before the year 494. The writing is in delicately-formed letters, rather more spaced out than in the earlier examples (Exempla, tab. 10; Pal. Soc., pl. 86). Another ancient MS. inrustie capitals is the Codex Bembinus of Terence (Exempla, tabb, 8, 9; Pal. Soc., pl. 135), a volume which is also of parti- cular interest on account of its marginal annotations, written in an early form of small hand. Among palimpsests the most notable is that of the Cicero In Verrem of the Vati- can (Hxempla, tab. 4).

Of MSS. in square capitals the examples are not 0 early as those in the rustic character. Portions of a MS, of Virgil in the square letter are preserved in the Vatican, and other leaves of the same are at Berlin (Zxempla, tab, 14). Each page, however, begins with a large coloured initial, a style of ornamentation which is never found in the very earliest MSS. The date assigned to this MS. is therefore the end of the 4th century. In very similar writ- ing, but not quite so exact, are some fragments of another MS. of Virgil in the library of St Gall, probably of a rather later time (Exempla, tab. 14a; Pal. Soc., pl. 208).

In the 6th century capital-writing enters on its period of decadence, and the examples of it become imitative. Of this period is the Paris Prudentius

(Exempla, tab. 15; Pal. Soe., pls. 29, 30) in rustic letters modelled on the old pattern of early inscriptions, but with a very different result from that obtained by the early scribes A compari- son of this volume with such MSS. as the Codex Romanus and the Codex Palatinus shows the later date of the Prudentius in its widespread writing and in certain incon- sistencies in forms. Of the 7th century is the Turin Sedulius (Zxempla, tab. 16),a MS. in which uncial writing also appears—the rough and misshapen letters being evidences of the cessation of capital writing as a hand in common use. The latest imitative example of an entire MS. in rustic capitals is in the Utrecht Psalter, written in triple columns and copied, to all appearance, from an ancient example, and illustrated with pen drawings. This MS. may be assigned to the beginning of the 9th century. If there were no other internal evidence of late date in the MS., the mixture of uncial letters with the capitals would decide it. In the Psalter of St Augustine's, Canterbury, in the Cottonian Library (Pal. Soc., pl. 19; Cat. Ane. MSS., ii. pls. 12, 13), some leaves at the beginning are written in this imitative style early in the 8th century; and again it is found in the Benedictional of Bishop Aithelwold (Pal. Soc., pl. 143) of the 10th century. In the sumptu ous MSS. of the Carlovingian school it was continually used ; and it survived for such purposes as titles and colo- phons, for some centuries, usually in a degenerate form of the rustic letters.

Uncial.—Uncial writing differs from the capital in adopting certain rounded forms, as &d€h Mm, and in having some of its letters rising above or falling below the line. The origin of the round letters may be traced in some of the Roman cursive characters as seen in the wall inscrip- tions of Pompeii and the waxen tablets. A calligraphic development of these slighter forms resulted in the firmly- drawn letters which are seen in the early vellum MSS. The most ancient of these may without much hesitation be assigned to the 4th century, and in them the writing is so well-established that one might well believe that it had been already practised for some generations. On the other hand, a calligraphic style may be stimulated into quick development by various causes,—caprice, fashion, or even the substitution of a different writing material, as vellum for papyrus. Uncial writing lasted as an ordinary book-

Patwo¢echk APH Y

hand into the 8th century, when it was supplanted by the reformed small writing of the Carlovingian school ; but, like the capitals, it survived for some time longer as an ornamental hand for special purposes.

The Exempla of Zangemeister and Wattenbach, so often quoted above, contains a series of facsimiles which illustrate the progress of uncial writing throughout the period of its eareer. The letter ® has been adopted by the editors as a test letter, in the earlier forms of which the last limb is not curved or turned in. The letter € also in its earlier and purer form has the cross stroke placed high. But, as in every style of writing, when once developed, the earliest examples are the best, being written with a free hand and natural stroke.

The Gospels of Vercelli (Hxempla, tab. 20), said to have been written by the hand of Eusebius himself, and which may indeed be of his time, is one of the most ancient uncial MSS. Its narrow columns and pure forms of letters have the stamp of antiquity. To the 4th century also is assigned the palimpsest Cicero De Republica in the Vatican

(Exempla, tab. 17; Pal. Soc., pl. 160), a MS. written in

fine large characters of the best type; and a very ancient fragment of a commentary on an ante-Hieronymian text, in three columns, has also survived at Fulda (Zuempla, tab. 21). Among the uncial MSS. of the 5th century of which good photographic facsimiles are available are the two famous codices of Livy, at Vienna and Paris (Zxempla, tabs. 18,19; Pal. Soc., pls. 31, 32, 183), and the Gaius of Verona (Hxempla, tab. 24). The latter MS. is also of special interest, as it- contains abbreviations and has cer- tain secondary forms amongst its letters. To distinguish between uncial MSS. of the 5th and 6th centuries is not easy, for the character of the writing changes but little, and there is no sign of weakness or wavering. It may, however, be noticed that in MSS. which are assigned to the latter century there is rather less compactness, and occasionally, as the century advances, there is a slight tendency to artificiality.

JammiBiillxquaeicnad RANUASAECULARISBO
NAOPINAIUROSTENDX”

Latin Uncial, 5th or 6th century. (Iam tibi illa quae igno rantia saecularis bo na opinatur ostendam)

When the 7th century is reached there is every evidence that uncial writing has entered on a new stage. The letters are more roughly and carelessly formed, and the compactness of the earlier style is altogether wanting. From this time down to the age of Charlemagne there is a continual deterioration, the writing of the 8th century being altogether misshapen. A more exact but imitative hand was, however, at the same time employed, when occasion required, for the production of calligraphic MSS., such as liturgical books. Under the encouragement given by Charlemagne to such works, splendid uncial volumes Were written in ornamental style, often in gold, several of which have survived to this day (Cat. Anc. MSS., ii. pls. 89-41),

Half-Uncial.—A very interesting style of writing, and for the study of the development of the set minuscule hand of later periods a most important one, is that to which the name of half-uncial has been given. It lies between cursive and uncial, and partakes of the character of both. As early apparently as the 4th century, a set style of small Writing, partly following in formation the characters found ithe Roman cursive writing of the Ravenna and other

documents on papyrus, and in some of its letters betraying an uncial origin, is found in glosses or marginal notes of early MSS. The limited space into which the annotations had to be compressed compelled the writer to abandon the free style of the ordinary cursive hand, and at the same time a mere reduction of capital or uncial letters would have been too tedious a process to adopt. A middle course was followed, and a neat minute hand, half-set half-current, was used,—just as in the present day it is no uncommon practice to write a so-called printing hand for similar purposes. The earliest example of this hand appears to be in the marginal directions for the painter in the Quedlinburg fragment of an illustrated early Italic version of the Bible (see Schum in Theolog. Studien u. Kritiken, 1876). In these notes appear 6, d, m, n as fully developed minuscules ; 7 is represented by M2, half way between the uncial and the minuscule, and sis’. Again in the notes by the Arian bishop Maximin (Lxempla, tab. 22), of

the 5th century, the same style of writing appears,—with some variations, however, in individual letters, as in g and 7, which come near to minuscule shapes. In the Codex Bembinus of Terence (Zxempla, tab. 8) there are many glosses giving ample opportunity for studying the hand, which is here in a small and well-formed character. From this specimen, and also from the notes inthe Itala of Fulda (Zxempla, tab. 21), a complete alphabet of set minuscule letters may be selected, as written probably early in the 6th century. Rather later and more uncial in form are the glosses in the Medicean Virgil (Zxempla, tab. 10).

This set form of small writing, then, was, as it appears from the examples quoted above and from many others (see the enumeration in Wattenbach, Hinlettung zur Lat. Palxog., p. 12), in pretty general use for the purposes of annotation ; and it was but natural that it should also come to be adopted in MSS. for the text itself. The intro- duction into the text of uncial-written MSS., at an early date, of forms of letters borrowed from cursive writing is illustrated by the Verona Gaius (Hxempla, tab. 24) of the 5th century, in which, besides the ordinary uncial shapes, d is also found as a minuscule, 7 as the transitional N, and sas the tall letter f. Again, in the Florentine Pandects of the 6th century, one of the scribes writes a hand which contains a large admixture of minuscule forms (Zxempla, tab. 54). And some fragments of a Greeco-Latin glossary on papyrus, of which facsimiles have been published (Com- ment. Soc. Gottingen. iv., 1820, p. 156; Rhein. Museum, v., 1837, p. 301), likewise contain, as secondary forms of uncial m,7, ands: 7N,M, f. From these few instances it is seen that in uncial MSS. of a secular nature, as in works relating to law and grammar, the scribe did not feel himself restricted to a uniform use of the larger letters, as he would be in producing a,church book or calligraphic MS. The adaptation then of a set small hand, very similar to, and in some particulars identical with, the annotating hand above referred to, is not surprising. The greater convenience of the small hand in comparison with the larger uncial is obvious, and the element of calligraphy which was infused into it gave it a vitality and status asa recognized book-hand. ‘Thus we have a series of MSS., dating from the end of the 5th century, which are classed as examples of half-uncial writing, and which appear to have been written in Italy and France. The MS. of the Fasti Con- sulares, at Verona, brought down to 494 a.p. (Exempla, tab. 30), is in this hand, but the earliest MS. of this class to

which a more approximate date can be given is the Hilary of St Peter's at Rome, which was written in or before the year 509 or 510 (Huempla, tab. 52; Pal. Soc., pl. 136); the next is the Sulpicius Severus of Verona, of 517 a.p. (Exempla, tab. 32); and of the year 569 is a beautifully-written MS. at Monte Cassino containing a

Biblical commentary (Zxempla, tab. 3). Other examples, of which good facsimiles may be consulted are the Corbie MS. of Canons, at Paris (Hxempla, tabb. 41, 42), and the St Severianus at Milan (Pal. Soc., pls. 161, 162), of the 6th century ; and the Cologne MS. of Canons (Exempla, tab. 44), and the Josephus (Pal. Soc., pl. 138) and St Ambrose (Pal. Soc., pl. 187) of Milan, of the 6th or 7th century.

incopimanumiNNocene:

clm NON [Lo panics UTIONGNUNEYOMNIT Te 1 Latin Half-Uncial, 509-510 A.D.

(episcopi manum innocente{m]— [lin]Jguam non ad falsiloquium coeg[isti] — nationem anterioris sententi[se]—)

The influence which this style of hand had upon the minuscule book-writing of the 7th and 8th centuries may be traced in greater or less degree in the Continental MSS. of that period. It appears at a comparatively late time with much of its old form in the Berlin MS. of Gregory's Moralia (Arndt, Schrifttaf., 5), attributed to the 8th century. After the Caroline reform an ornamental kind of half-uncial, evidently copied from this hand, was used for particular purposes in minuscule MSS. (Pad. Soc., pl. 239).

Curswve.—For examples of Roman cursive writing we are able to go as far back as the Ist century of the Christian era. During the excavations at Pompeii in July 1875, there was discovered in the house of L. Cacilius Jucundus a box containing as many as one hundred and twenty-seven libelli or waxen tablets consisting of per- scriptiones and other deeds connected

with sales by auction and receipts for payment of taxes (Atti della R. Accademia det Lincet, ser. ii., vol. iii. pt. 3, 1875-76, pp. 150-230). Other waxen tablets, twenty-five in number, some bearing dates ranging from 131 to 167 a.p., were found in the ancient mining works in the neighbourhood of Alburnus Major (the modern Verespatak) in Dacia, at different times between 1786 and 1855. In 1840 Massmann published such as had at that time been discovered (Lzbellus aurarius) ; and the whole collection is given in the Corpus Inscr. Lat. of the Berlin Academy, vol. iii. pt. 2 (1873).

Although the waxen tablets prepared for the reception of legal instruments followed the system of the bronze diptychs on which were inscribed the privileges granted to veteran soldiers under the empire, in so far that they contained the deed witnessed and sealed, and also its duplicate copy open to inspection, yet they differed in being generally triptychs. Wood was a cheaper material than bronze, and the third tablet gave protection to the seals. These triptychs then were libelli of three tablets of wood, cleft from one piece and fastened together, like the leaves of a book, by strings passed through two holes pierced near the edge. In the case of the Pompeian libelli one side of each tablet was sunk within a frame, and the hollowed space was coated with wax, in such a way that, of the six sides or pages, Nos, 2, 3, 5 were waxen, while 1, 4, 6 presented a wooden surface. ‘The first and sixth sides were not used, but served as the outside of the libellus ; on 2 and 3 was inscribed the deed, and on 4 the names of the witnesses were written in ink and their seals were added in a groove cut down the centre, the deed being closed against inspection by means of a string of twisted threads which passed through two holes, one at the head and the other at the foot of the groove, round the two tablets and under the wax of the seals which thus secured it. An abstract or copy of the deed was written on the fifth page. The arrangement of the Dacian libedl

PAU AVEDA PH X

differed in this respect that page 4 was also waxen, and that the copy of the deed was commenced on that page in the space on the left of the groove, that on the right being reserved for the names of the witnesses. In one instance (Corp. Inscr. Lat., iii. 2, p. 938) the seals and fastening threads still remain.

In these tablets some of the writing contains more capital letters, and is not 80 cursive as the rest; but here it is the cursive hand which has to be considered. This writing in both the Pompeian and Dacian tablets is very similar, differing only slightly in some of the letters; and both resemble the more cursive graffiti found on the walls of Pompeii.

Gay . fe ite en) Se ss aa berks tei NY GNI

Roman Cursive (Graffiti), 1st century.

(censio est nam noster magna habet pecuni[am]).

es . . ; Bre t O$G Proautnn Cssytems Aone ‘“< Dos ™ perf ste TYG rage C wre Roman Cursive (Dacian Tablet), 167 a.p. (descriptum et recognitum factum ex libello—

erat Alb[urno] maiori ad statione Resculi in quo scri— id quod i{nfra] s[criptum] est)

It is of particular importance to notice that, when examining the alphabet of this early Roman cursive hand, we find (as we found in the early Greek cursive) the first beginnings of minuscule writing. The slurring of the strokes, whereby the bows of the capital letters were lost and their more exact forms modified, led the way to the gradual development of the small letters, which, as will be afterwards seen, must have formed a distinct alphabet at an early time. With regard to the particular forms of letters employed in the waxen tablets, compare the tables in Corp. Inscr. Lat., vols. iii, iv. The letter A is formed by a main stroke supporting an oblique cross-stroke above it; similarly P and R, having lost their bows, and F throwing away its bar, are formed by two strokes placed in relatively the same positions but varying in their curves. The main stroke of B dwindles to a slight curve, and the two bows are transformed into a long bent stroke so that the letter takes the shape of a stilted a or of a d. The D is chiefly like the uncial»; the E is generally represented by the old form || found in inscriptions and in the Faliscan alphabet. In the modified form of G the first outline of the flat-headed g of later times appears; H, by losing half its second upright limb in the haste of writing, comes near to being the small 2, In the Pompeian tablets M has the four-stroke form |jj, as in the graffiti; in the Dacian tablets it is a rustic capital, sometimes almost an uncial m. The hastily written O is formed by two strokes, almost like a. As to the general character of the writing, it is close and compressed, and has an inclination to the left. There is also much combination or linking together of letters (Corp. Inscr. Lat., iii. tab. A). These peculiarities may, in some measure, be ascribed to the material and to the confined space at the command of the writer. The same character of cursive writing has also been found on a few tiles and potsherds inscribed with

———

PAL MOGRAPH Y

alphabets or short sentences—the exercises of children at school (Corp. Inser. Lat., iti. p. 962).

‘But unfortunately material for the study of this hand fails us for some time after the period of the Dacian tablets, and whole centuries have to be passed before we fnd examples. At length some very interesting fragments of papyri, assigned to the 5th century, disclose the official cursive hand of the Roman chancery of that time, in which are seen the same characters, with certain differences and modifications, as are employed in the waxen tablets. They contain portions of two rescripts addressed to Egyptian officials, and are gaid to have been found at Phile and Elephantine. Both documents are in the same hand; and the fragments are divided between the libraries of Paris and Leyden. For a long time the writing remained undeciphered, and Champollion-Figeac, while publishing a facsimile (Chartes ec MSS. sur papyrus, 1840, pl. 14), had to confess that he was unable to read it. Massmann, however, with the experience gained in his work upon the waxen tablets, succeeded without much difficulty in reading the fragment at Leyden (Libellus aurarius, p. 147), and was followed by M. de Wailly, who published the whole of the fragments (Mém. de U’Institut, xv., 1842, p. 399). Later, Mommsen and Jaffé have dealt with the text of the documents (Jahrbuch des. gem. deut. Rechts, vi., 1863, p. 398), and compared in a table the forms of the letters with those of the Dacian tablets.

Anonholdaabdor- phlrarbaunuia rir

Roman Cursive (Imperial Chancery), 5th century. (portionem ipsi debitam resarcire nec ullum precatorem ex instrumento)

The characters aro large, the line of writing being about three-fourths of an inch deep, and the heads and tails of the long letters are flourished; but the even slope of the strokes imparts to the writing a certain uniform and graceful appearance. As to the actual shapes of the letters, as will be seen from the reduced facsimile here given, there may be recognized in many of them only a more current form of those which have been described above. The A and R may be distinguished by noticing the different angle at which the top strokes are applied ; the B, to suit the requirements of the more current style, is no longer the closed d-shaped letter of the tablets, but is open at the bow and more nearly resembles a reversed b; the tall letters /, 4, /, and long s have developed loops ; O and v-shaped U are very small, and written high in the line. The letters which seem to differ essentially from

those of the tablets are E, M, N. The first of these is probably explained correctly by Jaffé as a development of the earlier || quickly written and looped. The M and N have been compared with the minuscule forms of the Greek mu and nu, as though the latter had been adopted ; but they may with better reason be explained as cursive forms of the Latin capitals M and N.

That this hand should have retained so much of the older formation of the Roman cursive is no doubt to be attributed to the fact of its being an official style of writ- ing which would conform to tradition. To find a more independent development we turn to the documents on papyrus from Ravenna, Naples, and other places in Italy which date from the 5th century and are written in a looser and more straggling hand. Examples of this hand will be found in largest numbers in Marini's work specially

treating of these documents (I Papiri Diplomatici), and also in the publications of Mabillon (De Re Diplomatica) Champollion-Figeac (Chartes et MSS. sur papyrus), Mass- mann (Urkunden in Neapel und Arezzo), Gloria (Paleo- grajia), as well as in Facs. of Ancient Charters in the British Museum, part iv., 1878, Nos. 45, 46, and in the Facsimiles of the Paleographical Society. The development that is found in these papyri of minuscule forms almost complete shows how great a change must have been at work during the three centuries which intervene between the date of the Dacian tablets and that of these documents; and the variety of shape which certain of them assume in combina- tion with other letters proves that the scribes were well practised in the hand.

f / bad oo ater Ww

Roman Cursive (Ravenna), 572 A.D. (huius splendedissimae urbis)

The letter a has now lost all trace of the capital; it is the open u-shaped minuscule, developed from the looped uncial (Qc) ; the 6, throwing off the loop or curve on the left which gave it the appearance of d, has developed one on the right, and appears in the form familiar in modern writing ; minuscule m, , and wu are fully formed (the last never joining a following letter, and thus always dis- tinguishable from a); p, g, and r approach to the

long minuscules, and s, having acquired an incipient tag, has taken the form Y which it keeps long after.

This form of writing was widely used, and was not con- fined to legal documents. It is found in grammatical works, as in the second hand of the palimpsest MS. of Licinianus (Cat. Anc. MSS., pt. ii, pls. 1, 2) of the 6th century, and in such volumes as the Josephus of the Ambrosian Library of the 7th century (Pal. Soc., pl. 59), and in the St Avitus of the 6th century and other MSS. written in France and referred to below under the head of Merovingian writing. It is indeed only natural to suppose that this, the most convenient, because cursive, hand, should have been employed for ordinary books which were in daily use. That so few of such books should have survived is no doubt owing to the destruction of the greater number by the wear and tear to which they were subjected.

NaTIONAL WRITING.

Roman writing—capital, uncial, half-uncial, and cursive —became known to the Western nations, and in different ways played the principal part in the formation of the national styles of writing. In Ireland and England it was adopted under certain restrictions. On the Continent it had a wider range; and from it were constructed the three kinds of writing which in many characteristics closely resembled one another, and which, practised in Italy, Spain, and Frankland, are known by the names of Lombardic, Visigothic, and Merovingian. The basis of all three was the Roman cursive, as is very evident in the national charters which have survived ; and bya certain admixture of uncial and half-uncial forms with the cursive were pro- duced the set book-hands of those countries.

Lombardic.—In Italy the cursive hand of the Ravenna documents, which have been already referred to, continued in use and became more and more intricate and difficult to read. Facsimiles have been reproduced from Milanese documents of the 8th and 9th century (Sickel, Monwmenta

Graphaca, fase. 1), the earlier examples, down to the middle of the 9th century, being in the large straggling character of their prototypes (see also

Cod. Dipl. Cavensis, vol. i.; and Silvestre, i., pl. 137). The illegible scrawl into which this hand finally degenerated in notarial instruments of southern Italy was at length suppressed by order of Frederick II. (1210-50 a.p.). But at La Cava and Monte Cassino was especially cultivated the Lombardic hand, properly so called. There is much resemblance between this hand in its earlier stages and that which appears in certain MSS. written in France at the same period. Both starting from the same basis, it is not surprising that a likeness should be maintained for some time. Hence there is often no small difficulty in deciding whether a particular MS. is to be classed as Lombardic or Merovingian. If all MSS. written in the Merovingian kingdom are to be styled Merovingian, there are different styles which must be included under that title. A form of Frankish writing which is marked by a certain solidity and evenness, and thus more nearly resembles the Lombardic writing of Italy, is often classed with the latter. The Lombardic book-hand as written in Italy is seen in facsimile in Hxempla Codd. Lat. (tabb. 29, 30), Silvestre (pl. 136), Pal. Soc. (pl. 92). As developed in the southern monasteries referred to above, it took, in the 9th century, a very exact and uniform shape, as seen in the Bible of La Cava (Silv., pl. 141). From this date the attention which it received as a calligraphic form of writing, accompanied with accessory ornamentation of initial letters, brought it to a high state of perfection in the 11th century, when by the peculiar treatment of the letters, they assume that strong contrast of light and heavy strokes which when exaggerated, as it finally became, received the name of broken Lombardic.

Seng Yt St quocfeppram Gt Exe nox wer Ref lannnocbrany~

Broken Lombardic Writing, 12th century.

([H]ec nox est de qua scriptum est Et nox ut dies illuminabitur)

This style of hand lasted tothe 13th century. The fullest collection of examples is to be found in facsimile in the Bibliotheca Casinensis (1873, &c.). For other specimens see Silvestre, pls. 142-146, 150; Arndt, Schrifitaf., 7, 32; Pal. Soc., pl. 146.

Papal Documents.—A form of writing practised in Italy, but standing apart, is that found in papal documents. It has been erroneously named littera

Beneventana. Speci- mens exist dating from the latter part of the 8th century. In the earliest examples it appears on a large scale, and has rounded forms and sweeping strokes of a very bold character. Derived from the official Roman hand, it has certain letters peculiar to itself, such as the letter a made almost like a Greek w, ¢ in the form of a loop, and e as a circle with a knot at the top.

This hand- may be followed in examples from 788 a.p. through the 9th century (acs. de Chartes et Diplomes, 1866 ; Gloria, Palzog., tab. 22; Ch. Figeac, Chartes et doc. sur Papyrus, i-xii.; Letronne, Diplom. Merov. Mtat., pl. 48 ; Silvestre, pls. 138, 139). In a bull of Silvester II., dated in 999 (Bibl. de Ec. des Chartes, vol. XXxvii.), we find the hand becoming less round; and at the end of the next century, under Urban IL., in 1097 (Mabillon, De Re Dipl., suppl., p. 115) and 1098 (Sickel, Mon. Graph., v. 4), it is in a curious angular style, which, however, then disappears. During the 11th and 12th centuries the imperial chancery hand was also used for papal documents,

and was in turn displaced by the exact and calligraphic, papal Italian hand of the later Middle Ages. The later invention of the 16th century, the so-called littera Saney, Petri, which seems to have been written to bagfile the uninitiated, need only be referred to.

Lessepreocondll wde ct a

Bull of Pope John VIII. (much reduced), 876 a.p.

(Dei genetricis mariae filib— haec igitur omnia quae huius praecepti)

Visigothic.—The Visigothic writing of Spain ran a course of development not unlike that of the other national hands ; and a series of photographic facsimiles lately pub- lished (Exempla Scripture Visigotice, 1883) enables us to mark the different periods of change. In the cursive hand attributed to the 7th century (Zz., 2, 3), the Roman cursive has undergone little change in form; but another century developed a most distinctive character (Zx., 4,5). In the 8th century appears the set book-hand in an even and not difficult character, marked by breadth of style and a good firm stroke. This style is maintained through the 9th century with little change, except that there is a

growing tendency to calligraphy. In the 10th century the writing deteriorates ; the letters are not so uniform, and, when calligraphically written, are generally thinner in stroke, The same changes which are discernible in all the hand- writings of western Europe in the 11th century are also to be traced in the Visigothic hand,—particularly as regards the rather rigid character which it assumes. It continued in use down to the beginning of the 12th century. Perhaps the most characteristic letter of the book-hand is the qshaped g. The following specimens illustrate the Visigothic as written in a large heavy hand of the 9th century (Cat. Anc. MSS., ii., pl. 37), and in a calligraphic example of 1109 (Pal. Soc., pl. 48).

abiduleddin epiox motum Cardinia _

aropsnim parrecan :

Visigothic Minuscules, 9th century. (tibi dulcedine proxi niorum et dignita te operum perfectorum)

pactum a pifiarum ‘ efionstuptlnts

gueganicab?e anpm¢naw denoenique

Lake ufquequo ffucair epldbcnw Visigothic Minuscules, 1109 a.p.

(patrum et profeéarum et sanctorwm et apostolorum que gemitibus et tormenta desiderii sui habuit usquequo fructum ex plebe sua)

PALMHMOGRAPHY

Merovingian.—The writing of the Frankish empire, to wider range than the other national hands. It had a long career both for diplomatic and literary purposes. In this writing, as it appears in documents, we see that the Roman cursive is subjected to a lateral pressure, so that the letters and tails are exaggerated to inordinate length.

eadtrpmtiy Dae oye.

birt eaporys hig (dedit in respunsis eo quod ipsa— de annus triginta et uno inter ipso— —ondam semper tenuerant et possiderant si—)

Facsimiles of this hand, as used in the royal and works; but a complete course of Merovingian diplomatic writing may be best studied in Letronne's Diplomata, and in the Kaiserurkunden of Profs. Sybel and Sickel now in course of publication. In the earliest documents, com- of the 8th century, the character is large and at first not so intricate as it becomes later in this period. The writing then grows into a more regular form, and in the 9th century a small hand is established, which, however, still direct course of this chancery hand may then be followed in the imperial documents, which from the second half of the 9th century are written in a hand more set and evidently influenced by the Caroline minuscule. This form already referred to, continued in force, subject, however, to the varying changes which affected it in common with other hands, into the 12th century. Its influence was felt as well in France as in Germany and Italy ; and certain the Normans brought with them into England.

The book-hand immediately derived from the early Merovingian diplomatic hand is seen in MSS. of the 7th and 8th centuries in a very neatly written but not very Schrifttaf., 28).

¢ dem gp cfinumfos selec fy rcfiurcmst oc ae Sespeudpseypsenct len gus ceppgnrcaosmtbfuspesfeen

which the title of Merovingian has been applied, had a received a curiously cramped appearance, while the heads Merovingian Cursive, 679-680 A.D. imperial chanceries, are to be found scattered in various mencing in the 7th century and continuing to the middle retains the exaggerated heads and tails of letters. The of writing, still accompanied by the lengthened strokes of its characteristics also appear in the court-hand which easy hand (Cat. Anc. MSS., ii, pls. 29, 30; Arndt, Merovingian Writing, 7th century.

(—dam intra sinum sancéfae eclesiae quasi uicinos ad— positos increpant. Saepe uero arrogantes— —dem quam tenent arrogantiam se fugire osten—)

But other varieties of the literary hand as written in France are seen to be more closely allied to the Roman cursive. The earliest example is found in the papyrus fragments of writings of St Avitus and St Augustine, of the 6th century (Etudes paléogr. sur des Papyrus du VI" Siecle, Geneva, 1866); and other later MSS. by their

diversity of writing show a development independent of the cursive hand of the Merovingian charters. It is among these MSS. that those examples already referred to occur which more nearly resemble the Lombardic type.

uniticatin fu tc frucfirteaecnte das hy fabyarendte ant bab 7

ltuem félunem fund tin elsumUnteum iF

Franco-Lombardic Writing, 8th century. (propter unitatem salua propriaetate na— non sub una substantia conuenientes, neque— —itam sed unum eundem filium. Unicum deum)

The uncial and half-uncial hands had also their influence in the evolution of these Merovingian book-hands; and the mixture of so many different forms accounts for the variety to be found in the examples of the 7th and 8th centuries. In the Notice sur un MS. Mérovingien Eugyppus (1875) and the Notice sur un MS. Méro- vingien de la Bibl. Epinal (1878), Delisle has given many valuable facsimiles in illustration of the different hands in these two MSS. of the early part of the 8th century. See also Hxempla Codd. Lat. (tab. 57), and autotypes in Cat. Anc. MSS. ii. There was, however, through all this period a general progress towards a settled minuscule writing which only required a master-hand to fix it in a calligraphic form.

Irish Writing.—The early history of the paleography of the British Isles stands apart from that of the Con- tinental schools. It is evident that the civilization and learning which accompanied the establishment of an ancient church in Ireland could not exist without a written litera- ture. The Roman missionaries would certainly in the first place have imported copies of the Gospels and other books, and it cannot be doubted that through intercourse with England the Irish would obtain Continental MSS. in sufficient numbers to serve as models for their scribes. From geographical and political conditions, however, no continuous intimacy with foretgn countries was possible ; and we are consequently prepared to find a form of writing borrowed in the first instance from a foreign school, but developed under an independent national system.

In Ireland we have an instance how conservative writing may become, and how it will hand on old forms of letters from one generation to another when there is no exterior influence to act upon it. After once obtaining its models, the Irish school of writing was left to work out its own ideas, and continued to follow one direct line for centuries. The English conquest had no effect upon the national hand- writing. Both peoples pursued their own course. In MSS. in the Irish language the Irish character of writing was naturally employed ; and the liturgical books produced in Irish monasteries by Irish monks were written in the same way. The grants and other deeds of the English settlers were, on the other hand, drawn up by English scribes in their national writing. The Irish handwriting, then, went on in its even uninterrupted course ; and its consequent unchanging form makes it so difficult a matter to assign dates to Irish MSS. A stereotyped form of letters is transmitted for so long that there is more risk of giving an early date to a late Irish MS., when written with care, than to one written, under similar conditions, in the English or Continental schools. And nowhere is it more necessary to look for the changes, slight though they be, which may indicate an advance.

The early Irish handwriting is of two classes—the round and the pointed. The round hand is found in the earliest examples; the pointed hand, which also was

developed at an early period, became the general hand of the country, and survives in the native writing of the present day. Of the earliest surviving MSS. written in Ireland none are found to be in pure uncial letters. That uncial MSS. were introduced into the country by the

early missionaries can hardly be doubted, if we consider that that character was so commonly employed as a book- hand, and especially for sacred texts. Nor isit impossible that Irish scribes may have practised this hand. The copy of the Gospels in uncials, found in the tomb of St Kilian, and preserved at Wiirzburg, has been quoted as an instance of Irish uncial. The writing, however, is the ordinary uncial, and bears no marks of Irish nationality (Zxempla, tab. 58). The most ancient examples are in half-uncial letters, so similar in character to the half-uncial MSS. of Italy and

France, noticed above, that there can be no hesitation in deriving the Irish from the Roman writing. We have only to compare the Irish MSS. of the round type with the Continental MSS. to be convinced of the identity of their styles of writing. There are unfortu- nately no means of ascertaining the exact period when this style of hand was first adopted in Ireland. Among the very earliest surviving examples none bears a fixed date ; and it is impossible to accept the traditional ascription of certain of them to particular saints of Ireland, as St Patrick and St Columba. Such traditions are notoriously unstable ground upon which to take up a position. But an examination of certain examples will enable the palao- grapher to arrive at certain conclusions. In Trinity College, Dublin, is preserved a fragmentary copy of the Gospels (Wat. MSS. Ireland, i., pl. ii.) vaguely assigned to a period from the 5th to the 7th century, and written in a round half-uncial hand closely resembling the Continental hand, but bearing the general impress of its Trish origin. This MS. may perhaps be of the early part of the 7th century.

adiledteimiaurrerponda&r hinnlnmola@aurerre lawor Cre e&piterwcubiculom

Irish Half-uncial Writing, 7th century.

(ad ille deintus respondens [dicit, No]li mihi molestus esse, iam osti[um clausum] est et pueri in cubiculo mecum [sunt])

Again, the Psalter (Wat. MSS. Ireland, i., pls. iii., iv.) traditionally ascribed to St Columba (ob. 597), and perhaps of the 7th century, is a calligraphic specimen of the same kind of writing, The earliest examples of the Continental half-uncial date back, as has been seen above, to the end of the 5th or beginning of the 6th century. Now the likeness between the earliest foreign and Irish MSS. forbids us to assume anything like collateral descent from a common and remote stock. Two different national hands, although derived from the same source, would not independently develop in the same way, and it may accordingly be granted that the point of contact, or the period at which the Irish scribes copied and adopted the Roman half-uncial, was not very long, comparatively, before the date of the now earliest surviving examples. This would take us back at least to the 6th century, in which period there is sufficient evidence of literary activity in Ireland. The

beautiful Irish calligraphy, ornamented with designs of marvellous intricacy and_ brilliant colouring, which is seen in full vigour at the end of the 7th century, indicates no small amount of labour bestowed upon the cultivation of writing as an ornamental art. It is indeed surprising that such excellence was so quickly developed. The Book of Kells has been justly acknowledged as the culminating example of Irish calligraphy (Nat. MSS. Irel.,

i., pls. vii.—xvii.; Pal. Soc., pls. 55, 56). The text is written in the large solid half-uncial hand which is again seen jy the Gospels of St Chad at Lichfield (Pal. Soc., pls. 20, 21, 35), and, in a smaller form, in the English-written Lindisfarne Gospels (see below). Having arrived at the calligraphic excellence just referred to, the round hand appears to have been soon afterwards superseded, for gene- ral use, by the pointed ; for the character of the large half- uncial writing of the Gospels of MacRegol, of about the year 800 (Wat. MSS. Irel., i., pls. xxii.-xxiv. ; Pal. Soc., pls. 90, 91), shows a very great deterioration from the vigorous writing of the Book of Kells, indicative of want of practice.

Traces of the existence of the pointed hand are early, It is found in a fully developed stage in the Book of Kells itself (Pal. Soc., pl. 88). This form of writing, which may be termed the cursive hand of Ireland, differs in its origin from the national cursive hands of the Continent, In the latter the old Roman cursive has been shown to be the foundation. The Irish pointed hand, on the contrary, had nothing to do with the Roman cursive, but was simply a modification of the round hand, using the same forms of letters, but subjecting them to a lateral compression and drawing their limbs into points or hair-lines. As this process is found developed in the Book of Kells, its beginning may be fairly assigned to as early a time as the first half of the 7th century ; but for positive date there is the same uncertainty as in regard to the first beginning of the round hand. The Book of Dimma (Wat. MSS. Irel., i., pls. xviii, xix.) has been attributed toa scribe of about 650 a.p. ; but it appears rather to be of the 8th century, if we may judge by the analogy of English MSS. written ina similar hand. It is not in fact until we reach the period of the Book of Armagh (Nat. MSS. Irel., pls. XxvV.-xxix.), a MS. containing books of the New Testament and other matter, and written by Ferdomnach, a scribe who died in the year 844, that we are on safe ground. Here is clearly a pointed hand of the early part of the 9th century,

very similar to the English pointed hand of Mercian charters of the same time. The MS. of the Gospels of MacDurnan, in the Lambeth Library (Wat. MSS. Irel., i., pls. xxx., Xxxi.) is an example of writing of the end of the 9th or beginning of the 10th century, showing a tendency to become more narrow and cramped. But coming down to the MS. of the 11th or 12th centuries we find a change. The pointed hand by this time has become moulded into the angular and stereotyped form peculiar to Irish MSS. of the later Middle Ages. From the 12th to the 15th centuries there is a very gradual change. Indeed, a carefully written MS. of late date may very well pass for an example older by a century or more. Later forms must be detected among the fairly written characters. A book of hymns of the 11th or 12th century (Wat. MSS. Trel., i., pls. xxxii.—xxxvi.) may be referred to as a good typical specimen of the Irish hand of that period ; and the Gospels of Melbrighte, of 1138 a.v. (Wat. MSS. Ire, 1, pls. xl.-xlii.; Pal. Soc., pl. 212), as a calligraphic one.

In Irish MSS. of the later period, the ink is black, and the vellum, as a general rule, is coarse and discoloured, a defect which may be attributed to inexperience in the art of preparing the skins and to the effects of climate.

When a school of writing attained to the perfection which marked that of Ireland at an early date, so far in advance of other countries, it naturally followed that its influence should be felt beyond its own borders. How the influence of the Irish school asserted itself in England will be presently discussed. But on the Continent also Irish monks carried their civilizing power into different countries, and continued their native style of writing in the monas- teries which they founded. At such centres as Luxeuil in

.

}

PaebtmogckaPraA Y

France, Wiirzburg in Germany, St Gall in Switzerland, and Bobbio in Italy, they were as busy in the production of MSS. as they had been at home. At first such MSS. were no doubt as distinctly Irish in their character as if written in Ireland itself; but, after a time, as the bonds of connexion with

that country were weakened, the form of writing would become rather traditional, and lose the elasticity of a native hand. As the national styles also which were practised around them became more perfected, the writing of the Irish houses would in turn be reacted on; and it is thus that the later MSS. produced in those houses can be distinguished. Archaic forms are tradition- ally retained, but the spirit of the hand dies and the writing becomes merely imitative.

English Writing.—In England there were two sources whence a national hand could be derived. From St Columba's foundation in Iona the Irish monks established monasteries in the northern parts of Britain; and in the year 635 the Irish missionary Aidan founded the see of Lindisfarne or Holy Isle, where there was established a school of writing destined to become famous. In the south of England the Roman missionaries had also brought into the country their own style of writing direct from Rome, and taught it in the newly founded monasteries. But their writing never became a national hand. Such a MS. as the Canterbury Psalter in the Cottonian Library (Pal. Soc., pl. 18) shows what could be done by English scribes in imitation of Roman uncials; and the existence of so few early charters in the same letters (acs. of Anc. Charters, pt. i, Nos. 1, 2, 7), among the large number which have survived, goes to prove how limited was the influence of that form of writing. On the other hand, the Irish style made progress throughout England, and was adopted as the national hand, developing in course of time certain local peculiarities, and lasting as a distinct form of writing down to the time of the Norman Conquest. But, while English scribes at first copied their Irish models with faithful exactness, they soon learned to give to their writing the stamp of a national character, and imparted to it the elegance and strength which individualized the English hand for many centuries to come. :

As in Ireland so here we have to follow the‘ course of the round hand as distinct from the pointed character. The earliest and most beautiful MS. of the former class is the Lindisfarne Gospels or "Durham Book" in the Cottonian Library (Pal. Soc., pls. 3-6, 22; Cat. Ane. MSS., pt. ii., pls. 8-11), said to have been written by Eadfrith, bishop of Lindisfarne, about the year 700. The text is in very exactly formed half-uncials, differing but slightly

from the same characters in Irish MSS., and is glossed in the Northumbrian dialect by Aldred, a writer of the 10th century.

me heopns

_RCorumM Rom “Y) a a5¢ bon amlse = Fon (@) Coa. mrces Quontogwn ee Ja agn esas

IPs Postoebunc—

Lindisfarne Gospels, civc. 700 A.D.

{regnum caelorum. Beati mites quoniam ipsi posidebunt.

ric heofna eadge bidon da milde fordon da agnegad.)

MSS. in the same solid half-uncial hand are still to be seen in the Chapter Library of Durham, this style of writing having been practised more especially in the north of England. But in addition to this calligraphic book-writing, there was also a lighter form of the round letters

which was used for less sumptuous MSS. or for more ordinary occasions. Specimens of this hand are found in the Durham Cassiodorus (Pal. Soc., pl. 164), in the Canter- bury Gospels (Pal. Soc., pl. 7; Cat. Anc. MSS., pt. iL, pls. 17, 18), the Epinal Glossary (Z. Hng. Text, Soc.), and in a few charters (Pacs. Anc. Charters, pt. 1,153 ii, 2, 33 Pal. Soc., 10), one of which, of 778 a.D., written in Wessex, is interesting as showing the extension of the round hand to the southern parts of England. The examples here enumerated are of the 8th and 9th centuries,—the earlier ones being written in a free natural hand, and those of later date bearing evidence of decadence. Indeed the round hand was being rapidly displaced by the more con- venient pointed hand, which was in full use in England in the middle of the 8th century. How late, however, the more calligraphic round hand could be continued under favouring circumstances is seen in the Liber Vitze or list of benefactors of Durham (Cat. Anc. MSS., pt. il, pl. 25 ; Pal. Soc., pl. 238),

the writing of which would, from its beautiful execution, be taken for that of the 8th century, did not internal evidence prove it to be of about the year

840.

The pointed hand ran its course through the 8th, 9th, and 10th centuries, until English writing came under the influence of the foreign minuscule. The leading character- istics of this hand in the 8th century are regularity and breadth in the formation of the letters and a calligraphic contrast of heavy and light strokes—the hand being then at its best. In the 9th century there is greater lateral compression, although regularity and correct formation are maintained. But in the 10th century there are signs of decadence. New forms are introduced, and there is a disposition to be imitative. A test letter of this latter century is found in the letter a with obliquely cut top,a.

The course of the progressive changes in the pointed hand may be followed in the Yacsimiles of Ancient Charters in the British Museum and in the Facsimiles of Anglo- Saxon MSS. of the Rolls Series. The charters reproduced in these works have survived in sufficient numbers to enable us not only to form a fairly accurate knowledge of the criteria of their age, but also to recognize local peculiarities of writing. The Mercian scribes appear to have been very excellent penmen, writing a very graceful hand with much delicate play in the strokes. On the other hand the writing of Wessex was heavier and more straggling, and is in such strong contrast to the Mercian hand that its examples may be easily detected with a little practice. Turning to books in which the pointed hand was employed, a very beautiful specimen, of the 8th century, is a copy of Bede’s Ecclesiastical History in the University Library at Cambridge (Pal. Soc. pls. 139, 140), which has in a marked degree that breadth of style which has been referred to. Not much later is another copy of the same work in the Cottonian Library (Pal. Soc., pl. 141; Cat. Anc. MSS., pt. ii, pl. 19), from which the following facsimile is taken.

Tuy sit tfimponoe, Oo Beihai orditunald.urmabey, anny Inmonaytguo gi diMinhny

English Pointed Minuscules, 8th century.

(tus sui tempora gerebat. Uir uenerabilis oidiluuald, qui multis annis in monasterio quod dicitur Inhry——)

For an example of the beginning of the 9th century, a

MS. of miscellanea, of 811-814 a.p., also in the Cottonian Library, may be referred to (Pal. Soc., pl. 165; Cat. Ane.

MSS., pt. i, pl. 24); and a very interesting MS. written in the Wessex style is the Digby MS. 63 of the middle of the century (Pal. Soc., pl. 168). As seen in the charters, the pointed writing of the 10th century assumes generally a larger size, and is rather more artificial and calligraphic. A very beautiful example of the book-hand of this period is found in the volume known as the Durham Ritual (Pal. Soc., pl. 240), which, owing to the care bestowed on the writing and the archaism of the style, might at first sight pass for a MS. of higher antiquity, were not the character- istics of its period evident in the angularity of certain letters,

In the latter part of the 10th century the foreign set minuscule hand began to make its way into England, consequent on increased intercourse with the Continent and political changes which followed. In the charters we find the foreign and native hands on the same page:—the body of the document, in Latin, in Caroline minuscules ; the boundaries of the land conveyed, in the English hand. The same practice was followed in books. The charter (in book form) of King Eadgar to New Minster, Winchester, 966 A.D. (Pal. Soc. pls. 46, 47), the Benedictional of Bishop Aithelwold of Winchester (pls. 142, 144) before 984 a.D., and the MS. of the Office of the Cross, 1012-20 A.D. (pl. 60), also written in Winchester, are all examples of the use of the foreign minuscule for Latin. The change also which the national hand underwent at this period may certainly be attributed to this foreign influence. The pointed hand, strictly so-called, is replaced by a rounder or rather square character, with lengthened strokes above and below the line.

manan hepeeyhyy mersa.preapi preonoa ge pyle onpolc peeve berlagen ecrprge Tiny pam fo ~~onpall frope punoum fonsjuirioen~~

English Minuscules, 11th century.

(manan he wes his mega. sceard freonda ge fylled on folestede beslegen et secge. and his sunu forlet. on welstowe wundum forgrunden.)

This style of writing becomes the ordinary English hand down to the time of the Norman Conquest. That event extinguished the national hand for official purposes—it

disappears from charters ; and the already established use.

of the Caroline minuscule in Latin MSS. completed its exclusion as the handwriting of the learned. It cannot, however, be doubted that it still lingered in those parts of the country where foreign influence did not at once pene- trate, and that Englishmen still continued to write their own language in their own style of writing. But that the earlier distinctive national hand was soon overpowered by foreign teaching is evident in English MSS. of the 12th century, the writing of which is of the foreign type, although the English letter thorn, p, survived and continued in use down to the 15th century, when it was transformed to ¥.

The Caroline Reform.—The revival of learning under Charlemagne naturally led to a reform in handwriting. An ordinance of the year 789 required the revision of church books ; and a more correct orthography and style of writing was the consequence. ‘The abbey of St Martin of Tours was the principal centre from whence the reforma- tion of the book-hand spread. Here, from the year 796 to 804, Alcuin of York presided as abbot ; and it was under his direction that the Caroline minuscule writing took the simple and graceful form which was gradually adopted to the exclusion of all other hands. In carrying out this reformation we may well assume that Alcuin brought to

PA et OG h APH Y

bear the results of the training which he had received in his youth in the English school of writing, which had attained to such proficiency, and that he was also benefie- ally influenced by the fine examples of the Lombard schoo] which he had seen in Italy. In the new Caroline minus. cule all the

uncouthness of the later Merovingian hand disappears, and the simpler forms of many of the letters found in the old Roman minuscule hand are adopted, The character of Caroline writing through the 9th and early part of the 10th century is one of general uniformity, with a contrast of light and heavy strokes, the limbs of tall letters being clubbed or thickened at the head by pressure on the pen. As to characteristic letters—the dl, following the old type, is, in the 9th century, still fre. quently open, in the form of w; the bows of g are open, the letter somewhat resembling the numeral 3; and there is no turning of the ends of letters, as m and n,

Actipere’miarium contugem Tuan, quod enim execcnaftecumderpares ee. —_

durcem fitum ecuocabiMnomenemulihm

Caroline Minuscules, 9th century. (accipere mariam coniugem tuam quod enim ex ea nascetur de spiritu sancto est. autem filium et uocabis nomen eius Ieswm) In the 10th century the clubbing of the tall letters becomes less pronounced, and the writing generally assumes, so to say, a thinner appearance, But a great change is notice- able in the writing of the 11th century. By this time the Caroline minuscule may be said to have put off its archaic form and to develop into the more modern character of small letter. It takes a more finished and accurate and more upright form, the individual letters being drawn with much exactness, and generally on a rather larger scale than before. This style continues to improve, and is reduced to a still more exact form of calligraphy in the 12th century, which for absolute beauty of writing is unsur- passed. In England especially, the writing of this century is particularly fine.

Pariet

anlof dtarumulif fintaddeure firper’

dare at ydle carnibul & fimo crema or€ catia ft pega ditt

English Minuscules, 12th century.

(—culos cum arninulis suis adoleuit super altare uitulum cum pelle et carnibus et fimo cremans extra castra sicut preceperat dominus)

As, however, the demand for written works increased, the fine round hand of the 12th century could not be maintained. Economy of material became necessary, and a smaller hand with more frequent contractions was the result. The larger and more distinct writing of the 11th and 12th centuries is now replaced by a more cramped though still distinct hand, in which the letters are more linked together by connecting strokes, and are more laterally compressed. This style of writing is characteristic of the 13th century. But, while the book-hand of this period is a great advance upon that of a hundred years earlier, there is no tendency to a cursive style. Every letter 1s clearly formed, and generally on the old shapes. The particular letters which show weakness are those made of a succession of vertical strokes, as m, n, u. The new method of connecting these strokes, by turning the ends and running on, made the distinction of such letters

. coi difficult, as, for example, in the word minim. The

| ambiguity thus arising was partly obviated by the use of g small oblique stroke over the letter 2, which, to mark ‘ the double letter, had been introduced as early as the 11th ‘ century. ‘The dot on the letter came into fashion in the

14th century.

Cugreeelyadte cy wlacee cue Ceereiee preitiimnit peleans, iret ofif qual fereered pres wire

{a.anditfamonreoy in quogtta prans.Cgoatieoysiineatinent ota Bethe “oinp pis zare-Tv fea nob ur reling

Minuscule Writing, 13th century.

(Eligite hodie quod placet cui seruire potissimum

debeatis. Utrum diis quibus seruierwnt patres ueséri in

mesopotamia, an diis amoreorwm in quorwm terra

habitatis. Ego autem et domus mea seruiemus domino, Respon-

ditque populus ef ait, Absit a nobis ut relinqwanius dominum) In MSS. of the 14th century minuscule writing becomes slacker, and the consistency of formation of letters falters. There is a tendency to write more cursively and without raising the pen, as may be seen in the form of the letter a, of which the characteristic shape at this time is &, with both bows closed, in contrast with the earlier a. In this century, however, the hand still remains fairly stiif and upright. In the 15th century it becomes very angular and more and more cursive, but is at first kept within bounds. In the course of the century, however, it grows more slack and deformed, and the letters become continu- ally more cursive and misshapen. An exception, however, to this disintegration of minuscule writing in the later centuries is to be observed in church books. In these' the old set hand of the 12th and 13th centuries was imitated and continued to be the liturgical style of writing.

It is impossible to describe within limited space, and without the aid of illustrations, all the varieties of hand- writing which were developed in the different countries of western Europe, where the Caroline minuscule was finally adopted to the exclusion of the earlier national hands. In each country, however, it acquired, in a greater or less de- gree, an individual national stamp which can generally be recognized and which serves to distinguish MSS. written in different localities. A broad line of distinction may be drawn between the writing of northern and southern Europe from the 12th to the 15th century. In the earlier part of this period the MSS. of England, northern France, and the Netherlands are closely connected. Indeed, in the 12th and 13th centuries it is not always easy to decide as to which of the three countries a particular MS. may belong. As a rule, perhaps, English MSS. are written with more sense of gracefulness ; those of the Netherlands in darker ink. From the latter part of the 13th century, however, national character begins to assert itself more distinctly. In southern Europe the influence of the Italian school of writing is manifest in the MSS. of the south of France in the 13th and 14th centuries, and also, though later, in those of Spain. That elegant roundness of letter which the

Italian scribes seem to have inherited from the bold characters of the early papal chancery, and more recently from Lombardic models, was generally adopted in the book-hand of those districts. It is especially notice- able in calligraphic specimens, as in church books,—the writing of Spanish MSS. in this style being distinguishable by the blackness of the ink. The medieval minuscule writing of Germany stands apart. It never attained to the beauty of the hands of either the north or the south Which have been just noticed; and from its ruggedness and slow development German MSS. have the appearance of being older than they really are. The writing has also very commonly a certain slope in the letters which coni-

pares unfavourably with the upright and elegant hands of other countries. In western Europe generally the minus- cule hand thus nationalized ran its course down to the time of the invention of printing, when the so-called black letter, or set hand of the 15th century in Germany and other countries, furnished models for the types. But in Italy, with the revival of learning, a more refined taste set in in the production of MSS., and scribes went back to an earlier time in search of a better standard of writing. Hence, in the first quarter of the 15th century, MSS. written on the lines of the Italian hand of the early 12th century begin to appear, and become continually more numerous. This revived hand was brought to perfection soon after the middle of the century, just at the right moment to be adopted by the early Italian printers, and to be perpetuated by them in their types.

It must also not be forgotten that by the side of the book-hand of tlie later Middle Ages there was the cursive hand of every day use. This is represented in abundance in the large mass of charters and legal or domestic docu- ments which remains. Some notice has already been taken of the development of the national cursive hands in the earliest times. From the 12th century downwards these hands settled into well-defined and distinct styles peculiar to diffcrent countries, and passed through syste- matic changes which can be recognized as characteristic of particular periods. But, while the cursive hand thus followed out its own course, it was still subject to the same laws of change which governed the book-hand ; and the letters of the two styles did not differ at any period in their organic

formation. Confining our attention to the charter hand, or court hand, practised in England, a few specimens may be taken to show the principal changes which it developed. In the 12th century the official hand which had been introduced after the Norman Conquest is characterized by exaggeration in the strokes above and below the line, a legacy of the old Roman cursive, as already noted. Thcre is also a tendency to form the tops of tall vertical strokes, as in 8, , /, with a notch or cleft. The letters are well made and vigorous, though often rugged.

Charter of Stephen, 1136-39 A.D. (et ministris et omnibus fidelibus suis Francis et Regine uxoris mee et Eustachii filii

mei dedi et concessi ecclesie Beate Marie) As the century advances, the long limbs are brought into better proportion ; and early in the 13th century a very delicate fine-stroked hand comes into use, the cleaving of the tops being now a regular system, and the branches formed by the cleft falling in a curve on either side. This style remains the writing of the reigns of John and Henry

TI. athe pores Vredd omfetog cab: Boles g8- Pod 2. CRE? Conftalulbyrir knah ce (ifn D Pooob, ED SaydBvin Sn renner pain’ an planer ya Be pacer Charter of Henry IJI., 1259 a.p.

(uniuersis presentes litteras inspecturis salwtem. Noueritis quod— -_ford et Essexie et Constabularium Anglie et Willelmum de Fortibus —ad iurandum in animam nostram in presencia nostra de pace)

Towards the latter part of the 13th century the letters grow rounder ; there is generally more contrast of light and heavy strokes; and the cleft tops begin, as 1t were, to shed the branch on the left.

gpo2e crm crn 17 09028 ret Tove onremence 6etlongraudine ie meSum onore illine af én0 cApee Las @ Conmenns & qranSo Tmueyite er quim ‘ao

Charter of Edward I., 1303 a.D.

(More cum pertinenézis in mora que vocatur Inkelesmore continentem —se in longitudine per medium more illius ab uno capite— Abbas e¢ Conuentus aliquando tennerunt et quam prefatus Co—)

In the 14th century the changes thus introduced make further progress, and the round letters and single-branched vertical strokes become normal through the first half of the century. Then, however, the regular formation begins to give way and angularity sets in. Thus in the reign of Richard IT. we have a hand presenting a mixture of round and angular elements—the letters retain their breadth but lose their curves. Hence, by further decadence, results the angular hand of the 15th century, at first compact, but afterwards straggling and ill-formed.

1,9 3 O 029 dyinge 9 10 so& yin ia Gus – asp Rte 16

English Charter, 1457 a.p.

(and fully to be endid, payinge yerely the seid— successours in hand halfe yere afore that is— next suyinge xxiij. s.iiij. d. by evene porciouns.)

Palimpsests. —A class of MSS. must be briefly noticed which, on account of the valuable texts which many of them have yielded, have a particular interest. These are the palimnpsests. The custom of removing writing from the surface of the material on which it was inscribed, and thus preparing that surface for the reception of another text, has heen practised from early times. The term palim- psest is used by Catullus, apparently with reference to papyrus; by Cicero, in a passage wherein he. is evidently speaking of waxen tablets ; and by Plutarch, when he narrates that Plato compared Dionysius to a BiBAloy martbnoroy, in that his tyrant nature, being dvoéxmAvtos, showed itself like the imperfectly erased writing of a palimpsest MS. In this passage, reference is clearly made to the washing off of writing from papyrus. The word marlupnoros can only in its first use have been applied to MSS. which were actually scraped or rubbed, and which were, therefore, composed ofa material of sufficient strength to bear the process. In the first instance, then, it might be applied to waxen tablets ; secondly, to vellun books. There are still to be seen, among the surviving

waxen tablets, some which contain traces of an earlier writing under a fresh layer of wax. Papyrus could not be scraped or rubbed; the writing was washed from it with the sponge. This, however, could not be so thoroughly done as to leave a perfectly clean sur- face, and the material was accordingly only used a second time for documents of an ephemeral or common nature. To apply, therefore, the title of palimpsest to a MS. of this substance was not strictly correct ; the fact that it was so applied proves that the term was in common use.

In the early period of palimpsests, vellum MSS. were also washed, The ink of the earlier centuries was easily removed with the sponge, and at the moment when this was done it may be sup- posed that the pages presented a clean surface. In course of time, however, by atmospheric action or other chemical causes, the ori- ginal writing would to some extent reappear ; and it is thus that so many of the capital and uncial palimpsests have been successfully deciphered. In the later Middle Ages the knife was used; the surface of the vellum was scraped away and the writing with it. The reading of the later examples is therefore very difficult or alto- gether impossible. Besides actual rasure, various recipes for effac- ing the writing have been found,—such as, to soften the surface with milk and meal, and then to rub with pumice. In the case of such a process being used, total obliteration must almost inevitably have been the result. To intensify the traces of the original writ- ing, when such exist, various chemical reagents have been tried with

more or less success. The old method of smearing the vellum with tincture of gall restored the writing, but did irreparable damage by blackening the surface, and, as the stain grew darker in course f time, by rendering the text altogether illegible. Of modern reagents the most harmless appears to be hydrosulphurate of ammonta; but this also must be used with caution, and should be washed off when it has done its work.

The primary cause of the destruction of MSS. by wilful obliter- ation was, it need hardly be said, the dearth of material. Atcertain periods, from political or social changes, the market was interfered with, and production or importation failed. In the case of Greek MSS., so great was the

consumption of old books, for the sake of the material, that a synodal decree of the year 691 forbade the destruction of MSS. of the Scriptures or the church fathers—imper- fect or injured volumes excepted. The decline of the vellum trade also on the introduction of paper, as already noticed above, caused a scarcity which was only to be made good by recourse to material already once used. Vast destruction of the broad quartos of the early centuries of our era took place in the period which followed the fall of the Roman empire. The most valuable Latin palim- psests are accordingly found in the volumes which were remade from the 7th to the 9th centuries, a period during which the large volumes referred to must have been still fairly numerous. Late Latin palimpsests rarely yield anything of value: often the first writing precedes the later one by only a century or two; and some- times both hands are of the same age. In the earlier examples, many of the original texts were sacrificed to make room for patristic literature or grammatical works. In many instances MSS, of the classical writers have been thus destroyed ; and the sacred text itself has not always been spared. On the other hand, there are instances of classical texts being written over Biblical MSS.; but these are of late date. It has been remarked that no entire work has been found in any instance in the original text of a palimpsest, but that portions of many works have been taken to make upa single volume. These facts, however, go rather to prove, not so much that only imperfect works were put under con- tribution, as that scribes were indiscriminate in selection of material.

An enumcration of the different palimpsests of value is not here possible (see Wattenbach, Schriftwesen, pp. 252-257); but a few may be mentioned of which facsimiles are accessible. The MS, known as the Codex Ephraemi, containing portions of the Old and New Testaments in Greek, attributed to the 5th century, is covered with works of Ephraem Syrus in a hand of the 12th century (ed, Tischendorf, 1848, 1845). Among the Syriac MSS. obtained from the Nitrian desert in Egypt, aa now deposited in the. British Museum, some important Greek texts have been recovered, A volume containing a work of Severus of Antioch of the beginning of the 9th century is written on palimpsest leaves taken from MSS. of the liad of Homer and the Gospel of St Luke, both of the 6th century (Cat, Anc. MSS.,i., pls. 9,10), and the Hlements of Enclid of the 7th or 8th century. To the same collection belongs the double palimpsest, in which a text of St John

Chrysostom, in Syriac, of the 9th or 10th century, covers a Latin grammatical treatise in a cursive hand of the 6th century, which in its turn has displaced the Latin annals of the historian Granius Licinianus, of the 5th century (Cat. Anc. MSS., ii, pls. 1, 2). Among Latin palimpsests also may be noticed those which have been reproduced in the Lxempla of Zangemeister and Wattenbach, These are—the Ambrosian Plautus, in rustic capitals, of the 4th or 5th century, re-written with portions of the Bible in the 9th century (pl. 6); the Cicero De Republica of the Vatican, in uncials, of the 4th cen- tury, covered by St Augustine on the Psalms, of the 7th century (pl. 17; Pal. Soc., pl. 160); the Codex Theodosianus of Turin, of the 5th or 6th century (pl. 25); the Fasti Consulares of Verona,

_of 486 A.D. (pl. 29) ; and the Arian fragment of the Vatican, of the

Sth century (pl. 31). Most of these originally belonged to the monastery of Bobbio, a fact which gives some indication of the great literary wealth of that house. The new photographie processes are particularly well adapted for the reproduction of palimpsests, for the reason that, however faint the subject, it is nearly always intensified in the negative. By using skill and judgment, with a favouring light, photography may be often made a useful agent in the decipherment of obscure palimpsest texts.

Mechanical Arrangement of Writing in MSS.—In the papyrus rolls the text was written in columns, generally narrow, whose length was limited by the width of the material, allowing a margin at top and bottom. In books, if the text did not extend across the page, it was usually written in two columns. A few instances, however, are known of MSS. which have more than two columns of writing ina page. Among them, the Codex Sinaiticus of the Bible has four columns, and the Codex Vaticanus three columms. In the Fulda fragment of an ancient Latin Bible (Exempla, 21) the arrangement is one of three columns; and a late instance of the same number occurs iu a Latin Bible of the end of the 9th century in the British Museum (Cat. Anc. MSS., ii., pl. 45). Besides the practice of continuous writing without distinction of words, which

reabaoG kh “& PH ¥

rj -eferred to more fully below, the letters towards the end of

. a in the Eliade MSS., reduced in size and cramped together, and very frequently in Latin MSS. two or more letters were linked or combined ina monogrammatic form, as ® WT (ur, unt). By these devices space was saved and words were less divided petween two lines. Combinations survived partially in minuscule MSs. The opening lines of the main divisions of the text, as for example the different books of the Bible, were frequently written in red, for distinction. At first there was no enlargement whatever of letters in any part of the text, but still at an early period the frst letter of each page was made larger than the rest. Rubrics and titles and colophons were at first written in the same character as the text; afterwards, when the admixture of different kinds of writing was allowed, capitals and uncials were used at discretion. In papyri it appears to have been the practice to write the name of the work at the end only. Running titles or head-lines are found in some of the earliest Latin MSS. in the same characters as the text, but of a small size. Quotations were usually indicated by ticks or arrow-heads in the margin, serving the purpose of the modern inverted commas. Sometimes the quoted words were arranged as a sub-paragraph or indented passage. In commentaries of later date, the quotations from the work commented upon were often written in a different style from the text of the commentary itself, , In MSS., both Greek and Latin, of the earlier centuries the writing runs on continuously without breaking up into distinct words. ‘To this system there are, however, a few partial exceptions, in some of the very earliest examples. For instance, the Evddtou rexvh, Written on papyrus in the 2d century B.c., hasa certain amount of separation of words, and in the fragments of the poem on the battle of Actium which were recovered at Herculaneum the words are marked off with points, monosyllabic or short pre- positions and conjunctions, however, being joined to the words which immediately follow them—a system which we find in practice at alater time. In the early vellum MSS. there is no such separa- tion; and unless there is a pause in the sense, at which a small space may be left, the line of letters has no break whatever. In Greek MSS., indeed, a system of distinct separation of words was never thoroughly worked out, even as late as the 15th century. The continuous writing of the uncial MSS. was carried on in the minuscules ; and, although, in the latter, a certain degree of separa- tion is noticeable as early as the 10th century, yct a large propor- tion of words remain linked together or wrongly divided.

In the case of Latin uncial MSS., when the latter part of the 7th century is reached, there is more evidence of separation, although no regular system is followed. Concurrently the same process is observed in minuscule MSS., in which a partial separation goes on in an uncertain and hesitating manner down to the time of the Caroline reform. In early Irish and English MSS., however, it may be observed that separation is more consistently followed. In MSS. of the 9th and 10th centuries the long words are separated, but short prepositions and conjunctions are joined to the next following word, It was not until the 11th century that these smaller words were finally detached and stood apart.

Punctuation.—From the use of continuous writing naturally arose in the first place the necessity for the breaking up of the text into paragraphs and sentences, and afterwards the introduction of marks of punctuation. In the Greek works on papyrus before the Christian era certain marks of division are found. In the Harris Homer (Cat. Anc. MSS., i., pl. 1) a wedge-shaped sign > is in- serted between the beginnings of the lines to mark a new passage. In the prose works of Hyperides a pause in the sense (unless it occurs at the end of a line) is indicated by a short blank space being left in the line and by a horizontal stroke being drawn under the first letter of the line in which the pause occurs. In a few instances, in the space left to mark the pause a full point or slight oblique stroke is added high in the line. As large letters were un- known, this system of dividing the paragraphs was calculated to sacrifice the least amount of space, as the rest of the line, after the pause, was utilized for the beginning of the next paragraph. In the early vellum MSS. the same plan is followed, with the more general use of the full point, which is placed on a level with either the top or the middle of the letters; and the marginal dividing Signs are of different patterns. When large letters were introduced to mark the paragraphs, had they been invariably placed at the beginning of their respective paragraphs, the latter must of necessity have each begun a new line, unless the lines had been wide enough apart to leave room for the insertion of the large letters. This latter arrangement would, however, have entailed considerable loss of space; and the device was accordingly invented, in cases where the paragraph began in the middle of a line, to place the large letter as the first letter of the next line, even though it might there occur In the middle of a word, and, as it was placed in the margin, it did not affect the normal space between the

lines. It need hardly be Fics that, if the paragraph commenccd at the beginning of a line, 2 large letter took its natural place as the initial. The use of

ese large or initial letters led to the abolition of the paragraph

marks. As early as the 5th ceutury there is evidence in the case of the Codex Alexandrinus that the marks were losing their meaning in the eyes of the scribes ; for in that MS. they are frequently placed in anomalous positions, particularly over the initial letters of the different books, having been evidently considered as mere ornaments. The position of the initial as the leading letter of the second line of a paragraph beginning in the middle of a line was maintained in the Greek minuscule MSS, intothe 15thcentury. The practice of con- tinuous writing also led to the arrangement of the text of the Bible and some other works in short sentences, according to the sense, which were called otfxo., as will be noticed presently ; but other minor methods were followed to prevent the ambiguity which would occasionally arise. In even the earliest Greek uncial MSS. an apostrophe was often inserted above the line between two words, as a dividing mark, as, for instance, in the Codex Alexandrinus, OYN’OTK; and it was specially used after words ending in x, x, &, p, and after proper names which have not a Greek termination. It was even placed, apparently from false analogy, between two consonants in the middle of a word, as HNEI’KEN. Some of these nses of the apostrophe survived in minuscule MSS. A mark also, resembling an accent or short horizontal stroke, was employed to indicate words consisting of a single letter, as H, which as a word has so many different meanings.

In the earliest surviving Latin volumes there was no punctuation by the first hand, but in the later uncial MSS. the full point, in various positions, was introduced—being placed on a level with either the bottom, middle, or top of the letters, the two latter positions being the most common. In minuscule MSS. the full point, on the line or high, was first nsed ; then the comma and semicolon, and the inverted semicolon (‘), whose power was rather stronger than that of thecomma. In Irish and early English MSS. the common mark

of punctuation was the full point. As a final stop one or more points with a comma. ., were frequently used.

Stichometry.— While dealing with the subject of punctuation, the system of stichometry, or division of the texts into orlxoi, versus, or lines of a certain length may be referred to.1_ It was the custom of the Greeks and Romans to estimate the length of their literary works by lines. In poetical works the number of verses was com- puted ; in prose works a standard line had to be taken, for no two scribes would naturally write lines of the same length. This standard was a medium Homeric line, and it appears to have consisted, on an average, of 34 to 38 letters, or 15 to 16 syllables. The lines of any work, so measured, were called orixo: or rn. The practice of thus computing the length of a work can be traced back to the 4th century B.c. in the boast of Theopompus that he had written more éry than any other writer. The number of such orlxor or 2m contained in a papyrus roll was recorded at the end with the title of the work ; and at the end of a large work extending to several rolls the grand total was given. The use of such a stichometrical arrangement was in the first place for literary refer- ence. The numeration of the or(xo: was no doubt at an early period regularly noted in the margin, just as lines of poetical works or verses in the Bible are numbered in our printed books. In a Greek Biblical MS. at Milan they are numbered at the end of every hundred, and the verses in the Bankes Homer are counted in the same way. But the system was also of practical use in calculating the pay of the scribes and in anata the market value of a MS. When once a standard copy of a work had been written in the normal lines, the scribes of all subsequent copies had only to record the number of erfxo: without keeping to the prototype. When we find therefore at the end of the different books of a Bible that they severally contain so many o7lxor or versus, it is this stichometrical arrangement which is referred to. Callimachus, when he drew up his catalogue of the Alexandrian librarics in the 3d century B.c., registered the total of the orixo: in each work. Although he is generally lauded for thus carefully recording the numbers and setting an example to all who shonld follow him, it has been suggested that this very act was the cause of their general disappearance from MSS. For, when his rlvaxes were published, scribes evidently thought it was needless to repeat what could be found there ; and thus it is that so few MSS. have descended to us which are marked in this way. ‘There was also in nse in

Biblical MSS. another arrangement. This was the division of the text into short sentences or lines, according to the sense, chiefly with a view to a better understand- ing of the meaning and a better delivery in public reading. The Psalms, Proverbs, and other poetical books were anciently thus written, and hence received the title of B/BAo: orixhpets, or atixnpal ; and it was on the same plan that St Jerome wrote, first the books of the prophets, and subsequently all the Bible of his version, per cola et commata ‘quod in Demosthene et Tullio solet fieri,” In the Greek Testament also Euthalius, in the 5th century, introduced the method of writing or:ynd6v, as he termed it, into the Pauline and Catholic Epistles, and the Acts. The surviving MSS. which contain the text written in short sentences show by Bi ee ete ee ee ee

1 See the article by C. Graux in Revue de Philologie, 1878, vol. ii. p. 97.

the diversity of the latter that the rhythmical sentences or lines of sense were differently calculated by different writers ; but the original arrangement of St Jerome is thought to be represented in the Codex Amiatinus at Florence, and that of Euthalius in the Codex Claromontanus at Paris. With regard to St Jerome’s reference to the division per cola et commata of the rhetorical works of Demosthenes and Cicero, it should be noticed that there are still in existence MSS. of works of the latter in which the text is thus written, one of them being a volume of the Tusculans and the De Scnectute in the Bibliotheque Nationale at Paris. The same arrangement of the text of the orations of Demosthenes is also men- tioned by the rhetoricians of the 5th and subsequent centuries. lt is a curious circumstance also that the text of the only two surviv- ing documents of the Roman chancery addressed to Egyptian officials in the 5th century (see above) is written in lines of various lengths, apparently for rhetorical convenience.

Corrections.—For obliteration or removing pen strokes from the surface of the material the sponge was used in ancient times. While the writing was still fresh, the scribe could easily wash off the ink by this means ; and for a fragile material, such as papyrus, he could well use no other. On vellum he might use sponge or knife. But after a MS. had left his hands it would undergo revision at the hands of a corrector, who had to deal with the text in

a different manner. He could no longer conveniently apply the sponge. On hard material he might still use the knife to erase letters or words or sentences. But he could also use his pen for such purposes. Thus we find that avery early system of indicating erasure was the placing of dots or minute strokes above the letters to be thus ‘‘expunged.” The same marks were also (and generally, at later periods) placed under the letters ; in rare instances they stood inside them. It need scarcely be said that letters were also struck out with strokes of the pen or altered into others, and that letters and words were interlined. A long sentence, liowever, which could not be admitted between the lines, was entered in the margin, and its place in the text indicated by corresponding reference marks, such as hd. hs. =hic decst, hoc supra, &e.

Tachygraphy.—The systems of tachygraphy which were followed by both Greeks and Romans had an effect upon the forms of contrac- tion found in medieval MSS. The subject of Greek tachygraphy has lately received a good deal of attention on account of recent dis- coveries. How far back the practice of shorthand writing existed among the Greeks there is nothing to show ; for, although certain words of Diogenes Laertius have been taken to imply that Xenophon wrote shorthand notes (droonuewoduevos) of the lectures of Socrates, yet a similar expression in another passage, which will not bear this meaning, renders it hardly possible that tachygraphy is referred to. The first undoubted mention of a Greek shorthand writer occurs in 195 a.p., in a letter of Flavius Philostratus. But unfortunately there appear to be no very ancient specimens of Greek tachygraphy in existence; for it is denied that certain notes and inscriptions in the papyri dating from the 2d century B.o., which have been put forward as such, are in ‘shorthand at all, The extant examples date only from the 10th century. First stands the Paris MS. of Hermogenes, with some tachygraphic writing of that period, of which Montfaucon (Pal. Gr., p. 351) gives some account, and accompanies his description with a table of forms which, as he tells us, he deciphered with incredible labour. Next, the Add. MS. 18231 in the British Museum contains some marginal notes in shorthand, of 972 a.p. (Wattenb., Script. Graec. Specim., tab. 19). But the largest amount of material is found in the Vatican MS. 1809, a volume in which as many as forty-seven pages are covered with tachygraphic writing of the 11th century. Mai first published a specimen of it in his Seriptorwm Veterum Nova Collectio, vol. vi. (1832) ;

and in his Nove Patrum Bibliotheces tom. secundus (1844) he gave a second, which, in the form of a marginal note, contained a fragment of the book of Enoch. But he did not quote the num- ber of the MS., and it has only lately been found again. The tachygraphic portion of it is now being made the subject of special study by Dr Gitlbauer for the Vienna Academy. It contains frag- ments of the works of St Maximus the Confessor, the confession of St Cyprian of Antioch, and works of the pseudo-Dionysius Areopagita. The writing used in these examples is syllabic, and appears to be a younger form of tachygraphy as distinguished from an older system, the existence of which may be inferred from the occurrence of certain signs or symbols of contraction used in the minuscule MSS. For, while many of the signs thus used correspond with the tachygraphic signs of the above examples, there are others which differ and which have been derived from an earlier source. For a system of tachygraphic contractions had been developing at an earlier period ; and its elements have been traced in both cursive and uncial MSS. as far back as the 5th or 6th century. If then we may suppose that the new system of tachygraphy was an invention of the 9th or 10th century, this will account for the occurrence in MSS. of that period of two forms of abbreviation for certain syllables—the one adopted from the old or ordinary system, and the other being the neo-stenographic symbol. As to the first origin of Greek tachygraphy, it has been supposed that it grew from a system

Peo ee Gh ac a ¥

of secret writing which was developed from forms of abbreviation and which the early Christians adopted for their own nse, ;

Evidence of the use of tachygraphy among the Romans ig to be found in the writings of authors under the empire. It appears to have been taught in schools, and, among others, the emperor Titus is said to have been skilful in this style of writing. Ennius hag been named as the inventor of a large collection of shorthand symbols ; but more generally Cicero’s freedman M. Tullius Tiro ig regarded as the author of these signs, which commonly bear the title of ‘‘Note Tironiane.” The shorthand writers or notaries were well trained in the use of these notes, and in the early Christian times were largely employed in taking down the words of the bishops of the church

which were preached in sermons or spoken in councils, and in recording the acts and lives of martyrs. In the Frankish empire the notes were used in signatures or subscriptions of charters, and later, in the 9th and early 10th centuries, they were adopted by the revisers and annotators of the texts of MSS. Of this period also are several MSS. containing the Psalter in these characters, which it has been suggested were written for practice at a time when a fresh impulse had been given to the use of short. hand in the service of literature. The existence also of volumes eontaining collections of the Tironian notes, and written at this time, points to a temporary revival. The notes appear to have gone out of general use, however, almost immediately after this, although in isolated cases, such as in subscriptions to charters, they linger as late as the beginning of the 11th century. A few of the forms of the Tironian notes were adopted in medieval MSS. as symbols of contraction for certain common words, as will be noticed presently,

Contractions. —The use of contractions or abbreviations in MSS. would arise from two causes—first, the natural desire to write as quickly and shortly as possible words of frequent occurrence which could not be misread in a contracted form, and, secondly, tho necessity of saving space. The eoutractions satisfying the first requirement were necessarily limited in number and simple in char- acter, and are such as are found with more or less frequency in the oldest MSS. But the regular system of contracted forms, with the view of getting as much writing as possible into a limited space, was only elaborated in course of time, and was in use in the later centuries of the Middle Ages. Different kinds of literature also were, according to their nature, more or less contracted. From early times abbreviations were used more freely in secular books, and particularly in works in which technical language was employed, such as those on law or grammar or mathematics, than in Biblical MSS. or liturgies. In the Greek fragment of a mathematical treatise of the 7th century, at Milan, there are numerous contrac- tions ; and the same is found to be the case in a Latin MS. of the 5th century, the Verona Gaius. With regard to the different systems or styles of contraction, the oldest and simplest is that in which a single letter, or at most two or three letters, represent a whole word. Among Latin classical writers we know that these contractions were common enough, and ancient inscriptions afford plentiful examples. In the waxen tablets also they are found; and they survive in the later papyri of Ravenna,

&c., and in law deeds. Next is the system of dropping the final syllable or syllables ofa word, or of omitting a letter or syllable or more in the middle, — such omissions being easily supplied from the general sense of the context—e.g., oxnu’ = ox fuaros, habuet =habucrunt, prm=patrem. And lastly, there are the arbitrary signs and contractions formed in a special manner or marked by certain figures whereby they inay be regularly interpreted.

Traces of a system of contraction are found in some of the early Greek papyri. For example, in the papyrus of the oration of Hyperides for Lycophron, of at least the Ist century B.c., the nu of the syllable wy, when occurring at the end of a line, is omitted, and its omission marked by a light horizontal stroke above the line of writing; aud, as marks of reference to an accidentally omitted line, abbreviated forms of &yw and xdérw are used. In the Bankes

Homer also the sign jo for woinrhs is placed in the margin to mark

the narrative portion of the text. In the ancient Greek Biblical MSS. the contractions are usually confined to the sacred names and

titles, and a few words of common occurrence, as OC = eds, IC= inoods, XC=xpiords, TINA=mvedua, CHP=cwrhp, KC=xipioss CTPOC =ovraupés, MHP = rarhp, MHP=,477p, TC =vids, ANOC=

uvOpwros, OYNOC =otpayds, K=xal, T=rat, Ni=jou, po, &¢. Final N, especially at the end of a line, was dropped, and its place occupied by the horizontal stroke, as TO-. This limited system of contraction was observed generally in the uncial Biblical and liturgical MSS. In the mathematical fragment at Milan abbrevia- tions by dropping final syllables, and contracted particles and pre- positions, are numerous; and in the palimpsest Homer of the 6th century in the British Museum final syllables are occasionally omitted. Such omissions were, however, indicated by strokes or curves, or by some leading letter of the omitted portion being placed above the line of writing. Certain signs also were borrowed from tachygraphy, at first sparingly, but afterwards, in the later and

a a

more elaborate system of contraction, in sufficient numbers to repre- sent certain common words and terminations, In the early Greek minuscule MSS. contractions are not very fre- uent in the texts ; but in the marginal glosses, where it was an object to save space, they are found in great numbers as early as the 10th century. The MS. of Nonnus, of 972 A.p., in the British Museum (Wattenb. and Von Vels., Exempla, 7) is an instance of a text contracted to a degree that almost amounts to tachygraphy. In secular MSS. contractions developed most quickly. In the 19th, 13th, and 14th centuries texts were fully contracted ; and as the writing became more cursive contraction-marks were more care- lessly applied, until, in the 15th century, they degenerated into mere ishes. Latin Biblical uncial MSS. the same restrictions on abbrevia- tions were exercised as in the Greek. The sacred names and titles DS=deus, DMS, DNS=dominus, SCS = sanctus, SPS =spiri- tus, and others appear in the oldest codices. The contracted ter- minations Q°=que, B‘=bus, and the omission of final m, or (more rarely) final , are common to all Latin MSS. of the earliest period. There is a peculiarity about the contracted form of our Saviour’s name that it is always written by the Latin scribes in

letters imitating the Greek IHC, XPO, the, ape. In secular works, as already noticed, contractions were used in many forms at an early period. In minuscule MSS. of the 8th, 9th, and 10th centuries the system of dropping middle or final syllables was commonly applied. In this stage the simpler marks of contraction, such as a horizontal stroke or an apostrophe to mark the omitted termination, were generally used. Certain ordinary words also, as prepositions and conjunctions, and a few prefixes and terminations, had parti- cular forms of contraction from an early date. Such are @=est, t=vcl, i=non, p’=pre, p=per, p=pro, > =termination us, The letter ¢ with distinctive strokes applied in different positions re- presented the often recurring relative and other short words, as quod, quia. Conventional signs also derived from the Tironian notes were employed, particularly in Irish and English MSS., as K=autem, —=est, 9=ejus, H=enim, 7 =et. From the practice of writing above the line a leading letter of an omitted syllable, as int*=intra, t’=tur, other conventional signs were also de- veloped. Such growths are well illustrated in the change under- gone by the semicolon,

which was attached to the end of a word to indicate the omission of the termination, as b;=dus, q;=que, deb;=debet, and which in course of time became converted into a 2, a form which survives in our ordinary abbreviation viz. (¢.¢., vi;=videlicet). The different forms of contraction which have been noticed were common to all the nations of western Europe. The Spanish scribes, however, attached different values to certain of them. For example, in Visigothic MSS., gm, which elsewhere represented quoniam, may be read as guum; and p, which else- where = pro, is here= per.

By the 11th century the system of Latin contractions had been reduced to exact rules ; and from this time onwards it was univer- sally practised. It reached its culminating point in the 13th cen- tury, the period of increasing demand for MSS., when it became more than ever necessary to economize space. After this date the exact formation of the signs of contraction was less strictly observed, and the system deteriorated together with the decline of hand- writing. In conclusion, it may be noticed that in MSS. written in the vernacular tongues contractions are more rarely used than in Latin texts. A system suited to the inflexions and terminations of this language could not be readily adapted to other languages so different in grammatical structure.

Breathings and Accents.—These were not systematically applied to the texts of Greek MSS. before the 7th century. Such as are found in isolated passages in the ancient papyri do not appear to have been written by the first hand, and most of them are probably of much later date. They have becn freely added to the ancient texts of Homer, as in the Harris and Bankes papyri, but palpably long after the dates of the writing. Nor were they used in the early uncial MSS. The ancient codices of the Bible are devoid of them; and, although in the Ambrosian Homer of the 5th century itis thought that some of the breathings may be by the original hand, the other marks of breathing and the accents are of later date. So likewise the few breathings and accents which ave seen

PALAOLOGUS, a Byzantine family name which first appears in history about the middle of the 11th century, when George Palxologus is mentioned among the Prominent supporters of Nicephorus Botaniates, and afterwadrs

as having helped to raise Alexius I. Comnenus to the throne in 1081; he is also noted for his brave defence of Durazzo against the Normans in that year. Michael Palzologus, probably his son, was sent by

in the palimpsest Homer of the 6th century in the British Museum have been, to all appearance, added afterwards. In Latin texts, and particularly in early Irish and English MSS., an accent is occasionally found over a monosyllabic word or one consisting of a single letter. But such accentuation, serving to distinguish such small words in reading, rather corresponds to the similar marking of short words in Greek MSS., as noticed above.

Numerals, —An examination of the different forms of numerals to be found in Greek and Latin MSS. is beyond the province of this article. It may, however, be pointed out that, while in Greek MSS. one system was followed, in Latin MSS, both the Roman and Arabic numerals were in use. The Roman numerals appear in all kinds of documents at all times. When occurring in the text of a MS. they were usually placed between full points, ¢.g., .cxiiii., to prevent confusion with the letters of the words. Arabic numerals were established in common use by the end of the 14th century, but their occurrence in MSS. has been traced back to the middle of the 12th century, from which date down to the time of their general adoption they were principally confined to mathe- matical works.

Bibliography.—GREEK PALROGRAPHY.—The first book which dealt with the subject in a systematic manner was the Palaographia Greca of the learned Benedictine, Dom Bernard de Montfaucon, published in1708. So thoroughly well was tlie work doue that down to our own time no other scholar attempted to improve upon it, and Montfaucon remained the undisputed authority in this branch of learning, At length, in 1879, Gardthausen published his Griechische Palxographie, in which is embodied fuller information that was unavailable in Montfaucon’s day. In this work the development of Greek writing in its various styles is carefully and lucidly worked out and illustrated with tables, and a useful list of dated Greck MSS. is added. See also a review of Gardt- hausen’s work by Charles Graux in the Journal des Savants (1881). A most useful and handy

introduction is Wattenbacli's MSS. With regard to facsimiles, those which are found in Montfaucon and other books of the samc time are practically useless for critical purposes. The invention of photography has entirely driven into the background all hand- made facsimiles, and in the future none will be admissible which are not pro- duced by the action of light. Autotypes or photo-lithographs from MSS. are given in the Facsimiles of the Palssographical Society (1873-83); in the Brempla Codicum Grecorum litterts minuscults scriptorum (1878) of Wattembach and Von Velsen; in the Catalogue of Ancient MSS. in the British Museum, part i, (1881); in Wattenbach's Scripture Grace Speciniina (1883); and, in fewer numbers, in Specimina Palxographica codd, Grec. et Slav, bibl. Mosquensis (1863-64) by Bishop Sabas. Facsimiles made by hand, but excclllently finished, are in Silvestre's Paléographie Universelle (1850) and in Notices et Extraits des Manuscrits, tom. xviii., pt. 2 (1865), where the papyri of Paris are faithfully represented.

LATIN PALMOGRAPHY.—The bibliography of Latin palxograpliy in its different branches is very extensive, but there are comparatively few books which deal with it asa whole. The most complete work is due to the Benedictines, who in 1750-65 produced the Nouveau Traité de Diplomatique, which examines the remains of Latin writing in a most exhaustive manner. The fault of the work lies indeed in its diffuseness and in the superabundance of subdivisions which tend to confuse the reader, The extensive use, however, which the authors made of the French libraries renders their work most valuable for reference. As their title shows, they did not confine themselves to the study of MS, volumes, but dealt also with that other brancli of paleography, the study of documents, in which they had been preceded by Mabillon in his De Re Diplomatica (1709). Wattenbach's Anleitung zur Lateinischen Paleographte, 3d cd., 1878, is a thoroughly practical introduction, classifying the different kinds of writing, and giving full biographical references, and tracing the forms of letters and the history of contractions, &c. Works which give facsimiles in general are— Silvestre, Paléographie Universelie, the Facsimiles of the Paleographical Society; Arndt, Schrifttafein, 1874, 1878; the Catalogue of Ancient MSS. in the British Museum, part ii, 1884; and among those which deal with particular branches of Latin paleography the following may be enumcrated—Exempla Codicum Latin- orum litterts matuscults scriptorum (1876, 1879) by

Zangemeister and Wattenbach, on Roman cursive, and on Lombardic, Merovingian, and Visigothic writing, the Corpus Inscriptionum Latinarum, vols. iii., iv., Massmann, Libellus aurartus, 1840; Marini, Papiri Diplomatici, 1805; the Chartes Latines sur Papyrus (1835- 40) of Champollion-Figeac; Gloria, Paleografia, 1870; Sickcl, Monumenta Graphica, 1858-69; Letronne, Diplomata et Charte Merovingice Atatis, 1848; Facsimile de Chartes et Diplomes," in the Archives de Empire, 1866; Sybel and Sickel, Kaiserurkunden, 1880-84; Bibliotheca Casinensis, 1873, &e.; Merino, #scuela Paleographica, 1780; and the Exempla Scripturx Visigotice (1883) of Ewald and Loewe. On Irish and English writing—Astle, Origin and Progress of Writing, 1873; Facsimiles of Ancient Charters in the British Museum, 1873-78 ; Facsimiles of Anglo-Saxon MSS., 1878, 1881, Rolls Series; Facsimiles of National JUSS. of Eng- land, Scotland, and Ireland, in separate series. The various works on illumina- tion, such as those of Count Bastard, Westwood, Tymms and Wyatt, and others may also be consulted. For the study of the Tironian Notes, see Carpentier, Alphabetum Tirontanum, 1747; Kopp, Palxographia Critica, , 18175, Jules Yardif, ‘‘ Mémoire sur les Notes Tironiennes," in the Afémoires del Académie des Inscriptions, sér. 2, tom, ili., 1852; and the "Note Bernenses," <&c., published in the Panstenographikon periodical, A uscful handbook of contractions is Chassant's Dictionnaire des Abréviations, 1862. For particularsas to materials employed and the mechanical arrangements followed in the production of MSS., see Birt's Antéke Buchwesen (1882) and Wattenbach's Schrtftwesen im Mittelalten (1875). (E. M. T.)

Manuel II. Comnenus into Italy as ambassador to the court of Frederick I. in 1154; in the following year he took part in the campaign against William of Sicily, and died at Bari in 1155. A son or brother of Michael, named George, received from the emperor Manuel the title of Sebastos, and was entrusted with several important missions; it is uncertain whether he ought to be identified with the George Paleologus who took part

in the conspiracy which dethroned Isaac Angelus in favour of Alexius Angelus in 1195. Andronicus Palso- logus Comnenus was Great Domestic under Theodore Lascaris and John Vatatzes; his eldest son by Irene

Palzologina, MicHAEL (9.v.), became the eighth emperor of that name in 1260, and was in turn followed by his son Andronicus II. (1282-1328). Michael, the son of Andronicus, and associated with him in the empire, died in 1320, but left a son, Andronicus III., who reigned from 1328 to 1341; John VI. (1355-1391), Manuel II. (1391-1425), and John VII. (1425-1448) then followed in lineal succession ; Constantine XIII, the last emperor of Constantinople (1448-1453), was the younger brother of John VII. Other brothers were Demetrius, prince of Morea until 1460, and Thomas, prince of Achaia, who died at Rome in 1465. A daughter of Thomas, Zoe by namie, married Ivan III. of Russia. A younger branch of the Palxologi held the principality of Monferrat from 1305 to 1533, when it became extinct.

PALHZONTOLOGY. See Gzoxoey, vol. x. pp. 319 sg. Further details will be found in DistTripution and in the articles on the various zoological groups and forms (see, eg., Brrps, IcHTHyotocy, IcHTHYosauURUS, MamM- MALIA, MAMMOTH),

PALAZOTHERIUM. See Mammatta, vol. xv. p. 429.

PALA/PHATUS, the author of a treatise rept dricruy, ‘On Incredible (Narratives),” which has been preserved. It consists of a series of explanations of Greek legends, without any attempt at arrangement or plan. It is obviously a mere epitome of some more complete work. The great number of MSS., containing numerous varia- tions in text, and the frequent quotations made from the treatise by late writers, show that it was a favourite work in their time. It is probable that the original treatise, from which it was abbreviated, was the Avoes tov pubis cipnuévov of a late writer mentioned by Suidas as a grammarian of Egypt or of Athens.

PALAFOX Y MELZI, Jost px (1780-1847), duke of Saragossa, was the youngest son of an old Aragonese family. Brought up at the Spanish court, he entered the guards at an early age, and in 1808 he accompanied Ferdinand ‘to Bayonne, but made his escape after the king’s abdication. While he was living in retirement at his family seat near Saragossa, the inhabitants proclaimed him governor of that city and captain-general of the kingdom of Aragon (May 25, 1808), an honour which he owed to his rank, and, it is said, to his appearance, rather than to talent or experience in military affairs. Despite the want of money and of regular troops, he lost no

time in declaring war against the French, who had already overrun the neighbouring provinces of Catalonia and Navarre, and soon afterwards the attack he had provoked began ; Saragossa was bombarded on July 22, and on August 4 the French were masters of nearly the half of the town. Summoned to surrender, Palafox sent the famous reply of “War to the Knife,” and on the following day his brother succeeded in forcing a passage into the city with 3000 troops. It was resolved, amid the en- thusiasm of the inhabitants (whose real leaders belonged to the lower orders), to contest possession of the remaining quarters of Saragossa inch by inch, and if necessary to retire to the suburb across the Ebro, destroying the bridge. The struggle, which was prolonged for nine days longer, resulted in the withdrawal of the French (August 14) after a siege which had lasted sixty-one days in all. Operations, however, were resumed by Marshals Mortier

and Moncey in November, and after more than 50,000

(it is said) of the inhabitants had perished, partly through the ravages of an epidemic by which Palafox himself was attacked, a capitulation was signed on February 21.

After his recovery Palafox was sent into France and closely confined at Vincennes, but was liberated on the restoration of Ferdinand. InJune 1814 he was confirmed in the office of captain-general of Aragon, but soon afterwards withdrew from it, and, having indeed no rea] aptitude for them, ceased to take part in public affairs He received the title of duke of Saragossa in 1824, and died at Madrid on February 15, 1847.

PALAMAS. See Hzsycuasts, vol. xi. p. 782.

PALANPUR, a native state in Guzerat, Bombay, India, lying between 23° 57’ and 24° 41’ N, lat., and between 71° 51’ and 72° 45’ E. long., with an area of 3510 square miles, and a population of 234,402. The country is mountainous, with much forest towards the north, but undulating and open in the south and east. The principal rivers are the Saraswati and Bands. The chief, an Afghan of the Lohdni tribe, enjoys an estimated gross revenue of

£40,000, and pays a tribute to the gdekwdr of Baroda, Palanpur town, the capital of the state, contained a popu- lation in 1881 of 17,547.

PALATINATE, THE (German, Pfalz), included for some time (from the middle of the 17th to the latter part of the 18th century) two distinct German districts, the Upper or Bavarian Palatinate, and the Lower Palatinate or the Palatinate on the Rhine. The Upper Palatinate, a duchy, belonged to the Nordgau and Bavarian circle, and was bounded by Baireuth, Bohemia, Neuburg, Bavaria, and the territory of Nuremberg. In 1807 (with Cham and Sulz- bach) it had 283,800 inhabitants. The Lower Palatinate belonged to the electoral Rhenish circle, and was bounded by Mainz, Katzenellenbogen, Wiirtemberg, Baden, Alsace, Lorraine, and Treves. It took in the Electoral Palatinate (with a population, in 1786, of 305,000), the principality of Simmern, the duchy of Zweibriicken, half of the county of Sponheim, and the principalities of Veldenz and Lautern.

The palsgraves of the Rhine originally had their seat in Aix-la-Chapelle. In the 11th century the country called the Palatinate belonged to them as an hereditary fief, in virtue of which they ranked among the foremost princes of the empire. In 1156, after the death of Palsgrave Hermann III. without heirs, the Palatinate was granted by the emperor Frederick I. to his step-brother Duke Conrad of Swabia. Conrad was succeeded by his son-in-law, Duke Henry of Brunswick, the eldest son of Henry the Lion. In the contest for the crown between Otho IV. and Frederick II, Henry took part with Otho IV., his brother; and in 1215 Frederick II. punished him by putting him to the ban of the empire, and by granting the Palatinate to Louis, duke of Bavaria. Louis was never able to assert his claims with complete success ; but his son Otho II. married Agnes, the daughter and heiress of Henry, and thus the Palatinate passed into the hands of the Bavarian family. In 1256 the whole territory of the family was divided between Louis II. and Henry, Otho’s sons,—Louis II. obtaining the Palatinate and Upper Bavaria, and Henry Lower Bavaria. The possessions of Louis II. were inherited in 1294 by his two sons, Rudolph I. and Louis, the Palatinate and the electoral dignity going to the former, while the latter (who ultimately became emperor) received Upper Bavaria, to which Lower Bavaria was afterwards added. The claims of Louis to the imperial crown were contested by Frederick the Fair, duke of Austria; and, as Rudolph I. supported Frederick,

his brother deprived him of his lands, which were then held in succession by Rudolph's three sons, Adolph, who died in 1327, Rudolph II. who died in 1353, and Rupert L, who died in 1390. Rudolph II. concluded a treaty with the emperor Louis, whereby the electoral vote was to be delivered alternately by Bavaria and by the Palatinate;

put the emperor Charles IV., in return for a part of the Upper Palatinate, conferred on Rupert I. and his heirs the exclusive right to the electoral dignity. Rupert I, in 1386, founded the university of Heidelberg. He was succeeded by his nephew, Adolph's son, Rupert II., whose son and successor, Rupert III., was elected emperor in 1400. After the death of Rupert III. in 1410, his here- ditary territories were divided among his four sons, Louis IIL, John, Stephen (who became palsgrave of Simmern and Zweibriicken), and Otho. The families of John and Otho soon died out, and the last representative of the line of Louis IIJ.—Otho Henry—died in 1559, The lands of Otho Henry and the electoral dignity then passed to Frederick [II., of the Simmern line; and Frederick Il. marked an important epoch in the history of the electorate by definitely associating himself and his house with the Reformed or Calvinistic Church. His immediate successors were Louis VL, Frederick IV., and Frederick VY. The latter, in 1619, rashly accepted the crown of Bohemia; and the result was that, after his expulsion from his new kingdom, the Palatinate was given by the emperor Ferdinand II. to Maximilian, duke of Bavaria. In virtue of the treaty of Westphalia, Charles Louis, Frederick V.'s son, who died in 1680, received back the Lower Palatinate, and in his favour an eighth electorate was created, with which was associated the office of lord high treasurer (Erzschatzmeisteramt). The house of Bavaria retained the Upper Palatinate, with the office of arch-sewer (Erztruchsessamt), and with the rank which had formerly been held in the electoral college by the counts palatine ; but it was arranged that, if the male line of Bavaria died out, the lands and rights which had belonged to the rulers of the whole Palatinate should be restored to their descendants. Charles, Charles Louis's son, who died in 1685, was the last representative of the Simmern line. The electoral dignity and the lands con- nected with it then passed to Charles's kinsman, Philip William, of the Neuburg line, which sprang from Louis the Black, the second son of

Stephen, son of Rupert III. Of Louis the Black's two grandsons, Louis and Rupert, the latter was the ancestor of the Veldenz line, which died out in 1694, while from the former sprang all other pala- tine lines—the Neuburg line, the Neuzweibriicken line, the Birkenfeld line, the Sulzbach line. Philip William, of the Neuburg line, died in 1690, and was succeeded by his son John William, who in 1694 inherited Veldenz, and during the war of the Spanish succession received the Upper Palatinate and all the ancient rights of his house. At the conclusion of the war, however, both rights and lands were restored to the elector of Bavaria. In 1716 John William was succeeded by his brother Charles Philip; and with Charles Philip, who died in 1642, the Neuburg line came to an end, and the Lower Palatinate was inherited by Charles Theodore, of the Sulzbach line. In 1777 the male line of Bavaria be- came extinct by the death of the elector Maximilian Joseph; and then, in accordance with the treaty of West- phalia, the Upper Palatinate and the Lower Palatinate were reunited, and the palsgrave resumed the office of arch-sewer and the ancient place of his family in the electoral college, while the office of lord high treasurer was transferred to the elector of Brunswick. The successor of Charles Theodore, who died childless in 1799, was Maxi- milian Joseph, duke of Zweibriicken. By the treaty of Lunéville in 1801 his territories were divided, the part which lay on the left bank of the Rhine being taken by France, while portions on the right bank were given to the Srand-duchy of Baden, to Hesse-Darmstadt, to the prince of Leiningen-Dachsburg, and to Nassau. By the treaties of Paris concluded in 1814 and in 1815, the palatine lands

on the left bank of the Rhine were restored to Germany, the larger part of them being granted to Bavaria, and the rest to Hesse-Darmstadt and Prussia. The Prussian part of the Palatinate is in the Rhine province; the Hesse-Darmstadt part is included in the province of Starkenburg and Rhine Hesse; the Bavarian part is known as Rhenish Bavaria; and the Baden part is in the Lower Rhine district, which in 1865 was divided into the districts of Mannheim, Heidelberg, and Mosbach.

See Hausser, Geschichte der rheinischen Pfalz, 1845 ; Nebenius, Geschichte der Pfalz, 1874.

PALAWAN. See Puritiprrne IsLanps.

PALAZZOLO (often P.-Acreide to distinguish it from several other places of the same name), a city of Italy, in the province of Syracuse, Sicily, 28 miles west of Syracuse, with a population of 11,069 according to the census of 1881. It is mainly of interest on account of the remains it still preserves of the ancient city of Acra, which was founded by Syracuse in 663 B.c. These consist of a temple, an aqueduct, a theatre with a fine view towards Etna, a smaller theatre or odeum, a group of thirteen cisterns, and, in the vicinity, various rows of rock-cut tombs, from which a rich harvest of vases, &c., was obtained by Baron Judica, the great explorer of the site. See Judica, Antichita di Acre.

PALEARIO, Aonio (c. 1500-1570), Italian humanist and Reformer, was born about 1500 at Veroli in the Roman Campagna. Other forms of his name are Antonio Della Paglia, A. Degli Pagliaricci. In 1520 he went to Rome, where, during the years immediately following, he made lasting friendships among the scholars and men of letters whom Leo X. had gathered to his brilliant court. Driven from Rome by the troubles of 1527, he found a home first at Perugia and afterwards, from 1530 onwards, at Siena, where he married happily in 1534. In 1536 his didactic poem in Latin hexameters, De Immortalitate Animarum, was published at Lyons. It is divided into three books, the first containing his proofs of the divine existence, and the remaining two the theological and philosophical arguments for immortality based on that postulate. The whole concludes with a rhetorical descrip- tion of the occurrences of the second advent. Meanwhile his religious views had been undergoing considerable modification, and in 1542 an Italian tract written by him and entitled Della Pienezea, Sufficienza, et Satisfazione della Passione di Christo, or Libellus de Morte Christi, was made by the Inquisition the basis of a charge of heresy, from which, however, he successfully defended himself. To the period of his stay in Siena belongs also his Actio in Pontifices Romanos et eorum Asseclas, a vigorous indict- ment, in twenty “ testimonia,” against what he now be- lieved to be the fundamental error of the Roman Church in subordinating Scripture to tradition, as well as against various particular doctrines, such as that of purgatory; it was not, however, printed until after his death (Leipsic, 1606). In 1546 he accepted a professorial chair at Lucca,

which he exchanged in 1555 for that of Greek and Latin literature at Milan. Here about 1566 his enemies renewed their activity, and in 1567 he was formally accused of having taught the doctrine of justification by faith alone, denied that of purgatory, spoken slightingly of monastic institutions, and so on. Removed to Rome to answer these charges, he was detained in prison until sentence of death was carried out in July 1570.

An edition of his works (Ant. Palearti Verulani Opera), includ- ing four books of Hpistolz and twelve Orationes besides the De Immortalitate, was published at Lyons in 1552; this was followed by two others, at Basel, during his lifetime, and several after his death, the fullest being that of Amsterdam, 1696. A work entitled Benefizio di Cristo ("The Benefit of Christ's Death"), frequently translated, has often been attributed to Paleario, but on insufli- cient grounds.

PALEMBANG. See Sumatra.

PALENCIA, an inland province of Spain, one of the eight into which Old Castile is divided, is bounded on the N. by Santander, on the E. by Burgos, on the S. by Valladolid, on the W. by Valladolid and Leon, and has an area of 3127 square miles. In shape it is an irregular parallelogram, measuring 83 miles from north to south with a maximum breadth of 48 miles, sloping from the Canta- brian chain to the Douro. The general direction of all its larger streams is from north to south ; of these the principal are the Pisuerga and the Carrion, which unite at Duefias and flow into the Douro in Valladolid. The tributaries of the former within the province are the Burejo, the Cieza, and the united streams of the Buedo and Abanades; the latter is joined on the right by the Cueza. The northern part of the province, including the whole partido of Cervera, is mountainous, with some wood and with good pasture in the valleys; the remainder, the "Tierra de Campos," belongs to the great Castilian table-land, and is in general level and almost wholly devoid of trees. In the south occurs a considerable marsh or lake known as La Laguna de la Nava, as yet only partially drained. The mountainous district abounds in minerals, but only the coal is worked, the principal mines being those of San Feliceo de Castilleria, Orbo, and Villaverde de la Pefia. The province is crossed in the south-east by the trunk

railway connecting Madrid with Irun, while the line to Santander traverses it throughout from north to south ; there is also railway connexion with Leon, The highways following the same routes are maintained in good order;:the state of the other roads is often bad. The Canal de Castilla, begun by Ensenada in 1753, and completed in 1832, connects Alar del Rey with Valladolid. The province is essentially agricultural, wheat and other cereals, legumes, hemp, and flax being every- where extensively grown, except in the mountainous dis- tricts, Other industries are of secondary importance, the principal being flour-milling and the manufacture of linen and woollen stuffs. The province is divided into seven partidos—Astudillo, Baltanas, Carrion, Frechilla, Palencia, Saldafia, and Cervera; the total population in 1877 was 180,785. The only ayuntamiento with a population exceeding 10,000 was that of Palencia.

PALENCIA, capital of the above province, occupies a level site on the left bank of’ the river Carrion, here crossed by a good stone bridge and by another called Los Puentecillos. Palencia is the junction of the lines from Asturias and Galicia, and is 7 miles from Venta de Bafios on the Madrid and Irun Railway. The distances north- north-east from Valladolid and south-east from Leon are 23 and 82 miles respectively. The height above sea-level is 2362 feet. The town is protected on the west by the river; on the other sides the old machicolated walls, 36 feet high by 9 in thickness, are in fairly good preservation, and beautified by alamedas or promenades which were laid out in 1778. The city is divided into two parts, the ciudad and the puebla, by a winding arcaded street, the Calle Mayor, which traverses it from north to south. The cathedral, which overlooks the Carrion, was begun in 1321 and finished in 1504; itis a large building in the later and somewhat poor Gothic style of Spain. The site was previously occupied by a church erected by Sancho el Mayor over the cave of St Antholin, which is still shown. The church of San Miguel is a good and fairly well- preserved example of 13th-century work; that of San Francisco, of the same date, is inferior, and has suffered more from modernization. The hospital of San Lazaro issaid to date in part from the time of the Cid, who was married to Ximena here. The leading industries of Palencia are the woollen and linen manufactories, in which

a third of the inhabitants are engaged; flour-milling comes _ next in importance. The population of the ayuntamiento was 14,505 in 1877.

Palencia, the Pallantia of Strabo and Ptolemy, was the chief town of the Vaccei. Its history during the Gothic and Moorish periods js obscure ; but it was a Castilian town of some importance in the 12th and 13th centuries. The university founded here in 1208 by Alphonso IX. was removed in 1239 to Salamanca.

PALENQUE, Ruins or, in Chiapas, Mexico. Beg ARCHITECTURE, Vol. ii. pp. 450-51; and H. H. Bancroft, Native Races of the Pacific Coast of North America, vol. iy,

PALERMO (Greek, Udvoppos; Latin, Panhormus, Panor- mus), the capital of the Sicilian kingdom as long as it kept its separate being, now capital of a province of the same name in the kingdom of Italy, and the see of an arch-bishop. The population numbered 205,712 in 1881. The city stands in the north-west part of the island, on a small bay looking eastwards, the coast forming the chord of a semicircle of mountains which hem in the campagna of Palermo, called the Golden Shell (Conca d'Oro). The most striking point is the mountain of Heirkte, now called Pellegrino (from the grotto of Santa Rosalia, a favourite place of pilgrimage), which rises immediately above both the sea and the city. Palermo has been commonly thought to be an original Phoenician settlement of unknown date,

Railway 0 Scale of Half a Mile 4 Station Pinna =e Bear Bs hoe

Plan of Palermo,

1. Church of S. Giuseppe. 3. Church of S. Salvatore. 4

2. Palazzo del Municipio. 4, Church of S, Giovanni degli Eremiti. but lately Prof. Holm, the historian of ancient Sicily, has suggested that the settlement was originally Greek.' There is no record of any Greek colonies in that part of Sicily, and Panhormus certainly was Phoenician as far back as history can carry us. According to Thucydides (vi. 2), as the Greeks colonized the eastern part of the island, the Pheenicians withdrew to the north-west, and

concentrated themselves at Panhormus, Motye, and Soloeis (Soluntum, Solunto). Like the other Phcenician

1’The coins bearing the name of MIM are no longer assigned to Palermo; but it is probable that certain coins with the name }”¥ (Ziz) are of Panhormus,

-eolonies in the west, Panhormus came under the power of Carthage, and became the head of the Carthaginian ‘%, dominion in Sicily. As such it became the centre of that strife between Europe and Africa, between Aryan and Semitic man, in its later stages between Christendom and slam, which forms the great interest of Sicilian history. Asthe Semitic head of Sicily, it stands opposed to Syracuse ‘ the Greek head. Under the Carthaginian it was the head of the Semitic part of Sicily; when, under the Saracen, all Sicily came under Semitic rule, it was the chief seat of that rule. It has been thrice won for Europe by Greek, Roman, and Norman conquerors—in 276 B.c. by the Epirot king Pyrrhus, in 254 3B.c. by the Roman consuls Aulus Atilius and Gneus Cornelius Scipio, and in 1071 | A.D. by Robert Guiscard and his brother Roger, the first count of Sicily. After the conquest by Pyrrhus, the city was soon recovered by Carthage, but this first Greek occupation was the beginning of a connexion with western Greece and its islands which was revived under various | forms in later times. After the Roman conquest an attempt to recover the city for Carthage was made in 250 B.c., which led only to the great victory of Metellus just under the southern wall of the city. Later in the First Punic War, Hamilcar Barca was encamped for three years on Heirkte or Pellegrino, but the Roman possession of the city was not disturbed. Panhormus remained a ‘ Roman possession, and one of the privileged cities of Sicily, till it was taken by the Vandal Genseric in 440 a.p. It _ afterwards became a part of the East-Gothic dominion, and ‘ _wasrecovered for the empire by Belisarius in 535. It again ‘ remained a Roman possession for exactly three hundred “years, tillit was taken by the Saracens in 835. As Syracuse _ remained to the empire for a much longer time, Panhormus | now became the Mussulman capital. In 1063 the Pisan fleet broke through the chain of the harbour and carried | off much spoil, which was spent on the building of the | great church of Pisa. After the

Norman conquest the city remained for a short time in the hands of the dukes of | Apulia. But in 1093 half the city was ceded to Count | Roger, and in 1122 the rest was ceded to the second Roger. When he took the kingly title in 1130, it became and re- mained the capital and crowning-place of the kingdom, “Prima sedes, corona regis, et regni caput.” During the Norman reigns Palermo was the main centre of Sicilian history, especially during the disturbances in the reign of William the Bad (1154-66). The emperor Henry VI. entered Palermo in 1194, and it was the chief scene of his eruelties. In 1198 his son Frederick, afterwards emperor, was crowned there. His reign was the most brilliant time in the history of the city. After his death Palermo was for amomenta commonwealth. It passed under the dominion of Charles of Anjou in 1266, but he was never crowned there. In the next year, when the greater part of Sicily revolted on behalf of Conradin, Palermo was one of the few towns which was held for Charles ; but the famous Vespers of 1282 put an end to the Angevin dominion. From that time Palermo shared in the many changes of the Sicilian kingdom. In 1535 Charles V. landed there on his return from Tunis. The last kings crowned at _ Palermo were Victor Amadeus of Savoy in 1713, and Charles III. of Bourbon in 1735. The loss of N aples by the Bourbons in 1798, and again in 1806, made Palermo onée more the seat of a separate Sicilian kingdom. The city rose against Bourbon rule in 1820 and in 1848. In 1860 came the final deliverance at the hands of Garibaldi, but with it came also the yet fuller loss of the position

| of Palermo as the capital of a kingdom of Sicily. The original city was built on a tongue of land between two inlets of the sea, There is some question as to their extent inland, and as to the extent of salt and fresh

water. But there is no doubt that the present main street, the Cassaro, Via Marmorea, or Via Toledo (in official language Via Vittorio Emmanuele), represents the line of the ancient town with water on each side of it. Another peninsula with one side to the open sea, meeting as it were the main city at right angles, formed in Polybius’s time the Veapolis or new town, in Saracen times Khalesa, a name which still survives in that of Calsa. It was on this side that both the Romans and the Norman conquerors entered the city. But the-old relations of land and water have long been changed. The two ancient harbours have been dried up; the two peninsulas

have met; the long street has been extended to the present coast-line ; a small inlet called the Cala alone represents the old haven. The city kept its ancient shape till after the time of the Norman kings. It is still easy to mark the site of the two inlets, which now form valleys on each side of the long street. The old state of things fully explains the name IIdvoppos.

There are not many early remains in Palermo. The Phoenician and Greek antiquities in the museum do not belong to the city itself. The earliest existing buildings date from the time of the Norman kings, whose palaces and churches were built in the Saracenic and Byzantine styles prevalent in the island (see Normans). Of Saracen works actually belonging to the time of Saracen occupa- tion there are no whole buildings remaining, but many inscriptions anda good many columns, often inscribed with passages from the Koran, which have been used up again in later buildings, specially in the porch of the metropolitan church. This last was built by Archbishop Walter, a native of England, and consecrated in 1185, on the site of an ancient basilica, which on the Saracen conquest became a mosque, and on the Norman conquest became a church again, first of the Greek and then of the Latin rite. What remains of Walter's building is a rich example of the Christian-Saracen style. This church contains the tombs of the emperor Frederick the Second and his parents, as also the royal throne, higher than that of the archbishop ; for the king of Sicily, as hereditary legate of the see of Rome, was the higher ecclesiastical officer of the two. But the metropolitan church has been so greatly altered in modern times that by far the best example of the style in Palermo, or indeed anywhere, is the chapel of the king's palace at the west end of the city. This is earlier than Walter's church, being the work of King

Roger in 1143. Besides the wonderful display of mosaics,

it is, simply as an architectural whole, beyond all praise. Of the palace itself the greater part has been rebuilt and added in Spanish times, but there are some other parts of Roger's work left, specially the hall called Sala Normanna. : fae |

Alongside of the churches of this Christian-Saracen type, there is another class which follow the Byzantine type. Of these the most perfect is the very small church of San Cataldo, embodied in public buildings. But the best, though much altered, is the church commonly called Martorana, the work of George of Antioch, King Roger's admiral. This is rich with mosaics, among them the portraits of the king and the founder. Both these and the royal chapel have cupolas, and there is a still greater display in that way in the church of San Giovanni degli Eremiti, which it is hard to believe never was a mosque. It is the only church in Palermo with a bell-tower, itself crowned with a cupola.

Most of these buildings are witnesses in different ways to the peculiar position of Palermo in the 12th century as the "city of the threefold tongue," Greek, Arabic, and Latin. Elements from all three sources may be seen, and inscrip- tions abound in all three ae King Roger's sun-

X -— 22

dial in the palace is commemorated in all three, and it is to be noticed that the three inscriptions do not translate one another. In private inscriptions a fourth tongue, the Hebrew, is also often found. For in Palermo, under the

Norman kings, Christians of both rites, Mussulmans, and

Jews were all allowed to flourish after their several fashions. This distinguishes Palermo from some other Sicilian cities which belonged wholly or mainly to one people—Greek, Latin, or Saracen. In many of the early churches of Palermo it is easy to see that they were first designed for the Greek rite, which was gradually supplanted by the Latin. The abiding connexion of Palermo with the races of south-eastern Europe comes out in several other shapes. In Saracen times there was a Slavonic quarter on the southern side of the city, and there is still a colony of United Greeks, or more strictly Albanians, who sought shelter from the Turks, and who keep their national religious usages.

The series of Christian-Saracen buildings is continued in the country houses of the kings which surround the city, La Favara and Mimnerno, the works of Roger, and the better known Ziza and Cuba, the works severally of William the Bad and William the Good. The Saracenic architecture and Arabic inscriptions of these buildings have often caused them to be taken for works of the ancient emirs; but the inscriptions of themselves prove their date. Different as is their style, their mere shape is not very unlike that of a contemporary keep in England or Normandy.

All these buildings are the genuine work of Sicilian art, the art which had grown up in the island through the presence of the two most civilized races of the age, the Greek and the Saracen. Later in the 12th century the Cistercians brought in a type of church which, without any great change of mere style, has a very different effect, a high choir taking in some sort the place of the cupola. The greatest example of this is the neighbouring metro-politan church of Monreale; more closely connected with Palermo is the church of San Spirito, outside the city on the south side, the scene of the Vespers. Palermo is full of churches and monasteries of later date, as in Saracen times it was crowded with mosques. But only a few are of any architectural importance, and they often simply range with the houses.

Domestic and civil buildings, from the 12th century to the 15th, abound in Palermo, and they present several types of genuine national art, quite unlike anything in Italy. The later houses employ a very flat arch, the use of which goes on in some of the houses and smaller churches of the Renaissance, some of which are very pleasing. But the general aspect of the streets is later still, dating from mere Spanish times. Still many of the houses are stately in their way, with remarkable heavy balconies. The most striking point in the city is the central space at the cross- ing of the main streets, called the Quattro Cantoni. Here the eye catches the mountains at three ends and the sea at the fourth. But none of the chief buildings come into this view, and the intersecting streets suggest a likeness, which is wholly deceptive, to the four limbs of a Roman chester. “Two indeed of the four are formed by the ancient Via Marmorea, but the Via Macqueda, which supplies the other two, was cut through a mass of small streets in Spanish times.

The city walls remain during the greater part of their extent, but they are of no great interest. The gates also are modern, — The best is Porta Nuova, near the king's palace, built in 1584 to commemorate the return of Charles V. fifty years earlier, The design is far better than could have been looked for at that time. Outside the walls, in the immediate neighbourhood of the city, there are, besides

the royal country houses and the church of San Spirito, several buildings of the Norman reigns. Among these are the oldest church in or near Palermo, the Lepers' church founded by the first conqueror or deliverer, Count Roger, and the bridge over the forsaken stream of the Oreto, built in King Roger's day by the admiral George. There are also some later medizeval houses and towers of some importance. These all lie on to the south of the city, to. wards the hill called Monte-Griffone (Griffon = Greek), and the Giant's Cave, which has furnished rich stores for the paleontologist. On the other side, towards Pellegrino, the change in the ancient haven has caused a new one to grow up, but there is little of artistic or historic interest on this side.

Besides works dealing with Sicily generally, the established Jocal work on Palermo is Descrizione di Palermo Antico, by Salvatore Morso, Palermo, 1827. Modern researeh and criticism have been applied in Die Mittelalterliche Kunst in Palermo, by Anton Springer, Bonn, 1869; Historische Topographie von Panormus, by Julius Sehubring, Litbeek, 1870; Studii di Storia Palermitana, by Adolf Holm, Palermo, 1880. See also ‘‘ The Normans in Palermo,” in the third series of Historical Essays, by E. A. Freeman, London, 1879. The deseription of Palermo in the second volume of Gsel- fels's guide-book, Unter-Italien und Sicilien, Leipsic, leaves nothing to wish for. (E. A. F.)

PALES, an old Italian deity, worshipped in the festival of the Palilia at Rome on the 21st April. Like most of the ancient Italian deities, Pales is little more than a name to us; the authorities are at variance whether the name belonged to a goddess or toa god. In this festival Pales was invoked to grant protection and increase to flocks and herds; the worshippers entreated forgiveness for any unintentional profanation of holy places of which they

might have been guilty, and sprang through fires of straw as a purificatory rite. The German Jfacfeuer, which remained in use till a very recent date, was a precisely similar custom; the intention was to propitiate the wrath of the deity for any neglect of her service before the sum- mer began, and so ensure her favour to the flocks. The foundation of Rome, dies natalis Romx, was commemorated on this same day,—a custom still kept up. The name Palilia is often written, by dissiniilation, Parilia.

PALESTINE. As Palestine, geographically considered, forms the southernmost third of Syrra, its general geogra- phical relations, as well as its geological structure, its botany, &c., will be treated under that heading. In the matter of climate, on the other hand, it holds a more or less independent position; and this is more strikingly the case with its ethnographic characteristics, at least so far as the pre-Christian period is concerned. Purely historical questions have already been discussed in the article ISRAEL.

By Palestine is to be understood in general the country seized and mainly occupied by the Hebrew people. That portion of territory is consequently excluded which they held only for a time, or according to an ideal demarcation (cf. Numbers xxxiv., from the older source) by which the land of the Israelites was made to extend from the “river of Egypt” to Hamath ; but, on the other hand, that other ancient tradition is accepted which fixes the extreme borders at Dan (at the foot of Hermon) in the north and at Beersheba in the south, thus excluding the Lebanon district and a portion of the southern desert. In like manner, though with certain limitations to be afterwards mentioned, the country east of Jordan stretched from the foot of Hermon to the neighbourhood of the Arnon. Towards the west the natural boundary—a purely ideal one so far as occupation by the Israelites was concerned— was the Mediterranean, but towards the east it is difficult to fix on any physical feature more definite than the beginning of the true steppe region. ‘That the territory of Israel extended as far as Salcah (east of Bosra at the foot of the Hauran Mountains) is the statement of an ideal rather

FALES TINE

than an historical frontier (Josh. xiii. 11). Palestine thus lies between 31° and 33° 20’ N. lat.; its south-west point is situated about 34° 20’ E. long.,

some distance south of Gaza (Ghazza), its north-west point about 35° 15’ E. long., atthe mouth of the Litany (Kasimfye). As the country west of the Jordan stretches east as far as 35° 35’ it has a breadth in the north of about 23 miles and in the south of about 80 miles. Its length may be put down as 150 miles; and, according to the English engineers, whose survey included Beersheba, it has an area of 6040 square miles. For the country east of the Jordan no such precise figures are available. The direct distance from Hermon to Arnon is about 120 miles, and the area at the most may be estimated at 3800 square miles. The whole territory of Palestine is thus of very small extent, equal, in fact, to not more than a sixth of England. The classical writers ridicule its insignificant size.

General Geography.—Palestine, as thus defined, consists of very dissimilar districts, and borders on regions of the most diverse character. To the south lies a mountainous desert, to the east the elevated plateau of the Syrian steppe, to the north Lebanon and Anti-Libanus, and to the west the Mediterranean. In the general configuration of the country the most striking feature is that it does not rise uninterruptedly from the sea-coast to the eastern plateau, but is divided into two unequal portions by the deep Jordan valley, which ends in an inland lake (see JorDAN). Nor does the Jordan, like the Nile in Egypt, simply flow through the heart of the country and form its main artery ; it is the line of separation between regions that may almost be considered as quite distinct, and that too (as will afterwards appear) in their ethnographic and political aspects. This is especially the case in the southern sections of the country; for even at the Lake of Tiberias the Jordan valley begins to cut so deep that crossing it from either direction involves a considerable ascent.

The country west of Jordan is thus a hilly and moun- tainous region which, forming as it were a southward con- tinuation of Lebanon, slopes unsymmetrically east and west, and stretches south, partly as a plateau, beyond the limits of Palestine. The mountain range consists of a great number of individual ridges and summits, from which valleys, often rapidly growing deeper, run east and west. Towards the Mediterranean the slope is very gradual, especi- ally in the more southern parts, where the plain along the coast is also at its broadest. About three-fourths of the cis-Jordan country lies to the west of the watershed. Towards the Dead Sea, on the

other hand, the mountains end in steep cliffs; and, as the Jordan valley deepens, the country draining towards it sinks more abruptly, and becomes more and more inhospitable. The plateaus back from the coast-cliffs of the Dead Sea have been desert from ancient times, and towards the east they form gullies of appalling depth. On the other side of the Jordan the mountains have quite a different character, nising from the river gorge almost everywhere as a steep wall (steepest towards the south) which forms the edge of the great upland stretching east to the Euphrates.

Geology.—The mountains both east and west of the J ordan consist in the main of Cretaceous limestone ; num- mMulitic limestone appears but rarely, as on Carmel, Ebal, and Gerizim. Towards the Dead Sea the rock is traversed by hornblende and flint. Formations of recent origin, such as dunes of sea-sand and the alluvium of rivers and lakes, cover the western margin of Palestine (i.e., the whole of Philistia and the plain of Sharon) and the entire valley of the Jordan. Plutonic or volcanic rocks occur occasionally in the country east of Jordan; less frequently in the Country to the west, as, for example, in the mountains round the plain of Jezreel.

171

Physical Divisions,—The mountain system west of Jordan must be broken up into a number of separate groups, which, it may be remarked, are of political as well as physical significance. A first group, consisting of the country north of the plain of Jezreel, may be subdivided into a large northern portion with summits reaching a height of 4000 feet, and a smaller southern portion not exceeding 2000 feet. The former, the Upper Galilee of antiquity, is a mountainous region with a somewhat intricate system of valleys, stretching from the Kadsimfye in the north toa line drawn from Acre (“Akka) towards the Lake of Tiberias. Of the valleys (more than thirty in number) which trend westwards to the Mediterranean, the Wadi Hubeishtye, Wadi “Ezztye, and Wadi el-Kurn deserve to be mentioned. Not far west of the watershed is a plateau-like upland draining northwards to the Kdsimiye. The slope to the Jordan is steep. Jebel Jermak, a forest-clad eminence 3934 feet above the sea, is the highest massif. The whole territory is fruitful, and forms decidedly one of the most beautiful as well as best-wooded districts of Palestine. The plain along the Mediterranean is on the

average hardly a mile broad ; between cliffand sea there is at times barely room for a narrow road, and at some places indeed a passage has had to be cut out in the rock. South of Ras en-Nakiura, on the other hand, this plain widens con- siderably ; as far as Acre the portion named after this town is about 4 miles broad.

The mountain structure of the second subsection, or Lower Galilee, is of a different character,—low chains run- ning east and west in well-marked lines, and enclosing a number of elevated plains. Of these plains the most im- portant is that of Buttauf (plain of Zebulun or Asochis), an extremely fertile (in its eastern parts marshy) depression 9 miles long and 2 broad, lying 400 to 500 feet above the sea, between hills 1700 feet high. To the south-west, about 700 feet above the sea, is the smaller but equally fertile plain of Tor‘an, 5 miles long and 1 mile broad. Among the mountains the most conspicuous landmarks are Nebi Sa‘in (1602) near Nazareth, Jebel es-Sth (1838), and especially, to the east of this last, Jebel et-Tur or Tabor (1843), an isolated wooded cone which rises on all sides with consider- able regularity, and commands the plain of Esdraelon. Eastwards the country sinks by a succession of steps: of these the lava-strewn plateau of Sahel el-Ahma, which lies above the cliffs that look down on the Lake of Tiberias, but is 300 feet below the level of the Mediterranean, deserves mention. The principal valleys of the whole region are (1), towards the west, the great basin of Nahr Na‘mdn (Belus of the ancients), whose main branch is Wadi Khalztin, known in its upper course as Wadi Sha’‘fb or Wadi Khashab, and, farther south, the basin of the Wadi Melek (Wadi Rumméni), which flows into the Nahr el- Mukatta‘ (Kishon); and (2) towards the east the rapid-flowing Wadi Rubuditye, Wadi el-Hamam, and Wadi Fejjas.

A certain connexion exists between the plains already mentioned (those of Buttauf, Acre, &c.) and the great plain which, with an average height of 250 feet above the sea, stretches south from the mountains of Galilee and separates them from the spurs of the mountains of Samaria (the central portion of the cis-Jordan country). This great plain, which in ancient times was known as the plain of Megiddo, and also as the valley of Jezreel or plain of Esdraelon, and which now bears the name of Merj Ibn ‘Amir (pasture land of the son of “Amir), is one of the main features of the whole cis-Jordan region (Josephus called it the Great Plain par excellence), and

presents the only easy passage from the coast districts to the Jordan valley and the country beyond. The larger portion lies west of the watershed, which at El-‘Afule is 260 feet above

the Mediterranean. In the narrower application of the name, the whole plain forms a large triangle with its southern corner near Jennin and its western near the mouth of the gorge of the Nahr el-Mukatta‘ (for here the hills of Nazareth shoot out towards Carmel); and connected with it are various small plains partly running up into the hills. The plain to the south of Acre, in which marshes are formed by the Kishon and Na‘mén, and various other recesses towards north and east really belong to it. To the north-east stretches a valley bounded in one direction by Jebel Duhy (the Lesser Hermon, a range 15 miles long and 1690 feet high) and in the other direction by the hills of Nazareth and Mount Tabor (where lie Iksal and Deburlye); then to the east of the watershed lies the Bire valley, and the well-watered Wadi Jalud from Zer‘in (Jezreel) falls away towards the Jordan between the slopes of Jebel Duhy and the more southern range of Jebel Fuku‘a (Mountains of Gilboa). And finally towards Jennin in the south lies the secondary plain of ‘Arrane. Quite recently it has been proposed to construct in the Merj Ibn ‘Amir the beginning of a railway system for Palestine, and to turn to account the wonderful fertility of its rich basaltic loam which now lies almost completely waste, though in ancient times the whole country was densely peopled and well-cultivated.

To the south of the plain of Jezreel, which belongs to the northern system of Palestine, it is much more difficult to discover natural divisions. In the neighbour- hood of the watershed, which here runs almost regularly in great zigzags, lie a number of plains of very limited extent :—the plain of ‘Arraébe (700 to 800 feet above the sea) connected south-east with the Merj el-Ghuruk, which having no outlet becomes a lake in the rainy season; the plain of Fendekumtye (1200 feet) ; and the plain of Rujib, east of Shechem, connected with the plain of Mukhna (1600 to 1800 feet) to the south-west. The highest mountains too are generally near the watershed. In the east lies the south-westward continuation of Gilboa. In the west Mount Carmel (highest point 1810 feet, monastery 470) meets the projection of the hills of

Nazareth, and sends its wooded ridge far to the north-west so as to form the southern boundary of the Bay of Acre, and render the harbour of Haifa, the little town at its foot, the best on all the coast of Palestine. The belt of land along the shore, barely 200 yards wide, is the northern end of the lowland plain, which, gradually widening, stretches south towards Egypt. At Athlit (9 miles south) it is already 2 miles broad, and it continues much the same for 21 miles to the Nahr ez-Zerka (named by the ancients after the crocodile which is still to be found in its marshes), where a small ridge El-Khashm projects from the highlands. South of Nahr ez-Zerka begins the marvellously fertile plain of Sharon, which with a breadth of 8 miles near Czesarea and 11 to 12 milesnear Yafa (Jaffa), stretches 44 miles farther to the Nahr Rubin, and slopes upwards towards the mountains to a height of about 200 feet above the sea. Its surface is broken by lesser eminences, and ee by a few coast streams, notably the Nahr el-

alik, _ Between the maritime plain and the mountains proper lies a multiform system of terraces, with a great number of small ridges and valleys. In this the only divisions are those formed by the basins of the larger wadis, which, though draining extensive districts, are here too for the most part dry. They all have a general east and west direction. First comes the basin of the Nahr Mefjir, bounded south by the Bayazid range, and debouching a little to the south of Cesarea ; and about 5 miles farther south is the mouth of the Iskandertine, which is distin- guished in its upper portion as the WAdi Sharir, running

east as far up as Nabulus (Shechem), hardly a mile west of the watershed. It is in this neighbourhood that we find the highest portions of the mountains of Samaria—Jebe] Eslamiye or Ebal, 3077 feet high, to the north of Shechem, and Jebel et-Tur or GERiziM (q.v.), 2849 feet high. Both are bare and rugged, and consist, like all the loftier eminences in the district, of hard limestone capped with chalk. It was generally possible, however, to carry cultivation up to the top of all these mountains, and in ancient times the highlands of Samaria are said to have been clothed with abundant forest. From the watershed eastward the important Wadi Fara (also known as Wadi Kerdwa in its lower course) descends to the J ordan. Returning to the

western slope, we find to the south of Nahr el-Falik the basin of the‘ Auja, which after it leaves the hills is fed by perennial (partly palustrine) sources, and falls into the sea 5 miles north of Jaffa. As at this place the watershed bends eastward, this extensive basin stretches proportionally far in that direction; and, the right side of the Jordan valley being also very broad, the mountains of the eastern slope soon begin to sink rapidly, On the watershed, not far from Jifna, lies Tell Astir (3378 feet), and with this summit of hard grey limestone begin the hills of ancient Judah. South of the ‘Auja comes the Nahr Rubin (near Jabne), perennial up to the Wadi Surdr (Sorek of Scripture ?), and reaching, as Wadi Bét Hanina, as far as the country north of Jerusalem; the Wadi el- Werd is one of its tributaries. Farther south begins the maritime plain of Philistia, which stretches 40 miles along the coast, and, though now but partially under cultivation, consists of a light brown loamy soil of extraordinary fertility. It is crossed by numerous ridges of hills; and to the south of Ashdod (Ezdud) the highlands advance westwards, and form a, hilly district composed of horizontal strata of limestone, sometimes considered part of the lowlands (Shephela), and separated from the more elevated region in the interior by a ridge more or less parallel with the line of the watershed. ‘The basins to the south of the Rubin are those of Wadi Sukereir, which runs up towards Tell-es-Safi in one direction and to Bét Jibrin in another, of Wadi el-Hesy, and finally of WAdi Ghazza, which forms the proper boundary of Palestine towards the south, runs past Beersheba as Wadi es-Seba, and receives the Wadi el-Khalil (Hebron) from the north-east.

As regards the central parts of the country, the mountain- ous district north of Jerusalem is now known as Jebel el- Kuds, of which the loftiest point is the summit of the Nebi Samwil (2935), rising above the plateau of El-Jib. Near Jerusalem the watershed lies at a height of about 2600 feet. Wild deep-sunk valleys descend eastwards to the Jordan ; the Wadi Kelt, Wadi en-Nar (Kedron valley), Wadi ed-Dereje, and southernmost Wadi Seyal deserve to be mentioned. The country sloping to the Dead Sea falls in a triple succession of terraces,—a waterless treeless waste (in ancient times known as the desert of Judah), which has never been brought under cultivation, but in the first Christian centuries was the chosen abode of monasticism. To the north of Hebron, in the neighbour- hood of Hulhul, lie the highest elevations of this part of the central highlands (up to 3500 feet), which may

be distinguished as the mountains of Hebron. Towards Yutta (Juttah) in the south is a sudden step; there begins a plateau at a height of about 2600 feet, but 500 feet below the Hebron watershed. It consists of open wolds and arable land, the soil being a white soft chalk ; but there are no wells. Southward another step leads to the white marl desert of Beersheba, abounding in caves. In ancient times this southern district was called the Negeb 3 it extends far to the south, but is properly a part of Palestine. The country was in former times a steppe region without

definite boundaries, and consequently the abode of nomadic herdsmen.

The Jordan valley having already been described in a separate article (vol. xiil. p. 746), we may pass at once to a brief sketch of the physical character of the country east of Jordan (compare also the article GILEAD, vol. x. p. 594). This‘is a more difficult task for several reasons : first, no connected series of investigations and measure- ments has been made in this region; and, secondly, as the ideal demarcation of the book of Joshua is a hardly sufficient basis on which to build, and the information about the actual state of matters supplied by other ancient sources is insufficient, it is impossible to determine the limits of the country as far as it was occupied by the Israelites.

In the opinion of the present writer, the plain of BasHAN (q.v.) can hardly be assigned to Palestine. To the south of the Yarmuk (Hieromax of the Greeks and Romans, Hebrew name unknown), which falls into the Jordan below the Lake of Tiberias, begins the Cretaceous formation ; only in the east of the country the basalt of the Hauran territory stretches farther south. Ascending from the Yarmuk, we first of all reach a mountainous district of moderate elevation (about 2000 feet) rising towards the south ; this is Jebel “Ajluin, which abounds in caves, and, according to recent explorers, is extremely well watered and of great fertility—the whole surface being covered with pasture such as not even Galilee can show. East- wards are massive ridges as much as 4000 feet in height —Jebel Kafkafa and especially Mardd—separating this territory from the waterless desert lying at no great depth below. The plateau stretches away to the south of the deep gorge of the perennial Zerka (Jabbok), and reaches a considerable height in

Jebel Jil‘4d (Gilead in the stricter sense). The landmark of the region is Jebel ‘Osha, to the north of Es-Salt, so-called from the traditional tomb of Hosea. From the deep-sunk Jordan valley the mountains rise grandly in terraces, partly abrupt and rocky ; and, while fig trees and vines flourish down in the lower levels, valonia oaks, Laurus Pinus, cedars, and arbutus grow on the declivities. Owing to its perennial springs, the interior terrace of the country, Mishdr, is a splendid pasture land, famous as such in ancient times; and abundance of wood and water renders this whole middle region of the trans- Jordan country one of the most luxuriant and beautiful in Palestine. Only a few individual summits, such as Jebel Neb’ (Mount Nebo), are noticeable in the ridges that descend to the Jordan valley. The country from the Zerka southward to the Méjib (Arnon) is now known as El Belka; and beyond that begins the land of Moab proper, which also consists of a steep mountain-wall through which deep gorges cut their way to the plain, and behind this of a plateau poorly watered but dotted over with ancient ruins. In this district, too, there are a few individual summits. And here also a mountain-wall Separates the plain from the eastern desert; and the mountain district continues farther south along the Araba (of. IpumRa, vol. xii. p. 699).

Water.—Palestine is not exceptionally deficient in water. Perennial Streams, indeed, are scarce, and were so in antiquity ; but except in certain districts, as the desert of Judah, the country is not badly supplied with springs. Tn keeping with the structure of the rocks, these usually break out at the junction of the hard and soft strata. Thus abundant springs of good water occur on the very summit of the cis-Jordan country, as, for example, near Hebron, at Nabulus, and in Galilee ; and, though few are found in the immediate neighbourhood of Jerusalem, more than forty may be counted within a radius of 15 to 20 miles round the city. There is no water in the low hilly

ie

country behind the coast region; and, though in its northern portion some fairly large streams take their rise, the same is true of the coast-region itself. Rising as they do at the foot of a great mountain range, the most abundant springs in Palestine are those of the Jordan, especially those near Banias

and Tell-el-Kadi. The mountains of Gilead are rich in excellent water. A considerable number of hot springs occur throughout the country, especially in and near the Jordan valley; they were used in ancient times for curative purposes, and might still be so used. The water of the bath of E]-Hammam, about 2 miles south of Tiberias, has a temperature of 137° Fahr., and the spring near the Zerka Main, formerly known as Callirrhoe, as much as 142° Fahr. Hot sulphur springs also occur on the west coast of the Dead Sea. Many of the springs in Palestine are slightly brackish. From the earliest times cisterns have naturally played a great part in the country ; they are found everywhere in great numbers. Generally they consist of reservoirs of masonry widening out downwards, with a narrow opening above often covered with heavy stones. Open reservoirs were also constructed to collect rain and spring water. Such reservoirs (pools; Arab., birka; Hebrew, berékha) are especially numerous near Jerusalem and Hebron; the largest still extant are the three so-called Pools of Solomon, in Wadi Urtas (Artas), arranged in steps at a little distance from each other. Besides the conduits connected with this gigantic work, fine remains of aqueducts of Roman date are found near Jericho, in the ruins of many towns in the trans-Jordan country, at Sefurfye (Sepphoris) in Galilee, in ancient Cesarea, &c. Many of these aqueducts, as well as many now ruined cisterns, could be restored without much trouble, and would give a great stimulus to the fertility and cultivation of the country.

Climate and Vegetation.—Palestine may be considered part of the subtropical zone. At the summer solstice the sun stands 10 degrees south of the zenith; the shortest day is thus one of ten hours, the longest of only fourteen. In a few points, as already remarked, there is a difference between Palestine and the rest of Syria. The extensive maritime plain and the valley of the Jordan give rise to important climatic contrasts. From its vicinity to the sea the former region is naturally warmer than the highlands. The mean annual temperature is 70° Fahr., the extremes being 50° and 85°. The harvest ripens two weeks earlier than among the mountains. Citrons and oranges flourish ; the palm also grows, but without fruiting; melons are largely cultivated; and pomegranate bushes are to be seen. Less rain falls than in the mountains. Another climatic zone consists of the highlands (from 500 to 3000 feet above the sea), which were the real home of the Israelites. The average temperature of Jerusalem, which may be taken as

pretty much that of the upland as a whole, is 62°, but the extremes are considerable, as the thermometer may sink several degrees below the freezing point, though frost and snow never last long. The rain- fall of 20 inches is distributed over about fifty days. In this climate the vine, the fig, and the olive succeed admir- ably. Even in the southernmost districts (of the Negeb), as well as throughout the whole country, there are traces of ancient wine-growing. A large share of the oil is consumed at home, partly in the manufacture of soap. The mountain ridges in this zone are for the most part bare, but the slopes and the valleys are green, and beauty and fertility increase as we advance northwards. In regard to the climate of the third zone, see JoRDAN (vol. xill. ut sup.). The barley harvest here ends with the middle of April. The thermometer rarely sinks below 77°, and goes as high as 130°. The fourth zone, the elevated plateau of the trans-Jordan region, has an extreme climate.

174

The thermometer may frequently fall during the night below the freezing point, and rise next day to 80°. The mountains are often covered with snow in winter. Whilst the rainfall in the Jordan valley is very slight, the pre- cipitation in the eastern mountains is again considerable ; as in western Palestine the dewfall is heavy. From this short survey it appears that Palestine is a country of strong contrasts. Ofcourse it was the same in antiquity; climate, rainfall, fertility, and productiveness cannot have seriously altered. Even if we suppose that there was a somewhat richer clothing of wood and trees in the central districts of the country, yet on the whole the general appearance must have been much the same as at present. To the stranger from the steppes arriving at a favourable season of the year Palestine may still give the impression of a land flowing with milk and honey. The number of cisterns and reservoirs is proof enough that it was not better supplied with water in ancient times; but, on the other hand, the numerous ruins of places which were still flour- ishing during the Roman period show that at one time (more especially in the southern districts, which now possess but few inhabited localities) cultivation must have been carried on more extensively and thoroughly. In general the country enjoyed the greatest security, and con- sequently the greatest prosperity, under Western rule, which even protected the country east of Jordan (at present

partly beyond the control of the Government) from the inroads of the Bedouins. The Romans also did excellent service by the construction of roads, portions of which (as well as Roman milestones and bridges) still exist in good preservation in many places. Thus it cannot be denied that the resources of the country were formerly better developed than at present. Like all the lands of the nearer East, Palestine suffers from the decay of the branches of industry which still flourished there in the Middle Ages. The harbours are not of sufficient size for large vessels; that of Haifa alone is capable of any development. The road from Yafé to Jerusalem is the only one in the country fit for carriages. The proposal to construct a railway along this route (for which a firman was granted in 1875) is renewed from time to time; but it will be hard to carry it out, as, in spite of the pilgrims (who, besides, are restricted to one period of the year), the passenger traffic is not large enough to be remunerative, and commercial traffic there is almost none. At the same time the formation of means of communica- tion would increase the productiveness of the country. The culture of olives and export of oil are especially capable of expansion. As regards the industrial arts, souvenirs for the pilgrims, rosaries, carved work in olive wood and mother-of-pearl, &c., are produced at Jerusalem and Bethlehem, and to some extent are exported. Wheat from the Hauran is also shipped at Acre and elsewhere, but neither exports nor imports are commercially important. The salt farming, which could easily be carried on at the Dead Sea and the deposit of salt to the south of it, is hampered by the difficulty of bringing the produce up the steep paths to the top of the mountains. In the valley of the Jordan all the products of the tropics could with little trouble be cultivated. Bee-keeping still receives attention, but might also be extended.

Political Geography.—Evidence of an early occupation of Palestine is afforded by the stone monuments (cromlechs and circles of stones), which are found more especially in the country east of Jordan, but also in the country to the west. ‘To what period they belong in this part of the world is as doubtful as it is elsewhere ; but it may be remarked that stories of a gigantic primeval population once prevailed in Palestine. To what race these people may have belonged is, however, unknown. For thousands

of years Palestine was an object of conflict between the vast monarchies of western Asia. As Egypt, whenever she sought to extend her power, was from the very position of the country naturally led to make herself mistress of the east coast of the Mediterranean, so, on the other hand, there were no physical boundaries to prevent the westward advance into Palestine of the Asiatic empires. For both Egypt and the East indeed the country formed a natural thoroughfare, in time of war for the forces of the contend. ing powers, in time of peace for the trading caravans which carried on the interchange of African and Asiatic merchandise.

One of the oldest of the still extant historical documents in regard to the geography of Palestine is the inscription on the pylones of the temple of Karnak, on which Thothmes ITI. (in the beginning of the 16th century B.c.) has handed down an account of his military expedition to western Asia. Many of the topographical names of Palestine there mentioned are certainly hard to identify ; a number, how- ever, such as Iphu for Yaf4, Luden for Lydda, Magedi for Megiddo, &c., are beyond dispute. The lists show that these names are of extreme antiquity, dating from before the Hebrew immigration. There is also a hieratic papyrus of the 14th century B.c., which contains a description of a carriage journey through Syria made by an Egyptian officer, possibly for the collection of tribute. Bethshean and the Jordan, among other localities, appear to be men- tioned in this narrative, but the identification of most of the names is very dubious. Another foreign source of in- formation as to the geography of Palestine can only be alluded to—the records contained in the cuneiform inscrip- tions, which mention a number of the most important towns:—Akku (Akko, Acre), Dwru (Dor), Magidu (Megiddo), Yappu (Jaffa), Asdudu (Ashdod), Iskaluna (Askalon), Hazzatu (Ghazza, Gaza), Altaku (Eltheke), Ursalimmu (Jerusalem), and Samarina (Samaria), and— of course only from the 8th century, when they came into hostile contact with Assyria—the countries of Judah, Moab, Ammon, and Edom.

The information supplied by the Old Testament enables us to form only an extremely imperfect conception of the earliest ethnographic condition of the country. The population to the east of the Jordan was already, it is clear, sharply marked off from that to the west. In the latter region dwelt an agricultural people which had already reached no inconsiderable degree of

civilization. Closely related to the Phoenicians, they were distinguished as Canaanites from the name of their country, which originally applied to the maritime belt and afterwards to the whole cis-Jordan territory (vol. iv. p. 62), Though for particular reasons they are placed among the Hamitic races in Gen. x., many modern investigators are of opinion that, according to our principles of ethnographic classifica- tion, they were Semitic; their language, at any rate, was very similar to Hebrew. The separation of Canaanites from Semites may have been due, in part at least, to the fact that a deep contrast made itself felt' between them and the Hebrews, though they were only, perhaps, an older result of Arabic emigration. The enumeration of the names of the various branches of the Canaanites leaves it an extremely difficult task to form a clear idea of their tribal distribution ; names of separate sections, 100, like that of the Amorites, are sometimes applied to the Canaanites as a whole. The Amorites were at any rate the most powerful tribe; they' dwelt in the southern portion of Canaan, as well as more especially in the northern parts of the country east of Jordan. About the others nothing more can be said save that the Perizzites, Hivites, and Girgashites dwelt in the heart of Canaan and the Jebusites near Jerusalem. The Philistines occupied

the south-west of the country; an Arabian population was settled in the south and south-west. Amalekites and Midianites, and the Kenites, a branch of the latter, early entered into close relationship with the Israelites, and along with them took possession of the extreme south, where, however, they remained nomadic. Of peoples closely akin to the Israelites may be mentioned the Moabites, the Ammonites, and the Edomites. Before the arrival of the Israelites the Moabites had developed a certain degree of power. The district, bordering on Edom, which they occupied in the south of the country east of Jordan, was pounded on the south by Wadi el-Ahsa (called in Is. xv. 7 the brook of the willows), an affluent of the southern part of the Dead Sea, and on the north stretched far beyond the Arnon (originally, indeed, to the north end of the sea, as in later times the country near Jericho was known as the steppes of Moab). Its eastern frontier must always have been matter of dispute, the relations of the nomadic tribes of the Syrian desert being the same as they are now, and contests with the

Ammonites taking place from time to time. The Ammonites, a closely related people, lay to the north-east of Moab, east of the later possessions of Israel; but, as they were in the main nomadic, their frontiers were of a shifting character (see yol.i. p. 742). The Edomites (also nomadic) were situated in the south of the country east of Jordan ; how far, at an earlier period, they extended their encampments to the west of Jordan and into the Negeb district cannot be with certainty decided.

It depends on the conception we form as to the general tribal relations of Israel how we represent to our- selves the method in which the settlement of the country by the tribes was accomplished as they passed from the nomadic to the fixed mode of life (cf. IsranL, JosEPH, Jupau). To explain this tribal relationship is not the task of a geographical sketch; it is enough for the present pur- pose to call attention to the fact that the account of the rise of the Israclitic tribes as it has come down to us is in great measure mythical or the product of later reflexion ; even the number twelve is made out only with difficulty. Further, the settlements of the several tribes must be by no means conceived as administrative districts after the fashion of the modern canton ; and, thirdly, the view that the several tribes had, after a general invasion of the country, their tribal territories allotted by Joshua (as we now read in the book of Joshua) is taken from the most modern, post-exilic, source of the Hexateuch, and stands in glaring opposition to the accounts in other books, according to which the conquest was in the main a peaceful one, and the assimilation with the native Canaanites gradually effected. The tribes which settled to the north of the great plain, especially those on the sea-coast, appear to have been much less successful in keeping free from Canaanitish influence; gradually, however, as the state and religion of Israel grew stronger, Israelitish influence made its way more and more even there. The heart of the country was the central portion later known as Samaria. The opposition between this district and the southern part of the country took shape at an early date. In the extreme south the Simeonites retained their nomadic way of life, and were by degrees mixed up with other wandering tribes. Down into the time of the early kings the dominion of the powerful Philistines stretched far into the centre of the country, and gave the first impulse to a firmer concentration of the energies of Israel. But the Israelites did not succeed in forcing their way in the southern regions down to the sea ; in culture and well- established political

institutions they were far surpassed a the Philistines. As regards the geography of the

ilistine territory, the position of four of their chief

175

towns, Gaza, Askelon, Ashdod, and Ekron, is known ; but it has not been ascertained where the fifth, Gath, was situated, though it must have lain not far from the present Bét Jibrin.—No definite boundaries can be assigned to the Israelitic country to north, south, or west.

Up to the conquest of Jebus the most important city of the southern region was undoubtedly Hebron (see vol. xi. p- 608). Clans belonging to Judah had there combined with others of alien origin; and the portions of this tribe which dwelt in the farthest south had become mingled with elements from the tribe of Simeon, while on the other hand the Simeonites acquired certain places in the territory of Judah. In regard to the south country in general, we obtain in the Old Testament the most detailed description of the frontiers, but the reason that weare able to follow it with so much accuracy is that the statements refer exclusively to post-exilic times, though it must be assumed that a certain recollection was still preserved of the original boundary between Judah and Benjamin. The line of the marches of the northern tribes, as indeed this whole system of demarcation, frequently follows the configuration of the ground, but occasionally becomes vague and doubtful. Especially striking is the omission of the districts of Samaria ; it seems that at the time of the codification of the system this district was little known to the Judxans. A great deal of trouble has been expended—more especially since the rise of a more scientific exploration of the country—in verifying the old placenames which are known from the Bible, the writings of Eusebius, and the Talmud. The task is rendered much easier by the fact that in Palestine, as in every country where the ethnographic conditions have not been too violently revolutionized, a large number of ancient names of places have been preserved in use for thousands of years, often with only insignificant changes of form—a state of matters to which the continuous existence in the country of Semitic-speaking people has powerfully contributed. The identification of the ancient with the modern names demands none the less thorough historical and philological investigation.

Through the labours of Robinson and Guérin we now possess a list of the names in use at least in the country west of Jordan. The list of six thousand names collected during the English survey by Licuts. Conder and Kitchener is particularly rich,—though it must be borne in mind that the orthography in many cases has not been determined with sufficient accuracy, and that a revision of the collection on the spot by a trained Arabic scholar would be desirable. By the help of this abundant material many of the ancient place-names can undoubtedly be assigned to their localities, and in part at least the direction of the tribal boundaries as they were conceived by the author of the lists preserved in the book of Joshua can be followed. In regard to a large number of places, Joshua leaves us to mere conjecture ; and the investiga- tions and combinations hitherto effected are (in the opinion of the present writer) far from sufficient for the construc- tion of such a map of ancient Palestine as the Palestine Exploration Fund has published. The difficulties of the case are further increased by the fact that the ancient localities were at an early date fixed by tradition. An undoubted example of this is furnished by the grave of Rachel between Jerusalem and Bethlehem, the localizing of which goes back to an ancient gloss on Gen. xxxv. WW. Even in the case of apparently well-established identi- fications such as Beitin=Bethel, the question may be raised whether in reality artificial tradition may not have been at work, and ancient Bethel have to be sought elsewhere. Too much care, therefore, cannot be brought to bear on the reconstruction of the ancient geography of Palestine.

It lies beyond the purpose of the present article to enter into the | the western slope of the Hauran Mountains. From these facts it details of the ancient tribal demarcation of Palestine, especially as | is evident that in the traus-J ordan region north of the Yarmuk the tradition, as has been explained, is relatively late and artificial. | and east of the Lake of Tiberias, there were at least a few Israelite Asan illustration of our view of the subject we may select the | colonies; but they occupied mercly scattered points, and thus in boundaries of Judah itself (Josh. xv.). Here the first thing that this district also the allotment of the country in the book of Joshua strikes the reader is that the westcrn frontier as there described for | must be regarded as a mere pious wish. Other peoples settled in the earliest times is

purely ideal, inasmuch as it includes the land | the Hauran, and the ever-advancing Arameans soon diminished of the Philistines. Inconsistencies of view are apparent in the | and absorbed these Israelitic possessions. ascription of certain places in Judah to Simeon and of others to Dan. The tribes of Israel made a great step in the conquest of the A further difficulty arises from the discrepancies between the Masso- | country when, under the early kings, they became subject to a retic text and that of the Septuagint in regard to the number of | single central government. They were now strong enough to seize towns belonging to Judah. As regards the southern boundaries many of the walled towns which the Canaanites had hitherto described in Josh. xv. 2 sq., the course of the line, in our opinion, | occupied; and their dominion, indeed, extended far beyond the cannot be determined with certainty even if it were generally | limits of Palestine. Our information in regard to the divisions of admitted that Kadesh-Barnea is to be fixed at ‘Ain Kadis. The | the country during the regal period is very defective. The list of determination of the northern boundary is more explicit: it ran | Solomon’s twelve “ officers” (1 Kings iv.) at least is derived from from the mouth of the Jordan to Beth-hogla (which is found in | ancient sources; but it must be observed that, while the boundaries ‘Ain el-Hajla). The position of Beth-arabah (Beth ha-Araba) | of some of the districts appear to coincide with the tribal boundaries, is doubtful; and at least it has not been absolutely settled | the political division was not based on the tribal. Nor ata later whether Eben Bohan ben Reuben really corresponds to Hajar | date was the line of separation betwcen the kingdoms determined el-Asbah. The identification of Debir with Thughrat-ed-Debr may | simply by the tribal division ; the most that is meant is that Judah be correct. Gilgal, which follows, is unknown. The ascent from } and Benjamin stood on the one side ; of Simeon there is no longer Adummim may correspond with Talat-ed-Dem, which preserves at | any word. In the account given in 1 Kings xi. mention is only least an echo of the older name. It is a mere conjecture which | made of one tribe that remained true to David, by which must places the water of En (Ain) Shemesh in ‘Ain Haudh. The Fuller’s | naturally be understood that of Judah. The limits, in fact, so far Spring, En Rogel, has in recent times been sought in St Mary’s | as they related to the tribal territory of Benjamin, scem to have Well; but, with others, we consider Bir Eiyub a more probable | varicd from time to timc; the northern portion as far as Ramah identification. The position of the

valley of Hinnom and the plain | (1 Kings xv.), or as far as the ravine of Michmash (Mukhmés), of Rephaim has been determined ; Nephtoah corresponds perhaps to | usually belonged to the northern kingdom, and the same was the the modern Lifta. The places situated on Mount Ephron—Baalah | case with Jericho. It was to this kingdom of Israel, also, with and Kirjath-Jearim—cannot be made out any more than the | its general superiority in strength and influence, that all the mountains Seir and Jearim. It may be admitted that Chesalon is | Israelitic districts beyond Jordan were attached. That it con- Kesla and Bethshemesh is ‘Ain Shems, since the direction towards | sisted, however, of ten tribes (1 Kings xii.) is a highly artificial Timnah (Tibna) is imperative. The position of Ekron is ascer- | computation. The small extent of the southern kingdom is evident tained; but it is hazardous to find Shicron in Khirbet Sukereir; | from a list (if indeed it be trustworthy) given in 2 Chron. xi. of the and where Mount Baalah was situated we do not know. Finally, | towns fortificd by Rehoboam. As regards the capitals of the northern Jabniel corresponds to Yebna. From this example it isclear how | kingdom, the royal court was originally at Shechem (Nabulus), from difficult it is with the existing material to determine the ancient | the time of Jeroboam I. at Tirzah (not yet identified), and from the tribal limits, and how necessary it is in such an undertaking to | time of Omri at Samaria (Sebastiye) ; the house of Ahab had its distinguish provisional conjecturcs from well-established identifica- | seat for a season at Jezreel (Zer‘in) (see vol. xiii. p. 689). tion. To carry out this task lies beyond the scope of this article; It is rather an historical than a geographical task to describe in to prove individual points whole treatises require to be written. | detail the boundaries or divisions of Palestine in later times. From Compare the articles on the several tribes and the maps. the lists for the post-exilic period, found in the books of Ezra and

It has already been remarked that the extension given to the | Nehemiah, and containing a series of new topographical names, it tribal territories in the book of Joshua is frequently the mere re- | is evident that a considerable portion of the old tribal territory of flexion of pious wishes. This holds true in general of the territories | Benjamin as well as of Judah was again peopled by Jews,—on the of Zcbulun, Naphtali, and especially Asher ; it is to be particularly | one hand the places from Jericho to Lydda, on the other a strip to remembered that down to a very late date (the time of the

Maccabces) | the north of Bethel down to Beersheba in the south. Gradually, the Israelites were almost entirely shut out from the sea-coast. To | however, Edomites (perhaps pressed upon by Nabateans) foreed the north of the land of the Philistines the maritime plain was in | their way into the southern portion of the country, with the capital the hands of the Pheenicians; the plain to the south of Dor (the | Hebron, so that it obtained the name of Idumcea. modern Tautura) was called Naphoth Dor (hill range of Dor). Before proceeding to the Greco-Roman period it will be well to Even in the New Testament mention is made of a district of Tyre | consider the names by which the country in general was called at and Sidon to which we must not assign too narrow an extension | different times. Gilead was the centre of the power of the Israelites inland. How mattcrs stood in the country east of Jordon it is hard | on the east side of Jordan, and the whole country which they pos- to decide. The stretch from the north of the Dead Sea to the | sessed there bore this name. Gilead consequently is opposed to Yarmuk (practically to the south end of the Lake of Tiberias) was | Canaan, the "Promised Land." For the later Hebrews distinguished the only portion securely held by the tribes of Israel ; here, on the | this western territory as more especially the country which had been Jabbok, in the centre of the trans-Jordan region, the Gadites had | promised them, and regarded it as the possession of their national settled ; here there was an ancient Israelitic district in the neigh- | God, and therefore as a holy land. After the separation the more bourhood of Mahanaim, Jabesh (on the present Wadi Y4bis), | important northern and eastern portion naturally became the land Succoth, Penuel—places whose position for the most part cannot | of Israel par eacellencc, while the southern portion ultimately be determined. From some passages it is evident that the warlike | received the name of the individual tribe of Judah (as indeed the tribe of Gad found it difficult to protect itself against its enemies. | northern kingdom was frequently called after the most powerful Numbers xxxii., a chapter belonging to the older class of sources, | tribe of Ephraim). The name of the southern kingdom appears in throws much light on the conditions under which the country east | Cuneiform inscriptions as mat (ir) Ya-u-du (di); and it is said that of Jordan was occupied, and it represents Reuben and Gad as having | mat Sir'lai occurs once for the land of Israel, though more frequently scized the Moabite territory to the north of the Arnon. We have | it is called m4t Humrt (Land of Omri). Though it has not been in this a picture of a temporary extension

of the territory of Israel, absolutely proved that even the Assyrians occasionally included probably from the time of Omri (compare MoAB). Judah under the designation Palastav or Pilista (Philistia), still there

According to the inscription of King Mesha, the Gadites were | is nothing improbable about the supposition. But it cannot be still in Ataroth; Dibon, on the contrary, was Moabitic; other | taken for granted that the cis-Jordan country bore the name 0 towns, such as Kirjathaim, Nebo, Jahaz, had been conquered by | land of the Philistines at a time when it was the scene of a great Mesha from the Israelites. It is remarkable that the Reubenites | development of the Philistian power; the name was rather, a8 80 are not once mentioned in the inscription. At the date, too, when | often happens, extended by their neighbours from Philistia proper Isaiah xv.—xvi. were written (before the time of Isaiah himself ?), | to the country beyond, and from the Egyptians it passed to the the Moabite dominion was widely extended. From all this it may | Greeks. Inthe Old Testament Peleshet is still always restricted to be concluded that the Reubenites had to carry on a protracted | the Philistine coast-plain ; the same is the case in Josephus ; ane struggle with Moab for the possession of the country,—the walled | in Herodotus, though the usage is not very explicit, Palestina towns being now subject to the one belligerent and now to the appears usually to have no wider application. Gradually, how- other, and the Arnon consequently forming only an ideal boundary. | ever, the designation Palestina Syria, or simply Palestina, got into 7 sheiagt! knowledge of the condition of the scttlements of vogue, and was made to include even the country east of Jordan,

anassch in the country east of Jordan has come down tous. The | and consequently the whole territory between Lebanon and Sinal clan Machir had its seat in Gilead ; and there, too, were the tent- We now return to the divisions of Palestine. Already in the villages of Jair, a clan which also possessed the district of Argob | book of Kings (that is, by the time of the exile) the name in Bashan, situated somewhere to the east of the Lake of Tiberias. | Shomeron (Samaria) is applied to the territory of the northern The Nobah clan was settled in Kenath (the modern Kanawat) on | kingdom, for mention is made of the “ towns of Samaria,” In the

—-

Pa Les TRN E

apocryphal books of the Old Testament, Judea and Samaria (Sapaperris, Zapyaprs, Zapapera) are opposed to each other ; but the limits of the two divisions at the time of Christ, and for centuries previously, can hardly be laid down. Thusin Josephus the Mediter- ranean coas : é

this country was bounded by Idumea ; in the north it extended to about 8 miles to the south of Nabulus (Shechem). Whether Samaria extended from the Jordan to the sea is uncertain; in the north it reached the southern edge of the plain of Esdraelon, the fronticr town being ‘En Gannim (Jennin). Galilee (in regard to which see yol. x. p. 27) was originally the district in the neighbourhood of Kedes, afterwards distinguished as Upper Galilee. The Jewish popu- lation was there largely mixed with Phoenicians, Syrians, Greeks, andeyen Arabs. The whole maritime region to the north of Dor was still called Phoenicia in the time of the Romans, and thus does not strictly belong to Palestine in our sense of the word. Along the coast, as well as more especially in the north of the country, numer- ous Greek colonies were established ; how strong the foreign influ- ence must have been in Samaria and Galilee is evident from the preservation of so many Greco-Roman names like Neapolis (Nabulus), Sebaste (Sebastiye), Tiberias (Tabariye). Elsewhere too, iu the south for example, the old nomenclature was altered: Ablia was substituted for Jerusalem, Azotus formed from Ashdod, and so on; but the old names were always retained in the mouth of the people. The north of the country and the trans-Jordan region were much more thoroughly brought under the influence of the Greeks and Romans than the south, The Greek towns in some eases date from the time of Alexander the Great, and others were founded by the Ptolemies ; but most of them owe their origin to the Seleucids. One district of the trans-Jordan region retained at that period its old name in the Greek form of Perza. Josephus says that this district extended from the Jordan to Phila- delphia (Rabbath Ammon, ‘Amman) and Gerasa (Jerash), went southward as far as Macherus (Mkaur on the Zerka Ma‘in), and north as far as Pella (Fahil opposite Beisan). Adjoining Perea, and mainly to the east of Jordan, lay the Decapolis, which

was not, how- ever, a continuous territory, but a political group of cities occupied by Greek republics distinguished from the tetrarchies with their

Jewish-Syrian-Arabic population in the midst of which they were

scattered. The largest of these ecitics was Scythopolis (Beisan) ; others were Hippos, Gadara (Mkés), Philadelphia, Dion, Gerasa, &e.; but ancient authorities do not agree about the names. Little requires to be said about the division of the country in later Roman times. In the 5th century a threefold partition began to prevail:— Palestina Prima (roughly equal to Judea and Samaria), Palestina Scounda (the countries about the upper Jordan and the Lake of Gennesaret), and Palestina Tertia or Salutaris (Idumea and Moab). In the time of the crusades the same names were applied to three divisions (at once political and ecclesiastical) of the country west of Jordan,— Palestina Prima or Maritima being the coast region as far as Carmel (with Czsarea as its archbishop's see), Palestina Secunda comprising the mountains of Judah and Ephraim (with the patri- archal see of Jerusalem), and Palestina Tertia corresponding roughly to Galilee (with its bishop's see at Nazareth). The country east of Jordan was called Arabia, and was in like manner divided into three parts lying north and south of each other.

The Arabians retained the name Filistin, and they divided the country into two principal portions,—the Jordan district (chiefly the northern ita and Filistin proper, which extended from the Lake of Gennesaret to Aila and from Lejjun to Refah, Under the Turks Palestine was till quite recently subject to the governor of Syria; the greater part of it now forms an independent vilayet. The chief districts are (each with its town) Gaza, Hebron, Yafa, Ludd (with Ramla), Nabulus, Sha'rawlye, Jennin (with Beisan), Haifa, Aere, Tabariye, Nasira, Safed ; and in the country east of Jordan 'Ajhin, Belka es-Salt, Kerak, and Ma'an.

Palestine is by no means so strikingly a country apart as is usually supposed. It lay, as already mentioned, near the great nulitary highway from western Asia to Egypt and Africa. The traffic by sea was also formerly of importance ; and even in the Middle Ages something was done for the protection of the harbours. At no time, however, was the country in the proper sense of the word a rich one ; it hardly ever produced more than was necessary forhome consumption. 'The great trading caravans which passed

through were glad for the most part to avoid the highlands, and that region at least was thus more or less isolated. The following 18a brief survey of the principal routes, partly as they formerly existed, and partly as they are still used. From Egypta road runs by El“Arish (Rhinocolura) or “the river of Egypt” by Rafah (Raphia) to Gaza (q.v.). From Gaza another runs by Umm Lakis (Lachish?) and Bét Jibrin (Eleutheropolis) across the mountains to Jerusalem. Northwards from Gaza the main route continues along the plain at some distance from the sea (which in this part has piled up great sand dunes) to El-Mejdel (Migdal Gad) near Askelon, and so on to Ashdod (Ezdud, Azotus). From Ashdod a road runs by ‘Akir (Ekron) to Ramle, an important town in the medieval Arabian period, and Ludd (Léd, Lydda). From these towns, which are con-

t as faras Acre is assigned to Judea ; towards the south-

nected with the port of Yafa (Japho, Joppa), three routes run to Jerusalem, of which the one most used in antiquity was evidently the northern one passing by Jimzu (Gimzo) and the two Bét Urs (Beth-horon), and not the one now followed by ‘Amwés (Nicopolis) and Wadi ‘Ali. From Yafa a road continues along the coast by Arsuf (Apollonia) to the ruins of Kaisariye (Cesarea), then past Tantura (ruins of Dor) and ‘Athlit (Castellum Peregrinorum of the crusaders) and round the foot of the promontory of Carmel, to Haifa and Acre (a town of great importance from early times). Another route starting from Ludd runs north close to the mountains by Antipatris (now Kefr Saba or Ras el-Ain?) and Kakun, and ends at Khan Lejjin. The Great Plain offered the easiest passage from the coast inland, El-Lejjun (a corruption of the Latin Zegio) was certainly an important point; it is still conjecturally identified, according to Robinson’s suggestion, with the ancient Megiddo, which Conder would rather place at Mejedde’a. In the vicinity lie the ruins of Taanuk (Taanach), and farther south-west the great centre of Jennin (En Gannim, Ginnea). From Acre there also runs a road directly east over the mountains to Khan Jubb Yusuf.

The coast road from Acre northwards passes through Zib (Akhzib, Ecdippa) and the two promontories of Ras eu-Ndkura and Ras-el-Abyad (Scala Tyriorum), and so continues to the niaritime plain of Tyre.—To return to the

south, from Egypt (Sucz, Arsinoe) the desert was crossed to Ruheibe (Rechoboth), Khulasa (Elusa), and Bir-es-seb'a (Beersheba), and from this place the route went north- ward to Ed-Dhoheriye and El-Khalil (Hebron). In like manner a road from Aila up the Araba valley crossed the Es-Sufah pass to Hebron.—One of the most frequented highways traverses the central mountain chain northwards, and, though somewhat difficult in various parts, connects a number of the most important places of central Palestine. Starting from Hebron, it runs past Rama and Hulhul through the Wadi el-Biyar, and leaving Bethlehem on _ the right holds on to Jerusalem, where a branch strikes east by Khan Hadrur (probably there was once another route) to Jericho. From Jerusalem northwards it naturally continues by Sha'fat past Er-Ram (Rama) to El-Bire (Becroth), and then onwards by 'Ain el-Harainiye, Sinjil, and Khan Lubban through the Mukhna plain to Nabulus (Shechem). From this point a route runs down to the Jordan and Es- Salt (Ramoth Gilead ?); another passes by Tubas (Thebez) north- eastward in the line of the Jordan valley to Beisan (Bethshean, Seythopolis). The road across the highlands passes a-little to the cast of Sebastiye (Samaria, Scbaste), running along the west side of the Merj-el-Ghuruk and past Tell Dothan (Dothan) to J ennin. Thence the road northward to Nazareth skirts the east side of the plain of Esdraelon, and from Nazareth a path strikes to Acre. The caravan route proper passes from 'Afale north-eastwards past Jebel et-Tur (Tabor) to Khan et-Tujjar (where several roads cross), and reaches the Lake of Tiberias near Mejdel (Magdala). It keeps by the shore only for a short distance. Having traversed the small plain of Gennesar, it begins again to climb the mountains where they approach the lake at Khan Minye (which, however, for many reasons cannot be Capernaum), and then it goes on to Khan Jubb Yusuf, strikes down again into the valley of the Jordan, and crossing the river at Jisr Bondt Ya' kub holds on across Jebel Hish to Damasens. The moun- tain district of Samaria is crossed bya great number of small roads, but none of them are true caravan routes or worth particular men- tion. An old caravan route once ran northwards up the Jordan valley from Jericho to Beisan ; and from Beisan an important, now less frequented, road crossing the river at the bridge El-Mejam'a struck north-cast to Fik Tscil and Nawa in the Hauran, and finally to Damaseus.—In the country cast'of Jordana great highway of traffic ran from Petra (or really from the Elanitic Gulf) by Kerak (Kir Moab) to Rabba (Rabbath Moab, Areopolis); in front of Aroer ('Ardir) it crosses the Mdjib (Arnon)

and runs northwards through the highlands to Hesban (Heshbon) and thence to Amman (Rabbath Ammon, Philadelphia). A route also led from Jericho to Es-Salt (which could also be reached from Hesban) and thence northwards to the Jabbok and Jerash (GERASA, see vol. x. p. 441); and then from Jerash one stretched north-west by Tibne to Mkés (Gadara) and the valley of the Jordan, and another north-east to the Zumle and the Hauran or more precisely to Bosra (Bostra), and so on to Damascus. It must also bo mentioned that the great pilgrim's track direct from Damascus to Medina and Mecca skirts the eastern frontier of the country. A great many roads await more detailed investigation ; what has been said may suffice to show what lines of communication existed and still exist between the more import- ant places of Palestine.

Population. —There are no trustworthy estimates of the number of inhabitants in the country at any period of its history. Certain districts, such as Galilee, have, there is no doubt, from early times been much more populous than certain other districts ; the desert of Judah and some portions of the country cast of Jordan must all along have been very sparsely peopled. The figures given in the book of Numbers indicate that the whole country contained about 24 million souls,—it being assumed that the statistics do not refer to the time of the wandering in the wilderness, and that the details

may be suspected of being artificially adjusted. The number 23 to 3 millions may indeed be taken as a maximum; the population can hardly ever have been more than four times its present strength, which is estimated at 650,000 souls. Thus, in the most flourishing period, about 250 to 300 inhabitants would go to the square mile, while at present there may be about 65, a number which is rather above than below the mark. Lists based on information collected by the Turkish Government give much lower figures, viz., for the sanjak of Jerusalem (with the districts Jerusalem, Yafa, Hebron), 276 places with about 24,000 houses (families); for the sanjak Belka (with the districts of Nabulus, Jennin, Ajlun, and Es-Salt), 817 places and 18,984 houses; for the sanjak 'Akka (Acre) (with the districts 'Akka,

Haifa, and Safed), 160 places with 11,023 houses, —making a total of 753 places with 54,237 houses. Reckoning five persons per house, this gives a population of 271,185, exclusive of the small number of Bedouins. Detailed statistics there are none as regards the relative strength of the Bedouin element and the peasantry, the numerical representation of the different religions, or any matter of this sort. ;

The ethnographico-geographical sketch given above has shown how the population of Palestine even at an early date was a very mingled one ; for even when they arrived in the country foreign elements were present among the Israelites, and latcr on they absorbed or were absorbed by the Canaanites. The Philistines, Moabites, and others in course of time were merged in the new nationality. From the period of the cxile colonies from the cast settled in the country, and so powerful did the Aramsan con- tingent gradually grow that Aramzan became the popular tongue. Next were added Greek and Roman colonies, The Arabie clement exerted considerable influence cven before the days of Islam ; with the Mohammedan conquest it became the dominant power, though it was only by slow degrees that it obtained numerical superiority. The Arab tribes transplanted to Palestine their old distinctions, especially that between Northern and Southern Arabs (Kais and Yemen; ef. AnAstaA). The Arab peasantry is still divided into clans; for example, the distriets of the Beni Hasan and Beni Malik to the west of Jerusalem, those of the Beni Harith, Beni Zeid, and Beni Murr4 to the north, and that of Beni Salim to the east. Till recently the relations of the separate clans of fellahin was one of mutual hostility, and, unhindered by the Turkish Government, they engaged in sanguinary conflicts. In manners and in language (though Arabie is universally in vogue) the Palestine peasants retain much that is ancient, It is extravagant, however, to main- tain from the traditions they preserve that primeval Canaanite clements still exist among them. The prevalent type, in facet, is Syro-Arabic, or in many districts pure Arabic ; and their supersti- tious customs are partly remains of Syrian beliefs, partly modern Arabie reproductions, under similar extcrnal conditions, of ancient superstitions, These remarks are applicable to the saint worship at present spread through the whole Oriental world. The fellahin are on the whole a diligent frugal race, not destitute of intelli- gence. If well treated by a just Government which would protect them from the extortions of the nomadie tribes, they would be the means, with the

assistanee of the eapitalist, of greatly improving the cultivation of the country, especially in the various lowland districts. They choose their own village sheiks, who derive most of their authority from the reputation of their virtues, their bravery, and their liberality. The Bedouins, ¢.¢., wandering tribes of pure Arab origin, also play an important part in the country. ‘Till quite recently they used to visit certain settled dis- tricts and exact black mail from the peasants ; and they find their undisputed domain in those districts which are ineapable of eultiva- tion, and fit only for cattle rearing, and in other fertile portions which for various reasons are not oceupied by the husbandman. To the first class belong the belt of desert to the west of the Dead Sea, the southernmost parts of the country west of Jordan and the south country beyond the river (Moab) ; to the seeond belong the greater portion of the maritime plain, the depression of the Jordan valley, and part of the country to the east. The divisions of the Arab tribes will be discussed in the article Syrra. In Palestine east of Jordan the Beni Sakhr (Moab) are of most importance ; Jebel ‘Ajlun is the seat of the ‘Adwan. The Ghawadrine (the inhabitants of the Ghor or Jordan depression) form a peculiar race which, as they are partly agricultural, have been a long time settled in the district. In type, as well as by their degeneracy, they are distinguished from the other Bedouins. The true Bedouin style of life can be studied only beyond the Jordan or to the south of Palestinc,—theo tribes west of the river, such as the Ta‘imire and Jehalin in the south being all more or less deteriorated. As the Turkish race does not fall to be treated in connexion with Palestine, it simply remains to mention the Frankish (European) elements. During the Middle Ages these were not unimportant, especially along the coast ; numerous ruined churches are still to be seen as the last and only memorials of crusaders’ colonies (see Vogiié, Les églises de la Terre Sainte, Paris, 1860, and the article Syria). Nor must the missionary efforts be forgotten which in our own times have been again specially directed to Palestine. As regards the Roman Catholie Chureh, the Francis-

|

cans have maintained their position in the Holy Land even in troublous times, and have not only established schools and printing presses but protected the Christian sanetuaries and taken care of pilgrims and travellers. On the whole it may be said that, in comparison with that of the Roman and Greek Churches, the influence of Protestants is outwardly small. 4 German seet called the Templars settled in Palestine some years ago, and has now eolonics at Yafa, Sarona, Jerusalem, and Haifa, The colonists, about 1000 in number, have to contend with many and grievous diffieulties, and are deficient in eapital. Wine-growing is the most luerative braneh of their activity. As long as the Turks hold rule over the country successful colonization is hardly possible.

Literature.—The litcrature in regard to Palestine is extremely abundant, As bibliographical guides of the first class may be mentioned—Tobler, Bibliographia geographica Palestine, Leipsie, 1869 (a supplement to this appeared in Petz. holdt's Neuer Anzeiger ftir Bibliogr. und Bibliothekwissenschaft, Dresden 1875). The works published between 1867-77 (with additions to Tobler) will be found in Rthrieht and Meisner's Deutsche Pilgerretsen nach dem Heiligen Lande Berlin, 1880 (pp. 547-648). Soein has given an annual survey of eurrent litera- ture from 1877 in the Zettschr. des Deutschen Paldstina-Vereins. Compare also Archives de Orient Latin, i., Paris, 1881, The scrics of old pilgrimages pub. lished by the Soeiété de l'Orient Latin deserves special mention :—Jtinera Latina beliis sacrts anteriora, Geneva, 1879; Itinéraires a Jérusalem et descriptions de la Terre Sainte red. en francats aux XI-XIII siécles, Gencva, 1882. Older studies on the geography of Palestine are Eusebius, Onomasticon urbtum et locorum Sancte Scripture (edited by Larsow and Parthey, 1862, and De Lagarde, 1870); Neubauer, La géographte du Talmud, Paris, 1868; Hadr. Reland, Palestina monumentts veteribus illustrata, 2 vols., 1714 ; Ritter, Vergleichende Erdkunde, vol, xv.-xvii., Berlln, 1850-55 ; K. Raumer, Paldstina (4th ed., 1860; now to be com- pletely remodelled by Furrer). Strictly seientitie accounts of travel begin only in the present eentury; the credit of having led the way belongs to E. Robinson (Biblical Researches in Palestine, 1841; Later Biblical Researches, 1856; Physical Geography, 1865). Of importance is the voluminous work of V. Guérin, Deserip- tion géographique, historique, et archéologique de la Palestine, 1868, sq. Splendid service has been rendered by the Palestine Exploration Fund,

which has published Quarterly Statements since 1869,—the labours of Wilson, Warren, and Conder being particularly noteworthy. In 1880 appcared Conder and Kitehener's Map of Western Palestine (26 sheets), the result of surveys extending over many years; an edition in six sheets was published in London in 1881. Trelawney Saunders's Special Edition illustrating the Divisions and the Mountain Ranges, 1882, is to be recommended (compare his valuable Introduction to. the Survey of Western Palestine—its Waterways, Plains, and Highlands, 1881); but the same eannot be said about the Special Edition of the map illustrating the Old Testament and that illustrating the New Testament, London, 1882 (each six sheets), many of the identifications resting on mere provisional conjecture. As companions to the great maps we have Memoirs of the Topography, Orography, Hydrography, and Archeology (8 vols.), a Name-List (1 vol.), Spectal Papers (reprinted from the Statements, 1 vol.), Jerusalem (1 vol.), Flora and Fauna (1 vol.). The Exploration Fund is preparing to aceomplish a similar work for the eountry east of Jordan, since the American Society, which was to have undertaken the survey of that region, has relinquished the undertaking (compare also Selah Merrill, Last of the Jordan, New York, 1881). The German Paliistina-Verein has published its Zeitschrift since 1878, a yearly volume of topographical and historical investi- gations on definite points. Guide-books which may partly serve as works of reference are—Baedeker's Palestine and Syria (written by Soein, 1876), Murray's Handbook for Travellers in Syria and Palestine (by Porter, 1875), and Joanne's Guide (new edition, 1882). The best illustrated work is Picturesque Palestine, Syria, and Egypt (edited by Colonel Wilson,'&e., London, 1881), to which may be added D. Roberts, The J/oly Land, and Lortet, La Syrie d'aujourd hui, 1884, W. M. Thomson's Zhe Land and the Book, London, 1881-83, is of particular value for manners and customs. For natural history, sec Tristram, Zhe Land of Israel (London, 1861) and Natural History of the Bible (London, 1873). Lartet's geological investigations will be found in De Luynes, Voy, d'exploration & la Mer Morte, &¢., Paris, 1876. For matter of geographical detail consult especially Tobler's works (Bethlehem; Nazareth; Dritte Wanderung, &c.). Wilson, The Lands of the Bible, Edinburgh, 1847; Conder, Tent Work in Palestine, 18783 and Finn, Byeways in Palestine, London, 1868, may eonclude the list. Menke's Histor- ischer Atlas (Gotha, 1868) is still the best. (A. 50.)

PALESTRINA. See PR&NESTE.

PALESTRINA, Giovannt Prerturcr pa (¢ 1524 1594), now universally distinguished by the honourable title Princeps Musicx, occupies a more important position in the history of art than any other composer, ancient or modern ; for it is to his transcendent genius that music is indebted for its emancipation from pedantic trammels, which, ignoring beauty as its most necessary element, were fast tending to reduce it to the level of an arithmetical problem.

The exact date of Palestrina's birth is unrecorded. It most probably took place in 1524, and certainly at Palestrina (the Preeneste of Roman geographers,—whence the style accorded to him in Latin!). Some early wnters call him Gianetto da Palestina, or simply Gianetto; and this early custom—which has led some modern critics t0 mistake his identity—combined with the general use of his Christian names only, has induced the belief that he was of peasant origin; but Signor Cicerchia is said t0 have discovered at Palestrina documents proving that his father bore the family name of Sante, and his mother that of Gismondi,—in which case he must have been of gentle birth. The statement, however, needs confirmation.

1 Joannes Petrus Aloysius (or Pctraloysius) Prenestinus.

Paktts TRINA

In early youth Palestrina studied at Rome in company with Animuccia, and, perhaps also, Giovanni Maria Nanini, in a music-school founded by Goupimen (¢.v.). After

this, we hear no more of him until 1551, when, by favour of Pope Julius IIL, he was elected Magister Cappella and Magister Puerorum at the Cappella Giulia, 8. Pietro in Vaticano, with a salary of six scudi per month, and a house. Three years later he published his Mist Book of Masses, dedicated to Pope Julius III, and beginning with the Missa "Ecce Sacerdos magnus," concerning which we shall have to speak more particularly hereafter.! On January 13, 1555, Palestrina was enrolled, by com- mand of Pope Julius III., among the singers of the Cappella Sistina. This honour involved the resignation of his office at the Cappella Giulia, which was

accordingly bestowed upon his friend Animuccia. But the legality of the new appointment was disputed on the ground that Palestrina was married, and the father of four children, his wife, Lucrezia, being still alive; and, though, for the moment, the pope's will was law, the case assumed a different complexion after his death, which took place only five weeks afterwards. The next pope, Marcellus II., was succeeded, after a reign of twenty-three days, by Paul IV. ; and within less than a year that stern reformer dismissed Palestrina, together with two other married singers, Ferrabosco and Bari, with a consolatory pension of six seudi per month to each. This cruel disappointment caused Palestrina a dangerous illness; but better fortune was in store. In October 1555 he was appointed Maestro di Cappella at the Lateran, without forfeiting his pension ; and in February 1561 he exchanged this preferment for a similar one, with an allowance of sixteen scudi per month, at Santa Maria Maggiore.

Palestrina remained in office at this celebrated basilica for ten years ; and it was during this period that the most critical event in his life took place—an event of such grave importance that its results have never ceased to furnish matter for discussion to the musical historian from the time of its occurrence to the present day.

In 1562 the council of Trent censured the pre- valent style of ecclesiastical music with extreme severity. In 1564 Pope Pius IV. commissioned eight cardinals to investigate the causes of complaint; and these proved to be so well founded that it was seriously proposed to forbid the use of all music in the services of the church, except unisonous and unaccompanied plain-chant—a proceeding which, so far as the church was concerned, would have rendered the "art of music," properly so called, a dead letter, not only for the time being, but in perpetuity, for the decree, once promulgated, could only have been repealed by another general council.

_ it is evident that very gross abuses must have been needed to justify so stringent a measure as this in the eyes of men accustomed. to regard art as the obedient handmaid of religion; yet, strange to say, the nature of these abuses has never yet been clearly established by any musical historian, either English or foreign. Baini devotes several chapters of his great work? to their dis- cussion, but without arriving at any definite conclusion. Burney

and Hawkins seem to have regarded the question as one involving no deeper significance than a more or less exalted standard of artistic purity. Ambros, gencrally so reasonable a critic, denies the existence of any just ground of complaint at all, even in the limited sense claimed by Burney and Hawkins, and condemns the Severer censures of Baini and his followers as attempts to sub- stantiate a groundless myth. Bernsdorf speaks little less strongly, simply because a certain tradition, which represented the circum- Stances as having taken place in 1555, during the short reign of

Pope Marcellus IT., has been proved to be certainly false. That more than one groundless myth have been substituted for the real Oifeees eee

Pe 1 The first edition of this was printed in 1554; the second—with a ae representing Palestrina offering his music to the Pope—in

Memorie storico-critiche della vita e delle opere di Giovanni Pierluigi da Palestrina, Rome, 1828.

feo

account of the occurrence is true enough—one, at least, involving an anachronism of no less than twelve centuries. But no sober historian has ever credited these absurd stories; and it is not to them that Baini gives currency or that Ambros objects. The misfortune is that each successive narrator has perpetuated the vague statements of his predecessors, instead of seeking for infor- mation at original sources; and this mistaken course has resulted in an infinity of oracular utterances, no two of which agree. To conflicting opinions like these, one only form of answer-is possible— that furnished by contemporary documents. Fortunately, an immense amount of church music, written in the style universally cultivated at the period of which we are treating, has been preserved to us both in MS. and in print; and, though the forms of notation employed by its transcribers are no longer in common use, students of medieval music are able to decipher them with absolute certainty. Objections like those raised by Ambros can therefore be met by reference to examples of the music actually sung at the time the council of Trent condemned the then prevail- ing style.

The first impression derived from the study of these venerable records tends to confirm a statement already made, to the effect that the art of music was rapidly degenerating into a niere system of figures. There is evidence enough to prove the existence, from the 14th century downwards, of a growing tendency to cultivate, at the expense of ideal beauty, certain forms of technical ingenuity worthy only of association with a clever conundrum.

Another still more serious abuse consisted in the introduction, among the words of the Mass, of foreign passages having no connexion whatever with the original text,—one voice being made to sing “Alleluia” or “Ave Maria,” while others were singing the words of the “Credo” or the “Sanctus.”

In order to justly appreciate the true bearing of this very prevalent abuse, it will be necessary for the English Church composer to divest himsclf of certain not very unnatural prejudices, —and, first of all, of the idca that the custom implied intentional irreverence on the part of those who introduced it, which, in spite of appearances, it certainly did not. In England the music sung forms an csscutial part of the service. This is not the case with the Mass. In reciting the prescribed form of words with the prescribed ceremonies, the officiating priest fulfils unaided all the necessary conditions of the service, while the congregation looks on and worships, and the choir endeavours to excite its devotion by singing appropriate music. As a matter of fact, the words to which this music is sct are identical with a portion of those recited by the priest; but they represent no essential element of the service, nor are they for the most part sung at the same time that the priest recites them. Except in the dclivery of a few responses, the action of the choir is entirely independent of that of the pricst ; and the action of the congregation 1s independent of both. Each member of it may use any book of devotions he pleases, and he will generally be carcful to use prayers and meditations suitable to the festival in which he is taking part. For instance, at Christmas he will meditate on the nativity of our Lord, at Easter on His resurrection, —coutinuing his meditations on these subjects, without reference, during the greater part of the mass, to the words the priest is reciting. It is only by bearing these facts earefully in mind that we can rightly understand what is to follow.

The medisval composer very rarely constructed his Mass upon an original subject. His favourite plan was to select as his principal theme a fragment of some well-known plain-chant hymn or antiphon, and from the words proper to this melody— technically called the canto fermo—thc Mass was named. We

still possess countless examples of the Missa “Alterna Christi munera,” the Missa “Vidi turbam magnam,” “Repleatur os meum,” “Dum complerentur,” “Iste Confessor,” and others of like character, all named after the canti fermi on which they are based, though, except in a few comparatively rare cases to be presently mentioned, the words proper to the canti fermi do not appear in the work, the selected melody being adapted to the actual words of the Mass. And thus far the custom was not only an unobjectionable but a thoroughly commendable one; for the melodies employed were familiar to every educated member of the congregation, and to these the sound of the well-known tune must necessarily have suggested the sacred words belonging to it, and that so powerfully that the performance on Christmas Day of a Mass founded on the melody of “Hodie Christus natus est,” or on Whitsunday of one based on that of “ Veni, Creator Spiritus,” could scarcely have failed to induce in the minds of the assembled worshippers the exact train of meditation most desirable on these great festivals.

Had composers been contented with this, all would have been well, But unhappily they were tempted to add the extrancous words; and their intention, in doing so, has been grossly mis- represented. They have been accused of wilfully sacrificing sense to sound, with the unworthy object of displaying their technical skill to greater advantage. At the first blush there may seem some truth in this; but here again the strictures will not bear examina- tion in presence of the actual records.

Nearly a century before the birth of Palestrina, Joannes de Tinctoris—the compiler of the earliest known Dictionary of Musical Terms—wrote a Mass in which one voice interpolated the words here printed in italics, while the others sang the authorized text, exactly as it appears in the Missal :—

Cherubim ac seraphim cextertque spiritus angelici Deo in altissimis incessabili voce prociamant, “ Sanctus, Sanctus, Sanctus, Dominus Deus Sabaoth.”” ‘* Puert Hebreorum sternentes vestimenta ramos palmarum Jesu filio David clamabant Osanna in excelsis.” ‘* Benedictus semper sit filius Altissimi, qui de celis huc venit in nomine Domini.”

Clearly this is nothing more than an amplification of the received version—a reverent commentary upon the words actually recited by the priest. In what way can the addition of these extraneous sentences conducc to the display of the composer’s musical learning ? He might just as easily have set the same notes to the unaltered text.

Again, Palestrina himself begins his Liber primus Missarum, already mentioned, with a Mass for which he has chosen, as a canto Jermo, the entire melody of the gradual, “ Ecce Sacerdos magnus,” sung on the festivals of certain great doctors of the church, such as Ambrose and Athanasius,—one voice being constantly employed in the reiteration of this in long, slow notes, sung to its own proper words, while three others sing the authorized text in the usnal way. What object could possibly have tempted the composer to arrange his music thus, other than that of using the familiar words and tune as a means of reminding his hearers of the great work wrought by the saints whose festival they are commemorating? Palestrina was the last man in the world to have paraded his learning ; and, had he wished to call attention to it, he might have done so in a hundred easier ways. Indeed, if the Mass were to be sung to-morrow, nothing would be casicr than to fit the words of the Mass to the notes of the canto fermo throughout. Still, not- withstanding the innocence of the composer’s intention, there can be no doubt that the custom was a highly reprehensible one ; and it led to something very much worse.

The troubadours and minnesingers of the Middle Ages produced a host of beautiful secular melodies, many of which still live among us in the guise of “national airs,” though the names of their authors have been forgotten for ages. The beauty of many of these melodies tempted composers to select them as canti fermé for their Masses ; and not a few such works were actually named after them, as the Missa “L’Homme armé” (a very common example), the Missa “ Mon cueur se recommande &4 vous,” and many

others. And in this the medieval musician had no more thought of intentional irreverence than had the Flemish painter when he represented the Nativity as taking place in a little roadside hostelry like that to which he was accustomed to resort for his evening meal. But he committed a grave error of judgment. For, just as the sound of the sacred canto fermo brought to remembrance the words with which it was connected, so, we may be sure, did that of the secular one; and the greater its beauty the more surely would it do its evil work, It was by its beauty alone that it attracted the composer ; yet his treatment of it proves beyond all doubt that he meant no se ae {Bes the a stage of our history at which we can

Of 10; and perhans “ i Oe eaint allittle toc ce ps even here we may have strained

As might naturally have been expected, the introduction of the secular canto fermo was followed by exactly the same results as that of the sacred one. It took a longer time to bring about the evil, but it came at last. _The familiar words were sung to the familar notes, not by the will of the composer, wlio would never have — to insert them, cven had he wished to do so, but by that of profane singers, who surreptitiously trolled them forth for the

PALES YHRIN A

gratification of a prurient taste, while the great body of the choir adhered to the sacred text. And, in the face of these undeniable facts, Hawkins calmly speaks of the reform as one of style only, while Ambros, intoxicated by the beauty of so much of the music pre. served to us, and especially by the compositions of Claude Goudime] for whom he entertained a well-founded admiration, tells us, in gq many words, that no reform of church music was ever needed or demanded, and that no such reform as that popularly attributed to the influence of Palestrina ever took place.

Two of the commissioners, however,—Cardinals Borromeo and Vitellozzi, —while admitting the urgent need of reform, pleaded for a compromise, and happily the commission agreed to postpone its final decision until Palestring— already recognized as the greatest composer then living— had been permitted to prove, if he could, the possibility of producing a Mass which should not only be free from the abuses complained of, but should

also conduce to the excitation of true devotional feeling by bringing the plain sense of the words into the strongest possible relief, and that so manifestly that it might be presented to all future composers as the pattern of what true ecclesiastical music ought evermore to be.

A careful comparison of Palestrina's works with those of the best of his contemporaries conclusively proves that in him alone were united all the qualifications necessary for the success of this difficult attempt, which demanded the earnestness of a deeply religious mind, the science of a profoundly learned musician, and the refined taste of an artist whose sense of beauty was strong enough to over- come all desire for the display of technical power at the expense of that delicacy of expression without which the required solemnity of style would have been unattainable. Animuccia lived as holy a life as Palestrina. The elder Nanini, if not so learned a musician as he, was at any rate more learned than by far the greater number of his contemporaries. But the world had yet to learn how far refinement of taste could be carried in the composition of sacred music; and upon Palestrina devolved the duty of teaching it its lesson. Ockenheim had already astonished it by the ingenuity with which he evolved from the con- trapuntal materials at his command a form so symmetric- ally proportioned that it seemed as if no future artificer could add to its perfection!; but the materials were dry bones, and the resulting form no more than a wonderfully articulated skeleton. To the erudition of Ockenheim Josquin Depres united the fire of true genius.) To him we are indebted for many, if not most, of the finest works produced before the age of Palestrina.2 Yet even he could do no more than clothe Ockenheim's bare skeleton with flesh. It remained for Palestrina to breathe into the perfect body the breath of that artistic life which alone could enable it to give thanks to the Creator of all things in tones which betokened the presence of the soul within it. He first taught the world that music was not a mere lifeless collection of notes, —that, as the gift of speech enabled man to express his thoughts to his fellow-man, s0 the gift of harmony enabled him to express his feelings, whether of devotion, or praise, or prayer, and this so intelligibly that he might "sing praises with understand- ing " in the truest sense of the words. And it was to the decree of the council of Trent that he was indebted for the opportunity of showing how great a work it was possible to accomplish in this direction, as well as for the means of accomplishing it with such good

effect that to this day the results are apparent in every church in which true ecelesr astical music is sung. ‘

Dreading to trust the issue of so severe a trial to a single work, Palestrina, with characteristic modesty, submitted ee TT nt en

1 For examples, consult the Dodecachordon of Glareanus, and Petrueci’s Odhecaton and Canti C. No. cento cinquanta.

2 See two extremely rare volumes of his Masses in the library of the British Museum.

three Masses to Cardinal Carlo Borromeo for approval. These were privately rehearsed, in presence of the com- missioners, at the palace of Cardinal Vitellozzi ; and, while warmly admiring them all, the judges were unanimous in deciding that the third mass fulfilled, in the highest ossible degree, all the conditions demanded. The private trial took place in June 1565 ; and, on the 19th of that month, the Mass was publicly sung at the Sistine Chapel, in presence of Pope Pius IV., who compared its music to that heard by St John in his vision of the New Jerusalem. Thenceforth it was formally accepted as the type of all true ecclesiastical music. Parvi transcribed it, for the library of the choir, in characters of extraordinary size and beauty ; and, in acknowledgment of his services to art, Palestrina

_ was appointed by the pope composer to the Sistine Chapel,

an office created expressly in his honour, and confirmed to him by seven later pontiffs, though with the very insufficient honorarium of three scudi per month, in addition to the

six which formed his pension.

In 1567 this Mass was printed in Palestrina’s Zzber secundus Missarum. The volume was dedicated to Philip IL of Spain, but the Mass was called the “ Missa Papze Marcelli.” ‘This title, clearly given in honour of the short- lived pope Marcellus IL, has given rise to an absurd story, told by Pellegrini and others, to the effect that the Mass was composed by Pope Marcellus I., martyred early

in the 4th century, and was only discovered by Palestrina. Of course, in the 4th century the composition of such

music was impossible ; but this is only a specimen of the innumerable fables which have brought the true history into disrepute. The Missa Pape Marcelli is undoubtedly Palestrina's greatest work. Its ineffable beauty has often

been described in glowing terms by those who have heard

it in the Sistine Chapel, but it was never heard in Eng- land until 1882, when the Bach choir, consisting of two hundred unaccompanied voices, sang it at St James's Hall, under the direction of Mr Otto Goldschmidt ; and the effect produced on that occasion more than justified all that had ever been said of the music, which is certainly the most beautiful, the most solemn, and the most truly devotional that has ever been dedicated to the service of the church.

We have dwelt at some length on these circumstances, because they left a more indelible impression upon the history of art than any other events in Palestrina's life, which was not what the world would call a prosperous one, though he himself was quite satisfied with his condition.

Upon the death of Animuccia in 1571 Palestrina was re-elected to his appointment at the Cappella Giulia. He also succeeded Animuccia as Maestro di Cappella at the Oratory of Philip Neri; but these appointments were far from lucrative, and he still remained a very poor man. In 1580 he was much distressed by the death of his wife ; and the loss of three promising sons, Angelo, Ridolfo, and Silla, left him with one child only—Igino—a very unworthy descendant. In 1586 a new trouble befel him: Pope Sixtus V. wished to appoint him maestro to the pontifical choir, as successor to Antonio Boccapadule, then about to resign, and commissioned Boccapadule to prepare the choir for the change. Boccapadule, however, managed so clumsily that Palestrina was accused of having meanly plotted for his own advancement. The pope was very angry, and punished the calumniators very severely ; but Palestrina lost the appointment. These troubles, however, did not hinder his work, which he continued, without

Intermission, until February 2, 1594, when he breathed his last in the arms of his friend, Filippo Neri.

The printed works of Palestrina include twelve volumes of Masses; Seven volumes of Motets for from four to twelve voices; two

volumes of Offertoria, and one of Hymns, for the whole year ; one

volume of Lamentations, three of Litanies, and one of Magnificats ; two of Madrigals, the loveliest in existence ; and two of Madrigali spirituali ; besides an immense number of compositions still remain- ingin MS. The whole of these are now in course of publication by Breitkopf and_Hartel, of Leipsic. (W. S. R.) PALEY, Winuiam (1743-1805), was born in 1743 at Peterborough, where his father was one of the minor canons of the cathedral. The Paley family belonged to the West Riding of Yorkshire, and in 1745 Paley's father was appointed head master of the grammar school of Giggleswick, his native parish. Here Paley received his early education under his father's care. In 1759 he proceeded to Cambridge, where his first undergraduate years were given up, according to his own account, more to society than to study. But, being roused by a reproof from one of his companions, he used the remainder of his time to such advantage that he came out senior wrangler at the end of his course. After taking his degree in 1763, Paley was for about three years assistant in a school at Greenwich ; but on his election to a fellowship he returned to Cambridge, and became, in 1768, one of the junior tutors of his college. His colleague in this office was John Law, son of Dr Edmund Law, then master of Peterhouse, and afterwards bishop of Carlisle. To the connexion thus formed Paley was afterwards indebted for his first preferments in the church. As tutor at Christ's, Paley lectured on Locke, Clarke, and Butler, and also delivered a systematic course on moral philosophy, which formed the basis, more than ten years later, of his well-known treatise. The subscription coutroversy was then agitating the university, and Paley published an anonymous Defence of a pamphlet in which Bishop Law had advocated the retrenchment and simplification of the thirty-nine articles. But, though Paley was all for "worshipping God in that generality of expression in which He himself has left some points," he did not see his way to join the petitioners for a

relaxation of the terms of subscription. His own view of the articles, as simply “articles of peace,” probably led him to consider their action as a piece of overstrained conscientiousness. In 1776 Paley vacated his fellowship by marriage, and retired to the rectory of Musgrave in Westmoreland, which had been conferred on him the year before by the bishop of Carlisle. This very modest living was soon supplemented by the vicarage of Dalston, and presently exchanged for that of Appleby. In 1782 he became archdeacon of Carlisle on the appointment of the younger Law to an Irish bishopric. His first important work, The Principles of Moral and Political Philosophy, was published (as Principles of Morality and Politics) in 1785, and Paley received the unusually large sum of £1000 for the copyright. The book at once became the ethical text-book of the university of Cambridge, and passed through fifteen editions in the author’s lifetime. It was followed in 1790 by his first essay in the field of Christian apologetics, Hore Pauline, or the Truth of the Scripture History of St Paul evinced by a comparison of the Epistles which bear his name with the Acts of. the Apostles and with one another, ‘Though the original idea of the book was derived from Doddridge, this is probably the most original of its author’s works. It was followed in 1794 by a more general work in the same field, the celebrated View of the Evidences of Christianity. Paley’s latitudinarian views, combined with a certain homely outspokenness in the Moral and Political Philo- sophy regarding the foundations of civil authority (“the divine right of kings is like the divine right of constables ”), are said to have debarred him from the highest positions in the church. But his able defence of the faith brought him substantial acknowledgments from the episcopal bench. The bishop of London gave him a stall in St Paul’s; the bishop of Lincoln made him subdean of that

diocese ; and the bishop of Durham conferred upon him the rectory of Bishop-Wearmouth, worth £1200 a year. Paley transferred his household to Bishop-Wearmouth in 1795. His wife, the mother of eight children, had died four years before, and in the end of 1795 Paley married a second time. During the remainder of his life his time was divided between Bishop-Wearmouth and Lincoln. In 1800 he was attacked by the disease of the kidneys which ultimately carried him off. It was in the intervals of

comparative health and ease that remained to him that his last, and in some respects his most remarkable, work was produced, Natural Theology, or Hvidences of the Existence and Attributes of the Deity collected from the Appearances of Nature (1802). He endeavoured, as he says in dedicating the book to the bishop of Durham, to repair in the study his deficiencies in the church. He died on the 25th May 1805.

In the dedication just referred to, Paley claims a systematic unity for his works. It is true that "they have been written in an order the very reverse of that in which they ought to be read"; nevertheless the Natwral Theology forms "the completion of a regular and comprehensive design." The truth of this will be apparent, if it is considered that the Moral and Political Philosophy admittedly embodies two presuppositions—(1) that "God Almighty wills and wishes the happiness of His creatures," and (2) that adequate motives must be supplied to virtue by a system of future rewards and punishments. Now the second presupposition depends, according to Paley, on the credibility of the Christian religion (which he treats almost exelusively as the revelation of these "new sanctions" of morality). The Zvideneces and the Horz Pauline were intended as a demonstration of this credi- bility. The argument of these books, however, depends in turn upon the assumption of a benevolent Creator desirous of com- municating with His creatures for their good; and the Natwral Theology, by applying the argument from design to prove the existence of such a Deity, becomes the foundation of the argu- mentative edifice. The sense of unity in the structure is increased to arcader of the present day by the uniformity of the point of view from which the world is regarded throughout. Paley has popularized for 19th-century use the Deistic conception of the universe and the divine economy which was common ground last eentury both to the assailants aud the defenders of orthodox Christianity.

In his Natural Theology Paley has adapted with consummate skill the argument which Ray (1691) and Derham (1711) and Nieuwentyt! (1730) had already made familiar to Englishmen. "For my part," he says, "I take my stand in human anatomy " ; and what he everywhere insists upon is " the necessity, in each particular ease, of au intelligent designing mind for the eontriving and determining of the forms which organized bodies bear." This is the whole argument, and the book consists of a mass of well- chosen

instances marshalled in support of it. But by placing Paley's facts in a new light, the theory of evolution has deprived his argument of its foree, so far as it applies the idea of special contrivance to individual organs or to species. Paley's idea of contrivance is only applicable if we suppose a highly developed organism to be dropped suddenly into foreign surroundings. But the relation of an organism to its environment is not of this external nature, and the adaptation of the one to the other must be regarded as the result of a long process of interaction in the past history of the species. In thus substituting the operation of general laws for Paley's continual invocation ofa supernatural cause, evolution passes no judgment on the question of the ultimate dependence of these laws upon intelligenee ; but it evidently alters profoundly our general conception of the relation of that intelligence to the world.

'The Hvidences of Christianity is mainly a condensation of Bishop Douglas's Criterion and Lardner's Credibility of the Gospel History. But the task is so judiciously performed that it would probably be difficult to get a more effective statement of the external evidences of Christianity than Paley has here presented. The general position, however, that the action of the first preachers of Christianity was due "solely" to their belief in the occurrence of

1 Nieuwentyt (1654-1718) was a Dutch disciple of Descartes, whose work, Regt gebruyk der weereld beschovinge, published in 1716, was translated into English in 1780 under the title of The Religious Philosopher. A charge of wholesale plagiarism from this book was brought against Paley in the Atheneum for 1848. Paley refers several times to Nieuwentyt, who uses the famous illustration of the watch. But the illustration is not peculiar to Nieuwentyt, and had been appropriated by many others before Paley. In the case of a writer whose chief merit is the way in which he has worked up existing material, a general charge of plagiarism is almost irrelevant.

certain miraculous events is on the same level as the view that "the proper business of a revelation" is to certify future rewards and punishments. It

betrays a defective analysis of the religions consciousness. For the rest, his idea of revelation depends upon the same mechanical conception of the relation of God to. the world which dominates his Vatural Theology; and he seeks to prove the divine origin of Christianity by isolating it from the general history of mankind, whereas later writers find their chief argument in the continuity of the process of revelation,

For the place of Paley's theological utilitarianism in the history of ethical speculation in England, sce Ernics.

The face of the world has changed so greatly since Paley's day that we are apt to do less than justice to his undoubted merits, He is nowhere original, and nowhere profound, but_he justly claims to be "something more than a mere compiler." His strong reasoning power, his faculty of clear arrangement and_ forcible statement, place him in the first rank of expositors and advocates, He inasses his arguments, it has been said, with a general's eye, His style is perfectly perspicuous, and its "strong home-toueh" compensates for what is lacking in elasticity and grace. Paley's avoidance of ultimate speculative questions commended him to his own generation, and enabled him to give full scope to the shrewd practical understanding in which his strength lay. He displays little or no spirituality of feeling; but this is a matter in which one age is apt to misjudge another, and Paley was at least practi- cally 'benevolent and conscientiously attentive to his parish duties, The active part he took in advocating the abolition of the slaye- trade is evidence of a wider power of sympathy. His unconquerable cheerfulness becomes itself almost religious in the last chapters of the Natural Theology, when we consider the circumstances in which they were composed. The chapter on the goodness of the Deity is more touched with fceling than any other part of his writings, and impresses the reader with respect for his essential goodness of heart. (A. SE.)

PALGHAT, a town in Malabar district, Madras, India, situated in the gap or pass of the same name in the Western Ghats, in 10° 45' 49" N. lat. and 76° 41' 48″ E. long., 74 miles south-east of Beypur, with a population in 1881 of 36,339. Being the key to Travancore and Malabar from the east, it was formerly of considerable strategic importance. The fort fell for the first time into British hands in 1768, and subsequently formed the basis of many of

the operations against Tippoo, which terminated in the storming of Seringapatam. It still stands, but 1s no longer garrisoned. Palghat is a busy entrepdt for the exchange of produce between Malabar and the upland country, and is a station on the Madras railway. The easy ascent by the Palghat Pass, formerly covered with teak forests, supplies the great route from the south-west coast of India to the interior.

PALGRAVE, Srr Francts (1788-1861), historian, was born in London in July 1788, the son of Meyer Cohen, a Jew, and a wealthy member of the stock exchange. He was privately educated, and such was his capacity for languages that at the age of eight he translated the Latin version of the Frogs and Mice into French, which his father published in 1797 with a short preface. On account of the failure of his father's fortunes in 1803 he was articled as clerk to a firm of solicitors, with whom he remained till 1822, acting for some years as their managing clerk, after which he took chambers in King's Bench Walk, Temple, and was employed under the record commission. On his marniage in 1823 he obtained the royal permission to change his name from Cohen to Palgrave, the maiden name of his wife's mother. He was called to the bar at the Middle Temple in 1827, and soon acquired a good practice m pedigree cases in the House of Lords. From an early period of his life he had devoted much attention to literary and antiquarian studies. In 1818 he edited a collection of Anglo-Norman chansons, and previous to his call to the bar contributed largely to the Hdinburgh and Quarterly Reviews. In 1831 he published the History of England, in the Family Library series, and in 1832 he brought out The Rise and Progress of the English Commonwealth, and Observations on the Principles of New Municipal Corport tions. The same year he received the honour of knight-

hood. In 1837 he published Merchant and Friar, an imaginary history of Marco Polo and Friar Bacon. On the reconstruction of the record commission service in 1838, he was appointed to the post of deputy-keeper. Under the sanction of Government he edited Hotuli Curie Regis (2 vols., 1835) and Calendars and Inventories of the Exchequer (3 vols., 1836). He

was the author of Detached Thoughts on the Polity and Ecclesiastical [istory of the Middle Ages, printed for private circulation, and a learned and elaborate History of Normandy and England (4 vols., 1851-64). He died at Hampstead, 6th July 1861.

PALI (pronounced Bali by the Siamese) is the name of the literary language of the Buddhists in Ceylon, Burmah, Siam, and Cambodia. Laloubére (Hel. de Stam)

‘ is the first European writer who mentions the name,

towards the end of the 17th century. Various opinions have been advanced as to the etymology—from path, to read (Mason, Minayeff), or pdli=pra+dli (J. D’Alwis, E. Kuhn)—and original meaning of the word. The latter, iven as “row,” “range,” “ line,” is applied by Trenckner (Pali Mise. i. 69) to the “series” of teachers by whom the text of the sacred tradition was handed down, and, according to the Burmese conception of the word (see Forchhammer’s Report for 1879-80, p. 6), to the sacred texts simply, irrespectively of the language or dialect in which they are written; whereas Pali scholars generally use the word less in the sense of sacred canon than in that of the language in which the canon is written (Childers, D’Alwis, Fausbéll, Oldenberg). The same applies to the synonymous term Zanti. When and where that lan- guage was formed is still a matter of controversy. We quote here only the opinions of the two principal writers on the subject, Professors E. Kuhn and H. Oldenberg. The former, following Westergaard, holds that Pali was the Sanskritic vernacular spoken at Ujjain, the capital of Malava, at the time when Mahendra, the son and successor of the great Asoka, took the sacred canon with

him to Ceylon in the form in which it had two years _ previously received the sanction of the third general

council (Beitr. zur Pali-Gramm., Berlin, 1875). On the other hand, Professor Oldenberg, rejecting that tradi- tion, considers the naturalization of the Pali language in Ceylon to have been the fruit of a period of long and continued intercourse between that island and the adjacent parts of India, more especially the Kalinga country. Though he does not state within what limits of time that gradual naturalization took place, he records his opinion that at

least one portion of the Buddhist canon, the Vinaya, in its present form existed in the Pali language about a hundred and fifty years before Mahendra, that is, about 400 p.c. This is in all probability the earliest period that may be assigned to Pali as a literary language (The Vinayapitakam, edited by Oldenberg, vol. i., 1879, Introduction). Both scholars have discussed the question as to the Pali being identical with the Magadhi dialect, and have satisfactorily disposed of it. ‘There can be no doubt that some considerable time must have elapsed before the Pali recension of the canon was completed, and that, as regards the locality of the language, through the contiguity of cognate vernaculars a palpable number of words and word-forms found their way into Pali, enriching alike its vocabulary and its grammatical resources ; or how else could we account for the occurrence of such doublets and triplets as adda, alla (Sanskrit, Ardra), data, avuta (S. Avrita), isa, issa, ikka, accha (S. riksha), Kiecha, kasira (S. kricchra), gaddha, giddha, gijjha (S. gridhra), kil4, khelA, khidda (8. Krid4), tanh4, tasina (trishné), tikkhina, tikkha, tinha (S. tikshna), dosind, junha (8. jyotsn4), rukkha, vaccha (S. vriksha), sita, mihita (S, smita), sindna, nahdna (8. snana), sunisa,

sunha, husd (8. snushd), and for the many alternative forms in the declensions, some of which will presently be specified? It is also certain that the very belief in the sacred character of the canon must have tended to preserve the text unchanged in form and substance from the time that it was received in Ceylon till the present day. There is, however, a voluminous literature which has grown around and out of the sacred texts, such as Buddhaghosa’s great commentary on them (beginning of the 5th century), and several historical works and their commentaries. In this secondary stage many new words and hybrid grammatical forms, due to what Childers appropriately calls false analogy, have found admission into the language (see Fausbéll’s Dhammapada, Introduction); and the grammarians who at this period appear to have treated of language after the Sanskrit models enrol them in their scheme as correct and legitimate.

Though tradition (Mahdvansa, xii. 6; Buddhavansa, xxii.) makes the introduction of Buddhism into Burmah contemporaneous with the

conversion of Ceylon, there is every probability that the event took place at a much later period. It must, however, have taken firm root in Burmah at the time that in consequence of religious persecutions Buddhist priests from Ceylon went to Burmah to obtain a copy of the sacred canon and Buddhaghosa's commentary thereon (5th century of our era). Thence an uninterrupted religious intercourse has been kept up between the two countries up to the present, notwith- standing which certain discrepancies between the Pali texts of Burmah and those of Ceylon point to the fact that the latter retain older forms and expressions, whereas the former replace these by more modern, more common, or more regular ones (Fausbéll, Zen Jdtakas, Introd.). This fact, however, can only be established on a scientific basis when good old copies of grammatical works, both in the Sinhalese and Burmese character, shall have been carefully examined and compared ad hoc, It is certainly true that in Ceylon, where the study of Sanskrit flourishes, and where the people have spoken for upwards of two thousand years an Indo-Aryan idiom, Pali learning has obtained a far firmer and more favourable footing than in Burmah, where the nature of the vernacular places considerable difficulties in the path of the student of the sacred language.

As regards the status of Pali in Siam, no trustworthy information is available. It would appear, however, that Pali MSS. from that country—invariably written in the Cambodian character—are more remarkable for caligraphy than for correctness. Both in Burmah and Ceylon Pali is written in the character of the vernacular. The well- known Manual used at the admission of a novice into the monastic order is almost the only book in which the so-called square character is customary (see Burnouf and Lassen, Hssai sur le Pali, Paris, 1826).

Since the days of Prinsep the name of Pali has also been given to the various local dialects, and the name of Pali character to the monumental alphabet, or rather alphabets, in which the so-called Asoka inscriptions are written. The language of these records, it is true, comes nearer to the Pali than to any other early Sanskritic idiom ; still it is sufficiently distinct from the language of Buddhist literature to be treated by itself (see E. Senart, Les Inscriptions de Piyadasi, vol. i., Paris, 1881; and G. Biihler, in 7. D. M. G., vol. xxxvii.).

Pali has aptly been said to stand phonetically in the same position to Sanskrit as Italian does to Latin. There is the same tendeney to smooth down all sounds diffieult of utterance, to assimilate or otherwise simplify compound consonants, and to substitute vocalie or nasal for consonantal word-terminations.

More especially, Pali lacks the rz and 7 vowels and the diphthongs ai and aw. The Sanskrit vowel ri gencrally passes in Pali into a,

sometimes also into 7 or w; as isi (S. rishi), dadha (S. dridha), putha (S. prithag). # and o, representing S. a7 and au _respec- tively, can before double consonants be further shortened into 4 and uv, just as other long vowels may be shortened under the same circumstances; thus wssukka (S. autsukya), rattha (S. rashtra). Some anomalous vowel changes are exhibited in the following examples :—kondafiita (S. kaundinya), pana (S. punar), purisa (S. purusha), wsw (S. ishu), vad (S. vijtid), hetthd (S. adhastat). As regards consonants, Pali has only the dental sibilant, and replaces by anusvara most final consonants of Sanskrit words; as manam (S. manik), sanim (S. sanais), khattum (S. kritvas). Two or more consonants meeting in the middle of a word are mostly assimilated, as wmmagga (S. unmarga), pabbhdra (S, pragbhara). Other changes are paftha (S. pragna), pallanka (S. paryanka), ddthé (S. damshtra), and of initial consonants latthi (8. yashti), ludda (rudra), nangala (S. langala), kipillika (S. piptlika), khdnu (S. sthanu). Contraction is very frequent, as well as metathesis, as the following examples will show:—kho (S. khalu), acceka (S. atyayika), dcera (S. Acdrya), cuddasa (S. caturdagan), issera (S. aigvarya), abbohdra (S. avyavahara). In the Scenic Prakrits and in the Magadht of the Jains the consonantal decay has reached a much higher stage than it has in Pali, showing that the latter holds its place between the former and the Sanskrit. This applies also to Sandht, which in Pali is indeed sporadically and irregularly attended to, but shows a tendency to being altogether neglected.

There is no dual in the declension any more than in the con- jugation; the only remnants of it appear to be ¢o (S. tau) and ubho (8S. ubhau). The old dative case is rarely used, and the genitive takes its place. The declension of nouns has in some cases been encroached upon by the pronominal

dcclension. According to the nature of Pali phonology, there cannot be any real consonantal stems, and therefore no regular consonantal declension. Final consonants are cither dropped or have an a added to them. In the former case the final consonants reappear before the vowel terminations, in the latter the declension follows the false analogy of the a-declension. Thus, dhima (S. dhimat) is declined as follows :—Sing.-—-nom. dhima, dhimanto ; voc. dhimam, dhima, dhim4; acc. dhimantam, dhimam; instr. dhtmataé, dhiman- tena; dat. gen. dhimato, dhimantassa, dhimassa; abl. dhimata ; loc. dhimati, dhimante, dhimantasmim, dhimantamhi ; Plwr.— nom. voc. dhimanto, dhimanta; acc. dhimante; instr. abl. dhimantebhi, dhimantehi; dat. gen. dhimatam, dhimanténam ; loc. dhimantesu. Examples of multiform cases are the loc. sing. of nadt, which exhibits the forms nadiy4, nadiyam, najjam ; the voc. plur. of the honorific pronoun bhavam (S. bhavat), which has bhavanto, bhonto, bhante ; the gen. dat. sing. of pita, which has pitu, pituno, pitussa, aud in the plur. pitfinam, pitunnam, pitara-nam, pitanam ; the loc. sing. of mano, manam (S. manas), which has manasi, mane, manasmim, manamhi. The personal pronouns also show a variety of forms, some ef which are still traceable in the modern Prakrits, Thus aham has in the plural—nom. vayam, mayam, amhe ; acc. asme, amhe, amhikam; instr. abl. amhebhi, amhehi; dat. gen. amhikam, amhanam, amham; loc. amhesu. Similarly, the gen. dat. sing. fem. of the demonstrative pronoun has the forms imiss4, imiss&ya, imaya, ass4, assdya.

The Pali verb shows even more than docs the noun a tendency to break with the analogy of the Sanskrit. Though native gram- marians arrange the conjugations on a plan similar to that of the Sanskrit, the disorganizing process which pervades the whole of Pali grammar is in no part so advanced as in this particular. Thus, the present tense of the verb thd (S. stha) is thati as well as titthati; of dhd@ it is dadhati, dahati, and dhati; of da dadati, deti, dati, and (by false analogy from the optative dajjam) dajjati; of ji jayati, jeti, and jinati; of bAt bhayati; of rwdh rundhati, rundhiti, rundhiti, and rundheti; of mar (S. mri) marati and miyati; and of kar (S. kri) the plural has karoma, karotha, karonti, and also regularly kubbanti, from which form again by false analogy a 3d person singular kubbati has been derived. The termination re of the 3d person plural perfect 4tmancpada has been transferred to the present tense, where it is used along with ~~ante. But there is a general predilection for the parasmaipada termina~~ tions, even in

the passive. While the perfect sensibly recedes before the other tenses, and is of rare occurrence, the use of the aorist largely encroaches on that of the imperfect, the conjugation of which is in many verbs influenced by the former, as, ¢.g., in the verb as, in which the imperfect is:—I1st sing., Asim or Asi; 2d and 3d, asi; 1st plur., dsimha ; 2d, dsittha ; 3d, dsimsu. In the impera- tive par. the Ist sing. and 2d plur. do not differ from the corre- sponding forms of the present. The affixes of the future (-ssa) and passive (-yw) may also be added to the special base; thus we have the forms dakkhati and passissati, ‘*he will sce,” and gamiyati and gacchiyati, ‘‘he is gone to.” In the causative verb the form with p greatly preponderates, and may even be added to the special base, as, ¢.g., Sunapeti (S. gravayati), “he informs”; ganhapeti (S. grahayati). Lastly, the gerund in -tvd is not only used in compound verbs in preference to the one in -ya, but may also

Li

occasionally be superadded to the latter for the sake of preatep precision. Thus, sajjitvi=sad+ya+i+tva; and abhiruyhity4< abhiruh + ya+i+tva. Instead of ¢vd the forms tvéna and ting often occur. There are two forms of the infinitive, there being besides the usual form in -twm one in -tave, which appears to haye lingered in the vernacular long aftcr it was disused in Sanskrit literature.

Literature.—The study of Pali by Europeans is of com. paratively recent date; in fact, our knowledge of the very existence of an extensive Pali literature dates scarcely

balf a century back. It is true that in 1826 Professors

Burnouf and Lassen were enabled, from an examination of certain Pali MSS. which had fallen under their notice, to give a general account of the language ; but it was reserved for the late Mr G. Turnour, colonial secretary of Ceylon, to collect the first trustworthy information concerning the sacred books of the island, and to edit and translate the first Pali text of any extent. His choice of the Mahdvansa, one of the oldest chronicles, was all the more fortunate, as, in the almost total absence of historical works in Sanskrit literature, these annals were calculated to yield a vast amount of information regarding the origin and earlier history of the Buddhistic

religion in India. The book had been ready for the press many years, but was not published till 1837, while a series of articles by the same author, em- bodying the results of his examination of the Mahdvansa

| and its commentary and of the contemporaneous Dépavansa

(Jour. Bengal As. Soc., vols. v. and vi.), had been received by Oriental scholars with the utmost interest. The thirty- eight chapters published by him bring the history of Ceylon down to 477 a.p.; they comprise the original work of Mahdndma. Six more chapters, ready for the press in text and translation, were found among Turnour's papers at his early death in 1842, and are now in the India office library. The whole Mahdvansa, in Pali and Sinhalese, has since been printed at the Government press, Colombo, 1877-83, and an English translation is in progress. How- ever, a critical edition of the earlier part, and more especially of the commentary upon it, is still a desidera- tum. There is an excellent edition and translation of the Dipavansa by Professor Oldenberg (London, 1879); according to whom the work was written between the beginning of the 4th and the first third of the 5th cen- tury. Among the historical works may also be classed the Ddthdvansa, a poetical history of the tooth-relic of Buddha, composed by Dhammakitti early in the 13th cen- tury. The work was printed at Colombo in 1882, and an English translation by M. Kumaraswdmi appeared in Lon- don in 1874. Further, the Attanagalwvansa, the history of a temple, likewise of the 13th century, edited and trans- lated by J. D'Alwis at Colombo in 1866. Other historical works are described in the catalogues 'of Pali MSS. Lastly, there exist many medieval Pali inscriptions, some of considerable extent, as, ¢.g., those of Kaly4ni in Burmah, which are now in course of publication, and are likely to yield valuable historical results. Many of them are accompanied by a translation in Burmese or Talaing,—a language now all but extinct. It is worth noting that neither in Ceylon nor in Cambodia have any old Pah inscriptions been found ; in the island the old inscriptions are in Sinhalese, in Cambodia they are in Sanskrit, fre quently with a translation in Khmer.

Though there is an old ninefold division (navanga, se Dr R. Morris's " Report on Pali Literature," in Phzlological Society's Proceedings, 1880) of the canonical scriptures, 1 is the general practice of Pali scholars to abide

by the division into three “baskets ” (tipitaka, pitakattaya), first specified by G. Turnour, and then more correctly m Childers’s Dictionary, p. 507, viz., the Vinayapitaka, the Suttapitaka, and the Abhidhammapitaka, or the baskets of discipline, of discourses, and of metaphysics, Only the

—

- first of these, and at the same time the earliest, has been published in a critical edition in five volumes by Professor – Oldenberg, London, 1879-83, while a translation by the game and Mr Rhys Davids is in progress in the Sacred Books of the East. One of its constituent parts, the Pétimokkha, mentioned already by Laloubére, was edited and translated into Russian by Minayeff (1869); an English translation by Gogerly had appeared thirty years previously in vol. iii. of the Ceylon Friend, and the Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society for 1875 brought out a new translation, accompanied by the Pali text, by J. F. Dick- son. Editions of the text have also appeared in Ceylon and Burmah. A ritualistic manual, the Kammavdcd, the first chapter of which was edited by Spiegel with a Latin translation in 1841, was the first Pali text published in Europe. ‘The first of the numerous works composing the Suttapitaka that was made accessible to Pali scholars in Europe was the Dhammapada, or Path to Virtue, a criti- cal edition of which, with a Latin translation and copious extracts from Buddhaghosa’s commentary, was brought out by Professor Fausboll, of Copenhagen, in 1855, So popu- lar has this work proved as a type of Buddhistic sentiment that no less than two English translations (by Professor F. Max Miiller in 1870 and 1881, and by Professor J. Gray, of Rangoon, in 1881), one in German (by Professor A. Weber, 1860), and one in French (by M. F. Hf, 1878) have appeared, besides various editions printed at Colombo and Rangoon, with translations into the respective ver- naculars. Other collections of moral maxims also, such as Lokaniti and Dhammaniti, appear to be fayourite books in Burmah. Of the other works of the Suttapitaka, the Jdataka Book, an account of the five hundred and fifty previous births of Buddha, has till quite recently absorbed the lion’s share of attention on account of its being the oldest extant collection of fables and popular stories, many of which have at an early date found their way to the West,

and are still current amongst us. Three volumes of the text of this extensive work, edited by Professor Fausbdll, and one volume of the translation, by Professor Rhys Davids, have up to the present appeared, while many of the most interesting tales, in groups of from two to twelve, were separately published by the same editor between the years 1858 and 1872. Other works belonging to the same division which have been published are Khuddakapdtha (by Professor Childers, 1869), Buddhavansa and Cariydpitaka (by Dr Morris, 1882), Anguttaranckdya (by the same, 1884), and Majjhimanikdya (by Trenckner, 1884); and a number of others, such as Itivuttaka, Theragdtha, Theri- gathd, and Apaddna, are, thanks to the active zeal of the working members of the newly founded Pali Text Society, either in progress or in preparation. An edition of Sutta- nipdta, by Professor Fausbéll, whose translation of the work appeared in 1881, is also passing through the press. Seven suttas from the Dighanikdya, prepared for publication by the late P. Grimblot, appeared in Paris in 1876; and a number of others, from various collections, edited and translated by L. Feer, are to be found in the Journal Asiatique. An edition, by Professor Childers, of the Mahéparinibbinasutta, from the Dighanikdya, was pub- lished in 1876, and a translation of the same and other suttas, by Professor Rhys Davids, forms vol. xi. of the Sacred Books of the East. Lastly, Dr Morris has in the press an edition and translation of “ the Six Jewels of the Law,” one of which is the Mahdsatipatthdnasutta, a favourite text-book in Burmah and Ceylon. The Milinda- pantha, a work of the middle of the 2d century B.c., a scholarly edition of which we owe to Trenckner (1880), though obviously not a canonical book, may well be classed with this second division. The Abhidhammapitaka has so little in it to attract the European student of Pali that an

edition of any of its components parts is not likely to be forthcoming for some time. A compendium of its tenets, the Abludhammatthasangaha, has been frequently printed in the Burmese and in the Sinhalese character.

While in Siam and Ceylon the law-books are in the vernacular, they are in Burmah in the original Pali, which is generally accompanied by a Burmese gloss. San Germano translated one of them (see his work on Burmah, p. 173

sq.) in the end of last century. Several of them have in recent years been brought out at Rangoon by Colonel H. Browne, and the oldest of them, by King Wagaru, is passing through the press. The editor, Professor Forchhammer, has also supplied valuable translations to the series of Mr Jardine's Notes on Buddhist Law, which are appearing at Rangoon.

_The age of the oldest Pali grammarian, Kaccayana, is still under dispute; it is far more likely, however, that it has to be placed towards the end of the 11th century A.D. (see Colonel Fryer's paper in Jour. Beng. As. Soc. for 1882) than with J. D'Alwis in the 6th century B.c. While his system is the one which has long been current in Burmah, the grammar by Moggallana (second half of the 12th century) represents the leading grammatical school of Ceylon. Round both a large number of grammatical works have grown up, more than sixty of which are specified and fully described by Subhuti in the introduction to his book on the Pali declensions (Wamamdla, Colombo, 1876). M. E. Senart has given an excellent edition and exposition of Kacc&yana's grammar Paris, 1871), some chapters of which had previously been made the subject of separate treatises by J. D'Alwis and Professor E. Kuhn. The first five chapters of the Bdalévatara were edited and translated by L. F. Lee (Ceylon As. Soc. Jowr. for 1870-71), and the sixth chapter of the Rapasiddhi, another old grammar, was recently published by Dr Griinwedel (Berlin, 1883). The oldest Pali vocabulary, called Abhidhdnappadipika, and compiled by the above-mentioned Moggallina on the model of the Amara- kosha, was first printed at Colombo in 1824 as an appendix to Clough's grammar. A better edition, by Subhuti, with English and Sinhalese interpretations, notes, and appendices, appeared in 1865, of which a much improved reissue has just appeared at Colombo, to be followed in a second volume by full alphabetical indices. The Dhdtumanjdsd, a dictionary of Pali radicals, by Silavansa, was edited with English and Sinhalese translation at Colombo in 1872. Vuttodaya, a work on metre by Sangharakkhita, who is identified with Moggallana, was first cdited and translated by Professor Minayeff of St Petersburg in 1869, and in 1877, as No. II. of his Pali Studies, by Colonel G. E. Fryer, who had previously, in the first essay (1875), given the text with a full analysis of a work on rhetoric, called Subodhdlankara, by the same author.

There are great facilities in Europe for the study of Pali and its extensive literature. The British Museum, the University Library of Cambridge, and the library of the India Office are rich in Pali MSS., and a catalogue raisonné of the last-mentioned collection, by Professor Oldenberg, is accessible to students. The Royal Library of Copenhagen contains the MSS. which the late Professor E. Rask had brought from India, probably the finest collection in Europe, a catalogue of whieh was published in 1846, The National Library of Paris is the only one in Europe that possesses, in addition to a large number of MSS. in the Sinhalese and Burmese eharacters, a fine assemblage of MSS. in Cambodian letters. There are also Pali MSS. in the museums of learned societies and in private hands, and it would be well if means eould be devised for bringing these hidden treasures to light and utilizing them for literary purposes, for the study of the Pali language and literature has been making rapid strides within the last ten years. Lectures on PAli are delivered at Cambridge, in Paris, and in most of the Gcrman univer- sities, and the number of publications of Pali texts increases year by year. It is already admitted that Childers's Dictionary, the publieation of which in 1875 formed an epoch in the study of PAli, no longer sufiiees to supply the want, and that a more comprehensive work, or at least a supplementary dictionary, is urgently needed. Clough's Pali Grammar, which appeared at Colombo in 1824, found its way to Europe so tardily that it was still unknown to the authors of the Essai sur le Pali when they published their supplement to it in 1827, and it has always been a searee book. In 1872 Professor Minayeff brought out at St Petersburg a Pali grammar, written in Russian, which was translated into French py M. S. Guyard five years later. An English translation made from that Freneh version, by C. G. Adams, appeared at Maulmain in 1882. Meantime Professor E. Kuhn of Munieh published his valuable Betirdge zur Pali-Gram- mattk (Berlin, 1875), a mine of wealth for all students of the language. It is from this book and from Dr Ed. Miiller's grammar, to be named presently, that most of the examples in the above grammatieal sketeh have been culled. In 1881 there appeared at Christiania Die Flexion des Pali in threm Verhdliniss zum Sanskrit, by Alf Torp, and last year in London Dr Frankfurter's Handbook of Péli, being an Elementary Grammar, a Chrestomathy, and a Glossary, at the same time that at Rangoon Professor J. Gray's Elements of Pali Grammar left the press, The grammar by Dr Ed. Miiller, just published, deserves to be called a pattern of eritical scholarship.

Mueh valuable information on grammatieal and etymologieal questions may also be gained from Professor Fr. Miiller's Beitrage zur Kenntniss der Pali-Sprache, Vienna, 1867-69; Dr Morris's " Report on Pali Literature," in Proc. Philol. Soc., 1880; and last, not least, V. Trenckner's Pali Miscellany, part i., Copenhagen, 1879. (R. BR.)

PALIMPSEST, a term applied to any material from which writing has been removed to make room for another text, and which has thus been prepared or scraped a second time (radluyoros). Such an object therefore as an in-scribed monumental! stone or brass may be made palimpsest.

But the term is most commonly applied to ancient MSS. which have undergone this treatment. See PALHOGRAPHY. PALINDROME (rddAw, again, and dpdpos, a course), a

verse or sentence which runs the same when read either backwards or forwards. Such is the verse—

Roma tibi subito motibus ibit amor ; or

Signa te, signa, temere me tangis et angis ;

or

viboy avouhuara wy udvay dpe. Some have refined upon the palindrome, and composed verses each word of which is the same read backwards as forwards,—for instance, that of Camden—

Odo tenet mulum, madidam mappam tenet Anna, Anna tenet mappam madidam, mulum tenet Odo.

The following is still more complicated, as reading in four ways—upwards and downwards as well as backwards and forwards :—

SATOR AREPO TENET OPERA ROTAS

PALISSY, Bernarp (1510-1589), was born in 1510 at La Chapelle Biron, a village in the province of Périgord, France. His parents were poor, and at an early age he was thrown upon his own resources for even the most elementary education. With indomitable energy he read all the books within his reach, and, aided by naturally keen powers of observation, gained a knowledge, remarkable for that time, of chemistry, geology, botany, and other branches of natural history. Bernard Palissy's father was a painter of stained glass, and taught his son the practice of this important craft; he thus became a skilful draughtsman, learned the manipulation of colours, and gained that train- ing of the eye which in after years helped to bring him success and reward as a potter. After a period of travel- ling apprenticeship, Palissy marriedand settled in Saintes. At first he practised his craft of glass-painter, varied by portrait-painting and land-surveying. The search for subjects for his window-paintings led Palissy to extend his already wide course of study to history and classical mythology. He had not long been married when the whole course of his life was changed by a new ambition. He happened to see a fine piece of enamelled pottery, prob- ably majolica ware from Italy, and thereupon resolved to spend any time and labour to discover for himself the secret of the beautiful enamelled surface that he admired so much in that piece of pottery. His trade as a glass- painter had taught him something of the methods of paint- ing and firig enamel colours, and at the neighbouring village of La Chapelle des Pots he learned the rudiments of the potter's art in its simplest form; but this was all the help he had. He knew nothing whatever of the manu- facture of the finer sorts of faience, or of the composition of the white enamel which was to form the covering of his clay vessels and the ground for his coloured ornament.

Year after year, through a succession of utter failures, and almost without a gleam of hope, he laboured on, working often blindly and at random in search for the secret of the white enamel. Almost starving for want of food, his wife in rags bitterly and not unreasonably reproaching him for his cruelty, his furniture broken up to feed his kilns, and without a hand to help, Palissy struggled on for nearly sixteen years before success came. A truly tragic story is this, for after all it was no new discovery that Palissy ever reached or even aimed at, SS Ee ee ee

1 This last is from the xapxivor of the emperor Leo VI., the Philo- sopher, and oeeurs in a palindrome piece of twenty-seven lines, which can be seen in the Hacerpta Varia of Leo Allatius (1641). See also NV. and Q., 5th ser., vii. 372, viii. 77

The secret of the white enamel was known to every potter of northern Italy, and there, if he had but known, he might have learned that process on the rediscovery of which he wasted so many of the best years of his life All those struggles and failures are most vividly told by Palissy himself in one of the most thrilling pieces of autobiography ever written. The nearest parallel to it js perhaps (widely different as the two men are) that of his contemporary the Florentine Cellini.

For a few years Palissy enjoyed untroubled reward for his years of toil and unflinching constancy of purpose, His works were bought and appreciated by the queen, Catherine de' Medici, and many of the great nobles of her court, who were eager for specimens of his skill, But before long Palissy, who had always been something of a theologian and a constant Bible student, became irresistibly enthralled by the new doctrines of the Reformation, and enrolled himself an enthusiastic member of the Huguenot party. He could do nothing by halves; he devoted himself heart and soul to the cause, and, in 1558, while engaged in making plaques, tiles, and rustic figures in faience to decorate the Constable de Montmorency's Chateau d'Ecouen, Palissy was arrested and imprisoned at Bordeaux, while his kilns and the materials of his trade were destroyed by command of the magistrates,

Through the intervention of the French court Palissy was, after a time, liberated, and about 1563, under the protection of the king, set up his pottery-works in Paris, on a plot of ground afterwards occupied by part of the gardens of the Tuileries. Here Palissy lived and worked in comparative peace and prosperity till 1588, when a fresh outburst of religious zeal against the Huguenots proved too strong even for the royal patronage, which for so long had sheltered him. He was thrown into the Bastille, and, though Henry III., who was then king, offered him rewards and freedom if he would recant, Palissy preferred death to falsehood. Henry III., though not unmindful of the forty-five years during which Palissy had faithfully served

the court of France, was too timid or too weak to save his old servant, then nearly eighty years of age. Palissy was condemned to death, but died shortly after, in one of the dungeons of the Bastille, in the year 1589. This martyr's death was a not unfitting end for one whose whole life had been a sacrifice to noble aims, and who, years before, had suffered a protracted martyrdom in the to him sacred cause of art.

Palissy's Pottery.—Though very varied in design, Palissy's pot- tery is for the most part executed after one technical process. Hard well-burnt earthenware, sometimes fired at so high a temper- ature as to have almost a metallic ring, was covered with a white enamel, formed of the usual ingredients of glass, to which opacity and creamy whiteness were given by the addition of an oxide of tin. On this white ground various colours were applied in enamel- pigments, and the whole finally covered with a thin plumbo- vitreous glaze. The potter's wheel was but little, if at all, used by Palissy, who, in his pieces, aimed less at purity and beauty of outline than at elaborate surface-decoration in high relief, formed by pressing the clay into a mould.

Palissy's best-known productions are large plates, ewers, vases, and other forms, decorated in alto-relief, with very realistic figures of reptiles, fish, insects, shells, plants, and other objects, executed with wonderful truth and accuracy from moulds formed by taking casts of the objects themselves (see woodcut). Thus we see repro- duced every scale on a snake's or fish's back, and the minutest peculiarities of the fossil shells and living plants which Palissy saw around him and delighted in copying with the scientific accuracy of a student of natural history and geology. Casts from these objects were fixed on to a metal dish or vase of the shape required, and a fresh cast from the whole formed a mould from which Palissy could reproduce many articles of the same kind. After being covered with the long-sought-for white enamel, the various parts of the piece were painted in realistic colours, or as near truth as could be reached by the pigments Palissy was able to discover and prepare. These colours were mostly various shades*of blue from indigo 1 ultramarine, some rather crude greens, several tints of brows

and greys, and, more rarely, yellow. . Other pieces, such as dishcs and plaques, were ornamented by figure subjects treated after the game fashion, generally Scriptural scenes or subjects from classical mythology. These were in many cases copied from works in sculpture by contemporary artists.

Another class of designs used by Palissy were plates, tazze and the like, with geometrical patterns moulded in relief and pierced through, forming a sort of open network. Perhaps the most suc- cessful as works of art were those plates and ewers which Palissy moulded in exact facsimile of the rich and delicate works in pewter for which Francois Briot and other Swiss metal-workers were so

Rustic Plate by Palissy.

celebrated. These are in very slight relief, and are exccuted with _ eameo-like finish, mostly of good design, after the style of the _ Italian silversmiths of the 16th century. Palissy's ceramic repro- ductions of these metal plates are not improved by the colours with which he picked out the designs.

Some enamelled and painted earthenware statuettes, full of life and expression, have been attributed to Palissy; but it is doubtful whether he ever worked in the round. On the whole his produc- tions cannot be assigned a very high rank as works of art, though they are certainly remarkable as objects of curiosity and marvels of ingenious skill. They have always been highly valued, and in the 17th century attempts were made both at Delft and Lambeth to copy his "'rustic" plates with the reliefs of animals and human figures, These imitations are very blunt in modelling, and coarsely painted. They are generally marked on the back in blue with initials and a date—showing them to be honest copies, not attempts at forgery, such as have been produced in the present century.

The best collections of Palissy ware are those in the museums of the Louvre, the Hétel Cluny, and Sévres ; and in England that at Narford Hall, with a few specimens in the South Kensington and British Museums.

As an author Palissy was perhaps even more successful than as a

otter. A very high position among French writers is assigned to

im by Lamartine (B. Palissy, 8vo, Paris, 1852). He wrote ona great variety of subjects, such as agriculture, natural philosophy, religion, and especially his L’ Art de terre, in which he gives an account of his processes and how he discovered them. A complete edition of his works was published by P. Antoine Cap, L’ Zuvres Completes de B. Palissy, Paris, 1844.

See Morley, Life o iSsy, : ’ “Y, >» Pp. an Dumesnil, vie, 4 ae > en. eee = etd eras Brvstiides 4 Palissy, 1863; Delécluze, B. Palissy, 1888; Enjubault, L’Art céramique de B. Palissy, 1858; Audiat, Etude sur la vie… de B, Palissy, 1868; Delange,

onographie de Veuvre de B. Palissy, 1862. For Palissy as a Huguenot see Rossignol, Les Protestants illustres, No. iv., 1861. (VJ. H

_ PALITANA, a “second class” native state of India, in KArarwAr (g.v.), Bombay presidency, lying between 21° 23′ 30” and 21° 42’ 30” N. lat., and between 71° 31’ and 72° 0’ 30” E. long., with an area of 305 square miles, and a population (1881) of 49,271. The chief pays a tribute jointly to the gdekwar of Baroda and the nawab of Junagarh, The capital of the state is Palitana (popula- tion, 7659). Above the town, to the west, rises the sacred hill of Satrunjaya, which is covered with temples dedicated to Adinath, one of the deified saints of the Jains, and is the resort of innumerable pilgrims from all parts of India.

_ PALLADIO, Anprea (1518-1580), a native of Vicenza I the north of Italy, one of the chief architects of his century. Palladio’s early student life was spent in Rome, where he learned the practical part of his profession, and

spent several years in making drawings of the buildings of ancient Rome. In 1547 he returned to his native city Vicenza, where he designed a very large number of fine buildings—among the chief being the Barbarano, Porti, and Chieregati palaces, as well as many others for various nobles of Vicenza and the neighbourhood. Perhaps his finest work in Vicenza itself was the Palazzo della Ragione, with two stories of open arcades of the Tuscan and

Ionic orders. Most of these buildings, however, look better on paper than in reality, as they are mainly built of brick,

covered with stucco, now in a very dilapidated condition.

This does not affect the merit of their design, as Palladio intended them to have been executed in stone. His fame extended widely throughout Italy, and Pope Paul III. sent for him to Rome to report upon the state of St Peter's. In Venice, too, Palladio built many stately churches and palaces, such as 8. Giorgio Maggiore, the Capuchin church, and some large palaces on the Grand Canal. His last great work was the Teatro Olimpico at Vicenza, designed after a classical model; he died before its completion, and it was finished, though not altogether after the original design, by his pupil and fellow-citizen Scamozzi.

In addition to his town buildings, Palladio designed many country villas in various parts of northern Italy. The villa of Capra is perhaps the finest of these, and has frequently been imitated. Palladio wasa great student of classical literature, and was much influenced by Vitruvius's great work on architecture. He also published in 1575 an edition with notes of Czesar's Commentaries.

His great literary work was J quattro libri dell' Archi- tettura, first published at Venice in 1570, which has passed into countless editions, and been translated into every European language. The original edition is a small folio, richly illustrated with well-executed full-page woodcuts of plans, elevations, and details of buildings,—chiefly either ancient Roman temples or else palaces designed and built by himself. The influence of this book on the architecture of Europe has been enormous. Among many others, an edition with notes was published in England by Inigo Jones, most of whose works, and especially the palace of Whitehall, of which only the banqueting room remains, owed much to Palladio's inspiration. Though other Italian architects in the 16th century worked out and developed the same style, yet, in England at least, the term Palladian has been used to include all the results of this revival of classicalism. Vignola, Scamozzi, and Serlio were among the chief of Palladio's contemporaries. The style adopted and partially invented by Palladio expressed a kind of revolt against the extreme licence both of composi- tion and ornament into which the architecture of

his time had fallen. Though often noble, dignified, and full of the most harmonious proportions, Palladio's style is dull and lifeless, dominated by scholasticism, and regardless of con- siderations of utility and convenience.

He was fascinated by the stateliness and beauty of pro- portion which are the chief charms of the buildings of ancient Rome, and did not stop 'to reflect that reproduc- tions of these, however great their archeological accuracy, could not but be lifeless and unsuited to the wants of the 16th century. Palladio's carefully measured drawings of ancient buildings are now of great value, as in many cases the buildings have altogether or in part ceased to exist.

The following is a short abstract of the contents of Palladio's great work on architecture :—

Book I. Materials ; construction ; the five orders (Tuscan, Doric, Ionic, Corinthian, and Composite); the proportions of various parts of buildings; construction of stairs. :

Book II. Plansand elevations of city and country houses designed by Palladio; restoration of Greek and Roman houses; sites; Palladio's designs for palaces for certain Venetian and other noblemen, in Venice, Vicenza, Verona, and elsewhere.

Book III. Roads; bridges; piazze; piazze of Greeks and Romans; ancient basilica; modern basilica at Vicenza; baths and xysti of the Greeks.

Book IV. Temples of ancient Rome; Bramante's ''Tempictto" (S. Pietro in Montorio); Roman temples in Italy, outside Rome; Roman temples (such as those at Nimes) outside Italy.

See Montanari, Vita di Andrea Palladio, 1749; Rigato, Osservazioni sopra Andrea Palladio, 1811; Magrini, Memorie intorno la vita di Andrea Palladio, 1845; Milizia, Memorie degli Architetti, 1781, ii, pp. 35-54; Symonds, Renaissance in Italy—Fine Arts, pp. 94-99.

PALLADIUM, an archaic wooden image (£davov) of Pallas, preserved in the citadel of Troy as a pledge of the safety of the city. It represented the goddess, standing in the stiff archaic style, holding the spear in her right hand. According to one story, Zeus had thrown it down from heaven when Ilus was founding the city of Ilium. Odysseus and Diomedes carried it off from the temple of Pallas, and thus made the capture of Troy possible. Many different cities boasted that this ancient image had passed into their possession—Athens, Argos, Rome, Lavinium, &c. It is probable that the Palladium is an image of the warlike goddess Pallas, who must in origin be distinguished from Athena. The theft of the Palladium is a frequent subject in Greek art, especially of the earlier time.

PALLADIUS, Rutinivs Taurus AimmiANvs, a writer of the 4th century after Christ, author of a poem on agriculture (De Re Rustica) in fourteen books. It is not certain whether he can be identified with any known historical person of the time. His work consists of an introductory book of general directions on agriculture, twelve books describing the operations suitable for the twelve months of the year, and a final book on the cultivation of trees. The material is derived from Columella and other earlier writers. The work was popular in the Middle Ages; it is conveniently arranged, but far inferior in every other respect to that of Columella.

PAL LAHARA, a tributary state of Orissa (q.v.).

PALLAS. See AtuEna, vol. ii. 830.

PALLAS, Prrsr Stmon (1741-1811), naturalist and traveller, was born in Berlin, September 22, 1741, the son of Simon Pallas, surgeon in the Prussian army, and pro- fessor of surgery in Berlin. Pallas was carefully educated by his father, being accustomed from boyhood to the use of several languages, among them English and French. He was intended for the medical profession, and his progress was such that in 1758 he lectured publicly on anatomy. Pallas studied at the universities of Berlin, Halle, Géttingen, and Leyden. He early displayed a strong leaning towards natural history investigations, which by the time he reached manhood almost monopolized his attention. In 1761 he came to England, where he spent a year, devoting himself to a thorough study of the collections he found there, and to a geological investiga- tion of part of the English coast; and at the

age of twenty-three he was elected a foreign member of the Royal Society. Pallas spent some time in Holland, where he found ample scope for investigation in his special subjects, the results of which appeared at the Hague in 1766 in his Llenchus Zoophytorum and Miscellanea Zoologica, and in 1767-1804 in his well-known Spicilegia Zoologica (Berlin). In 1768 he gladly accepted the invitation of the empress Catherine to fill the professorship of natural history in the Imperial Academy of Science, St Petersburg, and from that time until within a year of his death his home was in Russia. The great event of his life, and that by which he will be permanently remembered, was the expedition through Russia and Siberia in 17 68-74, in which he acted as naturalist, in company with Falk, Lepechen, and Giildenstadt, the immediate object being the observation of the transit of Venus in 1769. In this leisurely journey Pallas went by Kasan to the Caspian,

spent some time among the Calmucks, crossed the Urals to Tobolsk, visited the Altai Mountains, traced the Irtish to Kolyvan, went on to Tomsk and the Yenissei, crossed Lake Baikal, and extended his journey to the frontiers of China. Few explorations have been so fruitful as this six years' journey. Pallas's collections included all depart. ments of natural history, and his observations extended to every point of interest in the region traversed and its inhabitants. The leading results were given in his Reisen durch verschiedene Provinzen des Riissischen Reichs (3 vols, 4to, St Petersburg, 1771-76), richly illustrated with coloured plates. A French translation in 1788-93, in 8 vols., with 9 vols. of plates, contained, in addition to the narrative, the natural history results of the expedition; and an English translation in three volumes appeared in 1812. As special results of this great journey may be mentioned Sammlungen historischer Nachrichten tiber die Mongolischen Volkerschaften (2 vols. 4to, St Petersburg, 177 6~-1802) ; Nove Species Quadrupedum, 1778-79; Pallas's con- tributions to the dictionary of languages of the Russian empire, 1786-89; Icones Insectorum, presertim Rossix Siberieque peculiarium, 1781-1806; Zoographia Rosso- Asiatica (3 vols, 1831); besides many special papers

in the Zransactions of the academies of St Petersburg and

Berlin, The empress bought Pallas's natural history collec- tions for 20,000 roubles, 5000 more than he asked for them, and allowed him to keep them for life. He spent a considerable time in 1793-94 in visiting the southern pro- vinces of Russia, and was so greatly taken with the Crimea that he determined to take up his residence there. The empress gave him a large estate at Simpheropol, and 10,000 roubles to assist in equipping a house. Though dis- appointed with the Crimea as a place of residence, Pallas continued to live there, devoted to constant research, especially in botany, till the death of his second wife in 1810, when he removed to Berlin, where he died September 8, 1811. The results of his journey in southern Russia were given in his Bemerkungen auf einer Reise durch die siid- lichen Statthalterschaften des Riissischen Reichs (Leipsic, 1799-1801 ; English translation by Blagdon, vols. 5-8 of Modern Discoveries, 1802, and another in 2 vols. 1812). Pallas also edited and contributed to MWeue Nordische

Beitriige zur physikalischen Erd- und Vilkerbeschreibung, Naturgeschichte, und Oekonomie (1781-96), published Zllus- trationes Plantarum imperfecte vel nondum cognitarum (Leipsic, 1803), and contributed to Buffon's Natural History a paper on the formation of mountains, and to the Transactions of various learned societies a great number of special papers.

The solid value and great extent of Pallas's contributions to natural science have been long admitted; his name is inseparably associated with the geography (in its varied branches) of Siberia and a large part of European Russia. That he had a marked influence on the progress of zoology there is no doubt; some authorities even hold that he changed the face of the science; while his geological investigations and speculations, if they did not revolutionize the young science (as has been maintained), greatly helped its progress. 'Though not in any sense brilliant either as an investigator or as a writer, Pallas is certainly one of the most important figures in the science of the latter half of the 18th century.

See the Essay of Rudolphi in the Zransactions of the Berlin Aeademy for 1812; Cuvier's Eloge in his Recueil des Eloges Historiques, vol. ii.; and the Life in Jardine's Naturalists' Library, vol. iv., Edin., 1848.

PALLAVICINO, Frrrante (1618-1644), a writer of pasquinades, who is now known chiefly for his early and tragical end, was a member of the old and widely ramified Italian family of the Pallavicini, and was born at Piacenza in 1618. He received a good education at Padua and elsewhere, and early in life entered the Augustinian order, residing chiefly in Venice. For a year he accompanied Ottavio Piccolomini, duke of Amalfi, in his German campaigns as field chaplain, and shortly after his return

he published a number of clever but exceedingly scurrilous satires on the Roman curia and on the powerful house of the Barberini, which were so keenly resented at Rome that a price was set on his head. A Frenchman of the name of Charles de Breche decoyed him from Venice, where he was comparatively safe, to the neighbourhood of Avignon, and there betrayed him into his enemies' hands. After fourteen months' imprisonment and

some observance of the formalities of a trial he was beheaded at Avignon on March 6, 1644.

His Opere Permesse was published at Venice in 1655, but being, as may be imagined, inferior in seurrility and grossness (Palla- yicino's specialities), are much less prized by the curious than the Opere Seelte (Geneva, 1660), which were more than once reprinted in Holland, and were translated into German in 1663.

PALLAVICINO, or Patiavictnt, Srorza (1607-1667), cardinal, representative of another branch of the same family, was born at Rome in 1607. Having taken holy orders in 1630, and joined the Society of Jesus in 1638, he successively taught philosophy and theology in the Collegio Romano; as professor of theology he was a member of the congregation appointed by Innocent X. to investigate the Jansenist heresy. In 1659 he was made a cardinal by Alexander VII. His death occurred in 1667.

Pallavicino is chiefly known by his history of the council of Trent, written in Italian, and published at Rome in two folio volumes in 1656-57 (2d edition, considerably modified, in 1666). His avowed object was to correct and supersede the very damaging

work of Sarpi on the same subject, and he certainly, by virtue of

his position, had access to many important sources from the use of which his predecessor had been precluded ; the contending parties, however, are far from agreed as to the completeness of his success. The work was translated into Latin by a Jesuit named Giattinus (Antwerp, 1670). There is a good edition of the original by Yaccharia (6 vols. 4to, 1792-99). It ;was translated into German by Klitsche in 1835-37.

PALLIUM, PALLA. These articles of Roman dress, corresponding to the Greek himation, are described in the article Costume (vol. vi. pp. 453, 456-57), where also the pallium, as an ecclesiastical vestment peculiar. to arch-bishops in the Roman Church, has been spoken of (pp. 461,463). In the East the pallium is worn by all bishops, and one or two instances have occurred in the Western Church also in which it has been conferred by the pope on prelates of less than archiepiscopal rank. The canon law forbids archbishops

to wear this vestment until it has been solemnly asked for (either personally or by deputy) and obtained from the holy see; even then it is only to be worn on certain specified occasions, such as at high ponti- fical mass or at an episcopal consecration. Every arch- bishop must apply for it within three months after his consecration, and it is buried with him at his death. The pallium is never granted until after payment of consider- able dues. The pallia are prepared by nuns from white wool obtained from lambs which have been consecrated on St Agnes's eve in the church of that saint in Rome; the vestments are blessed on the festival of Saints Peter and Paul, and deposited fora night on the altar over St Peter's tomb; they are afterwards taken charge of by the sub- deacon, and given out as required. The growth of the occasional practice of bestowing the pallium into an invariable custom, and of the custom into a law, will be traced in the article PopEDoM.

PALM. From their noble aspect, and perhaps from the surpassing utility of several of the members of the group, the Palms (Palmacex) have been termed the princes of the vegetable kingdom. Neither the anatomy of their stems nor the conformation of their flowers, however, entitles them to any such high position in the vegetable hierarchy. Their stems are not more complicated in structure than those of the common butcher's broom (Ruscus) ; their flowers are for the most part as simple as those of a rush (Juncus). For all that, palms have

always had great interest, not only for botanists, but also for the general public, in the latter case by reason of the his- torical and legendary interest connected with them no less than from their beauty and economic value. Palmacex is characterized among monocotyledonous plants by the presence of a stem very frequently unbranched, and bearing a tuft of leaves at the extremity only, or with the leaves scattered, these leaves, often gigantic in size, being usually firm in texture and branching in a pinnate or palmate fashion. branching spikes, very generally protected by a spathe or

The order

The flowers are borne on simple or

spathes, and each consists typically of a perianth of six

greenish, somewhat inconspicuous segments in two rows, with six stamens, a pistil of 1-3 carpels, each with a single

ovule and a succulent or dry fruit never dehiscent (figs. 1, 2). The seed consists almost exclusively of perisperm or

albumen in a cavity in which is lodged the relatively very

minute embryo (fig. 3). These are the general charac

Bigs vl.

Fig. 2.

Fic. 1.—Diagram of the 6 flower of Chamerops, Fan-Palm, showing six divisions of the perianth and six stamens.

Fic. 2.—Diagram of the Q flower of the Chamerops, showing six divisions of the perianth in two rows, and three cells of the ovary. Fic. 3.—Portion of the perisperm of a palm, showing the embryo

within a small cavity,

Fig. 3.

teristics by which this very well-defined order may be discriminated, but, in a group containing considerably more than a thousand species, dispersed widely and at dif- ferent elevations throughout the tropics of both hemi-spheres, with stragglers in subtropical and even in warm temperate regions, it may well be imagined that devia- tions from the general plan of structure occur with some frequency. As the characteristic appearances of palms depend to a large extent upon these modifications, some of the more important among them may briefly be noticed. Taking the stem first, we may mention that it is in very many palms relatively tall, erect, unbranched, regularly cylindrical, or dilated below so as to form an elongated cone, either smooth, or covered with the projecting remnants of the former leaves, or marked with circular scars indicating the position of those leaves which

have now fallen away. In other cases the stem is very slender, short, erect, prostrate, or scandent by means of formidable hooked prickles which, by enabling the plant to support ‘tself on the branches of neighbouring trees, also permit the stem to grow to a very great length and so to expose the foliage to the light and air above the tree-tops of the dense forests these palms grow in, as in the genus Calamus. In some few instances the trunk, or that portion of it which is above ground, is so short that the plant is in a loose way called “stemless” or “acaulescent,” as in Geonoma, and as happens sometimes in the solitary species found in a wild state in Europe, Chamerops humilis. In many species the trunk 1s covered over with a dense network of stiff fibres, often compacted together at the free ends into spines. This fibrous material, which is so valuable for cordage, consists of the fibrous tissue of the leaf-stalk, which in these cases persists after the decay of the softer portions. It is very character- istic of some palms to produce from the base of the stem a series of adventitious roots which gradually thrust them- selves into the soil and serve to steady the tree and prevent

its overthrow by the wind. The underground stem of some

species, ¢.g., of Calamus, is a rhizome, or root-stock, lengthen-

ing in a more or less horizontal manner by the development of the terminal bud, and sending up lateral branches like suckers from the root-stock, which form dense thickets of cane-like stems.

the apex.

The internal structure of the stem does not differ funda-

mentally from that of a typical monocotyledonous stem,

the taller, harder trunks owing their hardness not only to the fibrous or woody skeleton but also to the fact that, as growth goes on, the originally soft cellular tissue through which the fibres run becomes hardened by the deposit of woody matter within the cells, so that ultimately the cellular portions become as hard as the woody fibrous

matters proper.

The leaves of palms are either arranged at more or less

distant intervals along the stem, as in the canes (Calamus, &c.), or are approximated in tufts at the end of the stem,

thus forming those noble crowns of foliage which are so closely associated with the general idea of a palm. In the young condition, while still unfolded, these leaves, with the succulent end of the stem from which they arise, form “the cabbage,” which in some species is highly esteemed

as an article of food.

The adult leaf very generally presents a sheathing base

tapering upwards into the stalk or petiole, and this again bearing the lamina or blade.

course of time, the upper parts of the leaf decay and fall off the base of the leaf-stalk and sheath often remain, either entirely or in their fibrous portions only, which latter constitute the investment to the stem already mentioned. In size the leaves vary within very wide limits, some being only a few inches in extent, while those of the noble Caryota may be measured in tens of feet. In form the leaves of palms are very rarely simple ; usually they are more or less divided, sometimes, as in Caryota, extremely so. In Geonoma Verschaffeltia, and some others, the leaf splits into two divisions at the apex and not elsewhere ; but more usually the leaves branch regularly in a palmate fashion as in the fan-palms Latania, Chamerops, Sabal, &c., or in a pinnate fashion as in Areca, Kentia, Calamus, &c. The form of the segments 1s generally more or less linear, but a very distinct appearance is given by the broad wedge-shaped leaflets of such palms as Caryota, Martinezia, or Mauritia. These forms run one into another by transitional gradations ; and even in the same palm the form of the leaf is often very different at different stages of its growth, so that it is a difficult matter to name correctly seedling or juvenile palms in the condition in which we generally meet with them in the nurseries, or even to foresee what the future development of the plant is likely to be. Like the other parts of the plant, the

leaves are sometimes invested with hairs or spines; and, in some instances, as in the magnificent Ceroxylon andicola, the under surface is of a glaucous white or bluish colour.

The inflorescence of palms consists generally of a fleshy spike like that of an Arum, either simple or much branched, studded with numerous, sometimes extremely numerous, flowers, and enveloped by one or more sheathing bracts called “spathes.” ‘These parts may be small, or they may attain relatively enormous dimensions, hanging down from amid the crown of foliage like huge tresses, and adding greatly to the noble effect of the leaves,

‘mentioned already.

The branching of the stem above ground is unusual, except in the case of the Doum Palm of Egypt (Hyphzne), and, when present, is probably the result of some injury to the terminal bud at the top of the stem, in consequence of which buds sprout out from below

The sheath and the petiole are very often provided with stout spines; and when, in

PALM

As to the individual flowers, they are usually small, greenish, and insignificant; their general structure has been Modifications from the typical struc. ture arise from differences of texture, and specially from suppression of parts, in consequence of which the flowers are very generally unisexual (figs. 1, 2), though the flowers of the two sexes are generally produced on the same tree (moncecious), not indeed always in the same season, for a tree in one year may produce all male flowers and in the next all female flowers. Sometimes the flowers are modi- fied by an increase in the number of parts ; thus the usually six stamens may be represented by 12 to 24 or even by hundreds. The carpels are usually three in number, and more or less combined; but they may be free, and their number may be reduced to two or even one. In any case each carpel contains but a single ovule.

Owing to the sexual arrangements before mentioned, the pollen has to be transported by the agency of the wind or of insects to the female flowers. This is facilitated some. times by the elastic movements of the stamens and anthers, which liberate the pollen so freely at certain times that travellers speak of the date-palms of Egypt (Phenix dactylifera) being at daybreak hidden in a mist of pollen grains. In other cases fertilization is effected by the agency of man, who removes the male flowers and scatters the pollen over the fruit-bearing trees, This practice has been followed from time immemorial ; and it afforded one of the earliest and most irrefragable proofs by means of which the sexuality of plants was finally established. The fruit which results from this process of fertilization is various: sometimes, as in the common date, it is a berry with a fleshy rind enclosing a hard stony kernel, the true seed; sometimes it is a kind of drupe as in the cocoa-nut, Cocos nucifera, where the fibrous central portion investing the hard shell corresponds to the fleshy portion of a plum or cherry, while the shell or nut corresponds to the stone of stone-fruits, the seed being the kernel. Sometimes, as in the species of Sagus, Raphia, &c., the fruit is covered with hard, pointed, reflexed shining scales, which give it a very remarkable appearance.

The seed varies in size, but always consists of a mass of perisperm, in which is imbedded a relatively very minute embryo (fig. 3). The hard stone of the date is the perisperm, the white flesh of the cocoa-nut is the same substance in a softer condition; the so-called “vegetable ivory ”is derived from the perisperm of Phytelephas.

Hooker, who in his recent revision of the genera follows the work of his predecessors Martius, Wendland, and Drude, enumerates about one hundred and thirty-two genera of the order ranged under five tribes, distinguished by the nature of the foliage, the sexual conditions of the flower, the seed umbilicate or not, the position of the raphe, &c. Other characters serving to distinguish the minor groups are afforded by the habit, the position of the spathes, the “‘eestivation” of the flower, the nature of the stigma, the ovary, fruit, &c.

It is impossible to overestimate the utility of palms. They furnish food, shelter, clothing, timber, fuel, building materials, sticks, fibre, paper, starch,

sugar, oil, wax, wine, tannin, dyeing materials, resin, and a host of minor pro- ducts, which render them most valuable to the natives and to tropical agriculturists, The Cocoa-nut Palm, Cocos nuci-

fera, and the Date Palm, Phenix dactylifera, have been’

treated under separate headings. Sugar and liquids capable of becoming fermented are produced by Caryota urens,

Cocos nucifera, Borassus flabelliformis, Rhapis vinifera, Arenga saccharifera, Phenix silvestris, Mauritia vinifera, &c. Starch is procured in abundance from the stem of the Sago Palm, Sagus Rumphii, and other species. The seeds of Elais guineensis of western tropical Africa yield, when

erushed and boiled, “ palm oil.” Cocoa-nut oil is extracted from the cocoa-nut. Wax is exuded from the stem of Ceroxylon andicola and Copernicia cerifera. A variety of « dragon’s blood,” a resin, is procured from Calamus Draco and other species. Edible fruits are yielded by the date, the staple food of some districts of northern Africa. The eocoa-nut is a source of wealth to its possessors, and many of the species are valued for their “cabbage”; but, as this is the terminal bud whose removal causes the destruction of the tree, this is a wasteful article of diet unless care be taken by judicious planting to avert the annihilation of the supplies. The famous “coco de mer,” or double cocoa- put, whose floating nuts might have suggested the twin steamboats, and are .the objects of so many legends and superstitions, is known to science as Lodowcea Sechel- larum. ‘The tree is peculiar to the Seychelles, where it is used for many useful purposes. Its fruit is like a huge plum, containing a stone or nut like two cocoa-nuts (in their husks) united together. These illustrations must suffice to indicate the numerous economic uses of palms. The only species that can be cultivated in the open air in England, and then only under exceptionally favourable circumstances, are the European Fan-Palm, Chamezrops humilis, the Chusan Palm, C. Fortunei, of which speci- mens may be seen out of doors at Kew, Heckfield, Osborne, &c., and the Chilian Jubza spectabilis. The date-palm now so commonly planted along the Mediter- ranean coast is the

common Date-Palm; but this does not ripen its fruit north of the African coast. There are several low growing palms, such as Rhapis flabelliformis, Chamerops humilis, &c., which are suited for ordinary green-house culture, and many of which, from the thick texture of their leaves, are enabled to resist the dry and often gas-laden atmosphere of living rooms. Many species are now cultivated for the special purpose of the decora- tion of apartments, particularly the very beautiful Cocos Weddelliana. But, to gain anything like an idea of the magnitude and majestic character of palms, a visit to such establishments as the palm stoves at Kew, Edinburgh, or Chatsworth is necessary. In some instances, as in the famous Talipot Palm, Borassus flabelliformis, the tree does not flower till it has arrived at an advanced age and acquired a large stature, and, having produced its flowers, it dies like an annual weed. (M. T. M.) PALMA, the chief town of the Spanish province of Baleares, the residence of a captain-general, a bishop's see, and a flourishing seaport, is situated 135 miles from Barcelona, on the south-west coast of Majorca, at the head of the fine Bay of Palma, which stretches inland for about 10 miles between Capes Cala Figuera and Regana. It is the meeting place of all the highways in the island, and the terminus of the railway which (opened in 1875) runs to Inca and (1879) Manacor, and will be extended to Alcudia. The ramparts, which enclose the city on all sides except towards the port (where they were thrown down in 1872), have a circuit of a little more than 4 miles. Though begun in 1562, after the plans of Georgio Fretin, they were not finished till 1836. Palma has undergone considerable change since 1860; streets have been widened and houses built in the ordinary modern style, and the fine old-world Moorish character of the place has suffered accordingly. The more conspicuous buildings are the cathedral, the exchange, the palace, now occupied by the captain-general and the law courts, the general hospital (1456), the town-house (end of the 16th century), the picture gallery, and the college. At the time of the partial suppression in 1835 there were twenty-five monastic build- Ings in Palma; none of those still extant are of much note. The church of San Francisco is interesting for the tomb of Raymond Lully, a native of Palma. The cathedral, a fine

pas

Gothic building with massive buttresses, crowns the sum- mit of the hill on which the city stands. It was erected and dedicated to the Virgin in terms of a vow made by King Jayme as he sailed to the conquest of Majorca, but, though commenced in 1230, it was not finished till 1601. The older and more interesting portions are the royal chapel (1232), with the tomb (1779) of Jayme II., and the south front with the doorway known as del mirador (1389). The principal dimensions of the edifice are— length from the door to the high altar, 347 feet ; width, including the chapels, 190 feet; height of the central nave, 147 feet; height of the side naves, 78 feet ; and height of the belfry tower, 166. Of the architecture of the exchange (lonja), a Gothic building begun in 1426, the people of Palma are particularly proud, as it excited the admiration of the emperor Charles V. The columns of the windows, in black and grey marble, are of almost unexampled slim- ness. The harbour (formed by a mole constructed to a length of 387 yards in the 14th century and afterwards extended to more than 650 yards), has been greatly improved and enlarged since 1875 by dredging operations and a further addition to the mole of 136 yards. Pre- viously it was not accessible to vessels drawing more than 18 feet, and men-of-war and large merchant steamers were obliged to anchor in the bay, which is sometimes rendered dangerous by violent storms. Porto Pi, about 2 miles from the city, was once a good harbour, but is now fit only for small craft. Shoemaking, tanning, and rope- spinning are prosecuted on a very extensive scale; and direct commerce is carried on with Valencia, Barcelona, Algeria, Marseilles, Cuba, Porto Rico, &e. Many of the Majorcan vessels used to be Palma-built, but the increase of steam navigation has changed the character of the trade. The population of the ayuntamiento, 53,019 in 1860, was 58,224 in 1877. There is a considerable number of Christian Jews (Chuetas) who were formerly confined to their own quarter.

Palma probably owes, if not its existence, at least its name (symbolized on the Roman coins by a palm branch), to Metellus Balearicus, who in 123 B.c. scttled three thousand Roman and Spanish colonists on the island. The bishopric dates only from the 14th century, its foundation having been strongly opposed by the bishop of Barcelona. About a mile south-west of Palma is the castle of Bellver, where Jovellanos and Arago were imprisoned.

PALMA, distinguished since 1861 as Palma Campania, a city of Italy, in the province of Caserta, 4% miles south of Nola. The population was 5858 in 1881.

PALMA, distinguished since 1861 as Palma di Monte- chiaro, a city of Italy, in the province of Girgenti, Sicily, 13 miles 8.E. of Girgenti. Though situated some distance inland, it has a port of considerable value to the coasting trade. The exports are wine, dried fruits, soda, and sulphur. Hodierna, the mathematician (1597-1660), was a priest at Palma patronized by the duke of Palma. The population, 13,458 in 1871, was 11,702 in 1881.

PALMA, one of the Canary IsLanps (9.2.).

PALMA, Jacopo, a painter of the Venetian school, was born at Serinalta near Bergamo, towards 1480, and is said to have died at the age of forty-eight, or towards 1528, He is currently named Palma Vecchio (Old Palma) to distinguish him from Palma Giovane, his grand- nephew, a much inferior painter. About the facts of his life little is known. He is reputed to have been a com- panion and competitor of Lorenzo Lotto, and to some extent a pupil of Titian, after arriving in Venice early in the 16th century; he may also have been the master of Bonifazio. His earlier works are in the older manner, and betray the influence of the Bellini; but, modifying his style from the study of Giorgione and Titian, Palma took high rank among those painters of the distinctively Venetian type who remain a little below the leading masters. For rich-

ness and suffusion of colour he is hardly to be surpassed; but neither in invention, strength of character, nor vigorous draughtsmanship does he attain any peculiar excellence. His finish is great, his draperies ample, his flesh golden-hued. He painted many fine portraits. A face frequently seen in his pictures is that of his daughter Violante, of whom Titian was more or less enamoured. Two works by Palma are more particularly celebrated. The first is a composition of six paintings in the Venetian church of §8. Maria Formosa, with St Barbara in the centre, under the dead Christ, and to right and left Sts Dominic, Sebastian, John Baptist, and Anthony. ‘The second work is in the Dresden Gallery, representing three sisters seated in the open

air (presum- ably the painter’s daughters) ; it is frequently named The Three Graces. Other leading examples are—the Last Supper, in S. Maria Mater Domini; a Madonna, in the church of §. Stefano in Vicenza; the Epiphany, in the Brera of Milan; the Holy Family, with a young shepherd adoring, in the Louvre; St Stephen and other Saints, Christ and the Widow of Nain, and the Assumption of the Virgin, in the Accademia of Venice; and Christ at Emmaus, in the Pitti Gallery. Palina’s grand-nephew, Palma Giovane, was also named Jacopo (1544 to about 1626). His works, which are extremely numerous in Venice, and many of them ona vast scale, belong to the decline of Venetian art.

PALMAS, Las. See Canary Istanps, vol. iv. p. 799.

PALMER, Epwarp Henry (1840-1882), Orientalist, was born at Cambridge, August 7, 1840. He lost his parents when he was a mere child, and was then brought up by an aunt. Asa schoolboy he showed the character- istic bent of his mind by picking up the Romany tongue and a great familiarity with the inner life of the Gipsies. He was not, however, remarkably bookish, and from school was sent to London as a clerk in the City. Palmer disliked this life, and varied it by learning French and Italian, mainly by frequenting the society of foreigners wherever he could find it. He had a peculiar gift for making himself at home with all manner of strange people, which served him throughout life, and was as effective with Orientals as with Europeans. His linguistic faculty was in fact only one side of a great power of sympathetic imitation. He learned always from men rather than from books, and by throwing his whole flexible personality into unison with those from whom he was learning. In 1859 Pahner returned to Cambridge, apparently dying of con- sumption. He had an almost miraculous recovery, and in 1860, while he was thinking of a new start in life, fell in at Cambridge with a certain Sayyid Abdullah, a teacher of Eastern languages. Under his influence he resolved to give himself to Oriental studies, in which he made very rapid progress. He now attracted the notice of two fellows of St John’s College, became an undergraduate there, and in 1867 was elected a fellow on the ground of his attain- ments, especially in Persian and Hindustani. He was soon engaged to join the survey of Sinai, and followed up this work in 1870 by exploring the Wilderness of the Wandering along with Drake. After a visit to Palestine and the Lebanon he returned to England in 1870, and

next year published his Desert of the Exodus. In the close of the year 1871 he became Lord Almoner's Professor of Arabic at Cambridge, married, and settled down to teaching work. Unhappily his affairs were somewhat straitened, mainly through the long illness of his wife, whom he lost in 1878 ; he was obliged to use his pen for Oriental and other work in a way that did not do full justice to his talents, and at length he became absorbed in journalism. In 1881, two years after his second marriage, he finally left Cambridge and ceased to teach. In the following year he

was asked by the Government to go to the. East and assist the Egyptian expedition by his knowledge and his great influence over the Arabs of the desert Al-Tih. It was a hazardous task, but Palmer rightly judged that he could not refuse his country a service which no one else was able to render. He went to Gaza, and without an escort made his way safely through the desert to Suez—an exploit of singular boldness, which gave the highest proof of his capacity for dealing with the Bedouins. From Suez he was again sent into the desert with Captain Gill, to procure camels and do other service of a very dangerous kind, and on this journey he and his companion were attacked and murdered (August 1882). Their remains were re covered after the war, and now lie in St Paul's Cathedral.

Palmer's highest qualities appeared in his travels, especially in the heroic adventures of his last journeys. His brilliant scholar- ship is also seen to advantage in what he wrote in Persian and other Eastern languages, but not so much so in his English books, which were generally written under pressure. His scholarship was wholly Eastern in character, and lacked the critical qualities of the modern school of Oriental learning in Europe. All his works show a great linguistic range and very versatile talent; but he was cut off before he was able to leave any permanent literary monu- ment worthy of his powers. His chief writings are The Desert of the Exodus, 1871; Poems of Beha ed Din (Ar. and Eng., 2 vols.), 1876-77; Arabic Grammar, 1877; History of Jerusalem, 1871 (by Besant and Palmer—the latter wrote the part taken from Arabic sources); Persian Dictionary, 1876, and English and Persian Dictionary (posthumous, 1883) ; translation of the

Qu’rdz (unsatis- factory), 1880. He also did good service in editing the Name Lists of the Palestine Exploration.

PALMER, Samvet (1805-1881), landscape painter and etcher, was born in London on the 27th January 1805. He was delicate asa child, and received his educa- tion, in which a study of the classics—English as well as Greek and Latin—played a notable part, at home under the wise and genial care of his father. In 1819 we find him exhibiting both at the Royal Academy and the British Institution; and shortly afterwards he became intimate with John Linnell, who gave him excellent counsel and assistance, advising drawing from the figure and from the antique in the British Museum, and intro- ducing him to Varley, Mulready, and, above all, to William Blake, whose strange and mystic genius had the most powerful effect in impressing on Palmer’s art its solemn and poetic character. Before very long the studies of this period were interrupted by an illness which led to a residence of seven years at Shoreham in Kent. Here the artist sought a closer acquaintance with nature, and the characteristics of the scenery of the district are con- stantly recurrent in his works. Among the more important productions of this time are the Bright Cloud and the Skylark, paintings in oil, which was Palmer’s usual medium in earlier life, but one with which he is now hardly at all associated in the popular mind. In 1839 he married a daughter of Linnell’s. The wedding tour was to Italy, where he spent over two years in study. Returning to London, he was in 1843 elected an associate and in 1854 a full member of the Society of Painters in Water Colours, a method to which he afterwards adhered in his painted work. His productions are distinguished by an excellent command over the forms of landscape, and by mastery of rich, glowing, and potent colouring. He delighted in the more exceptional and striking moments of nature, and especially in her splendours of sunrise and sunset. His paintings are less literal transcripts than poetic and imaginative renderings. They are admirably composed and well-considered pastorals, which find a singularly accurate literary parallel in the landscape work of Milton in his minor poems; indeed among the best and most important paintings executed by Palmer during his later years was a noble series of illustrations to Z’ Allegro and Li Penseroso, now in the possession of Mr L. R. Valpy.

|

-

a

A ee Se

_—

Seer

PAL—PAL

In 1853 the artist was elected a member of the English Etching Club; and his work with the needle is no less individual and poetic than his work with the brush. Mr Hamerton has pronounced him “one of the few really great English etchers,” “one of the most accomplished atchers who ever lived.” Considering his reputation and success in this department of art, his plates are few in number. They are executed with care and elaboration. Their virtues are not those of a rapid and vivid sketch, depending on force and selection of line, and adopting a frankly interpretative treatment; they aim rather at truth and completeness of tonality, and embody many of the characteristics of other modes of engraving—of mezzotint, of line, and of woodcut. Readily accessible and sufficiently representative plates may be studied in the Early Ploughman, in Htching and Etchers (1st ed.), and the Herdsman’s Cottage, in the third edition of the same work. In 1861 Palmer removed to Reigate, where he spent an honoured and productive old age, till his death on the 24th of May 1881. One of his latest efforts was the production of a series of etchings to illustrate his English metrical version of Virgil’s Hclogues, which was published in 1883, illustrated with reproductions of the artist’s water-colours and with etchings, of which most were left unfinished at his death, and completed by his son, A. H. Palmer. A collection of Palmer’s works was brought together by the Fine Arts Society in the year of his death. The descriptive and critical catalogue of this exhibition, and the memoir by his son, may be consulted for particulars of the painter’s life and art. PALMERSTON, Henry Joun Tempuz, VIscounr, (1784-1865), statesman, minister of foreign affairs, and twice prime minister of England, was born at Broadlands, near Romsey, Hants, on the 20th October 1784. The Trish branch of the Temple family, from which

Lord Palmerston descended, was very distantly related to the great English house of the same name, which played so conspicuous a part in the politics of the 18th century; but these Irish Temples were not without distinction. In the reign of Elizabeth they had furnished a secretory to Sir Philip Sidney and to Essex. In the reign of William and Mary Sir William Temple figured as one of the ablest diplomatists of the age. From his younger brother, who was speaker of the Irish House of Commons, Lord Palmerston descended ; the son of the speaker was created a peer of Ireland, March 12, 1722, and was succeeded by his grandson, the second viscount, who married a Miss Mee, a lady celebrated for her beauty, who became the mother of the subject of this notice. Lord and Lady Palmerston were persons of great taste and fashion, who travelled several times in Italy with their children. Their eldest son, Henry John, is mentioned by Lady Elliot in her correspondence as a boy of singular vivacity and energy. These qualities adhered to him through life, and he had scarcely left Harrow, at the age of eighteen, when the death of his father (April 17, 1802) raised him to the Irish peerage, and placed him at the head of his family. It was no doubt owing to his birth and con- nexions, but still more to his own talents and character, that Lord Palmerston was thrown at a very early age into the full stream of political and official life. Before he was four-and-twenty he had stood two contested elections for the university of Cambridge, at which he was defeated, and he entered parliament for a pocket-borough, Newtown, Isle of Wight, in June 1807. Through the interest of his guardians Lord Malmesbury and Lord Chichester, the duke of Portland made him one of the junior lords of the Admiralty on the formation of his administration in 1807. A few months later he delivered his maiden speech in the House of Commons in defence of the expedition against

Copenhagen, which he conceived to be justified by the known designs of Napoleon on the Danish court. This speech was so successful that it marked him out as one of the rising statesmen of the day, in so much that, when Perceval formed his Government in 1809, he proposed to this young man of five-and-twenty to take the chancellor- ship of the exchequer, following apparently the examples of Pitt and Lord Henry Petty, who had filled that office at about the same age. Lord Palmerston, however, though extremely

surprised and flattered by the proposal, had the wisdom to refuse it, on the ground that he was totally ignorant of finance, and had only once addressed the House of Commons. Nor did he allow the offer of a seat in the cabinet to break his modest resolution. He con- tented himself with the far less important office of secre- tary at war, charged exclusively with the financial business of the army, without a seat-in the cabinet, and in this position he remained, singularly enough, without any signs of an ambitious temperament or of great political abilities, for twenty years (1809-1828). His administrative talents were confined within the limits of the War Office, which he kept in perfect order, and his parliamentary speeches to the annual statements in which he moved the army estimates of those eventful years. During the whole of that period Lord Palmerston was chiefly known as a man of fashion, and a subordinate minister without influence on the general policy of the cabinets he served. Some of the most humorous poetical pieces in the Vew Whig Guide were from his pen, and he was entirely devoted, like his friends Peel and Croker, to the Tory party of that day. The political opinions of Lord Palmerston at that time, and perhaps through life, were those of the school of Pitt —not the effete Toryism of the Pitt clubs, which he always treated with disdain, but the enlarged Conserva- tive views of the great minister himself, as represented after Pitt's death by Canning. Lord Palmerston never was a Whig, still less a Radical; he was a statesman of the old English aristocratic type, liberal in his sentiments, favourable to the cause of justice and the march of pro- gress, but entirely opposed to the claims of democratic government, Thus he supported from the first the cause of Catholic emancipation, and he sympathized warmly with the constitutional party throughout the world, but he was opposed to the extension of the franchise in England, and he regarded the impulse of popular power as a force to be directed and controlled rather than obeyed. So successfully did he practise the art of governing a free people that he lived to be regarded as a popular minister, though he had been for twenty years a member of a Tory Government, and never materially altered his own opinions. In the later years of Lord Liverpool's administration, after the death of Lord Londonderry in 1822, strong dissen- sions existed in the cabinet. The Liberal section of the Government was gaining ground. Canning became foreign minister and leader of the House of Commons. Huskisson began to advocate and apply the doctrines of free trade. Catholic emancipation was made an open question. Although Lord Palmerston was

not in the cabinet, he cordially supported the measures of Canning and his friends. Upon the death of Lord Liverpool, Canning was called to the head of affairs; the Tories, including Peel, withdrew their support, and an alliance was formed between the Liberal members of the late ministry and the Whigs. In this combination the chancellorship of the exchequer was first offered to Lord Palmerston, who accepted it, but this appointment was frustrated by the king's intrigue with Herries, and Palmerston was content to remain secretary at war with a seat in the cabinet, which he now entered for the first time. The Canning administration ended in four months by the death of its XVIII. — 25

194

illustrious chief, and was succeeded by the feeble ministry

of Lord Goderich, which barely survived the year. But

the " Canningites," as they were termed, remained, and

the duke of Wellington hastened to include Palmerston, Huskisson, Charles Grant, Lamb, and Dudley in his Government. A dispute between the duke and Huskisson soon led to the resignation of that minister, and his friends felt bound to share his fate. In the spring of 1828 Palmerston found himself, for the first time in his life, in opposition, From that moment he appears to have directed his attention closely to foreign affairs ; indeed he had already urged on the duke of Wellington a more

active interference in the affairs of Greece; he had made

several visits to Paris, where he foresaw with great accuracy the impending revolution; and on the Ist June 1829 he made a speech on foreign affairs of such excellence that never but once in his long career did he surpass it. For it may here be remarked that Lord Palmerston was

no orator; his language was unstudied, and his delivery

somewhat embarrassed ; but he generally found words to

say the right thing at the right time, and to address the House of Commons in the language best adapted to the

capacity and the temper of his audience, An attempt was made by the duke of Wellington in September 1830

to induce Palmerston to re-enter the cabinet, which he

refused to do without Lord Lansdowne and Lord Grey,

and from that time forward he may be said to have

associated his political fortunes with those of the Whig party. It was therefore natural that Lord Grey should place the department of foreign affairs in his hands upon the formation of the great ministry of 1830, and Palmerston entered with zeal on the duties of an office over which he continued to exert his powerful influence, both in and out of office, for twenty years,

The revolution of July 1830 had just given a strong

shock to the existing settlement of Europe. The kingdom of the Netherlands was rent asunder by the Belgian revolution ; Portugal was the. scene of civil war; the Spanish succession was about to open and place an infant princess on the throne. Poland was in arms against Russia, and the Northern powers formed a closer alliance, threatening to the peace and the liberties of Europe, In presence of these varied dangers, Lord Palmerston was prepared to act with spirit and resolution. The king of the Netherlands had appealed to the powers who had placed him on the throne to maintain his rights; and a conference assembled accordingly in London to settle the question, which involved the independence of Belgium and the security of England. On the one hand, the Northern powers were anxious to defend the king of Holland; on the other hand a party in France aspired to annex the Belgian provinces. The policy of the British Government was a close alliance with France, but an alliance based on the principle that no interests were to be promoted at variance with the just rights of others, or which could give to any other nation well-founded cause of jealousy. If the Northern powers supported the king of Holland by force, they would encounter the resistance of France and

England united in arms; if France sought to annex Belgium she would forfeit the alliance of England, and find herself opposed by the whole continent of Europe. In the end the policy of England prevailed ; numerous difficulties, both great and small, were overcome by the conference ; although on the verge of war, peace was maintained 5 and Prince Leopold of Saxe-Coburg was placed upon the throne of Belgium, which enjoyed for half a century the benefits of his enlightened rule, followed with equal success by that of his son and successor. Upon the whole this transaction may be regarded as the most important and most successful of Lord Palmerston's public life.

PALWERS TON

In 1833 and 1834 the youthful queens Donna Maria of Portugal and Isabella of Spain were the representatives and the hope of the constitutional party in those countries, —assailed and hard pressed by their absolutist kinsmen Don Miguel and Don Carlos, who were the representatives of the male line of succession. Lord Palmerston conceived and executed the plan of a quadruple alliance of the con. stitutional states of the West to serve as a counterpoise to the Northern alliance. A treaty for the pacification of the Peninsula was signed in London on the 22d April 1834 ; and, although the struggle was somewhat prolonged in Spain, it accomplished its object. France, however, had been a reluctant party to this treaty. She never executed her share in it with zeal or fidelity. Louis Philippe was accused of favouring the Carlists underhand, and he positively refused to be a party to direct interference in Spain. It is probable that the hesitation of the French court on this question was one of the causes of the extreme personal hostility Lord Palmerston never ceased to show towards the king of the French down to the end of his life, if indeed that sentiment had not taken its origin at a much earlier period. Nevertheless, at this same time (June 1834) Lord Palmerston wrote that "Paris is the pivot of my foreign policy." M. Thiers was at that time in office. Unfortunately these differences, growing out of the opposite policies of the two countries at the court of Madrid, increased in each succeeding year ; and a constant but sterile rivalry was kept up, which ended in results more or less humiliating and injurious to both nations,

The affairs of the East interested Lord Palmerston in the highest degree. During the Greek War of Independ- ence he had strenuously supported the claims of the Hellenes against the Turks and the execution of the treaty of London. But from 1830 the defence of the Ottoman empire became one of the cardinal objects of his policy. He believed in the regeneration of Turkey. “ All that we hear,” he wrote to Mr Bulwer, “about the decay of the Turkish empire, and its being a dead body or a sapless trunk, and so forth, is pure unadulterated nonsense.” The two great aims he had in view were to prevent the establishment of Russia on the Bosphorus and the establish- ment of France on the Nile, and he regarded the main- tenance of the authority of the Porte as the chief barrier against both these aggressions, Against Russia he had long maintained a suspicious and hostile attitude. He wasa party to the publication of the “Portfolio” in 1834, and to the mission of the “Vixen” to force the blockade of Circassia about the same time. He regarded the treaty of Unkiar Skelessi which Russia extorted from the Porte in 1832, when she came to the relief of the sultan after the battle of Konieh, with great jealousy; and, when the power of Mohammed Ali in Egypt appeared to threaten the existence of the Ottoman dynasty, he succeeded in effecting a combination of all the powers, who signed the celebrated collective note of 27th July 1839, pledging them to maintain the independence and integrity of the Turkish empire as a security for the peace of Europe. On two former occasions, in 1833 and in 1835, the policy of Lord Palmerston, who proposed to afford material aid to the Porte against the pasha of Egypt, was overruled by the cabinet ; and again, in 1839, when Baron Brunnow first proposed the active interference of Russia and England, the offer was rejected. But in 1840 Lord Palmerston returned to the charge and prevailed. The moment was critical, for Mohammed Ali had occupied Syria and won the battle of Nezib against the Turkish forces, and on the Ist July 1839 the sultan Mohammed expired. The Egyptian forces occupied Syria, and threatened Turkey; and Lord Ponsonby, then British ambassador at Constan- tinople, vehemently urged the necessity of crushing so

formidable a rebellion against the Ottoman power. But France, though her ambassador had signed the collec- tive note in the previous year, declined to

be a party to measures of coercion against the pasha of Egypt. Palmerston, irritated at her Egyptian policy, flung himself into the arms of the Northern powers, and the treaty of the 15th July 1840 was signed in London without the knowledge or concurrence of France. This measure was not taken without great hesitation, and strong opposition on the part of several members of the British cabinet. Lord Holland and Lord Clarendon and some other ministers thought that, whatever might be the merits of the quarrel between the sultan and the pasha, our interfer- ence was not worth the price we were paying for it—an alliance with Russia and the rupture of our alliance with France ; and the Government was more than once on the point of dissolution. Lord Palmerston himself declared in a letter to Lord Melbourne that he should quit the ministry if his policy was not adopted; and he carried his point. His consummate knowledge of details, his administrative ability, his impetuous will, and his conviction that France could not declare war against the four great powers of Europe prevailed over the resistance of an indolent premier and hesitating colleagues. The operations were conducted with extraordinary promptitude, good fortune, and success. The bombardment of Beirut, the fall of Acre, and the total collapse of the boasted power of Mohammed Ali followed in rapid succession, and before the close of the year Lord Palmerston's policy, which had convulsed and terrified Europe, was triamphant, and the author of it was regarded as one of the most powerful statesmen of the age. At the same time, though acting with Russia in the Levant, the British Government engaged in the affairs of Afghanistan to defeat her intrigues in Central Asia, and a contest with China was terminated by the conquest of Chusan, afterwards exchanged for the island of Hong Kong. Seldom has Great Britain occupied a prouder posi- tion abroad, although by a singular contrast the cabinet was in the last stage of decrepitude at home. Within a few months Lord Melbourne's administration came to an end, and Lord Palmerston remained for five years out of office. The crisis was past, but the change which took place by the substitution of M. Guizot for M. Thiers in France, and of Lord Aberdeen for Lord Palmerston in England, was a fortunate event for the peace of the world. Lord Palmerston had adopted the opinion that peace with France was not to be relied on, and indeed that war between the two countries was sooner or later inevitable. France

was in his eyes a power likely to become an enemy ; and:

he encouraged the formation of an English party to thwart her influence all over the world. Had he remained in office, the exasperation caused by his Syrian policy and his harsh refusal to make the slightest conciliatory conces- sion to France, in spite of the efforts of his colleagues, would probably have led to fresh quarrels, and the emperor Nicholas would have achieved his main object, which was the complete rupture of the Anglo-French alliance. Lord Aberdeen and M. Guizot inaugurated a different policy; by mutual confidence and friendly offices they entirely succeeded in restoring the most cordial understanding between the two Governments, and the irritation which Lord Palmerston had inflamed gradually subsided. During the administration of Sir Robert Peel, Lord Palmerston led a retired life, but he attacked with characteristic bitter- ness the Ashburton treaty with the United States, which closed successfully some other questions he had long kept open. In all these transactions, whilst full justice must be done to the force and patriotic vigour which Lord Palmerston brought to bear on the questions he took in hand, it was but too apparent that he imported into them

an amount of passion, of personal animosity, and imperious language which rendered him in the eyes of the queen and of his colleagues a dangerous minister. On this ground, when Lord John Russell attempted, in December 1845, to form a ministry, the combination failed because Lord Grey refused to join a Government in which Lord Palmerston should resume the direction of foreign affairs. A few months later, however, this difficulty was surmounted ; the Whigs returned to power, and Palmerston to the foreign office, with a strong assurance that Lord John Russell should exercise a strict control over his proceed- ings. A few days sufficed to show how vain was this expectation. The French Government regarded the appointment of Palmerston as a certain sign of renewed hostilities, and they availed themselves of a despatch in which Palmerston had put forward the name of a Coburg prince as a candidate for the hand of the young queen of Spain, as a justification for a departure from the engage- ments entered into between M. Guizot and Lord Aberdeen. However little the conduct of the French Government in this transaction of the Spanish marriages can be vindicated, it is certain that it originated in the belief that in Palmerston France had a

restless and subtle enemy. The efforts of the British minister to defeat the French marriages of the Spanish princesses, by an appeal to the treaty of Utrecht and the other powers of Europe, were wholly unsuccessful ; France won the game, though with no small loss of honourable reputation. Not long after- wards Sir Henry Bulwer was expelled from the Peninsula for an attempt to lecture General Narvaez on his duties, and for his notorious intrigues with the opposition ; and in Paris the British embassy became the centre of every species of attack on the king's Government, so that friendly diplomatic relations were temporarily interrupted with both countries. No doubt the rupture of the Anglo-French alliance and the tension existing between the two Govern- ments contributed in some degree to the catastrophe of 1848, which drove Louis Philippe from the throne, and overthrew the constitutional monarchy in France; but Palmerston did not regret the occurrence or foresee all its consequences.

The revolution of 1848 spread like a conflagration through Europe, and shook every throne on the Continent except those of Russia and Spain and Belgium. Palmerston sympathized, or was supposed to sympathize, openly with the revolutionary party abroad. No state was regarded by him with more aversion than Austria. Prince Metternich he abhorred; and, with some inconsistency, after the fall of Metternich he still pursued a policy of unrelenting hostility to his successors. Yet his opposition to Austria was chiefly based upon her occupation of great part of Italy and her Italian policy, for Palmerston maintained that the existence of Austria as a great power north of the Alps was an essential element in the system of Europe. Antipathies and sympathies had a large share in the political views of Lord Palmerston, and his sympathies had ever been passionately awakened by the cause of Italian independence. He knew the country; ite knew the language; and in London some of his closest friends were Italians, actively engaged in the national cause. Hence he threw all the moral support he could give into the Italian revolution. He supported the Sicilians against the king of Naples, and even allowed arms to be sent them from the arsenal at Woolwich ; and, although he had endeavoured to restrain the king of Sardinia from his rash attack on the superior forces of Austria, he obtained for him a reduction of the penalty of defeat. Austria, weakened by the revolution, sent an envoy to London to request the mediation of England,

based on a large cession of Italian territory ; Lord Palmerston rejected the terms

196

he might have obtained for Piedmont. a couple of years.

by Russian intervention. the government of the empire with dictatorial power ; and,

in spite of what Palmerston termed his “judicious bottle-

holding,” the movement he had encouraged and applauded,

but to which he could give no material aid, was every- where subdued. The British Government, or at least Palmerston as its representative, was regarded with sus- picion and resentment by every power in Europe, except the French republic; and even that was shortly afterwards

to be alienated by his attack on Greece.

This state of things was regarded with the utmost annoyance by the British court and by most of the British Palmerston had on many occasions taken important steps, without their knowledge, which they dis- approved. Over the foreign office he asserted and exercised an arbitrary dominion, which the feeble efforts The queen and the prince consort did not conceal their indignation at the position in which he had placed them with all the other

ministers.

of the premier could not control.

courts of Europe. When Kossuth, the Hungarian leader, landed in England, after having been rescued by Palmerston from the demands made for his surrender, he proposed to receive this personage at Broadlands, a design which was only prevented by a peremptory vote of the cabinet; and in 1850 he took advantage of some very questionable claims on the Hellenic Government to organize an attack on the little kingdom of Greece. Greece being a state under the joint protection of three powers, Russia and France

pro- tested against this outrage, and the French ambassador temporarily left London, which promptly led to the termi- nation of the affair. But it was taken up in parliament with great warmth. After one of the most memorable debates of this century, Palmerston's policy was condemned by a deliberate vote of the House of Lords. The Houso of Commons was moved by Roebuck to reverse the sentence, which it did by a majority of forty-six, after having heard from Palmerston the most eloquent and powerful speech ever delivered by him, in which he sought to vindicate, not only his claims on the Greek Government for Don Pacifico, but his entire administration of foreign affairs. It was in this speech, which lasted five hours, that Palmerston made the well-known declaration that a British subject—" Civis Romanus sum "—ought everywhere to be protected by the strong arm of the British Government against injustice and wrong. 'The entire Liberal party, from motives of party allegiance and patriotism, supported the minister who uttered these words. Even Sir Robert Peel, who opposed the resolution, said that the country was proud of him. Yet notwithstanding this parliamentary triumph, there were not a few of his own colleagues and supporters who condemned the spirit in which the foreign relations of the crown were carried on; and in that same year the queen addressed a minute to the prime minister in which Her Majesty recorded her dissatisfaction at the manner in which Lord Palmerston evaded the obligation to sub- mit his measures for the royal sanction, as failing in sin- cerity to the crown. This minute was communicated to Palmerston, who did not resign upon it. These various circumstances, and many more, had given rise to distrust and uneasiness in the cabinet, and these feelings reached their climax when Palmerston, on the occurrence of the coup @état by which Louis N. apoleon made himself master of France, expressed to the French ambassador in London, without the concurrence of his colleagues, his personal approval of that act of lawless violence, Upon this, Lord John Russell advised his dismissal from office (December

PALM WH

Ere long the reac- tion came ; this straw-fire of revolution burnt itself out in In Hungary the civil war, which had thundered at the gates of Vienna, was brought to a close Prince Schwarzenberg assumed

1851). Palmerston speedily avenged himself by turnin out the Government ona Militia Bill; but, although he survived for many years, and twice filled the highest office in the state, his career as foreign minister ended for ever, and he returned to the foreign office no more. Indeed he assured Lord Aberdeen, in 1853, that he did not wish to resume the seals of that department. N otwithstanding the zeal and ability which he had invariably displayed ag foreign minister, it had long been felt by his colleagues that his eager and frequent interference in the affairs of foreign countries, his imperious temper, the extreme acerbity of his language abroad, of which there are ample proofs in his published correspondence, and the evasions and artifices he employed to carry his points at home rendered him a dangerous representative of the foreign interests of the country. He accused every foreign states- man who differed from him of “bully and swagger”: foreign statesmen in more polite language imputed the same defects to him. The lesson of his dismissal from office was not altogether lost upon him ; and, although his great reputation was chiefly earned as a foreign minister, it may be said that the last ten years of his life, in which he filled other offices, were not the least useful or dignified portion of his career.

Upon the formation of the cabinet of 1853, which was composed by the junction of the surviving followers of Sir Robert Peel with the Whigs, under the earl of Aberdeen, Lord Palmerston accepted with the best possible grace the office of secretary of state for the Home Office. He speedily overcame the slight hesitation or reluctance he had expressed when the offer was first made to him, on the ground that the views of Lord Aberdeen and Lord Clarendon on foreign affairs had differed widely from his own ; nor was he ever chargeable with the slightest attempt to undermine that Government. At one moment he withdrew from it, because Lord John Russell persisted in presenting a project of reform, which appeared to him entirely out of season; and he advocated, with reason, measures of greater energy on the approach of war, which might possibly, if they had been adopted, have averted the contest with Russia. As the difficulties of the Crimean campaign increased, it was not Lord Palmerston but Lord John Russell who broke up the Government by refusing to meet Roebuck’s motion of inquiry. Palmerston remained faithful and loyal to his colleagues in the hour of

danger. Upon the resignation of Lord Aberdeen and the duke of Newcastle, the general sentiment of the House of Commons and the country called Palmerston to the head of affairs, and he entered, on the 5th of February 1855, upon the high office which he retained, with one short interval, to the day of his death. Palmerston was in the seventy-first year of his life when he became prime minister of England.

A series of fortunate events followed his accession to power. In March 1855 the death of the emperor Nicholas removed his chief antagonist. In September Sebastopol was taken. The administration of the British army was reformed by a consolidation of offices. In the following spring peace was signed in Paris. Never since Pitt hada minister enjoyed a greater share of popularity and power, and, unlike Pitt, Palmerston had the prestige of victory in war. He was assailed in parliament by the eloquence of Gladstone, the sarcasms of Disraeli, and the animosity of the Manchester Radicals, but the country was with him. The Liberals applauded his spirit and his sympathy with the cause of liberty abroad ; the Conservatives knew that he would never lend himself to rash reforms and democratic agitation at home. Defeated by a hostile combination of parties in the House of Commons on the question of the Chinese War in 1857, he dissolved the parliament and

appealed to the nation. The result was the utter defeat of the extreme Radical party, and the return of a more compact Liberal majority. The great events of the suc- ceeding years, the Indian revolt and the invasion of Italy by Napoleon III., belong rather to the general history of the times than to the life of Palmerston; but it was fortunate that a strong and able Government was at the head of affairs. Lord Derby’s second administration of 1858 lasted but a single year, Palmerston having casually been defeated on a measure for removing conspiracies to murder abroad from the class of misdemeanour to that of felony, which was introduced in consequence of Orsini’s attempt on the life of the emperor of the French. But in June 1859 Palmerston returned to power, and it was on this occasion that he proposed to Cobden, one of his most constant opponents, to take office; and, on the refusal of that gentleman, Milner Gibson was appointed to the Board of

Trade, although he had been the prime mover of the defeat of the Government on the Conspiracy Bill. Palmerston had learnt by experience that it was wiser to conciliate an opponent than to attempt to crush him, and that the imperious tone he had sometimes adopted in the House of Commons, and his supposed obsequiousness to the emperor of the French, were the causes of the tem- porary reverse he had sustained. Although Palmerston approved the objects of the French invasion of Italy, in so far as they went to establish Italian independence, the annexation of Savoy and Nice to France was an incident which revived his old suspicions of the good faith of the French emperor. A proposal was made to him to cede to Switzerland a small portion of territory covering the canton of Geneva, but he rejected the offer, saying, “ We shall shame them out of it”; in this he was mistaken, and his remonstrances found no support in Europe. About this time he expressed to the duke of Somerset his convic- tion that Napoleon III. “ had at the bottom of his heart a deep and unextinguishable desire to humble and punish England,” and that war with France was a contingency to be provided against. The unprotected condition of the principal British fortresses and arsenals had long attracted his attention, and he succeeded in inducing the House of Comnions to vote nine millions for the fortification of those important points.

In 1856 the projects for cutting a navigable canal through the Isthmus of Suez was brought forward by M. de Lesseps, and resisted by Palmerston with all the weight he could bring to bear against it. He did not foresee the advantages to be derived by British commerce from this great work, and he was strongly opposed to the establish- ment of a powerful French company on the soil of Egypt. The concession of land to the company was reduced by his intervention, but in other respects the work proceeded and was accomplished. It may here be mentioned, as a remarkable instance of his foresight, that Palmerston told Lord Malmesbury, on his accession to the Foreign Office in 1858, that the chief reason of his opposition to the canal was this :—he believed that, if the canal was made and proved successful, Great Britain, as the first mercantile state, and that most closely connected with the East, would be the power most interested in it; that this country would therefore be drawn irresistibly into a more direct interference in Egypt, which it was desirable to avoid, because England has already enough upon her hands, and because our intervention might lead to a rupture with

France. He therefore preferred that no such line of com- munication should be opened. Recent events have shown that there was much to be said for this remarkable forecast, and that the mercantile advantages of the canal are to some extent counterbalanced by the political difficulties to Which it may give rise.

Loe

Upon the outbreak of the American civil war in 1861,

Lord Palmerston acknowledged that it was the duty of the British Government to stand aloof from the fray, but his own opinion led him rather to desire than to avert the rupture of the Union, which might have been the result of a refusal on the part of England and France to recog- nize a blockade of the Southern ports, notoriously imperfect, and extremely prejudicial to the interests of Europe. and, although the belligerent rights of the South were promptly recognized, the neutrality of the Government was strictly observed. When, however, the Southern envoys were taken by force from the “Trent,” a British packet, Palmerston did not hesitate a moment to exact a full and complete reparation for this gross infraction of international law, which President Lincoln was wise enough to make. of the British Government at that crisis, and the active operations of Southern cruisers, some of which had been

which was

The cabinet was not of this opinion,

But the attitude and language of some members

fitted out by private firms in British ports, aroused a

feeling of resentment amongst the American people which it took many years to efface, and which was at last removed by an award extremely onerous to England.

The last transaction in which Palmerston engaged arose out of the attack by the Germanic confederation, and its leading states Austria and Prussia, on

the kingdom of Denmark and the duchies of Schleswig and Holstein. There was but one feeling in the British public and the nation as to the dishonest character of that unprovoked aggression, and it was foreseen that Austria would ere long have reason to repent her share in it. Palmerston endeavoured to induce France and Russia to concur with England in maintaining the treaty of London, which had guaranteed the integrity of the Danish dominions. But those powers, for reasons of their own, stood aloof, and the conference held in London in 1864 was without effect. A proposal to send the British fleet into the Baltic was overruled, and the result was that Denmark was left to her own resources against her formidable opponents. It may be interesting to quote, as a specimen of Lord Palmerston's clear and vigorous style and insight, one of the last letters he ever wrote, for, though it relates to the affair of Schleswig- Holstein, it embraces at a glance the politics of the world. " September 18, 1865. "My Dear Russett,—It was dishonest and unjust to deprive Denmark of Sleswick and Holstein. It_is another question how those two duchics, when separated from Denmark, can be disposed of best for the interest of Europe. I should say that, with that view, it is better that they should go to inerease the power of Prussia than that they should form another little state to be added to the cluster of small bodies politie which encumber Germany, and render it of less force than it ought to be in the general balance of power in the world. Prussia is too weak as she now is ever to be honest or independent in her action ; and, with a view to the future, it is desirable that Germany, in the aggregate, should be strong, in order to control those two ambitious and aggressive powers, France and Russia, that press upon her west and east. As to France, we know how restless and agressive she is, and how ready to break loose for Belgium, for the Rhine, for anything she would be likely to get without too great an exertion. As to Russia, she will, in due time, beeome a power almost as great as the old Roman empire. She can become mistress of all Asia, except British India, whenever she chooses to take it; and, when enlightened arrangements shall have made her revenue proportioned to her territory, and railways shall have abridged distanees, her eommand of men will become enormous, her pecuniary means gigantic, and her power of transporting armies over great distances most formid-able. Germany ought to be strong in order to resist Russian aggression, and a strong Prussia is essential to German strength. Therefore, though I heartily condemn the whole of the proceedings of Austria and Prussia about the

duchies, I own that I should rather see them incorporated with Prussia than converted into an additional asteroid in the system of Europe. Yours sineerely, PALMERSTON.” | In little more than a month from the date of this letter, on the 18th October 1865, he expired at Brocket

Hall, after a short illness, in the eighty-first year of his age. His remains were laid in Westminster Abbey.

Although there was much in the official life of Lord Palmerston which inspired distrust and alarm to men of a less ardent and contentious temperament, it is certain that his ambition was not selfish but patriotic, that he had a lofty conception of the strength and the duties of England, that he was the irreconcilable enemy of slavery, injustice, and oppression, and that he laboured with inexhaustible energy for the dignity and security of the empire. In private life his gaiety, his buoyancy, his high-breeding, made even his political opponents forget their differences ; and even the warmest altercations on public affairs were merged in his large hospitality and cordial social relations. In this respect he was aided with consummate ability by the tact and grace of Lady Palmerston, the widow of Earl Cowper, whom he married at the close of 1839. She devoted herself with enthusiasm to all her husband’s interests and pursuits, and she made his house the most attractive centre of society in London, if not in Europe.

A Life of Lord Palmerston, by the late Lord Dalling, was pub- lished in three volumes in 1870, which owes its chief merit to the selections from the minister’s autobiographical diaries and private correspondence. The work, however, ends at the year 1840, when more than half his ministerial career remained untold. This bio- graphy was resumed and continued by Mr Evelyn Ashley in 1876, after the death of Lord Dalling; but the whole period from 1846 to 1865 is compressed into two volumes, and no doubt materials are in existence, though still unpublished, which will eventually supply a fuller account of the important part played by this eminent a for sixty years in the affairs of the British empire and of

urope.

PALM SUNDAY (Dominica in Palmis), the Sunday immediately before Easter (see Hony Weerx), in the Roman Catholic communion is characterized by a striking ceremonial which takes place in church at the beginning of the high mass of the day. Branches of palms and olives or other trees having previously been laid in sufti- cient quantity in front of the high altar, the anthem Hosanna is sung by the choir, the collect is said by the celebrant, and lessons from Exodus xv. and xvi. and Matt. xxl. are sung by the subdeacon and deacon respectively. The branches of palm and olive (held to symbolize ‘‘victory over the prince of death” and “the coming of a spiritual unction”) are then blessed with prayer and aspersion, whereupon the principal person of the clergy present approaches the altar, and gives a palm to the celebrant, who afterwards gives one to him, then to the rest of the clergy in the order of their rank, and finally to the laity, who receive kneeling. During the distribution appropriate antiphons are sung, and when it is over a procession begins for which there is another series of antiphons. At the return of the procession two or four singers go into the church, and, shutting the door, with their faces towards the procession, sing two lines of the hymn “Gloria, laus, et honor,” which are repeated by the celebrant and others outside; this continues till the end of the hymn. The subdeacon next knocks at the door with the end of the cross he carries; the door is opened, and the procession re-enters the church. Then follows mass, when all hold the palms in their hands during the singing of the Passion and the Gospel. There is evidence that the feast of palms (Gatwy éopr/) was observed, in the East at least, as early as the 5th century, but the earliest mention of a procession similar to that which now takes place on Palm Sunday both in the Greek and in the Latin _ communion occurs in an Ordo Offcii probably not earlier than the 10th century.

PALMYRA is the Greek and Latin name of a famous city of the East, now sunk to a mere hamlet, but still an object of interest for its wonderful ruins, which its

PAD Pu i

Semitic inhabitants and neighbours called Tadmor, The latter name, which is found in the Bible (2 Chron. viii, 5), and is written 9n and 7}974n in Palmyrene inscriptions, has survived to the present day, and is now locally

pro. nounced Tudmir or Tidmir. The site of Palmyra! isan oasig in the desert that separates Syria from ‘Irak, about 50 hours’ ride or 150 miles north-east from Damascus, 32 hours from Emesa, and five days’ camel journey from the Euphrates,? The hills which fringe the oasis mark the northern limit of the Hammad, the springless and stony central region of the great Syrian desert. The direct route between the Pheenician ports and the cities of ‘Irdk and the Persian Gulf would be from Damascus eastward through the Hammad, but this region is so inhospitable that for at least two thousand years caravans have preferred to make a detour to the north and pass through the oasis of Tadmor. At this point also the. great line between the Persian Gulf and the Mediterranean is intersected by other routes connecting Palmyra with northern Syria on the one hand and with Bostra, Petra, and central Arabia on the other —routes now deserted or little traversed, but which in ancient times were of very considerable consequence, especially in connexion with the overland incense trade, The oasis was thus naturally marked out as a trading post of some importance, but the commanding position which Palmyra held in the 2d and 3d centuries of our era was due to special causes. The rise and fall of Palmyra form one of the most interesting chapters in ancient history, and must be studied not only from ancient writers but from the numerous inscriptions that have been collected from the ruins of the city and the tombs that surround it.

The oldest notice of Palmyra is in 2 Chron. viii. 5, when Tadmor in the wilderness is said to have been built by Solomon. But the source of this statement is 1 Kings ix, 18, and here the name is TMR, which cannot be read Tadmor, and from the context—in which Judean towns are spoken of —is almost certainly the Tamar of Ezek. xlvii. 19, xlviii, 28. It is indeed extremely improbable that Solomon, whose policy was to enrich Judah by developing the Red Sea traffic, and so carrying the trade of the East to the Mediterranean ports through his own country, would have encouraged the rival route by Tadmor, which lies quite outside the Israelite settlements, and passes through districts over which Solomon was unable to maintain even the recognition of suzerainty which David had extorted by his Syrian wars. After the time of Solomon the Red Sea trade was interrupted, and an over-land caravan trade from Pheenicia to Yemen: and the Persian Gulf took its place. But neither on the cuneiform inscriptions nor in the Old Testament writings prior to Chronicles, not even in Ezekiel’s account of the trading

connexions of Tyre, is there any mention of Tadmor; up to the 6th century B.c. the caravans seem to have been organized by merchants of southern or central Arabia, and they probably reached Damascus by way of Dima (Jaut Beni‘ Amir) and the W. Sirhan, without coming near the oasis of Palmyra (see especially Isa. xxi. 11 sg. ; Ezek. Xxvil.). On the other hand Tadmor cannot have been a new place when the Biblical Chronicler ascribed its foundation to Solomon, and thus we shall hardly be wrong in connecting its origin with the gradual forward move- ment of the nomadic Arabs which followed on the over- throw of theancient nationalities of Syria by the Chaldwan empire. Arabian tribes then took possession of the partly cultivated lands east of Canaan, and, as has been explained in the article NABATHANS, became masters of the Eastern

1 According to the Duc de Luynes, the great temple is in 84° 32’ 30” N. lat. and 35° 54’ 85” E. long,

2 Pliny (viii, 89) gives the distances as 176 Roman miles from Damascus and 337 from Seleucia.

|

;

|

PALMYRA

trade, gradually acquired settled habits, and learned civilization and the use of writing from the Aramzans, whose language was in current official and commercial use in the Persian empire west of the Euphrates. The Nabateans of Petra naturally appear in Western literature before the remote Palmyrenes, who are not even mentioned by Strabo. But we learn from Appian (Bell. Ciw., v. 9) that in 42-41 B.c. the city was rich enough to excite the cupidity of Mark Antony, and that the population was still small and mobile enough to evade that cupidity by timely flight. The series of Semitic inscriptions of Palmyra begins a few years later. The oldest (De Vogiié, 30) bears the date 304 of the Seleucid era (9 B.c.), and was placed upon one of the characteristic tower-shaped tombs which overlooked the

city from the surrounding hill- sides, The dialect and the writing (a form of the “square” character) are western Aramaic; the era, as we have just seen, is Greek,! the calendar Macedonian ; and these influences, to which that of Rome was soon added, were the determining factors in Palmyrene civilization. The proper names and the names of deities are also partly Syriac, but in part they are unmistakably Arabic. The Arabic element appears in the names of members of the chief families, and these retain some distinctive grammati- cal forms which suggest that, though Aramaic was the written language, Arabic may have not been quite obsolete in common life. That the town was originally an Arabic settlement is further rendered probable by the use of a

purely Arabic term (tna “fahdh”) for the septs into.

which the townsmen were divided. And thus we can best explain how, when the oasis was occupied by a settlement of Arabs, it gradually rose from a mere halting-place for caravans to a city of the first rank. The true Arab despises agriculture ; but the pursuit of commerce, the organization and conduct of trading caravans, is an honourable business which gives full scope to all the personal qualities which the Bedouin values, and cannot be successfully conducted without widespread connexions of blood and hospitality between the merchant and the leading sheikhs on the caravan route. An Arabian merchant city is thus neces- sarily aristocratic, and its chiefs can hardly be other than pure Arabs of good blood. The position of Palmyra in this respect may be best illustrated by the analogy of Mecca. In both cities the aristocracy was commercial, and the ruling motive of all policy lay in the maintenance of the caravan trade, which involved a constant exercise of tact and personal influence, since a blood feud or petty tribal war might close the trade routes at any moment. To keep the interests of commerce free from these embar- rassments, it was further indispensable to place them under the sanctions of religion, and, though we cannot prove that this policy was carried out at Palmyra with the same consistency and success as at Mecca, we can trace significant analogies which point in this direction. Mecca became the religious centre of Arabia in virtue of the cosmopolitan worship of the Ka‘ba, in which all tribes could join without surrendering their own local gods. So at Palmyra, side by side with the

worship of minor deities, We find a central cultus of Baal (Bel or Malachbel) identified with “the most holy sun.” To him belonged

the great temple in the south-east of the city with its

vast fortress-like courtyard 256 yards square, lined with colonnades in the style of Herod’s temple; and the presidence of the banquets of his priests, an office coveted by the first citizens of Palmyra (W., 2606, a), may be compared with the Meccan rifdda, or right of entertaining

: The oldest Greek inscription (bilingual) is of 10 a.p., for a statue erected jointly by the Palmyrenes and the Greeks of Seleucia, Jour. As., ser, 8, i, 243.

the pilgrims. And, just as in Mecca the central worship ultimately became the worship of the supreme and name- less god (All4h), so in Palmyra a large proportion of the numerous votive altars are simply dedicated to “the good and merciful one, blessed be his name for ever.” In Palmyra as at Mecca the name Rahman (merciful) may be due to the influence of the Jewish colony, which settled in the town after the destruction of Jerusalem; but the tendency to a universal religion, of which the dropping of the local proper name of God is so decided a mark, and which nevertheless is accompanied by no such rejection of polytheism as made Jehovah and Elohim synonymous in the religion of the Hebrew prophets, appears too early to be due to Jewish teaching (Mordtmann, 1), and seems as at Mecca to be rather connected with the cosmopolitanism of a merchant city. A secondary parallelism with Mecca is found in the sacred fountain of Ephka. Its tepid and sulphureous waters perhaps acquired their reputation from their medicinal use to cure the rheumatism which has always prevailed in Palmyra.’ This spring, like Zemzem at Mecca, had a guardian, appointed by the “ moon-lord ” Yarhibdl (W., 2571, ¢; De V., 30), whose oracle is alluded to in another inscription, and who may therefore be com- pared with the Meccan Hobal.

The wars between Rome and Parthia favoured the growth of Palmyra, which astutely used its secluded posi- tion midway between the two

powers, and by a trimming policy secured a great measure of practical independence and continuous commercial relations with both (Appian, ut sup.; Pliny, v. 89). These wars, too, must have given it a share in the trade with north Syria, which in more peace- ful times would not have chosen the desert route. To some extent, however, the oasis soon came under Roman control, for decrees regulating the custom-dues were issued for it by Germanicus and Corbulo. The splendid period of Palmyra, to which the greater part of the inscribed monuments belong, began with the overthrow of the Nabatean kingdom of Petra (105 a.p.), which left it without a commercial rival. Hadrian took Palmyra into his special favour, and gave it on the occasion of his visit to the town (circa 180 a.p.) the name of Adrianopolis.* Under the same emperor (8th April 137) the customs and dues of Palmyra were regulated by a law which has recently been copied from the stone on which it was engraved, and gives the fullest picture of the life and commerce of the city. At this time the supreme legislative authority lay in the hands of a senate (BovAy), with a president, a scribe, two archons, and a fiscal council of ten. At a later date, probably under Septimius Severus or Caracalla, Palmyra received the jus italicwm and became a Roman colony,° and according to usage the legislative power came into the hands of the senate and people under the administration of officers called strategi. The Romans had soon other

ie a ee ee ee

2 The sacrifices were partly maintained by endowments given by rich citizens (De V., 3; W. 2588). The dates of the inscriptions show that much the commonest time for the erection of honorific statues— often in a connexion partly religious—was in spring (Adar, or more often Nisan), and this seems to point to a great spring festival, corre- sponding to the Arabic sanctity of Rajab. Palmyra had an important trade with the Bedouins in skins and grease (fiscal inscr., xvi. sq, xxx.)} the herds of the desert are in condition for slaughter in spring, and this also points to a spring feast and fair. A trace of the hospi- tality so necessary to keep the Bedouins in humour may perhaps be found in De V., 16; W., 2585.

8 See Mordtmann, 18, and his notes; the oasis lies 1300 feet above the sea, is constantly swept by cutting winds, and is liable to sudden and extreme

variations of temperature.

4 See Uranius, apud Steph. Byz., now confirmed by the great fiscal inscription.

5 See Ulpian, Dig., 1. 15, 1, and Waddington, p. 596. Palmyrenes who became Roman citizens took Roman names in addition to their native ones, and these in almost every case are either Septimius or Julius Aurelius.

than commercial reasons to favour Palmyra, which became an important military post, and turned its commercial organization to good account in aiding the movements of the legions marching against the Persians (De V., 15). It was the Persian wars that raised Palmyra to brief political importance, and made it for a few years the mistress of the Roman East; but before we pass to this last epoch of its greatness we must attempt to describe the aspect and life of the city during the century and a half of its chief commercial prosperity.

The chief luxuries of the ancient world—silks, jewels, pearls, perfumes, and the like—were drawn from India, China, and southern Arabia; and Pliny computes the yearly import of these wares into Rome at not less than three quarters of a million of English money. ‘The trade followed two routes, one by the Red Sea, Egypt, and Alexandria, the other from the Persian Gulf through the Syro-Arabian desert. The latter, after the fall of Petra, was in the hands of the Palmyrene merchants. West of Palmyra there were Roman roads, and the bales could be conveyed in waggons, but east of the oasis there was no road, and the caravans of Palmyra traversed the desert either to Vologesias (near the ancient Babylon and the later Cufa), where water carriage was available, or to Forath on the Pasitigris and Charax at the head of the Persian Gulf, The trade was enormously profitable not only to the merchants but to the town, which levied a rigorous duty on all exports and imports, and even farmed out the water of the two wells; but the dangers of the desert and the risks of Parthian or Persian hostility were also formidable, and successfully to plan or conduct a great caravan was a distinguished service to the state, often recognized by public monuments erected by the “senate and people,” or by the merchants of the caravan.

These monuments, which form a conspicuous feature in Palmyrene architec- ture, took the form of statues placed on pedestals project- ing from the upper part of the long rows of pillars which lined the chief streets; for every great merchant was eager to see his name handed down to posterity by an enduring memorial, and to add to the colonnades a series of pillars "with all their ornaments, with their brazen capitals (4) and painted ceilings," was the received way of honouring others or winning honour for oneself. Thus arose, besides minor streets, the great central avenue which, starting from a triumphal arch near the great Temple of the Sun, formed the main axis of the city from south-east to north-west for a length of 1240 yards, and at one time consisted of not less than 750 columns of rosy-white lime- stone each 55 feet high. We must suppose that this and the other pillared streets were shaded from the fierce heat of the sun like a modern bazaar; and in some parts the pillars seem to have served to support a raised footway, from which loungers could look down at their ease on the creaking waggons piled with bales of silk or purple wool or heavy with Grecian bronzes designed to adorn some Eastern palace, the long strings of asses laden with skins or alabastra of precious unguents, the swinging camels charged with olive oil from Palestine or with grease and hides from the Arabian deserts, and the motley crew of divers nationalities which crowded the street beneath—the slave merchant with his human wares from Egypt or Asia Minor, the Roman legionary and the half-naked Saracen, the Jewish, Persian, and Armenian merchants, the street hawkers of old clothes, the petty hucksters at the corners offering roasted pine cones, salt fish, and other cheap dainties, the tawdry slave-girls, whose shameful trade went to swell the coffers of the state, the noisy salt auction, presided over by an officer of the customs. The produc- tion of "pure salt" from the deposits of the desert was apparently one of the chief local industries, and another

which could not be lacking on the confines of Arabia was the manufacture of leather. We read too, on the inscriptions, of a guild of workers in gold and silver; but Palmyra wag not a great industrial town, and the exacting fiscal system, which reached the most essential industries, and drew pro- fit from the barest necessaries of life, must have weighed heavily on the artizan classes. Though all quarters of the town still show traces of splendid

buildings, wealth wag probably confined to a comparatively small number of great families, and we must picture Palmyra in its best days as displaying a truly Oriental compound of magnifi- cence and squalor, where the mud or straw-built huts of the poor stood hard by the palaces of the merchant princes.

The life of the mass of the population was the unchang- ing life of the Eastern poor; the great families too remained essentially Oriental under the varnish of their Greek culture and Roman citizenship. The life of a pro- minent townsman included an active share in the organ- ization and even the personal conduct of caravans, the discharge of civic offices, perhaps the superintendence of the market and the victualling of a Roman expedition, The capable discharge of these functions, which sometimes involved considerable pecuniary sacrifices, ensured public esteem, laudatory inscriptions, and statues, and to these honours the head of a grest house was careful to add the glory of a splendid family tomb, consecrated as the " long home "(xnby na—the same phrase as in Eccles, xii. 5) of himself, his sons, and his sons' sons "for ever." These tombs, which lie outside the city, are perhaps the most interesting monuments of Palmyra. Some are lofty square towers, with as many as five sepulchral chambers oceupy- ing successive stories, and overlooking the town and its approaches—a feature characteristically Arabic—from the slopes of the surrounding hills. Others are house-like buildings of one story, a richly decorated portico opening into a hall whose walls are adorned with the names and sculptured portraits of the dead. The scale of these monuments corresponds to the wide conception of an Eastern family, from which dependants and slaves were not excluded ; and on one inscription, in striking contrast with Western usage, a slave is named with the sons of the house (De V., 33, a). 'The tombs are the only buildings of Palmyra that have any architectural individuality; the style of all the ruins is late classic, highly ornate, but without refinement.

The frequent Eastern expeditions of Rome in the 3d century brought Palmyra into close connexion with several emperors, and opened a new career of ambition to her citizens in the Roman honours that rewarded services to the imperial armies. One house which was thus distin- guished was to play no small part in the world's history. Its members, as we learn

from the inscriptions, prefixed to their Semitic names the Roman gentilicium of Septimius, which shows that they received the citizenship under Septimius Severus, presumably on the occasion of his Parthian expedition. In the next generation Septimius Odzenathus! (Odhainat), son of Hairan, son of Wahballath, son of Nassor, had attained the rank of a Roman senator, conferred no doubt when Alexander Severus visited Palmyra (comp. De V., 15). The East was then stirred by the progress of the new Sdsdnian empire, and the Palmyrene aristocracy, in spite of its Roman honours, had probably never cordially fallen in with the changes which had made Palmyra a colony and a military station. Indeed the Romanizing process had only changed the surface life of the place; it lay in the nature of things that the

1 *Odalvados, not ‘Od€vabos, is the form of the name on the inscrip- tions,

REE

rie ¥ A

greatest merchant prince, with the openest hand, and the widest circle of connexions along the trade routes, was the real head of the community, and could do what he pleased with boule and demos except when a Roman commander interfered. Odzenathus appears to have been the head of a party which secretly meditated revolt, but the outbreak was prevented by a Roman officer Rufinus, who procured his assassination.! He left two sons; the elder named Hairan appears in an inscription of 251 a.p. as “ head-man” (vw, éapxyos) of the Palmyrenes, but it was the ounger brother Odzenathus who sought revenge for his father’s death and inherited his ambition. In him the old Bedouin blood reasserted itself; an Esau among the Jacobs of Tadmor, he spent his youth in the mountains and deserts, where the hardships of the chase prepared him for thd fatigues of war, and where no doubt he acquired the absolute influence over the nomad tribes which was one of the chief secrets of his future success. In 258, the year of Valerian’s ill-fated march against Sapor, Odzenathus is called hypatikos or consular, the highest honorary title of the empire, in an inscription erected to him by the gold and silver smiths of Palmyra. The title no doubt had just been conferred by the emperor on his way eastward, and the munificent patron of the guild of workers in precious metals had, we may judge,

liberally scattered their wares among the wives and daughters of the Bedouin sheikhs. He meant to have a strength and party of his own, whatever the issue of the war. If we may trust the circumstantial account of Petrus Patricius, the captivity of Valerian and the victorious advance of Sapor induced Odenathus to send gifts and letters to Sapor, and it was only when these were rejected that he threw himself heart and soul into the Roman cause. Sapor was offended that Odzenathus did not appear before him in person; the Palmyrene chief in fact did not mean to be the mere subject either of Persian or Roman, though he was ready to follow whichever power would leave him practically sovereign at the price of occasional acts of homage. Rome in her day of disaster could not afford to be so proud as the Persian; the weak Gallienus was the very suzerain whom Odznathus desired ; and, joining his own considerable forces with the shattered fragments of the Roman armies, the Palmyrene commenced a successful war with Persia, in which he amply revenged himself on the arrogance of Sapor, and not only saved the Roman East but reduced Nisibis, twice laid siege to Ctesiphon itself, and furnished Gallienus with the captives and trophies for the empty pomp of a triumph. From the confused mass of undigested and contradictory anecdotes which form all the history we possess of this period it is impossible to extract a satisfactory picture of the career of Odznathus ; but we can see that he steadily aimed at concentrating in his own person the whole sovereignty of Syria and the neighbouring lands, and as the organization of the empire had entirely broken down, and almost every Roman general who had a substantial force at his com- mand sooner or later advanced a claim to the purple, the Palmyrene prince, always acting in the name of Gallienus, gradually disembarrassed himself of every rival repre- Sentative of Western authority throughout the greater part of Roman Asia. In the year 264 he was officially named supreme commander in the East,? and, though to

- See the anonymous continuator of Dio (Fr. Hist. Gr., iv. 195). The elder Odenathus is also alluded to in Pollio’s life of Cyriades, “Ss which one may infer that he plotted with a Persian party in

yria,

2 This date is given by Pollio (Gallienus, c. 10) and is confirmed by other notices. The order of events is very obscure, and Pollio is self-contradictory in several places. But the two events which he dates

Y consulates, and which therefore are probably most trustworthy, are the imperiwm of Odenathus in 264 and the rejoicings in Rome over his

the Romans he was a subject of the empire, among his own people he was an independent sovereign, supreme over all the lands from Armenia to Arabia, and able to count on the assistance of both these nations. Odsnathus himself seems to have been engaged in almost constant warfare in the east and north against the Persians and perhaps the Scythians, but in his absence the reins of government were firmly held by his wife Zenobia, the most famous heroine of antiquity, to whom indeed Aurelian, in a letter preserved by Trebellius Pollio, ascribes the chief merit of all her husband's success. Septimia Zenobia was by birth a Palmyrene; her native name was Bath Zabbai (De V., 29) ;? and Pollio's descrip- tion of her dark beauty, black flashing eyes, and pearly teeth, together with her unusual physical endurance and the frank commanding manners which secured her author- ity in the camp and the desert, point emphatically to an Arabic rather than a Syrian descent.4 To the union of firmness and clemency, which is the most necessary quality of an Eastern sovereign, Zenobia added the rarer gifts of economy and organization, and an unusual range of intellectual culture. She spoke Coptic as well as Syriac, knew something of Latin, and had learned Greek from the famous Longinus, who remained at her court to the last, and paid the penalty of his life for his share in her counsels. She was also a diligent student of Hastern and Western history, and the statement that she enjoined her sons to speak Latin so that they had difficulty in using Greek implies a consistent and early adoption of the policy which made the success of Odenathus, and, taken in con- nexion with Aurelian's testimony, in a letter preserved by Pollio, that she had the chief merit of her husband's exploits, seems to justify the conclusion that it was her educated political insight that created the fortunes of the short-lived dynasty. In the zenith of his fame Odenathus was cut off by assassination along with his eldest son Herod, and it is generally assumed that the murder took place under

Gallienus. The authority for this view is Pollio, who says that on receiving the news Gallienus sent an army against the Persians, which was destroyed to a

Persian victories in 265 (reading consulatu for consulta in Gall. c. 12 with Klein in Rhein. Mus. 1880, p. 49 sg.). With this agrees Jerome's date of 265 for the campaign against Sapor; and it is also possible to make out from the series of Palmyrene inscriptions referring to a certain Septimius Worod that in 263-264 the military organization of Palmyra ceased to be Roman. On the other hand up to 262-263 Syria was held by Macrianus and his son Quietus. Odenathus took Emesa and destroyed Quietus probably in 263. Up to this time his sphere of action was limited by the desert, but the overthrow of Quietus left: him the only real power between Rome and Persia. There is really no evi- dence that he was at war with Sapor before 265, and before 263 he was hardly in a position to send an embassy to hii. It is most likely that his final decision in favour of Rome was not made till the fall of Emesa. Pollio is certainly wrong in saying that in 265 Odenathus was named Augustus. He seems to have been nisled by a medal in which the Augustus represented dragging Persians captive was really Gallienus, whom we know to have triumphed for Odenathus's victories. But after his Persian successes Odeenathus strengthened his position, 'as we learn from coins, by having his son associated in his imperium. The first year of Wahballath is 266-267, when his father, as will be presently shown, was still alive. The title of "king" was perhaps not conferred on Wahballath till the reign of Aurelian (Sallet, Mum. Zeit., 1870). ; ;

3 The original reading of De Vogiie and Waddington, Bath Zebina, ig now known to be incorrect. Zabbai is a genuine Palmyrene name, borne also at this period by Septimius Zabbai, the general of the forces of the city.

4 We need not attach any weight to the fact that Zenobia, when she was mistress of Egypt, boasted of descent from Cleopatra and the Ptolemies, Athanasius, in speaking of the support she gave to Paul of Samosata, calls her a Jewess; this is certainly false, for her coins bear pagan symbols. Athanasius probably drew a hasty conclusion, not so much from her sympathy with the Monarchian Paul as from her patronage of the Jews in

Alexandria, for which the evidence of an inscription from a synagogue still exists (see Mommsen in Zeitsch. f. Numismatik, v. 229 sq., 1873).

man by Zenobia—a statement quite incredible, since we know from coins of her son Wahballath or Athenodorus, struck at Alexandria, that the suzerainship of Rome was acknowledged in the Palmyrene kingdom till the second year of Aurelian. That Odzenathus fell under Gallienus seems, however, at first sight to be confirmed by the coins, which give 266-7 as the first year of Wahballath. On the other hand the inscriptions on two statues of Odzenathus and Zenobia which stand side by side at Palmyra bear the date August 271, and, though De Vogiié, mistaking an essential word, supposed the former to be posthumous, the inscription really implies that Odeenathus was then alive.} Now Pollio himself says that his wife and sons were associated in the kingship of Odeenathus, and therefore the years of Wahballath do not necessarily begin with his father's death. The fact seems to be that, while Odeenathus was busy at the other end of his kingdom, Zenobia administered the government at Palmyra and directed the conquest of Egypt, still nominally acting under the emperor at Rome, whose authority on the Nile was dis- puted by one or more pretenders.? It still seems strange that Wahballath should strike money in his father's life- time —and he did so both at Antioch and Alexandria— when there are no genuine coins of Odsnathus ; but it is equally strange and yet an undoubted fact that Zenobia, who not only enjoyed the real authority behind her beard- less son, but placed her name before his on public inscrip- tions,? struck no coins till the second year of Aurelian, when the breach with Rome took place, and she suddenly appears as an empress (S

When, however, Aurelian had restored the unity of the West, and stood at the head of a powerful army flushed by victory in Gaul, Palmyra had to choose between real sub- jection and war with Rome. Some time in the year ending August 28, 271, Wahballath assumed the title of Augustus, and drops Aurelian from his coins, and just at the same time Zabdai, generalissimo of the forces, and YZabbai, commander of the army of Tadmor, erected the statues already mentioned, where Odzenathus is styled

“king of kings and restorer of the state.” This was an open challenge, and the assassination of Odenathus, which took place at Emesa, a town in which the Roman party was strong, must have followed immediately afterwards, and on political grounds. Zenobia, supported by her two generals, kinsmen of her husband, was now face to face with a Roman invasion, She held Egypt, Syria, Mesopo- tamia, and Asia Minor as far as Ancyra; and Bithynia was ready to join her party had not the army of Aurelian appeared just in time from Byzantium. She could count too on the Armenians and the Arabs, but the loyalty of Syria was doubtful: the towns disliked ayrule which was essentially “barbarian,” and in Antioch at least the patroness of the Monarchian bishop Paul of Samosata could not be popular with the large Christian party by whom he was bitterly hated. There were many Romans ee ee eee

- That Odenathus lived to begin the war with Aurelian seems to have been known to Vopiscus (Probus, ¢. 9).

- That the Probatus of Pollio, Claudius, c. 11 (the Probus of Zosi- mus), must have been a pretender was first seen by Mommsen, apud Sallet, Fiirsten von Palmyra, p. 44.

3 This is shown for Syria by an inscription near Byblus (C. 7. G., 4503 b ; Waddington, p. 604), and for Egypt by the inscription from the Jewish synagogue already quoted, where indeed the names are not given but the order is BagtAloons kad BaciAdws—in the Latin Regina et rex gusserunt.

“ See, for the attitude of Emesa, Zosimus, i. 54, Prag. Hist. Grec., iv. 195. The assassin was a relative of Odenathus named Meeonius, that is M’annai (Pollio Trig. Tyr.; Zonaras, xii. 24),

?

PAL @W KA

in Zenobia’s force, and it was they who bore the brunt of the two great battles at Antioch and Emesa, which followed Aurelian’s rapid advance through Asia .Minor. But Zenobia made light of these defeats,—“ TI have suffered no great loss” was her message to Aurelian, “for almost all who

have fallen are Romans” (fr. H. Gr., iv. 197). ae was now plain that the war was one of races, and the fact that the fellahin of Palestine fought with enthusiasm on the side of Aurelian is the clearest proof that the empire of Palmyra was really an empire of Arabs over the peasants of the settled Semitic lands, whom the true Bedouin always despises, and who return his contempt with burning hatred. Thus the analogy already traced between the early history of Tadmor and Mecca is com- pleted by an equally striking parallel between the empire of the Septimians at Palmyra and that of the Omayyads at Damascus. In each case it was a family of Arabian mer- chant princes, strong in its influence over the sons of the desert, which rose to sovereignty and governed the old lands of the Semites from a city which had the desert behind it, But the empire of Palmyra came four centuries too soon. Rome was not yet exhausted, and Zenobia had neither the religious discipline of Islam to hold the Arabs together nor the spoil of the treasuries of Persia to keep their enthu- siasm always fresh. Aurelian’s military skill was strained to the uttermost by the prudence and energy of Zenobia, but he succeeded in forming and maintaining the siege of Palmyra in spite of its bulwark of desert, and his gold corrupted the Arab and Armenian auxiliaries. Zenobia attempted to flee and throw herself on the Persians, but she was pursued and taken, and then the Palmyrenes lost heart and capitulated. Aurelian seized the wealth of the city, but spared the inhabitants, and to Zenobia he granted her life while he put her advisers to death. She figured in his splendid triumph, and by the most probable account accepted her fall with dignity, and closed her days at Tibur, where she lived with her sons the life of a Roman matron. The fall of Zenobia may be placed in the spring of 272. Soon after, probably within a year, Palmyra was again in revolt, but on the approach of Aurelian it yielded without a battle; the town was destroyed and the popula- tion put to the sword.

An obscure and distorted tradition of Zenobia as an Arab queen sur- vived in the Arabian tradition of Zabba, daughter of ‘Amr b. Zarib, whose name is associated with Tadmor and with a town on the right bank of the Euphrates, which is no doubt the Zenobia of which Procopius speaks as founded by the famous queen. See O. de Perceval, ii. 28 sg., 197 sg. ; Tabari, i. 757 sq. Butthe ruins of Palmyra, which excited the lively admiration of the Bedouins, were not associated by them with the great queen ; they are referred to by Nabigha as proofs of the might of Solomon and his

sovereignty over their builders the Jinn. This legend must have come from the Jews, who either clung to the ruins or returned when Palmyra partially revived as a military station founded by Diocletian. Under the Christian empire Palmyra was a bishopric ; about 400 A.D. it was the station of the first Illyrian legion (Not. Dig.). Justinian furnished it with an aqueduct, and built the wall of which the ruins are still visible : it was deemed important, as we gather from Procopius, to have a strong post on the disputed marches of the Arabs of Hira and Ghassdn. At the Moslem conquest of Syria Palmyra capitulated to Khalid without embrac- ing Islam (Beladhori, p. 111 sg.; Yakut, i831). The town became a Moslem fortress and received a considerable Arab colony; for in the reign of Merwan II. it sent a thousand Kalbite horsemen to aid the revolt of Emesa, to the district of which it is reckoned by the Arabic geographers. The rebellion was sternly suppressed and the walls of the city destroyed.6 References to Palmyra in later

5 Ibn Athir (127 a.H.); compare Frag. Hist. Ar., 189 (where it is said to have been held by the Beni ‘Amir); Ibn Wadih, ii. 230; Mokaddasi, p. 156.

§ In this connexion Yakut tells a curious story of the opening of one of the tombs by the caliph, which in spite of fabulous incidents, recalling the legend of Roderic the Goth, shows some traces of local knowledge. The sculptures of Palmyra greatly interested the Arabs, and are commemorated in several poems quoted by Yakut and others.

times have been eolleeted by Quatremére, Sultans Mamlouks, ii. 1, p- 255. Once all but annihilated by earthquake (434 A.H.), and passing through many political vicissitudes, Tadmor was still a wealthy place, with considerable trade, as late as the 14th century; but in the general decline of the East, and the change of the great trade routes, it at length sunk to a poor group of hovels gathered in the eourtyard of the great Temple of Sun, ‘he ruins first became known to Europe in 1678 through W. Halifax, an Aleppo merchant. The architeeture was earefully studied in 1751 by Wood and Dawkins, whose splendid folio (The

Ruins of Palmyra, Lond., 1753) also gave eopies of inscriptions.? |

But, though the site was often visited and some stones with Semitic as well as Greek writing reached Europe, the great epigraphic wealth of Palmyra was first thoroughly opened to study by the eollections of Waddington and De Vogiié, made in 1861-62. Subsequent dis- coveries have been of minor importance, with the notable exeeption of the great fiscal inscription spoken of above, diseovered by Prinee

Abamelek Lazarew.

Sources.—To the writers already used by Tillemont and Gibbon, of whom Zosimus appears on the whole the best informed, must be added the fragments of the anonymous continuator of Dio (Petrus Patricius ?) first published by Mai. For the coins, Sallet's firsten von Palmyra (1866) must be read with his later essay, Vum. Zettsch., ii. 81 sq. (Vienna, 1870). For the Greek inscriptions, see the Cor. Insc. Gr., but especially the work of Le Bas and Waddington, vol. iii. To the great collection of Aramaie inscriptions in De Vogtié, Syrie Centrale, must be added the gleanings of other travellers (Mordtmann, Sitzungsb. of the Munich Ac., 1875; Sachau, in Z. D. M. G., xxxv. 728 sq.), With some stones brought to Europe at an earlier date, and the monuments of natives of Palmyra in Africa and Britain (see Levy, 2. D. M. G., xii., xv., Xviii.; W. Wright, 'The Palmyrene Inscr. of 8. Shields," 7. Soc. Bib. Arch., vi.). The great fiscal inscription was published by De Vogiié, Jour. As., ser. 8, vols. i, ii; eomp. Sachau in 7. D. M.G., xxxvil. 562 sq., and R. Cagnat in Rev. de Philol., viii. 135 sg. The dialect has been thoroughly discussed by Néldeke in Z. D. M. G., xxiv. 85 sq. Its nearest affinities are with Biblical Aramuic. (W. R. S.)

PALOMINO DE CASTRO Y VELASCO, Acrscto Awytonto (1653-1726), Spanish painter and writer on art, was born of good family at Bujalance, near Cordoba, in 1653, and studied philosophy, theology, and law at that capital, receiving also lessons in painting from Valdes Leal, who visited Cordoba in 1672, and afterwards from Alfaro (1675). After taking minor orders he removed to Madrid in 1678, where he associated with Alfaro, Coello, and Carefio, and executed some indifferent frescos. He soon afterwards married a lady of rank, and, having been appointed alcalde of the mesta, was himself ennobled ; and in 1688 he was appointed painter to

theking. He visited Valencia in 1697, and remained there three or four years, again devoting himself with but poor success to fresco painting. Between 1705 and 1715 he resided for con- siderable periods at Salamanca, Granada, and Cordoba; in the latter year the first volume of his work on art appeared in Madrid. After the death of his wife in 1725 Palomino took priest's orders. He died on August 13, 1726.

His work, in three vols. folio (1715-24), entitled 27 Museo Pictorico y Escala Optica, eonsists of three parts, of which the first two, on the theory and practice of the art of painting, are with- out interest or value; the third, with the subtitle #7 Parnaso Espaiiol Pintoresco Lawreado, is a mine of important biographical material relating to Spanish artists, which, notwithstanding its faulty style, has proeured for the author the not altogether undeserved honour of being called the "Spanish Vasari." It was partially translated into English in 1739; an abridgment of the original (Las Vidas de los Pintores y Estatuarios Espafioles) was published in London in 1742, and afterwards appeared in a French translation in 1749. A German version was published at Dresden in 1781, and a reprint of the entire work at Madrid in 1797.

PALUDAN-MULLER, Freperrk (1809-1876), the leading poet of Denmark during the middle of the present century, was born at Kjerteminde on the 7th February 1809. His father was' Jens Paludan-Miiller, a distin- guished bishop of Aarhuus. He was educated at the cathedral school of Odense from 1820 to 1828; in the latter year he passed to the university of Copenhagen. In 1832 he opened his career as a poet with Hour Romances, and a romantic comedy entitled Kjerlighed ved Hoffet ("Love at Court"). This enjoyed a great success, and was succeeded in 1833 by Dandserinden ("The Dancer"), and

1 For the site and the present aspect of the ruins, which are less perfect than at Wood's visit, see especially papers by W. Wright (of Damascus) in Leisure Hour, 1876 ; Socin-Baedeker's Handbook; and the recent Reise of Sachau (Berlin, 1883), which gives a general photograph, and one of the most perfect ruin, the small Sun-Temple.

in 1834 by the lyrical drama of Amor og Psyche. There was now no doubt about Paludan-Miiller's genius. In 1835 he came under the influence of Byron, and published an Oriental tale, Zuleimas Flugt (" Zuleima's Flight"), which was less successful than the preceding books. But he regained all that he had lost by his two Volumes of Poems in 1836 and 1838. Paludan-Miiller now left his native country for the first time, and spent two years (1838-40) in Germany, Italy, and France. The next dates in his career are those of the publication of his principal masterpieces— his lyrical dramas, Venus, 1841; Dryadens Bryllup (" The

| Dryad's Wedding"), 1844; Zithon (" Tithonus "), 1844 ;

and his famous didactico-humoristic epic Adam Homo, in three volumes, 1841-48. His later works include Abels Déd ("The Death of Abel"), 1854; Kalanus, an Indian tragedy ; Paradiset (" Paradise"), a lyrical drama, 1861 ; Benedikt fra Nurcia, 1861; Tiderne Skifte ("The Times are Changing"), a comedy, 1874; and Adonis, an exqui- site romance in verse, 1874. Besides these works, all of which are poetical, Paludan-Miiller published a story, Ungdomskilden ("The Fountain of Youth"), in 1865, and an historical novel in three volumes, Jvar Lykke's Historie (" The Story of Ivar Lykke"), 1866-73. The poet lived a very retired life, first in Copenhagen, then for many years in a cottage on the outskirts of the royal park of Fredensborg. He died in his house in Ny Adelgade, Copenhagen, on the 27th December 1876.

Paludan-Miiller's genius has been madc the subjeet of one of the most brilliant of George Brandes's monographs. His work was varied, but of remarkably high and level merit. His lyrical dramas form a group of pure poems, of an elevated class, which would dis- tineuish him above most of the European pocts of his timc, even if he had not shown himself, in Adam Homo, to be a great satirist as well. His artistic form was singularly fine. He might have becn a more finished thinker if his imagination had not becn dis- turbed by Byron. The reader who desires to study Paludan- Miiller at his best must read the first book of Adam Homo, and the whole of Kalanus and of Adonis. His poctical works were eolleeted in eight volumes in 1878-79.

PALWAL, in Gurgaon district, Punjab, India, with a population in 1881 of 10,635, is a town of great antiquity, supposed to figure in the earliest Aryan

traditions under the name of Apelava, part of the Pandava kingdom of Indraprdstha. Its importance is purely historical, and the place is now a mere agricultural centre.

PAMIERS, capital of an arrondissement, an episcopal see, and the most populous town (10,478 inhabitants) of the department of Ariége, France, lies on the right bank of that river, 40 miles south of Toulouse, in the middle of a fertile and well-watered valley. Its wines were at one time in high repute. Its industrial establishments at present comprise flour-mills, spinning-mills, serge factories, and some large forges, and there is also a gold-washing company (the Ariége derives its name from its auriferous character). The cathedral of Pamiers, with an octagonal Gothic tower, is a bizarre mixture of the Greco-Roman and Gothic styles; the church of Notre Dame du Camp is noticeable for its crenellated and machicolated fagade. From the site of the old castle, which still retains the name of Castellat, there is a fine view of the Pic de St Barthélemy and the valley of the Ariége.

Pamiers was originally a castle built in the beginning of the 12th eentury by Roger JI., count of Foix, on lands belonging to the abbey of St Antonin de Frédelas. The abbots of St Antonin, and afterwards the bishops, shared the superiority of the town with the counts, This gave rise to numerous disputes between monks, counts, sovereigns, bishops, aud the consuls of the town. Pamiers was sacked by Jean dc Foix in 1486, again during the religious wars, and, finally, in 1628 by Condé.

PAMIR. See Asta, vol. ii. p. 686, and Oxus, p. 103, supra.

PAMPAS. Sec ArcENTINE REPUBLIC, vol. ii. p. 487.

PAMPHILUS, an eminent promoter of learning in the early church, is said to have been born, of good family,

204:

at Berytus, in the latter half of the 3d century. After

studying at Alexandria under Pierius, the disciple of

Origen, he was ordained presbyter at Cxsarea in Palestine, where the remainder of his life was spent. There he established a theological school, and warmly encouraged students ; he also founded, or at least largely extended, the great library to which Eusebius and Jerome were after- wards so much indebted. He was very zealous in the

transcription and distribution of copies of Scripture and of

the works of various Christian writers, especially of Origen ; the copy of the complete works of the last-named in the

library of Ceesarea was chiefly in the handwriting of

Paniphilus himself. At the outbreak of the persecution under Maximin, Pamphilus was thrown into prison, and there, along with his attached friend and pupil Eusebius (sometimes distinguished as Eusebius Pamphili), he com- posed an Apology for Origen in five books, to which a sixth was afterwards added by Eusebius. He was put to death in 309.

Only the first book of the Apology of Pamphilus is extant, and that but in an imperfect Latin translation by Rufinus. It has been reprinted in De la Rue's edition of Origen, and also by Routh and by Galland. Eusebius wrote a memoir of his master which also has unfortunately disappeared.

PAMPHLETS. The earliest appearance of the word is in the Philobiblon (1344) of Richard de Bury, who speaks of "panfletos exiguos" (chap. viii). In English we have Chaucer's "this leud pamflet" (Zest. of Love, bk. iii.), Occleve's "go litil pamfilet" (Mason's ed., 1796, p. 77), and Caxton's "paunflettis and bookys" (Book of Eneydos, 1490, Prologue). In all these examples pamphlet is used to indicate the extent of the production, and in contradis- tinction to book. In the 16th century it became almost exclusively devoted in English literature to short poetical effusions, and not till the 18th century did pamphlet begin to assume its modern meaning of a prose political tract. "Pamphlet " and "pamphlétaire" are of comparatively recent introduction into French from the English, and generally indicate fugitive criticism of a more severe, not to say libellous, character than with us. The derivation of the word is a subject of contention among etymologists. The experts are also undecided as to what is actually understood by a pamphlet. Some bibliographers apply the term to everything, except periodicals, of quarto size and under, if not more than fifty pages, while others would limit its application to two or three sheets of printed matter which have first appeared in an unbound condition. These are merely physical peculiarities, and include academical dissertations, chap-books, and broadsides, which from their special subjects belong to a separate class from the pamphlet proper. As regards its literary character- istics, the chief notes of a pamphlet are brevity and spontaneity. It has a distinct aim, and relates to some matter of current interest, whether religious, political, or literary. Usually intended to support a particular line of argument, it may be descriptive, controversial,

didactic, or satirical. It is not so much a class as a form of literature, and from its ephemeral character represents the changeful currents of public opinion more closely than the bulky volume published after the formation of that opinion. The history of pamphlets being the entire record of popular feel- ing, all that is necessary here is to briefly indicate the chief families of political and religious pamphlets which have exercised marked influence, and more particularly in those countries—Kngland and France—where pamphlets have made so large a figure in influencing thought and events.

It is difficult to point out much in ancient Literature which precisely answers to our modern view of the pamphlet. The (belli famosi of the Romans were simply abusive pasquinades. Some of the small treatises of Lucian, the lost Anti-Cato of Cesar, Seneca's Apocolocyntosis

written against Claudius, Julian's Kaicapes } Supmdécroy and "AytioxiKds 7) Mucordywv, from their general applica- tion, just escape the charge of being mere satires, and may therefore claim to rank as early specimens of the pamphlet.

At the end of the 14th century the Lollard doctrines were widely circulated by means of the tracts and leaflets of Wickliffe and his followers, The Ploughman's Prayer and Lanthorne of Light, which appeared about the time of Old- castle's martyrdom, were extremely popular, and similar brief vernacular pieces became so common that it wag thought necessary in 1408 to enact that persons in authority should search out and apprehend all persons owning English books. The printers of the 15th century pro- duced many controversial tractates, and Caxton and Wynkin de Worde printed in the lesser form. It was in France that the printing press first began to supply reading for the common people. During the last twenty years of the 15th century there arose an extensive popular literature of farces, tales in verse and prose, satires, almanacs, &c., extending to a few leaves apiece, and circulated by the itinerant booksellers still known ag colporteurs. These folk-books soon spread from France to Italy and Spain, and were introduced into England at the beginning of the 16th century, doubtless from the same quarter, as most of our early chap-books are transla- tions or adaptations from the French. Another form of literature even more transient was the

broadside, or single sheet printed on one side only, which appears to have flourished principally in England, but which had been in use from the first invention of printing for papal indulgences, royal proclamations, and similar docu- ments. Throughout western Europe, about the middle of the 16th century, the broadside made a considerable figure in times of political agitation. In England it was chiefly used for ballads, which soon became so extremely popular that during the first ten years of the reign of Elizabeth the names of no less than forty ballad-printers appear in the Stationers' Registers. The humanist move- ment of the beginning of the 16th century produced the famous Epistole Obscurorum Virorwm, and the leading spirits of the Reformation period—Erasmus, Hutten, Luther, Melanchthon, Francowitz, Vergerio, Curio, and, Calvin—found in tracts a ready method of widely circulat- ing their opinions.

The course of ecclesiastical events was precipitated in England by the Supplicacyon for the Beggars (1528) of Simon Fish, answered by Sir Thomas More's Sup- plycacion of Soulys. In the time of Edward VI. brief tracts were largely used as a propagandist instrument in favour of the Reformed religion; political tracts were repre- sented by the address of the rebels in Devonshire (1549). The licensing of the press by Mary greatly hindered the production of this kind of literature. From about 1570 there came an unceasing flow of Puritan pamphlets, of which more than forty were reprinted under the title of A parte of a register (London, Waldegrave, 4to). To this publication Dr John Bridges replied by a ponderous quarto, A defence of the government established in the church of England (1587), which gave rise to Oh read over D, John Bridges . . . by the reverend and worthie Martin Marprelate gentleman (1588), the first of the famous Martin Marprelate tracts, whose titles sufficiently indicate their opposition to priestly orders and episcopacy. Bishop Cooper's Admonition to the People of England (1589) came next, followed on the other side by Hay any worke for Cooper… by Martin the Metropolitane, and by others from both parties to the number of about twenty-three. The controversy lasted about a year, and ended in the discomfiture of the Puritans and the seizure of their secret press. The writers on the Marprelate side are generally

raUuPraAaLbeETS

supposed to have been Penry, Throgmorton, Udal, and Fenner, and their opponents Bishop Cooper, John Lilly, and Nash.

As early as the middle of the 16th century we find ballads of news; and in the reigns of Elizabeth and James I. small pamphlets, translated from the German and French, and known as ‘“‘news-books,” were circulated by the so-called “ Mercury-women.” These were the immediate predecessors of weekly newspapers, and continued to the end of the 17th century. A proclamation was issued by Charles IL, May 12, 1680, “for suppressing the printing and publishing of unlicensed news-books and pamphlets of news.”

In the 17th century pamphlets began to contribute more than ever to the formation of public opinion. Nearly one hundred were written by or about the restless John Lilburne, but still more numerous were those of the undaunted Prynne, who himself published above one hundred and sixty, besides many weighty folios and quartos. Charles I. found energetic supporters in Peter Heylin and Sir Roger L’Estrange, the latter noted for the coarseness of his pen. The most distinguished pamphleteer of the period was John Milton, who began his career in this direction by five anti-episcopal tracts (1641-42) during the Smectymnuus quarrel. In 1643 his wife’s desertion caused him to publish anonymously Doctrine and discipline of divorce, followed by several others on the same subject. He printed the Z’ract on Education in 1644, and, unlicensed and unregistered, his famous Areopagitica—a speech for the liberty of wnlicensed printing. He defended the trial and execution of the king in Zenure of kings and magistrates (1648). The Hikon Basilike dispute was con- ducted with more ponderous weapons than the kind we are now discussing. When Monk held supreme power Milton addressed to him Zhe present means of a_free commonwealth and Readie and easie way (1660), both pleading for a commonwealth in preference to a monarchy. John Goodwin, the author of Obstructors of Justice (1649), John Phillipps, the nephew of Milton, and Abiezer Coppe were violent and prolific partisan writers, the last-named specially known for his extreme Presbyterian principles. The tract Killing no murder (1657), aimed at Cromwell, and attributed to Colonel Titus or Colonel Sexby, excited more attention than any other political effusion of the time. The history of the civil war period is told day by day in the well-known collection made by ‘Thomason the bookseller, now preserved in the

British Museum. It numbers 30,000 separate books, pamphlets, and broadsides, ranging from 1640 to 1662, and is bound in 2000 volumes. Each article was dated by Thomason at the time of acquisition. William Miller was another bookseller famous for his collection of pamphlets, which were catalogued by Tooker in 1693. Wm. Laycock printed a Proposal for raising a fund for buying them up for the nation.

The Catholic controversy during the reign of James II. gave rise to a multitude of books and pamphlets, which have been described by Peck (Catalogue, 1735) and by Jones (Catalogue, Chetham Society, 1859-65, 2 vols.). Politics were naturally the chief feature of the floating literature connected with the Revolution of 1688. The political tracts of Lord Halifax are interesting both in matter and manner. He is supposed to have written The character of a political trimmer (1689),-sometimes ascribed to Sir W. Coventry. About the middle of the reign Defoe was introduced to William IL, and produced the first of his pamphlets on occasional conformity. He issued in 1697 his two defences of standing armies in support of the Government, and published sets of tracts on the partition treaty, the union with Scotland, and many other subjects.

205

His Shortest way with the Dissenters (1702) placed him in the pillory.

Under Queen Anne pamphlets arrived at a remark- able degree of importance. Never before or since has this method of publication been used by such masters of thought and language. Political writing of any degree of authority was almost entirely confined to pamphlets. If the Whigs were able to command the services of Addison and Steele, the Tories fought with the terrible pen of Swift. Second in power if not in literary ability were Bolingbroke, Somers, Atterbury, Prior, and Pulteney, The Government viewed with a jealous eye the free use of this powerful instrument, and St John seized upon fourteen booksellers and publishers in one day for “libels” upon the administration (see Annals of Queen Anne, October 23, 1711). In 1712 a duty was laid upon newspapers and pamphlets, displeasing all parties, and soon falling into disuse. Bishop Hoadly’s sermon on the kingdom of Christ (1717), holding that the clergy could claim no temporal jurisdiction, occasioned the Bangorian controversy, which produced seventy

or eighty pamphlets. Soon after this period party-writing declined from its comparatively high standard and fell into meaner and venal hands. Under George III. Bute took Dr Shebbeare from Newgate in order to employ his pen. The court part received the support of a few able pamphlets, among which may be men- tioned The consideration of the German War against the policy of Pitt, and The prerogative droit de Koy (1764) vindicating the prerogative. We must not forget that although Samuel Johnson was a pensioned scribe he has for an excuse that his political tracts are his worst per- formances. Edmund Burke, on the other hand, has pro- duced in this form some of his most valued writings. The troubles in America and the union between Ireland and Great Britain are subjects which are abundantly illustrated in pamphlet literature.

Early in the present century the rise of the quarterly reviews threw open a new channel of publicity to those who had previously used pamphlets to spread their opinions, and later on the rapid growth of monthly magazines and weekly reviews afforded controversialists a much more certain and extensive circulation than they could ensure by an isolated publication. Although pamphlets are no longer the sole or most important factor of public opinion, the minor literature of great events is never likely to be entirely confined to periodicals. The following topics, which might be largely increased in number, have each been discussed by a multitude of pamphlets, most of which, however, are likely to have been hopeless aspirants for a more certain means of preserva- tion :—the Bullion Question (1810), the Poor Laws (1828- 34), Tracts for the Times and the ensuing controversy (1833-45), Dr Hampden (1836), the Canadian Revolt (1837-38), the Corn Laws (1841-48), Gorham Contro- versy (1849-50), Crimean War and Indian Mutiny (1854— 59), Schleswig-Holstein (1863-64), Ireland (1868-69), the Franco-German War, with Dame Europa’s School and its imitators (1870-71), Vaticanism, occasioned by Mr Glad- stone’s Vatican Decrees (1874), the Eastern Question (1877-80), and the Irish Land Laws (1880-82).

France. —The activity of the French press in putting forth small

tracts in favour of the Reformed religion caused the Sorbonne in 1523 to petition the king to abolish the diabolical art of printing. Even one or two

sheets of printed matter were found too eumber- some, and single leaves or placards were issued in such numbers that they were the subject of a special edict, September 28, 1553. An ordonnance of February 1566 was specially directed against libellous pamphlets, and those who wrote, printed, or even possessed them. The rivalry between Francis I. and Charles V. gave rise to many political pamphlets, and under Francis II. the Guises were attacked by similar means. Fr. Hotman directed his Hpistre envoiée au tygre de France against the Cardinal de Lorraine. ‘The Valois and

Henry III. in particular were severely handled in Les Hermaphro- dites (c. 1605), which was followed by a long series of imitations. Between Francis I. and Charles IX. the general tone of the pam- phlet-literature was grave, pedantic, and dogmatie, with few songs and an oeeasional political satire. From the latter period to the death of Henry IV. it became audacious, eruel, and dangerous, attended, however, with a considerable increase of political songs.

The Satyre Ménippée (1594), one of the most perfeet models of the pamphlet in the language, did more harm to the League than all the vietories of Henry IV. The pamphlets against the Jesuits were many and violent. Pére Rieheome defended the order in Chasse du renard Pasquier (1603), the latter person being their vigorous oppon- ent Etienne Pasquier. On the death of the king the eountry was filled with appeals for revenge against the Jesuits for his murder; the best known of them was the Anti-Coton (1610), generally attri- buted to César de Plaix. During the regency of Mary de’ Medici the pamphlet changed its severer form to a more facetious type. In spite of the danger of such proeeeding under the uneompromising ministry of Richelieu, there was no lack of libels upon him, whieh were even in most instances printed in Franee. These largely inereased during the Fronde, but it was Mazarin who was the sub- ject of more of this literature than any other historieal personage. It has been calculated that from the Parisian press alone there eame sufficient Mazarinades to fill 150 quarto volumes each of 500 pages. ight hundred were published during the siege of Paris (February 8 to Mareh 11, 1649). A eollection of satirical pieces, entitled Tableau du gouvernement de

Richelier, Mazarin, Fouquet, et Colbert (1693) extends to 432 pages. Pamphlets dealing with the amours of the king and his courtiers were in vogue in the time of Louis XIV., the most caustic of them being the Carte Géogra- phique de la Cour (1668) of Bussy-Rabutin. The presses of Holland and the Low Countries teemed with tracts against Colbert, Le Tellier, Louvois, and Pére Lachaise. The first of the ever-memor- able Provineiales appeared on January 23, 1656, under the title of Letive de Louis de Montalte aun provineial de ses amis, and the remaining eighteen eame out at irregular intervals during the next fifteen months. They excited extraordinary attention throughout Europe. The Jesuit replies were feeble and ineffectual. John Law and the schemes of the bubble period eaused much popular raillery. During the long reign of Louis XV. the distinguished names of Voltaire, Rousseau, Montesquieu, Diderot, D'Alembert, D'Holbaeh, Helvétius, and Beaumarchais must be added to the list of writers in this elass,

The preliminary struggle between the parliament and the crown gave rise to hundreds of pamphlets, which grew still more numerous as the Revolution approached. Linguet and Mirabeau began their appeals to the people. Camille Desmoulins eame into notice as a publicist during the elections for the states-general; but perhaps the pieee which caused the most sensation was the Qu'est ce que le Tiers Etat (1789) of the Abbé Sieyés. The Domine salvum fae Regem and Pange lingwa (1789) were two royalist brochures of unsavoury memory. The finaneial disorders of 1790 occasioned the LEffets des assignats sur le prix du pain of Dupont de Nemours ; Neeker was attacked in the Criminelle Neekerologie of Marat ; and the Vrai nurotr de la noblesse dragged the titled names of France through the mire. The massacre of the Champ de Mars, the death of Mirabeau, and the flight of the king in 1791, the noyades of Lyons and the erime of Charlotte Corday in 1798, and the terrible winter of 1794 have each their respeetive pamphlet literature, more or less violent in tone. Under the consulate and the empire the only writers of note who ventured to seek this method of appealing to the world were Madame de Staél, B. Constant, and Chateaubriand. The royalist reaction in 1816 was the cause of the Pétition of Paul Louis Courier, the first of those brilliant productions of a master of the art. He gained the distinetion of judicial procedure with his Simple Diseowrs in 1821, and published in 1824 his last political work Le pamphlet des panphlets, the

most eloquent justification of the pamphlet ever penned. The Mémoire a consulter of Montlosier attacked the growing power of the Congrégation. The year 1827 saw an augmentation of severity in the press laws and the establish- ment of the eensure. The opposition also increased in power and aetivity, but found its greatest support in the songs of Béranger and the journalism of Mignet, Thiers, and Carrel. M. de Comenin was the chief pamphleteer of the reign of Louis-Philippe. His Oui et non (1845), Few, fer (1846), and Livre des orateurs, par Timon, were extremely suecessful. The events of 1848 gave birth to a number of pamphlets, chiefly pale eopies of the more virile writings of the first revolution. Among the few men of power Louis Veuillot was the Pere Duchesne of the elerieals and Victor Hugo the Camille Des- moulins or Marat of the republicans. After 1852 there was no laek of venal apologies of the eoup d'état. Within more recent times the seeond empire suffered from many bitter attaeks, among which may be mentioned the Lettre sur Phistotre de Franee (1861) of the Due d'Aumale, Propos de Labiénus (1865) of Rogeard, Dialogue

aux enfers (1864) of Maurice Joly, and Ferry's Comptes fantas- tiques @ Haussmann (1868).

PAM—PAM

Literature.—In the article Linrarres will be found references to collections of pamphlets in public libraries. An excellent catalogue by W. Oldys of those in the Harleian Library is added to the 10th volume of the edition of the Mis- cellany by T. Park; and in the Biblioteca volante di @. Cinelli, 24 ed., 1734~ 47, 4 vols, 4to, may be seen a bibliography of pamphlet-literature, chiefly Italian and Latin, with notes. It is of course impossible to supply an account of all the volumes of collected pamphlets, but a few of the more representative in English may be mentioned. These are—The Phenix, 1707, 2 vols. 8yo; Morgan's Phenix Britannicus, 1732, 4t0; Bishop Edmund Gibson's Preservative against Popery, 1438, 8 vols. folin, new ed., 1848-49, 18 vols. sm, 8vo, consisting chiefly of the anti-Catholic discourses of James 11.'s time; The Harleian Miscellany, 1744-53, 8 vols. 4to, new ed. by T. Park, 1808-13, 10 vols. 4to, containing 600 to 700 pieces illustrative of Euglish history, from the library of Edward Harley, earl of Oxford; Collection of scaree and valuable tracts [Anown as Lord Somers Tracts],

1748-52, 16 parts 4to, 2d ed. by Sir W. Scott, 1809-15, 13 vols, 4to, also full of matter for English history; and The Pamphleteer, 1818-28, 29 vols, 8yo, containing the best pamphlets of the day.

For the derivation of the word p:mphlet consult Skeat's Etymological Dict.; Pegge's Anonymiana; Notes and Queries, 3d series, iv. 315, 379, 462, 482, v. 167, 290; 6th series. ii. 156. The general history of the subject may be traced in M. Davies, Zcon libellorum, 1715; W. Oldys, '' History of the Origin of Pamphiets," in Morgan's Phentx Brit, and Nichols's Zz. Anecdotes ; Dr Johnson's lutroduc- tion to the Harleian Miscellany; D'lsraeli, Amenities of Literature; Revue des Deux Mondes, April 1, 1846; Irish Q. Review, vii. 267; Edinb'. Rev., Oct. 1855; Huth's Ancient Ballads and Broadsides (Philobiblon Soc.); Maskell, Martin- Marprelate Controversy ;.T. Jones, Cat. of collection of tracts for and against Popery—the whole of Peck's lists and his references (Chetham Soc., 1856-65); Blakey's Hist. of Political Literature; Andrews, Hist. of British Journalism : Laronsse, Grand Dict. Universel; Nodier, Sur la liberté de la presse; Leber, De Vétat réel de la presse; Moreau, Bibliographie des Mazarinades; Bulletin du Bib- liophile Belge, 1859-62; Nisard, Hist. des livres populaires. (HIRa)

PAMPHYLIA, in ancient geography, was the name Seevol. ; given to a region in the south of Asia Minor, between Plate IL.

Lycia and Cilicia, extending from the Mediterranean to Mount Taurus. It was bounded on the N. by Pisidia, a rugged mountain tract, while Pamphylia occupied only the district between this and the sea. It was therefore a country of small extent, having a coast-line of only about 75 miles with a breadth of about 30. There can be little doubt that the Pamphylians and Pisidians were really the same people, though the former had received colonies from Greece and other lands, and from this cause, combined with the greater fertility of their territory, had attained a higher degree of civilization and more refinement than their neighbours of the interior. But the distinction between the two seems to have been established at an early period. Herodotus, who does not mention the Pisidians at all, enumerates the Pamphylians among the nations of Asia Minor, while Ephorus mentions them both, correctly including the one among the nations

on the coast, the other among those of the interior. Strabo distinetly describes the position of Pamphylia as given above, and assigns as its limits the pass of Mount Climax on the west, and the fortress of Coracesium, which belonged to Cilicia, on the east. Under the Roman administration the term Pamphylia was extended so as to include Pisidia and the whole tract up to the frontiers of Phrygia and Lycaonia, and in this wider sense it is employed by Ptolemy.

Pamphylia is in one respect a country of peculiar character; although it consists almost entirely of a plain, extending from the slopes of Mount Taurus to the sea, this plain, though presenting an unbroken level to the eye, does not consist, as in most similar cases, of alluvial deposits, butis formed almost wholly of travertine. "'The rivers pouring out of the caverns at the base of the Lycian and Pisidian ranges of the Taurus come forth from their subterranean courses charged with carbonate of lime, and are continually adding to the Pamphylian plain. They build up natural aqueducts of limestone, and after flowing for a time on these elevated beds burst their walls and take a new course. Consequently it is very difficult to reconcile the accounts of this district, as transmitted by ancient authors, with its present aspect, and the distribution of the streams which water it. By the sea-side the traver- tine forms cliffs from 20 to 80 fect high" (Forbes's Lycia, vol. ii. p. 188). Strabo describes a river which he terms Catarractes as a large stream falling with a great noise over a lofty cliff, but for the reason above given it cannot now be identified with certainty. He places it between Olbia and Attalia, where there is now no river of

any importance. East of the latter city is the Cestrus, and beyond that again the Eurymedon, both of which are considerable streams, navigable for some distance from the sea. Near the mouth of the latter is a lake called Caprias, mentioned by Strabo, but it isa mere salt marsh.

The chief towns on the coast are—Olbia, the first town in Pamphylia, near the Lycian frontier ; Attalia, founded by Attalus IL., king of Pergamus, which still retains the name of Adalia, and is the principal port in this part of Asia Minor; and Side, about 15 miles east of the Eurymedon. On a hill above that river, some distance inland, stood Aspendus, and in a similar

position above the river Cestrus was Perga, celebrated for its temple of Artemis. Between the two rivers, but somewhat farther inland, stood Sylleum, a strong fortress, which even ventured to defy the arms of Alexander. None of these towns are historically known to have been Greek colonies ; but the foundation of Aspendus was traditionally ascribed to the Argives, and Side was said to be a colony from Cymein Molis. Butit is certain that the inhabitants, even of these towns, retained little of a Hellenic character, and spoke a semi-barbarous dialect. The legend related by Herodotus and Strabo, which ascribed the origin of the Pamphylians to a colony led into their country by Amphi- lochus and Calchas after the Trojan War, is merely one of those mythical fictions current among the Greeks with regard to so many non-Hellenic races. The coins of Aspendus, though of Greek character, present us with legends in a barbarous dialect.

The Pamphylians never appear in history as an inde- pendent people. They are first mentioned among the nations subdued by the kings of Lydia, and afterwards passed in succession under the dominion of the Persian and Macedonian monarchs. After the defeat of Antiochus III. in 190 B.c., they were included among the provinces annexed by the Romans to the dominions of Eumenes, king of Pergamum ; but at a somewhat later period they joined with their neighbours the Pisidians and Cilicians in their piratical ravages, and their port of Side became the chief centre of the naval power of these freebooters, and the place where the captives were sold as slaves. Pamphylia was for a short time included in the dominions of Amyntas, king of Galatia, but after the death of that monarch lapsed into the ordinary condition of a Roman province, and its name is not again mentioned in history.

PAMPLONA (Pampeluna, Fr. Pampelune), a city of Spain, capital of the province of Navarre, and an epis- copal see, is situated 1378 feet above sea-level, on the left bank of the Agra, a tributary of the Ebro, on a height commanding a wide view of the hill-encircled plain known as the “cuenca” or “bowl” of Pamplona. It is a station on the Ebro railway connecting Alsasua with Saragossa. The climate in general is cold and moist, but owing to the purity of the air and the excel- lence of its drainage the town is not unhealthy. From its position Pamplona has always been the principal fortress of Navarre. The fortifications form a rectangle of which the north-

east and north-west sides face the river (here crossed by several bridges), while on the south-west side stands the citadel, which owes its present construction to Philip IL, who modelled it on that of Antwerp. It is @ pentagon, separated from the city by an esplanade, and is calculated to accommodate 7500 men. The streets of the town are regular and broad; there are three “ plazas,” the principal of which, containing the Casa de la Diputa- cion and the theatre, is sometimes on festive occasions turned into a bull-ring. The cathedral is a late Gothic structure begun in 1397 by Charles III. (El Noble) of Navarre, who is buried within its walls; of the previous structure raised by Don Sancho about 1123 only a small

portion of the cloisters remains. The interior, which is fine, is remarkable for the peculiar structure of its apse ; the wood carvings of the choir, in English oak, by Miguel Ancheta, a native artist, are excellent. The principal fagade is Corinthian, from designs of Ventura Rodriguez (1783). The same architect designed the superb aqueduct by which the city is supplied with water from Monte Francoa, some nine miles off. The beautiful cloisters on the south side of the cathedral, and the chapter-house beyond them, as well as the old churches of San Saturnino (Gothic) and San Nicolas (Romanesque), are also of interest to the student of architecture. Among other places of public resort in Pamplona may be mentioned the bull-ring, capable of accommodating 8000 spectators, and the tennis court (El Trinquete). The town has a well- equipped secondary school, two normal and numerous primary schools, as well as an academy of design; and there are three hospitals. Of the public gardens and walks the finest is La Taconera. The surrounding district is fertile, producing wine as well as grain and other seeds ; the manufactures are comparatively unimportant, the chief being that of linen. The yearly fair in connexion with the feast of San Fermin (July 7), the patron saint of the city, attracts a large concourse from all parts of the country. Population of ayuntamiento in 1877, 25,630.

Originally a town of the Vascones, Pamplona was rebuilt in 68 B.c. by Pompey the Great, whence the name Pompelo or Pompelo (Strabo). It was captured by Euric the Goth in 466 and by the Franks under Childebert in 542 ; it was dismantled by Charlemagne in 778, but repulsed the emir of

Saragossain 907. In the 14th cen- tury it was greatly strengthened and beautified by Charles I1I., who built a citadel on the site now occupied by the Plaza de Toros and by the Basilica de 8. Ignacio, the church marking the spot where Ignatius Loyala received his wound in defending the place against André de Foix in 1521. From 1808 it was occupied by the French until taken by Wellington in 1818. In the Carlist war of 1836-40 it was held by the Cristinos, and in 1875-76 it was more than once attacked, but never taken, by the Carlists.

PAN, a Greek god worshipped chiefly in Arcadia, among whose mountains he had numerous sanctuaries and holy caves. While he is a very common figure in poetry and art, it is exceedingly difficult to gain any clear idea of his actual worship in his Arcadian home. He appears to have been worshipped on the mountain tops as well as in caves; he was the herdsman's god, and the giver of fertility to flocks; he was a god of prophetic inspiration and of dreams, in which he sometimes revealed the cure of diseases; he was himself a huntsman and the god of hunters, and Arcadian sportsmen beat his image if they returned empty-handed from the chase; even fishermen invoked him for aid in their occupation; he guided travellers (as évdSus and zoymaios) on the pathless mountains, and even smoothed the rough sea by the sound of his flute; he was the god of music, of dance, and of song, Echo and Syrinx were the objects of his love, and he sported and danced with the mountain Nymphs. The nineteenth Homeric Hymn gives a most poetic account of his birth from the union of Hermes and the daughter of Dryops, and of his life among the Arcadian mountains and . springs. His power of inspiration and prophecy shows that there was an orgiastic, enthusiastic side of his worship, which made it easy for Pindar to connect him with the worship of Cybele, and for others to identify him with Marsyas. His voice inspires terror, and he produced sudden panics among men, The Athenian herald Phidip- pides heard his voice by the way promising victory at Marathon ; the Athenians attributed their triumph to his aid, and to the panic he inspired among the Persians, and consecrated to hima cave in the north side of the Acropolis. He had a temple and oracle near Acacesium, in which a fire burned continually. The analogy of his nature with Dionysus led to his assimilation with the Satyrs, and he is

often pictured among the Bacchic Thiasus. It was only a step further to speak of many Pans, male and female, and of infant Panisci. In the mystic eclecticism of Orphic religion, Pan was conceived as the universal god in a pantheistic fashion. His mother is variously called Ginoe, or Callisto, or Penelope; his father is Zeus, or Hermes, or Apollo, or Odysseus, or the suitors generally. He was represented as a half-human half-brute figure, with the legs and horns of a goat and a face whose features resembled those ‘of an animal. According to the Homeric Hymn, his mother was terrified when he was born with his hideous figure and long goat’s beard. The story, alluded to by Milton, Mrs Browning, and the modern poets, of the pilot Thamus, who, sailing near Paxos in the time of Tiberius, was commanded by a mighty voice to proclaim that “ Pan is dead,“ is first found in Plutarch (De Orac. Defectu, 699).

PANATIUS, a Stoic philosopher, lived about 185-112 B.c. He belonged to a Rhodian family, but was probably educated partly in Pergamum and afterwards in Athens. About 156 z.c. he came from Athens to Rome, where he became a friend of Lelius and of Scipio the younger. He lived as a guest in the house of Scipio, and accompanied him in his final campaign against Carthage and in his expedition to Egypt and Asia, 143 B.c. He had an important influence in the introduction of Greek philosophy into Rome, and taught a number of distinguished Romans. He returned to Athens, probably after the murder of Scipio in 129 B.c., and succeeded Antipater as head of the Stoic school. The right of citizenship was offered him by the Athenians, but not accepted. In his teaching he laid most stress on ethics; and his most important works, of which only insignificant fragments are preserved, were on this subject. He wrote (apparently during his Roman visit) a treatise on virtue, zept rod KxaOyxovros, in three books, upon which Cicero has chiefly founded his work De Officits. Works wept rpovoids, wept edOvpias, &c., were also composed by Panzetius,

PANAMA, a state and city of Colombia, in the extreme north of South America. The city, which is the capital of the state and the seat of a bishop, is situated on the coast of the Pacific at the head of the Gulf of Panama, a few miles east of the mouth of the Rio Grande, occupying partly a tongue of coral and basaltic rock and partly a gentle rise towards Mount Ancon, an eminence 560 feet in height. The cathedral stands in 8° 57’ 16” N. lat. and

79° 30° 50” W. long. In the 16th and 17th centuries Panama was, next to Cartagena, the strongest fortress in South America; but its massive granite ramparts, con- structed by Alfonzo Mercado de Villacorta (1673), in some places 40 feet high and 60 feet broad, have been razed on the land side (where they separated the city proper from the suburbs of Santa Ana, Pueblo Nuevo, and Arrabal) and allowed to fall into a ruinous condition towards the sea. Of the old Spanish houses constructed in the Moorish fashion comparatively few remain; but three-story build- ings, in which the two upper stories project, are sufficiently common to give a distinctive character to the city, which thus differs from the other towns of Central America. Ruins of churches and convents occupy a large area, those of the Jesuit college being the most imposing, and those of the Franciscan monastery (on the north-west sea wall) the most extensive. The cathedral, built in 1760, is a spacious edifice in the so-called Jesuit style, and its two lateral towers are the loftiest in Central America. It was restored in 1873-76, but the facade was destroyed and oak thrown down by the earthquake of September name, is of interest as the rallying point of the insurgents in the local revolutions; the high ground on which it

The church of Santa Ana, in the suburb of that:

PAN—PAWN

stands commands the city, and was long kept carefully free of all buildings. The president’s residence, the governor’s office, the state assembly house, the hospital in the old convent of the Conception, and the grand hotel (now the head offices of the canal company) in the principal square are the buildings now of most note. Besides the episcopal seminary there exist a sisters-of-charity school and a ladies’ college, with teachers from the United States and Canada. In the rainy season streams of water flow down the streets, but in the dry season the city is dependent on water brought in carts from the Matasnillo, a distance of several miles, the only perennial wells which it possessed having been dried up by the earthquake of 8th March 1883. By 1885, however, water-works introducing the

ATLANTIC OCEAN ZY ‘i

Capingja °Santa Ita, ‘ R. Cha, io Saldada y » Frajoles o ee Gorgona XS me =m = Barrage han Mo , a WW biepo iC ‘ : Empera Ng ‘

go a) » if R Pind i We & we Ros Charrera, he pose %. ; yyy

10 20 English Miles 30

Railway and Canal from Panama to Colon,

water of the Rio Grande at a cost of £50,000 are to be completed. Rents are high, and living is expensive. As Panama, like Colon, is a free port, statistics of trade are not collected. The local exports are india-rubber (growing scarcer), gold-dust, hides, ivory nuts, manganese, shells, tobacco, cocobolo (a cabinet wood), tortoise-shell, vanilla, whale oil, sarsaparilla, and cocoa-nuts. The Panama pearl fishery is still prosecuted with success. The passengers across the isthmus were 35,076 in 1868, 22,941 in 1876, 52,113 in 1881, and 75,703 in 1882. In 1870 the popu- lation of Panama (of very varied origin) was 18,378; by 1880 it was 25,000, of whom about 5000 were strangers. Panama (an Indian word meaning abounding in fish) was founded in 1518 by Pedro Arias Davila, and is thus the oldest European city in America, the older settlement at Santa Maria el Antigua near the Atrato having been abandoned and leaving no trace. Originally it was situated six or seven miles farther north on the left side of the Rio Algarrobo; but the former city, which was the great emporium for the gold and silver from Pera, and “had eight monasteries, a cathedral, and two churches, a fine hospital, 200 richly furnished houses, nearly 5000 houses of a humbler sort, a Genoese chamber of commerce, and 200 warehouses, was after three weeks ofrapine and murder burned, February 24, 1671, by Morgans buccaneers, who carried off 175 laden mules and more than 600 pris- oners” (see Travels of Pedro de Cieza de Leon, Hakluyt Soc., 1864). A new city was founded on the present site by Villacorta in 1673.

40

PA N—

The Isthmus and State.—By the Isthmus of Panama is sometimes understood the whole neck of land between the continents of North and

South America; more generally the name is restricted to the narrow crossing from Panama to Colon, the two other narrowest crossings being distin- guished as the Isthmus of San Blas (31 miles) and the Isthmus of Darien (46 miles). Nearly the whole isthmus, in the wider sense of the word, constitutes (since 1855) a state of the Confederation of Colombia, extending from the frontiers of Costa Rica to those of the state of Cauca. Besides Panamé the capital and Colon (Aspinwall), it con- tains Santiago, formerly chief town of a province and an apanage of the family of Columbus, Penonomé (about 15,000 inhabitants), Los Santos, formerly chief town of a province, Nata, and David. It is divided into six depart- ments—Coclé, Colon, Chiriqui, Los Santos, Panama, Veragua. ‘The total population in 1870 was 221,052.

Railway and Canal.—It is the Isthmus of Panama in the narrower sense which is crossed both by the interoceanic railway and by the line of the interoceanic ship-canal at pre- sent in course of construction. It affords a much shorter route than that of Darien, and while the central Cordillera does not sink lower than 980 feet in the Isthmus of San Blas, at the Culebra Col it is rather less than 290 feet high. As the watershed runs much nearer the south than the north side of the isthmus, the streams flowing to the Pacific are of comparatively little importance, while the Chagres on the Atlantic slope, with its tributary the Rio Obispo, forms a navigable river whose volume attains formidable dimensions at certain seasons. The railway (a single line) starting from Colon (on the swamp-island of Manzanillo on Limon Bay) reaches the valley of the Chagres at Gatun, runs along its northern flanks to Bar- bacoas, crosses the river by a large bridge, continues along the southern flank and up the tributary Obispo to the Culebra Col, from which it descends straight to Panama. The ship-canal is to follow very much the same route ; only it will keep closer to the bed of the Chagres, which it is to cross again and again, and on the Pacific slope it will descend the valley of the Rio Grande and be continued seaward to the island of Perico. The total length is 54 miles, Throughout the whole distance the bottom is to lie 81 metres (nearly 28 feet) below the mean level of the oceans, and the width is to be 22 metres (72 feet) at bottom and 50 metres (160 feet) at top, except in the section through the Culebra ridge, where the depth is to be 9 metres, the bottom width 24, and the top width 28. The two great difficulties connected with the under- taking are those

caused by the mountain and the river. As the idea of tunnelling the col has been abandoned, it will be necessary to cut down through the solid strata for a depth of 300 to 350 feet over a considerable distance ; the rock happily is of a comparatively soft schistous character, disposed almost horizontally. The Chagres has anaverage discharge at Matachin of 100 cubic metres per second, which at low water may sink to 15 or 20 cubic metres, and during flood rise to 500 or 600. At Gamboa, which lies just above the influx of the Rio Obispo, it is proposed to construct an enormous reservoir by throwing a dam across the valley. From Cerro Obispo on the one side to Cerro Santa Cruz on the other this dam will be 960 metres long at the base and 1960 metres at the top, with a width at the bottom of 1000 metres and a height of 45 metres. It will thus be the largest dyke yet constructed in the world. Altogether it is calculated that the excavation of the canal involves the removal of 3531 millions of cubic feet of earth; by January 31, 1884, the actual quantity removed was 118,448,595 cubic feet, or only about one-thirtieth of the whole. All along the Toute, however, at Buhio Soldado, Tabernilla, San Pablo,

in January 1855. was not. lost sight of ; and in 1875 it came up for discussion in the

Mamei, &c., workshops and settlements have been formed,

and by 1883 11,000 men were at work. At certain states of the tide the levels of the two oceans differ materially: while at Colon the difference between high and low water is not more than 23 inches, at Panama it is generally 13 feet, and at times even upwards of 194 feet. thus produced in the canal would be sufficient to stop navigation for a number of hours at each tide; and to obviate this difficulty it will be necessary either to construct locks at the Panam4 extremity or to slope the canal from Colon to Panama.

The current

A proposal to pierce the Isthmus of Daricn was made as early as

1520 by Angel Saavedra ; Cortez causcd the Isthmus of Tehuantepec to be surveyed for the construction of a canal; and in 1550 Antonio Galvio suggested four different routes for such a scheme, one of them being across the Isthmus of Panama. Spanish cortes ordered the viceroy of New Spain to undertake the piercing of the Isthmus of Tehuantepec; but the War of Independ- ence intervened, and, though a survey was made by General Obegoso in 1821, and José de Garny obtained a concession for a canal in 1842, nothing was accomplished. Bolivar, president of Colombia, caused Messrs Lloyd and Falmarc to study the Isthmus of Panama. Lloyd, whose paper was published in the Philosophical Transactions, London, 1830, proposed to make only a railway from Panama or Chorrera to the Rio Trinidad (tributary of the Chagrcs), and to establish a porton the Bay of Limon. out by the French Government in 1843, advocated the construction of a sluiced canal. sudden increase of traffic across the isthmus caused by the discovery of gold in California, commenced in 1849 to construct a railway, and their engineers, Totten and Trautwine, already known in connexion | with the canal from Cartagena to the Magdalena, managed, in spite

In 1814 the

M. Napoleon Garella, sent

An American company, stimulated by the

of the extreme difficulty of procuring labour, to complete the works | Meanwhile the question of an interoceanic canal

Congrés des Sciences Géographiques at Paris. A society under General Tiirr was formed for prosecuting the necessary explorations ; and Lieutenant Wyse, assisted by Ccller, A. Reclus, Bixio, &c., was sent out to the isthmus in 1876. In 1878 the Colombian Govern- ment granted the society known as the Civil International Inter- oceanic Canal Society the exclusive privilege of constructing a canal between the two oceans through the Colombian territory ; and at the same time the ports and canal were neutralized. In 1879 M. de Lesseps took the matter up, and the first meeting of his company was held in 1881. The capital necessary for the “ Com- pany of the Interoceanic Canal of Panama,” as it is called, was stated at 600,000,000 francs, —the

estimated cost of excavation being 430,000,000, that of weirs and trenches to take fresh water to the sea 46,000,000, and that of a dock and tide-gates on the Paeific side 36,000,000. The Panama canal was bought for $20,000,000, The contractors, Couvreux & Hersent, began operations in October of the same year. Meanwhile the United States Government proposed to make a treaty with Colombia by which it would be free to establish forts, arsenals, and naval stations on the Isthmus of Panama, though no forecs were to be maintained during peace ; but the British Government objected to any such arrangement.

Details in regard to engineering and finance will be found in the Bulletin du Canal Océanique, issued since 1879, and in Hngineering, 1883 and 1884, See also Reclus's "Explorations" in Zour du Monde, 1880, for an interesting series of views. '

PANATHEN ASA, the most splendid and brilliant of all the Athenian festivals, with perhaps the exception of the Great Dionysia. The mythic foundation is ascribed to Erechtheus; and Pausanias declares that the Olympia, the Lycaa, and the Panathenzea were the three oldest feasts in Greece. It was originally a religious celebration in honour of the patron goddess of the city, celebrated by her own worshippers. Itis said that when Theseus united the whole land under one government he made this festival of the city-goddess common to the entire country, and the older name Athensea was then changed to Panathenza. In addition to the religious rites there is said to have been a chariot race from the earliest time; Erechtheus himself won the prize in the race. The Panathenza were modified and rendered far more magnificent by Pisistratus and hissons. It is probable that the distinction of Greater and Lesser Panathenza dates from this period. Every fourth year the festival was celebrated with peculiar magnificence ; gymnastic sports were added to the horse races; and there is little doubt that Pisistratus aimed at

making the penteteric Panathenea the great Ionian festival in rivalry to the Dorian Olympia. The penteteric festival was celebrated in the third year of

each Olympiad. The annual festival consisted solely of the sacrifices and rites proper to this season in the cultus of the goddess. One of these rites originally consisted in carrying a new peplus to the temple to serve as the clothing of the image, a ceremonial known in other cities and represented by the writer of the [liad (vi.) as being in use at Troy; but it is probable that this rite was afterwards restricted to the great penteteric festival. Even the religious rites were celebrated with much greater splendour at the Greater Panathenza. The whole empire shared in the great sacrifice ; every colony and every subject state sent a deputation and sacrificial animals. On the great day of the feast there was a procession of the priests, the sacri- ficial assistants of every kind, the representatives of every part of the empire with their victims, the cavalry, in short of the population of Attica and great part of its depend- encies. The peplus was borne in the procession and presented to the goddess, and the hecatomb was sacrificed. At least as early as the 3d century before Christ the custom was introduced of spreading the peplus like a sail on the mast of a ship, which was rolled on a machine in the procession. The subject of the frieze of the Parthenon is an idealized treatment of this great procession.

The festival which had been beautified by Pisistratus was made still more imposing under the rule of Pericles. He introduced a regular musical contest in place of the old recitations of the rhapsodes, which were an old standing accompaniment of the festival. The order of the agones from this time onwards was—first the musical, then the gymnastic, then the equestrian contest. Many kinds of contest, such as the chariot race of the apobatat, which were not in use at Olympia, were practised in Athens. The season of the festival was the last days of Hecatom- bzeon, and the great day was the 28th, third from the end of the month (rpiry POivovros, called by Euripides 6uwas duépa). The prize in the games was an amphora full of olive oil produced from the holy olives, the. property and gift of the goddess herself. Only one Panathenaic amphora has been found in Attica itself; and, though

many have been discovered outside of Attica, especially in

Cyrene, it has been maintained that the latter are not really prizes in the games, but imitations made in the export trade as a sort of mark that the oil sold in them was of the very finest quality.

PANAY. See Paiuiepine IsLanps.

PANCH MAHALS, a district in the east of Guzerat, Bombay presidency, India, lying between 22° 30’ and 23° 10’ N. lat., and between 73° 35’ and 74° 10’ E. long., with an area of 1613 square miles. The south-western portion is for the most part a level plain of rich soil; while the northern, although it comprises some fertile valleys, is generally rugged, undulating, and barren, with but little cultivation. The mineral products comprise limestone, sandstone, trap, quartz, basalt, granite, and other varieties of building stone. Only recently has any attempt been made to conserve the extensive forest tracts, and con- sequently but little timber of any size is now to be found.

The census of 1881 returned the population at 255,479 (131,162 males and 124,317 females); the Hindus numbered 159, 624 ; Mohammedans, 16,060; Parsis, 30; and Christians, 44. Of the total population 30 per cent. belong to aboriginal tribes, the ma- jority being Bhils. Of 350,996 acres—the total area of Government cultivable land—202,498 acres were taken up for cultivation in 1881-82. Of 153,262 acres under actual cultivation (41,828 acres

being twice cropped), grain crops occupied 127,032 acres ; pulses, 42,444; and oil-seeds, 22,238,

PANCSOVA, a town of Hungary, near the Servian frontier, is situated on the river Temes, just above its

junction with the Danube, which it reaches 9 miles aboyg Belgrade. The town contains Roman Catholic, Protestant, and Greek churches, a convent, and manufactories of starch and beetroot sugar. Cotton and mulberries (for feeding silkworms) are cultivated, and a brisk trade in live stock and grain is carried on with Turkey. The hog fairs are largely attended. In 1880 Pancsova contained 17,127 inhabitants, partly Serbs and partly Germans. It wag burned by the retreating Austrians in 1788, and was again occupied by Austrian troops in 1849, after they had defeated the Hungarians in the vicinity.

PANDARUS, son of Lycaon, led the people of Zeleia in the Troad as allies of the Trojans against the Greeks, In other passages his country is named Lycia. It is frequently said that the Lycians of the J/iad are a tribe of the Troad, different from the people of the country Lycia; but it is more probable that the conflicting accounts belong to different strata in the Homeric poetry. Pandarus was worshipped as a hero at Pinara in Lycia. lLycaon, the name of Pandarus's father, is merely an epithet of Apollo, the great god of Lycia. Pandarus is not an important figure in the Jliad. He breaks the truce between the Trojans and the Greeks by treacherously wounding Menelaus with an arrow, and finally he is slain by Diomedes. In medizval romance he became a pro- minent figure in the tale of Troilus and Cressida. He encouraged the amour between the Trojan prince and his niece Cressida; and his name has passed into modern language as the common title of a lovers' go-between in the worst sense.

PANDECTS. See Justinian and Roman Law.

PANDERPUR, or PANDHARPUR, a town in Shol4pur district, Bombay, India, situated on the right bank of the Bhima river, in 17° 40′ 40" N. lat. and 75° 22' 40" E. long., with a population in 1881 of 16,910. 1+ is held in great reverence by the Brahmans for its celebrated temple dedi- cated to Vithoba, an incarnation of Vishnu. 'Three large annual religious fairs are held.

PANDORA. See PRoMETHEUS.

PANDUA, or Parrvan. See Gaor, vol. x. p. 115.

PANGOLIN. In Africa, India, and Malayana are found certain curious Mammals known to the Malays as Pangolins, to the English as Scaly Anteaters, and to naturalists by the scientific name of Manis. These animals, which, by a superficial observer, might be taken for reptiles rather than mammals, belong to the order LEdentata, otherwise almost wholly confined to the New World, and containing, besides the Pangolins, the Sloths, Anteaters, Armadillos, and Aard Varks.

In size pangolins range from 1 to 8 feet in length, exclusive of the tail, which varies from much shorter than to nearly twice the length of the rest of

the animal; their legs are short, so that the body is only a few inches off the ground ; their ears are very small; and their tongue is long and worm-like, and is used to catch ants with. Their most striking character, however, is their wonderful external coat of mail, composed of numerous broad over-lapping horny scales, which cover the whole animal, with the exception of the under surface of the body, and, in most species, of the lower part of the tip of the tail. Besides the scales there are generally, especially in the Indian species, a certain number of isolated hairs, which grow up between the scales, and are also scattered over the soft and flexible skin of the belly. There are five toes on each foot, the claws on the pollex and hallux rud-mentary, but the others, especially the third of the fore- foot, long, curved, and laterally compressed. In walking the fore claws are turned backwards and inwards, so that the weight of the animal rests on their back and outer sur- faces, and their points are thus kept from becoming blunted.

PA N—

Their skulls are long, smooth, and rounded, with imper- fect zygomatic arches, no teeth of any sort, and, as in other ant-eating mammals, with the bony palate extending

unusually far backwards towards the throat. The lower jaw consists of a pair of thin styliform bones anchylosed to each other at the chin, and rather loosely attached to

the skull by a joint which, instead of being horizontal, is

tilted up at an angle of 45°, the outwardly-twisted

condyles articulating with the inner surfaces of the long

glenoid processes, an arrangement quite unique among mammals, the sloths alone showing a slight tendency towards it. The other skeletal and anatomical characters have already been sufficiently described under MAMMALIA (vol. xv. p. 388).

The single genus Manis, which contains all the pangolins, may be conveniently divided into two groups, distinguished both by their

geographical distribution and by certain convenient, though not highly important, external characters. (1) The Asiatic pangolins arc charac- terized by having the central series of body-scales con- tinued quite to the extreme end of the tail, by having many isolated hairs growing up between the scales of the back, and by their small external ears. They all have a

Ligne, ne Ay

x ran eal pwoRTn

White-bellied Pangolin (Manis tricuspis). small naked spot beneath the tip of the tail, which is said to be of service as an organ of touch. ‘There are three species, viz., Manis javanica, ranging from Burmah, through Malacca and Java, to Borneo; J. aurita, found in China, Formosa, and Nepal; and the common Indian Pangolin, I. pentadactyla, distributed over the whole of India and Ceylon. (2) The African species have the central series of scales suddenly interrupted and breaking into two at a point about 2 or 3 inches from the tip of the tail; they have no hair between the scales, and no external ear-conch. The following are the four species belonging to this group :—the Long-tailed Pangolin (J. macrura), which has a tail nearly twice as long as its body, and containing as many as forty-six caudal vertebrae, nearly the largest number known among Mammals; the White-bellied Pangolin (I. tricuspis), closely allied to the last, but with longer and tricuspid scales, and white belly hairs (these two, like the Indian species, have a naked spot beneath the tail tip, a character probably correlated with the power of climbing, and they are, moreover, peculiar in having the outer sides of their fore legs clothed with hair, all the other species being scaly there as elsewhere); and the Short-tailed and the Giant Pangolins (JZ. temmincku and

gigantea), both of which have their tailscovered entirely with scales, and evidently never take to arboreal habits. All the four species of the second group are found in the West African region, one only, I. temminckui, extending besides into south and eastern equatorial Africa. The following account of the habits of Manis tricuspis is taken from Mr Louis Fraser’s Zoologia T’ypica :—

“During my short residence at Fernando Po I sueeeeded in procuring two living specimens of this animal. The individuals, judging from the bones, were evidently not adult; the largest measured 30 inches in length, of which the head and body were 12 inches and the tail 18 inehes. I kept them alive for about a week at Fernando Po, and allowed them the range of a room, where they fed upon a small black ant, which is very abundant and trouble-some in the houses and elsewhere. Even when first procured they displayed little or no fear, but continued to elimb about the room without noticing my occasional entrance. They would climb up the somewhat roughly-hewn square posts which supported the building with great facility, and upon reaching the ceiling would return head foremost ; sometimes they would roll themselves wp into a ball and throw themselves down, and apparently without experiencing any inconvenience from the fall, which was in a measure broken upon reaching the ground by the semi-yielding seales, which were thrown into an erect position by the eurve of the body of the animal. In climbing, the tail, with its strongly- pointed seales beneath, was used to assist the feet ; and the grasp of the hind feet, assisted by the tail, was so powerful that the animal would throw the body back (when on the post) into a horizontal position, and sway itself to and fro, apparently taking pleasure in this kind of exercise. It always slept with the ‘body rolled up ; and when in this position in a eorner of the building, owing to the position and strength of the scales, and the power of the limbs combined, I found it impossible to remove the animal against its will, the points of the scales being inserted into every little noteh and hollow of the surrounding objects. The eyes are very dark hazel, and very prominent. The eolonial name for this species of Manis is ‘Attadillo,’ and it is called by the Boobies, the natives of the island, ‘Gahlah.’ The flesh is said to be exceedingly good eating, and is in great request among the natives.” (O. ‘T.)

PANIPAT, g decayed historical town in Karnal district, Punjab, India, situated on the Grand Trunk Road, 53 miles north of Delhi, in 29° 23’ N. lat. and 77° 1’ 10” E. long. The town is of great antiquity, dating back to the great war of the Mahdbharata between the Pandavas and Kaurava brethren, when it formed one of the tracts demanded by Yudishthira from Duryodhana as the price of peace. In modern times, the plains of Panipat are celebrated as having thrice formed the scene of decisive battles which sealed the fate of upper India,—in 1526, when Babar on his invasion of

India with his small but veteran army completely defeated the imperial forces; 1n 1556, when his grandson, Akbar, on the same battlefield, conquered Hemu, the Hindu general of the Afghan Sher Shah, thus a second time establishing the Mughal power; and finally, on 7th January 1761, when Ahmad Shah Durdni decisively shattered the unity of the Mahratta power. The modern town stands near the old bank of the Jumna, upon high ground composed of the debris of earlier buildings. The population in 1881 numbered 25,022, including 16,917 Mohammedans. Although there are many brick-built houses and some well-paved streets in the centre of the town, the outskirts are low and squalid, and the general aspect of the whole town miserable and poverty-stricken. =”

PANIZZI, Sm Awnruony (17 97-1879), principal librarian of the British Museum, was born at Brescello in the duchy of Modena, September 16, 1797. After taking his degree at the university of Parma, he became an advocate, and speedily obtained considerable practice. Always a fervent patriot, he was almost of necessity implicated in the movement set on foot in 1821 to over- turn the miserable Government of his native duchy, and in October of that year barely escaped arrest by a precipitate flight. He first established himself at Lugano, where he published an anonymous and now excessively rare pamphlet

generally known as I Processt di Rubiera, an exposure of the monstrous injustice and illegalities of the Modenese Government’s proceedings against suspected persons. Ex- pelled from Switzerland at the joint instance of Austria, France, and Sardinia, he repaired to England, where he arrived in May 1823, in a state bordering upon destitution. His countryman Foscolo provided him with introductions to Roscoe and Dr Shepherd, and by their aid he was enabled to earn a subsistence in Liverpool by giving Italian lessons, while diligently instructing himself in English. Roscoe further introduced him to Brougham, by whose influence he was called to London to assume the professorship of Italian in University College, upon the foundation of that institution in 1828. His chair was almost a sinecure ; but his manners, his culture, and his abilities rapidly ingratiated him with the best London society; and in 1831 Brougham, having become lord

chancellor, used his ex officio position asa principal trustee of the British Museum to obtain for Panizzi the post of an extra assistant librarian of the printed book department. At the same time he was actively prosecuting the most important of his purely- literary labours, his edition of Boiardo's Orlando Inna- morato. Boiardo's fame had been eclipsed for three centuries by the adaptation of Berni; and it is highly to the honour of Panizzi's taste to have redeemed him from oblivion, and restored to Italy one of the very best of her narrative poets. His edition of the Orlando Innamorato and the Orlando Furtoso was published between 1830 and 1834, prefaced by a valuable essay on the influence of Celtic legends on medieval romance, and dedicated to his benefactor Roscoe. In 1835 he edited Boiardo's minor poems, and was about the same time engaged in preparing a catalogue of the library of the Royal Society, which led toa warm controversy. Panizzi was shortly to find library work of a much more important and agreeable description in the institution with which he was officially connected. The unsatisfactory condition and illiberal management of the British Museum had long excited discontent, and at length a trivial circumstance led to the appointment of a parliamentary committee, which sat throughout the sessions of 1835-36, and probed the condition of the institution very thoroughly. Panizzi's principal contributions to its inquiries as respected the library were an enormous mass of statistics respecting foreign libraries collected by him upon the Continent, and some admirable evidence on the catalogue of printed books then in contemplation. In 1837 he became keeper of printed books upon the retize- ment of Mr Baber, and immediately set himself to grapple with the special tasks imposed upon him by the peculiar circumstances in which he found the library. The entire collection, except the King's Library, had to be removed from Montague House to the new building; the reading- room service had to be reorganized; rules for the new printed catalogue had to be prepared, and the catalogue itself undertaken. All these tasks were successfully accom- plished ; but, although the rules of cataloguing devised by Panizzi and his assistants have become the basis of whatever has since been attempted in this department, the progress of the catalogue itself was slow. The first volume, comprising letter A, was published in 1841, and from that time, although the catalogue was continued and completed in MS., no attempt was made to print any more until, in 1881, the task was resumed under the direction of the present principal librarian. The chief cause of this comparative failure was

injudicious interfer- ence with Panizzi, occasioned by the impatience of the trustees and the public. Panizzi's appointment, as that of a foreigner, had from the first been highly unpopular. He gradually broke down opposition, partly by his social influence, but far more by the sterling merits of his

administration, and his constant efforts to improve the library. 'The most remarkable of these was his great report, printed in 1845, upon the Museum's extraordinary deficiencies in general literature, which ultimately pro- cured the increase of the annual grant for the purchase of books to £10,000. In 1847 his friendship with the Right Hon. Thomas Grenville led to the nation's being enriched by the bequest of that gentleman's unique library, valued even then at £50,000. In 1847-49 a royal commission sat to inquire into the general state of the Museum, and Panizzi was the centre of the proceedings, His administration, fiercely attacked from a multitude of quarters, was triumphantly vindicated in every point ; and the inquiry had the excellent effect, not merely of establish- ing his reputation, but of abolishing the' main source of maladministration, the anomalous position and illegitimate influence of the secretary. Panizzi immediately became by far the most influential official in the. Museum, though he did not actually succeed to the principal librarianship until 1856.

It was thus as merely keeper of printed books that he conceived and carried out the achievement by which he is probably best remembered, the erection of the new library and reading-room. The want of space had become so crying an evil that purchases were actually discouraged from lack of room in which to deposit the books. Panizzi cast his eye on the empty quadrangle enclosed by the Museum buildings, and conceived the daring idea of occupy- ing it with a central cupola too distant, and adjacent galleries too low, to obstruct the inner windows of the original edifice. The cupola was to cover three hundred readers, the galleries to provide storage for a million of books. The original design, sketched by Panizzi's own hand on April 18, 1852, was submitted to the trustees on May 5; in May 1854 the necessary expenditure was sanc- tioned by parliament, and the building was opened in May 1857. Its construction had involved a multitude of ingenious arrangements, all of which had been contrived or inspected by Panizzi with

the genius for minute detail which he shared with so many men equally remarkable for the general breadth of their conceptions, and with the mechanical inventiveness of which he was continually giving proof. There is probably no building in the world better adapted to the purpose which it is intended to serve; and it is no discredit to the designer if, imposing as it is, neither the space nor the funds at his disposal allowed him to plan it on the colossal scale which its utility would have warranted.

Panizzi succeeded Sir Henry Ellis as principal librarian in March 1856. The most remarkable incidents of his administration were the great improvement effected in the condition of the Museum staff by the recognition of the institution as a branch of the civil service, and the decision, not carried out for long afterwards, to remove the natural history collections to Kensington. Of this questionable measure Panizzi was a warm advocate; he was heartily glad to be rid of the naturalists. He had small love for science and its professors, and, as his friend Macaulay said, “would at any time have given three elephants for one Aldus.” Many important additions to the collections were made during his administration, especially the Temple bequest of antiquities, and the Halicarnassean sculptures discovered at Budrun by Mr ©. T. Newton. Feeling the effects of age and excessive labour, he expressed a wish to retire in 1865, but remained some time longer in office at the instance of the trustees. He ultimately retired in July 1866, receiving as a special mark of distinction & pension equal to the full amount of his salary. He took a house in the immediate neighbourhood of his cherished institution, and continued to interest himself actively in 1ts

affairs until his death, which took place on April 8, 1879. He had been created a K.C.B. in 1869.

Along with Panizzi’s visible and palpable activity as the centre of energy at the British Museum was another systematic activity no less engrossing and important, but unacknowledged by himself and little suspected by the world. His devotion to the Museum was rivalled by his devotion to his country, and his personal influence with English Liberal statesnien enabled him to promote her cause by judicious representations at critical periods.

Through- out the revolutionary movements of 1848-49, and again during the campaign of 1859 and the subsequent transactions due to the union of Naples to the kingdoin of Upper Italy, Panizzi was in constant communication with the Italian patriots, and their eon- fidential representative with the English ministers. He laboured, according to circumstances, now to excite now to mitigate the latter's jealousy of France ; now to moderate their apprehensions of revolutionary excesses, now to secure encouragement or con- nivance for Garibaldi. The letters addressed to him by patriotic Italians, edited by his literary executor and biographer, Mr L. Fagan, alone compose a thick volume. His own have not as yet been collected ; but the internal evidence of the correspondence published attests the priceless value of his services, and the boundless confidence reposed in his sagacity, disinterestedness, and discretion. He was charitable to lis exiled countrymen in England, and, chiefly at his own expense, equipped a steamer, which was lost at sea, to rescue the Neapolitan prisoners of state on the island of Santo Stefano. His services were recognized by the offer of a senatorship and of the direction of public instruction in Italy ; but England, where he had been legally naturalized, had become his adopted country, though in his latter years he frequently visited the land of his birth.

Panizzi's merits and defects were those of a potent nature. He was a man born to rule, and in a free country would probably have devoted himself to public life and become one of the leading statesmen of his age. His administrative faculty was extra- ordinary: to the widest grasp le united the minutest attention to matters of detail. His will and perseverance were indomitable, but the vehemence of his temper was mitigated by au ample endowment of tact and circumspection. He was a powerful writer, a persuasive speaker, and an accomplished diplomatist. He was undoubtedly arbitrary and despotic; in some few points upon which he had hastily taken up wroug views, incurably prejudiced ; in others, such as the claims of science, somewliat perversely narrow-minded. But on the whole he was a very great man, whi, by introducing great ideas into the management of the Museum, not only redeemed that institution from being a mere show- place, but raised the standard of library administration all over England. His successors may equal or surpass luis achievements, but ouly on condition of labouring in his spirit, a spirit whieh did not exist before hini. His moral character was the counter- part of his intellectual: he was warm hearted' and

magnani- mous, extreme in love and hate, a formidable enen1y, but a devoted friend. The list of his intimate friends is a long and brilliant one, including Lord Palmerston, Mr Gladstone, Roscoe, Grenville, Macaulay, Lord Langdale and his family, Rutherfurd (Lord Advo- cate), and above all, perhaps, Haywood, the translator of Kant. His most celebrated friendship, however, is that with Prosper Méri- mée, who, having begun by seeking to enlist his influence with the English Government on behalf of Napoleon III., discovered a con- geniality of tastes which produced a delightful correspoudence. Mérimée's part has been published by Mr Fagan; Panizzi's oC in the conflagration kindled by the Paris commune. The oss is to be regretted rather on acount of the autobiographical than the literary value of Panizzi's share of the correspondence, although he was an accomplished mani of letters of the 18th century pattern. But no man of ability has more completely exemplified the apophthegm of another distinguished person, that success is won less by ability than by character.

See L. Fagan, Life of Sir Anthony Panizzt, 2 vols., London, 1880, (R. G.)

PANNA, or PUNNAH, a native state in Bundelkhand, India, situated for the most part on the table-lands above the Vindhyan Ghats, and containing much hill and jungle land, with an area of 2568 square miles, and a population in 1881 of 227,306. 'The state was formerly celebrated for its diamond mines in the neighbourhood of Panna town, but these appear to have become almost exhausted, and only a small and fluctuating revenue is now derived from them.

PANNONIA, in ancient geography, is the country bounded N. and E. by the Danube from a point 9 or 10 miles north of Vindobona (Vienna) to Singidunum (Belgrade) in Meesia, and conterminous westward with Noricum and Italy and southward with Dalmatia and

Meesia Superior. It thus corresponds to the south-west of Hungary with portions of Lower Austria, Styria, Carniola, and Croatia and Slavonia. Partially conquered in 35 B.C. (when the town of Siscia was taken), Pannonia (but probably only what was afterwards known as Lower Pannonia) was made a Roman provinceby Tiberius in 8 A.D. The three

legions stationed in the country at the death of Augustus (14 A.D.) rose in rebellion and were quelled by Drusus. Somewhere between 102 and 107 Trajan divided the province into Pannonia Superior and Pannonia Inferior. These, according to Ptolemy, were separated by a line from Arrabona (Raab) in the north to Servitium (Gradisca) in the south, but at a later date the boundary lay farther east, to the diminution of Pannonia Inferior. The erection of two new provinces, Valeria and Savia, in the time of Diocletian gave rise to a fourfold division; and Constantine placed Pannonia Prima, Valeria, and Savia under the pretorian prefect of Italy, and Pannonia Secunda under the preetorian prefect of Illyricum. Pannonia Prima was the north part of the old Pannonia Superior and Savia the south part; Pannonia Secunda lay round about Sirmium, at the meeting of the valleys of the Save, the Drave, and the Danube; and Valeria (so called by Galerius after Valeria his wife and Diocletian's daughter) extended along the Danube from Altinum (Mohacs) to Brigetio (O-Szény). TheodosiusII. had to cede Pannonia to the Huns, and they were followed in turn by the Ostrogoths, the Longobards, and the Avars.

During the four hundred years of Roman occupation Pannonia reached a considerable a. of civilization, and a number of the native tribes were largely Latinized. Upper Panuonia contained Vindobona (Vienna), a municipium ; Carnuntum (Petronell), whieh became probably about 70 A.D. tlie winter quarters of the Pannonian legions, was made a muuicipium by Hadrian or Antoninus Pius, appears in the 8d century as a eolonia, and has left important epigraphie remains; Arrabona (Raab or Gyr), a considerable military station ; Brigetio (O-Szény), founded probably in the 2d century as the seat of Legio Prima Adjutrix, and afterwards designated niunieipium and colonia; Scarabantia or Scarbantia (Oedenburg or Soprony), a municipium of Julian origin according to Pliny, but of Ailiau according to the inscriptions ; Savaria or Sabaria (Stein am Anger or Szombathely), a purely civil munieipium founded by Claudius, and a frequent residence of the later emperors ; Poetovio (Potobium of Ptolemy, Patavio of /éin. Anton.; modern Pettau), first mentioned by Tacitus (69 A.D.) as the seat of Legio XIII. Gemina, and made a colonia by Trajau ;} Siscia (Sziszek), formerly known as Segesteca or Segeste, a place of great importance down to the close of the empire, made a colonia probably by Vespasian, and restored by Severus (colonia Flavia Septimia) ; Neviodunum

(Dernovo), designated munieipium Flavium; muni- cipium Latobicorum (Treffen); Emona or Heniona, “Huava, (Laibach); aud Nauportus (Ober-Laibach). Lower Pannonia contained Sirmimn (Mitrovic), first mentioned in 6 A.p., made a colonia by Vespasian or his successor, and a frequent residence of the later emperors ; Bassiane (near Petrovce), Cusum (Peterwardein), Malata or Bononia (Banostor), Cibale (Vinkovece), a municipium ; Mursa (Eszek), niade a colonia by Hadrian 133 a.p. ; Sopiane (Fiinfkirchen or Pees), scat of the preses of Valcria, and an importaut place at the meeting of five roads; Aquincum (Alt-Ofen), made a colonia by Hadrian, and the seat of Legio 11. Adjutrix; and Cirpi (near Bogdany). See Corp. Inscr. Lat., vol. iii. 1.

PANORAMA is the name given originally to a pictorial representation of the whole view which is visible from one point by an observer who in turning round looks successively to all points of the horizon. In an ordinary picture only a small part of the objects visible from one point is included, far less being generally given than the eye of the observer can take in whilst stationary. The drawing is in this case made by projecting the objects to be represented from the point occupied by the eye ona plane. If a greater part of a landscape has to be represented, it becomes more convenient for the artist to suppose himself surrounded by a cylindrical surface in whose centre he stands, and to project the

i ee

1 In the 4th century it became a town of Noricum, not of Pannonia.

landscape from this position on the cylinder. In a panorama such a cylinder, originally of about 60 feet, but now extending to upwards of 130 feet diameter, is covered with an accurate representation in colours of a landscape, so that an observer standing in the centre of the cylinder sees the picture like an actual landscape in nature completely surround him in all directions. This gives an effect of great reality to the picture, which is skilfully aided in various ways. The observer stands ona platform representing, say, the flat roof of a house, and the space between this platform and the picture is covered with real objects which gradually blend

into the picture itself. The picture is lighted from above, but a roof is spread over the central platform so that no light but that reflected from the picture reaches the eye. In order to make this light appear the more brilliant, the passages and staircase which lead the spectator to the platform are kept nearly dark. These panoramas were invented by Robert Barker, an Edinburgh artist, who exhibited the first in Edinburgh in 1788, representing a view of that city. A view of London and views of sea fights and battles of the Napoleonic wars followed. Panoramas gained less favour on the Continent, until after the Franco-German war a panorama of the siege of Paris was exhibited in Paris.

The name panorama, or panoramic view, is also given to drawings of views from mountain peaks or other points of view, such as are found in many hotels in the Alps, or, on a smaller scale, in guide-books to Switzerland and other mountainous districts. These too are drawn as if projected on a cylinder afterwards cut open and unrolled, The geometrical laws which guide the drawing of panoramas follow easily from the general rules for PROJECTION (¢.v.).

PANSY (Viola sp.). This flower has been so long cultivated that its source is a matter of uncertainty. As we now see it, it is a purely artificial production, differing considerably from any wild plant known. By some it is supposed to be merely a cultivated form of Viola tricolor, a corn-field weed, while others assert it to be the result of hybridization between JV. tricolor and other species such as V. altaica, V. grandiflora, &c. As florists and gardeners conducted, and still too often conduct, their operations without scientific method, it is unfortunately not possible to arrive at any definite conclusion on this point. Some experiments of M. Carriére, however, go to show that seeds of the wild V. tricolor will produce forms so like those of the cultivated pansy that it is reasonable to assume that that flower has originated from the wild plant by con- tinuous selection. Mr Darwin confesses himself to have been foiled in the attempt to unravel the parentage of the pansy, “and gave up the attempt as too difficult for any one except a professed botanist.” The changes that have been effected from the wild type are, however, more strik- ing to the eye than really fundamental. Increase in size, an alteration in form by virtue of which the narrow oblong petals are converted into circular ones, and variations in the intensity and

distribution of the colour—these are the changes that have been wrought by continued selection, while the more essential parts of the flower have been relatively unaffected. The stamens and pistil, in fact, present the characteristics of the genus Viola. In that genus the construction of the stamens and pistil is such as to favour cross-fertilization, and that circumstance alone would account for much of the variation that is observed. In practice it is customary to propagate by means of cuttings the varieties it is desired to perpetuate, while, if additional varieties are desired, reproduction by seed, and careful selection of seedlings, according to the desire or

(cleistogamic) flowers, such as occur in various species of violet, and in which the petals are absent or inconspicuous, not being required for the purpose of attracting insects, have not as yet been observed in pansies.

PANTAINUS, head of the catechetical school at Alexandria at the close of the 2d Christian century, is known chiefly as having been the master of Clement, who succeeded him. Eusebius and Jerome speak of him ag having been, originally at least, a Stoic, and as having been sent, on account of his zeal and learning, as a missionary to ‘‘India”—Yemen perhaps being meant, He was the author of commentaries on various books of Scripture, all of which have been lost with the exception of a few insignificant fragments. His teaching work in Alexandria seems to have begun before 180 a.p., and it was brought to an end by the persecution of Septimius Severus in 202.

PANTELLARIA, Panratarta, or officially Panret- LERIA (the ancient Cossyra or Cosyra), an island in the Mediterranean, which, though only 45 miles from the African coast to the south of Cape Bon, and 75 miles from the coast of Sicily, is included in the Italian province and circondario of Trapani. It is of volcanic origin, and its area is estimated at 58 square miles. Its principal sum- mit reaches a height of 2440 feet. Hot sulphur springs occur in various places, and there is a small salt-lake of somewhat high temperature; but there is a lack of fresh water. The principal town, Oppidolo or Pantellaria, on the north-west, lies round a port protected by two redoubts and a citadel now used asa prison. Trade is carried on with Algeria, Tunis, and Malta. From 131 vessels (12,917 tons) in 1863 the

movement of the port had by 1880 in- creased to 923 vessels (83,524 tons). In 1881 the popula- tion of the town was 3167, that of the island 7315.

The Phoenician name D348, Zranim, on coins has led Renan to identify the island with the Inarime of the Latin poets. The eap- ture of Cosyra by M. Amilius and Servius Fulvius in the First Punic War was thought worth mentioning in the triumphal fasti, though the Carthaginians recovered possession in the fol- lowing year. In modern times the island has formed a prinel- pality in the hands of the Requesens family. The bastard Italian spoken by the inhabitants shows Arabic influence.

PANTHEISM. See Turis.

PANTHER. See LEoparp.

PANTOGRAPH is an instrument for making a reduced, an enlarged, or an exact copy of a plane figure. One of the simplest forms is represented in fig. 1. Four links of wood or metal are jointed together so as to form a parallelogram ABCS. On two sides BA and BC produced points P and P’ are taken in a line with S, so that the triangles PSA and SP’C are similar, as the sides of the

P Cc x

Fig. 1. Fig. 2.

one are parallel to those of the other. Hence SA/AP= PC/CS. Now the parallelogram ABCS is movable, its angles changing whilst its sides remain unaltered. The above ratio will therefore remain constant, and therefore again the points PSP’ will always remain ina line. At the same time the ratio PS/SP’ does not change, as 1t

fancy of the cultivator, are had recourse to. Self-fertilizing | equals the ratio PA/AB, . If then the point 8 be kept

fixed in a plane, and if P be made to describe any given figure, the point P’ will describe another figure which is similar and similarly situated to the given one with § as centre of similitude, the ratio of similitude being PS: SP’. Thus if the point S be fixed at § fig. 2, and if P be made to describe the figure ABCD, then P’ will describe the similar figure A’B’C’D’. For the geometry of figures which are similar and similarly situated, compare “Similar Figures” under PROJECTION.

For praetieal working there is at P a steel tracer having a fine but not sharp point, and at P’a tracing pencil for drawing the eopy, or sometimes a sharp steel point for at once engraving the eopy on a plate of metal. To obtain the smooth and steady motion of the instrument required for delieate work, a variety of different constructions are in use under various names, but all rest on the above principle that three points are kept in a line with their distances in a constant ratio. It will be noticed if any three points T, Q, Q’ in a line be taken, asin fig. 1, these fulfil the con- ditions required, so that, for instance, T’ might be taken as the fixed point, and Q, Q’ as the tracer and pencil.

PANTOMIME is a term which has been employed in different senses at different times in the history of the drama. Of the Roman pantomimus, a spectacular kind of play in which the functions of the actor were confined to gesticulation and dancing, while occasional music was sung by a chorus or behind the scenes, some account has been given elsewhere (vol. vii. p. 412). To speak of the Western drama only, there is no intrinsic difference between the Roman pantomimus and the modern “ballet of action,” except that the latter is accompanied by instrumental music only, and that the personages appearing in it are not usually masked. The English ‘“dumb-show,” though fulfilling a special purpose of its own, was likewise in the true sense of the word pantomimic. On the other hand, the modern pantomime, as the word is still used, more especially in connexion with the English stage, signifies a dramatic entertainment in which the action is carried on with the help of spectacle, music, and dancing, and in which the performance is partly carried on by certain conventional characters, originally derived from Italian “masked comedy,” itself an adaptation of the fabule Atellane of ancient Italy. Were it not for this addition, it would be difficult to define modern pantomime so as to distinguish it from the mask, and the least

rational of English dramatic species would have to be regarded as essentially identical with another to which in its later development our dramatic literature owes some of its choicest fruit (see Drama, vol. vii.).

As a matter of course, no fixed date can be assigned to the birth of modern pantomime. The contributory elements which it contains had very soon in varying proportions and manifold combinations introduced themselves into the modern drama as it had been called into life by the Renaissance. In Italy the transition was almost imper- ceptible from the pastoral drama to the opera; on the Spanish stage ballets with allegorical figures and military spectacles were known already towards the close of the 16th century; in France ballets were introduced in the days of Mary de' Medici, and the popularity of the opera was fully established in the earlier part of the reign of Louis XIV. Meanwhile, in the previous century the improvised Italian comedy (commedia dell' arte) had crossed the Alps with its merry company of characters, partly borrowed from masked comedy, though also largely corresponding to the favourite types of regular comedy both ancient and modern, and including Pantalone, with Arlecchino, among other varieties of zanni.1 Readers of Molitre are aware of the influence of the Italian

ee

'Whether the traditional costume of the ancient Roman mimi— the centunculus or variegated harlequin's jacket, the shaven head, the Sooty face, and the unshod feet—had before this been known among the provincials, may be left undecided.

players upon the progress of French comedy, and upon the works of its incomparable master. In other coun- tries, where the favourite types of Italian popular comedy had been less generally seen or were unknown, popular comic figures such as the English fools and clowns, the German Hanswurst, or the Dutch Pickelhering, were ready to renew themselves in any and every fashion which preserved to them the gross salt favoured by their patrons. Indeed in Germany, where the term pantomime was not used, a rude form of dramatic buffoonery, corresponding to the coarser sides of the modern English species so-called, long flourished, and threw back for

centuries the progress of the regular drama. After being at last suppressed, it found a commendable substitute in the modern Zauberposse, the more genial Vienna counterpart of the Paris féerve.

In England, where the mask was only quite exceptionally revived after the Restoration, the love of spectacle and other frivolous allurements was at first mainly met by the various forms of dramatic entertainment which went by the name of “opera.” In the preface to Albion and Albanius (1685), Dryden gives a definition of opera which would fairly apply to modern extravaganza, or to modern panto- mime with the harlequinade left out. . Character-dancing was, however, at the same time largely introduced into regular comedy; and, as the theatres vied with one another in seeking quocunque modo to gain the favour of the public, the English stage was fully prepared for the innovation which awaited it. Curiously enough, the long-lived but cumbrous growth called pantomime in England owes its immediate origin to the beginnings of a dramatic species which has artistically furnished congenial delight to nearly two centuries of Frenchmen. Of the early history of vaudeville it must here suffice to say that the unprivileged actors at the fairs, who had borrowed some of the favourite character-types of Italian popular comedy, after eluding prohibitions against the use by them of dialogue and song, were at last allowed to set up a comic opera of their own. About the second quarter of the 18th century, before these performers were incorporated with the Italians, the light kind of dramatic entertainment combining pantomime proper with dialogue and song enjoyed high favour with the French and their visitors during this period of peace. The vaudeville was cultivated by Le Sage and other writers of mark, though it did not conquer an enduring place in dramatic literature till rather later, when it had, moreover, been completely nationalized by the extension of the Italian types.

It was this popular species of entertainment which, under the name of pantomime, was transplanted to England before in France it had attained to any fixed form, or could claim for its productions any place in dramatic literature. Colley Cibber mentions as the first example, followed by “that Succession of monstrous Medlies,” a piece on the story of Mars and Venus, which was still in dumb-show ; for he describes it as “form’d into a connected Presentation of Dances in Character, wherein the Passions were

so happily expressed, and the whole Story so intelligibly told, by a mute Narration of Gesture only, that even thinking Spec- tators allow'd it both a pleasing and a rational Entertain- ment." There is nothing to show that Harlequin and his companions figured in this piece. Geneste, who has no record of it, dates the period when such entertainments first came into vogue in England about 1723. In that year the pantomime of Harlequin Dr Faustus had been produced at Drury Lane,—its author being John Thurmond, a dancing master, who afterwards (in 1727) published a grotesque entertainment called The Miser, or Wagner and Abericock (a copy of this is in the Dyce Library). Hereupon, in December 1723, John Rich (1681-1781), then lessee of the theatre in Lincoln's Inn

Fields, produced there as a rival pantomime The Necro- mancer, or History of Dr Faustus, no doubt, says Geneste, "gotten up with superior splendour." He had as early as 1717 been connected with the production of a piece called Harlequin Executed, and there seem traces of similar enter- tainments as far back as the year 1700. But it was the inspiriting influence of French example, and the keen rivalry between the London houses, which in 1723 really established pantomime on the English stage. Rich was at the time fighting a difficult battle against Drury Lane, and his pantomimes at Lincoln's Inn Fields, and after- wards at Covent Garden, were extraordinarily successful. He was himself an inimitable harlequin, and from Garrick's lines in his honour it appears that his acting consisted of "frolic gestures" without words. The favourite Drury Lane harlequin was Pinkethman (Pope's "noor Pinky"); readers of The Tatler (No. 188) will remember the ironical nicety with which his merits are weighed against those of his competitor Bullock at the other house. Colley Cibber, when described by Pope as "mounting the wind on grinning dragons," briskly denied having in his own person or otherwise encouraged such

fooleries ; in his Apology, however, he enters into an

elaborate defence of himself for having allowed himself to be forced into countenancing the " gin-shops of the stage," pleading that he was justified by necessity, as Henry IV. was in changing his religion. Another butt of Pope's, Lewis Theobald, was himself the author of more than one

pantomime ; their titles already run in the familiar fashion, e.g. A Dramatick Entertainment, call'd Harlequin a Sorcerer, with the loves of Pluto and Proserpine (1725; the " book of the words," as it may be called, is in the Dyce Library). In another early pantomime (also in the Dyce Library) called Perseus and Andromeda, with the Rape of Colombine, or The Flying Lovers, there are five " inter- ludes, three serious and two comic." This is precisely in the manner of Fielding's dramatic squib against panto- inimes, Z'umble-down Dick, or Phaeton in the Suds, Arst acted in 1744, and ironically dedicated to "Mr John Lun," the name that Rich chose to assume as harlequin. It is a capital bit of burlesque, which seems to have been directly suggested by Pritchard's Fall of Phaeton, produced in 1736. —

There seems no need to pursue further the history of English pantomime. "Things of this nature are above criticism," as Mr Machine the " composer" of Phaeton says in Fielding's piece. The attempt was made more than once to free the stage from the incubus of entertainments to which the public persisted in flocking; in vain Colley Cibber at first laid down the rule of never giving a pantomime together with a good play; in vain his son Theophilus after him advised the return of part of the entrance money to those who would leave the house before the pantomime began. "It may be questioned," says the chronicler, "if there was a demand for the return of £20 in ten years." Pantomime carried everything before it when there were several theatres in London, and a dearth of high dramatic talent prevailed in all; and, allowing for occasional counter-attractions of a not very dissimilar nature, pantomime continued to flourish after the Licensing Act of 1737 had restricted the number of London play- houses, and after Garrick's star had risen on the theatrical horizon. He was himself obliged to satisfy the public appetite, and to disoblige the admirers of his art, in defer- to the drama's most imperious patrons—the public at arge.

It should be noted that in France an attempt was made by Noverr:z (q.v.) to restore pantomime proper to the stage as an independent species, by treating mythological subjects

course could not prove permanently successful, met in England also with great applause. In an anonymous tract of the year 1789 in the Dyce Library,

attributed by Dyce to Archdeacon Nares (the author of the Glossary), Noverre's pantomime or ballet Cupid and Psyche is commended as of very extraordinary merit in the choice and execution of the subject. Itseems to have been without words. The writer of the tract states that " very lately the serious pantomime has made a new advance in this country, and has gained establishment in an English theatre ;" but he leaves it an open question whether the grand ballet of J/ledea and Jason (apparently produced a few years earlier, for a burlesque on the subject came out in 1781) was the first complete performance of the kind produced in England. He also notes The Death of Captain Cook, adapted from the Parisian stage, as possessing considerable dramatic merit, and exhibiting "a pleasing picture of savage customs and manners." To conclude, the chief difference between the earlier and later forms of English pantomime seems to lie in the fact that in the earlier Harlequin pervaded the action, appearing in the comic scenes which alternated throughout the piece with the serious which formed the backbone of the story. Columbine (originally in Italian comedy Harlequin's daughter) was generally a village maiden courted by her adventurous lover, whom village constables pursued, thus performing the laborious part of the policeman of the modern harlequinade. The

brilliant scenic effects were of course accumulated, instead

of upon the transformation scene, upon the last scene of all, which in modern pantomime follows upon the shadowy chase of the characters called the radly. The commanding influence of the clown, to whom pantaloon is attached as friend, flatterer, and foil, seems toabe of comparatively modern growth; the most famous of his craft was undoubtedly Joseph Grimaldi (1779-1837), of whom Charles Dickens in his youth edited a biography. His memory, is above all connected with the famous pantomime of Mother Goose, produced at Covent Garden in 1806. It boots not to enumerate favourites of later days; the type of Christmas pantomime cherished by a generation now passing away has been preserved from oblivion in Thackeray's Sketches and Travels in London. The species still maintains its hold over sections of the grown-up public, and, though now only cultivated in a few of the leading London theatres, appears at Christmas 1883-84, according to professional statistics, to have multiplied itself in the capital alone by thirteen examples.

See Geneste, Account of the English Stage, especially vol. iil; Dibdin, Complete History of the Stage, especially vols. ii., iv., and V.; Apology for the Life of Colley Cibber; Fitzgerald, Life of Garrick; Prolss, Dramaturgie. (A. W. W.)

PANYASIS, of Halicarnassus, a poet of the early half of the 5th century B.c. He was a near relation of the historian Herodotus. According to some his father Polyarchus was brother of Herodotus's father Lyxes; according to others, Rhceo or Dryo, the mother of Herodotus, was a sister of Panyasis. He led a revival of the old Ionian epic poetry, and his younger contemporary Antimachus continued the movement. Only insignificant fragments of his works are preserved. He wrote a Hera cleas, in which the whole of the Heracles-myths were embraced in 14 books (9000 lines), and another poem 10 elegiacs, 7000 lines long, called "Iwvxé, in which he related the story of the Ionic settlements in Asia Minor and the exploits of Codrus and Neleus. Though not much thought of in his own time, he is praised by later critics. He was slain by Lygdamis, tyrant of Haliearnassus.

PAOLI, Pasquatz pr (1725-1807), generalissimo of Corsica, was the son of Giacinto Paoli, a Corsican patriot,

seriously in artificial ballets. This attempt, which of and his mother was descended from the old family of the

Caporali. He was born in the village of La Stretta in thé district of Rostino, 25th April 1725. After the hopes of the Corsicans were overthrown by the French in 1738, he accompanied. his father to Naples, where he entered the military college. In an expedition against Calabrian bandits he greatly distinguished himself, and when in 1755 he returned to Corsica he had acquired so high a reputation that he was chosen generalissimo in a full assembly of the people. His refusal to accept Matra for a colleague, led the latter to take advantage of the dissatisfaction of some influential Corsicans to stir up an insurrection. With the aid of the Genoese, Matra for a time made a formidable stand, but after his death in pattle Paoli turned his arms against the Genoese with such success that in 1761 they proposed terms of peace. As Paoli would consent to nothing less than the com- plete

independence of Corsica, the Genoese, despairing of their ability to establish a hold on the island, sold it in 1768 to France. The French effected a landing in 1769 with 22,000 men under Count Vaux, and after stubborn and prolonged resistance Paoli was totally defeated, and, barely succeeding in cutting his way through the enemy, escaped on board an English frigate and went to England. His rule in Corsica, notwithstanding the distraction of the continual struggle to maintain its independence, had been marked by the introduction of many important reforms, such as the remodelling of the laws, the establishment of permanent courts, the regulation . of the coinage, and the furtherance of various measures for the encouragement of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce. At the instance of the duke of Grafton, prime minister of England, Paoli received from the English Government a pension of £1200 a year. He came to be on intimate terms with Dr Samuel Johnson, to whom he was introduced by Boswell. When, after the French Revolu-

tion, Corsica was numbered among the departments of France, Paoli agreed to return to Corsica as lieutenant- general and governor of the department ; but, the excesses of the Convention having alienated his sympathies, he, with the help of Great Britain, organized a revolt, and in 1793 was elected generalissimo and president of the council of government at Corte. Despairing, however, of maintaining the independence of the island, he in 1795 agreed to its union with Great Britain, and on George ITI. being declared king returned to England. He died near London in February 1807. Clemente, elder brother of Pasquale Paoli, also distinguished himself in the struggles of Corsica against the Genoese. Subsequently he retired to a convent at Vallambrosa, but at the end of twenty years returned to Corsica, and died there in 1793.

See Boswell’s Life of Johnson and his Account of Corsica, 1768; Review of the Conduct of Pascal Paoli, 1770; Lives of Paoli, by Arrighi (Paris, 1843), Klose (Brunswick, 1853), Bartoli (Ajaccio, 1867), and Oria (Genoa, 1869).

PAOLO, Fra. See Sarrt.

PAOLO VERONESE. See VERONESE.

PAPA, a large country-town of Hungary, in the district of Veszprim, lies on the Raab and Steinamanger Railway, 75 miles to the west of Pesth. It is the seat of a fine chateau and park of the Eszterhazy family, by whom the handsome Roman Catholic church, lined with red marble, was built in 1778. It also contains a Protestant church, a good Protestant school established about 1530, a Roman Catholic gymnasium, and three convents. A quaint one- storied edifice is shown as the house of Matthew Corvinus. The chief industries are weaving, wine-growing, and the manufacture of paper and stoneware. The population in 1880 was 14,654.

PAPACY. See Pore and PopEpom.

PAPAL STATES. See Staves of THE CHURCH.

PAPER

a origin and early history of paper as a writing material are involved in much obscurity. The art of making it from fibrous matter, and, among other sub- stances, from the wool of the cotton plant, reduced to a pulp, appears to have been practised by the Chinese ata very | distant period. Different writers have traced it back to the 2d century z.c. But however remote its age may have been in eastern Asia, cotton paper first became available for the rest of the world at the beginning of the 8th century, when the Arabs captured Samarkand (704 a.p.), and there learnt its use. The manufacture was taken up by them in that city, and rapidly spread through all parts of their empire. From the large quantities which were produced at Damascus, it obtained one ofthe titles, charta Damascena, by which it was known in the Middle Ages. The extent to which it was adopted for literary purposes is proved by the comparatively large number of early Arabic MSS. on paper which have come down to us, dating from the 9th

century.

} 1A few of the earliest dated examples may be instanced. The Gharibu l-Hadith, a treatise on the rare and curious words in the sayings of Mohammed and his companions, written in the year 866, is probably one of the oldest paper MSS. in existence (Pal. Soc., Orient. Ser., pl. 6). It is preserved in the University ‘Library of Leyden. A treatise by an Arabian

physician on the nourishment of the different members of the body, of the year 960, is the oldest dated Arabic MS. on paper in the British Museum (Or. MS. 2600; Pal. Soc., pl. 96). The Bodleian Library possesses a MS. of the Diwdinw ’1-Adab, a grammatical work of 974 a.D., of particular interest as having been written at Samarkand on paper presumably made at that seat of the first Arab manufacture (Pal. Soc., pl. 60). Other early examples are a volume of poems written at Baghdad, 990 a.D., now at Leipsic, and the Gospel of St Luke, 993 a.D., in the Vatican Library (Pal.

With regard to the introduction of paper into Europe, it naturally first made its appearance in those countries more immediately in contact with the Oriental world. Besides receiving the names of charta and papyrus, transferred to it from the Egyptian writing material manufactured from

| the papyrus plant (see Papyrus), cotton paper was known

in the Middle Ages as charta bombycina, gossypina, cuttuned, aylina, Damascena, and serica. The last title seems to have been derived from its glossy and silken appearance. It was probably first brought into Greece through trade with Asia, and from thence transmitted to neighbouring countries. Theophilus presbyter, writing in the 12th century (Schedula diversarum artvum, i, 23), refers to it under the name of Greek parchment —“ tolle pergamenam Grecam, que fit ex lana ligni” In the 10th century bambacinum was used at Rome. There is also a record of the use of paper by the empress Irene at the end of the 11th or beginning of the 12th century, in her rules for the nuns of Constantinople. It does not appear, however, to have been very extensively used in Greece before the middle of the 13th century, for, with one doubtful excep- tion, there are no extant Greek MSS. on paper which bear date prior to that period.

The manufacture of paper in Europe was first established by the Moors in Spain, the headquarters of the industry being Xativa, Valencia, and Toledo. But on the fall of ee es SS ee

Soc., pls. 7, 21). In the great collection of Syriac MSS. which were obtained from the Nitrian desert in Egypt, and are now in the British Museum, there are many volumes written on cotton paper of the 10th century. The two oldest dated examples, however, are not earlier than 1075 and 1084 .p.

the Moorish power the manufacture, passing into the hands of the less skilled Christians, declined in the quality of its production. In Italy also the art of paper-making was no doubt in the first place established through the Arab occupation of Sicily. But the paper which was made both there and in Spain, it must be remembered, was in the first instance cotton paper. In the laws of Alphonso of 1263 it is referred to as cloth parchment, a term which well describes the thick material made from cotton. As, however, the industry was pushed north, into districts where cotton was not to be found as a natural growth or was not imported, other substances had to be pressed into the service. Hence by degrees arose the practice of mixing rags, in the first instance no doubt of woollen fabrics, with the raw material. The gradual substitution of linen, in countries where it was more abundant or where it was the only suitable material at hand, was a natural step in the progress of the manufacture.

The first mention of rag paper occurs in the tract of Peter, abbot of Cluny (1122-50 a.p.), adversus Judzos, cap. 5, where, among the various kinds of books, he refers to such as are written on material made “ex rasuris veterum pannorum.” At this early period woollen cloth is probably intended. Linen paper was first made in the 14th century ; but in the first half of that century it is probable that woollen fabrics still entered largely into the component parts of the pulp—a fact which, however, can only be proved in individual instances by aid of the micro- scope. This being the case, it is of less practical advantage to try to ascertain an exact date for the first use of linen in paper-making than to define the line of demarcation between the two classes of paper, viz., that made in the Oriental fashion without water-marks, and that in which these marks are seen. The period when this latter kind of paper came into existence lies in the first years of the 14th century, when paper-making at length became a veritable European industry. Cotton paper of the Oriental pattern, it is true, is still found here and there in use some time after the manufacture of the water-marked material had begun, but the instances which have survived are few and are mostly confined to the south of Europe.

A few words may here be said respecting the extant examples of cotton paper MSS. written in European countries. Several which have been quoted by former writers as early instances have proved, on more recent examination, to be nothing but vellum. The ancient fragments of the Gospel of St Mark, preserved at Venice, which were stated by Maffei to be of cotton paper, by Montfaucon of papyrus, and by the Benedictines of bark, are in fact written on skin. The oldest document on cotton paper is a deed of King Roger of Sicily, of the year 1102; and there are others of Sicilian kings, of the 12th century. The oldest known imperial deed on the same material is a charter of Frederick II. to the nuns of Goess in Styria, of the year 1228, now at Vienna. In 1231, however, the same emperor forbade further use of paper for official documents, which were in future to be inscribed on vellum. In Venice the Liber plegiorum, the entries in which begin with the year 1223, is made of rough cotton paper; and similarly the registers of the Council of Ten, beginning in 1325, and the register of the emperor Henry VII. (1308- 13) preserved at Turin, are also written on a like sub- stance. In the British Museum there is an older example ina MS. (Arundel 268) which contains some astronomical treatises written on an excellent paper in an Italian hand of the first half of the 13th century. The letters addressed from Castile to the English king, Edward L, in 1279 and following years (Pauli in Bericht. Berl. Akad., 1854) are instances of Spanish-made paper ; and other specimens in existence prove that in this latter country a rough kind of

~workmen.

PAPER

charta bombycina was manufactured to a comparatively late date.

In Italy the first place which appears to have become a great centre of the paper-making industry was Fabriano in the marquisate of Ancona, which rose into importance on the decline of the manufacture in Spain. The jurist Bartolo, in his treatise De insigniis et armis, refers to the excellent paper made there in the middle of the 14th century, an encomium which will be supported by those ‘who have had occasion to examine the extant MSS. of Italian paper of that period, which even now excites admiration for its good quality. In 1340 a factory was established at Padua; another arose later at

Treviso 5 and others followed in the territories of Florence, Bologna, Parma, Milan, Venice, and other districts. From the line of factories of northern Italy the wants of southern Germany were supplied as late as the 15th century, As an instance the case of Gérlitz has been cited, which drew its paper from Milan and Venice for the half century between 1376 and 1426. But in Germany also factories were rapidly founded. The earliest are said to have been set up between Cologne and Mainz, and in Mainz itself about the year 1320. At Nuremberg Ulman Stromer established a mill in 1390, with the aid of Italian Other places of early manufacture were Ratisbon and Augsburg. Western Germany, as well as the Netherlands and England, is said to have obtained paper at first from France and Burgundy through the markets of Bruges, Antwerp, and Cologne. France owed the establishment of her first paper-mills to Spain, whence we are told the art of paper-making was introduced, as early as the year 1189, into the district of Hérault. The French paper of this early date was.of course of cotton. At a later period, in 1406, among the accounts of the church of Troyes, such mills appear as molins @ toile. The develop- ment of the trade in France must have been very rapid, for, as we have already noticed, that country was soon in a position to supply her neighbours as well as to provide for her own wants. And with the progress of manufac ture in France that of the Netherlands also grew.

A study of the various water-marks has yielded some results in tracing the different channels in which the paper trade of different countries flowed; but a thorough and systematic collection and classification of them has yet to be accomplished. Experience also of the different kinds of paper, and a knowledge of the water-marks, aid the student in fixing nearly exact periods to undated docu- ments. Rag paper of the 14th century may generally be recognized by its firm texture, its stoutness, and the large size of its wires. The water-marks are usually simple in design ; and, being the result of the impress of thick wires, they are therefore strongly marked. In the course of the 15th century the texture gradually becomes finer and the water-marks more elaborate. While the old sub- jects of the latter are still continued in use, they are more neatly outlined, and, particularly in Italian paper, they are frequently enclosed in circles. The practice of inserting the full name of the maker in the water-mark came into fashion in the course of the 16th century. The variety of subjects of water-marks is most extensive. Animals,

birds, fishes, heads, flowers, domestic and warlike imple- ments, armorial bearings, &c., are found from the earliest times. Some of these, such as armorial bearings, and national, provincial, or personal cognizances, as the imperial crown, the crossed keys, or the cardinal's hat, can be attributed to particular countries or districts; and the wide dissemination of the paper bearing these marks in different countries serves to prove how large and inter- national was the paper trade in the 14th and 15th centuries.

]

Pee Pe

In the second half of the 14th century the use of paper for all literary purposes had become well established in all western Europe; and in the course of the 15th century it gradually superseded vellum. In MSS. of this latter period it is not unusual to find a mixture of vellum and paper, a vellum sheet forming the outside leaves of a quire while the rest are of paper.

With regard to the early use of paper in England, there is evidence that quite at the beginning of the 14th century it was a not uncommon material, particularly for registers and accounts. Under the year 1310, the records of Merton College, Oxford, show that paper was purchased "pro registro," which Prof. Rogers (Hist. Agricul. and Prices, i. p. 644) is of opinion was probably cotton paper of the same character as that of the Bordeaux customs register in the Public Record Office, which date from the first year of Edward II. The college register referred to, which was probably used for entering the books that the fellows borrowed from the library, has perished. There is, however, in the British Museum a paper MS. (Add. 31,223), written in England, of even earlier date than the one recorded in the Merton archives. This is a register of the hustings court of Lyme Regis, the entries in which commence in the year 1309. The material is cotton paper, with apparently an admixture of rag, the threads of which are visible, imbedded in the pulp—similar to the kind which was used in Spain. It may indeed have been imported direct from that country or from Bordeaux ; and a seaport town on the south coast of England is exactly the place where such early relics might be looked for. Professor Rogers also mentions an early specimen of paper made from rag in the archives of Merton College, on

which is written a bill of the year 1332; and some leaves of water-marked paper of 1333 exist in the Harleian collec- tion. Ofa date only a few years later is the first of the registers of the King's Hall at Cambridge, a series of which, on paper, are preserved in the library of Trinity College. Of the middle of the 14th century also are many of the municipal books and records still to be found among the archives of ancient cities and towns. The knowledge, however, which we have of the history of paper- making in England is extremely scanty. The first maker whose name is known is one Tate, who is said to have set up a mill in Hertford early in the 16th century; and a German named Spielman had works at Dartford in 1588. But it is incredible that no paper was made in the country before the time of the Tudors. No doubt at first it was imported. But the comparatively cheap rates at which it was sold in the 15th century in inland towns, as well as in those nearer the coast, seem to afford ground for assum- ing that there was at that time a native industry in this commodity, and that it was not altogether imported.

As far as the prices have been observed at which different kinds of paper were sold in England in the early period of its introduction, it has been found that in 1355-56 the price of a quire of small folio paper was 5d., both in Oxford and London. In the 15th century the average price seems to have ranged from 3d. to 4d. for the quire, and from 3s. 4d. to 4s. for the ream. At the beginning of the 16th century thc price fell to 2d. or 3d. the quire, and to 3s, or 3s. 6d. the ream; but in the second half of the century, owing to the debasement of the coinage, it rose, in common with all other commodities, to nearly 4d. the quire, and to rather more than 5s. the ream. The relatively higher price of the ream in this last period, as compared with that of the quire, seems to imply a more extensive use of the material which enabled the trader to dispose of broken bulk more quickly than formerly, and So to sell by the quire at a comparatively cheap rate.

Brown paper appears in entries of 1570-71, and was

sold in bundles at 2s. to 2s. 4d. Blotting paper is appar- ently of even earlier date, being mentioned under the year 1465. It was a coarse, grey, unsized paper, fragments of which have been found among the leaves of 15th

century accounts, where it had been left after being used for blotting. See Gerardi Meerman et doctorum virorum ad eum Epistole atquc Observationes de Chartz vulgaris sew lince origine, Hague, 1767 ; G. F. Wehrs, Yom Papicr, Halle, 1789; M. Koops, Historical Account of the substances used to describe events and to convey ideas, from the carliest date to the Invention of Paper (London, 1801), in great part repeating Wehrs —the book is printed on paper manufac- tured from straw ; Ersch and Gruber, Allgem. Encyklopddie, art. “Papier,” Leipsic, 1888; Sotzmann, “Ueber die dltere Papier- fabrikation,” in Serapewm, Leipsic, 1846; W. Wattenbach, Das Schriftwesen im Mittelalter, Leipsic, 1875, pp. 114-123; J. E. T. Rogers, History of Agriculture and Prices in England, Oxtord, 1866-82, passim. (EB. M. T.)

MANUFACTURE OF PAPER.

Paper is a thin tissue composed of vegetable fibres (rarely of woollen fibres), resulting from their deposition on wire- cloth while suspended in water. At first it was entirely made by hand, but the invention in 1798 of the paper machine by Louis Robert, a clerk in the employment of Messrs Didot, of the celebrated Essonnes paper-mills, near Paris, gave a new impetus to the industry. The invention was introduced into England through the agency of Messrs Fourdrinier, who employed Bryan Donkin, the engineer, to assist in working it out; but, although they expended a large fortune in developing the invention, their enterprise resulted only in bankruptcy. Their first paper machine was erected in 1804 at Frogmoor Mill, near Boxmoor, Herts. In the United States it was not till 1820 that such a machine was started for the first time by Messrs T. Gilpin & Co., on the Brandywine. Since that period, machine-made paper has gradually supplanted that made by hand for all except special purposes, and has been brought to a high state of perfection by subsequent im- provements in the machinery.

Paper may be divided into three main classes :—writing paper, printing paper, and wrapping paper. The staple of which writing and printing paper is made is, in Britain, rags and esparto; in America a considerable quantity of wood pulp is used. The staple of wrapping papers is old ropes and in some cases jute. The best writing and print- ing papers are still made, whether by hand or by machine, from rags.

Manufacture of Paper from Rags.—The first process is the cutting and sorting of the rags, which is invariably done by women. The rag-cutter stands behind a knife about 14 inches long set in an oblique position in a table before her; the rags are cut into pieces about the size of the hand, and the linen pieces separated from the cotton, the various qualities being put into different receptacles. After being cut they are subjected to the action of the willow and duster, which knocks the loose dust off. The willow is composed of two conical cylinders, inside of which iron spikes project. In_ the interior of these cylinders an iron drum, also provided with spikes, revolves at about 300 revolutions per minute. The rags are fed into the first cylinder by a travelling felt, and dashed through from the one to the other by the action of the revolving drum, and from the second cylinder thrown for- ward into the duster. This consists of a large rectangular wooden case, in the interior of which an iron cage, covered with coarse wirecloth, revolves slowly at right angles to the willow. This cage is set at a slight incline, so that the rags which are thrown into it by the willow at one end slowly pass to the other, while the dust, &c., which has been disengaged by the action of the willow, falls through the wirecloth, and the dusted rags pass out at the other end, now ready for the boiler. The boiler is of different

forms, revolving or stationary. The most usual is stationary. It consists of an upright cylinder of cast or malleable iron (fig. 1), about 8 feet in diameter by 6 feet deep, and fitted with a perforated false bottom, on which the rags rest. The boiler is further fitted with a filling door A at the top, and an emptying door B below. After being

Fia. 1.—Section of Rag-Boiler.

charged with rags, it is filled to about half its height with water ; a sufficient quantity of caustic soda, varying accord- ing to the nature of the rags, is introduced ; the door is then shut, and steam is admitted by a small pipe C which is con- tained in, and communicates at the foot with, a larger pipe D and causes a constant circulation of hot liquid, which is dispersed all over the boiler by striking against a hood E at the top. This is technically known as the “ vomit.” The rags are boiled in this solution of caustic soda for ten to twelve hours, when the steam is turned off and the liquid is discharged by

the pipe G. After a subsequent washing with cold water in the boiler the lower door is opened and the boiled rags withdrawn into small trucks, and picked by women to remove impurities, such as india-rubber, &c.

The rags are now submitted to the action of the break- ing engine (figs. 2 and 3), This is an oblong trough with

rounded ends, and may be about 6 feet wide and 12 feet long by about 2 feet in depth, but the size varies greatly. It is partially divided in the centre by the midfeather A, and provided with a heavy iron roll B, fitted with knives technically called bars, which revolves at a high speed on the plate C, also furnished with knives. The engine is half filled with water and packed with the boiled rags.

PA? ME

Water is introduced by the valve D, and is withdrawh' by the washer E. The washer consists of a drum about 3 feet in diameter and 18 inches broad, covered with fine wire-cloth, and fitted inside with buckets shown by the dotted lines G. It is partially immersed in the pulp, and as it revolves discharges the water by the centre down the

aa

tl

i=

Pr] TTT TTT

Ul a

Fia. 3.—Breaking Engine—Horizontal Section.

shoot H. The rags are allowed to remain in this washer, according to their cleanness, from one to two hours, and then the solution of chloride of lime by which they are bleached is introduced. After running mixed with this in the engine from one to two hours, the pulp is run down into large stone chests, where it is allowed to lie for twenty-four hours till it becomes

perfectly white; it is then drained and pressed to remove the remaining bleach- ing solution as far as possible.

The bleached pulp is now removed to the beating engine, which differs but little from the washing engine except that in the roll of the beater there are three bars to the bunch, while in the washer there are only two to the bunch. Here the pulp is furnished in the engine with water as before, and washed till it is free from chloride of lime, or this may be neutralized by the use of a sulphite or hyposulphite of soda. The pulp is then submitted to the action of the beater roll for from four to six hours, the circular knives being allowed to revolve very near the plate, so as to draw out the fibres into a very fine state, while preserving their strength as far as possible. While the operation of “ beating” is being proceeded with, the loading material, consisting of china clay or pearl white, is added. This is by no means to be viewed entirely as an adulteration, as it too generally is. No doubt toa certain extent it weakens the paper, but it is not added in hand-made papers, in which great strength is required… In writing papers for ordinary purposes, however, and in printing papers, the addition of mineral matter in modera- tion is of positive advantage, as it closes up the pores of the fibres and enables the paper to take a much better finish than it would otherwise do.

The next process is the sizing, to which all papers for writing and most of those for printing purposes are sub- jected. Sizing consists in the deposition on the fibres of a substance which is comparatively waterproof, and for engine sizing a mixture of resin soap treated with alum 1s employed. The resin soap is formed by dissolving resin in carbonate or caustic soda, allowing the mixture to cool, when the soap floats on the surface, and the mother-liquor, containing the excess of alkali, is run off. It is of con siderable importance to get rid of this mother-liquor before using the soap, as it is of no use, and takes alum to neutralize it. The soap is now dissolved in water, and, In many mills where starch is used for stiffening purposes,

mixed with the starch. This mixture is put into the | a considerable extent for the superiority of the American beating engine in which the pulp is circulating, and when | papers.! . it is thoroughly incorporated with the pulp the solution of After the pulp is prepared in the beating engine it is alum or

sulphate of alumina is added. This forms a finely | run into the chests of the paper machine (figs. 4 and 5). divided precipitate of resinate of alumina on the fibres. | These chests A are fitted with agitators, and from them The pulp, after the sizing material is thoroughly incorpor- | the pulp is pumped into the supply-box B, which com- ated with it, is now ready for colouring. Even to produce municates with the sand-traps C by means of a regulating a pure white, colour must be added to the pulp. In| cock. Along with the pulp a certain amount of water is general, for white papers, either cochineal and ultramarine | allowed to flow into the sand-trap, so as to thin it down blue are employed, or magenta and aniline blue. In all | sufficiently; in most cases the save-all water (see below) is cases where permanence of colour is of importance, the | employed for this purpose. The pulp flows backward and former are to be preferred. For blue papers, ultramarine | forward here in a shallow stream, so as to deposit any is generally used. Tinted papers are, as a rule, pro- | heavy impurities which it may contain. After issuing from duced by the use of aniline colours. Coloured papers are the sand-traps it is delivered on to the strainers, which produced by the use of various pigments. are made in many varieties, the most common being The operation of beating the pulp is of the greatest the revolving strainer D, shown on the plan. This is a importance, and too much care cannot be devoted to it. | rectangular trough into which the pulp flows. In the In America, where the mills are generally driven by | centre of this the strainer, rectangular in form, composed water-power, the pulp is kept for a much longer time in | of four sets of brass plates bolted to a frame in which very

On == the engine than in Great | fine slits are cut, revolves slowly. The size of this is —— |

0

Britain, and this accounts to |! about 7 feet by 2 feet.. The pulp is made to flow from the

- –

oe

PSA

ae ee

V v

rien

th As i

I}

ks q i : Bey

SAK) OC} Hot ie

| iD

c——_ YJ < o)

- i I |

4:6:

| | MA

Can

Fic, 4.—Paper Machine—Vertical Section. outside through the slits to the inside of the strainer by | the water runs off through the meshes of the wire by

means of suction produced by bellows or disks in the | gravitation, and the rest is removed through the suction interior of the plates, and is discharged by the pipe E into | boxes L by the vacuum pumps M. Stretching along a box from which it flows on to the apron F, which is | under the wire from the breast roll to the first suction box placed on the top of the breast roll. The apron is made | is the save-all, a shallow trough into which the water of

a piece of moleskin or india-rubber cloth the full width | which passes through the wire falls. The contents of this of the wire, and prevents the pulp from running away | box flow into a cistern at the back of the machine into down the back of the wire. It covers the wire for 12 to | which the vacuum pumps also discharge their water ; and 18 inches at the beginning. The wire consists of an end- | from this cistern the water is pumped into a service box less sheet of fine wirecloth (about 66 wires per square | and used instead of fresh water for mixing with the pulp inch) which stretches from the breast roll G to the couch | as it flows on to the sand-trap. There is a considerable roll H, returning underneath by the leading rolls I. | saving in this, as the fine fibre, size, &c., contained by Underneath the first portion of the wire are the tube rolls | the water passing through the wire is all in this way « Bad fai rther along are the vacuum boxes L, L. These | “i Another form of beating engine which is finding great favour communicate by pipes with the vacuum pumps M. As | is the Umpherston engine, which differs little from the ordinary the wire revolves in the direction shown in fig. 4 the | beater, except in having, instead of a midfeather, a passage under pulp is allowed to flow from the strainer and spreads itself | the roll by which the pulp circulates. It is claimed for it that one out in a thin film. co vering the surface of the wirecloth. capable of Prepariig 10 cwts. of paper does not occupy more floor It ? ; : : area than an ordinary beater for 3 cwts. The pulp is also said to

Is prevented from flowing over the sides of the wire by | travel more freely, and does not lodge about the corners as im the the deckle straps, endless india-rubber straps N. Part of | ordinary engine.

222

dandy roll, a skeleton roll covered with wirecloth, revolves on the top of the pulp. By means of raised wires on it in the form desired the paper is rendered thinner at these parts and a water-mark is produced. In order to secure regularity in the layer of pulp, as also to increase the strength of the paper, a lateral motion is communicated to the wire by the shake O. The half-dried pulp now passes between the couch rolls, where it receives the first pressure. The under couch roll generally consists of a brass shell fixed by iron rings to a spindle; the top roll may be either similar to the lower one

or made of mahogany, and is always covered with a felt jacket. Pres- sure is applied to the ends of the top roll by means of levers and weights. From these the sheet of partially

stall tg een

a

=

E ee ctr Fe E

A S Qo

ts Rt,

;

Nee tp He Qs

Om mina

be tee asi ernesediuteusiiiecaununtesconessuiuahasuuseasaiameee fi eeneut

pt pn tat EA ep, ey mo OT TT ee one LT pata i

Fia. 5,— Paper Machine—Horizontal Section. bs

to the paper cutter. In cases where the paper is to be sized with gelatin after leaving the machine, it is wound up rough.

A modification of the Fourdrinier machine, suitable for the manufacture of thin papers and those which only require to be smooth on one side, is shown in fig. 6. It consists of an ordinary paper machine as far as the couch rolls A, A. From these the paper is carried backwards on the top of the endless felt B till it comes in contact with the large steam-heated cylinder © at d. Here it adheres to the cylinder, being pressed against it at the same time by the press roll E. The paper then continues round the surface of the cylinder, and is wound up dry on reels at G. The felt washer H is a box filled with

water through which the felt passes as it travels. After this the paper is cut or glazed in the usual way.

PAPER

recovered. Between the first and second suction box the |

dried pulp is carried by endless felts through the first and second press rolls R and §. The press rolls are either made of solid iron, or may with advantage have a brass shell shrunk on. Having been freed by these from a great part of its water, the web of paper is carried over

fi cra (} rt = ae

i} } if

| AAT i ve ial | it \ | Te Hi

| WTA h WW WAH SUR WM

a Ui ia DCs AM i —T 1

the steam-heated cylinders T, T.. The first two cylinders are generally bare, and the heat applied to these is gentle ;

in the case of the others, the paper is kept close to the cylinder by means of endless felts. The web then passes through the intermediate rolls U in a half-dried state, over three more cylinders and the calenders V. These are heavy iron rollers heated by steam internally and. polished externally. Their object is to communicate a gloss to the web of paper. It is then wound up on the reel W, and these reels when filled with paper are removed as required

Eas | @ (MMMM om CT

WN Wi i a li We aD Hi WE VA

} | | |

ll

wi qj ecto = Er ae iio

—F ~ —, a . = i

SS | 6\\ iy Wh] | } i }] | } | i \

i i ne

i

H

H i

iy} iH

i

li] i

At this stage papers which require to be hard-sized, principally the better sorts of writing papers, are sized with gelatin or “tub-sized.” This is done occasionally by passing the sheets separately through a trough contain- ing a strong solution of gelatin, and afterwards hanging them up to dry in the same way as hand-made papers, but in general the paper is sized and dried in the web after leaving the paper machine. For this purpose a sizing and drying machine is used (fig. 7). The web of paper to be sized is shown at A. From this it is passed through a trough B containing a strong solution of gelatin into which a certain amount of alum is introduced; after passing through this by means of the size rolls C, GC, it is passed through the press rolls D, which squeeze out the super fluous size from it, and rewound on a reel at E to allow

the size time to sct. The web is then transferred to the | paper rests, while a current of heated air from pipes under- drying machine at G, and passed over a series of spar | neath ascends through them and is driven against the inner drums H, H at a slow speed. These drums are fitted | surface of the

paper by the fanners K, K, which revolve round their circumference with wooden spars [on which the | at a high speed. The great thing to be studied in this

———

operation is to keep as low a temperature as possible, not | as two hundred of them go to adrier. After being wound above 80° Fahr. There may be any number of these | up at the end of the drier the paperis ready for cutting in drums; the larger the number the lower the temperature | the ordinary way.

at which the paper can be dried. In some mills as many | ‘The ordinary paper cutter (fig, 8) cuts from six to eight

=. =

MMM AOSENS

om hry) We

\ \ Kah Te S— Nga \ SR hans SO HUA ‘ Sh WW f – = Pi aS a \ \

2 ae es

+ ma vl } LOTS, UAT ee 39 = SY

nd

ee —_—§s = -———

Another form of paper cutter which is employed for water-marked papers (see paper machine) is the single- sheet cutter, fig 9. In this cutter only one web of paper is cut at a time, but it can be adjusted to a much

& a »)) oS

webs at once. The webs to be cut may be seen on the drawing at a,a. The webs of paper from these are led between the leading rolls b, 6 through the feeding rolls ¢,¢. These, by means of the change pulley d, are driven at such

a speed that they feed the paper to the revolving knife at the exact speed necessary to give the length of sheet required. After pass- ing the feeding rolls the paper passes on to the slitting knives e, These are circular revolving knives which slit the paper into the width required. From these the webs pass through the drawing rolls f, f tothe revolving knife g, which, coming down with a sheer against the dead knife g’, cuts them ~ crosswise into the required length of sheet. The size of the sheet may be made longer or shorter, by altering the ‘ size of the expanding pulley / and the : change pulley d. After being cut, the “”======= =

sheets of paper are caught by the end- Fic. 8.—Reel Paper Cutter.

less felt ¢ and carried forward to the table k, where they | greater degree of nicety than the revolving cutter. After are arranged by boys. passing through the slitting knives A, which are in all

respects similar to those in the revolving cutter, the paper is carried over the measuring drum C, which, by a crank arrangement DE receives an oscillating motion and can be adjusted to draw the exact quantity of paper forward for the length of sheet required. The paper is kept fast on the drum by the gripper rolls F’, F, arranged so as to rise and fall

ot i ~F i ‘if

Fic, 9.—Single-Sheet Paper Cutter. as the drum oscillates, while the dancing roll B keeps the web ata uniform tension. The paper is cut into sheets by the knife I, connected with cranks and linksG, and supported by the link rods H, H working horizontally with a swinging motion against the dead knife K. At the same time the clamp L holds the web in position. The sheet to be cut may be seen hanging ‘down at the dotted line M. The sheets are then caught by girls and dressed up in the usual way. This cutter requires a great deal of attention, and is only used when extreme accuracy is required.

Calenders.—If it is desired to give the paper a higher gloss than can be done on the calenders of the paper machine, or where, as in the case of papers

sized with gelatin, these must be glazed after leaving the paper machine, it is done by the use either of the plate or roll

aay”

Fic, 10.—Plate Calender,

calender. (1) The plate calender (fig. 10) is composed of a framework A, in which are set two highly polished rolls of solid iron B, B, with a space of about } inch intervening. By means of levers and weights pressure can be applied to the top roll. The paper to be glazed is placed sheet by sheet between copper or zinc plates, till a bundle consider- ably thicker than the space between the rolls is made. This bundle is then passed backward and forward between the rollers, under considerable pressure, and the polished surface of the plates communicates a gloss to the paper.

PAPER

(2) In America a calender of different construction jg employed (fig. 11). In it a perpendicular series of highly polished iron and compressed cotton or paper rolls are placed alternately between frames, and revolve at a high speed. The sheets of paper are one by one introduced by an attendant, who sits in a convenient position near the

top of the calender, under the tapes a, which, running against the roll A, convey the sheet to the next roll B. After passing under the roll A, the paper has a tendency to adhere to the metal surface; this is overcome by a sharp-pointed knife 6 placed against it, so that the sheet is again caught by the next set of tapes, and so on till it completes its course, and comes out at the foot of the calender. Ifa still higher glaze is required, the sheets are passed through a second time. A much larger quantity of paper can be glazed in the same time by one of these calenders than by the so-called plate calender, and ata greatly smaller outlay for wages, but the surface acquired by the paper wants the peculiar gloss communicated to it by the latter, and for the higher grades of paper this still retains its position in Great Britain.

After being cut, and, if necessary, calendered, the paper is sorted, that is to say, it is examined sheet by sheet, and all torn or soiled sheets are taken out.

It is then counted into quires and reams, each quire containing twenty-four sheets, and each ream twenty quires.

Hand-Made Paper.—So far the preparation of pulp, whether for paper making by hand or by machine, is iden- tical, the chief difference being that only the most expensive drawing and writing papers are now manufactured by hand, and for this purpose only the finest qualities of rags are used. The process will be best understood by reference to the drawing (fig. 12). The pulp, after being prepared in the beating engine as above described, is run into large chests from which the vat is supplied. Before reaching this it is strained as on the paper machine. Hand-made paper is made by means of a mould (fig. 13). This consists of a framework of fine wirecloth with a “deckle” or movable frame of wood all round it, to keep the pulp from running off. Nearly all hand-made papers have also a water-mark (W. King in this instance), which is produced by wires representing these letters being raised above the rest of the mould. Hence the paper in these parts is thinner, and the letters can be read on holding the sheet up to the light.

PAPER

The sheet of paper is formed in the following way. The vatman, fig. 12, takes up enough pulp on the mould to fill the deckle. He runs the stuff evenly over the mould from the foreside to the back, throwing back any pulp

which may be superfluous, and then gives the mould the “shake,” a gentle shake both along and across the mould, causing the water to run through the wirecloth while the pulp which forms the sheet of paper stays on the top. The vatman then brings the mould to the stay ; it is placed by the coucher on an inclined elbow, where some more water drains away, and he afterwards turns it over on the

felt, leaving the sheet of paper on the felt. When the

Fic. 13.—Mould.

proper number of sheets of paper, with a felt between each, has been placed in the pile called a “ post,” it is taken to the press, and a great quantity of

the water is pressed out, leaving the sheets of paper sufficiently dry to be handled by the “ layer,” who places them in packs, one sheet above the other, and after being parted sheet from sheet they are re-pressed. After this the paper is hung in a drying loft on cow-hair ropes in spurs of three to five sheets thick until dry. It is then sized by passing the spurs through a strong solution of gelatin contained ina long trough. The

_among these is Esparto (q.v.).1 does not greatly vary from that of rags.

995

In America, papers of great strength are manufactured by machinery, and not much hand-made paper is made.

Manufacture from other Substances than Rags.—Although the better varieties of both writing and printing paper are still manufactured from rags, the supply of these has been found altogether insufficient to supply the increasing demand for paper, and other fibres have to a great extent been substituted for the cheaper classes of paper. First The treatment of esparto On arrival at the mill the grass is sorted ; that is to say, it is spread out in bunches on a table with a wire gauze cover, and these are shaken to remove the dust, while the roots and weeds are removed by picking. This is technically known as dry picking. In some mills this process is done mechanically by aid of a duster, which removes dust and other heavy impurities from the esparto, but it must then be picked in the wet state after boiling. The boiling is done in the same way as rags, but with a larger proportion of caustic soda. Mr Thomas Routledge, the introducer of esparto, specifies 10 per cent. real caustic soda, but with improved forms of boilers such as Roeckner’s or Sinclair’s, operating at 40 to 50 Ib pressure, a considerable saving on this amount of alkali may be effected. The subsequent treat- ment of esparto is similar to that for rags; it is again “wet-picked ” after boiling, then washed and bleached, a much larger quantity of chloride of lime being required than in the case of rags. It can be treated either alone or mixed with rags, and forms a very mellow bulky paper admirably adapted for printing purposes.

A considerable quantity of straw is used both in Britain and in America for paper-making. In general it is mixed either with rags or with esparto, being

of too brittle a nature when bleached to make into paper alone. It is generally dusted after arrival at the mill, in many cases cut into chaff before the boiling operation, so as to allow the soda freer access to the fibres, and boiled under high

| pressure with considerable quantities of caustic soda up to

15 per cent. of real caustic. It is then washed either separately or along with esparto, and bleached in the ordinary way. As at present treated, the yield averaging only 33 to 40 per cent., straw will not come into general use, except in cases where the raw material can be bought on unusually advantageous terms. There is no doubt that, in this case especially, a morérational method of extracting the cellulose than by boiling under high pressure with a large amount of caustic soda is most desirable, for, many of the fibres of the straw being extremely fine, these are to a considerable extent actually dissolved by the soda, and, whereas theoretically straw with 15 per cent. moisture ought to produce 45 per cent. cellulose, by the soda treat- _ ment not more than 33 per cent. are obtained, where a good white colour is desired.

The only other fibre which has seriously threatened to compete with rags or esparto is wood. From the fact that the supply of this raw material is apparently

paper passes along on an endless felt, and is freed from »inexhaustible, a great deal of attention has been paid to

superfluous size by press rolls at the end of the trough. It is then parted again to prevent the sheets from sticking together, and is again dried at a temperature of 70° to 80° Fabr. After being picked and then glazed between plates, it 1s sorted and finished in the same way as other paper, but with much greater care.

It will readily be understood that the expense of manu- facturing paper in this way is very much greater than by machinery ; but the gain in strength, partly owing to the time allowed to the fibres to knit together, and partly to the free expansion permitted them in drying, still maintains

‘methods for reducing it to a fibre capable of being made

into paper. These divide themselves into two—(1) mechanical and (2) chemical treatment. (1) The wood generally selected for this purpose is white pine or poplar. It is cut into slabs of convenient size, which are then pressed against the face of a mill-stone revolving at a high speed, while a flow of water conveys the fibres of wood away as they are separated. They are then sieved according to fineness, collected, and pressed into pulp or half stuff, which is used for admixture in inferior

| papers, or even, in some cases, for making paper. By a Steady demand for this class of paper, and probably 60 |

1 The imports, which in 1863 amounted to 18,000 tons, had risen

to 70 tons per week are made in Great Britain at present. | to 100,000 tons in 1870, and in 1883 reached 206,000 tous.

XVII. -— <9

226

this means of treatment, however, the wood is not split up into its ultimate fibres, but is left with all the incrust- ing matter attached, and the pulp and paper so obtained are only fitted for the commonest purposes. (2) Many efforts have been made with the view of preparing wood chemically, so that the resulting fibre might be introduced into fine papers, and latterly with considerable success. In the earlier processes, patented by Houghton and Sinclair, wood was boiled with about 20 per cent. real caustic soda under a pressure of from 10 to 14 atmospheres. By this means, with certain improvements in detail, dictated by experience, so-called chemical wood pulp is prepared in large quantities on the Continent, and is imported as pulp into England to a considerable extent. In America this process has been extensively adopted. While pulp of very fair quality is prepared in this way suitable for papers where a perfectly white colour is not required, there is no room for doubt that the action of the caustic soda solution at the extreme temperature which a pressure of upwards of 10 atmospheres involves, leads to a certain extent to a degradation and consequent

weakening and browning of the fibres, and a great deal of work has been directed to the surmounting of this difficulty. The result has been a series of patents, all containing the same principle, namely, the treating the wood with a chemical agent which should prevent oxidation and subsequent degradation of the fibres from taking place. Such patents are those of Mitscherlich and Francke (bisulphite of lime), Ekman and Graham

rPaAPrPEE

prepared from wood by all the acid processes is that it is not pure, but a considerable quantity of incrusting matter is left in the fibre, and hence the paper manufactured from it solely is harsh in character and very transparent; to pro- cure a pure cellulose, it must be exhausted in an alkaline solution subsequent to the treatment with acid.

The waste of jute is largely used in the manufacture of coloured papers, but it has not hitherto been found possible to thoroughly bleach this fibre without at the same time destroying its strength.

A long series of experiments, with a view to the intro. duction of bamboo fibre for paper making, has been undertaken by Mr Thomas Routledge, the well-known introducer of esparto, who recommends the employment of the young shoots. It may well be doubted whether the bamboo has any chance as a competitor against the new processes for preparing wood.

A host of other fibres have been tried from time to time, such as dis grass from the north coast of Africa, the leaves of the dwarf palm, sugar-cane refuse, the stalks of the hop plant, nettles, peat, Phormium tenax from New Zealand, with many others (see Dr Hugo Miiller’s Pflanzenfaser), but none with such success as to call for notice here.

Soda Recovery.—In the preparation of esparto, wood, and other raw material for manufacture into

(bisulphite of magnesia). While these all containa common principle, they differ in detail, as to pressure, blowing off of the sulphurous acid gas, &c., but they all present a very marked resemblance to Tilghmann’s expired patent, 1866, No. 2924. The pulp produced by all those processes is of

excellent quality; and, according to the statements of the patentees, it can be prepared at a cost greatly lower than by the soda process. The strength of the fibre is maintained unimpaired even after bleaching, and white paper made solely from such pulp is in every respect superior to that manufactured solely from pulp prepared by boiling with caustic soda. Dr Mitscherlich’s process has been extensively adopted in Germany, and there seems little doubt that these pro- cesses will in time supplant the use of soda in the case of wood. The great objection to them all is that, as they all depend on the use of bisulphite, which, being an acid salt, cannot be worked in an iron boiler, the boiler must be lined with lead; and great difficulty has been encoun- tered in keeping the lead lining of the boiler in repair. This is a difficulty, however, which will probably be over- come with further experience. The objection to cellulose

Gyan

1)

| | r AP’s Y Yy Y : Li

ITITITITELL, ity + Ys

Writing Papers. Book and Drawing Papers.

f

|

“Le

SSS

BESS

SG SS

Fia. 14.—Porion Evaporator.

paper, large quantitics of caustic soda are employed, and, as the resulting liquid after boiling the fibre in canstic soda solution is strongly alkaline and dark-coloured, it is very desirable to keep it out of the rivers. In order to effect this it is in many mills evapo- rated, and the soda it contains recovered, and, after caustiecizing, re-used. Many forms of evaporator have been proposed, and of late years great improvement has been made in their construction. Pro- bably the best form is the Porion evaporator (fig. 14). This consists of an evaporating chamber A, on the floor of which a few inehes of the liquid to be evaporated rest. By the action of fanners B, B re- volving at a high speed and dipping into the liquid, it is thrown up in a fine spray through which the heated gases pass to the chimney. After being concentrated in the evaporating chamber the liquid flows into the incinerating furnaces C,C, where the remaining water is driven off by the heat of the fire D, and the mass afterwards ignited to drive off the carbonaceous matter. A considerable feature in this evaporator is Menzies and Davis's patent smell chamber E, a cham- ber filled with masonry in which the strongly-smelling gases from the incinerating furnace are allowed to remain at a red heat fora short time. After being recovered, the soda, in the form of crude ear- bonate, is lixiviated and re-causticized by boiling with milk of lime. Sizes of Paper.—The following are the ordinary sizes :—

Printing Papers. Cartridge Papers.

Ins. Ins. : Ins. Ins. ce 12h % 15 | Booleea eases sicncoves DS: AGE COB cise canna 16)-x 21 | Fools… on gam 14 ×18? Dale POPs cocacciceonenecaey Ce ee see hs Fee 0 oer 178 ×29} | Demry…0..2… a8 173 × 225 POOIMAP 6.45 ce. ecissea hice LSE LOR | Meta Wan 2 owoee serene 7h O26) Medium |, .2.4..00. 184 «x 90 | Reyal …03.0.28 19 ×24 Double foolscap!. ....06.0..6 16h ae 204 | Baye .ccnten anes $9 OE. | Baa. ocemenen-0 20 ×25 | Super royal…..... 19} x 275 Foolscap and third…..... 13} x 22 {Super royal…..... *, 84% 97 | Super royals…....+. 21 ×27 | Imperial…..... 20 ae Foolscap and half…..... 18) % 242 | Kanperiall i… «0.4 29> x80) | Double pott s.c.2.2. 15 ×25 | Elephant…..... 23 ×28 PIBENOA OM… cence ove 144×184 | Elephant…..... 28 ×28 | Double foolscap….. 1? 2a Lh Se rer 154×19 | Double elephant…. 26440 | Double crown…..... 20 ×30 Dowiblenpast. 2… 006.0000 Fe LG SOR" Atlas eee Sear ae 264×84 | Double demy…..... 224 × 854 LGR MORE. Haters ceeds

«250 164 × 20% | Columibier . 2.06. s.0— 234 × 244 Double large post ……..... 202×383 | Antiquarian……..... 31 ×53

MR OIDOOKS oo. .ccccccceecesecerncanne ane

American Paper Trade,—At the end of 1882 there were in the

United States 1051 paper mills (1004 the previous year). Of this number 1018 are in active operation. These mills are owned and worked by 823 firms or establishments, an inerease of 23 over the previous year. Twenty-three mills were abandoned during 1882, while 17 were destroyed by fire ; 36 were in course of construetion, and 68 new mills went into full work during 1882, This number is composed of a few mills reconstrueted after fire, and 39 new establishments erected during 1882. The mills represent almost every variety of paper and pulp, and have an estimated daily capacity of 300 tons. Altogether there were in 1883 44 more mills in operation than in 1882. At the beginning of 1884 36 new mills

PA P—

EA P 997

British Paper Trade. — The eomparative returns of the | the Board of Trade (Great Britain) for the years 1882 and 1883 amounts and values of the imports and exports published by ; are as follows :— CN eee Eee Imports. Exports. Article, Weight. Value. Weight. Value. 1882 1883. 1882. 1883. 1882. 1883, 1882 ‘1883. _ a Cwts. Cwts. £ £ Cwts, Cwts. & £ Writing and printing papers ……..... 190,089 209,455) 335,621 344,186 | 413,645 445,859 | 1,003,247 | 1,026,617 Miscellaneous papers ……..... ..ceeeee ».| 911,458 952,723 | 872,590 902,514 | 171,302 152,930 301,778 258,017 BOL PAPEL .....seceseee- Bs eaneedont 1,101,547 | 1,162,178 | 1,208,211 | 1,246,700 | 584,947 598,789 | 1,305,025 | 1,284,630 Tons. Tons. Tons, Tons. BUSPATLO, «2.0.2 cc ee cece eee cecee wees eennceresens 181,056 206,558 | 1,282,014 | 1,383,021 ae ace ae Fee OE eee eee eee a al 301,083 401,615 49,352 51,019 526,554 501,035 Ss. S. oon s cat pec aveudevenseenee ve 84,981,120 80,626,560; 821,692 756,616 ne Cwts.

Cwts.

121,607 | 123,038 | 1,169,592 | 1,175,642 were being eonstrueted and may be expeeted to be at work during the year. Every variety of paper is extensively manufactured in the United States with the exception of hand-made, but of late years attention has becn devoted to this also, English plant and labour having been imported for the purpose, and hand-made papers are now regularly produeed in small quantities.

Bibliography.—Herring, Paper and Papermaking; Piette, Manuel de la Pape- terie, 1861; Dropisch, Die Papiermaschine, 1878; G. Planche, L'Jndusirie de la Papeterie, 1853; L. Miiller, Fabrikation des Papiers, 1855, Proteaux, On the Manufacture of Paper and Boards, 1866; Hugo Mtiiller, Pflanzenfaser, 1877 ; C. Hofmann, Afanufacture of Paper, 1873; T. Routledge, Bamboo considered as a Papermaking Material, 1875; Papermakers' Monthly Journal, London ; Paper Trade Journal, New York; Papier-Zeitung, Berlin. (R. C, M.)

PAPER HANGINGS. See Murat Decoration, vol. Bea. p. 38.

PAPHLAGONTIA, in ancient geography, was the name given to a province of Asia Minor, situated on the Euxine Sea, and adjoining Bithynia on the west and Pontus on the east, while towards the south it was separated from Galatia by a range of mountains which may be considered asa prolongation to the east of the Bithynian Olympus. According to Strabo, whose authority is generally followed upon this point, the river Parthenius formed the western limit of the region so-called, and it was bounded on the east by the much more important river Halys. Although the Paphlagonians play scarcely any part in history, they were one of the most ancient nations of Asia Minor, as their name appears in the Homeric catalogue of the allies of Priam during the Trojan War (J1., ii. 851). They are after- wards mentioned by Herodotus among the races reduced to subjection by Croesus, and they sent an important con- tingent to the army of Xerxes in 480 B.c. They seem, however, to have enjoyed a state of at least semi-independ- ence, as Xenophon speaks of them as being governed by a prince of their own, without any reference to the satraps of the neighbouring parts of Asia. The rugged and difficult nature of their country, which is described by Xenophon as containing fertile and beautiful plains, but traversed by lofty ranges of mountains, which could only be crossed by narrow and difficult

passes, doubtless contri- buted to this result. At a later period Paphlagonia passed under the yoke of the Macedonian kings, and we find it after the dcath of Alexander the Great assigned, together with Cappadocia, to Eumenes. It continued, however, to be governed by native princes until it was absorbed by the encroaching power of the neighbouring kingdom of Pontus. The rulers of that dynasty became masters of the greater part of Paphlagonia as early as the reign of Mithradates Hil, (802-266 x.c.), but it was not till that of Pharnaces

(183 B.c.). From this time the whole province was Incorporated with the kingdom of Pontus until the fall of

I. that the important city of Sinope fell into their hands |

the great Mithradates (65 B.c.). In the settlement of Asia |

which followed that event, Pompey united the coast districts of Paphlagonia with the province of Bithynia, but left the interior of the country under one of the native princes, two or three of whom followed in succession until the dynasty became extinct and the whole country was incorporated in the Roman empire. All these petty native rulers appear to have borne the name or surname of Pylemenes, as a token that they claimed descent from the chieftain of that name who figures in the Jéiad as the leader of the Paphlagonians. Under the Roman empire Paphlagonia, with the greater part of Pontus, was united into one province with Bithynia, as we find to have been the case in the time of the younger Pliny; but the name was still retained by geographers, though its boundaries are not distinctly defined by Ptolemy. It reappears as a separate province in the 5th century (Hierocles, Synecd., c, 33).

ike ethnic relations of the Paphlagonians are very uncertain. It seems perhaps most probable that they belonged to the same race with the Cappadocians, who held the adjoining province of Pontus, and who were undoubtedly a Semitic race. Their language, however, would appear from the testimony of Strabo to have been distinct from that of their neighbours. Equally obscure is the relation between the Paphlagonians and the Eneti, or Heneti, who are mentioned in connexion with them in the Homeric catalogue, and who were supposed in the mythical fictions of antiquity to be

the ancestors of the Veneti, who dwelt at the head of the Adriatic. But no trace is found in historical times of any tribe of that name in Asia Minor.

The greater part of Paphlagonia is a rugged and mountainous country, but it contains fertile valleys, and produces great abundance of fruit. The mountains also are clothed with dense forests, which are conspicuous for the quantity of boxwood which they furnish. Hence its coasts were from an early period occupied by Greek colonies, among which the flourishing city of Sinope, a colony from Milctus, founded about 630 B.c., stood pre-eminent. Amastris, a few miles east of the Parthenius,

became an important town under the Macedonian monarchs; while Amisus, a colony of Sinope, which was situated a short distance east of the Halys, and therefore did not fall strictly within the limits of Paphlagonia as defined by Strabo, though often considered as belonging to that pro- vince, rose to be almost a rival of its parent city. The other towns along the coast of the Euxine were of little consequence, and none of those in the interior ever rose to any importance. The most considerable were Gangra, in ancient times the capital of the Paphlagonian kings, after- wards called Germanicopolis, and situated near the frontier of Galatia, and Pompeiopolis, in the valley of the Amnias (a tributary of the Halys), near which were extensive mines of the mineral called by Strabo sandarake (red arsenic), which was largely exported from Sinope. (E. H. B.) PAPHOS, the name of two cities near the west coast of Cyprus. Old Paphos was on the river Bocarus, about 10

stadia from the coast, near the promontory Zephyrium ; it

had a harbour at the mouth of the river. The city was distinguished by a temple of Aphrodite, to which an oracle was attached ; the priest exercised a sort of hieratic supre- macy over the whole island. Paphos was the favourite city of Aphrodite, who is often styled the Paphian goddess. The grave of Aphrodite was shown in the city, and her image in the temple was a conical stone. There is no doubt that both the city and the cultus were of Phcenician origin. Apollodorus says that the Syrian king Cinyras was the founder. The place was subject to earthquakes ; it was totally destroyed by a

shock in the time of Augustus, and, being restored by that emperor, took the name Augusta or S

PAPIAS, bishop of the Phrygian Hierapolis in the first half of the 2d century, is mentioned by Irenzu; as “an ancient man,” “the hearer of John and the com- panion of Polycarp.” According to the Chronicon Pascale, Papias suffered martyrdom at Pergamum in the year of that of Polycarp at Smyrna (163 a.p., or, according to other reckonings, 156). His name figures largely in Biblical criticism in connexion with his work entitled Aoyiwy kuptaxév e&yynows, of which only a few small frag- ments have been preserved in the form of citations in the writings of Irenzus, Eusebius, and later authors. See GOSPELS, vol. x. p. 815 sq.

The fragments are collected in Routh’s Relig. Sacr. (vol. i., 1846), and in Gebhard and Harnack’s Patr. Apost. Opera.

PAPIER MACHE (mashed or pulped paper) is a term embracing numerous manufactures in which paper pulp is employed, pressed and moulded into various forms other than uniform sheets, such as ordinary paper and millboards. In the East the art has long been practised, especially in Kashmir, where, under the name of kar-1- kalamdani, or pen-tray work, the manufacture of small painted boxes, trays, and cases of papier mdché is a characteristic industry. About the middle of the 18th century papier maché work came into prominence in Europe in the form of trays, boxes, and other small domestic articles, japanned and ornamented in imitation of Oriental manufactures of the same class; and contempor- aneously papier maché snuff boxes ornamented in vernis Martin came into favour. In 1772 Henry Clay of Birmingham secured a patent for a method of preparing this material, which he used for coach-building, for door and other panels, and for many furniture and structural pur- poses. In 1845 the application of the material to internal architectural decoration was patented by C. F. Bielefeld

Ee pS

Ee

of London, and for this purpose it has come into extensive use. Under the name of carton pierre, a substance which is essentially papier maché is also

largely employed as a substitute for plaster in the moulded ornaments of roofs and walls, and the ordinary roofing felts, too, are very closely allied in their composition to papier maché. Under the name of ceramic papier maché, architectural enrich- ments are also made of a composition patented by Mr Martin, the constituents of which are paper pulp, resin, glue, a drying oil, and acetate of lead. Among the other articles for which the substance is used may be enumer- ated masks, dolls' heads and other toys, anatomical and botanical models, artists' lay figures, milliners' and clothiers' blocks, mirror and picture frames, tubes, &e.

The materials for the commoner classes of work are old waste and scrap paper, repulped, and mixed with a strong size of glue and paste. To this very often are added large quantities of ground chalk, clay, aud fine sand, so that the preparation is little more than a plaster held together by the fibrous pulp. For the finest class of work Clay's: original method is retained. It consists of soaking several sheets of a specially made paper in a strong size of paste and glue, pasting these together, and pressing them in the mould of the article to be made. The moulded mass is dried in a stove, and, if necessary, further similar layers of paper are added, till the required thickness is attained. The dried object is hardened by dipping in oil, after which it is variously trimmed and prepared for japanning and ornamentation. For very delicate relief orna- ments, a pulp of scrap paper is prepared, which after drying is ground to powder mixed with paste and a proportion of potash, all of which are thoroughly incorporated into a fine smooth stiff paste, The numerous processes by which surface decoration is applied to papier maché differ in no way from the application of like ornamentation to other surfaces. Papier mache for its weight is an exceedingly tough, strong, durable substance, possessed of pe elasticity, little subject to warp or fracture, and unaffected by

amp.

PAPIN, Denis (1647-c.1712), French physicist, and one of the inventors of the steam-engine, was a native of Blois, where he was born in 1647. In 1661 or 1662 he entered upon the study of medicine at the university of Angers, where he graduated in 1669, with the intention apparently of settling as a practising physician in that city. Some time prior to 1674 he

removed to Paris and assisted Huygens in his experiments with the air-pump, the results of which (Hapériences du Vuide) were published at Paris in that year, and also in the form of five papers by Huygens and Papin jointly, in the Philosophical Transactions for 1675. Shortly after the publication of the Lxpériences, Papin, who had crossed to London hoping to find some congenial employment, was hospitably received by Boyle, and gave him some assistance in his laboratory and with his writings ; about this time also he introduced into the air-pump the improvement of making it with double barrels, and replacing by the two valves the turn-cock hitherto used. He is said, moreover, to have been the first to use the plate and receiver, which are organs of capital importance in the modern form of the instrument. Subsequently he invented the condensing-pump, and in 1680 he was admitted, on Boyle's nomination, to the Royal Society. In the following year he communicated to the Society an account of his famous steam " digester, or engine for softening bones," afterwards described in a tract published at Paris, and entitled La maniere Pamollir les os et de faire couire toutes sortes de viandes en fort peu de tems et & peu de frais, avec une description de la marmite, ses propriétés et ses usages. In this instrument the principle of the safety-valve was applied for the first time. After some further experiments with the digester he accepted an invitation to Venice to take part in the work of the recently founded Academy of the Philosophical and Mathematical Sciences; here he remained until 1684, when he returned to London and received from the Royal Society an appointment as "temporary curator of experl- ments," with a small salary. In this capacity he carried

on numerous and varied investigations, in the course of which he discovered a siphon acting in the same manner as the "Sipho Wirtembergicus" (Phil. Z'r., 1685), and also constructed a model of an engine for raising water from a river by means of pumps worked by a water-wheel In November 1687 he was ap- pointed to the chair of mathematics in the university of Marburg, and here he remained until 1696, when he re- From the time of his settlement in Germany he carried on an active correspondence with Huygens and Leibnitz, which is still preserved, and in one

driven by the current.

movea to Cassel.

of his letters to Leibnitz, in 1698, he mentions that he is

engaged on a machine for raising water to a great height

by the force of fire ; in a later communication he speaks also of a little carriage he had constructed to be propelled by this force. Again in 1702 he wrote about a steam “hallista,” which he anticipated would “promptly compel France to make an enduring peace.” In 1705 Leibnitz sent Papin a sketch of Savery’s engine for raising water,

and this stimulated him to further exertions, which re-

sulted two years afterwards in the publication of the Ars nova ad aquam ignis adminiculo efficacissime elevandam (Cassel, 1707), in which his high-pressure boiler and its applications are described (see Steam-Encine). In 1707 he resolved to quit Cassel for London, and on September 24th of that year he sailed with his family from Cassel in an ingeniously constructed boat, propelled by paddle- wheels, to be worked by the crew, with which he appa- rently expected to reach the mouth of the Weser. The expedition, however, came to an ignominious end at Minden, where the vessel was confiscated at the instance of the boatmen, who objected to the invasion of their ex- elusive privileges in the Weser navigation. Papin, on his subsequent arrival in London, found himself without re- sources and almost without friends; various applications through Sloane to the Royal Society for grants of money were made in vain, and he died in total obscurity, pro- bably about the beginning of 1712.

The published writings of Papin, besides those already referred to, consist for the most part of a large number of papers, princi- pally on hydraulics and pneumatics, contributed to the Journal des Savans, the Nouvelles de la Republique des Lettres, The Philosophical Transactions, and the Acta Eruditorum; many of them were eollected by himself into a Fasciculus dissertationum (Marburg, 1695), of which he published also a translation into French (Recwetl de diverses pieces touchant quelques nouvelles

machines (Cassel, 1695). His correspondence with Leibnitz and Huygens, along with a biography, lias been published by Dr Ernst Gerland (Leibnizen's wnd Huygens' Briefwechsel mit Papin, nebst der Biographie Papin's, Berlin, 1881).

PAPINIAN, the most celebrated of Roman jurists, was magister libellorum and afterwards preetorian prefect under Septimius Severus. He was an intimate friend of the emperor, whom he accompanied to Britain, and before his death Severus specially commended his two sons to his charge. Papinian was faithful to his trust, and tried to keep peace between the brothers, but with no better result than to excite the hatred of Caracalla, to which he fell a victim in the general slaughter of Geta's friends which followed the fratricide of 212 a.p. The details are variously related, and have undergone legendary embellishment, but it is certain that the murder of Papinian, which took place under Caracalla's own eyes, was one of the most disgraceful crimes of that hideous tyrant. Little more is known about Papinian. He was perhaps a Syrian by birth, for he is said to have been a kinsman of Severus's second wife, Julia Domna; that he studied law along with Severus under Sceevola is asserted In an interpolated passage in Spartian (Caracal., c. 8). Papinian's place and work as a jurist will fall to be dis- cussed under Roman Law (¢.v.).

PAPPENHEIM, Gorttrriep HEINRICH,

GRAF ZU

aoe

(1594-1632), imperialist general in the Thirty Years' War, was born on the 29th May 1594. He attended the high schools of Altdorf and Tiibingen, but did not seem to profit much by the instruction he received at either institution. In his twentieth year he joined the Roman Catholic Church ; and zeal for his new faith induced him to enter the military service of King Sigismund in Poland and afterwards that of Maximilian, duke of Bavaria, head of the Catholic League. In 1620, as a colonel in the army of the League, he distinguished himself in the battle near Prague which decided the fate of Frederick, king of Bohemia. In this battle, after fighting with extraordinary energy, he was severely wounded, and for many hours lay

unnoticed under his horse. He received, in 1623, the command of a regiment of cuirassiers who became famous as the Pappenheimer, and with them he fought from 1623 to 1625 at the head of the Spaniards in Lombardy. In 1626, having been recalled to Germany by Duke Maximilian, he crushed an insurrection of peasants in Upper Austria, obtaining in the course of a month a series of victories in which 40,000 peasants are said to have been killed. He then went to the help of Tilly against Christian IV. of Denmark, and took a prominent part in the storming of Magdeburg, the inhabitants of which were treated by him and by his soldiers with savage cruelty. After the battle of Breitenfeld, which was fought at an unsuitable time, contrary to the wish of Tilly, in conse- quence of Pappenheim's impetuosity, he covered the retreat of the imperialists; and in Westphalia and the country of the lower Rhine he stimulated the enthusiasm of his party by several successful engagements. When Tilly died, Pappenheim aided Wallenstein in subduing Saxony. On his way to the lower Rhine, where he proposed to support the Spaniards, he was summoned by Wallenstein to Liitzen, where battle was about to be given to Gustavus Adolphus ; and at the moment of his arrival fortune seemed already to have declared for the Swedes. Pappenheim threw himself into the conflict, and his attack was so furious that the enemy began to give way; but two musket balls penetrated his breast, and he had to be carried from the field. He died on the 17th November 1632, the day after the battle. He left behind him the reputa- tion of one of the bravest warriors and most ardent Catholics of his day. Notwithstanding the sternness of his discipline, he was idolized by his troops.

Sec Hess, Gottfried Heinrich, Graf zu Pappenhecim, 1855.

PAPPUS, or ALEXANDRIA, a geometer of a very high order, belongs to a time when already the Greek mathematicians of great original genius had been succeeded and replaced by a race of learned compilers and com- mentators, who confined their investigations within the limits previously attained, without adding anything to the development of mathematics. To the general medio- crity Pappus must be considered to be a remarkable exception ; for, although much even of his work is of the nature of compilation (which is, however, itself of great historical value), there is yet much the discovery of which cannot well be attributed to any one else.

According to Proclus, he was at the head of a school; but how far he was above his contemporaries, how little appreciated or understood by them, is shown by the absence of references to him in other Greek writers, and by the fact that his work had no effect in arresting the decay of mathematical science. In this respect the fate of Pappus strikingly resembles that of Diophantus, another living power amid general stagnation. In reading the Collection of Pappus, we meet with no indication of the date of the authors whose treatises he makes use of, or of the time at which he himself wrote. If we had no other information than can be derived from a perusal of his work, we should

only know that he was later than Claudius Ptolemy, whom he quotes often and with respect. Suidas states that he was of the same age as Theon of Alexandria, who wrote commentaries on Ptolemy's great work, the Almuagest, and flourished in the reign of Theodosius I. (379-395 a.p.). Suidas asserts also that Pappus wrote a commentary upon the same work of Ptolemy. But it would seem incredible that two contemporaries should have at the same time and in the same style composed commentaries upon one and the same work, and yet neither should have been mentioned by the other, whether as friend or opponent. We have apparently no reason to question the statement of Suidas that Pappus wrote such a commentary. But the similarity of two such commentaries as those of Pappus and Theon may easily have led Suidas to confuse the two, and so suppose the two authors to have been contemporary. There is, then, reason to believe that Suidas may have been mistaken ; we have, however, another authority, whose statement, on the supposition that it is false, is completely incomprehensible. This is the author of certain historical glosses, which are found in the margin of a MS. belonging to the beginning of the 10th century. Here it is stated, in connexion with the reign of Diocletian (284-305 .p.), that Pappus wrote during that period. Except the two distinctly contradictory statements of Suidas and the scholiast, we have no evidence of the date of Pappus; and it seems accordingly best to accept the date indicated by the scholiast.

The work of Pappus which has come down to us bore the title cuvvaywyy or Collection, as we gather from references in the work itself, and from the scholia appended to the Vatican MS. 218 of the 12th century. This collection, which consisted of eight books, we possess only in an incomplete form, there being no part remaining of the first book, and the rest also having suffered con- siderably. It is curious that no ancient writer, with the exception of the author of the appendix to book iii, quotes the work under its proper title, though Eutocius's reference (Archimedes, p. 139 sq., ed. Torelli), és Idzros év pnxaviKats cicaywyats, is no doubt to book viii. of the Collection.

Suidas enumerates other works of Pappus as follows :— Xepoypadpia oikoumenky, cis Ta Técoapa PiBrAla THs IIrodcuaiou peydAns cuvragews brduvypa, rorapods Tovs ev ArBvy, dverpoxpirexd. The question of Pappus's com- inentary on Ptolemy's work is discussed by Hultsch, Pappi Collectio (Berlin, 1878), vol iii. p. xiii. sg. Pappus himself refers to another commentary of his own on the dvéAnppa of Diodorus, of whom nothing is known. There are, inoreover, indications that he commented on Euclid's Llements, and on Ptolemy's dpwovxé. Further, there is a doubtful work entitled Opusculum de multiplicatione et divistone sexagesimalibus Diophanto vel Pappo tribuendum, which has been edited by C. Henry (Halle, 1879); and, lastly, a tract, Anonymi commentarius de Jiguris planis aso-perumetris, has been inserted by Hultsch in vol. iii. of his edition of Pappus.

The characteristics of Pappus's Collection are that it con- tains an account, systematically arranged, of the most im- portant results obtained by his predecessors, and, secondly, notes explanatory of, or extending, previous discoveries. These discoveries form, in fact, a text upon which Pappus enlarges discursively, many of his additions having no very decided points of connexion with the direct subject under discussion. Very valuable are the systematic introductions to the various books which set forth clearly in outline the contents and the general scope of the subjects to be treated. From these introductions we are able to judge of the style of Pappus's writing, which is excellent and even elegant the moment he is free from the shackles of

mathematical formule and expressions. At the same time his characteristic exactness makes his collection a most admirable substitute for the texts of the many valuable treatises of earlier mathematicians of which time has deprived us.

We proceed to summarize briefly the contents of that portion of the Collection which has survived, mentioning separately certain propositions which seem, in the light of modern developments of mathematics, to be among the most important.

Of book i. the whole has been lost. We can only conjecture that it, as well as book ii., was concerned with arithmetie, book ifi, being clearly introduced as beginning a new subject,

The whole of book ii. (the former part of which is lost, the exist- ing fragment beginning in the middle of the 14th proposition) related to a system of multiplication due to Apollonius of Perga, On this subject see Nesselmann, Algebra der Gtriechen, Berlin, 1842, pp. 125-1384; and Friedlein, Die Zahlzeichen und das elementare Rechnen der Griechen und Rémer, Erlangen, 1869.

Book iii. contains geometrical problems, plane and solid. Tt may be divided into five sections. (1) On the famous problem of finding two mean proportionals between two given lines, which arose from that of doubling the cube, reduced by Hippoerates to the former. Pappus gives the solutions of this problem by Eratosthenes, Nicomedes, and Heron, and finally his own solution of the more general problem of finding geometrically the side of a cube whose content is in any given ratio to that of a given one. (2) On the three different means between two straight lines, the arithmetic, the geometric, and the harmonic, and the problem of representing all three in one and the same geometrical figure, This serves as an introduction to a general theory of means, of which Pappus distinguishes ten kinds, and gives a table repre- senting examples of each in whole numbers. (3) On a curious problem of the same type as Eucl. i. 21. (4) On the inseribing of each of the five regular polyhedra in a sphere. (5) An addition by a later writer on another solution of the first problem of the book.

Of book iv. the title and preface have been lost, so that the programme has to be gathered from the book itself. At the begin- ning are various theorems on the circle, leading up to the problem of the construction of a circle which shall circumscribe three given circles touching each other two and two. This and several other problems of contact form the first division of the book. Pappus turns then to a consideration of certain properties of Archimedes's spiral, the conchoid of Nicomedes (already mentioned in book i. as supplying a method of doubling the cube), and the curve dis- covered most probably by Hippias of Elis about 420 B.c., and known by the name 4 rerpaywvifovea, or quadratrix, from the property that, if it could be practically constructed, it would enable us to square the circle. Having described the ordinary—the mechanieal, as Pappus calls it—definition of this curve, he proceeds to show how it might be constructed by projecting orthogonally suitable plane sections of certain surfaces which he calls plectoids described by means of (a) the helix described on a cylinder, (6) the plane helix, or Archimedes's-spiral. From these propositions it would seem that plectoid was the Greek general term for surfaces deseribed by the motion of a straight line always passing through a fixed straight line and a curve, aud remaining parallel to a fixed plane. Proposition 30 describes the construction of a curve of double curvature called by Pappus the helix on a sphere; it is deseribed by a point moving uniformly along the arc of a great circle, whieh itself turns about its diameter uniformly, the point deseribing a quadrant and the great circle a complete revolution in the same time. The arca of the surface included between this curve and its base is found—the first instance of quadrature of a curved surface. The rest of the book treats of the trisection of an angle, and the solution of certain problems by means of the quadratrix and spiral.

In book v., after an interesting preface concerning regular polygons, and containing some remarks upon the hexagonal form of the cells of honeycombs, Pappus addresses himself to the eom- parison of the areas of different plane figures which have all the same perimeter (following Zenodorus's treatise on this subject), and of the volumes of different solid figures whicl: have all the same superficial area, and, lastly, a comparison of the five regular solids of Plato. ?

Aceording to the preface, book vi. is intended to resolve diffi- culties occurring in the so-called pixpds dorpovomotpevos. It accordingly comments on the Sphewrica of Theodosius, a treatise of Autolycus, Theodosius's book on Day and Night, the treatise of Avistarchus On the Size and Distances of the Sun and Moon, and Kuelid's Opties and Phenomena.

The preface of book vii. explains the terms analysis and synthesis, and the distinction between theorem and problem. Pappus then enumerates works of Euclid, Apollonius, Aristeus,

and Eratosthenes, thirty-three books in all, the substance of which he intends to give, with the lemmas necessary for their elucidation. With the mention of the Porisms of Euelid we have an account of the relation of porism to theorem and problem. Inthe same preface we have enunciatcd (a) the famous problem known by Pappus's name—Having given a number of straight lines, to find the geometric locus of a point such that the lengths of the perpendiculars upon, or (more generally) the lines drawn from t obliquely at given inclina- tions to, the given lines satisfy the condition that the product of certain of them may bear a constant ratio to the product of the remaining ones ; (b) the theorems which since the 17th century have been called by the name of Guldin, but appear to have been dis- covered by Pappus himself. Book vii. contains also (1) under the head of the de determinata sectione of Apollonius, lemmas which, closely examined, are seen to be cases of the involution of six points ; (2) important lemmas on the Porisms of Euclid (see Ports); (3) a lemma upon the Conics of Apollonius, which is the first statement of the constant relation between the distances of any point ou a conic from the focus and directrix.

Lastly, book viii. treats principally of mechanics, the properties of the centre of gravity, and some mechanical powers. Inter- spersed are some questions of pure geometry. Proposition 14 gives a simple construction for the axes of an ellipse, when a pair of con- jugate diameters are given.

Of the whole work of Pappus the best edition is that of Hultseh, bearing the title Pappi Alexandrini Collectionis que supersunt e libris manuscriptis

edidit Latina interpretatione et commentariis instruxit Fridericus Hulisch, Berlin, 1876-78. Previously the entire eolleetion had been published only in a Latin translation, Pappi Alerandrini mathematice collectiones a Federico Commandino Urbinate in latinum converse et commentariis illustrate, Pesaro, 1588 (reprinted at Venice, 1539, and Pesaro, 1602). A seeond edition of this work was published by Carolus Manolessius, entitled Pappi Alexandrini mathematice collectiones a Federico Commandino Urbinate in latinum converse et commentariis illustratx, in hac nostra editione innumeris quibus scatebant mendis et precipue in Greco contextu diligenter vindicate, Bologna, 1660. The merits of these two works are diseussed by Hultseh, who remarks that the editor of the second edition, so far from making good the title and his boastful preface, has actually much marred the original book.

Of books whieh contain parts of Pappus's work, or treat ineidentally of it, we may mention the following titles:—{1) Pappi Alexandrini collectiones mathe- matice nunc primum Greece edidit Herm. Jos. Eisenmann, Libri quinti pars altera, Parisiis, 1824. (2) Pappt Alexandrini Secundi Libri Mathematice Col- lectionis Fragmentum e codice MS. edidit Latinum fecit Notisque tilustravit Johannes Waitlis, Oxonize, 1688. (8) Apollonit Pergwi de sectione rationis libri duo ex Arabico MSto latine versi, Accedunt eiusdem de sectione spatti libri duo restituti, Premittitur Pappi Alexandrini prefatio ad VIImum collectionts mathe- matice, nunc primum grece edita: cum lemmatibus eiusdem Pappit ad hos Apol- lonii libros, Opera et studio Edmundi Halley, Oxonii, 1706. (4) Apollonit Pergexi conicorum libri IV. priores cum Pappi Alexandrint lemmatis ex codd. MSS. Grecis edidit Edmundus Haileius, Oxonie#, 1710. (5) Der Sammiung des Pappus von Alexandrien siebentes und achtes Buch grtechisch und deutsch herausgegeben von C. I, Gerhardt, Halle, 1871. CES WH)

PAPUAN LANGUAGES. The languages spoken in New Guinea (9.v.) and other islands peopled by Papuas differ more widely from the Malayo-Polynesian languages than those of the Negritos in the Philippine Islands do from the dialects of the contiguous Malayan tribes. In fact, they form as separate a class by themselves as the Melanesian languages do as contradistinguished from the Polynesian group. From the meagre grammatical sketch of the Mafor (or Nufor) language—the only one to

which the Dutch missionaries have paid some attention, but which may be taken as a type of the class—we gather that the verb has the subject pronoun prefixed in the singular, dual, and plural; past time is expressed by the word kwar, “already,” prefixed, and futurity by nerri, “ still,” added to the verb; certain modifications of the sense are effected by 7 being prefixed, and others by ¢ being affixed, to the radical vowels a, 0, or wu, and others again by the substantive affix 7a (plur. sia). Much uncertainty, however, still prevails as to the precise import of those grammatical forms. See J. L. van Hasselt’s Woordenboek and Beknopte Spraakkunst der Noefoorsche taal, both of which appeared at Utrecht in 1876; Fr. Miiller’s Grundriss der Sprach- wissenschaft, i., ii. p. 30 sg.; and more especially G. von der Gabelentz and A. B. Meyer, Bettrdge zur Kenntniss der Melanesischen, Mikronesischen, und Papuanischen Sprachen, Leipsic, 1882, and their essay, “ Einiges tiber das Verhiltniss des Mafoor zum Malayischen,” in Bijdragen tot de taal-, land-, en volkenkunde van Neder- landsch-Indié, for 1883. The former of these publications contains also a survey of the literature .on the subject. Vocabularies of the languages spoken by the various coast tribes with whom Europeans have come in contact have been collected by S. Miiller, Von Rosenberg, Miklucho

Maclay, and others. An intercomparison of those voca- bularies not only shows great phonetical divergencies, especially in the liquids r and J, but also in many cases the same absence of word affinity in consequence of which neighbouring Melanesian tribes are known to be unable to understand one another.

PAPYRUS, the paper reed, the Cyperus Papyrus of Linnzeus, was in ancient times widely cultivated in the Delta of Egypt, where it was used for various purposes, and especially as a writing material. As; however, the plant is now extinct in Lower Egypt, it is believed that it was not indigenous there, but was probably introduced from Nubia, where it is found at the present time, as well as in Abyssinia. Theophrastus (Hist. Plant., iv. 10) adds that it likewise grew in Syria; and, according to Pliny, it was also a native plant of the Niger and Euphrates. From one of its ancient Egyptian names, P-apu, was derived its Greek title mamupos, Lat. papyrus. By

Herodotus it is always called BvBAos, a word which was apparently also of Egyptian origin. The first accurate description of the plant is given by Theophrastus, from whom we learn that it grew in shallows of 2 cubits (about 3 feet) or less, its main root being of the thickness of a man's wrist, and 10 cubits in length. From this root, which lay horizontally, smaller roots pushed down into the mud, and the stem of the plant sprang up to the height of 4 cubits, being triangular and tapering in form. The tufted head or umbel is likened by Pliny to a thyrsus.

The various uses to which the papyrus plant was applied are also enumerated by Theo- phrastus. Of the head nothing could be made but garlands for the shrines of the gods ; but the wood of the root was employed in the manufacture of different utensils as well as for fuel. Of the stem of the plant were made boats, sails, mats, cloth, cords, and, above all, writing material (ra BiBAia), The pith was also a common article of food, and was eaten both cooked and in its natural state. Herodotus too notices its consumption as food (ii. 92), and incidentally mentions that it provided the material of which the priests' sandals were made (ii. 37). He likewise refers to the use of byblus as tow for caulking the seams of ships ; and the statement of Theophrastus that King Antigonus made the rigging of his fleet of the same material is illus- trated by the ship's cable, d7Aov BvBdwov, wherewith the doors were fastened when Ulysses slew the suitors in his hall (Odyss., xxi. 390). That the plant was itself used also as the principal material in the construction of light skiffs suitable for the navigation of the pools and shallows of the Nile, and even of the river itself, is shown by sculptures of the period of the fourth dynasty, in which men are represented in the act of building a boat with stems cut from a neighbouring plantation of papyrus (Lepsius, Denkm., ii. 12). It is to boats of this description that Isaiah probably refers in the "vessels of bulrushes upon the waters" (xviii. 2). If the Hebrew gome (4) also is to be identified with the Egyptian papyrus, something may be said in favour of the tradition that the bulrushes

of which the ark was composed in which the infant Moses was laid, in the flags by the river's brink, were in fact the latter plant. Ancient authors have

likewise referred to the adaptation of the papyrus to other domestic purposes, both culinary and medicinal. But it seems hardly credible that the Cyperus Papyrus could alone bave sufficed for the many uses to which it is said to have been applied. Wilkinson has pointed out (Anc. Egyptians, ii. 121) that, the cultivation of this variety being limited to certain districts, where, moreover, it was a monopoly of the Government, it cannot have been employed for so many purposes; and we may therefore conclude that several plants of the genus Cyperus were comprehended under the head of byblus or papyrus—an opinion which is supported by the words of Strabo, who mentions both inferior and superior qualities. The Cyperus dives is still grown in Egypt, and is used to this day for many of the purposes named by ancient writers.

The widespread use of papyrus as a writing material throughout the ancient world is attested by early writers, and by documents and sculptures. In addition to the names of the plant, which were also applied to the material, the latter was also known as ydprys, charta. Papyrus rolls are represented in ancient Egyptian wall-paintings ; and extant examples of the rolls themselves are sufficiently numerous. The most ancient of these, known, from the name of its former owner, as the Prisse papyrus, and now preserved at Paris, contains a work composed in the reign of a king of the fifth dynasty, and is computed to be itself of the age of upwards of 2000 years B.c. The papyri dis- covered in Egypt have generally been found in tombs, and in the hands, or swathed with the bodies, of mummies. The ritual of the dead, which in its entirety or in an abridged form was buried with every person of consequence from the eighteenth dynasty to the Roman period, is most frequently the subject. And, besides the ritual and religious rolls, there are the hieratic, civil and literary, documents, and the demotic and enchorial papyri, relating generally to sales of property. Coptic papyri usually contain Biblical or religious tracts or monastic deeds.

The early use of papyrus among the Greeks is proved by the reference of Herodotus (v. 58) to its introduction among the Ionians. An inscription of 407 B.c. records the sale of two sheets (xdépra: dvo) at Athens, for two drachmas and four obols. ‘ Greek papyri have been found in Egypt of great importance both for their paleeographical and literary worth. The first instalment which came to light, as late as the year 1778, consisted of some

fifty rolls, which were discovered in the neighbourhood of Memphis ; but all, with one single exception, were carelessly destroyed. More fortunate were the documents found near the Serapeum of Memphis, and connected with that temple ; and further discoveries of valuable texts of Homer, Hyperides, and other classical writers have rewarded later searches (see PaLmocrapHy). The numerous rolls found in the ruins of Herculaneum generally contain the less interesting works of writers of the Epicurean school.

Papyrus also made its way into Italy, but at how early a period there is nothing toshow. Under the empire its use must have been extensive, for not only was it required for the production of books, but it was also universally employed for domestic purposes, correspondence, and legal documents. So indispensable did it become that it is reported that in the reign of Tiberius the scarcity and dearness of the material, caused by a failure of the papyrus crop, nearly brought on a riot (Pliny, WV. /, xiii. 13).

The account which Pliny (1. ZZ., xiii. 11-13) has trans- mitted to us of the manufacture of the writing material from the papyrus plant should be taken strictly to refer to the process followed in his own time ; but, with some

rea PY US

differences in details, the same general method of treat, ment had doubtlessly been practised from time immemorial. His text, however, is so confused, both from obscurity of style and from corruptions in the MSS., that there is much difference of opinion as to the meaning of many words and phrases employed in his narrative, and their application in particular points of detail. In one important parti- cular, however, affecting the primary construction of the material, there can no longer be any doubt. The old idea that it was made from layers or pellicules growing between the rind and a central stalk has been abandoned, as it has been proved that the plant, like other reeds, con- tains only a cellular pith within the rind. The stem was in fact cut into longitudinal strips for the purpose of being converted into the writing material, those from the centre of the plant being the broadest and most valuable, The strips (philyre), which were cut with a sharp knife or some such instrument, were laid on a board side by side to the required width, thus forming a layer (scheda), across which another layer of shorter

strips was laid at right angles. The two layers thus “woven ”—Pliny uses the word ¢exere in describing this part of the process—formed a sheet (plagula, or net), which was then soaked in water of the Nile. ‘The mention of a particular water has caused trouble to the commentators. Some have supposed that certain chemical properties of which the Nile water was possessed acted as a glue or cement to cause the two layers to adhere ; others, with more reason, that glutinous matter contained in the material itself was solved by the action of water, whether from the Nile or any other source ; and others again read in Pliny’s words an implication that a paste was actually used. Be this as it may, the sheet was finally pressed and dried in the sun. Any roughness was levelled by polishing with ivory or a smooth shell. But the material was also subject to other defects, such as moisture lurking between the layers, which might be detected by strokes of the mallet; spots or stains; and spongy strips (¢enix), in which the ink would run and spoil the sheet. When such faults occurred, the papyrus must be re-made. To form a roll the sheets were joined together with paste (glue being too hard), but not more than twenty sheets in a roll (scapus). As, however, there are still extant rolls consisting of more than the prescribed number of sheets, either the reading of wicenx is corrupt, or the number was not constant in all times. The best sheet formed the first or outside sheet of the roll, and the others were joined on in order of quality, so that the worst sheets were in the centre of the roll. This arrange- ment was adopted, not for the purpose of fraudulently sell- ing bad material under cover of the better exterior, but in order that the outside of the roll should be composed of that which would best stand wear and tear. Besides, in case of the entire roll not being filled with the text, the unused and inferior sheets at the end could be better spared, and so might be cut off.

The different kinds of papyrus writing material and their dimensions are also enumerated by Pliny. The best quality, formed from the middle and broadest strips of the plant, was originally named hicratica, but afterwards, in flattery of the emperor Augustus, it was called, after him, Augusta ; and the charta Livia, or seeond quality, was so named in hoaour of his wife. The hieratica thus descended to the third rank. The first two were 18 digiti, or about 94 inches in width; the hécratica, 11 digiti or 8 inches. Next eame the charta amphithcatrica, named after the principal place of its manufaeture, the amphitheatre of Alexandria, of 9 digiti or 64 inches wide. The charta

Fanniana appears to have been a kind of papyrus worked up from the amphithcatria, which by flattening and other methods was increased in width by an ineh, in the factory of a certain Fanniusat Rome. The Sartea, which took its name from the eity of Sais, and was probably of 8 digiti or 53 inches, was ofa common description. The Teeniotica, named apparently from the place of its manufacture, a tongue 0 land (roivia) near Alexandria, was sold by weight, and was of

uncertain width, perliaps from 4} to 5 inches. And lastly there was the common packing-paper, the charta emporctica, of 6 digiti or 42 inches. Isidore (Etymol., vi. 10) mentions yet another kind,

the Corneliana, first made under C. Cornelius Gallus, prefect of

Egypt, which, however, may have been the samme as the amphi- theatrics or Fanniana. the anger of Augustus may have been suppressed by the same influence that expunged the episode of Gallus from the Fourth

Georgic (Birt, Antik. Buchwesen, p. 250). In the reign of the

emperor Claudius also another kind was introduced and entitled

Claudia. It had been found by experience that the charta Augusta Was, from its fincness and porous nature, ill suited for literary use ; it was accordingly reserved for eorrespondence only, and for other purposes was replaced by the new paper. The charta Claudia was made from a composition of the first and seeond qualities, the Argusta and the Livia, a layer of the former being backed with one of the latter; and the sheet was increased to nearly a foot in width. The largest of all, however, was the meaerocollon, probably of good quality and equal to the hieratic, and a cubit or nearly 18 inches wide. It was used by Cicero (pp. ad Alfic., xiii. 25; xvi. 3). The width, however, proved incon- venient, and the broad sheet was liable to injury by tearing.

‘An interesting question arises as to the accuracy of the different

measurements given by Pliny. His figures regarding the width of

the different kinds of papyri have gencrally been understood to eoncern the width (or height) of the rolls, as distinguished from their length. It has, however, been observed that in practice the width of extant rolls does not tally in any satisfactory degree with Pliny's measurements ; and a more plausible explanation has been lately offered (Birt, Antik. Buchwesen, pp. 251 sq.) that the preadth (not height) of the individual sheets of which the rolls are composed is referred to.

The first sheet of a roll was named zpwrtéxoAAoyv ; the last, egxaTordAAtoy. the comes largitionum, who had control of the manufacture, with the date and name of place. It was the practice to cut away the portion thus marked; but in case of legal documents this inutilation was forbidden by the laws of Justinian. On the Arab eonquest of Egypt in the 7th century, the manufacture was con- tinued, with the substitution of Arabic in marking the protocol. An instance of one of these Arab signatures is prescrved in a bull of Pope John VIII. of the year 876.

Varro's statement, repeated by Pliny, that papyrus was first made in Alexander's time, should probably be taken to mean that its mannfacture, which till then had been a Government monopoly, wasrelieved from all restrictions. Itis not probable, however, that it was ever manufactured from the native plant anywhere but in Egypt. At Rome there was certainly some kind of industry in papyrus, the charia Fanniana, already referred to, being an instance inillustration. But it seems probable that this industry was con- fined to the re-making of material imported into Italy, as in the case of the charta Claudia. This second manufaeture, however, is thought to have been detrimental to the papyrus, as it would then have been ina dried condition requiring artificial aids, such as a more liberal use of gum or paste, in the process. The more brittle condition of the Latin papyri found at Hereulaneum has been instanced as the evil result of this re-making of the material.

According to Strabo the Romans obtained the papyrus plant from Lake Trasimene and other lakes of Etruria, but this statement is unsupported by any other authority and appears to have been niade imerror, At a later period, however, a papyrus was eultivated in Sicily, which has bcen identified by Parlatore with the Syrian variety (Cyperus syriacus), far

exceeding in height the Egyptian plant, and having a more drooping head. It grew in the east and south of the island, where it was probably introduced during the Arab occupation. It was seen in the 10th eentury, by the Arab traveller Ibn-Haukal, in the neighbourhood of Palermo, where it throve luxuriantly in the pools of the Papireto, a stream to which it lent its name. From it paper was made for the sultan's use. 3ut in the 13th century it began to fail, and in 1591 the drying up of the Papireto caused the extinction of the plant in that district. itis still to be seen at Syracuse, but it was probably transplanted thither at a later time, and reared only as a curiosity, as there 18 no notice of it to be found previous to 1674. Itis with this Syracusan plant that some attempts have been made in recent ycars to manufacture a writing material similar to ancient papyrus.

Even after the introduction of vellum, papyrus still continued in use among the Romans, and was not entirely superscded until a late date. It ceased, however, to be used for books sooner than for documents. In the 5th century St Augustine apologizes for sending @ letter written on vellum instcad of the more usual substance, papyrus (Ep. xv.); and Cassiodorus (Varr., xi. 38), writing in the 6th century, indulges in a high-flown panegyric on the plant and its value, and refers to the abolition of the tax on paper by the emperor Theodoric. Of medieval Greek papyria very few remains containing Biblical or patristic matter have survived, and one or

two fragments of Graco-Latin glossaries have been published. Of

The name of the man who had incurred

Under the Romans, the former bore the name of

253

Greek documents, apart from monastie decds discovered in Egypt there are two which are well known, viz., the fragmentary epistle of Constantine V. to Pepin le Bref, of 753 or 756, now preserved at Paris, and the papyrus containing the subscriptions to tho council of Constantinople of 680, at Vienna. Medizval Latin MSS. on papyrus in book form are still extant in different libraries of Europe, viz.:—the Homilies of St Avitus, of the 6th century, at Paris; Sermons and Epistles of St Augustine, of the 6th or 7th

century, at Paris and Geneva; works of Hilary, of the 6th century, at Vienna; fragments of the Digests, of the 6th century, at Pommersfeld; the Antiquities of Josephus, of the 7th century, at Milan; Isidore, De Contemptu Mundi, of the 7th eentury, at St Gall; and the Register of the Church of Ravenna, of the 10th cen- tury, at Munich. Of Latin documents on papyrus (¢omus was the technical word of the Middle Ages to designate sueh a document), the first to be mentioned arc the fragments of two imperial reseripts addressed to an official in Egypt in the 5th eentury. The employment of this material in Italy for legal purposes is sufficiently illustrated by the large number of documents which were preserved at Ravenna, and date from the 5th to the 10th century. In the papal chancery too it was used at an early date, evidence of its presence there being found in the biography of Gregory I. But of the extant papal deeds the earliest to which an authentic date can be attached is a bull of Stephen III. of the ycar 757, while the latest appears to be one of 1004. There is evidence to show that in the 10th century papyrus was used, to the exclusion of other materials, in papal deeds. In Franee it was a common writing substance in the 6th century (Gregory of Tours, Hist. Frane., y. 5). Of the Merovingian period there are still extant several papyrus deeds, the earliest of the year 625, the latest of 692. Under Charlemagne and his suceessors it was not used. By the 12th century the manufacture of papyrus had entirely ceased, as appears from a note by Eustathius in his commentary on the Odyssey, xxi. 390.

See Melch. Guilandino's commentary on the chapters of Pliny relating to papyrus, Papyrus, hoc est Commentartus, &c., Venice, 1572; Montfaucon, '' Dis- sertation sur Ja plante appellée Papyrus," in the Mémoires de VAcadémie des Inscriptions, 1729, pp. 592-608; T.C. Tyehsen, "' De Chartee Papyracese in Europa per medium evum usu," in the Comment. Soc. Reg. Scient. Gottingensis, 1820, pp. 141-208; Dureau de la Malle, " Mémoire sur le Papyrus," in the Afém. de Pinstitut, 1851, pp. 140-183; Ph. Parlatore, ""'Mémoire sur le Papyrus des aneiens," &c., in the Mém: a? Acad. des Sci., 1854, pp. 469-502; Bliimner, Tech- nologie und Terminologie der Gewerbe und Kiinste bet Griechen und Rémern, Leipsic, 1875, i. pp. 808-827; Ces. Paoli, Del Papiro, Florenee, 1878. See also W. Wattenbach, Das Schriftwesen im Mittelolter, Leipsic, 1875, pp. 80-91; and T. Birt, Das antike Buchwesen, Berlin, 1882, pp. 223-278, (E, M. T.

PARA, or Santa Marra DE Betem po Grado Par, one of the most flourishing cities of Brazil, capital of the province of Para or Grado Para, lies on a point of land with sandy porous soil at the junction of the Guama with the Rio Para or eastern arm of the Amazons, about 75 miles from the sea. The main river is about 20 miles wide opposite the town, but is broken by numerous islands. Para is regularly built, well-paved, and well-lighted. The houses, which seldom exceed two or three stories in height, are usually substantial structures of stone; and a general brightness of aspect is produced by red-tiled roofs and white, yellow, or even pink and blue coloured walls relieved by dense tropical foliage. The Estrada das Mon- gubeiras, running about a mile from the river to Largo da Polvora in the east end of the city, has long been famous for its magnificent cotton trees (Bombax Monguba, B. Ceiba); but the grand old trees are dying out, and the finest avenue in Para is now the Estrada de Sao José, with its colonnade of tall “royal palms” (Oreodowxa regia). In the outskirts of the city the wealthy merchants have villas with very extensive grounds, anda little way beyond these begins the dense swamp-forest. Para has a wonder- fully pleasant and healthy climate, with a temperature extremely equable throughout the year. “The mornings are cool, From 10 till 2 the heat increases rapidly, com- monly reaching 90° or 91”. A little later great black clouds appear in the east and spread quickly over the sky ; the temperature falls suddenly, the wind blows in varying gusts, the rain pours down, and ere one is aware the sun leaps out. Sometimes the first shower is followed by a second or even a third. By sunset the ground is dry.” This is the rule all the year round; only in the height of the dry season a week may pass without any showers. The Brazilians have a proverb, “Who came to Parad was glad to stay; who drank assai went never away.” The

assai referred to is a beverage made by squeezing the black grape-like berries of the assai palm (uterpe edulis) ; it is largely drunk by all classes in Paré. The importance of the city is due to its being the great emporium of the rapidly-developing trade of the Amazons. The trade is carried on by several steamboat companies; the most im- portant, the Amazonian

Steamboat Company, receives a subsidy from the Brazilian Government. Two lines of steamers run between Liverpool and Pard; there are also a French line and a German line. A large trade is trans- acted with the United States, but mainly through English, French, German, and Portuguese houses. The principal exports are cocoa, Brazil nuts, hides, deer-skins, isinglass, balsam of copaiba, tonka beans, and Peruvian bark. In 1863 the total value of the imports was about £500,000 and of the exports about £525,000; by 1882 the duties paid to the custom-house amounted to £864,396.

Population has been growing faster than the supply of houses. In 1819 the inhabitants were estimated at 24,500, but by 1850 they had declined to 15,000; in 1866 they were 36,000 (about 5000 slaves); and they are now (1884) nearly 40,000. Besides a vast cathedral (1720) and the president's palace, usually considered one of the best buildings of its kind in Brazil, Para contains an episcopal palace (formerly the Jesuit college), a handsome theatre, a large market building, a custom-house (formerly a convent, with two great towers), naval and military arsenals (the first of some size, with shipbuilding yards anda gridiron), a botanical garden, &c. About amile from the city is the chapel of Our Lady of Nazareth, the most celebrated shrine in northern Brazil.

In 1615 Francisco Caldeira de Castello Branco, sent out by the Portuguese at Maranhao, built the fort of Santo Christo and founded the settlement of Nossa Senhora de Belem. By 1641 it was a place of 400 inhabitants, with four monasteries. A premature declaration of independence was made at Para in 1823, and soon after Captain Grenfell, sent by Lord Cochrane, brought the city over to the Brazilian party; but for many years it was subject to political disturbance. In 1835 "every respectable white was obliged to leave the city" by the anarchical proceedings of the so-called "Liberals" Gomes, Vinagre, and Rodriguez.

See Bates, Naturalist on the River Amazons, 1863 ; H. H. Smith, Brazil, 1879.

PARACELSUS (c. 1490-1541). It seems now to be established that Paracelsus was born near Einsiedeln, in the canton Schwyz, in 1490 or 1491 according to some, or 1493 according to others. His father, the natural son

of a grand- master of the Teutonic order, was Wilhelm Bombast von Hohenheim, who had a hard struggle to make a subsistence as a physician. His mother was superintendent of the hospital at Einsiedeln, a post she relinquished upon her marriage. Paracelsus's name was Theophrastus Bombast von Hohenheim ; for the names Philippus and Aureolus good authority is wanting, and the epithet Paracelsus, like some similar compounds, was probably one of his own making, and was meant to denote his superiority to Celsus. In 1502-3 his father, taking his family with him, removed to Villach in Carinthia; and he resided there in the practice of the medical art till his death in 1534. In one of his works, dedicated to the magistracy of the town, Paracelsus refers to the esteem in which his father was held, and expresses his own gratitude for it.

Of the early years of Paracelsus's life there is hardly anything known. His father was his first teacher, and took pains to instruct him in all the learning of the time, especially in medicine. Doubtless Paracelsus learned rapidly what was put before him, but he seems at a com- paratively early age to have questioned the value of what he was expected to acquire, and to have soon struck out ways for himself. As he grew older he was taken in hand by several distinguished churchmen, although it has been objected that dates will not warrant the idea of actual

personal instruction. This, however, is not correct, for all the men Paracelsus mentions were alive in his lifetime though he was so young that he could hardly have profited by their lessons, unless on the supposition that he wags a quick and precocious boy, which it is very likely he was. At the age of sixteen he entered the university of Basel, but probably soon abandoned the studies therein pursued. He next went to Trithemius, the bishop of Sponheim and Wiirzburg, under whom he prosecuted chemical researches. 'Trithemius is the reputed author of some obscure tracts on the great elixir, and as there was no other chemistry going Paracelsus would have to devote himself to the reiterated operations so characteristic of the notions of that time. But the confection of the stone of the philosophers was too remote a possibility to gratify the fiery spirit of a youth like Paracelsus, eager to make what he knew, or could learn, at once available for practical

medicine. So he left school chemistry as he had forsaken university culture, and started for the mines in Tyrol owned by the wealthy family of the Fuggers. The sort of knowledge he got there pleased him much more, There at least he was in contact with reality. The struggle with nature before the precious metals could be made of use impressed upon him more and more the importance of actual personal observation. He saw all the mechanical difficulties that had to be overcome in mining; he learned the nature and succession of rocks, the physical properties of minerals, ores, and metals; he got a notion of mineral waters; he was an eyewitness of the accidents which befel the miners, and studied the diseases which attacked them ; he had proof that positive knowledge of nature was not to be got in schools and universities, but only by going to Nature herself, and to those who were constantly engaged with her. Hence came Paracelsus's peculiar mode of study. He attached no value to mere scholarship; scholastic disputations he utterly ignored and despised,— and especially the discussions on medical topics, which turned more upon theories and definitions than upon actual practice. He therefore went wandering over a great part of Europe to learn all that he could. In so doing he was one of the first physicians of modern times to profit bya mode of study which is now reckoned indispensable. In the 16th century the difficulty of moving about was much greater than it is now; still Paracelsus faced it, and on principle. The book of nature, he affirmed, is that which the physician must read, and to do so he must walk over the leaves. The humours and passions and diseases of different nations are different, and the physician must go among the nations if he will be master of his art; the more he knows of other nations, the better he will under stand his own. For the physician it is ten times more necessary and useful to know the powers of the heavens and the earth, the virtues of plants and minerals, than to spend his time on Greek and Latin grammar. And the com- mentary of his own and succeeding centuries upon these very extreme views is that Paracelsus was no scholar, but an ignorant vagabond. He himself, however, valued his method and his knowledge very differently, and argued that he knew what his predecessors were ignorant of, be cause he had been taught in no human school. " Whence have I all my secrets, out of what writers and authors! Ask rather how the beasts have learned their arts. If nature can instruct irrational animals, can it not much more men?" In this new school discovered by Paracelsus, and since attended with the happiest results by many others, he remained for about ten years. He had

acquired great stores of facts, which it was impossible for him to have reduced to order, but which gave him an unquestion- able superiority to his contemporaries. Soin 1526 or 1527, on his return to Basel, he was appointed town physician,

Paww ACME Ss US

and shortly afterwards he gave a course of lectures on medicine in the university. Unfortunately for him, the

lectures broke away from tradition. They were in German, not in Latin ; they were expositions of his own experience,

of his own views, of his own methods of curing, adapted

to the diseases that afflicted the Germans in the year 1527,

and they were not commentaries on the text of Galen or

Avicenna. Unfortunately they attacked, not only these great authorities, but the German graduates who followed them and disputed about them in 1527. They criticized in no measured terms the current medicine of the time, and exposed the practical ignorance, the pomposity, and the greed of those who practised it.

The truth of Paracelsus’s doctrines was apparently con-

firmed by his success in curing or mitigating diseases for which the regular physicians could do nothing. For about a couple of years his reputation and practice increased to a surprising extent. But at the end of that time people began to recover themselves. Paracelsus had burst upon the schools with such novel views and methods, with such irresistible criticism, that all opposition was at first crushed flat. Gradually the sea began to rise. His enemies watched for slips and failures; the physicians maintained that he had no degree, and insisted that he should give proof of his qualifications. His manner of life was brought up against him. It was insinuated that he was a profane person, that he was a conjurer, a necro- mancer, that, in fact, he was to be got rid of at any cost asa troubler of the peace and of the time-

honoured tradi- tions of the medical corporations. Moreover, he had a pharmaceutical system of his own which did not harmonize with the commercial arrangements of the apothecaries, and he not only did not use up their drugs like the Galenists, put, in the exercise of his functions as town physician, urged the authorities to keep a sharp eye on the purity of their wares, upon their knowledge of their art, and upon their transactions with their friends the physicians. The growing jealousy and enmity culminated in the Lichtenfels dispute ; and, as the judges sided with the canon, to their everlasting discredit, Paracelsus had no alternative but to tell them his opinion of the whole case and of their notions of justice. So little doubt left he on the subject that his friends judged it prudent for him to leave Basel at once, as it had been resolved to punish him for the attack on the authorities of which he had been guilty. He departed from Basel in such haste that he carried nothing with him, and some chemical apparatus and other property were taken charge of by Oporinus, his pupil and amanuensis. He went first to Esslingen, where he remained for a brief period, but had soon to leave from absolute want. Then began his wandering life, the course of which can be traced by the dates of his various writings. He thus visited in succession Colmar, Nuremberg, Appenzell, Zurich, Pfaffers, Augsburg, Villach, Meran, Middelheim, and other places, seldom staying a twelvemonth in any of them. In this way he spent some dozen years, till 1541, when he was invited by Archbishop Ernst to settle at Salzburg, under his protection. After his endless tossing about, this seemed @ promise and place of repose. It proved, however, to be the complete and final rest that he found, for after a few months he died on the 24th of September. ‘The cause of hig death, like most other. details in his history, is uncertain. His enemies asserted that he died ina low tavern in consequence of a drunken debauch of some days’ duration. Others maintain that he was thrown down a steep place by some emissaries cither of the physicians or of the apothecaries, both of whom he had during his life Most grievously harassed. In proof of this surgeons have pointed out in Paracelsus’s skull a flaw or fracture, which could have been produced only during life. Authorities,

however, are not agreed on this point, and it may be simplest to suspend belief until more evidence is got. He was buried in the churchyard of St

Sebastian, but in 1752 his bones were removed to the porch of the church, and a monument of reddish-white marble was erected to his memory.

In making the attempt to ascertain what was Paracelsus's charac-

ter, and what were his philosophical and medical opinions, a very considerable difficulty presents itself at the outset. Of the volu- minous writings which pass under his name, what are really his work, and what, if not actually composed by him, express his ideas? To this question no complete critical reply has as yet been given, though many opinions have been expressed. Dr Marx, for example, will admit only ten treatises as genuine. Dr Haeser allows seventeen for certain, a considerable number—some twenty-four—as doubtful, and the rest—he enumerates eleven—as spurious. Dr Mook does not accept these estimates, or the criteria by which the genuineness of a treatise is ascertained. But neither does he give altogether convincing criteria of his own, and, what is still less satisfactory, he does not apply them—such as they arc—to decide the numcrous doubtful cases. The only thing Mook has done is to draw up a list of the different editions of Paracelsus's so-called works, This list is not complete in the enumeration of editions, and it is quite imperfect in bibliographical description, but with these and other scrious defects it is the fullest at present extant. The first book by Paracelsus was printed at Augsburg in 1529. It is entitled Practica D. Theophrasti Paracelsi, gemacht auff Europen, and fornis a small quarto pamphlet of five leaves. Prior to this, in 1526-27, appeared a programme of the lectures he intended to deliver at Basel, but this can hardly be reckoned a specific work, During his lifetime fourteen works and editions were pub- lished, and thereafter, between 1542 and 1845, there were at least two hundred and thirty-four separate publications according to Mook's enumeration. The first collected edition was made by Johann Huser in German. It was printed at Basel in 1589-91, in eleven volumes quarto, and is the best of all the editions, Huser did not employ the early printed copies only, but collected all the manuscripts which he could procure, and used them also in forming his text. The only drawback is that rather than omit anything which Paracelsus may have composed, he has gone to the opposite extreme and included writings with which it is pretty certain Paracelsus had nothing to do. The second collected German edition is in four volumes folio, 1603-5. Parallel with it in 1603 the first collected

Latin edition was made by Palthenius. It is in eleven volumes quarto, and was completed in 1605. Again, in 1616-18 appeared a reissue of the folio German edition of 1603, and finally in 1658 came the Geneva Latin version, in three volumes folio, edited by Bitiskius. The works were originally composed in Swiss-German, a vigorous speech which Paracelsus wielded with unmistakable power. The Latin versions were made or edited by Adam von Bodenstein, Gerard Dorn, Michael Toxites, and Oporinus, about the middle of the 16th century. A few translations into other languages exist, as of the Chirurgia Magna and some other works into French, and of one or two into Dutch, Italian, and even Arabic. ‘The translations into English amount to about a dozen, dating mostly from the middle of the 17th century. The original editions of Paracelsus’s works are getting less and less common; even the English versions are among the rarest of their class. Over and above the numerous editions, there is a bulky literature of an explanatory and controversial character, for which the world is indebted to Paracelsus’s followers and enemies. A good deal of it is taken up with a defence of chemical, or, as they were called, ‘spagyric,” medicines against the attacks of the supporters of the Galenic pharmacopeia. ‘

The aim of all Paracclsus’s writing is to promote the progress of medicine, and he endeavours to put before physicians a grand ideal of their profession. In his attempts he takes the widest view of medicine. He bases it on the general relationship which man bears to nature as a whole ; he cannot divorce the life of man from that of the universe ; he cannot think of disease otherwise than as a phase of life. He is compelled therefore to rest his medical prac- tice upon general theories of the present state of things ; his incdi- cal system—if there is such a thing—is an adaptation of his cos- mogony. It is this latter which has been the stumbling-block to many past critics of Paracelsus, and unless its character 1s remem- bered it will be the same to others in the future. Dissatisfied with the Aristotelianism of his time, Paracelsus turned with greater expectation to the Neoplatonism which was reviving. His eager- ness to understand the relationship of man to the universe led him to the Kabbala, where these mysteries seemed to be explained, and from these unsubstantial materials he constructed, so far as it can be understood, his visionary philosophy. Interwoven with it, how- ever,

were the results of his own personal expericnee and work in natural history and chemical pharmacy and practical medicine,

unfettered by any speculative gencralizations, and so shrewd an observer as Paracelsus was must have often felt that his philosophy and his experience did not agree with onc another. It was doubt- less a very great ideal of medicine which Paracelsus raised ; but when it came to realizing it in every-day life he could hardly do clse than fail, During the three hundred years which have elapsed since his time knowledge both of the macrocosm and of the microcosm has increased far beyond what Paracelsus could have understood, even had it been all forctold him; the healing art has advanced also, though perhaps scarcely at the saine rate, but it would be as hard for us as for him to apply any cosmogony, however rational, to curing disease. We are not one whit ncarcr the solution of the problems which puzzled Paracelsus than he was ; the mystery of the origin, continuance, and stoppage of life is, perhaps through the abundance of light shed on other phenomena, even darker than it may have seemed to Paracelsus. If this be so it is no matter for surprise, or blame, or ridicule that he missed constructing a theory of the universe which at the same time would be a never-failing guide to him in the practical work of alleviating the evils which a residence in this universe scems to entail.

Some of his doctrines have been already alluded to in the article Mrpicrng (g.v.), and it would serve no purpose to give even a brief sketch of his vicws, seeing that thcir influence has passed entirely away, and that they are of intcrest only in their place in a general history of medicine and philosophy. Defective, however, as they may have been, and unfounded in fact, his kab- balistie doctrines led him to trace the dependence of the human body upon outer nature for its sustenance and cure. The doctrine of signatures, the supposed connexion of every part of the little world of man with a corresponding part of the great world of nature, was a fanciful and false exaggeration of this doctrine, but the idea carried in its train that of specifics. This led to the search for these, which werc not to be found in the bewildering and untested mixtures of the Galenic prescriptions. Paracelsus had seen how bodies were purified and intensified by chemical operations,

and he thought if plants and minerals could be made to yield thcir active principles it would surely be better to employ these than the crude and unpre- pared originals. He had besides arrived by some kind of intuition at the conclusion that the operations in the body were of a chemical eharacter, and that when disordered they were to be put right by counter operations of the same kind. It may be claimed for Paracelsus that he embraced within the idea of chemical action some- thing more than the alchemists did. Whether or not he believed in the philosopher's elixir is of very little consequence. If he did, he was like the rest of his age ; but he troubled himself very little, if at all, about it. He did believe in the immediate use for thera- peutics of the salts and other preparations which his practical skill enabled him to make. 'Technically he was not a chemist; he did not concern himself either with the composition of his compounds or with an explanation of what occurred in their making. If he eould get potent drugs to cure disease he was content, and he worked very hard in an empirical way to make them. That he found out some new compounds is certain ; but not one great and marked dis- covery can be ascribed to him. Probably therefore his positive services are to be summed up in this wide application of chemical ideas to pharmacy and therapeutics; his indirect and possibly greater services are to be found in the stimulus, the revolutionary stimulus, of his ideas about method and general theory. It is not difficult, however, to criticize Paracelsus and to represent him as so far below the level of his time as to be utterly contemptible. It is difficult, but perhaps not impossible, to raise Paracelsus to a place among the great spirits of mankind. It is most difficult of all to ascertain what his true charactcr really was, to appreciate aright this man of fervid imagination, of powerful and persistent con- victions, of unbatcd honesty and love of truth, of kcen insight into the errors (as he thought them) of his time, of a merciless will to lay bare these errors and to reform the abuses to which they gave rise, who in an instant offends us by his boasting, his grossness, his want of self-respect. Itis a probleni how to reconcile his ignorance, his weakness, his superstition, his crude notions, his erroneous observations, his ridiculous inferences and theorics, with his grasp of method, his lofty views of the true scope of medicine, his lucid statements, his incisive and epigrammatic criticisms of men and motives.

A character full of contradictory elements cannot but have had eontradictory judgments passed on it; and after three hundred a the animus

is as strong and the judgments are as diverse as

(J. F.)

PARADISE 1s an old Persian word (Pairidaéza in the Vendidad) meaning an enclosure, a park. The Greeks use the word in the form TapdSeos of the parks of the Persian kings, and it was borrowed also by the Hebrews in the form DTP (Cant. lv. 13; Eccles, ii. 5; Neh. ii. 8; A. V., “orchard,” “forest). The Septuagint chose the Greek form to translate the “garden ” of Genesis i. ; other

Greek and Latin versions followed them, and thus “paradise ” became the usual ecclesiastical name for the garden of Eden, which has been spoken of under Epzy, Now, as Paradise in this sense was the residence of man before he sinned, it was natural enough that theological speculation as to the dwelling-place of the righteous, after death, or in the future glory, should attach itself to the account given in Genesis of the original habitation of righteous Adam, and borrow not only the name but in some measure also the conception of paradise as there described. This took place in more than one way, as we see from the Jewish apocalyptic literature, and especially from the book of Enoch. Thus we find (1) the idea that the old Paradise still exists in a secret part of the earth, and that Enoch, Elijah, and other elect and righteous persons dwell there. This is the foundation of the doctrine of the earthly paradise, which passed into Christianity—being supposed to find confirmation in the New Testament, especially in Luke xxiii. 43. The earthly paradise, as developed by Christian fancy, is the old garden of Eden, which lay in the far East beyond the stream of Ocean, raised so high on a triple terrace of mountain that the deluge did not touch it. It is the residence of certain departed saints, and the pictures drawn of it are coloured with classical reminiscences of Elysium and the Islands of the Blest. How these outlines were filled up at different periods may be learned from Ephraem Syrus’s poem on Paradise (4th century), from Cosmas Indicopleustes (6th century), from the Divina Commedia of Dante, and other medizeval sources. A more ideal con- ception is (2) that of the heavenly paradise. To the Hebrews ideal things represent themselves as the heavenly counterparts of earthly things ; ideals which God’s people are to realize in the future are

already existent in heaven; or even things which have once been lost, but which are necessary to man's true happiness, are preserved in heaven. Thus the heavenly paradise was either a mere figure for the good things, corresponding to those which Adam lost, which are reserved in heaven for the righteous, or it was the heavenly archetype of which the earthly paradise was a copy, or on a crasser way of thinking it was held that the paradise which Adam lost had been actually trans- ported to heaven. The commonest form of the idea was perhaps that expressed in 4 Ezra and the Talmud, by saying that paradise was created before the earth. This paradise is not conceived as the place of the souls of all the righteous after death, but it is inhabited by certain select persons—Enoch, Elijah, Moses, Ezra—who enjoy in it the fellowship of the coming Messiah. After the last judgment, when the enemies of Israel are cast into Gehenna, the righteous are raised to paradise, and there behold the glory of God. Associated with such views as these, we find farther the idea (3) that in the future glory paradise, or the heavenly Jerusalem, which stood in paradise before the fall and was removed to heaven with it (Apoc. Baruch), will be brought down from heaven to earth, that the tree of life will be planted on Zion (Bk. Enoch, 4 Ezra), All these apocalyptic crudities, which it is not necessary to follow into details, are really mechanical developments of a legitimate, one may even say an inevitable, inference from the position that the garden of Gen. ii. represents a state of ideal human felicity lost through sin. For, if this be so, the future bliss of the redeemed must be conceived as somehow analogous to the life of Eden, and a literal un- imaginative conception of this analogy, making no allowance for the difference between the happiness of childhood, prior to experience of the everyday world, and the happiness of a life which has conquered the world, must end in regarding the future home of the blest as a mere reproduction of Eden. But the use of the word paradise for the home of

the blessed does not necessarily imply so mechanical a con- ception as we find in the Jewish apocalypses ; to speak of the future bliss at all, without the use of metaphysics, is possible only in the form of poetical description, and for such description the story of the garden of Eden supplied the necessary concrete elements, which the apocalyptists took literally, while

higher thinkers used them as symbols— and ordinary language, perhaps, as mere conventional equl- yalents—for ineffable things. Thus the images borrowed from Eden in such a prophecy as Isa. xi. are certainly not meant literally, any more than the figure of the tree of life in the book of Proverbs. So in the New Testament even Rev. ii. 7 is plainly figurative, and in Luke xxiii. 43 paradise is simply the place of bliss. In 2 Cor. xii. 4 paradise is a heavenly place where ineffable words were heard by Paul; but he himself does not know whether he visited it in the body or out of the body.

See Dillmann's Buch Enoch, and his articles " Eden Pcnerel "Paradies" in Schenkcl's Bibel-Lexicon; Weber, Alisynagogale Theologie ; and the books on Biblical theology. The Mohammedan paradise (al-Janna) is borrowed from the Jews, as appears from the name Jannatu'Adnin, that is, Garden of Eden. It is described in the Koran and by later theologians as a place of all sensuous delights, where the rightcous recline on couches in a fair garden drinking the delicious beverage supplied by the fountain Tasnim and waitcd on by damsels with great bright eyes Cir, Kory. 72, hence our "houri," which is properly a Persian form). The expression " gardens of Firdaus" (the Persian form of the word Paradise) occurs in Kor. xviii. 107, and is interpreted as meaning the highest region of the Janna (Beidawi én J.)

PARADISE, Brros or. See vol. iii. p. 778.

PARAFFIN. In the course of his classical investiga- tion on the tar produced in the dry distillation of wood, Reichenbach in 1830 discovered in it, amongst many other things, a colourless wax-like solid which he called paraffin (parum affinis) because he found it to be endowed with an extraordinary indifference towards all reagents. A few years later he isolated from the same material a liquid oil chemically similar to paraffin, to which he gave the name of ewpion (ciziwv, very fat). For many years both these bodies were known only as chemical curiosities, and even scientific men looked upon them as things entirely sui generis; this was natural enough as far as paraffin is concerned, but it is rather singular that it took so long before it was realized that eupion or something very much like it forms the body of Perroteum (q.v.), which had been known, since the time of Herodotus at least, to well up abundantly from the bowels of the earth in certain places. Though extensively known, it was used only as an external

medicinal agent, until the late Mr James Young conceived the idea of industrially working a com- paratively scanty oil-spring in Derbyshire, and subse- quently found that an oil similar to petroleum is obtained by the dry distillation of cannel coal and similar materials at low temperatures. This discovery developed into a grand industry, which may be said to have led to the utilization of those immense natural stores of petroleum in America. Scientific chemists naturally directed their attention to the products of these new industries, and it Was soon ascertained that solid paraffin and eupion, as well as natural and artificial petroleum, are substantially more or less impure mixtures of saturated hydrocarbons ; and so it

comes that, on the proposal of H. Watts, the word paraffin |

in scientific chemistry has been adopted as a generic term for this class of compounds of carbon and hydrogen.

When the electric light is generated within an atmo- sphere of hydrogen, then, at the immense temperature of the electric arc, part of the carbon of the charcoal terminals unites with the hydrogen into acetylene gas, C,Hp. Apart from this isolated fact, which was discovered by Berthelot in 1862, it might be said that the two elements are not capable of uniting directly, although an innumerable

formule) occupy the same volume.

are called. We speak of

variety of hydrocarbons exist in nature, and can be pro- duced artificially from organic substances. Individual hydrocarbons may differ very much in their properties. At ordinary temperature and pressure a few are gases; the majority present themselves as liquids ; not a few are solids. But the solids are fusible; and all liquid or liquefied hydrocarbons, at a high enough temperature, volatilize, as a rule without decomposition. To the latter circumstance to a great extent we owe our precise know- ledge of their chemical constitution.

In all the numerous series of hydrocarbons the percentages of carbon vary from 75 (in marsh gas) to 94°7 (in chrysene). Within this narrow range of

some 20 per cent. several dozens of elementary compositions have to be accommodated; and many of these, to be represented in formule C,Hy with an adequate degree of precision, require formule in which the coefficients x and y are so large that, by means of integers lcss than these, any fancy composition (within our limits) may be expressed with a degree of exactitude which is quite on a par with the analyses. But these hydrocarbons, in gencral, can be volatilized into gases, and in regard to these Avogadro's law tells us that quantities proportional to the mole- cular weights (i.e., the weights represented by the true chemical Hence, to find the true value, M=C,H,, of the formula as a whole, we need only determine the

vapour density, and from it calculate the weight of the respective hydrocarbon which, as a gas at @ and P millimetres pressure,

occupies the same volume as, for instance, H,O parts of steam. This is M. The clementary analysis enables us to ealeulate the weight xx C of carbon contained in M parts, and the analysis must be very poor to leave us in doubt as to whether it is for instanec 6×12 parts of carbon or 7×12 parts that we have to deal with. The reader will now understand how it has been possible to aseer-

tain the elementary composition of all pure hydrocarbons with a

degree of precision which goes beyond that of the analysis, and to prove what analysis could never have done by itself, namely, that there are numerous groups of hydrocarbons which have absolutely identical elementary compositions, —cases of isomerism, as they

'isomerism in the narrower sense" when the atomic formule are identical (there are, for instance, two

hydrides of butyl, C,Hjo), while we speak of "polymeric" bodies

when the several formulz are integer multiples of the same primi- tive group (¢g., ethylene, 2x CHy, and butylene, 4x CHg, are polymers to one another).

The following table gives an idca of the several classes of hydro- carbons which for us come more particnlarly into consideration.

Paraffins. Olefines. | Aeetylenes. Benzols. 1 Vacat. Vaecat. | yc Vaeat. 2 Coby C,H, | :5 = Vacat 3 Cag C,H, (S) £ Vacat 4 C,H, sis a Vacat. 5 CH» : aes Vacat 7 C, CrHy,y | eo C,H, 8 C CgHig B bE CgHio aoe aoe eee = oy I o Hy. nN CrHents CrHon ae CrHon-6

Oe ae i The first column, under “2,” gives the number of carbon atoms per molecule in the compounds whose formule stand in that hori- zontal line,— these lattcr being arranged in a descending serics according to the number of hydrogen atoms united with n atoms of carbon. Instead of pointing out those regularities, in regard to the atomic proportions in which carbon and hydrogen can unite into compounds, which the table illustrates so forcibly, let us rather state that the “benzols,” in opposition to all that stands to their left in the table, are things of their own kind. In them six atoms of the carbon are most firmly united (into a “ring,” as a certain theory says), and the rest are, so to say, hooked on to the ring 1n a less intimate fashion. Thus benzol is (C,)H,; cach one of the six

’s being tied to one of the six C’s ; toluol is (C,H;)—CHs ; it isa penzol from which one of the six hydrogen atoms has been removed, and in which the gap left has been filled by a “methyl,” CH, :—

C,H, oe CH,= 1Bls ap (CgsH;)—(CHs) . Benzol. Marsh gas.

But similarly two dehydrogenated benzols, C,H;, can unite into one double ring of diphenyl: 2C,H,— 9H =(CgH;)(CgH;); and two beuzol rings may unite more firmly in such a manncr that two carbon atoms of the one ring do service for the two rings, and a double ring is formed firmly united by these two common carbons, the four hydrogens of the original two benzols being away. This gives naphthalenc :—

C,H, + C,H, a aC as 4H a Caglals .

Benzol. Nephthalene.

238 eee) Gi

In a similar manner three benzols may unite into one anth-

Tacene :— Cire cl. + On, 40 Sse 8… Benzol. Anthracene.

Generally speaking, a hydrocarbon is the more volatile the less the number of carbon atoms and the greater the number of hydrogen atoms in the molecule. Thus, in the series of “paraffins,” CH, (marsh gas) and C,H, (ethane) are gases, C,H, (propane) and C,H, (butane) are very volatile liquids, and C,H)», &c., are liquids,—with higher and higher boiling points as we ascend the series. From a certain value of 2 upwards we find ourselves amongst the paraffins proper, which are solids, more or less easily fusible, but not, in general, volatile without decomposition, Benzol, C,H,, and its neighbouring homologues are volatile liquids. Naphthalene and anthracene are crystalline solids, fusible at 79°‘2 and 180° C., and boiling at 217° and above 300° C. respectively without decomposition.

All hydrocarbons agree in this, that they are practically insoluble in water, but more or less readily soluble (in general) in alcohol and in ether. They are all combustible ; the more readily volatile ones are inflammable. Any complete combustion, of course, leads to the formation of only carbonic acid and water, with evolution of a large amount of heat ; but the mechanism of the process is more or less complex. Naphthalene and anthracene remain un- decomposed at a red heat; only at the very high tempera- ture of their flames, and by the co-operation of the oxygen of the air, they are decomposed with large elimination of charcoal; a similar, though less, stability is exhibited by the benzols. The paraffins, on the other hand, are relatively unstable. Marsh gas, it is true, stands a red heat; but, to pass to the other end of the series, the paraffins proper, and also the higher liquid paraffins to some extent, even when being distilled, and especially when distilled “under pressure,” 2.¢., at higher temperatures than their natural boiling points, break up into olefines and lower paraffins (Thorpe and John Young). Similar changes take place when the vapours of paraffins are passed through red-hot tubes; only the products formed then suffer deeper-going decomposition with formation of hydrogen, marsh-gas, acetylene, ethylene, and charcoal, and, last not least, benzols and naphthalene. To this latter fact the paraffins owe their pre-eminent fitness as illuminating agents,

When organoid minerals, such as cannel coal, shale, &c., are subjected to dry distillation, all the several classes of hydrocarbons are in general produced at the same time but, from what we have said it will be understood that, even with the same material, the quantitative composition of the complex vapour which comes out of the retort depends on the way in which the distillation is being conducted. If we operate at the lowest practicable temperature; comparatively little gas is produced, and in the condensible part of the vapour the paraffins pre- dominate largely ; at a bright red heat, such as is used in making coal gas, and especially if the vapours have to pass along red-hot surfaces before they get into the condenser pipes, more gas is produced, and the place of the liquid paraffins is taken by benzols. These latter, however, are always accompanied by naphthalene, often also by anthra- cene, and invariably by certain ternary benzol-derivatives, namely, by “phenols,” feebly acid bodies containing hydroxyl groups, OH’s, where the corresponding hydro- carbon bore plain hydrogens (ordinary phenol, C,H,(OH), derived from benzol, C,H;H, is a representative example), and, secondly, basic compounds of carbon, hydrogen, and nitrogen. Of the latter aniline and picoline— both C,H,;N, but widely different in their properties ——may be quoted as examples. The gas produced in this case through the presence in it of the vapour of higher hydrides, but especially of acetylene, O,H,, and

FRIN

benzol is highly luminous. Supposing now, as a third instance, the distillation to be conducted at a white heat, and so that the primary vapour has to wind its way through a spiral pipe kept at a bright red heat, the pro- portion of gas increases largely, and there is an increased yield of retort charcoal; but the liquid hydrocarbons of all classes almost vanish; the gas consists mainly of hydrogen, marsh gas, carbonic oxide, and carbonic acid, and gives little light when kindled.

The aim of the paraffin oil manufacturer is to produce the best possible approximation to a mixture of parafiins, wherefore he conducts his distillation at the lowest work- ing temperature. Of course his paraffin mixture contains more or less of the other classes of bodies referred to, whose removal, however, offers no great difficulty. In the laboratory we

should commence by shaking the crude oil with caustic alkali ley, which withdraws the phenols and other acid bodies, as part of a lower layer, the upper being purified oil. By shaking the latter with dilute sulphuric acid the bases are removed as a solution of their sulphates, and a still purer oil results. Application of con- centrated sulphuric acid to the latter removes part at least of the benzols and olefines as sulpho-acids, and also of the phenols and all the bases, should the two preceding operations have been omitted. But the most thorough mode of getting quit of the benzols and their derivatives is —after having exhausted the milder agents—to shake the oil with first aqueous and then stronger and stronger nitric acid, which reagent converts the benzol-bodies into nitro- products, soluble in the acid, or removable, after separation of the acid layer, by aqueous alkali. By all these tortures the paraffins—being what the name implies—are not much affected, so that what ultimately survives all belongs to their family. The separation of the individual paraftins from one another is a very difficult problem which has not yet found a satisfactory solution. What we know of in- dividual paraffins is derived chiefly from the investigation of decompositions of pure chemical substances leading to the formation of that one paraffin principally if not solely. To split up a mixture of paraffins approximately the only known method is fractional distillation (see DisTrLLaTIoN, vol. vil. p. 260), preferably by means of an apparatus so constructed that the vapour, before reaching the con- denser, ascends through an intermediate inverted con- denser or still-head, and there suffers partial condensation at some suitable temperature (enforced in the most perfect form of the apparatus by an oil-bath surrounding the still- head). In this latter case, singularly—not as a matter of course by any means—what goes over boils very nearly at the temperature of the still-head. This particular form of the method therefore lends itself chiefly for the final purification of an unitary substance of known boiling point already purified by preceding distillations. With mixtures of unknown composition the process is very tedious, and may assume something like this form.

We distil the substance (slowly and with ample chance of partial condensation) and collect as separate fractions what came over at, for instance, 100° to 105°, 105° to 110°, 110° to 115°, &e., as L, IL, IIL, IV., &e. Baciae these when redistilled yields I. and II. and III. and IV., &c., which parts are poured into the respective receptacles, and on this principle

we continue working, If the sub- stance happens to be of comparatively simple composition, it usually turns out, after a while, that (say) the two fractions II. and VI. increase while the rest get less and less ; and by working on we may be able to isolate two bodies of the constant boiling points ¢, and ¢, respectively, with formation of “tails” of other boiling points. Unfortunately, even a constant boiling point is no proof of chemical purity ; and, if a constant-boiling substance is a

eee Wee

mixture, only chemical methods can help us out of the difficulty.

The following table (extracted from Roscoe and Schorlemmer’s Handbook of Chemistry, German edition) gives the names, specific gravities, and boiling points of the more important paraffins The first column, “n,” gives’ the number of carbon-atoms in the molecule, and consequently the molecular weight M and the vapour density S. In the case of “pentan,” for instance, we have n=5 ; henee M=C,Hj)= 72; and, as H,=2, the gas-density, referred to hydrogen=S = 36, while, as air is 14:45 times as heavy as hydrogen, for the gas-density referred to air the value

4M+14‘45=36 +1445 =2°491.

Boiling Point in Sp. Gr. of I Name. Degrees. Lig. at ¢° C. Fahr. Cent. t 2 at Liquid at —11° C. and 180 atmos heres’ 1 |*Methan or marsh £a8..ccccessoceess iaestire (Cailletet). Pp 2|*Ethan or dimethy1…...ereseseeees ene. a B |PPVOPAaN …..eeceesecscsaeccesccesecseneeeees —13° to —22° |—25°to —30°| 4 [*Butan, MOLMAL .....-.ccceenceseeeeeeee +34° +1° 0°600 |} () 4) Isobutan or trimethylmethan, a gas 1° —17° () 5 *Pentan, MOLMAL....cccccrscscccseeseerees 99° to 102° | 487° to 39° | 0°6263 | 17° 5 |PISOPENtAMN ..secsecceressernnreeeccceeeeecsees 86° 30° 0°6385| 14° 5| Tetramethylmethan 49° 9°°5 (2) 6 |*Hexan, normal…..... oe 156° 69° 0°663 | 17° G |FISONCKAM.....ccencseeseecesceesseeses 144° 62° 0-701 0° 6| Methyl-diethylmethan…....0. 140° 60° (?) 6| Tetramethylethan…....—c.—seseeeee 136° 8° 0°6769 | 10° 6) Trimethylethylmethan…..... ...-| 109° to 118° | 438° to 48° () 7 |*Heptan, nOrmal…..serecceereees 209° 98°°4 0:7005 | 0° 7|

Isoheptan…...cscecsccssceee 195° 90°°3 0°6969 0° 7| Triethylmethan…..... a 205° 96° 0°689 | 27° 7| Diethyl-dimethylmetha ..| 187° to 189° | 86° to 87° | O0°7111} 0° 8 |*Octan, NOTMAL.....ceceesseersseeceeres 258° 125°°5 0°7188) 0° 8| Tetramethyl]-butan…....ecsceoerseee 220 108°°5 0°7111 0° 8 ep iethan, fuses at 96 \ 221° to 223° | 105° to 106°| (7) 9 |*Nonan, normal…....c0e .| 297° to 298° | 147° to 148° | 0°7279 | 13°5 9} Tetramethyl-pentan.. ob 270° BO 0°7247 | 0° 9| Pentamethyl-butan….. 66 266° 130° @) 10 *Dekan [normal ?]..... ..| 331° to 334° | 166° to 168° | 0°7394 | 13°5 10| Dimethyl-heptylmethan…....ss0e 320° about 160° (?) 10| Tetramethy]-hexan or “diamyl”... 320° 160° 0°7413; 0 11 | Hendekan…....csccccssscocerssccceecneeee Not yet isolated.| ... 12| Dodekan, normal…...,.,e0e-eseeerveees 396° 202° (?)

13

14 > Not isolated yet.

15.

}16| Hekdeka-dekan, normal, fuses at 592° | SO ccsee-cereccorccsstorccssreseses

Probably all the paraffins enumerated in the table are present in paraffin oil and in petroleum ; those marked * have been actually found in the one or the other. The solid paraffins are not known as unitary chemical substances ; no chemist as yet has succeeded in splitting up solid paraffin into its proximate components. The manufacturer, in regard to the liquid paraffins even, does not trouble him- self with the isolation of chemical species; he contents himself with splitting up his oil into fractions correspond- ing to certain ranges of boiling point, and consequently adapted to certain practical applications. But even the boiling point is not much heeded industrially ; the several kinds of oil are defined by their specific gravity at 60° F., which, as experience shows, increases as the boiling point rises, But it is as well here to point out that the same (initial) boiling point even, and in a much higher degree the same specific gravity, may be exhibited by oils of widely different proximate composition. Hence a relatively (and in a sense sufficiently) high specific gravity is no guarantee against dangerous

inflammability; the degree of inflammability in an oil must be—and in practice always is being—determined by direct experiment. For this purpose it is not sufficient to heat a sample oil in an open vessel gradually to higher and higher temperatures, and to note the temperature at which the atmosphere over the oil proves inflammable when a lighted taper is brought in contact with it. By this method (which formerly was the universally recognized test) the most varying results may be obtained with the same oil. Far

FFIN

to time to apply a light to its atmosphere. execution of this test many varieties of apparatus have been proposed. That adopted by Abel, and now (1884) legally recognized in Great Britain, is made of sheet copper, the exact thickness of which is prescribed for every part. an air-bath, which latter is heated by immersion ina warm- water bath, provided with an air-jacket. oil cup is pierced with three circular orifices, one in the

holes for admitting air at the close of each trial. holes are covered by a slide so contrived that when the

239

more trustworthy is the close test first proposed by Keates about 1870, the principle of which is to heat the oil within a close vessel which is opened only from time For the

The oil is placed in a close cup, suspended in The top of the

centre for trying the best flame, and two smaller lateral The

central hole has become almost uncovered the lateral ones are also open. The slide carries a small colza-oil lamp

suspended on trunnions, having a flame of a prescribed

size. A pendulum two feet in length vibrates in front of the observer, who, in testing, withdraws the slide slowly during three vibrations, tilts the lamp

to bring its flame in contact with the atmosphere of the vessel, and quickly shuts the slide during the fourth vibration. To execute a test the oil at about 60° F. is placed in the cup, which is

immersed in the water-bath having water of 130° F. A

thermometer plunged into the oil and another in the water-bath indicate their temperatures. When the oil has approached its presumable flashing point, trials are made at each rise of 1° F. in the temperature of the oil. The lowest temperature at which the atmosphere of the cup inflames is the flashing point of the oil tested. The legal minimum flashing point of burning oil by the close test is 75° F., corresponding to about 100°F. by the obsolete open test.

The variety of mixed paraffins which the oil-distiller produces may be arranged under the following heads :— (1) oils too volatile to be available for domestic illumina- tion, serving chiefly as solvents; (2) burning oils, as required for house lamps; (3) oils of very high boiling point, available, and used chiefly, for lubricating purposes ; (4) solid paraffin.

The products of the second class have long come to practically supersede the colza oil which used to be the illuminating oil par excellence. Over it they offer the advantages of greater cheapness and of giving, weight for weight, more light. But their drawbacks are that, how- ever carefully refined they may be, they have, when allowed to leak out, or in lamps of inferior construction, a somewhat disagreeable pungent odour, and that there is always a lurking danger in the possible presence of highly volatile inflammable hydrocarbons. Colza oil will never burn without a wick ; paraffin oil or petroleum may do so. Products of the second and third classes, separately or combinedly, are of course available as fuels proper, 2.¢., for the production of heat. At the time when mineral oil was first produced in great quantity in America, the advantages it would offer as a fuel for marine boilers especially were very emphatically insisted on. Of course mineral oil can be more economically stored than coal, and its combustion-heat is susceptible of more exhaustive utilization. The latter fact forms the raison d’étre of those beautiful petroleum kitchen-stoves and culinary lamps which are very much used on the Continent where gas is not at hand. But to talk of mineral oil as a cheap fuel for wholesale heating is

nonsense. H. St Claire Deville, about 1870, made an extensive investigation on the calorific value of American petroleum which, as we know, is pretty much the same thing as paraftin oil. He used a large apparatus, enabling him to burn several hundred litres of oil in one experiment ; in fact he realized

more fully than other experimenters had ever done the conditions prevailing in the working of steam-boilers ; the only difference was that he took care to collect all the heat produced in a large mass of water of known weight, and measured the heat by the increase of temperature produced in this heat receptacle. He found that even heavy Virginia lubricating oil gave not more than 10,180 units of heat (Centigrade) per unit-weight of fuel burned. But, on the other hand, in direct experiments made by Scheurer-Kestner, a coal containing 88-4 per cent. of carbon, 4°4 of hydrogen, and 7:2 per cent. of oxygen, nitrogen, and ash gave 9628 units of heat, while another

coal of the same elementary composition gave 9117 units.

Gas retort coke (though a far closer approximation to pure carbon) yields only 8050 units. Supposing coal yielded just that in opposition to the 10,000 units from petroleum, it is clear that the latter must not cost more than 1:25 times as much as coal weight for weight, or else it is the more expensive fuel. Take one ton of coal at 10s.; eight- tenths of a ton of petroleum is its calorific equivalent ; but this weight of the oil (taking the specific gravity at 0°8) measures 224 gallons. Hence petroleum, to be as cheap as coal, must not cost more than about a _halfpenny a gallon. Cheap as mineral oil is nowadays, it has not yet come down to this level. .

To pass to the lubricating oil (third class), it, like the burning oil, competes with the fats and fatty oils which until lately were exclusively employed. In opposition to these it offers other and very substantial advantages besides its lower price. Good mineral lubricating oil may have such very high flashing point that it may be positively less inflammable than fatty oils or tallow; and, as a lubricant for high-pressure steam cylinders, it offers the great advantage that it is not, like fatty oils, decomposed by hot steam into glycerin and fatty acids, which latter cannot but attack the metal of the

machinery to some extent. A still more important feature in mineral lubricating oil is that, even when diffused throughout:a mass of cotton (or other textile) waste, it shows no tendency towards spon- taneous combustion. In exhaustive experiments by Galletly and by Coleman, it was found that mineral lubricating oils diffused through textile waste do not take fire at temperatures at which even colza oil ignites, and also that fatty lubricants to which from 20 to 50 per cent. of mineral oil was added were thereby prevented from igniting.

Solid paraffin, industrially and commercially, is a sub- stitute for the more expensive stearin as a material for candles. To this latter it is more than equivalent in light- giving power ;. but it offers the drawback of greater soft- ness and lower fusing point. In practice paraffin is always alloyed with stearin to produce candles possessing the necessary degree of hardness and stability of form.

The Paraffin Oil Industry of Scotland.

In December 1847 Lyon Playfair drew the attention of the late Mr Jaines Young, F.R.S., a Glasgow chemist, to a spring or exuda- tion of petroleum at Alfreton in Derbyshire, and induced him to leasc the spring, with the view of turning the material to commercial advantage. In 1848 Mr Young commenced the purification aud preparation from this petroleum of two varieties of oil—one, thick, for lubricating, the other, thin and limpid, for burning in lamps. Tt was found that this crude petroleum contained paraffin in notable proportion; but the solid paraffin was not separated for trade purposes, and that body continued still a simple chemical curiosity. Within two years the quantity of petroleum yielded by the spring began to decrease, and in the beginning of 1851 it was practically exhausted, and the business there ceased. Meantime it had occurred to Mr Young that the petroleum he was working might have becn produced by the action of heat on the underlying coal ; and, under the impression that it might be possible by artificial means to pro- duce a similar substance, he began an extensive series of experiments on the destructive distillation of coal. Ag the result of a long-con-

rFRFIWN

tinued investigation in this direction, with many varieties of coal, Mr Young in October 1850 secured a patent for the manufacture of paraffin and paraffin oil from bituminous coal, which patent became the basis of the new industry. “The coals,” the patentee says, “which I deem to be best fitted for the purpose are such as are usually called parrot eoal, cannel coal, and gas coal, and which are much used in the manufacture of gas for the purpose of illumination.” Early in 1850 Mr Young’s attention was called to the Boghead mineral, which he found to be of all the substances experimented upon the most promising for his purpose. That circumstance determined Mr Young and his original partners to set up their works at Bathgate in the region of the Boghead mineral, where con- sequently, in 1850, the necessary buildings and plant were erected, and manufacturing operations were begun in 1851. In 1853 a law- suit of great importance, which turned on the scientific question “What is coal?” took place betwecn the proprietor of a portion of the Boghead mineral and his mineral tenant, who was entitled to work coal only. The proprietor averred that the mineral in question was not coal; but, after a great amount of scientific evidence on both sides had been heard, the decision was that the substance came, so far as regarded the purposes of the lease, within the definition of coal. Had the issue of the case been in favour of the proprietor of the mineral, Mr Young’s patent would have been practically valueless, for he claimed only the distillation of bituminous coal. The dis- tillation of mineral schists or shale at a low red heat had, moreover, been previously patented by Du Buisson; and the only raw materials which have been used to any extent in the Scottish industry are the Boghead mineral and subsequently bituminous shale.

The essential feature of Young’s invention was the distillation of bituminous substances at the lowest temperature at which they could be volatilized to a practically sufficient extent. In practice it was found that a temperature of 800° F. is the point about which the best results are obtained.

The material exclusively distilled in the carly ycars of the industry in Scotland was the Boghead cannel or Torbanehill mineral. The supply of this mineral was limited, and, as its value for gas-making as well as for oil-distilling was very great, it rapidly advanced in price from 138s. 6d. per ton, at which it was contracted for when the Bathgate works began operations,

till it rose to 90s. per ton before its final disappearance from the market about 1866. As early as 1859 the bituminous shales which are found in the Scottish Carboniferous formation began to attract attention as a possible source of raw material for the industry, and in that year a seam was experimentally opened up at Broxburn, Linlithgowshire. In 1861 a shale oil work was established at Gavieside, West Calder, and by the period of the expiry of Young's patent in 1864 several works distilling shale were in operation. But, while from the Bog- head mineral from 120 to 130 gallons of crude oil were obtainable for every ton distilled, the ordinary bituminous shales yield at most only 35 gallons per ton ; and even with the improved methods of working in use at the present day the average yield of crude oil from shales is not more than 32 gallons per ton.

The bituminous shales of Scotland are found in a wide belt of the Carbonifcrous formation, extending from Ayrshire in a north-easterly direction to the Fife eoast. In Ayr and Renfrew they are found to some extent in the true Coal-measures; but, generally, and especially in the east, they are obtained in the Lower Carboniferous series. These oil shales consist of fissile argittaceous bands, highly impreg- nated with bituminous mattcr. As a rule the shale of the west country yieldsa high percentage of crude oil, but the Linlithgow, Midlothian, and Fife shales produce oils comparatively rich in lubricating oil and solid paraffin, the most valuable product of the industry. The ordinary Broxburn shale contains 17 per cent. of bituminous volatile matter, and leaves 76 per cent. of spent shale (char) on distillation. In contrast with this is the composition of the Boghead mincral, which contained not less than 65 per cent. of volatile bituminous matter and only 22 per cent. of ash.

In the early years of the industry at Bathgate, the two classes of oil—heavy (lubricant) and light (illuminating)—were the products to which attention was principally directed. Paraffin was separated from the heavy oils; but the demand for it was at first small, and many difficulties had to be overcome before eandles consisting principally of that body could be favourably brought into the market. "With the increased knowledge, improved methods, and eager competition of the present day, the range of products has largely extended, and almost everything obtainable from the shale, except the incombustible ash, is turned to profitable account. The

commercial products embrace sulphate of ammonia, illuminating and heating gas, gasoline and naphtha, highly volatile oils, several grades of burning oil and of lubricating oil, heavy green oil used for making oil gas, and solid paraffin. The sequence of manufacturing operations las not changed in any esscntial particular since first established by Young; but at every stage and in all the appliances numerous and important modifications have been, and continue to be, actively introduced, all tending to greater cconomy of work, increase of production, and improvement of the quality and variety of commercial products.

PARAFFIN

Manufacturing Operations.

The manufacture divides itself into two distinct sections :—(1) the crude works, dealing with the preparation and distillation of the shale and with the production of crude oil and the collateral products

(Iluminating gas, partly burned a partly condensed to form gasoline.

Oieewan ae B. Burning portion.

Coke,

.. oil. {

SHALE,

C. Heavy oi] with hard

With sulphuric acid scale.

Ammoniaeal liquor. { =Sulphate of ammonia.

Crude Works.—Bituminous shale as brought from the pits is passed through powerful toothed cylinder machinery, reducing it to fragments not larger than a man’s fist. In this state it is conveyed in hutches to the retorts, in which it undergoes destruc- tive distillation—the distinctive operation under Mr Young’s patent. The retorts used have undergone many and important

modifications. arranged in benches, in all respects like gas retorts, were employed, put these in the Scottish trade very quickly gave way to the vertical retort. The form of vertical retort originally in general use consisted of a cast-iron cylinder, circular or oval in cross section, 8 or 10 feet in height and about 2 feet in diameter, or equivalent thereto. It tapered at the top, where it was provided with a hopper for charging the material to be distilled and a valve for closing the retort mouth. The bottom end dipped into a trough of water, forming an efficient lute, and effectually preventing the escape downwards of any of the gaseous products of distillation. These retorts were arranged in linear benches of six, three on each side of a furnace fed with coal, the heat from which passed to each side into the chamber or oven in which the retort stood. The distilled vapours passed away by a pipe at the upper end of the retort, their emission being aided by a jet of superheated steam injected at the bottom. The distillation in these retorts was continuous, a portion of spent shale being withdrawn through the water in the trough every hour or thereby, and a corresponding amount of fresh shale being added by the hopper.

As competition with American petroleum increased, the efforts of manufacturers were dirccted to cheapening the distilling process, by utilizing the spent shale from the retorts in its hot condition as fuel for distilling the succeeding charge. The difficulties in the way of accomplishing this were very great, chiefly on account of the large proportion of ash in the coked residue, amounting to from $5 to 90 per cent. of the whole. To use spent shale so poor in carbon it was essential that it should be dropped into the fur- nace direct from the retort without exposure to the air, and this was first successfully accomplished by the improved retorts aud furnace patented by Mr Norman M. Henderson in 1878. According to the Henderson system, which has been adopted in the more important Scottish oil works—a series of four vertical retorts are arranged in quadrangular order over a common fire-chamber or furnace ; the bottom ends of the retorts are provided with doors capable of being closed gas-tight ; and immediately below each door there is a valve which, in one position, and while the charge is being distilled, entirely cuts off the retort bottom from the furnace or fire-chamber, leaving the retort bottom exposed to the external air, but when the retort charge has been exhausted of oil, and is about to be passed into the furnace as fuel, the valve can be turned over

outwards, in which position it forms an inclined shoot contiguous to the bottom of the retort and the fire-chamber. The door-closing at the bottom of the retort having been first withdrawn, and the valve drawn back, the contents of the retort pass freely into the furnace, where their combustion is at first assisted by a jet of the incondensible inflammable gas given off by the retorts themselves.

Each Henderson retort can contain about 18 cwt. of shale. The four retorts forming a set are being cleared in rotation at intervals of five hours, so that each charge suffers distillation for twenty hours. The temperature is kept at about 800° F., this giving the best results. The vapour produced in the retort is led off by a pipe issuing from near the bottom, and, in order to avoid unnecessarily prolonged sojourn of the vapour in the hot vessel, a Jet of superheated steam is constantly made to stream in above and guide the vapour downwards. The vapour, which amounts to about 8000 cubic feet per ton of shale distilled, is passed through a system of condensing pipes, communicating below through a pro- perly-divided horizontal chest, like that used in gas works for the condensation of the tar, From the last compartment of the con- denser the still uncondensed gas is drawn away by a fan or other

exhaust" through a sct of "scrubbers." In the first of these the

PAOMENCIDIIUeieseteesevscore

Originally, as was natural, horizontal retorts |

—illuminating gas, gasoline, and ammonia; and (2) the refinery, in which the crude oil is purified and separated or split up into the considerable range of commercial products obtainable from it. The

following table shows the stages through which the various pro- ducts are derived from shale':—

A 2, Solvent naphtha, A 3. Burning naphtha, A 4, Burhing oil.

Bee Naphtha®..,..s—.ces

Teetocsweatcerorsccsesusoreststsirs sss Al, Gasoline.

Burning oil of various den- sities, Intermediate oi] with soft) 1, Intermediate oil.

1 Be, Burning fraction, seale. 2, Soft scale.

| B 3, Heavy oil with iol 1, Lubricating oils, various scale, densities. C1. Heavy oil with soft (2, Soft scale. scale,

C 2. Hard scale. = Paraffin of high melting

point.

gas is washed with water and thus stripped of what it still contains of ammonia ; in the succeeding ones it is washed with heavy oil, which withdraws a considerable portion of the vapours of the more highly volatile hydrocarbons which are diffused throughout it. From this heavy-oil solution the absorbed hydrocarbons are extracted by distillation as “naphtha.” The gas, after having thus been freed from its more readily condensible parts, is either led away into gas- holders to be utilized as illuminating gas or used directly as a fuel (see above). The product which collects in the condenser chests consists of crude oil (about one-fourth of it) and a weak aqueous solution of ammonia and volatile ammonia salts, containing from 2 to 5 per cent, of real ammonia, NH,, which, however, in all cases represents only a small percentage of the potential ammonia which was contained in the original shale in the form of nitrogenous carbon

compounds. In the golden days of paraffin oil making this ammonia

liquor was simply allowed to go to waste ; but when the American petroleum began to depress the prices of the oils the manufacturer saw the propriety of working up the liquors for sulphate of ammonia by the same methods as are employed in connexion with the coal-gas industry (see NiTRoGEN, vol. xvii. p. 519). And as, during the last decade or two, the demand for ammonia has becn steadily increasing, the ammonia in the shale industry by and by rose from the rank of a minor collateral to that of one of the principal products, and a number of attempts have been made to recover

that part of the nitrogen which, in the ordinary process, is lost as a component of the coke. Dr H. Grouven proved (1875-77) that all nitrogenous organic or organoid matter when exposed to a current of steam at about 1000° C. burns into carbon oxides, hydrogen, and ammonia, the last-named including all the nitrogen. Messrs G. T. Beilby and William Young have worked out and patented a process for discounting this fact in the shale industry for a more exhaustive extraction of the ammonia. In one of the later forms of the process the shale is being distilled in retorts standing over a fire- brick chamber surrounded by flues and kept at a far higher temperature than the retorts themselves. The coke from the retorts is discharged straight into this chamber, and therein exposed toa mixed current of steam aud air, which burns away the carbonaceous part into carbonic acid, carbonic oxide, hydrogen, and ammonia. The large mass of hot gas thus produced passes next through the retorts above to aid in the distillation, and conjointly with the retort vapour is subjected to systematic successive condensation. The incondensible gas which is ultimately obtained includes all that the gas from the ordinary process contains, and also a large proportion of hydrogen and carbonic oxide from the hot-chamber process. It serves as a fuel for heating the chamber and the retorts; but, as it does not furnish quite enough of heat for all this, a combined retort and gas-producer 1s built into the bench with the shale retorts. This supplementary apparatus 1s charged with coal, which, in it, is first distilled, then converted partially into gas by steam and at last completely by a regulated cur- rent of air. The gas from the first and second stages is scrubbed to strip it of its ammonia and tar, and then, conjointly with the gas from the third, used as a fuel for the retorts. In this way the advantages of gas-firing are secured at little expense, as the condensed products are nearly equivalent in money value to the coal consumed. In the Young-Beilby process, which is extensively used in Scottish works, the yield of ammonia is on the average double, and in special cases five times, that obtained in the ordin- ary process of distillation. a -4 The Working of the Ozl.—The composition of the crude oil is very variable (see above). It generally forms a very dark green, almost black, liquid, somewhat tarry In appearance, and endowed with a highly unpleasant empyreumatic odour. The specific gravity ranges from 0°862 to 0°895. Each tou of shale distilled yields on an average 30 gallons of crude oil (about 260 tb), 700 tb of coke, gas, and loss, and 1270 ib of cinders. The crude oil on refining yields 88 to 44 per cent. of oils available as “spirit ” or

for burning, 15 to 20 per cent. of lubricating oil, and 9 to 12 per cent. of solid paraffin. AVML —~9r

242

Refinery.—The first operation in oil refining consists in submit- ting the crude oil to distillation in large pot-shaped stills capable of holding 1200 or 1400 gallons. The distillation is continued till only a pure vesicular coke remains in the still, and the vapours (condensed by the ordinary worm-pipe arrangement) constitute “onee-run oil,” which from its bright green colour is also known as green oil, The once-run oil is the material from which, by a repeated series of washings with sulphuric acid and caustic soda and fractional distillations, the graduated series of purified pro- ducts is finally obtained. ; ,

Washing.—Once-run oil contains a series of basic and acid com- ponents. To separate these the oil is first repeatedly treated with sulphuric acid of different degrees of strength, which is thoroughly intermixed and brought in contact with the oil by mechanical means in an agitating tank or washer. The acid first used is a weak tarry acid which has been already used in a subsequent stage of the manufacture. This produces a copious tarry deposit, which is removed ; the process is repeated with a similar result ; and there- after the oil is further treated with two successive washings of strong vitriol. After settling and removal of the precipitated tars, a similar series of washings with caustic soda solutions of increasing strength, and corresponding precipitation and removal of tars which combine with the alkali, are carried out. During both the acid and the soda treatments the oil is maintained at a tempera- ture of about 100° F. by the circulation of steam through the tanks in coiled pipes. The sulphuric acid tars are to sonie extent used as fuel in the fractionating stills.

Fractional Distillation. —The purified once-run oil is a very mixed substance, giving off vapours within a wide range of temperatures, which condense into products of varied specific gravity. By the series of fractional distillations to which it is submitted a series of products are ultimately obtained comparatively homogeneous in constitution, which distil within relatively narrow limits of tem- perature. The ordinary method of fractionating once-run oil consists in running it into large cylindrical boiler

stills heated by furnaces in which the acid tar already spoken of is consumed. The stills have led into them steam-pipes, through which steam is injected into the oil in process of distillation as required. When the heat is first raised, superheated steam is injected to aid in carry- ing off the lighter vapours, which are condensed as naphtha or “spirit.” As the distillation proceeds, and the gravity of the con- densed product increases, it is run into separate receivers, and thus a series of fractionated intermediate products is produced, the first portion up to 0°750 specific gravity being naphtha, while from 0°750 to 0°850 is the burning oil portion, and the subsequent portion separated is heavy oil containing paraffin. The portion remaining in the still is removed to the residue stills, in which it is distilled till the still contains only coke. The oil driven off from the residue stills is called “heavy oil and paraffin,” the paraffin house for treatment there.

Improved Fractionating Stills.—Many attempts have been made to adapt the fractionating still to a system of continuous working by keeping the contents at a constant level as the distillation pro- ceeds. For a long period continuous distillation was only imper- fectly applicable, and yielded unsatisfactory results. The lighter fractions alone were driven off, and as the distillation progressed the density of the contents of the still gradually increased, making the difference between the oil added to the still and that within it increasingly great. In the end the contents of the still had to be removed and completely distilled as one charge in a separate still. In 1883 Mr Norman M. Henderson, the patentee of the Henderson retort, patented a continuous process of distillation which com- pletely obviates all difficulties, and largely reduces the time, labour, and cost of fractionation as compared with the ordinary intermittent method. According to Henderson’s system, purified once-run oil is fractionated continuously in a connected series of three cylindrical stills. ach still is fitted with inlet and outlet pipes, the mouths of which opening upwards are placed at opposite extremities of the still, The outlet pipe of No. 1 passes as inlet into No. 2, and similarly outlet of No. 2 is connected as inlet with No. 3, while the outlet of No. 3 passes into one or more common residue stills. The inlet or feed pipe of No. 1 traverses the long horizontal con- densing pipes of the whole three, and thus the once-run oil, while absorbing heat before entering No. 1 still, also aids the condensation of the vapours. In working there is a constant feeding of heated once-run oil into No, 1 still, a like steady flow from No. 1 to No.

2, from No. 2 to No. 3, and from No. 3 to a residue still. The oil of course increases in density as it passes onwards; but the specific gravity in each still is practically constant, and, as the heat applied is increased In proportion to the gravity, the oil vaporized in each separate still is of uniform quality and specific gravity. In No. 8 ee where, in consequence of the high gravity and temperature,

ere is a tendency to deposit carbonaceous matter, circulating plates or dishes hinged to each side of the still, and concentric with the bottom shell, are placed. The circulation of the oil from the bottom up the sides in the space between the shell and the circulating plates is directed and assisted by jets of steam from a pipe laid

and passes to.

PARAFFIN

along the bottom of the still. In this way the oil is kept in steady circulation up the sides and down the centre, and any deposit of coke which may take place forms on the inner surface of the cireu- lating plates, from which there is provision for its casy removal when required.

The manufacturer has now his material split up into three pro- ducts—naphtha, burning oil, and heavy oil with paraffin. By renewed treatments with acid and alkali and fractional distilla- tions, these products are further purified and diffcrentiated. We cannot go into technical details, andin regard to the principles upon which the processes are founded reference may be made to what has becn said above in connexion with corresponding laboratory methods. As a final result the following products (or a similar series of other products) are produced and sent out into the market :—

1. Gasoline : a mixture of paraffins, so volatile that a current of air by being passed through it at ordinary temperatures is converted into combustible (uon- explosive) gas.

2. Naplitha: a mixture of hydrocarbons which in volatility and otherwise are equivalent to the crude benzol of the coal-gas industry.

8. Burning oil: a mixture of oils sufficiently volatile and light to be suitable for combustion in domestic lamps with wicks, and yct practically free of dangerously volatile inflammable components.

4, Heavy oil, corresponding to arange of very high boiling points; too heavy or viscid to be raised by the wick of a lamp, but well adapted for lubricating purposes. This part contains the solid paratfin which the manufacturer takes care to extract as completely as possible before the oil is sold as ‘‘ lubricating oil.” The several kinds of crude paraffin extracted arc classed as ‘hard scale” or ‘‘soft scale,” according to their fusing points and consequent degrces of hard- ness at ordinary temperatures.

Separation of Hard Scale.—The heavy oil forming the last of the three portions into which once-run oil is fractionated, at ordi- nary atmospheric temperatures, becomes thick and pasty by the abundant formation of crystals of solid paraffin. This mixture of oil and paraffin is separated by draining through canvas bags, or, as is now the almost universal practice, by passing the magma into a filter press. This apparatus contains a series of thirty or forty perforated plates about 2 feet square, the faces of which are covered with filtering canvas. They are screwed up together in an oblong horizontal frame, so that a space or chamber about an inch wide is left between each pair of plates. Into these chambers the pasty mixture is forced under high pressure, the material pass- ing into and filling each chamber through an orifice in the centre of the plates till the whole of the chambers are filled. The pressure being kept up, the fluid oil exudes through the canvas and perforations in the plates, leaving solid paraffin, which continues to accumulate till the chambers are filled with it in a comparatively dry condition. The soft cake from the filter press is further squeezed in canvas in an hydraulic press giving off more fluid oil, and the cake from this pressure consists of commercial hard scale or crude paraffin.

Soft Scale.—The heavy oils separated in the second and third fractionation of burning oils, and the oil from which the above hard scale is separated, hold dissolved in them paraffin of low melting point, which can only be crystallized out by bringing the oil to a very low temperature. For this purpose the oils are reduced to from 18° to 20° F. by artificial refrigeration. The method now employed consists in sufficiently cooling a continuous

current of brine or of chloride of calcium solution by passing it through an ether refrigerating machine. This cold current of brine circulates through the interior of a large cylinder or drum, which revolves slowly, dipping into a trough containing the oil to be cooled. The cold surface of the drum in contact with the oil takes on a deposit of solid paraffin crystallized out of the mixture. It is removed by scrapers and made to fall into a separate receptacle, whence it goes to the filter press and the hydraulic press in the same way as the hard scale.

Lubricating Oil.—The oil from which hard and soft paraffin are separated as above stated exhibits a blue fluorescence, and is hence called blue oil. It receives an acid and soda series of washings, after which it is submitted to fractionation. The first portion

| given off, up to about 0°850 specific gravity, is transferred to the.

burning-oil series, with which it is mixed for further treatment. The remainder is received as various grades of lubricating oil, with specific gravity ranging from 0°860 to 0890. These heavy oils are again refrigerated, yielding a further crop of soft scale, after which they get a final acid and alkali treatment, and are finished for use by having steam blown through them for a prolonged period, the effect of which is to reduce greatly their objectionable smell. Finally they are kept in warm settling tanks at a temperature of not less than 90° F. for eight or ten days, when they are ready for the market.

Occasion has already been taken to name the advantages which this kind of mineral oil offers asa lubricating agent. Let us now add that it cannot quite take the place of fatty lubricants, lack- ing the degree and kind of viscosity which fits these for certain purposes. A mixture of fatty and mineral oil in proper proportions is often found to work better than either component would by itself. As mincral oil is far cheaper than all the fatty oils, it is largely used as adulterant of thesc. Such adulteration can

= ss SS

2e vol, Barly XV,

often be detected without the aid of chemical tests; all heavy mincral oils exhibit a characteristically strong blue fluorescence, which becomes rather more prominent by the presence of fatty oil. Manufacturers, however, have learned to remove the fluorescence by the addition of certain chemical substances, and large quanti- ties of such “ bloomless” oil are being sold and used as colza or other fatty oil.

Parafin Refining.—The crude paraffin which remains to be dealt with consists of soft scale, melting point between 90° and 105° F., and hard scale melting between 115° and 120° F. The greater part of the soft scale is disposed of in the crude state for impreg- nating match splints in lucifer-match making. The remainder, Hard and soft, is purified by an acid and soda treatment, and decolorized by repeated washings with solvent naphtha. To this end the scale is melted, mixed with 25 per cent. of naphtha, cooled down, and thus caused to crystallize, and subjected to hydraulic pressure. The solvent naphtha is thus squeezed out, and this series of operations is repeated two or three times. Each of the mother-liquors produced is utilized as a purifying agent for the paraffin of a preceding stage of purity, so that it at last arrives at and serves for the original crude scale.

In its progress through these washings the naphtha takes up much heavy oil and solid paraffin, which are extracted by systematic fractionation and crystallization. The paraffin, after its last squeez- ing, isa dull chalky-looking white mass strongly impregnated with naphtha, to drive off which it is melted and has a current of steam blown through it, till no trace of naphtha odour comes away with the steam. The ultimate decolorization is effected by mixing the heated paraffin with animal charcoal, allowing the charcoal to settle, and drawing off the paraffin through filters. The molten paraffin flows into oblong tins which mould it into the beautiful translucent blocks used for candle making and the several other purposes to which paraffin is applied.

The soda-tar obtaincd in the various processes is to some extent collected and treated for the recovery of a soda sufficiently pure to be used in the first stages of purification of the crude oil. It is also employed to neutralize the acid tar, after which both are distilled, yielding as a bye-product an oil

known as “ green oil,” largely used for the manufacture of oil-gas under Pintsch’s patent.

Commerce. —The development of the paraffin industry under Young’s patents, and the rapid increase of demand for the products, led directly to the rise of the great petroleum industry in Amcrica. The Unitcd States acting commissioner of patents, Mr John L. Hayes, in reporting on Mr Young’s claim for an extension of his patent rights, states that “the manufactures of coal oil in this country had their origin in Mr Young’s discovery. The use of petroleum followed so directly and obviously from the use of coal oils that it can hardly be denied that the one originated from the other.” The petroleum industry once started, however, grew with so startling rapidity, and attained such gigantic proportions, that it threatened the entire extinction of the parent manufacture. In the early days of the trade a considerable development of manufacturing activity took place in Wales, where an inferior kind of cannel coal was distilled ; and at many localities in Germany brown coal and sometimes peat were utilized as the raw materials of a considerable industry. The pressure of the competition with American oil was felt severely by all, and it was only with much difficulty that the great Scottish companies succeeded in holding their own, and in carrying on a constantly extending production. The Welsh industry was practically extinguished, and the production in Germany, not- Withstanding the imposition of high protective duties, was greatly circumscribed. The chief seats of the manufacture in Germany are now in Saxony, near Weissenfels, where a peculiar variety of lignite called ‘‘ pyropissite” forms the raw material for distillation.

In the Scottish industry there was in the middle of 1884 about £2,000,000 of capital invested, the working capacity of works in operation being equal to the distillation of 4170 tons of shale a day, while plant is being provided to increase that capacity to 5920 tons. ‘The following table represents the present output of a year of 312 working days.

Actual. In View. | Total.

Shale distilled per day, tonS…….ssseee 4,170 1,750 | 5,920 Shale distilled, tons……. per annum | 1,301,040 546,000 | 1,847,040 Crude oil

produced, gallons.. 6 39,031,200 | 16,380,000 | 55,411,200 Burning oil and_ spirit, in

barrels of 40 gallons…..... 400,070 167,895 567,965 Lubricating oil, tons (of about

BAGEGANONS)...0.ssccceccesreeoees os 24,490 10,277 34,767 Paraffin scale, tons…....000 0 15,334 6,435 21,769 Sulphate of ammonia, tons… 10,454 4,388 14,842

(W. D.—J. PA.) PARAGUAY, a South American republic situated in the basin of the Parana-Paraguay system, between 22° and 27° 35’S. lat. and 54° 35’ and 61° 40’ W. long. It is conterminous with Brazil, Bolivia, and the Argentine

Republic, and its boundaries were long under dispute. The Argentine Republic especially laid claim to a portion of the Gran Chaco to the north-east of the Pilcomayo; but in 1878 the president of the United States (to whose arbitration the matter had been submitted) decided in favour of Paraguay. The town of Villa Occidental, on the Gran Chaco side of the Paraguay river, opposite Asuncion, has since been called Villa Hayes. The whole area of the country is estimated at 91,980 square miles, of which 35,280 are in the Gran Chaco portion.

Paraguay proper, or the country between the Paraguay and the Parana, is traversed from north to south by a broad irregular belt of highlands which are known as the Cordillera Amanbaya, Cordillera Urucury, &c., but partake rather of the character of plateaus, and form in fact a con- tinuation and outwork of the great interior plateau of Brazil (Keith Johnston, jun.?). The elevation nowhere much excéeds 2200 feet. On the western side these highlands terminate with a more or less sharply-defined edge, the country sloping gradually up to their bases in gentle undulations with open ill-defined valleys; on the eastern side they send out broad spurs enclosing deep-cut valleys, and the whole country retains more of an upland character. The tributaries that flow westward to the Paraguay are consequently to some extent navigable, while those that run eastward to the Parand are

interrupted by rapids and falls often of a formidable description.» Apart from the central highlands there are several plateaus and knots of hills in the west between 25° and 26° 20’ 8. lat. The plateau on the edge of which Asuncion is built has a relative height of about 200 feet, and skirts the Paraguay for about 25 miles with red sandstone cliffs ; to the north of this is the Altos Cordillera, witha relative height of 600 feet. From the Asuncion plateau southwards, near the confluence of the Paraguay and Parana, there is a vast stretch of marshy country draining partly into the Ypoa lagoon ; and smaller tracts of the same character are found in other parts of the lowlands, especially in the valley of the Paraguay. The country sloping to the Parana is nearly covered with dense and well-nigh impenetrable forest, and has been left in possession of the sparsely- scattered native tribes. On the other hand the country sloping to the Paraguay, and comprising the whole of the properly settled districts, is, in keeping with its proximity to the vast plains of the Argentine Republic, grassy and open, though the hills are usually covered with forest, and clumps of trees are frequent in the lowlands. Except in the marshy regions already mentioned and along the rivers the soil is dry, porous, and sandy, produced by the weathering of the red sandstone, which is the prevailing formation throughout the country.

The year in Paraguay is divided into two seasons,— “summer” lasting from October to March, and “ winter from April to September. December, January, and February are generally the hottest months, and May, June, July, and August the coldest. The most temperate month is April. The mean temperature for the year seems to be about 75° or 76°; for summer 81”, for winter 71°. The rainfall, amounting to 58 inches at Asuncion, is distributed

shcicaniniiale Secale, aera aE Te

1 By the treaty of 1872 the Brazilian frontier was drawn up the Parand from the mouth of the Y-Guazu (25° 30’ 8. lat.) to the Salto Grande or Great Cataract of La Guayra (24° 7’), thence west along the watershed of the Sierra de Maracayu, north along the Sierra de Ainanbaya to the sources of the Apa, and down that stream to its junction with the Paraguay. The Buenos Aires treaty of February 3, 1876, fixed the frontier between Argentina and Paraguay, and assigned to Paraguay the portion of the Gran

Chaco between Rio Verde and Bahia Negra; the appropriation of the portion between Rio Verde and the Pilcomayo was left for after consideration.

2 See his papers in the Academy, 1875 ; Proc. R. Geogr. Soc., 1876; and Geographical Magazine, 1875.

3 In regard to the rivers, compare the article PLATE RIVER.

over 84 days,—75 days being cloudy and 206 bright and clear. In the five years 1877-81 only 50 frosts were observed, and of these 17 fell in August. The wind blows from the south on 118 days, and from the north on 103 ; while from the east it blows only 44 days, and from the west only 3. Neither north nor south appears to obtain any definite mastery in any month or season. The south wind is dry, cool, fresh, and invigorating, and banishes mosquitoes for a time; the north wind is hot, moist, and relaxing. Violent wind-storms, generally from the south, average sixteen perannum. Goitre and leprosy are the only endemic diseases; but the natives, being underfed, are prone to diarrhoea and dyspepsia.

The fauna of Paraguay proper is practically the same as that of Brazil. Caymans, water-hogs (capinchos), several kinds of deer (Cervus paludosus the largest), ounces, opossums, armadillos, vampires, the American ostrich, the ibis, the jabiru, various species popularly called partridges, the pato real or royal duck, the Palamedea cornuta, parrots and parakeets, are among the more notable forms. Insect life is peculiarly abundant; the red stump-like ant-hills are a feature in every landscape, and bees used to be kept in all the mission villages.

As to the mineral resources of Paraguay but little is known—possibly because there is little to know. The gold mines said to have been concealed by the Jesuits may have had no existence; and, though iron was worked by Lopez II. at Ibicuy (70 miles south-east of Asuncion), and native copper, black oxide of manganese, marbles, lime, and salt have been found in greater or less abundance, the real wealth of the country consists rather in the variety and value of its vegetable productions. Its forests yield at least seventy kinds of timber fit for industrial purposes,— some, such as the

lapacho and quebracho, of rare excellence and durability, as is shown by the wonderful state of pre- servation in which the wood-work of early Jesuit churches still remains. Fifteen plants are known to furnish dyes, and eight are sources of fibre—the caraguatay especially being employed in the manufacture of the exquisite fianduty or spiderweb lace of the natives. Fruit trees of many kinds flourish luxuriantly; the cocoa palm often forms regular groves, and the orange tree (reaching a height of 50 feet) is so common and bears so profusely that oranges, like bananas, have a merenominal value. In the Marts (g.v.), or Paraguayan tea, Paraguay has a commercial plant of great importance, which may be said to be peculi- arly its own ; and most of the primary crops of the tropics could be cultivated with ease if there were only men and means. Paraguay tobacco is prized in all the La Plata countries, and, as men, women, and children all smoke, there is a large home consumption; but only a small quantity finds its way to Europe, under other names; coffee (though the berry is of excellent quality, if slightly bitter) is even more neglected; sugar is grown only for manufacture into rum and syrups, and loaf-sugar has to be imported from Brazil; and, although the whole popula- tion is clothed exclusively in white cotton stuffs, and cotton grows almost spontaneously in the country, English goods burdened by a duty of 40 per cent. keep the market. Wheat, oats, and rice can all be raised in different districts, but the dietary staples of the Paraguayans are still, as when the Spaniards first came, maize and mandioca (the latter the chief Ingredient in the excellent chipa or Paraguayan bread), varied it may be with the seeds of the Victoria regia, whose magnificent blossoms are the great feature of several of the _lakes and rivers. Cattle-breeding was formerly a very important interest in several of the depart- ments, but the stock was nearly all destroyed during the

Further details will be found in Keith Johnston (Geog. Mag.) and

1

Mr Vansittart’s Report.

PA SG Tay

war, and is only being slowly recruited from the Argentine Republic. The total number of horned cattle is estimated at 500,000. Land may be

purchased from private owners for from £160 to £200 per square league of 4500 English acres, but the Government rate amounts to £900 or £1000, ~

The inhabitants of Paraguay are mainly Guaranis or half-breeds with a strong proportion of Guarani blood.? A peaceful, simple people, fond of flowers and fétes, they displayed during the desolat- ing wars of 1865-70 (as so often before in the time of the Jesuits) indomitable courage in the face of overwhelming odds. Trust- worthy figures in regard to the population can hardly be said to exist. A so-called census for 1879 gives a total of 346,048, which is probably not far from the truth. The female births being always in excess of the male, and most of the full-grown men having perished in the wars, the females form about two-thirds of the whole. Of the foreign residents in 1879, about 4000 were Italians, 400 Germans, 400 Spaniards, and 40 English. Formerly, about 1857, divided into twenty-five departments, the country was in 1876 distributed into twenty-three electoral districts, each with a gefe politico, a juez de paz, and a municipality. AsuNcron (q.v.), the capital, is also the largest city (40,000 in 1857, 16,000 in 1879), Other places of present or historical importance are Villa Rica, (12,570 in 1879), often called Villa Pobre, the chief seat of the, tobacco trade, and the easternmost of the larger towns; Villa Pilar. or El] Pilar (3722), formerly Neembucu, opposite the mouth of the Bermejo, and the “strangers’ farthest” under Dr Francia’s des- potism ; San Estanislao (7453) ; San Pedro (9706), near the Tejui, about 3 leagues from its junction with the Paraguay; Concepcion (10,697), the northernmost of the towns or villages, 200 miles above Asuncion, and the trading centre for the northern maté plantations ; Humaita (3868), 198 miles below the capital, the site of the great earthworks by whicl Lopez stopped the advance of the allies for more than a year; Paraguari (5315), the present ter- minus of the railway ; Jaguaron (3413), 24 leagues from Paraguari, founded in 1536, and the seat of a manufacture of orange-flower essence ; Ita (6332), known for its earthenware ; Itangua (6948), with brick and tile works ; Luque (8878), the provisional capital in 1868; Villa Hayes (Villa Occidental, Nouvelle Bourdeaux), 10 miles above Asuncion, founded in 1854 by Lopez with French settlers.?

Paraguay is a constitutional republic. The president and vice- president hold office for four years, and are again eligible after eight years. The legislative

bodies arc a chamber of deputies (one deputy from each 6000 inhabitants) and a senate (one senator from each terri- torial division with 8000 inhabitants, and beyond that from every 12,000 inhabitants). There are five Government departments, and a supreme court of three salaried judges. The people are nominally Roman Catholics, but full rcligious liberty prevails. Crime is comparatively rare, and is rapidly diminishing. Marriage has fallen so completely out of fashion that only 3 per cent. of the births are legitimate. Education is technically compulsory; but the 178 schools were in 1879 attended only by 5862 boys and 920 girls. There is only one public library (3000 vols.) in the country. The army, which, when Lopez II. ascended the throne, numbered 12,000 men, but with a reserve of 46,000, is now reduced to 500 men; every able-bodied citizen is under obligation to serve in case of need. There is but one war-steamer, of 440 tons burden. The only railway is the line (45 miles) from Asuncion to Paraguari, which was begun by Lopez I. in 1859, and surveyed as far as Villa Rica. It was bought for £100,000 by a jcint-stock company in 1877. Ths double run, occupying twelve hours, is performed four times a week. The general trade of the country has begun to revive: from £131,493 in 1876, the value of the imports rose to £258,000 in 1881, and the exports from £68,577 to £385,700. Among the exports (all duty free) there appeared in 1881—maté, £182,025; dry hides, £28,345; tobacco, £131,730; 20,009,597 cigars, £4802 (about seventeen a penny); 47,917,700 orar.ges, £9583 ; and hard woods, £3342. The customs furnish nearly four-fifths of the national revenue (not much more than £100,000 in 1881). Previous to the war there was no national dcbt. In 1871 and 1872 two foreign loans (nominally £1,000,000 and £2,000,000) were contracted through Messrs Robinson, Fleming, & Company, London, and hypo- thecated on the public lands of Paraguay, valued at £19,380,000. Apart from the war debt of more than £45,000,000, the official statement for 1882 recognizes a foreign debt of £3,463,000.

History.—In 1528 Sebastian Cabot, following in the footsteps of De Solis, reached Paraguay and built a fort called Santo Espiritu. Asuncion was founded on August 15, 1537, by Juan de Ayolas, and his successor Martinez de Irala determined to make it the capital of the Spanish possessions east of the Andes. From this centre Spanish adventurers pushed east to La Guayra beyond the Parana, and west into the Gran Chaco ; and before long vast

numbers of the less warlike natives were reduced to scrfdom. The name Paraguay

wh graphic description of the Guarani physique is given by Captain Burton, Battlefields of Paraguay, p. 11. 3 Mr Vansittart in Reports by Sec. of Emb. and Legation, 1888.

was applied not only to the country between Rio Paraguay and Rio Parana, but to the whole Spanish.territory, which now comprises parts of Brazil, the republic of Uruguay, and the Argentine provinces of Buenos Ayres, Entre Rios, Corrientes, Misiones, and part of Santa Fé. It was not till 1620 that Paraguay proper and Rio de la Plata or Buenos Ayres were separated from each other as distinct overnments, and they were both dependent on the vice-royalty of Peru till 1776, when Buenos Ayrcs was erected into a vice-royalty, and Paraguay placed under its jurisdiction. In the history of Paraguay down to the latter part of the 18th century, the interest develops along two main lines, which from time to time get entangled with each other—the struggle between Spaniard and Portuguese for the possession of the border region between the Brazils and the country of the plains, and the formation and defence of a great philanthropic despotism by the Jesuits. The first Christian mis- sions in Paraguay were established by the Franciscans—Armenta, Lebron, Solano (who was afterwards canonized as the apostle of Paraguay), and Bolaitos—between 1542 and 1560 ; but neither they nor the first Jesuit missionaries, Salonio, Field, and Ortega, were allowed to make their enterprise a permanent success. This fcll to the lot of the second band of Jesuits, Cataldino, Mazeta, and Lorenzana, who began work in 1605. The methods by which they controlled and disciplined the Guaranis have been described in the article AMERICA.) The greater number of the Jesuit “ reductions” lay outside of the present limits of the republic, in the country south of the Parana, which now forms the two Argentine provinces of Corrientes and Misiones. La Guayra, one of the most celebrated, is in the Brazilian province of Parand. Though they succeeded in establishing a kind of imperiwm in imperio, and were allowed to drill the natives to the use of arms, the Jesuits never held rule in the government of Paraguay ; indeed they had nearly as often to defend

themselves from the hostility of the governor and bishop at Asuncion as from the actual invasions of the Paulistas or Portu- guese settlers of Sdo Paulo. It was only by the powerful assistance of Zabala, governor of Buenos Ayres that the Anti-Jesuit and quasi- national party which had been formed under Antequera was crushed in 1735. In 1750 Ferdinand VI. of Spain ceded to the Portuguese, in exchange for the fortified village of Colonia del Sacramento (Uruguay), both the district of La Guayra and a territory of some 20,000 square miles to the east of the Uruguay. Seven of their reductions being included in this area, the Jesuits determined to resist the transference, and it was only after several engagements that they were defeated by the combined forces of Spain and Portu- gal. The treaty which they thus opposed was revoked by Spain in 1761, but the missions never recovered their prosperity, and the Jesuits were finally expelled the country in 1767. In 1811 Paraguay declared itself independent of Spain; by 1814 it was a despotism in the hands of Dr Francia (g.v.). On Francia's death in 1840, the chief power passed to his nephew Carlos Antonio LopEz (q.v.), and he was in 1862 succeeded by his son Francisco Solano Lopez, whose ambitious scheines of conquest resulted in the almost total extinction of Paraguayan nationality. The three allies, Uruguay, Brazil, and the Argentine Republic, which united against him, bound themselves by the treaty of 1865 to respect and guaran- tee for five years the independence, sovereignty, and territorial integrity of Paraguay, and at the close of the war in 1870 a new constitution was established, and a president, Jovcllanos, appointed under their protection. Reduced to utter helplessness, the country owes its continued existence to the jealousy and balance of power existing between its neighbours. By a separate treaty with Brazil in 1872 it undertook to pay the cost of the war—£40,000,000 to Brazil, £7,000,000 to the Argentine Republic, and £200,000 to Uruguay, or more than £136 per head of the population. An attempt made in 1873 by Messrs Robinson and Fleming to establish an English colony of so-called Lincolnshire farmers ended in disaster. Somewhat better success has as yet attended the German colony of San Bernardino on Lake Ipacanay (414 colonists in 1879). The Brazilian army of occupation was withdrawn only in 1876.

Of older works on Paraguay the most important are Azara's Voyages dans P Amérique Méridionale, Paris, 1809; and Charlevoix, Histoire, already referred to. As commissioner for the settlement (in 1781) of the fronticr

betwecn Spanish and Portuguese territory, Azara enjoyed exceptional opportunities of informa- tion. Lozano's Hist, deia Conquista del Paraguay (used in MS. by Azara) was first printed at Buenos Ayres, 1873-74, Ulrich Schmidt (often, even in editions of his work, called Schmidel or Schmidels), a German adventurer, Icft a narrative of the first Spanish expeditions, which was published at Frankfort in 1563. Like much else of the older literature it is included in Pedro de Angelis, Coleccion de docum. hist. del Rio de la Pluta, 1835, &c., aud in De Bry's similar collection, as well a8 in Barcia's Historiadores. A systematic narrative of events in the Spanish period is given in Gregorio Funcs, Ensayo de la hist, civil del Paraguay, oe Aires, y Tucuman, 3 vols., Buenos Aires, 1816; Washburn's History of oe aguay, Boston, 1871, deals with later times, See also Dobrizhoffer, Hist. de L tponibus; Page, La Plata, &c., New York, 1867; Mansfield, Paraguay, &c.,

ondon, 1856; Burton, Letters from the Battlefields of Paraguay, 1870; Muthall, Handbook of the River Plate Republics, 1875; Mrs Mulhall, Between the Amazon and Andes, 1881; E. F. Knight, Cruise of the Falcon, 1883. (H. A. W.)

eee ee OPEC he On ee eee

| See Duran, Relation, 1638 ; Ruiz de Montoya, Conquista Hspi- ritual del Paraguay, 1639; Muratori's panegyrical J1 Cristianesimo Felice, 1743 ; Charlevoix, Histoire de Paraguay, 1756; Davie, Letters Srom Paraguay, 1805, &c.

PARAGUAY RIVER. See Piare River.

PARAHYBA, or Paratpa, distinguished as Parahyba do Norte from Parahyba do Sul or 8. Jo&o de Parahyba to the south of Rio de Janeiro, is a city of Brazil on the right bank of the river of the same name, 12 miles from the sea, at the terminus of a railway running 87 miles into the interior. It is divided into a lower commercial town and an upper town containing the governor's residence and other public buildings. From December to March the climate is not considered healthy. The harbour, ob- structed by several

reefs, has a depth of 15 feet, but vessels ground at low water; there is safe anchorage, however, at Cabedello at the mouth of the river. The population, which was 40,000 about 1845, has decreased to between 12,000 and 14,000, and direct trade with Europe has been given up since 1840. Sugar, cotton, and india-rubber are still exported.

PARALLAX may be defined, generally, as the change produced in the apparent place of an object when it is viewed from a point other than that of reference. In astronomy, the places of the moon and planets are referred to the centre of the earth, those of the fixed stars to the centre of the sun. It is shown in Astronomy (vol. ii, p. 775) that, the maximum or horizontal parallax of a celestial object being known, its parallax from any point of observation can be calculated. The present article will be restricted to an account of the methods employed for determining the solar and lunar parallaxes and those of the fixed stars.

Sonar PARAaLLAX.—The sun’s mean equatorial hori- zontal parallax (termed briefly the “solar parallax”) is the angle which the equatorial radius of the earth would subtend toan observer at the sun when the earth is at mean distance from the sun. For its determination it would appear only necessary to observe the sun’s apparent position simultaneously ? from two widely different points on the earth’s surface; the difference of the apparent positions will be due to displacement by parallax, from which displacement the mean equatorial horizontal parallax can be readily deduced.

The requirements of modern astronomy demand that the solar parallax shall be determined with an accuracy of yyy part of its amount—that 1s, within less than >$5 part of a second of arc. But measures in the neighbour- hood of the sun cannot be made with any approach to this accuracy, not only on account of the effect of the sun’s heat on the various parts of the instruments employed, but also of the atmospheric currents created by heat, which tend to destroy steady atmospheric definition and to render the solar image incapable of exact observation. It is thus hopeless to look for any solution of the problem by the most direct method. Two courses remain—either to seek some method which affords a larger angle to measure, or one which permits a mode of observation affording a higher precision. There are many relations to the solar parallax which are well established.

(1) Theparallax of the moon is known with very consider- able precision by direct determination. — The proportion of this parallax to that of the sun is an important term in the lunar theory, and the constant of this term (the parallactic inequality ®) is a known function of the solar parallax. Hence, if the constant of the parallactic inequality is independently determined, the solar parallax becomes known. The elements of the orbits of Venus and

2Jn using the word simultaneously the reader must understand that, though it is impossible for two widely separated observers to make precisely simultaneous observations, yet there is no difficulty (since the apparent motion of the sun is accurately known) in reducing the observations so as to represent the result as if the two observations

had been made at the same instant. 3 See ASTRONOMY, Vol. ii. p. 796.

Mars undergo secular variations which increase from year to year, from century to century, and at last acquire very large values. These secular variations (on the assump- tion that all the terms of the theories of the planets are mathematically accurate) have also a well-determined relation to the solar parallax, and therefore afford a means of determining that parallax with an accuracy which increases by the continuance of observation.

(2) It has been shown (Astronomy, vol. ii. p. 779 sq., and Mrcuanics, vol. xv. p. 708) that the proportions of the interplanetary distances can be very accurately determined and tables be computed from observations of the apparent places of the planets, without any knowledge or assump- tion as to absolute distances (although an accurate know- ledge of the solar parallax is required for giving final perfection to the lunar and planetary tables). In astro- nomical ephemerides therefore the distances of planets from the earth are accurately expressed in terms of the earth’s mean distance from the sun, the latter being reckoned unity. Hence, to determine the solar parallax, it is only necessary to measure, at some favourable opportunity, the parallax of any planet, and to multiply the parallax so found by the number which expresses the relation of the distance of the planet from the earth to the earth’s mean distance from the sun.

(3) When Jupiter is in opposition he is nearer the earth by the diameter of the earth's orbit than when in conjunc- tion ; hence, since light occupies a very sensible time to travel, eclipses of Jupiter's satellites will seem to occur too soon in the first case and too late in the latter, the differ- ence between the extremes of acceleration and retardation being the time occupied by light in crossing the earth's orbit. This time is about 164 minutes for the mean diameter of the earth's orbit; hence, if the velocity of light can be independently determined, the diameter of the earth's orbit becomes known. The determination, by employing the velocity of light, is also arrived at in another way. The constant of aberration (see ASTRONOMY, p-. 757), or the maximum apparent change of a star's true place due to the motion of the observer, depends on the relative velocity of the motion of the observer in space compared with the velocity of light. The angular velocity of the observer is perfectly known; hence if his linear velocity is known his radius of motion is known. Thus, if the constant of aberration and the velocity of light are independently determined, the radius of motion (that is the sun's parallax) will be found.

There are thus three distinctive typical methods :—(1) the gravitational method, depending on terms in the lunar and planetary theories, the constants of which are determined by observation ; (2) the geometrical, or direct observational, method ; and (3) the physical method.

1. The Gravitational Method.—The moon's parallactic inequality appears, at first sight, to furnish a very accurate method, as its constant is about 125", or fourteen times as great as the solar parallax, and the existing observations are very numerous. Unfortunately its determination is inextricably mixed up with the determination of the moon's diameter—a diameter increased by irradiation, and therefore different for every telescope, and perhaps for every observer. But this is not all. The maximum and minimum effect of the parallactic inequality occur at first and last quarter, ¢.e., when the moon is half full. One half of the observations for parallactic inequality therefore are made when the sun is above the horizon, and a great portion of the other half during twilight; whilst those on which the moon's diameter depend are made at midnight, when the irradiation is a totally different quantity from what it is in daylight or during twilight. Newcomb has attempted to determine the correction of the diameter by

the errors in right ascension, derived by comparing Hansen's tables of the moon with observations made by daylight and at night ; but he confesses that the result is so mixed up with the correction of the coefficient of the variation (and, he might have added, with the observer's personality and the telescope employed) that it cannot be relied upon. The following are the most important discussions :—

Hansen, Mon. Notices R. A. S., vol. xxiv. p. 8……... result 8°92

Stone, Afon. Notices R. A. S., vol. xxvi. p. 271……... 9 (Onee Newcomb, Washington Observations, 1865…....0c…00 » 884 Neison, unpublished, probably toappearin Mem. R.A.S. ,, 8°78

One cannot look with confidence upon a method which thus permits discordance of more than one per cent. in the discussion of the same observations by different astronomers. The result arrived at must depend on the adopted correc- tions of the moon's diameter, and, since that diameter is not capable of determination under the same circumstances of illumination as those in which the observations for paral- lactic inequality are made, the judgment of the theorist must step in and assign some more or less hypothetical grounds for the adoption of a particular diameter ; and upon this assumption will turn the whole of the quantity of which we are in search.

It is, however, not impossible that the method of observ- ing a spot near the centre of the moon, instead of the moon's limb, may lead to a more reliable result. But it will have to be shown by independent methods that the position of the selected spot is not systematically affected by phase.

Attention was first called to the method which employs the secular variations of the elements of the orbits of Venus and Mars for determining the solar parallax by a most able and comprehensive paper communicated by Leverrier to the Paris Academy of Sciences, and published in their Comptes Rendus for 1872, July 22. The most important of these variations is that of the perihelion of Mars. The earth's attraction increases the heliocentric position of Mars at perihelion by about 50" in a century, and

this change at a favourable opposition subtends an angle of 185” at the earth.

On 1672, October 1, the star y Aquarii was occulted by Mars. The appulse was observed by Richer at Cayenne, by Picard near Beaufort, and by Romer at Paris. The separate comparisons differ only 05, 0’°8, and 0°38 respectively ; and the star w Aquarii was very frequently observed by Bradley. The increase in two centuries of the geocentric longitude, corresponding to the distance of the planet Mars from the earth on 1672, October 1, is 294”, Hence M. Leverrier concludes that (attributing an error not greater than 1” to the determination of the observed variation) the time has arrived when the solar parallax can be determined with a probable error not ex- ceeding gd of its amount, or the concluded parallax will be exact to nearly +001. The value of the parallax so deduced M. Leverrier finds to be

8”°866. Similarly he finds from the latitude of Venus, determined by the transits of Venus in 1761 and 1769, combined with the latitude determined by meridian observations of the present day

8”°853. From the discussion of the meridional observations of Venus in an interval of one hundred and six years, he finds

8”°859. These values from the theories of Venus and Mars accord in a wonderful manner, and would appear at first sight to justify considerable confidence in the result. But it is impossible to forget the extraordinary intricacy of the

rPaAkAL h Ax

processes through which these results have been evolved, and the liability to some systematic source of error, such, for example, as some neglected term producing a long inequality which may beconie mixed up with the secular variation.

In 1874 the tabular errors of Venus, as determined by the planet’s transit across the sun’s disk, amounted to more than 5” of arc both in R.A. and declination, and the tabular errors of Mars amounted to more than 8” in R.A. and to about 3” in declination at the opposition of 1877, equivalent to

an error of 2’:45 in heliocentric longitude (Mem. &. A. S., vol. xlvi. p. 172). Leverrier’s planetary tables do not, therefore, possess the accuracy attributed to them by their distinguished author, and the conclusions at which he arrived probably require some further modi- fication. Tisserand (Comptes Hendus, 1881, March 21) has continued the researches of Leverrier, and finds that they require modification, and are also subject to very considerable probable error. The later researches of Tisse- rand appear to point to a value of the solar parallax smaller than that found by Leverrier, but his work has not yet been brought to final conclusion.

2. The Geometrical Method.—The most favourable oppor- tunities for the application of this method are afforded, in a geometrical sense, by the planets Venus and Mars, when the former is in conjunction and the latter in opposition. Of these Venus approaches the earth within one-fourth of the sun’s mean distance, whilst Mars, in the most favour- able circumstances, approaches only within one-third of the same distance.

When Venus is near conjunction she is only visible as a slender crescent in the neighbourhood of the sun, and at conjunction is only visible on the occasion of a transit across the sun's disk. It generally happens, therefore, that the only means of determining the apparent position of Venus near conjunction is to refer that position to the sun's limb or sun's centre. But the sun's place is also affected by parallax, so that when the position of Venus is referred to the sun the parallactic displacement is only the difference of the parallax of the sun and Venus. Mars, on the other hand, can be referred to stars of which the parallax is absolutely insensible ; thus it happens that the advantage of Venus in point of parallactic displacement is diminished till the geometrical conditions are only 5 per cent. in favour of Venus. 'Transits of Venus across the sun's disk have been observed for parallax in 1761, 1769, 1874, and 1882.1

If an astronomer at each of two widely separated stations observes the absolute instant of apparent internal contact of Venus with the sun's limb, he is sure that the centres of the sun and Venus are separated by an angular distance equal to the "semidiameter of the sun minus the Semidiameter of Venus." The difference of the absolute times at the two stations is due to parallactic displacement, and, the planet's tabular motion being accurately known, the amount of displacement becomes known. If instead of one contact only the two observers note the instants of internal contact both at ingress and egress, then they practically find the chords described by the planet as seen from both stations. The difference of length of these chords (in time) being known, as well as the approximate diameters of the sun and Venus, and their tabular motion, Wwe have the data for computing the difference of least dis- tance of centres of the sun and Venus at the two stations, and this distance being due to parallax, we have the means of computing the parallax of Venus and thence the solar parallax. This latter method (originally proposed by Halley in 1716) has the advantage of not requiring a

1 An * . For conditions when a transit will occur, and past and future transits, see ASTRONOMY, vol. ii. p. 796.

rigid determination of the absolute instant of each contact, but merely of the duration of the transit; in other words, it involves no very rigid determination of the longitude or clock error, but only an exact knowledge of the clock rate.

It was Halley's opinion that the instants of contact could be observed with an accuracy within two or three tenths of a second of time, but experience has gone to show that the actual errors are from ten to forty times this amount, and the causes of those errors can now be assigned with considerable certainty. These causes are— (1) irradiation and diffraction; (2) disturbance of the image by irregular refraction in the earth's atmosphere; (3) the effect of the atmosphere of Venus in complicating the phenomena at the point of contact.

(1) Irradiation increases the diameter of the sun and diminishes that of Venus. Its extent depends on the aper- ture of the telescope, the perfection of its optical quality, and the perfection of the focal adjustment. Its amount is also changed by the brilliancy of the sun, é.e., is affected by the transparency of the sky and the density of the sun-shade employed. Also, when the space between the limbs of the sun and Venus becomes smaller than the diffraction disk of the object-glass employed, a greyness or shadow is perceived at the point of past or approaching contact; therefore, within a minute angle equal to the sepa- rating power (the diameter of the diffraction disk) of the object-glass, the actual instant of contact can only be esti- mated by changes in the diffraction phenomena. (2) When the images are thrown into rapid vibration by irregular re- fraction in the earth's atmosphere, it becomes impossible to distinguish between the vibration of the image of the dark body of Venus across the sun's limb near the point of contact and the regular phenomena of irradiation, provided that the atmospheric vibrations are sufficiently rapid to produce a persistent image on the retina of the observer's eye. Thus at the transit of Venus in 1882 observers were instructed to note at ingress the time when there was "a well-marked and persistent discontinuity in the illumina- tion of the apparent limb of the sun." Now it so happened that at the Royal Observatory, Cape of Good Hope, the definition was very bad—a south-easter was blowing, the effect of which was, as is almost invariably the case, to create a rapid minute vibration in the images of celestial objects

(see Sir John Herschel's Hesults of Observations at the Cape of Good Tope, p. xiv.). Thus "a well-marked and persistent discontinuity in the illumination of the apparent limb of the sun" was seen by all of five observers at the Royal Observatory from 10 to 20 seconds of time longer than at the adjoining stations in the Cape Colony, where the images were seen comparatively steady and well- defined. The instant of occurrence of the above-described phase is therefore a function of the state of the atmo- spheric definition, and no accurate means exist of estimat- ing such influence. (3) The observation is besides com- plicated by the illuminated atmosphere of Venus, which forms an arc of light round the planet near the point of contact. In many cases this light has been confounded with the light of the sun, and has thus caused very con- siderable errors of observation.

From these various causes the apparent phenomena are different at different stations ; and probably also the same phenomena are described by different observers in very different language. The real difficulty of the discussion of the results arises when these different and differently described phenomena have to be combined. It is of no consequence whether a real or seeming contact has been observed ; it is only necessary to be certain that those observations are combined which represent the same phenomenon. The same phenomenon would correspond with the same apparent angular distance of centres of the

sun and Venus, if all the telescopes were alike, if all the telescopes were in perfect focal adjustment, and if the atmo- spheric conditions of definition at all the stations were per- fect or identical. But if these conditions are not realized (and they cannot be realized in practice) the same appar- ent phenomena will not represent corresponding phases ; and, further, the observers at different stations use such different language to express what they saw that it becomes impossible to select even apparent corresponding phases with any certainty.

The value of the solar parallax deduced from a series of observations of the contacts of Venus with the sun's limb will therefore entirely depend upon the interpretation put upon the language of the various observers. 'The

result will besides be systematically affected if the state of atmospheric definition is systematically different in the opposite stations.

It is thus not surprising that very different results have been arrived at by different astronomers from different transits, and even from different discussions of the same observations of the same transit.

Laplace, Mechanique Céleste……..... transits of 1761 and 1769, 8°81 Eneke, Entfernung der Sonne, p. 108 ap Dp ews Stone, Afon. Notices Rk, A. S., vol. xxviii. p. 255,..transit of 1769, 8°91 Powalky, Ast. Nachrichten, lxxvi. col. 161…... 33 1769, 8°79 Airy, Monthly Notices, vol. xxxviii. p. 16…..... » 1874, 8°76 Stone, Monthly Notices, vol. xxxviii. p. 294…. 5 1874, 8°88 Tupman, Monthly Notices, vol. xxxviil. p. 455. ne 1874, 8°85

Besides observing the contacts, another method was employed by the Germans, the Russians, the Dutch, by Lord Lindsay's expe- dition at the transit of Venus in 1874, and by the Germans in 1882, viz., the heliometric method. This consists in observing with the heliometer (see MIcROMETER, vol. xvi. pp. 252-254) the distance of Venus from opposite limbs of the sun along known position-angles nearly in the line of greatest and least distance of Venus from the sun's limb. The method possesses many apparent advantages, because it affords the opportunity of multiplying the observations and of eliminating many sources of error.

At first sight it seems as if the method is free from the necessity for any accurate determination of the seale-value of the instrument, because, if measures are made from opposite limbs of tlie sun, the sun's diameter may be taken as the standard for all observers, and the place of the planet may be interpolated relatively to the oppo- site limbs. Unfortunately it happens that there is a very marked difference in observing the sun's diameter due both to instrument and observer. Thus two observers with different instrumeuts, who have compared scale-value by a number of pairs of stars, or zones of stars, will measure sun-diameters with a marked constant difference. If the sun's diameter is assumed to be constant, it, in fact, determines the scale-value; hence the distance of centres measured by the two observers will differ by the proportionate part a Ad, where s is the distance of centres, d the true diameter, and Ad the difference of diameter as measured by the two observers. Thus it is only when s=0 (that is, when the planet is near the

centre of the sun) that this method can be used,—a condition that does not exist in practice. _

In the case of the transit of Venus fully one-third of the whole of this personality would enter into the result by this method of reduction. For rigid reduction therefore it is absolutely necessary to have a rigid determination of scale-value in seconds of are. Unfortunately this value, when determined for any uniform instrumental condition of temperature, is liable to change, because, in observations of the sun, difference of temperature be- tween the tube, the object-glass, and the scale of the instrument is produced, and the focal adjustment is also disturbed. The scale- value depends on the relation of the focal length of the object- glass to the length of a part of the scale, and is besides affected by abnormal focal adjustment of the eyepiece.

Drs Auwers and Winnecke adopted a very complete scheme for determining the scale-value at any instant.

1. The scale-value was determined for a uniform condition of the temperature of the instrument by measuring zones of stars whose places were rigidly determined by meridian observations ; and by the same means the temperature coefficient of the instrument was determined for different temperatures, the various parts of the instrument being assumed of a uniform temperature in observations of stars by night.

2. The effect of a displacement of focus was determined by measuring the sun’s diameter and distances of pairs of stars with different positions of the focal adjustment.

r Ae Fe Ae Tp Te AX

3. The focal point was determined during sun-observations by adjusting the focus on a telescope fixed in a specially prepared chamber, where its temperature would change very slowly, and the temperature of the scale (and hence its length) were measured by a metallic thermometer ; hence the change of the proportion of the scale-length to the focal length became known.

In Lord Lindsay’s expedition similar precautions were employed, excepting that in the last case an attempt was made to determine the temperature of the tube by thermometers and that of the object- glass by a thermo-pile, and the position of the focal point was cal- culated from these data.

The uncertainties of all these operations are considerable, and, though from the extraordinary labour and care bestowed upon the determination of the necessary corrections by the German astro- nomers a fairly reliable result may be arrived at, it is certain that the method of determining the solar parallax from heliometric observation of transits of Venus can now be surpassed by methods more direct, more reliable, and at the same time less laborious and costly.

If photographs can be obtained during a transit in which the limbs of the sun and Venus are sufficiently well-defined, the distance of the centres of the sun and planet can be determined (as in the heliometer method) provided ouly that the pictures are affected by no systematic errors. That this latter condition may be fulfilled the following are the essential conditions.

1. The picture must be formed on the photographic plate without distortion, or, if it is affected by distortion, that distortion must be ascertained and allowed for.

2. No change must take place in the process of developing and fixing the picture, or, if such change is possible, means must be provided for its detection and elimination.

3. The angular value of one inch on the plate must be accurately known, so as to convert measured distances into arc—for the same reasons as in the heliometer method.

It is necessary to employ an image of considerable size, because otherwise the particles of collodion, if magnified so mucli as to permit measurement of the requisite accuracy, give an irregularity to the limbs that is fatal to accurate estimation. Thus it becomes necessary either to employ a lens of very considerable focal length (40 feet was generally adopted), or to introduce a secondary lens to magnify the image formed in the primary

focus. The first of these methods was employed by the Americans, by the French, and in Lord Lindsay's expedition at the transit of 1874, the second by the British, German, Russian, and Dutch expeditions.

The use of an object-glass of long focus renders mounting of the lens in the usual manner, though not a practical impossibility, yet at least a matter of extreme inconvenience. Accordingly, where lenses of long focus were employed, the telescope was mounted in a horizontal position, and the sun's rays were reflected by a plane mirror in the direction of the tube's length. It is not easy to con- ceive that any sensible distortion in the image can be produced by a lens of such long focus even if only of mediocre quality of figure ; indeed the method may be assumed free from any such error ; but it is undoubtedly exposed to all the errors of distortion which may be produced by the plane. From the perfection now attained in the construction of optical planes, and the means which exist for testing them, the errors due to this cause may also probably be safely neglected, except in so far as the figure of the plane is dis- torted by the heat of the sun, and it is not impossible that some sources of systematic error may be thus created.

To determine the angular value of one inch (or other unit of length) on the photographic plate, it is only necessary to measure the distance of the plate from the posterior surface of the object- glass, and then to determine the distance of the optical centre of the lens from that surface ; the sum of these two distances is the radius of which lines on the surface of the plate (reckoned from the centre of the plate) are tangents.

The French adopted the daguerrotype method of photography, in which it is impossible to imagine any errors due to contraction of the photographic film, as in the collodion process, because the picture is virtually a portion of the silver plate on which it is taken. But in adopting this process the advantage of measuring the photo- graphs by transmitted light was lost ; and itis a practical question, which experience has not yet decided, whether the loss or the gain is the greater.

The Americans, and Lord Lindsay in 1874, using the collodion process, took the precaution to provide means for the detection of possible contraction of the film during development of the picture or drying of the film. This was done by placing the sensitive plate near to or in contact with

a reticule ruled on glass near the primary focus ; this reticule was thus photographed simultaneously with each photograph of the sun; hence any change produced during the development would cause a similar change in the relative positions of the images of the ruled lines on the developed plate. As a matter of fact the American astronomers have found fairly reliable results from their photographic operations, but the accuracy arrived at is by no means very considerable, the probable

OO A ee SO Re

Pak abba xX

error of the complete measurements of an average plate amounting

to + 0”°5. p But the difficulties of dealing with systematic crrors are cnor-

mously increased when a secondary magnifier is employed, be- cause it is theoretically impossible with the present optical glass (employing spherical curves) to construct a perfect secondary

magnifier in which the scale value should be absolutely the same in every part of the field ; still less is it possible, when the attempt ig made, to combine the visual and photographic rays in the same focus ; hence every photoheliograph of this construction must be separately studied for distortion of the image. The results of actual trial prove that the distortion is even greater than was expected, and is besides not the same in each radius, and the latter error may be produced by a very small error of centring in the lenses which compose the sccondary magnifier. The investigation of such errors with the required accuracy would be a laborious and at best an unsatisfactory operation, and is rendered practically impossible by the fact that, whenever the instrument is turned upon the sun, the object-glass becomes heated, its focal lengtl changed, and the optical relation of the secondary magnifier to the image in the principal focus of the object-glass changed also.

For these reasons the photographic observations in Which second- ary magnifiers were employed might be expected to prove a failure, and this expectation has been confirmed by the result of experience.

The observation & the transit of Venus on a large scale of national expenditure was certainly justified in 1761 and 1769. In those days there were no refined means of measuring angles with high accuracy, and the employment of the motion of Venus and a time-scale of measurement was the best available method of determining the solar parallax. But since 1820 the art of measurement has so advanced, and such refined instruments and methods have been thus introduced, that it may be:a matter of some surprise and question to future generations of astronomers why so much labour and money were expended upon so imperfect a method in 1874 and 1882. The justification of these expeditions must be found, not in the reliability of the value of the solar parallax determined by them, but in the impulse given to the construction of instruments, the awakening of a widespread interest in astronomy, the stimulus to invention of new methods of research, and the accurate determination of the latitudes and longitudes of a large number of important and previously undetermined stations on the earth's surface.

If an opposition of Mars occurs when that planet is near perihelion and the earth near aphelion the planet is then about one-third of the sun's distance from the earth. When these conditions are nearly realized the opportunity is a favourable one for determining the solar parallax.

On 1672, October 1, the star y Aquarii was occulted by Mars. Estimations of the distance of the planet from the star were made at well-observed instants of time by Richer, Picard, and Romer, as already noticed, and from these observations the first approximate determination of the solar parallax was made by Cassini, viz., 9'°5.

The method of observing Mars that has been most largely employed consists in observing the apparent declina- tion of the planet by means of the transit circle—at ob- servatories both in the northern and in the southern hemi- Sphere. To increase the accuracy of the result, the same Stars near the planet are observed at the various observa- tories, so that the method is reduced to measuring the difference of declination between the planet and neigh- bouring stars. The effects of periodic error in the gradua- tion of the circles, of flexure of the instruments, and of abnormal refraction are thus nearly eliminated, and there remain only the systematic errors which may be supposed to arise from the difference of the habit of the observers in

bisecting a star and a planet. To some extent these errors could be eliminated by the use of a reversing prism applied in the place of a sun-shade between the eyepiece and the observer's eye. By the use of such a prism the motion of the spider-web and the limbs of the planet can be reversed with respect to the vertical, and such errors as

depend on a different habit of bisecting a similar apparent upper and lower limb would be thus eliminated. But on account of the chromatic dispersion of the atmosphere the lower limb of the planet is coloured red and the upper limb violet ; and in the illuminated field of the telescope it is probable that the observer has a tendency to cut with his spider-web more deeply into the feeble violet limb than into the more glaring red limb. The effect of his so doing would be to increase the value of the resulting parallax, and it seems not improbable that from this cause a larger value of the parallax has been obtained by this than by other methods.

The following are the most important series of observa- tions, and their discussion by this method :—

Winnecke (Ast. Nachrichten, lix. col. 261), opposition of Mars 1862; from observations at Pulkowa and Cape of

(GeO ISIYN@ aauanosn ocecunnoedacneacosunancnononoaqceanoauoD us omaseoS 8°96 Newcomb (Washington Observations, 1865, Appendix II.); from all meridian observations of Mars in 1862……..... 8°85

Eastman (Wash. Obs., 1877, Appendix III.); from meridian observations of Mars at six observatories in 1877……..... Stone, Monthly Notices, xlii. p. 300 ; including observations MeV CCUG CMV) MAS LIM AM fey .: ccan ucts cise cee rne se eer 8°95

In 1872 (Ast. Mach., No. 1897) Dr Galle of Breslau proposed a method of determining the solar parallax which

appears to be the foundation of the method of the future,

viz., to measure, by means of the equatorial, the difference of declination between selected stars and a minor planet, or rather to interpolate the declination of a minor planet relative to two stars of comparison, A minor planet presents precisely the appearance of a star, and it is impossible to conceive any personality which can affect the observation of sucha planet anda star. The interpolation of the planet's declination relative to two including star- declinations (i.e, measurement from stars nearly equally north and south of the planet) entirely eliminates errors due to error of the adopted arc-value of the micrometer screw. It igs true that in the case of minor planets the parallax factor can hardly exceed 1}, whilst in the case of Mars that factor may be 3; but their disks present objects which are capable of being observed with quite two and a half times the accuracy of Mars. Hence the condi- tions of accidental accuracy are equalized for a single opposition, whilst the advantages of systematic accuracy are entirely in favour of the minor planets. Moreover, the opportunities offered by favourable oppositions of minor planets are much more frequent than in the case of Mars. The opposition of the minor planet Flora in 1874 was observed, at the request of Dr Galle, by a considerable number of observers in both northern and southern hemi- spheres, but unfortunately only in very few cases with the precaution, care, and perfection of instrumental equipment necessary. In 1882 the minor planets Victoria and Sappho were similarly observed at the request of Gill. The work was taken up by a number of astronomers In both hemi- spheres, in a much more complete and systematic manner, with better instrumental means, and with the benefit of former experience. The results have not yet been reduced, but it is believed they will afford a valuable contribution to the problem in question. The results of Dr Galle's discussion of the observations of Flora in 18741 give for

the solar parallax 8”°87+407°042 ;

but the same results when the relative weights are assigned in a more legitimate manner lead to the value

8”°82-40”°06. But in any plan requiring numerous and widely spread observers it is very difficult to secure that entire sympathy

l Ueber eine Bestimmung der Sonnen Parallaxe aus correspondiren- den Beobachtungen des Planeten Flora in October und November 1878,

Breslau, 1875. XVIIL — 32

with the end in view, that scrupulous care in minute detail, which is essential in the highest class of observation, and it becomes impossible to alter the previously prepared programme in such a case, should circumstances render it desirable to do so; nor does it always happen that distant observatories can be supplied with the necessary instru- mental details in sufficient time. In the case of the Victoria and Sappho observations of 1882 the requisite sympathy and care were accorded in a very remarkable degree, but on account of the errors of the planetary tables (discover- able only when the observations were begun) the selected stars of comparison were not by any means the most favourable that could have been chosen, and were con- sequently not the stars that a single observer would have selected at the time. Hence arises the desirability of a method not requiring co-operation, in which success depends upon a single observer, who may obtain independently by his own observations a complete series of results.

In 1857 Airy, in an address to the Royal Astronomical Society on the methods available for determining the solar parallax during the next twenty-five years, called attention to the favourable opposition of Mars in 1877, and declared his opinion that the best method of finding the solar parallax was to determine at an equatorial station the difference of right ascension of that planet and neighbour- ing stars in the evening and early morning, by observing transits of stars and planet across the webs of a well- adjusted rigidly mounted equatorial. The motion of the earth’s rotation would transport the observer 6000 or 7000 miles between the evening and morning observations, and the requisite displacement would thus be obtained. In other words, the observer would avail himself of the diurnal displacement to determine the parallax of the planet. Of course a very large number of observations would be required, because the observation of a transit over the webs of a telescope is not so exact as the micro- metric comparison of two points. Only one observer availed himself of Airy’s suggestion, but a

very good series of observations by this method was obtained by Maxwell Hall at the island of Jamaica. The detailed observations are printed in Adem. &. A. S., vol. xliv. p. 121; the result- ing value of the solar parallax is

Oe 700 06: In 1874 (in connexion with Lord Lindsay's expedition to Mauritius) Gill, combining the suggestion of Galle as to the employment of a minor planet and Airy's suggestion as to the employment of the diurnal displacement, observed the minor planet Juno, which was at that time favourably situated for the purpose. But instead of employing the inethod of transits of the planet and stars across spider- webs he used a heliometer, and measured with that instru- ment the distance of the planet from the same star in the evening and morning. In order to eliminate the effects of changes in the scale-value, Gill selected stars on opposite sides of the planet, and so arranged his observations as to measure simultaneously the angle between the planet and both comparison stars. That is to say, if the two dis- tances in question are called a and 8, the measures were ar- ranged in the order a,0,0,a or 6,a,a,b. Thus any abnormal scale-value of the instrument applicable to the measurement a would be equally applicable to the measurement 0. If the places of the comparison stars are thus determined by meridian observations, the scale-value may be derived from the observations themselves with all desirable accur- acy, and the effect of change in the scale-value (which alone is all-important) be absolutely eliminated. The observations so made at Mauritius showed that the posi- tion of the planet Juno relative to two stars of comparison could be so interpolated with a probable' error less than yoth of a second of arc. A full account of these observa-

rena it ae be

tions, together with a description of the heliometer, is given in the Dunecht Publications, vol 1. Lord Lindsay's yacht, which conveyed the heliometer to Mauritius, unfor- tunately did not reach her destination till the most favourable time for making the observations was past; but sufficient observations were obtained to test the method thoroughly and to prove its capabilities! The value of the solar parallax resulting from the observations of Juno at Mauritius was 87-77 +0°"04

In 1877, instead of observing the favourable opposition of Mars of that year by Airy's method, Gill proposed to the Royal Astronomical Society to employ a heliometer (kindly lent by Lord Lindsay) to observe the planet in a similar manner to that in which he had observed the minor planet Junoat Mauritius in 1874. The offer was accepted. Gill selected the island of Ascension, and there carried out the necessary observations. The stars of comparison, by the kind and hearty co-operation of astronomers, were observed at thirteen of the principal observatories with meridian instruments, a combination of their results affording standard places of high accuracy. In general the angular distance of the planet was measured both in the evening and morning from each of three surrounding stars. The observed readings of the heliometer were corrected for the effects of refraction and phase, for the errors of division of the scales and of the micrometer screw, and were then converted into arc on an assumed value of one revolution of the micrometer screw (or rather of half an interval of the scale divisions).

The tabular apparent distance of the centre of Mars from each star for the instant of each observation was then computed with an assumed approximate value of the solar parallax (8”°80). The calculation of the.solar parallax and the elimination of errors of scale-value were then easily effected as follows :—

Let Aa, A5=the corrections in seconds of arc to be applied to the tabular right ascension and declination respectively to obtain the true right ascension and declination of Mars at the epoch ty.

p =the position angle of the planet referred to the star of comparison.

8, =the approximate mean declination of the star and planet.

x =thedaily rate of increase of Aa for the epoch 7p.

x’ =the daily rate of increase of Ad for the epoch 7.

7 =the Greenwich mean time of observation.

a =the number of z4y parts (or the percentage) that the assumed solar parallax must be increased.

z =the correction required to be applied to an observed are of 10000” reduced on the assumed scale-value.

the observed distance in seconds of are = 10000 i

O =the observed angular distance, computed with the assumed scale-value.

C =the calculated or tabular distance computed with the assumed value of the solar parallax.

Then each observation furnishes an equation of condition of the following form— fibat fl Ast f’n —ve=(O-C)-f’(r – 19) —f” (7 — To)’ 5 we —— =Sin p Cos by Sf” =cosp — fit= parallax in R.A. f’+ parallax in an j=

100 100 :

the parallaxes in f’” being in seconds of are.

The equations resulting from each group of observations are then combined, care being taken to combine together in one group such observations only as have been made nearly simultancously and where the value of z may therefore be assumed to be the same. |

The combination of a group of evening with a group of morning observations (in which the term representing the error of scale- value must then be represented by s and 2’) thus affords six

1 A more complete test has since been furnished by observations for stellar parallax, to which reference will afterwards be made. –

FPehAakh ea xX

equations involving five unknown quantities, from which the most probable value of n can be climinated with its weight by the method of least squares, in terms of « and x’.

Care, however, must be taken to confine the combination to such

oups as depend on measures from the same stars, if it is desired fo eliminate the effects of errors in the adopted star places. Also, since it is assumed that « and «’ vary proportionally with the time, it is necessary that only such observations should be com- pined as have becn made at epochs sufficiently near together to render this a safe assumption.

Finally the absolute values of « and x’ for the various combina- tions are deduced by developing the values of Aa and Ad from each combination in terms of the time, and thus the definitive values of 7 are obtained.

The combination of these values of , having regard to the weight of each, led to the result

n= —0°209.

Whence the value of the solar parallax was

B7iSHE0″ 012% It should be remarked that in these observations a reversing prism was so employed as to eliminate any systematic error on the part of the observer which might be due to astigmatism of his eye, or a habit of placing the image of the star otherwise than truly central on the image of Mars. The probable error of one observation of distance having weight unity was found to be+0”24. Twelve such observations were

generally made (and often more) on each night, and complete combinations of observations were secured on twenty-five nights.

This probable error does not exceed that of a single obser- vation of contact on the occasion of a transit of Venus, and yet one hundred and ninety-six such observations were secured, as compared with two which is the utmost that can be secured as the result of any single observer's expedition to observe a transit of Venus.

It is impossible, however, to say with certainty that the above result is entirely free from systematic error. There is one possible source of such error to be suspected, viz., the possible effect of the chromatic dispersion of the atmosphere which colours the limbs of Mars in the manner already described. In the case of heliometer observations the effect is certainly minimized from the fact that the star disk which is compared with the limb of Mars is coloured precisely in the same way as the limb—but whether all error is so eliminated it is impossible to say. A detailed account of these observations and their reduc- tions is given in Mem. R. A. S., vol. xlvi. pp. 1-172.

If a minor planet, however, is observed in the above described manner, no suspicion of the error in question can attach to. the final result; and, so far as is known, that method affords the only geometrical means of arriving at an absolutely definitive value of the solar parallax.

The following table represents the oppositions of minor planets that will be available for determining the solar parallax till the end of the present century.

Approximate _ Horizontal Parallax at

Date of Opposition.

Number and Name

Magnitude of Planet. "

i Opposition.

Opposition. 1886 November. 8 Flora. 9” 84 1886 December. 79 Eurynome. 8 93 1888 September. 75 Eurydicc. 10 94 1888 November. 7 Iris. 10 i 1889 July. 12 Victoria. 10 8 1889 August. 80 Sappho. ° 9 1890 January. 27 Euterpe. 8 83 1890 June. 43 Ariadne. 10 84 1890 December. 20 Massilia. 8 83 1892 August. 192 Nausicaa, 8 8% 1893 September. 6 Hebe. 9 74 1894 September. 84 Clio. 9 95 1897 July. 194 Procne. 8 9 1898 June. 25 Phocca. 8 9% 1899 November. 7 Iris. 9 3 1899 December. 8 Flora. 8 8

The results of many hundreds of observations for stellar parallax by Gill and Elkin (Mem. R. A. S., vol. xlviii. part 1) prove that the difference of two opposite angular distances each not greater than 2° can be measured by a small heliometer with a probable error not exceeding +015 when the objects measured are points of light such as two stars (or a star and a minor planet). Hence it is easy to show, that a single observer at an equatorial station (furnished with a suitable heliometer) can determine the solar parallax by the careful observation of two or three of the more favourable of the above oppositions with a probable error not exceeding+0‘01, and with absolute Freedom from systematic error. Such a result is not possible by any other known method.

3. The Physical Method.—The determination of the velocity of light has recently been the subject of very refined and accurate measurement by the methods both of Fizeau and of Foucault (see Licut, vol. xiv. p. 585). The results of the most recent and best determinations of the velocity of light, expressed in kilometres per second, are the following (Sidereal Messenger, vol. ii. No. 6):—

Comma byaWiZeallspmethaderucsn «.ereckecncsoas cence ase 300,400
Michelson, by modification of Foucault’s method……..... 299,940
Newcomb, by still more powerful apparatus and modifica-

TOMTOM MO ICAUS MED MOMs seeee sess. reeeee nee 299,717

If we denote by & the interval required by light to cross the mean radius of the earth’s orbit, any independent determination of & will obviously afford, when combined with the velocity of light, a determination of the sun’s dis-

tance, i.¢., of the solar parallax (see Licur, vol. xiv. p. 584). Such a determination of & is afforded by a discussion of the eclipses of Jupiter's satellites. Only two such discus- sions that have any claim to acceptance exist :—the first by Delambre in the early part of the present century, from a discussion of an immense mass of eclipses of the satellites of Jupiter comprising observations from 1662 to 1802 ; the second by Glasenapp, in a Russian thesis, in which there are discussed the observations of the first satellite of Jupiter from 1848 to 1873.

Instead of Dclambre's value of k= 493*'2

Glasenapp finds &k=500° 84102. Todd, in calling attention to Glasenapp's results (Am. Journal of Science, vol. xix. p. 62), remarks on these two values as follows :—

"The former determination rests on a much greater number of observations than the latter; but tt is difieult to form a just estimate of the work of an average last-eentury observation of an eclipse of a satellite of Jupiter. And, moreover, astronomers have no means of knowing the process which led the distinguished French astronomer to his result—which was adopted in his own tables of the satellites, and which was adopted by Damoiseau in his Tables Eeliptiques, published in 1836. The latter determina- tion rests upon a mass of observations of definite exeellenee, which have been diseussed after the modern fashion."

Astronomers, however, whilst generally endorsing these remarks, will not be inclined to follow Todd in combining Dalambre's value with Glasenapp's by giving double weight to the latter. Having regard to those portions of Todd's remarks which we have printed in italics, astro- nomers would generally be of opinion that only Glasenapp's value of & can be seriously considered at the present day. This value, combined with the above mean value of the velocity of light, leads to

8"°76-40″ 02 as the value of the solar parallax.

The photometric observation of the eclipses of Jupiter's satellites as now being carried out at Cambridge, U. &., under Prof. Pickering, will probably ere long furnish the data for a much more accurate determination of k, and

it is not impossible that very refined heliometric observa- tions of the distance of the first satellite (when apparently

near the planet) from the other satellites may likewise yield a reliable value of &.

On the relations between the constant of aberration, the solar parallax, and the velocity of light, see Licut, vol. xiv. pp. 584, 585.

The mean of the nine best modern determinations of the constant of aberration (¢.e., from 1830 to 1855) gives 20”°496.1

The most recent and valuable paper on this constant is that of Nyrén (AMém. de Acad. de St Pétersbourg, 7th ser., vol, xxxi. No. 9), in which the constant is derived from independent researches extending over many years, with each of the three great fixed instruments of the Pulkowa observatory. The independent mean results are—

From observations with the prime vertical transit…..... 20°490 ms os WENNER CHU Gagnedoodoaucnaercuoons 20°495

” UTA MTSTPAUONE MN, GoxBaen Gonb6e 20°491

INTC a ercseettertes sec ccueas 20°492

This result, combined with the above quoted values of the velocity of light, gives the following values of the solar parallax :—

Combined with Cornu’s velocity ….....06 8°78 rp Michelson’s velocity…..... 8°791 re Newcomb’s velocity ….....+. 8°798

UGS. 0’s 0 24 nearer See 8°789

There still remain some little theoretical difficulties with regard to the theory of aberration. That theory is perfectly obvious on the emission theory of light, but is a priort by no means so obvious on the undulatory theory. Is it certain that the velocity of light in the celestial spaces is

identical with (or bears an exactly known relation to) the velocity of light which, having travelled a certain space in air, undergoes reflexion and returns? This is a question for the physicist, and a question that probably demands a practical as well as a theoretical answer.2

Also Villarceau (Comptes Rendus, 1872, October 14) points out that in the ordinary theory of aberration no account is taken of the sun's motion of translation through space, and shows that, if the normal constant of aberration is A, the constant for any particular star is A+A xa, where a depends on the angle which the star's direction makes with the direction of the sun's translation in space. In the observations of Nyrén, above referred to, there is a well-marked periodic variation in the values of the con- stant of aberration derived for twenty-seven stars, which seems to be a function of the right ascension of the stars. This variation may be due to some cause (such as lateral refraction in the nortl-and-south direction) depending on the seasons, or it may have a real physical significance on the theory of Villarceau. If further observation (especi- ally in the southern hemisphere, where the seasons are reversed) should confirm the latter hypothesis, two im- portant conclusions result :—

(a) We obtain some idea of the direction and amount of motion of the milky way, combined with that of the solar system in space; and

(6) We may conclude that our theory of light is correct, which supposes that a ray of light is transmitted through space with uniform veldcity, independently of the velocity of the source of light, and that ether is fixed and infinite—that is, nowhere limited in extent.

On the other hand a negative result would go far to show that our conception of ether is not correct, at least would force us to adopt one of two conclusions, —either that the milky way is stationary in space (within limits of our power of measurement), or that the ether accom-

1 See Mem. R. A. 8, vol. xlvi. p. 166. * See also letter by Lord Rayleigh in Nature 1881, August 25.

Paha bh & x

panies the milky way and is not fixed in space and net infinite.

It is, however, a priort improbable that from any of these causes the deduced value of the solar parallax will be affected by zag of its deduced amount.

The tendency of the best modern determinations is to fix the solar parallax at

8-78 or 8°79,

and hence the mean distance of the earth from the sun at 93 millions of miles, a result which is almost certainly exact within 200,000 miles.

Lunar Parattax.—The constant of the lunar parallax may be determined by a method precisely similar to that followed in the meridian declination observations of Mars. Our knowledge of the parallax of the moon de- pends at present entirely on such observations made nearly simultaneously at the Royal Observatories of Greenwich and the Cape of Good Hope. The resulting values of the parallax, found directly from these observations, are then multiplied by a factor which expresses the relation between the constant of the lunar parallax (Astronomy, vol. ii. p. 798) to the moon's tabular parallax at the time; thus each nearly simultaneous observation at the two observatories gives an independent determination of the constant of the lunar parallax.

A better method, however, will be found when theresults of numerous occultations of stars have been employed to determine the constants of a new and more accurate lunar theory—a work about to be undertaken by Prof. Simon Newcomb.

The best determination of the constant of the lunar parallax is that of Mr Stone, viz., 3422'-71 (Mem. R.A.S., vol. xxxiv. pp. 11-16), derived from meridian observa- tions at Greenwich and the Cape of Good Hope.

STELLAR PaRaLLAx.—The constant of parallax of a fixed star is the maximum angle whicli a line equal to the earth's mean distance from the sun would subtend if viewed at the star.

The distances of the fixed stars are so remote that till very recent times their parallaxes have been found to be insensible ; that is to say, the earth's orbit viewed from the nearest fixed star presents a disk (or ellipse) too small for measurement.

The limits of this article do not permit a detailed history of the early attempts of astronomers to determine the parallaxes of the fixed stars. The reader is referred on this point to Peters's Précis historique des travaux sur la parallaxe des étoiles fixes, forming the first section of his celebrated work Hecherches sur la Parallame des étoiles fines (Mém. de PAcad. Imp. de St Pétersbourg, sec. Math. et Physiques, vol. v.). The most notable incident in that history was the discovery of aberration by Bradley, in 1728, when engaged in an unsuccessful attempt to determine the parallax of the star y Draconis.

The first determination of the parallax of a fixed star is due to Henderson, His Majesty's astronomer at the Cape of Good Hope in 1832 and 1833.3 It was followed by the nearly simultaneous discoveries of the parallax of 61 Cygni by Bessel* and that of a Lyre by Struve® from observations made in the years preceding 1840. Since that time similar researches have been prosecuted with gradually increasing success,

The methods of observation may be divided into two classes,—the absolute and the differential.

The absolute method depends on observation of the zenith distance of a star about the epochs of maximum

3 Mem. R. A. S., vol, xii. p, 829. 4 Astron. Nachrichten, Nos. 365, 366, and 401. 5 Astron. Nachrichten, No. 396.

Pla RA LA Xx 2538

parallactic displacement in declination—in practice, how- | change of instrumental flexure, &c., be completely over- ever, generally throughout the whole year. The differences | come; the method of absolute altitudes does not, in fact of declination so observed, after allowing for the effects | respond in accuracy to the demands of the problem. of refraction,

precession, aberration, nutation, and proper The differential method depends on measuring the motion, afford the means of deducing the parallax of the star. | difference of declination, of distance, or of position angle The most notable series of observations of this character | between the star whose parallax is to be determined and are those of Maclear at the Cape of Good Hope, by which | one or more stars of comparison. It is assumed that he confirmed the results of his predecessor Henderson | the stars most likely to have sensible parallax are those and those of Peters at Pulkowa in the second section of | which are remarkable for brilliancy or proper motion, and his work above mentioned. The latter is the most classic | that the parallaxes of the stars of comparison (having work in existence on refined observations of absolute decli- | little or no sensible proper motion and faint magnitude) nation, and it is by no means certain that, in more modern | are so small as to be insignificant. So far as our know- meridian observations, the work and methods of that dis- | ledge goes these assumptions are justified.

tinguished observer have been equalled—except perhaps Researches on stellar parallax by these methods have at Pulkowa. The minute precautions necessary in such | been followed of late years with considerable success. The work will be found in Peters’s paper above mentioned | instruments employed have been the heliometer and the (see also Transit Crecie). But not with all the skill of | filar micrometer (see Micromzrsr, vol. xvi. pp. 243-248), Peters, nor with every refinement of equipment and obser- | the latter instrument being used in conjunction with an vation, can the difficulties caused by refraction and minute | ordinary equatorial (see TELEScoPE). The precautions

SECONDS SCALE OF TIME IN YEARS FROM 1882-0 SECONDS OF ARC OF ARG hee -0+4 “0-3 -0-2 Or 0-0 40-1 40-2 #0-3 #0*4 40-5 40+6 40-7 +0-8 40°9 41-0 Ape 41.2 41.3 4064 if *0°5 Pa 7 SZ, ~~. o’s

yp 4 (eqn °

4

- dis LoS Set 4 + ii “” ={‘o mt bia ad a OES ia 10 Fig. 1. SECONDS SCALE OF TIME !N YEARS FROM 1882-0 SECONDS ec OF ARO-0+5

-0-4 0-3 -O:2 ⊖! 0-0 #0-1 #0-2 £0-3 40-4 40-5 40:6 40°7 40*8 40°9 41 O irl wie? +ie3 48-4 49-65 41-6 ¥le7 488 19° “ e 1 x dle ores | : ; so ~ Bo ele o| *, -=-05 gave 6 | = Os 8

Fig. 2.

required to determine and eliminate systematic error, | which the parallax is known with considerable accuracy,— and to secure the necessary refinement of accuracy, demand | Nos. 1 to 13 being in the northern and Nos. 14 to 22 in more space for their description than the limits of this | the southern hemisphere.!

article admit. The reader is referred for these particulars Sn ieee | Al to the undermentioned papers on the subject. Miaguntade: | Freper Meme) Petaline The heliometer method seems to present the greatest | |———— _____ ‘| . see 5} a de Gill to determine the parallax of a Centauri, with a helio eh aaialintiinch a ca 0-14 meter at the Cape of Good Hope. The ordinates of the | | 99) aes 6 2-05 0:06 curve are the time reckoned from 1882°0, the abscissa || 21. Canopus….. 1 0:00 Insensible. B Contautlesn eps; i Insensible.

the changes in the place of a Centauri due to the parallax computed from the observations. Each dot represents the observations of each single night, and the reader will be | 1 Audhorities.—1. 0. Struve, Mém. Acad. St Péersbourg, ser. vii. able to judge of the accuracy of the observations from the | vol. i. p. 45 (0-506); Auwers, Ast. Nach., Poe el As! Ball, agreement of the dots with the curve. Fig. 2 in like Dunsink Observations, vol. iii. p. 27 (0”°465); Hall, Wash. Observa-

: ; ee tions, 1879, Appendix I. (0’478 +014). 2, Winnecke (helio- manner represents a series of observations of Sirius. meter), Pub. Astron. Gesellschaft, No. xi. (0”50140”°011). 3. 0.

These and many other results show that, with similar | Struve, Mon. Notices R. A. S., vol. xliv. p. 287. 4. Auwers (differ- means, it is now possible to detect any differential parallax | ences of R.A.), Math. Abhand. Berliner Acad., 1867 (0292+

i a ; : : oer 0036). 5. Auwers (heliometer), Astron. Nachrichten, No. 1411 ene to 0-05 with in seer ede ays apie Gomeistng (0 ards OD): Krueger (heliometer), Mon. Notices R. a; S., vol. of a reasonable number of like observations—thus opening | 5×13 p. 173 (0”-26040”°020). 6. Krueger (heliometer), Jbid., Up a wide and unportant field for future research. (0-247 + 0021). 7. Brunnow, Dunsink Observations, vol. ii.

The following table contains a list of those stars of | p. 31 (0724040011). 8 0. Struve, Mém. Acad. St Péters-

i) wo

254

A glance at the table is sufficient to show that neither ap- parent magnitude nor apparent motion affords a criterion of the parallax of any fixed star. Similar researches must, in fact, be carried out on a much more extended scale before any definite conclusions can be drawn. At present we can only conclude that different stars really differ greatly in absolute brightness and absolute motion.

The following are the formule which will be found most useful in computing the corrections for parallax :—

For the Sun, Moon, and Planets.

Put 2 =the equatorial horizontal parallax ; A =the distance of the object from the earth ; ? ¢and ¢’ =the geocentric and apparent zenith distances respec-

tively; : A and A’=the geocentric and apparent azimuths respectively; @ and ¢’ =the geographical and geocentric latitudes respec- tively; p =the earth’s radius corresponding tog; _ aand a’ =the geocentric and apparent right ascensions of the object respectively; mae 8 and 8’ =the geocentric and apparent declinations of the object; t =the hour angle of the object (reckoned + when west of meridian). ; 1. To find the parallax of the moon in zenith distance and azi- muth, from the observed (or apparent) zenith distance and azimuth. Put ; y=(~- ¢’) cos A’ ; Then sin(¢’- ¢)=psin x sin (¢

=a)5 sil sin(A’< SO ; sin ¢ The corresponding quantities are found with all desirable precision for the sun and planets by the formule— ¢'~~; or approximately =~~ sin ¢’; A’-A=prsin (¢— ¢’) sin A’ cos ¢’; the latter quantity may generally be neglected. 2. To find the parallax of the moon in right ascension and decli- nation from the true (or geocentric) right ascension and declination.

9 psin x cos ¢’ cost |

Put sin : cos 6 then tan (2—a@’)=tan @ tan (45°+ 40) tan¢. tan ¢’ cos $(a — a’) | Ea a cos[t+4$(a-a’)] ’ six ofa? sin + sin ¢’cos (ry — 3) | sin y i then tan (5 — 6’) = tan 6’ tan (45° + 46’) tan (y— 8).

3. To find the parallax of the moon in right ascension and decli-

nation from the observed (or apparent) right ascension and decli- nation.3

a? sin 3 cos @’ sin ¢! cos 6 tan ¢’ cos $(a— a’), cos[t’—$(a—a’)] ’ psin x sin ¢’ sin (y — 8’) Ss sin Y ‘

sin (a—a ; tan y=

sin (5 — 8’

bourg, ser. vii. vol. i. (0’°14740”:009 2); Brunnow, Dunsink Obser- vations, vol. i, (0-21240”-012), vol. ii, (0’“188-40”-033); Hall, Washington Observations, 1879, Appendix I. (0““180+0“‘005). 9. Krueger (heliometer), Ast. Nach., 1403 (0’°162+0“‘007). 10. Johnson (heliometer), Radcliff Obs., vol. xvi. p. xxiii (0138+ 0”°052). 11. Wichmann (heliometer), Ast. Nach., No. 841 (0”:087 40°02); Brunnow, Dunsink Obs., vol. ii. (008907017). 12. Brunnow, Jéid. (0”-07040“‘014). 13. Brunnow, Ibid. (00544 0”°019), 14. Gill and Elkin, Bfem. R. A. S., vol. xlviii. p. 40 (0”°747 4.0018), p. 51 (0”-76-b 021), p. 71 (07840028), p. 82 (068+ °027), independent investigations. 15. Gill and Elkin, Jéid., p. 97 (0”°3740“‘009), p. 115 (0’°39+. 023), independent investiga- tions, 16. Gill, Zbid., p. 154 (0-285 + 0-02). 17. Gill and Elkin, Zbid., p. 1380 (0”:27+0““02), p. 138 (0”°170407°03). 18. Gill, Zbid., p. 160 (0-1664-0”-018). 19. Elkin, Zoid, p.

180 (0144002), 20. Elkin, Ibid, p. 174 (0-0640’-02). 21, Elkin, Jbid., p. 184 (0’-03+0”°03). 22. Gill, Lbid., p. 167 (—0-018+0”-019).

- In the case of the sun, planets, and comets this distance is generally expressed in terms of the earth’s mean distance from the sun, that distance being reckoned unity.

- Here ¢ must first be found by subtracting the value of Ga6 from the observed value of ¢’.

° In preliminary computation of (a— a’) employ 6’ for 6. With

this value compute y and §—8’. Finally, with resulting value of 8, |

correct preliminary computation of ¢— a’,

PAR—PAR

4. To find the parallax of the sun, planets, or comets in right ascension or dcclination.4

,__prcos ¢’ sin?’

C= aan 3

an-

cos 6’ tan ¢’ tany= ; e ; 5-9 =P sin ¢’sin (y— 3’) – sin y ;

When the distance of the object from the earth (A) is given (the earth’s mean distance from the sun being reckoned unity), as is usually the case in ephemerides of minor planets and comets, we have

pean solar parallax 8°78 = z an eu

The reader will find the proof of these formule in Chauvenet’s Spherical and Practical Astronomy, vol. i. pp. 104-127.

For the Parallax of the Fixed Stars.

Put py =the maximum angle subtended by the mean distance of the earth from the sun at the distance of the star,

=the star’s annual parallax; e =the obliquity of the ecliptic; @andr =the sun’s longitude and radius vector; aanda’) the star’s true and apparent right ascensions and 5 and 3’ declinations respectively.

1. To find the heliocentric parallax of a star in right ascension and declination, its annual parallax () being known.

a’—a= —pr scc 6(cos **() sin a— sin ©) cos €cos a); §’— = — pr sin ©@) (cos esin 5 sin a— sin e cos 8) — pr cos (cos a. 2. To find the effect of parallax on the distance (s) and position angle® (P) of two stars, one of which has sensible annual parallax.® As=prm cos ((@)- M); AP=prm’‘cos (()** — M’); where msin M=(-—cos asin P+sin §sin ecos P) cos e— cos 6 cos P sin ¢; mcos M=sin asin P+sin 8cosacosP;

‘ 1 ; : : ; i am’ sit Mw’ =—| – (cosacos P+sin Ssinasin P)cose+cosésin Psin |

? (= i P – in a i nh m’’ cos M 81N COs $1n 6 cos @si * (D. GI.)

PARALLELS, Turory or. The fundamental princi- ples of mathematics have not in general received from mathematicians the attention which they deserve. Mathe- matical science might in fact be compared to a building far advanced in construction. As to the firmness of its foundations there can be no doubt, to judge by the weighty superstructure which they carry; but the aspect of the building is not a little marred by the quantity of irrelevant rubbish which lies around those foundations, concealing their real strength and security. The question of the parallel axiom in Euclid’s geometry is to some extent an exception. There have been endless discussions concerning it. The difficulty is well known, and will be found succinctly stated in the article GromErry (vol. x. p. 378). Those who have treated the subject have devoted themselves either to criticizing the form of Euclid’s axion, suggesting modifications or substitutes (sometimes with undoubted advantage, e.g., Playfair), or to questioning its necessity, offering either to demonstrate the axiom or to dispense with it altogether. It would serve no useful purpose to attempt a complete account of the literature of the subject ; we may refer the reader who is curious in such matters to the various

editions of Perronet Thomson’s Geometry without Axioms. It will be sufficient to mention Legendre’s views, which, although by no means reaching to the root of the matter, may be held as indicating the dawn of the true theory.’ The delicacy of the question

4 ¢ and 6 may be used instead of ¢’ and 8’ in these formule without sensible error.

5 The position angle is to be reckoned from north through east, the star which has sensible parallax being taken for origin.

5 Obviously, also, P may here express the relative parallax of the two stars.

7 For some interesting controversy on this subject see Leslie’s

Geometry, 3d edition, p. 292; and Legendre, Eléments de Géométrie, 12th edition, p. 277.

ee

PAR—PAR

may be illustrated by the story which is told of Lagrange. It is said that towards the end of his life he wrote and actually took to the Institute a paper dealing with the theory of parallels. He had begun to read it; but, before he had proceeded very far, something struck him. He stopped reading, muttered “T] faut que j’y songe encore, ” and put the paper in his pocket (De Morgan, Budget of Paradoxes, p. 173). There appears to be no doubt that the true theory first presented itself to the mind of Gauss. The history of the matter is interesting, and deserves to be more generally known than it appears to be. In his earlier days, before his career in life was determined, when he had to consider the possibility of his becoming a teacher of mathematics, he drew up a paper in which he gave a philosophical development of the elements of mathematics. It was probably in the course of this discussion (about 1792) that he first came across the difficulty of the parallel axiom. He arrived at the conclusion that geometry became a logically consistent structure only after the parallel axiom was given as part of its foundation; and he convinced himself that this axiom could not be

proved, although from experience (for example, from the sum of the angles of the geodesic triangle Brocken, Hohenhagen, Inselberg) we know that it is at least very approximately true. If, on the other hand, this axiom be not granted, there follows another kind of geometry, which he developed to a considerable extent and called the antieuclidian geometry. Writing to Bessel on the 27th January 1829, he says—

“Tn leisure hours now and then I have again been reflecting on a subject which with me is now nearly forty years old; I mean the first principles of geometry; I do not know if I have ever told you my views on that matter. Here too I have carried many things to farther consolidation, and my conviction that we cannot lay the foundation of geometry completely @ priori has become if possible firmer than before. Meantime it will be long before I bring myself to work out my very extensive researches on this subject for publication, perhaps I shall never do so during my lifetime ; for I fear the outcry of the Beotians, were I to speak out my views on the question.”

Bessel entered heartily into the ideas of Gauss, and urged him to publish them regardless of the Bceotians. Concerning the generality of mathematicians in his day, Gauss probably judged rightly, however, for his intimate correspondent Schumacher was, as we learn from their correspondence in 1831, unable to follow the new idea. One of the letters (Gauss to Schumacher, 12th July 1831) is of great interest because it shows us that Gauss was then in full possession of the most important propositions of what is now called hyperbolic geometry. In particular he states that in hyperbolic space the circumference of a

e o=r

circle of radius 7 is hl eis es where & is a constant,

which we know from experience to be infinitely great compared with any length that we can measure (supposing, he means, the space of our experience to be hyperbolic), and which in Euclid’s geometry is infinite.

Gauss never published these researches; and no traccs of them seem to have been found among his papers after his death. Our first knowledge of the

hyperbolic geometry dates from_the publication of the works of N. Lobatschewsky and W. Bolyai. Lobatschewsky's views were first published in a lecture before the Faculty of Mathematics and Physics in Kasan, 12th February 1826. See Frischauf, Elemente der Absoluten Geometrie, Leipsic, 1876, page 33. Speaking of a German edition of Lobatschewsky's Work, which he had seen published at Berlin in 1840, Gauss says that he finds nothing in it which is materially new to him, but that Lobatschewsky's method of development is different from his own, and is a masterly performance carried out in the true Keometric spirit. The theory received its complement in_ the famous Hubilitationsschrift of Riemann, in which the elliptic geometry for the first time appears. Beltrami, Helmholtz, Cayley, Klein, and others have greatly developed the subject ; but it is

' Sartorius von Waltershausen, Gauss zum Geddchtniss, Leipsic, 1856, ios tule

unnecessary to pursue its later history here, since all essential details will be found in the article MEASUREMENT, vol. xv. p. 659. All that we need do is to call the attention of those who busy themselves with mental philosophy to this generalization of geometry, as one of the results of modern mathematical research which they cannot afford to overlook. (G. CH.)

PARALYSIS,? or Pansy, the loss of the power of muscular action due to some interruption to the nervous mechanism by means of which such action is excited (see 'Nervous System " in Puysiotocy). In its strict sense the term might include the loss of the influence of the nervous system or any of the bodily functions, the loss of common sensation or of any of the special senses; but other terms have come to be associated with these latter conditions, and the word "paralysis" in medical nomenclature is usually restricted to the loss or impairment of voluntary muscular power. Paralysis is to be regarded rather as a symptom than a disease per se, and is generally connected with some well-marked lesion of some portion of the nervous system. According to the locality and extent of – the nervous system affected, so will be the form and character of the paralysis. It is usual to regard paralysis as depending on disease either of the brain, of the spinal

cord, or of the nerves distributed to parts and organs ; and hence the terms cerebral, spinal, and peripheral paralysis respectively. he distribution of the paralytic condition may be very extensive, tending to involve in greater or less measure all the functions of the body, as in the general paralysis of the insane (see Insanity) ; or again, one half of the body may be affected, or one or more extremities, or it may be only a certain group of muscles in a part sup- plied by a particular nerve. Reference can be made here only to the more common varieties of paralysis, and that merely in general terms.

1. Paralysis due to Brain Disease.—Of this by far the most common form is palsy affecting one side of the body, or Hemiplegia. It usually arises from disease of the hemi sphere of the brain opposite to the side of the body affected, such disease being in the form of haemorrhage into the brain substance, or the occlusion of blood-vessels, and consequent arrest of the blood supply to an area of the brain; or again it may be due to the effect of an injury, or toa tumour or mor- bid growth in the tissues of the brain, The character of the seizure and the amount of paralysis vary according to the situation of the disease or injury, its extent, and its sudden or gradual occurrence. Theattack may come on as a fit of apoplexy, in which the patient becomes suddenly unconscious, and loses completely the power of motion of one side of the body; or a like result may arise more gradually and without loss of consciousness. In either case of “complete” hemiplegia the paralysis affects more or less the muscles of the tongue, face, trunk, and extremities. Speech is thick and indistinct, and the tongue, when pro- truded, points towards the paralysed side owing to the unopposed action of its muscles on the unaffected side. The muscles of the face implicated are chiefly those of mastication. The paralysed side hangs loose, and the corner of the mouth is depressed, but the muscles clos- ing the eye are as a rule unimpaired, so that the eye can be shut, unlike what occurs in another form of facial paralysis (Bell’s palsy). The muscles of respiration on the affected side, although weakened, are seldom wholly paralysed, but those of the arm and leg are completely powerless. Sensation may at the first be impaired, but as a rule returns soon, unless the portion of the brain affected be that which is connected with this function. Rigidity of the paralysed members is occasionally present as an early or alate symptom. In many cases of even complete hemiplegia improvement takes place after the lapse of

Wickliffe has palesy, and another

2 From mapadveiv, to relax. old form of the word is parlesy.

weeks or months, and is in general first indicated by a return of motor power in the leg, that of the arm following at a longer or shorter interval. Such recovery of move- ment is, however, in a large proportion of cases only partial, and the side remains weakened. In such instances the gait of the patient is characteristic. In walking he leans to the sound side and swings round the affected limb from the hip, the foot scraping the ground as it is raised and advanced. Besides this the evidence of the “shock ” is felt more or less upon the system generally, the patient rarely (though occasionally) recovering his nervous stability. The paralysed parts retain as a rule their electric con- tractility, but they are apt to suffer in their nutrition both from disuse and also from certain degenerative changes which the interruption of nervous influence is apt to exer- cise upon them.

It is to be observed that in many instances the hemi- plegia is only partial, and instead of the symptoms of complete paralysis above described there exist in varied combination only certain of them, their association depend- ing on the extent and locality of the lesion in the brain. Thus there may be impairment of speech and some amount of facial paralysis, while the arm and leg may be unaffected, or the paralysis may be present in one or both extremities of one side while the other symptoms are absent. Further, the paralysis may be incomplete throughout, and the whole of the side be weak, but not entirely deprived of motor power. To partial paralysis of this latter description the term “ paresis” is applied.

Besides hemiplegia, various other forms of paralysis may arise from cerebral disease. Thus occasionally the paralysis is crossed, one side of the face and the opposite side of the body being affected simultaneously. Or again, as is frequently observed in the case of tumours of the brain, the paralysis may be limited to the distribution of one of the cranial nerves, and may produce an association of phenomena (such as squinting, drooping of the eyelid, and impairment or loss of vision) which may enable the seat of the disease to be accurately localized.

2. Paralysis due to Disease of the Spinal Cord.—Of paralysis from this cause there are numerous varieties depending on the nature, the site, and the extent of the diseasc. Some of the more important only can be noticed.

Paraplegia, paralysis of both lower extremities, including usually the lower portion of the trunk, and occasionally also the upper portion—indeed the whole parts below the seat of the disease in the spinal cord—is a form of paralysis which is a not unfrequent result of injuries or disease of the vertebral column; also of inflammation affecting the spinal cord (MyEttris, g.v.), as well as of hemor- rhage or morbid growths involving its substance. When due to disease, the lesion is generally situated in the lower portion of the cord. The phenomena necessarily vary in relation to the locality and the extent of the disease in the cord. Thus, if in the affected arca the posterior part of the cord, including the posterior nerve roots, suffer, the function of sensation in the parts below is impaired because the cord is unable to transmit the sensory impressions from the surface of the body to the brain. If on the other hand the anterior portion of the cord and anterior nerves be affected, the motor impulses from the brain cannot be conveyed to the muscles below the seat of the injury or disease, and consequently their power of movement is abolished. In many forms of this complaint, particularly in the case of injuries, the whole thickness of the cord is involved, and both sensory and motor functions are arrested. Further, the functions of the bladder and bowels are apt to suffer, and either spasm or paralysis of these organs is the result. The nutrition of the paralysed parts tends to become affected, and

bed-sores and wasting of the muscles are common. Oeca- sionally, more especially in cases of injury, recovery takes place, but in general this is incomplete, the power of walking being more or less impaired. On the other hand the patient may linger on for years bedridden, and at last succumb to exhaustion or to some intercurrent disease.

A form of spinal paralysis, often showing itself ag paraplegia, occasionally occurs in children, and is termed—

Infantile or Essential Paralysis.—It is caused by an inflammatory affection limited to the anterior portion of the grey matter of the spinal cord throughout a greater or less extent, and affects therefore the function of motion, leaving that of sensation unimpaired. This disease ig most common during the period of first dentition (although a similar affection is sometimes observed in adults). The commencement may be insidious, or there may be an acute febrile attack lasting for several days. In either case paralysis comes on, at first very extensive, involving both upper and lower extremities, but tending soon to become more limited and confined to one or other limb or even to a group of muscles. The affected muscles lose their electric contractility and are apt to waste. Hence limbs become shortened, shrivelled, and useless, and deformities such as club foot may thus be readily produced. In many instances fortunately recovery is complete, and the pro- spect of amendment is all the greater if the muscles show any reaction to electricity. There is throughout an absence of some of the more distressing of the phenomena of paraplegia, such as disturbances of the bladder and bowels or extensive bed-sores, and in general the health of the child does not materially suffer.

Progressive Muscular Atrophy or Wasting Palsy is a disease usually occurring in early or middle life. It is characterized by the wasting of certain muscles or groups of muscles accompanied with a corresponding weakness or paralysis of the affected parts, and is believed to depend on a slow inflammatory change in the anterior cornua of the grey matter of the spinal cord. It is insidious in its onset, and usually first shows itself in the prominent muscular masses in the palm of the hand, especially the ball of the thumb, which becomes wasted and deficient in power. The other palmar muscles suffer in like manner, and as the disease advances the muscles of the arm, shoulders, and trunk become implicated if they have not themselves been the first to be attacked. The malady tends to spread symmetrically, involving the corresponding parts of the opposite side of the body in succession. It is slow in its progress, but, notwithstanding it may occasion- ally undergo arrest, it tends to advance and involve more and more of the muscles of the body until the sufferer is reduced to a condition of extreme helplessness. Should some other ailment not be the cause of death, the fatal result may be due to the disease extending so as to involve the muscles of respiration.

Another form of paralysis in certain respects resembling the last, and supposed by some to be due to a similar cause, is Pseudo-hypertrophic Paralysis, a condition occur- ring most frequently in male children, in whom in such cases there exists at first a remarkable enlargement of certain muscles or groups of muscles, followed sooner or later by wasting and paralysis. The enlarged muscles are chiefly those of the calf and hips, and their abnormal size is caused by an over-development of their connective tissue, and is therefore not a true hypertrophy. The child acquires a peculiar attitude and gait. He stands with bis legs widely separated, his body arched forward, and in walking assumes a rocking or waddling movement. Later on the enlarged muscles lose their bulk, and at the same time become weakened in power, so that walking becomes impossible, and the child is completely paralysed in the

limbs and all other affected parts. In most instances death takes place from some intercurrent disease before maturity.

Paralysis Agitans or Trembling Palsy is a peculiar form of paralysis characterized chiefly by trembling movements in certain parts, tending to become more widely diffused throughout the body. It is a disease of advanced life. The symptoms come on somewhat insidiously, and first show themselves chiefly by involuntary tremblings of the muscles of the fingers, hand, arm, or leg, which are aggra- vated on making efforts or under excitement. These trembling movements become more marked and more extensive with the advance of the disease, and along with the tremors there generally occurs increasing weakness of the affected muscles. This is very manifest in walking, the act being performed in a peculiar tottering manner with the body bent forward. The trembling movements cease during sleep. This disease is a chronic one, and is intractable to treatment, but life may be prolonged for many years.

Glosso-labio-laryngeal Paralysis is a form of paralysis affecting, as its name indicates, the functions of the tongue, lips, and larynx (besides others), and depending upon disease of certain localities in the medulla oblongata from which the nerves presiding over these functions arise. The symptoms come on slowly, and are generally first manifested in some difficulty of speech

owing to impaired movements of the tongue. Associated with this there is more or less difficulty in swallowing, owing to paralysis of the muscles of the pharynx and soft palate, by which also the voice is rendered nasal. With the advance of the disease the paralysis of the tongue becomes more marked. It cannot be protruded, and frequently undergoes atrophy. Certain of the facial muscles become implicated, especi- ally those in the neighbourhood of the mouth. The features become expressionless, the lips cannot be moved in speaking, the mouth remains open, and the saliva flows abundantly. The muscles of the larynx may also be involved ‘in the paralysis. In the later stages of the malady the power of speech is completely lost, the difficulty in swallowing increases to a degree that threatens suffoca- tion, the patient’s condition altogether is one of great misery, which is in no way mitigated by the fact of his mental power remaining unaffected. Complications con- nected with the respiratory or circulatory functions, or disease affecting other parts of the nervous system with which this complaint may be associated, often terminate the patient’s sufferings, and in any case life is seldom pro- longed beyond two or three years.

3. Peripheral Paralysis, or local paralysis of individual nerves, is of not unfrequent occurrence. The most com- mon and important examples of this condition can only be briefly referred to.

Facial Paralysis, Bell’s Palsy, are the terms applied to paralysis involving the muscles of expression supplied by the seventh nerve. It is unilateral, and generally occurs as the result of exposure of one side of the head toa draught of cold air which sets up inflammation of the nerve as it passes through the aqueductus Fallopii, but it may also be due to injury or disease either affecting the nerve near the surface or deeper in the bony canals through Which it passes, or in the brain itself involving the nerve at its origin. Here the paralysis is manifested by a marked change in the expression of the face, the patient being unable to move the muscles of one side in such acts as laughing, whistling, &c., or to close the eye on that side. The mouth is drawn to the sound side, while, although the muscles of mastication are not involved, the food in eating tends to lodge between the jaw and cheek on the palsied side. Occasionally the sense of taste is

impaired. In the ordinary cases of this disease, such as those due to exposure, recovery usually takes place in from two to six weeks, the improvement being first shown in the power of closing the eye, which is soon followed by the disappearance of the other morbid phenomena. When the paralysis proceeds from disease of the temporal bone, or from tumours or growths in the brain, it is more apt to be permanent, and is in many cases of serious import. Throughout there is no diminution of sensibility in the paralysed muscles; but they early lose their reaction te faradization, retaining that to galvanism.

Lead Palsy is a not uncommon form of local paralysis. It is due to the poisonous action of lead upon the system, and, like the other phenomena of lead poisoning, affects chiefly workers in that metal (see Leap). The pathology of this disease is still unsettled, but it is believed to depend upon the local effect of the lead upon the nerves of the part rather than to any disease, at least in the first instance, of the nerve centres. The paralysis in this case is as a rule confined to the muscles of the forearm which extend the hand, and as they lose entirely their power the hand cannot be raised when the arm is held out, which gives rise to the condition termed “wrist drop.” The paralysis may come to affect other muscles of the arms as well as certain of those of the legs and trunk, and along with the paralysis there occurs wasting of the affected muscles and loss of their electrical reactions. Occasionally in severe cases other nervous phenomena, such as convul- sions, delirium, &c., may become superadded. The symp- toms usually disappear on the removal of the patient from the source of lead contamination, along with the applica- tion of the treatment appropriate to poisoning with this meta],—and all the more speedily if the case has not been of long duration and the affected muscles have not under- gone atrophic change.

A form of peripheral paralysis not unlike the last occasionally results from chronic alcoholism, The paralysis occurring after diphtheria, another example of the peri- pheral variety, has been already referred to (see Dipu- THERIA).

Treatment.—It is impossible in a general notice like the present to refer at any length to the treatment of paralysis. The conditions of the disease in any particular case and its associations are so manifold that they can only be fully understood and appreciated by the medical expert under whose direction alone treatment can be advantageously carried out. It may be stated generally, however, that, since paralysed muscles tend to undergo certain degenera- tive changes (see Paruotocy), it becomes an object in treatment to endeavour to maintain as long as possible their molecular integrity. With this view, when pain and other acute symptoms which may be present have ceased, the use of nervine tonics such as iron, quinine, and strych- nine, and the suitable dieting of the patient, are the best constitutional remedies; while of local applications fric- tions or massage, but more particularly the employment of electricity, will be found of service, the latter agent often yielding markedly beneficial results. (J. 0, A.)

PARAMARIBO, the administrative and commercial capital of Dutch Guiana or Surinam, is situated in 5° 44’ 30’ N. lat. and 55° 12’ 54” W. long., on the right bank of the Surinam, which, though at that point 20 miles from the sea, is a tidal river nearly a mile broad and 18 feet deep, Built on a plateau about 16 feet above low-water level, Paramaribo is well-drained, clean, and in general healthy; the straight canals running at right angles to the river, the broad, straight, tree-planted streets, the spacious squares, and the solid if plain-looking public buildings would not be unworthy of a town in: the Netherlands. Among the more conspicuous edifices

are—Fort Zeelandia (used as a civil and military prison) at the north corner, between the town proper and the Combé suburb; the Government-house, surrounded by a * magnificent garden and park ; the town-house, with a tower 100 feet high ; the law courts; the public hospital, where there is a remarkable betel-nut avenue 50 feet in height ; the Reformed Dutch, Lutheran, Moravian, and Roman Catholic churches; and the Portuguese and Dutch syna- gogues. The population, barely 16,000 in 1854, was 20,373 in 1869, and 21,265 in 1878.

The Indian village of Paramaribo became the site of a French

settlement probably in 1640, and in 1650 it was made the capital of the colony by Lord Willoughby of Parham. In 1683 it was stil] only a “cluster of twenty-seven dwellings, more than half of them grog-shops,” but by 1790 it counted more than a thousand houses. The town was partly burned down in 1821, and again in 1832,

PARANA. See Pirate River.

PARANAHYBA (PaRNanyBa, or PERNAHYBA), Sio Luiz bg, a city of Brazil, the chief port of the province of Piauhy, is situated on the right bank of the important Rio de Paranahyba, near the beginning of its delta. It hasa population of about 15,000, and trades in cotton, leather, &c., but its port is little visited by foreign steamers,

PARASITISM

ANIMAL PARASITISM.

ee problems suggested by the occurrence of parasites

not only in the intestines or the kidneys but even in flesh and blood, in eye or brain, have occupied alike physician and naturalist from the earliest times. From ancient Egyptian and Jewish sanitary and religious codes we may perhaps infer considerable knowledge of the distri- bution and danger of parasites,—unclean animals like the pig, rabbit, and dog being peculiarly infested with them. The schoolmen, too, perplexed themselves with quaint hypotheses as to the time and place and mode of the introduction of the parasites of man, while the long per- sistence of medieval myths is evidenced by the “ Furia infernalis” of the Systema Nature. The spontaneous generation of parasites seems never to have been doubted until the commencement of the 18th century, when Redi proved the origin of maggots from eggs of the blow-fly, and Swammerdam announced the similar origin of lice and other insect parasites. Both naturalists, however, opposed the extension of their results to the Entozoa, but the discovery of

microscopic animalcules, and the reflexion that these must readily be introduced into the body, induced Boerhaave to suggest the origin of parasites from free-living worms and infusorians. The sexuality and characteristics of a few Hntozoa gradually became better known, while Linnzeus, though little dreaming of their complex form-history, expelled the spontaneous generation theory by the in-so-far fortunate mistake of identifying the free Bothriocephalus of the stickleback as the young stage of 4. latus of man, and certain free Planarians and Nematoids as the young of liver flukes and thread worms. His school vastly increased the hitherto scanty catalogue of known forms, while their exacter knowledge rendered his hypo- thesis improbable. The origin of Hntozoa from eggs which leave the body of their host, enter new hosts in food or drink, and when developing in other organs than the ali- mentary are carried thither by the circulation, was clearly put forward by Pallas, who also revived the early view of inheritance, which had been propounded before by the contemporaries of Leeuwenhoek (then, however, to avoid the apparently insoluble difficulty of tracing the origin of the parasite from its innumerable yet apparently wasted ova). With the enormous labours of Rudolphi and Bremser hel. minthology rose to the rank of an important special study, yet the degeneration of the Linnean school had nowhere fuller course: observation of faunistic and systematic detail excluded all physiological or morphological research, and the knotty problem of origin was simply cut by a return to the hypothesis of spontaneous generation. This view seemed supported by the absence of reproductive organs In cystic parasites, and reigned almost undisputed until the accumulation of a new chain of evidence. Of this the main links were the discovery of the ciliated larva of a Trematode (Monostomum) by Mehlis in 1831, of the Redia or Cercaria stages of the same genus, and of the

six-hooked embryo of Z'enia by Siebold in 1835, and the renewed study of Bothriocephalus latus by Eschricht, who maintained that the encysted forms were persistently larval, and that the life-history of the Zntozoa should be viewed as broadly parallel to that of parasitic insects. Yet in spite of all this, and of the corroborative researches of Valentin, many helminthologists remained obstinate, until these incredible life-histories had been confirmed and treated as so many other cases of the " Alternation of Generations" in the epoch-making work of Steenstrup (1842). Dujardin next observed the

wanderings of Mermis, and Siebold those of Gordius; the latter, however, advanced the doctrine that cysts were not larval stages, but mere pathological modifications of those worms which had chanced to “wander” into situations unfitted for their normal life. Meanwhile were commencing the important labours of Van Beneden, who traced the actual development of the cystic parasites of the bony fishes into the tape-worms of the rays and dogfishes which had devoured them, so proving that the transmission of the parasites depended upon the mode of feeding. Kiichenmeister, who not only transmuted cyst into tape- worm by transmission in food, but redeveloped the cystic form by feeding with eggs from the adult tape-worm, thus (1852-53) commencing the modern era of experimental helminthology. Haubner and Leuckart eagerly followed for the same group; Filippi, Valette, Pagenstecher, and Cobbold made similar investigations on Trematodes; while Leuckart transferred Pentastomum from rabbit to dog, and traced the formidable Trichina from pig to man. From this time (1860) the advances of our knowledge have been no longer in principle, though numerous and important, but in detail. To Kiichenmeister, Cobbold, Davaine, and others, but more especially to Leuckart, we owe valuable general works; to the last the present article is especially indebted.!

Any discussion of parasitism with its difficulties and wide theoretic bearings should naturally be preceded by an account of the known facts. This would involve the pre- paration of two systematic lists,—the first enumerating the parasitic members of each animal group, while the second, from the point of view not of parasites but of hosts, would indicate the forms which are infested, stating by what parasites. Of these lists the following scanty outlines

must suffice. A. List of Parasites.

Protozoa (see Protozoa).—Amceboid organisms are occasionally detected in dysentery and kindred diseases; the best known of these is Ameba coli. Parasitic Infusoria occur much more fre- quently : thus in the paunch of sheep and oxen six species (Oph- ryoscolex, Entodinium, Isotricha) are constant; similarly in the rectum of the frog are invariably present Opalina, Nyctotherus, and Balantidium; while B. coli, first described from man, inhabits

1 See Leuckart, Die menschlichen Parasiten, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1863-76; a second edition (commencing in 1879) is now in progress as Die Parasiten des Menschen 5 Cobbold, Parasites, London, 1879; Kiichenmeister and Ziirn, Die Parastien d. rome 1881; Hirsch, Hand. d. hist.-geogr. Pathol., 2d ed., vol. ii., Stuttgart,

These results were soon confirmed by-

the pig. Zrichodina infests Planarians. Flagellate parasites are more numerous: Cercomonas intestinalis is frequently observed in choleraie affections ; Z'richomonas intestinalis and vaginalis are also deseribed in diseases. In perhaps all invertebrates and cold-blooded vertebrates ciliate and flagellate parasites scem to occur. Acinetx are sometimes parasitic on other Jnfisoria.

By far the most important group, however, are the exclusively parasitie Gregarinida. These are very widely distributed among the tissues of invertebrates, especially worms and insects, and their normal life-history is readily observed in the species infesting the tissues of the common earthworm. Their spores or pscudo- mavicelle are apparently closely related to the psorosperms fre- quently detected in both vertebrate and invertebrate tissues, and even in the liver and hair of the human subject.?

Dicyemida.—This group contains only one entirely parasitic genus, various species of which live in the renal organs of Cephalo-

oda. The adult consists essentially of a simple sac of finely ciliated ectodermal cells enclosing a single elongated endodermal cell, which discharges nutritive and reproductive functions. Some have attempted to demonstrate a mesoderm. The embryos are of two kinds, nematogenic or vermiform, and rhombogenic or infusiform, differing in origin, structure, and life-history, but of still uncertain relations andimport. Theinfusiform embryo which beeomes free is of complicated structure, and probably completes its development in some new host. Some have conneeted the Dicyemida with such higher forms as the Rotifera or Trematodes, and have regarded the simplicity of the adult as the result of that degeneration which

is suggested both by development and habit. Haeckel, while acknowledging degeneration, regards Dicyema as a survivor of the originally simple Gastrwada from,which the Metazoa have sprung.

Orthonectida.—This group consists of a number of minute para- sites, sueh as Rhopalura, infesting some Nemertines, Turbellarians, and Ophiuroids, Although moving in linear direction, as their name implies, they exhibit radiate structure. The ciliated and segmented ectoderm encloses an inner endoderm layer and a central cavity which usually contains embryos. They exhibit a well- marked sexual dimorphism, the males being smaller and with fewer segments. Their position is as problematic as that of the Dicyemida; they may be regarded as degraded forms allied to the Turbellaria, Trematoda, or Rotatoria, or as survivors of the Gastreada.? ms

Celenterata.—In this group (see Corats, Hyprozoa), while the fixed forms are frequently indebted for support to other organisms or to each other, and although such associations occasionally seem tolerably constant, true parasitism is remarkably rare. Young Narcomedusx (Cunina) are parasitic within the mouth of Carma- vina, and the hydroid Lafea parasitica grows like ivy on Aglaophenia.

Similar remarks apply to the Afol/usca, where, with one or two exceptions (¢.g., Entoconcha mirabilis discovered by Johannes Miller in Synapta, and another Philippine species described by Semper) parasitism is unknown.

Echinodermata.—There are no parasitic Echinoderms.

Vermes.—To this sub-kingdom belong the majority of parasites, but the greater groups are treated in separate articles. Sce NEMATOIDEA, and for Cestoids and Trematodes sce TAPEWORM.

Acanthocephala.—This group, usually regarded as degenerate from NeMATOIDEA (q.v.), is represented by various species of Echinorhynchus. These parasites possess a muscular elongated body with a retractile proboseis armed with hooks, which serves to fix the animal to its host. Sense organs, mouth, alimentary canal, and anus are wanting; but the muscles, nerves, and generative organs are well developed. There is a complicated subcutancous eanal system; the sexes are distinct, and the

reproduction is vivi- parous. The embryo, well provided with ensheathing membranes and with hooks, is expelled with the exereta of its vertebrate host and swallowed by some Arthropod, such as Asellus or Gammarus. There a remarkable metamorphosis takes place: the adult is formed within the body of the larva, the skin being the only part of the larva whieh passes over to the adult. The young Echinorhynchus finally passes with its invertebrate host into the alimentary canal of some vertebrate, ¢.g., fish or bird or even pig, and there attains sexual maturity.

Rotatoria,—Such forms as Albertia, found externally on certain worms (Nats, &c.), and Balatro inside the same, are distinctly parasitie, and are not improbably differentiations of the same form.

mong the Nemerteans various parasites occur, such as Ponto- bdella, Branchellion, Piscicola, found especially on fish. The Chetopoda are never parasitic, and but rarely commensal. The

; See Leuckart, Bronn's Protozoen, and article Protozoa. C0 – van Beneden, Bulletin del Acad. Royale de Belgique, xi. and xlii., 1876; en Po, Mitth. Zool. Stat. Neapel, 1882, iv. 1-89; Jour. Roy. Microscop. is ' coe Jour. de VAnat. et de la Physiol., xv., 1879; Comptes Rendus. IRSA a pee Jour. Microscop. Sci., vol. xx., 1880 (figure); Metschnikoff, Zool. 1881 ° 43,1879; Jour. Roy. Microscop. Soc., 1881; Ztschr. f. w. Zool., XXXV., ; Jour. Roy. Microscop. Soc., 1880, p. 86. ;

Pay ADAT Le i

259

Myzostomata are probably, however, degenerate Chetopods, repre- sented by the genus Myzostoma living ectoparasitically on Crinoids.

Crustacea.—This group includes an immense number of forms in varying degree parasitic. The Copepoda include all grades from free-living forms to such degenerated parasites as Achtheres, Lernxa, Chondracanthus, and Argulus. Many Entomostraca are parasitic, and among the Jsopoda we find such forms as Bopyrus and Cryptoniscus. Among the Cirripedia again are

various grades of parasitism from some of the Lepadidez to the ne plus ultra of degeneration—the Rhizocephala.*

Jnsecta.—Insects furnish a large proportion of ectoparasites, but comparatively few endoparasites, for very obvious reasons. The Strepsiptera, parasitic on bees, the ichneumoui-flies, Platygaster, and allied Hymenopterous fornis, the Pediculinew (Hemiptera) and the Mallophaga are the more iniportant parasites. Many of the other groups also include parasitic members. See INSECTS.

Arachnida.—The majority of Acarina (see MITE) are parasitic, aud there are many other Arachnida of similar habit. To the Arachnida the Pycnogonida and the Pentastomida are often referred. The former are parasitic in their youth at least on Hydroids. Pentastomum exhibits eonsiderable divergenee from the Araehnoid type, and has a life-history closely parallel to that of the Cestoids. The adult form is found in the frontal sinus of the dog or wolf ; the embryos pass through the nose to the exterior, and if eaten by a hare or rabbit lose their investment, penetrate to the liver, eneyst, and pass through a complieated series of ehanges, finally attaining maturity and sexuality when the flesh of the rodent is eaten by the origina] host.

Vertebrata.—The Vertebrata are rarely parasitic. The best case of ineipient parasitism is that of Myxine, which burrows into the codfish. With this may be compared the well-known Aemora, whieh attaches itself externally to sharks, &. Commensalism is, however, more common, many small Teleosteans living with Mcdusx, sea anemones, and such like. Fierasfer finds a lodgment inside the respiratory tree of Holothurians; and Semper describes a Philippine species which actually devours the viscera of its Holo- thurian host.

B. Distribution of Parasites and List of Hosts.

Protozoa are of course rarely infested ; Calenterata also rarely; species of Distomwm have been taken on Physophora, Velella, Pelagia, Beroe, and Cestum ; a seolex and a nematoid have been described from Ctenophores, while various Arthropods oecur eeto- parasitically. Echinoderms are also very free from parasites ; on Echinus, however, despite its pedicellarie,

occur oeeasionally the semi-planariform Trematode Syndesmis, and the molluses Sty/ifer, Anaplodium, and Eulima (the latter occurs also on starfishes). The Comatule of all seas bear Myzostoma. Holothurians from the Pacific occasionally contain crustaceans, sueh as the crab Pinnotheres, and several Copepods. Their respiratory tree lodges Fierasfer, while Synapta contains the mollusc Entoconcha mirabilis.

Mollusca are more largely infested. Pinnotheres and other Crustacea frequently inhabit the mantle cavity of marine Lamelli- branchs, as the Arachnid Atax does the fresh-water mussel. The Lamellibranchs also have their peculiar Trematodes like Aspido- gaster and Buccphalus, besides Cercariz, from whieh probably few Gasteropods, whether marine, fresh water, or terrestrial, are ever free. The Cephalopods not only eontain certain Dicyemz in their renal organs, but through their piscivorous habits acquire 7’’ctra- rhynchus and

Crustaceans frequently contain Gregarines ; and a few Cestoids, Trematodes, and Nematoids (and Branchiobdella) have been described, as well as the cystic Echinorhynchus, from Gammarus pulex. More formidable, however, are the Copepods, like the familiar Nicothoe of the lobster’s gills; and, worst of all, the Rhizoccphala, like Peltogaster and. Sacculina of the hermit and shore crab respectively.

Guanine oie contain Nematoids, and spiders Mermis and Gordius. Insects are preyed upon by ichneumons, are largely plagued by ticks externally, and internally by Gregarines and worms, most frequently Gordius and Mermis ; but also by larval Hymenoptera of many families, by certain Diptera, and by the Strepsiptera. See INSECTS. } ;

The Z’unicata harbour many erustaccans, &c., chiefly in the test.

It is among vertebrates, however, that parasitism is most frequent and most fatal. Fishes swarm externally with Trematodes, leeches, and parasitic erustaceans, internally with cysts and intestinal worms all too numerous for enumeration. Nothing gives a more vivid idea of the extent to which parasitism has reached than an examination of a ray, or even better, the eommon sunfish (Orthagoriscus). Amphibians are inhabited by many parasites,—the common frog

4 See CrusTAcrA, and the more recent researches of Claus and Kossmann, as also those of Lacaze-Duthiers on Laura, and the especially rcinarkable investiga- tions of Delage on Sacculina (Zoolog. Jahresbericht, 1880-84).

having almost constantly Ascaris nigrovenosa in its lungs, and infusorial parasites in its rectum, and may also yield Distomum, Echinorhynchus, &c., twenty species in all. Lizards harbour tape- worms, Nematoids, including species of Zrichina, more rarely Trematodes. Ophidians have all kinds of parasitic worms, Chelo- nians chiefly Nematoids and Trematodes. The parasites of birds are of extraordinary number and variety ; preying, fishing, and oninivorous birds serve, of course, very constantly as intermediate hosts; but graminivorous birds are hardly more exempt. The number of parasites is often so vast as to occasion the most serious disease; thus the “gapes” of poultry is due to the choking of the bronchial passages by multitudes of Nematoids (Sclerostoma syngamus), and the grouse disease to a similar cause (Strongylus pergracilis),

Yet a great number of parasites may be borne without apparent injury: thus the post-mortem examination of a single stork has yielded twenty-four Filaria and sixteen Strongylus from the lungs and air passages, one hundred Spiroptera from the coats of the stomach, more than a hundred of various species of Distomum, and many hundreds of Holostomwm from the gulletand intestine. Ticks and insect parasites are also common; of these the most remarkable are the feather-cating Mallophaga. The majority of the Mammalia have as internal parasites many different species of worms either in adult or cystic form, which are fully described in veterinary works. The special parasites of man are estimated by Cobbold at as many as 121 species (13 Trematodes, 16 Cestodes, 21 Nematoids, 10 Leeches, 17 Arachnids, 44 Insects) ; many of these, especially among insects, have occurred only very rarely, and should not be reckoned, ¢e.g., Musca vomitoria and Blaps mortisaga, while a con- siderable number of the truly parasitic forms have only been once or twice described,—the above estimate thus becoming reduced well-nigh to half.}

Taxonomy.—Far then from there being, as was formerly thought, one great group of Hntozoa by itself, we have seen that most invertebrate groups have

their parasitic members and exhibit transitions or grades connecting these with free-living forms. The systematic position of many parasitic species is, however, not yet clear, many have been named by accident or according to habitat, and great con- centration seems necessary. It is, for example, extremely probable that a careful systematic study of genera like Gordius, Distomum, and Tetrarhynchus, of which innumer- able species have been described from as many different hosts, would result in proving the identity of many forms described as distinct, and that experiment would show that many of the forms still apparently specifically distinct are really only individuals of the same species more or less modified by the host upon whom the lotterv of nature has chanced to quarter them.

With the increasing completeness of our knowledge of parasitic forms the transitions from free to parasitic species are becoming more prominent, and the relationships of the parasitic to the non-parasitic groups more definite. Among the Nematoidea, for example, as Leuckart indicates, we are able to construct a series, starting from free-living forms, and through such cases as Leptodera (a Rhabditis-like form, sometimes free, sometimes parasitic), thence to parasitic Nematodes hardly to be distinguished from their free-living relations, but passing gradually through Oxyuris, Tricho- cephalus, Spiroptera, &c., to such highly parasitic forms as Trichina, where all relation to the outer world is lost. The Acanthocephala Leuckart has taught us to regard as Nematodes highly modified by parasitism, and he points out how Gordius, with its atrophied alimentary canal, terminal position of female reproductive organs, and other persistent and embryonic characters in which it differs from the typical Nematoid, really leads up to Echinorhynchus. As Echino- rhynchus is related to the Nematodes, so are the Cestoids to the Trematodes. The close alliance suggested by numerous points of anatomical correspondence, and by the close parallelism in life-history, is corroborated by such inter- mediate forms as Caryophylleus and Amphilina, from which we pass with ever-increasing parasitic adaptation

1 For lists see, in addition to general authorities, Linstow Compendium ad. eg one. “aii : Ng Beneden, Animal Parasites and Messmates ; old, dzuman Parasites (1882), and Parasites of Domestic Animals (1874): Ziegler’s Pathology, English ed., London, 1883. (.

through the Ligulide to Bothriocephalus and Tenia. Leuckart further points out how closely the Trematodes are united by intermediate forms to the Planarians. The affinities of Myzostoma and Pentastomum are not yet precisely determined, though the former is most plausibly regarded as a degenerate Chzetopod and the latter as similarly degenerated from some low Arachnid or at least Arthropod type. In the Copepoda, Cirripedia, and other crustaceans all degrees in intimacy of association may be observed, making the relations of the parasitic to the free forms sufficiently obvious. Everywhere, in short, we find a morphological and physiological gradation from free to parasitic forms.

Nature and Degree of Parasitism—Commensalism.— From the foregoing necessarily much abbreviated lists we observe not only the enormously wide prevalence of para- sitism—the number of parasitic individuals, if not indeed that of species, probably exceeding that of non-parasitic forms—but its very considerable variety in degree and detail. The majority indeed derive their main support from their host, but of these some are free, wandering about from animal to animal, some are attached per- manently to the exterior of their victim, while others again are concealed within its body. In some cases the parasitism is only temporary, with others it is a life-long habit. The majority are free in their youth, while some pass their early life as parasites, becoming free in their mature state, and others again spend their whole life on their host.

In some cases there is the very slightest association ; every student of marine forms is familiar with the complex

Fia. 1.—Colony of sea-anemones (Sagaritia parasitica) on shell of hermit erab,

incrustations and intergrowths of sessile forms, and has seen how almost any surface or cranny may afford a lodgment. Parasitism for support is not infrequent; it may be temporary or permanent; in the former case it 18 useful in diffusion,—the glochidium-larva of the fresh- water mussel, for

example, being transported on the fins of fishes. From cases like those of many Cirripedes, which occur indifferently on rocks or on animals, we pass readily to permanent associations like that of Loxosoma on the posterior end of Phascolosoma. Vague and loose assocta- tions, if useful to one or both participants, may become perpetuated by natural selection. Thus sea anemones may settle on any surface,—occasionally therefore on shells inhabited by hermit crabs; hence have arisen permanent

1 :

fh

ANIMAL, |

associations. Of these there are many familiar instances, such as the hermit crabs bearing Sagartia parasitica (fig. 1), or having their shell-mouth enveloped by Adamsia. One of the quaintest instances is a lately described species of crab which wields an anemone firmly grasped in either claw. Tn such cases the association is obviously useful: the crab is protected from the octopus and other enemies by the nematocysts of its comrade, which also aid in holding the prey, while the Act:nia too gains its share of the food, and vicariously acquires means of locomotion. ‘To such cases where two animals are associated together for mutual sup- port and advantage the term “ Commensalism” is applied. Tn the struggle for existence increased complexity of needs, and difficulty in satisfying them, evokes in the individual organism a certain specialization of function and conse- quent differentiation of structure. Similar causes result not so much in the differentiation of each individual of a species as in the specialization of certain individuals for certain specific functions, resulting again in that specialization of structure which is called polymorphisn1. Thus in a Hydractinia or Siphonophore colony many different individuals of the same species have been specia- lized in each to perform a certain function. The same purpose is served by those associations, not of individuals of the same species, but of two individuals of different species, united as we have just seen for mutual advantage, and each working out some definite part of the common life-problem. Just as polymorphism in the same species is physiologically equivalent to differentiation in the indi- vidual organism, so

is commensalism between different species the physiological equivalent of polymorphism in a single species.

But cases of co-operation on equal terms are rare ; size constitutes the most frequent disparity, and the smaller tends to become first wholly dependent upon the other for support, then for concealment, and finally perhaps for sustenance. ‘The reverse may occasionally occur, the weaker being utilized for the purposes of the stronger ; thus a species of Dromia adapts a colony of sponge or ascidian as a removable upper garment for concealment.}

Parasitism within the same Species.—In some cases even within the morphological unity of the species a physio- logical relation is established analogous to commensalism if not to parasitism. Thus in Bonellia the diminutive and degenerate male lives in the uterus of the female, in Trichosomum crassicauda of the rat three or four male are found within the spermatheca of the female, while in Bilharzia the incipient reciprocal of these cases is found, the male being host. Many of the most remarkable cases are also afforded by the Cirripedia, in which a female may bear males in various states of dependence and degenera- tion. In viviparous animals a certain absorption by the young from the tissues of the parent can hardly avoid taking place; this is therefore so far an analogy to endo- parasitism. This advantage is clearly retained and deve- loped if absorption take place by an organ specialized for the purpose. Thus in the well-known shark Mustelus levis the young are attached to the oviduct by a placenta developed on the yolk sac; and the like arrangement, though morphologically different, is physiologically the same among the Mammalia.

Hyperparasitism.—Not only are very few animals alto- gether free from parasites, but even parasites themselves find their nemesis in being themselves infested by lesser parasites, though not “ad infinitum.” Thus Leuckart mentions that water-lice and thread-worms are found on parasitic crustaceans, and the endoparasitic larva of some Hymenoptera are themselves preyed upon by other larvee

1 : ”

Pa an account of many cases of commensalism, see V. Beneden, Animal rasites, and Semper, Animal Life, both in International Science Series.

rok asi Tis iM

(Pteromalinz). Nematodes are found in Nicothoe, and associated with Sacculina are frequently found two other crustacean parasites, one of which, after destroying the greater part of its host, continues to subsist upon the nourishment afforded by its root-like processes which sur- vive the operation.

_ Classification. —Some classification of these various parasitic forms is necessary. Van Beneden introduced the useful term commensals or messmates, under which he includes (1) otkosites or fixed and (2) coinosites or free partuers. These he distinguishes not only from parasites but from mtualists where two species are associated, but neither share a common food nor does one prey on the other. Parasites he divides according to the duration of their state of attachment to a host, distinguishing (1) those which are frec all their life (leeches, bugs, fleas, &c.); (2) those free as adults but parasitic when young (Lehneumon, Mermits, &c.) ; (3) those free only in youth, and attaining their adult form either directly in the first host entered, or only after a migration from one host to another (most parasitic worms) ; (4) those which pass all phases of their life on or in their host, ¢9., Strepsiptera, Tristomum, &e. In this classification there is no attempt to define the degree of dependence or the closeness of the association, except in the general distinction between parasites and commensals; the group of mutualists is entirely superfluous and confused, no clear definition being given, and in the examples of the various groups the limits of his own defini- tions are not adhered to.

_Leuckart distinguishes parasites as ccto- and endo-parasitic, and divides the former into temporary and permanent. Endoparasites he divides according to the nature and duration of their strictly parasitic life. (1) Some have free-living and self-supporting embryos which become sexually mature either in their freedom or only after assuming the parasitic habit. (2) Others have embryos which, without having a strictly free life, yet pass

through a period of active or passive wandering, living fora while in an intermediate host. They may either (a) escape to pass their adult life in freedom (Archigetes and Aspidogaster), or (6) they may become sexual, or © they may bore their way to another part of the body (7’richina), or (d) most frequently they pass to their fina] host either directly when their interincdiate host is devoured as food, or indirectly seeking for themsclves another intermediate host, or producing asexual forms which do so (Trematodes and Cestoids). (8) Others again have no free-living or even migratory embryonic stage, but pass through their complete life-cycle in one host (Trichocephalus, Oxyuris, &c.). This somewhat detailed classification has at least the advantage of clearness, and of showing to some extent the various degrees of parasitism.

Kossmann has proposed a more physiological classification dealing with the organization and habit of the parasite. This he has applied to the Crustacea :—I. Diosmotici, or vegetative without independent digestive organs, ¢.g., Rhizocephala ; Il. Digestorii, with independent digestive system, and including (1) Sedentaru, Copepoda ateletmeta, Bopyridx, Euboniscide, Cryptoniscide ; (2) Vagantes, Copepoda holotmeta, Branchiura, Cymothoide. The great variety of details, however, makes it almost impossible to establish any logically accurate division. Any strict classification of such a variety of organisms having only in common the physiological corre- spondence of their mode of life is almost impossible, and the most that can be done is to point out the existence of series of adapta- tions varying with the intimacy and constancy of the association and the degree of dependence.

Origin of Parasitism and Transmission of Parasites.— With the dismissal of the theory of generatio aquivoca, the question of the origin of parasites 1s limited to the discus- sion of the causes which might induce such a change of habit and environment. ‘There are obviously many oppor- tunities for one animal either in adult or larval state being swallowed by another in food or drink, in which case, if the environment were not too utterly different from that previously enjoyed, parasitism might arise in a purely unconscious way. It is again easily conceivable that animals which have sought a host for temporary protection from climate or enemies, or for safety and seclusion in the bearing and breeding of the young, might,

finding the environment congenial and a supply of food at hand, remain there during a large portion of their life. It is worth noticing, as corroboratory of the idea that the host was in many cases resorted to primarily as a sort of mater- nity asylum, that we find many parasitic females with free males, ¢.g., Vicothoe. Given an animal with a carnivorous habit, it is intelligible enough that during a period of

scarcity of food or of extreme pressure from enemies, vari- ous methods of solving the problem of life would be

attempted, the successful results of which in a few cases”

persist especially in ectoparasitism, not the least obvious mode of retaliation on stronger foes. The degree of the parasitism is, as we have seen, not of primary moment, and its intimacy may be increased. There are naturally some physiological limits of respiration, &c., determining the possibilities of parasitism—air-breathing insects are found on land animals or at most on some amphibian forms, water-breathing Arthropods on water-breathers, water- breathing worms only in the interior of land animals; but even these limits may be overstepped by adaptation when, for example, the respiration becomes cutaneous in Penta- stomum, Sarcoptes, &c.

The various modes of transmission of parasites, though of great practical importance, do not call for much dis- cussion here. They may be summarized as follows after Leuckart :—(1) the majority of parasites reach their hosts through the medium of food or drink; (2) eggs are in some cases transferred from one animal to another by actual bodily contact, e.g., the eggs of Pentastomum by the licking of dogs; (3) sometimes the eggs are deposited in or on the host by the mother, for example, by insect para- sites, such as Jchnewmons, Gistridex, &c. ; (4) in some rare cases parasites are transmitted by self-infection,—for example, young 7’richinex, born free in the alimentary canal of their host, bore their way thence directly into the muscles, there to grow into the well-known encapsuled worms. Eggs or proglottides of tape-worm may, on gain- ing the exterior, be transmitted inadvertently to the _ mouth, and so recommence their life-cycle within the same host.

The mode of diffusion of the ova of parasites presents many analogies to that of seeds in the vegetable kingdom : thus wind and water are alike utilized, passing animals may serve as unconscious bearers, and the like. Though well protected by a usually thickened egg-shell and an often remarkable degree of vitality, so as to resist pro- longed drought, burial, and other vicissitudes, the parasite has an exceedingly small chance of success in finding a host ; to preserve the species from extinction an enormous number of eggs must be produced, far exceeding that of free-living organisms. Thus Leuckart points out that as a tapeworm has an average lifetime of two years, and pro- duces in that time about 1500 proglottides, each contain- ing say 57,000 ova, and since the species is not increasing in numbers, an ovum has thus only one chance in 85,000,000 of reaching maturity. The difficulties are of course increasingly greater as the life-history becomes more

complicated, demanding an increasing number of hosts. °

Given a sufficient number of eggs, however, no difficulty is insuperable, and few parasitic forms accordingly seem in any risk of disappearance, except, it is to be hoped, in the case of civilized man and the domestic animals, where the large consumption of cooked food, aided by conscious hygienic precautions and medical aid, tends to exclude or remove them.

_ Affects of Parasitic Life on Parasites.—So far from treat- ing the phenomena of parasitic life as highly aberrant, and the peculiarities of parasitic form as differentiations sui generis, it becomes evident that we have to do with only one of the many cases in which the influence of environment on organism is clearly marked. The etiology of parasitism is only a fraction of a vaster general ques- tion; and we shall never fully understand the adaptation of the parasite to its host until the relation of environment to organism has been far more profoundly analysed and completely experimented on—inquiries which have only recently begun to be seriously set on foot. The most cur-

sory consideration of the action of environment shows how profoundly it determines form; of this no better examples can be found than those furnished by the habit of plants. It is easy to see how submerged leaves must become dissected, or desert plants tend to become succu- lent ; how evergreens are only possible in certain condi- tions of climate, or thorns are only useful where herbivor- ous mammals abound. In the same way we can broadly see that the conditions of life profoundly influence animal form. Before considering how the abnormal parasitic environment affects the parasite, we should know how the normal environment affects the non-parasite, and how the two cases differ. The environment thus needs analysis into its factors, the organism similarly into its constituent systems of organs; and the influence of any factor of the environment upon each system and organ demands deter- mination, species by species, before safe and exhaustive generalizations can be obtained. Pending these inquiries, which are destined to take so large a place in the biology of the future, and within the present narrow limits, only the merest outline can be attempted.

Morphological science has but slowly and with difficulty disentangled itself from the primitive classifications of plants and animals by habit and resemblances of external form; the physiologist, however, needs to reassert the claims of these and develop them in detail; as for the child so for him whales are in a sense fishes, and bats birds,—just as the swimming organs of the former, like those of the penguin or cuttlefish, are all fins, or the flying organs of the latter and those of insects are wings alike. Such considerations show too the first importance of the mechanical conditions, primarily those of locomotion or rest, and whether in water, or land, or in air, since these determine, not only external form, but muscular and skeletal disposition and structure. These determined, conditions of heat and light play an obvious part; copious supplies of heat energy to the organism have a distinct result in stimulating plant growth, and accelerating that of animals ; light too, a primal necessity for green plants, has also the most marked effect on animals, which develop tracts of absorbent pigments in its presence, these becoming locally evolved for perception into eyes; while in relation to sound-vibrations and impressions of contact other sense organs develop. Quantity of food has its influence mainly on size, but nature of food and mode of feeding demand many appropriate specializations of details of form. Expressing the same adaptations from the other point of

view, that of the organism, we see how not only the general form but the integument with its colour and texture, and also the respiratory and alimentary organs, are necessarily fitted to avail themselves of the given con- ditions; how the circulatory and how the reproductive systems must comply ; how the sensory organs must take note more and more of the changes in the environ- ment; and how the whole series of complex adaptations demands a similarly complex internal mechanism for their co-ordination through the nervous system.

From the slightest analysis then of the relation of organism to environment, the theory of evolution might almost have been predicted, since, if the details of environ- ment and organism be indeed obviously and_ precisely adapted one to another, change in the former must either be followed by the extinction of the latter or its modifica- tion in the requisite details. To explain the modus operandi of change in the organism, we have mainly to bear in mind Dohrn's admirably expressed "principle of functional change,"—the simple conception that any living tissue, however specialized, still retains traces of all the functions of living protoplasm, and that any one of these traces may be indefinitely increased by favourable conditions, and the

specialized function similarly reduced to a trace. Along with this, or rather as a corollary of it, comes the concep- tion of economy of unused structure; our notions of specialization become henceforth associated with a corre-sponding possibility of simplification, and our idea of pro- gress must be for ever accompanied by the corresponding possibility of degeneration.

The conditions of parasitic life are readily seen to differ primarily from those of independent organisms in negative characters, 7.¢., in the simplification of the factors of the environment ; let us therefore briefly consider the results of such progressive simplification upon organisms in general. Let the mechanical conditions be simplified by the cessation of active movement ; the specialized body-form necessary for locomotion then becomes unnecessary; locomotor muscles and their skeletal attachments are simplified or dis- appear; organs of sense are far less needed ; and nervous adaptations and structures become correspondingly reduced. In all these

respects then sessile parasites simply agree with other sessile animals. Again, let us simplify the environment by the deprivation of light ; eyes and pigment are useless, and our organism, whether cave-dwelling insect or crustacean or internal parasite, becomes blanched and blind; and similarly with other senses. Or let us subtract as far as possible the element of danger from other animals by special protection or concealment in one of the "nooks of life"; here again for shelled mollusc, sand-buried Amphioxus, or hidden parasite the diminished need of nervous adaptations is a similar degenerative factor. Let focl become abundant, the same nervous economy follows; let it be highly nutritive, and digestive structures and func- tions may be simplified ; thus the examples of progressive degeneration of the alimentary system up to its complete replacement by superficial absorption, afforded by various parasitic series, are natural.enough. The soft integument unprotected and blanched, the reduced muscular activities, the simple or absent alimentary tube, the reduced circu- latory and respiratory organs consequent upon diminished waste and softened integument, are all intelligible enough, as also is the increase in reproductive activity demanded by increased risk of failure to find the appropriate condi- tions. The few adaptive conditions are readily understood: given the continuous application of a flat muscular surface to resist detachment from the host, and atmospheric pres- sure helps the development of the sucker; given either a clutching limb or a portion of the body-wall thrust for support into the host, and the mechanical conditions aid the differentiation of a hook ; here, if anywhere, function in fact may be said to make the organ, and such curious resemblances of superficial form as those between say a gregarine, a tapeworm, and an Echinorhynchus are not hard to explain.

Further details of the process of retrograde metamor- phosis and of the enormously important phenomena of degeneration cannot here be attempted ; it must suffice if the general dependence of such changes upon simplification of environment—freedom from danger, abundant alimen- tation and complete repose, dc. (in short, the conditions commonly considered those of complete material well- being)—has been rendered clearer, and if the phenomena of parasitism, however apparently aberrant, become intel- ligible as new evidences of the unity of organic nature.!

_ Lfects of Parasite on Host.—As the result of the associa- tion of two organisms with more or less constancy, various mutual modifications of form and function must obviously Sccur. The more important effects of parasite on host may be briefly outlined. Semper cites numerous cases Where the commensal or parasite has a mechanically trans-

te See Dohrn, D, Princip. d. Functionswechsel ;

Lankester, On Degeneration ndon, 1880 ; Semper, Animal Life. ” é

PaehAaAstr om

forming effect on the host. Thus a horny coral with which an annelid is constantly associated has become permanently modified to form an encasing tube. Worms inside corals have enlarged the base of the cavity by stimulating growth, and may also produce permanent pores. Pycnogonids on Campanularia produce galls, which ac- quire specific characters, and various species of crab para- sitic on corals form galls, two of which coalescing, form a sort of “cave dwelling” with two fissures which are kept open by the respiratory currents of the crab, which thus both stimulates and checks the growth of the polyps. In higher animals, and with more intimate parasitism, the mechanical influences of the parasite on the host are more serious and more markedly pathological. Thus parasitic worms, by their size and number, frequently close up passages such as arteries, windpipe, c&c., causing often fatal results. But many parasites are also actively de- structive to certain tissues of their host—thus, as Semper points out, Peltogaster destroys the female reproductive organsof Pagurus, a Trematode those of Limnea stagnalis, the larva of a fly (Cuterebra emasculator) the testes of various species of American squirrel. In none of these cases, how- ever, is the general vitality of the host affected. The results of active motion within the host are productive of still more serious mischief; thus the internal migration and burrowing of such parasites as 7’richina and Bilharzia is well known to produce violent inflammation. The per- foration of vessels, the consequent extravasation of blood, and the destruction of tissue often end fatally for the host. Leuckart distinguishes pathological effects as due either to growth and increase of parasites, or to their

wanderings within the host, or thirdly to the very consider- able loss of nourishment which a number of parasites of appreciable size necessarily entails. Some blood-sucking parasites are specially dangerous, and many less ferocious forms doubtless poison their host to some extent by their waste products. Roux also notes how parasites—an Echinococcus, for example—by inducing a flow of nutritive material, may develop a net-work of capillaries and produce other histological changes.?

It is probable that many of the most remarkable integumentary specializations of the animal kingdom are defences against parasites (somewhat as the stings or thorns which protect foliage, or the hairs which keep ants from flowers) ; thus the nematocysts of ccelenterates, the mol- luscan shell or the crustacean mail, the vigilant pedicellarize of the echinoderm, or the scales of the fish are alike largely specialized as defences against the never-ceasing attacks of swarms of larval parasites, eagerly struggling to gain entrance or footing anywhere. –

The history of the medical aspects of parasitism can only be very briefly alluded to. From the time of the ancient Arabian physicians some diseases, such as itch, have been referred to parasites. With the increasing knowledge as to the prevalence and importance of parasitism there arose a distinct parasitic theory of disease, and in the 17th and 18th centuries such questions were discussed as “an mors naturalis sit substantia verminosa.” In spite of the gradual unravelling of the mysteries of origin and life- history, physicians long clung conservatively to the old hypothesis of spontaneous generation, even Bremser regarding the pathological states of the host not as caused by the parasites, but as causing and in fact creating them. Tt was not till within the last thirty years that, with the rise of experimental helminthology, medical science shook itself free from superstition and ignorance, and devoted close attention to ztiology and treatment, culminating in that systematic warfare against all forms of parasitism bia Mit oe ae Oe ee

2 Leuckart, op. cit.; Semper, Animal Life; Roux, D. Kampf d. Theile im Organismus ; Ziegler’s Pathology, &c.

which now occupies so important a place in medicine and the veterinary art (see p. 269 infra and VETERINARY SCIENCE). (P. GE.)

VEGETABLE PARASITISM.

The name of parasites has been given to those plants which are nourished wholly or partially at the expense of other living organisms. The degree and nature of the benefit thus obtained varies greatly with different plants, and the effect produced upon the host ranges from an almost imperceptible one to complete destruction. At one extreme are certain forms which, while drawing the nourishment necessary for life from their hosts, yet do so in such fashion that both organisms continue to live in intimate association, and, it may be, rendering mutual help. From these by a series of gradations we come to parasites of such destructive influence as to cause wide- spread death to certain animal and vegetable forms of life. This physiological group is closely related to another, the saprophytes, which obtain their nourishment from the dead remains of organisms. True parasites belong ex- clusively to the dicotyledonous flowering plants and the fungi. A few alge are partial parasites.

The remarkable appearance presented by most parasitic flowering plants undoubtedly attracted notice in remote times. They are frequently mentioned by early writers, but there is no evidence sufficient to enable us to deter- mine whether they were regarded as independent plants or merely as pathological excrescences—unless in the one case of the mistletoe, which was recognized as the former by Pliny, who gives an account of its reproduction by seed. The effects of the attack of parasitic fungi were also observed in very early times, as there is abundant evidence to show, but the plants themselvés which caused the damage were necessarily not detected as such from their minute size and obscure nature. We must come to the middle of the 18th century for the first attempt to establish a botanical group of flowering parasites. Pfeiffer, in his treatise on the PFungus melitensis (Cynomoriwm coccineum), divides all flowering parasites into three groups, according as they infested the whole plant or attacked but one place or were confined to the root; but he includes many epiphytes, such as ivy, lichens, &c. After this remarkable classification a knowledge of native and exotic forms grew up, and nothing noteworthy occurred in the history

of the subject until the end of last century and beginning of the present one, when there was a relapse to the old theory that parasites were no more than degener- ate outgrowths from their hosts. For example, Meyen attempted to account on anatomical grounds for the exist- ence of Lathrea squamaria on its host, and more absurdly still, Trattinick, in a letter to Schlechtendal, gave a short list of plants to which parasites bear a very superficial resemblance, and gravely affirmed his belief that the latter are but specific degenerations of these. Thus he con- tended that Balanophora is but an Arum, Cytinus a Cotyledon, Raflesia a cabbage, &c. De Candolle made the first genuine attempt in 1832 to establish a classifica- tion of parasites on morphological and physiological grounds ; Unger followed in 1840 with a purely morpho- logical arrangement, and, though he advanced matters considerably, his treatise contains much speculation not borne out by facts. Martius's classification of about the same time 1s on much the same lines as De Candolle's. The knowledge of parasitic fungi has advanced gradually with the improvement of the microscope, and the accumu- lation of the life-histories of forms has grown up under the hands of numerous observers, among the earliest of whom Knight performed admirable service. With increas- ing knowledge of native and exotic forms, and the advance

made in the fields of vegetable anatomy and physiology, the whole group of vegetable parasites has become more strictly defined,—the last noteworthy service being the establishment by De Bary (Morph. u. Physiol. der Pilee, Flechten u. Myxomyceten) of the physiological group of "saprophytes" to receive those plants which differ from the parasites in obtaining their nourishment from the dead bodies of organisms and from soil rich in humus.!

PHANEROGAMIA.—The parasitic flowering plants are ex- clusively dicotyledons confined to natural orders falling under the two divisions of Gamopetale and Monochlamydee, Among the Gamopetale there are the (Monotropez)) Lennoacex, Cuscuteex (Convolvulacee), certain genera of Scrophulariacez (such as Rhinanthus, Melampyrum, Eu- phrasia, and Pedicularis), and the Orobanchex. Among the Monochlamydex there are the

Cytinacex, Cassytha (Laurinex), Loranthacex, Santalacee, and Balanophoracez, The vegetative bodies of these exhibit various degrees of degradation, and this process may go so far that, excepting the parts concerned in reproduction, not only the external appearance but the whole structure of the tissues character- istic of a vascular plant may be lost to the parasite. The roots in particular undergo considerable change of form and structure in adaptation to their peculiar function, and the typical root of a vascular plant may lose all its character- istics, retaining only its physiological properties. A degraded root or part of a root so adapted is termed a haustorium, and the mistletoe, dodder, Thesium, Balano- phora, and fafflesia exhibit such in various degrees of removal from the true type. ?

The arrangement of the orders as follows is that adopted in systematic botany. Their physiological relations will be afterwards indicated.

The Monotropex, which are allied to the heaths, possess no chlorophyll and only small scale-like leaves. MMonotropa, which may be taken asa type of the group, undoubtedly subsists as a saprophyte ou organic matter derived from the soil. There has been some controversy as to the parasitism of these plants. Perhaps the strongest evidence in its favour was offered by Drude, who stated that he found a parasitic connexion between Jfonotropa and the roots of Abies vxcelsa. Monotropa was then generally regarded as both parasite and saprophyte. More vecently, however, Kamienski has denied the accuracy of Drude’s interpretation of the case, and, affirming that Monotropa possesses no haustoria, upholds the view that it is no true parasite. Upon the evidence it may be taken that no case has yet been satisfactorily made out for the parasitism of this group. The suborder consists of ten or twelve species included in nine genera occurring in north temperate regions, Monotropa Hypopitys, L., is distributed through Europe; var. glabra, Roth, mostly among deciduous trees ; and var. hirsuta, Roth, commonly among conifers.®

The Lennoacew arc a very small order confined to Mexico and California. They are succulent herbs with simple or slightly branched stems bearing small scale-like leaves, and resemble im general habit the Monotropex, to

which they are allied. They possess no chlorophyll, and are probably always parasitic.*

The Cuscutacew (Dodders) are a suborder of Convolvulacee, and are distinguished by their fibrous, climbing stems bearing very small scale-like leaves. They are entirely without chlorophyll, and are true parasites. The group consists of annual plants reproduced each year from their seed, which commonly ripens about the same time as that of the host plants. The seeds of host and parasite are frequently found mixed, and it consequently happens that they are sown together. When the seed of the dodder germinates it

1 Pfeiffer, Fungus melitensis, Linneus's Ameanitat. Acad., Dissert. 1xv., vol. iv., 1755; De Candolle, Physiologie végétale, iii, Des parasites phanerogameés, 1832; Unger, 'Beitr. zur Kenntniss der parasitischen Pflanzen," Ann. d. Wiener Mus., ii., 1840; Martlus, '"' Ueber die Vegetation der unechten und echten Parasiten zundehst in Brasilien," Gel. Anz. d. Kgl. bair. Acad. d, Wissensch., xly. : 2 The following recent works deal more or less completely with parasitic flowering plants asa group :—Solms Laubach, "' Ueber den Bau und dle Entwick- clung der Ernahrungsorgane parasitischer Phanerogamen," Pringsheinv's Jahrb. J. wissensch. Bot., vi.; Chatin, Anatomie comparée des vegetaux—Plantes para- sites, Paris, 1862; Brandt, Wonnulla de parasit, quibusdam phanerogam. obs. Linnea, 1849; Pitra, " Ueber die Anheftungsweise einiger phanerogamischer Parasiten an ihre Nahrpflanzen," Bot. Ztg., 1861. a

3 Solms Laubach, Joc. cit.; Drude, Die Biologie von Monotropa Hypopitys, Gottingen, 1873;, Kamienski, ''Die Vegetationsorgane von #Monotropa Hypo- pitys," Bot. Ztg., 1881.

4 Solms Laubach, "Die Familie der Lennoaeeen," Abhandl. d. Naturf. Gesell. zu Halle, xi.

ushes up its stem, which mecting with the stem of the host plant develops a papilla-like body at the point of contact. From the papilla there proceeds the true haustorium, which penetrates the tissues of the host as far as the vascular system, where it expands slightly and terminates in a broad surface. The haustorium is furnished with a central vascular bundle originating in the vascular system of the dodder stem. When this haustorium has been developed the root of the dodder dies off and all connexion with the soil ceases, while the stem above the haustorium continues to wind round its host, producing fresh haustoria at short intervals, and gradually enveloping and destroying the plant. The influences exerted are of two kinds :—(1) a truly parasitic influence, since the dodder, possessing neither connexion with the soil nor chlorophyll, obtains all its nourishment from its host by the action of its haustoria ; and (2) a mechanical influence, in depriving its host of air, light, &c., and preventing the development of branches, leaves, fee. (see fig. 2). The commonest species are Cuscuta Epithymum, Murr., distributed throughout Europe, growing on Thymus Ser- pyllum, Calluna vulgaris, Genista, &c.; var. trifolit on clover, to which crop it is cnormously destructive ; C. cwropea, L., occurring throughout Europe on hops, vines, &c., and C. Epilinum, Weihe, commonly found throughout Europe growing on flax.*

There are at least five genera of Scrophulariacee which are partially parasitic, viz., Rhinanthus, Melampyrum, Pedicularis, Euphrasia, and Striga. They all contain chlorophyll, and possess true roots on which small haustoria are developed. Huphrasia, occurring in both north and south temperate regions, is partially parasitic on roots of grasses. Pedicularis is common in alpine and arctic regions of the northern hemisphere, Melampyrum and

Fig. 2.—Cuscuta glomerata, Choisy.

A, Parasite entwining host; B, section through union betweém parasite and host; c, stem of host; @, stem of Cuscuta,;

h, haustoria. After Dodel-Port.

Rhinanthus in the north temperate zone, and Striga is a native of Asia, Africa, and Australia. The last possesses perhaps more dis- tinctly parasitic

habits than the others—though the cultivation experiments of Decaisne, Cornu, and others tend to show that parasitism is necessary in the cases of Melampyrum, Rhinanthus, and Euphrasia.*

The Orobanchee (Broomrapes) possess erect, simple or little- branched stems bearing numerous scale-like leaves, and are variously coloured, but destitute of chlorophyll. They are parasitic on the roots of many different herbs and shrubs by means of their haustoria, which penetrate to the vascular system of the host. They attach themselves thus immediately after germination. There are about one hundred and fifty so-called species of Orobanche, of which the following are perhaps best known:—Orobanche rubens, Wallr., parasitic on and very destructive to lucerne; 0. minor, Sutt., on red clover; 0. major, L., which attains a height of 2 feet on roots of furze and other leguminous plants; and 0. Rapwm, Thuill. Phelipwa ramosa, Mey., attacks particularly hemp and tobacco. Lathrexa, which according to Solms Laubach belongs to Scrophulariacee, Is parasitic on the roots of trees such as hazels.®

1 Desmoulins, Etudes organiques sur les Cuscutées, Toulouse, 1853; Solms Laubach, loc, cit.; Uloth, “ Beitrige zur Physiol. der Cuscuteen,” Flora, 1860; Koch, Die Klee und Flachsseide, Untersuch. tiber deren Entwickelung, &¢., Heidelberg, 1880, where references to further literature are given.

Decaisne, Ann. d. Sci. Nat., 1847, ser. iii., vol. viii. p. 2; Cornu, Bull, d. la – Bot. de France, 1876, vol. xxiii. p. 195; Henslow, Bot. Ztg., 1849,‘p. 14; Pitra, : Zig. 1861, pp. 66 and 72; Solms Laubach, Joc. cét. 4

Solms Laubach, “ De Lathrea generis positione systematica,” in Berlin.

The Cytinacee are a very remarkable order of truly parasitic plants which are wholly destitute of chlorophyll, and of a very degraded structure. Cytinus possesses a scaly stem bearing sessile flowers, while Rafiesia and Brugmansia consists one may say of a single flower, measuring in the case

of Raffiesia as much as 8 feet across. These flowers appear first in the form of knobs emerging from the host plant, and before expanding resemble an unopened cabbage. They remain expanded only for a few days, when putrefaction begins and a smell as of putrescent flesh is emitted, serving thus to attract insects whieh probably aid in effecting fertilization, since the stamens are in differeut flowers. There are about twenty-four species in the order, and these are mostly tropical. Cytinus Hypocistis, ., which is parasitic on the roots of Cissus, occurs in southern Europe. Rafilesia and Brugmansia are limited to the Malay Islands, and Sapria has a wider distribution throughout the same region. Aafflesia is parasitic on both roots and stems, the latter generally prostrate. Pilostyles, a native of America and Africa, and Apodanthes, confined to America, are parasitic on branches. Hydnora, found in tropical and south Africa, grows on succulent plants, chiefly Huphorbiaceex ;: and closely allied to it is Prosopanche, an American genus.*

The genus Cassytha (Laurinex), of which there are about fifteen species occurring in the tropics, but mostly in Australia, strongly resembles Cuscuta. The plants are exceedingly alike in appearance and in parasitic habit, for which reason the name of ‘‘ dodder laurels” has been given to the Cassythex. They are wholly without chlorophyll, and their thin, twining, cylindrical stems, bearing scaly leaves, envelop their hosts, to which they are attached by nieans of papilla-like haustoria. The secds germinate in the soil, and the roots subsequently die off as in Cuscuta.®

The Loranthacegx are parasitic on the stems and branches of trees, but, since they bear mostly thick and leathery leaves containing ehlorophyll, their parasitism cannot be considered so complete as in, those cases where chlorophyll is absent. The order is for the most part a tropical one, but it is represented in Europe by Loranthus europeus, L., and Viscum album, L., the common mistletoe. Lor- anthus is a large tropical genus containing upwards of three hun- dred species. Arceuthobium occurs in southern Europe. The mode of parasitism of Viscum album, L., the mistletoe, may be taken as illustrative of the order. Its seeds adhere to the young shoots of trees by means of the viscid pulp of the fruit (uscd in the pre- paration of bird-lime). On germination it shoots out rootlets which traverse the cortex of the host mostly in the direction of the axis, sending down numerous

haustoria into the wood, where the cells of the parasite become partly lignified, and thus attain an intimate connexion with the wood-cells of the host. A layer of meristem is formed in the haustorium where it passes through the cambium region of the host stem, thus enabling the parasite to keep pace with the growth in thickness, and gradually to beeome more deeply fixed. ‘The function of the growing point, which soon passes over into permanent tissue, is thus transferred to this region of the haustorium. Ultimately this layer of meristem is also transformed into permanent tissue, and the activity of the parasite in this direc- . tion ceases. The haustoria are commonly situated elose together in considerable numbers, and an excessive demand upon the host is thus brought about, causing local death and a hurtful influence. throughout the plant, exhibited in its defective development. Where a tree has been attacked by mistletoe a corroded and dis- torted appearance is presented, owing to the drying up of the tissues and the reparative processes that ensue, When the mistle- toe has thus exhausted one region of supply it frequently sends out adventitious shoots, which, attacking the host in fresh places, give rise to new growths of the parasite. ‘The mistletoe grows on a large number of different trees, such as the apple, lime, elm, maple, willow, thorn, poplar, and even on conifers. Though exceedingly plentiful on the apple, it rarely attacks the pear tree, and the Lombardy poplar seems to be exempt, while other poplars suffer considerably. Very rarely does it attack the oak, and Dr Bull, who made exhaustive inquiry (Journ. Bot., vol. ii.) into the matter, succeeded in’ discovering only seven authentic cases in

Re

i 1865, and loc. cit., also in Abhandl. d. Naturforsch, Ges. zu Haile, ae Koch, i Untersuch. iiber a. Entwickelung d. Samens d. Orobanchen, in Jahrb. f. wissensch. Bot., xi; Caspary, ‘‘ Ueber Samen, Keimung, ete., der Orobanchen,” fora, 1854; Lory, ‘an la respiration et la structure des Oro-

i .d. Sci. Nat., ser. iii. B ‘

a Sen ea ‘¢ ‘Account of a New Genus of Plants, named Rafiesta, Trans. Linn. Soc., xiii. (published also in Miscellaneous Works); Id., On the Female Flower and Fruit of Raffesia Arnoldi, and on [fydnora africana,” Ibid., xix.; Solms Laubach, loc. c#t., and ‘‘ Ueber das Haustorium der

Loranthaceen und den Thallus der Rafflesiaceen und Balanophoreen," Abhandl. d, Naturforsch. Ges. zu Halle, xiii.; Id., "Ueber den Bau der Samen in der Fam. der Raffiesiaceen und Hydnoreen," Bot. Ztg., 1874; Beccari, " Osservaz. 8. alcune Rafiestacex," Nuovo giorn. bot, Ital., 1875; Teysmann, 'Nouvelles recherches sur la culture de Rafflesta "Arnoldi," Batavia, 1856; De Bary," Prosopanche Burmeistert, eine mane Hydnoree aus Sud-America," Abhandl. a. Naturf. Ges, zu Haile, x.; Schimper, Die Vegeta- tionsorgane von Prosopanche Burmeisteri," Ibid., xv. ; Baillon, * Sur le developpe- ment du Cytinus," Bull. de la Soc. Linn, de Paris, 1874; Archangeli, '' Etude sui le Cytinus Hypocistis," Atti del Congresso internaz. botan., Florence, 1874.

5 Poulsen, " Ueber d. morphol. Werth d. Haustoriums v. Cassytha," Flora,

"a XVIII — 34

England. Loranthus europeus, L., occurs on the oak in southern Europe.!

The Santalacew are mostly if not all partially parasitic shrubs or herbs—their foliage containing chlorophyll. Santalum (S. album yields sandal wood), distributed throughont the East Indies, Malay Islands, and Australia, and 7hestwm, a native of Europe, are parasites on the roots of plants, especially monocotyledons. Their haustoria are more or less globular in shape, and emit from the surface in contact with the host a process which penetrates the tissues. Osyris also attacks the roots of trees. Henslowta and Myzodendron are partially parasitic on the branches of trees. 'The latter, a native of south temperate climates, attaclies itself to its host by means of the feathered processes on its seeds. These retain them in contact with the branches on which they fall until germination (thus per- forming the same function as the viscid pulp of the mistletoe), when the haustoria penetrate the bark and become, as it were, grafted into the living tissues."

The Balanophoracex are flowering plants of degraded structure, destitute of chlorophyll, and generally coloured red, yellow, or brown. In appearance they somewhat resemble Cytinacex, though there is no real affinity in the case. The stems are succulent, some- what knob-shaped or cylindrical,

varying in height from a few inches to a foot, in which latter case they are sometimes branched, and bear imbricated scales in place of leaves. They are true parasites on the roots of woody Dicotyledons, rarely on Monocotyledons. The haustoria vegetate in the tissues, frequently setting up exten- sive hypertrophy. They occur chiefly in mountainous tropical regions —some in Australia and the Cape. The order contains thirty-five species in fourteen genera, of which Balanophora, Cyno- morium, and Langsdorfia are the best known. Cynomorium coccineum—the Fungus melitensis of old writers—is found in Malta, the Levant, North Africa, and the Canary Islands.?

Atcu,—Several microscopic alge may very well be partial parasites, though it is probable that in most cases they are little more than epiphytes in their relation to the plants in which they occur. They all possess chlorophyll and are able to assimilate; but from their situation in the tissues of other plants a degree of parasitism may be inferred. A species of Wostoc occurs in the intercellular spaces of the roots, leaves, and thalli of other plants; and Chlorochytrium is found in the tissues of Lemna, Cerato- phyllum, and in another alga Schizonema. More distinctly parasitic is the case of Phyllosiphon Arisari, Kihn, which inhabits the parenchymatous tissue of Arum Ari- sarum.*

LicHENESs.—Mycoidea parasitica, Cunn., was described and figured by Cunningham as a_ parasitic green alga. It, or a closely allied form, has been recently examined by Ward, who says, “It seems clear that the injury is not due to a direct parasitic action of the thallus; even in the extreme case of Citrus I do not imagine the active development to depend so much on absorption of food from the living leaf as on the sheltered situation enjoyed by the ensconced thallus.” 5

Fune1.—The absence of chlorophyll from all fungi, and the necessity thus thrown upon them of taking up the carbon compounds assimilated by other organisms, deter- mines their mode of life, which is therefore either parasitic or saprophytic. The parasitic organ of the fungal thallus

ee eee

_ 1 Solms Laubach Joe. cit. ; Id., “ Ueber das Haustorium der Loranthaceen,” &c., in Abhandl. d. Naturforsch. Ges. 2u Halle, xiii.; Karsten, “ Beitrag zur Ent- wickelungsgeschichte der Loranthaceen,” in Bot. Ztg., 1852: De Candollc, Memoire sur la famille des Loranthacées, Paris, 1830; Giimbel, ‘Zur Entwickel- ungsgeschichte von Viscum album,” Flora, 1856,

.” Solms Laubach, loc, cit.; Mitten, ‘ On the Economy of the Roots of Thesium linophyllum, in Iook. Lond. Journ, Bot., vol. vi.; Scott, ‘‘ Untersuch. iiber 4, Parasitismus von Santalum album” (for which see Solms Laubach, Bot. Ztg.; 1874) ; Schultz, “ Beobachtung tiber Ajuga genevensis, Thesium intermedium, und. d. Verhiltniss der Schmarotzer zur Nahrpflanze,” in Flora, 1854,

3 Solms Laubach, loc. cit. ; Id.,‘* Ucber das Haustorium der Loranthaceen und den Thallus der Rafflesiaccen und Balanophoreen ” in Abhandl. d. Naturforsch. Ges. zu Halle, xiii. ; J. D. Hooker, “* On the Structure and Affinitics of Balano- phorex,” &e,, in Trans, Linn. Soc., xxil.; Gocppert, ‘Ueber den Bau der Balano- phoren, in Act. Acad. Cvs, Leop, Carol., N. Cur., voi. xvili.,1842, suppl.; Caruel, 2 Osservazioni sul Cynomorium,” in Nuovo giorn. bot. Ital., viii.; Weddell,

Mémoire sur le Cynomorium coceineum,” in Arch. du Mus., x.

4 Cohn, Ueber parasitische Algen,” in Beitrage zur Biologie der Pflanzen, i.; Perceval Wright, “On a New Species of Parasitic Green Alga belonging to the ee of Cohn,” in Zrans. Roy, Irish Acad. vol. xxvi.; Kiihn,

: einc neue parasitis g j ‘tsart),” § Sitzungsber. d. Naturf, Gesellsch. Halle, ae eS 2 eae 5 Cunningham, ‘On Mycoidea Parasttica,” in Trans. Linn. Soc., ser. fi., vol. i.,

Ward, “Structure, Development, and Lifé-Histor opi i Lichen,” Jbéd., vol, ii, 1″ > History of a Tropical Epiphyllous

P A ReA Sorel aie

[VEGETABLE,

is the mycelium, upon which haustoria are sometimes developed in the form of lateral protuberances of various shapes and sizes. In the same species of parasitic fungus receptacles frequently occur of different kinds, succeeding each other more or less regularly in cycles, and sometimes in their course preying upon hosts of remote affinities among themselves, This course of life is of practical importance when effort is made to limit the ravages of such a parasite (see Mitpew, vol. xvi. p. 293), Many indiscriminately attack plants nearly allied to each other; numerous species are peculiar to one host; while others are confined to a single region such as the ovary, the stem, or the leaf of one or more species of the higher plants. The spores, invariably of microscopical dimen- sions, represent the infectious agent, as the seeds of flowering parasites commonly do. They are conveyed by the atmosphere, by contact of one plant with another, by insects and other animals, &c., and germinate by the emission of a germ-tube, the production of zoospores sometimes intervening. Access to the host is obtained by the penetration of the epidermal tissue or by way of the open stomata. The main body of the fungus is either endophytic or epiphytic—the spore-producing portion in nearly all cases opening externally. The amount of damage effected by the attack varies from slight local injury to the destruction of the host; in some cases cell- contents only are destroyed, while in others whole tissues perish. The effect produced is often in the direction of abnormal stimulus, and the hypertrophy of whole regions or the production of galls ensues. The parasite commonly prepares the way for the saprophyte, which steps in to break up the dead and decaying remains. In certain rare instances the union of parasitic and saprophytic modes of life in the same species has been observed (see below).

The fungi which are concerned in the constitution of

lichens maintain with the algal components throughout life relations of consortism which will be dealt with below, under ‘Symbiosis. ” 6

For the life-histories of the following groups the student is referred to the article Funcus (vol. ix. p. 827), and to the literature therein cited.

Saprolegnice.—The fungi of this suborder are many of them saprophytes, as thcir name implies, but some are of distinctly para- sitic habits. Certain species of Pythiwm are parasitic on fresh- water alge, on the prothallia of

vascular cryptogams, and in the tissues of the higher plants. Several species of Saprolegnia are parasitic on similar hosts, but one in particular, S. feraz, Gruith, is well known for the part it plays in the disease of fishes in fresh water—commonly called the salmon disease. That this fungus possesses both parasitic and saprophytic modes of life is established, and the fact is one of remarkable importance, since it stands almost by itself in this respect among the higher fungi.”

The Peronosporex are all parasites on vascular plants of many different orders. The mycelium inhabits the tissues of the host, and, in many of the spccies, while passing through the intercellu- lar passages, sends globular or irregularly branching filamentous haustoria (see fig. 8) into the adjoining cclls. On the other hand the mycelial filaments of certain species, such as Phytophthora infestans, De Bary, the potato disease, possess no true haustoria, but they pene- trate the cells, breaking down the cell-walls in their course. In the regions where the oospores of Peronosporee are formed hyper- trophy of the tissues of the host sometimes occurs, and, the normal functions being checked, the parts in question die off. The Peronosporex are cnormously destructive to the higher plants, and may be reckoned among the most dangerous enemies of agriculture aud horticulture, Besides the potato disease, Cystopus candidus

§ The following works have special reference to fungal parasites :—Frank, Die Krankheiten der Pflanzen, 1880; Sorauer, Handbuch der Pflanzenkrankheiten, 1874; O. Comes, Le Crittogame parassite delle piante agrarie, Nayles, 1882. Of historical interest are Unger, Die Erantheme der Pflanzen (1883), and Bettrage zur vergleichenden Pathologie (1840); Meyen, Pflanzen- Pathologie, 1841. s

7 Pringsheim, “ Die Saprolegnieen,” in his Jahrb. f. wissensch, Bot., i., hi., and ix.; De Bary, “ Einige neue Saprolegnieen,” Jdid., ii.; Lindstedt, Synopsis der Saprolegnicen, Berlin, 1872; Cornu, “Monographie des Saprolegniées,” in Ann. Sci. Nat., ser. v., vol. xvi.; Hesse, Pythium de Baryanum, &c., Halle, 1874; Sadcbeck, “Untersuch. fiber Pythium Equtseti,” in Cohn’s Beitr. zur Biol. d. Pflanzen, i.; ‘T, H. Wuxley and G. Murray, “On Salmon Disease,” in Inspector of lisheries Reports for 1881,

1882, 1888 ; Marshall Ward. “ Observations on the Genus Pythium,” in Quart, Journ. Microscop. Scz., vol, xxiii, new ser.

_—

and Peronospora parasitica, both occurring plentifully on Crucifera, may be mentioned as typical of the group.’

The Chytridice are a small suborder of parasitic fungi inhabiting rarely the epidermal tissue of higher plants, but commonly attacking fresh-water alge and sometimes Jnfusoria. Many of these excced- ingly simple plants consist merely of a sporangial cell maintained in position and nourishment by a haustorinm which penetrates the host cell. The affinities of the group arc somewhat uncertain, but probably they are correctly placed among Zygomyeetcs.”

The Uredines are endophytic parasites on vascular plants pro- dueing the disease popularly called rast. These fungi occur on very various plants, and in their life-history go through a cycle of renerations on at least in many cases two different hosts. Corn- mildew is the best known of them, and may be taken as typical of the rest (sec MILDEW, vol. xvi. p. 293 ; and for figures, see Funeus, yol. ix.). This suborder, like the Peronosporex, is exceedingly destructive to cultivated and other plants. The Restelia of the pear tree (which alternates with the Podisoma of junipers) and the Puecinia of Malvacee may be mentioned as familiar examples of the group. The coffee-leaf disease, Hemileia vastatrix, is considered by Ward to be allied to this group.’

The Ustilaginex are all parasites of a very destructive nature on the stems, leaves, ovaries, &c., of the higher plants, The mycelial filaments inhabit the tissues of the host, where hypertrophy is

Fia, 3.—Peronospora parasitica, De By. A. Conidiophore with conidia. B. Mycelium with haustoria (7).

frequently set up, and the enlarged space thus obtained is used by the fungus to contain the masses of spores formed by the breaking upofthehyphx. Their whole life-history is carried out in the same host. Though attacking grain crops particularly, many species infest other plants. Ustilago Carbo, Tul., is perhaps the commonest, and is exceedingly destructive to a considerable number of grasses. *

The Entomophthorce are a very small group attacking insects. The mycelium ramifies densely in the body of the insect and breaks out through the skin where spores are produced singly on basidia. Within the body resting spores are formed by means of which the fungus hibernates. Hmpusa Muscew is very common on the ordinary house fly.®

a De Bary, “Recherehes sur le développement de quelques ehampignons parasites,” Ann. d. Sci. Nat., ser. iv., vol. xx.; Id., “‘ Zur Kenntniss der Perono- sporeen,” in Beitr. zur Morph. u. Phystol. d. Pilze, Hft. 2. See also Porato.

? Braun, ‘‘ Ueber Chytridium,” &e.,in Abh, d. Berl, Akad., 1856; Nowakowski, ‘Beitrag zur Kenntniss der Chytridiaceen,”’ in Colin’s Bettr. zur Biol. d. Pflanzen, li, ; De Bary and Woronin, ‘‘ Beitrag zur Kenntniss d. Chytridieen,” in Ber. d. Naturforsch. Gesell. zu Freiburg, 1868; Woronin, in Bot. Zég., 1860.

sae Bary, Unitersuch, tiber die Brandpilze (Berlin, 1853), and ‘‘ Neue Untersuch. ber Uredineen ” in Monatsber, d. Berl. Akad. (1865); Tulasne, “‘Mém. sur les Uredinées,” &e.,in Ann, Sci. Nat., ser. iii., vol. vii. (Uredin., p. 43), and J0id., ser. De gi ii.; Sehréter, “‘Entwiekelungsgesehichte einiger Rostpilze,” in Cohn’s =. zur Biol. d. Pflanzen, i.; Ward, “Researches on the Life-History of

“ete vastatrix,” in Linn, Soc, Journ. Bot., vol. xix.

U ase, loc. ctt.; Fischer v, Waldheim, ‘‘Beitrige zur Biologie. . der a Stilagineen,” in Pringsh, Jahrb. f. wissensch. Bot., vii.; and Apercu Systematique les Ustilaginees, leurs plantes nourriciéres, &e., Paris, 1877; De Bary, Uniersuch. roe co Brandpilze, Berlin, 1853; Kiilin, ‘‘ Ueber die

Art des Eindringens der Zt ” &e., in Sttzungsber. d, Naturforsch. Gesellsch. Halle, 1874, and Bot.

$5 74 3 Brefetd, Bot. Untersuch. tiber Hefenpilze, v. 1883, ig <0 Empusa Musce und die Krankheit der Stubenfliege,” in Nova Acia, ats refeld, ‘Untersuch. iiber die Entwickelung der &. Musce und £. radt- igee uy Abh, d. Naturforsch. Gesellsch, Halle, 1871; and “ Ueber Entomoph-

oreen,” &¢., in Sitzungsber, d, Gesellsch. Naturforsch. Freunde, Berlin, 1877.

eae ea SET oS

267

The Hymenomycctes is the only suborder of Basidiomycetes certainly known to inelude parasitic members, and these relatively few in number. Agaricus melleus, Vahl, by means of its subter- ranean mycelium (Rhizomorpha subterranca of older authors), is excecdingly destructive to the roots of many trees and woody plants. Other Agaricini, such as Nyctalis parasitica, attack members of the same group as themselves, but by far the greater number are saprophytes. Trametes radictperda, R. Hart., and T. pint, Fr., Polyporus fulvus, Scop., P. vaporarius, Fr., P. mollis, Fr., and P. borealis, Fr., all attack Coniferez especially, while P. sulphureus,

Fr., P. igniarius, Fr., and P. dryadeus, Fr., arc parasitic on oaks,

poplars, beeches, willows, and other dicotyledonous trecs. Thele- ese Stereum, and Hydnum also include species parasitic on Trees.

The Diseomyeetes, like the last group, are mostly saprophytes, but a few distinctly parasitic members are to be found in it. Aseomyces, Gymnoaseus, and Exoaseus (HE. Pruni, Fiickel, and £. deformans, Fiickel) are parasitic, the last-named upon plum, peach, and cherry trees. Several species of Peziza, as P. calyeina, Schum., on the larch, and a number of those belonging to the section of Pseudo- peziza attack the higher plants. It is highly probable that many Sclerotia, numbers of them parasitic, the positions of which are not definitely known, will be found to belong to sueh

discomycetous forms as Peziza. Peziza sclerotioides, Lib., is said to remain living as a saprophyte after the death of its host. Rhytisma is a very common disease of leaves, such as those of Acer, in which it pro- duces large darkly discoloured patches.”

Pyrenomyectes.—Of this group the Erysiphee are perhaps the most destructive as para- | ,

sites. They exhibit in their life-history a cycle of generations each of con- siderable parasiticactivity. The main body of the fungus is commonly epi- phytic, the mycclium sending down haustoria through the epidermis of the host (see fig. 4). Of the perithecial form of fructification good ex- amples are Sphezrotheca Castagnei, Lev., the hop mildew (sce MrupEw, vol. xvi. p. 294), Phyllaetinia, Oneinula, Caloeladia, and Erysiphe (E. graminis, Lev., #. Linki, Lev., E. Martii, Lev., and £. lamproearpa, Link.). The oidium forms are also con- spicuous as parasites, a familiar example being p> found in EZ. Tuckert, Berk., I B

. . v the vine-mildew (sce MIL- ye. 4.—zrystphe Tuckert, Berk. A and B, my- DEW, as above). Clavi- eelium (m), with haustoria (4). After De ceps purpurea, Tul., the Bary. ae ergot of grasses (see Ercor, vol. vill. p. 251), is the best known and most important of all pyrenomycetons parasites. The gronp includes a multitnde of minor parasites, —some of them, however, doubtfully so—belonging to such genera as Stigmatea, Spherella, Fusisporium, Ramularia, Fumago, Polystigma, Pleospora, Nectria, &e. Neetria ditissima, Tul., is reputed to be the cause of canker in certain trees. Cordyceps is well known as a discase of insects.®

Nature or Vecrrapte Parasirism.—It has been seen that the dependence of parasites upon their hosts for the means of subsistence varies considerably in degree, but it is equally manifest that underlying this condition of existence there are certain facts which char- acterize every case. The most important of these is the absence or the inadequate supply of chlorophyll and the

6 R. Hartig, Wichtige Krankheiten der Waldbaume, Berlin, 1874; Brefeld, Botanische Untersuch. tiber d. Ce eile iii. ; and compare also De Bary in n. u. Physiol. der Pilze, p. 22. A ; ;

Be Die nanapeion Feinde des Waldes, il. ; Rehm, Die Entwickel-ungsgeschichte eines die Kleearten zenrstérenden Pilzes, Gottingen, 1872; Prantl, “¢ Hystertum Pinastri, Schrad., als Ursaehe der Sehtittekrankheit der Kiefer, in Flora, 1877; Uartig, Joc. cié. ; Tiehomiroff, ‘‘ Peztza Kaufmanniana, eine neue aus Sclerotium stammende und auf Hanf schmarotzende Beeherpilz-Species, ” in Bull. Soc. Nat. Moscow, 1868; Brefeld, Bot. Untersuch. tiber Schinmelpilze, ipsie, iv. Heft, 1881. ‘

nos, Selecta fungorum Carpologia, Paris, 1861-65, and “Mémoire sur YErgot des Glumaecées,” in Ann. Sci. Nat., ser, iii., vol. xx.; Kiihn, * Untersueh, diver d. Entwick., &c., des Mutterkornes,” in Mitth. Physiol. Lab. Univers. Halle, 1 Hft., 1863; V. Mohl, “ Ueber die Fleekenkrankheit der Maulbeerblitter und die Septoria Mort, Lev.,” in Bot. Zig., 1854; and ‘ Ueber die Traubenkrankheit,

in Bot. Ztg., 1854; De Bary, “‘ Zur Kenntniss inseetentidtender Pilze,” in Bot.

Ztg. 1867.

consequent loss or deficiency of the power of assimilation. For a comparison of this abnormal condition with the normal state a subject is found ready to hand in the nourishment of one organ by another, as exemplified in the growth of young seedlings, which in the case of seeds containing endosperm (cocoa-nut, date-palm, and many other monocotyledons) absorb by means of a definite organ the nourishment necessary for their development. Young plants nourished from the reserve-materials stored in bulbs and the like, and the young shoots of a tree from winter buds, afford a comparison which is even closer in an anatomical respect, since in this case there is present, as in the intimate association of parasitic haustoria with the host, a continuity of tissues which is not so strongly marked in the union of the absorbing organ of a seedling with the endosperm. Looking at the subject wholly from the point of view of the process of nutrition, there seems to be little essential difference between parasite and saprophyte, since we have not only experimental instances of the nutrition of parasites on artificially prepared solutions, but the natural

union of both habits in the same individual (salmon-disease, &c.; see also the experiments of Grawitz on the growth of saprophytic fungi in the blood of animals). These are exceptional instances, however, and it is manifest that other properties must be brought into play, since most parasites affect peculiar hosts, and many of them certain regions only of the plant. It is equally true that many saprophytes are able to grow only in peculiar substrata. ;

That parasitism is often but partial is apparent from |

such instances as the mistletoe, Rhinanthus, Thesium, &c., which probably obtain from their hosts in the main only water and mineral substances in solution, to be prepared for plant food in their green leaves. It is most likely, however, that a small quantity of certain organic com- pounds is a necessary accompaniment in all such instances. Here again there exist the means for comparison with green saprophytes. The taking up of ash constituents from the soil may occur in such parasites as Orobanche, which possesses rootlets, though undoubtedly the whole

of the necessary carbon compounds are obtained from the |

host.

This mode of life not only acts upon the host, but reacts upon the parasite itself, as is manifested by the aberrant and degraded structure of the parts (directly and indirectly) concerned in nutrition, and even of the reproductive system. This is strongly marked in the case of the embryo. It is apparent that large transpiratory surfaces are unnecessary, and would even be of detriment to a parasite ; and with this the formation of wood so intim- ately connected with the process of transpiration keeps pace in degradation. In the mistletoe, for example, the bulk of wood is in relation to the small transpiratory surface, and in the cases of parasites without chlorophyll it dwindles to insignificance. No other abnormal mode of life so influences the structure of a plant as a parasitic or a saprophytic one, though we see an approach to it in the adaptations existing in insectivorous plants.

The effect upon the host ranges from local injury to destruction on the one hand, and, on the other, in the case of stimulus, from the local production of

galls to the com- plete hypertrophy and transformation of at least large regions of a plant. The exciting of definite reparative processes 1s an indirect effect. It must be noticed also that many parasites, especially fungi, cause in the host enormous destruction of food material far exceeding that necessary to their maintenance. In this way the parasite frequently commits suicide ag it were, and the act is in

striking contrast to the relations of symbiosis as exemplified in the lichen thallus.

PR Ae i TY Tso

[VEGETABLE.

The change of or alternation between two different hosts is adapted to suit the requirements of the parasite, This is notably so in the case of the corn-mildew, which passes an intermediate stage on the barberry until a period when the wheat plant has sufficiently developed to become a suitable host.

Most fungi are endophytic, and certain phanerogamic parasites, such as Lafflesia, develop within the cortex of the host, while on the other hand the fungal part of a lichen encloses the algal.

The existence and complete dependence upon its host of a parasite culminating in the production of seed after its kind is one of the most impressive relationships physio- logy presents.?

SyMBIosIs.—This, the consortism of organisms in such fashion that mutual services are rendered sufficient to make the alliance profitable and successful to the whole community of organisms, is a mode of life closely related to parasitism, in which, however, as has been seen, the profit

/ is one-sided and the alliance ends with the exhaustion of

the host or the detachment of the parasite. The term was first employed by De Bary (Die Erscheinung der Symbrose, 1879), but the relations expressed by it were first brought into general notice by the epoch-marking discovery of the dual nature of the lichen thallus by Schwendener in 1868, and established after prolonged and searching controversy, more especially by the classical histological researches of Bornet, and the actual artificial lichen synthesis (by sowing fungus on alga) by Stahl. Some theory of reciprocal accommodation was necessary to

_ account for the duration of such relations between a fungal

organism and an algal ; and, though it is not yet precisely known in what way these relations are maintained, specu- lation has been active enough. It may safely be inferred that the fungal portion of the thallus is nourished by the exosmose of starch and the like in much the same fashion as the colourless cells of a plant are fed by those bearing chlorophyll; and there can be little doubt that the algal cells benefit in return by the endosmose of the waste pro- ducts of the fungal protoplasm. In the reproductive pro- cess an adaptation exists in certain lichens for the supply of gonidia to the new lichen. Hymenial-gonidia (the offspring of the thallus-gonidia) are present in the apothecia, from which they are cast out along with the spores, and falling with them are subsequently enclosed by the germ tubes (see Funeus, vol. ix. p. 835). It may be noted here that, though the fungal portions of the thallus retain the marks of near relationship to ascomy- cetous fungi, they are yet considerably modified by this mode of life, and unfitted most probably in nearly every case for the distinctly parasitic or saprophytic life

normal tofungi. The algal portion, on the other hand, is capable of independent existence after liberation from the fungal thallus. The complete symbiotic community represents an autonomous whole, living frequently in situations where neither alga nor fungus is known to support existence separately.”

The presence of chlorophyll in animals (Zydra and Vortex) was discovered by Max Schultze in 1851, and con- firmed more recently (Hydra and Spongilla) by the spectroscopic evidence furnished by Lankester and by Sorby. That a chlorophyll-bearing animal is able to

1 P. Grawitz, “Ueber Schimmelvegetationen im tierischen Organismus,” in Virchow’s Archiv, \xxxi., 1880; and ‘‘Experimentelles zur Infeetionsfrage,” in Berlin. klinische Wochenschrift, No. 14,1881; Brefeld, Botanische Untersuchungen tiber Schimmelpiize (1881), and Ueber Hefenpilze (1883), A very graphic account of the physiology of parasitism is to be found in Sachs, Vorleswungen tiber Phlanzen- Physiologie, 1882. See also Pfeiffer, Pflanzenphysiologie, 1881.

2 Schwendener, Untersuch. tiber den Flechten-Thallus, 1868; Stahl, Beitrage zur Entwickelungsgeschichte der Flechten, 1877 ; Bornet, ‘“‘ Recherches sur les gonidies des Lichens,” Ann. Sci. Nat., 5th ser., 1873; De Bary, Morphologie u. Physiologie der Pilze, Flechten, und Myxomyceten (1866), and Die Erscheinung der Symbtose (1879), whieh ineludes an account of the association of Azol/a with Anabena, aud of the relations of Nostoc to cyead roots.

vegetate by means of its own intrinsic chlorophyll was finally established in 1878 by the experiments of Geddes on Convaluta Schultzti, Schm, He found that the analysis of the gas given off by these green animals, under the influence of direct sunlight, “ yielded from 45 to 55 per cent. of oxygen.” The discovery of these vegetating animals directed fresh attention to chlorophyll-bearing animals, with much result. The nature and functions of the yellow cells of radiolarians had long been an unsolved enigma. Haeckel had detected in them in 1870 the pre- sence of starch, and regarded them as stores of reserve material. Cienkowski, in the following year,

contended for their algal nature without finally deciding the question, and without perceiving the significance such organisms would have in the economy of the radiolarian. Much suggestive observation followed by the Hertwigs, Brandt, Entz, Korotneff, Lankester, Moseley, and others on similar bodies in various organisms; but the subject remained in uncertainty till its reinvestigation by Brandt, and sim- ultaneously and much more conclusively by Geddes, finally supplied the solution of the difficulties. After confirming Haeckel's discovery of the presence of starch, and the observations of Cienkowski, Brandt, and others on the survival of the yellow cells after the death of the radiolarian, and extending his observation to various other organisms, Geddes demonstrated the truly algal nature of these cells from their cellulose walls, the identity of their yellow colouring-matter with that of diatoms, and the evolution of oxygen (in some instances, such as Anthea Cereas, very copiously) under the influence of sunlight. It was pointed out that the animal protoplasm investing these starch-producing cells (and containing amylolytic ferment) must obtain by osmosis its share of the dissolved starch, and that benefit must accrue to the animal from thedigestion of the dead bodies of the alge. The evolution of oxygen during sunshine into the surrounding animal protoplasm 'isarespiratory function fittingly compared to that per- formed by certain stationary deposits of hemoglobin. On the other hand the carbonic acid and nitrogenous waste produced by the animal cell is the nutritive return made to the alga, which in removing them performs an intracel- lular renal function. The young gonophores of Vededla, after budding off from the parent, start in life with a pro- vision of alge, and in this respect bear interesting resem- blance to the function performed by the hymenial-gonidia of lichens described above. The physiological relations are summed up as follows :—" Thus, then, for a vegetable cell no more ideal existence can be imagined than that within the body of an animal cell of sufficient active vitality to manure it with abundance of carbonic anhydride and nitrogenous waste, yet of sufficient transparency to allow the free entrance of the necessary light. And, con- versely, for an animal cell there can be no more ideal existence than to contain a sufficient number of vegetable cells, constantly removing its waste products, supplying it with oxygen and starch, and being digestible after death." The completeness of the case thus established for a symbiotic mode of life marks one of the most interesting and impressive chapters in the history of the biological relations between animals and plants.

A re-discussion of the subject, largely historical and controversial, but with excellent bibliography, has been lately furnished by Brandt, and more recently a further contribution has been made by Oscar Hertwig, who repeats the views of preceding investigators and goes on to Speculate as to the nature of symbiosis and its general relations with other modes of life. (G. MU.)

ee ON

1Schultze, Beitr. zur Naturges. d. Turbellarien, 1851; Lankester, ‘‘ Abstract of a Report on the Spectroscopie Examination of certain Animal Substances,” Jour. Y Anat., iv. 1870; 1d., “On Haliphysema,” Quart, Jour. Microscop. Sci., 1879, and “On the Chlorophyll Corpuscles and Amyloid Deposits of Spongtlla and

jecting 1 the centre.

marries sl Tis M 269

PARASITISM IN MEDICINE,

Only a limited number of the parasitic diseases of man are included in the present article. Under Tapeworm will be found all that medically relates to that important parasitic group, and under Scuizomyceres will be dis- cussed the significance of the parasitic micro-organisms (Bacterium, Bacillus, Spirillum, Vibrio, &c.) in morbid pro- cesses, and particularly in the infective diseases. There fall to be considered here (1) the skin-diseases due to filamentous fungi, (2) a peculiar disease called “actino- mycosis,” primarily affecting cattle, (3) the itch, and (4) certain diseases caused by various species of nematodes, and one disease caused by a trematode.

1. Skin Diseases due to Parasitic Fungi.

Favus (“honeycomb”) is a common diseasc of the scalp (more rarely of the hairless parts of the skin) in children, primarily of scro- fulous or ill-cared-for children, but apt to spread to others, especially in schools. The uncomplicated appearance is that of a number of yellowish circular cup-shaped crusts, grouped in patches like a piece of honeycomb, each about the

size ofa split pea, with a hair pro- This was the first discase in which a fungus was discovered—by Schénlein in 1889 ; the discovery was published in a brief note of twenty lines in Afiller's Archiv for that year (p. 82), the fungus having been subsequently named by Remak Achorion Schinleinii after its discoverer. The achorion consists of slender mycelial threads matted together, bearing oval nucleated gonidia either free or jointcd. The spores would appear to enter through the unbroken cutaneous surface, and to germinate mostly in and around the hair-follicle and sometimes in the shaft of the hair. Favus is commonest among the poorer Jews of Russia, Poland, Hungary, Galicia, and the East, and among the same class of Mohammedans in Turkey, Asia Minor, Syria, Persia, Egypt, Algiers, &c. It is not rare in the southcrn departments of France, in some parts of Italy, and in Scotland.

The treatment of favus is difficult and disappointing. The first requisite is good feeding; meanwhile the crusts are to be removed by poulticing, the hair being cut short. The next thing is to destroy the fungus, to which cud a lotion of sulphurous acid (one part to three or four of water) may be applied repeatedly by means of lint, and the scalp kept covered by an oil-silk cap. To prevent the return of the fungus, various agents may be rubbed in, such as cod- liver oil, oil of cade, or an ointment of iodine or of pitch, the oil-silk cap being worn continuously. It has often been found of advantage to pull out all the broken stumps of hairs with a tweezers (sce Bennett's Prin. and Pract. of Med., 5th ed., Edin., 1868, p. 847).

Ringworm, or Tinea Tonsurans, a much more common diseasc of the scalp (especially within the tropics), consists of bald patches, usually round, and varying in diameter from half an inch up to several inches, the surface showing the broken stumps of hairs and a fine whitish powdering of desquamated epidcrmic scales. In scrofulous subjects niatter is sometimes produced, which forms crusts or glues the hairs together or othcrwise obscures the characteristic appearance. The disease is due to a fungus, Trt-chophyton tonsurans, which exists mostly in the form of innu- mrable spores (with hardly any mycelium), and is most abund- ant within the substance of the hairs, especially at their roots. If a picce of the hair near the root be soaked for a time in dilute liquor potasse and pressed flat under a cover-glass, the microscope will show it to be occupied by long rows of

minute oval spores, very uniform in size, and each bearinga nucleus. The treatment of ring- worm is very much the same as the treatment of favus.

The same fungus sometimes attacks the hairs of the beard, pro- ducing a disease called “sycosis.” Sometimes it invades the hairless regions of skin, forming “tinea circinata ;” circular patches of skin disease, if they be sharply defined by a margin of papules or vesicles, may be suspected of depending on the tinea-fungus. Interesting varieties of tinea are found in some of the Pacific and East Indian islands.

A less serious condition of the skin due to a fungus is Pétyriasis

NR Hydra,” Quart. Jour, Microscop. Sci., 1882; Sorby, On the Chromatological Relations of Spongilla fluviatilis,” Quart. Jour, Microscop. Sci., 1875; Geddes, “Observations on the Physiology and Histology of Convoluta Schulteti,” Proc. Roy. Soc. Lond., 1879, and ‘‘On the Nature and Functions of the Yellow Cells of Radiolarians and Coelenterates,” Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., 1882; Haeckel, ‘ Amy- lum in d. gelben Zellen d. Radiolar.,” Jena Zeitsch., 1870; Cienkowski, ‘‘ Ueber Schwadrmeibildung bei Radiolar.,” Archiv. Mikr. Anat., 1871; R. Hertwig, “ 220″ Histologie der Radiolar.,” 1876 ; * Der Organismus der Radiolar.,” Jena Denkschr., 1879; O. and R. llertwig, “ Die Actinien,” Jena Zeitschs., 1876; O. Hertwig, Die Symbiose, 1883; Brandt, “Untersuchungen an Radiolarien,” Afonatsb. Akad. Berl., 1881; Id., “Ueber d. Zusammenleben von Thieren und Algen,” Verhandl. d. physiol. Ges. zu Berl., 1881; Id., ‘‘ Ueber d. Morph. u. Physiol. Bedeutung d. Chlorophylls bei Thieren,” Arch. f. Anat. u. Phystol., 1882, and Afittheit d. Zool. Stat. Neapel, 1883; Entz, ‘ Ueber d. Natur. d. Chlorophyll-Kérperchen niederer Ticre,” Biol. Centralblatt, 1882; Korotneff, “On Myriothela ” Soc. Nat. Hist. Mosk. 1881; Moseley, Notes of a Naturalist on the ‘* Challenger,” p. 293,

versicolor, consisting of patches of brownish discolorations of various sizes and shapes, mostly on the front of the body, and often attended with itching, especially after heating exercise. The pigmentation seems to radiate from the orifices of hair-follicles. The epidermis is in a scaly condition over the patch, and among the debris of the epidermic cell there may be seen minute

oval spores, which are sup- posed to belong to a fungus, the Microsporon Furfur. The disease is mostly one of adult age, found all over the world, and not associ- ated in any special way with poor general health. The treatment consists of rubbing in an ointment of sulphuret of potassium, or onc of the mercurial ointments, or using sulphur-soap habitually.

The remarkable brown, black, and blue spots of discoloration of the whole body met with endemically in Mexico, Panama, New Granada, and Venezuela, and known under the name of “ pinto ” or “mal de los pintos,” have been claimed by Gastambide (Presse Med. Belge, 1881, Nos. 33-41) as due to the presence of a fungus, whose spores and even mycelial filaments may be detected among the deeper rows of cells of the rete mucosum. The disease, which is some- what serious from its large superficial area, would appear to be one of the many forms of morbus misert# ; but it is contagious, and is sometimes seen in the well-to-do. In some villages of the western districts of Tabasco (Mexico), it has been estimated that 9 per cent. of the inhabitants suffer from the pinto; M‘Clellan says that in 1826 in the city of Mexico he saw a whole regiment of “ pintados.”

Before leaving the parasitic fungi of the skin, it should be mentioned that Otdiwm albicans is apt to plant itself on the mucous menibrane of the mouth in young and ailing children, causing whitish patches known as thrush.

2, Actinomycosis.

In certain tumour-like formations of cattle, usually growing from the alveoli of the lower molar teeth, and protruding externally near the angle of the jaw, Bollinger in 1877 detected the presence of a number of sulphur-yellow bodies about the size of a hemp seed and of a fatty consistence. These were found to be aggregates of a pecu- liar radiate fungus (Actinomyces), which assumed the form of minute rosettes, the mycelial filaments expanding into flask-like swellings at their free or circumferential ends. The yellow seed-like con- glomerates lay in spaces of the tumour, and they were also found within cavities on the tongue, fauces, larynx, mucous membrane of the stomach, in lymphatic glands, and (by a later observer) in the lungs. In 1879 Ponfick found the same sulphur-yellow bodies in the body ofa man who had

died of chronic disease of the chest, and who had a number of sinuses in the skin of the back. Some twenty cases of actinomycosis in man have now been described in Germany ; in most of them there have been centres of chronic inflammation in front of the vertebre in the cervical, dorsal, or lumbar regions, with numerous sinuses penetrating the muscles and opening on the skin. The yellow conglomerates of Actinomyces are found in or upon the granulations of these sinuses, or iu the sero-purulent discharge from them, or in the muscles, or more rarely in centres of granulation- like new growth in some of the viscera. The relation of the fungus to the primary tumour-like new growth of the ox has not yet been made out, and there is hardly any clue to the connexion between the bovine disease and the somewhat modified form of it in man. In some respects there is an analogy between actinomycosis and the fungus-foot of India as described by Vandyke Carter.

3, Scabies.

Of the human diseases due to animal parasites there is only one of any importance affecting the skin, namely, scabies or the itch. The parasite is the Sarcoptes scadiet (see Mire, vol. xvi. p. 529), which burrows under the epidermis at any part of the body, but hardly ever in the face or scalp of adults ; it usually begins at the clefts of the fingers, where its presence may be inferred from several scattered pimples, which will probably have been torn at their sum- mits by the scratehing of the patient, or have been otherwise con- verted into vesicles or pustules. The remedy is soap and water, and sulphur ointment.

4. Discases due to Nematode and Trematode Worms,

The common thread-worm (Oxyuris), a small white object about half an inch long, is very frequent in all countries, mostly in children ; its habitat is the lower bowel, but it is often a troublesome irritant outside the bowel as well. The round-worm (Ascaris lumbricoidcs), about 6 inches long when full-sized, and not unlike the common earth-worm, is less common in England and other Western countries ; but it is enormously common all over the East, and in the tropics generally. Hundreds of them may accumulate in the body, causing an obvious enlargement of the abdomen. The most valuable remedy against them is santonine powder, A third intestinal

nematode is the whip-worm (Trichocephalus dispar), about 2 inches long, having a slender anterior extremity joined on to the body like the thong to the handle of a whip. It is said to be very common in some countries, such as France, but it has no great importance as regards disease,

The nematodes of greatest pathological interest are Trichina

spiralis, causing the serious malady of trichinosis ; Anchylostoma

PARA © eae sew

[IN MEDICINE,

duodenaic, often associated with the profound anemia of men work- ing in mines, making tunnels, and the like ; Anguillula stercoralis, associated with a specific kind of diarrhcea in Cochin China ; Filaria sanguinis homints, a blood-worm occurring mostly in China and other parts of the East, and often associated with the discase called lymph-scrotum, and with hemato-chyluria; and Filaria medinensis, the Guinea-worm, very common on the Guinea coast and in many other tropical regions, a long and slender filament like a hair from a horse’s tail, and mostly infesting the skin of the legs.

Trichinosis.—The presence of encysted trichine in the muscles was discovered in one or more of the London disseeting-rooms in 1828 and following years; but it was not until thirty years later that the clinical characters of the acute disease caused by the invasion of the parasite were discovered. This discovery was made in 1860 by Zenker, on examining the abdominal muscles of 4 patient who had died at Dresden, with symptoms taken to be those of typhoid fever, the case being afterwards accounted one of trichi- nosis on the post mortem evidence. Epidemics of this disease occur from time to time, especially in north Germany, from the eating of uncooked swine’s flesh, in which trichine are not uncommon. The greatest care isnow taken in Germany to examine the carcases of swine for trichine, a piece of the diaphragm of every animal being searched with the microscope by an inspector specially appointed, The symptoms in mau are occasioned by the presence of the free parasites in the intestine, by the development of young tri- chine from the eggs, and most of all by the

migration of the parasites fron the intestinal canal to the muscles, where they become quiescent within a calcareous shell. This cycle occupies from four to six weeks. When consumed in small quantity, the parasites may give rise to no marked symptoms, and they are sometimes found acci- dentally in muscular fibre in the bodies of those who had probably experienced no definite symptoms from their invasion. In the more acute and serious cases, sometimes ending fatally, the early symp- toms are nausea, failure of appetite, diarrhcea, and fever ; later, when the migration to the museles begins, there is more fever, stiffness, pain, and swelling in the limbs, swelling of the eyelids, continued exhausting diarrhcea, perspirations, and sometimes de- lirium. During convalescence there is desquamation of the cuticle. If the diagnosis be made early in the case, brisk purgatives, par- ticularly calomel, are the best treatment ; if the parasites are already on their way to the muscles, the only thing left to do is to support the patient's strength.

Anemia and Cachexia caused by Anchylostoma duodenale.—A disease which caused a great mortality among the negroes in the West Indies towards the end of last ceutury, and of which deserip- tions were afterwards sent from Brazil and various other tropical and subtropical regions, was identified, chiefly through the labours of Bilharz and Griesinger in Egypt (1854), as being due to the presence in the intestine of nematoid worms from one-third to half an inch long, and variously named

Chyluria and Lymph-Scrotum caused by Filaria sanguinis hominis. —A milky appearance of the urine, dne to the presence of a substance like chyle, which forms a clot, had been observed from time to time, especially in tropical and subtropical countries; and it has been proved by the late Dr Wucherer of Bahia, and by Dr Timothy Lewis, that this peculiar condition is uniformly associated with the presence in the blood of minute eel-like worms, visible only under the microscope, being the embryo forms of a Filaria. The parent worms are very difficult to find, and their characters and habits are imperfectly known; but they are supposcd to be about 3 inches long, and to inhabit dilatations of the lymph-carrying vessels. It is not yet clear how the chyle gets iuto the urine, but it seems probable that the blood in which filarie are present is altered in its constituents, although there is no obvious change in

its microscopic characters beyond-the presence of the young nema- todes. These are also present in the chylous urine. Sometimes the discharge of lymph takes place at one or more points of the surface of the body, and there is in other cases a condition of ne- void elephantiasis of the scrotum, or lymph-scrotum. More or less of blood may occur along with the clrylous fluid in the urine. Both the chyluria and the presence of filariz in the blood are curiously intermittent ; it may happen that not a single filaria is to be seen during the daytime, while they swarm in the blood at night, and it has been ingeniously shown by Dr 8S. Mackenzie that they may be made to disappear if the patient sits up all night, reappearing while he sleeps through the day.

Dr Manson of Amoy has proved that mosquitoes imbibe the embryo filariz from the blood of man; and that many of these reach full development within the mosquito, acquiring their freedom when the latter resorts to water, where it dies after depositing its eggs. Mosquitoes would thus be the intermediate host of the filariz, and their introduction into the human body would be through the medium of water.

Dracontiasis or Guinea-worm.—Filaria medinensis, or Dracun- culus, or Guinea-worm, is a very long filarious nematode like a horse hair, whose most frequent habitat is the skin of the legs and feet. It is common on the Guinea coast, and in many other tropical and subtropical regions, and has been familiarly known since ancient times. The condition of dracontiasis due to it is a very common one, and sometimes amounts to an epidemic. The black races are most liable, but Kuropeans of almost any social rank and of either

PARC. See Fates, vol. ix. p. 49.

PARCHMENT consists of skins of various animals, nnhaired, cleaned, and dried so as to form sheets of uniform thickness suitable for writing upon and for the numerous other purposes to which such preparations are devoted (see Patmocrapuy, p. 144). The skins employed for parchment are principally those of sheep, lambs, and calves; but goat and ass skins are similarly dressed for special purposes. The preliminary unhairing and

cleaning of the skins are effected as in the leather manufacture (see LEATHER, vol. xiv. p. 380). In their moist flexible condi- tion the unhaired skins are tightly and uniformly stretched over a wooden frame termed a herse, and on the flesh side they are carefully gone over with a semicircular fleshing kmife which removes all adherent flesh. The grain side is also gone over to clean the surface and squeeze out a proportion of the absorbed moisture. Ordinary binder's parchment and drum-head parchment need no further pre- paration, but are simply allowed to dry gradually on the frames on which the skins are stretched. But fine parchment for writing and vellum are powdered with chalk on the flesh side and carefully rubbed with fine pumice stone till a delicate uniform velvety surface is raised, All inequalities on the grain side are also re- moved by paring and rubbing with fine pumice. Stout vellum is made from calf skins, and ordinary qualities from split sheep skins ; for drum heads, tambourines, and like applications goat and calf skins are used, and it is said that wolf skins yield the best drum heads.

Vegetable Parchment, or parchment paper, is a modified form of paper produced by chemical treatment, having considerable similarity to ordinary animal parchment. It 18 prepared by acting on ordinary unsized paper with dilute sulphuric acid, and immediately washing away all trace of acid. Paper so treated will be found to have undergone a remarkable change : the porous intertexture of cellulose composing unsized paper will have expanded and agglutinated, forming a homogeneous surface, translucent, horny, and parchment-like ; it will have acquired about five times the strength of ordinary paper ; it will become Soft and flaccid when steeped in water, to which, however, lt is impervious ; and it is unaffected by boiling in water. The formation of vegetable parchment is due to a molecular change in cellulose when acted on by sulphuric acid, Owing to which the substance is transformed into a

Paral

> not The worm lives in water, and, like the Filaria sanguinis hominis, appears to have an intermediate host for its larval stage. It is doubtful whether the worm pene- trates the skin of the legs directly; it is not impossible that the intermediate host (a cyclops) which contains the larve

may be swallowed with the water, and that the larve of the Dracunculus may be set free in the course of digestion.

Endemic Hematuria and Calculus due to Distoma hematobtum. —D. hematobium is a trematode or fluke-worm, which is exten- sively parasitic in man in northern and southern Africa—in the former along the Nile, and in the latter mostly on a narrow belt of the Natal coast. The parasites live mostly in the blood-vessels of the intestine and of the urinary bladder, whence they reach the mucous membranes ; and the most remarkable effects of their para- sitism are bleeding from the surface of the bladder and the forma- tion of uratic and phosphatic calculi around the clusters of eges deposited by the Distoma. The mode of access to their human habitat is still uncertain.

sex are not altogether exempt.

Literature.—The more special memoirs are Ponfick, Die Actinomykose des Menschen, eine neue Infecttonskrankheit (plates, Berlin, 1882); Leuckart, Unter- such. uber Trichina spiralis (plates, Leipsic, 2d ed., 1866); Virechow, Darstellung der Lehre von den Trichinen (plate, Berlin, 24 ed., 1864); Long. “ De ’anémie des, mineurs du Gothard, eausée par FAnkylostome duodénal,” in Trans. Internat. Med. Congr., 1881, i. p. 437, and papers quoted in Hirsch: T. R, Lewis, On a Hematozoon inhabiting Human Blood, its relation to Chyluria, &c., Calcutta, 1872; Manson, The Filaria Sanguinis Hominis, &e. (plates, London, 1884); S. Mackenzie, “‘ Case of filarial hamato-echyluria,” in Trans. Path. Soc. Lond., 1882, p. 394; see also Hirsch, Historisch-geographische Pathologie, vol. ii., Stuttgart, 1883 (English translation). (CEC)

starch-like body—amyloid—with simultaneous swelling of the fibres, which thereby soften and agglutinate. The preparation of vegetable parchment was patented in 1857 by Mr W. E. Gaine, and machinery has been adapted for the manufacture. The paper to be acted on passes in a continuous web through a vat containing commercial sulphuric acid diluted with half its volume of water. In this it is immersed from five to twenty seconds at a tem- perature of about 60° Fahr. It then passes in succession through pure water, next an ammoniacal solution to remove all acid, and finally again through water, after which it is dried and finished by passing

between felted rollers and over heated polished metal cylinders. A similar effect is produced on paper by treating it with a syrupy solution of zine chloride at from 120° to 212° Fahr. Vegetable parch- ment has not realized all the expectations of it. It is most largely used as covers for preserve jars, bottles, &c., and to some extent for tracings of plans, charts, &c. PARDON is the remission, by the power entrusted with the execution of the laws, of the penalty attached to a crime. The right of pardoning is coextensive with the right of punishing. Ina perfect legal system, says Beccaria, pardons should be excluded, for the clemency of the prince seems a tacit disapprobation of the laws (Dei Delitii e delle Pene, ch. xx.).1_ In practice the prerogative is extremely valuable, when used with discretion, as a means of adjust- ing the different degrees of moral guilt in crimes or of rectifying a miscarriage of justice. By the law of England pardon is the sole prerogative of the king, and it is declared by 27 Hen. VIII. c. 24 that no other person has power to pardon or remit any treasons or felonies what- soever. This position follows logically from the theory of English law that all offences are breaches of the king's peace. Indictments still conclude with a statement that the offence was committed "against the peace of our lady the queen, hercrown and dignity." The crown by pardon only remits the penalty for an attack upon itself. The prerogative is in modern times exercised by delegation, the crown acting upon the representation of the secretary of state for the home department in Great Britain, of the lord lieutenant in Ireland. The prerogative of the crown is subject to some restrictions. (1) The committing of a

1 See further, on the ethieal aspeet of pardon, Montesquieu, Esprit des Lois, bk. vi. ch. 21; Bentham, Principles of Penal Law, bk. vi. ch. 4.

Pes

subject of the realm to a prison out of the realm is by the Habeas Corpus Act a premunire, unpardonable even by the king (31 Car. II. c. 2,§12). (2) The king cannot pardon an offence in a matter of private rather than of public wrong, so as to prejudice the person injured by the offence. Thus a common nuisance cannot be pardoned while it remains unredressed, or so as to prevent an abate- ment of it. A fine or penalty imposed for the offence may, however, be remitted. By 22 Vict. c. 32 Her Majesty is enabled to

remit wholly or in part any sum of money imposed upon conviction, and, if the offender has been imprisoned in default of payment, to extend to him the royal mercy. There are other statutes dealing with special offences, ¢.g., by 38 & 39 Vict. c. 80 Her Majesty may remit any penalty imposed under 21 Geo. IIL. c. 49 (an Act for preventing certain abuses and profanations on the Lord's Day called Sunday). (3) The king's pardon cannot be pleaded in bar of an impeachment. This principle,

first asserted by a resolution of the House of Commons in»

the earl of Danby's case, 5th May 1679, forms one of the provisions of the Act of Settlement, 12 & 13 Will. IIL. c. 2. It is there enacted " that no pardon under the great seal of England shall be pleadable to an impeachment by the Commons in parliament," §3. This provision does not ex- tend to abridging the prerogative after the impeachment has been heard and determined. Thusthree of the rebel lords were pardoned after impeachment and attainder in 1715. (4) In the case of treason, murder, or rape, a pardon is ineffectual unless the offence be particularly specified therein (13 Rich. II. c. 1,§2). Before the Bill of Rights, 1 Will. & M. c. 2, § 2, this statute seems to have been frequently evaded by a non obstante clause. But, since by the Bill of Rights no dispensation by non obstante is allowed, general words contrary to the statute of Richard II. would seem to be ineffectual.

Pardon may be actual or constructive. Actual pardon is by warrant under the great seal, or under the sign-manual counter- signed by a secretary of state (7 & 8 Geo. IV. c. 28, § 13). Con- structive pardon is obtained by endurance of the punishment. By 9 Geo. IV. c. 82, §3, the endurance of a punishment on conviction of a felony not capital has the same effect as a pardon under the great seal. This principle is reaffirmed in the Larceny Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 96, § 109), and in the Malicious Injuries to Property Act, 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 97, § 67). Further, _pardon may be free or conditional. A conditional pardon most commonly occurs where an offender sentenced to death has his sentence commuted to penal servitude or any less punishment. The condition of his pardon is the endurance by him of the substi- tuted punishment. 'The effect of pardon, whether actual or con- structive, is to put the person pardoned in the position of an innocent man, so that he may

have an action against any one thenceforth calling him traitor or felon. He cannot refuse to give

evidence respecting the offence pardoned on the ground that his |

answer would tend to criminate him. A pardon may be pleaded on arraignment in bar of an indictment (though not of an impeach- ment), or after verdict in arrest of judgment. No doubt it would generally be advantageous to plead it as early as possible.

It is obvious that, though the crown is invested with the right to pardon, this does not prevent pardon being granted by the higher authority of an Act of Parliament. Acts of Indemnity have fre- quently been passed, the effect of which is the same as pardon or remission by the crown. Recent examples of Acts of Indemnity are two private Acts passed in 1880 torelieve Lords Byron and Plunket from the disabilities and penalties to which they were liable for sitting and voting in the House of Peers without taking the oath.

Civil rights are not divested by pardon. The person injured may have a right of action against the offender in spite of the pardon of the latter, if the right of action has once vested, for the crown cannot affect private rights. In Scotland this civil right is specially preserved by various statutes. Thus 1593, c. 174, provides that, if any respite or remission happen to be granted before the party grieved be first satisfied, the same is to be null and of none avail, The assythment, or indemnification due to the heirs of the person murdered from the murderer, is due if the murderer have received pardon, though not if he have suffered the penalty of the law. The pardon transmitted by the secretary of state is applied by the supreme court, who grant the necessary orders to the niagistrates in whose custody the convict is.

PAR—PAR

In the United States the power of pardon vested in the president is without any limitation, except in the case of impeachments (U.S. Constitution, art. ii. §2). The power of pardon is also vested in the executive authority of the different States, with or without the concurrence of the legislative authority. Thus by the New York Code of Criminal Procedure, 1881, §§ 692, 693, the

governor of the State of New York has power to grant reprieves, commutations, and pardons, except in the case of treason, where he can only suspend the execution of the sentence until the case can be reported to the legislature, with whom the power of pardon in this case rests. The usual form of pardon in the United States is by deed under seal of the executive.

PARDUBITZ, a town of Bohemia, situated at the confluence of the Elbe and the Chrudimka, 55 miles to the east of Prague. The most interesting buildings are the old fortified chateau of the 16th century, with its Gothic chapel ; the church of St Bartholomew, dating in its present form from 1538; the quaint town-house; the

Griines Thor, a medieval gateway; and the handsome

new synagogue. The inhabitants, amounting to 10,292 in 1880, are engaged in the manufacture of sugar, agricultural implements, sweetmeats, spirits, beer, and iron. There is also a tolerably active trade in grain and timber, and the horse-fairs attract numerous customers. Pardubitz is a town of ancient origin, the history of which is little more than a record of a succession of feudal superiors. In 1560 it passed into the possession of the crown, which retained the town-lands down to 1863, when it sold them to the Austrian Credit Bank. Pardubitz suffered severely in the Hussite wars.

PARE, Amprorsz, the father of French surgery, was born at Laval, in the province of Maine, in 1509, and died in 1590. A collection of his works was published at Paris in 1561, and was afterwards frequently reprinted. Several editions have also appeared in German and Dutch. Among the English translations was that of Thomas Johnson, London, 1634. For Paré's professional career and services, see SURGERY.

PAREJA, JUAN DE (1606-1670), Spanish painter, was a mestizo, born in the West Indies about 1606, and in early life passed into the service of Velazquez, who employed him in colour-grinding and other menial work of the studio. By day he closely watched his master's methods, and by night stealthily practised with his brushes

| until he had attained considerable manipulative skill. The

story goes that, having succeeded in producing a picture satisfactory to himself, he contrived furtively to place it among those on which Velazquez had been working, immediately before an expected visit of King Philip IV. The performance was duly discovered and praised, and Pareja forthwith received his freedom, which, however, he continued to devote to his former employer's service. His extant works are not very numerous; the best known, the Calling of St Matthew, now, in the Royal Picture Gallery, Madrid, has considerable merit as regards technique, but does not reveal much originality, insight, or devotional feeling. He died in 1670.

PARENT AND CHILD. See Basrarp, Inrant, and MARRIAGE.

PARENZO, a city on the west coast of Istria (Austria- Hungary), 30 miles south of Trieste, with about 3000 in- habitants (2825 in 1879), has considerable historic and architectural interest. It is built on a peninsula nowhere more than 5 feet above the sea-level; and from the fact that the pavements of the Roman period are 3 feet below the present surface it is inferred that this part of the coast 1s slowlysubsiding. The well-preserved cathedral of St Maurus was erected by Euphrasius, first bishop of Parenzo, pro- bably between 535 and 543. The basilican type is very pure; there are three naves; the apse is hexagonal with- out and round within. The total length of the church proper is only 120 feet; but in front of the west entrance

is a square atrium with three arches on each side; to the west of the atrium is a now roofless baptistery, and to the west of that rises the campanile; so that the total length from campanile to apse is about 230 feet. Mosaics, now greatly spoiled, form the chief decoration of both outside and inside. The high altar is covered with a noble baldachin, dating from 1277. Small portions of two temples and an inscribed stone are the only remains of the ancient Roman city that readily catch the eye.

Parentium, conquered by the Romans in 178 B.c., was made a colony probably by Augustus after the battle of Actium, for its title in inscriptions is Colonia Julia and not, as it has often been given, Col. Ulpia. It grew to bea place of some note with about 6000 inhabitants within its walls and

10,000 in its suburbs. The bishopric, founded in 524, gradually acquired ecclesiastical authority over a large number of abbeys and othcr foundations in the surrounding country. The city, which had long been under the influence of Venice, formally recognized Venetian supremacy in 1267, and asa Venetian town it was in 1854 attacked and plundered by Paganino Doria of Genoa. In 1630 the plague (which had already visited Parenzo in 1360, 1456, &c.) reduced the population to barcly 100; but by 1800 the number had increased again to 2000. The bishoprics of Polaqnd Parenzo were united in 1827. The basilica is one of those churches in which the priest when cclebrating mass stands behind the altar with his face to the west.

See Vergottin, Breve saggio distoria della citta di Parenzo, Venice, 1796; Kandler, Cenni al forestiero che visita Parenzo, Trieste, 1845; Neale, Notes on

Dalmatia, Istria, &c., 1861, with ground plan of cathedral; and E. A. Freeman in Saturday Review, 1875, reprinted in his Subject and Neighbour Lands of Venice,

1881.

PARGA, a town on the Albanian coast, in the Turkish vilayet of Janina, beautifully situated in the midst of orchards devoted to the cultivation of the larger citron, with a rock-built citadel and a harbour formed by a mole constructed by the Venetians in 1572. Its population does not now exceed 1500, but its imports and exports (citrons, wool, oak bark, and skins) reach a value of £42,000 (1880), and the place is historically famous.

Originally occupying the site of the ancicnt Toryne (Palwo-Parga), ashort distance to the west, Parga was removed to its present position after the Turkish invasion. Undcr Venetian protection, freely accepted in 1401, the inhabitants maintained their municipal independence and commercial prosperity down to the destruction of the great republic in 1797, though on two occasions, in 1500 and 1560, their city was burned by the Turks. The attempts of Ali Pasha of Janina to make himself master of the place were thwarted partly by the presence of a French garrison in the citadel and partly by the heroic attitude of the Pargiotes themselves, who were anxious to have their city incorporated with the Ionian Republic. To secure their

purpose they in 1814 expelledthe French garrison and accepted British protection ; but the British Government in 1815, with a breach of faith which excited general reprobation, determined to go back to the convention of 1800 by which Parga was to be surrendered to Turkey, though no mosque was to be built or Mussulman to settle withinits territory. Rather than subject themselves to the tyranny of Ali Pasha, the Pargiotes decided to forsake their country ; and accordingly in 1819, having previously exhumed and burned the remains of their ancestors, they migrated to the Ionian Islands. The Turkish Government was constrained to pay them £142,425 by way of compensation.

See Edinburgh Review, 1819, and Finlay's iZist. of Greece (Tozer's edition) for authorities,

PARHELIA. See Hato, vol. xi. pp. 398, 399.

PARIAN CHRONICLE. This famous Chronicle is contained in the ARUNDELIAN MAarpies (q.v.) now at Oxford. It originally embraced an outline of Greek history from the reign of Cecrops, king of Athens (1582 B.C.), down to the archonship of Diognetus at Athens (264 B.c.), but the remaining portion extends no farther than 355 B.C. The Chronicle seems to have been set up by a private person, but, as the opening of the inscription has perished, we do not know the occasion or motives which prompted the step. The author of the Chronicle has given much attention to the festivals, and to poetry and music ; thus he has recorded the dates of the establishment of festivals, of the introduction of various kinds of poetry, the births and deaths of the poets, and their victories in contests of poetical skill. On the other hand, important political and military events are often entirely omitted ; thus the return of the Heraclidew, Lycurgus, the wars of

Messene, Draco, Solon, Clisthenes, Pericles, the Pelopon- nesian War, and the Thirty Tyrants are not even mentioned. The years are reckoned backward from the archonship of Diognetus, and the dates are further specified by the kings and archons of Athens. The reckoning by Olympiads is not employed. Amongst the legendary dates recorded in the Chronicle the following may be mentioned :—

Deucalion’s Deluge, 1265 years before the archon- ADD AOL DIO GUE US RE Cicceenaide dees csacscsacee sane 1529 B.c.

Origin of Amphictyonic league ….....0000000 1522

National name changed from Greeks (Graikoi) to

TOMEI SER (See Merten eae ee oo vac oes IAL Arrival of Cadmus; foundation of Cadmea…..... WSS) Arrival of Danaus and the Danaides in Greecc…. 1511 ,, TiivGribignOt Tae HUTS occc3hcy «xsi: + SR, aren S06.

Minos reigns in Crete; discovery of iron in Mount

UW ao ice tiene ech one etn eee te 1432 ,, Introduction of corn by Ceres and Triptolemus… 1409 ,, Orpheus publishes his poetry ….....0..s0s00seesess 13899 ,, First purification for manslaughter….....06.. 13826 ,, Theseus founds Athens by union of twelve cities ;

he establishes the democracy ….....2..s00008 159 are Bes miming on Treen Wat 2202. .c vese0sssseescavescrass WAY CARNE Nooo vin sce ve segs dbasex aaves deveeasaceae 1209 |, ie HOO OMGISIES: jo; -.s1kcaras ances co exescaebacememere oon ys HN OMBer” WOUMIENIOS: «2. sucas… 2c Sakescanee cpescsamteeeses 907

b

From the attention bestowed on poets and tyrants in’ the Chronicle, Boeckh infers that its author drew mainly on the works of Phanias of Eresus, a disciple of Aristotle, who wrote on poets, the tyrants of Sicily, tyrannicide, &c. Further, from some resem- blances betwecn Eusebius and the Chronicle, Boeckh is led to conjecture that the Christian historian may have made use of the same sources as the author of the Chronicle.

The Parian Chronicle is given by Boeckh in the Corpus Inscriptionum Greca-

rum, vol. ii., and by Miller in the Fragmenta Historicorum Grecorum, vol. i.; it is edited separately by Flach, Ttibingen, 1883.

PARINI, Giusepre (1729-1799), Italian poet, was born in the district of Bosisio in the Milanese, on the 22d of May 1729. His parents, who possessed a small farm on the shore of Lake Pusiano, sent him to Milan, where he studied under the Barnabites in the Academy Arcimboldi, maintaining himself latterly by copying manu- scripts. In 1752 he published at Lugano, under the pseudonym of Ripano Eupilino, a small volume of sczolto verse which secured his election to the Accademia dei Transformati at Milan and to that of the Arcadi at Rome. Encouraged yet further by his success in two controversies with Alessandro Bandiera and Onofrio Branda, he pro- ceeded to utilize in the composition of the satire, J/ Mattino, the knowledge of aristocratic life which he had gained as tutor in the Borromei and Serbelloni families. The poem, which was published in 1763, and which marked a distinct advance in Italian blank verse, consisted of ironical instructions to a young nobleman as to the best method of spending his mornings. It at once established Parini's popularity and influence, and two years later a con- tinuation of the same theme was published under the title of Il Mezzogiorno, The Austrian plenipotentiary, Count Firmian, who had favoured the publication of the poems, interested himself in procuring the poet's advancement, appointing him, in the first place, editor of the Gazette, and in 1769, in despite of the Jesuits, to a specially created chair of belles lettres in the Palatine School. His subse- quent lectures as professor of rhetoric in the Gymnasium di Brera are still of value, and as occupant of the chair of fine arts he was frequently consulted by the artists of the day in matters of taste and design. On the French occupation of Milan he was appointed magistrate by Napoleon and Saliceti, but almost immediately retired to resume his literary work and to complete /7 Vespro and La Notte, the two last divisions of the Gorno. He died on the 15th of August 1799. An indisputable force in the history of Italian literature, he owed his influence rather to a carefully cultivated taste than to any strongly marked originality of genius. His works were published in 6 vols. 8vo, Milan, 1801-4.

Plate V.

Climate.

Bound- aries.

PARIS

ARIS, the capital of France, the seat of the legislature and of the administrative departments, is situated on both banks of the Seine, in 48° 50’ 14” N. lat. and 2° 20’ 14” E. long. (Observatory). It occupies the centre of the so-called Paris basin, which is traversed by the Seine from south-east to north-west, open towards the west, and surrounded by a line of Jurassic heights. The granitic substratum is covered by Jurassic, Cretaceous, and Tertiary formations; and at several points building materials—freestone, limestone, or gypsum—have been laid bare by erosion. It is partly, indeed, to the existence of such quarries in its neighbourhood, or on the very ground on which it stands, that the city owes its vast development.! The mean elevation of the Seine valley at Paris is from 100 to 130 feet. On the north bank rise the heights of Charonne, of the Buttes-Chaumont (404 feet), of La Villette, and of Montmartre (345 feet); on the left or south bank the Butte-aux-Cailles, and beyond the valley of the Bievre the hill of Ste Genevieve and Montrouge. Between those lines of heights, the Seine flows from east to west, encircling the island of St Louis, the fle de la Cité, and lower down the fle aux Cygnes. The Biévre or Gobelins stream flows for some distance in an open channel on the left side of the river, and then disappears in a sewer. On the right side the brook which used to run from Ménilmontant to Chaillot past the site now occupied by the opera, has at length been dammed by masonry, driven into the sewers, or lost underground. Clumate.—Paris enjoys a fairly uniform climate, subject, however, to frequent changes at all seasons of the year. The mean temperature, calculated by M. Flammarion from observations extending over seventy-two years (1804-76), is 51°-4 Fahr. The highest reading observed (in July 1874, and again in July 1881) is 101° Fahr., the lowest (in December 1879) is ~14°. The monthly means for the sixty-four years 1806-1870 are—January 36°°3, February 40°11, March 43°°5, April 50°-2, May 57°6, June 63°-0, July 66°°0, August 65°°3, September 60°38, October 52° °3, November 43°°7, December 38°:7. The river freezes when the temperature falls below 18°, It was frozen in nearly its whole extent from

Bercy to Auteuil in the winters of 1819-20, 1829-30, 1879-80; and partially in the winters of 1840-41, 1853-54, 1857-58, and 1870-71. Rain falls, on an average, on 143 days, of which 38 are in winter, 35 in spring, 34 in summer, and 36 in autumn,—the average quantity in a year being 19°68 inches. The driest month is February, the rainiest July,—the rainfall for these months being respectively 0°87 inch and 2°15 inches. There are 12 days on which snow falls, 184 on which the sky is covered, 40 with fogs, and 9 with hail. The following figures show the directions of the winds:—N. 38 days, N.E. 41, E. 24, S.E. 26, 8. 53, S.W. 70, W. 67, and N.W. 36, with 10 calm days. Thunderstorms average 13 per annum,—ranging from 6 (in 1823) to 25 (1811). There is comparatively little variation in the barometer. Its mean height is 29-763 inches at a height of 216 feet above sea-level. On the whole the climate is healthy and agreeable, its variations, though frequent, being comparatively slight. Boundaries,—Since January 1, 1860, the boundaries of Paris have extended to the fortifications built in accordance

1The quarries of Montrouge, the Montmartre and the Buttes- Chaumont plaster-kilns, and the brick-works of Vaugirard or of Passy are gradually being built over. At Passy there is a cold chalybeate

spring, and sulphurous waters are found at Belleville and at Les Batignolles,

with the scheme of 1840. The total area thus included is 30 square miles, of which 6 square miles are occupied by the public streets, 458 acres by squares and gardens, 6425 acres by the river and canals, and 224 acres by cemeteries. The line of fortifications measures 221 miles. On the right side of the river it presents 68 fronts, and on the left 26, each consisting of a curtain connecting two demi-bastions. It is pierced by 56 gates, 9 openings for railways, and 2 openings for the Ourcq and the St Denis canals. Outside of this enceinte are a number of detached forts arranged in two main lines. First come the* forts erected previous to 1870 at St Denis, Aubervilliers, Romainville, Noisy, Rosny, Nogent, Vincennes, Ivry, Bicétre, Montrouge, Vanves, Issy, and Mont Valérien; and next the new forts of Palaiseau, Villeras, Buc, and St Cyr, which protect Versailles, and Marly, St Jamme, and Aigremont, which surround St Germain. On the right side of the Seine are Forts Cormeilles, Domont, Montlignon, Montmorency, Ecouen, Stains, Vaujours, Villiers, and Villeneuve St Georges. Between the two lines the

Chatillon fort occupies the site of the German batteries which bombarded Paris in 1871.

Boulevards, Streets, and Squares—The line of the Street

Boulevards from the Madeleine to the Bastille, nearly 3 miles, is one of the busiest and most fashionable in the world ; here are the Porte St Denis, the Porte St Martin, most of the large cafés, the Opera-House, and the various theatres distinguished as Le Vaudeville, Les Nouveautés, L'Opéra Comique, Les Variétés, Le Gymnase, La Porte St Martin, La Renaissance, L'Ambigu, Les Folies Drama- tiques, Dejazet, Beaumarchais, and Le Cirque. Traffic passes east and west from the Bastille to the Place de la Concorde by Rue St Antoine and Rue de Rivoli. North and south the line of the Boulevard de Strasbourg and the Boulevard de Sébastopol stretches from the station of the Eastern Railway (Gare de l'Est) to the Seine, and is continued by the Boulevard du Palais in the Cité and the Boulevard St Michel, on the left side of the river, as far as the observatory. The total length is not less than 24 miles. On the right side of the river may also be mentioned the Rue Royale; the Malesherbes and Haussmann boulevards, which cross the most elegant quarters of the town ; the Avenue de |'Opéra, which unites the Place du Palais Royal with the Place de Opéra, and terminates at the main entrance of the Opera; the Rue de la Paix, Rue Auber, and Rue 4 Septembre, which also terminate in the Place de l'Opéra, and are remarkable for their magnificent shops ; Rue Lafayette, one of the longest thoroughfares of Paris, traversing the town from the Opera to the end of La Villette; the Boulevard Magenta, from Montmartre to the Place de la République; Rue de Turbigo, from this place to the Halles Centrales. The older streets known as Richelieu, Vivienne, De la Chaussée d'Antin, St Honoré, Montmartre, St Denis, St Martin, are full of shops and offices. The Place de l'Are de Triomphe de Etoile is the centre of twelve avenues stretching out from it like the spokes of a wheel, but not all as yet lined with buildings. On the left side of the river the main thoroughfare is the Boulevard St Germain, from Pont Sully to the Pont de la Concorde, which passes in front of the school of medicine, the Place St Germain des Prés, and the war office. The Rue de Rennes, which extends from St Germain des Prés to the Mont Parnasse Railway station, is to be prolonged as far as the Seine.

The finest of the public squares in Paris are Place de la Squar

PAamis

Concorde; Place de Etoile; Place Vendéme, with the column and statue of Napoleon I.; Place du Carrousel, with a small triumphal arch commemorative of the cam- paign of 1806, which formed the entrance to the palace of the Tuileries, now demolished; Place des Victoires, with the equestrian statue of Louis XIV.; Place des Vosges, formerly Place Royale, with that of Louis XIII. ; Place de la Bastille, with the column commemorative of the Revolu- tion of July 1830; Place de la République, with the Republic statue; Place de lHotel de Ville; Place du Chatelet, with a column commemorative of the Italian campaign of 1796; those which take their names from the Bourse, the Palais Royal, and the Opera; Place de Rivoli, with the equestrian statue of Joan of Arc; Place Moncey, adorned with a monument in memory of the defence of Paris in 1814, as Place Denfert, at the opposite extremity of the town, is adorned with a colossal lion symbolizing the defence of 1871. South of the Seine are the Place St Michel, adorned with a monumental fountain, and one of the great centres of traffic in Paris; Place du Panthéon; Place St Sulpice ; Place Vauban, behind the dome of the Invalides, and Place du Palais Bourbon, in front of the chamber of deputies. Besides those already mentioned there are monumental fountains in the Places de la Con- corde, de la République, and du Chatelet, the Avenue de YOpéra, and the Place Louvois opposite the national library ; and attention must also be called to the Fountain of the Innocents near the markets, which was originally adorned with sculptures by Jean Goujon; the Moliere Fountain, in the Rue Richelieu; the Gaillon Fountain; and on the left side of the river the Fountain of Rue de Grenelle.

The Seine.—The Seine flows for 7 miles (taking five hours) through Paris. As it enters and as it leaves the city it is crossed by a viaduct used by the circular railway and for ordinary traffic; that of Point du Jour has two stories of arches. Two bridges, the Pont des Arts and the Passerelle de Passy, are for foot passengers only; all the others are for carriages as well, The most famous is the Pont Neuf, the two portions of which rest on the extremity of the island called La Cité where the river is at its widest (961 feet). On the embankment below Pont Neuf stands the statue of Henry IV.,

the people’s king. Between La Cité and the left bank the width of the lesser channel is reduced to 161 feet. The whole river has a width of 532 feet as it enters Paris and of 440 as it leaves it. As it descends it passes under the bridges of Tolbiac, Bercy, and Austerlitz (built of stone), that of Sully (of iron), those of Marie and Louis Philippe between fle St Louis and the right bank; that of Les Tournelles between fle St Louis and the left bank; that of St Louis between fle St Louis and La Cité; and Pont d’Arcole, a very elegant structure connecting La Cité with Place de l’Hétel de Ville. La Cité besides communicates with the right bank by the bridges of Notre Dame and Au Change; with the left bank by that of the Archevéché, the so-called Pont au Double, the Petit Pont, and Pont St Michel. Below Pont Neuf come the Pont des Arts, Pont du Carrousel (of iron), Pont Royal (a fine stone structure leading to the Tuileries), and those named after Solferino, La Concorde, the In- valides, Alma, Jena, (opposite the Champ de Mars), Passy, and Grenelle.

The houses of Paris nowhere abut directly on the river banks, which in their whole extent from the bridge of Austerlitz to Passy are protected by broad embankments or “quays.” At the foot of these lie several ports for the discharge of goods :—on the right side Bercy for wines, La Rapée for timber, the Port de l’Arsenal at the mouth of the St Martin Canal,! the Port de ’Hétel de Ville for

? This canal, leaving the Seine below Austerlitz Bridge, passes by a tunnel under Place de la Bastille and Boulevard Richard Lenoix, and

fruits, and the Port St Nicholas or du Louvre (steamboats for London); on the left bank Port de la Gare for timber St Bernard for wines, and those named after La Tournelle, the Saints Péres, the Invalides, and Grenelle.

Promenades and Parks.—In the heart of Paris are situated the gardens of the Tuileries (74 acres), laid out in parterres and bosquets, planted with chestnut trees, lindens, and plane trees, and adorned with playing fountains and basins, and numerous statues mostly from the antique. From the terrace along the river side a fine view is to be had over the Seine to the park and palace of the Trocadéro ; and from the terraces along the Place de la

Concorde the eye takes in the Place and the Avenue of the Champs Elysées. The gardens of the Luxembourg, in front of the palace occupied by the senate, are rather larger than those of the Tuileries ; with less regularity of form they present greater variety of appearance. In the line of the main entrance extends the beautiful Observatory Walk, terminat- ing ina monumental fountain, which is in great part the work of Carpeaux. The Luxembourg conservatories are rich in rare plants; and classes are held in the gardens for the study of gardening, fruit-tree pruning, and bee-keeping. The Jardin des Plantes will be mentioned below in the list of scientific establishments. Besides these three great gardens laid out in the French taste, with straight walks and regular beds, there are several in what the French designate the English style. The finest and most exten- sive of these, the Buttes-Chaumont Gardens, in the north- east of the city, occupy 62 acres of very irregular ground, which up to 1866 was occupied by plaster-quarries, lime- kilns, and brick-works. The “ buttes” or knolls are now covered with turf, flowers, and shrubbery. Advantage has been taken of the varying relief of the site to form a fine lake and a cascade with picturesque rocks. The Montsouris Park, in the south of the city, 40 acres in extent, also con- sists of broken ground ; in the middle stands the meteoro- logical observatory, built after the model of the Tunisian palace of Bardo, and it also contains a monument in memory of the heroic and unfortunate Flatters expedition. Monceau Park, surrounded by the most aristocratic quarters of modern Paris, is a portion of the old park belonging to King Louis Philippe, and is now the property of the town. The gardens of the Palais Royal are surrounded by arcades and fineshops. There is hardly, it may be further remarked, a district in Paris which has not of recent years its well- planted square kept up at municipal expense on some plot of ground cleared during the improvements, Such are those named after Tour St Jacques (one of the most graceful monuments of old Paris), the Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers, the Temple, Montholon, Cluny, &e. There have recently been added the park of the Champs de Mars, and that of the Trocadéro with its fountains and aquarium.

But the real parks and Bois de Vincennes, which belong to the city, though situated outside of the fortifications. The former is reached by the wide avenue of the Champs Klysées as far as the Arc de Triomphe, and thence by the avenue of the Bois de Boulogne or that of the Grande Armée. The first

of these, with its side walks for foot passengers and equestrians, grass-plots, flower-beds, and elegant buildings with gardens and railings in front, affords a wide and magnificent prospect over the Bois and the hills of St Cloud and Mont Valérien. The Bois de Boulogne covers an area of 2158 acres, one- fourth of which is occupied by turf, one-eighth by roads, and the rest by clumps of trees, sheets of water, or running streams. Here are the two race-courses of Longchamps (flat races) and, Auteuil (steeple-chases), and the gardens ASRS SO so ch a cee

rises by sluices to the La Villette basin, from which the St Denis Canal descends to the Seine at St Denis. In this way boats going up or down the river can avoid passing through Paris.

of Paris are the Bois de Boulogne Bois de

Bois de Vin- cennes.

Public build- ings.

of the Acclimatization Society, which, with their mena- geries, conservatories, and aquarium, are largely visited by pleasure-seekers. The Bois de Vincennes, a little larger than the Bois de Boulogne, is similarly adorned with streams, lakes, cascades; and from the Gravelle plateau there is a splendid view over the valleys of the Marne and the Seine. Unfortunately the wood is cut in two by an open space comprising a drill-ground for artillery and infantry, a race-course, and a farm (La Faisanderie) for agricultural experiments. Trees for the public parks and squares are grown in the great municipal nurseries at Auteuil and Bois de Boulogne; and the municipal botanical gardens of La Muette, with thirty-five conser- vatories covering 14 acres, and an equal area under frames, contain magnificent collections of azaleas, palm-trees, and other exotics for ornamenting the public gardens or decorating official apartments on féte days.

Public Buildings, Palaces, &c.—The following are among the public buildings of Paris which have most architectural interest. The palace of the

Louvre (see pp. 281, 288), which lies on the right side of the Seine in the heart of the city, consists of a quadrangle with an inner court 394 feet square, two galleries extending westwards from two sides of the quadrangle, and two galleries external and parallel to these, and continued till they meet the side wings of the Tuileries. The east front of the Louvre is 548 feet long and 90 feet high, and the first story is occupied by Perrault's famous colonnade. Towards the west are those portions of the Tuileries which escaped the fire of 1871, —the connecting galleries and (on the south) the Flora pavilion and (on the north) the Marsan pavilion, which was entirely rebuilt between 1872 and 1877. From Perrault's colonnade to the Flora pavilion the side facing the quay is 2250 feet long. In the matter of sculpture the south and west sides of the inner court are considered the best parts of the Louvre. On the west side lies the oldest part of the palace, and the principal points in the former arrangement of the building are indicated by the paving of the court. In the middle of each facade there is a pavilion rising above an archway. The western archway, which is surmounted by the clock, leads into Place Napoléon III., which has its centre occupied by a square, and its north and south sides bordered with porticos surmounted by statues of eminent Frenchmen. 'To the west is the Place du Carrousel. On the south side at the junction of the Lcuvre and the Tuileries is a gateway with three arches, of which the middle one is crowned with the bronze group by Mercier, " The Genius of the Arts," erected in 1875. The river-front of the Louvre is in an older and more elegant style than the side facing Rue de Rivoli. It is connected with the buildings of the quadrangle by Henry IV.'s pavilion, which contains in its first story the elegant Apollo gallery.

The Palais de Justice in La Cité presents on the W. side, towards Place Dauphine, a Greek facade by Duc (1865-1870), one of the finest productions of modern art. From the Boulevard du Palais on the east it is separated by a magnificent 18th-century railing in wrought iron and gilt. On this side lie the Salle des Pas Perdus and the Sainte- Chapelle. The fine square tower known as the Clock Tower stands at the corner formed by the Quai du Nord and the Boulevard du Palais; and on the north side lies the Con- ciergerie prison with the dungeon once occupied by Marie Antoinette. Opposite the Palais de Justice on the other side of the Boulevard is the Tribunal de Commerce with a remarkable staircase under the cupola.

On the left bank of the Seine are the Luxembourg palace, the seat of the senate and formerly the residence of Mary de' Medici; the Bourbon palace, the seat of the chamber of deputies, fronting the river and Pont de la Con- corde with a fine columned portico and pediment ; the

Yah TS

palace of the Legion of Honour, an exquisite building of Louis XIV.'s time ; and the palace of the Institute, with a handsome dome. On the right side of the river lie the Elysée palace (in the Champs-Elysées), a vast building in a modern style, the residence of the president of the re- public, and the palace of the Trocadéro, built for the Exhi. bition of 1878, the central rotunda of which contains the largest music-hall in Paris (for 15,000 auditors) and a colossal organ.

Among the Government and administrative buildings may be mentioned the Hétel de Ville, burnt in 1871, but rebuilt finer than before on the old site; the ministry of foreign affairs, where the congress of Paris was held in 1856; the ministry of marine, which occupies on Place de la Con- corde one of the two pavilions erected by Gabriel on each side of Rue Royale; the ministry of war in the Boulevard St Germain ; the Bank, formerly the De la Vrilliére "hétel," built by Mansard ; the Mint, with a fine facade stretching 394 feet along Quai Conti not far from Pont Neuf; the national printing establishment, formerly Cardinal Rohan's mansion; and the national record office, close at hand, formerly the Soubise mansion. These last two buildings are in the Quartier du Marais, where a great many ancient

mansions are now used as warehouses and workshops.

Besides the Hétel Carnavalet and the Hétel de Cluny may be mentioned the tower of Rue aux Ours, the last remnant of the Hotel de Bourgogne; the Hétel de Sens, formerly the residence of the archbishop of the province; the Hétel Lambert at the head of fle St Louis, adorned with paintings by Lesueur; the turret of the Hotel Barbette (Rue vieille du Temple).

The largest and finest of the religious buildings of Paris Churche |

is the cathedral of Notre Dame (426 feet long by 164 wide), restored between 1846 and 1879 by Viollet-le-Duc. As it now exists this church has five naves running the whole length of the building, and square chapels; the central fléche, recently restored, is 312 feet high, and two massive square towers worthily crown the principal facade, which is one of the most beautiful that has come down to us from the Middle Ages. The transept has also two facades, which, while less imposing, are more richly decorated with chiselled work, dating from about the middle of the 13th century. Of the elaborate decoration of the interior all that is old is a part of the screen of the choir, from the 14th century. St Geneviéve or the Panthéon, consecrated by the Con- vention to illustrious men, but since restored to Christian worship, has the form of a Greek cross with a doine in the centre and a columned portico in front, the pediment of which contains an immense bas-relief by David of Angers representing great men crowned by their country. Fénelon, Rousseau, Voltaire, Mirabeau, Laplace, Cuvier, &c., may be distinguished. The crypt contains the tombs of Soufflot (the architect of the church), Rousseau, Voltaire, &c. Near St Geneviéve stand St Etienne du Mont with a, magnificent roodloft, and the chapel of St Geneviéve with the tomb of this patroness of Paris. The Madeleine, intended by Napoleon I. for a temple of victory, has consequently the form of a Greek temple. At St Germain des Prés, St Severin, and St Vincent de Paul are beautiful frescos by Hippolyte Flandrin, to whom a monument has been erected in St Germain. St Eustache contains Colbert's tomb; St Germain lAuxerrois has a curious porch ; and St Sulpice, which is nearly as large as Notre Dame, presents in its main front the most vigorous effort yet made to apply classical architecture in the building of Christian churches. Notre Dame des Victoires is a great resort of pilgrims. The church of the Vow of the Sacred Heart, at present m course of erection on Montmartre, will when finished be one of the most remarkable buildings in Paris from its com- manding site, the extent of its crypt, and the vast propor-

tions of its dome and tower, respectively 197 and 262 feet in height.

es. Theatres.—Of the many buildings in Paris devoted to theatrical entertainments there is only one, at once the largest and the most beautiful, which is of real archi- tectural importance—the Grand Opéra, or national academy of music and dancing. The opera house, which covers 23 acres, is

the finest theatre in the world. The process of erection, directed by Charles Garnier, lasted from 1861 to 1875, required 673,295 days' work, and cost £1,440,000. The front is decorated on the ground story by allegorical groups (music by Guillaume; lyrical poetry by Jouttroy ; lyrical drama by Perraud ; and dancing by Carpeaux) and allegorical statues. In the first story a row of coupled Corinthian columns (each consisting of a single block) forms an open gallery, above which are seven busts of famous musicians, Mozart, Beethoven, &c. Above the architrave of the front appears the dome which covers the auditorium, and behind that rises the vast pediment above the stage decorated at the corners with enormous groups. On the summit of the pediment an Apollo, raising aloft his lyre, is seen against the sky and forms the culminating point of the whole edifice. The sides are not so richly decorated as the front, but each has in the centre an elegant cylindrical pavilion with a carriage entrance. Behind are the build- ings occupied by the managers and staff. The interior is decorated throughout in the most gorgeous manner with massive gilding, flamboyant scroll-work, statues, paintings,

&e. The grand vestibule with statues of Lully, Rameau,

Gluck, and Handel, the grand staircase (an indubitable

masterpiece), the avant-foyer or corridor leading to the foyer,

and the foyer or crush-room itself are especially worthy of

mention. This last, which is 197 feet long, 43 broad, and 59 high, has its ceiling brilliantly painted by Baudry, whose _ work, however, can hardly be appreciated properly from the excess of light. The auditorium is seated for 2156; its ceiling is painted by Lenepveu. Behind the stage is the foyer de la danse or green-room for the ballet, adorned with large allegorical panels and portraits of the most eminent danseuses.

The comic opera has a theatre to itself, L'Opéra Co- mique; and operettas are played at La Renaissance, Les Bouffes, Les Folies Dramatiques, and Dejazet. The Théatre Francais and the Odéon represent the works of the classical dramatists, as well as modern pieces tragic or comic. Comedy and vaudevilles are played at the Gymnase and the Vaudeville; and the Palais

Royal, the Varietés, and the Nouveautés devote themselves especi- ally to farce. Pieces of the popular class, fairy scenes and spectacular displays, are the main attraction of the Chatelet, the Gaiété, the Porte St Martin, and the Ambigu. The Chateau d'Eau now gives popular operatic performances. Equestrian entertainments are supplied by the hippodrome and three circuses. The café concerts— which during the summer season abound in the Champs

lysées—remove in winter to the Boulevard de Strasbourg and the Montmartre and Poissonniére faubourgs, where there are also some permanent establishments of the kind. Several companies give concerts of classical music on stated days in the winter season; the finest are those of the | Conservatoire and the Chateau d'Eau, Chatelet, and Cirque r theatres,

a Arrondissements.—The city is divided into twenty arrondisse- = ments. Only the first twelve belonged to Paris previous to 1860 ;

8. the others correspond to the old suburban communes then annexed. The first four arrondissements occupy the space on the right of the river, extending from the Place de la Concorde to the Bastille, and from the Seine to the line of the Grands Boulevards; the 5th, 6th, and 7th arrondissements lie opposite them on the left side; the 8th, 9th 10th, 11th, and 12th surround the first four arrondisse-

ments on the north; the 13th, 14th, and 15th are formed out of the old suburban communes of the left side ; and the 16th, 17th, 18th,

Yo bal 5

207

Zee and 20th out of the old surburban communes of the right side. Population and Vital Statistics.—The growth of the population Popula-

o the last six hundred years is shown in the following table tion.

Population.

Population.

935,261 1,058,897 1, 053,2621 1,174,346 1,696,7412 1,825,274 1,851,792 1,988, 806 2,269, 028

215,861 260,000 509,000 576,000

660,000 547,756) 718,966 785, 862 868, 438

The figures for December 1881, like the rest of those in the table, represent the number of people legally domiciled at Paris at the date given, but the nuinber actually present in the city at last census was only 2,239,928 (1,113,326 males and 1,126, 602 females).

The following table (II.) shows the distribution of the population in the several arrondissements :-—

| No. of Births | Deaths | Inhabit- (1881). | (1881). | ants per

Number and Name of

‘Arrondissement, Inhabitants. | Houses,

WOW TCtesecesesssessses 75,390

76,394 94,254

103,760 114,444 97,735 83,327 89,004 122,896 159,809

209,246 102,435 91,315 91,713 100,679 60,702 143,187 178,836

2,164 2,278 2,380 2,404 3,208 2,746 9,441 3,393 3,480 3,773 5,539 4,181 3,933 4,372 5,229 4,406 5,366 6,166 4,033 5,522

OOF SOREN: RS

. Batignolies.

. Montmartre

. Buttes-Chaumont.. . Ménilmontant,

117,885 126,917

77,014 | 59,874 | 57,066 117

19,177 | 2,239,928

The number of births and of deaths in Paris during the five years 1876-80-—278,785 births and 252,500 deaths—apparently shows nothing exceptional as compared with the rest of France. It is to be observed, however, that the population is composed to a larger extent than usual of adults, young children being sent to the country, and old men withdrawing. The number of marriages, 20,993 for 1881, with an average of 18,427 for the five previous years, is rather small for the proportion of marriageable persons. Of the 1,113,326 males in 1881, 621,569 were unmarried, 440,022 married, and 51,735 widowers; of the 1,126,602 females, 557,054 were unmarried, 446,297 married, and 123,251 widows. The sub- joined table (III.) shows the proportion of individuals of the various ages specified, in each 10,000 of the inhabitants, according to the census of 1881. It will be seen that the proportion was greater in Paris from 20 to 55, and smaller below and above those

ages.

Number of Persons

Number of Persons

Age.

In Paris. | In France. In Paris. | In France. alll 976 50 to 55 554 546 642 867 Hon el) 391 483

671 869 60 ,, 65 297 415 849 858 65 ,, 70 186 317

1,118 874 70 ,, 75 119 222

1,010 709 75 ,, 80 67 140

966 707 80,, 85 D9; 62

901 682 85,, 90 9 18 800 641 90 ,, 95) 7 675 604 95 ,,100 0 3

The following table shows the occupations of the population in fey) ;

eee 1 The decrease between 1784 and 1800 was due to the Reign of Terror, and that between 1846 and 1851 to the Revolution of 1848.

2 The inerease in 1861 is largely due to the incorporation of the suburban distriets.

Employers. Agents or Clerks.

Females,

Males. | Females.| Males.

Agriculture. Landowners farming thcir lands.. 598 96 60 16 Farmers, cultivators, “métayers” 220 28 24 10 Small proprietors working for 142 49 12 9 OUNOTS car sons ne pe Seis e PGROS LOTS ws cctedsi. rune eee TSB. 376 210 97 23 Industry.

Engaged in mines, quarries, and b metal-working establishments Lae BAL | (eee ig Engaged in other manufactur-

ing establishments …..... ate per | S28 | eon In petty industries …....65. 40,148 | 20,521 | 29,700 | 19,919

Trade.

Bankers, agents, wholesale 14.128) 1.539 | 43.099! 7.288

GRAUET Ss cotecamanae ane ldcter 4 é ? : Retail traders, shopkeepers…..... 40,525 | 15,349 | 47,972 | 25,306 Keepersof hotels,taverns,coffee- a

houses, and lodging-houses. BTS | ohh ELS || apeee

Transport and Shipping.

Engaged on railways or asearriers| 1,401 74 | 10,737 514 Conneeted with mereantile 261 6 118 8

marine, pilotage, fisheries, &e.

Army, Navy, and Police. BEG ss sil os wstee visoikels ven av’e ste Lo 10,988 182 10 ONES AVE ete eter seve oar ea Oe 198 8 3 Gendarmerie and poliec……..... 8,105 995 14 Liberal Professions.

PFN BOT IBO: 6 ccs baeanescyuces over een 6,945 55381 16,509| 1,947 ey Feeney cael esc tnae 1,308 ae 166 Hie Religious eommunities……. ..... 1,107 | 3,432 278 309 Justice, administration of…..... 38, 638 0s 2,114 23 UORIIOMIES satartorocces amare eee 3,913} 1,429 994 412 MUA Oth mse: Reo te see em 4,398 | 4,082] 1,573] 1,407 II ssc nates Matin pins 00 ea ee 11,874] 4,527) 2,934 538 a ae eee 3,591 281 208 28

Living on Realized Means. Proprietors, ‘‘rentiers”’..... 39,244 | 44,337 | 6,923] 7,891

Pensioners, We. s sa. censscosacese 7,083 | 1 383 448 54

Occupation unknown

Nation-

a Barely a third (322 per 1000) of the population are Parisians by ality.

birth, —38°2 per 1000 having been born in the other communes of the department of Seine, 565 in the other departments of France or in Freneh colonies, and 74°8 abroad. The foreign population shows a tendeney to increase; in 1876 380 per 1000 were natives of the department, the proportion of foreigners being only 60. In 1881 the English numbered 10,789 ; Germans, 31,190; Belgians, 45,281; Dutch, 9250 ; Italians, 21,577; Swiss, 20,810; Amerieans, 5987 ; and other nationalitics, 19,154,

The following were the principal causes of death in 1882 :— phthisis, 10,342 deaths ; diarrhoea, 5095 ; pneumonia, 4127 ; conges- tion of the

brain, 2668 ; organic diseases of the heart, 2873; men- ingitis, 2605; chronic bronchitis, 2630; eancer, 2251; typhoid fever, 3352 > acute bronchitis, 1730; croup and diphtheria, 1805 ; small-pox, 661; infantile weakness, 1458 ; senile debility, 1350. Adminis- Municipal Administration.—Each arrondissement is divided into tration. four quarters, each of which nominates a member of the municipal

council. The functionaries of the arrondissement are—a mayor (maire) and three deputies (adjeints) nominated by the prefect of Seine, who act as registrars, and preside over the poor-relief (bureau de bienfaisance) of their arrondissement, and a justiee of the peaee

Mort- ality.

Without Occupation.—Children supported outside of their own commune by their parents ; inmates of hospitals, prisons, &e.

PARIS :

TapLe 1V.—Distribution of Population according to Occupation (1881).

Members of Family . nae : D t: ttached Workpeople. is oe a bo Geb sae Males. Females. Males. Females, | Males. | Females.

6389 222 659 1,151 248 454 4,148 264 85 180 302 69 50 1,232 455 78 240 3824 24 47 1,380 489 222 597 707 75 127 2,923

Uj Ufo) 2 en eRe eee ee nntnaneces a= 5: 9,678 12,728} 1,080] 5,138] 9,940|/ 267] 863] $2,854 46,478 | 31,748| 17,984| 27,835] 1,474] 3,769| 189,863 258,506 | 239,364 | 108,663 | 185,844] 8,123]18,813| 929,596 | Motta Ed, pen Raexnegnstssaces ef eineein eFC eee 1,102,318 6,970| 3,917] 17,781] 40,083] 3,794] 14,844] 85,765 23,128] 17,851} 29,520] 61,605| 5,687 | 16,082 146,835 6,467 3,006 | 16,083} 27,975 | 6,518 | 11,255 61,314 MIS ove obtener a athe Svan eens otcoreny pn ek 293,914 10,539 858 7,202 | 16,301 | 281 923 48,830 115 ile 147 326 32 49 1,075 socal. pee raceraner ac opaia orevotegaserne ersiarel secre eer ote 49,905

789 6 391 1,106 203 407 14,082

1 iis 50 138 78 100 576 614 Al 2,782 6,448 98 267 19,389 AB OEAIN Mca Me oh hema Lae, eee One 34,047 3,149] 1,170] 8,746] 19,789] 1,856] 5,856| 66,720

382 2 159 636 193 651 3, 219 36 120 6 172 147 336 5,938

11 5 2,198 4,682] 1,171 3,057 16,899 B00 176 22 4,288} 1,369} 3,276 18,304

109 101 2,184 4,466; 1,060) 2,441 21,820

1,921 521 4,912) 10,192] 1,321] 4,406 42,646 37 v 1,224 8,109 624 2,075 11,184 MPG ADLT s cower ae. eee eet ah eee 186,731 1,026) 1,577] 18,171] 41,458 | 13,674 | 36,559] 210,860 98 1221 2,435{ 4,988| 1,124| 2,315| 20,050 ANGLIN 8.) sett te meaehona ene 230,910

61,699

SS PRCVS apse Selon aro oS IE ES LTS o EIR els onl rw Tots Weal oe ene Wo IN 12,967 Coram MOAT ocotmuorat ees tact eee 2,239,918

(juge de paix) nominated by the Government. There is no cleetive mayor of Paris: the president of the municipal eouncil, who is nom- inated by his eolleagues, merely acts as chairman of their meetings. When oceasion requires, the function of mayor of Paris is discharged by the prefect of Seine. The municipal eouncil discusses and votes the budget of the city. The importance of the business thus trans- acted will be seen below. The prefect of Seine and the prefect of police (both magistrates named ty the Government, but each with a quite distinct sphere of action) represent the executive authority as opposed to the municipal eouneil, which latter has no power by refusing a vote of eredit to stop any public serviee the mamtenance of which legally devolves on the city: in case of such refusal the minister of the interior may officially insert the credit in the budget. And in like manner he may appeal to the head of the state to cancel any decision in which the couneil has exceeded its legal funetions. The prefecture of Seine comprises a departmental service, differing in no essential particular from that of other pre- fectures, and a munieipal service for the city of much more import- ance. Elections, rates, municipal debt, city schools, public

lands, municipal buildings, markets and market-places (in respect to the collection of dues), cemeteries, roads and streets, publie edifices,

:

|

enue,

Ah LS

water-works and sewers, promenades and plantations, river naviga- tion and river ports, public pawnbroking establishments, and the relief of the poor are all under the control of the prefecture of Seine.

The prefecture of police includes the whole department of Seine and the neighbouring communes of the department of Scine-et- Oise—Meudon, St Cloud, Sevres, and Enghien. It consists of three sections—political police, police of public safety, and admin- istrative police, the two former being rather national than muni- cipal. The state consequently repays two-fifths of the annual budget of about £800,000 which this prefecture receives from the city.

‘The municipal police deals with public health, civil order, and repression of crimes and misdemeanours, whether against person, property, or morals. It exercises surveillance over lodging houses, the insane, and prostitutes, tests weights and measures, and has charge of the markets, the public vehicles, the fire department, sanitary arrangements, and exhumations and reinterments in the cemeteries.

The prefect of police has a staff of 8500 officials—commissaires de police, officiers de paix, gardiens de la paix (a kind of police- magistrate), and inspectors. He has also underhis orders the sapeurs pompiers or fire-brigade (1742 men), and the republican guard, long called the municipal guard, which numbers 3295 men, besides a mounted force of 726. He has full control over the budget of his department, which is voted en bloc by the municipal council.

Revenue and Expenditure.—The heaviest item of expenditure is the public debt: the sum at 31st December 1888, represented by the series of aunuities terminable in 1950, amounts to a total of £171,730,965. The annuity for 1883 was £3,693,303. Over and above this the city is authorized to have a floating debt of £800,000. The following are in round numbers the main items of the ordinary budget for 1888,—the exact sum varying from year to year :—

Prefecture of police (partly repaid by the state)..... £950,000

Streets and roads (“ voie publique” and “voierie”)..... 999,000 Memary and professional education….....ssceeeiecsceres 890,000 ME I eis cerca arco aimce sasinen ase en eaainiecel can mneane 795,000 BM ewOUKSeaTl(! (TAINACC 2. ..cc.secsensseevcocesseas son ansedvors 520,000 Public walks, plantations, and lighting….....::6006 392,000

Octroi or customs (the main source of municipal revenue) 296,000 Central administration, “ mairies,” and municipal council 337,000 PRE NE TATIC (IMC QUES ....s001 so secede sesaneserissiines sce venieoe 212,000

By the addition of the expenses of the Collége Rollin (an institu- tion for secondary education belonging to the city), and some miscellaneous expenses of less amount, the ordinary budget for 1883 reached the sum of £10,106,533, and by the further addi- tion of £44,000 belonging to the previous year, a grand total of £10,150, 533.

The extraordinary budget shows expenses to the amount of £298,444 on general funds, and £90,000 on special funds. The former is specially devoted to architectural works (rebuilding the Hotel de Ville) and keeping up streets and roadways, and the latter to the erection of buildings (Sorbonne, faculty of law, and canal St Denis).

The following are the principal items of ordinary revenue :—

eM TUNICIPAl CUSLOMS).....-2:oceveserseverserasenes £5,996, 802

Communal centimes added to the direct contributions 948,805 Municipal share in the profits of the gas company….. 604,000 Water-rates and income

from the canals belonging to

[och OUI ooudeGMeGnE Beers npetbsc. stn etacoceteer nop eens neteian. 442,867 Government subsidy to the municipal police…..... 307,753 MMe cHOOLING lICENCES…....0erceesesverserensecensars 220,110 Revenue for public instruction (legacies, &.)..... Unknown Duty on gas supplied to private persons (0°02 fr. per

eub. met., about 54d. per 1000 cub. feet)..... 225,250 Cab-stands, omnibuses, and tramwayS…....cssesees 194,937 Government subsidy for the maintenance of the public

Beers GMATIAUS EROCUS c5)¢ cis :ssines sister aneadaenmeanamernornrsnasaaiane 164,000 Dues from goods exposed for saleinthe public markets 180,012 TOGO oc ccnenerinneiersnddehensgaesariax aveeoes 138,136 Householders' street-cleaning tax (tae de balayage)... 108,416 CCI re.) ees. oie « « « dosaehigsiese cre teelanidinn's 101,492 Sale of burial-lots in the cemeteries…....cccceseeees 94,284 Stands in the markets and market-places.,..... 83,461 Paving and Gledwing Of the SETEELS .....61.0.0r2c000e00005 95,717 Ground-rents 10:0 Der ONE Ci SRR DUT EC OBERT Aer ara 62,594 BMA SEWAGE, ... 00-2. cccceesoncee sos cesesnsnneennes 56,597 Rent of stands on the public strects…....cccseevreees 51,782

Including less important items, the total ordinary revenue in 1882 was £10,489,373 ; and the arrears of former years' revenue paid up amounted to £1,218, 883.

The extraordinary budget on general and special funds amounts to £6,450,037 ; but a large proportion of this consists of sums which are carried forward from one fiscal year to another, till the expenses Which they are meant to cover are liquidated.

279

The chief items in the octroi are—

NCU ee aeiles etre cscs 60 ss iuatiGiNaits DANS y yin xolsani’s ot 2

Batables GUIS CLP COE CPR ai At nen ane eae Higuins, other that bevera@es. .....02.05.c00.cssccsenvecrengs “608, 238 i eee eee ec ete 468,278 Era liter crn A ev ar. steals aaeide Sivuius vce ws ivigip uses bane eee 525,698 W00d Tor INGUStrial PULPOSES .....5..:c0:c.cecse sevacevens vevses 246,693 HOG Me tepr erent Sen Sees a ence etc cc ceecvocusdteel tecevetech ees 204,102

Total (1882), comprising other less important items,....£5, 986,541

Strects.—The public streets, covering an area of 3877 acres, Bele a total length of 580 miles, 143 miles being bordered with

rees,

as rapidly as possible, though each new tree costs about £8.

The staff entrusted with maintaining and cleaning the public streets comprises 320 engineers, overseers, and timekeepers, who have under their orders 2123 paviors and roadmen and 3185 per- manent and supernumerary scavengers. The maintenance of the streets costs £406,800; that of the pavements and sidewalks, £62,224; cleaning, £259,480. The streets are for the most part paved (1525 acres on January 1, 1883), usually with Yvette sand- stone from the neighbourhood of Paris. The most frequented crossings are laid with Belgian porphyry. The metalled roadways cover 445 acres, the asphalted 83 acres, the earthen 26. Wooden paving, previously employed only for 2 acres, was in 1883 laid down in the Champs Elysées, and in 1884 extended to the Avenue de l’Opéra, Rue de Rivoli, the line of the Grands Boulevards, and Rue Royale. Of the total area of 1131 acres occupied by pavements and sidewalks, two-ninths are covered with asphalt, one-third with sand, one-seventh with granite, and the rest with paving-stone.

There are 5070 plugs for the watering of the streets, and 400 water-carts. The annual consumption of water for this purpose amounts to 180,174,478 cubic feet (195 days). The sweeping of the streets in the morning devolves

on the houscholders, and is commuted by payment of a tax (see above); during the day the whole cost falls on the municipality.

The point of greatest traffic in Paris is the Place de la Bastille ; one current passing from Rue St Antoine to the Faubourg St Antoine and another from the Grands Boulevards to the railway stations for Vincennes, Lyons, and Orleans. On an average 42,000 carriages and 55,900 draught horses pass through this square in the twenty-four hours. Next in amount of tratfie come Rue de Rivoli, 33,232 vehicles ; Avenue de l'Opéra, 29,460 ; Rue du, Pont Neuf, 20,668 ; Boulevard des Italiens, 20,124; Place de 1'Etoile, 18,311; Rue Royale, 14,095. The most frequented of the bridges are Pont de la Concorde, 10,003; Pont Neuf, 8519; and Pont d' Austerlitz, 7340.

Means of Conveyance.—Cabs, omnibuses, tramways, steamboats, and a railway (the Chemin de Fer de Ceinture) are the local means of transit in Paris. The steamboats ply up the river to Charenton, down the river to Suresnes. Within the city, in 1882, they plied on 329 days, made an aggregate of 8162 days of service, traversed 479,997 miles, and conveyed 11,170,980 passengers. Out- side the limits of the city, up the river, the days were also 329— aggregate days 2265, aggregate distance 123,007 miles, passengers 3,122,593 ; down the river the days were 329—ageregate days 2356, miles 180,138, and passengers 1,262,680. The omnibus company employs both ordinary omnibuses aud tramway-cars. In 1882 it employed 610 omnibuses and 255 tram-cars, conveyiig 200,187,455 passengers. The two tramway companies distinguished as Northern and Southern have conveyed respectively 26,076,761 and 27,067,951 passengers. The Chemin de Fer de Ceinture, which runs round the city just within the fortifications, conveyed 21,617,909 passengers. As cab-hiring is an open industry (though the cabmen are restricted in their charges by a tarif, and are subject to police control), the movement of the cabs cannot be given exactly. In 1882 the number of horses belonging to private persons and bound to be at the service of the army in,case of mobi- lization was found to be 95,847; in 1878 the number of carriages

was 13,372.

Streets,

The municipality is going on with the work of planting |

Convey- anee.

Water and Drainage.—Paris derives its water-supply (1) from Water

the Seine and the Marne, (2) from the Oureq Canal, (3) from artesian wells, and (4) from springs. (1) The two steam-pumps at Chaillot on the Seine raise cach at their ordinary rate 635,688 cubic feet and at their maximum 1,518,588 in the twenty-four hours. The ten pumps at Port 4]'Anglais and Maisons-Alfort above Paris, at St Ouen below Paris, and at the Quai d'Austerlitz and Auteuil (within the city), can supply about 600,372,000 cubic feet per annum. In 1880 about 2,119,000 cubic feet ou an average were taken daily from the Seine. The water is stored in reservoirs at the highest points in Passy, Montmartre, Charonne, andGentilly. The establishment at St Maur, situated on the canal which closes the loop of the Marne, and partly moved by the head of water and partly by steam, supplies the Bois de Vincennes and the elevated districts of Belleville and Ménilmontant. It can furnish 2,896,000 cubic feet in the twenty-four hours. (2) The Ourcq Canal, which is

supply.

Drain-

also used as a water-way, comes from the department of Aisnc, and terminates at the La Villette basin, wliich also receives the St Denis and St Martin Canals. It brings a volume of 4,414,500 cubic feet per day, to which are added in summer from 2,000,000 to 2,500,000 cubic feet procured from the Marne near the confluence of the Ourcq, and discharged into the canal. The water is hardly suitable for domestic use owing to the quantity of foreigu matter which it con- tains. (8) The water of the artesian wells is much purer. The Grenelle well is 1797 feet deep, and reaches the greensand ; its daily yield is 12,860 cubic feet of water at a temperature of 80° Fahr., which rises to a height of 288 or 289 feet, and can thus be carried to the summit of Mont St Genevieve. The Passy well is 1922 feet deep, and yields

an average of 233,000 cubic feet in the twenty-four hours. By the hydrometer Seine water registers 18°, that of the Ourcq 28°, that of the Passy well only 9°. A new well is being sunk (1884) at La Chapelle, and another at Butte-aux-Cailles. (4) Till quite recently all the spring water was brought to Paris by two aqueducts. ‘The Arcueil aqueduct, 8 miles long, on the left of the Seine, furnishes 67,100 cubic feet per day; that of Belleville, on the right side, which up to the beginning of the 17th century fed all the fountains of Paris with the waters of Belleville and the Prés St Gervais, now yields only 6000 cubic feet in the twenty-four hours. This insufficiency of spring water has been supplied by the Dhuis and the Vanne, two streams of La Champagne. The former is diverted near Chateau Thierry (Aisne) and conveyed by an aqueduct 81 miles long into the Ménil- montant reservoirs (354 feet above the sea, or more than 250 feet above the level of the Seine), which consist of two stories, one above the other, with a united capacity of 4,538,000 cubic feet, and usually containing a store equal to five average days’ influx. In the valley of the Vanne (a tributary of the Yonne, which it reaches at Sens), Paris has obtained possession of a great number of springs, which, when the rivers are at their lowest, yield in the twenty-four hours 3,531,600 cubic feet of a perfectly pure water at a steady temperature of 52° Fahr. The aqueduct from the Vanne ends at Montrouge at a hcight of 262 feet, in reser- voirs capable of holding 10,594,800 cubic feet, cqual to three average days’ influx. Every year new works are constructed to increase the quantity of water distributed. In June 1883 the machines raised for the first time 2,825,000 cubic feet on the plateau of Villejuif. The total quantity of water supplied to Paris will now be 20,130,000

cubic fect in the twenty-four hours. The quantity actually required .

is not less than 14,127,000 cubic feet, or not quite 44 gallons per lead of the population, a proportion exceeded in several other great cities. This water is distributed by 66 monumental fountains, 763 bornes-fontaincs (t.e., smaller fountains or wells, similar in appear- ance to a boundary stone or milestone), 5249 common street taps, 53 pumps, 181 plugs for the use of the watering carts, 4175 plugs for attachment of watering hose, 363 fire-plugs, 178 cocks at cab-stands, in the Wallace fountains, and the urinals. There is a certain number of fountains not open to the public where water is retailed to the water-carriers ; and a large number of private houses have

water laid on to their courts, or in many cases to the several stories. The public baths (151 in number) and the washing establishments (263, with 21,911 stands) receive daily 2,358,000 gallons of water. The water-pipes, varying in diameter froma little more than an inch to upwards of 4 feet, the commonest size being about 8 inches, have a total length of 94,904 miles.

Since about the middle of the present century all houses have been bound to discharge their rain and waste water directly into the sewers ; but, though these are annually being extended, there are still streets into which they have not been introduced. On the 31st of December 1881 their total length was nearly 441 miles. The drainage of both sides of the river is collected in a great sewer ending in the Seine at Clichy opposite Asniéres ; the main sewer of the left side of the river is connected with that of the right side by a siphon which passes under the Seine by a tunnel near the Pont de l'Alma. A departmental sewer, receiving the waters of the elevated districts of Charonne, Ménilmontant, Belleville, and Montmartre, terminates at St Denis. These sewers are much more than great drains: they are used as passages for water-pipes, gas- pipes, telegraph wires, and pneumatic tubes. The two largest classes of them have a height respectively of 144 feet and 17 feet 6 inches at the keystone, and a width respectively of 18 feet 5 inches and 17 feet at the spring of the arch. The smallest class is ouly 6 feet high and 8 feet wide. The most usual class, of which there are 171 miles, has a height of 74 feet and a width of 44 feet.

The sewage from these mains is partly employed in irrigation in the plain of Gennevilliers on the left bank of the Seine opposite St Denis and Clichy. At the close of 1881 1216 acres were under treat- ment, though the system was only commienced in 1872 on a tenth of that area ; and the drains employed, varying from 1 to 4 feet in diameter, had an extent of 21 miles, and discharged the sewage by 571 outlets. The quantity of sewage discharged daily by the sewers varies from 10,171,000 cubic feet to 13,112,266 cubic feet (1881). The amount absorbed by'irrigation varies according to the season. Thus in May 1881 it was 95,907,555 cubic feet, and in

which still go to pollute the Seine. é

September only 15,719,780 cubic feet. The daily average through- out the year shows 54,935,945 cubic feet, watering 213 acres,

The value of the land (originally sandy) at Gennevillicrs hag considerably increased since the introduction of this system. The rent ofa hectare (2°47 acres), which was 152 francs between 1865 and 1870, reached 300 francs in 1878 and 450 in 1880. The cultivation of the plain gives employment to 1850 hands, and the population of the commune has steadily increased—1897 in 1872, 2389 in 1876 3192 in 1881. The municipality proposes to extend this system of irrigation, which absorbs only a part of the sewage, to the foot of the St Germain forest, and thus to utilize the masses of foul water

Nightsoil is collected in three different ways :—(1) in cesspools of mason-work, which ought to be watertight and to communicate with the open air by a ventilating pipe rising above the tops of the neighbouring houses ; (2) in movable buckets, placed in suitably ventilated cellars ; (8) in filtering tinettes, which discharge their liquids directly into the sewer. On the 31st December 1882 the number of cesspools was 66,610, of movable buckets 14,952, and of tincttes 17,033. The nightsoil contractors have to be authorized by the prefect of Seine. The cesspools must not be emptied except by night. The quantity removed in 1881 was 39,797,810 cubic feet—35,098,453 cubic feet from the cesspools, 3,682,187 from the movable buckets, and 1,017,170 from thc tinettes.

Lighting.—The lighting of Paris is practically in the hands of Light- the gas company, electric lighting being still in the experimental ing, stage (28 burners in the public streets in 1882), and oil being used only in a small and ever-diminishing number of out-of-the-way streets (472 burners in 1881). The gas company manufactured in 1861 2,974,690,553 cubic feet of gas, in 1875 6,218,435,025 cubic feet, and in 1882 9,726,709, 281 cubic feet, this last quantity being obtained from 917,867 tons of raw material (10,597 cubic feet per ton). The gas mains belonging to the company make a total length of 1222 miles ; those in the public streets feed 42,514 burners, con-suming 1,301,226,027 cubic feet for public lighting. The company further supplies 7,163,994,098 cubic feet to 154,962 private cus- tomers in the city, and 600,208,654 cubic feet to 58 communes / in the outskirts. About 660,593,880 cubic feet, or 6°8 per cent., , is lost in transmission. The daily consumption reaches a maxi- ‘ mum (86,005,949 cubie feet) in December and a minimum , (14,073,112 cubic feet) in July.

Public Instruction.—The so-called salles d’asile are infant Educa.) schools for children from three to six years of age, 7.¢., from the tion. time when their mothers place them in the créches or day-nurscries (see below) and the time when they may be admitted to the primary schools. The municipality maintains 126 secular salles d’asile { receiving 15,939 children, and one salle congrégantste (i.e., under i the management of a religious society) with 279 children. The | |

private establishments comprise 23 secular ‘‘salles” with 1243 children, and 39 congreganist ‘““salles” with 4231.

In 1882 the municipality supported 173 primary secular schools (56,369 pupils) for boys, 161 secular schools (46,579 pupils) and 2 congreganist schools (765 pupils) for girls. The private primary | schools are 188 sccular schools and 70 congreganist for boys, f 577 secular schools and 186 congreganist for girls,—number of pupils unknown. At certain hours the primary schools are trans- } formed into classes for adults—116, with 14,288 pupils. The . “higher schools” (écoles supériewres) supply education for in- dustrial or commercial careers. They have 677 pupils between six and thirteen years of age and 2956 above thirteen, who are dis- ; tributed among the Oollége Chaptal and the Turgot, Lavoisier, | Colbert, J. B. Say, and Arago schools. Theapprentice school (école @apprentis) with 228 pupils, the normal schools (for males, 205 pupils ; for females, 68 pupils), and the Pape-Carpentier scliool, which trains matrons for the salles d’asile, complete the list of the municipal establishments for primary education. Besides there are { private normal schools for Protestant teachers (male and female), a private normal school for girls, normal classes for ladies under the auspices of the Society for Elementary Instruction, and professional schools for both girls and boys. Commercial instruction is give in two schools placed under the patronage of the chamber of com- merce, and a special commercial high school established about 1880. In 1881 a fund was established for placing indigent but deserving pupils in free primary boarding-schools, at the expense of the city. Between Oct. 1881 and Oct. 1882 494 pupils were thus dealt with at a cost of £9367. Municipal libraries, subsidized by the city, have been established in all the arrondissements; in 1882 they lent 401,415 works, the number of books contained in the libraries being 89,355. }

Secondary education is provided by the municipal Collége Rollin; } in the national lycécs (Louis le Grand, Henry IV., St Louis, and | Vanves), which have both boarders and day pupils ; the Charlemagne and Condorcet lycées, for day pupils only ; and the Collége Stanislas, more especially for boarders. It is between thesc establishments, subjected to the same university programme, and the Versailles lycee that the great compctition of the Sorbonne takes place at the close of each school year. The number of their pupils in 1882 (Stanislas

demolished since about 1850. It corresponded on the whole to the pre-Revolutionary quarter of St Benoit or the University, otherwise called the Faubourg St Jacques. The most distinctive portion lay between Rue St Jacques and Boulevard St Michel. Rue de la Harpe opens into Boulevard St Michel; and Rue du Fouarre, frequently mentioned in medieval and Renaissance writers, strikes N. E, from Rue St Jacques. The students now live for the most part in the vicinity of Sorbonne and the schools of medicine and law. They frequent the cafés and becrshops of Boulevard St Michel and its neighbourhood.

The principal libraries in Paris have already been described Libra- under Liprarizes (vol. xiv. pp. 524-6), and an account of the ries, observatory will be found in vol. xvii. p. 712.

The Bureau des Longitudes, which was founded in 1795 for Bureau the advancement of astronomy and navigation, and publishes the des Connaissance des Temps, is located at the Institute. ‘The meteoro- Longi- logical office and observatory is situated in the Montsouris Park, and tudes. in connexion with it is a school of nautical astronomy and practical geodesy. The observatory for physical astronomy is at Meudon.

The Conservatoire des Arts et des Métiers, in the old priory of Conser- St Martin des Champs, was founded (1794) as a public repository of vatoire machines, models, tools, plans, descriptions, and books in regard des Arts. to all kinds of arts and trades. Various courses of lectures on the

excepted) was 8048. Among the private establishments giving secondary education mention must be made of the Collége Ste Barbe, the Monge, Bossuet, Fénelon, and Massillon schools, the old Jesuit colleges at Vaugirard, Rue de Madrid, and Rue Lhomond, the two lesser seminaries of Notre Damc des Champs and St Nicolas, and numerous institutions preparatory for the examinations and special schools. In 1881 there were 11,608 pupils in the secular and 15,811 in the ecclesiastical establishments, of which 1584 in addition attended a lycée course. For some years there have been at the Sorbonne special classes for young ladies, but the secondary education of girls is only beginning to be organized. Higher education is given in the faculties of scienco, literature, and Catholic theology, which are together in the Sorbonne, and in the facultics of law and of medicine, each of which is by itself. There is also a faculty of Protestant theology transferred to Paris from Strasburg. These faculties confer the degrees of bachelor, licentiate, and doctor. The Catholic Institute, a private foundation, has faculties of law, literature, and science, but has no right of conferring degrees. The Sorbonne, the scat of the Academy of Paris and of its rector, who is the head of the whole educational system, contains a library of 100,000 volumes belonging to the university, and a well-appointed muscum of hysical science, and laboratories. The school of law has a library of 30,000 volumes and the school of medicine 60,000 volumes,

forming the most complete medical collection in the world. Connected with the school of mcdicine are the Orfila museum of

practical school of anatomy, and a botanic garden, and the midwifery schools of the Maternity and De la Pitié hospitals; the

applications of science to commerce and industry have been added from time to time; they are all open to the publie without fee, and are addressed rathcr to workmen and artisans than to the wealthy or learned. The Agronomic Institute has recently been removed to the Conservatoire.

:

; comparative anatomy, the Dupuytren pathological museum, the

: :

The Jardin des Plantes (1626), about 75 acres in extent, forms Jardin one of the most interesting promenades in Paris ; its museum of des natural history (1793), with its zoological gardens, its hothouses Plantes.

higher school of pharmacy and the dissecting amphitheatre for hospital students are also affiliated institutions. Whilst the “faculties” are specially intended to prepare for and

confer university degrees (though thcir lectures are open to the public), the Collége de France is meant to give instruction of the highest order to the general public (men or women) ; and the various sciences are there represented by thirty-seven chairs. The Ecole des Hautes Etudes supplements the theoretical instruction provided by the public lectures of the higher education by practical training. The upper normal school is for the training of “professors” for secondary classical education and for the facultics, TheHcole des Hautes Etudes Ecclesiastiques prepares ecclesiastical “professors” for the institu- tions and lesser seminaries which supply secondary education, and are placed in the hands of the clergy. The free school of the political sciences prepares more cspecially candidates for adininis- trative employments (council of state, &c.). The Ecole des Chartes trains record-keepers in the reading and study of ancient documents. Theschoolof living Oriental languages teaches the principal languages from Russian and Modern,Greek to Malay, Chinese, and Japanese. The Polytechnic school (Ecole Polytechnique) trains military and naval engineers for the artillery corps, the corps of engineers, and the navy-yards, and civil engineers for the national corps of the roads and bridges, the mines, and the state manufactories (tobacco, powder, and saltpetre). As for infantry and cavalry officers, they usually come from the special military school of St Cyr, when they donot risc from the ranks. In Paris too are situated—the Hcolo Supérieure de Guerre ; the practical schools of roads and_ bridges and of nines, for the training of civil engineers, with libraries and collections of models and classes in some cases open to the public; the Ecole d’Application des Tabacs; the school of military medicine and pharmacy. The central school of the arts and manufactures, though some ycars ago it became a Government

and greenhouses, its nursery and naturalization gardens, its museums of zoology, anatomy, anthropology, botany, mineralogy, and geology, its laboratories, and its courses of lectures by the most distinguished professors in all branches of natural science, make it an institution of universally acknowledged eminence.

Learned Societies. —Among the learned societies of Paris the first Learned in importance is the Institut de France, which has already been societies.

described (see InsTiruTE oF FRANOE, vol. xiii. p. 160). The committee of learned societies at the ministry of public instruc- tion forms, as it were, the centre of the various societies not maintained by the Government ; and the French Association for the Advancement of the Sciences, founded in 1872, is based on the model of the older British society, and like it mects every year ina different town. The other societies may be classified as follows :— 1. Historical or Geographical—History of France, Anti- quaries of France (till 1814 known as Ccltic Academy), Historic Studies, Numismatics and Archeology, Bibliophiles, School of Charters, Ethnography, Geography (1821, and thus the oldest of its class), Asiatic (1822), French Alpine Club (Club Alpin); 2. Natural and Medical Sciences—Anthropology, Zoological Acclima- tization (which has the direction of the zoological gardens in the Bois de Boulogne), Entomological, Geological, Surgery, Anatomy, Biology, Medical of the Hospitals, Legal Medicine or Medical Jurisprudence, Practical Medicine, Pharmacy, Agricul- ture,! Horticulture ; 3. Industrial and Moral Sciences—Encourage- ment of National Industry, Statistics, Elementary Instruction, Franklin (for the foundation of popular libraries) ; 4. Posatvve Sciences and Fine Arts—Philomathic, Physical, Philotechnic, Atheneum of the Arts, Sciences, and Literature (1792), Concerts of the Conservatoire de Musique (1795).

institution, still educates engineers for ordinary industrial careers. The school of the fine arts (Ecole des Beaux Arts), intended for painters, sculptors, and architects, contains valuable collections, which render the palace in which they are exhibited one of the most interesting museumsin Paris. The instruction in this institu-

Newspapers.—Paris is very largely supplied with newspapers of News- all descriptions. See Newspapers, vol. xvil. pp. 423-8, papers,

Museums.—The richest museum in Paris occupies the Louvre, the Muse- finest of its palaces. On the ground floor are museums (1) of ums.

ee een ee are ee

—

lartier vtin,

tion is at once theoretical and practical. It is open to all French- men from fifteen to thirty years of age, and cven in some cases to foreigners. Of the various competitions open to the pupils the Most important is for the prix de Rome. The successful com- petitor is rewarded with four years' residence in Italy at Government expense, two years being spent at the Medici palace in Rome. Schools of design for boys and girls serve as preparatory for the school of the fine arts, or train designers for industrial occupa- tions. There is a free school of architecture. Music and elocution are taught at the Conservatoire, which possesses a musical library and a very curious collection of musical instruments. The diocesan seminary of St Sulpice receives clerical pupils from all France to the number of 200; the foreign mission scminary trains missionaries for the far East, and the seminary of St Esprit mis- Sionaries for the French colonies. The Lazarists have also a noviciat of their own. The Irish, English, and Scotch colleges, as their names suggest, prepare priests for the Roman Catholic dioceses of the United Kingdom.

A district at one time almost exclusively occupied by students and known as the Quartier Latin or Pays Latin was situated on the left side of the river mainly in the arrondissement of Luxem- bourg; the old houses have, however, been almost entircly

ancient sculpture, containing such treasures as the Venus of Milo, the Pallas of Velletri (the most beautiful of all statues of Minerva), the colossal group of the Tiber, discovered at Rome in the 14th century, &c. ; (2) of medieval and renaissance sculpture, compris- ing works by Michelangelo, Jean Goujon, Germain Pilon, John of Bologna, &c., and special rooms devoted to early Christian monu- ments and to Jewish antiquities (this last a feature peculiar to the Louvre); (3) of modern French sculpture, with works by

Puget, Coustou, Coysevox, Chaudet, Houdon, Rude, David of Angers, &c. ; (4) of Egyptian sculpture and inscriptions ; (5) of Assyrian anti- quities ; (6) of Greck and Pheenician antiquities ; (7) of engraving. On the first floor are (1) the Lacaze museum, a magnificent collection of pictures presented to the state by M. Lacaze in 1869 ; (2) the splen- did musée de peinture ; (3) the Campana muscum ; (4) a museum of Greek antiquities ; (5) a museum of Egyptian antiquities ; (6) an Oriental museum (Persian pottery, Chinese vases, lacquered work, &c.); (7) the Lenoir museum (suuff-boxes, jewels, miniatures, lac- quered wares, bequeathed to the Louvre by M. and Madame Lenoir

1 Asthe National Socicty of Agriculture, in contrast to nearly all the other societies, consists of only a limited number of persons named by the Government, to be a member of this corporation has a distinct value similar (though at a con- siderablé remove) to that of being a member of the Institute.

“i — 36

Hos- pitals.

282

-in 1874); (8) the Duchatel room, bequeathed by the widow of the |

ininister of that name (Za Source, a masterpiece by Ingres); (9) the Timbal, His de la Salle, and Davilliers colleetions, consisting re- spectively of furniture drawing and curiosities, drawings, and pottery, furniture, and tapestry ; (10) a medieval and renaissance museum, comprising French, Italian, or Hispano-Moorish pottery and terra cotta ware, as well as objects in bronze, glass, and ivory— the Sauvageot collection being of note; (11) the museum of drawings and chalks, of which the more valuable are preserved in drawers ; (12) a museum of ancient bronzes; (13) the Apollo gallery, adorned by the leading artists who have been employed on the palace, and containing the royal gems and jewels, articles of goldsmith’s work, and enamels. The second floor accommodates the naval museum, the eta, museum (African, Chinese, Mexican), part of the French school of painting, and rooms for the study of Egyptian papyrus-rolls. ; .

The museum of the Luxembourg, installed in a portion of the palace occupied by the senate, is devoted to works of living painters and sculptors acquired by the state. They remain there for ten years after the death of the respective artists, that the finest may be selected for the Louvre.

The Cluny museum occupies the old mansion of the abbots of that order, built in the 15th century by Jacques d'Amboise. It was founded by M. du Sommerard, whose collections were acquired by the state in 1843. Increased from year to year since that date, it now contains about 10,000 articles—pieces of sculpture in marble and stone, carvings in wood, ivories, enamels, terra cottas, bronzes, furniture, pictures, stained glass, pottery, tapestry, glass ware, lock- smith work, and jewellery of medieval and Renaissance times. In the neighbourhood are the remains of the ancient palace of the emperor Julian; in the midst of the ruins, and in the garden which surrounds them, has been collected a Gallo-Roman museum, to which have been added many fragments of medieval sculpture or masonry, found in the city or its vicinity. The Carnavalet museum occupies the mansion in which Madame de Sévigné resided ; it is a municipal musewin, in which are brought together all objects of interest for the history of Paris. The artillery museum, in the Hétel des Invalides, comprises ancient armour, military weapons, flags, and an ethnographic colleetion reproducing the principal types of Oceania, America, and the coasts of Africa and Asia. The permanent exhibition of the products of Algeria and the colonies is in the Palais de l'Industrie ; and finally the Trocadéro palace contains a museum of comparative sculpture and ethnographic galleries for exhibiting curiosities brought home from distant countries by the principal French official travellers.

Public Charity—Hospitals, &c.—The administration of public charity is entrusted to a responsible director, under the authority of the Seine prefect, and assisted by a board of supervision consisting of twenty members. The funds at his disposal are derived (1) from the revenue of certain estates, houses, farms, woods, stocks, shares (£250,680 in 1882); (2) from taxes on seats in the theatres (one-tenth of the price), balls, concerts, the Mont de Piété, and allotments in the cemeteries (£252,117); (3) from subsidies paid by the town, the department, and the state (£976,368); (4) from other

sources (£522,398, including £130,787 from voluntary donations). The charges on the administration consist of “ outside

No. of Patients,

Ist January 1882. the Year.

79,106 21,794 9,454 3,140 872

General hospitals

Special hospitals

Children’s hospitals

Maison de Sante

Temporary service of the hospices…

Grand total for the hospitals…

114,366

Hospices, retraites, and fondations.. Hospitals for Insane—

Bicétre (men)

Salpétriére (women)

6,811

426 266

Several of the hospitals are of recent construction—Hotel-Dieu, Tenon, Lariboisitre. The Hétel-Dieu was rebuilt in La Cité at an outlay of £1,800,000, or £4000 per bed; the arrangements for practical education are excellent, and secure the institution a world-wide reputation. La Salpétriére (oldest of all the hospital buildings) is remarkable for its extent, occupying 74 acres, with 45 large blocks lighted by 4682 windows.

_ The benefits of the hospitals or hospices are generally given gratu- itously, but a certain number of patients pay their expenses, and in 1880 the funds of the department were in this way augmented by £89,262. In connexion with these establishments are a bakery, a slaughter-housc, a wine eellar, a central drug-store, a purveyor for purchasing provisions in the open market, a central depét for bed- ding, linen, clothing, furniture, and utensils; and a certain number

Entered during |Left during

PARIS

A

relief" to the poor (sccowrs & domicile) the "service" of the hospitals, and the support of charity children. In each arrondisse- ment there is a bureaw de bienfaisancc, consisting of the maitre, his assistants, twelve administrators, and an indefinite number of ladies and gentlemen (known as commissaires and dames de charité) who give voluntary and gratuitous assistance. The secretary and treasurer is a paid official ; and 180 doctors, 110 midwives, and 207 religieuses, distributed among fifty-eight liouses of relief (mai- sons de secours), are employed in the service of the bureaus, which in 1880 received 104,236 applications for aid presented by 68 "visi- tors." The expenses for that year amounted to £69,843 for food, £13,140 for clothing, £6114 for fuel, £29,361 for medicine and medical advice, £15,032 for other assistance in kind, and £83,843 for assistance in money. The pauper population, enumerated every three years, consisted in 1880 of 123,735 persons (53,591 males, 70,144 females) in 46,815 families, or at the rate of 1 person for every 16°07 inhabitants in the city,—an increase of 3153 families and 10,418 persons since 1877, and 10,102 families and 33,448 persons since 1861. Of the families assisted in 1880, 18,125 obtained temporary relief and 28,690 relief throughout the entire year. This destitute class is very unequally distributed among the several arrondissements. Whilst in the 9th arrondissement there is only 1 pauper in 50 inhabitants, and in the Ist, 8th, and 2d 1 pauper in 46, 45, and 44 inhabitants, in the 13th arrondissement there is 1 in 7, in the 20th 1 in 8, and in the 19th 1 in 9. 'The paupers are for the most part under sixty years of age, and occupy single rooms, at a rent of from £4 to £8 per annum,

generally with a single fireplace and a single bed. There are usually no children under fourteen years of age.

The doctors in 1880 gave 453,036 consultations at the dispensaries, and performed vaccination in 31,549 cases. The midwives attended 5126 women boarding in their houses for their confinement, and gave assistance to 14,178 during pregnancy. Domiciliary visits were paid by the medical staff in 1880 to 30,822 patients and to 48,269 necessitous persons.

The doctors, surgeons, chemists, both resident and non-resident, connected with the hospitals, are all admitted by competitive ex- amination. In 1880 the staff for the hospitals of Paris and the auxiliary hospitals of Forges, Garches, and Roche Guyon (Seine- et-Oise), and Berek (Pas de Calais) consisted of 32 doctors or surgeons at the central office of admission, 118 hospital doctors or surgeons, 8 doctors for the insane, 18 cheinists, 291 internes,! 470 externes, 575 probationers, and 9 midwives or midwives' assistants, The hospitals are classified as general hospitals—Hétel Dieu, Pitié, Charité, Saint Antoine, Necker, Cochin, Beaujon, Laribois- iére, Tenon, Laennec, Tournelles ; special hospitals—St Louis (skin diseases), Midi or South (venereal diseases, men), Lourcine (venereal diseases, women and children), Maternity, Clinical (operations) ; children's hospitals —Enfants Malades, Trousseau, Berck-sur-Mer, La Roche-Guon ; hospices —Bicétre (old men), La Salpétriere (old women), Ivry (incurables); maisons de retraite—lssy, La Roche- foucauld, Ste Périne ; fondations— Boulard St, Michel, Brézin at Garclies (for ironworkers), Devillas, Chardon Lagache, Lenoir- Jousseran ; and asylums for the insane—Bicétre (men), Salpétriere (women). The following table (V.) gives details regarding these institutions in 1882 :—

Remaining on No. of Mean Length

Deaths. | 31st December, Patient Days. of Term

the Year.

6,489

2,932,802} 29°28

775,549 736,768 122,186

61,709

11,339 781 1,721

67,375 20,974 7,726 2,644 541

603 140

99,322 | 14,522 | 10,010 4,628,502

4,979 | 1,418 9,201 3,561,342

308 105 205 64

665 708

293, 016 330,525

of articles are retailed to other departments or private institu- tions.

Foundlings and orphans are sent to the Hospice des Enfants Assistés, which also receives children whose parents are patients the hospitals or undergoing imprisonment. In 1882 the hospice received 9620 children; the inmates from the preceding ycar num- bered 274. Of these children 2549 were restored to their parents, 2814 were boarded out in the country, 561 died, and 2594 were

1 The internes and externes are two grades of medieal students—the inter- nes the higher of the two and limited in number. Many doctors of medicine have not passed the tnternat. f

2 The mortality is here stated for the mean number present on the Ist 0 January and adinitted during the year,—one death for 6°94, &e., of this mean number, The larger thenumber in the table the less, of eourse, is the mortality.

formally enrolled among the enfants assistés, or charity children. There are in the hospice 102 resident wet-nurses ; infants, however, are not kept in the institution, but are boarded out with nurses in the eountry, of whom 1707 were engaged under the supervision of 361 matrons. Up to twelve years of age these children are kept at the expense of the department of Seine, and they remain under the guardianship of the poor-board till twenty-one years of age. On December 31, 1882, there were 13,861 ehildreu of the first elass and 12,135 of the second distributed among 32 agencies and 257 medieal circuits situated in Nivernais, Burgundy, Bourbonnais, Normandy, Artois, Pieardy, and Brittany.

The Quinze-Vingts still gives shelter to the 300 (fifteen score) blind for whom it was founded by St Louis, and gives outdoor assist- ance to 1550 besides. The blind asylum for the young (Institution des Jeunes Aveugles) has 250 pupils (one-third girls, two-thirds boys) ; the eourse of study lasts for eight years ; most of the pupils are bursars of the state or the departments ; some pay a small fee; suitable trades are taught. The deaf-mute institution is for boys only, and they are generally paid for by the state, the departments, and the communes. During a course of seven years they are taught artieulation and lip-reading. The Charenton asylum for the insane receives 300 male and 280 female patients, most of them paying for their board, and elassed according to their means. Those of Vineennes (522 beds for male patients) and Le Vesinet (300 beds for female patients) take in eonvaleseents from the hospitals sent by the eharity boards or friendly soeieties whieh subscribe to the institution. The Hétel des Invalides is for old and infirm soldiers. The pensioners, who have numbered at times as many as 5000, are now only a few hundred, and their immense edifice aeeommodates the Keole Supérieure de Guerre, the artillery museum, the galleries for plans in relief of fortified posts, and numerous storehouses of the war department. Under the dome of the Invalides is the tomb of Napoleon I., and in the church the funeral obsequies of distinguished soldiers are performed. ‘There are four military hospitals in Paris—Val de Graee (960 beds for all ranks), Gros Cail- lou (630 beds), Saint Martin (425 beds), and Vincennes (630).

Private benefieenee maintains a great variety of institutions in Paris. ‘There are 30 créches or day-nurseries in the eity and 14 in the suburbs (eapable of

aecommodating respectively 1093 and 398 infants), where mothers who have to go out to work may leave their infants under two years ; they are under the direetion of the sisterhood of St Vineent de Paul. The Soeiety of St Vineent de Paul, which must not be confounded with the sisterhood, isa society of laymen founded in 1833 and divided into as many eonfereneces as there are parishes, for the purpose of visiting the poor and giving them advice and assistance. The Société Philanthropique distributes food rations in its “kitehens” by means of a system of eheap tickets. The Société de Charité Maternelle devotes its attention to women in ehildbed; the Petites Sceurs des Pauvres have five houses for poor old men, for whom they colleet seraps from the restaurants. The Freres St Jean de Dieu take care of ehildren suffering from ineurable diseases. A large number of institutions known as owvroirs or workrooms bring up orphan and destitute girls and fit them for various industrial oeeupations, especially the use of the needle, The night asylums offer shelter to the homeless. The Society for the Protection of the Alsaee-Lorrainers, and the charity office of the British embassy, are naturally limited to speeial nationalities. Friendly societies, supported by ordinary subserip- tions, donations from honorary members, and state subsidies, are numerous ; they give assistanee to their members when they are sick or out of work, and pay their funeral expenses.

An evangelistie mission, eommeneed in 1872 by the Rev. R.W. M‘All in the district of Belleville has met with remarkable success. By 1884 it had between thirty and forty stations in Paris and the suburbs, and had extended its activity to various towns in the Provinces, to Corsiea, and to Algiers. Its ineome in 1883-4 was £10,607. Homes for English girls were established in 1872 by Miss Ada Leigh, and the association to whieh they have since been transferred has been presented with an orphanage by M. Galignani.

The Mont de Piété is a national pawnbroking establishment.

arging 9 per eent. for working expenses, it hands over all its proceeds to the public eharity funds. The average number of articles pawned per day is 5205, of which 5 only are of suspicious origin (theft); the average sum lent on each was 28 franes in 1881. When the depositor does not redeem his pledge or purehase a renewal the artiele is sold. In 1882 there were 1,669,582 new transactions and 664,617 renewals, while 1,401,944 articles

were redeemed, and 214,340 sold,—the loans amounting respectively to £1,619,621, £676,671, £1,320,888, and £144,315. If the sale Myolves a loss this falls on the agent who overestimated the Value when the article was deposited; any profit, on the eon- aay, Is divided between the administration and the person eon- erned,

The Caisse d'Hpargne, or savings bank, the natural eomplement of the Mont de Piété, was founded in Paris in 1818. It began that Jear with 351 depositors, and deposits to the amount of £2153; in

1882 it had 440,728 depositors, and owed them £3,518,432, The new deposits for the year reached a sum of £1,874,697, and the repayments £1,236,060. The number of new pass-books issued

was 63,146, of aceounts elosed 24,228. Three per eent. interest was paid to the depositors. The maximum deposit is £80.

Law and Justicc.—Paris is the seat of four courts having juris- Justiee.

diction over all Franee :—(1) the Tribunal des Conflits, for settling disputes between the judicial and administrative authorities on questions as to their respeetive jurisdietion; (2) the Council of State, for litigations between private persons and public departments ; (3) the Cour des Comptes ; and (4) the Cour de Cassation. The first three sit in the Palais Royal, the fourth in the Palais de Justice, which is also the seat of (1) a eour d'appel for seven departments (five civil ehambers, one ehamber of appeal for the correetional poliee, one ehamber for preliminary proceedings), (2) a eour d'assises (members nominated for a term of three months; two sessions per month), (8) a tribunal of first instanee for the depart- ment of Seine (seven eivil ehambers for civil affairs, sequestration of real estate, and sale of personal property; four ehambers of corree- tional police), (4) a police court where each juge de paix presides in his turn assisted by a commissaire de police. Litigations between: the departmental or municipal administrations and private persons are deeided by the conseil de préfecture.

The prefect of police, eharged with the maintenance of public safety, has the prison department under his supervision. There are eight prisons in Paris—Mazas, La Santé, Ste Pélagie, St Lazare (for females), the depdt (police station) of the prefecture of poliee, the Coneiergerie or loek-up at the Palais de Justiee, the Grande Roquette (for eondemned criminals), and the Petite Roquette reformatory. In 1882 there passed through these prisons 108,231 prisoners (83,022 men, 25,209 women), the daily average being 5529. Out of the total number, 30,990 were kept in solitary confinement, and 2905 (males) worked in eompany by day and were plaeed in separate cells at night. The prisons also reeeived 1067 young children who accompanied their mothers, and 732 ehildren lost in the streets. The mendieity-station at Villers-Cotterets (Aisne) has besides a daily roll of 919 prisoners (male and female). In the so- ealled House of Repression at St Denis are confined those mendi- eants who cannot be removed to Villers-Cotterets, or those dis- eharged prisoners who have not aequired a suffieiency for their im-mediate necessities ; 3240 persons passed through St Denis in 1882, The same year 46,457 persons were arrested in Paris, —44,955 being taken flagrante delicto or arrested as vagabonds ; 41,207 were brought before the judges. Of the whole number eight-ninths were males. Against five-ninths no previous eharge had been made: 899 were tieket-of-leave men, 3291 were forcigners (959 Belgians, 759 Italians, 376 Swiss, 379 Germans, and 126 English), The most frequent eauses of arrest were—vagabondism and begging, 16,985; theft in its various forms, 8604; rioting, 5619; assaults and acts of violenee, 1338; offences against morals, 825; breaeh of eertifieate by tieket-of-leave men, 899; murders, assassinations, and assault by night, 330; drunkenness, 312. ; ;

The prefeet of poliee has the control of the locating, diseharg- ing, or maintaining of the insane in the six publie asylums of Ste Anne, La Salpétriere, Bieétre, Charenton, Vaueluse, and La Ville Evrard, —the last two situated in the department of Seine-et- Oise. The financial and administrative management of these establishments is entrusted to the prefeet of Seine. At the Ist of January 1882 there were in the different asylums 8260 lunaties, and during 1882 3670 were admitted, while 3938 left or died. Private asylums for the insane eannot be opened within his pre-feeture without the permission of the prefeet of police. Children put out to nurse, and women wishing to be engaged as wet- nurses, are also under his

supervision. — In 1881 18,527 infants were registered by their parents as requiring to be put to nurse in the various departments; on December 31, 1881, 4398 infants under three years of age were out at nurse within the prefeeture ; 407 died during the year. An institution of a reformatory eharaeter commenced operations on January 1, 1881. _ In 1881 and 1882 it received 1644 children—1131 brought by their parents, 262 by the magistrates, and 251 by the prefeet of police. On Deeember 1882 there remained 1330 ehildren boarded out in the eountry. The expense for the two years was £18, 160.

Establishments which are dangerous or unhealthy are of three elasses, aceording as they have to be kept absolutely at a distance from dwelling-houses or simply subjeeted to certain precautions. They ean be opened only with the permission and under the surveillance of the prefeet of poliee. The first class comprises slaughter- houses, nightsoil reservoirs, vitriol works, &c. In 1882 there were of all the three classes 3049 establishments within the eity of Paris; in 1881 there were 2922 in the suburban eommunes. The shops for mineral oils (3615) and those for mineral waters (1133) are also subjeet to inspection, and the groceries, drug-stores, and chemists' shops in whieh medieines are sold (9224) are under the supervision of the upper sehool of pharmacy. Steam maehin- ery, (8317 machines, of 29,529 horse-power) which must be regis- tered, is inspected by the engineers.

Ceme- teries.

284

Kighty local committees—forty composed of men and forty of women—are entrusted with the duty of visiting the 12,316 workshops in which 27,402 children are employed (16,945 boys or girls between twelve and sixteen years of age, and 10,336 girls between sixteen and twenty-one, ¢.c., still minors). Street porters (commissionatres), rag-pickers, hawkers, and lodging-house keepers are under police surveillance. The bodies of the drowned or of those who have died in the streets are conveyed to the Morgue, where post-mortem examinations are performed at the command of the court, and lectures delivered on medical jurisprudence. The number of bodies is increasing (718 in 1878 ; 879 in 1882). Of this total 673 were adults (committed suicide, 219 ; killed by accident, 105; murdered, 45; died

suddenly, 86). Drowning is the most frequent cause of death (321 cases). Of the 673 adults 588 were identified ; the 85 unidentified were photographed before burial. — ae

Cemeteries.—A corpse cannot be buried in Paris without a certificate from a medical man who has ascertained that death has really taken place ; and at least twenty-four hours must be allowed to elapse. In most cases (30,825 out of 57,871 deaths) the families are too poor to pay any funeral expenses, and the body is conse- quently buried free of eharge. Other interments are divided into nine elasses, the cost of which ranges from 15s. to £287, without counting secondary and religious expenses. There are twenty cemeteries in Paris or outside the gates. Pere la Chaise, the most extensive, contains 1064 acres; it is there that the most illus- trious personages are generally buried. In 1882 the number of interments was no less than 3048 (all permanent). Montmartre, or the Northern Cemetery (26 acres), received 970 (all permanent) ; Montparnasse, or the Southern Cemetery (46 acres), 1945 (10 being temporary). The two cemeteries of St Ouen (61 acres) received 12,462 gratuitous and 5761 temporary interments, but only 10 permanent; and the two cemeteries at Ivry (69 acres) 20,380 gratuitous interments and 7038 temporary. It is towards St Ouen and Ivry that most of the funerals now make their way and those graveyards, though but recently formed, will before long prove insufficient. The other Paris cemeteries arc due to the incorpora- tion of the suburban communes in 1860. The little graveyard at

Wine and

Population. Spirits.

Gallons.

1,825,274 1,851,792 1,988,806 2,239,928

The average annual consumption of bread is 849°46 pounds per head. Wholesale merchandise in food stuffs, though legal in all the market-places of Paris, is, as a matter of fact, concentrated in the central markets (halles centrales), with the exception of the butcher- meat trade, which is carried on by public auction or private sale both in the central markets and the

slaughter-houses. The central markets comprise ten elegant “ pavilions” of iron and glass, each about 4 acre, and separated from each other by streets which are for the most part covered. Dealers from the neighbourhood of Paris took to these markets, in 1882, 80,472 vehicles loaded with fruit, 723,257 with vegetables, 39,740 with potatoes, and 37,584 with pease and beans. These are cntered as market-garden produce. There was also sold wholesale in the pavilions 1506 tons of ‘‘choice”’ fruits and vegetables, 6896 of “fine” fruits and vegetables, 6903 of ordinary vegetables, 4837 of cresses, 321,047,149 eggs (at an average price of 51s. per thousand), 192,629 “hundreds ” of oysters, 21,144 tons of fish, 5746 tons of shell-fish, 6167 tons of “new” cheese, 697 tons of dry cheesc, 12,419 tons of butter, 21,931 tons of poultry and game (comprising 6,454,876 fowls, 3,102,269 rabbits, 2,819,083 pigeons, 1,936,560 larks, &c., at an average price of 103d. per Ib), 33,086 tons of beef, veal, mutton and pork,—these last figures including butcher meat sold by public auction in the market of the La Villette slaughter-house. Through the same market there passed to the shambles in 1882 354,277 oxen, cows, and bulls, 199,416 calves, 2,054,680 sheep, 315,306 pigs. This cattle-market, connected with the Chemin de Fer de Ceinture so that the trains bring the cattle trucks right into the market, occupies with its slaughter-houses an areaof1llacres. The places of sale (pavilions de vente) are capable of containing 4600 horned cattle, 22,000 sheep, 7000 pigs, 4000 calves. Horned cattle are liable to an entry fee of 3 francs, calves and pigs 1 franc, sheep 0°30 franc. Animals not sold are kept in sheds, cattle paying 4 franc per night, and the others in proportion. The slaughter-houses can accom- modate 1200 butehers, and contain a tallow-melting house (fondotr). Most of the cattle come from Maine-et-Loire, Niévre, Calvados ; sheep from Seine-et-Oise, Seine-et-Marue, Céte d’Or, Nord, Aisne, Allier, Indre, Cher ; calves from Seine-et-Marne, Eure-et-Loir, Loiret, Nord, Aube; pigs from Sarthe, Allier, Creuse, Indre-et-Loire, and Maine-ct-Loire. Foreign countries also contribute to the supply, especially ofsheep. Germany in 1882 sent 576,563, Austria-

Poultry and Game.

Pa Wh ts

Picpus is the property of a few families. Old cemeteries, long ago abandoned, in the heart of the city have gradually been built over, The bones found on breaking up the ground are collected in the ossuary of the Catacombs at Montrouge. The Catacombs are ancient quarries extending under a great part of the city south of the Seine ; they are subjected to continual inspections and shoring- up to prevent subsidenccs such as have taken place on several oecasions.

Fires, —The fire brigade has a military organization, and consists Fires,

of 1742 officersand men. On3lst December 1882 they had at their disposal 1678 fire-plugs. In the course of that year they extin- guished 982 fires (127 in January, the maximum; 55 in September, the minimum) and 1656 burning vents; and there were 72 false alarms. They used 1778 fire-engines, 1389 of them worked by steam. Eight individuals perished in the conflagrations ; 55 were saved by the firemen. Only 19 of the fires were serious. In 703 cases the damage was less than £40. The total loss for the ycar was £309,200. The most frequent cause of fires was some defect in the buildings (157 cases); lights ranked next (142 cascs), and the falling of petroleum or naphtha lamps accounted for 84.

Military.—Paris is the seat ofa military government, whose com- Milita mandant has under him all the troops stationed in the departments organi The soldiers recruited in the two tion.

of Seine and Seine-et-Oise. departments arc distributed among the 2d, 3d, 4th, and 5th corps d’armée, whose headquarters are at Amiens, Rouen, Le Mans, and Orleans. The principal barracks belonging to the state in Paris are those of the military school of Prince Eugene and Napoleon; the town possesses the barracks of the repnblican guard, the gendarmes, and the firemen in different quarters. The most important are those of La Cité, to which the prefecture of police was transferred after the destruction of its former buildings by fire in 1871. Besides the war office and the hospitals named above, the main establishments comprise the depét of the fortifications, the central artillery depét with the workshops of St Thomas d’Aquin, and the depét of the commissariat department.

Food Supply.—The following table (VI.) shows the annual average of food consumed per head of the inhabitants of Paris :—

Butcher

Mest. Butter.

Tripe, &c.

Tb 18°36 17°16 15°96 16°66

Tb 6°148

5348

6°391 6°64

Ib 165°78 156°10

168

172°74

Hungary 352,376, Russia 156,005, Algeria 38,172, and Italy 37,694. Beside the Halles Centrales is the Halle aux Blés or corn-market. A certain number of full sacks are stored under the cupola (which, architecturally considered, is a bold and striking design), but the whole of this class of goods arriving at Paris does not necessarily pass through the building. Brought by boat or rail, they are either stored at the stations or taken directly to the bakers, the general warehouses, or the military stores. In 1881 71,961 tons of grain and 208,374 tons of flour reached the city.

The consumption of wine has not increased in Paris during the last decade, allowance being made for the growth of the population. For 1872 the figures were 85,407,322 gallons of wine in cask and 404,272 gallons in bottle ; for 1880, 92,840,374 in cask and 428,450 in bottle. But the average consumption of spirits (1,312,498 in 1872, 2,907,190 in 1880) has doubled in the interval. More than the half of the wines and spirits consumed in Paris pass through the entrepOts of Bercy, Quai St Bernard, or Pont de

Flandre. To these great markets must be added the market for skins and hides (which, according to the latest returns—taken, however, in 1872—did business to the amount of £880,000), the horse-market (£414,200), charcoal-markets on the boats along the Seine (£180,000), flower- markets (£80,000), and the markets for fodder, dogs, birds, &c. The Marché du Temple, rebuilt about 1864, is devoted to the sale of old clothes and second-hand articles of all sorts. All the market-houses and market-places are placed under the double supervision of the prefect of Seine and the prefect of police. The former official has to do with the authorization, removal, suppression, and holding of the markets, the fixing and collecting of the dues, the choice of sites, the erection and maintenance of buildings, and the locating of vehicles. The latter maintains order, keeps the roads clear, and watches against fraud. A municipal laboratory has recently been established, where any purchaser can have the provisions he has bought analysed, and can obtain precise information as to their quality. Spoiled provisions are seized by the agents of the pre- fecture ; in 1880 458 tons of butcher meat, 123 tons of horse ficsh, 52 tons of tripe, fish, vegetables, fruit, mushrooms, &c., were seized in this way.

Industries and Commerce.—Returns issued by the chamber of commerce for 1872 estimated the industrial production of Paris as in the following table:—

Food | suppl)

Jndus tries.

J de Ga Is

Taste VII.—Industries of Paris.

Total Class of Industry. Annual Wages. £

FOO ..sccssscesseeeesessccecnaescnceecessnscccnscsescnseceres 3,494,551
BuUiGINg…..eeccccccecceesseseecssscescescecseeesaaeeasens 3,501,638
FUIMiture…..-eseecccseescecesessscccescesctsearccssescecee 3,409,128
ClOtHINg…..1-c00.cceseessneceseeesetecsensseeereseaseecas 6,393,737
Spun and woven OU lseetesserennestcec-c sheen en serre 1,197,618

Ordinary metals……..-scseeressecsssserersrteersreeces 2,133,972 Precious Metals…..cescecesseeeeeeeresceecceranseeceerrs 1,232,412

Chemical stuffs and POttery…...scccccseeerereeees Printing, engraving, Cae Cemeterterccssccesess Philosophical instruments, musieal instru- ments, cloekwork a Gkins and leather….ccccsescescessssssceeseceeees Carriages, saddlery, military equipments Basket-work, brushes, «&c.. Artieles de Taris Miseellaneous…....++

1,101,457 1,707,229

1,173,746 388,837 1,447,405 243,444 1,684,577 2,110,429

30,420,137

The larger manufaeturing establishments of Paris comprise engineering and repairing works eonnected with the railways, simi- lar private works, foundries, and sugar refineries. Government works are the tobaeeo faetories of Gros Caillou (2000 workmen) and Reuilly (1000), the national printing establishment (1000), the mint (where money and medals are coined by a eontractor under state control), and the famous tapestry factory and dye-works of the Gobelins. The list of minor establishments is a very varied one; most of them devoted to the production of the so-called articles de

285

Paris, and carrying the principle of the division of labour to an extreme. The establishments whieh rank next to those above mentioned in the number of workmen are the ehemieal faetories, the gas-works, the printing offiees, eabinetmakers' workshops, boot faetories, tailoring establishments, hat faetories, and works for the produetion of paperhangings.

Among the workers are ineluded 189,401 women, girls, and boys, and 123,369 masters—this last a figure whieh shows how great is the number of the small establishments. The total value produeed was estimated at £134,763,717 in 1860, and must have sinee in- ereased enormously. (Compare Table 1V. p. 278.) In 1881 the

| average day’s wages paid in the petite industrte were estimated

at 4s. 5d. for the men and 2s. 5d. for the women. Sinee 1878 an inerease has taken place year by year, at least for the men. Clerks in warehouses earn about £48 per annum, shop women £32, shop girls £16, male domesties £24, and female domesties £20.

In 1882 2400 new houses were built and 1883 old houses en- larged ; on the other hand, 997 old houses were entirely demolished and 777 partially. The last offieial industrial valuation of rental is for the year 1876. At that date there were 76,129 houses eon- taining 1,038,124 separate establishments, 699,175 being used as dwelling-houses at a rental of £13,981,836, and 338,949 for in- dustrial purposes at a rental of £10,049,542.

Between 1872 and 1881 the navigation of the Seine doubled in Com- There are meree.

importanee. It has been free from all dues sinee 1880. three divisions—the navigation of the upper Seine and the Marne (above Paris), that of the lower Seine and the Oise (below Paris), and that of the Canal del’Oureq with its terminus at the La Villette basin, whenee the St Denis Canal branches off to the lower Seine and the St Martin Canal to the upper Seine.

Taste VIII.—WNavigation of the Seine.

a

Arrivals.

Lower Seine and Oise.

Upper Seine and Marne.

Tons,

803,749 1,220,015

Tons.

417,780 521,332

Average for 1872-80…….....-:+00 ‘i 1882

The goods arriving by the upper Seine are chiefly building sand, paving-stones, firewood, timber, grain, coal and coke, pyrites, ehareoal, and wines ; those by the lower Seinc, coal and coke, sand, paving-stones, wines, building materials, grain, and timber; and those by the Canal de l’Oureq, building materials. By the upper Seine Paris despatehes mainly refuse and manure; by the lower Seine, manure, pyrites, grain, and refined sugars ; by the Canal de lOureq, agricultural produce and manure. To the traffic of the river ports situated within the city must be added that of the ports along the canals, and especially that of La Villette, the third port of all Franee, judged by its eommercial activity. The follow- ing table (IX.) shows the tonnage of the merchandise that passed through each of the canals in 1882 (the same merchandise may sometimes figure on two canals, or may have also been entered for the ports within the city):—

Oureq Canal, St Denis Canal. Total for the Three

Canals.

St Martin’s Canal.

Down.

Up. | Down. Up.

Down. Up.

Tons.

424,603

Tons To

b ns. Ton

112,720 894,198

Ss. Tons.

1,017,726

361,002

Tons.

3,427,050

Tons.

618,800

The Oureq Canal brings down wood, building stones, bricks, flour, and espeeially plaster, and takes in return coal, manure, and night- soil for the Bondy manure-works. The St Denis Canal brings up eoal from Nord, Pas de Calais, Belgium, and England ; freestone from the valley of the Oise, sands from the lower Seine, wood for industrial purposes, grain, sewage for the works at Aubervilliers, colonial wares for La Villette, &c., and the most important articles taken down are sewage for Aubervilliers, and the various wares embarked at La Villette for Rouen or La Havre. Along the St Martin Canal, on the upward passage, sand, gravel, paving-stones or blocks, firewood, lime or eement, freestone, bricks, tiles, slates are discharged, and sewage especially is taken in for Aubervilliers. On the downward passage are diseharged plasters from the Oureq Canal, eoal, and stones and sand from the Oise and the Oureq. There is besides a large transit traffic.

Five of the great railway eompanies have a terminus at Paris. The “Nord” and the “ Paris, Lyons, and Mediterranean” lines have each only one station; the “Ouest” has two, St Lazare and Montparnasse; the “Est” two, one of whieh, Bastille, is only a eet station for the use of the Vineennes line and its pro- ongation; the “Orleans” two, of which one, Barriére d’Enfer, 1s restricted to the short line from Paris to Sccaux and Limouwrs.

Canal de YOureq.

Tons. Tons. Tons. Tons. Tons.

6,629 106,160 249,938 12,246 1,596,502 11,286 “193,445 329,966 10,594 2,286,638

Departures. Total Movement.

Canal de TOureg.

Lower Seine and Oise.

Upper Seine and Marne.

The following table (X.) shows the number of passengers and quantity of goods that left Paris in 1880:—

Paris-Lyons- Nord. Est. Mediterranean.

2,996,000 | 5,594,300 | 10,521,500 | 1,900,100 1,367,093 | 653,596 | 1,359,704| 601,970

Ouest. Orleans.

Passengers…....- Goods (tons).....

1,621,800 1,238,029

Some goods are registered and pay dues at the Paris eustom- house ; but many pay these dues at the frontier. The following returns (Table XI.) must therefore be eonsidered only as showing the importanee of the Paris custom-house, and not the extent of the trade of the city :—

General Trade. Speeial Trade. Quantity in Tons,

£26,228,459| (B) 490,135 £26,602,716 18,503,776 | 72,955 | 17,331,080

Value.

Quantity in Value. Tons,

(a) 484,228

Imports.

85,442

Exports. po The “special” trade is for home consumption. The duty paid on the imports was £3,774, 407.

Till 31st Deeember 1897 the J privilege of issuing bank-notes. Notes are at present issued for 1000, 500, 100, and 50 franes (£40, £20, £4, and £2); at different times there have been notes for 5000, 2000, 25, 20, and 5. The Bank of Franee, whieh has already been described in BANKING (see vol. iii. p. 387-39), has 90 braneh offiees in the provinees. In 1877 the bank received bills and stock to the value of £56,022,582 ; its advances on seeurities amounted to £15,038,072 ; and the change of bank-notes into gold caused a movement of £33,288, 000.

The other ehief finaneial establishments in Paris are the Caisse des Dépéts et des Consignations, whieh reeeives voluntary deposits or those whieh are obligatory in certain cases fixed by law; the Crédit Foneier de Franee, which gives advances to landowners on real property; the Comptoir National 7 Eseompte, whieh earries on the same branches of business as the bank, with the exeeption of the issue of notes.

Among the great private joint-stock banks must be mentioned the Soeiété Générale, the Crédit Industriel et Commereial, the Credit Lyonnais, the Banque de Paris et des Pays Bas, the Soeiété de Dépéts et Comptes Courants, the Banque d’Eseompte, &e. The Bourse or Exchange is open from noon to 8 o’elock for the negotia-

Bank of Franee has the exelusive Banks.

Post- office,

Tele- graplis,

tion of public stock, and from 8 to 6 for commercial transactions. The former is effected by means of brokers (agents de change) named by ministerial decree, and possessing the exclusive right of dealing in public stocks and bills. Brokers for the purchase and sale of goods enjoy freedom of trade, but the tribunal of commerce issucs a list of the brokers who have

taken the oath. These brokers meet to decide the priees current of the various goods.

The conseils de prud@'hommes settle differences between work- men and workmen, or between workmen and masters ; the whole initiative, however, rests with the parties. There are four of these bodies in Paris (for the metal trades, the ehemical trades, the textile trades, and miscellaneous industries), composed of an equal number of masters and men. They succeed in settling without litigation 95 per cent. of the disputes submitted to them.

The tribunal of commerce, composed of business men elected by the "notables" of their order, deals with cases arising out of com- mercial transactions ; declarations of bankruptcy are made before it; and it acts as court of appeal to the conseils de prud'hommes. In 1882, out of 75,660 cases brought into this court, judgment was given in 66,156, of which 20,696 were cases of first and 45,460 cases of last instance; 4584 cases were compromised. In the same year 1696 bankruptcies were declared, 10 applications made for rehabili- tation, and 7 such applications granted by the Paris court of appeal. Money due to bankrupt estates is paid into the Caisse des Depéts et des Consignations. In 1882 the tribunal of commerce registered 1963 deeds of partnership, 1167 dissolutions of partner- ship, 1840 home trade marks, and 175 foreign trade marks.

The chamber of commerce (under the honorary presideney of the Seine prefect) consists of twenty-one elective members, of whom a third are renewable every two years. Its duty is to present its views on the meaus of increasing and developing Parisian com- merce. The Condition des Soies, as its name indicates, has to determine exactly the quality of the silk purchased by the dealers. The Chambre Syndicale des Tissus, a non-official association, is the recognized mouthpiece of the textile industries and trade in their dealings with the public administration.

Post-office and Telegraphs.—The post and telegraph department comprised at the close of 1881 56 mixed offices, 22 post offices, 24 telegraph offices, and 862letter boxes. The postal conimunications are collected eight times per day, and conveyed to one or other of the 15 sorting-offices (bureaux de passe), which arrange them accord- ing to their destinations. All are then brought together in the General Post Office (Recette principale de la Seine),

which in 1881 sent out 277,588,000 letters or post cards and 866,816,144 lower- rate packets (objets affranchis a prix réduits), and received 188,815,000 letters and post cards, and 40,716,000 lower-rate packets. In 1882 there were issued 2,148,952 ordinary money orders, 45,823 telegraphic orders, and 240,734 international orders; 3,841,335 ordinary orders, 30,693 telegraphic orders, and 188,430 international orders were cashed. The greatest number of foreign ordcrs is from Belgium (36,835) and from Germany (35,684). Great Britain sent only 19,314 in 1881.

Telegraphic communication is effected partly by pneumatie tubes and partly by electric apparatus. The year 1881 showed a great

increase over 1880 in the matter of pneumatic missives,

TABLE XII.

1881, 1882,

| Telegram-cards within Paris …..... 619,418 846,611 Closed telegrams do. do… 335,108 515,503 Ordinary pneumatic telegrams do….) 221 084 246,664

Sue 1,715,610 | 1,608,778

Lak. 4,452,705 | 4,113,069

Do. from Paris to places outside 4,399,558 | 3,981,614 Do. passing through Paris bj

pneumatic tubes…..... 393,153 314,785

Total of telegraphic MESSAGES... se seses. 10,421,024 | 10,018, 246

The pneumatie system had at the close of 1881 64 miles of tube and 49 offices, and by 1884 it was extended as far as the fortifica- tions, and into almost all quarters of the town. The Government clectric telegraph system has 27,000 miles of double wires; the branch offices being connected with the central office by 94 wires and with the Bourse office by 58. The municipal system, used by the various departments of the local

administration, the police, the fire-brigade, &c., and for the indication of observatory time, has a length of 534 miles. The telephonic system on the Ist January 1882 had a length of 1392 miles and 2144 subscribers, — increased to 2306 miles and 2637 subscribers on the Ist of January 1883. The central telegraphie offiee has 315 instruments at work in direct communication with 22 foreign towns and 124 offices in the provinces. In 1880 it sent 11,559,200 messages, and in 1881 13,955,291, °”’(G. ME.)

Pak is

HIStory.

At its first appearance in history there was nothing to foreshow the important part which Paris was to play in Europe and in the world. An island in the Seine, now almost lost in the modern city, and then much smaller than at present, was for centuries the entire site. The sole importance of the town lay in its being the capital of a similarly insignificant Gallic people, which navigated the lower course of the Seine, and doubtless from time to time visited the coasts of Britain. So few were its inhabitants that they early put themselves under the pro- tection of their powerful neighbours the Senones, and this vassalship was the source of the political dependence of Paris on Sens throughout the Roman period, and of a religious subordination which lasted till the 17th century, The capital did not at once take the name of the Parisii, whose centre it was, but long kept that of Lucetia, Lucotetia, or Lutetia, of which Lutaéce is the generally recognized French form.

During the war of Gallic independence, after being subjugated by Cesar, who even in 53 3.c. made their territory the meeting-place of deputies from all Gaul, the Parisii took part in the great rising of the year 52, at the same time separating their cause from that of the Senones, who were held in check by Cwxsar’s lieutenant, Labienus. They joined their forces to the army commanded by an Aulercian, the old Camulogenus, which in turn was to unite with the Bellovaci to crush Labienus advancing from Sens to attack the Parisians. Having marched along the right bank of the river till opposite Lutetia, Labienus learned that the Bellovaci were in arms, and, fearing to find himself between two armies at a distance from his headquarters, he sought to get rid of Camulogenus, who, posted on the left bank,

endeavoured to bar his way. The bridges had been cut and the town burned by order of the Gallic chief. By means of a stratagem Labienus drew his opponent up the river to the district now occupied by the Jardin des Plantes, and quietly by night crossed the Seine lower down in the neighbourhood of Grenelle, near a place which Cesar calls Metiosedum, identified, but not conclusively, with Meudon, The Gauls, retracing their steps a little, met the Romans and allowed themselves to be routed and dispersed ; their leader fell in the fore-front of the battle. Still unsubdued, the Parisii were called upon by the general council assembled in Alesia to furnish eight thousand men to help in raising the siege of that city. It is doubtful whether they were able to contribute the whole of this contingent, when their powerful neighbours the Bellovaci managed to send only two thousand of the ten thousand demanded of them. This was their last effort, and after the check at Alesia they took no part in the desperate resistance offered by the Bellovaci.

Lutetia was somewhat neglected under the Roman emperors of the first centuries. Its inhabitants continued quietly carrying on their river traffic, and devoted part of their wealth to the maintenance of a great temple to Jupiter built on the site of the present cathedral of Notre Dame. It is not known at what date Christianity was introduced into the future capital of France; but it is probable, judging by the use of the title “city,” that

Lutetia was the see of one of the earliest of the bishoprics _

of Gallia Celtica. The name of the founder of the church is known, but a keen controversy, not yet settled, has recently been raised with regard to the date when the first Roman missionary, St Dionysius or Denis, reached the banks of the Seine, along with his two deacons Rusticus and Eleutherius. A pious belief, which, in spite of its antiquity, has its origin in nothing better than parochial vanity, identifies the first-named with Dionysius the

Areopagite, who was converted by St Paul at Athens, and thus takes us back to the middle of the 1st century of the Christian era. Better founded is the opinion which dates the evangelization of the city two centuries later ; the

regular list of bishops, of whom, after Denis, the most famous was St Marcel, begins about 250.

Lutetia was in some sort the cradle of Christian liberty, having been the capital, from 292 to 306, of the mild Constantius Chlorus, who put an end to persecution in Brittany, Gaul, and Spain, over which he ruled. This emperor fixed his residence on the banks of the Seine, doubtless for the purpose of watching ‘the Germans with- out losing sight of Brittany, where the Roman authority was always unstable; perhaps he also felt something of the same fancy for Lutetia which Julian afterwards expressed in his works and his letters. Be that as it may, the fact that these two princes chose to live there naturally drew attention to the city, where several buildings now rose on the left side of the river which could not have been reared within the narrow boundaries of the island. There was the imperial palace, the remains of which, a magnificent vaulted chamber, beside the Hotel de Cluny, are now known, probably correctly, as Julian’s Baths. At some distance up the river, in the quarter of St Victor, excavations in 1870 and in 1883 laid bare the foundations of the amphitheatre, which was capable of holding about 10,000 spectators, and thus suggests the existence of a population of 20,000 to 25,000 souls. Dwelling-houses, villas, atid probably also an extensive cemetery, occupied the slope of the hill of St Geneviéve.

It was at Lutetia that, in 360, Julian, already Cesar, was in spite of himself proclaimed Augustus by the legions he had more than once led to victory in Germany. The troops invaded his palace, which, to judge by various circumstances of the mutiny, must have been of great extent. As for the city itself, it was as yet but a little town (roArxv)) according to the imperial author in his Misopogon. The successive sojourns of Valentinian I. and Gratian scarcely increased its importance. The latest emperors preferred Treves, Arles, and Vienne in Gaul, and, besides, allowed Paris to be absorbed by the powerful Armorican league (c. 410). When the patricians Aetius, Mgidius, and Syagrius held almost independent sway over the small portion of Gaul which still held together, they dwelt at Soissons, and it was there that Clovis fixed himself during the ten or eleven years between the defeat of

_Syagrius (486) and the surrender of Paris (497), which opened its gates, at the advice of St Geneviéve, only after the conversion of the Frankish king. In 508, at the return of his victorious expedition against the south, Clovis made Paris the official capital of his realm—Cathedram regnt constituit, says Gregory of Tours. He chose as _ his residence the palace of the Therma, and lost no time in erecting on the summit of the hill, as his future place of interment, the basilica of St Peter and St Paul, which became not long afterwards the church and abbey of St Geneviéve. After the death of Clovis, in spite of the supremacy granted to the kingdom of Austrasia or Metz, Paris remained the true political centre of the various Frankish states, insomuch that the four sons of Clothaire, fearing the prestige which would attach to whoever of them might possess it, made it a sort of neutral town, though after all it was seized by Sigebert, king of Austrasia, Chilperic, king of Neustria (who managed to keep possession for some time, and repaired the amphi- theatre), and Gontran, king of Burgundy. The last sovereign had to defend himself in 585 against the pre- tender Gondowald, whose ambition aspired to uniting the whole of Gaul under his dominion, and marching on Paris to make it the seat of the half barbarian half

Roman administration of the kingdom of which he had dreamed.

Numerous calamities befell Paris from 586, when a terrible conflagration took place, to the close of the Merovingian dynasty. During a severe famine Bishop Landry sold the church plate to alleviate the distress of the people, and it was probably he who, in company with St Eloi (Eligius), founded the Hétel-Dieu. The kings in the long run almost abandoned the town, especially when the Austrasian influence under the mayors of the palace tended to shift the centre of the Frankish power towards the Rhine.

Though the Merovingian period was for art a time of the deepest decadence, Paris was nevertheless adorned and enriched by pious foundations. Mention has already been made of the abbey of St Peter, which became after the death of Clovis the abbey of St Genevieve. On the same side of the river, but in the valley, Childebert, with the assistance of Bishop St Germain, founded St Vincent, known a little later as St Germain-des-Prés, which was the necropolis of the Frank kings before St Denis. On the right bank the

same king built St Vincent le Rond (afterwards St Germain lAuxerrois), and in La Cité, beside the cathedral of St Etienne, the basilica of Notre Dame, which excited the admiration of his contemporaries and in the 12th century obtained the title of cathedral. Various monasteries were erected on both sides of the river, and served to group in thickly-peopled suburbs the popula- tion, which had grown too large for the island.

The first Carlovingian, Pippin the Short, occasionally lived at Paris, sometimes in the palace of Julian, sometimes in the old palace of the Roman governors of the town, at the lower end of the island; the latter ultimately became the usual residence. Under Charlemagne Paris ceased to be capital; and when feudal France was constituted under Charles the Bald it was liberally bestowed, like any ordinary place, on mere counts or dukes. But the dangers of the Norman invasion attracted general attention to the' town, and showed that its political importance could no longer be neglected. When the suburbs were pillaged and burned by the pirates, and the city regularly besieged in 885, Paris was heroically defended by its " lords," and the emperor Charles the Fat felt bound to hasten from Ger- many to its relief. The pusillanimity which he showed in purchasing the retreat of the Normans was the main cause of his deposition in 887, while the courage displayed by Count Eudes procured him the crown of France. Robert, Eudes's brother, succeeded him; and, although Robert's son Hugh the Great was only duke of France and count of Paris, his power counterbalanced that of the last of the Carlovingians, shut up in Laon as their capital.

With Hugh Capet in 987 the capital of the duchy of France definitively became the capital of the kingdom, and in spite of the frequent absence of the kings, several of whom preferred to reside at Orleans, the town continued to increase in size and population, and saw the develop- ment of those institutions which were destined to secure its greatness. Henry I. founded the abbey of St Martin- des-Champs, Louis the Stout that of St Victor, the mother-house of an order, and a nursery of literature and theology. Under Louis VII. the royal domain was the scene of one of the greatest artistic revolutions recorded in history: the Roman style of architecture was exchanged for the Pointed or Gothic, of which Suger, 'n his reconstruction of the basilica of St Denis, exhibited the earliest type. The capital could not remain aloof from this movement: several sumptuous

buildings were erected; the Roman choir of St Germain-des-Prés was thrown down to give place to another more spacious and elegant ; and when, in 1163, Pope Alexander had solemnly consecrated it, he was invited by Bishop Maurice de

Sully to lay the first stone of Notre Dame de Paris, a cathedral on a grander scale than any previously under- taken. Paris still possesses the Roman nave of St Germain-des-Prés, preserved when the building was rebuilt in the 12th century; the Pointed choir, consecrated in 1163; and the entire cathedral of Notre Dame, which, completed sixty years later, underwent various modifica- tions down to the beginning of the 14th century. The sacristy is modern ; the site previous to 1831 was occupied by the episcopal palace, also built by Maurice de Sully, who by a new street had opened up this part of the island.

Philip Augustus may be considered the second founder of Paris. He seldom quitted it save for his military expeditions, and he there built for himself, near St Ger- main l'Auxerrois, the Louvre, the royal dwelling par excel- lence, whose keep was the official centre of feudalism. He created or organized a regular system of administration with its headquarters at Paris; and under his patronage the public lectures delivered at Pré-aux-Cleres were regu- lated and grouped under the title of a university in 1200.

This university, the most famous and flourishing in Christendom, considerably augmented the local population, and formed as it were a new town on the left side of the river, where the important abbeys of St Geneviéve, St Germain-des-Prés, and St Victor, and a vast Carthusian monastery already stood. Colleges were erected to receive the students of the different countries, and became the great meeting-place of the studious youth of all Europe. Neturning to their native lands, where rank and honours awaited them, the pupils of the Paris university spread abroad the name and prestige of France; and sometimes they took home with them, or afterwards sent for, French artists, to whose wanderings must be ascribed the astonishing propagation in other countries of Pointed architecture.

The right side of the river, where commerce and in- dustry had taken up their abode, and where the Louvre, the abbey of St Martin, and a large number of secondary religious establishments were already erected, became a centre of activity at least as important as that on the left. The old suburbs, too, were now incorporated with the town and enclosed in the new line of fortifications con- structed by Philip Augustus, which, however, did not take in the great abbeys on the left side of the river, and thus obliged them to build defensive works of their own.

Philip Augustus issued from the Louvre a celebrated order that the streets of the town should be paved. Not far from lis palace, on the site of the present Halles Cen- trales, he laid out an extensive cemetery and a market-place, which both took their name from the Church of the Innocents, a building of the same reign, destroyed at the Revolution. Fountains were placed in all the quarters. As for the lighting of the town, till the close of the 16th century the only lamps were those in front of the madonnas at the street corners. But the first “illumination” of Paris occurred under Philip Augustus: on his return from a victorious expedition to Flanders in 1214 he was welcomed by the Parisians as a conqueror; and the public rejoicings lasted for seven days, “interrupted by no night,” says the chronicler, alluding to the torches and lamps with which the citizens lighted up the fronts of their houses. Ferrand, count of Flanders, the traitor vassal, was dragged behind the king to the dungeons of the Louvre, whose doors closed on him for ever,

In 1226 there was held at Paris a council which, by excommunicating Raymond VIL, count of Toulouse, helped to prepare the way for the most important treaty which had as yet been signed in the capital. By this treaty (12th April 1229) Blanche of Castile obtained from Raymond VII. a great part of his possessions, while the

remainder was secured to the house of Capet through the marriage of Alphonse of Poitiers, brother of St Louis, with Jeanne, the last natural heiress of Languedoc,

In affection for his capital St Louis equalled or even surpassed his grandfather Philip, and Paris reciprocated his goodwill. The head of the administration was at that time the provost of Paris, a judiciary magistrate and police functionary whose extensive powers had given rise to the most flagrant abuses. Louis IX. reformed this office and filled it with the judge of greatest integrity to be found in his kingdom. This was the famous Etienne Boileau, who showed such vigilance and uprightness that the capital was completely purged of evil-doers ; the sense of security thus produced attracted a certain number of new inhabit ants, and, to the advantage of the public revenue, increased the value of the trade. It was Etienne Boileau who, by the king's express command, drew up those statutes of the commercial and industrial guilds of Paris which, modified by the necessities of new times and the caprice of princes, remained in force till the Revolution.

St Louis caused a partial restoration of St Germain PAuxerrois, his parish church (completed in the 15th century, and deplorably altered under Louis XV.) ; and, besides preferring the palace of La Cité to the Louvre, he entirely rebuilt it, and rendered it one of the most comfort- able residences of his time. Of this edifice there still remain, among the buildings of the present Palais de Justice, the great guard-room, the kitchens with their four enormous chimneys, three round towers on the quay, and, one of the marvels of the Middle Ages, the Sainte Chapelle, erected in 1248 to receive the crown of thorns sent from Constantinople. This church, often imitated during the 13th and 14th centuries, is like an immense shrine in open work ; its large windows contain admirable stained glass of its own date, and the basements are adorned inside with pictures recently restored. It has a lower story ingeni- ously arranged, which served as a.chapel for the palace servants. The Sainte Chapelle was designed by Pierre de Montereau, one of the most celebrated architects of his time, to whom is attributed another marvel still extant, the refectory of the abbey of St Martin, now occupied by the library of the Conservatoire des Arts et des Métiers. This incomparable artist was buried in the abbey of St Germain- des-Prés, where, too, he had raised magnificent buildings now no longer existing. Under St Louis, Robert de Sorbon, a common priest, founded in 1253 an unpretending theological college which afterwards became the celebrated faculty of the Sorbonne, whose decisions were well-nigh as authoritative as those of Rome.

The capital of France had but a feeble share in the communal movement which in the north characterizes the 11th, 12th, and 13th centuries, Placed directly under the central power, it was never strong enough to force con- cessions; and in truth it did not claim them, satisfied with the advantages of all kinds secured for it by its political position and its university, And, besides, the privileges which it did enjoy, while they could be revoked at the king's pleasure, were of considerable extent. Its inhabit- ants were not subjected to forced labour or arbitrary imposts, and the liberty of the citizens and their com- merce and industry were protected by wise regulations. The university and all those closely connected with it pos- sessed the fullest rights and liberties. There was a munt- cipal or bourgeois militia, which rendered the greatest service to Philip Augustus and St Louis, but afterwards became an instrument of revolt. The communal adminis- tration devolved on échevins or jurés, who, in conjunction with the notables, chose a nominal mayor called provost of the merchants (prévét des marchands), The powers of this official had been grievously curtailed in favour of the

_—

Pak is

provost of Paris, and his lieutenants named by the sovereign. His main duties were to regulate the price of provisions and to control the incidence of taxation on merchandise. He was the chief inspector of bridges and ubli: wells, superintendent of the river police, and com- mander of the guard of the city walls, which it was also his duty to keep in repair. And, finally, he had juris- diction in commercial affairs until the creation of the consular tribunals by L'H6pital (Lalanne, Dict. historique de la France). The violent attempts made by Etienne Marcel in the 14th century, and those of the communes of 1793 and 1871, showed what reason royalty had to fear too great an expansion of the municipal power at Paris. The town council met in the 13th and 14th centuries in an unpretending house on Ste Geneviéve, near the city walls on the left side of the river. The municipal assem- plies were afterwards held near the Place de Gréve, on the right side of the river, in the " Maison aux Piliers," which Francis I. allowed to be replaced by an imposing hétel de ville.

two Valois did little for their capital. Philip the Fair, however, increased its political importance by making it the seat of the highest court in the kingdom, the parle- ment, which he organized between 1302 and 1304, and to which he surrendered a part of his Cité palace. Under the three sons of Philip the Fair, the Tour de Nesle, which stood opposite, on the site now occupied by the buildings of the Institute, was the scene of frightful orgies, equally celebrated in history and romance. One of the queens who, if the chronicles are to be trusted, took part in these explated her crimes in Chateau-Gaillard, where she was strangled in 1315 by order of her husband, Louis X. During the first part of the war of the Hundred Years, Paris escaped being taken by the English, but felt the effects of the national misfortunes. Whilst destitution excited in the country the revolt of the Jacquerie, in the city the miseries of the time were attributed to the vices of the feudal system, and the citizens seemed ready for insurrection. The provostof the merchants, Etienne Marcel, equally endowed with courage and intellect, sought to turn this double movement to account in the interest of the

Paris in 1880.

municipal liberties of Paris and of constitutional guarantees. The cause which he supported was lost through the violence of his own acts. Not content with having massacred two ministers under the very eyes of the dauphin Charles, who was regent whilst his father John lay captive in London, he joined the Jacquerie, and was not afraid to call into Paris the king of Navarre, Charles the Bad, a notorious firebrand who at that time was making common cause with the English, Public sentiment, at first favourable to Marcel’s schemes, shrank from open treason. A watch was set on him, and, at the moment when, having the keys of the town in his possession in virtue of his office, he was pre- paring to open one of the gates, he was assassinated by order of Jean Maillard, one of the heads of the milice, on the night of July 31, 1358. Marcel had enlarged Philip

Augustus’s line of fortifications on the right side of the river, and had commenced a new one.

When he became king in 1364, Charles V. forgot the outrages he had suffered at the hands of the Parisians during his regency. He robbed the Louvre to some extent of its military equipment, in order to make it a convenient and sumptuous residence; his open-work staircases and his galleries are mentioned in terms of the highest praise by writers of the time. This did not, however, remain always his favourite palace ; having built or rebuilt in the S¢ Antoine quarter the mansion of St Paul or St Pol, he was particularly fond of living in it during the latter part of his life, and it was there that he died in 1380. It was Charles V. who, in conjunction with the provost of the

hants, Hugues Aubriot, erected the famous Bastille merchants g ae

to protect the St Antoine gate. A library which he founded—a rich one for the times—became the nucleus of the national library. With the exception of some of: the upper portions of the Sainte Chapelle, which were altered or reconstructed by this prince or his son Charles VL, there are no remains of the buildings of Charles V.

The reign of Charles VI. was as disastrous for the city as that of his father had been prosperous. From the very accession of the new king, the citizens, who had for some time been relieved by a great reduction of the taxes, and had received a promise of further alleviation, found them- selves subjected to the most odious fiscal exactions on the part of the king’s uncle, who was not satisfied with the well- stored treasury of Charles V., which he had unscrupulously pillaged. Aubriot, having ventured to remonstrate, was thrown into prison as a heretic, and in 1382 a riot took place for the purpose of delivering the provost and seizing the fiscal agents. Preoccupied with his expedition against the Flemings, Charles VI. delayed putting down the revolt, and for the moment remitted the new taxes. On his victorious return on 10th January 1383, the Parisians in alarm drew up their forces in front of the town gates under the pretext of showing their sovereign what aid he might derive from them, but really in order to intimidate him. They were ordered to retire within the walls and to lay down their arms, and they obeyed. The king and his uncles, having destroyed the gates, made their way into Paris as into a besieged city ; and with the decapitation of

Desmarets, one of the most faithful servants of the crown, who perished at the age of seventy, began a series of bloody executions. Ostensibly through the intercession of the regents an end was put to that species of severities, a heavy fine being substituted, much larger in amount than the annual value of the abolished taxes. The municipal administration was suspended for several years, and its functions bestowed on the provost of Paris, a magistrate nominated by the crown.

The calamities which followed were due to the weakness |

and incapacity of the Government, given over because of the madness of Charles VI. to the intrigues of a wicked queen and of princes who brought the most bloodthirsty passions to the service of their boundless ambition. First came the rivalry between the dukes of Orleans and Burgundy, brought to an end in 1407 by the assassination of the former in Rue des Francs-Bourgeois. Next followed the relentless struggle for supremacy between two hostile parties, the Armagnacs on one side, commanded by Count Bernard of Armagnac (who for a brief period had the title of constable), and supported by the nobles and burgesses, and on the other side the Burgundians, depending on the common people, and recognizing the duke of Burgundy (John the Bold) as their head. The mob was headed by a skinner at the Hotel-Dieu called Jean Caboche, and hence the name Cabochians given to the Burgundian party. They became masters of Paris in 1412 and 1413; but so violent were their excesses that the most timid rose in revolt, and the decimated bourgeoisie managed by a bold stroke to recover possession of the town. The Armagnacs again entered Paris, but their intrigues with England and their tyranny rendered them odious in their turn ; the Burgundians were recalled in 1418, and returned with Jean Caboche and a formidable band of pillagers and assassins. Perrinet Leclerc, son of a bourgeois guard, secretly opened the gates to them one night in May. The king resided in the Hétel St Paul, an unconscious spectator of those savage scenes which the princes Louis and J ohn, successively dauphins, were helpless to prevent.

The third dauphin, Charles, afterwards Charles VAL, managed to put an end to the civil war, but it was by a crime as base as it was impolitic—the assassination of

John the Bold on the bridge of Montereau (1419). Next year a treaty, from the ignominy of which Paris happily escaped, gave a daughter of Charles VI. to Henry V. of England, and along with her, in spite of the Salic law, the crown of France. The king of England made his entry into Paris in December 1420, and was there received with a solemnity which ill concealed the misery and real con- sternation of the poor people crushed by fifteen years of murders, pillage, and famine. Charles VI. remained almost abandoned at the Hétel St Paul, where he died in 1422, whilst his son-in-law went to hold a brilliant court at the Louvre and Vincennes. Henry V. of England also died in 1422. His son Henry VI, then one year old, came to Paris nine years later to be crowned at Notre Dame, and the city continued under the government of the duke of Bedford till his death in 1435.

The English rule was a mild one, but it was not signal- ized by the execution of any of those works of utility or ornament so characteristic of the kings of France. The choir of St Severin, however, shows a style of architec. ture peculiarly English, and Sauval relates that the duke of Bedford erected in the Louvre a fine gallery decorated with paintings. Without assuming the mission of deliver- ing Paris, Joan of Arc, remaining with Charles VIL. after his coronation at Rheims, led him towards the capital; but the badly conducted and abortive enterprise almost proved fatal to the Maid of Orleans, who was severely wounded at the assault of the gate of St Honoré on the 8th September 1429. The siege having been raised, Charles awaited the invitation of the Parisians themselves upon the defection of the Burgundians and the surrender of St Denis. The St Jacques gate was opened by the citizens of the guard to the constable Arthur of Richemont on April 13, 1436 ; but the solemn entry of the king did not take place till November 12 of the following year; subsequently occupied by his various expeditions or attracted by his residences in Berry or Touraine, he spent but little time in Paris, where he retired either to the Hétel St Paul or to a neighbouring palace, Les Tournelles, which had been acquired by his father.

Louis XI. made equal use of St Paul and Les Tournelles, but towards the close of his life he immured himself at Plessis-les-Tours. It was in his reign,

in 1469, that the first French printing press was set up in the Sorbonne. Charles VIII. scarcely left Plessis-les-Tours and Ambéise except to go to Italy; Louis XII. alternated between the castle at Blois and the palace of Les Tournelles, where he died January 1, 1515.

Francis I. lived at Chambord, at Fontainebleau, at St Germain, and at Villers-Cotterets; but he proposed to form at Paris a residence in keeping with the taste of the Renaissance. Paris had remained for more than thirty years almost a stranger to the artistic movement begun between 1498 and 1500, after the Italian expedition.

‘Previous to 1533, the date of the commencement of the

Hotel de Ville and the church of St Eustache, Paris did not possess, apart from the “ Gourt of Accounts,” any important building in the new style. Between 1527 and 1540 Francis I. demolished the old Louvre, and in 1541 Pierre Lescot began a new palace four times as large, which was not finished till the reign of Louis XIV. The buildings were not sufficiently advanced under Henry IL. to allow of his leaving Les Tournelles, where in 1559 he died from a wound received at a tournament. His widow, Catherine de’ Medici, immediately caused this palace to be demolished, and sent her three sons—Francis IL, Charles IX., and Henry III.—to the unfinished Louvre. Outside the line of the fortifications she laid the foundations of the Chateau des Tuileries as a residence for herself.

Of the three brothers, it was Charles IX. who resided

| |

ae

——— eee

FATS

most at the Louvre; it was there that in 1572 he signed the order for the massacre of St Bartholomew. Henry III. remained for the most part at Blois,

and hardly came to Paris except to be witness of the power of his enemies the Guises.

Taking advantage of the absence of the kings, the League had made Paris a centre of opposition. The municipal militia were restored and reorganized ; each of the sixteen quarters or arrondissements had to elect a deputy for the central council, which became the council or rather faction of The Sixteen, and for four years, from 1587 to 1591, held the city under a yoke of iron. Henry III, having come to the Louvre in 1588, unwillingly received there the duke of Guise, and while endeavouring to take measures for his own protection provoked a riot known as the Day of the Barricades. It was with difficulty that he escaped from his palace, which at that time had no communication with the country, and which Henry IV. afterwards proposed to unite with the Tuileries in order to provide a sure means of escape in case of need.

When, after the murder of the duke of Guise at Blois at the close of 1588, Henry III. desired to return to Paris, he was not yet master of the city, and was obliged to besiege it in concert with his presumptive heir the king of Navarre. The operations were suddenly interrupted on August 1, 1589, by the assassination of the king, and Henry IV. carried hisarms elsewhere. He returned with his victorious forces in 1590. ‘This second siege lasted more than four years, and was marked by terrible suffering, produced by famine and the tyranny of The Sixteen, who were supported by the intrigues of the king of Spain and the violent harangues of the preachers. Even the conversion of the king did not allay the spirit of fanaticism, for the king’s sincerity was suspected, and the words (which history, however, fails to substantiate), “Paris is surely worth a mass,” were attri- buted to him. But after the coronation of the king at Chartres the commonalty of Paris, weary of intriguing with strangers and Leaguers, gave such decided expression to its feelings that those of its leaders who had kept aloof or broken off from the faction of The Sixteen attached them- selves to the parlement, which had already evaded the ambitious designs of the king of Spain; and after various negotiations the provost of the merchants, L’Huillier, offered the keys of the city to Henry IV. on March 22, 1594. The king met no resistance except on the part of a company of German landsknechts, which was cut in pieces, and the students of the university, who, steeped in the doctrines of

the League, tried to hold their quarter against the royal troops, but were dispersed. The Spanish soldiers who had remained in the town decamped next day.

Henry IV., who carried on the building of the Louvre, was the last monarch who occupied it as a regular residence. Attempts on his life were made from time to time, and at last on May 14, 1610, he fell under Ravaillac's knife near the market-house in Rue de Ja Ferronnerie.

Whether royalty gave it the benefit of its presence or not, Paris continued all the same to increase in political importance and in population. Here is the picture of the city presented about 1560 by Michel de Castelnau, one of the most celebrated chroniclers of the 16th century :—

"Paris is the capital of all the kingdom, and one of the most famous in the world, as well for the splendour of its parlement (which is an illustrious company of thirty judges attended by three hundred advocatcs and more, who have reputation in all Christendom of being the best seen in human laws and acquainted With justice) as for its faculty of theology and for the other tongucs and sciences, which shine more in this town than in any other in the world, besides the mechanic arts and the marvellous traffic which render it very populous, rich, and opulent; in such sort that

the other towns of France and all the magistrates and subjects have their eyes directed thither as to the model of their decisious

and their political administrations."

291

Castelnau spoke rather as a statesman and a magistrate, and he did not look close enough to see that the university was beginning to decline. The progress of the sciences somewhat lessened the importance of its classes, too specially devoted to theology and literature ; the eyes of men were turned towards Italy, which was then considered the great centre of intellectual advance; the colleges of the Jesuits were formidable rivals; the triumphs of Protestantism deprived it of most of the students who used to flock to it from England, Germany, and Scandinavia; and finally the

unfortunate part it played in political affairs weakened its influence so much that, after the reign of Henry IV., it no longer sent its deputies to the states-general.

If the city on the left side of the river neither extended its circuit nor increased its population, it began in the 16th century to be filled with large mansions (hétels), and its com- munications with the right bank were rendered easier and more direct when Henry IV. constructed across the lower end of the island of La Cité the Pont Neuf, which, though retaining its original name, is now the oldest bridge in Paris. On the right side of the river commerce and the progress of centralization continued to attract new inhabitants, and old villages become suburbs were enclosed within the line of a bastioned first enceinte, the ramparts of Etienne Marcel being, however, still left untouched. Although Louis XI, except during his minority, rarely stayed much in Paris, he was seldom long absent from it. His mother, Mary de' Medici, built the palace of the Luxembourg, which, after being extended under Louis Philippe, became the seat of the senate.

Louis XIII. finished, with the exception of the eastern front, the buildings enclosing the square court of the Louvre, and carried on the wing which was to join the palace to the Tuileries. Queen Anne of Austria founded the Val de Grace, the dome of which, afterwards painted on the interior by Mignard, remains one of the finest in Paris. Richelieu built for himself the Palais Royal since restored, and rebuilt the Sorbonne, where now stands his magnificent tomb by Girardon. The island of St Louis above La Cited, till then occupied by gardens and meadows, became a populous parish, whose streets were laid out in straight lines, and whose finest houses still date from the 17th century. Building also went on in the Quartier du Marais (quarter of the marsh); and the whole of Place Royale (now Place des Vosges), with its curious arcaded galleries, belongs to this period. The church of St Paul and St Louis was built by the Jesuits beside the ruins of the old Hétel St Paul ; the church of St Gervais received a fagade which has be- come in our time too famous. St Kitienne du Mont and St Eustache were completed (in the latter case with the exception of the front). The beautiful Salle des Pas-Perdus (Hall of Lost Footsteps) was added to the Palais de Justice. Besides these buildings and extensions Paris was indebted to Louis XILL and his minister Richelieu for three 1mport- ant institutions—the royal printing

press in 1620, the Jardin des Plantes in 1626, and the French Academy in 1635. The bishopric of Paris was separated from that of Seng and erected into an archbishopric in 1623.

As memorials of Mazarin Paris still possesses the Collége des Quatre-Nations, erected with one of his legacies immedi- ately after his death, and since appropriated to the Institute, and the palace which, enlarged in our own time, now accommodates the national library.

The stormy minority of Louis XIV. was spent at St Germain and Paris, where the court was held at the Palais Royal. The intrigues of the prince of Condé, Cardinal de Retz, and (for a brief space) Turenne resulted in a siege of Paris, during which more epigrams than balls were fired off ; but the cannon of the Bastille, discharged by order of Mademoiselle de Montpensier, enabled Condé to enter the

city. Bloody riots followed, and came to an end only with the exhaustion of the populace and its voluntary submission to the king. Though Louis XIV. ceased to stay in Paris after he grew up, he did not neglect the work of embellish- ment. On the site of the fortifications of Etienne Marcel, which during the previous hundred years had been gradually disappearing, he laid out the line of boulevards connecting the quarter of the Bastille with that of the Madeleine. Though he no longer inhabited the Louvre (and it never was again the seat of royalty), he caused the great colonnade to be constructed after the plans of Claude Perrault. This immense and imposing fagade, 548 feet long, has the defect of being quite out of harmony with the rest of the build- ing, which it hides instead of introducing. The same desire for effect, altogether irrespective of congruity, appears again in the observatory erected by the same Perrault, without the smallest consideration of the wise suggestions made by Cassini. The Place Vendéme, the Place des Victoires, the triumphal gates of St Denis and

St Martin, and several fountains, are also productions of the reign of Louis XIV. The hospital of La Salpétriére, with its majestically simple dome, was

finished by Libéral Bruant. The Hotel des Invalides, one of the finest institu- tions of the Grand Monarque, was also erected, with its chapel, between 1671 and 1675, by Bruant; but it wag reserved for the architect Hardouin Mansart to give to this imposing edifice a complement worthy of itself: it was he who raised the dome, admirable alike for its proportions, for the excellent distribution of its ornaments, and for its gilded lantern, which rises 344 feet above the ground, “Private persons,” says Voltaire, “in imitation of their king, raised a thousand splendid edifices. The number increased so greatly that from the neighbourhood of the Palais Royal and of St Sulpice there were formed in Paris two new towns much finer than the old one.” All the aristocracy had not thought fit to take up their residence at Versailles, and the great geniuses of the century, Corneille, Racine, La Fontaine, Moliére, Madame de Sévigné, had their houses

Paris in 1615.

in Paris ; there also was the Hétel de Rambouillet, so famous in the literary history of the 17th century.

The halls of the Palais Royal during the minority of Louis XV. were the scene of the excesses of the regency ; later on the king from time to time resided at the Tuileries, which henceforward came to be customarily regarded as the official seat of the monarchy. To the reign of Louis XV. are due the rebuilding of the Palais Royal, the “Place” now called De la Concorde, the military school, the greater part of the church of Ste Genevidve or Panthéon (a masterpiece of the architect Soufilot), the church of St Roch, the palace of the Elysée (now the resi- dence of the president of the republic), the Palais Bourbon (with the exception of the facade) now occupied by the 8 a : ee ‘- the mint, a majestic and scholarly

rk by the architect Antoin ildi Sie tag Ao tence e, as well as the rebuilding

Louis XVI. finished or vigorously carried on the works

begun by his grandfather. He did not come to live in Paris till compelled by the Revolution. That historical movement began indeed at Versailles on June 17, 1789, when the states-general were transformed into a con- stituent assembly; but the first act of violence which proved the starting-point of all

its excesses was performed in Paris on July 14, 1789, when Paris inaugurated, with the capture of the Bastille, its “ national guard,” organized and then commanded by the celebrated La Fayette. At the same time the assassination of the last provost of the merchants, Jacques de Flesselles, gave the opportunity of establishing, with more extended powers, the “mairie” (mayoralty) of Paris, which was first occupied by Bailly, and soon became, under the title of commune, a political power capable of effectively counterbalancing the central authority.

Paris had at that time once more outgrown its limits. The quarter on the left side of the river had more than

doubled its extent by the accession of the great monasteries, the faubourgs of St Germain and St Marceau, the Jardin des Plantes, and the whole of Mont Ste Geneviéve. The line of the new enceinte is still marked by a circuit of boulevards passing from the Champs de Mars at Pont @Austerlitz by Place de l’Enfer and Place d’Italie. Similar enlargements, also marked out by a series of boulevards, incorporated with the town on the right side the faubourgs of St Antoine and Poissonniére and the quarters of La Chaussée d’Antin and Chaillot. In 1784 was begun, instead of a line of fortifications, a simple customs-wall, with sixty propylea or pavilions in a heavy but characteristic style, of which the finest are adorned with columns or pilasters like those of Paestum. In front of the Place du Trone (now Place de la Nation), which formed as it were a facade for Paris on the east side, there were erected two lofty rostral columns bearing the statues of Philip Augustus and St Louis. Towards the west, the city front was Place Louis XV. (Place de la Concorde), preceded by the magni- ficent avenue of the Champs Elysées. Between the barriers of La Villette and Pantin, where the highways for Flanders and Germany terminated, was built a monumental rotunda flanked on the ground floor by four peristyles arranged as a Greek cross, and in the second story lighted by low arcades supported by columns of the Pstum type. None of these works were completed till the time of the empire. It was also in the latter part of the reign of Louis XIV., and under the first republic, that the quarter of La Chauss¢e d’Antin was built.

It does not enter into the plan of the present sketch to narrate the history of Paris during the Revolutionary period ; that is the history rather of France, and to a certain extent of the whole world (see France). During the consulate hardly anything of note took place at Paris except the explosion of the infernal machine directed against Bonaparte on December 24, 1800.

The coronation of Napoleon by Pope Pius VII. was celebrated in Notre Dame on December 2, 1804. Eight years later, during the Russian campaign, the conspiracy of General Malet, happily suppressed, was on the point of letting loose on all France a dreadful civil war. The empire, however, was then on the wane, and Paris was witness of its fall when, after an heroic resistance of two days, the city was obliged to surrender to the allies on March 30, 1814.

After the return of the Bourbons, Paris had to submit to a treaty more humiliating than the capitulation. Already in 1763 Louis XV. had signed in his capital the treaty with England known as the shameful (/Zonteuse), by which he surrendered a great part of the American and Indian colonies, and notably Canada. That of May 30, 1814, was more truly disastrous, since it dismembered the mother- country, cancelled almost all the conquests of the republic and the empire, and lessened the military strength of France by robbing it of half its fleet. And worse even than this was the treaty of 28th November 1815, which not only suppressed the slight accessions of territory re- cognized by the treaty of 1814, and doomed to demolition the fortifications of Huningue, but exacted a war indemnity of 700 million francs (£28,000,000), and demanded the maintenance in seven departments of 150,000 soldiers of the allied army until the payment of the entire sum. _ Under Louis XVIII. the only event of note that occurred in Paris was the assassination of the duke of Berry by Louvel, February 13,1820. Ten years later the revolution of 1830, splendidly commemorated by the Column of July in Place de la Bastille, put Charles X. to flight and inaugur- ated the reign of Louis Philippe, a troublous period which was closed by the revolution of 1848 and a new republic. It was this reign, however, that surrounded Paris with

bastioned fortifications with ditches and detached forts. The republic of 1848 brought no greater quiet to the city than did the reign of Louis Philippe. insurrection was that of June 23 to 26, 1848, distinguished by the devotion and heroic death of the Archbishop Affre. It was quelled by General Cavaignac, who then for some months held the executive power. next became president of the republic, and after dissolving the chamber of deputies on December 2, 1851, caused himself to be proclaimed emperor just a year later.

The most terrible

Prince Louis Napoleon

The second empire completed that material transforma- tion of Paris which had already been begun at the fall of the ancient monarchy. First came numerous cases of destruction and demolition caused by the suppression of the old monasteries and of many parish churches. A number of medizval buildings, civil or military, were cleared away for the sake of regularity of plan and improvements in the public streets, or to satisfy the taste of the owners, who thought more of their comfort or profit than of the historic interest of their old mansions or houses. Destructions of this kind, in some instances of advantage, in other cases without excuse, still continue with more or less frequency. It was under the first empire that the new series of improvements were inaugurated which have made Paris a modern city. Napoleon began the Rue de Rivoli, built along this street the wing intended to connect the Tuileries with the Louvre, erected in front of the court of the Tuileries the triumphal arch of the Carrousel, in imitation of that of Septimius Severus at Rome. In the middle of the Place Vendéme was reared, on the model of Trajan’s column, the column of the grand army, surmounted by the statue of the emperor. To immortalize this same grand army he ordered

_from the architect Pierre Vignon a Temple of Victory, which

without changing the form of its Corinthian peristyle has become the church of the Madeleine; the entrance to the avenue of the Champs Elysées was spanned by the vast triumphal arch De VEtoile (of the star), which owes its celebrity not only to its colossal dimensions and its magnifi- cent situation,

but also to one of the four subjects sculp- tured upon its faces—the Chant du Depart or Marseillaise, one of the masterpieces of Rude and of modern sculpture. Another masterpiece was executed by David of Angers, the pediment of the Panthéon, not less famous than Soufilot's dome. 'The museum of the Louvre, founded by decree of the Convention on July 27, 1793, was organized and con- siderably enlarged ; that of the Luxembourg was created in 1805, but was not appropriated exclusively to modern artists till under the Restoration. The Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers, due to the Convention, received also con- siderable additions in the old priory or abbey of St Martin des Champs, where the council of the Five Hundred had installed it in 1798.

Under the Restoration and under the government of July many new buildings were erected; but, with the exception of the Bourse, constructed by the architects Brongniart and Labarre, and the colonnade of the chamber of deputies, these are of interest not so much for their size as for the new artistic tendencies affected in their architecture. People had grown weary of the eternal Graeco-Roman compilations rendered fashionable by the Renaissance, and reduced under the empire to mere imitations, in producing which all inspiration was repressed. The necessity of being rational in architecture, and of taking full account of practical wants, was recognized ; and more suggestive and plastic models were sought in the past. These were to be found, it was believed, in Greece; and in consequence the government under Louis Philippe saw itself obliged to found the French school at Athens, in order to allow young artists to study their favourite types on the spot. In the case of churches it was deemed judicious to revive the

Christian basilicas of the first centuries, as at Notre Dame de Lorette and St Vincent de Paul; and a little later to bring in again the styles of the Middle Ages, as in the ogival church of Ste Clotilde.

Old buildings were also the object of labours more or less important. The Place de la Concorde was altered in various ways, and adorned with eight statues of towns and with two fountains; on October 25, 1836, the Egyptian obelisk, brought at great expense from Luxor, was erected in the centre. The general restoration of the cathedral of Notre Dame was voted by the

Chamber in 1845, and en- trusted to Viollet-le-Duc; and the palace of the Luxembourg and the Hétel de Ville were considerably enlarged at the same time, in the style of the existing cdifices.

But the great transformer of Paris in modern times was Napoleon III. To him or to his reign we owe the Grand Opéra, the finest theatre in the world, and the masterpiece of the architect Garnier; the new Hétel-Dieu; the finishing of the galleries which complete the Louvre and connect it with the Tuileries ; the extension of the Palais de Justice and its new front on the old Place Dauphine; the tribunal of commerce ; the central markets; several of the finest railway stations; the viaduct at Auteuil; the churches of La Trinité, St Augustin, St Ambroise, St Francois Xavier, Belleville, Ménilmontant, &c. For the first inter- national Paris exhibition (that of 1855) was constructed the “palace of industry”; the enlargement of the national library was commenced ; the museum of French antiquities was created by the savant Du Sommerard, and installed in the old “hétel” built at the end of the 15th century for the abbots of Cluny.

All this is but the smallest part of the memorials which Napoleon IIT. left of his presence. Not only was the city traversed in all directions by new thoroughfares, and sumptuous houses raised or restored in every quarter, but the line of the fortifications was made in 1859 the limit of the city. The area was thus doubled, extending to 7450 hectares or 18,410 acres, instead of 3402 hectares or 8407 acres. It was otherwise with the population ; to the 1,200,000 inhabitants which Paris possessed in 1858 the incorporation of the suburban zone only added 600,000.

Paris had to pay dear for its growth and prosperity under the second empire. This Government, which, by straightening and widening the streets, thought it had effectually guarded against the attempts of its internal enemies, had not sufficiently defended itself from external attack, and at the first reverses of 1870 Paris found itself prepared to overthrow the empire, but by no means able to hold out against the approaching Prussians.

The two sieges of Paris in 1870-71 are among the most dramatic episodes of its history. The first siege began on September 19, 1870, with the occupation by the Germans of the heights on the left side of the river and the capture of the unfinished redoubt of Chatillon. Two days later the

investment was complete. General Trochu, head of the French Government and governor of the city, had under his command 400,000 men—a force which ought to have been able to hold out against the 240,000 Germans by whom it was besieged, had it not been com- posed for the most part of hurried levies of raw soldiers with inexperienced officers, and of national guards who, never having been subjected to strict military discipline, were a source of weakness rather than of strength. The guards, it is true, displayed a certain warlike spirit, but it was for the sole purpose of exciting disorder. Open revolt broke out on October 31; it was suppressed, but increased the demoralization of the besieged and the demands of the Prussians. The partial successes which the French obtained In engagements on both sides of the river were rendered useless by the Germans recapturing all the best positions;

PAR ES

the severity of winter told heavily on the garrison, and the armies in the provinces which were to have co-operated with it were held in check by the Germans in the west and south. In obedience to public opinion a great sortie was undertaken ; this, in fact, was the only alternative to a surrender ; for, the empire having organized everything in expectation of victory and not of disaster, Paris, insuffi- ciently provisioned for the increase of population caused by the influx of refugees, was already suffering the horrors of famine. Accidental circumstances combined with the indecision of the leaders to render the enterprise a failure. Despatches sent by balloon to the army of the

‘Loire instructing it to make a diversion reached their

destination too late; the bridge of Champigny over the Marne could not be constructed in time; the most advan- tageous positions remained in the hands of the Germans; and on the 2nd and 3rd December the French abandoned the positions they had seized on the 29th and 30th of November, Another sortie made towards the north on December 21st was repulsed, and the besieged lost the Avron plateau, the key to the positions which they still held on that side, The bombardment began on December 27th, and great damage was done to the forts on the left of the Seine, especially those of Vanves and Issy, directly commanded by the Chatillon battery. A third and

last sortie (which proved fatal to Regnault the painter) was attempted in January 1871, but resulted in hopeless retreat. An armistice was signed on January 27th, the capitulation on the 28th. The revictualling of the city was not accom- plished without much difficulty, in spite of the generous rivalry of foreign nations (Lendon alone sending provisions to the value of £80,000).

On the Ist of March the Germans entered Paris. This event, which marked the close of the siege, was at the same time the first preparation for the " commune ;" for the national guard, taking advantage of the general confusion and the powerlessness of the regular army, carried a number of cannon to the heights of Mont- martre and Belleville under pretext of saving them. President Thiers, appreciating the danger, attempted on March 18th to remove the ordnance; his action was the signal of an insurrection which, successful from the first, initiated a series of terrible outrages by the murder of the two generals, Lecomte and Thomas. The Government, afraid of the defection of the troops, who were demoralized by failure and suffering, had evacuated the forts on the left side of the river and concentrated the army at Versailles (the forts on the right side were still to be held for some time by the Germans). Mont Valérien happily remained in the hands of the Government, and became the pivot of the attack during the second siege. All the sorties made by the insurgents in the direction of Versailles (where the National Assembly was in session from March 20) proved unsuccessful, and cost them two of their improvised leaders—Generals Flourens and Duval. The incapacity and mutual hatred of their chiefs rendered all organization and durable resistance impossible. On Sunday May 21st the Government forces, commanded by Marshal M‘Mahon, having already captured the forts on the right side of the river, made their way within the walls; but they had still to fight hard from barricade to barricade before they were masters of the city ; Belleville, the special Red Republican quarter, was not assaulted and taken till Friday. Meanwhile the communists were committing the most horrible excesses: the archbishop of Paris (GEORGES Darsoy, g.v.), President Bonjean, priests, magistrates, journalists, and private individuals, whom they had seized as hostages, were shot in batches in the prisons; and a scheme of destruction was ruthlessly carried into effect by men and women with cases of petroleum (pétroleurs and

pétroleuses). ‘The Hotel de Ville, the Palais de Justice, the Tuileries, the Ministry of Finance, the palace of the Legion of Honour, that of the Council of State, part of the Rue de Rivoli, &c., were ravaged by the flames ; barrels of gunpowder were placed in Notre Dame and the Panthéon, ready to blow up the buildings ; and the whole city would have been involved in ruin if the national troops had not gained a last and crowning victory in the neighbourhood of La Roquette and Pére-la-Chaise on May 28th. Besides the large number of insurgents who, taken in arms, were pitilessly shot, others were afterwards condemned to death, to penal servitude, to transportation ; and the survivors only obtained their liberty by the decree of 1879.

From this double trial Paris emerged diminished and almost robbed of its dignity as capital; for the parlia- mentary assemblies and the Government went to sit at Versailles. For a little it was thought that the city would not recover from the blow which had fallen on it. All came back, however—confidence, prosperity, and, along with that, increasing growth of population and the execu- tion of great public works. The Hétel de Ville has been rebuilt, the school of medicine adorned with an imposing

a

fagade, a vast school of pharmacy established in the old gardens of the Luxembourg, and boulevards completed. The exhibition of 1878 was more marvellous than those of 1855 and 1867, and unlike that of the latter year has left a lasting memorial, the palace of the Trocadéro. Tinally the chambers in 1879 considered quiet sufficiently restored to take possession of their customary quarters in the Palais Bourbon and the Luxembourg. This happy event closes for the present the annals, at times only too dramatic, of the capital of France. (Swsieps)

Bibliography.—From the iinmense list of works relating to Paris it is possible to make but a small selection here. For the history of the city the reader may eonsult Sauval, distoire de Paris, 3 vols. fol., 1724; Dom

Félibien, Histoire de Paris, 5 vols. fol., 1725; Lebeuf, Histoire de la ville et du diocese de Paris, 15 vols. 12mo, 1754-57, new ed. by Cocheris, 1863 sqg.; Jaillot, Recherches sur Parts, 5 vols. 8vo, 1772-74; Dulaure, Histoire de Paris, often reprinted; Berty, Topo- graphite historique du vieux Paris, 2 vols. 4to, 1866-68, and Atlas des anciens plans de Paris, published by the eity and edited by Dueher. For the librarics and art treasures of Paris the following works may be referred to :—Francklin, Les anciennes bibliotheques de Paris (1867); L. Delisle, Le cabinet des manuscrits de la bibliothéque tmpériale (1868); Inventaire général des richesses d'art de la France, publié par le Ministére de [instruction publique et des Beaux Arts (the volumes relating to Paris), and the Jnventaire général des euvres d'art apparien- ant a la ville de Paris, in eourse of publieation by the munieipality. As regards the modern eity, see the official Annuatre statistique de la ville de Paris; the Atlas de la ville de Paris par arrondissement, published by the municipality ; Maxime Dueampn, Paris, ses organes, ses fonctions, sa vie (6 vols. 8vo and 6 vols. 18mo, 1869-1875), Laeroix and Verbseekhoven, Paris-Guide, par les principaux écrivains et artistes de la France, 1867; and A, Joanne, Paris illustré, 1881.

PARIS, the som of Priam, king of Troy. Before he was born his mother Hecuba dreamed that she was delivered of a firebrand. The dream was interpreted that her child would ruin his country, and when Paris was born he was exposed on Mount Ida. His life was saved by the herds- men, and he grew up among them, distinguished for beauty and strength, till he was recognized and received by his parents. When the strife arose at the marriage of Peleus and Thetis between Hera, Athena, and Aphrodite, each claiming the apple that should belong to the most beauti- ful, Paris was selected as the judge. The three rivals unveiled their divine charms before a mortal judge on Mount Ida. The scene afterwards became a favourite subject in Greek art, and it is usual to represent Hermes escorting the goddesses. Each tried to bribe the judge, Hera by promising power, Athena wisdom, Aphrodite the most beautiful woman in the world. Paris decided in favour of Aphrodite, and thus made Hera and Athena the bitter enemies of his country. To gain the woman whom Aphrodite had promised, Paris set sail for Lacedzmon, deserting his old love Gnone, daughter of the river-god Cebren, who in vain tried to induce him to give up his purpose. He was hospitably received by Menelaus, whose kindness he repaid by seducing his

wife Helena to flee with him to Troy. The details of the flight are variously related (see HELENA). Greeks followed. Paris proved a lazy and backward fighter, though not wanting in actual courage when he could be roused to exert himself. Before the capture of the city he was mortally wounded by Philoctetes with an arrow. He then bethought him of the slighted nymph Ginone, who he knew could heal the wound. He was carried into her presence, but she refused to save him. Afterwards, when she found he was dead, she committed suicide. Paris is represented in Greek art as a beautiful young man, beardless, wearing the pointed Phrygian cap, and often holding in his hand the apple.

PARIS, Marruew or. See vol. xv. p. 633.

PARISH. In England the parish may be regarded as essentially an ecclesiastical institution, being defined as the township or cluster of townships which was assigned to the ministration of a single priest, to whom its tithes and other ecclesiastical dues were paid; and it has been decided that uf a place has not a church, churchwardens, and sacramen- talia it is not a parish in this original sense of the term.

The siege of Troy by the united

The word has now acquired several distinct meanings, which must be separately mentioned and investigated. The Old Ecclesiastical Parish.—In the absence of evi- dence to the contrary, the ecclesiastical parish is presumed to be composed of a single township or vill, and to be con- terminous with the manor within the ambit of which it is comprised. Before the process of subinfeudation became prevalent, the most ancient manors were the districts which we call by that name when speaking of the tenants, or “townships ” when we regard the inhabitants, or “ parishes ” as to matters ecclesiastical. The parish as an institution is in reality later in date than the township. The latter has been in fact the unit of local administration ever since the country was settled by the English in their several states and kingdoms ; the beginnings of the parochial system are attributed to Theodore of Tarsus, who was archbishop of Canterbury towards the close of the 7th century. The system was extended in the reign of Edgar, and it appears not to have been complete until the reign of Edward ITI. Tt has been considered that the intimate connexion of church and state

militates against the view that the parochial system was founded as a national institution, since any legislation on the subject of the township and parochial systems would probably have resulted in the merging of the one into the other. “The fact that the two systems, the parish and the township, have existed for more than a thousand years side by side, identical in area and administered by the same persons, and yet separate in character and machinery, is a sufficient proof that no legislative Act could have been needed in the first place ; nor was there any lay council of the whole nation which could have sanctioned such a measure” (Stubbs, Const. Hist., i. 227). The boundaries of the old ecclesiastical parishes are usually identical with those of the township or townships comprised within its precinct ; they are deter- mined by usage, in the absence of charters or records, and are evidenced by perambulations, which formerly took place on the “gang-days” in Rogation week, but are now for the most part held triennially, the Poor-Law Act of 1844 permitting the parish officers to charge the expense on the poor-rate, “ provided the perambulations do not occur more than once in three years.” The expense of preserving the boundary by land-marks or bound-stones is chargeable to the same rate. Many parishes contain more than one township, and this is especially the case in the northern

counties, where the separate townships are organized for administrative purposes under an Act passed in 1662. In the southern and midland districts the parishes are for the most part subdivided into hamlets or other local divisions known as “tythings,” “boroughs,” and the like; the distinction between a parish and a subordinate district lies chiefly in the fact that the latter will be found to have never had a church or a constable to itself. The select committee of 1873, appointed to inquire into parochial boundaries, reported to the effect that the parish bears no definite relation to any other administrative area, except indeed to the Poor-Law Union. It may be situated in different counties or hundreds, and in many instances it contains, in addition to its principal district, several outlying portions intermixed with the lands in other parishes. Since the abolition of compulsory church rates in 1868 (subject to certain exceptions as to rates which had already been mortgaged), the old ecclesiastical parish has ceased to be of importance as

an instrument of local government. Its officers, however, have still important duties to perform. The rector, vicar, or incumbent is a corporation-sole, in whom is vested the freehold of the church and churchyard, subject to the parishioners' rights of user; their rights of

burial have been enlarged by the Burial Laws Amendment |

Act, 1880, and an Act passed in 1882 to regulate the inter- ment of suicides. The churchwardens are the principal lay officers. Their duties consist in keeping the church and churchyard in repair and in raising a voluntary rate for the purpose to the best of their power; they have also the duty of keeping order in church during divine service ; and by Acts passed in 1860 and 1877 they are required to furnish annual accounts to the Local Government Board. The other officials are the parish-clerk and sexton. They have freeholds in their offices, and are paid by customary fees. The office of the clerk is regulated by an Act of 1844, enabling a curate to undertake its duties, and providing facilities for vacating the office in case of inisconduct. It is said that the only civil function of the parish-clerk now remaining is to undertake the custody of maps and documents, which may be deposited under the provisions of the Railway Clauses Act, 1845.

The New Ecclesiastical Parish—Under the powers given by the Church Building Acts, many populous parishes have been subdivided into smaller ecclesiastical parishes. This division has not affected the parish in its civil aspect (Chalmers, Local Government, 39). The change has helped to increase the distinction between the ecclesiastical and civil parishes. Mr Chalmers estimates that there are now about 15,000 civil and 13,000 ecclesiastical parishes in England, and that in 1871 not more than 10,000 civil parishes coincided with the ecclesiastical districts of the same names,

The Poor-Law Parish.—For the purposes of civil government the term "parish" means a district for which a separate poor-rate is or can be made, or for which a separate overseer is or can be appointed ; and by the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1866, this definition is to be used in interpreting all statutes except where the context is inconsistent therewith. This district may of itself con- stitute a poor law union ; but in the great majority of cases the unions, or areas under the jurisdiction of boards of guardians according to the Poor-Law Amendment Act of 1834, are made up of aggregated poor-

law parishes. Each of these poor-law parishes may represent the extent of an old ecclesiastical parish, or a township separately rated by custom before the practice was stayed in 1819 or separated from a large parish under the Act of 1662, or it may repre- sent a chapelry, tything, borough, ward, quarter, or hamlet, or other subdivision of the ancient parish, or an area formed by the merger of an extra-parochial place with an

adjoining district under the Acts of 1857 and 1869, or by the union of detached portions with adjoining parishes under the Acts of 1876 and 1879, or by the subdivision of a large parish for the better administration of the relief of the poor under the Poor- Law Amendment Act of 1867 and the Local Government Board Act of 1871. The civil importance of the poor-law parishes may be dated from the introduction of the poor law by the statute of 43 Elizabeth, which directed overseers of the poor to be appointed in every parish, and made the churchwardens into ex officio overseers. The statute was preceded by tentative provi- sions of the same kind enacted in the reigns of Edward the VI. and Mary and in the fifth year of Elizabeth, and after several renewals was made perpetual in the reign of Charles LT The chief part of the parochial organization is the vestry-meeting. It derives its name from the old place of assembly, which in parishes exceeding two thousand in population may now be replaced by a vestry- hall. The vestry represents the old assembly of the town- ship, and retains so much of its business as has not been inseusibly transferred to the court-baron and court-leet. The freemen, now appearing as the ratepayers, elect the “parish officers,” as the churchwardens and way-wardens, the assessors, the overseers, and (if required) paid assistant- overseers, a secretary or vestry-clerk, and a collector of rates if the guardians apply for his appointment.

The Land-Tax Parish.—The parishes or places sepa- rately assessed for land tax form another class. They are described in the series of land-tax accounts from 1692 to the present time, and are also defined in the Taxes Management Act of 1880.

The Burial Acts Parish.—The Burial Acts from 1852 to 1875 deal with areas which are treated as parishes for the purposes of those Acts, but which

have no necessary connexion with the boundaries of the civil and ecclesiastical districts known as parishes in the ordinary sense of the term.

The Highway Parish.—The word “parish” is used in a very wide and vague manner in the Highway Acts. It includes any civil district less than the county, such as wapentakes, hundreds, cities, liberties, or franchises, as well as subdivisions of the ordinary parish, such as town- ships and hamlets, if by reason of tenure or custom or otherwise such larger or smaller district either maintains its own highways or would do so if it were not included m a highway district composed of several highway parishes or in an urban sanitary district. The constitution of the highway parish is discussed in the Report of the Lords’ Committee on Highways. (co. LE)

eee

a

ee

Fe

PAR—PAR

The Parish in Scotland.—There can be little doubt that about the beginning of the 13th century the whole, or almost the whole, of the kingdom of Scotland was parochially divided. It seems probable (though the point is obscure) that the bishops presided at the first formation of the parishes—the parish being a subdivision of the diocese—and at any rate down to the date of the 2eformation they exercised the power of creating new parishes within their respective dioceses (Duncan, Parochial Law, p. 4). After the Reformation the power of altering parishes was assumed by the legislature. The existing parochial districts being found unsuited to the ecclesiastical requirements of the time, a general Act was passed in 1581, which made provision for the parochial clergy, and, enter alia, directed that ‘‘a sufficient and competent” district should be appropriated to each church as a parish (1581, eap. 100). Thereafter, by a series of special Acts in the first place, and, subsequent to the year 1617, by the decrees of parliamentary commissions, the creation of suitable parochial districts was pro- ceeded

with. The powers conferred on the parliamentary conunis- sions embraced what are technicaily known as (1) the disjunction and erection of parishes, (2) the union of parishes, and (8) the disjunction and annexation of parishes. In altering and defining parochial areas in those several ways, the object which the com- qnissioners had in view was to provide for the spiritual wants of particular districts of the country, and to procure from the lands in the parish a proper stipend for the clergy. In the year 1707 the powers exercised by these commissioners were permanently transferred to the Court of Session, whose judges were appointed to act in future as ‘‘ Commissioners for the Plantation of Kirks and Valuation of Teinds” (Act, 1707, cap. 9). Under this statute the areas of parishes continued to be altered and defined down to 1844, when the Act commonly known as Graham’s Act was passed, (7 & 8 Vict. c. 44). This Act, which applies to the disjunction and erection of parishes, introduced a simpler form of procedure, and to some extent dispensed with the consent of the heritors, which had been required under the earlier statute. Since 1844 proceedings for disjunction and crection of parishes have been taken under it.

The main division of parishes in Scotland as they now exist is into civil and ecclesiastical, or, to speak more accurately, into parishes proper (7.¢., for all purposes, civil and ecclesiastical) and ecclesiastical parishes. This division is expressed in legal language by the terms, parishes quoad omnia (7.¢., guoad civilia et sacra) and parishes quoad sacra—civilia being such matters as church rates, education, poor law, and sanitary purposes, and sacra being such as concern the administration of church ordinances, and fall under the cognizance of the church courts. There arc other minor divisions which will be noticed below. (1) The Parish Proper.—In a number of instances it is difficult to determine the exact areas of such parishes at the present day. The boundaries of the old ecclesi- astical parish were nowhere recorded, and the descriptions in the titles of private properties which appear to lie in the parish have sometimes to be taken as evidence, and sometimes the fact that the inhabitants attended a particular church or made payments in favour of a particular minister. Where there has been a union or disjunction and ercction of parishes the evidence of the boundaries is the relative statute, order in council, or decree of commission or of Court of Teinds. The total number of parishes proper in Scotland is eight hundred and eighty-six, and they vary to a great degree both in size and population. For ecclesiastical

purposes, the minister and kirk-session constitute the parochial authority. The minister is vested with the manse and glebe, to be held by him for himself and his successors in office, and along with the kirk-session he administers church ordinances and exercises church disaipline. For purposes of local government, on the other hand, the Scottish parish, unlike that of England, has been largely utilized by modern legislation. The oldest governing authority is the meeting of the heritors or landowners of the parish. Though shorn of much of its oldimportance, the heritors' meeting has still the power of imposing an assessment for the purpose of providing and maintaining a church and churchyard and a manse and glebe for the minister. t also possesses power to assess under the Parochial Buildings Acts of 1862 and 1866. In a certain number of parishes also, which have not adopted a parochial board under the Poor-Law Act, 1845, the heritors along with the kirk-session provide for the relief of the ae and administer the funds legally destined for that purpose. n the great majority, however, of civil parishes the chief governing authority is the parochial board, which in non-burghal parishes is composed of owners of land of £20 annual value and upwards, and Tepresentatives of the kirk-session and of the magistrates of any

argh within the parish and of the rate-payers—the number of representative members being in each case fixed by the Board of Supervision. Another local authority of great importance is the School board, created by the recent Education Acts. Speaking generally, the matters administered in the civil parish are poor relief, education, public health, burial, registration, and church Tates. (2) Quoad Sacra Parishes.—The ecclesiastical or guoad sacra parish isa modern creation. Under Graham's Act, above mentioned,

a parish may be disjoined and erected guoad sacra tantwm on the application of persons who have built and endowed a church, and who offer securitics for its proper maintenance. The creation is made purely on a consideration of the spiritual interests of a par- ticular district, and not for any purposes of civil administration. By the Education Act of 1872, however, the guoad sacra parish has been adopted as a separate school district. There are three hun- dred and twenty-five such parishes in

Scotland. (3) Extra-Burghal Parishes.—For sanitary purposes, highways, and some others, cer- tain classes of burghs have been made separate areas from the parishes in which they lie. This fact creates a set of incomplete parishes, which are called extra-burghal, (4) Burghal, Land- ward, and Burghal-Landward (or Mixed) Parishes. —This division of parishes depends, as the names imply, upon local character and situation of the parochial districts. The importance of the dis- tinction arises in connexion with the rnle of assessment which is to be adopted for various parochial burdens, and the nature of the rights of the minister and corresponding obligations of the parishioners. (5) Combined Parishes.—Under the Poor-Law, Education, and Registration Acts power is given to the central authority to combine parishes for purposes of local administration.

The Parish in the United Statecs.—The term “ parish” is not in use as a territorial designation except in Lonisiana, the fifty-eight parishes of which correspond to the counties of the other States of the Union.

The principal records from which information may be gained as to the oldest parochial system in England are the records called Nomina Villarum, the Taxatio Pape Nicholai madc in 1291, the Monarum Inquisitiones relating to assessments made upon the clergy, the Valor Ecclesiasticus of Henry VITI., the lay subsidies from the reign of Edward ITI. to that of Charles H., the hearth-tax asscssments, and the land-tax accounts, On the subject of the parish generally the reader should consult Stubbs’s Constitutional History, Glen’s Parish Law, Toulmin Smith’s work on the Parish, Holdsworth’s Handy Book of Parish Law, and M. D. Chalmers’s work on Local Government, published in the English Citizen Scries. For fuller information regarding the Scottish parish the following works may be consulted :—Connell on Teinds ; Duncan’s Parochial Ecclestastical Law; the Cobden Club essays on Local Government and Taxation in the United Kingdom, published in 1882; Goudy and Smith’s Local Government tn Scotland,

PARK, Munco (1771-18061), a celebrated African traveller, was born in Selkirkshire, Scotland, on the 20th September 1771, at Fowlshiels on the Yarrow,—the farm which his father rented from the duke of Buccleuch. He was the seventh in a family of thirteen. Having received a good education

(at home from a private tutor, and afterwards at the grammar school of Selkirk), he was apprenticed to a surgeon named Anderson, in Selkirk, and then attended the university of Edinburgh for three sessions (1789-91). By his brother-in-law, James Dickson, a botanist of repute, he was introduced to Sir Joseph Banks, and through his good offices he obtained the post of assistant-surgeon on board the ‘“ Worcester” Hast Indiaman. In this capacity he made the voyage in 1792 to Bencoolen in Sumatra, and on his return in 1793 he con- tributed a description of eight new Sumatran fishes to the Transactions of the Linnean Society. Park next offered his services to the African Association, then looking out for a successor to the unfortunate Major Houghton, and, again supported by the influence of Sir Joseph Banks, he was successful in hisapplication. On the 21st June 1795 he reached the Gambia, but it was not till December 2d that he started for Pisania with only two Negro servants (Johnson and Demba) on the hazardous and difficult expedition into the interior, from which he was to return with the proud distinction of being the first of modern Europeans to reach the well-nigh fabulous waters of the Niger. Striking north-eastward across the upper basin of the Senegal, he advanced through Kaarta and El Hodh, and descended upon the great river of his quest at Segu on the north bank, about 13° 5’ N. lat. and 6° 20’ W. long. Though he was not able to proceed down stream any farther than Mursan and Silla, he managed on his home journey to follow the river valley as far up as Bammako, a, distance of about 300 miles. By the 10th June he was again at Pisania, but he did not reach England till December 22, 1796. An account of his journey was at once drawn up for the Association by Bryan Edwards, and a detailed narrative from his own pen appeared in 1799 (Travels in the Interior of Africa). Abundance of incident, and an unaffected charm of style, at once rendered

the work extremely popular, and it still holds its place as one of the acknowledged classics in this department of literature. It seemed for a time as if Park was now to settle down quietly at home; he married a daughter of his old master, Mr Anderson, and commenced practice as a country doctor

at Peebles, where at least he could enjoy “a glass of strong beer and a peep at the sky through Mr Oman’s telescope”; but he was ill at ease—his heart was in Africa. In 1804 the people of Peebles were amused and alarmed by the vagaries of Sidi Omback Boubi from Mogador, who had come to teach their doctor Arabic ; and in autumn Park parted from Sir Walter Scott, who had been one of his best friends, with the hopeful proverb on his lips, “ Freits (omens) follow those that look to them.” He had accepted Lord Hobart’s proposal that he should take command of a Niger expedition. He sailed from Portsmouth on January 30, 1805; and the expedition started from Pisania on May 4th. Unfortunately the rainy season soon afterwards commenced; by the time Bammako was reached the party was reduced from forty- four Europeans to eleven, and from Sansanding the leader had to report “five only are at present alive, viz., three soldiers (one deranged in his mind), Lieutenant Martyn, and myself.” Among those who had died at Sansanding was his brother-in-law Mr Anderson. On November 19th he set sail down the river from Sansanding with the “ fixed resolution to discover the termination of the Niger or perish in the attempt.” Isaaco, the Mandingo guide who had accompanied the expedition up to this point, was afterwards sent on a mission to find out the fate of the voyagers ; it was learned that they had managed to make their way through countless perils to Bussa (Boussa) between 9° and 10° N. lat., and that they were there attacked by the natives, and were drowned in endeavouring to escape. Park was 6 feet in height, active and robust ; his countenance was prepossessing, his manner in company plain and simple, but somewhat cold and reserved.

See the Life (by Wishaw) prefixed to Journal of a Mission into the Interior of Africa in 1805, London, 1815; H. B., Life of

Mungo Park, Edinburgh, 1835; and an interesting passage in Lockhart’s Life of Sir Walter Scott, vol. ii.

PARKER, Joun Henry (1806-1884), architectural archzeologist, was the son of a London merchant, and was born in 1806. He was educated at Manor House School, Chiswick, and in 1821 entered business as a bookseller. Succeeding his uncle Joseph Parker as a bookseller at Oxford in 1832, he conducted the business with great success, the most important of the firm’s publications being perhaps the series of the “ Oxford Pocket Classics.” The

cares of business did not prevent him from devoting, in the earlier period of his life, much of his time to those architectural studies which latterly engaged his chief attention. In 1836 he brought out his Glossary of Architecture, which, published in the earlier years of the Gothic revival, had considerable influence in extending the movement, and supplied a valuable help to young architects. In 1848 he edited the fifth edition of Rickman's Gothic Architecture, and in 1849 he published a handbook based on his earlier volume, and entitled Introduction to the Study of Gothic Architecture. The completion of Hudson Turner's Domestic Architecture of the Middle Ages next engaged his attention, three volumes being published (1853-60). In 1858 he published Medieval Architecture of Chester. Parker was one of the chief advocates of the "restoration" of ecclesiastical buildings, and published in 1866 Architectural Antiquities of the City of Wells. Latterly he devoted much attention to explorations of the history of Rome by means of excavations, and succeeded in satisfying himself of the historical truth of much usually regarded as legendary. Two volumes of his Archeology

of Rome have been published, the one in 1873, and the other in 1875, while six additional parts have also appeared, and two others were in the press at his death. In recogni- tion of his labours he was decorated by the king of Italy, and received a medal from Pope Pius IX. In 1869 he endowed the keepership of the Ashmolean Museum with a sum yielding £250 a year, and under the new arrange- ment he was appointed the first keeper. In 1871 he wag nominated C.B. He died 31st January 1884.

PARKER, Marrygw (1504-1575), archbishop of Canterbury, the eldest surviving son of William Parker and Alice Monins, his wife, was born at Norwich 6th August 1504. His father was an artisan, a calenderer of woollen stuffs, but through his mother he could afterwards trace his descent from the earls of Nottingham. He was instructed in reading by Thomas Benis, rector of St Clement's, Norwich, and in the elements of Latin by one William Neve ; in the latter he found (a somewhat excep- tional experience in those days) a kind and sympathizing teacher. When Matthew was twelve years of age he lost his father; but his mother was, notwithstanding, able to

send him at the commencement of the Michaelmas term, 1521, to Cambridge, and to maintain him there until his merits secured some recognition. He was educated partly in St Mary's Hostel and partly in Corpus Christi College. In March 1523 he was elected to a bible-clerkship in the college, an office which involved reading the Bible aloud on prescribed occasions, and waiting at the fellows' table at dinner. In the March of the following year he was admitted B.A.; he was subsequently made a deacon and a priest, in 1527 was elected to a fellowship, and in 1528 commenced M.A.

His industry as a student and his general ability marked him out for early notice; and when, in 1521, Wolsey was founding Cardinal College (afterwards Christ Church), Oxford, Parker was one among a number of rising Cambridge students who were invited to become fellows of the new society. Fortunately, however, for himself and for Cambridge he elected to stay at Corpus. The university was at this time becoming a great centre of the Reformation movement, and he found himself attracted to the meetings held at the White Horse (an inn in the town), which the Catholic party derisively styled "Germany," from the fact that it was the known rendezvous of the supporters of Lutheran tenets. Among those with whom he was thus brought into contact was Bilney, the martyr; and when, in 1531, the latter was burned at Norwich, Parker attended him in his last hours, and afterwards bore testimony to his constancy. On Cranmer's election to the archbishopric of Canterbury, Parker received a licence to preach, and soon became known in Cambridge and its neighbourhood as a divine of considerable oratorical power. He was summoned to preach at court; and in 1535 the queen, Ann Boleyn, appointed him her chaplain. He shortly after received a further mark of her favour by being made dean of the college of St John the Baptist, at Stoke, near Clare, Suffolk—an institution for the training of the secular clergy. Here he gave the earliest indication of his skill as an administrator; and the new statutes which he drew up for the college were deemed so judicious that the duke of Norfolk, in 1540, adopted them asa model for the code which he gave to a similar foundation at Thetford. Parker's retired life at Stoke did not altogether secure him from attack on account of his courageously avowed sympathies with the Reformation, and in the year 1539 he was accused by the townsmen of Clare of manl- festing undue contempt for the Catholic ritual.

At Stoke Parker continued to reside more or less until the year 1545. His disposition throughout life was naturally retiring. In one of his letters to Cecil, written

Pak

about 1543, he confesses to a “ natural viciosity of over- much shamefacedness”; and this constitutional defect would seem, at this time, to have been aggravated by a state of health which made it necessary for him to obtain the permission of the university, when preaching in St Mary’s, Cambridge, to do so with his head covered. In the year 1538 he was created D.D. Although his in- different health and love of study alike inclined him to a retired life, his seclusion was frequently broken in upon by honours and preferment which came unsought. He was selected by Thomas Cromwell to preach at Paul’s Cross, on account of “his learning in holy letters and uncorrupt judgment in the same.” He was appointed one of the king’s chaplains, and in the year 1541 was made a canon of Ely. In 1542 his own college of Stoke presented him to an Essex living. About this time it began to be rumoured that the dissolution of Stoke College could not be averted, and the arguments for Parker’s return to his university, in whose welfare his interest had continued undiminished, were such as he could no longer resist. The mastership of Corpus having fallen vacant, he consented to be elected to the post, at that time scarcely of the annual value of £10 ; to this, however, the society shortly after added the rectory of Landbeach. In January 1545 he was elected to the vice-chancellorship of the university by a large majority. The colleges of both universities were at this period in continual fear of being, sooner or later, handed over, as the monasteries had been, to the greed of the despoiler. It was accordingly resolved, in order to anticipate a commission consisting of unscrupulous courticrs and lawyers, that the university should obtain the royal authority fora commission composed of those who were intimately acquainted with the real state of affairs, and, through the good offices of Catherine Parr, Parker, along with two other heads of colleges, was selected for the task. When their survey had been completed, they repaired to Hampton Court, and laid their statement before the king. Henry, on reading the report, expressed his emphatic admiration at the economical management of the colleges, and dismissed the commission with assurances which completely baffled the

expectations of the courtiers. The fate which was averted from Cambridge fell, however, upon Stoke College. Its estate was confiscated, but subject to a charge of £40 per annum as compensation. The purchaser was Sir John Cheke, Parker's personal friend, by whom the money was regularly paid to the former dean. Parker now entered upon the married state, and espoused a Norfolk lady named Margaret Harleston. His choice appears to have been singularly fortunate. His wife proved a true helpmate, and was distinguished for the graceful hospi- tality she extended to the poor clergy whom Parker was in the habit of inviting to the college lodge at Cambridge.

In the measures which marked the further progress of the Reformation during Edward's reign Parker seems to have cordially co-operated. But he had no sympathy with the bigotry which now began to characterize the contend- ing sects of Protestantism abroad; and when Martin Bucer was fain to quit Strasburg, after the failure of his efforts to mediate between the Lutherans and the Zwinglians, the master of Corpus extended to that eminent theologian a cordial welcome to England. During the short time that the latter filled the post of regius Professor of divinity at Cambridge, he found in Parker a firm friend, and it was by Parker that his funeral Sermon was preached. Parker's services to his party were not unrecognized. He was occasionally appointed to preach before the young king, and was promoted to the deanery of Lincoln and to the prebend of Corringham in that cathedral. On the occasion of Kett's rebellion in Norfolk, happening to be in Norwich, he visited the rebels'

camp and ventured to preach submission to the constituted authorities.

When Queen Mary ascended the throne, most of the college heads at Cambridge were deprived of office, and Parker only forestalled a like fate by resignation. The fact of his being a married man alone sufficed to entail the loss of all his ecclesiastical preferments. He did not, however, like many of the leaders of his party, fly from the country, but lived in strict retirement, his place of resid- ence being a secret which appears to have died with him. This feature in his career is deserving of note, as offering an important point of contrast to the experiences of those other eminent churchmen who, known as the Marian exiles, returned to England after a

long sojourn at the chief centres of the Reformed party on the Continent, strongly prejudiced in favour of Calvinistic doctrine, and bigotedly intolerant of everything approaching to the Roman discipline and ritual. Parker, like Whitgift, stayed in England, and was thus probably better able afterwards to maintain a fairly impartial position in relation to contend- ing religious parties. He himself speaks of these years of his life, passed as they were in solitude among his books and in meditation, but cheered by the possession of a clear conscience, as productive of far more solid enjoyment than he afterwards found in the varied duties and anxieties of the episcopal office.

A fall from horseback, when he was on one occasion compelled to flee by night from Mary's emissaries, resulted in a permanent injury (his language appears to imply a rupture) which still further disinclined him to active and laborious public duties; and upon Elizabeth's accession he evinced little readiness to avail himself of prospects of preferment held out by Sir Nicholas Bacon, the lord keeper. He believed himself to be summoned by duty to return to his former sphere of labour at Cambridge, at that time, like Oxford, in a singularly depressed and unsatis- factory condition. "Of all places in England," he writes to Bacon, "I would wish to bestow most of my time in the university, the state whereof is miserable at this present." His services were needed, however, for a wider sphere of action; and in December 1558 he was summoned by royal command to London, where it was intimated to him that he was to be appointed to the primacy. His clection to the office took place on the first of the following August, and his consecration on the 17th December, in the chapel at Lambeth Palace. He was consecrated by Bishop Barlow, formerly bishop of Bath and Wells, bishop- elect of Chichester; John Scory, formerly bishop of Chichester, bishop-elect of Hereford ; Miles Coverdale, late bishop of Exeter ; and John Hodgkin, suffragan bishop of Bedford. 'The delay which took place in his consecration arose from the fact that the three bishops named in the original warrant (Tonstal, Bourne, and Poole) refused to act, and a second warrant was consequently found necessary. In the following century the Romanist party sought, by circulating the " Nag's Head fable," to throw discredit on Parker's consecration by representing that he, together with certain other bishops, was simply ordained, and that too in an irreverent and uncanonical fashion, at a tavern in Fleet Street. The evidence which contravenes this

story (see Pocock's edition of Burnet's ITistory of the Reformation, vol. v.) 1s, however, singularly full and satisfactory. ;

During the fifteen years of his primacy, Parker's best energies were devoted to defining more accurately the discipline and belief of the newly constituted Church of England, and to bringing about a general conformity. The Thirty-Nine Articles were passed by convocation under his presidency in 1562. In the year 1566 he issued his celebrated "Advertisements," "for the due order in the

public administration of common prayers and using the holy sacraments, and for the apparel of all persons eccle- siastical." Notwithstanding that they related mainly to questions of detail and ceremonial, these new regulations excited strenuous opposition from the Puritan party, owing to the fact that, although they enjoined the discontinuance of " gorgeous vestments" and the cope, they prescribed the use of the surplice. It is asserted that they were promul- gated by the command of Elizabeth, who subsequently with- held her formal sanction, and permitted the obloquy they evoked to fall on Parker. It is certain that they added materially to the embarrassment of his position. The revised translation of the Scriptures known as the Bishops' Bible (1568 and 1572) owed its origin to Parker, and is regarded by English Churchmen as a valuable service to their communion, from the fact that it served to prevent the adoption of the Geneva Bible until superseded by the authorized version.

The determination which Parker showed to withstand, and if possible repress, the growing boldness of the Puritan party, involved him during the latter years of his primacy in a struggle which was detrimental to his health, his temper, and his reputation. In August 1570 his wife died, and the blow was severely felt. He was still able, however, to discharge with efficiency the duties of his office; and in 1573 he entertained Elizabeth with great splendour and sumptuousness in the grand hall of his palace at Canterbury. Among his last measures of reforn are to be noted his personal visitation of the church and chapter at Canterbury, and the drawing up ofa series of injunctions for their more efficient regulation, the issuing of a commission for the visitation of his diocese, and the publication of new constitutions for

the Court of Arches. In 1575 his health began rapidly to give way, and he died on the 17th May in that year, giving evidence almost to the last of that vigorous intellect and strong will by which

he was distinguished throughout life.

As an anthor, Parker cannot be held entitled to any high place. He compiled a Latin treatise, De Antiquitate Britannic Keelesizs et Privilegiis Ecclesie Cantuariensis, printed by John Day in 1572, which shows considerable research in connexion with the circum- stances under which Christianity was introduced into Britain. In this, however, as in most of his more learned works, he was probably largely assisted by his secretary, Josselin. His letters, which have been published under the title of the Parker Correspondence (Parker Socicty, 1853), are marked throughout by his usual natural good sense and sobriety of judgment, but are characterized neither by originality nor brilliancy of thought. His other writings are chiefly statutes for various ecclesiastical or collegiate foundations, sermons, forms of prayer, and ordinances for the church.

As an editor, while his industry must be admitted by all, he had but an imperfect sense of the responsibilities attaching to such a function and of the limits to be observed in its exercise. He edited Ailfric's Anglo-Saxon Homily, a treatise much valued by religious controversialists as exhibiting the theory of the early English Church in relation to the doctrine of transubstantiation. The treatise of Gildas, De Excidio Britanniz#, next appeared ; but this was mainly, if not entirely, the work of Josselin. The Flores Historiarum (probably the work of Roger of Wendover) was edited by Parker under the belief that it was the work of an unknown 'Matthew of Westminster." The other chronicles which he pub- lished were the Historia Major of Matthew Paris, the Historia Anglicana of Walsingham, the life of Alfred (Gesta Allfredi) of Asser, and the Ziinerarium of Giraldus Cambrensis. The extreme licence in which he indulged in altering the texts of these writers, and especially that of Matthew Paris, renders his cditions, how- ever, almost worthless, and has met with the severest censures from succeeding historical scholars.

But, notwithstanding these errors and defects, Parker's memory must ever be venerated by Englishmen and by scholars ; and his country, his

university, and his college were alike laid by him under no ordinary debt of gratitude. He revived the study of Saxon literature and of the origines of our national history; and the sertptortum which he maintained at Lambeth (after the fashion of the medizval monastcries) was a busy scene where the transcriber, the illuminator, the engraver, and the bookbinder each plicd his craft, to the no small after advantage of letters and of art. Among the printers whom he patronized were Richard J ugge, John Day,

and Richard Grafton. As a collector of books and manuscripts he was indefatigable ; and one of his numcrous agents, named Batman, is stated to have collected in four years no less than 6700 volunies, chiefly works which had been scattered on the dissolution of the monasteries. The greater part of this splendid collection, styled by Fuller ‘‘the sun of English antiquity,” Parker bequeathed to Corpus Christi College. His interest in his university at large did not diminish after his elevation to the archbishopric, and the Regent Walk (an improved approach to the public schools) and the university library were long-standing memorials of his munificence, He also founded a grammar school at Rochdale, and numerous scholarships and annual charities elsewhere. That he died rich cannot be denied ; and his enemies have asserted that he was far from scrupulous in the means which he employed in acquiring wealth, especially in ‘‘admitting children to cures.’’ On the other hand, it must be allowed that he made a good and generous use of his wealth, and his contemporary biographer claims for him the rare merit of combining strict economy with liberality. Parker had five children. Of these the eldest, John, who was knighted by King James in 1603, alone survived him; he died at Cambridge in 1620, in great want, the cost of his funeral being defrayed by Corpus Christi College.

The best source of information in all that relates to Parker is his Live and Acts, by Strype (8 vols., Oxford, 1824), a performance on which that distinguished antiquary bestowed even more than his usual amount of painstaking research. A copy of the folio edition (1711), preserved in the library of St John’s College, Cambridge, is enriched with numerous and valuable MS. notes by the donor, the eminent Thomas Baker, The titles of

the books which he presented to his own college will be found in Nasmith’‘s Cat. of the C_.C. MSS. (1777). (J. B. M.)

PARKER, TuzoporEe (1810-1860), a distinguished American rationalistic preacher and social reformer, born at Lexington, Massachusetts, August 24, 1810, was the youngest of eleven children. His father, John Parker, a small farmer and skilful mechanic, was a typical New England yeoman, a man of sterling moral worth, of strong intellect, meditative, and fond of reading,—a strict dis- ciplinarian in his house, a Unitarian in his theology before Unitarianism was known in New England as a system, and a Federalist in his politics when there were but four Federalists in Lexington. His mother, “an imaginative, delicate-minded, poetic, yet very practical woman,” took great pains with the religious education of her children, “caring, however, but little for doctrines,” and making religion to consist of love and good works. Theodore’s paternal grandfather, Captain John Parker, fired the first shot upon the British at the battle of Lexington, com- manding on that occasion a troop of seventy men. The historic musket from which that shot was fired became one of the most valued ornaments of the grandson’s study. His mother taught him to listen to the monitions of con- science as the voice of God, and from his infancy his life was dominated by moral and religious emotions and ideas of overpowering force. The boy was richly endowed intellectually and physically. His memory was marvel- lously retentive. The acquisition of languages was a delight and recreation to him. He obtained the elements of knowledge in the schools of the district, which were open during the winter months only. During the rest of the year he worked on his father’s farm. He wasall the time an immense and omnivorous reader, and his powerful memory enabled him to remember all that he read. At the age of seventeen he became himself a winter school- master, and in his twentieth year he entered himself at Harvard, working on the farm as usual while he followed his studies, and going over to Cambridge for the cxamina- tion only. For the theological course he took up in 1834 his residence in the college, meeting his expenses by a small sum amassed by school-keeping and by help from a poor students’ fund. He studied fourteen hours a day, not only following the usual course of the college, but plunging deep into German theology and Biblical criticism, and especially the history of non-Christian religions. At the close of his college career he began his translation of De Wette’s Introduction to the Old Testament. His journal and

letters show that he had made acquaintance with a large number of languages, including Hebrew, Chaldce, Syriac, Arabic, Coptic, Ethiopic, as well as the classical and the

principal modern European languages. When he entered the divinity school he was an orthodox Unitarian; when he left it, he entertained strong doubts about the infallibility of the Bible, the possibility of miracles, and the exclusive claims of Christianity and the church. Emerson's transcendentalism greatly influenced him, and Strauss's Leben Jesu left its mark upon his thought. His first ministerial charge was over a small village parish, Roxbury, a few miles from Boston. He was ordained June 1837, and held his pastorate there until the autumn of 1848. He was extremely happy in his position. His parishioners loved him, he had ample time to pursue his studies, and the neighbourhood of Boston gave him congenial society. His views were slowly assuming the form which subse- quently found such strong expression in his writings ; but the process was slow, and the cautious reserve of his first yationalistic utterances was in striking contrast with his subsequent rashness. But in 1841 he preached at Boston a sermon on "the transient and permanent in Christianity," which presented in embryo the main principles and ideas of his final theological position, and the preaching of which determined his subsequent relations to the churches with which he was connected and to the whole ecclesiastical world. The only permanent element he discovered in the Bible, in Christianity, in Christ, was " absolute, pure morality, absolute, pure religion, the love of man, the love of God acting without let or hindrance." He denied all special authority to the Bible, to Christ, to Christianity. He maintained that "' Jesus had not exhausted the fulness of God." The Boston Unitarian clergy denounced the preacher, and declared that the "young man must be silenced." No Unitarian publisher could be found for his sermon, and nearly all the pulpits of the city were closed against him. To exchange with him was fatal to a minister's reputation for Unitarian orthodoxy. But when the Unitarian clergy cast Parker off the laity took him up. A number of gentlemen in Boston invited him to give a series of lectures there. The result was that he delivered in the Masonic Hall, in the winter of 1841-42, as lectures, substantially the volume afterwards published as the Discourse

of Matters pertaining to Religion. The lectures in their published form made his name famous throughout America and Europe, and confirmed the stricter sect of the American Unitarians in their attitude towards him and his supporters. His friends, however, resolved that he should be heard in Boston. They engaged for him the Music Hall in that city, in which he regularly preached to a congregation of some three thousand persons during the remaining fourteen years of his life. Previous to his removal from Roxbury to Boston, Parker spent a year in Europe, calling in Germany upon Paulus, Gervinus, De Wette, and Ewald amongst other savants, and preaching in Liverpool in the pulpits of James Martineau and J. H. Thom. Soon after his return, in 1844, to America he resigned his charge at Roxbury, and devoted himself exclusively to his work in Boston. In addition to his Sunday labours, he lectured throughout the States, and prosecuted his wide studies, collecting particularly the materials for an opus magnum on the development of religion in mankind. Above all he took up the question of the emancipation of the slaves, and at the imminent risk of his life nobly and powerfully advocated in Boston and throughout the States, from the platform and through the press, the cause of the negroes. Indeed, he did more. He assisted actively in the escape of fugitive slaves, and helped to furnish John Brown with means for carrying out his schemes of liberation. His Sunday sermons were themselves often elaborate essays, almost treatises, on great questions of social and political reform, and he was all along contributing articles and papers on literary,

political, social, and theological subjects to the periodical press. By his voice, his pen, and his utterly fearless action in social and political matters, he became a great power in Boston and America generally. But his days were numbered. From his mother he inherited consump- tion, and the reckless disregard of the laws of health which he was guilty of in his early years, combined with the tremendous strain of his ordinary work, and the terrible privations and fatigues of his lecturing tours, developed in the prime of his life the fatal seeds. In January 1859 he had an attack of bleeding of the lungs, and sought relief by retreating first to Santa Cruz, and afterwards to Europe. He died at Rome, May 10, 1860.

The fundamental articles of Parker's religious faith were the three ''instinictive intuitions' of God, of a moral law, and of immortality. His owu mind, heart, and life were undoubtedly pervaded, sustained, and ruled by the feelings, convictions, and hopes which he formulated in these thzee articles. But he cannot be said to have achieved success when he came to strictly define, expound, and establish them. In his doctrine of God he maintains that man has an innate idea of God as a being of infinite power, goodness, and wisdom ; but he often uses language which borders on pantheism, while his criterion of the notions men have formed of the Divine Being appears to leave him no foundation for anything higher than an abstract pantheistic idea of Him. His proof of his fundamental creed is no less at fault than his statement and exposition of it. It is strange that a man who had read so widely aud honestly the best literature of his day on the religions ideas of mankind should have referred to the consensus gentiwm for his main proof of the universality of his triad of religious ideas. His own chapter on the immortality of the soul in his Discourse abundantly illustrates the weakness of his proof from induction. The dis- tinction he was compelled to draw between the conception and the idea of God illustrates the weakness of his deductive proof. Parker's definitions of religion are various, and show that he had never closely traced its true nature. Of revelation—the counterpart of religion— his notions were of the vaguest description. He could ask 'Is Newton less inspired than Simon Peter?" He had never formed any approximately just conception of the work of a great religious teacher, and could say, '' Christianity, if true at all, would be just as true if Herod or Catiline had taught it." Naturally, therefore, he never formed an adequate idea of the place of Christianity amongst the world's religions, though he often used language about Christ which in the case of a closer thinker would have indicated the acceptance of Christianity as the absolute and final religion for man. But in truth Parker was more of a speaker than a thinker, of a reformer than a philosopher. He had a wide and firm grasp of facts and principles, but his thought was neither profound nor subtle, neither accurate nor self-consistent. Although rich in poetic elements, he was singularly defective, too, in artistic faculty. He has produced nothing that is perfect in form, while all his works are disfigured by outrageous violations of taste and good fceling. But with all his numerous defects Parker ranks amongst America's great and noble sons, and may perhaps obtain finally a place amongst the world's great men. A

future biographer will have to assign him his final position. The three biographies which at present exist—Weiss's (1863), Frothingham's (1874), and Dean's (1877)—are the work of eager partisans and admiring panegyrists

rather than of calm critics and historians. _ am, Parker's principal works are A Discourse on Matters pertaining to Religion, 1842; Ten Sermons of Religion, 1852; Thetsm, Atheism, and the Popular Theology, 1853. A collected edition of his works has been published in England by Frances Power Cobbe, in 12 vols. A German translation of part of his works was made by Zicthen, Leipsic, 1854-57. Valuable reviews of his theological position and of his character and work have appeared—by James Martineau, in the Nattonal Review (April 1860), and J. H. Thom, in the Theological Review

(March 1864). : f (J. F. 8.) PARKERSBURG, a city of the United States, next to

Wheeling the largest city in West Virginia, is the capital of Wood county, and lies on the left bank of the Ohio, at the mouth of the Little Kanawha. It is the western terminus of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, and is connected by a fine railway bridge (14 miles in length, and constructed at a cost of more than $1,000,000 in 1869- 1871) with Belpré, where the Marietta and Cincinnati Railroad begins. Steamers ply both on the Ohio and the Little Kanawha (rendered navigable for 38 miles). The staple industry is the refining of petroleum, but there are also foundries, flour-mills, saw-mills, brickyards (most of the buildings are of brick), &c. The population was 2493 in 1860, 5546 in 1870, and 6582 in 1880. As a town Parkersburg dates from 1820, as a city from 1860.

PARLIAMENT

HE British Parliament is the supreme legislature of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, consisting of the King, or Queen, and the three estates of the realm, viz., the Lords Spiritual, the Lords Temporal, and the Commons.

HISToRY.

An inquiry into the early growth and later development of this powerful institution presents at once an interesting historical study and profound political instruction. Its great antiquity, its continuous but ever-changing life, and the social and political causes which have shaped its pre- sent constitution and authority are themes which can never fail to attract the historian and the statesman ; while speculations regarding its future course concern the destinies of the British empire.

The Anglo-Saxon Polity.—The origin of parliament is to be traced to Anglo-Saxon times. The Angles, Saxons,

_and other Teutonic races who conquered Britain brought

‘to their new homes their own laws and customs, their settled framework of society, their kinship, their village communities, and a certain rude representation in local affairs. And we find in the Anglo-Saxon polity, as deve- loped during their rule in England, all the constituent parts of parliament. In their own lands they had chiefs and leaders, but no kings. But conquest and territorial settlement were followed by the assumption of royal dignities ; and the victorious chiefs were accepted by their followers as kings. They were quick to assume the tradi- tional attributes of royalty. A direct descent from their god Woden, and hereditary right, at once clothed them with a halo of glory and with supreme power ; and, when the pagan deity was deposed, the king received consecration from a Christian archbishop, and was invested with sacred attributes as “the Lord’s anointed.” But the Saxon monarch was a patriarchal king of limited authority, who acted in concert with his people; and, though his succes- sion was hereditary, in his own family, his direct descendant was liable to be passed over in favour of a worthier heir. Such a ruler was a fitting precursor of a line of constitu- tional kings, who in later times were to govern with the advice and consent of a free parliament.

Meanwhile, any council approaching the constitution of a House of Lords was of slow growth. Anglo-Saxon society, indeed, was not without an aristocracy. The highest in rank were ethelings—generally, if not exclu- sively, sons and brothers of the king. The ealdorman, originally a high

officer, having the executive government of a shire, and a seat in the king's witan, became heredi- tary in certain families, and eventually attained the dignity of an earl, But centuries were to pass before the English nobility was to assume its modern character and denomi- nations. At the head of each village was an eorl, the chief of the freemen, or ceorls—their leader in war and patron in peace. The king's gesiths and thegns formed another privileged class. Admitted to offices in the king's household and councils, and enriched by grants of land, they gradually formed a feudal nobility.

The revival of the Christian church, under the Anglo- Saxon rule, created another order of rulers and councillors, destined to take a leading part in the government of the state. The archbishops and bishops, having spiritual authority in their own dioceses, and exercising much local

{influence in temporal affairs, were also members of the \national council, or witenagemdét, and by their greater

learning and capacity were not long in acquiring a leading part in the councils of the realm. Ecclesiastical councils were also held, comprising bishops, abbots, and clergy, in which we observe the origin of convocation. The abbots, thus associated with the bishops, also found a place with them in the witenagemét. By these several orders, sum- moned to advise the king in affairs of state, was formed a council of magnates—to be developed, in course of time, into an Upper Chamber, or House of Lords. |

The rise of the commons, as a political power in the national councils, was of yet slower development; but in the Anglo-Saxon moots may be discerned the first germs of popular government in England. In the town-moot the assembled freemen and cultivators of the “ folk-lands” regulated the civil affairs of their own township, tithing, village, or parish. In the burgh-moot the inhabitants administered their municipal business, under the presidency ofareeve. The hundred-moot assumed a more representa- tive character, comprising the reeve and a selected number of freemen from the several townships and burghs within the hundred. The shire-moot, or shire-gemédt, was an assembly yet more important. An ealdorman was its pre- sident, and exercised a jurisdiction over a shire, or district comprising several hundreds. Attended by a reeve and four freemen from every hundred, it assumed a distinctly representative character. Its members, if not elected by the popular voice, were, in some fashion, deputed to act on behalf of those whose interests they had come to guard. The shire-moot was also the general folk-moot of the tribe, assembled in arms, to whom their leaders referred the decision of questions of peace and war.

Superior to these local institutions was the witena- gemdt, or assembly of wise men, with whom the king took counsel in legislation and the government of the state, This national council was the true beginning of the parliament of England. Such a council was originally held in each of the kingdoms commonly known as the Heptarchy ; and after their union in a single realm, under King Edgar, the witenagemét became the deliberative and legislative assembly, or parliament, of the extended estate.

The witenagemdét made laws, imposed taxes, concluded treaties, advised the king as to the disposal of public lands and the appointment and removal of officers of state, and even assumed to elect and depose the king himself.

The king had now attained to greater power, and more royal dignities and prerogatives. He was unquestionably the chief power in the witenagemét; but the laws were already promulgated, as in later times, as having been agreed to with the advice and consent of the witan. The witan also exercised jurisdiction as a supreme court. These ancient customs present further examples of the continuity of English constitutional forms.

The constitution of the witenagemdét, however, was necessarily less popular than that of the local moots in the hundred or the shire. The king himself was generally present; and at his summons came prelates, abbots, ealdormen, the king's gesiths and thegns, officers of state and of the royal household, and leading tenants in chief of lands held from the crown. Crowds sometimes attended the meetings of the witan, and shouted their acclamations of approval or dissent ; and, so far, the popular voice was associated with its deliberations ; but it was at a distance from all but the inhabitants of the place in which it was assembled, and until a system of representation had slowly grown up there could be no further admission of the

people to its deliberations. In the town-moot the whole body of freemen and cultivators of the folk-lands met freely under a spreading oak, or on the village green ; in the hundred-moot, or shire-gemot, deputies from neighbour- ing communities could readily find a place; but all was changed in the wider council of a kingdom. When there were many kingdoms, distance obstructed any general gathering of the commons; and in the wider area of England such a gathering became impossible. Centuries were yet to pass before this obstacle was to be overcome by representation ; but, in the meantime, the local institu- tions of the Anglo-Saxons were not without their influence upon the central council. The self-government of a free people informed the bishops, ealdormen, ceorls, and thegns who dwelt among them of their interests and needs, their sufferings and their wrongs; and, while the popular forces were increasing with an advancing society, they grew more potential in the councils of their rulers. Some writers, naturally sympathizing with every tradition of English liberty, have discovered proofs of an earlier representation ; but popular franchises are

now too firmly established to need support from doubtful traces of anti- quity.

Another circumstance must not be overlooked in esti- mating the political influence of the people in Anglo-Saxon times. For five centuries the country was convulsed with incessant wars—wars with the Britons, whom the invaders were driving from their homes, wars between the several kingdoms, wars with the Welsh, wars with the Picts, wars with the Danes. How could the people continue to assert their civil rights amid the clash of arms and a frequent change of masters? The warrior-kings and their armed followers were rulers in the land which they had con- quered.

At the same time the unsettled condition of the country repressed the social advancement of its people. Agricul- ture could not prosper when the farm of the husbandman too often became a battlefield. Trade could not be extended without security to property and industry. Under such conditions the great body of the people con- tinued as peasants, handicraftsmen, and slaves. The time had not yet come when they could make their voice heard in the councils of the state.

The Norman Conquest.—The Anglo-Saxon polity was suddenly overthrown by the Norman Conquest. A stern foreign king had seized the crown, and was prepared to rule his conquered realm by the sword. He brought with him the absolutist principles of Continental rulers, and the advanced feudal system of France and Normandy. Feudalism had been slowly gaining ground under the Saxon kings, and now it was firmly established as a military organization. William the Conqueror at once rewarded his warlike barons and followers with enormous grants of land. The Saxon landowners and peasants were despoiled, and the invaders settled in their homesteads. The king claimed the broad lands of. England as his own, by right of conquest ; and when he allowed his warriors to share the spoil he attached the strict condition of military service in return for every grant of land. An effective army of occupation of all ranks was thus quartered upon every province throughout the realm. England was held by the sword ; a foreign king, foreign nobles, and a foreign soldiery were in possession of the soil, and swore fealty to their master, from whom they held it. Saxon bishops were deposed, and foreign prelates appointed to tule

over the English Church. Instead of calling a national witenagemét, the king took counsel with the ollicers of his state and household, the bishops, abbots, earls, barons, and knights by whom he was pleased to surround himself. Some of the forms of a national council

were indeed maintained, and its counsel and consent were proclaimed in the making of laws; but, in truth, the king was absolute.

Such a revolution seemed fatal to the liberties and ancient customs of Saxon England. What power could withstand the harsh conqueror? But the indestructible elements of English society prevailed over the sword. The king grasped, in his own hands, the higher administration and judicature of the realm; but he continued the old local courts of the hundred and the shire, which had been the basis of Saxon freedom. The Norman polity was otherwise destined to favour the liberties of the people, through agencies which had been designed to crush them. The powerful nobles, whom William and his successors exalted, became formidable rivals of the crown itself ; while ambitious barons were in their turn held in check by a jealous and exacting church. The ruling powers, if combined, would have reduced the people to slavery ; but their divisions proved a continual source of weakness. In the meantime the strong rule of the Normans, bitter as it was to Englishmen, repressed intestine wars and the disorders of a divided realm. Civil justice was fairly administered. When the spoils of the conquerors had been secured, the rights of property were protected, industry and trade were left free, and the occupation of the soil by foreigners drove numbers of landowners and freemen into the towns, where they prospered as merchants, traders, and artificers, and collected thriving populations of towns- men. Meanwhile, foreign rulers having brought England into closer relations with the Continent, its commerce was extended to distant lands, ports and shipping were encouraged, and English traders were at once enriched and enlightened. Hence new classes of society were growing, who were eventually to become the commons of England.

The Crown, the Barons, the Church, and the People.— While these social changes were steadily advancing, the barons were already preparing the way for the assertion of popular rights. Ambitious, turbulent, and grasping,

they were constantly at issue with the crown. Enjoying vast estates and great commands, and sharing with the prelates the government of the state, as members of the king's council, they were ever ready to raise the standard of revolt. The king could always count upon barons faith- ful to his cause, but he also appealed for aid to the church and the people. The baronage was thus broken by insur- rections, and decimated by civil wars, while the value of popular alliances was revealed. The power of the people was ever increasing, while their oppressors were being struck down. The population of the country was still Saxon; they had been subdued, but had not been driven forth from the land, like the Britons in former invasions. The English language was still the common speech of the people; and Norman blood was being mingled with the broader stream of Saxon life. A continuous nationality was thus preserved, and was outgrowing the foreign element. ;

The crown was weakened by disputed successions and foreign wars, and the baronage by the blood-stained fields of civil warfare; while both in turn looked to the people in their troubles. Meanwhile the church was struggling, alike against the crown and the barons, in defence of its ecclesiastical privileges and temporal possessions. _lts clergy were brought by their spiritual ministrations into close relations with the people, and their culture contri- buted to the intellectual growth of English society. When William Rufus was threatened by his armed barons, he took counsel with Archbishop Lanfranc, and promised good laws and justice to the people. His promises were broken; but, like later charters, as lightly set aside, they

O04

were a recognition of the political rights of the people. By the charter of Henry I. restoring to the people the laws of Edward the Confessor, the continuity of English institutions was acknowledged ; and this concession was also proclaimed through Archbishop Anselm, the church and the people being again associated with the crown against the barons. And throughout his reign the clergy and the English people were cordially united in support of the crown. In the anarchic reign of Steplien—also dis- tinguished by its futile charters—the clergy were driven into opposition to the king, while his oppressions alienated the people. Henry IL. commenced his reign with another charter, which may be taken as a profession of good

intentions on the part of the new king. So strong-willed a king, who could cripple his too powerful nobles, and forge shackles for the church, was not predisposed to extend the liberties of his people; but they supported him loyally in his critical struggles; and his vigorous reforms in the administrative, judicial, and financial organization of his realm promoted the prosperity and political influence of the commons. At the same time the barons created in this and the two previous reigns, being no longer exclu- sively Norman in blood and connexion, associated them- selves more readily with the interests and sympathies of the people. Under Richard I. the principle of repre- sentation was somewhat advanced, but it was confined to the assessment and collection of taxes in the different shires.

The Great Charter.—It was under King John that the greatest progress was made in national liberties. ‘he loss of Normandy served to draw the baronage closer to the English people ; and the king soon united all the forces of the realm against him. He outraged the church, the barons, and the people. He could no longer play one class against another; and they combined to extort the Great Charter of their liberties at Runnymede. It was there ordained that no scutage or aid, except the three regular feudal aids, should be imposed, save by the common council of the’realm, To this council the archbishops, bishops, abbots, earls, and greater barons were to be summoned per- sonally by the king’s letters, and tenants in chief by a gene- ral writ through the sheriff. The summons was required to appoint a certain place, to give forty days’ notice at least, and to state the cause of meeting. At length we seem to reach some approach to modern usage.

Growth of the Commons.—The improved administration of successive kings had tended to enlarge the powers of the crown. But one hundred and fifty years had now passed since the Conquest, and great advances had been made in the condition of the people, and more particularly in the population, wealth, and self-government of towns. Many had obtained royal charters, elected their own magistrates, and enjoyed various commercial privileges. They were already a power in the state, which was soon to be more distinctly recognized.

The charter of King John was again promulgated under Henry IIT., for the sake of a subsidy ; and henceforth the commons learned to insist upon the

redress of grievances in return fora grant of money. This reign was memorable in the history of parliament. Again the king was in con- flict with his barons, who rebelled against his gross mis- government of the realm. Simon de Montfort, earl of Leicester, was a patriot, in advance of his age, and fought for the English people as well as for his own order. The barons, indeed, were doubtful allies of the popular cause, and leaned to the king rather than to Simon. But the towns, the clergy, the universities, and large bodies of the commonalty rallied round him, and he overthrew the king and his followers at Lewes. He was now master of the realm, and proclaimed a new constitution. Kings had

made promises, and granted illusory charters; but the rebel earl called an English parliament into being. Chureh- men were on his side, and a few barons; but his main reliance was upon the commons. He summoned to a national council, or parliament, bishops, abbots, earls, and barons, together with two knights from every shire and two} burgesses from every borough. Knights had been sum, | moned to former councils ; but never until now had repre. | sentatives from the towns been invited to sit with bishops, barons, and knights of the shire.

In the reign of Edward I. parliament assumed substan- tially its present form of king, lords, and commons. The irregular and unauthorized scheme of Simon de Montfort was fully adopted in 1295, when the king himself sum- moned to a parliament two knights from every shire, elected by the freeholders at the shire court, and two bur- gesses from every city, borough, and leading town. The rebel earl had enlarged the basis of the national council ; and, to secure popular support, the politic king accepted it as a convenient instrument of taxation. The knights and freeholders had increased in numbers and wealth ; and the towns, continually advancing in population, trade, and com- merce, had become valuable contributors to the revenue of the state. The grant of subsidies to the crown, by the assembled baronage and representatives of the shires and towns, was a legal and comprehensive impost upon the entire realm.

Secession of the Clergy.—It formed part of Edward’s policy to embrace the clergy in his scheme for the repre- sentation of all orders and classes of his

subjects. They were summoned to attend the parliament of 1295 and succeeding parliaments of his reign, and their form of summons has been continued until the present time; but the clergy resolutely held aloof from the national council, and insisted upon voting their subsidies in their own con- vocations of Canterbury and York. The bishops retained their high place among the earls and barons, but the

clergy sacrificed to ecclesiastical jealousies the privilege of —

sharing in the political councils of the state. As yet, indeed, this privilege seemed little more than the voting of subsidies, but it was soon to embrace the redress of grievances and the framing of laws for the general welfare of the realm. This great power they forfeited ; and who shall say how it might have been wielded,-in the interests of the church, and in the legislation of their country? They could not have withstood the Reformation; they would have been forced to yield to the power of the crown and the heated resolution of the laity; but they might have saved a large share of the endowments of the chureh, and perhaps have modified the doctrines and formularies of the reformed establishment.

Reluctance of the Commons to Attend.—Meanwhile the commons, unconscious of their future power, took their humble place in the great council of the realm. The knights of the shire, as lesser barons, or landowners of good social standing, could sit beside the magnates of the land without constraint; but modest traders from the towns were overawed by the power and dignity of their new associates. They knew that they were summoned for no other purpose than the taxing of themselves and their fellow townsmen; their attendance was irksome ; it inter- rupted their own business; and their journeys exposed them to many hardships and dangers. It is not surprising that they should have shrunk from the exercise of so doubt- ful a privilege. Considerable numbers absented them- selves from a thankless service ; and their constituents, far from exacting the attendance of their members, as 1 modern times, begrudged the sorry stipend of 2s. a day, paid to their representatives while on duty, and strove to evade the burden imposed upon them by the crown. Some

even purchased charters, withdrawing franchises which they had not yet learned to value. Nor, in truth, did the representation of towns at this period

afford much protec- tion to the rights and interests of the people. Towns were enfranchised at the will or caprice of the crown and the sheriffs ; they could be excluded at pleasure ; and the least show of independence would be followed by the omission of another writ of summons, But the principle of repre- sentation, once established, was to be developed with the expansion of society; and the despised burgesses of Edward I., not having seceded, like the clergy, were destined to become a potential class in the parliaments of England.

Sitting of Parliament at Westminster.—Another consti- tutional change during this reign was the summoning of parliament to Westminster instead of to various towns in different parts of the country. This custom invested parliament with the character of a settled institution, and constituted it a high court for the hearing of petitions and the redress of grievances. The growth of its judica- ture, as a court of appeal, was also favoured by the fixity of its place of meeting.

Authority of Parliament recognized by Law.—Great was the power of the crown, and the king himself was bold and statesmanlike ; but the union of classes against him proved too strong for prerogative. In 1297, having outraged the church, the barons, and the commons by illegal exactions, he was forced to confirm the Great Charter and the Charter of Forests, with further securities against the taxation of the people without their consent, and, in return, obtained timely subsidies from the parliament.

Henceforth the financial necessities of a succession of Kings ensured the frequent assembling of parliaments. Nor were they long contented with the humble function of voting subsidies, but boldly insisted on the redress of grievances and further securities for national liberties. Tn 1322 it was declared by statute 15th Edward II. that “the matters to be established for the estate of the king and of his heirs, and for the estate of the realm and of the people, should be treated, accorded, and established in parliament, by the king, and by the assent of the prelates, earls, and barons, and the commonalty of the realm, according as had been before accustomed.” The constitutional powers of parliament as a legislature were here amply recognized,—not by royal charter, or by the occasional exercise of prerogative, but by an authori- tative statute, And these powers were soon

to be exercised in a striking form. Already parliament' had established the principle that the redress of grievances Should have precedence of the grant of subsidies; it had maintained the right of approving councillors of the crown, and punishing them for the abuse of their powers; and in 1327 the king himself was finally deposed, and the succession of his son, Edward III., declared by parliament.

Union of Knights of the Shire and Burgesses.—At this period the constitution of parliament was also settling down to its later and permanent shape. Hitherto the different orders or estates had deliberated separately, and agreed upon their several grants to the crown, The knights of the shire were naturally drawn, by social ties and class interests, into alliance with the barons; but at length they joined the citizens and burgesses, and in the fitst parliament of Edward ITI. they are found sitting together as " the Commons."

This may be taken as the turning point in the political history of England. If all the landowners of the country had become united as an order of nobles, they might have proved too strong for the development of national liberties, While the union of the country gentlemen with the

burgesses formed an estate of the realm, which was destined to prevail over all other powers. The withdrawal of the clergy, who would probably have been led by the bishops to take part with themselves and the barons, further strengthened the united commons.

Increasing Influence of Parliament.—The reign of Edward ITI. witnessed further advances in the authority of parliament, and changes in its constitution. The king, being in continual need of subsidies, was forced to sum- mon parliament every year, and in order to encourage its liberality he frequently sought its advice upon 'the most important issues of peace or war, and readily entertained the petitions of the commons praying for the redress of grievances. During this reign also, the advice and con- sent of the

commons, as well as of the lords spiritual and temporal, was regularly recorded in the enacting part of every statute.

Separation of the Two Houses. —But a more important event is to be assigned to this reign,—the formal separa- tion of parliament into the two Houses of Lords and Com- mons. There is no evidence—nor is it probable —that the different estates ever voted together as a single assembly. It appears from the Rolls of Parliament that in the early part of this reign, the causes of summons having been declared to the assembled estates, the three estates deliberated separately, but afterwards delivered a collective answer to the king. While their deliberations were short, they could be conducted apart, in the same chamber ; but, in course of time, it was found convenient for the commons to have a chamber of their own, and they adjourned their sittings to the chapter-house of the abbot of Westminster, where they continued to be held after the more formal and permanent separation had taken place. The date of this event is not clearly established, but is generally assigned to the 17th Edward ITI.

The Commons as Petitioners,—Parliament had now assumed its present outward form, But it was far from enjoying the authority which it acquired in later times. The crown was still paramount ; the small body of earls and barons—not exceeding forty—-were connected with the royal family, or in the service of the king, or under his influence ; the prelates, once distinguished by their inde- pendence, were now seekers of royal favour; and the commons, though often able to extort concessions In return for their contributions to the royal exchequer, as yet held an inferior position among the estates of the realm. Instead of enjoying an equal share in the fram- ing of laws, they appeared before the king in the humble guise of petitioners. Their petitions, together with the king’s answers, were recorded in the Rolls of Parliament ; but it was not until the parliament had been discharged from attendance that statutes were framed by the judges, and entered on the statute rolls. Under such conditions legislation was, in truth, the prerogative of the crown rather than of parliament. Enactments were often found in the statutes at variance with the petitions and royal answers, and neither prayed for by the commons nor assented to by the lords. In vain the commons pro- tested against so grave an abuse of royal authority ; but the same practice was continued during this and succeed- ing reigns. Henry V., in the second

year of his reign, promised “ that nothing should be enacted to the petitions of the commons, contrary to their asking, whereby they should be bound without their assent”; but, so long as the old method of framing laws was adhered to, there could be no security against abuse ; and it was not until

the reign of Henry VI. that the introduction of the more |

regular system of legislating by bill and statute ensured the thorough agreement of all the estates in the several provisions of every statute.

XVIIL — 39

[Mare

=

306 rPAakeaLiadginge

Increasing Boldness of the Commons.—The commons, however, notwithstanding these and other discouragements, were constantly growing bolder in the assertion of their rights. They now ventured to brave the displeasure of the king, without seeking to shelter themselves behind powerful barons, upon whose forwardness in the national cause they could not reckon. Notably in 1376 their stout Speaker, Peter de la ¥err, inveighed, in their name, against the gross mismanagement of the war, impeached ministers of the realm, coniplained of the heavy burdens under which the people suffered, and even demanded that a true account should be rendered of the public expendi- ture. The brave Speaker was cast into prison, and a new parliament was summoned which speedily reversed the resolutions of the last. But the death of the king changed the aspect of affairs. Another parliament was called, when it was found that the spirit of the commons was not subdued. Peter de la Wass was released from prison, and again elected to the chair. The demands of the former parliament were reiterated with greater boldness and persistence, the evil councillors of the late reign were driven out, and it was conceded that the principal officers of state should be appointed and removed, during the minority of Richard IJ., upon the advice of the lords. The commons also insisted upon the annual assembling of parliament under the stringent provisions of a binding law.

They claimed the right, not only of voting subsidies, but of appropriating them, and of examining public accounts. They inquired into public abuses, and im- peached ministers of the crown. Even the king himself was deposed by the parliament. Thus during this reign all the great powers of parliament were asserted and exercised. The foreign wars of Henry IV. and Henry V., by continuing the financial necessities of the crown, main- tained for a while the powers which parliament had acquired by the struggles of centuries.

Relapse of Parliamentary Influence.—But a period of civil wars and disputed successions was now at hand, which checked the further development of parliamentary liberties. The effective power of a political institution is determined, not by assertions of authority, nor even by its legal recognition, but by the external forces by which it is supported, controlled, or overborne. With the close of the Wars of the Roses the life of parliament seems to have well-nigh expired.

To this constitutional relapse various causes contributed at the same period. The crown had recovered its absolute supremacy. ‘The powerful baronage had been decimated on the battlefield and the scaffold; and vast estates had been confiscated to the crown. Kings had no longer any dread of their prowess as defenders of their own order or party, or as leaders of the people. The royal treasury had been enriched by their ruin; while the close of a long succession of wars with France and Scotland relieved it of that continual drain which had reduced the crown to an unwelcome dependence upon parliament. Not only were the fortunes of the baronage laid low, but feudalism was also dying out in England ason the Continent. It was no longer a force which could control the crown; and it was being further weakened by changes in the art of war. The mailed horseman, the battle-axe and cross-bow of burgher and yeoman, could not cope with the cannon and arquebus of the royal army.

In earlier times the church had often stood forth against the domination of kings, but now it was in passive sub- ussion to the throne. The prelates were attracted to the court, and sought the highest offices of state; the inferior clergy had long been losing their influence over the laity by their ignorance

and want of moral elevation, at a period of increasing enlightenment ; while the church at large was

weakened by schisms and a wider freedom of thought, Hence the church, like the baronage, had ceased to bea check upon the crown.

Meanwhile what had become of the ever-growing power of the commons? It is true they had lost their stalwart leaders, the armed barons and outspoken prelates, but they had themselves advanced in numbers, riches, and enlightenment ; they had overspread the land as knights and freeholders, or dwelt in populous towns enriched by merchandise. Why could they not find leaders of their own? Because they had lost the liberal franchises of an earlier age, All freeholders, or suitors present: at the county court, were formerly entitled to vote for a knight of the shire; but in the eighth year of Henry VI. (1430) an Act was passed (c. 37) by which this right was confined to 40s. freeholders, resident in the county. Large numbers of electors were thus disfranchised. In the view of parliament they were “of no value,” and complaints had been made that they were under the influence of the nobles and greater landowners; but a popular element had been withdrawn from the county representation, and the restricted franchise cannot have inmipaired the influence of the nobles.

As for the cities and boroughs, they had virtually renounced their electoral privileges. As we have seen, they had never valued them very highly; and now by royal charters, or by the usurpation of small self-elected bodies of burgesses, the choice of members had fallen into the hands of town councils and neighbouring landowners. The anomalous system of close and nomination boroughs, which had arisen thus early in our history, was suffered to continue without a check for four centuries, as a notorious blot upon our free constitution.

All these changes exalted the prerogatives of the crown. Amid the clash of arms and the strife of hostile parties, the voice of parliament had been stifled ; and, when peace was restored, a powerful king could dispense with an assembly which might prove troublesome, and from whom he rarely needed help. from the reign of Henry VI. to that of Elizabeth, the free parliaments of England were in abeyance. The institution retained its form

and constituent parts; its rights and privileges were theoretically recognized, but its freedom and national character were little more than shadows.

The Three Estates of the Realm.—This check in the fortunes of parliament affords a fitting occasion for examining the composition of each of the three estates of the realm.

Lords Spiritual and Temporal.—The archbishops and bishops had held an eminent position in the councils of Saxon and Norman kings, and many priors and abbots were from time to time associated with them as lords spiritual, until the suppression of the monasteries by Henry VIII. They generally outnumbered their brethren, the temporal peers, who sat with them in the same assembly.

The lords temporal comprised several dignities. Of these the baron, though now the lowest in rank, was the most ancient. The title was familiar in Saxon times, but it was not until after the Norman Conquest that it was invested witha distinct feudal dignity. Next in antiquity was the earl, whose official title was known to Danes and Saxons, and who after the Conquest obtained a dignity equivalent to that of count in foreign states. The highest dignity, that of duke, was not created until Edward I. conferred it upon his son, Edward the Black Prince. The rank of marquis was first created by Richard II., with precedence aftera duke. It was in the reign of Henry VL. that the rank of viscount was created, to be placed

Hence for a period of two hundred years, ‘

between the earl and the baron. Since that time no new dignity has been invented, and the peerage consists of the five dignities of duke, marquis, earl, viscount, and baron. During the 15th century the number of temporal peers summoned to parliament rarely exceeded fifty, and no more than twenty-nine received writs of summons to the first parliament of Henry VII. There were only fifty-nine at the death of Queen Elizabeth. At the accession of William III. this number had been increased to about one hundred and fifty.

Infe Peerages.—The several orders of the peerage are alike distinguished by the hereditary character of their dignities. Some life peerages, indeed, were created between the reigns of Richard II. and Henry VI., and several ladies had received life peerages between the reigns of Charles II. and George II. The highest authorities had also held that the creation of life peerages was within the prerogative of the crown. But four hundred years had elapsed since the creation of a life peer, entitled to sit in parliament, when Queen Victoria was advised to create Sir James Parke, lately an eminent judge, a baron for life, under the title of Lord Wensleydale. The object of this deviation from the accustomed practice was to strengthen the judicature of the House of Lords, without unduly enlarging the numbers of the peerage. But the lords at once took exception to this act of the crown, and, holding that a prerogative so long disused could not be revived, in derogation of the hereditary character of the peerage, resolved that Lord Wensleydale was not entitled by his letters patent, and writ of summons, to sit and vote in parliament. His lordship accordingly received a new patent, and took his seat as an hereditary peer. But the necessity of some such expedient for improving the appellate jurisdiction of the House of . Lords could not be contested ; and in 1876 three lords of appeal in ordinary were constituted by statute, enjoying the rank of baron for life, and the right of sitting and voting in the House of Lords so long as they continue in office,

__ Lhe Commons.—The commons formeda more numerous

body. Inthe reign of Edward I. there were about 275 members, in that of Edward III. 250, and in that of Henry VI. 300. In the reign of Henry VIII. parliament added 27 members for Wales and 4 for the county and city of Chester, and in the reign of Charles IL. 4 for the county and city of Durham. Between the reigns of Henry VIII. and Charles II, 130 members were also added by royal charter.

Parliament under Henry VIII.—To resume the history of parliament ata later period, let us glance at the reign of Henry VIII. Never had the power of the crown been greater than when this king succeeded to the throne, and never had a more imperious will been displayed by any king of England. Parliament was at his feet to do his bidding, and the Reformation enormously increased his power. He had become a pope to the bishops ; the

old nobles who had resisted his will had perished in the field or on the scaffold ; the new nobles were his creatures ; and he had the vast wealth of the church in his hands as largesses to his adherents. Such was the dependence of parliament upon the crown and its advisers during the Reformation period that in less than thirty years four vital changes were decreed in the national faith. Each of the successive reigns inaugurated a new religion.

Queen Elizabeth and her Parliaments.—With the reign of Elizabeth commenced a new era in the life of parliament. She had received the royal prerogatives unimpaired, and her hand was strong enough to wield them. But in the long Interval since Edward IV, the entire framework of

nglish society had been changed ; it was a new England

that the queen was called upon to govern. The coarse barons of feudal times had been succeeded by English country gentlemen, beyond the influence of the court, and identified with all the interests and sympathies of their country neighbours. From this class were chosen nearly all the knights of the shire, and a considerable proportion of the members for cities and boroughs. They were generally distinguished by a manly independence, and were prepared to uphold the rights and privileges of parliament and the interests of their constituents. A change no less remark- able had occurred in other classes of society. The country was peopled with yeomen and farmers, far superior to the cultivators of the soil in feudal times; and the towns and seaports had grown into important centres of commerce and manufactures. Advances not less striking had been made in the enlightenment and culture of society. But, above all, recent religious revolutions had awakened a spirit of thought and inquiry, by no means confined to questions of faith. The Puritans, hostile to the church,

—

>

“~

and jealous of every semblance of Catholic revival, were ‘

embittered against the state, which was identified, in their eyes, with many ecclesiastical enormities ; and their stub- born temper was destined to become a strong motive force in restoring the authority of parliament.

The parliaments of Elizabeth, though rarely summoned, displayed an unaccustomed spirit. They discussed the succession to the crown, the marriage of the queen, and ecclesiastical abuses; they upheld the privileges of the commons, and their right to advise the crown upon all matters of state ; and they condemned the grant of mono- polies. The bold words of the Wentworths and Yelvertons were such as had not been heard before in parliament. The conflicts between Elizabeth and the commons marked the revival of the independence of parliament, and fore- shadowed graver troubles at no distant period.

Conflicts of James I. with the Commons.—James I., with

~

short-sighted pedantry, provoked a succession of conflicts ©

with the commons, in which abuses of prerogative were stoutly resisted and the rights and privileges of parliament resolutely asserted. The “remonstrance” of 1610 and the “ protestation” of 1621 would have taught a politic ruler that the commons could no longer be trifled with ; but those lessons were lost upon James and upon his ill- fated son.

Charles I. and the Commonwealth—The momentous struggles between Charles I. and his parliaments cannot be followed in this place. The earlier parliaments of this reign fairly represented the earnest and temperate judgment of the country. They were determined to obtain the redress of grievances, and to restrain undue prerogatives , but there was no taint of disloyalty to the crown ; there were no dreams of revolution. But the contest at length became embittered, until there was no issue but the arbitra- ment of the sword. Thecivil war and the commonwealth, however memorable in the history of England, are beyond the range of this narrative. supreme power of the commons, when supported by popular forces. Everything gave

way before them. They raised victorious armies in the field, they overthrew the church and the House of Lords, and they brought the king himself to the scaffold. It also displayed the

impotence of a parliament which has lost the confidence .

of the country, or is overborne by mobs, by an army, or by the strong will of a dictator. – Political Agitation of this Period.—It is to this time of fierce political passions that we trace the origin of political agitation, as an organized method of influencing the deliberations of parliament. The whole country was then aroused by passionate exhortations from the pulpit and in the press. No less than thirty thousand political

But this period proved the |

tracts and newspapers during this period have been pre- served. Petitions to parliament were multiplied in order to strengthen the hands of the popular leaders. Clamorous meetings were held to stimulate or overawe parliament. Such methods, restrained after the Restoration, have been revived in later times, and now form part of the acknow- ledged system of parliamentary government.

Parliament after the Restoration. —On the restoration of Charles II. parliament was at once restored to its old constitution, and its sittings were revived as if they had suffered no interruption. No outward change had been effected by the late revolution ; but that a stronger spirit of resistance to abuses of prerogative had been aroused was soon to be disclosed in the deposition of James II. and the “glorious revolution” of 1688. At this time the full rights of parliament were explicitly declared, and securities taken for the maintenance of public liberties. The theory of a constitutional monarchy and a free parliament was established ; but after two revolutions it is curious to observe the indirect methods by which the commons were henceforth kept in subjection to the crown and the terri- torial aristocracy. The representation had long become an illusion. The knights of the shire were the nominees of nobles and great landowners; the borough members were returned by the crown, by noble patrons, or close corporations; even

the representation of cities, with greater pretensions to independence, was controlled by bribery. Nor were rulers content with their control of the repre- sentation, but, after the Restoration, the infamous system of bribing the members themselves became a recognized instrument of administration. The country gentlemen were not less attached to the principles of rational liberty than their fathers, and would have resisted further encroachments of prerogative ; but they were satisfied with the Revolution settlement and the remedial laws of William IIL., and no new issue had yet arisen to awaken opposi- tion. Accordingly, they ranged themselves with one or other of the political parties into which parliament was now beginning to be divided, and bore their part in the more measured strifes of the 18th century. From the Revolution till the reign of George III. the effective power of the state was wielded by the crown, the church, and the territorial aristocracy ; but the influence of public opinion since the stirring events of the 17th century had greatly increased. Both parties were constrained to defer to it; and, notwithstanding the flagrant defects in the representation, parliament generally kept itself in accord with the general sentiments of the country.

Union of Scotland. —On the union of Scotland in 1707, important changes were made in the constitution of parlia- ment. The House of Lords was reinforced by the addition of sixteen peers, representing the peerage of Scotland, and elected every parliament; and the Scottish peers, as a body, were admitted to all the privileges of peerage, except the right of sitting in parliament, or upon the trial of peers. No prerogative, however, was given to the crown to create new peerages after the Union; and, while they are distinguished by their antiquity, their number 1s consequently decreasing. ‘To the House of Commons were assigned forty-five members, representing the shires and burghs of Scotland.

Parliament under George II.—With the reign of George III. there opened a new period in the history of parliament. Agitation in its various forms, an active and aggressive press, public meetings and political associations, the free use of the right of petition, and a turbulent spirit among the people seriously changed the relations of parliament to the country. And the publication of debates, which was fully established in 1771, at once increased the direct responsibility of parliament to the

people, and ultimately brought about other results, to which we shall presently advert.

Union of Ireland.—In this reign another important change was effected in the constitution of parliament, Upon the union with Ireland, in 1801, four Irish bishops were added to the lords spiritual, who sat by rotation of sessions, and represented the episcopal body of the Church of Ireland. But those bishops were deprived of their seats in parliament in 1869, on the disestablishment of the Church of Ireland. Twenty-eight representative peers, elected for life by the peerage of Ireland, were admitted to the House of Lords. All the Irish peers were also entitled to the privilege of peerage. In two particulars the Irish peerage was treated in a different manner from the peerage of Scotland. The crown was empowered to create a new Irish peerage whenever three Irish peerages in existence at the time of the Union have become extinct, or when the number of Irish peers, exclusive of those

holding peerages of the United Kingdom, has been

reduced to one hundred. And, further, Irish peers were permitted to sit in the House of Commons for any place in Great Britain, forfeiting, however, the privilege of peerage while sitting in the Lower House. The exped- iency of both these provisions has often been called in question.

At the same time one hundred representatives of Ireland were added to the House of Commons. This addition raised the number of members to six hundred and fifty-eight. Parliament now became the parliament of the United Kingdom, and high hopes were entertained of a salutary fusion of diverse nationalities into a single assembly; but these hopes have scarcely been realized, and the relations of the Irish people to Great Britain and the imperial government continue to be a source of the gravest embarrassment and danger.

—

Schemes for Improving the Representation.—By the »

union of Scotland and Ireland, the electoral abuses of those countries were combined with those of England. Notwith- standing a defective representation, however, parliament generally sustained its position as fairly embodying the political sentiments of its time. Public opinion had been awakened, and could not safely be ignored by any party in the state. Under a narrow and corrupt electoral system, the ablest men in the country found an entrance into the IIouse of Commons; and their rivalry and ambition ensured the acceptance of popular principles and the pass- ing of many remedial measures. As society expanded, and new classes were called into existence, the pressure of public opinion upon the legislature was assuming a more decisive character. The grave defects of the representation were notorious, and some minor electoral abuses had been from time to time corrected. But the fundamental evils,— nomination boroughs, limited rights of election, the sale of seats in parliament, the prevalence of bribery, and the enormous expense of elections, —though constantly exposed, long held their ground against all assailants. as 1770 Lord Chatham had denounced these flagrant abuses. “ Before the end of this century,” he said, “ either the parliament will reform itself from within, or be reformed with a vengeance from without.” In 1782, and again in 1783 and 1785, his distinguished son, William Pitt, condemned the abuses of the representation, and proposed schemes of parliamentary reform. In 1793 Mr Grey (afterwards Earl Grey) submitted a motion on the same subject; but the excesses of the French Revolution, political troubles at home, and exhausting wars abroad discouraged the supporters of reform for many yeats. Under more favourable conditions the question assumed greater proportions. guished himself in 1820, and in several succeeding yeas,

Lord John Russell especially distin- |

So far back

-

Ed

ies

PARLIAMENT

by the able exposure of abuses and temperate schemes of reform. His efforts were assisted by the scandalous disclosures of bribery at Grampound, Penryn, and East Retford. All moderate proposals were rejected; but the concurrence of a dissolution, on the death of George IV., with the French Revolution of 1830, and an ill-timed declaration of the duke of Wellington that the representa- tion was perfect and could not be improved, suddenly precipitated the memorable crisis of parliamentary reform. It now fell to the lot of Earl Grey, as premier, to be the leader in a cause which he had espoused in his early

youth.

The Reform Acts of 1832.—The result of the memorable struggle which ensued may be briefly told. By the Reform Acts of 1832 the representation of the United Kingdom was reconstructed. In England, fifty-six nomination boroughs returning one hundred and eleven members were disfranchised ; thirty boroughs were each deprived of one member, and Weymouth and Melcombe Regis, which had returned four members, were now reduced to two. Means were thus found for the enfranchisement of populous places. Twenty-two large towns, including metropolitan districts, became entitled to return two members, and twenty less considerable towns acquired the right of re- turning one member each. The number of county members was increased from ninety-four to one hundred and fifty- nine, the larger counties being divided for the purposes of representation.

The elective franchise was also placed upon a new basis. In the boroughs a £10 household suffrage was substituted for the narrow and unequal franchises which had sprung up,—the rights of freemen, in corporate towns, being alone respected. In the counties, copyholders and leaseholders for terms of years, and tenants at will paying a rent of £50 a year, were added to the 40s. freeholders.

By the Scottish Reform Act, the number of members representing Scotland was increased from forty-five, as arranged at the Union, to fifty-three, of whom thirty were assigned to counties and twenty-three to cities and boroughs. In counties the franchise was conferred upon owners of property of £10 a year, and certain classes of leaseholders ; in burghs, upon £10 householders, as in England.

By the Irish Reform Act, no boroughs, however small, were disfranchised ; but the franchise was given to £10 householders, and county constituencies were enlarged. These franchises, however, were extended in 1850, when an £8 household suffrage was given to the boroughs, and additions were made to the county franchises. The hundred members assigned to that country at the Union Were increased to one hundred and five. Notwithstanding these various changes, however, the total number of the

‘ House of Commons was still maintained at 658.

The Reformed Parliament.—The legislature was now brought into closer relations with the people, reflected their opinions, and was sensitive to the pressure of popular forces. The immediate effects of this new spirit were per- ceptible in the increased legislative activity of the reformed parliament, its vigorous grappling with old abuses, and its preference of the public welfare to the narrower interests of classes. But, signal as was the regeneration of parlia- ment, several electoral evils still needed correction. Strenuous efforts were made, with indifferent success, to overcome bribery and corruption, and proposals were often Ineffectually made to restrain the undue influence of land- lords and employers of labour by the ballot; improve- ments were made in the registration and polling of electors, and the property qualification of members was abolished. Complaints were also urged that the middle classes had been admitted to power, while the working classes were excluded from the late scheme of enfranchisement. Twenty

years after the settlement of 1832, its revision was seri- ously approached.

Later Measures of Reform.—In 1852, and again in 1854, Lord John Russell introduced further measures of reform ; but constitutional changes were discouraged by the Russian war. In 1859 Lord Derby’s Conservative government pro- posed another scheme of reform, which was defeated ; and in 1860 Lord John Russell brought in another Bill, which was not proceeded with; and the question of reform con- tinued in abeyance until after the death of Lord Palmerston. Earl Russell, who succeeded him as premier, was prompt to redeem former pledges, and hastened to submit to a

new parliament, in 1866, another scheme of reform. This measure, and the ministry by whom it was promoted, were overthrown by a combination of the Con- servative opposition and the memorable “cave” of mein- bers of the Liberal party. But the popular sentiment in favour of reform, which had for some years been inert, was suddenly aroused by the defeat of a Liberal ministry, and the triumph of the party opposed to reform. Lord Derby and his colleagues were now constrained to under- take the settlement of this embarrassing question ; and by a strange concurrence of political events and party tactics, a scheme far more democratic than that of the Liberal Government was accepted by the same parliament, under the auspices of a Conservative ministry.

The Reform Acts of 1867-68,—By the English Reform Act of 1867, four corrupt boroughs were disfranchised, and thirty-eight boroughs returning two members were hence- forth to return one only. A third member was given to Manchester, Liverpool, Birmingham, and Leeds ; a second member to Merthyr Tydfil and Salford ; the Tower Hamlets were divided into two boroughs, each returning two mem- bers ; and ten new boroughs were created, returning one member each, with the exception of Chelsea, to which two were assigned. By these changes twenty-six seats were taken from boroughs, while a member was given to the university of London. But before this Act came into operation, seven other English boroughs were disfranchised by the Scottish Reform Act of 1868, these seats being given to Scotland. Thirteen new divisions of countics were erected, to which twenty-five members were assigned. In counties, the franchise of copyholders and leaseholders was reduced from £10 to £5, and the occupation franchise from £50 to £12. In boroughs the franchise was extended to all occupiers of dwelling-houses rated to the poor-rates, and to lodgers occupying lodgings of the annual value of £10 unfurnished.

By the Scottish Reform Act of 1868, the number of mem- bers representing Scotland was increased from fifty-three to sixty,—three new members being given to the shires, two to the universities, and two to cities and burghs. The county franchise was extended to owners of lands and heri- tages of £5 yearly value, and to occupiers of the rateable value of £14; and the burgh franchise to all occupiers of dwelling-houses paying rates, and to tenants of lodgings of £10 annual value unfurnished.

By the Irish Reform Act of 1868, no change was made in the number of members nor in the distribution of seats ;

but the boroughs of Sligo and Cashel, already disfranchised, were still left without representation. The county fran- chise was left unchanged ; but the borough franchise was extended to occupiers of houses rated at £4, and of lodg- ings of the annual value of £10 unfurnished.

Present Position of Parliamentary Reform.—That these changes in the representation—especially the household suffrage in boroughs—were a notable advance upon the reforms of 1832, in the direction of democracy, cannot be questioned. The enlarged constituencies speedily over- threw the ministry to whom these measures were due ; and

a

the new parliament further extended the recent scheme of reform, by granting to electors the protection of the ballot, for which advanced reformers had contended since 1832. Nor was the representation, as lately determined, long suffered to continue without question. First, it was pro- posed, in 1872, by Mr Trevelyan, to extend the household franchise to counties, and this proposal found favour in the country and in the House of Commons ; but, the Con- servative party having been restored to power in 1874, no measure of that character could be promoted with any prospect of success. At the dissolution in 1880 a more general revision of the representation was advocated by leading members of the Liberal party, who were soon re- stored to power; and further measures of reform are now under the consideration of parliament. Meanwhile, tren- chant enactments have been made in restraint of corrupt practices, and for reducing the excessive cost of elections.

Relations of the Commons to the Crown and the Lords.— Having brought this rapid sketch of the history and con- stitution of parliament to a close, a few remarks may be offered as to the relations of the House of Commons to the crown, the House of Lords, and the people. Prior to the reign of Charles J. the condition of society was such as naturally to subordinate the

Commons to the crown and the Lords. After the Revolution of 1688, society had so far advanced that, under a free representation, the Commons might have striven with both upon equal terms. But, as by far the greater part of the representation was in the hands of the king and the territorial nobles, the large constitutional powers of the Commons were held safely in check. Since 1832, when the representation became a reality, a corresponding authority has been asserted by the Commons. For several years, indeed, by reason of the weakness of the Liberal party, the Lords were able successfully to resist the Commons upon many important occasions; but it was soon acknowledged that they must yield whenever a decisive majority of the Com- mons, supported by public opinion, insisted upon the passing of any measure, however repugnant to the senti- ments of the Upper House. And it became a political axiom that the Commons alone determined the fate of ministries, and the policy of the state. The relations of the two Houses, however, can only be understood in con- nexion with the action of political parties. The Lords may be said, generally, to represent the opinions prevalent before 1832, while, during the greater part of the period since that time, the Commons, under leaders of the Liberal party, have represented the progressive views of a later generation. Hence, under Liberal administrations, the two Houses have been in frequent conflict; under Conservative administrations they have been brought into general agreement, the electors having supported the party which commanded a majority in both Houses. In the conflict of parties, the ultimate appeal is to the country. But as the representation of the people is further extended, an accord between the two Houses will be more difficult, while the power of resistance on the part of the Lords will be pro- portionately weakened.

Severe Pressure upon the House of Commons.—The House of Commons having thus become the centre of political power, it has been impelled to extraordinary activity. The legislation of the last fifty years affords the only example in history of so wide a reconstruction of insti- tutions, and so bold a redress of grievances, having been accomplished without a revolution. But this prodigious work, of which the main burthen has rested upon the Commons, has formed only a part of their labours. The voting of supplies for the public service, and financial policy, are their exclusive province, and offer unbounded opportunities for debate. They have also assumed a large

share of executive power. Every act of administration js open to question, controversy, and censure. Matters of executive policy—foreign, colonial, and domestic—are eagerly discussed in this numerous and excited assembly. Nor are discussions mainly directed to such important topics. The close connexion of the Commons with the people, the publicity of debates, the rapidity of communi- cations with all parts of the world, and the activity of the press, have made the floor of that House the popular plat- form of the country. On that arena are discussed every conceivable grievance, complaint, opinion, project, or delu- sion. Subjects the most trivial are forced upon the attention of the House, by means of questions and inci- dental debates ; and after weary sittings, such as no other deliberative assembly has ever been willing to endure, matters of the first importance fail to obtain a hearing, These difficulties were apparent in the first reformed parliaments after 1832; and they have since been agera- vated so seriously as to threaten the character and com- petency of the most powerful branch of the legislature.

Such difficulties, grave enough in themselves, have lately assumed more dangerous proportions under the per- nicious tactics of obstruction. The liberal opportunities provided, by the rules of the House, for free discussion have been perverted and abused ; and the effective power of the House has often been held in check, and sometimes nearly paralysed. Already some partial remedies have been applied to this acknowledged evil, but further measures are still needed for facilitating the action of parliament. It were strange, indeed, if the House of Commons, having attained pre-eminence in the legislature, should now prove unequal to the responsibilities of its freedom and its power. The methods of earlier times, and other political conditions, will assuredly be reviewed, and adapted to the multiplied obligations of an assembly whose fruitful labours are essential to the welfare of the country.

PowWERS AND PRIVILEGES OF PARLIAMENT.

Such being the history and constitutional character of parliament, this survey would be incomplete without a more detailed view of the powers

and privileges of each of its constituent parts, and of its ordinary proceedings.

Prerogatives of the Crown.—The crown, pre-eminent in rank and dignity, is also the legal source of parliamentary authority. The Queen virtually appoints the Lords Spiritual, and all the peerages of the Lords Temporal have been created by herself or her predecessors. Thus the entire House of Lords is the creation of the crown. The Queen summons parliament to meet, and prescribes the time and place of its meeting, prorogues and dissolves it, and commands the issue of writs for the election of members of the House of Commons. By several statutes, beginning with the 4th Edward III. c. 14, the annual meeting of par- liament had been ordained ; but these statutes, continually disregarded, were virtually repealed in the reigns of Charles II. and William and Mary (16 Ch. IL, 31; 6&7 Will. and Mary, 32). The present statute law merely exacts the meeting of parliament once in three years; but the annual voting of supplies has long since superseded obsolete statutes. When parliament is assembled, it cannot procced to business until the Queen has declared the causes of sum- mons, in person or by commission. Other prerogatives of the crown, in connexion with parliament, will be noticed in reference to the proceedings of the two Houses.

Powers of the House of Lords.—The House of Lords, which at present consists of about five hundred and twenty members, is distinguished by peculiar dignities, privileges, and jurisdictions. Peers individually enjoy the rank and

Peete fA Neen T

precedence of their several dignities, and are hereditary councillors of the crown. Collectively with the Lords Spiritual they form a permanent council of the crown ; and, when assembled in parliament, they form the highest court of judicature in the realm, and area co-equal branch of the legislature, without whose consent no laws can be made. Their judicature is of various kinds, viz., for the trial of peers; for determining claims of peerage and offices of honour, under references from the crown; for the trial of controverted elections of Scotch and Irish peers; for the final determination of appeals from courts in England, Scotland, and Ireland ; and, lastly, for

the trial of impeachments. Powers of the House of Commons.—The House of Com- mons also has its own peculiar privileges and jurisdictions.

_ Above all, it has the paramount right of originating the

imposition of all taxes, and the granting of-supplies for the service of the state. It has also enjoyed, from early times, the right of determining all matters concerning the election of its own members, and their right to sit and vote in par- liament. This right, however, has been greatly abridged, as, in 1868, the trial of controverted elections was trans- ferred to the courts of law; but its jurisdiction in matters of election, not otherwise provided for by statute, is still re- tainedintact. As part of this jurisdiction, the House directs the Speaker to issue warrants to the clerk of the crown to make out new writs for the election of members to fill up such vacancies as occur during the sitting of parliament. Privileges of Parliament.~~Both Houses are in the enjoy~~ ment of certain privileges, designed to maintain their authority, independence, and dignity. These privileges are founded mainly upon the law and custom of parliament, while some have been confirmed, and others abridged or abrogated by statute. The Lords rely entirely upon their inherent right, as having "'a place and voice in parliament "; but, by a custom dating from the 6th Henry VIII, the Commons lay claim, by humble petition to the crown at the commencement of every parliament, "to their ancient and undoubted rights and privileges." Each House has its separate rights and jurisdictions; but privileges properly so-called, being founded upon the law and custom of parlia- Ment, are common to both Houses. Each House adjudges

' whether any breach of privilege has been committed, and

punishes offenders by censure or commitment. This right of commitment is incontestably established, and it extends to the protection of officers of the House, lawfully and properly executing its orders, who are also empowered to callin the assistance of the civil power. The causes of such commitments cannot be inquired into by courts of law, nor can prisoners be admitted to bail. Breaches of privi- lege may be summarized as disobedience to any orders or rules of the House, indignities offered to its character or proceedings, assaults, insults, or libels upon members, or Interference with officers of the House in discharge of their duty, or tampering with

witnesses. Such offences are dealt with as contempts, according to the circumstances of the respective cases, of which numerous precedents are to be found in the journals of both Houses. The Lords may imprison for a fixed period, and impose fines; the Commons can only imprison generally, the commitment being concluded by the prorogation, and have long dis- continued the imposition of fines.

Freedom of Speech.—Freedom of speech has been one of the most cherished privileges of parliament from early times. Constantly asserted, and often violated, it was finally declared by the Bill of Rights “that the freedom of Speech, and debates and proceedings in parliament, ought not to be impeached or questioned in any court or place Out of parliament.” Such a privilege is essential to the independence of parliament, and to the protection of mem- bers in discharge of their duties. But, while it protects

oll

members from molestation elsewhere, it leaves them open to censure or other punishment by the House itself, when- ever they abuse their privilege and transgress the rules of orderly debate.

Freedom from Arrest.—¥Freedom from arrest is a privi- lege of the highest antiquity. It was formerly of extended scope, but has been reduced, by later legislation, within very narrow limits. Formerly not only the persons of members but their goods were protected, and their privilege extended to theirservants. At present members are themselves free from arrest, but otherwise they are liable to all the pro- cesses of the courts. If arrested, they will be immediately discharged, upon motion in the court whence the process issued, Peers and peeresses are, by the privilege of peerage, free from arrest at all times. Members of the House of Commons are free only for forty days after prorogation and forty days before the next appointed meeting ; but prorogations are so arranged as to ensure a continuance of the privilege. Formerly, even suits against members were stayed, but this offensive privilege has been abolished by statute. Exemption from attending as witnesses upon sub- poena, once an acknowledged privilege, is no longer insisted upon ; but immunity from service upon juries is at once an ancient privilege and a statutory right. The privilege of freedom from arrest is limited to civil causes, and has not been suffered to exempt members from

the operation of the criminal law, nor even from commitments for contempt by other courts. But, whenever the freédom of a member is so interfered with, the courts are required immediately to inform the House of the causes of his commitment. Witnesses, suitors, counsel, and agents in attendance upon parliament are protected from arrest and molestation, and from the consequences of statements made by them, or other proceedings in the conduct of their cases.

Conflicts between Privilege and Law.—As both Houses, in enforcing their privileges, are obliged to commit offenders or otherwise interfere with the liberty of the sub- ject, the exercise of these privileges has naturally been called in question before the courts. Each House is the sole judge of its own privileges; but the courts are bound to administer the law, and, where law and privilege have seemed to be at variance, a conflict of jurisdiction has arisen between parliament and the courts. Many interesting controversies have arisen upon such occasions; but of late years privilege has been so carefully restrained within the proper limits of the law, and the courts have so amply recognized the authority of parliament, that unseemly con- flicts of jurisdiction have been averted.

PARLIAMENTARY PROCEDURE.

We may now present a general outline of the proceed- ings of parliament during the transaction of its multifarious business.

On the day appointed by royal proclamation for the meeting of a new parliament, both Houses assemble in their respective chambers, when the Lords Commissioners for opening the parliament summon the Commons to the bar, by the gentleman usher of the black rod, to hear the commission read. The Lord Chancellor then states that, when the members of both Houses shall be sworn, Her Majesty will declare the causes of her calling this parlia- ment ; and, it being necessary that a Speaker of the House of Commons shall be first chosen, the Commons are directed to proceed to the appointment of a Speaker, and to present him, on the following day, for Her Majesty’s royal approbation. The Commons at once withdraw to their own Hous: and proceed to the election of their Speaker. The next day the Speaker-elect proceeds, with the House to the House of Lords, and, on receiving the royal approbation, lays claim, in the accustomed form, on

a

o12

behalf of the Commons, “to their ancient and undoubted rights and privileges.” The Speaker, now fully confirmed, returns to the House of Commons, and, after repeating his acknowledgments, reminds the House that the first thing to be done is to take and subscribe the oath required by law. Having first taken the oath himself, he is followed by other members, who come to the table to be sworn. The swearing of members in both Houses proceeds from day to day, until the greater number have taken the oath, or affirmation, when the causes of summons are declared by Her Majesty in person, or by commission, in “the Queen’s speech.” This speech being considered in both Houses, an address in answer is agreed to, which is presented to Her Majesty by the whole House, or by “the lords with white staves” in one House and privy councillors in the other.

Sittings of Both Houses.—The real business of the session now commenees : the committees of supply and ways and means are set np; bills are introduced ; motions are made; committecs are appointed ; and both Houses are, at once, in full activity. The Lord Chanccllor presides over the deliberations of the Lords, and the Speaker over those of the Commons. A quorum of the House of Lords, including the Chancellor, is three; that of the House of Commons, including the Speaker, is forty. If forty members cannot be assembled at 4 o’clock, the House is at once adjourned ; and so also if it be found, at a later hour, that less than that number are present. The Lords usually met at 5 o’clock, but have recently changed that hour to a quarter past 4. The usual hour for the mecting of the Commons is a quarter before 4, except on Wed- nesdays, when the House meets at 12 and adjourns at 6, and on other morning sittings from 2 till 7. In both Houses accomimo- dation is provided for strangers and reporters, and there are separate galleries for ladies.

Questions put from the Chair.—Every matter is determined, in both Houses, upon questions put from the chair, and resolved in the affirmative or negative, or otherwise disposed of by the with- drawal of the motion, by amendments, by the adjournment of the House, by reading the orders of the day, or by the previous question. Notices are required to be given of original

motions ; and the different stages of bills, and other matters appointed for considera- tion by the House, stand as orders of theday. Certain days in the week are appointed for notices of motions and orders of the day respectively ; and on Monday and Thursday Government orders of the day have precedence. Questions of privilege are allowed pre- cedenee of all the business on any day; but this rule, being lable to grave abuses, is guarded by strict limitations. Debate arises when a question has been proposed from the chair; and at the close of the debate the question is put, with or without amendment, as the case may be, and is determined, when necessary, by a division. No question or bill, substantially the same as one upon which the judgment of the House has already been given, may be again pro- posed during the same session.

Rules of Debate.—Members claim to be heard in debate by rising in their places. When more than one member rises at the same time, in the Lords the member who is to speak is called by the House, in the Commons by the Speaker. Every member, when called,is bound to speak to the question before the House; and calls to order for irrelevance, or for referring to other matters which have been disposed of, or which stand for consideration on other days, are very frequent. A member may speak once only to any question, except to explain, or upon a point of order, or to reply when a mem- ber has himself submitted a motion to the House, or when an amend- ment has been moved which constitutes a new question. He may not refer to past debates, nor to debates in the other House ; nor may he refer to any other member by name, or use offensive and disorderly language against the Queen, either House of Parlianicnt, or other members. Members offending against any of the rules of debate are called to order by the Speaker, or the attcntion of the chair is directed to the breach of order by another member. Order is generally enforced by the authority of the chair; but in extreme cases, and especially when obstruction is being practised, the offend- ing member is named by the Speaker, and suspended by an order of the House, or otherwise punished at the discretion of the House. And, when a debate has been unduly prolonged, the House may order it to be closed, but under such conditions and restrictions that this power can rarely be exercised. The rules to be observed by members in the House during a debate are such as to ensure the order and decorum becoming a deliberative assembly.

Diwvisions.—At the conclusion of a debate, unless themotion bewith-drawn, or the question (on being put from the chair) be agreed to, or negatived, the House proceeds to a division, which effects the twofold purpose of ascertaining the numbers supporting and opposing the question, and of recording the names of members voting on either side, On each side of the House is a division lobby ; and in the

Lords the “‘contents” and in the Commons the ‘‘ayes” are directed to go to the right, and the ‘‘not contents” or ‘‘noes” to the left. The former pass into the right lobby, at the back of the speaker’s chair, and return to the Honse through the bar; the latter pass into the left lobby, at the bar, and return at the back of the chair. The opposing partics are thus kept entirely clear of one another. In each lobby there arc two members acting as tellers, who count the members as they pass, and two division clerks who take down their names. After the division, the four tellers advance to the table, and the numbers are reported by one of the tellers for the majority. In case of an equality of numbers, in the Lords the question is negatived in virtuc of the ancient rule “semper presumitur pro negante ””; in the Commons the Spcaker gives the casting vote.

Committees of the Whole House.—For the sake of convenience in the transaction of business, there are several kinds of committees, Of these the most important is a committee of the whole House, which, as it consists of the entire body of members, can scarcely be accounted a committee. It is presided over by a chairman, who sits in the clerk’s chair at the table, the mace, which represents the authority of the House itself, being for the time placed under the table. In this committee are discussed the several provisions of bills, resolutions, and other matters requiring the consideration of details. To facilitate discussion, members are allowed to speak any number of times to the same question ; otherwise the proceed-ings are similar to those of the House itself. In the Lords, the chair is taken by the chairman of committees ; and in the Commons by the chairman of the committee of ways and means, or in his absence by any other member. The quorum of such a committee is the same as that of the House itself. It reports from time to time to the House, but has no power of adjournment.

Grand and Standing Committces.—1n the House of Commons there were formerly four grand committees, viz., for religion, for grievances, for courts of justice, and for trade. They were founded upon the valuable principle of a distribution of labours among several bodies of members ; but, having fallen into disuse, they were discontinued in 1832. The ancient committee of privileges, in which ‘‘all who come are to have voices,” is still appointed at the commencement of every session, but is rarely called into aetion, as it has been found more convenient to appoiut a select committee to inquire into any question of privilege as it ariscs. In 1882 a partial revival of grand committees was effected by the appointment of two standing committees for the consideration of bills relating to law and courts of justice and to trade; and there is reasonable ground for hoping that this system may be widely extended, so as to lighten the labours of the House, and facilitate the arduous work of legislation.

Seleet Committees.—In select committees both Houses find the means of delegating inquiries, and the consideration of other matters, which could not be undertaken by the whole House. The reports of such committees have formed the groundwork of many important measures ; and bills are often referred to them which receive a fuller examination than could be expected in a committee of the whole House. Power is given to such committees, when required, to send for persons, papers, and records. In the Lords the power of examin- ing witnesses upon oath has always been exercised, but it was not until 1871 that the same power was extended to the Commons, by statute.

Communications between the Two Houses.—In the course of the proceedings of parliament, frequent communications between the two Houses become necessary. Of these the most usual and con- venient form is that of a message. Formerly the Lords sent a message by two jndges, or two masters in chancery, and the Commons by a deputation of their own members ; but since 1855 messages have been taken from one House to the other by one of the clerks at the table. A more formal communication is effected by aconference, in reference to amendments to bills or other matters; but this proceeding has been in great measure superseded by the more simple form of a message. ‘The two Houses are also occasion- ally

brought into communication by means of joint committecs and of select committees communicating with each other. ;

Communications between the Crown and Parliament.—Commum- cations, in various forms, are also conducted between the crown and both Houses of Parliament. Of these the most important are those in which the Queen, in person or by commission, is present in the House of Lords, to open or prorogue parliament, or to give the royal assent to bills. Her Majesty is then in direct communl cation with the three estatcs of the realm, assembled in the same chamber. The Queen also sends messages to both Houses under the royal sign manual, when all the members are uncovered. Verbal messages are also sent, aud the Quecn's plcasure, or royal recommendation or consent to bills, or other matters, signified through a minister of the crown or a privy councillor. Messages under the sign mannal are acknowledged by addresses, except where grants of money are proposed, in which case no address 18 presented by the Commons, who acknowledge them by making)r0 vision accordingly.

Peat bl A ME N T

Both Houses approach the crown, sometimes by joint addresses, but usually by separate addresses from each House. Such addresses are presented to Her Majesty, either by the whole House, or by the lords with white staves in one House and by privy councillors in the other. Her Majesty answers, in person, addresses presented by the whole House ; but, when presented otherwise, an answer is brought by one of the lords with white staves, or by one of the privy councillors, by whom the address has been presented. Re- solutions of either House are also sometimes directed to be laid before Her Majesty ; and messages of congratulation or condolence are sent to other members of the royal family.

The Passing of Public Bills.—The passing of bills forms the most considerable part of the business of parliament ; but a brief notice will suffice to explain the methods of procedure. These are

substantially the same in both Houses; but the privileges of the Commons, in regard to supply and taxation, require that all bills imposing a charge upon the people should originate in that House. On the other hand, the

Lords claim that bills for restoration of honours or in blood, or relating to their own privileges and juris- diction, should commence in their House. An act of grace, or general pardon, originates with the crown, and is read once only *1 both Houses. Bills are divided into public and private ; but here the former only are referred to. In the Lords any peer is entitled to present a bill, but in the Commons a member is required to obtain the previous leave of the House to bring in the bill ; and, in the case of bills relating to religion, trade, grants of public money, or charges upon the subject, a preliminary committee is necessary before such leave will be given. A bill, when presented, is read a first time, and ordered to be printed; and a day is appointed for the second reading. At this latter stage, the prin- ciple of the bill is discussed ; and, if disapproved of by an adverse vote, the bill is lost and cannot be renewed during the same session. If approved of, it is usually committed to a committee of the whole House, where every provision is open to debate and amendment. When the bill has been fully considered it is reported to the House, with or without amendments, and is ready to pass through its remaining stages. Sometimes, however, the bill is re- ferred to a select committee before it is committed to a committee of the whole House.

By recent standing orders of the Commons, bills relating to law and courts of justice and to trade may be committed to standing committees, specially constituted, instead of to a committee of the whole House. When a bill has been reported from a committee of the whole House, or from a standing committee, with amendments, the bill, as amended, is ordered to be considered on a future day, when further amendments may be made, or the bill may be recom- mitted. The next and last stage is the third reading, when the principle of the measure, and its amended provisions, are open to review. Even at this stage the bill may be lost ; but if the third reading be agreed to, it is at once passed and sent to the other House. There it is open to the like discussions and amendments, and may be rejected. If returned without amendment, the bill merely awaits the royal assent ; but if returned with amendments, such amendments must be agreed to, or otherwise adjusted, by mutual concessions, by the two Houses, before it can be submitted for the royal assent ; and in case of ultimate disagreement the bill is lost. The royal assent consummates the work of legislation, and converts the bill into an Act of Parliament.

Petitions. —Both Houses are approached by the people by means

of petitions, of which prodigious numbers are presented to the House of Commons every session. They are referred to the com- mittce on public petitions, under whose directions they are classified, analysed, and the number of signatures counted ; and, when neces- sary, the petitions are printed am extenso. _ Parliamentary Papers.—Another source of information is found in parliamentary papers. These are of various kinds. The greater part are obtained either by a direct order of the House itself, or by an address to the crown for documents relating to matters in which the prerogatives of the crown are concerned. Other papers, relating to foreien and colonial affairs and other public matters, are presented to both Houses by command of Her Majesty. Again, many papers are annually presented, in pursuance of Acts of Parliament. In the House of Commons, these various printed documents occupy from eighty to one hundred volumes every year.

The Granting of Supplies. —The exclusive right of the Commons to grant supplies, and to originate all measures of taxation, imposes a very onerous service upon that House. This is mainly performed by two committees of the whole House,—the Committee of Supply, and the Committee of Ways and Means. The former deals with all the estimates for the public service presented to the House by command of Her Majesty ; and the latter votes out of the Consoli- dated Fund such sums as are necessary to meet the supplies already granted, and originates all taxes for the service of the year. It is here that the annual financial statement of the chancellor of the exchequer, commonly known as ‘‘the Budget,” is delivered. The Tesolutions of these committees are reported to the House, and, when agreed to, form thc foundation of bills, to be passed by both

eos anid res for the royal assent ; and towards the close of the session an ropriation Act is passed, a i for the service of ae a ar. ee

Elections. —The extensive jurisdiction of the Commons in matters of election, already referred to, formerly occupied a considerable share of their time, but its exercise has now been contracted within narrow limits. Whenever a vaeaney occurs during the eontinu- ance of a parliament, a

warrant for a new writ is issued by the Speaker, by order of the House during the session, and in pursuanee of statutes during the recess. The causes of vacancies are the death of a member, his being called to the House of Peers, his aeceptance of an office from the crown, or his bankruptcy. When any doubt arises as to the issue of a writ, it is usual to appoint a committee to inquire into the circumstances of the case ; and during the recess the Speaker may reserve doubtful cases for the determi- nation of the House.

Controverted elections had been originally tried by select com- | mittees, afterwards by the committee of privileges and elections, and ultimately by the whole House, with scandalous partiality, but | under the Grenville Act of 1770, and other later Acts, by select committees, so constituted as to form a more judicial tribunal. The influence of party bias, however, too obviously prevailed until 1839, when Sir Robert Peel introduced an improved system of nomination, which distinctly raised the character of election committees; but a tribunal constituted of political partisans, how- ever chosen, was still open to jealousy and suspicion, and at length, in 1868, the trial of election petitions was transferred to judges of the superior courts, to whose determination the House gives effect, by the issue of new writs, or otherwise. The House, however, still retains and exercises its jurisdiction in all cases not relegated, by statute, to the judges.

Impeachments and Trial of Peers.—Other forms of parliamentary judicature still remain to be mentioned. Upon impeachments by the Commons, the Lords exercise the highest criminal judicature known to the law; but the occasions upon which it has been brought into action have been so rare, in modern times, that its procedure need not be dwelt upon. Another judicature is that of the trial of peers by the House of Lords. And, lastly, by a bill of

‘attainder, the entire parliament is called to sit in judgment upon

offenders.

Private Bill Legislation.—One other important function of parliament remains to be noticed,—that of private bill legislation. Here the duties of parliament are partly legislative and partly judicial. Public interests are promoted, and private rights secured. The vast industrial undertakings of

the country—canals, docks, harbours, railways, waterworks, and the lighting and iinprovement of towns—have thus been sanctioned, at a cost far exceeding the amount of the national debt, while the rights of property have been jealously guarded. This whole jurisdiction has been regulated by special standing orders, and by elaborate arrangements for the nomination of capable and impartial committees. A prodigious legislative work has been accomplished,—but under conditions most costly to the promoters and opponents of private bills, and involving a serious addition to the onerous labours of members of parliainent. Means have already been found, by general Acts and provisional orders, to lighten the pressure of private bill legisla- tion ; and further expedients will, doubtless, be devised for the relief of parliament from a branch of business which is scarcely compatible with the engagements of members in the weightier affairs of state. :

Varied Functions of Parliament.—Such are the vast and varied functions of the imperial parliament,—to legislate for an empire, to control the executive government, to hear the complaints of the people, and to redress their grievances. To be equal to its high jurisdiction, it needs the guidance of accomplished statesmen, wisdom and patriotism in its members, and an organization which shall make fruitful the talents, the practical knowledge and experi- ence, of the ablest men of their generation. Its history 1s bright with records of eloquence, of statesmanship, of wise legislation, and of generous sympathy with the people ; and that its future great- ness may be worthy of its past glories is the earnest hope of every

good citizen.

Ltterature.—See Rolls of Parliament, and Journals of both Houses; Parlta- mentary Hist,; Iansard, Parl. Ilist., and Debates; Gray, Debates ; Cavendish, Debates ; Wilkins, Leges Anglo-Saz.; Kemble, The Saxons tn England ; Turner, History of the Anglo-Saxons, and Hist. of England during the Middle Ages ; Sir F. Palgrave, English Commonwealth; Id., Hist. of Normandy and of England; 1d., Parliamentary Writs; Stubbs, Const. Ihistory of England; Holingshed, Chron. ; Selden, Titles of Honour; Ruffhead, Preface to Statutes; Cotton, Abridgment (Preface); Parry, Parliaments and Counctis of England ; Reports of Lords Com- mittee on the Dignity of the Peerage; Coke, Institutes ; Lord Hale, History of the

Common Law, Jurisdiction of the Lords; Lord Lyttelton, Hist. of Henry 18GB, D'Ewes, Journals of Queen Elizabeth; Elsynge, Manner of holding Parliaments ; Hakewel, Modus Tenendi Parliamentum; Barrington, On the Statutes ; Madox, Hist. of the Exchequer; Blackstone, Comm.; Lord Colchester, Diary; Hallam, Middle Ages, and Constitutional History of England; Hatsell, Precedents; Sir T. Erskine May, Law and Usage of Parliament; Id., Const. Hist. of England; Id., Democracy in Europe, a History (vol. ii.); Rules, Orders, and Forms of Proceeding of the House of Commons ; Freeman, Growth of the English Constitution, and The Norman Conquest of England, Green, History of the English People ; Bagehot, The English Constitution, (ty 135 AG)

XVIII. — 40

314

PARMA, one of the finest cities of northern Italy, is situated in 44° 48' N. lat. and 10° 20' E. long., 354 miles by rail south-east of Piacenza and 324 north-west of Modena, in a fertile tract of the Lombard plain within view of the Alps, and sheltered by the Apennines. From south to north it is traversed by the channel of the Parma, crossed here by three bridges; and from east to west for a distance of 6700 feet runs the line of the Aimilian Way, by which ancient Parma was connected on the one hand with Ariminum (Rimini), and on the other with Placentia (Piaeenza) and Mediolanum (Milan), The old ramparts and bastions (excluding the circuit of the citadel in the south- east) make an enceinte of about 4} miles, but the enclosed area is not all occupied by streets and houses ; there is an extensive "royal garden" or public park in the north-west angle, as well as a botanical garden and public promenades in the neighbourhood of the citadel, and various open spaces in other parts. In the centre of the city the Aimilian Way widens out into the Piazza Grande, a large and picturesque- looking square which contains the Palazzo del Comune and a modern statue of Correggio, whose masterpieces form the chief artistic attraction of Parma. The cathedral of the Assumption (originally St Herculanus), erected between 1064 and 1074, and consecrated in 1106 by Pope Paschal IL, is a Romano-Byzantine building in the form of a Latin cross, 230 feet long by 84 feet wide. The west front, 94 feet high and 90 feet broad, is relieved by three rows of semicircular arches, and has

a central porch (there were at one time three) supported by huge red marble lions sculptured by Bono da Bisone. The walls and ceiling of the interior are covered with frescos; those of the octagonal cupola representing the Assumption of the Virgin are by Correggio, but much restored (see CorREGGIO, vol. vi. p. 487). The crypt contains the shrine of Bishop San Bernardino degli Uberti and the tomb of Bartolommeo Prato—the former by Prospero Clementi of Reggio. To the south-west of the cathedral stands the baptistery, designed by Benedetto Antelami; it was commenced in 1196 and completed in 1281. The whole structure, which has a height of 98 feet and a diameter of 76 feet, is com- posed of red and grey Verona marble. Externally it is an irregular octagon, each face consisting of a lower story with a semicircular arch (in three cases occupied by a portal), four tiers of small columns supporting as many continuous architraves, and forming open galleries, and above these a row of five engaged columns supporting a series of pointed arches and a cornice. Internally it is a polygon of sixteen unequal sides, and the cupola is sup- ported by sixteen ribs, springing from the same number of columns. In the centre is an octagonal font bearing date 1298. To the east of the cathedral, and at no great distance, stands the church of San Giovanni Evangelista, which was founded along with the Benedictine monastery

in 981, but as a building dates from the 16th century,-

and has a facade erected by Simone Moschino early in the 17th. The frescos on the cupola representing the vision of St John are by Correggio, and the arabesques on the vault of the nave by Anselmi. Madonna della Steccata (Our Lady of the Palisade), a fine church in the form of a Greek cross, erected between 1521 and 1539 after Zaccagni's designs, contains the tombs and monuments of many of the Bourbon and Farnese dukes of Parma, and preserves among a rich variety of paintings Parmigiano's Moses Breaking the Tables of the Law and Anselmi's Coronation of the Virgin. The ducal palace, usually called La Pilotta, 1s a vast and irregular group of buildings dating mainly from the 16th and 17th centuries; it now comprises the academy of fine arts (1752) and its valuable picture gallery (Correggio's St Jerome and Madonna della Scodella), the schools of painting, sculpture, and engraving, the

archeological museum (Trajan's Tabula Alimentaria and ruins from Velleia), and the great royal library (with De Rossi's Oriental MSS. and Zani's collection of engravings, Luther's Hebrew Psalter and Bodoni's types and matrices), The Teatro Farnese, a remarkable wooden structure erected in 1618-19 from Aleotti d'Argenta's designs, and capable of containing 4500 persons, has long been in a very ruined condition; the new theatre, opened in 1829, cost £80,000, and is celebrated as one of the best in Europe for the clear conveyance of sound. The royal university of Parma, founded in 1601 by Ranuccio I., and reconstituted by Philip of Bourbon in 1768, had 217 students in 1881-82, Among the benevolent institutions, in which the city is particularly rich, are a monte di pieta dating from 1488 and a hospital for incurables founded in 1332. Leather, silk-stuff for sieves, linen, hemp, and cotton stuffs, glass, crystal, and earthenware, wax candles, cast-iron wares, and pianofortes are all manufactured in or near the city; a very considerable trade is carried on in grain, cattle, and the dairy produce of the district. The "grana" cheese known as Parmesan is not now so well made at Parma as in some other parts of Italy——Lodi, for example. The popula- tion in 1861 was 47,067 for the city and 47,428 for the commune ; the removal of the military and civil function- aries of the old duchy caused a considerable decrease, and the figures for 1881 were only 44,492 and 45,217.

The old Gallic town of Parma, which became a Roman colonia civium for 2000 colonists in 183 B.c., and after it had been plundered by Mark Antony's soldiers was recruited by Augustus, continued to be a place of importance till the later times of the empire. Under Theodoric its walls were rebuilt. The Grecks of the 6th eentury called it Chrysopolis or City of Gold, and this name appears in the medieval chronicles as Grisopolis. In 872 Carloman granted the city to bishop Widiboldus with the title of count. During the 11th, 12th, and 13th centuries Parma had its full share of the Guelf and Ghibelline struggles, and also carricd on repeated hostilities with Borgo San Donnino and Piacenza. As a republic its government was mainly in the hands of the Rossi, Pallavicino, Correggio, and Sanvitale families. The fruitless siege of Parma in 1248 was the last effort of the unfortunate Frederick I]. In 1803 the city became a lordship for Giberto da Correggio,

who laid the basis of its territorial power by conqucring Reggio, Brescello, and Guastalla, and was made commander-in-chief of the Guelfs by Robert of Apulia. The Correggio family never managed to keep possession of it for long, and in 1346 they sold it to the Visconti, and from them it passed to the Sforza. Becoming subject to Pope Julius IJ. in 1512, Parma remained (in spitc of the French occupa- tion from 1515 to 1521) a papal possession till 1545, when Paul ILI. (Alexander Farnese) invested his son Pierluigi with the duchies of Parma and Piacenza. There were eight dukes of Parma of the Farnese line—Pierluigi (died 1547), Ottavio (1586), Alessandro (1592), Ranuccio I. (1622), Odoardo (1646), Ranuccio II. (1694), Francesco (1727), Antonio (1731). See FARNEsE, vol. ix. p. 36. Autonio and Francesco both having died childless, the duchy passed to Charles of Bourbon (Don Carlos), infante of Spain, who, becom- ing king of Naples in 1735, surrendered Parma and Piacenza to Austria, but retained the artistic treasures of the Farnese dynasty which he had removed from Parma to Naples. Spain reconquered the duchies in the war of succession (1745) ; they were recovered by Austria in 1746; and Maria Theresa again surrendered them to Don Philip, infante of Spain, in 1748. Ferdinand, Philip's son, who succeeded under Dutillot's regency in 1765, saw his states occupied by the revolutionary forces of France in 1796, and had to purchase his life-interest with 6,000,000 lire and 25 of the best paintings in Parma. On his death in 1802 the duchies were incor- porated with the French republic and his son Louis became " king of Etruria." Parma was thus governed for several ycars by Moreau de Saint-Méry and by Junot. At the congress of Vienna, Parma, Piacenza, and Guastalla were assigned to Maric Louise (daughter of Francis I. of Austria and Napolcon's second consort), and on her death they passed in 1847 to Charles 11. (son of Louis of Etruria and Marie Louise, daughter of Charles 1V., king of Spain), The new duke, unwilling to yicld to the wishes of his people for greater political liberty, was soon compelled to take flight, and the duchy was fora time ruled by a provisional Government and by Charles Albert of Sardinia; but in April 1849 Baron d'Aspre, with 15,000 Austrians, took possession of Parma, and the ducal government was restored under Austrian protection. Charles I]. (who had in 1820 married Theresa, daughter of Victor Emmanuel of Sardinia) abdi- cated in favour of his son Charles I1I., March 14, 1849. On the

assassination of Charles III. in 1854, his widow, Marie Louise (daughter of Ferdinand, prince of Artois and duke of Berry), became regent for her son Robert. In 1860 his possessions were formally incorporated with the new kingdom of Italy.

The duchy of Parma in 1849 had an area of 2376 square miles, divided into five provinces—Borgo San Donnino, Valditaro, Parma, Lunigiana Parmeuse, and Piacenza. Its population in 1851 was 497,343, Under Marie Louise (1815-47) the territory of Guastalla (50 square miles) formed part of the duchy, but it was transferred in 1847 to Modena in exchange for the communes of Bagnone, Filattiera, &c., which went to coustitute the Lunigiana Parmense.

Parma has given birth to Sforza Pallavicino, Mazzola (Parmigiano) the painter, Antclami the architect, and Toschi the engraver.

Guicciardini, the historian, was governor of the city under Leo X.

See Affé, Storia di Parma, 1792-95; Scarabelli, Storia dei ducati dit Parma, Piacenza, ¢ Guastalla, 1858; Buttafuoco, Dizion. corogr. dei ducati, &c., 1853; Mon. hist. ad provincias Parmensem et Placentinam pertinentia, 1855, &e.; Ughelli, /taléa Sacra, vol. ii.

PARMENIDES or Exza, the most notable of the philosophers of the Eleatic succession, is said by Diogenes Laertius (presumably on the authority of Apollodorus) to have been “in his prime” in Olymp. 69 (= 504-500 B.c.); whence it would appear that he was born about 539. Plato indeed (Parmemdes, 127 B; compare Theextetus, 183 EF, Sophist, 217 C) makes Socrates, who was born 470 or 469, see and hear Parmenides when the latter was about sixty- five years of age, in which case he cannot have been born before 519; but, in the absence of evidence that any such meeting took place, it is reasonable to regard this as one of Plato’s many anachronisms. However this may be, Parmenides was a contemporary, perhaps a somewhat younger contemporary, of Heraclitus, with whom the first succession of physicists ended; while Anaxagoras and Empedocles, with whom the second succession of physicists began, as well as Protagoras, the

earliest of those humanists whose rejection of physical research prepared the way for the Platonic metaphysic, were very decidedly his juniors, Belonging, it is said, to a rich and distinguished family, Parmenides attached himself, at any rate for a time, to the aristocratic society or brotherhood which Pythagoras had established at Croton; and accordingly one part of his system, the physical part, is apparently Pythagorean. To Xenophanes, the founder of Eleaticism,—whom he must have known, even if he was never in any strict sense of the word his disciple,—Parmenides was, perhaps, more deeply indebted, as the theological speculations of that thinker unquestionably suggested to him the theory of Being and Not-Being, of the One and the Many, by which he sought to reconcile Ionian monism with Italiote dualism. Tradition relates that Parmenides framed laws for the Eleates, who each year took an oath to observe them.

Parmenides embodied his tenets in a short poem called Nature, of which fragments, amounting in all to about a hundred and sixty lines, have been preserved in the writings of Sextus Empiricus, Simplicius, and others. Nature is traditionally divided into three parts—the “Proem,” “Truth” (r& mpds dArjGecav), and “ Opinion ” (ra mpds dogav). In “Truth,” starting from the formula “the Ent (or existent) is, the Nonent (or non-existent) is not,” Parmenides attempted to distinguish between the unity or universal element of nature and its variety or particularity, insisting upon the reality of its unity, which IS therefore the object of knowledge, and upon the unreality of its variety, which is therefore the object, not of knowledge, but of opinion. In “Opinion” he pro- pounded a theory of the world of seeming and its develop- ment, pointing out, however, that, in accordance with the principles already laid down, these cosmological specula- tions do not pretend to anything more than probability. In spite of the contemptuous remarks of Cicero and Plutarch about Parmenides’s versification, Wature is not without literary merit. The introduction, though rugged, 18 forcible and picturesque ; and the rest of the poem is Written in a simple and effective style suitable to the sub-

j ject. It is, however, a summary rather than an exposi-

tion, and its brevity sometimes leads to obscurity. Partly for this reason, but partly also in consequence of the mutilations and the corruptions of the text, the interpreta-

tion of the system which Nature represents early became a matter of controversy.

“ Procm.”—In the “ Proem” the poet describes his journey from darkness to light. Borne in a whirling chariot, and attended by the daughters of the Sun, he reaches a temple sacred to an unnamed goddess (variously identified by the commentators with Nature, Wisdom, or Themis), by whom the rest of the poem is spoken. He must learn all things, she tells him, both truth, which is certain, and human opinions ; for, though in human opinions there can be uo confidence, they must be studied notwithstanding for what they are worth.

“ Truth.” —“ Truth” begins with the declaration of Parmenides’s principle in opposition to the principles of his predecessors. There are three ways of research, and three ways only. Of these, one asserts the non-existence of the existent and the existence of the non-existent [7.¢., Thales, Anaximander, and Anaximenes suppose the single element which they respectively postulate to be trans- formed into the various sorts of matter which they discover in the world around them, thus assuining the non-existence of that which is elemental and the existence of that which is non-elemental] ; another, pursucd by “restless” persons, whose “road returns upon itself,” assumes that a thing “is and is not,” *“is the same and not the same” [an obvious reference, as Bernays points out in the Lheinisehes Musewm, vii. 114 sq., to Heraclitus, the philosopher of flux]. These are ways of error, because they confound existence and non-existence. In contrast to them the way of truth starts from the proposition that “the Ent is, the Nonent is not. ”

On the strength of the fundamental distinction between the Ent and the Nonent, the goddess next announces certain characteristics of the former. The Ent is uncreated, for it cannot be derived either from the Ent or from the Nonent; it is imperishable, for it ° cannot pass into the Nonent; it is whole, indivisible, continuous, for nothing exists to break its continuity in space ; it is unchang- able [for nothing exists to break its continuity in time]; it is per- fect, for there is nothing which it can want; 1t never was,

nor will be, but only is; it is evenly extended in every direction, and there- fore a sphere, exactly balanced; it is identical with thought [z.¢., it is the object, and the sole object, of thought as opposed to sensation, sensation being concerned with variety and change].

As then the Entis one, invariable, and immutable, all plurality, variety, and mutation belong to the Nonent. Whence it follows that all the states and processcs which we commonly recognize — generation and destruction, being and not-being [predicated of things], change of place, alteration of colour, and the like—are no more than empty words. : ;

“Opinion,”—The investigation of the Ent [2.¢., the existent unity, extended throughout space and enduring throughout time, which reason discovers beneath the variety and the mutability of things] being now complete, it remains in ‘‘ Opinion” to describe the plu- rality of things, not as they are, for they are not, but as they seein to be. In the phenomenal world then, there are, it has been thought [and Parmenides accepts the theory, which appcars to be of Pythagorean origin], two primary elements—namely, fire, which is gentle, thin, homogeneous, and night [or earth], which is dark, thick, heavy. Of these elements [which, according to Aristotle, were, or rather were analogous to, the Ent and the Nonent re- spectively] all things consist, and from them they derive their several characteristics. The foundation for a cosmology having thus been laid in dualism, the poem went on to describe the genera- tion of “earth, and sun, and moon, and air that is common to all, and the milky way, and furthest Olympus, and the glowing stars”; but the scanty fragments which have survived suflice only to show that Parmenides regarded the universe as a series of coucentric rings or spheres composed of the two primary elements and of combina- tions of them, the whole system being directed by an unnamed goddess established at its centre. Next camea theory of animal development. This again was followed by a psychology, which made mind depend upon bodily structure, thought [as well as sensation, which was conceived to differ from thought only in respect of its object] being the excess of the one or the other of the two constituent elements, fire and night. “Such, opinion tells us, was the generation, such is the present existence, such will be the end, of those things to which men have given distinguishing names. ” ; f ue

In the truism “the Ent is, the Nonent is not,” dv eort,

pm dv od« éort, Parmenides breaks with his predecessors, the physicists of the Ionian succession, Asking them- selves—What is the material universe? they had replied respectively—It is water, it is pera£d vr, it is air, it is fire. Thus, while their question meant, or ought to have meant,

What is the single element which underlies the apparent plurality of the material world? their answers, Parmenides conceived, by attributing to the selected element various and varying qualities, reintroduced the plurality which the question sought to eliminate. If we would discover that which is common to all things at all times, we must, le submitted, exclude the differences of things, whether simultaneous or successive. Hence, whereas his prede- cessors had confounded that which is universally existent with that which is not universally existent, he proposed to distinguish carefully between that which is universally existent and that which is not universally existent, between év and px év. The fundamental truism is the epigram- matic assertion of this distinction.

In short, the single corporeal element of the Ionian physicists was, to borrow a phrase from Aristotle, a per- manent ovcia having ra6y which change; but they either neglected the 7é@y or confounded them with the oicia. Parmenides sought to reduce the variety of nature toa single corporeal element; but he strictly discriminated the inconstant 74@y from the constant otaia, and, under- standing by “ existence” universal, invariable, immutable being, refused to attribute to the 7407 anything more than the semblance of existence.

Having thus discriminated between the permanent unity of nature and its superficial plurality, Parmenides pro- ceeded to the separate investigation of the Ent and the Nonent. The universality of the Ent, he conceived, necessarily carries with it certain characteristics. It is one; it is eternal; it is whole and continuous, both in time and in space; it is immovable and immutable; it is limited, but limited only by itself; it is evenly extended in every direction, and therefore spherical. These pro- positions having been reached, apart from particular experience, by reflexion upon the

fundamental principle, we have in them, Parmenides conceived, a body of infor- mation resting upon a firm basis and entitled to be called “truth.” Further, the information thus obtained is the sum total of “truth ;” for, as “existence” in the strict sense of the word cannot be attributed to anything besides the universal element, so nothing besides the universal element can properly be said to be “ known,”

If Parmenides’s poem had had “ Being” for its subject, it would doubtless have ended at this point. Its subject is, however, “ Nature”; and nature, besides its unity, has also the semblance, if no more than the semblance, of plurality. Hence the theory of the unity of nature is necessarily followed by a theory of its seeming plurality, that is to say, of the variety and mutation of things. The theory of plurality cannot indeed pretend to the certainty of the theory of unity, being of necessity untrustworthy, because it is the partial and inconstant representation of that which is partial and inconstant in nature. But, as the material world includes, together with a real unity, the semblance of plurality, so the theory of the material world includes, together with the certain theory of the former, a probable theory of the latter. “ Opinion” is then no mere excres- cence ; it is the necessary sequel to “ Truth.”

Thus, whereas the Ionians, confounding the unity and the plurality of the universe, had neglected plurality, and the Pythagoreans, contenting themselves with the reduc- tion of the variety of nature to a duality or a series of dualities, had neglected unity, Parmenides, taking a hint from Xenophanes, made the antagonistic doctrines supply one another’s deficiencies ; for, as Xenophanes in his theo- logical system had recognized at once the unity of God and the plurality of things, so Parmenides in his system of nature recognized at once the rational unity of the Ent and the phenomenal plurality of the Nonent.

The foregoing statement of Parmenides’s position differs

from Zeller’s account of it in two important particulars, First, whereas it has been assumed above that Xenophanes was theologian rather than philosopher, whence it would seem to follow that the philosophical doctrine

of unit originated, not with him, but with Parmenides, Zeller, supposing Xenophanes to have taught, not merely the unity of God, but also the unity of Being, assigns to Parmenides no more than an exacter conception of the doctrine of the unity of Being, the justification of that doctrine, and the denial of the plurality and the mutability of things. This view of the relations of Xenophanes and Parmenides ig hardly borne out by their writings ; and, though ancient authorities may be quoted in its favour, it would seem that in this case as in others they have fallen into the easy mistake of confounding successive phases of doctrine, " con- struing the utterances of the master in accordance with the principles of his scholar—the vague by the more definite, the simpler by the more finished and elaborate theory" (W. H. Thompson). Secondly, whereas it has been argued above that "Opinion" is necessarily included in the system, Zeller, supposing Parmenides to deny the Nonent even as a matter of opinion, regards that part of the poem which: has opinion for its subject as no more than a revised and improved statement of the views of opponents, introduced in order that the reader, having before him the false doctrine as well as the true one, may be led the more certainly to embrace the latter. In the judgment of the present writer, Parmenides, while he denied the real existence of plurality, recognized its apparent existence, and consequently, however little value he might attach to opinion, was bound to take account of it: "pour celui méme qui nie l'existence réelle de la nature," says Renouvier, "il reste encore 4& faire une histoire naturelle de Vapparence et de Villusion."

The teaching of Parmenides variously influenced both his immediate successors and subsequent thinkers, By his recognition of an apparent plurality supplementary to the real unity, he effected the transition from the monism of the first physical succession to the pluralism of the second. While Empedocles and Democritus are careful to emphasize their dissent from "Truth," it is obvious that "Opinion" is the basis of their cosmologies. The doctrine of the deceitfulness of "the undiscerning eye and the echoing ear" soon established itself, though the grounds upon which Anaxagoras, Empedocles, and Democritus maintained it were not those which were alleged by Parmenides. Indirectly, through the dialectic of his pupil and friend Zeno and otherwise, the doctrine of the in- adequacy of sensation led to the humanist movement, which for a time threatened to put an end to

philosophical and scientific speculation. But the positive influence of Parmenides's teaching was not yet exhausted. To say that the Platonism of Plato's later years, the Platonism of the Parmenides, the Philebus, and the Timezus, is the philosophy of Parmenides enlarged and reconstituted, may perhaps seem paradoxical in the face of the severe criticism to which Eleaticism is subjected, not only in the Parmenides, but also in the Sophist. The criticism was, however, pre- paratory to a reconstruction. Thus may be explained the selection of an Eleatic stranger to be the chief speaker m the latter, and of Parmenides himself to take the lead in the former. In the Sophist criticism predominates over recon- struction, the Zenonian logic being turned against the Parmenidean metaphysic in such a way as to show that both the one and the other need revision: see 241 D, 244 B sq., 257 B sg., 258 D. In particular, Plato taxes Parmenides with his inconsistency in attributing (as he certainly did) to the fundamental unity extension and sphericity, so that "the worshipped ér is after all a pitiful py dv" (W. H. Thompson). In the Parmenides reconstruc-

|

— —

tion predominates over criticism—the letter of Eleaticism being here represented by Zeno, its spirit, as Plato con- ceived it, by Parmenides. Not the least important of the results obtained in this dialogue is the discovery that, whereas the doctrine of the "one" and the "many" is suicidal and barren so long as the "solitary one" and the "indefinitely many" are absolutely separated (137 C sq. and 163 B sq.), it becomes consistent and fruitful as soon as a "definite plurality" is interpolated between them (142 B sq. 157 B sq., 160 B sg.). In short, Parmenides was no idealist, but Plato recognized in him, and rightly, the precursor of idealism.

Bibliography.—The fragments have been edited and annotated by G. G. Fiilleborn (Fragmente des Parmenides, Zillichau, 1795), C. A. Brandis (Commentationes Eleaticw, Altona, 1813), 8. Karsten (Philos. Grecor. Reliquiz, I., ii, Amsterdam, 1885), F. W. A. Mullach (Aristotelis de Melis. Xenoph. et Gorg. disp. cum Elcati- corum fragm., Berlin, 1845; reprinted in

the Fragmenta Philos. Grezcor., Paris, 1860, i. 109-130), T. Vatke (Parmenidis doctrina qualis fuerit, diss. inaug., Berlin, 1864), and H. Stein ("Die Frag- mente des Parmenides wep) dicews," in the Symbola Philologorum Bonnensium in honorcm F. Ritschelii collecta, Leipsic, 1867, 11. 763- 806). The study of Karsten and Stein jointly is recommended. The well-known Historia Philosophie Gr. et Rom. of Ritter and Preller contains all the important fragments. The extant remains have been translated into English hexameters by T. Davidson (Journal of Speculative Philosophy, St Louis, Mo., 1870, iv. 1-16), and paraphrased in English prose by W. L. Courtney (Studies in Philosophy, London, 1882, pp. 1-25).

The philosophical system has been treated by several of the writers already mentioned, especially Brandis, Karsten, and Vatke, by F. Riaux (Hssai sur Parménide d'Elée, Paris, 1840), and by the historians of Greek philosophy, of whom it will suffice here to men- tion C. A. Brandis (Handb. d. Griechisch-Rimischen Philosophic, Berlin, 1835), G. W. F. Hegel (Vorlesungen iiber d. Geschichte d. Philosophie, Berlin, 1840), Ch, Renouvier (Manuel de Philosophie Angienne, Paris, 1844), L. Striimpell (Gesch. d. theoretischen Philo- sophic d. Griechen, Leipsic, 1854), J. F. Ferrier (Lectures on Greek Philosophy, Edinburgh, 1866), J. E. Erdmann (G@rundriss d. Gesch. d. Philosophie, 2d ed., Berlin, 1869), A. Schwegler (Gesch. d. Griech. Philos., 2d ed., Tiibingen, 1870), F. Ueberweg (Grundriss d. Gesch. d. Philosophie, 4th ed., Berlin, 1871 ; English translation, 3d ed., London, 1880), E. Zeller (Die Philosophie d. Griechen, 4th ed., Leipsic, 1876; English translation, Presocratic Philosophy, London, 1881). On the cosmology, see A. B. Krische (Die theolo- gischen Lehren d. Griechischen Denker, Gottingen, 1840, pp. 97- 116). On the relations of Eleaticism and Platonism, see W. H. Thompson, "On the Genuineness of Plato's Sophist," in Jour. of Philol., viii. 303 sq. (H. JA.)

PARMENIO (Ilappeviwv), a distinguished Macedonian general, born about 400 B.c., was the son of Philotas, and

first appears in history as a favourite counsellor of Philip,

in the course of whose reign he obtained a great victory over the Illyrians (356 B.c.), successfully upheld, at the head of an army, the Macedonian influence in Eubcea (342), and was appointed one of the commanders of the

force that was sent to secure a footing in Asia, and to prepare for the future reduction of that country (336 B.c.). His influence became still greater in the succeeding reign; at Alexander's council table he was always heard with deference, and in the field he was virtually second in command. He led the left wing of the army in the battles of the Granicus, Issus, and Arbela ; and, while the king himself continued the pursuit of Darius into the wastes of Parthia and Hyrcania, Parmenio was entrusted with the task of completing the conquest of Media. Here he was stabbed by Cleander at the instance of the king, in 330, under circumstances which have been elsewhere described (see ALEXANDER, vol. i. p. 483).

PARMIGIANO (1504-1540). The name of this cele- brated painter of the Lombard school was, in full, Girolamo Francesco Maria Mazzuoli, or Mazzola; he dropped the name Girolamo, and was only known as Francesco. He has been more commonly named Il Parmigiano (or its diminutive, Il Parmigianino), from his native city, Parma. Francesco, born on 11th January 1504, was the son of a Painter. Losing his father in early childhood, he was

brought up by two uncles, also painters, Michele and Pier-[ario Mazzola. His faculty for the art developed at a very boyish age, and he addicted himself to the style of Correggio, who visited Parma in 1519. He did not, how- ever, become an imitator of Correggio; his style in its maturity may be regarded as a fusion of Correggio with Raphael and Giulio Romano, and thus fairly original. Even at the age of fourteen (Vasari says sixteen) he had painted a Baptism of Christ, surprisingly mature. Before the age of nineteen,*vhen he migrated to Rome, he had covered with frescos seven chapels in the church of 8. Giovanni Evangelista, Parma. Prior to starting for the city of the popes in 1523, he deemed it expedient to execute some specimen pictures. One of these was a portrait of himself as seen in a convex mirror, with all the details of divergent perspective, &c., wonderfully exact,—a work which, both from this curiosity of treatment and from the beauty of the sitter—for Parmigiano was then "more like an angel than a man"—could not fail to attract. Arrived in Rome, he presented his specimen pictures to the pope, Clement VII., who gladly and admiringly

accepted them, and assigned to the youthful genius the painting of the Sala de' Pontefici, the ceilings of which had been already decorated by Giovanni da Udine. Patrons were willing to regard him as a second Raphael for art and for sweetness of manner, and he was almost as skilful at lute-playing as at painting; but, while fortune was winning him with her most insinuating smiles, the utter ruin of the sack by the Constable de Bourbon and his German and other soldiers overtook both Rome and Parmigiano. At the date of this hideous catastrophe he was engaged in painting that large picture which now figures in the London National Gallery, the Vision of St Jerome (with the Baptist pointing upward and backward to the Madonna and infant Jesus in the sky). It is said that through all the crash and peril of this barbarian irruption Parmigiano sat quietly before his vast panel, painting as if nothing had happened. A band of German soldiery burst into his apartment, breathing fire and slaughter ; but, struck with amazement at the sight, and with some reverence for art and her votary (the other events of the siege forbid us to suppose that reverence for religion had any part in it), they calmed down, and afforded the painter all the protection that he needed at the moment. Their captain, being something of a connoisseur, exacted his tribute, however—a large number of designs. Rome was now no place for Parmigiano. He left with his uncle, intending apparently to return to Parma ; but, staying in Bologna, he settled down there for a while, and was induced to remain three or four years. Here he painted for the nuns of St Margaret his most celebrated altarpiece (now in the Academy of Bologna), the Madonna and Child, with Margaret and other saints. This work became the idol of the Caracci and their school—Guido professing his preference for it even over the St Cecilia of Raphael. ;

Spite of the great disaster of Rome, the life of Mazzola had hitherto been fairly prosperous—the admiration which he excited being proportionate to his charm of person and manner, and to the precocity and brilliancy (rather than depth) of his genius; but from this time forward he became an unfortunate, and it would appear a soured and self-neglectful, man. Greatly to his chagrin, a number of his drawings were stolen by his assistant for engraving purposes, Antonio da Trento. He painted, from observa- tion without sittings, a portrait of the emperor Charles V. crowned by Fame, but through some mismanagement lost the advantages which it had bidden fair

to procure him. In 1531 he returned to Parma, and was commissioned to execute an extensive series of frescos in the choir of the

church of 8. Maria della Steccata. These were to be com- pleted in November 1532; and half-payment, 200 golden scudi, was made to him inadvance. A ceiling was allotted to him, and an arch in front of the ceiling; on the arch he painted six figures—two of them in full colour, and four in monochrome—Adam, Eve, some Virtues, and the famous figure (monochrome) of Moses about to shatter the tables of the law. But, after five or six years from the date of the contract, Parmigiano had barely made a good beginning with his stipulated work. According to Vasari, he neglected painting in favour of alchemy—he laboured over futile attempts to " congcal mereury," being in a hurry to get rich anyhow. It is rather difficult to believe that the various graphic and caustic phrases which Vasari bestows upon this theory of the facts of-Mazzola's life are altogether gratuitous and wide of the mark ; nevertheless the painter's principal biographer, the Padre Affd, undertook to refute Vasari's statements, and most subsequent writers have accepted Affo's conclusions. Whatever the cause, Parmi- giano failed to fulfil his contract, and was imprisoned in de- fault. Promising to amend, he was released ; but, instead of redeeming his pledge, he decamped to Casal Maggiore, in the territory of Cremona. Here, according even to Vasari, he relinquished alchemy, and resumed painting ; yet he still hankered (or is said by Vasari to have hankered) after his retorts and furnaces, lost all his brightness, and presented a dim, poverty-stricken, hirsute, and uncivilized aspect. A fever carried him off on 24th August 1540, before he had completed his thirty-seventh year. By his own desire, he was buried naked in the church of the Servites called La Fontana, near Casal Maggiore.

Grace has always and rightly been regarded as the chief artistic

endowment of Parmigiano,—grace whicli is genuine as an expression of the painter's nature, but partakes partly of the artificial and affected in its developments. ''Un po' di grazia de] Parmigia- nino" (a little, or, as we might say, just a spice, of Parmigianino's grace) was among the ingredients which Agostino Caracci's famed sonnet desidcrates for a perfect picture.

Mazzola constantly made many studies of the same figure, in order to get the most graceful attainable form, movement, and drapery—the last being a point in which he was very successful. The proportions of his figures are over-long for the truth of nature—the stature, fingers, and neck ; one of his Madonnas, now in tlie Pitti Gallery, is cur- rently named ‘‘ La Madonna del collo lungo.” He used to ponder long over a picturc,~~and construct it in his head before he began actual work upon it; he then proceeded rapidly, with a resolute pencil, his great exercise in drawing standing him in good stead. His pictures were executed with diligence and finish, although he was not on the whole a sedulous worker. Neither expression nor colour is a strong point in his works; the figures in his composi~~ tions are generally few—the chief exception being the picture of Christ Preaching to the Multitude. He was good at portraits and at landscape backgrounds, and famous for drawings; he etched a few plates, being apparently the earliest Italian painter who was also an etcher ; but the statement that he produced several woodcuts does not seem to be correct. _ The most admired easel-picture of Parmigiano is the Cupid Mak- ing a Bow, with two children at his feet, one crying, and the other laughing. This was painted in 1536 for Francesco Boiardi of Parma, and is now in the gallery of Vienna. There are various replicas of it, and some of these may perhaps be from Mazzola’s own hand. Of his portrait-painting, two interesting examples are the likeness of Amcrigo Vespucci (after whom America is named) in the Studj Gallery of Naples, and the painter’s own portrait in the Uffizi of Florence. One of Parmigiano’s principal pupils was his cousin, Girolamo di Michele Mazzola ; probably some of the works attributed to Francesco are really by Girolamo. (W. M. R.)

PARNASSUS, a mountain of Greece, in the south of Phocis, rising over the town of Delphi. It had two pro- munent peaks, Tithorea and Lycoreia, besides smaller ones, Hyampeia, Nauplia, &c. Parnassus was one of the most holy mountains in Greece, hallowed by the worship of Apollo, of the Muses, and of the Corycian nymphs, and by the orgies of the Bacchantes. The Delphic oracle, the Castalian fountain, and the Corycian cave were all situated among the clefts in its densely wooded sides.

PARNELL, Tomas (1679-1718), has a place in literature among the minor Queen Anne poets. He was a man of some private fortune, being the head of an English

‘family settled in Ireland, and inheriting landed property

both there and in Cheshire. Born in Dublin in 1679, and educated at Trinity College, he took orders and obtained various preferments in the Irish Church. But bothas a landowner and a clergyman he was an absentee, and spent most of his time in London, where he was patronized by Harley, and received into the intimate friendship of Swift and Pope. He was a member of the Scriblerus Club, and co-operated in burlesquing the “Dunces” and defending the Tory ministry, at the same time attaining some repute in the London pulpits as a preacher. An easy-going wit, with interests mainly in literature and society, he made his peace with the Whigs on the accession of George, but still continued his alliance with Pope. When Pope published his Homer, Parnell produced a translation of the Battle of the Frogs and Mice (1717), and indirectly defended Pope against his critics in the accompanying “remarks of Zoilus” on the principles of translation. After his death in 1718— he died on his way to a living in Ireland—Pope published a collection of his poems. They are nearly all translations and adaptations. The best known of them, Zhe Hermit, is sometimes overpraised on the supposition that it is original; all that Parnell did was to trick out a tale from the Gesta Romanorum with reflexions in the “elevated diction” of the period. “ His praise,” Johnson says with justice, “must be derived from the easy sweetness of his diction ; in his verses there is more happiness than pains ; he is sprightly without effort, and always delights, though he never ravishes ; everything is proper, yet every- thing seems casual.”

PARNY, Evarists DistreE DE ForcEs, VIcoMTE DE (1753-1814), was born in the Isle of Bourbon on 6th February 1753. He was sent to France at nine years old, was educated at Rennes, and in 1771 entered the army. He was, however, shortly recalled to Bourbon, where he fell in love with a young lady whom he celebrated poetically as Eléonore. His earlier biographers state her to have been called Esther de Baif, while the later give her the name of Mdlle. Troussaille. His suit was not favoured by the lady’s family. He returned to France, published his Poéstes Hrotiques in 1778, was

saluted by Voltaire on his last visit to Paris as “ Mon cher Tibulle,” and acquired at once a reputation for graceful and natural verse-writing which, though he lived many years and pro- duced much inferior work, never entirely left him. He had some fortune, and he established himself near Paris. The Revolution impaired his means, but did not otherwise trouble him; indeed he obtained an appointment under it. In 1796 (he had published much else, but nothing of importance) appeared the Guerre des Dieux, a poem in the style of Voltaire’s Pucelle, directed against Christianity, and containing some wit, but much more that is simply dull and indecent. It commended itself to the times, however, and the author is said to have afterwards amplified it into a Christianide, the manuscript of which the Government of Louis XVIIL., according to the story, bought for thirty thousand francs and destroyed. Parny devoted himself in his later years almost entirely to the religious or anti-religious and political burlesque, Under the consulate and the empire he turned his wrath from Christianity to England, and produced in 1805 an extra- ordinary allegoric poem attacking George IIL, his family, and his subjects, under the eccentric title of “Goddam! Goddam ! par un French-dog.” The body of the poem 1s quite worthy of its title. Another and longer poem called Les Rose-Croix, though less extravagant, is still less read- able; and indeed all Parny’s later work is valueless except

as a curiosity. His early love poems or elegies, however, and some slight miscellaneous work of his more mature years, show, with something of the artificiality of the time, a remarkable grace and ease, a good deal of tender- ness, and not inconsiderable fancy and wit. One famous piece, the Hlegy on a Young Girl, is scarcely to be excelled in its kind. In the natural comparison of Parny with his younger English contemporary, Moore, whom he in many ways resembles, the palm must be given to the French poet for precision and enduring elegance of style at his best, though he has less melody and tenderness, and though he condescended to much work far inferior both morally and artistically to the worst of Moore’s.

There is no complete edition of Parny’s works, and the lossis small, There are several good selections containing alinost everything of real value,

among which may be mentioned that of Garnier Freres.

PARODY (rrapwéia, literally a song sung beside, a comic parallel) may be defined as an imitation of the form or style of a serious writing in matter of a meaner kind so as to produce a ludicrous effect. The lowest savages show a turn for comic mimicry, and it is almost as old in European literature as serious writing. The Batracho- myomachia, or " Battle of the Frogs and Mice," a travesty of the heroic epos, was ascribed at one time to Homer himself ; and it is probably at least as old as the 5th century B.c. The great tragic poetry of Greece very soon provoked the parodist. Aristophanes parodied the style of Euripides in the Acharnians with a comic power that has never been surpassed. The debased grand style of medizeval romance was parodied in Don Quixote. Shakespeare parodied the extravagant heroics of an earlier stage, and was himself parodied by Marston, incidentally in his plays and elaborately in a roughly humorous burlesque of Venus and Adonis. The wits of the Queen Anne age succeeded better in mock-heroics than in serious composition. A century later the most celebrated parodists were the brothers Smith, whose [ejected Addresses may be regarded as classic in this kind of artificial production. The Victorian age has pro- duced a plentiful crop of parodists in prose and in verse, in dramatic poetry and in lyric poetry. By common con- sent, the most subtle and dexterous of metrical parodists is the late Mr C. S. Calverley, who succeeded in reproducing not merely tricks of phrase and metre, but even manner- istic turns of thought. Johnson's dictum about pastoral poetry, that most of it is "easy, vulgar, and therefore dis- gusting," might be applied to parody; but Calverley would escape the censure.

PAROS, or Paro, an island in the gean Sea, one of the largest of the group of the Cyclades, with a population of 8000. It lies to the west of Naxos, from which it is Separated by a channel about 6 miles broad, and with which it is now grouped together, in popular language, under the common name of Paronaxia. It is in 37° N. lat. and 25° 10' E. long. Its greatest length from north-east to south-west is 13 miles, and its greatest breadth 10 miles. It is formed of a single mountain about 2400 feet high, sloping evenly down on all sides to @ Maritime plain, which is broadest on the north-east and south-west sides, The island is composed of marble, though gneiss and mica-schist are to be found in a few Places. Grey and bare rises

the mountain, but on the level ground as well as on some of the lower slopes corn and vines are cultivated with success. A sweetish dark- ted wine is exported in considerable quantities. The Island is almost treeless ; the olives, which formerly yielded abundance of oil, were cut down by the Venetians for fire- Wood in the war of Candia. The capital, Paroikia or Parikia (Italian, Parechia), situated on a bay on the north- West side of the island, occupies the site of the ancient capital Paros. Its harbour admits small vessels; the

entrance is dangerous on account of rocks. Houses built in the Italian style with terraced roofs, shadowed by luxuriant vines, and surrounded by gardens of oranges and pomegranates, give to the town a picturesque and pleasing aspect. Here on a rock beside the sea are the remains of a medizval castle built almost entirely of ancient marble remains. Similar traces of antiquity in the shape of bas-reliefs, inscriptions, columns, &ec., are numerous in the town. Outside the town is the church of Katapoliani (77 “ExarovramrvAtavy), well known in the Archipelago. On the north side of the island is the bay of Naousa (Naussa) or Agoussa, forming a safe and roomy harbour. In ancient times it was closed by a chain or boom. Another good harbour is that of Drios on the south-east side, where the Turkish fleet used to anchor on its annual voyage through the Augean. The three villages of Tragoulas, Marmora, and Kepidi (Kyzié:, pronounced Tschipidi), situated on an open plain on the eastern side of the island, and rich in remains of antiquity, probably occupy the site of an ancient town. They are known together as the “ villages of Kephalos,” from the steep and lofty headland of Kephalos. On this headland stands an abandoned monastery of St Anthony, amidst the ruins of a medizval castle, which belonged to the Venetian family of the Venieri, and was gallantly though fruitlessly defended against the Turkish general Barbarossa in 1537. In antiquity the island contained a famous altar, the sides of which were said to be a stadium (606 feet) long. But the celebrated marble quarries are the real centre of interest of the island. They le on the northern side of the mountain anciently known as Marpessa (afterwards Capresso), a little below a former convent of St Mina. The marble, which was employed by Phidias, Praxiteles, and other great Greek sculptors, was obtained by means of subterranean

quarries driven horizontally or at a descend- ing angle into the rock, and the marble thus quarried by lamplight got the name of Lychnites, Jiychneus (from lychnos, a lamp), or Lygdos (Plin., H. W., xxxvi. 5, 14; Plato, Hryxias, 400 D; Athen, v. 2050; Diod. Sic., 2, 52). Several of these tunnels are still to be seen. At the entrance to one of them is a celebrated bas- relief dedicated to the Nymphs by one Adamas, of the Thracian tribe of the Odryse ; it represents a festival of Silenus or Pan.

History.—Like the rest of the Cyclades, Paros seems to have been peopled at an early date by Carians (Herod., i. 171; Thuc., i. 4) —perhaps also by the Phoenicians, whom we know from the Greek historians to have occupied other islands in the Algean, including the neighbouring Thera (Herod., ii. 44; iv. 147; compare INOWBVE. 5 Bl 8). The institution of a form of sacrifice to the Graces, apparently peculiar to Paros, at which neither garlands nor flutes were made use of, was ascribed to Minos. The story that Paros was colonized by one Paros of Parrhasia, who brought with him a colony of Arca- dians to the island (Heraclides, De Rebus Publicis, 8 ; Steph. Byz., s.. Wdpos), is onc of those etymologizing fictions in which Greek legend abounds. Ancient names of the island are said to have been Plateia (or Pactia), Demetrias, Zacynthus, Hyria, Hyleessa, Minoa, and Cabarnis (Steph. Byz.). From Athens the island afterwards received a colony of Ionians (Schol. Dionys., Per., 525; comp. Herod., i. 171), under whom it attained a high degree of prosperity. It sent out colonies to Thasos (Thuc., iv. 104; Strabo, 487) and Parium on the Hellespont. In the former colony, which was planted in thejl5th or 18th Olympiad, the poet Archilochus, a native of Paros, is said to have taken part. As late as 385 B.c. the Parians, in conjunction with Dionysius of Syracuse, founded a colony on the Illyrian island of Pharos (Diod. Sic., xv. 18). So high was the reputation of the Parians that they were chosen by the people of Miletus to arbitrate in a party dispute (Herod., v. 28 sq.). Shortly before the Persian War Paros seems to have been a depend- ency of Naxos (Herod., v. 31). In the Persian War Paros sided with the Persians and sent a trireme to Marathon to support them. In retaliation, the capital Paros was besieged by an Athenian fleet under Miltiades, who demanded a fine of 100 talents. But the town offered a vigorous resistance, and the Athenians were obliged to sail away after a siege of twenty-six days, during which they had laid the island waste. It was at a temple of Demeter Thesmo-

phorus in Paros that Miltiades received the hurt of which he afterwards died (Herod. vi. 183-136). By means of an inscrip- tion Ross was enabled to identify the site of the temple; it lies, in agreement with the deseription of Herodotus, on a low hill beyond the boundaries of the town. Paros also sided with Xerxes against Greeee, but aftcr the battle of Artemisinm the Parian contingent remained in Cythnos watching the progress of events (Herod., vill. 67). For this unpatriotic conduct the islanders were punished by Themistoeles, who exacted a heavy fine (Herod., viii, 112). | Under the Athenian naval confedcracy, Paros paid the highest tribute of all the islands subject to Athens, —30 talents annually, according to the assessment of Olymp. 88, 4 (429 B.c.). Little is known of the constitution of Paros, but inscriptions seem to show that it was democratic, with a senate (Bowle) at the head of affairs (Corpus Inscript., 2376-2383 ; Ross, Inser. Ined., ii. 147, 148). In 410 B.C. the Athenian general Theramenes found an oligarchy at Paros ; he deposed it and restored the democracy (Diod. Sic., xili. 47). Paros was included in the new Athenian confederacy of 378 B.c., but after- wards, along}with Chios, it renounced its connexion with Athens, probably about 357 B.C. Thenceforward the island lost its political importance. From the inseription of Adule we learn that the Cyclades, and consequently Paros, were subject to the Ptolemies of Egypt. Afterwards they passed undcr the rule of Rome. When the Latins made themselves masters of Constantinople, Paros, like the rest, became subject to Venice. In 1537 it was conquered by the Turks. The island now belongs to the kingdom of Greece.

See Tournefort, Voyage du Levant, vol. i. p. 2382 sq., Lyons, 1717; Clarke, Travels, vol. iii, London, 18145 Leake, Travels in Northern Greece, vol. iti. p. 84 sg., London, 1835; Prokesch, Denkwiirdigkeiten, vol. ii. p. 19 sg., Stutt- gart, 1836; Ross, Reisen auf den griechischen Inseln, vol. i. p. 44 sq., Stuttgart and Tubingen, 1840; Fiedler, Reise durch alle Thetle des Kénigreiches Griechen- land, vol. ii. p. 179 sq., Leipsic, 1841; Bursian, Geographie von Griecheniand, vol. ii. p. 483 sg., Leipsic, 1872.

PARQUETRY is a kind of mosaic of wood used for ornamental flooring. Materials contrasting in colour and grain, such as oak, walnut, cherry, lime, pine, é&c., are employed; and in the more expensive kinds the richly

coloured tropical woods are also used. The patterns of parquet flooring are entirely geometrical and angular (squares, triangles, lozenges, &c.), curved and irregular forms being avoided on account of the expense and difficulty of fitting. There are two classes of parquetry in use—veneers and solid parquet. The veneers are usually about a quarter of an inch in thickness, and are laid over already existing floors. Solid parquet of an inch or more in thickness consists of single pieces of wood grooved and tongued together, having consequently the pattern alike on both sides. It forms in itself a sufficient floor of great strength and durability; but veneer, on the other hand, is generally more elegant and complex in design.

PARR. This name was originally applied to small Salmonoids which are abundant in British rivers, and were for a long time considered to constitute a distinct species (Salmo salmulus). They possess the broad head, short snout, and large eye characteristic of young Salmonoids, and are ornamented on the sides of the body and tail with about eleven or more broad dark cross-bars, the so-called parr-marks. However, John Shaw proved, by experiment, that these fishes represent merely the first stage of growth of the salmon, before it assumes, at an age of two years, and when about six inches long, the silvery smolt-dress preparatory to its first migration to the sea. The parr- marks are produced by a deposit of black pigment in the skin, and appear very soon after the exclusion of the fish from the egg; they are still visible for some time below the new coat of scales of the smolt-stage, but have entirely disappeared on the first return of the young salmon from the sea. Although the juvenile condition of the parr is now almost universally admitted, it is a remarkable fact, which has not yet received a satisfactory explanation, that many male parr, from 7 to 8 inches long, have their sexual organs fully developed, and that their milt has all the fertilizing properties of the seminal fluid of a full-grown and sexually matured salmon. On the other hand, no female parr has ever been obtained with mature ova. Not only the salmon, but also the other species of Salmo, the grayling, and probably also the Coregoni, pass through a

parr-stage of growth. The young of all these fishes are barred, the salmon having generally eleven or more bars, and the parr of the migratory trout

from nine to ten, or two or three more than the river-trout. In other respects these parr are very similar to one another ; and in the first year of their life it is very difficult and sometimes almost impossible to ascertain their parentage, whilst in the second year the specific characteristics become more and more conspicuous. In some of the small races or species of river-trout the parr-marks are retained throughout life, but subject to changes in intensity of colour.

PARR, Samvuen (1747-1825), the son of Samuel Parr, surgeon at Harrow-on-the-Hill, was born there 15th January 1747. At Easter 1752 he was sent to Harrow School as a free scholar, where he made the acquaintance of many pupils, such as Bishop Bennet, Sir William Jones, and Warburton Lytton, who became eminent in after life. They read in the same class, they shared in the same sports, and their friendship lasted from youth to age. As Parr was destined for his father's profession, he was removed from school in the spring of 1761, and for the next few years assisted his father in his practice. When the old surgeon realized that his son was but ill- adapted for this pursuit, the boy was sent to Emmanuel College, Cambridge (autumn of 1765), but on his father's death shortly afterwards he was compelled, through lack of means, to return to Harrow. From February 1767 to the close of 1771 he acted as head assistant at Harrow School to Dr Sumner, a teacher whom he idolized, and had under his care many pupils, of whom Sheridan was the best known. When the headmaster died in September 1771 Parr became a candidate for the place, but was rejected, chiefly on account of his youth, whereupon he started another school at Stanmore, and drew after him about forty of his former scholars. After a trial of five years he found himself unable to bear up against the attractions of his old establishment, and dismissed the boys entrusted to his charge, becoming first the headmaster of Colchester Grammar School (1776-78) and then of Norwich School (1778-86). The small rectory of Asterby in Lincolnshire was conferred upon him in 1780, and it was followed three years later by the vicarage of Hatton near Warwick. Though he exchanged this latter benefice for Wadenhoe in Northamptonshire in 1789, he stipulated to be allowed to reside, as assistant curate, in the parsonage of Hatton. In this retirement he spent the rest of his days, cheered by the attractions of an excellent library, described by Mr H. G. Bohn in Bibliotheca Parriana (1827), and the converse of his classical friends, some of whom, like Porson

and E. H. Barker, passed many months in his company. The degree of LL.D. was conferred on him by the university of Cambridge in 1781. Parr died at Hatton vicarage, 6th March 1825, and was buried in the chancel of its church. He had to middle age felt the pressure of poverty, but through the gift in 1788 of the prebendal stall of Wenlock

Barns in St Paul's Cathedral (then worth only a reserved

rent of £20 a year, but on the lapse of the lease in 1804 a preferment of considerable value), and through the purchase for him by his friends in 1789 of an annuity of £300, he died possessed of a large fortune.

Dr Parr's writings fill several volumes, but they are all beneath the reputation which he acquired through the variety of his know- ledge and the dogmatism of his conversation. The chief of them are his character of Charles James Fox; his Latin preface, a long eulogy of Burke, North, and Fox, to a new edition of three books of Bellendenus ; and his reprint of the Tracts of Warburton and a Warburtonian, not admitted into their works, a volume still not without interest for its scathing exposure of Warburton and Hurd. The character of Parr's compositions may be gathercd from a passage in the Edinburgh Revicw (October 1802) on his Spital ser- mon, "a discourse of no common length… . an immeasurable mass of notes which appear to concern every learned thing, every

learned man, and almost every unlearned man since the beginning of the world." Even amid the terrors of the French Revolution he adhered to Whiggism, and his correspondence included every man of emitience, either literary or political, who adopted the same creed. There are two memoirs of his life, one by the Rev. William Field (1828, 2 vols.), the other, with his works and his letters, by John Johnstone (1828, 8 vols.); and E. H. Barker published in 1828-29 two volumes of Parriana, a confused mass of information on Parr and his friends. An essay on his life is included in De Quincey's works, vol. v., and a little volume of the Aphorisms, Opinions, and Reficctions of the late Dr Parr appeared in 1826. PARRAMATTA, a town of New South Wales, at the head of the navigation of the Parramatta river, and 14 miles to the west of Sydney, with which it is connected by

railway, was one of the earliest inland settlements, and the seat of many of the public establishments connected with the working of the convict system. Many of these still remain in another form (the district hospital, the lunatic asylum, the gaol, two asylums for the infirm and destitute, the Protestant and Catholic orphan schools), involving a Government expenditure which partly sustains the business of the town. Parramatta was one of the earliest seats of the tweed manufacture, but its principal industrial dependence has been on the fruit trade. With the exception of Prospect and Pennant Hills, where there is an outburst of trap rock, the surface soil is the disinte- gration of the Wainamatta shale, which is well suited for orangeries and orchards. The value of the annual fruit crop is estimated at £100,000. The earlier governors had their country residence near the town, but the domain is now a public park in the hands of the municipality. Close by was an early observatory where, in 1822, were made the observations for the Parramatta Catalogue, numbering 7385 stars, but it has long been abandoned. The Church of England grammar school (King's School), which accommodates ninety boarders, is on the north side of the river. The population in 1881 was 8453. PARRHASIUS, of Ephesus, was one of the greatest painters of Greece. He settled in Athens, and may be ranked among the Attic artists. The period of his activity is fixed by the anecdote which Xenophon records of the conversation between him and Socrates on the subject of art; he was therefore distinguished as a painter before 399 b.c. Seneca relates a tale that Parrhasius bought one of the Olynthians whom Philip sold into slavery, 346 B.c. (see OLYNTHUS), and tortured him in order to have a model for his picture of Prometheus; but the story, which is similar to one told of Michelangelo, is chronologically impossible. Another tale recorded of him describes his contest with Zeuxis. The latter painted some grapes so perfectly that birds came to peck at them. He then called on Parrhasius to draw aside the curtain and show his picture, but, finding that his rival's picture was the curtain itself, he acknowledged himself to be surpassed, for Zeuxis had deceived birds, but Parrhasius had deceived Zeuxis. The arrogance and vanity of Parrhasius are the subject of many other anecdotes. He dressed himself in the purple robe, golden crown, and staff of a king, called himself the prince, and boasted his descent from Apollo. As to his artistic position, it is impossible for us in the entire absence of direct evidence to do more than repeat the opinion of ancient critics, as retailed by Pliny. He was universally placed in the very first rank among painters. His

skilful drawing of outlines is especially praised, and many of his drawings on wood and parchment were preserved and highly valued by later painters for purposes of study. He first attained skill in making his figures appear to stand out from the background. His picture of Theseus adorned the Capitol in Rome. His other works, besides the obscene subjects with which he is said to have amused his leisure, are chiefly mythological groups. A picture of the Demos, the personified People of

ol

Athens, is famous ; according to the story, the twelve pro- minent characteristics of the people, though apparently quite inconsistent with each other, were distinctly expressed in this figure. The way in which this was accomplished is an insoluble riddle. PARROT, according to Prof. Skeat (Htymol. Dictionary,

422), from the French Perrot or Pierrot, a proper name and the diminutive of Pierre,! the name given generally to a large and very natural group of Birds, which for more than a score of centuries have attracted attention, not only from their gaudy plumage, but, at first and chiefly,

it would seem, from the readiness with which many of them learn to imitate the sounds they hear, repeating the words and even phrases of human speech with a fidelity that is often astonishing. It is said that no representation of any Parrot appears in Egyptian art, nor does any reference to a bird of the kind occur in the Bible, whence it has been concluded that neither painters nor writers had any know-. ledge of it. Aristotle is commonly supposed to be the first author who mentions a Parrot; but this is an error, for nearly a century earlier Ctesias in his Indica (cap. 3),? under the name of Birraxos (Bittacus), so neatly described a bird which could speak an “Indian” language—natur- ally, as he seems to have thought—or Greek—if it had

been taught so to do—about as big as a Sparrow-Hawk (Hierax), with a purple face and a black beard, otherwise blue-green (cyaneus) and vermilion in colour, so that there cannot be much risk in declaring that he must have had before him a male example of what is now commonly known as the Blossom-headed Parakeet, and to ornitho- logists as Paleornis

cyanocephalus, an inhabitant of many parts of India. Much ingenuity has been exercised in the endeavour to find the word whence this, and the later form of the Greek name, was derived, but to little or no purpose.

After Ctesias comes Aristotle's yurrdxn (Psittace), which Sundevall supposes him to have described only from hearsay, a view that the present writer is inclined to think insufficiently supported. But this matters little, for there can be no doubt that the Indian conquests of Alexander were the means of making the Parrot better known in Europe, and it is in reference to this fact that

another Eastern species of Palzornis now bears the name

of P. alexandri, though from the localities it inhabits it

could hardly have had anything to do with the Macedonian

hero. That Africa had Parrots does not seem to have been

discovered by the ancients till long after, as Pliny tells us

(vi. 29) that they were first met with beyond the limits of

Upper Egypt by explorers employed by Nero. These

birds, highly prized from the first, reprobated by the

moralist, and celebrated by more than one classical poet,

in the course of time were brought in great numbers to

Rome, and ministered in various ways to the luxury of the

age. Not only were they lodged in cages of tortoise-shell

DS a 1 "Parakeet" (in Shakespeare, 1 Hen. FV., ii. 3, 88, " Paraquito 2) is said by the same authority to be from the Spanish Perigquito or Perroqueto, a small Parrot, diminutive of Perico, a Parrot, which again may be a diminutive from Pedro, the proper name. Parakeet (spelt in various ways in

English) is usually applied to the smaller kinds of Parrots, especially those which have long tails, not as Perroquet in French, which is used as a general term for all Parrots, Perruche, or sometimes Perriche, being the ordinary name for what we call Parakeet. The old English “ Popinjay” and the old French Papegaut have almost passed out of use, but the German Papagei and Italian Papagaio still continue in vogue. These names can be traced to the Arabic Babaghd; but the source of that word is unknown. The Anglo-Saxon name of the Parret, a river in Somerset, is Pedreda or Pedrida, which at first sight looks as if it had to do with the proper name, Petrus; but Prof. Skeat believes there is no con- nexion between them—the latter portion of the word being rid, a stream.

2 The passage seems to have escaped the notice of all naturalists except Broderip, who mentioned it in his article “ Psittacide,” in the Penny Cyclopedia (vol. xix. p. 88).

and ivory, with silver wires, but they were professedly esteemed as delicacies for the table, and one emperor is said to have fed his lions upon them! But there would be little use in dwelling longer on these topics. With the decline of the Roman empire the demand for Parrots 1 Europe lessened, and so the supply dwindled, yet all knowledge of them was not wholly lost, and they are occasionally mentioned by one writer or another until in the 15th century began that career of geographical dis- covery which has since proceeded uninterruptedly. This immediately brought with it the knowledge of many more forms of these birds than had ever before been seen, for whatever races of men were visited by European naviga- tors——whether in the East Indies or the West, whether in Africa or in the islands of the Pacific—it was almost invariably found that even the most savage tribes had tamed some kind of Parrot; and, moreover, experience soon showed that no bird was more easily kept alive on board ship and brought home, while, if it had not the

merit of “speech,” it was almost certain to be of beautiful

plumage. Yet so numerous is the group that even now new species of Parrots are not uncommonly recognized, though, looking to the way in which the most secluded parts of the world are being ransacked, we must soon come to an end of this.

The home of the vast majority of Parrot-forms is unquestionably within the tropics, but the popular belief that Parrots are tropical birds only is a great mistake. In North America the Carolina Parakeet, Conurus carolinensis, at the beginning of the present century used to range in summer as high as the shores of Lakes Erie and Ontario— a latitude equal to that of the south of France ; and even within the last forty years it reached, according to trust-worthy information, the junction of the Ohio and the Mississippi, though now its limits have been so much curtailed that its occurrence in any but the Gulf States is doubtful. In South America, at least four species of Parrots are found in Chili or La Plata, and one, Conurus patagonus, is pretty common on the bleak coast of the Strait of Magellan. In Africa, it is true that no species is known to extend to within some ten degrees of the tropic of Cancer ; but Pzonias robustus inhabits territories lying quite as far to the southward of the tropic of Capricorn. In India the northern range of the group is only bounded by the slopes of the Himalaya, and further to the eastward Parrots are not only abundant over the whole of the Malay Archipelago, as well as Australia and Tasmania, but two very well-defined Families are peculiar to New Zealand and its adjacent islands (see KaxKaPpo, vol. xiii. p. 825; and Nestor, vol. xvii. p. 354). No Parrot has recently inhabited the Palearctic Region, and but one (the Conurus carolinensis, just mentioned) probably belongs to the Nearctic; nor are Parrots represented by many different forms in either the Ethiopian or the Indian Regions. In continental Asia the distribution of Parrots is rather remarkable. None extend further to the west- ward than the valley of the Indus,? which, considering the nature of the country in Baluchistan and Afghanistan, is perhaps intelligible enough ; but it is not so easy to under-

1 A few remains of a Parrot have been recognized from the Miocene of the Allier in France, by Prof. A. Milne-Edwards (Ois. Foss. France, ii. p. 525, pl. cc.), and are said by him to show the greatest resemblance to the common Grey Parrot of Africa, Psittacus erithacus, through having also some affinity to the Ring-necked Parakeet of the same country, Palwornis

torguatus. He refers them, however, to the same genus as the former, under the name of Psittacus verreauxti.

- The statements that have been made, and even repeated by writers of authority, as to the occurrence of “a green parrot” in Syria (Chesney, Exped. Survey Euphrates and Tigris, i. pp. 448, 537) and of a Parrot in Turkestan (Jour. As. Soc. Bengal, viii. p- 1007) originated with gentlemen who had no ornithological knowledge, and are evidently erroneous.

Ort

stand why none are found either in Cochin China op China proper ; and they are also wanting in the Philippine Islands, which is the more remarkable and _ instructive when we find how abundant they are in the groups a little further to the southward. Indeed Mr Wallace has wel] remarked that the portion of the earth’s surface which contains the largest number of Parrots, in proportion to its area, is undoubtedly that covered by the islands extending from Celebes to the Solomon group. “ The area of these islands is probably not one-fifteenth of that of the four tropical regions, yet they contain from one-fifth to one fourth of all the known Parrots” (Geogr. Distr. Animals, ii. p. 330). He goes on to observe also that in this area are found many of the most remarkable forms—all the red Lories, the great black Cockatoos, the pigmy Wasi- terne, and other singularities. In South America the species of Parrots, though numerically nearly as abundant, are far less diversified in form, and all of them seem capable of being referred to two or, at most, three sections. The species that has the widest range, and that by far, is the common Ring-necked Parakeet, Palzxornis torquatus, a well-known cage-bird which is found from the mouth of the Gambia across Africa to the coast of the Red Sea, as well as throughout the whole of India, Ceylon, and Burmah to Tenasserim.? On the other hand there are plenty of cases of Parrots which are restricted to an extremely small area—often an island of insignificant size, as Conurus xantholemus, confined to the island of St Thomas in the Antilles, and Palzornis exsul to that of Rodriguez in the Indian Ocean—to say nothing of the remarkable instance of Westor productus before mentioned (vol. xvii. p. 355). The systematic treatment of this very natural group of birds has long

been a subject of much difficulty, and the difference of opinion among those who have made it their study is most striking, for there is hardly an approach to unanimity to be found, beyond the somewhat general belief which has grown up within the last forty years that the Parrots should be regarded as forming a distinct Order of the Class, though there are some men, justly accounted authorities, who even question this much. A few system- atists, among whom Bonaparte was chief, placed them at the top of the Class, conceiving that they were the analogues of the Primatesamong mammals. Prof. Huxley has recog- nized the Psittacomorphe as forming one of the principal groups of Carinate birds, and, by whatever name we call them, that much seems to be evident. It will here, however, be unnecessary to discuss the exact rank which the Parrots as a groupshould hold, for sufficient on that score has already been said above (ORNITHOLOGY, p. 47), and it is quite enough of a task to consider the most natural or—if we cannot hope at present to reach that—at least the most expedient way of subdividing them. It must be admitted as a reproach to ornithologists that so little satisfactory progress has been made in this direction, for of that the existing differences of opinion—differences as wide as have ever existed in any branch of ornithic taxonomy—are sufficient proof. More- over, the result is all the more disheartening, seeing that there is no group of exotic birds that affords equal oppor- tunities for anatomical examination, since almost every genus extant, and more than two-thirds of the species, have within recent times been kept in confinement in one or another of our zoological gardens, and at their death have furnished subjects for dissection. Yet the laudable attempt

3 Itis right to state, however, that the African examples of this bird are said to be distinguishable from the Asiatic by their somewhat shorter wings and weaker bill, and hence they are considered by some authorities to form a distinct species or subspecies, P. docilis; but in thus regarding them the difference of locality seems to have influenced opinion, and without that difference they would scarcely have been separated, for in many other groups of birds distinctions so slight are regarded as barely evidence of local races.

ran O T

of M. Blanchard (Comptes' Rendus, xliii. 1097-1100 and xliv. 518-521) has not been regarded as successful, and it cannot be affirmed positively that the latest arrange- ment of the Psittac: is really much more natural than that planned by Buffon one hundred and twenty years ago. He wasof course unaware of the existence of some of the most remarkable forms of the group, in particular of Strigops and Nestor; but he began by making two great divisions of those that he did know, separating the Parrots of the Old World from the Parrots of the New, and subdividing each of these divisions into various sections somewhat in accordance with the names they had received in popular language—a practice he fol- lowed on many other occasions, for it seems to have been with him a belief that there is more truth in the discrimi- nation of the unlearned than the scientific are apt to allow. The result is that he produced a plan which is comparatively simple and certainly practical, while as just stated it cannot be confidently declared to be unnatural. However, not to go so far back as twenty years, in 1867-68 Dr Finsch published at Leyden an elaborate monograph of the Parrots,! regarding them asa Family, inwhich he admitted 26 genera, forming 5 Subfamilies :—(1) that composed of Strigops (Ka- KAPO, wt supr.) only; (2) that containing the crested forms or Cockatoos ; (3) one which he named Stttacinx, compris- ing all the long-tailed species—a somewhat heterogeneous assemblage, made up of Macaws (vol. xv. p. 130) and what are commonly known as Parakeets; (4) the Parrots proper with short tails; and (5) the so-called " brush- tongued" Parrots, consisting of the Lorixs (vol. xv. p. 7) and NusTors (ut sup.). Except in the characters of the last group he recognized none that were not external, and that fact is sufficient to cast suspicion on his scheme being natural. .

In 1874 the late Prof. Garrod communicated to the Zoological Society the results of his dissection of examples of 82 species of Parrots, which had lived in its gardens, and these results were published in its Proceedings for that year (pp. 586-598, pls. 70, 71). The principal points to which he attended were the arrangement of the carotid artery, and the presence or absence of an ambiens muscle, an oil-gland, and a furcula; but except as regards the last character he unfortunately almost wholly neglected the rest of the skeleton, looking upon such osteological features as the formation of an orbital ring and peculiarities of the atlas as "of minor importance "—an estimate to which nearly every anatomist will demur ; for, though

undoubtedly the characters afforded by blood-vessels and muscles are useful in default of osteological characters, it is obvious that these last, drawn from the very framework of any vertebrate's structure, cannot be inferior in value to the former. Indeed the investigations of Prof. A. Milne-Edwards (Ann. Sc. Nat. Zoologie, ser. 5, vi. pp. 91-111; viii. pp. 145-156) on the bones of the head in various Psittacine forms make it clear that these alone present features of much significance,and if his investigations had not been carried on for a special object, but had been extended to other parts of the skeleton, there is little doubt that they would have removed some of the greatest difficulties. The one osteological character to which Garrod trusted, namely, the condition of the furcula, cannot be said to contribute much towards a safe basis of classification. That it is wholly absent in some genera of Parrots had long been known, but its imperfect ossification, it appears, is not attended in some cases by any diminution of volant powers, which tends to shew that it is an unimportant character, an inference confirmed by the fact that it is found wanting in genera Placed geographically so far apart that the loss must have had in some of them an independent origin. Summarily

1 Die Papageien, monographisch bearbeitet.

expressed, Garrod's scheme was to divide the Parrots into two Families, Palxornithide and Psittacide, assigning to the former three Subfamilies Palzornithine, Cacatuine, and Stringopine, and to the latter four, Arine, Pyrrhurine, Platycercinzx, and Chrysotine. That each of these sections, except the Cacatuine, is artificial any regard to osteology would shew, and it would be useless here to further criticize his method, except to say that its greatest merit is that, as before mentioned (Love-Birp, vol. xv. p. 28), he gave sufficient reasons for distinguishing between the genera Agaporms and Psittacula. Inthe Journal fiir Ornithologie for 1881 Dr Reichenow published a Conspectus Psittacorum, founded, as several others 2 have been, on external characters only. He makes 9 Families of the group, and recognizes 45 genera, and 442 species, besides subspecies. His group- ing is generally very different from Garrod's, but displays as much artificiality ; for instance, Nestor is referred to the Family which is otherwise composed

of the Cockatoos. Still more recently we have the arrangement followed by Mr Sclater in the List of those exhibited of late years in the gardens of the Zoological Society, and published in 1883. This is more in accordance with the views that the present writer is inclined to hold, and these views may here, though with mucli diffidence, be stated. First there is Strigops, which must stand alone, unless, as before hinted (vol. xiii. p. 826), Geopsittacus and Pezoporus may have to be placed with it in a Family Strigopide. Next Nestor, from its osteological peculiarities, seems to form a very separate type, and represents a second Family Nestoridx. These two Families being removed, all the Parrots that remain will be found to have a great resemblance among them- selves, and perhaps it is impossible justifiably to establish any more. Families. For the present at any rate it would seem advisable to keep them in a single Family Psittacida, but there can be no objection to separating them into several Subfamilies. The Cockatoos, for instance, can be without much difficulty defined, and may stand as Cacatuina, and then the brush-tongued Lories as Lortine, after which the Macaws, Arinx—including possibly Conurus and its allies. Platycercus and its neighbours may form another section, and the same with Paleornis; but for the rest there is not yet material for arriving at any determination, though Chrysotis and Psittacus seem to furnish two different types, to the former of which Psettacula appears to bear much the same relation as Agapornis does to the latter. Amongst the genera Chrysotis, Palzornts, and Psittacus are probably to be found the most highly organized forms, and it is these birds in which the faculty of so-called “ speech reaches its maximum development. But too much import- ance must not be assigned to that fact; since, while Psittacus erithacus—the well-known Grey Parrot with a red tail —is the most accomplished spokesman of the whole group, it is fairly approached by some species of Chrysotis —usually styled Amazons—and yet its congener P. tumneh is not known to be at all loquacious.’ Considering the abundance of Parrots both as species and individuals, and their wide extent over the globe, it is surprising how little is known of their habits in a wild state. Even the species with which Englishmen and their descendants have been more in contact than any other has an almost unwritten history, compared with that of many other birds; and, seeing how it is oppressed by and yielding to man’s occupation of its ancient haunts, the

9 Such, for instance, as Kuhl’s treatise with the same title, which appeared in 1820, and Wagler’s Monographia Psittacorum, published in 1832—both good of their kind and time.

3 In connexion with the “speaking” of Parrots, oue of the most curious circumstances is that recorded by Humboldt, who in South America met with a venerable bird which remained the sole possessor of a literally dead language, the whole tribe of Indians, Atures by name, who alone had spoken it having become extinct.

extirpation of the Carolina Parakeet is certain, and will probably be accomplished before several interesting and some disputed points in its economy have been decided. The same fate possibly awaits several of the Australian species and all those in New Zealand—indeed the experience of small islands only foreshadows what will happen in tracts of greater extent, though there more time is required to produce the same result; but, the result being inevit- able, those who are favourably placed for observations should neglect no opportunities of making them ere it be too late. (a. N.) PARROT-FISHES, more correctly called PaRrrot- Wrassgs, are marine fishes, belonging to the Wrasse family, and referred to four closely-allied genera, viz., Scarus, Scarichthys, Callyodon, and Pseudoscarus. They are easily recognized by their large scales, of which there are from twenty-one to twenty-five in the lateral line, by having invariably nine spines and ten rays in the dorsal fin and two spines with eight rays in the anal, and especially by their singular dentition, of jaws as well as pharynx. The teeth of the jaws are soldered together, and form a sharp- edged beak similar to that of a parrot, but without a middle

projecting point, and the upper and lower beak are-

divided into two lateral halves by a median suture. In a few species the single teeth can be still distinguished, but in the majority (Pseudoscarus) they are united into a homo- geneous substance with polished surface. By this sharp and hard beak parrot-fishes are enabled to bite or scrape off those parts of coral-stocks which contain the animal- cules, or to cut off branches of tough fucus, which in some of the species forms the principal portion of

their diet. The process of triturating the food is performed by the pharyngeal teeth, which likewise are united, and form plates with broad masticatory surface, not unlike the grinding surface of the molars of the elephant. Of these plates there is one pair above, opposed to and fitting into the single one which is coalesced to the lower pharyngeal bone. The contents of the alimentary canal, which are always found to be finely divided and reduced to a pulp, prove the efficiency of this triturating apparatus ; in fact, ever since the time of Aristotle it has been maintained that the Scarus ruminates. Nearly one hundred species of parrot-fishes are known from the tropical and subtropical parts of the Indo-Pacific and Atlantic Oceans ; like other coral-feeding fishes, they are absent on the Pacific coasts of tropical America and on the coast of tropical West Africa. The most celebrated is the Scarus of the Medi- terranean. Beautiful colours prevail in this group of wrasses, but are subject to great changes and variation in the same species ; almost all are evanescent, and cannot be preserved after death. The majority of parrot-fishes are eatable, some even esteemed ; but they (especially the carnivorous kinds) not unfrequently acquire poisonous pro- perties after they have fed on corals or medusze containing an acrid poison. Many attain to a considerable size, upwards of 3 feet in length.

PARRY, Sir Witt1am Epwarp (1790-1855), arctic navigator, was the fourth son of Dr Caleb Hillier Parry, a physician of some celebrity in Bath, and was born there 19th December 1790. He was educated at the Bath Grammar School, and was intended for the medical pro- fession, but through the intervention of a lady friend of the family he was permitted, through the kindness of Admiral Cornwallis, to join the “Ville de Paris,” the flagship of the Channel fleet, as a first-class volunteer. In 1806 he became a midshipman in the “Tribune ” frigate, from. which he was, in the spring of 1808, transferred to the “ Vanguard” in the Baltic fleet. After obtaining his heutenant’s commission he joined the “ Alexander ” frigate, employed in the protection of the Spitzbergen whale

fishery. Taking advantage of the opportunity for the study of astronomy, and the observation of the fixed stars in the northern hemisphere, he afterwards published the result of his studies in a small volume on Nautical Astro-

nomy. He also employed himself in preparing accurate charts of the northern navigation. Having joined the “La Hogue” at the North-American station, he remained there till 1817, distinguishing himself in an expedition up the Connecticut river, for which he received a medal. Shortly after his return to England he obtained an appointment to the “ Alexander ” brig in the expedition of Sir John Ross to discover the probabilities of a North-West Passage to the Pacific. Ross, mistaking clouds for the Croker mountains barring his way westwards, returned to England in the belief that further perseverance was hopeless; but Parry, confident, as he expressed it, “ that attempts at polar discovery had been hitherto relinquished just at a time when there was the greatest chance of succeeding,” obtained the command of a new expedition, consisting of two ships, the “Griper” and “ Hecla,” with which he sailed from the Thames in May 1819. Passing up Baffin’s Bay, he explored and named Barrow’s Straits, Prince Regent’s Inlet, and Wellington Channel, and reached Melville Island at the beginning of September, having crossed longitude 110° W., thus becoming entitled to the reward of £5000 offered by parliament. After wintering in Melville Island he made an effort to force a passage to Behrings Straits, but, the state of the ice rendering this impossible, he returned to England, re-entering the Thames in November 1820. A narrative of the expedition appeared in 1821. Shortly after his return he was pro- moted to the rank of commander, presented with the freedom of Bath and Norwich, and elected a member of the Royal Society. With the “Fury” and the “ Hecla” he set sail on a second expedition in May 1821, and after great hardships returned to England in November 1823 without achieving his purpose. During his absence he had in November 1821 been promoted to post rank, and on Ist December 1823 he was chosen acting hydrographer to the navy. His Journal of a Second Voyage for the Discovery of the North-West Passage appeared in 1824. With the same ships he, in May 1824, set sail on a third expedition, which, however, was also unsuccessful, and after the wreck of the “Fury” he returned home in October 1825 with a double ship’s company. Of this voyage he published an account in 1826. Having obtained the sanction of the Admiralty to journey to the North Pole from the northern shores of Spitzbergen in boats that could be fitted to sledges, he set sail with the “Heela,” March 27, 1827, and in June set out for the Pole. He, however, failed to find the solid plain of ice he expected ; and as, moreover, owing to the ice drift, he found his efforts at progress northwards in great degree

frustrated, he was compelled, after reaching 82° 45’ N. lat., to retrace his steps, and arrived in England in October. Of his journey he published an account under the title of Narrative of the Attempt to reach the North Pole in Boats, 1827. On April 29, 1829, he received the honour of knighthood, Sir John Franklin being also knighted on the same occasion. After continuing his duties as hydrogra- pher till May 1829, he went to New South Wales as com: missioner to the Australian Agricultural Company. On his return to England in 1835 he was appointed assistant poor-law commissioner in Norfolk. This he in little more than a year resigned, and in 1837 he was employed m organizing the packet service between Liverpool, Holyhead, and Dublin. For nine years from 1837 he was comptroller of the steam department of the navy. On retiring from active service he was appointed captain-superintendent of Haslar Hospital. He vacated this office in 1852 on obtain-

!

ee

ing the rank of rear-admiral, and in 1853 he was appointed governor of Greenwich Hospital, which post he retained till his death, 8th July 1855. Besides the journals of his different voyages, Parry was the author of a Lecture to Seamen, and Thoughts on the Parental Character of God.

See Memoirs of Rear-Admiral Sir W. E. Parry, by his son Rev. Edward Parry, M.A., 3d ed., 1857.

PARSIS, or Parsexs. The resident in Bombay who wanders to the Back Bay beach at sunset to inhale the fresh sea-breezes from Malabar Hill will there observe a congregation of the most interesting people of Asia. They are the Parsis, the followers of Zarathustra, and the descendants of the ancient Persians who emigrated to India on the conquest of their country by the Arabs, about the year 720 A.D.

The men are well-formed, active, handsome, and intelligent. They have light olive complexions, a fine aquiline nose, bright black eyes, a well-

turned chin, heavy arched eyebrows, thick sensual lips, and usually wear a light curling moustache. The women are delicate in frame, with small hands and feet, fair complexions, beautiful black eyes, finely arched eyebrows, and a luxurious profusion of long black hair, which they dress to perfection, and ornament with pearls and gems.

The Parsis are much more noble in their treatment of females than any other Asiatic race ; they allow them to appear freely in public, and leave them the entire manage- ment of household affairs. They are proverbial for their benevolence, hospitality, and sociability. They are good scholars, and usually learn several languages—Gujarati, Hinddstini, and English The Parsis are notoriously fond of good living, and do not hesitate to spend their money freely for the best the market affords. They indulge in wines, but do not reach the vice of intoxication.

On getting out of bed in the morning, an orthodox Parsi first says his prayers. He then rubs a little nirang (cow-urine) upon his face, hands, and feet, reciting during the ceremony a prayer or incantation against the influence of dévas, or evil spirits, for which the “nirang” is considered a specific. He next takes his bath, cleans his teeth, and repeats his prayers. He then takes his morning meal, a light breakfast,—-say, tea or chocolate, bread, and fruits. The dinner is more abundant, and is composed of the dishes of the country—meats, stews, vegetables, rice, fruits, dc. These dishes are seasoned with pungent sauces, curries, chutneys, pickles, &c., one of which, famous in Bombay, is marked with the mild initials H. F. (hell-fire). The evening meal is taken after sunset, when the labours and ceremonies of the day are over, and is the signal for licence in eating, drinking, and conversation. A tat, or parting drink for the night, is a time-honoured custom among the Parsis.

The costume of the Parst is loose and flowing, very picturesque in appearance, and admirably adapted to the climate in which he lives. The sadara, or shirt, which is considered the most sacred garment, because it is worn next the skin, is a plain loose vest, usually made of muslin, or with the opulent of fine white linen. A long coat or gown is worn over the sadara, extending to the knees, and fastened round the waist with the kust?, or sacred cord, which is carried round three times, and fastened in front with a

double knot. The pyjamis, or loose trousers, are fastened round the waist by a silken cord with tassels at the ends, which are run through a hem. The material of these pyjamis among the common classes is cotton, but the rich indulge in fancy-coloured silks and satins. The head is covered with a turban, or a cap of a fashion Peculiar to the Parsts; it is made of stiff material, some-

_ thing like the European hat, without any rim, and has an

angle from the top of the forehead backwards. It would

am @,

not be respectful to uncover in presence of an equal, much less of a superior. The colour is chocolate or maroon, except with the priests, who wear a white turban. The shoes are of red or yellow morocco, turned up at the toes.

The dress of Parst ladies is something gorgeous. They are enveloped in a maze of mysteriously wound silk. They appear as houris floating about the earth in silk balloons, with a ballasting of anklets, necklaces, earrings, and jewellery. The dressmakers' bills, fortunately for the head of the family, are not exorbitant, as the costumes have not been through the hands of the modiste, but are composed of many yards of fancy-coloured silks wound round the nether limbs and gradually enfolding the body, covering part of the bosom, and then thrown over the shoulders and head, drooping on the left arm, as a shield against the inquisitive gaze ofa stranger. The pyjamis, or drawers, are common to both sexes, but the ladies of course excel in the fine texture and fanciful colours of these garments.

A Parst must be born upon the ground floor of the house, as the teachings of their religion require life to be commenced in humility, and by " good thoughts, words, and actions" alone can an elevated position be attained either in this world or the next. The mother is not seen by any member of the family for forty days. Upon the seventh day after the birth of the child, an astrologer is invited, who is either a Brahmana or a Parst priest, to cast the nativity of the child. He has first to enumerate the names which the child may bear, and the parents have the right to make choice of one of

them. Then he draws on a wooden board a set of hieroglyphics in chalk, and his dexterity in counting or recounting the stars under whose region or influence the child is declared to be born is marvelled at by the superstitious creatures thronging around him. All the relatives press forward to hear the astrologer predict the future life and prospects of the babe. This document is preserved in the family archives as a guidance and encouragement to the child through life, and may exert some influence in shaping its destiny. At the age of seven years or thereabouts, according to the judg- nient of the priest, the first religious ceremony of the Parsis is performed upon the young Zarathustrian. He is first subjected to the process of purification, which consists of an ablution with “nirang.” The ceremony consists in investing the young Parsi with the cincture, or girdle of his faith. This cincture is a cord woven by women of the priestly class only. It is composed of seventy-two threads, representing the seventy-two chapters of the Yagna, a portion of the Zand-Avesta, in the sacredness of which the young neophyte is figuratively bound. The priest ties the cord around the waist as he pronounces the benediction upon the child, throwing upon its head at each sentence slices of fruits, seeds, perfumes, and spices. He is thus received into the religion of Zarathustra. After the performance of this ceremony, the child is considered morally accountable for its acts. Ifa child die before the performance of this ceremony, it is considered to have gone back to Ahurd-Mazda, who gave it, as pure as it entered into this world, having not reached the age of accountability. The ceremony of the kustt, or encircling with the girdle, is closed by the distribution of refreshments to the friends and relatives of the family who have attended the investiture of the younger follower of Zarathustra with the sacred girdle of his faith.

The marriages of children engage the earliest attention ofthe parents. Though the majority of Parsi marriages are still celebrated while the children are very young, instances frequently occur of marriages of grown-up boys and girls. The wedding day is fixed by an astrologer, who consults the stars for a happy season. The wedding day being

fixed, a Parsi priest goes from house to house with a list of |

the guests to be invited, and delivers the invitations with

respect for the departed. The body, when put upon the bier, is covered over from head to foot. Two attendants

much ceremony. The father of the bride waits upon bring it out of the house, holding it low in their hands,

near relatives and distinguished personages, soliciting the honour of their attendance. A little before sunset a pro- cession is formed at the house of the bridegroom, and proceeds with a band of music, amid great pomp and cere- mony, to the house of the bride's father. Here a number of relatives and friends are collected at the door to receive the bridegroom with due honour. Presents are sent before, according to the time-honoured customs of the East. Upon the arrival of the procession at the house of the bride, the gentlemen gallantly remain outside, leaving room for the ladies to enter the house with the bridegroom as his escort. As he passes the threshold, his future nother-in-law meets him with a tray filled with fruits and rice, which she strews at his feet. The fathers of the young couple are seated side by side, and between them stands the priest ready to perform the magic ceremony. The young couple are seated in two chairs opposite each other, their right hands tied together by a silken cord, which is gradually wound around them as the ceremony progresses, the bride in the meantime being concealed with a veil of silk or muslin. The priest lights a lamp of incense, and repeats the nuptial benediction first in Zand and then in Sanskrit. At the conclusion of the ceremony they each throw upon the other some grains of rice, and the most expeditious in performing this feat is considered to have got the start of the other in the future control of the household, and receives the applause of the male or female part of the congregation as the case may be. The priest now throws some grains of rice upon the heads of the married pair in token of wishing them abundance ; bouquets of flowers are handed to the assembled guests, and rose-water is showered upon them. The bride and bridegroom now break some sweetmeats, and, after they have served each other, the company are invited to partake of refreshments. At the termination of this feast the pro- cession forms, and with lanterns and music escorts the bridegroom back to his own house, where they feast until midnight. As midnight approaches, they return to the house of the bride,

and escort her, with her dowry, to the house of the bridegroom, and, having delivered her safely to her future lord and master, disperse to their respective homes. Eight days after the bridal ceremony a wedding feast is given by the newly-married couple, to which only near relatives and particular friends are invited. This feast is composed entirely of vegetables, but wine is not forbidden ; at each course the wine is served, and toasts are proposed, as “ happiness to the young couple,” &c. The funeral ceremonies of the Parsts are solemn and imposing. When the medical attendant declares the case of a Parsi hopeless, a priest advances to the bed of the dying man, repeats sundry texts of the Zand-Avesta, the substance of which tends to afford consolation to the dying man, and breathes a prayer for the forgiveness of his sins. After life is extinct, a funeral sermon is delivered by the priest, in which the deceased is made the subject of an exhortation to his relatives and friends to live pure, holy, and righteous lives, so that they may hope to meet again in paradise. The body is then taken to the ground floor where it was born, and, after being washed and perfumed, is dressed in clean white clothes, and laid upon an iron bier. A dog is brought in to take a last look at his inanimate master in order to drive away the evil spirits or Nasus. This ceremony is called sagddd. A number of priests attend and repeat prayers for the repose of the soul of the departed. All the male friends of the deceased go to the door, bow down, and raise their two hands from touching the floor to their heads to indicate their deepest

and deliver it to four pall-bearers, called nasasaldr, all clad in well-washed, clean, white clothes. All the people present stand up as the body is taken out of the house, and bow to it in respect as it passes by. A procession is formed by the male friends of the deceased, headed by a number of priests in full dress, to follow the body to the dakhma, or “tower of silence,” the last resting-place of the departed Parsi. These towers are erected in a beauti- ful garden on the highest point of Malabar Hill, amid tropical trees swarming with vultures ; they are constructed of stone, and rise some 25 feet high, with a small door at the side for the entrance of the body. Upon arriving at the “ tower of silence” the bier is laid down, and prayers are said in the sagr?, or house of prayer, containing a fire- sanctuary, which is erected near the entrance to the garden. The attendants then raise the body to its final resting- place, lay it upon its stony bed, and retire. A round pit about 6 feet deep is surrounded by an annular stone pavement about 7 feet wide, on

which the body is exposed to the vultures, where it is soon denuded of flesh, and the bones fall through an iron grating into a pit beneath, from which they are afterwards removed into a subterranean entrance prepared for their reception. On the third day after death an assemblage of the relatives and friends of the deceased takes place at his late residence, and thence proceed to the Atish-bahrdém, or “temple of fire.” The priests stand before the urns in which the celestial fire is kept burning, and recite prayers for the soul of the departed. The son or adopted son of the deceased kneels before the high-priest, and promises due performance of all the religious duties and obsequies to the dead. The relatives and friends then hand the priest a list of the contributions and charities which have been subscribed in memory of the deceased, which concludes the ceremony of “rising from mourning,” or “ the resurrection of the dead.” On each successive anniversary of the death of a Parsi, funeral ceremonies are performed in hismemory. An iron framework is erected in the house, in which shrubs are planted and flowers cultivated to bloom in memory of the departed. Before the frame, on iron stands, are placed copper or silver vases, filled with water and covered with flowers. Prayers are said before these iron frames two or three times a day. These ceremonies are called mktad, or ceremonies of departed souls.

The numerical strength of the followers of Zarathustra at the present day does not exceed 82,000 persons, including the Parsis of Persia at Kerm4n, Yazd, and Teheran. ‘The greater number 1s found in Bombay, and in some of the cities of Gujarat, as Now- sart, Surat, Bharoch, Ahmedabad, &c. Parsis have also settled for the purpose of trade in Calcutta, Madras, and in other cities of British India, in Burmah, China, and in other parts of Asia. According to the census of 1881, there are in the Bombay presl- dency 72,065 Parsis, and in Persia 8499, according to Houtum- Schindler (see Jowrnal of the Oriental German Society, vol. XXXVI. “i a Parsis of India are divided into two sects, the Shenshais and the Kadmis. They do not differ on any point of faith; the dispute is solely confined to a quarrel as to the correct chronological date for the computation of the era of Yazdagird, the last king of the Sasanian dynasty, who was dethroned by the caliph Omar about 640 A.D. The difference has been productive of no other inconvenl- ence than arises from the variation of a month in the cclebration of the festivals. The Shenshai sect, represented by Sir Jamsetjl Jijibhai, Bart.,

greatly outnumbers the Kadmis, formerly headed by the late famous high-pricst Mulla Firdz.

The Parsis, as stated above, compute time from the fall of Yazdagird. Their calendar is divided into twelve months of thirty days each; the other five days, being added for holy days, are not counted. Each day is named after some particular angel of bliss, under whose special protection it is passed. On feast days a division of five watches is made under the protection of five different divinities. In midwinter a feast of six days is held in commemo

ration of the six periods of creation. About the 21st of March, the vernal equinox, a festival is held in honour of agriculture, when planting begins. Inthe middle of April a feast is held to celebrate the creation of trees, shrubs, and flowers. On the fourth day of the sixth month a feast is held in honour of Sahrévar, the deity presiding over mountains and mines. On the sixteenth day of the seventh month a feast is held in honour of Mithra, the dcity pre- siding over and directing the course of the sun, and also a festival to celebrate truth and friendship. On the tenth day of the eighth “inonth a festival is held in honour of Farvardin, the deity who pre- sides over the departed souls of men. This day is especially set apart for the performance of ceremonies for the dead. The people attend on the hills where the ‘‘ towers of silence” are situated, and perform in the sagris prayers for the departed souls. The Parsis are enjoined by their religion to preserve the meiory of the dead by annual religious ceremonies performed in the house, as said above ; but such of their friends as die on long voyages, or in un-known places, and the date of whose death cannot be known, are honoured by sacred rites on this day. The Parsi scriptures require the last ten days of the year to be spent in doing deeds of charity, and in prayers of thanksgiving to Ahurad-Mazda. On the day of Yazdagird, or New Year’s Day, the Parsis emulate the Western world in rejoicing and social intercourse. They rise early, and after having performed their prayers and ablutions dress themselves in a new suit of clothes, and sally forth to the ‘‘ fire-temples,” to wor- ship the emblem of their divinity, the sacred fire, which is perpetu- ally burning on the altar. Unless they duly perform this ceremony they believe their souls will not be allowed to pass the bridge

‘‘Chinvad,” leading to heaven. After they have performed their religious services, they visit their relations and friends, when the ceremony of ‘‘hamijur,” or joining of hands, is performed. The ceremony is a kind of greeting by which they wish each other ‘a happy new year.” ‘Their relatives and friends are invited to dinner, and they spend the rest of the day in feasting and rejoicing ; alins are given to the poor, and new suits of clothes are presented to the servants and dependants.

There are only two distinct eastes among the Parsis, —the priests (dastérs, or high priests ; mobeds, or the middle order of priests; and herbads, or the lowest order of priests) and the people (bchadin, behdin, or ‘‘ followers of the best religion”). The priestly office is hercditary, and no one ean become a priest who was not born in the purple; but the son of a priest may become a layman.

The secular affairs of the Parsis are managed by an elective com- mittee, or Panchdyat, eomposed of six dasttirs and twelve mobeds, making a council of eighteen. Its functions resemble the Venctian council of ten, and its objects are to preserve unity, pcace, and justice amongst the followers of Zarathustra. One law of the Panchayat is singular in its difference from the law or eustom of any other native community in Asia ; nobody whio has a wife living shall marry another, except under peculiar circumstances, such as the barrenness of the living wife, or her immoral conduet. It isa matter of just pride that we find the Parsis have not imitated the barbarous and tyrannical custom of prohibiting widows from re- marrying whieh is so prevalent among the Hindus.

Their religion teaches them benevolence as the first principle, and no people practise it with more liberality. A beggar among the Parsis is unknown, and would be a scandal to the society. Iu the city of Bombay alone they have thirty-two different eharitable institutions. The sagacity, activity, and commereial enterprise of the Parsis are proverbial in the East, and their credit as merchants is almost unlimited. They frequently control the opium production of India, which amounts annually to something like £10,000, 000 Sterling. They have some fifty large commercial houscs in Bombay, fourteen in Calcutta, twenty in Hong-Kong, ten in Shanghai, four in London, three in Amoy, two in Yokohama, and many throughout India,

Persia, and Egypt. Further, their Interest in the extension of agriculture in India is prominent; they are also very much esteemed as railway contractors or rail- way guards. It is often said that the Parsis are superstitious about extinguishing fire, but thisis a mistake. They are the only people in the world who do not smoke tobacco, or some other Stimulating weed. Their reverence for fire as a symbol of Ahura- Mazda prevents them from dealing with it lightly. They would not play with fire, nor extinguish it unnecessarily; and they generally Welcome the evening blaze with a prayer of thanksgiving. Their religion forbids them to defile any of the crcations of Ahura-Mazdé, such as the earth, water, trees, flowers, &e., and on no aceount would a Parsi indulge in the disgusting habit of expectoration. They have been accustomed to the refinement of fingcr-bowls after meals for several thousand years, aud resort to ablutions frequently.

Of all the natives of India the Parsis are most desirous of receiving the benefits of an English education, and their eagerness to embrace the science and literature of the West has been eonspieuous in the Wide spread of female education among them. The difference between the Parsis of thirty years ago and those of the present day

O27

is simply the result of English cducation and intercourse with Englishmen. The condition of the Parst priesthood, however, demands improvement. Very few of them understand their litur- gieal Zand works, although able to reeite parrot-like all the ehapters requiring to be repeated on occasions of religious eere- monies, for which services they receive the regulated fees, and from them mainly they derive a subsistence. It is, however, very gratifying to notice an attempt that is now being made to impart a healthy stimulus to the priesthood for the study of their religious books. Two institutions, styled the “Mulla Firéz Madrasa ” and the ‘‘Sir Jamsetji Jijibhai Madrasa,” have been estab- lished under the superintendence of eompetent teachers. Here the study of Zand, Pazand, Pahlavi, and Persian is cultivated ; and many of the sons of the present ignorant priests will occupy a higher position in the society of their countrymen than their parents now enjoy. The present dasttirs are intelligent and well-informed men, possessing a sound knowledge of their religion ; but the mass of the mobeds and herbads

are profoundly ignorant of its first principles. As active measures are being devised for improvement, the darkness of the present will doubtless be suc- ceeded by a bright dawn in the future. (A. F.)

PARSON is a technical term of English law, and is a corruption of persona, the parson being, as it were, the persona ecclesix, or representative of the church in the parish, Parson imparsonee (persona impersonata) is he that as rector isin possession of a church parochial, and of whom the church is full, whether it be presentative or impropriate (Coke upon Littleton, 300 6). The word parson is properly used only of a rector, though it is some- times loosely extended to any one in holy orders. Though every parson is a rector, every rector is not a parson. A parson must be in holy orders; hence a lay rector could not be called a parson. The parson is tenant for life of the parsonage house, the glebe, the tithes, and other dues, so far as they are not appropriated. Further information on this subject will be found under ADvowsoN, BENEFICE, and ‘TITHES,

PARSONS, or Persons, Ropert (1546-1610), a cele- brated Jesuit, was the son of a blacksmith, and was born at Nether Stowey, near Bridgwater, England, in 1546. His precocity attracted the attention of the vicar of the parish, who gave him private instruction, and procured his entrance in 1563 as an exhibitioner to Balliol College, Oxford. He graduated B.A. in 1568, and M.A. in 1572. He was fellow, bursar, and dean of his college, but in 1574 he resigned his fellowship and offices, for reasons which have been disputed, some alleging improprieties of conduct, and others suspected disloyalty. Soon after his resignation he went to London, and thence in June to Louvain, where he spent some time in the company of Father William Good, a Jesuit. He then proceeded to Padua to carry out a previously conceived intention to study medicine, but furiher intercourse with English Jesuits so influenced his mind, that in July 1575 he entered the Jesuit Society at Rome. In 1580 he was selected along with Cam- pian, a former associate at Oxford, and others, to undertake a secret mission to England against Elizabeth, ‘Through the vigilance of Burghley the plot was discovered and Campian arrested, but Parsons made his escape to Rouen, and occupied himself for some time in the composition of treasonable tracts against Elizabeth, which he caused to be secretly sent to England. In 1583 he returned to Rome, where he was appointed prefect of the English

mission, and in 1586 chosen rector of the English seminary. He also devoted much energy to the establishment of seminaries elsewhere on the Continent, for the training of priests to be despatched to England to aid in reviving the cause of Romanism. After the disaster to the Spanish Armada in 1588, he endeavoured to persuade the Spanish monarch to undertake a second invasion, and, unsuccessful in this, he incited various plots against Elizabeth, all of which were, however, abortive. On the death of Cardinal Allen in 1594 he made strenuous efforts to be appointed his successor, and, failing in this, he retired to Naples until

the death of Clement VIII. in 1606. From this time he continued his active intrigues against Protestantism in England until his death, 18th April 1610.

Parsons was the author of a large number of polemical tracts, a list of which, to the number of thirty-three, is given in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. For portrait, see Gentleman's Magazine, vol. lxiv.

PARSONSTOWN, formerly Brrr, a market-town of King's County, Ireland, is situated on an acclivity rising above the Birr, and on a branch of the Great Southern and Western Railway, 124 miles north of Roscrea and 7} south of Banagher. Cumberland Square, in which there is a Doric column, surmounted by a statue of the duke of Cum- berland to commemorate the battle of Culloden, contains a number of good shops, and the streets diverging from it are wide and well built. The fine castle of Birr, besides its historical interest, has gained celebrity on account of the reflecting telescope erected there (1828-45) by the third earl of Rosse. The other principal buildings are the court-house, the Protestant Episcopal and Roman Catholic churches, the convent of the sisters of mercy, the model school, the mechanics' institute, the fever hospital, and the infirmary. There is a bronze statue by Foley of the late Lord Rosse. Some trade is carried on in corn and timber, and the town possesses a distillery and brewery. The population was 5401 in 1861, 4939 in 1871, and 4955 in 1881.

An abbey was founded at Birr by St Brendan. The district formed part of Ely O'Carrol, and was not included in King's County till the time of James I. A great battle is said to have been fought near Birr in the 3d century

between Corinac, son of Cond of the Hundred Battles, and the people of Munster. The castle was the chief seat of the O'Carrols. In the reign of James I. it and its appendages were assigned to Lawrence Parsons, brother of Sir William Parsons, surveyor-general. It was more than once besieged in the time of Cromwell, and was taken by Ireton in 1650. It also suffered assault in 1688 and 1690.

PARTABGARH, PraTABGARH, or PERTABGURH, a district of Oudh, India, situated between 25° 34' and 26° 10' 30" N. lat., and between 81° 22' and 82° 29' 45" E. long., is bounded on the N. by Rai Bareli and Sultan- pur, and on the E., 8., and W. by Jaunpur and Allahabad districts. The Ganges forms the south-western boundary line, while the Gumti marks the eastern boundary for a few miles. The area (1881) is 1436 square miles. The general aspect of Partabgarh is tliat of a richly wooded and fertile plain, here and there relieved by gentle undulations, and in the vicinity of the rivers and streams broken into ravines. The one important river (the Ganges and Gumti nowhere entering the district) is the Sai, which is navigable in the rains, but in the hot season runs nearly dry. The only mineral pro- ducts are salt, saltpetre, and kankar or nodular limestone. The manufacture of salt and saltpetre from the saliferous tracts is prohibited. Tigers and leopards are hardly ever met with ; but wolves still abound in the ravines and grass lands. JVilgdi, wild cattle, hogs, and monkeys do much damage to the crops. Snakes are not numerous. Small gaine abounds.

The population in 1881 was 847,047 (420,730 males, 426,317 females ; 768,054 Hindus, 83,944 Mohammedans, 48 Christians). The principal grain crops are barley, wheat, and rice. Other food erops are gram, peas, arhar, jodr, and bdjra. Sugar-cane cultivation has largely increased of late years, and poppy is grown under the superintendence of the Opium Department. Miscel- laneous crops include tobacco of superior quality, indigo, fibres, pan, &c. Irrigation is extensively carried on, and manure is made use of wherever procurable. Rents have steadily increased since the introduction of British rule, and still show a tendency to rise. Artisans and skilled labourers have much improved in circum- stances of late years ; but agricultural labour is still paid in kind at about the same rates that prevailed under native rule. Partab- garh is now well opened up by roads. Four large

ferries are main- tained on the Ganges, and two on the Gumti. Partadbgarh forms a great grain-exporting district. Other important exports comprise

tobacco, sugar, molasses, opium, oil, giz, cattle and sheep, hides, &e. The imports consist mainly of salt, cotton, metals and hardware country cloth, and dyes. The manufactures of the district com- prise sugar, blanket weaving, glass beads and bracelets, water-bottles, &c. The gross revenue of the district in 1882-83 was £175,785, of which the land revenue contributed £98,220. Education is afforded by 91 schools, on the rolls of which on 31st March 1888 there were 3493 scholars. The climate is healthy. The average rainfall for the fourteen years ending 1881 was 37 inches.

PARTABGARH, or PERTABGURH, a native state in Rajputana, India, lying between 23° 14’ and 24° 14’ N, lat., and between 74° 27’ and 75° E. long., and entirely surrounded by native territory, has an estimated area of 1460 square miles, and an estimated population (1881) of 80,568, mostly Bhils and other aboriginal tribes. The revenue is about £60,000, of which about £20,000 are enjoyed by feudatory chiefs and nobles. It is a hilly country, mainly producing maize and jodr (Holcus sorghum).

PARTHENIUS, a Bithynian poet, said to have been captured in the Mithradatic war and carried to Rome. He lived there for many years, as late as the time of Tiberius, His poems were on erotic subjects, and many of them treated of obscure mythological stories. The only work of his which is preserved is a collection of short love tales in prose, dedicated to the poet Cornelius Gallus, but apparently not intended for publication.

PARTHENON. See ATHENS, vol. iii. p. 5.

PARTHIA. See PErsta.

PARTINICO, a town of Sicily, in the province of Palermo, and 284 miles W. of Palermo by rail, has a good trade in wine and oil, and in 1881 had 21,000 inhabitants,

PARTITION, in law, is the division between several persons of land or goods belonging to them as co-pro- prietors. It was a maxim of Roman law, followed in modern systems, that-in communione vel societate nemo potest invitus detinert. Partition was either voluntary or was obtained by the actio commum dividendo. In English law the term partition applies only to the division of lands, tenements, and hereditaments, or of chattels real between coparceners, joint tenants, or tenants in common. It is to be noticed that not all hereditaments are capable of parti- tion. There can be no partition of homage, fealty, or common of turbary, or of an inheritance of dignity, such as a peerage. Partition is either voluntary or compulsory. Voluntary partition is effected by mutual conveyances, and can only be made where all parties are sui juris. Since 8 & 9 Vict. c. 106, § 3, it must be made by deed, except in the case of copyholds. Compulsory partition is effected by private Act of Parliament, by judicial process, or through the inclosure commissioners. At common law none but coparceners were entitled to partition against the will of the rest of the proprietors, but the Acts of 81 Henry VUL. c. 1 and 82 Henry VIII. c. 32 gave a compulsory process to joint tenants and tenants in common of freeholds, whether in possession or in reversion, by means of the writ of partition. In the reign of Elizabeth the Court of Chancery began to assume jurisdiction in partition, and the writ of partition, after gradually becoming obsolete, was finally abolished by 3 & 4 Will. IV. c. 27. The Court of Chancery could not decree partition of copyholds until 4& 5 Vict. c. 35,§ 85. By the Judicature Act, 1873, § 34, partition is one of the matters specially assigned to the Chancery Division. An order for partition is a matter of right, subject to the discretion vested in the court by the Partition Act, 1868 (31 & 32 Vict. c. 40, amended by 39 & 40 Vict. c. 17). By § 3 of the Act of 1868 the court may, on the request of a party interested, direct a sale instead of a partition, if a sale would be more beneficial than a partition. By § 12 a county court has jurisdiction in partition where the property does not exceed £500 in value. Under the powers of the Inclosure Act, 1845,

ered

8 & 9 Vict. c. 118, and the Acts amending it, the inclosure commissioners have power of enforcing compulsory parti- tion among the joint owners of any inclosed lands. An order of the inclosure commissioners or a private Act vests the legal estate, as did also the old writ of partition. But an order of the Chancery Division only declares the rights, and requires to be perfected by mutual conveyances so as to pass the legal estate. Where, however, all the parties are not suc juris, the court may make a vesting order under the powers of the Trustee Act, 1850, 13 & 14 Vict. c. 60, § 30.

Partition is not a technical term of Scots law. In Scotland division of common property is effected either extra-judicially, or by action of declarator and division or division and sale in the Court of Session, or (to a limited extent) in the sheriff courts. Rights of common are not divisible in English law without an Act of Parliament or a decree of the inclosure commissioners, but in Scotland the Act of 1695, c. 38, made all commonties, except those belonging to the king or royal burghs, divisible, on the application of anyhaving interest, by action in the Court of Session. By 40 & 41 Vict. c. 50, § 8, the action for division of common property or commonty is competent in the sheriff court, when the subject in dispute does not exceed in value £50 by the year, or £1000 value. Runrig lands, except when belonging to corporations, were made divisible by the Act of 1695, c. 23. A decree of division of commonty, common property, or runrig lands has the effect of a conveyance by the joint proprietors to the several participants (87 & 88 Vict. c. 94, § 35).

In the United States, ‘‘it is presumed,” says Chancellor Kent, (4 Comm., lect. \xiv.), ‘‘that the English statutes of 31 & 32 Henry VIII. have been generally re-enacted and adopted, and probably with increased facilities for partition.” In a large majority of the States, partition may be made by a summary method of petition to the courts of common law. In the other States the courts of equity have exclusive jurisdiction. As between heirs and devisees the probate courts may in some States award partition, The various State laws with regard to partition will be found in Washburn, Real Property, bk. 1. ch. xiii, § 7.

PARTNERSHIP, in law, is a voluntary association of two or more persons for the purpose of gain. This is of course not an exhaustive definition, but

will serve to include most of the definitions of partnership which have been attempted.1. The word partner is a contracted form of partitioner.

The partnership of modern legal systems is based upon the socvetas of Roman law. Societas is not defined by any of the Roman jurists. But the Roman view is no doubt sufficiently expressed in the definition by Voet:— societas est contractus juris gentium, bone fider, consensu constans, semper re honesta, de lucri et damni communione. Societas was either wniversorum bonorum, a complete communion of property ; negotiationis alicujus, for the purpose of a single transaction ; vectigalis, for the collection of taxes; or rev wnius, joint ownership of a particular thing. The prevail- Ing form was societas wniversorum que ex questu veniunt, or trade partnership, from which all that did not come under the head of trade profit (questus) was excluded. This kind of societas was presumed to be contemplated in the absence of proof that any other kind was intended. Societas was a consensual contract, and rested nominally on the consent of the parties— really, no doubt (though this was not in terms acknowledged by the Roman jurists), on the fact of valuable consideration moving from each partner. No formalities were necessary for the constitution of a societas. Lither property or labour must be con- tributed by the sociws; if one party contributed neither Property nor labour, or if one partner was to share in the loss but not in the profit (/eonina societas), there was no true societas. Societas was dissolved on grounds substan- ually the same as those of English law (see below). The only ground peculiar to Roman law was change of status (capitis deminutio). Most of the Roman law on the subject of societas is contained in Dig. xvii. tit. 2, Pro Socio. The

The difficulties of definition are pointed out by Sir N. Lindley, ” Partnership, i., Introd.

main points of difference between the Roman and English law will be treated below.

There is no statutory or judicial definition of partnership in English law. It is defined by the Indian Contract Act § 239,? as “the relation which subsists between persons who have agreed to share the profits of a business carried

on by all or any of them on behalf of all of them.” Sir N. Lindley declines to pledge himself to any definition, but lays down the following principles :— (1) partnership is the result of an agreement to share profits and losses; (2) partnership is prima facie the result of an agreement to share profits, although nothing may be said about losses, and although there may be no common stock ; (3) partner- ship is prima facie the result of an agreement to share profits, although community of loss is stipulated against ; (4) partnership is not the result of an agreement to share gross returns; (5) partnership is not the result of an agreement which is not concluded; (6) partnership is not the result of an agreement to share profits so long as anything remains to be done before the right to share them accrues (1 Lindley, bk. i. ch. i, § 1). It was held in 1793, in the case of Waugh v. Carver, (2 H. Blackstone, 235), that sharing in profits constituted partnership, though no partnership was in fact contemplated by the parties. But in 1860 the House of Lords in Cox ». Hickman (8 House of Lords Cases, 268), established the principle that persons who share the profits of a business do not incur the liabilities of partners unless the business is carried on by themselves or their real or ostensible agents. In 1865 the Act 28 & 29 Vict. c. 86 (which applies to the United Kingdom, and is commonly called Bovill’s Act) was passed in order to remove certain difficulties arising from Cox v. Hickman. It enacts that the advance by way of loan to a person engaged or about to engage in any trade or undertaking, upon a contract in writing that the lender is to receive a rate of interest varying with the profits, or a share of the profits, is not of itself to constitute the lender a partner (§ 1); that no contract for the remuneration of a servant or agent by a share of the profits is of itself to render such servant or agent responsible as a partner or give him the rights of a partner (§ 2); that no widow or child of a partner of a trader receiving by way of annuity a portion of the profits is, by reason only of such receipt, to be deemed to bea partner (§ 3); that no person receiving by way of annuity or otherwise a portion of the profits in consideration of the sale of the goodwill is, by reason only of such receipt, to be deemed to be a partner (§ 4); that in the event of any such trader being adjudged bankrupt, é&c., the lender of any such loan is not to be entitled to recover his principal or profits and interest, or the vendor of a goodwill his profits, until the claims of the other creditors for valuable consideration have been satisfied. Participation in profits has thus ceased to be an absolute test of partnership. Another test that has been proposed is the existence of

such a participation as to constitute the relation of principal and agent. But this has been objected to on the ground that agency is deducible from partnership and not partner- ship from agency (see Holme ». Hammond, Law Rep. 7 Exch. 218). The principles laid down by Sir N. Lindley above no doubt form the best means of deciding the matter, but every case must depend to a large extent upon its own particular circumstances. Though participation in profits is of itself no evidence of partnership, on the other hand societies and clubs, the object of which is not to share profits, are not partnerships. The liability of clubs or provisional committee men depends entirely upon

2 The definition was adopted in the Partnership Bill which was introduced into parliament in 1880; see Appendix to Pollock's Digest

of the Law of Partnership. xvii — ae

the question of agency. They are not as a rule in the position of partners as against third persons. No partner- ship can exist in an office depending upon personal confidence, as the office of executor or trustee. J oint tenants or tenants in common are not necessarily partners. If A and B agree to contribute a sum for the purchase of goods to be divided between them, they are joint owners after purchase and before division. But if they resell the goods and divide the profits, they then become partners (Smith's Mercantile Law, bk. i. ch, ii.).

A valid contract of partnership can be entered into by any person not under the disability of minority or unsoundness of mind, or of being a convict within the Felony Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict. c. 23), or an alien enemy. It is presumed that the disability of coverture no longer exists since the Married Women's Property Act, 1882. An infant may nominally be a partner, but he incurs no liability, and may disaflirm past transactions when he comes of age. A clergyman becoming a partner for pur- poses of trade is (with certain exceptions) liable to ecclesiastical penalties, but the contracts of the partnership are not void, 1 & 2 Vict. c. 106, § 31. At common law there is no limit to the number of partners, but by the Companies Act, 1862 (25 & 26 Vict. c. 89, § 4), not more than ten persons can carry on the business of

bankers, and not more than twenty any other business, unless (with some exceptions) they conform to the provisions of the Act. (See CoMPAny.)

A partnership may be constituted by deed or other writing, or it may be implied from acts. It is usually, though not of necessity, evidenced by deed. The usual clauses in a partnership deed provide for the nature of the business, the time of the commencement of the partnership and its duration, the premium, the capital and property, the interest and allowances, the conduct and powers of the partners, the custody of the books, the taking of the accounts, retirement, dissolution, and expulsion, the valua- tion and transmission of shares, annuities to widows of deceased partners, prohibition against carrying on business in opposition after retirement, sale of goodwill, getting in debts, indemnity to outgoing partners, and arbitration clauses. Though a deed may serve to adjust the rights of the partners inter se, their liabilities to third persons cannot be affected by provisions in a deed of which the latter are ignorant. Whether a partnership exists in a particular case is a mixed question of law and fact. The partnership may last for any time agreed upon by the partners. It is determinable at will unless it has been agreed that it shall endure for a specified period, or unless it is dissolved by some of the circumstances which will be hereafter mentioned. A partnership may be general or special, e.g., the ownership of a single race-horse, or the conduct of a single case by a firm of solicitors. The rights and liabilities of partners may be considered as they affect the partners (1) inter se, and (2) in their relation to third persons.

1. The shares of partners are prima facie equal. Inequality must be proved by evidence. Each member of a partnership is entitled to take a share in its management, unless, as is frequently the case, one member is appointed managing partner. A partner is in a fiduciary position. It is therefore his duty to use reasonable diligence, to keep within the limits of his authority, and to observe good faith, ¢.g., not to compete with the partnership. He may be a partner in another firm, and the fact of his being a partner in firms A and B does not make A and B partners, for sociws mer socii non est meus socius. In matters which are within the ordinary course of the business of the partnership, such as the period of division of profits, if the partnership articles be silent on the subject, the minority

must yield to the majority. In matters beyond the scope of the partnership business, such as a change in the character of the business, one dissentient can forbid a change, and can obtain an injunction to prevent the change from being carried out. A partner is entitled to have accounts kept, and to inspect them at proper times, Where a partner has as agent for the firm paid more than his share, he is entitled to contribution from the rest, One partner cannot be expelled ‘by the others unless there — is ‘a special power of expulsion given by the articles. A partner has no right to assign his share without the express or implied consent of the other partners. If the partner- ship be one at will, the assignment ipso facto dissolves it; if not at will, the others are entitled to treat the assign- ment as a ground of dissolution. The assignee takes the share subject to the claims of the other partners. Each partner has an equitable lien upon the partnership property, enabling him within certain limits to control the disposi- tion of it. On the death of a partner his share goes to his representatives, not, as in joint-tenancy, by accretion to the survivors. It is an ancient maxim of law that jus accrescendt inter mercatores non habet locum (Coke upon Littleton, 182 a).

2. A more important and difficult question is the rela- tion of partners to those not members of the partnership. From this point of view partnership is to a great extent a branch of the law of agency (see AGENT). As far as contracts are concerned, it is the rule that one partner is its general agent for the transaction of its business in the ordinary way, and the firm is responsible for whatever is done by any of the partners when acting for the firm within the limits of the authority conferred by the nature of the business which it carries on (1 Lindley, bk. iL ch. i.). The authority is defined by the business, not by any private understanding between the partners. Thusa merchant can bind his partners by accepting a bill of exchange for the firm, but a solicitor or medical man cannot. A partner cannot execute a deed, except a simple release of a debt, so as to bind the firm. In many cases an act not warranted by authority, such as a submission to arbitration, may be adopted by ratification so as to bind the firm. And in other cases the rights of a bona jide claimant will prevail, even though the authority has been exceeded and there has been no ratification, ¢.g., where @ bill given by a partner on his private account passes into the hands of a

bona fide holder for value. Where the partner contracts on behalf of the partnership, it is the latter and not the individual who is primarily liable. I the name of a firm and an individual is the same, a bill drawn in that name for partnership purposes is prima facie a bill of the firm (Yorkshire Banking Co. v. Beatson, Law Rep. 5 C. P. D., 109). But a partner may hold himself out as the sole partner, and so make himself separately liable. Every member of a partnership is at common law liable in solido for the debts of the firm, 4 liability co-extensive with his power to transfer the whole property of the firm. This liability cannot be restricted except by statute (as the Companies Act) or by express contract with the creditors. A dormant partner is liable, like an ostensible partner, for debts contracted during his partnership; if, however, the ostensible partners have been sued to judgment, an action cannot be brought to charge the dormant partner (Kendall v. Hamilton, Law Rep., 4 App. Cas., 504). The liability of a dormant and an ostensible partner terminates in a different manner, 11 the former case by his simple retirement without notice, in the latter only after notice, a general notice in the Gazette being the usual means of informing the public of the change, while special notice is given to known customers. It is a question of fact whether the liability of the new

Pak GN Rs HTP

frm has been accepted in place of that of the previous firm. A guarantee to or for a firm ceases upon a change

in the firm unless it appears by express stipulation or.

necessary implication that the guarantee is to continue, 19 & 20 Vict. c. 97, § 4. There are cases in which a relation of quasi-partnership is created, #¢, in which persons not partners inter se become partners gua third persons. A person who holds himself out as a partner incurs the liability of a partner. This was clearly laid down by Lord Chief Justice Eyre in Waugh v. Carver, and is now an established principle of law. “ Holding out” means that credit has been obtained by the use of his name, or even by permitting reference to him as one who wishes to have his name concealed.

Where the liability arises out of tort, the law is not quite the same as it is where the liability arises from con- tract. The presumption is against the

authority of a partner to commit a tort, and so opposed to the presump- tion in the case of contract. But a partnership is liable jointly and severally for any wrongful act or omission of one of its members in conducting the business of the firm, eg., the neglect of a managing partner to keep the shaft of a mine in order, but not for a wilful wrong unconnected with the business, eg., malicious prosecution. With respect to fraud by misappropriation of money, some obligation on the part of the firm to take care of the money must be shown. A receipt from the firm prima facte imposes this obligation.

An action should be brought by all the partners (except merely nominal partners, who need not be joined unless in an action on a contract under seal). They cannot delegate a right of action to one of themselves for convenience. This can only be done by statute, as 7 Geo. IV. c. 46, enabling banking companies to sue and be sued by a public officer. All the partners ought to be sued, subject to any statutory exception, as that contained in the Carriers' Act, 11 Geo. IV., and 1 Will. IV. c. 68, §§ 5, 6. But misjoinder or nonjoinder of parties does not defeat an action (Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, ord. xvi. r. 11), The method of procedure does not affect the principle of the liability of each partner 7 solido, a principle on which is based one of the main points of difference between a partnership and a corporation. Ina corporation the collective whole is distinct from the in- dividuals composing it (see Corporation). But in a partnership the firm, as distinct from the individual partners, is recognized by English law only to a very limited extent, and as matter of procedure rather than of substantive law. Since the Judicature Acts, in an action against a partnership, power is given to sue and be sued in the firm name, but the partners are bound to disclose the names of the persons constituting the firm, and, though judgment goes against the firm, execution may issue against a partner (Lules of the Supreme Court, 1888, ord. vii. r. 2, xvi. r. 14, xlii. r. 10), An adjudication of bankruptcy cannot be made against the firm in the firm name, but only against the partners individually (Bank- ruptcy Rules, 1883, r. 197).

A partnership at will is dissolved by determination of the will or assignment of the partnership share. A partnership other than a partnership at will is dissolved by (1) effluxion of time ; (2) retirement of a partner; (3) alienation by operation of law of a partner's share, e.g., by bankruptcy or (formerly)

by marriage of a female partner ; (4) death; (5) business becoming unlawful, as by a partner becoming an alien enemy ; (6) assignment of partnership share ; (7) lunacy; (8) liability of a partner to criminal prosecution ; (9) impossibility of carrying on the business. In the last four cases the partnership is not tpso facto dissolved, but they are grounds on which the

dol

court may order a dissolution (see Pollock, art. 47 sq.). Where a partner has been induced to enter into a partner- ship by fraud, he has in general the option of affirming or rescinding the contract at his election.

The dissolution of partnerships and the taking of partner- ship accounts are matters specially assigned to the Chancery Division (Judicature Act, 1873, § 34). After dissolution the persons who constituted the partnership become tenants in common of the partnership property until the division of assets, unless any other provision is made by agreement. The partnership debts are paid out ” of the partnership assets, and the private debts out of the private assets.

The principle of law that a partnership debt is joint and several comes into operation where the partnership is dis- solved by bankruptcy or death. The joint estate is the primary fund for the payment of joint debts, but the joint creditors can look to any surplus of the separate estate (after payment of the separate debts) to satisfy any deficiency in the joint estate. See the Bankruptcy Act, 1883, §59. Partners cannot compete with the creditors of the firm either against the joint estate or the several estate of a partner; that is to say, they cannot be satisfied until all the debts of the firm have been paid. In the case of death, although the partnership is dissolved by death, it is still treated as subsisting for the purposes of administra- tion. The creditor has the same rights against the estate of the deceased as he would have had in his lifetime in some cases, so that he may proceed against this estate in the first instance, without recourse to the surviving partners (see the judgment of Lord Selborne in Kendall ». Hamilton, Law Rep., 5 App. Cas. 539). Further, the death of a partner has the result of converting the real property of the firm. ‘“ Whenever a partnership purchases real estate for partnership purposes, and with partnership funds, it is, as between the real

and personal representatives of the partners, personal estate' (Darby v. Darby, 3 Drewry 506).

At common law no criminal prosecution was maintain- able by one partner against another for stealing the property of thefirm. But this difficulty has been removed by 81 & 32 Vict. c. 116.

Though the English law of partnership is based upon Roman law, there are several matters in which the two systems differ. (1) There was no limit to the number of partners in Roman law. (2) In soctetas one partner could generally bind another only by express mandatum ; one partner was not regarded as the implied agent of the others. (3) The debts of a soctetas were apparently joint, and not joint and several. (4) The heres of a deceased partner could not succeed to the rights of the deceased, even by express stipulation. There 1s no such disability in England. (5) In actions between partners in Roman law, the beneficium competeniix applied, that is, thie privilege of being condemned only in such an amount as the partner could pay without being reduced to destitution. (6) The Roman partner was in some respects more strictly bound by his fiduciary position than is the English partner. For instance, a Roman partner could not retire 1n order to enjoy alone a gain which he knew was awaiting him. (7) There was no special tribunal to which matters arising out of societas were referred.

The law of Scotland as to partnership agrees in the main with the law of England. The principal difference is that Scots law recognizes the firm as an entity distinct from the individuals com- posing it. English law, as has been said, does this only to a very

limited extent. The firm of the company is either proper or descriptive. A proper or personal firm is a firm designated by the

1 The term "company" is not confined, as in England, to ap association existing by virtue of the Companies Act, 1862, or similar Acts.

name of one or more of the partners. A descriptive firm does not introduce the name of any of the partners. The former may sue and be sued under the

company name; the latter only with the addition of the names of three at least (if there are so many) of the partners. A consequence of this view of the company as a separate person is that an action cannot be maintained against a partner personally without application to the company in the first instance, the individual partners being in the position of cautioners for the company rather than of principal debtors. The provisions of the Mercantile Law Amendment Act, 1856 (19 & 20 Vict. c. 60, § 8), do not affect the case of partners. But, though the company must first be discussed, diligence must necessarily be direeted against the individual partners. Heritable property cannot be held in the name of a firm; it can only stand in the name of individual partners. Notice of the retirement of even a dormant partner is necessary. The law of Scotland draws a distinction between joint adventure and partnership. Joint adventure or joint trade is a partnership confined to a particular adventure or speculation, in which the partners, whether latent or unknown, use no firm or social name, and incur no responsibility beyond the limits of the adventure. In the rules applicable to cases of insolvency and bankruptcy of a company and partners, Scots law differs in several respects from English. Thus a company can be made bankrupt without the partners being made so as individuals. And, when both company and partuers are bankrupt, the company creditors ‘are entitled to rank on the separate estates of the partners for the balance of their debts equally with the separate creditors. But in sequestration, by 19 & 20 Viet. c. 79, § 66, the creditor of a com- pany, in claiming upon the sequestrated estate of a partner, must deduct from the amount of his claim the value of his right to draw payment from the company’s funds, and he is ranked as creditor only for the balance. (See Erskine’s Znst., bk. iii. tit. iii.; Bell’s Comm., li. 500-562; Bell’s Principles, §$ 350-403.)

In the United States the English common law is the basis of the law. Most States have, however, their own special legislation on the subject. Partnership is defined by Chancellor Kent to be “a contract of two or more competent persons to place their money, effects, labour, and skill, or some or all of them, in lawful commerce or business, and to divide the profit and bear the loss in certain proportions” (3 Kent’s Comm., lect. xliii.). The definition of the New York Civil Code, art. 1283, runs thus :— “partnership is the association of two or more persons for the purpose of carrying on business together, and dividing its profits between them.” The most striking

feature of the law in the United States is the existence of limited partnerships, correspond- ing to the sociétés en commandite established in France by the ordinance of 1673. The State of New York was the first to introduce this kind of partnership by legislative enactment. The provisions of the New York Act have been followed by most of the other States. In many States there can be no limited partnership in banking and insurance. In this form of partnership one or more persons responsible in solido are associated with one or more dormant partners liable only to the extent of the funds supplied by them. In Louisiana such partnerships are called partnerships in commendam (Civil Code, art. 2810). In New York the respon sible partners are called general partners, the others special partners. Such partnerships must, by the law of most States, be registered. (In 1880 a bill providing for the legislation of such partnerships in the United Kingdom was introduced in the House of Commons, but failed to become law.) In Louisiana universal partnerships (the soctetates universorum bonorum of Roman law) must be created in writing and registercd (Civil Code, art. 2800). In some States the English law as it stood before Cox v. Hickman is followed, and participation in profits is still regarded as the test of partnership, e.g., Leggett v. Hyde (58 New York Rep. 272). In some States nominal partners are not allowed. Thus in New York, where the words “and Company” or “and Co.” are used, they must represent an actual partner or partners. A breaeh of this rule subjects offenders to penalties. In most States claims against the firm after the death of a partner must, in the first instance, be made to the survivors. The creditors cannot, as in England, proceed directly against the representatives of the deceased. The law as to the conversion of realty into personalty on the administration of the estate of a deceased partner in some States agrees with English law, in others does not. (See 3 Kent’s Comm., lect. xliii.; Story, On Partnership; Troubat, On Limited Partnership; and Angell, On Private Corporations.) (J. Wt.)

PARTRIDGE, in older English Prrrricur, Dutch Patrijs, French Perdriz, all from the Latin Perdix, which word in sound does not imitate badly the call-note of this bird, so well known throughout the British Islands and the greater part of Europe as to need no description or account of its habits here. The English name properly denotes the only species indigenous to Britain, often now-

adays called the Grey Partridge (to distinguish it from

|

others, of which more presently), the Perdix cinerea of ornithologists, a species which may be regarded as the model game-bird—whether from the excellence of the sport it affords in the field, or the no less excellence of its flesh at table, which has been esteemed from the time of Martial to our own —while it is on all hands admitted to be wholly innocuous, and at times beneficial to the agri- culturist. It is an undoubted fact that the Partridge thrives with the highest system of cultivation; and the lands that are the most carefully tilled, and bear the greatest quantity of grain and green crops, generally produce the greatest number of Partridges. Yielding perhaps in economic importance to the Red Grouse, what may be called the social influence of the Partridge is greater than that excited by any other wild bird, for there must be few rural parishes in the three kingdoms of which the inhabitants are not more or less directly affected in their movements and business by the coming in of Partridge- shooting, and therefore a few words on this theme may not be out of place.

From the days when men learned to “shoot flying” until some forty years ago, dogs were generally if not invariably used to point out where the “covey,” as a family party of Partridges is always called, was lodged, and the greatest pains were taken to break in the “pointers” or “setters ” to their duty. In this way marvellous success was attained, and the delight lay nearly as much in seeing the dogs quarter the ground, wind and draw up to the game, helping them at times (for a thorough understanding between man and beast was necessary for the perfection of the sport) by word or gesture, as in bringing down the bird after it had been finally sprung. There are many who lament that the old-fashioned practice of shooting Partridges to dogs has, with rare exceptions, fallen into desuetude, and it is commonly believed that this result has followed wholly from the desire to make larger and larger bags of game. ‘The opinion has a certain amount of truth for its base ; but those who hold it omit to notice the wholly changed circumstances in which Partridge- shooters now find themselves. In the old days there were plenty of broad, tangled hedgerows which afforded per-

manent harbour for the birds, and at the beginning of the shooting-season admirable shelter or “lying” (to use the sportsman’s word) was found in the rough stubbles, often reaped knee-high, foul with weeds and left to stand some six or eight weeks before being ploughed, as well as in the turnips that were sown broadcast. Throughout the greater part of England now the fences are reduced to the narrowest of boundaries and are mostly trimly kept; the

- stubbles—mown, to begin with, as closely as possible to the

ground—are ploughed within a short time of the corn being carried, and the turnips are drilled in regular lines, offering inviting alleys between them along which Partridges take foot at any unusual noise. Pointers in such a district—and to this state of things all the arable part of England is tending—are simply useless, except at the beginning of the season, when the young birds are not as yet strong on the wing, and the old birds are still feeble from moulting their quill-feathers. Of late years there- fore other modes of shooting Partridges have had to be employed, of which methods the most popular is that known as “driving”—the “guns” being stationed in more or less concealment at one end of the field, or series of fields, which is entered from the other by men or boys who deploy into line and walk across it making a noise. It is the custom with many to speak depreciatingly of this proceeding, but it is a fact that as much knowledge of the ways of Partridges is needed to ensure a successful day’s “driving” as was required of old when nearly every- thing was left to the intelligence of the dogs, for the course

scmcas) oe a

PAS—PAS

of the birds’ flight depends not only on the position of the line of beaters, but almost on the station of each person composing it, in relation to the force and direction of the wind and to the points on which it is desired that the Partridges should converge. Again, the skill and alacrity wanted for bringing down birds flying at their utmost velocity, and often at a considerable height, is enormously greater than that which sufficed to stop those that had barely gone 20 yards from the dog’s nose, though ad-

mittedly Partridges rise very quickly and immediately attain great speed. Moreover, the shooting of Partridges to pointers came to an end in little more than six weeks, whereas ‘‘driving ” may be continued for the whole season, and is never more successful than when the birds, both young and old, have completed their moult, and are strongest upon the wing. But, whether the new fashion be objectionable or not, it cannot be doubted that to go back to the old one with success would necessitate a reversion to the slovenly methods of agriculture followed in former years, and therefore is as impossible as would be a return to the still older practice of taking Partridges in a setting-net, described by Gervase Markham or Willughby.

The Grey Partridge has doubtless largely increased in numbers in Great Britain since the beginning of the present century, when so much down, heath, and moor- land was first brought under the plough, for its partiality to an arable country is very evident. It has been observed that the birds which live on grass lands or heather only are apt to be smaller and darker in colour than the average; but in truth the species when adult is subject to a much greater variation in plumage than is commonly supposed, and the well-known chestnut horse-shoe mark, generally considered distinctive of the cock, is very often absent.

In Asia our Partridge seems to be unknown, but in the.

temperate parts of Eastern Siberia its place is taken by a very nearly allied form, P. barbata, and in Tibet there is a bird, P. hodgsoniz, which can hardly with justice be generically separated from it. The relations of some other forms inhabiting the Indian Region are at present too obscure to make any notice of them expedient here.

The common Red-legged Partridge of Europe, generally called the French Partridge, Caccabis rufa, seems to be justifiably considered the type of a separate group.! This bird has been introduced into England within little more than one hundred years ago, and has established itself in various parts of the country, notwithstanding a widely- spread, and in some respects unreasonable prejudice against it. It has certainly the habit of trusting nearly as much to its legs as to its wings, and thus incurred the obloquy of old-fashioned sportsmen, whose dogs it vexatiously kept at a running point; but, when it was also accused of driving away the Grey Partridge, the charge

only shewed the ignorance of those that brought it, for as a matter of fact the French Partridge rather prefers ground which the common species avoids—such as the heaviest clay-soils, or the most infertile heaths. But even where the two species meet, the present writer can declare from the personal ob- servation of many years that the alleged antipathy between them is imaginary, and unquestionably in certain parts of

the country the “head of game” has been increased by OS Sh oes ee ee

1 Prof. Parker first (Trans. Zool. Soc., v. p. 155) and, after him, Prof. Huxley (Proc. Zool. Soc., 1868, pp. 299-302) have pointed out that the true @allinw offer two types of structure, “one of Which may be called Galline, and the other Tetraonine,” to use the latter’s words, though he is “by no means clear that they do not etete Into one another”; and, according to the characters assigned 2. him, Caccabis lies “on the Galline side of the boundary,” while a belongs to the Tetraonine group. Further investigation of b 1s matter is very desirable, and, with the abundant material possessed

Y Zoological gardens, it might easily be carried out.

33d

the introduction of the foreigner.2 The French Partridge has several congeners, all with red legs and plumage of similar character. In Africa north of the Atlas there is the Barbary Partridge, C. petrosa; in southern Europe another, C’. saxatilis, which extends eastward till it is ro- placed by C. chukar, which reaches India, where it isa well- known bird. Two very interesting desert-forms, supposed to be allied to Caccabis, are the Ammoperdix heyt of North Africa and Palestine and the A. bonhami of Persia; but the absence of the metatarsal knob, or incipient spur, suggests (in our ignorance of their other osteological char- acters) an alliance rather to the genus Perdix. On the other hand the groups of birds known as Francolins and Snow-Partridges are generally furnished with strong but blunt spurs, and therefore probably belong to the Cacca- bine group. Of the former, containing many species, there is only room here to mention the Francolin, which used to be found in many parts of the South of Europe, Francolinus vulgaris, which also extends to India, where it is known as the Black Partridge. This seems to have been the Attagas or Attagen of classical

authors,3 a bird so celebrated for its exquisite flavour, the strange disappear- ance of which from all or nearly all its European haunts has been before noticed (Brrps, vol. ill. p. 736, note), and still remains inexplicable. It is possible that this bird has been gradually vanishing for several centuries, and if so to this cause may be attributed the great uncertainty attend- ing the determination of the Attagen—it being a common practice among men in all countries to apply the name of a species that is growing rare to some other that is still abundant. Of the Snow-Partridges, Tetraogallus, it is only to be said here that they are the giants of their kin, and that nearly every considerable range of mountains in Asia seems to possess its specific form.

By English colonists the name Partridge has been very loosely applied, and especially so in North America.

Where a qualifying word is prefixed no confusion is caused,

but without it there is sometimes a difficulty at first to know whether the Ruffed Grouse (Bonasa umbellus) or the Virginian Colin (Ortyx perme isintended. (a. N.) PASCAL, Braise (1623-1662), was born at Clermont Ferrand on the 19th June 1623. His father was Etienne Pascal, president of the Court of Aids at Clermont; his mother’s name was Antoinette Bégon. The Pascal family were Auvergnats by extraction as well as residence, and they had for many generations held posts in the civil service. They were ennobled by Louis XI. in 1478, but, as in many other cases, no attempt seems to have been made to assume the privileged particle de. The earliest anecdote of Pascal is a singular story recorded by his niece, Marguerite Perier (the heroine of the Holy Thorn miracle), of his being bewitched, and freed from the spell by the witch with strange ceremonies. His mother died when he was about four years old (the exact date is differently stated), and left him with two sisters—Gilberte, who after- wards married M. Perier, and Jacqueline. Both sisters are of importance in their brother’s history, and both are said to have been beautiful and accomplished. When Pascal was about seven years old, his mother having been already dead for some time, Etienne Pascal the father gave up his official post at Clermont, and betook himself

2 It is a singular fact that the game-preservers who object most strongly to the Red-legged Partridge are not agreed on the exact grounds of their objection. One party will declare that it vanquishes the Grey Partridge, while the other holds that, though the latter, the “English” Partridge, is much vexed by the introduced species, it invariably beats off the “ Frenchman”!

3 However, many naturalists have maintained a different opinion— some making it a Woodcock, a Gopwit (q.v.), or even the Hazel-hen (see GrousE, vol. xi. p. 223). The question has been well discussed by Lord Lilford (Jbis, 1862, pp. 352-356).

to Paris for the education of his children and for his own indulgence in scientific society. It does not appear that Blaise, who went to no school, but was taught by his father, was at all forced, but rather the contrary. Never- theless he has a distinguished place in the story of pre- cocious children, and in the much more limited chapter of children whose precocity has been followed by great per- formance at maturity, though he never became what is called a learned man, perhaps did not know Greek, and was pretty certainly indebted for most of his miscellaneous reading to Montaigne. How, purposely kept from books, he worked out the more elementary problems of geometry for himself; how at sixteen he wrote a treatise on conic sections which Descartes refused to believe in except as the work of a master and not of a student; how he wrote treatises on acoustics at twelve, and began elaborate cal- culating machines when he was still a boy,—are things dwelt upon in all biographies of him. In this notice his attainments in mathematical and physical science, except those which have some special connexion with his life and history, will be dealt with separately and later.

The Pascal family, some years after settling in Paris, had to go through a period of adversity. Etienne Pascal, on leaving Clermont, had bought certain of the Hétel de

Ville rentes, almost the only regular investment open to.

Frenchmen at the time. Richelieu reduced the interest and the investors protested, Pascal amongst them. But the great cardinal did not understand such protests, and to escape the Bastille Pascal had to go into hiding. He was, according to the story, restored to favour owing to the good acting and graceful appearance of his daughter Jacqueline in a representation of Scudéry's Amour Tyran- nique before Richelieu. Indeed Jacqueline, who was only fourteen, herself gives the account in a pleasant letter which is extant, and which contains an allusion to her brother's mathematical prowess. Madame d'Aiguillon's intervention in the matter was perhaps as powerful as Jacqueline's acting, and Richelieu not only relieved Ktienne Pascal from the necessity of keeping out of the way, but gave him (in 1641) the important and lucrative though somewhat troublesome intendancy of Rouen. The family accordingly removed to the Norman capital, though Gilberte Pascal shortly after, on her marriage, returned to Clermont. At Rouen they became acquainted with Corneille, and Blaise Pascal pursued his studies with such vehemence that he already showed signs of an injured constitution, Nothing, however, of importance happened till the year 1646. Then Pascal the elder was confined to the house by the consequences of an accident on the ice, and was visited by certain gentlemen of the neighbourhood who had come under the influence of St Cyran and the Jansenists. It does not appear that up to this time the Pascal family had been contemners of religion, but they now eagerly embraced the creed, or at least the attitude of Jansenism. One of the more immediate results of this conversion has rather shocked some modern admirers of Pascal, who forget that toleration,.except of the Gallio kind, is an idea which had no place in men's minds in Pascal's day. He came into contact with a Capuchin known as Pére St Ange, but whose real name was Forton, and who seems to have entertained some speculative ideas on theological points which were not strictly orthodox. Thereupon Pascal with some of his friends lodged an information against the heretic with the representative of the archbishop of Rouen. There seems to have been no lack of zeal about the accusers, but the accused made no difficulty whatever in making profession of orthodoxy, and the judge appears to have been by no means anxious to push the matter home. No doubt Pascal was perfectly sincere, and like most of his contemporaries held the

opinion attributed to a great English nonconformist con- temporary of his, that, while it was very shocking that men who were in the right should not be tolerated, it was almost equally shocking that men who were in the wrong should be.

His bodily health was at this time very far from satis- factory, and he appears to have suffered, not merely from acute dyspepsia, but from a kind of paralysis. He was, however, except when physicians positively forbade study, and probably sometimes when they did so forbid, inde- fatigable in his mathematical work. In 1647 he published his Nouvelles Hxpériences sur le Vide, and in the next year the famous experiment with the barometer on the Puy de Dome was carried out for him by his brother-in-law Perier, and repeated on a smaller scale by himself at Paris, to which place by the end of 1647 he and his sister Jacqueline had removed, to be followed shortly by their father. In a letter of Jacqueline's dated the 27th of September, an account of a visit paid by Descartes to Pascal is given, which, like the other information on the relations of the two, gives strong suspicion of mutual jealousy. Descartes, however, gave Pascal the very sensible advice to stay in bed as long as he could (it may be remembered that the philosopher himself never got up till eleven) and to take plenty of beef tea. But the relations of Pascal with Descartes belong chiefly to the scientific achievements of the former. He had, however, other relations, both domestic and miscellaneous, which had nothing to do with science. As early as May 1648 Jacqueline Pascal was strongly drawn to Port Royal, and her brother fre- quently accompanied her to its church. She desired indeed to join the convent, but her father, who at the date above mentioned returned to Paris with the dignity of counsellor of state (his functions at Rouen having ceased), disapproved of the plan, and took both brother and sister to Clermont. Pascal stayed in Auvergne for the greater part of two years, but next to nothing is known of what he did there. Fléchier, in his account of the Grands Jours at Clermont many years after, speaks of a "belle savante" in whose company Pascal had frequently been—a trivial mention on which, as on many other trivial points of scantily known lives, the most childish structures of comment and conjecture have been based. It is sufficient to say that at this time, despite the Rouen "conversion," there is no evidence to show that Pascal was in any way a recluse, an ascetic, or in short anything but a young man of great intellectual promise and performance who was not

indifferent to society, but whose aptitude both for society and study was affected by weak health and the horse-doctoring of the time. He, his sister, and their father returned to Paris in the late autumn of 1650, and in September of the next year Etienne Pascal died. Almost immediately afterwards Jacqueline fulfilled her purpose of joining Port Royal— a proceeding which led to some soreness, finally healed, between herself and her brother and sister as to the dis- posal of her property. Perhaps this difference, but more probably the mere habitual use of the well-known dialect of Port Royal, led Jacqueline to employ in reference to her brother expressions which have led biographers into most unnecessary excursions of fancy. For these they have seemed to find further warrant in similar phrases used by the Periers, mother and daughter. It has been supposed that Pascal, from 1651 or earlier to the famous accident of 1654, lived a dissipated, extravagant, worldly, luxurious (though admittedly not vicious) life with his friend the Duc de Roannez and others. His Discours sur les Passions de Amour, a striking and characteristic piece, only recently discovered and printed, has also been assigned to this period, and has been supposed to indicate a hope-

Jess passion for Charlotte de Roannez, the duke's sister. Tt cannot be too decidedly said that all this is sheer romancing. The extant letters of Pascal to the lady show no trace of any affection (stronger than friendship) between them. As to Pascal's worldly life, it might be thought that only the completest ignorance of the usual

dialect of the stricter religious sects and societies (and

it may be added of Port Royal in particular) could induce any one to lay much stress on that. A phrase of Jacqueline's about the " horribles attaches" which bound her brother to the world may pair off with hundreds of similar expressions from Bunyan downwards. It is, how- ever, certain that in the autumn of 1654 Pascal's second "conversion" took place, and that it was lasting. He betook himself at first to Port Royal, and began to live a recluse and austere life there. Madame Perier simply says

that Jacqueline persuaded him to abandon the world.

Jacqueline represents the retirement as the final result of along course of dissatisfaction with mundane life. But there are certain anecdotic embellishments of the act which are too famous to be passed over, though they are in part apocryphal. It seems that Pascal in driving to Neuilly was run away with by the horses, and would have been plunged in the river but that the traces fortunately broke. To this, which seems authentic, is usually added the late and more than doubtful tradition (due to the Abbé Boileau) that afterwards he used at times to see an imaginary precipice by his bedside or at the foot of the chair on which he was sitting. Further, from November 93, 1654, dates the singular document usually known as "Pascal's amulet," a parchment slip which he wore con- stantly about him, and which bears the date followed by some lines of incoherent and strongly mystical devotion.

But, whatever may have been the immediate cause of Pascal's conversion and (for a time) domestication at Port Royal, it certainly had no evil effect on his intellectual or literary powers. Indeed, if he had been drowned at Neuilly he would hardly be thought of now as anything but an extraordinarily gifted man of science. It must also be noted that, though he lived much at Port Royal, and partly at least observed its rule, he never actually became one of its famous solitaries. But for what it did for him (and for a time his health as well as his peace of mind seems to have been improved) he very soon paid the most ample and remarkable return that any man of letters ever paid to any institution. At the end of 1655 Arnauld, the chief light of Port Royal, was condemned by the Sorbonne for a letter which he had published expressing doubt whether the famous five propositions were to be found in Jansen, and, as much was made of this condemna- tion, it was thought important by the Jansenist and Port Royal party that steps should be taken to disabuse the popular mind on the whole controversy. Arnauld would have undertaken the task himself, but his wiser friends knew that his style was anything but popular, and over- tuled him. It is said that he personally suggested to Pascal to try his hand, and that the first of the famous Provincial Letters (this familiar name, or rather misnomer, isan abbreviation from the proper title of Lettres Ecrites par Lowis de Montalte & un Provincial de ses Amis) was written in a few days, or, less probably, in a day. It was printed on the 23d January 1656, and, being immensely popular and successful, was followed by others to the

number of eighteen, in which not merely the special points at Issue but the whole ethical and doctrinal system of the Jesuits was pulled to pieces.

In the Provinciales Pascal, who it must be remembered published under a, strict incognito, denies that he belongs to Port Royal, and in fact, though during the last years of his life he was wholly devoted to its interests, he was

never a regular resident there, and usually abode in his own house at Paris. Shortly after the appearance of the Provinciales, on May 24, 1656, occurred the miracle of the Holy Thorn, a fragment of the crown of Christ pre- served at Port Royal, which cured the little Marguerite Perier of a fistula lacrymalis. The Jesuits were much mortified by this Jansenist miracle, which, as it was offici- ally recognized, they could not openly deny. Pascal and his friends rejoiced in proportion. But the details of his later years after this incident are somewhat scanty, and as recorded by his sister and niece they tell of increasing ill health, and of ascetic-practices and beliefs increasing still more. One curious incident, contrasting equally with this state of things and with Pascal's studious character and renown, is what Madame Perier calls "'affaire des carrosses," a scheme of the Duc de Roannez and others for running omnibuses in Paris, which was actually carried out, of which Pascal was in some sort manager, and from which he derived some profit. This, however, is an excep- tion. Otherwise, for years before his death, we hear only of acts of charity and of, as it seems to modern ideas, extravagant asceticism. Thus Madame Perier tells us that he disliked to see her caress her children, and would not allow the beauty of any woman to be talked of in his pre- sence. What may be called his last illness began as early as 1658, after which year he never seems to have enjoyed even tolerable health, and as the disease progressed it was attended with more and more pain, chiefly in the head. In June 1662, having given up his own house to a poor family who were suffering from small-pox, and being unwilling that his sister should expose herself to infection, he went to her house to be nursed, and never afterwards left it. His state was, it seems, mistaken by his physicians, who to the last maintained that there was little

danger— so much so that the offices of the church were long put off. He was able, however, to receive the eucharist, and soon afterwards died in convulsions on August 19th. A post mortem examination was held, which showed not only grave derangement in the stomach and other organs, but a serious lesion of the brain.

Eight years after Pascal's death appeared, in a small volume, the book which has given most trouble to all students of Pascal, and most pleasure to some of them. It purported to be Pascal's Pensées, and a preface by his nephew Perier gave the world to understand that these were fragments of a great projected apology for Christianity which the author had in conversation with his friends planned out years before. The editing of the book was peculiar. It was submitted toa committee of influential Jansenists, with the Duc de Roannez at their head, and, in addition, it bore the imprimatur of numerous unofficial approvers who testified to its orthodoxy. It does not appear that there was much suspicion of the garbling which had been practised,—garbling not unusual at the time, and excused in this case by the fact of a lull in the troubles of Port Royal and a great desire on the part of its friends to do nothing to disturb that lull. But as a matter of fact no more entirely fictitious book ever issued from the press. The fragments which it professed to give were in them- selves confused and incoherent enough, nor is it easy to – believe that they all formed part of any such single and coherent design as that referred to above. But the editors omitted, altered, added, separated, combined, and so forth entirely at their pleasure, actually making some changes which seem to have been thought improvements of style. Asan instance of their anxiety to avoid offence, it may be noticed that they rejected, apparently as too outspoken, Madame Perier's invaluable life of her brother, which was written to accompany the second edition of the Pensées, but did not actually appear with them till 1684.

306

This rifacimento remained the standard text with a few unimportant additions for nearly two centuries, except that by a truly comic revolution of public taste Condorcet in 1776 published, after study of the original, which remained accessible in manuscript, another garbling, con- ducted this time

in the interests of unorthodoxy. It was not till 1842 that Victor Cousin drew attention to the absolutely untrustworthy condition of the text, nor till 1844 that M. Faugére edited that text from the MS. in something like a condition of purity, though, as subse- quent editions have shown, not with absolute fidelity. But even in its spurious condition the book had been recognized as remarkable and almost unique. Its contents, as was to be expected, are of a very chaotic character—of a character so chaotic indeed that the reader is almost at the mercy of the arrangement, perforce an arbitrary arrangement, of the editors. But the subjects dealt with concern more or less all the great problems of thought on what may be called the theological side of metaphysics :— the sufficiency of reason, the trustworthiness of experience, the admissibility of revelation, free will, foreknowledge, and the rest. The peculiarly disjointed and fragmentary condition of the sentiments expressed by Pascal aggravates the appearance of universal doubt which is present in the Pensées, just as the completely unfinished condition, from the literary point of view, of the work constantly causes slighter or graver doubts as to the actual meaning which the author wished to express. Accordingly the Pensées have always been a favourite exploring ground, not to say a favourite field of battle, to persons who take an interest in the problems. Speaking generally, their tendency is towards the combating of scepticism by a deeper scepticism, or, as Pascal himself calls it, Pyrrhonism, which occasionally goes the length of denying the possi- bility of any natural theology. Pascal explains all the contradictions and difficulties of human life and thought by the doctrine of the fall, and relies on faith and reve- lation alone to justify each other. Comparison of the Pensées with the Prownciales is, considering the radical differences of state (the one being a finished work deliber- ately issued from the master's hands, the other not even a rough draught, scarcely even "heads" or "outlines," but a collection of loose and uncorrected notes settled neither as to the exact form of each nor as to the relation of each to any whole), impossible. But it may be said that no one can properly perceive how great a man of letters Pascal was from the Pensées alone, and that no one can perceive how deep if not wide a thinker he was from the Provinciales alone. An absolute preference of either argues a certain onesidedness in the relative estimate of matter and form. 'The wiser mind distinctly prefers both, and recognizes that if either were lacking the greatness of Pascal would fail to be perceived, or at least to be per- ceived fully.

Excluding his scientific attainments, which, as has been noted above, will be the subject of separate notice, Pascal presents himself for comment in two different lights, the second of which is, if the expression be permitted, a com- posite one. The first exhibits him as a man of letters, the second as a philosopher, a theologian, and a man. If this last combination seems to be audacious or clumsy, it can only be said that in hardly any thinker are theological thoughts, and thoughts more strictly to be called philo- sophical or metaphysical, so intimately, so inextricably blended as in Pascal, and that in none is the colour of the theology and the philosophy more distinctly personal. This latter fact adds to the difficulty of the problem ; for, though Pascal has written not a little, and though a vast amount has been written about him, it cannot be said that his character as a man, not a writer, is very distinct.

PASCAL

The accounts of his sister and niece have the defect of al] hagiology (to use the term with no disrespectful inten- tion) ; they are obviously written rather with a view to the ideas and the wishes of the writers than with a view to the actual and absolute personality of the subject. Except from these interesting but somewhat tainted sources, we know little or nothing about him. Hence conjecture, or at least inference, must always enter largely into any estimate of Pascal, except a purely literary one.

On that side, fortunately, there is no possibility of doubt or difficulty to any competent inquirer. The Provincial Letters are the first example of French prose which is at once considerable in bulk, varied and important in matter, perfectly finished in form. They owe not a little to Descartes, for Pascal's indebtedness to his predecessor is unquestionable from the literary side, whatever may be the case with the scientific. But Descartes had had neither the opportunity, nor the desire, nor probably the power, to write anything of the literary importance of the Provinciales. 'The unanimity of eulogy as to the style of this wonderful book has sometimes tempted foreigners, who feel or affect to feel an inability to judge for them. selves, into a kind of scepticism for which there is abso- lutely no ground. The first example of polite contro- versial irony since Lucian, the Provinciales have continued to be the best example of it during more than two centuries in which the style

has been sedulously practised, and in which they have furnished a model to generation after generation without being surpassed by any of the works to which they have shown the way. The unfailing freshness and charm of the contrast between the import- ance, the gravity, In some cases the dry and abstruse nature, of their subjects and the lightness sometimes almost approaching levity in its special sense of the manner in which these subjects are attacked is a triumph of literary art of which no familiarity dims the splendour, and which no lapse of time, affecting as that lapse has already done toa great extent the attraction of the sub- jects themselves, can ever impair. The tools of phrase and diction by which this triumph is achieved were not in all cases of Pascal's invention—Descartes and Corneille had been beforehand with him to some extent—but many of them were actually new, and all were newly and more skilfully applied. Nor perhaps is this literary art really less evident in the Pensées, though it is less clearly dis- played, owing to the fragmentary or rather chaotic condi- tion of the work, and partly also to the fact that the subject here for many readers and in many places claims attention almost to the disregard of the form. The vivid- ness and distinction of Pascal's phrase, his singular faculty of inserting in the gravest and most impassioned medita- tion what may be almost called quips of thought and diction without any loss of dignity, the intense earnestness of meaning weighting but not confusing the style, all appear here, and some of them appear as they have no chance of appearing in at least the earlier Provinciales. .

No such positive statements as these are, however, possible as to the substance of the Pensées and the attitude of their author towards "les grands sujets." In the space and circumstances of the present notice nothing more can be attempted than a summary of the opinions hitherto advanced on the subject, and an indication of the results which may seem most probable to unprejudiced inquirers who possess a fair knowledge of and interest in the problems concerned. Hitherto the widest differences have been manifested in the estimate of Pascal's opinions on the main questions of philosophy, theology, and human conduct. He has been represented as a determined apolo- gist of intellectual orthodoxy animated by an almost fanatical ‘‘ hatred of reason," and possessed with a purpose

Pass C2 L

to overthrow the appeal to reason; as a sceptic and pessimist of a far deeper dye than Montaigne, anxious chiefly to show how any positive decision on matters beyond the range of experience is impossible ; as a nervous believer clinging to conclusions which his clearer and better sense showed to be indefensible; as an almost ferocious ascetic and paradoxer affecting the credo quia impossibile in intellectual matters and the odi quia amabile in matters moral and sensuous; as a wanderer in the regions of doubt and belief, alternately bringing a vast though vague power of thought and an unequalled power of expression to the expression of ideas incompatible and irreconcilable. In these as in all other matters the first requisite seems to be to clear the mind of prepossession and commonplace. It has already been hinted that far too much stress may be laid on the description of Pascal by his family as a converted sinner, and it may be added that at least as much stress has been laid on the other side of the notion of him as of a clear-headed materialist and expert in positive science, who by ill-health, overwork, and family influence was persuaded to adopt, half against his will, supernaturalist opinions. An unbiassed study of the scanty facts of his history, and of the tolerably abundant but scattered and chaotic facts of his literary production, ought to enable any one to steer clear of these exaggerations, while admitting at the same time that it is impossible to givea complete and final account of his attitude towards the riddles of this world and others. He certainly was no mere advocate of orthodoxy; he as certainly was no mere victim of terror at scepticism; least of all was he a free- thinker in disguise. He appears, as far as can be judged from the fragments of his Pensées, to have seized much more firmly and fully than has been usual for two cen- turies at least the central idea of the difference between reason and religion. Where the difficulty rises respecting him is that most thinkers since his day who have seen this difference with equal clearness have advanced from it to the negative side, while he advanced to the positive. In other words, most men since his day who have not been contented with a mere concordat, have let religion go and contented themselves with reason. Pascal, equally dis- contented with the concordat, held fast to religion and continued to fight out the questions of difference with reason. The emotion, amounting to passion, which he displays in conducting this campaign, and the superfluous energy of his debate on numerous points which, for

instance, such a man as Berkeley was content to leave in the vague must be traced to temperament, aggravated no doubt by his extreme intellectual activity, by ill health, and by his identification comparatively late in life and under peculiar circumstances with a militant and so to speak sectarian form of religious or ecclesiastical belief. Surveying these positions, we shall not be astonished to find much that is surprising and some things that are con- tradictory in Pascal's utterances on "les grands sujets." But the very worst method that can be taken for dealing with these contradictions is to assume, as his critics on one side too often do, that so clever a man as Pascal could hot possibly be a convinced acceptor of dogmatic Christi- anity, or to assume, as too many of his critics on the other do, that so pious and orthodox a man as Pascal could not entertain any doubts or see any difficulties in reference to dogmatic Christianity. He had taken to the serious con- templation of theological problems comparatively late ; for the Rouen escapade noted above is merely a specimen of the kind of youthful intolerance which counts for no- thing when justly viewed. The influence exercised on him by Montaigne is the one fact regarding him which has not been and can hardly be exaggerated, and his well-known Lntretien with Sacy on the subject (the restoration of

oot

'which to its proper form is one of the most valuable

results of recent criticism) leaves no doubt possible as to the source of his "Pyrrhonian" method. The atmo- sphere of somewhat heated devotion in which he found himself when he retired to Port Royal must naturally count for something in the direction and expression of his thoughts ; his broken health for something more. It is unfortunately usual with societies like Port Royal to generate a kind of mist and mirage which deceives and distorts even the keenest sight that looks through their eyes. But it is impossible for any one who takes Pascal's Pensées simply as he finds them in connexion with the facts of Pascal's history to question his theological ortho- doxy, understanding by theological orthodoxy the accept- ance of revelation and dogma; it is equally impossible for any one in the same condition to declare him absolutely content with dogma and revelation. Excursions into the field beyond formularies were necessary to him, and he made them freely; but

there is no evidence that these excursions tempted him to remain outside, and it appears particularly erroneous to take his celebrated “ wager” thoughts (the argument that, as another world and its liabilities, if accepted, imply no loss and much possible gain, they should be accepted) as an evidence of weakened belief or a descent from rational religion. It is of the essence of an active mind like Pascal’s to explore and state all the arguments of whatever degree of goodness which make for or make against the conclusion it is investigat- ing, and this certainly is neither the least obvious nor the weakest of the arguments which must have presented themselves to him.

In ecclesiastical questions as distinguished from theo- logical Pascal appears to have been an ardent Jansenist, adopting without very much discrimination the stand- point of his friends and religious directors Sacy, Arnauld, Singlin, and others. In one point he went beyond them, boldly disputing the infallibility of the pope, and hinting not obscurely at the propriety of agitation against errone- ous papal decisions. The Jansenists as a body could not muster courage to adopt this attitude. But it is not easy to discuss isolated points of this kind here; indeed their discussion belongs more properly to the general subject of Jansenism, and the history of Port Royal.

To sum up, the interest and value of the Pensées is positively diminished if they are taken as gropings after self-satisfaction or feeble attempts at freethinking. They are excursions into the great unknown made with a full acknowledgment of the greatness of that unknown, but with no kind of desire for something more known than the writer’s own standpoint. If to any one else they communicate such a desire that is not Pascal’s fault; and, if it seems to any one that without such a desire they could not have been indulged in, that comes mainly from an alteration of mental attitude, and from a want of familiarity with the mental attitude of Pascal’s own time. From the point of view that belief and know- ledge, based on experience or reasoning, are separate domains with an unexplored sea between and round them, Pascal is perfectly comprehensible, and he need not be taken as a deserter from one region to the other. To those who hold that all intellectual exercise outside the sphere of religion is impious, or that all intellectual exercise inside that sphere is futile, he must remain an enigma.

There are few writers who are more in need than Pascal of being fully and competently edited. The chief nominally complete edition at present in existence is that of Bossut (1779, 5 vols., and since reprinted), which not only appeared before any attempt had been made to restore the true text of the Pensées, but is in other respects quite inadequate. The edition of Lahure, 1858, is not much better, though the Pensées appear in their more genuine form. An

edition has been long promised for the excellent collection of.

Les Grands Ecrivains de la France; it has been understood to be under the charge of M. Faugére. Meanwhile, with the exception of the Provinciales (of which there are numcrous editions, no one much to be preferred to any other, for the text is undisputed and the book itself contains almost all the exegesis of its own contents necessary), Pascal can be read only at a dis-advantage. There are four chief editions of the true Pensées: that of M. Faugere (1844), the editio princeps; that of M. Havet (1852, 1867, and 1881), on the whole the best; that of M. Victor Rochet (1873), good, but arranged and edited with the deliberate intention of making Pascal first of all an orthodox apologist; and that of M. Molinier (1877-79), a carefully edited and interesting text, the important corrections of which have been introduced into M. Havet's last edition. Unfortunately, none of these can be said to be exclusively satisfactory. The minor works must chiefly be sought in Bossut or reprints of him. Works on Pascal are innumerable: Sainte-Beuve's Port Royal, Cousin's writings on Pascal and his Jacqueline Pascal, and the essays of the editors of the Pensées just mentioned are the most noteworthy. Principal Tulloch has contributed a useful little monograph to the series of Foreign Classics for English Readers (Edinburgh and London, 1878). (G. SA.)

Pascal as Natural Philosopher and Mathematician.— |

Great as is Pascal's reputation as a philosopher and man of letters, it may be fairly questioned whether his claim to be remembered by posterity as a

mathematician and physicist is not even greater. In his two former capacities all will admire the form of his work, while some will question the value of his results; but in his two latter capacities no one will dispute either. He was a great mathematician in an age which produced Des- cartes, Fermat, Huygens, Wallis, and Roberval. There are wonderful stories on record of his precocity in mathe- matical learning, which is sufficiently established by the well-attested fact that he had completed before he was sixteen years of age a work on the conic sections, in which he had laid down a series of propositions, discovered by himself, of such importance that they may be said to form the foundations of the modern treatment of that subject. Owing partly to the youth of the author, partly to the difficulty in publishing scientific works in those days, and partly no doubt to the continual struggle on his part to devote his mind to what appeared to his conscience more important labour, this work (like many others by the same master-hand) was never published. We know something of what it contained from a report by Leibnitz, who had seen it in Paris, and from a résumé of its results published in 1640 by Pascal himself, under the title Hssai pour les Coniques. The method which he fol- lowed was that introduced by his contemporary Desargues, viz. the transformation of geometrical figures by conical or optical projection. In this way he established the famous theorem that the intersections of the three pairs of opposite sides of a hexagon inscribed in a conic are collmear. This proposition, which he called the mystic hexagram, he made the keystone of his theory; from it alone he deduced more than four hundred corollaries, embracing, according to his own account, the conics of Apollonius, and other results innumerable,

Pascal also distinguished himself by his skill in the infinitesimal calculus, then in the embryonic form of Cavalieri’s method of indivisibles. The cycloid was a famous curve in those days; it had been discussed by Galileo, Descartes, Fermat, Roberval, and Torricelli, who had in turn exhausted their skill upon it. Pascal solved the hitherto refractory problem of the general quadrature of the cycloid, and proposed and solved a variety of others relating to the centre of gravity of the curve and its segments, and to the volume and centre of gravity of solids of revolution generated in various ways by means of it. He published a number of these theorems without

demonstration as a challenge to conteniporary matlema- ticians. Solutions were furnished by Wallis, Huygens,

Wren, and others; and Pascal published his own in the form of letters from Amos Dettonville (his assumed name as challenger) to M. Cercavi. There has been some dis. cussion as to the fairness of the treatment accorded by Pascal to his rivals, but no question of the fact that his initiative led to a great extension of our knowledge of the properties of the cycloid, and indirectly hastened the pro- gress of the differential calculus.

_ In yet another branch of pure mathematics Pascal] ranks as a founder. The mathematical theory of proba- bility and the allied theory of the combinatorial analysis were in effect created by the correspondence between Pascal and Fermat, concerning certain questions as to the division of stakes in games of chance, which had been | propounded toe the former by the gaming philosopher De Meéré. A complete account of this interesting correspond- ence would surpass our present limits ; but the reader may be referred to Todhunter's History of the Theory of Proba- bility (Cambridge and London, 1865) pp. 7-21. It appears that Pascal contemplated publishing a treatise De Alex Geometria; but all that actually appeared was a fragment on the arithmetical triangle ("Properties of the Figurate Numbers") printed in 1654, but not published till 1665, after his death.

Pascal's work as a natural philosopher was not less remarkable than his discoveries in pure mathematics. His experiments and his treatise (written 1653, published 1662) on the equilibrium of fluids entitle him to rank with Galileo and Stevinus as one of the founders of the science of hydrodynamics. The idea of the pressure of the air and the invention of the instrument for measuring it were both new when he made his famous experiment, | showing that the height of the mercury column in a barometer decreases when it is carried upwards through the atmosphere. This experiment was made in the first place by himself in a tower at Paris, and was afterwards carried out on a grand scale under his instructions by his brother-in-law Perier on the Puy de Déme in Auvergne. Its success greatly helped to break down thie old prejudices, and to bring honie to the minds of

ordinary men the truth | of the new ideas propounded by Galileo and Torricelli.

Whether we look at his pure mathematical or at his physical researches we receive the same impression of Pascal; we see the strongest marks of a great original genius creating new ideas, and seizing upon, mastering, and pursuing farther everything that was fresh and un- familiar in his time. After the lapse of more than two hundred years, we can stil point to much in exact science that is absolutely his ; and we can indicate infinitely more which is due to his inspiration. (G. CH.)

PASCHAL I., pope from 817 to 824, a native of Rome, was raised to the pontificate by popular acclamation, — shortly after the death of Stephen IV., and before the | sanction of the emperor (Louis the Pious) had been — obtained—a circumstance for which it was one of his first cares to apologize. His relations with the imperial | house, however, never became cordial; and he was also unsuccessful in retaining in Rome itself the popularity to which he had owed his election. He died at Rome while the imperial commissioners were investigating the circunl- stances under which two important officers of Lothair, the eldest son of Lonis, had been seized at the Lateran, blinded, and afterwards beheaded ; Paschal had shielded the murderers but denied all personal complicity in their crime. The Roman people refused him the honour of burial within the church of St Peter, but he now holds place in the Roman calendar (May 16), Like one or two of his more immediate predecessors he was liberal in his donations to several churches of the city, St Cecilia in Trastevere having been restored and St Maria in Domnica

rebuilt by him; he also built the church of St Prassede. The successor of Paschal I. was Eugenius II.

PASCHAL II., pope from 1099 to 1118, was the successor of Urban II. Of his early history nothing is known except that his proper name was Rainicri, that he was of Tuscan origin, and that in early life he became a monk, probably of Cluny. He was raised to the cardin- alate by Gregory VII. about 1076, and was elected to the papal chair on August 13, 1099. In the long struggle with the imperial power about INVEsTITURE (q.v.) he gealously carried on the Hildebrandine policy, but hardly with Hildebrandine success.

One of his first acts was to expel from Rome the antipope Clement IIL, otherwise known as Guibert of Ravenna, and to renew his prede- cessor's sentence of excommunication against the emperor Henry IV., by the help of whose rebellious son it seemed at one time as if the claims of the church were to become wholly triumphant. But Prince Henry, who succeeded to the purple in 1106 (see Henry V.), proved a still more active and persistent opponent of papal pretensions than ever his father had been. Paschal was courteously invited to Germany to assist in arranging definitely the affairs of the empire (1107), but, while the pope delayed his journey, the emperor proceeded actually to exercise all the rights of investiture to the fullest extent, and, having disposed of various wars in Bohemia, Hungary, and Poland, announced in 1110 the intention of proceeding to Rome to be crowned and to re-establish order in Italy. From Arezzo he sent ambassadors to Rome, and the pope after negotiation agreed to his coronation on the footing that the church should surrender all the possessions and royalties it had received of the empire and kingdom of Italy from the days of Charlemagne, while Henry on his side gave up the form of investiture. But on Henry's arrival in Rome (Feb. 1111), where feeling was strong against this pact, Paschal was slow to implement it, and the emperor ulti- mately found it necessary to withdraw from the city,—not, however, until he had compelled the pope and many of the cardinals to accompany him. After two months the pope yielded ; the coronation took place in the church of St Peter on April 13, and forthwith the emperor withdrew beyond the Alps after exacting a promise that no revenge should be taken for what had passed. The Lateran council, however, held in March 1112, repudiated as void, under penalty of excommunication, the concessions that had been extorted by the violence of Henry; and a council held at Vienne some months afterwards actually excommunicated him, the pope himself ratifying the decree. On the death of the Countess Matilda of Tuscany, who had bequeathed her whole possessions to the church LYS), the emperor at once laid claim to them as imperial fiefs, and, descending into Italy, drove the pope first to Monte Casino and then to Benevento. Paschal returned to Rome, after the emperor's withdrawal, in the beginning of 1118, but died within a few days (January 21, 1118). His successor was Celasius IT.

a CONTROVERSY. See Easter, vol. vii. p. 614.

PASCO. See Cerro pE Pasco, vol. v. p. 347.

PAS DE CALAIS, a maritime department of northern France, formed in 1790 of nearly the whole of Artois and the northern maritime portion of Picardy, including the Boulonnais, Calaisis, Ardrésis, and the districts of Langle and Bredenarde, lies between 50° 2’ and 51° N. lat. and I” 35’ and 3° 10’ E. long., and is bounded N. by the Straits of Dover (“ Pas de Calais”), E. by the department of Nord, S. by that of Somme, and W. by the English Channel. The distance from England is only 21 miles. Nord, which separates Pas de Calais from Belgium, is at one place only 3 miles wide, and from Arras (the chief

town) to Paris ina direct line is about 100 miles. Except in the neighbourhood of Boulogne, with its cétes de fer or ‘iron coasts,” the seaboard of the department, which measures 65 miles, consists of dunes. From the mouth of the Aa (the limit towards Nord) it trends west-south-west to Gris Nez, the point of France nearest to England ; in this section he the port of Calais, Cape Blanc Nez, rising 440 feet above the sandy shores, and the port of Wissant (Wishant). Beyond Gris Nez the direction is due south ; in this section are the port of Ambleteuse, Boulogne at the mouth of the Liane, and the two bays formed by the estuaries of the Canche and the Authie (the limit towards Somme). The highest point in the department (700 feet) is in the west, between Boulogne and St Omer. From the uplands in which it is situated the Lys and Scarpe flow east to the Scheldt, the Aa north to the German Ocean, and the Slack, Wimereux, and Liane to the Channel. Farther south are the valleys of the Canche and the Authie, running from east-south-east to west-north- west, and thus parallel with the Somme. Vast plains, open and monotonous, but extremely fertile and well culti- vated, occupy most of the department. The greenest and most picturesque valleys are in the west. To the north of the hills running between St Omer and Boulogne, to the south of Gravelines and the south-east of Calais, lies the district of the Wattergands, fens now drained by means of canals and dykes, and turned into highly productive land. The climate is free from extremes of heat and cold, but damp and changeable.

At Arras the mean annual tem- perature is 47°; on the coast it is higher. The rainfall in the one case is 22 inches, in the other 31.

With a total area of 2550 square miles, the department has 1899 square miles (more than two-thirds) of arable land, while woods and pasture land each occupy only about a twentieth. The live stock in 1880 comprised 76,224 horses, 9642 asses or mules, 156,060 cows, 35,272 calves, 5080 bulls or oxen, 256,031 sheep, 131,722 pigs, 26,760 goats. The sheep in 1880 yiclded 857 tons of wool, worth £57,398… The national sheepfolds of Tingry are in Pas de Calais. The 22,260 beehives of the department yielded in 1878 1753 tons of honey and 394 tons of wax. No department except Somme breeds fowls so extensively. Wheat, beetroot, and oil seeds are the principal crops. In 1882 wheat gave 9,855,483 bushels, meslin 920,023 bushels; in 1879, rye 781,150 bushels, barley 2,362,138 bushels, oats 9,421,818 bushels, beetroot 1,576,355 tons (almost entirely consumed by the sugar works), potatoes 7,250,813 bushels, vegctables 581,727, and colza seed 30,263. Besides there were considerable quantities of poppy-seed, flax (of excellent quality), hops, hemp, and tobacco (1275 tons). There are two great coal- fields, that of Pas de Calais proper, a continuation of the coal-field of Valencicnnes and Hainault, and that of Boulonnais. The former contains a total area of 134,270 acres; the latter is about a tenth of that size. Taken together they number 72 pits, 57 of which are active. In 1882 5,036,455 tons of coal were extracted and 1,378,818 consumed in the department; the industry gives employment to 22,925 persons. Peat (to the amount of 375,034 tons in 1882) is obtained in the valleys of the Scarpe and the Aa. Iron-mines in the arrondissement of Boulogne employ 162 workmen (26, 674 tons) ; the stone and marble quarries 2130 workmen ; and about 800 are cngaged in obtaining phosphates of lime (295,566 tons), which are exported for manure. Blast furnaces, foundrics, enginccring works, nailerics, boiler-works, agricultural implement factories, and steel-pen works are all carried on in the department. In 1883 805 tons of iron, 16,355 tons of steel, 65,025 tons of cast iron were manu- factured; and the avcrage production of pens 1s 400,000,000 per annum. Thecstablishments at Biache St Vaast melt, refine, and roll copper and zinc, and also work lead and auriferous silver. The ship- yards do not launch any large vessels, but in 1881 they built cighty luggers or sloops, with an aggregate burden of 2456 tons. The eighty-nine sugar-works in 1880 produced 42,121 tons of sugar

and 29,730 of molasses ; the distilleries 4,658,984 gallons of spirits ; the oil works 15 tons of hempsced oil, 389 tons of linseed oil, 3066 tons of poppyseed, rapeseed, and cameline oil, &c., and 797 tons of colza oil. ‘There are 553 brewcries in the department. Cotton-spinning and weaving employ 116,364 spindles and 625 looms ; wool- spinning 26,300 spindles ; and the flax, hemp, and jute manufacture 35,700 spindles and 497 looms. St Pierre-les-Calais carrics on the weaving of tulles in linen, cotton, and silk, employing 10,000 hands, and producing with its 1506 looms goods to the value of £2, 400,000 per annum. There are besides in the department establishments

for the manufacture of paper and cardboard, hosiery, embroidery, boots and shocs (for exportation), flooring, pipes, glass wares, chemical products, pottery, chicory, starch, biseuits (800 to 400 workmen), and gin. The national powder-mills of Esquerdes are among the largest in France. The port towns fit out a considerable number of vesscls for the mackerel, cod, and herring fishing—a growing industry. In 1882 Boulogne and Etaples had 340 boats (18,919 tons) and 4586 fishermen, and Calais 37 boats (265 tons) and 281 fishcrmen, and their united take was 2856 tons. There is a large export of sugar, spirits, calves, sheep, and cggs to England. In 1882 the port of Boulogne had a movement of 3614 vesscls and that of Calais 4436, with a total burden for the two ports of 2,212,920 tons. In 1878 404,769 travellers passed by this way between Franec and England. Calais is emphatically a transit port ; Boulogne has besides an export trade in local products such as marble, frcestone, mincrals, and Boulogne horses, remarkable for size and strength. Theroads of the department (national, depart- mental, &c.) make a length of 9393 miles, the waterways 105} miles, the railways 546 miles, and the industrial railways 60 miles. The canal system coniprises part of the Aa, the Lys, the Scarpe, the Deule (a tributary of the Lys passing by Lille), the Lawe (a tribu- tary of the Lys passing by Bethune), and the Sensée (an affluent of the Scheldt), as well as the varions canals proper from Aive to La Bassee, Neuffossé, Calais, &c., and in this way a line of communi- cation is formed from the Scheldt to the sea by Bethune, St Omer, and Calais, with branches to Gravclines and

Dunkirk in Nord. The total tonnage of the whole inland navigation was 2,124,442 tons in 1878.

In 1881 Pas de Calais had 819,022 inhabitants (311 per square mile), ranking sixth among the departments in density of popu- lation. It forms the diocese of Arras in the arclibishopric of Cambrai, belongs to the district of the first (or Lille) corps d'armée, and is within the jurisdiction of the Douai court of appeal. There are six arrondissements bearing the names of their ehief towns— Arras (27,041 inhabitants), Bethune (10,374), Boulogne (44,842), Montreuil (3852), St Omer (20,479), and St Pol (3694). Other places of importance are St Pierre-lés-Calais (30,786 inhabitants), the industrial town of Calais (18,529), Lens (10,515), Lievin (8281), Carvin (6480)—the last three with important coal-mines, and Aire (5000), formerly a fortified place.

PASIPHAE. See Mrnos.

PASKEWITCH, Ivan Ferporowrrcy (1782-1856), prince of Warsaw, and general-in-chief of the Russian army, was descended from an old and wealthy family, and was born at Poltava 8th May 1782. He was educated at the imperial institution for pages, where his progress was so rapid that after his first examination he received the promise of a leutenant's commission in the guards, and was named aide-de-camp to the emperor. His first active service was in 1805, in the auxiliary army sent to the assistance of Austria against France, when he took part in the battle of Austerlitz. From 1807 to 1812 he was engaged in the campaigns against Turkey, and distinguished himself by many brilliant and daring exploits. During the French war of 1812-14 he was present, in command of the 26th division of infantry, at all the most important engagements; at the battle of Leipsic he took 4000 prisoners. On the outbreak of war with Persia in 1826 he was appointed second in command, and, succeeding in the following year to the chief command, gained rapid and brilliant successes which compelled the shah to sue for peace 19th February 1828, In reward of his services he was raised by the emperor to the rank of count of the empire, with the surname of Erivan, and received a million of roubles and a diamond-mounted sword. From Persia he was sent to Turkey in Asia, and, having captured in rapid succession the fortresses of Kars, Erzeroum, and Akalkalaki, he was at the

end of the campaign made a field marshal. In 1831 he was entrusted with the command of the army sent to suppress the revolt of Poland, and after the fall of Warsaw, which gave the death-blow to Polish independ. ence, he was raised to the dignity of prince of Warsaw, and created viceroy of the kingdom of Poland, In this position he is said to have manifested the highest qualities as an administrator, and in his relations with the kings of Prussia and Austria he secured their confidence and esteem. On the outbreak of the insurrection of Hungary in 1848

he was appointed to the command of the Russian troops sent to the aid of Austria, and finally compelled the insurgents to lay down their arms at Vilagos. In April 1854 he again took the field in command of the army of the Danube, but on the 9th June, at Silistria, where he suffered defeat, he received a contusion which compelled him to retire from active service. He died 29th January

1856

Tolstoy, Hssat Biographique et Historique sur le Feld-Maréchal Prince de Varsovie, Paris, 1835; Notice Biographique sur le Maréchal Paskévttch, Leipsic, 1856.

PASQUIER, Errennz (1529-1615), one of the glories of the French bar, and one of not the least remarkable men of letters of the 16th century, was born at Paris on the 7th June 1529 by his own account, according to others a year earlier. Nothing is known of his family, and hardly anything of his youth, but he seems to have inherited a small property at Chatelet in the district of Brie. He certainly studied law early, and in 1547 was a pupil of the famous Cujas at Toulouse. Thence, like many of his contemporaries, he went to finish his studies in Italy. He was called to the Paris bar in November 1549, having not yet (or at most barely) reached his majority. He practised diligently and with success, but by no means neglected literature. Some of his work both at this time and later is light and almost frivolous. A treatise on love, the Mono- phile, appeared in 1554, and not a few similar publica- tions followed it, one of them, the Ordonnances d’ Amour, being somewhat Rabelaisian in character. Pasquier, how- ever, though not a stoic, was a man

of perfectly regular life, and he married early ; his wife, who was of his own age, affluent, and, it is said, handsome, being a widow for whom he had gained a lawsuit. The next year he had the misfortune to eat some poisonous mushrooms and very nearly died of them; indeed he did not recover fully for two years. This lost him his practice for the time, and he again betook himself to general literature, publishing in 1560 the first book of his great' work the Recherches de la France. Before very long, however, clients once more came to him, and in 1565, when he was thirty-seven, his fame was established by a great speech still extant, in which he pleaded the cause of the university of Paris against the Jesuits, and won it. He was thenceforward constantly employed in the most important cases of the day, and his speeches, many of which we possess, displayed a polished eloquence which was new in his time. But he did not neglect general literature, pursuing the Recherches steadily, and publishing from time to time much miscellan- eous work. His literary and his legal occupations coin- cided in a curious fashion at the Grands Jours of Poitiers in 1579. These Grand Jours (an institution which fell into desuetude at the end of the 17th century, with bad effects on the social and political welfare of the French provinces) were a kind of irregular assize in which a com- mission of the parlement of Paris, selected and despatched at short notice by the king, had full power to hear and determine all causes, especially those in which seignorial rights had been abused. At the Grands Jours of Poitiers of the date mentioned, and at those of Troyes in 1583, Pasquier officiated; and each occasion has left a curious literary memorial of the kind of high jinks with which he and his colleagues relieved their graver duties. The Poitiers work was the celebrated collection of poems on a flea, of which English readers may find a full account in Southey's Doctor, Up to this time Pasquier had held no regular office except the lieutenant-generalship of Cognac, where his wife had property ; but in 1535 Henry III. made him advocate-general at the Paris Cours des Comptes, an important body having political as well as financial and legal functions. Pasquier distinguished himself here

particularly by opposing, sometimes successfully, the mis- chievous system of selling hereditary places and offices, which more perhaps than any single

thing was the curse of the older French monarchy. He was present at the famous States of Blois, where Guise was assassinated, and he met Montaigne there. The civil wars brought him much personal sorrow. His wife and children had remained in Paris much harassed by the Leaguers; Madame Pasquier was even imprisoned, and, though she regained her liberty, she died shortly afterwards, in 1590. Her youngest son was killed fighting on the royalist side the year before. For some years Pasquier lived at Tours, working steadily at his great book, but he returned to Paris in Henry IV.'s trainon the 22d March 1594. He continued until 1604 at his work in the Chambre des Comptes; then he retired. He survived this retirement more than ten years, produc- ing much literary work, and died after a few hours' illness on September 1, 1615, at the age of at least eighty-six.

In so long and so laborious a life Pasquier's work was naturally considerable, and it has never been fully collected or indced printed. The standard edition is that of Amsterdam, 1723, 2 vols. folio. But for ordinary readers the selections of M. Léon Feugére, pub- lished at Paris in 2 vols. 8vo, 1849, with au elaborate introduction, are most accessible. As a poet, though very far from contemptible, Pasquier is chiefly interesting as a minor member of the Pléiade movement. As a prose writer he is of much more account. The three chief divisions of his prose work are his Recherches, his letters, and his professional speeches. Al] are of much value as important documents in the history of the progress of French style. The Recherches and the letters have a value independent of this. The letters are of much biographical interest and historical importance, and the Recherches contain in a somewhat miscellaneous fashion invaluable information on a vast variety of subjects, literary, political, antiquarian, and other.

PASQUINADE is a variety of libel or lampoon, of which it is not easy to give an exact definition, separating it from other kinds. It should, perhaps, more especially deal with public men and public things. The distinction, however, has been rarely observed in practice, and the chief interest in the word is in its curious and rather legendary origin. According to the received tradition, Pasquino was a tailor (others say a cobbler) who had a biting tongue, and lived in the 15th century at Rome. His name, at the end of that

century or the beginning of the next, was transferred to a statue which had been dug up in a mutilated condition (some say near his shop) and was set up at the corner of the Palazzo Orsini (al. Palazzo Braschi). To this statue it became the custom to affix squibs on the papal Government and on prominent persons. At the beginning of the 16th century Pasquin had a partner pro- vided for him in the shape of another statue found in the Campus Martius, said to represent a river god, and dubbed Marforio, a foro Martis. The regulation form of the pasquinade then became one of dialogue or rather question and answer, in which Marforio usually addressed leading Inquiries to his friend. The proceeding soon attained a certain European notoriety, and a printed collection of the Squibs due to it (they were long written in Latin verse, with an occasional excursion into Greek) appeared in 1510. In the first book of Pantagruel (1532 or there- abouts) Rabelais introduces books by Pasquillus and Marphurius in the catalogue of the library of St Victor, and later he quotes some utterances of Pasquin's in his letters to the bishop of Maillezais. These, by the way, show that Pasquin was by no means always satirical, but dealt in grave advice and comment. The 16th century Was indeed Pasquin's palmy time, and in not a few of the Tare printed collections of his utterances Protestant polemic (which was pretty certainly not attempted on the actual statue) is mingled. These utterances were not only called pasquinades but simply pasquils (Pasquillus, Pas- quillo, Pasquille), and this form was sometimes used for the mythical personage himself. Under this title a con-

siderable satirical literature of quite a different kind from the original personal squibs and political comments grew up in England at the end of the 16th and the beginning of the 17th century under the titles of Pasquil's Apology, Pasquil's Nightcap, &e. The chief writers were Thomas Nash and, after his death, Nicholas Breton. These pieces (of extreme rarity, but lately reissued by the Rev. A. B. Grosart, in private reprints of the works of their authors) were in prose. The French pasquils (examples of which may be found in Fournier's Variétés Historiques et Lnttéraires) were more usually in verse. In Italy itself Pasquin is said not to have condescended to the vernacular till the 18th century. During the first two hundred years of his career few mornings, if any, found him unplacarded, and the institution

supplied a kind of rough and scurrilous gazette of public opinion. But the proceeding gradually lost its actuality, and was, moreover, looked on with less and less favour by the authorities. Indeed a sentinel was latterly posted to prevent the placarding. It is said, how- ever, that isolated pasquinades, having at least local ap- propriateness, occurred not many years ago. Marforio, it should be added, was soon removed from his companion's neighbourhood to the Capitol. Contemporary comic peri- odicals, especially in Italy, still occasionally use the Marforio-Pasquin dialogue form. But this survival is purely artificial and literary, and pasquinade has, as noted above, ceased to have any precise meaning.

PASSAU, anancient town and episcopal see of Bavaria, lies in the district of Lower Bavaria, and occupies a highly picturesque situation at the confluence of the Danube, the Inn, and the Ilz, 90 miles to the north-east of Munich, and close to the Austrian frontier. It consists of the town proper, on the rocky tongue of land between the Danube and the Inn, and of the three suburbs of Innstadt, on the right bank of the Inn, Ilzstadt, on the left bank of the Ilz, and Anger, in the angle between the Ilz and the Danube. Passau is one of the most beautiful places on the Danube, a fine effect being produced by the way in which the houses are piled one above another on the heights rising from the river. The best general view is obtained from the Oberhaus, an old fortress now uscd as a prison, which crowns a hill 300 feet high on the left bank of the Danube. A detailed inspection of the buildings of the town, most of which date fron: the 17th and 18th centuries, scarcely fulfils the expectation aroused by their imposing appearance as a whole. The most noteworthy are the cathedral, a florid rococo structure on the site of an earlier church, which claiuns to have been founded in the 5th century ; the post-office, in which the treaty of Passau was signed ; the episcopal palace ; the old Jesuit college, with a library of 30,000 volumes; the arsenal ; the Romanesque church of the Holy Cross; and the double church of St Salvator. The old forts and bastions have been deniolished, but the Niederhaus, at the base of the Oberhaus, is still extant, though no longer maintained as a fortress. The chief products of the insignificant industry of the town are tobacco, leather, and paper. It also possesses iron and copper foundries and a few barge-building yards. The well-known Passau cru- cibles are made at the neighbouring village of Obernzell. Trade is carried on

in iron and timber, large quantities of the latter being floated down the Ilz. The inhabitants (15,365 in 1880) are nearly all Roman Catholics.

Passau is a town of very ancicnt origin. The first settlement here is belicved to have been the Celtic Botudurum, on the site of the present Innstadt ; and the Romans afterwards established a colony of Batavian vetcrans (Castra Batava) on the site of the town proper. The bishopric was founded in the 8th century, and most of the sub- sequent history of Passau is made up of broils between the bishops

and the townsmen. The fortress of Oberhaus was erccted by the former in consequence of a revolt in the 13th century, and at a later

petiod its guns were often turned on the town. In 1552 Charles V. and Elector Maurice of Saxony here signed the treaty of Passau, by which the former was constrained to acknowledge the principle of religious toleration. The town was a frequent object of dispute in the war of the Spanish succession, and it was taken by the Austrians in 1806. he bishopric was secularized in 1803, and its territory annexed to Bavaria two years later. The present bishopric was established in 1817.

PASSERAT, Jean (1534-1602), a poet of merit and a contributor to the Satire Ménippée, was born at Paris in 1534. He was well educated, but is said to have played truant from school and to have had some curious adven- tures—at one time working in a mine. He was, however, a scholar by natural taste, and after a time he returned to his studies, Having finished them he became in his turn a teacher at the Collége de Plessis, and at the death of Ramus was made professor of Latin in the Collége de France. This, however, was not till 1572. In the mean- while Passerat had studied law, and had composed much agreeable poetry in the Pléiade style, the best pieces being his short ode “On the First of May,” and the charming villanelle “J’ai perdu ma tourterelle.” Like most of the men of letters and learning at the time, Passerat belonged to the politigues or moderate royalist party, and was strongly opposed to the League. His exact share in the Ménippée, the great manifesto of the politique party when it had declared itself for Henry of Navarre, is differently stated ; but it is agreed that he

wrote most of the verse, and the charming harangue of the guerilla chief Rieux is sometimes attributed to him. Towards the end of his life, after he had re-entered on the duties of his professorship, he became blind. He died at Paris in 1602, and his poems were not published completely till four years later. Passerat united with his learning abundant wit and a faculty of elegant and tender verse, and was altogether a good specimen of the man of letters of the time, free from pedantry while full of scholarship, and combining a healthy interest in politics and a taste for light literature with serious accomplishments. He had also a considerable reputation as an orator.

PASSIONFLOWER (Passiflora) is the typical genus of the order to which it gives its name. The species are mostly natives of western tropical South America; others are found in various tropical and subtropical districts of both hemispheres. The tacsonias, by some considered to form part of this genus, inhabit the Andes at considerable elevations. They are mostly climbing plants (fig. 1) having a woody stock and herbaceous or woody branches, from the sides of which tendrils are produced which enable the branches to support themselves at little expenditure of tissue. Some few form trees of considerable stature desti- tute of tendrils, and with broad magnolia-like leaves in place of the more or less palmately-lobed leaves which are most generally met with in the order. Whatever be the form of leaf, it is usually provided at the base of the leaf- stalk with stipules, which are inconspicuous, or large and leafy; and the stalk is also furnished with one or more glandular excrescences, as in some cases are the leaf itself and the bracts. The inflorescence is of a cymose character, the terminal branch being represented by the tendril, the side-branches by flower-stalks, or the inflorescence may be reduced to a single stalk, The bracts on the flower-stalk are either small and scattered or large and leafy, and then placed near the flower forming a sort of outer calyx or epicalyx. The flower itself (seen in section in fig. 2) consists of a calyx varying in form from that of a shallow saucer to that of a long cylindrical or trumpet-shaped tube, thin or fleshy in consistence, and giving off from its upper border the five sepals, the five petals (rarely these latter are absent), and the threads or membranous processes constituting the “corona.” This coronet forms

the most conspicuous and beautiful part of the flower of many species, and consists of outgrowths from the tube formed subsequently to the other parts, and having little morphological significance, but being physiologically useful in favouring the cross-fertilization of the flower by means of insects. Other outgrowths of similar character, but less conspicuous, occur lower down the- tube, and

Fic. 1.—Passiflora cerulea, var., showing leaf, stipule, tendril, and detached flower.

their variations afford useful means of discriminating between the species. From the base of the inner part of the tube of the flower, but quite free from it, uprises a cylindrical stalk-surrounded below by a small cup-like out-

+H) j GYNOPHORE

Fic. 2.— Flower of Passionflower cut through the centre to show the arrangement of its constituent parts, growth, and bearing above the middle a ring of five flat filaments each attached by a thread-like point to an anther. Above the ring of stamens is the ovary itself, upraised on a prolongation of the same stalk which bears the filaments, or sessile. The stalk supporting the stamens and ovary is called the “gynophore” or the “ oynandro- phore,” and is a special characteristic of the order, shared

ated

PAS—PAS

in by the Capparids and no other order. The ovary of passionflowers is one-celled with three parictal placentas, and bears at the top three styles, each capped by a large button-like stigma. The ovary ripens into a berry-like, very rarely capsular, fruit with the three groups of seeds arranged in lines along the walls, but embedded in a pulpy arillus derived from the stalk of the seed. This succulent berry is in some cases highly perfumed, and affords a delicate fruit for tlhe dessert-table as in the case of the “ranadilla,” P. quadrangularis, P. edulis, P. macrocarpa, and various species of Z’acsonia known as ‘“‘curubas” in Spanish South America. The fruits in question do not nsually exceed in size the dimensions of a hen’s or of a swan’s egg, but

that of P. macrocarpa is a gourd-like oblong fruit attaining a weight of 7 to 8 ib. Many species are cultivated for the beauty of their flowers, and one or two species are nearly hardy in south and western Britain and Ireland, the commonest, P. cerulea, being, singular to say, a native of southern Brazil. Many species of the Tacsonia would probably prove equally hardy. The name passionflower—jlos passionis—arose from the supposed resemblance of the corona to the crown of thorns, and of the other parts of the flower to the nails, or wounds, while the five sepals and five petals were taken to symbolize the ten apostles,— Peter, who denied, and Judas, who betrayed, being left out of the reckoning. In some of the botanical books of the 16th and 17th centuries curious illustrations of these flowers are given, in which the artist's faith or imagination has been exercised at the expense of actual fact.

PASSION PLAYS. See Drama, vol. vii. p. 404. On the Oberammergau Passion Play, see OBERAMMERGAU.

PASSION WEEK, thie fifth week in Lent, begins with Passion Sunday (Donunica Passionis or de Passione Domini), so called from very early times because with it begins the more special commemoration of Christ's passion. In non-Catholic circles Passion Week is often identified with Hoty WEEK (q.v.), but incorrectly.

PASSOVER anp FEAST OF UNLEAVENED BREAD, It is explained in the article Pentateucs (p. 511) that the ancient Israelites were accustomed to open the harvest season by a religious feast. No one tasted the new grain, not even parched or fresh ears of corn, till the first sheaf had been presented to Jehovah, and then all hastened to enjoy the new blessings of divine goodness by eating unleavened cakes, without waiting for the tedious process of fermenting the dough. This natural usage became fixed in custom, and at a comparatively early date a new significance was added to it by a reference to the exodus from Egypt, when, as tradition ran, the people in their hasty departure had no time to leaven the dough already in their troughs. The two elements of a thankful recogni- ion of God's goodness in the harvest, which every one was eager to taste the nioment that Jehovah had received His tribute at the sanctuary, and of grateful remembrance of the first proof of His kingship over Israel, went very

fittingly together. A similar combination is found in the thanksgiving of Deut xxvi. 5 sq, in the law, Deut. xxlv, 19-22, and elsewhere; the yearly blessings of the harvest were the proof of the continued goodness of Hini Who brought Israel forth from Egypt to set him in a fruitful and pleasant land ”

The feast of unleavened bread (Hebrew N1¥2, mageath), with the presentation of the harvest sheaf, which is its leading feature, presupposes agriculture and a fixed resi- dence in Canaan. In the pastoral life the same religious feelings find their natural expression in thank-offerings for the increase of the flocks and herds, consisting of sacrifices

of the firstlings of the flock and the fatlings thereof,” such as Gen. iv. 4 makes to date back from the very

343

beginnings of human history. The firstlings answer to the first fruits; the increase of cattle falls mainly in the spring ; and spring is also the time of the best pasture in a climate where the harvest-tide lies between Easter and Whitsunday, the time therefore when a fat sacrifice can be selected and when vows would generally be fulfilled ; especially as the latter, among the pastoral Hebrews as among the Arabs, would frequently have reference to the multiplication of the flock. Abel’s sacrifice of firstlings and fatlings corresponds in fact exactly to the old Arabic fara and ‘atira, the former of which was the firstborn of the herd and the latter a sacrifice offered in the spring month Rajab in fulfilment of a vow conditional on the good increase of the herd.) The accumulation of the sacrifices of firstlings and fatlings at one season of the year would readily give rise to a spring feast, and it appears from the Jehovist that something of this kind existed before the exodus (see PENTATEUCH), and gave occasion to the request of Moses for leave to lead the people out into the wilderness to sacrifice to Jehovah. Pharaoh’s refusal was appropriately punished by the destruction of the firstborn of man and the firstlings of beasts in Egypt. The recollection of this fact reacted on the old Hebrew usage, and supplied a new reason for the sacrifice of all male firstlings after the Israelites were settled in Canaan (Exod. xiii. 11 sg.). Up to the time of Deuteronomy this sacrifice was not tied to any set feast (contrast Exod. xxli. 30 with Deut. xv. 20); the old

sacrificial spring feast, like the Arabic feast of Rajab, was not wholly dependent on the firstlings, but might also be derived from vows. But when Israel was thoroughly united under the kings the tendency plainly lay towards a concentration of acts of cultus in public feasts at the great sanctuaries; and the final result of this tendency, which appears to some degree in earlier laws, but reached its goal only through the Deuteronomic centralization of all sacrifices at the one sanctuary, was that the spring pastoral feast coalesced with the agricultural A/a¢roth, and that its sacrifices were swollen by the prohibition of continued private sacrifices of the male firstlings. This is the form of the Deutero- nomic passover (Deut. xvi. 1 sq.). The passover is a sacrifice drawn from the flock or the herd, presented at the sanctuary and eaten with unleavened bread. It is slain on the evening of the first day of the feast, so that the sacrificial feast is nocturnal; and the pilgrims may return to their homes next morning, but the abstinence from Teaven lasts seven days, and the seventh day, observed as a day of rest, is the ‘asereth or closing day of the feast. The passover is now viewed specially as a commemoration of the Exodus; and by and by, in Exod. xii. 27, its name (Heb. NDB, Gr. wécxa, Lat. pascha) is explained from Jehovah “passing over” the Israelites when he smote Egypt. That this was the original meaning is by no means clear; there is no certain occurrence of the name before Deuteronomy (in Exod. xxxiv. 25 it looks lke a gloss), and the corresponding verb denotes some kind of religious performance, apparently a dance, in 1 Kings xviii. 26. A nocturnal ceremony at the consecration of a feast is already alluded to in Isa. xxx. 29, who also perhaps alludes to the received derivation of MDD in ch. xxxi. 5. But the Deuteronomic passover was a new thing in the days of Josiah (2 Kings xxiii. 21 sq). It underwent a farther modification in the exile, when sacrifices in the proper sense of the word were impossible, but the com- memorative side of the feast was perpetuated in the house- hold meal of the paschal lamb, eaten with unleavened bread and bitter herbs (Exod. xii.—from the Priestly Code). The paschal lamb is quite different from the paschal

1 Yuzeni ou Harith’s Ao adl., 1. 69; Bokhari, vi. 207 (Bulak vocalized edition).

sacrifices of Deuteronomy and from the ancient firstlings. In Deuteronomy, for example, the sacrifices may be either from the flock or from the herd, and are boiled, not roasted (A.V. in Deut. xvi. 7 mistranslates); the paschal lamb is necessarily roasted, and the only traces of sacrificial character that remain to it are the sprinkling of the blood on the lintel and door-posts,! and the burning of what is not eaten of it. After the restoration the passover seems to have retained its domestic character, for, though the feast at the sanctuary was renewed, its public features now con

sisted of a series of holocausts and sin-offerings continued for seven days (Num. xxix. 16 sq.). The feast is now exactly dated.?2 The paschal lamb is chosen on the tenth day of the first month (Abib or Nisan) and slain on the even

ing of the fourteenth. Next day—that is, the fifteenth— is now the first day of the feast proper (a change from the Deuteronomic ordinance naturally flowing from the fact that the properly paschal ceremony is now not festal but domestic), so that the seven days end with the twenty first and close with a " holy assembly" at Jerusalem, The old ceremony of presenting the first sheaf had been fixed, in Lev. xxiii. 11, for the '' morrow after the Sabbath," This naturally means that the solemn opening of harvest was to take place on a Sunday. But when the feast was fixed to set days of the month the "Sabbath" was taken to mean the first day of the feast or of unleavened bread (Nisan 15), and the sheaf was presented on the sixteenth.? As the feast was now again a great pilgrimage occasion, there was a natural tendency to restore to the pasclial lamb a more strictly sacrificial character. This tendency does not appear as yet inthe Pentateuch, where the latest provisions are those put in historical form in Exod. xii.; but in 2 Chron. xxxv., which must be taken as describing the practice of the author's own time, the paschal lamb is slain before the temple, the blood is sprinkled and the fat burned (? verse 14) on the altar; and at the same time we find the Deuteronomic paschal sacrifices existing side by side with the paschal lamb of the later law as subsidiary sacrifices. The later Jewish usage followed this practice ; the Deuteronomic sacrifices in their new subsidiary form constituted the so-called hagiga. The pre-eminent import- ance which the passover (with the feast of unleavened bread) acquired after the exile, from the fact that its rites, like those of the Sabbath and of circumcision, could be

in great part adapted to the circumstances of the dispersion, was still further increased by the fall of the second temple, and the ritual of the Mishna (Pesihim) was supplemented by the later paschal Haggada. The lamb, however, not being slain at the temple, is not in later praxis regarded as strictly the paschal lamb of the law. Some of the post- Biblical features are of interest in connexion with the New Testament, and especially with the last supper. The company for a single lamb varied from ten to twenty; the bitter herbs and unleavened cakes were dipped in a kind of sweet sauce called hardseth ; and the meal was accom- panied by the circulation of four cups of wine and by songs of praise, particularly the Hallel (Ps. exiii—cxviii.).

_ The history of the passover is one of the most complicated sub- jects in Hebrew archeology, and has been a great battlefield of Pentateuch criticism. The present article should thercfore be read

with the article PentatrucnH. The older books on Hebrew archeology are of little use, exccpt for the later Jewish practicc ;

u The sprinkling of blood on a tent in order to put it under divine Pieienon appears also among the Arabs; Wakidi, ed. Kremer, p. 28. ; In everything that has to do with sacrifice a day means the day- time with the following night; in other words, the feast days do not begin in the evening. Compare Reland, Ant. HWeb., iv. § 15. This exegesis and practice are as old as the LXX. version of Leviticus. The passage of Leviticus has given risc to much contro-

Ke the commentaries and Lightfoot’s Hore on Luke vi. I, cts ii, 1.

on this full details will be found in Bartolocci’s Bibliotheca Rabbinica, or in Bodeuschatz’s Kirehliche Verfassung der Juden. The Biblical data can only be understood in connexion with a criti- cal view of the Pentateuch, and have been discussed in this con- nexion by Kucnen (G@odsdienst), Wellhauscn (Prolegomena), and others. The present position of those who oppose the Grafian hypothesis may be gathered from Delitzsch’s art. ‘‘Passah” in Richm’s Handworterbuch, and from Dillmann’s commentary

on Exodus and Leviticus. Hupfeld, De vera et primitiva Festorum . ratione, 1852-65, and Ewald's Antiquities, may also be con- sulted. CW. Ree

PASSPORT. A passport or safe conduct in time of war is a document granted by a belligerent power to protect persons and property from thie operation of hostilities, In the case of the ship of a neutral power, the passport isa

requisition by the Government of the neutral state to suffer

the vessel to pass freely with her crew, cargo, passengers,

&e., without molestation by the belligerents. The requisi- tion, when issued by the civil authorities of the port from which the vessel is fitted out, is called a sea-letter. But the terms passport and sea-letter are often used indis- criminately. A form of sea-letter (litera salvi conductus) is appended to the treaty of the Pyrenees, 1659. The passport is frequently mentioned in treaties, e.g., the treaty of Copenhagen, 1670, between Great Britain and Denmark. The violation of a passport, or safe conduct, is a grave breach of international law. The offence in the United States is punishable by fine and imprisonment where the passport or safe conduct is granted under the authority of the United States (Act of Congress, April 30, 1790). In time of peace a passport is still necessary for foreigners travelling in certain countries, and is always useful, even when not necessary, as a ready means of proving identity. It is usually granted by the foreign office of a state, or by its diplomatic agents abroad. Passports granted in England are subject to a stamp duty of sixpence. They may be granted to naturalized as well as natural- born British subjects. Sweden was the first country to abolish passports in time of peace, and Russia is one of the last to retainthem. They are demandable from foreigners in England on their arrival from abroad by 6 & 7 Will. IV. ec. 11, § 3; but this provision is not enforced in practice.

PASTE, or Srrass. See Grass, vol. x. p. 665.

PASTON LETTERS. This invaluable collection of documents consists of the correspondence of the principal members of the Paston family in Norfolk between the years 1424 and 1506, including several state papers and other documents accidentally in their possession. The papers appear to have been sold by William Paston, second earl. of Yarmouth, the last

representative of the family, to the antiquary Le Neve early in the 18th century. After Le Neve's death in 1729 they came into the hands of Mr Thomas Martin of Palgrave, who had married his widow, and upon Martin's death in or about 1771 were purchased by Worth, a chemist at Diss, from whose executors they were subsequently bought by Mr (afterwards Sir) John Fenn. In 1787 Fenn published two volumes of selections from the MSS., whose extreme value was at once recognized by Horace Walpole and other competent judges. In acknowledgment of his services Fenn received the honour of knighthood, and on this occasion, May 28, 1787, presented to the king three bound volumes of MSS. containing the originals of the documents printed by him. Most unfortunately these volumes have disappeared, and the originals of two more subsequently published by Sir John Fenn, and of a fifth edited after his death by Mr Serjeant Frere, were also lost until very re- cently. Under these circumstances it is not surprising that doubts should have been raised as to the authenticity of the papers. Their genuineness was impugned by Mr Herman Merivale in No. 8 of the Fortnightly Review, but

_____

satisfactorily vindicated on grounds of internal evidence by Mr James Gairdner of the Record Office in No. 11 of the same periodical. Within a year Mr Gairdner's position was established by the discovery (1865) of the originals of the fifth volume at Mr Serjeant Frere's house at Dungate, Cambridgeshire. In 1875 the original MSS. of the third and fourth, with many additional letters, were found at the family mansion of the Freres at Roydon Hall, near Diss. The MSS. presented to the king have not been found, and were probably appropriated by some person about the court. In 1872—75 Mr Gairdner published a most careful and accurate edition in three volumes in Arber's English reprints, accompanied with valuable introductions to each volume, including an historical survey of the reign of Henry VI., notes, and index, and incorporating more than four hundred additional letters derived from Magdalen College, Oxford, and other quarters. Abstracts of some of the additional letters discovered at Roydon were added in an appendix. The total number of documents printed wholly or in abstract is one thousand and six. A thousand family letters of the 15th century must in any case be full of interest; the Paston letters are peculiarly

interesting from the importance and in some respects the representative character of the family. The founder was Clement Paston, a humble peasant living at

the end of the 14th century, who throve in the world ‘

and gave his son William the sound education which enabled him to rise to the position of justice of the common pleas. Judge Paston acquired much landed property in Norfolk, and in the days of his son John, in 1459, the family was greatly enriched by a bequest from the stout old soldier but grasping usurer Sir John Fastolf, a kinsman of Sir John Paston’s wife. The Pastons, however, were even at that time greatly harassed by rival claimants to their estates; and Sir John’s legacy involved them in a fresh set of troubles and contentions, which were not allayed until the time of the third Sir John Paston, about 1480, This perturbed state of affairs imparts especial Interest to the correspondence, causing it to reflect the general condition of England during the period. It was a time of trouble, when the weakness of the Government had disorganized the administration in every branch, when the succession to the crown itself was contested, when great nobles lived in a condition of civil war, when the prevalent anarchy and discontent found expression in tumultuary insurrections like Cade’s, countenanced, as the Paston letters show, by persons of condition, when any man’s property might be assailed with or without colour of law by covetous rivals, and upstart families like the Pastons were especially exposed to attack. The correspondence therefore exhibits them in a great variety of relations to their neighbours, friendly or hostile, and abounds with illustrations of the course of public events, as well as of the manners and morals of the time. Nothing is more remarkable than the habitual acquaintance of educated people with the law, which was evidently indispensable to & person of substance. In its broader aspects the corre- spondence exhibits human nature much as it is now, except for the notable deficiency in public spirit, and the absence of large views or worthy interests in life. The contrast with our own times is instructive, showing how largely commerce and literature, art and travel, have contributed to augment moral and intellectual as well as material wealth. After the death of the second Sir John Paston, grandson of the judge, in 1479, the letters become scanty and of merely personal interest. The family continued to flourish. In the next century it produced

Clement Paston, a distinguished naval commander under Henry VIII. ; and Mm the days of Charles II. Sir Robert Paston was raised to the peerage as earl of Yarmouth. His son dissipated

scholastic writer of the preceding age.

the hereditary property, and the title and the family became extinct upon his death in 1732. (R. G.)

PASTORAL is the name given to a certain class of modern literature in which the “idyl” of the Greeks and the “eclogue” of the Latins are imitated. It was a growth of humanism at the Renaissance, and its first home was Italy. Virgil had been imitated, even in the Middle Ages, but it was the example of TuHrocritus (¢.v.) that was originally followed in pastoral. Pastoral, as it appeared in Tuscany in the 16th century, was really a developed eclogue, an idyl which had been expanded from a single scene into a drama. ‘The first dramatic pastoral which is known to exist is the Favola di Orfeo of Politian, which was represented at Mantua in 1472. This poem, which has been elegantly translated by Mr J. A. Symonds, was a tragedy, with choral passages, on an idyllic theme, and is perhaps too grave in tone to be considered as a pure piece of pastoral. It led the way more directly to tragedy than to pastoral, and it is the Zl Sagrijizio of Agostino Beccari, which was played at the court of Ferrara in 1554, that is always quoted as the first complete and actual dramatic pastoral in European literature.

In the west of Europe there were various efforts made in the direction of non-dramatic pastoral, which it is hard

to classify. Early in the 16th century Alexander Barclay,

in England, translated the Latin eclogues of Mantuanus, a Barnabe Googe, a generation later, in 1563, published his Hglogs, Epytaphes, and Sonnettes, a deliberate but not very successful attempt to introduce pastoral into English

literature. In France it is difficult to deny the title of pastoral to various productions of the poets of the Pléiade, but especially to Rémy Belleau's pretty miscellany of prose and verse in praisé of a country life, called La Bergerie (1565). But the final impulse was given to non-dramatic pastoral by the publication, in 1504, of the famous Arcadia of G. Sannazaro, a work which passed through sixty editions before the close of the 16th century, and which was abundantly copied. Torquato Tasso followed Beccari after an interval of twenty years, and by the success of his Aminta, which was performed before the court of Ferrara in 1573, secured the popularity of dramatic pastoral. Most of the existing works in this class may be traced back to the influence either of the Arcadia or of the Aminta. Tasso was immediately succeeded by Alvisio Pasqualigo, who gave a comic turn to pastoral drama, and by Cristoforo Castelletti, in whose hands it grew heroic and romantic, while, finally, Guarini produced in 1590 his famous Pastor Fido, and Ongaro his fishermen's pastoral of Alceo. During the last quarter of the 16th century pastoral drama was really a power in Italy. Some of the best poetry of the age was written in this form, to be acted privately on the stages of the little court theatres that were every- where springing up. Ina short time music was introduced, and rapidly predominated, until the little forms of tragedy, and pastoral altogether, were merged in opera.

With the reign of Elizabeth a certain tendency to pastoral was introduced in England. In Gascoigne and in Whetstone traces have been observed of a tendency towards the form and spirit of eclogue. It has been con- jectured that this tendency, combined with the study of the few extant eclogues of Clément Marot, led Spenser to the composition of what is the finest example of pastoral in the English language, the Shepherd's Calendar, printed in 1579. This famous work is divided into twelve eclogues, and is remarkable because of the constancy with which Spenser turns in it from the artificial Latin style of pastoral then popular in Italy, and takes his inspiration direct from Theocritus. It is important to note that this is the first effort made in European litera-

ture to bring upon a pastoral stage the actual rustics of a modern country, using their own peasant dialect. That Spenser's attempt was very imperfectly carried out does not militate against the genuineness of the effort, which the very adoption of such names as Willie and Cuddie, instead of the customary Damon and Daphnis, is enough to prove. Having led up to this work, the influence of which was to be confined to England, we return to Sannazaro's Arcadia, which left its mark upon every literature in Europe. This remarkable romance, which was the type and the original of so many succeeding pastorals, is written in rich but not laborious periods of musical prose, into which are inserted at frequent intervals passages of verse, contests between shepherds on the "humile fistula di Coridone," or laments for the death' of some beautiful virgin. The characters move in a world of supernatural and brilliant beings; they commune without surprise with "i gloriosi spirti degli boschi," and reflect with singular completeness their author's longing for an innocent voluptuous existence, with no hell or heaven in the background.

It was in Spain that the influence of the Arcadia made itself most rapidly felt outside Italy. Gil Vicente, who was also a Portuguese writer, had written Spanish religious pastorals early in the 16th century. But Garcilaso de la Vega is the founder of Spanish pastoral. His first eclogue, El dulce lamentar de los pastores, is considered one of the finest poems of its kind in ancient or in modern literature. He wrote little and died early, in 1536. Two Portuguese poets followed him, and composed pastorals in Spanish, Francisco de S4 de Miranda, who imitated Theocritus, and the famous Jorge de Montemayor, whose Diana (1524) was founded on Sannazaro's Arcadia. Gaspar Gil Polo, after the death of Montemayor in 1561, completed his romance, and published in 1564 a Diana enamorada. It will be recollected that both these works are mentioned with respect, in their kind, by Cervantes. The author of Don Quixote himself published an admirable pastoral romance, Galatea, in 1584. The rise of the taste for picaresque literature in Spain towards the close of the 16th century was fatal to the writers of pastoral. In Portugal it can hardly be said that this form of literature has ever existed, although Camoens published idyls.

In France there has always been so strong a tendency towards a graceful sort of bucolic literature that it is hard to decide what should and what

should not be mentioned here. The charming pastourelles of the 13th century, with their knight on horseback and shepherdess by the road- side, need not detain us further than to hint that when the influence of Italian pastoral began to be felt in France these earlier lyrics gave it a national inclination. We have mentioned the Bergerie of Rémy Belleau, in which the art of Sannazaro seems to join hands with the simple sweetness of the medieval pastourele. But there was nothing in France that could compare with the school of Spanish pastoral writers which we have just noticed. Even the typical French pastoral, the Astrée of Honoré @Urfé (1610), has almost more connexion with the knightly romances which Cervantes laughed at than with the pastorals which he praised. D'Urfé had been preceded by Nicolas de Montreux, whose Bergeries de Juliette are Just worthy of mention. The famous Asétrée was the result of the study of Tasso's Aminta on the one hand and Montemayor's Diana on the other, with a strong flavouring of the romantic spirit of the Amadis. To remedy the pagan tendency of the Astrée a priest, Camus de Pontecarré, wrote a series of Christian pastorals. Of the romances which followed in the wake of the Astrée, and in which the pastoral element was gradually reduced toa minimum, a succinct but admirable account is given in Mr Saintsbury's

Short History of French Interature. The main authors in this style were Mademoiselle de Scudéry, La Calprenéde, and Gomberville. Racon produced in 1625 a pastoral drama, Les Bergeries, founded on the Astrée of D'Urfé.

In England the movement in favour of Theocritean simplicity which had been introduced by Spenser in the Shepherd's Calendar was immediately defeated by the success of Sir Philip Sidney's Arcadia, a romance closely modelled on the masterpiece of Sannazaro. So far from attempting to sink to colloquial idiom, and adopt a realism in rustic dialect, the tenor of Sidney's narrative is even more grave and stately than it is conceivable that the con- versation of the most serious nobles can have ever been. In these two remarkable books, then, we have two great contemporaries and friends, the leading men of letters of their generation, trying their earliest flights in the region of pastoral, and producing typical masterpieces in each of the

two great branches of that species of poetry. Hence- forward, in England, pastoral took one or other of these forms. It very shortly appeared, however, that the San- nazarean form was more suited to the temper of the age, even in England, than the Theocritean. In 1583 a great impetus was given to the former by Robert Greene, who was composing his Morando, and still more in 1584 by the publication of two pastoral dramas, the Gallathea of Liyly and the Arraignment of Paris of Peele. It is doubtful whether either of these writers knew anything about the Arcadia of Sidney, which was posthumously published, but Greene, at all events, became more and more imbued with the Italian spirit of pastoral. His Menaphon and his Never too Late are pure bucolic romances, While in the general form of his stories, how- ever, he follows Sidney, the verse which he introduces is often, especially in the Menaphon, extremely rustic and colloquial. In 1589 Lodge appended some eclogues to his Sella's Metamorphosis, but in his Rosalynde (1590) he made a much more important contribution to English literature in general, and to Arcadian poetry in particular. This beautiful and fantastic book is modelled niore exactly upon the masterpiece of Sannazaro than any other in our language. The other works of Lodge scarcely come under the head of pastoral, although his Phillis in 1593 included some pastoral sonnets, and his M/argarite of America (1596) is modelled in form upon the Arcadia. The Stxe Ldillia of 1588, paraphrases of Theocritus, are anonymous, but conjecture has attributed them to Sir Edward Dyer. In 1598 Bartholomew Young published an English version of the Diana of Montemayor.

In 1585 Watson published his collection of Latin elegiacal eclogues, entitled Amyntas, which was translated into English by Abraham Fraunce in 1587. Watson is also the author of two frigid pastorals, MJelibeus (1590) and Amyntze Gaudia (1592). John Dickenson printed at adate unstated, but probably not later than 1592, a " pas- sionate eclogue" called The Shepherd's Complaint, which begins with a harsh burst of hexameters, but which soon settles down into a harmonious prose story, with lyrical interludes. In 1594 the same writer published the romance of Avisbas. Drayton is the next pastoral poet m date of publication. His Jdea: Shepherd's Garland bears the date 1593, but was probably written much earlier. In 1595 the same poet produced an Endimion and Phebe, which was the least happy of his works. He then turned his fluent pen to the other

branches of poetic literature; but after more than thirty years, at the very close of his life, he returned to this early love, and published in 1627 two pastorals, The Quest of Cynthia and The Shepherd's Sirena. The general character of all these pieces is rich, but vague and unimpassioned. The Queens Arcadia of Daniel must be allowed to lie open to the sane

oe

charge, and to have been written rather in accordance with a fashion, than in following of the author's predomin- ant impulse. It may be added that the extremely bucolic title of Warner's first work, Pan. his Syrinx, is mislead- ing, These prose stories have nothing pastoral about them. 'The singular eclogue by Barnfield, Zhe Affectionate Shepherd, printed in 1594, is an exercise on the theme "© crudelis Alexi, nihil mea carmina curas," and, in spite of its juvenility and indiscretion, takes rank as the first really poetical following of Spenser and Virgil, in distinc- tion to Sidney and Sannazaro. Marlowe's pastoral lyric Come live with Me, although not printed until 1599, has been attributed to 1589. In 1600 was printed the anony- mous pastoral comedy in rhyme, The Maid's Metamor- phosis, long attributed to Lyly.

With the close of the 16th century pastoral literature was not extinguished in England as suddenly or as com- pletely as it was in Italy and Spain. Throughout the romantic Jacobean age the English love of country life asserted itself under the guise of pastoral sentiment, and the influence of Tasso and Guarini was felt in England just when it had ceased to be active inItaly. In England it became the fashion to publish lyrical eclogues, usually in short measure, a class of poetry peculiar to the nation and to that age. The lighter staves of Zhe Shepherd's Calendar were the model after which all these graceful productions were drawn. We must confine ourselves to a brief enumeration of the principal among these Jacobean eclogues. Nicholas Breton came first with his Passeonate Shepherd in 1604. Wither followed with The Shepherd's Hunting in 1615, and Braithwaite, an inferior writer, published The Poet's Willow in 1613 and Shepherd's Tales in 1621. The mention of Wither must recall to our minds that of his friend William Browne, who published in 1613-16 his beautiful collection of Devonshire idyls called Britanna's Pastorals. These were in heroic verse, and less

distinctly Spenserian in character than those eclogues recently mentioned. In 1614 Browne, Wither, Christopher Brook, and Davies of Hereford united in the composition of a little volume of pastorals entitled The Shepherd's Pipe. Meanwhile the composition of pastoral dramas was not entirely discontinued. In 1606 Day dramatized part of Sidney's Arcadia in his Jsle of Gulls, and about 1625 the Rev. Thomas Goffe composed his Careless Shepherdess, which Ben Jonson deigned to imitate in the opening lines of his Sad Shepherd. In 1610 Fletcher produced his Faithful Shepherdess in emulation of the Aminta of Tasso. This is the principal pastoral play in our language, and, in spite of its faults in moral taste, it preserves a fascination Which has evaporated from miost of its fellows. The Arcades of Milton is scarcely dramatic ; but it is a bucolic ode of great stateliness and beauty. In the Sad Shepherd, which was perhaps written about 1635, and in his pastoral masques, we see Ben Jonson not disdaining to follow along the track that Fletcher had pointed out in the Faithful Shepherdess. With the Piscatory Eclogues of Phineas Fletcher, in 1633, we may take leave of the more studied forms of pastoral in England early in the 17th century.

When pastoral had declined in all the other nations of Europe, it enjoyed a curious recrudescence in Holland. More than a century after date, the Arcadia of Sannazaro began to exercise an influence on Dutch literature. Johan van Heemskirk led the way with his popular Batavische Arcadia in 1637. In this curious romance the shepherds and shepherdesses move to and fro between Katwijk and the Hague, ina landscape unaffectedly Dutch. Heemskirk had a troop of imitators. Hendrik Zoeteboom published his Zaanlandsche Arcadia in 1658, and Lambertus Bos his Dordische Arcadia in 1662. These local imitations of the suave Italian pastoral were followed by still more crude

romances, the Motterdamsche Arcadia of Willem den Elger, the Walchersche Arcadia of Gargon, and the Noordwijker Arcadia of Jacobus van der Valk. Germany has nothing to offer us of this class, for the Diana of Werder (1644) and Die adriatische Rosamund of Zesen (1645) are scarcely pastorals even in form.

In England the writing of eclogues of the sub-Spenserian class of Breton and Wither led in another generation to a rich growth of lyrics which may be roughly called pastoral, but are not strictly bucolic. Carew, Lovelace, Suckling, Stanley, and Cartwright are lyrists who all contributed to this harvest of country-song, but by far the most copious and the most characteristic of the pastoral lyrists is Herrick. He has, perhaps, no rival in modern literature in this particular direction. His command of his resources, his deep originality and observation, his power of concen- trating his genius on the details of rural beauty, his interest in recording homely facts of country life, combined with his extraordinary gift of song to place him in the very first rank among pastoral writers; and it is noticeable that in Herrick's hands, for the first time, the pastoral became a real and modern, instead of being an ideal and humanistic thing. From him we date the recognition in poetry of the humble beauty that lies about our doors. His genius and influence were almost instantly obscured by the Restoration. During the final decline of the Jacobean drama a certain number of pastorals were still produced. Of these the only ones which deserve mention are three dramatic adaptations, Shirley's Arcadia (1640), Fanshawe's Pastor Iido (1646), and Leonard Willan's Astrea (1651). The last pastoral drama in the 17th century was Settle's Pastor Fido (1677). The Restoration was extremely unfavourable to this species of literature. Sir Charles Sedley, Aphra Behn, and Congreve published eclogues, and the Pastoral Dialogue between Thirsis and Strephon of the first-mentioned was much admired. All of these, however, are in the highest degree insipid and unreal, and partook of the extreme artificiality of the age.

Pastoral came into fashion again early in the 18th century. The controversy in the Guardian, the famous critique on Ambrose Philips's Pastorals, the anger and rivalry of Pope, and the doubt which must always exist as to Steele's share in the mystification, give 1708 a consider- able importance in the annals of bucolic writing. Pope had written his idyls first, and it was a source of infinite annoyance to him that Philips contrived to precede him in publication. He succeeded in throwing ridicule on Philips, however, and his own pastorals were greatly admired. Yet there was some nature in Philips, and, though Pope is more elegant and faultless, he is not one whit more genuinely bucolic than his rival. A far better writer of pastoral than either is Gay, whose Shepherd's Week was a serious attempt to throw to the winds

the ridiculous Arcadian tradition of nymphs and swains, and to copy Theocritus in his simplicity. Gay was far more successful in executing this pleasing and natural cycle of poems than in writing his pastoral tragedy of Dione or his “tragi-comico pastoral farce” of The What dye call i (1715). He deserves a very high place in the history of English pastoral on the score of his Shepherd’s Week. Swift proposed to Gay that he should write a Newgate pastoral in which the swains and nymphs should talk and warble in slang. This Gay never did attempt; but a northern admirer of his and Pope’s achieved a veritable and lasting success in Lowland Scotch, a dialect then considered no less beneath the dignity of verse. Allan Ramsay’s Gentle Shepherd, published in 1725, was the last, and remains the most vertebrate and interesting, bucolic drama produced in Great Britain. The literary value of this play has been exaggerated, but it is a very clever and natural essay, and

the best proof of its success as a painting of bucolic life is that it is still a favourite, after a hundred and fifty years, among lowland reapers and milkmaids.

With the Gentle Shepherd the chronicle of pastoral in England practically closes. This is at least the last per- formance which can be described as a developed eclogue of the school of Tasso and Guarini. It is in Switzerland that we find the next important revival of pastoral pro- perly so-called. The taste of the 18th century was very agreeably tickled by the religious idyls of Salomon Gessner, who died in 1787. His Daphnis und Phillis and Der Tod Abel’s were read and imitated throughout Europe. In German literature they left but little mark, but in France they were cleverly copied by Arnaud Berquin. A much more important pastoral writer is Jean Pierre Clovis de Florian, who began by imitating the Galatea of Cervantes, and continued with an original bucolic romance entitled Fistelle. His eclogues had a great popularity, but it was said that they would be perfect if only there were sometimes wolves in the sheepfolds. The tone of Florian, as a matter of fact, is tame to fatuity. Neither in France nor in Germany did the shepherds and shepherdesses enjoy any considerable vogue. It has always been noticeable that pastoral is a form of literature which disappears before a

breath of ridicule. Neither Gessner nor his follower Abbt were able to survive the laughter of Herder. Since Florian and Gessner there has been no reappearance of bucolic literature properly so-called. The whole spirit of romanticism was fatal to pastoral. Voss in his Luise and Goethe in Hermann und Dorothea replaced it by poetic scenes from homely and simple life.

Half a century later something like pastoral reappeared in a totally new form, in the fashion for Dorfgeschichten. About 1830 the Danish poet 8. §. Blicher, whose work con- nects the grim studies of our own Crabbe with the milder modern strain of pastoral, began to publish his studies of out-door romance among the poor in Jutland. Immermann followed in Germany with his novel Der Oberhof in 1839. Auerbach, who has given to the 19th-century idyl its peculiar character, began to publish his Schwarzwdélder Dorfgeschichten in 1843. Meanwhile George Sand was writing Jeanne in 1844, which was followed by Za Mare au Diable and Frangois le Champi, and in England Clough produced in 1848 his remarkable long-vacation pastoral The Bothie of Tober-na-Vuolich. It seems almost certain that these writers followed a simultaneous but independent impulse in this curious return to bucolic life, in which, however, in every case, the old tiresome conventionality and affectation of lady-like airs and graces were entirely dropped. This school of writers was presently enriched in Norway by Bjérnson, whose Synnéve Solbakken was the first of an exquisite series of pastoral romances. But perhaps the best of all modern pastoral romances is Fritz Reuter’s Ut mine Stromtid, written in the Mecklenburg dialect of German. In England the Dorsetshire poems of Mr Barnes and the Dorsetshire novels of Mr Hardy belong to the same class, which has finally been augmented by the ap- pearance of Mr Munby’s remarkable idyl of Dorothy. It will be noticed of course that all these recent productions have so much in common with the literature which is pro- duced around them that they almost evade separate classifi- cation. It is conceivable that some poet, in following the antiquarian tendency of the age, may enshrine his fancy once more in the five acts of a pure pastoral drama of the school of Tasso and Fletcher, but any great vitality in pastoral is hardly to be looked for in the future. (E. W. G.)

PASTORAL EPISTLES, the name given to three epistles of the New Testament which bear the name of St Paul, and of which two are addressed

to Timothy and one to Titus. The reason of their being grouped together

PAS—PAS

is that they are marked off from the other Pauline epistles

by certain common characteristics of language and subject- matter ; and the reason of their special name is that they consist almost exclusively of admonitions for the pastoral administration of Christian communities. None of the Pauline epistles have given greater ground for discussion, partly on account of the nature of their contents, partly on account of their philological peculiarities, and partly on account of their historical difficulties.

1. Contents.—The Pastoral Epistles are chiefly distin- guished from the other Pauline epistles by the prominence which they give to doctrine. From an objective point of view Christian teaching is ‘‘the word” (2 Tim. iv. 2), or “the word of God” (2 Tim. ii. 9), or “the doctrine of God our Saviour” (Tit. ii, 10), or “the truth” (1 Tim. iii. 15, 2 Tim. i. 18; iv. 4; Tit. i, 14), or “the faith” (1 Tim. iy, 1). From the point of view of the individual it is “the knowledge of the truth”.(2 Tim. ii. 25; iii. 7); and Chris- tians are those who “believe and know the truth” (1 Tim. iv. 3). It had existed long enough to have become perverted, and hence a stress is laid upon “sound” doctrine! (1 Tim. i. 10; 2 Tim. iv. 3; Tite ii. 1; in the plural, “sound words,” 1 Tim. vi. 3; 2 Tim. i. 13). It had also tended to become dissociated from right conduct; hence a stress is laid upon a “ pure con- sclence” (1 Tim. i. 19; iii. 8), and the end which it endeavours to attain is ‘‘love out of a pure heart, and out of a good conscience, and out of unfeigned faith” (1 Tim. i. 5). Consequently the “things that befit the sound doctrine” are moral attributes and duties (Tit. ii. 1 sq.), and the things that are “contrary to the sound doctrine” (1 Tim. i. 10) are moral vices. This combina- tion of sound doctrine and right conduct is “ piety” (evoéBeaca, 1 Tim. ii. 2; iii. 16; iv. 7, 8; vi. 5, 6, 11; 2 Tim. ili. 4) or “godliness” (@ecooéBeca, 1 Tim. ii. 10); and sound doctrine is, in other words, “the doctrine,” or “the truth, that is in harmony with piety” (1 Tim. vi. 3; Tit. ti TL) eo in the hands of the church or community (1 Tim. vi. 20; 2 Tim. i. 14), and is therefore a “common faith” (Tit, i. 4), of which the church is the “pillar and stay” (1 Tim. iii, 15). Its substance appears to be given in 1 Tim. iii. 16, which has been regarded, not without

reason, as a rudimentary form of creed, and possibly part of a liturgical hymn. But the church is no longer identical with “them that are being saved” or “the elect”; it is compared to “a great house” which contains vessels “some unto honour, and some unto dishonour” (2 Tim. ii. 20). It is in other words no longer an ideal commu- nity, the “Israel of God” (Gal. vi. 16), but a visible society. And, being such, its organization had come to be of more importance than before. But the nature of the organization to which these epistles point is an unsolved problem. The solution of that problem is attended by the preliminary question, which in the absence of collateral evidence cannot be definitely answered, of the relation in which Timothy and Titus are conceived to stand to the other or ordinary officers. According toa tradition mentioned by Eusebius, but for which he gives no definite authority, Timothy was “bishop” of Ephesus and Titus of Crete; according to others their position was rather that of the later “metropolitans”; and some modern writers, accepting one or other of these views, take it as part of the proof that the epistles belong toa period of the 2d century in which the monarchical idea of the episcopate was struggling to assert itself. On the

1 Most commentators have omitted to note that the word rendered “sound ” is a common expression of some of the later Greek philo- sophers. denoting simply “true,” e.g., Epictet., Dissert., i. 11, 28; i. 1D, 2s

This doctrine or truth is regarded as a sacred.

}

PS Orr el TaPlseT ins

- other hand, it appears from the epistles themselves that

the positions of Timothy and Titus were temporary rather than permanent, and that they were special delegates rather than ordinary officers (1 Tim. ui. 14, 15; iv. 13; Tit. iii, 12). For the ordinary officers the qualifications are almost all moral, and they are so similar to each other, and to the moral qualifications of all Christians, as to imply that the sharp distinctions of later times between one grade of office and another, and between the officers and the other members of the communities, were not yet developed (1 Tim. iii, 2-12; Tit. i. 6-9, possibly also ii. 9-6). The most probable

solution of the difficulties which present themselves in relation to the apparent interchange of the names ‘‘ bishop” and “elder,” and to the apparent double use of the word “elder,” sometimes as a title and sometimes as a designation of age, is that in these epistles there is an imperfect amalgamation of two forms of organization, Jewish and Gentile: in the former the dis- tinction between the governing and the governed classes was mainly that of age, and the functions of the govern- ing class were mainly those of discipline; in the latter the distinction was mainly that of functions, and the functions were mainly those of administration. (1) The distinction between elder and younger appears in regard to both men and women (1 Tim. v. 1, 2; Tit. ii, 2-6). Out of the elder men some appear to have been chosen or appointed to preside (of zpocorares, 1 Tim. v. 17; a cognate form of the designation is found in Rom. xii. 8, 1 Thess. v. 12, and constitutes almost the only link of connexion between the organization of these and that of the other Pauline epistles), and to have constituted a collective body or “presbytery” (1 Tim. iv. 14, the word was in use to designate the Jewish councils of elders, for which the more common word was yepovoia). Their func- tions, like those of the corresponding officers in the Jewish communities, were probably for the most part disciplinary ; to these some of them added the function of teaching (1 Tim. v. 17). The elder women also were charged with disciplinary functions; they had to “train the young women to love their husbands, to love their children, to be sober-minded ” (Tit. ii. 3, 4). Out of such of them as were widows some were specially entered on the roll of church-officers (karaAoyos), and formed a class which, though it did not long survive the growth of monasticism, is mentioned in almost all early documents which refer to ecclesiastical order (see Smith and Cheetham, Dict. of Chris. Antiq., s.v. ““Widows”). Whether the younger men and women, or a selected number of them had, as such, corresponding duties is not clear, but an inference in favour of the supposition may be drawn from a comparison of 1 Tim. v. 1, 2, 13, Acts v. 6,10. (2) Side by side with this, and sometimes, but not always, blended with it, was the organization which was probably adopted from the contemporary civil societies, especially those in which, as in the Christian communities, there were funds to be administered ; the presiding elders, or some of them, were also “bishops” or administrators, and some of the younger men were “deacons” or servants. A bishop was ‘‘God’s steward”

(Tit. i. 7); a deacon was the active helper of the bishops in both administration and discipline.

2. Language.—These epistles are distinguished from the other Pauline epistles by many peculiarities of language, of which only a few can be mentioned here. (1) In 1 Timothy there are seventy-four words which are not elsewhere in the New Testament; in 2 Timothy there are forty-six such words, and in Titus forty-eight. In the three epistles taken together there are one hundred and thirty-three words which are not found in the other Pauline epistles, though they are found elsewhere in the New Testament; and many of the most marked and

o49 frequent expressions of St Paul are absent, (2) There is a tendency which is not found elsewhere in the Pauline epistles to form unusual compounds, eg., Aoyopnayety, éerepodidackadrciv, tYnogpovelv, avtoxatakpitos. (3) Words are used for which the other Pauline epistles invariably substitute a different, though nearly synonymous, word ; €.9., deamdrns is used for kvptos, xricja for xriows. (4) The particles, which are even better tests of identity of style than nouns and verbs, are different: the Pauline ydp is rare ; dpa, apa ovv, ert, pyrws, wadwv, daomep, are absent. (5) “In the other Pauline epistles the fulness of the apostle’s thought struggles with the expression, and causes peculiar difficulties in exposition. The thoughts slide into one another, and are so intertwined in many forms that not seldom the new thought begins before a correct expression has been given to the thought that preceded. Of this confusion there is no example in the Pastoral Epistles” (Huther, Znéroduction, Eng. tr., p. 10). A complete account of the linguistic peculiarities of these epistles will be found in Holtzmann, pp. 84~117.

3. Historical Difficulties.~~The historical difficulties to which these epistles give rise are of two kinds:—(1) that of finding a place for them in any period of the recorded life of St Paul, and (2) that of determining the state of theo~~ logical opinion to which they are relative.

(1) In regard to the first kind of difficulties, each of the three epistles has its own problems.

The data of the historical position of 1 Timothy appear to be («) that St Paul had gone into Macedonia, (6) that he had left Timothy at Ephesus (i. 3). The chief hypotheses which have been framed to satisfy the con- ditions which these data imply are the following. (1) The majority of older writers suppose that St Paul left Timothy at Ephesus when he went into Macedonia after the émeute in the theatre (Acts xx. 1). The difficulties in the way of this hypothesis are that Timothy had been sent into Macedonia (Acts xix. 22), and probably at the same time to Corinth (1 Cor. iv. 17), that he had not returned when St Paul himself reached Macedonia, inas- much as St Paul waited for him there (1 Cor. xvi. 11), that the two were together in Macedonia when 2 Corin- thians was written (2 Cor. i. 1), and that they returned together to Asia Minor (Acts xx. 4). Some of these difficulties have been met by the conjecture that Timothy never reached Corinth, but returned to St Paul at Ephesus and rejoined him in Macedonia; but the conjecture implies that Timothy disobeyed the apostle's exhortation to tarry at Ephesus almost as soon as he had received it, and that the apostle, so far from "hoping to come unto him shortly" (1 Tim. iii. 14), was in reality intending to go to Jerusalem and to Rome (Acts xix. 21), not even calling at Ephesus on his way (Acts xx. 17). (2) It has been supposed that there was an unrecorded journey of St Paul into Macedonia during his long stay in Ephesus (Acts xix. 1-20; so Mosheim, Schrader, Wieseler, and Reuss, the last of whom makes the journey extend to Crete and Illyricum). There is little difficulty in the supposition of such a journey into Macedonia, but there is great difficulty in supposing that the epistle was written in the course of it,—first, because its language is not compatible with the idea that Timothy was merely left in temporary charge during a short absence of the apostle, and, secondly, because the epistle implies the existence of an organized community which had existed long enough to have had errors growing up in it (whereas in Acts xx. 29-30 the coming of heretical teachers is regarded as still future), and in which it was possible that a bishop should be "not a novice" (1 Tim. iii. 6). (8) It has been sup- posed that St Paul wrote the epistle during his imprison- ment at Czsarea or at Jerusalem; but this does not

avoid the difficulty which is fatal to the two preceding hypotheses, that Timothy had been left at Ephesus when the apostle was ‘going into Macedonia.” (4) In order to avoid this fatal difficulty some writers (especially Otto, Die geschichtlichen Verhdltnisse der Pastoralbriefe, Leipsic, 1860, and Kélling, Der erste Brief Pauli an Trmotheus, Berlin, 1882) have attempted a new but impossible trans- lation of 1 Tim. i. 3, so as to make it appear that it was Timothy and not Paul that was going into Macedonia (for criticisms of this attempt see Huther’s edition of Meyer’s commentary ad /oc., and Weiss in the Studien u. Kritiken for 1861, p. 577).

The data of the historical position of 2 Timothy appear to be (a) that St Paul either was or had been in Rome (i. 17), (b) that he was in prison (i. 16; ii. 9), (c) that he had already had a trial (iv. 16), (d) that he believed himself to be near the end of his life (iv. 6), (e) that he was expecting shortly to see Timothy (i. 4; iv. 9, 21), (f) that he had been, apparently not long before, at Troas, Corinth, and Miletus (iv. 13, 20). Upon these data two hypotheses have been framed. (1) It has been supposed that the required his- torical position is to be found at the beginning of the “two whole years” of Acts xxviii. 30, and that con- sequently the epistle was written before those to the Philippians and Colossians (so, among others, Schrader, Otto, and Reuss). The difficulties in the way of this hypothesis are chiefly two,—first, that of accounting for the complete change of tone between the close anticipation of death of 2 Tim. iv. 6 and the hopefulness of Philippians i. 23, 24, Philemon 22, and, secondly, that of accounting for the “ first defence ” of 2 Tim. iii. 16; this Otto does by supposing it to be the process before Festus at Ceesarea, a supposition which implies the very improbable further supposition that the process before Felix was not what was technically known as an “ actio,” and that the term “make my defence” (Acts xxiv. 10) was wrongly applied by St Paul himself to his own speech. (2) It has been supposed that the required position is to be found in the period immediately succeeding the “two whole years” of Acts xxviii. 30, and that the epistle was written after those to the Philippians and Colossians (so, among others, Wieseler). One of the main difficulties in the way of this hypothesis is that it implies an interval of at least four years since the journey referred to in chap. iv., and that it is incredible that St Paul should have written to a disciple in Asia Minor to mention the casual incidents of a voyage —such as the leaving a cloak at Troas and a companion sick at Miletus—which had

occurred several years before ; the difficulty would not be much lessened even if the ingenious conjectures were adopted by which Wieseler endeavours to identify this voyage with that of Acts xxvii.

The data of the historical position of the epistle to Titus are (a) that Paul and Titus had been in Crete together, and that Titus had been left there, (b) that Paul was intending to winter at Nicopolis (wherever that may be, places of that name being found in several Roman pro- vinces). Upon these data many conjectures have been built. It has been supposed that St Paul visited Crete either (1) at the commencement of this second missionary journey (Acts xv. 41), or (2) during his residence at Corinth (Acts xviii 1, 8; so Michaelis and Thiersch). Each of these conjectures is met, in addition to other difficulties, by the fact, which seems fatal to it, that Apollos, who is mentioned in Titus iii. 13, was not known to Paul and his company until after the second missionary journey (Acts xvill. 24), (3) The same fact is also fatal to the supposition of Hug and others that the visit to Orete took place during the journey from Corinth to Ephesus (Acts xvill, 18, 19), a supposition which is also inconsistent with the apostle's apparent desire to reach Syria without much

delay, and which requires for its support the further supposition that, although on his way to Antioch and Cresarea, he had selected the almost unknown town of Nicopolis in Cilicia to winterin. (4) It has been supposed (Credner) that the visit to Crete was made as a detour in the course of the journey from Antioch to Ephesus (Acts Xvill, 22, 23; xix. 1); this is not only improbable in itself but also inconsistent with the summary of that journey: " Paul, having passed through the upper," 4.e., the inland, "country, came to Ephesus." (5) It has been supposed that St Paul called at Crete in the course of a journey which he probably made to Corinth during his long sojourn at Ephesus (so Wieseler, who thinks that he went first to Macedonia, 1 Tim. i. 3, and thence to Corinth, Crete, and back to Ephesus; and Reuss, who thinks that the route was Ephesus, Crete, Corinth, Illyricum, Macedonia, Ephesus) ; but this supposition seems to be excluded by the inconsistency between the expressed intention to winter in Nicopolis (Tit. ili. 12) and the similar intention to pass the same winter at Corinth (1

Cor. xvi. 6), unless the ingenious hypothesis of Wieseler be adopted that he intended to spend part of the winter in one place and the rest in the other. (6) It has been supposed that he made his journey from Macedonia to Greece (Acts xx. 1-3) by way of Crete (so Matthies); but this supposition seems to be excluded by the fact that in 2 Cor. viii. 6, 17 (which was written from Macedonia), Titus who had been with Paul in Macedonia had gone forward on his own account not to Crete but to Corinth. And all these endeavours to find a place for the epistle in St Paul's life before his voyage to Rome are met by the improbability that, if Crete had been already so far Christianized as to have communities in several cities (which is implied in Tit. i, 5), there should be no hint of the fact in Acts xxvii.

7-13.

The difficulties of all endeavours to find a place for these epistles in the recorded history of St Paul have been so strongly felt by most of those modern writers who support their authenticity that such writers have generally trans- ferred them toan unrecorded period of his life, subsequent to the close of the Acts of the Apostles. The external authorities for the belief that there was such a period, and that in the course of it St Paul underwent a second im- prisonment, are chiefly the statement of Clement of Rome that he went to "the goal of the West," and that of the Muratorian fragment that he went to Spain (see PAUL, infra, p. 422). Both these statements admit of much dis- pute, the one as to its meaning, the other as to its authority ; and their value as evidence is weakened by the fact that Ireneus, Tertullian, and Origen, though they mention the death of the apostle at Rome, say nothing of any journeys subsequent to his arrival there. In the 4th century Eusebius, for the first time, mentions a second imprisonment, but prefixes to his statement the ambiguous words Adyos éxet, " there is a story" or " tradition holds." Several fathers subsequent to his time repeat and amplify

'his statement ; but that statement, if accepted, involves

the further difficulties on the one hand of finding room for St Paul's journeys before the great Neronian persecution of 64 a.D., and on the other hand of accounting for the fact that, supposing the apostle to have survived that per- secution, he makes no mention of it. For all these diffi- culties

more or less plausible answers have been framed, and many narratives of St Paul's unrecorded travels have been written ; but, although it may be adinitted that such narratives are conceivably true, yet it must be conceded on the other hand that they rest rather upon conjecture than upon evidence. It may be added that the hypothesis of a second imprisonment is rejected not only by writers like Baur and Hilgenfeld, who deny the authenticity of

SNS Ss, ae

both the Pastoral Epistles and the other ' Epistles of the Captivity," but also by conservative writers, suchas Meyer, Ebrard, Otto, Wieseler, Thiersch, and De Pressensé¢.

(2) The second kind of historical difficulties, that of determining the state of theological opinion to which these epistles are relative, arises partly from the incidental nature of the references to false teachers in the epistles themselves and partly from the fragmentary character of our knowledge of contemporary teaching. The character- istics of the false teachers are mainly the following. (1.) They once held "sound doctrine" but have now fallen Meay irom it (1 Tim. i. 6, 19; vi. 5, 21; 2 Tim. ii. 18); and, puffed up with self-conceit (1 Tim. vi. 4) and claiming to have a special "knowledge" (yvécrs, vi. 20; implied also in Tit. i. 16), they oppose the truth (Tit. i. 9; 2 Tim. ii, 25; iii. 8) and teach a different doctrine (1 Tim. 1. 3) ; yet they remain within the church and cause factions within it (Tit. iii 10). (ii.) They profess asceticism, "forbidding to marry and commanding to abstain from meats," apparently on the ground that some " creatures of God" are evil (1 Tim. iv. 3), and at the same time their moral practice is perverted, they are "unto every good work reprobate" (1 Tim. vi. 5; 2 Tim. iii. 13; Tit. i. 16), and they make their teaching of religion a means of gain (1 Tim. vi. 5; Tit.i.11). (iii.) Their teaching is concerned with "fables and endless genealogies " (1 Tim. i. 4; Tit. 1. 14), with questionings and disputes of words (1 Tim. vi. 4), with empty sounds and contradictions (1 Tim. vi. 20), with " profane and old wives' fables" (1 Tim. iv. 7), with "foolish questionings and genealogies, and strifes and fightings about the law" (Tit. iii. 9), and they held that the "resurrection is past already " (2 Tim. ii. 18). It has been sometimes held that these statements refer rather to errors of practice than errors of doctrine, and rather to tendencies than to matured

systems (Reuss); and it has also been sometimes held that different forms of opinion are referred to in either different epistles or different parts of the same epistle (Credner, Thiersch, Hilgenfeld) ; but the majority of writers think that the reference is to a single definite form of error. The main question upon which opinions are divided is whether the basis of this false teaching was Judaistic or Gnostic, ¢.e., whether that teaching was a rationalizing form of Judaism or a Judaiz- ing form of Gnosticism. (1) The former of these views branches out into many forms, and is held on various grounds. It is sometimes held that the reference is to the allegorizing and rationalizing school of which Philo is the chief representative, and which was endeavouring to take root in Christian soil, the “fables” being the allegorical interpretations of historical facts, the “ genealogies ” those of the Pentateuch, or possibly the Pentateuch itself, which served as the basis of philosophical speculations (Wiesinger, Hofmann). It is sometimes held that the reference is to what in later times was known as the Kabbalah, the assumption being made that the Kabbalah must be dated many centuries earlier than other testimony warrants us in believing (so Vitringa, Grotius, Schéttgen, and more recently Olshausen and Baumgarten). It is

Sometimes held that the false teachers were not so much

theosophic as thaumaturgic, allied to the Judeeo-Samaritan school of which Simon Magus is the typical representative, and that this is the point of the reference to Jannes and Jambres and to “jugglers… . deceiving and being deceived” (2 Tim. ili. 8, 13). It is sometimes supposed that they combined Essenism with a form of Ebionism, and this view (the ablest supporter of which is Mangold, Die Irrlehrer der Pastoralbriefe, 1856) is that which now prevails among those who contend for the early date of the epistles, if not for their authenticity. (2) It is con- tended on the other hand that none of these theories quite

cover the facts. It is maintained that genealogies did not take the place in the Jewish speculative schools which they evidently had in the false teaching to which these epistles refer; that even if they had done so it is

difficult to account for the epithet “endless” which is applied to them ; that there is no sufficient proof that the Essenes held a dualistic theory of the relation of spirit to matter, or that they denied the resurrection (the testimony of Hippolytus on this point being more probable than that of Josephus), or that they taught for gain, or that they pro- secuted a propaganda among women (2 Tim. iii. 6). It is further contended that all these points are generally characteristic of Gnosticism. The use of the epithet “falsely so called,” it is urged, shows that “ knowledge ” (yv@ots) is used in a technical sense; in the “ endless genealogies” writers so early as Ireneus and Tertullian recognized Gnostic systems of zons, to which the phrase seems exactly to apply; the abstinence from meats and from marriage belongs not to any form of Judaism but to Gnostic theories of the nature of matter; the description of the teachers as making a gain of their teaching and as “taking captive silly women laden with sins” suits no one so well as the half-converted rhetoricians who brought into Christian communities the practices as well as the beliefs of the degenerate philosophical schools of the empire. It is probable that this view is substantially correct ; at the same time it may be granted that the evidence is too scanty to allow of the identification of the Gnostics to which reference is made with any particular Gnostic sect, and that the several attempts which have been made so to identify them have failed.

The result of this combination of difficulties—the differences between the pastoral epistles and the other Pauline epistles in respect of the character of their con- tents, their philological peculiarities, the difficulty of reconciling the historical references with what is known from other sources of the life of St Paul, the difficulty of finding any known form of belief which precisely answers to the opinions which they attack, and the further difficulty of believing that so elaborate a debasement of Christianity had grown up in the brief interval between St Paul’s first contact with Hellenism and his death—has been to make the majority of modern critics question or deny their authenti- city. The first important attacks were that of Schleier- macher, who, however, only rejected 1 Timothy, and a few years afterwards that of Eichhorn, who rejected all three ; but the modern criticism of them practically begins with Baur’s treatise Die sogenannten Pastoralbriefe des Apostel’s Paulus in 1835. Since then the controversy has been keenly waged on both sides; the history of it will be found in Holtzmann, Die

Pastoralbriefe (Leipsic, 1880), which is by far the ablest work on the negative side of the con- troversy, and which, whether its conclusions be accepted or not, is more full of accurate information than any other. The mostavailable works on the conservative side, for English readers, are the translation of Huther's edition of Meyer's Commentary (Edinburgh, 1881); Dr Wace's introduction to the Pastoral Epistles in the Speaker's Commentary (London, 1881); and Archdeacon Farrar's excursus on "The Genuineness of the Pastoral Epistles " in his St Paul (vol. ii. p. 607). (2. Ts)

PASTORAL LETTER, a letter addressed, in his pastoral capacity, by a bishop to his clergy, or the laity of his diocese, or both. In the Church of Rome it is usual for every bishop to issue at least one pastoral annually, the Lenten Mandates or Instructions, containing exhortations relating to that fast, and enumerating the dispensations granted and devotions prescribed. Others are issued in connexion with the principal solemnities of the church, or as occasion arises.

See Plate XI.vol.i.

PATAGONIA, in the widest application of the name, is that portion of South America which, to the east of the Andes, lies south of Rio Negro (mouth in 41° 5' S. lat.), and, to the west of the Andes, south of the Chilian pro- vince of Chiloe,! with a total area of 322,550 square miles (306,475 continental, 16,075 insular) according to Dr E. Wisotzki's measurement (Behm and Wagner, Bevolkerung der Erde, 1880). By the treaty of 22d October 1881 this vast region was divided between Chili and the Argen- tine Republic, the boundary being the unexplored water- shed of the Andes down to 52° S. lat., and then con- tinuing along the parallel to 70° W. long., thence to Point Dungeness, and so southwards (through Tierra del Fuego) along the meridian of 68° 34' W. long.? In this way about 62,930 of the 322,550 square miles fall to Chili and 259,620 to the Argentine Republic.?

The Chilian portion, the main bulk of which is com- prised under the title of Magellan Territory (Zerritorio Magallanes), is chiefly remarkable for the way in which the combined action of glacier and sea has cut up the country into a multitude of rugged and irregular islands and peninsulas, separated

by intricate channels and fjords. South of Chiloe, the first great island of the Chilian coast, the islands are grouped under the name of the Chonos Archipelago, which is bounded on the south by the spacious Gulf of Pefias. The Chonos Islands (upwards of 1000 in number, without counting mere islets and rocks) are with- out exception mountainous, and in some cases the summits remain white throughout the year, though in the lowlands snow lies only a few days. The general temperature is remarkably even. A thick covering of vegetation (low and stunted on the seaward parts) is spread over nearly all the surface, but the layer of vegetable soil is very thin. Potatoes grow wild, and cabbage, onions, radish, &c., are cultivated. The sea-elephant appears to be exterminated ; seals still abound. On Taytao peninsula is found the pudu, the smallest known deer. The old Indian inhabit- ants—Chonos—are practically extinct, though their sitting mummies give name to Momias Bay, and they still occupy some of the islands far south near Magellan's Strait. There are only one or two permanent settlements in the whole archipelago—on the Guaitecas Islands (43° 52' 8. lat.) and at Puerto Americano or Tangbac (45° §. lat.). Wood-cutters, however, visit the islands in considerable numbers for the sake of their valuable timber, mainly cipré (Zzbo- cedrus tetragona). Besides Magdalena—which is by far the largest of the whole group and contains the extinct volcano of Motalat, 5400 feet high—it is enough to men- tion Chaffers, Forsyth, Johnson, Tahuenahuec, Narborougli (named after the old English explorer), Stokes, Benja- min, James, Melchor, Victoria, Luz, and Rivero Islands. The broad Moraleda Channel, from 75 to 175 fathoms deep, which may be said to separate the rest of the archipelago from Magdalena and the mainland, is continued south by the Costa and Elefantes Channels, and would have proved of great service to navigation had it not been that the southern exit is barred by the narrow isthmus of Ofqui, which alone prevents the strangely formed Taytao peninsula from being an island. The glacier of San Rafael, which discharges into the lagoon of the same name on the north side of the isthmus, is nearer the equator than any other

coast-glacier in the world.4 ee ee

1 Chiloe is sometimes considered part of Patagonia,

? Of the Tierra del Fuego archipelago 20,341 square miles are Chilian and 7890 Argentine,

3 Documents in regard to the disputed possession will be found in Quesada, La Patagonia y las Tierras Australes, Buenos Ayres, 1875. By a treaty in 1856 the uti possidetis of 1810 was accepted.

: The Chonos Archipelago was explored by E. Simpson of the rags navy in 1871-72. See map and text in Petermann's Mittheil.,

PA PACGCON TS

South of the Gulf of Pefias a navigable channel exists between the mainland and the long succession of islands which, under the names of Wellington Island (150 miles long), Madre de Dios Archipelago, Hanover Island, and Queen Adelaide Archipelago, extend for about 400 miles to the mouth of Magellan's Strait; and it is now regularly used by steamers, which are thus protected from the terrible western storms that make the deep-sea pass- age along this coast so dangerous. At one or two points only is the navigation difficult—at the English Narrows in Messier Channel (as the northern division is called), and at the Guia Narrows farther south. The scenery throughout is of the most beautiful and picturesque de- scription. Among the serviceable inlets are Connor Cove, Port Grappler, Puerto Bueno (pointed out by Sarmiento) and Isthmus Harbour.®

The southern coast of Patagonia is bounded for 365 miles by Magellan's Strait, which separates the mainland from the countless islands of the Tierra del Fuego archi- pelago and breaks it up into a number of very irregular peninsulas. Of these the largest are King William IV. Land and Brunswick Peninsula, and between them lies the extensive inlet of Otway Water, which is further con- nected westward by Fitzroy Channel with Skyring Water. On the east coast of Brunswick Peninsula, opposite the Broad Reach of the strait, and in the finest part of the straitward district, lies the Chilian military post and penal settlement of Punta Arenas or Sandy Point. It was founded in 1851 as a substitute for the unfortunate Port Famine settlement, which lay farther south on the same coast. In spite of convict mutinies (as in 1878) and the questionable character of many of the settlers (chiefly Chilotes), Punta Arenas begins to flourish; in 1875 its population was 915, and since

that date a series of “ fac- tories” or cattle-stations have been established along the coast to north and south. The country behind the settle ment, unlike the districts at either end of the strait, is well wooded, mainly with Chilian beech (/agus antarctica) and Winter’s bark (Drimys Winteri, so called after Captain Winter, Drake’s companion), and considerable quantities of timber are exported. Coal also, though of inferior quality, is worked in the neighbourhood.’

Patagonia east of the Andes is for the most part a region of vast steppe-like plains. Unlike the pampas of the Argentine Republic, with which it is conterminous on the north, it rises in a succession of abrupt steps or terraces about 300 feet at a time, and is covered, not with soft stoneless soil, but with an enormous bed of shingle, which instead of luxuriant grass supports, where it is not abso- lutely bare, only a thin clothing of coarse and often thorny brushwood and herbage. So peculiar is this, the largest tract of shingle in the world, that from D’Orbigny down- wards geologists have generally characterized it simply as the Patagonian formation. It is of Tertiary marine origin ; but, whilst Bove makes it correspond to the Miocene sub- division, Doering (Roca’s expedition) assigns it to the somewhat older Oligocene. Beneath the shingle, which is sometimes at least 200 feet thick, and has its pebbles whitewashed and cemented together by an aluminous substance, there stretches a vast deposit, sometimes more than 800 feet thick, of a soft infusorial stone resem- bling chalk. In the hollows of the plain as far south as

5 See Lieut. Eardley- Wilmot, Our Journal in the Pacific, 1878, especially the appendix; and The Voyages of the “‘ Adventure” and the “* Beagle.”

8 Magellan’s Strait was first named, probably by its discoverer, Canal de Todos los Santos, and in older writers often appears as Estrecho Patagonico and Estrecho de la nave Victoria (Magellan’s ship).

? Punta Arenas was a German station for the observation of the transit of Venus in 1882,

by

gg SS

Santa Cruz there are frequently lakes or ponds; they are generally impregnated with common salt, Epsom salts, or some other mineral ingredient, the substance varying from lake to lake without any regularity of distribution (see Bur- meister, La République Argentine, vol. ii. (1876) appendix). Certain limited tracts with finer soil and richer vegetation occur, especially in the river-valleys, but the general aspect of the plains is one of sterility and desolation.

The most ordinary bushes are the jume (Salicornia) and the calafate (Berberis buaxifolia); the ashes of the former contain 41 per cent. of soda, and the latter makes excel- lent fuel and bears a pleasant bluish-purple berry known to the older English explorers as Magellan's grape. Among the perennial herbs may be named Strongyloma struthium, Chuquiragas, Adesmias, Azorellas. The palm-tree men- tioned by many travellers as growing on the south coast is really a kind of fern, Lomarza boryana.}

The guanaco, the puma, the zorro or Canis Azarex (a kind of fox), the zorrino or Mephitis patagomca (a kind of skunk), and the tuco-tuco or Ctenomys magellanicus (a kind of rodent) are the most characteristic mammals of the Patagonian plains. Vast herds of the guanaco roam over the country, and form with the ostrich (hea americana, and more rarely rhea Darwinit) the chief means of sub- sistence for the native tribes, who hunt them on horseback with dogs and bolas.

Bird-life is often wonderfully abundant. The carrancha or carrion-hawk (Polyborus Tharus) is one of the charac- teristic objects of a Patagonian landscape; the presence of long-tailed green parroquets (Conurus cyanolysius) as far south as the shores of the strait attracted the attention of the earlier navigators ; and humming-birds may be seen flying amidst the falling snow. Of the many kinds of water-fowl it is enough to mention the flamingo, the up- land goose, and in the strait the remarkable steamer duck.

As the Andes are approached, a great change is observed in the whole condition of the country. The shingle is replaced by porphyry and granite and vast masses of basalt and lava; vegetation becomes luxuriant, majestic trees—evergreen beeches, alerces, ciprés, araucarias, &c.— combined with jungle-like underwood clothing the ravines and hillsides ; and, with the richer plant life, animal life grows more abundant and varied, deer,

peccaries, wild cattle, and wild horses? finding fitting pasture. The fruit trees planted by the Jesuits in the neighbourhood of Lake Nahuel-Huapi have spread into vast natural orchards, which furnish the local tribes of Araucanians with food and wine, and have given rise to the designation Man- zaneros or apple-folk by which they are distinguished.

Eastern Patagonia is traversed from west to east by a consider- able number of rivers, but few if any can ever be of much use as highways, In their passage seawards they are joined by compara- tively few tributaries from the low country ; rain falls seldom, and the water sinks away among the shingle and sand. The Rio Negro, Which separates the pampas from Patagonia proper, is formed by the junction of the Neuquen and the Limay. The former collects by numerous channels the drainage of the Andes between 36° 25’ and 38° 40’; the latter has its main source in the great Nahuel- Huapi Lake, which was discovered in 1690 by Mascardi the Jesuit (whose station on the lake was maintained till 1723), and is reached from Chili by the Bariloche pass, rediscovered by Jorje Rohde in 1882. For some distance the Rio Negro is navigable for steamers drawing 12 feet, but only vessels with powerful engines can make head against the current. South of this river there stretches north and south a chain of hills—the Valchita and Uttak Tange—which, lying from 50 to 100 miles from the coast, forms a secondary watershed, draining westward into the plain as well as

eastward to the Atlantic. The next great Andean river is the Chubut (Chubat or Chuba, z.c., erosion), which gives its name of

1 See Dr Karl Berg, “Eine Naturhist, Reise nach Patagonien,” in Petermann’s Mitteilungen, 1875 ; and the botanical part of the report of Roca’s expedition (résumé in Nature, 1884).

Hence the name Cordillera de Baguales applied to the southern extremity of the Andes.

Chubut Territory to the northern division of Argentine Patagonia, and is well known from the Welsh colonics established in its valley in 1865 by Mr. Lewis Jones. Its northmost affluent rises probably a little south of Nahuel-Huapi, about 41° 25’, and its southmost between 46° and 47°. The latter stream, the Sengel or Senguer (explored by Durnford 1877, Moyano 1880), has this peculiarity, that, beforc entering the shallow basin of Lake Colguape (Huapi), Colhue, or, as Thomas and Moreno call it, Dillon, the volume of water is so much larger than when it issues again that the Welsh settlers distinguish the lower course of the stream as Sengellen or the Little Sengel.? Rio Deseado, which disembogues at Port Desire (Puerto Deseado), well known in the early history of the coast, has its source about 46° 42’, in the vicinity of a large lake, Buenos Ayres (20 milcs long by 14 broad), which lies, however, 600 feet below the level of the river, and consequently has no connexion with it. Of the rivers which unite in the Santa Cruz estuary the Rio Chico (explored by Musters, Moyano, and Lista) and the Chatta or Sheuen (explored by Moyano and Moreno) have little that calls for notice ; but the Santa Cruz is connected with the most remarkable cluster of mountain-lakes in the country. The largest of these is Capar or Viedma Lake (discovered by Viedma in 1782); northward it communicates by a narrow channel with what may be distinguished as Moreno Lake, which again opens into San Martin, and southward it discharges into the very irregular Lago Argentino or Fitzroy Lake (discovered, according to Musters, by an adventurer called Holstein in 1868, and next visited by Fallberg), which in its turn probably has extensive ramifications. From the east end of Lago Argentino issues the rapid current of the Santa Cruz. Round these lakes the moun- tains rise with glaciers and snow-fields from 3000 to 3500 feet, and at the north-west end of Viedma stands the active volcano of Chalten. At the time of Moreno’s visit in March (the latter part of summer) gigantic icebergs rising 70 feet above the water continued to float about Lago Argentino. With the melting of the snows the river rose rapidly, and by 17th March was 63 feet above its ordinary level. So swift was its current that the explorers sped down the whole length of its course in twenty-four hours, though they had taken a month to ascend. In some parts the rate was at least 15 miles per hour. The Rio Gallegos, the last of the rivers of Patagonia which flow west and east, is comparatively insignificant except during thaw-floods, when it complctely interrupts communication by its wide and raging torrent (see Beerbohm’s exciting

narrative). The eastern coast of Patagonia contrasts strikingly with the western ; hardly an island of any considerable size exists on all the 2000 miles of its development, and it is scooped out into spacious and open gulfs. The peninsula of San José or Valdes to the south of the Gulf of San Matias is quite exceptional. But the whole seaboard offers only one or two safe harbours ; and submerged reefs, strong tides, currents, and overfalls combine to render it highly perilous. Besides E] Carmen or Patagones, near the mouth of the Rio Negro, a place of 1690 inhabitants in 1869, there is hardly a permanent settlement of any size from the river to the strait; but, since the partition between Chili and the Argentine Republic, beginnings of colonization have becn made at the more promising points. A notice of the native Patagonians is given in the article INDIANS (AMERICAN), vol. xii. p. 829; and the history of the Araucanian tribes of the Chilian side has been sketched undcr AMERICA, vol. i. pp. 701-702. ;

History.—Patagonia was discovered in 1520 by Magellan, who called the country Tierra de Patagones from the large footsteps observed near his winter quarters at San Julian, and on his passage along the coast named many of the more striking features—Bay of San Matias, Bay of Santa Cruz, Cape of 11,000 Virgins (now simply Cape Virgin or De la Vierge), &. By 1611 the Patagonian god Setebos (Settaboth in Pigafetta) was familiar to the hearers of the Tempest. Rodrigo de Isla, despatched inland in 1535 from San Matias by Alcazava Sotomayor (on whom western Patagonia had been conferred by the king of Spain), was the first to traverse the great Patagonian plain, and, but for the mutiny of his men, he would have struck across the Andes to the Chilian side. Pedro de Mendoza, on whom the country was next bestowed, lived to found Buenos Ayres, but not to carry his explorations to the south. Camargo (1539), Ladrilleros (1557), Hurtado de Mendoza, and Ercilla (1558) helped to make known the western coasts, and Drake’s voyage in 1577 down the eastern coast through the strait and northward by Chili and Peru was memorable for several reasons; but the geography of Patagonia owes more to Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa, who, devoting himself especially to the south- west region, made such careful and accurate surveys that from twenty to thirty of the names which he affixed still appear in maps (Kohl). The settlements which he founded at Nombre de Dios and San Felipe were neglected by the Spanish Government, and the latter was in such a miserable state when Thomas

Cavendish visited it in 1587 that he called it Port Famine. The district in the neighbourhood of Port Desire, explored by John Davis about Saas ee es Se

3 See Durnford's account in The Field, 23d and 30th Dec. 1882, and Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc., 1883. : AVE, — 4s

the same period, was taken possession of by Sir John Narborough in name of King Charles II. in 1669. In the latter half of the 18th century our knowledge about Patagonia was considerably augmented by Byron (1764-65), Wallis (1766), Bougainville (AGG) Thomas Falkner, a Jesuit who "resided near forty years in those parts," published his Description of Patagonia (Hereford, 177A) 5 Francesco Viedma founded El] Carmen, and Antonioad vanced inland to the Andes (1782) ; and Villarino ascended the Rio Negro (1782). The "Beagle" and "Adventure" expeditions under King (1826-30) and Fitzroy (1832-36) were of first-rate importance, the latter especially from the participation of Charles Darwin ; but of the interior of the country nothing was observed except 200 miles of the course of the Santa Cruz. Captain Musters wandered in company with a band of natives through the whole length of the country from the strait to the Manzaneros in the north-west, and collected a great deal of information about the people and their mode of life. Since that date explorations of a more scientific character have been carried on by Moreno (1873-80), Rogers (1877), Mista (1878-80), and Moyano (1880, &c.), a convenient survey of which will be found

in Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1882.

Bibliographical lists for Patagonia are given in Wappaus, Handbuch der Geogr. u. Stat. des ehemal. span. Mittel- und Siid-Amerika (Leips., 1863-70); in Quesada's work already quoted ; and in Coan, Adventures in Patagonia (New York, 1880). It is enough to mention Darwin's Journal of Researches (1845) and Geological Observations on South America (1846); Snow, A Two Years' Cruise off . – - Patagonia (1857); Musters, At Home with the Patagonians (1871) ; Cunning- ham, Nat. Hist. of the Strait of Magellan (1871); Moreno, Viage a la Patagonia austral (1879); Lady Florence Dixie, Across Patagonia (1880); Lista, Mis esploraciones … en la

Patagonia (Buenos Ayres, 1880); Beerbohm, Wander- ings in Patagonia (1878); Informe Oficial . .. de la Exp, al Rio Negro (under General Roca, 1879, Buenos Ayres, 1882); Giacomo Bove, Patagonia, Terra del Fuoco (Genoa, 1883). (H. A. W.)

PATARENES, a name apparently first used in Milan about the middle of the 11th century to denote the party most extremely opposed to the marriage of priests ; besides Patareni, the forms Paterini, Patarelli, Patarzei occur among others. Various etymologies, more or less far- fetched, have been offered ; it seems, however, pretty well established that the party was so called because, under the leadership of Arialdus, a deacon of Milan, its members used to assemble in the Pataria, or ragmen's quarter of that city (pates being a provincial word for a rag). The name ultimately came to be applied to the dualistic sect of the Cathari, who were opposed to marriage altogether, and indeed was one of their most common designations in Italy, France, and Bosnia.

PATENTS. Patents for inventions, instruments which formerly bore the great seal of the United Kingdom, are now issued at the Patent Office in London under the seal of that office. By their means inventors obtain a monopoly in their inventions for fourteen years, a term which, if insufficient to remunerate the inventor, can be extended. This monopoly is founded on exactly the same principle as the copyright enjoyed by authors and artists. There are persons who argue that no such privilege should be permitted ; there are others who think that the most trifling exertions of the inventive faculties should be pro- tected.. The right course lies between these extremes. All civilized nations have in modern times considered it desir- able to give inventors an exclusive right to their inven- tions for a limited period, not only as a matter of justice to individuals but as a piece of sound policy tending to the advantage of the whole community. The monopoly is granted in the expectation that the inventor will derive some profit from it; and the hope of profit is known to be a great stimulus to invention. When an author writes a book, or an artist designs a picture, the law allows a right of property to those persons in their productions, and accompanies the recognition of this right with the power to repress infringements. If this were not so, probably very few persons would employ their time in writing books or creating works of art; and hardly any one will

be bold enough to assert that the extinction of the race of authors and artists is to be desired. The same principle applies to Inventors, who ought to have the works of their brain protected from piracy fully as much as the other classes of mental producers. By holding out to them the pro- spect of gain they are induced, at a present loss of time

Put SP 27

and money, to attempt to discover improvements in the useful arts, in machinery, in manufacturing processes, &e. : and thus the interests of the community are advanced more rapidly than if such exertions had not been brought into play. Just as the rule of rewarding inventors is in theory attended with some difficulty, so is the practical ap- plication of it. To grant a very long term of exclusive possession would be detrimental to the public, since it would tend to stop the progress of improvement. A limited property must therefore be allowed,—large enough to give the inventor an opportunity of reaping a fair reward, but not barring the way for an unreasonable period. And, when this compromise has been decided on, it will be seen how difficult it may be to determine beforehand what is the real merit of an invention, and apportion the time to that merit. Hence it has been found necessary to allot one fixed period for all kinds of inventions falling within the purview of the patent laws. This regulation appears to be open to the complaint that the least valuable and the most meritorious inventions are placed on the same footing, But it may be replied that in the result this is of little consequence, since meritorious inventions alone obtain the patronage of the public, those which are destitute of value being neglected. Besides, if the complaint were well founded, there is here no sound argument against the policy of privileges of this nature, seeing that it is impos sible to weigh beforehand one invention against another in the scale of merit, or to obtain a true standard of com- parison.

Leaving the discussion of general considerations, we will now give an outline of the law affecting patent privi- leges in the United Kingdom. Formerly the reigning prince considered himself entitled, as part of his preroga- tive, to grant privileges of the nature of monopolies to any one who had gained his favour. These grants became so numerous that they were oppressive and unjust to various

classes of the commonwealth ; and hence, in the reign of –

James I., a statute was wrung from that king which de- clared all monopolies that were grievous and inconvenient to the subjects of the realm to be void. (See Monopoty.) There was, however, a special exception from this enact- ment of all letters patent and grants of privilege of the “sole working or making of any manner of new manutfac- ture within the realm to the true and first inventor of such manufacture, which others at the time of making such letters patent and grants should not use, so they be not contrary to law, nor mischievous to the state by raising of the prices of commodities at home or hurt of trade or generally inconvenient.” Upon these words hangs the whole law of letters patent for inventions. Many statutes were afterwards passed, but these were all repealed by the Patent Act of 1883 (46 and 47 Vict. c. 57), which, besides introducing a new procedure, modified the law in several particulars. When the lawremains unaltered, it has to be gathered from the numerous decisions of the courts, for patent law is for the most part “judge-made law.” Of the law as it now stands we proceed to give an outline. The inventions for which patents are obtained are chiefly either vendible articles formed by chemical or mechanical operations, such as cloth, alloys, vulcanized india-rubber, &c., or machinery and apparatus, or processes. It may be remarked here that a scientific principle cannot form the subject of a valid patent unless its application to @ practical and useful end and object is shown. An abstract notion, a philosophical idea, may be extremely valuable in the realm of science, but before it is allowed to form a sound basis for a patent the world must be shown how to apply it so as to gain therefrom some immediate material advantage. With regard to processes, the language of the statute of James has been strained to bring them within

the words “any manner of new manufacture,” and judges on the bench have admitted that the exposition of the Act has gone much beyond the letter. However, it is un- doubted law that a process is patentable ; and patents are accordingly obtained for processes every day.

The principal classes of patentable inventions seem to be these :—(1) new contrivances applied to new ends, (2) new contrivances applied to old ends,

(3) new combinations of old parts, whether relating to material objects or pro- cesses, (4) new methods of applying a well-known object.

With regard to a patent for the new application of a well-known object it may be remarked that there must be some display of ingenuity in making the application, otherwise the patent will be invalid on the ground that the subject-matter is destitute of novelty. For example, a machine already in use as an excavator on land cannot be separately patented as an excavator under water; nor can a machine employed in the finishing of cotton goods be afterwards patented without alteration as applied to the finishing of woollen fabrics. A small amount of inven- tion is indeed sufficient to support a patent where the utility to be derived from the result is great. A small step in advance, a slight deviation from known processes, may have been apparently brought about by the exercise of little ingenuity ; but, if the improvement be manifest, either as saving time or labour, a patent in respect of it will stand. The mere omission of a step from some com- monly practised process has been held sufficient to support a patent for a new method of manufacture ; and how often do we see what appears to be a very trifling degree of novelty attended with very advantageous consequences, sometimes resulting in the entire revolution of a manu- facture, or in a lowering of price appreciable in every pound of an article extensively used by the public ?

Whatever be the nature of the invention, it must possess the incidents of utility and novelty, else any patent obtained in respect of it will be invalid. The degree of utility need not, however, be great. As to novelty, this is the rock upon which most patents split; for, if it can be shown that other persons have used or published the invention before the date of the patent, it will fall to the ground, although the patentee was an independent inventor deriving his ideas from no one else. The difficulty of steer- ing clear of this rock will be apparent at once. Suppose Ain London patents an invention the result of his own ingenuity and patient study, and it afterwards appears that B, in some distant part of the kingdom, had been previously openly using the same thing in his workshop, A’s patent is good for nothing. Thus, in one of the cases which arose out of Heath’s carburet of manganese patent —a, patent celebrated in the law-courts—it appeared that three firms had used a process in the manufacture of steel which was substantially the same as that

forming the subject of the patent. They had used the process openly in the way of their trade previous to the date of the patent, although it had not become generally known. This prior use of the invention was held to deprive the patent of validity. It is therefore a very frequent sub- ject of inquiry, whether an invention has been previously used to such an extent as to have been publicly used in the sense attached by the courts to this phrase. The inventor himself is not allowed to use his invention, either In public or secretly, with a view to profit, before the date of the patent. Thus, if he manufactures an article by some new process, keeping the process an entire secret, but selling the produce, he cannot afterwards obtain a patent in respect of it. If he were allowed to do this he might in many cases easily obtain a monopoly in his in- vention for a much longer period than that allowed by law. The rule that an inventor's use of the invention

invalidates a subsequent patent does not, however, apply to cases where the use was only by way of experiment with a view to improve or test the invention. And it has been repeatedly decided that the previous experiments of other persons, if incomplete or abandoned before the realization of the discovery, will not have the effect of vitiating a patent. Even the prior discovery of an inven- tion will not prevent another independent discoverer from obtaining a valid patent if the earlier inventor kept the secret to himself, the law holding that he is the " true and first inventor " who first obtains a patent.

When an invention is the joint production of more per- sons than one, they must all apply for and obtain a joint patent, for a patent is rendered invalid on showing that a material part of the invention was due to some one not named therein. The mere suggestion of a workman em- ployed by an inventor to carry out his ideas will not, however, require that he should be joined, provided that the former adds nothing substantial to the invention, but merely works out in detail the principle discovered by his employer. In certain cases in which patents taken out by the celebrated Sir Richard Arkwright came to be in- quired into, it was proved that the inventions were really made by persons in Arkwright's employment. Their value being

perceived by him, he adopted them, and obtained the patents in question, but under these circumstances they were adjudged invalid.

Tf it can be shown that the invention in respect of which a patent has been obtained was previously described in a printed book in circulation in Great Britain, whether such book be in the English or a foreign language, the patent is also invalid, because a man has no right to obtain a monopoly in that which is already a part of the stock of public information; and it is not necessary to prove that the patentee was acquainted with the book, and derived his ideas from that source. The most usual prior publication fatal to a patent is a prior specification of a similar invention. But persons are allowed to obtain patents for inventions imported from abroad, if such in- ventions are new within the realm, and if they acknow- ledge, on the face of their applications, that the inventions are imported, not original. Such patents are now common.

The attributes of novelty and utility being possessed in due degree by an invention, the chief remaining difficulty with which a patent has to contend resides in the com- plete specification, the instrument by which the inventor describes the nature of the invention and the means by which it may be carried into effect. An inventor is bound, in return for the monopoly conceded to him, to instruct the public how to work the invention when the monopoly shall have expired, and to inform them in the meantime what it is they are shut out from using; and now the patent is not granted till the complete specification is filed. The patentee is bound to make by this instrument a full disclosure of his secret ; he must not keep anything back either wilfully or accidentally ; he must render everything plain and clear, showing no attempt to mislead, and leaving nothing ambiguous ; he must distinguish what is old from what is new; he must point out distinctly what it 1s that he claims as his own exclusive property, and he must take care that he claims no more than he is entitled to. Very many patents have been invalidated by a disregard of the requirements of the law, the most common fault being that the specification claims too much ; in other words, it claims something that is already public property, or another man’s patented invention. And here we are brought back to the question of novelty. If a patentee discovers that his specification claims more than he is entitled to,

he may put the matter right by filing an amendment, and excising the superfluous parts ; but he will not be allowed to extend

his claims in any degree. He may cut out anything, but he can insert nothing, except matter which is of the nature of correction or explanation.

The term for which a patent is originally granted is fourteen years, but the crown has been empowered by parliament and through the intervention of the judicial committee of the privy council, before which the pro- ceedings take place, to extend the time of a patent from its expiration for any additional time not longer than fourteen years. But an extension will only be granted on the patentee showing that the invention is meritorious, and that he has not been adequately rewarded in spite of his best efforts directed to that end. What is adequate re- ward depends on the special circumstances of each case. The crown has hitherto had a right to the free use of a patented invention, but this right has been abolished by the new Act.

Patent privileges, like most other rights, can be made the subject of sale. Partial interests can also be carved out of them by means of licences, instruments which empower other persons to exercise the invention, either universally and for the full time of the patent (when they are tantamount to an assignment of the patentee's entire rights), or for a limited time, or within a limited district. By an exclusive licence is meant one that restrains the patentee from granting other licences to any one else. By means of a licence a patentee may derive benefit from his patent without entering into trade and without running the risks of a partnership.

One of the regulations of the recent Act is that a patentee can be compelled by the Board of Trade to grant licences to persons who are able to show that the patent is not being worked in the United Kingdom, or that the reasonable requirements of the public with respect to the invention cannot be supplied, or that any person is pre- vented from working or using to the best advantage an invention of which he is possessed.

A patentee's remedy for an infringement of his rights is by civil suit, there being no criminal proceedings in such a case. In prosecuting such suit he

subjects those rights to a searching examination, for the alleged infringer is at liberty to show that the invention is not new, that the patentec is not the true and first inventor, &c., as well as to prove that the alleged infringement is not really an infringement. But it may here be remarked that a patentee is not bound down (unless he chooses so to be) to the precise mode of carrying the invention into effect described in the specification. If the principle is new, it is not to be expected that he can describe every mode of working it; he will sufficiently secure the principle by giving some illustrations of it; and no person will be per- mitted to adopt some mode of carrying the same principle into effect on the ground that such mode has not been described by the patentee. On the other hand, when the principle is not new, a patentee can only secure the par- ticular method which he has invented, and other persons may safely use other methods of effecting the same object. Instances of this occur every day; and it is well known that scores of patents have been taken out for screw- propellers, steam-hammers, water-meters, &c., each of which is limited to the particular construction described, and cannot be extended further. Again, where the inven- tion patented consists of a combination of parts, some old and some new, the whole constituting a new machine or a new process, it is not open to the world to copy the new part and reject the rest. A man is not permitted to allege that the patent is for a combination, and that, the identical combination not having been used, there has been no in- fringement. If he has borrowed the substance of the invention, it will be held that he has infringed the patent.

rPATaN ?s

A patent may be revoked by a court of law on any one taking proceedings for that purpose, and showing good ground for a revocation, such as want of novelty or utility in the invention, the fact of the patentee not being the in- ventor, insufficiency of the specification, fraud, or the like.

Patents are not now extended to the colonies, and such of the English colonies as possess a legislature are gradually acquiring patent laws for themselves (see injra).

The new Act enables the crown to make arrangements with foreign states for the mutual protection of inventions, under which a person who has

applied for protection for any invention in a foreign state will be entitled to apply for a patent in England within a limited time in priority to other applicants (see p. 358).

The patent business of the United Kingdom is transacted at the Patent Office in London under the superintendence of the comptroller, an officer appointed by the Board of Trade, under whose direction he performs his duties. At this office is kept a register of all patents issued, of assign- ments of patents, licences granted under them, &e. An illustrated journal of patent inventions is published at the same office, where printed copies of all specifications can also be obtained. The proceedings taken with a view to obtain a patent commence with an application drawn up in a special form and accompanied by a description of the invention and a declaration as to its originality. Any person, whether a British subject or not, may apply for a patent. The actual inventor must always be a party to the application, but he may join other persons with him- self, and the patent when issued will be granted to them all jointly. The fees payable to Government on patents have been considerably reduced by the new Act, and they may now be paid by convenient annual instalments.

During the ten years ending with 1882 the average annual number of patents issued was 3506. ‘There has been a large increase under the new law, the number of patents applied for in the first three months of 1884 being

5748.

Patents are frequently obtained through the intervention of persons termed patent agents, who devote themselves to this branch of business.

United States.—Under an Act passed in 1874 a patent must in all cases be applied for in the name of the original inventor, although he may contemporaneously execute an assignment of the invention, and the patent will thereupon be issued to the assignee. Every application is referred to an official examiner. The patent will be refused if any part of the invention is wanting in novelty, or if the

application is not in proper form. The applicant may,.

however, make a re-application, and if the inventor is dis- satisfied with the report of the examiner he can appeal. Patents are issued for the term of seventeen years, but expire with any earlier foreign patents for the same inven- tion. A foreign inventor may obtain a patent if his inven- tion has not been in public use or on sale in the United States for more than two years prior to his application.

Patent Laws in India and the British Colonies,

Prior to 1852 British letters patent extended to all Her Majesty's colonies, but the Patent Act of 1852 restricted the rights granted to Great Britain and Ireland, the Channel Islands, and the Isle of Man. Soon after the date of this Act the legislatures of the colonies began to pass Acts of their own for the protection of inven- tions, and at the present time most English colonies have patent laws. As a rule, the application in the colony must be made by petition accompanied with a specification and drawings of similar nature to those used in the British application ; and in most cases the application must be made by the inventor himself or by his assignee, or by some person holding his power of attorney. The patents are in all cases assignable and the deeds of assignment must be registered in the respective colonies. The patents are usually granted for a term of fourteen years, and the inventions must not have been publicly used in the colony prior to the date

of the application. Inventions may be protected in most if not all the other British eolonies by special Acts of the eolonial legis- atures.

Australian Colonies.—The colonial Aet for New South Wales is dated 14th September 1852. Applications are referred to a board consisting of two scientific men, and upon their report and the payment of £20 the governor will grant letters patent of registra- tion, which have the effect of letters patent. These letters of registra- tion are granted for the term of fourteen years. The New South Wales Act of 1852 still continues in force in Queensland. By an order in council of 6th November 1859 patents similar in terms to those granted in New South Wales can be obtained, and at the same cost. By an Act passed in 1867 inventions can be provisionally protected, but the provisional protection only appears to be useful to residents in the colony. In South Australia the law of patents is governed by the Acts of 1877 and 1881. The application is submitted to an official

examination. The patent is granted for a term of fourteen years, and is subject to taxes of £2 10s. to be paid before the end of the third year and £2 10s. before the end of the seventh year. ‘he invention must be worked in the colony within three years from the date of the grant. In Victoria power is given to the governor to issue letters patent by Act No. 240, 1865. The sum of £15 must be paid before the expiration of the third year, and £20 before the expiration of the seventh year. For Western Australia the colonial Act is dated 15th August 1872, under which bona fide holders of letters patent in any other country ean obtain letters of registration having the foree of patents and cxpiring with the original patent. The government fee is £25. The governor has also power to grant original patents, but these are seldom applied for except by residents in the colony. ‘The government fee on these is £50. The application for a patent must be made before the application is made in any other colony or country.

British Guiana.—The law of patents is governed by an ordinanee dated 12th July 1861. Patents are granted very much in the same form and on the same conditions as British letters patent. A duty of $100 is payable before the end of the seventh year. The governor has power to prolong the term for a period not exceeding seven years.

British Honduras. —The Act for amending the law for granting patents for inventions dated 10th September 1862 rules here. This Act has provisions very similar to the British Patent Law Amend- ment Act 1852. The government fee ou sealing is $30, and the further government duties payable are $50 at the end of the third year and $100 at the end of the seventh year. Prolongations of the original term of fourteen years may be obtained for an addi- tional term not cxeeeding seven years.

Canada.—The Acts in force are those of 1872, 1875, and 1883. Inventors or their assignees may obtain patents for fifteen years for all inventions not having been in public use or on sale in Canada for more than a year prior to the application. When a period of more than twelve months has elapsed sincc the date of any other patent for the same invention the application will be refused. A government duty of $20 must be paid for the first five years, $40 for the second five years, and $60 for the last five years. These duties can be paid either altogether on application or by three instalments. The

invention must be worked in Canada within two years from the date of the patent. The patent is void if after the expiration of twelve months from the grant the patentee imports into Canada the objects of the invention manufactured elsewhere.

_ Cape of Good Hope.—The Act of 1860 prescribes a system very similar to that laid down by the English Patent Act of 1852. A stamp duty of £10 is payable at the expiration of the third year and £20 at the expiration of the seventh year of the grant. The patent will expire with the expiration of any earlier patent in any other eountry for the same invention.

Ceylon.—The inveutions ordinance of 1859 governs the law of patents here. Patents are granted for a term of fourteen years from the time of filing the specification, and the governor has power to grant prolongations not exceeding fourteen years. Thc fee on fling the specification is £10.

Hong-Kong.—By the law of 8d July 1862 the governor in eouneil may grant patents for inventions which have already been patented in England to the inventor or to the owner by assignment of the British patent. Thc patent will extend over the same term as the British patent. Subjects of foreign states not having British patents cannot obtain patents in Hong-Kong.

India.—The law of patents is governed by an Act dated 17th May 1859, Where therc is no prior English patent the invention Must not have been used or published before filing the application. Where an English patent has already becn obtained, the applica- tion must be made within twelve months from the date of the English patent. The exclusive privilege is aequired by merely

ling a specification of the invention upon leave obtained from the governor-gencral for that purpose, and no patent is issued. The governor-general has power to extend the original term for another term not exceeding fourteen years. The government fees on application amount to £10; no further duties are payable.

ror Ns

Jamaica.—Chap. 30, 21 Viet. 1857, governs the law of patents here. The invention must be brought into operation in the island within two years from the date of the patent. A patent bears a stamp duty of £6 10s., and there is a reference to the attorney- general, upon which he is paid a fee of £5. The duration of the patent is limited to that of any previous foreign patent. Improve- ments on the original invention may be protected by certificates of addition. Patents may be extended for a further period of seven years beyond the original term of fourteen years.

Leeward Islands. —The law is regulated by the Aets of 1876 and 1878, the provisions being similar to those of the English Patent Act of 1852. The patent expires with the termination of any earlier patent clsewhere for the same invention. The payments amount to £28 on every application which is not opposed, and a duty of £10 is payable at the termination of the third year and £20 at the termination of the seventh year.

Mauritius.—The law is regulated by an ordinance dated 22d May 1875. The governor has power to extend patents for any period not exeeeding fourteen years beyond the original term of fourtcen years. A patent may be applied for by the executors or administrators of a deeeased inventor. Payments of £12 are re- quired to be made upon application for the patent and upon sealing.

Natal.—The provisions of the eolonial Aet of 1870 are similar to those of the English Patent Act of 1852. The fees on sealing are £1 10s., and there isa third year’s duty of £5, and a seventh year’s duty of £10. The patent expires with the termination of any British or foreign patent of earlier date. The lieutcnant-governor can grant a prolongation of the original term for a fresh term not exceeding fourteen years.

Newfoundland.—Under an Act passed in 1856 patents are granted for fourteen years, but may be extended upon application for a further period of seven years. The patent expires with the expira- tion of any previous foreign patent for the same invention. Im- provements may be protected by eertificates of addition. The invention must be worked in the eolony within two years from the date of the patent.

New Zealand.—Under the New Zealand Patent Aet of 1883 in- ventors ean obtain either letters patent or letters of registration as they think fit. The fee for letters of registration is £10, and _ for letters patent £2 10s., with a further duty of £10 at the end of five years. Letters of registration are granted as of course upon proof of the applicant being the actual owner of the foreign patent. The invention patented must be worked in the colony within two years from the date of the patent.

Tasmania.—The colonial Act for Tasmania is dated 5th November 1858. The procecdings preseribed are very similar to those in England. The government fees are £7 10s. on application, £15 at the end of the third year, and £20 at the end of the seventh year.

Patcnts may also be obtained in St Helena, the Straits Settlements, and Trinidad.

Foreign Patent Laws.

Argentine Republic.—Patents are granted under a law dated 11th October 1864, for five, ten, or fifteen years, to the inventor or to his assignec. The applications are subjected to an official examination, and the patent when granted is liable to government fees and stamp duties, which vary from about £20 to £60, according to the term of the patent. The invention must uot have been published either at home or abroad prior to the application, and must be worked in the republie within two years from the date of the issuc of the

atent.

7 Austria-Hungary.—By an imperial decree of the 15th August 1852, although separate patents are issued, they are made upon one application. The protection extends to Bosnia and Herzegovina. Where the applicant for a patent is a foreigner he must have ob- tained a patent in his own country for the same invention, and patents are only granted to the original inventor or his assignee. Inventions are considered new when at the time of the applications for patents they have not been put into operation or made public in the cmpire. The government taxes commence at the rate of 26 florins per annum for the first five years, and gradually increase until in the

fifteenth year the duty is 132 florins. If the patent is originally granted for less than fifteen years 1t may at any time be prolonged for that term. The invention must be worked in the empire within a year from the date of the patent, and the working must not be suspended for more than two years ; during its continu- ance there is no objection to the patented articles being imported from a foreign country. . ‘

Belgium.—Patents are granted to the inventor or to his assignec, or to any one holding the authority of the inventor for that purpose. The term is fixed at twenty years, except in the ease of inventions previously patented elsewhere, when the Belgium patent expires with the previous foreign patent of the greatest length. Patents are subject to an annual tax beginning at 10 franes for the first year, and inereasing annually at the rate of 10 francs. Patents of addition expiring with the original patent may be obtained. The invention must be worked in Belgium within one year from its

being worked abroad, but patented articles manufactured abroad may be introduced into Belgium.

Brazil.—By a statute passed in 1882 patents are granted alike to natives and to foreigners. In the case of a foreigner the applica- tion must be made in Brazil within seven months from the date of his foreign patent. The specification must be in the Portuguese language. Patents are granted for a term of fifteen years, subject to the payment of a duty of £1 for the first year, and increasing £1 yearly. The patent must be put into operationin Brazil within a year from the date of the grant, and the working must not be interrupted for more than a year. The Brazilian patent expires on the expiration of any earlier foreign patent for the same-invention. The foreign patentee must appoint an accredited agent to represent him in Brazil.

Chili.—Patents are granted for a term of ten years, subject toa tax of £10 to be paid on application. An extension of a patent may be obtained when the importance of the invention is con- sidered sufficient to warrant it. The invenuion must be worked in Chili within a term fixed in the patent, and the working must not be discontinued as long as the patent is valid.

Denmark.—Native inventors may obtain patents for fifteen years, but patents granted to foreigners are limited to five years.

France.—Grants of patents (brevets d’invention) are regulated in France by the law of 5th July 1844. Patents are granted to inventors or their assignees, whether natives or foreigners, and the French patent expires with any foreign patent of earlier date. Applications for French patents must be made prior to the filing of the complete specification in any foreign country. Patents are granted for a term of fifteen years upon payment of an annual duty of £4. All the duties must be paid up prior to an assignment of the patent being registered. Alterations, additions, or improve- ments may be protected by patents of addition which expire with the original grant. ‘The subject of the patent must be manufac- tured entirely in France, and cannot be imported from a foreign country without invalidating the patent. The invention must be put into execution within two years from the date of the

grant, aud the working must not then cease for any period of two con- secutive years. The patent extends to all the French colonies,

Germany.—By a law dated 25th May 1877 patents are granted for fifteen years to natives and foreigners. The invention must not have been previously described in a printed publication in any way. The patentee may obtain supplementary patents for improve- ments expiring with the original patent. A government duty of £1 10s. is paid on the issue of the patent, together with an annuity commencing at £2 10s. and increasing by £2 10s. each year for the whole term. The Government may revoke the patent if the invention has not been carried out in Germany within tliree years from the date of the patent.

Jtaly.—Patents are granted only to inventors or their assignees for terms varying from one to fifteen years. The publication of a previous foreign patent docs not invalidate the grant provided the application is made during the continuance of the foreign patent, but the Italian patent will expire with the previous foreign patent. Patents of addition are granted expiring with the original patent. Patents are liable to taxes amounting to about 50 francs for each of the first three years of the patent, and increasing gradually. The invention must be worked in Italy within two years from the date of the grant. The description of the invention may be either in the Italian or the French language.

Norway.—By laws of 15th July 1839 and 9th May 1842 patents are granted for a term not exceeding ten years to inventors only. The invention must not have been published in Norway prior to the application, which is subject to an official examination, not usually of a stringent character. A payment of 10 specie dollars must be made in respect of each application. The invention must be put in practice in the country within two years from the date of the grant.

Paraguay.—Under a law of 20th May 1845 citizens or foreigners are alike entitled to protection, and the term of the grant varies from two to ten years. Where there is a previous foreign patent for the same invention the patent is not valid for more than six months beyond the termination of the foreign patent. The inven- tion patented must be worked within two years from the date of the grant.

Portugal.—By a royal decree of 31st December 1852 inventors, whether natives or foreigners, may obtain patents for terms varying from one to fifteen years. Certificates of addition are also granted, but expire with the original patent. A patent will not be granted to an inventor for a longer term than that of his original pateut. The government taxes amount to about £1 8s. per annum, in addi- tion to which certain official fees are payable. ‘The patent becomes void if the invention is not carried into practice within two years from the date of its grant.

Russia.—The law is set forth in several imperial decrees, under which patents are granted to natives and foreigners alike for the term of three, five, or ten years, and upon payment of government duties of 90 roubles for three years, 150 roubles for five years, and 450 roubles for ten years. The patent also covers the kingdom of Poland. There is great delay in obtaining patents. A period of from one to two years usually elapses between the application and the date of the grant. The specification must be written in the Russian language. The invention must be worked in Russia within one quarter of the time for which the patent is granted. Separate patents are issued for Finland.

Spain.—The law is dated 1st August 1878. Patents are granted to foreigners as well as to natives for terms varying from five to twenty years. The application must be made prior to the publica- tion of the specification of the invention in another country. The annual taxes begin with 10 francs for the first year, and increase at the rate of 10 francesa year. The patent covers the Spanish colonies of Cuba, Porto-Rico, and the Philippine Islands. The specification must be made in the Spanish language. Certificates of addition are granted for improvements, expiring with the original patent. The invention must be put into operation within two years from the date of the grant.

Sweden.—Patents are granted to natives and foreigners for terms varying from three to fifteen years, but the patent of a foreigner expires with the expiration of the foreign patent. The invention must be put into operation within the country before the expira- tion of two years from the date of the grant.

Turkey.— Under a law dated 2d March 1880 patents are granted to natives or foreigners for five, ten, or fifteen years, subject to an annual payment of two Turkish pounds. A patent expires with the termination of any earlier foreign patent for the same invention. Certificates of alteration, addition, or improvement are granted, and expire with the termination of the original grant. The inven- tion must be worked within two years from the date of the patent, and the working must not be discontinued for two consecutive years subsequently. Patented articles manufactured abroad cannot be imported into Turkey without invalidating the patent.

In addition to the above-mentioned countries the following also have laws for the protection of inventions under which foreigners may obtain patents : — United States of Colombia, Guatemala, Grand Duchy of Luxemburg, Mexico, Nicaragua, and San Salvador.

international Patents.

The Governments of Belgium, Brazil, France, Guatemala, Holland, Italy, Portugal, San Salvador, Servia, Spain, and Switzerland have recently signed, and Great Britain is about to sign, an international convention relating to patents, the salient points of which are :— (1) that the subjects of each of the above states shall in all the other states, as regards patents, enjoy the advantages that their respective laws grant to their own subjects ; (2) that any person who has duly registered an application for a patent in any one of the states shall enjoy a right of priority protecting the first patentee against any acts accomplished in the interval for a term of six months—a month longer being allowed for countries beyond the sea; (3) that the introduction by the patentee into the country where the patent has been granted of objects manufactured in any of the other states shall not entail forfeiture ; but the patentee remains bound to work his patent in conformity with the laws of the country into which he introduces the patented objects; (4) that the states agree to grant temporary protection to patentable inventions for articles appearing at officially recognized inter- national exhibitions.

It is understood that Holland and Switzerland, where there are at present no patent laws, will shortly adopt measures in pursuance of the terms of the above convention whereby inventions may be protected. 1 (J. H. J.)

PATERCULUS, Marcus? VELLEIUs, a Roman historian, was probably born about 19 B.c. THis father, a cavalry officer, belonged to a good Capuan family, several members of which had risen to some military or magisterial distine- tion. The historian himself served as military tribune m Thrace, Macedonia, Greece, and the East, and in 2 A.D. was present at the interview on the Euphrates between C. Ceesar (grandson of Augustus) and the Parthian king. Afterwards as prefect of cavalry and legatus he served for eight years (from 4 a.D. onward) in Germany and Pannonia under Tiberius, in whose triumph (12 a.D.) he and his brother bore a conspicuous part. For his services

1 For further information on the subject the reader is referred to Johnson's Patentee's Manual, fifth edition, 1884.

2 Marcus is the name given by Priscian; but Renier identifies the historian with the "C. Velleio Paterculo" of a North-African mile- stone (Acad. des Inser., Dec. 1875; Rev. Archéol., 1875), the date of which he places (on inconclusive grounds) in 36 a.D.

|

he was rewarded with the questorship in 7, and, along with his brother, with the prztorship in 15. He was still alive in 30, for his history contains many references to the consulship of M. Vinicius in that year. The date and manner of his death are unknown. It has been con- jectured that he was put to death in 31 as a friend of Sejanus, whose praises he celebrates.

He wrote a compendium of Roman history in two books dedicated to M. Vinicius, from the dispersion of the Greeks after the siege of Troy down to the death of Livia in 29 AD. 'The first book brings the history down to the destruction of Carthage, 146 B.c.; portions of it are want- ing, including the beginning. The later history, especially the period from the death of Cesar, 44 B.c., to the death of Augustus, 14 a.D., is treated in much greater detail. Brief notices are given of Greek and Roman literature, put, strange to say, no mention is made of Plautus, Horace, and Propertius. The author is a vain and shallow courtier ; "full of wise saws," he is nevertheless entirely destitute of true historical insight. His knowledge is superficial, his blunders numerous, his chronology inconsistent. He labours at portrait-painting, but

his portraits are daubs. On Cesar, Augustus, and above all on his patron Tiberius, he lavishes praise or flattery. The repetitions, redund- ancies, and slovenliness of expression which disfigure the work may be partly due to the haste with which (as the author frequently reminds us) it was written. Some blemishes of style, particularly the clumsy and involved structure of his sentences, may perhaps be ascribed to insufficient literary training. The inflated rhetoric, the straining after effect by means of hyperbole, antithesis, and epigram, mark the degenerate taste of the Silver Age, of which Paterculus is the earliest example. He purposed to write a fuller history of the later period, which should include the civil war between Cesar and Pompey and the wars of Tiberius ; but there is no evidence that he carried out this intention.

Paterculus was little known in antiquity. He seems to have been read by Lucan and imitated by Sulpicius Severus, but he is mentioned only by the scholiast on Lucan, and once by Priscian. Ail we know of his life is derived from his own statements. The text of his work, preserved in a single badly-written MS. (now lost), is very corrupt, and its restoration has tasked the ingenuity of Many learned men. The editio princeps appeared at Basel in 1520 ; subsequent editors have been J. Lipsius, Leyden, 1591 ; J. Gruter, Frankfort, 1607 ; N. Heinsius, Amsterdam, 1678; P. Burmann, Leyden (2d ed.), 1744; D. Ruhnken, Leyden, 1779; J. C. Orelli, Leipsic, 1835; F. Kritz, Leipsic, 1840 and 1848; F. Haase, Leipsic (2d ed.) 1858; C. Halm, Leipsic, 1876.

Besides the literary histories of Bernhardy and Teuffel, see the prolegomena to Kritz’s edition; H. Sauppe, in Schweiz. Museum, i. p. 183; A. Pernice, De Vellet fide historica, Leipsic, 1862; contributions to the criticism of the text by J.C. M. Laurent, Loci Velleiani, Altona, 1836; J. Jeep, Emendationes Vellei- ang, Wolfenbiittel, 1889; N. Madvig, Adversaria, ii. p. 297 sg.; English trans- lations by Newcoinb, Paterson, and Watson; German by Jacobs, Walther, and Eyssenhardt; French by Després and Gréard ; Italian by Manzi, Boccanera, and Spiridione Petrettini.

PATERINES. See PaTarEnes.

PATERNO, a town of Sicily, in the province of Catania, stands at the south-west foot of Mount A®tna, 10 miles north-west of Catania near the railway

from that city to Leonforte. It is a long straggling place with a medieval castle (1073) and several churches and suppressed convents. The surrounding country is fertile, producing corn, oil, wine, flax, hemp, and timber, in which articles an active trade is carried on. Paternd gives the title of “prince” to a Sicilian family. In the neighbourhood the remains of ancient baths, tombs, and aqueduct, and a bridge across the Simcto have been discovered. The town is supposed F ag the site of the ancient Hybla Major. Population

PATERSON, the “Lyons of America,” a city of the Juited States, capital of Passaic county, New Jersey, is situated on the Passaic river and the Morris Canal, 17 miles north-west of New York by the Erie and the Dela-

ware, Lackawanna, and Western Railroads. As the river, which forms the boundary of the city for a distance of 9 miles, has at one place a sheer fall of 50 feet, it is an unfailing source of abundant water-power ; and Paterson ranks second among the manufacturing cities of the State. Silk, iron, and cotton are the great industrial staples ; silk-dyeing is also practised. One of the chief industries is the making of locomotives. Further, fire-engines, “Whitney” sewing-machines, iron bridges, brass wares, flax, hemp, and jute goods, calico-prints, paper, and chemi- cals are all manufactured. The population was 11,334 in 1850, 19,586 in 1860, 33,579 in 1870, and 51,031 in 1880. Founded in 1792 by a cotton company under the patronage of Alexander Hamilton and named after Gover- nor William Paterson, who signed its town charter, Paterson obtained the rank of a city in 1851.

PATERSON, Witi1am (1658-1719), founder of the Bank of England, projector of the Darien scheme, and a voluminous writer on subjects connected with finance, was born in April 1658 at the farmhouse of Skipmyre, parish of Tinwald, Dumfriesshire. His parents occupied the farm there, and with them he resided till he was about seven- teen.

At that time the people of the northern kingdom were engaged in considering how they might share in the bene-

fits of that trade which was so rapidly enriching their southern neighbours. Paterson embraced the opportunity thus offered. He removed to Edinburgh, unfolded his Darien scheme, and soon had the whole nation in favour of it. He, it is supposed, drew up the Act of 1695 which formed the “Company of Scotland trading to Africa and the Indies.” This company, he arranged, should establish a settlement on the isthmus of Darien, and “thus hold the key of the commerce of the world.” There was to be free trade, tle ships of all nations were to find shelter in this harbour not yet erected, differences of race or religion were to be made nothing of ; but a small tribute was to be paid to the company, and this and other advantages would so act that, at one supreme stroke, Scotland was to be changed from one of the poorest to one of tlie richest of nations.

On the 26th of July 1698 the first ships of the expedi- tion set sail “amidst the tears and prayers and praises of relatives and friends and countrymen.” Some financial transactions in which Paterson was concerned, and in which, though he had acted with perfect honesty, the com- pany had lost, prevented his nomination to a post of im- portance. He accompanied the expedition as a private individual, and was obliged to look idly on whilst what his enemies called his “‘ golden dream ” faded away indeed like the “ baseless fabric of a vision” before his eyes. His wife died, and he was seized with a dangerous illness, ‘‘of which, as I afterwards found,” he says, “‘ trouble of mind was not the least cause thereof.” One who knew him in this evil time tells us “he hath been so mightily concerned in this sad disaster, so that he looks now more like a skeleton than aman.” Still weak and helpless, and yet protesting to the last against the abandonment of Darien, he was carried on board ship, and, after a stormy and terrible voyage, he and the remnant of the ill-fated band reached home in December 1699.

In his native air Paterson soon recovered some of his strength, and immediately his fertile and eager mind was at work on new schemes. First he did all he could to pre- vent the Darien scheme already engaged in from being finally abandoned, then he prepared an elaborate plan for developing Scottish resources by means of a council of trade, and then he tried to

induce King William to enter on a new Darien expedition. About the beginning of the century he removed to London, and here by confer- ences with statesmen, by writing, and by personal persua- sion helped on the Union, of which his far-reaching mind enabled him, perhaps better than any other man then living, to see the advantages. At the Union one of the last acts of the Scottish parliament was to recommend him to the consideration of Her Majesty Queen Anne for all he had done and suffered. The united parliament, to which he was returned as a member for the Dumfries burghs, though he never took his seat, decided that his claim should be attended to, but it was not till 1715 that an indemnity of £18,241 was ordered to be paid him. Even then he found considerable difficulty in obtaining his due. His last years were spent in Queen Square, Westminster, but he removed from his house, though probably to some other part of London, shortly before his death, which happened 22d January 1719.

As many as twenty-two works, all of them anonymous, are attri- buted to Paterson. These are classified by Bannister under six heads, as dealing with (1) finance, (2) legislative union, (3) colonial enterprise, (4) trade, (5) administration, (6) various social and political questions. Of these the following deserve special notice. (1) Proposals and reasons for constituting a Counetl of Trade

(Edinburgh, 1701).1 This was a plan to develop the resources of his country.

1 This work was attributed to John Law (see Law, vol. xiv. p. 367, note), who certainly borrowed some of his ideas from it. To Law’s

“system ” Paterson was strongly opposed, and it was ehiefly due to his influence that it made no way in Scotland.

Pea Tekst. N

members, was to be appointed. It was to have a revenue collected from a duty on sales, lawsuits, successions, &. With these funds the couneil was to set the Darien seheme going again, to build workhouses, to employ, relieve, and maintain the poor, and to encour- age manufactures and fisheries. It was to give loans without interest to companies and shippers, it was to remove

monopolies it was to construct all sorts of vast public works. Encouragement was to be given to foreign Protestants and Jews to settle in the kingdom, gold and silver were to be coined free of charge, and money was to be kept up to its nominal standard. All export duties were to be abolished and import regulated on a new plan. By means like these Paterson believed the disasters lately under- gone would be more than retricved. (2) A proposal to plant a colony im Darien to protect the Indians against Spain, and to open the trade of South America to all nations (1701). ‘This was a proposal to King William to establish the Darien seheme on a new and broader basis. It points out in detail the advantages to be gained; free trade would be advanced over all the world, and Great Britain would derive great profits. (3) Wednesday Club dialogues upon the Union (London, 1706). These were imaginary conveisations in a club in the city of London about the union with Scotland. Paterson’s real opinions were put into the mouth of a speaker called May. The result of the diseussion is that till the Darien busi- ness all Scots were for the Union, and that they were so still if reasonable terms were offered. Such terms ought to include an incorporating union with equal taxes, freedom of trade, and a proportionate representation in parliament. A union with Ireland ‘Cas likewise with other dominions the queen either hath or shall have” is proposed. (4) Along with this another discussion of the same imaginary body, dn inguiry into the state of the Union of Great Britain and the trade thereof (1717), may be taken. This was a consideration of the consequences of the Union, which, now ‘*that its honeymoon was past,” was not giving satisfaction in some quarters, and also a discussion as to the best means of paying off the national debt,—a subject which occupied a great deal of Pater- son’s attention during the later years of his life.

Paterson’s plans were vast and magnificent, but it is a great mistake to suppose that he was a mere dreamer. Every one of his designs was worked out into minute detail,? and every one was pos- sible and praetieal. The Bank of England was a stupendous success. The Darien expedition failed from hostile attaeks and bad arrange- ments. But the original design was that the English and Dutch should be partakers in it, and, if this had occurred, and the arrange- ments, against many of which Paterson in letter after letter in vain protested, had becn different, Darien might have been to Britain another India, whose history was shadowed by the memory of no

wrong.’ Paterson was a zealous almost a fanatic free-trader long before Adam Smith was born, and his remarks on finance and his argument against an inconvertible paper-eurrency, though then novel, now hold the place of economic axioms. In his description of the ‘‘merchants in an extended sense” Paterson has drawn his own eharacter for us. They are those ‘‘ whose education, genius,

general scope of knowledge of the laws, governments, polity, and _

management of the several countries of the world allow them sufii- cient room and opportunity not only to understand trade as ab- stractly taken but in its greatest extent, and who accordingly are zealous promoters of free and open trade, and consequently of liberty of conscience, general naturalization, unions, and annexions.”

Paterson’s works are well written, and the form as well as the matter are excellent. As already noticed, they are all anonymous, and they are quite impersonal, for few men who have written so much ever said so little about themselves. There is no reference to the scurrilous attacks made on him. They are the true products of a noble and disinterested as well as vigorous mind. Paterson was not rewarded for his labours. The Bank of England wasa great success, but he lost rather than gained by it. In the Darien scheme he was ruined, and this ruin he never quite retrieved. The credit of his other schemes has been usually ascribed to other and inferior men. There is thus singular fitness in the motto “‘sic vos non vobis” inscribed under the only portrait of him that we possess.

See Life of W. Paterson, by 8. Bannister (Edinburgh, 1858); Paterson’s Works, 3 vols., by S. Bannister (London, 1859); The Birthplace and Parentage of W. Paterson, by W. Pagan (Hdinburgh, 1865). The brilliant account in the fifth volume of Macaulay’s History is incorrect and misleading. That in Burton’s Hist. of Scotland (vol. viii. ch. 84) is much truer. A list of a number of fugitive writings on Paterson will be found in Poole’s Mag. Index. F. WA.)

2 The books of the Darien company were kept after a new and very much improved plan, which it is believed was an invention of Paterson’s (Burton’s Hist. Seot., vol. viii. p. 36, note).

3 The revival of the Darien scheme in our own day is a signal proof of Paterson's foresight. Of a canal he says: ''From Venta Crucis to Panama upon the South Sea there is by land about eight short French leagues, six whereof is so level that a canal might easily be cut through, and the other two leagues are not so very high and im- practicable ground, but that a eut might likewise be made were it in these places of the world, but considering the present circumstances of things in those it would not be so easy' (Works, Bannister's ed., vol. i. p. 140).

ATHOLOGY (za6os, Adyos, the doctrine of disease or

(lit.) of that which is suffered) holds a peculiar place among the natural sciences. Although it is laid down, in the opening sentences of the Hippocratic treatise De prisca medicina, that the medical art, on which all men are dependent, should not be made subject to the influence of any hypothesis (such as that of the four cardinal qualities, hot, cold, moist, and dry), that the care and cure of the sick should not be subordinated to pathological me theory, but should be guided by experience ; yet the prac-

c- titioners of medicine have at no time been able to dispense i} with theory, not even those avowed followers of the Hippo- eratic tradition who, while they professed a kind of quiet- ism amidst the rise and fall of systems, have none the less been profoundly influenced by theory at every step of their practice. The position of Cullen is the only rational one: "You will not find it possible to separate practice from theory altogether; and, therefore, if you have a mind to begin with theory, I have no objection… . To render it safe, it is necessary to cultivate theory to its Jull extent."

§ 1.—ProGress AND SCOPE.

The progress of pathology hitherto has been exactly parallel with the progress of philosophy itself, system suc- ceeding system in genetic order. No other department of biological science has shown itself so little able to shake off the philosophical character, or to run in the career of positivism or pure phenomenalism. This unique position of pathology among the natural sciences is doubtless owing to the fact that it is a theory of practice, a body of truth and guess-work existing for the benefit of a working pro- fession which is daily brought face to face with emer- gencies and is constantly

reminded of the need of a reasoned tule of conduct. It is idle to attribute the philosophizing _ habit in medicine, or the habit of system-making, to an | unscientific method in past times. The extremely various _ points of view from which the problems of diseased life are approached in the very latest and most authoritative writings are an evidence that the difficulty is really in- herent in the subject-matter.

The positive progress of the biological sciences does

holding the balance fair between that which is “exopathic” in disease and that which is “ endopathic” may be read in Virchow’s article, “ Krankheitswesen und Krankheits- ursachen,” written in reply to objections that the cellular pathology was inadequate. ‘What I wished to treat of in the Cellular Pathology,” he says, “was the behaviour of the elements of the living body in the usual kinds of illness, or, to put it more briefly, the history of the element- ary processes of disease. Upon that basis, it seemed to mé, the doctrine of the nature of disease should be built. The respective causes I adverted to only now and then ; thus I spoke of poisons, and even fungi had a place in the cellular pathology, although a very modest one. If the Cellular Pathology had ever pretended to be a general pathology it would have contained also the whole of etiology.” Thus far Professor Virchow writing in 1880. If we now turn toa text-book of the same date, which does bear the title of General Pathology, that of Professor Cohnheim, we find pathology defined as “an explanatory science which seeks (1) to discover the causes of disease, and (2) to ascertain the esoteric connexion subsisting among disease-manifestations.” It is only (2) that forms the subject of Professor Cohnheim’s two volumes; etiology, he remarks, is absolutely without limits. It “comes into relation with” cosmical physics, meteorology, geology, sociology, chemistry, botany, and zoology; from these sciences it gets its subject-matter. In the general patho- logy of Cohnheim, accordingly, etiology is omitted ; and with it are omitted many of the problems underlying the philosophical systems of the past, which have “only an historical interest,” as well as much of the natural history of disease. General pathology, he says, knows no other direction aud no other

order than physiology, “and accordingly we shall take up successively, and in the same order as physiology would take them, the pathology of the circulation, digestion, respiration, tissue-nutrition, and the like” (the pathology of the nervous system is not included in the two volumes). Without adducing other instances of eclecticism in the contents of modern patlo- logical text-books, it will be convenient to give a brief notice of the latest attempt at a philosophical scheme of diseases,—the Hlemente der Pathologie of Rindfleisch, 1883.

not essentially depend on the philosophical conception of life as action and reaction; but the notion of action and reaction comes to the front in every page of a patho-

There are certain groups of symptoms, says Rindfleisch, Rind. which recur with the uniformity of a type in the most — various diseases, depending as they do upon one constant **“°™”™**

logical treatise, and at every step of practice. In con- sidering the forms of diseased life, if not in the study of living things themselves, we are constantly driven back to that ultimate analysis. The influences from without, which make up «etiology or the doctrine of causes of disease, assume a position in medicine the urgency or immediate interest of which far exceeds that of the bio- logical problem, “the correspondence between life and , |” Mts circumstances.” The standing difficulty in pathology lod has been its relation to etiology, or the relation of the as mori to the ayens morbi. One of the most singular Ways of meeting the difficulty is that of Paracelsus, who boldly perpetrated the paradox: “ Hnxs ist ein Ursprung, Welches Gewalt hat, den Leib zu-regiren.” The five classes of entia of Paracelsus are a composite catalogue, of which (1), (2), and (5) stand for influences from without, and _ *) and (4) for spontaneities, dispositions, or liabilities within. From time to time the centre of interest has been shifted to within the body, as in the “animism” of Stahl, in the “vitalism” of the school of Montpellier (end of 18th century), and in the “cellular pathology” of es A discussion of the inherent difficulty of

Rel re

factor,—the human body and its structural and functional tendencies. ‘The larger number of maladies do not arise autochthonously or ‘under a whole skin,” they are gener- ated by certain morbific causes; and it is the variety of causes that corresponds to the variety of disease-species, or to those ever-changing sequences and coexistences of symptoms in which the experienced eye of the practitioner learns to distinguish one disease from another. The mor- bific cause is an Invasion upon the normal course of our life, usually a strong and forcible interference with the physical and chemical constitution of a particular part of the body. The disease as a whole stands for the effects of this interference, and these effects flow in part from the nature of the morbific cause and in part from the nature of the body which suffers. That which is uniform in these effects flows from the nature of the sick body ; that which is various flows from the variety of morbific causes. It is above all the seat of the disease, its duration, the sequence and combinations of the type-groups of symptoms which are determined by the morbific cause. Only this vary- ing element can be used to distinguish one disease from ; another. Therefore there is only one truly natural prin-

Simon’s view.

Exo- pathic,

dominant

view,

ciple of subdividing diseases and only one point of view in special pathology from which the construction of a natural system may be approached,—namely, the etiolo- gical principle of classification and the xtiological system. In each group of diseases, and in each individual disease, the causation has to be inquired into as closely as possible and described after the natural-history manner; we have to ask how and where the cause acts upon the organism, and finally to show how, from this action

and from the re- action of the organism towards the same, we may explain those special features of disease and that special morbid process which are peculiar to each group of maladies or to each malady individually. In a word, the species morbe are made by the morbific causes ; all that separates one dis- ease from another is contained in the cause; only the causal differences, and no other, furnish those units of disease-life which can be brought under genera and species.

If we now inquire into the categories of causation, according to Rindfleisch, we find that they are five in number, as were the categories of Paracelsus. They are (1) injury from without, (2) parasitism, (3) deficient rudi- ments and defective growth, (4) over-exertion, and (5) pre- mature involution or obsolescence. It is impossible not to discover heterogeneous elements in this enumeration ; it is a composite catalogue like that of Paracelsus, and we shall find it hard to say in the case of (3) and (5) whether we are dealing with the ens morbz or with the agens morbi.

A statement of the definition and scope of pathology simi- lar to that of Rindfleisch had been given by John Simon in his Lectures on General Pathology. Diseases were for the most part the normal phenomena of life under abnormal circumstances, ‘‘When you know the whole case you are obliged to admit that, according to the normal constitution of the body, the symptoms in question ought to have followed the operation of those several causes.” The doc- trine of disease, accordingly, is mostly an ‘“‘exopathic” one, although a small residue of it may be “autopathic.” It is impossible, says Simon, absolutely to exclude autopathic diseased states; there may be some such, mostly develop- mental, which “are actual caprices and spontaneities of life, without any exterior causation whatsoever.”

The exopathic point of view may be said to be the dominant one at present; more particularly, it is from the etiological side that the enormous aggregate of con- tagious and infective sickness is mostly studied. Thus in the nosology of Rindfleisch the whole of the specific fevers and infections (including even climatic fevers) are placed (tentatively) under the head of “ Parasitism,” the parasites being minute living organisms having their independent place in the scale of being. The numerous researches of the

parasitic school may be regarded as the most formal attempt as yet made to separate the study of the agens morbt from that of the ens morbi.!

§ 2.—INTRODUCTION.

The plan of this article will be to take diseases as they occur in the concrete, and to apply an analytical method to them. In a given disease, or in an individual case of the same, the object would be to find the point of divergence from the beaten path of health, or, failing that, to seek out the nearest analogies in the physiological life for the unaccustomed and even grotesque things of disease. The effects of disease in man's body may be likened, in a too pleasing figure, to the effects of a magician's wand ; there is

: Literature. —Hiaser, Lehrbuch der Geschichte der Medicin und der epidemischen Krankheiten, 3d ed., 8 vols., Jena, 1875-82 ; Virchow,

Krankheitswesen und Krankheitsursachen," in Virchow's Archiv, vol. Ixxix., 1880; Cohnheim, Vorlesungen 'ber allgemeine Patho- logie, 2 vols., Berlin, 1877-80; Rindfleisch, Die Elemente der Patho-

logie, ein natiirlicher Grundriss der wisscnschaftlichen Medicin, Leipsic, 1883 ; Simon, Lectures on General Pathology, London, 1850.

PATHOL OG ¥

'nothing of him but is changed into something rich and strange." This fascinating region of science is well outlined by Buckle in his remarks on the genius of Hunter :—

''In nature, nothing is really irregular or disorderly ; if we are apt to fancy that the chain is broken, it is only because we cannot see every link in it… . Being satisfied that everything which happens in the material world is so connected and bound up with its antecedents as to be the inevitable result of what had pre. viously occurred, Hunter looked with a true philosophical eye at the strangest and most capricious shapes. To him they were neither strange nor capricious. They were deviations from the natural course ; but it

was a fundamental tenet of his philosophy that nature, even in the midst of her deviations, still retains her regularity.”

Hunter’s own words are: “Nature is always uniform in her operations, and, when she deviates, is still regular in her deviations. ... It certainly may be laid down as one of the principles or laws of nature to deviate under certain circumstances.” ‘The interest of this science, says Buckle, “‘depends simply on the fact that, when it is com- pleted, it will explain the aberrations of the whole organic world.” The same science of deviations was provided for by Bacon in his classification of the sciences ; and, after him, by D’Alembert, under the head of “ Prodigies, or deviations from the usual course of nature,” in his classifi- cation for the E’ncyclopédie.

The science of deviations begins, in the writings of Hunter and of Paget, with the erratic forms of crystals, and with the indwelling power of crystals to repair injuries on the lines of their growth if they be placed in the pro- per mother-liquor. In the hands of each of these two pathologists this science next proceeds to elemental aber- rations in the life of plants, where there is neither heart nor nervous system to complicate matters; and, so advanc- ing from the simpler to the more complex, we should have a science of the abnormal coextensive with life itself. Without attempting to treat of pathology in that evolu- tional order, which proceeds from elemental pathology upwards, we may still adopt, for the narrower subject of human pathology, a somewhat analogous order, that is to say, a method based upon the facts of embryonic develop- ment. Confining our attention, then, to the processes of disease within the human body, and seeking out from among these the broadest of the facts, we shall find evi- dence, as we proceed, that the life of the body retains vividly the memories of its past. Nothing marks so generally the disease-incidents of life as crudity or re- crudescence in the activities of cells, tissues, organs, and mechanisms. In other words, we shall find much in pathology to show that, when the organism goes wrong, it retreats to broader ground, or reverts to modes of life which it had come through. But, even in the normal functional and structural processes of the mature body, we find occasional evidences of the same reversion to embryo- nic modes of life. These are practically limited, in health, to the reproductive system, or to that part of life which goes to the maintenance of the species. Here we find pertodicity still in full force, the

same periodicity, prim- arily following the seasons, which underlies the life of vlants and of most animals. The greatest example in the human body is the building up anew, from time to time, of an entire organ, the placenta, for the intra-uterine nourish-

ment of the child; in this periodical formation we have a \

reversion, in the midst of mature life, to vessel-making and blood-making such as the body goes through otherwise only

during its development. The provision for the nourish- |

ment of the child after it is born is a somewhat modi- fied instance of the same kind. ‘The full structure and

function of the breast also develop periodically (although |

the framework is permanent), and each of these period: ical developments is a repetition of the incidents in the

original embryonic development of structure and function. —

:

Parinie.L og Y

It is when we come to the several tissues that we meet with the most striking reminders of persisting de- yelopmental characters, the most universal fact of the kind being the indwelling embryonic character of the common binding tissue. In that tissue, indeed, we have a constant reminder that in the midst of the very highest or most perfected modes of cellular life we are but a step removed from the most rudimentary. Thus in the brain and in the retina the elaborate nervous mechanism is supported on a framework of connective tissue; there is a morbid con- dition of these organs, called glioma, in which the con- nective tissue, or neuroglia, absolutely usurps the place of the nervous mechanism of which it is ordinarily the mechan- ical support; and this it may so completely do, as in disease of the pons Varolii, that even the outward form and mark- ings of the part are not interfered

with. An equally striking instance of a return to embryonic characters and predominance may sometimes be observed in the primi-

healed, and now a fifth head was formed, quite perfect ; and after it, as perfectly, a sixth and a seventh head. All these were produced in fifteen months.” This spontaneity resides in every living thing, and its efforts are directed by the memory of what the species had come through in reaching its place in the scale of organization ; it is able, indeed, to make perfect reparation for injuries or losses only where the cells are little differentiated into tissues, or where the tissues are little specialized for diverse func- tions. In all animals, and most notably in the higher, this spontaneity is most effective for repair in the periods of development and growth. With reference to the degree of reparative power possessed, Paget formulates the rule as follows: “The amount of reparative power is in an inverse ratio to that of the development, or change of structure and mode of life, through which the animal has

passed in its attainment of perfection, or on its way thitherward.”

tive nuclei of muscle; the muscle-fibres will be found to have surrendered their high function, to have retraced the steps of their development, and to have sunk their identity

Healing by Granulations.—It will now be convenient to advance Granu- in medias res, and to give some account of the process of repair in lation- man, where there is a breach of continuity in the course of the repair.

in a rudimentary form of cell-life.

Thus the body nowhere loses altogether the memory of the past, even when the periods of development and growth are, strictly speaking, ended. Among the normal processes of mature life there are such as amount to a recrudescence of structure and function ; and an analogous recrudescence in the tissues is one of the most fundamental facts in the processes of disease. There are several advan- tages in proceeding in an exposition of pathological prin- ciples from this evolutional or developmental basis. It

enables us to take up, in an order not unsuited to their importance, the sections relating to repair, to new growth of tumours, to errors of growth, such as rickets, to errors of blood-making, and the like. At the outset comes the process of repair, for which Paget has formulated the embryological principle as follows: “The powers for development from the embryo are identical with those exercised for the restoration from injuries ; in other words, the powers are the same by which perfection is first achieved, and by which, when lost, it is recovered.”

§ 3.—TueE Process oF REPAIR.

The spontaneity of certain polyps under injury is a good example of the indwelling power of all the cells and tissues to return to the established order, to the order and harmony which had been slowly acquired, and of which the memory is vividly retained. Trembley cut a hydra longitudinally, and “in an hour or less,” says Paget, “each half had rolled itself and seamed up its cut edges So as to be a perfect hydra. He split them into four; he quartered them; he cut them into as many pieces as he could; and nearly every piece became a perfect hydra. He slit one into seven pieces, leaving them all connected by the tail, and the hydra became seven-headed, and he saw all the heads eating at the same time. He cut off the seven heads and, hydra-like, they sprang forth again.” The recovery of perfection may be more gradual. Thus, Sir J. G. Dalyell (as quoted by the same writer) cut a specimen of Hydra tuba in halves; each half regained the perfect form, but only very slowly, and, as it were, by a gradual improvement of parts that were at first ill formed. In Tubularia indivisa, after the natural fall of its head, the stem was slit for a short distance down; an imperfect head was first produced, at right angles to the stem, from One portion of the cleft; “after its fall another and more nearly perfect one was regenerated, and, as it grew, im- proved yet more. A third appeared, and then a fourth, which was yet more nearly perfect, though the stem was thick and the tentacula imperfect. The cleft was almost

blood-carrying and lymph-carrying vessels, of the nerves, sinews, binding tissue, bone, fat, and skin. What is the effort that they each and all make to adapt themselves to the circumstances, in the case, let us say, of a stump after amputation? (The repair be- tween the two ends of a broken bone will

be discussed separately.) Disregarding the cases where the inost perfect coaptation of parts issecured by the surgeon, and selecting the extreme case where the wound is ‘‘left to granulate,” the following is the order of events. The divided vessels being scaled up either by ligature or by clots of blood (which are in the end absorbed), there oozes from the raw surface a blood-tinged serous-looking fluid. Becoming paler by degrees, it sets on the surface as a greyish-white film or glazing, especially on the exposed surface of muscle. The film of surface- glazing will be found to contain numerous corpuscles embedded in it resembling the colourless corpuscles of the blood. They have probably the same formative or reparative value as the granulation- cells proper, but it will appear from the facts about to be given that they are practically superseded by the latter in all cases where a wound is ‘‘left to granulate.” After an interval of two or three days of apparent rest reddish points are scen on the edges of skin, on the muscular substance, and on the marrow of the bone; these are the beginnings of the granulation-tissue, which in the end covers the whole surface and grows until it fills up the gap somewhat beyond the level of the edges of skin. When the growth of granu- lations projects considerably beyond the skin it is known as ‘proud flesh.” Usually the surface begins to skin over when the defect of substance has been sufficiently made good, the new skin showing as a delicate bluish border or frill to the old skin. This frill becomes broader and broader until the growing points meet in the centre, and the continuity of the skin is restored. Meanwhile the granulation ~~tissue beneath has been changing into more charac~~ teristic forms of mature tissue, although the status quo antea 1s never quite restored. ; ; . Notwithstanding the regularity of this process, and its daily occurrence in surgical practice, there is an almost incredible amount of conflicting opinion as to its details, —radical differences as to the source or sources of the reparative material, and as to the mode of development of the new blood-vessels and of the new skin ; and these differences of opinion must be the measure of the difficulty of analysis where the interference takes place in the highly coi- plex and subtly integrated life of man. Direct observation of the reparative process does not of itself suffice to discover the law of it ; it is necessary to seek elucidation from the nearest analogies, both among the regular processes of life and growth and among thie deviations therefrom. Among the former there is in particular one rich source of analogous detail to be found in the periodical new formation on the surface of the uterus for the purposes of the

embryo—in the placenta; among the latter are certain kinds of tumours and cysts. Hunter sought for a parallel to the new vessels of granulation-tissue in the first formation of vessels in the embryo ; but these arise in the continuity of development, and not as a somewhat abrupt incident in the mature life. On the other hand, the formative process of the placenta is an example—and a unique example—of an extensive new growth of vascular tissue occurring periodically in the adult, and_as somewhat of an interruption on the ordinary course of life. It matters little for this parallelism whether we accept the extreme position of Ercolani, that a total destruction of the uterine mucosa precedes the placental new growth, or whether we adopt the more likely view that the new formation takes place under an intact surface. In either case we have to do with a remarkable spontaneity of the body, a spontaneity which

reveals the indwelling power of the tissues, and especially the vessel-making powcr. \ Analogy of Placental new Formations.—The first adaptations for

develop- the placenta are not in the pre-existing vessels, but in the pre-

ments.

Tendon- granula- tions.

existing tissues around. The elon- gated and almost fibre-like cells @ . become more plump, they join to | form cylinders of nucleated proto-plasm, the adjoining cylinders open out to form meshes between them, and all this takes place in | the intervals between the peaile | and their capillaries (fig. 1). The cells of the tissue return to that | y nit

embryonic state which preceded the formation of blood – vessels, supplying their own juices, as it were, and opening out so as to Ore

form plasmatic canals in their Fre. 1.—a, uterine tissue at early stage midst. Inthe placental rudiment of decidua; 8, ¢, the same at later it isa mucus-likealbuminous fluid St@ges.

that they mostly yield, but there is some evidence that they also yield blood-corpuscles.

at a later stage it is the perivascular cells that keep up this acti- vityfig. 2). The phase of developmentin which \ the cells supply their \ own juices, retaining them in meshes of the tissue, is succeeded by a new formation of ves- sels, a more periman- ent provision. Certain tracts of cells are told Fic. 2.—From deeper part of placenta (guinea-pig), aft ie tov Che walle ok poli oi cell-growth in and around the blood-vessels, the chan-

nel of the vessel being the space between two such adjoining tracts (fig. 3). These selected cylinders of cells become the new and enlarged system of blood-vessels, adequate to the requirements of the part. In this placental process the original capillaries play a

EN

Fia. 8.—New formation of vessels in placenta (guinea-pig).

very subordinate part; the thin cell-plates that form their walls are far outrun in the hyperplastic race by the cells of the tissues around, and it is the latter which furnish the materials for the new vessels. That which distinguishes the placental new formation is the enormous thickness of the walls of the new vessels and their terminal capillary loops. It remains to consider whether this pla- cental new formation of vascular tissue—the only instance of the kind in the ordinary course of adult life—offers any help to the understanding of granulation-tissue.

Tendon in a Granulating Stump.—It is at once evident that the tissues of a stump after amputation have a very unequal value for formative purposes, and probably all of them a lower value than the uterine tissue, which is at no time far removed from embryonic characters. This inequality is seen in the order in which granula- tions appear—first on the vascular layer of the skin, on the ends of muscle, and on the marrow of bone, and last on the

ends of tendon. The attempt of a severed tendon to cover itself with a cap of granulations is somewhat feeble, and its slowness gives us an opportunity of marking points of detail. Tendon consists of wavy bundles of fibres in close order, and in full-grown animals its cellular elements are reduced to small dimensions. They are thin plates folded round the bundles, presenting in the face view the appearance in a, fig. 4, and in the side view the appearance in 8,

g. 4. In the granulating end of a tendon the appearance is that of ¢, fig. 4; the thin plates have become solid or cubical, and where

PATHOlA OG T

they have increased in number at the free end of the tendon they have lost their orderly arrangement ; they have, in fact, become granulation-cells. The tendon has drawn upon its reserve of celly and placed them at the disposal of the reparative process. All the

AN

AAW

AN h ;

ral)

f il ~ “WA | i

Fia, 4.—a, tendon-bundle covered by cell-plates, detached plate beneath (highly magnified ; after Ranvier); 6, ordinary appearance of normal tendon in section, the plates being seen in profile as linear thickenings ; c, tendon from a gran- ulating stump of the leg,—the cell-plates have become cubical.

other tissues of the part have already done the same, some much earlier and more extensively than others. Wherever capillaries are most numerous there the cellular activity is greatest, the cells nearest to the wall of the capillary becoming more plump or more embryonic. The cellular material for the purposes of repair is supplied first around the severed vessels (according to

some it is even supplied from within the vessels in the form of colourless blood- corpuscles) of the highly vascular muscle, of the marrow of bone, and of the subcutaneous tissue, and ultimately even by the ends of the tendons. In the placental process the formative materials had been furnished much more evenly over the whole area. Blood-vessels of Repair.—The next step is towards the nutrition Blooc of the formative cells. Whether their nutrition is for a time plas- vesse matic (as in fig. 1, from the placental growth) does not appear ; gran about the third day the formative tissue begins to be furnished tion. with numerous blood- vessels, Their for- * mation is very diffi- ~~: cult to observe in young granulations ; in older granulation~~ tissue they have the appearance drawn in .\ fic. 5, a series of .« parallel tubes mak- ing straight for the surface, ramifying on the same, joining by numerous loops near the surface, and of unequal calibre throughout their course, being widest onor nearthe surface. These vessels are dif- ferent in several respects from the vessels in a vascular area of the normal organism of corresponding extent, unless it be in the decidua uterina. ‘I’hey are not branching arterioles ending in a fine capillary network, but they are of somewhat uniform and exceedingly simple structure throughout, and their calibre is often greater at the distal than at the proximal end. We have next to consider how these vessels have originated. S. The youngest granulations that can be prepared for examination consist of a uniform mass of cells, mostly round, and of somewhat wide vascular channels separated from the mass of cells by thin walls of more elongated cells (fig. 6). The most probable analogy for these new and wide vessels is not the embryo nor the tadpole’s tail, but the placenta ; that is to say, certain of the cells along pre- determined lines agminate to form the opposite sides of a tube, be- coming adapted in shape to that end (fig. 8). According to Billroth, there is hardly ever in granulations an extension of the pre-existing capillaries by outgrowth of branching cells from their walls such

qarealgs

iy

Fiq. 5.—Blood-vessels in the surface-layer of chronic granulations.

| | | | |

as may be observed in the tadpole’s tail (Unterswehungen tiber die

Entwickelung a oa agi Berlin, 1856, p. 80); and the circum-

stances are so little ana- fe) A 1 AGx0

logous in the two cascs OSES R co os ie sera 99eA89 g x Sele > Cee fee” | EE! OS) G é€ BAD

that this statement may eceECe reed celta EC Rcego ters aes

be readily credited. How SON Eee ee

the new vessels join on OCS:

a Om Qy

J

As the granulations get >}

Etcieceene =@jece PROS Glee SS?

become fused intoa more ells. (After Billroth.) uniform fleshy stratum, the lower layers contract as the cells approximate to fibrous tissue, and skin begins to form on the surface. If a healed surface be examincd long after, in micro- scopic sections through the skin and subjacent tissue, the parallel vessels will still be observed running at intervals towards the surface, only more obliquely than in the granulation-tissue. They are invested by a certain quantity of fibrous tissue arranged parallel to their course, while all the rest of the space between two of them is occupied by horizontal lines of fibrous tissue, with spindle- shaped cells lying regularly , among the bundles. This P@:ij = change has been, first of | spherical granulation – cells | into spindle-shaped cells, with development of intercellular or perinuclear substance (fig. [f 7), and then fibrillation of { the latter. It is worthy of | note that a development into elastic fibres goes on in the jG sear for months or even years after healing is complete. | Hairs, hair-follicles, and se- baceous glands are not repro- tnt duced in the skin of scars, nor Fic. 7.—Vessels of granulation-tissue, their walls invested by longitudinal spindle- aresweat-

glands. On the other cells; the interval occupied by round hand, fat develops readily in cells or transverse spindle-cells.

the usual situations.

P Suppuration in Repair.— Meanwhile there has becn a remark- able concomitant of the growth and adaptation of the reparative inaterial, namely, a flow of pus or matter from the surface. Matter or pus varies in its physical characters somewhat; it may be creamy and yellowish-white (pus laudabile) or greenish-white, or it may be thin and watery or more viscid. It has an alkaline reaction and a faintly swcetish odour. Standing in a vessel, it separates into two parts,—a supernatant fluid or serosity, clear, and _ ofa yellowish tint, and a sediment of pns-cells. The serum coagu- lates when boiled, and it may even happen that a fibrinous clot forms in pus after death, just as in drawn blood. The serum of pus contains from 1 to 4 per cent. of albumen, and very much the same Salts as blood-serum. The cells of

pus are spherical elements of some- what uniform size, of the greyish colour

of protoplasm, granular on the surface,

(and disclosing the presence of two,

. three, or four nuclei when treated with acetic acid (fig. 8). They are capable | of ameeboid movements, and they may be seen to take into their substance such particles as charcoal with which the wound may be dressed. _ Physiological Analogy of Pus.—Pus 1S a very remarkable adjunct of the Teparative process—to go no farther Fic. 8.—Pus-corpuscles. a, fresh; ito the inflammatory processes for %, under acetic acid—the nuclei the present. The pus-cells are evi- visible ; ¢, blood-disks, to com- ently a condition or product of the sae stanulation-cells on the extremities and sides of the vascular out- growths, and they are detached from these situations, carrying with them a certain amount of fluid. Is there anything analogous | —” in other formative processes of the body? The following © at inter” 1s very close in some at least of the circumstances. The te , op of a cyst removed by operation from the neck region 1s 1 ion cs to be covered with

vascular tufts, which have precisely the 8. C ae of granulations as regards the blood-vessels. Each vas- a ar tuft is covered by a cap of cells like a granulation, and the “Me Investment of cells can be followed as a cylindrical column down the vessel into the depth of the cyst-wall. These cells are) Somewhat peculiar, They are cubical or polyhedric elements, with a

nucleus and a broad zone of protoplasm (fig. 9, a). On the summit and sides of a vascular tuft they are found becomin g detached and dis- integrated, the nucleus being cleft

into fragments, which afterwards coalesce, while the cell-substance flows off in the form of spherical or oval or pear-shaped vesicles of a reddish tint (fig. 9, 5). The cyst ~ isa blood-cyst,—its contents, aclear € brownish fluid with many red blood- disks floating in it, having been produced by the disintegration of the cells covering the vascular tufts. The cells are hematoblasts; their cell-substance is disengaged in drops which afterwards become * red blood-disks, and their nucleus, Fic. 9.—a, perfect hematoblasts; », after being cleft into several frag- disintegrated hematoblasts, the ments of unequal size, is remade ned Oe date ed and survives as a cell of the size of mains of the hematoblasts, resem- a pus-cell, and containing several bling pus-corpuscles in the cleavage nuclei likea pus-cell (fig.9,¢). This or dispersion of the nuclear particles. isa curious instance of blood-making from connective-tissue cells late in life, and it is not so much inexplicable in its characters as it is rare in its occurrence. The formation of pus on the granu- lations of repair is one of the commonest of incidents, but it is open to elucidation even by a rare analogy. In the one case a blood-like fluid is formed, and in the other pus; the fluid part of pus corresponds to the plasma together with the red blood-disks in the cyst, and the cellular part of pus, the pus-corpuscle, corresponds to the surviving but broken-up nucleus of the hematoblast. The granulation-cell is comparable to the perivascular cell of this blood- making process, and in passing into the condition of a pus-cell with several small nuclei it disengages merely a fluid plasma and no red blood-disks. The cells of the injured part having returned to an embryonic state, their first activity is a revival of early

embryonic activity ; if they do not make blood, they yield that which may be regarded as its substitute, namely, pus.

This analogy will appear all the closer from a consideration of another cyst. In this new growth, which occurred under the skin of the back, and was removed, like the former, by operation, the wall is lined by a certain thickness of tissue which is practically the same as the granulation-tissue of repair ; there are the same parallel vessels ending in loops, the same cells, and the same deliquescence of the surface. The fluid in the cyst is indeed the result of this liquefaction—a somewhat turbid brownish fluid. In a small recess of the cyst there is a formation of a considerable layer of epidermis-like scales on the surface. One important point of difference is that the deeper layers of cells show uo tendency to become spindle- shaped, to take a transverse order in the intervals between the parallel vessels, and so to become fibrous tissue. On the contrary, one finds in the depths of the tissue the stems of vessels surrounded by zones of young cells, perivascular sources of the new growth by which the loss of substance around the terminal loops of the vessels is constantly made good. On these terminal loops the process is not one of pus-formation, nor is it altogether one of blood-formation as in the former cyst ; but it isan intermediate process which helps us still further to understand the significance of the pus in repair. The new formation is comparable to that of the blood-cyst in the obvious perivascular grouping of its cells, and it is comparable to the granulations of repair in the forms of its cells; and it thus supplies the link between the blood – yielding tufts of the former and the pus-yielding vascular points of the latter. What, then, is the nature of the deliquescence in the interior ~ of thiscyst? It is partly blood; and there may ¢ be seen also the large cells from whose proto- ; plasm the blood-disks oe sores baat : are also seen the remarkable cells with nucleus g) - cleft into three or four, so like the cells of pus co) (>) O (fig. 10,6); the latter are the surviving nucleus b of the hematoblast, the peculiar form of which 5 is best explained by watching the more perfect , oe process of blood- formation on_ the wall of the se oa ra blood-cyst. Fewer of the cells in the second the wail of a cyst; cyst undergo this transformation ; fewer of 6, their nuclei sur- them ever attain the perfect form of hemato-paler at ba blasts so as to be able to undergo it. For the 24 ticod-disks, most part they pursue a devious development, and it is in this that they resemble

granulation-cells. The differ- ence is only one of degree ; the type or law of the process is the hematoblastic type, which may be more or less perfectly attained. We are accordingly confirmed in the impression that pus-cells are the surviving nuclei of embryonic cells whose perfect law is blood- making, and that the fluid which accompanies them is the cell-pro- toplasm which has failed to disengage itself in the form of individual buds that casily pass into red blood-disks, but has become a veritable albuminous fluid. Pus, then, may be said to be blood absolutely

Skin-for- mation.

Giant- cells.

wanting in red blood-disks, and with the colourless corpuscles in enormously disproportionate numbers. We shall afterwards see that there is a kind of blood—leucocythemic blood— which ap- proximates to pus in these its essential characters.

That which distinguishes the process of repair from the forma- tive process in the two cysts, and in all tumours whatsoever, is that the former is self-limited ; after a time skin forms on the surface of the granulatious, and the lower layers of cells pass into the resting condition of fibrous tissue. Each of these adaptations has now to be described. ;

Formation of Skin on a Granulating Surface.—The new skin appears as a delicate bluish frill extending gradually over the raw surface from the margin of the old skin. Nothing is more natural, therefore, than to suppose that it is a continuous growth from the cells of the rete mucosum of the old skin; and, according to the embryological dogma of an impassable gulf between the epiblast, mesoblast, and hypoblast for histogenetic purposes, the new epidermis can have no other source than proliferation from corre- sponding cells of the old. But, dogma apart, there isa radical difference of opinion as to the origin of the epidermic or epithelial cells on the surface of granulations. Notwithstanding the fact that the new epithelium springs up alongside the old, it has appeared to many observers with the microscope that it was derived, not from subdivision of the latter, but from the

granulation- cells becoming flat and otherwise adapted to surface purposes. In considering these difficulties let us, as before, seek analogies among other formative incidents of mature life. In the first place it should be mentioned that the new skin may be peculiar. The accompanying figure (fig. 11) is drawn from a section through the —

SoS

=n > ——

‘fan

10)

scar of an ulcer of the leg which had broken out and healed re- peatedly. The peculiarity is that the epithelial cells are every- where a narrow belt which bends down and encloses the terminal vessels as in a loop; in other words, the surface vessels are driven through the midst of the rete mucosum of the new skin. For an analogy to this epitheliation of granulation-tissue we may take the case of the cyst already referred to ; it was covered in part with a thick layer of epidermic scales. The origin of these in the cyst is not difficult to trace; they are the ~=> ; granulation-cells enlarged, with two, 4 (9%)) SF three, or four nuclei, and with a © “60 0-26: ¢ more homogeneous protoplasm. The ‘@,-.6¢ Os surface-layer is in fact largely made a OLS DS up of multinuclear blocks, some of 095 zoo which become excavated in their in- terior, while their nucleated peri- phery forms a narrow belt of surface- cells with a descending loop enclos- ing a space, in which collections of blood-corpuscles may sometimes be seen (fig. 12). If we imagine the ; plexus of vessels ramifying on the rig, 12.—From surface of a cyst granulating surface to form com- lined with epidermis; above, a munications with these excavations Continuous piece of the cyst-wall; 6 5 below, individual multinuclear in the multinuclear blocks, we gelis excavated. should be able to understand how it Z that they are driven through the rete mucosum of a scar, as in fig. 11.

Giant-cclls in Repatr.—These multinuclear blocks are the so- called giant-cells. Their occurrence LEO in fungous granulations was de- scribed by Billroth (op. ctt., p. 32) in 1856, he having previously secn them in the

granulations of bone and taken them to be elements \¢: **necessary for the new formation of vessels in osteophytes or in cal- lus.” The accompanying figure (fig. 18) shows several examples of them from the granulations of a slow-healing stump. Precisely the same forms occur in the wall of the cyst whose structure has been already referred to in order to illus- trate the granulations of repair. But for these multinuclear blocks of tissue we have a clear physio- logical parallel in that unfailing source of analogies for the formative processes of mature life, namely, the placenta. The accompanying

Fic. 13.—Giant-cells from chronic granulations.

examples (fig. 14) are drawn from the deepest layer of a discoid placenta (the guinea-pig’s). Here it is evident that they result from the subdivision of a single nucleus within a growing cell of the inner muscular coat; and their place in the placental pro- cess is as clear as their histogenesis. They enter into the formation of the blood-sinuses of the deeper parts of the organ, some- times forming a consider- able part of the wall of a vessel by being excavated in their interior (the nuclei being driven to the side), at other times forming one side of a blood-channel, — a corresponding multinuc- lear block forming the other, and the lumen of the vessel being the space between them. They represent a some- what feebler continuation of those vaso-formative processes in the placenta which we have already used as the analogy for the pro- duction of the new vessels of granulations. That their function and significance in granulations is not wholly vaso-formative will appear from the fact of their co-operating to build up the surface epithelium.

Fic. 14.—Vaso-formative giant-cells from deeper layers of placenta (guinea-pig).

Conversion of Granulation-tissue into Scar-tissuc.—The skin Sear

of a scar is never perfect ; it is always thin, wanting the descend. tissi

ing processes and papille of the natural skin, and wanting also the hair-follicles, hairs, sebaceous glands, and sweat-glands. Its blood-vessels never become the orderly capillary loops of the original type; they remain fora

time as an extensive plexus of large vessels close to the surface, giving a recent scar its livid ap- pearance; afterwards the channels of the vessels become narrower, and many of them quite occluded ; and the scar has in the enda somewhat blanched appearance, which continues even when the surrounding skin is thrown into a state of ruddy glow. The underlying tissue, however, gradually acquires more of the natural type. If a section be made through an old scar it will be seen that the subcutaneous tissue is fibrillar and fibrous, with more or less of fat-cells. In the figure (fig. 15), drawn from a section

Ss

Fia. 15.—Scar-tissue of an ulcer of the leg which had broken out and healed repeatedly ; spindle-cells with brown pigment in the interfibrillar spaces.

through the scar of an ulcer of the leg which had broken out and healed more than once, the tissue is composed of parallel wavy fibres, with spindle-cells between them at regular intervals, the cells having (as a characteristic of scar-tissue after repeated heal- ing) brown pigment-grains in their substance. The successive changes which have led up to this horizontal fibrillation are not difficult to follow. While the ascending vessels acquire more and more of elongated cells on their walls, the granulation-cells in the intervals between them become extended horizontally or obliquely (see fig. 7), the spindle-cells among the fibrillar bundles in the figure being the surviving representatives of them. The change of the spherical cells into spindle-cells, which precedes the fibrillation, takes place first in the deepest or oldest stratum of the granula- tion-tissue, and it appears to be accompanied by a certain dragging down or obliquity of the vessels running to the surface. There 1s always a considerable thickness of spindle-cells parallel to the vessels, so that these, together with the horizontal tracts between. the vessels, make up a kind of warp and woof. But as the scar- tissue matures the horizontal bands come to overshadow the vertical or oblique. The fibrillation takes place, as it does in ordinary growth, in an intercellular or perinuclear homogeneous protoplasm, Which becomes more extensive as the embryonic or purely cellular character of the granulation-tissue fades. One of the most striking facts in this development of embryonic tissue into mature tissue in the adult

is its shrinkage, corresponding to the well-known col- traction of the area of a healing surface.

— ia

° 5 . is – Repair of a Broken Bonc.—The reparative process 1m bone is Bo

much simpler and it may be said to be much easier { healing of a stump. The bones retain even to old age the materials out of which new bone may be produced ; these are the somewhat

than in there)”

a 7 —

PATHOLOGY

embryonic membrane covering the bone, or the periosteum, and the marrow. During’ the growing period these two tissues retain pronounced embryonic characters, and at all times they take on a formative action readily. However unlikely an object, then, a bone may seem for repair, it has within and around it the materials for a tolerably direct renewal of osscous substance. The most orderly or intelligible form of the re- arative process is that seen in animals. A long bone, such as the tibia or shin-bone, after having been broken and carefully set, presents an appearance such as is drawn in the figure (fig. 16, a). Opposite the line of fracture there is a fusiform thickening all round the bone, which is bulky and carti- laginous for a time, and afterwards becomes greatly reduced in extent, and, at the same time, osseous in its structure. It is called the callus. It will be convenient to de- seribe the details of this process of repair from actual specimens of the tibia of a young frog which was found undergoing repair after fracture. The tibia, when cleared of the muscles, was found to have a spindle-like enlargement about its middle of the size and shape of an oat (fig. 16, 0) and of a whitish colour. It was easily cut up into sections passing through its whole length as well as through the projecting ends of the spindle representing the normal shaft of the bone (fig. 17). The bulk of this fusiform enlargement is made up of |f cartilage developed between the upraised eo and the dense substance of the one. But there is another and

independ- ent new-formed mass projecting from the canal of the bone, and clearly marked off from the wide extent of cartilage around it, ; —- —this is the direct osseous formation from F!°- Pie ye Sear tibia of the marrow. The cartilage has been pro- vaglaslaig ug OF Ere duced from the periosteum, each spindlc- lage-callus opposite the eell of the latter altering its form and fracture (from Paget); b, developing a disproportionate amount of a ee at cell-substance, which becomes the hyaline cartilage covering a frac- matrix of the cartilage, while the nucleus ture. of the original cell, generally excavated or reduced to a crescentic shape, remains as the cartilage-cell. From this cartilage, again, bone is formed very muchasit is formed from thecentralrod of cartilage in the foetal bone, and it also resembles the

latter in being formed only to be reabsorbed. In

these preparations from the frog, nar- row spicule of bone may be seen start- ing from the thin end of the spindle and spreading over the surface of the cartilaginous cal- ¢ lus. In the deeper strata of the latter, and still at the thin end of the spindle, the cartilage – cells group themselves round the walls of alveolar spaces, as in the ossification of epiphysial carti- lage, and that is, |. doubtless the pro-?- – ~ cess which extends | throughout — the

whole mass of car- ; S

tilage, Meanwhile Fic. 17.—Section through broken tibia of a young frog,

there ha 7 —upper fragment. a, ensheathing callus (cartilage) IS arisen a between periosteum and shaft ; b, intermediate callus

fungus-like protru- (bone), growing from the cells and vessels of the

Sion of new bone Marrow.

the medullary canal of the bone; it lines the inner walls of € medullary cavity for a short distance up from the line of

eee

weeks. are joined by a band of tissue, which has been proved by examination of it at various stages of the reparative process in animals to be at first composed of

line of the nerve-bundles (fig. 18) ; these

neurilemma, they pass through the ori- ginal embryonic phases, and ultimately become more or less perfect nerve-tubes ¥1q.18.—Repaired nerve(frog)

inch in length. responding process is described; but the repair of a ruptured muscle such as the rectus extensor of the

fracture, and projects for a greater distance into the midst of the cartilaginous callus. This centre of ossification is intimately connected with the blood-vessels of the marrow ; they form the framework of the osseous growth, the embryonic marrow -cells (themselves the lineal descendants of cartilage-cells) becoming the osteoblasts or future bone-corpuscles. The whole of the new growth of bone is ultimately moulded into a more compact form ; but the seat of an old fracture will always retain a certain roughness of exterior, and a certain want of regularity in its Haversian systems. The repair of bone in man is not altogether the same as in animals; the ensheathing cartilage is not usually found except in broken ribs, and the uniting osseous substance corresponds mostly to that part of the new bone (in the preparation from the frog) which issues from the medullary cavity in association with the blood-vessels of the marrow. ‘he callus in man is accordingly said to be chiefly intermediate” or between the broken ends, and partly also “interior,” or extending into the medullary canal ; and it is naturally permanent and not subject to removal like the ‘“‘ensheathing” callus developed from cartilage. But the sources of new bone in man depend upon the amount of displacement of the broken ends; if the displacement be very considerable, the connective tissues around may be drawn upon for bone-forming materials, their cells becoming embryonic in form and ultimately osteoblasts. Comparing the repair of a bone with the repair of soft parts, the former is much more direct ; the osteoblastic tendency or memory is strong in the tissues within and around a bone,

above all in the periosteum and in the young or red marrow ; and true osseous union is readily effected except in such fractures as the neck of the thigh-bone and the knce-cap, where the union is often merely ligamentous or fibrous. In the ‘‘green- stick” fractures of children the periosteum is still a succulent layer engaged in the natural growth of y i 3 MGR sa the bones, and there is reason to suppose [{/ie that it is the chief source of whatever (ye reparative materials may be needed. Repair of Nerves and Muscles.—When a nerve, such as the ulnar, is divided by a cut near the wrist, sensibility is lost over the area of skin to which the nerve is distributed, and, under ordinary cir- cumstances, it is restored in about three The severed ends of the nerve

Nerve- repair,

embryonic spindle-cells arranged in the

cells are derived from the nuclei of the

ten weeks after section ; spindle-celled tissue replac- ing nerve-tubes. (From Billroth, after Hjelt.)

filling the gap in the divided nerve,—a gap which may be a quarter or half an

In muscle, also, a cor- Muscle –

repair.

thigh is commonly fibrous only, and the gap can be felt even

through the skin.?

§ 4.—Errors oF EMBRYOLOGICAL GROWTH IN CERTAIN TIssUES—MESOBLASTIC TUMOURS.

No chapter or section treating of tumours as a whole can Tumour. be homogeneous ; and, in order to preserve the develop- mental or evolutional order already sketched, it will be convenient to consider here only a part of the morbid processes which result in tumours, leaving the rest to be

introduced at appropriate points in the sequel. The dis- advantage of applying the developmental or embryological idea to all tumours whatsoever comes out in the tumour- hypothesis of Cohnheim. According to that hypothesis, the tumours of the body are due to the awakened growth of small centres or foci of embryonic tissue which had

1 Literature.—Paget, Lectures on Surgical Pathology, 4th ed., Lond., 1876; Darwin, Animals and Plants under Domestication, vol. ii. chap. xxvii., newed., Lond., 1882; Billroth, Veber die Entwickelung der Blutgefisse, &c., Berlin, 1856 ; Id., in Beitrdge zur pathol. Histol., Berlin, 1858, and in his Allgem. Chirurg. Pathol. (Engl. transl.) ; Ziegler, Untersuch. iber pathol. Bindegewebs- und Gefaissneubildung, Wiirzburg, 1876, and in his Pathol. Anat. und Pathogenese, Jena, 1880-84 (Engl. transl.) ; Rindfleisch, Lehrbuch der pathol. Gewebelehre @ (Engl. transl., 1872-73) ; Golding Bird, ‘‘ Constructive Inflammation and Uleers,” in Guy’s Hosp. Reports, vol. xxiv., 1879, p. 525.

remained over from the foetal development, persisting in their embryonic characters while all else around them had assumed the characters of maturity. For the arguments and illustrations of this hypothesis the reader may refer to the section beginning at p. 622, vol. 1., of Cohnheim’s Vorlesungen wiber allgemeine Pathologie. It must suffice to say here that groups of resting embryonic cells in the various organs and parts of the body, or embryonic rudi- ments in the sense of Cohnheim, are not known to exist at all generally. That which we are well assured of is an indwelling power of all the mesoblastic tissues to revert to embryonic characters,—the spontaneity of the tissues never quite worn out, or the memory of development more or less deeply rooted in them to the end of life. From this point of view we have traced the process of repair, finding a developmental analogy even for pus. From the same point of view we have now to consider certain kinds of new formation as arising, not to make good defects, but under an erratic impulse, or in the course of an erratic spontaneity. Congenital tumours have always been regarded as errors of development, and it will be con- venient to select a simple congenital

tumour to begin with. Fibroma.—The texture drawn in the figure (fig. 19) occurred in a tumour of the back of the neck ina young child having _ been there since birth. It is a jibroma, and consists essen- tially of bundles of wavy fibres

crossing or de- cussating in di-

LAGS,

rection, some-

times thick i

bundles, some- / Wty fy iY times only a few Hi WZ if Vy, Ws strands, the Af yy ie 3 Wikia Hy if

whole forming MVNA!

a dense warp- and-woof tex- ture. The pe- culiarity is that such a tissue should have formed under the skin as a tumour or lump the size of a hen’s egg; spread out in thin layers, the same warp-and-woof texture of fibres occurs naturally in the aponeuroses and the sheaths of muscles, and in other fibrous membranes, such as the dura mater; and the large number of nuclei among the fibres, as shown in the figure, would be appropriate to the fibrous tissue at the early period of life to which the tumour belonged. At various centres these embryonic cells had developed into fat-cells, so that the tumour may be called a fibro-lipoma. The tissue has increased in three dimensions, and so has resulted in a palpably distinct object in the body, which could be dissected out from among the surrounding structures as an individual thing. The overgrowth had taken place probably in one of the aponeu- roses of the trapezius muscle, and the noteworthy point is that it has faithfully adhered to the warp-and-woof texture proper to the tissue on which it is based. The new formation possesses length, breadth, and thickness, and its fibres are interwoven in the three dimensions as if it had been constructed at some unusual kin of loom. The same interlacing Of © jay gn 3 wid ust bundles of wavy fibres is found very _//W2))\¥4 St) commonly in the fibromata,—their favourite seats, besides the flat fibrous sheaths, aponeuroses, and mem- branes, being the uterus and its

appendages, where the tumours may be stalked or sessile. Sometimes the fibres are concentrically arranged round a number of centres, or the bundles may pursue a sinuous course. _ One variety may be specially men- tioned as exemplifying a modification of fibrous structure which is often met with in various normal and patholo- gical processes. In this modification the fibres become as if fused into broader homogeneous bundles, the

nuclei being left lying as if in spaces or holes in a structureless

Fic. 19.—Congenital fibroma from a child's back; warp- and-woof fibrous texture, with embryonic nuclei; bundles of fibres seen also in cross-section.

Fic. 20.—Recurrent ossifying fibroina of lower jaw.

ground-substance. This variety of fibroma is generally found in the bones of the jaws; it may be ossified at some points, the nuclei becoming the bone-corpuscles, and the homogeneous ground. substance becoming impregnated with the carthy substance of bone, The accompanying figure (fig. 20) is drawn from a preparation of a fibrous tumour, ossified in part, within the medullary space of the lower jaw in an adult. It had been removed once, and grew again (recurrent fibroma or fibroid).

Where the modification the cells at the expense of the fibres, we have a fibro-cellular 9 tumour. The tumour is con- @\///| posed of elon- Sz, gated elements, ~o ob which are vir- on= 0. tually nucleated S=== cells with very long amounting = most to fibres. ose The figure . (fig. "ZZ 21) is made from an extensive tumour deeply seated in the carotid region of the neck in a woman aged twenty-two.

Fic. 21.—Fibro-cellular tumour ; decussating bundles.

There is nothing more remarkable in all these varieties of tumonr Sarco

than the constancy of the warp-and-woof texture, and we shall find that the same is an important characteristic of the class of tumours where the fibrous structure is wanting and everything becomes cellular. Tumours of the latter

kind form the group of sar- comata orflesh-like === tumours. Proceed- So ing from the fibro- < cellular – tumour (\' last mentioned and sketched, we come to the variety of spindle – celled sar- coma, in which the cells differ from the fibro- cellular elements of the former, chiefly in the greater prominence of the nuc- leus and the greater delicacy of the tapering prolongation of cell- substance. It is sometimes called a small spindle-celled sarcoma. The figure (fig. 22) shows the structure to be purely cellular, with- out any fibrous supporting tissue. In the cross-section the spindle- cell appears as a small round cell.

In the sarcoma with large spindle-cclls we have a form of tumour not uncommon in certain regions of the body, often associated with brown pigmentation, and very generally malignant in its course. One common seat LE SS of it is the choroid TZ coat of the eye, where large pig- mented cells, both spindle-shaped and branched, exist naturally, An- other common seat is the subcutaneous tissue, where pig-\® mentation is nota XS normal occurrence. The illustration (fig. 28) is taken from a case where there was, how- ever, brown pig- mentation of the skin for a considerable distance round the tumour. The situation was the shin, the common seat of chronic ulcers, and the tumour seemed to have begun in the scar-tissue of an ulcer of that kind. The cells are very large spindle-like elements grouped in decussating bundles, the distribution of pigment being partial (omitted entirely in the cut), and not uncommonly confined to the narrow bands of cells separating two broader or thicker bundles. The developmental or embryonic character of these cells is sufft- ciently obvious; but the occasion for their reappearance in mature life is not so clear. For the particular case of tumour over the shin

SS a

=

gS hel PY:

Fia. 22.—Tumour composed of small spindle-cells in decussating bundles.

Fic. 23.—Tumour composed of large spindle-cells im decussating bundles.

takes the direction of an increase of Fibro. j cellula

the following may be conjectured. In the pigmented scar of an old ulcer of the same region the subcutaneous fibrillar tissue is found to be thickly occupied with large spindle-cells full of brown pigment granules (sce fig. 15). Now, the skin for some distance round the fumour in question had preciscly the brown pigmentation of a scar that had re-formed repeatedly, and the brown colour resided pre- sumably in the same embryonic elements as are drawn in fig. 15. It eannot be supposed, however, that that explanation applies to all spindle-celled sarcomas with pigment, even if we do not include ihhete of the choroid tunic of the eye. A more general explanation must be sought for the pigmentation, which will apply also to the pigment in scar-tissue itself.

sof Cystic Sarcoma.—The activity of tumours, even of those classes ion that we have hitherto considered, is not purely structural or forma- tive; it may be obviously functional, involving an instability of the ur- structure. Even the fibrous tumours may become cystic in their -ure. interior, as notably in the case of fibroids of the uterus ; and it may be stated generally that all such traces of cyst-formation in solid masses of embryonic tissue are so many traces of the deeply-rooted embryonic function of those tissues. ‘This important principle of tumour pathology may be conveniently introduced through a par- ticular case of spindle-celled sarcoma, which grew to a great size on the outer side of the thigh of a boy aged fifteen, having its root deep

down in the interval between e829 Lo

the tensor fasciee muscle and SE =,

the vastus externus. In no OZ SSNWO

part of this tumour were ory EXE ONS traces wanting of an embry- SV AKG) oh \\ SS onic function residing in its Iya 2 fi HIN 67f-) WSS component cells. Although fils © of y aS iy n° the section of the tumour } Ig Ely hy We Kgs Tx was close and firm, yet one «/y Off By psy O’lg g M® found under the microscope ,%2¢ Lif Lyf! “fo aries AAC) the appearance drawn in the ZA Ts Ci 69 Wag figure (fig. 24). The tracts of Vii

Geos WG G\| {‘*.4e spindle-celled tissue are in- ~7~y ©) 686, EN TNISAAN “9 terrupted by spaces lined by 4G fy Sins Q\ BEANS ANG) cubical cells, which are’the 8 lig © Nye SP surface-modification of the INNO My O>¢ spindle-cells. ‘These are the \ N99 Yi blood-spaces of the tumour, ON EZ 6

and blood is to be seen in NS

the excavation has been ex- tensive the spaces have formed communications, and left the spindle-celled tissue projecting into them as free cylinders or columns, with rounded ends covered with the same cubical epituelial-like elements. A central area of the tumour was more spongy in consistence; and that character is found to depend upon the greater development of the spaces, ap- proaching remotely toa cystie development. It is here that one sees the true physiological or embryological significance of the inter- stitial spaces, of their contents, and of the cubical cells round their walls, ‘The surface-row of cubical cells loosen from their attach- ment, fall into the space, and are succeeded by another row, which are detached in turn; and so the excavation proceeds at many centres. ‘he detached cells do not remain free solid elements ; they may sometimes change in toto into a mucous fluid, but their full gs physiological activity is the hama- fir toblastic or blood-making. The spaces contain the hematoblastic cells and their derivatives in various forms. One may see the cubical cells on the margin of the space (fig. 24) acquiring a yellowish tint, then the same cells disengaged and lying free in the space and_ probably increased in size (fig. 25), then red blood-disks of the same colour as the protoplasm of the hematoblasts, and cells with Fic. 25.—Hematoblastic process in several nuclei corresponding to those the spaces of sarcomatous Hnewued already described as the surviving Sahota Leese Ly Lg pai nuclei of the disintegrated heemato- geneous; b, blood-disks of various blast, the whole lying in the midst shapes; ¢, the surviving nuclei. of a mucus-like coagulum. ‘This is neither more nor less than the early blood-making function of the mesoblast revived. The result is not by any means always or altogether blood, and in cysts it is indeed for the most part a mucous or serous fluid.

Tn one direction this process goes on to the ultimate destination of a thin-walled cyst ; and the following case of spindle-celled sar- comatous tumour may be regarded as an interesting intermediate phase. The tumour is the size of an orange, from the neck region of a dog ; the peculiarity of it is that it is excavated completely on the side next the skin, while the deeper half of the sphere is made Up partly of a firm texture with slits or spaces lined by cubical cells, as already described, and partly of a beautiful interlacing system

‘columns and free projecting cylinders of the cyst.

of polished cylinders crossing the cavity from side to side, or hang- ing free into it. The process of excavation has merely been an extension of that drawn in fig. 24; it may be compared to the ex- cavation of the heart in the embryo,—the columne carne and musculi papillares and pectinati of the latter corresponding to the

ojecti It is noteworthy that a trabeculated interior is characteristic of many cysts.

Myxoma or Mucous Sarcoma.—In another direction the hemato- Myxoma. blastic softening process goes on to the variety of tumour called myxoma or mucous sarcoma; and this change may be actually observed in parts of the above-mentioned extensive spindle-celled sarcoma from the outer side of the thigh. A myxoma is that par- ticular modification of embryonic incsoblast in which the softening or fluid disintegration takes place, not along definite or selected tracts, but uniformly over a particular area. The cells become excavated somewhat as in fat formation, the nucleus remaining at one side, and their thin membranous walls appearing as branching processes, which join with those of the next cell. Hence the nuclei often lie as if at nodal points of a meshwork of fibres, and they are often triangular or lozenge- wp HEY shaped. This is one common ,\\\ | form of myxomatous tissue. ‘ \ But the mucous transformation \\)\, taking place in each individual Wal! cell may result in adumour pre- \\/’\, senting a very

different appear- || ance. The figure (fig. 26) is | taken from a soft gelatinous tumour of the subcutaneous tissue. Nothing could be more orderly than the grouping of its large mucus-yielding cells in rows following the waved course of the bundles of fibres or fibrils; they are as regular as the cell-plates of tendon, Their origin can be traced to the fixed con- nective-tissue cells of the part, which have emerged from their inconspicuous state, and have acquired breadth and thickness, a cubical form, and mucus-yielding protoplasm. Precisely the same process may end in a cystic excavation. The relation of this change to the indwelling tendency of the mesoblastic cells towards blood- making is revealed in the actual hematoblastic character of the cells here and there, and in the blood-disks and cells with cleft nucleusidying around. Another intermediate or occasional form of the cells in this tumour reveals also the true affinities of spindle- cells filled with yellow or brown or black pigment. Such pigmented spindle-cells replace the mucous eclls here and there; we must consider them to be also a somewhat devious development in the hematoblastic process, their pigment being practically the same as blood-pigment.

‘Alveolar Sarcoma.—In this connexion also we must take the Alveolar kind of tumour that is often called alveolar sarcoma. The epithelial- sarcoma. like form of cell, which lines the spaces among the spindle-cells in the case already mentioned, now comes to predominate. The follow- ing is an instance, with figure (fig. 27). (O73 *9)

A tumour the size of a large walnut, (6 deeply pigmented, with the skin drawn tightly over it as if it had grown in the position of a mole or congenital mark, was removed from a man’s leg. Al- though the tumour is somewhat black throughout, the pigment is found to `y reside only in certain narrow tracts or <7 law clusters of cells. The structure isdivided \ “` //*

into oblong or alveolar spaces by narrow bands of fibres, the cells within the spaces } /¢ being all of the epithelial type. Some |a\t

of the cells are much larger than others,

oRaere.

\ & RAGES

Fic. 26.—Mucous sarcoma of subcuta- neous tissue (dog).

and these largest elements are tinted jaf fe EOS). \ bright yellow or brown. It is no great |///. To ya \ \ step from this singular structure to the Ko faxed \ ; embryonic structure and function of \® (eo @S

former cases. Instead of a few cells at & Fig. 27,—Melanotie alveolar time forming an epithelial -like surface sarcoma of subcutaneous to an alveolar space (the great ball: of S68t =

the tissue remaining as tracts and columns of spindle-cells), here the alveolation has been general through the whole area, and all the cells have become as if surface-cells. Furthermore, they have been fixed in that condition, proceeding to no further develop- ment, whether mucus-forming or blood-forming,—only certam groups of them, and these by far the largest and most epithelial- like, acquiring the yellow colour of hamatoblasts, or a brown colour. The pigment is otherwise contained in spindle-cells which occupy the interalveolar septa, and in them it is m a more granular form.

Si. —. 47

Cavern- ous tumour.

Traces of

blood- making in tumours.

370

Cavernous Blood-twmours.—The pigmented alveolar sarcoma is sufficiently common in the situation of congenital mother-marks of the skin to be one of their characteristic developments. Another of their developments or equivalents is the nevus or angeioma or cavernous tumour, whose structure may be said to consist, in general terms, of a spongy meshwork of alveolar spaces, bounded by coarse and elastic trabeculae and filled with blood. Arteries open into such tumours and veins pass out from

them, the cavernous territory being intermediate ; but, according to several authorities, this con- nexion with the circulation is not primary to the cavernous tumour but acquired. Without entering upon a discussion of details, the analogy of the alveolar sarcoma growing on the same basis of a congenital pigment-spot may be kept in view. The alveolation is the same in both cases, although the trabeeule in the cavernous tumour are somewhat stouter, the grand difference being in the contents. If, however, we suppose the epithelial-like cells of the alveolar sarcoma all to become large and filled with a yellowish colouring matter, as indced many of them do, and if we suppose that these hematoblasts (for such they are) go on to fulfil their destiny, then we should have a cavernous blood-tumour, that is to say, the alveoli would be filled with red blood-corpuscles. It will not be possible to offer evidence of this process except for the cavernous blood-tumour of the liver, an organ in which such tumours are comparatively frequent, and mostly in later life. The cylinders of liver-cells appear to become nar- s rower and narrower, as if from pres- sure of the capillaries, and ultimately 4 to disappear. From the supporting / tissue a new growth of cells takes /@: place (fig. 28). These are hemato- * blasts; their protoplasm becomes red __ blood-disks, and their nucleus sur- (@

“yf arta

vives with the remarkable trefoil th arrangement of cleavage which has é been described for several other in- © stances of the hematoblastic pro- ! @ Msi cess. There can be no mistaking ey

0m Ge © g 923 °@ @

Fig. 28.—Hematoblastic process in cavernous growths of liver (dog). a, the supporting tissue producing hematoblasts 6; ¢, nuclear re- mains of hematoblasts and red pblood-disks side by side.

the identity of this process with that of the blood-cyst of the neok already mentioned; it is essentially a mani- festation of hematoblastic function late in life, differing from that of the blood-cyst in the fact that the centres of blood-formation are sepa- rated from one another within alveolar boundaries, These cases illustrate another striking property of cavernous blood ~~tumours, namely, to heal spontaneously in parts or to develop~~

~~embryonic scar~~ tissue through more or less of their extent (fig. 29, a). The ordinary cavernous texture of an angcioma is produced by the formative pro- cess stopping short of embryonic connective tissue or scar-tissue. The accompanying figure (fig. 29, b) is from an enormous angeiomatous

SS Ee oa

a

Fig. 29.—a, cicatricial tissue from cavernous tumour of liver (dog); 6, mesh- work occupied by red blood-disks, from cavernous tumour of head (ox),

tumour on the side of an ox's head; the structure is very like that

of the young connective tissue of the former figure, except that the

meshes are densely packed with red blood-corpuseles. There are, however, other parts of the tumour where the fibres are broader, the meshes narrower, and with embryonic cells lying in them, in- stead of or along with blood-corpuscles.

There is no definite limit betwecn such cavernous blood-tumours and true blood-cysts; in the latter the numerous hematoblastic centres open eommunications, and the further process takes place in the cellular tissue forming the cyst-wall.

The blood-making office of the mesoblast is the earliest and greatest of the functions of embryonic cells, and it is not surprising that it should come out more or less obviously in those formative processes in the common binding tissue of the body where there isa persistence or revival of embryonic activity. We seem to find traces of it in the pigmentation, in the cystic excavation, in the alveolation, in the mucous or myxomatous transformation, and in the cavernous structure of mesoblastic new growths. The embryonic spontaneity in the middle layer is, of course, wider than mere blood-making ; but the hematoblastic function or tendency is certainly the most fundamental, and the traces of it.in the foregoing tumours are our best help towards a rational interpretation of them. Persisting or

| body have lost theirs.

Fa TAH OLOG ¥

revived embryonic activity in subcutaneous and other homologous tissues cannot but bring to light more or less of this all-important mesoblastic function ; the memory of it is too strong to be ignored, We come next to a function of embryonic cells which is only second to the hematoblastic, namely, the osteoblastic or bone-making fune- tion ; and even with the bone-making process the earlier blood- making process is deeply interwoven, for in the marrow of the bones the hematoblastic activity of cells persists long after it has ceased elsewhere.

The bone-making function of embryonic tissue—if function it Tuy may be called—comes into a large number of tumours ; or, in other of }

words, a large proportion of all mesoblastic tumours are tumours of the bones. In all of these the embryonic law of development and growth is clearly present. The results, however, are frequently more complex than in the tumours hitherto considered; or, in other words, tumours of the bones are exceedingly liable to have a structure so mixed as almost to baffle systematic description. One reason of this is that the osteoblastic and hematoblastic functions of embryonic cells go hand in hand in their production ; and the complexity of structure is, accordingly, greatest in those which grow from that part of the bone where the blood-making resides, namely, the marrow. The other great formative tissue of bone is the periosteum, a tissue which retains its embryonic strue- tural features long after the mesoblastic tissues elsewhere in the The marrow and the periosteum are fre- quently involved in the same tumour ; or an essentially similar morbid product may be derived from cither. That is notably the case with the tumours of the bones which we come to first, the cartilaginous tumours or enchondromata.

~— eter

Ecchondrosis.—It is only rarely that a cartilaginous tumour Carte

grows from cartilage, the observed instances having occurred at the tum’.

cartilaginous lines of union of the base of the skull, at the epiphy- sial lines in long bones, and in such permanent cartilages as those of the larynx and trachea. To these direct outgrowths of cartilage- cells Virchow has given the distinctive name of ecchondroses. Usually the cartilaginous tumours do not grow from pre-existing cartilage ; they grow either from the periosteum or the marrow of the bones, or they form in certain glandular organs, especially the salivary glands (parotid, labial, &c.), the mammary gland (oftenest in the dog), the lacrymal gland, the testis, &c. These latter enchondromata are a class apart, involving considerations of disordered everyday secretion rather than of the revival of embryonic activity (see "Errors of Secretion," p. 379 below). The enchondromata that fall to be considered here are those which grow within or upon the metacarpal bones and the finger-bones, more rarely in the corre- sponding bones of the foot, not unfrequently in the bones of the face, and, it may be, in the leg-bones and arm-bones, or in bone anywhere.

Enchondroma.—The simplest cases (but the least frequent) are those that form between the periosteum and the hard bone from the growth and transformation of the cells of the periosteum, bemg directly homologous to the ensheathing cartilage-callus of repair. They differ from the cartilage of repair in precisely the same way that a granulation-like sarcoma differs from the granulation-tissue of repair,—that is to say, the existence of the tissue is not self limited, or it has no tendency, or only a feeble tendency, to cica- tricial modification, shrinkage, or absorption. These purely sub-periosteal enchondromata are said by Paget to be nearly character- istic of the ends of long bones, although they do not encroach on the articular cartilage. When a cartilaginous tumour occurs in the shaft of the bone it is partly subperiosteal and partly in the marrow; and in the most characteristic seat of enchondromata, the bones of the fingers, the growth is entirely in the marrow if the tumours are multiple ; but, curiously enough, it is subperiosteal if there is only a single tumour (Paget). There are also cases where islands of cartilage form in the compact substance of the bones, corresponding to Haversian systems.

The tissue-affinities of a cartilaginous tumour growing between the periosteum and the hard bone are not difficult ; the homologue, as we have said, is the callus-cartilage of repair. The histogenesis and physiological

analogies of an enchondroma of the medullary canal of a bone are less easy. We know that the marrow was pre- ceded, in the development, by a bluish rod of foetal cartilage, of which all characteristic traces had disappeared before birth, As the blood-vessels entered it, it had changed into a spongy kind of bone, in whose spaces Jay many spherical nucleated cells retaining a hematoblastic or blood-making function ; all the spongy bone 1s gradually absorbed in the shaft, the last traces of it being a few spicule on the hard inner wall of the medullary canal, and the cavity is occupied by a highly vascular substance, the red marrow characteristic of young bones. The spherical cells of the red mar- row become excavated into fat-cells, and the red colour changes to yellow. It is probably in this final phase of the development inside the shaft of a bone that we must look for the opportunity of the central enchondromata forming. The secret of the return to cartilage in some cases, and at certain spots, probably lies in the change of red marrow into yellow; instead of becoming fat, it

PATHOLOGY

The tumours in question are most

becomes a kind of cartilage. common, at least, just at the time of life when that change in the character of the marrow takes place. bones, where the marrow remains red, the internal enchondromata rarely occur (a case is quoted by Paget at the lower end of the fibula), but chiefly the subperiosteal. If the enchondromata were composed of a definite type of cartilage, and, above all, if they were stable in their structural characters, the relation of them to the marrow of bones, which these facts point to, would not be a very intelligible one. But the enchondromata are rather a kind of new growth in which there is a good deal of gristly substance of one kind or another, associated with a good deal of mucous or myxomatous tissue, with cystic spaces containing – gpucous or honey-like fluid, and even with blood-spaces. Besides

the myxomatous tissue, there may also be tracts and areas of other soft tissue made up of spindle-cells, multinuclear cells, and various

» Qane seed oehES one

a Bh eer Coes

cl Dil = & ma

Fig. 380. Fig. 31.

Fic. 30.—Feetal or parenchymatous cartilage from enchondroma of upper jaw (horse). (The hyaline intercellular substance is left out.)

Fia. 31._From enchondroma of upper jaw of woman; a few large cartilage-cells in a tissue consisting mostly of branched cells.

nondescript forms; and, most significant of all, there may be much of the cartilaginous substance quite foetal in its characters, —that is to say, consisting almost entirely of cells, with a small amount of more or less tough hyaline intercellular substance. Fig. 30 shows a highly cellular kind of cartilage from a tumour of the upper jaw of a horse. The next cut (fig. 31) is from a cartila- ginous tumour of the upper jaw of a woman ; it shows cartilage- cells with definite capsules, and surrounded by a kind of tissue which would be called myxomatous. The shades of difference among the tissues of enchondromata are indeed endless. They may be said to be all possibilities open to the red marrow (hemato- blasts) on the way to become fat ; sometimes one devious route is : taken, sometimes another, and the result may be soft mucous tissue, various forms of cartilage, or true bone as an ulterior development of the cartilage. Osteoma.—Next to the enchondromata among the tumours of bone we may take the osteomata, or outgrowths from the bone ____ which have themselves the structure of true bone, Their most ostosis.common form is the exostosis, an osscous node or spine, or

.

Osteoid Tumours (Subperiosteal Malignant Tumours).—By far the – most important of the tumours of bone are those which are com- period, or shortly after growth has

rounded tumour generally, on the outer surface of a bone. Some- H | times an exostosis is found covered by a considerable cap of car- ! | y posed of a

crude kind of bone, or of various kinds of soft tissue which show a more or less ceased ; they. are by no means rare, and

een none -seps

tilage; and, whether it be or had been partly cartilaginous, or whether it be entirely: osseous, it isa product of the periosteum, and it illustrates the ordinary osteoblastic function of that tissue. Sometimes the exostosis is spongy, at other times it is hard as ivory, the flat bones of the head being the favourite scat of the feeble tendency to

osseous transforma-

tion. These tu- –

mours of the bones

are apt to occur

latter variety. during the growing

oo

are often fatal. Like a 2 ED is

the enchondromata, = SEELS

a divided into Se ose i

under p Sted Fic. 32.—Structure of osteoid tumour.

teum, or the external tumours of bone, and those which begin in the medullary canal, or the internal. The former are much the least complex; and, like the subperiosteal enchondromata, they are mostly found at the ends of long bones, especially at the end of

Again, at the spongy ends of

the femur. The growth is clearly subperiosteal; the outlines of the compact bone of the shaft can often be seen running through it. The structure of this kind of tumour is tolerably uniform ; it is not bone, but an irregular product of the periosteum to which the name of ‘‘osteoid” has been given. The structure is that shown in fig. 32. There is a network of slender trabecule, mostly form- ing long parallel meshes, and with numerous but less conspicuous cross subdivisions; these are impregnated with osseous salts; but it can hardly be said that bone-corpuscles are embedded in them as in the normal growth ¢ of bone from periosteum (fig. 33). rhe cells which correspond to the osteo- @

blasts are ranged along op

the sides of these trabe- Fig. 33.—Spicule from ossifying parietal bone (kitten); osteoblasts becoming included as bone-corpuscles.

5

cule and in the spaces between them; but they fall short of the true osteoblastic grouping, and they seldom become bone-corpuscles embedded in an osseous ground-substance. This is

a peculiar error of the osteoblastic process, but a not unintelligible

one. It may be further illustrated by another form of periosteal

tumour in which there was no deposition of the hardening matter

at all. This tumour (fig. 84) grew around the metatarsal bone of Soft peri- the little toe, and, like the osteoid kind of tumour last described, osteal

it had a power of infecting the neighbouring tissues and even dis- tumour. tant organs, which need not be dwelt upon at present. The struc-

ture is a strange reminder of the inherent osteoblastic function

of the periosteum from which it grew. There is not a particle

ee —— Er OG O° SOs : eG2 C8 OSGGe Qc,

Fria. 34.—Periosteal tumour of fifth metatarsal bone.

of osseous or earthy matter in its substance ; but it has the trabe- cular type of osteoid tissue, and the cells have the surface-grouping of osteoblasts. They are the elongated or spindle-shaped cells of the periosteal tissue, which have become more cubical and angular, and have formed rows of free cells round the walls of the inter- stitial slits or alvcolar spaces. The difference between this and an osteoid tumour is that a certain attempt has been made in the latter towards true bone in the deposition of earthy or bone salts in the trabecule. In the case of the soft tumour of the periosteum there were clear traces of rickets in infancy, and the essential thing in rickets is the tardy or inadequate deposition of earthy matter in the growing bone, In both tumours the formative activity of the periosteal cells outruus their osteoblastic and ossifying functional activity, so that the latter is always behind, and the perfect result of hard bone is never attained. How this crror makes a malignant tumour is another and more difficult question.

Myeloid and other Internal Tumours of Bone.—The foregoing are Myeloid representative instances of external or subperiosteal tumours of bone- bone in addition to the enchondromata and osteomata. There tumour. remains an important group of internal tumours, or tumours of the bone-marrow ; and these, with the corresponding group of internal enchondromata, exhaust the morbid new formations incidental to the growth of the skelcton. There is, indeed, no hard-and-fast line between the enchondromata and the internal tumours of bone ; the latter have almost the same mixture and confusion of structure in various parts that the cartilaginous tumours have. The principal seat of the soft tumours of the bone-marrow is the lower end of the thigh-bone, the ends of the other long bones being the next most favourite seats. A certain tumour of the jaws, the myeloid epulis, is also classed with them. The tumour often grows quickly, and may attain an enormous size ; it causes the absorption or trans- formation of the hard walls of the bone, and there may be nothing between it and the skin, muscles, and tendons but a more or less continuous thin shell of bone. The interior has a most diversified aspect. Many patches are friable and ycllowish, other areas are a livid purple and gelatinous, and there are often blood-clots and cystic spaces filled with a tenacious brownish mucous or colloid fluid. Amidst these softer parts there run tracts of more spindle- celled or fibrous tissue,

and there are often islands of cartilage, or fragments of osteoid substance. The only clue to this puzzling diversity of texture is the inherent range of possibilities in the function of the bone-marrow, Derived from embryonic mesoblast,

Dermoid eyst.

ofa

it began as a temporary feetal cartilage; it then became spongy bone filled with red marrow, in which state it remains in the ends of long bones, in the diploe of flat bones, and in the in- terior of bones like the vertebre. In the shafts of long bones the trabecule of bone are all removed and only red marrow remains, with a pronounced hematoblastic function ; but, when growth is well advanced, the cells of the red marrow become exca- vated to fat-cells, their blood-forming function ceasing therewith. We have also seen that, in the process of repair, the marrow and its blood-vessels together are able to produce new bone between the broken ends. There are here memories cnough to produce very fantastic results if anything should arise to recall the develop- mental activity. Disregarding the livid or blood-like patches, the mucous areas (whether myxomatous tissue or colloid fluid), and the fragments of cartilage and of osteoid tissue, some of which have been spoken of above, let us consider the tissue that is most characteristic of this group of internal bone-tumours. It is the yellowish or sand-coloured areas of friable texture, corresponding to the tissue named by Paget “myeloid,” or marrow-like. Its name is duc to the fact that it always contains a number of multinuclear eells, giant-cclls or myeloplaxes, such as are found in the

marrow of young D> bones. Its yellow- Ls ish colourisalmost 4 : sufficient of itself SA @)

to indicate the ry presence of these ‘/s

elements. The cut on ep (fig. 35) shows FF” selina abies $ several of these Fig. 35.—Myeloid tissue of tumour of thigh.

myeloplaxes lying among cells of various shapes with a single nucleus. In one direetion it is no great step from this to myxo- inatous tissue or other hematoblastic modifications; and in another direction it is no great step back to cartilage. We shall probably not go very wide of the mark if we take the common starting-point of the various tissues to be fcetal cartilage, as drawn in fig. 30 from an enchondroma of the upper jaw ; and, given feetal cartilage, it is not difficult to follow it along the various lines of its historical development in the shaft of a boue, to imagine the development taking a devious turn at one point or another, and so to account for the heterogeneons structure of the tumour,—some of the structure, indeed, being strange to the normal types of growth. Dermoid Cysts.—Having now illustrated two great instances of embryonic function revived in after life to the. production of tumours—namely, the blood-making and the bone-making functions —and having therewith disposed ofa considerable number of all the tumours that have a mesoblastic homology, it will be convenient to advert to a remarkable kind of tumour which shows to the fullest extent what the embryonic mesoblast can do in the way of fantastic new productions, namely, dermoid cysts. Not only blood and bone, but teeth, skin, hair, glands, musele, and nerve are pro- dueed as the tumour-constituents in these remarkablenew growths. Their usual seat, and the invariable seat of the most perfect of them, is the ovary; and the ovarian is just that mesoblastic tissue upon which the memories of development are as if concen- trated ; for it is from an ovarian cell that the embryo grows in the perfect likeness of the parent. These selected cells of the ovary, or, in other words, the ova, are specially charged with the reeollec- tions of the past history of evolution and growth ; and the rest of the ovary appears to possess the same lively memory, if not to the same extent, yet to a much greater extent than mesoblastic tissue elsewhere. The stroma of the ovary is the best example in the body of embryonic spindle-celled mesoblast ; only in some animals does it become normally fibrous, and in any animal it may revert to embryonic characters with the greatest ease at the generative periods or at other times, and even in extreme old age. But for the fact that the tissue keeps within normal limits of form and extent it might pass muster for spindle-celled sareoma, in all respeets, including the warp-and-woof arrangement of the tracts of cells. From this tissue cysts are developed interstitially, and they are not the less interstitial in their development that their homo- logue is often, if not always, a Graafian follicle. That, however,

is a region of controversy, and it will be more convenient to take an unambiguous case first. Such would be a dermoid cyst under the skin, say in the neighbourhood of the orbit. It is true that even these cases are sometimes explained by assuming that the skin has somehow become involuted at the particular spot during development ; but no observed facts warrant this assumption, an the histogenetic facts of the new growth itself are entirely against it. Fig. 36 shows a portion of new-formed skin on the wall of a small congenital dermoid cyst over the external angular proeess of the frontal bone ; adjoining the actual skin there may be seen the interstitial cells of the connective tissue becoming adapted in form and arrangement to continue the layer of rete mucosum over the cyst-wall beyond. The adaptation is very

“may be seen the same peculiar

PATH OLUGT

much the same which has already been mentioned with referenee to the new skin of a granulating surface ; the conneetive-tissue cells become large and cubical, often multinuclear, and elongated towards

Siaet ae set Pe te > “8 ome ae ae * oe Oe

Fic. 36.—Wall of dermoid cyst, showing how the surface-stratum is produgell from interstitial connective-tissue cells.

the surface. The supply of these formative cells comes from the eonnective-tissue elements lying among the parallel fibrous bundles of the cyst-wall.

For a dermoid of the ovary it is impossible in a brief space to give any idea of the marvellous textures that are being woven side by side in various parts of the cyst-wall,—the areas of fetal cartilage, the interlacing bundles of plain muscular fibres, the long rows of pigment-cells, and, not far off, the rows of mucous cells developed interstitially, and maturing so as to be fused into the fluid of sub- ordinate cysts. At one place there is a piece of skin, underneath which will be found an enormous development of sebaceous glands ; where the skin ends a brownish velvety patch begins, with no sebaeeous glands, although there are rudimentary hairs at various depths.

This under the microscope will be found to approximate to granulation-like tissue, with many variously-shaped pigment-eells, and corresponding probably to the congenital mothcr-marks of the skin proper. It must suffice to give a single illustration of the strange formative activity of this mesoblastie tissue, namely, the Jormation of hairs.

|

Hairs in dermoid cysts are formed in a very Hai f

peeuliar manner. It is usual in subcutaneous dermoids to find them der: d embedded parallel to the surface at various depths in the midst of cyst.

multinuclear or giant-cells. Some of these multinuclear masses

_may be secn undergoing a vitreous transformation down the middle,

as in fig. 37, a; elsewhere

central rodextending througli a succession of giant-cells ; and, most remarkable of all, there is the appearance drawn in c. In this last case the vitreous rod is capped at each end by a giant-cell, and the characteristic imbrieation of scales has developed on it over the intervening leugth. The cross section of such a hair isseenind. The section of hair is evidently a part of

the multinuclear cylinder; it ;

is in this instance well to one F!¢- 37.—4, vitreous transformation along a

aide. tat de dw otill enclosed central line in interior of giant-cell; 0,

2

f : b, hairs lying among giant-cells in wall of by the marginal nuclei of the a

dermoid cyst; ¢, hair in dermoid cyst, cell, which are flattened into capped by giant-cells; d, cross-section of plates upon it; in other in-

a hair a ae of a giant-cell (der- res 5 id cyst). stances it is found lying out- «Scales side the largest of a cluster of giant-cells and surrounded by the smaller ones. The. nature of the transformation in the heart of these multinuclear blocks is not easy to determine; the most

_striking circumstance is that other giant-cells, which appear to be

advancing in the same direction, or to have diverged from the same kind of development, have an area of deep-brown or orange pig- nent in their centre instead of the vitreous or horny transforma- tion,—the marginal belt being free from pigment. This is a peculiar formative use of giant-cclls. We have already seen that they are used in the vessel-making processes of the placenta and of repair ; we have seen also that they may be the media through which a granulation-surface acquires a covering of epidermis; and here we find them playing the part of hair-follicle.

A dermoid cyst reveals the surprising spontancities of a collec- tion of embryonic cells of the mesoblast,—the inherited traditions of their life,—manifested in diverse ways side by side, and mani fested often fecbly and grotesquely. There is no reason to seek for the source of these various products beyond the stroma of the ovary itself ; and the variety of the products must be a measure of what that kind of tissue can do in the way of new formation. When various kinds of structure are thus brought together in their de- velopment we have an evidence, not only of the indwelling power of mesoblastic tissue to revert to embryonic modes of life, but also

j

=a

a

ets.

- will be found to have a useful application.

PATHOLOGY

of a common starting-point for structures that come to be very unlike. We may note, among other things, how small a step there is from the production of blood and blood-pigment on the one hand to that of hair on the other.}

§ 5.—ERRORS OF DEVELOPMENT AND GROWTH IN GENERAL.

The more usual departures from the normal type in the embryological rudiments or in the growth of particular organs and parts of the body have been already described in the article Monster. ‘The present section will be de- voted to those errors of development and growth which amount practically to constitutional diseases.

Rickets.—We have hitherto considered the indwelling spon- taneities of the cells and tissues as manifested in the process of repair, and manifested: capriciously in soine tumour-processes ; in these it has secmed as if the blood-making function of the embryo were the most fundamental of all its primitive tendencies, traces of it beg found in the reparative process and in the new growth of tumours. Next to it, and even bound up with it, is the bone-making function ; and we now come to a general or universal disorder of the bone-making function in whigh these developmental doctrines This disorder is rickets, a common malady of infancy and childhood. Attention was first drawn to it in 1650 by Glisson, who spoke of it as a disease of children that had been known to be endemic for thirty years in Somersetshire, and had been brought from the country to London. It is very common in all great cities ; in Vienna it is still known as “‘die Englische Krankheit.” A child developing this error of growth becomes profoundly affected in its health generally. It is tender all over, dislikes to be touched or handled, throws off the bedclothes even in cold weather, perspires profusely about the head, moves its head restlessly in sleep, so as even to wear the hair off, and in its waking hours sits perfectly still and subdued under a kind of suffering which can be but half-realized by its con- sciousness. Such children give little trouble, seldom crying even when left alone. They are very sensitive to cold, and proportion- ately liable to catarrh ; their nervous impressibility also is height- ened, making a peculiar liability to convulsions and to laryngismus stridulus. ‘They are ‘‘ backward children,” and, in particular, late in getting their teeth.

The conspicuous error in such subjects is in the growth of the bones everywhere throughout the body. The rickety condition often begins in children who are plump and apparently well nourished ; and, if the nutritive and other processes are involved at length, it is the osteoblastic process that is primarily at fault.

The details are somewhat different for the two kinds of ossifica-

tion—in membrane or periosteum, and in cartilage. Regarding the former, the error will be readily understood by reference to the accompanying cut (fig. 88) of normal ossification of the

Fig. 38.—Ossifying parietal bone of foetal kitten. a, a, spindle-celled membrane, corresponding to periosteum ; 0, spicule of caleified ground-substance, with free osteoblasts at one end and imprisoned bone-corpuscles at the other ; ¢, broader bars of bone.

parietal bone. ‘The spindle-cells of the membrane are becoming cubical along a line a little below the surface, and a few of them are half-included or imprisoned in the thin bar of bone ; most of them are free on the surface of the calcified bar, as osteoblasts, the Included ones being bone-corpuscles. Increase of the osseous tissue takes place through other ostcoblasts becoming surrounded by cal- cifying ground-substance ; and, in the broader bars of bone below, the bone-corpuscles may be seen to be two or three rows deep. This process goes on until the whole of the osteoblasts (derived from Spindle-cells) have been included one by one within the calcifying matrix ; once included, these cells are incapable of growth ; the multiplication is always in the spindle-shaped cells of the membrane, or on the surface of the hony bars or trabecule ; and the inclusion

. * See Virchow, Die krankhaften Geschwilste, 8 vols., 1863-67 ; Paget, i Path.; Cohnheim, Vorles. iiber allg. Pathol., vol. i. p. 622; Rud. aer, Lehrd. der allg. pathol. Anatomie, Leipsic, 1871.

is of that gradual and co-ordinated kind that there is always a set of free cells left on the surface to keep up the succession of formative elements. It

is not until growth is completed that osteoblasts cease. The error in rickets is that the multiplication of spindle- shaped cells and osteoblasts far outruns the calcifying process. Instead of these elements being produced only as fast as they are wanted for inclusion as bone-corpuscles, they are produced regardless of the forwardness of the calcifying process, upon whose exact co-operation with the cellular formative proccss all true periosteal bone-making depends, The error, or part of the error, of rickets is that the calcifying process is behindhand. A large quantity of soft bone-making material accumulates, which would, under ordi- nary circumstances, have become hard bone as soon as it was formed ; sooner or later it becomes bone, even in rickets, but the deposition of earthy salts is slow, and in the meantime the bones have be- come bent. Not only is there a relative slowness in the calcifying process, but there is an absolute excess of the cellular elements or of the osteoblasts ; and, in the flat bones of the skull, this is shown in the thickness of the bones ultimately, especially along their growing edges. The same excess of formative material beyond what can be used up for bone is seen in the ossification from carti- lage at the epiphysial line. The cartilage-cells divide and multiply at an excessive rate, and the columns of them, instead of keeping in the line of the axis of the bone, radiate to the sides, so that there is often a bulbous enlargement where the epiphysis joins the shaft. The want of harmony in the calcifying and osteoblastic parts of the process is shown by the irre-

gularity of the epiphysial line (fig. 39); it is a straight line normally, but in rickety growth it runs out aud in, cutting off islands of car- tilage in the midst of spongy bone ; and this irregularity is due to the fact that the blood-channels in the cartilage are formed sooner at some points than at others, the calcifi- cation following close on them. In the shaft of a long bone the process is the same as in a flat membrane- bone of the skull ; the periosteum is thick and its inner layers are blood-red, and in extreme cases there is what looks like a stratum of blood between it and the bone. Bone is at length formed from this layer, but it is of the spongy kind, so that the sltaft is softer and more

a@ porous on the outside than on the Fic. 39.—Lower end of femur of

baboon with rickets, showing the broad and irregular epiphysial line of growing cartilage (white), with spongioid tissue above it and islets of cartilage in the spongy bone be- neath, a, a, a; 0, b, irregular epi- physial line of cartilage. (From J. B. Sutton, in Path. Trans., xxxiv.)

inside. In the flat bones of the head, also, the structure is apt to be of the spongy kind throughout, so that they consist as if of diploe entirely, and not of a layer of diploe between two hard plates. Sooner or later, under favourable circum- stances, the spongy bone is replaced by compact bone, and in the end the bones of a rickety subject are harder and thicker than usual. In the worst cases deformities remain, notably the bent spine, the pigeon-breast, and the deformed pelvis. In the very worst cases the stature is dwarfed and the long bones are bent and twisted. Analysing these phenomena and filling in details, we come in the last resort to an indwelling disposition, probably acquired in most cases, or in largest measure, before birth. These tendencies come to an issue in the skeleton, because the growth of the bones is of a nature to tax the organism. The growth of the bones is the great instance of metaplasia; it is a succession of tissue – changes long kept up, and it requires a peculiar co-ordination or orderliness at each step, owing to the fact that stiffness has to be combined with plasticity. The requisite stiffness can only be got step by step through the sacrifice of that plasticity which goes with growth, and hence the special adaptation of a free row of osteoblasts on the surface of bone-trabecule to ensure the apposi- tion of new layers. Cartilage gives the stiffness for a time in all the bones except the clavicle and those of the vault of the skull ; having served its purpose, it becomes spongy bone, blood, and marrow, the spongy bone being finally removed in the shafts of long bones, the marrow remaining, and the blood continuing to be added to the general blood of the body. In these adaptations the early importance of blood-making among the embryonic cells is duly asserted. When the fcetal cartilages have served their turn the hematoblastic function becomes prominent in the cells, and a large part of all that was cartilage literally becomes blood. Accord- ing to numerous observers, it even becomes blood without the accompanying formation of blood- vessels with definite walls. Some of it becomes bone; but the bone is in thin plates only, and much of it is ultimately removed. In the periosteal process, also, where the cartilage-stage of the formative tissue is never gone

Kasso-

witz’s re-

searehes

on riekets,

=

374

through, there are not wanting indications that the same hemato- blastie function is present concurrently with the osteoblastic.

Coming, then, to the actual faets of riekets, we shall find that those features of the process on which the greatest stress has been laid in the recent elaborate researches of Kassowitz are of the nature of over-vascularization or hyperemia. In the ossification from cartilage he finds that the vessels from the perichoridium extend inwards toa greater extent and with less orderliness than usual; then there is a development in the cartilage of colossal vessels, and finally of blood-spaces, packed full of red blood-disks, and with no very definite walls, so that it looks, at the first glance, as if hemorrhage had taken place into the bone-marrow. In many eases there is no sharp line of separation of the embryonic marrow from the contents of these blood-spaees ; it is probable that the gelatinous tissue of the former had ‘‘ passed direct into hemato- blastie substance and so into blood-corpuseles.” In the periosteum also there is much more blood than usual, and the same large blood- spaces are sometimes found. These errors of vascularization Kasso- witz places at the foundation of the rickety process. Deposition of caleareous salts, he points out, eannot take place where there is so mueh blood ; the calcifieation follows in an orderly way only where the movements of the blood. and juices are restrained or distant, the best example of this law being the gradual reduetion of the wide eentral space of an Haversian system to a narrow ehannel containing a single twig of blood-vessel.

The exeess of vascularity in rickets is, by Kassowitz, put down to ‘‘inflammation,” or to the hyperemia of the same ; but we have seen that he also invokes, as a detail in the proeess, an excessive hematoblastic aetivity in the embryonie marrow-eells. The latter is a more fundamental and intelligible fact than ‘‘inflammation” (which begs all the fundamental questions), and we shall do well to give it prominence accordingly. We should then interpret the observations of Kassowitz as follows.

The due regulation of the blood-supply, the restriction of it to definite and ever-narrowing channels, is necessary for the proper deposition of the earthy matter and for the building up of bone in Haversian systems. The embryonic cells surrender their indi- vidual hematoblastic function, while certain tracts of them become definite vessels for the supply of all the rest ; and in proportion as they give up individually their primitive function of blood-making they are in a position to take on individually the function of bone- making. In eompaet bone this change of direetion is carried out most completely ; the cells become osteoblasts in suceessive rows, a ground-substanee impregnated with earthy matter closes in around them, and they are imprisoned for ever as bone-corpuseles. In spongy bone, however, there is still a reserve of hamatoblastic foree ; only thin lamine of bone are formed out of some of the cells, while many of them continue to be hematoblasts and to form the familiar red marrow. Adopting, then, the figure of a struggle between the hematoblastie and osteoblastic tendeneies in embryonie cells, or the pereeption of a divided duty, we shall con- clude that rickets is the undue preponderance of the former. It means spongy bone where there shonld be hard bone, and mueh wider spaces than usual, with much more blood in them in the proper seats of spongy bone itself; and it means in general a retardation of the hardening process.

All this enormous hematoblastie energy or local blood-forma- tion is unfortunately wasted ; the child is no better for it, and is more likely than not to be anemic. The formative powers are diverted from bone-making, and spent upon blood-making ; and the lime-salts in the organism that should have gone to make bone are actually thrown out with the urine, which has been known to have as much as four or even six times its due amount of phos- phates, The organism, when rickets overtakes it, is in this fix, that it makes blood which it ean no longer profit by, and has meanwhile

to part with bone-salts whieh it will want again. The disease is, in fact, an unfortunate contretemps.

Many of the faets of rickets are thus secondary to an initial error in the embryonic functions of the tissues, and the evidenee seems to show that the error must have begun in most cases before birth. Although it is well known that the obvious phenomena of riekets are not usually remarked until the child isa few months old, yet, as Kassowitz has ascertained, the condition "' begins mueh more frequently than has hitherto been assumed in the later months of intra-uterine development." The facts point very clearly to the health of the mother as being primarily at fault. ''The health of the mother," says Sir William Jenncr, ''has a decided influence on the development of riekets in the ehild. Whatever renders her delicate, whatever depresses her powers of forming good blood, that tends to produce rickets in an offspring. . . . The child of an ill-nourished mother is disposed to become riekety when placed under unfavourable cireumstanees after birth, or even under favourable circumstanees in some cases." The disposition must be in most eases, and in the worst eases, congenital in the child's tissues. We should therefore seek in the intra-uterine con- nexion between mother and child for some defect on the maternal side which would induee that whieh would appear to be essential

PATHOLOGY

to rickets in the child, namely, a preponderance of the hemato- blastie function of embryonic cells over the osteoblastic, a reversion in the eell-life of the growing frame towards independent blood- making. In seeking for this source of error, it will be necessary to reeall for a moment the nature of the intra-uterine connexion between mother and child, or the part played by the placenta. Placental Function in Congenital Disorders.—The embryo makes Pj, , its own blood and establishes the connexion with the mother by tal t its own blood-vessels. Its blood is earried to the placenta to be nexiy aerated, as the phrase goes; but it is much more than aerated. and The placenta is a glandular or secreting organ of the mother, riclet inasmuch as the maternal blood, flowing slowly through the sponge- | like tissue of thiek-walled vessels, reeeives additions of mucus-like drops from the

deliquescence of the large nuelei in the proto- plasmic vessel-walls (fig. 40). This mucus-like addition is clearly an adaptation for the ~ Be

foetus ; and the sur- faees of the placenta, where the foetal ves- sels touch it, are further adapted, through a thiek-set eap of nuclei, for . exuding it where it . can be taken up by the plasmatic tissue ofthe chorion. This placental eontribu- tion is the ‘‘uterine milk” furnished by the mother for the use of the foetus, so 2 that, although the latter makes its own blood (and blood-vessels), it reeeives material additions to its blood from the af mother. It is obvi- ; Saree eee ‘ ous, therefore, that Fic. 40.—Secreting structure of placenta (guinea-pig); the secretion of the the walls of the maternal blood-channels are them-

. selves the secreting structure, their substance yield- placenta 18 very €8- ing drops of mucus a, which mix with the blood 0. sential to the foetus,

and the due endowment of the latter must depend greatly upon the structural and functional sufficiency of that organ. It sup- plies the foetus with much of the fluid that eireulates in the latter’s vessels ; it may be said to spare the foetus to that extent the need of producing sueh fluid itself, or to dispense with the hemato- blastic activity of its tissues, so that they may take other formative direetions, such as bone-making. Or it may be eontended that there are ingredicnts in the normal plaecntal secretion which are specially adapted to bone-making. Now, if there should be any interference with these placental contributions, we are left to sup- pose that there must then be a reversion on the part of the foetal cells to self-helping tendencies, and especially to loeal blood-making. The excessive blood-making of rickets, and the retardation of bone- making consequent thereon, would thus be traced to failure in the plaeental function.

But, if there be such a change in the direction of the formative processes of the fcetus as an adaptation to its speeial intra-uterine conditions, why should rickets not become declared until several months after birth? In the first place, we have the evidence col- lected by Kassowitz that there are plain indications of the rickety process to be observed where death of the child has oeeurred before the full term; and, further, there are analogies to show that it requires all the extra-uterine functions to have been in action for some little time before a congenitally-acquired tendency manifests

itself. Although the intra-uterine life comes to an end, and the | child ceases to be dependent on the placental function of the mother, yet the acquired tendency, or the adaptation to a deficient performance of that function, remains for a certain time longer. It comes to an end, however, from the seeond to the fourth year; the | bone-forming tissues cease to follow the devious direetion, the bone- | salts present in the organism are put to their proper use, ossification | resumes its normal course, and, as the soft formative material of bone had aceumulated in exeess, the bones of the once rickety child are in the end harder and thicker than those of normal growth.

There is an assumption in the foregoing which ealls for remark, the assumption, namely, that the placental fuuction has been – adequate on the mother's side or that the requisite additions to the blood have not been made. Our almost complete ignorance of the pathology of the placenta is the reason why the above-mentioned facts and principles have to be eked out by an assumption. We do, indeed, know that the placenta suffers in syphilis of the parent; and we know that in congenital syphilis of the child the growth of the bones is affeeted in many ways analogous to the shortcomings of rickets, and that, as in rickets, the error of growth may not show

itself for some time after birth. It is highly probable that the placental strueture and function suffer under many less special con- ditions of ill-health and mal-nutrition of the mother. The placenta is, in fact, a great formative effort, and the formative power cannot always be adequate. There are in particular two conditions in the mother favourable to rickets in the child, in each of which an absenee of structural and functional perfection in the new-formed organ of intra-uterine nutrition is a priori probable. The one is the extreme youth or immaturity of the mother, assigned by Schonlein as the chief eause of rickets; the other is child-bearing up to a comparatively late period, the latest of a succession of pregnancies being often found to be those which yield the rickety members of a family. But amongst the poor there must be many other causes of general ill-health in the mother operating from time to time. Whatever makes the mother's milk poor

cannot but have told at an earlier stage upon’ the placental structure and function ; and that earlier stage is a vastly more critical time for the endowments of the child, —for all its formative, nutritive, and functional tendencies.

Osteomalacia.—A sort of counterpart to rickets occurs in the _ disease known as osteomalacia or mollities ossium ; and, curiously enough, this is a disease (as distinguished from senile softening) almost exclusively of women during mature life, apt to occur in the gravid state, and especially if there have been repeated pregnancies. It is mostly a disease of poor and hard-worked women, just as rickets is a disease of the children of poor and hard-worked women ; itis not very common, although it is said to be endemic in some localities. ‘The bones become soft or friable, owing to the encroach- ment of the medullary cavity upon the compact substance and the farther absorption of spongy bone; the encroachment may be so extensive that only a thin shell of bone or parchment-like mem- brane remains. ‘This enormous medullary space is filled with marrow, but not the marrow of adult life. The marrow is of the fetal kind, red, and often containing areas of blood, abounding in nucleated marrow-cells, and with a deereasing number of fat- cells, Ultimately the marrow becomes gelatinous. The process consists essentially of a reduction of the bone to red marrow, as in the first formation of the medullary cavities of long bones ; the carthy salts are removed, and all the cells of the tissue acquire an embryonic character. Although there arc some facts to show that this proeess takes place sometimes in the young, especially in young animals under confinement, yet its charaeteristic occurrence isin women during one of their later pregnancies. It is generally admitted that there is some intimate connexion betwecn the out- break of mollities ossium and the gravid state. We have found reason to conelude that there is an equally intimate connexion between rickets and the gravid state, only that the rickets is in the child. If, in rickets, the child is deprived of something maternal which it should have received, then in osteomalacia the mother parts with something for the child which she ought to havekept. In both cases the organism of the mother is overtaxed ; but in the more general case, where the child becomes rickety, the tax has not been met. In the rarer case, the welfare of the child in utero takes precedence of the welfare of the parent ; one may conceive that the formative effort for the placenta liad been so great that the organism in

general was impoverished. As a matter of fact, the bones of the mother are robbed of their earthy matter, and the commenecment, at least, of that diversion of substance is somehow connected with the gravid state. It is noteworthy, in this con- nexion, that a fractured bone in a pregnant woman repairs badly, owing to the deficient production of bony callus. Having onee begun, the disease progresses, and the patient dies bedridden ; only in rare instances do the bones become hard again. The loss of osseous matter in mollitics is accompanied by a return to em- bryonie characters and function on the part of all the cells that now form the very extensive marrow ; the hematoblastic function Is conspicuous in the process, and there are also numerous myelo- plaxes. Both the unmaking of bone in the parent and the diversion of embryonic tissue from bone-making in the child would appear to be correlated with the hematoblastic function of the cells. In both diseases phosphates are discharged in excess in the urine, and m neither is there any advantage from the excessive formation of blood. In osteomalacia the embryonic state of the marrow changes after a time to a more gelatinous state ; sometimes a wall forms round the red pulpy fluid, producing a cyst of the bone with brownish contents, and in these cases the disease is said not to progress farther.

Cretinism.—A much more profound error or defect of all the developmental powers of the body than that of rickets is found in cretinism. Certain aspects of this subject have already bcen treated of in the articles Crurinism and INSANITY; and another aspect of itis referred to in the section of this article dealing with the thyroid gland (see p. 385). It remains to mention here a few of the anatomical and external characters of the disease. With the ow mental development there usually go a large tongue, a broad and flat nose, loose and thick skin, and stunted limbs. The error of growth in the bones, which is only a part of a very extensive Tange of erroneous development, is somewhat different from that of

rickets. In the bones of the skull there is usually found synostosis, or premature union at one suture or another, not unfrequently at the sphenobasilar, giving the base of the skull an up-and-down direction. ‘The premature union along one line or other leads to compensating expansion

elsewhere, so that the skull is misshapen ; the forehead usually retreats, the top of the head is flat, and the oeciput small, the type of skull being markedly brachycephalic or broad. One distinctive point in the bone-lesions of eretinism relates to the stunted limbs, which are not at all characteristic of rickets. The stunted growth depends upon a complete departure from the ordinary relation of the epiphysis to the shaft. A bone such as the thigh-bone grows geal to the length, chiefly by the activity of the cartilage of the epiphysis along the epiphysial line: the carti- lage-cells multiply on the surface of the epiphysis next to the shaft ; they become grouped in long perpendicular columns ; and, as ossi- fication proceeds, the new bone becomes an integral part of the shaft. Meanwhile the epiphysis itself is becoming ossified radially from the centre outwards. In the crcetin the aetivity along the epiphysial line is somehow checked, and it has been found that a fibrous band extending inwards from the periosteum forms a kind of barrier in the position of the proliferating epiphysial line, cutting off the shaft from the epiphysis ; thus the shaft is deprived of those accretions at each end upon which its elongation mainly depends. At the same time the cartilaginous epiphysis spends its proliferative force within itself; it expands in all directions, becoming a large knob, and part of its ossification may be effected by a sort of in- verted activity of the epiphysial line, which proliferates towards the interior of the epiphysis, instead of growing towards the con- tiguous shaft. No analysis of these peculiarities of bone-growth in cretins need be attempted, but some remarks are offered on p. 385 with reference to the mother’s share in this congenital condition.

Chlorosis.—Contrasting with rickets, in whieh the tendency Chlor- born with the child produces symptoms of ill-health in ehildren of osis,

both sexes within the first year, and seldom later than the seeond, chlorosis is a congenital condition of which there are symptoms first at the age of puberty, and almost exclusively in the female sex. The congenital nature of this condition has been made prob- able by the anatomical observations of Virchow, which go to show that in chlorotic subjects there is very uniformly found a narrow or inadequate aorta, much more elastic than usual, with its inner coat irregular in thickness and disposed to degenerative changes, and with its intercostal branches coming off in a more than ordi- narily irregular manner. These anatomical peculiarities are natur- ally part of the congenital

endowment of the individual. The full force of the chlorotic state is not felt until the time of puberty, and in the male sex it is hardly felt at all. It is, indeed, associated in the most intimate way with the remarkable periodicity of ovu- lation to which the female sex is subject ; it manifests itself in the years when that function begins, and chiefly at each successive period of the function. After a few years the indications of it become feebler and tend to disappear. Want of sunlight in the daily life of the individual is the chief aggravating circumstance of the anemia of chlorosis. The vascular system is on a small seale, to begin with, and there is too much blood in the body for the size of the vessels ; the blood is not quite normally constituted, having too few corpuscles in proportion to the plasma, and in the red disks there is too little hemoglobin or colouring matter. While the blood and blood-vessels are poor, the fat of the body, and especially the subcutaneous, is abundant.

Hamophilia.—This is another general state of the vascular sys- tem, which is always congenital, and often runs in families, one or more of whose members are ‘‘bleeders.” It is a disorder of the boys of a family just as distinctively as chlorosis is a disorder of the girls. A remarkable disposition to bleed, with or without the pro- vocation of an injury, is the whole disease ; neither structural change of the blood-vessels nor peculiar composition of the blood has been made out, and there is nothing remarkable in the ordinary appear- ance of a bleeder. When the bleeding is spontaneous it comes from the mucous membranes, especially from the nose, but also from the mouth, bowel, and bronchial tubes; one of the most eommon and fatal traumatic occasions of bleeding is the extraction of a tooth. Even slight bruises are very apt to be followed by extrava- gations of blood into the tissues; the swollen joints (knee especially) of a bleeder are probably due, in the first instance, to the escape of blood into the joint-cavity or into the synovial membrane. It is always from the very smallest vessels that the blood escapes, and from these it may escape in such quantities as to cause death within a few hours. It appears that the same extensive capillary hemor- rhage may occur anywhere in the body provided the opportunity is furnished, by a slight injury or otherwise, for the blood to escape.” eee ee eS ee

1 Literature.—Of riekets :—W. Jenner, Afed. Times and Giaz., 1860, vol. i.; Virchow, Cellular- Pathologie, 4th ed., 1871, chap. xx. (also in his Archiv, vol. v., 1851) ; Kassowitz, Die normale Ossification und die Erkrankungen des Knochensystems bei Rachitis und hereditirer Syphilis, Vienna, 1883; Id., in summary, in Trans. Internat. Med. Congress, vol. iv. p. 45, Lond., 1881; J. Guérin, Alémoires sur les

Leuk- emia,

§ 6.—Errors oF Bioop-MAkING IN Mature Lire.

The words quoted above from Sir William Jenner— “Whatever depresses the mother’s powers of forming good blood tends to produce rickets in an offspring”—are a special application of a general doctrine of blood-making which has been held empirically by the medical profession at all times. It is not easy to discover with scientific pre- cision the facts of blood-making in mature life upon which this doctrine, otherwise amply justified, is based. It is remarked by Sir Thomas Watson: “ Although we cannot doubt that any considerable modification or defect of the fluids that feed and renovate the blood, and particularly of the chyle, must have a direct influence upon its com- position and quality, we really know but little about them except in their effects. We seldom have any means of procuring these the first products of nutrition so as to ex- amine them, or to test their qualities, yet we can perceive causes that are likely to deteriorate or deprave those fluids (unfit aliment, impure air), and we know that, under the continued operation of such causes, the blood, replenished by these fluids, 7s actually and sensibly modified.” The more recent development of the physiology of metabolism has been followed by an extension of our knowledge of the state of the blood in disease ; thus the text-books speak of such conditions as glycemia (glucose in the blood), aceton- eemia, cholemia (jaundice), lipseemia (fat in the blood), uremia, &c., some of which fall to be spoken of in sec- tions following. In the present section it is rather the corpuscular part of the blood that has to be considered with reference to its renewals in mature life. It is now known that red blood-disks are continually being added to the blood, continually perishing in a like ratio; the red marrow of bone is unquestionably a source of the red disks, and so probably is the pulp

of the spleen ; again, the liver plays some part, not yet precisely determined, in the cycle of changes that the solid elements of the blood undergo. Confining the attention, then, to the corpuscular elements of the blood, we shall best approach the question from the side of the colourless or white blood-corpuscles, the undue proportion of which is the most obvious fact in the import- ant disease called leukeemia.

Leukemia, or Lewcocythemia.—The relation of the colourless corpuscles of the blood to the red disks is variously explained ; all that we know, however, from such occasional cases as blood-cysts points to the red blood-disks being the detached protoplasm of the hematoblast,—the nucleus surviving. Appearances in the sub- eutaneous tissue of the foctus, in the thymus, in the spleen, and in bone-marrow point in the same direction. The colourless corpuscles of the blood would thus be the surviving nuclei of the original hematoblasts, the red disks being detached portions of the proto-plasm of the same. There would be in any case several red disks for one surviving nucleus; but in actual blood the proportion of cells of the latter kind is very much smaller than that. The pro- portion varies in health from time to time, and it is usually increased during pregnancy, making a physiological leucocytosis. Ordinarily the colourless corpuscles are in the proportion of from 1 in 300 red (after a meal) to 1 in 1000 red (in the fasting state). If the colourless cells are the surviving nuclei of hemato-blasts, we must suppose that the protoplasm continues to be renewed around the old nucleus, so that the same hematoblast gives off successive generations of red disks. The cells of red marrow, of the thymus (while it lasts), and of the splenic pulp would thus be standing sources of new red corpuscles. Evi- dences that they are so are not wanting in fine sections of these tissues, although the process of budding of the hemoglobin-

Difformités du Systeme osseux, Paris, 1889-43 ; Humphry, The Human Skeleton, Camb., 1858 ; various authors in Zrans. Path. Soc., vol. xxx, Lond., 1881. Of osteomalacia :—Kassowitz, op. cit., chap. Val 8 Cohnheim, Vorles. tiber allgem. Pathologie, vol. i. p. 518; Rib- bert, in Virchow’s Archiv, vol. lxxx. Of eretinism (morbid anatomy): —-Virehow, several papers reprinted in his Ges. Abhandl., p. 891 sq., Frankfort, 1856 ; Eberth, Die foctale Rachitis und ihre Beziehungen zum Cretinismus, Leipsiec, 1878 ; Barlow and others in Trans. Path. Soc. , Lond. , 1881-84. Of chlorosis:—

Virehow, Ueber die Chlorose, &c., Berlin, 1872; Laache, Die Andmie, Christiania, 1883. Of hemophilia: —J. Wickham Legg, Treatise on Haemophilia, Lond., 1872.

FATHOLOG Y

tinted fragments of protoplasm is not so marked in all its stages as in those abnormal instances of heematoblastie activity to which reference has been made (blood-cysts, angeioma of liver), In the normal process there seems to be less cleavage of the nucleus although the nucleus is not unfrequently seen to be constricted or half-divided ; the marginal protoplasm detaches itself from one side as if with little trouble, new protoplasm gathers around the nucleus, and so the supply is kept up just as if it were secretion from the eells of a gland. If the cell which had disengaged its red- dish protoplasm in the form of one or more disks or globules were thereupon to continue in its nuclear state, and to acquire no further investment of cell-substance, it would practically amount to a colourless corpuscle of the blood. There are, as we have seen always a few such eells in the blood—one in several hundred red disks—and the real difficulty about them is to understand why they should be present in the circulating fluid at all. In the disease of leucocythemia they increase enormously, so as to be in the ratio of twenty, fifty, or even one hundred to the hundred red disks, which are themselves absolutely fewer; and, if we interpret that pheno- menon according to the view that they are residual nuclei of hematoblasts, we shall conclude that the hematoblasts have very generally ceased to produce new generations of red disks, have stood still at the lower grade, and have passed bodily from their blood-forming habitat into the blood-stream. There would be, in short, an arrest of function, manifesting itself not only in the great falling off in the number of red disks but also in the presence within the vessels of these sluggish or crippled elements of the blood-making organs and tissues, as if in lieu of the red disks themselves. What, then, is the actual condition of the proper seats of blood-making in the leucocythemic disease?

The interest centres in the state of the spleen and of the bone- Mor!

marrow ; according to modern views the so-called lymphatic leuco- anat’ cythemia belongs to another class of processes and may be here of le

disregarded. The spleen is in all cases enlarged, from twice up emid

to fifty times its normal size ; it retains its form, but its struc- ture is firmer, less sanguineous, streaked with pale or yellowish lines, or mottled with yellowish. patches. The marrow in the bones is often changed in appearance: it has become grey or red- dish grey and diffluent; and this change may be observed even in the marrow-fat of long bones. These changes are essentially in the hematoblastic tissue,—in the splenic pulp and in the bone- marrow ; the cells of that tissue have to a great extent ceased to form blood, their activity has taken another and formative direc- tion, from which no functional product results (red blood-disks), but mere overgrowth of tissue and of cellular nuclei. The hema- toblasts have, in fact, become constructive when they should have continued functional. The enormous number of colour- less corpuscles thrown into the blood has to be traced to the same diversion of the hematoblastic forces which has in the spleen led to textural overgrowth ; instead of remaining in the seats of blood-making, and continually reclothing themselves with hemoglobin-tinted protoplasm, the hematoblasts have passed bodily into the blood-current in their naked nuclear condition. The colourless cells of leukemia may be said to have the same relation to the hematoblastic process that was claimed, in a former section (see p. 365), for the pus-cells of granulations. The peculiar state of the bone-marrow characteristic of leukeemia has often been compared to granulation-tissue ; in some cases it has even the appear- ance of puriform infiltration. Again, the first cases of leucocythemia were described by Hughes Bennett as cases of ‘‘suppuration of the blood” ; and, if the pus of granulations is an analogy for the cells of leukemic blood, the textural developments of granulations may be held to be an analogy for those formative changes in the spleen which are found in its enlarged state.

Pseudo ~~leukemia.—Leucocythemia is a definite and generally fatal disease wherein the increase of colourless corpuscles of the blood and the decrease of the red disks are referable, in the last resort, to disordered hematoblastic function in the spleen or bone~~ marrow, or in both.

There may be a state of lewcocytosis without Levy

this profound and fatal hematoblastic disorder, wherein the in- cyt®:

crease of colourless corpuscles is referable to organs and tissues which have no blood-making function. Affections of the lymph- atic glands are the principal occasion of this leucocytosis 0” pseudo-leukemia, and such affections may occur in the course of morbid processes so various as scrofula, cancer, and typhoid fever. A considerable degree of leucocytosis occurs also in_the later mouths of pregnancy as a perfectly normal incident. The lymph- atic glands and the lymphatic follicles of the mucous mel: branes are collections of lymphoid cells which have no true blood-making function, however closely their cells may resemble those of the bone-marrow, of the spleen-pulp, and of the thymms ; they are rather related to the cellular by-products, or the solid waste of secretion (see section 7). From them, or through them, the eolourless cells in the blood may receive considerable additions from time to time; but these have a significance quite different from the profound disturbance of blood-making which constitutes leucocythemia, and they are better classed under the heading ©

FATHOLOGY

leucocytosis or pseudo-leucocythemia. The difference is even dis-coverable, according to Virchow, in the morphological character of the colourless corpuscles in the two cases. In true leukemia (splenic) the corpuscles in the blood are somewhat large, with multiple nuclei, and more rarely with a single nucleus ; in the pseudo-leukemia (lymphatic) the cells are small, the nucleus single and large for the cell, the cell-substance being often so narrow a zone as to be hardly appreciable around the nucleus. These are practically the differences between the eells of lymph-glands or follicles and the residual nuclei of hematoblasts (or pus-cells).

This pseudo-leukeemia connects, on the one hand, with Hodgkin’s disease, a general condition of lymph-gland overgrowth, and, on the other hand, with solitary Zymphomatous tumours, such as grow, mostly perhaps, in children in the kidney, or in the follicular tissue of the intestine, or elsewhere.

Pernicious Anemia.—This is another serious and generally fatal error of blood-making, which presents both an instructive parallel to lencocythemia

and an instructive contrast. The onset of this disease is often sudden, it may be with symptoms of chills and heats and other febrile manifestations. It occurs at all periods of life, and in both sexes. The body seems to become strangely blood- less, so that even the point of the finger will not bleed if cut. There is much listlessness, often giddiness, tendency to hemorrhages, especially into the retina, and pains in the bones. Recoveries, temporary or permanent, are more usual than in leucocythemia, especially under the administration of arsenic. The blood is pro-

foundly altered, and the state of it may vary much within a space

of weeks or even of days. The red disks are enormously reduced in number, and many of those that are left have departed from the usual type; they may be either very large or very small, two or three times larger than usual, or two or three times smaller. Some of them are oval and flat, and some of them pear-shaped

vesicles (fig. 41). They a may have also an in- ereased colouring power, whieh means an undue concentration of hemo- globin. When the two ehief blood-making tis- sues are investigated in sueh cases after death they do not always fur- nisl a rational explana- tion of the state of the blood. It is, in fact, somewhat rare to find anything elucidative in the state of the spleen, and the interest is thrown mostly upon the bone-

cious anemia; in the left lower corner is a group of normal red blood-disks for com-

profoundly altered; even the yellow marrow of the (After Laache.)

long bones is red or jelly-like, few or no fat-cells are visible, red blood-disks are everywhere, along with granulation-like marrow- eells, in a fine reticulum, and traversed by blood-sinuses which have been compared to the sinuses of the spleen. Sometimes the nuclear cells of the marrow are found with a zone of reddish pro- toplasm round them or in the state of perfect hamatoblasts. In this peculiar disorder of the blood-making process the salient facts appear to be the following. Red disks are formed from hemato-

parison.

times been held by practitioners to be of the first importance in diagnostics and prognostics. The local distribution of blood, or the amount of it within and the rate of its passage through particular organs and parts, is a more recently investigated subject bound up with the doctrine of vaso-motor nerves. One of the most striking facts in this chapter of physiology is the varying amount of blooc within the “splanchnic area” from time to time. In pathology the question of the varying distribution of blood comes largely into the doctrine of fever and of inflammation ; the further discus- sion of it is reserved for a later part of the article.

§ 7.—ERrors oF SECRETION.

The pathology of secreting structures is concerned, not only with deviations from their normal activities as de- scribed in physiological treatises, but also with an addi- tional series of phenomena recalling the more elementary or embryonic kinds of cellular activity. Besides those great disorders of glandular structure and function which fall to be considered in the next section as errors of meta- bolism, there is a large part of the sum-total of disease which is merely an affair of elementary cellular irregu- larities in the mucous surfaces and glandular organs of the respiratory, digestive, and reproductive systems. In the foregoing illustrations of pathological processes it has often occurred to notice the obtrusion, as it were, of earlier phases of cellular activity into later life, or the revival of embryonic characteristics, both structural and functional. The illustrations already given have related chiefly to blood-making and bone-making ; we now come to a corre-

| sponding class of illustrations from the epitheliated parts

of the body. In the latter also there is a liability to revert to rudimentary forms of cell-life, wherein the epithelial

‘ cells reveal their inherent power to act as independent units,

or their spontaneity and their self-governing properties. Thus, among the morbid conditions of the respiratory apparatus there are only a few, such as

asphyxia, the Cheyne-and-Stokes breathing, and the like, which are directly in contact with the physiology of the respiratory mechanisms. On the other hand, pulmonary catarrhs and their structural after-effects (together with laryngeal and tracheal inflammations) enter largely into the pathology of the respiratory organs, although they are hardly devia- tions from those respiratory functions that have the en- grossing interest for physiology. There is the same class of elementary cellular deviations among the morbid states of the digestive organs, and, most of all, in the pathology of the genito-urinary system,—of the uterus, bladder, and prostate,—and of the breasts. The most universal error that epitheliated surfaces or organs are liable to is catarrh; and closely related to their liability to catarrh is their liability to polypous and simple-glandular tumours, and, under special circumstances, to cancer.

blasts with difficulty; they are mostly either much too large or mueh too small; the hemoglobin is too concentrated in them; the bone-marrow makes quite unusual hematoblastic efforts; but the

Catarrh in general.—The term catarrh (kard, down ; péw, flow) Catarrh was originally applied to a running from the nose ; the mucus was in gen- called ‘‘ pituita,” and in the Hippocratic doctrine of the humours it eral.

: ale

vessels at large remain ill snpplied with blood, while the marrow itself 1s everywhere full of blood, and sometimes even tends to or- ganize itself into a structure like the spleen, Degeneration follows m the muscular structure of the heart and in the walls of blood- vessels ; to the former are owing some prominent symptoms, and probably to the latter the hemorrhages. One of the most singular things in this remarkable disease is the power of recovery, cither temporary or permanent, that the organism may acquire, chiefly under the stimulus of arsenic. As compared with leucocythemia the striking fact is that the part played by the colourless corpuscles 1S from first to last a subordinate and even unrecognizable one.

_Seurvy.—In scurvy we have a blood-disease of a kind somewhat different from leucocythemia and pernicious anemia, inasmuch as it depends, not upon unacconntable and seemingly capricious errors In the blood-making

tissues, but upon errors in the ingesta, upon well-understood defects of diet. (See ScuRVY.)

Lrregularities of Blood ~~distributton.—While the facts of blood~~

was exalted to a place side by side with the blood and the bile. The vague importance assigned to this humour in. the medical philosophy of the Greeks is further shown in the curious fiction which made it to issue from the hypophysis cerebri or ‘‘ pituitary ” body. The mucus of the nose may stand for the mucus of the air- passages generally, and it differs only in degree from that which is expectorated when there is considerable bronchial catarrh. It is now usual, and the usage is scientifically justified, to include all other mucous or muco-purulent or purulent discharges from epitheliated surfaces as the result of a ‘‘catarrhal ” process.

Those mucous surfaces that are most liable to catarrh are ordi- narily kept moist by an exhalation or secretion ; in the mucous

1 See Virchow, Cellular- Pathologie, chaps. ix., x.; Wilks, articles on leukemia in Guy’s Hosp. Reports, and in Wilks and Moxon, Path. Anat., 2d ed., London, 1875; Mosler, Die Pathologie und Therapie der Leukiémie, Berlin, 1872; Gowers, art. “ Leucocythemia,” in Rey-

a making are among the most fundamental in pathology, the facts | nolds’s System of Med.; Malassez, in Arch, de Physiol, 1877 sq.; ‘ is of blood- distribution come more visibly into the every-day mani- | Pye-Smith, ‘Idiopathic Anemia of Addison,” in Guy’s Hosp. Reports,

:

festations of disease. ‘The speed and force with which the blood s driven round its whole circuit vary much ; as measured by the pulse at the wrist these conditions of the circulation have at all

xxvi.; Eichorst, Progressive perniziise Andmie, Leipsic, 1878 ; Laache, Die Andimie, Christiania, 1883; Bizozzero, Rindfleisch, and others on the hematoblastic function.

The ca- tarrhal process.

Catar- rhal infil- tration.

membrane of the stomach and intestine the surface-moisture amounts to a definite layer of glairy or tenacious mucus. In some of the mucous membranes, such as those of the pharynx and cesophagus, trachea and bronchi, there are distinct racemose glands which appear to subserve solely the purpose of lubricating or keeping moist. In every case the normal mucus of an epithelial surface may be taken to be a product of the epithelial cells ; it is as if it were a common and rudimentary function of surface-epithelium anterior to the specific secretions of organs. It is in this common and rudimentary function that the catarrhal process has its roots, a process which not only exceeds the physiological limits of sur- face-moisture, but may even throw into the shade the specific secretion of the part or organ. The catarrhal secretion is always eharacterized by the large preponderance of cells, and the propor- tion of eellular elements increases as the mucous substance becomes muco-purulent and purulent. It is important to observe that there is no definite line where the limits of normal moistness end and ‘¢inflammation” begins ; and, as it is desirable to put off as long as possible the introduction of that entity into pathology, we shall best proceed in the study of catarrh by advancing from the physio- logical activities of cells.

Nature of the Catarrhal Process.—The catarrhal process, like all the so-called inflammatory processes, has been rendered ambiguous by the undoubted share in it that is taken by hyperemia or afflux of blood to the particular epithelial region. By some the hyper- eemia has been taken to be the primary fact, the increased rush of blood to the part and the local stagnation of the same being traced to an upset of the controlling and equalising nervous mechanism of the vessels and to alteration of their walls; by others the local cellular process has been regarded as determining the afflux of blood, as if by a kind of attraction. Whether the afflux of blood precedes the unusual activity of the epithelial cells, and whether some of the catarrhal cells may not be emigrated colour- less corpuscles, are questions that may be considered open ; but there can be no question that catarrh is essentially a hypersecre- tion of the epithelium, or the secretory activity so modified that it becomes to a great extent formative, or its product toa great

extent cellular. The difficulty of proving this is owing to the fact that the normal production of mucus from epithelium is a very subtle and rapid process, the morphological phases of which are hardly to be detected ; in this respect it must be considered analogous to the formation of red blood-disks from hzematoblasts. And, as the details of the hematoblastic process are best seen in certain abnormal manifestations of it, and even in those cases where the morbid condition is one of anemia, so the complete physiological paradigm of mucus-production is best seen where there has been some interference with the perfection of function. We shall per- haps not go wide of the mark if we describe the catarrhal process as a reversion to a more embryonic or more elementary type of cellular activity. The higher the type of secretion, the less obvious are the morphological changes in the secreting cell; in an organ like the liver, which had been early acquired in the evolution of the animal body, the secretion has become so elaborated in the higher animals that the steps of it present hardly any morphologi- cal features at all; on the other hand, in an organ like the breast,

which is a late (mammalian) acquisition, the changes in the secret-

ing cell can be followed at leisure. Catarrh in any mucous surface is the same primitive kind of secretion, and it may be said, in a word, to consist of a fluid product and of an additional by-product of cells, The original epithelial cell is detached bodily, nucleus and all; the protoplasm becomes the more or less viscid or semi- fluid part of the mucus; and the nucleus goes with it as the catarrhal cell. The more the cellular elements predominate, the farther does the secretion deviate from the normal, until we reach the limit of pus, where we invoke the entity of ‘‘inflammation.” Suceulenee and Thiekening of the Catarrhal Mucous Membrane.— A mucous membrane which has been the subject of catarrh for some considerable time becomes thicker and more succulent. If it be examined in microscopic sections it will be found that the underlying connective tissue has become involved; the tissue is ‘infiltrated”’ with round nuclear cells (fig.42); thefibresare becoming

Ret

@ if 2 ‘© eer ed —— <> A = s<—

—

Fic. 42.—Epithelial surface and submucous tissue in a state of catarrh (tubular gland of the dog's skin). a, a', collections of catarrhal cells in the epithelial layer; 0, the same in the underlying connective tissue.

thicker ; and the fineness, delicacy, and translucency of the tissue are disappearing. At certain spots where the 'infiltration " and asso- ciated changes are greatest the surface breaks or ulcerates, and a

''catarrhal ulcer" remains. The central fact in this process is the infiltration of the round nuclear cells beneath the epithelial surface The facile way of accounting for them is to assume that the colour. less corpuscles of the blood had escaped through the walls of the small veins ; but it is more in accordance with observed facts and with unanibiguous analogies to regard them as catarrhal cells which have found their way into the depths of the tissue instead of flowin off by the surface. The presence of these cells in the spaces of the connective tissue is not without effect on that tissue itself; they rouse it to a formative activity which conducts to the succulence and thickening of the mucous membrane, and, it may be, to ulcera- tion at particular spots. To enter on this subject at present would be to open up the question of the infective action of one kind of cell upon eells of another kind (see pp. 382, 383).

Physiological Analogies of Catarrhal Infiltration.—The infiltration of catarrhal eells beneath the mucous surface has close analogies in the normal processes of the body. It is exactly paralleled in one of those crude forms of secretion to which the catarrhal pro- cess has been compared, namely, the kind of secretion, gradually rising in intensity, which goes on in the breast during the period of gestation. This process can be most conveniently observed in the mamma of the cat or dog, where the crude secretory products are for a time cells of considerable size filled with yellow or brown pigment ; the pigmented cells can be followed from the secreting structure into the spaces of the surrounding connective tissue, and thence into lymphatic glands. It would not be carrying this analogy too far to regard the lymphatie follieles of the mucous membranes as collections of or receptacles for the cellular by-pro- ducts of the mucous secretion ; such are the tonsils, the follicles on the back of the tongue and pharynx, the

lymphatic follicles of the stomach of some animals (but not of man, unless it be in infancy), the extensive stratum of lymphoid cells in the villi of the small intestine and the more definite collections of the same (Peyer's patches), and the lymphatic follicles of the great intestine.

Certain it is that all these collections of round nuclear cells are subject to very considerable increase when there is catarrh in the corresponding mucous surface. Not only so, but in catarrh they will show themselves prominently even where they are hardly known to exist normally ; thus, in the intestinal catarrh (summer diarrhea) of young children, even the thin folds of the mucous membrane (valvule conniventes) will be found studded with round nodular or somewhat flattencd lymphatic follicles. In intense catarrh — |

changing into a 'follicular ulcer." In other cases the catarrhal process makes its influence felt in the nearest lymphatic glands, which may be regarded as the second line of receptacles for the by-products of secretion (as well as for the matters of absorption), the submucous follicles being the first line; and, under these circumstances, the lymphatic glands may even suppurate (as in the axillary lyniph-glands of the breast after weaning). Tumour-diseases of Mucous Membranes and of Secreting Structures Tunit- generally.—If catarrh of mucous membranes enters, as Rindfleisch dise says, into the larger half of all the morbid conditions to which of e| mankind is subject, the tumour-diseases of the epitheliated surfaces thel ad and organs may be said to rank among the most formidable of all suri}. maladies, inasmuch as they include cancer. Cancers are diseases primarily of mucous membranes and other secreting structures, most commonly of the stomach, next to it of the uterus, of the i female breast, and of the intestine; another variety of cancers : (epithelioma) is diseases of modified epithelial surfaces, namely, | the skin in general, and the lip and tongue. There are, however, |

these follicles are the favourite scats of ulceration, their substance | f

much simpler tumour-disorders of epitheliated surfaces which it | will be convenient to take first. . i Warts (Papillomata).—Papillomata of the moist epitheliated Wa surfaces are found almost exclusively in those situations where there is a transition from skin to mucous membrane. The rule may not be universal, but there are many instances in which these wart-like

growths have an undoubted relation toa catarrhal pro- | cess of the surface, where the removal of the catarrhal products — has been interfered with. One of the most striking ilustra- tions of this law occurs in veterinary practice; in the horse, especially when he is overworked and ill cared for, the natural smegma of the prepuce gets retained, owing to the fixity of the sheath ; the accumulation has more than a mechanical effect, for it appears to induce a papillomatous condition sometimes of the whole mucous surface. The papillomata are new growths, either in a broad i layer of the uniform thickness of a quarter of an inch or more, Or — they are large dendriform masses arising at various points and each attached by a narrow stem. It is hardly a catarrhal process that we have here to deal with, but it is none the less a disorder of secretion. The natural secretion not finding an outlet, the secretmg surface adapts itself gradually to the unusual conditions. The surface becomes ridged or thrown into folds, or papille arise at isolate points ; blood-vessels run in the central parts of all these reduplica- tions of the membrane ; and the epithelium, instead of disengaginé itself in successive generations of cells after the manner of the natural smegma, takes on a formative activity and builds up 4?

adventitious tissue on the surface, the pattern of which is deter- mined by the looping or den- driform branch- | ing of the blood- vessels (fig. 43). These formative aberrations of secretion are apt to return after removal, even al- though the con- ditions which gave rise to them are obviated ; the |, newdevelopment \ and persistence of the blood- vessels entering their stems ap-

Sk.

duct ; the result is what is called an

**intra-canalicular papilloma,”

Ae 2

Fia. 45,—Papillary outgrowths of epithelial lining in a tubu- lar gland.

Fic. 46.—Intra-canalicular papilloma of breast.

and it is not different in its origin and nature from the papillomata of expanded mucous surfaces which we have already considered.
Cartilaginous Tumours of Glands.—Another formative result of Dis- disordered function, which takes us quite beyond the limits of ordered catarrhal effects, is the occupation of the walls and interior of the glandu- acinus, not with papille of the lining epithelium nor with the lar func- epithelial cells shed into the free spaee as solid by-products of tions pro- the secretion, but with a new tissue foreign to the gland. This ducing occurs in the mamma (more often in the dog than in man), in the cartilage.

rence in these

of fibrous tissue.

{uc 5 0] ;

Bille

cases.

Mucous Polypi.—In many cases mucous polypi have an un- doubted connexion with those states of the mucous membranes which are included under catarrh. An approximation toa multiple polypous condition may be found in the stomach subject to long- standing catarrh, where the ridges and furrows of the mucous mem- brane amount to an actual polyposis ventriculi. Multiple polypi are sometimes met with also in the intestine. The commonest seats of the isolated and stalked mucous polypus are the nasal passages and the cervix uteri. Their structure is after the same plan as the more epidermic papilloma, everywhere tu- bular mucous glands, the epithelium of which is wonderfully perfect (fig. 44); these may branch or communi- cate more than do the normal gland- tubes of the part, and they are separated by tracts of connective £ tissue which appear to the naked

salivary glands (parotid, submaxillary, and labial), in the lacrymal gland, and in skin-glands (e.g., of the scalp); the new tissue may be of the mucous or myxomatous kind, and it is not rarely carti- laginous, or even osseous, at

a few points in the midst of the car- tilage. The occurrence of myxomatous and cartilaginous areas is common in the parotid tumours of man and in the mammary tumours of the dog, and it is nsually explained as an arbitrary and unaccountable overgrowth and transformation of the support- ing connective tissue of those organs. It remains to inquire whether it may not be brought into a rational connexion with disorder of the proper secretory fune- tion. The cut (fig. 47) is taken from a case of extensive tu- mour-diseasein the mamma of

eye as dendriform white lines. In #499) }/; the bitch, in ,

these morbid products the line is iog3//Ps. which much /)ie definitely crossed from functional to {2-7 Py cartilage had (my Vers formative, but we cannot assume any ‘% ‘formed. It

indwelling #2: secretory activity of the part; the

other force than the

represents se- veral acini of

ow fact that presents itself here = f/f) /9)! the gland, hav- Mies A),

is that a perversion of that force ! 0”) 7 Ff ing their in- lect gives rise to an organ-like new forma- F’s. —— pth at polypus | terior occupied st

tion whose plan of structure is plainly “iia J aces with large \P2Ke determined by the blood-vessels. It is worthy of note that the | spherical or NOE g bronchial mucous membrane, which is the most liable to catarrhs, | oval _vesicu- ee

has practically no liability to mucous polypi; and the bronchial mucosa is distinguished, not only by its investment of cartilaginous rings and plates, but by the density of its elastic and muscular coats.

Simple Glandular Tumour (Adenoma).—As the mucous polypus

gli ular is characteristic of the wide expanse of mucous membrane, so the

lated cells with Fic. 47.—Group of acini of mamma (dog), occupied in part firm hyaline with large vesiculated hyaline cells which are practically contents. There °@“tilaginous.

can be no question that these are epithelial cells strangely changed ; but the change will not seem so strange if we keep in mind the range

twur. simple glandular tumour or adenoma is the formative result of | of transformation which the secreting cells of the breast are nor- | functional disorder in the definitely bounded epithelial organs with | mally liable to. There is a stage in the unfolding of this gland

_ tacemose systems of ducts. The glands that are most liable to this | from its periodical state of rest In which the cells become vesicles

; condition are the breast, the salivary glands (including the buccal | filled with mucus, just as there is a more mature period when and labial), the lacrymal glands, and the skin-glands in certain | they are still vesicles but filled with a more fatty or milk-like regions, Whenever the more uniform expanses of glandular struc- | fluid. The change in the tumour is, after all, only from the

ture, such as those of the stomach and the intestine, take on a | mucus-filled vesicles to vesicles occupied by a firm hyaline sub-

_ formative activity to the depth (instead of to the surface, in the | stance ; and, if it were connective – tissuc cells that we were deal- | form of polypi), the result is a cancer, involving other considerations | ing with, the explanation would be at once accepted, according besides those primary or direct deviations from the secreting activity | to the well-known correlation between fat, myxomatous tissue, and if which we are now considcring. cartilage. The facts seem to require that the same formative oh. Intra-canalicular Papilloma.—The simple or non-cancerous | possibilities be granted to epithelial cells ; so that the ae hegre 7 tumour-disease of glands may be represented in most cases in the | and cartilaginous formations in secreting structures oO us — . 7 ht of deviations from the normal secretory activity,— deviations | to their active elements. The supporting tissue of the glands 1s

- Which take a formative direction.

; They connect not remotely with catarrhal states of the secreting structure; but, speaking generally, they stand for irregularities of the apparatus and process of secretion which transcend the notion of catarrh. It will be convemient, however, to proceed in the analysis of them from that familiar basis. The nearest approach to the effects of catarrh is shown in the folded or uneven state of the wall of the terminal secreting recesses or acini of a gland; this condition may be ob- Served in certain skin-glands and in the breast. The cut (fig. 45) is taken from a tumour of the skin-glands of the dog. The lining of columnar or cubical epithelial cells, which is ordinarily a perfectly even surface, is raised into distinct papillary eminences. These may even meet across the space, changing its interior into a nearly solid or at least trabecular tissue. The next cut (fig. 46) shows precisely

€ same process in the breast, this time not in an acinus but in a

a priori passive, and, as a matter of fact, it has not been proved by any detailed observations to be the source of those myxomatous and cartilaginous new formations. The occurrence of vesiculated epithelial cells with firm hyaline contents 1s not the only piece of

ositive evidence. It is much more common to find the columnar epithclial cells elongating into fibre-like elements, straight or crescentic, and developing mucous or hyaline intervals of inter- cellular substance ; in this way there results the myxomatous and fibro- cartilaginous tissue that is so often found in the tumour- disorders of the salivary glands atid more rarely in the labial mucous glands. The glandular plan of the structure in these cases very goon becomes obliterated, and the limits between supporting tissue and secreting apparatus removed ; in a considerable area of hyaline cartilage or fibro-cartilage there are naturally few or no traces left of the apparatus and process of secretion; and there may some-

times be seen (as in the mamma of the bitch) the most remarkable development of all, the change of the cartilage into bone, with perfeet medullary spaces lined by perfect osteoblasts. There are, indeed, no limits, other than the fundamental embryological limits, to the formative possibilities of cells whieh have reverted to primitive embryological funetion. We have already seen that the standing example of an embryonie tissue, the spindle-celled tissue of the ovary, contains within itself the whole range of development which is expressed in the grotesque variety of a dermoid cyst. Another common effect of disordered glandular function is the excessive formation of solid by-products of the secretion, which are either retained in the recesses of the gland or are infiltrated

. into the spaees of the underlying and supporting conneetive tissue.

Where the produets are retained within the gland-space we have the familiar and simple result of cysts from retention, of which the sebaceous cysts or “wens” of the scalp are good examples, But a far more momentous oceurrenee is the infiltration of these erude pro- ducts or by-products of seeretion into the depth. We have already found reason to believe that the same kind of infiltration below the surface takes place in catarrhs, that the nuclear cells found in the deeper layers of a thiekened mucous membrane are of the same origin as the catarrhal cells of the surface-diseharge, and that their presence in the spaces of the eonneetive tissue had been the excit- ing cause of the fibres becoming thick and coarse, or, in other words, of the “inflammatory” changes in that tissue. The infil- tration which comes under our notiee in tumours of seereting struetures is different from this as regards the characters and pro- perties of the eells: as regards their characters, the eells retain more of the epithelial type, that is to say, they are not naked nuelei, but they have a considerable investment of eell-substance ; as regards their properties, these epithelial eells infiltrated below the mueosa do not excite ‘‘inflammation,” but they excite cancer. What remains to be said of the infiltration of by-products of glandular secretion will be included in the section on cancer immediately following.

§ 8.— CANCER.

The popular estimate of the nature of cancer is so well founded that a definition is superfluous. Cancer in patho- logical anatomy differs from

cancer as commonly under- stood in being restricted to the malignant tumour-diseases of secreting structures and epitheliated surfaces generally, to the exclusion of a certain number of equally malignant tumours which grow from the periosteum or the marrow of bone, or from other mesoblastic tissues. The great majority of all the cases which have the fatal progressiveness of cancer are diseases of the stomach, the uterus, the breast, the intestine, and the skin; this group makes so large an element in the sum-total of tumour-disease, and is so homo- geneous within itself, that it may justly appropriate the name of cancer, leaving the other cases of tumour-malig- nancy to be described by more technical names. At the same time it should be clearly understood that the smaller detached group does contain cases where the particular man- ner of fatal progression is not different from the progressive- ness of the epithelial tumour-disorder, such, for example, as the cases of periosteal tumours becoming parosteal.

Chief Seats of Cancer.—The absolute and relative frequency of cancer in the various seats of secretion has been ascertained by D'Espine, from the mortality returns of the eanton of Geneva, for both hospital patients and the well-to-do treated at home, to be as follows over the period from 1838 to 1855 :—

Btomieein ¢:.80 8 0 ccc. Syelvetsoeiows 399 cases, or 45 per cent. (EN COWS CG aondoammsoneearcc cour al a 15 * BANGIN Sacto c nfecy gts ores 93 Cs; LOD sy IER Veni carci neRT EES i m0 S'S: | wy Small and large intestine …... 3 ae DO Sy PROC EMM ia.08 Aesroeate es fea 25° 5; 3 ~

being 762 or 85°3 per cent in a total of 889 cases of malignant tumours of all sorts. Most cases of cancer of the liver are really secondary to cancers in the stomach or elsewhere, so that the leading position of the stomach, and after it of the uterus, the breast, and the intestine, becomes more marked. According to the facts collected by Virehow from the mortality returns of the town of Wiirzburg from 1852 to 1855, the deaths from malignant tumours

were 5°3 per cent. of the total mortality, and the percentages among malignant tumours were as follows :—

GGMACHY soy sarc dees 34: ‘ Witenes KOE. 35.5… acunz 22 18-5 si Intestine…..... ei 4 Liver, fe, ...-..... ‘> 2 Face and lips…..... 49 ISTRY eaters. of 5.5 ane aes ne 4:3 ,

a

78°2 per cent. of all malignant tumours.

PATHOLOGY

It may be aeeepted, then, that the digestive tract is the seat in about one-half of the eases of malignant tumour-disease, and the female sexual organs (excluding the ovaries, but ineluding the breasts) in about one-fourth, while the remaining fourth has to be apportioned among other epithelial organs or parts and the bones and other mesoblastic tissues. It must not be supposed that these ratios hold good equally for all localities; the breast sometimes appears to usurp a larger share, and sometimes the rectum. Again it is a noteworthy faet that cancer is a eomparatively rare disease among the vast populations within the tropics.

The beginnings of cancer have to be sought for in disturbanees of the apparatus and process of seeretion. Even in the eases where hereditary or eongenital predisposition plays a part there must have been local irregularities of strueture and function to deter- niine the seat of the disease; thus, of four sisters of whom three were married and had families, one died of cancer of the breast, another of cancer of the stomach, a third of cancer of the rectum, and the fourth of caneer of the uterus,—the ineidenee of the disease in them all happening about the age of fifty to sixty. Cancer in secreting structures is essentially one process; but each of the favourite seats of cancer has its own speeial liability, as well as points of structure special to itself. The lability of the female breast is an entirely different thing from the liability of the stomach ; and the liability of the uterus is more closely allied to that of the stomach than to that of the breast, although the breast and the uterus have a closer systemic relationship. There is, however, something in the eellular law of secretion common to them all, and it is that common feature of the secretory process which first engages the attention.

Relation of Cancer to Seeretory Process. —The product of seeretion Canc is not, under all circumstances, a fluid; in the simpler forms of and t animal life, and in more recent or less elaborated glands of the secret higher forms, it may be thrown off in cellular shape, just as it is proce

always cellular in its origin. We have already seen that in the eatarrhal state the cellular admixture is considerable, and there can be hardly any question that the eells of a catarrhal discharge are derivatives of the epithelial cells, being indeed little other than their nuclei. We have also seen reason to believe that the infiltration of nuelear cells in the thickened mucous membrane of chronic eatarrh had been a real infiltration of the eatarrhal cells bencath the surfaee. Now the favourite seats of chronic catarrh, the stomach and the uterus, are also the favourite seats of eancer. What, then, is the relation between these two very different diseases, both of them primarily disorders of the apparatus and process of secretion ?

A particular case will bring out the points of resemblance and the Diffu) In a fatal case of cancer of the stomach the cancé: whole organ is found to be uniformly thiekened, the mucous mem- whol) brane being much ridged and furrowed ;. but its epithelium is un- stom

points of differenee.

broken. ‘The interval of submucous tissue, ordinarily a loose layer between the mucosa and the muscular coats, is oecupied through- out the whole extent of the organ by a nearly uniform stratum of firm whitish tissue. This is an exceptional case of eancer of the stomach, but it is a very instructive one; the morbid condition is as uniformly .

diffused over the organ as if it had been the thickening of ehronie ca- tarrh, and. it wants the usual tumour – ehar- aeter of eaneer. The miero- scopic exami- 2 nation proves, – whatthewhite- – nessand almost gristly firmness of the submu- cous interval had suggested, that the disease is hard cancer. The white stra- tum under the mucosa has the structure shown in the cut (fig. 48), and it is an average example of the infiltration of scirrhous cancer. Epithelial ~~like eells, with a disproportionately large nucleus, are as if packed in rows in the spaces of a very dense fibrous tissue, which contains a large number of elastic fibres. Besides the linear processions of cells,~~

~~there are elsewhere groups of them arranged round the walls of spaces like the epithelium of a gland. Throughout the whole thickness of the coats of the stomach in this case such collections of cells are found ; in the muscular coats they are met with chiefly where there are fibrous septa ; and it is noteworthy that the gland~~ like collections are by far the most numerous in the tissue most

Fic. 48.—Infiltration of scirrhous cancer uniformly diffused throughout the whole sub-mucosa of the stomach.

q

PATHOLOGY

remote from the physiological glandular surface, namely, the connective tissue of the serous or external coat (fig. 49). It is impossible to trace a continuous vo~Ner 2-2 growth of these subserous gland- \/@*))\ like groups of cells from the actual glands of the mucous surface ; they are separated from the latter by nearly a quarter of an inch of mus- cular and other tissue, in which

381

sary to retain the doctrine of the seminiwm, the part played by that

hypothetical element is not formative within its own particles ; but

it 1s a fertilizing or infecting influence upon the pre-existing cells of

the neighbourhood. In most cases the cells so fertilized are the

corpuscular elements of the common binding-tissne of the body, or

the connective-tissuc cells. Canecrous Infection of the Connective-tissue Cells. —The cut (fig. Caneer-

51) is an exact drawing of a piece of cancerous tumour where the ous in-

eonnective-tissue cells can be seen in the act of transforming into fection

the “infiltration” occurs only here .\/, and there. The wide extension of \\ the cancerous process is not mere overgrowth or protrusion of the -~ <== secreting structure, nor is it even <= an infiltration, in the literal sense, << ee rss of the cast-off secreting cells; it is S2—-——-— = ▬ an infection of the cells of the sub- Fic. 49.—Diffused cancer of stomach ; jacent tissue to become epithelial tubular-gland grouping of eells in cells and gland-like cell-groups. *#>-Peritoneal tissue. And therein lies the essence of cancer.

Extension of Cancer from the Surface to the Depth.—Whereas,

q Ms under commoner circumstances, the catarrhal by-products of the

process of secretion find their way to the underlying textures and there give occasion to an ‘inflammatory ” reaction, to hardness and coarseness of the connective tissue, under other circumstances the less nuclear or more epithelial by-products of the glandular activity have the power to induce the remarkable formative process in the neighbouring tissues which we know as cancer. The cancerous pro- cess implies, accordingly, such a condition of the secreting structure and function, or of its individual cells, as can excite this formative reaction, and it involves also the changing of the surrounding tissue (or of its cells) into epithelial forms of cells, cither in rows or groups or in gland-like systems. As regards the former, there is no lack of evidence that cellular by-products of secretion are often the ante- eedent or concomitant of cancer in an epithelial organ or part ; they may be seen sometimes in the stomach heaped up between the glandular tubules, or in the mammary gland (especially of the bitch) infiltrated into the sur- LIAS rounding stroma. The cut (fig. 50) is an illustration from the mamma; the rows of cells which lie in the spaces of the connect- ive tissue are the cellular products of the secretory function characteristic of an immature or low-pow- ered intensity of secretion, and they are easily iden- tified in all phases of the! mammary secretion in the dog, whether regular or irregular, by their yellow- | || ish-brown pigmentation. |/ |\) It is not to be expected || \ that such an infiltration of, by-products of secretion can be proved for every case of cancer, nor is there’ Treason to suppose that! there is always such an infiltration. The elements of the secreting structure may serve in sitw to excite or infect the neighbour-

Ee)

1 . . <— 1 12h

ing tissue, and this they “oie bio kaeoe [he ee usually do for the con- case of tumour (dog).

nective tissue on which they immediately rest. But we have to take due account of the much more important fact that the in- fection also manifests itself at a number of remote and isolated centres, within each of which the new growth arranges itself as if oy according to a design, the pattern being the more or ie regular epithelial type proper to the organ or part. Thus in on 49, from a diffuse cancer of the whole stomach, the glandular ube-like structures have arisen at a number of points in the con- hective tissue of the outer coat. The pattern of tubular glands 18 often more complex than in that figure, both in other stomach €ases and in cancers of the great intestine and rectum. This Temarkable breaking out, as it were, of very perfect epithelial tubules, disconnected from the physiological tubules and often in the midst of dense tracts of plain muscular fibre, appeared to Johannes Miiller to be so extraordinary that he ascribed them to an invisible semanium dispersed through the tissues ; according to him, the seminium was a literal seed whose particles themselves grew to be the new epithelial cells. We do not now admit the possibility of cells so arising by generatio equivoca; every cell must be the descendant of ‘some pre-existing cell. And, although it is neces-

epithelial cells, or in various stages of that transformation-process. The process carries us once more back to that embryonic activity

Fig. 51.—Cancerous infection of connective tissue in a case of tumour of skin-glands of the dog.

of cells in mature life which we have had frequently occasion to discover in other elementary processes of disease. The cells of the connective tissue are ordinarily quiescent in the form of plates more or less compressed laterally, the cell-plates of tendon being extreme examples. Just as, in the process of repair, they become plump and granular, developing in the third dimension as well, and ultimately becoming granulation-cells, so in cancerous infection they start from their obscurity among the bundles of fibres,

passing by rapid trans- itions into the form and semblance of the epithelial cells proper to the occasion; and they may even go on to assume a glandular

grouping round the wall of a space, acting as if harmoniously or

according to an implicit design. There is no fact in pathology more noteworthy than this; if it has any analogy among the facts of normal biological processes, we shall probably have to go to the very lowest groups of animals or to the earliest stages of evolution to find it. Whatever the infective influence may have been, it touches all the quiescent cells over a eertain area simultaneously ; a ‘terri- tory” of tissue, larger or smaller as the case may be, but always involving a number of cells, assumes the embryonic life throughout its whole extent, and goes through all the steps of the transformation towards the epithelial type and grouping, as if its cells had received one common impact.

States of the Connective Tisswe predisposing to Infcetion.—There are, indeed, reasons for thinking that the special factor in the production of cancer, and of the production of it at particular spots in a large area of choice, is not so much the presence of cellular by-products of the secretion as a particular disposition of the connective tissue of the particular spot to be easily acted on by them. Catarrhal products are often present withont any infection following; but the two favourite seats of repeated or chronic catarrh, namely the stomach and the uterus, may at length become the seats of cancer. Cancer is hardly ever a disease of the first half of life ; it is very distinctively a disease apt to occur after the meridian is passed. In those who are liable to uterine and gastric catarrhs the mucosa and the submucosa at length become thick and succulent. ‘This happens at particular spots, notably just within the pylorus of the stomach ; the epithelial surface may not be appreciably different from the surface elsewhere, but the under- lying tissues are thickened and, it may be, contracted to a stricture. It is in such dense new formations of connective tissue that cancer is most apt to form ; what is called cicatricial tissue is proverbially liable to cancer, and a tissue may be to all intents and purposes “ eicatricial” (and apt to shrink) even if it underlie an unbroken surface. Some cancers of the stomach form entirely below the surface, in the thickened floor of a healed nicer, or even in the not unfrequent dense adhesions between the serous membrane of the back of

the stomach and the piece of peritoneum which is drawn over the anterior surface of the pancreas. A cancerous stricture of the intestine or rectum is not unlikely to have been to some extent a stricture before it became a cancer. The eondition of the con- nective tissue in all such circumstances is not easy to define ; it is often spoken of as young connective tissue or “embryonic,” and there is probably in it a smaller preponderance of the fibrous clement over the cellular than is usual in mature life. A general change in the connective tissue of the body has been asserted to take place as age advances, a senile change which has been described by Thiersch, for the eorium, as a relaxed state. The epitheliated localities subject to persistent functional disturbance do at least seem to undergo a change in their underlying or surrounding con- nective tissue, whereby that tissue becomes predisposed to cancerous infection. The infection cmanates from the secreting structure proper, for it carries with it the likeness of such structure (in its more or less irregular or morbid state). The cellular waste or by- products of the secretion would appear to acquire something of the property of sperm-cells ; and, inasmuch as the infected or impreg- nated connective tissue produces not merely individual epithelial

cells of the appropriate type but also the appropriate grouping of such cells, the sperm-cells must be held to carry more than the influence of cell-units, and in fact to be representative of the whole structural and functional process in which they had played a part.

Varictics of Cancer.—The two main varieties of cancerous texture are the hard and the soft, or the scirrhous and the medullary.

Scirrhous Scirrhous cancer is very often the “infiltrating” kind, with the

caneer.

Medul- lary caneer.

Colloid caneer.

Caneer of

epithelial cells lying in scattered groups or in single file within the spaces of a peculiarly dense and elastic connective tissue. It is common in the breast and not rare inthe stomach. The medullary cancer consists of very much larger

¢ a = SS and closer groups of cells, which 77-————=> may be in nondescript heaps or in // “7 /72=S

the more regular arrangement of | ;// glandular structure. When the \\ |(‘ glandular type is very distinct the \ \

tumour is sometimes called a “de- structive adenoma.” Colloid can- cer is a very peculiar variety, apt to occur in the stomach but not unknown in the breast ; most of /,//,

the structure is changed into a [i/{// 7 brownish jelly – like atl

Wi Ls Hifi A \/|

substance | which forms more or less definite \\l\\,{}\/“4 spherical or alveolar masses sepa- NI : rated by narrow bands of stroma. '\ Under the microscope (fig. 52) little of cellular structure of any kind is found remaining, but in place of it there are an immense pyg, 52,—Colloid cancer of the breast. number of spherical pearl – like bodies, each of which consists of several delicate concentric lamin arranged round a more dense nuclear point.

Cancer of the skin, and of the lips and tongue, is generally termed

skin, &c. epithelioma ; it is not a disorder of secretion in the same sense as (epitheli- other cancers are, but it is a disorder incidental to the constant

oma).

waste and repair of the epithelium of the skin. It is characterized by the encroachment of processes of the rete mucosum upon the corium and subcutaneous tissues, or, in the lips, tongue, upper part of the cesophagus, &c., of epithelial columns of cells upon the subepithelial region. The type

of this encroachment is the papillary arrangement of the normal rete mucosum, where the appearance of regular columns of epithelium reaching down into the corium is equally due to the reciprocal protrusion of loops of blood-vessels upwards. Bayete

The interlocking of MK

epithelial columns and ! connective-tissue tracts in epithelioma is much more extensive and ir- ; regular than in the normal skin, and it is |,J:\' always difficult to de- f cide, from the super- [ii \4//5 ficial microscopic ap- *~t/}. pearances, whether the encroachment of the epithelium is merely a 'ali:

displacing or a trans- |; forming encroachment (fig. 53). In some cases, { such as destructive epi- | theliomas of the tongue, | or of chimney-sweep's '\// cancer, it is possible to J. find reliable evidence in | the microscopic sections that the progressiveness of the disease is really an infection, like that of cancer elsewhere — that is to say, the neighbouring tissues, and more especially the connective-tissue cells, are infected so that they assume the epi- thelial type proper to the locality—and that infection tends to spread without limit. But the doctrine of continuous growth from the rete mucosum downwards, by mere subdivision of pre-existing epithelium, appears to be justified as a part, at least, of the patho- logy of cancer of the skin. Asin cancers of the stomach and uterus, the regions liable to skin-cancer are especially those subject to re- peated irritation or to prolonged functional disturbance. One of the most striking instances of this law used to be the cancer of the skin of the scrotum and groins in chimney-swecps, a form of disease which has become much less common of late. Again, it is nearly always the lower of the two lips that suffers, and the rare cases of epithelioma of the lip that occur in women are among those of the sex who smoke pipes. Like other cancers, the cancer of the skin, lips, and tongue, &c., is a disease of later life ; according to

pane, } 200 oof i. (feh199s hate os

Aly |, } 4 {|

e>

llinG AS \e 8

Ha ya 4 eC

Ova Wee

Fie. 53.—Epithelial cancer of skin deeply involv- ing the side of the neck. The cylinders of epithelial cells, resembling those of the rete mucosum, are surrounded by fibrous tissue in- filtrated with small nuclear cells,

PATE OLOGY =

«i

Thiersch, it is due to a “disturbance of the histogenetic equilibrium between epithelium and stroma, to the disadvantage of the stroma.” The perfect balance of tissues would be exemplified by that regular interlocking of vascular papille from below and epithelial processes from above which the skin ordinarily shows ; as age advances the downward force of the epithelial growth prevails, owing to a certain decreased “turgor vitalis,” or to loss of resistance on the part of the tissue carrying the blood-vessels, so that, when long-standing irritation of a particular spot is added, we should have the two great determining causes of cancer of the skin. But the question will always remain, whether the essence of the disease is not really an infective transformation of the quiescent cells of the connective tissue into the type and pattern of the irritated epithelial structure.

The female breast is peculiar among the glands of the body in its great liability to cancer ; the disease is of essentially the same nature as that which we find in the stomach and other epitheliated organs, but the occasion of it is quite different. It will therefore be convenient to reserve further remarks on cancer of the female breast until the next section—that on the “liabilities of obsolescence.”

Extension of Cancer to Lymphatic Glands and other Discontinuous Disco Parts.—If the beginnings of cancer are to be sought for in some tinuo disorder of the apparatus and process of secretion, the disease very infect

soon passes the limits of the primarily disordered organ or part. The cancerous property of a tumour, as we have concluded, is from the first an affair of infection of the neighbouring tissues by epithelial products; the infected neighbourhood is the seat of the primary tumour, the progressiveness or infiltrating character of which may soon cause a large area to be involved and a large growth to result. Sooner or later there is discontinuous infection, or the infection of more or less remote centres, whereby secondary twmours arise. This phase of cancerous infectiveness is by no means dependent on the extent of the primary infection or the infection of the original neighbourhood. That which distinguishes secondary can- ccrous nodules, wherever they are found, is the very close mimicry of the pattern of structure in the indigenous seat of disease, a pattern which is itself determined by the structural and func- tional characters of the secreting organ or part-concerned. In the majority of cases the nearest lymphatic glands become the subject of this mimetic process first; the liver also is very liable to discontinuous infection, not only in cancers of the stomach and intestine, but even in cases of cancer of the breast, sub- maxillary glands, &c. There is always an interval of time before this secondary infection is set up; and, although the cellular process is not different in kind from the infection of the neigh- bourhood of the indigenous disease, it is necessary to regard the latter as, in a sense, the parent of the former. This parental

parts, particularly in the lungs. In cancers, accordingly, we should distinguish three factors, and in sarcomas only two: in the former we have first the accumulation of cellular by-products of the secre- tion, next the infection of the predisposed connective tissue by these epithelial products, and lastly the parental influence of the whole primary seat of infection ; in the latter we have the embryonic reversion of cells over a particular region, together with their increase or growth, and then the parental influence of the tumour which had so arisen. In both cases the primary tumour acquires a kind of individuality and a power to reproduce itself; but it is only in some cases of sarcoma, especially those soft tumours of periosteal origin which become parosteal, that there is infection of the neighbourhood, whereas a cancer is not a cancer at all until the tissues adjoining or supporting the epithelial secreting structure are epithelially infected. This difference between sarcoma and cancer corresponds to the familiar fact that the former

are only occasionally “infiltrating” tumours, being in most cases marked off from the neighbouring tissues by a definite capsule.

The simplest case of discontinuous cancerous infection is in the lymphatic glands near the original seat of disease. It is only ex- ceptionally that the lymphatic glands are infected in sarcomatous tumours, and those cases appear to be mostly the infiltrating sarcomas which have the distinctively cancerous property of in- fecting the neighbourhood. Infection of the axillary lymphatic glands is the common sequel of cancer of the breast, while the ep!- gastric, portal, nesenteric, and other abdominal lymph-glands receive the infection in cancer of the stomach and intestine. In epithelioma of the lip and tongue the infection of lymph-glands is much slower, and is often so slight as to be undetected during life ; it specially affects the lymph-glands under the chin. In all cases the tendency is to reproduce the exact pattern of the primary tumour. In some, including those sarcomatous cases where this kind of infection does take place, the lymph-gland seems to have been transformed ¢ masse, very rapidly and directly, so that steps in the process are hardly to be detected. But in other cases it is possible to find, either within the same gland or among the various glands of a cluster, a certain amount of instructive histogenetic detail as to the

‘i Cont relationship is made all the more probable by the fact that sar- betw coniatous tumours, which depend in many cases upon a reversion sarc’ to or survival of embryonic characters in the mesoblastic cells of a and particular locality, are also apt to be followed by tumours in distant cane

mode of infection. The lymphoid cells become affected, not cer- tainly in the way of atrophy, but in the way of transformation. There is indeed nothing more wonderful in the whole range of biological phenomena than to observe the adaptation of the cells and tissues of a lymph-gland to assume the cancerous structure already established in the organ to which they are related, an adaptation always close in its mimicry, involving the co-operation of large groups of cells and fibres, and directed as if by a presiding intelligence. In many instances the infecting substance may even want the perfect cellular character ; it may be no more than the detritus or the juices of cells and tissues. ‘Fhe most obvious form of infection,

although probably the rarest, is where the new growth extends continuously along the sides or in the interior of lymphatic vessels from the secreting structure to the lymph-gland; but even this continuous extension has been shown to be, not a protrusion of the primary tumour by increase or subdivision of its elements, put a succession of infective transformations along the line of cells constituting the lymph-vessel or investing it. Under all circum- stances the lymph-gland becomes changed ultimately into a texture which reproduces with astonishing fidelity the particular pattern of the primary cancer, a pattern which is never quite the same in any two cases of tumour-disease even of the same organ. In some cases it is not always uniform throughout the same tumour ; thus pre- parations might be described from a cluster of infected lymph-glands under the cancerous mamma of the bitch wherein two kinds of structure in the extensive strip of primary discase are severally reproduced in different lymph-glands.

In tion The infection of the liver is a very common sequel of cancer of of er, the digestive tract, as well as of other cancers, and even of sarcomas

(especially the melanotic) and lymphomas. Opinions differ as to the share which the liver-cells take in the building up of the new texture; but there is hardly any room for doubting that it is from the pre-existing cells of each infected area, even if it be exclu- ‘sively from the cells of the supporting tissue and the capillary walls, that the elements of the secondary tumours are derived by infective transformation. The infection breaks out and proceeds part passw ata number of areas throughout tho liver-substance, affecting the whole of an area as if at one blow ; there is an absolute lack of evidence in favour of the assertion often made, that the

persist when the local ravages of the disease have made consider- able progress.

§ 9.—Tue LIABILITIES OF OBSOLESCENCE.

We have seen in the foregoing sections that various liabilities to error underlie the embryological tissue-de- velopments, the process of blood-making, the process of bone-making, and the process of secretion. But there

are functions of the body, of its tissues and organs, in which the morbid liability is something special. The most striking instance of this is in the reproductive organs, particularly those of the female; the obsolescence of the function, and in part of the structure, in the ovaries, uterus, and breasts of women long before the natural term of life creates a peculiar liability to disease. There are two other organs, the thyroid and the suprarenal, which hold a some- what special position ; it cannot be doubted that each of these organs plays an important part in the economy, but there are suggestions in their morphology of survivalship from a former state of things, and their diseased conditions are not only peculiar in their occasion but also peculiarly important in their consequences. Lastly, there are two minute bodies situated at the bifurcation of great arterial trunks, the coccygeal gland and the intercarotid body, which are clearly marked as survivals; and the former, at least, of these carries a peculiar liability to tumour-disease during the period of intra-uterine life. These instances do not include the so-called “involution-diseases” or the liabilities of old age. ‘The self-limitation of life may be said to be too large a problem for the present purpose ; but sexual involution is a part of this problem which comes directly into pathology.

Cancer of the Breast in connexion vith Obsolescence of Structure Obsoles- and Funetion.—The diseases of the climacteric period in women cenee of make an important chapter in the special pathology of the sex ; mam- together with the disorders incidental to maturation, they stand mary

secondary tumours are due to the mere increase, by division, of cells detached from the primary mass and lodged here and there in the liver. There is a certain amount of evidence in favour of some such embolic theory for the secondary tumours of the lungs, which

are usually a sequel of sarcomatous growth in some bone or in other mesoblastic tissue. Sarcomatous tumours are apt to grow through the walls of neighbouring veins, and pieces of them doubtless get detached and carried into the pulmonary circulation ; but it is more than doubtful whether even these emboli give rise to the secondary tumours of the lungs merely by continuous proliferation of their cells, and not rather NG OC. gall ‘iN

by the infective action of © NB ae mi) a We wie their presence. Zn Coa) \ WAN a NG ys

Another seat of secondary NAO \Faul SUN

tumour-formation, both epi- f RNA | \ \ \s

gol

thelial and melanotic sarco- matous, is the serous mem- branes. The accompanying figure (fig. 54), from a nodule on the diaphragm in a case of cancer of the colon in the horse, may be set beside fig. 51 as showing the substan- ! tial identity of the infective A.G7/ process in the secondary and @C/)\ primary seats of disease; in “Y both cases the cells of the connective tissue are seen in

the stages of transformation towards the epithelial form

and grouping. The infection Fic. 54.—Caneerous nodule on the peritoneal of the neighbourhood is the surface of diaphragm, secondary to eancer Mf ihe cancerous of the colon (horse).

process. But the discontinuous infection of distant parts is not different from it in kind. It is merely “Wirkung in der Ferue,”

and it is More mysterious only because it is more remote. — disorder of secretion thus eventually assumes a cancerous : aracter in which traces of its origin may be hard to find. As the isease persists or extends the patient’s colour becomes sallow or 1 grey, the colourless cells are increased in the blood, the bones — become fragile, and general wasting (curiously associated some- ge local production of fat at the seat of disease) puts an end : . ife of suffering. In abdominal cancers death may be hastened cA anal of the peritoneum ; in various forms of the disease there i y be fatal bleeding from an eroded vessel. It has often been marked that an appearance of exceptionally blooming health a the liability to cancer; and the blooming appearance e face and plump condition of the tissues will sometimes

< 2

VO

—— o>

AIS?

—_ ta

Z

4

for the larger part of the special ill health of women. be possible in this article to give more than a single illustration of the morbid effects of this peculiar periodicity, namely, the obsolescence of the mammary function. The statistics collected by Paget clearly show that cancer of the breast in women is peculiarly a disease of the climacteric and post-climacteric period ; throughout the whole period from the age of about fifteen to about forty-five, during which the breast is capable of lactation, the cancerous disorder is rare in it, the tumour-disorders to which the organ is then liable being comparatively tractable. A few words about the physiology will serve to indicate the pathology of the simpler as well as of the more formidable malady.

The reproductive functions in the female are not only peculiar among other functions of the organism in their maturation and obsolescence, but they are further remarkable for their periodicity within the period of vigour itself. In the lower species of the vegetable and animal kingdoms seasonal periodicity is in every- thing, in the higher it is only in the sexual and secondary sexual characters, and in the human species it is practically confined to the reproductive system. The consequences, as regards the breast, are that its structure and function unfold during the term of gestation, continue in full vigour for a longer or shorter period (which may be arbitrarily limited), and then go through definite stages of subsidence and upfolding to the resting state. This periodical reduction of structure in an orderly way is a peculiar and unique thing; it is “as though a rose should

shut and be a bud again.” ‘The upfolding and unfolding of structure have corresponding functional aspects; there are crude secretory pro- ducts formed and discharged, and hence it is that the breast is a peculiarly suitable organ in which to investigate the question of cellular by-products or waste of secretion, and their disposal by the lymphatic system. Compared with other secreting organs and parts the breast is not peculiarly liable to catarrh, but it has a physiological liability of 1ts own which puts it on the same footing, as regards tumour-disease, with the great seats of catarrhal dis- order, the stomach and the cervix uteri. Like these organs, it is not generally subject to cancer until after middle life ; but, where- as in them the predisposition appears to depend on long-continued functional irregularities, the liability of the breast ariscs out of its

1 See Paget, Lectures on Surgical Pathology ; Rindfleisch, Die Bés- artigheit der Carcinome, dargestellt als eine Folge threr értlichen De- structivitét, Leipsie, 1877 ; various eontributors in Pathol. Trans., xxv., 1874; C. H. Moore, The Antecedents of Cancer, Lond., 1865: K. Thiersch, Der Epithelialkrebs, namentlich der Haut, Leipsic, 1865.

It will not funetion.

Supra- renal blood.

normal obsolescence. Its secreting mechanism becomes finally broken up, so that one may find little left besides traces of the larger ducts in the midst of wide areas of fibrillar tissue and fat. Traces of the glandular structure persist to a very various extent in different women, and even in different parts of the same breast. It is obvious that the process is one which offers nuincrous oppor- tunities for a devious course ; it may be retarded, or advance un- equally, or be in the end ineomplete. That which in all cases must be held to create the peculiar liability to eanecrous infection is the readiness of the preponderant connective tissue to be aeted on by epithelial cells dispersed throughout it or otherwise in direct eontact with its eorpuseles.

§ 10.—SprctaL LIABILITIES OF THE SUPRARENAL AND THYROID.

(1) Of the Suprarenal—Addison's Disease.—The peculiar condition of ill health—always fatal—which Addison dis- covered to be associated with caseous degeneration of both suprarenal bodies was described by himself as "anzemia, general languor and debility, remarkable feebleness of the heart's action, irritability of the stomach, and a peculiar change of colour in the skin." Some of these symptoms appear to be due to interference with the function of the sympathetic nervous system; the disease, as a whole, however, is almost certainly the direct effect of withdrawal from the general life of the body of those services which the suprarenals are adapted to render. Where there is no caseous degeneration (and consequent non-circulation of blood) in each of the suprarenals the peculiar group of symptoms constituting Addison's disease does not occur ; there may be hyperplasia (struma suprarenalis) of one or both suprarenals, or even true cancer of one or both, but these morbid conditions do not seem to be able to produce the same effect on the organism which is produced by caseous degeneration. On the other hand, Addison's disease has resulted in a few cases where the suprarenals had not been destroyed by caseous degeneration, but had undergone extreme atrophy. We shall best approach this somewhat intricate disease by considering it from the point of view of suprarenal function, and of the peculiar relation of the present probable function of the organ to its past morpho- logical history.

Evidence of Suprarcnal Funetion.—A simple experiment will show that the blood passing through the suprarenal receives im- portant additions. If the organ taken quite warm from a recently- killed animal, such as the horse, be cut into pieees and placed in a solution of potassium bichromate the central region assumes a rich brown colour. Under the microscope the brown colour will be found to reside in the coagulated plasma filling the numerous lacunar spaces and large veins of the central region and in the eells adhering outside their walls. At the same time it will be seen that the groups of red blood-disks, wherever they occur in the coagulated plasma, form areas of bright green colour. These eolour-reaetions with chromium are not known to oeeur anywhere else in the tissues and fluids of the body ; there is that in the out- going blood of the suprarenal which reduces the orange-red ehro-inium-salt to a brown oxide, and (in the case of the red blood-disks with more oxygen) toa green oxide. It will hardly prove an easy task to isolate the substance whose existence is thus indicated, but it is not difficult to

follow in the suprarenal structure the adaptations for supplying some such substanee to the blood. It is precisely analogous to the adaptation of the placenta, as described above (p. 374), for supplying its metabolie product to the blood destined for the foetus. Several arteries reach the suprarenal all round its eireumferenee ; they break up into capillaries which radiate to the eentre, earrying the suprarenal cells closely adherent to their walls ; towards the centre certain laeunar spaces form, and from these the eentral outearrying vessel reeeives its blood, being provided with eontraetile muscular walls (in man, the horse, &c.). Whatever is added to the blood passing through the suprarenal must come from the suprarenal eells. There is reason to suppose that this addition is an actual exuded plasma, just as it is in the placenta. In the latter ease the added fluid drops from the protoplasmie wall of the vessel into the cireulating blood; in the suprarenal a membrane 1s interposed between the lumen of the vessel and the eylinders of secreting cells, namely, the wall of the vessel itself. In this respeet the suprarenal cells are as well placed for contributing to the blood flowing past them as are the liver-cells for exercising their glyco- genie funetion. We shall conclude, at least, that the suprarenal blood has received additions whilst in the organ, and that these

additions have been a material exudation (plasma) from the supra- renal cells.

The easeous or putty-like or cretaceous change which overtakes the Addi suprarenals in Addison’s disease involves the eomplete suppression son’; of this function, for it praetieally amounts to the arrest of cireula. Ciseas tion through the organ ; blood neither enters the organ nor passes out of it, and there ean be therefore no metabolism. Whatever be the nature of the services that this remarkable organ is adapted to render to the general life, Addison’s disease is the evidence that such services eannot permauently be withdrawn with impunity. The most striking effect is the formation of brown pigment, often so abundant as to appear almost black, in the lower cells of the rete muecosuin in eertain regions of predilection of the skin, and here and there in the mucous membranes. Doubtless a large part of the symptoms of Addison’s disease might be traced vaguely to disorder of the sympathetic nervous system; but, while it is diffieult to prove the existence of such disorder of the solar plexus, exeept as an inference from the

symptoms, we have the patent faet that the full train of symptoms in Addison's disease is associated with loss of suprarenal structure and funetion, ineluding naturally so much of the strueture and function of the sympathetic nerve as properly belongs to the organ.

The causes of the molecular deeay of the suprarenals and conse- quent cessation of their funetion are various. It may be the mere contiguity to a lumbar abscess, or it may be a part of general tubereulous disease in the body, or it may be assoeiated with no extrinsic morbid condition whatsoever. Enlargement seems usually to have preeeded the final molecular break-down. The liability of the suprarenals (with or without preceding enlargement) to caseous degeneration must be considered to be somewhat special to the pair of organs, just as the suppression of their funetion is of special significance for the life of the body. The caseation soon overtakes the whole structure on both sides, so that a relatively small amount of that not very rare degeneration is of fatal import if the suprarenals be the seat of it. There is a good deal of morphological and developmental evidenee that the suprarenals are in one sense obsolete, their structure being, however, adapted or utilized for new funetions; associated with this adaptation of the organs we have the peculiar instability of their protoplasm, the absenee of any power of recovery, and the very marked and fatal effects that follow the withholding of their contributions to the metabolism of the body. i

(2) Special Liabilities of the Thyroid Gland.—The thyroid is m Bd some respects parallel with the suprarenals. Its cells furnish a thyrc muecus-like plasma which is, in the first instanee, poured into the gland closed vesicles of the organ, but is taken up again and carried into the circulation (as Baber's observations tend to prove, Phil. Trans., { 1876, 1881) by the lymphatic vessels in their walls. We have now |

f |

to consider those not unimportant or infrequent morbid condi- tions which are associated with the peculiar functional position of this organ. , Goitre.—The grand disease in which the functional activity of Goiti the thyroid is implicated is goitre. Under certain conditions of locality a large part of the population become goitrous, that is to say, their thyroids undergo

enlargement. (See Gorrre.) There have also been epidemies of temporary enlargement of the thyroid in garrisons. The simple enlargement undergoes a considerable variety of subsequent changes in the different cases: it may be general or partial at the outset, it may become cystic or “aneul- ismal,” gelatinous or hemorrhagic, it may become fibrous, very generally it becomes petrified at various centres, sometimes there 1s a kind of osseous framework developed through its substance, and there may be amyloid concretions. These transformations are too many and complex to be entered upon, although they are full of interest for the elucidation of indwelling embryonic tendeneles. The primary fact is enlargement of the thyroid among popula- tions whose food, water, air, or environment generally has some. | thing defective or unsuitable. The enlargement of the thyroid | means that the organ has greater calls upon its ordinary fume tion, that it makes an effort to meet the cireumstances of the | case. And there can be no doubt that in most cases the effort | is successful ; for goitre, apart from the inconvenient size of the | thyroid and the mechanical consequenees of pressure, is a harmless | condition. The subsequent changes in the enlarged organ are the | inevitable consequences of hyperplasia ; but the primary enlarge =| ment is conservative and adaptive. The adaptation has the effect of elaborating from the blood brought to the thyroid more of the mucous substance which it is the office of the thyroid to elaborate, the same being probably returned to the blood more or less directly. There is that in the water, food, or air of these populations, and in the nutrition of men and animals in isolated cases elsewhere, which ealls for more of this peculiar metabolism. Myst Myxedema.—Surgeons have in some places practised removal h of the enlarged thyroid ; and attention has lately been called in ‘en Switzerland to the after-effects of such removals. The connective tissue in all parts of the body has becomo oceupied with a mucus: like substance or has shown evidence of unwonted functional an

plastic activity in its cells and fibres. Of eighteen cascs of com- plete removal of the enlarged thyroid at the hospital of Bern this condition followed in sixteen, and in the two which escaped it an “accessory ” thyroid

had arisen. The condition is that which had been described by Ord as myxedema (from the mucous dropsy of the skin), a progressive disease, with hebetude and other symptoms of impaired higher functions, and tending to a fatal result in a few years. The interesting fact is that iu such eases of idiopathic myxcedema the thyroid has very generally been observed to be small or wanting; where the diminished organ has been examined after death it has been found practically re- dvecd to a mass of connective tissue infiltrated with mucus, like the connective tissue elsewhere. The relation then between the eases of myxcedema following operative removal of a goitre and the idiopathic cases would seem to be that, in the one, a niucous condition of the whole connective tissue of the body follows when the thyroid, enlarged to meet the metabolic needs of the body, has been removed by the surgeon, while, in the other, the same condi- tion has followed where the thyroid has either proved too small for the ordinary metabolic ends that it is adapted to serve, or has degenerated under an unusual call upon its metabolism. Of the nature of this metabolism we are ignorant ; we know only that a material fluid is elaborated, and that the fluid is of the mucous kind. Cretinism.—If reference be made to fig. 40, showing the more spongy tissue of the placenta, it will be seen that there also a fluid is elaborated and added to the blood from the richly protoplasmic walls of the vessels ; and that fluid is also of the mucous kind. It is the “uterine milk” of earlier authors, and it would appear to exude through the densely nucleated marginal tracts of the placenta where the foetal vessels and their plasmatic supporting tissue touch it. It is this great metabolic function, so essential to the vigorous development of the child, that is probably at fault in the poor and over-worked or otherwise over- taxed mothers whose offspring become rickety ; and the fault may be said morc particularly to be deficient quantity or quality of the placental mucous secretion. The simi- larity of the thyroid and placental metabolisms cannot but come into account in considering the very peculiar condition of cretinism, proper to the offspring of goitrous mothers, or of mothers who had resided during their pregnancy in a goitrous district. Under the same endemic circumstances which cause the com- pensatory enlargement of the thyroid in the parents we meet with cretinism in tlie offspring. Although the defects of develop- ment and growth in cretinism are on the whole different from and much more universal than those of rickets, yet there is a certain parallelism between the two conditions. The cretin, like the child who

becomes rickety, must have been born with the disposition. The condition is not inherited, but it is congenital,—that 1s to say, it is derived from the mother in respect of her pregnancy only, and that means that it is derived most of all from the placenta. Cretinism is to goitrous districts what riekets is to other localities. And, although there is no positive evidence as to the placental function either in the one case or in the other, yet the placenta is clearly pointed to in both cases; and we may conjecture that cretins are the offspring of those mothers whose maternal nutriment is Impaired, not by the general hardships of those who bear rickety children, but by the special. endemic conditions which serve also to tax that other mucus-producing organ, the thyroid gland. The endemic conditions may not have caused goitre in the mother, although, as a matter of fact, they generally do; but, under a special concurrence of circumstances, as common in goitrous districts as are the determining causes of rickets elsewhere, they have caused a cretinous habit of body in the child, and to do so they must have affected the placental efficiency in some manner as yet unknown. _ This mode of associating goitre and cretinism assumes an error Iu the placental function which has not been shown by direct observation of the placenta to have existed. It has probably not been looked for; and, even if it had been, there would have been some difficulty in making out its morphological characters. Under the cireumstances of the case the evidence can hardly be othcr than deductive. Graves's Disease, or Exophthalmie Goitre.—In certain cases of . anemia In women there is enlargement of the thyroid, fluctuating Mm amount or permanent, but not liable to the common develop- Tents or degenerations of endemic goitre. Associated with the anemia and the enlarged thyroid there are disturbance of the func- tions of the sympathictic nervous system and a remarkable promi- hence of the eyeballs. It is probable that another aspect of the thyroid function than the mucus-making is involved here. It is an old contention of Kohlrausch that the droplets of hyaline substance, often With a yellowish or pale reddish tint, that are found in the thy- mixed with the ordinary mucus of its alveoli were an embryonic a of blood-globules. In the thyroid of the dog these droplets may often seen of a more uniform size, and so like blood-corpuscles (allowing for irregularities of form and size) that they have been y regarded as such, and put down, when in considerable quan- aes to "hemorrhage" from the vessels that run on the other side othe epithelial wall of cells. There is not the slightest reason to sup-

pose that these droplets have escaped from the blood-vessels : the are produced from the epithelium of thc organ along with the other mucus-like fluid. They point, indeed, to a hematoblastic function of the cells, somehow correlated to their ordinary mucus-yielding function. There are analogies among the connective tissues, at least, for this correlation between mucous and hematoblastic pro- duction, in new growths, and there is an analogy in the carly stage of embryonic fat-formation, in the production of red blood-disks from the same mesoblastic cells at one stage of their existence and of mucus-like fluid within them at the next. Now, although there is no evidence that the enlargement and increased functional activity of the thyroid in thesc peculiar cases of anemia has a more special relation to the hematoblastic side of the function than to the mucous, yet the coexistence of an enlarged thyroid with certain cases of anemia becomes intelligible in the light of these indications of hematoblastic function. The enlargement of the thyroid may be considered a special effort, comparable to the effort of the bone-marrow in pernicious anemia. The profound dis- turbance of the vascular system which goes with this condition must stand as an empirical fact, but it may be classed with the analogous sympathetic disturbances in Addison's disease ; both the suprarenal and the thyroid are to be considered as organs in which disorder of function has a special relation to the sympathetic, —the abdominal sympathetic in the one case and the cervical in the other. It is to be observed that in common goitre, where there is not so much an alteration, diversion, or disorder of function as a com- pensating increase of the ordinary function, there are no symptoms referable to the sympathetic ; so that the relation in the enlarged thyroid of anemia cannot be a mere mechanical one.

Secondary Tumours of the Thyroid.—The last special liability of the thyroid to be mentioned is a very peculiar one; there is a number of well-authenticated cases in which a simple enlargement or hyperplasia of the organ has been associated with the new forma- tion of masses of the proper thyroid-texture, with the proper mucous secretion, in the lungs and at various points of the sub- cutaneous tissue. In these cases the hyperplastic thyroid exhibits the property of an infective tumour, the new growth of thyroid- tissue at remote points being the secondary products of infection. Is

there anything in the normal overgrowth of the thyroid to account for its infectiveness as manifested on rare occasions? One of the unsettled questions of thyroid physiology is the mode of development of the new alveoli when the organ enlarges. It is apt to be too readily assumed that the new structure is formed by continuous extension from the pre-existing, by expansion or germi- nation; but the point has been raised by observers whether the new alveoli are not. formed interstitially at numerous independent centres throughout the stroma or supporting tissue of the organ, at first as small groups of cells which come to develop a space in their midst, and to group themselves as epithelium round the periphery. This is the ordinary mode of interstitial development in cancerous infection ; and, if that mode be substantiated for the physiological increase of the thyroid (and the facts in the dog's thyroid point that way), it would enable us to understand how it is that some- times, as if in a freak, the simple hyperplastic thyroid plays the part of an infective tumour, reproducing its own likeness at dis- continuous and even distant centres.!

§ 11.—Errors or METABOLISM.

In the foregoing sections metabolic functions have been claimed for the placenta, for the suprarenal, and for the thyroid. Connected with these obscure and hitherto al- most unregarded metabolic functions are several important morbid conditions, which are mostly of the so-called con- stitutional sort; with errors of the placental metabolism we connect such defective intra-uterine endowments of the foctus ag gave rise to rickets and cretinism in the child (and, it may be added, to some of the manifestations of congenital syphilis); with loss of the suprarenal meta- bolism we connect Addison's disease ; and with a compen- sating or conservative increase of the thyroid metabolism we connect goitre, a condition which is harmless but for its mechanical effects. It will now be convenient to pass to those greater but hardly better understood metabolic

1 See Thomas Addison, On the Constitutional and Loeal Hffects of Disease of the Suprarenal Capsules, Lond., 1855; Greenlow, On Addison's Disease, Lond., 1875; Id., in Trans. Internat. Med. Con- gress, Lond., 1881, vol. ii.; Wilks, " Addison's Disease,"' in Reynolds's System of Med., vol. v., Lond., 1879. Goitre, Cretinism, &c.—Hirsch, Historisch-geographisehe

Pathologie, 2a ed., vol. ii., Stuttgart, 1883 (Engl. trans.) ; Virchow, Ges. Abhandl. zur wiss. Med., Frankfort, 1856, p. 891; Ord, ‘‘On Myxcedema,” in Med. Chir. Trans., 1878; and various authors in Clin. Trans., 1882-84.

functions with whose disorders are associated some of the severe diseases of common occurrence, taking them accord- ing to the organs, and taking the liver first.

The liver-structure is very much that of a blood-gland ; its system of bile-ducts is subordinate to its blood-system, just as its biliary function, though the amount of its product be great, is in modern physiology subordinate to its glyco- genic, Except in connexion with JAUNDICE (q.v.), the biliary function does not concern us; we come at once to the not uncommon and very serious malady which may be regarded as an error of the glycogenic function, namely, diabetes.

Diabetes. —Like the errors of metabolism treated of in previous sections, diabetes is a “constitutional” or general disease. It depends essentially upon the circumstance that the blood passing to the kidney is overcharged with sugar; the kidney drains off the sugar along with an immense quantity of water, so that the prominent symptom is copious urine loaded with sugar. Diabetes can hardly be called a disease of the kidneys; these organs are but the ministers of disordered metabolism whose seat is elsewhere, and their structure is not even materially altered in the disease. In pronounced dia-betes sugar is everywhere. There may be half a per cent. of it in the blood, it is in all the tissue-juices and in all secretions, and it may enter into the composition of the urine to as much as 10 per cent. The diabetic patient drinks enormously (the thirst being due, it is conjectured, to the more concentrated state of the sugary blood), and eats or desires to eat two or three times more than in health ; the amount of urine voided is proportionately great, and it contains a total of urea in the twenty-four hours which corresponds approximately to the high feeding. All the while there is

no proper nutrition ; the body wastes, the skin becomes dry, the hair falls out, the muscles become flabby, the heart's action is weak, and the secreting organs become reduced in bulk and enfeebled in func- tion. Wounds tend to become gangrenous, boils and carbuncles are apt to form, and pulmonary consumption is a frequent com- plication. The saccharine state of the fluids is favourable to the lodgment of fungi (moulds), and these are found in the centres of disease in the lungs. The disease isan example of those paradoxes that we frequently come to in the last resort in the analysis of con- stitutional disturbances ; in spite of the enormous supplies that the organism demands (and receives), the tissues and organs are not nourished. It is only in some cases that the disease is checked by a pure nitrogenous diet. There issome maladaptation in the economy whereby there is an enormous quantity of sugar produced which is not wanted, and a great lack of that which is wanted. Where does the divergence occur from the physiological track ?

The blood ordinarily contains a trace of sugar, and traces of it may be discovered in the urine. It may be permitted to regard these traces as no more than the slight margin of non-perfect adapt- ation which is discoverable in many structural and functional effects. But the antecedent of this sugar, namely glycogen, exists in considerable quantity in animals the moment after death, and is assumed to exist in them during life. Although this assumption must be grantcd, it is not so justifiable to admit, with some authors, that the glycogen of the body is normally changed into sugar, the latter being at once disposed of in the further course of combustion.

Glycogen is now known to exist in various tissucs, more parti- cularly in inactive muscle ; but it is impossible not to conclude, on the evidence, that the liver is still the organ of its choice; and Ber-

nard's original position, that diabetes isa disorder of the glycogenic .

function of the liver, may be regarded as the reasonable one. The structure of the liver is in great part an adaptation to some such metabolic function, an adaptation to take somewhat from the blood and to add somewhat to the blood again. The intermediate state of this metabolism is glycogen, a starchy substance which changes to sugar under the action of a ferment out of the body, and changes to sugar sometimes in the body. Various kinds of

interference cause glycogen to change to sugar within the body—puncturing the inedulla oblongata at a particular spot with a fine spear-like point , the administration of curare, whose chief action is to paralyse the muscles through their nerves; the administration of nitrite of amy], whose more obvious effect is vaso-motor paralysis of the surface- vessels, causing dilatation of them. These interferences produce a passing diabetes. It has been objected that the diabetes so pro- duced is too transitory to be counted as analogous to the grave human malady; but it is well known that the same transitory effects are not uncommonly met with in medical practice. The true and serious diabetes is merely the established and confirmed habit of turning everything to sugar, and it cannot be doubted that Bernard's original experimental analogies are still the best clue to the nature of the disease.

These experimental interferences point to some profound upset of the nervous control. The spot in the medulla where puncture causes temporary diabetes is otherwise known to be the vaso-motor centre ; the effects of nitrite of amyl are otherwise such nerve-effects as

blushing ; the several effects of curare are identical with the muscular limpness of fear. The observations of clinical medicine point in the same direction; a large proportion of all the cascs of diabetes where the antecedents have been ascertaincd with any degree of relevancy are cases of profound emotional and intellectual strain, of shocks and jars and worries to the mind, and especially to the primary instincts and affections. Along with these we have a few significant cases of tumour in, or upon, or in the neighbourhood of the medulla. These clinical facts point clearly enough to some upsct of the nervous control, although there are certainly few or none of the usual concomitants of nervous disturbance. The nerve- paths that are implicated are the same as the vaso-motor ; but the effects themselves are not vaso-motorial. Nitrite of amyl causes artificial blushing, and it-also causes diabetes ; in like manner those subjective states of the mind (or mechanical states of the brain) which ordinarily take such outward directions as blushing and pallor, or the vaso-motorial direction, sometimes spend themselves otherwise, causing an upset of the glycogenic adaptation. It is cer- tainly not a simple affair of vaso-motor paralysis, even if the path

of influence be the same. Some nervous mechanism allied to the vaso-motor, or using the same path of influence, is probably con- cerned, the same kind of unknown nervous mechanism which would appear to be concerned in Addison's disease (of the supra- renal) and in Graves's disease (of the thyroid). The upset of this controlling nerve-force is followed by the production of a substance from the liver-cells which is directly added to the blood as sugar, and is removed as sugar in the urine. This substitution of sugar in the blood for some other substance is fatal to nutrition ; it is so wasteful an expenditure that the physiological bankruptcy cannot be averted even when the patient receives the enormous amount of food and drink for which he craves.

For the pathology of diabetes the obvious desiderata are to know the normal sources and normal ways of disposal of the glycogen of the liver. It seems to be premature to infer that, because aly- cogen, as its name implies, may easily become sugar, therefore it ordinarily does become sugar as a transition-stage towards some other product. If the regular conversion of glycogen into sugar be assumed, the cause of diabetes would be referred to the inadequate disposal of the sugar (¢.g., its inadequate combustion in the lungs). Cohnheim, after summing up the evidence from all sources, con- cludes that such inadequate disposal of sugar, properly present in the body, does occur in diabetes ; and he would seek for the reason of the failure in the want of some "ferment" which, in health, brings about the further breaking up of the sugar. The question, how- ever, is a sufficiently open one for us to contend that the initial error lies in the making of sugar at all; or, in other words, that the failure of the ferment (or of the nerve-control of metabolism) has to be assigned to an earlier stage of the metabolic process.

It is probably more than an accidental coincidence that the pancreas has often been found shrunken and indurated in diabetes, the shrinkage having followed apparently on an earlier hyperplasia. According to analogy it would mean that the error of the hepatic function had thrown more work upon the pancreas. Apart from the state of the pancreas there is nothing distinctive in the struc- tural conditions associated with diabetes.

Acute Yellow Atrophy of the Liver.—Here we have another severe " ye

concerned. atrc J It arises under a variety of circumstances, the chief of which are of lt

constitutional disorder, but much rarer than diabetes, in which the hepatic functions are chiefly, and perhaps primarily,

respectively poisoning by phosphorus, profound emotional troubles, and the state of pregnancy. ‘The early implication of the hepatic functions is shown by the existence of a degree of common jaundice for some time before the distinctive and fatal onset. The disease may be said to consist in a complete disorganization of the whole hepatic activity,—in the arrest of its biliary secretion and of its other metabolism. . The liver-cells fall into a state of molecular disintegration, and the organ shrinks bodily, sometimes to a mer’ fraction of its original volume. The ducts contain no bile, but a colourless plasma in place of it; the cells, where they keep their outlines, are full of albuminous granules; large quantities of leucin and tyrosin are found in the organ after death. What is there common to phosphorus-poisoning, profound emotional troubles, and the state of pregnancy which can be brought into relation with this remarkable upset of function and rapid disintegration of structure ?

As regards the effects of phosphorus, they belong toa remarkable class of effects, counterfeiting idiopathic diseased states, which it 1s the property of certain of the chemical elements, including arsenic, antimony, and lead, to induce. The action of this element may be said to be an arrest of metabolism, falling with special stress upon the great seat of such functional activity (and on the secret- ing cells of the stomach and kidney as well). As regards the acute yellow atrophy of the liver which follows profound emotional troubles, we have many slighter analogous instances of nervout inhibition of visceral function due to more transitory states 0 emotion ; the disorganization of the liver-function would be the proportionate effect of a more profound and more lasting men

r

a

rereHoLloegy

trouble. As to the acute yellow atrophy of the pregnant state the circumstances are doubly complex. In all the incidents of preg- nancy we must take into account the placental function, a meta- polism almost as great for the time as that of the liver itself; and, if we are to find any link of connexion between the seemingly diverse conditions here in question, we should have to resort to the somewhat vague generality that, in a rare concurrence of circum- stances, the placental function makes demands upon the maternal blood and tissues, or upon the ordinary metabolisms of the mother, which are of an upsetting kind, the incidence falling sometimes on the metabolic functions of the liver.

Albuminuria.—The waste of albumen in the course of the urinary excretion is a much more frequent and hardly less serious factor in disease than the sugar-waste; but albuminuria differs from diabetes in two important respects: firstly, the albumen which escapes is, in great part at least, the proper albumen of the blood (serum-albumin and globulin); and secondly, there goes hand in hand with the error of function a series of progressive structural changes fatal to the general efficiency of the kidney itself. Albuminuria is the functional error that corresponds on the whole closely to Bright's disease ; but it would be a mistake to suppose that Bright's disease can be measured by the amount of albumen lost. A con- sideration of these complex forms of constitutional disturbance may proceed, however, from the side of albuminous leakage, and from the point of view of the adaptations in the kidney whereby the leakage is ordinarily prevented or reduced to a minimum.

The problem, as it may be called, of the renal excretion is howto discharge from the blood and from the body absolutely the wash- ings of the tissues, or the waste-matters of metabolism, without allowing other dissolved substances of the blood to be discharged at the same time. In adaptation hereto, the kidney is in part a secreting organ and in part a mechanical filter. Those parts or regions of its structure where its epithelium is in the form of very large and richly protoplasmic cells have a true secretory function, so that nothing passes from the blood to be cast out from the body except through the interior of a very considerable cell, and_in all probability through a metabolic sclective process therein. This is known to be the urea-region of the kidney ; and the separation of urea from the blood may be said

to be the greatest of the renal functions. But by far the largest part of the urine, namely the water of it, is strained off from the blood by another kind of kidney- structure, which is more truly a mechanism ; not all the water of the urine, but the greater part of it, is filtered from the blood as it passes through the remarkable coils or glomeruli of small vessels which are placed at the farther end of the tubular system. In these the structural adaptations all point to mechanical filtration and not to selective secretion. The circulation in the vascular coils of the kidney is unique as regards the balance of driving force and resisting force ; the lateral pressure in these spherical coils of small vessels is greater than in any other capillary region of the body. It is indeed great enough to cause a transudation of water ; but is it so nicely balanced as not to allow an escape of albumen ?

gested state of the kidney, whether the embarrassment be traced to the side of influx or of efflux, to the arterial or the venous side. is favourable to the leakage of albumen, and a large part of all the albuminuria of medical practice is of that nature. ‘The congested state has been often experimentally induced in animals by various devices, and the laws of albuminous leakage have thus been determined with an exactitude which is very considerable. In these experiments the embarrassment of the circulation has been induced in various ways—by clamping the renal vein so as to dam up the blood in the kidney, by clamping the renal artery, by inter- fering with the nervous mechanisms, either at the spot or more centrally, and by introducing toxic substances into the circu- lating blood. Probably all of these forms of experimental inter- ference have their analogies in disease, although the gross mechan- ical impediments area rare type. The albuminuria of the pregnant state—not certainly an invariable occurrence, but rather a liability of that condition—may be referred in great part, if not altogether, to embarrassed venous reflux, for there are analogous cases of tem- porary albuminuria in which the cause is not the gravid uterus, but a uterine or ovarian tumour. In pregnancy it is specially apt to occur in primipare and in cases of twins, and in the later months. Again, the albuminuria of some forms of heart-disease, of emphy- sema, and of chronic bronchitis is an affair of difficult venous reflux. It is on the arterial side that we have to place the detcr- mining forces of a considerable number

of albuminuric cases, and these the most insidious. In all those cases where the congestion of the kidney is “inflammatory” there are the irregularities of circulation usual in inflammation, the parenchymatous cellular changes of inflammation, and the somewhat difficult correlation between these two factors in the process. These cases may be said to exhaust the instances of albuminuria due to heightened blood- pressure. The albuminuria of cachectic subjects is known to be dependent mostly on the impaired integrity of the glomerular vessel-walls,—on an amyloid change in them which permits the transudation of albumen under the ordinary conditions of pressure. But there is still a third determining cause of albuminuria, namcly, a changed state of the blood when both the pressure and the state of the vessel-walls are constants.

It has been mentioned that there are two instructive points of contrast between the drain of sugar and the drain of albumen; the sugar is not ordinarily present in the blood, and its discharge by the kidney is unattended with structural changes in that organ. The albumen of albuminuria is to a great extent the ordinary albu- men of the blood (serum-albumin and globulin) ; but in the urine there are other albumins found which are not ordinarily present in the blood, such as the variety identical with pepton, and another variety, hemialbumose, or ‘‘propepton.” The latter is found in eases of osteomalacia, and it may be detected under other circum- stances as well. Even when there are no new and specially diffus-ible albumins in the blood, it is probable that some alteration in the relative composition of the blood—in the proportion of its salts and the like—will make its albumen more liable to transude

‘sio- There can be no question that albumen does often find its way into cal the urine without amounting to a serious functional error or toa min-clinical condition of disease ; and it is equally certain that the

in the renal glomeruli. The albuminuria of phosphorus-poisoning and of acute yellow atrophy of the liver raises another possibility,—the possibility,

. leakage takes place at the glomeruli.

| Albumen is found so often in the urine when it is looked for systematically from day to day that we may admit, with Senator, that any one may be more

or less albuminuric from time to time. In 119 healthy soldiers, 19, or 16 per cent., had albumen in the urine; in 200 seemingly healthy persons examined for life assurance therc were 24 with albumen, or 12 per cent.; in 61 healthy children, 7, or 11°5 per cent ; in 32 hospital attendants in good health, 14, or 44 per cent. Add to these experiences the difficulty of detecting small quantities of albumen in ordinarily dilute urine and the impossibility of detecting certain varieties of albumen (known to occur in the urine) except by Special tests, and we may safely conclude that the filtration of water from the blood in the renal capillaries is very apt to be attended with a slight leakage of albumen also. The adaptation that water should drain off, but not albumen, is a very nicely balanced one, and therefore very easily upset. Asa matter of fact it is frequently upset ; the physiological albuminuria, like the physiological glycosuria, and like the small admixture of colourless cells among the multitude of blood-disks proper, is the narrow

namely, that the albumen is produced in the course of the meta- bolic process in the proper secreting epithelium of the kidney- tubules. Certainly the large epithelial cells of the kidney in these two conditions are filled with peculiar granules of ‘‘albuminous ” matter. The question has to be at least entertained, whether certain cases of albuminuria may not be due to a primary disorder of the renal metabolism, to some interference with its ‘‘ ferment.”

Four factors, then, are concerned in the waste of albumen, and they may act either singly or in combination. In the order of their importance they are :—(1) disorder of the vascular pressure, whereby the niccly-adjusted filtering mechanism in the glomeruli is deranged ; (2) states of the blood exceptionally favourable to the diffusion of its albumen, or even the presence in the blood of pecu- liar forms of albumen with high diffusibility ; (3) a more perme- able condition of the vessel-wall (as in amyloid disease); and (4) an error in the proper metabolism of the secreting epithelium where- by an albuminous by-product is formed from it. It now remains to consider briefly the other distinctive point in the acquired habit of albuminous waste, namely, the associated structural changes.

Struetural Changes in the Kidney.—If the kidneys be exainined Large from a case in which the symptoms, sometimes lasting for years, white had been

albumen in the urine (with cylindrical casts of the kid- kidney.

Margin of non-perfect adaptation which meets us frequently in the economy of living organisms. The nicely-adjusted balance of

driving force and resisting force in the vascular tufts is constantly exposed to disturbing influences, so that one may reckon to find a certain small average of albuminous leakage.

The great occasion of this leakage is sluggish circulation through the glomeruli, whether from over-distension of the veins beyond or

m other cause. The faster the blood passes through these capil- laries the greater the quantity of water drained off, and the more minimal the quantity of albumen that escapes; but when the blood travels slower there is absolutely less water filtered off in a given time, and the proportion of albumen that passes with it is increased

from a minimal quantity to something considerable. Thus a con-

ney-tubules), a more or less scanty amount of urine, and a small proportion of urea, together with dropsy and marked anemia, they will most likely be found to be enormously enlarged, and of a pale fawn colour, compared by Watson to the cut surface of a parsnip. This is the “large white kidney” of chronic Bright’s disease, the enlargement being in the outer zone of the organ, in the region of the glomeruli and secreting tubules. ‘‘ The incised surface gives one the notion of some deposit whereby the original texture of the part is obscured.” How comes it that an attack of congestion at some more or less remote period, or repeated congested states of the

organ, have led to so remarkable a result? It does not help us, for the purpose of rational analysis, to turn to ‘inflammation ” as a last resource ; what the analysis really conducts us to is the corre- lation between the disordered function and the structural changes.

It is impossible not to connect the remarkable form of hyper- plasia in the large white kidney (or where there is also the amyloid complication) with the albuminous character of the exuda- tion in which the organ, and more especially its cortex, is bathed. Sugar, as we have seen, has no such effect on structure, nor has uric acid, as we shall see in speaking of the kidney in gout ; the albumen has a special influence on the local centres of nutrition, on the cells and tissues of the organ. Again, the excess of nutri- tion does not conduct to increase on the normal lines. There are such cases of normal increase in the kidney's bulk, as when one kidney has to do the work of two, owing to removal or congenital absence of the other. But in the large white kidney of albumin- uria the increase is of an unprofitable kind ; it is a hyperplasia that not only does not add to the efficiency of the organ but even seri- ously impairs it. The large epithelial cells of the secreting region

are clouded with albuminous deposit, aud their nuclei show a.

fainter reaction to the colouring agents; or they fall into an unstable granular condition and into molecular detritus ; or they are shed bodily into the lumen of the tubule. The flattened cells of the Bowman's capsule are less apt to degenerate ; they are more likely to multiply i sitw, and to build up an unnaturally thick wall around the capsule. Further, the interstices of the tubules and the margins of the glomeruli are occupied by collections of round nuclear cells, like the collections underlying a catarrhal mucous membrane. All this activity is misdirected ; it does not help the function, but overwhelms it. The urine is scanty and the propor- tion of urea small; and these consequences may be traced, firstly to the sluggish circulation within the organ, and secondly to the complete obliteration of some glomeruli and the cumbrous thicken- ing of others, and to the degeneration of the secreting epithelium interfering with its proper metabolism. There is hardly any tendency to restitutio ad tntegrum in the large white kidney, the unprofitable overfeeding of its elements continuing to the end.

P At HO ao GF

themselves more by ardent spirits than by ordinary food, and next most frequently in the subjects of gout and of lead – poisoning although there are a good many cases of the disease remaining fo be accounted for by less obvious causes.

The dropsy of Bright’s disease is difficult in its pathology. The p, watery state of the blood, or the hydremia, consequent on the loss of “a of much of its albumen does not suffice by itself. A subsidiary Bri ht hypothesis, adopted by Cohnheim, is that the blood-vessels of the Fas skin become unusually permeable. Sometimes the dropsy appears = first round the ankles, at other times it shows itself in putiiness of the eyelids and a somewhat bloated pallor of the face.

Gout and the Uratic Diathcsis.—Many other states of the system @oyt besides podagra—the disease which usually begins in the night with pain and redness of the great-toe joint—are now reckoned as be- longing to gout. The disease, in the extended use of the name, is indeed a widespread error of metabolism which may manifest itself in very various ways. The particular liabilities to error arise dur- ing the metabolism of proteids, from the first stage of digestion in the stomach to the last stage of excretion in the kidney. Hence it is that gout, in its widest meaning, has been taken to be a form of “dyspepsia.” The opportunity for going wrong may be said to depend on the fact that there are two chief forms of nitrogenous waste remaining to be got rid of in the end, which are somehow correlated to one another,—the Inghly soluble substance urea, and the highly insoluble substance uric acid. There are remarkable ditferences in the proportions of these two waste-products through- out the animal kingdom; in most reptiles and in birds the form of nitrogenous waste is mostly uric acid, whereas in man (and other mammals) it is mostly urea. But in man the waste is still to a small extent in the form of uric acid. In normal human urine the proportions are :—to 1500 grammes (52°91 ounces) of water m the urine of twenty-four hours the total of solids is 72 grammes (2°54 ounces), of which 33°18 (117 ounces) are urea, and only ‘555 (019 ounce) uric acid, or not more than one-sixticth of the quantity of urea. Whether or not we are to regard this small margin of urie acid as another of those instances of non-perfeet adaptation of which we have previously found instances in the

Granular Contrasting with the large white kidney is the contracted kidney physiological traces of sugar and of albumen in the urine, and of con- in another variety of chronic Bright’s disease. For the present | colourless corpuscles in the blood, there can be no doubt that the tracted purpose it is necessary to follow the broader lines of distinction, adaptation, such as it is,

whereby the nitrogenous waste is mostly kidney. and to avoid the transitions and finer shades in the pathology ; and | the highly soluble urea, but to a very small amount also the less

it may be stated as a general truth that the large white kidney goes with scanty urine and much waste of albumen (the waxy modifica- tion having only the latter), while the small granular contracted kidney is associated with even copious urine and a waste of albu- men which is often small, and in any case variable. The error in these latter cases appears to lic with the arterial side of the circula- tion ; the left heart is hypertrophied, and so is the muscular coat of the arteries in the kidney, if not also elsewhere. It is cssen- tially an interstitial disease of the kidney, leading to enormous development of its supporting tissue ; whole tubules become obli- terated, but in those that remain the epithelium is not degenerated. Obliteration also overtakes the glomeruli, but there must be a compensating increase in the work done by those that survive to account for the copious urine; it often happens, also, that num- erous small cysts are produced.

Shrinkage of the connective tissue after a period of revived embryonic activity is the cause of all these changes; it is the ordinary shrinkage of cicatricial tissue, and it has the effect of com- pressing the- proper urinary apparatus—the filtering and the secret- ing—to its destruction. The kidneys may be reduced even to one- fourth of their natural size, and their uneven surface shows that there has been mechanical dragging along certain lines. In the end the urea-waste accumulates in the blood to such an extent that death results, usually from uremic coma and convulsions. In some cases cerebral hemorrhage anticipates the fatal effect of uremia.

The small granular contracted kidney is usually of a reddish- brown colour, but it may be whitish, in which case the lobulation of its surface is larger. It is one of the standing difficulties of renal pathology to decide whether the small contracted kidney is not often a later stage of the large white, But there can be hardly any doubt that it is oftenest the structural manifestation of an entirely different disease, an arterial disease. That which has been emphasized by some pathologists as the distinctive process in this affection is the overgrowth of cells on the inner wall of the arteries, the so-called endo-arteritis or arterio-capillary sclerosis, whereby the lumen of the vessel

tends to be occluded. But it may be made a question whether this is not really a part of the revived embry- omic activity in the connective tissue, whose shrinkage gives the organ its granular contracted character. The interest would thus come to centre in the error of nutrition whereby so much activity is diverted to the connective tissue, an activity that takes the embryonic formative direction. We have a close analogy in cirrhosis of the liver, a discase associated with the drinking of raw spirits ; and it is noteworthy that the insidious form of Bright's disease, whose morbid anatomy is summed up in the small contracted and puckered kidney, occurs most frequently in those who sustain

soluble uric acid, is the occasion of many and serious morbid con- ditions. The liability to these gouty and calculous disorders depends partly on the increase of uric acid at the expense of the urea, together with the low solubility of the former, but it seems to depend also on an abnormally low power of the animal fluids to dissolve uric acid, or of the kidney to eliminate it when its quantity is not excessive.

The peculiar liability from uric acid is sometimes called the Urati uric-acid or uratic diathesis or constitution ; some persons have it dia- much more than others, and it is exceedingly apt to be handed thesi: down from parent to offspring, so that the stock, in countries and among elasses where gout is common, may be said to be widely inoculated with it. Where the acquisition of it can be traced at first hand it is often found that the associated circumstances are high-feeding and a life of physical inaction and feeble intellectual zest. These are among the best-known conditions of gout, admitted equally by the ancients and the moderns. It is now known, however, that practically the same gouty constitution may be and often is induced by conditions which have hardly anything in common with luxury. Thus gout is a common liability of workers in lead, being one of the various manifestations of lead-poisoning ; it is also common among those classes of labourers, such as dock- labourers on the Thames, whose habitual drink is porter; and it is said to have become common among the working-class in Dublin, where it was rare twenty or thirty years ago, according as they have taken to drinking porter instead of ardent spirits. 'There are still other cases of gouty constitution for which neither heredity, nor luxury, nor lead-poisoning, nor porter-drinking can be in- voked as an explanation ; and

these are the cases which justify the somewhat wide definition of gout as a form of dyspepsia.

In order to have the gouty effect there need be no great inercase Uric d in the ainount of uric acid formed in the course of the metabolism ing of proteids. During an acute attack of gout, and previous to it, the amount of uric acid in the urine will probably be much below the average; it is the kidney that has failed in its function, So that the uric acid is retained in the blood to be deposited else- where. The presence of uric acid (urate of soda) in the blood in gout is the well-known discovery of Garrod, who has also pointed out that its proportion in the urine is at the same time reduced. But there need not even be failure of the kidney's function, al- though, as a matter of fact, there often is; the error may lie m the heightened insolubility of the uric acid, It is observed that the uric acid of urine is apt to be deposited in the form of urates, as a brick-red sediment, even when there is no excess of it; 4 more acid state of the urine seems to favour the precipitation © the uric acid ; and it has been conjectured (from the success of the

ki¢ y.

"sity,

alkaline treatment) that there may be some analogous acidity intro- duced into the blood and lymph in the form of organic acids (pro- dueed in the course of faulty digestion), which would cause the nrie acid to be deposited from the blood as it circulates generally. It is in the cartilages of the joints that the deposition usually takes place, the great-toe joint (metatarso-phalangeal) having a quite remarkable and inexplicable liability. The surface of the cartilage is crusted with patches of a whitish opaque substance, which proves to be needle-shaped crystals of urate of soda; the deposition ex- tends deeper and affects the fibrous structures of the joint ; it may be so exteusive in other fibrous structures as to amount to tophi or chalk-stones. In some rare cases of gout such organs as the parotid giands may be completely disorganized by the chalky de- posit, or there may be numerous centres of its deposition in the membranes of the spinal cord.

Albuminuria and Eezema of Gout.—Two morbid conditions are so frequently associated with gout as to be part of its natural

_ history, namely, eczema of some regions of the skin (eyelids, back

of neck, &c.) and albuminuria. We have absolutely no elue to the connexion between the skin-disease and the uratic diathesis ; for the albuminuria a connexion may be suggested. The albumen will at first be absent in the intervals of gouty attacks, showing itself during the attack, or fora few days previously ; its appear- ance in the urine thus coincides, so far as it goes, with the decrease of uricacidin the urine. It isinipossible to exclude the possibility that the albumen is here an error of the renal metabolism. All the facts of the gouty constitution point to a far-reaching disturb- ance of the metabolic functions, which may be induced by causes so different as lead-poisoning and a luxurious life; uric acid is not the only metabolic product concerned, although it is the chief, for there is even an occasional implication of the glycogenic metabolism, as shown by the presence of sugar in the urine, and there is the much more common albuminuria. It is impossible to believe that there are structural changes in the kidney to account for the earliest occurrences of albumen in the urine in gout, for the urinary sccretion may be normal for long intervals ; and it is by no means certain that the albumen is a leakage from the glomeruli owing to the altcred pressure of congestion.

The kidney in chronic gout may be affected in obvious characters ; it will show, on section, streaks of white opaque substance within or between the tubules,—that which is between them being composed of erystals of urate soda often in fan-shaped bundles, while that which is within them is an amorphous mixture of urates of ammonia and soda and uric acid. The so-called gouty kidney may and often does assume the progressive structural changes which lcad to the state of contraction and puckering. (There are other renal deposits of uric acid, as in new-born children, which are transitory.)

The uric-acid diathesis may manifest itself, not in gout, but in gravel. In this case the excess of uric acid is thrown into the tubules of the kidney, where it forms concretions; these may either be washed out by the urine as fine

grains, or may remain for a time to increase by accretion, forming renal and vesical calculus.

Obesity, Local Formations of Fat.—The significance of fat under all circumstances in the animal body is by no means well under- stood, but it may be conveniently approached from the side of metabolism. Adipose tissue is a somewhat special development of mesoblastic tissue, and most usually of the common binding tissue. The embryonic cell transforms the greater part of its protoplasm into an oily fluid which contains no nitrogen, the nucleus being retaied on one side along with a narrow fringe of cell-substance ; a fat-cell in its early stage thus resembles a signet-ring, and in its later development it becomes a thin-walled vesicle which may be distended by its oily contents much beyond the limits of even the largest cells of other tissues. This transformation may happen to the cells of the connective tissue in almost any part of the body ; but in the ordinary course of development it has certain seats of election, such as the stratum of gelatinous tissue underlying the kidney and the subcutaneous tissue. All synovial and serous membranes, except those of the liver and lungs, are favourite seats of fat-formation. In the subcutaneous tissue the first formation of fat appears to be associated with local formation of blood, the same mesoblastic elements being at one stage hemato- blasts and afterwards, in their vesiculated state, fat-cells. It cannot be doubted that there is a close adaptation to the needs of the economy in the vicissitudes of the fat-tissue; but it must be admitted at the same time that the adaptation is often singularly obscure. In many cases the changes in the fat-tissue seem rather to be a correlated necessity.

_ One of the earliest facts that we meet with in this connexion isthe gradual replacement of the thymus gland by fat, the fluid being absorbed in its turn, and the mass of tissue shrinking. Another fact of the same kind is the change into fat-cells of

lymphoid” cells elsewhere, as the change of red marrow into yellow marrow in the central canals of the long bones. Both of these changes have a prototype or an analogy in the transition that one sees in groups of the subcutaneous spindle-shaped cells from a hematoblastic activity to a fat-making activity. The scason of

puberty isa time of active fat-formation, more especially in women and notably in the breast-region. A still more remarkable develop- ment of fat oecurs in many eases of sterility, and in many women after the child-bearing period has ceased in ordinary. Such in- stances of a greater or less degree of obesity are so clearly associated with the obsolescence of an important function that they may be called physiological. Other instances of obesity have no such obvious or uniform association. Thus, an obese habit may follow one or more attacks of malarial fever; it sometimes occurs as one of the lifelong changes induced by an attack of typhoid fever. There is often a great degree of plumpness along with the extreme ill health of chlorosis. Idiocy and some forms of insanity are apt to be associated with fatness ; in the pseudo-hypertrophic muscular paralysis of boys the connective-tissue cells between the muscular bundles become so active in fat-making that they usurp the place ofthe muscle. Asan effect of dietetic errors obesity usually follows the inordinate consumption of starchy and saccharine substances, and especially the drinking of much beer, stout, and even other forms of alcohol. As a racial character obesity is found among the negro populations in some parts of Africa (South Africa and the Upper Nile).

Among the most extraordinary developments of true fat are those Local cases where it develops locally in association with cancers or other fat-for- malignant tumours. Thus, in a boy who had suffered amputation mations. of the leg for a malignant tumour of the tibia there was a recur- rence of the disease in the stump and in the ilium ; le died in a state of extreme emaciation of all the body except the thigh of the affected side, which was enveloped in a layer of ordinary sub- cutaneous fat half an inch thick all round, contrasting strangely with the wasted limb of the other side. To take another unambigu- ous ease, an extensive development of fat through all its embryonic phases can actually be traced in the serous covering of the rectum in a case of cancerous stricture of the part. There is usually much local development of fat round the sac of an old hernia. In certain glandular organs, such as the pancreas, the supporting conneetive tissue sometimes takes on an extensive fat-forming activity, so that the organ is half transformed into adipose tissuc ; the same may be found around the pelvis of the kidney in old age.

Lipomatous Tumours.—It is not always possible to say whether Lipoma. a local development of fat should be called a lipoma or not ; thus, the fat around an old hernia may be so circumscribed as practically to amount to a fatty tumour, and that may be the ease also with the fat around the breast or behind the eyeball. On the intestine, notably the transverse colon, the masses of fat do become pendulous fatty tumours (much more often in the domestic quadrupeds than in man) of a uniform or lobulated structure, which may hang by a long and slender vascular stem, like an apple or a cherry on its stalk ; when the vascular supply is kept up with difficulty these pen- dulous masses of fat tend to become ealcified or otherwise sclerosed, and to fall off into the abdominal cavity as “loose bodies.” The loose bodies of the joints originate sometimes in the same manner from the pendulous masses of subsynovial fat. On the peritoneal surface the pendulous growth of fat may have a short stem and abundant blood-vessels, aud go on to form a large lobulated tumour ; but more usually in that situation the twmour-habit is established at a number of points, leading to the condition of multiple lipo- mata. The lipomata of the subcutaneous tissue may be single or multiple ; if they are not congenital they are most often associated with a general obese habit ; and they may grow to an enormous size. The submucous tissue of the stomach or intestine is a com- paratively rare seat of fatty tumour. The most inexplicable lipo- mata are those which form, under very rare circumstances, as circumscribed nodular masses in the interstitial connective tissue of the cortex of the kidney, and in the subarachnoid tissue of the brain and spinal cord.

It is convenient to place these occurrences of obesity, of local Of fat-overgrowths of fat, and of lipomatous tumours under the head of making errors of metabolism, but it is difficult to find one physiological in gen- rationale for them all. Where obesity is due to dietetic errors we eral. may say that the carbohydrates supplied to the body have been more than the combustion could overtake, and that the residue is “ stored up” as fat. Where there is a degree of embonpoint in such a inalady as chlorosis we may say that the feeble oxygen-carrying capacity of the red-blood corpuscles has led to an inadequate combustion of the carbohydrates supplied in due quantity, and that the residue has been stored up in that case also. In the unhealthy fattening that sometimes follows malarial or typhoid fever it does not appear why there should be the residue requiring to be

stored up. Again, there are persons of an obese habit (probably con- genital) who avoid a diet of carbohydrates, but turn even their meat diet to fat, just as there are confirmed diabetics who turn everything to sugar. Still further, we have the very remarkable tendency to make fat when the reproductive functions have ceased either prematurely or in the ordinary course; and that is a fre- quently occurring case which can hardly be bronght into the doctrine of inadequate combustion of carbohydrates. The peculiar liability of the connective tissue between or upon the bundles of

muscle to become fat-tissue may point to some defective com- bustion in the work done by muscles. In the cases of pseudo- hypertrophic paralysis of the leg-muscles in children we are con- fronted with an enormous development of the same process. Other eases of local fat-formation, as in the interstitial tissue of the pancreas or around the kidney, are still more inexplicable. Lipo- matous tumours, where they are congenital, may be referred to an carly error of tissue-growth ; where they are acquired, we have usually a coexisting or previous obesity (local or general) to resort to, and the only difficulty is to understand how the lobules of fat came to acquire the delimitation or individuality of a tumour.

Degenera- Degenerations.—In a nosological outline there is perhaps no

tions.

Mucous.

Albu- minous,

Fatty.

Calcare- ous.

Caseous.

more convenient place for some remarks ou the general subject of degenerative changes than at the end of sections dealing with the liabilities

of obsolescence, the special liabilities of the suprarenal and thyroid, and the larger errors of metabolism.

The usual healthy appearance of the most elementary kind of protoplasm is a soft translucent grey; undcr the microscope this greyish protoplasm is uniformly and finely granular. From that standard of health there are various deviations, representing various kinds or degrees of degeneration. The chief degenerations are the mucous, the albuminous, the fatty, the calcareous, the caseous, and the amyloid.

The mcous change proceeds on more obvious physiological lines than inost of the others ; it is, as we have seen, the proper destiny of surface-epithelium in many situations ; and we have found also, in treating of myxomatous tumours, that even in these it has not very remote affinities to the hematoblastic function. A some- what obscure form of it, the collotd change, has been mentioned in connexion with cancer of the stomach and breast.

The albwminous change is that which is often found in the large glandular cells of the,liver, kidney, &c., in disorders accompanied by a rise of temperature. The cells are somewhat swollen, and their substance is clouded so as to obscure the central nucleus.

Merging imperceptibly with the albuminous degeneration is the fatty, in which numerous small droplets appear in the cell-sub- stance, which is no longer uniform but diversified with highly- refracting granules; these droplets are of the nature of fat. In the liver-cells the droplets may run together, so that the liver-cell has the ordinary appearance of a physiological fat-cell. But there is in general a broad line of distinction between the transformation of protoplasmic substance into fat (usually in the connective-tissue cells) and fatty degeneration as above described. The latter occurs under many circumstances. It is an accompaniment of phosphorus- poisoning and of those idiopathic states which run parallel with the former, such as acute yellow atrophy of the liver. It is apt to occur in the inner coat of arterics in chlorotic subjects, producing yellowish opaque patches, which sometimes give rise to erosions. The arteries of the brain are liable to a similar degeneration more universally and under other circumstances than chlorosis. The very common condition of atheroma of

the large arteries (especially aorta) is a more extensive degeneration of a fatty kind, on the basis of antecedent swelling or increase of tissue in the deeper part of the inner coat, or in the interval between the inner and the middle coats. This variety of fatty change is often associated with the production of cholesterin scales, and with a subsequent calcare- ous transformation. Although it is most common after middle life, it is not a senile change proper, inasmuch as the most long-lived persons have none of it.

The calcareous degeneration is most often found in the cartilages of the ribs after middle life ; but, like the atheromatous change, it is not properly senile, as the very aged sometimes have their costal cartilages quite soft. The deposition of lime-salts (carbonate of lime) is in the capsules of the cartilage-cells ; on applying a drop of hydrochloric acid to a thin slice of such cartilage an efferves- cence of carbonic-acid gas will occur. Lime is often deposited in the enlarged thyroid of goitre, and it is sometimes found in degen- erated areas of the placenta. In the suprarenal it is much rarer than the cheesy degeneration. Fatty tumours in the lower animals, especially in the bovines, are liable to become calcareous ; and the presence of granules of lime is a very common feature (along with the cheesy degeneration to be next mentioned) of the peculiar form of tuberculous growths of the serous membranes, or tuberculous nodules and infiltrations of the viscera and lymphatic glands, in those animals. In other tumours, of man or of animals, it is much less common. Lastly, foreign bodies lodged in the tissues, and the encysted trichina-parasite in the muscles, acquire a deposit of lime in the thickening of tissue which forms their capsule.

_The caseous or cheesy form of degeneration is the characteristic disintegration that the cells and tissues undergo in tuberculous and scrofulous disease. Collections of pus, as in chronic abscess of the liver or in chronic empyema (pus in the pleural cavity), are liable to the same process of drying up and molecular disintegra- tion. In the central parts of hard cancers also it is not unusual to find cheesy areas. A form of degencration not very unlike the caseous may be observed as a perfectly normal incident in the deeper parts of the placenta. It is by far the most common degen-

eration of the suprarenal cells, whether in association with general tuberculous disease or not. Under all these circumstances the caseous change follows upon a certain amount of hyperplasia of the tissue, for the maintenance of which there has been no adequate provision in the way of new blood-vessels.

The gummatous degeneration of the products of syphilitic infec- Gyn tion is not always easily distinguished from the caseous; but, for toys the most part, the substance is firmer and more cohesive, as the name implies, less dry and friable in the section, and of a brown colour rathcr than of the yellowish or fawn colour of cheesy degeneration,

A vitreous, hyaline, or waxy degeneration of muscular fibre occurs Vity in the courseof some fevers, as well as in progressive muscularatrophy.

The amyloid degeneration is the most peculiar of them all. The Amy degenerate substance was thought to be allied to starch (whence ojq the name) on account of the reaction with iodine (mahogany-red), but it is now known to be a nitrogenous principle. When it is present in large quantity, as in the amyloid liver, it gives the cut surface a peculiar glance, like that of fat bacon, and hence it has been called lardaceous or waxy degeneration. Its proper seat is the walls of the smaller arteries and the capillarics ; these undergo a kind of hyaline swelling, like the swelling of boiled sago, so that the aggregate effect in such an organ as the liver is to make it very much larger, firmer, and more rigid in its outlines. This alteration in the vessel-wall facilitates the escape of the fluid part of the blood ; hence the amyloid change in the kidney is a cause of albuminuria and in the intestine of diarrhcea. In the wall of the intestine the course of the amyloid vessel may be tracked by the mahogany-red line left by iodine. This remarkable form of degeneration of the vessels is associated with long-standing sup- puration (especially in discases of bone), with chronic dysentery, syphilis, and other of the constitutional states called cachectic,4

§ 12.—ERRors oF THE NERVOUS CONTROL.

Reference has already been made to the obscure impli- cation of nerve-control in such disorders as Addison's dis- ease, Graves's disease, diabetes, and acute yellow atrophy of the liver; the integrity of the controlling nerve-force may be said to be necessary to the perfect carrying out of the give-and-take of metabolism, or to the full effect of the "ferment" in each of the breaking-up processes. Ina subsequent section (p. 393 sq.) reference is made to another controlling nervous mechanism, whose paralysis or dis- | order is immediately accountable for a very large part of the sum-total of sickness in the world, namely, the mechanism which regulates the animal heat. The present section will be devoted to a few morbid conditions of the cerebro-spinal system, selected to illustrate pathological principles. |

Neuralgia and Tetanus.—One or two instances of neuralgia and Nev of tetanus will serve to illustrate a peculiarity of the disorders of the algi nervous system among morbid processes of the body. A personin j getting up from a stooping posture before the fire hits the right eyebrow hard against the cdge of the mantelpiece; the blow has | touched the filaments of the supra-orbital nerve, and there is more or less of pain for a time over the limited area to which these small _ sensory twigs are distributed. Several weeks afterwards, when the accident had been forgotten, there is an attack of severe neuralgia over the whole of that side of the face; the pain shoots alongall | the nerve-branches above the eyebrow, along all the branches | below the eye-socket (infra-orbital), and along the branches goig

q

to the skin of the lower-jaw region or chin. The sequence 0 events means that the injury to the branch of the trigeminusabove | the eyebrow has touched the trunk of the nerve in such a manner | that, after a considerable interval, intermittent attacks of pain | are felt along all three sets of branches covering the whole of one side of the face. In other words, a molecular condition of nerve, originally peripheral and limited, has become central and diffusive. Another instance is as follows. A person seated at a high desk day after day exposes the outer side of the ankle and region of the Achilles-tendon to currents of cold air from the opening and shut- ee EE EEE eee

1 See Cl. Bernard, Nouvelle fonction du Foie, comme Organe pro- ducteur de Matiére sucrée, Paris, 1858, and Lecons sur le Diabéte et la Glycogenése

animale, Paris, 1877; Pavy, Researches on the Nature and Treatment of Diabetes, Lond., 1862; Senator, Die Albuminure, Berlin, 1882; Cohnheim, Allg. Pathol., vol. ii, Berlm, 1881; Grainger | Stewart, Practical Treatise on Bright's Disease of the Kidneys, Edin. , 1868, and in Trans. Internat. Med. Congr., Lond., 1881, vol. th; 5. Rosenstein, Die Pathologie und Therapie der Nierenkrankheiten, Berlin, 1868, and in Trans. Internat. Med. Congr., Lond., 1881, vol. it. ; Garrod, Treatise on Gout, &c., 8d ed., Lond., 1876, and on " Eczema and Albu- minuria in relation to Gout," in Trans. Internat. Med. Cong?., Lond. ' 1881, vol. ii.; Virchow, "Lipoma," in Krankhaft. Geschwiilste, vol. 1.

cal

rer Hot oc Y

ting of a door, some occasional pains being felt where the external saphenous nerve runs behind the outer ankle and over the outside of the heel. After a lapse of time there is an attack of sciatica, the first of a series continuing for years, in which the course of the diffusive pain can be tracked, as if it had had an anatomical know- ledge of the nerves of the limb, along all the branches of the great sciatic nerve to the thigh, leg, and foot. In this case the sequence of events is the same as in the former: the original excitant had touched the terminal twigs of the external saphenous branch of

Jib

the consciousness, and little if at all controlled by the will. Some disorders in this group are purely functional, that is to say, there

are no concurrent structural changes. In others, the functional disorder is attended or closely followed by degeneration ; and these

are mostly diseases of the spinal cord.. Representative instances

from each of these two classes will now be adverted to briefly.

Convulsions (Eelampsia).—Apart from the convulsions of uremic Convul-

poisoning, there are two prominent divisions of eclampsia—the sions.

the great sciatic nerve ; after an interval intense neuralgic pain begins to be felt far up the great nerve-trunk itself; and the pain diffuses itself not only to the filaments belonging to the extcrnal saphenous branch but along all the branches. A limited peri- pheral disturbance has, after an interval, become central and diffusive, and the pain apt to recur intermittently for years after. _ Let us now take a case of tetanus involving the very same peri- pheral nerve as the last case. A boy engaged on a farm chafes the outer side of one heel by wearing boots too large for his feet ; the abrasion, which is exactly over the course of the external saphenous nerve, is disregarded, and the irritation of the boot permitted to continue. Ina few days he is admitted into hospital with tetanus, that is to say, with the neck-muscles rigid, the jaw locked, the features drawn, the recumbent body bent forwards from time to time like a bow, its whole weight resting on the head and heels, occasional wild jerkings of the limbs, and the muscles everywhere as hard as boards. ‘This horrible and painful state of the muscular system usually ends in the patient dying after a week or ten days or less, exhausted by hunger and thirst and want of sleep, or by inability to breathe under the vice-like grip in which the chest is held by the muscles of respiration. The sequence of events is here closely parallel with that in the cascs of neuralgia: an irritated condition of a small outlying nerve-twig, which is not a motor nerve, has, after a short interval, touched the spinal cord in such a manner that motor force is freely and continuously let loose over the whole muscular system, with occasional discharges of a more intense kind. Spasm commencing in the muscles near the injury has been spoken to by the patients or attendants sometimes ; but the observation has been recorded, on the whole, seldom. Strangely enough, it isin the muscles of the face, neck, and throat that the tetanic rigidity shows itself first, in whatever part of the body the injured nerve may be. There probably always is an injured nerve somewhere, although it is necessary to admit a few cases of “ idio- pathic” tetanus in which the nerve-injury is unknown. Gunshot- wounds of nerves are most likely to be followed by tetanus, as well as lacerated, contused, and punctured wounds generally, including the bites inflicted by canine tecth. The tetanic onset may follow the wound immediately, or it may come on while the wound is “cleaning” or suppurating, or during the stage of scarring, or some time after the cicatrix has formed. A wound which has

been neglected in the healing, in which foreign particles have been left, or in which the nerve has been involved in the tightening of the scar is most apt to be followed by tetanus. A certain temperament, or state of the mind and body, predisposes to it ; the frequency of tetanus in war may be due to more than one cause, but it seems necessary to include among the predisposing factors the excitement or preoccupation of thc battlefield. Certain states of climate predispose to it; in the dry Australian air it is not uncommon for wounds to be followed by tetanus, and the disease is equally common within the tropics, especially under the circumstances which ordinarily cause chill. Among animals the horse is particularly liable to it, especially as a sequel of castration. The rise of temperature in tetanus is probably the effect of the excessive muscular metabolism. Explosive Discharges of Nerve-force on slight Provoeation.— Instances of neuralgia and of tetanus as the sequel of a peripheral ~~injury, or series of scarcely observed excitations, are illustrations of that remarkable property of the nervous system which Rind~~ fleisch speaks of as involving a “disproportion between cause and effect.” The central nervous system, he says, ‘‘has a capacity for absorbing enormous quantities of centripetal or ingoing excitations asif they left no trace; but in reality it stores them up in the form of potential encrgy. It is this that enables an impression which may hardly exceed the limits of physiological excitation, but is aided in various ways by circumstances, such as inherited feeble- ness, lowered nutrition, or blood-poisoning, suddenly to let loose the whole store of these accumulated forces and to give rise to an outbreak of the most acute feclings and the most powerful move- ments.” The want of outlet at the time is an error that underlies much of nervous disease, both purely psychical and other. The brooding upon wrongs, real or imagined, the unsatisfied hunger for sympathy, pent-up or unexpressed emotion under many cir- cumstances, even the solitude of shepherds on the Australian and lew Zealand downs, are among the causes tending to a total un- Inging of the mind. Such illustrations of the general principle are beyond the scope of this article ; the illustrations that concern US most at present are found rather in the province of reflex nervous activity, where the response is automatic, not always recorded by

convulsions of infancy and childhood and the convulsions of the pregnant or puerperal state. In infancy the reflex movements and uncontrolled

spontaneities are predominant, just as the impressions from the outer world are but little discriminated or retained. It takes little to throw some infants into a fit; the irritation of teething, of ill-digested food, of worms, and the like will suffice. Whither in these cases the excitations have been accumulating or not, the discharge of outgoing energy is always explosive. The muscles that straighten the back are contracted to the utmost, and the air is forcibly expelled from the chest with a prolonged cry ; the head is thrown back, and the arms and legs kept rigid. The state of rigid spasm (tonic contraction) is succeeded by rapid con- tractions and relaxations (clonic) of the muscles of the face and limbs and whole body, which gradually become more comprehensive in sweep and slower in rhythm until they cease. Consciousness has meanwhile been suspended, and does not return until some ten or twenty minutes after. the convulsive movements have ceased ; with the return of consciousness the patient “comes out of the fit.’ The liability to such attacks diminishes very strikingly as the intelligence and the will develop and the body hardens. It is not until the circumstances of pregnancy and childbed arise that any liability to convulsious at all comparable to that of infancy is again met with. No analysis of the circumstances of puerperal convulsions can be attempted here ; if they are in some cases of “uremic ” origin, in association with the albuminuria of pregnancy, there are other cases that are primarily disorders of reflex inner- vation.

Epilepsy.—An epileptic fit does not differ materially in its pheno- Epilepsy.

mena from a fit of convulsions as above described ; the tongue is more apt to be caught between the teeth in the rapid movements of the lower-jaw muscles, and the spectacle of a grown person in a fit is more distressing in every way. That which really distin- guishes epilepsy from eclampsia is that it is a habit of the nervous system, with a good deal of regularity in its recurrences. Tits of convulsions in infancy will eease when the cause is removed, when teething is over, or worms expelled, or after the probationary state of the nervous system has been outgrown. The convulsions of childbed also, if the patient happily survive the attack, come to an end when the critical state of the system has passed. But it is the distinctive mark of epilepsy that it tends to become an ingrained habit, that the fit is there in posse, as if detached from its exciting cause, established,

permanent, and self-existent on the paths of ingoing and outgoing nerve-influence. This tendency of a disordered reflex action to repeat itself is the same “memory” that has been claimed by Hering for the cells and inechanisms of the body generally. That which is implied in the original use of the word, namely, retentiveness or the resurrection of past im- pressions, and the contagion of associated ideas, is a mystery large enough to cover the minor mystery of morbid habit. Epilepsy 1s, as it were, the self-existent memory of a disordered reflex ; and thisis what we may understand by the term “ neurosis.” It is true that a primary disorder of reflex action due to an adequate cause, such as infantile or puerperal convulsions are, cannot be always shown to have occurred at one time or another in epileptics. In a certain proportion of cases there has been an injury to the skull, or there are evidences of tumour or other new formation within the skull, or there is a tumour of a peripheral nerve, or a nerve involved in the scar of a wound or sore; but there are many more epileptics in whom such antecedents cannot be made out. The habit, in fact, is one which tends to be ingrained not only in the individual who has begun it but also in his or her family. Epilepsy is one of the clearest instances of a liability transmissible from parent to off-spring. The heredity of epilepsy has even been proved by Brown- Séquard for the guinea-pig ; when an epileptic habit was induced in guinea-pigs by injuring the spinal cord or the medulla oblongata, or by cutting the sciatic nerves, the litters of such epileptic guinea- pigs were apt to have epileptic seizures, attributable to nothing but inherited liability. According to Hasse’s figures, epilepsy has begun before the age of twenty in by far the larger number of cases, and that fact is doubtless an index of the extent of hereditary influence. If we do not assign all such cases to heredity, the advent of puberty in girls may be held to be itself a causc of epi- lepsy ; that time of life is distinguished by the somewhat abrupt acquisition of a much wider emotional and intellectual range, and presumably by some special liability to explosions of reflex nerve- force upon slight provocation. had ;

Chorea (St Vitus’s Danee).—This is another variety of uncontrolled St movement which is also a habit, like epilepsy, confined to girlhood and boyhood.

and is practically Vitus’s It may occur in pregnant dance.

Mimetic and epi- demie ehorea.

Degenera-

tions of spinal cord.

Loco- motor ataxia.

women, but it disappcars with delivery. The movements are intermittent, beginning from a state of repose with a certain fidgety restlessness, and going on to the most irrelevant and un- rhythmical jerkings, hitchings, and twistings of the limbs, head, and body, or of one limb, only, or one shoulder, or of the head only, or of the tongue. The muscles do not cease to be the ministers of the will, but voluntary movements are performed with some want of aim and certainty; and the gait in walking may be seriously affected. The choreic movements themselves can- not be restrained by the will; excitement and self-consciousness intensify them; and they cease during sleep. One of the most sincular facts in this strange nervous habit is its association with rheumatic fever ; a significant proportion of those subject to it are found to have had rheumatie fever, but there are others, curiously enough, who afford indications only of that state of the endo-cardinm (or lining membrane of the heart and its valves) which often goes with rheumatic fever. This fact of endocarditis has suggested a theory that the disease is due to the minute arterics of the corpus striatum being blocked with small fibrinous plugs washed off from the inflamed interior of the left ventricle, or from the surface of its valves. It is more accordant, however, with all the phenomena to regard the disease as a functional habit of muscle and nerve, with the usual intermissions of a nervous habit and the usual exacerbations, in which the implication of the heart-muscle creates a peculiar liability to endocarditis. A further analysis is offered at the end of the remarks on rheumatic fever (p. 398).

Mimetic and Epidemic Chorea.—The choreic habit has, like hysteria, a singular power of becoming a fixed idea in others ; there is no doubt that choreic movements are involuntarily mimicked by young persons who witness them in orphanages or other institutions where a number of girls are

living under the same circumstances of work and leisure. Chorea may thus be said to be contagious, while epilepsy is hereditary. It 1s no great step from these cases, which depend solely upon the fantastic trick being caught under the influence of the zdée fixe, to the remarkable epidemics of dancing frenzy of which some are historical, and of which there are still instances occurring from time to time under some general excite- ment, particularly the vivid prepossession of a large number of persons at once by the same religious hopes and fears.

In this connexion come certain other diseases—cestasy, catalepsy, and hysterta—of which the details are given in the respective articles, Ecstasy, &c.

Diseases of the Spinal Cord.—In the foregoing group of errors of the nervous control we have had to consider a mere functional con- dition, —a molecular state, no doubt, but one which cannot be seen any more than can the electricity in a wire. Structural changes, when they occur at all, are a very late effect, as in some cases of epilepsy. But there is a very large and important part of tlie functional errors in the controlling nervous mechanisms which are associated with textural changes or degenerations. The most obvious of these are disorders of the reflex functions of the spinal cord. In respect of these structural changes acconipanying func- tional irregularities, the spinal cord approximates to the organs and parts of the body which we have already considered. But there is one character in the textural changes of the spinal cord (and of the brain) which is in a sense nnique, namely, their tend- ency to spread up and down in the particular tracts of fibres. Hence the ascending and descending degeneration and sclerosis of the cord, the extensions of bulbar paralysis, and the like.

Locomotor Ataxia, or Tabes Dorsatis.—The muscles of the body act ordinarily in groups, so that complex movements, such as carrying a spoonful of soup to the mouth, are performed by a number of independent voluntary muscles as if by a mechanism or automaton. The highest point attained by the muscles in this direction is the precision of military drill. In the disease called locomotor ataxia the muscles that are ordinarily grouped together in their action become slow to act in concert, the want of co-ordination being inost obvious in the legs and hips in walking. Progression

is not of the usual well-considered kind, but the leg is thrown outwards as well as forwards, and the foot is brought down as if the inten- tion were to strike the ground with it, the knee having been pre- viously straightened. With so little ease are these muscular com- binations initiated that the patient requires to look at his feet as if the sewse of effect were failing and had to be aided by the sight. Later on the muscles of the upper extremity are in like manner unable to act consentaneously, so that the patient cannot fasten a button, pick up a pin, or the like. Still later there is not only loss of the nicely-adjusted harmonious action among the muscles, but there is a loss of all moderation or graduation in the move- ments instituted. Whether or not this also be due to loss of the sense of effect, the movement is not adapted to the effect required ; it is quick and of short range even when it should be slow and sweeping, and the time and range of the movement of the given limb are practically the saine under all circumstances. These errors of the locomotor control are so conspicuous as to have given the disease one of its names ; to them we have to add other symptoms varying in the different cases, such as flying pains in the limbs,

numbness, squinting and double vision, and functional disorders of the abdominal and jelvie organs. A certain painless struetura] alteration of the joints (especially the knee), first described by Charcot, is now and then met with, and the remarkable condition known as perforating ulcer of the foot is sometimes found (but not every case of it) to be associated with locomotor ataxia.

The structural changes in the spinal cord begin in the lumbar region and spread upwards ; they are in the posterior columns, and especially on their outer limits. Grey degeneration is the name given to the structural condition, and it depends essentially upon the loss of the opaque white substance that invests the axis. cylinder of each nerve like an insulating stratum; this layer gives the colour to the white tracts of the cord, and the loss of it reduces these tracts to the grey condition of the central columns of cord where the nerves are normally without the white insulat- ing layer.

The degenerations of the spinal cord, however caused, have little varicty; the loss of the white substance may be followed by hardening of the tract of

tissue (sclerosis), or there may be a development of the cells of the supporting tissue or neuroglia, keeping pace with the decay of the nerves themselves, whereby the tract acquires a gelatinous appearance. Sometimes the degen- eration is not perfectly continuous, but occurs at many isolated, spots (multiple disseminated sclerosis).

The causes of the degeneration in locomotor ataxia arc various, Cau According to the statistics of Erb, it is nearly always associated of ¢ with constitutional syphilis; other causes are probably always degchs. peripheral somewhere within the region supplied with nerves from tion the lumbar part of the cord.

The causes of degeneration other than that of tabes dorsalis are also various, and associated with various groups of symptoms, which need not further be considered. Mechanical injury to the cord is followed by degeneration, and the pressure of a tumour may have the same cffect. It is found that the solution of continuity of a nerve causes the same loss of the white substance in its peripheral portion as in these degenerations of the cord, and the degeneration of the nerve is set down to its being cut off from its “trophic centre.” The same “trophic” hypothesis is applied to the spinal decay. If the structural degeneration in the cord differs from the degenerations that elsewhere go with disordered function, in its remarkable tendency to spread up or down, that is a difference which may be itself associated with the distinctive conducting function of the nerves and nerve-centres.

In so-called bulbar paralysis, associated with inarticulateness of Bu speech, there is described a certain decay of the ganglion-cells in par’sis the nucleus of the hypoglossal uerve, situated in the “bulb” or | medulla oblongata, together with general shrinkage of the nueleus; this condition progresses both structurally and functionally towards a more general paralysis.

In infantile paralysis the structural degeneration is found per- Infjle vading the anterior horns of grey matter of the cord (anterior polio- par)ss inyelitis), and it includes the ganglion-cells.

Pseudo-hypertrophic Paralysis, Progressive Muscular Atrophy.— Ps These are two closely allied conditions, the one in young children and hyy the other mostly in male adults, which afford the most instruetive tro|¢

contrasts. There is gradual loss of muscular power in both, in the pai” case of the children’s malady chiefly in the coarse or static muscles sis,!°- that keep the body erect, and in the nimble and richly inner- grey¢ vated muscles of the hand, forearm, and tongue in the progressive mu tla muscular atrophy of male adults. In both the loss of muscular atr/y: power goes hand in hand with.a loss of muscular structure ; but m

;

the coarse and sluggish groups of muscles which are mostly affected in growing children the loss of muscular structure is more than made up for, in mere bulk, by the development of interstitial con- nective tissue and fat, while in the nimble muscles of the hand and tongue, chiefly and primarily implicated in the characteristic disease of maturity, there is visible shrinkage of the part. It is only in the limbs, when the affection extends to them, that the bulk and outline are preserved in adults. Hence the affection in children 1s called pseudo-hypertrophic paralysis, and in adults progressive muscular atrophy. A few cases of great interest have been recorded in which adults have had the two conditions in combination. Children so affected walk as if on tiptoe, with a waddling gait, balancing the body for a perceptible interval on one foot; when they arc stripped the dorsal contour is peculiar, the shoulders being thrown back and the belly forward, the calves and lips standing out prominent and hard. In the muscular atrophy of adults the ball of the right thumb is nearly always wasted, and if the other muscles of the hand are equally attenuated there 1s pro- duced the characteristic appearance of a bird’s claw; the tongue also is often shrivelled. a

In contrast to locomotor ataxia, and to paralysis from injury 1 or pressure on the brain and spinal cord, these two diseases art illustrations of the peripheral relationship of muscle and nerve, of a loss of integrity in that executive relationship, which brings with it both loss of power in the muscle and concomitant failure of its nutrition. They may be quoted as instances of tropho-neuroses,

|

fin’ nl

| |

}

so long as it is clearly understood that the term really explains nothing. There are, indeed, changes described | for them in the anterior cornua of the grey matter of the cord, with wasting of the anterior roots of the spinal nerves.

« Dissolution” Principle of Nervous Diseases.—It is known from

. 1” physiological experiment that a muscle is capable of excitation

when the nerve-force is withdrawn from it; muscular substance is not only a contractile form of protoplasm under the control of nerves, but it has proper irritability when the nervous influence is paralysed (as by the action of the curare poison). The coudition of the motor nerves in pseudo-hypertrophic muscular paralysis and in progressive muscular atrophy is such that the muscles are left to their indigenous contractility, being deprived of their innervating force. We shall find these two diseases a convenient opportunity of stating a principle in nervous diseases which has been expounded by Hughlings Jackson under the name of the “dissolution” prin- ciple. Morbid states of the nervous system (or many of them) arc said to be of the uature of a breaking up of the acquisitions of evolution, with loss of the more finished acquisitions, and a falling back to a simpler type, whose unsuitability to the individual in his then general circumstances amounts to a disease. The illus- trations already given (S§ 4, 5) of ‘‘memories” of development inherent in the cellular life of the body belong to the same class of ‘facts or the same order of ideas.

In applying this principle to the diseases in question we have to consider both the clectrical reaction of the muscles and the retro- grade changes in their structure. The “reaction of degeneration” isa peculiar oe, and it is the diagnostic mark of paralysis of peri- pheral origin. The degenerated muscle shows a considerable in- crease of irritability for a time under the galvanic eurrent ; the contraction is sluggish and sustained ; the anodal closure gives a stronger contraction than the kathodal, while, conversely, the kathodal opening has the advantage. These peculiarities of the electrical reaction in

“degenerated” muscles are analogous to the physiological reaction when the nerve-influence has been abrogated. We may take it that a ‘‘degenerating”’ muscle falls back upon its proper irritability, that the contractility becomes “ ideo-muscular ” as contrasted with “neuro-muscular.” The muscle, so to speak, takes lower ground by way of adapting itself to circumstances.

In the disease in question, as it affects children, the groups of muscles that suffer are precisely those in which the contractility is already of the sluggish, sustained, and ideo-muscular kind, — such museles as the erector spine, glutei, and others, which have an extremely limited nerve-supply in proportion to their bulk. Side by side with this fact we have the other fact of an merease of bulk, as shown in the seemingly strong and hard back, hips, and calves. The paralysis of the muscles has brought with it extreme dilatation of their small arteries, and consequent venous hyperemia; and this presence of the blood in increased quantity has given an enormous impetus to the growth of the interstitial tissue, in the form of young connective tissue and more particularly in the form of fat-tissue. On the other hand, in the muscular atrophy as it affects adults (mostly of the male sex), it is the very nimblest of all the muscles of the body that are picked out first—the muscles of the right hand—in which the ideo- muscular contractility is naturally small and the neuro-muscular contractility naturally great ; and these muscles, with those of the tongue, undergo a remarkable atrophy with little or no spurious compensation from the interstitial tissue. When the disease pro- gresses to other muscles, however, there may be so much new-formed interstitial tissue (fibrous and adipose) that there may be no actual loss of volume in the limb. The precise significance of these differences in the two diseases is not easy to state; in both the males are very much more often affected than the females, being in the one mostly very young boys beginning to walk, and in the other men whose manual dexterity is a formed habit.

The structural changes in the muscular fibre itself are very much the same in both ; as the striation of the fibres disappears the quies- cent muscle-nuclei become numerous and prominent. The muscle may be said to fall back upon the more embryonie condition, upon theindividual life of the cell-units which had been fused in the fibre it retreats to earlier ground, and, as the proper texture of niuscle finally goes, the life of the part takes the still

more elementary direction of the common binding-tissue and fat. In this sequence of functional and structural events we may discover an illustration of the dissolution principle. The muscles, having lost, or beginning to lose, their innerv ¥ ol uritability; as the downward course of failure proceeds, they Yetreat still farther to an embryonic structural condition; when the Muscle itself is practically lost the commoner forms of meso- i tissue take up the retrograde succession ; and, last stage of

» even the fat.and the fibrous tissue waste.?

1 :

1 iM, Lectures on Diseases of the Nervous System, Lond., vue ee Ross, Treatise on the Diseases of the Nervous System, 2 Stes. ded., Lond., 1883; Buzzard, Clin. Lect. on Dis. of Nervous ¥st., Lond., 1883 ; Gowers, Epilepsy and other Chronic Convulsive

rete onoG y ‘

ation, fall back upon the more primitive kind –

§ 13.—ERRoRs IN THE REGULATION of THE Bopity Hzar.

The constancy of the bodily temperature under all circum- stances of external heat and cold—of torrid and arctic zones, of summer and winter, of sunshine and darkness—is not the least remarkable instance in nature of a self-adapting me- chanism. The average internal heat of the human body or of the blood is from 98° to 99° Fahr., and the healthy range in different individuals, or in the same individual at various periods of life, or in various circumstances of exercise and repose, sleeping and waking, is not more than a degree or two below or above the mean. It will be at once apparent that the sensations of heat and cold are no measure of the bodily temperature. The mechanism by which the body’s heat is kept uniform is a co-operation of a number of agencies. It is an equation, of which the two sides are the amount of heat produced in the organism and the amount of heat dissipated. In hibernating mammals the former of these is the side to which adaptation

is most directed, in such wise that the whole fires of the animal burn lower while the winter cold lasts. But in man the work and waste go on always, and therefore the heat of combustion is practically uniform at all times, so that the adaptation to seasonal and climatic changes of tem- perature is mainly on the other side of the equation, the regulation of the amount of heat given off from the body. In cold weather the amount of bodily heat parted with is limited by warm clothing (or clothing which conducts heat with difficulty), by keeping up the temperature of the air artificially by fires, and by the contraction of the surface-vessels and other muscular structures in the skin, which has the effect of diminishing the insensible perspiration and makes the familiar sensation of cold. While these adaptations to external cold are decidedly the greatest, it is not to be supposed that there are no adapta- tions on the other side of the account. There is, in fact, an increased production of animal heat also, so that more can be parted with, and the constant temperature of 98°°5 be still unaffected… The increased production is often in the way of increased muscular exercise, which every one is prone to in cold weather ; it is to some extent also through the more active circulation in all the internal organs, especially brain and liver, their greater functional activity being attended with a larger amount of the heat of mnieta- bolic combustion. A heat-forming diet of carbohydrates (chiefly fats), and the physical benefit of the subcutaneous fat resulting therefrom, are well-known elements of the adaptation in colder latitudes.

When it comes to be an adaptation to great solar heat, the adaptation is again mostly in the way of regulating the heat lost. The vessels of the skin are dilated, and its other muscular elements (in the sweat-glands, &c.) re- laxed (making the familiar sensation of heat), so that per- spiration flows freely; the evaporation of the sweat on the surface of the body is constantly consuming heat, and the clothing is worn light, and of such colour and texture as will readily conduct heat (both of radiation and of evapora- tion). There is nowas much effort to part with the body’s heat as in winter there was effort to retain it. At the same time the hcat of combustion in the body is kept down as much as possible ; muscular exertion is avoided, the brain and the digestive functions are less active, and fatty substances are partaken of more sparingly.

The various parts of this conservative adaptation are somchow co-ordinated through the central nervous system. The vascular system is obviously a chief means by which the body's heat is kept constant, not only by the quick transit of the blood to all parts and the free mixture and Diseases, Lond., 1881, and Aforbid Conditions of the Spinal Cord, 3A ed., Lond., 1884; J. Hughlings Jackson, " Evolution and Dissolution of the Nervous System," in Brit. Med. Jowrn., i., 1884.

interchange of its particles, but also by the control of the amount of blood sent to the skin on the one hand (say, in warm weather) and to the muscles and viscera on the other (say, in cold weather). The vaso-motor nervous mechan- ism, therefore, is an integral part of the nervous control of the bodily temperature. But there is reason to think that the regulation of the bodily heat is committed to the charge of a still higher and more commanding centre in the nervous system than the vaso-motor. It is a remark- able fact, observed from time to time in clinical practice, that certain cases of injury to the brain, from fracture of the skull or internal hemorrhage, are attended with a quite phenomenal rise of the body-temperature—a rise to 107° or 108° Fahr.,—and that, too, when there is nothing strikingly unusual in the vaso-motor effects, as revealed in the skin or elsewhere. In such cases it is the surface- region of the pons Varolii, the great cerebellar commissure, that has been injured or compressed by the effusion and coagulation of blood. The evidence of specially-devised experiments confirms and amplifies the clinical evidence ; and it is considered in physiology to be a well-grounded fact that there are thermic or heat-regulating centres in the brain, one, at least, being in the region of the pons Varolii. Bernard would further assume the existence of "calorific" and " frigorific" nerves side by side with vaso- dilator and vaso-constrictor.

Thermic Fever and Heat-Stroke.—Such, then, being the nicely- balanced and carefully safeguarded mechanism for keeping man's internal heat about 98° Fahr. under all cireumstances, the question arises whether we may trace

any considerable part of the sickness and mortality of the globe to a marked and conspicuous failure or break-down of this mechanism of adaptation :—

“But errs not Nature from this gracious end, From burning suns when livid deaths descend?”

Undoubtedly the ardent or thermic fever of Indian practice, the heat-apoplexy, heat-stroke, or sunstroke, is the direct result of an upset or disintegration of the heat-regulating nerve-centre. Either the disorder of innervation is shown in sudden syncope or depres- sion of the heart’s action, as among labourers working or soldiers marching in the sun; or the effect of atmospherie heat, direct solar or other, is a universal state of venous engorgement, indicat- ing profound vaso-motor paralysis, and ending in death from asphyxia, literally the “livid death” alluded to in the couplet ; or the heat-stroke leads to an attack of thermic or “ardent” fever, coming on perhaps in the night within a few hours of exposure, or after a longer interval, having a prodromal stage of inalaise, a rise of the body-heat to as much as 108° or 110° Fahr., embarrassments of the lungs and heart, profound brain- troubles, and probably a fatal termination in general venous engorgement and asphyxia. These various forms of heat-stroke all point to a profound dis- organization of the nervous centres by the more or less direct action of solar heat,—to cardiac depression in the syncopal form, to more general vaso-motor paralysis in the asphyxial form, and to dis- organization of the thermic nerve-mechanism in the hyperpyrexial form. When recovery takes place, as it does in a large proportion of cases, there are often lasting traces of injury to the nervous system in other functions than the vaso-motor or thermogenic.

These cases of heat-stroke or thermic fever are the most obvious illustrations of a break-down of the heat-regulating mechanism, but they are by no means the most usual illustrations of it. It is in a vastly more common form of sickness, in malarial fevers of all kinds, that we discover the typical failure of the heat-regulating centre under circumstances that tax the self-adapting powers of the body. The enormous prevalence of malarial or climatic fever may be said to be the greatest indication of failure or imperfection in the adaptation of man to his surroundings. In some few spots, which even the instinct of the brutes leads them to desert for a

season, the effects of heat and moisture are such as to induce an endemic diseased habit of body, so universal in its incidence and so insidious in its development as practically to amount to an ethnological distinction (sec Heber's description of villagers in the Terai, Indian Journal, vol. i. p. 251). Throughout the whole intertropical zone, and for 5° beyond it in the southern hemisphere and 20° beyond it in the northern, the climatic fever, in its various forms, stands for almost as much sickness and mortality as all other diseases put together. So stupendous a power has it always been that its pathology has with difficulty emerged from the stage of gross materialism and superstition. But malarial or climatic fever is the true "essential" or "primary" fever of the older writers; its paroxysm is the abstract fever of pathological treatises, which is

discussed without reference to communicability from person to person ; and, if it has a periodicity which seems to give it specific characters of its own, a little analysis serves to show that its periods of waxing and waning are no other than the cosmical periods of the earth itself.

Cullen's Theory of Fever.—According to Cullen's theory of fever Prin: (which was a modification of Hoffmann's), ''the first incident in op the chain of sequences constituting fever is a depressed state of essen the brain and nervous system; spasm of the extreme capillaries fever,

results from this depression ; and reaction of the circulation with its accompanying phenomena, is an effort of the system to overcome the spasm. The Cullenian theory, in a modified form, coutinues still to be the prevailing creed of those who adhere to the tenets of solidism, and who believe at the same time in the existence of primary or essential fever." This is the language of Christison in 1840 (Tweedie's Library of Medicine vol, i. p. 116); and he adds that the chief rival to this doctrine is one which "denies the existence of any primary or essential fevers, and holds them all to be merely symptomatic of some local disorder." Cullen did not ignore the differences among fevers in respect of the local condition, exanthematous or other; but his desire for a broad generalization led him to find something common in the antecedents of them all. This was "diminished energy of the brain," and the nervous depression was caused by "human and marsh

effluvia.” When the disentanglements of the century following are eredited to Cullen’s doctrine the latter will be seen to be still radically sound. The collocation of “ human and marsh effluvia” is nothing but a verbal one ; there is no uni- formity of effect among human “cffluvia” themselves, but rather specifie differences ; in marsh effluvia nothing has ever been found but common watery vapour; and the characteristic effects of “marsh effluvia”’ are by no means rare on barren uplands where there is no standing water or decaying vegetation for miles around. The modern disentanglement has put into a class by themselves all the communicable infective diseases which bring more or less of febrile disturbance, and has fixed the attention on the specific features and evolutional antecedents of each. Hence the existence of “primary or essential fever” has come to be denied, except as the abstract febrile state. But it had been forgotten that, for malarial or climatic fevers, there is no conimunicability, and no specific virus bred in the body or in the body’s discharges ; and to them therefore belongs the heritage of “primary or essential fever.” The common aguish intermittent is the source of all the concepts that enter into the doctrine of fever,—the initial malaise, the cold fit and the hot fit, the crisis and the defervescence. It is to it that the classical description of a febrile paroxysm applies, in paragraphs 16 to 28 of Culleu’s First Lines, just as the fever pathology of Hippocrates and Sydenham applies to it; and the first incident in the chain of sequences, according to Cullen, was an “enfeebled energy of the brain.” It will be found that this doc- trine of primary or essential fever, understanding climatic or malarial fever therein, is fundamentally in agreement with modern physio- logical teaching as to the animal heat and the errors in its regulation.

hte

Malarial or Climatic Fevers. —Turning, then, to the analysis of a Par- paroxysm of ague, we find that there is a preceding sense of languor ysnit and unfitness for a few hours; all at once the patient begins to agi)

feel cold, he shivers, his teeth chatter, lis skin becomes “ goose- skin ” from the powerful contraction of all the muscular elements in it. If this occurred in the orderly course of regulating the body-heat it would mean that the internal temperature was falling below the mean ; the vigorous contraction

of the blood-vessels on the surface of the body is by way of preventing the escape of heat. But the truth is that the body-heat is rising much beyond the normal all the while that the skin is acting so as to kecp in the heat. This procedure at cross purposes goes on for a few hours, during which the internal heat may rise to 104° or 105° Fahr. The cold fit passes into the hot, and then the crisis is reached ; there 1s 4 violent rebound, the muscular elements of the skin and its vessels relax, perspiration flows freely, the kidneys begin to remove all the products of excessive and uncalled-for combustion, and in the morning the patient awakes with probably no very serious effects after his feverish night. Assuming the case to be a common quartan, the individual goes to his work next day feeling tolerably well; on the day after he has probably forgotten all about his feverish paroxysm, if it be his first ague ; and it is not until the afternoon of the third day that he is again reminded of it. Let us say that he is returning from work towards the end of an ordinarily active day ; suddenly he has the same uncontrollable feeling of chills, he shivers, and seeks warmth by crouching over the fire or by wrapping himself in warm clothes. The drama of three days before is repeated, he awakes again from a feverish night, the morning urine being again full of brick-red urates ; he now knows that he is the subject of quartan ague, and that another paroxys™ is due three days later, which he is fortunately able to prevent pr at least to mitigate by taking quinine in the meantime. Whatevel may have induced the first paroxysm, the second is a mere imita- tion of it, an affair of habit, just as a return of an epileptie con-

reve ot oa y

yulsion is. It can hardly be doubted that in the repetition of a simple ague-paroxysm we are concerned, not with the nervous system as co-ordinating the two sides of the account in the produc- tion and discharge of animal heat, but with an acquired habit of the nervous system, with a usurpation of the power committed to it for the purposes of control only. This acquired faculty of the heat-regulating centre to act quasi-autocratically is often exempli- fied in those persons who, having suffered from malarial fever under its usual exciting circumstances, experience a return of it under widely different circumstances. Thus, a pronounced ague-shake has occurred to a person crossing an ice-slope 10,000 feet above the sea-level,

the original ague having been contracted several years pefore in a malarious locality.

We come next to the circumstances under which the heat-regu- lating centre suffers this disorganization, the memory of which may remain with it for long after. The circumstances of intermittent and remittent fevers have been already discussed in the article Mavaria, and it remains to give here only a brief epitome. Where- ever and whenever malarial fevers occur there are considerable degrees of solar heat and of moisture in the lowest stratum of the air, and a considerable drop of the temperature after sunset. So far as the individual is concerned, he incurs risk by working in the sun and resting or slceping in the chill of the evening, by letting a wind such as the monsoon blow upon his fatigued body, by passing suddenly from the relaxing conditions of heat to the constricting conditions of cold, by arriving from cooler latitudes in the hot season, and by doing one or all of these things when his nervous power, as Cullen said, is enfeebled by such causes as anxiety, in- temperance in drinking, ‘‘and other circumstances which evidently weaken the system.” A high degree of moisture in the lowest stratum of the air is the most universal of the external factors within the malarious latitudes, and it may be produced either by the extreme dampness of the soil or by the extremely rapid cooling of a dry soil (even bare rocks) by radiation of heat after sunset, whereby a moderate degree of atmospheric moisture gives a fall of dew. On the other hand, wherever the atmosphere is exceptionally dry, as on the southern littoral of Australia, there is no malaria notwithstanding the great solar heat ; and wherever there are only a few degrees of difference between the day and night temperature and a very slight range throughout the year, as at sea within the tropics, or at such localities as Singapore and the Amazon valley under the line, malaria is far less active than the great solar heat

¢

the executive and the central authority, are at cross purposes so far as the object is to keep the temperature at the level of 98° or 99° Fahr. Now, the rise of temperature in this case can have had no other source than internal combustion (in the liver, muscles, brain, &c.); but the combustion is an

unnatural one, inasmuch as no proper physiological work has been got as its equivalent out of the muscles, brain, or liver, although there has been the due physio- logical waste (carbonic acid and urea), A slight chill, or the sudden abstraction of a not very large amount of heat from the surface of the body, has excited the heat-regulating centre in such a way that it lets loose an extravagant amount of its “thermogenic” forec.! The nervous centre has been called upon to equalize the slight abstraction of heat at a moment when it is still in the state of strain from its previous and well-sustained efforts to keep the balance, and it is upset by the sudden call. It answers by an altogether disproportionate discharge of its force, which is botli ill adapted to the momentary needs of the body and continues in operation much beyond the occasion for it.

Under ordinary circumstances of taking the ague there is usually an interval between the exposure to heat and tle exposure to chill. Usually, also, the exposure to heat is more or less prolonged or habitual ; the heat-regulating centre is taxed over and over again, and it is taxed so much the more if there is moisture in the air along with solar heat, the dissipation of the body’s heat by the insensible perspiration and by radiation being much more difficult in a damp atmosphere than ina dry. Whenever the chill comes, it finds the heat-regulating centre without that tone which would enable it to act according to the emergency, so that the abstraction of heat, even if it be slight, is the signal for an enormous stirring up of all the internal fires and a rapid combustion to meet a loss of heat which is not greater than the body endures under other circum- stances with impunity. This phenomenal burst of heat-making is, so to speak, misunderstood by the motor nerves of the skin; when- ever, under the same circumstances of repose, there is the same thermogenic activity, it means that the heat is wanted to keep up the level of 98° or 99° Fahr., and all the muscular elements in the skin and in its vessels contract to keep the heat in, producing the feeling of external cold, or of shivering if the contraction be extreme. The same thing happens under the incoherent and extravagant action of the heat-regulating centre; and hence the paradox of the body shivering all the while that its internal heat is rising to 5° or 6° Fahr. above the average of health.

Another way of expressing the paradox is to employ Bernard’s A long language of “thermic nerves”; we should then say that stimula- cold fit tion

of “calorific nerves” gocs with a stimulation of “ vaso-con- means a strictor” nerves in the skin, so that a violent discharge of force mild along the one path is associated with a violent discharge along the fever.

and moisture might lead one to expect. Whatever in the telluric and atmospheric surroundings taxes the nervous mechanism which keeps the heat of the body always about 98° or 99° Fahr. is a cause of malarial fever.

The Cold Fit of Fever.—The central point of interest in a par- oxysm of fever, the grand paradox of fever-pathology, is the rise of the heat of combustion, as shown by the clinical thermometer, and the simultaneous closing of the natural outlets of excessive heat, as shown by the shivering and the feeling of ‘“ goose-skin.” The value of any pathological doctrine of intermittent and remit- tent fever may be estimated by its success in dealing with this paradox. We inay conveniently approach this subject through the following concrete instance, as given by Oldham. “At Jhansi, in June 1860, a young officer of the battery of artillery to which I belonged was exposed for some time to the sun at mid-day ; he then, ina profuse perspiration, came into the house, through Which a hot wind was blowing, as all the woodwork had been burned by the rebels, and the tatties, which served for doors and windows, were almost dry; in a few minutes he complained of being chilly, and in a few more he was in the cold stage of a sharp attack of intermittent. This officer had never previously suffered from fever; when he went out a short time before he Was in perfect health, and he had not, whilst away, been into any malarious locality; in fact, at that season, the whole country round was parched and dry.” This case illustrates an unportant point,—antecedent exposure to great solar heat. Exer- cise in the sun means active internal combustion in the muscles, liver, &¢., and the body warmed at the same time by the sun’s trays ; the equalizing of the heat made and the heat lost is accord- ingly a difficult task, which falls mostly on the skin (and lungs) to execute, and the heat-regulating centre to order and control. We may take it that both the regulating function of the nerve- centre and the executive function of the skin are strained to the utmost. In the case quoted, where there was no interval between the cause and the effect, the body in its glowing state is suddenly exposed to a slight abstraction of heat through the draught in the house; the sudden loss of heat, however slight the amount, is the signal for the skin to close its pores so as to lose no more heat, and

hence the passing feeling of chill. But the passing feeling of chill 1S m this case succeeded, at only a few minutes' interval, by the Prolonged state of contraction of the cutaneous vessels, sweat-glands, a other muscular structures which corresponds to the rigors and } "s fit of ague ; and, all the while that the skin is thus vigor- us y adapting itself to prevent the escape of heat, the heat of the

Yi rising several degrees. The skin aud the nervous centre,

other. Whether, as Traube has suggested, the extravagant action of the heat-regulating centre might be altogether counteracted by the usual heat-discharging mechanism but for the inopportune constriction in the cutaneous vessels and the surface of the body generally, is a curious question, but hardly a practical one. In that degree of shock to or disorganization of the nerve-centre . which occurs in ordinary tertian or quartan intermittent the dura- tion and degree of the shivering fit arc the index of the mildness of the attack ; the more pronounced the cold stage, the more prompt is the crisis and the more certain the defervescence. But in the much more severe shock which brings a quotidian or a remittent, the cold stage is short and feeble, and the crisis and defervescence are proportionately undecided and uncertain. The remittent degree of climatic fever approximates, indeed, to the forms of continued fever in which the rigor is a mere survival of the great cold fit of intermittent ; the initial rigors even of pneumonia are little more than formal, and the hot stage of the process is practically the whole. It would thus appear that the vaso-motor constriction, upon which the phenomena of the cold fit depend, is the duc accompannnent of a certain moderate degree of upset in the thermogenic nerve- mechanism ; the paradox of the body shivering while its internal heat is rising is after all a paradox, and not an antagonism. The severer types of climatic fever are those in which the primary shock has been most severe or least well sustained. " Degrees of fever," says Ferguson, "might be almost measured by degrees of solar heat, from the agues of Lincolnshire to the malignant remittents of the West Indies."

The periodicity of agues is a reflex of the normal periodicitics Period-temperature rises to its highest icity of point in the course of the afternoon and falls to its lowest a little agues.

of the bodily heat ; in health the

after midnight, and in a typical intermittent these are usually the De eee SS

1 “There is no a priori reason,” says Foster (Text-book of Physiology, p. 877), ‘positively contradicting the hypothesis that the metabolism of even muscular tissue might be influenced by nervous or by other agency in such a way that a large decomposition of the muscular substance, productive of much heat, might take place without any contraction being necessarily caused. If we were to permit ourselves to suppose that the contractile material whose meta- polism when resulting in a contraction gives rise to so much heat, eould undergo the same amount of metabolism, in so far a different fashion that all the energy thereby set free took on the form of heat, variations in the temperature of the body, at present difficult to understand, would become readily intelligible.”

Malarial cachexia.

Dysen- tery.

Tropieal abscess of liver.

hours when a paroxysm begins and ends respectively. These normal maxima and minima of the body’s heat within a diurnal revolution are probably in their origin an adaptation to the periods of labour and rest, both muscular and digestive; but the habit is an ingrained one, and it obtains when the ordinary round of work and repose, of waking and sleeping, is departed from. In short, it follows the sun and not the vicissitudes of human occupation. Again, the periodical recurrences of the febrile paroxysm appear to follow the lunar intervals. In the United States an ague is observed which has only a weekly paroxysm ; the quartan of northern latitudes is the bi-weekly interval. Tertian and quotidian agues would not of themselves suggest lunar periodicity, but they are related to the types with obvious lunar intervals. The “critical days” of con- tinued fevers, which were closely observed in former times, have been brought with much ingenuity under a law of cosmical period- icity. It is observed in climatic

fevers that, if there be an interval of one or more weeks in which the paroxysms are in abeyance, the next succeeding paroxysm will occur at its due time, and that various minor indications of constitutional disturbance in the inter- val (perhaps neuralgias) will have marked the periods when the full paroxysm should have developed. ,

It is necessary to pass over the changes in the blood and in the secretions which accompany the febrile paroxysm. In ague there is a remarkable production of free pigment traced to the red blood- disks, which accumulates in the spleen, the bone-marrow, and else- where. The spleen undergoes also an enlargement, and so does the liver ; these are permanent where the malarial cachexia exists. The malarial cachexia, marked by hydremia and lassitude, occurs most frequently in those who reside on a waterlogged soil, and are permanently subject to the difficulties of heat-regulation during their work which an atmosphere saturated with watery vapour entails. In such cases there may be no febrile paroxysms from first to last, but a state of adaptation of the body which is at once a disease and almost an cthnological character.

Dysentery.—It is universally admitted that the causes which produce intermittent in one man of an exposed party may produce remittent in another, dysentery in a third, and abscess of the liver ina fourth. The incidence in the form of dysentery is apparently capricious ; we have simply the fact that, in a certain proportion of cases, the shock resolves itself into a profound disorganization of the function of the great intestine, which may pass off in a few days or become chronic. The dysenteric seizure is most frequent where there is extreme atmospheric moisture as well as extreme heat, and where the surface of the body is most directly exposed. The region of the loins is somehow a region of great liability, just as the head is, the turban or pith helmet and the loin-cloth of hot countries being the indications of these liabilities. One important point of difference between dysentery and intermittent and remittent is that the former disease runs its course in one attack, whereas in the latter there is the remarkable habit of repetition. The return of the ague paroxysm is an evidence that the disorder is fundamentally one of the nerve-centres ; it is an instance of the “memory” or “habit ” which disordered nerve-mechanisms are peculiarly apt to fall into and to retain. In dysentery the disorder is localized ; it is not

so much central as peripheral. Whoever has had dysentery once is apt to have it again, and it thay become chronic from the first seizure. But it has obvious points of difference from climatic fever, and these differences are associated with the localized inci- dence of the primary disturbance.

Dyseutery may arise under other circumstances than exposure to tropical heat and moisture and to tropical chill, as in wars_and famines, in cold, and amidst privations and overcrowding. In such cases it is correlated rather to typhus fever than to malarial, but it is probable that there is the same kind of primary effect produced through the nervous mechanisms as when the vicissitudes of a tropical climate are the cause. Again; the dysentery of slave-ships (formerly) and of coolie-ships (at present), in tropical waters, would appear to be a mixed effect.

The effluvia from dysenteric dejecta (or water contaminated by the dejecta) appear to have the power of exciting, in persons who have not been directly exposed to the causes of dysentery, either dysentery itself or some vicarious infection, such as typhus fever or yellow fever, according to the source of the dejecta, or the kind and degree of putrefaction which they had undergone, or according to racial differences in the exposed persons. This question belongs to another part of the subject.

Tropical Abscess of the Liver.—This is intimately associated with dysentery in its causation ; it may be either a primary effect, as it were, instead of dysentery, or it may bean after-effect of one or more attacks of the latter. The primary effect has been dwelt upon by some, and the after-effect by others (notably W. Budd), but there is really no antagonism between them. Asa primary effect tropical abscess of the liver is closely parallel with tropical dysentery and with malarial fever. It is not the effect of heat by itself, but of chill as the sequel of great exposure to heat. Solar heat is trying to the hepatic function, there being an increase of bile; when the organ has been thus overtaxed it is sensitive to the vicissitudes of

heat and cold. It is pointed out by Dr James Johnson (The Injlu- ence of Tropical Climates, p. 177) that genuine hepatitis is even more frequent in the Carnatic, with uniform but high temperature than in Bengal with a more variable and damp climate. “The casual visitor may well wonder how cold can be often applied on the burning coast of Coromandel, where the

temperature is high and steady by day, where the nights are, for months together, hot, and seldom raw or damp as at Bombay or Bengal. . . . The European soldier or sailor, exhausted by exercise in the heat of the day and by profuse perspiration, strips himself the moment his duty

is over, and throws himself down opposite a window or port to inhale the refreshing sea-breeze, his shirt in all probability dripping with sweat," and the consequences are likely to be an attack of hepatitis

or abscess of the liver. A slight abstraction of heat completely upsets the organ which had been most taxed under the particular climate ; the incidence is not so much upon the heat ~~regulating central government as upon a most important member of its executive. As the sudden abstraction of a small amount of heat from a fatigued and perspiring body can produce an extravagant dis~~ charge of heat-producing force, or a paroxysm of fever, by touching the nerve-centre, so it can produce a peripheral effect in the most. important of the heat-forming organs, which had under the special circumstances been overtaxed in its function. But the effect on this peripheral part of the heat-producing mechanism is not, for the most part, an increased production of heat as in fever; it is, in fact, local congestion of blood and suppuration. When the strain falls on the central government the effect is fever ; when the strain falls on an important member of the executive the effect is inflam- mation.

Pneumonia.—Congestion of the lungs and pneumonia are not Pne unfrequent accompaniments of remittent fever in India, especially mon in those whose health had been previously enfeebled, andamongthe more ill-clad natives. Pneumonia is liable to occur in those who had been acclimatized to heat, on their exposure to unusual degrees of cold, as among the negroes in the United States. It has been also observed to become widely prevalent, and in a form which amounted almost to pneumonia pure and simple, among the troops from India employed in Afghanistan in 1838-39, and again in 1878, when they were exposed to the winter cold.

Pneumonia is indeed an effect of chill proper to higher lati- tudes, just as intermittents and remittents, dysentery, and hepatic abscess are most characteristically the effects of disorder, either central or peripheral, in the heat-regulating mechanism as adapted to tropical and sub-tropical

conditions. That pneumonia is nearly always caused by chill is generally believed (the pneumonias of con- tagions origin being excepted) ; but it may not be so readily admitted that we have here to deal with a disorder of the heat-regulating mechanism. Pneumonia is, at all events, a fever ; it has an initial period of rigors, more pronounced than in most continued fevers, although far behind the cold fit of intermittent; the pyrexia 1s sometimes present for some hours before the other symptoms be- come marked ; it usually comes to an end abruptly some time before the consolidation of the lung is all cleared up; and that — crisis in the disease is apt to fall within a week of the onset, | and is seldom delayed more than a day or two over the week. The stress of this disease falls upon the lung, usually upon one lung, and more particularly upon the lower half of the lung. Leaving, for the present, the question why the lung isin thiscase | the organ of metabolism upon which the stress falls, let us consider the nature of the pulmonary condition. j ;

First, there is engorgement of blood, a condition which is due, | according to all analogies, to paralysis of the vaso-motor nerves. The abundant capillary vessels round the air-cells are greatly dis- | tended with blood, and the mucous membrane of all the bronchial | tubes is also much injected. Accompanying this state of the pul- monary circulation there is more or less obvious distress of breath- | ing, or dyspneea, together with a strong, full, and quickened action of the heart. If the action of the heart be weak and the distress | of breathing great it is a . sign that the shock has = been more severe than the patient, as he is then cir- cumstanced, can stand, and _ death may result merely from congestion of the lung. Usually the extreme congestion of the vessels is relieved by exudation from them into the air-cells which they surround; if the pa-

tient should die at this, the es ve a second stage of pneumonia, TY. ition; alveoli occupied by Abrinous the lung, or lobe of the fhreads and a few cells.

lung, is found to be solid :

enough to sink in water ; it is still red, as in the stage of i ment, but the cut surface is firm, and under a lens looks to it finely granulated. Each little granule corresponds to an alr-ce’,

the air-cell no longer containing air, but a solid coagulum consist- ing of numerous threads of fibrin, with a homogeneous plasma as the basis, and a few red blood-disks and white blood – corpuscles (fig. 55). The whole of this is an escape from the overloaded plood-capillaries. The lung is just one of those organs where such an escape from the blood is possible ; the engorged vessels are dis- tributed as a plexus over the thin walls of air-filled spaces, and the fluid part of the blood, together with a certain proportion of its solid particles, passes through the walls of the vessels into the air- space. If the lung be examined from a case of pneumonia fatal a day or two later, or in the third stage, it is still solid, but the redness is mottled with grey, or has become uniformly grey. The number of round nuclear eells in the air-vesicles has inereased enormously, usurp- ing the place of the fibrin and plasma (fig. 56). There is no good reason to suppose that this enormous accumulation \) of cells is due to successive #® additions of colourless cor-puscles from the blood ; they are now, many of them, much larger than the blood-cells, and we may take it that they are the product either of sub-division of the few original blood-cells or of the epithe- lium of the air-vesicles. The solidity now begins to give : way, the contents of the air- Fic. 56.— Pneumonie lung, stage of grey * : . hepatization; alveoli filled with cells.

vesicles undergoing a mucoid ;

or other disintegration, and they are gradually removed for the most part by expectoration. In ten days from the onset the lung may have returned to its normal condition.

We have now to consider briefly this disease as an error in the heat-regulating mechanism, in which the strain falls upon an im- portant peripheral or executive part. Hepatitis may be taken to be this kind of effect where the chill is a slight abstraction of the

to 104° or 105°, and in some exceptional cases (of “ hyperpyrexia”) rising to 109° Fahr. There is an afternoon rise of 1° or more, and a corresponding

fall in the night. The severity of the case —apart from its danger, which really depends on the pericardial or endoeardial part of the disease, or on complications with pneu- monia and the like—is measured by the height of the tempera- ture, with which, again, the intensity of the pain in the joints goes hand in hand. The outbreaks of sweat do not follow any obvious law, and they are not "'critieal," as in intermittents ; but they seem to give the patient relief for the time, even if they leave weakness behind. Nine days is considered an average time for such an attack to run its course if the patient be well cared for; but defervescence is gradual, and complete restoration to health is often slow, much weakness and anemia remaining to be made good. Warren, a physician of a former generation, when asked what was the best remedy for rheumatic fever, answered "Six weeks." Relapse is not uncommon, a very slight chill or sudden abstraction of heat sufficing to bring the fever back.

Now if we assume that the occasion of an attack of rheumatic fever is ehill —that is to say, a sudden shock or injury to, or dis- organization of, the nervous centre which presides over the uniform body – temperature—-we enter upon a profoundly interesting prob- lem in following out the constitutional manifestations. Every- thing points to the mechanisms of locomotion, to the structures and surfaces where muscular work is applied ; even the heart, as Watson remarks, is in its perpetual to-and-fro movement comparable to "ore of the large joints." There is heat of combustion from some source or another to account for the rise of temperature, which is sometimes enormous; but it is not the heat of work done. We are again confronted with that most fundamental of all the questions relating to fever, the question, as stated by Foster, whether the "metabolism of even muscular tissue might be influenced by nerv- ous or by other agency in such a way that a large decomposition of the muscular substance, productive of much heat, might take place without any contraction being necessarily eaused . . . in such a way that all the energy set free would take on the form of heat." Is rheumatic fever one of those cases where disorder of the heat- regulating mechanism falls on an important member of the exe- cutive, namely, the muscular system, just as it falls on the liver in tropical abscess, and on the lungs in pneumonia ?

body’s heat under tropical conditions ; pneumonia is this kind of effeet where the chill is caught under the vicissitudes of the weather in spring, or in changeable weather generally, within the

Certainly we know of no muscle but the heart itself which The shows appreciable structural changes in rheumatic fever ; the heart articular is liable to “ myocarditis,” as well as to endocarditis and pericarditis, nerves.

temperate zone. Why should the liver be the organ of choice in the one case and the lung in the other? It may be said at least that each organ, in the respective circumstances, is the locus mino- ris resistenti#. A sudden abstraction of heat is a strain or shock to the heat-regulating centre, and, if the incidence is to be on the executive, it will fall on that member of the executive whose funetion had been, under the circumstances, most taxed. It is to be remarked that such cases of so-called peripheral incidence are associated with individual predisposition ; hence these diseases are generally sporadic. Something in the antecedents of the individual has determined the local character of the effects of chill, whereas the great climatic fevers more uniformly befall those who expose themselves,

Rheumatic Fever.—Rheumatic fever is universally admitted to be an effect of chill. “I know of no other exciting cause of acute rheumatism,” says Watson, “than exposure to cold, and especially cold eombined with moisture.” The conditions, both external and redisposing in the individual, which constitute the peculiar lia-

lity to rheumatie fever are nowhere found more distinctively than in the variable climate of the British Islands, and in the habit of body of the people. It is especially a disease of early manhood and womanhood, and of the working class; when it occurs before puberty it is associated in a remarkable way with the Hability to chorea.

_ The onset of the fever is preceded for a few days by general ill health, chilliness, furred tongue, “break-bone”’ pains, flying pains in the joints, some quinsy, and disturbed sleep. If these symptoms proeeed no farther, the patient would be judged to have had a chill, a catarrhal attack, a quinsy, or the like. When the mitial upset has been more considerable the pains “settle” in one or more of the larger joints, often the ankles at first, the

knees Subsequently, or the wrists, elbows, and shoulders. The patient lies flat on his back, not daring to move, and following the objects around with his eyes only. Profuse sweats break out from time to time, having a peculiar acrid smell, by which rheumatic fever can even be diagnosed. The joints where the acute pain is seated for the time being are swollen, tender, and often red and hot, the swelling being either in the fibrous structures around the joint or in us Synovial cavity. The locale both of pain and swelling shifts from Jomt to joint ; the disease often “flies to the heart ” (pericardium and endocardium), more rarely it “flies to the brain” (membranes). € urine is scanty, high-coloured, depositing brick-red urates, ~ with an excess of urea on analysis ; it is, in fact, the urine of isordered heat-regulation. The temperature is 100° or 101° up

but, for all other museles, the changes are in the tendons, liga- ments, and synovial membranes only, or, in faet, in those structures by which the work of muscles is applied. These structures have nerves, some of them large enough to be looked for in the dis- secting-room, although less is made of them in physiology. The function of the nerves of the joints is not sensory in the ordinary use of the term, but it may be said to be to convey to the centres the sense of effect of the work done by muscles. When there is intense metabolism of the museular substance, but no work done, the same nerves, having no sense of effect to convey, convey an acute sense of pain. The pain of rheumatic fever’is altogether more acute than in inflammations. In tropical abscess pain is subordinate, and its place is taken by a vague feeling of trouble, or tightness, or weight, or heat in the hypochondrium, and the same substitution is sometimes made for the pain in pneumonia ; put in rheumatic fever pain may be said always to be the grand symptom, and a measure of the very remarkable power of recovery. Reversing the maxim which applies to tropical abscess and to the worst cases of pneumonia, we may say of rheumatic fever: “Affert plus doloris quam periculi.”

Sweating is the other grand symptom of rheumatic fever. It ean hardly be said to be critical for the disease as a whole, because the temperature does not fall ; but the joints affected for the time being are relieved by it, and it is critical to that extent. We may, indeed, say that the temperature does not fall

because the heat goes on being generated in some other group or groups of muscles in whose joint or joints the pain is next felt.

We may regard, then, the sequence of events in rheumatic fever somewhat as follows. There is an upset of the heat-regulating centre by ehill, owing to which an extravagant amount of heat- generating nerve-influence is sent out ; this falls, for some reason of the body's habit (inherited or proper to the individual's occupa- tion, or otherwise special), upon the muscular system, whose meta- bolism produces heat without work; the articular nerves which are ordinarily employed to convey the sense of effect of work done, from the surfaces where the movement is applied, convey, under the changed circumstances of the muscles' activity, a sense of pain. One set of muscles after another generates heat without work, so that one joint becomes painful after another ; and, although there are perspirations by which the heat of the body is parted with, other sets of muscles take up the work of combustion in their turn, so that the excessive temperature is maintained. Among other muscles the heart is affected ; and, just as in the voluntary muscles the structural effects are in the synovial membranes, ligaments,

Chorea and rheuma- tie fever.

Herpes

in febrile regulating nervous mechanism.

attacks.

tendons, and aponeuroses, so in the heart they are in the peri- cardium and in the more fibrous parts of the endocardium. But they are sometimes in the cardiac muscular tissue itself, the mus- cular substance of the heart being peculiar.

The association with chorca may now be noticed. Chorea is not a disorder of heat-regulation, and it is not due to chill; it is a disorderly habit of some nervous centre or centres whereby the ordinary work of muscles is made irregular, and it is due to some feebleness in, rather than to injury of, the

nervous mechanism. The eonsiderable liability of choreic subjects to rheumatic fever, the actual endocarditis that they suffer from even if they have never had rheumatic fever, the occasionally observed choreic movements of the muscles in the course of true rheumatic fever in adults, the occurrence of chorea as a sequel of rheumatic fever —all these associated things go to show that the disordered nerve- centre is the same in both diseases, and that the discharge of its force may pass readily from one path to another. It may either set free muscular heat without muscular work, excessive in degree and attended by unique pain in the joints; or it may spend itself in those gratuitous displays of muscular work which amount to chorea.

The foregoing diseases have been regarded as errors of the heat- In rheumatic fever we have seen that there is a singular relationship to a truly nervous disorder, namely, chorea. It remains to mention another implication of the nervous system which several of them have in common, namely, an herpetic eruption about the corners of the mouth. Herpes is now accepted as an affair of certain cutaneous nerve-areas ; and in malarial fever, pneumonia, and acute attacks of quinsy due to chill there are very apt to be eruptions of herpes labialis. Why the labial region should be involved is uot obvious.

§ 14.—INFLAMMATION.

The inflammations may be regarded as an empirically made-up group of disordered states which have somewhat in common. Although inflammation is certainly a provisional category, there has always been a tendency to overcrowd it with newly-described morbid conditions, rather than to empty it of its temporary occupants. Whenever patho- logists have become impatient to say the last word about the endless perplexities of disease the class of inflamma- tions has become unusually full; this happened in the period of Broussais, when even the specific infections were placed therein, as gastro-enteritis and the like; and the frequent resort to the termination z¢is in more recent pathology may be taken as an evidence of a correspond- ing habit of mind. Thus there is much fairness in the bold criticism of Andral: “Regu dans le langage, sans qu’aucune idée précise lui ait jamais été attachée, sous le triple rapport des symptomes qui l’annoncent, des

lésions qui la caractérisent, et de sa nature intime, Pexpression inflammation est devenue une expression tellement vague, son interpretation est tellement arbitraire, quelle a réellement perdu toute valeur; elle est comme une vieille monnaie sans empreinte, qui doit étre mise hors de cours, car elle ne causerait qu'erreur et confusion." It is at least the duty of pathology to reduce the congeries of inflammations to as small a bulk as possible, to follow up the analysis of the inflammations one after another until they are reduced to the scientific position of errors of the respective structures and functions. Inflamma- tions, indeed, are best regarded as an ever-diminishing residue; there is always the residue, because the correlated structural and functional aspects of the life of the tissues cannot be stated with equal clearness for all of them. It is the great binding tissue of the body that gives occasion for this nosological residue ; the connective tissue is the one tissue about whose dual life of structure and function there is a difficulty. We shall appreciate its unique posi- tion best .by comparing it with so direct a modification of

1 See Senator, Untersuch. tiber den Jieberhaften Process, Berlin, 1873 (abstract and criticism by Sanderson, in Rep. Med. Off. Privy Council, 1875); C. F. Oldham, What is Malaria, and why is it most intense 1m Hot Climates? Lond., 1871; Cl. Bernard, Lecons sur la Chaleur animale, Paris, 1876 ; Morehead, Clinical Researches on Diseases in India, 2 vols., Lond., 1856 ; Jas. Johnson, Influence of Tropical Climates, 4th ed., Lond., 1827,

itself as fat-tissue. But even these phlegmasiz are capable of some further analysis in the direction of disordered structure and function if we have regard to the functions of the embryonic mesoblast, and to the "memories" of the same that the common binding tissue never quite loses.

The earliest and most fundamental notions about inflam- mation, and those which pertain to the residue above spoken of, were derived from the external parts of the body when injured by blows, wounds, scalds, the lodg- ment of foreign bodies, and such-like palpable irritations, Along with simple inflamed wounds were taken cases of erysipelas, a disease which has now become the sole heir of the original Greek name for inflammation,

namely, phlegmon. It will be convenient to begin with a brief reference to erysipelas.

Erysipelas.—Besides phlegmonous erysipelas, or diffuse inflam- Erysi mation and suppuration of the cutaneous and subcutaneous eon- pelas,

nective tissues, there is a common form consisting of redness, swelling, pain, and heat of the surface only, and stopping short of suppuration.

This condition often follows a wound, especially in the region of the scalp or face; it may occur also when there is no obvious wound, although there will probably have been a catarrhal state of the nearest mucous membrane. Fever or constitutional dis- turbance usually precedes the inflammation twenty-four hours or less, aud in this respect erysipelas is eomparable to the effects of ehill already treated of. Wounds received in a drunken brawl are especially apt to become erysipelatous ; also the wounds of those suffering from kidney-disease or liver-disease. Erysipelas is most apt to occur in cold weather with east winds, or in cold and damp weather. One attack predisposes to others. It often arises spon- taneously or autochthonously, but it is perhaps equally often induced by contagion and inoculation from pre-existing cases. Of its origin de novo from time to time there need be no question; thus, it has been observed in a single individual of a ship's com- pany at sca off Cape Horn. The redness and swelling advance with a well-marked border from the wound or other starting-point until they have invaded, it may be, a large cutaneous area. There is exuded plasma in the spaces of the connective tissue, and there

are also nuclear cells (leucocytes) in the lymphatic spaces and vessels,

and in the tissue generally. An increase of the colourless cells in the blood is also described. Since attention has been called to the presence of minute living organisms in disease there have not been wanting authentic descriptions of micrococci in the lymphatic spaces of the advancing margin in erysipelas, although they are said to be absent in the older areas of the inflammation, and during the stage of subsidence generally.

In phicgymonous erysipclas the connective tissues to a eonsider- Phlee able depth beneath the skin are soaked in serous fluid, whieh be- mond comes

turbid, like thin pus ; ata later stage the lines of pus extend erysi| in all directions along the tracts of binding tissue, fragments of the pelas;

latter being found as detached shreds in the larger purulent centres. The skin, usually of a limb, may thus become involved over a large area and toa great depth, considerable pieces of tissue falling at once into a state of slough. The temperature is often as high as 105”, and delirium, with other symptoms of nervous disorganization, is common. Death from failure of the heart is probable. This dis- ease is tle most extreme form of phlegmon, by far the most formid- able inflammation that exists. It is usually the sequel of a wound, but not invariably. Chilliness and all the other symptoms of eom- mencing fever precede the local phlegmon, so that the condition is comparable to those errors in the regulation of the animal heat, previously mentioned, in which the incidence falls upon a peripheral part. That it is itself a local effect of general temperature disorder cannot be maintained, inasmuch as there is usually nothing in the antecedent circumstances to implicate directly the heat-regulating centre. However, it is not the extent of the local injury that serves to account for the inflammation, but the habit of body of the patient, especially the drinking habit. It is not an overtaxed heat-regulating eentre that is implicated, but a nervous system overtaxed in more general respects. A peripheral injury, not necessarily a severe one, tells in an unusual way upon the unstable centres, just as in tetanus; and the outgoing response falls ina peculiar way or with a peculiar force upon the wounded part, pro- ducing phlegmon there and fever generally. Whether the rise of the body-temperature is mainly due to over-combustion within the injured area is open to discussion. The connective tissue as a source of heat has not hitherto eome into our consideration ; if it is to be regarded as a member of the heat-produeing executive, under the central nervous control, its membership is at least not important except when the redness, swelling, heat, and pain 0

inflammation are present.

|

|

n> i.

o|| 101. l- i,

yous trol

‘lon;

fever some hours later.

aflam-

FAaTH OLOGY

The same state of the tissues as in phlegmonous erysipelas is prought about, all but the redness of the surface, by a very different cause—the introduction of a minute quantity of venom, either the cadaveric venom introduced in a dissection-wound or the venom of the rattlesnake and adder. The bites or stings of many other animals produce more transitory inflammatory effects.

In common inflammation, such as follows the lodgment of a spicule of broken glass nnder the skin of the hand or arm (to bor- row Watson’s illustration), there is first pain ; soon there is redness around the point of entrance, with swelling and heat ; the skin becomes of a bright-red colour; the swelling increases, becoming hard and firmatthe centre of theinflamed area, and exquisitely tender, or painful to the touch. If these local effects are at all considerable (according to the nature and extent of the injury, and to the sus- ceptibility or habit of body of the individual) there is inflammatory At first there is usually chilliness and feebleness, then there is a general feeling of heat and dryness, with a quick, full, and hard pulse, headache, wandering pains in the limbs, restlessness, some mental confusion, disturbed sleep, a white tongue, thirst, and loss of appctite. If the piece of glass be removed all these symptoms, local and general, may subside quickly. If the source of irritation remain, or even, notwithstanding its removal, if the primary shock has been severe, the symptoms continue and intensify. Relief to the constitutional disturbance comes with the further developments in the injured area—with suppuration or, at the latest, with the bursting or letting out of the matter. Healing then proceeds as described under “repair.”

This is the usual sequence of events in common inflammation, in the inflammation of moderate degree.in a healthy person. It differs from erysipelas or phlegmon in the importaut respect that the fever follows the local effects at an interval of several hours. Where the injury is of the most violent kind, as in some machinery accidents, neither the local effects nor the fever are pronounced ; the “reaction” is said to be in abeyance, and death is apt to occur from shock. In these cases the face is blanched, the action of the heart and lungs feeble, and the mental faculties profoundly oppressed ; the presiding control has been so npset by the injury to eyen a limb that the forces of the body do not rally.

The heat of an inflamed part is not merely in the feelings of the patient ; it is actually several degrees (up to 6° or 7° Fahr.) higher than the temperature of the part in health or of the corresponding part on the opposite side, although it is never above the central blood-heat of health. It is not solely dependent, therefore, on the general state of fever. Neither can it be said that the general state of fever is solely dependent on the increased local combustion. In erysipelas, as we have seen, the general fever usually precedes the local, and must depend upon some general error of heat-making. Again, in a common inflamed wound, the general fever may, and usually does, subside some time before the cellular changes in the part, degenerative or formative or both, have passed their climax.

Implication of the Nervous Control in Inflammation.—From slight inflammations, with little more than redness and pain at the seat of injury, to the most shattering strokes there is a succession of steps. The nervous system is implicated in them all, for the reason that the nerves are everywhere, and everywhere ready to transmit impressions to the centre. It is not surprising, then, that in every doctrino of inflammation since the time of Cullen the events have been largely traced to the direct action of the nerves and nerve-centres. Amidst all the conflicting views taken of the nature of inflammation in current writings, there is agree- ment on this point at least, that the nervous control has much to do with it,—if not always the central control, yet some local control whose existence would hardly be suspected but for the Phenomena of inflammation. The differences of opinion begin when we come to the details of the nervous control. Does the nervous system preside over the action of the vessels only, or does it preside over the whole cellular life or the nutrition of the part? Opinions have had a tendency to range themselves on two sides, corresponding in the main to the more mechanical or to the more "vitalist " conception of life as a whole. The afflux of blood, which every one recognizes as the first conspicuous event in an inflamed part, has been attributed in the latter view to an attraction exercised by the cells of the part, to a hunger for blood comparable to that which causes a determination of blood in an organ that is going to be physiologically active. ''The facts," says Alison, "afford a strong presumption that the impressions made on the capillaries, and on the blood contained in them, solicit the flow through them on the principle of a vital attraetion of the blood rather than of relaxation of the vessels." This is the "soli- citation of fluids," the "movement of turgescence" or the "vital erection of vessels" of the older authors. If the needs of nutrition are the ordinary attraction, they may be simulated by such in- aidents as wounds, scalds, and the like ; and it is the peculiarity of inflammation that the incidence of these is on a tissue whose Physiological interest is ordinarily of little or no account, namely, € common binding tissue. It is with justice that Rindfleisch emphasizes the intimate connexion between the eommon binding

tissue and the peripheral nerves and nerve-plexuses, “They run exclusively in the connective tissue ; in it they divide and form plexuses, which ultimately join, without any definite demarcation

with the network of conncctive-tissue corpuscles. Their distribu- tion in the connective tissue designates these nerves for some de- finite function ; they are admirably adapted to play a part in the general physical and chemical changes of the organs, to give in- formation of the same to the central nervous system through their corresponding states of excitation. With the connective tissue they participate in the most intimate structure of organs, with the connective tissue they are stretched and pressed upon, with it also they suffer those chemical excitations which any considerable accu- mulation of waste matters brings with it.” Now, it is known from numerous experiments that, if a nerve of common sensation be stimulated, the outgoing response from the centre is by way of removing the tonicity of the arteries of the part, so that they dilate and transmit much more blood. This outgoing influence is assumed to travel by a special set of fibres called, for convenience, ‘depressor fibres,” because the effect has been to take off the tonic contraction of the arteries. The same effect is strikingly seen (although it is there accompanied by a conscious mental state) in the rising wattles of a cock, for which elass of erectile effects the nerves are called “nervi erigentes.”

But if this kind of turgescence is the best physiological analogy for the redness of inflammation it goes but a little way with us into the morbid condition. The tonic contraction of the arteries is no doubt taken off, and the vessels become distended with blood passing through them ; but the next event is peculiar to inflamma- tion,—the current of blood becomes slower, slow even to a stop in some of the numerous cross-channels of the capillarics. There is nothing in the mechanics of the circulation to account for this dallying of the blood at the seat of injury. The further discussion of the subject will be mado easicr by a reference to slight degrees of inflammation set up experimentally in transparent and delicate parts where the process can be watched through the microscope,— in a piece of frog’s mesentery drawn out through an aperture of the abdomen, or in the everted membrane-like tongue of the same animal, When the microscope was first applied to the study of inflammation these same effects were often observed

by Paget and Wharton Jones in the wing of the bat, an animal which has the advantage of being comparatively warm-blooded.

Experimental Study of Inflammation.—The frog having been Experi- paralysed by curare, a loop of the intestine is pulled out through a ment in slit in the abdomen, and its mesentery stretched over a ring of inflam- cork, so that the light may be reflected to it from the mirror of the mation.

microscope. It hardly wants an irritant, such as a drop of weak acid, to produce the inflammatory effects on this thin membrane ; mere exposure to the air suffices. In ten or fifteen minutes the arteries begin to dilate and then the veins, and the vessels go on dilating for the next two hours, when they will have reached about twice their ordinary calibre. They remain so dilated, and in an hour or two the current of the blood becomes slower in them. In the older observations on the bat's wing acceleration of the current through the dilated vessels was first noted ; then came the transi- tion to the peculiar inflammatory action, namely, slowing of the current, the vessels still remaining dilated. This slowing of the stream is most obvious close to the injured point, where there may be complete stagnation in the capillaries, the crowded corpuscles giving the central area a brilliant carmine appearance. Farther away from this area the streams are more rapid ; and at the farthest limits there is the unusually full and rapid flow of normal hyper- emia. The fulness of these dilated vessels exhausts their elasticity, so that the pulse-wave of the blood, which should be felt only in larger vessels, becomes perceptible also in the smallest.

In the area of retardation in the frog the blood-disks and the white corpuscles cling to the sides of the capillaries and small veins, instead of forming, as usual, a procession in the central line of the tube. Most of all do the colourless corpuscles adhere to the walls, in the experiment on the frog, until they forma kind of outlined mosaic on the side of the vessel. Then, if a particular spot be watched for several hours continuously, it will be found that some of these cells have actually worked their way slowly through the wall of the small vein. This is the important phenomenon of emi- gration of the cells of the blood, known to Gendrin and W. Addison, accurately followed by Waller, and rediscovered by Cohnheim.

Ineontinenee of the Vessel-walls.—The incontinence of the vascular Incon-
walls in inflammation is proved, not only by this emigration of tinence but
also by the escape of red blood-disks of vessel- from the capillarics, and by
the familiar and old-established fact walls.

cells from the small veins,

of exudation of the fluid part of the blood,—the plasma or scrosity. In the words of Alison: ‘‘ First, the surrounding textures are loaded with a serous fluid ; but gradually changes take place in this fluid, which indicate that other constituents of the blood have exuded from the vessels ; or part of the fluid effused assumes a gelatinous consistence, and forms flakes or layers which gradually become solid. In the semi-fluid matter first effused, according to Gendrin and others, decolorized globules of the blood may often be per-

Suppura- tion.

ceived ; and in many cases globules of pus, known by their larger size and freer motion on one another (and, when observed in mass, by their yellow colour), soon appear in this effused matter ; and it assumes more or less rapidly, and more or less generally, the form of purulent matter. . . . Along with the semi-fluid lymph effused in the earlier stage of inflammation there is often extravasation of

the colouring matter of the blood, and somctimes of entire blood.” |

This, then, is the central fact of inflammation,—the incontinence of the vessels and the exudation from them.

Addison adopted the theory that the pus of inflammation was nothing but the colourless cells of the blood that had been washed out with the plasma; and that doctrine has been revived by Cohnheim with little or no reserve. There have been serious objections to this doctrine of the origin of pus; practical surgeons have always failed to understand how all the pus could come from the blood, which has not only a mere trace of colourless cells in

it, but, moreover, contains neither more nor less of these cells during suppuration than at other times. Again, in cases of leukemia, where the number of them is cnormously increased, the course of inflammation does not appear to be affected thereby. Lastly, it is pointed out that we cannot infer altogether fully from the extremely susceptible transparent membranes of the frog to the subcutaneous and other connective tissues which are the usual seats of the in- flammations met with in practice. So far, then, we are justified in admitting only the incontinence of the vessel-walls, the escape of some colourless cells, and of plasma, the latter yielding fibrin under some circumstances, in combination with the paraglobuliu and the ferment known to reside in the white corpuscles.

The cause of the incontinence of the vessel-walls naturally engrosses attention. In an expcriment of Cohnheim's a similar condition was produced in the vessels of the frog's tongue by liga- turing the tongue bodily at the root, so as to stop the circulation in it altogether. If the ligature were kept on for six days the tongue began to mortify, and the circulation showed no power to re-establish itself; if it were removed after forty-eight hours the current slowly, resumed its flow, the arteries returned from their dilated condition, but not the veins, and the colourless cells began to escape from the latter; on removing it after twenty-four hours only, the circulation quickly resumed its normal course without any transient emigration of cells. The conclusion was that the walls of the vesscls suffered a certain loss of "integrity" if the circulation through them were stopped beyond a certain limit of time, and this loss of integrity seemed to be analogous to the altera- tion of the vessel-walls under the blow of an inflammation. On the other hand, it has been pointed out that not the vessel-walls only, but the cells in closest proximity to and in intimate nutri- tive relation with them, are affected by the stroke of inflammation ; where such cells have processes, and can be seen, they are found to draw in their processes under an irritant. In the exposition of Cohnheim, however, these changes in the cells of an inflamed part are not admitted to be other than regressive or passive ; according to him, the walls of the vessels only are affected, and affected in their molecular constitution.

Suppuration.—Wc have seen that there still remains the difficulty of accounting for the large quantity of pus ; and it will probably be found that

to account for the pus we shall have to ascribe a more than passive attitude to the connective-tissue corpuscles of the inflamed area. Where the suppuration is diffuse, as in phlegmon, and still more where it is discontinuous, as in secondarily inflamed lymphatic glands, it is not to be supposed that the pus is a mere aggregate of blood-cells brought thither. Something from the primary seat of inflammation has caused the more distant parts, whether they be continuous or discontinuous, to take on the in- flammatory and suppurative action; but it is quite clear, if we examine a lymphatic gland beginning to suppurate, that its own cells yield the pus. There has been an action of presenee on the parenchyma of the lymphatie gland; and it will be difficult to account for the production of pus in acute primary inflammation without assuming the same action of presence. In inquiring after the catalytic agent suspicion falls on the substances exuded from the vessels, and mostly upon the emigrated colourless cells. Sup- puration, when it occurs, is subsequent to and secondary to the exudation. When no suppuration occurs, as in what is called adhesive inflammation, which is the commonest kind on free sur- faces, the exuded blood-plasma simply coagulates, forming a fibrin- ous layer, in the meshes of which are a larger or smaller number of colourless blood-corpuscles. In the further development these blood-cells are probably themselves the active elements ; they pro- duce the tissue of adhesions, which is a form of the tissue of repair. In situations which arc not free surfaces—that is to say, in the subcutancous tissue, or more generally in the tracts or planes of the common binding tissue—the exuded substances are less apt to coagulate or to take the adhesive fibrinous course. It is in these deeper situations that we ordinarily get suppuration, an event subsequent to exudation and undoubtedly dependent thereon. It is true that “inflammation” may be excited on the surface of articular cartilages and in the cornea, where there are no blood-

vessels to yield an exudation ; but the inflammation is not of the ordinary kind, and in particular there is no true suppuration until the nearest blood-vessels have projected their systein as far as, or close up to, the irritated area. Artificial keratitis has been the chosen ground of controversy to determine whether it is the vessels or not rather the cells, of the part that are

primarily and actively concerned in the inflammatory process; but it will probably be found that the two sides of the controversy correspond to two dif- ferent sets of facts. The transparent superficial ulcer of the cornea has hardly anything to do with inflammation ; it does not sup. purate, although there is some formative action in the cells of the part to enable it to heal. Whenever there is true inflammation of the cornea it is accompanied by or preceded by extension of the nearest vessels to the transparent and non-vascular surface. Changes in the Connective Tissue.—In the events of true inflam. mation, therefore, exudation from the vessels precedes suppuration ; and it ean hardly be doubted that they are cause and effect, to the extent, at least, that exudation is a necessary antecedent. At the same time the connective-tissuc cells of the part can hardly haye escaped that molecular injury, or injury to their nutrition, which the elements of the vascular wall would appear themselves to haye suffered ; they are, as Rindfleisch points out, intimately bound up with the plasmatic circulation or the ultimate diffusion of the juices ; they are in closest relation with the terminal nerve-plexuses; and, histogenetically, they are the remains of that “ parablastic”

embryonic tissue from which the blood-channels themselves were —

made. It would be surprising, indeed, if they escaped the shock which had deeply affected the integrity of the cells in the vascular wall. A concurrent altcration, at least, must be postulated for them ; but that can hardly account for more than a preparedness in them to form pus. According to Stricker, the elements of the connective tissue revert to an embryonic character before pus is formed from them. Ifthe hardness of the central core ofan inflam- mation under the skin be analysed, it will be found to depend, says Stricker, upon the following things: the tissue is thickened, the network of cells in it is swollen, the intercellular substance is re- duced, the network of cells has broken up into independent pieces of nucleated protoplasm. This is the swelling of the tissues which precedes abscess-softening ; it is essentially a return to a more pro- toplasmic and less fibrillar state, and accordingly to a more embryonic state. Of this power of reversion to an embryonic state, which the common binding tissue of the body retains as a memory of develop- ment, we have already had illustrations in the processes of repair, of tumour formation, and of cancerous infection. In all these cases the tissue falls back upon a more elementary condition, or we

may say that it retreats to broader ground, where, however, it cannot stand still. Its special destiny is settled for it in each case by the circumstances, and, for the particular case of inflammation (as dis- tinguished from the process of repair), its special destiny is to form pus. If the analogy adduced in the section on “repair” has any value, pus is the by-product of a kind of blood-making from the embryonic cells, a heematoblastic activity in which no red disks are formed, but only pus-corpuscles and a fluid, the corpuscles stand- ing for the residual nucleus of the hematoblast (with evidence of cleavage in it) and the diguor puris for both the red disks and the plasma. This hematoblastic doctrine of pus would correspond, in form at least, to Hunter’s conjecture that “the new-formed matter peculiar to suppuration is a remove further from the nature of the blood.” So long as the intensity of the process lasts, the connective tissue uses its reacquired embryonic powers only to make pus; when the effects of the blow have subsided (or if they have been from the first slight, as in the reparative process) the formative powers of the tissue make granulation-cells and new blood-vessels (including even new blood within the vessels), and so the incident ends in repair. The pus of a granulating surface would tlms differ from the pus of acute inflammation only in degree. In like manner, common inflamrmation with a moderate degree of fever differs only in degree from phlegmon, or diffuse suppuration, with its peculiar fever. The diffuse suppuration of phlegmon is the case where the infection or action of presence extends by continuity along the tracts of connective tissue ; the implication of lymphatic glands (it may be at the outset) is the case where the infection is carried to a distance by the lymph-drainage of the tissues. Contrasting with such cases, the area of suppuration in a healthy subject (where there has becn no extrinsic poison introduced) is a limitcd one; but, however limited the focus, it seems necessary to resort to infection of the connective tissue for an explanation if the exuded fluid turn to pus or the inflammatory swelling turn to abscess. It is in this seuse that every inflammation may be said to be infective. _ Assuming, then, that pus-formation is due to an infective influ- ence impressed upon the protoplasmic connective tissue, and kuow- ing, as we do, that the exudation from the blood-vessels is an Invart- able antecedent, the role of infecting cells would precisely suit those clements of the exudation about whose share in the inflammatory process there has becn much controversy, namely,

the cmigrated colourless cells of the blood. As a material contribution to the pus all the cells that escape from the blood would go but a little

way ; as infecting cells they might be the agents of much suppura- tion, and, through their wandering propensities, of suppuration at discontinuous points. They would thus have a power in inflam- mation analogous to that which has been elaimed in a former sec- tion for catarrhal and other epithelial cells of a mucous membrane (or of a gland) which had found their way into the supporting connective tissue.

Among the things that determine the degree and course of an – inflammation, besides the kind and extent of the injury, may be mentioned the florid or anemic habit of body, the gouty habit, the alcoholic dyscrasia, the diabetic cachexia, the scrofulous inherited coustitution, and the syphilitic taint. There are even cases where the predisposing cause 1s, as it were, strong enough to dispense with all but the slightest exciting cause ; where, accordingly, the inflam- mation would be called idiopathic. But, however much the “crasis”’ of the blood or infiuence of the nerve-force may determine the degree and kind of inflammation, it is clear that the stagnation of the blood, the incontinence of the vessel-walls, the exudation, and the suppuration may all follow an injury where the crasis and the general nervous control are perfectly normal. The significance of micro-organisms in the inflamed area must be judged from the same point of view; all the events of inflammation may happen without them, but they may help to determine the kind and extent of the inflammatory effects.!

§ 15,—INFECTIVENESS.

One of the most dreaded results of a wound, or an infammation from other causes, happily rarer in modern surgical practice than in former times, is pyzemia, septic- emia, or purulent infection. About a week, more or less, after the injury, the patient has a shivering fit followed by a perspiration ; he may feel comparatively comfortable for a time, but, there soon begin to be grave symptoms of constitutional disturbance. He becomes uneasy, has pains in the limbs, a weak and quick pulse, fever, loss of appetite and thirst, a dry and brown tongue, a somewhat jaundiced skin, and sometimes diarrhea. The shivering fit returns at intervals followed by the sweating, the tem- perature rising to a great height and falling rapidly to a corresponding

degree. Death usually ensues, sometimes not for two, three, or four weeks, being preceded by mut- tering delirium and unconsciousness. A curious symptom accompanying these phenomena is the sweetish odour of the breath. Meanwhile the wound, where there is one, will have ceased to discharge pus freely, becoming dry and brownish and yielding only a thin ichor; at a dis- tance from the wound one or more joints may become swollen and painful, or an abscess may form at one or more points under the skin, or there may be pustules and discoloured patches on the skin.

th the examination after death the secondary abscesses may be ~~vely various in their seat, oftenest perhaps in the lungs, under certain circumstances in the liver, or in one or more joints, or in the substance of the heart, or at the back of one or both wrists. The parotid glands are peculiarly liable to diffuse secondary in~~ flammation. In a class of cascs called septicemic for distinction, no secondary inflammations or products of inflammation can be discovered anywhere ; in these cases the periodical shivering fits are not marked, although there may be profuse sweatings from

time to time. In another class of cases, to which Pagct has called special attention, the course of the disease is very protracted, being

Pal Hh oO Lo €

AOL

particles of it, get washed off, carried into the blood-stream, and lodged as embola in the small vessels of a terminal vascular area of the lungs or other organ or part, where an unhealthy form of inflammation arises secondarily. These events will become more intelligible by reference to a particular case.

_A woman undergoes an operation for internal piles—saccular dilatations of the inferior hemorrhoidal veins. The hemorrhoids had been ligatured, and for some reason there ensues an altogether unusual course of events. In a few days the patient has symptoms of pyemia, and death follows in a fortnight. At the examination the inferior mesenteric vein, all the way up from its ligatured inferior hemorrhoidal branch to where it joins the splenic on its way to the liver, is found much dilated, lying along the left side of the lumbar vertebree as thick as the little finger, of a greyish appearance

externally, and filled with greyish puriform detritus. In the liver, to which this vein conducts, there are a number of in- flammatory centres, some of them merely dark-red or livid circular areas, others of them purulent centres or true pyzemic abscesses.

In this-case the wall of the ligatured vein had taken on some action which had affected the clot formed naturally within it ; instead of the clot organizing, it had become a semi-fluid mass of puriform detritus ; it had extended by continuity far up the main trunk of the inferior mesenteric vein, the puriform softening follow- ing it; particles or larger pieces of this unnatural clot had passed into the portal vein, and had become impacted in certain capillary territories of the liver, where they had infected the elements of the part (probably the connective tissue exclusively) to take on an inflammatory and suppurative action.

It is questioned by some whether there may not be a class of Infective pyemic and septicemic cases in which no thrombosis (with puriform throm- softening of the thrombus) of peripheral veins occurs ; but it can- bosis.

not be doubted that this kind of thrombosis, and the discharge of particles or pieces of the thrombus into the general circulation, are very general accompaniments of pyzmia and septicemia, puer- peral and other. The interest centres in the state of the vein-wall, which causes the blood to clot within it, where it would not other- wise have clotted, and causcs the clot to undergo a puriform degeneration, or to acquire an infective power. The state of the primary wound must be held answerable in general for all the secondary events, from the thrombosis onwards. In the wound the ordinary products of inflammation cease to be formed, and, instead of them, there is an ichorous foul-smelling discharge, or a dry and semi-gangrenous condition of the parts; whiatever this action may be, it communicates itself to the walls of the vessels, and the throm- bosis (with detachment of the puriform particles) follows.

There are certain well-understood circumstances in which wounds take on such an action: the crowding of a number of cases of suppurating wounds in a limited space withont adequate attention to the removal of the putrid discharges from the wounds, great nervous prostration of the subjects of wounds, the coexistence of kidney-disease, and such-like constitutional

states personal to the case. The situation of the wound or exposed surface comes also into account ; thus injuries of the bones (as in compound fractures), and especially injuries of the cranial bones, are more liable to take the pyemic direction. Above all, the surface of the uterus after delivery, or contuscd wounds of the labia, or other lacerations, will take on an unhealthy action, either from the circumstances of the patient, or owing to a very minute quantity of infective substance (cadaveric or other) having reached it from without, or from the putrescence of portions of retained placenta. The liabilities of child-bed are increased by the circumstance that the blood in the puerperal condition is unusually liable to clot in the veins, even when their walls are in good condition, and also by the fact that the venous sinuses of the uterus after delivery are such as to afford opportunities for stagnation of the blood in them (unless the vigor- ous contraction of the organ have practically obliterated them), in which respect they resemble the venous sinuses of the dura mater.

Experimental Septicemia.—The injection of small quantities of Experi-

m : . oe : : ao ty ee Uetecowety putrid substance into the circulation in animals, such as the dog, mental

are found to be in proportion to the chronicity.

In the pathology of these cases attention has always been fixed on the state of the veins leading from the wounded part, and of the blood in them. The old doctrine was that the veins secreted pus from their walls, which was carried into the blood-stream. his pre-microscopic opinion has given way to the modern doctrine of thrombosis and infective embolisms elaborated by Virchow. Not only the veins leading from an external wound, but the veins of the uterus after delivery, and other internal veins under various ritcumstances, may become lined by a layer of coagulum, or even blocked in their entire lumen ; the coagulum undergoes puriform (although not purulent) degeneration ; pieces of it, or molecular I TSUION | Pieces eae ee

b See Paget, Surg. Path.; Simon, “Inflammation,” in Holmes’s yst. of Surg., vol. i., 2d ed.; Sanderson, 2., vol. v.; Cohnheim, wae Untersuchungen iiber die Entziindung, Berlin, 1872 ; Stricker, orles. tiber allg. und exper. Pathologie, Vienna, 1878-83, and in

shurst’s Internat. Encycl. of Surg., vol. i., Philad. and Lond., 18825 an Buren, ibid.

produces symptoms of septic poisoning corresponding somewhat to septie- In this experimental septic- emia.

the symptoms as observed in practice. emia, as well as in the septic processes of man, there are many facts to show that bacteria are concerned. How these micro-organ- isms are concerned is another and much more difficult question. According to one view the lowered vitality of the tissues in a certain class of injuries, or in the injuries of a certain class of subjects, gives these ubiquitous organisms their opportunity. In this view the organisms initiate nothing ; they are incidental to the morbid state of the tissues, and their presence in large numbers is rather the index of the liability to septic infection than the cause of any septic infection that may occur. The most extreme claim made for these organisms in purulent and _septicemic infection (as well as in erysipelas, ulcerative endocarditis, and diphtheria) is that their physiological activity (if not even their mechanical presence) determines the nature of the morbid process, including the tissue-changes, the type of constitutional disturbance, and, in general, the development, course, and termination of the infection. In judging

a = 51

Tumour- infection.

Melan- otie in- fection.

A402

between the two extreme positions it should be remembered that there is nothing morphologically distinctive in these organisms found in diseascd or injured tissues, that their so-called physio- logical activity in disease is merely begging the question, and that their mechanical presence, even if they were always present in sufficient numbers, has not yet been brought into any intelligible relation with the symptoms and the morbid anatomy. On the other hand, there cannot be the slightest doubt that one of the

greatest desiderata of surgical practice is to keep them out of wounds (see SURGERY).

Tumour-infection.—This subject has already been treated of in the section on ‘‘cancer,” but it will be convenient to add a few re- marks on the parallelism between tumour-infection and purulent infection. In both cases we have a primary seat of morbid action and a secondary infection, and in each case the seats of sccondary infection correspond on the whole closely. The closest correspond- cence is perhaps with sarcomatous tumours, which have the same relation to veins that primary infective inflammations havc, and the same predilection forthe lungs. Again, where the liver becomes the seat of secondary tumours, the first steps of the process of infection are on the whole parallel with those that may be observed in multiple abscesses of that organ, that is to say, the liver-tissues at a number of points undergo changes which are practically simul- taneous Within a certain radius, leading to a circumscribed abscess in the one case and to a circumscribed tumour-nodule in the other. Both the abscess-area and the tumour-area may be found at half-way stages of their development, the former being often recognizable in the section of a pyeemic liver as a somewhat livid circular spot. In the tumour-process the morphological characters are aiways very definite, and the exciting agent has plainly come from the primary disease, carrying the structural marks of the pri- mary disease in it. The primary inflammatory process wants the definite structural characters of the primary tumour-process, and still more does it want the endless variety of the latter ; but it is still a textural process of the body, and its secondary processes arc like it. The tumour-analogy, therefore, is strongly in favour of the idea that purulent infection, and inflammatory infection in general, has an autochthonous origin in the life of the cells and tissues.

Mclanosis.—The term “melanosis” is used in pathology in at least two distinct senses. It is applied, in the first place, to the general- ization or secondary extension of a primary tumour (usually sar- comatous), containing black or brown pigment ; and, in the second place, it has reference to a remarkable generalization or widespread deposition of black pigment in the bone-marrow and elsewhcre in the horse, particularly in those horses which are apt to lose what- ever hair-pigment they may have

had. Each of these two very dif- ferent cases has its interest for general pathology.

The generalization of a melanotic tumour, even a very small one, is one of the most remarkable facts of infection. It is not unfre- quently seen in the case of the spindle-celled sarcomatous tumours which grow from the pigmented connective-tissue cells of the choroid tunic of the eye (not the choroidal epithelium of the retina). In such cases the primary tumour is serious enough from its pressure effects, but it is infinitely more serious from its infect- iveness. The liver may be full of large tumour-masses, black throughout or in part, and there may be other secondary growths elsewhere. Even more striking is the generalization which is apt to ensue from a subcutaneous melanotic sarcoma, or from a small spot of pigmented new growth on the basis of an old pigmentary mole, or nevus, or mother-mark (melanotic alveolar sarcoma). The secondary tumours occur at other points under the skin, often widely remote from the primary, and in the axilla, in the membranes of the spinal cord, in the liver, in the lungs, and even on the serous membranes. We have here to do with the ordinary considerations of tumour-infection, as already spoken of; but the presence of pigment in the cells and partitions of the new growth raises a further consideration. If we collect all the secondary tumours from a case where infection has been extensive, and express from them all the pigment, we should get a very considerable quantity, perhaps half a pint, of a thick black fluid not unlike printers' ink. The source of all this pigment has been perhaps a small speck of melanotic tumour-tissue in the skin, or, to mention a particular case, in the granulation-like tumour-tissue in the bed of the thumb- nail after an injury. How is it that from so small a source so much of this black substance has been produced ?

The pigment is, of course, contained within the individual cells of the secondary tumours ; these cells are a mimicry of the primary tumour-elements, and, as they reproduce the form and size of these, so also they reproduce their pigment-granules. So stated, there is nothing remarkable in the quantity of black fluid that may be collected from a case of generalized melanotic sarcoma. The primary tumour impresses the type of its own life upon a number of distant centres of cellular activity, so that these grow to be tumours, their cells at the same time becoming each a laboratory for the

manufacture of pigment, extracting it from the blood for their erratic purpose. The true suggestiveness of these events is really in the way of analogy for another class of infections. It is often

P2rineL ®G ¥

said that, in an infection like smallpox, the virus must be an independent living organism, because it multiplies within the body during the evolution of the disease, the body which had received a most minute quantity of virus becoming in its turn a centre from which a thousandfold of the virus may issue. But, if a small speck of melanosis may yield half a pint of inky fluid by so impressing the cells of the body that they become so many laboratories of black' pigment, then we can understand. how, in smallpox, the cells of the skin at many points become laboratories in like manner, not indeed yielding black pigment, but supplying that which has to the primary contagion of a case of small- pox the same relation that the generalized pigment of melanosis has to the primary speck or nodule of pigmented spindle-celled or alveolar sarcoma. It is not necessary @ priori to go so far afield as the ferment-action of living organisms for an analogy of this thousandfold multiplication ; there is an analogy nearer home in the marvellous mctabolic capabilities of the body's own protoplasm.

Melanosis of the Horse.—It sometimes happens that we find, im Mela the carcase of an aged grey or white horse which had been originally osis brown or black or other shade of colour, that the marrow of all the horse

bones in its body is changed into a uniform black inky pulp or fluid, that the clusters of lymphatic glands are full of the same in a drier form, and that there are black patches on the more exposed parts of the mucous membranes. This remarkable malady is not found except in horses whose coat had lost its originally abundant hair-pigment. Trousseau and Leblanc, who investigated the facts on a large scale at the Paris horse-knackers', were of opinion that in every horse which had turned white, more particularly ifit had been originally black or brown or roan, the inguinal lymphatic glands were full of black pigment; and they concluded that the pigment there deposited was the equivalent of the colouring matter that the hair had lost, and that the blood being, as it were, overcharged with colouring matter, had deposited pigment in unusual places.

It is difficult to suppose that the melanosis in these cases is a mere quantitative equivalent of the pigment lost from the hair. The pigment of melanosis is more probably a true metabolic pro- duct of cells; and it is significant that it is most abundant, in the horse, in the old seats of hemoglobin-formation, namely, the red bone-marrow. The bone-marrow (with other tissucs as well) takes on a pigment-making activity, coincidently with the blanch- ing of the horse's coat, and vicariously thereto. The melanosis of the horse is a striking instance of a constitutional malady, that is to say, it illustrates the very important pathological doctrine that an crror in one part or function of the organism entails vital consequences elsewhcre.}

~ § 16.—Sprctiric INFECTIONS.

Infective disease of one kind or another stands fora very large part of the total sickness and mortality of man- kind. It is entitled, therefore, to a larger space im a nosological outline than a single section at the end of an article. Each infective disease has to be considered by itself, from the natural-history point of view, and the salient facts of its history, geography, and ethnology, and its other particular circumstances to be taken along with its morbid anatomy and clinical history. It will be necessary, for the present purpose, to adopt a much more restricted programme, and to indicate little more than the place of the specific infections in the general scheme of disease.

Of diseases that have the property of infectiveness we have already dealt with cancers and other malignant tumours, and with the common infective inflammations. Reference has also been made to erysipelas, which is sometimes not merely infective as regards the individual body in which it arises, but a source of infection (or contagion) also for other bodies through conveyance of a virus. In the communicable class of infections we have to include so ordinary and simple a malady as a common cold, which is notoriously apt to go through @ whole household, having been acquired in the usual way by some one member of it. The great historical epidemics of influenza which have overrun whole continents from time to time are held by some to be little else than colossal

1 See Virchow, Gesanunelte Abhandl. aus dem Gebiete der wissensch. Med., Frankfort, 1856, Cellular-pathologie, chaps. x. and x1, and Krankhaften Geschwiilste, vol. i. chap. 8, and vol. ii. (* Melanosis ie; Billroth, Allgemeine chirurgische Pathologie, 8th ed., Berlin, 187 6 (Engl. transl, New Syd. Soc., 2 vols., 1877); R. Koch, Aetiologie

der Wundinfections – Krankheiten, Leipsic, 1878 (Engl. transl., New Syd. Soc., 1880).

en

rare? 6G ¥

developments of those catarrhal epidemics which we meet with on a homely scale within single households. Another example of the same kind of communicability of a simple catarrhal affection of a mucous membrane is the Egyptian form of “cold in the eye” or ophthalmia, which was brought to England by a few of the troops returning from the expedition of 1801, and which spread by contagion for several years through the home-garrisons with a viru- lence quite unknown in the Egyptian climate, so that more than two thousand soldiers had to be pensioned for total blindness due to it.

In such instances a common and, it may be, trivial malady becomes a species of disease; it acquires the remarkable power of reproducing itself in persons who had not been exposed to the primary exciting causes. Not one in a hundred of the soldiers who were blinded by ophthalmia during the first ten years of the century had ever been in Egypt, just as, in a household where catarrh has become prevalent, perhaps not more than one member of it had sat in a draught, or been caught in the rain, or otherwise been subject to the conditions that ordinarily bring on a common cold. It is the acquired catarrhal condition that spreads from person to person, being faith- fully reproduced in each new victim. The morbid con- dition becomes a kind of individual thing, of which the seminal particles are scattered abroad and induce the same morbid condition where they find a favouring soil or a favourable lodgment.

If all the instances of infection could be reduced to the same category as these, we should simply have to regard the specific infective diseases as the spreading or com- municable forms of morbid conditions of the body other-wise accounted for—as states of disease leading a kind of independent life, but traceable in the last resort each to its origin in certain structural and functional errors of the body. The great problem of the species of disease would thus become an evolutional problem. While this evolu- tional problem would always have underlying it the unique difficulty of conceiving how a morbid state of the body could be integrated to become a semi-independent exist- ence, with the power of reproducing itself by its germs as in the generation of living things, the interest for each specific disease would be to follow up, historically, geo- graphically, ethnologically, sociologically, and otherwise, the conditions of body out of which the complex natural history of the disease-species had grown.

Proceeding, then, in the natural-history manner, and attempting, in the first instance, a grouping of the species of disease, the broad lines of division are into the chronic and the acute, and, among the acute themselves, into exo-genous and endogenous.

Acute Infective Diseases—Exogenous and Endogenous.—The endo-

much as, over and over again, it has been from the emanations of dysenteric dejecta of the negro (who can hardly take yellow fever)

and not necessarily from the effluvia of pre-existing yellow fever cases, that the infective power has proceeded. The vicariousness

of yellow fever brings it into close relation with typhus fever, which Typhus is not otherwise counted as an infection of the exogenous group. fever,

No attempt to trace all cases of typhus to pre-existing cases of the same fever can possibly succeed ; the succession has been broken repeatedly, and repeatedly started anew, amidst well-known cireum- stances of cold, hunger, filth, and general misery. In the larger proportion of typhus eases it is the miserable themselves who have suffered from the diseasc in addition

to their other miseries ; but there are numerons classical instances in which the more wretched of mankind have imparted typhus to their more comfortable fellows without themselves exhibiting the symptoms of the disease. The best-known historical cases are the Black Assizes, when prisoners who were brought into court from filthy dungeons so tainted the air of the court-house that the judges, the members of the bar, the jurymen, and the public were seized with a virulent typhus infec- tion. If, in such cases, it should be contended that the prisoners carried the specific efiluvia of typhus about their persons, although they themselves did not suffer with the specific symptoms of the fever, there are other cases where such a contention is entirely in- admissible. Perhaps the most remarkable of these is the case of

the Egyptian ship-of-war which brought an epidemic of typhus to

Liverpool in 1861. (Hpidem. Trans., i. p. 246, 1862.) More usually, however, it is the miserable themselves who first develop this morbus misert#, afterwards communicating it to the physicians and others who enter their dwellings or otherwise come near them. The de novo development of the symptoms of typhus, and subsequently of the independent contagion of typhus, has been abundantly illus- trated in the naval and military history down to the close of the Napoleonic wars. The writings of Huxham, Lind, Pringle, D. Monro, Blane, and others, who served in the great typhus period, are full of evidence of that kind ; the doctrine of the continuous reproduction of the typhus virus always from pre-existing cases is a purely academical affair, which dates from the ingenious dialectic of Bancroft's Essay on the Yellow Fever, &c., 1811. The rational doctrine of this kind of infective disease, based upon the practical experience of all times, is that which is stated by Pliny: "* Primo, temporis ac loci vitio, et xgri erant et moriebantur ; postea, curatio ipsa et contactus egrorum vulgabat morbos " (xxv. 26).

Relapsing Fever.—Closely related to typhus in the circumstances Relaps- of its origin is relapsing fever, which has extremely slight power of ing fever.

spreading among the well-to-do. Its synonym of famine fever is on the whole a sufficiently accurate designation of its cireumstances of origin. Its more recently-acquired synonym, spirillum fever, is derived from the

presence in the blood of a minute spiral living organism, as to which the standing question arises whether it is there because the particular state of fever is favourable to it, or whether the fever is there because the organism has, for some reason, invaded the body. Here, again, the conflict arises between academical dialectic and the more tangible facts of experience. It is maintained that relapsing fever can be given to the monkey by injecting the spirilla; but that circumstance by no means serves to show that the pre-existing cases of relapsing fever had occurred because spirilla had invaded the bodies of a certain number of persons. Relapsing fever is sometimes, though rarely, conveyed by infection to those who had not been living na state of over- crowding and of semi-starvation ; and such an incidence of the disease is so entirely arbitrary that even the spirilla, if they came from other cases, might be accepted as the active agents. The spirilla would have a real interest if it could be shown that they could initiate relapsing fever proprio motz. As the case stands, the predisposing causes of relapsing fever completely overshadow all other elements in the causation. ‘The disease is always and every-

nd genous species of disease are those in which the infecting particles 3en-pass directly from the sick body to the sound, giving rise in the cute latter to a morbid statc which follows the same order of unfold- ses, Ing, and attains the same type as in the former. The exogenous species of disease are those in which the infecting or germinal particles have an intermediate state of ripening in the soil, or in water, or amidst other favouring conditions, producing a definite set of morbid phenomena in the exposed body, but a set of pheno- mena which may be, and often are, different in important respects from those of the primarily-ailing subject. These contrasts between the endogenous and the exogenous infections may be illustrated by a reference to smallpox on the one hand and to cholera on the other. Any person whose skin is covered with the drying crusts of smallpox pustules may give off infecting particles which will set up the same disease if they find a lodgment in a susceptible person, the contagiousness of such a case of smallpox being some- What heightened, no doubt, by a close atmosphere and the like. But for cholera, speaking generally, much more than this is wanted for the development of the communicated disease ; the infecting particles have in most cases to undergo an intermediate stage of Mpening in

the soil or in other outside media. Yellow fever is even more than an exogenous infection ; it is also vicarious, inas-

where morbus pauperum, and very often it is typhus Samelieus. ; Typhoid Wiser. This fever holds a peculiar place in the history of Typhoid. specific diseases. It is unquestionably a far more common disease at present than it was fifty years ago, and it is certain that it was prevalent in Paris for some time before it began to occur, except as a rarity, in London and Edinburgh. The evidence of Christison and of other highly observant pathologists may be implicitly accepted that, while Louis and others in Paris were finding ulceration of the small intestine in fatal cases of typhus-like fever, no such lesion was ordinarily found in the Edinburgh practice. More generally, it may be said that typhoid fever has been a prominent factor in the mortality during the periods when typhus has been an insignificant one. The coincidence of decided typhoid years with the cholera ycars is perhaps irrelevant. But there can be little doubt that there is a close connexion between the rise of typhoid and the more or less considerable diminution of intermit- tent fever ; there is indeed much evidence in a certain number of localities in favour of the opinion of Boudin, that malarial fever and typhoid fever arc mutually exclusive in a given place. : Typhoid fever is undoubtedly a disease associated with the manner of disposal of human excrement. Whether the typho-

mo 2 oS try

Small- pox.

Measles.

Searlet fever.

Syphilis.

404

malarial fever of the American Civil War, and of Rome, Naples, and other localities, is also an excrementitious infection is not so clear. The ordinary typhoid is peculiarly bound up with the modern system of water-closets and

sewers, and with the faulty construc- tion of the same ; it was a familiar observation in Edinburgh that the Old Town, with its closes and huge tenement-houses, without the water-closet system, remained practically free from typhoid for many years after the disease began to be common in the New Town. The association with faulty sewerage is, however, not an invariable one. The disease occurs among remote and primitive communities, such as Norfolk Island in the Pacific, in Fiji, in Greenland, and elsewhere.

According to the contention of Murchison, and of many other living authorities, typhoid fever may, and often does, develop de novo in an individual who has received, either by the breath or in his food or drink, some peculiar or not altogether ordinary product of fecal decomposition. It is not alleged by this school that fecal decomposition under ordinary circumstances (especially under the free access of air) is attended with the risk of typhoid fever ; but that a virulent property may, and often does, develop under gome peculiar concurrence of circumstances, especially when fecal matters percolate and accumulate where little air reaches. If the process of typhoid fever be so induced in an isolated case, the de- jecta of the patient are specifically virulent ; and from one such case many may be poisoned ‘by means of specifically tainted water or milk distributed in common. ‘The possibility of a de novo origin of typhoid fever now and then is vehemently objected to by the more doctrinaire school of pathologists ; according to them there is always a pre-existing case, the virus of typhoid having been continuously reproduced ab xlerno.

The Exanthemata.— Another class of acute infections is those

which are virtually independent of external circumstances, which affect all classes equally, and which pass by direct contact from the sick to the sound. The chief diseases of this class are small- pox, measles, and scarlet fever. As to smallpox, it has been con- tended, on the historical and geographical evidence, that it is primarily an African and Indian skin-disease which has acquired spreading power; and there is really no rival hypothesis of its origin. For measles the evolutional clue would appear to be en- tirely lost. The old notion about it, expressed in the name “ mor- billi,” was that it corresponded to a lesser kind of smallpox. There can be no doubt, however,

of its present absolute nosological distinctness. It is as universal in its distribution as smallpox, sparing no race, and, like smallpox, committing its greatest ravages among virgin communities and among the dark-skinned. The natural history of scarlet fever is altogether different. It is peculiarly a disease of northern Europe ; it is practically unknown as an epidemic throughout the whole continent of Asia (except Asia Minor), and the whole of Africa (except Algiers); and in North and South America and Australasia it seems to have fol- lowed the European immigration. One of the most remarkable facts concerning it is that it may occur in quite sporadic or isolated cases in extra-Kuropean countries. Some favourable concurrence of cireumstances had given it a permanent hold in Europe, or had enabled an occasional erythema of the skin, with fever, to develop into a species of disease, in which the almost diphtheritic affection of the throat, the brawny swelling of the neck (with tendency to sloughing), and the acute affection of the kidneys may be so pro- nounced in certain individuals, and in all the cases of certain epidemics, or of the epidemics of certain localities, that the simple type of disease is obscured and the line of evolution lost. Perhaps one clue to the development of scarlatina from non-specific states of the body may be found in the cases of scarlet rash in children, in the surgical wards of hospitals. The evidence seems to show that in such cases there is something different from a merely heightened predisposition to the specifte scarlatinal poison, on the supposition that the latter is ubiquitous ; that there is, in fact, an inherent liability in some children to develop a scarlet rash, with fever, near a wound or sore, the condition so developed becoming communicable to others, as in the analogons case of erysipelas. _ Chronie Infeetive Diseases. —The greatest of the chronic infections is syphilis, unless, indeed, we admit tubercle unreservedly into the same class. Its enormous prevalence in modern times dates, with- out doubt, from the European libertinism of the latter part of the 15th century. It is almost certain that the same disease, with symptoms of constitutional infection, had developed in various parts of the ancient world under similar circumstances ; but it is not less certain that a great redevelopment came in about the year 1490 in France, Italy, and Spain, so that we do not even require to assume a continuity of the virus from carlier times. The his- torical evidence may be read, in a convenient abridgment, in the third volume of Hiser’s Geschichte der Medicin wnd der epidemischen Krankheiten.

Two forms of sore are described concurrently in all writings upon syphilis, and, although it has been usual during the last thirty years to regard only one of these as truly syphilitic, there has always been a certain inability in the profession at large to apprehend the reason

Pari € th OG ¥

for making a radical distinction. One of the forms is a considerable

and quickly-developed ulceration, sometimes multiple and with a

marked tendency to extend its borders ; it heals under treatment. like any other ulcer, and in many cases there are no after-effects throughout the body generally. The same person may develop such sores repeatedly. Fora considerable time after the establish- ment of the doctrine of “true” or indurated infecting sore it was taught that these simple ulcers were never followed by constitu- tional infection ; but it is now very generally admitted that such teaching is too rigid or dogmatic, not according with the facts of experience. A recent writer on the subject in Berlin, who has kept records of his private practice, estimates that no fewer than 40 per cent. of all the cases which developed constitutional symptoms were consequent on primary ulcerations that would not have been included in the definition of “true” or Hunterian sores. It is not seriously disputed that these simpler ulcerations may arise inde- pendently of conveyance, as the direct results of gross personal negligence. Itis at the same time admitted that they may become inveterate, that the process of healing may become irregular, and that they may gradually acquire that character of “induration” which is distinctive of the “true” sore. The various circum- stances under which this change of type or development of char- acters may take place have, for obvious reasons, escaped being recorded with scientific accuracy; but of the fact of some such evolution there can be hardly any doubt.

The “true” or Hunterian sore is usually at first a small indurated papule, which breaks after a time, but causes little trouble in heal- ing. ‘The after-effects are, in their severity and long-continuance, in striking contrast to the disease at the outset. This form of the disease is an affair of infection from beginning to end, from the primary papule to the “gummatous” internal nodules years after ; there is no evolution in the individual of an infective

virus out of a common and unclean ulceration. The simple sore, the result of common inflammation under circumstances of gross per- sonal negligence is not without a degree of infectiveness of its own. It has a tendency to spread, to enlarge its borders by including the margin of sound tissue in the ulcerative process, and it has also a tendency to infect the nearest packet of lymphatic glands with a suppurative action. Further, it is highly communicable to the persons of others by contact, reproducing one or more sores very like itself, and such communication is accountable for its wide distribution. But that degree of infectivencss is a very dif- ferent thing from the truc and full syphilitic infection. The latter is often an affair of years, and, it may be, of a lifetime, and it passes directly to the offspring. Its earlier constitutional manifestations are in the throat, the skin, and the hair; its later in the bones, some muscular structures and some of the viscera, and more particularly in their blood-vessels, or in the blood-vessels of their coverings. It infects the lymphatic glands with an indura- tive rather than a suppurative process, and not only the nearest packet of them but also the lymph-glands in the neck and else- where.

In seeking for the beginnings of this profound constitutional taint, for the first steps in the evolution of the infection out of a common morbid state of the body, we naturally arrive at that irregular process of healing, or the inveterate soreness which the granulations of a simple ulcer (due to personal uncleanness or con- tact with the same) sometimes assume. ‘The tissue of syphilitic formations, wheresoever occurring, has been named by Virchow “ ovanuloma,” being a persistent state of granulation -like tissue, not proceeding to ordinary cicatrization, but to indurative and degenerative changes. In true syphilis, as we have said, this kind of formation is from first to last the product of an infective virus, equally the primary hard papule, the indurated lymph-glands, the thickening and destrnction of mucous surfaccs, the nodes and inflammatory products in the periosteum, and the gummata in and upon the viscera. But the type of all this mimetic formative action must have been somewhere acquired or evolved ; and we shall prob- ably not err if we seek for the acquisition of the granulomatous type in the inveteracy and irregular healing of the granulations of an ordinary foul sore under the peculiar circumstances of its own degree of local infectiveness, and in the continuous reproduction of such sores. In this way we should have granulations becommg specifically infective towards

the body, or its distant parts, just as the products of simple acute inflammation may be infective to a distance, or as melanotic and other slight primary tumours are apt to propagate their texture and characters far and wide, or even as a common granulating sore under certain circumstances of irritation may develop the characters of tumour-tissue and a high degree of tumour-infectiveness. The products of syphilis have a near affinity to new growths of the tumour kind ; and it is with justice that Virchow includes them among tumours as one of the granulomata, and Klebs makes provision for them, along with tubercle, glanders, lupus, &c., in a class of “infective tumours.” If we take the primary type to be the granulation-tissue of repair we shal] assig? it an intermediate position, and, at the same time, do justice to the circumstances in which this infective granulation-like new growt

arcle af sero- fi

rea tm © © G Y

probably had its origin, namely, the reparative process in inveterate or neglected ulcers of common and every-day origin, but with a contagiousness of their own, and with a certain infectiveness of their own towards the adjoining tissues and the nearest packet of lymphatic glands.

The most characteristic form of the generalized syphilitic infec- tion, which may not manifest itself for several years after the reception of the virus, is a nodular or infiltrating new growth in various organs—in the liver, in the testes, in or upon the brain, in the muscles (tongue and jaw-muscles especially), in the peri- osteum, and in the lungs. These nodules are called gummata from the somewhat tenacious, firm, opaque brownish appearance of the fresh-cut surface. The structure, where its vascularity is perfect, consists of small round cells lying mostly in rows among thin fibres, and it closely resembles granulation-tissue, only that the cells are smaller and the-intercellular substance (fibres) harder or denser. Molecular death, or necrosis, overtakes this new forma- tion at various central points, owing to the inadequacy or suppres- sion of the blood-supply. One of the most remarkable features of the process is the enormous overgrowth of cells in the inner coat of the arteries within the affected area, leading to an

accumulation of elongated cells and intercellular substance, whicli may even obliterate the channel of the vessel altogether.

Over the later products of syphilitic infection, both the nodular and the infiltrated, there are two drugs, mercury and iodide of potassium, which have a remarkable power, causing their absorp- tion and conducting the infective process to a safe issue. Syphilis has been compared by Hutchinson to a very prolonged fever, with its stages separated by intervals of months ; like a fever, it burns itself out, so that a time comes in the course of years, if the patient have not succumbed to the effects, when the system is practically free of the virus, just as it is free of the virus of smallpox in three weeks. In a certain proportion of cases only the secondary symp- toms occur, and not the tertiary, the virus having presumably exhausted itself in the earlier manifestations.

In the syphilis of the offspring it is necessary to distinguish two classes of effects. On the one hand, there are the effects of general intra-uterine mal-nutrition, due to the placental syphilis of the mother ; and, on the other hand, there are the true specific effects acquired by inheritance from either parent and conveyed, along with all other inherited qualities and tendencies, in the sperm- elements or in the ovum. These two classes of cffects are com- mingled in such a way as not to be readily distinguished ; but it is probable that the erroneous growth of bone, at the epiphysial line in the long bones (sometimes amounting to suppuration), and on the surfaces of the membrane-bones of the skull, is a result of general placental mal-nutrition, like the corresponding errors of growth inrickets. The rashes and fissures of the skin, the snufiles, and such-like well-known symptoms in the offspring of syphilitic parents are to be counted among the true mimetic effects of the Specific taint ; so also the peculiar nuclear overgrowth in the sup- porting tissue of the liver, the interstitial pneumonia alba of the lungs, and the like. As in rickets, it is in many cases some months after birth before the congenital syphilitic effects show themselves, while other effects, such as interstitial keratitis, the mal-formations of the permanent teeth, and the rarer occurrence of laryngitis, come to light during childhood and youth. Injury to a syphilitic child is apt to have unusual consequences; thus a blow on the arm may be followed by a gummatous growth in one of the muscles.

Tubercle and Serofula.—Tubercle and scrofula are among the cominonest and most fatal diseases of mankind. No ehapter in pathology has a more pressing interest ; none is surrounded by so much theoretical difficulty, or concluded by so much practical failure. It is not only in Europe, but in America and the British colonics, as well as throughout the whole inter-tropical zone, that this remarkable wasting disease is found. The most considerable degree of immunity is said to be in Iceland and on the Asiatic steppes. While the mortality from this disease is very great, in some European countries amounting to one-seventh of the death- tate, and that, too, among the youth and flower of the people, there is everywhere evidence that a very much larger proportion had incurred a slight degree of the malady and had survived it. Nothing is more common in the course of post-mortem examinations than to find traces of “obsolete tubercle” in the lungs and lymph- atic glands. Cohnheim recalls with some approval a saying that used to be current at Greifswald, that almost every one proved to have been “a little bit tuberculous”; and Rindfleisch bases his pathology of the disease on the assumption that a tuberculous dis- position has become practically universal throughout the human Stock, so that inflammations, under certain aggravated circum- stances, may light up the disease in almost any one. It is peculiarly common in prisons, barracks, and workhouses ; and, in the last- Mentioned, tubercle and scrofula are not rare among the aged. There are instances within the knowledge of most people where the Marriage of first cousins, and still more certainly of double cousins, has been followed by a very pronounced consumptive tendency in

the offspring, even if there had been no very clear history of con- sumption on either side before. No disease runs more in families than tubercle. While there are all these evidences of a widespread constitutional liability to tubercle, it is at the same time clear that the victims of the hereditary taint are only here and there,—perhaps one out of a large family, or one member of a family in childhood and another in the second half of life, according as they had been exposed to sufficient exciting causes. In the most extreme cases of heredity, which are not so rare but that one or more are familiar to every circle, the members of a family fall into consumption one after another as they grow up, as if by an inevitable fate.

The relation of scrofula to tubercle is a subject of much intricacy. The familiar instances of scrofula are the enlarged clusters of lymph- atic glands of the neck in boys and girls, who are either of the fair and delicate type or of the dark and coarse type. Another large class of scrofulous cases are subject to white swellings or other chronic diseases of joints, usually the knee, hip, or elbow. But many slighter conditions, such as eczema of the head and face in children, are set down to scrofula. Again, serious visceral disease leading to a fatal result, especially in the kidneys, testes, ovaries, and bladder, is for some reason reckoned scrofulous rather than tubercular. But this latter class of cases is certainly tubercular, as much as anything can be said to be tubercular. A great part of all that is reckoned scrofulous may be said to be inherited tubercle, affecting the lymphatic glands of the neck most conspicuously, running a very chronic course, often disappearing at puberty, and associated with a delicate skin, fair hair, large eyes, and other features of a well-known type. Of the cases of scrofulous discase in the genito-urinary system and in the joints there may be some in which the disease had been inherited, but there are others in which it had been acquired. The senile scrofula of workhouses and the like is almost certainly an acquired condition. Whether as an inherited disease or as an acquired, scrofula can be separated from tubercle by no very definite line.

Tubercle, as the name implies, is a small tuber or round nodule ; the nodules are often “miliary” or the size of millet-seed. For the variety of diffuse or “infiltrated” tubercle, which is often found in the lungs, it has been made a question whether it should be reckoned as tubercle at all, by reason of its wanting from first to last the character of distinct small nodules. Tubercles are some- times large, especially the tubercles of the genito-urinary organs and of the brain ; and these are generally made up of a number of smaller nodules fused together, and surrounded by a common cap- sule. ‘The larger tubercular masses, or conglomerates of tubercles, are those that have been claimcd as in a peculiar sense scrofulous. The fusion of numerous small tubercular centres into one large arca can often be seen in lymphatic glands in all its stages under the nicroscope. The prevalent modern opinion is that all these vari- ous manifestations are due to the infective action of a virus, Just as in syphilis; and, as the effects of the syphilitic virus include not only gummatous nodules but also “inflammations ’of the skin, mucous membranes, periosteum, and other textures, so the effects of the tubercular

virus include not only “tubercles,” properly so called, but also a variety of diffuse “inflammatory ” conditions.

The most common seat of the tuberculous process is the lungs, so that tubercle and phthisis pulmonalis have almost come to be synonymous. In a certain proportion of cases the tubercles and tuberculous “infiltrations” are found in the lungs only; but in many cases the pulmonary tuberculosis is only a part of a general infection which includes the serous membranes and lymphatic glands, the intestine, the liver, the spleen, the kidneys, the brain-membranes, the choroid coat of the eye, the bones, and the joints. Cases have been described also of tuberculous ulcers of the tongue and stomach, and of tubercles in and around the thoracic duct. On the assumption that tubercle is due to an introduced virus, it has been attempted to classify the cases according to the probable way of ingress of the virus; those with the pulmonary condition most prominent would have received the infection with the breath, while another class, including the numerous cascs where miliary tubercles are found in the liver when carefully looked for with the microscope, would have absorbed the virus along with the food from one part or another of the digestive mucous membrane ; the tuberculous kidney (with ureters and bladder), again, would be explained on the hypothesis of that organ attempting to eliminate the virus from the system. But even among the pulmonary cases there are some in which the tubercles had arisen from infection brought by the venous plood, just as in the dissemination of sarco- matous tumours; it has been shown by the very elaborate dissec- tions of Weigert that tubercles may grow into the walls of veins, the tuberculous substance so getting carried into the blood-current, wherein the first resting-place would be the pulmonary capillaries, except when the vein was tributary to the portal system.

It is difficult to say what is the most characteristic structure of a tubercle. In the class of small grey translucent tubercles, all the same (miliary) size, the cells are practically granulation-cells ; these are not uncommon in childhood and youth, where the attack ig sudden and the progress rapid. In another kind, which Rind-

Bovine tubercle.

fleisch would regard as distinctively “scrofulous,” the substance is opaque and yellowish-white ; there are many epithelial-like cells, or cells with a considerable zone of protoplasm round the nucleus, and, mixcd with these, giant-cells or cells with many nuclei, usually marginal. Except in the most acute cases of miliary tuberculosis, the new formation, whether in the shape of isolated nodules or continuous tracts of “ infiltration,” undergoes changes. Sometimes it becomes a fibrous substance, but by far the most common change is into a yellow cheesy matter. This degeneration is comparable to the gummatous change in syphilitic formations, but in tubercle the degenerate tissue 1s much less cohesive, more friable, drier, more apt to fall into a molecular detritus. The caseous change is the distinctive degeneration of tubercle, the more occasional fibrous and calcareous changes being either its associates or its modifications. The reason of this change is the insufficient blood-supply of the new formation. Nothing so clearly accounts for the structural as well as the degenerative characters of tubercle as growth of tissue without adequate provision for admitting the blood into it.

Bovine Tubercic.—In the corresponding disease of the domesti- eated bovines—a very common disease of cows in town dairies—the characters of the new formations are equally determined by the kind and degree of blood-supply. In this form of tubercle the nodules are, in the first instance, on the serous membranes of the thorax and abdomen; they often attain a considerable size, and sometimes the size of quite large tumours; the vascularity of their surface is very considerable, and it is around their periphery that they grow, as in the case of sarcomatous tumours; but the blood-vessels do not go all through the nodules, their central parts being either calzareous, or caseous, or reduced to a thick mortar-like substance. The chief differences between this form of tubercle and the varieties ordinarily met with in man are that it is a more vascular structure, more like a sarcomatous or fibromatous tumour, with a power of growth from its surface (where the vessels are numerous), and some- times attaining a great size, often suspended from the serous mem- brane by a vascular stalk or pedicle, and, in the interior of organs such as the lung, surrounded by a translucent capsule of vascular tissue, or excavated into a smooth-walled cavity, the thick trans- lucent capsule being all that remains of the original nodule.

The origin of these peculiar multiple new formations in the domesticated bovines is a more likely subject of inquiry than the origin of human tubercle. The bovine disease is generally admitted to have its nodules referable to two distinct classes—primary and secondary: the primary are the multiple nodular tumour-like growths of the serous membranes, and the secondary are the in- fective descendants of these in the lymphatic glands, the lungs, the liver, spleen, kidneys, Fallopian tubes, bones, and joints. The secondary infectiveness of primary new growths is otherwise intel- ligible, according to analogies, and the interest therefore centres in the conditions of origin of the primary, parent, or infecting growths on the serous membranes. They occur by far most fre- quently in the cows of town dairies, that is to say, in animals closely confined for long periods, deprived of pure air and sunlight, forced in their feeding and milking, and altogether placed under such conditions of nutrition as commend themselves, not to an intelligent acquaintance with ruminant requirements, but to the short-sighted maxims of profit and loss which govern the policy of the cowkeeper. The vicissitudes of nutrition are pretty clearly indicated as the starting-point of tubercle in the cow.

In human tubercle we have no such indications of a division into primary new formations arising out of errors.or vicissitudes of nutrition in some tissue, and into secondary new formations due to the infectiveness of the primary. On the other hand, the various new formations in a case of tubercle in man would appear to be co-ordinate, or all of them due toa common cause. Human tubercle is not by any means a multiple nodular eruption on the serous membranes first and in the lymphatic glands and lungs afterwards ; if the disease occur in these three localities it is necessary to assume the same infective cause for it in them all. Most usually the first indications of human tubercle are at the apex of one or both lungs, and, in a considerable proportion of cases, the disease never goes beyond the lungs. But it is not on that account a purely pul- monary disease. For some reason the lungs are most apt to become the seat of the infection ; but there are many cases in which the infection locates itself elsewhere as well, and there are some cases in which it avoids the lungs altogether. An infective virus has to be assumed, and yet we are unable, as in bovine tubercle, to dis-

cover any primary source of it in the physiological aberrations of.

the human body itself. The problem of human tubercle, therefore, may be said to be: Does the infection reach the body from with- out ? and, ifso, whence are its structural or morphologically mimetic characters originally derived? While some such question as that has to be stated for human tubercle in the last resort, it has to be kept in mind that a very large part of the sum-total of human tuberculous discase is an affair of strong hereditary predisposition, and even of direct inheritance. In bovine tubercle itself, which is often acquired de novo by cows subjected to grossly artificial con-

ditions of life, inheritance is credibly estimated to be answerable for more than one-half of its present very considerable total.

The pathology of tubercle (bovine and other) has had much light thrown on it by caperiments to produce it artificially in animals by inoculation of minute quantities of tuberculous matter under the skin, or by mixing considerable quantities of tuberculous matter with the food for a length of time, or by feeding with the milk of tuberculous cows. A very suggestive proportion of all such experiments have succeeded. It has been boldly alleged by Koch that the active agent in the inoculative production of tubercle is not the tuberculous matter from a previous case, but a minute rod-like living parasite belonging to the order of schizo- mycctes (see SCHIZOMYCETES). According to this view tubercle js from first to last an affair of a parasite, equally the human tubercle and the bovine, although these two forms of tubercular disease are widely different in their anatomy. The weak point in the experimental evidence of Koch is that we are not sufficiently assured of the absolute separation of the tuberculous matter from the parasites. There.is not reason enough to suppose, from the pub- lished details of these experiments, that the original tuberculous matter had all been got rid of ; and there is thercfore not reason enough to suppose that the induced tuberculous infection is due to anything but that matter itself, whose infective power, although not initiated by the organisms present, would probably be multi- plied by their cultivation.

In the same class with syphilis and tubercle should be taken Other glanders, primarily a disease of the horse, but now and then com- chroni municated to man. There are various tropical and sub-tropical infec- granulomatous infections of great scientific interest which can only tions, be mentioned,

such as yaws, verruga Peruviana, Aleppo boil, Delhi boil. There is also the button-sewrvy of Ireland, now probably extinct. Lupus holds a peculiar place in this class of diseases. The position of Jceprosy also is an intermediate one, and its patho- logy the most difficult of all the constitutional endemic infective diseases. It was with reference to leprosy, and with particular reference to its enormous medieval prevalence and subsequent extinction in most parts of Europe, that Sir James Y. Simpson Simps) wrote as follows in 1841 (‘‘ Antiquarian Notices of Leprosy and on the Leper Hospitals in Scotland and England,” Edin. Med. and Surg. origin Journ., vol. lvi.):— ‘The generatio de novo of a really new species of diseas), disease,’ says Dr Mason Good (Study of Med., i. pref. p. xxiii.), ‘is speciey perhaps as much a phenomenon as a really new species of plant or of animal.’ Dr Good’s remark is probably too sweeping in its princi- ple ; for, if necessary, it might be easy to show that, if the particular diseases of particular animal species are liable to alteration at all, they must necessarily alter more frequently than those animal species themselves. In pursuing such an inquiry the pathologist labours under comparative disadvantages. The physiologist can, by the aid of gcological research, prove that the individual species of plants and animals inhabiting this and other regions of the earth have agai and again been changed. The pathologist has no such demonstra- tive data to show that, in the course of time, the forms and species of morbid action have undergone great mutations, like the forms and species of normal life. But still we have strong grounds for believing that, in regard to our own individual species alone, the diseases to which mankind are subject have already undergone, in some respects, marked changes within the historic cra of medicine, ” +

§ 17.—Toxic DIsEAsEs.

In various parts of the world and at various periods there have been widespread outbreaks of sickness due to

1 See Hirsch, Mandbuch der historisch-geographischen Pathologie, vols. i, and ii, 2d ed., Berlin, 1881-83 (Engl. transl. vol. iL, New Syd. Soc., Lond., 1888); Hiser, Lehrbuch der Geschichte der Medicm und der epidemischen Krankheiten, vol. iti., 8d ed., Jena, 1882; Robert Williams, On Aforbid Poisons, 2 vols., Lond., 1836-41 ; Mur- chison, The Continued Fevers of

Great Britain, 2a ed., Lond., 18/ 3; G. Gregory, Lectures on the Eruptive Fevers, Lond., 1848 ; Christison on “ Fevers’? and ‘Continued Fever,” in Tweedie’s Library of Medi- cine, vol. i., Lond., 1840; La Roche, Yellow Fever, 2 vols., Phila- delphia, 1855; Audouard, Recueil de Mémoires sur le Typhus nautque, ou Fiévre jaune, Paris, 1825; John Simon, “On Filth Diseases, Report of the Med. Officer of the Privy Council for 1874; J. Hutchin- son, Clinical Memoirs . . . on inherited Syphilis, &c., Lond., 1863, and “Constitutional Syphilis,” in Reynolds’s System of Medicine, vol. i., 1866; Virchow, Ueber die Natur der constitutionell-syphilitischen Affectionen, Berlin, 1859, and in his Krankhaften Geschwiilste, vol, il., chapter on “Granuloma”; Klebs, “ Ucber die Entstehung der Tuber- culose und ihre Verbreitung im Kiérper,” Virchow’s Archiv, vol. xliv.,) 1868; Colnheim, Die Tuberculose vom Standpunkte der I nfectionslehre, Leipsic, 1880; Walley, Zhe Four Bovine Scourges, chapter on “ Bovine Tuberculosis,” Edin., 1879 ; Lydtin, ‘Die Perlsucht,” in 4 rehiv fi wissensch. und pract. Thierheilkunde for 1884 (Engl. ed. by Fleming) ; R. Koch, “ Die Aetiologie der Tuberculose,” Berl. Alin. Wochenschrift, April 1882.

certain toxic or poisonous substances mixed with the staple food of the people. Perhaps the best known of these is gangrene caused by ergot of rye. One form of the disease is characterized by acute pain and gangrenous destruction of the skin, the gangrene sometimes spreading to the deeper structures and to the bones, and leading to loss of the limbs. At times the mortality from this disease has been great. Numerous epidemics of it have occurred in France (rarely during the present century); in other parts of the continent of Europe (Sweden, Norway, Russia) the effects of ergotism have taken the form of a nervous (convulsive) disease called “ Kriebelkrankheit.” The effects are those due to ergot, the compact mycelium of Claviceps purpurea, produced within the pales of the common rye. This substance, well known in medicine, is accidentally ground with the rye, and produces gangrene by contract- ing the muscular coats of the arteries of the skin so as to seriously diminish the amount of blood sent to it, or it affects the nervous system. (See ERcor.)

Another toxic effect closely allied to ergotism is the pellagra of Lombardy. (See PELLAGRA.)

A third disease of the same kind is acrodynia, having a resem- blance to ergotism on the one hand and to pellagra on the other. It appears to be somehow connected with bad grain, but the actual poison has not been traced, as in the case of ergot. The observa- tions relating to it have been mostly made in France, and in the French army in Syria, in Algicrs, and in Mexico. The succession of symptoms is somewhat complex, including disorders of the stomach and intestine, conjunctivitis, oedema of the face, disorders of sensibility and locomotion, and erythematous rashes, mostly on the hands and feet.

In Colombia (South America) a peculiar disease, characterized by the hair coming out (pelade), is traced to the ergot- parasite of maize.

In the prairie Statcs of the American Union there is a disease of cattle (and sheep) called “the trembles,” supposed to be due to some toxic substance in the pasturage. In the human subject in those localities there is a corresponding malady called “the milk-siekness,” and suspected of being caused by partaking of the milk or flesh of cows which had been primarily aficcted.

Among toxic diseases we have to include also lead eolie, or “dry .belly-ache,” to which workers in the various compounds of lead are liable, as well as communities here and there whose food or drink, in the course of its preparation or storage, has been con- taminated by lead. Workers with phosphorus, also, are liable to necrosis of the lowcr jaw. More occasional effects are produced by some other chemical elements used in manufacture.

By far the most important toxic agent is aleohol, which is often sold in public-houses when it has all the powerfully in- juious properties of new spirit in it. The enormous excise duty of 10s. per gallon is apt to make us forget the coarse and cheap nature of the alcohol often sold as whisky; this product of distillation may be purchased new from distilleries at as low a rate

as 1s. 6d. per gallon. The retailing of such new whisky is answer- able for an amount of disease—to say nothing of violence and crime —which an equal quantity of mellowed spirit would by no means produce. There are some not uncommon forms of kidney-disease and of liver-disease which are, in the great majority of cases, the direct results of raw spirits. Both in the liver and the kidney the effect of such spirits is to cause an active growth of the support- ing tissue of the organ at the expense of its proper metabolic or glandular tissue. In the case of the liver it causes cirrhosis or hobnailed liver, which is accompanied by abdominal dropsy ; in the case of the kidney it causes a contracted condition, to which the name of cirrhosis is also applied, being one of the forms of Bright's disease. Besides these organs the stomach is apt to become affected by coarse spirits taken frequently ; it falls into a state of chronic catarrh, on the basis of which cancer is apt to plant itself.

_ § 18.—Parasitic DISEASES.

Reference has been made to the occurrence of a spiral micro-organism in the blood in cases of relapsing fever, to the so-called "bacillus of tubercle," and to the occurrence of micrococci in erysipelas and infective inflammations. For the splenic fever and other anthraceous diseases of the domestic animals, very conclusive experimental evidence has been brought forward by Pasteur and others that the virus somehow goes with or resides in the bacilli which are apt to swarm in the blood. These bacilli also occur in the malignant pustule and wool-sorters' disease of man, —forms of anthrax which are produced by handling the hides and fleeces of animals. In diphtheria and ulcerative endocarditis micrococci are abundant in the tissues of the affected localities. They are also described for malignant osteo- myelitis, and a peculiar double form (diplococcus) has been discovered in pneumonia. The doctrine of infective para- sitism is applied by some pathologists to the whole of the specific infective diseases, acute and chronic, as well as to malarial fevers, which are non-communicable. There can be no doubt of the occurrence of very various forms of micro-organisms in the tissues after death from diseases, specific and other, and in the blood and tissues during the course of some diseases, and even in states of fair health. It is premature to call all these bacteria " pathogenic." Their

significance in morbid states of the body will be considered, along with their natural history, in the article ScHIZOMYCETES.

The animal parasites infesting the human body and the fungi concerned in some skin-diseases and in actinomycosis are treated of in the articles ParasitisM, NEMATOIDEA,

and TAPEWORM.

INDEX.

Addison’s disease, 384. Adenoma, 379.

Atiology, 361.

Ague paroxysm, 394. Agues, periodicity of, 395. Albuminuria, 387. Alcoholism, 407. » Malarial, 394. Angeioma, 370. » Telapsing, 403. Atrophy, acute yellow, 386. », rheumatic, 397. Bacillus, 407. » Spirillum, 403. Bacteria, 401. », thermic, 394. Blood-making, 376. Fibroma, 368.

Bright’s disease, 397. » _ossifying, 368.

Enchondroma, 370.

Epilepsy, 391.

Epithelioma, 382.

Erysipelas, 398.

Exanthemata, contagious, 404. Fever, 394.

Callus, 367. Giant-cells, 366, 372. Cancer, 380. Goitre, 384.

» _ colloid, 382. Gout, 388. Catarrh, 377. Granulations, 363.

Chlorosis, 375. Chorea, 391, 398, Cicatrix, 366. Convulsions, 391. Cretinism, 375, 385. Deeenetations, 390. ermoid cysts, 372. Diabetes, 386.’

Dissolution principle” in nervous diseases, 393. Topsy, 388. Dysentery, 396. Migration of blood-corpuscles, 399.

Graves’s disease, 385. Hematoblasts, 365. Hemophilia, 375. Hairs in dermoids, 372. Herpes in febrile attacks, 398. Infections, endogenous, 403. ” exogenous, 403. fs vicarious, 403. Infectiveness, 401. Inflammation, 398. Leucocytosis, 376. Leukemia, 376. Lipoma, 389.

Locomotor ataxia, 392. Melanosis, 402. op of horse, 402.

Myxeedema, 384. Myxoma, 369. Nerve-repair, 367. Neuralgia, 390. Obesity, 389. Obsolescence, 383. Osteomalacia, 375. Pain in rheumatic fever, 397. Parasitic diseases, 407. Pernicious anemia, 377. Phlegmon, 398. ; ; Phosphorus poisoning, 386. _ Placental function in congenital

discases, 374. Pneumonia, 396. Polypi (mucous), 379. Progressive muscular atrophy, 392.

Pseudo-hypertrophic paralysis, 392.

Pus, 365.

Pyzmia, 401. Repair, 363.

Rickets, 373.

Rigors, 395. Sarcoma, 868.

ag cystic, 369. Sear, 366. Schizomycetes, 406, 407.

(Gre)

Scrofula, 405. Septiceemia, 401. Skin in dermoid cyst, 372.

», of scar, 366. Species of disease, 403.

5 Simpson on, 406. Spinal cord, degenerations of, 392. Suppuration, 365, 400. Syphilis, 404. Tendon-repair, 364. Tetanus, 391. Thrombosis, 401. Thyroid, secondary tumours of, 385. Toxic diseases, 406. Tropical abscess,

396. Tubercle, 405. op bovine, 406. Tumour-infection, 402. Tumours, 367. Fe cavernous, 370.

A embryological principle in,

367.

“6 fibro-cellular, 368.

55 glandular, 379.

ae myeloid, 371.

a osteoid, 371. Typhoid, 403. Typhus fever, de novo origin of, 403. Uratic diathesis, 388.

Warts, 378.

PATIALA, one of the cis-Sutlej states, Punjab, India, lying between 29° 23’ 15” and 30° 54’ N. lat., and be- tween 74° 40’ 30” and 76° 59’ 15” E. long., has an area of 5887 square miles, and a population (1881) of 1,467,433. The estimated gross revenue is £471,624. The larger portion of the state is situated in the plain south of the Sutlej, while the other is hill country stretching up to Simla, which formerly belonged to Patidla. The usual cereals form the principal agricultural products. The ruling family are Sikhs of the Sidhu Jat tribe.

PATMOS (now pronounced by the natives Patino”), an island in the east of the AZgean Sea, one of the group of the Sporades, about 28 miles south-south-west of Samos. It lies in 37° 20’ N. lat and 26° 35’ E. long. Its greatest length from north to south is about 10 miles, its greatest breadth 6, its circumference, owing to the winding nature of the coast, about 37. The island, which is volcanic, is bare and rocky throughout; the hills, of which the highest rises to about 950 feet, command magnificent views of the neighbouring sea and islands. The woods which once covered the island have disappeared ; of the palms, from which it formerly received its Italian

name of Palmessa, not more than one is left. Some poor olive trees and a few specimens of the mulberry, the fig, the orange, the lemon, the carob, the cypress, the oak, and the pine here and there refresh by their verdure an eye wearied by the prospect of barren mountains, only relieved in places by scrubby bushes or clumps of thyme. The skill of the natives as seamen is proverbial in the archipelago. The deeply-indented coast, here falling in huge cliffs sheer into the sea, there retiring to form a beach and a harbour, is favourable to commerce, as in former times it was to piracy. Of the numerous bays and harbours the chief is that of La Scala, which, running far into the land on the eastern side, divides the island into two nearly equal portions, a northern and a southern. A narrow isthmus separates La Scala from the Bay of Merika on the west coast. On the belt of land between the two bays, at the junction between the northern and southern half of the island, stood the ancient town. To judge from its traces, it may have contained 12,000 to 13,000 inhabitants. On the hill above are still to be seen the massive remains of the citadel, built partly in the polygonal style known as Cyclopean. The modern town stands on a hill-top in the southern half of the island. A steep paved road leads to it in about twenty minutes from the port of La Scala. The town clusters at the foot of the monastery of St John, which, crowning the hill with its towers and battlements, resembles a fortress rather than a monastery. Of the 600 MSS. once possessed by the library of the monastery only 240 are left, badly preserved, and none of them of value. The houses of the town are better built than those of the neighbouring islands, but the streets are narrow and wind- ing. The population is about 4000. The port of La Scala contains about 140 houses, besides some old well- built magazines and some potteries. Scattered over the island are about 300 chapels.

Patmos is mentioncd first by Thucydides (iii. 83) and afterwards by Strabo and Pliny. From an inscription it has bcen inferred that the name was originally Patnos. There are some grounds for the conjecture that the island was first colonized by Carians. Another ancient inscription seems to show that the Ionians also settled there at an early date. The chief, indeed the only, title of the island to fame is that it was the place of banishment of St John the Evan- gelist, who according to Jerome (De Ser. Ill., c. 9) and others, was exiled thither under Domitian in 95 a.p., and released about eighteen months afterwards under Nerva. Here he is said to have written the

Apocalypse; to the left of the road from La Scala to the town, about half-way up the hill, a grotto is still shown (rd o7jAatov Tis “AmoxadvYews) in which the apostle is said to have received the heavenly vision. It is reached through a small chapel dedicated

toSt Anne. In the library of the monastery there is a Greek MS. containing a curious history of St John, purporting to be by Pro-

chorus, one of his disciples but apparently composed in the 4th century. It narratcs the miracles wrought by the apostle durin lis stay on the island, but, strangely enough, while describing how the Gospel was revealed to him in Patmos, it does not so much as mention the Apocalypse. During the Dark Ages Patmos seems to have been entirely deserted, probably on account of the pirates In 1088 the emperor Alexis Comnenus, by a golden bull, which is still preserved, granted the island to St Christodulus for the pur. pose of founding a monastery. This was the origin of the monastery of St John, which now owns the greater part of the southern half of Patmos, as well as farms in Crete, Samos, and other neighbouring islands. The embalmed body of the saintly founder is £6 be seen to this day in a side chapel of the church. The number of the monks, which amounted to over a hundred at the beginning of last century, is now much reduced. The abbot (7yovmevos) has the rank of a bishop, and is subject only to the patriarch of Constantinople. There is a school in connexion with the monastery which formerly enjoyed a high reputation in the Levant. The lay population was originally confined by St Christodulus to the northern part of the island, but at the beginning of the 18th century the people received permission to build their houses near the monastery for protection against the pirates. Hence arose the modern town, It was recruited by refugees from Constantinople in 1453, and from Crete in 1669, when these places fell into the hands of the Turks. The trade of the island seems to have been considerable. It was in intercourse with Genoa and Venice that the port received its modern name of La Scala ; its ancient name seems to have been Phora. The island is subject to Turkey ; the governor is the pasha of Rhodes. The ’ population is Greek. The women, who are handsome, are chicfly« engaged in knitting

cotton stockings, which, along with some pot- tery, form the chief exports of the island.

See Tournefort, Relation dun Voyage du Levant, Lyons, 1717; Walpole, Memoirs (relating to Turkey), London, 1820; Ross, Reisen auf den gricchischen

Inseln, Stuttgart and Halle, 1840-52; and especially Guérin, Description de UIle de Patmos, Paris, 1856.

PATNA, a district in the heutenant-governorship of Bengal, and in the division or commissionership of Patna, lying between 24° 58’ and 25° 42’ N. lat., and between 84° 44’ and 86° 5’ E. long., is bounded on the N. by the river Ganges, which separates it from Sdéran, Muzaffarpur, and Darbhangah, on the E. by Monghyr, on the 8. by Gay4, and on the W. by the Son, which separates it from Shahabéd. Patna district, with an area (1881) of 2079 square miles, is, throughout the greater part of its extent, a level plain; but towards the south the ground rises into hills. The soil is for the most part alluvial, and the country along the bank of the Ganges is peculiarly fertile. The general line of drainage is from west to east; and high ground along the south of the Ganges forces back the rivers flowing from the district of Gay&. The result is that, during the rains, nearly the whole interior of the district south of a line drawn parallel to the Ganges, and 4 or 5 miles from its bank, is flooded. There are no forests or jungles of any extent, but fine groups of trees are found in many places. In the south-east are the Rajagriha Hills, consisting of two parallel ridges running south-west, with a narrow valley between, intersected by ravines and passes. These hills, which seldom exceed 1000 feet in height, are rocky and clothed with thick low jungle, and contain some of the earliest memorials of Indian Buddh- ism. Hot springs are common on the Réjagrihd Hills. The chief rivers are the Ganges and the Son. The total length of the former along the boundary of Patna is 93 miles. The Son first touches the district near Mahibalipur village, and flows in a northerly direction for 41 miles, till it joins the Ganges. -The only other river of any con sequence is the Punpun, which is chiefly remarkable for the number of petty irrigation canals which it supplies. So much of the river is thus diverted that only a small portion of its water ever reaches the Ganges at Fatwa. Great changes have from time

to time taken place in the course of the Ganges, and the point at which the Son

1 The division of Patna lies between 24° 17’ 15” and 27° 29″ 45″ N. lat., and between 83° 23’ and 86° 46’ E. long., and comprises the districts of Patna, Gay4, Shahdbad, Darbhangah, Muzaffarpur, Saran, and Champaran. The area (1881) was 23,647 square miles, and the population 15,063,944, viz., Hindus 18,327,728, Mohammedans 1,730,098, Christians 5875, and “others” 248.

PA T—

joined this river was once several miles east of its present

osition. Large game is not abundant except on the Rajagriha Hills, where bears, wolves, and jackals are com- mon, and hyzenas are sometimes seen. Of smaller game, duck, quail, and ortolan are abundant, and partridges and wild geese are also found.

The census of 1881 returned the population at 1,756,856 persons (males 858,783, and females 898,073). Hindus numbered 1,541,061, Mohammedans 213,141, Christians 2588, and ‘‘others” 66. Of high-caste Hindus there are 47,041 Brahmans and 64,332 Rajputs. Ranking next to these two castes are the Babhans, a class who number 121,381 in Patna district, and whose origin is much dis- puted. They assert themselves to be Sarwaria Brahmans, but, although they are held in high respect, this rank is not generally accorded to them. Among the Sudras the most numerous are the Goalas or Ahirs, the great herdsman class, of whom there are 217,845; and the Kurmis, an agricultural caste, who number 194,222, Among the semi-Hinduized aboriginal tribes the Dosddhs, the or- dinary labouring class of Behar, number 99,976. The Wahabis form the most interesting section of the Mohammedan community. They are a numerous body, and include several wealthy traders, though the majority belong to the lower classes. The following towns in the district contained a population in 1881 exceeding 10,000—Patna city (170,654) ; Behar (48,968) ; Dinapur, including the cantonment (37,893); Barh (14,689); Khagaul (14,075) ; Mukama (13,052); Fatwa (10,919).

Rice, which forms the staple of the district, is divided into two great crops —the kartikd or early rice, sown in June or July and reaped in October or November ; and the aghdnt or winter rice, sown after the commencement of the rains and cut in November or December. The boro or spring rice is also cultivated to a limited extent, being sown in November or December and reaped in April or May. By far the most important of these is the aghdnt crop, of which forty-six varieties are named. Among the other principal crops are wheat and barley, Lhesdrt, gram, pease, cotton, tobacco, sugar-cane, a little indigo and mustard, several other oil-producing plants, and poppy. _ All the poppy grown in the province of Behar is manufactured at Patna city.

Patna is subject to blights, floods, and drought, but seldom to such an extent as to seriously interfere with the general harvest. There are abundant facilities for importations of grain in case of distress. The trade of the district centres in Patna city, which, next to Calcutta, is the largest river-mart in Bengal. The total length of district and provincial roads is 454 miles. The East Indian Railway tra- verses the entire length of the district for 86 miles. Several news- papers are published at Patna, the most important being the Behar Herald, published weekly and conducted by the native pleaders of the Patna bar.

Patna is one of the two places in British India where opium is manufactured. The poppy cultivated is exclusively the white variety (Papaver somniferum album), and the crop requires great attention, The amount of produce from various lands differs con- siderably. Under favourable circumstances of soil and season, the out-turn per acre may be as high as 41 Ib of standard opium (ie., containing 70 per cent. of pure opium and 30 per cent. of water), paid for by the Government at the rate of 5s. per Ib; but the aver- age is from 21 to 27 tb per acre. The opium is made up into cakes weighing about 4 tb, and containing about 3 tb of standard opium. These cakes are packed in chests (forty in each), and sent to Cal- cutta for exportation to China. The price which they fetch varies every year; the average rate per chest in 1880-81 was about £135 and the cost £89.

The net revenue of Patna in 1882-83 amounted to £278,550, of –

which £147,205 was derived from the land-tax. In 1874-75 there were, exclusive of the Patna college, 309 Government and aided schools with 9003 pupils ; by 1877-78 the number had risen to 816, and the pupils to 16,396. The Patna college was founded in 1862, and is the only institution for superior instruction in Behar ; the total number of pupils in 1881-82 was 166. The climate of Patna is considered remarkably healthy. The average annual rain- fall is 85°66 inches.

PATNA, chief city of the above district, is situated in 29° 37′ 15” N. lat. and 85° 12’ 31” E. long., on the right or south bank of the Ganges, and adjoining Bankipur, the civil station and administrative headquarters of the dis- trict. Its central position at the junction of three great Nvers, the Son, the Gandak, and the Ganges, where the trafic of the North-Western Provinces meets that of Bengal, Sives it great natural advantages. The city proper com- prises the large business quarters of Marufganj, Man- Strganj, the Kila or fort, the Chauk, with Mirchaiganj, Mahardjcanj,SAdikpur, Alabakhshpur, Gulzdrbagh, Colonel-

ganj, and other petty bazaars extending westwards as far as Bankipur civil station. According to the census of 1881 its population was 170,654 — Hindus 127,076, Mohammedans 43,086, “others” 492.

History.—Patna city has been identified with Pataliputra (the Palibothra of Megasthenes, who came as ambassador from Seleucus Nicator to Chandragupta about 300 B.c.). Megasthenes describes Palibothra as being the capital city of India. He adds that its length was 80 stadia, and breadth 15, that it was surrounded by a ditch 30 cubits deep, and that the walls were adorned with 570 towers and 64 gates. According to this account the circumference of the city would be 190 stadia or 254 miles. When Hwen T’sang visited the place in 687 a.D. the kingdom of Magadha was subject to the rule of Kanauj. The old city had then been deserted for a long time, and was in ruins, although a new Pataliputra had sprung u close to it. In the south-east of Patna district, in the Rajagriha Hills, are found some of the earliest remains of Indian Buddhism. During the early years of Mohammedan rule the governor of the province resided at Behar town in

the south-east of the district. During Sher Shah's revolt against the Mughals, Patna became the

| capital of an independent state, which was afterwards reduced to

subjection by Akbar. The two events in the modern history of the district are the massacre of Patna (1763) and the Sepoy Mutiny in 1857. The former occurrence, which may be said to have settled the fate of Mohammedan rule in Bengal, was the result of a quarrel between the nawab, Mir Kasim, and the English authorities re- garding transit duties, which ultimately led to open hostilities. The company's sepoys, wlio had occupied Patna city by the orders of the company's factor, were driven out by the nawab's troops and nearly all killed. The remainder afterwards surrendered, and were put into confinement, together with tlhe European officers and the entire staff of the Kasimbazar factory, who had also been arrested on the first outbreak of hostilitics. Mir Kasim was defeated in two pitched battles at Gheria and Udhanala (Oodeynullah) in August and September 1763, and in revenge ordered the massacre of the whole of his prisoners, which was carried out with the help of a Swiss renegade in his employment, named Walter Reinhardt (afterwards the husband of the famous Begam Samru). About sixty English prisoners were murdered on this occasion, the bodies being thrown into a well belonging to the house in which they were confined.

At the outbreak of the mutiny in May 1857 the three sepoy regiments stationed at Dinapur (the military cantonment of Patna, adjoining the city) were allowed to retain their arms till July, when, on an attempt being made to disarm them, they broke into open revolt, Although many who attempted to cross the Ganges in boats were fired into and run down by a pursuing steamer, the majority crossed by the Son river into Shahabad, where they joined the rebels under Kuar Sinh, who were then besieging a small European community at Arrah. —

PATNA, a native state in the Central Provinces of India, lying between 20° 5' and 21° N. lat., and between 82° 45' and 83° 40' E. long., has an estimated area of 2399 square miles, of which 550 are under cultivation, and other 950 are returned as cultivable. The country is an undulating plain, rugged and isolated, with ridges of hills crossing it here and there, and shut in on the north by a lofty irregular range. Rice forms the staple produce, but

pulses, oil-seeds, sugar-cane, and cotton are also grown, A vast forest extends for 30 miles around Patna village containing valuable large timber, but infested by tigers, leopards, and other wild animals. Iron ore exists in many parts of the state, but no mines are regularly worked. The only means of communication are a few bullock or pony tracks. The estimated population in 1881 was 957,959, nearly all of whom were Hindus. Patna was formerly the most important of the cluster of chiefships known as the Athéra Garhjdt (The Eighteen Forts), but under its later rulers it greatly declined. Since 1871, however, when it was taken under direct British manage- ment, it has gradually been regaining prosperity.

PATRAS, or Patra (Ital. Patrasso, Turkish Balia- badra), a fortified city of Greece, the principal port of the Morea, and the chief town of the nomos of Achaia and Elis, lies on the north coast of the Morea on the east side of the Gulf of Patras, which opens into the Gulf of Corinth by the Little Dardanelles, marked by forts Kastro Moreas and Kastro Rumelias. Since the War of Independence Patras has been one of the most prosperous cities in the

kingdom ; the quarters of the new town are well laid out; its old harbour being considered hardly safe in winter, a new harbour defended by a breakwater was commenced in 1880; new roads (to Kalavryta, for example) are opening up communication with the interior ; a railway to connect the city with Corinth and Athens is in process of con- struction (1884); and the proposed cutting of the canal across the isthmus of Corinth would add new elements to its commerce. The population, which had sunk to 8000 at the time of the war, was 16,641 in 1870, and 24,993 in 1879. Patras is the seat of one of the four courts of appeal in the kingdom, and the residence of the arch- bishop of Patras and Elis. The custom-house is the most important in all Greece. Like the ancient city, the modern Patras previous to the revolution occupied the high ground of Scatovuni (a hill connected with Mount Voidia or Pan- achaicum, the dominant summit in this region), but since then it has spread out over the plain towards the sea. The two most interesting buildings are the castle, a medieval structure on the site of the

ancient acropolis, and the cathedral of St Andrew, which is highly popular as the reputed burial-place of the saint, and has been rebuilt since the revolution. The commerce of Patras consists mainly in the export of currants, valonia, olive-oil, wine, and sheepskins (value in 1881, 19,369,270 francs, of which 18,104,046 francs were for currants alone), and the import of cotton and woollen goods, grain, flour, and colonial wares (value in 1881, 16,560,600 francs). Great Britain and Austria almost divide the foreign shipping trade, with a preponderance in favour of the former country, which takes more than half of the currants. August and September are the months when the port is at its busiest with British vessels. Famous even in antiquity for its flax manufactures (whence the number of females in the city was double that of the males), Patras at present contains several steam factories with about 4000 spindles producing coarse cotton twist from cotton grown in north- ern Greece; and there are also sulphur-crushing mills, flour and macaroni mills, and an iron-foundry. Gas-works and water-works were constructed about 1874.

The foundation of Patras goes back to prehistoric times, the legendary account being that Eumelus, having been taught by Triptolemus how to grow grain in the rich soil of the Glaucus valley, established three townships, Aroe (7.¢., plonghland), Antheia (the flowery), and Mesatis (the middle settlement), which were united by the common worship of Artemis Triclaria at her shrine on the river Meilichus. The Achaians having strengthened and enlarged Aroe called it Patra as the exclusive residence of the ruling families. In 419 zc. the town was, by the advice of Alcibiades, connected with its harbour by long walls in imitation of those at Athens. The whole armed foree of Patre was destroyed by Metellus after the defeat of the Achaians at Scarpheia, and many of the remain- ing inhabitants forsook the city ; but after the battle of Actium Augustus restored the ancient name Aroe, introduced a military colony of veterans from the 10th and 12th legions (not, as is usually said, the 22d), and bestowed the rights of coloni on the inhabitants of Rhype and Dyme, and all the Locri Ozole except those of Am- phissa. Colonia Augusta Aroe Patrensis became one of the most populous of all the towns of Grecce ; its colonial coinage extends from Augustus to Gordian III. That it was the seene of the martyrdom of St Andrew is purely apocryphal, but, like Corinth, it was an early and effective centre of Christianity ; its archbishop is mentioned in the lists of the council

of Sardica in 347. In 551 Patre was laid in ruins by an earthquake. In 807 it was able without external assistance to defeat the Slavonians (Avars), though most of the credit of the victory was assigned to St Andrew, whose church was enriched by the imperial share of the spoils, and whose archbishop was made superior of the bishops of Methone, Lacedemon, and Corone. Captured in 1205 by William of Champlitte and Ville- hardouin, the city became the capital and its archbishop the primate of the principality of Achaia. In 1587 De Heredia, grand- master of the order of the Hospital at Rhodes, endeavoured to make himself master of Achaia, and took Patras by storm. At the close of the 15th century the city was governed by the arch-bishop in name of the pope ; but in 1428 Constantine, son of John VI., managed to get possession of it for a time. Taken by a Spanish fleet under Andrea Doria in 1532, sacked by another

Spanish fleet in 1595, and again sacked by the knights of Malta in 1608, Patras was at length in 1687 surrendered by the Turks to the Venetians, who made it the seat of one of the seven fiscal boards into which they divided the Morea. Greek revolution began in 1821; but the Turks, confined to the

It was at Patras that the

citadel, held out till 1828, when the French troops took possession of the Morea.

See 0. I. L., vol. iii. 1; Bursian, Geogr. von Griechenland and Finlay’s Hist of Greece. ‘

PATRIARCH (zarpidpxys, lit. the head or ruler of a

watpid, tribe, family, or clan) occurs four times in the New Testament, being applied to Abraham, the twelve

sons of Jacob collectively, and David, and several times in the LXX., where the word is used to denote the officials called by the chronicler “princes of the tribes of Israel,” ‘‘ princes of hundreds,” ‘chiefs of the fathers.” Under the late Roman empire the title was officially applied down to the 5th

century to the chief rabbi in Palestine (see Cod. Theod., xvi. 8, 1; and comp. Israzt, vol. xiii. p. 428); the head of the synagogue at Babylon appears also to have been known as patriarch until 1038. The title at an early date passed over into the Christian church as an honorific though not official designation of all bishops ; thus Gregory of Nyssa (Or. Fun. in Mel.) alludes to the fathers assembled in council at Constantinople as “these patriarchs.” After- wards the Easterns showed a tendency to limit the appella- tion to the occupants of the more important sees, just as in the West the so-called ‘“ metropolitans” began to receive more definite recognition. At the present day the heads of the various extant churches and sects in the East are very commonly called patriarchs (see vol. xi. p. 154 sq.), and in the West the Roman Church gives the honorary title to several dignitaries, such as the archbishops of Lisbon and Venice. In a strictly technical sense, how- ever, that church recognizes only five patriarchates, those of Constantinople, Alexandria, Jerusalem, Antioch, and Rome. This peculiar restriction of the word, which may be said to date from the council of Chalcedon in 401, can be traced downwards from the time of Constantine, when the altered political circumstances and the civil division of the empire into four prefectures (Orientis, Illyrici Orientalis, Italie, Galliarum), each containing a number of “dioceses,” gave a new importance to ques- tions of ecclesiastical jurisdiction. Thus the council of Nice (can. 6) adjusted the jurisdiction of the “bishop .

of Alexandria so as to include Libya and Pentapolis as well as Egypt, the ancient rights of Rome, Antioch, and the other “eparchies” being at the same time con- served. The third canon of the council of Constantinople assigned precedence to the “bishop” of Constantinople immediately after the “bishop” of Rome; and by the 28th of Chalcedon the ‘ metropolitans” of Thrace, Pontus, and Asia were appointed to receive their consecration at his hands. The same council invested the bishop of Jerusalem, formerly under the jurisdiction of the metro politan of Antioch, with supremacy over the whole of Palestine. Thenceforward a certain co-ordinate primacy Was thus accorded to Rome, Constantinople, Antioch, Alexandria, and Jerusalem ; but it is to be observed that in no official document belonging to this period is the title “patriarch” given to the bishop of any one of these sees, though the word “eparch” or ‘“exarch” is occasionally employed. We find Theodosius, however, so designating the bishop of Rome, and not only is it

given to the bishop of Com stantinople in the Wovelle of Justinian, but we find Mennas in 536 claiming to be called 6 oixovpevexds TAT pUpX7Ss not, of course, without violent protest in the West. After the fall of Jerusalem (637), Antioch (638), and Alexandria (640) into the hands of the Saracens, the importance of these sees became of course nominal merely, and it grew easier for Rome, at the head of the unbroken Western church, to give practical expression to its claims of supet

ority over its sole surviving Eastern rival. Finding it difficult, however, to avoid the appearance of equality that was involved in the name of " patriarch," now convention- ally bestowed on the occupants of other ancient and apostolic sees, the bishops of Rome rather avoided the title, preferring the more colourless designation of papa or pope (see PoP).

PATRICIAN. The history; in the Roman state, of the hereditary patrician order (patricit, patres, house-fathers, goodmen) who originally constituted the entire populus Romanus has been traced in the article Nopitity (vol. xvii. pp. 525-6). With the transference of the imperial capital to Byzantium under Constantine, the title patricius became a personal and not an hereditary distinction ; the name was held to denote a fatherly relation to the emperor, and those who bore it stood first among the VII. The title was abolished by Pope Eugenius III. in 1145.

PATRICK, Sr. In one of the incursions of the Scots and Picts upon the neighbouring Roman province south of the wall of Severus, probably that of 411 a.p., the year after Honorius had refused aid to the Britons, a youth of about fifteen was carried off with many others from the district in the neighbourhood of the wall at the head of the Solway, and sold asa slave on the opposite coast of Ireland in the territory of the Irish Picts called Dal Araide.1 This youth was the future apostle of the Irish. As his name implies, he was of noble birth, and he tells us so himself. He was the son of the deacon Calpurnius, who was the son of Potitus, a priest. His father was a decurio or magistrate, and, as Patrick according to tradi- tion was born at Nemthur,? he must have exercised his functions of magistrate at that place, but on the with- drawal of the Roman garrisons from Britain probably

1 The province of Valentia, reorganized by Theodosius I., was com- prised between the wall of Antoninus, which extended from the Clyde tothe Firth of Forth, and the wall of Severus, which extended from the Solway to Tynemouth. Although the destruction of the pagan temples was decreed in 381, and the pagan religion prohibited in 390, that is, a few years after the restoration of Roman power in Britain and the reorganization of this province by Theodosius, the greater part of the Romanized population of Britain seems to have been pagan at the end of the 4th century, and especially in Valentia, where Patrick Was born about 396. Amidst the many evidences of Roman occupa- tion that have been found there not a relic of Roman Christianity has, so far as we know, been yet discovered. In the south-west part of Valentia, along the north shore of the Solway Firth from the Nith to the Irish Channel, Ptolemy placed the tribe of the Novante, its principal dun or oppidum being on the west side of Wigtown Bay, and called by him Leukopibia, a name still preserved in Whithorn. During the great displacements of tribes consequent upon the Roman conquests and the inroads of the Scots and Picts, the British Novante disappear, and in their place we find at the end of the 4th century Goidelic Cruithni or Picts. Their position in the midst of a British population, pee their contiguity to the part of Ulster occupied by the Irish

Tuithni or Picts, clearly indicate that the Picts of Galloway were part of the Ulidian or Irish Picts pressed out of Iveland by the intru- i of the Scots. This settlement of the Irish Picts in Galloway

orded an excellent vantage-ground for such attacks as that spoken oD the text. & There can be no doubt that Nemthur was situated at the Clyde

nd of the wall of Antoninus, where Dumbarton now is. It is called

Nevtur in the Old Welsh MS. known as the ‘‘ Black Book of Car-Marthen,”?

retired for safety south of the wall of Severus, where, as Patrick tells us, he had a small country place (villula) near the town (vicus) of Bannavem Taberniz, whence Patrick was carried off. The country along the south of the wall, especially near the Solway, was a region of camps or military posts to which the designation Tabernia would be appropriate. Bannavem

seems to be a Romanized form of a British name signifying “river foot,” and most probably was the Banna of the Chorography of Ravenas, and of the inscription on an altar said to have been found at Birdoswald (the Romano-British Amboglanna), and now at Lanercost Priory. The name also occurs on the well- known bronze cup found about two hundred years ago at Rudge in Wiltshire, which dates from about 350. Banna must have been near Petriana, the former being probably the vicus or town, and the latter the military station proper. Towards the end of the 4th century, before the withdrawal of the Roman garrisons, there were along the wall 10,300 foot and 1500 horse according to the Wotitia Imperit, so that Bannavem Taberniz, or Bannavem of the military posts or encampments, was descriptive of the district, and the office of decurio in such a place one of considerable dignity.

The youth Succat or Patrick remained in hard slavery

for six years, tending cattle, probably on Slemish Mountain

in the county Antrim. He seems to have been of an enthusiastic temperament, and much given to prayer and meditation. Learning of a means of escape, it so filled his mind as to give rise to visions. The bays and creeks of the west and north-west of Ireland, especially Killala Bay, were much frequented in ancient times, for they afforded secure retreats to sea-rovers when they crept round the coast of Ireland and swooped down on that of Roman Britain. Ptolemy’s town of Nagnata was probably on the bay just named; it is celebrated in the stories of Foniorians, Norsemen, and other sea-rovers. The kindred of the Ard Ri or paramount king of Ireland of the time, Dathi or rather Athi, one of the greatest leaders among the invading Scots, dwelt there; it was consequently a place which offered facilities for going to Britain, and from that place most probably Patrick succeeded in escaping. After his escape he appears to have conceived the noble idea of devoting himself to the conversion of the Irish, and to have gone somewhere for a few years to prepare himself for the priesthood. His biographers take him to Tours to St Martin, who was then dead several years, afterwards to the island of Lerins in the Mediterranean, and lastly to Rome, where he received a mission from Pope Celestine. For all this there is no evidence whatever, the whole story being the result of the confusion of

Palladius with the real Patrick. The tradition of some connexion between the Irish apostle and St Martin of Tours, the monastic type of the earliest Irish Church, the doubts as to Patrick's fitness for the work which led to his writing his Confession, and indeed all the difficulties that beset the question of the origin of the Irish Church, receive a simple and satisfactory explanation upon the hypothesis of Patrick having pre- pared himself for the priesthood at Candida Casa, the monastic institution founded by St Nuvian (¢7.2.).

Patrick tells us that after a few years (2.e., after his escape) he was among the Britons with his kindred, who received him as a son. He was evidently bent upon his mission, for they besought him after such tribulations not to part from them again. Full of it, he dreams that a man whose name was Victoricus came to him bearing innumerable epistles, one of 'which he received and read ; the beginning of it contained the words, "The voice of the Irish"; whilst repeating these words he says, "I imagined that I heard in my mind (in mente) the voice of those who were near the wood of Fochlad, which is near

A412

the western sea, and thus they cried: We pray thee, holy youth, to come and henceforward walk amongst us." The wood here referred to, which was in the neighbourhood of Killala Bay, was most probably the place where he remained concealed when waiting for a boat to make his escape from slavery. This dream was followed by others, which shows how completely his mission occupied his mind, Patrick was about twenty-two years of age when he escaped from slavery, and, if we allow seven or eight years for the "few ycars'" preparation, he probably was not more than thirty years of age when he entered on his mission about 425. There is a passage in his Confesscon which shows that he was still a young man when he commenced his work: "You know and God knows how I have lived among you from my youth up." Probus, the author of the fifth life published by Colgan, who has many claims upon our confidence, supports this view that Patrick began his mission while still a priest. We see in Patrick's own authentic acts that he must have sought among his friends in Britain to be made a bishop, for he complains in his Confession that a friend to whom he

had communicated some fault he had committed when about fifteen years old had urged this thirty years after as a reason against his being consecrated to the higher office. This proves that he was only about forty-five years old when made bishop. If we assume that 411 was the year he was carried off as a slave, his consecration as bishop would fall in about 441, the fifteenth year of his mission, a date which corresponds with the results of Dr Todd's speculations based on a close analysis of all available chronological data. Compare in general on the conversion of Ireland what has been said in vol. xiil. p. 247 sq.

The date of St Patrick's death is as uncertain as that of every other event connected with him. The Annals of the Four Masters give 493, with which Ussher agrees ; Tirechan's Annotations, on the other hand, state that Loegaire, son of Niall, king of Ireland, lived from two to five years after St Patrick. According to this account the death of St Patrick took place in 469, and that of Loegaire in 471 or 474, after a reign of thirty-six years, so that Loegaire's reign began either in 435 or 438. The Annals of the Four Masters record the death in 457 of Senn Patraice, or Old Patrick, and of Loegaire in the following year, 458. The Patrick who died in 493 is a fiction due to the fusion of the acts of the two real Patricks, Palladius Patrick and Senn Patraicc, doubtless so called because he was the Patrick known as a priest before the arrival of the Roman bishop. Assuming Tirechan's statement as correct, and that St Patrick died in 469, his mission as priest and bishop lasted about forty-four years.

The materials for a life of the apostle of Ireland arc very scanty ; they consist indced of only two Latin pieces—one the so-called Confession and the other an Epistle about a certain Coroticus. Some persons, apparently in Britain or Gaul, scem to have accused Patrick of presumption in having undertaken so great a work as the Christianizing of Ireland, and of incapacity for the task; the Confession is a defence of himsclf against these charges, and is a kind of autobiographical sketch. 'The Epistle is a denunciation of a British chief called Coroticus, supposed to be Caredig or Ceredig, son of Cynedda, conqueror of North Wales, who had ravaged the coast of Ireland, killed a number of Christian neophytes on the very day of their baptism while still clad in white garments, carried off others into slavery, and scoffed at a deputation of clergy Patrick had sent to ask their

release. There is a copy of the Confession in the MS. called the ‘‘ Book of Armagh,” written about the year 807, and apparently made from Patrick’s autograph, which the scribe several times complains of being then obscure. There are copies in other MSS. which contain nearly as much additional matter not in the “ Book of Armagh” as would, if put together, be nearly equal to the text of the MS. just named. Are these additions part of the original work of Patrick omitted by the scribe because they were illegible, or for some other reason, or are they interpolations ?

Judging by many examples in other Irish MSS., the former appears to be the better interpretation, for they are written in the same

rude and archaic style, exhibit the same peculiarity of grammatical] construction somewhat like Irish, and are not inconsistent with the rest. He modestly tells us himself that he is unlearned (indoctus) and very rustic (rusticissimus). The Hpistle is not in the ‘Book of Armagh,” but both pieccs possess all the characteristics of the time and place, and may be regarded as genuine documents, and have been so regarded by nearly all scholars who have written on the subject.

There are also several old lives of the saint, seven of which haye been published by Colgan in his 7’rias Thawmaturga, the last of which, known as the Tripartite life, is the most copious. These lives are based upon the two gennine documents above mentioned and are a tissue of legends and miracles, and, though no doubt containing a few genuine traditions, are only of value for manners and customs, and even for this purpose require much care in their. use.

The place, time, and circumstances of Patrick’s labours have largely contributed to the obscurity which surrounds him. His very name has helped to increase it. Vatricius, like Augustus, seems to have been commonly used, cven down to the 7th century, in the sense of nobleman or gentleman; thus Dynamius, who lived in the beginning of the century just referred to, is described as ‘Vir illustris ac patricius Galliarum.” [atrick’s real name, according to tradition, was Succat, but in his own writings he calls himself Patrick, There was, however, another Patrick who under the name of Palladius was unquestionably sent as bishop to Ireland by Pope Celestine in the year 431, that is, the year before the other Patrick commenced his mission according to the generally received accounts. Irish writers also mention a third Patrick, Senn Patraicc, or Old Patrick, the head of St Patrick’s community (caput sapientum seniorum ejus) according to one account, and his tutor according to another. The three Patricks have sorely puzzled hagiologists, and created so much confusion and conjecture in the history of the early church that some have doubted the existence of

such a personage as St Patrick at all. The absence of any con- temporary reference to him, or of any mention of him by Colum- banus, Bede, and indeed with very few exceptions by any writers outside of Ircland before the 9th ceutury, adds very much to the uncertainty and obscurity of the subject. (W. K. §.)

PATRICK, St, ORDER or. See KnicurTHoop, vol. xiv. pp. 123-24.

PATRICK, Stmon (1626-1707), bishop of Chichester, and afterwards of Ely, author of a number of works in practical divinity, was born at Gainsborough, Lincolnshire, on 8th September 1626, entered Queens' College, Cam- bridge, in 1644, and, after taking orders in 1651, became successively chaplain to Sir Walter St John, and vicar of Battersea, Surrey. He was afterwards (1662) preferred to the rectory of St Paul's, Covent Garden, London, where he continued to labour during the year of the plague. Dean of Peterborough from 1678, he became bishop of Chichester in 1689, in which year he was employed, along with others of the new bishops, to settle the affairs of the church in Ireland. In 1691 he received the bishop- ric of Ely, which he held until his death, 31st May 1707.

His sermons and devotional writings, which are very numerous, were held in high estimation in last century, and_his edifying Commentary on the Historical and Poetical Books of the Old Testa ment, in 10 vols., brought down as far as to the Song of Solomon, has been reprinted comparatively recently (1853). His Friendly Debate between a Conformist and a Nonconfornust was a contro- versial tract which excited considcrable feeling at the time of its publication in 1668, but he lived long enough to soothe by his moderation and candour the exasperation it had caused. The first collected edition of his works appeared at Oxford in 1859 (9 vals., 8vo); a small Autobiography was published also at Oxford in 1889.

PATRON anp CLIENT. Clientage appears to have been an institution of most of the Greeco-Italian peoples in early stages of their history; but it is in Rome that we can most easily trace its origin, progress, and decay. Until the reforms of Servius Tullius, the only citizens proper were the members of the patrician or gentile houses; they alone could participate in the solemnities of the national religion, take part in the government and defence of the state, contract quiritarian marriage, hold property, and enjoy the

protection of the laws. But alongside of them was a gradually increasing non-citizen population conl- posed of slaves and clients. Some historians class amongst the latter, as clients of the state, those vanquished com-

das

munities which, having made an unconditional submission, were allowed to retain a quasi-corporate existence under the protection of Rome. But the name (derived from cluere, «Avev, to obey) was common before Rome had made any conquests, and was usually applied to indi- viduals who had attached themselves in a condition of dependence to the heads of patrician houses as their patrons, in order thereby to secure a de facto freedom. The relationship was ordinarily created by what, from the client's point of view, was called adplicatio ad patronum, from that of the patron, swsceptio clientis,—the client being either a person who had come to Rome as an exile, who had passed through the asylum, or who had belonged to a state which Rome had overthrown. According to Diony- sius and Plutarch, it was one of the early cares of Romulus to regulate the relationship, which, by their account of it, was esteemed a very intimate one, imposing upon the patron duties only less sacred than those he owed to his children and his ward, more urgent than any he could be called upon to perform towards his kinsmen, and whose neglect entailed the penalty of death (Zellumons sacer esto). He was bound to provide his client with the necessaries of life; and it was a common practice to make him a grant during pleasure of a small plot of land to cultivate on his own account. Further, he had to advise him in all his affairs; to represent him in any transactions with third parties in which, as a non-citizen, he could not. act with effect; and, above all things, to stand by him, or rather be his substitute, in any litigation in which he might be- come involved. The client in return had not only gener- ally to render his patron the respect and obedience due by a dependant, but, when he was in a position to do so and the circumstances of the patron required it, to render him pecuniary assistance. As time advanced and clients amassed wealth, we find this duty insisted upon in a great variety of forms, as in contributions towards the dowries of a patron's daughters, towards the ransom of a patron or any of his family who had been taken captive, towards the payment of penalties or fines imposed upon a patron, even towards his maintenance when he had become reduced to poverty. Neither might give evidence

against the other, —a rule we find still in observance well on in the 7th century of the city, when C. Herennius declined to be a witness against C. Marius on the ground that the family of the latter had for generations been clients of the Herennii (Plut., Mar. 5). The client was regarded as a mninor member (gentzlicius) of his patron's gens; he was entitled to assist in its religious services, and bound to contribute to the cost of them; he had to follow his patron to battle on the order of the gens; he was subject to its jurisdiction and discipline, and was entitled to burial in its common sepulchre. And this was the condition, not only of the client who personally had attached himself to a patron, but that also of his descendants ; the patronage and the clientage were alike hereditary. In much the same position as the clients, in the earlier centuries of Rome at least, were the freedmen ; for originally a slave did not on enfranchisement become a citizen; it was a de facto freedom merely that he enjoyed ; his old owner was always called his patron, while he and his descendants were sub- stantially in the position of clients, and often so designated. In the two hundred years that clapsed before the Servian constitutional reforms, the numerical strength of the clients, Whether in that condition by adplicatio, enfranchise- Ment, or descent, must have become considerable ; and 1 was from time to time augmented by the retainers of distinguished immigrants admitted into the ranks of

€ patriciate. That all these, concurrently with the un- attached plebeians, must have been admitted by Servius to nominal citizenship can hardly be doubted. They

RON A13

probably were included in the four urban tribes; but, being incapable as yet of owning land, they could have no admission to the higher centuries, paid no census- tribute, were not qualified to serve in the legion, and most likely ranked no higher than accensi. With the institution of the assemblies of the plebeians of the tribes they must, thanks to their numbers, have gained in influence politic- ally. But it was only with the enactment of the XII. Tables that their relations to their patrons were sensibly affected. For, while that code still denied them, in common with the plebeians generally, the right of intermarriage with the patrician families, it conferred upon them most of the

other private rights of citizens; in particular, it entitled them to hold and acquire property, to enter into contracts on their own responsibility, and to litigate in person on their own behalf. The relation of patron and client, it is true, still remained; the patron could still exact from his client respect, obedience, and service, and he and his gens had still an eventual right of succession to a deceased client's estate. But the fiduciary duties of the patron were greatly relaxed, and practically little more was expected of him than that he should continue to give his client his advice, and prevent him falling into a con- dition of indigence ; sacer esto ceased to be the penalty of protection denied or withheld, its application being limited to fraus facta, which, in the language of the Tables, meant positive injury inflicted or damage done. So matters re- mained during the 4th and 5th centuries. In the 6th a variety of events, social and political, contributed still further to modify the relationship. The rapacity of patrons was checked by the Cincian law, which prohibited their taking actual gifts of money from their clients ; marriages between patron and client gradually ceased to be regarded as unlawful, or as ineffectual to secure to the issue the status of the patron father; political changes opened to the clients the rural tribes and the higher centuries, and qualified them for the legion, the magistracy, and the senate ; hereditary clientage ceased when a client attained to a curule dignity ; and, in the case of the descendants of freedmen enfranchised in solemn form, it came to be limited to the first generation. Gradually but steadily one feature after another of the old institution disappeared, till by the end of the 7th century it had resolved itself into the limited relationship between patron and freedman on the one hand, and the unlimited honorary relationship between the patron who gave gratuitous advice on questions of law and those who came to consult him on the other. To have a large follow- ing of clients of this class was a matter of ambition to every man of mark in the end of the republic ; it increased his importance, and ensured him a band of zealous agents in his political schemes. But amid the rivalries of parties and with the venality of the lower orders, baser methods had to be resorted to in order to maintain a patron's influ. – ence; the favour and support of his clients had to be purchased with something more substantial than mere advice, And so arose that wretched and degrading client- age of the early empire, of which Martial, who was not ashamed to confess himself a first-rate specimen of the breed, has given us such graphic descriptions ; gatherings of miserable idlers, sycophants, and spendthrifts,

at the levees and public appearances of those whom, in their fawn- ing servility, they addressed as lords and masters, but whom they abused behind their backs as close-fisted upstarts,— and all for the sake of the sportula, the daily dole of a dinner, or of a few pence wherewith to procure one. With the middle empire this disappeared ; and, when a reference to patron and client occurs in later times, it is in the sense of counsel and client, the words patron and advocate being used almost synonymously. It was not so in the days of the great forensic orators. The word advocate, it is said,

A414

occurs only once in the singular in the pages of Cicero ; and by advocati was generally understood at that time the body of friends who stood by a litigant in a great cause to give him in any shape their countenance and support. The orator who then appeared in the comitia or before a judge was almost invariably called patron, though the name of client was not so commonly given to the litigant he represented. But ata later period, when the bar had become a profession, and the qualifications, admission, numbers, and fees of counsel had become a matter of state regulation, advocati was the word usually employed to designate the pleaders as a class of professional men, each individual advocate, however, being still spoken of as patron in reference to the litigant with whose interest he was entrusted. It is in this hmited connexion that patron and client come under our notice in the latest monuments of Roman law. .

Literature. —On the clientage of early Rome, see Mommsen, ‘‘ Die Roémische Clientel,” Rom. Forschungen, vol. i. p. 355 (Berlin, 1864) ; Voigt, ‘‘ Ueber die Clientel und Libertinitat,” in Ber. d. phil. histor. Classe d. Kénigl. Sachs. Gescllsch. d. Wissenschaften (1878, pp. 147- 219); Marquardt, Privatleben d. Romer, pp. 196-200 (Leipsic, 1879); Voigt, Die XII. Tafeln, vol. ii. pp. 667-679 (Leipsic, 1883). Earlier literature is noted in Willems, Le Droit Public Romain, 4th ed., p. 26 (Louvain, 1880). On the clientage of the early empire, see Becker, Gallus, vol. ii, Excursus 4; Friedlander, Sztten- Gesehichte Roms, vol. i. pp. 207-219 (Leipsic, 1862) ; Marquardt, op. cit., pp. 200-208. On the latest clientage, see Grellet-Dumazeau, Le Barreau Romain (Paris, 1851). (a, ai)

PATTESON, Jon CoLeripGE (1827-1871), bishop of Melanesia, was the eldest son of Justice Patteson and Frances Duke Coleridge, a near relation of Samuel Taylor Coleridge, and was born in Gower Street, Bedford Square, 2d April 1827. He was educated at Ottery St Mary, and at Eton, where he greatly distinguished himself on the cricket-field. He entered Balliol College, Oxford, in 1845, and graduated B.A. in 1848. After spending some time on the Continent in the capacity of tutor, he in 1852 became a fellow of Merton College. In 1853 he became curate of Alfington, Devon, and in the following year he was ordained priest and joined the mission to the Mela- nesian islands in the South Pacific. There he laboured with great success, visiting the different islands of the group in the mission ship the “Southern Cross,” and by

is due to its climate, which makes it a great winter health- resort. The most striking characteristic is the stillness of the air, resulting from the peculiarly sheltered situation, The town is built on a sandy soil, and the line of the streets running east and west is favourable to ventilation, The average rainfall is about 40 inches, and the mean winter temperature is 44°, the mean for the year being 62°.

Apart from an export flour-trade and some manufactures of chocolate and Béarn linen, the inhabitants of Pau depend entirely on their four thousand winter-visitors. Place Royale (in the centre of which, instead of the older statue of Louis XIV., now stands Raggi’s statue of Henry IV., with bas-reliefs by Etex) is admired for the view which it affords over the valley of the Gave and the Pyrenees; it is con- nected by a fine boulevard with the castle gardens. Be yond the castle a park of thirty acres planted with beech trees stretches along the high bank of the Gave. The castle is bounded on the north and west by the Hédas, on the south by a canal drawn from the Gave, and on the east by a moat 30 feet deep; access is obtained by three bridges, that across the Hédas being of ancient construction. The castle is flanked by six square towers: south-east is that of Gaston Phcebus (113 feet high) ; north-east is the tower of Montauset or Montoiseau, so called because reached by removable ladders; east, the new tower; north-west, that

of Billéres ; and on the west are those of Mazéres. Another to the south is named after the mint in which Calvin used to preach.

In the gardens to the west of the castle stand a statue of Gaston Phcebus by Triquety and two porphyry vases presented by Bernadotte king of Sweden, who was born at Pau. In the castle court is a well 223 feet deep, with 100 feet of water; but it has been closed since 1855 On the ground-floor is the old hall of the estates of Béarn, 85 feet long and 36 feet wide, adorned with a white marble statue of Henry IV., and magnificent Flemish tapestries ordered by Francis I. Several of the upper chambers are adorned with Flemish, Brussels, or Gobelin tapestry, with tables in Swedish porphyry, Sévres vases, fine coffers (notably a Gothic coffer from Jerusalem), arm-chairs of the 16th century, Venetian and St Gobain glass, &e. ; but the

his good sense and unselfish devotion winning Gres the esteem and affection of the natives. In 1861 he was consecrated bishop of Melanesia, and in this capacity did much to promote the Christianization of the islands until his premature death by the hand of a native, 20th September 1871. .

See Life by Charlotte M. Yonge, which first ap- peared in 1878, and has gone through several editions.

PAU, a city of France, formerly the capital of Béarn, and now the chief town of the de- partment of Basses Pyrénées, and the seat |& of a court of appeal, is situated in 48° 17’ Sa See N. lat. and 0° 23’ W. long., on the edge of BSS a plateau 130 feet above the right bank of < the Gave de Pau (a left-hand affluent of the Ss Adour), at a height of about 620 feet above the sea. It thus enjoys an admirable view of the Pyrenees, which rise about 25 miles to the south. A small stream, the Hédas, 2 flowing in a deep ravine and crossed by several bridges, divides the city into two parts. The older and larger is enclosed between the Hédas, the Gave, and its other tributary the Ousse, and ends with the castle in the west, while the new districts stretch northward in the direction of the Jandes of Pont-long. The modern importance of Pau

S

Plan of Pau.

most interesting room is that in which Henry TV. was born, still containing his mother's bed (from the castle of

Richelieu) and his own cradle made of a tortoise-shell. In the keep is a library of 6000 volumes, mainly of works relating to Henry IV. The two Gothic churches of St Jacques and St Martin are both modern ; but the latter is of note for the height and elegance of its tower, its stained lass, and the fine Pyrenean marbles used in- the high altar, the baldachin, and the sanctuary. Besides the state Protestant church (Kglisc Francaise Réformée) there are Presbyterian, Anglican, and Russian places of worship. The population of Pau (about 6000 at the close of the 18th century) was 27,300 in 1871, and 29:971 im 1881. Pau derives its name from the "' pale" (in Langue d'Oc " pati") or salisade surrounding the old eastle mentioned in the fors of Ossau

in 1221. By the erection (1363) of the present castle Gaston Phoebus made the town a place of importance, but the viscounts

" CYAUL, who is also (called) Paul," was a "Hebrew

of the Hebrews," z.¢, of pure Jewish descent unmixed with Gentile blood, of the tribe of Benjamin (Rom. xi. 1; 2 Cor. xi, 22; Phil. iu. 5). In the Acts of the Apostles it is stated that he was born at Tarsus in Cilicia (ix. 11, xxi. 39, xxii. 3); but in the 4th, century there still lingered a tradition that his birthplace was Giscala, the last of the fortress-towns of Galilee which held out against Rome (Jerome, De vir, illustr. c. 5; Ad Philem. v. 23). The fact that he was called by two names has been accounted for in various ways. Saul (the Aramaic form, used only as a vocative, and in the narratives of his conversion, Acts ix. 4, 17, xxii. 7, 13, xxvi. 14; else- where the Hellenized form, ZatAos) was a natural name for a Benjamite to give to his son, in memory of the first of Jewish kings ; Paul is more difficult of explanation. It is first found in the narrative of the conversion of Sergius Paulus, the proconsul of Cyprus (Acts xiii. 9), and it has sometimes been supposed either that Paul himself adopted the name in compliment to his first Gentile convert of distinction (Jerome, Olshausen, Meyer, Ewald), or that the writer of the Acts intended to imply that it was so adopted (Baur, Zeller, Hausrath). Others have thought that it was assumed by Paul himself after the beginning of his ministry, and that it is derived from the Latin paulus in

the sense either of “least among the apostles” (St Augustine) or “little of stature” (Mangold, with reference to 2 Cor. x. 10; Gal. iv. 13). But these and many similar conjectures may probably be set aside in favour of the supposition that he had a double name from the first, one Aramaic or Hebrew and the other Latin or Greek, like Simon Peter, John Mark, Simeon Niger, Joseph Justus; this supposition is confirmed by the fact that Paul was not an uncommon name in Syria and the eastern parts of Asia Minor (instances will be found in the Index Nominum to Boeckh’s Corp. Inscr. Grec.). Whatever be its origin, Paul is the only name which he himself uses of himself, or which is used of him by others when once he had entered into the Roman world outside Palestine. The Acts speak of his having been a Roman citizen by birth (xxii, 28; cf. xvi. 17, xxiii. 27), a statement which also has given rise to several conjectures, because there is no clue to the ground upon which his claim to citizenship was based. Some modern writers question the fact, consider-

of Béarn eontinued to reside at Orthez till the reign of Gaston XI, when the states of Béarn were united at Pau. Gaston’s grand- son and suceessor Franeis Phoebus, beeame king of Navarre in 1479. Margaret of Valois, who married Henry d’Albret, embellished the castle and gardens, and made her eourt one of the most brilliant of the time. In the religious disturbances under her daughter, Jeanne d’Albret, several Catholic nobles were put to death in the eastle as rebels. In 1572, while a prisoner, Henry (afterwards IV. of France) restored the Catholic religion in Béarn, but the provineial estates met at Pau and rejeeted the decree, whieh Henry himself eancelled when he obtained his freedom. Pau eontinued to be the capital till 1620, though in 1614 the states of Franee demanded the union of Béarn and Basse Navarre with the Freneh erown. When Louis XIII. entered the town in 1620 he restored the Cathohie elergy to their privileges and possessions, disbanded the forees of Béarn, and eaused the parliament of Pau to register the edict of union. The castle was occupied by Abd-el-Kader during part of his captivity.

Pe Web

great seat of learning, is a possible inference from his use of some of the technical terms which were current in the Greek schools of rhetoric and philosophy ; but, since the cultivation of a correct grammatical and rhetorical style was one of the chief studies of those schools, Paul's imperfect command of Greek syntax seems to show that this education did not go very far. That he received the main part of his education from Jewish sources is not only probable from the fact that his family were Pharisees, but certain from the whole tone and character of his writings. According to the Acts, his teacher was Gamaliel, who as the grandson of Hillel took a natural place as the head of the moderate school of Jewish theologians; nor, in spite of the objection that the fanaticism of the disciple was at variance with the moderation of the master, does the statement seem in itself improbable. A more important difficulty in the way of accepting the statement that Jeru- salem was the place of his education is the fact that in that case his education must have been going on at the time of the preaching and death of Jesus Christ. That he had not seen Jesus Christ during His ministry seems to be clear, for a comparison of 1 Cor. ix. 1 with xv. 8 appears to limit his sight of Christ to that which he had at his conversion, and the "knowing Christ after the flesh" of 2 Cor. v. 16 is used not of personal acquaintance but of "carnal" as opposed to "spiritual" understanding ; nor does the difficulty seem to be altogether adequately ex- plained away by the hypothesis which some writers (¢.9., Neander, Wieseler, Beyschlag) have adopted, that he was

/temporarily absent from Jerusalem at the times when

Jesus Christ was there. Like all Jewish boys, he learnt a trade, that of tent-making ; this was a natural employment for one of Cilician origin, since the hair of the Cilician goat was used to make a canvas (cilicia) which was specially adapted for the tents used by travellers on the great routes of commerce or by soldiers on their campaigns (cf. Philo, De anim. sacrif. idon., i, vol. ii. p. 288, ed. Mang.) Whether he was married or not is a question which has been disputed from very early times; his expressions in 1 Cor. vii. 8, ix. 5, were taken by Tertullian to imply that he was not, and by Clement of Alexandria and Origen to imply that he had once been, but that he had become a widower.

The beginning of his active life was doubtless like its

maturity; it was charged with emotion. He himself gives and

; ree s ; g outer life a graphic sketch of its inner history. His conversion to . phan.

Christianity was not the first great change that he had ccc,

ing the statement to be part of the general colouring which the writer of the Acts is supposed to give to his narrative ; amd some also question the fact, which is generally con-

ce sidered. to support it, of the appeal to the emperor. That | undergone. “I was alive without the law once” (Rom. ‘he received part of his education at Tarsus, which was a | Vil. 9), He had lived in his youth a pure and guileless MER casian Bhionite Gander tant he life. He had felt that which is at once the charm and the

- It was an Ebionite slander that he was not a Jew at all, but a

Greek (Epiphan., Her., xxx. 16). force of such a life, the unconsciousness of wrong. But,

Conver- sion to Chris- tianity.

416

while his fellow-disciples in the rabbinical schools had been content to dissect the text of the sacred code with a minute anatomy, the vision of a law of God which transcended both text and comment had loomed upon him like a new revelation. And with the sense of law had come the sense of sin. It was like the first dawn of conscience. He awoke as from adream. ‘The commandment came.” It was intended to be “unto life,” but he found it to be “unto death”; for it opened up to him infinite possibili- ties of sinning: ‘I had not known lust except the law had said, Thou shalt not lust.” And the possibilities of sinning became lures which drew him on to forbidden and hated ground: “sin, finding occasion through the

commandment, beguiled me and through it slew me” (Rom. vii. 7-11). This was his inner life, and no man has ever analysed it with a more penetrating and graphic power. In his out- ward life this sense of the law of God became to him an overpowering stimulus. The stronger the consciousness of his personal failure the greater the impulse of his zeal. The vindication of the honour of God by persecuting heretics, which was an obligation upon all pious Jews, was for him a supreme duty. He became not only a persecutor but a leader among persecutors (Gal. 1. 14). What he felt was a very frenzy of hate; he ‘‘breathed threatening and slaughter,” like the snorting of a war-horse before a battle, against the renegade Jews who believed in a false Messiah (Acts ix. 1, xxvi. 11). His enthusiasm had been known before the popular outbreak which led to Stephen’s death, for the witnesses to the martyr’s stoning “laid down their clothes” at his feet (Acts vu. 58), and he took a prominent place in the persecution which followed. He himself speaks of having “made havoc” of the com- munity at Jerusalem, spoiling it like a captured city (Gal. i. 18, 23); in the more detailed account of the Acts he went from house to house to search out and drag forth to punishment the adherents of the new heresy (viii. 3). When his victims came before the Jewish courts he tried, probably by scourging, to force them to apostatize (xxvi. 11); in some cases he voted for their death (xxi. 4, xxvi. 10). The persecution spread from Jerusalem to Judea and Galilee (ix. 31); but Paul, with the same spirit of enterprise which afterwards showed itself in his missionary journeys, was not content with the limits of Palestine. He sought and obtained from the ecclesiastical authorities at Jerusalem letters similar to those which, in the 13th century, the popes gave to the “militia Jesu Christi contra hereticos.” The ordinary jurisdiction of the synagogues was for the time set aside ; the special commissioner was empowered to take as prisoners to Jerusalem any whom he found to belong to the sect known as “The Way” (Acts ix. 2, xxii. 4, xxiv. 14; it is possible that the phrase was used of Christians by themselves, like the phrase “The Cause” among some of the nonconforming churches of England). Of the great cities which lay near Palestine Damascus was the most promising, if not the only field for such a commission, At Antioch and at Alexandria, though the Jews, who were very numerous, enjoyed a large amount of independence and had their own governor, the Roman authorities would probably have interfered to prevent the extreme measures which Paul demanded. At Damascus, where also the Jews were numerous and possibly

had their own civil governor (2 Cor, xi. 32), the Arabian prince Aretas (Haritha), who then held the city, might naturally be disposed to let an influential section of the population deal as they pleased with their refractory members.

On Paul's way thither an event occurred which has proved to be of transcendent importance for the religious history of mankind. He became a Christian by what he believed to be the personal revelation of Jesus Christ.

PA Wi

His own accounts‘of the event are brief, but they are at the same time emphatic and uniform. "It pleased God . . . to reveal His Son in me" (Gal. i. 16); "have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord" (1 Cor. ix. 1); "last of all He was seen of me also as of one born out of due time" (1 Cor. xv. 8, where 6¢6y kapoi must be read in the sense of the parallel expressions 6¢6y Kya, &c. ; in other words Paul puts the appearance to himself on a level with the appearances to the apostles after the resurrection), These accounts give no details of the circumstances. St Paul's estimate of the importance of such details was probably different from that which has been attached to them in later times. The accounts in the Acts of the Apostles are more elaborate ; they are three in number, one in the con- tinuous narrative, ix. 3-19, a second in the address on the temple stairs, xxii. 6-21, a third in the speech to Agrippa, xxvi. 12-18; they all differ from each other in details, they all agree in substance; the differences are fatal to the stricter theories of verbal inspiration, but they do not constitute a valid argument against the general truth of the narrative.!

It is natural to find that the accounts of an event which lies so far outside the ordinary experience of men have been the object of much hostile criticism. The earliest denial of its reality is found in the Judeo-Christian writings known as the Clementine Homilies, where Simon Magus, who is made to be a caricature of Paul, is told that visions and dreams may come from demons as well as from God (Clem. Hom., xvii. 13-19). The most import- ant of later denials are those of the Tiibingen school, which explain the narratives in the Acts either as a trans- lation into the language of historical fact of the figurative expressions of the manifestation of Christ to the soul, and the consequent change from spiritual darkness to light (e.g.,

Baur, Paul, E.T., vol. i. p. 76; Zeller, Acts, HIT iaae i. p. 289), or as an ecstatic vision (Holsten, Das Hvangelium des Paulus, p. 65). But against all the difficulties and ap- parent incredibilities of the narratives there stand out the

clear and indisputable facts that the persecutor was suddenly ~

transformed into a believer, and that to his dying day he never ceased to believe and to preach that he had “seen Jesus Christ.”

Nor was it only that he had seen Him; the gospel which he preached, as well as the call to preach it, was due to this revelation. It had “pleased God to reveal His Son in him” that he “might preach Him among the Gentiles” (Gal. i. 12, 16). He had received the special mark of God’s favour, which consisted in his apostleship, that all nations might obey and believe the gospel (Rom. i. 5, cf. xii. 3, xv. 15, 16). He had been entrusted with a secret (wvorjptov) which had “been kept in silence through times éternal,” but which it was now his special office to make known (Rom. xi. 25, xvi. 25, 26; and even more proml-

nently in the later epistles, Eph. i. 9, iii, 2-9, vi. 19; Col.

i. 26, 27, iv. 3). This secret was that “the Gentiles are fellow-heirs, and fellow-members of the body, and fellow- partakers of the promise in Christ Jesus through the gospel.” This is the key to all his subsequent history. He was the “apostle of the Gentiles,” and that “not from men, neither through man” (Gal. i. 1); and s0 thoroughly was the conviction of his special mission wrought into. the fibres of his nature that it is difficult to give full credence to statements which appear to be at variance with it.

Of his life immediately after his conversion he himself ee eee

1 For a clear and concise summary of the points of agreement and difference between the three accounts, reference may be made to an article by F. Zimmer, ‘‘ Die drei Berichte der Apostelgeschichte iiber die Bekehrung des Paulus,” in Hilgenfeld’s Zeitschr. iis wissensch. Theol., 1882, p. 465 sq.

His 4 specia) |

Se a ne

iP oe Wr a

gives a clear account: *T conferred not with flesh and blood, neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but I went away into Arabia” (Gal. i. 16,17). The reason of his retirement, whether it was to the Hauran (Renan) or to the Sinaitic peninsula (Holsten), is not far to seek. A great mental no less than a great bodily convulsion naturally calls for a period of rest; and the consequences of his new position had to be drawn out and realized before he could properly enter upon the mission-work which lay before him. From Arabia he returned to Damascus (Gal. i. 17), and there – began not only his preaching of the gospel but also the long series of “perils from his own countrymen,” which constitute so large a part of the circumstances of his sub- sequent history (Acts ix. 23-25; 2 Cor. xi. 32, 33).

It was not until “after three years,” though it is un- certain whether the reckoning begins from his conversion or from his return to Damascus, that he went up to Jeru- salem; his purpose in going was to become acquainted with Peter, and he stayed with him fifteen days (Gal. i. 18), Of his life at Jerusalem on this occasion there appear to have been erroneous accounts current even 1n his own lifetime, for he adds the emphatic attestation, as of a witness on his oath, that the account which he gives is true (Gal. i. 20). The point on which he seems to lay emphasis is that, in pursuance of his policy not to “ confer with flesh and blood,” he saw none of the apostles except Peter and James, and that even some years afterwards he was still unknown by face to the churches of Judea which were in Christ.

From Jerusalem he went “into the regions of Syria and Cilicia,” preaching the gospel (Gal. i. 21, 23). How much that brief expression covers is uncertain; it may refer only to the first few months after his departure from Jerusa- lem, or it may be a summary of many travels, of which that which is commonly known as his “‘first missionary journey ” isa type. The form of expression in Gal. ii. 1 makes it probable that he purposely leaves an

interval between the events which immediately succeeded lis conversion and

termination which had been employed for the followers of Sulla, of Pompey, and of Cesar. It is improbable that this would have been the case unless the Christian com- munity at Antioch had had a large Gentile element; and it is an even more certain and more important fact that in this first great mixed community the first and greatest of all the problems of early Christian communities had been solved, and that Jews and Gentiles lived a common life (Gal. ii. 12), What place Paul himself had in the forma- tion of this community can only be conjectured. In the Acts he is less prominent than Barnabas ; and, although it must be gathered from the Epistle to the Galatians that he took a leading part in the controversies which arose, still it is to be noted that he never elsewhere mentions Antioch in his epistles, and that he never visited it except casually in his travels. It may be supposed that from an early period he sought and found a wider field for his activity. The spirit of the Pharisees who “ compassed sea and land to make one proselyte” was still strong within him. The zeal for God which had made him a persecutor had changed its direction but not its force. His conversion was but an overpowering call to a new sphere of work. It is consequently difficult to believe that he was content to take his place as merely one of a band of teachers elected by the community or appointed by the Twelve. The sense of a special mission never passed away from him. “Necessity was laid upon him” (1 Cor. ix. 16). Inferior to the Twelve in regard to the fact that he had once ‘persecuted the church of God,” he was “not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles” (2 Cor. xi. 5) in regard both to the reality and the privileges of his commission, and to the truth of what he preached (le Cors ixed-6; 2 Com tiel-Gye@al. ind2). vais also difficult to believe that he went out with Barnabas simply as the delegate of the Antiochean community ; whatever significance the laying on of hands may have had for him (Acts xiii. 3), it would be contrary to the tenor of all his writings to suppose that he regarded it as giving him his commission to preach the gospel.

The narrative of the incidents of the single journey Journey which is recorded in detail, and which possibly did not a occupy more than one summer, has given rise to much ~7?““S

vores and Asia controversy. Its general credibility is supported by the yfinoy.

the conference at Jerusalem. For this interval, assuming it to exist, or in any case for the detail of its history, we have to depend on the accounts in Acts xi. 20-30, xii. 25 to xiv. 28. These accounts possibly cover only a small

part of the whole period, and they are so limited to Paul’s relations with Barnabas as to make it probable that they were derived from a lost ‘Acts of Barnabas.” This sup- position would probably account for the fact that in them the conversion of the Gentiles is to a great extent in the background,

The chief features of these accounts are the formation of a new centre of Christian life at Antioch, and a journey which Paul, Barnabas, and for part of the way John Mark took through Cyprus and Asia Minor. :

The first of these facts has a significance which has sometimes been overlooked for the history not only of Paul himself but of Christianity in general. It is that the mingling together, in that splendid capital of the civilized East, of Jews and Syrians on the one hand with Greeks and Romans on the other furnished the conditions which made a Gentile Christianity possible. The religion of Jesus Christ emerged from its obscurity into the full glare of contemporary life. Its adherents attracted enough attention to receive in the common talk and intércourse of men a distinctive name. They were treated, not as a Jewish sect, but asa political party. To the Greek equiva- lent for the Hebrew « Messiah,” which was probably con- Sidered to be not a title but a proper name, was added the one different account of this visit to Jerusalem is given in Acts ix.

17.9] XXvi. 20; the account of the trance in the temple, Acts xxii. “*) 18 1n entire harmony with Paul’s own words.

probability that in the first instance Paul would follow an ordinary commercial route, on which Jewish missionaries as well as Jewish

merchants had been his pioneers. For his letters to his Gentile converts all presuppose their acquaintance with the elements of Judaism. They do not prove monotheism, but assume it. According to the narrative, Paul and his companions went first to Cyprus, the native country of Barnabas, and travelled through the island from its eastern port, Salamis, to its capital, Paphos. At Paphos a Jewish sorcerer, Bar Jesus, was struck with blindness, and the proconsul, Sergius Paulus, was converted. From Cyprus, still following a common route of trade, they went into the south-east districts of Asia Minor, through Pamphylia to Antioch in Pisidia. At Antioch, on two successive Sabbaths, Paul spoke in the synagogue ; the genuineness of the addresses which are recorded in the Acts has been disputed, chiefly because the second of them seems to imply that he " turned to the Gentiles," not as a primary and unconditional obli- gation, but owing to the rejection of the gospel by the Jews. Expelled from Antioch, they went on to Iconium (where the apocryphal 'Acts of Paul and Thekla" place the scene of that improbable but not ungraceful romance), and thence to Lystra, where the healing of a cripple caused the simple and superstitious Lycaonians to take them for gods. Their farthest point was the neighbouring town of Derbe, from whence they returned by the route XVII — 53

His rela- tion to the Twelve.

A418

by which they had come to the sea-coast, and thence to Antioch in Syria.

But, although the general features of the narrative may be accepted as true, especially if, as suggested above, its basis is a memoir or itinerary not of Paul but of Barnabas, yet it must be conceded that this portion of the Acts has large omissions. It is difficult to believe that the passionate zeal of an apostle who was urged by the stimu- lus of a special call of Jesus Christ was satisfied, for the long period of at least eleven years, with one short missionary journey, and that, with the exception of a brief visit to Jerusalem (Acts xi. 30), he remained quietly ai Tarsus or at Antioch (xi. 25, xii, ljeav. 28) Tn this period must fall at least a portion of the experiences which he records in 2 Cor. xi. 24-27, and for which no place can be found in the interval between the conference at Jeru- salen and the writing of that epistle. The scourging in the synagogues, the beating with the lictor's rods in the

Roman courts, the shipwrecks, the “night and day in the deep,” the “perils of robbers,” and “perils in the wilder- ness” belong no doubt to some of the unrecorded journeys of these first years of his apostolic life. A more important omission is that of some of the more distinctive features of his preaching. It is impossible to account for his atti- tude towards the original apostles in his mterview with them at Jerusalem (Gal. ii. 1-10) except on the supposi- tion that before that interview, no less than after it, he was that which he had been specially called to be, the “apostle of the Gentiles” and the preacher of the “ gospel of the uncircumcision.”

At the end of fourteen years, either from his conversion or from his visit to Peter at Jerusalem, the question of the relation of the communities which he had formed, and of the gospel which he preached, to the original Christian communities, and to the gospel of the Twelve, came to a crisis. His position was unique. He owed neither his knowledge of the gospel nor his commission to preach it to any human authority (Gal. i. 1, 11,12). As Jesus Christ had taught and sent forth the Twelve, so had He taught and sent forth Paul. He was on equal terms with the Twelve. Until a revelation came to him he was apparently at no pains to co-operate with them. But between their respective disciples there was evidently a sharp contention. The Jewish party, the original disciples and first converts, maintained the continued obligation of the Mosaic law and the limitation of the promises to those who observed it ; the Pauline party asserted the abrogation of the law and the free justification of all who believed in Jesus Christ. The controversy narrowed itself to the one point of cir- cumcision. If the Gentiles were without circumcision members of the kingdom of God, why was the law obli- gatory on the Jews? If, on the other hand, the Gentiles had to be circumcised, the gospel had but a secondary im- portance. It seemed for a time as though Christianity would be broken up into two sharply-divided sects, and that between the Jewish Christianity, which had its seat at Jerusalem, and which insisted on circumcision, and the Gentile Christianity, which had its seat at Antioch, and which rejected circumcision, there would be an irreconcil- able antagonism. It was consequently “by revelation ” (Gal. ii. 2) that Paul and Barnabas, with the Gentile con- vert Titus as their ‘‘minister” or secretary, went to confer with the leaders among the original disciples, the “pillars” or “them who were of repute,” “James, and Cephas, and John.” He put the question to them: Was it possible that he was

spending or had spent his labour in vain? (uqros . . . epapov in Gal. ii. 2 form a direct question depending on évcOéunv). He laid before them the "gospel of the uncircumcision." They made no addition to it (Paul says of himself dve@éunv, and of "them who were of re-

ray £

1878, p. 141; Schenkel, Das Christusbild der

pute" ovdev rpooavéevro, Gal. ii. 2, 6), but accepted it as Paul preached it, recognizing it as being a special work of God, and as being on the same level of authority with their own (Gal. ii, 7-9). The opposition was no doubt strong; there were "false brethren " who refused to eman- cipate the Gentile world from the bondage of the law; and there was also' apparently a party of compromise which, admitting Paul's general contention, maintained the necessity of circumcision in certain cases, of which the case of Titus, for reasons which are no longer apparent, was typical. But Paul would have no compromise. From his point of view compromise was impossible. " Justifica- tion" was either "of faith" or "by the works of the law"; it was inconceivable that it could be partly by the one and partly by the other. And he succeeded in maintaining his position at all points. He received "the right hand of fellowship," and went back to Antioch the recognized head and preacher of the "gospel of the uncircumcision." With- in his own sphere he had perfect freedom of action; the only tie between his converts and the original community at Jerusalem was the tie of benevolence. Jew and Gentile were so far "one body in Christ" that the wealthier Gen- tile communities should 'remember the poor." !

When Paul returned to Antioch Peter followed him, Pete and Pau! nt:

and for a time the two apostles worked in harmony. Peter '¢ did eat with the Gentiles." He shared the common table

Sige aie So ae 1 Few passages of the New Testament have been more keenly de-

bated of late years than the accounts of this conference at Jerusalein Con: in Acts xv, 4-29 and Gal. ii. 1-10. The only writers of eminence in ence recent

times who think that the two accounts refer to separate events Jert are Caspari, who identifies the visit to Jerusalem mentioned in Gal. sale ii. 1-10 with that of Acts xi. 30, xii. 25, and Wieseler, who identifies

it with that of Acts xviii. 21, 22; both theories are chronologically impossible. Almost all writers agree in thinking that the two accounts refer to the same event, but no two writers precisely agree as to the extent to which they can be reconciled. (1) The differences between them were first insisted on by Schwegler, Das nachapostolische Leit- alter, 1845, vol. i. 116; then by Zeller, Die A postelgeschichte, E.'T., vol. ii. 8; Baur, Paulus, E.T., vol. i. 109; Hilgenfeld, Der Gala- terbrief, 1852, p. 52, and in his Hinleitung in das Neue Testament, 1875, p. 227, &c.; Krenkel, Paulus, 1869, p. 62; Lipsius, s.. " Apostelkonvent," in Schenkel's Bibel-Lexikon, 1868, vol. i. 194; Overbeck, in his edition of De Wette's Apostelgeschichte, 1879, p. 216; Pfleiderer, Paulinismus, 1873, E.T., vol. ii. 5 and 284, and also in his " Paulinische Studien," in the Jahrb. f. prot. Theol., 1889, No. 2; Weizsiicker, in the Jahrb. f. deutsche Theol., 1878, p. 191; Hausrath, Neutestamentliche Zeityeschichte, 2d ed., vol. iii, 151, vol. iv. 249; Holsten, Zum Evangelium des Paulus und Petrus, pp. 241, 292, Das Evangelium des Paulus, p. 143; Holtzmann, "Der Apos- teleonvent," in Hilgenfeld's Zeitschr. f. wissensch. Theol., 1882 p. 436, 1883 p. 129 (to which articles the writer is indebted for several of the references here given). (2) The harmony of the two accounts is maintained, mostly in opposition to the above-named writers, by Neander, Gesch. d. Pflanzung, 5th ed., 1862, p. 158; Ewald, Gesch. d. Volkes Israel, 3d ed., 1868, vol. vi. 470; Ritschl, End. d. altkath. Kirche, 2a ed., 1857, p. 128; Lechler, Das apostol. U. nachapostol. Zeitalter, 2d ed., 1857, p. 397; Baumgarten, Die Apostelgeschichte, 2d ed., 1859, i. 461; Pressensé, Hist. des trois premiers siécles, d ed., 1868, vol. i. 457; Weiss, Lehrb. d. bib. Theol. (des N.T.), 2d ed., Apostel, 1879, p. 835 K. Schmidt, s.v. " Apostel-Konvent," in Herzog's Real- Encyklopiae, 2d ed., vol. i. 575; Lightfoot, Galatians, p. 123; Wendt, in his edition of Meyer's Apostelgesch., 1880, p. 311; Sieffert, in Meyer's Brief an die Galater, 1880, p. 84, &c.; Zimmer, Galaterbrief und Apostel- geschichte, 1882; Nésgen, Comm. iber die Apostelgeschichte, 1882, p. 287. (8) A compromise between the two accounts is attempted by Renan, St Paul, 1869, p. 81; Reuss, Die Gesch. d. heil. Schr, N.T., 5th ed., 1874, p. 57;

Keim, “Der Apostelconvent,” in his Aus dem Urchristenthum, 1878, p. 64; Grimm, “ Der Apostelconvent,

in Studien u. Kritiken for 1880, p. 405.

The main points of difficulty in the two accounts are these. (1) The Acts say that Paul went up by appointment of the brethren at Antioch ; Paul himself says that he went up “by revelation.” (2) In the Acts Paul has a subordinate position; in his own account he treats with “the three” on equal terms. (3) In the Acts Peter and James are on Paul’s side from the first ; in Galatians they are SO only at the end of the conference, and after a discussion. (4) The Acts make the conference result in a decree, in which certain observances are imposed upon the Gentiles ; Paul himself expressly declares that the only injunction was that they “should remember the poor.

was probably

life. wish

in social Lord’s Supper.

jv, Gal. ii. 11). His argument was that the freedom from the law was complete, and that to attach merit to obedience to the law was to make disobedience to the law a sin, and, by causing those who sought to be justified by faith only to be transgressors, to make Christ a “minister of sin.” Obedience to any part of the law involved recognition of the whole of it as obligatory (Gal. v. 3), and consequently “made void the grace of God.”

The schism in the community at Antioch was probably never healed. It is not probable that Paul’s contention was there victorious; for, while Paul never again speaks of that city, Peter seems to have remained there, and he was looked upon in later times as the founder of its church. But this failure at Antioch served to Paul as the occasion for carrying out a bolder conception. The horizon of his mission widened before him. The “fulness of the Gentiles ” had to be brought in. His diocese was no longer Antioch, but the whole of the Roman empire. The years that followed were almost wholly spent among its great cities, “preaching among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ ” (Eph. iii. 8). He became the spiritual father

of many communities, and he watched over then with a father’s constant care. He gathered round him a company of faithful disciples, who shared with hii his missionary work, and whom he sent sometimes to break new ground, sometimes to arrange disputes, sometimes to gather con- tributions, sometimes to examine and report. Of his travels, whether with them or alone, no complete record has been preserved ; some of them are minutely described in the Acts, others within the same period are known only or chiefly from his epistles. In giving an account of them it is necessary to change to some extent the historical perspective which is presented in the Acts ; for, in working up fragments of itineraries of Paul’s companions into a consecutive narrative, many things are made to come into the foreground which Paul himself would probably have disregarded, and many things are omitted or thrown into the shade to which, from his letters, he appears to have attached a primary importance.!

The first scene of his new activity, if indeed it be allow- able to consider the conference at Jerusalem and the subse- quent dispute at Antioch as having given occasion for a new departure, was probably the eastern part of Asia Minor, and more particularly Galatia. Some of it he had visited before ; and from the fact that the Galatians, though they had been heathens (Gal. iv. 8), were evidently acquainted with the law, it may be inferred that he still went on the track of Jewish missionaries, and that here, as elsewhere, Judaism had prepared the way for Christianity. Of his preaching he himself gives a brief summary ; it was the vivid setting forth before their eyes of Jesus as the crucified

_. ____ eee

i The most important instance of this is probably the almost entire omission of an account of his relations with the community at Corinth ; one of his visits is entirely omitted, another is also omitted, though it May be inferred from the general expression “he came into Greece” (xx. 2); and of the disputes in the community, and Paul’s relations to them, there is not a single word.

Pa U

at which the Jewish distinctions of meats were disregarded. He thereby accepted Paul's position. But when " certain came from James" he drew back. The position of James that, even if the law had ceased to be valid as a means of justification, it was still valid as a rule of

For reasons which are not apparent, possibly the not to break with the community at Jerusalem, not only Peter but Barnabas and the whole of the Jewish party at Antioch accepted that position, with its consequent obligation of separation from the Gentile brethren, not only life, but probably also in the partaking of the Paul showed that the position of Peter was illogical, and that he was self-convicted (kareyvao pévos

A419

Messiah, and it was confirmed by evident signs of the working of the Spirit (Gal. ili. 1, 5). The new converts received it with enthusiasm ; he felt for them as a father ; and an illness (some have thought, from the form of ex- pression in Gal. iv. 15, that it was an acute ophthalmia) which came upon him (assuming this to have been his first visit) intensified their mutual affection. What we learn specially of the Galatians is probably true also of the other Gentiles who received him; some of them were baptized (Gal. iii, 27), they were formed into communities (Gal. i, 2), and they were so far organized as to have a distinc- tion between teachers and taught (Gal. vi. 6).

But an imperative call summoned him to Europe. The western part of Asia Minor, in which afterwards were formed the important churches of Ephesus, Colossx, Hierapolis, and Laodicea, was for the present left alone. He passed on into Macedonia. from Asia to Europe. he had preached only in small provincial towns. Hence- forward he preached chiefly, and at last exclusively, in the great centres of population. He began with Philippi, which was at once a great military post and the wealthy entrepot of the gold and silver mines of the neighbouring Mount Pangeus. The testimony of the eye-witness whose account is incorporated in Acts xvi. 12-18 tells us that his first convert was a Jewish proselyte, named Lydia; and Paul himself mentions other women converts (Phil. iv. 2). There is the special interest about the community which soon grew up that it was organized after the manner of the guilds, of which there were many both at Philippi and in

other towns of Macedonia, and that its administrative officers were entitled, probably from the analogy of those guilds, “bishops” and “ deacons.”

In Europe, as in Asia, persecution attended him. He was “shamefully entreated” at Philippi (1 Thess. ui. 2), and according to the Acts the ill-treatment came not from the Jews but from the Gentile employers of a frenzied prophetess, who saw in Paul’s preaching an element of danger to their craft. Consequently he left that city, and passingover Amphipolis, the political capital of the province, but the seat rather of the official classes than of trade, he went on to the great seaport and commercial city of Thessalonica. His converts there seem to have been chiefly among the Gentile workmen (1 Thess. ive 11 ;°2eEheseein. 10-12), and he himself became one of them. Knowing as he did the scanty wages of their toil, he “worked night and day that he might not burden any of them” (1 Thess. ii, 9; 2 Thess. iii, 8). But for all his working he does not seem to have earned enough to support his little com- pany ; he was constrained both once and again to accept help from Philippi (Phil. iv. 16). He was determined that, whatever he might have to endure, no sordid thought should enter into his relations with the Thessalonians ; he would be to them only what a father is to his children, behaving himself “holily and righteously and unblameably,” and exhorting them to walk worthily of God who had called them (1 Thess. ii. 10-12). But there, as elsewhere, his preaching was “in much conflict.” The Jews were actively hostile, According to the account in the Acts (xvii. 5-9), they at last hounded on the lazzaroni of the city, who were doubtless moved as easily as a Moslem crowd in modern times by any cry of treason or infidelity, to attack the house of Jason (possibly one of Paul’s kinsmen, Rom. xvi. 21), either because Paul himself was lodging there, or be- cause it was the meeting-place of the community. Paul and Silas were not there, and so escaped ; but it was thought prudent that they should go at once and secretly to the neighbouring small town of Bercea. Thither, however, the fanatical Jews of Thessalonica pursued them ; and Paul, leaving his companions Silas and Timothy at Bercea, gave

The change was more than a passage In Mace- Hitherto, if Antioch be excepted, donia.

At Athens.

up his preaching in Macedonia for a time and went south- wards to Athens.

The narrative which the Acts give of his stay at Athens is one of the most striking, and at the same time one of the most difficult, episodes in the book. What is the meaning of the inscription on the altar? What is the Areopagus? How far does the reported speech give Paul's actual words? What did the Athenians understand by the Resurrection? These are examples of questions on which it is easy to argue, but which, with our present knowledge, it is impossible to decide. One point seems to be clear, both from the absence of any further mention of 'he city in Paul's writings and from the absence of any permanent results of his visit, that his visit was a comparative failure. Tt was almost inevitable that it should be so. Athens was the educational centre of Greece. It was a great university city. For its students and professors the Christianity which Paul preached had only an intellectual interest. They were not conscious of the need, which Christianity presupposes, of a great moral reformation ; nor indeed was it until many years afterwards, when Christianity had added to itself certain philosophical elements and become not only a religion but a theology, that the educated Greek mind, whether at Athens or elsewhere, took serious hold of it. Of Paul's own inner life at Athens we learn, not from the Acts, but from one of his epistles. His thoughts were not with the philosophers but with the communities of Macedonia and the converts among whom he had preached with such different success. He cared far less for the world of mocking critics and procrastinating idlers in the chief seat of culture than he did for the enthusiastic artisans of Thessalonica, to whom it was a burning ques- tion of dispute how soon the Second Advent would come, and what would be the relation of the living members of the church to those who had fallen asleep. He would fain have gone back to them, but "Satan hindered him" (1 Thess. ii. 17, 18); and he sent Timothy in his stead "to comfort them as concerning their faith," and to prevent their relapsing, as probably other converts did, under the pressure of persecution (1 Thess. iii. 2, 3).

From Athens he went to Corinth, the capital of the Roman province of Achaia, and the real centre of the busy life of Greece. It was not the ancient

Greek city with Greek inhabitants, but a new city which had grown up in Roman times, with a vast population of mingled races, who had added to the traditional worship of Aphrodite the still more sensuous cults of the East. Never before had Paul had so vast or so promising a field for his preach- ing; for alike the filthy sensuality of its wealthy classes and the intense wretchedness of its half-million of paupers and slaves (tiv BdeAupiay Tov Exeive mrrovctwv Kal TOV meviitov &OAvoTyTa, Alciphr. iii, 60) were prepared ground upon which his preaching could sow the seed, in the one case of moral reaction, and in the other of hope. At first the greatness of his task appalled him: ‘I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling” (1 Cor. ii. 3). But he laid down for himself from the first the fixed principle that he would preach nothing but “Jesus Christ, and him crucified” (1 Cor. ii. 2), compromising with neither the Jews, to whom “the word of the cross,” i.e., the doctrine of a crucified Messiah, was ‘‘a stumbling- block,” nor with the Gentile philosophers, to whom it was “foolishness ” (1 Cor. i. 18, 23). It is probable that there were other preachers of the gospel at Corinth, especially among the Jews, since soon afterwards there was a Judaizing party; Paul’s own converts seem to have been chiefly among the Gentiles(1 Cor. xii. 2). Some of them apparently belonged to the luxurious classes (1 Cor. vi. 11), a few of them to the influential and literary classes (1 Cor. i. 26); but the majority were from the lowest classes, the “‘ foolish,”

PAU DL

the “weak,” the “base,” and the “despised” (1 Cor, i. 27, 28). And among the poor he lived a poor man’s life, It was his special “ glorying” (1 Cor. ix. 15; 2 Cor. xi. 10) that he would not be burdensome to any of them (1 Cor, ix. 12; 2 Cor. xi. 9, xii. 13). He worked at his trade of tent-making; but it was a hard sad life. His trade was precarious, and did not suffice for even his scanty needs (2 Cor. xi. 9). Beneath the enthusiasm of the preacher was the physical distress of hunger and cold and ill-usage (1 Cor. iv. 11). But in “all his distress and affliction” he was comforted by the good news which Timothy brought him of the steadfastness of the Thessalonian converts ; the sense of depression which preceded it is indicated by the graphic phrase, “ Now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord” (1 Thess. iii. 6-8). With Timothy came Silas, both of them bringing help for his material needs from the

communities of Macedonia (2 Cor. xi. 9; Acts xvii. 5; perhaps only from Philippi, Phil. iv. 15), and it was apparently after their coming that the active preaching began (2 Cor. 1. 19) which roused the Jews to a more open hostility.

Of that hostility an interesting incident is recorded in the Acts (xviii. 12-16); but a more important fact in Paul's life was the sending of a letter, the earliest of all his letters which have come down to us, to the community which he had founded at Thessalonica. Its genuineness, though perhaps not beyond dispute, is almost certain. Part of it is a renewed exhortation to steadfastness in face of perse- cutions, to purity of life, and to brotherly love ; part of it is apparently an answer to a question which had arisen among the converts when some of their number had died before the Parousia ; and part of it is a general suminary of their duties as members of a Christian community. It was probably followed, some months afterwards, by a second letter ; but the genuineness of the Second Epistle to the Thessalonians has been much disputed. It proceeds upon the same general lines as the first, but appears to correct the misapprehensions which the first had caused as to the nearness of the Parousia.

After having lived probably about two years at Cormth Paul resolved, for reasons to which he himself gives no clue, to change the centre of his activity from Corinth to Ephesus. city with a vast mixed population; it afforded a similar field for preaching, and it probably gave him increased facilities for communicating with the communities to which he was a spiritual father. It is clear from his epistles that his activity at Ephesus was on a much larger scale than the Acts of the Apostles indicate. Probably the author of the memoirs from which this part of the narrative m the Acts was compiled was not at this time with him; consequently there remain only fragmentary and for the most part unimportant anecdotes. His real life at this time is vividly pictured in the Epistles to the Corinthians. It was a life of hardship and danger and anxiety : "' Even unto this present hour we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling- place; and we toil, working with our own hands ; being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we endure; being defamed, we intreat ; we are made as the filth of the world, the offscouring of all things even until now" (1 Cor. iv. 11-13). It was almost more than he could bear: "We were

weighed down exceedingly, beyond our power, inso- much that we despaired even of life” (2 Cor. i. 8). He went about like one condemned to die, upon whom the sentence might at any moment be carried out (2 Cor. 1. 9). Once, at least, it seemed as though the end had actually come, for he had to fight with beasts in the arena (1 Cor. xv. 32); and once, if not on the same occasion, he was only saved by Prisca and Aquila, “who for his life laid down their own necks” (Rom. xvi. 4). But that which

Like Corinth, Ephesus was a great commercial q ae

Paw L

filled a larger place in his thoughts than the “perils” of either the past or the present was the “care of all the churches.” He was the centre round which a system of communities revolved; and partly by letters, partly by sending his companions, and partly by personal visits, he kept himself informed of their varied concerns, and en- deavoured to give a direction to their life.

His most important relations were those with the communities of Asia Minor and of Corinth.

(A) It is probable that from Ephesus he went to the churches of g Galatia. Before writing to the Galatians he had paid them at least two visits (Gal. i. 9, iv. 13), and, although it is conceivable that poth visits may belong to his earlier journeys, yet the tone of his letter implies that no great interval had elapsed since his last visit (Gal. i. 6). The Acts mention that soon after his arrival at Ephesus he went to Syria, and returned “through the region of Phrygia and Galatia in order, stablishing all the disciples” (xviii. 28); and, although the motive which is assigned for that journey has been called in question, the journey itself is not inconsistent with the statemeuts of his epistles. He appears to have been followed by vigorous opponents, who denicd his authority as a Christian teacher, and who taught “another gospel” (Gal. i. 6, 7). He consequently wrote a letter, the Epistle to the Galatians, which, from its marked antithetical character, throws greater light upon the essential points of his preaching than any other which has come down to us. It ig mainly directed to three points: first, to assert that what he preached had its origin in a direct revelation to himself, and was consequently of divine authority ; secondly, to show that the bless- ings of the gospel were

not limited to the seed of Abraham, but were given to all that believe; thirdly, to maintain that submis- sion to the requirements of the law was not mercly unnecessary, but an abandonment of the gospel. To this he adds the practical exhortation that they should not “use their freedom for an occa- sion to the flesh,” but “walk by the Spirit,” from whom their new life came.

It is also probable that during his stay at Ephesus several com- munities were formed in the western corner of Phrygia, in the valley of the Lycus, at Laodicea, Colosse, and Hierapolis. If the testimony of the Epistle to the Colossians be accepted, they were formed, a Paul himself, but by Epaphroditus (Col. i. 7, ii. ie 12, 13).

(B) His relations at this time with the community at Corinth may for the most part be clearly inferred from his epistles, but, since they are ignored in the Acts and since the words of the epistles are in some cases ambiguous, there are some points of comparative uncertainty. The following is the most probable account of them. (1) Corinth, soon aftcr Paul left it, was visited by Apollos, who is described in the Acts as an Alexandrian Jew, “a learned man” and “mighty in the Scriptures” (xviii. 24). Paul had “ planted,” and Apollos “watered” (1 Cor. iii. 6); to the unrhctorical and unphilosophical gospel of the one was added the rhetorical and philosophical preaching of the other ; they both preached in effect the same gospel, but between their followers there soon came to be ativalry; and it is probably in contrast to Apollos that Paul sub- sequently protests that his own preaching was “not in persuasive words of wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power” (1 Cor. ii. 4). (2) It is probable that Paul then went to Corinth a second time; since his next visit was his third (2 Cor. xiii. 1, which, however, has sometimes been understood of an unfulfilled intention). (3) The Corinthians afterwards wrote to ask his advice on several points, viz. on marriage, on virgins, on things sacrificed to idols, on spiritual gifts, on the collection for the poor, and on his relations with Apollos (it is probable that the sections of Paul’s letter which begin with the preposition zepi, “concerning,” are the direct answers to the letter of the Corinthians). He also received news of the state of affairs at Corinth from the slaves of Chloc, who told him of the divisions in the community (1 Cor. i. 11), and from Stephanas, Fortunatus, and Achaicus, who not only gave him better

news, but probably also brought him material help (1 Cor. xvi. 17). He probably also learnt something from Apollos, who | iri ees

1 It has been customary to give this visit to Syria a factitious im- portance by representing it as constituting the point of division be- tween the secotid and the third missionary journeys. But the arrange- ment of Paul's active life into '"' missionary journeys " is artificial and unsatisfactory. The so-called "first missionary journey " is, as has been pointed out above, only a single episode in at least eleven years of work ; and, even if it be allowed that the conference at Jerusalem constitutes a sufficiently important epoch in his life to warrant a break in his biography, there is no solid reason whatever for fixing upon this particular visit to Syria as constituting such an epoch. If the latter part of his biography be broken up into chapters at all, it Would be much more useful to divide it according to the centres at Which he settled from time to time, and from which his activity Tadiated, Corinth, Ephesus, Cxsarea (probably), and Rome.

42]

had come to him (1 Cor. xvi. 12). (4) He then sent Timothy to them (1 Cor. .iv. 17, xvi. 10, 11), possibly by way of Macedonia, and with Erastus (Acts xix. 22). It has been thought that Timothy never reached Corinth (Neander, De Wette, Hausrath, partly on the ground that he would have been mentioned in 2 Cor. xii. 17) ; but, on the other hand, since his intended visit was mentioned in the first letter, his non-arrival would probably have been expressly accounted for in the second (Heinrici, Holtzmann). (5) Before Timothy reached Corinth Paul addressed to the Corinthians the first of the two letters which have come down tous. (6) Afterwards, possibly in consequence of the news which Timothy brought to him at Ephesus, he sent a second letter, which has not been pre- served ; this is an inference from 2 Cor. ii. 3, 4, vii. 8-12, where the description of a letter written "with many tears," which made the Corinthians "sorry," docs not seem applicable to the existing 1 Cor. (Hausrath thinks that this intermediate letter is to be recognized in 2 Cor. x.~~xiii.; but his hypothesis is rejected by Hilgenfeld, Beyschlag, Klépper, Weizsiicker, Holtzmann, and others). (7) Then he sent Titus, probably with a view to the col~~ lection of alms jor the poor Christians in Palestine (2 Cor. viii. 6, xii. 17, 18; 1 Cor. xvi. 1-3). (8) After this,

without waiting for the return of Titus, he resolved to carry out the intention which he had for some time entertained, but which he had abandoned or postponed, of going again himself (1 Cor. xvi. 5, 6; 2 Cor. i. 15, 93; it may be noted that, while in the first epistle his intention was that which he actually carried out, viz., to go first to Mace- donia and then to Corinth, in the second epistle the order of his intended route is altered). ;

An émeute which took place at Ephesus was, according to the Acts, the occasion if not the cause of his leaving that city ; “a great door and effectual had been opened unto him” there (1 Cor. xvi. 9), and the growth of the new religion had caused an appreciable diminution in the trade of those who profited by the zeal of the worshippers at the temple (Acts xix. 23 to xx. 1). He went overland to Troas, where, as at Ephesus, “a door was opened unto him in the Lord” (2 Cor. ii. 12); but the thought of Corinth was stronger than the wish to make a new com- munity. He was eager to meet Titus, and to hear of the effect of his now lost letter; and he went on into Mace- donia. It is at this point of his life more than at any other that he reveals to us his inner history. At Ephesus he had been hunted almost to death; he had carried his life in his hand; and, “even when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no relief, but we were afflicted on every side; without were fightings, within were fears” (2 Cor. vii. 5). But, though the “outward man was decaying, yet the inward man was renewed day by day”; and the climax of splendid paradoxes which he wrote soon afterwards to the Corinthians (2 Cor. vi. 3-10) was not a rhetorical ideal, but the story of his actual life. But after a time Titus came with news which gladdened Paul’s heart (2 Cor. vii. 7). He had been well received at Corinth. The letter had made a deep impression. The admonitions had been listened to. The Corinthians had repented of their conduct. They had rid themselves of

“him that did the wrong,” and Paul was “of good courage concerning them” (2 Cor. vii. 8-16). He then

wrote the second of his extant letters to them, which was sent by Titus and the unknown “brother whose praise in the gospel is spread through all the churches,” and who had been elected by the churches to travel with Paul and his company (2 Cor. viii. 18, 19). It was probably in the course of this journey that he went beyond the borders of Macedonia into the

neighbouring province of Tlyricum (Rom. xv. 19); but his real goal was Corinth. For the third time he went there, and, overcoming the scruples of his earlier visits, he was the guest of Gaius, in whose house the meetings of the community took place (Rom. xvi. 23).

Of the incidents of his visit no record remains; the Acts do not even mention it. But it was the culminating point of his intellectual activity ; for in the course of it he wrote the greatest of all his letters, the Epistle to the Romans. And, as the body of that epistle throws an invaluable light upon the tenor of his preaching at this

In Mace- donia again.

Titus comes from

Corinth.

At Corinth again.

time to the communities, among which that of Rome can hardly have been singular, so the salutations at the end, whether they be assumed to be an integral part of the whole or not, are a wonderful revelation of the breadth and intimacy of his relations with the individual members of those communities. But that which was as much in his mind as either the great question of the relation of faith to the law or the needs of individual converts in Collec- the Christian communities was the collection of alms "for tion of the poor among the saints that were at Jerusalem " (Rom. aed a xv. 26). The communities of Palestine had probably ner =" never ceased to be what the first disciples were, communi- ties of paupers in a pauperized country, and consequently dependent upon external help. And all through his mis- sionary journeys Paul had remembered the injunction which had sealed his compact with "the three" (Gal. i1. 10). In Galatia (1 Cor. xvi. 1), among the poor and persecuted churches of Macedonia (Rom. xv. 26; 2 Cor. viii. 1-4), at Corinth, and in Achaia (1 Cor. xvi. 1-3; 2 Cor. viii. and ix.), the Gentiles who had been made partakers with the Jews in spiritual things had been successfully told that "' they owed to them also to minister unto them

in carnal things” (Rom. xv. 27). The con- tributions were evidently on a large scale; and Paul, to prevent the charges of malversation which were sometimes made against him, associated with himself “in the matter of this grace” a person chosen by the churches themselves (2 Cor. viii. 19-21, xii. 17, 18); some have thought that all the persons whose names are mentioned in Acts xx. 4 were delegates of their respective churches for this purpose. He resolved to go to Jerusalem himself with this material testimony of the brotherly feeling of the Gentile communi- ties, and then, “having no more any place” in Greece, to go to the new mission fields of Rome and the still farther West (Rom. xv. 23-25). He was not certain that his peace-offering would be acceptable to the Jewish Christ- ians, and he had reason to apprehend violence from the Sets out unbelieving Jews. His departure from Corinth, like that for Jeru- from Ephesus, was probably hastened by danger to his salem. 2 : : : : : life; and, instead of going direct to Jerusalem (an intention which seems to be implied in Rom. xv. 25), he and his companions took a circuitous route round the coasts of the Aigean Sea. His course lay through Philippi, Troas, Mitylene, Chios, and Miletus, where he took farewell of the elders of the community at Ephesus in an address of which some reminiscences are probably preserved in Acts xx, 18-34. Thence he went, by what was probably an ordinary route of commerce, to the Syrian coast, and at last he reached the Holy City. The narrative which the Acts give of the incidents of

i ee Ue

What colouring of a later time, derived from later con- troversies, has been spread over the original outline of the history cannot now be told. While on the one hand the difficulties of the narrative as it stands cannot be over- looked, yet on the other hand no faithful historian will undertake, in the absence of all collateral evidence, the task of discriminating that which belongs to a contempo- rary testimony and that which belongs to a subsequent recension. From this uncertainty the general concurrence of even adverse critics excepts the “we” section (Acts xxvii, 1, xxviii. 16); whoever may have been the author of those “we” sections, and whatever may be the amount of revision to which they have been subjected, they seem to have for their basis the diary or itinerary of a companion of Paul,

and the account of the voyage contains at least the indisputable fact that Paul went to Rome.

But his life at Rome and all the rest of his history are enveloped in mists from which no single gleam of certain light emerges. Almost every writer, whether apologetic or sceptical, has some new hypothesis respecting it; and the number and variety of the hypotheses which have been already framed is a warning, until new evidence appears, against adding to their number. The preliminary ques- tions which have to be solved before any hypothesis can be said to have a foundation in fact are themselves ex- tremely intricate ; and their solution depends upon con- siderations to which, in the absence of positive and deter- mining evidence, different minds tend inevitably to give different interpretations.

name, which, if they be his, must be assigned to the later: period of his life, viz., those to the Philippians, Ephesians, and Colossians, to Philemon, to Timothy, and to Titus. As these epistles do not stand or fall together, but give rise in each case to separate discussion, the theories vary accord- ing as they are severally thought to be genuine or false. The least disputed is the Epistle to Philemon ; but it is also the least fruitful in either doctrine or biographical details. Next to it in the order of general acceptance is the Epistle to the Philippians. The Epistles to the Ephe- sians and to the Colossians have given rise to disputes which cannot easily be settled in the absence of collateral evidence, since they mainly turn partly on the historical probability of the rapid growth in those communities of certain forms of theological speculation, and partly on the psychological probability of the almost sudden develop- ment in Paul’s own mind of new methods of conceiving and presenting Christian doctrine. The pastoral epistles, viz., those to Timothy and to Titus, have given rise to still graver questions, and are probably even less defensible.

The chief of these preliminary Gennine

questions is the genuineness of the epistles bearing Paul’s ae auline

epistles,

his life there is full of grave difficulties. It leaves alto- gether in the background that which Paul himself mentions as his chief reason for making the visit; and it relates that he accepted the advice which was given him to avail

But, even if this preliminary question of the genuine- Diflieul- ness of the several epistles be decided in each instance in Lo the affirmative, there remains the further question whether i,

they or any of them belong to the period of Paul's imprison- Jater life

himself of the custom of vicarious vows, in order to show, by his conformity to prevalent usages, that "there was no truth" in the reports that he had told the Gentiles 'not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs" (Acts xxi. 20-26). If this narrative be judged by the principles which Paul proclaims in the Epistle to the Galatians, it seems hardly credible. He had broken with Judaism, and his whole preaching was a preaching of the "righteousness which is of faith," as an antithesis to, and as superseding, the "righteous- ness which is of the law." But now he is represented as resting his defence on his conformity to the law, on his being "(a Pharisee and the son of Pharisees," who was called in question for the one point only that he

believed, as other Pharisees believed, in the resurrection of the dead.

ment at Rome, and, if so, what they imply as to his history. It is held by many writers that they all belong to an earlier period of his life, especially to his stay at Caesarea (Acts xxiv. 23, 27). It is held by other writers that they were all sent from Rome, and with some such writers it has become almost an article of faith that he was im- prisoned there not once but twice. It is sometimes further supposed that in the interval between the first and second imprisonments he made his intended journey to Spain (Rom. xv. 24, which is apparently regarded as an accom- plished fact by the author of the Muratorian fragment) ; and that either before or after his journey to Spain he visited again the communities of the Aigean seaboard which are mentioned in the pastoral epistles.

The place and manner and occasion of his death are not less uncertain than the facts of his later life. The

fa Ua

only fragment of approximately contemporary evidence is a vague and rhetorical passage in the letter of Clement of Rome (c. 5): “Paul . . . having taught the whole world righteousness, and having come to the goal of the West (emt 7d Téppa Tis dicews), and having borne witness (uap- zupyoas) before the rulers, so was released from the world and went to the Holy Place, having become the greatest example of patience.” The two material points in this passage, (1) “the limit of the West,” (2) “having borne witness,” are fruitful sources of controversy. The one may mean either Rome or Spain, the other may mean either “having testified” or “having suffered martyrdom.” It is not until towards the end of the 2d century, after many causes had operated both to create and to crush traditions, that mention is made of Paul as having suffered about the same time as Peter at Rome ; but the credibility of the assertion is weakened by its connexion in the same sentence with the erroneous statement that Peter and Paul went to Italy together after having founded the church at Corinth (Dionysius of Corinth, quoted by Eusebius, 7. £., ii. 25). A Roman presbyter named Gaius speaks, a few years later, of the martyr-tombs of the two apostles being visible at Rome (quoted by Eusebius, J. c.); but neither this testimony nor that of Tertullian (De prescr. 36, Scorp. 15, Adv. Mare. iv. 5) is sufficient to establish more than the general probability that Paul suffered martyrdom. But there is no warrant for going beyond this, as almost all Paul’s biographers have done, and finding an actual date for his martyrdom in the so-called Neronian persecu- tion of 64 A.D.}

The chronology of the rest of his life is as uncertain as the date of his death. We have no means of knowing when he was born, or how long he lived, or at what dates the several events of his life took place. The nearest approach to a fixed point from which the dates of some events may be calculated is that of the death of Festus, which may probably, though by no means certainly, be placed in 62 A.D. ; even if this date were certainly known, new evidence would be required to determine the length of time during which he held office ; all that can or could be said is that Paul was sent to Rome some

time before the death of Festus in 62 a.p. How widely opinions differ as to the rest of the chronology may be seen by a reference to the chronological table which is given by Meyer in the introduction to his Commentary on the Acts, and after him by Farrar, St Pawl, vol. ii. p. 624.?

Of his personality he himself tells us as much as need ‘be known when he quotes the adverse remarks of his opponents at Corinth: “his letters, they say, are weighty and strong ; but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech of no account” (2 Cor. x. 10). The Christian romance- writer elaborated the picture, of which some traits may have come to him from tradition: ‘‘a man small in stature, bald-headed, bow-legged, stout, close-browed, with a slightly prominent nose, full of grace; for at one time he seemed like a man, at another time he had the face of an angel” (“Acta Pauli et Thecle,” c. 3, ap. Tischendorf, Acta Apos- tolorum Apocrypha, p. 41); and the pagan caricaturist speaks of him in similar terms, as “bald in front, with a slightly prominent nose, who had taken an aerial journey

EE Ss ee

1 The Martyrium Pauli in Zaeagni, Coll. mon. vet. eeel., Rome, 1698, p. 535, gives not only details but an exact date, viz., 29th June 66 A.D. ; the day has been adopted by the Latin Church as the eommon anniversary of St Peter and St Paul. All the early evidence which bears upon the point has been eolleeted by Kunze, Preeipua patrum eeelesiasticorum testimonia que ad mortem Pauli apostolt spectant, Gottingen, 1848.

2 The literature of the subject is extensive ; the most eonvenient summary of the discussions, for English readers, will be found in the introduction to Meyer’s Commentary, whieh is mentioned above, and of which there is an English translation.

into the third heaven” (pseudo-Lucian, Philopatris, c. 12). Some early representations of him on gilded glasses and sarcophagi still remain ; accounts of them will be found in Smith and Cheetham, Dict. Chr. Ant., vol. ii. p. 1621; Schultze, Die Katakomben, Leipsic, 1882, p. 149. That he was sometimes stricken down by illness is clear from Gal. iv. 13 (some have

thought also from 2 Cor. ii. 4); and at his moments of greatest exaltation "there was given to him a stake in the flesh . . . that he should not be exalted overmuch" (2 Cor. xii. 7). The nature of this special weakness has given rise to many conjectures ; the most probable is that it was one of those obscure nervous disorders which are allied to epilepsy and sometimes mis- taken for it.?

Of the writings which are ascribed to him in the current lists of Pseudo- the canonical books of the New Testament, and also of the Epistle nymous to the Hebrews, accounts will be found in separate articles under writings. their respective titles. The writings which are ascribed to him outside the canon, and which are all unquestionably pseudonymous, are the following. (1) The Epistle to the Laodiceans. This is sup- posed to be the letter mentioned in Col. iv. 16 ; it has been recog- nized as apocryphal from early times (Jer., Catal. seript. cecl., ¢. 5; Theodoret on Coloss. iv. 16, &c.), but it is found in many Latin MSS. of the New Testament. The text, which is a cento from genuine Pauline epistles, will be found, ¢.g., in Anger, Ueber den Laodicenerbrief, Leipsic, 1843 ; Lightfoot, Colossians, p. 274, who also gives a convenient summary of the views which have been held respecting the letter which is actually mentioned. (2) 4 Third Epistle to the Corinthians, t.e., the letter mentioned in 1 Cor. v. 9. This is found in an Armenian version, together with an equally apo- eryphal letter of the Corinthians to Paul; it has beeu several times printed, the best edition of it being that of Aucher, Armenian and English Grammar, Venice, 1819, p. 183. An English translation will be found in Stanley, Epistles of St Paul to the Corinthians, p. 593. (3) Letters between Paul and Seneca. 'These are first nientioned by Jerome, Catal. seript. eceles., c. 12, and Augustine, Epist. 54 (153), ad Macedonium, and have given rise to interesting discussions as to the possibility of personal relations having actually existed be- tween the two men. The letters will be found in most editions of Seneca, ¢.g., ed. Hasse, vol. iii. 476 ; for the questions which have been raised concerning them reference may conveniently be made to Funk, '' Der Briefwechsel des Paulus nut Seneca," in the Theol. Quartalschr., Tiibingen, 1867, p. 602, and Lightfoot, Philippians, p. 327. Besides these apocryphal letters there are several apocry- phal works which profess to add to our information respecting his life ; the most importaut of these are (1) Zhe Aets of Peter and Paul, (2) The Aets of Paul and Thecla, (3) The

Apocalypse of Paul ; the first two are printed in Tischendorf's Acta A 'postolorum Apocrypha, pp- 1, 40, the third iu his Apocalypses Mosis, Esre, Pauli, p. 34; all three will be found in an English version in The Apocryphal Gospels, Acts, and Revelations, translated by A. Walker, Edinburgh, 1870; an elaborate and trustworthy account of them will appear in the not yet completed work of R. A. Lipsius, Die apokryphen Apostelgeschichten und Apostellegendcn.

Pauline Theology.

The consideration of Paul's theology is rendered difficult by Diffieul- several circumstances. Some of these circumstances attach to the ties at- theology itself. (1) It has two elements, the logical and the mysti- taching cal, which are seldom altogether separable from each other ; it to his cannot be stated in a consecutive series of syllogisms, nor can any theology. adequate view of it leave out of sight elements which belong to another order of thought than that within which the modern world ordinarily moves. (2) He belonged to an age In which abstract conceptions had a greater power over men's ntinds than they have now; the extreme tendency of that feature of his age 1s seen In Gnosticism, which not only gave abstract ideas an independent existence but endowed them with personality ; and, although he was not a Gnostic, yet he lived at a time at which Gnosticism was conceivable, and some of his own expressions are not out of har- mony with it. (8) Since he was in some instances attaching new meanings to words which were already in use, and since In such a ease it is difficult for even the most rigidly logical writer to keep the new meaning entirely distinct from the old, it is natural to find that a writcr of Paul's temperament, especially when writing as he did under different circumstances and to different classes of people, should sometimes use the same word in different senses.

Other circumstances arise from the manner in which his theology

3 See Krenkel, ' Das kérperliche Leiden des Paulus," in the Zettsehr. Sf. wissenseh. Theol., 1873, p. 238; and for various views, Lightfoot, Galatians, p. 188; Farrar, St Paul, vol. i., Exeurs. x. p. 652.

Sin, the funda- mental concep- tion.

has been treated. (4) It has proved to be difficult for most writers to avoid attaching to some of the words whieh he uses, and which are also used by writers of other parts of the New Testament, ideas which may be true in themselves, and which were probably in the minds of those other writers, but which do not o> to have entered into Paul's own system of thought (5) It has proved to be difficult for most writers to keep Paul's own ideas clear from their later accretions. Augustinianism, of Thomism, and of Lutheranism ; and, since one or other of these systems of theology, or some modification of it, forms part of the edueation of most theological students, and is embodied in the catechism or confession with whose words, if not always with their meaning, every member of a Christian community is more or less familiar, it is not unnatural to find that almost all

writers have approached the subject with a certain amount of

prepossession in favour of some particular interpretation or com- bination of Paul's phrases. (6) Another kind of difficulty arises from the very limited extent to which it is possible to apply to his theology the method of comparison. If it were possible to recover a sufficient amount of current Palestinian theology for the purpose, any exposition of Paul's theology would begin by setting forth the main points of the system of ideas in which he was educated, and would proceed to show how far they were affected by the new elemeuts which were introduced into that system by his conversion. Much light is thrown upon some points by the large knowledge of current Alexandrian theology which may be obtained from Philo ; but, although Palestinian and Alexandrian theology had many elements in common, they seem to have differed most of all in those respects in which a knowledge of the former would have thrown light upon Panl. It becomes necessary, in the absence of most of the materials which would have been valuable for comparison, to content ourselves with putting together the predicates which he attaches to the several terms which he employs, with disentangling the winding threads of his arguments, and with endeavouring to ascertain wliat conceptions will best account for the several groups of his varying metaphors. The danger of stating the results of these processes in a systematic form is partly that, without the checks and side-lights which are

afforded by a knowledge of their antecedents and surroundings, any such statement is liable to have a false perspective, by making prominent that which was subordinate and giving to unimportant phrases a disproportionate value ; and partly that Paul's own variety and complexity of expression re- flect the variety and complexity of the spiritual truths with which he deals, and for which any single form of statement is inadequate.

The most fundamental conception, both historically in the de- velopment of Paul's own thought, and logically as the ground from which the rest of his theology may be deduced, is that of sin. The word is used sometimes to denote the actual doing of a wrong action, or the consciousness of having done it, and sometimes to denote the tendency to do such actions, or the quality of such actions in the abstract. This tendeney or quality is conceived as a quasi-personal being, which dwells in men (Rom. vii. 20), which exercises dominion over them (Rom. y. 21, vi. 12, 14), to which they are slaves (Rom. vi. 13, 17 sg., vii. 14), which pays them wages (Rom. vi. 23), which imposes its law upon them (Rom. vii 23, 25, vill. 2), which keeps them shut up in prison (Gal. iii. 22), or which, in less metaphorical language, causes evil desires (Rom. vii. 8). It is not precisely defined, but, since it is the opposite of obedience (Rom. vi. 16), its essence may be regarded as disobedience. No such definition was at the time necessary, for neither in his belief in the existence of sin nor in his conception of its nature did he differ from the great mass of his countrymen. His pecu- liarity was that he both believed in its universality and made that fact of its universality the basis of his teaching. In the early chapters of the Epistle to the Romans he rests the proof of the fact on an appeal to common experience. But the proof is rather of rhetorical than of logical validity. It was easy in addressing a congregation of Gentiles to point to the general and deep depravity of the society which surrounded them, and in addressing Jews not only to show that they fell short of their own standard, but also to clench the argument by an appeal to Seripture, which deelared that ‘‘there is none righteous, no not one" (Ps. xiv. 1 ; Rom. iii. 10; cf. Gal. iii. 22). But the general prevalence of depravity did not show its universality, and the appeal to Scripture was not convineing toa Gentile. These arguments are not further insisted on, and a More cogent proof is found in the fact of the universality of death ; for it was a fixed Jewish belief that ‘God created man to be immortal" (Wisd. ii. 23), and the fact that all nen died showed that all

men sinned (Rom. v. 12). Nor was even this proof suffi- cient. What had to be shown, for the purposes of his further arguments, was not merely that sin was universal but that it was so inevitably. This is done by showing that sin is inseparable from human nature on tivo grounds, the relation of which to each other is neither elear in itself nor clearly explained by Paul. (1) The one is that mankind as a race were involved in the sin of Adam (Rom. Vv. 12-19; 1 Cor. xv. 21, 22). '*Through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners' (Rom. v. 19) is

rPAuUst

Those ideas form the basis alike of

a8 Paul gathered from his own experience, which he took to be

an alternative expression with 'through the trespass of the one the many died" (Rom. v. 15). But as to the mode in which the '* disobedience" or '' trespass" of Adam affected the whole human race no information is given, and the question has been one of the chief puzzles of Christian theology in all ages. It is a point upon which, more than perhaps upon any other, light would be thrown by a fuller knowledge of contemporary Jewish theology (cf. Ecclesi- asticus, xxv. 24, ''of the woman came the beginning of sin and through her we all die" ; the question is complicated by the men- tion of Adam in 1 Cor. xv. 47 as '"'of the earth, earthy," and apparently corruptible by virtue of his earthy nature, without reference to his trangression), (2) The second ground is at once more prominent and more intelligible to a modern mind. It is that human nature consists of two elements, and that one of them,

identieal in this respect with the universal experience of mankind, is constantly suggesting sinful actions. Whether it does so because it is in itself essentially sinful, or because sin has effected a perma- nent lodgment in it, is a question which has been vigorously debated, and which is the more difficult of solution because some of Paul's expressions appear to favour the former view and some the latter. To this element of human nature he gives the name ''flesh,"' apparently including under it not only the material body but also, and more especially, the affections and desires which spring out of the body, such as love and hate, jealousy and anger ; its

tendency or “mind” (¢pévnua) is always in antagonism at once to the higher element or “spirit” (Gal. v. 17) and to the law of God, so that “they that are in the flesh cannot please God” (Roin. viii. 7, 8).

So far, in his conception of the dualism of human nature, of the inevitable tendency of the lower part to prevail over the higher, and of the consequent universality of wrongdoing, Panl did not differ from the majority of those who have at any time reflected either upon themselves or upon mankind. The idea of sin was common to him with the Stoics. But it was impossible for him to stop where the Stoics stopped, at the exhortation to men to live by the rule of what was highest in them, and so to “follow God,” For he was not a philosopher but a theologian; he was not a “citizen of the world” but a “ Hebrew of the Hebrews.” God had stood to his race in an especially close relation ; He had given ita code of laws, and that code of laws was to a Jewish theologian the measure not only of duty but of truth. How was the conception of the universality of sin consistent with the existence of “statutes” aud “judgments, which if a man do he shall live in them” (Lev. Xvili. 5, quoted in Rom. x. 5; Gal. iii, 12)? That statement of Scripture clearly implied, and most of his countrymen believed, that the perfect observance of the law was possible, and that soa man might be “righteous before God.”

It was at this point that he broke off, not only from the majority His con- of his countrymen, but from his own early beliefs. The thought ception came to him with the overwhelming power of a direct revelation, of the that the law not only had not been, but could not be, perfectly law. observed. In one sense he seems to have held even to the end of his life that there was “a righteousness that is in the law” (Phil.

lii. 6). But in another and truer sense such a righteousness was impossible. “ By the works of the law shall no flesh be justified” (Gal. ii. 16), and that not only in fact but of necessity. For the law went deeper than was commonly supposed.! It touched not only the outer but also the inner life, and in doing so it inevitably failed from the very constitution of human nature. The existence in that nature of the “fleshly” element was of itself a constant breach of the law. The “mind,” the “inner man,” might delight in the law of God, but the “flesh,” even if it were not inherently sinful, was in perpetual

“captivity to the law of sin.” And for this state of things the law had no remedy. On the one hand, it was external to men; it could not give them the force of a new life ({womorfoa, Gal. iii. 21). On the other hand, the flesh was too strong for it (Rom. viii. 3). Its failure had been foreseen and provided for. The blessing of which, before the law, God had spoken to Abraham was to come, not by observance of the law, but as the result of “promise” on the part of God, and of “faith” on the part of men (Rom. iv. 13-14; Gal. iii. 11-18). And when the question naturally presented itself, Why, if the law was an inevitable and predestined failure, it had been given at all? two answers suggested themselves ; the one was that “it was added because of transgressions,” 7.¢., probably to make men’s sins and their failure to avoid. them more apparent (Gal. iii. 19), since “through the law came the knowledge of sin” (Rom. iii. 20) ; the other was that the law came in “that the trespass might abound ” (Rom. v. 20), and that so “through the commandment sin might

1 It must be noted that there appears to be a constant interchange in his mind between the conception of the Mosaic law and the ideal conception of law in the abstract; but it is difficult to maintain that the two conceptions may always be distinguished by the presence or absence of the Greek article. 1 Cor. ix. 20, Phil. iii. 5, seem of themselves sufficient to make such a distinc- tion untenable, but the contrary view is maintained in an excellent discussion of the point by Dr Gifford, ‘‘Introduction to the Epistle to the Romans,” Pp. 41 sq., in the Speaker’s Commentary on the New Testament.

iP a

become exceeding sinful” (Rom. vii. 13; so 1 Cor. xv. 56, “the strength of sin is the law”). It was consequently a jailer and “tutor,” keeping men under restraint and discipline, until they were ready for that which God had purposed to give them in due time (Gal. iii. 28, 24).

For “in due season, when the fulness of the time was come, God gent forth His Son,” “in the likeness of sinful fiesh and for sin,” to do that which “the law could not do” (Rom. v. 6, vill. 3; Gal. iv. 4). This was a “free gift” of God (Rom. iii. 24, v. 15). The constant expression for it, and for the sum of the blessings which flow from it, is “grace” or “favour” (xdpes), a term which was already becoming specialized in an analogous sense in Hellen-

istic Greek (e.g., Wisd. iii. 9, iv. 15, "'grace and mercy is to His saints"; Philo, vol. i. p. 102, ed. Mang., "the beginning of crea- tion . . . is the goodness and grace of God"). 'Two corollaries followed from it; in the first place, the law, having failed, was superseded, and, so far from the performance of its requirements being necessary to ensure peace with God, "if ye receive circum- cision, Christ will profit you nothing" (Gal. v. 2); in the second place, the distinction between Jew and Gentile was abolished, " for ye are all one in Christ Jesus" (Gal. iii. 28).

This was ''the gospel of the grace of God" (Acts xx. 24), which it was his special mission to preach ; he speaks of it sometimes as "my gospel " (Rom. ii. 16, xvi. 25), or the *' gospel of the uucircum- cision" (Gal. ii. 7), as well as in a special sense ''the gospel of fod" (Rom. i. 1, xv. 16; 2 Cor. xi. 7; 1 Thess. ii. 2, 8, 9), or "the gospel of Christ" (Rom. i. 9, xv. 19; 1 Cor. ix. 12, 18; 2 Mn 12, ix, 13, x. 14; Gal. i. 7; Phil. i 27; 1 Thess. ii. 2; 2 Thess. i. 8), or ''the gospel of the glory of Christ" (2 Cor. iv. 4) ; and elsewhere he speaks of it as his special ''secret " or '' mystery" (Rom. xvi. 25 ; 1 Cor. ii. 1[Codd. &, A, C], and more emphatically in the later epistles, Eph. i. 9, iii. 8-9, vi. 19, Col. i. 26, 27; iv. 8).

Of this gospel Christ is the beginning and the end: theology and Christology are blended into one. Sometimes He is represented as having been 'sent forth" (Rom. viii. 3), or ''set forth" (Rom. iii, 25), or ''given up" (Rom. viii. 32), by God; sometimes, on the other hand, it is said that He ''gave Himself" (Gal. 1. 4), or 'save Himself up" (Gal. ii. 20; Eph. v. 2), or ''made Himself poor " (2 Cor. viii. 9), or ''emptied Himself" (Phil. ii. 7-8). The act by which He accomplished what He designed or was designed to do was His death on the cross (Rom. v. 6, 8, vi. 10, viii. 34, fees; 1 Cor. viii. 11, xv. 3; 2 Cor, v. 14,15; Gal. i, 21; 1 Thess. v. 10). The ''blood" of Christ (Rom. iii. 25, v. 9; 1 Cor. xi. 25; Eph. i. 7, ii. 18; Col. i. [14], 20), the ''cross" of Christ meer. i 17; Gal. v. 11, vi. 12, 14; Phil. ii. 8, iii. 18; Eph. i, 16; Col. i. 20, ii. 14), 'Christ crucified" (1 Cor. i. 28, i. 2; Gal. iii. 1), are therefore used as concise symbolical expressions for His entire work.1 The act by which the completion of that work was ratified and made manifest was His resurrection from the dead (Rom. i. 4; ef. Acts xiii. 88, 34, xvii. 31); hence "' He was delivered up for our offences and raised again for our justification " (Rom. iv. 25). The resurrection is thus the guarantee of the

truth of the gospel; without it there is no certainty that God has for- given us; ‘‘if Christ be not risen then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain” (1 Cor. xv. 14). What quality there was in the death of Christ which gave it efficacy is probably indi- cated in Rom. v. 19, Phil. ii. 8, where it is spoken of as an act of “obedience.” The precise force of the expressions, ‘‘ being made a curse for us” (Gal. iii. 13), ‘‘He made Him to be sin for us” (2 Cor. v. 21), which probably also refer to the efficacious quality of the death of Christ, is less obvious.

The death of Christ was a death on our behalf (iaép quay, Rom. fae, 8, Vill. 82, xiv. 15; 1 Cor. i. 13 [Codd. &, A, CO], [v. 7], xl 24; 2 Cor. v.15; Gal. ii. 20, iii. 18; 1 Thess. v. 10 [Codd. &, B]; ef, Eph. v. 25), or on behalf of our sins (1 Cor. xv. 3; Gal. i 4 [Cod. B]), or on our account (ep! judy, 1 Cor. i. 18 (Codd. B, D]; 1 Thess. v. 10 (Codd. A, D]), or on account of our sins (Gal. i. 4 [Codd. &, A, Dj), or of sin in general (Rom. viii. 8), or because of us or our transgressions (dd 7a mapamrdpara, d¢ atrév, Rom. iv. 25; 1 Cor. viii. 11; cf. 2 Cor. viii. 9). These general expressions are expanded into more explicit statements in various ways ; for the nature of the work which the death of Christ effected was capable of being regarded from several points of view, nor was any one metaphor or form of words adequate to express all its relations either to God or to mankind.

(1) The nature of Christ’s work is sometimes expressed in lan- guage which is relative to the idea of sacrifice ; and it is conceivable that, if the conteinporary conception of sacrifice were better known to us, most of the other expressions would be found to be relative to the ideas which were connected by that of sacrifice (1 Cor. v. tp “Christ our passover is sacrificed ” [some MSS. add ‘‘ for us”) ; the uncertain expression tdacripiov, Rom. iii. 25, probably belongs to oS eee eee

_1 This view of the place of the death of Christ in the economy of redemp- tion is so constant and integral a part of Paul’s teaching as to outweigh and set aside the inference which some writers have drawn from Rom. viil. 3, that 4 “sending” of Christ—i.e., His incarnation—was itself sufficient for the end in view,

the same group of ideas ; the expressions with saép and rep, whi have been quoted above, are sometimes mere as ane = ‘ail cases primarily sacrificial).

(2) It is sometimes expressed in language which is relative to the conception of sin as rebellion or enmity against God; what God effected through Christ was a reconciliation (karadrayh, Rom. v. 10, 11; 2 Cor. v. 18, 19), or peace (Rom. v. 1; Eph. i, 14: hence the special force of the salutation ‘‘Grace to you and peace from God,” which is prefixed to every epistle).

(8) It is sometimes expressed in language which is relative to the idea of deliverance or ‘‘salvation” (ca@ferOat, swrnpla, Rom. Ty ALG}, v. 9, and in all the epistles ; dwroAvrpwous,? Rom. ili. 24; 1 Cor. i. 80; Eph. i. 7; Col. i. 14). The idea was originally Messianic, and referred to national deliverance from foreign oppres- sion ; but it had been raised into a higher sphere of thought, that from which men are saved being conceived to be the ‘‘ wrath” of God, 7.c., His punishment of sin (Rom. v. 9).

(4) It is sometimes expressed in language which is relative to the idea of purchasing a slave (1 Cor. vi. 20, vii. 28, and probably Rom. xiv. 8, 9). That to which men were in bondage was the law (Gal. iv. 5), which cursed those who did not fully obey it (Gal. in. 10, 13), or the ‘‘elements of the universe” (Gal. iv. 8, 9), t.e., the sun and stars and other material things (cf. Wisd. xiii. 2), which are spoken of in a later epistle as ‘“‘ principalities and powers” over which Christ ‘‘triumphed” by rising from the dead (Col. 11. 15). Hence, probably, Paul’s own description of himself as the ‘‘slave of Jesus Christ” (Rom. i. 1).

(5) It is sometimes expressed in language which is relative to the conception of God as the supreme lawgiver and judge. Sin is regarded as affording ground fora charge (€y«Anmua, cf. Rom. viii. 38) against the sinner, and, sin being universal, all the world was liable to the judgment of God (Rom. iii. 19). But it was possible for the Judge, for certain reasons which He considered valid, 1.¢., on account of the sufficient exhibition or declaration of His righteousness in the death of Christ, not to take account of the offences charged, but to acquit (d:catoty) instead of pronouncing sentence of condemnation ; by this acquittal the person acquitted was placed in the position of one against whom no charge existed (Sixacoe katracradjoovrar, Rom. v. 19); and, since the acquittal might be regarded in

its different relations as a consequence of either the favour of God, or the death of Cliist, or the trust in God which made it valid for the individual, men are said in various passages to be acquitted by God's favour (Rom. iii. 24), or by the blood of Christ (Rom. v. 9; ef. Gal. ii. 17), or by faith (Rom. iil 98, v. | yxGaltili. 8, 24).*

(6) It is sometimes expressed in language which is relative to the conception of a mystical union between Christ and the human race, or part of it, of such a kind that when He died men also died, and that when He rose again they also rose with Him (Rom. vi. 3-10; Gal. ii. 20; and also in the later epistles, Eph. ii. 5, 6; Col. ii, 12)am,. 3):

Some of these expressions are occasionally combined ; for example, the ideas of acquittal and reconciliation (Rom. v. 1; 2 Cor. v. 19), those of acquittal and deliverance (Rom. v. 9), and those of sacrifice, in which Christ is conceived as dying on men's behalf, and of mystical union in which they die with Him (2 Cor. v. 14). The facts both of their variety and of their combination afford a strong argument against treating any one mode of expression as though it stood alone and gathered up into a single metaphor the whole of the new relations of God to men.

The effect of Christ's work upon mankind is also expressed in Christ's Sometimes it is expressed under the form of an work.

various ways. for imparted attribute, sometimes under that of a new condition of life or a new relation to God. It is most frequently spoken of as (1) righteousness, or (2) life, or (3) sonship. (1) When spoken of as righteousness, it is sometimes said to have been given to men (Rom. vy. 17); sometimes it is reckoned to them or placed to their account (Rom. iv. 6, 11; Gal. ii. 6) ; sometimes it is a power to which they have become, or ought to become, subject (Rom. vi. 18, x. 3); sometimes it is regarded as a quality which men already possess by virtue of Christ's death (Rom. v. 17); sometimes it 1s still to be attained (Rom. iv. 24, vi. 16; Gal. v. 5). (2) When spoken of as life, the conception also seems to vary between that of a life which men have already received, or into which they have already entered (Rom. vi. 4, viti. 10), and that of a life which is future (Rom. v. 17; Gal. vi. 8; cf. Col. ili. 3, 4, where it is conceived as being now

Aa aie

2 This word seems to have lost its etymological sense of “ransoming,” and to have connoted only ‘“‘ deliverance,” ¢.g., in the LXX., Dan. iv. 29 (31), Nebuchadnezzar speaks of 6 xpévos Tis dmoduTpwoews jou, “the time of my deliverance”; in Treneus, i. 9, 5, it is used of the disinissal of the

tators in a theatre. ; “Ett is difficult to estimate the mischief which has been caused by the fact

that justificare was adopted from early times as the translation of Otxatovy, and the consequent fact that a large part of Western theology has been based upon the etymological signification of justificare rather than upon the mean- ing of its Greek original. One of the clearest instances of the meaning of Sixacooy in Biblical Greek is LXX. Exod. xxiii. 7, ob ducanwoers Tov aceBh ‘thou shalt not acquit the wicked man for bribes.”

vi — 4

évexev Swpwv,

e

Faith a state of mind.

426

“hid with Christ in God,” to be manifested at His coming) ; and similarly sometimcs men are regarded as having already died with Christ (Rom. vi. 6-11), and sometimes the Christian’s life is regarded as a prolonged act of dying in the “ mortification” of the “deeds of the body” (Rom. viii. 13; cf. Col. iii. 5). (3) When spoken of as sonship, the conception also varies between that of a perfected and that of a still future “adoption”; on the one hand “we have received a spirit of adoption” (Rom. viii. 15), so that we are “all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus” (Gal. iti. 26), and on the other hand we are still “ waiting for the adoption, the deliverance of our body” (Rom. vili. 23).

For, although Christ died for all men (Rom. v. 18 32 Cor. v. 14, 15 ; so in the pastoral epistles, 1 Tim. ii. 4, 6; Tit. i. 11), it docs not therefore follow that all men are at once in full possession of the benefits which His death made possible to them. Their righteous- ness or life or sonship is rather potential than actual. It becomes actual by the co-operation of their own mind and will, that is, by the continuous existence in them of the state of mind called trust or "faith."1 For this view of the place of trust or " faith" St Paul finds support, and may perhaps have found the original suggestion, in the Old Testament. Abraham had believed that God both could and would perform His promises, and this belief "was counted to him as righteousness" (Gen. xv. 6; Rom. iv. 3; Gal. ili. 6); Habakkuk had proclaimed that "the just shall live as a consequence of his faith'? (Hab. ii. 4; Rom. i. 17; Gal. ii. 11) ; and another prophet had said, "whosoever believeth in Him shall not be put to shame" (Rom. ix. 33, x. 11). The object of this trust or faith is variously stated to be " Him that raised Jesus our Lord from the dead" (Rom. iv. 24; x. 9), "Him that justifieth the ungodly" (Rom. iv. 5), or "Jesus Christ" (Rom. iii. 22; Gal. 11. 16, &c.), or His "blood" (Rom. iii. 25 probably). Hence the statement, that the gospel is "the power of God unto salvation," is limited by the condition "to every one that believeth"? (Rom. i.16). Hence, also, since this state of mind is that by which the death of Christ becomes of value to the individual, while he is said on the one hand to be acquitted or justified by Christ's blood (Rom. v. 9), he is said on the other hand to be acquitted or justified as a result of his faith (Rom. v. 1). Hence, also, the new relation of "righteousness" in which men stand to God,—while on the one hand it is "God's righteousness," as being a relation which is established by His favour and not by their merit (Rom. i. 17, iti. 21, 22, v. 17), it is on the other hand a "righteousness which results from faith" (4 éx mliorews Sixacootvy, Rom. x. 6). From another point of view it is an act of obedience or state of submission (Rom. i. 5, vi. 16, 17,

aU te

into being "'is created after God in righteousness and true holiness" (Eph. iv. 24). In another sense this mystical dying with Christ and living with Him is rather an ideal towards which the believer must be continually striving ; it affords a motive for his resisting the tendency to sin: "reckon ye also

yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God in Christ Jesus our Lord ; let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body" (Rom. vi. 11, 12). (8) A third answer, which, though less directly given, is even more constantly implied, is that faith is followed by, if it be not coincident with, an immediate operation of God upon the soul which becomes for it a new moral power. For, although in the "natural man" there is an element, ''the flesh," over which sin has such an especial dominion as to be said to dwell in it, there is also another element, the ''mind" (voids), or "spirit" (veya), or "inner man" (6 éow dv@pwos), which is the slave, not of the "law of sin," but of the "law of God."? Against this the flesh wages a successful war and "brings it into captivity to the law of sin" (Rom. vii. 22-25). The result is that the mind may become "reprobate" (ddéxceuos, Rom. i, 28; cf. Col. ii. 18, where the "mind" is so completely under the dominion of the flesh as to be called "the mind of the flesh"'), or it may become defiled and ultimately lost (2 Cor. vii. 1; 1 Cor. v. 5). It is upon this part of man's nature that God works. By means of faith (Gal. iii. 14), or as a result of faith (Gal. iii. 2, v. 5), God gives and men receive His own Spirit (1 Thess. iv. 8) or the Spirit of Christ (Rom. viii. 10; Gal. iv. 6; Phil. i. 19). Some- times the Spirit of God is said to "dwell in" them (Rom. viii. 9; 1 Cor. iii. 16), and once the closeness of the union is expressed by the still stronger metaphor of a marriage: "he that is joined to the Lord is one spirit" (1 Cor. vi. 17). This indwelling of, or union with, the Spirit is for the believer a new life ; Christ has become for him "a life-giving spirit" (1 Cor. xv. 45); this is a fact of his spiritual nature which will in due time be manifest even in the quickening of his mortal body (Rom. viii. 11), but in the mean- time it becomes, like the facts of emancipation from sin and of union with Christ, a ground of moral obligation. "If we live by the Spirit, by the Spirit also let us walk" (Gal. v. 25); and the freedom from spiritual death is conditional on the " mortifying of the deeds of the body " (Rom. viii. 13).

It will be evident that, although Paul nowhere defines his conception of faith, he did not conceive it as a mere intellectual assent ; it was a complete self-surrender to God (Gal. ii. 20), and on its human side it showed its activity in the great ethical prin- ciple of "love," which is the sum of a man's duties to his fellow- men (Gal. v. 6, 14).

But, as his conception of the effects of Christ's death, and of the Eschato nature of faith by which these effects are appropriated by the indi- logical vidual, has, so far as the present life is concerned, chiefly a moral functio aspect, and connects itself with practical duties, so, on the other of faith

x. 16, xvi. 19, 26; 2 Cor. x. 5, 6), being the acceptance by men of God's free gift as distinguished from "seeking to establish their own righteousness," ¢. ¢., to attain to a freedom from sin which their fleshly nature renders impossible (Rom. x. 3).

It is obvious that such a doctrine as that of acquittal from the guilt of wrongdoing by virtue of an act or state of mind, instead of by virtuc of a course of conduct, is " antinomian," not merely in the scnse that it supersedes the law of Moses, but also because it appears to supersede the natural law of morality. It was no wonder that some men should infer, and even attribute to Paul himself the inference, " Let us do evil that good may come" (Rom. iii. 8). The objection was no doubt felt to be real, inasmuch as it is more than once stated and receives more than one answer. (1) Onc of the answers which Paul gives to it (Rom. vi. 15 sq.) is due to his conception of both sin and righteousness as external forces. He had regarded sinful acts as the effects of the dominion of a real power residing within men and compelling them to do its will. He now points out that, to those who believe, this dominion is at anend. The believer is not only acquitted from the guilt of sin, but also emancipated from its slavery. He has become a slave to righteousness or to God (Rom. vi. 18, 22). This is stated partly as a fact and partly asa ground of obligation (Rom. vi. 18, 19); and the disregard of the obligation, or "building up again those things which I destroyed," brings a man again under the cognizance of God's law as a transgressor (Gal. ii. 18). (2) Another answer is due to the conception which has been mentioned above of the mystical union between Christ and mankind. This also is stated partly as a fact and partly as a ground of obligation. In one sense the believer has already died with Christ and risen with Him: "our old man was crucified with Him" (Rom. vi. 6), ''they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh" (Gal. v. 24), "the life which I now live in the flesh I live in faith, the faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for mc" (Gal. ii. 20); so that on the one hand Christ is said to be in the believer (2 Cor. xiii. 5), and on the other hand the believer is said to be "in Christ."

Whichever mode of conceiving the Christian life be adopted, a life of sin is jmpossible to it: “if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature” (2 Cor. v. 17), and the “new man” which thus comes pS ee ea a

1 “Faith” is not detined by Paul, but his use of the term so mearly re-sembles Philo’s as to be explicable by it. With Philo it is the highest form of eee iy ee ae more certain than either that which comes from

nses or that which comes from reasoning; ef., e.g., D it, i c. 5, vol. ii. p. 412, ed. Mang. : iat

hand, it comprehends the whole physical and spiritual being of man, and connects itself with his eschatology. The resurrection of Christ is not merely the type of moral resurrection from sin to holiness, but at once the type and the cause and the pledge of the actual resurrection of the body. “Ifwe believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also that are fallen asleep in Jesus will God bring with Him” (1 Thess. iv. 14) ; “He which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also with Jesus” (2 Cor. iv. 14); “if we died with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him” (Rom. vi. 8). Sometimes the new life of the body is viewed in relation to the mystical union of the believer with Christ: “we which live are alway delivered unto death for Jesus’ sake, that the life also of Jesus may be manifested in our mortal flesh” (2 Cor. iv. 11); and it follows from the conception of the “last Adam” asa “life-giving spirit” that, “as we havc bortie the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly” (1 Cor. xv. 49; this will follow from the context, even if with most uncial MSS. we read “let us also bear”). Sometimes this new life is viewed asa result of the present indwelling of the Spirit: “ifthe Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwellcth in you, He that raised up Christ Jesus from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies through” (or ‘‘ because of”) ‘‘His Spirit that dwelleth in you” (Rom. viii. 11). This redemption or deliverance of the body from the “bondage of corruption” is the complction of the “adoption,” “the liberty of the glory of the children of God” (Rom. viii. 21, 23); but the nature of the new body is not clearly explained. Sometimes the language seems to imply that this mortal body will be “quickened” or “transformed” (Rom. viii. 11; Phil. iii, 21), and the analogy afforded is that of a seed which

after being buried reappears in a new form (1 Cor. xv. 36, 37); sometimes, on the

2 The relation of vols to mve0ua has been much discussed ; among contemporary theologians Holsten and Weiss deny the existence of a mveSua in the natural man, Liidemann and Pfleiderer allow it. It is certain that the two words are used in the same sense by Philo; and it is most probable that they are also so uséd by Paul. One of many proofs is that in quoting Isa. xl. 18 in 1 Cor. ii. 13 he adopts vody from the LXX. as the translation of MV (whereas avedua is the more usual translation), and proceeds to use the phrase voy Xpicrod for mveDua Xpiorod, which the argument requires, and with which it must be identical.

other hand, it seems to be implied that the earthly body will be dissolved, and that what awaits us is a new body, ‘a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens” (2 Cor. v. 1).

This change will come to all believers at the “advent” (rapoveia, 1 Cor. [i. 9, Cod. D.] xv. 23; 1 Thess. ii. 19, &c.), or “revelation” (droxadvyrs, 1 Cor. i. 7; 2 Thess. i. 7), or “manifestation” (ém- gdvera, 2 Thess. ii. 8, and afterwards in the pastoral epistles) of Jesus Christ. Some of them will have “fallen asleep in Christ,” in which state he seems to conceive that they are “at home with the Lord” (2 Cor. v. 8) ; and others, among whom, in the language of confident hope, he includes himself, will be still alive (1 Thess. iv. 15-17). For “the day of our Lord Jesus Christ’”’ (1 Cor. i. 8, vy. 5; 2 Cor. i, 14, &c.) was conceived to be not far distant: “the night is far spent, the day is at hand” (Rom. xiii. 12), and “the mystery of lawlessness,” which was to be revealed before that day could come, was already at work (2 Thess. ii. 3-7). But the “day” itself is variously conceived ; sometimes the eternal life of believers in and with Christ appears to begin at the very moment of the Advent (1 Thess. iv. 17), and hence the day is spoken of as “the day of deliverance” (Eph. iv. 30); but more frequently “thc day of the Lord” is also the day of judgment (Rom. ii. 5, 16), according to the eschatological ideas which had for some time been current among the Jews ; in it all men, believers and unbelievers alike, are represented as standing before the judgment-seat of God (Rom. xiv.

“to the righteousness of God” (Rom. x. 3). God had now carried out another part of His purpose. He had “called” the Gentiles, In the earlier epistles Paul spoke of this calling as having been not only part of God’s purpose, but also expressly announced from time to time by the prophets (Rom. ix. 25, 26, x. 20); but in the doubtful later epistles it is spoken of as a “mystery which hath been hidden from all ages and generations” (Col. i. 26), but now had been “made known through the church” “unto the principali- ties and the powers in the heavenly places” (Eph. iii. 9, 10). But as with the Jews so with the Gentiles, the divine call was not only a fact but also a ground of obligation. While, on the one hand, “we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works which God afore prepared that we should walk in them” (Eph. ii. 10), yet, on the other hand, the Ephesians are entreated to “walk worthily of the calling wherewith ye were called” (Eph. iv. 1). In the Epistle to the Romans a still further part of God’s purpose is indicated. The salvation which had come to the Gentiles by the fall of the Jews was ‘to provoke them to jealousy” (xi. 11); as in time past the Gentiles “were disobedient to God but now have obtained mercy” by the disobedience of the Jews, “even so have these also now been disobedient, that by the mercy shown to you they also may now obtain mercy” (xi. 30, 31). And so not only would “the fulness of the Gentiles come in,” but also “all Israel shall be saved” (xi. 25, 26); “for God hath shut up all unto dis- obedience that He might have mercy upon all” (xi. 32).

10) or of Christ (2 Cor. v. 10) to give account of themselves to God, and to receive the reward of the things done in the body, whether good or evil. There is a similar variety of view in regard to what will happen after the Advent. The language which is used somc- times leads to the inference that the destruction of the enemies of

But, just as the apparent fatalism of the theory of absolute pre- The destination without reference to works stands side by side with the “called” obligation of men to “work out their own salvation with fear and or the trembling” (Phil. ii. 12), so this apparent universalism stands side “saints.”

the cross will be immediately effected (2 Thess. i. 9, ii. 8), and sometimes to the inference, which was also in accordance with current eschatological

ideas, that there will be a Messianic reign, during which Christ will “put all enemies under His feet” (1 Cor. xy. 25). And, while in some passages unbelievers or evildoers are said to be punished with “eternal destruction from the face of the Lord” (2 Thess, i. 9; cf. Rom. ii. 8, 9), the view elsewhere seems to be that “in Christ shall a2? be made alive,” the universality of the life in Christ being coextensive with the universality of the death in Adam (1 Cor. xv. 22).

It is difficult to reconcile these conceptions with one another, and still more so to reconcile some of them with other parts of Paul’s doctrine of salvation, except perhaps on the hypothesis that even after his conversion many of the apocalyptic ideas which were current among his countrymen remained in his mind; this hypo- thesis is made the more probable by the fact that in the later and the probably post-Pauline epistles the apocalyptic elements are rare, and that the most definite eschatological statement which they contain is in full harmony with the conception of the believer’s mystical union with Christ, “when Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory’”’ (Col. iii. 4).

Such are thc main elements of Paul’s soteriology. To most of the philosophical questions which have since been raised in con- nexion with it he neither gives nor implies an answer. It is possible that many of such questions did not even suggest them- selves tohim. The chief of all of them, that of the necessity of sacrifice, was probably axiomatic toa Jewish mind, and its place in Paul’s system must be accepted with all the difficulties which such an acceptance involves. But there is one such philosophical ques- tion which even in Paul’s time had begun to have a fascination for Oriental thinkers. What is the relation of free will to God? or in other words, Is what men do the result of their own choice, or is it determined for them; and, if it be determined for them, how can God punish them as though they had been free (Rom. ili. 5, ix. 19)? The answer is given in the form of an antinomy, of which the thesis is the sovereignty of God and the antithesis the respon- sibility of mien. The sovereignty of God is absolute. Instead of entertaining the objection which has since been raised, that God, having created rational and moral agents, has placed Himself under an obligation to deal with them as such, he makes the dependence of men upon God to be unconditioned, and the alleged rights of men as against God to be

as non-existent as those of an earthenware vessel against the potter who has given it shape (Rom. ix. 20-21). Some men are “vessels of wrath fitted unto destruction,’ some are “vessels of mercy .. . prepared unto glory” (Rom. ix. 22, 28) ; aud God’s dealings with them are as little conditioned by necessity as His original creation of them: “He hath mercy on whom He will, and whom He will He hardeneth” (Rom. ix. 18). But, over against this view of God’s sovereignty, and without any endeavour to reconcile the difficulties which suggest themselves, he places the fact of human responsibility. The purpose of God worked itself out in his- tory, but not without men’s co-operation. He had first “called” the Jews; and though, on the one hand, “God gave them a spirit of stupor, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear” (Rom. xi. 8), yet, on the other hand, they were “a disobedient and gainsaving people” (Rom. x. 21), “seeking to establish their own righteousness,” and not subjecting themselves

by side with the fact that all men do not receive the gospel. Out of the mass of men some, whether Jews or Gentiles, are “called.” They constitute a separate class. As from one point of view they are the “called according to God’s purpose” (Rom. viii. 28), or “called to be saints” (Rom. i. 7; 1 Cor. i. 2), or simply “called” (1 Cor. i. 24; it is to be noted that the expression does not occur in the later epistles), or “choscn” (Rom. viii. 38; Col. iii. 12), so, on the othcr hand, they are “they that believe” (Rom. iil. 22; IeCongi de xiv Gale Wile 22) Ephee Or Mulicssr tm jellen 0, 13; 2 Thess. i. 10); the call and the belief are complementary of each other, and therefore the terms are used as convertible (1 Cor. i, 21, 24). But the more frequent terms are those which came to Paul from his earlier associations. The Jews had known one another, and had spoken of themselves, in contrast to the rest of the world, as “brethren” (¢.g., Deut. xv. 12, xvii. 15; Philo, ii. 285, ed. Mang.) or “saints” (¢.g., Deut. xxxiii. 3; Dan. vii. 21). Paul applies these terms to the new “people of God”; they are “brethren” (¢.g., Rom. i. 13, most commonly as a term of address), and “the saints” (e.g., Rom. xii. 18, xv. 25; 1 Cor. vi. 1). As such they are regarded as forming collectively a unity or society, which Paul, adopting a current Latinism, calls a “body” (corpus is frequently used in this sense ; oGua is its Hellenistic translation in, ¢.g., the letter of Mark Antony in Joseph., Ant. Jud., xiv. 12, 3, 7d rhs Actas cGua). A more important and permanent application of the view that those who believed in Jesus took the place of the Jews, and stood to God in the same

special relation in which the Jews had stood, was the use of the term “congregation” or “assembly ” (Heb. gahal, which the LXX. renders by both owa- ywyh and éxxdyola; in the Epistle of James (11. 2») the former of these words is used of a particular Christian congregation ; Paul uses the latter only, and the English translators render it invariably by “church”) to designate the mass of believers regarded as a unity. The use of the word éxkAyoia in this sense in the undis- puted epistles is rare,—probably only in 1 Cor. xv. 9, Gal. 1. 18, in each of which passages it is qualified, as in, ¢.g., Deut. xxiii. 1, Nehem. xiii. 1, as “God’s congregation.” But either towards the end of his life, or, according to many modern critics, only among his followers after his death, this conception of Christians as forming a congregation was idealized. The common metaphor of a “body” by which that congregation had been designated, and which had already been elaborated as indicative of the diversity of parts and functions in the several Christian communities (1 Cor. xii. 12-30), is elaborated in the Epistles to the Ephesians and Colossians as indicative of the relation of the aggregate of believers to Christ. They are conceived, not as forming a society which bears Christ’s name, .but as bearing to Him partly the relation which the several members of an organized body bear to the head (Eph. i. 22, iv. 15, 16; Col. i. 18, 24), and partly the relation of a wife to a husband (Eph. v. 28-32). Ina phrase of difficult and doubtful meaning the congregation of Christians, or “ church,” is spoken of as His “ fulness” (wAjpwua, Eph. i. 238), and the progress in Christian virtues is represented partly as the growth of an organism to its full stature (Eph. iv. 14-16 ; Col. ii. 19), and partly as the filling out or realization of that which is empty or imperfect h. iii. 19; Col. i. 9). rds: Rie by side with this conception of the “called” or “saints as collectively forming a “body” or “congregation, | which was the Christian counterpart and fulfilment of the Jewish “congre-

Christian form communities.

gation," was the fact that wherever the gospel was preached, especially in the great cities of the empire, the converts tended to Such communities, whether for religious or

commu- non-religious purposes, were among the commonest phenomena

nities.

of theage. How far Paul himself encouraged the formation of such communities among his converts is uncertain ; but many considera- tions lead to the inference that where they were so formed they were formed rather upon the Gentile than upon the Jewish model. Out of several names which were in current use to designate them, that which Paul used was common to both Gentile and Jewish com- munities, and it was also that which he continued to use in another sense to designate the whole body of Christians. Hence has arisen the confusion which pervades almost all Christian litera- ture between the use of the word éxxAyola, or ‘‘ church," to denote the whole multitude of those who will be saved regarded as an ideal aggregate, and the use of the same word to denote a visible community of professing Christians in any one place or country.

The raison détre of these communities was mutual help in the spiritual, the moral, and the outward life. Every member of a community had received the new life of the Spirit, and the diver- sities of character and opportunity which exist between man and man were conceived as diversities of manifestation (¢avépwois) of the Spirit who lived within them, or, from another point of view, as diversities of gifts (yaplouara). ‘“ But to each one was given the manifestation of the Spirit to profit withal" (1 Cor. xii. 7). When the community met in assembly some of its members “ prophesied," preaching as though with a divine inspiration ; some spoke in such ecstasy that their words seemed to be those of an unknown tongue and needed an interpreter; some taught again the lessons which they had learned from Paul; some had “a psalm"; some had “a revelation" (1 Cor. xiv. 26 sg.). Sometimes the aim was rather moral than spiritual “edification." They exhorted one another, and “admonished" one another (Rom. xv. 14).

Sometimes on points of practice they carried this “judging” of one another farther than Paul approved. The Christian liberty, which was no less a bond of union than the recognition of the new Christian law, was in danger of being overthrown; and more than once Paul thought it necessary to insist that they should not judge one another any more, but rather strive not to put a stumbling-block in each other’s way (Rom. xiv. 10 sg.; 1 Cor. x. 25 sg.). If, however, the offence of any member were gross and open, the assembly became a court of discipline. To the community at Corinth, which had been slow to recognize the necessity of being thus ‘‘children of God without blemish in the midst of a crooked and perverse genera- tion,” Paul wrote peremptorily “not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner” (1 Cor. v. 11). In one flagrant case they were bidden to “put away the wicked man from among themselves” (1 Cor. v. 13); but the right of the community to deal with such cases at their discretion was also recognized ; for, when the guilty person had on his repentance been forgiven, or punished with a lesser punishment, instead of being expelled, Paul wrote again that the action of the majority was sufficient and had his approval (2 Cor. ii. 6, 10). But all such action was subordi- nated to the general rule, which is repeated in many forms, “let all that ye do be done in love” (1 Cor. xvi. 14). A not less promi- nent aim of these communities was mutual help in the material and outward life. Some of their members were necessitous or sick ; and the duty of helping all such was discharged partly by giving contributions to the common fund and partly by distri- buting it. Sometimes also the members of other communities came as strangers, travelling as men did, “quorum cophinus fenumque supellex”’ (Juvenal, iii 14, of Jews). For such men, who probably brought, as in later times, letters of recommendation from one community to another (2 Cor. iii. 1), there was an ungrudging hospitality ; and not long afterwards, if not in Paul’s own time, it was a necessary qualification for a widow who wished to be placed as such on the roll of the community that she should not only have “used hospitality ’’ but also herself have “washed the feet” of the tired travellers as they came in (1 Tim. v.10). In Thessa- lonica, where the community was probably both poor and small, it seems probable that the members worked together at common trades, making contributions to a common fund and sharing a common table. It was natural that some should presume on the goodness of their brethren, and try to share the latter without making

contributions to the former. Paul made a special rule that this should not be the case, and he himself, though he had the right to exemption, yet, for the sake of example, would not

eat bread for nought at any man's hand, but in labour and travail worked night and day" that he might not burden the slender resources of the brethren (2 Thess. iii. 8; 1 Thess. ii. 9).

In such communities, where the " gift" of each member was used for the common good, organization had not the importance which it had in an ordinary secular society. All work which the members of the community did for one another, including that which was done by the apostle himself, was a "ministry" (dtaxovla), and every one who did such work was, so far forth, a " minister " (dtaxovos). The

. ficance.

PAU B

names which ultimately came to be appropriated by special officers, appointed to do delegated work, were at first common to the whole body of members. As is natural in all communities, there were some who devoted themselves to the work with especial zeal; and the most rudimentary form of organization is found at Thessalonica, where certain persous are spoken of as devoting themselves to the special works of " labouring," 7.¢e., probably attending to the material needs of the poorer brethren, ''admonishing,"' 7.¢., probably bring- ing back erring brethren to the right way, and " presiding," or more probably (though the word is of uncertain meaning) "acting as protector," like a Roman " patronus,"' against oppression from with- out. The community are enjoined to recognize such persons, "and to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake " (1 Thess, vy. 12, 18). In a similar way at Corinth, where the democratical character of the community is even more apparent, Paul beseeches the brethren to "be in subjection" to those who had "set them- selves to minister unto the saints" (1 Cor. xvi. 15, 16). But this recognition of the special zeal of certain members was very far from being a recognition or appointment of officers assuch. The functions which came in time to be regarded as giving those who discharged them an exceptional status, were only regarded as

“gifts,” resembling in kind and not surpassing in excellence those of the other members of the community. In the Epistle to the Romans, “he that ruleth” (or “protecteth ”) is in the same rank as “he that giveth” and ‘“‘he that exhorteth ” (Rom. xii. 8) ; and in the First Epistle to the Corinthians “helps” and “ governments” are not prominent above “miracles,” “healings,” and “divers kinds of tongues” (1 Cor. xii. 28). It is not until the later period, and probably also the different circumstances, of the Epistle to the Philippians that officers are found with definite titles, and probably also with a distinct status ; Paul there writes “to all the saints . . . with the bishops and deacons” (Phil. i. 1). Still later, in the Epistle to the Ephesians, it seems probable that those who are spoken of as “apostles,” “ prophets,” “evangelists,” “pastors and teachers,” are distinct from the great body of the community (Eph. iv. 11, 12). But it is to be noted that in no certainly authentic epistle does Paul make any mention of “presbyters.” The view of Grotius and Vitringa that the “church” took the place of the “synagogue” seems, as far as the Pauline communities are concerned, to lave little foundation. Those communities had a much closer resem- blance to the Greek and Roman associations in the midst of which they grew ; they stood side by side with the Jewish communities, but distinct from them, as “the churches of the Gentiles” (Rom. xvi. 4).

Admission to the tommunity, or at least to full membership of Baptism,

the community, seems to have been effected by the rite of baptism: “in one spirit were we all baptized into one body” (1 Cor. xii. 18). So important was this form of admission conceived to be that when a believer died before baptism another appears to have been baptized vicariously for him (1 Cor. xv. 29). It wasa baptism “into Christ Jesus” (Rom. vi. 3; “into Christ,” Gal. iii. 27),—-a phrase which must probably be interpreted by the analogous expressions in 1 Cor. i. 18, 15, to mean that the name of Jesus Christ alone was used (that the name of the Trinity was not invariably used in early times is clear from St Ambrose, De Spirttu Saneto, i. 3). But in the teaching of the apostle baptism was more than an initiatory rite, and baptism “into Christ Jesus” had for him a special signi- The immersion of the body in water was a “being buried with Christ,” and that not only symbolically but in a real, though mystical, sense ; the rising out of the water was in a similar sense an actual rising with Christ into a new life, “that, like as Christ was

raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we also might walk in newness of life” (Rom. vi. 4, where the word twhs, “life,” must be taken in its customary sense of actual or physical, not metaphorical or moral, life). It was otherwise ex- ee as the ‘putting on” of Christ, é.e., the being endowed with

is nature (Gal. iii. 27, where the same word is used as in 1 Cor. xv. 58, “this mortal must put on immortality”). In the later form of Paul’s doctrine an analogy was drawn between baptism and cir- eumcision (Col. ii. 11, 12), the point of the analogy apparently being, not merely that each was an initiatory rite, but that, as in circumcision there was a “putting off” of a part of the body, so in baptism the whole “body of the flesh” was destroyed and the” “new man” put on. There was the further significance in the rite that by baptism “into one body” the distinctions of race were obliterated. The baptized became “one man in Christ Jesus,” so that there could no longer be either Jew or Greek, bond or free, male or female (Gal. iii. 28; cf. 1 Cor. xii. 13). The differences between the several members were merely the differences of functions which result from the diversity of parts in an organic whole ; and thereby the foundations of a world-wide society were laid.

The most significant act of the community when it met together The was the common meal.

together. Thiscommon meal was a sacred meal ; it was “ the Lord’s Supper’; it continued and commemorated the Paschal supper at which the Lord had bidden His disciples to eat the bread which was

Like the members of most contemporary Lord’s associations, the members of the Christian communities dined Supp’

Poe lb

His body, and to drink of the cup which was the “new covenant in His blood,” in remembrance of Him; it thereby “ proclaimed the Lord’s death till He come” (1 Cor. xi. 24-26). Possibly owing to the double sense of the word xowwvia, viz., “partaking,” and “sharing in common,” two views seem to be mingled together in the significance which Paul attached to the

rite. The one is that, as in “Israel after the flesh” “they which eat the sacrifices” had “communion with the altar,” and as those who partook of the heathen sacrifices had “communion with demons” (7.e., with the false gods to whom the sacrifices were offered), so to those who “nartook of the table of the Lord” the “cup of blessing” was “a participation in the blood of Christ” and the “bread which we break” was “a participation in the body of Christ” (1 Cor. x. 16- 91). The other view is that in thus partaking in common of the “body of Christ” the members of the community realized and con- solidated their unity; “seeing that it is one bread, we who are many are one body” (1 Cor. x. 17). Both views must be regarded in relation to his couception of the mystical union of Christ with those who were baptized into His name, and of their consequent union with one another.

Literature.—The literature which bears upon St Paul is so extensive that a complete account of it would be as much beyond the compass of this article as it would be bewildering to its readers. The books which are here mentioned are the more important modern books which, without being in all cases con- clusive or satisfactory, will enable a student to learn the nature of the main questions which have been raised. I. Lire :—Neander, Geschichte der Pflanzung a. Leitung der christlichen Kirche durch die Apostel (vol. i., 4th ed., Hamburg, 1847, Eng. tr. in Bohn’s Standard Library); Baur, Paulus der Apostel Jesu Christi (Leipsic, 1845, Eng. tr. in Theological Translation Fund Library); Renan, Les Apétres (Paris, 1866), and Saint Paul (1869); Krenkel, Paulus der Apostel der Heiden (Leipsic, 1869); Hausrath, Der Apostel Paulus (2d ed., Heidelberg, 1872), and art. ‘‘ Paulus,” in Schenkel’s Bibel-Lexicon ; Straatmann,

PAUL tue Deacon. See PauLus Draconus.

PAUL or Samosata, bishop of Antioch from about 260 a.p., is famous in church history as the author of the last attempt to replace the doctrine of the essential (phy- sical) divinity of Christ by the old view of the human personality of the Redeemer. ‘The effort was not success- ful even within his own community. At an Oriental general council, held at Antioch as early as the year 264, his teaching was investigated ; but no conclusion was come to because it was alleged Paul had been cunning enough to disguise his real opinions. A second synod was equally abortive ; but at a third (probably in

the year 268), after a discussion between Paul and a presbyter named Mal- chion—a sophist of Antioch, and head of a scholastic institution—the metropolitan was excommunicated and his successor appointed. Under the protection of Zenobia, however, Paul continued in his office for four years longer; and the church of Antioch was split into two factions. In the year 272 the city was taken by the emperor Aurelian, who decided in person that the church- building belonged to the bishop who was in epistolary communication with the bishops of Rome and Italy. This decision of course proceeded on political considerations ; and indeed it is probable that behind the theological con- troversy there had been all along a political disagreement, the opponents of Paul being enemies of Zenobia and ad- herents of the Roman party. About the life of Paul we know scarcely anything. His enemies, indeed, describe him as an unspiritual prelate, an empty preacher, an arro- gant man of the world, and a crafty sophist ; but this portrait must not be too readily accepted. We are told that he preferred the title of Ducenarius to that of bishop. This probably implies that he actually was a procurator ducenarius, a civil post of considerable dignity, and we may well believe that he was very conscious of his posi- tion, maintained its formalities with some pride, and used it to give effect to his peculiar views. As an acconiplished theologian he strenuously opposed the old expositors, 7.¢., the theologians of Alexandria, and prohibited the use In public worship of all those church hymns in which the essential divinity of Christ found expression.

His doctrine was no novelty, but merely a development of primitive Christian belief as represented, €.J-y by Her- mas, and at a later time by the so-called Alogi in Asia

|

el

429

Paulus de Apostel van Jezus Christus (Amsterdain, 1874); Beyschlag, in Ri
i

Handwirterd. des bibl. Alterthums ; — Schmidt, in ke Rellonoyll Ga ed.); and, in English, Conybeare and Howson, The Life and Epistles of St Paul g Farrar, 1 he Life and Work of St Paul; Lewin, The Life and Epistles of St Paul. Detailed discussions of most of the important points will also be found in books upon the Acts of the Apostles; e.g., in Overbeck's edition of De Wette's Kuregefasstes exegetisches Handbuch (Leipsic, 1870; the Introduction is translated and prefixed to the translation of Zeller's Die Apostelgeschichte in the Theolo- gical Translation Fund Library); Wendt's edition of Meyer's Kritisch-exegetisches Handbuch (Gottingen, 1880); and K. Schmidt, Die Apostelgeschichte (vol. i., Erlangen, 1882, the best modern book on the apologetic side). II. THroLocy :— The books which first opened up the study of St Paul's theology in distinction from that of other writers of the New Testament were Usteri's Die Entwickelung des paulinischen Lehrbegriffs (Gurich, 1824, 6th ed. 1851), and Dahne's book with the same title (Halle, 1835). The most important books on the subject which have since appeared (in addition to some of those which have been mentioned above) are Ritschl, Die Entstehung der altkatholischen Kirche (2d ed., Bonn, 1857); Reuss, Histoire de la théologie chrétienne au siécle apostolique (Strasburg, 3d ed., 1864); Holsten, Zum Evangelium des Paulus u. Petrus (Rostock, 1868), and Das Ivangeliwm des Puulus dargestellt (part i., Berlin, 1880); Pfleiderer, Der Paulinismus (Leipsic, 1873, Eng. tr. in the Theological Translation Fund Library); Sabatier, Dapétre Paul (2d ed., Paris, 1881); Menegoz, Le Péché et la Redemption d'aprés S. Paul (Paris, 1882); Ernesti, Die Ethik des Apostels Paulus (3d ed., Gdttingen, 1882). English literature is singularly deficient in works on St Paul's theology, as distinguished from the philological and archeological questions which arise out of his life and epistles; almost the only important contributions to the subject are contained in the essays appended to Jowett's Epistles of St Paul to the Thessalonians, Galatians, and Romans (2d ed., 1859). Further information as to the literature of the subject, and especially as to the numerous monographs and magazine-articles on special points, will be found in the books which deal with New Testament literature in general; especially, for the older literature, Credner, Hinleitung in das N. T. (Halle, 1836), and, for more recent literature, Reuss, Die Geschichte der heiligen Schriften N. T.'s (4th ed., Brunswick, 1874); Mangold's edition of Bleek's Hinleitung in das N. T. (Berlin, 1875); Hilgenfeld, Historische- kritische Einleitung in das N. T. (Leipsic, 1875); Weiss, Lehrbuch der biblischen

Theologie des N. T.’s (8d ed., 1880, Eng. tr. in Clark’s Foreign Theological Library). (E. HA.)

Minor, and the Theodotians and Artemonites in Rome. Even in Syria it was not extinct at the end of the 3d century (see the Acta Archelat) ; but in the great churches of’ the empire—especially in the West and in Egypt—the Logos- Christology was already in the ascendant. And, since the previous state of things had passed from memory, it soon came to be regarded as “heresy” and “innovation” to think of Christ as most Christians had thought in the 2d century. It was chiefly Origen and his philosophical dis- ciples, however, who had brought about the victory of the Logos-Christology, and discredited contrary opinions not only as unchurchly but also as unscientific. Thus the under- taking of Paul was no longer in harmony with the times. And yet his much-abused doctrine, as is now more and more clearly perceived, deserves the highest respect, inasmuch as it is an attempt to express the significance of Christ’s person without the aid of cosmology or philosophical theories. The leading outlines of his Christology are as follows. God is to be conceived as one person; from Him, however, there proceeds eternally as force a Logos (copia), who may be called “Son.” _ This Logos worked in the prophets, and at last, in the highest degree and in a unique manner, in Jesus. Jesus 1s in His own nature a man, originating in time ; He is “from beneath.” But, by means of inspiration and indwelling, the divine Logos worked upon Him “froin above.” A physical union is out of the question, because the Logos Himself is no “vous.

To this divine endowment of Jesus corresponds His tried moral perfection. Through the unchangeableness of His mind and will He became like God; through love He be- came one with Him. For, said Paul, “the: only kind of unity which can exist between two persons 1s that of dis- position and direction of will, which comes to pass through love; only that which results from love has value, what- ever is physical is worthless.” Thus during all His life the Redeemer moved steadily onward, the Father enabling Him to perform mighty works, and finally He proved His indissoluble union in love with God by His death. As the reward of victory for His love and for His work among men He has received from God the name which is above every name; God has invested Him with divine honour, so that now we may call Him “the God born of the virgin.

Since Jesus was eternally foreordained by God, we may even speak of a pre-existence of Christ; and Paul goes

so far as to use these words: "‘ By the grace of God, and through progressive development under trial, Christ be- came God."

Although Paul was excommunicated, his teaching did not remain altogether without effect in the church. It had a marked influence on Lucian, and through him on Arianism. But it is in the Christological statements of Theodore of Mopsuestia, of Diodorus, and of Theodoret that we can most clearly recognize the influence of the teaching of Paul of Samosata.

Sources. —Euseb., H. E., vii. 27-30. Compare also the collection in Routh, Relig. Sacr., iii. pp. 286 sg., 300 sg., 326 sg. Literature.— 3ernhardt, Geschichte des rim. Reiches seit dem Tode Valerian's, pp. 170 sg., 178 sq., 806 sq.; Hefele, Conctliengesch., 2d ed., p. 135; Lipsius, Chronologie der rim. Bischéfe (1869); Feuerlin, De herest Pault Sam. (1741); Ehrlich, De erroribus Pault Sam. (1745) ; Schwab, Diss. de Pauli Sam. vita atque doctrina (1889) ; Harnack, art. ‘‘Monarchianismus," in Realencykl. f. Theol. u. Kirche, 2d ed., x. p. 178 sq. (A. HA.)

PAUL, the name of five popes.

Pav I., pope from 757 to 767, succeeded his brother Stephen ITI. on 29th May 757. His pontificate was chiefly remarkable for his close alliance with Pippin, king of France, to whom he made a present of books highly significant of the intellectual poverty of the times, and for his unsuccessful endeavours to effect a reconciliation with the iconoclastic emperor of the East, Constantine Copronymus. He died on 28th June 767, and received the honour of canonization, which he seems to have merited by his piety and virtues. His successor was Stephen IV.

Pau II., Pietro Barbo, pope from 1464 to 1471, was born at Venice, 28th February 1418. He was on the mother's side the great-nephew of Gregory XII. and the nephew of Eugenius IV., to whose favour he owed his elevation to the cardinalate at the early age of twenty-two. He seems, however,

to have made no especial figure at the papal court until the death of Calixtus III. in 1458, when we hear of his interfering actively to protect the late pope's nephew, Pietro Luigi Borgia, from the vengeance of the Roman nobility, and escorting him safely to Civita Vecchia. Upon the death of Pius II. he was unanimously and unexpectedly elected his successor, 31st August 1464. Vain of his personal appearance, he wished to take the name of Formosus, and afterwards that of Mark in honour of the patron saint of his native city, but, being dissuaded from both, called himself Paul. He abandoned his prede- cessor's projects for a crusade, which he saw to be impractic- able, and made it his leading objects to preserve peace in Italy and to enhance the dignity of the papal see by a dis- play of outward magnificence. He embellished the costume of the cardinals, collected jewels for his own adornment, entertained the Roman people with shows and banquets, and introduced the sports from which the Corso takes its name to this day. If the spirit of his pontificate was secular, its administration was in general prosperous, and no serious reproach would rest upon his memory but for his violent persecution of the humanists and scholars who adorned his court, the truth respecting which it is exceed- ingly difficult to discover. Whether actuated by a per- ception of the incompatibility between Renaissance culture and traditional Christianity, or by a panic fear of imaginary conspiracies against his own person, he appears to have acted with much arbitrary severity, and to have exhibited himself in the unamiable light of a comparatively illiterate man persecuting letters and learning. At the same time, his severities have been without doubt considerably ex- aggerated by the sufferers, from whom our knowledge of them is almost entirely derived, and his own official acts and documents give a much more favourable view of his character, confirmed by the tranquillity of Italy in his day. He was undoubtedly not a man of quick parts or enlarged

views, but he must have possessed considerable administra- tive ability, and his lavish ostentation, not in itself wholly impolitic, was frequently accompanied by displays of charity and munificence. He died very suddenly, probably of apoplexy, on 28th July 1471. The inventory of his

per- sonal effects, recently published by M. Eugéne Miintz, is a valuable document for the history of art. He was suc- ceeded by Sixtus IV.

Pau III., Alessandro Farnese, pope from 1534 to 1549, was born 28th February 1468, of an ancient and noble Roman family. He received an excellent education, but his youth was dissolute and stormy, and he owed his promotion to the cardinalate (September 1493) to the ad- miration of Alexander VI. for his beautiful sister Giulia, whence he was derisively nicknamed Cardinal Petticoat. He soon showed himself, however, to be a man of ability and character, and his reputation and influence went on steadily increasing until, upon the death of Clement VIL., being at the time senior cardinal of the sacred college, he was unanimously elected pope after a conclave of only two days, having been in a manner nominated by his prede- cessor (13th October 1534).

Succeeding the most unfortunate of the popes, at the most critical period in the history of the church, the part assigned to Paul IIT. was one of no common difficulty. But he also possessed no common qualifications,—prudence increased and vigour tempered by age, learning, modera- tion, and a prolonged experience of affairs. It was his misfortune to be not altogether a man of his own day: deeply penetrated with the ambitious, luxurious, and secular spirit of the Renaissance, he found it difficult to adapt himself personally to the changed circumstances of the times by entering into the Catholic Puritanism which, however disagreeable to a man of taste and refinement, was an indispensable necessity in combating the Reforma- tion. The want was in a manner supplied by the men whom, conscious perhaps of his own deficiencies, he called around him. No pope has made so many distinguished cardinals, and his promotions included both men of evan- gelical piety inclined to the new doctrines like Contarini, and fanatical devotees of the old system like Caraffa. The latter group, though Paul had probably little personal inclination for them, triumphed in his councils. The bull instituting the order of the Jesuits (1540) marks the commencement of the Roman counter-reformation ; two years afterwards the Roman Inquisition was established, Contarini died with strong suspicions of poison, Ochino was hunted from Italy, and a persecution broke out which soon exterminated Protestantism inside the Alps. Another memorable measure extorted from Paul by the necessities of his position was the convocation of

the council of Trent in 1545; but he soon found means to suspend its sittings, which were not resumed for many years. His brief condemning slavery (1537) ranks among the most honourable actions of his reign. As a politician Paul con- tinually strove to trim between Charles V. and Francis L, and to preserve the peace of Italy as far as compatible with his darling aim of procuring an establishment for his natural son. All these objects were accomplished. Paul's contemporaries respected and courted him, Italy in general enjoyed tranquillity, and the monster who brought such disgrace upon him acquired the principalities of Parma and Piacenza. After, however, the murder of this unworthy son, the ingratitude of his grandsons broke Paul's heart, and, overcome by a sudden fit of passion, he expired on 10th November 1549,—enjoying the rare distinction of being one of the very few popes who have died lamented by their subjects. His character was in many respects a very fine one, but in every respect the character of a prince and a scholar, not of an ecclesiastic. He was a munificent

JP eS 10) 1b,

patron of learning, was versed in science, and had an especial weakness for judicial astrology. The arts also owed much to him. Michelangelo's Last Judgment and other works of the first rank were completed under his auspices, and he greatly improved and beautified the city of Rome. Julius III. was his successor.

Pauu IV., Giovanni Pietro Caraffa, pope from 1555 to 1559, born 28th June 1476, was the nephew of Car- dinal Oliviero Caraffa, by whose interest he became at an early age chamberlain to Pope Alexander VI., and subse- quently, though contrary to his own inclination, archbishop of Chieti. He was afterwards nuncio in England and Spain, both of which missions he discharged with credit ; but in 1524, under the influence of strong religious im- pressions, he resigned his archbishopric, distributed his goods among the poor, and retired from the world to direct the monastic order of Theatins, founded by himself. In 1536 the fame of his sanctity induced Paul III. to call him to his court and confer the dignity of cardinal upon him, notwithstanding his own reluctance. He now be- came the head of the reactionary party at Rome, bent on crushing all tendencies to religious innovation, while in- sisting on reforms in discipline and moral deportment.

Such was unquestionably the policy required by the times from the exclusive point of view of the interests of the church, and it was thoroughly incarnate in Caraffa, in whom the spirit of the Dominican exterminators of the Albigenses seemed to revive. Having taken an important part in two conclaves, he was himself unexpectedly elected pope on 23d May 1555, after the death of Marcellus I1., notwithstanding his personal unpopularity and the positive veto of Charles V. Raised to the pontifical throne, Paul showed himself a man of extreme counsels in every respect. He endeavoured to efface the prejudice against his former austerity by excessive magnificence. He rushed into politics, and evinced himself as rash in his partisanship as his predecessors had been dexterous and ambiguous. His open espousal of the cause of France brought upon him a Spanish invasion which would have destroyed his temporal sovereignty but for the superstition of Philip I]. and his general Alva, who embraced the first opportunity of making peace. He called his nephews to court and trusted them with blind confidence, but unhesitatingly disgraced them when convinced of their unworthiness. He refused to acknowledge Ferdinand as emperor of Germany, maintain- ing that Charles had no right to abdicate or Ferdinand to succeed without his own permission. Amid all these agitations he never lost sight of the main purpose of lis life: he struggled incessantly against heresy, and was the first pope to issue a full official Index Librorum Prohabit- orum (see vol. xii. p. 730). He died, on 18th August 1559, recommending the Inquisition to the cardinals with his last breath, and leaving the character of a pope of rare energy of body and mind, upright in all his thoughts and actions, but intoxicated with fanaticism and the pride of office, and more perverse, obstinate, and impracticable than any occupant of the papal chair since Urban VI. His memory was so detested by the Roman people that the hawkers of glass and earthenware were compelled for a time to discontinue their usual cry of “carafe” and cry “ampolle.” He was succeeded by Pius IV.

Paut V., Camillo Borghese, pope from 1605 to 1621, was born in Rome, 17th September 1552, of a noble family. He followed the study of canon law, and after having filled various important offices was made a cardinal in 1596. He succeeded Leo XI. on 16th May 1605, after an unusually long and stormy conclave, the vicissitudes of Which are dramatically narrated in Mr T. A. Trollope’s Paul the Pope and Paul the Friar. No one, till the last

moment, had thought of Borghese, who owed his election

A431

to his supposed inoffensiveness and the inability of the leaders of the factions to agree upon any other man- Scarcely had he been elected ere he gave convincing proof that his character had been very much mistaken. He showed himself harsh, domineering, impatient of advice, fanatical in his devotion to the secular as well as the spiritual prerogatives of the church, and inflexible in his resolution to uphold them. He began by successfully re- pressing numerous encroachments of the civil power in various Roman Catholic countries, and thus became tempted to embark in a contention with the republic of Venice, which inflicted a deeper wound on Rome than anything that had taken place since the Reformation. The dispute was occasioned by the claim of the Venetians to try eccle- siastical culprits before the lay tribunals, and by the ex- tension of old laws forbidding the unauthorized formation of religious corporations and the acquisition of property by ecclesiastics to the entire territory of the republic. Paul protested and menaced (October 1605), and, when the Venetians refused to yield, he launched (April 1606) a bull of excommunication against them, and placed the whole republic under an interdict. The Venetians set him at defiance, forbidding their clergy to pay the least attention to the papal censures, and banishing those who disobeyed from their dominions. A vehement literary controversy arose, in which the famous Father Sarpi, the chief coun- sellor of the Venetian senate, especially distinguished him- self. Paul found himself impotent, and, disappointed in his expectations of material aid from Spain, was thankful to escape from the difficulty by the mediation of France, whose representative, Cardinal Joyeuse, negotiated a com- promise in April 1607. The Venetians made some nominal concessions, but gained every substantial point at issue ; the main result of the contention, however, was to demon- strate the inefficacy of the spiritual weapons on which Rome had go long relied, and the disrepute into which papal pretensions had fallen even among Catholic nations. Throughout the remainder of his long pontificate Paul acted with comparative moderation, maintaining, never- theless, the character of a zealous pontiff intent on combat- ing heresy, and especially active in his encouragement of foreign missions. He ranks among the popes who have contributed most to the

embellishment of Rome ; the nave, facade, and portico of St Peter’s were completed by him ; he also erected the sumptuous Borghese chapel in Santa Maria Maggiore, and greatly benefited the city by improv- ing streets and constructing public fountains. He died on 28th January 1621, and was succeeded by Gregory ney, (R. G.) PAUL (1754-1801), emperor of Russia, son of Peter III. and of Catherine, was born on the 2d of October 1754. During the early part of his life he was treated with great harshness by his mother, who had usurped the throne and did not allow him to take any part in the government. There is little doubt that she did not intend him to succeed, but her will was burnt by one of Paul’s adherents. His days were spent in retirement, with the exception of a tour which he made in the west of Europe in the year 1780. He was twice married, first, in 1773, to Augusta, princess of Hesse Darmstadt, who died three years afterwards, leaving no issue ; secondly, in 1776, to Dorothea Sophia, princess of Wtrtemberg, who was received into the Greek Church as Maria Feodorovna. Paul Petrovich ascended the throne on the death of his mother Catherine, 17th November 1796. One of his first acts was to cause the body of his father to be exhumed from the Nevski monastery and buried with the empress his wife in the Petropavlovski church among the rest of the czars. Orloff and the other persons implicated in Peter’s assassination were compelled to follow the coffins,

and afterwards banished the empire for ever. The chief ministers of the new emperor were Rostopchin and Arak- chéeff. Paul now gave signs of a benevolent disposition ; among other acts of generosity he set at liberty Kosciusko, who had been detained a prisoner at St Petersburg. He, however, revived many obsolete imperial privileges which were offensive to the nobility, and became unpopular by introducing German regulations into the army. He altered the oukaz (ukase) of Peter the Great which made the succession to the throne dependent upon the will of the reigning sovereign, and declared it inherent in the eldest son. In 1798 he was appointed grand-master of the order of the Knights of Malta. Alarmed at the progress of the French Republic, he joined Turkey, England, Austria, and Naples in a coalition against Bona- parte. To command the Russians, the veteran Suwaroff was summoned from his rural retreat, to which he had been

banished in consequence of making some satirical verses on the new regulations which had been introduced by Paul. For the campaigns of the Russian general, the article Russta may be consulted. It may suffice to say here that he, triumphant at first, was eventually compelled to retreat, and was recalled by Paul. He died in disgrace in the year 1800. Soon afterwards the capricious emperor completely changed his plans. Having been flattered by Bonaparte, he secretly made overtures to him and quarrelled with England, seizing English vessels and goods which hap- pened to be in the Russian ports. Bonaparte now entered into an agreement with Paul, whereby they should simul- taneously invade the English possessions in India. But the coalition was broken up by the assassination of the Russian emperor in the night of 23d to 24th March 1801, which Bonaparte had the meanness to declare in the Monitewr had been planned by the English. The story of his death is well known': he was strangled in the Mikhailovski Palace by Zouboff, Pahlen, and other conspirators. Their original object appears to have been only to make him abdicate. An interesting account of the events immediately preceding the emperor's death has been given by General Sabloukoff, who was on duty that evening at the palace. The empress Maria survived till

1828.

The solution of the incongruities of the character of Paul seems to lie in the fact that he was more or less insane. Hence his outbursts of cruelty in such cases as those of the pastor Seidler and Kotzebue, alternating with generosity, as in his treatment of Kosciusko and other Poles. Englishmen are familiar with some of his mad pranks from the highly interesting travels of Edward Clarke, who suffered from the despot's caprice. Among other whimsicalities, Kotzebue tells us that he seriously proposed that the sovereigns of Europe should settle their differences by single combat. He had so imperilled the position of the country by his extravagance and eccentric policy that his death, however unjustifiable the means, seemed almost a necessity. All Russia breathed afresh when Alexander IT. ascended the throne.

The only event of the reign of Paul of permanent im- portance to Russia was the annexation of Georgia in 1799. PAUL, Sr Vincent or. See Vincent

or PAUL, ST.

PAULDING, James Kirke (1778-1860), in his day a successful politician, and a writer of some distinction, was born in Dutchess county, New York, United States, on 22d August 1778, and, after a brief course of edu- cation at the village school, removed to New York city in 1800, to reside with his brother-in-law, William Irving, a brother of Washington Irving. In connexion with the latter Paulding began in 1807 a series of brief lightly humorous articles, which, under the title of “The Salmagundi Papers,” soon became popular, and continued

to appear until 25th June 1808, when they terminated with the twentieth number. Six years later he published a political pamphlet, The United States and England, which attracted the notice of President Madison, who in 18]4 appointed the author secretary to the Board of N avy Com- missioners. Subsequently Paulding was for twelve years navy agent in New York city, and from 1837 to 1841 secre- tary of the navy, under President Van Buren. Although much of his literary work consisted of political contributions to the press, he yet found time to write a large number of essays, poems, and tales. His marriage in 1818, the death of his wife, and his own withdrawal from public life in 1841, with his death on 5th April 1860, comprise the chief remaining facts of his useful, honourable, and uneventful career.

From his father, who was an active revolutionary patriot, Pauld- ing inherited strong anti-British sentiments, which colour much of his satire, but otherwise he was a just and genial critic, and a deli- cate and kindly humorist. Of a reserved disposition and hasty temper, with many prejudices, and of extreme political views, he was yet an eminently upright man; of an affectionate nature and

.a forgiving disposition ; a hater of debt, lies, and shams ; and an

absolutely incorruptible official, who, in every relation of life, was inspired by a lofty, if sometimes mistaken, sense of honesty and honour. In literature he merits notice chiefly as a pioneer, and, though his place was never high, and will certainly not be per- manent, he was among the first distinctively

American as opposed to English writers, and protested more vigorously than any of his contemporaries against intellectual thraldom to the mother-country. As a prose writer he is chaste and elegant, with a fine negligence, which is sometimes the result of art, more frequently of haste ; and, while not so elaborate as Irving, so diffuse as Cooper, or so frank as Neal, he is generally just, neat, fanciful, and realistically descrip- tive. Among his short stories perhaps the best are Dyspepsy and The Politician, among the long The Dutehman's Fireside. Asa poet he is gracefully commonplace,—a weak reflexion of Thomson, with a dash of the prairie and the backwoods. His longest and most ambitious poem is—or was, for it is now forgotten— The Baek- woodsman, which is ill-constructed and tedious, and the only lines of Paulding's which survive in popular memory are the familiar—

'* Peter Piper picked a peck of pickled peppers; Where is the peck of pickled peppers Peter Piper picked?" which may be found in Koningsmarke.

The following is a list of his writings :—The Diverting History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan (1812); The Lay of the Scottish Fiddle; a Tale of Havre de Grace, supposed to be written by Walter Scott Esq. (1818), a good-natured parody on The Lay of the Last Minstrel written with the special intention of ridi- culing certain American follies and exposing the excesses of the British in the Chesapeake ; The United States and England (1814); Letters from the South (1817); The Backwoodsman; a Poem (1818); Salmagundi, second series (1819-20); A Sketch of Old England, bya New England Man (1822); Koningsmarke, the Long Finne (1823), a quiz on the romantic school of Scott; John Bull in America ; or the New Munchausen (1824), a broad caricature of the early type of British traveller in Anierica; The Merry Tales of the Three Wise Men of Gotham (1826); The New Mirror for Travellers (1828); The Tales of the Good Woman, by a Doubi- ful Gentleman,—otherwise James K. Paulding (1829); Chronicles of the City of Gotham, from the papers of a retired Common Councilman (1830); The Lion of the West ; a Comedy (1831); The Dutchman's Fireside (1831); Westward Ho! (1832) ; A Life of Washington (1835), ably and gracefully written ; Slavery in the United States (1836); The Book of Saint Nicholas, a series of stories of the old Dutch settlers (1837); A Gift from Fairyland (1838); The Old Continental; or the Price of Liberty (1846);

American Comedies, the joint production of himself and his son William J. Paulding (1847); and The Puritan and his Daughier (1849). The same son also published a posthumous volume by his father, entitled A Book of Vagaries, which is included in an edition of Paulding's Select Works (4 Vols., 1867-68), and a most unsatisfactory biography, mostly ade up of long extracts from Paulding's writings, called Literary Life of James K. Paulding

(1867).

PAULI, Retnworp (1823-1882), historian, was born at Berlin on 25th May 1823. From his mother, who was of Huguenot descent, he derived a vivacious temperament ; from his father, a minister of the Reformed Church, sprung of a family of clergymen and theological professors, he inherited strong religious convictions. He spent his boy- hood in Bremen, from whose republican citizens he early imbibed a hearty admiration of liberal self-government, moral discipline, and extensive sea-trade. With the ex- ception of two semesters when he heard Dahlmann at Bonn, he studied at the university of Berlin (1842-46), where he acquired a lifelong predilection for the Hohenzollerns and for the civil service and army of Prussia. Ranke was young Pauli's model historian, but he had far too much individu- ality to bind himself slavishly to any school. After having taken his degree and passed the public schoolmaster's ex-

amination, he became in 1847 private tutor in the family

eed eee

of Mr Bannatyne, a solicitor in Glasgow, and stayed seven years in Great Britain. During 1849-52 he served as private secretary to the Prussian ambassador Bunsen in London, and made the acquaintance of many eminent politicians of the day and of distinguished antiquaries, such as Kemble, Thorpe, and Hardy. Never a mere book-scholar, he saw various parts of England with an observant eye, and followed public questions with warm interest. He now conceived the plan of investigating the history of England in its original sources. In this way he was the first faith- fully to copy some of the Anglo-Saxon annals , but, as soon as he learned that

Thorpe was going to edit them for the Master of the Rolls, he liberally committed his transcripts tohim. The roots of Great and Greater Britain appeared to him to lie in Anglo-Saxon, not in Celtic, institutions, and therefore his first book was Konig Aelfred (Berlin, 1851). Though critically destroying many long-cherished legends, he described his hero's character and times in warm colours. The book was twice translated into English, and Lappenberg, the best judge then living, declared its author worthy to continue his own Geschichte von England. Not without material privations Pauli continued his stay in England, and between 1853 and 1858 published three large volumes, comprising the period from Henry IT. to Henry VII. In 1855 he became privat-docent at Bonn, and he obtained a professorship at Rostock in 1857. Thence he removed in 1859 to Tiibingen, where, however, in 1866 he offended the Wiirtemberg Government by vehemently de-nouncing its Austrian policy in an essay which appeared. during the Prussian war in the Preussische Jahrbiicher. Exiled to a remote country seminary, he preferred to resign. He now returned to his native country and obtained in 1867 a post in the university of Marburg, which he once represented in the Prussian Upper House. In 1870 he found an honourable position at Gottingen, where the former dynastic union of Hanover with Great Britain had left a splendid English library, and where Waitz had brought together a flourishing historical school.

Pauli's later life was chiefly devoted to modern history, and the Geschichte Englands 1814-52, in 3 vols. (Leipsic, 1864-75) made his name widely known. He fulfilled his duties as a teacher and examiner and as a fellow of different learned societies with punctual accuracy ; he became member of the academies of Gottingen, Munich, and Berlin, and honorary doctor of Oxford and Cambridge. He helped friends and pupils with untiring kindness; in his happy and social home he was often visited by distinguished English scholars. And he was for a whole generation a living link between the historical literature of England and Germany, "those two columns of the Teutonic world, which, for the benefit of human progress he firmly believed in, he fondly hoped would never be torn asunder." When suddenly called away by a stroke of apoplexy on 3d June 1882, he was deeply lamented on both sides of the Channel.

Pauli’s History of England was remarkable for its research. Never before had the records, then piled up in the Tower without calendars or indexes, been used in so full a way; never before had the chronicles and memoirs been so thoroughly criticized. The short review of these original sources, given in the appendices, formed a guide to the medieval historiography of England, and was later on, when better editions appeared, supplemented by Pauli’s critiques contributed to German periodicals. The main narrative follows the king, but at the end of each reign the literary, religious, social, economical, and especially the commercial features of the period are cleverly grouped together. Though Pauli was no regular jurist, even the development of the constitutional side of his subject was then superior to the general standard. Indeed these parts, and these only, Pauli lived to see without jealousy superseded by Gneist and Stubbs, while in every other respect his work, then an_immiense advance upon Lingard, still remains the most solid ofits kind. It has never been translated, perhaps on account of its almost: annal- istic form, and its contempt for the popular attractions of moralizing temarks, philosophical speculation, or picturesque style. To gain

new facts, to show the way for further investigation, seem Pauli a worthier task than to amuse the patie with a ilar story. The history is remarkable for the completeness with which the author has used all reports, letters, and memoirs he could lay his hands upon. He was also allowed to inspect private papers of Cobden and of the Prussian ambassadors Biilow and Bunsen ; and he knew something by personal recollection. Still he openly con- fessed that this contemporary history could be only preliminary on account of the wide gaps in our knowledge of the secret policy, and because ‘‘he felt, in dealing with the flowing formless mass of living characters, as if he were touching hot lava that could not yet be shaped into constructive material.” Nevertheless the carefully – weighed judgment and the profound understanding of the manifold and tangled tendencies of modern strife are simply astonishing, if we consider that the author was a foreigner. Abroad no guide through the English history of the 19th century can rival this work, while the English reader will find at least the chapters on foreign policy to contain much that is new, and will be sure to admire the impartial views of a distant but lofty and noble observer. Pauli had learned to love the organic

growth of the English consti- tution, and could not look without misgivings on the radical de- struction of its aristocratic basis.

Besides a great many essays on the Middle Ages, of which only the popular ones have been collected in Bilder aus Alt-England (Gotha, 1860; 2d ed. 1876, translated 1861), and in Aufsétze zur Englischen Geschichte (Leipsic, 1869 ; Newe Folge, edited by Hartwig, Leipsic, 1883), Pauli published two monographs: “Grosseteste und Marsh,” in the Tiibingen Program for 1864, and Simon von Montfort (Tiibingen, 1867). From a literary point of view these biographies are the best things Pauli wrote, and in them he was successful in creating figures of impressive character ; but his general histories also usually centre round a hero, ¢.g., Canning and Peel in his history of England in our own times. Well versed in paleography, Pauli discovered scveral important memorials, and never despised the humbler task of an editor ; he edited Gower’s Confessio Amantis (1857), The Libell of Englishe Policye of 1436 (1878), and three tracts on political economy of the time of Henry VIII., Zransactions of the Géttingen Socicty, 1878. For the Monumenta Germanie Historica he furnished a quantity of MS. collations, and extracted conjointly with Liebermann pieces of interest for Germany out of English historians before 1300 a.p., which appeared in part in vol. xiii. (1881), and in part will fill vol. xxvii. For the Berlin Academy he selected and copied a mass of records relating to Germany, mainly of the 14th century, which did excellent service for the Hanseatic publications. For the Camden Society he had prepared the account book of the Prussian crusade of Henry Earl of Derby in 1392, which, it is hoped, will be edited by an eminent English historian. He contributed numberless reviews and dctailed, often exhaustive, essays on minor subjects of English history to Sybel’s Historische Zeitschrift, Preussische Jahrbiicher, Grenzboten, Rundschau, Im Neuen Reich, Forschungen zur Deutschen Geschichte, Archiv fir diltere deutsche Geschichtskunde, Hansische Geschichtsblitter, Zeit- schrift fiir Kirchenrecht, Deutsche Litteraturzcitung, Gottingische Nachrichten, Gottingische Anzeigen. These articles posscss in some respects a very high value as material for future scholars. Pauli’s last studies on Henry VIII. and the Hanoverian succession, based on the discovery of the papers of Robethon, the elector’s agent, are printed in the Aufsdtze, Neue Folge.

Hartwig prefixed a sketch of Pauli's life to the Auwfsdtze, Newe Folge, and Frensdorff delivered a lecture upon him, printed in the alas uo we

Gdttingen Society (1882).

PAULICIANS (IIavAuKctavor), the name of a religious sect which sprang up in Armenia in the latter half of the 7th century. Their founder was Constantine, belong- ing to a village near Samosata called Mananalis, where a dualistic, perhaps Marcionite, community had long sub- sisted. About 660 A.D. his attention had been drawn to the New Testament, and especially to the epistles of Paul, whence he derived a set of opinions which, in their com- bination at least, were quite peculiar to himself, and under their inspiration he forthwith came forward as a reforming preacher. The scene of his first efforts was Cibossa, in the district of Colonia in Armenia Prima, where, in token of his Pauline discipleship, he called himself Sylvanus and his flock Macedonians. He died about the year 684, but had a succession of like-minded followers— Simeon (called Titus), Paul, Gegnesius (Timothy), Joseph (Epaphroditus)—under whom the sect continued to spread 'ito Asia Minor, ultimately taking up its headquarters 1n Phanerxa in Helenopontus. According to Petrus Siculus, whose Historia Manicheorum was written about 870, they held the ordinary dualistic doctrine common to all the

Manichzeans, expressly distinguishing the Being to whom the present world owes its creation and government from the maker and ruler of that which is to come; further, besides being quite out of sympathy with the Catholic doctrine as to the Theotokos, they rejected the Old Testament, the sacraments, the symbol of the cross, and the ordained ministry of the church. The morals of the followers of Constantine seem to have been for the most part unex- ceptionable, tending to severity, but one of his remoter successors, Baanes by name, gave way to such excesses as to earn for himself the surname of 6 purapds ; and Sergius (Tychicus), about the beginning of the 9th century, found so great scope for a moral reformation and was so success- ful in his efforts for this end that he is sometimes

spoken of, not extravagantly, as the second founder of the sect. Their aversion to images made them specially obnoxious to persecution by both parties during the iconoclastic con- troversy,—the iconoclasts specially finding it necessary to give practical demonstration of their antipathy to the Paulician heretics. The violence of Leo the Armenian in particular compelled many of their number, and Sergius among them, to seek refuge in the Saracen part of Ar- menia, where the emir of Melitene assigned them a seat in the little town of Argaum ; from this settlement, not- withstanding the remonstrances of their head, they made frequent and damaging inroads on the Byzantine territory. After the death of Sergius in 835 their government be- came more political and republican, until the violence of Theodora drove new reinforcements to their camp, includ- ing an able military leader named Carbeas, who presently placed himself at their head. The sect continued to grow and to found new settlements, among which Tephrica is specially mentioned by the Byzantine historians as a cause of embarrassment. At the head of an army composed of Paulicians and Moslems, Carbeas more than once invaded the territory of the empire and inflicted defeat on the opposing forces. Chrysocheir, his stepson and successor, was still more successful ; sweeping all opposition before him, he overran the whole of Asia Minor, pillaging Nice and Nicomedia, Ancyra and Ephesus,—Basil the Macedonian vainly appealing now to arms and now to negotiation. At last, however (871), he was surprised and slain, and his followers were driven back to their mountain fastnesses. In 970 John Zimisces succeeded in removing a large colony of them, as guardians of the frontier, to the region about Philippopolis in Thrace, where full religious liberty was guaranteed them. Here they continued to flourish in virtual independence for more than a century, until Alexius Comnenus inflicted chastisement on them for having de- serted his standard in the course of the Norman war. In 1115 that emperor fixed his winter quarters in Philippo- polis to use for their conversion the various powers of persuasion at his command, and the orthodox city of Alexiopolis was founded in the immediate neighbourhood. The sect, however, called “ Popelicans ” by Villehardouin, continued to subsist in Thrace until at least the beginning of the 13th century, as did also the Euchites, afterwards Bogomili, who had been attracted to the locality by the toleration of Zimisces. Meanwhile, branch societies of Paulicians had established themselves in Italy and

France, and reappear in history there under various names, such as Bulgari, Patareni, Cathari, and Albigenses.

The Paulicians are the subject of a monograph by F. Schmidt (Historta Paulicianorum Orientalium, Copenhagen, 1826); and the Historia of Petrus Siculus, already referred to, has been edited (Gottingen, 1846) by Gieseler, whose "' Untersuchungen iiber die Geschichte der Paulicianer," in Stud. wu. Krit. (1829), as well as the relative sections of his Church History, deserves special mention. See also vol. iii. of Neander's Kirchengeschichte.

PAULINUS, Sz, or Nota. Pontius Meropius Anicius Paulinus, who was successively a consul, a monk, and a

bishop, was born at Bordeaux in 353 a.pv. His father, prefectus preetorio In Gaul, was a man of great wealth, so that Augustine could speak of Paulinus, who inherited it, as "'opulentissimus dives," and Ausonius, himself a man of property, could speak of his estates as "regna." The literary education of the future saint was entrusted to his elder contemporary and townsman Ausonius, and how con- siderable was the degree of culture to which he attained as a writer both in prose and verse can yet be seen from his extant works, though it is of course impossible for any one in cold blood to concur in all the friendly praises of Ausonius and Jerome, the latter of whom compares him as a letter-writer to Cicero. In 378 he was raised to the rank of consul suffectus, and in the following year he appears to have been sent as consularis into Campania. Here, whether in an official capacity or not, he certainly remained for some time; and, according to his own account, it was at this period, while present at a festival of St Felix of Nola, that he first entered upon his lifelong devotion to the cultus of that saint. Probably before this time he had married a wealthy Spanish lady named Therasia; the union appears to have been a sympathetic and happy one, though not unclouded by domestic sorrows, among which may be mentioned the death in infancy of their only child, —a bereavement which, combined with the many disasters by which the empire was being visited, did much to foster in them that world-weariness to which they afterwards gave such emphatic expression. From Campania Paulinus re- turned to his native place and came into correspondence or personal intimacy with men like Martin of

Tours and Ambrose of Milan, whose example could not fail to keep before him the claims of Christianity as conceived by them; and ultimately (about 389) he was formally received into the church by Bishop Delphinus of Bordeaux, whence shortly afterwards he withdrew with his wife beyond the Pyrenees. This withdrawal from the pursuits and pleasures of the world called forth the playful banter and serious remon- strances with which alternately he was plied by Ausonius ; all appeals, however, to the common memories of an old friendship and to the claims of patriotism and of ambition were made in vain. It is impossible, of course, to say what precise amount of truth may underlie the poet's hint at an undue feminine ascendency over his friend, which is implied in the expression "Tanaquil tua." Therasia was certainly at least not behind her husband in eagerness to have done with the fast-failing friendship and help of "the world"; but Paulinus is unflinching in his reply to every reproach and entreaty: ""Negant Camcenis, nec patent Apollini dicata Christo pectora. . . . Nunc alia mentem vis agit, major deus. . . . O beata injuria, displicere cum Christo." The personal asceticism of Paulinus and his liberality towards the poor soon brought him into great repute among all the devout of the region in which he had settled; and while he was spending Christmas at Barcelona the enthusiasm of the people rose to such a pitch that they insisted on his being forthwith ordained to the priesthood. The irregularity of this step, however, was resented by many of the clergy, and the occurrence is still passed lightly over by his Roman Catholic panegyrists. In the following year he went into Italy, and after visit- ing Ambrose at Milan and Siricius at Rome—the latter of whom, however, jealous probably of the growing monkish spirit and mindful also of the irregular ordination, received him somewhat coldly—he proceeded into Campania, where, in the neighbourhood of Nola, he settled among the rude structures which on his former visit he had caused to be built around the tomb and relics of his " dominsedius" (lord of the edifice) and patron saint. Along with Ther- asia (now a sister, not a wife), while leading a life of rigid asceticism, he devoted the whole of his vast wealth to the

entertainment of needy pilgrims, to payment of the debts of the insolvent, and to public works of utility or ornament ; besides building basilicas at Fondi and Nola, he provided the latter place with a much-needed aqueduct. At the next vacancy, not later than 409, he succeeded to the bishopric of Nola, and this office he held with ever-increas- ing honour until his death, which occurred shortly after that of Augustine in 431. He is commemorated by the Church of Rome on 22d June.

The extant writings of Paulinus consist of some fifty Epistole, addressed to Sulpicius Severus, Delphinus, Augustine, Jerome, and others; thirty-twc Carmina in a great variety of metre, including a series of hexameter ‘‘natales,” begun about 393 and continued annually in honour of the festival of St Felix, metrical epistles to Ausonius and Gestidius, and paraphrascs of three psalms; and a Passio S. Genesii. They reveal to us a kindly and cheerful soul, well versed in the literary accomplishments of the period, but without any strength of intellectual grasp and peculiarly prone to superstition, The somewhat conspicuous place in church history occupied by Paulinus is chiefly due to the effect his great influence had in promoting the practice of pilgrimage, relic- hunting, and picture-worship, as well as the uncritical acceptance of every alleged miracle ; to the intellectual development of Christianity he contributed nothing and it may well be questioned whether the manner in which he discharged the stewardship of his wealth was as judicious and beneficial as it certainly was generous.

His works were edited by Rosweyde and Fronton le Duc in 1622 (Antwerp, 8vo), and their text was reprinted in the Bibl. max. patr. (1677). The next editor was Le Brun des Marettes (Paris, 1685, 2 vols. 4to), whose text was reproduced in substance by Muratori (Verona, 1736), and reprinted by Migne.

PAULUS, Herricn EserHarp Gorton (1761-1851), the distinguished representative of the rationalistic school of German theologians of the beginning of this century, was born at Leonberg, near Stuttgart, Ist September 1761. His father, the Lutheran clergyman at Leonberg, was convinced of the immortality of the soul by spirit- ualism, and was deprived of his living in consequence of his belief in the intercourse of departed spirits with men. He likewise required of his children unconditional obedi-

ence, and commanded them to believe the doctrines of religion without asking wherefore. The father's spiritual- ism and dogmatism drove the son by natural reaction to the rationalism which prevailed at the time, and of which, in its application to Biblical history, Paulus became the most famous representative. He was educated at Tiibingen, was three years headmaster of a German school, and then spent two years in travelling through England and the principal countries of the Continent. He subse- quently published interesting passages from the journal of his tour. In 1789 he was chosen ordinary professor of Oriental languages at Jena. In addition to the studies of his own department he prosecuted especially mathe- matics, as the best preparation for clear thinking. At Jena he lived in close intercourse with Schiller, Goethe, Herder, and the most distinguished literary men of the time. In 1793 he succeeded Doederlein as professor of theology. His special work was the exposition of the Old and New Testaments in the light of his great Oriental learning and according to his characteristic principle of "natural explanation." He held that miracles in the strict sense were impossible, that the events recorded in the Bible took place naturally, and that the narratives of the Gospels are the true reports of men who either were eye- witnesses or had obtained information from such as were. From a purely apologetic motive he sought to remove what other interpreters regarded as miracles from the Bible by distinguishing between the fact related and the author's opinion of it, by seeking a naturalistic exegesis of a narrative, ¢.g., that ém ris Oaddoons (Matt. xiv. 25) means by the shore and not on the sea, by supplying circum- stances omitted by the author, by remembering that the author produces as miracles occurrences which can now be explained otherwise, ¢.g., exorcisms. The chief exegetical works of Paulus are his Philologisch-kritischer und hastor-

A435

ischer Commentar tiber das Neue Testament (4 vols., 1800- 1804), Clavis tiber die Psalmen (1791), and Clavis diber Jesaias (1793), and particularly his Hxegetisches Handbuch tiber die dre ersten Evangelien (3 vols., 1830-33 ; 2d ed. 1841-42). His Life of Jesus (2 vols., 1828) is a synop- tical translation of the Gospels, prefaced by an account of the preparation for the Christ and a brief summary of His history, and accompanied by very short explanations inter- woven in the translation. The form of the work was fatal

to its success, and the subsequent Fxegetisches Handbuch rendered it quite superfluous. In the latter work Paulus really contributed much to a true interpretation of the Gospel narratives, notwithstanding his entire failure to ex- plain the miracles away. The historical and geographical excursuses and dissertations interwoven in his comment- aries are of considerable value. He was particularly well acquainted with the conditions of Oriental life. In the year 1803 Paulus left Jena on account of his health, and filled various posts in south Germany until 1811, when he became professor of exegesis and ecclesiastical history at Heidelberg. It was there that he found the freest scope for his great learning and tutorial abilities. He filled this chair until 1844, when he retired on account of his great age. He died, faithful to his first rationalistic position, a staunch friend of intellectual and political free- dom and light, 10th August 1851, in his nineticth year.

The literary labours of Paulus were not confined to exegesis. He edited a collected small edition of Spinoza's works (1802-1803), a collection of the most noted Eastern travels (1792-1803), Schel- ling's Vorlesungen tiber die Offenbarung (1848), &c. He was also the author of Skizeen aus meiner Bildungs- und Lebensgeschichte (1839), and he left behind him the materials for a biography, which was published by Professor Reichlin-Meldegg, under the title H. E. @. Paulus wnd seine Zeit (1858).

PAULUS, Junius. See Roman Law.

PAULUS (or Pavtuvs), Lucrus Aminius, a dis- tinguished Roman general, of the patrician family of the ZEmilii, was born about 229 B.c. He was the son of the consul of the same name who fell at Cannx. As curule seedile in 192 he gave a proof of his integrity by prose- cuting the persons who made an. illegal use of the public pastures. His first laurels were won in Further Spain, whither he was sent as pretor in 191. Though at first defeated with loss, he finally overthrew the enemy in a bloody battle (189) and tranquillized Spain. In 182 he was consul, and in the following year subdued the Ingauni, a piratical tribe of Liguria, dismantling their towns and carrying off their ships. For this service he was granteda triumph. After a period of retirement from public life he was elected consul a second time, for 168, and entrusted with the command in the Macedonian war, which the incapacity of previous Roman generals had allowed to drag on without

success for three years. Paulus brought the war to a speedy termination by the battle of Pydna, fought on 22d June (Julian calendar) 168. The battle decided the fate of Macedonia, which was henceforward a Roman province. The Macedonian king Perseus surrendered shortly afterwards and met with a courteous reception from the Roman general, Paulus now availed himself of his position to make the tour of Greece, visiting with an intelligent interest the places immortalized in Greek history and legend. Afterwards, assisted by ten Roman commissioners, he arranged the affairs of Macedonia. In obedience to the orders of the senate, on his return through Epirus to Italy he gave up seventy towns to pillage and carried off 150,000 of the inhabitants as slaves. A magnificent triumph, graced by the presence of the captive king Perseus and his three children, rewarded the con- queror of Macedonia (167). But his public glory was closely attended by private misfortune; of the two sons borne him by his second wife one died a few days before,

ait

the other a few days after, his triumph. . The ‘veteran was thus left without a son to bear his name; for of his two sons by his first wife Papiria, the eldef had been adopted

“by Quintus Fabius Maximus, Hannibal’s great opponent,

and the younger by the:son of Scipio Africanus. The latter, known as P: Cornelius Scipio A’milianus, was the conqueror of Carthage and Numantia. Paulus was censor ‘in 164, and died in 160, At the funeral games exhibited in his honour the Hecyra of Terence was acted for the second and the Adelphi for the first time.

Paulus was a fine specimen of a Roman noble. An aristocrat to the backbone, he was yet beloved by the people, whose favour he never deigned to court by unworthy means. His integrity was perfect ; of the vast sums brought by him into the Roman treasury from Spain and Macedonia he kept not a penny to himself. At his death his property with difficulty sufficed to pay his wife’s dowry. As a general he was a strict disciplinarian ;

as an augur he dis- charged the religious duties of his office with conscientious care and exactness. His piety passed into superstition, as when before the battle of Pydna he sacrificed to the moon, then under cclipse. His sympathy with Greek learning and art is attested by the Greek masters whom he procured for his sons, as well as by his travels in Greece, the works of art he brought home, and his friendship for the historian Polybius. His nobility, of nature won him the affec- tion and esteem of all who knew him, of his enemies no less than of his countrymen. An affecting proof is the fact recorded by Plutarch that his body was carried to the grave by volunteers from all the nations he had conquered, while old men from Spain, Liguria, and Macedonia followed lamenting the man who (accord- ing to them) was at once their conqueror and their saviour.

There is a life of him by Plutarch, but his campaigns in Liguria and Mace-

- donia are more fully described by Livy (xl. 25-28; xliv. 17-xlv. 41).

PAULUS AIGINETA. See Aicinera, vol. i. p. 181, and MeEpicing, vol. xv. p. 804.

PAULUS DIACONUS, the historian of the Lombard dominion in Italy, flourished in the 8th century (see LoMBaRDS, vol. xiv. p. 813). An ancestor of his named Leupichis entered Italy in the train of Alboin and received an allotment of lands at or near Forum Julii (Friuli). By an invasion of Avars all the five sons of this warrior were swept off into Illyria, but one, his namesake, returned through many perils and restored the ruined fortunes of his house. His grandson was Warnefrid, who, by his wife Theodelinda, became the father of Paulus. The future historian (born about 720 or 725) received an education unusually good for his times, possibly in part conducted at the court of King Ratchis in Pavia. From a teacher named Flavian he received at least the rudiments of Greek. In middle life, probably, he retired into the great Benedictine monastery of Monte Cassino, which his patron King Ratchis had entered in 749. The ruin which befell the Lombard monarchy in 774 at the hands of Charles the Great may have caused him to take this step. In this ruin was involved his brother Arichis, whose estates were confiscated, himself confined in prison for seven years, and his wife and children reduced to beggary. About 781 Paulus left his monastery and travelled to France, probably in order to intercede for this

brother, and after considerable delay his request was granted. Meanwhile, his literary gifts had come to be highly appreciated by the Frankish king. The letters and the verses which passed between Charles (employing the pen of a secretary) and Paulus give a pleasant idea of the relation between the two parties, and remind us of the intercourse between the Italian princes and the scholars of the Renaissance. After some years' residence in France Paulus returned to ltaly and to his convent, and died, probably between 790 and 800, at his beloved Monte Cassino. His surname, Diaconus (or Levita), shows that he took orders as a deacon, no doubt during his residence in the monastery.

_The chief works of Paulus are his Continuation of Eutropius and his Lombard History. The former (one of his earliest works) was written at the request of Adelperga, wife of the duke of Benevento.

Paulus recommended her to read the Roman history of Eutropius, but, as she complained that this heathen writer said nothing of

church affairs, and stopped short at the death of Jovian, Paulus interwove some extracts from the ecclesiastical historians, and added six books (xi.~~xvi.), bringing down the history to 553 a.p. At this point his Lombard History, in six books, written in the later years of his life and cut short by his death, takes up the tale which is told henceforward from the point of view of a Lombard patriot. The sagas of the Langobardic warriors, plentifully inter~~ spersed, give to the narrative a wild barbaric interest. The document called the Origo Gentis Langobardice and the lost his- tory of Sccundus of Trient furnished some of his materials. He also makes free use of Gregory of Tours, Bede, Isidore, and others, In some aspects Paulus naturally suggests a comparison with Jordanes, that other historian of a barbarian nation falling into ruin, but in learning and literary honesty the Lombard is greatly the superior of the Goth. His style is, for his age, wonderfully good, though his grammar shows the breaking down of the old Latin inflexions into the lingua volgare.

Paulus wrote also a history of the bishops of Metz, some homilies, and several small poems, some rhythmical, some metrical. His works were frequently copied in the Middle Ages. Of the Lombard History there are more than a hundred MSS. extant, those of Assisi, Cividale, and St Gall

being the most important. The edition of his histories published as part of the Monumenta Germania Historica (1878-79) supersedes all others. For further informa- tion, the student may consult G. Waitz's. preface to the Lombard History in that edition, and F. Dahn's Langobardische Studien, an able monograph, but perhaps too negative in its conclusions. The English reader will find an excellent sketch of Paulus's life and ea in Ugo Balzani's Early Chroniclers of Italy (London,

883).

PAUPERISM. See Poor Laws.

PAUSANIAS, the general who led the Greeks to vic- tory at Platea, was a Spartan and a member of the Agid branch of the royal house. In 479 3B.c. he succeeded his father Cleombrotus as regent and guardian of his cousin the youthful king Plistarchus, and in the same year he was appointed, by virtue of his rank, to lead the army despatched by the Spartans to help the Athenians against the Persians under Mardonius. He commanded the united Greek army at the memorable battle of Platea (479), which for ever secured the freedom of Greece against the Persians. The credit of that great victory belongs to the soldiers rather than to their general, for Pausanias seems to have acted without any settled plan, and to have given battle only when he was forced to do so by the enemy. Indeed, his attempt to withdraw the Spartan contingent from the post of honour on the right, in order to avoid encountering the native Persian troops under Mardonius, savours of positive cowardice. But, if he feared the living, he respected the dead; a proposal made by a Greek after the battle to avenge the death of Leonidas by mutilating the corpse of the gallant Mardonius received from Pausanias a stern rebuke. After the expul- sion of the Persians from Greece Pausanias led a Greek fleet (478 or 477) to Cyprus and thence to Byzantium, which he captured from the Persians. But the successes he had hitherto enjoyed only fed without satisfying his ambition. He conceived the design of making himself master of all Greece, and with this view he opened a corre- spondence with Xerxes, offering to marry his daughter and reduce Greece toa Persian province. The proposal was hailed with delight by the Persian monarch. Puffed up with these hopes, Pausanias now assumed by anticipation the airs and state of a tyrant, and by his overbearing manners

offended the Greeks so deeply that in disgust they transferred the leadership of the allied forces from Sparta to Athens,—a momentous step, from which sprang the maritime empire of Athens. Pausanias was recalled to Sparta and tried, but, though convicted and punished for minor offences, the evidence was insufficient to sub- stantiate the charge of treason, and he was acquitted. Having afterwards the folly to return to Byzantium in a private capacity and reopen communications with Persia, he was again recalled and put on his trial. There was strong suspicion of his treason, but no positive evidence. It was known, too, that he had incited the Helots to revolt,

promising them freedom and citizenship if they would join him ; but, with characteristic caution, the authorities declined to accept the evidence of a Helot against a Spartan, and Pausanias might, after all, have been acquitted if it had not been that a messenger to whom he entrusted a letter for Artabazus, the Persian satrap, opened it, and, finding in it a direction to put the bearer to death, carried it to the ephors. But not until they had contrived to over- hear a conversation between Pausanias and his messenger were the ephors satisfied of his guilt ; and then they pro- ceeded to arrest him. Foreseeing their intention, Pausanias took refuge in the temple of Athene of the Brazen House. The ephors took off the roof, blocked up the doors, and starved him. When on the point of death he was dragged out, that his corpse might not defile the sanctuary. This happened about 467.

The principal authorities for the life of Pausanias are Herodotus (ix. 10 sg.) and Thucydides (i. 94, 95, 128-184). There is a biography of him by Cornelius Nepos. See also Diodorus, xi, 29- 34, 44-46; Pausanias, iii. 4, 7 and 26.17, 7; Plutarch, Themistocles, 93; Id., Aristides, 11, 14-20, 28; Aristodemus, ii. iv. vi.-viil. (in Miiller’s Fragm. Hist. Gree., vol. v.); Justin, 2, 14.

PAUSANIAS, a prose-writer (Aoyoypddos) of Greek traditions, mythical and historical, and a critic of Greek art. His important work, in ten books, called *EAAdSos Ilepujynors, usually known as Pausamex Descriptio Grecie, has come down to us entire. It is strictly an itinerary through the Peloponnesus, including Attica, Bceotia, and Phocis, with a rather slight mention of the adjacent islands and some of the principal towns on the

Asiatic coast. It was evidently compiled by one whose interest was mainly centred in making notes of art-collections as they existed in the Greek temples and public places in the time of the Antonines. In connexion with these he expatiates on the myths and legends locally preserved, and thus he has handed down to us much valuable mythological material which would otherwise have been lost. A large portion of his work, however, is devoted to Greek history, properly so ealled, though, after the manner of Herodotus and the early logographers, he draws no distinction between legend and history. Ina general sense he may be styled an antiquary rather than an art-critic, a man of industry rather than of genius, and one who deserves praise more from the matter of his work than for the manner of it. Of the personal history of Pausanias nothing is recorded. He lived during the prosperous times of the Roman empire under Hadrian, whom he often mentions by name, and his successors An- toninus Pius and Marcus Aurelius, the latter of whom be- came emperor in 161 a.p. His wars against the German Marcomanni are alluded to,! and Antoninus Pius? is also named in reference to his successful contest with the Moors. Mention is also made of the "wall" raised be- tween the Forth and the Clyde by the elder Antonine to keep off the assaults of the Brigantes. About himself and

his birthplace the author is singularly reticent. Nor has his work any formal introduction or conclusion. He com- mences abruptly with a description of Attica: "The

mainland of Hellas off the Cyclades and opposite the Zigean Sea is called Attica, the jutting headland of which is Sunium. There is a harbour when you have sailed past this foreland, and a temple of Athena the Sunian goddess on the height." He goes on to describe Athens at consl- derable length, and gives a valuable though too brief account of the Parthenon and the great bronze statue of

1 Deser. Gr., viii. (Arcadica), 43, 6.

2 viii, 48, 5, rodrov EtoeBh rov Baotréa éxddecav of "Pwpaiot, Sidr. TH és 7d Ociov Tiw# uddaora epalvero xpHuevos. The epithet is usually attributed to the affection shown to the memory of Hadrian, by whom he had been adopted.

31,289. This statue is referred to by Aristophanes (Zz., 1172) and Euripides (Herc. Fur., 1008).

spear and ‘helm of which were visible to those sailing into the harbour from Sunium. On the ivory and gold statue of the goddess in the Parthenon (c. 24) he writes very briefly ; on the Erechtheum and its antiquities he expa- tiates more largely. The great temple of Ephesus, the very site of which was lost till Mr Wood’s explorations betwéen 1863 and 1874, appears to have been.perfect in his time, but he does not describe it; he merely says* that “Ionia contains temples such as are not elsewhere to be seen, and first of all that of the Ephesian goddess, remarkable for its size and its wealth in general.”

Like Herodotus and Strabo, Pausanias was a traveller and an inquirer. In some respects it is probable that he imitates the manner of Herodotus, as in his credulity® and the affectation of reserve in sacred matters. But, while geography and ethnology chiefly engaged the atten- tion of Strabo, art and antiquities generally form the staple of Pausanias’s work. The passion of the Romans for securing specimens of Greek art had long been fed by the plunder of temples and the removal of statues from the towns of the Greek provinces, so graphically described in the orations against Verres. Pausanias comments on the great antiquity of this kind of sacrilege. ‘‘It is clear,” he remarks,® “that Augustus was not the first who estab- lished the custom of carrying away offerings from the temples of conquered nations, but that he merely followed a very old precedent.” And he quotes many examples of statues removed by right of conquest, as from Troy, from Brauron and Branchide by Xerxes, from Tiryns by the Argives, &c.

In the age of the Antonines special attention was directed to the works of art still remaining in the Greek cities. The work known as Antonine’s Jéinerary, which is a kind of handbook of the whole Roman empire and its complex system of roads and colonies, may have suggested to Pausanias a “Description of Greecc,”,on the lines laid down by Herodotus and Strabo ; but we have no exact date of the composition of either work. Leland compiled his Itinerary or tour through Britain on much the same principles, and his record of churches and castles as they remained in the later years of

Henry VIII. is a survey of medieval art which resembles the notes of Pausanias formed from his own inquiry and observation.

The vast wealth of the Greek cities in statuary and sculpture, which had been accumulating from the 5th century s.c. till the capture of Corinth by Mummius, may be judged of by the records of the plunderings of Verres and _the costly purchases of Cicero? and his successors to the time of Nero, and even of Hadrian, which are matters of history. Nevertheless, after the drain of more than three centuries, “Pausanias,” says Mr Westropp,° “was able to describe 2827 statues.” ;

Whether Pausanias had any real taste or enthusiasm for or judgment of fine art does not appear from his somewhat matter- of-fact accounts. He reminds us of a catalogue of goods made with the view of a sale, minus the auctioneer’s “ puffing.” Nor is his motive much more apparent; he may have written to let connoisseurs know what was yet to be had, or to put on record existing works, with the names of the artists, as a protest against further spoliation, or he may have been commissioned by imperial authority to make a list of the art-treasures still cxhibited to travellers in the Roman provinces. In the century from Augustus to Trajan Greek education in art, literature, and philosophy was much affected by the rich and well-born Romans, and collections of Creek bronzes and real or spurious articles of antiquity were keenly competed for, as we know from many of the epigrams of Martial.°

Pausanias does not usually say that an object is beautiful ; he tells us what it is, where it is, and who executed it; that is gencrally all. Occasionally he remarks that a statue is “worth

4 vii. (Achaica), 5, 2. ;

5 As when he says, as if seriously (viii. 2, 4), that it seems to him quite credible that Lycaon was changed into a wolf and Niobe into a stone in the good old times when the gods conversed with men on earth, 6 viii. 46, 2.

7 Often referred to in his letters to Atticus.

8 The Cycle of Development of the Art of Sculpture in Greece and Rome, \cct. v. p. 166.

9 Propertius has a curious critique on the relative merits of the Greek sculptors and painters (iv. 8, 9-16). In elegy 4 of the same book, ver. 6, he disclaims the character of a wealthy collector, “nec miser era paro clade, Corinthe, tua.”

looking at,” Oéas déov, but criticism, in the true sense of the word, is hardly ever attempted. In ii, 27, 5 he speaks highly of Polyclitus as an architect, and says that none can rival him for beauty or proportion. In vii. 5, 2 he says the temples of Hera in Samos and of Athena at Phocea “were objects of admiration,” though they had been burned and greatly injured by the Persians. Occasionally (as vii. 5, 4; 26, 6) he guesses the name of an un-known artist from the style of a sculpture; in vii. 25, 4 he describes some marble statues of women as showing a good style of art, éxovcat Téxvys ef. His descriptions of a scries of designs, like thosc painted by Polygnotus in the Lesche at Delphi,! are dry and without a glimpse of discrimination, — mere lists of names and sub- jects, like modern “ guides” to a gallery or museum of art. At the same time the minuteness of observation and the careful record of all the inscribed names are most commendable, and the value of the account to us from a literary point of view, as showing what subjects were regarded as “ Homeric” in the time of Polygnotus, a contemporary of Pericles, cannot be overrated. The same re- marks apply to the account of the famous “chest of Cypselus,” preserved at Olympia, and claiming a great antiquity from the inscriptions being written Boverpodndér, alternately from left to right and right to left.2 He ends his description of scenes chiefly taken from the Zroiea with these words:3 “Who the maker of this chest was we had no means of forming any conjecture. The inscriptions upon it may perhaps be by another hand; but our general impression was that the designer was Eumelus of Corinth, mainly on account of the processional hymn which he composed for Delos.” This Eumelus is believed to have flourished about 750 B.C. The suspicion of Pausanias that the inscriptions were later make it probable that the whole design and workmanship were imitative on an archaic model.

Recent explorations, especially those at Olympia, are largely indebted to the careful and detailed accounts of Pausanias.4 The temples at Ephesus, Branchidz, Claros, Samos, and Phocwa he merely mentions, his researches being limited to the cities of western Greece.? His notes on the topography of Athens, though he passes over several of the more important buildings, as the great theatre and the Odeum, with little more than a mere reference, are stil] the principal authority confirming the allusions in early writers. He seems, indeed, to have admired objects more for their antiquity than for their beanty. He often diverges into long details of his- tory, largely mixed with legend, as in his long account of the Mes- scnian wars in book iv.; indeed, mythology and history proper stand with Pausanias in precisely the same category. Hedoes not show any great advance in this respect from the times of Hecateus or Pherecydes of Syros.

The style of Pausanias is simple and easy, but it is wanting in the quaintness and vivacity of Herodotus, and it has not the florid eloquence of Plato or Lucian. The simple and genuine credulity of Herodotus seems foolish or affected in a writer who lived in a much more advanced period of human knowledge. Thus he gravely tells us that the water of the Styx will break crystal and precious stones and vessels of clay, and cause metals, even gold, to decay, and can only be kept in a horse’s hoof.

The titles of the several books are taken from the divisions of the Peloponnesus, together with the three lying immediately north of the isthmus; the first book being devoted to Attica, the ninth to Beotia, and the tenth to Phocis. The remainder are (1i.) Cor- inthiaca, (iii.) Laconica, (iv.) Messeniaca, (v. and vi.) Eliaca, (vil.) Achaica, (viii.) Arcadica. In adopting this nomenclature he prob- ably followed the T’roica, Persica, &c., of Hellanicus. A vast mass of information is contained in these several books, which may be closely compared in their treatment and in the great variety of subjects with English ‘county historics.”

Without the sustained interest and the genial humour which characterize the work of Herodotus, composed as it evidently was for recital and not for private reading, Pausanias is an accurate and diligent recorder of what he saw and knew. He copied inscrip- tions, and, like Herodotus, he often quotes oracles ; in ascertaining the names of artists he is particularly

careful. That he had made great research into the history and topography of Greece is abun- dantly shown ; but he is rather chary in his reference to previous authors. Of Herodotus he makes mention in eight or nine places, of Plutarch in one (i. 36, 4), of Plato in four. Thucydides is referred to once (vi. 19, 5), Acusilaus once (ii. 16, 4), Hellanicus

1 x. (Phocica), 25-31. * v. (Eliaca), 17-19. 3 19, 2) p27.

e Eliaca (II.), book vi., the later chapters of which give a very full description of Olympia and its buildings and statues.

5 vii. 5,4. Here occurs one of the few faint expressions of pleasure or praise that the writer indulges in. “You would be pleased,”’ he says, “‘also with the temple of Hercules at Erythre, and that of Athena at Priene, the latter on account of the statue, the Heracleum for its antiquity.” These remarks show that he had visited and knew something of the temples in Ionia. The tomb of Mausolus at Hali-

carnassus he mentions in terms approaching to praise, viii. 16, 4 § viii. (Arcadica), 18, 5. a

‘about 34 miles enclose an area of 400 acres.

twice, Hecatzus four times, Strabo nowhere. Of the poets, epic,

lyric, and dramatic, he displays a good knowledge, as well as of

Pindar, whom he frequently quotes. It is clear, therefore, that Pausanias was a literary man, and perhaps it is more an idiosyn- crasy than a fault that he is cold and prosaic in his descriptions. Of the author’s birth, family, or country there are no indications, The name is Doric, but the style is the Attic of Plutarch, Strabo, and Lucian.

The best editions of Pausanias are those of Siebelis (5 vols. 8vo, Leipsie, 1822-28), and of Schubart and Walz (8 vols. 8vo, Leipsic, 1838-40). Schubart’s text was reprinted in the Triibner series (2 vols. 12no, Leipsic,

1862), with brief introductory critical notes and a very careful and complete index. This is an excellent and accurate edition, and one which leaves nothing to be de- sired. (. AR eS)

PAUSILIPO, or Posinurp0. See NaPLes, vol. xvii. p.

187.

PAVIA, a city of Italy, the chief town of a province, and a bishop's see, is situated at a height of 270 feet above the sea-level, 224 miles by rail south of Milan, on the left bank of the Ticino, about 2 miles above its junction with the Po. The railway from Milan to Genoa, which is there joined by lines from Cremona, &c., crosses the river on a fine bridge constructed in 1865; and, farther down, the city is connected with the suburban village of Ticino by a remarkable brick-built covered bridge dating from the 14th century. Though it has lost its importance as a fortified town, and no longer deserves the designation of "City of the Hundred Towers," Pavia is still for the most part surrounded by its ramparts, which in a circuit of Several of its buildings are of great architectural interest. The basilica of San Michele is one of the finest specimens ex- tant of the Lombard style (cf. Arcnrrecrury, vol. ii, p. 435), and as it was within its walls that the crown was placed on the head of the "kings of Italy," from whom the house of Savoy claims to be descended, it has received the legal title of Basilica Reale (royal decree of 1863). A careful restoration has since been effected. The cathedral of San Stefano, of which the first stone was laid by Bishop Ascanio Sforza in 1488, is still unfinished, the original design by Cristoforo Rocchi, a pupil of Bramante, consist- ing of a central octagon from which four arms projected so as to form across. In the interior is the tomb of St Augustine, a remarkable specimen of 14th-century sculp- ture, which presents the saint life-size in pontifical robes, and is surrounded by a profusion of bas-reliefs and minor figures representing saints of his order, liberal arts, and cardinal virtues—in all, 420 heads. The relics which it enshrines are said to have been brought from Hippo to Sar- dinia by African refugees, purchased in 724 by Liutprand, and deposited in the now ruined church of San Pietro in Ciel d'Oro, and thence transferred to the cathedral subse- quent to their rediscovery in 1695. Beneath the high altar is the tomb of Boetius, whose

remains were also brought from San Pietro; and from the roof of the building is suspended the lance of Roland (Orlando).? Of

7 The famous Certosa of Pavia, one of the most Inagnificent monas- teries in the world, is not situated within the city, but at a distance of about 5 miles towards the north. Its founder, Gian Galeazzo Visconti (to whom we also owe the Milan cathedral), laid the first stone on 27th August 1396, and the building was nominally finished in 1542. A parallelogram, about 140 yards long by 110 broad, is surrounded on all sides by a lofty cloister formed of 128 arches. The church, whose marble fagade is more richly decorated than any other in north Italy, is in the form of a Latin cross, 258 feet long by 177 feet wide, with three naves and a vast octagonal dome. In the south transept stands the mausoleum, in Carrara marble, of Gian Galeazzo Visconti, designed by Galeazzo Pellegrini in 1490; and in the north transept are the marble statues of Lodovico Sforza il Moro and his consort Beatrice by Cristoforo Solari. The Carthusian monks, to whom the monastery was entrusted from the first by its founder, were bound to employ a certain proportion of their annual revenue in prosecuting the work till its completion ; and even after 1542 they voluntarily continued to expend large sums on further decoration. The Certosa of Pavia is thus a practical text-book of Italian art for well-nigh three centuries (see Durelli, La Certosa di Pavia, Milan, 1823; and Gruner's Fresco. De- corations, 1854, and Terra Cotta Architecture in North Italy, 1867).

secular edifices in Pavia the most noteworthy is the palace 'or castle of the Visconti, begun in 1360 for Galeazzo IT. It is a vast quadrangle, presenting to the outside heavy fronts of massive masonry, but in the 15th and 16th centuries it was as remarkable for sumptuousness as for strength. Originally there was a square tower at each corner; two were destroyed by the French artillery in 1527.1 The university of Pavia (formally constituted in 1361 by the emperor Charles IV., but claiming to have its first origin in a school founded by Charlemagne) has faculties of law, medicine, and science. The professors number between forty and fifty, but the students have de- creased from 1475 in 1860 to 604 in 1881-82. Among its subsidiary establishments are two colleges—the Borromeo and the Ghislieri—founded respectively

by Archbishop Borromeo (1563) and Pope Pius V. (1569) for the gratuitous maintenance of a certain number of poor students ; a museum of natural history, instituted in 1772 under Spallanzani; a botanical garden, commenced in Leis am agricultural garden, bestowed on the university by Napo- leon in 1806; and the oldest anatomical cabinet in Italy. The university library was founded by Maria Theresa in 1754; the famous collection of books which Gian Galeazzo brought together by the aid of Petrarch was carried off to Blois by the French in 1500. The civil hospital of San Matteo is a large and flourishing institution, dating from 1449; like the Borromeo and Ghislieri colleges, it has large landed estates in the circondario. Comparatively few manufactures are prosecuted in Pavia, but there is considerable trade by water as well as by rail, barges being able to pass down the Po to the Adriatic and along the canal to Milan. The population of the city was 27,885 in 1871 and 27,792 in 1881, or, including the suburbs Ticino, Calvenzano, and Borgorato, 29,836 ; that of the commune

was 29,618 in 1871 and 29,941 in 1881. History.—Ticinum—it was not till the close of the 7th century that the city was called Papia or Pavia—was a place of some import- ance under the Roman empire, having, according to Pliny, been founded by two Gallic tribes at the time of the first Gallic immigra- tion into Italy. It was at Ticinum that Augustus met the funeral procession of Drusus ; and Claudius II. was first saluted emperor by the garrison in the city. Ravaged by Attila in 452 and by Odoacer in 476, Ticinum was, after 489, raised to much more than its former position by Theodoric the Goth, who restored its fortifi- cations and made it the seat of a royal palace. From Theodoric’s successors it was recovered for the Eastern empire by Narses ; but the imperial garrison, after a siege of more than three years, was obliged by famine to surrender to the Lombards in 578, and Ticinum- Pavia became, as the capital of the Lombard kingdom, one of the leading cities of Italy. By the conquest of Pavia and the capture of Desiderius in 774 Charlemagne completely destroyed the Lom- bard supremacy ; but the city continued to be the centre of the Carolingian power in Italy, and a royal residence was built in the neighbourhood (Corteolona on the Olona). It was in San Michele Maggiore in Pavia that Berengar of Friuli and his quasi-regal successors down to Berengar II. and Adalbert II. were crowned “kings of Italy.” Under the reign of the first the city was

sacked and burned by the Hungarians, and the bishop was among those who perished in the flames. At Pavia was celebrated in 951 the marriage of Otto I. and Adelheid (Adelaide), which exercised so important an influence on the relations of the cmpire and Italy ; but, when the succession to the crown of Italy came to be dis- puted between the emperor Henry II. and Harduin of Ivrea, the city sided strongly with the latter. Laid in ruins by Henry, who was attacked by the citizens on the night after his coronation in 1004, it was none the less ready to close its gates on Conrad the Salic in 1026. The jealousy which had meanwhile been growing up between Pavia and Milan having in 1056 broken out into open war, Pavia in the long run had recourse to the hated emperors to aid her against her now more hated rival; and for the most part

The Carthusians were expelled in 1782, and, after being held for a time by Cistercians (1784) and Carmelites (1798), the monastery was closed in 1810; but it was restored to the Carthusians in 1848, and was exempted from confiscation in 1866. The lead was all stripped from the roof in 1797 by order of the French Directory ; but the building as a whole is still in excellent preservation.

1 See Professor Magenta's monograph, I Visconti e gli Sforza nel Castello di Pavia, Milan, 1884, 2 vols., folio.

she remained, through all the broils and revolutions o i attached to the Ghibelline party till the latter part nie ae century. From 1360, when Galeazzo was appointed imperial vicar by Charles IV., Pavia became practically a possession of the Visconti family, and in due course formed part of the duchy of Milan. For the success which attended its insurrection against the French garrison in 1499 it paid a terrible penalty in 1500, being both given over to pillage and forced to furnish a contribution of 50,000 gold crowns. Having been strongly fortified by Charles V. the city was in 1525 able to bid defiance to Francis I., who was 50 disastrously beaten in the vicinity ; but two years later the French under Lautrec subjected it to a sack of seven days. In 1655 Prince Thomas of Savoy invested Pavia with au army of 20,000 French- nien, but had to withdraw after fifty-two days' siege. During the 18th century the city had its full share of the wars. The

Austrians under Prince Eugene occupied it in 1706, the French in 1733, and the French and Spaniards in 1745 ; and the Austrians were again iu possession from 1746 till 1796. In May of that year it was seized for the French republic by Napoleon, who, to punish it for an insurrection, condemned it to three hours' pillage. The revolu- tionary movement of February 1848 was crushed by the Austrians and the university was closed ; and, though the Sardinian forces obtained possession in March, the Austrians soon recovered their ground, It was not till 1859 that Pavia passed with the rest of Lombardy to the Sardinian crown.

At several periods Pavia has been the centre of great intellectual activity. It was in a tower which, previous to 1584, stood near the church of Dell' Annunziata that Boetius wrote his De Consolatione Philosophi#; the legal school of Pavia was rendered celebrated in the 11th century by Lanfranc (afterwards archbishop of Canter- bury) ; Christopher Columbus studied at the university about 1447 ; and printing was introduced in 1471. Two of the bishops of Pavia have been raised to the papal throne as John XIV. and Julius III. Lanfranc, Pope John XIV., Porta the anatomist, and Cremona the mathematician were born in the city.

See Breventano, Istoria di Pavia, 1570; Marroni, De ecclesia et episcopis papiensibus commentarius, 1757; Capsoni, Mem. stor. di Pavia, 1782; Carpa- nelli, Compendio istorico delle cose pavest, 1817; and various monographs by the local antiquarians Magenta and Dell' Acqua.

PAVLOGRAD, a town of European Russia, at the head of a district in the government of Ekaterinoslaff, on the river Voltch'ya, 13 miles from its junction with the Samara (a tributary of the Dnieper), and a short distance to the left of the railway from Kharkoff to Sebastopol. It dates from the latter half of the 18th century, and was originally known as Luganskoe Selo. It was made a district town of Ekaterinoslaff in 1784. Its population increased from 8653 in 1865 to 11,400 in 1870; and it is the seat of three annual fairs, and has a large trade in cattle.

PAWNBROKING. See PLEDGE; also UsuRY AND Usury Laws.

PAWTUCKET, a town of the United States, in Provid- ence county, Rhode Island, 4 miles north-east of Providence by the Providence and Worcester

Railroad, is situated on both sides of the navigable Pawtucket river (Blackstone river above the falls), which falls about 50 feet at this point, affording abundant water-power. At Pawtucket in 1790 Samuel Slater erected the first water-power cotton-factory in America. In the early part of the present century Paw- tucket was the seat of shipbuilding and of considerable commerce. It is now a place with nearly 100 different industries, including the Conart Thread Works (employ- ing over 2000 hands), large manufactories of cotton and woollen cloths, steam-engines, fire-engines, &c. The exports and imports amount to several million dollars annually. In 1862 Pawtucket, originally belonging to Massachusetts, became part of Rhode Island. The population in 1880 was 19,030, and in 1884 (estimated) about 23,000.

PAXO, or Paxos, one of the Iontan IsLANps (9.2), about 8 miles south of the southern extremity of Corfu, is a hilly mass of limestone 5 miles long by 2 broad, and not more than 600 feet high. Though it has only a single stream and a few springs, and the inhabitants were often obliged, before the Russians and English provided them with cisterns, to bring water from the mainland, Paxo 1s well clothed with olives, which produce oil of the very highest quality. Gaion (or, less correctly, Gaia), the prin- cipal village, lies on the east coast, and has a small har-

bour. Towards the centre, on an eminence, stands Papandi, the residence of the bishop of Paxo, and throughout the island are scattered a large number of churches, whose belfries add greatly to the picturesqueness of the views. On the west and south-west coasts are some extensive and remarkable caverns, of which an account will be found in Davy’s Lonian Islands, vol. i. pp. 66-71. Ancient writers— Polybius, Pliny, &c.—do not mention Paxos by itself, but apply the plural form Paxi (IIa£o/) to Paxos and the smaller island which is now known as Antipaxo (the Propaxos of the Antonine Itinerary). Compare Pan, p. 208 above. PAXTON, Sir JoszepH (1803-1865), architect and orna- mental gardener, was born of humble parents at Milton Bryant, near Woburn, Bedfordshire, and was educated at the grammar-school of that town. Having served his apprenticeship as gardener, he obtained employment at Chiswick, the seat of the duke of Devonshire,

and eventually became superintendent of the duke's gardens and grounds at Chatsworth, and manager of his Derbyshire estates. The design according to which he remodelled the gar- dens and grounds has awakened the general admiration of landscape gardeners; and he also built a grand con- servatory, in which he introduced various improvements of great value in construction and arrangements. To this edifice there attaches a peculiar interest from the fact that it formed the model for the Great Exhibition building of 1851. The happy suggestion of Paxton solved a difficulty which threatened to render it impossible to hold the exhi- bition, and in recognition of his great services he received the honour of knighthood. On the formation of the Crystal Palace Company he was invited to prepare the design for the building at Sydenham, and was also appointed director of the gardens and grounds. Subsequently he received several commissions as an architect, his most important design being that for the mansion of Baron James de Rothschild at Ferritres in France. His versa- tility of invention was also shown by his organization of the Army Work Corps which served in the Crimea. In 1854 he was chosen M.P. for Coventry, which he continued to represent till his death, which occurred at his residence near the Crystal Palace, 8th June 1865. Paxton was elected in 1826 a Fellow of the Horticultural Society, in 1833 a Fellow of the Linnean Society, and in 1844 he was made a knight of the order of St Vladimir by the em- peror of Russia. He is the author of several contributions to the literature of horticulture, including a Practical

Treatise on the Culture of the Dahlia (1838) and a Pocket'

Botanical Dictionary (1st ed., 1840). He also edited the Cottage Calendar, the Horticultural Register, and the Botanical Magazine.

PAYMENT, in English law, is one of the modes of per- formance of an obligation, and consists in the discharge of a sum due in money or the equivalent of money. In order that payment may extinguish the obligation it is necessary that it should be made at a proper time and place, in a proper manner, and by and to a proper person. If the sum due be not paid at the appointed time, the creditor is entitled to sue the debtor at once, in spite of the readiness of the latter to pay at a later date, subject, in the case of bills and notes, to the allowance of days of grace. In the common case of sale of goods for ready money, a right to the goods vests at once upon sale in the

purchaser, a right to the price in the seller; but the seller need not part with the goods till payment of the price.

Payment may be made at any time of the day upon which it falls due, except in the case of mercantile contracts, where the creditor is not bound to wait for payment beyond the usual hours of mercantile business. If no place be fixed for payment, the debtor is bound to find, or to use reasonable means to find, the creditor, unless the latter be

PA X—

Pay

abroad. Payment must be made in money which isa legal tender (see below), unless the creditor waive his right to payment in money by accepting some other mode of pay- ment, as a negotiable instrument or a transfer of credit. If the payment be by negotiable instrument, the instrument may operate either as an absolute or as a conditional dis- charge. In the ordinary case of payment by cheque the creditor accepts the cheque conditionally upon its being honoured ; if it be dishonoured, he is remitted to his original rights. The creditor has a right to payment in full, and is not bound to accept part payment unless by special agreement. Part payment is sufficient to take the debt out of the Statute of Limitations. It is a technical rule of English law that payment of a smaller sum, even though accepted by the creditor in full satisfaction, is no defence to a subsequent action for the debt. The reason of this rule seems to be that there is no consideration for the creditor foregoing his right to full payment. In order that payment of a smaller sum may satisfy the debt, it must be made by a person other than the person originally liable, or at an earlier date, or at another place, or in another manner than the date, place, or manner contracted for, Thus a bill or note may be satisfied by money to a less amount, or a money debt by a bill or note to a less amount; a debt of £100 cannot be discharged by payment of £90 (unless the creditor execute a release under seal), though it may be discharged by payment of £10 before the day appointed, or by a bill for £10. Payment must in general be made by the debtor or his agent, or by a stranger to the contract with the assent of the debtor. If payment be made by a stranger without the assent of the debtor, it seems uncertain how far English law regards such payment as a satisfaction of the debt. If the debtor

ratify the pay- ment, it then undoubtedly becomes a satisfaction. Pay- ment must be made to the creditor or his agent. A bona Jide payment to an apparent agent may be good, though he has in fact no authority to receive it. Such payment will usually be good where the authority of the agent has been countermanded without notice to the debtor. The fact of payment may be presumed, as from lapse of tiie. Thus payment of a testator's debts is generally presumed after twenty years. A written receipt is only presumptive and not conclusive evidence of payment. If payment be made under a mistake of fact, it may be recovered, but it is otherwise if it be made under a mistake of law, for it is a maxim of law that ignorantia legis neminem excusat. Money paid under compulsion of law, even though not due, cannot generally be recovered where there has been no fraud or extortion.

Appropriation of Payments.—Wherc the creditor has two debts duc to him from the same debtor on distinct accounts, the general law as to the appropriation of payments made by the debtor is that the debtor is entitled to apply the payments to such account as he thinks fit. Solvitur in modum solventis. In default of appropria- tion by the debtor the creditor is entitled to determine the applica- tion of the sums paid, and may appropriate them even to the dis- charge of debts barred by the Statute of Limitations. In default of appropriation by either debtor or creditor, the law implies an appropriation of the earlier paymcuts to the earlier debts.

Payment into and out of Cowrt.—Money is gencrally paid into court to abide the result of pending litigation, as in intcrpleader proceedings, or where litigation has already begun, as security for costs or as a defence or partial defence toa claim. Payment into court does not necessarily (except in actions for libel and slander) operate as an admission of liability. Money may sometimes be paid into court where no litigation is pending, as under the Trustee Relief Act, 1847. Payment of money out of court is obtained by the order of the court upon petition or summons or otherwise, or simply on the request or the written authority of the person entitled to it.

Payment of Wages.—By the "Truck Act," 1 and 2 Will. IV. ¢. 37 (which applies to Great Britain), the payment of wages to most kinds of labourers and workmen otherwise than in coin is prohi- bited. This Act does not apply

to domestic or agricultural scrvants. The provisions of the Act are extended to the hosicry trade by 37

and 38 Vict. c. 48. Payment of wages in public-houses (except in the case of domestic servants) is illegal by the combined effect of 35 and 36 Vict. cc. 76 and 77, and 46 and 47 Vict. c. 31.

Tender. —This is payment duly proffered to a creditor, but ren- dered abortive by the act of the creditor. In order that a tender may be good in law it must asa rule be made under circumstances which would make it a good payment if acccpted. The money tendered must be a legal tender, unless the creditor waive his right to a legal tender, as where he objects to the amount and not the mode of tender. Bank of England notes are legal tender for any sum above £5, except by the bank itself, 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 98, s. 6. Gold is legal tender to any amount, silver up to 40s., bronze up to Is., 83 and 34 Vict. c. 10. By 29 and 380 Vict. c. 65 the gold coinage of colonial mints may be made legal tender by pro- clamation. Under the powers of this Act the gold coinage of the Sydney mint has been declared to be legal tender. The effect of tender is not to discharge the debt, but to enable the debtor, when sued for the debt, to pay the money into court and to get judg- ment for the costs of his defence.

Seotland.—The law of Scotland as to payment agrces in most points with that of England. Where a debt is constituted by writ payment cannot be proved by witnesses; where it is not consti- tuted by writ, payment to the amount of £100 Scots may be proved by witnesses ; beyond that amount it can only be proved by writ or oath of party. The term tender seems to be strictly applied only to a judicial offer of a sum for damages and expenses made by the defender during litigation, not to an offer made by the debtor before litigation. Bank of England notes are not a legal tender in Scot- land, 8 and 9 Vict. c. 88, s. 15, or in Ireland, 8 and 9 Vict. c. 37, s. 6.

United States.—In the United States the law as a rule does not materially differ from English law. In some Statcs, however, money may be recovered, even when it has been paid under a mis- take of law. The question of legal tender has been an important one. In 1862 Congress passed an Act making

treasury notes legal tender. After much litigation, the Supreme Court of the United States finally decided in 1870 in favour of the constitutionality of this Act, both as to contracts made before and after it was passed (see 1 Kent's Comm., p. 252). These notes are legal tender for all purposes except duties on imports and interest on the public debt. All gold coins, silvcr dollars, and silver coins below the value ofa dollar coined before 1854 are legal tender to any amount. Silver coins below the value of a dollar of 1854 and subsequent years are legal tender for sums not exceeding five dollars. Silver three-cent pieces of the dates 1851 to 1853 are legal tender for sums not exceed- ing thirty cents, those of subsequent years for sums not exceeding five dollars. Cents and foreign coins are not legal tender. Postage currency is not legal tender for private debts (Bouvier's Law Diet., "Tegal Tender"). It falls exclusively within the jurisdiction of Congress to declare paper or copper money a legal tender. By the constitution of the United States, "no State… shall make anything but gold and silver coin a tender in payment of debts" fart. 1. s, 10).

PAYSANDU, formerly San Bento, a port and depart- mental town of Uruguay, is situated on the left bank of the river Uruguay in 32° 20'S. lat. and 58° 1' W. long., 270 miles by river from Montevideo, and 120 miles by road from Durazno, the present terminus of the railway. The long streets run east and west at right angles to the river, and the slope of the ground makes drainage easy. Paysandu has been a great battle-ground: in 1846, for instance, it was held by Oribe and bombarded by Rivera, and in 1865 it was captured by the Brazilians after a twenty-eight days' siege. But the name is best known in Europe for the ox- tongues, &c., preserved in its extensive saladeros. In 1868 the population was about 9000, and it has since consider- ably increased. Taking Paysandu to mean Father Sandu or Alexander, the inhabitants call themselves Sanduséros.

PAYTA, or Parra, a town of Peru, in the province of Piura, with only 2390 inhabitants in 1876, but of im- portance as the northmost harbour of the Peruvian coast, the port of the city of Piura (San Miguel de), with which it is connected by rail, a regular calling-place for steamers, and a great rendezvous for whaling vessels. It consists of a single narrow street of reed and wattle houses, but there are a good harbour and an iron custom-house. The great drawback of the place used to be want of water, previous to the

construction by the Government of an aqueduct from the Chira river. Straw hats, cattle, hides, and cotton are exported. Formerly a rich and flourishing place, Payta has never recovered from the effects of Lord Anson's

attack in 1741, when only two of its churches were spared. There is a raised beach at Payta 300 feet high ; the slate and sandstone are covered by conglomerate sand and a gypsum formation containing shells of living species.

PAZ DE AYACUCHO, La. See La Paz.

PEA (Pisum), a genus of Leguminose, consisting of herbs with compound pinnate leaves ending in tendrils, by means of which the weak stems are enabled to support themselves, and with large leafy stipules at the base. The flowers are typically "' papilionaceous," with a 'standard " or large petal above, two side petals or wings, and two front petals below forming the keel. The stamens are ten,—nine united, the tenth usually free or only slightly joined to the others. The ovary is prolonged into a long, thick, bent style, compressed from side to side at the tip and fringed with hairs. The fruit is a characteristic "legume" or pod, bursting when ripe into two valves, which bear the large globular seeds (peas) on their edges. These seeds are on short stalks, the upper extremity of which is dilated into a shallow cup or aril; the two cotyledons are thick and fleshy, with a radicle bent along their edges on one side. The genus is exceedingly close to Lathyrus, being only distinguished technically by the style, which in the latter genus is compressed from above downwards and not thick. It is not surprising, therefore, that under the general name "'pea" species both of Pisum and of Lathyrus are included. The common field or grey pea with compressed mottled seeds and two to four leaflets is Pisum arvense, which is cultivated in all temperate parts of the globe, but which, according to the Italian botanists, is truly a native of central and southern Italy. The garden pea, P. sativum, is more tender than the preceding, and its origin is not known. It has not been found in a wild state anywhere, and it is considered that it may be a form of P. arvense, having, however, from four to six leaflets to each leaf and globular seeds of uniform colour.

P. sativum was known to Theophrastus ; and De Candolle points out that the word ‘pison ” or its equivalent occurs in the Albanian tongue as well as in Latin, whence he concludes that the pea was known to the Aryans, and was perhaps brought by them into Greece and Italy. Peas have been found in the Swiss lake-dwell- ings of the bronze period. The garden peas differ considerably in size, shape of pod, degrec of productiveness, form and colour of seed, &c. The sugar peas arc those in which the inner lining of the pod is very thin instead of being somewhat horny, so that the whole pod can be eaten. Unlike most papilionaceous plants, pea- flowers are perfectly fertile without the aid of insects, and thus do not intercross so freely as most similar plants do. On the other hand, a case is known wherein the pollen from a purple-podded pea applied to the stigma of one of the green-podded sugar peas produced a purple pod, showing that not only the ovule but even the ovary was affected by the cross. The numerous varieties of peas in cultivation have been obtained by cross-fertilization, but chiefly by selection. Peas constitute a highly nutritious article of diet from the large quantity of nitrogenous materials they contain in addition to starchy and saccharine matters. :

The Sweet Pea, cultivated for the beauty and fragrance of its flowers, is not a true Piswm, but a species of Lathyrus (L. odoratus), a native of southern Europe. The Chick Pea (Cicer arietinum), not cultivated in England, is still farther removed from the true peas. The Everlasting Pea of gardens is a species of Lathyrus, with very decp fleshy roots, bold foliage, and beautiful but scentless flowers. L. datifolius, a British wild plant, is the source of most

of the garden varieties.

PEABODY, a town of the United States, in Essex county, Massachusetts, 5 miles north-west of Salem. In- corporated as South Danvers in 1855, it adopted its pre- sent name in 1868 in honour of the philanthropist George Peabody, who was born in the township, and in 1852 erected there the Peabody Institute, which now contains various memorials of its founder, the portrait of herself presented by Queen Victoria, the Congress medal, &c. Peabody contains a large number of leather and morocco factories, and

several glue-works, print-works, &e. Its ‘nhabitants numbered 7343 in 1870 and 9028 in 1880.

PEABODY, Grorcr (1795-1869), philanthropist, was descended from an old yeoman family of Hertfordshire, England, named Pabody or Pebody, who, six generations before his birth, had emigrated to New England. He was born at Danvers (now Peabody), Massachusetts, 18th February 1795. The only regular education he received was at the district school, and when only eleven years of age he became apprentice at a grocery store. At the end of four years he became assistant to his brother, who kept a dry goods shop, and a year afterwards, on the shop being burned, to his uncle, who had a business in George Town, District of Columbia. After serving as a volunteer at Fort Warburton in the short war between Great Britain and the United States in 1812, he became partner with Elisha Riggs in a dry goods store, Riggs furnishing the capital, while Peabody had the practical management. As bagman he travelled through the western wilds of New York and Pennsylvania and the plantations of Maryland and Vir- ginia. Through his energy and skill the business increased with astounding rapidity, and on the retirement of Riggs about 1830 Peabody found himself at the head of one of the largest mercantile concerns in the world. About 1837 he established himself in London as merchant and money-broker at Wanford Court, City, and in 1843 he withdrew from the concern in America. It is, however, as a sagacious and generous philanthropist that Peabody has made his name a household word. While holding aloof from the strife of politics in the United States, he was ready to give his native country the benefit of his business skill and the aid of his wealth in its financial difficulties. The number of his great benefactions to public objects is too great for bare mention here. It must suffice to name among the more important a gift of £25,000 for educational purposes at Danvers; of £100,000 to found and endow an institution for science in Baltimore, a sum afterwards increased by a second donation of £100,000 ; of various sums to Harvard University ; and of £350,000 for the erection of dwelling-houses for the work- ing-classes in London, which sum was increased by his will to half a million. If

this last benefaction has failed to produce the good results anticipated, this has been due to causes for which Peabody was not responsible, and which do not at all detract from the wise beneficence of the gift. He received from the Queen the offer of a baronetcy, but declined it. In 1867 the United States Congress awarded him a special vote of thanks for his many large gifts to public institutions in America. He died at Eaton Square, London, 14th November 1869.

PEACH. By Bentham and Hooker the peach is in- cluded under the genus Prunus (Prunus persica), and its resemblance to the plum is indeed obvious; others have classed it with the almond, Amygdalus; while others again have considered it sufficiently distinct to constitute a genus of its own under the name Persica.

In general terms the peach may be said to be a medium- sized tree, with lanceolate, stipulate leaves, borne on long, slender, relatively unbranched shoots, and with the flowers arranged singly, or in groups of two or more, at intervals along the shoots, The flowers have a hollow tube at the base bearing at its free edge five sepals, an equal number of petals, usually concave or spoon-shaped, pink or white, and a great number of stamens. The pistil consists of a single carpel with its ovary, style, stigma, and solitary ovule or twin ovules. This carpel is, in the first instance, free within the flower-tube, but, as growth goes on, the flower- tube and the carpel become fused together into one mass, the flesh of the peach, the inner layers of the carpel be- coming woody to form the stone, while the ovule ripens into the kernel or seed. This is exactly the structure of the plum or apricot, and differs from that of the almond,

which is identical in the first instance, only in the circum. stance that the fleshy part of the latter eventually becomes dry and leathery and cracks open along a line called the suture.

The nectarine is a variation from the peach, mainly characterized by the circumstance that, while the skin of the ripe fruit is downy in the peach, it is shining and destitute of hairs in the nectarine. That there jis no essential difference between the two is, however, shown by the facts that the seeds of

the peach will produce nectarines, and wee versa, and that it is not very uncommon, though still exceptional, to see peaches and nectarines on the same branch, and fruits which combine in themselves the characteristics of both nectarines and peaches. The blossoms of the peach are formed the autumn previous to their expansion, and this fact, together with the peculiarities of their form and position, requires to be borne in mind by the gardener in his pruning and training operations, as mentioned in HortrcuLrure (vol. xii. pp. 272, 273). The only point of practical interest requiring mention here is the very singular fact attested by all peach-growers, that, while certain peaches are liable to the attacks of a para- sitic fungus known as mildew, others are not, showing a difference in constitution analogous to that observed in the case of human beings, some of whom will readily succumb to particular diseases, while others seem proof against their attacks. In the case of the peach this peculiarity is in some way connected with the presence of small glandular outgrowths on the stalk, or at the base of the leaf. Some peaches have globular, others reniform glands, others none at all, and these latter trees are much more subject to mil- dew than are those provided with glands.

The history of the peach, almond, and nectarine is interesting and important as regards the question of the origin of species and the production and perpetuation of varieties. As to the origin of the peach two views are held, that of Alphonse de Candolle, who attributes all cultivated varieties to a distinct species, probably of Chinese origin, and that adopted by many naturalists, but more especially by Darwin, who looks upon the peach as a modification of the almond. The importance of the subject demands that a summary of the principal facts and inferences bearing on this ques- tion should be given. In the first place, the peach as we now know it has been nowhere recognized in the wild state. In the few instances where it is said to have been found wild the probabilities are that the tree was an escape from cultivation. Aitchison, how- ever, gathered in the Hazardarakht ravine in Afghanistan a form with different-shaped fruit from that of the almond, being larger and flatter. “The surface of the fruit,” he observes, “resembles that of the peach in texture and colour; and the nut is quite distinct fron that of 419 [the wild almond]. The whole shrub resembles more what one might consider a wild form of the peach than that of the almond.” It is admitted, however, by all competent botan- ists that the almond is wild in the hotter

and drier parts of the Mediterranean and Levantine regions. Aitchison also mentions the almond as wild in some parts of Afghanistan, where it is known to the natives as ‘‘bédam,” the same word that they apply to the cultivated almond. The branches of the tree are carried by the priests in religious ceremonies. It is not known as a wild plant in China or Japan.

As to the nectarine, of its origin as a variation from the peach there is abundant evidence, as has already been mentioned ; it is only requisite to add the very important fact that the seeds of the nectarine, even when that nectarine has been produced by bud- variation from a peach, will gencrally produce nectarines, or, as gardeners say, “come true,”

Darwin brings together the records of several cases, not only of gradations between peaches and nectarines, but also of intermediate forms between the peach and the almond. So far as we know, however, no case has yet been recorded of a peach or a nectarine producing an almond, or vice versa, although if all have had a com- mon origin such an event might be expected. Thus the botanical evidence seems to indicate that the wild almond is the source of cultivated almonds, peaches, and nectarines, and conscquently that the peach was introduced from Asia Minor or Persia, whence the name Persica given to the peach; and Aitchison’s discovery in Afghanistan of a form which reminded him of a wild peach lends additional force to this view.

On the other hand, Alphonse de Candolle, from philological and other considerations, considers the peach to be of Chinese origin.

PHA—PEA

The peach has not, it is true, been found wild in China, but it has been cultivated there from time immemorial ; it has entered into the literature and folk-lore of the people; and it is designated by 4 distinct name, “ to” or “tao,” a word found in the writings of Confucius five centuries before Christ, and even in other writings dating from the 10th century before the Christian era. Though now cultivated in India, and almost wild in some parts of the north- west, and, as we have seen, probably also in Afghanistan, it has no Sanskrit name; it is not mentioned in the Hebrew text of the Scriptures, nor in the earliest Greek times. Xenophon makes no mention of

the peach, though the Ten Thousand must have traversed the country where, according to some, the peach is native, but Theophrastus, a hundred years later, does speak of it as a Persian fruit, and De Candolle suggests that it might have been introduced into Greece by Alexander. According to his view, the seeds of the peach, cultivated for ages in China, might have been carried by the Chinese into Kashmir, Bokhara, and Persia between the period of the Sanskrit emigration and the Greco-Persian period. Once established, its cultivation would readily extend westward, or, on the other hand, by Cabul to north-western India, where its cul- tivation is not ancient. While the peach has been cultivated in China for thousands of years, the almond does not grow wild in that country, and its introduction is supposed not to go back farther than the Christian era.

On the whole, we should be inclined to attribute greater weight to the evidence from botanical sources than to that derived from philology, particularly since the discovery both of the wild almond and of a form like a wild peach in Afghanistan. It may, however, well be that both peach and almond are derived from some pre- existing and now extinct form whose descendants have spread over the whole geographic area mentioned ; but of course this is a mere speculation, though indirect evidence in its support might be ob- tained from the nectarine, of which no mention 1s made in ancient literature, and which, as we have seen, originates from the peach and reproduces itself by seed, thus offering the characteristics of a species in the act of developing itself. (M. T. M.)

PEACOCK (the first syllable from the Latin Pavo, in Anglo-Saxon Pawe, Dutch Pawuw, German Pfau, French Paon), the bird so well known from the splendid plumage of the male, and as the proverbial personification of pride. A native of the Indian peninsula and Ceylon, in some parts of which it is very abundant, its domestication dates from times so remote that nothing can be positively stated on that score. Setting aside its importation to Pales- tine by Solomon (1 Kings x. 22; 2 Chron. ix. 21), its assignment in classical mythology as the favourite bird of Hera or Juno testifies to the early acquaintance the Greeks must have had with it ; but, though it is mentioned by Aristophanes and other older writers, their knowledge of it was probably very slight until after the conquests of Alexander. Throughout all succeeding time, however, it has never very freely rendered itself to

domestication, and, retaining much of its wild character, can hardly be accounted an inhabitant of the poultry-yard, but rather an ornamental denizen of the pleasure-ground or shrubbery ; while, even in this condition, it is seldom kept in large numbers, for it has a bad reputation for doing mischief in gardens, it is not very prolific, and, though in earlier days highly esteemed for the table,! it is no longer considered the delicacy it was once thought.

As in most cases of domestic animals, pied or white varieties of the ordinary Peacock, Pavo cristatus, are not unfrequently to be seen; and, though lacking in propor- tion the gorgeous resplendence for which the common bird stands unsurpassed, they are valued as curiosities. Greater interest, however, attends what is known as the “japanned” Peacock, often erroneously named the Japanese or Japan Peacock, a form which has received the name of P. nigripennis, as though it were a distinct species. In this form the cock, besides other less conspicuous differ- ences, has all the upper wing-coverts of a deep lustrous blue instead of being mottled with brown and white, while

1 Classical authors contain many allusions to its high appreciation at the most sumptuous banquets ; and medizeval bills of fare on state occasions nearly always include it. In the days of chivalry one of the most solemn oaths was taken ‘on the Peacock”, which seems to have been served up garnished with its gaudy plumage.

with dull yellowish-brown near the base of the neck and shoulders. It “breeds true”; but occasionally a presum- ably pure stock of birds of the usual coloration throws out one or more having the “japanned” plumage, leading to the conclusion that the latter may be due to “reversion to a primordial and otherwise extinct condition of the species”, and it is to be observed that the “‘japanned” male has in the coloration of the parts mentioned no little resemblance to that of the second indubitably good species, the P. muticus (or P. spicifer of some writers) of Burma and Java, though the character of the latter’s crest—the feathers of which are barbed along their whole length instead of at the tip only—and its golden-green neck and breast furnish a ready means of distinction. The late Sir R. Heron

was confident that the “japanned” breed had arisen in England within his memory,? and Darwin (Anim. and Plants under Domestication, i. pp. 290-292) was inclined to believe it only a variety ; but its abrupt appear- ance, which rests on indisputable evidence, is most suggest- ive in the light that it may one day throw on the question

- Japanned ” or “ black-shouldered ” Peafowls.

of evolution as exhibited in the origin of ‘species ”. It should be stated that the “japanned” bird is not known

to exist anywhere as a wild race. The accompanying woodcut is copied from a plate drawn by Mr Wolf, given

in Mr Elliot’s Monograph of the Phasiamde.

The Peafowls belong to the group Galling, from the normal members of which they do not materially differ in structure ; and, though by some systematists they are raised to the rank of a Family, Pavonide, most are content to regard them as a Subfamily of Phasianide: (PHEASANT, 9.2.). Akin to the genus Pavo is Poly- plectrum, of which the males are armed with two or more spurs on each leg, and neat them is gencrally placed the genus Argusianus, containing the Argus-Pheasants, remarkable for their wonderfully ocellated plumage, and the extraordinary length of the secondary quills of their wings, as well as of the tail-feathers, It must always be remembered that the so-called ‘‘tail” of the Peacock is formed not by the rectrices or true tail-feathers, but by the singular development of the tail-coverts, a fact of which any one may be satisfied by looking at the bird when these magnificent plumes are erected and expanded in disk-like form as 1s his habit when dis- playing his beauty to his mates. _ (A. N.)

PEACOCK, Georce (1791-1858), mathematician, was

born at Thornton Hall, Denton, near Darlington, 9th April

2 This is probably not the case. The present writer has a distinct recollection of having seen a bird of this form represented in an old Dutch pieture, though when or where he cannot state.

1791. He was educated at Richmond, Yorkshire, and entered Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1809. He was second wrangler in the mathematical tripos of 1812 (Sir J. F,. W. Herschel being senior), was elected fellow of his college in 1814, and became assistant tutor and lecturer in 1815, full tutor in 1823, and sole tutor of “his side” in 1835. Peacock distinguished himself by his business capacity, and by his broad views of the duties and func- tions of the educational institution in whose management he had so large a share.

Peacock was all his life an ardent educational reformer. While still an undergraduate he formed a league with Herschel, Babbage, and Maule to conduct the famous struggle of ‘‘d-ism versus dot-age,” which ended in the introduction into Cambridge of the Continental notation (3) in the infinitesimal calculus to the exclusion of the fluxional notation (y) of Newton. This was an import- ant reform, not so much on account of the mere change of notation (for nowadays mathematicians follow Lagrange in using both these notations), but because it signified the opening to the mathematicians of Cambridge of the vast storehouse of Continental discoveries. Up to that time Cambridge mathematicians had been resting supinely under the shadow of Newton, despising the Continental methods, but doing nothing to demonstrate the power of their own. The analytical society thus formed in 1813 published vari- ous memoirs, and translated Lacroix’s Differential Calculus in 1816. Peacock powerfully aided the movement by pub- lishing in 1820 A Collection of Examples of the Application of the Differential and Integral Calculus, which remains a valuable text-book to this day. He also took a great in- terest in the general question of university education. In 1841 he published a pamphlet on the university statutes, in which he indicated the necessity for reform; and in 1850 and 1855 he was a member of the commission of inquiry relative to the university of Cambridge.

In 1837 he was appointed Lowndean professor of astronomy. In 1839 he took the degree of D.D., and the same year was appointed by Lord Melbourne to the deanery of Ely. Without in any way neglecting his university duties, Peacock threw himself with character- istic ardour into

the duties of this new position. He improved the sanitation of Ely, published in 1840 Ob- servations on Plans for Cathedral Reform, and carried out extensive works of restoration in his own cathedral. He was twice prolocutor of the lower house of convocation for the province of Canterbury.

This list by no means exhausts the sphere of Peacock's activity. He was a prime mover in the establishment of the Cambridge Astronomical Observatory, and in the founding of the Cambridge Philosophical Society. He was a fellow of the Royal, Royal Astronomical, Geological, and other scientific societies. In 1838, and again in 1843, he was one of the commissioners for standards of weights and measures ; and he also furnished valuable information to the commissioners on decimal coinage, a matter in which he took great interest. He died on the 8th November 1858, before the university commission, in whose work he took so great an interest, had finished its labours.

It will excite little surprise that a man of so many occupations should have left more mark upon the men of his own day than upon the science of the succeeding generation. Although Peacock was most distinguished and will be longest remembered as a mathe- matician, it would be diffieult to point to much work of his which is of importance at the present day. His original coutributions to mathematical seienee were concerned chiefly with the philosophy of its first principles. He did good service in systematizing the operational laws of algebra, and in throwing light upon the nature and use of imaginaries. His work in this field was, however, thrown

into the shade by the later and farther-reaching discoveries of Hamilton and Grassmann. Two great services he did for mathema-

tical edueation which deserve especial mention. He published, first in 1830, and then in an enlarged form in 1842, a Treatise on Algebra, in' which he applied his philosophical ideas concerning algebraical analysis to the elucidation of its elements. This text. book was probably too far ahead of his age, for it does not seem to have come into very general use ; at all events, it might with great advantage be studied by the teachers of

elementary mathematics at the present day, and is very much superior in method and arrange- ment to any of the English text-books at present in vogue. The second great service was the publication in the British Association Reports for 1838 of his ‘‘ Report on the Recent Progress and Present State of certain branches of Analysis.” English mathematicians of this gencration will doubtless find on reading this brilliant summary a good many dieta which they will call in question, and they will see a good deal of evidence that Peaeock did not always fully appre- ciate, or perhaps always quite understand, the work of the foremost Continental mathematicians of his time ; but they will be ready to condone these shortcomings when they remember that they were carried on the shoulders of Peacock and his ‘‘d-istic league” out of the mire into which English mathematics had fallen, and that it is but natural that they should catch a better view of the sur- rounding scenery than did their bearer. Whatever its defects may be, Peacock’s report remains a work of permanent value, one of the first and one of the best of those valuable summaries of scientific progress which have enriched the annual volumes of the British Association, and which would have justified its existence had it done nothing else for the advancement of science.

PEACOCK, Tomas Love (1785-1866), novelist and poet, was born at Weymouth, 18th October 1785. His father, a glass merchant in London, died soon after his son’s birth, and young Peacock received his education at a private school at Englefield Green, where he distinguished himself by unusual precocity. After a brief experience of business he elected to devote himself to study and the pursuit of literature, living with his mother on their private means. His first books were poetical, The Monks of St Mark (1804), Palmyra (1806), The Genius of the Thames (1810), The Philosophy of Melancholy (1812),— works of no great merit. He also made several dramatic attempts, which did not find their way to the stage. He served for a short time as secretary to Sir Home Popham at Flushing, and paid several visits to Wales. In 1812 he became acquainted with Shelley, who made him his executor together with Lord Byron. In 1815 he evinced his peculiar power by writing Headlong Hall, the proto- type of all his subsequent novels. It was published in 1816, and Melincourt followed in the ensuing year. During 1817 he lived at Great Marlow, enjoying the almost daily society of Shelley, and writing Wightmare Abbey and Lthododaphne, by far the best of his long poems. In 1819 he received the appointment of assistant

examiner at the India House, at the same time as Mill and Strachey. Peacock’s nomination appears to have been due to the influence of his old schoolfellow Peter Auber, secretary to the East India Company, and the papers he prepared as tests of his ability were returned to him with the high encomium, “ Nothing superfluous and nothing wanting.” This was characteristic of the whole of his intellectual work; and equally characteristic of the man was his marriage about this time to a Welsh lady, to whom he pro- posed by letter, not having seen her for eight years. His official duties greatly interfered with independent com- position. Maid Marian nevertheless appeared in 1822, The Misfortunes of Elphin in 1829, and Crotchet Castle in 1831; and he would probably have written more but for the death in 1833 of his mother, to whom he was deeply attached. He also contributed to the Westminster Review and the Examiner. His services to the East India Com- pany, outside the usual official routine, were considerable. He defended it successfully against the attacks of Mr J. S. Buckingham and the Liverpool salt interest, and made the subject of steam navigation to India peculiarly his own. He represented the company before the various parliamentary committees on this question; and in 1839 and 1840 superintended the construction of iron steamers,

eh a

which not only made the voyage round the Cape success- fully, but proved very useful in the Chinese war. He also framed instructions for the Euphrates expedition, pro- nounced by General Chesney to be models of sagacity. In 1836 he succeeded Mill as chief examiner, and in 1856 he retired upon a pension. During his later years he contributed several papers to Fraser’s Magazine, including reminiscences of Shelley. He also wrote in the same magazine his last novel, Giryll Grange (1860), inferior to his earlier writings in humour and vigour, but still a surprising effort for a man of his age. He died 23d January 1866 at Lower Halliford, near Chertsey, where, so far as his London occupations would allow him, he had resided for more than forty years.

Peacock’s position in English literature is unique. There was nothing like his type of novel before his time ; though there might have been if it had occurred to Swift to invent a story as a vehicle for the dialogue of his Polite

Conversa- tion. But, while Swift's interlocutors represent ordinary types, Peacock's are highly exceptional ; while the humour of the former consists in their stereotyped conventionality or unconscious folly, the talk in Peacock's novels is brilliant ; and, while Swift's characters utter proverbs, Peacock's are equipped from the author's own stores of humorous observa- tion or reflexion. He speaks as well in his own person as through his puppets; and perhaps no writer since Pope has enriched English literature with such an abundance of quotable things. This pithy wit and sense, combined with remarkable grace and accuracy of natural description, atone for the primitive simplicity of plot and character. There ig just enough of both to keep the story going, and the author's plan required no more. Of his seven fictions, Nightmare Abbey and Crotchet Castle are perhaps on the whole the best, the former displaying the most vs comaca of situation, the latter the fullest maturity of intellectual power, and the most skilful grouping of the motley crowd of "perfectibilians, deteriorationists, statu- quo-ites, phreno- logists, transcendentalists, political economists, theorists in all sciences, projectors in all arts, morbid visionaries, romantic enthusiasts, lovers of music, lovers of the pictur- esque, and lovers of good dinners," who constitute the dramatis persone of that comedy in narrative, the Pea- cockian novel. Jfaid Marian and The Misfortunes of Elphin are hardly less entertaining, but are somewhat cramped by the absence of portraiture from the life and the necessity for historical colouring. Both contain de- seriptive passages of extraordinary beauty. Melincourt is a comparative failure, the excellent idea of an orang- outang mimicking humanity being insufficient as the sole groundwork of a novel. Headlong Hall, though more than foreshadowing the author's subsequent excellence, is marred by a certain bookish awkwardness characteristic of the recluse student, which reappears in Gryll Grange as the pedantry of an old- fashioned scholar, whose likes and dislikes have become inveterate and whose sceptical liberalism, always rather inspired by hatred of cant than enthusiasm for progress, has petrified into only too earnest conservatism. Pianos and perspective equally with com- petitive examinations and " panto-pragmatism" are the objects of the writer's distaste, and for the first time in his career we feel inclined to laugh at him, being no longer able to laugh with him. The book's quaint resolute paganism, however, is very refreshing in an age eaten up with introspection; it is the kindliest of Peacock's writings, and contains the most beautiful of his poems, " Years

Ago,” the reminiscence of an early attachment. In general the ballads and songs interspersed through his tales are models of exact and melodious diction, and instinct with true feeling. His more ambitious poems are worth little, except Rhododaphne, attractive as a story and perfect as a

PEA AAS

composition, but destitute of genuine poetical inspiration. His critical and miscellaneous writings are always interest- ing, especially the restorations of lost classical plays in the Hore Dramaticx, but the only one of great mark is the witty and crushing exposure in the Westminster Review of Moore's ignorance of the manners and belief he has ven- tured to portray in his Hpicurean. Peacock resented the misrepresentation of his favourite sect, the good and ill of whose tenets were fairly represented in his own person. Somewhat sluggish and self-indulgent, incapable of enthu- siasm or self-sacrifice, he yet possessed a deep undemon- strative kindliness of nature; he could not bear to see any one near him unhappy or uncomfortable; and his sym- pathy, no less than his genial humour, gained him the attachment of children, dependants, and friends. His feelings were steady rather than acute; he retained throughout life with touching fidelity the memory of an early affection. In official life he was upright and conscien- tious ; his judgment was shrewd and robust, and the quaint crotchets and prejudices which contrasted so curiously with his usual sagacity were in general the exaggeration of sound ideas held with undue exclusiveness. As a candidate for literary immortality he should be safe. The same causes which restrict his popularity ensure his perma- nence. His novels depend but slightly on temporary phases of manners, but are vitally associated with standard literature, and with general tendencies innate in the human mind. Neither his intellectual liberalism nor his constitu- tional conservatism will ever be out of date; and what Shelley justly termed "the lightness, strength, and chastity" of his diction secures him an honourable rank among those English writers whose claims to remembrance depend not only upon matter but upon style.

Peacock's works were collected, though not completely, and pub- lished in three volumes in 1875, at the expense of his friend and former protégé, Sir Henry Cole, with an excellent memoir by his grand-daughter Mrs Clarke, and a critical cssay by Lord Houghton. Other criticisms have been written, by Mr Spedding in the Edin- burgh Review and by James Hannay in the North British Review. For an interesting personal notice, see 4 Poet's Sketch Book, by R. W. Buchanan, 1884. (RaGs)

PEAR (Pyrus communis). The pear has essentially the same floral structure as the apple. In both cases the so- called fruit is composed of the flower-tube or upper end of the flower-stalk greatly dilated, and enclosing within its cellular flesh the five cartilaginous carpels which constitute the “core” and are really the true fruit. From the upper rim of the flower-tube or receptacle are given off the five sepals, the five petals, and the very numerous stamens. The form of the pear and of the apple respectively, although usually characteristic enough, is not by itself sufficient to distinguish them, for there are pears which cannot by form alone be distinguished from apples, and apples which cannot by superficial appearance be recognized from pears. The main distinction is the occurrence in the tissue of the fruit, or beneath the rind, of clusters of cells, filled with hard woody deposit in the case of the pear, constituting the “grit,” while in the apple no such formation of woody cells takes place. ‘The appearance of the tree—the bark, the foliage, the flowers—is, however, usually quite char- acteristic in the two species. Cultivated pears, whose number is enormous, are without doubt derived from one or two wild species widely distributed throughout Europe and western Asia, and sometimes forming part of the natural vegetation of the forests. — In England, where the pear is sometimes considered wild, there is always the doubt that it may not really be so, but the produce of some seed of a cultivated tree deposited by birds or other- wise, which has degenerated into the wild spine-bearing tree known as Pyrus cOmMMUNAS.

The cultivation of the pear extends to the remotest

antiquity. Traces of it have been found in the Swiss lake- dwellings ; it is mentioned in the oldest Greek writings, and was cultivated by the Romans. The word “pear” or its equivalent occurs in all the Celtic languages, while in Slavonic and other dialects different appellations, but still referring to the same thing, are found,—a diversity and multiplicity of nomenclature which leads De Candolle to infer a very ancient cultivation of the tree from the shores of the Caspian to those of the Atlantic. A certain race of pears, with white down on the under surface of their leaves, is supposed to have originated from P. nivalis, and their fruit is chiefly used in France in the

manufacture of Perry (q.v.). Other small-fruited pears, distinguished by their precocity and apple-like fruit, may be referred to P. cordata, a specics found wild in western France, and in Devonshire and Cornwall.

The late Professor Karl Koch considercd that cultivated pears were the descendants of three species—P. persica (from which the bergamots have descended), P. cleagrifolia, and P. sinensis. De- caisne, who made the subjcct one of critical study for a number of years, and not only investigated the wild forms, but carefully studied the peculiarities of the numerous varieties cultivated in the Jardin des Plantes, refers all cultivated pcars to one species, the individuals of which have in course of time diverged in various directions, so as to form now six races :—(1) the Celtic, including P. cordata ; (2) the Germanic, including P. communis, P. Achras, and P. piraster ; (8) the Hellenic, including P. parviflora, P. sinaica, and others; (4) the Pontic, including P. eleagrifolia; (5) the Indian, comprising P. Pasche ; and (6) the Mongolic, represented by P. sinensis. With reference to the Celtic race, P. cordata, it is interesting to note its connexion with Arthurian legend, and the Isle of Avalon or Isle of Apples. An island in Loch Awe has a Celtic legend containing the principal features of Arthurian story ; but in this case the word is ‘‘berries” instead of ‘‘apples.” Dr Phené visited Armorica (Brittany) with a view of investigating these matters, and brought thence fruits of a small berry-like pear, which were identified by the writer with the Pyrus cordata of western France, as well as with a tree which had then been recently discovered in some parts of Devonshire and Cornwall by Mr Briggs. (For cultivation of pears sce HorticunrurE, vol. xii. p. 274.)

PEARL. Pearls are calcareous concretions of peculiar lustre, produced by certain molluscs, and valued as objects of personal ornament. It is believed that most pearls are formed by the intrusion of some foreign substance between the mantle of the molluse and its shell, which, becoming a source of irritation, determines the deposition of nacreous matter in concentric layers until the substance is com- pletely encysted. The popular notion that the disturbing object is commonly a grain of sand seems untenable ; according to Dr Gwyn Jeffreys and some other concho- logists, it is in most cases a minute parasite; while Dr Kelaart has suggested that it may be the frustule of a diatom, or even one of the ova of the pearl-producing molluse itself. The experience of pearl-fishers shows that those shells which are

irregular in shape and stunted in growth, or which bear excrescences, or are honeycombed by boring parasites, are those most likely to yield pearls.

The substance of a pearl is essentially the same as that which lines the interior of many shells, and is known as “mother-of-pearl.” Sir D. Brewster first showed that the iridescence of this substance was an optical phenomenon due to the interference of rays of light reflected from micro- scopic corrugations of the surface—an effect which may be imitated by artificial striations on a suitable medium. When the inner laminated portion of a nacreous shell is digested in acid the calcareous layers are dissolved away, leaving a very delicate membranous pellicle, which, as shown by Dr Carpenter, may retain the iridescence as long as It 1s undisturbed, but which loses it when pressed or stretched.

Although a large number of molluscs secrete MoruEr- or-PEaRt (9.2.), only a few of them yield true pearls. The finest are obtained from the so-called “pearl oyster,” the Avicula (Meleagrina) margaritifera, Linneeus, while fresh-

water pearls are procured chiefly from the “pearl mussel,” Unio (Margaritana) margaritiferus, L.1 These river-pearls are generally of dull leaden hue, and inferior in beauty to those of marine origin.

It is obvious that if a pearl presents a perfectly spheri- cal form it must have remained loose in the substance of the muscles or other soft tissues of the mollusc. Fre- quently, however, the pearl becomes cemented to the in- terior of the shell, the point of attachment thus interfering with its symmetry. In this position it may receive suc- cessive nacreous deposits, which ultimately form a pearl of hemispherical shape, so that when cut from the shell it may be flat on one side and convex on the other, forming what jewellers know as a “‘perle bouton.” In the course of growth the pearl may become involved in the general de- posit of mother-of-pearl, and be ultimately buried in the substance of the shell. It has thus happened that fine pearls have

occasionally been unexpectedly brought to light in cutting up mother-of-pearl in the workshop.

When a pearl oyster is attacked by a boring parasite the molluse protects itself by depositing nacreous matter at the point of invasion, thus forming a hollow body of irregular shape known asa “blister pearl.” Hollow warty pearl is sometimes termed in trade “coq de perle.” Solid pearls of irregular form are often produced by deposition on rough objects, such as small fragments of wood, and these, and in fact all irregular-shaped pearls, are termed “‘perles baroques,” or “‘barrok pearls.” It appears that the Romans in the period of the Decline restricted the name unio to the globular pearl, and termed the baroque margaritum. It was fashionable in the 16th and 17th centuries to mount curiously-shaped baroques in gold and enamel so as to form ornamental objects of grotesque character. A valuable collection of such mounted pearls by Dinglinger is preserved in the Green vaults at Dresden.

A pearl of the first water should possess, in jewellers’ language, a perfect “skin” and a fine “orient”; that is to say, it must be of delicate texture, free from speck or flaw, and of clear almost translucent white colour, with a subdued iridescent sheen. It should also be perfectly spherical, or, if not, of a symmetrical pear-shape. On re- moving the outer layer of a pearl the subjacent surface is generally dull, like a dead fish-eye, but it occasionally happens that a poor pearl encloses a ‘lively kernel,” and may therefore be improved by careful peeling. The most perfect pearl in existence is said to be one, known as “La Pellegrina,” in the museum of Zosima in Moscow; it is a perfectly globular Indian pearl of singular beauty, weigh- ing 28 carats. The largest known pearl is one of irregu- lar shape in Mr Beresford Hope’s collection at the South Kensington museum. This magnificent pearl weighs 3 oz., has a circumference of 44 inches, and is surmounted by — an enamelled and jewelled gold crown, forming a pendant of great value. |

Pearl Fisheries—The ancients obtained their pearls chiefly from India and the Persian Gulf, but at the present time they are also procured from the Sulu seas, the coast of Australia, the shores of Central America, and some of the South Pacific islands. The ancient fisheries of Ceylon (Taprobane) are situated in the Gulf of Manaar, the fishing-

1 Meleagrina margaritifera, L., belongs to the family Aviculide of most zoologists, to the family Aviculacea, order Monomya, of article Moutuusca. Meleagrina is merely a sub-genus of Avicula. The animal which produces fresh-water pearls in Britain and other parts of Europe was named Unio margaritiferus by Retzius in Nova Gen. Test., and this is the name adopted by most modern zoologists ; the animal was placed in a separate genus, Margaritana, by Schumacher for insuffi- cient reasons. It belongs to the order Isomya, family Unionacew. The molluscs from which river-pearls are obtained in the United States and other parts of the world are mostly species of Unio or Anodonta. The above are all Lamellibranchs.

PE 2S L

banks lying from 6 to 8 miles off the western shore, a little to the south of the isle of Manaar. The Tinnevelly fishery +s on the Madras side of the strait, near Tuticorin. These Indian fishing-grounds are under the control of Govern- ment inspectors, who regulate the fisheries, and permit fishing only when they consider the banks to be in a satis- factory condition. The oysters yield the best pearls at about four years of age. Fishing, when permitted, gener- ally commences in the second week in March, and lasts for from four to six weeks, according to the season. The boats are grouped in fleets of from sixty to seventy, and start usually at midnight so as to reach the oyster-banks at sunrise. Each boat generally carries ten divers. On reaching the bank a signal-gun is fired, and diving com- mences. ‘To facilitate the descent of the diver, a stone of granite weighing about 40 Ib is attached to the cord by which he is let down. The divers work in pairs, one man diving while the other watches the signal-cord, drawing up the sink-stone first, then hauling up the baskets of oysters, and finally raising the diver himself. On an average the divers remain under water from fifty to eighty seconds, though some can endure a much longer submergence, and exceptional instances are cited of men remaining below for as long as six minutes. After resting for a minute or two at the surface, the diver descends again; and so on, until exhausted, when he comes on board and watches the rope, while his comrade relieves him as diver. Using neither diving dress nor bell, the native descends naked, carrying only a girdle for the sup- port of the basket in which he places the pearl-oysters. {n his submarine work the diver makes skilful use of his toes for prehensile purposes. To arm

himself against the attacks of the sharks and other fishes which infest the Indian waters, he carries spikes of ironwood; and the genuine Indian diver never descends without the incanta- tions of shark-charmers, one of whom accompanies the boat while others remain on shore. Not only is the diver exposed to the danger of attack by sharks, but his exciting calling, in a tropical climate, is necessarily ex- – hausting, and asa rule he is a short-lived man.

The diving continues from sunrise to about noon, when a gun is fired, and the work stopped. On the arrival of the fleet at shore, the divers carry their oysters to a shed, where they are made up into four heaps, one of which 1S taken by the diver as his remuneration. The oysters are then sold by auction in lots of 1000 each. The pearls, after removal from the dead oysters, are "classed" by passing through a number of small brass cullenders, known as "baskets," the holes in the successive vessels being smaller and smaller. Having been sized in this way, they are sorted as to colour, weighed, and valued. (For the history and production of the Ceylon fishery, see CEYLON, vol. v. p. 364.)

Since the days of the Macedonians pearl-fishing has been carried on in the Persian Gulf. It is said that the oyster-beds extend along the entire Arabian coast of the gulf, but the most important are on sandbanks off the islands of Bahrein. According to Colonel Pelly's report in 1863, there were 1500 boats belonging to Bahrein alone, and the annual profit from the pearl-fishery was about £400,000. The chief centre of the trade is the port of Lingah. Most of the products of this fishery are known as "Bombay pearls," from the fact that many of the best are sold there. The shells usually present a dark colour about the edges, like that of "smoked pearl." The yellow- tinted pearls are sent chiefly to Bombay, while the whitest go to Baghdad. Very small pearls, much below a pea size, are generally known as "seed-pearls," and these are valued in India and China as constituents of certain electu- aries, while occasionally they are calcined for chunam, or

lime, used with betel as a masticatory. There is a small pearl-fishery near Kurrachee on the coast of Bombay.

From the time of the Ptolemies pearl-fishing has been prosecuted along the coast of the Red Sea, especially in the neighbourhood of Jiddah and Koseir. This fishery is now insignificant, but the Arabs still obtain from this district a quantity of mother-of-pearl shells, which are shipped from Alexandria, and come into the market as “ Kgyptians.”

Very fine pearls are obtained from the Sulu Archipelago, on the north-east of Borneo. The mother-of-pearl shells from the Sulu seas are characterized by a yellow colour on the border and back, which unfits them for many orna- mental purposes. Pearl-oysters are also abundant in the seas around the Aru Islands to the south-west of New Guinea. From Labuan a good many pearl-shells are occasionally sent to Singapore. They are also obtained from the neighbourhood of Timor, and from New Caledonia. The pearl-oyster occurs throughout the Pacific, mostly in the clear water of the lagoons within the atolls, though fine shells are also found in deep water outside the coral reefs. The Polynesian divers do not employ sink-stones, and the women are said to be more skilful than the men. They anoint their bodies with oil before diving. Fine pearl-shells are obtained from Navigators’ Islands, the Society Islands, the Low Archipelago or Paumota Isles, and the Gambier Islands. Many of the Gambier pearls present a bronzy tint.

Pearl-fishing is actively prosecuted along the western coast of Central America, especiallyin the Gulf of California, and to a less extent around the Pearl Islands in the Bay of Panama. These pearls are obtained from the Meleagrina californica, Cpr., and the mother-of-pearl shell is known in commerce as “Panama” or “bullock” shell, The fishing-grounds are in water about 40 feet deep, and the season lasts for four months, An ordinary fishing-party expects to obtain about three tons of shells per day, and it is estimated that one shell in a thousand contains a pearl. The pearls are shipped in barrels from San Francisco and Panama, Some pearls of rare beauty have been obtained fron the Bay of Mulege, near Los Coyetes, in the Gulf of California ; and in 1882 a pearl of 75 carats, the largest on record from this district, was found near La Paz in California. The coast of Guayaquil also yields pearls. Columbus found that pearl-fishing was carried on in his time in the Gulf of Mexico, and pearls are still obtained from the Caribbean Sea. These are produced chiefly by Meleagrina squamulosa,

Lam. ; and the mother-of-pearl shells are known as “ blue-edged” or “ black-lipped,” these being less valuable than the “ silver-lipped” shells of India. In the West Indies the best pearls are obtained from St Thomas and from the island of Margarita, off the coast of Venezuela. From Margarita Philip II. of Spain is said to have obtained in 1579 a famous pearl of 250 carats.

Of late years pearl-fishing has been started with con- siderable success in the Australian seas. Good pearls are found in Shark’s Bay, on the coast of West Australia, especially in an inlet termed Useless Harbour. Mother- of-pearl shells are also fished at many other points along the western coast, between the 15th and 25th parallels of south latitude. An important pearl-fishery is also estab- lished in Torres Strait and on the coast of Queensland. The shells occur in water from four to six fathoms deep, and the divers are generally Malays and Papuans, though sometimes native Australians. On the western coast of Australia the pearl-shells are obtained by dredging rather than by diving. Quite recently (1884) pearl-shells have been found at Port Darwin. Pearls have also been found in Oakley Creek, New Zealand.

River-pearls are produeed by the fresh-water mussels inhabiting

the mountain-strcams of temperate climates in the northern hemi- sphere,—especially in Scotland, Wales, Ireland, Saxony, Bohemia, Bayaria, Lapland, and Canada. The pearls of Britain are men- tioned by Tacitus and by Pliny, and a breastplate studded with British pearls was dedicated by Julius Cesar to Venus Genetrix. As early as 1355 Scotch pearls are referred to in a statute of the goldsmiths of Paris; and in the reign of Charles II. the Scotch pearl trade was sufficiently important to attract the attention of parliament. Writing in 1705, John Spruel says, “I have dealt in pearls these forty years and more, and yet to this day I could never sell a necklace of fine Scots pearl in Scotland, nor yet fine pendauts, the generality seeking for Oriental pearls, because farther fetched. At this very day J can show some of our own Scots pear! as finc, more hard and transparent, than any Oriental” (dn Account Current betwixt Scotland and England, Edinburgh, 1705). The Scotch pearl-fishery, after having declined for years, was revived in 1860 by a German named Moritz Unger, who visited Scotland and bought up all

the pearls he could find in the hands of the peasantry, thus leading to an eager search for more pearls the following season. It is estimated that in 1865 the produce of the season's fishing in the Scotch rivers was worth at least £12,000. This yield, however, was not maintained ; the rivers were over- fished, and the industry was discouraged inasmuch as it tended to iiterfere with the salmon-fishery, and in some cases injured the banks of the streams. At the present time only a few pearls are obtained at irregular intervals by an occasional fisherman.

The principal rivers in Scotland which have yielded pearls are the Spey, the Tay, and the South Esk; and toa less extent the Doon, the Dec, the Don, the Ythan, the Teith, the Forth, and many other streams. In North Wales the Conway was at one time cele- brated for its pearls; and it is related that Sir Richard Wynn, chamberlain to the queen of Charles II., presented her.with a Con- way pearl which is believed to occupy a place in the British crown. In Ireland the rivers of Donegal, Tyrone, and Wexford have yielded pearls. It is said that Sir John Hawkins the circumnavigator had a patent for pearl-fishing in the Irt in Cumberland, Although the pearl-fisheries of Britain are now neglected, it is otherwise with those of Germany. The most important of these are in the forest- streams of Bavaria, between Ratisbon and Passau. The Saxon fisheries are chiefly confined to the basin of the White Elster, and those of Bohemia to the Horazdiowitz district of Wotawa. For more than two centuries the Saxon fisheries have been carefully re- gulated by inspectors, who examine the streams every spring, and determine where fishing is to be permitted. After a tract has been fished over, it is left to rest for ten or fifteen years. The fisher folk open the valves of the mussels with an iron instrument, and if they find no pearl restore the mussel to the water.

River-pearls are found in many parts of the United States, and have been systematically worked in the Little Miami river, Warren county, Ohio. The season extends from June to October. Japan produces freshwater pearls, found especially in the Anodonta japonica, But itis in China that the culture of the pearl-mussel is carried to the greatest perfection. The Chinese also obtain marine pearls, and use a large quantity of mother-of-pearl for decorative purposes. More than twenty-two centuries before our era pearls are enumerated as a tribute or tax in China; and they are mentioned as products of the western part of the empire in the Lh'ya, a dictionary

compiled earlier than 1000 B.c. A process for promoting the artificial formation of pearls in the Chinese river- mussels was discovered by Ye-jin-yang, a native of Hoochow, in the 13th century; and this process is still extensively carried on near the city of Teh-tsing, where it forms the staple industry of several villages, and is said to give employment to about 5000 people. Large numbers of the mussels are collected in May and June, and the valves of each are gently opened with a spatula to allow of the introduction of various foreign bodies, which are in- serted by means of a forked bamboo stick. These ‘‘matrices” are generally pellets of prepared mud, but may be small bosses of bone, brass, or wood. After a number of these objects have been placed in convenient positions on one valve, the unfortunate mollusc is turned over and the operation is repeated on the other valve. The mussels are then placed in shallow ponds connected with the canals, and arc nonrished by tubs of night-soil being thrown in from time to time. After several months, in some cases two or three years, the mussels are removed, and the pearls which have formed over the matrices are cut from the shells, while the molluscs themselves serve as food. The matrix is generally extracted from the pearl and the cavity filled with white wax, the aperture being neatly sealed up so as to render the appearance of the pearl as perfect as possible. Millions of such pearls are annually sold at Soo-chow. ae most curious of these Chinese pearls are those which present the form of small seated images of Buddha. The figures are cast im very thin lead, or stamped in tin, and are inserted as previ- ously described. As many as twenty may sometimes be seen, ranged in _parallel rows, in the valves of a single individual. Covered with nacreous matter, closely adherent to the shell, they have all the appearance of natural objects, aud, exciting the wonder

of the ignorant, are prized as amulets. Specimens of these Buddha pearls in the British Museum are referred to the species Dipsas plicata, It should be mentioned that Linneus, probably ignorant of what had long been practised in China, demonstrated the pos: sibility of producing artificial pearls in the freshwater mussels of Sweden.

Pink pearls are occasionally found in the great conch or fountain shell of the West Indies, Strombus gigas, L. ; but these, thongh much prized, are not nacreous, and their tint is apt to fade. They are also produced by the chank shell, Turbinella scolymus, L. Yellowish-brown pearls, of little or no value, are yielded by the Pinna squamosa, and bad-colourcd concretions are formed by the Placuna placcnta.* Black pearls, which are very highly valued, are obtained chiefly from the pearl-oystcr of the Gulf of Mexico.

Artificial pearls were first made in western Europe in 1680 by Jacquin, a rosary-maker in Paris, and the trade is now largely carried on in France, Germany, and Italy. Spheres of thin glass are filled with a preparation known as ‘‘essence d’oricnt,” made from the silvery scales of the bleak or ‘‘ablette,” which is caused to adhere to the inner wall of the globe, and the cavity is then filled with white wax. The scales are in some cases incorporated with celluloid. Many imitation pearls arc now formed of an opaline glass of nacre- ous lustre, and the soft appearance of the pearl obtained by the judicious use of hydrofluoric acid. An excellent substitute for black pearl is found in the so-called ‘‘ironstone jewellery,” and consists of close-grained hematite, not too highly polished ; but the great density of the hematite immediately destroys the illusion. Pink pearls are imitated by turning small spheres out of the rosy part of the conch shell, or even out of pink coral.

See W. H. Dall, ‘‘ Pearls and Pearl Fisheries,” in American Naturalist, xvii., 1883, p. 549 ; P. L. Simmonds, The Commercial Products of the Sea (London, 1879); Clements R, Markham, ‘‘ The Tinnevelly Pearl Fishery,” in Journ. Soc. Arts, xv., 1867, p. 256; D. T. Macgowan, ‘‘ Pearls and Pearl-making in China,” ibid. ii., 1854, p. 72; I’. Hague, “On the Natural and Artificial Production of Pearls in China,” in Journ. R. Astatic Soc., xvi., 1856; H. J. Le Beck, ‘‘ Pearl Fishery in the Gulf of Manar,” in Asiatic Researches, v., 1798, p. 393; T. Von Hessling, Die Perlmuschel und thre Perlen (Leipsic, 1859); K. Mébius, Die echten Perlen (Hamburg, 1857). (EF R.

PEARSON, Joun (1612-1686), a learned English bishop, was born at Great Snoring in the county of Norfolk, on the 28th of February 1612. After attending Eton, he entered Queens’ College, Cambridge, 10th June 1631,

and was elected a scholar of King's in April following and a fellow in 1634. Entering holy orders in 1639, he was collated to the prebend of Nether-Avon, in the church of Sarum. In 1640 he was appointed chaplain to the lord-keeper Finch, by whom he was presented to the living of Thorington in Suffolk during the same year. In 1650 he was made preacher of St Clement's, Eastcheap, in London. Seven years later he and Peter Gunning had a dispute with two Roman Catholics upon the subject of schism, a one-sided account of which was printed at Paris by one of the Roman Catholic disputants, under the title Schism Unmasked, 1658. In 1659 Pearson published at London his celebrated Exposition of the Creed, dedicated to his parishioners of St Clement's, Eastcheap, to whom the substance of that now standard work had been preached several years before, and by whom he had been desired to make it public. The same year he likewise published the Golden Remains of the ever-memorable Mr John Hales of Eton, to which he prefixed a preface con- taining a character of that eminent man, with whom he had been acquainted for many years, drawn up with great elegance and force. Pearson had also a principal share in the editing of the Critici Sacri, first published in 1660. Soon after the Restoration he was presented by Juxon, then bishop of London, to the rectory of St Christopher's in that city; and he was also in 1660 created doctor of divinity at Cambridge, in pursuance of the king's letters mandatory, installed prebendary of Ely, archdeacon of Surrey, and made master of Jesus College, Cambridge. In 1661 he was appointed Lady Margaret professor of divinity

1 Strombus gigas, 1., is a Gastropod belonging to the family Strom- bide, of the order Azygobranchia. Turbinella scolymus, Lam., is a Gastropod belonging to the family Muricida, of the same order.

2 Placuna placenta, L., belongs to the family Ostreid# of the manuals (family Ostracea of article Mouiusca); it is found on the shores of North Australia. Pinna sqguamosa, Gmelin, belongs to the

Mytilide (the Mytilacewx of article Motnusca); it occurs in the Medi- terranean, Both are Lamellibranchs.

in that university; and on the first day of the ensuing year he was nominated one of the commissioners for the review of the liturgy in the conference held at the Savoy. On the 14th of April 1662 he was elected master of Trinity College, Cambridge, and in August resigned his rectory of St Christopher's and his prebend of Ely. In 1667 he was admitted a Fellow of the Royal Society. In 1672 he published at Cambridge Vindicrw Hpistolarum S. Ignatia, in 4to, in answer to Daillé, to which is subjoined Lsaace Vossii Epistolx dux adversus Davidem Blondellum. . Upon the death of Dr. Wilkins in 1672, Pearson was appointed his successor in the see of Chester. In 1682 his Annales Cyprianici were published at Oxford, with Fell's edition of that father's works. Pearson was disabled from all public service by ill health a considerable time before his death at Chester on the 16th of July 1686. His last work, the Two Dissertations on the Succession and Times of the First Bishops of Rome, formed the principal part of his Opera Posthuma, edited by Henry Dodwell in 1688.

See the memoir in Biographia Britannica, and another by Edward Churton prefixed to the edition of Pearson's Minor Theological Works, 2 vols., Oxford, 1844.

PEAT. See Fust, vol. ix. p. 808.

PECCARY. Under this name are included two species of small pig-like animals forming the genus Dicotyles of Cuvier, belonging to the section Swina of the Artiodactyle Ungulates (see Mammatta, vol. xv. p. 430). They are peculiar to the New World, and in it are the only surviv- ing members of the large group now represented in the Old World by the various species of swine, babirussas, wart-hogs, and hippopotami.

The teeth of the peccaries differ from those of the true pigs (genus Sus) numerically, in wanting the upper outer incisor and the anterior premolar on each side of each jaw, the dental formula being 7 2, ¢ 4, p 3, m 3, total 38. The upper canines have their points directed downwards, not outwards or upwards as in the boars, and they are very sharp, with cutting hinder edges, and completely covered with enamel until worn. The lower canines are large and directed upwards and outwards, and slightly curved backwards. The premolar and molar teeth form a continuous series, gradually increasing in size from the first to the last. The true molars have square

quadricus- pidate crowns. The stomach is much more complex than in the true pigs, almost approaching that of a ruminant. In the feet the two middle (third and fourth) metapodial bones, which are completely separate in the pigs, are united at their upper ends, as in the ruminants. On the fore foot the two (second and fifth) outer toes are equally de- ~~veloped as in pigs, but on the hind foot, although the inner (or second) is present, the outer or fifth toe is entirely wanting, giving an unsymmetrical appearance of the mem~~ ber, very unusual in Artiodactyles, As in all other exist- ing Ungulates, there is no trace of a first digit (pollex or hallux) on either foot. As in the pigs, the snout is trun- cated, and the nostrils are situated in its flat, expanded, disk-like termination. The ears are rather small, ovate, and erect ; and there is no external appearance of a tail. The surface is well covered with thick bristly hair, and rather behind the middle of the back is a large and pecu- liar gland, which secretes an oleaginous substance with a powerful musky odour. This was mistaken by the old travellers for a second navel, a popular error which sug- gested to Cuvier the name of Dicotyles. When the animal is killed for food, it is necessary speedily to remove this gland, otherwise it will taint the whole flesh so as to render it uneatable.

There are two species, so nearly allied that they will breed together freely in captivity. Unlike the true pigs, they hever appear to produce more than two young ones at abirth.

The collared peccary (D. tajacu, Linn., torquatus, Cuvier) ranges from the Red river of Arkansas through the forest

Peccary.

districts of Central and South America as far as the Rio Negro of Patagonia. Generally it is found singly or in pairs, or at most in small herds of from eight to ten, and is a comparatively harmless creature, not being inclined to attack other animals or human beings. Its colour is dark grey, with a white or whitish band passing across the chest from shoulder to shoulder. The length of the head and body is about 36 inches. The white-lipped peccary or warree (D. labiatus, Cuvier) is rather larger, being about 40 inches in length, of a blackish colour, with the lips and lower jaw white. Its range is less extensive; it is not found farther north than British Honduras or south of Paraguay. It is generally met with in large droves of from fifty to a hundred

or more individuals, and is of a more pugnacious disposition than the former species, and capable of inflicting severe wounds with its sharp tusks. A hunter who encounters a herd of them in a forest has often to climb a tree as his only chance of safety. Both species are omnivorous, living on roots, fallen fruits, worms, and carrion; and when they approach the neighbourhood of villages and cultivated lands they often inflict great devastation upon the crops of the inhabitants.

Fossil remains of extinct species of peccaries of the Pleistocene period have been found in the caves of Brazil, and also as far north as Virginia and South Carolina. They have also been traced backwards in time, with apparently little modification of structure, to the Upper Miocene formations of Oregon.

PECS. See FUNFEIRCHEN, vol. ix. p. 827.

PEDOMETER is an apparatus in the form of a watch, which, carried on the person of a traveller, indicates the number of paces made, and thereby approximately the distance travelled. The ordinary form has a dial-plate with chapters for yards and miles respectively, but in some, miles and their fractions only are indicated, while others are divided for kilometres, &c. The registration 1s effected by the fall of a heavy pendulum, caused by the percussion of each step. The pendulum is forced back to a horizontal position by a delicate spring, and with each stroke a fine-toothed ratchet-wheel attached to it is moved round a certain length. The ratchet communicates with a train of wheels which govern the dial-hands. In using the apparatus a measured mile or other known distance 1s walked, and the indication thereby made on the dial-plate observed. According as it is too great or too small, the stroke of the pendulum is shortened or lengthened by a screw which correspondingly affects the ratchet motion,

and thereby regulates the indication to the average pace. Obviously the pedometer is little better than an ingenious toy, depending even for rough

measurements on the uni- formity of pace maintained throughout the journey measured.

PEDRO (Peter), the name borne by several sovereigns of Aragon, Castile, and Portugal. Three of them were contemporaries, and, to add to the confusion to which this has given rise, each of them was the son and successor of an Alphonso.

Aragon.—Prpro IV. (1317-1887), surnamed “the Ceremonious,” succeeded his father Alfonso IV. in 1336, placing the crown upon his own head at Saragossa to make it quite plain that he did not hold of the pope. In 1344 he deposed his brother-in-law Jayme from the throne of Majorca, and again made the Balearic Isles, Cerdagne, and Roussillon directly subject to the crown of Aragon. In 1346 jealousy of his brother Jayme led him to alter the succession in favour of his daughters, but two powerful unions or leagues in Aragon and Valencia compelled him in the following year anew to recognize the legitimate heir-presumptive. The victory of Epila, however, in 1348 enabled him to triumph over his factious nobles and to cancel the privileges they had extorted from him. In 1351 Pedro, desiring to strengthen his precarious hold upon the island of Sardinia, entered into an alliance with Venice, and began hostilities against Genoa, which, carried on at inter- vals for many years, were definitively terminated only by his successor. In 1356 a breach of neutrality by some Catalan ships at San Lucar led to a war with the king of Castile, which was carried on with occasional suspensions until 1375, when the infanta Leonora of Aragon was married to Don Juan (afterwards John I.) of Castile. In 1377 Pedro succeeded in reconquering Sicily after the death of Frederick ITI., but, to avoid the threatened inter- dict of Urban VI, he ceded the island to Martin, his grandson, retaining the suzerainty only. In 1382 he sent troops to Greece to seizc, on his behalf, the duchy of Athens. Pedro died at Barcelona on 5th January 1387, and was succeeded by his son John I. He left a curious history of his reign, written in Catalan, which has been printed by Carbonell in his Chroniques de Espanya (1547).

Three other kings of Aragon bore this name. Prpxo I. suc- ceeded his father Sancho Ramirez on the throne of Aragon and Navarre in 1094, and died in 1104. The leading event of his reign was the conquest of Huesca (1096).

Prpro II. (1174-1213) succeeded his father Alphonso II. in 1196. In November 1204 he was crowned in St Peter's, Rome, by Innocent III., in return for which honour he declared his kingdom feudatory of the Roman sec and promised an annual tribute, not, however, without a strong protest on the part of his subjects, whose hostile demonstrations in the following year he had difficulty in repressing. In 1209 he purchased peace with Sancho VII. of Navarre, and in 1212 he, along with that sovereign, gave valuable help to Alphonso of Castile in securing the splendid victory over the Arabs at Navas de Tolosa. In the following year, having taken up arms on behalf of his brother- in-law, Count Raymond of Toulouse, he was slain in the disastrous battle of Muret (12th September 1213). He was succeeded by his only son, Jayme I., "el Conquistador." Prpro III. (1236-1285), son of Jayme I. and grandson of Pedro IT., succeeded to the crowns of Aragon, Catalonia, and Valencia in 1276. married Constance, daughter of Manfred, king of the Sicilies, and on the strength of this alliance he took advantage of the Sicilian Vespers to lay claim to the kingdom of Sicily. This involved him in a ruinous war, in the course of which his dissatisfied subjects united to assert their ancient "fueros" or privileges, exacting from him at Saragossa in 1283 the Privilegio General", which in spirit and import may be compared to the English Great Charter. Charles of Valois, invested by the pope with the crown of Aragon, sought to invade the kingdom, but was repulsed both by land and sea.

Charles's death in 1285, which terminated the war, was followed by that of Pedro in the saine year,

Castile and Leon.—Pepro I. (1333-1369), commonly surnamed "the Cruel," but sometimes referred to as "the Justiciary," was the only legitimate son of Alphonso XI., and was born at Burgos on 30th August 1333. When

In 1262 he had

PH D—PED

raised to the throne at Seville by his father's premature death before Gibraltar (29th March 1350), Pedro was a mere lad, with exceptionally small experience of courts and camps, having lived in comparative retirement along with his mother, Dofia Maria of Portugal, in the Andalu-

cian capital, while his illegitimate brothers, the children of Leonora de Guzman, the eldest of whom were Don Enrique (Henry), count of Trastamara, and Don Fadrique (Frederick), grandmaster of Santiago, had remained beside Alphonso, and had accompanied him on his warlike expeditions. At the beginning of his reign he was thus, almost of necessity, compelled to abandon the conduct of affairs to more experienced hands; by the skilful policy, accord- ingly, of the powerful and ambitious Juan Alonso de Alburquerque, who had been his father's chancellor and prime minister, his many enemies and rivals were, for a time at least, successfully kept at bay. The king, how- ever, soon began to assert his independence ; whereupon the minister, remembering how helpful a royal mistress had been for the furtherance of his own ends during the preceding reign, did not scruple to encourage Pedro's passion for the young, well-born, and beautiful Maria de Padilla, even after his marriage with Blanche de Bourbon had been arranged. His experiment proved a disastrous one, and not least so to himself. The influence of Maria and of her relations, which rapidly became great, was soon turned against the too politic Alburquerque ; and, as a first step towards his dismissal from power, they succeeded in making him seem less indispensable by effecting a superficial reconciliation between the king and his brothers, Then, on the minister's remonstrating against the conduct of Pedro in deserting Blanche for his mistress almost immediately after his marriage at Valladolid in June 1354, a complete change of administration took place, and Alburquerque retired to his estates. Shortly afterwards he was joined by the king's brothers Enrique and Fadrique in raising the standard of revolt in Castile ; in this formidable movement they were speedily joined by Pedro's cousins, the infantes of Aragon, as well as by increasing numbers of the ricos hombres and caballeros of the kingdom, and by several of the towns, their grievances being his repudiation of Blanche, his deposition of Alburquerque, and the murder of Juan Nufiez de Prado, the master of Calatrava, for which he was believed to be responsible. The cortes of Toro accordingly asked him to take back his queen and dismiss the Padillas; and so general was the national feeling in this matter that even his own mother deserted his cause, and on his giving evasive replies he found himself before the end of the year practically stripped of all his real authority, surrounded by officials of his enemies' choosing, and virtually a prisoner in their hands. He succeeded, however, in making his escape from Toro to Segovia with a

handful of followers in the following year, and the divergence of interest that soon arose to separate the Aragonese princes from the bas- tard sons of Alphonso XI. so wrought in his favour that he was soon able (1356) to recover all the authority he had ever had, and to secure at least a transitory peace by the policy of reckless assassination which years previously he had inaugurated while Alburquerque was still his minister, and which he brought to a climax in the cold-blooded murder of his brother Don Fadrique at Seville in 1358, the tragedy to which he is said to have been specially indebted for his unenviable surname. In 1356 he already found himself strong enough to enter upon a war with his namesake Pedro IV. of Aragon, and, with inconsiderable intervals of truce brought about through the intervention of the papal legate, he continued to carry it on for several years. In 1365 he was still campaigning beyond the borders of his kingdom when Castile was invaded by the “free companies” of French and English troops under Du Guesclin and

Calverley on behalf of Don Enrique, whose cause had now been espoused by France. He returned only to find him- self practically unthroned, and towards the close of 1366 he sailed from Corufia for Guienne almost unaccompanied, save by his three daughters, but taking with him a con- siderable quantity of money and jewels. He was befriended in his exile by the Black Prince, and by liberal promises obtained his alliance and assurances of material help; the English troops accordingly crossed the Pyrenees in the following spring, and, by the bloody victory of Najera or Navarrete near Logrofio (13th April 1367), once more restored him to his kingdom. Pedro, however, was unwilling or unable to implement the bargain he had made, and by his arrogant demeanour soon alienated his chivalrous ally; before the close of the year Don Enrique had again begun to collect his forces, while the Black Prince, injured and indignant, turned his face home- wards. A final battle between Pedro and his brother took place at Montiel (13th March 1369), with the result that the former was driven for shelter into the fortress. Ten days afterwards he was induced to visit the camp of Enrique by illusory hopes of a favourable treaty through Du Guesclin ; the brothers, who had not seen each other for fifteen years, met for the last time; angry words passed between them, soon they came to

blows, and in the desperate struggle that ensued Don Pedro met his death. Pedro was in no way remarkable either as a soldier or as a ruler of men, and his character, so odious in the one feature expressed by his only too well deserved surname, presents singularly few redeeming traits ; it is not even picturesque. The best that can be alleged by way of apology for him and excuse for his barren reign is the untowardness of the circumstances of his birth, education, and accession. ‘To a narrow and uncultivated mind like his “the tyrant’s plea” could hardly ever have appealed with greater plausibility. It is significant, however, that in Spain itself there are two nearly opposite points of view from which Pedro appears not as “el Cruel” but as “e] Justiciero.” On the one hand, the common people of Andalucia among whom he lived, the Jews whose com- merce he encouraged, the Moors whom his very want of religion enabled him to tolerate, have helped to keep alive the tradition of the substantial if occasionally capricious and whimsical justice he often delighted personally to administer. ‘The other point of view is that of such mon- archs as Isabella “la Catolica” and Philip II., who could not but be grateful to him for all he had done to weaken the power of the nobles of Castile.

The chief source for the incidents of the reign of Don Pedro is the Chronicles of Castile, by Pero Lopez de Ayala, of which there are two redactions known as the Vulgar and the Abreviada. These form the basis of Prosper Mérimée’s Histoire de Don Pedre, Premier Roi de Castille (1848; 2d ed. 1865; Eng. trans., anon., 1849).

Portugal.—Pxpro I. (1320-1367) was the son of Al- phonso IV. and Beatrice of Castile, and in 1339 married Constance, daughter of the duke of Peijiafiel and marquis of Villena. The story of his passion for Inez de Castro, of his supposed marriage with her, of her cruel murder in 1355, and of the exhumation and coronation of her dead body has been told elsewhere (see vol. v. Pp. 202). He succeeded to the throne in 1357 and died in 1367, after a peaceful and comparatively uneventful reign of ten years.

For other sovereigns bearing this name see BRAZIL and PORTUGAL.

PEEBLES, a midland county of Scotland, is bounded N. and N.E. by Midlothian, E. and S.E. by Selkirk, S. by Dumfries, and W. by Lanark. Its outline is somewhat irregular, the greatest length from north to south being

about 30 miles, the greatest breadth about 20, and the smallest about 10. The area is 226,899 acres, or about 355 square miles.

From the fact that the county lies within the upper valley of the Tweed, it is sometimes known as Tweeddale. The surface consists of a succession of hills broken by the vale of the Tweed, which in some parts attains considerable breadth, and by the narrow valleys forming the courses of numerous “waters” and smaller streams. The lowest point above sea-level is about 450 feet, but the hills generally vary in height from 900 to 1500 feet, while several attain an altitude considerably over 2000 feet. The highest summits are Broad Law (2754 feet), Cramalt Craig (2723 feet), and Dollar Law (2680 feet). The hills for the most part are rounded in form. The scenery is thus generally devoid of very striking or picturesque features, and its quiet pastoral character has a pleasing effect, while the exuberant plantations which clothe the sides and summits of the hills in the neighbourhood of the Tweed, with the well-cultivated fields adjoining its banks, lend to this district an aspect of rich luxuriance.

The Tweed has its source in a small fountain named Tweed’s Well at the base of a hill on the south-western border called Tweed’s Cross, from the farther side of which flow the Annan and the Clyde. It rises about 1300 feet above sea-level, and, with waters of sparkling clearness and purity, justly entitling it to the name of the “silver Tweed,” flows with rapid course north-eastwards to the town of Peebles, receiving continual accessions from mountain streamlets, the principal being the Biggar Water from the west at Drumelzier, the Lyne from the north-west at Lyne, the Manor Water from the south near Edderston, and the Eddlestone Water from the north at Peebles. After passing Peebles the river bends in a more easterly direction, receiving, before it leaves the county, the Quair Water from the south and the Leithen from the north. The Megget Water flows eastwards into St Mary’s Loch, which forms, for a very short distance, the south-eastern boundary of the county with Selkirkshire. The Medwin Water separates a portion of the south-western boundary of Linton parish from Lanarkshire. Peebles is, perhaps, more resorted to by anglers than any other county in Scotland, and it would be difficult to find anywhere else in the kingdom,

within an equal area, so many streams and rivers affording such good sport and so unhampered by restrictions. Apart from St Mary's Loch, on the borders of the county, there are no sheets of water of much extent.

Geology.—Peeblesshire is included in the Silurian table- land of southern Scotland, and consists chiefly of Upper Silurian rocks, having generally a north-western dip. The strata have been thrown into great flexures by volcanic action, and are frequently mingled with igneous rocks, such as trap, felspar, and porphyry. In the valley of the Tweed, where there is a great anticlinal flexure, slates with thin beds of anthracite are found, and also limestone. In a slate-quarry near Traquair graptolites, trilobites, and shells are met with, but nowhere else in the county have fossils been discovered. There are evidences of glacial action in the rounded forms of the hills, the frequent groovings along their flanks, and the large number of striated boulders. In the northern part of the county, in the parishes of Linton and Newlands, the Silurian rocks dip beneath the Carboniferous strata of the West of Scot- land coal-field. In Peeblesshire the strata consist of sandstone and coal-beds. Ironstone is also found, and lead- ore occurs in thin beds near the Leithen. Limestone and marl are abundant, and at Stobo there is a quarry of excellent blue slate.

Climate, Sotl, and Agriculture—In the uplands the climate, though colder than that of the Lothians, is gener- ally pure and dry, and remarkably healthy. 'The average rainfall is about 29 inches, On the summits and slopes of

the hills frequent showers occur when it is quite fair in the valleys. The reflexion of the "slanters" on the hillsides sometimes greatly increases the heat in the valleys and assists the early ripening of the crops. The character of the soil varies considerably, moss, gravel, and clay being all represented. The flat lands consist generally of rich loam, composed of sand and clay.

As may be supposed from its hilly character, the county is pastoral rather than agricultural. The old system of small farms is nearly completely broken up, the average size of the holdings being now about 200 acres of arable land, with pasturage for 600 to 800 sheep attached. According to the

agricultural returns of 18838, of the total area only 42,433 acres, or a little less than a fifth, were under cultivation, corn crops occupying 9832 acres, green crops 5716, rotation grasses 12,078, and permanent pasture 14,763. There were 10,177 acres under woods, 11 acres of market-gardens, and 6 of nursery-grounds. The most common rotation of crops is a six-course shift of (1) turnips, (2) barley or oats, (3), (4), and (5) grass or pasture, and (6) oats. The principal crops are oats, which in 1883 occupied 8797 acres, or about nine-tenths of the total area under corn crops, and turnips, for which the soil is specially well adapted, and which occupied 4679 acres, or about four-fifths of the total arca under green crops. Horses in 1883 numbered 1142, cattle 5664, and sheep 192,122. The horscs are frequently Clydes- dales, and many are bred in the county. The most cominon breed of cattle in the county is a cross between Ayrshire and shorthorns, the cows being principally Ayrshire. Yorkshire calves and stirks are occasionally bought for feeding. The pasture, on account of the hilly character of the land, is better adapted for shcep than for cattle. On the green grassy pasture Cheviots and half-breds are the sheep most commonly preferred, and the heathery ranges are stocked with blackfaced. Crosses of blackfaced, Cheviot, and half-bred ewes with Leicestershire rams are common.

According to the latest return, the land was divided among 708 proprietors, possessing 232,410 acres, with an annual valuation of £142,614, the annual average value per acre being about 12s, 3d. Of the owners, 532, or about 75 per cent., possessed less than one acre each. The following possessed over 5000 acres each :—earl of Wemyss and March, 41,247; Sir G. G. Montgomerie, 18,172; Sir J. Murray Nasmyth, 15,485; John Miller, 18,000; James Tweedie, 11,151; trustces of the late earl of Traquair, 10,778 ; Colonel James M‘Kenzie, 9403 ; Sir Robert Hay, 9155 ; Sir W. H. G. Carmichael, 8756; John White, 6366; George Graham Bell, 6600; James Wolfe Murray, 5108.

Manufacturcs.—Although the county has the advantage of con- venient railway communication both by the North British and Caledonian systems, and possesses also abundant water – power, the only textile industries are the weaving of tweeds and shawls at Peebles and Innerleithen. The other manufactures are con- nected with the immediate wants of an agricultural population.

Administration and Population.—The county includes sixteen parishes, and one royal burgh, the county town. Along with the neighbouring county of Selkirk it forms a parliamentary county, which returns onc member to parliament. Within the last fifty years the population of Peebles has increased about onc-third, and, while in the first decade, between 1831 and 1841, there was a decrease from 10,578 to 10,499, the rate of increase has since then augmented in every succceding decade. In 1861 the population amounted to 11,408, in 1871 to 12,330, and in 1881 to 13,822, of whom 6626 were males and 7196 females. In 1831 females werc ina minority, being only 5236 to 5342 males. The county includes two towns, Peebles (3495) and Imnerleithen (2313), and two villages, Walkerburn (1026) and West Linton (434). The town population in 1881 numbered 5808, the village 1460, and the rural 6554,

History and Antiquities.—There are a great number of British remains, including five circular British camps and numerous sepulchral tombs, where many cists and stone coffins have been dis- covered, somctimes containing armille of gold, and stone axes and hammers. The standing-stones of Tweedsmuir and the remarkable earthen terraces on the hillsides, especially at Purvis Hill near Innerleithen and at Romanno, also deserve notice. The only im- portant Roman remains are traces of a camp on the Lyne, which some suppose to be the Coria of Ptolemy. The district was included in the old kingdom of Northumbria, and passed to the kingdom of Scotland in the 11th century. By David I. it was made a deanery in the archdcaconry of Peebles, and it was subsequently included in the diocese of Glasgow. About the middle of the 12th century it was placed under the jurisdiction of two sheriffs, one of whom was settled at Traquair and the other at Pecbles. There are a considcrable number of old castles, some of special interest, as N eidpath Castle on the Tweed, about a mile west from Peebles, originally a N orman keep, built about the time of David I., and enlarged for a baronial residence by the Hays, who came into pos- session of it in the 15th century ; Horsburgh Castle, a picturesque

ruin near Innerleithen, once the seat of the Horsburghs, hereditary sheriffs-depute of Peebles; and the mansion-house or palace of Traquair, frequently resided in by the Scottish kings when they came to hunt in Ettrick Forest.

‘See Pennecuick, Description of Tweeddale, 1715; Peeblesshire, 1864.

PEEBLES, the county town of Peeblesshire, is finely situated at the junction of the Eddlestone Water and the Tweed, and on the North British and Caledonian Railways, 22 miles south of Edinburgh. The new town, consisting of a main street (High Street) with several streets diverging, is situated on the south side of the Eddlestone Water; and the old town, consisting now of only a small number of houses, is on the north side; while a number of villas cover the elevated ground on the south of the Tweed. The Tweed is crossed by a bridge of five arches, lately widened and improved, and the Eddlestone Water by two bridges. Among the modern public buildings are the town-hall, the corn exchange, and the hydropathic estab-lishment. At the beginning of the present century Peebles possessed manufactures of fine cottons, but the industry is now discontinued. The town possesses woollen mills and meal and flour mills ; it is also a centre of agriculture and has attractions as a summer residence. The popula- tion in 1801 was 2088, which had increased in 1831 to 2750, and, although in 1871 it had diminished to 2631, by 1881 it had increased to 3495. The population of the royal burgh in 1881 was 2609.

The castle of Peebles had disappeared about the beginning of the 18th century, and its site is now occupied by the parish church. There are still, however, numerous antique architectural relics, including some portions of the old town wall; the ruins of the church of the Holy Cross, founded in 1261, and of St Andrew’s parish church, founded in 1195, both in the old town; vaulted cellars of the 16th and 17th centuries, situated in a close behind Mungo Park’s laboratory, and built for security against Border freebooters. Queensberry Lodge, formerly the town residence of the duke of Queensberry, a building in the old style of Scottish domestic architecture, was purchased by the late William Chambers of Edinburgh, and, after being fitted up as a public reading-room, museum, and gallery of art, was presented by him to his native town under the name of the Chambers’

Institution (opened in 1859). The ancient cross of Peebles now occupies the centre of the court- yard of the institution.

Peebles was at a very early period a favourite residence of Scottish kings, who came to hunt in the neighbouring Ettrick Forest. It received its original charter in all probability from Alexander IIL, who built and endowed the church of the Holy Cross, and also founded a monastery for red friars. It was created a royal burgh in 1367. In 1545 the town and the ancicnt churches were de- stroyed by Protector Somerset, and in 1604 it suffered severely from accidental fire. Its charter was extended by Jaines VI., but after the union of the English and the Scottish crowns it lost its early importance.

PEEKSKILL, a manufacturing village of the United States in Cortlandt township, Westchester county, New York, lies on the east bank of the Hudson, 43 miles above New York city, with which it has communication by rail and (in summer) by river. Besides iron-smelt- ing, it carries on the manufacture of railings, stoves, and fire-bricks. A church, dating from 1767, and the Van Cortlandt mansion are among its principal buildings. Incorporated in 1816, Peekskill had 6560 inhabitants in 1870 and 6893 in 1880.

PEEL, Sir Rozerr (1788-1850), twice prime minister and for many years the leading statesman of England, was born 5th February 1788 in a cottage near Chamber Hall, the seat of his family, in the neighbourhood of Bury (Lan- cashire),—Chamber Hall itself being at the time under repair. He was a scion of that new aristocracy of wealth which sprang from the rapid progress of mechanical dis- covery and manufactures in the latter part of the 18th century. His ancestors were Yorkshire yeomen in the district of Craven, whence they migrated to Blackburn in Lancashire. His grandfather, Robert Peel, first of Peelfold, and afterwards of Brookside, near Blackburn, was a calico-

W. Chambers, History of

PEEL

printer, who, appreciating the discovery of his townsman Hargreaves,took to cotton-spinning with the spinning-jenny and grew a wealthy man. His father, Robert Peel, third son of the last-named, carried on the same business at Bury with still greater success, in partnership with Mr Yates, whose daughter Ellen he married. He made a princely fortune, became the owner of Drayton Manor and member of parliament for the neighbouring borough of Tamworth, was a trusted and honoured, as well as ardent, supporter of Pitt, contributed magnificently towards the support of that leader's war policy, was rewarded with a baronetcy, and founded a rich and powerful house, on whose arms he emblazoned, and in whose motto he commemorated, the prosperous industry from which it sprang. The example and precepts of the father took early effect upon his eldest son, whom from the first he destined and prepared to serve his country in public life. At Harrow, according to the accounts of his contemporaries, Peel was a steady industrious boy, the best scholar in the school, fonder of solitary walks than of the games of his companions, but ready to help those who were duller than hiniself, and not unpopular among his fellows. At Christ Church, where he entered as a gentleman commoner, he studied hard, and was the first who, under the new examination statutes, took a first class both in classics and in mathe- matics. an academical ovation in presence of a numerous audience, who came to hear the first man of the day; and a relation who was at Oxford at the time has recorded that the triumph, like both the triumphs and reverses of after life, was calmly borne. From his classical studies Robert Reel derived not only the classical, though somewhat pompous, character of his speeches and the Latin quotations with which they were often happily interspersed, but something _ of his lofty ideal of political ambition. Nor did he ever cease to love these pursuits of his youth; and in 1837, when elected lord rector of Glasgow university, in his inaugural speech he passed a glowing eulogy on classical education. To his mathematical training, which was then not common among public men, he no doubt owed in part his method, his clearncss, his great power of grasping steadily and working out difficult and complicated ques- tions. His speeches show that, in addition to his academi- cal knowledge, he was well versed in English literature, in history, and in the principles of law. While reading hard he did not neglect to develop his tall and vigorous frame, and fortify his strong constitution, by manly exer- cises; and, though he lost his life partly through his bad riding, he was always a good shot and an untiring

walker after game. Sprung from the most religious class of English society, he grew up and remained through life a religious man, and from that source drew deep conscien- tiousness and tranquillity under all difficulties and in all fortunes. His Oxford education confirmed his attachment to the Protestant Church of England. His practical mind remained satisfied with the doctrines of his youth ; and he never showed that he had studied the great religious con- troversies, or that he understood the great religious move- ments of his day.

‘In 1809, being then in his twenty-second year, he was brought into parliament for the close borough of Cashel, which he afterwards exchanged for Chippenham, and commenced his parliamentary career under the eye of his father, then member for Tamworth, who fondly saw in him the future leader of the Tory party. Pitt, Fox, and Burke were gone. Sheridan shone with an expiring ray. But in that House of Commons sat Wilberforce, Windham, Tierney, Grattan, Perceval, Castlereagh, Plunkett, Romilly, Mackintosh, Burdett, Whitbread, Horner, Brougham, Par- nell, Huskisson, and, above all, George Canning. Lord

His examination for his B.A. degree in 1808 was.

Palmerston entered the house at the same time, and Lord John Russell a few years afterwards. Among these men young Peel had to rise. And he rose, not by splendid eloquence, by profound political philosophy, or by great originality of thought, but by the closest attention to all his parliamentary duties, by a study of all the business of parliament, which made him at length familiar with the whole range of public questions and public interests, and by a style of speaking which, owing its force not to high flights of oratory, but to knowledge of the subject in hand, clearness of exposition, close reasoning, and tact in dealing with a parliamentary audience, backed by the character and position of the speaker, improved with his information, practice, station, and experience till it gave him an unrivalled command over the House of Commons. The Tory party was then all-powerful at home; while abroad Europe was at the feet of Napoleon. But Napoleon’s for- tune was about to turn ; and, with the close of the struggle against revolutionary France, political progress in England was soon to

resume the march which that struggle had arrested. Young Peel's lot, however, was cast, through his father, with the Tory party. In his maiden speech in 1810, seconding the address, he defended the Walcheren expedition, which he again vindicated soon afterwards against the report of Lord Porchester's committee. It is said that even then Lord Liverpool discerned in him a dangerous tendency to think for himself, and told his father that he must be put at once into the harness of office. At all events he began official life as Lord Liver- pool's private sccretary, and shortly afterwards, in 1811, was made under-secretary for the colonies by Perceval. In 1812 he was transferred by Lord Liverpool to the more important but unhappy post of secretary for Ireland. There he was engaged till 1817 in maintaining, by insur- rection Acts and other repressive measures, English and Protestant ascendency over a country heaving with dis- content, teeming with conspiracy, and ever ready to burst into rebellion. A middle course between Irish parties was impossible. Peel became, by the necessity of his situa- tion, "Orange Peel," and plied the established engines of coercion and patronage with a vigorous hand. At the same time, it was his frequent duty to combat Grattan, Plunkett, Canning, and the other movers and advocates of Catholic emancipation in the House of Commons. He, however, always spoke on this question with a command of temper wonderful in hot youth, with the utmost courtesy towards his opponents, and with warm expressions of sym- pathy and even of admiration for the Irish people. Nor was the ground he took against the Catholics that of religious principle never to be abandoned, but that of political expediency, which political necessity might over- come. He also, thus early, did his best to advocate and promote secular education in Treland as a means of recon- ciling sects and raising the character of the people. He materially improved the conduct of ordinary business in his office, and gave great satisfaction to merchants and others with whom he had to deal. But his greatest service to Ireland as secretary was the institution of the regular Irish constabulary, nicknamed after him " Peelers," for the protection of life and property in a country where both were insecure. His moderation of tone did not save him from the violent abuse of O'Connell, whom he, young, hot-tempcred (though his temper was generally under con- trol), and sensitive on the point of honour, was ill advised enough to challenge,—an affair which covered them both with ridicule. In 1817 he obtained the highest parlia- mentary distinction of the Tory party by being elected member for the

university of Oxford,—an honour for which he was chosen in preference to Canning on account of his hostility to Catholic emancipation, Lord Eldon lending

him his best support. In the following year he resigned the Irish secretaryship, of the odious work of which he had long been very weary, and remained out of office till 1822. But he still supported the ministers with official zeal, even in the question of the "'Peterloo massacre." In the affair of Queen Caroline, however, he stood somewhat aloof, disapproving some steps taken by the Government, and sensitive to popular opinion; and when Canning retired on account of this affair Peel declined Lord Liverpool's invitation to take the vacant place in the cabinet. During this break in his tenure of office he had some time for reflexion, which there was enough in the aspect of the political world to move. But early office had done its work. It had given him excellent habits of business, great knowledge, and a high position ; but it had left him somewhat stiff, somewhat punctilious, somewhat too cold and reserved to win the hearts of those whose confidence he might command, and somewhat over anxious for formal justifications when he might well have left the essential patriotism and probity of his conduct to the judgment of men of honour and the heart of the people. At the same time he was no pedant in business; in corresponding on political subjects he loved to throw off official forms and communicate his views with the freedom of private corre- spondence ; and, where his confidence was given, it was given without reserve.

At this period he was made chairman of the bullion committee on the death of Horner. He was chosen for this important office by Huskisson, Ricardo, and their fellow-economists, who saw in him a mind open to con- viction, though he owed hereditary allegiance to Pitt's financial policy, and had actually voted with his Pittite father for a resolution of Lord Liverpool's Government denying the existence of any depreciation in the paper currency. The choice proved judicious. Peel was con- verted to the currency doctrines of the economists, and proclaimed his conversion in a great speech on the 24th of May 1819, in which he moved and carried four reso- lutions embodying the recommendations of the bullion committee in favour

of a return to cash payments. This laid the foundation of his financial reputation, and his co-operation with the economists tended to give a liberal turn to his commercial principles. In the course he took he somewhat diverged from his party, and parti- cularly from his father, who remained faithful to Pitt's depreciated paper, and between whom and his schismatic son a solemn and touching passage occurred in the debate. The author of the Cash Payments Act had often to defend his policy, and he did so with vigour. The Act is some- times said to have been hard on debtors, including the nation as debtor, because it required debts to be paid in cash which had been contracted in depreciated paper ; and Peel, as heir to a great fundholder, was even charged with being biassed by his personal interests. But it is answered that the Bank Restriction Acts, under which the depreciated paper had circulated, themselves contained a provision for a return to cash payments six months after peace.

In 1820 Peel married Julia, daughter of General Sir John Floyd, who bore him five sons and two daughters. Three of his sons, Robert, Frederick, and Arthur, have followed him in holding parliamentary office, the youngest being now (1884) speaker of the House of Commons : while another, William, the sailor, has run a bright course in another sphere, and found a glorious grave. The writers who have most severely censured Sir Robert Peel as a public man have suspended their censures to dwell on the virtues and happiness of his private and domestic life. He was not only a most loving husband and father but a true and warm-hearted friend. In Whitehall Gardens or at

Drayton Manor he gladly opened his mind, wearied with the cares of state, to the enjoyments of a circle in which it was his pleasure and his pride to gather some of the most distinguished intellects of the day. He indulged in free and cheerful talk, in which he showed a keen sense of the ridiculous, and a dry sarcastic humour, which often broke out also in his speeches in the House of Commons. He sought the conversation of men of science ; he took delight in art, and was a great collector of pictures ; he was fond of farming and agricultural improvements ; he actively promoted useful works and the advancement of knowledge; he loved making his friends,

dependants, tenants, and neighbours happy. And, cold as he was in public, even to those whom he desired to win, yet in his gay and social hour few men whose minds were so laden could be more bright and genial than Sir Robert Peel.

In 1822 Peel consented to strengthen the enfeebled ministry of Lord Liverpool by becoming home secretary ; and in that capacity he had again to undertake the office of coercing the growing discontent in Ireland, of which he remained the real administrator, and had again to lead in the House of Commons the opposition to the rising cause of Catholic emancipation. In 1825, being defeated on the Catholic question in the House of Commons, he wished to resign office, but Lord Liverpool pleaded that his resigna- tion would break up the Government. He found a happier and more congenial task in reforming and humanizing the criminal law, especially those parts of it which relate to offences against property and offences punishable by death. The five Acts in which Peel accomplished this great work, the first step towards a complete and civilized code, as well as the great speech of 9th March 1826, in which he opened the subject to the House, will form one of the most solid and enduring monuments of his fame. Criminal law reform was the reform of Romilly and Mackintosh, from the hands of the latter of whom Peel received it. But the masterly bills in which it was embodied were the bills of Peel,—not himself a creative genius, but, like the founder of his house, a profound appreciator of other men's creations, and unrivalled in the power of giving them practical and complete effect. This great measure, beyond the sphere of party, was probably also another step in the emancipation of Peel's mind.

In 1827 the Liverpool ministry was broken up by the fatal illness of its chief, and under the new premier, George Canning, Peel, like the duke of Wellington and other high Tory members of Lord Liverpool's cabinet, refused to serve. Canning and Peel were rivals; but we need not interpret as mere personal rivalry that which was certainly, in part at least, a real difference of connexion and opinion. Canning took a Liberal line, and was supported by many of the Whigs; the seceders were Tories, and it is difficult to see how their position in Can- ning's cabinet could have been otherwise than a, false one. Separation led to public coolness and occasional approaches to bitterness on both sides in debate. But there seems no ground

for exaggerated complaints against Peel's conduct. Canning himself said to a friend that "Peel was the only man who had behaved decently towards him." Their private intercourse remained uninterrupted to the end; and Canning's son afterwards entered public life under the auspices of Peel. The charge of having urged Catholic emancipation on Lord Liverpool in 1825, and opposed Canning for being a friend to it in 1827, made against Sir Robert Peel in the fierce corn-law debates of 1846, has been withdrawn by those who made it.

In January 1828, after Canning's death, the duke of Wellington formed a Tory Government, in which Peel was home secretary and leader of the House of Commons. This cabinet, Tory as it was, did not include the impracti-

cable Lord Eldon, and did include Huskisson and three more friends of Canning. Its policy was to endeavour to stave off the growing demand for organic change by ad- ministrative reform, and by lightening the burdens of the people. The civil list was retrenched with an unsparing hand, the public expenditure was reduced lower than it had been since the Revolutionary war, and the import of corn was permitted under a sliding scale of duties. Peel also introduced into London the improved system of police which he had previously established with so much success in Ireland. But the tide ran too strong to be thus headed. First the Government were compelled, after a defeat in the House of Commons, to acquiesce in the repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts, Peel bringing over their High Church supporters, as far as he could, through Dr Lloyd, bishop of Oxford, his tutor at Christ Church, and now his beloved friend and the partner of his counsels in political matters affecting the interests of the church. Immediately afterwards the question of Catholic emancipation was brought to a crisis by the menac- ing power of the Catholic Association and the election of O'Connell for the county of Clare. Peel expressed to the duke of Wellington his conviction that the Catholic question must be settled. The duke consented. The consent of the king, which could scarcely have been obtained except by the duke and Peel, was extorted, withdrawn (the ministers being out for a few hours), and again extorted ; and on the 5th of March 1829 Peel pro- posed Catholic

emancipation in a speech of more than four hours, which was listened to with unflagging atten- tion, and concluded amidst cheers which were heard in Westminster Hall. The apostate was overwhelmed with obloquy. Having been elected for the university of Oxford as a leading opponent of the Catholics, he had thought it right to resign his seat on being converted to emancipation. His friends put him again in nomination, but he was defeated by Sir R. H. Inglis, though the great majority of distinction and intellect was on his side. He took refuge in the close borough of Westbury, whence he afterwards removed to Tamworth, for which he sat till his death. Catholic emancipation was forced on Peel by circumstances ; but it was mainly owing to him that the measure was complete, and based upon equality of civil rights. This great concession, however, did not save the Tory Government. The French Revolution of July 1830 gave fresh strength to the movement against them, though, schooled by the past, they promptly recognized King Louis Philippe. The parliamentary reform movement was joined by some of their offended Protestant supporters. The duke of Wellington committed them fatally against all reform, first by cashiering Huskisson for voting in favour of giving the forfeited franchise of Hast Retford to Bir- mingham, and then by a violent anti-reform declaration in the House of Lords. The elections went against them on the demise of the crown; they were compelled, by popular feeling, to put off the king's visit to the city ; they were beaten on Sir H. Parnell's motion for a com- mittee on the civil list, and resigned.

While in office, Peel succeeded to the baronetcy, Dray- ton Manor, and a great estate by the death of his father 3d May 1830. 'The old man had lived to see his fondest hopes fulfilled in the greatness of his son; but he had also lived to see that a father must not expect to fix his son's opinions,—above all, the opinions of such a son as Sir Robert Peel, and in such an age as that which followed the French Revolution.

The ability and obstinacy of Sir Robert Peel's resistance to the Reform Bill won back for him the allegiance of his party. His opposition was resolute, but it was temperate, and not such as to inflame the fierce passions of the time,

delay the return of civil peace, or put an insurmountable

barrier between his friends and the more moderate among

their opponents. Once only he betrayed the suppressed fire of his temper, in the historical debate of the 22d April 1831, when his speech was broken off by the arrival of the king to dissolve the parliament which had thrown out reform. He refused to join the duke of Wellington in the desperate enterprise of forming a Tory Government at the height of the storm, when the Grey ministry had gone out on the refusal of the king to promise them an un- limited creation of peers. By this conduct he secured for his party the full benefit of the reaction which he no doubt knew was sure to ensue. The general election of 1832, after the passing of the Reform Bill, left him with barely 150 followers in the House of Commons; but this handful rapidly swelled under his management into the great Conservative party. He frankly accepted the Reform Act, stamped it as final, taught his party to register instead of despairing, appealed to the intelligence of the middle classes, whose new-born power he appreciated, steadily supported the Whig ministers against the Radicals and O'Connell, and gained every moral advantage which the most dignified and constitutional tactics could afford. The changes which the Reform Act necessarily drew with it, such as municipal reform, he rather watched in the Conservative interest than strongly opposed. To this policy, and to the great parliamentary powers of its author, it was mainly due that, in the course of a few years, the Conservatives were as strong in the reformed parliament as the Tories had been in the unreformed. It is vain to deny the praise of genius to such a leader, though his genius may have been of a practical, not of a speculative or imaginative kind. The skill of a pilot who steered for many years over such waters may sometimes have resem- bled craft. But the duke of Wellington's emphatic eulogy on him was, "Of all the men I ever knew, he had the greatest regard for truth." The duke might have added that his own question, " How is the king's Government to be carried on in a reformed parliament?" was mainly solved by the temperate and constitutional policy of Sir Robert Peel, and by his personal influence on the debates and proceedings of the House of Commons during the years which followed the Reform Act.

In 1834, on the dismissal of the Melbourne ministry, power came to Sir Robert Peel before he expected or desired it. He hurried from Rome at the call of the duke of Wellington, whose sagacious modesty knew his superior in politics and yielded him the first place, and became prime minister, holding the two offices of first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer. He vainly sought to include in his cabinet the two recent seceders from the Whigs, Lord Stanley and Sir James Graham. A dissolution gave him a great increase of strength in the House, but not enough. He was outvoted on the election of the speaker at the opening of the session of 1835, and, after struggling on for six weeks longer, was finally beaten, and resigned on the question of appropriat- ing the surplus revenues of the church in Ireland to national education. His time had not yet come ; but the capacity, energy, and resource he displayed in this short tenure of office raised him immensely in the estimation of the House, his party, and the country. Of the great budget of practical reforms which he brought forward, the plan for the commutation of tithes, the ecclesiastical commission, and the plan for settling the question of dissenters' marriages bore fruit, then or afterwards. His scheme for settling the question of dissenters' marriages, framed in the amplest spirit of liberality, was a striking 'nstance of his habit of doing thoroughly and without reserve that which he had once made up his mind to do.

456

From 1835 to 1840 he pursued the same course of patient and far-sighted opposition, the end of which, sure though distant, was not only office but power. In 1837 the Conservative members of the House of Commons, with victory now in sight, gave their leader a grand banquet at Merchant Taylors' Hall, where he proclaimed in a great speech the creed and objects of his party. In 1839, the Whigs having resigned on the Jamaica Bill, he was called on to form a Government, but failed, through the refusal of the queen, by advice of Lords John Russell and Palmer- ston, to part with the ladies of her bedchamber, whom he deemed it necessary to replace by ladies not connected with his political opponents. His time was not even yet fully come. In 1840 he was hurried, it is believed by the ardour of his followers, into a premature motion of want of confidence, which was brought forward by Sir John Yarde Buller and failed. But in the following year a similar

motion was carried by a majority of one, and the Whigs were compelled to appeal to the country. The result was a majority of ninety-one against them on a motion of want of confidence in the autumn of 1841, upon which they resigned, and Sir Robert Peel, becoming first lord of the treasury, with a commanding majority in both Houses of Parliament, the country in his favour, and many colleagues of the highest ability and distinction, grasped with no doubtful hold the reins of power.

The crisis called for a master-hand. The finances were in disorder. For some years there had been a growing deficit, which for 1841 was upwards of two millions, and attempts to supply this deficit by additions to assessed taxes and customs duties had failed. Distress and discon- tent reigned in the country, especially among the trading and manufacturing classes. The great financier took till the spring of 1842 to mature his plans. He then boldly supplied the deficit by imposing an income-tax on all in- comes above a certain amount. He accompanied this tax with a reform of the tariff, by which prohibitory duties were removed and other duties abated on a vast number of articles of import, especially the raw materials of manu- factures and prime articles of food. The increased con- sumption, as the reformer expected, countervailed the reduction of duty. The income-tax was renewed and the reform of the tariff carried still further on the same prin- ciple in 1845. The result was, in place of a deficit of upwards of two millions, a surplus of five millions in 1845, and the removal of seven millions and a half of taxes up to 1847, not only without loss, but with gain to the ordi- nary revenue of the country. The prosperous state of the finances and of public affairs also permitted a reduction of the interest on a portion of the national debt, giving a yearly saving at once of £625,000, and ultimately of a million and a quarter to the public. In 1844 another great financial measure, the Bank Charter Act, was passed and, though severely controverted and thrice suspended at a desperate crisis, has ever since regulated the currency of the country. In Ireland O’Connell’s agitation for the repeal of the Union had now assumed threatening propor- tions, and verged upon rebellion. The great agitator was prosecuted, with his chief adherents, for conspiracy and sedition ; and, though the conviction was quashed for in- formality, repeal was quelled in its chief. At the same time a healing hand was extended to Ireland. The Chari- table Bequests Act gave Roman Catholics a share in the administration of charities and legal power

to endow their own religion. The allowance to Maynooth was largely Increased, notwithstanding violent Protestant opposition. Three queen's colleges, for the higher education of all the youth of Ireland, without distinction of religion, were founded, notwithstanding violent Opposition, both Protest- ant and Roman Catholic. The principle of toleration, once

accepted, was thoroughly carried out. The last remnants of the penal laws were swept from the statute-book, and justice was extended to the Roman Catholic Church in Canada and Malta. In the same spirit Acts were passed for clearing from doubt Irish Presbyterian marriages, for settling the titles of a large number of dissenters' chapels in England, and removing the municipal disabilities of the Jews. The grant for national education was trebled, and an attempt was made, though in vain, to introduce effective education clauses into the factory bills. To the alienation of any part of the revenues of the Established Church Sir Robert Peel never would consent; but he had issued the ecclesiastical commission, and he now made better provi- sion for a number of populous parishes by a redistribution of part of the revenues of the church. The weakest part of the conduct of this great Government, perhaps, was its failure to control the railway mania by promptly laying down the lines on a Government plan. It passed an Act in 1844 which gave the Government a right of purchase, and it had prepared a palliative measure in 1846, but was compelled to sacrifice this, like all other secondary measures, to the repeal of the corn laws. It failed also, though not without an effort, to avert the great schism in the Church of Scotland. Abroad it was as prosperous as at home. It had found disaster and disgrace in Afghanistan. It speedily ended the war there with honour. By the hand of its governor-general of India the invading Sikhs were destroyed upon the Sutlej. Guizot has said that the ob- jects—not only the ostensible but the real objects—of Sir Robert Peel's foreign policy were peace and justice among nations. The angry and dangerous questions with France, touching the right of search, the war in Morocco, and the Tahiti affair, and with the United States touching the 'Maine boundary and the Oregon territory, were happily settled by frank and patient negotiation. In this and in other parts of his administration Sir Robert Peel was well seconded by the ability of his colleagues, but the premier himself was the soul of all.

Yet there was a canker in all this greatness. There were malcontents in Sir Robert Peel's party whose presence often caused embarrassment and twice collision and scan- dal. The Young Englanders disliked him because he had hoisted the flag of Conservatism instead of Toryism on the morrow of the Reform Bill. The strong philanthropists and Tory Chartists disliked him because he was a strict economist and an upholder of the new poor law. But the fatal question was protection. That question was being fast brought to a crisis by public opinion and the Anti- Corn-Law League. Sir Robert Peel had become in prin- ciple a free-trader. Since his accession to power a new responsibility had fallen on him, which compelled him to think less of a class and more of the people. He had expressed to Guizot a deep, nay, a passionate conviction that something must be done to relieve the suffering and precarious condition of the labouring classes. He had lowered the duties of the sliding scale, and thereby caused the secession from the cabinet of the duke of Buckingham. He had alarmed the farmers by admitting foreign cattle and meat under his new tariff, and by admitting Canadian corn. He had done his best in his speeches to put the maintenance of the corn laws on low ground, and to wean the landed interest from their reliance on protection. But to protection the landed interest fondly clung; and it is hard to say how far Sir Robert Peel himsclf dreaded the consequences of repeal to the steadiness of prices and to mortgaged estates. The approach of the Irish famine in 1845 decisively turned the wavering balance. The ports must be opened, and, being opened, they could not again be closed upon the same conditions. The Clare election and Catholic emancipation were played over again. Sir

Phy 1a Tae

Robert proposed to his cabinet the repeal of the corn laws. Lord Stanley and the duke of Buccleuch dissented, and Sir Robert resigned. But Lord John Russell failed to form a new Government. Sir Robert again came into office; and now, with the consent of all the cabinet but Lord Stanley, who retired, he, in a great speech on 27th January 1846, brought the repeal of the corn laws before the House of Comnions. In the long and fierce debate that ensued he was overwhelmed, both by political and personal enemies, with the most virulent invective, which he bore with his wonted calmness, and to which he made no retorts. His measure was carried; but immediately

afterwards the offended protectionists, goaded by Lord George Bentinck and Disraeli, coalesced with the Whigs, and threw him out on the Irish Coercion Bill. He went home from his defeat, escorted by a great crowd, who un- covered as he passed, and he immediately resigned. So fell a Conservative Government which would otherwise have probably ended only with the life of its chief. Those who overthrew Sir Robert Peel have dwelt on what they natur- ‘ally believe to have been the bitterness of his fall. It is certain that he was deeply pained by the rupture with his party, but it is doubtful whether otherwise his fall was so bitter. of toil; he had the memory of immense labours gone through, and of great things achieved in the service of the state; he had a kingly position in the country, great wealth, fine tastes, and a happy home.

“Though out of office he was not out of power. He had “lost a party, but won a nation.” The Whig ministry which succeeded him leant much on his support, with which he never taxed them. He joined them in carrying forward free-trade principles by the repeal of the naviga- tion laws. He joined them in carrying forward the prin- ciple of religious liberty by the bill for the emancipation of the Jews. One important measure was hisown. While in office he had probed, by the Devon commission of inquiry, the sores of Ireland connected with the owner- ship and occupation of land. In 1849, in a speech on the Trish Poor Laws, he first suggested, and in the next year he aided in establishing, a commission to facilitate the sale of estates in a hopeless state of encumbrance. The Encum- bered Estates Act made no attempt, like later legislation, to secure by law the uncertain customary rights of Irish tenants, but it transferred the land from ruined landlords to solvent owners capable of performing the duties of pro- perty towards the people. On the 28th of June 1850 Sir Robert Peel made a great speech on the Greek question against Lord Palmerston’s foreign policy of interference. This speech, being against the Government, was thought to show that he was ready to return to office. It was his last. On the following day he was thrown from his horse on Constitution Hill, and mortally injured by the fall. Three days he lingered in all the pain which the quick nerves of genius can endure. On the fourth (2d July 1850) he took the sacrament, bade a calm fare- well to his family and friends, and died; and a great sorrow fell on the whole land. All the tributes which respect and gratitude could pay were paid to him by the sovereign, by parliament, by public men of all parties, by the

country, by the press, and, above all, by the great towns and the masses of the people to whom he had given “bread unleavened with injustice.” He would have been buried among the great men of England in Westminster Abbey, but his will desired that he might be laid in Drayton church. It also renounced a peerage for his family, as he had before declined the garter. for himself when it was offered him by the queen through Lord Aberdeen.

Those who judge Sir Robert Peel will remember that he

For evening had begun to steal over his long day |

was bred a Tory in days when party was a religion ; that he entered parliament a youth, was m office at twenty-four and secretary for Ireland at twenty-five ; that his public life extended over a long period rife with change ; and that his own changes were all forwards and with the advancing intellect of the time. They will enumerate the great practical improvements and the great acts of legislative justice of those days—Catholic emancipation, freedom for dissenters, free trade, the great reforms in police, criminal law, currency, finance, the Irish Encumbered Estates Act, even the encouragement of agricultural improvement by loans of public money—and note how large a share Sir Robert Peel had, if not in originating, in giving thorough practical effect to all. They will observe that of what he did nothing has been undone. They will reflect that as a parliamentary statesman he could not govern without a party, and that it is difficult to govern at once for a party and for the whole people. They will compare his admin- istration with those that preceded and those that followed, and the state and fortunes of his party when. he was at its head with its state and fortunes after his fall. They will consider the peace and goodwill which his foreign policy diffused over Europe. They will think of his ardent love of his country, of his abstinence from intrigue, violence, and faction, of his boundless labour through a long life devoted to the public service. Whether he was a model of statesmanship may be doubted. Models of statesman- ship are rare, if by a model of statesmanship is meant a great administrator and party leader, a great political philosopher, and a great independent orator, all in one. But if the question is, whether he was a ruler loved and

trusted by the English people, there is no arguing against the tears of a nation.

Those who wish to know more of him will consult his own post- humous memoirs, edited by his literary executors Karl Stanhope and Viscount Cardwell; the four volumes of his speeches; a sketch of his life and character by Sir Lawrence Pcel ; an historical sketch by Lord Dalling ; Guizot's Sir Robert Peet (1857) ; Kiinzel's Leben und Reden Sir Robert Peel's (1851)$ Disraeli's Life of Lord George Bentinek (1858) ; Morley's Life of Cobden; and the general histories of the time. (G. 8.—C. S. P.)

PEELE, Grorce (1558-1598), was one of the group of university poets with whom Shakespeare entered 'Into competition at the beginning of his career. His exact age has been ascertained and the facts of his life diligently searched out by Mr Dyce, the editor of his works. It appears from a deposition made by him at Oxford that he was twenty-five years old in 1583. He took his bachelor's degree at Oxford in 1577, and his master's degree two years afterwards. Before he reached middle age, Peele was "driven to extreme shifts" for a living, and he be- came so notorious for disreputable practical jokes that a body of "merrie conceited jests" was fathered upon him ; but he began life brilliantly. He was "a noted poet at the university." He married a woman of property. When a distinguished foreigner was entertained at Christ Church with elaborately-mounted plays and pageants, Peele was entrusted with the superintendence of the show. He was complimented in Latin pentameters on his trans- lation of one of the plays of Euripides. He wrote The Arraignment of Paris, a bright little comedy with pretty songs, for representation before Queen Elizabeth. This was published in 1584; and in 1587 his friend Nash declared him to be "the chief supporter of pleasance now living, the atlas of poetry, and primus verborum artyfex." From this brilliant height the reckless poet quickly slid down to a much less respectable position, and acquired renown of a different kind by his clever tricks on creditors, tavern-keepers, and " croshabells." He began to write for the common players, whose ingratitude to gentlemen of education was bitterly deplored by his friend Greene. Ov

Special character of the British peerage.

these productions the following have been preserved and edited by Mr Dyce :—TZhe Chronicle History of Edward I. (published in 1593); The Battle of Alcazar (1594) ; The Old Wives' Tale (1595); David and Bethsabe (1599); Sir Clyomon and Sir Clamydes (1599). These plays, which are very different in kind, testify to Peele's versatility and adroitness, but do not entitle him to much considera- tion either as a poet or as a dramatist. Quickness of wit

PEERAGE

T was remarked in the article Nopruity (vol. xvii. pp. 529, 530) that the existence of the peerage, as that word is understood in the three British kingdoms, is something altogether peculiar to those kingdoms, and that it has actually hindered them from possessing a nobility of the Continental type. Before we try to trace out the history of the British peerage, it will be well to show more fully than was done in that article in what the insti- tution consists, and in what it differs from those institu- tions in other countries which are most like it. And to this end we must define what we understand by the word peerage in the British sense. In its historical use it takes in all the members or possible members of the House of Lords and no other persons. But modern usage and modern decisions seem to limit the use of the name on one side, and to extend it on another. There is no kind of doubt that, according to the earliest precedents—pre- cedents reaching up to the earliest official use of the word peer—the spiritual lords are equally peers with the temporal. But it has been held, at least from the 17th century, that the spiritual lords, thougli lords of parliament equally with the temporal lords, are not, like them, peers. Again, in earlier times no peers were heard of except members of the House of Lords, but membership of that House, even as a temporal lord, was not necessarily hereditary. But a decision of the present reign has ruled that a life-peerage is possible, but that the holder of such a peerage has no right to a seat as a lord of parliament. And an Act of the present reign of later date has actually called into being a class of lords who, it would seem, may possibly be either lords of parliament without being peers, or peers without being lords of parliament. These doctrines, some of which trample all the facts of history under foot, but

which must be supposed to declare the modern law, establish the possibility of peers who are not lords of parliament, as well as of lords of parliament who are not peers. The question whether all lords of parliament were peers has been debated for several centuries; that all peers were in esse or in posse lords of parliament, that the right to a seat in parliament was the essence of peerage round which all other rights have grown, was surely never doubted till the year 1856.

Still these later doctrines, though founded on altogether wrong historical grounds, give us a definition of peerage which is intelligible and convenient. Setting aside the possible peers who are not lords of parliament, the two decisions between them rule that the parliamentary peer- age is confined to the temporal lords, and that, except in the case of the very modern official lords, their peerage is necessarily hereditary. This definition is convenient in practice, because it is the hereditary temporal peerage whose growth and constitution is of that unique kind which distinguishes it from all other bodies which bear the same name or which present any likeness to it in other ways. It will save trouble in this inquiry if we use the word peerage in what—with the possible exception of the last- created official lords—seems now to be its legal sense, as meaning the hereditary temporal peerage only.

and fancy and a certain neatness of versification are their highest qualities. As Peele lived through the transition from the first tentative essays to the full maturity of the great Elizabethan drama, his works have an_ historical interest as showing what an ingenious man of culture could do with the common stock of theatrical characters, situations, and imagery. His comedies are often pretty, but his tragedies are inflated and preposterous,

In this sense then the peerage of England—continued Defni- after the union between England and Scotland in the peerage tion of of Great Britain, and after the union between Great Britain 2279 and Ireland in the peerage of the United Kingdom—is a body of men possessing privileges which are not merely personal but hereditary, privileges which descend in all cases

according to some rule of hereditary succession, but which pass only to one member of a family at a time. In this the peerage differs from nobility strictly so called, in Its dis- which the hereditary privileges, whatever they may con- tinction” sist in, pass on to all the descendants of the person first — created or otherwise acknowledged as noble. The essen. tial and distinguishing privilege of the peer, as defined above, is that he is an hereditary lord of parliament, that he has, by virtue of his birth, a right to a summons from the crown to attend personally in every parliament and to take his seat in the House of Lords. He is thus, by right of birth, a member of the great council of the nation, an hereditary legislator, and an hereditary judge. Whatever other privileges, substantial or honorary, the peer may pos- sess, they have all gathered round this central privilege, which is that which distinguishes the peer from all other men. The peer of parliament thus holds a different position from the lords spiritual, equally lords of parliament with himself, but holding their seats by a different tenure from that of an hereditary peerage. He holdsa different position from the possible non-parliamentary peers implied in the decision of 1856. He holds a different position from the official lords of parliament created by the last Act. The number of the peerage is unlimited ; the crown may raise whom it will to any of its ranks; but it is now understood that, in order to make the persons so raised peers in the full sense, to make them lords of parliament, the creation must extend to their heirs of some kind as well as to themselves.

The special character of the British peerage, as distin- guished from privileged orders in any other time or place, springs directly from the fact that the essence of the peerage is the hereditary right of a personal summons to parliament. To determine the origin of the peerage is thus to determine how a certain body of men came to possess this hereditary right of summons. But, before we enter on this inquiry, one or two remarks will be needful which are naturally suggested by the definition of peerage which has just been given.

It has been said above that the holder of a peerage as Position defined is a lord of parliament in esse or in posse. It has och become necessary during the present and last centuries to, jrish add these last words to the definition. For it is plain peers that, since the successive unions of England and Scotland and of Great Britain and Ireland, an hereditary peerage has not

always in practice carried with it a seat in the House of Lords (cf. the Lords' Report on the Dignity of a Peer, ii. 16). For since those unions certain persons, namely those peers of Scotland and Ireland who are not representative peers and who do not hold peerages of Eng- land, of Great Britain, or of the United Kingdom, have been : | undoubted peers, they have enjoyed some or all of the per-

ime of rs,

PEERAGE

sonal privileges of peerage, but they have had no seats in the

Houseof Lords. But thisis a modern accident and anomaly.

The persons spoken of hold peerages which entitled their holders to seats in the parliaments of Scotland and Ireland

And

as long as those parliaments were distinct bodies. their present holders, if not members of the House of Lords in esse, are such in posse,

other persons. Their membership of the House is rather suspended than altogether taken away. Their rather anomalous case hardly affects the general principle that, as far as the hereditary peerage is concerned, peerage and membership of the House of Lords are the same thing.

A few words are also needed as to the effect of the earlier doctrine which rules that peerage is an attribute of the lords temporal only and not of the lords spiritual (see Lords' Report, i. 323, 393 ; il. 75). This is doubtless

-meant to imply a certain inferiority on the part of the

spiritual lords, as not sharing in that nobility of blood which is looked on as the special attribute of the heredi- tary peerage. But the inferiority thus implied, as it has nothing to do with parliamentary powers, has also nothing to do with precedence. The lords spiritual as a body are always mentioned first; one class of them, namely the archbishops, take precedence of all

temporal peers who are not of the royal family, as the other bishops take preced- ence of the temporal barons. What the distinction is con- cerned with is simply certain personal privileges, such as the right of being tried by the court of our lord the king in parliament, that is by the House of Lords or some part of it, instead of in the ordinary way by a jury. The doctrine which denies “peerage” to the spiritual lords is altogether contrary to earlier precedents ; but the way in which it came about is one of the most curious parts of our inquiry. It was the natural result of the ideas under whose influence the temporal peerage grew up and put on its distinguishing character.

The use of the word peers (pares) to denote the members of the House of Lords first appears in the 14th century, and it was fully established before the end of that century. The name seems to be rather a direct importation from France than anything of natural English or even Norman growth. In the 12th and 13th centuries the great men of the realm appear under various names, English, Latin, and French, witan, sapientes, magnates, proceres, grantz, and the like; they are pares only incidentally, as other men might be. In the Great Charter the word pares, in the phrase judiciwm parium, has simply the general meaning which it still keeps in the rule that every man shall be tried by his peers, the peer (in the later sense) by his peers and the commoner by his. In the 13th century this seems to have still been the only meaning of the word in England. This is illustrated by the story of Peter des Roches, bishop of Winchester (see R. Wendover, iv. 277; M. Paris, ed. Luard, ili, 252; Stubbs, Const. Hist., ii. 48, 183), when in 1233 the right of being tried by their peers was asserted on behalf of Richard earl Marshall, and others. The bishops and other lords exhort the king to make peace with certain of his nobles and other subjects, “‘quos absque judicio parium exsulaverat,” &e. The Poitevin bishop, either through ignorance or of set purpose, misunderstood the phrase, and answered that in England there were no peers (pares) as there were in France, and that therefore the king might deal with all his subjects as he chose by means of his own justices only.! The word pares is here clearly used in one sense and understood in another. The English lords used

1 «Quod non sunt pares in Anglia, sicut in regno Francorum, unde

licet regi Anglorum per justitiarios quos constituerit quoslibet de . . sos , regno suo exulare et mediante judicio condemnare.’

They have a capacity for being chosen to seats in that House which is not shared by

459

the word in its older general sense ; Peter des Roches used it in the special sense which it bore in France. Neither used it in the sense which it took in the next century. It was perfectly true that there was in England no body of men answering to the peers of France, of whom we shall speak presently. But there is every likelihood that the name, as describing a particular body of men in England, was borrowed from the peers of France.

But the thing is more important than the name. What- ever view may be taken of the constitution of the ancient Witenagemédt, we may safely assume that that assembly, with whatever change in its constitution, is personally continued in the House of Lords. of two classes of men who have never lost their right

That house consists House of Lords;

to a personal summons, together with certain other classes oa a who have acquired that right in later times. Two Sete

classes of men, namely earls and bishops, have, with a tion; the

certain interval in the 17th century, in the councils of the nation from the earliest times. These two classes are those whose presence connects the earliest and the latest English assemblies. From the time when the House of Lords began to take anything like its present shape, other classes of men, spiritual and temporal, were summoned as well as the bishops and earls, but not with the same regularity as they were. Some abbots were always summoned from the beginning, and a few other churchmen afterwards obtained the same right. But, while every bishop—except in a few cases of personal enmity on the part of the king—was summoned as a matter of course, there was great irregularity in summon- ing of abbots. So some

barons were always summoned as well as the earls; but, while every earl was—with a few such exceptions as in the case of the bishops—summoned as a matter of course, there was great irregularity in sum- moning the barons. The bishops and earls in short were personages too great to be left out; so were a few of the greatest abbots. Lesser men, spiritual or temporal, might be summoned or not according to a hundred reasons of convenience, caprice, or accident. But it is only the common tendency of things that the occasional summons should grow into the perpetual summons, and that the perpetual summons should, wherever it was possible, that is, in the case of the temporal lords, grow into the hereditary sum- mons,

sat continuously bishops and earls.

In other words, the doctrine was gradually estab- Growth

lished that, when a man was once summoned, a right of of the

summons was created for him and his heirs for ever. The ei. establishment of this doctrine called into being a new order trine.

of men, of lower rank than the bishops and earls but of equal parliamentary power, namely the class of barons having an hereditary right to seats in parliament. Pre- sently, in the course of the 14th and 15th centuries, the ranks of the temporal peerage were increased by the in- vention of new orders, those of duke, marquess, and vis- count, the two former classes taking precedence of the ancient earls.

It is easy to see how the growth of these several classes New of hereditary lords of parliament tended to strengthen the position

notion of the temporal peerage as a body by itself, apar from all other men, even from those lords of parliament ? whose seats were not hereditary. Here were five classes of men who were not peers in the sense of strict equality among themselves, for they were divided by rigid rules of precedence, but who were peers in the sense of having eacli of them an equal right to something peculiar to themselves, something which was so far from being shared with any who were not lords of parliament that it was not shared by all who were. The archbishop took precedence of the duke, the bishop took

precedence of the baron; but duke and baron alike shared in something which archbishop and bishop had not, the hereditary right to a summons to

t of the

eerage.

Doctrine of the en- nobling

of blood.

Position of the judges.

Peerage hinders nobility.

parliament. The peerage of the temporal lord came to be looked on as something inherent in the blood, something which could not, like the official seat of the churchman, be resigned or lost by any means except by such legal pro- cesses aS involved “corruption of blood.” The parlia- mentary powers, the formal precedence, of the spiritual lords were not touched, but the idea silently grew that they were not the peers of the hereditary members of the House. In short, the doctrine grew that the temporal lords alone were peers, as alone having their blood ‘ cnnobled,” which is the herald’s way of saying that they held their seats by hereditary right. The extinction of so many temporal peerages in the Wars of the Roses, the creation of so many new peerages under the Tudors, while in one way they lowered the strength and dignity of the order, in another way helped more and more to mark it out as a separate order, distinct from all others.

But the spiritual lords were not the only class that lost by the growth of the doctrine of hereditary peerage. No doctrine about blood or peerage could get rid of the fact that the parliamentary position of the bishops and the greater abbots was as old as that of the earls, far older than that of the barons, to say nothing of the ranks more lately devised. But there was another body of men whom the growth of the hereditary doctrine hindered

from _be- coming peers, and from becoming lords of parliament in any full sense. These were the judges. As the judges grew to be a distinct and recognized class, they came to be sum- moned to parliament like the barons. The same reason which made it expedient to summon bishops, earls, and barons, made it expedient to summon judges also. It would not have been unreasonable if, in the many shiftings and experiments which took place before the constitution of the two Houses finally settled itself, the judges had come to hold official seats in the House of Lords in the same way as the bishops. But the growth and strengthening of the hereditary doctrine hindered the judges as a body from ever winning the same position in parliament as the bishops and abbots. They had not the same antiquity ; they had not the same territorial position; their tenure was less secure ; the spiritual lord might lose his office by resigna- tion or bya legal process ; the judge might lose his by the mere arbitrary will of the sovereign. The bishops then could be denied the right of personal peerage ; they could not be denied their full parliamentary position, their seats and votes. But the same feeling which deprived the bishop of his personal peerage hindered the judge from ever obtaining the personal peerage, and even from obtain- ing a full seat and vote in parliament. Owing to these influences, the judges have ever held an anomalous position in parliament ; they came to be in a manner in the House of Lords but not of it, to be its counsellors and assessors, but not its members.

The growth of the hereditary doctrine pressed hardly, we must allow, on both bishops and judges. But its working on either of those classes has been of small moment indeed compared with the effect on the nation at large. There is no institution for which England has greater reason to be thankful than for her hereditary peerage ; for, as we began by saying, it has saved her from the curse of a nobility. Or rather, to speak more accurately, the growth of the peerage with its comparatively harmless privileges hindered the real nobility from keeping or winning privileges which would have been anything but harmless. If the word nobility has any real meaning, it must, according to the analogy of lands where there is a real nobility, take in all who bear coat-armour by good right (see Nositity). It is a remark which has been made a thousand times, and no remark can be truer, that countless families which would be reckoned as noble any-

where else are not reckoned as noble in England. That is to say, though they may be rich and ancient, though they may claim an illustrious pedigree and may be able to prove their claim, yet they have nothing to do with the peerage. In England no family is looked upon as noble unless its head isa peer. In other words, the idea of peerage has altogether displaced the older idea of nobility. The growth of the order of peers has hindered the growth of any nobility apart from the peerage. The hereditary dignity of the peer, the great political position which it carries with it, stands so immeasurably above any hereditary dignity which attaches to the simple gentleman by coat- armour, that the gentleman by coat-armour—the noble of other lands —ceased in England to be looked on, or rather perhaps never came to be looked on, as noble at all. In other words, the growth of the peerage saved the country from the curse of a nobility after the fashion of the nobility of France or of Germany. The difference in this respect between England and other lands is plain at first sight, and there really seems no other way to explain the differ- ence except that every notion of hereditary dignity and privilege gathered so exclusively round the hereditary peerage as to leave nothing of any account to gather round any smaller hereditary position.

But, while the growth of the peerage thus hindered the growth of a nobility of which every gentleman should be a member, it was still possible that a real nobility might have grown up out of the peerage itself. That is to say, it might have come about that, while none but the descend- ants of peers were privileged, all the descendants of peers should. be privileged. A nobility might thus have been formed, much smaller than a nobility taking in_all lawful bearers of coat-armour, but still a nobility by no means small. But in England no such nobility has ever grown up. No one has any substantial privilege except the peer himself. No one in short is noble but the peer himself. Even in common speech, though we speak of a noble family, we do not personally apply the word noble to any other member of that family, unless, in the case of the higher ranks of the peerage, to a few immediate descendants of the peer. In short, while the blood of the peer is said to be ennobled, it is ennobled with a nobility so high and rare that it cannot pass to more than one at a time even of his own descendants (see the plain speaking of Dr Stubbs, Const, Hist., iii. 443). The eldest son of a duke is

legally a commoner ; the children of his younger sons are not only legally but socially undistinguishable from other commoners. That is to say, the hereditary possession of the peer is not nobility at all in the sense which that word bears in other lands. It is a fiction to say that the peer's blood is ennobled, when the inheritors of his blood are not inheritors of his nobility. In short, as there is no nobility outside the families whose heads are peers, neither is there any real nobility within those families. As the growth of the hereditary peerage made nobility impossible outside the families of peers, so the particular form of its growth made true nobility impossible even within those families.- For, after all, the essence of peerage is simply that the peer becomes by birth what other men become either by royal nomination or by popu- lar election. The official origin of the peer still cleaves to him. The best description of his position is that he holds a great hereditary office. His place as legislator and judge is in itself as strictly official as the dignity of the bishop or the sheriff; but, as, unlike the dignity of the bishop and the sheriff, it has becoine hereditary, something of the magic sentiment of hereditary descent has spread itself over its actual holder and over a few of his immediate descendants. But, as the dignity is in itself official, the hereditary sentiment has not been-able to go further than

this ; it has not prevailed so far as to establish any nobility or any privilege of any kind for all the descendants of the hereditary legislator and hereditary judge. f This result was further strengthened by the peculiar nature of the office which became hereditary in the peers ~ of England ; it is an office which can be discharged only ..in concert with others; the very essence of the peerage is the summons to take part in the proceedings of an assembly. In itself nothing is more natural than the growth of nobility out of office; it is as one of the chief ways in which nobility has come into being. And, to take a position higher than that of mere nobility, men in other lands whose dignity was in its beginning yet more _ purely official than that of the peers of England, say the

of the peer, hereditary membership of the great council of the nation, was on the one hand so transcendent as to extinguish all other hereditary dignities; on the other hand, as resting on membership of an assembly, it could not well grow into nobility in the strictest sense. The peerage therefore, the office of hereditary legislator and hereditary judge, passed, and such nobility as it conferred passed with it, to one member only of the family at a time. The other members had no share in the office, and therefore had no share in the nobility which it conferred.

It was then in this way that the peerage, growing out of the hereditary summons to parliament, hindered the growth of any nobility outside the families of peers and by the same means hindered the growth of any real nobility within their

si dukes and counts of Germany, contrived, not only to make t- their offices hereditary but to make at least their honorary privileges extend to all their descendants for ever and ever. That is to say, they grew into a nobility—a nobility to be

families. To the existence of the peerage then, more than Equality

to any other cause, England owes its happy freedom from °f all be-

the curse of a really privileged class, the h oe a really privileged class, the happy equality in

actual – the eye of the law of all men who are not actually pecrs,— cl

sure within a wider nobility—in the strictest sense. Why did not the English peerage do the same? For two reasons, which are in truth different forms of the same reason, different results of the fact that the royal power was so much stronger in England than it was in Germany. One is because the growth of the dukes and counts of Germany belongs to a much earlier state of things than the growth of the English peerage, to a state of things when national unity and the royal authority, though much stronger than they were afterwards, were much less firmly established than they were in England in the age when the hereditary peerage grew up. But partly also, and chiefly, because the dignity and authority of the German duke or count was mainly

a local and personal dignity and authority, a dignity and authority which he held in himself and exer- cised apart from his fellows, while the dignity and autho- rity of the English peer was one which he could hold and exercise only in partnership with his fellows. To the German duke or count his position in the national assembly was the least important part of his powers; to the English

an equality which reaches so high that the children of the sovereign himself, whatever may be their personal honours and precedence, are, unless they arc formally created peers, in the eye of the law commoners like other men. The privileges of the actual peerage have been a small price to pay for such a blessing as this. But we must remember that this happy peculiarity, like all other features in the English constitution, came about by accident, or more truly by the silent working of historical circumstances.

should be two Houses of Parliament and not one, three, or ° four—as no lawgiver ever decreed in so many words that one of these Houses should be elective and the other here- ditary or official—so no lawgiver ever decreed in so many words that the children of the hereditary lord of parliament should be in no way partaker of his privileges. All these things came of themselves ; we cannot point to any parti- cular enactment which established any of them, or to any particular moment when they were established. Like everything else, they grew by usage, not by enactment ;

As no Silent English lawgiver ever decreed in so many words that there growth

peerage.

later enactments confirmed them or took them for granted

(see Lords' Report, i. 47, 483; ii. 25). But we can see

that the rule which has established but one form of real Constitu- distinction among Englishmen, that which parts the actual pes peer and the commoner, grew out of the way in which Seas the elements of the parliament finally settled themselves. gradu.

The parliamentary line was in the end drawn between the allyfixed.

peer it was the essence of his whole position. After the purely official character of the earldoms had died out, the English peer was nothing apart from his brother peers. His greatness was the greatness of the member of a power- ful assembly. He might be hereditary legislator and hereditary judge ; but he could not act as either except in concert with all the other hereditary legislators and here-

ditary judges. The earls and bishops of England, each by himself, might, if the royal authority had been weaker, have grown into princes, like the dukes and bishops of Germany. The earls, after the change in their character, and the other ranks of peerage from their beginning, were shown to be simple subjects by the very nature of their dignity and power. ‘The position of the German duke or count doubtless came from a royal ‘grant; but it was from a royal grant of some distant age. The position of the English peer rested altogether on a writ from the crown, and that not a writ of past ages, but a writ which, though it could not be refused, needed to be renewed in each successive parliament. In other lands the assembly of the nobles was great and powerful because it was an assembly of great and powerful men ; in England the peer was great and powerful because he was a member of a great and powerful assembly. A parliamentary dignity of this kind, even when it became strictly hereditary, was very different from the quasi princely position of the great

baron and the knight. One is rather surprised that it was drawn at that point. The gap between the earl and the baron, and again the gap between the knight and the citizen, might either of them seem wider than the gap between the baron and the knight. Yet in the end the barons were lifted up to the fellowship of bishops and earls, while the knights were thrust down to the fellowship of citizens and burgesses. This must have done much to hinder the knightly families, families which in any other land would have ranked as noble, from keeping or claiming any strictly hereditary privilege. On the other hand, as we have al- ready seen, the nature of that privilege of peerage which the barons were admitted to share hindered the baronial families from claiming any fresh hereditary privilege be- yond the hereditary transmission of the peerage itself.

Such is a general view of the nature and origin of peerage in England, following at greater length the lines already traced out in the article ENGLAND. This view

may now be confirmed by a few of the special facts and The Wit- dates which stand out most conspicuously in that course °Rase- of events which ied to the received doctrine of peerage. ea We assume the House of Lords as the personal continua- jp the tion of the ancient Witenagemét, Mycel Gemét, Magnum House

Concilium, by whatever name we choose to call that im- of Lords.

nobles of other lands. And, though the peer commonly had a great local position, sometimes an almost princely position, it was not as peer that he held it. Whatever might be his local dignity and local rights, they had nothing to do With his peerage ; they were shared in his degree by the smallest lord of a manor. In short, the hereditary dignity

memorial body which, whatever was its constitution, was certainly not representative in the sense of being elective. Alongside of this older body grew up that newer repre- sentative and elective body which became the House of The Commons. We may best place the beginnings of the barons. peerage at the point when we can distinctly see that barons are personally summoned to the one House, while knights find their way into the other only by election. It hardly needs to be explained that the word baron, originally meaning simply man, has in itself nothing to do with peerage or with seats in parliament. Survivals of its earlier and wider meaning may still be traced in the titles of the Barons of the Exchequer and the Barons of the Cinque Ports, and in other uses of the word, more common perhaps in Scotland and Ireland than in England. Baro often translates the older English thegn, and perhaps neither of these names is very easy to define. By the 13th century the name baron had come specially to mean the highest class among the king’s lay tenants-in-chief under the rank of earl ; the baron was the holder of several knight’s fees. In a wider and vaguer sense, the word often takes in both the earls and the spiritual lords. In its narrower sense it means those who were barons and not more tlian barons. As the

practice of personal summons to parliament came in, the barons formed a class of men who might reasonably hope or fear, as the case might be, that the personal summons might come to them; and to many of them it did come. And its coming or not coming established a Greater distinction between two classes of barons. A distinction and between greater and lesser barons is implied in the Great na Charter (c. xiv.), which asserts the right of the “ majores arons. ” . barones” to a personal summons along with the arch- bishops, bishops, abbots, and earls, while the other tenants- in-chief—among them by implication such barons as did not come under the head of majores—were to be summoned generally by the sheriff. And this ordinance must be taken in connexion with the earlier writ of 1215 (Selden, Titles of LTonour, 587; Stubbs, Select Charters, 278, and Const. [ist., i. 568), in which the sheriff is bidden to summon the knights in arms, and the barons without arms, and also four discreet men from each shire, “‘ad loguendum nobiscum de negotiis regni nostri,” that is, in other words, toa parliament. The Charter thus secures to the greater barons, as a separate class, the right of being personally summoned by the king, and not by the sheriff along with other men. It parts them off from other tenants-in-chief and puts them along- side of the prelates and earls. These two documents be- tween them may be taken as giving us at once the first distinct approach to the notion of peerage and the first distinct approach to the notion of representation. The ‘‘majores barones” are not defined ; but the summons snp- plied the means of defining them, or rather it became a means of making them the only barons. As the summons became hereditary, barons came more and more to be looked on simply as a class of men who had seats in the House of Lords. The word came to mean a rank in the peerage, and it was gradually forgotten that there ever had been territorial barons who had no claim to seats in parliament. But it was only by slow degrees that the hereditary ae. summons, or even the necessary summons of every man mons, WHO had once been summoned, became the established rule. Throughout the 13th century the language in which the national assembly is spoken of is wonderfully shifting. Sometimes its constitution seems more popular, sometimes less so. Sometimes its more dignified members are spoken of vaguely under such names as magnates, without dis- tinction into particular classes. But, when particular classes are reckoned up, the barons always form one class among them ; but the number of barons summoned varies greatly.

The greater barons sum- moned person- ally.

Irregu-

PHtinRA GE

summons ; but the majores barones are not as yet a defined

i

The Charter gives the majores barones the right of personal

and undoubted class of men like the bishops and earls, None but the holder of a barony in the territorial sense was likely to be summoned ; but the king still had a wide choice as to whom among the holders of such baronies he would acknowledge as majores barones ; and we find that dissatisfaction was caused by the way in which the king exercised this power. In 1255 there is a remarkable notice in Matthew Paris (v. 520, ed. Luard ; cf. Hallam, Middle Ages, ii. 153) where the “magnates” complain that all of their number had not been summoned according to the Charter, and they therefore decline to grant an aid in the absence of their peers. It is possible that some bishops or earls may, for some personal reason, have been left unsummoned, but the complaint is far more likely to have come from the barons specially so called. Here the word pares is still used in its more general sense, but it is used in a way that might easily lead to its special use. On the other hand, it has been alleged that, by a statute of the later years of Henry III, it was formally ordained that no barons, or even earls, should come to parliament, except those whom the king should specially summon (see Selden, Z%tles of Honour, 589; Hallam, Middle Ages, ii. 142; Stubbs, Const. Hist., ii. 203). The existence of such a statute may be doubted ; but, as far as the barons are concerned, the story fairly expresses the facts of the case. Under First Edward I. an approach, to say the least, is made to the sigusil creation of a definite class of parliamentary barons. Drea Stubbs marks the year 1295 as “the point of time from guppnon which the regularity of the baronial summons is held to involve the creation of an hereditary dignity, and so to distinguish the ancient qualification of barony by tenure from that of barony by writ” (Const. Hist., iii. 437). In another passage (ii. 183) he thus marks the general result of Edward’s reign—

“The hereditary summoning of a large proportion of great vassals was a middle course between the very limited peerage which in France coexisted with an enormous mass of privileged nobility,

and the unmanageable, ever-varying assembly of the whole mass of feudal tenants as prescribed in Magna Carta.”

It may be thought that the hereditary nature of the barony is here put a little too strongly for the days of Edward I. One may certainly doubt whether Edward, when he summoned a baron to parliament, meant positively to pledge himself to summon that baron’s heirs for ever and ever, or even necessarily to summon the baron himself to every future parliament. The facts are the other way ; the summons still for a while remains irregular (see Nicolas, HMistorie Peerage, xxiv., xxv., ed. Courthope ; Lords’ Report, ii. 29, 290). But the perpetual summons, the hereditary summons, gradually became the rule, and that rule may in a certain sense be said to date from 1295. ‘That is, from that time the tendency is to the perpetual summons, to the hereditarysummons ; from that time anything else gradually becomes exceptional (cf. Const. Hist., ii. 203 with iii. 439); things had reached a point when the lawyers were sure before long to lay down the rule that a single summons implied a perpetual and an hereditary summons. It is not too much to fix the reign of Edward I. as the time when the hereditary parliamentary baronage began, without rigidly ruling that the king could not after 1295 lawfully refuse a summons to a man who had been summoned already.

From this time then we may look on the class of pat- oe liamentary barons with succession as beginning and steadily i. growing. And the admission of the barons had a great) ontary ~~ paronag’

1 “Responsum fuit, quod omnes tune temporis non fuerunt juxta tenorem magne carte sux, et ideo sine paribus suis tunc absentibus nullum responsum dare vocati auxilinm concedere aut prestare.”

PEERAGE

‘effect on the position of the older members of the House,

the prelates and earls. It was in fact their admission

(Lords? Report, i. 313; Stubbs, Const. Hist., ti. 389), when Rights of Archbishop Stratford secured the right of the peers (“ piers the peers

\ which gave the English peerage its distinctive character. | de la terre”) of both orders to be tried only by their peers Sed ie A house of earls, bishops, and great. abbots would have | in parliament (“en pleyn parlement et devant les piers ou pte 5 remained an official house. The earldom might pass from | le roi se fait partie”). It is worth noticing that at this

4 father to son; but it would pass as an hereditary office, | point the Lords’ Report stops to comment at some length

j entitling its holder to a seat by virtue of his office, just like | on the special position of the peerage now established. As

those lords who held their seats by virtue of offices which | the committee puts it,

did not pass from father to son. Indeed we must not forget the meaning of the word hereditary in early times. It is applied to whatever goes by succession, whether that succession is ruled by natural generation, by election or nomination, or by any other way. The office and estate of the bishop or abbot is hereditary in this sense; it must pass to some successor, and it is therefore often spoken of as hereditary. Indeed, as long as the earl was appointed, his office was hereditary only in the same sense as that of

whose seats were first purely personal and then purely hereditary in the modern sense, which helped more than

| anything else to do away with the official character of the

earls. And in so doing it helped to widen the gap between the spiritual and temporal lords. The earl and the baron

“The distinction of the peers of the rcalm as a separate class, by privileges confined to themselves personally as peers, and not extending to any others, but throwing at the same time all the rest of the free population into one

class, having all equal rights, is a singularity which marks the constitution of the English govern- ment, and was first apparently clearly established by this statute to which all the other subjects of the realm gave their assent.”

And again they remark (p. 314) that

“the confinement of the privilege of pcerage to those called the peers of the realm, as a personal privilege, giving no privilege or

! the bishop. The only difference was that the office of the | cven legal rank to their families, and moulding all who had not : bishop could not possibly become hereditary in the modern fee however high their birth, into the mass of the 4 , : : ‘ , has been considered an important feature in the consti- | sense, while the office of the earl easily might, and there- | tution of the government of England. It may have prevailed, and q fore did. But, if the earls had continued to have no fellows | probably did in some degree prevail, before; but by this statute 1 in the Upper House except the prelates, the earldom could | 1t was clearly and distinctly recognized.”

4 hardly have sunk into a mere rank. It was the addition | This is true; yet the object of the statute is not to shut i of a class which had no official position—save that which | out the peers’ children from privilege, but to assert the | their seats in parliament conferred upon them—a class | disputed privilege of the peers themselves. The exclusion

of the peers’ children from privilege is a mere inference, though a necessary one. No legislator ever decreed in so many words the exclusion of the children of peers from privilege, because no legislator ever decreed in so many words the privileges of the peers themselves.

By this time we may look on the position of the peerage The posi- as fully established. It is now fully received, as at least tion of the ordinary rule, that the baron who was once summoned the peer- should be always summoned, and that his right to the oo

summons should pass to his representative after him (Lords’ lished.

alike came to be looked on as sitting by some hereditary virtue of descent; their blood was said to be ennobled, while the bishop and the abbot still sat only by what might seem to be in some sort the lower claim of holding an elective office.

It is then to the days of Edward I. that we are to look, not strictly for the creation of peerage in the modern sense, but for the beginning of a system out of which peerage in that sense very naturally grew. In the words of the great . constitutional historian, Edward I. must,

“in the selection of a smaller number to be the constant recipi- ents of a summons, have introduced a constitutional change scarcely inferior to that by which he incorporated the representatives of the commons in the national council; in other words, he created the House of Lords as much as he created the House of Commons.”

That is to say, he did not create the first elements of either, which existed long before, nor did he give either its final shape, which neither took till afterwards; but he established both in such a shape that all later changes may be fairly looked on as merely changes in detail.

The succession of regular parliaments in the established sense of the word thus begins in 1295, and from that time we have a House of Lords consisting of prelates, earls, and barons, of whom the barons afe fast becoming hereditary as well as the earls. But the body so formed is still spoken of by various names (see Lords’ Report, i, 273, 277, 279, 302, 316 —where we find the word nobles—et al.).

itt ise The earliest use of the word peer in anything like its present

sense is found in the Act against the Despensers, 1322 (Lords’ Report, i. 281), where, as Bishop Stubbs says (Const. Hist., ii, 183), “it is used so clumsily as to show that it was in this sense a novelty.” The words are “prelatz, countes, baronnes, et les autres piers de la terre,” and again “nous piers de la terre, countes et barouns.” It comes again in the act of deposition of Richard IJ. (Lords’ Report, i. 349) in the form “pares et proceres regni Anglise, spirit- uales et temporales.” Nothing therefore can be plainer than that the spiritual lords were looked on as peers no less than the temporal.

The point indeed was formally settled at an intermediate time, namely by the Act of 1341

Report, ii. 28). In short the parliamentary position of baron has become successive, a word answering pretty well to hereditary in the older sense. A question might now arise as to the nature of the succession, a question which could not arise as long as the person summoned had no certainty that he would be summoned again. In other words, was it necessarily hereditary in the later sense of that word?

That is to say, the question of peerage by tenure, or rather Peerage the question whether the succession to a peerage might be heal

by tenure, now sprangup. Did the right to the summons, u

and hereby the right to the peerage, go with the territorial barony itself, or did it go according to the line of natural descent from the first baron? There was a good deal to be said for the first view. We cannot doubt that barony by writ arose out of barony by tenure, that is, that the writ of summons was originally sent only to persons who held by barony, and, as the phrase ‘“ majores barones” implies, not to all of them. If then the barony and the natural line of descent of the first baron should be parted from each other, it was by no means unreasonable to argue that the writ, a consequence of the tenure, should go with the actual barony rather than follow the line of natural descent. And the same notion seems implied in the ancient practice of sending writs to the husbands of heiresses, even, by the courtesy of England, after the death of their wives (see Stubbs, Const. Hist., iii. 438 ; LZest. Peerage, AXXVIU.). (On the other hand the natural feeling in favour of direct hereditary succession would tell the other way, especially as soon as the doctrine of the ennobling of the blood had fully come in. It is that doctrine more than anything else which has got rid alike of peerages by tenure, of peerages for life, and of peerages held by the husbands of heiresses. If the peerage could pass by marriage or purchase, the doc- trine of nobility of blood was set aside. Till that doctrine was fully established, there was nothing unreasonable in

A464

either practice. Again, as the hereditary right to the summons became the rule, writs, held to be no less heredi- tary than those issued to the barons by tenure, began, even under Edward I., to be issued to persons who had no baronial tenure at all (see Stubbs, Const. Hist., ii. 204; His- toric Peerage, xxvi.). This practice would of course tell in favour of strict hereditary succession and against succes- sion by tenure. The result has been that hereditary suc- cession became the rule, but that the claim of succession by tenure was brought forward in some particular cases, as the earldom of Arundel and the baronies of Abergavenny, Berkeley, and others. The case of the earldom of Arundel (more truly of Sussex) is discussed at length in the Lords' Report (i. 405 sq.), and it is held (ii, 320) to be the only case in which peerage by tenure has been allowed. Yet nothing can be more contrary to all ancient notions of an earldom than that it should follow the possession of certain lands and buildings, as the castle and honour of Arundel. What is chiefly proved is that by the eleventh year of Henry VI. the ancient notion of an earldom had passed away, and that the earldom had sunk to be a mere rank. The succession to the earldom of Arundel was settled by Act of Parliament in 1627 (Lords' Report, ii. 242), an Act whose preamble seems to acknowledge the fact of the earldom by tenure. But succession by tenure seems as distinctly agreeable to the oldest notion of a barony as it is contrary to the oldest notion of an earldom. The tend- ency of later times has been against it, because it contra- dicts the fancy about "ennobling" of blood; yet those who have at different times claimed a place in the peerage by virtue of baronies by tenure have not been without strong arguments in the way of precedent. The latest claim of the kind, that to the barony of Berkeley, was not formally decided. The facts and arguments will be found at great length in Appendix III. to Sir Harris Nicolas's Report on the Barony of Lisle. His conclusion is against the claim by tenure; yet it certainly seems that, when the castle of Berkeley, the tenure of which was said to carry with it the barony and peerage, was separated from the direct line of succession, as specially when the castle was held by the crown in the 16th century (see pp. 821-327), the heirs were not summoned to parliament, or were summoned as a new creation (see on the other hand Lords' Report, ii. 143). There is no strictly legal decision Order in of the general question ; but an order in council in 1669 council (Lords' Report, ii. 242) declares against barony by tenure, on T68°: regen ven grounds of expediency than of law. It was declared in the case of the barony of Fitzwalter that "barony by

tenure had been discontinued for many ages, and was not then in being, and so not fit to be revived or to admit any pretence of right to succession thereon.” And the Lords’ Committee (p. 241) give their own opinion that “the right of any person to claim to be a lord of parliament, by reason of tenure, either as an earl or as a baron, supposing such a right to have existed at the time of the charter of John, may be considered as abrogated by the change of circumstances, without any distinct law for the purpose.” That is to say, the claim was as legal as any other claim of peerage, resting equally on usage ; but it was inconvenient according to the new doctrine about blood being “ ennobled.” The same age which saw the earls and barons put on e shape of an hereditary peerage was also that which saw the order enlarged by the creation of new classes of peers. The ancient earls of England now saw men placed over their heads bearing the French titles of duke and marquess. Neither title was absolutely new in England ; but both were now used in a new sense. Duke and earl were in truth the same thing ; dua, afterwards supplanted by comes, was the older Latin translation of the English

New classes of th peers.

ealdorman or eorl, and eorl was the English word commonly used to express the dukes as well as the counts of other lands. So the marchio, markgraf, marquis, was known in England in his official character as the lord marcher. But now, first dukes and then marquesses come in as distinct ranks of peerage higher than earl. That the earls of England put up with such an assumption was most likely owing to the fact that the earliest dukes were the king’s own sons and near kinsmen, the first of all being the eldest son of Edward III. He was created duke of Cornwall in 1337, a duke dom to which the eldest son of the reigning sovereign is born. Marquesses began under Richard II. in 1386, when Robert Vere, earl of Oxford, was created marquess of Dub- lin and directly afterwards duke of Ireland (Lords’ Fifth Steport, 78, 79). Lastly, in the next century, the tale of the ranks of the temporal peerage was made up by the in- sertion of another French title, that of viscount, between the earl and the baron. John Beaumont was in 1440 created Viscount Beaumont (Lords Fifth Report, 235). The choice of a

title, as concerned England, was a strange one, since, at least from the Norman Conquest onwards, viscount, wcecomes, had been the everyday French and Latin description of the ancient English sheriff (see Stubbs, Const. Hist., iii. 486, andthe patent of creation in Lords' Report, v. 235, where the new viscount is placed "super omnes barones regni"). Since that time no title conveying the rights of peerage has been devised. The Lords' Committee (i. 470) look on it as doubtful whether such a power abides in the crown, and a decision in the spirit of the Wensleydale decision would most likely rule that such a creation would at least give no right to a seat in the House of Lords. Yet, if the crown be, as lawyers tell us it is, the fountain of honour, it is hard to see why its streams should not flow as readily in one age as in another. If Henry VI. could give his new invention of viscounts seats in parliament with precedence over barons, it is hard to see why James I. might not, if he had chosen, have given his new invention of baronets seats in parliament with precedence over dukes.

lished in the order of duke, marquess, earl, viscount, baron, the wor) But it must be noticed that duke, marquess, and viscount, " are strictly speaking titles in a sense in which baron is not. Baron in truth is very seldom used as a personal deserip- tion (Stubbs, Const. Hist., iii, 440), gxcept in two or three special cases which 'are hard to accofint for, those chiefly of the baronies of Stafford and Greystock (see Lords' Report, i, 261, 394; ii. 185). The baron is commonly described by some of the endless forms of senior, or as chivaler, or sometimes—doubtless if he held that particular dignity—as banneret, To this day, though in familiar speech all ranks of peerage under duke are often confounded under the common description of lord, yet the names marquess, earl, and viscount are all far more commonly heard than the name baron, which is hardly ever used except in the most formal language. As for bannerets, though they seem sometimes to be mentioned along with various ranks of peerage (Lords' Report, i. 328), it does not appear (see Stubbs, Const. Hist., iii. 446) that banneret ever really was a rank of peerage, like the others from baron up to duke. The invention of these new ranks of peerage undoubtedly helped to strengthen the notion of the temporal peerage as an order distinct both from all who are not lords of parliament and from the spiritual lords also. Another novelty also came in along with the dukes and marquesses. The right of the earls was immemorial; the right of the 17 barons had grown up by usage. Edward III.

began to | create earls and, when dukes were invented, dukes also, by –) patent. _

They were commonly created in parliament and * ° ° 3 with becoming ceremonies.

;

Earls were thus first created .

“ons

- ent.

erage

‘ the (rds diritual,

Oxelu- sion

of the “dishops.

enial of

PEE A i

in 1328. This bestowal of an earldom as an hereditary rank is another process from granting an earldom, conceived as an office or even as anestate. Later in the century, in 1387, Richard II. began to create barons also by patent Historic Peerage, p. xlii.), and this form of creation gradu- ally supplanted the ancient peerage by writ. The object of this change seems to have been (see Historie Peerage, p. xxviii.) the better to mark the dignity as hereditary (for the hereditary nature of the barony by writ was after all only a matter of usage or inference), and at the same time to define the line of succession. This, in the baronies by writ, is said to be in the heirs-general of the grantee— words to be understood, as it would seem, of the heirs-general of his body only; in a barony or other peerage conferred by patent the line of succession may take any shape that the crown chooses, the most common limitation being to the heirs-male of the body of the grantee. Very

singular lines of succession have sometimes been chosen (Historic Peerage, xlv.), as specially in the case of the dukedom of Somerset in 1547, in which the line of the eldest son was placed after that of the second. And the manifest right of the crown to name no line of succession at all, that is, to create a life-peerage only, was often exer- cised in the first days of dukes and marquesses. A duke of Exeter was created for life as late as 1416. Perhaps the strangest case of all is the patent of the barony of Lisle in 1444, which may be called the creation by patent of a barony by tenure. The whole story of the Lisle barony has been dealt with by Sir Harris Nicolas in a separate volume (see also Lords' Report, ii. 199 sg. ; Stubbs, Const. LHist., iii. 437); but it is only this patent that concerns us. It seems to grant a barony with a seat in parliament to the grantee John Talbot and his heirs and assigns, being lords of the manor of Kingston Lisle (see the document, the language of which varies in different parts, in the Lords' Report, ii. 199; v. 243). This is certainly strange ; but, if we once grant the royal power to create peerages and to limit their succession at pleasure, it seems necessarily to follow that the crown may exercisé that power in any way that it chooses, whether by limiting it to the grantee personally or giving any kind of remainder that it is thought good.

The temporal peerage being thus fully established on its present ground in the course of the 15th century, we come in the course of the next two centuries to see the effect of the theories under which it had grown up. A series of deductions are gradually made, naturally enough as deductions from the premises; but then the premises can be admitted only by trampling ancient precedents under foot. First of all, we have the denial already spoken of of some of the personal privileges of peerage to the spiritual lords. This was silently brought about in the Tudor times, when Bishop Fisher and Archbishop Cranmer—one might perhaps add Abbot Whiting—were tried by juries in de- fiance of the principle laid down by Archbishop Stratford under Edward III. Against this course no remonstrance seems to have been made; indeed the times were not favourable for remonstrances, least of all for remonstrances made by spiritual persons. The doctrine that the spirit- ual lords were lords of parliament but not peers was estab- lished by a standing order of the House of Lords older than 1625, as it is referred to in the journals of the House in that year. It was then referred to a

committee of privi- leges for further consideration, but no report is recorded (cf. Coke's Institutes, ii. 30).

Presently all the powers both of the spiritual and the temporal lords were for a while extinguished, and those of the spiritual lords by an undoubted legislative act. The Act of 1642, by which the bishops lost their seats In par- liament, stands distinguished, as a real and lawful act of

A465

the legislature, from the process by which so much of the so-called law on the subject grew up through a series of resolutions, dictated mostly, we may venture to say, neither by precedent nor by written law, but by the prejudices and assumptions ofa particular class of men. The exclusion of the bishops by the regular Act of 1642 was followed in 1649 by the less regular exclusion of the temporal lords also. 'The House of Lords was abolished by a vote of the House of Commons only. The essence of peerage was thus taken away, but the peers kept their titles and pre- cedence, and they were allowed to be chosen to seats in the House of Commons. When the old parliamentary con- stitution revived in 1660, the Act of 1649 was naturally treated as null, while the Act of 1642 was of course treated as valid. In 1660 therefore a House of Lords again sat which consisted of temporal lords only. But the bishops were restored to their seats by an Act of the next parlia- ment in 1661, and the lords again ordered a committee 'to consider of an order in the standing orders of this House which mentions the lords the bishops to be only lords of parliament and not peers, whereas several Acts of Parlia- ment mentions them to be peers." Nothing came of the labours of this second committee, and the doctrine which it was to consider has since been held for law. Both the doctrine and the reason for it have raised the indignation, not only of the two great constitutional historians, one of them himself a churchman, but of at least one great legal authority (see Blackstone, book i. c. 12, vol. i. p. 401, ed. Christian ; and contrast Stephen, Vew Commentaries, 11.590, and Kerr's Blackstone, i. 407 ; cf. Hallam, Iftddle Ages, i1. 138; Lords' Report, ii. 323, 339). The attack on the rights of the spiritual lords was carried yet further by the Com- mous in the case of the earl of Derby in 1679, when they objected to their voting on an impeachment even in its pre- liminary stages. Their right to take a

part inall such pro- ceedings up to the question which might involve life or death (a share in which on the part of churchmen would be con- trary to canon law) is asserted by the eleventh article of the Constitutions of Clarendon (Stubbs, Select Charters, 133). The question now raised, which was decided in favour of the bishops, according to the terms of the Constitutions, did not directly touch the question of the peerage of the bishops, but it had an indirect connexion with it. The denial of the bishops' peerage implied that they had no right to be tried as peers in the court of the king in par- liament, as not being, as the phrase goes, '"'of trial by nobility." It might therefore be plausibly argued that they had no right to be judges in that court. The right of the bishops to vote on a bill of attainder, which, on any canonical ground, would seem quite as objectionable as their voting on an impeachment, was never denied, because a bill of attainder is a legislative act, and does not touch the question of peerage. Indeed, we may say that the law is still far from clear on the whole matter. The statute of 1696 (7 and 8 Will. TIL.) for "regulating of Trials in cases of Treason and Misprision of Treason" speaks of "trials of peers" and of "all the peers who have a right to sit and vote in parliament," without distinctly defining whether the word peer is meant to apply to the lords temporal only.

In the same century another step in the development of the theory of peerage was taken by the resolutions of the lords in 1640 and 1678 that a peer could not relin- quish his peerage. This inference also, whatever may be thought of it, though distinctly against earlier precedents, follows (see Lords' Keport, ii. 25, 26, 48) directly from the doctrine of "ennobling of blood."

The next point in the history of the peerage is one which, like the exclusion of the bishops in 1642, was a matter of real legislation, as distinguished from mere

Aboli- tion

of the House of Lords,

Question of the bishops' peerage.

Bishops’

votes on

impeach- ment.

Aliena- tion of peerages for- bidden.

The peers of Scotland.

Peerage Bill of IAS

decisions and resolutions. This was the change in the theory of peerage which followed on the union of England and Scotland in 1707. By the treaty of union the peerage of Scotland was to be represented by sixteen of its number chosen for each parliament by the Scottish peers them- selves. This amounted, as has been already set forth, to the creation of a class of men who are peers as concerns their personal privileges, but who are lords of parliament only in posse and not im esse. The Scottish peers were made incapable of sitting in the House of Commons, and the Scottish peerage was doomed to gradual extinction, as no new peers of Scotland were to be created. And further, by a resolution of the lords in 1711, it was held during the greater part of the last century that a patent of peerage of the United Kingdom granted to a Scottish peer did not give him a seat in parliament. Presently an attempt at legislation with regard to the peerage was made which, if carried, would have altogether changed its character. This was the Peerage Bill of 1719. That bill was not carried, but its proposals are worth notice, not only because they would, if they had become law, have altogether changed the nature of the peerage as a political institution, but also because they illustrate the way in which, like everything else in English constitutional history, the peer- age and everything belonging to it had grown up gradually by force of precedent. The right of the crown to create peers at pleasure, and to entail their peerages on any line of succession that it thought good, had never been disputed, but neither had it ever been the subject of any legislative enactment. The proposed bill, in limiting both powers, would have given them their first being by formal legisla- tion. The

proposal was that the peerage of the United Kingdom should, after a creation of six peers, be confined to its existing number, with an exception in favour of members of the royal family. For the future, with that exception, no peerage could be created, except when one had become extinct. Instead of the sixteen elective peers of Scotland, the king was to bestow hereditary seats on twenty-five members of the Scottish peerage, and the number was to be kept up by a new promotion whenever any of the twenty-five peerages became extinct. It was forcibly remarked at the time that this would place the re- mainder of the Scottish peerage in a condition politically inferior to that of all other British subjects, as they would have been incapable both of sitting in either house of parlia- ment and of choosing those who should sit in either. But the general effect of the bill on the constitution of the country would have been far more important. The crown would have lost one of its chief powers, and the relations between the peers and the rest of the nation would have been altogether changed. They would not have come any nearer to the strict notion of a nobility, for it was not pro- posed to confer direct privilege on any but the peers them- selves. But the bill would have placed both the peers and their families in a wholly new position. They would have become a body into which no one could be raised, except in the occasional case of a peerage becoming extinct. It would have been impossible to move a statesman from the Commons to the Lords at any moment when it might be for the public good that he should be moved. Even the lord chancellor, the speaker of the House of Lords, could not have received a peerage unless one chanced to be extinct at the needful time. It is plain that the peers, if they did not become a nobility, would have become an oli- garchy, a close body, cut off both from the crown and from the mass of the people in a way in which they had never been cut off before.

The next change in the peerage was that which followed the union with Ireland in 1800. The terms of that union, as regarded the peerage, differed a good deal from those of

PHERAGEHE

the union with Scotland. The twenty-eight representative The peers of Ireland are chosen for life, and the other Irish peerso peers are capable of

sitting in the House of Commons for Melani) constituencies in Great Britain ; only by so doing they loge the privileges of peerage (other than mere titles and pre- cedence) so long as they are members of that body. The Trish peerage is not doomed to extinction as well as the Scottish ; one Irish peerage may always be created when- ever three have become extinct, and the Irish peerage is always to be kept up to the number of one hundred, not counting those who hold peerages of the United Kingdom.

The changes with regard to the lords spiritual intro- trisha duced by the union with Ireland, by the disestablishment Englisi) of the Irish Church, and by the increase in the number bishop: of English bishoprics have affected the character of the House of Lords, but not that of the hereditary temporal peerage. By the Act of Union one Irish archbishop and four bishops—afterwards only three—were entitled to seats in rotation, changing, not from parliament to parliament, but from session to session. This arrangement was probably practically more convenient ; but it seems contrary to the nature of a summons, which must surely be a summons for the whole life of a parliament. Each Irish bishop was thus an in posse lord of parliament, like the Scottish and Irish temporal peers, only with the certainty of a seat some time, if he lived long enough. By the Act of Disestablishment in 1869 the Irish bishops lost their seats altogether. And by two Acts of the present reign the English prelates, except the holders of the two archiepiscopal sees and those of London, Durham, and Winchester, have their position completely changed. The number of bishops has been in- creased, but not the number of spiritual lords. The bishop therefore who holds any see but one of those five waits for his summons to parliament till he reaches it by seniority. Till then he too is a lord of parliament in posse.

In our own day too we come, in 1856, to the case of Life. the Wensleydale peerage, which has been already referred peers) to (see May, Constitutional History, i. 291-298). James Parke was by letters-patent created a peer for life Case « only, and a summons to parliament was issued to him accord- Lord ingly. This was a return to the ancient practice of the 14th b and 15th centuries ; but the power does not appear to have = been exercised in later times except in the case of peeresses (see Nicolas, Historic Peerage, xlvi.; May, i. 292). One hardly knows what to make of such creations as those of Lord Hay in 1606 and Lord Reede in 1644, the accounts of which in the

Historic Peerage (xlvi. 243, 394) seem some- what contradictory. But, if the creation of Lord Hay was a real creation of a peer for life, but without the right to a seat in parliament, it was so defined by a clause in the patent itself, which would seem to imply that, without such a clause, the creation would have given a right to a seat in parliament. The right of the crown to create life-peers, though not exercised, was constantly asserted by the best lawyers, and it is admitted even in the Lords' Report (ii. 37; see May, i. 294). Yet in 1856 the House of Lords took upon itself, in defiance of the whole history of their order, to refuse admission to a baron lawfully created, law- fully summoned, merely because the crown had not bound itself, in the 19th century any more than in the 13th or 14th, to summon the representatives of the baron so created for ever and ever. This decision seems to be now accepted as law; yet it is hard to see how, except when they have been taken away by Act of Parliament, any powers which were exercised by Edward I. can be refused to Queen Victoria. In short, the rights of the crown, the reasonand expediency of the case, were all sacrificed to the supersti- i tion about "ennobling of blood." And Sir T. E. May, re- cording the resolution with admiration (i. 296), tells us that "by constitutional usage, having the force of law, the House

ypeal Ordi- ry.

toa seat in parliament." out that the House of Lords contained other members whose seats were not "'hereditary" in the modern sense, and we can hardly think that he used that word in its ancient meaning. The crown yielded to the pretensions of the lords; Lord Wensleydale received a fresh creation by a patent extending to his imaginary heirs, and it is to be presumed that he was thereby "ennobled in blood" to the satisfaction of those with whom he had to sit. While

rds of the question of life-peerage was left in abeyance, the official

peerages referred to at the beginning of this article were created by an act of 1876. These are the Lords of Appeal in Ordinary, paid officers who hold their office, hike other judges, during good behaviour, who are lords of parliament, with a right to a writ of summons to sit and vote so long as they hold office, and who rank for life as barons with such titles as the crown may appoint. In the case therefore of the resignation or removal from office

of a lord of appeal we should have the non-parliamentary baron revived. Whether in such a case he would be entitled to be tried in the king's court in parliament does not appear. Nor does the Act rule whether the lord so created is a peer, either while he is a lord of parliament or after he ceases to be such. The doctrine of "ennobling of blood" would seem to imply that, as his title is not hereditary, he is not a peer. It would follow then that a lord of appeal who has resigned or has been removed, though "entitled to rank as a baron for life," is a baron who is neither a peer nor a lord of parliament.

A peerage, by the decisions of 1640 and 1678 (Lords' Report, ii. 25, 49) cannot be either surrendered to the erown or alienated to any other person. It can be for- feited only by attainder or by Act of Parliament. Of this last process there seems to be only one case, that of George Neville, duke of Bedford, degraded by parliament in the reign of Edward IV., as not being wealthy enough to support his dignity. This of course, like attainder by Act of Parliament, comes under the general principle that parliament may do anything. It is further held (Historec Peerage, \xviii.) that, while an attainder for high treason extinguishes a peerage of any kind, an attainder for felony only extinguishes a peerage by writ, but not a peerage by patent. A peeress in her own right by descent or creation has all the privileges of a peer, except that of sitting in parliament, which is suspended while the peerage is held by a female, but revives when it passes to a male heir. The wife or widow of a peer, not being a peeress in her own right, has also the same privileges ; but she loses them if she marries a commoner. By social usage she keeps her title, but, if charged with treason or felony, she is tried by a jury and not by the lords. Ifa peerage which passes to heirs-general, like the ancient baronies by writ, is held by a man who leaves no son, but more than one daughter, the peerage goes into abeyance ; that is, it is held by no one till the abeyance is terminated. If there comes to be only one person representing the claims of all the sisters, he can claim the termination of the abeyance as a matter ofright. The crown also can terminate it at any moment in favour of any of the persons between whom it is in abeyance, that is, in favour of the representative of any of the sisters. It is by this transmission through females that the ancient baronies have mainly lived on, often overshadowed by higher but more modern titles. Those peers who can show a direct succession in the male line from 1295 are few indeed. By female succession also the titles of these and other ancient baronies have in

most cases got parted from the original surnames of the holders. This seems to

PEE RA GE

of Lords had been for centuries a chamber consisting of hereditary councillors of the crown," and that "the crown could not change its constitution by admitting a life-peer Three pages further on he found

A67 have led to the practice, which of late has been rather the rule than the exception, of creating peers with fancy titles, often very strange ones, sometimes neither their own surnames nor the name of any place with which they have anything todo. Yet, by a survival of the ancient notion of barony, the baron is always created Lord A of B (per- haps more strictly Lord A, Baron of B), though the place named is by no means always his own manor. The earl of course could originally be only the earl of a shire—the name of the shire and of the shire-town being often used indifferently. But, as the order of earls became more numerous, and as the official character of the earldom was quite forgotten, men were made earls of places of all kinds, and in modern times a surname has often been the title of both earls and marquesses. It is needless to say that the titles of marquesses, when territorial, have had no necessary reference to the original meaning of the title, as keeper of amarch. The titles of dukedoms seem always to have been territorial, unless in the singular case of "Duchess Dudley" in the reign of Charles I. Dudley was the lady's surname ; she does not seem to have been in any sense duchess of the town of Dudley. Clarendon always talks of "Duke Hamilton"; but here the surname is taken from a place. Viscounts take their titles both from names and places; but the viscount who has a territorial title is never spoken of as viscount of A, as the duke is always, and the marquess and the earl in language which is at all formal.

Children of peers have a definite precedence and an Position

elaborate system of courtesy titles and epithets which perplexes foreigners and sometimes natives. The eldest son of a peer ranks immediately after peers of the rank next below that of his father ; the younger sons rank after peers of the next degree below that. Thus a duke's eldest gon ranks next after marquesses ; a marquess's eldest son ranks next after earls, and a

duke’s younger son next after eldest sons of marquesses. The precedence of daughters follows the general principle, the principle implied in the doctrine of abeyance, that all daughters rank with the eldest son. Then again the eldest sons of dukes, mar- quesses, and earls bear by courtesy the second title of their fathers, and the eldest sons of the eldest sons of dukes and marquesses bear what may be called the grand- father’s third title. All these, though called by a title of peerage, are, as we have already had need to insist, legally commoners ; but the eldest sons of peers have been not uncommonly summoned to the House of Lords by the title of some barony held by their fathers. Their pre- cedence is in no way affected by the title which they may happen to bear. The eldest son of a duke always ranks next after marquesses, whether his courtesy title, that is the second title of his father, is marquess or baron. The younger sons of dukes and marquesses bear the courtesy title of Lord with the Christian and surname, and, on the principle which regulates the precedence of daughters, the title of Lady extends to the daughters of earls as well as to those of dukes and marquesses. The daughter of a peer married to a commoner keeps her rank ; but, if she marries a peer, she takes the rank of her husband, whether that be higher or lower than the rank which she has by birth. In all these matters the substantial privileges of the peerage and its mere honorary titles and precedence are often at curious cross purposes with one another. All sons of peers are esquires of right. By courtesy all children of peers who do not bear any higher title are entitled to the conventional epithet of “honour- able”; “noble” they are not in any, even conventional, sense. The style formerly was, with perfec correctness, “Hon. A B, Esq.” The “Esq.” is now left out; it is not easy to see why.

of children of peers.

The Twelve Peers of France.

It is curious to compare the peerage of England, and the peerages of Scotland and Ireland formed after its model, with the famous body of the twelve peers of France, from which we cannot doubt that the name pares was transferred to the English assembly of witan, magnates, or proceres, The twelve were the archbishop and duke of Rheims, the bishops and dukes

of Langres and Laon, the bishops and counts of Beauvais, Noyon, and Chalons, the dukes of Bur- gundy, Normandy, and Aquitaine, the counts of Flanders, Toulouse, and Champagne. The list of the spiritual peers, a little startling at first, is easily understood when we take in the circumstances of the French kingdom in the 12th century. The six prelates are those who held of the king of the French as king; the other great churchmen of the Western Kingdom held either of one of the vassal princes (as the archbishop of Rouen did of the duke of the Nor- mans) or of the king as duke, as did among others the bishop of Paris, whom at first sight we might have looked for on the list. The institution of this body is commonly attributed to the age of Philip Augustus, and indeed to that king personally ; and it can hardly be doubted that it had its origin in the romances of Charlemagne. The twelve peers are said to have appeared at Philip's corona- tion, and also to have formed the court by which John, duke of the Normans and king of the English, was deprived of the lands that he held in fief of the French crown. But it is certainly hard to see them all in the character of twelve peers on either occasion, though it is certain that some of them were present at Philip's corona- tion in 1179, and among them the then duke of the Nor- mans and husband of the duchess of Aquitaine, Henry king of the English.!_ Nor does the exact name of pares seem to be given by any contemporary writer to the body by which John is said to have been condemned, though it is so used in the next century (see Preclara Francorum Lacinora, ap. Duchesne, er. Franc. Script., v. 764). But

PEGASUS, a famous horse of Greek fable, was said to have sprung from the trunk of the Gorgon Medusa when her head was cut off by Perseus. Bellerophon caught him as he drank of the spring Peirene on the Acrocorinthus at Corinth, or (according to another version) received him tamed and bridled at the hands of Athene. Mounted on Pegasus, Bellerophon slew the Chimera and overcame the Solymi and the Amazons, but when he tried to fly to heaven on his back the horse threw him and continued his heavenward course. Arrived in heaven, Pegasus served Zeus, fetching for him his thunder and lightning. Hence some have thought that Pegasus is a symbol of the thunder- cloud. In later legend he is the horse of Eos, the Morning. Pindar and later poets represent him as winged. The name is from wyyds, "compact," "stout." The erroneous derivation from 7yy7%, "a spring of water," may have given birth to the legends which

connect Pegasus with water, as that his father was Poseidon, that he was born at the springs of Ocean (like the fabulous Indian horse Uééaihs- ravas, prototype of horses, produced at the churning of Ocean), and that he had the power of ‘making springs gush from the ground by a blow of his hoof. This was said to have been the origin of Hippocrene (Horse-spring), the fountain of the Muses on Mount Helicon, as well as of another spring of the same name at Trcezen. But there are facts that speak for an independent mythological con- nexion between horses and water, e.g., the sacredness of the horse to Poseidon, the epithets Hippios and Equester

1 See Rigordus, De Gestis Philippi Augusti, ap. Duchésne, Hist. Franc. Seript., V.; Will. Arm., 74. 101; Ben. Petrib. 242, ed. Stubbs ; Matthew Paris, ii. 658, ed. Luard; cf. Sismondi, Mistoire des Fran- cats, 1., 863, 489-492,

that there was an acknowledged body of peers of France in the 13th century is shown, if by nothing else, by the speech of Peter bishop of Winchester quoted above. Gradually all the temporal peerages became united with the crown, save only Flanders, which was released from vassalage when the emperor Charles V. was its count. It therefore became need- ful on ceremonial occasions that, while the spiritual peers appeared in person, the temporal peers should be repre- sented by persons who were created peers for the occasion, The later peerage of France, those dukes, counts, and barons The er who were distinguished as peers, dates from the 14th cen- French tury. The duchies so distinguished were at first confined Peerage. to the royal family, and in some sort represented the ancient peerage; but the title of duke and peer was atfter- wards extended to others, among them in 1674 to at least

one prelate, that of Paris, then become an archbishopric.

The counties and baronies distinguished as peerages were

but few, and most of them were reunited to the crown;

they are therefore much less known than the duchies. In

the more modern use of the word, the Chamber of Peers The dates from the charter of Louis XVIII. in 1814. It was a Chamber body of hereditary members created by the crown after the % Peers model of the temporal peerage of England. After the revolu-

tion of 1830 this was changed into a Chamber of Peers for

life, which ‘ceased to exist” at the revolution of 1848.

The fullest account of the origin and growth of the English peer- age will be found in the five volumes of the Reports of the Lords’ Committees towehing the Dignity of a Peer of the Realm (1820-1829). The mass of information brought together is wonderful, and, though the prejudices of the order sometimes peep through, the general treatment of the subject is on the whole fair and highly creditable, especially when we remember that the inquiry was begun before any light had been thrown on the subject by modern research. Besides this, the works of Selden, Hallam, Nicolas, and Stubbs have been, as will have been remarked, constantly referred to throughout the article. But it is sometimes curious to compare the point of view of a professional antiquary like Sir Harris Nicolas with that of the two great constitutional historians. (E. A. F.)

applied to Poseidon and Neptune, the Greek fable of the origin of the first horse (produced by Poseidon striking the ground with his trident), and the custom in Argolis of sacrificing horses to Poseidon by drowning them in a well. (The Illyrians similarly sacrificed horses by drowning.) From his connexion with Hippocrene Pegasus has come to be regarded as the horse of the Muses and hence as a symbol of poetry. But this is a modern attribute of Pegasus, not known to the ancients, and dating only from the Orlando Innamorato of the Italian poet Boiardo.

PEGU, a division of British Burmah, comprising the districts of Rangoon, Hanthawaddy, Tharawadi, and Prome, has an area of 9159 square miles, with a population (in 1881) of 1,162,393. The province of Pegu was annexed by the British after the second Burmese war in 1852-53.

PEcU, an ancient town in the Rangoon district of British Burmah, is situated on the Pegu river, 20 miles west of the Tsit-toung, in 17° 20’ N. lat.

and 96° 30’ E. long. It was founded in 573 a.p., and was for a long time the capital of the Talaing kingdom, overthrown by Aloung-bhura in the middle of the 18th century. Early European travellers describe the city as of great size, strength, and magnificence. Modern Pegu lies close to the river-side, and had a population in 1881 of 5891.

PEHLEVI. See Pannavi.

PEIRCE, Bensamin (1809-1880), mathematician and astronomer, was born at Salem, Massachusetts, 4th April 1809. Graduating at Harvard College in 1829, he be- came mathematical tutor there in 1831 and professor in 1833. He had already assisted Bowditch in his transla- tion of the Mécanique Céleste, and now produced a series of mathematical text-books characterized by the brevity

‘following the example set him by preceding

the eyes of the succeeding sovereign Yung- ¥

and terseness which marks all his work and made his teaching unattractive to inapt pupils. To young men of real talent, on the contrary, his teaching and warm personal interest in their work were of the greatest advantage, and he holds a most honourable place in the development of American mathematics. After Bowditch’s death in 1838 Peirce stood at the head of American mathematicians ; but the first work that gave him a wider fame was his com- putation of the general perturbations of Uranus and Nep- tune (Proc. Amer. Acad., 1848). In 1849 he became con- sulting astronomer to the American Nautical Almanac, and for this work he prepared new tables of the moon (1852). Another piece of important astronomical work was his discussion of the equilibrium of Saturn’s ring, in which he showed that a fluid ring was necessarily unstable as well as a solid one. From 1867 to 1874 he was super- intendent of the coast survey; in 1857 he published his largest and most characteristic work, the System of Ana- lytical Mechanics. He himself, however, seems to have thought most of his Linear Associative Algebra (lithographed privately in a few copies, 1870 ; reprinted in the American Journ. of Math. 1882). His death took place at Cam- bridge, United States, on 6th October 1880.

PEKING or Pexin, the capital of the Chinese empire, is situated in 39° 54’ 36” N. lat. and 116° 27’ E. long, and stands on the northern extremity of the great al- luvial delta which extends southwards from its walls for 700 miles. For the last nine centuries Peking, under vari- ous names and under the dominion of successive dynasties, has, with some short intervals, remained an imperial city. Its situation near the north- “s ern frontier recommended it to the Tatar invaders ag a convenient centre for their power, and its peculiarly fortunate position as regards the supernatural terrestrial influ- ences pertaining to it has inclined succeeding Chinese monarchs to accept it as the seat of their courts. In 986 it was taken by an in- vading force of Khitan Tatars, who adopted it as their headquarters and named it Nan- king, or the “southern capital.” During the early part of the 12th century the Chinese recaptured it and reduced it from the rank of a metropolis to that of a provincial city of the first grade, and called it Yen-shan Foo. In 1151 it fell into the hands of the Kin Tatars, who made it a royal residence under the name of Chung-tu, or “central capital.” Less than a century later it became the prize of Jenghiz Khan, who, having his main in- terests centred on the Mongolian steppes, declined to move his court southwards. To

During the periods above mentioned the extent and boundaries of the city varied considerably. Under the Kin dynasty the walls extended to the south- west of the Tatar portion of the present city, and the foundations of the northern ramparts of the Khan-balik of Kublai Khan are still to be traced at a distance of about 2 miles in a northerly direction beyond the existing walls. The modern city consists of two parts, the nw: ch’ing, or inner city, commonly known to foreigners as the “Tatar city,” and the wat ching, or outer city, known in the same way as the “‘ Chinese city.” These names are somewhat mislead- ing, as the inner city is not enclosed within the outer city, but adjoins its northern wall, which, being longer than the nut ch’ing is wide, outflanks it considerably at both ends, as may be seen in the accompanying plan. The outer walls of the double city contain an area of about 25 square miles, and measure 30 miles in circumference. Unlike the walls of most Chinese cities, those of Peking are kept in perfect order.

Those of the Tatar portion, which is the oldest part of the city, are 50 feet high, with a width of 60 feet at the base and 40 feet at the top, while those of the Chinese city, which were built by the emperor Kea-tsing in 1543, measure 30 feet in height, and have a width of 25 feet at the base and 15 feet at the top. The terre-plein is well and smoothly paved, and is defended by a crenellated parapet. The outer faces of the walls are strengthened by square buttresses built out at intervals of 60 yards, and on

Altar oN

———

=

Anuing || Gate in }) Gell Tower Oo Tower Rog: chit

his great successor Kublai Khan (1280-1294), however, the establishment of a capital within the frontiers of China became a necessity, and,

sovereigns, he made choice of Yenking, as he rechristened the city. With his usual magni- ficence, he rebuilt the town, which became J known in Chinese as Ta-tu, or “great capi- f tal,” and in Mongolian as Khanbalik, or “city | of the khan.” During the reign of the first (4 emperor of the dynasty (1368-1399) which jj succeeded that founded by Jenghiz Khan the)\4 court resided at the modern Nanking, but in | €

lo (1403-1425) the political advantages of a northern residence appeared so obvious that he transferred his court to Peking (i.¢., the northern capital), which has ever since been the seat of government,

oy, =F = —F =, . a ~ em IT

Plan of Peking. (Scale, one mile and a half to an inch.)

the summits of these stand the guard-houses for the troops on duty. Each of the sixteen gates of the city

is protected by a semicircular enceinte, and is surmounted with a high tower built in galleries and provided with countless loopholes.

The population of Peking is reckoned to be about 1,000,000, a number which is out of all proportion to the immense area enclosed within its walls. This disparity is partly accounted for by the facts that large spaces, notably in the Chinese city, are not built over, and that the grounds surrounding the imperial palace, private residences, and temples are very extensive. Viewed from the walls Peking looks like a city of gardens. Few crowded neigh- bourhoods are visible, and the characteristic features of the scene which meets the eye are the upturned roofs of temples, palaces, and mansions, gay with blue, green, and yellow glazed tiles, glittering among the groves of trees with which the city abounds. Enclosed within the Tatar city is the Hwang ch'ing, or "Imperial city," which in its turn encloses the Z'sze-hin ching, or " Purple For- bidden city," in which stands the emperor's palace. On the north of the Tsze-kin ch'ing, and separated from it by a moat, is an artificial mound known as the King shan, or "Prospect Hill." This mound, which forms a prominent object in the view over the city, is about 150 feet high, and is topped with five summits, on each of which stands atemple. It is encircled by a wall measuring upwards of a mile in circumference, and is prettily planted with trees, on one of which the last emperor of the Ming dynasty (1644), finding escape from the Manchu invaders impos- sible, hanged himself. On the west of Prospect Hill is the Se yuen, or '' Western Park," which forms part of the palace grounds. This park is tastefully laid out, and is traversed by a lake, which is mainly noticeable from the remarkably handsome marble bridge which crosses it from east to west. Directly northwards from Prospect Hill stand the residence of the Titu, or '"' governor of the city," and the Bell and the Drum Towers, both of which have attained celebrity from the nature of their contents,—the first from the huge bell which hangs in it, and the second from the appliances it contains for marking the time. The bell is one of five which the emperor Yung-lo ordered to be cast. In common with the others, it weighs 120,000 tb, is 14 feet high, 34 feet in circumference at the rim, and is 9 inches thick. It is struck by a wooden beam swung on the outside, and only at the changes of the night- watches, when its deep tone may be heard in all parts of the city. In the Drum Tower incense-sticks, specially prepared by the Astronomical Board, are kept burning to niark the passage of time, in which important

duty their accuracy is checked by a clepsydra. Another of Yung-lo's bells is hung in a Buddhist temple outside the north-west angle of the city wall, and is covered both on the inside and outside with the Chinese texts of the Lankdvatdra Sutra, and the Saddharma pundarika Sitra.

Turning southwards we again come to the Purple For- bidden city, the central portion of which forms the imperial palace, where, in halls which for the magnificence of their proportions and barbaric splendour are probably not to be surpassed anywhere, the Son of Heaven holds his court, gives audience to ambassadors from tributary states, and receives the congratulations of his ministers at the annual seasons of rejoicing. In the eastern and western portions of this city are situated the residences of the highest dignitarics of the empire; while beyond its confines on the south stand the offices of the six official boards which direct the affairs of the eighteen provinces. It was in the "yamun" of one of these boards—the Le Pu or board of rites—that Lord Elgin signed the treaty at the conclusion of the war in 1860,—an event which derives especial interest from the fact of its having been the first occasion on which a European plenipoten-

tiary ever entered Peking accompanied by all the pomp

and circumstance of his rank.

Outside the Purple Forbidden city the most noteworthy building is the Temple of Heaven, which stands in the outer or Chinese city. Here at early morn on the 22d of December the emperor offers sacrifice on an open altar to Shang-ti, and at periods of drought or famine presents prayers for relief to the same supreme deity. The altar at which these solemn rites are performed "consists of a triple circular marble terrace, 210 feet wide at the base, 150 in the middle, and 90 at the top." The uppermost surface is paved with blocks of the same material forming nine concentric circles, the innermost consisting of nine blocks, and that on the outside of. eighty-one blocks. On the central stone, which is a perfect circle, the emperor kneels, 'surrounded first by the circles of the terraces and their enclosing walls, and then by the circle of the horizon." In the same temple stands the altar of prayer for good harvests, which is surmounted by a triple-roofed circular

structure 99 feet in height. The tiles of these roofs are of glazed porcelain of the most exquisite deep- blue colour, and add a conspicuous element of splendour to the shrine, which even without their aid would inspire admiration by the grace of the design and the rare beauty of the materials employed in its construction.

The other powers of nature have shrines dedicated to them at the altar to Earth on the north of the city, the altars to the Sun and Moon outside the north-eastern and north-western angles respectively of the Chinese city, and the altar of Agriculture inside the south gate of the Chinese city. Next to these in religious importance comes the Confucian temple, known as the Awo-tsze-keen. Here there is no splendour ; everything is quite plain ; and one hall contains all that is sacred in the building. There the tablets of ‘‘the soul of the most holy ancestral teacher, Confucius,” and of his ten principal disciples stand as objects of worship for their countless followers. In one courtyard of this temple are deposited the celebrated ten stone drums which bear poetical inscriptions commemor- ative of the hunting expeditions of King Suen (827-781 B.C.), in whose reign they are believed, though erroneously, to have been cut; and in another stands a series of stone tablets on which are inscribed the names of all those who have obtained the highest literary degree of Z’sin-sze for the last five centuries.

In the south-eastern portion of the Tatar city is the observatory, which was built by order of Kublai Khan in 1296. During the period of the Jesuit ascendency in the reign of K’ang-he (1661-1721), the superintendence of this institution was confided to Roman Catholic missionaries, under whose guidance the bronze instruments now existing were constructed. Unlike the thoroughfares in the cities of central and southern China, the streets of Peking are wide and open, but, being unpaved and the soil being light and alluvial, they easily become almost impassable from mud in wet weather and ankle-deep in dust in dry weather. ° The inhabitants of Peking being consumers only, and in no way producers, the trade of the city is very small, and the article of the European treaties which prohibits foreign merchants from trading within the walls is, therefore, to be regretted only as an instance of the narrow-mindedness of the Chinese Government.

E. Bretschneider, Archeological and Historical Researches on Peking and its Environs (1876); 8. Wells Williams, The Aliddle Kingdom (1884); Edkins, Peking (1870). (R. K. D.)

PELAGIA, Sr. An Antiochene saint of this name, a virgin of fifteen years, who chose death by a leap from the housetop rather than dishonour, is mentioned by Ambrose (De Virg., iii. 7, 33 sq., Ep. xxxvii. ad Simpl.), and is the subject of two sermons by Chrysostom. More famous is

the story of another Pelagia of Antioch, a famous ballet- girl of the town, who, in the full flower of her beauty and guilty sovereignty over the youth of the city, was suddenly converted by the influence of the holy bishop Nonnus, whom she had seen and heard for a moment as he preached in front of a church which she happened to pass with her gay train of attendants and admirers. She sought out Nonnus, and her tears of genuine penitence overcame his canonical scruples ; she was baptized, and, disguising her- self in male attire and in the dress of a penitent, she retired to the grotto on the Mount of Olives which still bears her name, and there died after three years of strict penance. This story, which seems to combine with the name of the older Pelagia some traits from an actual history referred to by Chrysostom (om. lxvii. in Mat. § 3), is preserved in a narrative bearing the fictitious name of John, a deacon of the equally fictitious Nonnus, which by internal evidence is assigned by Usener to the second quarter of the 5th century. Usener, however, has shown that the very popular legend has a much older basis, and that, in common with a number of other female saints, including Marina or Marearira (q.v.), and Pelagia of Tarsus, whose story is closely akin to the Marina legend, Pelagia is only a Christianized travesty of an old local form of Aphrodite. The name of Marina or Pelagia is an epithet of Aphrodite ; the parallel figure of Anthusa in Seleucia of Cilicia bears a name to be explained by the Anthera of Cnossus; the corresponding saint at Tyre is Porphyria, corresponding to Venus Purpurissa, The contradictory attributes of a pure virgin and a penitent are explicable in legends proper to the Syrian coast, where Astarte-Aphrodite had corre- spondingly opposite forms and character; the masculine garb of the converted Pelagia is to be explained from the

hermaphrodite Aphroditus-Aphrodite of western Asia, the Cyprian Amathusia.

See Usener, Legenden der heiligen Pelagia, Bonn, 1879, and Gildemeister's edition of the Syriac version of the legend of Pelagia of Antioch, Bonn Univ. Progr. of 22d March 1879.

PELAGIUS. Of the origin of Pelagius almost nothing is known. The name is supposed to be a Grecized form of the Cymric Jforgan (muir, sea; gin, begotten). His contemporaries understood that he was of British birth, and gave him the distinctive appellation Brito. a large ponderous person, heavy both in body and mind, if we are to believe Jerome (‘“‘stolidissimus et Scotorum pultibus preegravatus”). Born during the second half of the 4th century, he was influenced by the monastic enthu- siasm which had been kindled in Gaul by Athanasius (336), and which, through the energy of Martin of Tours (361), rapidly communicated itself to the Britons and Scots. For, though Pelagius remained a layman throughout his life, and though he never appears in any strict connexion with a ccenobitical fraternity, he yet adhered to monastic disci- pline (“veluti monachus”), and distinguished himself by his purity of life and exceptional sanctity (“egregie Chris- tianus”). He seems to have been one of the earliest, if not the very earliest, of that remarkable series of men who issued from the monasteries of Scotland and Ireland and carried back to the Continent in a purified form the religion they had received from it. Coming to Rome in the be- ginning of the 5th century (his earliest known writing is of date 405), he found a scandalously low tone of morality prevalent. From his extant Commentaries on the Epistles of St Paul it may be gathered that men were encouraged to rely on a profession of the Christian creed, and on the magical efficacy of the sacraments, while they entirely neglected to cultivate a Christian character. This state of things Pelagius denounced. But his remonstrances were met by the plea of human weakness (‘‘durum est, arduum est, non possumus, homines sumus, fragili carne circum-

He was

dati”). Toremove this plea by exhibiting the actual powers of human nature became his first object. It seemed to him that the Augustinian doctrine of total depravity and of the consequent bondage of the will both cut the sinew of all human effort and threw upon God the blame which really belonged to man. Unless men had the power to do God’s will, it was vain for Him to declare it. And, if men believed they were incapable of virtue, they would make no effort to reach it. His favourite maxim was, “If I ought, I can.” Accordingly, he expressed unmeasured disapproval when he heard a bishop at Rome quoting with approbation the characteristic words of Augustine: ‘Give what Thou commandest, and command what Thou wilt.”

The views of Pelagius did not originate in a conscious reaction against the influence of the Augustinian theology, although each of these systems was developed into its ultimate form by the opposition of the other. Neither must too much weight be allowed to the circumstance that Pelagius was a monk, for he was unquestionably alive to the delusive character of much that passed for monkish sanctity. Yet possibly his monastic training may have led him to look more at conduct than at character, and to believe that holiness could be arrived at by rigour of dis- cipline. This view of things suited his natural tempera- ment, which was essentially matter-of-fact and somewhat shallow. Judging from the general style of his writings, his religious development had been equable and peaceful, not marked by the prolonged mental conflict, the spiritual turmoil, the hand-to-hand wrestling with God, the abrupt transitions, which characterized the experience of his great opponent. With no great depth of mind, he saw very clearly the thing before him, and many of his practical counsels are marked by sagacity, and are expressed with the succinctness of a proverb (‘‘corpus non frangendum, sed regendum est”), His interests were primarily ethical ; hence his insistence on the freedom of the will and his limitation of the action of divine grace.

The peculiar tenets of Pelagius, though indicated in the commentaries which he published at Rome previous to 409, might not so speedily have attracted attention had they not been adopted by Ceelestius, a much younger and bolder man than his teacher. Ccelestius had been trained as a lawyer, but abandoned his profession for an ascetic life. When Rome was sacked by the Goths (410) the two friends crossed to Africa. There Pelagius once or

twice met with Augustine, but very shortly sailed for Palestine, where he justly expected his opinions would be more cordially received. Ccelestius remained in Carthage with the view of receiving ordination. But Aurelius, bishop of Carthage, being warned against him, summoned a synod, at which Paulinus, a deacon of Milan, charged Ceelestius with holding the following six errors :—(1) that Adam would have died even if he had not sinned; (2) that the sin of Adam injured himself alone, not the human race ; (3) that new-born children are in the same condition which Adam was before the fall; (4) that the whole human race does not die because of Adam's death or sin, nor will the race rise again because of the resurrection of Christ ; (5) that the law gives entrance to heaven as well as the gospel; (6) that even before the coming of Christ there were men who were entirely without sin. To these propositions a 7th is sometimes added, " that infants, though unbaptized, have eternal life," a corollary from the third. Ccelestius did not deny that he held these opinions, but he maintained that they were open questions, on which the church had never pronounced. The synod, notwithstanding, condemned and excommunicated him. Ceelestius, after a futile appeal to Rome, repaired to Ephesus, and there received ordination.

In Palestine Pelagius lived unmolested and revered,

until in 415 Orosius, a Spanish priest, came from August- ine to warn Jerome against him. 'The result was that in June of that year Pelagius was cited before John, bishop of Jerusalem, and charged with holding that man may be without sin, if only he desires it. This prosecution broke down, and in December of the same year Pelagius was summoned before a synod of fourteen bishops at Diospolis (Lydda). The prosecutors on this occasion were two Gallican bishops, Heros of Arles and Lazarus of Aix, but on account of the illness of one of them neither could appear. The proceedings, being conducted in various lan- guages and by means of interpreters, lacked certainty, and justified Jerome's application to the synod of the epithet "miserable." But there is no doubt that Pelagius repu- diated the assertion of Ccelestius, that "the divine grace and help is not granted to individual acts, but consists in free will, and in the giving of the law and instruction." At the same time he affirmed that a man is able, if he likes, to live without sin and

keep the commandments of God, inasmuch as God gives him this ability. The synod was satisfied with these statements, and pronounced Pelagius to be in agreement with Catholic teaching. Pelagius natur- ally plumed himself on his acquittal, and provoked August- ine to give a detailed account of the synod, in which he shows that the language used by Pelagius was ambiguous, but that, being interpreted by his previous written state- ments, it involved a denial of what the church understood by grace and by man's dependence on it. The North- African church as a whole resented the decisions of Dios- polis, and sent up from their synods of Carthage and Mileve (416) an appeal to Innocent, bishop of Rome, who decided the question in favour of the African synods on "the broad, popular, and unanswerable ground that all Christian devotion implies the assistance of divine grace, that it is admitted in every response of the service, in every act of worship." And, though his successor Zosimus wavered for a time, influenced partly by his Greek training, which led him to consider the points in dispute as idle, and partly by the Confession of Faith which Pelagius had addressed to the see of Rome, he at length fell in with what he saw to be the general mind of both the ecclesiastical and the civil powers. For, simultaneously with the largely attended African synod which finally condemned Pelagian- ism in the West, an imperial edict was issued at Ravenna on 30th April 418, peremptorily determining the theological question and enacting that not only Pelagius and Ceelestius but all who accept their opinions shall suffer confiscation of goods and irrevocable banishment. Thus prompted, Zosimus drew up a circular inviting all the bishops of Christendom to subscribe a condemnation of Pelagian opinions. To this document signature was refused by nineteen Italian bishops, among whom was Julian of Ec- lanum (Apulia), a man of good birth, approved sanctity, and great capacity, who now became the recognized leader of the movement. But not even his acuteness and zeal could redeem a cause which was rendered hopeless when the Eastern Church (Ephesus, 431) confirmed the decision of the West.

Pelagianism.

The system of Pelagius is a consistent whole, each part involving the existence of every other. Starting from the idea that "ability limits obligation," and resolved that men should feel their responsi- bility, he

insisted that man is able to do all that God commands, and that there is, and can be, no sin wherc the will is not absolutely free,—able to ehoose good or evil. The favourite Pelagian formula, ‘Si necessitatis est, peecatum non est; si voluntatis, vitari potest,” has an appearance of finality which imposed on superficial minds. Ihe theory of the will involved in this fundamental axiom of Pelagianism is that which is commonly known as the “liberty of indifference,” or ‘‘power of contrary choice,”—a theory which affirms the freedom of the will, not in the sense that the individual is self- determined, but in the sense that in each volition and at each

moment of life, no matter what the previous career ~~of the indi~~ vidual has been, the will is in equipoisc, able to choose good or evil. We are born characterless (non pleni), and with no bias towards good or evil (ut sine virtute, ita et sine vitio). It follows that we are uninjured by the sin of Adam, save in so far as the evil example of our predecessors misleads and influences us (non propagine sed exemplo). There is, in fact, no such thing as original sin, sin being a thing of will and not of nature ; for if it could be of nature our sin would be chargeable on God the creator. This will, capable of good as of evil, being the natural endowment of man, is found in the heathen as well as in the Christian, and the heathen may therefore perfectly keep such law as they know. But, if all men have this natural ability to do and to be all that is required for perfect righteousness, what becomes of grace, of the aid of the Holy Spirit, and, in a word, of Christianity? Pelagius vacillates considerably in his use of the word “grace.” Sometimes he makes it equivalent to natural endowment. Indeed onc of his most careful statements is to this effect: “We distinguish three things—the ability, the will, the act (posse, velle, esse). The ability is in nature, and must be referred to God, who has bestowed this on His creature ; the other two, the will and the act, must be referred to man, because they flow from the fountain of free will” (Aug., De Gr. Christi, c. 4). But at other times he admits a much wider range to grace, so as to make Augustine doubt whether his meaning is not, after all, orthodox. But, when he speaks of grace “sanctifying,” “assisting,” and so forth, it is only that man may “more easily’ accomplish what he could with more difficulty accomplish without grace. A decisive passage occurs in the letter he’ sent to the sce of Rome

along with his Confessio Fidei: ‘‘ We main- tain that free will cxists generally in all mankind, in Christians, Jews, and Gentiles ; they have all equally received it by nature, but in Christians only is it assisted by grace. In others this good of their original creation is naked and unarmed. They shall be judged and condemned because, though possessed of free will, by which they might come to the faith and merit the grace of God, they make an ill use of their freedom; while Christians shall be rewarded because, by using their frce will aright, they merit the grace of the Lord and keep His commandments” (db., c. 38, 34). Pelagius allowed to grace everything but the initial determining movement towards salvation. He ascribed to the unassisted human will power to accept and use the proffered salvation of Christ. It was at this point his departure from the Catholic creed could be made apparent: Pelagius maintains, expressly and by implication, that it is the human will which takes the initiative, and is the determining factor in the salvation of the individual; while the church maintains that it is the divine will that takes the initiative by renewing and enabling the human will to accept and use the aid or grace offered.

Semipelagianism.

It was easy for Augustine to show that this was an ‘‘impia opinio” ; it was easy for him to expose the defective character of a theory of the will which implied that God was not holy because He is necessarily holy ; it was easy for him to show that the positions of Pelagius were anti-Scriptural (see AUGUSTINE) ; but, though his arguinents prevailed, they did not wholly convince, and the rise of Semipelagianism—an attempt to hold a middle course between the harshness of Augustinianism and the obvious errors of Pelagianism —is full of significance. This earnest and conciliatory movement discovered itself simultancously in North Africa and in southern Gaul. Inthe former ehurch, which naturally desired to adhere to the views of its own great theologian, the monks of Adrumetum found themselves either sunk to the verge of despair or provoked to licentiousness by his predestinarian teaching. When this was reported to Augustine he wrote two elaborate treatises to show that when God ordains the end He also ordains the means, and if any man is ordained to life eternal he is thereby ordaincd to holiness and zealous effort. But meanwhile some of the monks themselves had struck out a via media which ascribed to God sovereign

grace and yet left intact man's responsibility. A similar scheme was adopted by Cassian of Marseilles (hence Semipelagians are often spoken of as Afassilians), and was afterwards ably advocated by Vincent of Lerins and Faustus of Rhegium. These writers, in opposition to Pelagius, maintained that man was damaged by the fall, and seemed indeed disposed to purchase a certificate of ortho- doxy by the abusive epithets they heaped upon Pelagians (rane, musce moriture, &c.). The differentia of Semipelagianism is the tenet that in regeneration, and all that results from it, the divine and the human will are co-operating (synergistic) coefficient factors. After finding considerable acccptance, this theory was ultimately condemned, because it retained the root-principle of Pelagianism,— that man has some ability to will good and that the beginning of salvation may be with mau. The councils of Orange and Valence (529), however, which condemned Semipelagianism, did so with the significant restriction that predestination to evil was not to be taught,—a restrietion so agreeable to the general feeling of the church that, three centuries after, Gottschalk was sentenced to be

Par ies bw Ss

degraded from the priesthood, scourged, and imprisoned for teaching reprobation. The questions raised by Pelagius continually recur, put, without tracing the strife as sustained by Thomists and Jansenists on the one side and the Jesuits and Arminians on the other, this article can only indicate the general bearing of the con- troversy on society and the church.

The anthropology of Pelagius was essentially naturalistic. It threatened to supersede grace by nature, to deny all immediate divine influence, and so to make Christianity practically useless. Pelagius himself did not carry his rationalism through to its issues ; but the logical consequence of his systein was, as Augustine

perceived, the denial of the atonement and other central truths of

revealed religion. And, while the Pelagians never existed as a sect separate from the church catholic, yet wherever rationalism has infected any part of the church there Pelagianism has sooner or later appeared ; and the term "' Pelagian" has been continued to denote views whieh minimize the effects of

the fall and unduly magnify man's natural ability. These views and tendencies have appeared in theologies which are not in other respects rationalistic, as, ¢.g., in Arminianism ; and their presence in such theologies is explained by the desire to remove everything which might seem to discourage human effort.

It is not easy to determine how far the vices which ate so deeply into the life of the church of the Middle Ages were due to the sharpness with which some of the severer features of the Augustin- ian theology were defined during the Pelagian controversy. The pernicious belief in the magical efficacy of the sacraments and the consequent defective ethical power of religion, the superstitious eagerness to accept the church's creed without examining or really believing it, the falsity and cruelty engendered and propagated by the idea that in the church's cause all weapons were justifiable, these vices were undoubtedly due to the belief that the visible church was the sole divinely-appointed repository of grace. And the sharply-accentuated tone in which Augustinianism affirmed ~~. man's inability quickened the craving for that grace or direct agency of God upon the soul which the church declared to be need~~ ful and administered through her divinely-appointed persons and sacraments, and thus brought a decided impulse to the development of the sacerdotal system.

Again, although it may fairly be doubted whether, as Baur sup- poses, Augustine was permanently tainted with the Maniehan notion of the inherent evil of matter, it can scarcely be questioned that his views on marriage as elicited by the Pelagian contro- versy gave a considerable impulse to the already prevalent idea of the superiority of virginity. When the Pelagians declared that Augustine's theory of original sin discredited marriage by the impli- cation that even the children of the regenerate were born in sin, he could only reply (De Nuptiis et Concupiscentia) that marriage now cannot partake of the spotless purity of the marriage of unfallen man, and that, though what is evil in concupiscence is made a good use of in marriage, it is still a thing to be ashamed of, —not only with the shame of natural modesty (which he does not take into aceount) but with the shame of guilt. So that, even although he is careful to point out the advantages of marriage, an indelible stigma is still left even on the lawful procreation of children.

The remark of Milman, that ‘‘all established religions subside into Pelagianism, or at least semi-Pelagianism,” is unexpected, but the converse remark, that ‘‘no Pelagian ever has or ever will work a religious revolution,” may be easily substantiated. It has indeed become a commonplace of historical science that in order to do or to endure great things men must believe in one form or other of predestination. They must feel confident that they are made use of by God to accomplish things that to Him seem worthy, and. that until these be accomplished no earthly power can defeat or harm them. They must feel that their will is embraced in the divine and empowered by it. And it is the consciousness of their own inipotence that leads men to yield themselves as instruments of the divine power. Pelagianism is the creed of quiet times and commonplace people; Augustinianism is the inevitable faith of periods that are dangerous and eventful, and in which men must exhibit some heroism.

Of the writings of Pelagius there have been preserved to us in the works of Jerome (5th vol. of Martianay’s ed., and 11th vol. of Vallarsi’s ed.) :—(1) Com- mentarii in Epistolas Pauli; (2) Epistola ad Demetriadem (also published sepa- rately by Semler, Halle, 1775); (3) Libellus Fidei. But in Augustine’s various Writings against Pelagianism (in the 10th vol., Bened. ed.) many passages are cited from the writings of Pelagius ; and in the appendix of the same volume a valuable collection of documents connected with the controversy will be found. In the ordinary histories of the chureh other authorities are mentioned, and reference need here be made only to Wiggers, Versuch. . . . des Augustinismus und Pelag. (Hamburg, 1833; translated by Emerson, Andover, 1840); Worter, Der Pelagianismus (2d ed., Freiburg, 1874); Guizot, Histoire de la Civilisation en

France, 5 legon); Mozley, Augustinian Doctrine of Predestination (London, 1855); and Cunningham, Historical Theology (Edin., 1863). Gi. D))

_PELAGIUS LI. pope from 555 to 560, was a Roman by birth, and first appears in history at Constantinople in the rank of deacon, and as apocrisiarius of Pope Silverius, whose overthrow in favour of Vigilius his intrigues pro-

moted. Vigilius continued him in his diplomatic appoint- ment, and he was sent by the emperor Justinian in 542 to Antioch on ecclesiastical business ; he afterwards took part in the synod at Gaza which deposed Paul of Alex- andria. In his official position he had amassed some wealth, which on his return to Rome he so employed among the poor as to secure for himself great popularity ; and, when Vigilius was summoned to Byzantium in 544, Pelagius, now archdeacon, was left behind as his vicar, and by his tact in dealing with Totila, the Gothic invader, succeeded in saving the citizens from murder and outrage. He appears subsequently to have followed his master to Constantinople, and there to have taken part in the Three Chapters controversy ; in 553, at all events, he signed the "constitutum" of Vigilius in favour of these, and for refusing, along with him, to accept the decrees of the fifth general council (the 2d of Constantinople, 553) shared his sentence of exile. Like Vigilius, he afterwards, how- ever, condemned the chapters, and accordingly, when the citizens of Rome, through the mediation of Narses, begged for the restoration of the pope and his clergy, both were ~ recalled from banishment. 'The emperor now asked the Roman representatives whom they should prefer—Vigilius or Pelagius—and it may safely be presumed that their reply, to the effect that they would not choose the latter as long as the former was alive, was hardly such as Justinian had expected or wished. Both set out for Rome, but Vigilius died mysteriously on the way at Syracuse. Pelagius, as the nominee of Justinian, at once succeeded on his arrival in Rome, but most of the clergy, suspecting his orthodoxy, and believing him to have had some share in the unlooked- for removal of his predecessor, shunned his fellowship, and only two bishops and one presbyter could be got to take part in his ordination to the pontificate. He enjoyed, however, the support of Narses, and, after he had publicly purged himself of the charge of complicity in Vigilius's death by solemn oath in the church of St Peter, he met with toleration, at least so far as his own inmediate diocese was concerned, the populace remembering his former charities and his success in dealing with Totila. The rest of the Western bishops, however, still held aloof

'from the man who, by condemning the Three Chapters,

had put a slight, as they thought, upon the council of Chaleedon; and the episcopate of Tuscany caused his name to be removed from the diptychs.

This elicited from him a circular, in which he asserted his loyalty to the four general councils, and declared that in their action against the holy see the hostile bishops had been guilty of schism. The bishops of Liguria and Aimilia, headed by the archbishop of Milan, and those of Istria and Venice, headed by Paulinus of Aquileia, also withheld their fellow- ship from one who had taken part in the council of Con- stantinople ; but Narses resisted the appeals of Pelagius, who would fain have invoked the secular arm. Childebert, king of the Franks, also, even after the pope had sent a confession of his faith, refused to interfere. Pelagius died on 3d March 560, and was succeeded by John CUE PELAGIUS IL, a native of Rome, but of Gothic descent, was pope from 578 to 590, having been conse- erated successor of Benedict L, without awaiting the sanction of the emperor, on 27th November of the former year. To make his apologies for this irregularity he sent deacon Gregory, who afterwards became Pope Gregory the Great, as his apocrisiarius to Constantinople. In 585 he sought to heal the schism which had subsisted since the time of Pelagius I. in connexion with the Three Chapters controversy by writing to the bishops of Istria with the exhortation to “avoid foolish and unlearned questions,” but his efforts as a peacemaker were without success. In 588 John, patriarch of Constantinople, by reviving the XVIII. — 60

A474

old and disputed claim to the title of cecumenic patriarch, elicited a vigorous protest from Pelagius, but the decretal which professes to convey the exact words of the docu- ment is now known to be false. He died in January 590, and was succeeded by Gregory I.

PELARGONIUM. See Geranium, vol. x. p. 439, and HORTICULTURE, vol. xii. pp. 263-4.

PELASGI. See Greercs, vol. xi. p. 90, and Iraty, vol. xii. p. 444.

PELEW, PELLEW, Pauav, or Patao, ISLANDS, a group in the western Pacific at the intersection of 134° 30’ E. long. by 7°, 8°, and 9° N. lat., which, as it is often con- sidered part of the Caroline Archipelago, has been described in the article CAROLINE IsLANDs, vol. v. pp. 125, 126. The name Islas Palaos, by which the islands are first designated, is of doubtful

but certainly not of native origin, and was originally applied by the Spaniards in an indefinite way to all the islands east of Mindanao (Philippines). The English form ‘‘ Pelew” may be a corruption either of Palao or of Peleliu (Pellelew), the proper name of one of the southern islands. According to Miklukho-Maklay (Jzvyest- zya of the Imp. Russian Geogr. Soc., 1878, pp. 257-297 ; cf. Zeitschr. f. Hthnol., Berlin, 1878) the ordinary nomen- clature on our maps is often erroneous, the correct forms being Babeltop, Kayangel (not Yanguel or Kiangle), N’yaur (not Angaur or Angour), Arkledeu (not Korph), Namalakal (not Amanakal), &c. The men vary in height from 5 feet to 5 feet 7 inches, the women from 4 feet 9 to 5 feet 2. The character of the hair differs greatly in different indi- viduals ; both sexes wear it wound up in a back-knot. Tattooing (but not of a very elaborate type) is in vogue, especially among the women, by whom the operation is always performed. The skull shows a strong tendency to brachycephalism. Adults of both sexes have their teeth carefully blackened by te/dalek (a kind of earth). Sir John Lubbock (Zhe Origin of Civilisation) places the Pelew Islanders among the peoples destitute of religion ; but Miklukho-Maklay found among them a well-developed Shamanism, every village having a kalit, or shaman, and the group containing five high kalits with an extensive jurisdiction. The ornithology of the Pelew Islands has been investigated by Dr Otto Finsch (Journal des Museum Godefroy, 1875), who enumerates fifty-six species, of which twelve are peculiar to the group. The occurrence of Gallus bankiva and the Nicobar pigeon and the absence of parrots and finches are points of interest.

PELHAM, Sir Henry (1696-1754), prime minister of England, was the younger brother of Thomas Holles Pel- ham, duke of Newcastle, and was born in 1696. He was educated bya private tutor and at Christ Church, Oxford, which he entered in July 1710. As a volunteer he served in Dormer’s regiment at the battle of Preston in 1715; subsequently he spent some time on the Continent, and in 1718 entered parliament for Seaford, Sussex. Through strong family influence and the recommendation of Walpole he was chosen in 1721 a lord of the treasury. The follow- ing year he was returned for Sussex county. In 1724 he entered the cabinet as secretary of war, but this office he exchanged in 1730 for the more lucrative one of paymaster of the forces. He made himself conspicuous by his support of Walpole on the question of the excise, and during the subsequent

attacks, which ultimately led to his resignation in 1742. In the following year a union of parties resulted in the formation of the administration of which Pelham was prime minister, with the additional office of chancellor of the exchequer. Being strongly in favour of peace, he carried on the war with languor and indifferent success, but the country, wearied of the interminable struggle, was disposed to acquiesce in his foreign policy almost without amurmur. The king, thwarted in his favourite schemes,

made overtures in 1746 to Lord Bath, but his purpose was upset by the sudden resignation of the Pelhams, who, how- ever, at the king's request, immediately resumed office, His very defects were, in the peculiar condition of parties, among the chief elements of Pelham's success, for one with a strong personality, moderate self-respect, or high concep- tions of statesmanship could not have restrained the dis cordant elements of the cabinet for any length of time. Moreover, he undoubtedly possessed the important re- quisites of considerable practical tact and a thorough acquaintance with the details of business and the forms of the House. Whatever quarrels or insubordination might exist within the cabinet, they never broke out into open revolt, and during his administration there was seemingly a complete lull in the strife of parties. Nor can a high degree of praise be denied to his financial policy, especially his plans for the reduction of the national debt and the simplification and consolidation of its different branches. He died 6th March 1754.

See Coxe, ALemoirs of the Pelham Administration, 2 vols., 1829.

PELIAS, PELIADES. Pelias, a celebrated character in Greek fable, was the son of Poseidon and Tyro, daughter of Salmoneus. Because Tyro afterwards married her father's brother Cretheus, king of Iolcus in Thessaly, to whom she bore Aison, Pheres, and Amythaon, Pelias was by some thought to be the son of Cretheus. He and his twin-brother Neleus were exposed by their mother, but were found and nurtured by a herdsman, who called one of them Pelias, because his face was discoloured by a blow from the hoof of a mare, and the other Neleus, because a bitch had out of pity suckled him. When grown to man- hood they discovered their mother, and Pelias slew Sidero, Tyro's stepmother, on the altar of Hera, whither she had fled,

because she had ill-used their mother. On the death of Cretheus Pelias made himself master of the kingdom of Ioleus. (According to others, after the death of his half-brother ‘son, he ruled as regent for Ason’s son Jason.) He had previously quarrelled with his brother Neleus, who went to Messenia, where he founded Pylus. Pelias married Anaxibcea, daughter of Bias, or, according to others, Philomache, daughter of Amphion, and became the father of a son, Acastus, and of daughters, Pisidice, Pelopea, Hippothoe, and Alcestis; to these daughters (called Peliades after their father) others add Amphinome, Evadne, Asteropzea, and Antinoe. In order to rid himself of Jason Pelias sent him to Colchis in quest of the golden fleece, and he availed himself of the absence of the son in order to put to death his father A’son together with his mother and brother. When Jason returned with the golden fleece he cast about how he should avenge the death of his parents. In this he was helped by Medea, who persuaded the Peliades to cut in pieces and boil their father Pelias, assuring them that he would thus be restored to youth. Acastus drove out Medea and celebrated far- famed funeral games in honour of his father. The Peliades fled to Mantinea in Arcadia, where their graves were shown in the time of Pausanias.

The tragic death of Pelias was the subject of Sophocles’s drama Lhizotomoi (Root-cutters), and in the 7’yro he treated another portion of the legend. Peliades was the name of Euripides’s first play.

PELICAN (Fr. Pélican, Lat. Pelecanus or Pelicanus), a large fish-eating water-fowl, remarkable for the enormous pouch formed by the extensible skin between the lower jaws of its long, and apparently formidable but in reality very weak, bill. The ordinary Pelican, the Onocrotalus of the ancients, to whom it was well known, and the Pelecanus onocrotalus of ornithologists, is a very abundant bird in some districts of South-eastern Europe, South-western Asia, and North-eastern Africa, occasionally straying, it is

believed, into the northern parts of Germany and France ; put the possibility of such wanderers having escaped from confinement is always to be regarded,! since few zoological gardens are without examples which are often in the finest condition. Its usual haunts are the shallow margins of the

larger lakes and rivers, where fishes are plentiful, since it requires for its sustenance a vast supply of them, pursuing them under water, and rising to the surface to swallow those that it has captured in its capacious pouch. The nest is formed among the reeds that border the waters it frequents, placed on the ground and lined with grass. Therein two eggs, with white, chalky shells, are commonly laid. The young during the first twelvemonth are of a greyish-brown, but this dress is slowly superseded by the growth of white feathers, until when mature almost the whole plumage, except the black primaries, is white, deeply suffused by a rich blush of rose or salmon-colour, passing into yellow on the crest and lower part of the neck in front. A second and somewhat larger species, Pelecanus crispus, also inhabits Europe, but in smaller numbers. This, when adult, is readily distinguishable from the ordinary bird by the absence of the blush from its plumage, and by the curled feathers that project from and overhang each side of the head, which with some differences of coloration of the pill, pouch, bare skin round the eyes, and irides give ita wholly distinct expression.? Two specimens of the humerus of as many Pelicans have been found in the English fens (Ibis, 1868, p. 363; Proc. Zool. Sonety, 1871, p. 702), thus proving the former existence of the bird in England at no very distant period, and one of them being that of a young example points to its having been bred in this country. It is possible from their large size that they belonged to P. crispus. Ornithologists have been much divided in opinion as to the number of living species of the genus Pelecanus (cf. op. cit., 1868, p. 264; 1869, p. 571; eeylp p. 631)—the estimate varying from six to ten or eleven ; but the former is the number recognized by the latest author on the subject, M. Dubois (Bull. Mus. de Belgique, 1883). North America has one, P. erythrorhynchus, very similar to P. onocrotalus both in appearance and habits, but remarkable for a triangular, compressed, horny excres- cence which is developed on the ridge of the male’s bill in the breeding season, and, as ascertained by Mr Ridgway (Ibis, 1869, p. 350), falls off without leaving trace of its existence when that is over. Australia has P. conspicillatus, easily distinguished by its black tail and wing-coverts. Of more marine habit are P. philippensis and P. fuscus, the former having a wide range in Southern Asia, and, it is said, reaching Madagascar, and the latter common on the coasts of the warmer parts of both North and South America.

The genus Pelecanus as instituted by Linneus included the Cormorant (vol. vi. p. 407) and Ganner (vol. x. p. 70) as well as the true Pelicans, and for a long while these and some other distinct groups, as the SNAKE-BIRDS (q.2.), FRIGATE-BIRDS (vol. ix. p. 786), and TRopPIC-BIRDS (g.2.), which have all the four toes of the foot connected by a web, were regarded as forming a single Family, Pelecanide ; but this name has now been restricted to the Pelicans only, though all are still usually associated under the name Steganopodes (OnNiTHOLOGY, p. 46). It may be neces- sary to state that there is no foundation for the venerable legend of the Pelican feeding her young with blood from (OI 1 =I aS ———— ———— EeEE—

1 This caution was not neglected by the prudent, even so long ago as Sir Thomas Browne's days; for he, recording the occurrence of a Pelican in Norfolk, was careful to notice that about the same time one of the Pelicans kept by the king (Charles II.) in St James's Park had been lost.

2 Tt is also said to have twenty-two rectrices, while the ordinary Species has only eighteen.

A75

her own breast, which has given it an important place in ecclesiastical heraldry, except that, as Mr Bartlett has suggested (Proc. Zool. Society, 1869, p. 146), the curious

bloody secretion ejected from the mouth of the Flamingo

may have given rise to the belief, through that bird having been mistaken for the "Pelican of the wilderness." (a. N.)

PELIGNI. See ITAty, vol. xiii. p. 444.

PELISSIER, Jean Jacquus Amante (1794-1864), duke of Malakhoff, marshal of France, was born 6th November 1794 at Maromme (Seine Inférieure), where his father was employed in a powder-magazine. After attend- ing the military college of La Fléche and the special school of St Cyr, he in 1815 entered the army as sub-lieutenant in an artillery regiment.

A brilliant examination in 1819 secured his promotion to the staff. He served as aide-de- camp in the Spanish campaign of 1823, and in the expedi- tion to the Morea in 1828-29, at the conclusion of which he received the grand cross, In 1830 he took part in an expedition to Algeria, and on his return was promoted to the rank of major. Nine years later he was again sent to Algeria as chief of the staff with the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and remained there in active service till the Crimean war, taking a prominent part in many important operations, and, by gradual promotion, advancing to the rank of general of division. The merciless severity of his conduct in suffocating a whole Arab tribe in a cavern, where they had taken refuge and refused to surrender, awakened in 1846 such a strong feeling of indignation in Europe that Marshal Soult, the French minister of war, expressed in the chambers his regret at its occurrence; but Marshal Bugeaud, the governor-general of Algeria, not only gave it his approval but shortly afterwards secured for Pélissier further promotion. On the declaration of war with Russia Pélissier was sent to the Crimea, where on 16th May 1855 he succeeded Marshal Canrobert as com- mander-in-chief of the French forces before Sebastopol. After the capture of the fortress he was, on the 12th September, promoted to be marshal. On his return to Paris he was named senator, created duke of Malakhoff (22d July 1856), and rewarded with a grant of 100,000 francs per annum. From March 1858 to May 1859 he acted as French ambassador in London, whence he was re-called to take command of the army of observation on the Rhine. In 1860 he was appointed governor-general of Algeria; and he died there 22d May 1864.

See AtcERIA (vol. i. pp. 568, 569); Marbaud, Ze daréchal Pélissier, 1863 ; Castille, Portraits Historiques, 2d series, 1859.

PELL, Jon (1610-1685), mathematician, was born on Ist March 1610 at Southwick in Sussex, where his father was minister. He was educated at the free school of Steyning, and entered Trinity College, Cambridge, at the age of thirteen. During his university career he made him- self an accomplished linguist, and even before he took his M.A. degree (in 1630) he was engaged in learned corre- spondence with Briggs and other mathematicians. His great reputation and the influence of Sir William Boswell, the English resident, with the States-General procured his election in 1643 to the chair

of mathematics in Amsterdam, whence he removed in 1646, on the invitation of the prince of Orange, to Breda, where he remained till 1652.

From 1654 to 1658 Pell acted as Cromwell's political agent to the Protestant cantons of Switzerland. On his return to England he took orders and was appointed by Charles IL. to the rectory of Fobbing in Essex, and in 1673 he was presented by Bishop Sheldon to the rectory of Laindon in the same county. His devotion to mathe- matical science seems to have interfered alike with his advancement in the church and with the proper manage- ment of his private affairs. Cheated, it is said, by his tenants and relations, he was reduced to the utmost

poverty. For a time he was confined as a debtor in the King's Bench prison. He lived, on the invitation of Dr Whistler, for a short time in 1682 at the College of Physi- cians, but died 12th December 1685 at the house of Mr Cothorne, reader of the church of St Giles in the Fields. He was buried at the expense of the rector of this church and of Dr Busby, the master of Westminster School. Many of Pell's manuscripts fell into the hands of Dr Busby, and afterwards came into the possession of the Royal Society ; they are still preserved in something like forty folio volumes, which contain, not only Pell's own memoirs, but much of his correspondence with the mathe- maticians of his time.

The Diophantine analysis was a favourite subject with Pell; he lectured on it at Amsterdam; and he is now best remembered for his solution of the indeterminate equation, ax?—y?=1, which is now known by his name, and which had been proposed by Fermat as a challenge to the English mathematicians. His chief works are Astronomical History of Observations of Heavenly Motions and Appearances, 1634; Ecliptiea Prognostica, 1634; Controversy with Longomontanus coneerning the Quadrature of the Circle, 1646 (?) ; An Idea of the Mathematics, 12mo, 1650; Branker's Translation of Rhonius's Algcbra, much altered and augmented, 4to, 1668; A Table of Ten Thousand Square Numbers, fol., 1672.

PELLA. See Maceponta, vol. xv. p. 187.

PELLAGRA (Ital. pelle agra, smarting skin) is the name given, from one of its early symptoms, to a peculiar disease, of comparatively modern origin, occurring among the peasantry in Lombardy and other provinces of northern Italy, and in the Asturias (mal de la rosa), Gascony, Roumania, and Corfu. It is a progressive disease of nutri- tion tending towards profound paralytic and mental dis- orders, and is associated to a very significant extent, if not even invariably, with a staple diet of damaged maize along with other peculiarly wretched and hopeless con- ditions of living. Although Lombardy is the garden of Italy, its peasantry are over-worked, under-paid, and under- fed ; instead of a diet suited to their severe labour, their sustenance consists largely of the more worthless kinds of Indian corn of their own growing, the produce of poorly- cultivated ground, sown late, harvested before maturity, and stored carelessly in its wet state; even if they grow a certain proportion of good maize-corn the millers, to whom they are often in debt, are more likely to grind the worst samples for the peasants' own use. The flour is either made into a kind of porridge—the " polenta" of Italy, the "cruchade" of Gascony, or the ''mamaliga" of Roumania— or it is made into loaves, without yeast, baked hastily on the surface only or on one side, and raw and wet within, large enough to last a week, and apt to turn sour and mouldy before the week is out.!

That pellagra is not a morbus miseriz pure and simple, wanting some more specific cause, will be at once apparent when we consider that the misery of living is as old as the human race, whereas pellagra is a disease of the last hundred years or so, and that in Ireland, Russia, Upper Silesia, Galicia, or other headquarters of the morbi miserizx,

1 Of the peasantry of the Asturias, Townsend, a traveller of the last century, says:

"They eat little flesh, they drink little wine; their usual dict is Indian corn, with beans, peas, chestnuts, apples, pears, melons, and cucumbers ; and even their bread, made of Indian corn, has neither barm nor leaven, but is unfermented, and in the state of dough ; their drink is water" (ii. 14).

The following is the most recent account (by Dr Petit) of the condition of the peasantry in the pellagrous district of the Gironde :

“The cultivation of this district consists of millet, rye, a small quantity of maize, and a few rare vineyards. The soil does not suffice for the nourishment of the miserable population who cultivate it. They are slovenly, and slecp in their clothes ; their labour is in general of the severest kind, and they are very illfed. Their food is mostly a porridge of millet; maize is rarely part of their diet [elsewhere he says, “in all these provinces the flour of maize enters largely into the food of the people”, which includes a little rye-bread, sour most of the time, a few sardines, and rancid lard. Meat is almost exclnded from their food ; sometimes on féte-days one may see a quarter of mutton or veal at the repast. Their usual drink is water, and mostly bad water ; wine is not drunk except in well-to-do families. Their dwellings are deplorable ; they are low- roofed and damp, built of wattle, and constantly enveloped in reek. It often

happens that man and beast live together. Pellagra rages as an endemic among these populations.”

pellagra is unknown. The special factor is undoubtedly maize as an article of diet or as the staple diet; but it is, on the other hand, perfectly clear that there is nothing in a maize diet itself to induce pellagra. Compared with the enormous extent of the maize-zone both in the western and eastern hemispheres, the pellagra-area is a mere spot on the map ; excluding Corfu, it lies between the parallels of 46° and 42° N.; and the exception of Corfu is a signi- ficant one. It is only since 1856 that pellagra has become endemic in that island. Maize has always thriven well there ; but wine-growing has displaced it toa great extent, and the maize, which is still largely in request with the peasantry, is now mostly imported; it is in fact chiefly Roumanian maize of an inferior kind, and all the more deteriorated owing to its long water-transit by way of the Danube and Black Sea. Again, in the Danubian provinces themselves the peasantry of Transylvania, who are by no means well off, are free from pellagra, notwithstanding their addiction to polenta, having long ago learned the art of husbandry from the Saxon part of the population; they allow the maize to ripen to the utmost, and then let it dry on the ground and afterwards in barns, whereas the Wallack peasantry of Roumania, who are subject to pellagra, gather the corn before it is ripe, and

shoot it into pits where it becomes musty. In other countries where the conditions of climate and soil are somewhat trying for maize, as in Burgundy, Franche Comté, and the Bresse in France, and in Mexico, the greatest care is taken to dry the Indian corn before it is stored; and it may be said that wherever these precautions are taken pellagra does not follow. It has happened. on several occasions, after a particularly bad maize-harvest, that pellagra has risen almost to an epidemic. Again, its prevalence within its actual endemic area varies much from province to province or from commune to com- mune, being always last where the maize-diet is supple- mented by wheaten flour, rice, beans, chestnuts, potatoes, or fish.

Characters of the Disease.—The indications of pellagra usually begin in the spring of the year, declining towards autumn, and recurring with increasing intensity and per- manence in the spring seasons following. A peasant who is acquiring the malady feels unfit for work, suffers from headaches, giddiness, singing in the ears, a burning of the skin, especially in the hands and feet, and diarrhcea. At the same time a red rash appears on the skin, of the nature of erysipelas, the red or livid spots being tense and painful, especially where they are directly exposed to the sun. About July or August of the first season these symptoms disappear, the spots on the skin remaining rough and dry. The spring attack of the year following will probably be more severe and more likely to leave traces behind it; with each successive year the patient becomes more like a mummy, his skin shrivelled and sallow, or even black at’ certain spots, as in Addison’s disease, his angles protruding, his muscles wasted, his movements slow and languid, and his sensibility diminished. Meanwhile there are more special symptoms relating to the nervous system, including drooping of the eyelid, dilatation of the pupil, and other disorders of vision, together with symptoms relating to the digestive system, such as a red and dry tongue, a burning feeling in the mouth, pain on swallowing, and diarrheea, Peasants with this progressive malady upon them come to the towns spring after spring seeking relief at the various hospitals, and under a good regimen and a permanently improved diet the malady is often checked. But after a certain stage the disease is confirmed in a pro- found disorganization of the nervous system ; spasms of the limbs begin to occur, and contractures of the joints from partial paralysis of the extensor muscles and pre- ponderant action of the flexors; melancholy, imbecility,

and a strong suicidal tendency are common accompani- ments. A large number of pellagrous peasants end their days in lunatic asylums in a state of drivelling wretched- ness or raving madness ; many more drag out a miserable existence in the communes where their working years had been spent, sometimes receiving the communal relief to which the law entitles them; while the cases that are reckoned curable are in Italy received into the various endowed hospitals, of which there are a large number. Cases that are rapidly fatal end in delirium or a state, of typhoid stupor ; the more protracted cases are cut off at last by rapid wasting, colliquative and ill-smelling sweats, profuse diarrhoea, and dropsy. After death a variety of textural changes are found, which may be referred in general to trophic disorders, or disorders of tissue-nutrition ; =n a considerable number the kidneys are in the contracted state corresponding to the clinical condition of Bright's disease without albuminuria; another condition often remarked is thinning of the muscular coats of the intes- tine; deposits of pigment in the internal organs are also characteristic, just as the discoloration of the skin is during life.

Treatment.—There is hardly any doubt as to the remedy for pellagra, just as there is hardly any doubt as to its cause. The question is mainly one of the social condition of the peasantry, of their food and wages ; it is partly, also, a question of growing Indian corn ona soil or in a climate where it will not mature unless with high farming. There is nothing in the resources of medicine proper to cure this disease ; as the cause is, so must the remedy be.

Affinities of Pellagra.—The disease has the general characters of a tropho-neurosis. The carly involvement of certain areas of the skin, especially in exposed places such as the hands and feet, suggests leprosy ; as in that disease, there is first hyperesthesia and then loss of sensibility, sometimes a thickening of the surface and discolora- tions ; and, although in pellagra the onset each successive spring and the subsidence towards autumn are distinctive, yet in leprosy also the cutaneous disorder is apt to come and go at first, reappearing at the same spots and gradually becoming fixed. The grand difference in leprosy, at Icast in the nodular variety of it, is that a new

growth of a granulomatous kind arises at these spots in the skin and around the nerves. The occasional deep discoloration of the pellagrous skin in certain spots has suggested a resemblance to Addison's disease of the suprarenals, and has cven made the diagnosis difficult. But after the cutaneous disorders the course of pellagra is something sui generis ; the melancholy, imbecility, or mania, as well as the mummified state of the body, are peculiar to it. With ergotism the points of resemblance are more perhaps in the causation than in the nosological characters ; both diseases are specifically due to damaged grain, ergotism being caused by the presence of an actual bulky parasitic mould on ryc, whereas pellagra is more probably caused by fermentation and decomposition within the proper sub- stance of the maize-corn. As regards heredity, it is much less marked in pellagra than in leprosy, but there arc good grounds for believing that the disease is in fact inherited sometimes by the offspring; infants at the breast may show the symptoms of it, but that fact is not in itself conclusive for heredity, for the reason that infants at the breast are partly fed on the household polenta. – As regards contagiousness, there is no more proof of it in pellagra than there is in leprosy.

Geographical Distribution and History.—Pellagra is peculiarly a discase of the peasantry, being hardly ever seen in residents of the towns. In Italy the number of peasants affected by it was estimated in 1879 at 100,000, the distribution being as follows :—Lombardy, 40,838 ; Venetia, 29,386 ; Piedmont, 1692 ; Liguria, 148 ; Aimilia, 18,728 ; Tuscany, 4382 ; the Marches and Umbria, 2155 ; Rome, 76. In Lombardy the worst centres are in the provinces of Brescia, Pavia, Piacenza, and Ferrara. In Italy the disease has increased very considerably within the last thirty years; thus, in the pro- vince of Vicenza the number of persons known to be pellagrous in 1853-55 was 1380, in 1860 it was 2974, and in 1879 it had risen to 3400. There arc no accurate returns from the Asturias and other affected provinces of Spain, but the malady there is said to have declined very materially of late. In Gascony, where it did not begin until about fifty years ago, it is somewhat common, more 1 the Landes than in the Gironde ; in one district of the latter Petit estimates that there are 200 cases in a population of 6000. In Roumania the total number is given at 4500, Moldavia having a larger share than Wallachia. In Corfu it exists in 27 out of the

117 cominunes, the proportion of cases for the whole island being 3°2 per 1000 inhabitants.

Maize was grown in Europe for many years before pellagra showed

itself (sce Maize); but the outbreak of the disease corresponds on the whole closely in time (particularly in Gascony and Roumania) with the introduction of an inferior kind of maize as the staple coe of the peasantry. The first accounts of pellagra come from

pain. the name of mal de la rosa ; it is said to have been noticed first in

Casal in 1762 described the disease in the Asturias under

1735 around Oviedo, being then confined within very narrow limits. The Asturias are still its headquarters in Spain, but it is prevalent

also in Burgos, Navarra, Zaragoza, Lower Aragon, Guadalajara, and Cuenca, and it is met with in other provinces as well. it was first reported from the vicinity of Lago Maggiore, and a few years later (in 1750) it broke out simultaneously in the districts of

In Italy

Milan, Brescia, Bergamo, and Lodi, extending afterwards to Como, Cremona, Mantua, and Pavia, and to the whole of Lombardy before the end of the century. It became cndemic also in Venetia on the one side and in Piedmont on the other, almost contemporaneously with this. Within the present century it has extended its area southwards into Amilia and into Tuscany, while it has become more prevalent in its earlier seats at the same time. There is very little of it in central Italy, while southern Italy with Sicily, is absolutely exempt, notwithstanding the common use of Indian corn in the form of bread and macaroni. The first authentic in- formation of its existence in Gascony came from near Arcachon in 1818, after which it spread along thie coast of the Gironde and the Landes. It has extended subsequently along the left bank of the Garonne and towards the Pyrenees ;

but around Dax it is said to have decreased considerably of late. In Roumania, where the medical profession is unanimous in tracing it to the use of damaged maize, it dates from about 1833-46. It is only since 1856 that it

has become endemic in Corfu, under the circumstances already

mentioned.

Literature.—La Pellagra in Italia, Rome, 1880 (official report, with appendices relating to France, Spain, and Roumania, and a copious bibliography extending to fifteen pages). An article on ‘‘The Pellagra in Italy,” in the Hdin. Rev. for April 1881, is based on this report. The authority for Corfu is Typaldos. The best inquiries on the toxic properties of damaged maize are those of Lombroso. See also Hirsch, Historisch-geographische Pathologie, vol. ii., 2d. ed., Stuttgart, 1883 (Engl. trans.). (Cc.

PELLICANUS, Cowrap (1478-1556), one of the most interesting minor figures in German theology and scholar- ship in the great age of the Reformation, was born at Ruffach in Alsace in the winter of 1478. His paternal name was Kiirsner, his father’s father having been a currier of Wyl in the Black Forest. The Latin name of Pellicanus was chosen for him by his mother’s brother Jodocus Callus, an ecclesiastic connected with the univer- sity of Heidelberg, who gave his nephew sixteen months at the university at the cost of some fourteen florins in 1491-92. Pellican’s parents were worthy people, but very poor ; the boy was eager for learning, but had no books ; at school at Ruffach, where he had learned well, “with much fear and many a scourging,” it was only the richer boys who had a copy of the Ulm Donatus of 1485. So when lis uncle tired of him and he came back to Ruffach, with some knowledge of the great Latin classics as well as of the usual bachelor’s course, he was glad to teach gratis in the Minorite convent school that he might borrow books from the library, and in his sixteenth year he resolved to become a friar. This step helped his studies, for he was sent to Tiibingen in 1496 and became a favourite pupil of the guardian of the Minorite convent there, Paulus Scriptoris, a man of considerable general learning and of much boldness and honesty, who anticipated Luther in his open preaching on such topics as vows, indulgences, and the sacraments.

There seems to have been at that time ‘1 south-west Germany a considerable amount of sturdy independent thought among the Franciscans, and more genuine conformity to the original ideas of the order than is often supposed ; Pellicanus himself became a Protestant very gradually, and without any such revulsion of feeling as marked Luther’s conversion; at the moment when he went to Zurich and threw off the cowl he was pleased to think that the good St Francis would not abhor him for his change of dress, and for learning for the first time at the age of forty-eight the difference between crowns, florins, and batzen. At Tubingen the future “apostate in three

languages” was able to begin the study of Hebrew. He had no teacher and no grammar; but Paulus Scriptoris carried him a huge codex of the prophets on his own shoulders all the way from Mainz. He learned the letters from the transcription of a few verses in the Star of the Messiah of Petrus Niger, and, with a subsequent hint or two from Reuchlin, who also lent him the grammar of Moses Kimhi, made his way through the Bible for himself with the help of Jerome’s Latin. He got on so well that he was not only a useful helper to Reuchlin but anticipated the manuals of the great Hebraist by composing in 1501 the first Hebrew grammar in a European tongue. It was printed in 1503, and afterwards included in Reysch’s Margarita Philosophica. Hebrew remained a favourite study to the last. Pellican’s autobiography is full of interesting details as to the gradual multiplication of accessible books on the subject, which he hunted up in every journey; and ultimately he not only studied but translated a vast mass of rabbinical and Talmudic texts. With a cooler judgment than Reuchlin, however, he was not deceived as to the true value of the later Hebrew wisdom, and his interest in Jewish literature was mainly philological. In linguistic knowledge he reached a high standard for that time,—certainly higher than that of his better-known pupil, 8. Miinster. The chief fruit of these studies is the vast Biblical commentary published at Zurich in his later years (1532-39, 7 vols.), which shows a remarkably sound judgment on questions of the text, and a sense for historical as opposed to typological exegesis, such as soon disappeared from the Protestant Church and was hardly equalled by any in his own day. Pellicanus became priest in 1501 and continued to serve his

order at Ruffach, Pforzheim, and Basel till 1526. At Basel he did much laborious work for Froben's editions, and acquired a thorough knowledge of the early fathers, through which his dissatisfaction with current dogma gradually ripened into conviction that the church taught many doctrines of which the early doctors of Christendom knew nothing. He spoke his views frankly, but he disliked polemic, and was happy in his convent or in long journeys in the service of his order, which carried him over all south Germany and through Italy as far as Rome; he found also more toleration than might have been expected, even after he became active in circulating Luther's books. Thus, sup- ported by the civic authorities, he remained guardian of the convent of his order at Basel from 1519 till 1524, and, even when he had to give up this post, remained in the monastery for two years, professing theology in the university and always toiling with indefatigable zeal. At length, when the position was becoming quite untenable, he received through Zwingli a call to Zurich as professor of Hebrew, and, formally throwing off his monk's habit, entered on a new life. Here he remained till his death in 1556, falling into his new surroundings with the ease of a simple affectionate nature, happy in the friendship of Zwingli and Bullinger, hospitably entertaining the many learned strangers who visited Zurich or the poor students who crowded to its school, avoiding religious controversy, and always deep in his books. The step in life which cost him most thought was his marriage, but this also proved so happy an experiment that he lived to be married a second time. In his later years he was afflicted with the stone, the torture of so many of the older scholars, but he continued active till the last.

_Pellican's scholarship, though not brilliant, was really extensive ; his sound sense and his singularly pure and devoted character gave him a great influence, as is apparent even in the too modest auto- biography which he wrote for his son. He was curiously free from the pedantry of the time for a man who had lived so much among

books ; his views about the use of the German vernacular as a vehicle of culture (Chron., 185, 86) are a striking proof of this.

As a theologian his natural affinities were with Zwingli, with whom in his smaller sphere he shared the advantage of having grown up to the views of the Reformation, without any sudden and violent mental struggle, by the natural progress of his studies and religious life. Thus he never lost his sympathy with humanism and with its great German representative, Erasmus. ‘The Reformed Church might have had a happier course if it had longer kept to the lines of the first Zurich doctors. Pellican’s Latin autobiography (Chronicon C. P. R.) is one of the most interesting documents of the period. It was first published by Riggenbach in 1877, and in this volume the other sources for his life are registered.

PELLICO, Sirvio (1788-1854), Italian dramatist, was born at Saluzzo in Piedmont on 24th June 1788, the earlier portion of his life being passed at Pinerolo and Turin under the tuition of a priest named Manavella. A taste for the drama, fostered by private theatrical recitals, showed itself at the age of ten in the composition of a tragedy under the inspiration of Ceesarotti’s translation of the Ossianic poems. On the marriage of his twin sister Rosina with a maternal cousin at Lyons he went to reside in that city, devoting himself during four years to the study of French literature. His patriotism having been re-awakened by the reading of Foscolo’s Det Sepolcri, he returned in 1810 to Milan, where he became professor of French in the Collegio degli Orfani Militari. The appearance of Carlotta Marchionni on the Milan stage induced him to compose for her the tragedy Francesca da Rimini, which, despite the adverse criticism of Foscolo, was brought out with success on the return of the actress to the city a few years later. Its publication was followed by that of the tragedy Hufemio da Messina, but the representation of the latter was forbidden. Pellico had in the meantime continued his work as tutor, first to the unfortunate son of Count Briche, and then to the two sons of Count Porro Lambertenghi. In this capacity he was brought into contact with many of the foremost men of the day and threw himself heartily into an attempt to weaken the hold of the Austrian despotism by indirect educational means. Of the powerful literary executive which gathered about Counts Porro and Confalonieri, Pellico was the able secretary,—the management of the Conciliatore, which appeared in 1818 as the organ of the association, resting largely upon him. But the paper, under the relentless censorship of the Austrian officials, ran for a single year only, and the society itself was broken up by the more vigorous action of the

Government consequent upon the formation of the constitution of Naples. In October 1820 Pellico was arrested on the charge of carbonarism and conveyed to the Santa Mar- gherita prison. Occupied at first in preparing his defence and in religious meditation, he found means, after his removal to the Piombi at Venice in February 1821, to resume literary work, composing there several Cantiche and the tragedies Hster d'Engaddi and Iginia d Asti. The sentence of death pronounced on him in February 1822 was finally commuted to fifteen years carcere duro, and in the following April he was placed in the Spielberg at Briinn. His chief work during this part of his imprisonment was the tragedy Leonero da Dertona, for the preservation of which he was compelled to rely on his memory. After his release in 1830 he commenced the publication of his prison compositions, of which the ster was played at Turin in 1831, but immediately suppressed. In 1832 appeared his Gismonda da Mendrizo, Erodiade, and the Leonero, under the title of Tre nuovi Tragedie, and in the same year the work which gave him his European fame, Le Mre Prigioni. The last gained him the friendship of the Marchesa di Barolo, the reformer of the Turin prisons, and in 1834 he accepted from her a yearly pension of 1200 francs. His tragedy Tommaso Moro had been published in 1833, his most important subsequent publication being the Opere Inedite in 1837. On the decease of his parents in 1838 he was received into the Casa Barolo, where he

is

remained till his death, assisting the marchesa in her charities, and writing chiefly upon religious themes. Of these works the best known is the Det Doveri degli Uomina, a series of trite maxims which do honour to his piety rather than to his critical judgment. A fragmentary biography of the marchesa by Pellico was published in Italian and English after her death. He died 31st January 1854, and was buried in the Campo Santo at Turin. His writings, whether in prose or verse, are chaste and graceful, but defective in virility and breadth of thought, and his tragedies display neither the insight into character nor the constructive power of a great dramatist. It is in the simple narrative and naive egotism of Le Ave Prigioni that he has

established his strongest claim to remembrance, winning fame by his misfortunes rather than by his genius.

Cf. Piero Maroncelli, Addizioni alle Mie Prigioni, Paris, 1834 ; the biographies by Latour ; Gabriele Rosselli ; Didier, Revue des Deux Mondes, September, 1842 ; De Loménie, Galerie des Contemp. Illustr., iv., 1842; Chiala, Turin, 1852; Nollet-Fabert, 1854 ; Giorgio Briano, 1854; Bourdon, 1868 ; and the life of the Mar- chesa di Barolo.

PELOPIDAS, a distinguished Greek general, who, in conjunction with Epaminondas, raised his native city Thebes to a pitch of power such as she never attained to before or afterwards. He was the son of Hippoclus and member of an illustrious Theban family. The large property to which he succeeded in his youth, and which he seems to have in- creased by a brilliant marriage, was liberally employed by him in the relief of the destitute. persuade his friend Epaminondas to share his wealth, he imitated that great man in the stern simplicity and fru- gality of his life and in his cheerful endurance of hard- ships. Though his taste for hunting and gymnastics, and his fiery temper, contrasted with the studious habits and the “gentle and majestic patience” of his friend, no one appreciated better than Pelopidas the greatness of Epami- nondas, to whom, if inferior as a general and a statesman, he was equal in romantic courage and unselfish devotion to his fatherland. Their friendship continued unbroken till death. It was cemented by a battle in which Epami- nondas saved the life of Pelopidas. When the Spartans under Pheebidas seized the Cadmea or citadel of Thebes (summer of 383 or 382 3.c.), Pelopidas, as a member of the democratic club which was opposed to the Spartans, was forced to flee. Along with other exiles he found a refuge at Athens. Epaminondas, protected from suspicion by his poverty and his studies, was suffered to remain in Thebes. Though a very young man, Pelopidas took a lead- ing part in persuading his fellow-exiles to strike a blow for the liberation of Thebes. Having concerted a plan With their friends in Thebes, Pelopidas, with a few com- panions, entered the city in disguise, surprised and slew the magistrates favourable to Sparta, and roused the people to attack the Spartan garrison in the citadel.. But the Spartans capitulated and marched out. This happened in the early winter of 379. Pelopidas and two others of the liberators were elected “bceotarchs,” or chief magistrates of Beeotia, an office which had been in abeyance for

some years. Henceforward to the end of his life Pelopidas was annually elected to one of the chief offices of the state. The treacherous attempt made soon afterwards by the Spartan Sphodrias to seize the Pireus was said, with little probability, to have been instigated by Pelopidas in order to embroil Sparta with Athens. The liberation of Thebes was followed by some years of desultory warfare with Sparta. At Tanagra, however, Pelopidas defeated the enemy and slew the Spartan governor. Still more brilliant was the victory gained by him at Tegyra over a numerically superior force of two Spartan divisions. His success was due chiefly to the disciplined valour of the

When he could not.

Sacred Band, a picked regiment of 300 men, whom Pelopidas led to glory on many a bloody field. The battle of Tegyra, as the first occasion on which the Spartans had ever been worsted by an inferior force, made a deep impression on Greece. At the great battle of Leuctra (July 371), which permanently crippled the power of Sparta, Pelopidas and the Sacred Band were again conspicuous. Pelopidas was one of the generals in command of the Theban army which invaded the Peloponnesus in 370-369, and he joined with Epaminondas in persuading their colleagues to prosecute the campaign even after the expiry of their year of office. For this the two friends were tried for their life, but acquitted. Soon afterwards (apparently in 369), in response to a petition of the Thessalians, Pelopidas was despatched with an army to Thessaly against Alexander, tyrant of Phere. After occupying Larissa and freeing the Thessalians from the oppression of the tyrant, Pelopidas marched into Macedonia, where, at the request of the belli- gerents, he acted as arbitrator between Alexander king of Macedonia and the pretender Ptolemeus. Having con- cluded an alliance with the Macedonian king, he brought back to Thebes, amongst other hostages, the youthful Philip, brother of the king and afterwards father of Alex- ander the Great. In the following year (368), Pelopidas returned to Thessaly as ambassador and without an army. Learning that Ptolemeus had killed Alexander of Mace- donia and seized the throne, he collected a body of mer- cenaries and marched against him. Ptolemzus induced the troops of Pelopidas to desert their leader, but he was too prudent to press his advantage, and agreed to act as regent for the brothers of the late king and to be an ally of Thebes. On his return from Macedonia Pelopidas was seized and detained by Alexander of Phere. From this captivity, in which his scornful bearing excited the wonder of his captor, he was released by a Theban force under Epaminondas. By the exertions of Epaminondas and Pelopidas, Thebes had by this time become the most powerful state in Greece ; and that she might be formally recognized as such Pelopidas was sent as ambassador (367) to the Persian court. Favourably impressed by the renown and still more by the personal character of the envoy, the Persian king, Artaxerxes, loaded him with marks of honour and ratified all his proposals. These were, that Messene should be independent, that Athens

should lay up her warships, and that any city which declined to follow the leadership of Thebes should be treated as an enemy by Persia. The purpose of the treaty, to strengthen Thebes by weakening Athens and Sparta, was obvious. It found no favour with the Greek states and remained a dead letter. In 364 the Thessalian towns once more appealed to Pelopidas for help against their old enemy Alexander of Phere. Disregarding an ominous eclipse of the sun, Pelopidas pushed on with a handful of troops, leaving the main body to follow. At the heights of Cynoscephalz, near Pharsalus, he came up with the tyrant Alexander at the head of a much superior force. The valour of Pelopidas secured another victory, but it was his last,—catching sight of his hated foe, he rushed on him single-handed and fell covered with wounds. The Thes- salians, in whose cause he died, requested and received the honour of carrying the hero to his last home, and the crowns, trophies, and golden arms by which the coffin was surrounded bore witness to the love and sorrow of a whole people. His friend did not long survive him. He too was to die fighting his country's battles in a foreign land. The pre-eminence of Thebes was the work of these two men alone, and with them it passed away.

Our chief authority is Plutarch's Life of Pelopidas. Xenophon

was a contemporary, and his history covers the whole period of the life of Pelopidas, but, with his usual malignity to the enemies of

Sparta, he only mentions Pelopidas in connexion with his fruitless embassy to Persia. There is a meagre life by Cornelius Nepos. See also Diod. Sic., xv. 62, 67, 71, 75, 80, 81.

PELOPONNESUS. See GREECE.

PELOPS, a hero of Greek mythology, was the grand- son of Zeus, son of Tantalus and Dione, and brother of Niobe. His father's home was on Mount Sipylus in Asia Minor, whence Pelops is spoken of as a Lydian or a Phrygian, or even as a Paphlagonian. Tantalus was a friend and companion of the gods, and one day he served up to them his own son boiled and cut in pieces. The gods detected the crime, and none of them would partake

except Demeter (according to others Thetis), who, dis- tracted by the loss of her daughter Persephone, ate of the shoulder. The gods restored Pelops to life, and the shoulder consumed by Demeter was replaced by one of ivory. Wherefore the descendants of Pelops had a white mark on their shoulder ever after. This tale is perhaps a reminiscence of human sacrifice, of which numerous traces remain in Greek legend and history. Poseidon admired Pelops, the beautiful boy, and carried him off to Olympus, where he dwelt with the gods, till, for his father's sins, he was cast out from heaven. Then, taking much wealth with him, he crossed over from Asia to Greece. He went to Pisa in Elis as suitor of Hippodamia, daughter of King (Enomaus, who had already vanquished in the chariot- race and slain many suitors for his daughter's hand. But by the help of Poseidon, who lent him winged steeds, or of Ginomaus's charioteer Myrtilus, whom he or Hippodamia bribed, Pelops was victorious in the race, wedded Hippo- damia, and became king of Pisa. »Pelops's race for his wife was a favourite subject of Greek poetry and art. It may be a confused recollection of the custom of wife-snatching prevalent in early times. When Myrtilus claimed his promised reward, Pelops flung him into the sea near Gereestus in Eubcea, and from his dying curse sprang those crimes and sorrows of the house of Pelops which supplied the Greek tragedians with such fruitful themes. Among the sons of Pelops by Hippodamia were Atreus, Thyestes, and Chrysippus. According to others Chrysippus was his son by a different mother. Atreus and Thyestes were jealous of Chrysippus and murdered him, wherefore Pelops drove them out. According to another story it was Hippodamia who murdered him and fled, but after- wards her bones were brought back to Olympia, where she had a temple, in which the women offered her a yearly sacrifice. From Pisa Pelops extended his sway over the neighbouring Olympia, where he celebrated the Olympian games with a splendour unknown before. He warred against and treacherously slew Stymphalus, king of Arcadia. His power and fame were so great that henceforward the whole peninsula was known to the ancients as Peloponnesus (Isle of Pelops). In after times Pelops was honoured at Olympia above all other heroes; a temple was built for him by Heracles, his descendant in the fourth generation, in which the annual magistrates sacrificed to him a black ram. During the Trojan war the Greeks were told that Troy could not be taken until they fetched a bone of Pelops. Soa shoulder-blade of Pelops was brought from Pisa. When it was being brought

back again the ship carrying it was wrecked off Eubcea. Many years after- wards the bone was taken up by Damarmenus, a fisher- man, in his net. Astonished at its size, he went to inquire of the Delphic oracle. There he met envoys from Elis come to discover a remedy for a pestilence. The oracle bade them recover the bone of Pelops, and commanded Damarmenus to restore it to them. He did so, and he and his descendants were appointed custodians of the bone. Some thought that the Palladium was made of the bones of Pelops. This belief in the miraculous efficacy of

the bones of heroes was common in Greece (witness, e.g., the story of the bones of Orestes in Herodotus). From the great size of the bones they may sometimes have been those of large extinct animals.

From the reference to Asia in the tales of Tantalus, Niobe, and Pelops it has been conjectured with some probability that Asia was the original seat of these legends, and that it was only after emigration to Greece that the people amongst whom they were current localized a part of the tale of Pelops in their new home. In the time of Pausanias the throne of Pelops was still shown on the top of Mount Sipylus. The story of Pelops is told in the beautiful first Olympian ode of Pindar. The prosaic version of the story found in Nicolaus Damascenus (17) differs in several points from the usual legend.

PELOUZE, Tstopuite Juzzs (1807-1867), French chemist, was born on 26th February 1807 at Valognes in Normandy, where his father was manager of a porcelain manufactory. The elder Pelouze was a man of great ability and energy, but of a peculiarly susceptible tempera- ment, which made it impossible for him to remain long in any position. He gave up his post at Valognes, and found employment successively at the glass-works of St Gobain, the iron-works at Charenton, and in gas-works. This moving life was unfavourable for the family finances, but doubtless gave young Pelouze opportunities of seeing and becoming familiar with a great variety of chemical operations on a large scale. He studied pharmaceutical chemistry first at La Fére, and afterwards, under Chevalier, at the Ecole de Pharmacie in Paris. He then became a clinical clerk under Magendie in the Salpétriere hospital. One day, when returning from a visit to his father at Charenton, he

was surprised by a heavy shower, and seeing what he took to be a public carriage—the omnibus of the period—he hailed it. It contained only one passenger, but the driver, instead of stopping for another fare, drove on without taking the least notice. Pelouze rushed up and stopped the horse. On this the solitary passenger, who was Gay-Lussac, explained that he had hired the veliicle for his own use, but that he would be glad of the company of the new-comer. The result of this accidental introduction was that Pelouze abandoned medicine and continued thestudy of chemistry in Gay-Lussac's laboratory. From 1827 to 1829 he acted as assistant to Gay-Lussac and Lassaigne, and in 1830, on the recommendation of Gay-Lussac, he was appointed professor of chemistry at Lille. Returning to Paris, he was appointed in 1831 pro- fessor of chemistry at the Ecole Polytechnique and at the Collége de France, in 1833 assayer to the mint, and in 1848 president of the Mint Commission. In 1850 he succeeded Gay-Lussac as chemical adviser to the glass- works of St Gobain. He was elected a member of the Institute of France in 1837. He died, after a short illness, on the 31st of May 1867.

Along with Frémy, Pelouze published a Treatise on Chenustry (1849-50; 2d ed. 1854-56). His numerous chemical papers were published in the Annales de Chimie et de Physique and in the Conuptes rendus. Among these the most important are :—"On Beetroot Sugar" (1831), "On Salicine " (1830 and 1831), " On the Transformation of Hydrocyanic Acid and Water into Formiate of Ammonia" (1831), 'On Lactic Acid" (with Gay-Lussac, 1833), "On Tannin, Gallic Acid, Pyrogallic Acid, &. " (1833), "On the Product of the Distillation of Organic Acids" (1834), "On Nitro- sulphates" (1835), "On Butyric Acid" (with Gélis, 1844), "On Guu-cotton" (1846 and 1847), "On the Effect of Light on the Colour of Glass" (1865 and 1867).

PELTIER, Jean CHARLES ATHANASE, was originally a watchmaker, but retired from business about the age of thirty and devoted himself to experimental and observa- tional science. He was born at Ham (Somme) in February 1785 ; his death took place at Paris in October 1845.

His great experimental discovery was the heating or

cooling of the junctions in a heterogeneous circuit of metals according to the direction in which an electric current is made to pass round the circuit (1834). This reversible effect is proportional directly to the strength of the current, not to its square, as is the irreversible genera- tion of heat due to resistance in all parts of the circuit. Tt is found that, if a current pass from an external source through a- circuit of two metals, it cools one junction and heats the other. It cools the junction if it be in the same direction as the thermo-electric current which would be caused by directly heating that junction. In other words, the passage of a current from an external source produces in the junctions of the circuit a distribution of temperature which leads to the weakening of the current by the superposition of a thermo-electric current running in the opposite direction. The true importance of this so-called “Peltier effect” in the explanation of thermo- electric currents was first clearly pointed out by Joule; and Sir W. Thomson (see vol. viii. p. 97) further extended the subject by showing, both theoretically and experimentally, that there is something closely analogous to the Peltier effect when the heterogeneity is due, not to difference of quality of matter, but to difference of temperature in contiguous portions of the same material. Shortly after Peltier’s discovery was published, Lenz effected by means of it the freezing of small quantities of water by the cold developed in a bismuth-antimony junction when a voltaic current was passed through the metals in the order named.

Peltier’s other papers, which are numerous, are devoted in great part to atmospheric electricity, waterspouts, cyanometry and polarization of sky-light, the temperature of water in the spheroidal state, and the boiling-point at great elevations. There are also a few devoted to curious points of natural history. But his name will always be associated with the thermal effects at junctions in a voltaic circuit, a discovery of importance quite comparable with those of Seebeck and Cumming.

PELUSIUM, an ancient city of Egypt, at the mouth of the most easterly (Pelusiac) branch of the Nile, was the key of the land towards Syria and a strong fortress, which, from the Persian invasion at least, played a great part in all wars between Egypt and the East. It has not, however, been satisfactorily identified with any place mentioned in the hieroglyphic monuments, and the conjecture of Jerome, who supposes it to be the Sin of

Ezekiel xxx. 15, 16, though admirably suited to the context and certainly preferable to the Sais of the LXX., cannot be positively established. Pelusium is the Farama of the Arabs; the neighbouring place still called Tina is hardly to be identified etymologically with Sin. The country about Pelusium was noted for the production of flax; the fame of the Pelusian linen is, perhaps, still preserved in the word “blouse.” The whole district has now relapsed into sand and marsh, and the site has not yielded any important remains.

PEMBERTON, an urban sanitary district of Lanca- shire, England, situated on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 24 miles west from Wigan. Near the town are stone quarries and collieries, and the town itself possesses cotton-mills, chemical works, and iron-foundries. At a short distance is Hawkley Hall, an ancient timber house. At Ancliff in the township of Pemberton there was, accord- ing to ancient records, a burning well of considerable fame, but the name Ancliff has now disappeared, and the site cannot be verified. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 2894 acres) in 1871 was 10,374, and in 1881 1t was 13,762.

PEMBROKE, the most westerly county of South Wales, lies to the west of the counties of Cardigan and Carmar- then, and is bounded on three sides by the ocean—on the S. by the Bristol Channel, on the W. by St George’s

Channel, and on the N. by Cardigan Bay. Its length from Strumble Head to St Gowan’s Head is about 30 miles, and its average breadth a little over 20. The area is 393,682 acres, or about 615 square miles.

The coast-line is extremely irregular and extends to over 100 miles, the principal inlets being Newport Bay ; Fish- guard Bay, 3 miles in breadth, with an average depth of from 30 to 70 feet, and possessing a good anchorage-ground of mud and sand; St Bride’s Bay, 8 miles long by 8 broad ; and Milford Haven, a splendid landlocked natural harbour, having a length of about 20 miles, and including numerous small bays and creeks. A considerable number of islands adjoin the coast, the largest being Ramsey, which (except- ing some small rocks) includes the most westerly land in Wales; Skomer and Stockham, between St Bride’s Bay and Milford Haven;

and Caldy, south of Tenby. The southern coast, consisting of bare, broken, and beetling limestone cliffs, in many cases 200 feet in height, is exposed to the full force of the Atlantic, which in several places has hollowed out long funnel-shaped cavities into which the sea has entrance, the most remarkable being Bosheston Mere, near St Gowan's Head. Owing to the ocean storms the county is almost bare of trees, and the bareness is not relieved or atoned for by mountains, although in many parts of the coast the scenery is wildly picturesque. For the most part the surface is gently undulating, the small rounded hills rising in height towards the north, until they merge in the Preseley range, which runs from east to west and divides the county into two parts, the highest summits being Cwm-Cerwyn, 1754 feet, in the centre of the chain, the lesser eminences of Moel Trigarn and Carn-meyn in the east, and Bwlch-gwnt and Foel Eryr in the west. The principal rivers are the Teifi, which forms for a short distance the north-eastern boundary of the county with Cardiganshire; the Cleddy or Cleddou, of which there are two branches, an eastern and a western, both flowing south and "mingling their waters in Milford Haven; the Nevern, which flows north into Newport Bay; and the Gwaen, which flows through a narrow and beautifully- wooded glen to Fishguard Bay.

Geology and Minerals.—Three-fourths of the county, including the northern portion stretching westwards to the western Cleddou river, and, with certain exceptions, to the Channel, is formed of Llandeilo flags. The Carbonifer- ous strata from the South-Wales coal-field extend across the centre of the county from east to west, their area narrowing towards the west. The Pembrokeshire coal-field differs entirely from the South-Wales coal-field both in the lie of the strata and in the character of its beds, due to the occurrence of volcanic action. It is separated also from the main field by an interpolation of Old Red Sand- stone. North, east, and north-west it is bounded by beds of mountain limestone and millstone grit, and on the south by Cambrian beds and by the ocean, below which the Coal-measures extend. 'The strata are composed of Coal-measures, Carboniferous Limestone, and Old Red Sand- stone, and are frequently extremely contorted. Igneous stratified rocks also occur in the Preseley range, and in the neighbourhood of St David's Head. The coal is anthracite, and when put on the fire in a wet state emits a blue flame without smoke. About 80,000 tons are now dug annually, the coal being used for furnaces and for

smelting and brew- ing purposes. There is a lead mine at Llanfyrnach, from which a considerable yield of silver is obtained, the annual value of the ore raised being about £15,000. In caves explored near Tenby and on Caldy Island there have been found remains of various species of extinct mammals.

Climate, Soil, and Agriculture.—Although Pembroke- shire is exposed to frequent violent gales from the south- west, the climate in the south is very mild and warm ; and

flowers, fruits, and vegetables are earlier than in most other districts of the United Kingdom. Towards the north, especially on the higher ground, it is much colder, and damp fogs and rain are frequent. The most common soil is a dark-grey loam, which is much improved by admixture with lime and sand. The sandstone and limestone forma- tion in the south produces an excellent quick soil, admir- ably adapted for horticulture, which is generally pursued in this district. In the more northerly and higher regions more attention is given to cattle-rearing and dairy-farming than to the raising of crops or sheep-farming. The farm- houses and buildings, which formerly were rude and primi- tive in construction, with low mud-walls, are now generally built of stone on improved methods. The cottages of the peasants are, however, still for the most part uncom- fortable huts built of a clay and straw compound called “clom.” Great improvements have lately taken place in farming, owing in great part to the enlightened encourage- ment of the landlords.

From 5935 in 1875 the number of holdings had increased to 5999 in 1880 (the latest return). Nearly four-fifths, 4222, were not above 50 acres cach in extent, 837 were between 50 and 100 acres, 853 between 100 and 300, and only 87 above 300 acres. In 1883 there were 305,644 acres, or about 77 per cent. of the total area, under tillage, corn crops occupying 55,011 acres, green crops 13, 266, rotation grasses 28,409, permanent pasture 206,052, and fallow 2906. The principal cereals are barley occupying 24,799 acres and oats (of which the black species occupy a large area) 25,494 acres,

wheat oecupying only 4604 acres. Potatoes were grown on 38042 acres, turnips and swedes on 8038, and mangolds on 1322. Horses in 1883 numbered 14,383 (of which 8665 were used solely for purposes of agriculture), cattle 83,436 (of which 31,779 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf), sheep 91,901, and pigs 27,623. The prineipal breed of cattle are the native Castlemartins, black in colour, and well suited to the climate and the system of farm- ing, as they both fatten readily and yield large supplies of milk. Herefords and Alderneys have lately been introduced on many farms, but the old breed is still the favourite.

According to the latest return the land was divided among 3121 owners, possessing 356,699 acres, at an annual valuation of £389,701, or about £1 1s.10d. per acre. The estimated amount of common or waste land was 11,260 acres. Of the owners, 1492, or about 44 per cent., possessed less than one acreeach. The following owned over 5000 acres each; viz., C. E. G. Phillips, 18,729 acres; earl of Cawdor, 17,736; Sir Owen Scourfield, Bart., 11,248 ; Lord Kensington, 6537; bishop of St David's, 5651; George Harries, 5173; and M. A. Sawin, 5168.

Manufactures.—Flannels are woven in various towns, and are the principal textile manufacture of the county; there are also rope and sail works, and hat-making is practised. Many of the inhabitants are engaged in coal-mining and in fishing. At Pater there is a very extensive dockyard, and shipbuilding is carried on at several other ports. Since the opening up of railway communi- cation the shipping trade, and the mining and other industries, have made extensive progress, but the railway connexion is still somewhat imperfect.

Administration and Population.—The county includes seven hundreds ; the municipal boroughs of Haverfordwest (6398), Pem- broke (14,156), and Tenby (4750), and part (2058) of the municipal borough of Cardigan, the remainder of which is in Cardiganshire. In addition to Haverfordwest, Pembroke, and Tenby, there are four other market towns,—Fishguard (2009), Milford (8812), Nar- berth (2334), and Newport (1504). The county is divided into three poor-law unions—Haverfordwest, Pembroke, and Narberth. It is included in the south-western circuit. It has one court of quarter-sessions, and is divided into seven petty and special sessional

divisions. One member is returned to parliament for the county, one for the Haverfordwest district of boroughs, consisting of Fish- guard, Haverfordwest, and Narberth, and one for the Pembroke district of boroughs, consisting of Milford, Pembroke, Tenby, and Wiston. Pembrokeshire contains 153 civil parishes, with part of one other. It constitutes the archdeaconry of St David's in the diocese of the same name, and forms part of the province of Canterbury. From 56,280 in 1801 the population had increased in 1821 to 74,009, in 1851 to 94,140, but in 1871 it had diminished to 91,998, and in 1881 to 91,824, of whom 48,449 were males and 48,375 females. The number of inhabited houses in 1881 was 19,462, the average number of persons to an acre 0°28, and of acres to a person 4°26.

History, &c.—Although the limestone caves of Pembrokeshire abound with relics of the Pleistocene fauna, no traces have as yet been discovered of Paleolithic man. Neolithic remains are plenti-

ful. In caves, cliff-castles, bogs, kitchen-middens, &c., implements of the polished stone age are frequently found, but, strange to say, the long barrows typical of this period are wanting; dolmens or cromlechs, however, are very common: the ordnance map gives eighteen, but this is by no means an exhaustive list. Liech-y- Drybedd near Nevern, Pentre Evan near Newport, another one in the same town, Longhouse near Mathry, Tre Liys on Pencair, are magnificent specimens of Megalithic work. Stone circles, cairns, monoliths, and earthworks abound in the county ; what proportion of these are attributable to the dolichoeephalie non-Aryan Silures who used stone implements it is impossible to say.

The Goidel or Gaelic branch of the Celtic family has the credit of having introduced bronze and round tumuli with cremated bodies ; of these latter there are a great number in Pembrokeshire, and considerable quantities of bronze implements have been dis- covered. A mixture of Silures and Goidels seem to have held the country uutil they were conquered by the Romans about the year 70 a.p. Roman remains are but scantily represented in Pembrokeshire. Via Julia terminated at St David's, but no traces of the peculiar Roman roadmaking exist. Fenton, the county historian, fancied he

discovered the station Ad Vigesimum of the spurious Itinerary of Antonine at Ambleston, and there can be no doubt that a large Ronian building of some sort did exist at that place. The late Professor Rolleston and Mr E. Laws discovered Samian ware in the cave of Lougbury near Tenby, and Roinan coins, ranging from Vespasian, 78 A.D., to Constantine IL., 340 A.p., have been found very plentifully in the county.

When the Saxons pressed the Cymric tribe of Brythonic Celts in Cumbria, the latter appear to have migrated into Wales, and to have conquered the inhabitants ; the Pembrokeshire Goidels secm to have held out for some time. During this troubled period there was a great incursion of missionaries, both Goidel and Cymric ; to these we owe the nomenclature of many villages. To this period must be attributed the sepulchral inscriptions in that strange char- acter which has been called Ogam. Of these so many are to be found in Pembrokeshire that it has been considered probable they were invented in the district. They are usually in base Latin ; good specimens are to be seen on Caldy Island, St Dogmel's, Cwmgloyne near Nevern, and Treffgarne near Haverfordwest. Most of the crosses must be attributed to this period, though probably the inscribed ones at Carew and Nevern are of later date.

After Wales had been completely conquered by the Cymry, Rhodri Mawr divided it among his sons, and Pembrokeshire fell to Cadell in 877. From that period until its complete incorpora- tion with England it suffered terribly from the family feuds of the Welsh princes. The Scandinavians also proved a fearful scourge. Their first incursion, according to the Brut-y-Tywysogion, took place in 795. The creeks of Pembrokeshire were peculiarly adapted to the wants of the vikings, and they seem to have formed a strong colony in the county, of which such names as Asgard, Fishguard, Grafsholm, Freystrop, Goodwich, Milford Haven (Mid- fjord Havn), Haverfordwest (Havards Fjord), &., are an abiding evidence.

During the reign of William Rufus, Arnulph de Montgomery, son of Roger de Belesme, invaded the southern portion of the county with the king's sanction ; he gained a district and built Pembroke Castle ; Manorbier was most likely erected at the same time. In 1107 a colony of Flemings was sent into Pembrokeshire by the king (Henry I.); they settled at Haverford and

Tenby. A second party of Flemings and other adventurers was despatched to Pembroke by Henry II. ; these were mercenaries who had served in the civil war between Stephen and Maud. In April 1170 a party of Pembrokeshire men invaded and overran the eastern shores of Ireland.

In 1405 Owen Glendower harried the country ; he occupied Tenby with 10,000 Welshmen, and was joined by a French force of 12,000 men who had landed in Milford Haven. In 1456 Henry VII. was born in Pembroke Castle, the residence of his uncle Jasper Tudor, earl of Pembroke. After a long exile he landed at Brunt near Dale with French troops; here he was joined by Sir Rhys ap Thomas at the head of a large number of Welshmen, with whom he marched to Bosworth field. When the church property was disposed of under Henry VIII., Lamphey Court, once a bishop's seat, fell to the Devereux family, and it was the residence of the three Devereux carls of Essex. These noblemen were extremely popular, and it was most likely in consequence of the political views held by Robert the third earl that when the civil war broke out Pembrokeshire was found to be "'the most seditious county in all Wales, or rather of England, for the inhabitants were like English corporations, unlike loyal Welshmen" (J/ercurius Aulicus, 29th week, 20th July 1644). Pembroke and Tenby held out until 1648, when the Presbyterians rebelled against the Independents ; then under Mayor and Colonel Poyer the royal standard was hoisted on Pembroke keep. Cromwell himself besieged Pembroke, which yielded to him on 17th July 1648.

Besides the ruins of the fine castle of Pembroke, many others are to be found in the county, —Manorbier, Carew, Lamphey, Narberth,

Llawhaddon, Haverford, Roch, Newport; but Newport has been turned into a modern dwelling-house. Most of these are Edwardian erections on Norman work, some of them having Tudor additions.

The most important ecclesiastical building is the cathedral of St David's. Some sort of church existed on the site from the 6th century, but the earliest work now remaining is that of Bishop Peter de Leia (1180). This was seriously injured by the fall of the tower in 1220; the damage had scarcely been repaired when the church was wrecked by an earthquake in 1248. In

1828 Henry Gower succeeded to the bishopric, the most munificent benefactor the church of St David's ever saw; he transformed the cathedral, introducing the Decorated style throughout the edifice. After the Reformation the building was permitted to fall gradually into de- cay, until it had become little better than a ruin. the edifice, more especially the tower, was thoroughly restored under the late Sir Gilbert Scott.

PEMBROKE, a municipal and parliamentary borough of South Wales, is picturesquely situated on an elevated ridge at the head of Pennar Mouth Creek, on the south side of Milford Haven, 30 miles south-west of Carmarthen. The ruins of the ancient castle, originally founded by Arnulph de Montgomery in 1094, occupy the summit of the ridge. The castle was one of the strongest of the ancient fortresses of Wales. Beneath it is an enormous natural cavern, called "The Wogan," 70 feet long and 50 feet wide. At the beginning of the Civil War the castle was held for the Parliament, but, the commandants having gone over to the Royal cause, it was taken by Cromwell after six weeks' siege. Near the castle are the ruins of Monkton Priory church, in the Norman style, containing a long vaulted nave in good preservation. The church of St Mary, in the Early Pointed style, possesses a massive steeple. At Pater, 2 miles west of Pembroke, is Pembroke dock, an important Government dockyard, surrounded with very strong fortifications. The dock is 70 acres in extent, and the yard affords employment to about 24,000 artisans. There are also artillery and infantry barracks. Pembroke possesses a town-hall, assembly rooms, a mechanics' insti- tute, an infirmary, and several charities. The town was incorporated by Strongbow, earl of Pembroke, in the reign of Stephen, but the earliest charter preserved is one granted by John, which was confirmed by successive sovereigns. The population of the municipal borough (area, 5626 acres), which includes the two wards of Pater and Pembroke, in 1871 was 13,704, and in 1881 it was 14,156. The popu- lation of the parliamentary borough (area, 6298 acres) in the latter year was 16,339.

PEMPHIGUS. See Sxin, DIsHAsEs oF.

PEN, an instrument for writing or for forming lines with an ink or other coloured fluid. The English word, as well as its equivalents in French (plume) and in German (Feder), originally means a wing-feather, but in

ancient times the implements used for producing written charac- ters were not quills. The earliest writing implement was probably the stylus (Gr. oréAos), a pointed bodkin of metal, bone, or ivory, which, however, was only used for produc- ing incised or engraved letters. The calamus (Gr. xéAapos) or arundo, the hollow tubular stalk of grasses growing in marshy lands, was the true ancient representative of the modern pen; hollow joints of bamboo were similarly employed. The use of such pens can be traced to a remote antiquity among the civilized nations of the East, where reeds and canes are to this day in common use as writing instruments. The earliest specific allusion to the quill pen occurs in the writings of St Isidore of Seville (early part of the 7th century).! But there is no reason to assume that the quill pen was not in use at an earlier period, and, indeed, remains have been found which prove that even metal pens were not altogether unknown to the ancient Romans.

1 “Tnstrumenta scribe calamus et penna; ex his enim verba paginis

infiguntur ; sed calamus arboris est, penna avis, cujus acumen divi- ditur in duo.”

But in 1863:

483

The quills, formerly in exclusive use, and still largely employed among Western communities as writing instru- ments, are obtained principally from the wings of the goose. Swan-quills are also highly prized, and for special purposes crow-quills and the wing-feathers of certain other birds are adopted. For the method of preparing quills, &c., see FEaTuers, vol. ix. p. 60. In 1809 Joseph Bramah, the famous inventor, devised and patented a machine for cutting up the quill into separate nibs by dividing the barrel into three or even four parts, and cutting these transversely into ‘‘two, three, four, and some into five lengths.” Bramah’s invention first familiarized the public with the appearance and use of the nib and holder in place of the complete quill or barrel, and in that sense he anti- cipated the form of pen now most commonly used. In 1818 Charles Watt obtained a patent for gilding and pre- paring quills and pens by manual labour and chemical means, which may be regarded as the precursor of the gold pen. Buta more

distinct advance in this direction was effected in 1822, when Hawkins and Mordan patented the application of horn and tortoise-shell to the formation of pen-nibs, the points of which were rendered durable by impressing into them small pieces of diamond, ruby, or other very hard substance, or by lapping a small piece of thin sheet gold over the end of the tortoise-shell, and by various other ways securing a hard unalterable point to the pen.

Metallic pens, though perhaps not altogether unknown even in classical times, did not come into use till the pre- sent century, and indeed did not become common till near the middle of the century. At the meeting of the British Association in Birmingham in 1839 steel pens were scarcely known; ten years later the manufacture had become an important local industry. In 1803 a steel pen was made and sold in London by a Mr Wise, which was in the form of a tube or barrel pen, the edges meeting to form the slit with sides cut away as in the case of an ordi- nary quill. These sold at about five shillings each, and as they were hard, stiff, and unsatisfactory instruments they were not in great demand. In 1808 a metallic pen was patented by Bryan Donkin, made of two separate parts, flat or nearly so, with the flat sides opposite each other forming the slit of the pen, or, as an alternative, of one picce, flat and not cylindrical as in the usual form, bent to the proper angle before being inserted into the tube which forms its holder. In Birmingham a steel pen was made by a split- ring manufacturer, Harrison, for Dr Priestley towards the end of the 18th century. Harrison in after years became associated in the split-ring business with Josiah Mason, who was one of the great pioneers of the steel-pen trade. Mason developed the manufacture on the basis of an in- vention by James Perry, who in 1830 obtained a patent for improvements which must be regarded as the founda- tion of the steel-pen industry. Perry's improvements consisted in producing pens from hard, thin, and elastic metal, the most suitable material being described as the very best steel brought to a spring temper. The necessary flexibility was given to the pen by a central hole formed in the pen between the nib and the shoulder in connexion with a central slit, and by making between the nib and the shoulder one or more lateral slits on each side of the central slit. Joseph Gillott, who divides with Mason and Perry the credit of perfecting the metallic pen, does not appear as a patentee till 1831, when he patented an im- provement which consisted in forming elongated points on the nibs of pens. These early pens lacked softness, flexi- bility, and

smoothness of action, and subsequent inventions of Perry, Gillott, Mordan, and others were largely devoted to overcoming such defects. Metals other than steel were also frequently suggested by inventors, those most commonly

proposed being silver, zinc, German silver, aluminium, and aluminium bronze, the last-named having at one time come into extensive use. The development of the gold pen can- not be traced through the patent records in the same way as some others. Dr Wollaston, it is recorded, used a gold pen composed of two thin slips of gold tipped with rhodium, made apparently on the principle patented by Donkin in 1808. Messrs Mordan of London have the credit of being the earliest regular makers of gold pens with tips of osmium- iridium alloy, and that manufacture was subsequently de- veloped by Messrs Wiley of Birmingham. ‘The gold pens now made are provided with iridium tips, and their manu- facture is a special industry, requiring processes and machines different from those used in the steel-pen industry.

Fountain pens and penholders in which considerable reservoirs of ink could be carried ready for use were intro- duced by a patented invention of the ingenious Joseph Bramah. Of his several plans for a fountain pen one proposal was a hollow tube of silver or other metal, the tube being made so thin that it could readily be compressed out of shape and so cause an escape of ink to the nib, and another plan was to fit the tube with a piston which might slide down the interior and so force out ink. John Scheffer in 1819 patented a device consisting of a reservoir in the holder operated on by a stud, which, when pressed by the thumb, yielded a flow of ink to the nib. Many forms of attachment and modifications of the shape of the pen have also been introduced with the view of enabling the pen itself to carry a considerable supply of ink, and to discharge it in writing in a safe and equal manner. A highly original and comparatively successful form of fountain pen of recent introduction is known as the stylograph, in which the ordinary form of nib is dis- pensed with, and connected with the barrel or reservoir is a finely-tapered point tipped with iridium pierced with a fine aperture. Into the aperture is fitted an iridium needle or plug attached internally to a

delicate gold spring, and the act of writing sufficiently pushes back the needle to allow the escape of the requisite flow of ink by the aperture. The two principal forms of stylograph are that of Mac- kinnon, patented first in the United States in March 1879, and that of Cross, the United States patent for which was secured in January 1878.

The finish which the common steel pen now shows, and the low price at which it can be sold, are triumphs of manufacturing skill, the credit of which is largely due to Birmingham. For the fraction of a farthing there can now be purchased an article incomparably superior to that which in the early years of the century cost five shillings. The metal nsed consists of rolled sheets of cast steel of the finest quality, made from Swedish charcoal iron. These sheets are cut into strips of suitable width, annealed in a mufile furnace, and pickled in a bath of dilute sulphuric acid to remove the oxidized scale from the surface. The strips so cleaned are next rolled between steel rollers till they are reduced to ribbons the thickness of the pens to be made. At this stage the raw material is ready for the series of manufacturing operations, most of which are performed with the aid of hand fly-presses, moving suitable cutting, staniping, and embossing attachments. The pen blanks are first cut out of the ribbon so as to leave as little scrap as possible. These blanks are next pierced, that is, the central perforation and the side or shoulder slits by which flexibility is secured are made at one operation. After again annealing, they are marked and em-bossed with maker’s name, trade-mark, or any of the endless variety of marks by which pens are distinguished from each other. Up to this point the blanks are flat; they are now raised or rounded into the semi-cylindrical form in which pens are used. At this stage the pens are tempered by heating in iron boxes in a mufile, plunging in oil, and heating over a fire in a rotating cylindrical vessel till their surfaces attain the dull blue colour characteristic of spring steel elasticity. They are then scoured and polished by being revolved in large tin cylinders, in which they are mixed with sand, pounded crucibles, or such substances. The grinding of the points next follows, an operation performed by small rapidly- revolving emery-wheels, on which the points are first ground lengthwise and then across the nib, the object of the process being to increase the elasticity of the point. The slitting process which

follows—that is, the cutting of the pen-slit from the perforation to the point —is effected with a chisel-cutter worked by a hand screw- press. On the precision with which the slit divides the point depends the perfection of the pen, to finish which it now only re- mains to colour the surface in a revolving cylinder over a charcoal fire, and to varnish it in a solution of shellac.

Birmingham, which was the first home of the steel-pen industry, continues to be its principal centre, but steel pens are also made in the United Statcs and in France and Germany. (J. PA.)

PENANCE. The word “penance” (pendtentia) has a double signification,— its strict legal meaning of a penalty inflicted by the formal sentence of a spiritual authority in

‘punishment of an offence, and with the primary object of

amending and so benefiting the offender; and its wider and more popular sense of any ascetic practice adopted, whether voluntarily or under compulsion, for the expiation of sin or for advance in spiritual attainment. Broadly speaking, no trace of such a theory is visible in classical paganism, from which the idea of sin as a moral defile ment is almost absent. There are faint marks discernible in the Greek heroic legends of something analogous to penance, when we read of a hero being driven into exile for some crime (most usually unpremeditated homicide), and not permitted to return till he had found some one able and willing to purify him with certain lustral sacrifices. In the historical period these lustral sacrifices continue, but the accompanying penalty disappears. Punishments for religious offences, and of a very severe kind, extending to death itself, as in the case of Socrates, are frequent, but they are not of the nature of penance, not having the amendment of the offender in view, but only the safety of the state, to be secured by an act of vengeance designed to avert the anger of the gods and to prevent the repetition of the crime believed likely to invoke it. The Oriental religions, contrariwise, teem with the ascetic principle, and personal austerities form a large part of the Zoroastrian, Buddhist, and Brahman systems. Yet, with the exception of the pilgrimages, which enter

so deeply and widely into the religious habits of the peoples professing these creeds, and involve much toil and suffering in the case of the poorer pilgrims, these austerities are not of general inci- dence, but are confined to a comparatively small, and, so to say, professional body of devotees, such as the Indian Jogis, who are entirely distinct from the main body of their co-religionists. Islam had originally nothing even remotely like the practices in question, save in so far as the annual fast of Ramadan and the hajj to Mecca and other sacred places necessitated self-denial ; and it is even on record that Mohammed himself directly discouraged an ascetic spirit which displayed itself in some of his trustiest companions and disciples, such as ‘Omar, “Ali, Abu-Dharr, and Abt-Horeirah. But the reaction of conquered Persia, long the home of Zoroastrian asceticism, on the Arab victors was marked and early, and an inner body of austere devotees arose in the midst of Mohammedanism within a century and a half of the Flight, though having no justifi- cation in the Koran or in the body of early tradition for their tenets and usages. They were in almost every instance of Persian origin, and the most famous of them all, the converted robber Fodheil Abu ‘Ali Zalikhani, the Benedict of Islam, who first organized the scattered ascetics into the brotherhood of dervishes, was himself a Khorasani of pure descent. But, like the Indian Jogis, the Moham- medan dervishes and fakirs have continued as an isolated class, and have never exerted the kind of influence which Christian monachism, especially in the West, has done. Nor has the principle of penance ever formed an import ant integer of the Jewish religion. The Levitical code enjoins the performance of various lustral sacrifices in expiation of certain sins; but the cost of the victims is the only element of penalty, being virtually a money fine

on the offender. The prophets, while dwelling much on the necessity of repentance, of a moral change in the sinner, are almost entirely silent as to any accompanying acts and observances of an ascetic nature; and, though occasional references to prolonged fastings and to the wearing of sackcloth as penitential exercises are found, yet they appear as exceptional and spontaneous, and not as part of an accredited system, nor as enjoined by any authority external to the devotee or penitent himself. Even under the Talmudic code there is no organized system of penance. The three degrees

of excommunica- tion, niddui, cherem, and shammata, ascending from mere exclusion from the congregation for a month, through the stage of anathema, to that of public and ignominious expulsion from fellowship in Israel (and that at first irrevocably, though the penalty was afterwards relaxed), practically exhaust the code, since there are no formal provisions for inflicting other penalties, whatever voluntary observances may at any time have been superadded.

The Christian theory of penance ultimately rests on the view that the Christian church is the precise analogue of the Jewish people under the elder dispensation. As the Jews were the one family on earth in direct covenant with God, so that it became necessary for all Gentiles who desired to be brought into the like relation to abandon their own proper nationality and to become Jews by adop- tion, forsaking their former habits and associations together with their creed; and as various offences against the law of Moses were punished with temporary or final exclusion from fellowship in the Hebrew polity ; so was it from a very early period in the Christian church. One marked difference between the Rabbinical and the Christian dis- cipline is indeed visible from the first, that the former in- volved the suspension or deprivation of civil rights, whereas the latter, in all the earlier centuries at any rate, was a purely spiritual penalty. But they are agreed in com- bining two ideas, one wholly foreign (as already observed) to paganism, and the other but vaguely shadowed therein, —the aim of healing the offender himself and the need of his making public satisfaction to the society whose rules he had broken, and which might suffer in reputation and influence by reason of his misconduct. It is this notion of satisfaction which has led to the extension of the word “penance” itself from its more restricted and legal meaning to its wider use as covering the whole range of ascetic practices. And, as it soon came to be accepted that the inward sorrow for sin would be attended with an outward token of that sorrow, involving pain or humilia- tion in some form or other, there are four distinct stages in the ecclesiastical use of the word “ poenitentia,”—first, as denoting the change of mind due to sorrow for sin ; next, the external penalty attached to each offence ; thirdly, the discipline of the church in dealing with all spiritual offences ; and lastly, any piece of austerity practised with a religious motive; and the fact of the Latin language having no doublets like the English “ penitence” and “ penance” to express the

distinct though allied ideas of the mental attitude and the outward action has powerfully conditioned Latin theology and practice.1

There is naturally but little to be found in the New Testament on the subject of discipline; but the whole principle is provided for and anticipated in one saying of

1 The Greek word merdvoa, which stands both for repentance and for the sacrament or mystery of penance, has undergone a singular degeneration of meaning in ecclesiastical language, being often used to denote an obeisance of head and body, because that gesture is one which Was enjoined upon penitents as part of the outward expression of sorrow for sin. But this ambiguity has had no theological results ; because the penalty imposed in the confessional is not called perdvota, but érityuia, and thus no confusion can arise, especially as the context always shows clearly when mwerdvoca stands for a mere gesture.

Christ—that which directs that he who neglects to hear the church as arbiter in a dispute shall be regarded as a heathen man and a publican, and which goes on to con- fer upon the apostles the power of binding and loosing (Matt. xviii. 17, 18),—words which they, with their Jewish experience and associations, must needs have interpreted as authorizing, and even enjoining, the infliction of pen- alties, and notably that of excommunication, upon members of the new society. Accordingly, the leading example of such discipline, the case of the incestuous Corinthian, attests plainly some form of trial, a sentence of excom- munication, some proof of repentance, and the consequent reconciliation and restoration of the offender (1 Cor. v. ; 2 Cor. ii. 6-10); and it is most probable that some such method was pursued in the sub-apostolic church, each case being dealt with locally, and on its separate merits, long before any formal system or code came into existence. The penalties seem at first to have been very simple and lenient, leaving out of account the difficult problem of the phrase ‘delivering to Satan,” twice found in this connexion (1 Cor. v. 5; 1 Tim. i. 20), which may mean merely relegating to heathen fellowship by exclusion from the society of Christians, but also may cover much more ground. Exclusion from the eucharist itself, exclusion from non-communicating

attendance at the eucharist, and exclusion from all religious assemblies for even the minor offices of worship are the only censures discoverable in the earlier period, though it is not long before certain additional penalties accompanying these grades of separa- tion begin to appear. The following broad rules govern all cases of penitential discipline in the ancient church. (1) Penance related only to baptized and communicant Christians. Even catechumens were not held capable of it, to say nothing of Jews or Pagans. (2) It was ex- clusively spiritual, and in no way touched the civil con- dition of the penitent, even after the conversion of the empire. (8) It was not compulsory, but spontaneous ; nay, so far was it from being imposed, that it had to be sought as a favour. Of course, where it was not so sought the excommunication of the offender remained in force, but this excommunication was not regarded as in itself a penance in the later use of that term. (4) The most usual rule allowed of penance but once. The relapsing offender had no second opportunity granted him. (5) It was always preceded by confession (e£oporsynous), a term which, however, even as early as Tertullian's time, was already extended to include, over and above the oral acknowledgment of guilt, the external acts of mortification accompanying it (De Pon.,c. 9). (6) There was a careful classification of the offences involving penance, and after a time a corresponding classification of penitents into certain fixed grades, through which it was in many cases necessary to pass, from the lowest to the highest, before receiving absolution and being restored to full communion.

The case dealt with by St Paul establishes one point, that of the comparative brevity of the time of penance, even for very grave offences, since three years is the longest period which can have elapsed between the two epistles to the Corinthians ; whereas under the later system periods of fifteen and twenty years are not rarely to be found, and in some cases penance was for life, however protracted. The earlier method can be shown to have come into wide acceptance far within the 2d century, because it forms the subject of a charge made against the church by Tertullian in one of his Montanist treatises (De Pudicitia) ; and the more stringent discipline of the succeeding era appears to be due to the nearly simultaneous action of two causes,—the great success which attended the persecution set on foot by the emperor Decius in 249, resulting as it did in a far larger propor-

tion of apostasies and compromises than any of the others, and the rise of Novatianism within two years, in protest against the leniency exercised towards the lapsed. Although the church rejected the extreme theories of rigid discipline which Novatian formulated, yet it was tacitly admitted that he did but exaggerate a truth, and the reins began to be drawn tighter from that time forward. Much in- formation regarding the practical working of the system in the third century can be gathered from the epistles of Cyprian, and from his treatise On the Lapsed; but the fact that he had to struggle against a lax party in Africa, at the very time when laxity was preponderant in the Italian Church, proves that no uniform system had yet been evolved. The 4th century is the period when broad general rules, intended to apply to all cases, begin to be laid down, and when the distribution of penitents into fixed classes or grades is clearly evident. The Eastern Church took the lead in this development, and canons of Ancyra and Neo-Cesarea in 314 refer to the grades of penance in terms which imply their general recognition as already established. They are first defined in an epistle ascribed to Gregory Thaumaturgus about the year 258, and are as under: (1) Weepers, forbidden to enter a church, and permitted merely to assemble at the doors to ask the prayers of those entering; (2) Hearers, suffered to come in for the Scripture lessons and the minor offices, but obliged to depart before the eucharistic office began ; (3) Kneelers, allowed to attend the earlier part of the eucharistic office, as far as the close of the introductory portion, but obliged to withdraw then along with the catechumens ; (4) Standers, who might remain throughout the entire rite, but were not suffered to communicate. This minute subdivision does not seem to have made good a footing in Western Christendom, where the first of these degrees is not found on record (Morinus, De Penitent., vi. 8), nor did it hold its ground very long in the East itself, disappearing as it does during the 5th century. The penitential observances usually imposed on those who were admitted to these grades were public confession of their offence in presence of the congregation, and that, in the case of the lowest grade, several times over ; the disuse of all ornaments, and the assumption of a sackcloth garb, with the strewing of ashes on the head (Euseb., H. £., v. 28); men had to cut off their hair and shave their beards ; women to wear their hair dishevelled and to adopt a special veil; all had to abstain from baths, festivals, and, gener- ally

speaking, all physical enjoyments, and fasting on bread and water was often enjoined ; they were bound to much more frequent and regular attendance at all religious assem- blies than the faithful or the catechumens (Conc. Carthag. IV., c. 81); if possessed of means, they were required to give largely in alms, or to assist actively in works of charity ; and they were, for the first ten centuries, incapable of being admitted to ordination. One result of the crowds of peni- tents which had to be dealt with after the lull that followed the Decian persecution was that the bishops were no longer sufficient in numbers to deal with each case separately, though under the earlier system the bishop alone (even when the presbyters acted as his assessors) could put to penance, as he continued for a long time to be the only officer who could reconcile and readmit those who had per- formed their appointed penance. A practice arose, therefore, of appointing certain presbyters to confer with all persons applying for admission to penance, and to receive their confessions privately, in order to prepare them for the public confession which made an integral part of penance, and indeed to decide whether they could be admitted thereto at all. These officers, known as “ penitentiaries,” were abolished in the church of Constantinople by the patriarch Nectarius about 390 (Socrat., 1. Z., v.19; Sozom., ZZ. #,,

vii. 16), and his example was followed throughout nearly the whole East ; but the office continued in the West, with various modifications necessitated by the gradual change of discipline.

The main difference between the earlier and later systems lies in the fact that penance was for some centuries restricted to certain very grave sins, to wit, idolatry, adultery, and murder, with such lesser offences as were closely allied (as, for instance, the delivery of the sacred books to pagan inquisitors, that traditio which has given the words “treason” and “traitor” to modern diction) ; nor does it appear that any distinction was made between the treatment of those penitents whose guilt was notorious and those whose own voluntary confession alone made it manifest. Minor offences were punished with suspension of communion and with refusal of oblations at the hands of the offender, and many were left wholly to the indi- vidual conscience. But the catalogue of canonical offences was much enlarged at

the time when the penitential system was developed and codified,—theft, usury, false witness, polygamy, habitual drunkenness, and some others being included amongst those which had to be publicly expiated., Yet it was this increased severity which led to the almost total abrogation of public penance, because of the scandal given by the publication of the numerous offences on the new list, whereas the cases under the older rule were necessarily few, however serious. It is clearly stated by both Socrates and Sozomen that the motive of Nectarius in abolishing the office of penitentiary was to avoid the recurrence of an uproar occasioned by the public confession of a lady of high rank, implicating others in a disgraceful fashion, so that he judged it better to leave the question of communion to be settled in private by penitents with their religious advisers, and not to be made matter of general publicity. This became the rule at once in the East, but public penance held its place in the West for many centuries longer, and in fact has never become entirely obsolete. There was, however, a considerable innovation introduced after the 7th century, in that offences privately committed were put in a different category from public sins, and were no longer made liable to public penance, but might be, and soon were, dealt with by private confession and penance only. Not only so, but, whereas the accusation of any person to the bishop as an offender was the usual mode of bringing his case under ecclesiastical cognizance in the earlier Christian centuries, on the other hand the discipline introduced in the Middle Ages was to exact public penance from such alone as had been convicted on trial before secular judges. The first beginnings of this innovation on Western usage are attributed by Morinus with much probability to Theodore of Tarsus, the Greek archbishop of Canterbury, who sat from 668 to 690, and whose Penitential (or code of ecclesiastical discipline), though not the earliest even now extant in the British Isles, soon achieved wide acceptance throughout the West, not- withstanding that it followed the then long-established Eastern usage in favour of private as opposed to public confession. A more serious innovation, fraught with dangerous consequences, made its appearance somewhat later, that of buying off a penance by a money payment to be expended in alms, a system in full force in the 9th century, as attested by the capitularies of Hincmar of Rheims and Hérard of Tours. Another custom which tended to break down the efficiency of the earlier discipline was that of resorting to Rome to have the more serious cases adjudicated on by the pope. At first this was an

exceptional mode of dealing with difficult matters, regarded as too serious or too intricate for local decision, but by the 11th century it had become a fashion, so that offenders of any rank or wealth refused habitually to submit to

penance at the hands of the local authorities, and betook themselves to Rome, where they stated their case in their own way, with no evidence to check them, so that they were enabled either to evade the canonical penances altogether or to get them much lightened. This abuse was combated by various councils, notably that of Seligen- stadt in 1022, which decreed in its eighteenth canon “that no indulgences obtained from the Roman pontiff should avail for penitents, unless they had first fulfilled the penances set them by their own priests according to the degree of their offence ; and, if they chose to go then to Rome, they must procure a permit from their own bishop, and letters on the matter in question to be carried to the pope.” But this attempt to check the practice was unsuccessful, and it became established that, just as certain cases of conscience were reserved to the bishop, and could not be dealt with by ordinary parish priests, so certain other cases were withdrawn from the cognizance of the bishops themselves, and reserved for the hearing and decision of the pope alone. Many alterations in the nature and incidence of penances were made in the course of the later Middle Ages, but the details are unimportant except for specialists ; it will suffice to mention such ex- amples as imprisonment in monasteries, penitential pil- grimages, and flagellations, the last having been introduced by the hermit Dominic the Cuirassier (died 1060).

It is time to speak of the position occupied by penance in the theological systems of the Latin and Greek Churches. Both of them account penance, taken in its widest sense of the method of dealing spiritually with sins by confession, discipline, and absolution, as a sacrament, but there are various differences in their theories and methods. The Greek and Armenian Churches are in full agreement with the Latin Church in regarding confession as an integral and essential part of penance, of which they consider it the outward and visible sign, while the spiritual part of the sacrament consists in the form of absolution, whether precatory or declaratory, pronounced by the priest. And they lay down that the external acts of asceticism per- formed by the penitent are not strictly part of the

sacra- ment itself, but merely the fulfilment of the church's injunctions, and tokens of that repentance which should attend the confession of sins. And confession, though recommended as a religious observance, is not a matter of formal ecclesiastical precept in the Eastern Church, but is left to the individual conscience, though it is usual to practise it at least once a year, prior to the Easter communion. There are also certain public penances some- times enjoined in the East for sins of exceptional gravity, publicly or legally proved, but they do not form part of the normal system, one part of which, in strict agreement with ancient usage, consists in suspending heinous offenders from communion for some years, during which they can receive only the dvriéwpov or blessed bread. And in all cases the Easterns deny that penances are in any sense satisfactions or expiations of sins made to appease divine justice.

In the Latin Church the first noticeable divergence from Oriental usage is that the old public form of penance, technically known as "solennis," still survives in a docu- mentary fashion in the Pontifical, though it has dropped into virtual abeyance. It consists of two distinct and correlative parts,—the public expulsion of penitents from church on Ash Wednesday and their reconciliation and readmission on Maundy Thursday following. As these rites preserve in essentials the traditions of very early Western usage, it is well to give some account of them here.

On Ash Wednesday, then, those penitents whose names are

Written down on a list for the purpose assemble, in coarse raiment and barefoot, at the cathedral of their diocese at nine o clock A.M.

Their penances are then assigned them severally by the penitentiary or some other officer deputed for the purpose, after which they are sent out of the church, and bidden to wait at the doors. 'The bishop, attended by the clergy and choir, takes his seat in the uviddle of the nave, facing the doors, having previously blessed ashes for the coming rite. The penitents are next admitted, and kneeling before the bishop, have ashes sprinkled on their

heads by him or by some other dignitary present, and sackcloth is also laid upon them in similar fashion. The penitcntial psalms and the litanies are then said, all kneeling ; after this the penitents stand up to hear a sermon from the bishop, at the close of which he takes one of them by the right hand, and leads him towards the doors, followed by all the other penitents, each grasping another's hand, and also holding lighted tapers, when they are ejected in a body. They kneel outside, and are again addressed by the bishop, enjoining them to spend the time of penance in prayers, fastings, almsdeeds, and pilgrimages, and to return on Maundy Thursday for reconcilia- tion. 'The church-doors are then shut in their faces, and the bishop proceeds to celebrate mass.

The office on Maundy Thursday begins with the penitential psalms and the litanies, said by the bishop and clergy in church, while the penitents wait, barefoot and with unlighted tapers, out- side the doors. After some preliminary ceremonies, a deacon goes to the penitents with a lighted candle, and kindles their tapers. The bishop then seats himself, as in the former rite, and the peni- tents are presented to him collectively by the archdeacon with a formal address. The bishop then riscs, and with his immediate attendants advances to the doors, where he delivers a short address to the penitents, which ended, he returns into the church, still keeping near the doors, and, while a psalm is sung, the penitents enter and kneel before him; then the archdeacon or archpriest petitions for their reconciliation, and, having replied to the bishop's question as to their fitness, recites certain versicles and responses alternately with the choir, while the bishop takes hold of the hand of one of the penitents, who in his turn takes that of another, till all form a chain, and thus they are led by the bishop to the middle of the church, where he recites a form of absolution over them. Psalms and prayers, closing with another absolutory form and a benediction, end the office, after which the penitents resume their ordinary dress, laying aside that which they had worn during Lent.

A further difference between the Eastern and Latin Churches is that the latter has made confession a formal precept ever since the canon of the Lateran council under Innocent III. in 1215, Omnis utriusque sexus, which enjoins all those arrived at years of discretion to confess at least once a year to their own parish priest, or to another priest with consent of the parish

priest, the act being no longer left optional. And the choice of a confessor is limited also by the rule that absolution is not accounted valid unless pronounced by a priest having local jurisdiction and faculties. The chief divergence, however, between East and West on the sacrament of penance is due to the remarkable developments both in the doctrinal and the disciplinary aspects of the rite which took place in Latin Christendom during the Middle Ages. The former of these is mainly concerned with the new application, in the 12th century, of the system of indulgences, from its original character of a relaxation of the duration or severity of the temporal penalties annexed to offences by the canons to the remission of purgatorial chastisement of departed souls in the intermediate state—a tenet which seems to have been first developed by Hugh and Richard of St Victor—which gave rise to the practice of penitential observances by persons not lying under any censure, with the aim of acquiring the advantages thus held out to them for themselves or others, living or departed, to whom they are at liberty to transfer them. The latter is due to the legal, methodizing, and codifying temper which forms such a marked peculiarity of the Latin mind, in contrast with the more speculative Greek. Hence has arisen a copious literature, beginning with those Penitentials, or codes of disciplinary canons, already mentioned, but amplified at a later time into a vast system of moral theology and casuistry, mainly elaborated in the 16th and 17th centuries (see Licuort), whereby the whole modern administration of penance in the Latin Church is regulated. The Oriental churches have no corresponding

| system or text-books, and continue to observe the less

methodized and determinate order in use during the 6th and immediately succeeding centuries. There is no theo- logical difference between them, however, in respect of their view of absolution, although in the one case a declaratory, and in the other a precatory, form is employed. Buta distinction in practice is maintained hereupon, for even the United Greeks are obliged, in virtue of an instruction issued by Clement VIII. in 1595, to use only the declaratory form when pronouncing absolution. In Latin theology the matter of the sacrament of penance is distinguished as “remote” and

“proximate,” as “‘ exterior ” and “ interior,” as “necessary” and “sufficient.” The remote and exterior matter of penance is all post-baptismal sin, with the remis- sion and correction of which penance has to do. The class of mortal sins are the necessary exterior matter, because confession is the only recognized mode of obtaining their remission. Venial sins are sufficient or voluntary matter of penance, because confession of them is not compulsory, and remission may be otherwise had. The contrition, confession, and satisfaction of the penitent are the proxi- mate and interior matter of penance, with this further distinction, that the two former are “‘essential” and insepar- able parts of it, while satisfaction, though an “integral ” part, is not essential, being capable of dispensation. The form of the sacrament is the absolution pronounced by the priest. And, as before stated, the acts of bodily or spiritual mortification enjoined on the penitent as parts of his satisfaction, are called penances.

In the Church of England, penance, governed by pre- Reformation canons and statutes, has continued to be inflicted by sentence of the ecclesiastical courts down to very recent times,—one of its commonest forms being that of standing at the church-door clad in a white sheet. Pre- cautions were taken by constitutions of Cardinal Othobon and Archbishop Stratford against the abuse of money com- mutations of penance; and the right of the spiritual courts to deal with cases involving penance, whether corporal or pecuniary, was protected against writs of prohibition by the statutes Circumspecte agatis, 13 Edward I. st. 4,and Articul: Clerr, 9 Edward IT. st. 1,¢. 2. The Reformatio Legum provided that ecclesiastical penances should not be com- muted for money, save for some grave and necessary cause, and that such money should be applied to the relief of the poor, while a repeated offence should admit of no com- mutation. This same question came up frequently, having been dealt with under Queen Elizabeth, Charles I., William ITI., and Queen Anne, on the last occasion by Convocation, which laid down rules that no commutation-money should be allowed by any ecclesiastical judge without the consent of the ordinary in writing, nor disposed of without the like consent. ‘The commination office in the Book of Common Prayer makes reference to the solemn Lenten penance described above, as a thing desirable to be restored ; but no action has ever been taken for the purpose.

In the Lutheran communion, penance, though at first amongst the usages intended to be maintained, and acknowledged in the Articles of Schmalkald, and also in the Apology for the Confession of Augsburg, has never held an effective place, being in truth incompatible with the doctrines and polity elaborated by Luther himself; so _ that, although confession and absolution continue as sur- vivals in the Lutheran system, they are not associated with any regular discipline. Far otherwise is it with Calvinism. The twelfth chapter of the fourth book of Calvin's Institutes is mainly taken up with the question of ecclesiastical discipline, whose necessity is broadly stated, and alleged to extend to the whole body, clerical and lay alike, and to be derived from the power of the Keys. No precise rules are laid down, beyond saying that censures may begin with private monition, but should ascend in

severity in proportion to the gravity and notoriety of offences; but, in point of fact, the system raised on this basis by most of the Calvinist societies was a stringent and searching one. In particular, the Pirst and Second Books of Discipline, put forth by John Knox and by the second generation of Scottish Reformers, lay down the principles for dealing with offenders against religion and morals with much clearness and precision, and the Form of Process in the Judicatories of the Kirk, as approved by the General Assembly in 1707, prescribes the manner of proceeding to inflict the several penalties enacted against a variety of offences and scandals. These at one time covered a wide area, but in later times only certain forms of immorality have continued to be brought under ecclesi- astical cognizance for public censure and penalties. All the other more important Protestant sects have their own systems of discipline, more or less stringent, but they are virtually restricted in operation to suspension of communion with the body, or to expulsion from membership, no other penalties being provided.

Bibliography.—Morinus, Comment. Hist. de Disciptl. in Administr. Sacram. Penit. (Antwerp, 1682); Pelliccia, De Christ. Eccl. Pol. (Cologne, 1828-38) ; Siegel, Handb. der Christ.~~kirchl. Alterthiimer, s. v. "Busse" (Leipsic, 1880); Bingham, Antig. of the Christ. Church, bk. xvi. (London, 1840); Smith and Cheetham, Dict, of Christ. Antiq., s. v. ''Penitence"~~

~~(London, 1880); Richard et Giraud, Bibliothéque Sacrée, s. v. “ Penitence” (Paris, 1824); Wasser~~ schleben, Bussordn. der Abendlénd. Kirche (Halle, 1851) ; Theodori Cantuariensis, Penitentiale (Paris, 1679); Probst, Kirchl. Discipl. in den drei ersten Christ. Jahrh. (Tiibingen, 1873), and Sakramente u. Sakramentalien in d. drei erst. Christ. Jahrh. (Tiibingen, 1872) ; Chardon, Hist. des Sacrem. (Paris, 1745); Guettée, upos. de la Doct. de? Eg. Cathol. Orthod. (Paris, 1866); Macaire, Théol. Dogm. Orthod. (Paris, 1860) ; Calvin, Znstitutiones; Phillimore, Hecles, Law of the Ch. of Engl. (London, 1873); Ayliffe, Paregon Jur. Can. Angl. (London, 1726) ; Du Cange, Gloss. ad Script. Med. et Inf. Latin, s. v ‘*Peenitentia” (Basel, 1762); Compend. of the Laws of the Ch. of Scotl. (Edinburgh, 1831). (hy Ey i)

PENANG. See Prince or WaLzEs ISLAND.

PENARTH, a seaport of Glamorganshire, Wales, is picturesquely situated on rising ground on the south side of the mouth of the Taff opposite Cardiff, from which it is four miles distant by rail and two by steamer. It was a small and unimportant village until an Act was passed in 1856 for making a tidal harbour. The docks (1865-84) are on a very extensive and complete scale, and the town is now an important shipping port for the minerals of South Wales, especially alabaster, coal, and iron. In 1883 there entered 1130 steamers and 567 sailing-vessels with an aggregate registered tonnage of 1,316,265 tons. The total quantity of coal and coke shipped in the same year was 2,274,003 tons. A line of rails 4 miles in length connects the docks with the Taff Vale Railway. The town is frequented in summer as a bathing-place, and the Rheetic beds at the head are of special interest to geologists. The principal buildings are the custom-house and dock-offices, and the church of St Augustine, in the Early English style, erected by the Baroness Windsor, who also built national schools. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 2202 acres) in 1871 was 3104, and in 1881 it was

6228.

PENATES, Roman gods of the store-room and kitchen, derived their name from penus, “eatables, food.” The store-room over which they presided was, in old times, beside the atriwm, the room which served as kitchen, parlour, and bedroom in one; but in later times the store- room was in the back part of the house. It was sanctified by the presence of the Penates, and none

but pure and chaste persons might enter it, just as with the Hindus the kitchen is sacred and inviolable. The family hearth, which anciently stood in the atriwm, was their altar ; on it were placed their images, two in number, for the Penates were always in pairs—the name does not occur in the singular.

PEN—PEN

They had no individual names, but were always known under the general designation, Penates. Closely associated with the Penates were the Lares, another species of domestic deity, who seem to have been the deified spirits of deceased ancestors (see Lares). But while each family had two Penates it had but one Lar. In the household shrine the image of the Lar (dressed in a toga) was placed between the two images of the Penates, which were represented as dancing and elevating a drinking-horn in token of joy and plenty. The three images together were sometimes called

Penates, sometimes Lares, and either name was used meta—

phorically for “home.” The shrine stood originally in the atrium, but when the hearth and the kitchen were sepa- rated from the atriwm and removed to the back of the house, and meals were taken in an upper story, the position of the shrine was also shifted. In the houses at Pompeii it is sometimes in the kitchen, sometimes in the rooms. In the later empire it was placed behind the house-door, and a taper or lamp was kept burning before it. But the worship in the interior of the house was also kept up even into Christian times ; it was forbidden by an ordinance of Theodosius (392 a.p.). The old Roman used, in company with his children and slaves, to offer a morning sacrifice and prayer to his household gods. Before meals the blessing of the gods was asked, and after the meal, but before dessert, there was a short silence, and a portion of food was placed on the hearth and burned. If the hearth and the images were not in the eating-room, either the images were brought and put on the table, or before the shrine was placed a table on which were set a salt-cellar, food, and a burning lamp. ‘Three days in the month, viz., the Calends, Nones, and Ides (i.c., the first, the fifth or seventh, and the tairteenth or fifteenth), were set apart for special family worship, as were also the Caristia (22d February) and the Saturnalia in December. On these days as well as on such occasions as birthdays, marriages, and safe

returns from journeys, the images were crowned and offerings made to them of cakes, honey, wine, incense, and sometimes a pig. As each family had its own Penates, so the state, as a collection of families, had its public Penates. Intermediate between the worship of the public and private Penates were probably the rites (sacra) observed by each clan (gens) or collection of families supposed to be descended from a common ancestor. The other towns of Latium had their public Penates as well as Rome. The sanctuary of the whole Latin league was at Lavinium. To these Penates at Lavinium the Roman priests brought yearly offerings, and the Roman consuls, pretors, and dic- tators sacrificed both when they entered on and when they laid down their office. To them, too, the generals sacri- ficed before departing for their provinces. Alba Longa, the real mother-city of Latium, had also its ancient Penates, and the Romans maintained the worship on the Alban Mount long after the destruction of Alba Longa. The Penates had a temple of their own at Rome. It was on the Velia near the Forum, and has by some been identified with the round vestibule of the church of SS. Cosma e Damiano. In this and many other temples the Penates were represented by two images of youths seated holding spears. The Penates were also worshipped in the neigh- bouring temple of Vesta. To distinguish the two wor- ships, it has been supposed that the Penates in the former temple were those of Latium, while those in the temple of Vesta were the Penates proper of Rome. Certainly the worship of the Penates, whose altar was the hearth and to whom the kitchen was sacred, was closely connected with that of Vesta, goddess of the domestic hearth.

The origin and nature of the Penates was a subject of much discussion to the Romans themselves. They were traced to the mysterious worship of Samothrace ; Dar-

danus, it was said, took the Penates from Samothrace to Troy, and after the destruction of Troy Aineas brought them to Italy and established them at Lavinium. From Lavinium Ascanius carried the worship to Alba Longa, and from Alba Longa it was brought to Rome. Equally unsatisfactory with this attempt to connect Roman religion with Greek legend are the vague and mystic speculations in which the later Romans indulged respecting the

nature of the Penates. Some said they were the great gods to whom we owe breath, body, and reason, viz., Jupiter representing the middle ether, Juno the lowest air and the earth, and Minerva the highest ether, to whom some added Mercury as the god of speech (Servius, on dn., ii. 296; Macrobius, Sat. i. 4, 8; Arnobius, Adv. Nat., iii. 40). Others identified them with Apollo and Neptune (Macrob., ili. 4, 6; Arnob., Zc.; Serv., on 4in., iii. 119). The Etruscans held the Penates to be Ceres, Pales, and Fortuna, to whom others added Genius Jovialis (Serv., on 4n., il. 325; Arnob., /.c.). The late writer Martianus Capella records the view that heaven was divided into sixteen regions, in the first of which were placed the Penates along with Jupiter, the Lares, &c. More fruitful than these misty speculations is the suggest- ion, made by the ancients themselves, that the worship of these family gods sprang from the ancient Roman custom (common to many savage tribes) of burying the dead in the house. But this would account for the worship of the Lares rather than of the Penates. A comparison with other primitive religious beliefs suggests the conjecture that the Penates may be a remnant of that fetishism or animism (i.e, the attribution of life, thought, and feeling to all objects animate and inanimate) in which many savage tribes exist to this day, and through which the higher races have probably passed at some period of their history, whether we suppose animism to be the primitive state of the human mind, or to be itself a development from the worship of ancestors, as Mr Herbert Spencer believes, or from some lower form of belief. The Roman geni seem certainly to have been fetishes, and the Penates were per- haps originally a species of geniv. Thus the Penates, as simple gods of food, are probably much more ancient than deities like Jupiter, Neptune, Apollo, and Minerva, whose wide and varied attributes represent a power of abstraction and generalization in the minds of their worshippers such as is not possessed by very primitive men. With the Penates we may compare the kindly household gods of old Germany ; they too had their homie on the kitchen hearth and received offerings of food and clothing. In the castle of Hudemithlen (Hanover) there was a kobold for whom a cover was always set on the table. In Lapland each house had one or more spirits. The souls of the dead are regarded as house-spirits by the Russians ; they are represented as dwarfs, and are served with food and drink. Each house in Servia has its patron-saint. In the mountains of Mysore every house has its bhuta or guardian deity, to whom prayer and sacrifices are offered. The Chinese god of the kitchen presents some curious analogies

to the Penates : incense and candles are burnt before him on the first and fifteenth of the month; some families burn incense and candles before him daily ; and on great festivals, one of which is at the winter solstice (nearly corresponding to the Saturnalia), he is served with cakes, pork, wine, incense, &c., which are placed on a table before him.

See Hartung, Die Religion der Romer ; Hertzberg, De dtis Roman. patr.; Preller, Rim. Mythol. ; Marquardt, Rom. Staats- verwalt., vol. iii. For household gods of other peoples see Bastian, Der Mensch in der Geschichte, iii. p. 202 sq. (J. G. FR.)

PENCIL (Lat. penicillus, a small tail), a name originally applied to a small fine-pointed brush used in painting, and still employed to denote the finer camel's-hair and sable

brushes used by artists, has, in English, come commonly to signify solid cones or rods of various materials used for writing and drawing. Some method of producing black or

coloured markings with rods of solid material on parchment,'

paper, wood, and other like smooth surfaces must have been known from time immemorial, but the ordinary so-called black-lead pencil does not possess a very high antiquity. It has been asserted that a manuscript of Theophilus, attributed to the 13th century, shows signs of having been ruled with a black-lead pencil; but the first distinct allusion to the common form of the instrument occurs in the treatise on fossils by Conrad Gesner of Zurich (1565), who describes an article for writing formed of wood and a piece of lead, or, as he believed, an artificial composition called by some stimmi anglicanum (English antimony). The famous Borrowdale mine in Cumberland having been discovered about that time, it is probable that we have here the first allusion to that great find of graphite which for so long supplied the world with its best lead pencils. While the supply of the Cumberland mine lasted, the material for the highly-esteemed English

pencils consisted simply of the native graphite as taken from the mine. The pieces were sawn into thin veneers, which again were cut into the slender square rods forming the “lead” of the pencil. These leads were either cased in pencil cedar (the wood of the Virginian cedar, Juniperus wirginiana), forming ordinary pencils, or they were, by an ingenious and delicate process of turning, in which ruby-cutters were used, rendered circular to supply the “‘ever-pointed pencils,” which, however, are of comparatively modern origin.

Strenuous efforts were made on the Continent and in England to enable manufacturers to become independent of the product of the Cumberland mine. In Nuremberg, where the great pencil factory of the Faber family was established in 1761, pencils were made from pulverized graphite cemented into solid blocks by means of gums, resins, glue, sulphur, and other such substances, but none of these preparations yielded useful pencils. About the year 1795 Conté of Paris devised the process by which now all black-lead pencils, and indeed pencils of all sorts, are manufactured. In 1843 Mr Brockedon patented a process for compressing pure black-lead powder into solid compact blocks by which he was enabled to use the dust, fragments, and cuttings of fine Cumberland lead. He sub- mitted the powdered substance to enormous pressure, and, by concurrently exhausting the air from the dies and the block of graphite in process of compression, he succeeded in forming a dense compact and uniform cake which could be treated in the same way as natural massive graphite from the mine. Brockedon’s process would have proved successful and important had the supply of fine English black lead continued, but the exhaustion of the Borrowdale supplies and the excellence of Conté’s process have rendered it more of scientific interest than of commercial value.

The pencil leads prepared by the Conté process consist of a most intimate mixture of graphite and clay, both first brought to a con- dition of the finest subdivision. The graphite is reduced to fine powder in a mortar ; it is sifted and sometimes treated with mineral acid, to free it from iron, &c,, then washed, and thereafter calcined at a bright-red heat. To get it in the condition of fine division, it is mixed with water and poured into a vat, where the heavier particles sink. From this vat the water bearing the lighter particles passes into another at a lower level, and so into one or two more,

in each of which the comparatively heavy particles sink, and only the still finer particles are carried over. That which sinks in the last of the series is in a condition of extremely fine division, and is used for pencils of the highest quality. The clay, which must be free of sand and iron, is treated in the same manner, and brought to a state of great uniformity and smoothness. Clay and graphite so prepared are mixed in varying proportions from about equal parts to two of clay for one of graphite according as the pencils are to be hard or soft. They are thoroughly incorporated and ground to- gether, then placed in bags and squeezed in a hydraulic press till

they have the consistency of stiff dough, in which condition they are ready for forming pencil rods. For this purpose the plastic mass is placed in a strong upright cylinder of brass, into which a plunger or piston works, moved by a powerful screw-press. The bottom of the cylinder consists of a thick bronze plate having in it a number of small apertures the section and size of the leads to be made. By the application of pressure to the plunger the graphite mixture is squeezed in continuous threads through the holes, and these threads are received and arranged in straight continuous lengths on a board, on which they are left to dry for some hours, For further drying by gentle heat they are placed in straight grooves in a grooved board, covered with another board, in which position they harden to stiff rods. These are afterwards cut into lengths for pencils, which are packed with charcoal in a covered crucible and submitted toa high furnace-heat. The two elements which regulate the comparative hardness and blackness of pencils are the proportions of graphite and clay in the leads and the heat to which they are raised in the crucible. According as the proportion of graphite is greater and the heat lower the pencil is softer and of deeper black streak.

The cedar in which pencils are cased is cut into two sets of rectangular slips of unequal thickness ; but so that a thick anda thin slip put together form in section a square. In the thick or body piece is formed the groove or depression to receive the lead, which perfectly fits and fills it. The thinner covering piece is glued on and the pencil rounded between revolving cutters working at great speed. The cutters leave the rounded surface perfectly smooth, and it only remains to stamp the finished pencil with name and

grade, &c. Very many pencils—but not usually good English qualities—are lacquered or varnished, and have the names, &c., stamped in gold letters.

Black pencils of an inferior quality are made from the dust of graphite melted up with sulphur and run into moulds. Such, with a little tallow added to give them softness, are the pencils commonly used by carpenters. Coloured pencils consist of a mixture of clay, with appropriate mineral colouring matter, wax, and tallow, treated by the Conté method as in making lead pencils. In the indelible and copying pencils which have come into use in recent years, the colouring matter is an aniline preparation mixed with clay and gum. The mixture not only makes a streak which adheres to the paper, but, when the writing is moistened with water, it dissolves and assumes the appearance and properties of an ink.

Nuremberg is the great centre of the pencil trade, possessing twenty-six factories which give employment to 5500 persons, the annual output of pencils numbering not less than 250 millions, of a value of upwards of £400,000. (J. PA.)

PENDULUM. See Cutocxs, vol. vi. p. 14, and MeEcuHANICs, vol. xv. pp. 705, 718, 768.

PENELOPE, the faithful wife of the Greek hero Odys- seus (Ulysses), immortalized by Homer in the Odyssey. She was the daughter of the Spartan Icarius and Peribcea. Shortly before Odysseus left his native island of Ithaca to war against Troy, Penelope bore him a son, Telemachus. _ When her husband tarried long many chieftains of Ithaca and the islands round about wooed her to wife; they behaved wantonly, wasting the substance of Odysseus, insulting his son, and corrupting the maidservants. The heart of Penelope yearned for Odysseus, and, to rid herself of the importunities of the wooers, she bade them wait till she had woven a winding-sheet for old Laertes, the father of Odysseus. But every night she undid the piece which she had woven by day, so that the web was always un- finished. This she did for three years, till her maids revealed the secret to the wooers. Robbed of her pretext for delay she was in sore straits, till she was relieved by the arrival of Odysseus after an absence of twenty years. He slew the wooers, and the long-parted husband and wife were united once more.

Such is the story of Penelopein Homer. Later writers add other particulars about her. She was won by Odysseus in a race proposed by Icarius to his daughter's suitors. When Icarius would fain that Odysseus should bide with him in Sparta, or at least leave him his daughter, and Odysseus let Penelope choose whether she would go with him to Ithaca or stay with her father in Sparta, she silently drew her veil over her face. ,Her father understood her and let her go (Pausan., iii. 12, 20). Some said that she bore a sou, Ptoliporthes, to Odysseus after his return from Troy. Others (mar- ring Hoier's picture of her as a true and loving wife) said that in

her husband's absence she bore Pan to Hermes or the suitors. Another story was that on his return Odysseus repudiated her as

sf

PEHEN—

unfaithful, that she went to Sparta and thence to Mantinea, where she died and where her tomb was shown (Pausan., vill. 12). Ac- cording to others, after the death of Odysseus she married Telegonus (son of Odysseus and Circe) in Afzea, or in the Islands of the Blest. The name is connected with wfvos, rivy, '' woof," and hence means ''weaver." The Homeric form is Penelopeia.

PENGUIN, the name (of very uncertain origin) of a flightless sea-bird,' but, so far as is known, first given to one inhabiting the seas of Newfoundland, as in Hore's "Voyage to Cape Breton," 1536 (Hackluyt, Researches, iil. pp. 168-170), which subsequently became known as the Great Auk or GarE-FowL (vol. x. p. 78); and, though the French equivalent Pingowin? preserves its old application, at the present day, the word Penguin is by English ornitho- logists always used in a general sense for certain Birds inhabiting the Southern Ocean, called by the French Man- chots, the Spheniscidz of ornithologists, which in some respects form perhaps the most singular group of the whole Class, or at least we may say of the Carinate Subclass. For a long while their position was very much misunderstood, some of the best of recent or even living systematists having placed them in close company with the Alcide or Auks, to which they bear only a relationship of analogy, as indeed had been perceived by a

few ornithologists, who recognized in the Penguins a very distinct Order, Jmpennes. The view of the latter is hardly likely to be disputed in future, now that the anatomical researches of MM. Paul Gervais and Alix (Journ. de Zoologie, 1877, pp. 424-470), M. Filhol (Bull. Soc. Philomathique, ser. 7, vi. pp. 226-248), and above all of Prof. Watson (Zoology, Voy. Challenger, part xviii.) have put the independent position of the Spheniscidx in the clearest light. The most conspicuous outward character presented by the Penguins is the total want of quills in their wings, which are as incapable of flexure as the flippers of a Cetacean, though they move freely at the shoulder-joint, and some at least of the species occasionally make use of them for progressing on land. In the water they are most efficient paddles, and are usually, if not always, worked alternately with a rotatory action. The plumage which clothes the whole body, leaving no bare spaces, generally consists of small scale-like feathers, many

1 Of the three derivations assigned to this name, the first is by Drayton in 1613 (Polyolbion, Song 9), where it is said to be the Welsh pen gwyn, or “white head”; the second, which seems to meet with Littre’s approval, deduces it from the Latin pingwis (fat); the third supposes it to be a corruption of “pin-wing” (Ann. Nat. History, ser. 4, iv. p. 183), meaning a bird that has undergone the operation of pinioning or, as in one part at least of England it is commonly called, “ pin-winging.” In opposition to the first of these hypotheses it has been urged (1) that there is no real evidence of any Welsh dis- covery of the bird, (2) that it is very unlikely for the Welsh, if they did discover it, to have been able to pass on their name to English navigators, and (3) that it had not a white head, but only a patch of white thereon. To the second hypothesis Prof. Skeat (Dictionary, p. 433) objects that it “ will not account for the suffix -in, and is therefore wrong; besides which the ‘Dutchmen’ [who were asserted to be the authors of the name] turn out to be Sir Francis Drake” and his men. In support of the third hypothesis Mr. Reeks wrote (Zoologist, ser. 2, p. 1854) that the people in Newfoundland who used to meet with this bird always pronounced its name “ Pin wing.” Prof. Skeat’s inquiry (loc. cit.), whether the name may not after all be South-American, is to be answered in the negative, since, so far as evidence goes, it was given to the North-American bird before the South-American was known in Europe.

‘ 2 Gorfou has also been used by some French writers, being a corrup- tion of Geirfugl or Gare-fowl.

3 Though the present writer cannot wholly agree with the conclusions of the last of these investigators, his remarks (pp. 230-232) on the “ Origin of the Penguins” are worthy ofall attention. He considers that they are the surviving members of a group that branched off early from the primitive “avian” stem, but that at the time of their separation the stem had diverged so far from Reptiles as to possess true wings, though the metatarsal bones had not lost their distinctness and become fused into the single bone so characteristic of existing Birds. _The ancestral Penguin, Prof. Watson argues, must have had functional wings, the muscles of which, through atrophy, have been converted into non-contractile tendinous bands.

PEN 49]

of them consisting only of a simple shaft without the development of barbs; but several of the species have the head decorated with long cirrhous tufts, and in some the tail-quills, which are very numerous, are also long. In standing these birds preserve an upright position, gener- ally resting on the “tarsus”® alone, but in walking or running on land this is kept nearly vertical, and their weight is supported by the toes alone.

The most northerly limit of the Penguins’ range in the Atlantic is Tristan d’Acunha, and in the Indian Ocean Am- sterdam Island, but they also occur off the Cape of Good Hope and along the south coast of Australia, as well as on the south and east of New Zealand, while in the Pacific one species at least extends along the west coast of South America and to the Galapagos; but north of the equator none are found. In the breeding season they resort to the most desolate lands in higher southern latitudes, and indeed have been met with as far to the southward as navigators have penetrated. Possibly the Falkland Islands may be regarded as the locality richest in species,° though, what- ever may have been the case once, their abundance there

King-Penguin (Aptenodytes pennanti).

as individuals does not now nearly approach what it is in many other places, owing doubtless to the ravages of man, whose advent is always accompanied by massacre and devastation on an enormous scale—the habit of the help- less birds, when breeding, to congregate by hundreds and thousands in what are called “ Penguin-rookeries ” contri- buting to the ease with which their slaughter can be effected. Incapable of escape by flight, they are yet able to make enough resistance or retaliation (for they bite powerfully

4 The pterylographical characters of the Penguins are well described by Mr Hyatt (Proc. Boston Soc. Nat. History, 1871). Mr Bartlett has observed (Proc. Zool. Society, 1879, pp. 6-9) that, instead of moulting in the way that birds ordinarily do, Penguins, at least in passing from the immature to the adult dress, cast off the short scale-like feathers from their wings in a manner that he compares to “the shedding of the skin in a serpent.” ;

5 The three metatarsals in the Penguins are not, as in other birds, united for the whole of their length, but only at the extremities, thus preserving a portion of their originally distinct existence, a fact probably attributable to arrest of development, since the researches of Prof. Gegenbaur shew that the embryos of ail birds, so far as is known, possess these bones in an independent condition.» More recently Prof. Marsh has found that in the Dinosaurian genus Ceratosaurus the metatarsals acquire a condition very similar to that which they present in the Penguins (Am. Journ. Science, Aug. 1884). a

6 An interesting account of the Penguins of these islands is given by Capt. Abbott (Ziis, 1860, p. 336).

A492

when they get the chance) to excite the wrath of their murderers, and this only brings upon them greater destruc- tion, so that the interest of nearly all the numerous accounts of these “rookeries” is spoilt by the disgusting details of the brutal havoc perpetrated upon them.

The Spheniscidx have been divided into at least eight genera, but three, or at most four, seem to be all that are needed, and three can be well

distinguished, as pointed out by Dr Coues in the Philadelphia Proceedings for 1872 (pp. 170-212), by anatomical as well as by external characters. They are (1) Aptenodytes, easily recognized by its long and thin bill, slightly decurved, from which Pygoscelis, as Prof. Watson has shewn, is hardly distinguishable; (2) Eudyptes, in which the bill is much shorter and somewhat broad ; and (3) Spheniscus, in which the shortish bill is compressed and the maxilla ends in a conspicuous hook. Aptenodytes contains the largest species, among them those knownas the “Emperor” and “ King” Penguins, A. patagonica and A. longirostris..| Three others belong also to this genus, if Pygoscelis be not recognized, but they seem not to require any particular remark. Hudyptes, containing the crested Penguins, known to sailors as “‘ Rock-hoppers” or ‘‘ Maca- ronis,” would appear to have five species, and Spheniscus four, among which S. mendiculus, which occurs in the Galapagos, and therefore has the most northerly range of the whole group, alone needs notice here. The generic and specific distribution of the Penguins is the subject of an excellent essay by Prof. Alphonse Milne-Edwards in the Annales des Sciences Naturelles for 1880 (vol. ix. art. 9, pp. 23-81), of which there is a German translation in the Mittheilungen of the Ornithological Union of Vienna for 1883 (pp. 179-186, 210-222, 238-241). (A. N.)

PENN, Witui1am (1644-1718), the Quaker, was the son of Admiral William Penn and Margaret Jasper, a Dutch lady, and was born at Tower Hill, London, on 14th October 1644. During his father’s absence at sea he lived at Wanstead in Essex, and went to school at Chigwell close by, in which places he was brought under strong Puritan influences. Like many children of sensitive temperament, he had times of spiritual excitement; when about twelve he was “suddenly surprised with an inward comfort, and, as he thought, an external glory in the room, which gave rise to religious emotions, during which he had the strongest conviction of the being of a God, and that the soul of man was capable of enjoying communication with Him. He believed also that the seal of divinity had been put upon him at this moment, or that he had been awakened or called upon to a holy life.” It would indeed have been unnatural if a mind so disposed had not, when the time came, seized with avidity upon the distinctive doctrine of the Friends, that of the “inward light.”

Upon the death of Cromwell, Penn’s father, who, like Monk, was purely an adventurer, and had served the Pro- tector because there was no other career open, and who, according to Clarendon, had previously offered to bring over the fleet to Charles, remained with his family on the Irish estates which Cromwell had given him, of the value of £300 a year. On the deposition of Richard Cromwell he at once declared for the king and went to the court at Holland, where he was received into favour and knighted ; and at the elections for the Convention Parliament he was returned for Weymouth. During these events young Penn studied under a private tutor on Tower Hill until, in October 1660, he was entered as a gentleman commoner at Christ Church. He appears in the same year to have contributed to the Threnodia, a collection of elegies on the death of the young duke of Gloucester.

- An example, presumably of the former species, weighing 78 ib,

was, according to Dr M ‘Cormick (Voyages of Discovery, i. p. 259 obtained by the “Terror” in J anuary i842, a oni :

PEN—PEN

The rigour with which the Anglican statutes were revived, and the Puritan heads of colleges supplanted, roused the spirit of resistance at Oxford to the uttermost, With this spirit Penn, who was on familiar terms with John Owen, and who had already fallen under the influ- ence of Thomas Loe the Quaker, then at Oxford, actively sympathized. He and others refused to attend chapel and church service, and were fined in consequence. So far did the young enthusiasts proceed in the expression of their hatred to the Anglican regulations that it is said they fell upon the students who were clothed in surplices and violently tore the hated vestments from them. How far his leaving the university resulted from this cannot be clearly ascertained. Anthony Wood has nothing regarding the cause of his leaving, but says that he stayed at Oxford for two years, and that he was noted for proficiency in manly sports. There is no doubt that in January 1662 his father was anxious to remove him to Cambridge, and consulted Pepys on the subject; and in later years he speaks of being “banished” the college, and of being whipped, beaten, and turned out of doors on his return to his father, in the anger of the latter at his avowed Quakerism. A reconciliation,

however, was effected; and Penn was sent to France to forget this folly. The plan was for a time successful. Penn appears to have entered more or less into the gaieties of the court of Louis XIV., and while there to have become acquainted with Robert Spencer, afterwards earl of Sunderland, and with Dorothy, sister to Algernon Sidney. What, however, is more certain is that he somewhat later placed himself under the tuition of Moses Amyraut, the celebrated president of the Protestant college of Saumur, and at that time the exponent of liberal Calvinism, from whom he gained the patristic knowledge which is so prominent in his controversial writings, and whose example, doubtless, stimulated the tolerant views he already entertained. He afterwards travelled in Italy, returning to England in August 1664, with “a great deal, if not too much, of the vanity of the French garb and affected manner of speech and gait.” ?

Until the outbreak of the plague Penn was a student of Lincoln’s Inn. For a few days also he served on the staff of his father—now great captain commander—and was by him sent back in April 1665 to Charles with despatches. It will be observed that his letters to his father even at this time are couched in quaintly devout phraseology. Return- ing after the naval victory off Lowestoft in June, Admiral Penn found that, probably from the effect upon his mind of the awful visitation of the plague, his son had again become settled in seriousness and Quakerism. To bring him once more to views of life not inconsistent with court preferment, the admiral sent him in February 1666 with introductions to Ormonde’s pure but brilliant court in Ireland, and to manage his estate in Cork round Shannan- garry Castle, his title to which was disputed. Penn appears also later in the year to have been “clerk of the cheque” at Kinsale, of the castle and fort of which his father had the command. When the mutiny broke out in Carrick- fergus Penn volunteered for service, and acted under Arran so as to gain considerable reputation. The result was that in May 1666 Ormonde offered him his father’s company of foot, but, for some unexplained reason, the admiral demurred to this arrangement. It was at this time that the well-known portrait was painted of the great Quaker in a suit of armour; and, strangely enough, it was at this time, too, that the conversion, begun when he was a boy, accord- ing to Penn’s own account, by Thomas Loe in Ireland, was completed at the same place by the same agency.®

On 3d September 1667 Penn attended a meeting of

2 Pepys, 30th August 1664. 3 Webb, The Penns and Penningtons, 1867, p. 174.

Quakers in Cork, at which he assisted to expel a soldier who had disturbed the meeting. He was in consequence, with others present, sent to prison by the magistrates. From prison he wrote to Lord Orrery, the president of Munster, a letter, in which he first publicly makes a claim for perfect freedom of conscience. He was immediately released, and at once returned to his father in London, with the distinctive marks of Quakerism strong upon him —the use of the "thee" and "thou," and the refusal to remove his hat. So staunch on the hat question was he that he could not accept even the compromise suggested by his father, viz., that he should uncover before the king, the duke of York, and himself.

Penn now became a minister of the denomination, and at once entered upon controversy and authorship. His first book, Truth Hxalted, in which he summons to trial princes, priests, and people, was '"'a short but sure testi- mony against all those religions, faiths, and worships that have been formed and followed in the darkness of apo- stacy," and declared Quakerism to be "'the alone good way of life and salvation." Its tone and language were violent and aggressive in the extreme. The same offensive per- sonality is shown in The Guide Mistaken, a tract written in answer to John Clapham's G'ucde to the True Religion. It was at this time, too, that he appealed, not unsuccess- fully, to Buckingham, who on Clarendon's fall was posing as the protector of the Dissenters, to use his efforts to procure parliamentary toleration.

Penn's first public discussion was with Thomas Vincent, a London Presbyterian minister, who had reflected on the "damnable" doctrines of the Quakers. In this he appears to have acted as second to George Whitehead.! The dis- cussion, which had turned chiefly upon the doctrine of the Trinity, ended uselessly, and Penn at once published The Sandy Foundation Shaken, a tract of ability sufficient to excite Pepys's astonishment, in which orthodox views on the Trinity, plenary satisfaction, imputed righteousness, and other doctrinal points were so offensively attacked that, at the instance of the bishop of London, Penn was placed in the Tower, where he remained

for nearly nine months. The imputations upon his opinions and good citizenship, made as well by Dissenters as by the church, he repelled in Innocency with her. Open Face, in which he asserts his full belief in the divinity of Christ, the atonement, and justification through faith, though insisting on the necessity of good works. It was now, too, that he published the most important of his books, Vo Cross, no Crown, which, besides the lessons of constancy and resignation indicated by the title, contained an able defence of the Quaker doc- trines and practices, and a scathing attack on the evils of the age, especially the loose and unchristian lives of the clergy.

While completely refusing to recant or to yield to the persuasions of Stillingfleet, who, it is stated on doubtful authority, was sent to argue with him, Penn addressed a letter to Arlington in July 1669, in which, on grounds of religious freedom, he asked him to interfere. It is note- worthy, as showing the views then predominant, that he was almost at once set at liberty.

An informal reconciliation now took place with his father, who had been impeached through the jealousy of Rupert and Monk (in April 1668), and whose conduct in the operations of 1665 he had publicly vindicated ; and Penn was again sent on family business to Ireland. There 1s good reason for thinking that the extent of the differences between him and his father have been much exaggerated.” While there he regularly attended Quaker meetings, and was active in intercession for imprisoned Friends. At the desire of his father, whose health was fast failing, Penn

1 Sewel’s Hist. of Friends, p. 172. Pp 2 Granville’s Memorials of Sir W. Penn, vol. ii. p. Bigflie

PrN NN

| on this occasion worthy of remembrance.

493

returned to London in 1670, and was immediately involved in fresh trouble. Having found the usual place of meeting in Gracechurch Street closed by

soldiers, Penn, as a protest, preached to the people in the open street. With William Mead he was at once arrested and indicted at the Old Bailey ou 1st September for preaching to an unlawful, seditious, and riotous assembly, which had met together with force and arms. The Conventicle Act not touch- ing their case, the trial which followed, and which may be read at length in Penn's People's Ancient and Just Inberties Asserted, was a notable one in the history of trial by jury. The prisoners and the jury were alike brow- beaten and threatened by the bench, and particularly by the recorder. With extreme courage and skill Penn ex- posed the illegality of the prosecution, while the jury, for the first time, asserted the right of juries to decide in opposition to the ruling of the court. They brought in a verdict declaring Penn and Mead " guilty of speaking in Gracechurch Street," but refused to add "to an unlawful assembly"; then, as the pressure upon them increased, and as they were sent back time after time without food, light, fire, or tobacco, they first acquitted Mead, while returning their original verdict upon Penn, and then, when that verdict was not admitted, returned their final answer "not guilty" for both. The court fined the jurymen 40 marks each for their contumacy, and, in default of payment, imprisoned them, whereupon they vindicated and estab- lished for ever the right they had claimed in an action before the Court of Common Pleas, when all twelve judges unanimously declared their imprisonment illegal.

Penn himself had been fined for not removing his hat in court, had been imprisoned on his refusal to pay, and had earnestly requested his family not to pay for him. The fine, however, was settled anonymously, and he was released in time to be present at his father's death on 16th September 1670, at the early age of forty-nine. Penn now found himself in possession of a fortune of £1500 a year, and a claim on the crown for £15,000, lent to Charles II. by his father. The admiral appears, from a later statement of Penn, to have asked the king and James to become his son's protectors, and James accepted and acted up to the engagement in a special manner. Upon his release Penn at once plunged into controversy, challenging a Baptist minister named Ives, at High Wycombe, to a public dispute and, according to the Quaker account, easily defeating him. No account is forthcoming from the other side. Hearing at Oxford that students who attended Friends' meetings were rigorously used, he wrote a vehement and abusive remonstrance to the vice-chancellor in defence of religious freedom. This

found still more remarkable expression in the Seasonable Caveat against Popery (January 1671), in which, while refuting the arguments of Roman Catholics, he urges, far in advance of his age and of all other sects, entire and unlimited toleration of faith and worship,—not, be it observed, on the grounds of expediency or of Scripture, but upon the distinctively Quaker doctrine of the "inward light." in the beginning of 1671 Penn was again arrested for preaching in Wheeler Street meeting-house by Sir J. Robinson, the lieutenant of the Tower, formerly lord mayor, and known as a brutal and bigoted churchman. Legal proof being wanting of any breach of the Conventicle Act, and the Oxford or Five Mile Act also proving inapplicable, Robinson, who had some special cause of enmity against Penn, urged upon him the oath of allegiance. This, of course, the Quaker would not take, and consequently was imprisoned for six months. A saying is recorded of Penn Robinson had ordered a corporal and some soldiers to take him to prison. "No, no," said Penn, 'send thy lacquey. T know the way

to Newgate." During this imprisonment Penn wrote several works, the most important being The Great Case of Liberty of Conscience (February 1671), a noble defence of complete toleration. Upon his release he started upon a missionary journey through Holland and Germany ; at Emden he founded a Quaker Society, and established an intimate friendship with the princess palatine Elizabeth. In his letters written during this journey will be found a full exposition of the doctrine of the "inward light."

Upon his return home in the spring of 1672 Penn married Gulielma Springett, daughter of Mary Pennington by her first husband, Sir William Springett; she appears to have been equally remarkable for beauty, devotion to her husband, and firmness to the religious principles which she had adopted when little more thanachild.1 He now settled at Rickmansworth in Hertfordshire, and gave himself up to controversial writing. To this year, 1672, belong the Treatise on Oaths and England's Present Interest Considered, in the latter of which, written immediately after the withdrawal of the Declaration of Indulgence, is contained an able statement of the arguments against comprehension and for toleration. It should not be omitted by any one who desires to understand the state of feeling on the

sub- ject. In the year 1673 Penn was still more active. He secured the release of George Fox, addressed the Quakers in Holland and Germany, carried on public controversies with Hicks, a Baptist, and Faldo, an Independent, and published his treatise on the Christian Quaker and his Divine Testimony Vindicated, the Discourse of the General Rule of Faith and Practice,? Reasons against Railing (in answer to Hicks), Counterfeit Christianity Detected, and a Just Rebuke to One-and-twenty Learned Divines (an answer to Faldo and to Quakerism no Christianity). His last public controversy was in 1675 with Richard Baxter, in which, of course, each party claimed the victory. During this year his active sympathies were enlisted on behalf of imprisoned Quakers at Aberdeen. At this point Penn's connexion with America begins.

The province of New Jersey, comprising the country between the Hudson and Delaware rivers on the east and west, had been granted in March 1663-64 by Charles II. to his brother; James in turn had in June of the same year leased it to Lord Berkeley and Sir G. Carteret in equal shares. By a deed, dated 18th March 1673/74, John Fenwick, a Quaker, bought one of the shares, that of Lord Berkeley (Stoughton erroneously says Carteret's) in trust for Edward Byllinge, also a Friend, for £1000. This sale was confirmed by James, after the second Dutch war, on 6th August 1680. Disputes having arisen between Fenwick and Byllinge, Penn acted as arbitrator ; and then, Byllinge being in money difficulties, and being compelled to sell his interest in order to satisfy his creditors, Penn was added, at their request, to two of themselves, as trustee. The disputes were settled by Fenwick receiving ten out of the hundred parts into which the province was divided,? with a considerable sum of money, the remaining ninety parts being afterwards put up for sale. Fenwick sold his ten parts to two other Friends, Eldridge and Warner, who thus, with Penn and the other two, became masters of West Jersey, West New Jersey, or New West Jersey, as it was indifferently called. The five proprietors appointed three commissioners, with instructions dated from London 6th August 1676, to settle disputes with Fenwick (who

4 For a very charming account of her, and the whole Pennington ge ON see Maria Webb's The Penns and Penningtons.

See on this Stoughton's Penn, p. 113.

3 The deed by which Fenwick and Byllinge conveyed New West Jersey to Penn, Gawry, and Nicholas is dated 10th February 1674/75.

4 The line of partition was " from the east side of Little Egg Harbour, straight north, through the country, to the utmost branch of Delaware river.

PENN

had bought fresh land from the Indians, upon which Salem was built, Penn being himself one of the settlers there) and to purchase new territories, to survey and divide them, and to build a town,—New Beverley, or Burlington, being the result. For the new colony Penn drew up a constitution, under the title of '' Concessions," which he himself thus describes: ''There we lay a foundation for after ages to understand their liberty as men and Christians, that they may not be brought in bondage but by their own consent ; for we put the power in the people."

The greatest care is taken to make this constitution "as near as may be conveniently to the primitive, ancient, and fundamental laws of the nation of England." But a" democratic element is introduced, and the new principle of perfect religious freedom——" that no men, nor numbers

of men upon earth, hath power or authority to rule over

men's consciences in religious matters "-—stands in the first

place (chap. xvi.). With regard to the liberty of the

subject, no one might be condemned in life, liberty, or

estate, except by a jury of twelve, and the right of

challenging was granted to the uttermost (chap. xvii).

Imprisonment for debt was not abolished (as Dixon states),

but was reduced to a minimum (chap. xviii.), while theft

was punished by twofold restitution either in value or in

labour to that amount (chap. xxviil.). The provisions of

chap. xix., taking their rise doubtless in Penn's own trial

at the Old Bailey in 1670, deserve special notice. All causes were to go before three justices, with ajury. 'They,

the said justices, shall pronounce such judgment as they shall receive from, and be directed by the said twelve men,

in whom only the judgment resides, and not otherwise.

And in case of their neglect and refusal, that then one of the twelve, by consent of the rest, pronounce their own

judgment as the justices should have done." The justices and constables, moreover, were elected by the people, the former for two years only (chap. xli.). Suitors might plead in person, and the courts were public (chap. xxii.).

Questions between Indians and settlers were to be arranged by a mixed jury (chap. xxv.).

An assembly was to meet yearly, consisting of a hundred persons, chosen by the inhabitants, freeholders, and pro- prietors, one for each division of the province. The election was to be by ballot, and each member was to receive a shilling a day from his division, “that thereby he may be known to be the servant of the people.” The executive power was to be in the hands of ten commissioners ® chosen by the assembly. Such a constitution, which is in marked contrast with Locke’s aristocratic one for Carolina, settled eight years previously, soon attracted large numbers of Quakers to West Jersey.

It was shortly before these occurrences that Penn in- herited through his wife the estate of Worminghurst in Sussex, whither he removed from Rickmansworth. He now (25th July 1677) undertook a second missionary journey to the Continent along with George Fox, Robert Barclay, and George Keith. Of this journey a full account, published seventeen years later, will be found in his selected works. He visited particularly Rotterdam and all the Holland towns, renewed his intimacy with the princess Elizabeth at Herwerden, and, under considerable privations, travelled through Hanover, Germany, the lower Rhine, and the electorate of Brandenburg, returning by Bremen and the Hague. It is worthy of recollection that the American settlers from Kirchheim, one of the places which responded in an especial degree to Penn’s teaching, are noted as the first who declared it unlawful for Christians to hold slaves. Penn reached England again on 24th October.

5 Penn’s letter of 26th August 1676 says twelve, and Clarkson has followed this ; but the Concessions, which were not assented to by the inhabitants until 3d. March 1676/77, say ten.

PENN

His attention was at once taken up both with the disputes which had arisen within the Quaker body itself on questions of discipline, and still more with an endeavour to secure some decent measure of toleration for the Friends. He tried to gain the insertion in the Bill for the relief of Protestant Dissenters of a clause enabling Friends to affirm instead of taking the oath, and twice addressed the House of Commons’ committee with considerable

eloquence and effect. The Bill, however, fell to the ground at the sudden prorogation.

In 1678 the Popish Terror came to a head, and to calm and guide Friends in the prevailing excitement Penn wrote ‘his Epistle to the Children of Light in this Generation. A far more important publication was An Address to Pro- testants of all Perswasions, by William Penn, Protestant, in 1679. In the first part of this work he inveighs against the five crying evils of the time so far as they are ‘‘under the correction of the civil magistrates,” with. an address to the magistrates for redress of those evils; the second part deals siniilarly with “the five capital evils that relate to the ecclesiastical state of these kingdoms”; the whole work is a powerful exposition of the doctrine of pure toler- ance and a protest against the enforcement of opinions as articles of faith. This was succeeded, at the general election which followed the dissolution of the pensionary parliament, by an important political manifesto, Hngland’s Great Interest in the Choice of this New Parliament, in which he insisted on the following points :—the discovery and punishment of the plot, the impeachment of corrupt ministers and councillors, the punishment of “ pensioners,” the enactment of frequent parliaments, security from Popery and slavery, and ease for Protestant Dissenters. Next came One Project for the Good of England, perhaps the most pungent of all his political writings. A single sentence will show the homely style of illustration which Penn usually adopted. ‘ But since the industry, rents, and taxes of the Dissenters are as current as their neighbours’, who loses by such narrowness niore than England, than the Government, and the magistracy? . . . Till it be the interest of the former to destroy his flock, to starve the horse he rides and the cow that gives him milk, it cannot be the interest of England to let a great part of her sober and useful inhabitants be destroyed for things that concern another world.” But he was not merely active with his pen. He was at this time in close intimacy with Algernon Sidney, who stood successively for Guildford and Bamber. In each case, owing in a great degree to Penn’s eager advocacy, Sidney was elected, only to have his elec- tions annulled by court influence. Toleration for Dissenters seemed as far off as ever. The future of English politics must have appeared to Penn well-nigh hopeless. Encouraged by his success in the New Jersey provinces, he again turned his thoughts to America. In repayment of the debt men- tioned above Penn now asked from the crown,

at a council held on 24th June 1680, for “a tract of land in America north of Maryland, bounded on the east by the Delaware, on the west limited as Maryland [i.e., by New Jersey], north- ward as far as plantable” ; this latter limit Penn explained to be “three degrees northwards.” This formed a tract 300 miles by 160, of extreme fertility, mineral wealth, and richness of all kinds. Disputes with James, and with Lord Baltimore, who had rights over Maryland, delayed the Matter until 24th March 1681, when the grant received the royal signature, and Penn was made master of the province of Pennsylvania. His own account of the name is that he suggested “Sylvania,” that the king added the “Penn” in honour of his father, and that, although he strenuously objected and even tried to bribe the secretaries, he could not get the name altered. It should be added that early in 1682 Carteret, grandson of the original pro-

prietor, transferred his rights in East Jersey to Penn and eleven associates, who soon afterwards conveyed one-half of their interest to the earl of Perth and eleven others, It is uncertain to what extent Penn retained his interest in West and East Jersey, and when it ceased. The two provinces were united under one government in 1699, and Penn was a proprietor in 1700. In 1702 the government of New Jersey was surrendered to the crown.

By the charter for Pennsylvania Penn was made proprie- tary of the province. He was supreme governor; he had the power of making laws with the advice, assent, and appro- bation of the freemen, of appointing officers, and of grant- ing pardons. The laws were to contain nothing contrary to English law with a saving to the crown and the English council in the case of appeals. Parliament was to be supreme in all questions of trade and commerce ; the right to levy taxes and customs was reserved to England; an agent to represent Penn was to reside in London; neglect on the part of Penn was to lead to the passing of the government to the crown (which event actually took place in 1692); no correspondence might be carried on with countries at war with Great Britain. A clause added at the last moment illustrates curiously both the strength and the jealousy of the Anglican Church at the time. The importunity of the bishop of London extorted the right to appoint Anglican ministers, should twenty members of the colony

desire it, thus securing the very thing which Penn was anxious to avoid,—the recognition of the principle of an establishment.

Having appointed Colonel Markham, his cousin, as deputy, and having in October sent out three commis- sioners to manage affairs until his arrival, Penn proceeded to draw up proposals to adventurers, with an account of the resources of the colony. He negotiated, too, with James and Lord Baltimore with the view, ultimately successful, of freeing the mouth of the Delaware, wrote to the Indians in conciliatory terms, and encouraged the formation of companies to work the infant colony both in England and Germany, especially the 'Free Society of Traders in Pennsylvania," to whom he sold 20,000 acres, absolutely refusing, however, to grant any monopolies. In July he drew up a body of "conditions and con- cessions." This constitution, savouring strongly of Har- rington's Oceana, was framed in consultation with Sidney, though to what extent is doubtful. The inferences drawn by Hepworth Dixon from a single letter of Penn to Sidney, given at length by Stoughton, are quite unjustifiable. This sketch of a constitution was democratical in the purest sense. Until the council of seventy-two (chosen by universal suffrage every three years, twenty-four retiring each year) and the assembly (chosen annually) were duly elected, a body of provisional laws was added.

It was in the midst of this extreme activity that Penn was made a Fellow of the Royal Society. Leaving his family behind him, Penn sailed with a hundred comrades from Deal in the "'Welcome" on Ist September 1682. His Last Farewell to England and his letter to his wife and children contain a beautiful expression of his pious and manly nature. He landed at Newcastle on the Dela- ware on 27th October, his company having lost one-third of their number by smallpox during the voyage. After receiving formal possession, and having visited New York, Penn ascended the Delaware to the Swedish settlement of Upland, to which he gave the name of Chester. The assembly at once met, and on the 7th December passed the "Great Law of Pennsylvania." The idea which informs this law is that Pennsylvania was to be a Christian state on a Quaker model. Only one condition is made necessary for office or citizenship, viz., Christianity. The constitu- tion is purely democratic; all offices, for example, are elective. In many other provisions Penn showed him-

self far in advance of his time, but in none so much as where the penalty of death was abolished for all offences except murder. Lawsuits were to be superseded by arbi- tration, always a favourite idea with Penn. Philadelphia was now founded, and within two years contained 300 houses and a population of 2500. At the same time an Act was passed, uniting under the same government the territories which had been granted by feoffment by James in 1682. Realistic and entirely imaginative accounts (¢/. Dixon, p. 270), inspired chiefly by Benjamin West's picture, have been given of the treaty which there seems no doubt Penn actually made in November 1682 with the Indians. His connexion with them was one of the most successful parts of his management, and he gained at once and retained through life their intense affection. At his death

they sent to his widow a message of sorrow for the loss |

of their "brother Onas," with some choice skins to form a cloak which might protect her "while passing through the thorny wilderness without her guide."

Penn now wrote an account of Pennsylvania from his own observation for the "Free Society of Traders," in which he shows considerable power of artistic description.

Tales of violent persecution of the Quakers, and the necessity of settling disputes which had arisen with Lord Baltimore, his neighbour in Maryland, brought Penn back to England (2d October 1684) after an absence of two years. In the spring of 1683 he had modified the original charter at the desire of the assembly, but without at all altering its democratic character.) He was, in reference to this alteration, charged with selfish and deceitful dealing by the assembly. Within five months after his arrival in England Charles IT. died, and Penn found himself at once in a position of great influence. His close connexion with James, dating from the death of his father, was rendered doubly strong by the fact that, from different causes, each was sincerely anxious to establish complete liberty of conscience. Even before his coronation James had told Penn that "he desired not that peaceable men should be disturbed for their religion." Penn now took up his

abode at Kensington in Holland House, so as to be near the court. His influence there was great enough to secure the pardon of John Locke, who had been dismissed from Oxford by Charles, and of 1200 Quakers who were in prison. At this time, too, he was busy with his pen once more, writing a further account of Pennsylvania, a pam- phlet in defence of Buckingham's essay in favour of tolera- tion, in which he is supposed to have had some share, and his Persuasive to Moderation to Dissenting Christians, very similar in tone to the One Project for the Good of England. When Monmouth's rebellion was suppressed he appears to have done his best to mitigate the horrors of the western commission, opposing Jeffreys to the uttermost ;? and he stood by Cornish and Elizabeth Gaunt at their execu- tions. He says himself in a letter dated 2d October 1685, "About 300 hanged in divers towns in the West, about 1000 to be transported. I begged twenty of the king."

Macaulay, the grotesqueness of whose blunders on this matter is equalled only by the animus that inspired them, and by the disingenuousness with which he defended them, has accused Penn of being concerned in some of the worst actions of the court at this time. His complete refutation by Forster, Paget, Dixon, and others renders it unneces- sary to do more than allude to the cases of the Maids of Taunton, Alderman Kiffin, and Magdalen College (Oxford).

In 1686, when making a third missionary journey to Holland and Germany, Penn was charged by James with an informal mission to the prince of Orange to endeavour to gain his assent to the removal of religious tests. Here

i Dixon, p. 276. 2 Burnet, iii. 66; Dalrymple, i. 282.

he met Burnet, from whom, as from the prince, he gained no satisfaction, and who greatly disliked him. On his return he went on a preaching mission through England, His position with James was undoubtedly a compromising one, and it is not strange that, wishing to tolerate Papists, he should, in the prevailing temper of England, be once more accused of being a Jesuit, while he was in con- stant antagonism to their body. Even Tillotson

took up this view strongly, though he at once accepted Penn's vehement disavowal. It was in reference to this that Penn wrote one of his pithy sentences: ''I abhor two principles in religion, and pity them that own them; the first is obe- dience upon authority without conviction ; and the other, destroying them that differ from me for God's sake. Such a religion is without judgment, though not without teeth."

In 1687 James published the Declaration of Indulgence, and Penn probably drew up the address of thanks on the part of the Quakers. It fully reflects his views, which are further ably put in the pamphlet Good Advice to the Church of England, Roman Catholics, and Protestant Dis- senters, in which he showed the wisdom and duty of repealing the Test Acts and Penal Laws.

At the Revolution he behaved with courage. He was one of the few friends of the king who remained in London, and, when twice summoned before the council, spoke boldly in his behalf. He admitted that James had asked him to come to him in France; but at the same time he asserted his perfect loyalty. During the absence of William in 1690 he was proclaimed by Mary as a dan- gerous person, but no evidence of treason was forthcom- ing. It was now that he lost by death two of his dearest friends, Robert Barclay and George Fox. It was at the funeral of the latter that, upon the information of the notorious informer Fuller, an attempt was made to arrest him, but he had just left the ground; the fact that no further steps were then taken shows how little the Govern- ment believed in his guilt. He now lived in retirement in London, though his address was perfectly well known to his friends in the council. In 1691, again on Fuller's evidence, a proclamation was issued for the arrest of Penn and two others as being concerned in Preston's plot. He might, on the intercession of Locke, have obtained a pardon, but refused to do so. He appears to have especially felt the suspicions that fell upon him from the members of his own body. In 1692 he began to write again, both on questions of Quaker discipline and in defence of the sect. Just Mea- sures in an Epistle of Peace and Love, The New Athenians (in reply to the attacks of the Athenian Mercury), and A Key opening the Way to every Capacity are the principal publi- cations of this year. i

Meantime matters had been going badly in Pennsyl- vania. Penn had, in 1687, been obliged to make changes in the composition of the executive body, though in 1689 _ it reverted to the original constitution; the legislative bodies had quarrelled ; and Penn could not gain his rents. He was closely concerned also in this year with a dispute between East and West Jersey regarding the dividmg line, in which he espoused the cause of the former (and richer) province. The chief difficulty, however, in Penn- sylvania was the dispute between the province—z.e., the country given to Penn bythe charter—and the "territories," or the lands granted to him by the duke of York by feoff- ment in August 1682, which were under the same Govern- ment but had differing interests. No sooner had Penn by a skilful compromise settled this. matter than the colony was torn by the religious schism caused by George Keith. The difficulties which Quaker principles placed in the way of arming the colony—a matter of grave importance in the existing European complications—fought most hardly against Penn's power. On 21st October 1692 an order of

Pr WN

council was issued depriving Penn of the governorship of Pennsylvania, and giving it to Colonel Fletcher, the governor of New York.1 To this blow were added the ilIness of his wife and a fresh accusation of treasonable correspondence with James. In his enforced retirement he wrote the most devotional and the most charming of his works,—the collection of maxims of conduct and reli- gion entitled The Fruits of Solitude. In December, thanks to the efforts of his friends at court, among whom were Buckingham, Somers, Rochester, and Henry Sidney, he received an intimation that no further steps would be taken against him. The accusation, however, had been public, and he insisted on the withdrawal being as public. He was therefore heard in full council before the king, and honourably acquitted of all charge of treason. It was now that he wrote an Lssay towards the Present and Iuture Peace of Europe, in which he puts forth the idea of a great court of arbitration, a principle which he had already carried out in Pennsylvania.

In 1694 (23d February) his wife Gulielma died, leaving two sons, Springett and William, and.a daughter Letitia, afterwards married to William Aubrey. Two other daughters, Mary and Hannah, died in infancy. He con- soled

himself by writing his Account of the Rise and Progress of the People called Quakers, The coldness and suspicion with which he had been regarded by his own denomination had now ceased, and he was once more regarded by the Quaker body as their leader. About the same time (20th August) he was restored to the governor- ship of Pennsylvania ; and he promised to supply money and men for the defence of the frontiers. In 1695 he went on another preaching mission in the west, and sent a peti- tion to parliament praying that affirmations might be sub- stituted for oaths. ‘This year and the next were busily occupied with preaching and writing, one of his auditors being no less a person than Peter the Great. In March 1696 he formed a second marriage, with Hannah Callow- hill, his son Springett dying five weeks later. In this year he wrote his work On Primitive Christianity, in which he argues that the faith and practice of the Friends were those of the early church. In 1697 Penn removed to Bristol, and during the greater part of 1698 was preaching with great success against oppression in Ireland, whither he had gone to look after the property at Shannangarry.

In 1699 he was back in Pennsylvania, landing near Chester on 30th November, where the success of Colonel Quary, judge of the admiralty in Pennsylvania, who was in the interests of those who wished to make the province an imperial colony, and the high-handed action of the deputy Markham in opposition to the crown, were causing great difficulties. Penn carried with him particular instructions to put down piracy, which the objections of the Quakers to the use of force had rendered audacious, and concern- ing which Quary had made strong representations to the home Government, while Markham and the inhabitants ap- parently encouraged it. Penn and Quary, however, came at once to a satisfactory understanding on this matter, and the illegal traffic was vigorously and successfully attacked. The next question he took up was slavery, and his attitude towards it is curious. In 1696 the Phila- delphian yearly meeting had passed a resolution declaring it contrary to the first principles of the gospel. Penn, how- ever, did not venture upon emancipation ; but he insisted on the instruction of negroes, permission for them to marry,

1 Colonel Fletcher’s commission recites “that by reason of great neglect and miscarriage in the government of Pennsylvania Her Majesty found it

necessary to take the government into her hands and under her immediate protection.” The attorney-general and the solicitor- general were of opinion (on 12th July 1694) that, when the aforesaid Yeasons failed or ceased, the right of government belonged to the petitioner,

repression of polygamy and adultery, and proposed regula- tions for their trial and punishment. The assembly, how- ever, a very mixed body of all nations, now refused to accept any of these proposals except the last-named.

His great success was with the Indians ; by their treaty with him in 1700 they promised not to help any enemy of England, to traffic only with those approved by the governor, and to sell furs or skins to none but inhabitants of the province. At the same time he showed his capacity for legislation by the share he took with Lord Bellomont at New York in the consolidation of the laws in use in the various parts of America.

Affairs now again demanded his presence in England. The king had in 1701 written to urge upon the Pennsylvania Government a union with other private colonies for defence, and had asked for money for fortifications. The difficulty felt by the crown in this matter was a natural one. A Bill was brought into the Lords to convert private into crown colonies. Penn's son appeared before the committee of the House and managed to delay the matter until his father's return. On 15th September Penn called the assembly to- gether, in which the differences between the province and the territories again broke out. He succeeded, however, in calming them, appointed a council of ten to manage the province in his absence, and gave municipal institutions to Philadelphia. In May 1700, experience having shown that alterations in the charter were advisable, the assembly had, almost unanimously, requested Penn to revise it. On 28th October 1701 he handed it back to them in the form in which it afterwards remained. An assembly was to be chosen yearly, of four persons from each county, with all the self-governing privileges of the English House of Commons. Two-thirds were to form a quorum. The nomination of sheriffs, coroners, and magistrates for each county was given to the governor, who was to select from names handed in by the freemen. Moreover, the council was no longer elected by the people, but nominated by the governor, who was thus practically left single in the execu- tive. The assembly, however, who, by the first charter, had not the right to propound laws, but might only amend

or reject them, now acquired that privilege. In other respects the original charter remained, and the inviolability of con- science was again emphaticallyasserted. Penn reached Eng- land in December 1701. The accession of Anne appears to have put an end to the Bill in the Lords, and to his troubles on this score. He once more assumed the position of leader of the Dissenters and himself read the address of thanks for the promise from the throne to maintain the Act of Toleration. He now too took up his abode again at Kensing- ton, and published while here his More L'ruts of Solitude.

In 1703 he went to Knightsbridge, where he remained until 1706, when he removed to Brentford, his final resi- dence being taken up in 1710 at Field Ruscombe, near Twyford. In 1704 he wrote his Life of Bulstrode White- locke. He had now much trouble from America, The terri- torialists were openly rejecting his authority, and doing their best to obstruct all business in the assembly ; and matters were further embarrassed by the injudicious conduct of Go- vernor Evans in 1706. Moreover, pecuniary troubles came heavily upon him, while the conduct of his son William, who became the ringleader of all the dissolute characters in Philadelphia, was another and still more severe trial. This son was married, and had a son and daughter, but appears to have been left entirely out of account in the settlement of Penn's proprietary rights on his death.

Whatever were Penn's great qualities, he was deficient in judgment of character. This was especially shown in the choice of his steward Ford, from whom he had borrowed money, and who, by dexterous swindling, had managed, at the time of his death, to establish a claim for £14,000

against Penn. Penn, however, refused to pay, and spent nine months in the Fleet rather than give way. He was released at length by his friends, who paid £7500 in composition of all claims. Difficulties with his govern- ment of Pennsylvania continued to harass him. Fresh disputes took place with Lord Baltimore, the owner of Maryland, and Penn also felt deeply what seemed to him the ungrateful treatment which he met with at the hands of the assembly. He therefore in 1710 wrote, in earnest and affectionate

language, an address to his “old friends,” setting forth his wrongs. So great was the effect which this produced that the assembly which met in October of that year was entirely in his interests; revenues were properly paid; the disaffected were silenced and com- plaints were hushed ; while an advance in moral sense was shown by the fact that a Bill was passed prohibiting the importation of negroes. This, however, when submitted to the British parliament, was cancelled. Penn now, in February 1712, being in failing health, proposed to sur- render his powers to the crown. He appears, from Dixon’s work (p. 413), to have offered previously, just before he was arrested by the Fords, to give up his government for £20,000, but with stipulations which rendered the crown unwilling to take it. On the present occasion the com- mission of plantations. recommended that Penn should receive £12,000 in four years from the time of surrender, Penn stipulating only that the queen should take the Quakers under her protection ; and £1000 was given him in part payment. Before, however, the matter could go further he was seized with apoplectic fits, which shat- tered his understanding and memory. A second attack occurred in 1713, and from that time until his death his powers gradually failed, although at times his intellect was clear and vigorous. He died on 30th May 1718, leaving three sons by his second wife, John, Thomas, and Richard, and was buried along with his first and second wives at Jourdan’s meeting-house, near Chalfont St Giles in Bucking- hamshire. It has finally to be mentioned that in 1790 the proprietary rights of Penn’s descendants were bought up for a pension of £4000 a year to the eldest: male descend- ant by his second wife, and that this pension was commuted in 1884 for the sum of £67,000. (0. A.)
PENNANT, Tuomas (1726-1798), naturalist and anti- quary, was descended from an old Welsh family, who for many generations had resided at Downing, Flintshire, where he was born 14th June 1726. He received his early education at Wrexham and Fulham, and afterwards attended Queen’s and Oriel Colleges, Oxford, but did not take a degree. At twelve years of age he was inspired with a passion for natural history through obtaining a present of Willughby’s Ornithology; and a tour in Corn- wall in 1746-47 after leaving Oxford awakened his strong interest in minerals and fossils. In 1750 his account of an earthquake which he felt at Downing was inserted in the Philosophical Transactions, where there also appeared in 1756 a paper on several coralloid bodies he had col- lected at Coalbrook Dale, Shropshire. In the following year, at the instance of Linnzeus, he was

elected a member of the Royal Society of Upsala. In 1766 he published a folio volume entitled British Zoology. The work is meritorious rather as a laborious compilation than as an original contribution to science, but that it served a good purpose is evidenced by the nuinber of editions (see ORNI-THOLOGY, p. 9 above) through which it passed. During its progress he visited the Continent and made the acquaint- ance of Buffon, Voltaire, Haller, and Pallas. In 1771 was published his Synopsis of Quadrupeds, afterwards extended into a History of Quadrupeds. At the end of the same year he published A Zour in Scotland in 1769, which proving remarkably popular was followed in 1774 by an

account of another journey in Scotland published in two volumes, afterwards distinguished as the second and third Tour. In these works he manifested the rare faculty of investing with interest details of antiquarian lore, while they have also proved invaluable as preserving the record of important antiquarian relics which have now perished, In 1778 he brought out a similar Zour in Wales, which was followed by a Journey to Snowdon (part i. 1781, part ii. 1783), afterwards forming the second volume of the Zour. In 1782 he published a Journey from Chester to London, He brought out Arctic Zoology in 1785-87. In 1790 appeared his Account of London, which has gone through a large number of editions, and has justly been termed ‘‘the most popular book ever written on the subject.” Three years later he published the Literary Life of the late 7’. Pennant, written by himself. In his later years he was engaged on a work entitled Outlines of the Globe, vols. i. and 11. of which appeared in 1798, and vols. iii. and iv; edited by his son David Pennant, in 1800. He was also the author of a number of minor works, some of which were published posthumously. He died at Downing 16th December 1798. Pennant was in 1767 elected a member of the Royal Society, and he was a member of many other learned societies, both home and foreign. In 1771 he received the degree of D.C.L. from the university of Oxford.

PENNI, Granrrancesco (1488-1528), Italian painter, surnamed ‘“I] Fattore,” from the relation in which he stood to Raphael, whose favourite disciple he

was after Giulio Romano, was a native of Florence, but spent the latter years of his life in Naples. He painted in oil as well as in fresco, but is chiefly known for his work in the Loggie of the Vatican.

PENNSYLVANIA, one of the original thirteen States Plate VL

of the North American Union, lying between 39° 43’ and 42° 15′ N. lat., and between 74° 40’ and 80° 36’ W. long, is 160 miles wide, and more than 300 miles long from east to west. Its northern, southern, and western border-lines were meant to be straight ; the eastern follows the course of the Delaware river. It is bounded by the States of New York and New Jersey on the N. and E., by Ohio on the W., and by Delaware, Maryland, and West Virginia on the 8. At its north-west corner a small triangular addition gives it a shore-line of 40 miles, with one good harbour, on Lake Erie. At its south-eastern corner, a circle of 10 miles radius (struck from the court-house at New- castle) throws a small area into the State of Delaware. Its surface, subdivided into sixty-seven counties, measures nearly 28,800,000 acres or 45,000 square miles ; less than one-half of its acreage is in cultivated farms, and only 1,000,000 of the people live in separate farm-houses. Out of a population of 4,283,000, nearly 2,000,000 lived in towns and cities in 1880, and more than 2,000,000 in country hamlets or factory villages, at iron mines and furnaces, at coal-mines and coke-ovens, at lumber-camps and oil-wells, or along the many lines of canal and railroad which traverse the State in all directions.

Physical Features.—Pennsylvania is topographically divi- sible into three parts: a south-east district, the open country between the South Mountains and the sea; a middle belt of parallel valleys separated by low parallel mountain-ridges; and a northern and western upland, behind the escarpment of the Alleghany Mountain. One and a half millions of its people inhabit the fertile and highly-cultivated south- eastern triangle, which is nowhere more than 600 or 700 feet above the level of the sea. One million inhabit the middle belt of higher-lying valleys, rich in iron ore and anthracite coal. One and a half millions occupy the great bituminous coal and oil regions of the northern and western counties, elevated from 1000 to 2500 feet above the sea,

PGRN Ss YVAN I A

which constitute at least one-half of the State, and drain, not eastward into the Atlantic, but northward into the St Lawrence and westward into the Mississippi.

The valleys of the middle belt are of two characters, dis- tinguished by the farming population of the Atlantic States as “rich valleys” and “‘ poor valleys.” The former, whether large or small, are completely enclosed and comparatively level arenas of limestone land, surrounded by rocky and wooded barriers, less than 1000 feet high, through narrow gaps in which streams enter or issue. A curiously sculptured slate-terrace, half the height of the encircling mountain, overlooks each of these secluded valleys. Their entire limestone floor has been under cultivation for a century, and the best iron-ore deposits of the State and its oldest mines are situated in them. They are gardens of fertility, yielding heavy crops of wheat, rye, and maize to the frugal, thrifty, and laborious descendants of their early settlers. Innumerable caverns ramify beneath the surface; sink- holes receive the drainage of the fields; many of the water- courses appear and disappear beneath sunken arches of limestone ; and wells are the chief source of supply. Old orchards and great planted trees abound, and more pictur- esque landscapes cannot be found. Nittany, the largest of these isolated valleys, occupies the centre of the State. It is 60 miles long, but its greatest width is only 10 miles ; and it is subdivided at its north-eastern end by long pro- jecting mountain-spurs into narrow parallel coves, each of which is known by a special name, Brush valley, Penn’s valley, &c. Sinking Spring valley is at its south-western end, and here it is traversed by the Little J uniata river, along the banks of which runs the Pennsylvania Railroad. A narrow valley, called Canoe valley, leads southward into Morrison’s cove, which is half as large as Nittany valley. The next largest limestone valley is Kishicoquilis, 40 miles long by 5 miles wide, ending southward in a point, and split at its north-east end into three. German Amish (Mennonite sect) and Scotch-Irish Presbyterian settlers, separated by an ideal cross line, have made this valley famous for its loveliness and wealth. Farther south is M‘Connell’s cove, west of this Friend’s cove, and still farther west Millikin’s cove. Two little oval holes in the mountains north-east of Nittany valley, Nippenose valley and’ Oval valley, and two long slit-like depressions in Tuscarora and Black Log Mountains conclude the short list of these remarkable limestone threshing-floors of Pennsylvania.

Across the whole State, however, stretches the Great Valley in a wide and gentle curve from east to south, one- half its surface covered with the soil of the terrace-slate, the other half with the same limestone soil which causes the exceptional fertility of the isolated valleys above enumerated. This very remarkable feature of the Atlantic side of the continent extends in an unbroken line for nearly 1000 miles, from eastern Canada to the low- lands of the Gulf of Mexico, only 150 miles of its length being in Pennsylvania, where its average width may be called 15 miles. Everywhere on its north-west side rises a sharp and regularly level-crested ridge, about 1000 feet high, heavily timbered. On its other or southern side a range of irregular mountain-land completely secludes the Great Valley from the seaboard, except for about 50 miles in Pennsylvania. This mountain-range is known in Vermont as the Green Mountains, in Massachusetts as the Taconic Mountains, in New York and New Jersey as the Highlands, in Pennsylvania and Maryland as the South Mountains, in Virginia as the Blue Ridge, in North Carolina as the Unaka or Smoky Mountains. In their northern extension they rise to heights of 3000 and 4000 feet; in the southern States they have summits from 4000 to 7000 feet above the sea. In Pennsylvania few parts of the range exceed 1500 fect; and at the broken

A99

gap of 50 miles already mentioned the Great Valley lime- stone land protrudes southward through the interrupted range, to nake of Lancaster the richest agricultural county in the State. Before the era of railways Lancaster county made the markets of Philadelphia the cheapest and most luxurious in the world. It was on this exceptional out- spread of the Great Valley limestone that the Germans of the first immigration settled. The limestone plain of Lancaster spreads west across the Susquehanna river into York county, and east into Berks and Chester counties to within 20 miles of Philadelphia. The whole plain swarms with life ; the houses are small, but the stone barns are of colossal size, 100 and even 150 feet long and from 30 to 50 feet high, the barnyard-wall supported on ranges of heavy columns, while on the other side of the building an earthen slope ascends to the great barn door.

The eight counties which lie along the face of the South Mountains, in the south-eastern region of the State, are in the highest state of cultivation, and resemble the most picturesque rural districts of England,—a country of rolling hills and gently sloping vales, with occasional rocky dells of no great depth, and low cascades utilized for grist- mills, factories, and machine shops; a country of wheat, rye, maize, potatoes, tobacco, turnip-fields, orchards, meadows, and patches of woodland; a country of flowing water, salubrious, fertile, and wealthy; dotted with hamlets, villages, and towns, and with the country-seats of affluent citizens. But the region as a whole is divisible into at least four districts, differing as much in population as in soil and situation. The counties of York and Adams, lying west of the Susquehanna river along the Maryland line, are inhabited by Germans, who for the most part still use the patois of their fatherland, mixed with English words and phrases. The counties of Montgomery and Bucks, lying between the Schuylkill and Delaware rivers, have a mingled population of the descendants of Germans, Quakers, and French Huguenots. The hilly district of northern Chester is also partly German. Southern Lan- caster, southern Chester, and Delaware counties support the most intelligent and virtuous population in the State, largely composed of the descendants of Penn's colonists, who have mostly escaped the narrowing and enervating influences of the city, and enjoy the mental and physical activity, the simplicity of manners, and the loyalty to truth, justice, and charity which characterized the Quakers at the origin of the sect in England. The district which they inhabit is a veritable fairyland, and its principal town, Westchester, has been for a long time one of the notable centres of scientific life in the State.

Climate.—The climate of so great a State is necessarily various, and is made more variable by its situation on the eastern side of the continent facing the Gulf Stream. The north-west wind is dry and cold in winter, the south-west wind always mild and rainy, and the south-east ocean wind wet and sultry in summer; but the dreaded north-easters of New England lose much of their rigour by the time they reach the Delaware. The northern highlands of the State are buried under 4 or 5 feet of snow four months of the year. The southern middle counties enjoy genial weather the whole year round, interrupted only by a few short intervals of intense heat or cold, never lasting more than three consecutive days. The midland valleys are

very hot in midsummer and very cold in mid-winter, the thermometer ranging between 0° and 100,° with a not unfrequent sudden fall after a sultry week of 30° or 40° in a few hours, ending with thunderstorms, and followed by dry, clear, cool weather, with winds from the north-west. The climate of the south-western counties is comparatively dry and equable, but with a sufficient annual rainfall, and plenty of snow in winter, productive of great river-floods

in spring. The average annual rainfall ranges from 36 inches in the western counties to 42 inches at Philadelphia. Destructive “freshets” descend the eastern rivers when the ice breaks up; for the Delaware and Susquehanna rivers are almost every year frozen over from tide- water to their sources; thunderstorms happen in the midst of winter ; the January thaw is always to be apprehended ; and when heavy rains break up the ice and it accumulates in the gaps of the mountains, the main river-channels become scenes of inevitable disaster. In 1837 the valley of the Lehigh was swept clean for 60 miles, the dams and locks of the canal were all destroyed, and every bridge and mill disappeared. Along the lower Susquehanna the floating ice has often been piled upon the railroad embank- ment to the height of several yards. Even in midsummer a heavier downpour than usual in 1836 carried destruction through the valley of the Juniata. But the affluents of the Ohio river in the western part of the State are subject every year to this danger.

Geology.—For unknown geological reasons Pennsylvania is peculiar for exhibiting the Paleozoic system in its

Upper productive Coal-measures Fos measures

Lower productive Coal-measures 12. Pottsville conglomerate 11. Mauch Chunk red shale 10. Pocono grey sandstone

9. Catskill red sandstone ; Upper Devonian. Chemung and Portage shales ; Middle Devonian. Tennessee, Hamilton, and Mar- cellus

Upper Helderberg limestone 7. Oriskany sandstone. 6. Lower Helderberg limestones 5. Clinton shales

4, 3 2,

{ Permian, or Upper Carboniferons.

13.

Middle Carboniferous.

} Lower Carboniferous.

ae

| rowe Devonian.

t Upper Silurian. Medina and Oneida sandstones Hudson river and Utica slates

Trenton and Great Valley lime- \ power Silurian. stones

Potsdam sandstone.

The geology of south-eastern Pennsylvania is not under- stood, There can be no doubt that the copper-bearing porphyritic Huronian system is well represented in the South Mountains, south of the Chambersburg fault, on the borders of Maryland; but the systematic age of the gneisses, mica schists, garnetiferous schists, serpentine and chrome iron rocks, of the Philadelphia belt, commencing at Trenton,

=

New York, Ohio, and Virginia.

PERN NeYriuvant ia

maximum development, that is, from the Permian forma, tion down to the base of Murchison’s Lower Silurian, with a total thickness of more than 40,000 fect at the eastern outcrops, diminishing to half that amount in the western counties. As all the formations are thrown into great anticlinal and synclinal folds, and cut through trans- versely by the rivers, they can be

measured along numerous continuous and conformable section lines. Near Harris. burg, at Pottsville, and at Mauch Chunk the Carboniferous, Devonian, and Upper Silurian rocks, standing vertical, show a cross section 5 miles thick. At the Delaware and Lehigh water-gaps the Lower Silurian slates are 6000 feet thick. In Canoe valley the underlying Lower Silurian limestones have been measured 6500 feet thick. In the south-western corner of the State about 1000 feet of Permian rocks overlie the Coal-measures proper. Thus the following Palzeozoic column can be studied with peculiar advantages in Pennsylvania, many of its more important stages either becoming greatly attenuated or wholly dis- appearing when followed into the neighbouring States of

crossing the Schuylkill river on a section line 15 miles wide, and extending through Delaware and Chester counties into Maryland, is still under discussion, some geologists considering them of pre-Cambrian age and others regard- ing them as metamorphosed Silurian rocks. They contain minute quantities of gold and are evidently a prolongation of the great gold-bearing belt of Virginia and the Carolinas.

_ Minerals.—The mineral resources of Pennsylvania have never been exaggerated except by those who compare its iron-mines with those of other States. It possesses a virtual monopoly ef anthra- cite, The output of rock-oil is still amazing. The bituminous, coking, and block coal district is only one large part of an enormous area which includes eastern Ohio, West Virginia, middle Tennes- see, and northern Alabama; and the ranges of iron-ores extend through New Jersey and New York into New England and Canada, and through Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, and eastern Tennessee into Alabama, with no sensible difference of quantity or quality in either direction. But Pennsylvania has the advan- tage over other States of a first plant, both in iron-works and coal- mines, and in a consequent multiplication and concentration of capital for these industries, which must keep her facile princeps in this respect for a long time to come. Sooner or later she must take a second rank in iron, but never in coal and coke. It is possible that the oil-fields of the three States to the south and west of her may become as productive as her own, although no signs of such an event are visible yet to geologists ; but no contingency of events can affect her iba control of the anthracite market.

- -—

Penny shy ANT A

Three anthracite coal-regions in castern Pennsylvania are recog- nized by railroad men, coal-dealers, and statisticians ; but they do not exactly correspond to the three anthracite eoal-fields of the gcological survey reports. (1) By the Schuylkill region is meant all the surfaee of coal-land which is drained by that river, with two small additions from the upper water-basins of the Shamo- kin and Swatara rivers, affluents of the Susquehanna. In 1822 it supplied the Philadelphia market with 1480 tons of coal ; in 1880 it distributed, in all directions along the lines of the Reading Rail- road, 9,500,000 tons. (2) By the Lehigh region is meant all the coal-lands on that river, furnishing in 1821 1073 tons, and in 1882 5,700,000, chiefly to the city of New York. (3) By the Wyoming region is meant the isolated valley of the Susquehanna (north branch) and Lackawanna rivers, commencing its shipments in 1829 with 7000, and sending in 1882 14,000,000 tons of coal eastward, north- ward, and westward, to Boston, Montreal, and Chicago. In 1883 these three regions shipped a total of 31,800,000 tons.

The three anthracite coal-fields into which the region divides itself geologically—the southern, the middle, and the northern—are three groups of narrow parallel basins filled with crumpled Coal- measures. Each field has a characteristic grouping of its basins different from the other two: the southern in perfectly straight lines, except at its western end, which has a long fork or fish-tail ; the middle in échelon ; the northern in a long sweeping curve from west by east to north. The southern field has for its southern border a sharp low mountain-ridge, 62 miles long, bearing about N. by 60° E., and ending abruptly westward near the Susquehanna river and eastward at the Lehigh river. It is gapped in four places, by the Swatara, by the Schuylkill, and by its two principal branches, giving passage to three railways and two canals, one of which has been abandoned and the other is little used. In this mountain the lower Coal-measures descend vertically to a depth of 3000 feet below tide-level, and then rise again in a series of waves to the top of a much higher mountain which borders the field upon the north. From the top of this broad mountain the Coal-measures have been

swept away. They are next seen descending steeply northward into the middle field, where they sink to various depths of 1000 or 2000 feet below sea-level, rolling six times so as to make that number of mining basins, and then rise into the air, along a bounding mountain at the northern edge of the field, not to de- scend again to the present surface of the earth for 40 miles. Only the lowest beds, however, appear there in narrow strips upon the highest plateau of the State, and not as anthracite, but as bitu- minous coal. This description, however, only applies to the western division of the middle field. Its eastern division has a very different character. On the broad rolling top of the Beaver Meadow Moun- tains, west of the Lehigh river, lie a group of closely-folded parallel troughs, in which the coal-beds descend steeply to depths of 1000 or 2000 feet, and rapidly rise again to the surface, each trough being pointed at both ends and disappearing on the summits of mountain-spurs, which look down upon deeply-indented red-shale valleys. The collieries of this eastern division of the middle field are all on very high land, from 1600 to 1800 feet above the sea; and branch railroads descend from them by steep gradients to the two rival main lines, which follow the banks of the Lehigh and Dela- ware rivers to the Atlantic coast.

The northern field corresponds exactly to the Wyoming region. It is a moon-shaped trough, 50 miles long by 6 miles wide, tapering toa point both ways. Its eastern half is drained by the Lacka- wanna river westward into the Susquehanna river, where the latter breaks through the northern mountain-wall and begins to meander westward through the Kingston flats in the centre of the coal-field made famous by the incidents of Indian warfare. A few miles farther on the river breaks half through the northern wall, split- ting it lenethwise, and then cuts off the western point of the basin, leaving a little patch of it capping the isolated spur. This magni- ficent coal-field is traversed diagonally by anticlinal and synchnal folds in the Coal-measures in such 2 manner as to subdivide it into more than thirty small coal-basins, all connected underground, the deepest of whieh hold more than 3000 feet of Coal-measures ; so that in a hilltop near Wilkcsbarre fossil-shells of the Permian formation, the uppermost division of the Carboniferous system, have been collected. ;

Until the maps of the anthracite section of the State Geological Survey have been completed, the area of anthracite coal-land in all three fields cannot be

accurately statcd. The total number of coal-beds cannot be stated, because some are hardly noticeable ; others are composed of several layers separated elsewhere by 50 or 100 feet of intervening rock. The identification of the beds across the intervals which separate the fields, and even from colliery to colliery, is not in all cascs satisfactory. It may, however, be Said generally that the whole column of Coal-measures contains more than a hundred coal-beds. Less than one-fourth of these have hitherto been considcred of desirable size and quality for mining. Most of the output in past years and at present comes rom five or six of them, from the Lykens valley bed, from the Buck Mountain bed, especially from the Mammoth bed—all of

them white ash—and from two or three red ash beds next higher in the series. The first quantities of eoal which were sent to the market came from an open quarry on the summit of the mountain at Mauch Chunk, where the Mammoth bed is 60 fect thick. In subsequent years a long range of extensive collieries were created on the Mine Hill slope of the bed behind Pottsville. Later still the Mahanoy and Shenandoah collieries were established behind the Broad Mountain. From early years the great bed was worked in the Wyoming region by the Baltimore Company. Other corporations have extensively exploited it throughont the valley. Old mines in this bed are worked on a great scale also at Hazelton and Beaver Meadow, and later plants were made at Jeanesville, Clifton, and elsewhere. A choice though smaller bed, called the Buck Mountain vein, extends through all three fields, and is largely mined in many places, sometimes in tunnel-connexion with the Mammoth and somctimes alone. The Lykens valley bed, holding 10 and 12 feet of exceedingly choice coal, lies near the bottom of the Millstone grit (the base of the Coal-measures), but is scarcely workable anywhere except at the western end of the southern field.

The waste in mining anthracite coal is enormous, although it has been somewhat diminished by the concentration of most of the coal-properties under the control of a few railway companies, who employ competent engineers and superintendents. But the markets demand the delivery of the coal in sizes. Iron furnaces alone accept the run of the mine. The “breaker,”

an anthracite inven- tion, and a monster of destruction, is an edifice of wood and iron 100 feet high, furnished with slopes and lifts to take the mine- cars to the top, with rollers set with teeth to crush the larger lumps, with bolting screens to separate the sizes, with picking banks and boys to throw out slate descending the shoots, and with bays or pockets from which the coal is drawn at will to fill railway trains passing underneath. The waste is carted off to a neighbour- ing hillside. Hills of this “dust,” 100 feet high and hundreds of feet long, encumber the country, and awaken the anxiety of proprietors respecting its future disposal. All plans for utilizing it cheaply on a large scale have as yet failed, and no serious ehange in the situation can take place until the supply in the earth begins to fail. The time for that is distant. The annual output can reach 50,000,000 tons, and, in spite of the waste, can continue at that figure for three centuries. An exact calculation of solid con- tents in the ground, of waste in mining and breaking, and of quantity sent to market has been made for only one division of one field.

At the eastern end of the southern ficld, for instance, six beds, as yet locally worked by only thirteen collieries (four of them now abandoned), contained originally 1,033,000,000 tons, of which only 54,000,000 have been extracted (between 1820 and 1882), leaving 979,000,000 tons still untouched. The output in 1820 was less than 400 tons, that of 1849 nearly 400,000 tons, that of 1882 838,000. Ina few years it will reach 2,000,000, and might con- tinue at that rate five centuries.

The number of working collierics in the anthracite region is con- stantly changing. The list for 1881-82, reported by the official mine inspectors, numbers 141 in the northern field, 51 in the eastern middle, 91 in the western middle, and 70 in the southern field, 353 collieries in all. The fuel they send to market is both white coal from the lower and red-ash coal from the higher beds of the series, the market sizes being designated egg, stove, chestnut, pea, and buckwheat. By sampling carefully the contents of five cars from one colliery carrying each a different size of coal, and analysing the samples, it was found that, while there was little difference in the percentage of water (say 1°7), of sulphur (say 0°7), and of volatile matter (say 4°0), the percentage of ash regularly increased as the size diminished (egg 5°662, stove 10°174, chestnut 12°666, pea 14°664, buckwheat 16°620), showing the finer breakage of the slaty layers, and the mixture of

slate-dust with the smaller sizes of coal. The percentage of solid carbon, of course, diminished directly with the size, from 88°5 in egg-coal to 76°9 in buckwheat. The coal- dust of the heaps about the mines, before alluded to, is therefore, no doubt, still lower in solid carbon ; yet Captain Wootten's dust- burning locomotives on the Reading Railroad have been a success ; and the dust or " braize" of the Philadelphia coal-yards is sold for use in fire-boxes of suitable construction. ;

The bituminous coal-region of Pennsylvania covers the western third of the State, the greatest thiekness of Coal-measures being in the south-western corner. Six wide parallel basins sweep round from the boundary-line with New York State south-westward into Ohio and West Virginia. The summit of the Alleghany Mountain, containing the lowest coals, limits the region | towards the south- east ; an irregular line parallel with and 30 miles distant from the shore of Lake Erie limits it on the north-west. The basins all gradually deepen going south-west, and are all subdivided into smaller local basins by gentle rolls. In one or two neighbourhoods the coal-beds dip as much as 30°; but over almost the entire area they are so nearly horizontal that a dip of 2° or 3° is exceptionally great. Over thousands of square miles they lie as flat as geologieal formations can ever lie, considering the accidents of original deposi-

tion in the quiet Carboniferous sea. There is a striking uniformity in the composition of the whole formation, which is naturally divisible into: (1) upper (Permian) barren-measures ; (2) upper (Pittsburgh) productive Coal-measures ; (8) lower barren-measures ; (4) lower productive Coal-measures; (5) Millstone grit (Pottsville conglomerate) ; (6) Mauch Chunk shale and mountain limestone ; (7) Pocono sandstone and lowest (worthless) eoal-beds. These rest on more than 10,000 feet of Devonian rocks.

The area of the State actually covered by one or more workable bituminous coal-beds is about 9000 square miles. Dr H. M. Chance's caleulation of area, thickness, content, &c. (in a paper read before the Am. Inst. Min. Eng., October 1881), is the most trustworthy yet made. He assumes sixteen important eoal-beds, none workable over the whole area of thirty-one eounties,—only the lowest beds being preserved in ten, and the principal

upper beds only in seven of ‘these counties. Beds less than 2 feet thick are ignored. Beds from 2 to 3 feet thick are estimated only from outcrop down to water-level ; beds from 3 to 5, to 150 feet below water-level ; beds over 5, to 400 feet below water-level. Allowing 1650 gross tons per foot to the acre (less 11 per cent. for slate, bone, and sulphur partings, say 1500 gross tons) the mass of beds over 6 feet is 11,000,000,000 tons; of beds between 6 and 3 feet, 19,500,000,000 ; and of beds under 8 feet, 3,000,000,000,—making a total of 33,500,000,000 gross tous, 75 per cent. of which can be mined, 2.¢., 25,000,000,000 tons; of this 10,500,000,000 are in the Pittsburgh bed. An exaggerated statement was eurrent thirty years ago that the Pittsburgh eoal-bed within the limits of the State of Pennsylvania would equal the whole annual British coal-trade (then 100,000,000 tons) for 2000 years. According to our present knowledge such an output would exhaust it in a single eentury.

The upper productive Coal-measures, about 300 feet thick, eon- tain four workable beds, of which the lowest (Pittsburgh) is the mainstay of the eoke and iron interests of the seven south-western counties, furnishing to 77 collieries in Allegheny eounty 4,000,000 tons, to 50 in Fayette eounty 1,566,000, to 45 in Westmoreland county 2,335,000, to 31 in Washington county 798,000, to 14 in Somerset eounty 200,000,—total nearly 9,000,000 tons mined out of 217 collieries, most of them mere adits into the hillsides, at various levels (from 30 to 300 feet) above the water-level of the Ohio river, or its main branch, the Monongahela river, and its branch the Youghuogheny river. Along these streams railroad stations and slack water pools receive the coal let down by trestle-work slopes from the adits. A few shafts are sunk to the bed where, for short distances, it sinks a few yards beneath water-level.

The iron-ores of Pennsylvania formerly sufficed for stocking the furnaces of the State ; but for more than twenty years past large outside supplies have been in demand,—the red hematites of Michigan, the magnetic ores of Canada, northern New York, and especially of northern New Jersey, and the limonites of Virginia, not to speak of numerous cargoes of Algerian ore. To understand the native ores it will be necessary to refer to the schedule of the geological formations of the State (see p. 500 above). The more recent formations—the Tertiary and the Cretaceous—poor in iron ores, are not

found in Pennsylvania, being eonfined to the Atlantic seaboard. ‘The next older formation—the Trias—also poor in iron ore, makes an independent belt across the State through Bucks, Montgomery, Chester, Lancaster, York, and Adams counties. Hence we have only to consider five sources of supply,—(a) the earbonate ores of the Coal-measures, with brown hematite outcrops ; (6) the lower Devonian brown hematites ; (c) the Upper Silurian red fossil-ore ; (¢) the Lower Silurian brown hematites ; and (e) the Azoic magnetites, some of them apparently in Cambrian rocks, overlaid by Trias, and the rest of them interbedded with the oldest (Laurentian ?) gneisses.

The ordinary ironstone of the Coal-measures oecurs in ball or plate layers throughout the bituminous coal-region, but is almost wanting in the anthracite region. Brown hematite deposits, always connected with the limestone beds in the Coal-measures, were formerly extensively mined, but the supplies of Carboniferous ore of both kinds are far from meeting the present demand, and the make of charcoal iron from them has been virtually abandoned. At the base of the Devonian series the Marcellus still yields eon- siderable quantities of brown hematite from the outcrop of a fer- ruginous clay-bed, but only in two or three noteworthy localities. The Clinton beds of red fossil-ore (soft and rich at the outcrop, hard and lean lower down) at Danville and Bloomsbury, at Frankstown and Hollidaysburg, at Bloody Run and Bedford, kept furnaces going for a good many years, and are still used as mixtures at Johnstown and elsewhere. The Lower Silurian brown hematite mines, however, have becn the chief dependence of the industry. They are very numerous in the isolated limestone valleys and along the whole course of the Great Valley. Some of these open quarries are of vast size, and between 100 and 200 feet deep; furnishing shot and ball and pipe ore of the finest quality, both eold-short and red-short ; and the high reputation of American or Juniata iron is based upon the history first of the charcoal and then of the an- thracite make of pig-mctal from these spccial ores. Railroads now

carry them long distanees to the present centres of the iron manu- facture, in the heart of the bituminous coal-region, or in front of the anthracite region, on the Lehigh, Schuylkill, and Susquehanna rivers, where they ean be

mixed with the subcrystalline iron ores of the South Mountains or of the Highlands of New Jersey. The South Mountains of Pennsylvania, however, cannot be said to be rich in these last-mentioned deposits, a few of which are indced mined toa considerable extent ; but no thorough exploration of the range has yet been undertaken to see if the deep-lying strata contain the Canadian and New York magnetites which are to be expected. Some of the oldest and largest mines are situated at the edge of the Trias belt, and were formerly supposed to be of Trias age; but it seems now probable that they belong to a Cambrian slate forma- tion covered by the Trias; and in all cases they are touched or surrounded by trap-dykes, which eut the Trias or trap-beds that interlie the Trias. The most remarkable of these mines is the "Cornwall" near Lebanon, where great quantities of cupriferous magnetite are obtained by stoping the walls of a vast open quarry.

The iron industry of Pennsylvania has always competed with the eotton growth of the southern States and the cotton industry of the eastern States for political power in Congress, to save itself against a foreign importation of rolled iron. 'The iron-masters of Pennsylvania have led in every debate upon a proteetive tariff. Pennsylvania has always furnished one-half of the total amount of pig-iron cast in the United States. In 1883 it made 2,638,891 tons out of a total of 5,146,972 tons made in twenty-four States and one Territory. Of these 1,416,468 tons were anthracite pig, 1,184,108 coke and raw coal pig, and only 88,349 were charcoal pig; and the number of furnaces at the end of 1883 was 142 in blast and 129 out of blast. In like manner Pennsylvania has always rolled more than one-half of the iron and steel rails of American manufac- ture,—in 1883, for instance, 857,818 tons out of a total of 1,360,694, and of these 819,544 were Bessemer. So of crucible-steel ingots Pennsylvania in 1883 made 63,687 out of a total of 80,455 ; open- hearth steel ingots, 72,333 of a total of 133,679 ; in a word, of all kinds of rolled iron, 1,081,163 tons out of a total of 2,348,874. The petroleum statistics for 1882, partly mixed with those of an adjoining district in New York, show a product of 30,541,740 barrels (of 42 gallons).

Vegetation.—The vegetation of the State corresponds in variety with the variety of elevation and distance from the seaboard. The mountains are clad with forests of pine, hemlock, oak, beech, maple, walnut, wild cherry, eucumber, dogwood, and laurel, and eultivated apple, eherry, pear, and

peach trees grow in the clearings, Wild grapes grow in sheltered places ; wild huekleberries, straw- berries, and blackberries flourish. Oats, barley, and timothy grass yield heavy crops. The original forest remains only here and there in secluded spots. All its white-pine timber has been cut, and none grows to replace it. The spruce-pine, hemlock, and oak woods have been girdled by settlers, or barked by tanners and left to die. Extensive iron-furnace tracts have been systematically eut several times ; the deserted charcoal grounds in the anthracite and coke districts have beeome covered with a dense low growth of oak, maple, bireh, dogwood, and other deciduous vegetation. Two other motives have eo-operated for the destruction of the original forest,—the demand for railway sleepers and the still greater demand for timber and slabs in mines. The annual forest fires, sometimes of enormous magnitude, help to keep the size of forest- wood small, and to cover the uncultivated part of the State with brushwood. The early settlers of the low country also cut with- out mercy and without fear; no shadow was allowed to fall on a field. The traditional practice lasted long; but the scarcity of wood at length made itself felt. The last generation began to plant; the present cherishes and multiplies trees, in and around fields, along roads, and on rough ground. The old settled parts of the State are beeoming again well wooded. The mountain-ridges will always remain so, for outerops of sandstone make them rocky, and the terracing of their steep slopes is not yet to be thought of. In the north-western eounties the discovery of petroleum in 1859 produced a great demand for derrick lumber, and the ephemeral wooden cities which sprang up during the succeeding twenty-five years caused a rapid bringing under cultivation of at least 5000 square miles, lying between 1000 and 2000 feet above the level of the sea.

Two hundred and eighty-four genera and 544 species of plants are enumerated as growing on the platcau of Wayne county, m the north-cast eorner of the State, a typical portion of the whole upland region, covered with glacial drift-sand and gravel, with innumerable lakes, ponds, and small swamps, lying at various elevations fron 1100 to 2000 feet above the sea.

Fauna.—The zoology of Pennsylvania exhibits that transition stage of its history in which we live. The elk has disappeared ; but the panther (puma) and the small wolf are occasionally met with. The black bear is not by any

means extinct, and can always find its way anew into the State from West Virginia. The wild cat is common in the least settled counties. Hedgehogs, ground- logs, weasels, poleeats, squirrels of three species, mice of several

species, and musk-rats abound; but the beaver, which has given name to so many mountains, rivers, ereeks, and swamps all over the State, no longer exists. The wild turkey is practically exter- minated, but is oceasionally shot on the mountains. Owls, wood- doves, thrushes, and other birds are abundant. Harmless snakes of various species arc innumerable, especially a constrictor, the black snake, which grows to a length of 5 or6 feet. Two venomous snakes are still numerous, the eopper-hcad in the half-eultivated distriets and the rattlesnake in the mountains. The latter, in spite of all efforts to exterminate it, breeds with incredible rapidity. In summer it descends into the valleys. But, while the more dreaded copper-head is active and malicious and bites without warning, the rattlesnake is always sluggish and timid, and takes so mueh time to get into coil, and is so noisy about it, that it is an object more of contempt than of apprehension. The black snake is its worst enemy and is always victorious; the deer also bounds around it, leaps upon it, and scatters it in pieees; the hog feeds upon it; and yet half the State is infested with it. Poisonous insects are almost unknown; but infinite swarms of gnats torment cattle and men in the forest counties. During a short season in summer mosquitoes abound along the tidal rivers, when the south wind blows. Fleas havo only reeently been im- ported ; but tieks arc common in the lowland woods, and the native bed- bug, which breeds under the bark of the hemlock, has become domiciled throughout the State, and is the curse not only of the traveller but of a large part of the resident population. Government. —The constitution of 1874 gives the right to vote to évery male citizen over twenty-one years of age who has been a citizen of the United States one month, resident in Pennsylvania one year, and in his clection distriet two months; but, if over twenty-two ycars old, he must have paid a tax at least two months before the day of election. The legislative power is vested in a general assembly of two houses, —fifty senators elected by the people for four years and two hundred representatives for two years. There are strong constitutional guards against special legislation. The executive department consists of a

governor, lieutenant-gover- nor, and seeretary of internal affairs, elected each for four years, an auditor for three, and a treasurer for two, together with a seerctary of state, an attorney-general, and a superintendent of public in- struetion, each appointed for four years by the governor with cou- sent of the senate. The judiciary consists of a supreme eourt of seven judges elected for twenty-one years ; forty-three district courts of common pleas each with one or more judges elected for ten years, and exercising probate jurisdiction except in eities where there are orphans' courts ; and local magistrates of minor jurisdiction. The State sends twenty-seven representatives to the national Congress ; and federal courts for the eastern districts are held at Philadelphia, and for the western district at Pittsburgh, Williamsport, and Erie. Population.—The population was estimated in 1755 at 200,000. The results of subsequent censuses are shown in the following table—

Census. Males. | Females. Total ae 1790 222,810 211,563 434,373 9°6 1800 309,507 292,358 602,365 13°4

1810 413,575 896,516 810,091 18:0 1820 532,432 517,026 1,047,507 23:3

1830 684,378 664,455 1,348,233 30°0 1840 867,556 856,477 1,724,033 38°3

1850 1,168,103 1,143,683 2,311,786 514

1860 1,454,419 1,451,796 2,906,215 64°6

1870 1,758,499 1,768,452 3,521,951 78:2

1880 2,136,655 | 2,146,936 4,282,891 95°2

Of the last total 85,535 were coloured ; 587,829 were of foreign birth, ineluding 80,102 English, 236,505 Irish, 20,785 Scotch, 29,447 Welsh, and 168,426 Gernians.

Education. —In 1880 but 4°6 per cent. of the population over teu years old were unable to read,and 7°1 per eeut. unable to write. The State is divided into 2215 districts, which hold school property valued at $28,341,560, and

maintain 19,188 schools, of which 7812 are graded. Directing boards elected by the people appoint county superintendents. -The State superintendent has two deputies. The teachers numbcr 21,289, of whom 12,778 are women, the average Imonthly wages for men being $35°12, and for women $28 °89. There are fourtecn normal sehools, ten being under State patronage. The total school expenditure for 1882 was $8,262,244, ineluding $1,000,000 of State aid, given every year. The sehools are free to all persons from six to twenty-one years of age; and this “school population” in 1880 numbered 1,422,377. In 1883 there were 945,345 on the registers; the average attendance was 611,317. There are twenty-eight colleges giving four-year courses, but only five eonfine themselves strictly to college work, viz., university of Pennsylvania at Philadelphia, Lchich university at South Bethle- hem, Lafayette college at Easton, Haverford college at Haverford, and Dickinson college at Carlisle. The grounds, buildings, and apparatus of twenty institutions are valued at $3,186,000, and they hold $3,951,000 in produetive funds. Swarthmore college and eight others admit both sexes to equal privileges. The pecu-

liar industries of the State have led to extensive provisions for teehnieal and scientific instruction. There are seventeen theological schools, a law department in the university of Pennsylvania, five medical colleges, all in Philadelphia, an academy of fine arts, and about two hundred aeademies of various grades.

Prisons, d:e.—There are two penitentiaries, the Eastern, at Phil- adelphia, on the separate-eell system, with about 1000 conviets, and the Western, at Allegheny, on the eongregate system, with about 650 conviets. The reform school at Morganza (eottage system) and the house of refuge at Philadelphia receive youthful offenders who in both institutions average over 1000. An industrial reforma- tory at Huntingdon, with room for 500 youthful criminals sentenced for first offences, is near eompletion (1884), There arc 69 county jails, eosting annually $750,000; the commitments for the year ending 30th September 1883 were 2328, and the inmates 1127.

Pauperism, Insanity, &e.—On 30th September 1883 there were 38 county almshouses, containing 8313 inmates, costing for the year $1,296,945, to whieh add $203,830 for township poor and $226,000 for outdoor relief. A law of 1883 forbids the retention of children over two and under sixteen in almshouses with adult paupers for more than sixty days. Charitable institutions and societies are numerous. Sinee 1879 a society for organizing charity has been operating in Philadelphia to prevent indiscriminate and duplicate giving, and mendicaney. There are five State hospitals for insane, —at Harrisburg, Danville, Warren, Dixmont, and Norristown. These with three other prominent cstablishments had 3575 inmates on Ist October 1882, of whom 2220 were indigent. In one year 5107 cases were treated, 1552 newly admitted, 968 persons dis- charged, 368 died. In 1880 there were 3884 blind persons in the State ; in January 1884 there were 373 in institutions assisted by the State. Of those discharged about two-thirds have a fair pro- spect of self-support. In institutions for deaf and dumb there were Of 404 children in the institute for feeble-minded at Media only 100 were dcemed incapable of improvement.

Agriculture. —By the ecnsus of 1880 there were 301,112 persons engaged in agriculture, and 1,154,955 in all other oeeupations. The number of farms was 213,542, averaging 93 acres each. There were under improvement 13,423,007 aercs, an inerease of 1,907,042 since 1870; the value of produets was $129,760,476. The principal erops are wheat, maize, hay, and tobacco, the cultivation of the last having greatly inereased of late, so that Pennsylvania ranks third among the tobacco-raising States of the Union, its produet in 1880 being 36,943,272 tb. It is most largely grown in Lancaster county. There isa large yield of honey and maple sugar, and the butter product of 1880 was 79,336,012 Ib.

Manufactures.—The manufacturing industry has more than trebled since 1860. In 1880 the eapital invested in 31,232 estab- lishments was $474,510,993, the cost of material used in a year $465,020,563, the total sum paid in wages $134,055,904,—the number of persons employed being 387,072, and the value of pro- duct $744,818,445, or nearly one-seventh of the total produet of manufactures in the United States ($5,369,579,191), Iron and steel take the lead; textile fabries, ineluding earpets, cottons, woollens, silks, yarns, hosiery, and hats make a large item; 333 tanneries

yield in leather $23,735,814; flour and grist mills doa large business ; the lumber interest centres at Williamsport and glass-making at Pittsburgh, and there are salt-wells at Allegheny.

Communications. —Connexions between the navigable rivers were effeeted in former years at a cost of over $50,000,000, by a system of canals now chiefly used for the carriage of eoal, subordinate to the mining and railway corporations, which are closely related. There are about 5500 miles of railroad in the State belonging to numerous eompanies, but the Pennsylvania Railroad system and the Phil- adelphia and Reading system are by far the most important. The Pennsylvania has not only consolidated under its management mauy lines within the State but has gained control by purchase or lease of trunk lines and branches leading through other States, east, west, north, and south, ineluding in all over 6000 miles of road, Of these 2555 belong to the Pennsylvania division, of which the gross earnings in 1883 were $32,017,818, and the uet earnings $13,696,399. The Philadelphia and Reading owns or controls 1583 miles of road, and along with a heavy passenger business (18,195,264 earried in 1883) is largely oceupied with transporta- tion of coal from the mines to Philadelphia and New York. Its gross earnings in 1883 were $29,797,927, its net earnings $14,464,070, exclusive of rentals of leased lines and interest. In eonjunction with the Reading Coal and Iron Company, a separate corporation, it eontrols seventy-four eollieries, covering 163,317 aeres of anthra- eite coal lands. The gross earnings of the Coal and Iron Company for 1883 were $17,038,858, and the net earnings $921,771. Other companies eontrol lines leading from the eoal and iron regions to New York eity. The railroad interest gives employment to over 76,000 men, besides the 3000 employed by the Baldwin Locomo- tive Works in Philadelphia.

Finance.—For the year ending 30th November 1882 the State re- venue, exclusive of a loan of $9,360,120, was $7,068,529, of which over $4,000,000 came from taxes on corporations, and nearly all the

rest fron various business licences, The State imposes no tax on real estate, but collects $437,776 from. taxes on money at interest, watehes, and earriages. The expenditure, exclusive of payment on debt, was $5,024,766.

The debt was $20, 225,083, with $7,992,983 of assets in the sinking fund. Thirty-eight counties report debts aggregating $76,301,876, and there are heavy municipal debts. The value of real estate reported in 1882 was $1,598,430,041, of which $110,000,126 were legally exempt from taxation.

Militia.—Distributed over the State and organized into regiments and brigades are 137 volunteer companies, containing 8220 men and officers, and called collectively the “national guard.” They include three batteries of artillery, three companies of cavalry, and 131 of infantry, and are armed, equipped, and supplied by the State at an annual expense of about $242,000.

History. —The grant of the extensive territory called Pennsyl- vania, made by Charles II. in 1681 to William PENN (q.v.), carried with it full proprietorship and dominion, saving only the king’s sovereignty. Penn at once created a quick market for lands by publishing in England and on the Continent his liberal scheme of governinent and his intention to try the ‘‘holy experiment” of ‘Ca free colony for all mankind.” In 1682, when he erossed the sea to take possession, he found the western bank of the Delaware already occupied by nearly 6000 Swedes, Dutch, and English, the Swedes having begun a settlement in 1638. ‘To these, as to settlers from all nations, he coneeded equal liberties. The desire to escape from spiritual and temporal despotisms, and the chance of acquir- ing rich lands in a salubrious climate on easy terms, drew thousands of immigrants: English Quakers, Seottish and Irish Presbyterians, German Mennonites, French Huguenots, men of all religions, were alike welcome ; the population increased for a few years at the rate of one thousand a year; then morc rapidly, so that at the end of seventy-five years it exeecded 200,000. Penn twiee visited Penn- sylvania, staying each time two years. In December 1682 he summoned delegates to mcet him at Upland (now Chester) to eon- fer about government ; the land was divided into counties, and in March following representatives chosen by the people of these dis- tricts agreed ona constitution, based upon popular suffrage, and guaranteeing liberty of conscience. All magistrates and offieers were to be chosen by the people, Penn surrendering all claim for revenue by taxation, and retaining for himself and his deputies only the governorship. For his further connexion with Pennsyl- vania, see Penn. In 1682 PHILADELPHIA (q.v.) was

founded. The failure to settle the boundary-line between Pennsylvania and Maryland, in dispute between Lord Baltimore and Penn, long eaused great irritation among the settlers, who were liable to double taxation ; but in 1750 Lord Hardwiek's deeree in Chancery con- firmed the original claims of Penn, and in 1763-67 Mason and Dixon definitely fixed and marked 246 miles of the line, sinee made famous as the separation between free and slave States.

For over sixty years the predominanee of the Quakers in the assembly had prevented any legislation for publie defenee,—of which, indeed, there was little need so long as Indians and whites kept their covenant. But in 1744 the Indians beeame allies of the French, then at war with Great Britain. Freneh military posts established in western Pennsylvania not only violated the integrity of the provinee but threatened to confine the English to the east of the Alleghanies, and perhaps to crowd them off the continent. The party of non-resistance was overborne by a sense of public danger, which found strong expression in a pamphlet by Franklin ; and in 1747 the assembly permitted volunteer organization. One hundred and twenty companies werc soon enrolled, ten of them, of a hundred men each, in Philadelphia. But there was no efficient manage- ment nor hearty co-operation with adjacent eolonies. Braddoek's defeat in 1754 intensified the alarm ; Fort Duquesne (site of Pitts- burgh), which he aimed to reduee, was held by the French till 1758. The peaee of Paris in 1763 did not quiet the Red Men. Pontiae, a famous saehém, united the western tribes in a war of extermina- tion, only ended when the whites had proved their mastery. The royal council, displeased with self-governing tendencies, annulled the militia law of Pennsylvania; but the pressure of common danger and the dread of tomahawk and torch not only led to the offer of a bounty of $130 for Indian scalps, but taught the lessons of comradeship and co-operation, and nourished the self-reliant courage of the generation which was to strike for independence. Though stout against the Stamp Aet of 1765 and other parliamentary encroachments, Pennsylvania was not swift to move ; the assembly sought to mediate between the parliament and the colonies, but the course of events soon made neutrality impossible. A long adjournment was construed as abdication ; a committee of safety seized the reins till the people could speak through a representative convention. The convention espoused the revolution ; in Septem- ber 1776 a State constitution was

promulgated ; in 1778 the old charter was formally annulled and the Penn claims silenced by payment of £130,000. During the war Pennsylvania was the scene of important events,—the deliberations of the Congress and the Declaration of Independence in 1776; the battles of Brandy- wine and Germantown in 1777; the British oeewpation of Phil-

adelphia, and the encampment of Washington at Valley Forge, in 1777-78.

PENRITH, a market-town of Cumberland, England, is situated near the river Eamont, and on the Lancaster and Carlisle section of the London and North-Western Railway, 18 miles south of Carlisle, and 5 north-east of Ullswater. The town consists chiefly of one long and wide street. To the west once stood an ancient castle, erected as a protection against the Scots, on the site of an old Roman encampment. But it was dismantled by Charles L ; the ruins still remain. The principal public buildings are the grammar-school, founded by Queen Elizabeth in 1566, the. agricultural hall, the mechanics' institute, and the working-men's literary institute. There are breweries, tanneries, and saw-mills, but the town depends chiefly on agriculture. The population of the urban sanitary district in 1871 was 8317, and in 1881 it was 9268.

Old Penrith, the Bremetenracum of the Romans, was about 5 miles north by west of the present town. At the Conquest the honour of Penrith was a royal franchise ; but it was alternately in the pos-

session of the English and Scottish kings until given to Anthony — 'Beck, bishop of Durham, by Edward I.

The town more than once lapsed to the crown. In 1696 it was granted to William Bentinek, earl of Portland, and in 1788 it was sold by the duke of Portland to the duke of Devonshire.

PENSACOLA, a city of the United States, capital of Escambia county, Florida, on the north-west coast of Pensacola Bay. The harbour has recently

been improved so as to secure a uniform depth of 24 feet. Pensacola is the terminus of three railway lines which connect it with Mobile, Montgomery, Jacksonville, and Millview, the start- ing-place of steamers plying to Cedar Keys, &c., and the seat of a large trade in lumber (mainly pitch pine), early vegetables, and winter fruits. About 7 miles west of Pen- sacola lies a United States navy-yard. The value of the exports to Great Britain and the British colonies in 1882 was $1,481,702, to other foreign countries $1,091,113, and to the United States $535,225. The total imports were only $169,082. In 1850 the population was 2164, in 1870 3347, and in 1880 6845; and it has since in- creased to upwards of 8000.

Pensacola Bay is said to have been discovered by Narvaez in 1528. French, and afterwards Spanish, colonists settled on the site of the town in the close of the 17th century. In 1719 it was captured by Bienville, in 1723 restored to the Spaniards, in 1763 occupied by the British, in 1781 captured by General Galvez, in 1814 taken from the British by the United States general Jackson, and again in 1818 taken by the same general from the Spaniards. In 1821, according to the treaty of 1819, it beeame, with the rest of Florida, part of the United States territory.

PENTATEUC H

PENTATEUCH anp JOSHUA. The name Penta- teuch, already found in Tertullian and Origen, corresponds to the Jewish Mminn ‘wan Awon (the five-fifths of the Torah, or Law); the several books were named by the Jews from their initial words, though at least Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy had also titles corresponding to those we use, viz., DID NWN, oNpan won (Apperdexwderp, Origen, in Eus., HW. £., vi. 25), and mn nw. = The Pentateuch, together with Joshua, Judges, and Ruth, with which it is usually united in Greek MSS., makes up the Octateuch ; the Pentateuch and Joshua together have recently been named the Hexateuch. The date of the division of the Torah into five books cannot be made out ; it is probably older than the Septuagint translation.

Moses is already taken for the author of the Pentateuch in 2 Chronicles xxv. 4, xxxv. 12 sq.; only the last eight verses of Deuteronomy are, according to the rabbins, not from his pen. From the synagogue belief in the Mosaic

the previous question of the composition of the Pentateuch.

Jean Astruc has the merit of opening the true path of Astruc.

this investigation. He recognized in Genesis two main sources, between which he divided the whole materials of the book, with some few exceptions, and these sources he distinguished by the mark that the one used for God the name Elohim (Gen. i., v.; comp. Exod. vi. 3) and the other the name Jehovah (Gen. ii.-iv.).2_ Astruc's hypothesis, fortified by the observation of other linguistic differences which regularly corresponded with the variation in the names of God, was introduced into Germany by Eichhorn's Linleitung in d. A.T., and proved there the fruitful and just point of departure for all further inquiry. At first, indeed, it was with but uncertain steps that critics advanced from the analysis of Genesis to that of the other books, where the simple criterion of the alternation of the divine names was no longer available. In the hands of the Scotsman Geddes and the German Vater the Pentateuch resolved

authorship passed to the church, and is still widely pre-

1 te itself into an agglomeration of longer and shorter fragments, Frag-
valent among Christians. At an early date, indeed, doubts

between which no threads of continuous connexion could mentary

suggested themselves as to the correctness of this view, but it was not till the 17th century that these became so strong that they could not be suppressed.1_ It was ob- served that Moses does not speak of himself in the first person, but that some other writer speaks of him in the third,—a writer, too, who lived long after. The expression of Gen. xii. 6, "the Canaanite was then in the land," is spoken to readers who had long forgotten that a different nation from Israel had once occupied the Holy Land; the words of Gen. xxxvi. 31, "these are the kings that reigned in Edom, before there reigned any king over the children of Israel," have no prophetic aspect ; they point to an author who wrote under the Hebrew monarchy. Again, the "book of the wars of Jehovah " (Num. xxi. 14) cannot possibly be cited by

Moses himself, as it contains a record of his own deeds; and, when Deut. xxxiv. 10 (comp. Num. xii.) says that “there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses,” the writer is necessarily one who looked back to Moses through a long series of later prophets.

At the same time attention was drawn to a variety of contradictions, inequalities, transpositions, and repetitions of events in the Pentateuch, such as excluded the idea that the whole came from a single pen. Thus Peyrerius re- marked that Gen. xx. and xxvi. stand in an impossible chronological context ; and on the incongruity of Gen. 1. and ii., which he pressed very strongly, he rested his hypo- thesis of the Preadamites. Such observations could not but grievously shake the persuasion that Moses was the author of the Pentateuch, while at the same time they directed criticism to a less negative task—viz., the analysis of the Pentateuch. For this, indeed, the 17th century did not effect anything considerable, but at least two conclusions came out with sufficient clearness. The first of these was the self-contained character of Deuteronomy, which in these days there was a disposition to regard as the oldest book of the Pentateuch, and that with the best claims to authenticity. And in the second place the Pentateuchal laws and the Pentateuchal history were sharply distin- guished; the chief difficulties were felt to lie in the narrative, and there seemed to be less reason for question- ing the Mosaic authorship of the laws.

Spinoza’s bold conjecture that in their present form not only the Pentateuch but also the other historical books of the Old Testament were composed by Ezra ran far ahead of the laborious investigation of details necessary to solve

1 Hobbes, Leviathan, chap. xxxiii. ; Peyrerius, Syst. theol. ex Pre-adamitarum Hypothesi, iv. 1, 2; Spinoza, Tr. Theologico-pol., chap. vii. ; R, Simon, Hist. Crit, du V. T., i. 5-7; Le Clerc, Sentimens de quelques théologiens de Hollunde (Amst., 1685), lett. 6.

be traced 3 (“‘ Fragmentary Hypothesis”). The fragment- Bene.

ary hypothesis was mainly supported by arguments drawn from the middle books of the Pentateuch, and as limited to these it long found wide support.

an inconsistency, for his fundamental idea was to show throughout all parts of the Pentateuch traces of certain common tendencies, and even of one deliberate plan ; nor was he far from recognizing the close relation between the Elohist of Genesis and the legislation of the middle books.

De Wette's chief concern, however, was not with the literary but with the historical criticism of the Pentateuch, and in the latter he made an epoch. In his Diss. Critica of 1805 (Opuse. Theol., pp. 149-168) he placed the composi- tion of Deuteronomy in the time of King Josiah (arguing from a comparison of 2 Kings xxii., xxiii., with Deut. xii), and pronounced it to be the most recent stratum of the Pentateuch, not, as had previously been supposed, the oldest. In his Critical Enquiry into the Credibility of the Books of Chronicles (Halle, 1806) he showed that the laws of Moses are unknown to the post-Mosaic history; this he did by instituting a close comparison of Samuel and Kings with the Chronicles, from which it appeared that the variations of the latter are not to be explained by the use of other sources, but solely by the desire of the Jewish scribes to shape the history in conformity with the law, and to give the law that place in history which, to their surprise, had not been conceded to it by the older historical books. Finally, in his Criticism of the Mosaic History (Halle, 1807) De Wette attacked the method then preva- lent in Germany of eliminating all miracles and prophecies from the Bible by explaining them away, and then ration- alizing what remained into a dry prosaic pragmatism. De Wette refuses to find any history in the Pentateuch; all is legend and poetry. The Pentateuch is not an authority for the history of the time it deals with, but only for the time in which it was written ; it is, he says, the conditions of this much later time which the author idealizes and throws back into the past, whether in the formot narrative or of law.

De Wette's brilliant début, which made his reputation for the rest of his life, exercised a powerful influence on his contemporaries. For several decennia all who were open to critical ideas at all stood under his influence. Gramberg, Leo, and Von Bohlen wrote under this influence ; Gesenius in Halle, the greatest Hebraist then living, taught under it; nay, Vatke and George were guided by De

2 Conjectures sur les mémoires originaux, dont w paroit que Moyse s’est servi pour composer le livre de la Genése (Brussels, 1758). Comp. Journ. des Scavans, October 1767, pp. 291-305.

3 J, §. Vater, Commentar tiber den Pentateuch, Halle, 1802-1805.

Even De Wette De started from it in his investigations; but this was really Wette.

Positive literary criticism.

Hupfeld,

Noldeke.

Wette’s ideas and started from the ground that he had conquered, although they advanced beyond him to a much more definite and better established position, and were also diametrically opposed to him in one most important point, of which we shall have more to say presently.

But meantime a reaction was rising which sought to direct criticism towards positive rather than negative re- sults. The chief representatives of this positive criticism, which now took up a distinct attitude of opposition to the negative criticism of De Wette, were Bleck, Ewald, and Movers. By giving up certain parts of the Pentateuch, especially Deuteronomy, they thought themselves able to vindicate certain other parts as beyond doubt genuinely Mosaic, just in the same way as they threw over the Davidic authorship of certain psalms in order to strengthen the claim of others to bear hisname. The procedure by which particular ancient hymns or laws were sifted out from the Psalter or the Pentateuch had some resemblance to the decretum absolutum of theology ; but up to a certain point the reaction was in the right. The youthful De Wette and his followers had really gone too far in applying the same measure to all parts of the Pentateuch, and had been satisfied with a very inadequate insight into its composi- tion and the

relation of its parts. Historical criticism had hurried on too fast, and literary criticism had now to overtake it. De Wette himself felt the necessity for this, and from the year 1817 onwards—the year of the first edi- tion of his Hinlectung—he took an active and useful part in the solution of the problems of Pentateuchal analysis. The fragmentary hypothesis was now superseded ; the con- nexion of the Elohist of Genesis with the legislation of the middle books was clearly recognized ; and the book of Joshua was included as the conclusion of the Pentateuch. The closely-knit connexion and regular structure of the narrative of the Elohist impressed the critics ; it seemed to supply the skeleton which had been clothed with flesh and blood by the Jehovist, in whose contributions there was no such obvious conformity toa plan. From all this it was naturally concluded that the Elohist had written the Grundschrift or primary narrative, which lay before the Jehovist and was supplemented by him (“Supplementary Hypothesis ”).? ;

This view remained dominant till Hupfeld in 1853 pub- lished his investigations on Zhe Sources of Genesis and the Method of their Composition. WHupfeld denied that the Jehovist followed the context of the Elohistic narrative, merely supplementing it by additions of his own. He pointed out that such Elohistic passages in Genesis as clearly have undergone a Jehovistic redaction (¢.g., chaps. XX., XX1., xxii.) belong to a different Elohist from the author of Gen.i. Thus he distinguished three independent sources in Genesis, and he’ assumed further, somewhat inconse- quently, that no one of them had anything to do with the others till a fourth and later writer wove them all together into a single whole. This assumption was corrected by Néldeke, who showed that the second Elohist is preserved only in extracts embodied in the Jehovistic book, that the Jehovist and second Elohist form one whole and the Grundschrift another, and that thus, in spite of Hupfeld’s discovery, the Pentateuch (Deuteronomy being excluded) was still to be regarded as made up of two great layers. Néldeke had also the honour of having been the first to

- H. Leo, Vorlesungen iiber die Geschichte des jiidischen Staats, Berlin, 1823). GaP Ww Gramherg, MKritische Geschichte der Religions- tdeen des A.T., Berlin, 1829-30; P. v. Bohlen, Die Genesis, Konigs- berg, 1835; W.

Vatke, Biblische Theologie, Berlin, 1885; J. F. L. George, Die dlteren jiidischen Feste, Berlin, 1835.

co Bleek, in Roscnmiiller's Repertorium, 1822, and in Stud. wnd Krit., 1831 ; Ewald, Stud. u. Arit., 1831; Tuch, Kommentar ib. d.

Genesis, Halle, 1838 ; especially De Wette in the various editions of his Hinlcituang.

TEUCG

trace in detail how the Elohistic Grundschrift runs through the whole Hexateuch, and of having described with masterly hand the peculiar and inflexible type of its ideas and language. In this task he was aided by the commentary of Knobel, whose industry furnished very valuable materials for men of judgment to work upon.

Thus the investigation into the composition of the Penta- teuch had reached a point of rest and a provisional con- clusion. The results may be thus summarized. The five books of Moses with Joshua form one whole ; and it is not the death of Moses but the conquest of the promised land which forms the true close of the history of the patriarchal age, the exodus, and the wanderings in the wilderness ; it

is therefore more correct to speak of the Hexateuch than of The the Pentateuch. From this whole it is most easy to detach Hexa- the book of Deuteronomy, and accordingly its independence tuch

was very early recognized. Of the other elements, that which has the most marked individuality is the work of

the Elohist, which we shall in the sequel call the Priestly The This too, like Deuteronomy, is a law-book, but it Priestly % has an historical setting. Its main stock is Leviticus, with ™® 4%

Code.

the cognate parts of the adjacent books, Exod. xxv.-xl. (except chaps. xxxii.-xxxiv.) and Num. i.-x., xv.~~xix., xxv.~~ XXXVI, (with some inconsiderable exceptions). This law- book does not, like Deuteronomy, embrace precepts for civil life, but is confined to affairs of worship, and mainly to the esoteric aspect of public worship, that is, to such points as belonged to the function of the priests as distinguished from the worshipping people. The legal contents of the Code are supported on a scaffolding of history, which, however, belongs to the literary form rather than to the substance of the work. It is only where some point of legal interest is involved that the narrative acquires any fulness, as it does in the book of Genesis in connexion with the three preparatory stages of the Mosaic covenant attached to the names of Adam, Noah, and Abraham. Generally speaking, the historical thread is very thin, and often (Gen. v., xi.) it becomes a mere genealogical line, on which is hung a continuous chronology carried on from the creation to the exodus. The Priestly Code is charac- terized by a marked predilection for numbers and measures, for arrangement (titles to sections) and formality of scheme, by the poverty and inflexibility of its language, by standing repetitions of certain expressions and phrases such as are not elsewhere found in old Hebrew. Thus its distinguish- ing marks are very pronounced, and can always be recog- nized without difficulty. If now Deuteronomy and the Priestly Code are successively subtracted from our present

Pentateuch the Jehovistic history-book remains, distin- Jeho-

guished from both the others by the fact that it is essentially Mf ne

narrative and not law, and by the pleasure it takes in bringing out details of the historical tradition, so that individual points of the story receive full justice and are not sacrificed to the interests of the general plan, The patriarchal history belongs almost entirely to this docu- ment, and forms the most characteristic part of it; here that history forms no mere epitomized introduction to more important matter, as in the Priestly Code, but is treated in all fulness as a subject of first-rate importance. Legis- lative elements are incorporated in the Jehovistic narrative only at one point, where they naturally fall into the his- torical context, viz., in connexion with the law-giving on Sinai (Exod. xx.-xxiii., xxxiv.).

These, then, are the three main component parts of the Hexateuch—Deuteronomy, the Priestly Code, and the Jehovist. But the Jehovist has woven together in his history-book two sources, one of which uses the name

3 Knobel, Die Genesis erkldrt (Leipsic, 1852), Exodus und Leviticus (1857), Nwmeri, Deuteron., und Josua (1861) ; Néldeke, Untersuchungen zur Kritik des A.T. (Kiel, 1869).

ok

ren? Aen € &

Elohim (Hupfeld's younger Elohist), while the other says Tahweé, as does the Jehovist himself. So, too, the Priestly Code is not a perfeetly incomposite strueture ; it has one main stock marked by a very definite historical arrange- ment and preserved with little admixture in the book of Genesis ; but on the one hand some older elements have been ineorporated in this stoek, while on the other hand there have been engrafted on it quite a number of later novell, whieh in point of form are not absolutely homo-geneous with the main body of the Code, but in point of substance are quite similar to it, refleeting the same tendencies and ideas and using the same expressions and mannerisms, so that the whole may be regarded as an historical unity though not strietly as a literary one.

The very namc of Deuteronomy shows that from the earliest times it has been regarded as at least possessing a relative inde- pendence ; the only difficulty is to determine where this section of the Pentateuch begins and ends. In recent times opinion has in- elined more and more to the judgment of Hobbes and Vater, that the original Deuteronomy must be limited to the laws in chaps. xii.-xxvi.

The reasons that compel us to distinguish the Priestly Code from the Jehovist, and the relation that subsists between these two elements, may be exemplified and illustrated by the first nine chapters of Genesis. We begin by eomparing Gen. i. 1 to ii. 4a with Gen. ii. 40 to iii. 24. The history of the first man in paradise . has nothing to do with the preeeding record of the ereation of the world in six days, which is neither referred to nor

presupposed. “Tn the day that Jehovah made thc earth there was as yet no plant of the field upon the carth, and no herb grew in the field ; for Jehovah had not eaused it to rain upon the earth, and there was not a man to till the ground. Buta mist went up from the earth and watered the whole face of the ground. And Jehovah formed man of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life.” It might be supposed that the picture drawn in ehap. i. is here briefly referred to in order to add a particular feature which had not been fully brought out there. But there is no situation in ehap. i. which this scene fits. There man is inade last of all, but here first of all, before vegetation, and according to ii. 19 sq. also before the beasts. There man and woman are created together, here at first the man is alone. There vegetation and wet stand opposed, the plants spring up as soon as there is dry land ; here the condition of vegetation is the moistening of the dry land—it must first rain; the carth, therefore, was originally not water but a parched desert,—the same conception as in the book of Job, where the sea bursts forth from the womb of the hard earth. The conceptions of the two narratives are different all through, as appears equally in what follows. ‘Jehovah planted a garden eastwards in Eden, at the place where the four chief rivers of the world are parted from a common source. Here among other goodly trees grew the tree of life and the tree of knowledge. In this garden Jehovah set the man, to dress it and to keep it, to eat of all the fruits save only that of the tree of knowledge.” In ehap. i. man receives from the first as his portion the whole great earth as he now ocenpies it, and his task is a purely natural one ; “be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth and subdue it.” But in ehap. ii. the first man is placed in a mysterious garden of God, with a very limited sphere, where all is supernatural and marvellous. To speak generally, the ideas of God and man in ehap. i. are rational and enlightened, but bare and prosaic ; in chaps. 1i.~~iiil. they are childlike and primitive, but full of meaning. The point of the contrast is mainly this: in Gen. ii., iti., man is in faet forbidden to lift the veil of things and know the world, represented by the tree of knowledge ; in Gen. i. this is his primary task, to rule over all the earth, for sovereignty and knowledge come to the same thing. There nature is to man altogether a marvel; here it is a mere thing, an object for him. There it is robbery for man to seek to be as God ; here God from the first created man in His own image, after His likeness, and appointed him His vicegerent on earth. With these incongruities in the substance and spirit of the two sections we must take also the differences of~~

~~form and language observable alike in the whole manner of the narrative—which in Gen. i, is con~~ fined by a preeise and formal seleme, while in Gen ii., iii., it has a free poetic movement—and in individual expressions. Thus Gen. i. has Elohim, Gen. ii., iii., Jehovah ;1 Gen. i. has the technical word N13, “create,” while the other narrative uses the ordinary words MWY, “make,” 7¥”, “form;” and so forth.

The contrast between the two records appears in a somewhat different way when we go on to compare Gen. v. with Gen. iv. 17 sq. The elements of the genealogy of ten members in the Priestly Code

and that of seven members in the Jehovist correspond, save that the former adds Noah after Lamceh, and that at the beginning Adam-Cain is doubled and beeomes Adam -Scth – Enosh-Cainan. Adam and Enosh both mean “man,” so that the latter series is equi- valent to Adam-Seth-Adam-Cainan ; in other words Enosh-Cainan is the beginning of a series corresponding to that in chap. iv., and Adam-Seth is a parallel and variation. Linguistically chap. v. is

distinguished from chap. iv. by the use of yn in plaee of abt,

In Gen. i.-v. we find the two narratives lying side by side in eontinuous pieces and without intermixturc; in Gen. vi.-ix., on the other hand, we have a kind of mosaic, in whieh elements taken from each are interwoven to forma single narrative. The narrative of the Priestly Code is preserved entire in vi. 9-22, vii. 11, 13-16 (except the last clause of ver. 16), 19-22, 24, viii. 1-5 (with one sinall exception), 18, 14, ix. 1-17. The Jehovistic narrative, on the other hand, is curtailed to prevent repetition ; it would not have done to relate twice over the building of the ark and the divine command to do so, or to give the ordinance of the rainbow once after viii, 22, and then again in ix. 9 sg. The hand that fused the two sources together into one continuous account is very plainly recognized in vii. 8, 9, as compared on the one side with vi. 19, 20, and on the other with vii. 2.

The justice of Hupfeld’s observation, that besides the first Elohist (our Priestly Code) there is a seeond author who uses thie’ same name of God,

can be best proved from Gen. xx.-xxii., where this second Elohist appears for the first time. According to the Priestly Code Ishmael was fourteen years old at the birth of Isaae, and thus would be seventeen when some three years later isaac was weaned, But how does this aceord with xxi. 9 sgy., where Ishmael appears not as a lad of seventeen but asa child at play (PNY, ver, 9), who is laid on his mother's shoulder (ver. 14), and when thrown down by her in her despair (ver. 15) is quite unable to help himself? Similar inconsistencies appear if we attempt to place chap. xx. in the context of the Priestly Code ; it was already observed by Peyrerius that it is ''non vero simile, regem Gerare voluisse Saram vetulam cui desierant fieri muliebria." We come, then, to ask what is the relation betwcen this second Elohistic writing, from which the greater part of Gen. xx.-xxii. is derived, and the Jehovistic history. In their matter, their points of view, and also in language— apart from the names of God—the two are on the whole similar, as may be seen by comparing ehap. xx. with ehap. xxvi., or chap. xxi. with chap. xvi. Moreover, the Elohistic history is preserved to us in a Jehovistic setting, as ean be plainly diseerned, partly by certain slight changes (xxi. 33, xxii. 11-14), partly by larger additions (xx. 18, xxi. 1, 320, xxii. 15-18). But we cannot suppose that it was the principal narrator of the Jehovistie history—the author of the main mass of ehaps. xii., xiii., xvi., xviii., xix., xxiv., xxvi.—who ineor- porated ehaps. xx.~~xxii.in his own book. For how can we imagine anything so absurd as that, before or after, he should have chosen to tell again in his own words and with full detail and important variations almost all the stories which he borrowed from another work? Rather must we eonelude that the union of the Klohistie work (E) with the main Jehovistic narrative (J) was aeeomplished byathird hand. This third author is most conveniently designated as the Jchovist, and his work is eompendiously eited as JE; the authors of its two component parts are frequently called for dis~~ tinction the Jahvist and the Elohist. The editorial hand of the Jehovist can be traced uot only in E but in his main souree J (the source which uses the name Iahwe) ; eonrpare, for example, Gen. xvi. 8-10 with Gen. xxv. 15, 18. ~ ian

Still more complicated than the work of the Jehovist 1s the Priestly Code, at least in its main section, the ritual legislation of the middle books. It is conceded on all hands that the collection of Jaws in Lev. xvii.-xxvi. was originally a small independent eode, though it has now been worked into

the Priestly Code by the aid of very considerable editorial treatment. It is equally undeniable, though not as universally admitted, that—to take one example— Exod, xxx. and xxxi. cannot be placed in the same line with Exod. XXV.-xxix., but form a supplement to the last-named section. No reason ean be assigned why the author of Exod. xxv.-xxix., if he intended to mention the golden altar of incense at all, should have failed to include it in the passage where he describes all the other furniture within the tabernacle, —the ark, mercy-seat, golden table, and candlestick ; that the altar of incense is first mentioned in Exod. xxx. 1-10 is only to be understood on the assumption that chaps. xxx. and xxxi, were added by a later author.

Such are the main lines of the view now most prevalent as to the composition of the Hexateueh. We eome next to consider the date and mutual relations of the several sourees. As regards Deuteronomy and the Jehovist there

is tolerably complete agreement among eritics. Some, indeed, attempt to date Deuteronomy before the time of Date of Josiah, in the age of Hezekiah (2 Kings xviii. 4, 22), Deutero- or even still earlier; but on the whole the date originally ——

1 The addition of Elohim, which produces the un-Hebrew form Jehovah Elohim, in Gen. ii., iii., is due to an editor who desired to soften the abrupt transition from the Elohim of the one narrator to the Jehovah of the other.

assigned by De Wette has held its ground. That the author of Deuteronomy had the Jehovistic work before him is also admitted ; and it is pretty well agreed that the latter is referred, alike by the character of its language and the circle of its ideas and by express refercnces (Gen. xii. 6, xxxvi. 31, xxxiv. 10; Num. xxii. sg.; Deut. xxxiv. 10), to the golden age of Hebrew literature, the same which has given us the finest parts of the books of Judges, Samuel, and Kings, and the oldest extant prophetical writings,—the age of the kings and prophets, before the dissolution of the sister states of Israel and Judah.

On the other hand, the datc of the Priestly Code is disputed. Till pretty recently it was commonly regarded as the oldest part of the Hexateuch. The fact that it is mainly legal seemed to give it the priority over the history of the Jehovist; for Moses was a lawgiver, not a narrator. Again, the priestly legislation has reference to worship, and regulates all points of ritual with great exactness; and by the rule that the earliest forms of religion lay most weight on ceremonies of worship and all matters of form, this fact seemed to mark the Priestly Code as older than Deuteronomy, where affairs of ritual wor- ship are less prominent than precepts of ethical conduct. Once more, the demands made by Deuteronomy for the maintenance of the priesthood and ritual service are much less heavy than the corresponding demands of the Priestly Code ; and here again it was natural enough to argue that practical difficulties had led to the abolition or modifica- tion of the heavier burdens. And these conclusions were confirmed by the prevalent impression that the final redaction of the Pentateuch, and still more of the book of Joshua, was Deuteronomic, and that the same Deuteronomic redaction could be traced also in the other historical books. But even more weight than was laid on these really plausible arguments was held to attach to another point which seemed not merely to prove the priority of the Priestly Code but to indicate that it was at least partly of Mosaic origin. Alike in the Jehovistic Book of the Covenant and in Deuteronomy the legislation is expressly constructed on the supposition of a nation no longer nomadic but settled in the land of Canaan. The Priestly Code, on the contrary, is throughout directcd to Israel as it lived encamped during the wilderness wanderings, and never makes anticipatory reference to later conditions. So also in Genesis the Priestly Code strictly observes the difference between the patriarchal age and later times, and is careful not ‘to transfer Mosaic institutions to the times of the Hebrew forefathers. This air of antiquity, combined with a corresponding severe simplicity in the style and form, and a cast of language which differs profoundly from classical Hebrew, and was conjectured to be of an older mould, was the principal feature relied on as evidence that the Priestly Code deserved the title of the Grundschrift, the original and fundamental part of the Hexateuch.

But, in point of fact, it was none of these arguments which really gave rise to the doctrine of the priority of the Priestly Code; that doctrine had its veritable source in the supplementary hypothesis described above. After the

supplementary hypothesis was given up, the infer- ences originally drawn from it continued to hold their ground ; though it was made out that the Jehovist did not presuppose the existence of the Priestly Code, critics still assumed without question that the latter was the older work of the two. Critical analysis made steady pro- gress, but the work of synthesis did not hold even pace with it; this part of the problem was treated rather slightly, and merely by the way. Indeed, the true scope of the problem was not realized ; it was not seen that most im- portant historical questions were involved as well as ques- tions merely literary, and that to assign the true order of

the different strata of the Pentateuch was equivalent to a reconstruction of the history of Israel. As regards the narrative matter it was forgotten that, after the Jehovistic, Deuteronomic, and priestly versions of the history had been felicitously disentangled from one another, it was necessary to examine the mutual relations of the three, to consider them as marking so many stages of an historical tradition, which had passed through its successive phases under the action of living causes, and the growth of which could and must be traced and historically explained. Still greater faults of omission characterized the critical treatment of the legal parts of the Pentateuch. Blecek, the oracle in all such matters of the German school of “ Vermittelungstheologen” (the theologians who tried to mediate between orthodoxy and criticism alike in doctrine and in history), never looked beyond the historical frame- work of the priestly laws, altogether shutting his eyes to their substance. He never thought of instituting an exact comparison between them and the Deuteronomic law, still less of examining their relation to the historical and pro- phetical books, with which, in truth, as appears from his Introduction, he had only a superficial acquaintance. Ewald, on the other hand, whose views as to the Priestly Code were cognate to those of Bleek, undoubtedly had an intimate acquaintance with Hebrew antiquity, and under- stood the prophets as no one else did. But he too neglected the task of a careful comparison between the different strata of the Pentateuchal legislation and the equally neces- sary task of determining how the several laws agreed with or differed from such definite data for the history of religion as could be collected from the

historical and prophetical books. He had therefore no fixed measure to apply to the criticism of the laws, though his conception of the history suffered little, and his conception of prophecy still less, from the fact that in shaping them he Icft the law practically out of sight, or only called it in from time to time in an irregular and rather unnatural way. Meanwhile, two Hegelian writers, starting from the original position of De Wette, and moving on lines apart from the beaten track of criticism, had actually effected the solution of the most important problem in the whole sphere of Old Testament study. Vatke and George have the honour of being the first by whom the question of the historical sequence of the several stages of the law was attacked on a sound method, with full mastery over the available evidence, and with a clear insight into the far- reaching scope of the problem. But their works made no permanent impression, and were neglected even by Reuss, although this scholar had fallen at the same time upon quite similar ideas, which he did not venture to publish.!

1 The following propositions were formulated by Reuss in 1833 (or, as he elsewhere gives the date, in 1834), though they were not published till 1879. 1. L'élément historique du Pentateuque peut et doit ctre examiné 4 part et ne pas étre confondu avec I'dlément légal. 2. L'un et lautre ont pu exister sans rédaction écrite. La mention, chez d'anciens écrivains, de certaines traditions patriarcales ou mosaiques, ne prouve pas l'existence du Pentateuque, et une nation peut avoir un droit coutumier sans code écrit. Les traditions nationales des Israélites remontent plus haut que les lois du Pentateuque et la rédac- tion des premiéres est antcrieure A celle des secondes. 4. L'intérét principal de Vhistorien doit porter sur la date des lois, parce que sur ce terrain il a plus de chance d'arriver 4 des résultats certains. Il faut en conséquence proccder 4 l'interrogatoire des témoins. 5. L'his- toire racontée dans les livres des Juges et de Samuel, et méme en partie celle comprise dans les livres des Rois, est en contradiction avec des lois dites mosaiques; done celles-ci étaient inconnues a l'époque de la rédaction de ces livres, 4 plus forte raison elles n'ont pas existe dans les temps qui y sont décrits. 6. Les prophétes du 8° et du 7° siécle ne savent rien du code mosaique. 7. Jérémie est le premier prophcte qui connaisse une loi écrite et ses citations rapportent au Deutéronome. 8. Le Deutéronome (iv. 45-xxviii. 68) est le livre que les prétres prétendaient avoir trouvé dans le temple, du

temps du roi Josias, Ce code est la partie la plus ancienne de la législation (rédigée) comprise dans le Pentateuque. 9. L'histoire des Israélites,

Reuss.

The new ideas lay dormant for thirty years, when they were revived through a pupil of Reuss, K. H. Graf. He too was deemed at first to offer an casy victory to the weapons of "critical analysis," which found many vulner- able points in the original statement of his views. For, while Graf placed the legislation of the middle books very late, holding it to have been framed after the great captivity, heat first still held fast to the doctrine of the great antiquity of the so-called Elohist of Genesis (in the sense which that term bore before Hupfeld's discovery), thus violently rend- ing the Priestly Code in twain, and separating its members by an interval of halfa millennium. This he was compelled to do, because, for Genesis at least, he still adhered to the supplementary hypothesis, according to which the Jehovist worked on the basis laid by the (priestly) Elohist. Here, however, he was tying himself by bonds which had been already loosed by Hupfeld ; and, as literary criticism actu- ally stood, it could show no reason for holding that the Jehovist was necessarily later than the Elohist. In the end, therefore, literary criticism offered itself as Graf's auxiliary. Following a hint of Kuenen's, he embraced the proffered alliance, gave up the violent attempt to divide the Priestly Code, and proceeded without further obstacle to extend to the historical part of that code as found in Genesis those conclusions which he had already established for its main or legislative part. Graf himself did not live to see the victory of his cause. His Goel, to speak with the ancient Hebrews, was Professor A. Kuenen of Leyden, who has had the chief share in the task of developing and enforcing the hypothesis of Graf.

The characteristic feature in the hypothesis of Graf is that the Priestly Code is placed later than Deuteronomy, so that the order is no longer Priestly Code, Jehovist, Deuteronomy, but Jehovist, Deuteronomy, Priestly Code. The method of inquiry has been already indicated ; the three strata of the Pentateuch are compared with one another, and at the same time the investigator seeks to place them in their proper relation to the successive phases of Hebrew history as thése are known to us from other and

undisputed evidence. The process may be shortened if it be taken as agreed that the date of Deuteronomy is known from 2 Kings xxii.; for this gives us at starting a fixed point, to which the less certain points can be referred. The method can be applied alike to the historical and legal parts of the three strata of the Hexateuch. For the Jehovist has legislative matter in Exod. xx.~~xxlil., Xxxiv., and Deuteronomy and the Priestly Code embrace historical matters ; moreover, we always find that the legal stand~~ point of each author influences his presentation of the history, and vice versa. The most important point, how- ever, is the comparison of the laws, especially of the laws about worship, with corresponding statements in the his- torical and prophetical books.

The turning-point in the history of worship in Israel is the centralization of the cultus in Jerusalem by Josiah (2 Kings xxii., xxiii). Till then there were in Judah, as there had been before in Samaria, a multitude of local

en tant qu'il s'agit du développement national déterminé par des lois écrites, se divisera en deux périodes, avant et apres Josias. 10. Ezéchiel est antérieur 4 la rédaetion du eode rituel et des lois qui ont définitivement organisé la hi¢rarehie. 11. Le livre de Josué n'est pas, tant s'en faut, la partie la plus récente de l'ouvrage entier. 12. Le rédaeteur du Pentateuque se distingue clairement de l'ancien prophete Moyse. (L'histoire sainte et la loi, Paris, 1879, pp. 23, 24,)

1K. H. Graf, Die geschichtlichen Bicher des A.T., Leipsic, 1866 ; essays by Graf, in Merx's Archiv, i. 225 sq., 466 sqg.; A. Kuenen, "De priesterlijke Bestanddeelen van Pentateuch en J ozua," in Theol. Tijdschrift, 1870, p. 891 sq., and De Godsdienst van Tsrael, 2 vols., Haarlem, 1869-70. See also J. Wellhausen, Prolegomena zur Geschichte Israels, 2d ed., Berlin, 1883 (Eng. tr., Edinburgh, A. & C. Black, 1885); the first edition appeared in 1878 as Geschichte Israels, vol. i.

ruiiv'ra th U < A

sanctuaries, the legitimacy of which no one dreamt of dis- puting. If Hezekiah made an attempt to abolish these local shrines, as we are told in 2

Kings xviii. 4, 22, it is yet plain that this attempt was not very serious, as it had been quite forgotten less than a hundred yearslater. Josiah's reforms were the first that went deep enough to leave a mark on history. Not, indeed, that the high places fell at one blow; they rose again after the king's death, and the attachment to them finally disappeared only when the Babylonian exile tore the nation from its ancestral soil and forcibly interrupted its traditional customs. The returning exiles were thoroughly imbued with the ideas of Josiah's reform, and had no thought of worshipping except in Jerusalem ; it cost them no sacrifice of their feelings to leave the ruined high places unbuilt. From this date all Jews understood as a matter of course that the one God had only one sanctuary. Thus we have three distinct historical periods,—(1) the period before Josiah, (2) the transition period introduced by Josiah's reforms, and (3) the period after the exile. Can we trace a correspondence between these three historical phases and the laws as to worship ?

1. The principal law-book embodied by the Jehovist, the First so-called Book of the Covenant, takes it for granted in Exod. period.

xx, 24-26 that altars are many, not one. Here there is no idea of attaching value to the retention of a single place for the altar; earth and rough stones are to be found everywhere, and an altar of these materials falls into ruins as easily as it is built. Again, a choice of materials is given, presumably for the construction of different altars, and Jehovah proposes to come to His worshippers and bless them, not in the place where he causes His name to be cele- brated, but at every such place. The Jehovistic law there- fore agrees with the customary usage of the earlier period of Hebrew history ; and so too does the Jehovistic story, according to which the patriarchs wherever they reside erect altars, set up cippi (magceboth), plant trees, and dig wells. The places of which these acts of the patriarchs are related are not fortuitous, they are the same places as were afterwards famous shrines. This is why the narrator speaks of them ; his interest in the sites is not antiquarian, but corresponds to the practical importance they held in the worship of his own day. The altar which Abraham built at Shechem is the same on which sacrifices still con- tinued to be offered ; Jacob's anointed stone at Bethel was still anointed, and tithes were still offered at it in fulfil- ment of vows, in the writer's own generation. The things which a later

generation deemed offensive and heathenish —high places, mageeboth, sacred trees, and wells—all appear here as consecrated by patriarchal precedent, and the narra- tive can only be understood as a picture of what daily took place in the first century or thereabout after the division of the kingdoms, thrown back into the past and clothed with ancient authority.

2. The Deuteronomic legislation begins (Deut. xii.), Second just like the Book of the Covenant, with a law for the period.

place of worship. But now there is a complete change ; Jehovah is to be worshipped only in Jerusalem and no- where else. The new law-book is never weary of repeating this command and developing its consequences in every direction. All this is directed against current usage, against “what we are accustomed to do at this day”; the law is polemical and aims at reformation. This law therefore belongs to the second period of the history, the time when the party of reform in Jerusalem was attack- ing the high places. When we read, then, that King Josiah was moved to destroy the local sanctuaries by the discovery of a law-book, this book, assuming it to be preserved in the Pentateuch, can be none other than the legislative part of Deuteronomy, which must once have had a separate exist-

ence in a shorter form than the present book of Deutero- nomy ; this, too, is the inference to which we are led by the citations and references in Kings and Jeremiah.

his sons as the sons of Aaron stand above the Levites, He has not only the highest place, but a place quite unique, Position like that of the Roman pontiff; his sons minister under of high

Third 3. In the Priestly Code all worship depends on the | his superintendence (Num. iii. 4); he himself is the only Priest period. tabernacle, and would fall to nothing apart from it. The | priest with full rights; as such he wears the Urim and tabernacle is simply a means of putting the law of unity | Thummim, and the golden ephod; and none but he

can of worship in an historical form; it is the only legitimate | enter the holy of holies and offer incense there. Before sanctuary ; there is no other spot where God dwells and | the exile there were, of course, differences of rank among shows Himself, no other where man can approach God and | the priests, but the chief priest was only primus inter seek His face with sacrifice and gifts. But, while Deutero- | pares; even Ezekiel knows no high priest in the sense of nomy demands, the Priestly Code presupposes, the limitation | the Priestly Code. The Urim and Thummim were the of worship to one sanctuary. This principle is tacitly | insignia of the Levites in general (Deut. xxxiii. 8), and assumed as the basis of everything else, but is never | the linen ephod was worn by them all, while the golden asserted in so many words; the principle, it appears, is | ephod was not a garment but a gold-plated image such as now no novelty, but can be taken for granted. Hence we | the greater sanctuaries used to possess (Judges viii. 27 ; conclude that the Priestly Code builds on the realization of | Isa. xxx. 22). Moreover, up to the exile the temple at the object aimed at in Deuteronomy, and therefore belongs | Jerusalem was the king’s chapel, and the priests were his to the time after the exile, when this object had been fully | servants ; even Ezekiel, who in most points aims at secur- secured, An institution which in its origin must necessarily | ing the independence of the priests, gives the prince a ~ have had a negative significance as an instrument in the | weighty part in matters of worship, for it is he who hands of polemical reformers is here taken to have been | receives the dues of the people, and in return defrays the from the first the only intelligible and legitimate form | sacrificial service. In the Priestly Code, on the other hand, of worship. It is so taken because established customs | the dues are paid direct to the sanctuary, the ritual service always appear to be natural and to need no reason for their | has full autonomy, and it has its own head, who holds his existence. place by divine right. Nay, the high priest represents Priest- The abolition of the local shrines in favour of Jerusalem | more than the church’s independence of the state; he hood.

necessarily involved the deposition of the provincial priest- hood in favour of the sons of Zadok in the temple of Solomon. The law of Deuteronomy tries to avoid this consequence by conceding the privilege of offering sacrifices at Jerusalem to the Levites from other places; Levites in Deuteronomy is the general name for priests whose right to officiate is

hereditary. But this privilege was never realized, no doubt because the sons of Zadok opposed it. The latter, therefore, were now the only real priests, and the priests of the high places lost their office with the destruc- tion of their altars ; for the loss of their sacrificial dues they received a sort of eleemosynary compensation from their aristocratic brethren (2 Kings xxiii. 9). The displacing of the provincial priests, though practically almost inevitable, went against the law of Deuteronomy ; but an argument to justify it was supplied by Ezekiel (Ezek. xliv.). The other Levites, he says, forfeited their priesthood by abusing it in the service of the high places ; and for this they shall be degraded to be mere servants of the Levites of Jerusalem, who have not been guilty of the offence of doing sacrifice in provincial shrines, and thus alone deserve to remain priests. If we start from Deuteronomy, where all Levites have equal priestly rights, this argument and ordinance are plain enough, but it is utterly impossible to understand them if the Priestly Code is taken as already existing. Ezekiel views the priesthood as originally the right of all Levites, while by the Priestly Code a Levite who claims this right is guilty of baseless and wicked presumption, such as once cost the lives of all the company of Korah. And the position of the Levites which Ezekiel qualifies as a punishment and a degradation appears to the Code as the natural position, which their ancestors from father to son had held from the first. The distinction between priest and Levite, which Ezekiel introduces expressly as an innovation, and which elsewhere in the Old Testament is known only to the author of Chronicles, is, according to the Code, a Mosaic institution fixed and settled from the beginning. Ezekiel’s ideas and aims are entirely in the same direction as the Priestly Code, and yet he plainly does not know the Code itself. This can only mean that in his day it did not exist, and that his ordinances formed one of the steps that prepared the way for it.

The Priestly Code gives us an hierocracy fully developed,

exercises sovereignty over Israel. Though sceptre and sword are lacking to him, his spiritual dignity as high priest makes him the head of the theocracy. He alone is the responsible representative of the commonwealth ; the names of the twelve tribes are written on his shoulders and his breast. Offence of his inculpates the whole people and demands the same expiation as a national sin, while the sin-offerings prescribed for the princes mark them

out as mere private persons compared with him. His death makes an epoch ; the fugitive manslayer is amnestied, not on the death of the king, but on the death of the high priest. On his investiture he receives a kingly unction (whence his name, “the anointed priest”); he wears the diadem and tiara of a monarch, and is clad in royal purple, the most unpriestly dress possible. When now we find that the head of the national worship is as such, and merely as such—for no political powers accompany the high priesthood—also the head of the nation, this can only mean that the nation is one which has been deprived of its civil autonomy, that it no longer enjoys political existence, but survives merely as a church. In truth the Priestly Code never contemplates Israel as a nation, but only as a religious community, the whole life of which is summed up in the service of the sanctuary. The community is that of the second temple, the Jewish hierocracy under that foreign dominion which alone made such an hierocracy possible. The pattern of the so-called Mosaic theocracy, which does not suit the conditions of any earlier age, and of which Hebrew prophecy knows nothing, even in its ideal descriptions of the commonwealth of Israel as it ought to be, fits post-exilic Judaism to a nicety, and was never an actual thing till then. After the exile the Jews were deprived by their foreign rulers of all the functions of public political life; they were thus able, and thus indeed compelled, to devote their whole energies to sacred things, in which full freedom was left them. So the temple became the one centre of national life, and the prince of the temple head of the spiritual common- wealth, while, at the same time, the administration of the few political affairs which were still left to the Jews them- selves fell into his hands as a matter of course, because

| the nation had no other chief.

The material basis of the hierarchy was supplied by the Sacred

such as existed after the exile. Aaron stands above | sacred dues. In the Priestly Code the priests receive all @u®

iy kt arev €

sin-offerings and guilt-offerings, the greater part of the cereal accompaniments of sacrifices, the skin of the burnt-offering, the breast and

shoulder of thank-offerings. Further, they receive the male firstlings and the tithe of cattle, as also the firstfruits and tithes of the fruits of the land. Yet with all this they are not even obliged to support at their own cost the stated services and offerings of the temple, which are provided for by a poll-tax. The poll-tax is not ordained in the main body of the Code, but such a tax, of the amount of one-third of a shekel, began to be paid in the time of Nehemiah (Neli. x. 32), and in a novel of the law (Exod. xxx. 15) it is demanded at the higher rate of half a shekel per head. That these exorbitant taxes were paid to or claimed by the priests in the wilderness, or during the anarchy of the period of the judges, is inconceivable. Nor in the period of the kingship is it conceivable that the priests laid claim to contributions much in excess of what the king himself received from his subjects ; certainly no such claim would have been supported by the royal author- ity. In 1 Sam. viii. 15 the tithes appear as paid to the king, and are viewed as an oppressive exaction, yet they form but a single element in the multiplicity of dues which the priests claim under the Priestly Code. But, above all, the fundamental principles of the system of priestly dues in the Code are absolutely irreconcilable with the fact that as long as Solomon's temple stood the king had the power to dispose of its revenues as he pleased. The sacred taxes are the financial expression of the hierocratic system ; they accord with the condition of the Jews after the exile, and under the second temple they were actually paid accord- ing to the Code, or with only minor departures from its provisions.

Before the exile the sacred gifts were not paid to the priests at all but to Jehovah ; they had no resemblance to taxes, and their religious meaning, which in the later system is hardly recognizable, was quite plainly marked. They were in fact identical with the great public festal offerings which the offerers consumed in solemn sacrificial meals before Jehovah, that is, at the sanctuary. The change of these offerings into a kind of tax was connected with an entire transformation of the old character of Israel's worship, which resulted from its centralization at Jerusalem. In the old days the public worship of the nation consisted essentially in the celebration of the yearly

tcrious feasts ; that this was so can be plainly seen from the pro-

phets,—from Amos, but especially from Hosea. And accord- ingly the laws of worship are confined to this one point in the Jehovist, and even in Deuteronomy. After the exile the festal observances became much less important than the taémid, the regular daily and weekly offerings and services ; and so we find it in the Priestly Code. But, apart from this, the feasts underwent a qualitative change, a sort of de- generation, which claims our special attention. Originally they were thanksgiving feasts in acknowledgment of Jehovah's goodness in the seasons of the year. The ex- pression of thanks lay in the presentation of the firstlings and firstfruits, and these constituted the festal offerings. The chief feast, at the close of the old Hebrew year, was the autumn feast of ingathering (Feast of Tabernacles),— a thanksgiving for the whole produce of the winepress and the corn-flour, but especially for the vintage and the olive harvest. Then, at the beginning of the summer half-year, came the feast of unleavened bread (Maccdth, Easter), which in turn was followed by the harvest feast (Pente- cost). Between the two last there was a definite interval of seven weeks ; hence the name " Feast of Weeks" (Exod. xxxiv.). In Deut. xvi. 9 the seven weeks are explained as "seven weeks from such time as thou beginnest to put the sickle to the corn." The Easter feast, therefore, is the commencement of the corn harvest, and this throws light

oll

on its fixed relation to Pentecost. The one is the end of the harvest, the other its commencement in Abib (the month of '"corn-ears") ; between them lie the " determined weeks of harvest" (Jer. v. 24). The whole of this tempus clausum is one great time of gladness (Isa. ix. 3), bounded by the two feasts. According to Lev. xxiii. 9-22 the dis- tinguishing ceremony at Easter is the presentation of a sheaf of barley, before which no one is allowed to taste the new corn ; the corresponding rule at Pentecost is the pre- sentation of leavened wheaten bread. The barley of course is the first and the wheat the last grain ripe; at the be- ginning of harvest the firstfruits are presented in the sheaf, and men also partake of the new growth in the shape of parched ears of corn (Lev. xxiii. 14; Josh. v. 11); at the end of harvest the firstfruits take the form of ordinary bread. We now see the meaning of the "unleavened bread." Unleavened cakes are quickly prepared, and were used when bread had to be furnished suddenly (1 Sam. xxvili. 24); here it is the

new meal of the year which is hastily baked into a sort of bannock without waiting for the tedious process of leavening. The unleavened bread contrasts with the Pentecostal cake in the same way as the barley sheaf and the parched ears do, and so, as we see from Josh. v. 11, parched corn may be eaten instead of unleavened bread,—a point worthy of notice.

Thus the three feasts are all originally thanksgivings The for the fruits of the ground, and in all of them the offering Passover.

of firstfruits is the characteristic feature. Quite similarly the Passover, which was celebrated at the same season as the Easter feast of unleavened bread, is also a thanks- giving feast; but here the offerings are not taken from the fruits of the ground but from the male firstlings of the cattle (sheep and oxen). The Jehovistic tradition in Exodus still exhibits this original character of the Pass- over with perfect clearness. Jehovah demands that His people shall go forth and celebrate His feast in the wilder- ness with sacrifices of sheep and oxen ; and, because Pharaoh refuses to allow the Hebrews to serve their God by offer- ing the firstlings of cattle that are His due, He takes from the king the firstborn of his subjects. The feast, therefore, is older than the exodus, and the former is the occasion of the latter, not vice versa. In the Priestly Code the true significance of the feasts appears only dimly in particular details of ritual; their general character is entirely changed. They no longer rest on the seasons and the fruits of the season, and indeed have no basis in the nature of things. They are simply statutory ordinances resting on a positive divine command, which at most was issued in commemoration of some historical event. Their relation to the firstfruits and firstlings is quite gone; indeed these offerings have no longer any place in acts of worship, being transformed into a mere tax, which is holy only in name. This degeneration of the old feasts is carried furthest in the case of the Passover. An historical reason is assigned to the Passover as early as Deuteronomy and the Deuteronomic redaction of the Jehovist, but in these writings the real character of the feast remains so far unchanged that it is still celebrated by the sacrifice of the firstlings of oxen and of sheep. But in the Priestly Code the paschal sacrifice has quite lost its old character, and consists of a yearling sheep or goat, while the firstlings have no more connexion with the Passover, but are a mere due to the priests without any properly religious character. The other feasts have also lost

their individuality by being divorced from the firstfruits and celebrated instead by stated sacrifices, which are merely the témid on a larger scale, and have uo individuality of meaning. All this is a consequence of the centralizing process which took the observances of worship away from their natural soil, spiritualized them, and gave them a stereotyped reference to

Jehovah's relation with Israel as a whole, and to the sacred history. This centralization, indeed, was not the work of the Priestly Code but of the prophets; but in the Code we find all its consequences fully developed, while even in Deuteronomy the process is still quite in an early stage. Jewish practice after the exile is guided by the Priestly Code, not in every detail, but quite unquestionably in its main features. In the time of Christ no one thought of any other kind of Passover than that prescribed in the Code; the paschal lamb had obliterated all recollection of the sacrifice of the firstlings.

The conclusions which we have reached by comparing the successive strata of the laws are confirmed by a com- parison of the several stages of the historical tradition embodied inthe Pentateuch. The several threads of nar- rative which run side by side in the Pentateuch are so distinct in point of form that critics were long disposed to assume that in point of substance also they are independ- ent narratives, without mutual relation. This, however, is highly improbable on general considerations, and is seen to be quite impossible when regard is paid to the close correspondence of the several sources in regard to the arrangement of the historical matter they contain. It is because the arrangement is so similar in all the narratives that it was possible to weave them together into one book; and besides this we find a close agreement in many notable points of detail. Here too analysis does not exhaust the task of the critic; a subsequent synthesis is required. When he has separated out the individual documents the critic has still to examine their mutual relations, to com- prehend them as phases in a living process, and in this way to trace the gradual development of the Hebrew historical tradition. In the present article, however, we cannot say anything of the way in which the Deuteronomist views the Hebrew history, nor shall

we attempt to char- acterize the differences between the two sources of the Jehovist, but limit ourselves to a general comparison be- tween the Jehovistic narrative and that of the Priestly Code. :

Bleek and his school viewed it as a great merit of the latter narrative that it strictly observes the difference between various ages, mixes nothing Mosaic with the patriarchal period, and in the Mosaic history never forgets

Codecon- that the scene lies in the wilderness of wandering. They

trasted.

also took it as a mark of fidelity to authentic sources that the Code contains so many dry lists, such a mass of un- important numbers and names, such exact technical descriptions of details which could have no interest for posterity. Against this view Colenso, in the first part of his Pentateuch and Book of Joshua critically examined (Lond., 1862), proved that just those parts of the Hexa- teuch which contain the most precise details, and so have the air of authentic documents, are least consistent with the laws of possibility. Colenso, when he wrote, had no thought of the several sources of the Hexateuch, but this only makes it the more remarkable that his criticisms mainly affect the Priestly Code. Néldeke followed Colenso with clearer insight, and determined the character and value of the priestly narrative by tracing all through it an artificial construction and a fictitious character. In fact the supposed marks of historical accuracy and depend- ence on authentic records are quite out of place in such a narrative as that of the Pentateuch, the substance of which is not historical but legendary. This legendary character is always manifest both in the form and in the substance of the narrative of the Jehovist ; his stories of the patriarchs and of Moses are just such as might have been gathered from popular tradition. With him the general plan of the history is still quite loose; the individual stories are the important thing, and they have a truly living

PHENTAYTYTEUCHEH

individuality. They have always a local connexion, and we can still often see what motives lie at the root of them ; but even when we do not understand these legends they lose none of their charm; for they breathe a

sweet poetic fragrance, and in them heaven and earth are magically blended into one. The Priestly Code, on the other hand, dwells as little as possible on the details of the several stories ; the pearls are stripped off in order that the thread on which they were strung may be properly seen. Love and hate and all the passions, angels, miracles, and theo- phanies, local and historical allusions, disappear ; the old narrative shrivels into a sort of genealogical scheme,—a bare scaffolding to support a pragmatic construction of the connexion and progress of the sacred history. But in legendary narrative connexion is a very secondary matter ; indeed it is only brought in when the several legends are collected and written down. When, therefore, the Priestly Code makes the connexion the chief thing, it is clear that it has lost all touch of the original sources and starting- points of the legends. It does not, therefore, draw from oral tradition but from books; its dry excerpts can have no other source than a tradition already fixed in writing. In point of fact it simply draws on the Jehovistic narrative. The order in which that narrative disposed the popular legends is here made the essential thing; the arrange- ment, which in the Jehovist was still quite subordinate to the details, is here brought into the foreground ; the old order of events is strictly adhered to, but is so em- phasized as to become the one important thing in the history. It obviously was the intention of the priestly narrator to give by this treatment the historical quint- essence of his materials, freed of all superfluous additions. At the same time, he has used all means to dress up the old naive traditions into a learned history. Sorely against its real character, he forces it into a chronological system, which he carries through without a break from Adam to Joshua. Whenever he can he patches the story with things that have the air of authoritative documents, great lists of subjects without predicates, of numbers and names which could never have been handed down orally without being put in writing, and introduces a spurious air of learned research in the most unsuitable places. Finally, he rationalizes the history after the standard of his own religious ideas and general culture ; above all, he shapes it so that it forms a framework, and at the same time a gradual preparation for the Mosaic law. With the spirit of the legend, in which the Jehovist still lives, he has nothing in common, and so he forces it into conformity with a point of view cntirely different from its own.

The greater part of the narratives of the Pentateuch cannot be measured by gn historical standard ; but within certain limits that standard can be applied to the epical age of Moses and Joshua. Thus we can apply historical criticism to the several versions of the way in which the tribes of Israel got possession of the land of Canaan. The priestly narrator represents all Canaan as redueed to a tabula rasa, and then makes the masterless and unpeopled land be divided by lot. The first lot falls to Judah, then come Manasseh and Ephraim, then Benjamin and Simeon, and lastly the five northerly tribes, Zebulon, Issachar, Asher, Naphtali, Dan. ‘«These are the inheritances which Eleazar the priest and Joshua the son of Nun and the heads of the tribes of Israel apportioned by lot at Shiloh before Jehovah at the door of the tabernacle.” According to the Jehovist (Josh. xiv. 6) Judah and Joseph seem to have had their portions assigned to them while the Israelite headquarters were still at Gilgal—but not by lot—and to have gone forth from Gilgal to take possession of them.

tives, in common with which it speaks of the Angel of Jehovah. It isin truth not a continuation of but a parallel to the book of Joshua, presupposing the conquest of the lands east of the Jordan, but not of western Canaan. ‘The latter conquest is what it relates, and in a way quite different from the book of Joshua. From Gilgal, where the Angel of Jehovah first set up his camp, the tribes go forth singly each to conquer a land for itself, Judah going first and Joseph following. It is only of the movements of these two tribes that we have a regular narrative, and for Joseph this is limited to the first beginnings of his conquests. There is no men- tion of Joshua; a commander-in-chief of all Israel would indeed be out of place in this record of the conquest, but Joshua might have appeared in it as commander of his own tribe. The incom- pleteness of the conquest is frankly admitted ; the Canaanites con- tinued to hold undisturbed the cities of the plain, and it was only in the time of the kingship, when Israel was waxen strong, that they became subject and tributary. From all that we know of the subsequent history there can be no doubt that this account of the conqnest is vastly nearer to the facts than that which prevails in

the advocates of that hypothesis is that in earlier times the ritual was not the substructure of an hierocracy, that there was in fact no hierocracy before the exile, but that Jehovah's sovereignty was an ideal thing and not visibly embodied in an organization of the commonwealth under the forms of a specifically spiritual power. The theocracy was the state; the old Israelites regarded their civil con- stitution as a divine miracle. The later Jews assumed the existence of the state as a natural thing that required no explanation, and built the theocracy over it as a special divine institution.

There are, however, some more serious objections taken to the Grafian hypothesis. It is, indeed, simply a mis- statement of facts to say that the language of the Priestly Code forbids us to date it so late as post-exilic times.

On the other hand, a real difficulty lies in the fact that, Difi- while the priestly redaction extends to Deuteronomy (Deut, culties of i. 3), it is also true that the Deuteronomic redaction CT"

extends to the Priestly Code (Josh. xx.). The way out of ee

the book of Joshua, where everything is done with systematic completeness, and the whole land dispeopled and then divided by lot. This latter and less historical view is most consistently carried through in the priestly narrative, which accordingly must be the narrative most remote from the origin of the Hebrew tradition.

The same conclusion may be drawn from the fact that the priestly writer never names the tribe of Joseph, but always the two tribes of Ephraim and Manasseh, which, moreover, do not reccive nearly so much notice as Judah, although Joshua, the leader of Ephraim, is retained in the character of leader of all Israel from an old and originally Ephraitic tradition.

The middle position which the legal part of Deuteronomy holds between the Jehovist and the Priestly Code is also characteristic of the Deuteronomic narrative, which is founded throughout on the narrative of the Jehovist, but from time to time shows a certain leaning to the points of view characteristic of the priestly narrator. The order of the several parts of the Hexateuch to which we have been led by all these arguments is confirmed

by an examination of the other historical books and the books of Chronicles. The original sources of the books of Judges, Samuel, and Kings stand on the same platform with the Jehovist ; the editing they received in the exile presupposes Deuteronomy; and the latest construction of the history as contained in Chronicles rests on the Priestly Code. This is admitted and need not be proved in detail; the conclusion to be drawn is obvious.

We have now indicated the chief lines on which criticism must proceed in determining the order of the sources of the Hexateuch, and the age of the Priestly Code in parti- cular,—though, of course, it has not been possible at all to exhaust the argument. The objections that have been taken to Graf's hypothesis partly rest on misunder- standing. It is asked, for example, what is left for Moses if he was not the author of the Torah. But Moses may – have been the founder of the Torah though the Penta- teuchal legislation was codified almost a thousand years later ; for the Torah was originally not a written law but the oral decisions of the priests at the sanctuary—case-law, in short, by which they decided all manner of questions and controversies that were brought before their tribunal ; their Torah was the instruction to others that came from their lips, not at all a written document in their hands guaranteeing their own status, and instructing themselves how to proceed in the sacrificial ritual. Questions of clean and unclean belonged to the Torah, because these were matters on which the laity required to be directed ; but, speaking generally, the ritual, so far as it consisted in ceremonies performed by the priests themselves, was no part of the Torah. But, while it was only ata late date that the ritual appeared as Torah as it does in the Priestly Code, its usages and traditions are exceedingly ancient, going back, in fact, to pre-Mosaic and heathenish times. It is absurd to speak as if Graf's hypothesis meant that the whole ritual is the invention of the Priestly Code, first put into practice after the exile ; all that is affirmed by

this dilemma is to be found by recognizing that the so- called Deuteronomic redaction was not a single and final act, that the characteristic phrases of Deuteronomy became household words to subsequent generations, and were still current and found application centuries after the time of Josiah, Thus, for example, the traces of Deuteronomic redaction in Josh. xx. are

still lacking in the Septuagint ; the canonical text, we see, was retouched at a very late date indeed. Of the other objections taken to the Grafian hypothesis only one need be mentioned here, viz., that the Persians are not named in the list of nations in Gen. x. This is certainly hard to understand if the passage was written in the Persian period. But the difficulty is not insuperable; the Persians, for example, may have been held to be included in the mention of the Medians, and this also would give the list the archaic air which the priestly writer affects. At any rate, a residue of minute difficulties not yet thoroughly explained cannot outweigh the decisive arguments that support the view that the Priestly Code originated in and after the exile. Kuenen observes with justice that "'it is absolutely necessary to start with the plain and unambiguous facts, and to allow them to guide our judgment on questionable points. The study of details is not superfluous in laying down the main lines of the critical construction, but, as soon as our studies have supplied us with some really fixed points, further pro- gress must proceed from them, and we must first gain a general view of the whole field instead of always working away at details, and then coming out with a rounded theory which lacks nothing but a foundation."

Finally; it is a pure petitio principi, and nothing more, to say that the post-exilic age was not equal to the task of producing a work like the Priestly Code. The posi- tion of the Jews after the exile made it imperative on them to reorganize themselves in conformity with the entire change in their situation, and the Priestly Code corresponds to all that we should expect to find in a consti- tution for the Jews after the exile as completely as it fails to correspond with the conditions which a law-book older than the exile would have had to satisfy. After the final destruction of the kingdom by Nebuchadnezzar, they found in the ritual and personnel of the temple at Jerusalem the elements out of which a new commonwealth could be built, in conformity with the circumstances and needs of the time. The community of Judea raised itself from the dust by holding on to its ruined sanctuary. The old usages and ordinances were reshaped in detail, but as a whole they were not replaced by new creations ; the novelty lay in their being worked into a system and applied as a means to organize the "remnant" of Israel. This was the origin of the sacred constitution of Judaism. Religion

in old Israel had been a faith which gave its support to the natural ordinances of human society; it was now set forth in external and visible form as a special institution, within an artificial sphere peculiar to itself, which rose far above the level of common life. The necessary presup-
position of this kind of theocracy is service to a foreign empire, and so the theocracy is essentially the same thing as hierocracy. Its finished picture is drawn in the Priestly

Composi- Code, the product of the labours of learned priests during

tion and the exile.

When the temple was destroyed and the ritual

iperes interrupted, the old practices were written down that they

tion of

Priestly might not be lost.

Code.

Thus in the exile the ritual became matter of teaching, of Torah ; the first who took this step, a step prescribed by the circumstances of the time, was the priest and prophet Ezekiel. In the last part of his book Ezekiel began the literary record of the customary ritual of the temple; other priests followed in his footsteps (Lev. xvii.~~xxvi.) ; and so there arose during the captivity a school of men who wrote down and systematized what they had formerly practised. When the temple was restored this theocratic zeal still went on and produced further ritual developments, in action and reaction with the actual practice of the new temple; the final result of the long~~ continued process was the Priestly Code.

This Code, incorporated in the Pentateuch and forming

the normative part of its legislation, became the definitive Mosaic law. As such it was published and put in action in 444 B.c. by the Babylonian priest and scribe Ezra. Ezra had come to Jerusalem as early as 458, at the head of a considerable body of zealous Jews, with full authority from Artaxerxes Longimanus to reform the community of the second temple in accordance with the law of God in his hand. But Ezra did not introduce this law immediately on his arrival ; it took him fourteen years to effect his purpose. The external circumstances of the young community, which were exceedingly unfavourable, made it at first undesirable to introduce legislative innovations ; perhaps, also, Ezra needed time to correct the product of Babylonian learning by the light of Judean practice, and wished, moreover, to train assistants for his task. The chief reason of the delay seems, however, to have been that, in spite of the royal favour, he could not get any energetic support from the local representatives of the Persian Government, and without this he could not have given authority to his new law. But in 445 a kindred spirit, Nehemiah b. Hakkeleiah, came to Jerusalem as Persian governor of Judea. LEzra's opportunity had now arrived, and he was able to introduce the Pentateuch in agreement with the governor. The record of this step is contained in Neh, viii-x.; it is closely analogous to the narrative of the introduction of the Deuteronomic law under Josiah in 2 Kings xxii. Just as we are told there that Deuteronomy became known in 621 B.c., having been unknown previously, so we are told here that the Torah in the rest of the Pentateuch became known in 444, and was unknown till that date. This shows us, in the first place, that Deuteronomy contains an earlier stage of the law than the priestly Torah. And further, as the date of Deuteronomy can be inferred from the date of its publi- cation and introduction under Josiah, so in like manner the date of the composition of the Priestly Code can be inferred from its publication and enforcement by Ezra and Nehemiah. _ The establishment of the right date for the written law is of the highest importance for our understanding of the prophets, and for our whole conception of the history of Israel, See the articles Israzt and PRopHEr. (3. WE.)

PENTECOST, a feast of the J ews, Was in its original meaning, as has been explained in PENTATEUCH (supra, p. 511), the closing feast of the harvest gladness, at which,

according to Lev. xxiii. 17, leavened bread was presented at the sanctuary as the firstfruits of the new cereal store, Hence the names “Feast of Harvest” (Exod. xxiii. 16), “Day of Firstfruits” (Num. xxviii. 26); but the com- moner Old Testament name (Exod. xxxiv. 22; Deut. xvi, 10, 16; 2 Chron. viii. 13) is “ Feast of Weeks,” because it fell exactly seven weeks (Deut. xvi. 9), or, on the Jewish way of reckoning an interval by counting in both termini, just fifty days (Lev. xxiii. 16) after the offering of the first sheaf of the harvest at the Feast of Unleavened Bread, Pentecost or “ Fiftieth ” day is only a Greek equivalent of the last name (wevrnxoo7} in the Apocrypha and New Testament). The orthodox later Jews reckoned the fifty days from the sixteenth of Nisan, cutting the ritual sheaf on the night of (that is, on our division of days, the night preceding) that day (see Passover). In Deuteronomy Pentecost, like the other two great annual feasts, is a pil- grimage feast (Deut. xvi. 16), and so it was observed in later times; but, unlike the others, it lasts but one day, agreeably to its character (expressed in the name Mnr¥y,

‘Acap@é, given to it by Josephus and the later Jews) as merely the solemn closing day of harvest-time. Like the other great feasts, it came to be celebrated by fixed special sacrifices. The amount of these is differently expressed in the earlier and later priestly law (Lev. xxiii. 18 sq. ; Num. xxviii. 26 sq.) ; the discrepancy was met by adding the two lists. The later Jews also extended the one day of the feast to two. Further, in accordance with the tend- ency to substitute historical for economic explanations of the great feasts, Pentecost came to be regarded as the feast commemorative of the Sinaitic legislation.

To the Christian church Pentecost acquired a new sig- nificance through the outpouring of the Spirit (Acts ii.). See WHITSUNDAY.

PENZA, a government of eastern Russia, bounded on the N. by Nijni Novgorod, on the E. by Simbirsk, and on the S. and W. by Saratoff and Tamboff, and having an area of 15,000 square miles. The surface is undulating, with deep valleys and ravines, but even in its highest parts it does not reach more than 600 to 900 feet above sea- level. It is chiefly made up of Cretaceous sandstones, sands, marls, and chalk, covered in the east by

Eocene deposits. Chalk, potter's clay, peat, and iron are the chief mineral products, in the north. The soil is a black earth, more or less mixed with clay and sand; the only marshes of any extent occur in the Krasnoslobodsk district ; and considerable sand-areas appear in the broad valleys of the larger rivers. There are extensive forests in the north, but the south shows the characteristic features of a steppe- land. The government is watered by the Moksha, the Sura (both navigable), and the Khoper, belonging respectively to the Oka, Volga, and Don systems. Timber is floated down several smaller streams, while the Moksha and Sura are important means of conveyance for grain, spirits, timber, metals, and oils. The climate is harsh and continental, the average temperature at Penza being only 39°-8 (12°°2 in January and 68°°5 in July).

The population—1,356,600 in 1881, and in 1884 estimatea at about 1,465,000—consists principally of Russians, mixed to some extent with Mordvinians; there are also about 150,000 Mordvinians who are toa large extent Russified ; some 40,000 Mescheryaks, who have undergone the same process still more fully; and 60,000 Tatars, who still keep their own religion, language, and customs. The Russians profess the Greek faith, and very many, especially in the north, are Raskolniks. Somewhat less than 10 per cent. of the population (133,250 in 1881) live in towns ; the chief occupation of the inhabitants is agriculture, 61 per cent. of the soil being arable. Wheat and millet are raised only to a limited extent, the chief crops being rye, oats, buckwheat, hemp, potatoes, and beetroot. The averages for 1870-77 were 3,900,000 quarters of corn and 1,779,200 bushels of potatoes. The chief centres of corn export are Penza, Narovtchat, and Golovinshtchina. Market-gardening is successfully

carried on in several districts, and improved varieties of fruit-trees are being introduced through the imperial botanical garden at Penza and a private school of gardening in the Gorodishtche district. Fourteen per cent. of the area is under meadows or grazing land; and in 1881 there were within the government 244,000 head of cattle, 383,000 horses, and 235,000 pigs. Sheep-breeding is especially developed in Tchembar and Insar (670,000 sheep, including 72,000 of finer breeds, in 1881). The Mordvinians are very

partial to bee- keeping. The forests (620,000 acres) are a considerable source of wealth, especially in Krasnoslobodsk and Gorodishtche, whence timber, a variety of wooden wares, and also pitch and tar are ex- ported to the south. As many as 30 per cent. of the adult male population leave the government in search of employment, either on the Volga or in southern Russia.

The manufactures are few, employing only 18,300 hands. The yearly returns in 1879 did not exceed 13,325,000 roubles (£1,332,500). The distilleries come first (£973,200), followed by the woollen cloth industry (£237,000), the paper industry (£37,200), tanncries, soap-works, glass-works, machine-works, iron-works, and beetroot-sugar factories. Trade, which has heen favoured by the completion of the railway from Tula to Samara, is still limited to the export of corn, spirits, timber, hemp-seed oil, tallow, hides, honey, wax, some woollen cloth, potash, and cattle, the chief centres for trade being Penza, Nijni Lomoff, Mokshan, Saransk, Krasnoslobodsk, and Golovinshtchina.

The government is divided into ten districts, the chief towns of which are :—Penza (41,650), Gorodishtche (3200), Insar (5230), Kerensk (12,450), Krasnoslobodsk (7000), Mokshan (13,050), Narovtchat (5150), Nijni Lomoff (10,500), Saransk (13,450), and Tehembar (5320). Troitsk (5700), Verkhnii Lomoff (7300), and Sheshkéeff (3500) also have municipal institutions.

The present government of Penza was formerly inhabited by Mordvinians, who had the Mescheryaks in the west, the Bulgars in the north, and the Burtases in the south. In the 13th century these populations fell under the dominion of the Tatars, with whom they fought against Moscow. As early as the 14th century they possessed the town of Narovtchat. The Russians penetrated into the country in the 16th century, founding the town of Mokshan in 1535, and several others in the course of that and the following

eenturies. Penza was foundcd in the beginning of the 17th century,.

the permanent Russian settlement dating as far back as 1666. Its wooden fort, on the site of the present cathedral of the Saviour, protected the neighbourhood against risings of the Mordvinians and Mescheryaks. In

1776 it was taken by Pugatcheff. The town was almost totally destroyed by the great conflagrations of 1836, 1839, and 1858.

PENZA, capital of the above province, is situated 440 niles by rail south-east from Moscow. It is mostly built of wood, on the slopes of a plateau 730 feet above the sea, at the confluence of the little Penza with the navigable Sura. The Spasopreobrajensky cathedral was built in the end of the 17th century, the monastery of the same name, which formerly adjoined it, being now in the suburbs. A few educational and philanthropic institutions, a theatre which has played some part in the history of the Russian stage, and a municipal bank are the chief buildings of Penza, which derives its importance chiefly from its being the seat of the provincial authorities and the see of a bishop. The great bulk of the inhabitants are peasants, who support themselves by agriculture or fishing in the Sura, some artisans, and a few merchants. An imperial botanical garden is situated within 2 miles of the town. Apart from a paper-mill and two steam flour-mills, the manufacturing establishments (producing soap, candles, wax-candles, cosmetics, machinery), distilleries, breweries, and saw-mills are small. ‘Trade in corn, oil, tallow, and spirits is on the increase. There are two fairs where cattle and horses are sold for export, grocery and manufactured wares being the corresponding imports. The population in 1881 had reached 41,650.

PENZANCE, a seaport and municipal borough of Corn- wall, and the westernmost borough of England, is finely situated on gently rising ground on the north-western shore of Mount Bay, at the terminus of the Great Western Railway, 10 miles east-north-east of Land’s End and 20 west-south-west of Truro. It is the nearest port to the Scilly Isles, which are about 40 miles distant to the west- south-west. The market-place is in the centre of the town, and near it the four principal streets intersect each other at

right angles. The southern arm of the pier was built in 1772, the Albert or new pier on the east in 1845. The plers are connected by a wharf, viaduct, and swing-bridge (1882) ; and a dock is being at present constructed at a cost of £60,000, which will extend to about 3 acres. The limits of the port have lately (1884) been extended. The churches are St Mary’s, constructed

of cut granite, in the Perpendicular style, with lofty pinnacled tower and peal of eight bells ; St Paul's, of cut and rubble granite, in the style of the 13th century (1843); and St John's, of stone, Early English (1881). The public buildings, erected of granite in the Italian style in 1867, include the town-hall and council-chambers, St John's Hall for public meetings, the lecture-hall, the public library (upwards of 16,000 volumes), the news-rooms, the masonic hall, the museum of the Penzance Natural History and Antiquarian Society, and the museum and other rooms of the Geological Society of Cornwall. The market-house (1837), in the Grecian style, with a central dome, includes a meat-market on the ground-floor with a corn-market above, and in the east end of the building is the grammar-school, founded in 1789. In front of the east end is a marble statue of Davy. Somewhat east of. the market-house are the post and tele- graph offices, completed in 1883. Among the benevolent institutions is the West Cornwall Infirmary (1874), which includes the dispensary (1809). The town has a con- siderable shipping trade, the total number of vessels which entered the port in 1882 being 1829 of 197,933 tons burden, the number which cleared 1774 of 187,569 tons. The exports include tin, copper, granite, serpentine, and fish, and the imports coal, timber, and provisions. Large quantities of pilchard are annually exported to Italy. Fruits, flowers, and vegetables are grown in the neighbour- hood for the London market. On account of its sheltered situation and its remarkably mild and equable climate, the town has a high repute as a winter residence for persons suffering from pulmonary complaints ; and on account of its fine scenery it is also becoming a favourite watering- place. The population of the municipal borough in 1871 was 10,414, and in 1881 it was 12,409.

Penzance is said to mean ‘‘holy head,” the name being derived from a chapel dedicated to St Anthony, formerly situated on a head- land now forming the base of the old pier, around which a few fishermen built their huts and thus originated the town. A castle built by the Tyes, possessors of the manor of Alwarton or Alverton, is supposed to have occupied the present site of St Mary's Church. Alice de Lisle, sister and heiress of the last Baron Tyes, obtained for the town the grant of a weekly market from Edward TI. In the 15th century Penzance was known as a “place of ships 4nd merchandise ;” and on the 16th March 1512 it received from Henry VIII. a charter granting to the inhabitants all profits arising from ships

visiting the harbour upon condition that the quays and bul- warks of the town were kept in repair. In 1595 the town was burned and pillaged by the Spaniards, and in 1644 sacked by Fairfax. In 1614 it was incorporated by James I. ; and in 1663 it obtained a coinage charter,—a privilege it retained till 1838. On account of the usurpation of its chief magistrate its municipal charter was forfeited in the beginning of the reign of Queen Anne,

but was restored in1706. By the Municipal Act of 1835 the govern- ment was made to consist of a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen

councillors. ; Lach-Szyrma, History of Penzance, 1878 ; Millett, Penzance Past and Present,

1876-1880.

PEONY. See Pony.

PEORIA, a city of the United States, capital of Peoria county, Illinois, lies on the edge of a rolling prairie at the lower end of the so-called Lake Peoria, an expansion of the Illinois river, and is connected by the Michigan Canal with Chicago. It isa flourishing place, the meeting- point of nine railway lines, the trading centre for an exten- sive district, and the seat of a large grain traffic and of various manufactures ; 117,158,670 proof gallons of high wines were made in 1883. From 5095 in 1850 its popu- lation increased to 14,045 in 1860, 22,849 in 1870, and 29,259 in 1880. Though its permanent settlement dates

only from 1811 and its city charter from 1844, Peoria was one of the trading ports established by La Salle (1680), and was long known as a point of some importance on the route between Canada and Louisiana.

PEPPER, a name applied to several pungent spices known respectively as Black, White, Long, Red or Cayenne, Ashantee, Jamaica, and Melegueta Pepper, but derived from at least three different natural orders of plants.

Black pepper is the dried fruit of Piper mgrum, L., a perennial climbing shrub indigenous to the forests of Travancore and Malabar, from whence it has been intro- duced into Java, Sumatra, Borneo, the Malay Peninsula, Siam, the Philippines, and the West Indies. It is one of the earliest spices known to mankind, and for many ages formed a staple article of commerce between India and Europe,—Venice, Genoa, and the commercial cities of ecn- tral Europe being indebted to it for a large portion of their wealth. Tribute has been levied in pepper; one of the articles demanded in 408 by Alaric as part of the ransom of Rome was 3000 ib of pepper. Pepper-corn rents pre- vailed during the Middle Ages, and consisted of an obliga- tion to supply a certain quantity of pepper, usually 1 ib, at stated times; and the term still lingers in use at the

present day. The 2. price of the spice @

during the Middle Ages was exorbi- tantly high, and its excessive cost was one of the in- ducements which led the Portu- _. guese to seek a \ sea-route to India. The discovery of § the passage round £9 the Cape of Good #5 X7 95° Hope led (1498) © <

to a considerable :

fall in the price, and about the same time the cultivation of the plant was extend- ed to the western islands of the Ma- lay. Archipelago. Pepper, however, remained a monopoly of the Portuguese crown as late as the 18th century. In Great Britain it was formerly taxed very heavily, the impost in 1623 amounting to 5s., and as late as 1823 to 2s. 6d. per hb.

The largest quantities of pepper are produced in Penang, the island of Rhio, and Johore near Singapore,—Penang affording on an average about half of the entire crop. Singapore is the great emporium for this spice in the East, the largest proportion being shipped thence to Great Britain. In 1880 the imports into England from Singa- pore amounted to 21,179,059 tb, valued at £385,108, and from other countries 559,909 tb, valued at £12,979, the re-exports being 12,925,886 tb, chiefly to Germany, Italy, Russia, Holland, and Spain. The varieties of black pepper met with in commerce are known as Malabar, Aleppy or Tellicherry, Cochin, Penang, Singapore, and Siam. The

average market value in the London market is—Malabar, 3}d to 54d per Ib; Penang, 22d to 43d; Singapore, 34d to 43d.

Pepper owes its pungency to a resin, and its flavour to a volatile oil, of which it yields from 1°6 to 2°2 per cent. The oil agrees with oil of turpentine in composition as well as

SS wi \

”

Piper nigrum. a, Twig with fruit; 6, longitudinal section of flower ; c, section of fruit.

in specific gravity and boiling point. In polarized light it deviates the ray, in a column 50 mm. long, 1°:2 to 3°-4 to the left. Pepper also contains a neutral crystalline substance, called piperin, to the extent of 2 to 8 per cent, This substance has the same empirical formula as morphia, C,,.H,.NO,, but differs in constitution and properties. It is insoluble in water when pure, is devoid of colour, flavour, and odour, and may be resolved into piperic acid, C,,H,,0,, and piperidin, C,H,,N. The latter is a liquid colourless alkaloid, boiling at 106° C., has an odour of pepper and ammonia, and yields crystallizable salts. A fatty oil is found in the pericarp of pepper, and the berries yield on incineration from 4°1 to 5-7 of ash. The only use of pepper is as a condiment. Notwithstanding its low price and the penalty of £100 to which the manufacturer, possessor, or seller of the adulterated article is liable, powdered pepper is frequently diluted with starch, sago, meal, and other substances, which can be readily detected under the microscope.!

In the south-west of India, where the pepper-plant grows wild, it is found in rich, moist, leafy soil, in narrow valleys, propagating itself by running along the ground and giving off roots into the soil. The only method of cultivation adopted by the natives is to tie up the end of the vines to the neighbouring trees at distances of at least 6 feet, especially to those having a rough bark, in order that the roots may easily attach themselves to the surface. The underwood is then cleared away, leaving only sufficient trees to provide

shade and permit free ventilation. The roots are manured with a heap of leaves, and the shoots are trained twice a year. In localities where the pepper does not grow wild, ground is selected which permits of free drainage, but which is not too dry nor liable to inundation, and cuttings are planted at about a foot from the trees either in the rainy season in June or in the dry season in February. Sometimes several cuttings about 18 inches long are placed in a basket and buried at the root of the tree, the cuttings being made to slope towards the trunk. In October or November the young plants are manured with a mixture of leaves and cow- dung. On dry soils the young plants require watering every other day during the dry season for the first three years. The plants bear in the fourth or fifth year, and if raised from cuttings are fruitful for seven years, if from seed for fourteen years. The pepper from plants raised from cuttings is said to be superior in quantity and quality, and this method is in consequence most frequently adopted. Where there are no trees the ground is made into terraces and enclosed by a mud-wall, and branches of Erythrina indica are put into the ground in the rainy season and in the course of a year are eapable of supporting the young pepper plants. In the mean- time mango trees are planted, these being preferred as supports, since their fruit is not injured by the pepper plant, while the Erythrina is killed by it in fourteen or fifteen years.

In Sumatra the ground is cleared, ploughed, and sown with rice, and cuttings of the vine are planted in September 5 feet apart eaeh way, together with a sapling of quiek growth and rough bark. The plants are now left for twelve or eighteen months and then entirely buried except a small picce of bent stem, whence new shoots arise, three or four of which are allowed to elimb the tree near which they are planted. These shoots generally yield flowers and fruits the next year. Two erops are collected every year, the principal one being in December and January and the other in July and August, the latter yielding pepper of inferior quality and in less quantity. Two or three varieties are met with in cultivation ; that yielding the best kinds has broadly ovate leaves, five to seven in number, nerved and stalked. The flower-spikes are opposite the leaves, stalked and from 3 to 6 inches long; the fruits are sessile and fleshy.

1 Hassall, Food and its Adulteration (1855), p. 42, and Evans, Pharm. Journ., [2] i. p. 605.

White pepper is obtained from the same plant as the black, and differs only in being prepared from the ripe fruits. These, after collection, are kept in the house three days and then bruised and washed in a basket with the hand until the stalks and pulpy matter are removed, after which the seeds are dried. It is, however, sometimes pre- pared from the dried black pepper by removing the dark outer layer. It is less pungent than the black but possesses a finer flavour. It is chiefly prepared at the island of Rhio, but the finest comes from Tellicherry. The Chinese are the largest consumers. In 1877 Singa- pore exported 48,461 piculs (a picul=133} tb) to that country. The London market value is about 43d to 7d per tb. White pepper affords on an average not more than 1-9 per cent. of essential oil; but, according to Cazeneuve, as much as 9 per cent. of piperin, and of ash not more than 1-1 per cent.

Long pepper is the fruit-spike of Piper officenarum,C.DC., and P. longum, L., gathered shortly before it reaches maturity and dried. The former is a native of the Indian Archipelago, occurring in Java, Sumatra, Celebes, and Timor. It has oblong, ovate, acuminate leaves, attenuated to the base, which are pinnate and veined. The latter is indigenous to Ceylon, Malabar, eastern Bengal, Timor, and the Philippines ; it is distinguished from P. officinarum by the leaves being cordate at the base and five-veined. Long pepper appears to have been known to the ancient Greeks and Romans under the name of zrézreps paxpdv ; and in the 10th century mention is made of long pepper, or macropiper, in conjunction with black and white peppers. The spice consists of a dense spike of minute baccate fruits closely packed around the central axis, the spike being about 14 inch long and } inch thick ; as met with in commerce they have the appearance bf having been limed. In Bengal the plants are cultivated by suckers, which are planted about 5 feet apart on dry rich soil on high ground. An English acre will yield about 3 maunds (80 Ib) the first year, 12 the second, and 18 the third year ; after this time the yield decreases, and the roots are there- fore grubbed up and sold as pipli mul, under which name they are much used as a medicine in India.

After the fruit is collected, which is usually in January, the stem and leaves die down to the ground. Long pepper contains piperin, resin, and volatile oil, and yields about 8 per cent. of ash. Penang and Singapore are the principal centres in the East for its sale. In 1871 Singapore shipped 3366 ewt., of which 447 were sent to Great Britain. Penang exports annually about 2000 to 3000 piculs. The value in the London market is from 37s. to 45s. a cwt.

Ashantee or West African pepper is the dried fruit of Piper Clusii, C. DC., a plant widely distributed in tropical Africa, occurring most abundantly in the country of the Niam-niam. It differs from black pepper in being rather smaller, less wrinkled, and in being attenuated into a stalk, like cubebs, to which it bears considerable resemblance ex- ternally. The taste, however, is pungent, exactly like that of pepper, and the fruit contains piperin. It was imported from the Grain Coast by the merchants of Rouen and Dieppe as early as 1364, and was exported from Benin by the Portuguese in 1485; but, according to Clusius, its importation was forbidden by the king of Portugal for fear it should depreciate the value of the pepper from India. In tropical Africa it is extensively used as a condiment, and it could easily be collected in large quantities if a demand for it should arise.

Jamaica pepper is the fruit of Pimenta officinalis, Lindl., an evergreen tree of the Myrtle family. It is more correctly termed “ pimento,” or “allspice,” as it is not a true pepper.

Melegueta pepper, known also as “Guinea grains,” “grains of paradise,” or “alligator pepper,” is the seed of

Amomum Melegueta, Roscoe, a plant of the Ginger family ; the seeds are exceedingly pungent, and are used as a spice throughout central and northern Africa. See vol. vi. p. 36.

For Cayenne pepper, see vol. v. p. 280. (E. M. H.)

PEPPERMINT, an indigenous perennial herb of the natural order Labiatx, and genus Mentha, the specific name being Mentha Piperita, Huds., is

distinguished from other species of the genus by its stalked leaves and oblong- obtuse spike-like heads of flowers. It is met with, near streams and in wet places, in several parts of England and on the Continent, and is also extensively cultivated for the sake of its essential oil in England, in several parts of continental Europe, and in the United States. Yet it was only recognized as a distinct species late in the 17th century, when Dr Eales discovered it in Hertfordshire and pointed it out to Ray, who published it in the second edition of his Synopsis Stirpium Britannicarum (1696). The medicinal properties of the plant were speedily recog- nized, and it was admitted into the London Pharmacopoeia in 1721, under the name of Mentha piperitis sapore.

Two varieties are recognized by growers, the one being known as white and the other as black mint. The former has purplish and $e the latter green Yep stems ; the leaves are more coarsely serrated in the white. The black is the variety more generally —culti- vated, probably because it is found to yield more oil, but that of the green variety is considered to have a more delicate /7 odour, and obtains # a higher price.‘ The green is the kind chiefly dried for herbalists; 4 it is said to be Fic. 1.—Mentha Piparites a, Flowering branch ; of less vigorous b, flower showing form of calyx teeth, growth than the black. The annual yield of peppermint oil from all parts of the world has been estimated at 90,000 1b, but this is probably much below the mark, without taking into consideration the Chinese and Japan- ese oils of peppermint, which, however, are obtained from a different species of mint.

Peppermint oil varies considerably in commercial value, that of Mitcham commanding nearly three times the price of the finest American. The flavour varies to a slight extent even with particular plots of land, badly drained ground being known to give unfavourable results both as to the quantity and quality of the oil. That of the Japan- ese and Chinese oil also differs slightly from the English, and is thus distinguishable by experts. In America the oil is liable to be injured in flavour by aromatic weeds which grow freely among the crop, the most troublesome of these being Zrigeron canadense, L., and Hrechthates hieracifolia, Raf. When pure the oil is nearly colourless and has an agreeable odour and powerful aromatic taste, followed by a sensation of cold when air is drawn into the mouth. It hasa specific gravity of 0°84 to 0°92, and boils at 365° Fahr. Mitcham oil, when

examined by polarized light in a column 50 mm. long, deviates from 14°-2 to 10°°7

1 Near Mitcham in Surrey (219 acres in 1864), Wisbeach in Cambridgeshire, Market Deeping in Lincolnshire (150 acres in 1881), and Hitchin in Hertfordshire.

to the left, the American 4°°3. When oil of peppermint is cooled to 4° C. it sometimes deposits colourless hexagonal prisms of menthol, C,,H,,O, which are soluble in alcohol and ether, almost insoluble in water, and fusible at 92° Fahr. The liquid portion of the oil appears to consist chiefly of the compound C,,H,,0, but it has not been thoroughly investigated. Oil of peppermint is often adul- terated with a third part of rectified spirit, which may be detected by the milkiness produced when the oil is agitated with water. Oil of rosemary and rectified oil of turpen- tine are sometimes used for the same purpose. If the oil contains turpentine it will explode with iodine. If quite pure it dissolves in its own weight of rectified spirits of wine. Peppermint oil is largely distilled at Canton, a considerable quantity (about 300 catties annually) being sent to Bombay, also about 600 catties of menthol. The exports from Canton in 1883 amounted to about 1200 hb. The species cultivated in the neighbourhood of Canton, and probably at Shanghai also, is Mentha arvensis, var. glabrata. Peppermint is chiefly culti- vated in the province of Keang-se; and according to native statements as much as 40 piculs of oil of peppermint are sent annually to ports on the coast. In Japan also the distillation of oil of pepper- mint forms a considerable N : industry, the plant cultivated Pye Mens armen van pipe being /. arvensis, var. piper- calyx showing form of teeth. ascens (see Ph. Journ. [3] vol. ii. p. 324), of which both a purplish and a white form appear to be grown. The oil, under the name of hakka no abura, is exported from Hiogo and Ozaka, but is said to be frequently adulterated. Since 1872 the peppermint camphor or menthol has been largely exported in the separate state from Japan to Germany and Great Britain. The menthol is obtained by subjecting the oil to a low temperature, when it crystallizes out and is separated. The two varieties of Jf. arvensis just named yield much more menthol than M. Piperita. It is re- markable, however, that the J. arvensis,

var. javanica, Blume, growing in Ceylon, has not the flavour of pepper- mint but that of garden mint, while the typical form of M. arvensis grown in Great Britain has an odour so different from peppermint that it has to be carefully re- moved from the field lest it should spoil the flavour of the peppermint oil when the herb is distilled. M&M. incana, Willd., cultivated near Bombay as a herb, also possesses the flavour of peppermint. In the form in which menthol is imported it bears some resemblance to Epsom salts, with which it is said to be sometimes adulterated. It is usually not entirely free from the essential oil, and consequently undergoes purification and recrystallization in England and on the Continent. The amount of menthol imported by a large firm at Leipsic between September 1883 and April 1884 is stated by them to have been 6380 ib, while it 1s certain that at least an equal quantity is imported into England from Yokohama. Although the Japanese pepper- mint plant has been imported by a London merchant, no attempt has as yet been made to cultivate the plant in order to manufacture menthol in England. Menthol is now (1884), however, manufactured from I. Piperita in the United States, where also I. arvensis, var. piperascens, is cultivated.

‘

PEP PRB MONT

Oil of peppermint is used in medicine as an antispasmodic for the relief of griping pains in the alimentary canal, to expel flatulence, to relieve nausea, to hide the taste of other medicines, and to act as an adjunct to purgatives. The dose is usually from one to three minims. It forms a

most valuable remedy in diarrhcea, acting as an antiseptic,

and as a stimulant to the circulation, and as an anodyne, The oil rubbed over the head is used in China to cure sun- stroke. Menthol has lately come largely into use as a remedy for neuralgia, being moulded by heat into the form of small cones, which are rubbed over the part affected. A small portion placed on the tongue frequently relieves headache, and catarrh and coryza if placed in the nostril, The largest consumption of the oil is in the manufacture of peppermint lozenges.

The following mode of cultivation is adopted by Mr Holland, at Market Deeping. A rich friable soil, retentive of moisture, is selected, and the ground is well tilled 8 to 10 inches deep. The plants are propagated in the spring, usually in April and May. When the young shoots from the crop of the previous year have attained a height of about 4 inches they are pulled up and trans- planted into new soil. They grow vigorously the first year, and throw out numerous stolons on the surface of the ground. After the crop has been removed these are allowed to harden or become woody, and then farmyard manure is scattered over the field and ploughed in. In this way the stolons are divided into numerous pieces, and covered with soil before the frost sets in. If the autumn is wet they are liable to become sodden, and rot, and the next crop fails. In the spring the fields are dressed with Peruvian guano. In new ground the peppermint requires hand-weeding two or three times, as the hoe cannot be used without injury to the plants. Moist heavy weather in August is apt to cause the foliage to drop off and leave the stems almost bare. Under these circum- stances rust (Puccinia Mentha) also is liable to attack the plants. This is prevented to a certain extent by a rope being drawn across the plants, by two men walking in the furrows, so as to remove excessive moisture. The average yield of peppermint is about 165 ewt. per acre. The first year's crop is always cut with the sickle to prevent injury to the stolons. The herb of the second and third year is cut with scythes, and then raked by women into loose heaps ready for carting. The field is then gleaned by boys, who add what they collect to the heaps. The plants rarely yield a fourth crop on the same land. The harvest usually commences in the beginning or middle of August, or as soon as the plants begin to flower, and lasts for six weeks, the stills being kept going night and day. The herb is carted direct from the field to the stills, which are made of copper, and contain about 5 cwt. of the herb. Before putting the peppermint into the still water is poured in to a depth of about 2 feet, at which height a false bottom is placed, and on this the herb is thrown and trodden down by men. The lid, which fits into a water-joint, is then let down by pulleys and fastened by two bars, any excess of pressure or temperature being indicated by the water that is ejected at the joint. The distillation is conducted by the application of dircct heat at the lowest pos- sible temperature, and is continued for about four and a half hours, When this operation is completed, the lid is removed and a rope is attached to.a hook on the false bottom, which, as well as the herb resting on it, is raised bodily by a

windlass and the peppermint carricd away in the empty carts on their return journey to the fields, where it is placed in heaps and allowed to rot, being subsequently mixed with the manure applied in the autumn as above stated.

At Mitcham extra payment is given to the reapers to induce them to keep the mint free from corn mint (Mentha arvensis) and other herbs, which would injure or spoil the flavour of the oil if not removed before distillation. The usual yield of oil, if the season be warm and dry, is said to be 1 oz. from 5 fb of the fresh flowering herb, but, if wet and unfavourable, the product is barely half that quantity. Mr Holland estimates the yield of a charge of the still at from 1 Tb 12 oz. to5 ib. The oil improves in mellow-ness even if kept as long as ten or fourtecn years. The green colour sometimes present in the oil is stated to be due to a quantity of water larger than necessary having been used in the distillation ; on the other hand, if the herb be left in the still from Saturday to Monday, the oil assumes a brown tint.

In France peppermint is cultivated on damp rich ground at Sens, in the department of the Yonne. In Germany it is grown in the neighbourhood of Leipsic, where the little town of Colleda produces annually as much as 40,000 ewt. of the herb. In the United States peppermint is cultivated on a most extensive scale, chiefly in southern Michigan, the west districts of New York State, and Ohio. The amount of peppermint oil now produced in the United States has been estimated at 70,000 tb annually, of which 30,000 ib are exported, about two-thirds of this quantity being produced in

New York State and the remaining one-third in Michigan. The yield averages from 10 to 30 ib per acre. The cultivation of pepper- mint has recently been extended to the southern States. In Michi- gan the plant was introduced in 1855, and in 1858 there were about 9100 acres under cultivation, and 100 distilleries yielding 15,000 tb of oil. In 1870 one of the best-known growers of New York State is said to have sent out as much as 57,365 ib. In 1876 the United States exported to Hamburg 25,840 fb of peppermint oil against 14,890 Ib sent by Great Britain to the same port. (H. M. H.)

PEPPER TREE. The tree usually so called has no real consanguinity with the true pepper (Piper), but is a member of the Anacard family known botanically as Schinus Molle or Muth, the latter epithet representing, it is said, the Peruvian name of the plant. It is a small tree with unequally pinnate leaves, the segments linear, entire or finely saw-toothed, the terminal one longer than the rest, and all filled with volatile oil stored in large cells or cysts, which are visible to the naked eye and appear like holes when the leaf is held up to the light. When the leaves are thrown upon the surface of water the resinous or oily fluid escapes with such force as violently to agitate them. The flowers are small, whitish, arranged in terminal clusters, and polygamous or unisexual, with five sepals, as many petals, ten stamens (as large as the petals in the case of the male flower, very small in the female flower, but in both springing from a cushion-like disk surrounding the base of the three-celled ovary). The style is simple or three-cleft, and the fruit a small, globose, pea-like drupe with a bony kernel enclosing a single seed. The fleshy portion of the fruit has a hot aromatic flavour from the abundance of the resin it contains, and to this circumstance the tree probably owes its popular name. ‘The resin is used for medicinal purposes by the Peruvians, and has similar properties to mastic. The Japan pepper tree is Xanthoxylum piperitum, the fruits of which have also a hot taste. Along the Riviera the tree known as Melia Azedarach, or the “ Pride of India,” a very ornamental tree with elegant foliage and dense clusters of fragrant lilac flowers, is also incorrectly called the pepper tree by visitors.

PEPSIN. See Nurririon, vol. xvii. p. 675 sq.

PEPYS, SamMveL (1633-1703), was the fifth child of John Pepys and Margaret (Perkins? Diary, 17th Septem- ber 1663), and was born on 23d February 1632/3. His family was of the middle class, and at this time was in humble circumstances, his father being a tailor in London, while an uncle and an aunt, named Perkins, lived in poverty in the Fens near Wisbeach. His father’s elder brother Robert had a small property at Brampton in Huntingdonshire, and Samuel was at school at Hunting- don about 1644. Thence he went to St Paul’s, London, and on 21st June 1650 was entered as a sizar at Trinity College, Cambridge, but was transferred on Ist October in the same year to Magdalene, where he became pensioner on 4th March following. On 3d April 1651 he was elected scholar on the Spendluffe

foundation, and on 4th October 1653 on that of Dr John Smith. Exactly a fortnight afterwards he was admonished by the registrar before all the fellows in residence for being ‘“ scandalously overserved with drink the night before.” His love of drink, so constantly illustrated in the early pages of his Diary, would have been a serious drawback to his advance- ment, had not his love of work and order been a still stronger impulse. The crisis was reached on Sunday, 29th September 1661, when he was too drunk to trust himself to read prayers to the household. After that he makes resolute vows against wine, which he often breaks, and with regard to which he displays curious powers of self-deception.

Nothing more is known of Pepys’s college career, though he tells us that he was addicted to writing romances. He became a moderate classical scholar; it is, however, a curious commentary upon the university training of those

days that, after his appointment tothe navy board, he is found busy with the multiplication table, which he speaks of as entirely new to him, and of his daily progress in which he is not a little proud. After this he becomes en- amoured of arithmetic and teaches his wife the science also.

In October! 1655 Pepys married Elizabeth St Michel, a girl of fifteen, of great beauty, whose father, a Hugue- not refugee in England, was at this time in very poor circumstances. She was a good cook and a good house- keeper, and was both clever and warm-tempered ; Pepys, vain, quarrelsome, fussy, and pedantic, was unfitted, save by a general goodness of heart, to manage a high-spirited girl; and the pages of the Diary are full of bickerings and downright quarrels arising out of trifles, the entries of which, though often amusing, are as often extremely pathetic. Pepys and his wife, who were destitute of funds, were received by Sir Edward Montagu, afterwards earl of Sandwich, whose mother had married Pepys’s grandfather. Pepys probably acted as Montagu’s secretary. He was successfully cut for the stone on 26th March 1657/8, an anniversary which he always notes with gratitude. In March 1658/9 he accompanied Montagu and Algernon Sidney to the Sound on board the “Naseby” (afterwards the “ Charles”). To this he more than once refers as the beginning of his fortunes. On his return he was

employed as a clerk in the army pay-office of the exchequer under Downing, afterwards Sir George Downing.

In January 1659/60 Pepys began to keep his Diary. He was at this time living in Axe Yard, Westminster, in a small house with one servant, on straitened means. On 29th January he can count but £40; his great object is to get on and to “put money in his purse ;” and by 24th . May 1661 he is worth £500. Political principles he had none, though his personal attachment to James (II.) makes him call himself a Tory; but it is noticeable that even before the Restoration he regularly attended the Church of England service carried on by Peter Gunning, afterwards successively bishop of Chester and of Ely. Of active religious convictions Pepys leaves no trace, but he was ever a steady church-goer ; and the epithets he applies to the sermons are very happy in their causticity. In February he went to Cambridge to settle his brother in his old college. One side of what was distinctly a coarse-grained nature is exhibited in an entry during this week, where he describes himself (as on many other occasions) as ‘‘ playing the fool with the lass of the house.” His views of women, indeed, are almost always vulgar; he was given to clumsy gallantry, and he was certainly unfaithful to his wife. In March Montagu gave Pepys the post of secretary to the generals at sea. While the fleet lay off the Dutch coast he made a short journey into Holland. At this time he secured the favour of the duke of York; and he retained it through life. On 28th June he became clerk of the acts of the navy, an office which Montagu had procured for him against powerful competition. A salary of a little over £100 a year, afterwards increased to £350, was attached to the post, but Pepys had to pay an annuity of £100 to his predecessor in office, On 23d July he became clerk of the privy seal, the fees from which, at any rate for a time, brought him in an additional £3 a day (Diary, 10th August 1660). In this month he took his M.A. degree. On 24th September he was sworn in as J.P. for Middlesex, Essex, Kent, and Southampton. He now lived in Seething Lane, in front of the navy office, Crutched Friars. In July 1661, on the death of his uncle, the Brampton estate, worth £80 a year, came to his father, and on the latter’s

1 Pepys himself gives 10th October as the date ; the registers of St Margaret’s church (Westminster) say that the banns were published on 19th,

22d, and 29th October, and that he was married on 1st December. See Notes and Queries, 30th August 1884.

death in 1680 to Pepys himself. In July 1662 he was made a younger brother of the Trinity House.

Pepys's untiring industry in office, his prudence, his unfailing usefulness, his knowledge of business, which he was ever diligent to increase, and his general integrity secured him the greatest confidence at headquarters. As early as August 1662, when placed on the Tangier com- mission, he had found himself "a very rising man." In March 1664/5 he was made treasurer to the commission, and received also the contract for victualling the garrison, both lucrative appointments ; and in October, through the influence of Sir W. Coventry, he was further made sur- veyor-general of the victualling office, a post which he resigned at the conclusion of the peace. His conduct during the Great Plague, when, alone of all the navy board, he stayed in the city of the dead and carried on the whole administration of the navy, was admirable. During the Fire also his readiness and presence of mind were of the greatest service in staying the conflagration.

In the spring of 1667/8, in the blind rage at the national disgrace generally termed the miscarriage of Chatham, the whole navy board were summoned before the House of Commons to give an account of their con- duct. Pepys was deputed by his colleagues to conduct the defence, and he did so with complete success on 5th March in a speech of three hours' duration, which gained him great reputation.

In 1669 the increasing weakness of his eyesight com- pelled him to discontinue the Diary, his last entry being on 3lst May. What was to us an irremediable misfortune was to Pepys "almost as much as to see myself go into the grave." He now took leave of absence and spent some months in travelling through France and in revisiting Holland. On the day of his return his wife fell ill, and died in the early spring, before 3d March 1669/70. In July 1669 Pepys stood as the duke of York's nominee, backed by the Howard influence, for the borough of Aldborough in Suffolk, but was defeated. In November 1670 we find him engaged in a quarrel with the

Swedish resident, which was likely to have been followed by a duel, as Pepys, doubt- less to his exceeding comfort (for he was a great coward), received an order from the king neither to send nor accept a challenge. In 1672 he was promoted to the secretary- ship of the admiralty ; and, when James resigned his office of lord high admiral, Pepys did all the work until the commission was appointed. He was placed also upon the new commission for Tangier.

In June 1673 he was chosen at a by-election, again as James's nominee, for Castle Rising, a Howard borough, but a vote of the committee of privileges declared the election void. Pepys, on the authority of Sir J. Banks and the earl of Shaftesbury, was denounced before the House of Commons as being a Papist; but, when these persons were called upon, they denied any definite knowledge of the altar and crucifix which he was charged with having in his house. The parliament being prorogued, he retained his seat, and is recorded as speaking on 17th May and 26th October 1675, on the latter occasion against the pro- posal made, in distrust of the crown, to lodge the money for the ships in the chamber of London instead of in the exchequer; and again on 11th May 1678, in the debate on the king's message to quicken supply for the navy, when he was sharply reproved by Sir R. Howard for speaking "rather like an admiral than a secretary, 'I' and 'we,' " an amusing instance of how completely Pepys had obtained control of the business of the navy and had identified himself with the work. He was afterwards, in 1678/9, returned for Harwich (see a note on p. 122 of vol. vi. of Bright's edition of the Diary). In the list, however, of members of the parliament which met on 6th

EYP y

March in that year, which is given by the Parliamentary History (vol. iv. p. 1082), the members for Harwich are recorded as being Sir Anthony Deane and Siz Thomas Pepys. An investigation of the records of Harwich leaves no doubt that the Parliamentary History is wrong upon this point, and that Pepys did sit for the borough during this parliament.

On 7th August 1677 Pepys was elected master of the Clothworkers' Company, who still possess the silver cup he gave them on the occasion. He continued to hold the secretaryship until 1679, when fresh complaints of

mis- carriages in the navy were made before the House. The country was then in the throes of the popish terror. Pepys was accused, on the evidence of one Colonel Scott, an in- famous character, ‘“‘a very great vindicator of the Sala- manca doctor” (Intelligencer, 20th May 1681), of sending secret information regarding the English navy to France (Intelligencer, 23d May 1681), and was again charged with being a Papist. On 22d May he was sent, nominally on the first charge, though really on the second, to the Tower, with his colleague Sir Anthony Deane. As he himself wrote to James on 6th May, “‘a papist I must be, whether I will or no, because favoured by your royal highness.” On 2d June he appeared before the King’s Bench, and was remanded three times, bail being refused by Jones, the attorney-general. At length Pepys was allowed out on bail for £30,000. The trial was four times postponed, in the hope that evidence would be obtained, and at last on 12th February 1680 he was released only because Scott refused to swear to his depositions, and no prosecutor ap- peared, and because his old servant, who had given evidence against him, being now on his deathbed, confessed that it was utterly false. This illustrates admirably the wild in- justice that prevailed during that feverish time.

In April 1680 Pepys attended the king by command to Newmarket, and there took down in shorthand from his own mouth the narrative of his escape from Worcester. His post had meantime been abolished, or at any rate the con- stitution of the navy board changed. We find him writing to James on 6th May 1679, asking leave to lay down “this odious secretaryship,” and to be placed on the commission of the navy. James urged his claims upon Charles, but the imprisonment in the Tower probably put an end to the affair. In May 1682 Pepys accompanied James when he took the government of Scotland, and while there made with Colonel Legge a tour of the chief towns. In the autumn of 1683 he sailed with the same Colonel Legge, then Lord Dartmouth, on the expedition to destroy the fortifications of Tangier, though not aware when he started of the object of the expedition. The ships reached Tangier on Friday, 14th September. Here he stayed, with the exception of a short visit to Spain, until 5th March, and arrived in London on 6th April.

On his return Pepys was again made secretary to the admiralty. In this same year (1684) he was elected pre- sident of the Royal Society. At the

coronation of James II. he figured as one of the barons of the Cinque Ports; and he sat in James's parliament for his old seat of Har- wich along with his former colleague Sir Anthony Deane, —a fact which illustrates how completely the crown had regained possession of political power in the boroughs. He lost both his seat and his secretaryship at the Revolu- tion, though he was consulted on navy matters to the time of his death. Having been rejected at Harwich in the new elections, he tried in vain to find another seat. His well-known intimacy with and regard for James made him a special object of suspicion to the Government, and in 1690, in common with others suspected for similar reasons, though without cause, he was suddenly arrested and sent to the Gate House, but was almost immediately released,

15th October, on bail (see his letter, Bright, vol. vi. p. 169). He was, however, afraid of fresh attacks as late as Easter 1692 (Letter to Evelyn, Bright, vi. p. 173). It was about this time that he published his long-intended Memours of the Navy. He gave, as in former years, great attention to the government of Christ's Hospital, and especially to the mathematical foundation ; and he was concerned with the establishment of Sir William Boreman's mathematical school at Greenwich. He was, too, a benefactor of his old school of St Paul's, and of Magdalene College.

Tn the spring of 1700, being very ill with the breaking out of the wound caused by the operation of 1658, he removed to the house of his old clerk William Hewer, at Clapham, and, against the urgent advice of his doctors (Bright, Preface), gave himself up to indefatigable study, feeling that his health was restored by the change. He himself, however, on 7th August 1700, wrote in a charm- ing letter! that he was doing "nothing that will bear naming, and yet I am not, I think, idle; for who can, that has so much of past and to come to think on as I have? And thinking, I take it, is working." And he speaks of himself in September as making several country excursions. He was, immediately after this, confined entirely to the house with his old disease of stone, and gradually failed. He bore his long and acute sufferings with extreme fortitude, and died, in reduced circumstances (though he claimed a balance of £28,007 2s 1d against the crown), on 26th

May 1703. He was buried by the side of his wife in St Olave's, Crutched Friars, London, on 5th June. His library of 3000 volumes, which he had collected with much labour and sacrifice, and which he would not allow to be divided, was bequeathed to Magdalene College.

The last fact to be recorded of Pepys is that on 18th March 1884, two centuries after his official employment, a monument was unveiled in the church where he was buried to the "Clerk of the Acts and Secretary to the Admiralty" (Times, 19th March 1884).

The importance of Pepys's Diary, historically speaking, may be summed up by saying that without it the history of the court of Charles IJ. could not have been written. We do not, it is true, gain from it any information as to what was going on in the country. Utterly destitute of imagination or political knowledge, Pepys could only record the sights and the gossip that were evident to all. It is because he did record these, without hesitation or concealment, that from his Diary we can understand the brillianey and wickedness of the court, as well as the social state and daily life of the bourgeois class. Viewed in another light, it is unique as the record of a mind formed of inconsistencies. 'Io him especi- ally would his own motto apply, " Mens cujusque, is cst quisque." Probity in word and integrity in office, along with self-confessed mendacity and fraud ; modesty, with inordinate self-conceit ; inde- pendence of mind, with the vulgarest striving after and exultation at the marks of respect which he receives as he rises in the world, and at little advantages gained over others; high-mindedness, with sordid spite ; dignity, with buffoonery ; strong common sense, with great superstition ; kindness, with brutality ; the eager pursuit of money, with liberality in spending it,—such are a few of the more obvious contrasts. He gained his reputation by fair means, and yet was willing enough to lie in order to increase it; he practised extreme respectability of deportment before the world, while he wor- shipped the most abandoned of Charles's mistresses, and now and again gave loose rein to his own very indifferent morals ; and he combined with courage amid difficulties and devotion to duty in the face of almost certain death a personal poltroonery to which few men would eare to confess. The best tribute to him as a man is that in his later years Evelyn became his firm and intimate

friend, and that he died amid universal respect. 7

Authorities.—Diary (Bright's edition ; compared with which other editions are of slight value); Rev. J. Smith, Life, Journals, and Correspondence of Pepys (1841); Parliamentary History, vol. iv.; Journals ofthe House of Commons ; Evelyn, Diary; Wheatley, Samuel Pepys and the World he Lived in (1880); and articles In various magazines and reviews. (O, A.

PERA. See ConsraNTINOPLE, vol. vi. p. 306.

PERAA. See GriEap, vol. x. p. 595.

PERAK. See Matay PENINSULA, vol. xv. p. 320 sq., and Straits SETTLEMENTS.

1 He carried on an active correspondence with literary friends, among them being Dryden, Sloane, and Evelyn.

PERCEVAL, Amanp-Prerre Caussin px (1795-1871), Orientalist, was born at Paris, where his father was. pro- fessor of Arabic in the Collége de France, on 13th J anuary 1795. In 1814 he went to Constantinople as a student interpreter, and afterwards travelled in Asiatic Turkey, spending a year with the Maronites in the Lebanon, and finally becoming dragoman at Aleppo. Returning to Paris, he became professor of vulgar Arabic in the school of living Oriental languages in 1821, and also professor of Arabic in the Collége de France in 1833. In 1849 he was elected to the Academy of Inscriptions. He dicd at Paris during the siege, 15th January 1871, regretted not only for his ripe scholarship but for the gentleness and modesty of a character which represented the best features of the old school of French savants. .

Caussin de Pereeval published a useful Grammaire Arabe vulgaire, whieh passed through several editions (4th ed. 1858), and edited and enlarged Boethor's Dictionnaire Francais-Arabe (8d ed. 1864) ; but his great reputation rests almost entirely on one book, the Essai sur Vhistoire des Arabes (8 vols., Paris, 1847-48), in which the native traditions as to the

early history of the Arabs, down to the death of Mohammed and the complete subjection of all the tribes to Islam, are brought together with wonderful industry and set forth with much learning and lucidity. One of the principal MS. sources used is the great Kitéb al-Aghdny, which has since been published in Egypt; but no publication of texts can deprive the #ssai, which is now unhappily very searee, of its value as a trustworthy guide through a tangled mass of tradition.

PERCEVAL, Spencer (1762-1812), prime minister of England from 1809 to 1812, was the second son of John, second earl of Egmont, and was born in Audley Square, Lon- don, in November 1762. He was educated at Harrow and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. in 1781. He ~~was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn in 1786. A very able speech in connexion with a famous forgery case having drawn attention to his talents, his success was from that time rapid, and he was soon regarded as the leading counsel on the Midland circuit. Entering parlia~~ ment for Northampton in April 1796, he distinguished himself by his speeches in support of the administration of Pitt. In 1801, on the formation of the Addington administration, he was appointed solicitor-general, and in 1802 he became attorney-general. An ardent opponent of Catholic emancipation, he delivered in 1807 a speech on the subject which helped to give the deathblow to the Grenville administration, upon which he became chancellor of the exchequer under the duke of Portland, whom in 1809 he succeeded in the premiership. Notwithstanding that he had the assistance in the cabinet of no statesman of the first rank, he succeeded in retaining office till he was shot by an assassin, perhaps a madman, named Bel- lingham, in the lobby of the House of Commons, 11th May 1812. Perceval will be chiefly remembered for his strenuous opposition to Catholic emancipation, an opposi- tion due to a conscientious dread of the political evils that might result from it. He was a vigorous debater, specially excelling in replies, in which his thorough mastery of all the details of his subject gave him a great advantage.

PERCH (Perca fluviatilis), a freshwater fish generally distributed over Europe, northern Asia, and North America, and so well known as to have been selected for the type of an entire family of spiny-rayed fishes, the Percedx, which is represented in European freshwaters by several other

fishes such as the pope (Acerina cernua) and the pike-perch (Lucioperca). It inhabits rivers as well as lakes, but thrives best in waters with a depth of not less than 3 feet ; in large deep lakes it frequently descends to depths of 50 fathoms and more. It occurs in Scandinavia as far north as the 69th parallel, but does not extend to Iceland or any of the islands north of Europe. In the Alps it ascends to an altitude of 4000 feet.

The shape of its body is well proportioned, but many

variations occur, some specimens being singularly high- backed, others low and long-bodied ; sometimes such varia- tions are local, and Agassiz and other naturalists at one time thought it possible to distinguish two species of the common perch of Europe; there are not even sufficient grounds, however, for separating specifically the North- American form, which in the majority of ichthyological works is described as Perca jflavescens. The brilliant and

The Perch, Perca fluviatilis. striking colours of the perch render it easily recognizable even at a distance. A rich greenish-brown with golden reflexions covers the back and sides, which are ornamented with five or seven dark cross-bands. A large black spot “occupies the membrane between the last spines of the dorsal fin; and the ventral, anal, and lower part of the caudal are bright vermilion. In the large peaty lakes of north Germany a beautiful variety is not uncommon, in which the golden tinge prevails, as in a gold-fish.

The perch is strictly carnivorous and most voracious ; it wanders about in small shoals within a certain district, playing sad havoc among small fishes, and is therefore not to be tolerated in waters where valuable fry is culti- vated. Perch of three pounds in weight are not unfre- quently caught in suitable localities; one of five would now be regarded as an extraordinarily

large specimen, although in older works we read of individuals exceeding even that weight.

Perch are good wholesome food, and highly esteemed in inland countries where marine fish can be obtained only with difficulty. The nearly allied pike-perch is one of the best European food-fishes. The perch is exceedingly prolific ; it begins to spawn when three years old, in April or in the first half of May, depositing the ova, which are united by a viscid matter in lengthened or net-shaped bands, on water plants.

PERCIVAL, James Gatxs (1795-1856), an American writer of many-sided activity, but chiefly remembered by his verses, was born at Berlin, Connecticut, on 15th Sep- tember 1795, and studied at Yale, graduating in 1815, and taking a medical degree in 1820. His life was straitened by poverty and divided among a variety of occupations. He was by turns an army surgeon, professor of chemistry at West Point, a recruiting surgeon at Boston, geological surveyor of Connecticut (writing a Report pub- lished in 1842), and State geologist of Wisconsin, where he died at Hazel Green, 2d May 1856. The intervals of these employments were filled up with literary work of a miscellaneous kind. An edition of his collected poems appeared at Boston in 1859 (2 vols. 8vo). Some of his miscellaneous and patriotic verses hold a high place in American poetry.

_ PERCY. This family, whose deeds are so prominent in English history, claimed descent from one Manfred de Perci, who was said to have come out of Denmark into Normandy before the adventure of the famous Rollo. But it 18 More certain that two brothers, William and Serlo de Perey, came into England with William the Conqueror, who endowed his namesake the elder with vast possessions in Hampshire, Lincolnshire, and Yorkshire, among which were Topcliffe in the North Riding and Spofforth in the

West Riding, the principal seats of the family for many ages afterwards. This William deserves special notice besides, since he refounded the noble abbey of Whitby, which had been destroyed by the Danes,—obtaining a grant of the lordship from Hugh, earl of Chester. Yet his piety would seem to have been of a rather unsteadfast character, for, having endowed the

abbey with certain lands, he resumed them in order to reward a faithful dependant, till his brother Serlo, the abbot, complained to King William, and caused him to make restitution.

The family, however, did not really descend in a direct male line from this William ; for in the reign of Henry II. his male descendants became extinct, and the inheritance was divided for a time between two sisters, though by failure of issue of one of them it was reunited in the next generation. Agnes, the sister from whom all the subse- quent Percies were descended, accepted as her husband Josceline, a son of Geoffrey, duke of Louvain, on the ex- press condition that he and his posterity should bear the surname of Percy, and assume the arms of her family, re- linquishing their own. This Josceline was a brother of Adelais or Alice of Louvain, the second queen of Henry L, and by an arrangement with his sister, confirmed by Henry II. when duke of Normandy, he became possessed of the honour of Petworth in Sussex. He was also castellan at Arundel, and held several other important posts in the south of England. His son Richard and Richard's son William were among the barons who rose in arms against John and Henry III. respectively ; but the grandson made his peace with his sovereign, and had his lands restored to him. It should be remarked, however, as a feature of the times, that Richard de Percy was not the eldest but the youngest son of Josceline, and that, according to modern notions, he was really a usurper, who occupied the inheritance of a nephew; his right, however, passed undisputed. He was one of the twenty-five barons ap- pointed to enforce the observance of Magna Charta.

The next important member of the family is Henry de Percy, whom Edward I., after the deposition of John Baliol, appointed governor of Galloway, and who was one of his most active agents in the subjugation of Scotland, till the success of Robert Bruce drove him out of Turnberry Castle, and made him withdraw into England. He was rewarded by Edward II. with the barren title of earl of Carrick, declared to be forfeited by the Scottish hero; and the same king appointed him governor of the castles of Bamborough and Scarborough. But he himself made his position strong in the north of England by purchasing lands from Anthony Beck, bishop of Durham, among which was the honour of Alnwick, the principal seat of the family ever since. His son, another Henry, took part in the league against Edward

II.’s favourites the Despensers, was in favour with Edward III., and obtained from Edward Baliol as king of Scotland grants of Lochmaben, Annan- dale, and Moffatdale, which he surrendered to the English king for the castle and constableship of Jedburgh or Jed- worth, with the forest of Jedworth and some neighbouring towns. A few years later, in fuller recompense of the unprofitable gift of Baliol,a grant of 500 marks a year was made to him out of the old customs at Berwick ; and in 1346 he did splendid service to his sovereign by defeat- ing and taking prisoner David, king of Scotland, at the battle of Neville’s Cross.

To him succeeded another Henry Percy, a feudal baron like his predecessors, who fought at Crécy during his father’s lifetime; and to him another Henry, who was made earl of Northumberland at the coronation of Richard II. It may be remarked incidentally that the succession of the name of Henry in this family is altogether extraor- dinary. For three generations before this first earl of

Northumberland, and for five different descents after him (making altogether a period of 238 years), the head of the house invariably was a Henry. Such a remarkable con- tinuance of a single Christian name would have been less surprising in later and more peaceful times, when we might reasonably have expected the eldest born to succeed his father quietly through many generations. But the first four earls of this family were all slain in battle or in civil tumult, and the heir-apparent of the first, a Henry like the rest, was cut off in the same way during his father’s lifetime. Was it that the incessant activity due to Border raids and moonlight expeditions created in these men a physical vigour of constitution which protected them to a large extent against disease and infirmity ? .

The first earl of Northumberland, certainly, had led a busy life enough, not only on the Borders but elsewhere. He had been in the French wars of Edward III. ; he had been at times a warden of the marches against Scotland, or a commissioner to treat for peace with that country. He had ravaged the lands of the earl of Dunbar and had won Berwick. Powerful in the south as well as in the north, he was the Lord Henry Percy who protected Wickliffe when cited before the archbishop at St Paul’s. As earl of

Northumberland he exhibited his independence of Richard II. in a way characteristic of a northern baron. Sent for to court, he neglected to come, was disgraced and banished, and thereupon fled to Scotland. He repaired to Henry of Lancaster soon after his landing at Ravenspur, and helped treacherously to decoy Richard II. into his hands at Conway. Naturally he received great honour from Henry after he had become king. He was made constable of England for life, and received a gift of the Isle of Man and a number of important offices in Cheshire, Wales, and the borders of Scotland. He was even appointed one of the commissioners for the marriage of the king's daughter Blanche with Louis, duke of Bavaria ; and for the first three years of the reign both he and his family seemed faithful to the new dynasty which they had greatly helped to establish. In 1402 he and his brave son Henry, the celebrated Hotspur, won the battle of Homildon Hill and took the earl of Douglas prisoner. But immediately afterwards Harry Hotspur, whose character is so well known through Shakespeare's play of Henry the Fourth, resenting the king's injustice to his brother-in-law, Sir

Edmund Mortimer, who had been taken prisoner by the.

Welsh, and whom Henry, for reasons of policy, declined to ransom, entered into a league with Owen Glendower, in whose custody Mortimer was, for a combined war against the king.

The whole family of the Percies seem to have felt that their services to Henry of Lancaster were ill requited. The earl himself joined the conspiracy. His brother Thomas Perey, earl of Worcester (so created by Richard IL.), stood also to all appearance in high favour with the king, who had entrusted him with the care of his son Henry, prince of Wales. But he suddenly left the court and joined his nephew in the north, both sending forth proclamations and raising the country. The rebellion was crushed in the battle of Shrewsbury (1403), in which Hotspur was slain, and the earl of Worcester was beheaded just after the fight, while Northumberland was marching southwards to join with them. Having taken no active part in the movement, the earl pretended that he had really been going to assist the king, and had wished to avert hostilities. He after- wards went peaceably to the king at York, and was placed in custody; but such was his power and influence that next year he was acquitted of treason in full parliament, and

had all his honours and possessions restored to him. All confidence, however, between him and the king was at an end, and in 1405 he joined the insurrection of Arch-

bishop Scrope, who, after being beheaded as a rebel, was venerated as a martyr over the whole north of England. Then he fled to Scotland, afterwards to Wales, and in the end, returning to his own country, perished in a new rebellion at Bramhani Moor.

The title and estates were thus forfeited. But, by an act no less gracious than politic, Henry V. restored them to this earl's grandson, then a prisoner with the Scots, whose liberation he had no difficulty in procuring from the duke of Albany during the time of James I.'s captivity. From that day the loyalty of the family to the house of Lancaster was steadfast and undeviating. The second earl died fighting for Henry VI. at the first battle of St Albans in 1455; the third was slain in the bloody field of Towton (1461) ; the fourth was killed in quelling an insurrection in the time of Henry VII. So strong was the Lancastrian feeling of the family that even Sir Ralph Percy, a brother of the earl who fell at Towton, though he had actually submitted once to Edward IV., turned again, and when he fell at Hedgley Moor consoled himself with the thought that he had, as he phrased it, 'saved the bird in his bosom."

No wonder, then, that in Edward IV.'s days the title and estates of the family were for a time taken away and given to Lord Montagu, brother of Warwick the king- maker. But the north was so accustomed to the rule of the Percies that in a few years Edward saw the necessity of restoring them, and did so even at the cost of alienating still further the powerful family of the Nevilles, who were then already on the point of rebellion.

A crisis occurred in the fortunes of the family in the reign of Henry VIII. on the death of the sixth earl, whose two brothers, much against his will, had taken part in the great insurrection called the "Pilgrimage of Grace." A thriftless man, of whom it is recorded that in his youth he was smitten with the charms of Anne Boleyn, but was forced to give her up and marry a woman he did not love, he died childless, after selling many of the family

estates and granting the others to the king. The title was forfeited, and was granted by Edward VI. to the ambitious Dudley, earl of Warwick, who was attainted in the succeeding reign. It was restored in the days of Queen Elizabeth to Thomas Perey, who, being a staunch Catholic, was one of the three earls who took the lead in the celebrated " Rising in the North," and was beheaded at York. His brother Henry, who succeeded him, was no less unhappy. Involved in Throgmorton's conspiracy, he was committed to the Tower, and was supposed to have shot himself in bed with a pistol found beside him; but there were grave suspicions that it had been discharged by another hand. His son, the next earl, suffered like his two predecessors for his attachment to the religion of his forefathers. The crown lawyers sought in vain to implicate him in the Gunpowder Plot ; but he was imprisoned for fifteen years in the Tower and compelled to pay a fine of £30,000. The son who next succeeded was a Parliamentary general in the Civil War. At length, in 1670, the male line of this illustrious family became extinct, just five hundred years after the marriage of Agnes de Percy with J osceline of Louvain,

Not one of the English noble houses is so distinguished as the Percies throughout the whole range of English history. It is remarkable alike for its long unbroken line, its high achievements, its general culture of arts and of letters. Pre-eminent also, as remarked by Sir Harris Nicolas, for its alliances among the peerage, it continues to this day, though represented once more by a female branch. The present dukedom of Northumberland was created in 1766 in the family of Smithson, who assumed. the name of Percy and have borne it ever since. Sir Hugh Smithson, who became the first duke, married a granddaughter of a daughter of the last earl. (3. GA.)

524

PERCY, Tuomas (1729-1811), bishop of Dromore, the editor of the Percy Reliques, was born at Bridgnorth 13th April 1729 and baptized at St Leonard's Church 29th April. His father, Arthur Lowe Percy, a grocer by trade, lived in a large house at the bottom of the street called "The Cartway," and acquired sufficient means to send his son, who had received the rudiments of his education at Bridgnorth grammar-school, to Christ Church, Oxford, in 1746. He graduated in 1750 and proceeded M.A. in

1753. In the latter year he was appointed to the vicarage of Easton Maudit, Northamptonshire, and three years later instituted to the rectory of Wilby in the same county, benefices which he retained until 1782. On the 24th of April 1759 Percy was married at Desborough, N orth- amptonshire, to Anne, daughter of Barton Gutteridge. During his residence in the delightful but secluded neigh- bourhood of Easton Maudit most of the literary work for which he is now remembered—including the Relsqgues— was completed. When his name became famous through his publications he complied with the request of the duke and duchess of Northumberland that he would reside with them as their domestic chaplain, and was tempted into the belief that he belonged to the illustrious house of Percy. Through this connexion he became dean of Carlisle in 1778 and bishop of Dromore in Ireland in 1782, from which date he was a constant resident in his adopted country. His wife predeceased him at Dromore Palace, 30th December 1806 ; the good bishop, blind but otherwise in sound health, lived until 30th September 1811 ; both of them were buried in the transept which he added to Dromore Cathedral.

For many years Dr Percy enthusiastically laboured in the fields of literature. He translated the Song of Solomon and published a key to the New Testament, a work often reprinted; he edited poetry from the Icelandic language and translated Mallet's Northern Antt- quities. His reprint of The Houschold Book of the Earl of Northum- berland in 1512 is of the greatest value for the illustrations of domestic life in England at that period. But all of these works are of little estimation when compared with the Reliques of Ancient finglish Poetry, a publication which has entranced successive gen- erations of schoolboys and students since its first appearance in February 1765. It was based on an old manuscript collection of poetry, but, unfortunately for the editor's peace of mind, it was modernized in style, a circumstance which exposed him to the sneers and suspicions of Ritson. The work as originally issued by Percy has been re-edited by many British antiquaries, whilst selec- tions have been issued for boys and girls, and the manuscript on which he worked has been edited in its complete form by J. W. Hales and F. J. Furnivall. The bishop was possessed of great poetic feeling. His ballad of ''The Hermit of Warkworth " was 'too simple for the austere taste of Dr Johnson, but it has always and deservedly been popular; and his song now generally known as 'OQ Nanny, wilt thou gang wi' me?"

is a universal favourite, from its own merits as well as from the musical setting of an Irishman called Thomas Carter. The greater part of the seventh volume of Nichols's Zllustrations of the Literary History of the 18th Century is filled with Bishop Percy's correspondence.

PERDICCAS, son of Orontes, a distinguished Mace- donian general under Philip and Alexander the Great, and regent of the empire from the death of the latter till he perished in a mutiny in 321 B.c. See MacEDonraN Empire, vol. xv. p. 142, and Persia, infra, pro)

The same name was borne by three kings of Macedonia : Perpiccas I., whom Herodotus calls the founder of the monarchy of Macedon; Perpiccas II., the enemy of Athens in the Peloponnesian War (died c. 414 B.c.); and PERDiccas III. (died 359 3.c.).

PEREKOP, a town of European Russia, in the Crimea, 60 miles south-east of Kherson on the isthmus which con- nects the peninsula with the continent, and, as its name (perekop, & cutting) indicates, commanding the once de- fensive ditch and dyke which cross from the Black Sea to the Sivash lagoon. It was formerly an important place, with a great transit trade in salt (obtained from the great salt lakes of the immediate neighbourhood), which occupied

so large a place in popular estimation that the Tatars of the Crimea were usually styled the "Perekop horde" and their khans the ‘‘ Perekop khans." Since the opening of the railway route to the Crimea it has greatly declined. In 1865 the population of Perekop and its mercantile suburb (Armyanskii Bazar, 3 miles to the south) was only 4927, and the number has slightly decreased since,

In ancient times the isthmus was crossed (about 14 miles south of the present town) by a ditch which gave the name of Taphros to a Greek settlement. This line of defence having fallen into decay, a fort was erccted and a new ditch and dyke constructed in the 15th century by Mengli Girai

and his son and successor Sahib Girai. The fort, known as Kapu or Or-Kapi, became the nucleus of the town. In 1736 Perekop was captured by Field-Marshal Mimnich, and in 1738 by Field-Marshal Lascy, who blew up the fort and de- stroyed a great part of the dyke. In 1754 the fort was rebuilt by Krim Girai ; but the Greek and Armenian inhabitants of Perekop preferred to form a new scttlement at Armyanskii Bazar (Armenian Market). Captured by the Russians in 1771, the town passed into Russian possession with the rest of the Crimea in 1783.

PEREYASLAFF, a town of European Russia, in the Poltava government, 175 miles west-north-west of Poltava, at the junction of the Trubezh and the Alta, which reach the Dnieper 5 miles lower down at the town's port, the village of Andrushi. Besides the town proper there are three considerable suburbs. Though founded in 993 (by Vladimir Svyatoslavitch in memory of his signal success over the Petchenegs), Pereyaslaff has now few remains of antiquity ; while the original erection of some of the churches goes back for many hundred years (that of the Assumption, e.g., to 1010), the actual buildings are not older than the 17th century. The town has trade in grain, salt, cattle, and horses, and some manufactures —tallow, wax, tobacco, &c. The population was 10,835 in 1865 and 9300 in 1870.

From 1054 Pereyaslaff was the chief town of a principality which passed from one prince to another of the Mstislavitches, Vladimir- ovitches, and Olgovitches. Asa southcrn outpost it often figures in the 11th, 12th, and 18th centuries; in later times it was one of the great centres of the Cossack movement; and in 1628 the neighbourhood of the town was the scene of the extermination of the Polish forces known as "Taras's Night." It was by the treaty of Percyaslaff that in 1654 Bogdan Khmyelnitzkii and the Cossacks

acknowledged the supremacy of Alexis. At that time the town contained from 25,000 to 30,000 inhabitants.

PEREYASLAVL, or Pernstavn (called Zalyesskii, or ''Beyond the Forest," to distinguish it from the older town in Poltava after which it was named), is one of the earliest and most interesting cities in north-west Russia, situated in Vladimir government, 87 miles east of Moscow on the road to Yaroslavl, and on both banks of the Trubezh near its entrance into Lake Pleshtcheevo. Pereyaslavl was formerly remarkable for the number and importance of its

ecclesiastical foundations (there were in 1764 no fewer than eleven monasteries in the town and neighbourhood, and the churches about the same period numbered thirty- seven), Among those still standing are the 12th-century cathedral of the Transfiguration (with ancient wall-paint- ings and the graves of Demetrius, son of Alexander Nev- skii, and other princes), and the church of the Birth of John the Baptist, founded by Euphrosyne, wife of Demetrius Donskii, in the close of the 14th century. It is by its extensive cotton manufactures (the spinning factory alone employing 1700 hands and producing to the annual value of £195,000) that Pereyaslavl is now best known through- out Russia; and it also manufactures linen, leather, and tobacco. The fisheries on the lake (20 square miles in extent and 175 feet deep) have long been of great value. The population was 6253 in 1864, 7210 in 1870, and 8700 in 1880.

Founded in 1152 by Yurgii (George) Vladimirovitch Dolgoruki, prince of Suzdal, Pereyaslavl soon began to play a considerable part in the history of the country. From 1195 till 1302 it had

princes of its own; and the princes of Moscow, to whom it was then bequeathed, kept it (apart from some temporary alienations

in the 14th century) as part of their patrimony throughout the 15th and 16th centuries. The town enjoyed a great many privi- leges, and in return was bound to furnish the court with fish. Its earthen walls, from 20 to 50 feet in height and 7260 feet in circuit, remained till 1759. Lake Pleshtcheevo was the scene of Peter the Great’s first attempts at creating a fleet.

PEREZ, Antonio (c. 1540-1611), for some years the favourite minister of Philip IT. of Spain and afterwards for many more the object of his unrelenting hostility, was by birth an Aragonese. His reputed father, Gonzalo Perez, an ecclesiastic, has some place in history as having been secretary both to Charles V. and to Philip IL. and in litera- ture as author of a Spanish translation of the Odyssey (La Ulyxea de Homero, Antwerp, 1556). Antonio Perez, who was legitimated by an imperial diploma issued at Valladolid in 1542, was, however, believed by many to be in reality the son of the well-known Ruy Gomez, prince of Eboli, to whom, on the

completion of a liberal education at home and abroad, he appears at least to have owed his first introduction to a diplomatic career. In 1567 he became one of the secretaries of state, receiving also about the same time the lucrative appointment of protonotary of Sicily, and in 1573 the death of Ruy Gomez himself made room for Perez's promotion to be head of the ''despacho uni- versal," or private bureau, from which Philip attempted to govern by assiduous correspondence the affairs of his vast dominions. Another of the king's secretaries at this time, though in a less confidential relation, was a friend and contemporary of Perez, named Juan de Escovedo, who, however, after the fall of Tunis in 1574, was sent off to supersede Juan de Soto as secretary and adviser of Don John of Austria, thus leaving Perez without a rival. Some time after Don John's appointment to the governorship of the Netherlands Perez accidentally became cognizant of his inconveniently ambitious "empresa de Inglaterra," in which he was to rescue Mary queen of Scots, marry her, and so ascend the throne of England. This secret scheme the faithful secretary at once carried to Philip, who char-

acteristically resolved to meet it by quietly removing his.

brother's aider and abettor. With the king's full cognizance, accordingly, Perez, after several unsuccessful attempts to poison Escovedo, succeeded in procuring his assassination in a street of Madrid on 31st March 1578. The imme- diate effect was to raise Perez higher than ever in the royal confidence and favour, but, wary though the secretary had been, he had not succeeded in obliterating all trace of his connexion with the crime, and very soon a prosecution was set on foot by the representatives of the murdered man. For a time Philip was both willing and able to protect his accomplice, but ultimately he appears to have listened to those who, whether truly or falsely, were con- tinually suggesting that Perez had had motives of his own, arising out of his relations with the princess of Eboh, for compassing the assassination of Don John's secretary ; be this as it may, from trying to screen Perez the king came to be the secret instigator of those who sought his ruin. The process, as such matters often are in Spain, was a slow one, and it was not until 1589 that Perez, after more than one arrest and imprisonment on a variety of charges, seemed on the eve of being convicted and condemned as the murderer of Escovedo. At this juncture he succeeded

in making his escape from prison in Castile into Aragon, where, under the ancient “fueros” of the kingdom he could claim a public trial in open court, and so bring into requisition the documentary evidence he possessed of the king’s complicity in the deed. This did not suit Philip, who, although he instituted a process in the supreme tri bunal of Aragon, speedily abandoned it and caused Perez to be attacked from another side, the charge of heresy being now preferred, arising out of certain reckless and even blasphemous expressions Perez had used in connexion with

his troubles in Castile. But all attempts to remove the accused from the civil prison in Saragossa to that of the Inquisition raised popular tumults, which in the end led to Perez s escape across the Pyrenees, but unfortunately also furnished Philip with a pretext for sending an army into Aragon and suppressing the ancient “fueros” altogether (1591). From the court of Catherine de Bourbon, at Pau, where he was well received, Perez passed to that of Henry IV. of France, and both there and in England his talents and diplomatic experience, as well as his well-grounded enmity to Philip, secured him much popularity. While in England he became the “intimate coach-companion and bed-companion ” of Francis Bacon, and was also much in the society of the earl of Essex. The peace of Vervins in 1598 greatly reduced his apparent importance abroad, and Perez now tried to obtain the pardon of Philip IIL, that he might return to his native country. His efforts, how- ever, proved vain, and he died in comparative obscurity in Paris on 3d Noveniber 1611. Some years afterwards his wife and family were relieved from the ban of the Inquisi- tion, under which, along with himself, they had been laid.

Perez’s earliest publication was a small quarto, dedicated to the earl of Essex, written and apparently printed in England about 1594, entitled Pedazos de Historia, and professedly published at Leon. A Dutch translation appeared in 1594, and in 1598 he pub- lished his Relaciones, including the Memorial del Hecho de su Causa, drawn up in 1590, and many of his letters. The Paris edition is dedicated to Henry IV., but apparently another issue was inscribed to the pope. Both dedications are given in the fullest reprint, that of Geneva (1654), which includes a

collection of ‘‘aphorisms” culled from the author’s writings. The literary performances of Perez owe their importance almost exclusively to the fascination of his personal narrative, which, however, gives no great impres- sion of simplicity and straightforwardness ; the letters, though admittedly models of idiomatic Castilian, are somewhat tedious reading. Much has recently been done, by Mignet (Antonio Perez et Philippe IT., 1845, 4th ed., 1874) and by Froude (‘‘ An Unsolved Historical Riddle,” Nineteenth Cent., 1883) among others, towards the elucidation of various difficult points in Perez’s somewhat per- plexing story.

PERFUMERY is the art of manipulating odoriferous substances for the gratification of the sense of smell. Perfumes may be divided into two classes, the first of which includes all primitive or simple odoriferous bodies derived from the animal or vegetable kingdom, as well as the definite chemical compounds specially manufactured, while the second comprises the various “bouquets” or ‘“‘mélanges” made by blending two or more of the fore- going in varying proportions,—toilet powders, dentufrices, sachets, and the like. To the former class belong (1) the animal products, ambergris, castor, civet, musk ; (2) essential oils (more properly called attars), mostly procured by distillation ; (3) the philicome butters or oils, which are either solid or liquid fats charged with odours by the processes of inflowering or maceration ; (4) the odori- ferous gum-resins or balsams which exude naturally or from wounds in the trunks of various trees and shrubs, such as benzoin, opoponax, peru, tolu, storax, inyrth ; (5) a few chemical bodies, similar in odour to or identical in odoriferous active principle with certain plants, ¢.g., nitro- benzol, called attar of mirbane or false almond, vanillin or methyl-protocatechuic aldehyde, coumarin or coumaric anhydride, and a few others. Ammonia and acetic acid are used respectively as smelling salts and in the prepara- tion of aromatic vinegar, but can scarcely be considered as perfumes. The second class contains the endless combina- tion of tinctures for scenting the handkerchief sold under fancy names which may or may not afford a clue to their

OFES, Als be 92 66 Pr) ‘composition, such as “‘comédie francaise,” ‘eau de senteur,

“eau de Cologne,” ‘“lavendre ambrée,” ‘‘blumengeist.” These are sometimes made upon a quasi-scientific basis, namely, that of the odophone or gamut of odours of the late Dr Septimus Piesse. Their numbers may be almost

infinite; one large firm in London is known to manufacture several hundreds.

Sources and Commercial Values.—For the sources of the various animal perfumes the reader is referred to the articles AmBrrGRis! (vol. i. p. 660), Buaver? (vol. ili. p. 476), CrvEr? (vol. v. p. 796), and Musx* (vol. xvii. p. 106). The sources of the attars are the different parts of the plants which yield them,—the wood (lign aloe, santal, cedar), the bark (cinnamon, cascarilla), the leaves (patch- ouli, bay, thyme), the flowers (rose, lavender, orange- blossom), the fruit (nutmeg, citron), or the seeds (caraway, almond). Some plants yield more than one, such as lemon and bergamot. They are mostly obtained by distilling with water that part of the plant in which they are con- tained ; but some few, as those from the rind of bergamot (from Citrus bergamia), lemon (citron zeste, from C. Limonum), lime (C. Limetta), by “expression.” The outer layer of the cortex is rasped off from the unripe fruits, the raspings placed in a canvas bag, and squeezed in a scréw or hydraulic press. The attars so obtained are separated from the admixed water by a tap-funnel, and are then filtered (see Orns, EssENTIAL, vol. xvii. p. 748). Certain flowers, such as jasmine, tuberose, violet, cassia, either do not yield their attars by distillation at all, or do it so sparingly as not to admit of its collection for commercial purposes ; and sometimes the attar, as in the case of orange (neroli), has an odour quite different from that of the fresh blossoms. In these cases the odours are secured by the processes of inflowering (enfleurage), or by maceration. Both depend upon the remarkable property which fats and oils possess of absorbing odours. ‘The former process has already been described in the article JASMINE (vol. xiii. p. 595). Maceration consists in soaking the flowers in heated fat; in due time they are strained off and re- placed by fresh ones, as in the enfleurage process. The whole of the necessary meltings and heatings of the per- fumed greases are effected by means of

water-baths, whereby the temperature is kept from rising too high. For the manufacture of perfumes for the handkerchief the greases now known as pomades, butters, or philocomes are treated with rectified spirit of wine 60° overproof, 7.¢., containing as much as 95 per cent. of absolute alcohol by volume, which practically completely abstracts the odour.

The gum-resins have been employed as perfumes from the earliest ages ; manyare referred to in the Old Testament ; see INCENSE (vol. xii. p. 718) and FRANKINCENSE (vol. ix.

“p. 709). They are largely used in the manufacture of perfumes, both for burning as pastilles, ribbon of Bruges, incenses, &c., and in tinctures, to which they impart their characteristic odours, affording, at the same time, a certain fixity to other perfumes of a more fleeting nature when mixed with them. The chemical perfumes are relatively new. Vanillin, the odoriferous principle of vanilla (V. planifolia), was first artificially prepared by Tielman and Hermann in Germany, who obtained it from the sap of certain kinds of fir, and established its composition. Their research was afterwards remarkably verified by Dr C. R. Alder Wright, who prepared it from crude opium. It is a pale straw-yellow crystalline substance, smelling exactly like vanilla, and said to be forty times stronger. Its value commercially is about 23s. per oz. Coumarin, the odori- ferous principle of Tonquin beans (Dipterix odorata), is also artificially prepared. In appearance it resembles vanillin, and is valued at 9s. per oz. Some similar bodies with faney names, such as “‘hemerocalle,” ‘ bromelia,”

aubépine,” are in the market, but have scarcely yet found

: The present (1884) value of ambergris is about 90s. per oz. he present value of eastoreum is about 32s. per ib.

3 Its price is about 9s. per oz.

- Average value about £5 per oz.

PHEe FUNDY

their way into the perfume manufactory. Nitro-benzol, before mentioned, is employed only for imparting an almond-like odour to inferior soaps. The various com- pound ethers called artificial fruit essences, from their resemblance to the odours of certain fruits (jargonelle pear, pine-apple, plum, &c.), find no place in perfumery, though largely used in confectionery for flavouring.

As before stated, the bouquets constituting the second class of perfumes are but alcoholic solutions, 7.¢., tinctures of some of the foregoing blended together in various pro- portions, of which the following well-known recipes are

examples :— “ Rondeletia.” “ Bouquet du Roi.” Heats (Vamilllla. ...2saueevees 2 imts.| Hak. Meroli. .ss…..220 2 pints. Pp uilUisIMR cpaneendaanouces ae: spa MMIROSG: 35, access eee 2 sO letitts. .cacacr ce: yy.) ppm MAU cae be ace t » Attargose …q2c.c.5.-enes 1 oz. | sy, Vemillilat <2. hae k o4 », Mitcham Lavender! ,, i Aste DIaNOSC te aysc ncn oscuaanens 1 dram.

The Odophone.—The late Dr Septimus Piesse endeavoured to show that a certain scale or gamut cxisted amongst odours as amongst sounds, taking the sharp smells to correspond with high notes and the heavy smells with low. He illustrated the idea by classifying some fifty odours in this manner, making each to corre- spond with a certain note, one-half in each clef, and extending above and below the lines. For example, treble clef note E (4th space) corresponds with Portugal (orange), note D (1st space below clef) with violet, note F (4th space above clef) with ambergris. It is readily noticed in practice that ambergris is much sharper in smell (higher) than violet, while Portugal is intermediate. He asserted that properly to constitute a bouquet the odours to be taken should correspond in the gamut like the notes of a musical chord,—one false note among the odours as among the music destroying the harmony. Thus on his odophone, santal, geranium, acacia, orange-flower, camphor, corresponding with C (bass 2d line below), C (bass 2d space), E (treble ist line), G (treble 2d line), C (treble 3d space), constitute the bouquet of chord C.

Other Branches of Perfuwmery.—¥or the preparation of scented soaps two methods are in use; both start with a basis either of fine yellow soap (which

owes its odour and colour to the presence of resin), or of curd soap (which is hard, white, and odourless, and is prepared without resin), In one process the soap is melted by super- heated steam, and while still hot and semi-filuid mixed by means of

.a T-shaped stirrer of wood with iron cross-bar, technically called a

“crutch,” with the attars and colouring matter. It is then removed from the melting pan to a rectangular iron mould or box, the sides of which can be removed by unscrewing the tie-rods which hold them in position ; when cold the mass is cut into slabs and bars with a thin brass wire. In the other or cold process the soap is first cut into chips or shavings by a plane or “chipping machine,” then the colouring matters are added and thoroughly incorporated _ by passing the soap between granite rollers driven by steam-power ; the tinted soap emerges in a continuous sheet but little thicker than paper. ‘The attars are then added, and after standing for about twelve hours the soap is again sent through the rolling machine. It is next transferred to a bar-forming machine, which consists of an Archimedean screw with tapering thread revolving in a box; the soap in sheets is roughly squeezed through a hopper over the widest threads of the screw and is forced, as this revolves, towards the distant end of the box, to an opening of the required size, through which it emerges in a continuous bar almost as hard as wood. Soap thus worked contains less than 10 per cent. of water; that prepared by melting contains 20 and even 30 percent. The amount of attars added depends upon the nature of the perfume, and amounts usually to about 7 or 8 percent. The finest soaps are always manufactured by the cold process. Toilet powders are of various sorts. They consist of rice-starch or wheat-starch, with powdered orris-root in varying proportions, and with or without the addition of oxide of zinc, oxide of bismuth, or French chalk. The constituent powders, after the addition of the attars, are thoroughly incorporated aud mixed by sifting through a fine sieve. Violet powder for the nursery should consist eutirely of powdered violet root (Iris florentina), from the odour of which the powder is named. It is of a yellowish tint, soft, and pleasant to the touch. The white comnion so-called “violet powders” consist of starch only scented with attar of bergamot, and are in every seuse inferior. Tooth powders consist for the most part of mixtures of powdered orris-root with precipitated chalk, and some other con- stituent destined to

particularize it as to properties or flavour, such as charcoal, finely-pulverized pumice, quassia, sugar, camphor, &c. The perfume of the contained orris-root is modified, if required, by the addition of a little of some attar. Tooth pastes are not much in vogue ; they are formed of the same constituents as the powders, and are worked into a paste by the addition of a little honey or glucose-

syrup, which substances are usually believed ultimately to have an injurious effect on the teeth. Perfume sachets consist either of a powder composed of a mixture of vanilla, musk, Tonquin beans, &c., one or other predominating as required, contained in an ornamental silk sac ; or of some of the foregoing substances spread upon card or chamois leather or flannel after being made into a paste with mucilage and a little glycerin. When dry the card so prepared is daintily covered with various party -coloured silks for sale. Where the ingredients employed in their manufacture are of good quality these cards, known as “peau d’Espagne”’ sachets, retain their odour unimpaired for years.

Aduiterations.—There is, as might be expected, considerable scope for the adulteration of the ‘‘ matieres premiéres” employed in perfumery, and it is to be stated with regret that many unscrupulous dealers avail themselves of the facilities offered for this dishonourable practice. Thus, in the case of musk, the “ pods” are frequently found to be partially emptied of the grain, which has becn replaced by hide or skin, while the weight has been increased by the introduction of lead, &c. In other instances the fraud consists in the admixture of refuse grain, from which the odour has. been exhausted with spirit, with dried blood, and similar substances, whilst pungency is secured by the addition of carbonate of ammonia. Attar of rose is diluted down with attar of Palma rosa, a variety of geranium of only a quarter or a fifth of the value. The main adulterant of all the attars, however, is castor oil. This is a bland neutral body, practically odourless, and completely soluble in alcohol ; it therefore presents all the requisites for the purpose. Its detection is difficult even by chemical analysis, which is obviously inapplicable in most instances ; the safeguard of the purchaser is the knowledge resulting from experience.

Statistics.—In Europe, flower-farming for perfumery purposes is almost exclusively confined to that triangular portion of the valley of the Var (France) which has Grasse for its apex and the Mediter- ranean shore between Nice and Cannes for its base, with an area of about 115,000 English acres. Itis here that the jasmine, tuberose, cassia, rose, and violet grow to such perfection, and that the processes of enfleurage and maceration are commercially worked. Subjoined is an estimate! of the weight of flowers annually employed.

Tons. Harvest Time.

Orange blossoms …..... 1860 20th April to 3lst May.

LB&S s6@o00MengonOobe ae 930 May. ROMS sss cer cde cietens 147 15th January to 15th April. Bee PUIVC a8 fers cislcte\sysiets ateteiee 147 20th July to 10th October. MIMIGEROSE .... 0.50 60-5 05. 74 August, September, and October. ‘CLS 2 eC eee | 30 October, November, and December. BRAPEONULDL, (5)55a(010\ eressiceiemv aver” * { 15 February and March.

Great praise is due to the pioneers of flower-farming in the British colonies of South Africa and Australia, and especially to Colonel Talbot in Jamaica, whose efforts in this direction bid fair to meet with complete commercial success.

The attars from peppermint (Afentha Piperita), thyme (T. vul- garis), and lavender (Lavandula vera), the finest in the world, are distilled from plants grown in the neighbourhood of Mitcham in Surrey. It is estimated that between 8000 and 10,000 ounces of musk are annually imported from all sources, while the quantity of aleohol employed in the manufacture of perfumes is calculated

to exceed 60,000 gallons. See Piesse’s Art of Perfumery, 4th ed., 1880. (C. H. P.)

PERGAMUM, an important city of Teuthrania, a dis- trict in Mysia; it is usually named Iépyapov by Greek writers, but Ptolemy has the form Ilépyapos. The name, which is related to the German burg, is appropriate to

the situation on a lofty isolated hill in the broad and fertile valley of the Caicus, about 120 stadia, less than 15 miles, from its mouth. According to the belief of its inhabitants, the town was founded by Arcadian colonists, led by Tele- phus, son of Heracles. Auge, the mother of Telephus, was priestess of Athena Alea at Tegea, and daughter of Aleus ; fleeing from Tegea, she became the wife of Teuthras, the eponymous king of Teuthrania, and her son Telephus succeeded him. Athena Polias was the patron-goddess of Pergamum, and the legend combines the ethnological record of the connexion claimed between Arcadia and Pergamum with the usual belief that the hero of the city was son of its guardian deity, or at least of the priestess who represented her. Nothing more is recorded of the city till the time of Xenophon, when it was a small fortified town on the summit of the hill. Its importance began under

1 Kindly furnished by M. Bruno Court, head of the well-known house of Notre Dame des Fleurs of Grasse.

Lysimachus, who deposited his treasures, 9000 talents, in this strong fortress under the charge of a eunuch Phil- eterus of Tium. In 283 B.c. Phileterus rebelled, Lysi- machus died without being able to put down the revolt, and Pergamum became the capital of a little principality, Partly by clever diplomacy, partly through the troubles caused by the Gaulish invasion and by the dissensions among the rival kings, Philetzerus contrived to keep on good terms with his neighbours on all sides (283-263 B.c.). His nephew Eumenes (263-241) succeeded him, increased his power, and even defeated Antiochus of Syria in a pitched battle near Sardis. His successor Attalus I. (241- 197) won a great battle over the Gauls, and assumed the title of king. The other Greek kings who aimed at power in Asia Minor were his natural enemies. On the other hand, the influence of the Romans was beginning to make itself felt in the East. Attalus perceived the advantage of their alliance against his Greek rivals, connected himself with them from the first, and shared in their continuous success. Under the reign of Attalus Pergamum became the capital of a considerable territory and a centre of art and regal magnificence. Sculptors were attracted by the wealth of the state and the king’s desire to celebrate his victories by monuments of

art, and thus arose the so-called "'Pergamenian school" in sculpture. The Pergamenian kings appear to have been far more truly Hellenic, and to have admitted far less of the '' barbarian" Oriental char- acter to their court, than the other Hellenistic sovereigns, whose habits and surroundings were those of Eastern sultans with a thin surface-gloss of Greek manners. We hear more of the munificence of Attalus towards Athens, then the educational centre of Greece, than to his own capital. The splendour of Pergamum was at its height under Eumenes II. (197-159). He continued true to the Romans during their wars with Antiochus and Perseus, and his kingdom spread over the greater part of western Asia Minor, including Mysia, Lydia, great part of Phrygia and Caria. To celebrate the great achievement of his race, the defeat of the barbarian Gauls, he built in the agora a vast altar to Zeus Soter, adorned with sculptures and especially with a gigantic frieze, in which the symbolic theme of the defeat of the barbarian giants by the gods was treated on such a scale, and with such wealth of de- tail and perfection of technical skill, as made the monu- ment one of the marvels of the ancient world. He devoted great care to the improvement and embellishment of the city. It is not certain when the old Doric temple of Athena Polias and Nicephorus on the Acropolis was re- placed by a more magnificent marble temple, but Eumenes planted a grove in the Nicephorion, the sacred precinct of the goddess, and established libraries and other great works in the city. He left an infant son, Attalus (IIL), and a brother, Attalus II. (Philadelphus), who ruled 159-138, and was succeeded by his nephew, Attalus ITI. (Philometor). The latter died in 133, and bequeathed his kingdom to the Romans, who erected it into a province under the name of Asia. Pergamum continued to rank, with Ephesus and Smyrna, as one of the three great cities of the province, and the devotion of its former kings to the Roman cause was continued by its citizens, who erected on the acropolis a magnificent temple to Augustus. It was the seat of a conventus, including the cities of the Caicus valley and some of those in the northern part of the Hermus valley. Under the Roman empire Pergamum was one of the chief seats of the worship of Asclepius ; invalids came from dis- tant parts of the country to ask advice from the god and his priests. The temple and the curative establishment of the god were situated outside the city. Pergamum was one of the early seats of Christianity, and one of the seven churches enumerated in the Revelation was situated

there. Two tributaries of the Caicus, named Selinus and Cetius, flowed through or near the city. The ancient

name is still preserved under the form “ Bergamo.”

The excavations conducted by the Prussian Government at Per- gamum under the direction of Humann and Bohn have disclosed many of the buildings with which the acropolis was adorned, the temples of Athena and Augustus, the Stoa, &c., have recovered great part of the frieze on the altar of Zeus, and have given materials of every kind for the elucidation of Pergamenian history and Greek antiquities generally, which it will take years to classify and place before the public (see the preliminary reports published by Conze, Bohn, and Humann).

PERGOLESI (or PrrconesE), Giovanni Batrista (1710-1736), Italian musical composer, was born at Jesi, Ancona, 3d January 1710, and educated at Naples in the Conservatorio dei Poveri di Gesu Cristo, where he studied the violin under Domenico de Matteis, and coun- terpoint under Gaetano Greco, Durante, and Francesco Feo. While learning all he could from these great teachers he struck out from the very first a style of his own, and brought it prominently forward in his earliest known composition, an oratorio, called La Conversione di S. Guglielmo, performed in the church of 8. Agnello in 1731, in which year he also produced his first opera, Sallustia, at the Teatro Fiorentino. After receiving fur- ther instruction from Vinci he produced another opera, Recimiro, which failed lamentably. This disappointment led him to devote his chief attention to church music; and his next great works—two masses, one for two and the other for four choirs, with double orchestra—established his reputation as a genius of the highest order, and proved that he was at least as great in his newly-adopted style as in his dramatic pieces. Nevertheless, the greatest success that he was ever destined to attain was reserved for his celebrated intermezzo!—or, as we should now call it, operetta —La Serva Padrona, This delightful work, fairly success- ful on the occasion of its first production in 1731 or 1733, became after Pergolesi’s death a recognized favourite at every theatre of importance in Europe. In 1746 it found its way to Paris, and had a long run at the Théatre Italien, followed in 1752 by an equally successful one at the

Académie. Two years later it was translated into French, and ran for 150 successive nights. As late as 1867 it was revived in this form at the Opéra Comique; and in 1873 it was revived in London at the Royalty Theatre. The libretto by Nelli is unusually bright and sparkling; and so fresh is the music that it still sounds as if composed but yesterday. In this characteristic, indeed, lies the secret of its extraordinary success, for the scale on which it is written is of the smallest imaginable dimensions. The dramatis persone consist of three characters only, one of them being mute, and the orchestra is limited entirely to the stringed band, unrelieved by a single wind instrument. But the fire of genius breathes in every bar, and the whole work has the character of a continuous inspiration.

In 1734 Pergolesi was appointed maestro di cappella at Loreto. Soon after this his health began to fail rapidly, but he worked on incessantly to the end. His last com- positions were a cantata for a single voice, Orfeo ed Huri- dice; a lovely Salve Regina, also for a singlé voice; and his famous Stabat Mater, for two female voices. For this last-named work—the best known of all his sacred com- positions—he received in advance ten ducats (£1 15s.), and thought the price enormous. He was barely able to finish it before his death, which took place at Pozzuoli, 16th March 1736.

Pergolesi's works comprise fourteen operas and intermezzi, nine- teen sacred compositions, and many charming pieces of chamber

music,—a long list, when one remembers that he died at the age of 26 years and 3 months. The purity of his style has not been ex-

Barve light buffo piece, the acts of which were interpolated, for the sake of relief, between those of a serious opera.

PE R—

PER

ceeded by any composer of the Italian school ; and in his orchestra] effects and other points of little less importance he shows himself immensely in advance of all his predecessors.

PERIANDER was born about 665 B.c. and succeeded his father Cypselus as despot of Corinth in 625 B.c. His rule appears to have been at first mild and beneficent, but evil advice or domestic calamity converted him into a cruel tyrant. There runs a well-known story that he sent to ask the advice of Thrasybulus, tyrant of Miletus, who, in- stead of replying, walked with the messenger through a cornfield and struck off as he walked the tallest and fairest of the ears. Periander took the hint, and proceeded to exterminate the most eminent of his subjects! Whatever the cause, there seems no reason to doubt that the latter part of the despot's life was darkened by crime. Goaded by the slanders of concubines, he murdered his beloved wife Melissa, daughter of Procles, tyrant of Epidaurus, and then, in a fit of remorse, burned the slanderers alive.2? The murder of his wife alienated from the tyrant the affection of his favourite son Lycophron, whom, failing to move either by rigour or blandishments, he banished to Corcyra, then a dependency of Corinth. At last, enfeebled by age, Periander offered to resign the tyranny to his son and to retire himself to Corcyra; but the prospect alarmed the Corcyreans, and they put Lycophron to death. The tyrant took his revenge by sending three hundred of the noblest Corcyrean youths to Alyattes, king of Lydia, to be made eunuchs of; they were rescued, however, by the Samians. Periander did not long survive his son; he fell into a deep despondency, and died either of grief or by violence volun-

tarily incurred in 585 B.c., at the age of eighty.

The accounts of Periander's character are at first sight discrepant. One writer (Heraclides) describes him as just and moderate, an enemy of vice and luxury, which he severely repressed. But more com- monly he appears as cruel and oppressive. He surrounded himself with a body-guard, and, according to Aristotle, reduced tyranny to a system by putting down eminent and aspiring citizens, impover- ishing the rich, maintaining spies, and sowing distrust between classes and individuals. His costly offerings to the gods drained the resources, while his public works and constant wars taxed the energies and distracted the attention of the citizens. The privilege of settling in Corinth was placed by him under certain restrictions. On the other hand, he not only patronized literature in the person of the poct Arion but was himself the author of a collection of moral maxims in 2000 verses.

His reputation for wisdom stood so high that he was commonly reckoned amongst the seven wise men, though some, as Plato, denied his claim. Amongst the wars to which he owed his military fame were successful expeditions against Epidaurus and Corcyra. He built a fleet and scoured the seas on both sides of the isthmus, through which it is said that he meditated cutting a canal. To him were due the Greek colonies of Apollonia, Anactorium, and Leucas. On the whole, Periander would appear to have becn one of those brilliant despots whose personal vices havc not destroyed their literary and artistic sense, and who by their abilities have raised the states which they governed to a high pitch of outward prosperity and power. Certain it is that with the close of his dynasty, which happened a few years after his death, when his successor Psammetichus perished in a popular rising, the golden age of Corinthian history came to an end.

There was another Periander, tyrant of Ambracia, said to have been a relative of the tyrant of Corinth. He was deposed by the people, probably not long after the death of the latter.

The chief authorities for the life of Periander are Herodotus (iii. 48-535 y. 92), Aristotle (Pol., v. 11, 12), Heraclides Ponticus (v.), Nicol. Damase. (59, 60), Diog. Laert. (i. 7). The letters in Diogenes ascribed to Periander are no doubt spurious.

1 In Aristotle’s version of the story the rdles of Periander and Thrasybulus are reversed.

2 The relations of Periander to his dead wife form the subject of a curious tale. It is said that he got a necromancer to call up the spirit of Melissa (as Saul called up Samuel), in order to question her about a hidden treasure, just as people in Wiirtemberg used to call up ghosts in churchyards for a similar purpose. But the ghost refused to answer. “For,” said she, “I am cold; I cannot wear the garments laid in my grave, because they have not been burned.” So Periander called to- gether all the women of Corinth in their best attire as for a festival, stripped them, and burned their garments on the grave of his wife, that her ghost might not go naked. Similar to this is the story in Lucian of the ghost of a dead wife appearing to her husband and begging him to find and burn one of her golden sandals which had fallen underneath the chest and so had not been burned with the other.

PERU CLESs

PERICLES, a great Athenian statesman, and one of the most remarkable men of antiquity, was the son of Xanthippus, who commanded the Greeks at the battle of Mycale in 479 3.c. By his mother Agariste, niece of Clisthenes, who reformed the democracy at Athens after the expulsion of the Pisistratide, he was connected both with the old princely line of Sicyon and with the great but unfortunate house of the Alemzonide.! The date of his birth is unknown, but his youth must have fallen in the stirring times of the great Persian war. From his friendship with the poet Anacreon, lis father would seem to have been a man of taste, and as he stood in relations of hospitality to the Spartan kings his house was no doubt a political as well as literary centre. Pericles received the best education which the age could supply. For masters he had Pythoclides and the distinguished musician Damon, who infused into his music lessons a tincture of philosophy, whereby he incurred the suspicions of the vulgar, and received the honour of ostracisni.2 Pericles listened also to the subtle dialectics of the Eleatic Zeno. But the man who swayed him most deeply and permanently was the philosopher Anaxagoras. The influence of the speculative genius and dignified and gentle character of the philosopher who resigned his property that he might turn his thoughts more steadily to heaven, which he called his home, and who begged as his last honour that the school-children might have a holiday on the day he died, can be traced alike in the intellectual breadth and the elevated moral tone of the pupil, in his superiority to vulgar superstitions, and in the unruffled serenity which he preserved through- out the storms of political life? It was probably the grand manner of Pericles even more than his eloquence that won him the surname of Olympian Zeus. In his youth he distinguished himself in the field, but eschewed politics, fearing, it is said, the suspicions which might be excited in the populace not only by his wealth, high birth, and powerful friends, but by the striking resemblance to the tyrant Pisistratus which old men traced in his personal appearance, musical Voice, and flowing speech. But, when the banishment of Themistocles> and the death of Aristides had somewhat cleared the political stage, Pericles came forward as the champion of the democratic or progressive party, in opposition to Cimon, the leader of the aristocratic or conservative party. The two leaders differed hardly less than their policies. Both indeed were men of aristocratic birth and temper, honourable, brave,

and generous, faith- ful and laborious in the service of Athens. But Cimon was a true sailor, blunt, jovial, freehanded, who sang a capital song, and was always equally ready to drink or fight, to whose artless mind (he was innocent of even a smattering of letters®) the barrack-room life of the bar- barous Spartans seemed the type of human perfectibility, and whose simple programme was summed up in the

geilerod., vi. 131.

2 Plut., Per.,4; cp. Plato, Laches, pp. 180, 197, 200, and Rep., 400, 424.

8 If the statement reported by Diogenes Laertius (ii. 3, 7), that Anaxagoras spent thirty years at Athens, is correct, he probably arrived there about 462, and Pericles must have reached maturity before he inet him (see Zeller, Die Philosophie der Griechen, i. p. 865 sq.).

4 It is said that once, when Pericles was transacting business in public, a low fellow railed at him all day long, and at nightfall dogged him to his house, reviling him in the foulest language. Pericles took no notice of him till he reached his own door, when he bade one of the servants take a torch and light the man home.

5 Variously placed in 476 (Kriiger), 471 (Clinton), and 470 (Cur- tins). Considerable divergence of opinion prevails as to the dates of most events between the Second Persian War and the outbreak of the Peloponnesian War (see Pierson, in Philologus, 1869 ; Classen's Thucy- dides, book i. Anh.). Pericles, who died in 429, is said to have had a public life of forty years ; hence he probably began to take part in politics about 469, ab.

6 Plut., Cim., 4. It is amusing to read of this stout old salt sitting In judgment on the respective merits of Aischylus and Sophocles (ib., 8).

maxim 'fight the Persians." Naturally the new ideas of political progress and intellectual development had no place in his honest head ; naturally he was a sturdy sup- porter of the good old times of which, to the popular mind, he was the best embodiment. Pericles, grave, studious, reserved, was

himself penetrated by those ideas of progress and culture which he undertook to convert into political and social realities; philosophy was his recrea- tion ; during the whole course of his political career he never accepted but once an invitation to dinner, and he was never to be seen walking except between his house and the popular assembly and senate-house. He husbanded his patrimony and regulated his domestic affairs with rigid economy that he might escape both the temptation and suspicion of enriching himself at the public expense.

The steps by which he rose to the commanding position which he occupied in later life cannot be traced with cer- tainty. According to Plutarch, Pericles, whose fortune did not allow him to imitate the profuse hospitality by which Cimon endeared himself to the people, sought to outbid him by a lavish distribution of the public moneys among the poorer classes; this device was suggested to him by Damonides, says Plutarch on the authority of Aristotle. We may doubt the motive alleged by Plutarch, but we cannot doubt the fact that Pericles did extend, if not originate, the practice of distributing large sums among the citizens either as gratuities or as payment for services rendered,—a practice which afterwards attained most mis-chievous proportions. According to Plato (Gorgias, 515 E), it was a common saying that Pericles, by the system of payments which he introduced, had corrupted the Athenians, rendering them idle, cowardly, talkative, and avaricious. It was Pericles who introduced the payment of jurymen, and, as there were 6000 of them told off annually for duty, of whom a great part sat daily, the disbursement from the treasury was great, while the poor and idle were encouraged to live at the public expense. But the payment for attendance on the public assembly or parliament (of which all citizens of mature age were members), though probably suggested by the payment of the jurymen, was not intro- duced by Pericles, and indeed does not seem to have existed during his lifetime.’ It was he who instituted the payment of the citizens for military service,°“—a measure but for which the Athenians would probably not have prolonged the Peloponnesian War as they did, and in particular would not have been so ready to embark on the fatal Sicilian expedition. There was more justifica- tion, perhaps, for the practice, originated by Pericles, of supplying the poorer citizens from the public treasury with the price of admission to the theatre. For in an age when the study of the poets formed a chief element of education, and when

the great dramas of A‘schylus, Sophocles, and Euripides were being put on the stage in all their freshness, such a measure may almost be regarded as a state provision for the education of the citizens. It was part of the policy of Pericles at once to educate and delight the people by numerous and splendid festivals, processions, and shows. But the good was mixed with seeds of evil, which took root and spread, till, in the days of Demosthenes, the money which should have been spent in fighting the enemies of Athens was squandered in spectacles and pageants. The Spectacular Fund or Theorr-Zon has been called the cancer of Athens. Vast sums were further spent by Pericles in adorning the city with those buildings which even in their ruins are the wonder of the world. Amongst these were the Parthenon, or Temple of the Virgin (Athene), and the Erechtheum, i en mes a

7 See Boeckh, Staatsaushaltung der Athener, 1. p. 320 ; Curtius, Griech. Gesch., ii. pp. 227, 842. 8 Ulpian on Demosth., wept cwrdé., 50 A, ap. Boeckh, i. Bille

both on the Acropolis, the former completed in 438,1 the latter left unfinished at Pericles's death; the magnificent Propylea or vestibule to the Acropolis, built 437-432 ; and the Odeum or music-hall, on the south-eastern slope of the Acropolis, completed before 444. The musical contests instituted by Pericles, and for which he himself laid down the rules and acted as judge, took place in the Odeum. Many artists and architects were entrusted with the execution of these great works, but under the direction of the master-mind of Phidias, sculptor, architect, painter,— the Michelangelo of antiquity. But Pericles fortified as well as beautified Athens. It had been the policy of Themistocles to make her primarily a naval and commercial power, and to do so he strengthened the marine, and gave to the city as far as possible the advantages of an insular situation by means of fortifications, which rendered both it and its port (the Pirseus) impregnable on the land side. By thus basing the Athenian state on commerce instead of, like Solon, on agriculture," he at the same time transferred the political predominance to the democratic or progressive party, which is as naturally recruited from a commercial as a conservative or aristocratic party is from an agricul- tural population. This policy was fully accepted and carried out by Pericles. It was in his time and probably by his advice that the Long Walls were built, which, con- necting Athens with Pirzeus, converted the capital and its seaport into one vast fortress.2 Further, in order to train the Athenians in seamanship, he kept a fleet of sixty ships at sea eight months out of every year. The expenses entailed by these great schemes were chiefly defrayed by the annual tribute, which the confederates of Athens originally furnished for the purpose of waging war against Persia, but which Athens, as head of the league, subse- quently applied to her own purposes. If, as seems prob- able, the transference of the treasury of the league from Delos to Athens, which sealed the conversion of the Athenian headship into an empire, took place between 460 and 454, the step was probably suggested or supported by Pericles, and at all events he managed the fund after its transference.* But, though the diversion of the fund from its original purpose probably did not begin with Pericles, yet, once established, he maintained it unwaver- ingly. The Athenians, he held, fulfilled the trust committed to them by defending their allies against all comers, and the tribute (increased during his administration from 460 to 600 talents annually) was their wages, which it was their right and privilege to expend in works which by employ- ing

labour and stimulating commerce were a present benefit, and by their beauty would be "'a joy for ever." That Athens ruled by force, that her empire was in fact a

1 The date of the commencement of the Parthenon is variously put at 444 (Leake), 454 (Michaelis), and 460 (Wachsmuth). From an inscription it would seem that the building of the temple extended at least as far back as 447. See Curtius, Gr. Gesch., ii. p. 852.

2 Solon's classification of the citizens for political purposes rested exclusively on the possession of cultivated land.

3 There were three of these walls, of which the northern (to Pireus) and the southern (to Phalerum) were completed after the battle of (&nophyta (Thucyd., i. 108) in 456. The foundation of these two walls seems to have been laid by Cimon (Plut., Cim., 13) about 462. See Leake's Topography of Athens, i. p. 424. Some scholars, relying on an interpretation of Thucydides (i. 107, 108), suppose that these walls were begun in one year and finished in the next. But considering the length of the walls (8 miles) and their massiveness (as shown by their remains) this seems quite impossible. 'The middle wall, which ran parallel to the northern wall and at no great distance from it, was built later (it was not begun before 449, Andocides, De pace cum Laced., 7, and the progress was slow, Plut., Per., 13), and there is no doubt that Pericles advised its construction (Plato, Gorgias, 455 EH). The wall to Phalerum seems afterwards to have fallen into decay, and the middle wall then went by the name of the southern, and it and the northern were known as the Long Walls (Harpocration, s.v. 6d bégov Telxous ; Leake, i. p. 427).

4 Justin, iii. 6, 4; Diod., xii. 38 ; Curtins, Gr. Gesch., ii. 168, 837.

|

PihicLeEes

tyranny, he fully admitted, but he justified that tyranny by the high and glorious ends which it subserved.®

The rise of Pericles to power, though it cannot be followed step by step, has an obvious and sufficient explana- tion in his combined wisdom and eloquence. Plato traces his eloquence largely to the influence of Anaxagoras ; in- tercourse with that philosopher (he says) filled the mind of Pericles with lofty speculations and a true conception of the nature of intelligence, and hence his oratory possessed the intellectual grandeur and artistic finish characteristic of the highest eloquence (Phedrus, 270 A). The range and compass of his rhetoric were wonderful, extending from the most winning persuasion to the most overwhelming denunciation. The comic poets of the day, in general very unfriendly to him, speak with admiration of his oratory; “ oreatest of Grecian tongues,” says Cratinus; “‘ persuasion sat on his lips, such was his charm,” and ‘he alone of the orators left his sting in his hearers,” says Eupolis; “he lightened, he thundered,” says Aristophanes. His speeches were prepared with conscientious care; before rising to speak he used to pray that no inappropriate word might fall from his lips. He left no written speeches,’ but the few sayings of his which have come down to us reveal a passionate imagination such as breathes in the fragments of Sappho. Thus, in speaking of those who had died in war, he said that the youth had perished from the city like the spring from the year.2 He called the hostile island of /Augina “the eye-sore of the Pirzeus,” and declared that he saw war “lowering from Peloponnesus.” Three of his speeches have been reported by Thucydides, who may have heard them, but, though their substance may be correctly recorded, in passing through the medium of the historian’s dispassionate mind they have been shorn of the orator’s imaginative glow, and in their cold iron logic are hardly to be distinguished from the other speeches in Thucydides. An exception to this is the speech which Thucydides reports as having been delivered by Pericles over the slain in the first year of the Peloponnesian War. This speech stands quite apart from the others; and as well in particular touches (¢.g., the saying that ‘“the grave of great men is the world”) as in its whole tenor we catch the ring of a great orator, such as Thucydides with all his genius was not. It is probably a fairly close report of the speech actually delivered by Pericles.

The first public appearance of Pericles of which we have record probably fell about 463. When Cimon, on his return from the expedition to Thasos, was tried on the utterly improbable charge of having been bribed by the Macedonian king to betray the interests of Athens, Pericles was appointed

by the people to assist in conduct- ing the prosecution ; but, more perhaps from a conviction of the innocence of the accused than, as was said, in compliance with the entreaties of Cimon's sister Elpinice, he did not press the charge, and Cimon was acquitted. Not long afterwards Pericles struck a blow at the conservative

5 Op. Thucyd., i. 148, and ii. 63, 64; Plut., Per., 12.

8 Compare the story in Plutarch (De educ. puer., 9), that on one occasion, though repeatedly called on by the people to speak, he declined to do so, saying that he was unprepared.

7 Plut., Per., 8. In the time of Cicero there were some writings bearing his name (Brutus, 7, 27;. De Or., ii. 22, 93), but they were no doubt spurious. Cp. Quintilian, iii, 1, 12; xii. 2, 22 and 10, 49.

8 Cope (on Aristotle, Rhetoric, i. 7, 34) denies that Pericles was the author of the saying. His only plausible ground is that a similar saying is attributed to Gelon by Herodotus (vii. 162). But from the clumsy way in which the simile is there applied it has all the appear- ance of being borrowed, and Herodotus, who long survived Pericles, may have borrowed it from him. It is more open to question whether the simile occurred in the funeral speech delivered at the close of the Samian War, or in that during the Peloponnesian War, but the former is more probable. In Thucydides's report of the latter speech the simile does not occur.

party by attacking the Areopagus, a council composed of lifemembers who had worthily discharged the duties of archon. The nature of the functions of the Areopagus at this period is but little known ; it seems to have had a general supervision over the magistrates, the popular assembly, and the citizens, and to have exercised this supervision in an eminently conservative spirit. It sat also as a court for the trial of certain crimes, especially murder. Pericles seems to have deprived it of nearly all its functions, except its jurisdiction in cases of murder.! The poet AXschylus composed his Humenides in vindica- tion of the ancient privileges of the Areopagus. Though Pericles was the real author of the attack on the Areo- pagus, the

measure was nominally carried by Ephialtes. It was, indeed, part of Pericles's policy to keep in the background, and to act as far as possible through agents, reserving himself for great occasions. Ephialtes, a friend of Pericles, and a patriot of inflexible integrity, paid dearly for the distinction; he fell by the hand of an assassin employed by the oligarchical party,—an event the more striking from the rarity of political assassinations in Greek history. The popular party seems to have immediately followed up its victory over the Areopagus by procuring the ostracism of Cimon,? which strengthened the hands of Pericles by removing his most influential opponent (461). Pericles took part in the battle of Tanagra (457) and bore himself with desperate bravery. After the battle Cimon was recalled from banishment, and it was Pericles who proposed and carried the decree for his recall. In 454 Pericles led an Athenian squadron from the port of Pegz on the Corinthian Gulf, landed at Sicyon, and defeated the inhabitants who ventured to oppose him ; then, taking with him a body of Acheans, he crossed to Acarnania, and besieged the town of Giniade, but had to return home without capturing it. Not long afterwards? Pericles con- ducted a successful expedition to the Thracian Chersonese, where he not only strengthened the Greek cities by the addition of 1000 Athenian colonists, but also protected them against the incursions of the barbarians by fortifying the isthmus from sea to sea. This was only one of Pericles's many measures for extending and strengthening the naval empire of Athens. Colonies were established by him at various times in Naxos, Andros, Oreus in Eubcea (in 446), Brea in Macedonia (about 443), and Aigina (in 431). They served the double purpose of establishing the Athenian power in distant parts and of relieving the pressure of population at Athens by providing the poorer citizens with lands. Somewhat different were the famous colonies established under Pericles's influence at Thurii in Italy, on the site of the ancient Sybaris (in 443), and at Amphipolis on the Strymon (in 437), for, though planted under the conduct of Athens, they were not exclusively Athenian colonies, other Greeks being allowed, and even invited, to take part in them. This was especially true of Thurii, which was in a manner a national Greek colony, and never stood in a relation of subjection to Athens. On one occasion (some time apparently between 454 and 449) *

1 Cp. Philochorus, 141 b, in Miiller's Fragm. Hist. Grac., vol. i. 5 Plut., Per., 9, and Cim., 15; Aristotle, Pol., 1274 a, 7; Thirlwall's Hist. of Greece, ii. pp. 458, 459.

2 The ostracism of Cimon lasted between four and five years (Theo-pompus, 92, in Fr. Hist. Gr.; cp. Corn. Nep., Cimon, 3). Hence, if his recall took place shortly after the battle of Tanagra (Plut., Cim., 17, and Per,, 10), say at the beginning of 456, he must have been ostracized about the middle or latter part of 461. Diodorus (xi. 77) places the attack on the Areopagus in 460; but, if that attack preceded (as Plutarch implies) the banishment of Cimon, it would be necessary, In order to harmonize Diodorus and Theopompus, to place the recall of Cimon in 455 or 454—i.e., between one and two years after the battle of Tanagra—and this seems forbidden by Plutarch's narrative.

> In 453, according to Diod., xi. 88. ;

4 The expedition is only recorded by Plutarch (Per., 20), and is

Pericles sailed at the head of a splendid armament to the Black Sea, where he helped and encouraged the Greek cities and overawed the barbarians. At Sinope he left a force of ships and men under the gallant Lamachus, to co-operate with the inhabitants against the tyrant Timesi- leus, and on the expulsion of the tyrant and his party he carried a decree for the despatch of 600 Athenian colonists to Sinope, to occupy the lands vacated by the exiles. But, with the sober wisdom which characterized him, Pericles never allowed his plans to exceed the bounds of the pos- sible ; he was no political dreamer like Alcibiades, to be dazzled with the vision of a universal Athenian empire in Greece, Italy, and Africa, such as floated before the minds of many in that and the following generations.° The disastrous expedition which the Athenians sent to Egypt, to support the rebel Inarus against Persia (460-455), received no countenance from Pericles.

When Cimon died in 449 the aristocratical party sought to counterbalance the power of Pericles by putting forward Thucydides, son of Melesias, as

the new head of the party. He seems to have been an honest patriot, but, as the event proved, he was no match for Pericles. The Sacred War in 448 showed once more that Pericles knew how to defend the interests of Athens. The Phocians, under the protec- tion of Athens, had wrested the control of the Delphic oracle from their enemies the Delphians. The latter were friendly to Sparta, and accordingly the Spartans marched into Phocis and restored the oracle to the Delphians. When they had departed, Pericles, at the head of an Athenian force, placed the oracle once more in the hands of the Phocians. As the seat of the great oracle, Delphi was to ancient Greece much what Rome was to medizval Europe, and the friendship of the god, or of his priests, was no small political advantage. When the Athenians despatched a small force under Tolmides to crush a rising in Beeotia, they did so in spite of the warnings of Pericles. These warnings were soon justified by the unfortunate battle of Coronea (447), which deprived Athens at a blow of the continental dominion she had acquired a few years before by the battle of Ginophyta (456). The island of Eubcea now revolted from Athens, and hardly had Pericles crossed over with an army to reduce it when word came that the Megarians had massacred the Athenian garrison, and, in league with Corinth, Sicyon, and Epidaurus, were up in arms, while a Peloponnesian army under King Plistoanax was on the point of invading Attica. Pericles recrossed in haste to Attica. The Peloponnesians returned home, having advanced no farther than Eleusis and Thria. It was said that Pericles had bribed Cleandridas ; certain it is that both Cleandridas and Plistoanax were charged at Sparta with having misconducted the expedition and were found guilty. Having saved Attica, Pericles returned to Eubcea, reduced it to subjection, expelled the Histizeans, and settled the Athenian colony of Oreus (446) on their lands. The thirty years' peace, concluded soon afterwards (445) with Sparta, was probably in large measure the work of Pericles. The Athenians had evacuated Bootia immediately after the battle of Coronea, and by the terms of the peace they now renounced their other continental possessions, —Acheea, Troezen, Niswa, and Pege. The peace left Pericles at liberty to develop his schemes for promoting the internal welfare of Athens, and for making it the centre of the intellectual and artistic life of Greece. But first he had to settle accounts with his political rival Thucydides ; the struggle was soon decided by the ostracism of the latter in 444. Thenceforward to the end of his life Pericles

ee ee ee ee mentioned by him immediately after the expedition against (iniade (454) and before the Sacred War (449). .

5 Thucyd., vi. 15, 90; Diod., xii. 54; Plut., Per., 20, and Alcid., 17; Pausan., 1. U1) 7.

guided the destinies of Athens alone ; in the words of the historian Thucydides, the government was in name a de- mocracy, but in fact it was the rule of the first citizen. The unparalleled ascendency which he wielded so long over the fickle people is one of the best proofs of his extraor- dinary genius. He owed it entirely to his personal character, and he used it for the wisest and purest purposes. He was neither a vulgar demagogue to truckle to the passions and caprices of the mob, nor a vulgar despot to cow it by a hireling soldiery ; he was a citizen among citizens, who obeyed him because they trusted him, because they knew that in his hands the honour and interests of Athens were safe. The period during which he ruled Athens was the happiest and greatest in her history, as it was one of the greatest ages of the world. Other ages have had their bright particular stars; the age of Pericles is the Milky Way of great men. In his lifetime there lived and worked at Athens the poets /Uschylus, Sophocles, Euripides, Cratinus, Crates, the philosophers Anaxagoras, Zeno, Pro- tagoras, Socrates, the astronomer Meton, the painter Poly- gnotus, and the sculptors Myron and Phidias. Contem- porary with these, though not resident at Athens, were Herodotus, the father of history ; Hippocrates, the father

of medicine; Pindar, “the Theban eagle”; the sculptor

Polyclitus ; and the philosophers Empedocles and Demo- critus, the latter joint author with Leucippus of the atomic theory. When Pericles died other stars were rising or soon to rise above the horizon,—the historians Thucydides and Xenophon, the poets Eupolis and Aristophanes, the orators Lysias and Isocrates, and the gifted but unscru- pulous Alcibiades. Plato was born shortly before or after the death of Pericles. Of this brilliant circle Pericles was the centre. His generous and richly-endowed nature responded to all that was beautiful and noble not only in literature and art but in life, and it is with justice that the age of Pericles has received its name from the

man in whom, more than in any other, all the various lines of Greek culture met and were harmonized. In this perfect harmony and completeness of nature, and in the classic calin which was the fruit of it, Pericles is the type of the ideal spirit, not of his own age only, but of antiquity.

It seems to have been shortly after the ostracism of Thucydides that Pericles conceived the plan of summon- ing a general congress of all the Greek states to be held at Athens. Its objects were the restoration of the temples which the Persians had destroyed, the fulfilment of the vows made during the war, and the establishment of a general peace and the security of the sea. Invitations were sent to the Greeks of Asia, the islands from Lesbos to Rhodes, the Hellespont, Thrace, Byzantium, Bceotia, Phocis, Peloponnesus, Locris, Acarnania, Ambracia, and Thessaly. The aim of Pericles seems to have been to draw the bonds of union closer between the Greeks and to form a national federation. The beneficent project was defeated by the short-sighted opposition of the Spartans. But, if in this scheme Pericles rose above the petty jealousies of Greek politics, another of his measures proves that he shared the Greek prejudices as to birth. At an early period of his career (apparently about 460) he enacted, or perhaps only revived,! a law confining the rights of Athenian citizenship to persons both of whose parents were Athenian citizens. In the year 444, on the occasion of a scrutiny of the list of citizens, nearly 5000 persons claiming to be citizens were proved to be aliens under this law, and were ruthlessly sold into slavery.

The period of the thirty years' peace was not one of uninterrupted tranquillity for Athens. In 440 a war broke out between the island of Samos (a leading member

~1 See Schimann's Antiquities of Greece, } 357, Eng. tr. ; Hermann's Staatsalterthiimer, § 118. es » Hung. UF. 5

Raat |

FHRI CLS

of the Athenian confederacy) and Miletus. Athens sided with Miletus; Pericles sailed to Samos with an Athenian squadron, and established a

democracy in place of the previous oligarchy. After his departure, however, some of the exiled oligarchs, in league with Pissuthnes, satrap of Sardis, collected troops and, crossing over to Samos, overpowered the popular party and revolted from Athens, In this revolt they were joined by Byzantium. The situa- tion was critical ; the example set by Samos and Byzantium might be followed by the other confederates. Pericles discerned the danger and met it promptly. He led a squadron of sixty ships against Samos ; and, after detach- ing some vessels to summon feinforcements from Chios and Lesbos, and others to look out for the Phoenician fleet which the Persians were expected to send to the help of Samos, he gave battle with forty-four ships to the Samian fleet of seventy sail and defeated it. Having received reinforcements of sixty-five ships, he landed in Samos and laid siege to the capital. But, when he sailed with sixty ships to meet the Phoenician vessels which were reported to be near, the Samians sallied out with their vessels, defeated the besiegers, and remained masters of the sea for fourteen days. On his return, however, they were again blockaded, and were compelled to surrender, nine months after the outbreak of the war (spring of 439).

Though Pericles enjoyed the confidence of the people as a whole, his policy and opinions could not fail to rouse the dislike and suspicions of many, and in the last years of his life his enemies combined to assail him. Two points in particular were singled out for attack, his administration of the public moneys and his religious opinions. With regard to the former there must always be a certain number of persons who will not believe that others can resist and despise a temptation which to themselves would be irresistible; with regard to the latter, the suspicion that Pericles held heretical views on the national reli- gion was doubtless well grounded. At first, however, his enemies did not venture to impeach himself, but struck at him in the persons of his friends. In 432? Phidias was

accused of having appropriated some of the gold destined

for the adornment of the statue of Athene in the Par- thenon. But by the prudent advice of Pericles the golden ornaments had been so attached that they could be taken off and weighed, and when Pericles challenged the accusers to have recourse to this test the accusation fell to the ground. More

dangerous, for more true, was the charge against Phidias of having introduced portraits of himself and Pericles into the battle of the Amazons, depicted on the shield of the goddess: the sculptor appeared as a bald old man lifting a stone, while Pericles was represented as fighting an Amazon, his face partly concealed by his raised spear. To the pious Athenians this seemed a desecration of the temple, and accordingly Phidias was clapped into gaol. Whether he died there or at Elis is uncertain.' Even more deeply was Pericles wounded by the accusation levelled at the woman he loved. This was the famous Aspasia, a native of Miletus, whose talents won for her general admiration at Athens. Pericles divorced his wife, a lady of good birth who had borne him two sons, Xan- thippus and Paralus, but with whom he was unhappy, and attached himself to Aspasia. With her he lived on terms of devoted affection to the end of his life, though, as she was a foreigner, their union was not a legal marriage. She enjoyed a high reputation as a teacher of rhetoric, and

2 A scholiast on Aristoph., Pax, 605, places the condemnation of Phidias seven years before the outbreak of the Peloponnesian War, OF in 438 (according to Palmer's correction) ; see Miiller ad U., in Frog. Jeli Chay Yo Oo 18s

3 Different views of the fate of Phidias are taken by scholars. PHIDIAS.

See

Fe RI CLES

seems to have been the centre of a brilliant intellectual

society, which included Socrates and his friends. The comic poet, Hermippus, brought her to trial on the double charge of impiety and of corrupting Athenian women for the gratification of Pericles. A decree was further carried by a religious fanatic named Diopithes, whereby all who denied the existence of the gods or discussed the nature of the heavenly bodies were to be tried as criminals. This blow was aimed directly at the aged philosopher Anaxagoras, but indirectly at his pupil Pericles as well as at Aspasia. When this decree was passed, and apparently while the trial of Aspasia was still pending, Pericles him- self was called upon by a decree of

the people to render an account of the money which had passed through his hands. The result is not mentioned, but we cannot doubt that the matter either was dropped or ended in an acquittal. The perfect integrity of Pericles is proved by the unim- peachable evidence of his contemporary, the historian Thucydides. Aspasia was acquitted, but not before Pericles had exerted all his eloquence in her behalf. Anaxagoras, tried on the charge of impiety, was obliged to quit the city.!

It was in the same year (432) that the great contest between Athens and Sparta, known as the Peloponnesian War, broke out. We may dismiss as a vulgar calumny the statement, often repeated in antiquity," but quite unsup- ported by Thucydides, that the war was brought about by Pericles for the purpose of avoiding a prosecution. The war was in truth inevitable; its real cause was Sparta's jealousy of the growing power of Athens; its immediate occasion was the help lent by Athens to Corcyra in its war with Corinth. At first, with a hypocritical regard for religion, the Spartans demanded as a condition of peace that the Athenians should expel the race of the Alemzon- ide (including, of course, Pericles), whose ancestors had been guilty of sacrilege about two centuries before. The Athenians retorted in kind, and, after a little more diplo- matic fencing, the Spartans were constrained to show their hand by demanding bluntly that Athens should give back to the Greeks their independence,—in other words, renounce her empire and abandon herself to the tender mercies of Sparta. Pericles encouraged the Athenians to reject the demand. He pointed out that Athens possessed advan- tages over the Peloponnesians in superior wealth and greater unity of counsels. He advised the Athenians, in case of war, not to take the field against the numerically superior forces of the Peloponnesians, but to allow the enemy to ravage Attica at will, while they confined them-

selves to the defence of the city. Through their fleet they.

would maintain communication with their island empire, procure supplies, and harass the enemy by sudden descents on his coasts. By pursuing this defensive policy without attempting to extend their empire, he predicted that they would be victorious. The people hearkened to him and replied to the Spartan ultimatum by counter-demands, which they knew would not be accepted. Pericles had not neglected in time of peace to prepare for war, and

Athens was now well equipped with men, money, and ships. In June of the following summer (431) a Pelo- ponnesian army invaded Attica. By the advice of Pericles the rural population, with their movables, had taken refuge in the city, while the cattle had been sent for safety to the neighbouring islands. The sight of their country ravaged under their eyes excited in the Athenians a long ing to march out and meet the enemy, but in the teeth of popular clamour and obloquy Pericles steadily adhered to

1 The accounts of the issue of the trial are somewhat discrepant ; see Zeller, Die Philosophie der Griechen, i. p. 872.

2 Aristophanes, Paz, 605 sqg., with schol. ad 1.3; Diod., xii. 38- 40; Plut., Per., 31, 32; Aristodemus, xvi. ; Suidas, s.v. “ bevdias.”

his defensive policy, content to protect the suburbs of Athens with cavalry. Meanwhile, Athenian fleets retaliated upon the enemy’s coasts. About the same time, as a punishment for the share that they were supposed to have had in bringing on the war, the whole population of Aigina was expelled from their island to make room for Athenian colonists. This measure, directed by Pericles, relieved to some extent the pressure in the overcrowded capital, and secured a strong outpost on the side of the Peloponnesus. In the autumn, after the Peloponnesian army had been obliged by want of provisions to quit Attica and disband, Pericles conducted the whole available army of Athens into the territory of Megara, and laid it waste.

It was a custom with the Athenians that at the end of a campaign the bones of those who had fallen in battle should be buried with public honours in the beautiful suburb of Ceramicus, the Westminster of Athens, and the vast crowd of mourners and spectators gathered about the grave was addressed by a citizen chosen for his character and abilities to pay the last tribute of a grateful country to its departed brave. On the present occasion the choice fell on Pericles. Once before, at the close of the Samian War, it had been his lot to discharge a similar duty. The speech which he now delivered, as reported to us by Thucydides, is one of the noblest monuments of antiquity. It is indeed the creed of Athens and of Greece. In its aristocratic

republicanism—recognizing at once the equal legal rights and the unequal intrinsic merits of individuals —it differs alike from the monarchical spirit of medizval and modern Europe, with its artificial class distinctions, and from that reactionary communism which preaclies the natural as well as the legal equality of men. In its frank admiration of art and letters and all the social festivals which humanize and cheer life it is as far from the sullen asceticism and the wild debauchery of the East, as the grave and manly simplicity of its style is removed from the. fanciful luxuriance of Oriental rhetoric. Finally, in the words of comfort and exhortation addressed to the bereaved, the speech—to adopt Thirlwall's description of another great effort of Athenian oratory ®—'" breathes the spirit of that high philosophy which, whether learnt in the schools or from life, has consoled the noblest of our kind in prisons, and on scaffolds, and under every persecution of adverse fortune."

The fortitude of the Athenians was put toa still severer test in the following summer (430), when to the horrors of war (the Peloponnesians had again invaded Attica) were added the horrors of the plague, which spread havoc in the crowded city. Pericles himself escaped the scourge,* but many of his relations and best friends, amongst them his sister and his two sons Xanthippus and Paralus, were struck down. With the elder of his sons, Xanthippus, a worthless young man, the father had been on bad terms, but the death of his surviving son, at an interval of a few days, affected him deeply, and, when he came to lay the wreath upon the corpse, though he struggled hard to maintain his habitual calm, he broke down, and for the first time in his public life burst into a passion of weeping." But neither private grief nor public calamity shook for a moment the lofty courage and resolution with which he continued to the last to oppose a firm front alike to enemies without and to cravens within. While refusing as before to

3 The speech of Demosthenes "On the Crown."

4 Plutarch, admitting that Pericles was not attacked by the plague in its acute form, believes that it so far affected him as to throw him into a lingering decline. But we do not gather from Thucydides's description of the plague that it ever had this effect.

5 Not inconsistent with this are the accounts of the general fortitude with which he bore his bereavement (Plut., Consol. ad Apoll., 33 ; #lian, Var. Hist., ix. 6; Val. Max., v. 10).

to devastate at pleasure, he led in person a powerful fleet against Peloponnesus, ravaged the coast, and destroyed the town of Prasie in Laconia. But the Athenians were greatly disheartened ; they sued for peace, and when their suit was rejected by Sparta they vented their ill-humour on Pericles, as the author of the war, by subjecting him to a fine. However, they soon repented of this burst of petulance, and atoned for it by re-electing him general? and placing the government once more in his hands. Further, they allowed him to legitimate his son by Aspasia, that his house might not be without an heir. He survived this reconciliation about a year, but his name is not again mentioned in connexion with public affairs. In the autumn of 429 he died. We may well believe that the philosophy which had been the recreation of his happier days supported and consoled him in the clouded evening of his life. To his clement nature it was a peculiar consolation to reflect that he had never carried political differences to the shed- ding of blood. Indeed, his extraordinary, almost fatherly, tenderness for the life of every Athenian citizen is attested by various of his sayings? On his deathbed, when the friends about him were telling his long roll of glory, rous- ing himself from a lethargy into which he had fallen, he reminded them of his fairest title to honour: ‘‘ No Athenian,” he said, “ever put on black through me.”

He was buried amongst the great dead in the Ceramicus, and in after years Phormio, Thrasybulus, and Chabrias slept beside him.* In person he was graceful and well made, save for an unusual height of head, which the comic poets were never weary of ridiculing. In the busts of him which we possess, his regular features, with the straight Greek nose and full lips, still preserve an expression of Olympian repose.

The chief, perhaps the only trustworthy, authority for the life of Pericles is the history of his contemporary Thucydides. The bio- graphy by Plutarch is compiled from Thucydides, Ephorus, Ion, Stesimbrotus, Duris of Samos, Aristotle, Idomeneus, Aschines, and Heraclides Ponticus, together with the

comic poets Cratinus, Teleclides, Hermippus, Plato, Eupolis, and Aristophanes. Ephorus, a pupil of Isocrates, must have had plenty of means of ascertaining the facts, but how little his judgment is to be trusted is shown by his account of the origin of the Peloponnesian War,—an account also followed by Diodorus Siculus, whose history adds nothing of importance to the narratives of Thucydides and Plutarch. [on and Stesimbrotus were contemporaries of Pericles, but, as both were admirers of Cimon and opposed to the policy of Pericles, their accounts have to be received with caution. (J. G. FR.)

PERIDOTE, a name applied by jewellers to the green transparent varieties of olivine. When yellow, or yellowish- green, the stone is generally known as "'chrysolite." The colour of the peridote is never vivid, like that of emerald, but is usually some shade of olive-, pistachio-, or leek-green. Although sometimes cut in rose-forms and en cabochon, the stone displays its colour most advantageously when it is worked in small steps. Unfortunately the peridote is the very softest of gem-stones, its hardness being only about 6°5, or but little above that of glass; hence the stone, when polished, rapidly loses its lustre, and readily suffers abrasion by wear. There is considerable difficulty in polishing the peridote ; the final touch is given on a copper wheel moistened with sulphuric acid, yet, curiously enough, the mineral is soluble in this medium. The peridote is a silicate of magnesium and iron, having a specific gravity of about 3:4, and crystallizing in the orthorhombic system (see fig. 468, Minzratocey, vol. xvi. p. 410). Good crystals,

- There were ten generals at Athens annually elected by the votes of the people. They seem to have had civil as well as military duties, and the importance of the office must have increased in proportion to

the degradation of the offices which were filled by lot. After the ostracism of Thucydides Pericles was elected to the office again and again.

= Plut., Per., 18, 33, 88; Reg. et imp. Apoph. ; Precept. ger. Reip., xvii. 4.

3 Pausan., i. 29, 3; ep. Cic., De Fin., v. 2.

PoE de PR

however, are extremely rare, the mineral being usually found as rolled fragments. The localities for peridote and chrysolite are Egypt, Ceylon, Pegu, and Brazil, while the dull varieties of olivine enjoy a world-wide distribution in various eruptive rocks and in serpentine. Olivine is found also in meteorites.

There can be little doubt that the ancient "‘ topazion" was our peridote or chrysolite, and that the mineral now called topaz was unknown to ancient and medieval writers, The earliest mention of the word "peridote" is said to occur in the Wardrobe Book of 27 Edward I., where, among the jewels of the bishop of Bath and Wells which had escheated to the crown, mention is made of "unus annulus auri cum pereditis." The origin of the word has given rise to much speculation, some authorities deriving it from wepidords, "a-wager," and others from zepideros, "banded," while others, again, refer it toan Arabic origin.

For the history of the stone see King's Natural History, Ancient and Modern, of Precious Stones, 1865.

PERIGORD, an old province of France which formed part of the military government of Guienne and Gascony, and was bounded N. by Angoumois, E. by Limousin and Quercy, S. by Agenais and Bazadais, and W. by Bordelais and Saintonge. It is now represented by Dordogne and part of Lot-et-Garonne. The capital was PhRIGUEUX (¢.v.).

PERIGUEUX, formerly capital of Périgord, now chief town of the department of the Dordogne, France, situated on the slope of an eminence commanding the right bank of the Isle, one of the tributaries of the Dordogne. It is 310 miles by rail south-south-west of Paris and 79 miles east-north-east of Bordeaux. Périgueux is divided into three distinct parts. In tle middle, on the slope of the hill, is the town of the Middle Ages, with narrow, crooked, and dirty streets, above which rises the cathedral of St Front ; higher up comes the modern town, its houses separated by gardens and public walks; and at the foot of the hill and lying along the Isle are small houses of modern con- struction, built on the fine ruins of the Roman town. Three bridges connect Périgueux with the left bank of the Isle, where stood Vesunna, the capital of the Petrocorii. Hardly a trace of this old Gallic oppidum remains, but not far off, on the Plateau de la Boissiére, the rampart

of the old Roman camp, 1970 feet long and half as wide, is still to be recognized. On the right bank of the Isle, in the Roman city, there have been discovered some baths of the 1st or 2d century, which had a frontage of 200 feet, and were supplied by an aqueduct 4 miles long, which spanned the Isle. In several places numerous mosaics have been found, some of which have been placed in the museum. A circular building, called the ‘‘ Tower of Vesunna,” 68 feet in diameter and 89 feet in height, stands at what was formerly the centre of the city, where all the chief streets met. It is believed to have been originally the cella or main part of a temple, of which the peristyle has disappeared, prob- ably dedicated to the tutelary deities of Vesunna. Of the amphitheatre there still remain huge fragments of wall built of pebbles and cement, staircases, vomitories, and partly uncovered vaults. The building, which held 40,000 spectators, had a diameter of 1312 feet, that of the arena being 876 feet; judging from its construction it must be as old as the 3d or even the 2d century. The counts of Périgueux used it for their chateau, and lived in it from the 12th to the end of the 14th century. In 1644 it was given over by the town to the Order of the Visitation, and the sisters took from it the stones required for the con- struction of their nunnery. At present it is private pro- perty. The most remarkable, however, of the ruins of old Vesunna is the Chateau Barriére. It rests on stones of great size, and dates in part from a very remote period. Two towers date from the 3d or 4th century, and formed part

th and

of the fortified enceinte ; the highest tower is of the 10th century ; and the part now inhabited is of the 11th or 12th century, and was formerly used as a burial chapel. The bulk of the chateau is of the 12th, and some of the windows of the 16th century. Lastly, there are still to be traced the two tiers of wall of the enceinte, built round the city in the 5th century; but these are partly hidden by restorations of a later date. Numerous courses of stone are also to be seen, shafts of columns, and marbles of various shapes and sizes. Of the medieval town the feature most worthy of notice is the cathedral of St Front, which is indeed (or rather was) one of the most interesting of

sacred buildings. It bears a striking resemblance to the Byzantine churches and to St Mark's at Venice, and was built from 984 to 1047, contemporaneously with the latter (977-1085). It consists of five great cupolas, arranged in the form of a Greek cross, and conspicuous from the outside. The arms of the crass are 69 feet in width, and the whole is 184 feet long. 'These cupolas, 89 feet high from the keystone to the ground, and supported on a vaulted roof with pointed arches after the manner characteristic of Byzantine architecture, served as models for many other churches in Aquitania; thus St Front is entitled to a prominent place in the history of art. The pointed arches imitated from it prepared the way for the introduction of the Gothic style. The restoration of the edifice, begun in 1865, resulted, unfortunately, in an almost complete reconstruction, in which the old features have been largely lost. The belfry of St Front is the only one in the Byzantine style now extant ; it dates from the 11th century, and is composed of two massive cubes, placed the one above the other in retreat, with a circular colonnade surmounted by a dome. The interior of the church has a fine altar-screen of carved oak. Near St Front are the ruins of the old basilica built in the 6th century. The bishop's palace, in the grounds of the ancient abbey, has a curious subterranean cloister of the 12th, 13th, and 14th centuries. Périgueux has several old and curious houses of the medizval and Renaissance periods ; a large prefecture of some architectural merit, built at great expense a few years ago in the style of the Renaissance

and of the 18th century; a museum which is singularly rich in Roman, Frank, Egyptian, and pre-Celtic antiquities ; and a library of 30,000 volumes. In the squares are statues of Montaigne, Fénelon, General Daumesnil, the defender of Vincennes (1814-15), and Marshal Bugeaud. The town has iron and copper foundries, serge and bom- basin factories, tanneries, and dye-works. It does a large

trade in flour, wine, brandy, 'hides, poultry, and in the

celebrated patés du Périgord. It is the junction of the railway from Paris to Agen with that from Bordeaux to Lyons wa Clermont. The population in 1881 was

25,036.

Vesunna, as has already been said, was the capital of the Petrocorii, allies of Vercingetorix when Cesar invaded Gaul. The country was afterwards occupied by the Romans, who built a second city of Vesunna on the right bank of the Isle opposite the site of the Gallic oppidum. It contained public buildings, and Roman roads led from it to Limoges, Agen, Bordeaux, and Saintes. The barbarian invasion brought this prosperity to a close. In the 6th century St Front preached Christianity here, and over his tomb there was raised in the 10th century an abbey, which became the centre of the new town, called Puy St Front. The latter soon began to rival the old city in importance, and it was not until 1269 that they were united by asolemn treaty. After the time of Charlemagne Périgord was governed by a line of counts. During the Hundred Years' War Périgueux was twice attacked by the English, who took the forti- fied town in 1356 ; and the town was ceded to them by the treaty of 'Bretigny, but returned to the French crown in the reign of Charles V. 'The county passed by marriage into the hands of Anthony of Bourbon, father of Henry IV., and was converted by the latter into royal domain. During the Huguenot wars Périgueux was frequently a Calvinist stronghold, and it also suffered during the troubles of the Fronde.

PERINTHUS, a town of Thrace, on the Propontis, 22 miles to the west of Selymbria, strongly situated on a small peninsula on the Bay of Perinthus, on the site of the modern Eski Eregli. It is said to have been a Samian colony, and to have been founded about 599 B.c. Accord- ing to Tzetzes, its original name was Mygdonia ; later it was called Heraclea (Heraclea Thracize, Heraclea Perinthus). It figures in history chiefly by its stubborn and success- ful resistance to Philip of Macedon in 340, at which period it seems to have been even more important than Byzantium itself. A number of extant coins of Perinthus show that it was the seat of large and celebrated festivals.

BHRIGDICALS

ERIODICALS may be broadly divided into two classes, the one chiefly devoted to general literature, apart from political and social news (a subject dealt with under the heading of Newspapers), and the other more exclusively to science and art, or to particular branches of knowledge or

trade. The former class, and those of general interest only, will be principally dealt with in this article, where an endeavour is made to trace briefly the history of the rise and progress of that vast and increasing body of printed matter which, under the different names of re- views, magazines, &c., forms so large a part of current literature.

BRITISH. The first literary periodical in English was the MJercurvus

(1680), a mere catalogue, followed by Weekly Memorials for the Ingenious (16th January 1681/82 to 15th January 1683), which was more of the type of the Jowrnal des Savants, whence it borrowed many contributions, and by the Bibliotheque Universelle et Historique (January 1 686-93), begun by Jean Leclerc, continued with the assistance of J. de la Crose, and carried on during the last six years of its existence by J. Bernard. Of the History of Learning (1691; another with the same title in 1694) only a few

numbers appeared, as the conductor, De la Crose, started the Works of the Learned (August 1691 to April 1692), devoted principally to Continental scholarship. The Com- pleat Library (1692 to December 1693) was aventureof John Dunton; the Memoirs for the Ingenious (1693) ran to six monthly numbers, and another with the same title appeared in the following year, only to enjoy an equally brief career. The first periodical of merit and influence was the History of the Works of the Learned (1699-1712), largely consisting of descriptions of foreign books. The Jemours of Litera- ture, the first English review consisting entirely of original matter, published in London from 1710 to 1714, had for editor Michel de la Roche, a French Protestant refugee, who also edited at Amsterdam the Bibliotheque Anglorse (1717-19), and subsequently Mémoires Inttéraires de la Grande Bretagne (1720-24). Returning to England in 1725, he recommenced his New Memoirs of Literature (1725-28), and in 1730 a Literary Journal. Dr Samuel Jebb started Bibliotheca Literaria (1722-24), which dealt with medals and antiquities as well as with literature, but only ten numbers appeared. The Present State of the Republick of Letters was commenced by Andrew Reid in January 1728, and completed in December 1736. It contained not only excellent reviews of English books but papers from the works of foreigners, and, as well as the Historia Lnterarva

(1730-34) of Archibald Bower,! was very successful. The Bee (1733-34) of the unfortunate Eustace Budgell, and the Literary Magazine (1735-36), with which Ephraim Chambers had much to do, were very short-lived. In 1737 the History of the Works of the Learned appeared again, and was continued without intermission until 1743, when its place was taken by A Literary Journal (Dublin, 1744-49), the first review published in Ireland. The Afusewm (1746) of R. Dodsley united the character of a review of books with that of a literary magazine. Although England can show nothing like the Journal des Savants, which has flourished almost without a break for 220 years, a nearly complete series of reviews of English literature may be made up from 1681 to the present day.

After the close of the first quarter of the 18th century the literary journal began to assume more of the style of the modern review, and in 1749 the title and the chief features were united in the Monthly Review, established by Ralph Griffiths,? who conducted it until 1803, whence it was edited by his son down to 1825. It came to an end in 1845. From its commencement the Rewew dealt with science and literature, as well as with literary criticism. It was Whig in politics and Nonconformist in theology. The Tory party and the established church were defended in the Critical Review (1756-1817), founded by Archibald Hamilton and supported by Smollett, Johnson, and Robert- son. Johnson took a considerable part in the Lzterary Magazine (1756-58). The reviews rapidly increased in number towards the end of the century. Among the prin- cipal were the London Review (1775-80), A New Renew (1782-86), the English Renew (1783-96), incorporated in 1797 with the Analytical Review (1788-99), the Anti- Jacobin Review and Magazine (1798-1821), and the British Critic (1793-1843), the organ of the High Church party, and first edited by Archdeacon Nares and Beloe.

These periodicals had now become extremely numerous, and many of the leadmg London publishers found it con- venient to maintain their own particular organs. It is not a matter of surprise, therefore, that the authority of the reviews should have fallen somewhat in public estima- tion. The time was ripe for one which should be quite independent of the booksellers, and which should also aim at a higher standard of excellence. As far back as 1755

Quarter- Adam Smith, Blair, and others had endeavoured to carry

lies.

on such a quarterly without achieving success, and in 1773 Gilbert Stuart and William Smellie issued during three years an Hdinburgh Magazine and Review. To the northern capital is also due the first high-class critical journal which has kept up its reputation to the present day. The Hdin- burgh Renew was established in 1802 by Jeffrey, Scott, Horner, Brougham, and Sydney Smith. It created a new era in periodical criticism, and assumed from the com- mencement a wider range and more elevated tone than any of its predecessors. The first editor was Sydney Smith, then Jeffrey for many years, and afterwards Macvey Napier. At one time 20,000 copies are said to have been published, but the circulation declined in 1832 to less than 9000. Scott, being dissatisfied with the new review, persuaded John Murray to start its brilliant Tory competitor, the Quarterly Review (1809), first edited by William Gifford, then by Sir J. T. Coleridge, and subsequently by J. G. Lockhart. The Westminster Review (1824), established by the disciples of Jeremy Bentham, advocated radical reforms

- Archibald Bower (1686-1766) was educated at Douai, and be- came a Jesuit. He subsequently professed himself a convert to the Anglican Church, and published a number of works, but was more esteemed for his ability than for his moral character.

“ The biographers of Goldsmith have made us familiar with the

name of Griffiths, the prosperous publisher, with his diploma of LL.D.

granted by an American university, and with the quarrels between him and the poet.

|

in church, state, and legislation. In 1836 it was joined to the London Review (1829), founded by Sir William Molesworth, and then bore the name of the London and Westminster Review till 1851, when it returned ‘to the original title. The other quarterly reviews are the Hclectic Review

(1805-68), edited down to 1834 by Josiah Conder and supported by the Dissenters; the British Review (1811- 25); the Christian Remembrancer (1819-68) ; the Retro- spective Review (1820-26, 1828, 1853-54), for old books; the Foreign Quarterly Review (1827-46), afterwards incor- porated with the Westminster; the Foragn Review (1828- 29); the Dublin Review (1836), still continued as the organ of the Roman Catholics ; the Foreign and Colonial Quar- terly Review (1843-47) ; the Prospective Review (1845-55), given up to theology and literature, previously the Christian Teacher (1835-44); the North British Renew (1844-71) ; the British Quarterly Review (1845), successor to the British and Foreign Renew (1835-44) ; the New Quarterly Review (1852-61); the Scottish Rewew (1853-62), published at Glasgow; the Wesleyan London Quarterly Review (1853); the National Renew (1855-64); the Diplomatic Review (1855-81); the Lrish Quarterly Review (1851-59), brought out in Dublin; the Home and Foreign Review (1862-64); the Fine Arts Quarterly Review (1863-65); the New Quar- terly Magazine (1873-80); the Catholic Union Review (1863-74) ; the Anglican Church Quarterly Review (1875) ; Mind (1876), dealing with mental philosophy ; the Modern Review (1880) ; and the Scottish Review (1882).

The monthly reviews include the Christian Observer Month. (1802-57), conducted by members of the established church lies. upon evangelical principles, with Zachary Macaulay as the first editor ; and the Monthly Repository (1806-37), origin- ally purely theological, but after coming into the hands of the Rev. W. J. Fox made entirely literary and political. The Fortnightly Review (1865) was intended as a kind of English Revue des Deux Mondes. Since 1866 it has appeared monthly. The Contemporary Renew (1866) and the Nineteenth Century (1877) are similar in character, consisting of signed articles by men of mark of all opinions upon questions of the day. The National Review (1883) was brought out to supply the demand for an exclusively Conservative review, and Modern Thought (1879) for the free discussion of political, religious, and social subjects.

The weekly reviews dealing generally with literature, Week- science, and art are the Literary Gazette (1817-62), first lies. edited by William Jerdan, which had for many years a circu- lation of 6000 copies; the Athenzum (1828), established by Silk Buckingham, but which was not very success-

ful until it was taken over by C. W. Dilke; and the Academy (1869), founded, and at first edited, by Dr Appleton. Those which also include political and social topics are the Examiner (1808-81), the Spectator (1828), the Saturday Review (1855), and the Chronicle (1867-68).

The reviews in the Academy are signed.

Soon after the introduction of the literary journal in England, one of a more familiar tone was started by the eccentric John Dunton inthe Athenian Gazette, or Casuistical Mercury, resolving all the most Nice and Curious Questions (1689/90 to 1695/96), a kind of forerunner of Motes and Queries, being a penny weekly sheet, with a quarterly critical supplement. In the last part the publisher an- nounces that it will be continued “as soon as ever the glut of news is a little over.” Defoe’s Review (1704-13) dealt chiefly with politics and commerce, but the introduction in it of what its editor fittingly termed the “scandalous club” was another step nearer the papers of Steele and the periodical essayists, the first attempts to create an organized popular opinion in matters of taste and manners. . These little papers, rapidly thrown off for a temporary purpose, were destined to forma very important part of

itler,

‘one half bearing colourable imitations of the title.

PEEL ODLOCA LS

the literature of the 18th century, and in some respects its most marked feature. Although the frequenters of the clubs and coffee-houses were the persons for whom the essay-papers were mainly written, a proof of the increas- ing refinement of the age is to be found in the fact that now for the first time were women specially addressed as part of the reading public. The Zatler was commenced by Richard Steele in 1709, and issued thrice a week until 1711. The idea was at once extremely popular, and a dozen similar papers were started within the year, at least Addi- gon contributed to the Tatler, and together with Steele established and carried on the Spectator (1710-14), and subsequently the Guardian (1713). The newspaper tax enforced in 1712 was a sore blow. Before this time the daily issue of the Spectator had reached 3000 copies ; it then fell to 1600; the price was raised

from a penny to twopence, but the paper came to an end in 1714, Dr Drake (Essays illustr. of the Rambler, &c., ii. 490) drew up an imperfect list of the essayists, and reckoned that from the Zatler to Johnson's Rambler, during a period of forty-one years, 106 papers of this description were pub- lished. Dr Drake continued the list down to 1809, and described altogether 221 which had appeared within a hundred years. The following is a list of the most con- siderable, with their dates, founders, and chief contri- butors.

Tatler (12th April 1709 to 2d January 1710/11), Steele, Addison, Swift, Hughes, &c. ; Spectator (Ist March 1710/11 to 20th December 1714), Addison, Steele, Budgell, Hughes, Grove, Pope, Parnell, Swift, &e.; Guardian (12th March 1713 to Ist October 1713), Steele, Addison, Berkeley, Pope, Tickell, Budgell, &c. ; Rambler (20th March 1750 to 14th March 1752), Johnson ; Adventurer (7th No- vember 1752 to 9th March 1754), Hawkesworth, Johnson, Bathurst, Warton, Chaponc; World (4th January 1753 to 30th December 1756), E. Moore, earl of Chesterfield, R. O. Cambridge, earl of Orford, Soame Jenyns, &c. ; Connoisseur (31st January 1754 to 30th Sep- tember 1756), Colman, Thornton, Warton, earl of Cork, &c. ; Idler (15th April 1758 to 5th April 1760), Johnson, Sir J. Reynolds, and Bennet Langton ; Bee (6th October 1759 to 24th November 1759), O. Goldsmith ; Mirror (23d January 1779 to 27th May 1780), Mackenzie, Craig, Abercromby, Home, Bannatyne, &c. ; Lownger, (5th February 1785 to 6th January 1787), Mackenzie, Craig, Aber- cromby, Tytler ; Observer (1785 to 1790), Cumberland ; Looker-on (10th March 1792 to 1st February 1794), W. Roberts, Beresford, Chalmers.

As from the "pamphlet of news" arose the weekly paper wholly devoted to the circulation of news, so from the general newspaper was specialized the weekly or monthly review of literature, antiquities, and_ science, which, when it included essay-papers, made up the maga- zine or miscellaneous repository of matter for information and amusement. Several monthly publications had come into existence since 1681, but perhaps the first germ of the magazine is to be found in the Gentleman's Journal (1691-94) of Peter Motteux, which, besides the news of the month, contained miscellaneous prose and poetry. In 1722 Dr Samuel Jebb included antiquarian notices as well as literary reviews in his Bibliotheca Literaria (1722-24), but the Gentleman's Magazine, founded in 1731, fully

established, through the tact and energy of the publisher Edward Cave, the type of the magazine, from that time so marked a feature of English periodical literature. This magazine, so long a source of fortune to its successive

owners, was vainly offered during four years to different

publishers before Cave was able to start it himself. The first idea is due to Motteux, from whom the title, motto, and general plan were borrowed. The chief feature in the newventure at first consisted of the analysis of the journals, which Cave undertook personally. Prizes were offered for poetry. In April 1732 the leading metropolitan publishers, jealous of the interloper Cave, started the London Maga- zine, or Gentleman's Monthly Intelligencer (1732-84), which

had a long and prosperous career. The new magazine closely copied Cave's title, plan, and aspect, and bitter war was long waged between the two. The rivalry was not without benefit to the literary public, as the conductors of each used every effort to improve their own review. Cave introduced the practice of giving engravings, maps, and portraits, but his greatest success was the addition of Johnson to the regular staff. This took place in 1738, when the latter wrote the preface to the volume for that year, observing that the magazine had "given rise to almost twenty imitations of it, which are either all dead or very little regarded." The plan was also imitated in Denmark, Sweden, and Germany. Cave edited his magazine down to his death in 1754, when it was continued by his brother- in-law David Henry, afterwards by John Nichols and his son. The specially antiquarian and historical features were dropped in 1868, and it was changed to a miscellany of light literature.

Many other magazines were produced in consequence of the success of these two. It will be sufficient to mention the following. The Scots Magazine (1739-1817) was the first published in Scotland; from 1817 to 1826 it was styled the Hdinburgh Magazine. The Universal Magazine (1747) had a short, if brilliant, career; but the Luropean Magazine, founded by James Perry in 1782, lasted down to 1826. Of more importance than

these, or than the Royal Magazine (1759-71), was the Monthly Magazine (1796- 1843), with which Priestley and Godwin were originally connected. During thirty years the Jfonthly was con- ducted by Sir Richard Phillips, under whom it became more statistical and scientific than literary. Class maga- zines were represented by the Edinburgh Yarmer's Maga- zine (1800-25) and the Philosophical Magazine (1798), established in London by Alexander Tilloch ; the latter at first consisted chiefly of translations of scientific articles from the French. The following periodicals, all of which date from the 18th century, are still published :—the Gentleman's Magazine (1731), the Gospel Magazine (1768), Wesleyan Methodist Magazine (1778), Curtis's Botanical Magazine (1786), Evangelical Magazine (1793), Methodist New Connexion Magazine (1797), Philosophical Magazine

Ags). a increased influence of this class of periodical upon the public opinion of our own era was first apparent in Blackwood's Edinburgh Magazine, founded in 1817 by the publisher of that name, and carried to a high degree of excellence by the contributions of Scott, Lockhart, Hogg, Maginn, Syme, and John Wilson, the editor. It is still issued, and has always remained Liberal in literature and Conservative in politics. The New Monthly Magazine is somewhat earlier in date. It was founded in 1814 by the London publisher Colburn, and was edited in turns by Campbell, Theodore Hook, Bulwer Lytton, and Ainsworth. Many of Carlyle's and Thackeray's pieces first appeared in Fraser's Magazine (1830), long famous for its personalities and its gallery of literary portraits. The Metropolitan Magazine was started in opposition to Fraser, and was first edited by Campbell, who had left its rival. It subsequently came into the hands of Captain Marryatt, who printed in it many of his sea-tales. The British Magazine (1832-49) included religious and ecclesiastical information. From Treland came the Dublin University Magazine (1833). The regular price of these magazines was half a crown; the first of the cheaper ones was Yait's Edinburgh Magazine (1832-61) at a shilling. It was Radical in politics, and had Roebuck as one of its founders, Bentley's Miscellany (1837-68) was exclusively devoted to novels, light liter- ature, and travels. Several of Ainsworth's romances, illustrated by Cruikshank, first saw the light in Bentley. The Nautical Magazne (1832) was addressed specially to XVIII.

Cheap publica- tions.

Statis- tics.

538

sailors, and Colburn's United Service Journal (1829) to both services. The Asiatic Journal (1816) dealt with Oriental subjects.

From 1815 to 1820 a number of low-priced and unwhole- some periodicals flourished. The Mirror (1823-49), a two- penny illustrated magazine, begun by John Limbird,' and the Mechanics Magazine (1823) were steps in a better direction. The political agitation of 1831 led to a further popular demand, and a supply of cheap and healthy serials for the reading multitude commenced with Chambers's Edinburgh Journal (1832), the Penny Magazine (1832-45) of Charles Knight, issued under the patronage of the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Knowledge, and the Saturday Magazine (1832-44), begun by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge. The first was published at 1}d. and the last two at 1d. Knight secured the best authors and artists of the day to write for and illustrate his magazine, which, though at first a commercial success, may have had the reason of its subsequent discontinuance in its literary excellence. At the end of 1832 it had reached a sale of 200,000 in weekly numbers and monthly parts. It came to an end in 1845 and was succeeded by Knight's Penny Magazine (1845), which was stopped after six monthly parts. These periodicals were followed by a number of penny weeklies of a lower tone, such as the Family Herald (1848), the London Journal (1845), and Lloyd's Miscellany ; the two former are still thriving. In 1850 the sale of the first of them was placed at 175,000 copies, the second at 170,000, and Lloyd's at 95,000. In 1846 fourteen penny and three halfpenny magazines, twelve social journals, and thirty-seven book-serials were produced every week in London. A further and permanent improvement in cheap weeklies for home reading may be traced from the foundation of Howittt's Journal (1847-49), and more especially Household Words (1850), conducted by Charles Dickens, All the Year Round (1859), by the same editor, and afterwards by his son, Once a Week (1859), and the Leisure Hour (1852). The plan of Wotes and Queries (1849), for the purpose of intercommunication among those interested in special points of literary and anti- quarian character, has led to

the adoption of similar depart- ments in a great number of newspapers and periodicals, and, besides several imitators in England, there are now parallel journals in Holland, France, and Italy.

Recent shilling monthlies began with Jfacmillan (1859), the Cornhill (1860), and Temple Bar (1860). The Corn- hill, first edited by Thackeray, was known for its specially literary tone down to 1883. St James's Magazine (1861), Belgravia (1866), St Paul's (1867-74), London Society (1862), and Zinsley's (1867) are devoted chiefly to novels and light reading. The sixpenny illustrated magazines commenced with Good Words (1860) and the Quiver (1861), both religious in tendency. In 1882 Fraser changed its name to Longman's Magazine, and was entirely popularized and reduced to sixpence. The Cornhill followed the same example in 1883, reducing its price to sixpence and devot- ing its pages to light reading. The Hnglish Illustrated Magazne (1883) was brought out in competition with the American [/arper and Century. Of the artistic period- icals we may signalize the Art Journal (1849), long known for its line engravings, the Portfolio (1870), which has done much to popularize etching, and the Magazine of Art (1878).

The following statistics furnish an idea of the marvel- lous increase in the number of periodicals issued at different times during the last fifty years. In figures submitted

1 John Limbird, to whom even before Chambers or Knight is due the carrying out the idea of a cheap and good periodical for the people, died so recently as 31st October 1883, without having achieved the worldly prosperity of his two followers.

PER POD Tre A as

to the House of Commons in 1864 Sir Edward Baines estimated the circulation of the monthly magazines in 1831 at no more than 125,000 copies; when he spoke the number had increased to 3,609,350. The weeklies might be reckoned in 1831 at about equal to the monthlies in circulation, and the miscellanéous serials at 120,000, amounting altogether to 420,000 copies. In 1864 the circulation of weeklies and monthlies reached a total of 6,094,950 (Journal of Statist. Soc., 1864, pp. 410-412),

Concurrently with this increase in the whole number pub- lished there may be observed an equally regular decrease in the average cost of each. In 1831 there were issued in London alone 177 monthlies, costing £17, 12s. 6d., or an average of 2s. apiece. At the end of 1833 there were 236 of the same class, costing £23, 3s. 6d., and the average price had decreased to 1s. 114d. Twenty years later, in 1853, there were 362 monthlies, costing £14, 17s. 6d., the average cost of each being now only 94d. (Knight's Old Printer and Modern Press, 263).

In London itself the increase of the weeklies, monthlies, and quarterlies at different periods has been as follows :—

Weekly. Monthly. Quarterly. Total. |

1833 21 236 25 282 1837 50 136 84 220 1844 60 227 38 325

1853 y 56 % 862 50 468 Included in 1863 Ba t 458 75 528 | 1874 50 462 84 596

1884 110 669 126 905

Extending the inquiry to the whole of the United Kingdom, and including every description of periodical, with the exception of annuals and newspapers, May's British and Irish Press Guide for the years 1874 and 1884 supplies this comparison :—

1874. | 1884. | 1874. | 1884.

IMetrGpOls….. ec… ne 541 fiddle |W aiillivansni cre cree steers net 1 12 Pe sie esenacersvern see 66 154 || Three timesa week….] .. 2 RVVAOS: 3s. sicaisneievese crane 15 26 I" Weellliy: fs cccoe vs o0.c.0 cs 53 114 SCO UUaTN rere elaine

Total….| 662 | 1041 || Half-yearly ……..... 4 16

Hameomlar aie ees cies. 28 47

Motalls.,.|) G62 1041

The chief classes into which the same periodicals may be divided are :—

Religious. Illustrated. Juvenile. Trade-organs. 1863 196 ye rs

1874 297 175 59 64 1884 350 333 100 137

Among the different periodicals issued in 1884 there were also 73 advocating temperance, 28 devoted to agri- culture, 57 family magazines, 31 financial, 15 insurance, 18 medical, 7 secularist, 9 tailoring, and 7 bicycling.

Indexes to English Periodicals.—Lists of the separate indexes to particular series are given in H. B. Wheatley's What ts an Index? 1879, and List of Bibliographies in the Reading Room of the British Musewm, 1881. The valuable and elaborate work of W. F. Poole, Index to Periodical Lit., Boston (Massachusetts), 1882, supplies an exhaustive alphabetical index to the titles of articles in 6205 volumes of Enghsh and American serials of the present century. Monthly supplements appear in the Library Journal.

Authorities.—'* Periodicals," in the British Museum catalogue ; Lowndes, Bibliographer's Manual, by Hy. G. Bohn, 1864; Cat. of Periodicals in the Bodl. Lib., part i., '' English Periodicals," 1878; Cat. of the Hope Collection of Early News- papersand Essayists in the Bodl. Lib., 1865; Scudder, Cat. of Scientisic Serials, 1879 ; Andrews, Hist. of Brit. Journalism, 1859; Cucheyal Clarigny, Hist. de la Presse en Angleterre et aux Etats Unis, 1857; Madden, Hist. of Irish Period. Lit., 1867; J. Grant, The Great Metropolis, ii. pp. 229-327; '' Periodical Essays of the Age of Anne," in N. American Rev., xlvi.; Drake, Ussays on the '' Spectator," "Tatler," &c., 1810-14; Courthope, Addison (''Engl. Men of Letters"), 1884; '¢Forgotten Periodical Publications," in Notes and Queries, ser. iii., vol. ix. 58 5 " Account of Periodical Literary Journals from 1681] to 1749," by S. Parkes, in Quart. Journ. of Sc., Lit., &c., xiii. 36,289; 'Last Century Magazines," in Fraser's

rerroprcAatrts

Mag., Sept. 1876, 325; '' Periodicals during 1712-32," in Notes and Queries, ser. iii., vol. ix. 72, &c., x. 134; '' Catholic Period. Lit.," 4b., ser. v., vol. xi. 427, 494; ''Early Roman Catholic Magazines," ib., ser. vi., vol.

fii. 43, &e., iv. 211; Timperley, Ency. of Lit. Anec., 1842; C. Knight, The Old Printer and the Modern Press, 1854, and Passages of a Working Life, 1864-65; Memoir of Robert Chambers, 1872; The London Cat, of Periodicals, Newspapers, &c., 1844-84; Mitchell, Newspaper Press Directory, 1846-84; May, British and Irish Press Guide, 1874-84; The Bookseller, Feb. 1867, June and July 1868, Aug. 1874, J uly

1379.

India and the British Colonics.—The first Indian periodical was the Calcutta Monthly Register (1790), which lasted but a short time. A Calcutta Literary Gazette came out in 1830. In 1844 appeared the first number of the Calcutta Review (1844), whieh is still the most important serial of the Indian empire. The Bombay Quarterly Review was founded in 1855. Madras had a Journal of Literature and Science and the Oriental Magazine and Indian Hurkuru (1819). The Keligious and Theological Magazine was produced at Colombo in 1833. The Christian College Magazine was commenced in 1883. At Singapore the Journal of the Indian Archipelago appeared from 1847 to 1855. The Chinese Repository (1832), edited at Canton by Morrison, dealt with the farther East.

See ‘‘ Periodical Literature in India” in Dark Blue, 1872-73.

Hubbard (Newspaper Directory) estimates the existing periodicals (omitting newspapers) of British North Ameriea at 652.

The number of weekly, monthly, and quarterly publications of Australia, Tasmania, and New Zealand is placed by the same authority at 570. The Melbourne Review (1876) deserves special mention.

ForeEIcn.

France.—We owe the literary journal to France, where it soon attained to a degrce of importance unapproached in any other country. The first idea may be traced in the Bureau d’ Adresse of Théophraste Renaudot, giving the proceedings of his conferences upon literary and scientific matters (1633-42). About the year 1663 Mézeray obtained a privilege for a regular literary periodical, which came to nothing, and it was left to Denis de Sallo,

counsellor of the parliament of Paris and a man of rare merit and learning, to actually carry the projeet into effect. The first number of the Journal des Savants appeared on 5th Jannary 1665, under the assumed name of the sieur d'Hédouville. The prospectus promised to give an account of the chief books published throughout Europe, obituary notices, a review of the progress of science, besides legal and ecclesiastical information and other matters of interest to cul- tivated persons. The criticisms, however, wounded alike authors and the clergy, and the journal was suppressed after a carcer of three months. Colbert, seeing the public utility of such a periodical, ordered the abbé Gallois, a contributor of De Sallo's, to re-establish it, an event which took place on 4th January 1666. It lingered mine years under the new editor, who was replaced in 1675 by the abbé de la Roque, and the latter in his turn by the president Cousin in 1686. From 1701 commenced a new era for the Journal, which was then acquired by the chancellor de Pontchartrain for the state and placed under the direction of a commission of learned men. Just before the Revolution it developed fresh activity, but the troubles of 1792 caused it to be diseontinued until 1796, when it again failed to appear after twelve numbers had been issued. In 1816 it was definitively re-established and replaced under Government patronage, remaining subject to the chancellor or garde-des-sceaux until 1857, when it was transferred to the control of the minister of public instruction. The present organization much resembles that of an academy. The menibers of the commis- sion are elected, approved of by the minister, and divided into assistants and authors, the latter furnishing at least three articles per annum at a fixed and modest rate of payment. All communica-tions are discussed at fortnightly conferences.

Louis Auguste de Bourbon, sovereign prince of Dombes, having transferred his parliament to Trévoux, set up a printing press, and was persuaded by two Jesuits, Michel le Tellier and Philippe Lalle- man, to establish the Mémoires pour servir al' Histoire des Sciences et des Arts (1701-67), more familiarly known as the Journal de Trévoux, long the best-informed and best-written journal in France. One feature of its career was its constant appeal for the literary assistance of outsiders. It was continued in a more popular style as Journal des Sciences et des Beaux-Arts (1768-75) by the abbé Aubert and by the brothers Castilhon (1776-78), and as Journal de littérature, des Sciences, et des Arts (1779-82) by the abbé Grosier.

The first legal periodieal was the Journal du Palais (1672) of Blondeau and Guéret, and the first devoted to medicine the Vowvelles Découvertes dans toutes les Parties de la Médecine (1679) of Nicolas ue Blegny, frequently spoken of as a charlatan, a term which some- times means simply a man of many ideas. Religious periodicals date from 1680 and the Journal Ecclésiastique of the abbé de la Roque. The prototype of the historico-literary periodical may be discovered m La Clef du Cabinet des Princes de 0 Europe (1704-6), familiarly known as Journal de Verdun, and carricd on under various titles down to 1794. ,

Literary criticism was no more free than political discussion, and

no person was allowed to trespass either upon the domain of the Journal des Savants or that of the Mercure de France without the payment of heavy subsidies. This was the origin of the clandestine press of Holland, and it was that country whieh for the next hundred years supplied the ablest periodical criticism from the pens of French Protestant refugees. During that period thirty-one Journals of the first elass proceeded from these sources. From its commencement the Journal des Savants was pirated in Holland, and for ten years a kind of joint issue made up with the Journal des Trévoux appeared at Amsterdam. From 1764 to 1775 miscel- laneous articles from different French and English reviews were added to this reprint. Bayle, a born journalist and the most able critic of the day, conceived the plan of the Nowvelles de la Répub- lique des Lettres (1684-1718), which at once became entircly success- ful and obtained for him during the three years of his control the dictatorship of the world of letters. He was succeeded as editor by La Roque, Barrin, Bernard, and Leclere. Bayle's method was followed in an equally meritorious periodical, the Histoire des Ouvrages des Savants (1687-1704) of H. Basnage de Beauvyal. Another continuator of Bayle was Jean Leclere, one of the most learned and acute eritics of the 18th century, who carried on three reviews, the Bibliotheque Universelle et Historique (1686-93), the Bibliotheque Choisie (1703-18), and the Bibliotheque Ancienne et Aloderne (1714-27). They form one scrics, and, besides valuable estimates of new books, include original dissertations, articles, and biographies like our modern learned

magazines. The Journal Littéraire (1713-22, 1729-36) was founded by a society of young men, who made it a rule to discuss their contributions in com- mon. Specially devoted to English literature were the Bibliotheque Anglaise (1716-28), the Mémoires Littératres de la Grande Bretagne (1720-24), the Bibliotheque Britannique (1733-34), and the Journal Britannique (1750-57) of Maty,! who took for his prineiple, ‘‘ pour penser avec liberté il faut penser seul.” One of these Dutch- printed reviews was L’ Ewrope Savante (1718-20), founded chiefly by Themiseul de Saint-Hyacinthe, with the intention of plaeing each separate department under the care of aspecialist. The Bibliothéque Germanique (1720-40) was established by Jacques Lenfant to do for northern Europe what the Bibliotheque Britannique did for England. It was followed by the Nouvelle Bibliotheque Germanique (1746-59). The Bibliotheque Raisonnée des Ouvrages des Savants (1728-58) was supplementary to Leclerc, and was succeeded by the Bibliotheque des Scienees et des Beauaz-Arts (1754-80). Nearly all of the preced- ing were produced either at Amsterdam or Rotterdam, and, although out of place in a precise geographical arrangement, really belong to France by the close ties of language and of blood.

Taking up the exaet chronological order again, we find the success of the English essay-papers led to their prompt introduction to the Continent. An incomplete translation of the Syectator was published at Amsterdam in 1714, and many volumes of extracts from the Zatler, Spectator, and Guardian were issued in France early in the 18th century. Marivaux brought out a Syeetateur Lranceis (1722), which was coldly received ; it was followed by fourteen or fifteen others under the titles of La Spectatrice (1728- 30), Le Radoteur (1775), Le Babillard (1778-79), &c. Of a similar eharactcr was Le Pour et le Contre (1723-40) of the abbé Prévost, which contained anecdotes and criticism, with special reference to Great Britain. Throughout the 18th century, in France as in England, a favourite literary method was to write of social subjects under the assumed character of a foreigner, generally an Oriental, with the title of Turkish Spy, Lettres Chinoises, &c. These produc- tions were usually issned in periodical form, and, besides an immense amount of worthless tittle-tattle, contain some valuable matter.

During the first half of the eentury France has little of import- ance to show in periodical literature. The Nouvelles Keclésias- tiques (1728-1803) were first printed and circulated secretly by the Jansenists in opposition to the Constitution Unigenitus. The Jesuits retaliated with the Supplément des Nowvelles Lcclésiastiques (1734-48). The promising title may havc had something to do with the temporary success of the Mémoires Secrets de la République des Lettres (1744-48) of the marquis d'Argens. In the Observations sur les Eerits Modernes (1735-48) Desfontaines held the gates of Philistia for eight years against the Encyclopedists and even the redoubtable Voltaire himself. It was continued by the Jugements sur quelques Ouvrages nowveausz (1744-45). The name of Freron, perhaps the most vigorous enemy Voltaire ever encountered, was long connected with Lettres sur quelques Ecrits de ee Temps (1749- 54), followed by L' Année Littéraire (1754-90). Among the con- tributors of Fréron was another manufacturer of criticism, the abbe de la Porte, who, having quarrelled with his confrere, founded Observations sur la Littérature Moderne (1749-52) and L' Observateur Littéraire (1758-61). .; ;

A number of special organs came into existence about this period. The first treating of agriculture and domestic economy was the Journal Econoniyue (1761-72); a Journal de Commerce was founded

1 Matthew Maty, M.D., born in Holland, 1718, died principal librarian of the British Museum, 1776. He settled in England in,1740, published several books, and wrote the preface to Gibbon's first work, Etude de la Littérature.

in 1759 ; periodical biography may be first seen in the Nécrologe des Hommes Célébres de Franee (1764-82); the political economists established the Ephémérides du Citoyen in 1765 ; the first Journal d' Education was founded in 1768, and the Courrier de la Afode in the same year; the theatre had its first organ in the Journal des Thédtres (1770); in the same year were produced a Journal de Musique and the Eneyclopédie Militaire; the sister service was supplied with a Jowrnal de Marine in 1778. We have already noticed several journals specially devoted to one or other foreign literature. It was left to Fréron, Grimm, Prévost, and others in 1754 to extend the idea to all foreign productions, and the Journal Etranger (1754-62) was founded

for this purpose. The Gazette Littéraire (1764-66), which had Voltaire, Diderot, and Saint- Lambert among its editors, was intended to swamp the small fry of criticism; the Jowrnal des Dames (1759-78) was of a light magazine class ; and the Journal de Monsieur (1776-83) had three phases of existence, and died after extending to thirty volumes. The Mémoires Secrets pour servir a UV Histoire de la République des Lettres (1762-87), better known as Mémoires de Bachawmont, from the name of their founder, furnish a minute account of the social and literary history for a period of twenty-six years. Of a similar character was the Correspondance Littéraire Secréte (1774-93), to which Métra was the chief contributor. JZ' Esprit des Journaux (1772-1818) forms an important literary and historical collection, which is rarely to be found complete.

The movement of ideas at the close of the century may best be traced in the Annales Politiques, Civiles, et Littéraires (1777-92) of Linguet. The Décade Philosophique (year V. or 1796/97), founded by Ginguené, is the first periodical of the magazine class which appeared after the storms of the Revolution. It was a kind of resurrection of good taste; under the empire it formed the sole refuge of the opposition. By a decree of 17th January 1800 the consulate reduced the number of Parisian journals to thirteen, of which the Déeade was oue; all the others, with the exception of those dealing solely with science, art, commerce, and advertise- ments, were suppressed. A report addressed to Bonaparte by Fiévée ! in the year XI. (1802/3) furnishes a list of fifty-one of these periodicals. In the year XIII. (1804/5) only seven non-political serials were permitted to appear.

Between 1815 and 1819 there was a constant struggle between freedom of thought on the one hand and the censure, the police, and the law-officers on the other. This oppression led to the device of ''semi-periodical" publications, of which Za Minerve Francaise (1818-20) is an instance. It was the Satire Meénippéc of the Restoration, and was brought out four times a year at irregular intervals. Of the same class was the Bibliotheque Historique (1818- 20), another anti-royalist organ. The censure was re-established in 1820 and abolished in 1828 with the monopoly. It has always seemed impossible to carry on successfully in France a review upon the lines of those which have become so nuinerous and important in England. The short-lived Revwe Francaise (1828-30), founded by Guizot, Rémusat,

De Broglie, and the doctrinaires, was an attempt in this direction. The well-known Revue des Dewx Mondes was established in 1829 by Ségur-Dupeyron and Mauroy, but it ceased to appear at the end of the year, and its actual existence dates from its acquisition in 1831 by Francois Buloz,? a masterful editor, under whose energetic management it soon achieved a world- wide reputation. The most distinguished names in French litera- ture have been among its contributors, for whom it has been styled the ‘‘ vestibule of the Academy.” It was preceded by a few months by the Revue de Paris (1829-45), founded by Veron, who introduced the novel to periodical literature. In 1834 this was purchased by 3uloz, and brought out concurrently with his other Revue. While the former was exclusively literary and artistic, the latter dealt more with philosophy. The Levue Indépendante (1841-48) was founded by Pierre Leroux, George Sand, and Viardot for the democracy. The times of the consulate and the empire were the subjects dealt with by the Revwe de I Empire (1842-48). In Le Correspondant (1843), established by Montalembert and De Falloux, the Catholics and Legitimists had a valuable supporter. The Revue Contemporaine (1852), founded by the comte de Belval as a royalist organ, had joined to it in 1856 the Athenzum Francais. The Revue Germanique (1858) exchanged its exclusive name and character in 1865 to the Revue Moderne. The Revue Huropéennc (1859) was at first subventioned like the Revue Contemporaine, from which it soon withdrew Government favour. The Revue Nationale (1860) appeared quarterly, and succeeded to the Magazin de Libraire (1858).

The list of current periodicals, to which should be added the

_1 The novelist and publicist Joseph Fiévée (1767-1839), known for his rela- tions with Napoleon I., has been made the subject for a study by Sainte-Beuve (Causeries, v. 172).

2 This remarkable man (1804-1877) began lifeasa shepherd. Educated through the charity of M. Naville, he came to Paris as a compositor, and by translating from the English earned sufficient to purchase the moribund Revue des Deux Mondes, which acquired its subsequent position in spite of the tyrannical editorial behaviour of the proprietor. M. Monod (Academy,

20th Jan. 1877) states that latterly Buloz enjoyed an income of 365,000 francs from the Revue.

PERITOSBPCAES

Revue des Deux Mondes and the Correspondant, include the following. Among those devoted to literature and criticism nay be mentioned the Revue Britannique (1825) ; the Revue Critique d' Histoire et de Littérature (1856), oue of the first of Kuropean weekly reviews ; Revue Politique et Littératre, saccessor to the Kevue des Cours Littér- aires (1863), also weekly ; Le Livre (1880), confined to bibliography and literary history, monthly ; and the Nowvelle Revue (1879), already a serious rival of the Revwe des Deux Mondes, which it resembles in character and mode of publication, although distinctly Republican in politics. History and archeology are represented by the Bibliotheque de U Ecole des Chartes (1839), which deals especially with the Middle Ages, and is published every two months; the Cabinet ITistorique (1855), a monthly, devoted to MSS. and un- published documents ; the Revwe Historique (1876), two-monthly ; and the monthly Revue Archéologique (1860). The fine arts are cared for by the Gazette des Beaux-Arts (1859), monthly, and L' Art (1875), published weekly. We may also mention the Revue Philosophique (1876), monthly, and Le Tour du Monde (1860), an illustrated weekly, consisting entirely of voyages and travels.

In 1883, apart from political newspapers, there were published in Paris 1379 periodicals of all kinds. They may be classified in the following order :—theology 96, jurisprudence 130, reviews 75, popular reading 169, history and geography 37, political economy and finance 248, science generally 26, mathematics 6, medicine 101, natural science 21, military 14, naval 12, fine arts 75, fashion 81, education 46, technology 137, agriculture 46, sport 24, miscellaneous 40.

Authorities. —The subject of French periodicals has been exhaustively treated in the valuable works of Eugene Hatin,—Histoire de la Presse en France, 1859-61, 8 vols. ; Les Gazettes de Hollande et la Presse Clandestine awx 17e et 18¢ Siecles, 1865 ; and Bibliographie de la Presse Périodique Francaise, 1866. See also Catalogue de ' Histoire de France, 1855-79, 11 vols. ; V. Gébé, Catalogue des Journaux, ctc., publiés & Paris, 1879; Brunet,

Manuel du Libraire, avec Supple- ment, 1860-80, 8 vols.; H. Le Soudier, Catalogue-tarif des Journaux, Revues, et

Publications ,Périodiques parus en Paris jusqu'en 1883, 1888; F. Mege, Les Journaus et Ecrits Périodiques de la Basse Auvergne, 1869.

Germany.—The earliest trace of the literary journal in Germany German)

is to be found 'in the Hrbauliche Monatsunterredungen (1663) of the poet Johann Rist and in the Miscellanea curiosa medico- physica (1670-1704) of the Academia nature curiosoruam Leopoldina-Caro- lina, the first scientific annual, uniting the features of the Journal des Savants and of the Philosophical Transactions. D.G. Morhof, the author of the well-known Polyhistor, conceived the idea of a monthly serial to be devoted to the history of modern books and learning, which came to nothing. While professor of morals at Leipsie, Otto Mencke planned the Acta Eruditorum, with a view to make known, by means of analyses, extracts, and reviews, the new works produced throughout Europe. In 1680 he travelled in England and Holland in order to obtain literary assistance, and the first number appeared in 1682, under the title of Acta Erudi- torum Lipsiensiwm, and, like its successors, was written in Latin. Among the contributors to subsequent numbers were Lcibnitz, Seckendorf, and Cellarius. A volume came out each year, with supplements. After editing about 30 volumes Mencke died, leaving the publication to his son, and the Acta remained in the possession of the family down to 1745, when they extended to 117 volumes, which form an extremely valuable history of the learning of the period. A selection of the dissertations and articles was published at Venice in 7 vols. 4to, 1740. The Acta soon had imitators. The Ephemerides Litterariz (1686) came out at Hamburg in Latin and French. The Nova Litteraria maris Balthici et Septentrionis (1698- 1708) was more especially devoted to north Germany and the univer- sities of Kiel, Rostock, and Dorpat. Supplementary to the preceding was the Nova Litteraria Germanie collecta Hamburgi (1703-9), which from 1707 widened its field of view to the whole of Europe. At Leip- sic was produced the Teutsche Acta Eruditorum (1712), an excellent periodical, edited by J. G. Rabener and C. G. Jécher, and continued from 1740 to 1758 as Zuverldssige Nachrichten. It included portraits. The brilliant and enterprising Christian

Thomasius brought out periodically, in dialogue form, his Monatsgcsprdche (1688-90), written by himself in the vernacular, to defend his novel theories against the alarmed pedantry of Germany, and, together with Strahl, Buddeus, and others, Observationes selecta ad rem litterariam spectantes (1700), written in Latin. W. E. Tenzel also published Monatliche Untcrredungen (1689-98), continued from 1704 as Curt- cuse Bibliothek, and treating various subjects in dialogue form. After the death of Tenzel the Bibliothek was carried on under difier- ent titles by C. Woltereck, J. G. Krause, and others, down to 1721. Of much greater importance than these was the Afonatlicher Auszug (1701), supported by J. G. Eccard and Leibnitz. Another periodical on Thomasius's plan was Newe Unterredungen (1702), edited by N.H.Gundling. The Gundlingiana of the latter person, published at Halle (1715-32), and written partly in Latin and partly in German by the editor, contained a miscellaneous collection of juri- dical, historical, and theological observations and dissertations. _ Nearly all departments of learning possessed their several special periodical organs about the close of the 17th or the beginning of the 18th century. The Anni Franciscanorwm (1680) was edited by the Jesuit Stiller; and J. S. Adami published, between 1690 and 1713, certain theological repertories under the name of Delici#.

ria FOr TCats

Historical journalism was first represented by Electa Juris Publict (1709), philology by Neue Acerra Philologica (1715-23), philosophy by the Acta Philosophorum (1715-27), medicine by Der patriotische Medikeus (1725), music by Der musikalische Patriot (1725), and edu- cation by Die Matrone (1728). Reference has already been made to the Miscellanea curiosa medico-physica (1670-1704) ; the Aonatliche Erzdhlungen (1689) was also devoted to natural science.

Down to the early part of the 18th century Halle and Leipsic were the headquarters of literary journalism in Germany. Other centres began to feel the need of similar organs of opinion. Hamburg had its Niederstichsische neue Zeitungen, styled from 1731 Nieder- sachsische Nachrichten, which came to an end in 1736, and Mecklen- burg owned in 1710 its Neuer Vorrath, besides others brought out at Rostock. Prussia owes the foundation

of its literary periodicals to G. P. Schulze and M. Lilienthal, the former of whom began with Gelehrtes Preussen (1722), continued under different titles down to 1729; the latter helped with the Hrldutertes Preussen (1724), and was the sole editor of the Acta Borussica (1730-32). Pomerania and Silesia also had their special periodicals in the first quarter of the 18th century. Franconia commenced with Nova Litteraria, and Hesse with the Kurze Historie, bothin 1725. In south Germany appeared the Wiirttembergische Nebenstunden (1718), and the Par- nassus Boicus, first published at Munich in 1722. The Frankfirter gelehrte Zeitungen was founded in 1736 by S. T. Hocker, and existed down to 1790. Austria owned Das merkwiirdige Wien.

In 1715 the Nene Zeitungen von gelehrten Saehen was founded by J. G. Krause at Leipsic and carried on by various editors down to 1797. It was the first attempt to apply the form of the weekly political journal to learned subjects, and was imitated in the Ver- mischte Bibliothek (1718-20), and the Bibliotheca Novissima (1718- 21), both founded by J. G. Fraucke in Halle. Shortly after the foundation of the university of Gottingen appeared Zeitungen von gelehrten Sachsen (1789), still famous as the Géttingische gelchrte Anzeigen, which during its long and influential career has been conducted by professors of that university, and among others by Haller, Heyne, and Eichhorn.

Influenced by a close study of English writers, the two Swiss Bodmer and Breitinger established Die Discurse der Maler (1721), and, by paying more attention to the matter of works reviewed than to their manner, commenced a critical method new to Germany. The system was attacked by Gottsched, who, educated in the French school, erred in the opposite direction. The war between tne two parties gave fresh life to the literature of the country, but German criticism of the higher sort can only be said really to begin with Lessing. The Berlin publisher Nicolai founded the Bibliothek der schinen Wissenschaften, and afterwards handed it over to C. F. Weisse in order to give his whole energy to the Briefe, die neueste Literatur betreffend (1759-65), carried on by the help of Lessing, Mendelssohn, and Abbt. To Nicolai is also due the Allgemeine deutsche Bibliothek (1765-1806), which embraced a much wider field and soon became extremely influential. Herder founded the Kritische Wélder in 1766. Der deutsche Merkur (1773-

89, revived 1790-1810) of Wieland was the solitary representative of the French school of criticism. A new era in German periodical literature began when Bertuch brought out at Jena in 1785 the Allgemeine Literaturzeitung, to which the leading writers of the country were contributors. On being transferred to Halle in 1804 it was re- placed by the Jenaische allgemeine Literaturzettung, founded by Eichstidt. Both reviews enjoyed a prosperous carecr down to the year 1848,

At the commencement of the present century we find the Erlanger Literaturzeitung (1799-1810), which had replaced a Gelehrte Zeitung (1746) ; the Leipziger Literaturzeitung (1800-34) ; the Heidelbergische Jahrbiicher der Literatur (1808); and the Wiener Literaturzeitung (1813-16), followed by the Wiener Jahrbiteher der Literatur (1818- 48), both of which received Government support and were like the Quarterly Review in their Conservative politics and high literary tone. Hermes, founded at Leipsic in 1819 by W. T. Krug, was dis- tinguished for its erudition, and came out down to 1831. One of the most remarkable periodicals of this class was the Jahrbiicher fur wissenschaftliche Kritik (1827-46), first published by Cotta. The Hallische Jahrbticher (1838-42) was founded by Ruge and Echter- meyer, and supported by the Government. The Repertorium der gesammten deutschen Literatur, established by Gersdorf in 18384, and known after 1848 as the Leipziger Repertorium der deutschen und auslindischen Literatur, existed to 1860. Buchner founded the Literarische Zeitung at Berlin in 1834. It was continued by Brandes down to 1849. The political troubles of 1848 and 1849 Were most disastrous to the welfare of the literary and miscellaneous periodicals. Gersdorf’s Repertorium, the Gelehrte Anzeigen of Gottin- gen and of Munich, and the Heidelberg Jahrbiicher were the sole survivors. The Allgemeine Monatsehrift fir Literatur (1850), con- ducted after 1851 by Droysen, Nitzsch, and others, continued only down to 1854; the Literarisches Centralblatt (1850) had a longer existence. The Blatter fur literarische Unterhaliung sprang out of the Literarisches Wochenblatt (1818), founded by Kotzebue ; since 1865 it has been edited by R. Gottschall with considerable

success. Many of the literary journals did not disdain to occupy themselves with the fashions, but the first periodical of any merit specially devoted to the subject was the Bazar (1855). The first to popularize science was Natur (1852). The Hauwsbldtter (1855), a bi-monthly magazine, was extremely successful. The Salon (1868) followed more closely the type of the English magazine,

About this period arose a great nuinber of serials for popular reading, known as “Sontagsblitter,” of which the Gartcnlaube (1858) and Daheim are cxamples. Of a more solid character are the Deuisches Musewm (1851-57) of Prutz and Frenzel; the Grenzboten ; the Preussische Jahrbiicher (1858); the Berliner Revue (1855); Unsere Zeit (1857), at first only a kind of supplement to Brockhaus’s Conversationslexikon, but now an important review of matters of contemporary interest ; Die Gegenwart (1872); the new Literatur- zettung (1874) of Jena; the Deutsche Rundschau (1874), conducted upon the method of the Revue des Deux Mondes ; and many others.

Periodicals have been specialized in Germany to an extent perhaps unequalled in any other country. Those of a really high class have become so numerous and form so marked a feature in the current literature that it may be useful to give a classified list of the chief of them, including the many Jahresberichte which supply summaries of the works published annually in particular departments. BIBLIOGRAPHICAL AND LITERARY :—FPetzholdt’s newer Anzeiger ; Centralblatt fiir Bibliothekswissenschaft ; Allgemeine Bib- liographie fiir Deutschland ; Bibliographie und literarische Chronik der Schweiz; Polytechnische Bibliothek ; Blatter fiir literarische Un- terhaltung, cd. by Rud. von Gottschall ; Literarisches Centralblatt fiir Deutschland; Dte Gegenwart, Die Grenzboten; Deutsche Rund- schau; Im neuen Reich; Preussische Jahrbicher ; Magazin fir die Literatur des In- wnd Auslandes; Die neue Zeit; Archiv f. Literaturgeschiehte ; Westermann’s tllustrirte deutsche Monatshefte. THEOLOGY :—Der Katholik ; Theologisehe Literaturzeitung; Theo- logische Studien und Kritiken ; Theologische Studien aus Wirttem- berg; Theologische Quartalschrift ; Zeitschrift fir Kirchengeschichte ; Neue evangelische Kirchen-Zeitung ; Protestantische Kirehen-Zeitung ; Monatsschrift fiir Geschichte d. Judenthums. aw,

POLITICAL Economy, &c. :—Jahrbueh f. Gesetzgcbung ; Jahrbuch der deutsehen Gerichtsverfassung ; Zeitschrift fiir Rechtsgeschichic ; Jahrbuch der preussischen Gerichtsverfassung ; Annalend. Reichsgeriehts ; Seuffert's Archiv fiir Entscheidung der obersten Gerichte ; Seuffert's Blatter f. Reehtsanwendung ; Jahrbuch fiir das deutsche Versicherungswesen ; Jahrbiicher fiir Nationalékonomie wnd Statistik ; Zeitschrift f. ge- sammte Staatswissenschaft; Vierteljahrsschrift fir Volkswirischaft ; Statistisehe Monatsschrift. MmEpICINE AND SuRGERY :— Archiv fiir Anthropologie; Archiv f. experimentelle Pathologie ; Schmidt's Jahrbiteher der in- und auslindischen ges. Medicin ; Zeitschrift f. klin. Medicin; Archiv fiir Anatomie und Physiologie; Morpho- logisehes Jahrbuch ; Archiv fiir Gyndkologie ; Deutsche Zeitschrift fir Chirurgie; Archiv f. klin. Chirurgie; Gracfe's Archiv ; Viertel- jahrssehrift fiir geriehtl. Medicin. NatuRAL ScrENcE :—Archw fiir Anatomie u. Physiologie; Archiv fiir Naturgeschichte ; Annalen der Physik und Chemie; Annalen der Mathematik und Physik ; Botanischer Jahresbericht ; Botan. Jahrbiicher ; Flora ; Botanische Zeitung ; Zoologischer Jahresbericht ; Zeitschrift fiir wissenschafil. Zoologie; Jahresbericht tiber d. Fortschritte d. Chemie ; Liebig's Annalen d. Chemie. Puttosopay :—Philosophische Monatshefte ; Zeitschrift fiir Philosophie, Epucation :—Lheinische Blitter ; Neue Jahrbiicher fiir DPhilologie; Pédagogischer Jahresbericht. JUVENILE LITERATURE :—Herzblatichens Zeitvertreib; Deutsche Jugend, CLASSICAL ARCHEOLOGY AND PHILOLOGY :—Jahrbiicher fiir elass. Philologie ; Hermes ; Rheinisches Museum ; Philologus ; Archiologische Zeitung; Jahresberichte ub. d. Fortschritie d. class. Alterthumswissenschaft. ORYENTAL LITERATURE :— Zeitschrift d. deutschen morgenlindischen Gesellschaft ; Zeitschrift f. Vilkerpsycho- logic. MopErN LANGUAGES :—Anglia ; Archiv f. d. Studium d. neueren Sprachen; Germania; Zeitschrift f. deut. Alterthum. History, &c.:—Sybel's hist. Zeitschrift ; Jahresberichte der Ge- schichtswissenschaft; Archiv f. Anthropologie ; Archiv f. oesterr. Geschichte; Das Staatsarchiv; Forschungen 2. deug. Geschichte ; Baltische Studien ; Zeits. f. Muscologie ; Zeits. f. Numismatik. GEO- GRAPIY:—Geogr. Jahrbuch; Globus; Das Ausland ; Petermann's Mitteilungen; Zeitschrift f. Ethnologie. MATHEMATICS AND ASTRO- NomMy :—Jahrbuch tb. d. Fortschritte d. Mathematik; Archiv d. Mathematik u. Physik; Journal f. d. reine u. angewandte Math. ; Zeitschrift f. Mathematik ; Astronomische Nachrichten.

ARMY AND Navy :—Jahresberichte ub. d. Verinderungen im Mirlitarwesen , Deutsche Heeres-Zeitung ; Jahrbiicher f. d. deut. Armee wu. Marine ; Militar -Literaturzeitung ; Militdr -Wochenblatt ; Strefleur's dsterr. Militér-Zeitschrift. Trape Orcans, Xe. :—Bérsenblatt f. d. deut. Buchhandel ; Deutsches Handelsarchiv; Stammer, Jahresbericht i. d. Zuckerfabrikation; Gewerbchalle Polytechn. Notizblatt. ARCHI- TECTURE, ENGINEERING, &c. :— Allgemeine Bauzecitung ; Der Civil- ingenieur ; Dingler's polytechnisches Journal ; Zeitschrift f. Baw- wesen ; Osterr. Zeitschrift f. Berg.- u. Hiittenwesen ; Jahrbuch der Erfindungen auf d. Gebieten der Physik u. Chemie, der Teehnologie, u.s.w. RAILWAYS, TELEGRAPHY, SHIPPING, &. :—Hansa ; Mit- teilungen aus d. Gebiete d. Seewesens ; Elektrotechnische Zeitschrift ;

Switzer- land.

Ttaly.

542 PHRIiODIC ALS

Nauttisehes Jahrbuch; Der Maschinenbauer. ForESTRY AND SPort- ING : —orstliche Blatter ; Allg. Forst-u. Jagdzettung ; Zeitschrift J Forst- u. Jagdwesen. AGRICULTURE, GARDENING, &c. :—Bienenzeit- ung; Forschungen auf d. Gebiete d. Agrikulturphysik ; Landwirth- schafiliche Jahrbiicher ; Allg. Zeitung fir deut. Land- u. Forstwirthe ; Gartenjlora ; Neubert's deut. Gartenmagazin, Deut. allg. Zeitung J. Landwirthsehaft, u.s.w. THEATRES :—Newer Theaterdiener ; Miinehener Theater-Journal. Finn Arts :—Jahrbuch d. k. preuss. Kunstsammlungen ; Die graphisehen Kiinste ; Zettsehrift f Kunst- und Antiquitdtensammler. Music :—Neue Berliner Musikzettung ; Neue Zetisehrift 7. Musik. Fiction :—Deut. Romanzettung. STENO- GRAPHY :—Jahrbueh d. Schule Gabelsbergers ; Alig. dewtsehe Steno- grafenzettung. PorputarR READING :—Daheim; Die Gartenlaube ; Ueber Land und Meer; Vom Fels zum Meer. FREEMASONRY :— Freimaurerzeitung. Humorous:—Fliegende Blatter; Kladder- adatseh. CHESS:— Deutsehe Sehaehzeitung. Misceuu. ILLvs- TRATED :—Zllustrirte Zeitung. ; 7

There were in Austria in 1848 22 literary and 41 special period- icals, and in 1873 110 literary and 413 special periodicals (see the extremely valuable

statistical inquiry of Dr Johann Winckler, Die period. Presse Oesterreiehs, 1875). Germany possessed in 1848 about 947 periodicals (Deutseher Zeitungs-Katalog, 1848), and in 1884 1550 (Gracklauer's Deutseher Journal- Katalog fiir 1884). According to the Deutseher Zeitsehriften-Katalog, 1874, there were published in Austria, Germany, and Switzerland in 1874 2219 periodicals in the German language.

Authorities—For the general history of the subject consult C. Juncker, Schediasma de ephemeridibus eruditorum, Leipsic, 1692; H. Kurz, Geschichte der deutschen Literatur, Leipsic, 1852; R. Prutz, Geschichte des deutschen Jour- nalismus, vol. i., 1845—unfortunately it does not go beyond 1713; H. Wuttke, Die deutschen Zeitschriften, 1875; and P. E. Richter, Verzeichniss der Periodica im Besitze der k. off. Bibl. zu Dresden, 1880.

Switzerland.—The Nova Litteraria Helvetica (1703-15) of Zurich is the earliest literary periodical which Switzerland can show. From 1728 to 1734 a Bibliotheque Italique, and towards the end of the century the Bibliotheque Britannique (1796-1815), dealing with agriculture, literature, and science, in three separate series, were published at Geneva. The latter was followed by what still re- mains the leading periodical of French-speaking Switzerland, the Bibliotheque UOniverselle (1816), which also has a scientific and a literary series. The Revwe Suisse (1838) was produced at Neuchatel.

Jtaly.—Prompted by M. A. Ricci, Francesco Nazzari, the future cardinal, established in 1668 the Giornale de' Letterati wpon the plan of the Journal des Savants. His collaborateurs each agreed to undertake the criticism of a separate literature, while Nazzari re- tained the general editorship and the analysis of the French books. The journal was continued to 1675, and another series was carried on to 1769. Bacchini brought out at Parma (1688-90) and at Modena (1692-97) a periodical with a similar title. A much better known Giornale was that of Apostolo Zeno, founded with the help of Maffci and Muratori (1710), continued after 1718 by Pietro Zeno, and after 1728 by Mastraca and Paitoni. Another Giornale, to which Fabroni contributed, was published at Pisa in 1771 ; it has been continued almost down to our own times. The Galleria di Minerva was first published at

Venice in 1696. One of the many merits of the antiquary Lami was his connexion with the Novelle Letterarie (1740-70), founded by him, and after the first two years almost entirely written by him. Its learning and impartiality gave it much authority. The Frusta Letteraria (1763-65) was brought out at Venice by Giuseppe Baretti under the pseudonym of Aristarco Scannabue. The next that deserve mention are the Giornale Enct- elopedico (1806) of Naples, followed by the Progresso delle Seienze (1833-48) and the Museo di Scienze e Letteratura of the same city, and the Giornale Areadico (1819) of Rome. Among the contributors to the Poligrafo (1811) of Milan were Monti, Perticari, and some of the first names in Italian literature. The Biblioteca Italiana (1816-40) was founded at Milan by the favour of the Austrian Govern- ment, and the editorship was offered to and declined by Ugo Foscolo. It rendered service to Italian literature by its opposition to the Della-Cruscan tyranny. Another Milanese serial was the Concilia- fore (1818-20), which, although it only lived two years, will be remembered for the endeavours made by Silvio Pellico, Camillo Ugoni, and its other contributors to introduce a more dignified and courageous method of criticism. After its suppression and the falling off in interest of the Biblioteca Ttaliana the next of any merit to appear was the Antologia, a monthly periodical brought out at Florence in 1820 by Gino Capponi and Giampetro Vieusseux, but suppressed in 1833 on account of an epigram of Tommaseo, a principal writer. Some striking papers were contributed by Giuseppe Mazzini. Naples had in 1832 Progresso of Carlo Troya, helped by Tommaseo and Centofanti, and Palermo owned the Giornale di Statistica (1834), suppressed eight years later. The Archivio Storico, consisting of reprints of documents with historical dissertations, dates from 1842, and was founded by Vieusseux and Gino Capponi. The Civilta Cattoliea (1850) is still the organ of the Jesuits. The Rivista Contemporanea (1852) was founded at Turin in emulation of the Revue des Deux Mondes, which has been the type followed by so many Continental periodicals; it still appears. The Politeenieo

(1839) of Milan was suppressed in 1844 and revived in 1859. The Nuova Antologia (1866) has already acquired a well-deserved reputa- tion as a high-class review and magazine. Its rival, the Rivista Europea, is now considered the special organ of the Florentine men of letters. The Rasseyna Settimanale was a weekly political and literary review, which after eight

years of existence gave place to a daily newspaper, the Rassegna. The Archivio Trentino (1882) is the organ of “Italia Irredenta.” The Rassegna Nazionale, con- ducted by the marchese Manfredo di Passano, a chief of the moder- ate clerical party, the Nuova Rivista of Turin, the Fanfulla della Domeniea, and the Gazzetta Letteraria may also be mentioned, During the last few years Italy has been showing such vigour in her periodical literature that it may be worth while to append the titles of the chief of those which are now appearing: Annali di Matematiea (1867); Annuario di Giwrisprudenza (1883) ; Archivio dt Statistiea (1876); Archivio storieo Lombardo (1874); Archivio Veneto (1871); Archivio per lo Studio delle Tradiziont popolart; Archivio per la Zoologia; Il Bibliofilo; Bollettino di Archeologia eristiana; Il Filangiert (1876); La Natura (1884); Nuovo Giornale botanieo (1869) ; Grornale degli Eruditi (1883) ; Giornale di Filologia Romanza ; Giornale storieo della Letteratura Italiana (1883) ; Nuova Rivista internazionale (1879) ; Il Politeenteo (1858) ; La Rassegna Italiana (1881) ; Rivista storica Italiana (1884) ; Revue Internationale (1888).

Not counting political newspapers, there were published in Italy in the year 1871 133 literary periodicals, 43 devoted to the fine arts, 132 commercial, 49 scientific, 19 administrative, 20 humorous, &e. showing a total of 416. Ten years later, in 1881, the number had increased to 892, of which 46 were religious, 23 administrative, 114 scientific, 52 agricultural, 36 humorous, &c.

Authorities.See G. Ottino, La Stampa periodica in Italia, Milan, 1875; Raccolta dei periodici presentata all’ Esposizione in Milano, 1881; A. Roux, La littérature contemporaine en Italie (1873-83), Paris, 1883.

Belgyium.—The Journal Eneyelopédique (1756-93), founded by Belginr P. Rousseau, made Liége a propagandist centre for the philosophical party. In the same city was also first established L’ Esprit des Journaux (1772-1818), styled by Sainte-Beuve “cette considérable et excellente collection,” but “journal voleur et compilateur.” The Journal historique et littéraire (1788-90) was founded at Luxem- burg by the Jesuit De Feller ; having been suppressed there, it was transferred to Liége, and subsequently to Maestricht. It is one of the most curious of the Belgian periodicals of the

18th century, and contains most precious materials for the national history. “A complete set is very rare and much sought after. The Revue Belge (1835-43), in spite of the support of the best writers of the kingdom, its successor the Revue de Liége (1844-47), the Trésor Nattonal (1842-43), published at Brussels, and the Revue de Belgique (1846-51) were all shortlived. The Revue de Bruzelles (1837-48), supported by the nobility and the clergy, had a longer career. The Revue Nationale was the champion of Liberalism, and came to an end in 1847, The Messager des Seiences historiques (1833), which still comes out at Ghent, has been much more successful, and is in repute on account of its historical and antiquarian character. The Revwe Catholique is also still published by the pro- fessors of the university of Louvain. In 1846 it began a contro- versy with the Journal historique et littéraire of Kersten (1834) upon the origin of human knowledge, which lasted for many years and excited great attention. The Revue Trimestrielle was founded at Brussels-by Van Bemmel in 1854, The Athenewm Beige (1868) did not last long.

Among Flemish serials may be mentioned the Nederduitsehe Flemis| Letteroefeningen (18384) ; the Belgiseh Museum (1836-46), edited by Willems ; the Broederhand, which did not appear after 1846 ; the Taalverbund of Antwerp ; the Kunst- en Letterblad (1840-43) ; and the Viaemsehe Rederyker (1844). ‘

The Annales des Travaux Publies (1843), the Bulletin de U Indus- trie (1842), the Journal des Beaux-Arts (1858), the Catholic Précis historiques (1852), the Protestant Chrétien Belge (1850), Van Bene- den’s Arehives de Biologie, the Revue de Belgique (1868), and the Revue de Droit international are represcntative of their several respective classes.

It has been calculated that in 1860 there were 51 periodicals published in Belgium. In 1884 the number had increased to 412.

See U. Capitaine, Recherches sur les jowrnaua et les écrits périodiques Liégeois, 1850; Relevé de tous les écrits périodiques qui se publient dans le royaume de Belgique, 1875; Catalogue des journaux, revues, et publications périodiques de la Belgique, 1883; Annuaire de la libraire Belge, 1884.

Holland.—This country occupies a distinguished position in the Hollan history of the periodical literature of the 18th century, from the labours of the French refugees already referred to (see p. 539). The first serial written in Dutch was the Boekzaal van Huropa (1692-

1708, and 1715-48), which had several changes of name during its long life. The next of any note was the Republijk der Geleerden (1710-48). The English Spectator was imitated by J. van Effen in his Misanthrope (1711-12), written in French, and in the Hollandsehe Speetator (1731-35), in Dutch. An important serial was the long- lived Vaderlandsehe Letteroefeningen (17 61). The Algemeene Kumnst- en Letterbode (1788) was long the leading review of Holland ; in

t i 4

en- ark,

eland.

orway.

weden.

pain,

PERIODICALS

1860 it was joined to the Nederlandsch Spectator (1855). Of those founded in the present century may be mentioned the Recensent (1803) and Niewwe Reecnsent ; the Nederlandsch Musewm (1835) ; the Gids (1837) ; the Tijdstroom (1857); the Tijdspiegel, a literary journal of Protestant tendency; The Theologisch Tijdschrift (1867), the organ of the Leyden school of theology; and the Déetsehe Warande, a Roman Catholic review devoted to the national anti- quities. Colonial interests have been cared for by the Tijdschrift voor Nederlandsch Indie (1848). The Nederlandish Magazin and Minerva are still published.

See Alphabetische Naamlijst van Boeken (1790-1875), Amsterdam, 1835-78.

Scandinavia.—Harly in the 18th century Denmark had the Nye Tidender (1720), continued down to 1836 under the name of Dansk- literaturtidende. The Minerva (1785) of Rahbek was carried on to 1819, and the Skandinavisk Museum (1798-1803) was revived by the Litteratur-Selskabs Skrifter (1805). These were followed by the Lerde Hfterretninger (1799-1810), afterwards styled Litteratur- Tidende (1811-86), the Athene (1813-17), and Historisk Tidsskrift (1840). In more modern times appeared Tidsskrift for Litteratur og Kritik (1832-42, 1843); Maanedsskrift for Litteratur (1829-38) ; Nord og Syd (1848-49) of Goldschmidt, succeeded by Ude og Hjemme, still published ; and the Dansk Maanedsskrift (1858) of Steenstrup, with signed historical and literary articles. One of the most note-worthy Scandinavian periodicals has been the Nordisk Universitets Tidsskrift (1854-64), a bond of union between the universities of Christiania, Upsala, Lund, and Copenhagen.

See Revue des Deux Mondes, 1st August 1861.

Iceland has had the Islenzk Sagnabléd (1817-26), Skirnir (1827), still published, VY Fjelagsrit (1841-73), and Gefn (1870-78).

See T. Mobius, Cat. libb. Island. et Norvegicorum, Leipsic, 1856-80.

The first trace of the serial form of publication to be found in Norway is in the Ugentlige korte Afhandlinger (1760-61), ‘‘ Weekly Short Treatises,” of Bishop Fr. Nannestad, consisting of moral and theological essays. The Afaanedlige Afhandlinger (1762), “Monthly Treatises,” was supported by several writers and devoted chiefly to rural economy. These two were followed by Politik og Historie (1807-10); Saga (1816-20), a quarterly review edited by J. S. Munch ; Den Norske Tilskwer (1817-21), a miscellany brought out at Bergen ; Hermoder (1821-27), a weekly esthetic journal ; Jduna, (1822-23), of the same kind but of less value ; Vidar (1832-84), a weekly scientific and literary review; Nor (1840-46), of the same type; Norsk Tidsskrift for Videnskab og Litteratur (1847-55) ; Lllusireret Nyhedsblad (1851-66), ‘Illustrated News”; Norsk Maanedsskrift (1856-60), ‘ Monthly Review for Norway,” devoted to history and philology ; and

Norden (1866), a literary and scientific review. Popular serials date from the Skilling Magazin (1835), which first introduced wood-engraving, and is still published. The

Norsk Familjeblad is a current weekly of the same class. See P. Botten-Hansen, La Norvége Littéraire, Christiania, 1868; Norsk Bog- Fortegnelse (1814-72).

The Swenska Argus (1738-34) of Olof Dalin is the first contribution of Sweden.to this subject. The next were the Tidningar om den Liirdas Arbeten (1742) and the Larda Tidningar. The patriotic journalist C. C. Gjérwell established about twenty literary pcriod- icals, of which the most important was the Swenska Alercurius (1755-89). Atterbom and some fellow-studcents founded about 1810 a society for the deliverance of the country from French pedantry, which with this end carried on a periodical entitled Phosphoros (1810-13), to propagate the opinions of Schlegel and Schelling. The Svensk Literatur – Tidning (1818-25) of Palmblad and the Polyfem (1810-12) had the same objects. Among more recent periodicals we May mention Skandia (1833-37) ; Literaturbladet (1838-40) ; Stall-ningar oeh Forhallanden (1838) of Crusenstolpe, a monthly review of Scandinavian history ; Tidskrift for Litteratur (1850); Norsk Tidsskrift (1852), weekly, still published ; Forr och Nu; and the Hievue Suédoise (1858) of Kramer, written in French. The Vy ilus- trered Tidning and Hemvdnnen are current illustrated weeklies ; the Svenska Veckoblad is also weekly.

See Revue des Deux Mondes, 1st August 1861. ;

Spain and Portugal.—Spain owcs her intellectual emancipation to the monk Benito Feyjéo, who in 1726 produced a volume of dissertations somewhat after the fashion of the Spectator, but on graver subjects, entitled Teatro Critico, which was continued down to 1739. His Cartas Eruditas (1742-60) were also issued periodically. The earliest critical serial, the Diario de los Literatos (1737-42), kept up at the expense of Philip V., did not long sur-Vive court favour. Other periodicals which appeared in the 18th century were Mafier’s Mercurio (1738) ; the Diario Notietoso (1758- 81); Hl Pensador (1762-67) of Joseph Clavijo y Fajardo ; Hl Belianis Literario (1765), satirical in character; the Semanario Erudito (1778-91), a clumsy

collection of documents ; El Correo Literario de la Europa (1781-82) ; El Censor (1781) ; the valuable Memorial Literario (1784-1808) ; El Correo Literario (1786-91), devoted to literature and science ; and the special organs El Corrco Mercantil (1792-98) and El Semanario de Agricultura (1797-1805). In the present century we have Variedades de Ciencias, Literatura, y Artes (1803-5), among whose contributors have been the distin- Suished names of Quintana, Moratin, and Antillon ; Mvsceldnea de

Comereto (1819); and Diario general de las Cicnctas Medieas. The Spanish refugees in London published Ocios de Espaitoles Refugiados (1823-26) and Miscelénea hispano-americana (1824-28), and at Paris Misceldnea eseojida americana (1826). The Crénica cientéfica y literaria (1817-20) was afterwards transformed into a daily news- paper. Subsequently to the extinction of EZ Censor (1820-23) there was nothing of any value until the Cartas Espaiiolas (1832), since known as the Revista Espaftola (1882-36) and as the Revista de Madrid (1838). Upon the death of Ferdinand VII. periodicals had a new opening ; in 1836 there were published sixteen journals devoted to science and art. The fashion of illustrated serials was introduced in the Semanario pintoresco Espanol (1836-57), notice- able for its biographies and descriptions of Spanish monuments. El Panorama (1839-41) was another literary periodical with engravings. Of more recent date have been the Revista Ibérica (1861-63), conducted by Sanz del Rio; La America (1857-70), specially devoted to American subjects and edited by the brothers Asquerino ; and the Revista de Catalusia, published at Barcelona. The chief of those published at the present time are the Revista de Lispatia, the Revista Oontempordnea, the Revista Europea, and the Revista de Arehivos.

Apart from newspapers, there were issued at Madrid in 1867 47 periodicals, of which 10 were religious, 32 literary, 17 official, 7 satirical, &c. In 1882 the number of periodicals issued in Spain was 377—24 legal, 24 agricultural, 35 commercial, 15 army and navy, 14 theatrical, 45 illustrated, 36 literature and science, 52 medical, 11 fashions, 51 education, 44 religion, 26 miscellaneous.

See G. Ticknor, History of Spanish Literature, New York, 1872; G. Hubbard, Histoire de la littérature contemporaine en Espagne, Paris, 1876; E. Hartzen-

busch, Periodicos de Madrid, 1876; Lapeyre, Catalogo-tarifa de los periodicos, revistas, y tlustraciones en Espana, 1882.

Portugal could long boast of only one review, the Jornal Enct- Portugal.

elopedico (1779-1806), which had many interruptions ; then came the Jornal de Coimbra (1812-20) ; the Panorama (1836-57), founded by Herculano ; the Revista Universal Lisbonense (1841-538), estab- lished by Castilho; the Jnstdtuéo (1853) of Coimbra; the Archivo Pittoresco (1857) of Lisbon; and the Jornal da Sociedadc dos Amigos das Letteras, In 1868 a review called Voz Kemenina, and con- ducted by women, was established at Lisbon. I. F. Da Silva, Diccionario Bibl. Portuguez, 1858.

Greece.—The periodical literature of modern Greece commences Greece.

with ‘O Aéytos ‘Epujs, brought out at Vienna in 1811 by Anthimos Gazi and continued to 1821. A philological serial with the same title is still published. In Aigina the Alywata appeared in 1831, edited by Mustoxidis ; and at Corfu, in Greek, Italian, and English, the ’Av@odoyla (1834). After the return of King Otho in 1833 a literary review called Ips was commenced. Le Spectateur de? Orient, in French, pleaded the national cause before Europe for three years from 1853. A military journal was published at Athens in 1855, and two years later the archeological periodical conducted by Pittakis and Rangavi. For many years Havddépa (1850-72), edited by Rangavi and Paparrigopoulos, was the leading serial. Among existing periodicals Pos deals with natural science, the I’ewrovixa

with agriculture, and the ‘Iepouy7juwv with theology. nated See A. R. Rangabé, Hist. littéraire de la Gréce Moderne, Paris, 1879; R. Nicolai, Geschichte der neugriechischen Literatur, 1876.

Russia.—The historian Miller made the first attempt to establish Russia,

periodical literature in Russia in his Vejem'yesyatehniya Sotchineniya (1755-64), or "Monthly Works." In 1759 Sumarakoff founded the Trudolyubivaya Ptcheld, or " Industrious Bee," giving translations from the Speetator, and, for the first time, critical essays. Karamsin brought out in 1802 the V'yestutk Evropi, an important review with Liberal tendencies, which is still appearing. The Conservative Russkoi V'yestnik (1808) was revived at Moscow in 1856 by Kattkoff, and is also published now. The romantic school was supported by Sin Otetehestva (1812), "Son of the Fatherland," united in 1825 to the Severnot Arkhiv (1822), which dwindled and came to an end soon after 1839. One of the most successful Russian reviews has been the Bibliotcka dl'ya Tehtenia (1834), or " Library of Read- ing." The Slavophile party is represented by the Russkaya Missi, "Russian Thought," published in Moscow. ; Finland has had Suomi (1841), written in Swedish.

See C. Courriére, Histoire de la littérature contemporaine en Russie, Paris, 1875, and the bibliographical works of Méjoff.

Slavonie Countries—Bohemia has had the Casopis Ceskeho Bohemia,

Museum (1827), founded by Palacky; Ziva (1853), a review of natural history; and the Samatky Archeologiske.

Hungary can show the Ungrisches Magazin (1781-87, 1791), Hungary.

published at Pressburg, and the Magyar Muzewm (1788). The Tudomdnyos gytijetémény (1817-41) and the Figyelmezd (1887-43) deserve mention. Uj Magyar Muzewm was a scientific magazine, and the Budapesti Szemle (1857) of a more general character.

Before the revolution of 1830 Poland had the Pamietnik War- Poland.

szawski of Lach Szyrma. Among other reviews may be mentioned the Dziennik Ltteracki of Lemberg, the Biblioteka Warszawska of Warsaw, and the Przegland Polski of Cracow.

Roumania commenced with the Magasinal istorica pentru Dacia Rou- (1845), containing valuable historical documents, and Moldavia mania.

with Dacia Litcraria (1840) and Archiva Romanesca (1841).

Servia.

United States.

544

The best literary review Servia has had was the Wa, edited by Novakovic.

See A. Bourgeault, Histoire des littératures étrangeéres, 1876, 3 vols.; D. Iarcu, Bibliografia ehronologica romana, 1873.

UNITED STATES.

Spurred by the success of the Gentleman’s Magazine in England, Benjamin Franklin printed and published the earliest miscellany in America, under the title of the General Magazine (1741), at Philadelphia, which, owing to want of support, expircd after six monthly numbers had appeared. Franklin’s

rival, John Webbe, brought out in opposition the American Magazine (1741), which ran only to two numbers. Further attempts at Philadelphia in 1757 and 1769 to revive periodicals with the same name were both fruitless. The other pre-revolutionary magazines were the Boston American Magazinc (1748-47), in imitation of the London Magazine ; the Boston Weekly Magazine (1748) ; the Christian History (1743- 44); the New York Independent Reficetor (1752-54); the New England Magazine (1758-60), a collection of fugitive pieces ; the Boston Royal American Magazine (1774-75); and the Pennsylvania Magazine (1775-76), which, founded by R. Aitken, with the help of Thomas Paine, came to an untimely end upon the commencement of the war. The Columbian Magazine (1786-90) was continued as the Uni- versal Asylum (1790-92). Matthew Carey brought out the Ameri- can AMusewm in 1787, and it lasted until 1792. Five or six more magazines ran out a brief existence before the end of the century. One of the most successful of them was the Farmer's Museum (1793-99), supported by perhaps the most brilliant staff of writers American periodical literature had yet been able to show, and edited by Dennie, who in 1801 commenced the publication of the Portfolio, carried on to 1827 at Philadelphia. For five years it was a weekly miscellany in quarto, and afterwards an octavo monthly ; it was the first American serial which could boast of so long an existence. The Literary Magazine (1808-8) was established at Philadelphia by C. B. Brown, who, with Dennie, may be considered as having been the first American professional man of letters. The Anthology Club was founded at Boston in 1803 by Phineas Adams for the cultiva- tion of literature and the discussion of philosophy. Ticknor, Everett, and Bigelow were among the members, and were con- tributors to the organ of the club, the Afonthly Anthology (1803-11), the forerunner of the North American Review. In the year 1810 Thomas (Printing in America, ii. 292) informs us that 27 periodicals were issued in the United States. The first serious rival of the Portfolio was the Analectic Magazine (1813-20), founded at Phil- adelphia by Moses Thomas, with the literary assistance of W. Irving (for some time the editor), Paulding, and the ornithologist Wilson. In spite of a large subscription list it came to an end on account of the costly style of its production. The first southern serial was the Monthly Register (1805) of Charleston. New York possessed no periodical worthy of the city until 1824, when the Atlantic Magazine appeared, which changed its name shortly afterwards to the New York Monthly Review, and was supported by

R. C. Sands and W. C. Bryant. For many years Graham's Magazine was the leading popular miscellany in the country, reaching at one time a circulation of about 35,000 copies. The first western periodical was the Jllinois Monthly Magazine (1830-32), published, owned, edited, and almost entirely written by James Hall, who followed with his Western Monthly Magazine (1833-36), produced in a similar manner. In 1833 the novelist C. F. Hoffman founded at New York The Knickerbocker (1833-60), which soon passed under the control of Timothy Flint and became extremely successful, most of the leading native writers of the next twenty years having been contributors. Equally popular was Putnam's Monthly Magazine (1858-57, 1867-69). The Dial (1841-44), Boston, the organ of the transcendentalists, was first edited by Margaret Fuller, and subsequently by R. W. Emerson and G. Ripley. Among other extinct magazines may be mentioned the American Monthly Magazine (1833-38), the Southern Literary Messenger (1834), Richmond, the Gentleman's Magazine (1837-40), and the International Magazine (1850-52), edited by R. W. Griswold. The Yale Literary Magazine dates from 1836. The Merchants' Magazine was united in 1871 with the Commercial and Financial Chronielc. Foremost among existing magazines come Harper's Monthly Magazine (1850) and Seribner's Monthly (1870), now The Century, both famous for their unrivalled wood- engraving and literary excellence. 'Within the last few years the circulation of these two periodicals has increased to a remarkable degrce both at home and abroad. Not less admirable in their way are the Atlantic Monthly (1857), Lippincott's Magazine, and the Manhattan.

The first attempt to carry on an American review was made by Robert Walsh in 1811 at Philadelphia with the American Review of History and Politics, which lasted only a couple of years. Still more brief was the existence of the General Repository and Review (1812), brought out at Cambridge by Andrews Norton with the help of the professors of the university, but of which only four numbers appeared. Niles's Weekly Register (1811-48) was political, historical, and literary. The North American Review, the oldest and most prosperous of all the American reviews, dates from 1815,

PERTODICALS

and was founded by William Tudor, a member of the previously- mentioned Anthology Club. After two years' control Tudor handed over the review to the club, then styled the North American Club, whose most active members were E. T. Channing, R. H. Dana, and Jared Sparks. On his return from Europe in 1819 E. Everett became the editor; his elder brother Alexander acquired the pro- perty in 1829. The roll of the contributors to this review numbers almost every American writer of note. Since January 1879 it has been published monthly. The American Quarterly Review (1827- 37), established at Philadelphia by Robert Walsh, came to an end on his departure for Europe. The Southern Revicw (1828-32), con- ducted by H. Legaré, S. Elliott, and G. W. Simms in defence of the politics and finance of the South, enjoyed a shorter career. It was resuscitated in 1842, and lived another ten years. These two were followed by the Democratic Review (1838-52), the Ameri- can Review, afterwards the American Whig Review (1845-52), the Massachusetts Quarterly Revicw (1847-50), and a few more. The New Englander (1843), the Biblical Repertory and Princeton Review (1825), and the National Quarterly Review (1860) are still published. The critical weeklies of the past include the New York Literary Gazette (1884-35, 1839), De Bow's Review (1846), the Literary World (1847-53), the Criterion (1855-56), the Round Table (1863- 64), the Citizen (1864-73), and Applcton's Journal (1869). The leading weeklies of the day include the Nation (1865), the Literary World (1870), and the Critic (1881).

Religious periodicals have bcen extremely numerous in the United States during the last hundred years. The earliest was the Theological Magazine (1796-98). The Christian Examiner dates from 1824 and lasted down to 1870. The Panoplist (1805), changed to the Missionary Herald, still represents the American Board of Missions. The Alcthodist AMfagazine dates from 1818 and the Christian Disciple from 1813. The American Biblical Repost- tory (1831-50), a quarterly, was united with the Andover Bibliotheca Sacra (1848) and with the Thcological Eclectic (1865). Brownson's Quarterly Review began as the Boston Quarterly Review in 1838, and did much to introduce to American readers the works of the modern French philosophical school. Among more recent serials of this class we may notice the Protestant Episcopal Quarterly Review (1854), the Presbyterian Magazine (1851-60), the Catholic World (1865), the Southern Review (1867), the New Jerusalem Magazine (1827), American Baptist

Magazine (1817), the Church Review (1848), the Christian Review (1836), the Universalist Quarterly (1844). Among historical periodicals may be numbered the American Register (1806-11), Stryker's American Register (1848- 51), Edwards's American Quarterly Register (1829-43), the New England Historical and Genealogical Register (1847), Folsom's Historical Magazine (1857), the New York Genealogical Record (1869), and the Magazine of American History (1877).

For many years the leading English periodicals have becn regularly reprinted in the United States, and many scrial publica- tions have been almost entirely made up of extracts from English sources. Perhaps the earliest example is to be found in Select Views of Literature (1811-12). The Kelectic Magazine (1844) and Littcll's Living Age (1844) are still published.

In 1817 America possessed only one scientific periodical, the Journal of Mineralogy. Professor Silliman established the journal known by his name in 1818. Since that time the American Journal of Scienee has enjoyed unceasing favour. Among other special periodicals of the day may be mentioned the American Naturalist, the American Journal of the Medical Sciences, the Amcrican Jour- nal of Speculative Philosophy, the American Journal of Philology, the American Ratlroad Journal, the Bankcr's Magazine, the Index Medicus, and the Journal of the Franklin Institute.

The number of periodicals devoted to light literature and_to female readers has been, and still remains, extremely large. The earliest in the latter class was the Lady's Magazine (1792) of Phil- adelphia. The name of the Lowell Ofering (1841), written chiefly by factory girls, is well known in England. Godey's Ladies' Book is still issued. Children's magazines originated with the Young Misses' Magazine (1806) of Brooklyn; St Nicholas is a modern high-class representative of this kind; another current example is the Child's Paper (1852).

The following estimate of the number of periodicals now appear- ing in the United States is taken from G. P. Rowell and Co.'s American Newspaper Record (1883). Weeklies, and those pub- lished more frequently than once a week, are omitted on account of the difficulty of distinguishing them from-

newspapers. The numbers given are—bi-weeklies 47, semi-monthlies 175, monthlies 1034, bi-monthlies 12, quarterlies 59 ; total 1327.

See an excellent article on the subject in Ripley and Dana's American Cyclo- pedia; Cucheval Clarigny, Histoire de la presse en Angleterre et aux Etats Unis, 1857: H. Stevens, Catalogue of American Books in the Library of the British Museum, 1866, and American Books with Tails to em, 1873; I. Thomas, History of Printing in America, Albany, 1874; J. Nichol, American Literature (1620- 1880), 1882; Pettengill's Newspaper Directory for 1878; G. P. Rowell and Co.'s American Newspaper Directory, New York, 1869-83; Hubbard's Newspaper Directory of the World, New York, 1882-84. The leading periodicals of the United States are indexed in W. F. Poole's Index, Boston, 1882, and Library Journal. (H. R. T.)

FuRTPA rea Tics

PERIPATETICS was the name given in antiquity to the followers of Aristotle, from their master's habit of walking up and down as he lectured conversationally to his pupils. Others derive the name from the wepizaros, or covered walk of the Lyceum. Anaccount of the Aristotelian philosophy will be found in the articles AristoTLx, Erxics, Logic, and Merapuysic. Here it must suffice to recall those features of the system which mainly conditioned the development of the school. Aristotle's central conception is the correlative opposition of form and matter. This may be called the supreme category under which he views the world; it is the point where, as Zeller puts it, Aris- totle's system at once refutes and completes the Platonic doctrine of the ''idea" in its relation to phenomena. But Aristotle did not succeed in expelling the dualism which he blamed in Plato. His deity is pure form, and dwells in abstract self-contemplation withdrawn from the actual life of the world. The development of the world remains, therefore, unrelated to the divine subject. In Aristotle's doctrine of man, precisely the same difficulty is experienced in connecting the active or passionless reason with the in- dividual life, the latter being a process of development bound up with sense, imagination, and desire. The soul is originally defined as the entelechy of the body, and, more- over, not of body in general but of its particular body, It is impossible, therefore, from this point of view to speak of soul and body as separate entities. Yet Aristotle holds that besides the

individual mind, which is all things potentially —which becomes all things —there is superinduced upon the process of development the active or creative reason, the pure actuality (évépyeva) which the development pre- supposes as its necessary prius, just as the world-process presupposes God. This reason is “separable,” and is said to enter “from without” when it unites itself to the pro- cess of individual life. It must therefore exist before the individual, and it alone outlasts the death of the body ; to it alone properly belong the titles of ‘immortal ” and “divine.” But its relation to the universal divine reason was not handled by Aristotle at all. The question was destined to become the crux of his commentators. In general it is evident that, if reason in man be identified with the process of natural development (and there is Aristotelian warrant for declaring these to be simply two aspects of the same thing), we drift into a purely naturalistic or materialistic doctrine. On the other hand, the doctrine of the “‘active reason” may be maintained, but what Aristotle left vague may be further defined. The rational soul of each indi- vidual may be explicitly identified with the divine reason. This leads to the denial of individual immortality and the doctrine of one immortal impersonal reason, such as we find, for example, in the rationalistic pantheism of Averroes. A third position is possible, if the statements of Aristotle be left in their original vagueness. Aristotle may then be interpreted as supporting monotheism and the immortality of separate rational souls. This was the reading adopted by the orthodox scholastic Aristotelians, as well as by those early Peripatetics who contented themselves with para- phrasing their master’s doctrine.

Aristotle’s immediate successors, Theophrastus, who pre- sided over the Lyceum from 322 to 288 B.c., and Eudemus of Rhodes, were distinguished by a learned diligence rather than by original speculative power. They made no inno- vations upon the main doctrines of their master, and their industry is chiefly directed to supplementing his works in minor particulars. Thus they amplified the Aristotelian logic by the theory of the hypothetical and disjunctive syllogism, and added to the first figure of the categorical syllogism the five moods out of which the fourth figure was afterwards constructed. The impulse towards natural science and the systematizing of empirical details which

distinguished Aristotle from Plato was shared by Theo- phrastus. His two works on the History of Plants and Causes of Plants prove him to have been a careful and acute observer. The same turn for detail is observable in his ethics, where, to judge from the imperfect evidence of the Characters, he elaborated still further Aristotle's portraiture of the virtues and their relative vices. In his doctrine of virtue the distinctive Peripatetic position regarding the importance of external goods was defended by him with emphasis against the assaults of the Stoics. He appears to have laid even more stress on this point than Aristotle himself, being doubtless led to do so, partly by the heat of controversy and partly by the importance which leisure and freedom from harassing cares naturally assumed to a man of his studious temperament. The metaphysical aropiat of Theophrastus which have come down to us show that he was fully alive to the difficulties that start up round many of the Aristotelian definitions. But we are ignorant how he proposed to meet his own criticisms ; and they do not appear to have suggested to him an actual departure from his master's doctrine, much less any radical transformation of it. In the difficulties which he raises with reference to the relation of the active and the passive reason, as well as in his ascription of the physical predicate of motion to the activity of the soul, we may perhaps detect a leaning towards a naturalistic interpreta- tion. The tendency of Eudenius, on the other hand, is more towards the theological or Platonic side of Aristotle's philosophy. The Hudemian LHithics (which, with the possible exception of the three books common to this treatise and the Nzcomachean Kthics, there need be no hesitation in ascribing to Eudemus) expressly identify Aristotle's ultimate ethical ideal of Gewpia with the know- ledge and contemplation of God. And this supplies Eudemus with a standard for the determination of the mean by reason, which Aristotle demanded, but himself left vague. Whatever furthers us in our progress towards a knowledge of God is good ; every hindrance is evil. The same spirit may be traced in the author of the chapters which appear as an appendix to book i. of Aristotle's Metaphysics. They have been attributed to Pasicles, the nephew of Eudemus. For the rest, Eudemus shows even less philosophical independence than Theophrastus. Among the Peripatetics of the first generation who had been personal disciples of Aristotle, the other chief names are those of Aristoxenus of Tarentum and Diczarchus of Messene. Aristoxenus, 'the musician," who had formerly belonged to the Pythagorean school, maintained the posi- tion, already combated by Plato in

the Phezdo, that the soul is to be regarded as nothing more than the harmony of the body. Dicearchus agreed with his friend in this naturalistic rendering of the Aristotelian entelechy, and is recorded to have argued formally against the immortality of the soul.

The naturalistic tendency of the school reached its full expression in Strato of Lampsacus, who succeeded Theo- phrastus as head of the Lyceum, and occupied that posi- tion for eighteen years (287-269 B.c.). His predilection for natural science earned for him in antiquity the title of “the physicist.” He is the most independent, and was prob- ably the ablest, of the earlier Peripatetics. His system is based upon the formal denial of a transcendent deity. Cicero attributes to him the saying that he did not require the aid of the gods in the construction of the universe ; in other words, he reduced the formation of the world to the operation of natural forces. We have evidence that he did not substitute an immanent world-soul for Aristotle’s extra-mundane deity; he recognized nothing beyond natural necessity. He was at issue, however, with the atomistic materialism of Democritus in regard to its twin assump-

tions of absolute atoms and infinite space. His own specu- lations led him rather to lay stress on the qualitative aspect of the world. The true explanation of things was to be found, according to Strato, in the forces which pro- duced their attributes, and he followed Aristotle in de- ducing all phenomena from the fundamental attributes or elements of heat and cold. His psychological doctrine explained all the functions of the soul as modes of motion, and denied any separation of the reason from the faculties of sense-perception. He appealed in this connexion to the statement of Aristotle that we are unable to think without a sense-image.

The successors of Strato in the headship of the Lyceum were Lyco, Aristo of Ceos, Critolaus (who, with Carneades the Academic and Diogenes the Stoic, undertook in 155 B.c. the famous embassy to Rome, more important in its philosophical than in its political bearings), Diodorus of Tyre, and Erymneus, who brings the philosophic succession down to about the year

100 B.c. Other Peripatetics belonging to this period are Hieronymus of Rhodes, Pry- tanis, and Phormio, the delirus senex who attempted to instruct Hannibal in the art of war. Sotion, Hermippus, and Satyrus were historians rather than philosophers. Heraclides Lembus, Agatharchides, and Antisthenes of Rhodes are names to us and nothing more. The philo- sophic unfruitfulness of the school during this whole period is expressly charged against it by Strabo, who explains it by his well-known story of the disappearance of Aristotle's writings after the death of Theophrastus. But it is im- possible that this story should be true in the shape in which it is told by Strabo; and a sufficient explanation of the barrenness of the school may be found in the general circumstances of the time. From the outset the character- istic of the Aristotelian philosophy had been its disinter- ested scientific character; but the age was one for which speculation as such had lost its attractiveness. At such a time it was natural, therefore, that the Peripatetic school should suffer more than the others. It had also in practical matters taken up a mediatizing position, so that it lacked the attractions which, in the case of extreme views, enlist supporters and inspire them with propa- gandist zeal. The fact, at all events, isnot to be denied that, after Strato, the Peripatetic school has no thinker of any note to show for about 200 years. With Strato, moreover, the scientific activity of the school has an end ; when it received a new infusion of life its activity took another direction. Strato accuses the Peripatetics of this period of devoting themselves to the tricking out of commonplaces. This seems in great measure true of those who still occupied themselves with philosophy ; they culti- vated ethics and rhetoric, and were noted for the elegance of their style. But the majority followed the current of the time, and gave themselves up to the historical, philological, and grammatical studies which mark the Alexandrian age.

Early in the 1st century B.c. all the philosophic schools began to be invaded by a spirit of eclecticism. This was partly the natural result of the decay of speculative interest and partly due to the unconscious influence of Rome upon the philosophers. The Roman mind measured philosophy, like other things, by the standard of practical utility. As an instrument of education, and especially as the inculcator of moral principles, the Roman welcomed and appreciated philosophy ; but his general point of view was naively put by the proconsul Gellius (about 70 B.c.), who proposed to the

representatives of the schools in Athens that they should settle their differences amicably, at the same time offering his personal services as mediator. Though the well-meant proposal was not accepted, this atmosphere of indifference imperceptibly influenced the attitude of the

contending schools to one another. Thus Boethus the Stoic deserted the pantheism of his school and assigned the deity, as Aristotle had done, to the highest sphere, He likewise embraced the Peripatetic doctrine of the eternity of the world. A similar approximation to Peri- pateticism is seen in Panetius. About the same time, Antiochus of Ascalon,founder of the so-called fifth Academy, tried to combine Plato, Aristotle, and Zeno, asserting that they differed only in words. Meanwhile the Peripatetic school may be said to have taken a new departure and a new lease of life. The impulse was due to Andronicus of Rhodes, the well-known editor of Aristotle's works, who presided over the Lyceum towards the middle of the Ist century B.c. His critical edition indicated to the later Peripatetics the direction in which they could profitably work, and the school devoted itself henceforth almost exclusively to the writing of commentaries on Aristotle. Boethus of Sidon and Aristo of Alexandria carried on the work of interpretation begun by Andronicus. Boethus appears, like many of his predecessors, to have taken the naturalistic view of Aristotle's doctrines, and even in some respects to have approximated to the Stoic materialism. Staseas, Cratippus, and Nicolaus of Damascus need only be named as belonging to this century. The most interesting Peripatetic work of the period is the treatise De Mundo, which has come down to us under Aristotle's name, but which internal evidence obliges us to assign to a date later than the writings of the Stoic Posidonius. The interest of the treatise lies in the evidence it affords within the Peripatetic school of the eclectic tendency which was then in the air. The admixture of Stoic elements is so great that some critics have attributed the work to a Stoic author; but the writer's Peripateticism seems to be the more fundamental constituent of his doctrine.

Our knowledge of the Peripatetic school during the first two centuries of the Christian era is very fragmentary ; but those of its representatives of whom anything is known confined themselves entirely to commenting upon the

different treatises of Aristotle. Thus Alexander of Age, the teacher of Nero, commented on the Categories and the De Cezlo. In the 2d century Aspasius and Adrastus wrote numerous commentaries. The latter also treated of the order of the Aristotelian writings in a separate work. Somewhat later, Herminus, Achaicus, and Sosigenes com- mented on the logical treatises. Aristocles of Messene, the teacher of Alexander of Aphrodisias, was the author of a complete critical history of Greek philosophy. This second phase of the activity of the school closes with the compre- hensive labours of Alexander of Aphrodisias, the exegete par excellence, called sometimes the second Aristotle. He became head of the Lyceum during the reign of Septimius Severus, some time between 198 and 211 a.p. Alexander's interpretation proceeds throughout upon the naturalistic lines which have already become familiar to us. Aristotle had maintained that the individual alone is real, and had nevertheless asserted that the universal is the proper object of knowledge. Alexander seeks consistency by holding to the first position alone. The individual is prior to the universal, he says, not only "for us," but also in itself, and universals are abstractions which have merely a sub- jective existence in the intelligence which abstracts them. Even the deity must be brought under the conception of individual substance. Such an interpretation enables us to understand how it was possible, at a later date, for Aristotle to be regarded as the father of Nominalism. Form, Alexander proceeds, is everywhere indivisible from matter. Hence the soul is inseparable from the body whose soul or form it is. Reason or intellect is bound up with the other faculties. It exists primarily in man only as a disposition or capacity—vovs bAckds Kai dvoxds—and

is afterwards developed into actual intelligence—vots éxixtntos—the intellectus acquisitus of the Scholastics. The active reason—vovs rountexds —which effects this develop- ment is, according to Alexander, no part of the soul, but simply the divine reason acting upon it. The influence of God upon nature is elsewhere reduced by Alexander, as far as possible, toa mechanical process. Aristotle's ethico- mystical conception of God as the ultimate and tran- scendent object of desire is set aside ; and the influence of the deity is represented simply as a diffusion of force, first into the heavens and thence downwards, each lower element receiving less according to its greater distance from the source. The commentaries of the

Aphrodisian formed the foundation of the Arabian and Scholastic study of Aristotle. Soon after Alexander's death the Peripatetic school was merged, like all others, in the Neoplatonic. Neoplatonists like Porphyry, Iamblichus, Themistius, Dexippus, Syrianus, Ammonius, Simplicius, and Philoponus carried on the work of commenting on Aristotle till the final disappearance of Greek philosophy. For the further history of Aristotelian- ism, see ARABIAN PHILOSOPHY and SCHOLASTICISM.

The authorities on whom we depend for our knowledge of the Peripatetics are collected and sifted with exhaustive care by Zeller in the relative sections of his Philosophie der Grieehen (ii. 2 and iii. 1). (A. SE.)

PERIPATUS. See Myriapopa, vol. xvii. p. 116.

PERITONITIS, inflammation of the peritoneum or membrane investing the abdominal and pelvic cavities and their contained viscera. It may exist in an acute or a chronic form, and may be either localized in one part or generally diffused.

Acute peritonitis may attack persons of both sexes and of any age. It is sometimes brought on, like other inflain- mations, by exposure to cold, but it would appear to arise quite as frequently in connexion with some antecedent injury or disease in some of the abdominal organs, or with depraved conditions of the general health. It is an occasional result of hernia and obstructions of the bowels, of wounds penetrating into the abdomen, of the perfora- tion of viscera by disease (¢.g., in ulcer of the stomach and in typhoid fever), of the bursting of abscesses or cysts into the abdominal cavity, and also of the extension of inflammatory action from some of the abdominal or pelvic organs. Not unfrequently it is at first localized, and then, spreading onwards, becomes general.

The changes which take place in the peritoneum are similar to those undergone by other serous membranes when inflamed, viz., (1) congestion ; (2) exudation of lymph in greater or less abundance, at first greyish in colour and soft, thereafter yellow and becoming tough in consistence, causing the folds of intestine to adhere together; (3) effusion of fluid, either clear, turbid, bloody, or purulent ; (4) absorption more or less complete of the fluid and lymph. Occasionally shreds or bands of unabsorbed lymph

remain, constituting a subsequent danger of strangu- lation of the bowel. The symptoms usually begin by a rigor, together with vomiting and pain in the abdomen of a peculiarly severe and sickening character, accompanied with extreme tenderness, so that the slightest pressure causes a great aggravation of suffering. The patient lies on the back with the knees drawn up, and it will be noticed that the breathing is rapid and shallow and per- formed by movements of the chest only, the abdominal muscles remaining quiescent, unlike what takes place in healthy respiration. The abdomen becomes swollen by flatulent distension of the intestines, which increases the patient's distress. There is usually constipation. The skin is hot, although there may be perspiration ; the pulse is small, hard, and wiry; the urine is scanty and high- coloured, and passed with pain. The patient's aspect 1s

one of anxiety and suffering. These symptoms may subside in a day or two, but if they do not the case is apt to go on rapidly to a fatal termination. In such an event the pain and tenderness subside, the abdomen becomes more distended, hiccough and vomiting of brown or blood- coloured matter occur, the temperature falls, the face be- comes pinched, cold, and clammy, the pulse exceedingly rapid and feeble, and death takes place from collapse, the patient's mental faculties generally remaining clear till the close. When the peritonitis is due to perforation, as may happen in the case of the gastric ulcer, or the ulcers of typhoid fever, the above-mentioned symptoms and the fatal collapse may all take place in from twelve to twenty- four hours. Further, the puerperal form of this disease, which comes on within a day or two after parturition, is always very serious and is often rapidly fatal. The symp- toms are similar to those already described, but in addition there are generally superadded those of septicemia (blood-

poisoning).

Chronic peritonitis occurs in two forms—(1) as a result of the acute attack ; (2) as a tubercular disease. In the former case, the acute symptoms having subsided, abdominal pain to some extent continues, and along with this

there is considerable swelling of the abdomen, corresponding to a thickening of the peritoneum, and it may be also to fluid in the peritoneal cavity. Occasionally a condition of this kind appears to develop slowly without there having been any preceding acute attack. In this form of peritonitis there is considerable constitutional disturbance, together with loss of strength and flesh; nevertheless, although the disease is essentially a chronic one, it is often recovered from. The tubercular form of peritonitis occurs either alone or associated with tuberculous disease of the lungs or other organs. The chief symptoms are abdominal pain and distension, along with disturbance of the functions of the bowels, there being either constipation or diarrhcea, or each alternately. Along with these local manifestations there exist the usual phenomena of tuberculous disease, viz., high fever, with rapid emaciation and loss of strength. Cases of this kind are of grave import, and their tendency is to a fatal termination.

In the treatment of acute peritonitis the remedy upon which most reliance is to be placed is opium, which affords relief to the pain, and appears to exercise a certain controlling influence upon the inflammatory process. It requires to be given in considerable quantity, yet with due care, so as to avoid its narcotic action. The old plan of covering the abdomen with leeches is now seldom resorted to; nevertheless a moderate abstraction of blood by this means in a previously healthy person may contribute to the relief of the pain. Hot fomentations with turpentine or opium applied over the abdomen are of value. The strength must be maintained by milk, soups, and other light forms of nourishment. _ It is not in general desirable that the bowels should act, and this is one of the benefits obtained by the internal administration of opium. In the simple chronic form the use of iodine externally and of tonics with cod-liver oil internally will be found of service ; while in the tuber- cular form remedies are as a rule of little value, but such symptoms as pain, fever, diarrhea, &c., must be dealt with by palliative measures appropriate to these conditions.

PERIZONIUS, Jacop (1651-1715), classical scholar, the most distinguished member of a learned Dutch family of that name (Voorbroek in the vernacular), was the cldest son of Anton Perizonius, author of a once well-known treatise, De ratione studit theologici, and was born at Dam in Groningen on 26th October 1651. He received his school education at Dam

and Deventer, and afterwards studied in the university of Utrecht, where he came under the influence of Grevius and abandoned theology for pure literature. The death of his father and other un- toward circumstances involved him in a struggle with various outward difficulties, but the influence of Heinsius and Grevius, who already appreciated him highly, and expected great things from him, ultimately procured for

him in 1682 the appointment to the chair of eloquence and history at Franeker, where his expositions of Cicero, Terence, Florus, and Suetonius, as well as his lectures on general history, attracted a large and increasing number of hearers. In 1693 he was promoted to the corresponding chair at Leyden, where he succeeded F. Spanheim in 1701. His death took place in that city on 6th April 1715.

The works of Perizonius both as an author and as an editor were very numerous, and by universal consent entitle him to a place of the highest rank among the scholars of his age. Special interest attaches to his edition of the Minerva of Sanctius or Sanchez (1st ed. 1687, 4th ed. 1714), which may be said to be one of the last developments of the study of Latin grammar while in its pre- scientific stage, when the phenomena of language had not yet ceased to be regarded as for the most part disconnected, conventional, or fortuitous. Mention must also be made of his Animadversiones historice, in quibus quam plurima in priscis Romanarum rerum sed utriusque linguxe auctoribus notantur, mulia etiam illustrantur atque emendantur, varia denique antiquorum rituum eruuntur et ubertus explicantur (1685), a work which Bayle has characterized as deserving to be entitled “The Errata of scholars and critics,” and of his Dissertationes due de Republica Romana, alluded to with honour by Niebuhr in the preface to his Roman History (4th ed., 1833) as marking the beginning of that new era of classical study with which his own name is so closely associated.

PERJURY is an assertion upon an oath duly admin- istered in a judicial proceeding, before a competent court, of the truth of some matter of fact, material to the question depending in that proceeding, which assertion the assertor does not believe to be true when he makes it, or on which he knows

himself to be ignorant (Stephen, Digest of the Criminal Law, Art. 135). In the early stages of legal history perjury seems to have been regarded rather as a sin than as a crime, and so subject only to supernatural penalties. The injury caused by a false oath was supposed to be done not so much to society as to the Divine Being in whose name the oath was taken (see OaTH). One of the practical effects of this view was to make perjury so common in the Middle Ages that the probable reason for preserving trial by combat was the difficulty of securing a just cause against the perjury of witnesses (Hallam, Jfiddle Ages, ch. ix. pt. 1). The almost universal existence of compurgation was no doubt another explanation of the frequency of perjury. In cases of compurgation, or in cases where wager of law was allowed, it is difficult to imagine that the defence could as a rule have been an honest one. In Roman law, even in the time of the empire, the perjurer fell simply under divine reprobation, and was not dealt with as a criminal, except where he had been bribed to withhold true or give false evidence, or where the oath was by the genius of the emperor. In the latter case punishment was no doubt inflicted more for the insult to the emperor than for the perjury. False testi- mony leading to the conviction of a person for a crime punishable with death constituted the offence of homicide rather than of perjury. In England, perjury, as being a sin, was originally a matter of ecclesiastical cognizance. Ata later period, when it had become a crime, the jurisdiction of the spiritual courts became gradually confined to such perjury as was committed in ecclesiastical proceedings, and did not extend to perjury committed in a temporal court. The only perjury which was for a long time noticed at common law was the perjury of jurors. Attaint of jurors (who were originally rather in the position of witnesses than of judges of fact) incidentally subjected them to punishment for perjury. Criminal jurisdiction over perjury by persons other than jurors seems to have been first assumed by the Star Chamber, acting under the powers supposed to have been conferred by 3 Hen. VII. ch. 1. After the abolition of the Star Chamber by the Long Parlia- ment in 1641 and the gradual diminution of the authority of the spiritual courts, perjury (whether in the strict sense of the word or the taking of a false oath in non-judicial

proceedings) practically fell entirely within the jurisdiction of the ordinary criminal tribunals. The jurisdiction of the spiritual courts over perjury may now be considered obsolete. An unsuccessful attempt was made as lately as 1876 to induce the Court of Arches to entertain a criminal suit against a layman for a false oath taken before a surro- gate (Phillimore v. Machon, Law fep., 1 Prob. Div., 481). See further, for the history of the law of perjury, Stephen, History of the Criminal Law, vol. ii. p. 408; vol. iii. p, 240. At common law only a false oath in judicial pro- ceedings is perjury. But by statute the penalties of perjury have been extended to extra-judicial matters, ¢g., false declarations made for the purpose of procuring marriage (19 and 20 Vict. c. 119, s. 18), and false affidavits under the Bills of Sale Act, 1878 (41 and 42 Vict. c.31,s.17). False affirmation by a person permitted by law to affirm is perjury (32 and 33 Vict. c. 68, s.4; 33 and 34 Vict. ¢. 49). In order to support an indictment for perjury the prosecu- tion must prove the authority to administer the oath, the occasion of administering it, the taking of the oath, the substance of the oath, the materiality of the matter sworn, the falsity of the matter sworn, and the corrupt intention of the defendant. ‘The indictment must allege that the perjury was wilful and corrupt, and must set out the false statement or statements on which perjury is assigned, subject to the provisions of 23 Geo. IT. c. 11 (which also applies to subornation of perjury). By that Act it is sufficient to set out the substance of the offence, without setting forth the bill, answer, &c., or any part of the record, and without setting forth the commission or authority of

‘the court before whom the perjury was committed. The

matter sworn to must be one of fact and not of mere belief or opinion. It is not homicide, as in Roman law, to procure the death of another by false evidence, but the Criminal Code, ss. 118, 164, proposes to make such an offence a substantive crime of greater gravity than ordinary perjury, and punish- able by penal servitude for life. It is a rule of evidence, founded upon obvious reasons, that the testimony of a single witness is*insufficient to convict on a charge of per- jury. There must be corroboration of his evidence in some material particular. Perjury is a common law mis- demeanour, not triable at quarter-sessions. Proceedings may also be taken under 5 Eliz. c. 9, but this Act is of little practical iniportance, as the

common law is more extensive than the statute. Most persons in a judicial position have the right of directing the prosecution of any witness, if it appears to them that he has been guilty of perjury (14 and 15 Vict. c. 100, s. 19). The provisions of the Vexatious Indictments Act (22 and 23 Vict. c. 17) extend to perjury and subornation of perjury. By that Act no indictment for either of such offences can be pre- ferred unless the prosecutor or accused is bound by recog- nizance, or the accused is in custody, or the consent of a judge is obtained, or (in the case of perjury) a prosecution is directed under 14 and 15 Vict. c. 100.

Subornation of perjury is procuring a person to commit a perjury which he actually commits in consequence of such procurement. If the person attempted to be suborned do not take the oath, the person inciting him, though not guilty of subornation, is liable to fine and corporal punish- ment. Perjury and subornation of perjury are punishable at common law with fine and imprisonment. By the combined operation of 2 Geo, IT. c. 25 and later statutes, the punishment at present appears to be penal servitude for any term, or imprisonment with or without hard labour for a term not exceeding seven years (see Stephen, Digest, Art. 137). Perjury or prevarication committed before a committee of either House of Parliament may be dealt with as a contempt or breach of privilege as well as by prosecution. As to false oaths not perjury, it is a

misdemeanour at common law, punishable by fine and imprisonment, to swear falsely before any person author- ized to administer an oath upon a matter of common con- cern, under such circumstances that the false swearing, if committed in judicial proceedings, would have amounted to perjury. There are some cases of making false declara- tions which are punishable on summary conviction, ¢.g., certain declarations under the Registration of Births and Deaths Act, 1874, and the Customs Consolidation Act, 1876. A conviction for perjury subjects the person con- victed to certain disqualifications. He cannot hold a parish office (4 and 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 48). If a solicitor, and he attempt to practise after conviction, he is liable on summary conviction by a judge to seven years' penal servitude (12 Geo. I. c. 29, s. 4). If the prosecution be under the

statute of Elizabeth, the person convicted is disabled from giving evidence for the future (5 Eliz. c. 9, s. 2). The provisions of the last two Acts may, however, be regarded as virtually obsolete. The perjury of a witness may be a ground for pardon where the perjury has taken place in a criminal trial in which accused was convicted, or for a new trial in a civil action. In order to procure a pardon or a new trial it is generally necessary to show that the witness was a material one, and also that the perjurer has been prosecuted to conviction.

In Scotland the law, as a general rule, agrees with that of Eng- land. Perjury may be committed by a party on reference to oath as well as by a witness. A witness making a false affirmation is guilty of perjury (28 Vict. c. 9). The Acts 14 and 15 Vict. c. 100 and 22 and 23 Vict. c. 17 do not extend to Scotland. The trial, though usually by the Court of Justiciary, may be by the Court of Session if the perjury is committed in the course of an action before that court. The punishment is penal servitude or imprison- ment at the discretion of the court. Formerly a person convicted of perjury was disabled from giving evidence in future ; this dis- ability was abolished by 15 Vict. c. 27, s. 1.

In the United States the common law has been extended by most States to embrace false affirmations and false evidence in proceedings not judicial. Perjury in the United States courts is dealt with by an Act of Congress of 3d March 1825, by which the maximum punishment for perjury or subornation of perjury is a fine of $2000 or imprisonment for five years. The jurisdiction of the States to punish perjury committed in the State courts is specially preserved by the same Act. Statutory provisions founded upon 23 Geo. II. c. 11 have been adopted in some States, but not in others. In the States which have not adopted such provisions, the indictment must set out the offence with the particularity necessary at common law. (J. Wt.)

PERKINS, Jacos (1766-1849), inventor and physicist, was born at Newburyport, Massachusetts, in 1766, and ap- prenticed toa goldsmith. He- soon made himself known by a variety of useful mechanical inventions, and in 1818 came over to England with a plan for engraving bank-notes on steel, which, though it did not find acceptance at once, ultimately proved a signal success, and was carried out by Perkins in partnership with the

English engraver Heath during the rest of his long business life. Perkins con- tinued to be fertile of inventions, and his steam-gun, exhibited in 1824, attracted much attention, though the danger attending the use of highly-compressed steam pre- vented its practical adoption. His chief contribution to physics lay in the experiments by which he proved the compressibility of water and measured it by a piezometer of his own invention; see vol. vii. p. 801, and Phil. Trans., 1820, 1826. He retired in 1834, and died in London, 30th July 1849.

PERM, a government of Russia, on both slopes of the Ural Mountains, with an area of 128,250 square miles. Though Perm administratively belongs entirely to Russia in Europe, its eastern part (about 57,000 square miles) is situated in Siberia, in the basin of the Obi. It is traversed from north to south by the Ural range, a low ridge, from 30 to 45 miles in width, thickly covered with forests, and deeply excavated by rivers. The highest summits do not

rise above 3600 feet in the northern section of the range (the Vogulian Ural); in the central portion, between 59° and 60° 30’ N. lat., they once or twice exceed 5000 feet (Denezhkin, 5027 feet, and Konzhakovskii Kamen, 5135 feet) ; but the chain soon sinks towards the south, where it barely attains an elevation of 3000 feet. Where the great Siberian road crosses the ridge the highest point is 1400 feet. Westward the plain of the river Kama is still 500 feet above sea-level at a distance of 120 miles from the main watershed, but to the east the secondary ridges and spurs of the central chain fall away somewhat more rapidly,—Kamyshloff, 100 miles distant, being situated amidst the lowlands of the Obi at an altitude of less than 200 feet.

The geology of Perm has been the subject of very many investigations since the journeys of Humboldt and Mur- chison ; but several parts of the government still remain unexplored. Granites, diorites, porphyries, serpentines, and Laurentian gneisses and limestones, containing iron, copper, and zinc ores, constitute the main axis of the Ural chain; their western slope is covered by a narrow strip of Huronian crystalline slates, which disappear in the east under the Post-Tertiary deposits of the Siberian

lowlands, while on the west narrow strips of Silurian limestones, quartzites, and slates, and separate islands of Devonian deposits appear on the surface. These in their turn are covered with Carboniferous clays and sandstones, containing Coal-measures in several isolated basins. The Permian deposits extend as a regular strip, parallel to the main ridge, over these last, and are covered with the so- called “variegated marls,” which are now considered as Triassic, and which appear only in the western corer of the territory. Perm is the chief mining region of Russia, owing to its wealth in iron, silver, platinum, copper, nickel, lead, chrome ore, and auriferous alluvial deposits. Many rare metals, besides, such as iridium, osmium, rhodium, and ruthenium, are found along with the above, as also a great variety of precious stones, such as sapphires, jacinths, beryls, phenacites, chrysoberyls, emeralds, aquamarines, topazes, amethysts, jades, malachite. Salt-springs appear in the west; and the mineral waters, though still little known, are also worthy of mention.

The government is very well watered by rivers belonging to the Petchora, Tobol (affluent of the Obi), and Kama systems. The Petchora itself rises in the northern corner of the government, and its tributary the Volosnitsa is sepa- rated by a distance of only 4900 yards from the navi- gable Vogulka, a tributary of the Kama,—a circumstance of some commercial importance. The tributaries of the Tobol (Sosva, Tura, Isset, and Ui) are far more important. Their sources, which approach those of the tributaries of the Kama very closely, early became a link between Russia and Siberia, and the first section of the Siberian railway (completed for 312 miles from Perm to Ekaterinburg) has been planned to connect the Kama at Perm with the Tura at Tumen, whence there is a navigable route by the Siberian rivers to the very heart of western Siberia at Tomsk. The chief river of Perm is, however, the Kama, whose great navigable tributaries the Tchusovaya, Sylva, and Kolva are important channels for the export of the heavy iron goods to Russia,—5,000,000 cwts., valued at upwards of £2,000,000, being annually shipped on these rivers to the Volga. Timber also is floated down many of the smaller streams. Altogether, the rivers supply to some extent the want of roads or the defects of those which exist, the great Siberian highway even (wa Kazan, Okhansk, Perm, Ekaterinburg, and Tumen) being usually in a bad state.

The government is dotted with a great number of lakes of comparatively trifling size, and marshes also are extensive

in the hilly tracts of the north. No less than 45,750,000 acres are forest; of this large area only 2,175,600 acres are under proper forest administration. ‘The forests are distributed very unequally, covering 95 per cent. of the area in the north, and only 25 per cent. in the south-east. Fir (Abies sibirica, Picea obovata), pine (Pinus sylvestris), cedar (Pinus Cembra), larch (L. sibirica), birch, alder (Alnus), and line are the most common woods; the oak appears only in the south-west. The flora of Perm (956 Phanero- gams) presents a mixture of Siberian and Russian species, several of which have their north-eastern or south-western limits within the government. The climate is severe, the average temperature at different places being as follows :—

; Yearly | J Jul io a aa. ayetmees omed | – Feet. Fahr. Fahr. Fahr. | Bogoslovsk …... 59° 45 630 20508 8°°0 62°°6 Usolie (Kama)...} 59° 25’ 300 34°°0 4°°5 63°°8 | Nijne-Taghilsk | 57° 55’ 590 33°°1 2°°0 64°°9 | Ekaterinburg “el DG 48k 890 329 2°°5 63°°5

The population in 1881 amounted to 2,520,100, of which number

106,500 lived in towns. It consisted chiefly of Great Russians, Bashkirs (about 100,000, including Mescheryaks and Teptyars), about 65,000 Permyaks or Permians, 25,000 Tatars, 8000 ‘Tchere- misses, and some 2500 Voguls. More than a million of the Great Russians are Nonconformists, their number having rapidly inercased within the last twenty years. Except in the northern districts, which are covered with marshes and tundras, and in a zone 70 miles wide, which includes the higher and stony parts of the Ural Mountains to the north of the 58th parallel, agriculture is the general occupation of the inhabitants, who are favoured with a very fertile soil in the southern districts. Nevertheless, only 8,000,000 acres are under crops, the proportion of arable land ranging from 2 to 34 per cent. of the area in different districts. Rye, oats, barley, and hemp are raised in all parts, and wheat, millet, buckwheat, and flax in the south. The average crops in recent

years have been 4,198,000 quarters of grain and 1,866,400 bushels of potatoes.

Cattle-breeding is specially developed in the south-east among the Bashkirs, who have large numbers of horses, but is at present decreasing. In 1881 there were 837,000 horses, 820,000 horned cattle, 1,055,000 sheep, and 267,000 pigs. These figures vary, however, from year to year, in consequence of the murrains that periodically destroy great numbers of horses and cattle. Agriculture is widely spread among the Bashkirs, Teptyars, and Tcheremisses, and the chase is still a source of wealth, especially among the Voguls. Shipbuilding is developed on the Kama, Vishera (a tribut- ary of the Kama), Sylva, and Tchusovaya; and large amounts of timber, pitch, and tar, as also wooden implements, are exported to the Volga. Some 100,000 hands find occupation in connexion with the mining industry, and a number are engaged in the transport trade to and from Siberia, or in shipping. Mining increases every year, especially since private enterprise has been allowed to develop freely. In 1879 the total production of metals on the mining- works of the crown and of private individuals was (in ewts.) :—gold, 102°7; copper, 12,913; pig-iron, 4,457,000; iron, 2,704,000; steel, 599,600; salt, 8,750,000. The working of coal, although recent, promises to be most valuable. In 1865 the aggregate of all manu- factures connected with mining hardly exceeded 15,000,000 roubles (£1,500,000) in value. In 1879 it was :—copper, 879,800 roubles ; pig-iron, 14,076,000 ; iron, 9,077,900; and steel, 2,218,000. The ageregate of other manufactures, employing 7400 hands, in the same year reached 20,962,000 roubles, against 5,802,000 in 1865. The first place is taken by flour-mills (£978,500), followed by distil- leries (£566,500) and tanneries (£212,300) ; next in order come the manufactures of spirits, saddlery, woollen cloth, ropes, oils, cakes, paper, chemicals, candles, tallow, soap, matches, wax-candles, glass, pottery, &c. The cutting of precious stones is extensively carried on throughout the villages on the eastern slope of the Ural Moun- tains, the chief market for them being at Ekaterinburg. Besides, a varicty of petty trades are carried on, the manufacture of carpets in the south-east (Tumen carpets), as also that of boots at Kungur, being especially worthy of mention. :

An active trade, greatly favoured by the easy communication of the chief centres of the mining industry with the great market of Nijni Novgorod on the one side and with the great network of Siberian rivers on the other, is carried on in metals and metal wares, minerals, timber and wooden wares, tallow, skins, cattle, furs, corn, and linseed. Large ‘caravans descend the affluents of the Kama every spring, and reach the great fairs of Laisheff and Nijni Novgorod, or descend the Volga to Samara and Astrakhan 2 while Ekaterinburg is an important centre for the trade with

PERM

Siberia. The fair at Irbit, second in importance only to that of Nijui Novgorod, is a great centre for supplying Siberia with grocery and manufactured wares, as also for the purchase of tea, of furs for Russia, and of corn and cattle for the mining districts. About 180 other fairs are held every year within the government. The chief commercial centres are Kkaterinburg, Irbit, Perm, Kamyshloff, Shadrinsk, Tcherdyn, and several iron-works (zavody).

Perm is more largely provided with educational institutions and primary schools than most of the governments of central Russia. Besides the usual lyceum and ecclesiastical seminary at Perm, there are a mining school at Ekaterinburg and lower mining schools at Bogoslovsk and Kushva, and two lyceums for women at Perm and Ekaterinburg. The number of primary schools in 1881 was 621 (89,778 scholars, including about 8000 girls). The Nonconformists are very diligent in teaching reading (in Old Slavonian) to their girls. The Ural Society of Naturalists, at Ekaterinburg, issues valuable scientific serials, and there are within the government two first-rate meteorological and magnetic observatories, at Ekater- inburg and Bogoslovsk.

Perm is divided into twelve districts having for their chief towns (with populations in 1879)—Perm (32,350), Kungur (14,000), Krasnoufimsk (8700), Okhansk (1650), Osa (2850), Solikamsk (16,900), and Tcherdyn (8260) in Europe ; Ekaterinburg (25,150), Irbit (4250), Kamyshloff (2160), Shadrinsk (11,550), and Ver- khoturie (8900) in Asia. Alapaevsk (5450), Dalmatoff (4350), and Dedyukhin (3900, with importaut salt-works) have also municipal institutions. The iron-works form the following important

towns: —WNijne-Taghilsk (80,000 in 1881), Neviansk (14,000), Kyshtym (12,850), Revdinsk (9950), Upper and Lower Turinsk (9750), Nyazepetrovsk (9000), Verkh-Issetskii (7000), Nijne – Issetskii, Sysertskii (5900), Bogoslovsk (4500), Verkhne-Taghilsk (8850), and Suksunsk (8150). The salt-works of Usolie (7700) and Lenva (3250) may also be mentioned.

History.—Remains of Paleolithic man, everywhere very scarce in Russia, have not yet been discovered in the upper basins of the Kama and Obi, with the exception, perhaps, of a single human skull found in a cavern on the Tchanva (basin of Kama), together with a skull of Ursus spelwus. Neolithic remains, on the other hand, are met with in immense quantities on both Ural slopes throughout the territory of Perm. Still larger quantities of imple- ments belonging to an early Finnish, or rather Ugrian, civiliza- tion are found everywhere in the basin of the Kama, even in its northern parts, the present district of Tcherdyn. Even Herodotus speaks of the richness of this country inhabited by the Ugrians, who kept up a brisk traffic with the Greek colony of Olbia, and with the Bosphorus by way of the Sea of Azoff aud the Volga. The precise period at which the Ugrians left the district for the southern steppes of Russia (the “ Lebedia ” of Constantine Porphyro- genitus) is not known. In the 9th century the Scandinavians were acquainted with the country as Biarmia, and Byzantine annalists knew it as Permia. Nestor describes it as a territory of the Perm, a Finnish people, some 50,000 of whom still remain, and whose name seems to have been derived from parma, a Finnish word denoting hilly tracts thickly covered with forests.

The Russians penetrated into this region at an early date. In the 11th century Novgorod levied tribute from the Finnish in- habitants, and undertook the colonization of the country, which in the treaties of the 13th century is dealt with as a separate territory of Novgorod. In 1471, after the fall of Novgorod, Perm was annexed to Moscow, which in the following year erected a fort to protect Russian settlers and tradesmen from the Voguls, Ostyaks, and Samoyedes. Tcherdyn, the oldest town of Perm, was already in existence in the 15th century. The mineral wealth of the country soon attractcd the attention of the Moscow princes, and Ivan III. sent two Germans to scarch for ores ; these they succceded in finding south of the upper Petchora. A great impulse to colon- ization and mining was given by the Strogonoffs, when in the 16th century they received immense tracts of

land on the Kama and Tchusovaya. They founded the first salt and iron works, built forts, and colonized the Ural region. Solikamsk, Osa, Okhansk, and Verkhoturie were founded during this century. By the latter part of the century the Russian colonies had spread beyond the Ural Mountains ; and in this direction the Strogonoffs continued to extend their mining operations. The rapidly-growing trade with Siberia gave anew impulse to the development of the coun- try. This trade had its centres at Perm and Solikamsk, where merchandise brought up the Kama was unshipped and transported by land to Verkhoturie, at that time the first Siberian town and custom-house on the great highway. Kungur, too, attained some commercial importance. The fair of Irbit in the 17th century became the chief seat of the trade in merchandise, brought both from Russia to Siberia and from Siberia and Bokhara to Russia. Communication with Siberia having taken a northern route, the southern parts of the territory were not colonized until the next century, when Ekaterinburg, Krasnoufimsk, and Alapaevsk were fonnded. In 1780 the provinees of Perm and Ekaterinburg were instituted, but were soon united into one. (PPARs)

=

PE R—

PERM, capital of the above government, stands on the left bank of the Kama, on the great highway to Siberia, 930 miles north-east from Moscow. During summer it has regular steam communication with Kazan, 685 miles distant, and it is connected by rail with Ekaterinburg. The town is mostly built of wood, with broad streets and wide squares, and has a somewhat poor aspect, especially when compared with Ekaterinburg. It isthe see of a bishop, and has an ecclesiastical seminary and a military school. The manufactures are few; the Government manufactory of steel guns and munitions of war, in the immediate neigh- bourhood of the town, turns out about 1600 tons of guns annually. The aggregate production of the private manu- factories of all kinds did not exceed £165,000 in 1879; they included tanneries (£78,600), distilleries (£61,000), rope-works (£9500), brick-works, breweries, soap and candle works, iron-wire and copper-ware works. Numerous flour-mills and several oil-works occur within the district. The town derives its commercial importance as being the chief place of storage

for merchandise to and from Siberia (tea, metals and metal-wares, skins, leather, butter, wool, bristles, tallow, cedar nuts, linseed, &c.), which is un- shipped here from the steamers coniing up the Kama, and despatched by rail or on cars and sledges to Siberia, or wice versa. The trade is chiefly in the hands of Nijni Nov- gorod, Kazan, Ekaterinburg, and Siberian merchants. The population of Perm in 1879 was 32,350.

The present site of Perm was occupied, as early as the year 1568, by a settlement named Brukhanovo, founded by one of the Strogo- noffs ; this settlement seems to have received the name of Perm in the 17th century. The Yagozhikhinsky copper- work was founded in the immediate neighbourhood in 1723, and in 1781 it received officially the name of Perm, and became an administrative centre both for the country and for the mining region. The mining

- authorities left Perm for Ekaterinburg in 18380. –

PERMUTATIONS. See Atcrpra, vol. i. p. 560.

PERNAMBUCO, or Recirs, a city and seaport of Brazil and the chief town of the extensive province of Pernam- buco. As it is situated on the coast in 8° 3’ 27” §. lat. and 34° 50’ 14” W. long. (Fort Picao), not far from the point where the continent begins to trend towards the south-west, it is naturally the first port visited by steamers from Lisbon to Brazil. The reef, which can be traced more or less distinctly along the Brazilian seaboard for several hundred miles, rises at Pernambuco into a perfectly straight artificial-looking wall, 3} miles long, with even

a

F rt inco Ponts Y fo ere ot

Plan of Pernambuco.

Enflish Yards Fee eT

sides and a smooth and almost level top from 30 to 60 yards in width. It is of a hard pale-coloured sandstone, breaking with a very smooth fracture ;

and a tough layer of calcareous matter, generally several inches thick, pro-

duced by the successive growth and death of the small shells of Serpule with some few barnacles and nullipores, proves so effectual a protection of the outer surface that though it is exposed to the full force of the waves of the open Atlantic the oldest pilots know of no tradition of change in its appearance.! The belt of water within the reef is about a mile in width and forms a safe but rather shallow harbour ; vessels drawing 194 feet can enter, and there is abundant room for mooring along the shore and reef, but mail-steamers usually anchor in the roads and discharge by means of lighters. Sir John Hawkshaw's scheme for the improvement of the harbour (1874) was rejected by the Government as too costly ; but extensive dredging operations are being prosecuted. The city of Per- nambuco lies low, and is surrounded by a swampy stretch of country, with no high ground nearer than the hill on which Olinda is built, 8 miles to the north. It used to be considered the most pestilential of Brazilian seaports ; but its sanitary condition has greatly improved, partly owing to drainage-works executed by an English company. There are three natural divisions in the city—Recife ('the Reef "), situated not on the reef proper but on an island forming the southern end of a sandbank that stretches north towards Olinda ; Sant' Antonio, on a peninsula separated from the island by the united waters of the Capibaribe and the Biberibe; and Boa Vista, the fashionable residential district on the mainland opposite Sant' Antonio. In Recife the streets are narrow and crooked and many of the houses are of great age and present Dutch characteristics; but Sant' Antonio has broad straight streets, with well-paved side-walks, tramways (worked by mules), and modern- looking houses. Among the public buildings in Pernam- buco it is enough to mention the governor's palace, the episcopal palace, the hospital of Pedro IT. (5000 patients per annum, with French sisters of mercy as nurses), the foundling hospital, the poorhouse, the new lunatic asylum (1881), the university (18 professors and 530 students in 1879), the normal school, and the provincial library (13,000 vols., 11,581 readers, in 1880). The great commercial staple is sugar, and the brown sticky mud of the streets owes its peculiar character to the juice of the cane ; 825,711 bags of sugar were brought to the market in 1875-76 and 1,715,637 bags in 1879-80. Cotton,

which was first ex- ported in 1778 and continued a small item till 1781, now holds the second place,—130,925 bales in 1875-76 and 60,117 in 1879-80. Coal began to be imported in 1834,— 25,314 tons in 1879-80. The total value of the exports and imports has greatly increased.

1816. 1836. 1856. 1870. 1880.

Tmiporte. ..4…<0— £193,923 | £952,120 | £1,517,493 | £1,821,104 | £2,478,823 Bxporta ….nc-0+- £629,794 | £047,608 | £1,507,019 | £1,508,058 | £2,021,518

The port was opened to British vessels in 1808, and goods, which formerly had to pass through Portugal, began to be brought to England direct. A cemetery for British subjects was opened in 1814, a British hospital in 1821, and a British chapel in 1836. In 1880, out of a total of 1047 vessels (674,227 tons) calling at Pernambuco 451 (249,912 tons) were British. Pernambuco is connected with Olinda by a steam-tramway line and with Caxanga (84 miles) by a mule-tramway ; the Recife and San Francisco Railway (1856-62) runs 78 miles to Una, and is continued by a narrow-gauge line to Garanhuns ; and another narrow line strikes up the Capibaribe 52 miles to Limoeciro. In 1878 the population of the town and immediate suburbs was 94,493.

The name of Pernambuco (pera, ‘‘a stone,” nambuco, ** pierced”) appears to have been originally applied to Itamaraca (a town in

1 See Darwin’s account in Lond., Edinb., and Dubl. Phil. Mag., vol. xix., 1841, p. 257; and Natwralist’s Voyage, p. 498.

7° 44’ S. lat., now decayed, but formerly the capital of an independ- ent captaincy), where also there is an opening in the reef. In 1532 Duarte Coelho founded the city of Olinda, which continued to be the capital of the captaincy of Pernambuco till 1710. When in 1580 the country passed into the hands of Spain it had 700 stone houses, 4000 to 5000 negro slaves were employed in its sugar-planta- tions, and from 40 to 50 vessels came annually to load with sugar and Brazil wood, often called simply

Pernambuco or Fernambuk. Recife, which was a mere collection of fishers' huts when occupied by the French under Villegagnon in 1561, shortly afterwards began to attract attention as a port. It was captured and held for thirty- four days in 1595 by Sir James LANCASTER (q.v.), who did not, however, succeed in his attack on Olinda. In the 17th century this part of Brazil was the scene of a great struggle between the Spaniards and the Dutch. Olinda and Recife were captured by the Dutch under Admiral Loncq in 1630, and in the following year, when they were obliged to retreat to the reef, they left Olinda in flames. Fort Brun was built in 1631. In 1639 (Recife already con- taining 2000 houses) Count Maurice laid out a new town (Maurits- stad) on the island of Antonio Vaz, and built himself a palace (Vrijburg or Sans Souci) of materials obtained by the demolition of Olinda. A bridge was thrown across from Recife to Mauritsstad, and another from Mauritsstad to the mainland, where the count had his summer palace of Schoonzigt or Boa Vista. An observa- tory was erected under Marcgraf and De Laet. In 1654 the Dutch garrison, neglected by the authorities at home, who were at war with Cromwell, was obliged to capitulate to the Portuguese (26th

January).

See J. B. Fernandes Gama, Mem. hist. da Prov. de Pernambuco (Pernambuco, 1844); Barleus, Rerum in Brasilia gestarum historia (1660); and Netscher, "' Les Hollandais au Brésil," in Le Moniteur des Indes Orient. et Occid. (1848-49).

PERNAU, in Russian PERNOFF, a seaport town and watering-place of European Russia, in the government of Livonia, is situated in 58° 23' N. lat. and 24° 30' E. long,, 155 miles north of Riga, on the left bank of the Pernau or Pernova, which about half a mile farther down enters the Bay of Pernau, the northern arm of the Gulf of Riga. The town proper is well and regularly built, and contains two public gardens and two public parks (Salon Park and Bade Park), a town-house, a hospital, and a public library. On the right side of the river lies the suburb of Bremer- seite. The harbour is small, and the depth of water on the bar under 10 feet. The exports, which consist mainly of flax (to Great Britain, France, and Portugal), linseed (to Germany), mats, and cereals, had a value of 8,220,421 silver roubles in 1880, and of

5,427,465 in 1881 (a bad year). The population was 6690 in 1863, 9525 in 1867, and 12,918 in 1881.

Founded on the right side of the river in 1255 by one of the bishops of Oesel, Pernau, with its walls and castle, soon became a flourishing place. In the 16th century it was occupied in succession by the Swedes, the Poles, and the knights of the Teutonic order. After 1599 the Poles transferred the town to the left side of the river ; and in 1642 the Swedes, who had been in possession since 1617, strengthened it with regular‘fortifications. In 1710 it was be- sieged and taken by the Russians, and the fortress is now demolished.

PERNE, Anprew (1519-1589), a notable character in 16th-century history, was born at East Bilney in Nor- folk in 1519. He received his education at St John’s College, Cambridge, was afterwards a fellow of Queens’ College, and finally master of Peterhouse in the same university. He is best known asa remarkable example of the tergiversation in reference to religious profession which, owing to the sudden changes in the prescribed theological belief of the state, was only too common in his age. In the reign of Henry VIII. he defended the adora- tion of saints, but subsequently abandoned this doctrine in the reign of Edward VI., and became distinguished as an active promulgator of Reformation tenets. In the reign of Mary he subscribed the Roman Catholic articles, and when the remains of Martin Bucer and Paulus Fagius, —two Protestant professors in the university—were ex- humed and burnt, he preached on the occasion. He was rewarded for his subservience by being promoted to the deanery of Ely. Notwithstanding this discreditable com- pliance, he succeeded in gaining Elizabeth’s favour on her accession ; he signed the grace for restoring the names of Bucer and Fagius in the lists of honours and dignities

PRR ER

from which they had been expunged ; and he was elected by the university to the office of vice-chancellor. He thus, like Symond Symonds, the vicar of Bray, was twice a Papist and twice a Protestant. During the remainder of his career he was known as a moderate supporter of Church of England doctrine against the Puritan party. ‘““What bishop or politician in England,” asks Gabriel Harvey, “‘was so great a temporizer as he?” The wags of the

university invented a verb, perno, which, they de clared, meant, “I rat,” “I change often.” Yet the satirist, notwithstanding, admits his many excellent qualities and eulogizes him for his urbanity and singular tact in his intercourse with men of every class and shade of opinion. To this latter characteristic we must attribute the fact that, while, throughout his life, Perne preserved the friendship of austere churchmen like Whitgift, he was popular with critics of a very different stamp, such as the dissolute Thomas Nash, who declares that ‘“‘few men lived better.” It is not a little to Perne’s credit that the social influence which he thus acquired was uniformly exerted to bring about the ends which he had in view as a philan- thropist and a true lover of learning. He was a dis- tinguished benefactor of the university in which his life was mainly passed, and its library was restored chiefly through his efforts. His own library at Peterhouse was said to be the best at that time in England. Dr Perne died in 1589 while on a visit to Archbishop Whitgift, on whose gratitude he had established a lasting claim by the protec- tion he accorded him during the persecution under Mary. He belongs to the class of men whose influence during their lives is felt rather than seen; and the services he rendered to his generation become increasingly apparent in proportion as this period of English history is more closely studied.

PERONNE, chief town of an arrondissement of the department of the Somme, France, and a fortified place on the right bank of that river at its confluence with the stream called the Doingt or Cologne, lies 94 miles north- north-east of Paris on the railway from Paris to Cambrai. Wet moats surround the ramparts, which are built of brick. The church of St Jean (1509-1525) was greatly damaged during the bombardment of 1870-71, but has since been restored. The castle of Péronne, in one of the bastions of the enceinte, was partially destroyed by fire in 1877; it still retains four large conical-roofed towers dating from the Middle Ages, one of which is said to have been the prison of Louis XI., when he had his famous encounter with Charles the Bold (1468). The town-hall, which was built in the 16th century, has an elegant campanile of modern construction. The population of Péronne in 1881 was 4696.

The Frankish kings had a villa at Péronne, which Clovis IT. gave to Erchinoaldus, mayor of the palace. The latter founded a monastery here,

and raised in honour of St Furcy a collegiate church, which was a wealthy establishment until the Revolution ; it is the burial-place of Charles the Simple, who died of starvation in a dungeon in Péronne, into which he had been thrown by the count of Vermandois (929). After the death of Philip of Alsace Péronne, which he had inherited through his wife, escheated to the French crown (1199), and in 1209 reccived a charter with municipal privileges from Philip Augustus. By the treaty of Arras (1485) it was given to the Burgundians; bought back by Louis XI., it passed again into the hands of Charles the Bold in 1465. On the death of Charles, however, in 1477, Louis XI. resumed possession. In 1536 the emperor Charles V. besieged Péronne, but without success ; in its defence a woman called Marie Fourré greatly distinguished herself, and the anniversary of the raising of the siege was celebrated at Péronne for many years. It was the first town after Paris at which the League was proclaimed in 1577. Péronne's greatest misfortunes occurred during the late Franco-German war. It was invested on 27th December 1870, and bombarded from the 28th to the 9th of the following January, upon which date, on account of the suffer- ings of the civil population, among whom smallpox had broken out, it was compelled to capitulate. Out of 700 houses 600 were

more or less injured and eighty-two buildings set on fire ; the tower of the church of St Jean was also burnt, its roofing and timber-work destroyed, and the bells melted by the flames. This damage has since been repaired.

PEROUSE. See La Pirovuss, vol. xiv. p. 298.

PERPETUAL MOTION, or Perpetuum Mosizs, in its usual significance does not mean simply a machine which will go on moving for ever, but a machine which, once set in motion, will go on doing useful work without draw- ing on any external source of energy, or a machine which in every complete cycle of its operation will give forth more energy than it has absorbed. Briefly, a perpetual motion usually means a machine which will create energy.

The earlier seekers after the "perpetuum mobile" did not always appreciate the exact nature of their quest; for we find among their ideals a clock that

would periodically rewind itself, and thus go without human interference as long as its machinery would last. The energy created by such a machine would simply be the work done in over- coming the friction of its parts, so that its projectors might be held merely to have been ignorant of the laws of friction and of the dynamic theory of heat. Most of the perpetual motionists, however, had more practical views, and ex- plicitly declared the object of their inventions to be the doing of useful work, such as raising water, grinding corn, and soon. Like the exact quadrature of the circle, the transmutation of metals, and other famous problems of antiquity, the perpetual motion has now become a vener- able paradox. Still, like these others, it retains a great historical interest. Just as some of the most interesting branches of modern pure mathematics sprang from the problem of squaring the circle, as the researches of the alchemists developed into the science of modern chemistry, so, as the result of the vain search after the perpetual motion, there grew up the greatest of all the generalizations of physical science, the principle of the conservation of energy.

There was a time when the problem of the perpetual motion was one worthy of the attention of a philosopher. Before that analysis of the action of ordinary machines which led to the laws of dynamics, and the discussion of the dynamical interdependence of natural phenomena which accompanied the establishment of the dynamical theory of heat, there was nothing plainly unreasonable in the idea that work might be done by the mere concatenation of machinery. It had not then been proved that energy is uncreatable and indestructible in the ordinary course of nature; even now that proof has only been given by in- duction from long observation of facts. There was a time when wise men believed that a spirit, whose maintenance would cost nothing, could by magic art be summoned from the deep to do his master’s work; and it was just as reasonable to suppose that a structure of wood, brass, and iron could be found to work under like conditions. The disproof is in both cases alike. No such spirit has ever existed, save in the imagination of his describer, and no such machine has ever been known to act, save in the fancy of its inventor.

The principle of the conservation of energy, which in one sense is simply a denial of the possibility of a perpetual motion, rests on facts drawn from every branch of physi- eal science ; and, although its full establishment is

not half a century old, yet so numerous are the cases in which it has been tested, so various the deductions from it that have been proved to accord with experience, that it is now regarded as one of the best-established laws of nature. Consequently, on any one who calls it in question is thrown the burden of proving his case. If any machine Were produced whose source of energy could not at once be traced, a man of science (complete freedom of investi- gation being supposed) would in the first place try to

trace its power to some hidden source of a kind already known ; or in the last resort he would seek for a source of energy of a new kind and give it a new name. Any assertion of creation of energy by means of a mere machine would have to be authenticated in many instances, and established by long investigation, before it could be received in modern science. The case is precisely as with the law of gravitation ; if any apparent exception to this were observed in the case of some heavenly body, astro- nomers, instead of denying the law, would immediately seek to explain the occurrence by a wider application of it, say by including in their calculations the effect of some dis- turbing body hitherto neglected. If a man likes to indulge the notion that, after all, an exception to the law of the conservation of energy may be found, and, provided he submits his idea to the test of experiment at his own charges without annoying his neighbours, all that can be said is that he is engaged in an unpromising enterprise. The case is otherwise with the projector who comes for- ward with some machine which claims by the mere in- genuity of its contrivance to multiply the energy sup- plied to it from some of the ordinary sources of nature and sets to work to pester scientific men to examine his supposed discovery, or attempts therewith to induce the credulous to waste their money. This is by far the largest class of perpetual-motion-mongers nowadays. The interest of such cases is that attaching to the morbid anatomy of the human mind. Perhaps the most striking feature about them is the woful sameness of the symptoms of their madness. As a body perpetual-motion seekers are ambi- tious, lovers of the short path to wealth and fame, but wholly superficial. Their inventions are very rarely char- acterized even by mechanical ingenuity. Sometimes in- deed the inventor has simply bewildered himself by the complexity of his device ; but in most cases the machines of the perpetual motionist are of

child-like simplicity, remarkable only for the extraordinary assertions of the inventor concerning them. Wealth of ideas there is none; simply assertions that such and such a machine solves the problem, although an identical contrivance has been shown to do no such thing by the brutal test of standing still in the hands of many previous inventors. Hosts of the seekers for the perpetual motion have attacked their insoluble problem with less than a schoolboy's share of the requisite knowledge ; and their confidence as a rule is in proportion to their ignorance. Very often they get no farther than a mere prospectus, on the strength of which they claim some imaginary reward, or offer their precious discovery for sale ; sometimes they get the length of a model which wants only the last perfection (already in the inventor's brain) to solve the great problem; sometimes fraud is made to supply the motive-power which their real or pretended efforts have failed to discover.

It was no doubt the barefaced fallacy of most of the plans for perpetual motion that led the majority of scien- tific men to conclude at a very early date that the " per- petuum mobile" was an impossibility. We find the Parisian Academy of Sciences refusing, as early as 1775, to receive schemes for the perpetual motion, which they class with solutions of the duplication of the cube, the trisection of an angle, and the quadrature of the circle. Stevinus and Leibnitz seem to have regarded its impossibility as axi- omatic; and Newton at the beginning of his Principia states, so far as ordinary mechanics are concerned, a prin- ciple which virtually amounts to the same thing (see Mecuanics, vol. xv. p. 715).

The famous proof of De la Hire simply refers to some of the more common gravitational perpetual motions, to which we shall refer shortly. The truth is, as we have said already, that, if proof is to be given, or considered XVIII. — 70

necessary, it must proceed by induction from all physical phenomena.

Tt would serve no useful purpose here to give an exhaustive historical account of the vagaries of mankind in pursuit of the " perpetuum mobile." The reader may consult on this subject the two volumes by Henry Dircks,

C.E., published by E. and F. N. Spon, London, 1861 and 1870, from which, for the most part, we select the follow- ing facts to give the reader some idea of this department of the history of human fallibility.

By far the most numerous class of perpetual motions is that which seeks to utilize the action of gravity upon rigid solids. We have not read of any actual proposal of the kind, but the most obvious thing to imagine in this way would be to procure some substance which intercepts gravitational attraction. If this could be had, then, by introducing a plate of it underneath a body while it was raised, we could elevate the body without doing work ; then, removing the plate, we could allow the body to fall and do work; eccentrics or other imposing device being added to move the gravitation intercepter, behold a perpetual motion complete! The great difficulty is that no one has found the proper material for an intercepter.

Fig. 1 represents one of the most ancient and oftenest- repeated of gravitational perpetual motions. The idea is that the balls rolling in the compartments between the felloe and the rim of the wheel will, on the whole, so com- port themselves that the moment about the centre of those on the descending side exceeds the moment of those on the ascending side. Endless devices, such as curved spokes, levers with elbow- joints, eccentrics, d&c., have been proposed for effecting this impossibi- lity. The modern student of dynamics at once con- vinces himself that no machinery can effect any such result; because, if we give the wheel a com- plete turn, so that each ball returns to its ori- ginal position, the whole work done by the ball will, at the most, equal that done on it. If we were to start the wheel and balls in the most general way possible, we should doubtless have a very pretty problem to solve ; but we know that, if the laws of motion be true, in each step the kinetic energy given to the whole system of wheel and balls is equal to that taken from the potential energy of the balls less what is dissipated in the form of heat by frictional forces, or vice versa, if the wheel and balls be losing kinetic energy,—save that the friction in both cases leads to dissipation. So that, whatever the system may lose, it can, after it is left to itself, never gain energy during its motion.

The two most famous perpetual motions of history, viz., the wheels of the marquis of Worcester and of Councillor Orffyreus were probably of this

type. The marquis of Worcester gives the following account of his machine in his Century of Inventions (art. 56).

_“To provide and make that all the Weights of the descending side of a Wheel shall be perpetually further from the Centre than those of the mounting side, and yet equal in number and heft to the one side as the other. A most incredible thing, if not seen, but tried before the late king (of blessed memory) in the Tower, by my directions, two Extraordinary Embassadors accompanying His Majesty, and the Duke of Richmond, and Duke Hamilton, with most of the Court, attending Him. The Wheel was 14. Foot over, and 40. Weights of 50. pounds apiece. Sir William Balfore, then Lieutenant of the Tower, can justify it, with several others. They all saw, that no sooner these great Weights passed the Diameter-

Fig. 1.

line of the lower side, but they hung a foot further from the Centre, nor no sooner passed the Diameter-line of the upper side but they hung a foot nearer. Be pleased to judge the consequence.”

Orffyreus (whose real name was Bessler) also obtained distinguished patronage for his invention. His last wheel, for he appears to have constructed more than one, was 12 feet in diameter and 1 foot 2 inches broad; it consisted of a light framework of wood covered in with oil-cloth so that the interior was concealed, and was mounted on an axle which had no visible connexion with any external mover. It was examined and approved of by the land- grave of Hesse-Cassel, in whose castle at Weissenstein it is said to have gone for eight weeks in a sealed room. The most remarkable thing about this machine is that it evidently imposed upon the mathematician ’s Gravesande, who wrote a letter to Newton giving an account of his examination of Orffyreus’s wheel undertaken at the request of the landgrave, wherein he professes himself dissatisfied with the proofs theretofore given of the impossibility of perpetual motion, and indicates his opinion that the in- vention of Orffyreus is worthy of investigation. He him- self, however, was not allowed to examine the interior of the wheel. The inventor seems to have destroyed it himself. One story is that he did so on

account of difft- culties with the landgrave’s Government as to a licence for it; another that he was annoyed at the examination by ’s ravesande, and wrote on the wall of the room containing the fragments of his model that he had destroyed it because of the impertinent curiosity of Professor ’s Gravesande.

The history of this case is noteworthy, because it con- tains all the characters that usually appear in such comedies even now,—the fraudulent paradoxer, the illustrious and intelligent patron, the simple-minded, unbiassed, scientific witness.

It is worthy of remark that the overbalancing-wheel perpetual motion seems to be as old as the 13th century. In his second series Dircks quotes an account of an inven- tion by Wilars de Honecort, an architect whose sketch-book is still preserved in the Ecoles des Chartes at Paris. De Honecort says, “ Many a time have skilful workmen tried to contrive a wheel that shall turn of itself; here is a way to do it by means of an uneven number of mallets, or by quicksilver.” He thereupon gives a rude sketch of a wheel with mallets jointed to its circumference. It would appear from some of the manuscripts of Leonardo da Vinci that he had worked with similar notions.

Another scheme of the perpetual motionist is a water- wheel which shall feed its own mill-stream. This notion is probably as old as the first miller who experienced the difficulty of a dry season. One form is figured in the Mathematical Magic of Bishop Wilkins (1614-1672) ; the essential part of it is the water-screw of Archimedes, which appears in many of the earlier machines of this class. Some of the later ones dispense with even the subtlety of the water-screw, and boldly represent a water-wheel

well-known inventor of the digester, exposes one of these in the Philo- sophical Transactions for 1685. The most naive of these devices is that illustrated in fig. 2, the idea of which is that the larger quantity of water in the wider part of the vessel weighing more will over- balance the smaller quantity in the

Fig. 2. narrower part, so that the water will run over at ©, and so on continually.

Capillary attraction has also been a favourite field for

the vain quest; for, if by capillary action fluids can be made to disobey the law of never rising above their own level, what so easy as thus to produce a continual ascent and overflow, and thus perpetual motion? Various schemes of this kind, involving an endless band which should raise more water by its capillary action on one side than on the other, have been proposed. The most celebrated is that of Sir Wil- liam Congreve, who invented the rockets that bear

his name. EFG (fig. 3) is an inclined _ plane

over pulleys; at the top and bot- tom travels an endless band of Fig. 3.

sponge, abcd, and over this again an endless band of heavy weights jointed together. The whole stands over the surface of still water. The capillary action raises the water in ab, whereas the same thing cannot happen in the part ad, since the weights squeeze the water out. Hence, inch for inch, ad is heavier than ad; but we know that if ab were only just as heavy inch for inch as ad there would be equilibrium, if the heavy chain be also uniform; there- fore the extra weight of ab will cause the chain to move round in the direction of the arrow, and this will go on continually,

The more recondite vehicles of energy, such as electricity and magnetism, are more seldom drawn upon by perpetual- motion inventors than might perhaps be expected. In- stances do occur, but devices of this kind have not become acommon part of the folklore of nations like the over- balancing wheel and the self-sufficient water-mill. Gilbert, in his treatise De Magnete, alludes to some of them, and Bishop Wilkins mentions among others a machine “wherein a loadstone is so disposed that it shall draw unto it on a reclined plane a bullet of steel, which, still as it ascends near to the loadstone, may be contrived to fall through some hole in the plane and so to return unto the place whence at first it began to move, and being there, the loadstone will again attract it upwards, till, coming to this hole, it will fall down again, and so the motion shall be perpetual.” The fact that screens do exist whereby elec- trical and magnetic action can be cut off would seem to

open a door for the perpetual-motion seeker. Unfortu- nately the bringing up and removing of these screens involves in all cases just that gain or loss of work which is demanded by the inexorable law of the conservation of energy. A shoemaker of Linlithgow called Spence pre- tended that he had found a black substance which inter- cepted magnetic attraction and repulsion, and he produced two machines which were moved,y

as he asserted, by the agency of permanent magnets, thanks to the black substance. The fraud was speedily exposed, but it is worthy of remark that Sir David Brewster thought the thing worth mentioning in a letter to the Annales de Chimie, 1818, wherein he states “that Mr Playfair and Captain Kater have inspected both of these machines and are satisfied that they resolve ‘ the problem of perpetual motion.” i ae

Not very long ago the writer of this article received by post an elaborate drawing of a locomotive engine which

\ ;

was to be worked by the agency of permanent magnets. He forgets the details, but it was not so simple as the plan represented in fig. 4, where M and N are permanent magnets, whose attraction is “screened” by the wooden blocks A and B from the upper left and lower right quad- rants of the soft iron wheel W, which consequently is attracted round in the same direction by both M and N, and thus goes on for ever.

One more page from this chapter of the book of human folly; the author is the famous John Bernoulli. We translate his Latin, as far as possible, into modern phraseo-

logy.

In the first place we must premise the following (see fig. 5).

1. If there be two fluids of different densities whose densities are in the ratio of G to L, the height of equiponderating cylinders on equal bases will be in

the inverse ratio of L to G.

2. Accordingly, if the height AC of one fluid, contained in the vase AD, be in this ratio to the height EF of the other liquid, which is in a tube open at both ends, the liquids so placed will remain at rest.

3. Wherefore, if AC be to EF in a greater ratio than L to G, the liquid in the tube will ascend; or if the tube be not sufficiently long the liquid will overflow at the orifice E (this follows from hydrostatic principles).

4. It is possible to have two liquids of different density that will mix.

5. It is possible to have a filter, colander, or other separator, by means of which the lighter liquid mixed with the heavier may be separated again therefrom.

Construction.—These things being presupposed, I thus construct a perpetual motion. Let there be taken in any (if you please, in equal) quantities two liquids of different densities mixed together (which may be had by Hyp. 4), and let the ratio of their densities be first determined, and be the heavier to the lighter as G to L, then with the mixture let the vase AD be filled up to A. This done, let the tube EF, open at both ends, be taken of such a length that AC: EF>2L:G+1L; let the lower orifice F of this tube beA stopped, or rather covered with the filter or other material scparating the lighter liquid from the heavier (which may also be had by Hyp. 5); now let the tube thus prepared be immersed to the bottom of the ves- sel CD; I say that the liquid will C continually ascend through the ori- fice F of the tube and overflow by the orifice E upon the liquid below. ¢

Demonstration.—Because the ori- fice F of the tube is covered by the b Vic 5 filter (by constr.) which separates 1B ‘ the lighter liquid from the heavier, it follows that, if the tube be immersed to the bottom of the vessel, the lighter liquid alone which is mixed with the heavier ought to rise through the filter into the tube, and that, too, higher than the surface of the surrounding liquid (by Hyp. 2), so that AC: EF=2L:G+L; but since (by constr.) AC: EF>2L:G+L it necessarily follows (by Hyp. 3) that the lighter liquid will flow over by the orifice E into the vessel below, and there will meet the heavier and be again mixed with it; and it will then penetrate the

filter, again ascend the tube, and be a second time driven through the upper orifice. Thus, therefore, will the flow be continued for ever. Q.E.D. ‘

He then proceeds to apply this theory to explain the perpetual rise of water to the mountains, and its flow in rivers to the sea, which others had falsely attributed to capillary action,—his idea being that it was an effect of the different densities of salt and fresh water.

One really is at a loss with Bernoulli’s wonderful theory, whether to admire most the conscientious statement of the hypothesis, the prim logic of the demonstration, so care- fully cut according to the pattern of the ancients, or the weighty superstructure built on so frail a foundation. Most of our perpetual motions were clearly the result of too little learning ; surely this one was the product of too much. (G. CH.)

PERPIGNAN (Spanish, Perpifian), the ancient capital of Roussillon, and now the chief town of the department

of Pyrénées Orientales, France, and a first-class fortress,

stands about 66 feet above sea-level, on the right bank of the Tet, 7 miles above the point where it falls into the Mediterranean. The streets of Perpignan are narrow and crooked, and the houses have no architectural pretensions. The cathedral of St Jean, in the Third Pointed style, was commenced in 1324 by the bishop of Elne, and carried on by Sancho II., king of Majorca. The chancel, built when Louis XI. was master of Roussillon, bears the arms of France. The nave is 259 feet long, 64 wide, and 89 high. The most noteworthy feature in the building is an immense reredos of white marble, begun in 1618 by Bar- tholomew Soler of Barcelona. The tomb of Louis de Mont- mor, first French bishop of Elne after the annexation of Roussillon to France, is also worthy of notice; the black marble sarcophagus is supported by four white marble lions, and surmounted by the recumbent figure of the bishop. The bede-tower, built over a small Romanesque chapel, is crowned by an iron cage which dates from 1742. The Place de la Loge, which derives its name from the Spanish

word Jonja (market or bazaar), was built in 1396 in a Pointed style suggestive of the Moorish, and was in-

IE hy

CaN aa Ly es 2 (er

Grapes 7) eo SS WES Lik INL

Plan of Perpignan,

tended for a cloth-exchange. The gate-house adjoining the Narbonne road, built in the time of Louis XI., has elegant turrets. The fortifications of the citadel, which is large enough to contain 2000 men, are of various times. The kings of Majorca had a castle on the terrace commanding the town, of which all that now remains is the keep. The chapel is remarkable as being a mixture of the Romanesque, Pointed, and Moorish styles; the top of its tower com- mands a view of the whole plain of Roussillon, with its flourishing market-gardens and vineyards, overhung on the south-west by Mount Canigou, and bounded by the Corbiéres on the north, the Albéres on the south, and the Mediterranean on the east. The ramparts surround- ing the citadel are the work of Louis XI., Charles V., and Vauban. The sculptures and caryatides still to be seen on the gateway were placed there by the duke of Alva. Perpignan was the seat of a university founded by the kings of Aragon, and the town still possesses an inter- esting museum of sculptures and pictures, where are to be seen the first photographic proofs produced by Daguerre, a natural history collection, and a library containing 30,000 volumes. In one of the squares of the town is the statue of Arago, unveiled in 1879. The manufactures of Perpignan are cloth-making, cork-cutting, tanning, and cooperage, and it has a large trade in wine, brandy, honey, fine wool, fruit, and vegetables. The population in 1881 was 31,735.

Perpignan had its origin in a Benedictine monastery, and its name first appears in charters of the 10th century. The place had

PEK R—

PER

already grown into a town when Philip the Bold, king of France, died there in 1285, as he was returning from an unsuccessful expedi- tion into Aragon. At that time it belonged to the kingdom of Majorca, which was created in 1262, and its sovereigns resided there until, in 1344, that small state reverted to the possession of the kings of Aragon. When Louis XI. occupied Roussillon ag security for money advanced by him to the king of Aragon, Per- pignan resisted the French arms for a considerable time, and only yielded through stress of famine (15th March 1475). Roussillon was restored to Aragon by Charles VIII., and Perpignan was again besieged in 1542 by Francis I., but without success. Later on, however, the inhabitants, angered by the tyranny and cruelty of the Spanish governor, surrendered the town to Louis XIII. ‘The citadel held out until the 9th of September 1642, and the place has ever since belonged to France, to which it was formally ceded by the treaty of the Pyrenees.

PERRAULT, Caries (1628-1703), the most pro- minent author of France in a specially French kind of literature—the fairy tale—and one of the chief actors in the famous literary quarrel of ancients and moderns, was born at Paris on 12th January 1628. His father, Pierre Perrault, was a barrister, all whose four sons were nien of some distinction,—Claude, the second, who was first a physician and then an architect, being the best known next to Charles the youngest. The latter was brought up at the Collége de Beauvais, until he chose to quarrel with his masters, after which (an incident rather rare at the time when patriarchal government of families was in full fashion) he was allowed to follow his own bent in the way of study. He took his degree of “licencié en droit” at Orleans in 1651, and was almost immediately called to the Paris bar, where, however, he practised for a very short time. In 1654 his father bought himself the post of receiver-general at Paris, and made Charles his clerk. After nearly ten years of this employment he was, in 1663, chosen by Colbert as his secretary in a curious and not easily describable office. Put shortly, Perrault’s duties were to assist and advise the minister in matters relating to the arts and sciences, not forgetting literature. The protection of Colbert procured a place in the Académie Frangaise for his protégé in 1671, and Perrault justified his election in several ways. One was the orderly arrange- ment of the business affairs of the Academy, another was the suggestion of the custom (which more than anything else has given the institution a hold on the French

public) of holding public séances for the reception of candidates. Colbert's death in 1683 put an end to Perrault's official career, but even before that event he had experienced the morose and ungenerous temper which was the great draw- back of that very capable statesman. He now gave him- self up to literature, in which, like most men of his time, he had made some experiments already. The famous dispute of ancients and moderns is said to have arisen in consequence of some words used by Perrault in one of the regular academic discourses, on which Boileau, with his usual rudeness, commented in violent terms. Perrault, though a very good-natured man, had ideas and a will of his own, and the Paralléle des Anciens et des Modernes, which appeared between 1688 and 1696, was the result. The well-known controversy that followed in its train raged hotly in France, passed thence to England, and in the days of La Motte and Fénelon broke out again in the country of its origin. As far as Perrault is concerned, he was inferior to his adversaries in learning, but decidedly superior to them in wit. It is not known what, except the general popularity of the fairy tale in the last decade of the century, drew Perrault to the composition of the only works of his which are still read. The first of them, Griselidis, which is in verse, appeared in 1691, Peau d' Ane and Les Souhaits Ridicules, also in verse, in 1694. But Perrault was no poet, and the merit of these pieces is entirely obscured by that of the prose tales, Za Belle au Bois Dormant, Petit Chaperon Rouge, La Barbe Bleue, Le

Chat Botté, Les Fées, Cendrillon, Riquet & la Houppe, which, after being published in a miscellany during 1696 and 1697, appeared in a volume with the last-named year on the title-page, and with the general title of Histoires du Temps Passé. No criticism of these famous productions is necessary, and it is scarcely less superfluous to observe that Perrault has no claim to the invention of the subjects. His merit is that he has treated them with a literary skill in adapting style to matter which cannot possibly be ex- ceeded. Of his other work some Mémoires and academic Eloges need alone be mentioned. He died on 16th May

1703.

Except the tales, Perrault's works have not recently been re- printed. Of the tales the best recent editions are those of Giraud (Lyons, 1865) and Lefévre (Paris, 1875).

PERRONE, Giovanni (1794-1876), Roman Catholic theologian, was born at Chieri (Piedmont) in 1794, studied theology at Turin, and in his twenty-first year went to Rome, where he joined the Society of Jesus, and, after his ordination to the priesthood, became a teacher in the Col- legium Romanum. From Ferrara, where he was rector of the Jesuit college after 1830, he returned to his teaching work in Rome, being made head of his old college in 1850. He died on 26th August 1876. He was the author of numerous dogmatic works, which, as clearly and faithfully reflecting the prevailing tendencies of Roman theology, obtained wide currency and were extensively translated. They may still be regarded as representing most nearly the modern orthodoxy of his church. The Prelectiones Theologice may be specially named (1st ed. 1835, 31st ed. 1866).

PERRY, an alcoholic beverage, obtained by the fermenta- tion of the juice of pears. The manufacture is in all essentials identical with that of CrpER (¢.v.), though there are some variations in detail arising from the more abund- ant mucilage of the pear. The clearest and most concise account of making cider and perry is contained in the fourth part of the Herefordshire Pomona for 1881 (p. 133 sq.). The fruits are either taken at once to the crushing mill or allowed, like apples, to remain in heaps so as to ripen uniformly; they are then crushed between rollers of granite or millstone grit, and the must or juice poured into casks. In making the better kinds of perry only the best sorts of pears are used without admixture; but for ordinary purposes pears of various kinds are mixed indis- criminately, although, as in the case of the apple, the fruits used for the manufacture of perry are not those which are the most suitable for dessert. It is con- sidered better not to crush the pips, as the flavour of the perry is thereby deteriorated. The most scrupulous clean- liness is absolutely requisite, and all the metal-work of the machinery should be sedulously kept bright, otherwise the acids of the juice dissolve the oxides, and, in the case of lead, produce poisonous salts. Pear-juice contains grape- sugar, tannic, malic, and tartaric acids, albumen, lime, pectin, mucilage, and other ingredients. The quantity of potash and phosphoric acid in the juice is relatively large. At a temperature ranging

from 50° to 80° the juice undergoes natural fermentation without the addition of yeast. This fermentation, however, is brought about by the agency of a “ferment” (saccharomyces), which feeds on the grape-sugar of the juice, decomposing it, and causing the rearrangement of its constituents in the form of alcohol, carbonic-acid gas, glycerin, &e. The saccharomyces fer- ments in the first instance absorb oxygen and liberate car- bonic acid, as in the process of respiration, but the air of the fluid in which they live speedily becomes exhausted of its oxygen, and then the ferments obtain further supplies from the glucose, in effecting the decomposition of which they set free more oxygen than they require, and this,

uniting with the hydrogen and the carbon, forms the pro- ducts of fermentation.

_ In practice the pulp is removed from the mill and placed in open vats for forty-eight hours or longer. Gentle fermentation sets in, as shown by the formation of froth and bubbles of carbonic-acid gas. The pulp is then placed in layers separated by hair-cloths, which act as sieves or filters when the mass is placed in a press like a cheese- press. The pressure is gradual at first and afterwards increased. The juice or must is poured into hogsheads, leaving an unfilled space as “ullage.” The hogsheads are placed in a cool cellar, when fermentation begins as above explained, and a thick scum forms on the surface called the “upper lees.” At the same time mucilage and ferment-cells with the more solid particles sink to the bottom and form the “lower lees” at the bottom of the barrel. When the fermentation has subsided the liquor between the upper and lower lees should be bright, but in the case of perry, owing to the large quantity of mucilage, the juice has to be filtered through filters of Forfar linen, — a tedious process. The clear liquor is now racked off into clean casks, not quite filled, but leaving space for “‘ullage,” and kept uncorked at a low temperature. A better practice is to close the cask with a bung, through which a curved siphon-like tube is passed, one end of it being in the “‘yllage” and the portion of it outside the cask being bent downwards and then upwards ; then either the bend of the tube may be filled with one or two tablespoonfuls of water, or the outer end of the bent tube may be plunged in a cup of water,—the object in all cases

being to provide for the escape of gas from the cask and to prevent the passage of air into it. In a week or so the fermentation ceases or nearly so, the liquor becomes clear and quiet, when isinglass is added in the proportion of one ounce to a hogshead of 100 to 115 gallons. (In Devonshire, the hogshead con- tains uniformly fifty gallons.) In January or February the bungs are driven in firmly. While fermentation is going on, a temperature of 50° to 70° is most propitious, but after the liquor has been racked off it should be kept in a uniformly cool cellar as near to 40° Fahr. as can be done. When it is desirable to restrain over-violent or hasty fermentation, sulphur or salicylic acid is employed. The latter, being the simpler and cleaner, is the better agent to be adopted. An ounce or an ounce and a half to a hundred gallons should be poured into the fermenting liquor immediately after it has been racked. It is very effectual, and leaves no sensible effects on the liquor if carefully used, being tasteless and free from smell. Great care should be taken, however, not to allow the acid to come into contact with any metal such as iron, or a black colour will result. Perry contains about 7 per cent. of alcohol, and will keep in casks if well made for three or four years, or longer if in bottle. It does not, however, travel well.

PERSEPHONE. See PROSERPINE.

PERSEPOLIS. In the interior of Persia proper, some 40 miles north-east of Shiraz, and not far from where the small river Pulwdr flows into the Kur (Kyrus), there is a large terrace with its east side leaning on Kuhi Rahmet

‘the Mount of Grace”). The other three sides are formed by a retaining wall, varying in height with the slope of the ground from 14 to 41 feet; and on the west side a magnificent double stair, of very easy steps, leads to the top. On this terrace, which is not perfectly level, stand and lie the ruins of a number of colossal buildings, all constructed of exquisite dark-grey marble from the adja- cent mountain. The stones were laid without mortar, and many of them are still i situ, although the iron clamps by which they were fastened together have been stolen or destroyed by rust. The mason-work is excellent, and the.

style of the lofty palaces, colonnades, and vestibules most imposing. Especially striking are the huge pillars, of which a number still stand erect. No traveller can escape the spell of these majestic ruins! It is impossible to give a minute account of them here; the reader must refer to the numerous descriptions and illustrations in the works of ancient and modern travellers? It is to be observed that several of the buildings were never finished. Stolze has shown that in some cases even the mason's rub- bish has not been removed, and remarks accordingly that in those early times, just as at the present day, an Oriental prince would rather commence a new building of his own than complete the unfinished work of his predecessor.

These ruins, for which the name Chzhil mendre or "the forty minarets"? can be traced back to the 13th century,* are now known as Z'akhti Jamshid, "the throne of Jamshid" (a mythical king). That they represent the Persepolis captured and partly destroyed by Alexander the Great has been beyond dispute, at least since the time of Pietro della Valle.5 Amongst the earlier scholars the fanciful notions of the Persians, who are utterly ignorant of the real history of their country before Alexander, often re- ceived too much attention; hence many of them were of opinion that the buildings were of much higher antiquity than the time of Cyrus; and even those who rightly regarded them as the works of the Achzmenians were unable to support their theory by conclusive evidence.® The decipherment of the cuneiform Persian inscriptions found on the ruins and in the neighbourhood has put an end to all doubt on this point. We now read with absolute certainty that some of the edifices are the work of Darius I, Xerxes, and Artaxerxes ITI. (Ochus), and with equal certainty we may conclude that all the others were built under the Achzemenian dynasty.

Behind Takhti Jamshid are three sepulchres hewn out of the rock in the hillside, the facades, one of which is incomplete, being richly ornamented with reliefs. About 8 miles to the north-north-east, on the opposite side of the Pulwar, rises a perpendicular wall of rock, in which four similar tombs are cut, at a considerable height from the bottom of the valley. The modern Persians call this place Nakshi Rustam ("the picture of Rustam") from the Sasanian reliefs beneath the opening, which they take to be a representation of the mythical hero Rustam. That the occupants of these seven tombs were kings might be inferred from the sculptures, and one of those at Nakshi

Rustam is expressly declared in its inscription to be the tomb of the great Darius, concerning whom Ctesias relates

1 See the descriptiou of Mas‘udi (ed. Barbier de Meynard, iv. 76 sq.), written 944 a.pD.; and that of Makdisi (Mokaddasi, ed. De Goeje, p. 444), written forty years later.

> See especially Chardin, Kaempfer, Niebuhr, and Ouseley. Niebuhr’s drawings, though good, are, for the purposes of the architectural student, inferior to the great work of Texier, and still far more to that of Flandin and Coste. Good sketches, chiefly after Flandin, are given by Kossowicz, Inscriptiones palwo-persice, St Petersburg, 1872. In addition to these we have now the photographic plates in Stolze’s Persepolis (2 vols., Berlin, 1882). Stolze’s ‘‘ photogrammetric ” plan surpasses all previous attempts in accuracy. The numerous reliefs found in this group of ruins (especially on the great double stair), executed in a very remarkable style of art, were first brought within the scope of accurate examination by these works, since, with some individual exceptions (as in Ouseley), the drawings of the figures in the older works were quite inadequate.

3 Neither “the forty towers” nor “the forty pillars” is a correct rendering of the expression. The round pillars with their heavy capitals have a much closer resemblance to the turrets of the Moham- medan mosques than to our church towers. An older name for all the splendid ruins through the Pulwér valley is hazdér sutin, “the thousand pillars” (Hamza Isp., ed. Gottwaldt, p. 38). A thousand is, of course, like forty, a round number.

4 Sir W. Ouseley, Travels, ii. 369,

5 Lettera xv. (ed. Brighton, 1848, ii. 246 sq.).

8 See the discussion of this question in Ouseley.

Pree Po iis

that his grave was in the face of a rock, and could be reached only by means of an apparatus of ropes, Ctesias mentions further, with regard to a number of Persian kings, either that their remains were brought és Ilépoas, “to the

Persians," or that they died there.? Now we know that Cyrus was buried at Pasargade, the modern Murgéb, two days' journey north-east from Persepolis,§ and if there is any truth in the statement that the body of Cambyses was brought home "to the Persians" hig burying-place must be sought somewhere beside that of his father. In order to identify the graves of Persepolis we must bear in mind that Ctesias assumes that it was the custom for a king to prepare his own tomb during his lifetime. Hence the kings buried at Nakshi Rustam are probably, besides Darius, Xerxes J., Artaxerxes I, and Darius II. Xerxes II., who reigned fora very short time, could scarcely have obtained so splendid a monunient, and still less could the usurper Sogdianus. The two com- pleted graves behind Takhti Jamshid would then belong to Artaxerxes JJ. and Artaxerxes III. The unfinished one is perhaps that of Arses, who reigned at the longest two years, or, if not his, then that of Darius ITI. (Codo- mannus), who is one of those whose bodies are said to have been brought "to the Persians." 9

Another small group of ruins in the same style is found at the village of Haji Abad, on the Pulwar, a good hour's walk above Takhti Jamshid. These formed a single building, which was still intact 900 years' ago, and was used as the mosque of the then existing city of Istakhr. For there is no other place that can have answered to the description of the eminent geographer Makdis{, who was himself in this neighbourhood, when he says: 'The chief mosque (jémz') of Istakhr is situated beside the bazaars. It is built after the fashion of the principal mosques in Syria,!° with round pillars. On the top of each pillar is a cow. Formerly it is said to have been a fire-temple. The bazaars surround it on three sides" (p. 436).

In the time of its greatest prosperity the Persian metro- polis must undoubtedly have covered a great 'part of the extremely fertile valley of the Pulwdr. It is not at all necessary to suppose that its limits are determined by the two heaps of ruins. The great bulk of the houses would, of course, be built in the wretched manner which is all but universal in the East.

Since Cyrus was buried in Pasargade, which moreover is mentioned in Ctesias as his own city,!2 and since, to judge from the inscriptions, the buildings at Persepolis commenced with Darius L, it was probably under this king, with whom the sceptre passed to a new branch of the royal house,

that Persepolis became the capital? At least it is probable that the great city, in the original home of the dynasty, with its lordly palaces and royal sepulchres, was theoretically considered the metropolis of the whole empire. But certainly, as a residence for the rulers of such extensive territories, a remote place in a

7 This statement is not made in Ctesias (or rather in the extracts of Photius) about Darius II., which is probably accidental; in the case of Sogdianus (Sekydianus), who as a usurper was not deemed worthy of honourable burial, there is good reasou for the omission.

8 See art. Persta (p. 567 below). The complete proof will be found in Stolze's work already mentioned, and in his paper cited below.

® Arrian, ili. 22, 1.

10 This refers only to its solidity and magnificence, and perhaps also to some of its minor features, but not to its general style. These Moslems had no great discernment in matters of style. For instance, Makdisi and others compare the ruins of Takhti Jamshid to those of Palmyra and Baalbek.

1 Capitals formed of recumbent animal figures are peculiar to the buildings of the Achemeuians.

12 Cf. also in particular, Plutarch, Artaz., iii., where Pasargade is distinctly looked on as the sacred cradle of the dynasty.

13 The story of Alian (7/7. A., i. 59), who makes Cyrus build his royal palace in Persepolis, deserves no attention.

difficult alpine region was far from convenient. The practical capitals were Susa, Babylon, and Ecbatana.

This, at the same time, accounts for the fact that the Greeks were not really acquainted with the city until it was taken by Alexander.! Ctesias must certainly have known of it; and it is possible that he may have named it

simply Ilépoa:,? after the people, as is undoubtedly done by certain writers of a somewhat later date.? But whether the city really bore the name of the people and the country is another question. And it is extremely hazardous to assume, with Sir H. Rawlinson and Oppert, that the words ané Péarsd, ‘in this Persia,” which occur in an inscription on the gateway built by Xerxes (D. lin. 14), signify ‘in this city of Parsd,” and consequently prove that the name of the city is identical with the name of the country.

The name Persepolis appears to have been first used by Clitarchus, one of the earliest, but unfortunately one of the most imaginative annalists of the exploits of Alexander. The word was no doubt meant to allude to the ‘‘ Persians,” but apparently he preferred this extraordinary form* to the regular “‘ Persopolis”® for the sake of a play on the destruction (zépoxs) which he relates. Later writers have followed him in the use of the name Persepolis.6 For information about the capture and treatment of the city by Alexander we are almost entirely dependent on narratives which are based on Clitarchus, since Arrian unfortunately disposes of this episode in a very summary fashion. The course of events may be traced somewhat as follows.

Alexander, having crushed the resistance of the Persian army under Ariobarzanes at the ‘“ Persian Gates,”’ marched rapidly on the capital. Ariobarzanes had made his way thither with a few followers, but was refused admission by Tiridates, the commandant of the citadel, who had already commenced negotiations with Alexander, arid at last surrendered the place with its immense treasures to the conqueror. In a subsequent battle Ariobarzanes was killed.8 Alexander then ordered a general massacre, and gave up the city to be plundered. In the citadel he placed a garrison of 3000 men under Nicarchides,® and then caused

1 Aschylus, whose knowledge of the world is certainly not very extensive, takes the “city of the Persians” to be Susa. Cf. especially Pers., v. 15 with v. 761 (768 &otv Zovcwv). Herodotus does not mention the capital of Persis at all.

2 The only expression that could be interpreted in this sense is és Tlépoas, “to the Persians.” But perhaps és Ilépoas, with him, means only “to the land of Persis.”” No doubt, when he says that the body of Cyrus was conveyed és Ilépeas, this might be explained on the supposition that he wrongly

imagined that Cyrus was buried in Perse- polis. Xenophon, who knew of Pasargadx from Ctesias, calls it [lépoa {Cyr., viii. 5, 21); but, as he was not acquainted with the country, this goes for nothing. Of more importance is the fact that Plutarch, Artaz., iii. (probably after Dinon), places Pasargade év Ilépoas, where the expression applies to the country and not to the city.

3 So undoubtedly Arrian (iii. 18,1, 10), or rather his best authority, King Ptolemy. So, again, the Babylonian Berosus, shortly after Alexander. See Clemens Alex., Admon. ad gentes, c. 5, where, with Georg Hoffmann (Pers. Mdartyrer, 187), kat is to be inserted before Tiépca:s, and this to be understood as the name of the metropolis.

4 Tlepoémrods means strictly “city-destroying.” [epaatmons, a well-authenticated reading in Strabo and Ailian (J.c.), is no improvement.

5 This form is actually restored by later scholars, and seems to have been used by the geographer Ptolemy (vi. 4).

6 Besides the historians who draw upon Clitarchus (Diodorus, Curtius, Justin, Plutarch in Alexander), Strabo (79 sq., 727 sq.), Pliny (vi. 115, 213), and several others. Justin (i. 6, 8) introduces the name Persepolis in an account which is based on Ctesias, just as Arrian (vii. 1, 1) once employs it, although he can scarcely have got it from his excellent sources.

7 On this locality, see the paper of Fr. Stolze in the Verhand- lungen der Gesellschaft fir Erdkunde in Berlin, 1883, Nos. 3 and 6.

8 This is mentioned by Curtius only, but it has great intrinsic prob- ability. The massacre at the taking of the city appears to be confirmed by Plutarch (Alex., 37) from the letters of the king.

® This again is only found in Curtius. Alexander was in the heart of a country which he had laid waste, but by no means thoroughly subdued, which hated him bitterly, and which was the native land of the dynasty ; he was amongst a people who still felt themselves to be

the royal palaces to be set on fire,—certainly not in a drunken freak, but apparently with deliberate calculation on the effect it would produce on the minds of the Asiatics.!°

Now it has hitherto been universally admitted that “the palaces” or ‘“‘the palace” (ra. BaoiAeca) burned down by Alexander are those now in ruins at Takhti Jamshid, as already described. From Stolze’s investigations it appears that at least one of these, the castle built by Xerxes, bears evident traces of having been destroyed by fire The locality described by Diodorus after Clitarchus corresponds in important particulars with Takhti Jamshid, for exaniple, in being supported by the mountain on the east.12 And, if there are other details, such as the triple wall, which it is difficult to reconcile with the existing state of things, we must bear in mind on the one hand the great destruction that must have been wrought in the course of thousands of years, and on the other that small inaccuracies are not to be wondered at in a writer like Clitarchus, who is constantly straining after effect. There is, however, one formidable difficulty. Diodorus says that the rock at the back of the palace containing the royal sepulchres rises so steep that the bodies could be raised to their last resting-place only by mechanical appliances. This is not true of the graves behind Takhti Jamshid, to which, as Stolze expressly observes, one can easily ride up; on the other hand, it is strictly true of the graves at Nakshi Rustam. Stolze has accordingly started the theory that the royal castle of Persepolis stood close by Nakshi Rustam, and has sunk in course of time to shapeless heaps of earth, under which the remains may be concealed. He and Andreas, our highest authorities on the topography of this district,!° consider this spot peculiarly adapted for the site of a citadel, while the water-supply would suffice for a numerous court-retinue and garrison, and for a royal residence with its palaces and gardens. Nevertheless we are unable to adopt this suggestion. The vast ruins of Takhti Jamshid, and the terrace constructed with so much labour, appear to us of more importance than any number of doubts and conjectures. These remains can hardly be anything else than the ruins of palaces and the other belongings of a kingly residence ; as for temples, the Persians had no such thing, at least in the time of Darius and Xerxes. And it can hardly be supposed that such solid structures were much more numerous in former times, and that these alone have survived owing to their peculiar situation on the terrace. or, in the first place, it is evident at a glance that the situation

itself is of an excep- tional kind. Moreover, Persian tradition at a very remote period knew of only three architectural wonders in that region, which it attributed to the fabulous queen Humai (Khumai)—the grave of Cyrus at Murgab, the building at Haji Abad, and those on the great terrace.!4 It is safest therefore to identify these last with the royal palaces destroyed by Alexander. Clitarchus, who can scarcely have visited the place himself, has simply, with his usual

the dominant race, and knew that their king was still alive. That in these circumstances he should have a strong garrison under a trust- worthy Macedonian was simply a matter of course. Nicarchides after- wards commanded a trireme in the fleet that sailed from the Indus to the Tigris (Arrian, Indica, xix. 5; after Nearchus).

10 See art, Persta (p. 582 below). é

11 Dr Stolze has kindly explained to the writer of this article that the layer of charcoal in the “hall of a hundred pillars ” is apparently the result not of a conflagration but of gradual decomposition. ;

12 The name of this mountain too, BaciAcxdv Spos, is identical with Sh4hkth, which is at least tolerably well established by Ouseley (ii. 417) as a synonym of Kéhi rahmet. ;

13 We are here again indebted to private communications from Stolze, as well as to his published papers.

14 See especially Hamza Isp., 38 ; Tabari, i. 690, 816 (cf. Noldeke, Geschichte der Perser… aus… Tabari, p. 8). The ruins at Takhti Jamshid are alluded to as the work of Humai, in connexion with an event which occurred shortly after 200 a.D.

recklessness of statement, confounded the tombs behind the palaces with those of Nakshi Rustam ; indeed he appears to imagine that all the royal sepulchres were at the same place. It is possible, however, that the discrepancy ori- ginated with Diodorus, who often makes his extracts in a very perfunctory manner.!

If it should prove that, after all, the terrace is not large enough to have contained the treasure-houses and the barracks of the garrison, in addition to the palaces, or that Alexander could not have set fire to the latter without en- dangering the former and the safety of the whole fortress, then we should have to assume that a separate citadel (dxpa) stood somewhere outside of the terrace with the palaces. There are many positions naturally adapted for defence in the vicinity. But, as far as yet appears, such an assump- tion is scarcely required. Of course we need not suppose that the number 3000 represents the actual strength of Alexander’s garrison ; and we must consider that, when Darius, in the height of his power, laid out this place in the heart of his empire, he was thinking more of regal magnificence than of security. A high wall and a guard of 200 men would suffice for the protection of the treasures

at a time when battering engines were unknown.

In 316 g.c. Persepolis is still the capital of Persis as a province of the great Macedonian empire (see Diod., 19, 21 sq., 46 ; probably after Hieronymus of Cardia, who was living about 316). The city must have gradually declined in the course of time; but the ruins of the Achemenians remained as a witness to its ancient glory.

It is probable that the principal town of the country, or at least of the district, was always in this neighbourhood. About 200 a.p. we find there the city Istakhr? as the seat of the local governors, There the foundations of the second great Persian empire were laid, and once more there arose round the tombs of the Ache- mecnians what was for ccnturies the theoretical metropolis of a great monarchy whose administrative capitals lay far to the west. Istakhr acquired special iniportance as the centre of priestly wisdom and orthodoxy. In its most flourishing days it was probably as large as Persepolis had been, whose ruins undoubtedly furnished much of the material for its houses. The peaceable resident, intent on building his house or hut, has too often proved more destructive to ancient buildings than a foreign invader or even the disintegrat- ing forces of nature. The Sasanian kings have covered the face of the rocks in this neighbourhood, and in part even the Ache- menian ruins, with their sculptures and inscriptions, and must themselves have built largely here, although never on the same scale of magnificence as their ancient predecessors. The Romans knew as little about Istakhr as the Greeks had done about Perse- polis, and this in spite of the fact that for four hundred years they maintained relations, friendly or hostile, with the empire, while their own sway extended far into the heart of Asia. So remote is Persis !

At the time of the Arabian conquest Istakhr offered a desperate resistance, which was renewed again and again before the place was finally subdued. Blood flowed like water in these struggles for religion and liberty. Nevertheless the city was still a place of considerable importance in the first century of Islam, although its greatness was speedily eclipsed by the new metropolis Shiraz. In the 10th century Istakhr had become an utterly insignificant place, as may be seen from the descriptions of Istakhri, a native (c. 950), and of Makdisi (¢. 985). At this time the little town

occupied approximately the site assigned to it on Flandin's map, near the present village of Haji abad, surrounding the ruined structure of the Achzinenians, and principally on the left side of the stream. During the following centuries Istakhr gradually declined, until, as a city, it ceased to exist. This fruitful region, however, was covered with villages till the frightful devastations of last century ; and even now it is, comparatively speaking, well cultivated.

The "castle of Istakhr" played a conspicuous part several times during the Mohammedan period as a strong fortress. It was the middlemost and the highest of the three steep crags which rise from the valley of the Kur, at some distance to the west or north- west of Nakshi Rustam.? We learn from Oriental writers that one

i Curtius repeatedly confounds the palace with the metropolis (both being 74 Bacikea), and so speaks of the city being set on fire.

z Properly Stakhr, as written in Pahlavi; on the coins of the Sasanids "st" stands as an abbreviation for the name. The Armenians write Stahr. The form with the prosthetic vowel Istakhr is New Persian, the Syrians used at a still earlier time the form Isfahr or Istahr.

3 This height is now called, from its situation, Miydnkala (middle fortress). Older writers and travellers give other names, the nonien- clature of all this part of Persia having greatly altered ; but the name "castle" or "hill of Istakhr " appears not to have entirely disappeared.

of the Buwaihid sultans in the 10th century of the F light con- structed the great cisterns, which may yet be seen, and have been visited, amongst others, by James Morier and Flandin.4 Ouseley, who has extracted a vast amount of information from Persian authors about the ruins of Persepolis and about Istakhr,* points out that this castle was still used in the 16th century, at least asa state prison. But when Della Valle was there in 1621 it wag already in ruins. (TH. PERSEUS, a hero of Grecian fable, son of

Danax (4.2) and Zeus. When Perseus was grown to manhood Poly. dectes, the wicked king of Seriphus, cast his eye on Danae; and, that he might rid himself of the son, he exacted of him a promise that he would bring him the head of the Gorgon Medusa. Now the dreadful Goreons (¢.v.) dwelt with their sisters the Grae (the Gray Women) by the great ocean, far away in the west. Guided by Hermes and Athene, Perseus came to the Gree. They were three hags, with but one eye and one tooth between them, which they handed one to the other. Perseus stole the eye and tooth, and would not restore them till the Gree had guided him to the Nymphs, from whom he received the winged sandals, the wallet («{Bxs), and the cap of invisibility. These he put on, and, being armed by Hermes with a scimitar (p7n), came upon the Gorgons as they slept and cut off Medusa's head, while with averted eyes he looked at her image on his brazen shield lest he should be turned to stone. Perseus put the Gorgon's head in his wallet and fled. Coming to Aithiopia he delivered and married ANDROMEDA (q.v.). With her he returned to Seri- phus in time to rescue his mother and Dictys from Poly- dectes, whom he turned to stone along with all his court by showing them the Gorgon's head. The island itself was turned to stone, and was still and lonely ever after; the

| very frogs of Seriphus (so ran the proverb) were dumb.

Perseus then gave the head of Medusa to Athene, who put it on her shield, and, with Danae and Andromeda, he hastened to Argos to see his grandfather, Acrisius, once more. But he, fearing the oracle, had gone to Larissa in Thessaly. Thither his grandson followed him, but at some games given by Teutamias, king of Larissa, he threw a quoit which lighted on his grandfather's foot and caused his death. Ashamed to return to Argos, Perseus gave his kingdom to Megapenthes, and received from him Tiryns in return. There he reigned and founded Midea and the famed Mycenz, and became the ancestor of the Persides, amongst whom were Eurystheus and Heracles.

The legend of Perseus was a favourite theme of Greek poetry and art. Sophocles and Euripides had each several dramas on the sub- ject, and sculptor and painter vied with each other in depicting the rescue of Andromeda from the sea-monster. The story was localized in various

places. Italy claimed that the ark with Danae and Perseus had drifted to the Latin coast (Servius on Virg., 4’n., vii. 372, and viii. 345). The Persian kings were said to have sprung from a son of Perseus (Apollod., ii. 4, 5; Herod., vii. 61); and, according to Pausanias Damascénus, Perseus taught the Persians to worship fire, and founded the Magian priesthood. The tale of the rescue of Andromeda by Perseus from the sea-beast is akin to that of Heracles and Hesione. Both have been interpreted of the sun slaying the darkness, Andromeda or Hesione being the moon, whom the darkness is about to devour. According to one version Heracles rescued Hesione from the sea-beast by leaping into its mouth, from which he came forth after three days spent in the belly of the beast. This points to a connexion with the Semitic story of Jonah and the fish. Greek sculptures of Andromeda’s monster were the models for Jonah’s fish in early Christian art, and on a rock at Joppa they showed the chains which had bound Andromeda, and the bones of the sea-beast (Pliny, H. W., v. 13; Mela, i. 11). ‘Tarsus in Cilicia was said to have been founded by Perseus, who appears on coins of the city, as well as on coins of Pontus and Cappadocia. r

4 See the plans and sketches in Flandin, to whom it was stated that the castle-rock was called Kalai sarv, “castle of the cypress,” from a solitary cypress growing there. It is unfortunate that for this particular locality the newest map of Hausknecht (Berlin, 1882) is quite unreliable.

5 These references are still very useful, although we have now the advantage of knowing the extremely valuable Arabian sources of many of his Persian narratives from printed texts.

ite VII.

561

PERSIA

ERSIA, or frAn. In modern political geography these two terms are synonymous; the kingdom which we call Persia the Persians themselves call fran. But each of the words has a somewhat complicated history, a brief sketch of which will best explain the connexion between the several

subjects which, in an encyclopedic treatment, naturally demand notice under one or other of the names which head this article.

Persia, or rather Persis (Greek exclusively [epcis), is the Latinized form of a name which originally and strictly designated only the country bounded on the N. by Media and on the N.W. by Susiana, which of old had its capital at Persepolis or Istakhr, and for almost twelve centuries since has had it at Shiraz. This country and its people were anciently called Parsa (now Pars or Fars). The oldest certain use of the name is in Ezekiel (xxvii. 10, xxxviii. 5). The Greek form Ilépca:, with é for a, which all Euro- pean languages follow, seems to have come from the Ionians, who disliked to pronounce &@ even in foreign words. Thus Tépoo: would stand for IIjpca:, which in turn stands to Parsa as M7joot to Mada.

The name of Persian was naturally extended to the great monarchy of the Achzemenians who came forth from Persis ; and so again, when a second great empire, that of the Saésdnians, arose from the same land, all its subjects began to be called Persians, and Persis or Persia was sometimes used of the whole Sdsdnian lands (Ammianus, xxiii. 6, 1). The prevalent language of this empire (see PAHLAV!) had a still better right to be called Persian, for it seems to have had its basis in the language of the old Persis. = The same thing is true of the so-called New Persian, which has been a literary language for the last thousand years.

Historically, then, the term Persian is fitly applied to the two great empires which rose in Pars or Persis—the form Persis will be used in this restricted sense throughout the present article—and not unfitly to the modern state which embraces Persis and its sister lands, and in which a descendant of the ancient tongue of Persis is still the official and literary language.

The name fran, on the other hand, was originally of much wider signification than Persia, and the whole upland country from Kurdistan to Afghanistan may, in accordance with the native use of its ancient inhabitants, be called the Iranian upland. The inhabitants of this upland, together with certain tribes of the same race in adjacent lands, shared with their near kinsmen in India the name

| of Aryans (Ariya, Airya of the Avesta; Sk. Arya). King

Darius calls himself “Persian son of a Persian, Aryan son of an Aryan,” and Herodotus (vii. 62) knows “Apvou as an old name of the Medes. The ancient nobles affected names compounded with Arya,—Ariyaramna (Apiapéprys), Ario- barzanes, and the like. The lands of the Aryans, as a whole, were called Ariydna (Airiyana of the Avesta) ; Eratosthenes and after him Strabo and others are cer- tainly wrong in limiting ’Apiavy, ’“Apsavol, to eastern Tran (Afghanistan, Baluchistan, &c.).1

_ Ardashir, the first SAsdnian, is called on coins and inscriptions “king of the kings of Eran,” his son Shdptr or Sapor is “king of the kings of Eran and not-Erdn.” Now Ardashir, as well as his son, had non-Aryan subjects, the main population of Babylonia and other provinces being of Semitic race; Eran and not-Erdn therefore must here be used not ethnographically but in a definite politico- geographical sense. The official name of the empire, how- ever, was always Erdn, and the great officers of state had such titles as Er4n-Spdhpat, “general of Eran,” Erdn- Anbarakpat, ‘‘store-master of Eran.” 2

For the last 500 years most Persians have pronounced

ran instead of Eran (more recently also Irén, frin), and this is the official title of the kingdom which once had Ispahan, and now has Teherdn, as capital. Modern Tran, or Persia, does not embrace nearly the whole Iranian upland, still less all men of Iranian nationality, that is, all who speak an Iranian dialect akin to Persian. On the other hand, the modern kingdom of fran has many subjects who are not Iranians ethnographically, but come originally from Central Asia or Arabia, and speak Turkish or Arabic.

PART I—ANCIENT IRAN.

Section I.—Mepo-Persian EMPIRE.

The Babylonian Berosus, writing soon after Alexander the Great, states that at a very early time, which we must place somewhat over two thousand years before Christ, the Medes conquered Babylonia, and that eight Median kings reigned thereafter in Babylonia for a space of 224 years.® This is an early instance of the occupation of the rich low- lands by warlike tribes of the neighbouring highlands ; and indeed the contrast between the plain of

the Euphrates and Tigris, peopled mainly by Semites, and the tableland of the Iranians, surrounded by lofty mountains, is a very important factor in the whole history of wide regions of Asia. But it is, to say the least, not certain whether Berosus means the Iranian people afterwards called Medes. The expression might have a merely geographical significa- tion, and it is at all events possible that at that distant period tribes of different descent dwelt in the land. In any case, we have here no Iranian empire, but only a Babylonian dynasty founded by foreigners.

Be this as it may, it is certain that at an early period there were regular monarchies of some size even in the distant Iranian lands. Unmistakable traces lead us to

1 Less careful writers, like Pliny, confuse Ariana with Aria, properly Haria, the land of Haraiva, the later Harév, Haré, Hari; Arabic Herat.

assume an old empire in Bactria—the Iranian land far to the east, in the region of the Oxus, beyond the great table- land—which must have developed a tolerably high civiliza- tion. But we have no exact information about it.

The series of the great Iranian monarchies begins for Medes.

us with the Median empire of Ecbatana. Unfortunately we possess but little trustworthy information about its history, being almost wholly dependent on what two Greeks, Herodotus and Ctesias, who wrote long after the fall of the kingdom, report from the mouths of Orientals. These two authorities differ so widely that their statements are to a great extent mutually exclusive. Nevertheless careful investigation has shown that many of the state- ments of Ctesias (which are only preserved through the medium of later writers, like Diodorus) rest on the same basis as those of Herodotus. This common basis included an artificially arranged chronology. According to Herod-

2 S4sdnian inscriptions in Chaldaic Pahlavi still show the ancient form Arian (JR”IS8), and Greek inscriptions of the older kings have the genitive pl. “ApavGv. But the corresponding common Pahlavi inscriptions and the

coins already show the form Eran (XS), fol- lowing an established law of phonetic decay.

3 The information is preserved by Eusebius, who took it from Alex- ander Polyhistor ; see Eusebius, Chronicon, ed. Schoene, 25.

4 See Hupfeld, Hxercitationes Herodotew Spec. II.: sive de vetere Medorum regno, Rinteln, 18438.

eae an. — 71

562

¢.715-634, otus the Medes freed themselves from the Assyrians, and

lived for a time without a master till Deioces obtained the kingly power by stratagem. There reigned then

Deioces 58 years

Phraortes 22 ,, ee 150 years C yaxares 40 or) 7 5 \ : , Astyages 35 ”? i

The totals show how the figures are arranged on an artificial system. The duration of the kingdom is exactly a century and a half, divided into two exactly equal por- tions, each of which is occupied by the reigns of two kings. But further, according to Herodotus, the rule of the Medes over Upper Asia, @.¢. the land east of the Halys, lasted 128 years, save only (répe€) the twenty-eight years during which the Scythians ruled. It is easy to see that “save only” means “minus,” and that thus the foreign supre- macy of the Medes is reckoned at exactly 100 years, or two-thirds of the total duration of the kingdom. Obvi- ously such figures can at most be only approximately correct. .Nowthe number 128 is got by adding the reigns of the first king and the last two. This number is certainly due to an error on the part of Herodotus, who has com- mitted similar mistakes in arithmetic elsewhere ; in adding up he took the reign of Deioces for that of Phraortes. We may conjecture that the original statement received by Herodotus was that the supremacy, represented by the last three reigns, lasted a century, a round number being put for 97 (22+ 40+ 35). With regard to the indi- vidual

items, it is somewhat suspicious that the second half (75 years) is divided into its two most convenient fractions, 40 and 35. Consequently we cannot place much reliance on the figures representing the reigns of the first two rulers either, especially as it can be made probable that they also rest on an artificial basis.

Now it can be proved that Ctesias's list of nine or properly ten kings was based on that of Herodotus, but with all the numbers doubled. Probably this lst of Ctesias assigned 350 years as the total duration of the empire, which is the number given in Justin, i. 6, 17. The Mede from whom Ctesias derived his information, or the Median source on which his informant drew (there is no mistaking the Median colouring which pervades Ctesias's narrative), wished to glorify the empire of his people by the length of its duration, hence the doubling. The source from which the names of the Median kings in Ctesias are derived is still a mystery; they are quite different from those of Herodotus. Even Oppert's hypothesis, that the names of the last four kings in Ctesias are the Iranian translation of the non-Iranian names in Herodotus and belong to the language of the second kind of cuneiform writing, though perhaps plausible at first sight, is on close examination untenable. In general there is no warrant for the assumption that as late as the time of the Median and Persian empires there was a large non-Iranian popula- tion in Media,—an assumption which conflicts with all tradition and originates solely in the difficulty of finding a home for the second kind of cuneiform writing. But the names of the kings in Herodotus are now all authenti- cated, directly or indirectly, by the inscriptions lately dis- covered. Probably too the reckoning of the total duration of the empire at a century and a half is about right. Indeed such chronological systems sometimes correspond better, on the whole, with the facts than their artificiality would lead us to expect.

_ Ctesias's narrative opens with a highly-coloured descrip- tion of a real event, namely, the destruction of Nineveli by the leader of the Medes, called by him Arbaces, with the helpof the Babylonian Belesys(the historical Nabopolassar). But the fact that by this event the position of Media as a great power was for the first time assured is mixed up by

Ctesias with the beginning of the monarchy itself. In addition, he grossly exaggerates the duration of the empire; so that we arrive at the monstrous result that between 606 or 607, the real date of the destruction of Nineveh, and 550, the year of the fall of the Median supremacy, more than 300 years are supposed to have elapsed.

Down to the destruction of Nineveh we must ignore Ctesias almost completely and follow Herodotus alone.

We will not repeat Herodotus's naive story of the founda- Deioces,

tion of the Median kingdom by Deioces, son of Phraortes,

.a story in which Greek and Oriental colours are charm-

ingly blended. We may assume as certain that Deioces possessed a principality, the central point of which was Ecbatana (or Agbatana; Old Persian Hagmatdna, now Hamadan), a place which for thousands of years has held the rank of a capital. This principality probably never embraced the whole of Media (z.e., nearly the present provinces of Irak Adjemi and Azerbijan with a portion of Turkish Kurdistan), but by his successors it was enlarged into the great Median empire. Of course there was no smooth and formal con- stitution, no fixed frontier, no exact determination of the prerogatives of different chiefs in the particular districts, From of old the Assyrians had made frequent attempts to subjugate the country of the Medes, but perhaps never quite possessed the whole land with its numerous inaccess- ible mountains and warlike robber tribes. Nevertheless they made successful expeditions into the interior of Media even down to the time at which Herodotus regards Media as independent.! Neither the liberation of Media nor the foundation of the monarchy is an event which can be limited to a particular year, the thing took place gradu- ally. In the period not long before Deioces, according to Herodotus's reckoning, very many tributary Median chief- tains are mentioned in the Assyrian inscriptions; this confirms, in some measure at least, the statement that "anarchy" then prevailed.2 In 715 B.c. there was carried off as prisoner one Dajaukku ; this is certainly the same name, perhaps the same person (for his captivity may

have been brief), as Daiokés, which appears in Herodotus in the Ionic form Déiokés. We can certainly identify Herod- otus's first king with the prince whose land, called Bit Dajaukku, 7.¢., land of Dajaukku, King Sargon of Assyria conquered in 713 B.c. The man who thus gave his name to the land must have occupied a high station. The date is not very remote from that assigned by Herodotus to Deioces; for we get from Herodotus as the date of Deioces 709-656, or, if we correct his error in dating the end of the empire, 700-647. Deioces was not a king of kings; he was forced to bow to the Assyrians repeatedly, but he was the founder of the empire. Three kings followed him. It is possible that there were really more, and that in the summary list the shorter reigns are passed over. Nor can we place much reliance on Herodotus's assertion that each successive ruler was the son of his predecessor.

In perfect harmony with the conditions of development Phra of a small state into a great power is the statement of Herod- T

otus that the second king of the Medes, Phraortes (/rawartz; according to Herodotus's reckoning 656-634 [647-625)]), extended his sway beyond the limits of Media and first of all subjugated Persis, or Persia proper, the secluded moun- tain-land south-east of Media. During all this time indeed, as we learn from Darius's great inscription, Persis had kings of its own; but these were simply vassals of the sultan

1 For this and what follows compare, besides the works of the Assyrio- logists, A. v.Gutschmid, Newe Bettrage zur Geschichte des alten Orients, 87 sq.

2 That parts at least of Media were subject to Assyria at that period is further shown by 2 Kings xvii. 6, xviii. 1l1—surer evidence than that of the inscriptions, which may not always be rightly interpreted, and contain, besides, many exaggerations.

who had his seat in Ecbatana. After conquering the Persian, Phraortes, says Herodotus, subjugated piece after piece of Asia, until he was discomfited and slain in the attempt to conquer the Assyrians in Nineveh, whose empire

was by that time completely lost. Allowing for some exaggerations with respect to the extent of the empire, there is nothing in these statements that need excite sus- picion. Independent evidence seems to show that towards the middle of the 7th century the Assyrian empire had fallen very low ;! and that the inhabitants of the cluster of vast cities to which Nineveh belonged were able to repel the first attack of an enemy who could hardly have been their match in the art of siege-warfare is perfectly natural. Besides, the stability of the Median military, political, and court institutions, which were afterwards taken over un- altered by the Persians, must surely have required for its development a longer time than some modern inquirers, following exclusively the cuneiform inscriptions, have assumed for the actual duration of the Median empire. Phraortes's successor Cyaxares (Huwakhshatara; accord- ing to Herodotus's reckoning 634-594 [625-585]) brought the empire to the highest pitch of power. He is said to have introduced fixed tactical arrangements into the army. It was to him that the pretenders whom Darius had to over- come traced their descent, as he tells us himself. Cyaxares, according to Herodotus, took the field successfully against Nineveh, but as he was besieging the city the inroad of the "Scythians" compelled him to forego for a time all the fruits of victory. Who these Scythians were is unknown. Herodotus took them for the people tolerably familiar to the Greeks, whose true name was Scolotz ; but his evidence does not go for much, since he often falls into the popular misuse of the term "Scythian" as a name for all the peoples of the steppes, and brings the inroad of these Scythians into a most unlikely connexion with the desolating raids of Thracian tribes (the Trares or Treres, commonly called Cimmerians) in Asia Minor. We must content ourselves with assuming that we have here one of those irruptions of northern barbarians into Iran of which we hear so often in later times. Probably these nomads came, as Herodotus indicates, through the natural gate between the Caucasus and the Caspian Sea, the pass of Derbend, though it is quite possible that they came from the east of the Caspian, from the steppes of Turkestan. Whether these Scythians are really the same people who made their way as far as Palestine and Egypt? is, indeed, far from being as certain as is commonly supposed, nor can the date of the irruption into these countries be deter- mined, At any rate, the barbarians overthrew the Medes and flooded the whole empire. From what we know of the doings of Huns, Khazars, Turks, and Mongols in later times we can infer how these Scythians behaved in Iran. Cyaxares

must have come to some sort of terms with them ; and at last herid himself of them in a truly Eastern fashion, by inviting most of them—i.e., of their chiefs—to a feast, where he made them drunk and slew them at their wine.* It is not in the least surprising that Cyaxares afterwards had Scythians in his service ; savages like these have no steady national feeling, and serve any potentate for pay. With the Scythian disorders we might combine the contests which, according to Ctesias, the Parthians and Sac (i.¢., the inhabitants of the Turkoman desert, who are also called “Scythians” by the Greeks) waged with

1 The Assyrian inscriptions break off abruptly with the year 644; Gutschmid, op. cit., 89.

2 Herod., i. 105; compare Trogus, in Justin, ii, 3, and Jordanes, De orig. Get., 6, whose account perhaps goes back to Dinon.

3 Between the years 1030 and 1040 a.p. we know three cases where princes of Iranian lands despatched inconvenient Turkomans in exactly similar fashion ; see Ibn Athir, ix. 266 sq., 272.

Cyaxares or Astibaras, as Ctesias calls him. not safe to do so, as the whole narrative is only the frame- work for a pretty romance.

Cyaxares marched a second time against Nineveh and Nineveh destroyed it about 607. Not only Ctesias but also Berosus 5 taken.

asserts that the king of the Medes achieved this great success in league with the king of Babylon. That the Median tradition represented the Mede and the Babylonian tradition the Babylonian as suzerain, and the other king as a vassal, is not surprising. The more powerful of the two was doubtless the Median, the richer the Babylonian. Unfortunately Herodotus’s work does not include the ‘Assyrian memoirs,” in which he intended to give a fuller account of the fall of Nineveh,—probably because he died before completing the task. In order to protect himself against his ally, who by the

fall of the Assyrian empire had grown too powerful, the Chaldean king had recourse to a double precaution : he married his son, afterwards the potent Nebuchadnezzar, to Amyite or Amyitis, daughter of the Median king ; but he also erected extensive fortifica- tions. After the fall of Nineveh, Nebuchadnezzar made himself master of Syria and Palestine, and Cyaxares acquired most of the rest of the Assyrian territory. Prob- ably Assyria proper belonged to him also, and we can thus explain Xenophon's error that the Assyrian cities before iy, destruction belonged to the Medes (Anab., iii. 4, 7-

10):

though he probably did not acquire them until after he had got rid of the Scythians and destroyed Nineveh. The pretext for the war was afforded by the flight of some Scythians in Cyaxares's service to Alyattes,® king of Lydia ; but the real cause was doubtless thirst of conquest. The war lasted for five years with varying fortune, and was ended by the battle during which the eclipse of the sun, said to have been predicted by Thales, took place. The terrified combatants saw in this a divine warning and hastily concluded peace. An impression so profound could be produced by nothing short of a total eclipse. Now, according to Airy's calculation, of all the eclipses of that period the only one which was total in the east of Asia Minor (where we must necessarily look for the seat of war) was that of 28th May 585. Ancient writers' also place the eclipse in this year. But this only proves that learned Greeks of a much later age calculated the year of an eclipse which they took to be that of Thales ; yet in this case they have hit the truth. More exact calculations have shown that the eclipse of 30th September 610, formerly regarded as that mentioned by Herodotus, was total only to the north of the Black Sea. Besides, it is inconceivable that this war and the new grouping of states which it involved should have taken place before the destruction of Nineveh. The 28th of May 585 is perhaps the oldest date of a great event which can be fixed with perfect certainty down to the day of the month, The conclusion of peace which followed affords us a remarkable instance of diplomatic mediation in

4 See Diod., ii. 34; Nicol. Dam., 6; Anonymus de mulieribus.

5 See Euseb., Chronicon, pp. 80, 35, 37, and Syncellus, 210B. The first passage refers to Abydenus, who made use of Berosus. He names the Median king ’Aorudyns, which Gutschmid regards as a corruption of Agrudpys=‘AoriBdpns. This is acute, but it seems better to suppose that Abydenus or an excerptor confused Cyaxares with the last king of the Medes.

6 He reigned, according to Herodotus’s regkoning, from 618 to 561. As this is narrated by Herodotus in his history of Lydia, he probably has it from Lydian sources, and we may regard this as a welcome con- firmation of what we are told on Median authority about the destruc- tion of the Scythians.

7 Pliny, H. N., ii. § 58, and other passages ; compare Gelzer, in Rhein. Museum fiir Philologie, N. F., xxx. 264 sg. An astronomer, a friend of the writer of this article, has by independent calculations confirmed the dates assigned in the text for both eclipses.

But it is 634-585,

When Cyaxares afterwards began the war with the Warwith Lydians he was already master of Armenia and Cappadocia, Lydians.

585-550.

Astyages.

State of Median empire,

very ancient times. The peace was brought about by Syennesis, prince of Cilicia, and Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon! Astyages, son of Cyaxares, married Aryenis, daughter of Alyattes. But according to Herodotus’s cal- culation the above date does not fall within the time of Cyaxares ; and even with the necessary correction (of nine years ; see below) Astyages ascended the throne in this same year. We might suppose that the battle fell in the father’s, the peace in the son’s time. But, as we saw above, the dates of

these reigns are not of a sort in which we can place much confidence, and it is more likely that the reign of Astyages did not last so long as tradition asserts. Thus Cyaxares probably died after 585.

Of the reign of his son Astyages (in Ctesias Astyigas, in a Babylonian inscription Jshtweigu) we have no par- ticulars. It is not even certain that he was cruel, for Herodotus's account of him and of the revolt of Cyrus is not impartial, based as it is on the narratives of the de- scendants of Harpagus, who had an interest in portraying in unfavourable colours the prince whom their ancestor had betrayed. On the other hand, Ctesias's Median authority (Nicolaus Dam., 64 sq.), which sets Astyages in a very favourable light, has no better claim to credence on this point.

The Median empire must at this time have reached a tolerably high degree of civilization. As remarked above, the political and military institutionsof the Persians are sub- stantially those of the Medes ; even the dress(of the Persian troops) was borrowed from the Medes.2 Of buildings erected by the Median kings there are, so far as we know, no remains. The colossal lion, still to be seen, though in a sadly mutilated state, at Hamadan, and about which Arabian writers have all sorts of wonderful tales, is perhaps a monument of the Median age. The fortifications of Kcbatana must certainly have been magnificent ; according to Herodotus's description, they showed strong traces of the influence of the star-worship practised by the neighbouring Babylonians, whose civilization was of a much earlier date.* It may be that careful explorations in the neighbourhood of Hamadan or excavations will one day bring to light traces of that distant age, perhaps even some distinct inscriptions of Median kings. Such inscriptions would be of the highest value; and we might almost conjecture that the language and writing would be identical with those of the Persian kings. Since the Magi are expressly described by Herodotus as a Median tribe, and since in the age of the Achzmenians the Persian priests were drawn as exclusively from the Magi as in later times, it is highly probable that the Median kings established the Zoroastrian religion as the state religion, and appointed this Median tribe to be the priests. The religion itself arose in the far east, probably in Bactria. It is often assumed nowadays to have originated in Media, but the fact that its sacred books know nothing of the Magi tells particularly against this view. How firmly the Median Magi were in posses-

sion of the priesthood in Persia proper (Persis) about the year 522 we learn from the circumstance that they main- tained their position in spite of the catastrophe of the false Smerdis. They must therefore have already held it for some time, and this carries us back almost necessarily to the influence of the Median empire. If this is correct, the Median empire has an extraordinary importance in the history of religions. The consideration enjoyed by the Median monarchy is proved by the fact that in Western

lands which never came in contact with it at all its name SS SS ee

1 For the latter Herodotus wrongly substitutes his successor Labynetus (Nabunaid ; Persian Nabunaita).

2 Herod., vii. 62.

3 See Sir H. Rawlinson, in G. Rawlinson's Herodotus, i. 98, and Joh. Brandis, in Hermes, ii. 264.

was so familiar that more than a hundred years after its fall the Persians were still mostly called Medes by the Greeks ; in particular the wars of independence with the Persians still went at a much later date simply by the name Ta Mydcxa.4

Nor was the Median empire properly destroyed by Cyrus; it was only transformed. Another race of the Iranian people and another dynasty stood at the head of the Iranian empire and carried out, as far as it was at all possible, Cyaxares's scheme for the conquest of Asia and the border-lands. That .the Persian empire was the direct heir of the Median was known both to the Greeks—for only on this supposition were the above-mentioned expres- sions possible—and to the Hebrews (Isa. xiii. 17; Ezra i, 9,400.).

We possess three accounts of the mode in which the transition was effected, that of Herodotus, that of Ctesias, (of which that of Dinon, preserved only in some fragments and vestiges, is merely a variation), and that of

Xenophon in the Cyropxdia. Though Xenophon had before him the works of both Herodotus and Ctesias, we must, with Niebuhr,® regard his book as nothing more than an ex- tremely: silly romance; the attempts to employ it as an in- dependent historical source have always failed. Herodotus probably got his charming narrative directly or indirectly from the descendants of Harpagus, a man who undoubtedly played a chief part in transferring the supremacy from the Medes to the Persians. Ctesias's' narrative, which we are obliged to piece together from Nicolaus Damascenus, Photius, Justin, Polyzenus, and Diodorus, is highly coloured, but in parts very pretty, and has, in contradistinction to Xenophon's romance, a genuinely Oriental stamp. It appears to be based on the account of a Mede, who gave a marked preference to his own people, and represented the founder of the Persian empire in as unfavourable a light as it was possible for a Persian subject (and probably an official) to do. There was no denying the fact of Cyrus's final victory, but in Ctesias's narrative he achieves his greatest successes by cunning and deceit. He is a genuine herds- man's son, takes early to robbery, and discharges menial services, in the course of which, significantly enough, he gets plenty of hard knocks. His accomplice (bares is a cowardly rascal. Astyages defeats Cyrus in Persis itself and pursues him to his home, Pasargadee ; he is only saved by the intervention of the women. On the other hand, Astyages magnanimously spares Cyrus's father, who had fallen into his power. It is particularly significant that over the corpse of Astyages, who had been left by stratagem

-to pine in the wilderness, a royal guard of lions kept watch

and ward. Of course all this does not exclude the sup- position that this partisan narrative is founded on a genuine Persian legend. For the rest, the narrative of Ctesias agrees in some particulars, and even in some names, with that of Herodotus.

That Cyrus (Kuru, nominative Kurush, or rather Kiiru, Krush ®) was not of lowly descent but of a princely house was long ago seen to be a necessary supposition. Popular legend loves the elevation of sons of the people to the throne, but as a matter of fact national kingdoms are not easily founded anywhere, and least of all amongst primitive peoples, except by persons of

distinguished birth. A know- ledge of the Persian inscriptions has put it beyond a doubt

4 It is noteworthy, however, that Auschylus in the Perse says “ Persians” almost exclusively, but “ Medes” only exceptionally (ver. 236, 791, and so in his epitaph) ; perhaps the poet chose “ Persians” as the less usual expression.

5 Lectures on Ancient History, i. 96, Eng. tr.

6 The uw is long, as is shown by the agreement of Képos, Aischyl., Pers., 768, and W7\3 of the Old Testament. The long wu makes it impossible to identify the name with the Indian Kuru, as Spiegel proposes.

Fall of Median empire.

Cyrus.

EMPIRE. |

that Cyrus was of royal blood. A cylinder with an in- scription of his, found lately at Babylon,! affords us fuller information. Cyrus’s father was, just as Herodotus tells us, Cambyses (Kambujiya), his grandfather Cyrus, his great-grandfather Sispis (7.e., the Persian Chaispi, Greek Teispes). We can combine the contents of this cylinder, on the one hand with the list of Darius’s ancestors in Herodotus (vii. 11), and on the other hand with Darius’s own statements in the great Behistun inscription. The last list is shorter by three than that of Herodotus ; but, as Darius says that eight of his family were kings, and that they reigned in two lines, while neither he nor his successors in their inscriptions give the title of king to his immediate predecessor, we must assume that the Be- histun list of ancestors is somewhat curtailed ; and we can with some probability draw out the complete list in exact harmony with Herodotus. We shall indicate the kings by figures and_give the names in the ordinary Greek form.

Achemenes. 1. Teispes. 2. Cambyses. 3. Cyrus. 4. Teispes. — | | ‘

(5. Cyrus. Ariaramnes, ; . o EI | 6. Cambyses. Arsames. a . | : Ss : 4 | 7. Cyrus (great king). Hystaspes. 8 — 7)

9)

8. Cambyses (great king). 9. Darius (great king).)

Acheemenes (Persian Hakhémanz), ancestor of the whole family, is perhaps not an historical personage, but a heros eponymus. According to our calculation Teispes, the first king, flourished about the year 730, therefore somewhat earlier than the foundation of the Median empire, but somewhere about the time which Herodotus assigns for the beginning of the independence of Media. Perhaps the rise of the provincial dynasty is connected with the weakening of the Assyrian power in Iran. Now on the eylinder Cyrus calls himself and his forefathers up to Teispes not kings of Persia but kings ‘“‘of the city Anshan.” Similarly on a lately-discovered monument of still greater importance, a Babylonian tablet,® he is called ‘king of Anshan,” but also “king of Persia.” Anshan has been looked for, without sufficient grounds, in the direction of Susiana. Even if it be true that Anshan, written as here in two ways, elsewhere means Susiana—and this Oppert emphatically denies—we should still have to regard this only as a Babylonian inexactitude of expression. It is far more likely that Anshan was a place in Persis, the proper family seat of the Achemenians, therefore perhaps near Pasargade or identical with it. An attempt has even been made, in consequencé of this designation, to deny that. Cyrus was a Persian at all, although Darius calls himiself an Aryan and a Persian, and therefore regarded Cyrus and Cambyses as such ; indeed he expressly desig- nates them members of his family. It may be that the Acheemenians ruled in a part only of Persis; but we have just as good a right to assume that, as Herodotus and Ctesias assert, Cyrus’s father at least was governor of the whole province. His mother, according to Herodotus, was the daughter of Astyages. This may very well be historical,

1 Trans. of the Roy. As. Soc., N. 8., xii. 70 sq. (Sir H. Rawlinson).

2 See Biidinger, Die newentdeckten Inschriften iiber Cyrus, p. 7 (Vienna, 1881). The pedigree is almost certain, though possibly it may be incomplete and may not contain all “kings.” :

5 Transactions of the Soc. of Bible Arch., vii. 189 sg. (Pinches).

though the confirmation by the oracle which describes him 550-547,

asa “mule” (Herod., i. 55) does not go for much, since these oracles are tolerably recent forgeries, and it is con- ceivable that we have here nothing more than an exam- ple of the well-known tendency of lords of new empires in the East to claim descent, at least in the female line, from the legitimate dynasty. Ctesias indeed tells us that Cyrus afterwards married a daughter of the dethroned Astyigas, Amytis (which was also the name of Astyages’s sister, wife of Nebuchadnezzar). Of course this does not absolutely exclude the possibility of Cyrus being the son of another daughter of the king.

Stripped of its romantic features, Herodotus’s narrative Cyrus’s of the rise of Cyrus is in fundamental harmony with conquest

the new document which we possess on the subject, in the shape of annals inscribed on a Babylonian tablet. According to Herodotus, Cyrus and the Persians revolted ; Harpagus the Mede, who was in league with him, was despatched against him. A part of the Median army fought, but another part went over to Cyrus or fled. In a second battle Astyages was defeated and taken prisoner. Now the tablet tells us among other things: “and against Cyrus king of Anshan, ... went and… Ishtuvigu, his army revolted against him and in hands took, to Cyrus they gave him.” Thereupon, it proceeds, Cyrus took Ecbatana and carried off rich booty to Anshan. This summary account of the Babylonian annalist by no means excludes the supposition that Cyrus had fought a previous battle against Astyages. Both accounts say that the treachery and faithlessness of the army procured Cyrus the victory. We might even harmonize the Babylonian document with Ctesias’s narrative that Cyrus was at first hard pressed and driven back as far as Pasargadke, if there were not other grounds, quite apart from its fabulous embellishments, which render this account improbable. The date of the overthrow of Astyages and the taking of Ecbatana is, according to the

Babylonian tablet, the sixth year ; and, as it is in the highest degree probable that the years in this memorial are those of the Babylonian king Nabunaid, we must place these events in the year 550. Hitherto it has been supposed, following Herodotus, that the reign of Cyrus (559-530) was to be reckoned from the fall of the Median empire, and that accordingly the latter event was to be placed in 559. But now we see that Cyrus numbered his years from the time when he ascended the throne in Persia. Whether the revolt against Astyages began when he ascended the throne, we do not know. We may very well believe Herodotus (i. 130), that Cyrus

treated Astyages well down to his death. On this point

Ctesias agrees with Herodotus.

After the taking of Ecbatana, which made Cyrus the great king, he must have had enough to do to subdue the lands which had belonged to the Median empire. Little reliance can be placed on Ctesias'saccount of these struggles. Herodotus (i. 153) states that the Bactrians, who accord- ing to Ctesias were soon subdued, were, like the Sacze, not subjugated until after the conquest of Babylon.

of Media.

The next war was against the powerful and wealthy king War

Croesus of Lydia, who ruled over nearly the whole western ®

half of Asia Minor. It was a continuation of the war be- tween the Medes and Lydians which had been broken off in 585. Here again the story in Herodotus is embellished with many marvellous incidents, and is employed to exem- plify moral doctrines. If Croesus really began the war, he assuredly did so not frivolously but deliberately, in order to anticipate the inevitable attack. A fierce struggle seems to have taken place in Cappadocia (Herod., i. 76, and especially Polyenus, vii. 8, 1 sg.), which already be- longed to Cyrus. Croesus retreated to prepare for another campaign, but Cyrus followed hard after him, routed him

gainst

roesus.

547-539,

Warwith Asiatic Greeks

‘required military service.

‘alive.}

566

when he offered battle, and captured his capital Sardis after ashort siege. Not only Herodotus but also apparently his contemporary Xanthus the Lydian, quite independently of Herodotus, told how Cyrus would have burned Croesus The statements of Ctesias and Xenophon to the same effect are borrowed from Herodotus. But there is also a vase of the time of Pericles representing Croesus seated on a pyre and majestically pouring out a libation.? We may not of course infer from this that Croesus offered himself as a willing sacrifice; but it certainly shows that a hundred years later there was a general belief that Croesus had stood upon the pyre. And it is by no means inconceivable that Cyrus, whom we must picture to our- selves, not as the chivalrous and sentimental hero of Xeno- phon, but as a savage conqueror, should have destined such a punishment for a vanquished foe, against whom he may personally have been especially embittered. No doubt to pollute the fire with a corpse was even in those days an impiety in the eyes of the Persians, but who knows whether Cyrus in his wrath paid much more heed to such religious maxims than did his son Cambyses? However, Croesus was pardoned, after all, perhaps because some external circumstance interposed (because a sudden shower pre- vented the fire from burning ?), or because the conqueror changed his mind before it was too late. The pious and believing saw in the event a direct intervention of Apollo on behalf of the man who had honoured the Delphic shrine so highly.?

The date of Croesus’s fall is not quite certain. It may have been 547 or 546. When Cyrus had marched away, the Lydian Pactyas, whom Cyrus had appointed guardian of the treasures, raised a revolt, but it was speedily put

down by the king’s generals. From that time forwards the Lydians never made the slightest attempt to shake off the Persian rule.

But now began that struggle of the Persians with the Greeks which has had so much importance for the history of the world. The Lydian kings had subdued a number of Greek cities in Asia Minor ; but even these latter shrank from submitting to the still barbarous Persians, whose rule was far more oppressive, inasmuch as they ruthlessly But Harpagus and other Persian leaders quickly took one Greek town after the other ; some, like Priene, were razed to the ground. Some of the Tonians, such as the Teians, and most of the Phoceeans, avoided slavery by emigrating. Miletus alone, the most flourishing of all these cities, had early come to an under- standing with Cyrus, and the latter pledged himself to lay no heavier burden on it than Croesus had before him. In most of the cities the Persians seem to have set up tyrants, who gave them a better guarantee of obedience than democratic or aristocratic governments. In other respects they left the Greeks alone, just as they left their other subjects alone, not meddling with their internal affairs so long as they paid the necessary contributions, and supplied men and ships for their wars. Most of the other peoples in the west of Asia Minor submitted without much resistance, except the freedom-loving Lycians. Driven into Xanthus, the capital, they perished in a body rather than surrender.* Some Carian cities also defended themselves stoutly. This

1 See Nicolaus Dam., 67 (apparently put together from Herodotus and Xanthus).

2 Mon. de UInst. Arch., i. 54.

3 Croesus’s good repute amongst the Greeks of the mainland (see Pin- dar, Pyth., i. 184 [94]) was due to his liberality to the Delphians. Even 400 years afterwards the Delphians appealed to their old friendship with the people of Sardis (i.e, with Croesus). Builletin de corresp. hellénique, v. 383, 889 sg. That Croesus could also be inhuman enough is shown by Herod., i. 92.

4 About 500 years later the inhabitants of Xanthus followed their example in the struggle with that champion of freedom, Brutus.

PHHRsel &

[MEDO-PERSIAN

may have given a Persian here and there an inkling even then that the little peoples on the western sea were, after all, harder to manage than the nations of slaves in the interior of Asia. Sardis became and remained the mainstay of the Persian rule in western Asia Minor. The governor- ship was one of the most influential posts in the empire, and the governor seems to have exercised a certain supre- macy over some neighbouring governorships.

Though Cyrus had made, and continued to make, con- Babylon quests in the interior of Asia, he was still without the true taken.

capital of Asia, Babylon, the seat of primeval civilization, together with the rich country in which it lay, and the wide districts of Mesopotamia,® Syria, and the border- lands over which it ruled. Now that we know the two Babylonian memorials mentioned above we can dispense with most of the various, often very fabulous, accounts which Greek writers give of the conquest of Babylon; but when these documents are rightly understood the diver- gence between them and the account of Berosus § is, on the main points, not very great. Before the capture of the city, in the summer of 539, a great battle took place, in consequence of which Cyrus occupied the capital without any further serious fighting, since the Babylonian troops had mutinied against their king. Late in the autumn of 5397 Cyrus marched into Babylon, Nabunaid, the king, having previously surrendered himself. According to Berosus, Cyrus appointed Nabunaid governor of Carmania, east of Persis®; but in the annals inscribed on the tablet it is said to be recorded that Nabunaid died when the city was taken. If both memorials represent Cyrus as a pious worshipper of the Babylonian gods, if, according to the cylinder, the Babylonian god Merodakh, wroth with the king of Babylon because he had not served him aright, actually himself led and guided Cyrus, such a piece of priestly diplomacy ought not to impose on any student of history. The priests turned to the rising sun, whether they had been on good or bad terms with Nabunaid. Cyrus certainly did not put down the Babylonian worship, as the Hebrew prophets expected; he must even have been impressed by the magnificence of the service in the richest city of the world, and by the vast antiquity of the rites. But he was no more an

adherent of the Babylonian religion, because the priests said he was, than Cambyses and the Roman emperors were worshippers of the Egyptian gods, because Egyptian monuments represent them as doing reverence to the gods exactly in the style of Egyptian kings. Sayce doubts whether Cyrus could read their documents ; we doubt whether Cyrus understood their lan- guage at all, and regard it as inconceivable that he learned their complicated writing ; indeed, on the strength of all analogies, we may regard it as scarcely probable that he could read and write at all.® The countries subject to

5 We always use “ Mesopotamia ” in the sense in which alone this geographical conception ought to be used, viz., as equivalent to the Arabic Jazira, z.e., to denote the cultivated land between the middle Euphrates and the Tigris, which is separated by the Mesopotamian desert from the totally different ‘Irak (Babylonia).

6 In Josephus, c. Ap., i. 20. On many particular points in these memorials the Assyriologists themselves hold different opinions ; but the part which concerns us most seems to be free from doubt.

7 On 8d Marheshwan, which month corresponds nearly to our November, The year which begins with 5th January 588 is, in the astronomical canon, the first year of Cyrus as king of Babylon. I, as the strict rule requires, we make the small remainder of the year after the taking of the city to be the first year of Cyrus’s reign, then the events in the text fall in 538. But probably the remainder of the year was not reckoned in, and for this there are analogies. (See below.)

8 This statement is further supported by that of Abydenus, doubt- less taken from Berosus, that Darius drove Nabunaid out of Carmania (Euseb., Chron., p. 41). This is certainly not an invention. At the most, the former king of Babylon might have been confounded with another Babylonian prince.

9 Even the comparatively simple Persian cuneiform writing was certainly always the secret of a few; otherwise it could not have

th of Cus.

Babylon seem to have submitted without resistance to the Persians. The fortress of Gaza alone, in the land of the Philistines, perhaps defended itself for a time.t On the other hand, the Pheenician cities, some of which offered a sturdy resistance to other conquerors, submitted immedi- ately, and remained steadily obedient to the Persians down almost to the end of the empire. It seems, however, that, as the real prop of the naval power of Persia, they were almost always treated with special consideration by the latter. In the very first year of his reign in Babylon? (538) Cyrus gave the Jewish exiles in Babylon leave to return home (2 Chron. xxxvi. 22 sq. =Ezra i. 1 sq.). Compara- tively few availed themselves of this permission, but these few formed the starting-point of a development which has been of infinite importance for the history of the world.

How far to the east Cyrus extended his dominion we do not know, but it is probable that all the countries to the east which are mentioned in the older inscriptions of Darius as in subjection or rebellion were already subject in the time of Cyrus. In this case Chorasmia (Kharezm ; the modern Khiva) and Sogdiana (Samarkand and Bokhara) belonged to him. Agreeably with this, Alexander found a city of Cyrus (Cyropolis)* on the Jaxartes, in the neighbour- hood of the modern Khékand. He doubtless ruled also over large portions of the modern Afghanistan, though it is hardly likely that he ever made his way into the land of the Indus. The story of his unsuccessful march on India‘ seems to have been invented by way of contrast to Alexander’s fortunate expedition.

Different accounts of Cyrus’s death were early current. Herodotus gives the well-known didactic story of the battle with Tomyris, queen of the Massagetz, as the most prob- able of many which were told. If we accept Herodotus’s statements, we must look for the Massagetz beyond: the Jaxartes. In Ctesias Cyrus is mortally wounded in battle with the Derbices, who probably dwelt near the middle or upper Oxus. A fragment of Berosus® says that Cyrus fell in the land of the Dai (Dahe), 7.¢., in the modern Turkoman desert, perhaps in the southern or south-western portion of it; this account may very well be derived from contem- porary Babylonian records. Be that as it may, Cyrus met his death in battle with a

savage tribe of the north-east. The battle was probably lost, but the Persians rescued his body, which was buried at Pasargadz in the ancient land of his race. To this day there is to be seen at Murghab, north of Persepolis (on the telegraph line from Abushehr to Teheran), the empty tomb and other remains of the great mausoleum, which Aristobulus, a companion of Alexander, described from his own observation ®; and on some pillars there the inscription is to be read: “I am Cyrus, the king, the Achemenian.” Till lately the same inscription was also to be found high on the pillar which bears in bas-relief a winged figure of a king. This figure is furnished with a “yshent,” i.c., such an ornamented crown as is worn by kings and gods on Egyptian monuments.” This was no happened that, e.g., the Behistun inscriptions of Darius should have been described to Ctesias as those of Semiramis (Diod., ii. 13).

1 According to the conjecture of Valesius in Polyb., xvi. 40, ri IepoGy, which, though not absolutely certain, is still the best emenda- tion of the passage.

2 This statement goes to show that the small remainder of the year after the taking of Babylon was not reckoned in Cyrus’s first year. For he had at that time something more important to do than to trouble himself straightway about the Israelites.

3 Arrian, iv. 2 sq. ; Curtius, vii. 6, 16, vii. 6, 20; Strabo, ily ¢ Ptol., vi. 12; Steph. Byz. ; Plin., vi. 49; Solinus, xlix. 4.

4 Nearchus, in Arrian, vi. 24, 2; Strabo, 686, 742.

5 Euseb., Chron., p. 29.

8 See Strabo, 730; Arrian, vi. 29, 4 sq.

7 See the copies in the great works of Texier and of Flandin and Coste. The most exact representations are those from photographs in

Stolze, Persepolis (Berlin, 1882), tab. 128 sq., 182 sq. The proof that this is really the grave of Cyrus is given in Stolze’s Introduction, as

PES f A.

567

doubt meant by Cambyses as a special mark of honour to his 539-525,

father, whose monument must have required years to finish. It is quite natural that the ancient art of Egypt should have made a deep impression even upon those of its conquerors who in other respects had little liking for Egyptian ways. –

If one could accept without question the judgment of the His Persians as recorded by Herodotus (iii. 89, 160), expanded character.

by Xenophon, and repeated by later writers (from Plato downwards), Cyrus must have been the most perfect model of a ruler. But we must view with great suspicion a tribute of praise like this paid to the founder of an empire by those who reaped the fruits of his labours. The founder of the Sasa4nian empire is also described as a paragon of wisdom and virtue, though his deeds strikingly belie such an estimate. We must be content to know that we are no better informed about the character of many other great men of the past than about that of Cyrus. That he was a very remarkable man and a great king is a matter of course. Whether he deserves the reputation of a great statesman, which even in modern times has been accorded to him, we cannot say. Certain it is he left the empire stillin a very unformed condition. To expend the immense treasures of Ecbatana, Sardis, and Babylon for the benefit of the empire was to be sure an idea which certainly would never have entered into the head of any Eastern conqueror. The treasures simply became the property of the king, though of course a large part went to the leading Persians and Medes who filled the most important offices.

Cyrus died in the beginning of the year 529. He left behind him two sons, Smerdis® (Persian Bardiya) and Cambyses (Kambujiya) ; their common mother was accord- ing to Herodotus an Achzemenian, according to Ctesias the daughter of the Median king. The great inscription’

of Darius states that Cambyses caused Smerdis to be put Cam- From this byses.

to death without the people being aware of it. it follows that the partition of the kingdom between the two brothers, of which Ctesias speaks, can hardly have taken place ; for the murder of a king or consort could not have remained concealed. Besides, in both the Baby- lonian inscriptions, of which mention has been frequently made, Cambyses is spoken of in a way which distinctly shows him to have been heir-apparent. This fratricide, the true motives of which we do not know, was the fore-— runner of many similar horrors in the dynasty. The inscription proves, as against Herodotus, that the deed was done before the expedition to Egypt. Nothing else is told us about the earlier part of the reign of Cambyses.

It is only when we come to his conquest of Egypt that Conquest The pretexts for the of Egypt.

we have more exact information. Egyptian war need not detain us. The riches of Egypt had from of old allured the lords of the neighbouring lands, and Herodotus takes it for a matter of course that Cyrus had occupied himself with plans against Egypt. According to the statements of Manetho 9 and of the Egyptian monu- ments, the conquest of Egypt took place in the spring of 525. Vast warlike preparations preceded the expedition. The Greeks of Asia Minor, the Cyprians, who had just submitted, and the Phcenicians had to furnish the fleet. A countryman of Herodotus, the mercenary captain Phanes of Halicarnassus, deserted from the Egyptians to the in pm tN

well as in his paper in the Verhandl. der Gesellschaft fir Erdkunde zu Berlin, 1883, Nos. 5 and 6 (p. 19 sg. of the separate edition).

8 So Herodotus (the name being assimilated to a genuine Greek name Smerdies, Smerdes), Auschyl., Pers. 774, has Mardos ; Justin, i. 9, 9 sq., Mergis ; the scholium on Alsch., /. ¢., Merdias.

9 See Wiedemann, Geschichte Algyptens von Psammetich I. bis auf Alexander den Grossen, p. 218 sg.; comp. too Diod., i. 68. For what follows, and for all that concerns the relations between Egypt and Persia, the work of Wiedemann is to be consulted. At the same time the assumption of the year 525 as the date of the conquest is ope to some objections ; there are many arguments in favour of 527.

525-521. Persians and made himself very useful in the conquest. It

seems that only one great battle was fought, at Pelusium, the gateway of Egypt. The Egyptians, utterly beaten, fled to Memphis, which soon fell into the enemy's hands. Thus Egypt became a province of Persia ; and a pretext was soon found for executing the captured king Psammenitus. This was followed by the submission of the neighbouring Libyans and the princes of the Greek cities of Cyrene and Barca. The peculiar religious feelings of the Egyptians were almost as easily wounded as those of the Jews were in later times. The Persians, flushed with victory, recked little of Egyptian wisdom or folly, least of all recked the brutal king. It is true that even Egyptian inscriptions represent him as a pious worshipper of the Egyptian gods, but this is only the courtly ecclesiastical style, which the Egyptians, partly from servility, partly from long habit, can never drop. And, even if Cambyses did once in a way gratify a pious Egyptian, ¢.g., by ordering his troops to quit a temple which they had occupied as a barrack, no great importance is to be attached to the fact. No doubt the Egyptian priests grossly exaggerated the king's wicked- nesses, but enough remains after all deductions. The dreadful hate which again and again goaded the naturally patient and slavish nation into revolt against the Persians dates from this time ; Darius could not atone for the guilt of Cambyses. The brutality of the latter began with maltreating and burning the mummy of the former king Amasis, who had personally insulted him or his father ; to the Persians, as Herodotus expressly says, the burning of the body was no less an impiety than to the Egyptians. From Egypt he sent an expedition to the shrine of Ammon in the Libyan Desert, but, caught presumably in a simoom, 'it was never heard of again. He led in person a great expedition to Nubia ("' thiopia"). It does not seem to have been such an utter failure as one might at first infer from Herodotus's narrative, for some districts to the south of Egypt were conquered; but the results purchased by hecatombs of men who perished by fatigue or were buried in the sands were far from contenting the king. Returning to Memphis, he found the people exulting over the discovery of anew Apis. Their joy did not fall in with his mood. In a fury, or perhaps out of a tyrant's caprice, he inflicted with his own hand a mortal wound on the sacred steer and instituted a massacre among its worshippers. We may well

believe Herodotus that from that time his barbarity to the Egyptians showed itself in ever darker colours. He spared not even the Persians. Ctesias too calls him bloodthirsty. Added to this was his drunkenness. But his marriage with one or two sisters, at which Herodotus takes offence, was really, according to Persian notions, an act of piety. Similarly, when he put to death a corrupt judge of the highest family and caused his skin to be made into a covering for the seat on which his son was to sit and administer justice, the act was one which all Orientals recognized as truly kingly (Herod., v. 25). The empire was extended in another direction, when Polycrates, the powerful tyrant of Samos and the neighbour- ing islands, sought safety in submission to the great king.

PHR S12

-of Nisa in Media.

[MEDO-PERSIAN

Magian, gave himself out as Smerdis (spring of 522) and formally assumed the government. Even Darius's account lets us see that Cambyses was very unpopular, and the same thing appears from the fact that everybody sided with the new king. Cambyses seems to have marched against him as far as Syria, but there he put an end to himself,—an end plainly affirmed by the great inscription, and quite in keeping with the wildly passionate nature of the man. Gaumata reigned, universally acknowledged, and, as it seems, beloved, because he granted extensive remissions of taxes. He appeared in the character of Smerdis, son of Cyrus, and therefore as Persian king. This is enough to show that there can be here no question of a political opposition of the Medes to the Persians, such as Herodotus imagines, nor yet of a religious opposition to the Persians by the Magians. The changes for the worse now intro- duced, and abolished again by Darius when he ascended the throne,? seem to imply no more than a very intelligible disregard of the leading Persian families, whom Gaumata could not but fear, since they knew much better than the people that he was an impostor. He fell, not through the patriotic indignation of the Persian people, but through the enmity of these families. Seven persons conspired against him ; their names, each with that of his father, are given by Darius in full agreement with Herodotus, while the list of Ctesias presents somewhat more

divergence.4 No doubt they were members of the seven most illustrious houses, but certainly not the actual heads of these houses ; for such a life-and-death enterprise, where all depended upon energy and silence, could not be entrusted to persons who happened to be heads of families and some of them perhaps old men. Moreover, Darius himself, who was undoubtedly from the outset the real leader, was certainly not the head of his house, for his father Hystaspes (Visht- aspa) was still alive and in full vigour, since he afterwards governed a province and fought the rebels. But the ring- leaders would choose one out of each of the seven families in order to commit the families themselves. The conspiracy was completely successful ; and the seven killed Gaumata in the fortress Sikathahuvati near Ecbatana, in the land This happened in the beginning of 521. Darius was then made king. He was probably the only one of the seven who was qualified to be so, for he alone belonged to the royal family, of which, it is true, there may have been many members more nearly related to Cambyses. At any rate there was hardly another can- didate for the crown as able as he.

Darius (Dérayavahu, in the nominative Dérayavahush) Darius]

was then, according to Herodotus (i. 209), about thirty years of age. Amongst other measures for securing himself and adding to his dignity he took to wife Atossa, daughter of Cyrus, who had already been married to her brother Cambyses and to the false Smerdis. He soon showed that His six comrades were not his peers by executing Intaphernes, who had forgotten the respect due to the king, together with his whole family. That at first his seat on the throne was far from firm is intimated by Herod-

otus (ii. 127), who also mentions cursorily an insurrection of the Medes against him (i. 130), but it is only from the king’s great inscription that we learn the gigantic nature of the task he undertook when he ascended the throne. He had first to unite the empire again; one province after Insure the other was in insurrection; the west alone remained ions°

quiet, but it was partly in the hands of governors off,

The false Suddenly, however, the empire rang with the news that Smerdis. the king’s brother Smerdis had seized the crown in Persis. We are now in possession of Darius’s own account of these events, and can fairly dispense

with the Greek narratives ; but we may note that here again, in spite of his poetical colouring, Herodotus stands the test much better than

Ctesias.? Gaumata (in Ionic form Gémétés, Justin, i. 9), a

1 Herodotus's Persian informants told him much of the real or pre-

tended virtues of their people, but concealed things which would have |

offended him.

? Small remains of another ancient and trustworthy account are to be found in Justin.

3 Unfortunately in this interesting passage of the great Behistin inscription the particulars are very obscure.

4 In Ctesias the name of a son is twice given for that of the father. It is obvious that we are here dealing with the ancestors of the seven great families, and one generation could very easily be named by mistake for another.

r

EMPIRE. |

doubtful loyalty. Darius gives the day of the month for the most important events, but unfortunately not the year. Moreover, in consequence of the mutilation of the Babylonian text it is only of some of the Persian months that we can say with certainty to what parts of the year they roughly correspond.! Thus the particular chronology of these insurrections remains in many points quite un- certain, especially as it can be seen that many events nar- rated as successive were contemporaneous. In any case Darius acted very energetically and promptly; and the chief provinces were undoubtedly again reduced to sub- jection in the first three years of his reign. The insur- rection of Athrina in Susiana was promptly suppressed by a Persian army. More dangerous was the revolt in Babylon of Nidintubel (Vadintabaira), a real or pretended member of the Babylonian royal house

who assumed the august name of Nabukadrachara (Nebuchadnezzar). Darius hastened thither and defeated him in several battles. But the long siege after which, according to Herodotus, the rebel city fell into the hands of Darius, cannot have taken place then.2 While Darius was in Babylon a whole series of revolts broke out. ‘That of Martiya in Susiana, who called himself Imani, and appeared in the character of king of that country, was indeed soon put down with the help of the people of Susiana them- selves, but in Media, the heart of the monarchy, the situa- tion was much more grave. Phraortes (/rawarti), who

gave himself out to be a scion of the old royal house of |

Media, was made king of Media, and the Parthians and Hyrcanians to the eastward, whose satrap was Hystaspes, father of Darius, sided with him. The king’s generals could effect nothing decisive against Phraortes ; at last he was overthrown by the king in person. Like all rebels who deduced their descent rightly or wrongly from: the old dynasties, he was put to death with circumstances of especial cruelty. In the meantime one of Darius’s generals had put down a second false Nebuchadnezzar in Babylon ; others had to suppress insurrections in two regions of Armenia, which were, perhaps, connected with the revolt of Phraortes, and a rising in the distant Margiana (the district of Merv). Even Persis had risen. Another false Smerdis, Vahyazddta, appeared in the east while Darius was in Babylon, and crowds flocked to him. His power increased so much that he was even able to send an army to Arachosia (a part of western Afghanistan). While Darius in person took the field against Phraortes, he despatched against Vahyazdata a general who at last over- threw the rebel. Arachosia, too, was reduced to subjection. So, too, was the nomad tribe of the Sagartiil (perhaps on the northern or north-eastern frontier of Persis), with Chitratahma at their head, who also claimed to be of the royal house of Media. Afterwards Gobryas (Gaubruva), one of the seven, suppressed a third revolt in Persis. The king in person reconquered the Sacee, who had been in subjection before. The generals employed by Darius were Persians and Medes ; but there was one Armenian among them. His faithful army was composed of Persians and Medes, but his adversaries were also supported in part by Persians and Medes. Darius must have been a great ruler to conquer them all. Picture his position when he took

! The obvious assumption that the strange name Andmaka, t.e., “anonymous,” for a month means an intercalary month would compel us to infer that all the events falling in this month belonged to one and the same year, for two successive years or every other year cannot each have an intercalary month. But a careful consideration of the particulars shows that all these events could not fall in the same year. Another obstacle to regarding Anamaka as an intercalary month is the circumstance that it corresponds to the tenth Babylonian month Tebet, ze, probably to December or January, whereas intercalary months usually follow the twelfth or sixth month.

- See below under Xerxes.

the field against Phraortes ; Babylonia was his once more, 521-515.

and its wealth must have supplied him with the means of war, but almost the whole of Iran and Armenia was in the hands of men whom he calls rebels and liars, but some of whom, at least, had perhaps more right than he to the sovereignty, and whose people were devoted to them. No sooner had he reached Media than Babylon was again in arms. Nothing but great energy and circumspection could have carried him safely through all his difficulties.

The satrap of Sardis, Orcetes, had not revolted, but his conduct was that of an independent prince. Him Darius put out of the way by stratagem (Herod., iii. 120 sq.). At the same time Samos became definitively a Persian province, after a royal army had, with much bloodshed, set up as tyrant Syloson, brother of Polycrates, whom Orcetes had put to death. The removal of Aryandes,? governor of Egypt, who assumed, even at that date, the royal privi- lege of minting money, seems to have followed not long afterwards. He had extended his power westwards. But we see from Herodotus that to the west of the last mouth of the Nile the Persian rule was always precarious; and that he can have conquered Carthage, whose naval power was perhaps a match for that of the whole Persian empire, is quite

incredible. At the most it is possible that the prudent leaders of that commercial state may in negotia- tions and treaties have occasionally recognized the king in ambiguous phrases as their lord.

The experience gained by Darius in the first unsettled Organi- years of his reign must have been in part the occasion of zation of

his introducing numerous improvements into the organiza- tion of the empire. Governors with the title of satraps (khshathrapdvan, i.e., land-rulers) there had been before, but Darius determined their rights and duties. Vassal princes of dangerous power were tolerated only with reluctance. The satrap had indeed the power and splendour of a king, but he was nevertheless under regular control. The court received from special officials direct reports of the conduct of the governors, and from time to time royal commissioners appeared with troops to hold an inspection. The satrap commanded the army of his province, but the fortresses he was obliged to leave in the hands of troops directly under the king. But the most important part of the reform was that Darius regulated the taxes and imposed a fixed sum upon each province, with the exception of the land of his fathers, which enjoyed immunity. The Persians were discontented at this, and dubbed Darius in consequence “higgler” (kéandos) ; but this is doubtless only the ery of high officials, to whom any regulated fiscal system was objectionable, as making it somewhat more difficult for them to fleece their subordinates. It is not at all to be supposed that the irregular contributions (“ presents,” Herod., iii. 89) previously levied were less burdensome to the subjects. However imperfect the Persian state system was, and however illusory the measures of control may often have been, still the organization introduced by Darius marks a great step in advance over the thoroughly rude old Asiatic system.

In the Behisttin inscription, which is placed not long after the conclusion of the great revolts, India does not as yet appear as a province, though it does in the later inscriptions of Persepolis, and in the epitaph of Darius. Herodotus says that Darius caused the Indus to be explored from the land of the Pactyans (Pakhtu, Afghans) to its mouth by Scylax, a Greek or rather Carian, and then con- quered the country. But in any case this Persian “ India” was only one portion of the region of the Indus. If this

conquest was somewhat adventurous, much more so was i 3 Polyenus, vii. 10, 7, calls him Oryandres. 4 Wiedemann, op. cit., p. 236, fixes as the date the year 517; but

his grounds are not conclusive. XVIII. — 72

empire.

Expedi- tion to India.

570

515-500. the enterprise against the Scythians. Profound motives for this expedition have been sought for, but it no doubt

[MEDO-PERSIAN

PERSIA

The eyes of the Persians were now turned towards Persian Greece proper. While the Greek coast of Asia Minor was ?elations indispensable to the power which held the interior, the Greece.

Scythian expedi- tion.

sprang simply from the longing to conquer unknown lands. That Darius, an energetic and valiant Eastern prince, always hitherto favoured by fortune, should have been free from lust of conquest is in itself very unlikely. The expedition against the Scythians falls about 515. With regard to the preparations and the beginning of the expedition up to the crossing of the Danube we are well informed. The Greek subjects, of whom even by this time there were many on the European (Thracian) side— such as the inhabitants of Byzantium and the Thracian Chersonese—were obliged to supply the fleet. Mandrocles of Samos built a bridge over the Bosphorus. The Persians must soon have found how useful the skill of the Greeks might be to them, without suspecting the dangers with which the Greek spirit threatened them. The king’s march may be followed as far as the Danube ; it lay pretty nearly due north, the warlike Getz, a Thracian people, being

subdued on the way. With the entry into the Scythian country itself Herodotus's narrative becomes completely fabulous. His chief error is in leaving out of sight the enormous distances in these regions (the southern part of modern Russia) and the great rivers. Hence he represents the native tribes and Darius as marching the distance between the Danube and the Don, or even the Volga, twice in not more than two months, as if the distances were aS in Greece. Darius, who passed the Danube by a bridge in the neighbourhood, perhaps, of Isaktchi, can hardly have crossed even the Dniester. Strabo, who either possessed more exact accounts of the expedition, or drew correct inferences from the disaster which afterwards over- took King Lysimachus in this neighbourhood, forms a very intelligent judgment on these matters. The expedition failed, not through the superior tactics of the Scythians, who behaved just as might be expected of such nomads, with a mixture of timidity and audacious greed of booty, but through the impassable and inhospitable nature of the country, through hunger and thirst, through exhaustion and disease. After sustaining heavy losses Darius was obliged to retreat across the Danube. The king, or at all events his army, was saved by the Greek tyrants, especially Histizeus of Miletus, who refused to follow the advice of their colleague Miltiades to break down the bridge. But the damage to the prestige of the empire was great; the Greeks had seen their lord and master in distress, Never- theless the district south of the Danube was retained. That the Scythians immediately followed up their enemy, or that they even opened negotiations with the Spartans, as Herodotus states,! is not to be supposed. Moreover, Megabyzus, whom Darius on his return left behind in Europe, subdued great districts of Thrace along with the Greek cities on the coast. The king of Macedonia also acknowledged the great king as his liege lord. The cities on the Hellespont,? which after the failure of the expedi- tion made no secret of their feeling towards the Persians, and in part expressed their hostility in overt acts against them, received sharp punishment. The islands of Lemnos and Imbros were occupied. At the mouth of the Hebrus (Maritza) Doriscus was converted into a fortress with a standing garrison.?

1 The story of the dealings of King Cleomenes with the Scythians (Herod., vi. 84) rests on a joke,—he drank immoderately, "like a Scythian."

2 This expression is used to designate the towns lying on the Helles- pont, Propontis, and Bosphorus,

® To the same time may be referred the foundation on the Asiatic side of Dareium, named after Darius, just as Harpagium probably has its name from Harpagus. It is to be observed that in the district of Old Phrygia such towns called after persons are found from of old, as Midzium, Gordixium, Dascylium, and others.

possession of the mother-country of Hellas was, as we can easily see, not only unnecessary but positively dangerous to the Persians, especially as they were themselves absolutely unfitted for the sea. But to the Persians of those days, absorbed in schemes of universal empire, considerations such as these could not present themselves. Besides, the enterprises of the Persians against the Greeks were to a large extent suggested and furthered by the Greeks them- selves. Repressed factions, tyrants in exile or in danger, were but too ready to invoke the help of the foreigner at the price of slavery. When the Persians attacked a Greek state there was always another at enmity with it which at once took their side. Even the inconsiderable enter- prise which was the outward occasion of the Ionian revolt, namely, the attack of the Persians on Naxos, was brought about by the banished aristocrats of the island, who applied to Aristagoras, lord of Miletus, and hence to his superior, Artaphernes, the king's brother and satrap of Sardis. The enterprise failed, and in his embarrassment Aristagoras gave the signal for the revolt which he and his father-in-law Histizus, the proper tyrant' of Miletus, who was detained at the court of Susa, had planned long before.

The great rising of the Ionians and other Greeks and Revoltof non-Greeks shows a vigorous love of freedom, and much Ionian,

individual boldness and skill on the side of the insurgents ; but, quite apart from the vast odds against them and the unfavourableness of their geographical situation, their enterprise was from the outset doomed to failure, because they did not form a compact party, because not even the Ionian cities practised that discipline and subordination which for war are indispensable, and lastly because Arista- goras and Histizeus were adventurous intriguers and tyrants, but without the gifts of rulers or generals. Of the history of the revolt, in addition to the excellent accounts

which he derived from Hecatzeus of Miletug a contemporary and actor in the events he describes, Herodotus has all sorts of popular fables to tell, The chronology is uncertain; probably the revolt began in 500 or 499, and was substan- tially ended by the capture of Miletus in 495 or 494 (six years later, Herod., vi. 18). Aristagoras made himself master of the fleet on its return from Naxos, took prisoner the tyrants on board at the head of the contingents of their cities, and restored the republic in Miletus, only of course with the view of thereby ruling the confederacy. The Spartans, admittedly at that time the first power of Greece, were sober enough to refuse the help requested. But the Athenians, who had already excited the wrath of the Persians by refusing to comply with the demand of Artaphernes that they should receive back Hippias as tyrant, had the courage or rather the foolishness to de- spatch twenty ships to the help of the Ionians. They thus mortally insulted the Persians without really benefiting their friends. The Athenians shared in the march on Sardis. The confederates burned the city, but could not capture the citadel; on the contrary, they were obliged to beat a hasty retreat, and were after all routed at Ephesus. However, the Persian army did not as yet per- manently take up quarters in Ephesus. The Athenians, who may have dreamed of pressing forward into the interior of Asia, returned home with their illusion dis- pelled, and Athens took no further part in the war. But the impression produced by this unsuccessful expedition upon a modern critic is very different from that which it produced upon the Asiatics of those times. They said: “The Jonians have risen against the king; the Jonians from beyond the sea have come to their help; they have

burned the king’s capital,” and many added, “It is all over with the king’s supfemacy!” Not only did the Hel- lespontine cities, with Byzantium at their head, join the Jonians, but also a great part of the Carians, the Greeks in the Troad, and almost the whole of the very flourishing island of Cyprus. By this time the possession of these lands was really endangered by the revolt. But now the Persians came with a great fleet to Cyprus. The Ionians sailed to meet them, beat them at sea off Salamis in Cyprus, but were beaten by the Persians on land. After great struggles, which are described in an almost epic style, befitting the primitive state of the island, Cyprus came

once more under the power of the Persians, after being free only one year. This was the first heavy blow to the insurrection. Much fighting took place on the mainland ; and most of the Persian enterprises were success- ful, but not all. In particular the Carians, who in general displayed great gallantry in this war, annihilated a whole Persian army under a son-in-law of Darius. But the longer the war lasted, the more marked became the progress made by the Persians. Aristagoras left the seat of war, and withdrew to his possessions of Myrcinus on the Lake of Prasias in the south of Thrace, near what was afterwards Amphipolis, but was there slain by natives as early as 497.1 Darius then despatched Histizeus, whoin he still continued to believe faithful, to Ionia, probably in order to open negotiations. He availed himself of the oppor- tunity to seek to regain the lordship of Miletus and put himself at the head of the whole revolt, but the Milesians would have nothing more to do with him or with Aris- tagoras. The great intriguer had connexions on all sides, but no one trusted him in the long run. He became at last a pirate on his own account; and after many adven- tures he fell into the hands of the Persians and was crucified.

PER Sl #

oa

the same time he caused the land to be surveyed, and estab- 500-485.

lished fixed imposts.2 These were not higher than before the war, but naturally they now pressed much harder on the impoverished Ionians. Thereupon the young Mardonius, son of the Gobryas who has been mentioned before, and brother-in-law and son-in-law of the king, established de- mocracies in all Ionian cities. The weakened communities might well seem to the Persians at that time less dangerous than ambitious tyrants. However, this measure apparently applied only to the Ionians of the mainland, not to the islanders nor to the other Greeks of the mainland.

Mardonius cherished great designs. He wished to con- quer Greece itself. He did actually conquer Greeks and non-Greeks in the north-west of the Archipelago, but at the promontory of Athos his fleet was shattered by a storm.

The second expedition against Greece was on a greater Expedi- Under the conduct of the Mede Datis and the tion

scale. younger Artaphernes, son of Darius’s brother of the same name, the Persians took Naxos, and destroyed Eretria in Eubcea, the inhabitants of which had sent five ships to help the Ionians at the beginning of the revolt. But at © Marathon they were utterly defeated by the Athenians and Plateeans (September or October 490). They quickly renounced the project of subjecting Athens to Hippias as tyrant and to Darius as suzerain, and departed home. Miltiades, who, as lord of the Thracian Chersonese, had once been the king’s vassal and had afterwards been obliged to fly, had taken the measure of the Persian. By his victory Athens had rendered immortal service to Europe and the cause of civilization. It was the first great victory of the Greeks over the Persians in the open field; the moral impression had an immense effect in the sequel, when the danger was much greater.

The south-west of the empire alone had hitherto re- Relations mained free from rebellion against Darius. Darius, who with had been with Cambyses in Egypt (Herod., iii. 139), treated PS¥Pt-

It is a noteworthy fact that Histizeus had actually concerted a conspiracy with the Persians in Sardis, against Artaphernes and Darius, the discovery of which cost many their head.

Fidelity has never been an Iranian virtue.

The decisive struggle was concentrated about Miletus. There, at the little island of Lade, as Grote points out, the odds against the Greek fleet (600 triremes against 353) were ot so unfavourable as they were at Salamis, and the want of unity of leadership was not much greater than it was there ; but the Ionians and Lesbians were not, or were no longer, the equals of the European Greeks in bravery and warlike skill. A complete overthrow was the result, in which treachery on the Greek side had itsshare. Miletus long defended itself by sea and land, but was at last taken and destroyed; the women and children were sold as slaves. The captured Milesians were carried off into the heart of Asia and settled at Susa. Miletus, up to that time by far the most important of all Greek cities in Asia, though it afterwards

recovered, still never regained its old position. The most important city of the coast was henceforward Ephesus, which took no part in the battle of Lade, and perhaps had at that time already submitted amicably to the Persians.

The subjugation of the rest of the Greeks of the main- land and islands, as well as of the Carians, now rapidly followed, not without dreadful massacres and devastations. The Phcenicians, who formed the main body of the Persian fleet, seem to have been especially zealous in the work of destruction. The old bitterness between the Canaanites and the Hellenes, so vividly shown during these centuries in Sicily, cannot have died out in the east. In ruined Ionia a frightful state of things must have prevailed, so that at last Artaphernes saw himself obliged to undertake a regu- lar organization to ensure the peace of the country. At

1 Thue., iv. 102.

the Egyptians with forbearance, and in return loyal priests praised him to fellow-countrymen and Greeks. Ifa notice of Polyzenus is to be trusted, he must have gone in person to Egypt in the year 517,° in order to lighten the burdens of the people. Amongst other measures which promoted the material wellbeing of the land, he made a canal from the Nile to the Red Sea, as an inscription of the king himself testifies to this day. But the hatred of the Egyp- tians to the Persians was too great. In the year 486 (Herod., vii. 1, 4) the first great insurrection of the Egyp- tians against the Persians took place. From an inscription we know that during it Khabbash or Khabash was king of Egypt. Darius did not live to see the revolt put down, for he died in the following year, 485.

Darius is the most remarkable king of the dynasty of Darius’s the Achzmenians, and perhaps the most remarkable of all character.

the native kings of Iran. So far as we know, only the Sasanid Khosrau I. in the 6th and the Safavid Abbds the Great in the 17th century A.D. can be compared with him. He was as energetic as he was prudent. He was of course a despot, and could be ruthless and even cruel, but on the whole he was inclined to be mild. We lay especial weight on the testimony of /ischylus, who had himself fought at Marathon against the army of Darius,

and who shared the exasperation of the Athenians against the Persians, but nevertheless in his Perse expresses very high respect for the king. This, then, was the judg- ment of educated Greeks on the prince who had brought such untold misery upon their nation. To such a judgment great weight is to be attached. In harmony with it are the particulars which we know of the doings and ordi-

2 Herod., vi. 42; Diod., x. 59. 3 See Wiedemann, op. cit., p. 237.

485-479.

Xerxes I.

Babylon revolts.

Invasion of Greece.

nances of Darius. He seems, too, to have shown a correct insight in his choice of the persons to whom he entrustcd important positions.

He was succeeded, apparently without any disturbance, by his son Xerxes (Khshaydrshd) I., who, as son of Atossa, elder daughter of Cyrus, had probably always been regarded as heir-apparent.! The time was not yet come when claim- ants to the throne and suspects were assassinated. On the contrary, the king’s blood-relations played under Xerxes as under Darius a great réle as leaders and counsellors. But the whole generation was probably deeply degenerate, though the difference could hardly anywhere have been so great as that between Darius and Xerxes, who begins the series of weak and unworthy kings.

The subjugation of Egypt was effected in 484 (Herod., vii. 7). The measures taken by Khabbash to protect the mouths of the Nile against the “fleet of the Asiatics” had thus been unsuccessful. According to Herodotus a much harder yoke was laid on Egypt than before. The king’s own brother Achzemenes was made satrap of the country.

Babylon too seems to have again risen in revolt. Ctesias assigns to this date the revolt with which the well-known story of Zopyrus? is connected, naming instead of Zopyrus his son Megabyzus. The long siege of which Herodotus speaks does not, as we saw, fit in with the revolt under Darius ; it belongs, perhaps, to the time of Xerxes. Ctesias gives us to understand that Xerxes wounded the religious feelings of the Babylonians, and Herodotus speaks ex- pressly of the desecration of their sanctuaries by the same king (i. 183). To the victorious Macedonians, who em- phatically asserted that they were come to avenge the destruction of Greek temples by Xerxes, the Babylonian priests afterwards told many tales of the outrages he perpetrated on their sanctuaries.? Doubtless they grossly exaggerated, but they did not invent everything. Of course such sacrileges may equally well have taken place when the city was reconquered, or have been the occasion of a revolt.

Darius was firmly resolved to wipe out the disgrace of Marathon, and to bring the whole of Greece under the yoke. His mighty preparations for the march thither had been interrupted by the revolt of Egypt, and, if our con- jecture is right, of Babylon. They were now vigorously recommenced ; and provision was made for the mainte- nance of the army, at least within the limits of the Persian domain. Xerxes himself went to Sardis, the first great rendezvous. From there he set forward in the spring of 480. We will not further describe the great expedition, which, after the dearly-bought successes at Thermopyle and Artemisium, ended with the defeats of Salamis (Sep- tember 480) and Platea (479)—all this belongs rather to the history of Greece—but we will briefly discuss the causes which procured for the disunited and far from numerous Greeks a victory over the mighty power of the great empire. It may very well be said that it would have been possible to subdue even Hellas, and to put an incalculable check upon the Greek spirit, if the great enter- prise had been conducted with more sagacity. There was no lack of Greek traitors, nor even of traitor states, from which the king might have learned how to set about the business. But the blind arrogance of the Asiatic king was bent on bearing down everything by the sheer weight of his masses, and when he failed in this his arrogance passed at once into childish cowardice. The fleet certainly mus- tered over 1200 sail at the beginning of the war, and even

1 In spite of the anecdote in Herod., vii. 2-4; Justin, ii. 10; Plut., De frat. amore, p. 488, and Reg. apophth., p. 178.

2 This story, with all sorts of variations, is very widely spread in the East, but it can hardly rest on an historical fact.

3 Arrian, vii. 17, 2; Strabo, 738.

after the heavy losses by storms at Eubcea, losses, however, which the Greeks no doubt exaggerated, it must with rein- forcements have numbered fully 1000 ships of war,—a force too large to operate, at least in a single mass, in the narrow Greek seas. Moreover, it was without an able head. If the ships furnished by the Pheenicians and the subject Greeks were fairly a match for those of the free Greeks, on the other hand the Persians, Medes, and Sacee who manned the fleet as soldiers probably cut but a sorry figure, and the Persian officers associated with the native ship captains cannot have contributed to the more efficient working of these powerful engines of war. Again, the army, which in any case numbered over a million men, was far too numerous to find sufficient sustenance for any length of time, in spite of the frugal habits which mostly characterize Asiatics. To this must be added the circum- stance that the levies were drawn from peoples many of whom were totally unused to the Greek climate. Famine and pestilence must have wrought dreadful havoc among the soldiers. By far the most of them were a useless rabble, Of the Asiatics proper probably only some Persian and Median regiments of guards were well armed, but even they. were not to be compared, man for man, with the heavy-armed soldier-citizens of Greece. Moreover, in the use of their weapons on land the Greeks, and above all the Spartans, were far superior to all the Persians. Even the Greeks on the Persian side were no match for the Greeks of Europe; some of them fought half-heartedly, and an anxious watch was kept on them, so that they were more a hindrance than a help. If the Persians were kept well informed of the enemy’s affairs by means of traitorous Greeks, much more so were the Greeks through deserters and friends in the enemy’s camp. Even when the Persians were driven by necessity to take the resolution of sending back all

worthless troops, and when the king had fled, Greece was still in great danger, for an able man, Mar. donius, now stood with the best part of the army in the heart of the country. But even with a defeat at Plateza all would not have been over, for the enemy was without his fleet. Add to all this the excellent bearing of those Greeks who remained faithful to their fatherland. Exem- plary above all was the conduct of Athens; she durst not allow the laurels won at Marathon to wither. The Spartans, too, with their morbidly exaggerated sense of military honour, earned immortal renown. Even petty Greek communities like Thespie, Tegea, and Aigina caine glori- ously to the front. At the head of the Greeks stood many distinguished men, above all Themistocles. On the whole, we may say that here Greek intellect, Greek valour, and Greek virtue triumphed over the spiritless and helpless hordes of Asiatic slaves.

Here and there a modern# has expressed the opinion that the conquest of the Grecks by the Persians would have been no such great misfortune after all, inasmuch as the intellectual superiority of the former would have asserted itself even under a foreign dominion, especially as the Persians were not regular barbarians; but this opinion is entirely false. Only in a free country could the Greek spirit fully unfold itself, only in democratic Athens could it accomplish its highest work and achieve imperishable results for all time. In the externals of civilization the Asiatics might, in some respects, be actu- ally the superiors of the Greeks ; but genuine free human culture first arose among the latter, and if there was one pride that was justified it was that of the cultivated Greeks as against all barbarians. ‘The Greeks themselves had no inkling of the high sense in which the watchword at Salamis, “All is at stake” (Aischyl., Pers., 405), was ap- plicable to the whole of human culture.

4 K.g., Maspero, Hist. ancienne des peuples de UOrient, chap. xiv.

EMPIRE. |

King Xerxes had shown himself in the war a thoroughly commonplace Eastern despot, as boastful as he was effemi- nate. The dreadful sacrifice described by Herodotus (vii. 114) may be excused on the ground of religious supersti- tion, but the mutilation of the corpse of Leonidas and the decapitation of the Phoenicians who commanded the fleet show the spirit of

the man. His disgraceful flight must have been welcome to Mardonius. The latter fell like a man at Platzea; indeed the battle of Platza did honour toa large part of the vanquished. Of course great masses of the vast army returned to Asia, several doubtless still in good order, but many, very many, must have perished in Greece, and in Thrace, where the savage Thracians cut off large numbers of the fugitives.

The Greek fleet did not at first venture to pursue the Persians to Asia, but afterwards it crossed at the request of the Greek islanders. At the headland of Mycale, not far from Miletus, the remainder of the Persian fleet was annihilated just about the time of the battle of Platza. The liberation of the islands and of the greater part of the Greek cities on the coast of Thrace followed. Thrace and Macedonia regained their independence without any effort of their own. The whole of the islands were per- manently wrested from the Persians, and the liberation of the Asiatic coast was already begun.

We stand here at the decisive turning-point of Persian history. Henceforward Greece might be coveted and designs against it cherished, but no enterprises were under- taken. The Persians were thrown back upon the defensive.

PoE RS 1,4

573

the Persian monarch. who had held a command under Mardonius, received the satrapy of Hellespontine Phrygia (where his family retained the power thenceforward down to the fall of the empire), for the purpose of conducting the negotiations. The definite statements of Thucydides leave no doubt as to Pausanias’s guilt. In particular the king’s letter (i. 129) bears every mark of genuineness. Happily he proved himself a clumsy intriguer, and when long afterwards in Sparta retribution at last overtook him he had ceased to be dangerous, at least for the freedom of Greece as a whole. The conduct of Pausanias, together with a want of inclination and capacity for distant naval expeditions, caused the Spartans to resign the conduct of the maritime war against Persia. They withdrew, and the command passed into the hands of the Athenians (476). The naval power of Sparta was quite insignificant, and was certainly surpassed by that of some of her allies, such

as Aigina and Corinth ; and the advantage to Persia of the absence of the Peloponnesian fleet was far more than counter- balanced by the circumstance that the Greek naval forces were now under a single energetic leadership, which aimed at nothing less than the exclusion of the enemy from all Greek seas and coasts. The war lasted for a long time, but few of its details are known to us, though the scanty statements of the Greek writers are partly illustrated by Attic inscriptions. The European coast was soon completely cleared. ion fell after an arduous siege (about 470). Doriscus alone continued for long to be a Persian possession.

Artabazus, son of the Pharnaces 479-464.

Though they often afterwards exercised an influence on the history of Hellas by means of money or diplomacy,

The most brilliant episode of this period of the war is the Cimon's

great naval expedition of Cimon.? He liberated the Greek naval 1 exploits.

still the respect for their fighting power was gone, and so far it is possible to regard Alexander's expedition as a result and continuation of the old struggles, and the saying of Aischylus, "In Salamis the power of the Persians lies buried," may be called prophetic.1

Xerxes was still in Sardis when his full brother Masistes came thither with the beaten forces from Mycale. Dis- quieted probably by the neighbourhood of the victors, the king retired into the depths of Asia. About the same time he deeply offended Masistes on a point of family honour; in revenge Masistes intended to go to his province of Bactria and there raise a revolt, but was cut down by horsemen despatched after him (Herod., vii. 108 sq.). This story (like that told by Herodotus in iv. 13) exhibits all those horrors of a later age which Ctesias loves to paint. The idea of a revolt, nioreover, was not far to seek after the profound humiliation inflicted by the Greek war and the dreadful losses of men,—how many Sogdianians, Indians, and Nubians can have returned to their homes? The in- habitants of distant frontier lands may even then have severed their connexion with Persia, and even then mountain and desert tribes in the very heart of the empire may have regained their full independence.

Unfortunately the work of Herodotus breaks off abruptly with the battle of Mycale, and with it our only continuous ancient history of the empire comes to an end. The frag- ments of Ctesias and the occasional statements of other writers can only, to a small extent, supply the deficiency. Henceforward we possess tolerable information on the shifting relations between the Persian empire and the Greek states, but on little else.

Under the conduct of Pausanias, the victor of Plateea, the Greeks sailed (477) first to Cyprus and then to By- zantium. At the capture of the latter many distinguished Persians fell into their hands, and Pausanias, who must have appeared to Xerxes as a sort of king of Greece, took advan-

1 Aschyl., Pers., 596 sg. The brevity and simplicity of the expres- sion éye: ra Iepody cannot be rendered in any modern language.

cities of the Carian and Lycian coast, and took the bilingua towns, which were occupied by a Persian force ; all were incorporated in an Attic maritime league. ‘The important Phaselis on the borders of Lycia and Pamphylia also fell into hishands. At the mouth of the Eurymedon the Persian fleet, under a son and a nephew of Xerxes, was defeated and destroyed, and a land-victory for the Greeks followed im- mediately. Upon this Cimon sailed hastily for Cyprus, where he captured eighty ships. Here for once the Greeks were numerically superior, but nevertheless it was a great exploit to have advanced victoriously so far beyond their own waters.

About this time Xerxes was assassinated. From various Xerxes

writers we can piece together an account of this event by eee h °

Ctesias, and another by Dinon,? which differ from eac other in numerous particulars; a third version is given by Aristotle (Pol., p. 1311 b). For such scenes, occurring in the interior of the seraglio, an outsider is not a trust- worthy authority, but this much is clear: Xerxes was killed by Artabanus, captain of the body-guard > “is youngest son Artaxerxes, in league with the murderer, put to death his elder brother Darius, who had a better title to the throne. It does not, however, follow with certainty that Artaxerxes was a parricide. We have here a change of sovereign of the sort which abounds in Oriental history. Artabanus was soon afterwards put out of the way by

Artaxerxes. Later chronologists represent him as actually reigning for seven months, but this is probably a

mistaken interpretation of expressions used by Dinon.

Artaxerxes (Artakhshathra*) I. came to the throne in Arta- His surname “Longhand” (Maxpéxetp), which *°*°s

464.

seems to have been first mentioned by Dinon, has no doubt a symbolical meaning, “ of far-reaching power,” but later Greek writers took it literally. Ctesias tells of a

2 About 465. Perhaps it falls within the reign of Artaxerxes.

3 He wrote in ihe time of Alexander.

4 A second form, Artakhshasht, is represented by Hebrew and Egyptian forms, and by ’Apratécons on a Greek inscription (Le Bas and Waddington, No. 1651).

464-445. rising of the Bactrians immediately after his accession to the throne, which may have been instigated by Hystaspes, the king’s elder brother, who was then in his satrapy of Bactria (Diod., xi. 69). Two battles took place, the second of which ended in a decisive victory for the royalists, so that Bactria was once more reduced to sub- jection.

In the early part of the reign of Artaxerxes falls the appearance of Themistocles at the Persian court ; so say the contemporary Charon of Lampsacus (Plut., Themist., 27), and also Thucydides (i. 137); to their authority that of all later writers, who here mention Xerxes, must give way. On calmly weighing the trustworthy accounts and taking into consideration the circumstance that even ata later time Themistocles as a “traitor” was refused a grave in Attic earth, we can hardly avoid concluding that the gifted saviour of Greece, the founder of the Attic sea- power, a man far

superior intellectually to Pausanias, but of boundless ambition, and with a strong propensity to intrigue, was really guilty of entering into traitorous communication with the Persians in his own interest. Certainly he knew admirably how to give himself out as an old friend of the Persians,! and to hold out to them the prospect of still doing them valuable service against his countrymen. The king gave him Magnesia on the Meander in Lydia and two other towns; as the tyrant of these places under Persian supremacy the victor of Salamis lived some time longer.? Like this illustrious fugitive, other Greek exiles or adventurers came to the Persian court from time to time, and played there occa- sionally a certain réle.

Second Hardly was Artaxerxes seated on the throne when the

Egyptian second great revolt of Egypt broke out. Inarus, son of

revolt. Psammetichus, a Libyan prince, placed himself at the head of the Egyptians and was madc king of the whole country. The satrap Achzmenes, son of Darius, fell in battle. Inarus summoned to his aid the Athenians, who were still at war with the Persians, and the Athenians were rash enough to involve themselves in the struggle (about 460). They had just come once more to Cyprus with 200 ships. They sailed to Egypt, and with the help of the Egyptians shut up the Persians and the Egyptians who sided with them in the castle of Memphis. Persia had recourse to diplomacy : an embassy was sent to Sparta in order to stir up the Spar- tans to make a vigorous diversion against Athens. When this attempt failed, a large army was at last despatched under Megabyzus, son of Zopyrus, which subdued the country after hard fighting ; for, with all their hatred of the Persians, the Egyptians were no match for them in battle. The Athenians in Egypt were annihilated (prob- ably 455); the same fate befell a reinforcement of fifty ships. Inarus fell by treachery into the hands of the Persians and was crucified. His son Thannyras, however, received (Herod., iii. 15) his original province (probably the Libyan nome), which points to the war having been concluded by a treaty, of which Ctesias also makes mention. In the swamps of the Delta Amyrteeus (Amun-art-rut) maintained himself as an independent king; and by him the Athenians were once more invited to Egypt (450 or 449). Cimon, who was again at Cyprus with 200 ships, despatched sixty to his help, but they soon returned, probably without

accomplishing much. Cimon died during the siege of Citium, one of the most important cities of Cyprus, and the mainstay of the Pheenician nationality on

1 But the letter in Thuc., i. 137, cannot be regarded as an authentic document.

2 Here, too, he coined money. Of the two specimens known to us, one is plated, ‘‘which seems to show that with the coinage the cunning Athenian combined a financial speculation,”’ Brandis, Miinz-, Mass-, und Gewichtwesen V orderasiens, p. 459.

that island. The Athenians raised the siege, but achieved on their retreat once more a brilliant victory by sea and land.

These are the last contests of the Athenians and their Peace allies with the Persians. Peace must have been concluded between shortly afterwards. We cannot here enumerate and criticize Persians the arguments which have often been adduced for and Athen;

: Onno Mans, against the supposition that a regular peace (though not a “peace of Cimon”) was concluded. No one probably would have questioned the reality of such a peace were it not that the Attic orators of the 4th century, by grossly exaggerating the terms of a treaty which in their time had long been a dead letter, had rendered the very existence of the treaty open to suspicion, and that the able historian Theopompus, moved apparently by dislike of the Athenian democracy and a desire to gratify his powerful patron, King Alexander, had attempted by false though learned arguments to disprove the genuineness of the original treaty of peace, of which only a copy was extant in his time. The text of the original document was given by the best authority on Attic decrees, Craterus.4 It is hardly conceivable that the great war should have died out of itself without the Athenians getting some security that their possessions and their widely ramifying commerce would be left unmolested. Moreover, all that we are

told « or can infer as to the contents of the treaty agrees perfectly with the political relations of the time. The treaty was not at all in the spirit of the high-flying plans of Cimon's party ; for, while the Persians acknowledged the independ- ence of the Greek towns on the west coast, including the Lycian, and pledged themselves to send no ships of war into Greek waters, the Athenians in return renounced all rights in the eastern seas. The most sagacious of the Athenians had perceived that Cyprus, and much more Egypt and Phoenicia, lay outside the natural sphere of Athenian power. We can understand, however, that Callias, the author of the treaty, earned the dislike of the Athenians for his pains. The balance of advantages secured by the peace was on the side of Athens, but the Persians resigned nothing which they actually possessed, and they were now secured against Athenian raids. It was certainly anomalous that the great empire which owned the rest of Asia Minor should have no rights over the narrow strip of coast, which could everywhere be overlooked from the interior, Even the capital of the Hellespontine-Phrygian satrapy, Dascyl- ium, from which that province is sometimes called Dascyl- itis, Was now a member of the Attic naval confederacy. The satraps were still obliged as before to pay to the king the taxes due from the coast-lands, and this must have been a constant incitement to them to reconquer those lands. There was no Persian fleet in the Black Sea. The Greek towns on its coast were free, and some of them belonged to the Athenian league and were occasionally visited by Athenian war-ships. At most a portion of the natives of the countries round about the Black Sea were in a state of loose dependence on the Persian empire. In Lycia and Caria there were districts which obeyed neither the king nor Athens, or at least were not closely dependent on any foreign power.

The condition of Egypt at this time is very obscure. Amyrteus had no doubt been finally overthrown by the Persians, but his son Pausiris was left by them in posses- sion of his father's kingdom. In the year 445 we find an Egyptian or Libyan king, Psammetichus, who presented the Athenians with a great quantity of corn. This was .

> The epigram which Diodorus (xi. 62) wrongly applies to the battle : of the Eurymedon refers to this battle. 4 Shortly after Alexander. > Compare Thuc., ii. 69 ; iti. 19. . § Philochorus, in schol. Aristoph. Vesp., 716; schol. Aristoph. Plut., 178 ; Plut., Pericles, 37.

perhaps another son of Inarus. more of him and his reign.

The conclusion of peace did not prevent the Persians, or at least individual satraps, from occasionally supporting enemies of Athens. Samian oligarchs, with the help of Pissuthnes, satrap of Sardis, made themselves masters of the island (440 or 439), and estranged it from Athens. The Athenians feared that a Phcenician fleet might come to the help of the oligarchs, but not a Persian interfered when they reduced the island once more to subjection. About 430 Colophon was made over to Itamenes (no doubt a Persian general or governor) and the barbarians by a party among the inhabitants favourable to Persia, and thereupon Notium,! a dependency of Colophon, was also occupied by the royalists, for thither also Pissuthnes despatched Persian troops, who entrenched themselves in the town. Amongst these troops were Arcadian mercenaries. This is the first undoubted mention of Greek mercenaries in Persian pay; henceforward they play a very great part in the history of the empire. The Persian rulers had observed how far superior the Greeks were to the Asiatics, and in Greece there were always plenty of stout fellows who were impelled by political events, the love of adventure, or poverty to enter foreign service as soldiers of fortune. Most of them came from the Peloponnesus, presumably from the mountains of Arcadia, which yielded but a scanty sub- sistence to its inhabitants. The Athenian party in Notium ealled in the Athenian admiral Paches; by shameful per- fidy he made himself master of the entrenchments, and put the garrison to the sword. With Notium, Colophon was now once more a member of the Athenian league. No further consequences followed from these hostilities.

During the early years of the Peloponnesian War. the Spartans repeatedly held communications with the Persians, whose assistance they desired against Athens. These negotiations were, for the time being, without result. The Spartan diplomatists were unskilful, and the Persian authorities were cowardly, indolent, ignorant, and selfish.? The impecunious Peloponnesians wished above all for Persian gold, and, moreover, for the Phoenician war-ships. The Athenians also tried to tap the inexhaustible source of wealth for their own benefit, but of course in vain.®

Of the internal state of the empire during the long reign of Artaxerxes I. we know very little. Ctesias, or rather the extract of him made, not always carefully, by Photius, tells us indeed various stories, but he jumbles together fact and fiction, history and anecdote. Of most importance is the quarrel of Megabyzus, conqueror of Egypt, with the Persian court; he maintained a rebellion for several years in Syria, till at last, after several conflicts, a full pardon was assured him by treaty. It is not im- probable that this war was the occasion of the destruction of the walls and gates of Jerusalem lamented by Nehemiah (in the year 445). According to Ctesias, Megabyzus after- wards fell into disgrace again, but was again taken into favour. In all these complications an important part is played by those cruel, intriguing, dissolute women, the queen-mother Amestris, daughter of Otanes, of whose character we get a very unpleasing view from Herodotus (vii. 114; ix. 109 sg.), and her daughter Amytis, wife of Megabyzus. Even without an exact knowledge of the circumstances, we can well understand how it was that Zopyrus, son of Megabyzus, came to take refuge in Athens.

1 In addition to purely political opposition, the local jealousy be- tween Notium and its “superior town” Colophon had its share in the matter. See Aristot., Pol., p. 13803 b.

freee Thuc., ii. 673 iii. 31; iv. 50.

3 Aristophanes, in the Acharnians (represented January B.C.)

ridicules these long and fruitless negotiations of the Greeks with the Persian king.

But we know nothing

Pimms I A

575

to capture Caunus (in Caria), which had revolted. His 445-410,

grandmother Amestris got the Carian who had killed him into her power and had him crucified.

From Nehemiah’s memoirs we see that in those days one who was not a Persian might not only fill the tolerably high office of cupbearer ¢ in the royal household, but might also become deputy-governor over his fellow-countrymen.

The history of Ctesias, untrustworthy as it is in par- ticulars, shows us the manner of life at court. Artaxerxes I. was a very weak man, and women and favourites took the government out of his hands, Still, he may have deserved the praise, often bestowed on him, of good-nature. He may also have been of stately presence ; as an Iranian chief he was doubtless an excellent huntsman®; but his “incredibilis virtus belli” (Nepos, De regibus, 1) is precisely “incredibilis.” In reading the eulogies of Persian kings we must always remember that the ultimate sources of writers like Ctesias and Dinon are court news, wherein even the deceased kings are spoken of in a courtly tone.

Artaxerxes died in 424. His successor, Xerxes II., the Xerxes

only one of his eighteen sons who was legitimate,® was H. murdered after a month anda half by his brother Secy- dianus or Sogdianus. But after six and a half months’ the murderer was in his turn overthrown by his brother Ochus, satrap of Hyrcania, and, in violation of solemn oaths, put to death. Ochus assumed the name of Darius, ascending the throne about the beginning of the year 423.9

Darius II. is called Nothus or Syrus,!© because his mother Darius From the first mention of I.

was a Babylonian concubine. him by Ctesias his wife and sister Parysatis appears as the prompter of all his acts and all his crimes; and this mis- chievous woman possessed the greatest influence for many years. The king’s full brother Arsites, in conjunction with another son of Megabyzus, Artyphius, raised the standard of revolt, probably in Syria. But his Greek soldiers were bribed, and thus he fell into the hands of the royalists, and, in violation of the oath, was put to death at the instigation of Parysatis. The same fate befell some of those who had taken part in the murder of Xerxes II. Darius had presumably come forward from the beginning as his avenger. Soon after 410 the great revolt of the Egyptians was successfully

accomplished. The first independent king was called Amyrteeus, and was presumably a grandson or other relative of the former Amyrteus. The deep decay of the Persian military power is proved by the fact that for sixty years it failed to reduce the unwarlike Egyptians, though the latter were frequently divided amongst themselves by internal dissension and double rulers.

The above-mentioned Pissuthnes, satrap of Sardis, had also revolted. Tissaphernes, who here appears for the first time, put down the rebellion by the usual means of bribery and perjury; the Athenian Lycon, leader of Pissuthnes's Greek mercenaries, plays a far from honourable part in the affair. The events fall after 424, and at least some years before 412. But Pissuthnes's son Amorges continued

4 Cp, Herod., iii. 34, and Nicol. Damasc. (i.e, Ctesias), 64.

5 Cp. the anecdote of Ctesias in Photius about his lion hunt.

6 This probably means that the wife who bore him was of a noble Persian family. ;

7 No reliance is to be placed on these numbers in Ctesias. Others assign to the two monarchs two and seven months respectively. In any case they did not together reign a full year, since the astronomical canon ignores them.

8 Cp. also Pausanias, vi. 5, 3, where probably we should read 2éy- doy with Bekker.

9 The beginning of 411 falls, according to the document in Thue., viii. 58, in his thirteenth year; this is probably a reckoning which begins the year with the spring, and accordingly reckons his first year (or rather the year in which he came to the throne) from the spring of 424 to 423. The astronomical canon begins the year of his accession with 7th December 424.

10 Hypothesis of Alschyl., Pers., and schol. on v. 6.

410-401. the revolt in Caria, and was supported therein by the Athenians, perhaps because they already knew for certain that Tissaphernes was preparing to help the Spartans.1

Relations When the power of Athens seemed annihilated by the

with dreadful catastrophe in Sicily, the Persians expected to

BEHEuE: regain the whole sea-coast. Tissaphernes, satrap of Sardis, and. his rival Pharnabazus, satrap of Hellespontine Phrygia, vied with each other in invoking the help of the Spartans. The party hostile to Athens in the cities of the mainland and in the islands displayed great zeal in bringing about the alliance. Moreover, the no less able than infamous Alcibiades strained every nerve to secure so favourable an opportunity of distinguishing himself personally and injuring his native city. Not without reluctance the Spartans resolved on a decisive step. They might have known beforehand that they would only receive real sup- port from the Persians on condition of surrendering to them a great portion of the Greek cities which had once been freed by Athens, though now mostly hostile to her. They chose to attach themselves to the more powerful but, as it soon appeared, wholly untrustworthy Tissaphernes rather than to Pharnabazus. Of course the confederates did the Athenians much damage, and wrested from them a great part of their domain. The Lacedsemonians actually

completely won his affection, all the money he wanted, and when after Lysander’s temporary recall the relations with Sparta were disturbed, because the noble Callicratidas did not care to play the courtier to the barbarians, the return of Lysander sufficed to put everything on its former footing. When Cyrus was summoned to the bedside of Darius (either really ill or pretending to be so), he left his Spartan friend the most abundant resources and the fullest authority. With this help Lysander succeeded in at last compelling Athens, now completely isolated, to accept the melancholy peace of March 404.: Even after all the mis- fortunes of Athens it was only Persian gold which enabled the Spartans to humble her.

According to Ctesias, Terituchmes revolted against King Darius, caused his wife Amestris, daughter of the king and Parysatis, to be put to death, but was himself slain by treachery. This event, garnished in the usual manner

with a full measure of perfidy and cruelty, is perhaps to be connected with the unsuccessful revolt of the Medes mentioned by Xenophon (/fedl., i. 2, 19) under the year 410/409. In the fall of Terituchmes his sister Statira, wife of the king's eldest son Arsicas,? was nearly involved ; thenceforward the bitterest hatred subsisted between Pary- satis and her daughter-in-law Statira.

served the satrap as catchpolls against Amorges, who About the time of the conclusion of peace between Arta resided in Jassus near Miletus, and so he could be taken | Athens and Sparta Darius II. died. Arsicas ascended xeries captive and carried alive to the king. But the Athenians | the throne under the name of Artaxerxes (II). The sur- _ still exhibited astonishing endurance and resource. It is | name '"Mnemon" (the mindful) seems again to have been

true that neither of the confederates meant honestly by | first mentioned by Dinon.t The younger and much abler

the other. Whether from avarice or mere whim, Tissa- | son Cyrus, preferred by Parysatis, came with 300 Greek Cyms,

phernes supplied the Peloponnesians in insufficient measure | mercenaries, no doubt to seize the throne, but he was too . satrap,

with money and stores, and without these they were not | late. Tissaphernes, professedly the friend of Cyrus,

in a position to wage war in Asia. The intrigues of Alci- biades contributed to sow mistrust and confusion. The Spartan leaders repeatedly concluded treaties with the satrap, but they were not ratified. At last it was agreed that the whole mainland of Asia, and therefore all the Greek cities there, should belong to the king, but that in return for this the Persians should give the Spartans effective help. If Tissaphernes had rapidly and energetic- ally carried out the terms of this treaty, the war might perhaps have been ended quickly enough. But to keep faith was contrary to the nature of the man. Moreover, he had probably promised more than he could perform: to bring up the great Phcenician fleet was not quite in his power. The Pheenicians themselves, and perhaps high Persian lords also, had certainly little desire to

engage again the Attic galleys which had handled them so roughly at the Eurymedon and at Cyprus. Pharnabazus supported the Spartans much more honourably and effectively. This he showed especially when the Athenians were again mak- ing steady progress (410) under the leadership of Alcibiades after his return. The Athenians now devastated the king's territory in various places, and Pharnabazus had at length to engage to forward Athenian envoys to the king for the purpose of conducting negotiations for a peace (409) at the court itself. But events now took a decisive turn. Cyrus, the king's son, was made satrap of Lydia, Great Phrygia, and Cappadocia, and commander- in-chief of all the troops in Asia Minor, Tissaphernes retaining only the coast-cities (408). Cyrus possessed burn- ing ambition, and longed to avenge the defeats which his house had experienced at the hands of the Athenians. Hence he sought to unite himself closely with the Spartans. J ust at this time the command fell to the cunning, ener- getic, and unscrupulous Lysander. These two men were the ruin of Athens. Cyrus granted Lysander, who had

1 On the other hand, Andocides (De pace, p. 27), twenty years later,

it is true, Tepresents the support given to Amorges rather as the cause of the king's enmity to the Athenians,

warned the king against him, and with good reason. Cyrus was arrested, but at the instance of Parysatis he was released and sent back to his satrapy,—a very unwise measure, for his ambition was only inflamed by his imprisonment and by his exasperation against Tissaphernes.

Meantime Lysander lorded it over the Greeks, He even possessed sufficient influence to induce Pharnabazus, who in other respects was remarkably respectable > for a satrap, to violate the law of hospitality by causing Alcibiades to be put to death. But even the patience of Pharnabazus was at last worn out by Lysander; he urgently demanded the recall of the latter, and the Spartans, who had allowed the atrocities of Lysander towards the Greeks to pass unnoticed, respected the satrap's demand, and re- called their admiral (402 or 401).

No sooner was Cyrus in his satrapy again than he began to make great encroachments. He gained over the Ionian cities which belonged to the

province of Tissaphernes and laid siege to Miletus, which adhered to Tissaphernes. On Orontes, a partisan of the latter, he made open war. Mean-time he collected under false pretexts an army of Greek mercenaries, and in 401 set out with the real purpose of seizing the throne. He had with him nearly 13,000 Greek mercenaries commanded by Clearchus, a Spartan exile, and a vast host of Asiatics. But Tissaphernes hastened into the interior before him to carry the tidings. Of this expedition we have the well-known account by Xenophon, who took part in it.6 The Spartans favoured

- Arsikas is the form in Ctesias ; Plut., Art., 1. From this Photius has wrongly made Arsakes. Dinon called him Oarses. ‘The initial sound was perhaps w.

3 At the very beginning of the new reign Ctesias has again some dreadful stories of murder and intrigue to tell. As court physician of Parysatis he had seen only too much of such things, which are charac- teristic of the Persian court.

4 See Plut., dc.

5 But the worth of his character has been often over-estimated ; the contrast with the baseness of Tissaphernes is apt to place Pharnabazus in too favourable a light.

§ Good supplementary information is given by Diodorus, who has

EMPIRE. |

the enterprise of their friend, but without openly breaking with the king. Cyrus advanced boldly, confident in the military superiority of the Greeks ; but he had some trouble in carrying them with him as far as Syria and Babylonia, for they were not engaged for so distant a goal. He made his way without difficulty into the heart of the empire. Neither the passes of the Taurus leading from Cappadocia into Cilicia nor those of the Amanus from Cilicia into Syria were blocked. The vassal-prince of Cilicia, Syennesis, put a good face on a bad business and let him through. Even the line of defence between Babylonia and the Mesopota- mian desert was unoccupied. At Cunaxa, 500 stadia from Babylon,! they came upon the mighty royalist

army. The Greeks carried everything before them; the king proved a miserable coward and fled. But, in fighting the Asiatic rabble, Clearchus seems to have adhered too pedantically to the cautious Spartan tactics, and not to have dashed with sufficient rapidity at the enemy's centre. Cyrus, however, rushed foolhardily into the mélée and there fell.

Even if we deduct much from Xenophon's idealistic portrait, we must still admit that Cyrus was a very able and in many respects honourable man, far worthier of the throne than his brother. From his grim mother he probably inherited his spirit and energy. Certainly none of the kings after Darius I. can be compared with him, except perhaps Artaxerxes III. But for Greece, as Grote shows, it was very fortunate that at that time the kingdom of Persia did not fall to a man whose most ardent endeavour it would have been to bring the Greeks into subjugation to himself, and who had learned in the school of Lysander and elsewhere the best means of accomplishing that object.

Cyrus's Greeks were an object of terror to the king's troops. All the deception and crimes employed against them had their source in cowardice. The king's hosts were reinforced by the army of Cyrus, which after their leader's fall passed over to the enemy; but all these Asiatics trembled before the dauntless Greek mercenaries, comparatively few in number as they were and strangers to the country. It is characteristic of the state of the empire that Tissaphernes allowed the Greeks to plunder the villages which were the special property of Parysatis ; he probably thought that with the death of her favourite son her power was broken, while he himself had succeeded in appearing as the deliverer of the empire. After elect- ing fresh leaders in place of those who were foully assas- sinated, the "ten thousand" made themselves a way through wild mountains and wild peoples; they had to endure a thousand dangers and hardships, but from the king's forces they experienced no serious hindrance.

This expedition revealed to the Greeks the weakness of the empire and the cowardice of its rulers and defenders. – Cyrus had penetrated to its centre without striking a blow, and an army of ordinary Greek mercenaries proved itself more than a match for the power of the whole empire. It was perceived howhelpless the colossus was ; it was perceived that great

territories, which had been regarded as royal provinces, were completely independent.? Independent at that time were the predatory Mysians (in Olympus), Pisidians, and Lycaonians ;? the Lycians (entirely?) and the Bithynians and Paphlagonians half and half,—the last two peoples had kings of their own; further, the Greek

SE eee a a ae indirectly made use of the narrative of another writer who shared in the expedition.

1 So says Ctesias, who knew the country. Xenophon says 360 stadia. These figures are equal to nearly 58 and 42 English miles respectively,—-about 93 and 67 kilometres.

2 On the effect produced by the expedition, see Xenophon, Feil., vi. 1, 12; Isocrates, passim.

3 At least in part ; such mountain peoples did not, of course, form integral wholes, and, if one tribe was independent, another may have obeyed the satrap.

cities on the Euxine ; finally, the Carduchi and other wild peoples in the south and north-west of Armenia.

The death of Cyrus widened the breach between Parysatis and Statira. The former could not forget her darling, and succeeded in bringing to a cruel end one after another all who had participated in his death. Statira was exultant ; but she was eventually poisoned by her mother-in-law. Artaxerxes was indignant at this deed and banished Pary- satis for ever from his sight ; but he could not live without the firm guidance of his mother, and soon recalled her.

Tissaphernes succeeded to all the privileges of the post which Cyrus had occupied. This could not but hasten the inevitable conflict with Sparta, which now, at the height of her power, could not bring herself to fulfil the

treaty and resign to the Persians all the Greek cities of Asia Minor. The Greeks expected to be protected by Sparta against Tissaphernes, who was already enforcing his rights with the strong arm, and the war which the Spartans began in 401 against the Persians in Asia Minor was no doubt popular, but as a land-power with limited resources they were not in a position to conduct much more than a purely predatory war. The state of lonia and Aolis must have changed very much for the worse since the termination of the Attic supremacy, and the Asiatic Greeks were now perhaps for the most part unworthy of the blood that ran in streams on their behalf. Tissaphernes and Phar- nabazus sought each to shift upon the other the burden of the war, the conduct of which was not essentially altered when the command of the Spartans devolved on Agesilaus (396), who strove in vain to give the struggle the prestige of a Pan-hellenic enterprise. But, when Agesi- laus had gained a great victory close to Sardis, Tissaphernes, who had meantime, more from cowardice than treachery, remained inactive in Sardis, was quietly displaced by a successor in the person of Tithraustes, who succeeded in seizing and executing him.* The real cause of his fall was the hatred of Parysatis. The game of treaties, which neither side meant to keep, and the efforts of the one satrap to thrust the Spartans upon the other, began afresh. In course of time Agesilaus certainly gained ground rapidly. But his successes were in part much exaggerated even by contemporaries.» On the whole, they were predatory ex- peditions on a large scale, which showed with ever greater clearness the weakness of the empire, but did not directly affect its stability. Even after his great victory, Agesilaus did not venture to attack Sardis—a striking contrast to the speed and thoroughness with which Alexander took possession of these lands. In 394 Agesilaus was recalled, for Sparta needed him in Europe more than in Asia ; the intolerable nature of the Spartan supremacy had done more than Persian gold to rouse even the proved allies of Sparta, such as the Thebans and Corinthians, into leaguing them- selves with Athens in revolt. When Agesilaus reached the frontier of Boeotia he heard the dreadful tidings of Cnidus.

After the decisive defeat at A°gospotami the admiral of the Athenian fleet, Conon, had fled to Evagoras, prince of Salamis in Cyprus. Evagoras, a tyrant of the “grand” type like Pisistratus or Gelo, favoured Conon’s efforts to enter into relations with the Persian king with a view to raise Athens

from her fall. When the war between Persia and Sparta broke out, Pharnabazus had made it clear to the court that it was absolutely necessary to raise a fleet, and that no better commander could be found for it than the tried sailor-hero of Athens. Under the leadership of such a man the Persians actually dared to send Phoenician ships once more into those Greek waters which they had long anxiously avoided. But Conon's successes, such espect-

ally as the revolt of Rhodes from Sparta (probably in 396),

4 See Diod., xiv. 80; Plut., Art., 23; Polysnus, vii. 16, 1. 5 Tsocrates, Paneg., 70. XVIII. — 73

401-394.

War with Sparta.

394-376.

Peace of Antal- cidas,

were crippled by the miserable Oriental administration, e.g., the tardiness in paying the men. Hereupon Conon went himself to the king at Babylon, obtained a grant of the necessary money and powers and the king's consent to bestow the nominal command of the fleet upon the trust- worthy Pharnabazus. Then at the head of the Persian fleet the Athenian admiral utterly defeated the Spartans at Cnidus (beginning of August 394). In a short time nearly all the islands and cities on the Asiatic coast were freed from the Spartan prefects (" harmosts"), and Conon carried his point of nowhere occupying the citadels with Persian garrisons. The Spartan sovereignty of the seas, after lasting ten years, was over for ever. Pharnabazus sailed to the Peloponnesus (393), and at Corinth was joy- fully greeted by the Greeks gathered for the war with Sparta. He supplied them liberally with money and then returned home, while Conon restored the marine fortifi- cations of Athens. Thus as a matter of fact a Persian fleet now ruled the Archipelago, but it was a menace and danger to Greek

freedom no more. It was only with Greek help, under the leadership of a man like Conon, that the king's ships could still achieve much.

As the land-war in Greece dragged on for a long time, the Spartans had again recourse to diplomacy. The new satrap in Sardis, Tiribazus, who in some measure revived the vacillating policy of Tissaphernes, met their advances. He overthrew Conon, who escaped death at his hands only with extreme difficulty and fled to Evagoras, at whose court he must have died soon afterwards! But Tiribazus soon received in the person of Struthas a successor more favourably disposed to Athens. Many conflicts of Greeks against Greeks still took place by land and sea, but all the belligerents were exhausted, at least financially. So, when the Spartans at last succeeded through their ambassador Antalcidas and through Tiribazus in bringing about a peace, all the more important states of Greece found themselves obliged to accede to it, however unwillingly. This is the notorious peace of Antalcidas, which Tiribazus laid before the delegates of the Greeks at Sardis or Ephesus in 387. It is not a mutual compact but a simple edict of the king. It sets forth that in the king's opinion all cities of the Asiatic mainland, as well as the islands of Clazomenz and Cyprus,'ought to belong to him; that, on the other hand, all other Greek states, even the petty ones, ought to be independent, with the single exception of Lemnos, Imbros, and Scyros, which should continue as of old to belong to Athens. If any one refused to accept this decision, upon him the king and his allies (particularly the Spartans) would wage war with all their power.

It is hardly likely that the true import of this document was understood at the Persian court. That the great king should issue a simple order was there regarded as a inatter of course, but the Persian statesmen, who really knew the state of affairs, may have had trouble in securing the acknowledgment of the freedom of the islands. By this peace the Spartans personally gained a great success ; for they gave up nothing which they still possessed, while by the declaration of the independence of even the pettiest communities they secured this advantage, that the cities which had hitherto ruled over wider areas were restricted to their own special domain, that, eg., Thebes, hitherto head of Beeotia, now remained only one of many independ- ent Boeotian cities. Thus Greece was split up into a thou- sand petty communities, which Sparta, who did not dream of extending the

independence to her own subjects, could with ease dominate collectively. Through this peace the Spartans gained for about sixteen years a much greater EEE ee

1 This follows, in opposition to other statements, from Lysias, Pro

bonis Aristoph., p. 155 ; ep. Isoer., Paneg., 78, and Dinon in Nepos's Conon, at the end,

possessed before, and they ruthlessly turned it to account, Athens, slowly regaining her strength, was appeased by the three' islands, but nowhere was '"' the peace sent down by the king" felt to be a disgrace more keenly than at Athens. In that peace the king issued orders to the Greeks as to his subjects, and the express and definitive surrender of all the Greeks on the Asiatic coasts was felt all the more bitterly in the intellectual capital of Greece : because there was no prospect of ever again freeing them |

power over the Greek mainland than they had ever | | t

as in the days of Xanthippus and Cimon. And yet it was known that the Persian empire was now much weaker than it had been then, and that it was only maintained by Greek mercenaries.? The real gain to Persia by the | peace was a firm hold on the sea-coast. The domineering } attitude towards the other Greeks was a mere appearance, ' In the following decades the king repeatedly commanded peace, even after Thebes had completely broken the power of Sparta (371). The powers for the time being employed | Persian intervention as a means to their own ends, and

there were plenty of diplomatic negotiations with the king,

but Persia had no advantage from them. Moreover, now one, now another Greek state supported rebel satraps and vassals. They all, the king as well as the rebels, procured mercenaries from Greece.?

Meantime another enemy had arisen to the Persian Eva. supremacy in the west—an enemy who, if Athens, hig goms. friend and sympathizer, had at that time been once more a great naval power with an aggressive policy, might perhaps have excluded the Persians from all the western seas.

Evagoras of Salamis had made himself the almost independent lord of Cyprus, relying on the ancestral an- tagonism of the Greek to the Phcenician element in the island. As early as 390 forces were levied against him. Athens, under obligations to him on Conon's account, sup- ported him openly, although she was at that time still formally leagued with the Persians against Sparta. After the peace of Antalcidas Persia made great efforts to reduce Evagoras again to subjection. He was in league with Egypt, scoured the seas far and wide, and had even for some time maintained a siege of Tyre. The cunning Cypriot also kept up a secret correspondence with the vassal princes of Caria. After a ten years' struggle he had ; to yield to superior force, but by skilful negotiation with the satraps he was able to procure a tolerable peace. Soon |

: :

afterwards he was murdered, but his descendants long con- tinued to be princes of different towns in Cyprus.

About this time probably the expedition of Artaxerxes Cadusian against the Cadusians took place, of which Plutarch, after expet Dinon, has given us a detailed account.4 The Cadusians "°™ are the inhabitants of the modern Gildan, who were prob- ably never completely subdued, and who certainly by their raids inflicted much annoyance on the neighbouring terri- tory of the king. Darius IT. had taken the field against them shortly before his death,® and the repeated mention ; in the fragments of Ctesias of the Cadusians at the time of the Median empire is presumably a reflex of the state of things in his own day. Artaxerxes's campaign turned out disastrously. The king probably thought to crush the wild mountain tribes—who, however, are only to be caught by . small and skilfully led armies—by masses of troops; but

he fell into an ambush, from which he was only saved by

2 Compare many passages in the orators and Plato. Especially interesting is the passage in Isocr., Hist. ad Archid., p. 436, on the wild doings of the Greek mercenaries, who were specially burdensome to the Greek cities under Persian rule.

3 We are told that the king desired the internal peace of Greece, because he hoped thereby to procure mercenaries all the more easily from that country (Diod., xv. 38).

4 Artax., 24; ep. Diod., xv. 8, 10.

5 Xenophon, Hell., ii. 1, 13.

] ptian

EMPIRE. |

the negotiations which Tiribazus astutely opened with the rebel chieftains. No doubt he had to pay a large sum for his liberation.

Meanwhile the war with Egypt was never quite ata standstill. Even before the subjugation of Evagoras much fighting took place, but without result. Our knowledge of the particulars, even of the chronology, is very inexact. After the conquest of Cyprus the war was renewed. The Egyptian king invited the Athenian Chabrias to take the command, but Pharnabazus contrived that the Athenians should recall him (376/375). Pharnabazus, who by this time must have been about seventy years old, was placed at the head of the army which was being mustered at Accho on the Phcenician coast. The Athenian mercenaries were commanded by Iphicrates, who had been sent from Athens. The campaign opened successfully, but dissen- sions arose between Iphicrates and Pharnabazus, whose proceedings were much too slow to suit the dashing free- lance, for Pharnabazus had to report everything to court and to ask instructions from the same quarter. This, along with other circumstances, saved Egypt once more (374). There is the old story, too, of the difficulties of the wars of this period—a mutiny amongst the mercenaries for arrears of pay. The third of the great Athenian condottieri, Timotheus, son of Conon, who fought in the king's service against Egypt in 372, seems also to have been unable to effect anything.

The last part of the reign of Artaxerxes IT. is filled with revolts of the satraps and chiefs of Asia Minor, of which we have numerous but mostly isolated and, to a large extent, inexact accounts, It is impossible to deter- mine the connexion of events. We do not even know in all cases whether

the same names designate the same persons; and we are nowhere exactly informed of the motives which induced the individuals to revolt. It is the more difficult to form a judgment on the events because sometimes: the same persons side now with, now against the king. These revolts, which lasted in part into the reign of Artaxerxes JII., must have weakened immensely the imperial power in the western provinces, and prepared the way for the Macedonians. Rich Greek cities and energetic tyrants probably won for themselves at that time a tolerably independent position. At the head of those who remained faithful to the king we find Autophradates, satrap of Lydia. He fought the rebels repeatedly. Never- theless Diodorus (xv. 90) names him among the rebels ; and it is, after all, possible that there is here no confusion, but that Autophradates was also a rebel for atime. If we omit some smaller risings, such as that of Tachos, who established himself in a fortress on the Jonian coast (after 380), the series begins with Ariobarzanes, successor of Pharnabazus in the Hellespontine satrapy, and no doubt a near relative. Before the beginning of the revolt (about 367) he had formed connexions with Sparta and with Athens, which again stood at the head of a naval confederacy, and he was supported, at least indirectly, by both states. Accordingly, by the diplomatic intervention of Sparta, Autophradates and Mausolus of Caria were in- duced to raise the siege of Assus (in the Troad), into which Ariobarzanes had thrown himself. The satrap fell by the treachery of his own son Mithradates into the hands of the royalists and was crucified (probably about 365).

Mausolus (or rather, according to the inscriptions and coins, Maussollos, MavaowA dos), a native hereditary prince of part of Caria (probably 375-3512), had extended his

1 Xen., Cyrop., viii. 8,4 ; Aristot., Pol.,1812a ; Harpocration, s.v. “ApwoBaptdvys. He is to be distinguished from Ariobarzanes (about 362-337), ancestor of the kings of Pontus, who, however, seems to have belonged to the same house, and was probably heir to a district on the Propontis. 2 See Pliny, xxxvi. 30, 47.

power tolerably far. the title of satraps, were in point of fact but little depend- ent on Persia, and were watched by the Persians with great mistrust. In their cunning and in the sagacity with which they profited by circumstances they recall the Mace- donian , kings of that period, whom they also resemble in their patronage—often perhaps ostentatious—of Greek art and manners. Mausolus appears to have once been in open conflict with his suzerain; but, though nothing de- finite is known on the subject, there is no doubt that he came off without serious harm.

Datames, satrap of Cappadocia, of Carian race, had ren- dered many good services ; in particular he had reduced the nearly independent Paphlagonians once more to sub- jection to the great king. But at last he also revolted in league with Ariobarzanes. He was a man of great shrewd- ness and versatility, whose stratagems and adventures af- forded much entertainment even to later generations. He long kept the king’s troops in check, till he was at last treacherously murdered by Mithradates, son of Ariobar- zanes,—the same Mithradates probably whom we found above betraying his father.

The command of the rebel forces was entrusted to Orontes, satrap of Mysia.4 From the confused accounts it is unfortunately impossible to determine whether he is identical with one or other of the persons of that name who are elsewhere mentioned. Further, we have no clear conception of the position which he occupied in the revolt, nor of the way in which he came to betray his comrades. We read, moreover, of the treachery of a less conspicuous confederate. The rebels had despatched Rheomithres to Tachos, king of Egypt, who sent them fifty war-ships and much money. Rheomithres summoned the commanders to a rocky fortress on the northern coast of Ionia, bound them, and delivered them up to the king.

In the year 361 Tachos actually assumed the offensive Tachos On his side he had once more of Egypt.

against the Persians. Chabrias as leader of mercenaries, and the aged Agesilaus, officially sent by the Spartans, who were bitterly enraged at the Persians because they had now, after the destruc- tion of the Spartan power by Epaminondas, recognized the independence of Messenia, though in doing so they only carried out the letter of the peace of Antalcidas. But,

when Tachos was engaged in Pheenicia, his nephew Nectanebus set himself up as rival king, and Tachos was obliged to take refuge with the Persians. If the Persians had been still energetic they would have used the oppor- tunity, when the legitimate king of Egypt had fled to them and two claimants were struggling for the throne, to subjugate the country. But they did nothing of the kind, even when Chabrias had returned to Athens and Agesilaus had died on the way home (probably 360).

At the instigation of Parysatis Artaxerxes had mar- Intrigues She used her interest of Ochus.

ried his own daughter Atossa. to secure the succession for the energetic and violent Ochus, who is said to have promised to marry her; the Persian religion approved marriage not only with a sister but also with a daughter, and even with a mother. The elder son Darius was already invested with the succession and the royal title, but having engaged in a conspiracy against his father he was tried and executed, and Ochus, it is said, found means of getting rid of his other brothers, who stood in his way. Soon afterwards the aged Arta- xerxes died after a reign of forty-six years (in the course of the year 358). Many stories are told of his mildness 3 The Greek cities on the southern coast of the Euxine, which Xenophon about 400 found quite free, were again subjugated at this time. Datames comed money in Sinope, as did also his (probably indirect) successor Ariarathes.

4 Diod., xv. 91. Mysia is not otherwise known as a satrapy proper. But at any rate Asia Minor was the scene of his exploits.

These Carian potentates, who bore 376-358.

358-344. and affability, but, even if they are true, they have little significance. The contempt for his brother which Cyrus exhibited was perfectly justified; under the effeminate king the empire gradually fell to pieces.

But his successor, Ochus, who took the title of Artaxerxes (IIL), was of a different stamp. True, it is not perfectly certain that the great restoration of

the empire is to be ascribed to his personal influence; it may be that the whole merit belongs to some of his officials, and that he only lent it his name, but it is much more probable that the initiative was his. He was, it appears, one of those great despots who can raise up again for a time a decayed Oriental empire, who shed blood without scruple and are not nice in the choice of means, but who in the actual position of affairs do usually contribute to the welfare of the state asa whole. At the very beginning of his reign he secured himself on the throne by a massacre of his nearest relatives, though no doubt the statement of Curtius (x. 5, 23) is exaggerated! The judgment of the Greek writers on Artaxerxes III. was too much influenced by such deeds as found an historian in Dinon, as well as by the hatred of the Egyptians, whom he humbled and mortally offended ; hence it was one-sided and unjustly unfavourable.

But for a while the empire was in a state of absolute dis- solution. Artabazus, satrap of the Hellespontine Phrygia, very probably a son of Pharnabazus and immediate suc- cessor of Ariobarzanes, had fought against Autophradates as early as 865 and been taken prisoner by him. At that time the Athenians had acted against him openly enough, at least towards the end.? But it is not clear how far Artabazus then rebelled against the king, who was father to his mother, Apama. But at the time of the so-called Social War (about 355) he fought against the king's sa- traps and was powerfully supported by the Athenians. Chares won for him a great victory over Tithraustes. And, when, at the king's threats, Athens left him in the lurch, he was able, being well furnished with money, to procure the services of the Theban Pammenes, and main- tained himself for a long time. The turn in his fortune seems to have come from the Thebans also entering into an understanding with the king. About 350 we find Arta- bazus a fugitive at the court of Philip of Macedonia, and with him his brother-in-law, the Rhodian Memnon. How- ever, after the subjugation of Egypt, Memnon's brother Mentor, who, like Memnon, was one of the most distin- guished generals of his time, succeeded in procuring pardon for both, and thenceforward Artabazus remained loyal down to the overthrow of the empire.

Revolt of _ The revolt of Orontes (or Orontas) fell somewhat later. Orontes. Probably he is the same whom we found above betraying his comrades. He

may very well have received the rule over a wide coast district 3 as the price of his treachery (see Diod., xv. 92). He is mentioned in 354 by Demosthenes

1 More distant relatives were left alive, as he who was afterwards Darius II. and his brother, Oxyathres. A son of the Darius who was executed appears in Arrian, i. 16, 3 (834 B.c.). Thus the king did not extirpate even the branch that was most dangerous to him. It is to be remembered that even Alexander the Great, after ascending the throne, put several near relatives out of the way.

? Owing to the inconstant nature of the foreign policy of Athens at that time —a policy too often influenced by the personal interests of the great captains of mercenaries—as well as to the shifting atti- tude of the satraps, it is impossible for us to form a clear conception of these events from the isolated statements of contemporaries (like Demosthenes and Aineas Tacticus) and later writers. It is to be observed that in these decades violent revolutions took place in some Greek cities under Persian supremacy, and that they even made war on each other. With the restless character of the Greeks such things were not to be averted unless each town was occupied by a Persian garrison, which was certainly not the case.

3 There are coins ascribed to Lampsacus and to Clazomenz bearing the name of an Orontes,

Arta- xerxes WG

Defec- tion of Arta- bazus.

PERSIA

[MEDO-PERSIAN

(De symmoriis, 186) as an enemy of the king. In 349/348 the Athenians formed an alliance with him. From the fragmentary inscription in which this is recorded it does not follow with certainty that at that time he was still in rebellion, About his end we know nothing, but perhaps he was removed after the restoration of Artabazus.

That from the outset Artaxerxes ITI. was believed to be a person of greater activity than his father may perhaps be inferred from the rumour current in 354/353 that the king was preparing a great expedition against Athens and Greece. Many Greek states may certainly have had a guilty conscience towards the king on account of their wavering policy and the purely mercenary support which they had repeatedly lent to rebellious satraps. Demosthenes warned the Athenians against taking up a hostile attitude to the king on the ground of mere rumours.

The war in Egypt still went on. And now the cities of Phe. Pheenicia, previously so trustworthy, also revolted, and so Bieia did the kings of Cyprus. Even in Judea there must have SY tet. been an insurrectionary movement. The revolted Sidonians showed such exasperation that we can hardly avoid the supposition that Persian rulers had wounded their religious feelings,—the sensitive side of Semitic peoples. The satraps Mazzeus (Mazdai) of Cilicia and Belesys of Syria were driven back by Mentor, whom Nectanebus, king of Egypt, had sent to the help of Tennes, king of Sidon. But, when } the great king himself took the field at the head of a | powerful army, which included 10,000 Greek mercenaries,® Tennes and Mentor made terms. Sidon surrendered — though probably only after a severe siege—and was fear- fully punished. More than 400,000 men are said to have burned themselves in Sidon on this occasion. The fate of the first-born of Canaan quickly brought the rest of the Pheenicians to their knees. At this time much blood was shed in Judzea also, though we have only scattered notices of the fact.© Mentor now went over to the king’s side and fought against his former employers. It was to him and not to the Persian eunuch Bagoas that the king chiefly owed his success; but undoubtedly the royal presence contributed much to the result by facilitating rapid deci- Egypt sions and preventing dangerous jars. Mentor succeeded © H in everywhere sowing dissension between the Greek mer- 4″ cenaries of the Egyptian king and the Persians; and even more by intimidation than by the sword Egypt was, after long independence, again made a Persian province (344).7 Artaxerxes seems to have made the “‘vee victis” thoroughly clear to the Egyptians, and to have treated even their religion with little more respect than Cambyses before 4 him: temples were desecrated and sacred animals slaugh- tered. For a time the Egyptians had to satisfy their rage with nicknaming the king, after the unclean Typhonian

beast, “Sass.” Cyprus, too, was again reduced. The en- Cypms terprise was conducted by the prince of Caria, Idricus, ue The Greek mercenaries were led by the well-known

4 In the speech De symmoriis. Similarly in the speech De Rhodiorum | libertate (191 sq.) he advises the Athenians not to offend the king frivolously (351 B.c.).

®> Through Diodorus and some statements of others we possess by exception fairly good information about these struggles. :

6 Josephus, Arch., xi. 7, 1; by Eusebius’s canon 1657 from Abr., and his copiers ; Solinus, xxxv.4. The king at that time settled a num- ber of Jews in Hyrcania. Judza was forcibly pacified, perhaps by Orophernes (or Olophernes), brother of the then satrap of Cappadocia. Orophernes distinguished himself in this war (Diod., xxxi. 28); the assumption that it was he who reduced Judea would explain why in the book of Judith—mere romance though it is—an Olophernes appears as the wicked commander who fights against the Jews.

” So Manetho, who makes Ochus reign six years in Egypt. In harmony with this we learn from Isocrates (Phzl., 102) that in 347/346 Egypt was not yet subdued, while according to the letter of King Philip (Demosth., p. 160) in 340 the reduction of Egypt and Phoenicia had long been effected.

_ EMPIRE. |

Athenian Phocion,! and with him was a pretender Evagoras, of the family of the famous Cyprian prince of that name.

Thus by force and policy the old state of the monarchy was restored in all the western lands. Mentor, the real conqueror of Egypt, was splendidly rewarded. He received the satrapy of the west coast of Asia Minor, and quickly removed by cunning and treachery Hermias, tyrant of Atarneus and the friend of Aristotle, who had concluded treaties like an independent prince ? and stood in suspicious relations to King Philip of Macedonia. It has been already mentioned that Mentor procured the pardon of his brother-in-law Artabazus and his brother Memnon. It is not im- probable that the

bestowal of this province on the skilful general and diplomatist, and the restoration of Artabazus to his hereditary satrapy, may be connected with the attention which the king paid to the plans of the Mace- donian, which were gradually disclosing themselves more and more. Of course no one thought of danger to Asia Minor, much less to the whole empire, but Philip's efforts to secure the mastery of the Bosphorus and Hellespont were enough in themselves to excite grave anxiety.

As early as 350 the story went that Philip had sent an embassy to the king,? and it is definitely stated that he concluded a treaty with Ochus.4 The pacific intentions of the Persians, at least for the moment, were no doubt sincere; not so those of Philip, who had to subdue Greece before he could put into execution his designs on Asia Minor, a circumstance overlooked by the honest but politically short-sighted Isocrates in his exhortation to Philip to attack Persia (347/346). Probably Demosthenes was not alone in perceiving that the safety of Greece now lay in an alliance with the Persians against Philip. Negotia- tions went on busily between Athens and the king, who at all events sent subsidies repeatedly for the conflict with Macedonia. In the year 340 Persia interfered actively by rescuing, in conjunction with Athens, the town of Perinthus on the Propontis (and therefore close to Persian territory), which was besieged by Philip ; and the Macedonians could perhaps with some right assert that with this step the war between the Persians and them had begun.' But the Persians did not see, what to us is obvious from the result, that it was necessary for them to prevent the subjugation of Greece ; or, if they saw it, they lacked the energy to act.

Artaxerxes probably did not reach the battle of Che- ronea (August 338), which made Philip master of Greece. So far as we can judge, however, it was a great misfor- tune for the empire that this king, the first since Darius I. who had in person energetically conducted a great ex- pedition and restored the empire, died just at this critical moment. Probably he was murdered by Bagoas, who placed Arses, the youngest of the sons of Artaxerxes, on the throne. But, when Arses was preparing (so it is said) to punish Bagoas, the latter put him and his children to death (335). We know nothing further of this king. Under his reign (spring 336) a Macedonian army first crossed into Asia, after Philip had previously caused himself to be nominated general of the Greeks against the Persians. The Macedonians

gained some not unimportant successes, but the undertaking was checked in the very same year by the assassination of Philip. The commander Parmenio re- turned to Europe, and Memnon, who after Mentor's death commanded in these regions, probably won back from the

1 Diod., xvi. 42; the sources from which our biographers of Phocion (Plutarch and Nepos) draw did not mention this fact, which does not accord very well with the pattern of philosophic virtue which they Inade out Phocion to be.

2 Cp. the treaty with Erythre, Le Bas and Waddington, No. 1535.

3 Demosth., Phil. I., p. 54.

4 Arrian, ii. 14, 2. 5 Arrian, ii. 14, 5. ;

5 In Plut., De fort. Alex., p. 336 sq., he is called Oarses. The Persian form of the name is not known.

Macedonians nearly all their conquests in Asia, though it 344-338,

is likely that Abydus, commanding the passage of the Hellespont, and perhaps one or two more strong places, remained in their hands.

In order to rule securely Bagoas placed on the throne, not Darius a near relation of the murdered man,' but Codomannus,$ II.

who reigned as Darius (III.), a great-grandson of Darius II., and a man of about forty-five years of age.? But the king-maker was caught in his own snare, for Darius soon put him out of the way.

Over the last of the Acheemenians misfortune has thrown a halo of romance, but sober criticism can see in him only an incapable despot like so many whom the East has pro- duced. It may be true that in earlier life, under Artaxerxes ITL., he once proved his personal bravery in the war

against the Cadusians, and was rewarded with the satrapy of Armenia ;!° as a king he always behaved like a coward in the moment of danger. Vast attempts and a shameful flight, feeble or rather effeminate behaviour combined with braggart pride, lack of intelligence, especially in the conduct of war,—these are features which fully justify Grote in comparing him with Xerxes, It is no reproach that he was not a match for perhaps the greatest general in history, but an Ochus would doubtless have made the task a some- what harder one, and would scarcely have been guilty of the folly of beheading, in a fit of bad temper, so useful a man as the old condottiere Charidemus, who thoroughly under- stood the mode of fighting the Macedonians.

The history of Alexander the Great is given under the Alex- articles ALEXANDER THE GREAT and MAcEDONIAN EMPIRE; ander's

here we can only enumerate the chief steps in the down- fall of the Persian empire. We see how great is the force of cohesion in such an empire, even after all the shocks it has received, and under an incapable ruler. What the giant powers of Alexander achieved in a few years might never have been accomplished at all by the qualities and resources of an Agesilaus.

After placing a terrible curb on the Greek love of freedom by the destruction of Thebes, Alexander crossed the Hellespont in the beginning of spring 334. A few weeks later, on the Granicus, he annihilated the great Persian army which should have barred his onward march. Sardis, the capital, at once fell into his hands. Here, for the first time, we see the miserable spectacle of a high Persian officer going over to the enemy and surrendering to him the town or district committed by his king to his charge. At the beginning of winter the whole coast as far as Pamphylia was Alexander's ; Miletus and Halicarnassus were the only places which he had had seriously to besiege, and it was only the narrowly-enclosed citadel of the latter town which yet withstood all attacks. But there was still a great danger. The Rhodian Memnon, who had been joint-commander at the Granicus, undertook with all his might to kindle a conflagration in Alexander's rear, and to force the king to cross over to Greece. The Persian fleet, which he commanded, ruled the sea; several of the most important islands were occupied; and from the Greek mainland thousands of patriots

were looking for Memnon’s arrival in order to rise against the Macedonians. But Memnon died suddenly. The death of this man, his only worthy adversary, is perhaps the greatest of those pieces of luck which so highly favoured the great Alexander. His successor Pharnabazus, son of Artabazus, continued, it is true, the naval operations, but he was not able to carry out Memnon’s plans. Meanwhile Alexander secured

7 We read of a son of Ochus in 380 (Arrian, iii. 19, 4). We had above a grandson of Artaxerxes II. Thus Bagoas had not killed all “the brothers” of Arses, and the king’s family was not extinct, as

Diodorus asserts (xvii. 5). 8 The name is given only by Justin (from Dinon), x. 3. 9 Arrian, iii, 22, 6. 10 Justin, dc. ; Diod., xvii. 6.

338-331. the most important parts of Asia Minor, and then set out

Over-

throw of

Persian empire.

Bessus.

on his forward march. At the farthest extremity of Cilicia Darius in person met him at the head of a huge army, but the field of battle was so badly chosen that the numerical superiority of the Persians did not come into full play. The brilliant victory of Issus (about November 333) and the flight of Darius threw wide regions into the power of Alexander, who, with all his daring, was also cautious, and did not follow the Persian king in his flight into the in- terior. He sought first to make himself master of the whole Phoenician coast, in order to cut off from the Per- sians every possibility of annoying him any longer at sea. And in reality the fleet, which was chiefly furnished by the Phoenicians, melted away when Alexander had taken possession of their country. The Cyprian ships, too, re- turned home, and Cyprus also submitted. But Tyre with- stood the great conqueror for seven months! (332), and had to pay a dreadful penalty for its resistance. Gaza, too, defended itself bravely. Egypt welcomed exultingly the Macedonian who freed them from the hated Persians. After the acquisition of Egypt Alexander possessed a territory large and strong enough to be able to survive, if need be, a reverse. In the spring of 331 he left Egypt and marched through Syria and Mesopotamia to Assyria proper, where Darius awaited him at the head of vast masses of troops, and this time in a favourable position. But on Ist October 331 Alexander defeated the king at Gaugamela so decisively that henceforward the Persian empire, as such, was shattered. Darius fled to Media. Without striking another blow Alexander captured the capitals, Babylon and Susa, with their vast treasures. In vain the wild independent Uxians (better ‘“ Huxians ”) barred a difficult mountain-pass against him, in vain did a Persian army do the same: he quickly forced a passage through the mountains and marched into Persia proper. Pasargadz and Persepolis, the cradle of the monarchy, were his. Persepolis, in the immediate neighbourhood of which another conflict took place, was given up by him to his soldiers to plunder; the royal palace he caused to be burned.? In this act we discern, in opposition to the usual view, a well-considered measure, excellently calcu- lated to work upon the

Asiatic mind. The burning of the royal castle was meant to show the Asiatics that their empire was utterly overthrown, and that Alexander was their only lord. Besides the Greeks might see in the step an act of vengeance for the destruction of the Greek temples by Xerxes, as the official phrase ran.

Thereupon Alexander hastened to Media in pursuit, once for all, of Darius. The latter fled eastwards. He had still a considerable army with him, but only the Greek mercen- aries were absolutely true to him, like the Swiss guard to Louis XVI. At last Bessus, satrap of Bactria (and Sogdiana apparently), seized the person of the king, in order either to make use of him for his own ambitious purposes or to put him out of the way. Asa matter of fact, he murdered him in Parthia, just when the pursuing Alexander had nearly overtaken him (July or August 330). Such was the melancholy end of the last of the Achemenian great kings.

Bessus thereupon hastened into his satrapy and assumed the title of king and the name of Artaxerxes (IV.). We know that he was a “kinsman” of Darius; perhaps in his case this means more than that he was merely con- nected with him by marriage, and this satrap of Bactria

1 The resistance of the Tyrians is certainly not explained by their attachment to the Persians, scarcely either by their love of freedom. We suspect here again a religious motive. Alexander desired to offer sacrifice in the temple of Heracles, and probably the pious Canaanites

would as little allow this as the Jews would have permitted any foreign ruler to enter their temple.

2 Cp. the article PERSEPOLIS,

Re |

may have actually belonged to the race of the Achzemenians, like his predecessors the princes Masistes and Hystaspes. It would thus be more easy to explain why various grandees favoured his undertaking, and why he was recog- nized as king, e.g., by the satrap of Aria (the district of Herat), and vigorously supported. That he enjoyed the royal title for some time is

due only to the circumstance that Alexander first made himself securely master of eastern Iran before he marched into Bactria and Sogdiana, After many adventures Bessus fell into Alexander's power on the farther side of the Oxus, and was put to death. After the return from India the satrap of Media con- ducted in.chains to Alexander a certain Baryaxes, who during Alexander's absence had declared himself king of the Persians and Medes. Of course he was executed. He is said to have been a Mede, not a Persian. Certainly his movement had never even a momentary importance ; he is only once mentioned (Arrian, vi. 29, 3). But such | last throes of a mighty monarchy are, after all, worthy of a7 attention. : Literaturc.—Rawlinson, The Five Great Monarchics, vols. ii., iii. | (2d ed., London, 1871), gives a useful account of the Medo-Persian history down to Alexander, as does also vol. ii. of Fr. Spiegel's Erénische Alterthumskunde (Leipsic, 18738). Neither work is ex- haustive, and in both we frequently miss true historical criticism. : For the time down to Xerxes Duncker's Geschichtc des Alterthums, | vol.iv.(5th ed., Berlin, 1880; Eng. tr. by Abbot, 1877-83), is recom- mended by its very careful use of all the sources and its acute mode of combining them, though the latter quality often leads to some- : what arbitrary construction. Owing to the close contact between |

Persian and Greek history the larger works on the latter are obliged

to cover much of the same ground as the former. In this department

Grote 6 wdvv is to be named above all; unfortunately at the time

he wrote it was not in his power to make use of the important Persian inscriptions. (TH. N.)

Section IL.—GREEK AND PARTHIAN EMPIRES.

After the decisive battle of Gaugamela (331 B.c.) Alex- | ander proclaimed himself king of Asia. He never ac- cepted the compromise recommended by Parmenio, which would have left to the Persians the upper satrapies east of Mount Zagrus, and established a sharply-marked natural | and ethnographic frontier. Soon a symbolic act, the burning of the palace of Persepolis, announced to the Asiatics that the Achzsmenian monarchy was dead, and | that Alexander claimed its whole inheritance. The punish- . ment of Bessus,

exactly modelled on that inflicted on 1 pretenders by Darius I., showed that Alexander claimed to be the legal heir of the Achzmenians. Bessus's ears i and nose were cut off, and he was brought to Ecbatana for execution before the assembled Medes and Persians, for "this Bessus lied and said, Iam Artaxerxes king of | Persia." |

After Alexander had by his rapid and effective move- Comple |

ments taken actual possession of the whole empire, Media a

was swiftly traversed, but the eastern frontier was not noc,

subdued and secured so easily. Crossing the mountain- wall that separates the southern margin of the Caspian from the rest of Iran, Alexander received in person thie homage of the coast-lands. Khordsdn and the region of the Oxus were traversed by his armies in all directions ; from Bactria the march was obliquely through Sogdiana to the Jaxartes on the farthest limits of the empire, and an onslaught was even made on the Scythians beyond that river.* Alexander was determined to secure a frontier so important for the trade of Central Asia, and to free the peaceful industry of Iran from the incursions of its here-

3 Plut., Alex., 34, 87, does not prove that there was another, still less a preferable account of the date of this occurrence.

- Here perhaps occurs the first trace in history of the Turkish race. Carthasis, the brother of the Scythian king in Curtius (vii. 7, 1), may be, as Néldeke observes, Turkish kardashy, "'his brother," from dash, of which fash is the older form.

EMPIRE. |

ditary enemies the Turanian nomads. Prestige rather than material advantage was gained by the rapid fall of the supposed impregnable rocky nests of Arimazes in Sogdiana, of Chorienes or Sisimithres in the mountain region of the upper Oxus,! and, above all, of the Indian fortress Aornus. Though usually clement to the conquered, Alexander was terrible to those who rose against him—to the Arians, for example, and to the strong cities

that headed the insur- rection in Sogdiana ; when the movement was crushed, he laid the land waste far and wide and slew all the males; 120,000 Sogdians are said to have thus lost their lives. Alexander too, like Cesar, did not shrink from a breach of faith if it served his purpose ; this was seen in the massacre of the Indian mercenaries who had defended Massaga, which was meant to spread terror before him as he entered India.? The Achzmenian power at its climax had never erossed the Indus ; Alexander passed the river and pushed into India proper. This adventurous march was under- taken wholly for the sake of prestige, and was specially meant to impress the imagination of the Greeks, to whom India was a land of marvels. Alexander proposed to reach the Ganges and the ends of the habitable earth; and it was sorely against his will that his own soldiers forced him to confine his plans to the rational scope of securing the Indus as his frontier and adding to his realm its com- mercially important delta? Alexander had now accom- plished what, in the eyes of the Arian peoples, was neces- sary to give the last stamp of legitimacy to the new empire ; he had led his armies round all the frontiers and taken personal possession of his lands. To close the circle he had still to march back through Gedrosia and Car- mania. But it may well be doubted if he would have faced this last exploit had he known beforehand the full terrors of the burning desert; not a fourth part of the forces that began the march from India survived a jour- ney which has been fitly compared with the retreat from Moscow.

EH hes T A

083

know only two by name, though we are told that in the 331-398.

first two districts there were really a large number of such towns, seemingly inconsiderable places. In the east of Iran the settlements were more important, and twenty-six can be enumerated in Aria, the country of the Paropanisus, Bactria, Sogdiana, India, and the land of the Oritee,— Bactria and Sogdiana alone claiming eight of these.6 The composition of these settlements is illustrated by the details given for Alexandria in the Indian Caucasus; according to Diodorus, the city and one or more minor settlements within a day’s journey of it received 7000 barbarians, 3000 camp-followers, and as many of the mercenaries as volunteered to stay ; but

Curtius, who cer- tainly reproduces the common source more accurately than Diodorus, names 7000 Macedonian veterans and a number of mercenaries whose engagement had expired. The Greek element in this colony must have been large, for the town still keeps its Greek name (Alasadda) in an Indian book of the 4th century a.p. Alexandria on the Tanais (Jaxartes), again, was partly peopled by Sogdian insur- gents, forcibly transplanted from their homes, which the conqueror had destroyed. Some of Alexander's last orders refer to the founding of cities and the transplanting of Europeans to Asia and Asiatics to Europe, a measure designed to promote the assimilation of all parts of the empire. Macedonia alone did not suffice for this gigantic scheme of colonization, and it was chiefly Greeks who were planted in the most eastern satrapies, in Bactria and Sogdiana. At such a distance from home the Greeks could have no other interest than loyalty to Macedon ; it was the same policy as dictated to the Romans the establishment of Latin colonies in their new conquests. But the antagonism between Greeks and Macedonians was too great to allow the former to forget that they were, after all, really men deported by the great king (dvéo7agror) ; and so even from the first there were seeds of discord between them and the rest of the empire.

Alexander's capital was Babylon, the natural centre of Satrapies an empire that embraced both Iran and the West, and and recommended also by its command of the great lines of 8°"

international traffic, and by its historical traditions of ;

A series of minor expeditions completed the work of the great campaigns by reducing a number of mountain tribes, which had shaken off the weak yoke of the Achzemenians, exacted tribute at the chief passes, and in their irreclaim-

able savage habits of plunder were like the modern Kurds, the born foes of the Iranian peasant. Such were the Uxians, the Mardians in Persis, and the people of the same name to the south of the Caspian, and finally the Cosseans, whom Alexander disposed of in his last cam- paign in forty mid-winter days. The future obedience of these brigands was secured by planting fortresses at the most difficult points of the roads, and they were compelled to settle down and take to husbandry.*

These vast results were only obtained by the aid of continual fresh levies in Europe, and strong garrisons had * to be left in the conquered lands. Alexander's work could not last unless the European occupation became perma- nent ; and therefore he planned a great network of new cities, in which colonies of Greek or Macedonian soldiers were planted. According to Plutarch (De Alex. fort., 1. 5, p. 328 F) more than seventy cities owed their origin to Alexander ; some forty of these can still be traced.® In Media, in the Cosszean neighbourhood, and in Carmania we

1 The last two places are identical. All the sources know only two fortresses taken by Alexander in these regions : those which mention Sisimithres omit Chorienes and vice versa; and the essential points are the same in Arrian (iv. 21) and Curtius (viii. 2, 19-38).

_ * Diod., xvii. 84. The official Macedonian account in Arrian (iv. 27) ignores the treachery.

3 As the Greeks then knew India only from Ctesias, whose geography is of the vaguest, Alexander probably under-estimated the vast size of the peninsula.

' Arrian, Ind., 40, 8.

5 See the careful enumeration in Droysen, Gesch. d. HHellenismus, 2d ed., vol. iii, pt. 2, p. 187 sg.

empire. The Achemenian system of satrapies was re- tained ; kingships were left only in the exceptional case of India.' The satrapies of the upper country seem to have been fourteen: Persis, Paraetacene, Carmania, Media, Tapuria with the Mardian country, Parthia with Hyrcania, Bactria, Aria with Drangiana, Gedrosia with the Oritz,® Arachosia, the Paropanisus country (which probably was quite independent under the later Achzemenians, and was first placed under a satrap by Alexander), India on this side the Indus, India beyond the Indus (from the Bactrian frontier to the confluence of the Indus and the Acesines), and beyond this the province of the lower Indus extending tothe sea. The last three satrapies were also new. Alex- ander retained the old satraps of Darius in three provinces ; in Parsetacene and Tapuria it would have been impossible to drive the old rulers from their

mountains without a tedious campaign, and in Aria Satibarzanes was confirmed in his post to detach him from Bessus. But in all three

nN ——————————————e————————————

6 Strabo, xi. p. 517. Alexandria on the Tanais and twelve other towns are spoken of by Justin (xii. 5, 16), but xii. is perhaps a cor- ruption of vii.

7 Oxyartes is sometimes called king by a mere inaccuracy. Dexippus, ap. Phot., cod. 82, p. 64, b. xxii. (Bekker), makes Alexander give Oropius the Doydtavav Bacidelay. The geographical order, and the fact that Sogdiana has been mentioned before, demand the correction Zovotavay, and for Kowés we must read kolvos ; see Justin, xiii. 4,14. Oropius was the successor of Abulites. The province seems to have been officially designated a kingdom, but that does not make its governor a king.

8 This province was perhaps formed by Alexander ; it was after- wards joined to Arachosia.

331-323. cases the old satraps were superseded on the first oppor- tunity. Most new appointments, however, were given to Persians; at first there were Macedonian satraps only in rebellious Arachosia, Gedrosia, and the three new Indian provinces. This policy helped the subjects to fall in with the new rule; but on second appointments Mace- donians generally took the place of Persians, and at Alexander’s death there were Persians only in Media (from which Atropates, as the sequel proved, could not have been removed without a fight), in Parthia, and in the Paropanisus, which was held by Alexander’s father-in-law. The power of the satraps was considerably reduced ; in Parthia, Aria, and the Paropanisus there seems to have always been a Macedonian resident (éricKozos) beside the satrap, with the control of the military. Indeed in all the provinces the command of the forces seems to have been separated from the office of satrap, though it was not always entrusted to a single officer. The satraps also lost the right to engage mercenaries and to coin; and in the western countries, of which we know most, a single officer —always a Macedonian—was sometimes charged with the tribute of several provinces. Perfect order and an exact

definition of the functions of every officer could not be attained from the very first; yet even in this period of transition the finances of the empire improved. At Alex- ander's death 50,000 talents (£11,288,515) lay in the treasury, and the annual tribute was 30,000 talents, or six and three-quarters millions sterling. What was of more consequence, the treasures of the East were no longer hoarded in the old Oriental fashion, but put in circulation and applied toa number of great and useful enterprises. Such were the exploration of the course and mouths of the Indus; the voyage of Nearchus, which opened the sea- road between the Indus and the Euphrates; the restora- tion of the trade of Babylon by removing the weirs which obstructed navigation, and by works on the canals and the Pallacopas; the attempt to discover a sea-way round Arabia, in which Hiero of Soli explored the east coast of the peninsula; and the commission given to Heraclides for exploration of the Caspian.

Alexander sought to assure the permanence of the em- pire by fusing Greeks and Persians into one mass. Thirty thousand Persians, the so-called ériyovo., were armed and disciplined like Macedonians, and Persians were received on equal footing in the Macedonian corps and even, to the disgust of the Macedonian nobles, in the corps Wélite of the cavalry, in which the latter served. Macedonia, in truth, was not populous enough to keep the cadres full. Alexander adopted the regal robes of Persia and the regal state. The court was served by eunuchs, and men kissed the ground before the great king. It was a strange sight for Hellenes when a poor wretch from Messene was ordered to execution because he had inadvertently sat on the kingly throne.!

To the Greeks a union with a barbarian was no regular marriage ; but the Bactrian Roxana was Alexander's queen. His friends were urged to follow his example; eighty of his courtiers married Persians on the occasion of the great wedding at Susa, and 10,000 soldiers who had chosen Asiatic wives received gifts on the occasion. Still more startling was the introduction of polygamy ; the king took a second wife, Statira, daughter of Darius, and a third, Parysatis, daughter of Ochus.

All this was Persian fashion; but when Alexander claimed divine honours as the son of Jupiter Ammon he asked both Persians and Macedonians to

adopt from the Egyptians the most perfect model of devout submission to their sovereign. Could this compound of nationalities prove more than akingdom of iron and clay? The answer

Plt Alen, 73,

PE Rs 1 4

[GREEK

lay in the attitude of that part of its subjects which stil] retained a vigorous life. The western nations, long schooled to slavery, were passive under the change of rule. The Persians, too, and all western Iran acquiesced after the first conflict was decided. In the east it was not so. Here the northern province of Chorasmia had been independent of the later Achemenians, and its kings had ruled the great plains as far as the north-east slopes of the Caucasus. Bactria, Sogdiana, Aria, Arachosia, Drangiana, and the borderlands towards India had obeyed Persian satraps, but Bessus and his partisans did not forfeit their allegiance by the murder of Darius. These eastern Iranians, who had no close connexion with Persia, opposed the most obstinate resistance to the conqueror: the Arians rose again and again ; and an energetic chief like Spitamenes could always stir up a party in Sogdiana. These risings began in the castles of the numerous chieftains (drapxor), but it was a national spirit that made them so obstinate and bloody; the Iranians of Sogdiana and Bactria had acquired in their constant wars with the Turanians a sense of self-respect which the effeminate Medes and Persians wanted. Their situation, too, favoured their resistance ; for their ancient enemies in the desert had a common interest with them in opposing a strong central government, and were easily persuaded to lend them succour or shelter. Saca and Dahe fought for Bessus, and Spitamenes found refuge with the Massagetz ; the wilderness offered a retreat where regular troops could not follow, and from which a petty warfare could always be renewed. In India the Brdhmans had been the soul of a still more vigorous resistance ; they preached revolt to the rajahs of the lower Indus, and were the object of Alexander’s special severity. Eastern Iran was the cradle and always remained the chief support of Zoro- astrianisin,® and religion must have had its part in the patriotic resistance of Bactria and Sogdiana. Alexander forbade the practice of throwing the dying to the dogs (Onesicritus, ap.

Strabo, xi. p. 517), which the Bactrians certainly took from the Avesta; and this was just the

kind of decree which drives an Oriental people to despera-

tion. The Macedonians did pay some attention to Iranian

thought ; a magian Osthanes is said to have been in the

train of Alexander, and Theopompus, a contemporary of

the conqueror, shows the first traces of acquaintance with

the Avesta. The Persian tradition that Alexander burned t the twenty-one nosks of the original Avesta, and that only 7 one part of the holy book was subsequently recovered from

memory, is of course not historical, but it rests on a very

true feeling that the new order of things was at irrecon- ;

cilable war with the old faith.*

Alexander desired to fuse the Greeks and barbarians Ale together, but the practical means directed to this ideal ™° aim were such as brought him into conflict with the natural — leaders of the new state. By asking the Greeks as well as the barbarians to worship him as divine he destroyed the whole effect of the theatrical arts in which he was a master, and by which he hoped to recommend his mission as an eminently Hellenic one to the masses ; even Callis- thenes, the enthusiastic herald of the new era, was bitterly undeceived, and, turning against Alexander, fell a victim to the despotism of the man who had been his idol. But, what was still more fatal, the net result of his efforts at a fusion of races was not to Hellenize the Persians but to teach the Macedonians to exchange their old virtues for the effeminacy and vices of the East. It is not fair to say that if the Macedonians had possessed a riper civilization they

|

:

2 So in the Middle Ages Kharezm and Kipchak stood under the same sovereign, and were not included in the realm of Jagatai.

3 Sisimithres's wife was his own mother, a union which the Avesta specially approves.

4 See Spiegel, 7. D. M. G., ix. 174.

EMPIRE. |

might have resisted the foreign influence ; their numbers were too small, and Alexander pushed his plans too hastily and with too exclusive regard to surface-effect, to make any other issue possible. it so, and there was no surer path to his favour than to wear a Persian coat and talk broken Persian like the schem- ing Peucestas. Alexander liked Oriental splendour and the Oriental ceremony which placed an infinite distance be- tween the king and his highest subjects ; great statesmen

Ft Rou &

Nay, Alexander wished to have –

585

lude of what was to come (326 B.c.). in Bactria and Sogdiana rose against the Macedonians on a false rumour of Alexander's death. Three thousand of them seized the citadel of Bactra, gained the support of the natives, and, crowning their leader Athenodorus, pro- posed to make their way home. Athenodorus was assassin- ated, but his followers remained unmolested, and joined the mass of their countrymen in the general rising of the Greek military stations after Alexander's death.

The Greeks settled 331-312.

generally love to be absolute, and Alexander enjoyed Oriental despotism and mechanical obedience much more than councils of state and discussions of policy with the

One Macedonian custom Alexander had retained, that Death of

of carousing with his generals. A series of debauches in =e ander.

Macedonian soldier-nobility, whose sturdy independence was always asserting itsclf, and whose kings, unless in virtue of great personal qualities, had never been more than prime inter pares. Then, too, Alexander, in the splendour and magnitude of his conquests, lost touch of the movements that were going on at home. The true task of Macedonia in the world's history was to unite Greece under its hege- mony,—a task clearly marked out, and one which Philip had pursued with masterly skill. But the completion of this task called for a modest and unsensational line of action quite foreign to Alexander's spirit ; Antipater's hard- won victory at Megalopolis, but for which his father's work would have fallen to pieces behind him, was received with a characteristic sneer on the war of mice which seemed to be going on in Arcadia! Philip's old generals judged otherwise and judged better ; it was not blindness to the conqueror's genius, but a just perception of what was practicable and desirable, and an instinctive dread of the unknown issues of the king's plans, which gradually estranged from him his truest councillors ; and it was an evil sign that his only close friend was a poor creature like Hephestion, who could not boast of a single service. Then came the first conspiracy and the murder of the aged Parmenio, whose son Philotas was mixed up with it,— a crime to which Alexander was led simply through fear. The wild extravagances of grief that marked the death of Hephestion, and of which a pyre worth two and a half millions sterling was the least, show how Alexander lost him- self more and.more as he broke with the Macedonian char- acter. His last orders, cancelled at his death by Perdiccas, included an invasion of Carthage by land and sea, with a further view to Spain, and the erection to King Philip of a tomb surpassing the Great Pyramid. The extravagance of these plans was as palpable to the Macedonian soldiery as to their leaders, and they too shared the growing aliena- tion from the monarch. There were mutinies as well as conspiracies ; the soldiers were tired of following from adventure to adventure, and at the Hyphasis they had their way. In his later days Alexander was repeatedly wounded, a fact significant of a change in the spirit of the troops, for no great general would expose himself as Alexander did—for example, in storming the city of the Malli—unless his men required this stimulus.

The want of coherence in the empire was seen even while Alexander was in India. Many satraps broke all restraint, renewed the old oppressions of the Persian time, hired mercenaries again, and only awaited a fit moment for open rebellion; the generals of the army that lay in Media committed sacrilege and crimes of every kind; the treasurer Harpalus violated his trust and escaped with his plunder. Alexander, on his return, soon restored order with terrible severity, but the ferment was still at work, especially in the west, and was increased through the dis- banded mercenaries of the satraps who returned to the coast. There is one event of the time of anarchy when Alexander was in India which, though passed over in the official sources of Arrian, deserves special notice as a pre- — T Plut., Agesil., 15.

the malarious climate of Babylon brought on a violent fever, which ended in his death (13th June 323).2 The object of his life, the fusion of Macedonians and Persians, was not attained. The Persians still felt themselves subject to a foreign power, and in eastern Iran this feeling was bitter. The Macedonians again had been carried by Alex- ander's genius far out of their true path of development into a giddy career, in which a capable and valiant nation found its ruin. Alexander did not die too soon, if he was not to see the collapse of his work.

Terrible civil wars broke out at once on Alexander's Civil death, and lasted almost unbroken for forty-two years, 4":

tearing his work to pieces, and scattering to the winds Macedonia's claims to universal empire. There was no legitimate heir, but the name of ''king" was borne by Philip (323-317), a bastard of the elder Philip, and by Alexander IL, Alexander's posthumous son by Roxana (323-311). The real power lay at first with Perdiccas, who as regent Per- governed the whole empire from Babylon, and, after Per- diccas was killed in a mutiny in the Egyptian canipaign of 321, passed for the moment to Pitho and Arrhidzeus, till in the same year the regency fell to Antipater. As he ruled from Macedonia, the eastern satrapies were pretty much left to themselves, but Pitho, who held the chief of these —that of Media—took the first place, and soon appears as strategus of all the upper satrapies. But his ambition united the satraps against him, and he was driven not only out of Parthia, which he had occupied after murdering the satrap Philip, but out of Media too. The

satraps now joined hands with Eumenes and _ placed themselves under his leadership when he came to Susa in 316 as the king's strategus at the head of the argyraspids. Pitho had meantime fled to Seleucus, satrap of Babylon, and with him sought help from Eumenes's great enemy, Antigonus. A war in Media and Susiana ensued, and Eumenes, whose military successes were constantly frustrated by disobedi- ence and treason in his followers, was betrayed to Antigonus and put to death in 315, Antigonus, already furnished with a commission as strategus from Antipater, now lorded it over all. Pitho, still greedy of power, and thinking of conspiracies to recover it, was executed ; the Persian satrap, Peucestas, who had led the allies against Pitho, was super- seded, and Seleucus fled to Ptolemy. other potentates united against the threatening power of 1. Antigonus, and in the war that followed Seleucus, with some help from Ptolemy's soldiers, repossessed. himself of his satrapy of Babylon,—an important event, which forms the epoch of the Seleucid era (1 Sel. = 312 /3113.c.). Presently a victory over Nicanor, who held Media for Antigonus, made Seleucus master of Media and the adjoining provinces. Antigonus had still some temporary successes, but at the end of the war Seleucus was acknowledged lord of Baby- lonia and the upper satrapies.

In these conflicts we can distinguish two main interests, represented by the cavalry and the infantry, or, what is

2 The exact date in our calendar, which cannot be calculated from the Macedonian date 27 or 29 Desius, is found by the aid of Pseudo-Callisthenes (Cod. A in C. Miiller's ed., p. 151; Arm. Tr. in Zacher,

Pseudo-Cal., p. 100). XVIII. — 74

diccas.

Soon, however, the Seleucus

586

312-280. the same thing, by the higher and lower nobility respect-

Satra- pies.

ively. The former fought for the unity of the realm of Alexander, the latter for the national traditions of Macedon. In the first years the mass of the army made its wishes very distinctly felt, ¢.g., in the rising against Perdiccas ; even the esprit de corps of a single body like the argyraspids had often a decisive influence on general politics. The fall of Perdiccas was reallythe end of the Perso-Macedonian empire founded by Alexander, as was made manifest by the fact that Babylon ceased to be the capital, and Antipater with the kings passed into Europe. On the ruin of Alexander's political structure the ruin of his house directly followed ; all the political and military talent of Eumenes, its one sincere defender, could not avert the catastrophe, for Eumenes, who as a Greek was always looked on with suspicion, soon fell a victim to Macedonian jealousy. With him the kingship really came to an end, though the empty name of it lasted a little longer. The later conflicts have a different character; a certain number of leaders had risen gradually above the mass of the officers, attaching to their parties the less prominent men, and it was the con- flicting interests of these leaders which were now repre- sented in politics and war. Last of all, the particular interests of the subject provinces came to find expression in the conflicts of their chiefs, and the signal was given for the formation of distinct kingdoms. In the wild struggles for supremacy the last remains of Macedonian loyalty disappeared ; when we are told that the strategi and satraps of the upper provinces were still faithful to the royal house, and that Antigonus, as late as 315, counted on it in making war against Cassander, the loyalty can hardly be regarded as a genuine sentiment, but was merely a cover for the pride of chieftains who were willing to acknowledge a distant and merely nominal sovereign, but not to obey men who had lately been their equals. And in truth the sentiments of the upper satrapies were of little consequence. The power to give them effectual expression was lacking, and these lands, till much later, reccived all their political impulses from the west.

To make up for this, Iran was little touched by the civil wars ; only Media and Parthia were seats of war, and that for a short time. Among the satraps Peucestas of Persia, Tlepolemus of Carmania, and Stasanor of Bactria are re- presented as good rulers, beloved by the natives; when Antigonus deposed Peucestas, a Persian notable told him to his face that the Persians would obey no one else, and lost his life for his frankness. Antigonus's

realm was less than Alexander’s by Egypt, Syria, Thrace, and Mace- donia, and the tribute from it was 11,000 talents (two and a half millions sterling). The ordinary taxes, therefore, had not been raised; but Antigonus raised special war- taxes also, 5000 talents at one time in Susiana and as much in Media.

The list of satrapics at this period is known from the records of the partitions of Babylon (323), Triparadisus (321), and Persepolis (315). There were twelve upper satrapies, Persis, Carmania, Great Media, Lesser Media, Parthia with Hyrcania, Bactria with Sogdiana, Aria with Drangiana, Arachosia with Gedrosia, the Paropanisade, India from the Paropanisade to the Indus, India between the Indus and Hydaspes, India on the lower Indus with Pattala. Of Alcxander’s satrapies we miss Paretacene, included in Persis, and Tapuria, which Alexandcr himself secms to have joined to Parthia. The only new satrapy is Lesser Media. 1t was thought proper to place Media, the most important Iranian province, in the surer hands of the Macedonian Pitho, son of Crateuas, but the north-west part of the province was left to the old satrap Atropatcs, whom Alexander had sent to Media in 328. He was father-in-law of

Perdiccas, and so claimed consideration, but probably he could not have been displaced if it had been tried.1 At the new division on

1 On Atropates see Arrian, iv. 18, 3, and Pseudo-Oal. in C. Miller, p. 149, where after Ilevxéory read ’Arpardryv ’Ofvodrny peracrioa dmé Tis Mydias. His eonnexions in north-east Media are illustrated

by the faet that he had with him at Gaugamela Cadusians, Albanians, and Saeesine,

[GREEK

the death of Perdiccas (321) Pitho was confirmed in Media as far as the Caspian Gates, but nothing is said of Lesser Media, which was really no longer part of the empire. Thus Atropates was the founder of a small separate kingdom, whieh theneeforth eontinued

to bear his name, in Greek Atropatene, in Arabic and Persian Adhar-Atropa. baijan, and in Armenian (more nearly conformed to the original) tene,

Atrpatakan. It was never a very important state, but is worth notice as the first new native realm within the empire of Alexander and the first symptom of the Iranian reaction against Hellenism,?

Except in the case of Media the partition of Babylon made no change in the holders of the upper satrapies. So we are expressly told (Curt., x. 10, 4, and Just., xiii. 4, 19, where for wlteriore read ulteriusque), and the apparent exceptions to the principle are per- haps merely due to our ignorance of previous changes. The most remarkable of these is that Pitho, son of Agenor, who under Alex- ander shared with a Persian the satrapy of the lower Indus, is now found in India Citerior in room of Nicanor, while his old satrapy has fallen to no other than King Porus.? We may be sure that the Macedonians sanctioned this extension of the power of the Indian king only because they could not help it, and it is probable that Porus had usurped the province in the troubles that broke ont in India as soon as Alexander left it in 326 (Arr., vi. 27, 2). Thus one more province was now only nominally attaehed to the empire. Porus, indeed, was assassinated through Macedonian intrigue be- tween 321 and 315, but the country never again came permanently under their power.

The partition of 321 was less conservative. Nicanor was removed from Aria to Bactria, and Philip from Bactria to Parthia, super- seding Phrataphernes. These ehanges had probably some con- nexion with the rising of the Greeks in Bactria and Sogdiana after Alexander’s death. No Persian satraps now remained except Atropates and Oxyartes, who had connexions by marriage with the conquerors. Antigonus, to please the natives, changed this policy, and even put the Mede Orontobates in the great province of Media, but he returned at the same time to Alexander’s policy of limiting the satraps’ power. We hear nothing of strategi in the satrapies from 321 to 315, so it is probable that Perdiccas and his immediate successors had allowed the satraps to hold also the military eom- mand in their provinces. Antigonus again appointed strategi, who were always Macedonians.

In a time of civil war it is not surprising that the old disorders of the Acheemenian period reappeared. During the wars of Eumenes and Antigonus the Uxians and Cosszans again appear as independent, and as plundering travellers. But a much more serious outbreak was that of the Greek settlers in the north-east against the Macedonians. On the news of Alexander's death in 323 the military colonies rose under Philo, the Aunian, and with 20,000 foot and 3000 horse attempted to fight their way home. They were met by Pitho, governor of Media, and defeated by an inferior force through the treachery of one of their chiefs. Pitho granted them terms if they would lay down their arms and return home, but the Macedonians refused to respect the convention; they knew Perdiccas had or- dered the extermination of the rebels, and, falling on the disarmed foe, they massacred them and divided their spoil.

Such a catastrophe could not fail to embitter the rela- tions between eastern and western Iran, betwecn Greeks and Macedonians. It is hardly accidental that the only notice we have as to how Seleucus Nicator (reigned 312- 280) came into possession of the upper satrapies is that he subdued Bactria by force of arms. To his Asiatic subjects Seleucus appeared as a king from the first ; officially, and among the Greeks, he received this title only in 306. His first care was directed to India, where, probably during the wars of Eumenes and Antigonus, the Macedonian officials had been slain and obedience transferred to Chan- dragupta, founder of the Maurya kingdom. Seleucus crossed the Indus, but Chandragupta obtaincd peace on favourable terms, giving Seleucus five hundred war- elephants, but increasing his dominions by the parts of the Paropanisadse, Arachosia, and Gedrosia that lay towards

2 The hypothesis that Atropatene was an important plaee as a refuge for the fire-worshippers has no other basis than a false etymology, Adharbaijan= Fireland. It became important politically only in the later Middle Ages, when it was the gateway of the Turkish migration westward and reeeived a Turkish population.

% This is certain from Arrian, ap. Phot., eod. 92, p. 71, b. xl. (Bekker), where Pattala is said to have obeyed Porus,

EMPIRE. |

the Indus. The kings swore to this treaty and became lasting allies.

Instead of the twenty-one Asiatic satrapies of the parti- tions Seleucus divided his empire into seventy-two, thus diminishing the dangerous strength of the individual governors. But the old arrangement was restored later, and at the beginning of the reign of Antiochus III. we

find Media, Persia, Susiana, and the district of the Ery-.

threean Sea (separated off from Babylonia) standing each under one head (Polyb., v. 40-54). Apparently an eparch came to be appointed with military command over all the sections of each old satrapy, and gradually drew to himself all the functions of the satraps in the old régime, so that he could be spoken of indifferently as satrap or strategus.

Seleucus had built for himself a new capital, Seleucia on the Tigris, but in process of time his chief attention came to be more and more engrossed by the affairs of the west, and the seat of power was shifted to Antioch in Syria, A kingdom like that Sf Seleucus could hardly be governed from Syria, which lay so far from its natural centre, and about 293 or a little later Seleucus found it advisable to make over the upper satrapies to Antiochus, his son by his first marriage with Apama, daughter of Spitamenes, giving him Seleucia as his capital and his stepmother Stratonice as wife. Seleucus, ike Antigonus, dreamed of regaining the whole monarchy of Alexander, and fancied himself within reach of his goal after the fall of Lysimachus, when he was himself removed by assassination. Antiochus – Soter (280-261) was prudent enough to be content with what he possessed and acquiesce in the actual division of the empire into three realms, practically correspouding to the three continents.

No one had been so zealous as Seleucus in extending Alexander’s schemes of colonization; he is said to lave founded seventy-five cities. Among such of these as we know an unusual proportion lies in Media—the breast of Tran, as the Orientals call it—where it was doubly import- ant to strengthen the Macedonian element. A Greek settle- ment in Ecbatana and the cities of Laodicea, Apamea near Rhage, and Europus were his foundations; Alexandria Eschata, in the extreme north-east, was strengthened by new recruits ; and even beyond this city, as it seems, in the land of the Scythians,

an Antioch was founded. ‘These last undertakings probably came after the association in the empire of Antiochus, who, through his grandfather Spitamenes, had special reasons for interest in these parts. Tt was then that Demodamas crossed the Jaxartes and raised altars beyond it to the Apollo of Didyma, the patron god of the dynasty. Then, too, Alexander’s plan of explor- ing the Caspian was resumed; the admiral Patrocles made a voyage of discovery, and got only just far enough to be confirmed in the false notion of a north-east passage to India,—probably, therefore, to the extremity of the penin- sula of Mangishlak. It was seen, on the other hand, that the Caspian was not connected with the Meotis; but Seleucus shortly before his death still entertained a plan for a canal from the Caspian to the Cimmerian Bosphorus. Antiochus carried on his father’s work of founding cities, and built Laodicea in the east of Persis; but he gave more attention to castern Iran. A wall of 1500 stadia (about 172 miles) was carried round the oasis of Merv, and there, at the confluence of the Margus and the Zothales, the ruined city Syriana was rebuilt as Antioch, with a circuit of 8 miles. In Aria Antiochus Soter founded Sotira, his general Achzeus Achaia; the older chief towns Artacabane and Alexandria on the Arius received new walls, the latter with a circuit of from 3 to 6 miles, Alexandropolis in Arachosia had been similarly strengthened by Seleucus. With all these efforts, however, Hellenism made no such deep 1m- pression on Iran as on the west, nor did the loosely-jointed

empire attain to anything higher than a Hellenistic repro- 280-250.

duction of the kingdom of the Achemenians. Even in the fragmentary records that we possess we hear from the first of rebellions little favourable to consolidation of the realm; Seleucus, like Alexander, still had an army of Macedonians and Persians together, while the later Seleucids, at least in their western wars, used natives sparingly and only as bow- nien, slingers, or the like, and preferred for these services the wild desert and mountain tribes of Iran. Of the Persian troops of Seleucus we read that 3000 rebelled, and were mastered and destroyed only by treachery ; another and seemingly connected story speaks of a rising of 3000 Macedonians (Polyzenus, vii. 39,

40). Antiochus himself executed his eldest son, Seleucus, on suspicion of conspiracy against his life; the heir of the kingdom was his second son,

Antiochus IT. Theos (261-246), a drunken and dissolute Anti- prince, who neglected his realm in the society of unworthy ochus I.

favourites.

This king is mentioned in a remarkable contemporary Indian inscription. The Seleucids were constant allies of the great Maurya (Magadha) kingdom. Between 311 and 302 Megasthenes repeatedly went as ambassador from Seleucus to Chandragupta, and Daimachus went in like manner from Antiochus to the court of Chandragupta's successor, Ami-traghdta (280-276). The next king, Asoka, became a Buddhist about 263. He then founded hospitals for men and beasts throughout his realm, planted places where nothing had grown before, and provided wells and grew trees along the roads for the refreshment of man and beast. Further, he tells us, he caused his example in these things to be followed by his neighbours, whether southern or western. Among the latter Antiochus, king of the Greeks, has the first place.

Under the weak Antiochus IT. north-eastern Iran was lost to the empire. While the Seleucids were busy elsewhere, probably in the long war with Ptolemy Philadelphus, which occupied Antiochus's later years, Diodotus, viceroy of Bactria, took the title of king. The new kingdom included Sogdiana and Margiana from the first, while the rest of the East, with a single exception scarcely noticed at the time, adhered to the Seleucids.2 Now the formation of a strong local kingdom, heartily supported by the Greek colonies, and likely to control the neighbouring nomads and protect its own frontiers with strictness, was by no means agreeable to the chiefs of the desert tribes who, like the modern Turcomans, had been wont to pillage the settled lands, and raise blackmail with little hindrance from the weak and distant central authority at Antioch.? Accord-

ingly two brothers, Arsaces and Tiridates, whose tribe, Arsaces

the Parnians, a subdivision of the Dah, had hitherto! pastured their flocks in Bactria, on the banks of the Ochus, moved west into Seleucid territory near

Parthia. An in- sult offered to the younger brother by the satrap Pherecles moved them to revolt; Pherecles was slain, and Parthia freed from the Macedonians. Arsaces was then proclaimed first king of Parthia (250 z.c.). Such is the later official tradition, and we possess no other account of the beginnings of the Arsacid dynasty. But when the official account transforms Arsaces, who, according to genuine tradition, was the leader of a robber horde and of uncertain descent, into a Bactrian, the descendant of Phriapites, son of Artaxerxes II. (who was called Arsaces before his accession), and makes him conspire with his brother and five others, like the seven I EyELE—E—Ee ee

1 See the accounts of the army of Antiochus III. in Polyb., v. 79,

and Livy, xxxvii. 40. 2 Justin, xli. 4, 5, exaggerates rhetorically, on the basis of some such expression as that used by Strabo, in speaking of the event. ’ 3 These brigands had destroyed two of Alexander’s cities, Alexandria in Margiana and Heraclea in Media, before the time of Antiochus Ne;

Pliny, W. ., vi. 47, 48.

250-220.

Seleucus

11.

Arsaces Tiridates in ; Parthia.

588

who slew the false Smerdis, we detect the inventions of a period when the Arsacids had entered on the inheritance of the Achzemenians, and imitated the order of their court. The seven conspirators are the heads of the seven leading noble houses to whom, beyond doubt, the Karen, the Suren, and the Aspahapet belonged. And further, genuine tradi- tion does not know the first Arsaces as king of Parthia at all, and as late as 105 2.c. the Parthians themselves reckoned the year (autumn) 248/247 as the first of their empire.” But 248 is the year in which Arsaces I. is said to have been killed,

after a reign of two years, and succeeded by his brother, who, like all subsequent kings of the line, took the throne-name of Arsaces. The first Arsaces must have existed, for he appears as deified on the reverse of his brother's drachmez, but he was not king of Parthia. Nay, we have authentic record that even in the epoch-year 248/247, the year of the accession of Tiridates, Parthia was still under the Seleucids. These contradictions are solved by a notice of Isidore of Charax (Geog. Gr. Afin., 1. 251), which names a city Asaak, not in Parthia, but north-west from it, in the neighbouring Astauene, where Arsaces was proclaimed king, and where an everlasting fire was kept burning. This, therefore, was the first seat of the mon- archy, and Pherecles was presumably satrap of Astauene, not eparch of Parthia.

The times were not favourable for the reduction of the rebels. When Antiochus IT. died, the horrors that accom- panied the succession of his son Seleucus II. Callinicus (246-226) gave the king of Egypt the pretext for a war, in which he overran almost the whole lands of the Seleucids as far as Bactria. Meantime a civil war was raging between Seleucus and his brother Antiochus Hierax, for whom the Galatians held, and at the great battle of Ancyra in 242 or 241 Seleucus was totally defeated and thought to be slain. At this news Arsaces Tiridates, whom the genuine tradition still represents as a brave robber-chief, broke into Parthia at the head of his Parnians, slew the Macedonian eparch Andragoras, and took possession of the province.' These Parnian Dahze were a branch of the Dahz who lived beyond the Sir Darya and the Sea of Aral (the Tanais and Meotis of Strabo, x1. p. 515, and Curt., vi. 2, 18, 14), and were called Xandians or Parnians; but, in consequence of internal dissensions, they had migrated at a remote date to Hyrcania and the desert adjoining the Caspian. Here, and in great measure even after they conquered Parthia, they retained the peculiarities of Scythian nomads. The Parthian language is described as a sort of compound between Median and Scythian ; and, since the name of the Dahe and those of their tribes (Strabo, xi. p. 511) show that they belonged to the nomads of Iranian kin, who in antiquity were widely spread from the Jaxartes as far as the steppes of south Russia, we must conclude that the mixed language arose by the action and reaction of two Tranian dialects, that of the Parthians and that of their masters.° Their nomad costume the Parnians in

Parthia gradually gave up for the Median dress, but they kept their old war-dress, the characteristic scale-armour, com-

1 Moses of Chorene (ii. 28) knows-only these three lines besides the Arsacids. Other Armenian historians, however (Langlois, i. 109, 199), know four lines of Arsacids which may have taken the place of lost families,

- See the cuneiform tablet in G. Smith, Assyrian Discoveries, p. 389, which agrees with Euseb., Chron., p. 299 (Aucher).

® Justin, xli. 4, 2, What is said of Andragoras in xii, 4, 12, rests ou a slip of the memory.

4 The common tradition connects the migration with the conquests of the Scythian king Tandysus, a contemporary of Sesostris. It adds that Parthian means ‘‘fugitive” or ‘‘exile” (Zend, p%rttu). But the name Parthava is found on the inscriptions of Darius long before the immigration of the Parnians,

5 An idea of the difference between the two may be got from the fragments of Kharezmian, preserved by Bérini.

Pion eT ee

| GRECO-PARTHIAN

pletely covering man and horse. The founder of the empire appears on coins in this dress, with the addition of a short mantle, and so again does Mithradates II. The hands and feet alone are unprotected by mail; shoes with laces, and a conical helmet with flaps, to protect the neck and ears, complete the costume. The conquerors of Parthia continued to be a nation of cavalry ; to walk on foot was a shame for a free man; the national weapon was the bow, and their way of fighting was to make a series of attacks, separated by a simulated flight, in which the rider discharged his shafts backwards. Many habits of the life they had led in the desert were retained, and the Parthian rulers never lost connexion with the nomad tribes on their frontiers, among whom several Arsacids found temporary refuge. Gradually, of course, the rulers were assimilated to their subjects; the habitual faithlessness and other qualities ascribed to the Parthians by the

Romans are such as are common to all Iranians. The origin of the Parthian power naturally produced a rigid aristocratic system: a few freemen governed a vast population of bondsmen; manumission was forbidden, or rather was impossible, since social condition was fixed by descent; the 10,000 horsemen who followed Surenas into battle were all his serfs or slaves, and of the 50,000 cavalry who fought against Antony only 400 were freemen.

Arsaces Tiridates soon added Hyrcania to his realm and raised a great host to maintain himself against Seleucus, but still more against a nearer enemy, Diodotus of Bactria. On the death of the latter, however, the common interests of the Parthians and Bactrians as against the Seleucids brought about an alliance between Arsaces Tiridates and Diodotus IJ. With much ado, Seleucus had got the better of his foreign and intestine foes and kept his king- dom together, and in 238 or a little later, having made peace with Egypt and silenced his brother, he marched from Babylon into the upper satrapies. Tiridates at first retired and took shelter with the nomadic Apasiacz, but he advanced again and gained a victory, which the Par- thians continued to commemorate as the birthday of their independence. Seleucus was unable to avenge his defeat, being presently called back by the rebellion stirred up by his aunt Stratonice at Antioch. This gave the great Hellenic kingdom in Bactria and the small native state in Parthia time to consolidate themselves. ‘‘Tiridates used the respite to strengthen his army, to fortify towns and | castles, and to found the city of Dara or Dareium in the smiling landscape of Abévard. Tiridates, who on his coins appears first merely as Arsaces, then as King Arsaces, and finally as “ great king ” (probably in imitation of Antiochus Magnus), reigned thirty-seven years, dying in 211/10. His nation ever held his memory in almost divine honour.

Seleucus III. Soter (226-223) died early, and was

followed by Antiochus ITI. Magnus (223-187), who in his Anti brother’s lifetime had ruled from Babylon over the upper ochustll

satrapies. Molon, governor of Media, supported by his brother Alexander in Persis, rose against him in 222 and assumed the diadem.’? The great resources of his province, which followed him devotedly, enabled Molon to take the offensive and even to occupy Seleucia after a decisive battle with

the royal general Xencetas. Babylonia, the Erythreeau district, all Susiana except the fortress of Susa, Parapotamia as far as Europus, and Mesopotamia as far as Dura were successively reduced. But the young king soon turned the fortunes of the war. Crossing the Tigris in person, he

8 Mithradates I. was the first to adopt the robes of a Persian great king.

7 The coins of “4 King Molon” show that his rebellion has nothing to do with the King Antiochus of C. /. G., 4458. The latter, appearing in a list of deified kings arranged in the order of their deitication or death, is the eldest son of Antiochus III., who died in 193.

ces

EMPIRE. |

penetrated into Apolloniatis and cut off Molon’s retreat. Molon was forced to accept battle near Apollonia ; his left wing passed over to the enemy, and, after a crushing defeat, he and all his kinsmen and chief followers died by their own hands (220). Antiochus now marched to Seleucia to regulate the affairs of the East. He used his victory with moderation, mitigating the severities of his minister Hermias ; but he had effectually prevented the rise of a new kingdom in the most important province of Iran. In the same year, before he returned to Syria, he marched across Mount Zagrus against the aged Artabazanes, the most powerful of the native princes, who ruled not only Atropatene but the neighbouring lands, especially east Armenia (Polyb., v. 55, 7), and by the terror of his approach extorted-an advantageous treaty.

A period followed in which the king was fully occupied in the west, but after this he began a campaign of several years in the upper satrapies, to which his contemporary renown was mainly due. First he regulated the affairs of the Armenian kingdom of Arsamosata, whose king, Xerxes, had fallen by the intrigues of his own wife, a sister of Antiochus.1_ Then, descending the Euphrates by ship to Seleucia, ppeared in Media in 209, hardly as an enemy, though hé*Seized the gold and silver decorations of the temple of the goddess A‘ne in Ecbatana. Thence with 100,000 foot and 20,000 horse he marched against the new Parthian king, Arsaces II.,? son

and successor of Tiridates. Crossing the desert obliquely to Hecatompylus, he forced his way into Hyrcania over Mount Labus (the eastern part of the Elburz mountains), defeating the Parthians on the summit, and besieged the fugitives in Sirynea. The Parthians planned an escape by night, and massacred the Greek residents to prevent its betrayal; but the plan failed. The city yielded, and the war ended in a treaty which left Arsaces his kingdom, but beyond question reduced him to a vassal. In 208 began the much more serious war with Bactria. Here the successors of Diodotus had been dethroned by a usurper, Euthydemus of Magnesia, whose coins indicate a long reign. Euthydemus tried to defend the line of the Arius (Herirud), but Antiochus effected a passage a little west of the city Guriana,? inflicted a decisive defeat on the hostile cavalry, and forced Euthy- demus to retreat to Zariaspa. But the siege of Bactra, the capital, proved tedious, and the war made little progress. Antiochus himself opened negotiations and was impressed by the declaration of the Bactrian king, that if he were reduced to extremities he must call in the help of the nomads, which would be fatal to the Greek civilization of the land. At length, in 206, a peace was arranged, and Antiochus was visited in his camp by Demetrius, the youthful son of Euthydemus, who pleased the king so well that he betrothed to him his daughter ; Huthydemus was left on his throne, and the two powers swore an alliance offensive and defensive, which cost Bactria no more than certain payments of money, the victualling of the Mace- donian troops, and the surrender of the war-elephants. The Bactrian Greeks were grateful for this moderation ; their Meniorial coins place Antiochus Nicator with Euthydemus Theos, Diodotus Soter, and Alexander Philippi among the founders of their political existences Antiochus next

1 John of Antioch, in Miiller, iv. 557.

2 This king seems to have had Arsaces as his proper name, for Justin always uses the proper name of Parthian kings. Vaillant’s conjecture, which gives him the name of Artabanus I., has no basis.

3 For Tayouptav, Polyb., x. 49, where all editors adopt the geograph- ically impossible Tazrovplay of Reiske, read Ta Vouplava, comparing Biol, vi. 10, 4.

4 That Antiochus Nicator is Antiochus III. Magnus follows from Malalas, i. 261 ; if the style of his Bactrian coins, resembling as they do those of Diodotus, really demands an earlier date, they must belong

to the last of the Diodotides not mentioned by the authors, not, as the numismatists suppose, to Antiochus II.

re RS 1 A

O89

crossed the Paropanisus into the valley of Cabul, renewing 220-164.

the friendly relations of his dynasty with the Indian king Subhagaséna, and receiving from him 150 war-elephants. The return march was through Arachosia and Drangiana, the winter being spent in Carmania. Thus it appears that south of the Paropanisus- political relations had remained unchanged for a hundred years, and the successes of Antiochus in Upper Asia, together with the prudent limita- tion of his schemes to what was practicable, did much to give permanence to the empire in the East, notwithstand- ing its many points of weakness. The series of victorious campaigns was concluded by a maritime excursion in 205 against the rich merchant-community of Gerrha on the Arabian shore of the Persian Gulf, in which Antiochus again showed his moderation, receiving from the Gerrheans a gift, 500 talents of silver, 1000 talents of incense, and 200 talents of oil of myrrh, but leaving them the freedom they had enjoyed from time immemorial.

Under very different circumstances did Antiochus revisit the eastern lands eighteen years later, his prestige broken by the war with Rome, and his position as a great power shattered in a way that could not fail ultimately to react on his Asiatic subjects. His most urgent difficulty, how- ever, lay in an exhausted treasury, and the demands of Rome for a heavy war-tribute. Antiochus came to Susa in search of money and seized a pretext to plunder the rich and famous temple of Bel in Elymais ; but the attempt was fatal to its author, who was destroyed, together with his followers, by a rising of the Elymeans (187). This, no doubt, was the moment when Elymais became

independent and formed a small separate kingdom in the upland part of Susiana.

Antiochus was followed in the kingdom by his sons, first the weak Seleucus IV. Philopator (187-175), and

then the gifted Antiochus IV. Epiphanes (175-164), who Anti- had a clear insight into the evils that were sapping the ochuslV.

empire, but attempted to cure them and bind the loose complex of provinces more closely to the centre with such impatience and violence that he only hastened the fall of his dynasty. He too, like all the later Seleucids, was in chronic want of money, and it was chiefly to raise tribute that he marched into the East in 166. He first made for Greater Armenia and the neighbouring Sophene, which had never paid much more than nominal allegiance to Macedon, and after the defeat of Antiochus the Great by Rome (189) had formed themselves into kingdoms under Artaxias and Zadriades, the former strategi. Antioclius penetrated into Armenia and took Artaxias prisoner, but restored him to his kingdom. He was next called by urgent affairs to the shores of the Persian Gulf. Over the Persians we read that his lieutenant in Mesene gained a double victory in one day, by sea and by land, at the pro- montory of Naumachzea® over against the Carmanian coast. This victory, however, implies that Persis had already cast off the Macedonian yoke,® and that the new kingdom had already extended its sway over the opposite coast of ‘Oman, as we know to have been the case about 70 a.p.’ At the mouth of the Tigris Antiochus restored an old city of Alexander’s and called it Antioch ;* it had been destroyed by an inundation, a sign that the negligent government of the later Seleucids had let the canal system,

5 Pliny, vi. § 152; but one is tempted to suspect a corruption of the text and read Drymatina, Mace; horum, &c.

6 Strabo, xv. p. 786, gives a general confirmation of the existence of a kingdom here in the time of the Macedonians.

7 Peripl. M. Er. (Geog. Gr. Min., i, 283). The connexion of the opposite coasts is natural; in the 10th century the Buwaihids ruled over ‘Oman.

8 Pliny, V. H., vi. 139, says “ Antiochus quintus regum,” reckon- ing Antiochus Hierax. We call Eupator Antiochus V., but he cannot be meant, and there is no way of counting which would make Sidetes the 5th Antiochus.

restored by Alexander, fall again into ruin. Another of Epiphanes’s measures directed to the strengthening of the Hellenic element in the East was the occasion of the change to Epiphanea of the name of the Median capital. But against these useful efforts must be’set the plundering of the temples of the barbarians, a sure way to exhaust Oriental patience, and one which involved the king in a catastrophe so like to that of his father that we should suspect some confusion were the accounts not so well con- firmed.! The king, we are told, heard of a rich temple of the goddess Naneza in Elymais stored with the gifts of many generations ; he marched out to plunder it, but was driven back by the natives to Babylon. In Persis he received tidings of the formidable rising in Judzea, excited by similar acts of violence; apparently he was then on his way against the Persian rebels, but on the journey he died of consumption in the Persian town of Tabze (164). Antiochus had given Mesene with its capital, Antioch, to a native dynast, Hyspaosines, as satrap; and, when Antioch, like its predecessor Alexandria, was soon ruined by floods,

191-171. ‘“‘ Arsaces Philadelphus,” perhaps because he had married a sister, and (first of all Parthian kings) Philhellen.® By the last title he presents himself, at a time when the Seleucid power was sinking, as the protector of his present and future Greek subjects. His eldest son and successor, Phraates I. (Arsaces Theopator of the coins), conquered Phraates the brave Mardian highlanders and transplanted them tol. Charax in the neighbourhood of the Caspian Gates, a proof

that the Parthians had already detached Comisene and Choarene® from Media (Strabo, xi. 514), probably just after

the death of Antiochus the Great.

About 171 Phraates died and left the crown not to his Mithn. sons but to his brother Mithradates (Arsaces Epiphanes and dates apparently also, on tetradrachms of 139, 138, Arsaces Phil-/ hellen), a prince of remarkable capacity, who made Parthia the ruling power in Iran. His first conquests, it would seem, were made at the expense of Bactria.

The kingdom of Bactria had made vast advances under Deme- Euthydemus, whose son Demetrius crossed the Indian triusof Caucasus and began the Indian conquests, which soon Pata

Chara- of Characene, which probably became independent at the | himself marched down the course of the Indus, conquered cene. death of Antiochus. Thus the Seleucid empire was now | Pattala and the kingdoms of Saraostes (Surdshtra) and quite cut off from the Persian Gulf by a circle of small | Sigerdis, probably the district of the commercial city native states.? Barygaza. The object, it is plain, was to reach the sea Now followed the troubled reign of the child-king | and get a share in the trade of the world ; and it is possible Antiochus V. Eupator (164-162), which was cut short by | that the extension of the power of the Bactrian Greeks Deme- Demetrius Soter (162-150). The latter was constantly | over Chinese Tartary as far as the Seres and Phaunians trius I. persecuted by the Romans, who raised enemies against him | had a similar object, viz., to protect the trade-route with on every side, and so the times seemed to invite a renewal | China along the Tarym river. For the Seres are the of the enterprise of Molon. Since the time of Epiphanes | Chinese, and the Phauni, according to Pliny,' lay west of the satrap of Media had been one Timarchus of Miletus, | the Attacori (the mythical people at the sources of the brother of the intriguing and influential treasurer Hera- | Hoang-ho) and east of the Tochari, whose earlier settle clides, and, like the latter, a favourite of the late king, who | ments were east of Khoten. They occupied, therefore, the had often sent him to Rome. Knowing the ground there, | very region which, according to Chinese sources, was then he went to Rome, and easily persuaded the senate to grant | held by a nomadic pastoral people, the Tibetan No-kiang. him the title of king (161).2 He made a treaty with | History shows that Chinese Tartary is easily conquered Artaxias of Armenia against Demetrius, compelled the | from the Oxus and Jaxartes, but very hard to hold, and neighbours of Media to acknowledge him, and extended | there is thus no

reason to doubt the truth of the Bactrian his power as far as Zeugma, and finally over Babylonia.* | advance in this direction. Strabo, unluckily, does not tell But he fared in the end no better than Molon. The | us whether the campaign was made by Demetrius ; it must Babylonians were oppressed and hated him, and the self- | have fallen before 177, when the great conquests of conceived majesty of Timarchus, who on his coins called | the Hiung-nu began, but after 201, when the founder of hiniself “the Great,” soon broke down in conflict with | the Han dynasty regained the country as far as the Great Demetrius, one of the most gifted princes of a highly- | Wall, and put China in a position to take part in the trade gifted dynasty. Timarchus was slain, his brother fled, | of inner Asia. This is precisely the period of the greatest and the victor was saluted as “saviour” (Soter) by the | power of the Greeks in Bactria. Demetrius, having suc- grateful Babylonians (160). It was a great victory for | ceeded his father, was displaced in Bactria by the able | Demetrius; he had saved the best part of Iran for his | usurper Eucratides, some time between 181 and 171.8 A Enera- monarchy, and he had shown all who speculated on the | thousand cities obeyed Eucratides, and both he and his #4 support of Rome that the decrees of the republic were rival Demetrius sought to extend the Greek settlements, powerless in regions to which its arm could not reach. the one founding Eucratidia in Bactria, the other Deme- The true danger for the Macedonian monarchy came not trias in Arachosia. Now Justin tells us that the Bactrians from rebellious lieutenants but from the ever stronger re- | were so exhausted by wars with the Sogdians, Arachosians, action of the Oriental element, of which the little state of | Drangians, Arians, and Indians that they at length fell Parthia was the most vigorous champion. The kings of | an easy prey to the weaker Parthians; but Eucratides he Parthia had long kept quiet after the war with Antiochus the | describes as a valiant prince, who once with 300 men held Arsaces Great. Phriapatius, successor of Arsaces II., who reigned | out during five months, though besieged by 60,000 men of ee fifteen years (c. 191-c. 176), calls himself on his coins | Demetrius, king of India, and then, receiving succours,

the city was removed to an artificial hill and protected by an embankment. Under the name of Spasinu Charax (Hyspaosines’s pile-town) the new city rose to commercial prosperity, and became the capital of the petty kingdom

1 Comp. Gran. Licinian., p. 9, with the first confused account in the letter of the Jews to Aristobulus, 2 Mac. i. 10 sq.

2 Hyspaosines was not an Arab, as Pliny states, vi. § 189. The Iranian names of the older kings of Characene justify Juba's account of their extraction.

3 The corrupt passage of Diodorus, Hxe. Escur., 18, ought to run thus, Tyudpyy é&etvar cal adr@ Baoidéa elvar.

4“ In Diod., l.c., read rs BaBvdwvlas for THs Bactdelas. Hence the error of Appian, who does not mention Media at all,

carried the Greeks far beyond the farthest point of Alex- ander. ‘The Punjab was reduced and the city of Cakala, under the name of Euthydemia, became the capital of the Indian conquests; but besides this it appears that Demetrius

subdued India.

° For these and other Parthian coins P. Gardner's work is the authority. One of them is dated 125 Sel. =187 3.c.

6 Choarene contains the only Greek city in the older conquests of the Parthians, and the coin with Greek date and title is of the year of Antiochus's death.

7 N. H., vi. 55, where read ‘‘ Phuni et Thocari.”

8 Sallet's numismatic arguments, which place Eucratides about 200 B.C., are not conclusive, and do violence to the other testimonies.

EMPIRE. |

This implies that besides the kingdom of Bactria and that of Demetrius—the latter now confined to India and probably to the lands east of the Indus—there were independent states in various districts still Seleucid in 206. Justin's statement is confirmed by the coins, which also show that Eucratidcs came forth as victor from a series of wars with the lesser states.

Sogdiana, accord- ing to Chinese authorities, was occupied by the Scythians in the lifetime of Eucratides ;; Antimachus, to judge from a naval victory recorded on his coins, once rcigned on the lower Indus ; the prin- cipal place where coins of him and his successor Antialcides have been found is the Cophen valley ; the latter prince, who borrows from Antiochus Epiphanes the title ‘‘ Nicephorus,” may be viewed as his younger contemporary. The neighbouring realm of Plato was ephemeral, but his money is unique as giving a date by the Seleucid era (165 B.c.). Pantaleon and Agathocles, whose coins are chiefly to be found in Begram, Cabul, Ghazni, Kandahar, and Sistan, were doubtless kings of Arachosia and Drangiana. Before this these countries belonged to Demctrius, aud even, as the coins show, to his father Euthydemus, who cannot have been contem- porary with the last years of Antiochus the Great, so that they were probably given as a dowry to his daughter when she marricd Demetrius. This marriage really took place, for the Seleucid name Laodice is found among the Bactrian Greeks. The victorics of Eucratides are proved by his surfrappé coins. Thus he restruck coins of Antialcidcs and appears posthumously as ‘‘God of the city Karici”? on money of Apollodotus, king of the Indians. Heliocles, co-regent and successor of Eucratides, and Strato, apparently the successor of Apollodotus, restruck cach the money of the other, and Heliocles’s name also appears over what is perhaps a coin of Philo- xenus, who reigned in the region of Peshawar.”

On his way back from the conquest of India Eucratides was murdered by his son and co-regent, probably Helio- cles.? The date of this murder may be fixed by that of Demetrius, who must have been born not later than 224, and may be taken to have lost his kingdom not later than 159. lEucratides cannot, according to Justin’s account, have lived many years longer. This would givec, 155 3B.c. as the lowest possible date for the death of Eucratides. A little before this time notable signs of concession to the rising spirit of the.natives appear on the coins. The medals of the older Greek kings follow the Attic standard and have only Greek legends, but from the time of Deme- trius the reverse bears a legend in the Indian language spoken in the Cabul valley and in the so-called Arianian character, a letter derived from the Semitic. At the same time we begin to find square coins, and in the later part of the reign of Eucratides a new native standard begins to prevail.*

In the midst of the civil wars, which became more serious after the death of Eucratides, Mithradates of Parthia * began to extend his dominions at the expense of Bactria ; even in the lifetime of Eucratides he succeeded in annexing the satrapies of Aspiones and Turiua. These seem to have covered Aria, for the Hindu-Kush is named as the eastern boundary of the Parthians (Justin, xli. 6, 8),—whence perhaps the mention of Arians aniongst the foes of Eucra- tides. Another account makes Mithradates rule as far as India, and declares him to have obtained without war the old kingdom of Porus, or the rule over all nations be- tween the Indus and the Hydaspes.° The two accounts are reconciled by Chinese records, which tell that c. 161 B.C. the nomad people Sse broke into the valley of the Cophen and founded a kingdom in the very place of the

! Te, Charis, a Greek town, which Appian, Syr., 57, placed in Parthia with two other towns which really lay in Aria.

2 See in general, A. v. Sallet's " Nachf. Alex. d. Gr.," in Zeitschr. J. Num., vi., and Cunningham, Num. Chron., ix. x.

3 This is the usual assumption, for Heliocles appears on coins both as contemporary and as successor of Eucratides, and there is a surfrappé coin of his which was originally struck by Eucratides for the marriage of Heliocles with Laodice (perhaps a daughter of Demetrius by his Seleucid queen). But there is much to be said for the view of Cunningham (Journ, As. S. Beng., 1840, p. 869; Num. Chron., ix 239), that the murderer was Apollodotus, whose title ¢ Philopator " always points to a co-regency.

4 Sallet, op. cit., p. 25 sq.

5 This account goes back through Oros., v. 4 (following Livy), and Diod., p. 597, to the excellent authority of Posidonius.

Phe] &

Parthian conquests in India, which must therefore have 164-138.

been ephemeral. This fact has its importance, as illustrat- ing the way in which the internal wars of the east Iranian Greeks helped to prepare the ground for the Scythian in- vasion. After this success in the east Mithradates turned his attention to the west, where the chances of success were not less inviting. Demetrius had at length fallen before a coalition of the neighbouring sovereigns, powerfully sup- ported by the Romans through their instrument the exile Heraclides. A pretender, who called himself son of Anti- ochus Epiphanes, was put up as king by the coalition; he appeared in Syria in 152, and slew Demetrius in battle in 150. The pretender, who took the name of Alexander Theopator Euergetes, proved quite incompetent, and lost the support of Ptolemy Philometor, who in 147 put up Demetrius, the son of Dentetrius, against him. At length, in 145, Alexander, utterly defeated by Ptolemy, was slain in his flight by an Arab chieftain. Demetrius II. Nicator, however, soon made himself bitterly hated, and a certain

Diodotus of Casiana, in the region of Apamea, a man of Deme- mean origin, was able first to set up against him Alexander's trius H.

young son Antiochus Epiphanes Dionysus, and then to murder his puppet and proclaim himself as King Trypho. Five years of fighting drove Demetrius out of the greater part of Syria. Such was the state of the empire when war broke out between Media and Parthia, and was finally decided in favour of the latter. Mithradates left Bacasis in Media and turned to Hyrcania. Media in this account appears as independent, and that this was so is confirmed by the notice in Diod., Fyre. £sc., 25, that a certain Dionysius ''the Mede" raised Mesopotamia in 142 against Trypho to avenge the murder of the young Antiochus. Dionysius must be a son of Timarchus; Heraclides, when he installed Alexander in Syria, must have thought also of his own family, and raised it again to the throne of Media, which the senate had already recognized as a separate king- dom. But the short-lived independence of Media was, as we have seen, soon cut short by Mithradates, who did not lose the opportunity afforded by the civil wars of Syria in 147. Babylonia followed the fate of Media; Demetrius's lieutenant was defeated, and the whole province, with its capital Seleucia, fell into the hands of the Parthians. Thus the East was finally lost to the Macedonians.

The change of rule was not well received by the new subjects of Parthia, least of all by the Greeks and Mace- donians of the upper provinces, who sent embassy after embassy to Demetrius. That prince, who had now little to lose in Syria, at length accepted their invitation to come and take the rule over them, hoping that if he could secure the upper satrapies they would help him against Trypho. In 140 he marched into Mesopotamia, and thence by Babylon to the upper provinces. He was well received by the natives, and even the small native states made common cause with him against the proud barbarians, whose neighbourhood they felt as oppressive. He was joined by the Persians and Elymezans, and the Bactrians helped him by a diversion, appearing now for the last time as an independent people. At first things went well, and the Parthians were defeated in several battles, but in Media in 139 Demetrius was surprised by the lieutenant of Mithradates during negotiations for peace; his forces were annihilated, and he himself taken prisoner and dragged in chains through the provinces that had joined his cause. The Parthian king received his captive with favour and assigned him a residence and suitable establishment in Hyrcania. He even gave him his daughter Rhodogune, and promised to restore him to his kingdom, but this plan was interrupted by death.

Mithradates's last campaign was against the king of Elymais, Demetrius's ally; the rich temples of Elymais,

 that of Athena, and that of Artemis or Nanza in Azara yielded him a booty of 10,000 talents (£2,258,000), and the great town of Seleucia on the Hedyphon was taken! (Strabo, xvi. p. 744). The country was brought under Parthia, but continued to have its own kings. The coins make it likely that Mithradates simply set up a new dynasty, a branch of his own house.? Mithradates died in a good old age in 138, or a little later.? His memory was

: reverenced almost equally with that of the founder of his house, but his real glory was much greater, for it was he who made Parthia a great' power. He is praised as a just and humane ruler, who, having become lord of all the lands from the Indian Caucasus to the Euphrates, intro- duced among the Parthians the best institutions of each country, and so became the legislator of his nation.

Parthian The divisions of the empire which he founded can be sketched

“king- by the aid of an excerpt from the itinerary of Isidore of Charax

doms.” (at the beginning of the Christian era) and of Pliny (1. Z., vi. 44, 112). The empire was divided into the upper and lower kingdoms, separated by the Caspian Gates. The lower kingdoms were seven —(1) Mesopotamia and Babylonia, (2) Apolloniatis, (3) Chalonitis,* (4) Carina,® (5) Cambadene, (6) Upper Media, (7) Lower or Rhagian Media.6 The upper kingdoms were eleven —(8) Choarene, (9) Comisene,’ (10) Hyrcania, (11) Astauene, (12) Parthyene, (13) Apauarcticene,® (14) Margiana, a part of Bactria, (15) Aria, (16) the country of the Anauans (a division of Aria), (17) Zarangiana,® (18) Arachosia, now called ‘‘ White India.” The eighteen Parthian kingdoms thus correspond to six old satrapies ; the new divisions were probably derived from the provinces of Seleucus Nicator (see especially Posidonius in Strabo, xvi. p. 749). But upper and lower provinces have changed their meaning ; apart from Arachosia, the upper provinces are the old conquests of the Parthians before they occupied Media and became lords of Iran, and the lower all the later conquests in the west. The Parthians, we see, gave much less attention to the west than did their predecessors, and they still left Mesopotamia as the only great satrapy, and perhaps first added Babylonia to it when Ctesiphon became the residence of the Arsacids. We note also that they cared little for reaching the sea, which they can have touched only for a little way at the mouth of the Euphrates ; and even here they allowed the petty Characenc quite to outstrip them in competing for the great sca-trade. As compared with the older Macedonian empire, the Parthian realm lacked the east Iranian satrapies, Bactria with Sogdiana, and the Paropanisade, andalsothe three Indian ones, which, with Paretacenc, or, as it was afterwards called, Sacastane, remained under the Bactrian Greeks and their successors. In the north they lacked Lesser Media, which had long been an independent state, and in the south they lacked Susiana, which now belonged to Elymais, and the satrapies of Persis and Carmania, which the Persians held along with the

1 In giving this order of events it is assumed that the capture of Demetrius, omitted in Justin’s epitome of Trogus, xli. 6, comes after § 7, not, as has been assumed since Vaillant, after § 8. When Trogus meutions such

unimportant events as the nomination of Bacasis to Media and the visit of Mithradates to Hyrcania, we must suppose that these facts bore on others of more note, that Bacasis was the captor of Demetrius, and that the royal court was in Hyrcania when the captive was brought before the Parthian king.

2 Coins of the venerable Camnascires, whom Pseudo-Lucian Afacrobit calls a Parthian, but separated from the great kings by Armenia and Characene, have been brought from Baghdad and Shuster, and can hardly have been struck elsewhere than in Elymais. He was preceded by an Arsaces, not one of the main Parthian line. See Sallet, in 7. Sj. Num., viii. 207 sq.

3 Denietrius had married Rhodogune when Antiochus VII. married his deserted wife Cleopatra in 138, and there were children by the marriage, though not earlier than the time of Demetrius's second attempt to escape; hence both attempts must have been after the death of Mithradates.

4 These three make up the old satrapies of Mesopotamia (with Arbelitis) and Babylonia. The whole land between the Euphrates and the Tigris was now put together, and the countries to the east of the Tigris detached, Apolloniatis being taken from Babylonia, and Chalonitis from Arbelitis.

® In Isid., § 4 (Geog. Min., i. 250), read 'EvretOev Mydla cal yadpa Kdpwa, iris caréxer sxolvovs KB',) dpxy adbrar.

® Nos. 4 to 7 are all parts of the old satrapy of Media.

7 The two most eastern parts of Media that were the first Parthian conquests.

8 Nos. 10 to 13 form the old satrapy of Parthia and Hyrcania.

® Nos. 15 to 17 belong to the old satrapy of Aria with Drangiana. Sacastane, another part of this satrapy, was not Parthian, but, as Isidore remarks, belonged to the Sace.

Pu Res 1 &

western part of Gedrosia (Per. Mar, Hr., § 37). In the extreme west they lacked Arbelitis proper, which formed a small kingdom under the name of Adiabene, first mentioned in 69 B.c. (Plut., Laeullus, 27). The kingdom of Mannus of Orrha (Mdvvou “Oppas, so read) in north Mesopotamia, which according to Isidore (§ 1) reached a good way south of Edessa, seems also to have beenindepend- ent, and, like Adiabene, probably existed before the Parthian time. From these small kingdoms the Parthians asked only an acknowledg- ment of vassalship. When Parthia was vigorous the vassalship was real, but when Parthia was torn by factions it became a mere name (Strabo, xvi. p. 732). The relation was always loose, and the political power of Parthia was therefore never comparable to the later power of the Sasanians. Arsaces Tiridates and his successors called them- selves “great king.”’ Mithradatcs, as overlord of the minor kingships, first bore the title “great king of kings.” The title seems to have been conferred, not assumed in mere boastfulness ; for (apart from a single usurper in times of disorder who calls himself “king of kings’’) none of his successors bears it until Phraates III., seventy years later,—a fact clear from the coins, but hitherto unnoticed. The nobility had great influence in all things, and especially in the nomination of the king, who, however, was alwaysan Arsacid. Next to the king stood the senate of prodwli,! from whom all generals and lieutenant-governors were chosen. They were called the king’s kin, and were no doubt the old Parnian martial nobility. A second senate was composed of the Magians and wise men, and by these two senates the king was nominated (Posidonius, ap. Strabo, xi. p. 515), The Parthians were, in fact, very pious, conscientious in observing even the most troublesome precepts of Zoroastrianism as to the dis- posal of dead bodies, which were exposed to birds of prey and dogs, the bare bones alone being buried (Justin, xli. 3, 5, 6). When the Parthian prince Tiridates visited Nero he journeycd overland that he might not be forced to defile the sea when he spat, and his spiritual advisers the Magians travelled with him (Plin., xxx. 17). The Magiaus were not, indeed, so all-powerful as under the Sasanians, but it is quite a mistake to think that the Parthians were but lukewarm Zoroastrians.

The complete annihilation of the Macedonian empire in Falla Tran was closely followed by the destruction of Greek in-&n dependence in eastern Iran, north of the Paropanisus. The™ last mention of independent Bactria is in 140; no king of Bactria and Sogdiana is known from coins after the parri- cide Heliocles. Classical writers give only two laconic accounts of the catastrophe. Strabo says that “the no- madic peoples of the Asti, Pasiani, Tochari, and Sacarauce (so read for ZaxdpavAot xaé in xi. p. 511), dwellers in the land of the Sac, beyond the Jaxartes [in its middle course], opposite to the Sacee and Sogdians, came and took Bactria from the Greeks.” Trogus (Prol., xli.) names the Scythian peoples Sarauce and Asiani.! Fortunately the lively interest taken by the Chinese in the movements of the nomads of Central Asia enables us to fill up this meagre notice from the report of the: Chinese agent in Bactria in 128, as recorded a little later by the oldest Chinese historian, and from other notices collected by the Chinese after the opening of the regular caravan route with the west, about 115, and embodied in their second oldest history.!2_ According to these sources the Yue-chi, a nomad Chinet © people akin to the Tibetans, lived aforetime between 8” Tun-hoang (2.¢., Sha-cheu) and the Kilien-shan moun- tains, and about 177 were subjugated, like all their neigh- bours, by the Turkish Hiung-nu. Between 167 and 161 they renewed the struggle without success; Lao-shang, the great khan of the Hiung-nu, slew their king Chang-

10 For populorum (Just., xli. 2, 2) a synonym of senatus (xlii. 4, 1) is wanted ; write, therefore, probulorum.

Ul Modern writers since Bayer make the Greek kingdom in Bactria fall before the Parthians, appealing to Just., xli. 6, 3. But the epi- tome here contradicts its source, and confounds the fall of the king- dom with the earlier loss of two satrapies to the Parthians under Eucra- tides. The right account is to be found elsewhere in Justin himself, ah, Weise sy Ge :

Comp. the Sseki of Ssematsien (100 B.c.), tr. by Brosset, Nour. Journ, As., ii. 418 sq., and the Annals (of the first Han) of Panku (80 A.D.), excerpts from which are given by Ritter, Hrdk., pt. vii. bk. 3, pp. 604-728 ; Deguignes, Hist. des Huns, 1, 2, p. lxiv. sq., 41 sq., and “Recherches sur quelques événements,” &c., in Além. Ac. Inscr., XX¥- 17 sq.; Abel Rémusat, on the Fo&-kouwe-ki, p. 37 sg. The account given in the text is

based wholly on the two oldest sources, without reference to the newer Chinese encyclopedias. Comp. further Richt- hofen, China, p. 447.

lun, and made a drinking-cup of his skull,! and the great mass of the vanquished people (the great Yue-chi) left their homes and moved westward, and occupied the land on Lake Issyk-kul, driving before them another nomad race, the Sse. The Sse took the road by Utch and Kash- gar, ultimately reaching and subduing the kingdom of Kipin (the Cabul valley), while their old seats were occu- pied by the Great Yue-chi, till they in turn were soon attacked by the Usun, who lived west of the Hiung-nu, and forced to move farther west (160 or 159), The older Chinese account ignores the residence of the Yue-chi at Lake Issyk-kul, which can at most have lasted only for a few years ; the later account goes on to say that, moving westward, they conquered the Ta-hia, ¢.¢., the Bactrians. The language of the older narrative has been held to imply that they went by way of Ferghana and remained there for some time ; but in reality it only says that they retired beyond Ferghana and conquered the Ta-hia, thereupon pitching the royal camp north of the Oxus, and so it ap- pears that in 159 they moved straight on Sogdiana, reach- ing that land just at the time when internal wars were undermining the might of Eucratides. The conquest, how- ever, may have been gradual, since Bactria is still named as independent in 140.

When the Yue-chi were already settled in their new homes the king of China sent a certain Chang-kien to urge them to return and help him to clear the caravan-road by thrusting back the Hiung-nu. He was arrested on his way by the latter, but escaped in 129 to Ferghana, and thence was led to the Yue-chi through the land of the Khang-kiu, on the middle course of the Jaxartes. But the Yue-chi were too happily settled in a rich and peaceful land to listen to his representations, and after a year’s residence (128-127) he returned to China, which he reached in 126, after falling again into the hands of the Hiung-nu on the way. From him are derived almost all the accounts of the country and its inhabitants given by the Chinese historians. There were, we are told, settled and agricultural peoples in Great Wan (Ferghana), Ta-hia (Bactria), and An-si (Parthia). All the races from

Ferghana to Parthia had deep-set eyes and strong beard and moustache; their dialects varied, but as they all understood each other all must have been Iranian in speech. Their manners, too, were much alike; they paid great respect to women, and the men were very complaisant to their wives. This is almost exactly what Bardesanes says of the position.of women in his time among the Kushan in Bactria ;2 but it was quite otherwise in Parthia, where the Oriental seclusion of women was carried to the extreme (Just., xli. 3, 1, 2). They were all knowing traders, and understood the preparation of silk and lac, but not metallurgy till they were taught that art by Chinese agents and deserters. They then imported the precious metals from China and made gold and silver vessels, but not money, being in this respect behind the Parthians. Great Wan probably corre- sponds to the Ovapyo of Ptolemy (though he misplaces them) and the Varena of the Vendidad; it was a separate kingdom, with a popula- tion estimated at 300,000 souls in the 1st century B.c., and seventy subject cities. The king, probably a native who had risen on the fall of the Greeks, lived in Kuei-shan (probably Khojend, at the mouth of the Ferghana valley), and could call out an army of 60,000 men,—lancers, archers, and mounted bowmen. The land was famous for its wine and for horses of divine race which sweated blood, and for the possession of which China went to war with Great Wan in 104-108, and again in 102-98. Lucerne and grapes were exported to China; the name of the latter, “po-tao,” is held to be the Greek Bérpus, which would show that the vine was introduced by the Greeks of Alexandria Eschata. outh of the Wei or Oxus lies Ta- hia (probably Zend Dahvyu, the land‘). Here there was no king, but the several cities were the seats of chiefs, a state of things Such as Alexander had found in the country and as reappeared under the Turks in the 7th century a.p. Chang-kien estimated the population at a million ; they were bad and cowardly soldiers, but excelled in trade, and the chief town, Lan-shi, had rich bazaars of many wares. This town must be one of the commercial cities on the river Bactrus, along which lay the trade-route from India to the north (Pliny, vi. 52), ¢.¢., either Bactra or Eucratidia (which, according to Ptolemy, vi. 11, 8 [Codd. B., E., Pal. 1], lay lower down the stream on the left bank). In the latter case Lan- shi may stand for “EAAqves. North of Ta-hia lay the Great Yue-chi,

1 The Lombards had the same custom, learned, no doubt, in the childhood of the race from their Avarian neighbours.

- See Langlois, Coll. d. hist. de V Arménie, i. 84.

3 Ssematsien, in Ritter, vii. 3, p. 642.

- Certainly not Dah, for they were never in Bactria.

P iRes 1 A

593

and west of the latter was An-si towards the Oxus. very great country, whose length might be 1000 li (358 miles), and it had 100 cities great and small. The first caravan from China to An-si passed on its way from the east frontier to the capital (called in the Ist century B.c. Fan-teu, t.c., probably Parthau), a dozen walled cities, which lay almost close together, so dense was then the population of the fertile part of Khorasan. The merchants of An-si visited the neighbouring lands with waggons or with ships for distances of several thousand li. The coinage was silver, with the image of the king, and was called in and restamped on a new accession.® Writing was on skins in horizontal lines. Now, though the money as here described fits Parthia, the mercantile character of the race does not at all correspond to that of the Parthian aristocracy. Both here and in the general description given above, which also contains features not applicable to the Parthians, we see that the Chinese did not distinguish the ruling race from their subjects, and inainly described the latter, who were in point of fact very similar to the people of Bactria and Ferghana. As An-si extends to the Oxus the description is taken from the inhabitants of Margiana, a country which must have been then subject to Parthia. A later Chinese account, referring to the period 24-220 a.D., places on the east frontier the city Mo-lu or Little An-si, which is plainly the Mouru of the Vendidad, modern Merv- i-rud, and the Greek Antioch 4 évvdpos; An-si is a corruption of the last name, just as the Persians call the Syrian Antioch Andiv, and so came to be a name for the Parthian rulers of the city. West of An-si, on the western (Caspian) sea, lay Tiao-chi (Media), an agri- cultural country with a dense population, a dependency of An-si, and in part governed by tributary chiefs. Chang-kien is thinking less of the central parts of Media than of. Gilan and Mazandaran, for he speaks of the warm moist climate where rice is produced. And in this quarter there were really various petty states ; not

only Atropatene but Dilem had its own king, as appears for the year 65 B.c. from Plutarch, Pomp., 86 (where for “EAXvpalwy read Aehupalwy), and the Gele and Cadusians doubtless stood under their own mountain chiefs as they had done under the later Acheménians, and did again under the first Sasanians. It is a proof of the solid power of the empire founded by Mithradates that Parthia was able to assert some kind of supremacy over these hardly accessible districts. North of An-si lay Li-kan (Hyrcania), whose wizards, with those of Tiao-chi, had great reputation. It is clear from this whole account that the centre of the empire was still in the old Parthian lands, and that the lower satrapies were viewed as mere dependencies, “outer lands.”’ In the following century the Chinese obtained knowledge of the west by the caravan-route which passed through Kipin (the Cabul valley) to U-ghe-shan-li (Arachosia) ; and now we find a changed state of affairs; these two countries are bounded on the west by Tiao-chi, whose powerful king has his capital a hundred days’ journey from the frontier. An-si is now only mentioned incidentally as reached from Arachosia by going first north and then east, which is correct if we take the name in its original sense of the subjects of Parthia in Margiana and its capital Antioch. But the empire of Parthia, which now had its centre in Media and the western lands, is certainly Tiao-chi, a word that is probably connected with the word for “land” in the official lan- guage of the Achemenians, old Persian dahydus. be: As nomadic peoples Chang-kien names the Great Yue-chi in Sogdiana, the Khang-kiu on the middle course of the Jaxartes, and the Yen-tsai in Chorasmia. The Yue-chi could put from 100,000 to 200,000 bowmen in the field ; later they were reckoned at 100,000 warriors and their families. The royal camp had been north of the Oxus even after the conquest of Bactria, but they finally withdrew entirely to this district. Their capital is called Lan-shi; and the name of Ta-hia disappeared before that of “Land of the Great Yue-chi.” At the conquest they had a single king ; afterwards they formed five principalities. The fifth of these corresponds to Cabul, so that the division is younger than the Scythian invasion of Asia after the death of Phraates I]. Imme- diately north of Ferghana, but separated from the Yue-chi in the south and the Hiung-nu in the east by a series of small kingdoms, were the pasture-grounds of the Khang-kiu on both sides of the Jaxartes ; their force was 80,000 to 90,000 bowmen. North-west of these were the Yen-tsai on the Aral, the northern neighbours of the An-si, and east of Hyrcania, that is, in Chorasmia. If there is no error in the writing of the

number they mustered but 10,000 warriors; then again considerable changes had taken place when the Chinese made war on the Khang-kiu in 44 B.c. The small kingdoms south and east of the latter have disappeared, so that the Khang-kiu border on the Hiung-nu and the great Yue-chi; but the latter have now moved south, and now, too, the Khang-kiu are the northern neighbours of An-si, and not the Yen-tsai; the latter are their dependants, and a tribute of mouse-skins is even drawn from the kingdom of Yen beyond the Yen-tsai. Such a tribute cannot have come ‘rom any place south of the Mukhajar moun-

5 On this point the younger Chinese account falls into a confusion with the coins of the kings of Kipin. XVIII. — 75

This was a 160-44,

138-128.

Phraates If.

594

tains. The Khang-kiu have risen in number as the Yue-chi fall, and have now 120,000 bowmen, or a population of 600,000 souls. Like the Yue-chi, they are divided into principalities, which are five in number, and the king is the prince of Su-hiai, with his winter residence in a place of that name east of Ferghana, and his summer court much farther west at Lo-yuei-ni. The east of the Khang-kiu country was often subject to the Hiung-nu, and the pressure of this Turkish tribe seems to have been the cause which pushed the Khang-kiu and Yen-tsai farther west. The latter have now at least 100,000 bowmen, and extend westwards to the limits of Great Tsin or the Roman empire. This compels us to conclude that the Yen-tsai are the Aorsi, the western part of whom ranged between the lower Don and the west coast of the Caspian, while the older upper Aorsi were round the north coast, and so on to the neighbourhood of the lower Jaxartes (Strabo, xi. p. 506; Ptol., vi. 14, 10). When Pharnaces ruled on the Bosphorus (63-47 8.c.) both parts of the Aorsi intervened in the affairs of the neighbouring kingdom with large armies, and as Pharnaces was a client of Rome the Chinesc statement is intelligible. Later Chinese accounts relating to the first

Christian century give A-lan-na as the later name of the Yen-tsai, which agrees with the fact that the Aorsi appear last in history in 49 a.p. (Tac., Ann. xii. 15 sqg.), and that Lucan, ten or fifteen years later, is the first to name the Alans, who succeed to their geographical place. When we understand the Chinese data we can speak with more definiteness about the four nations to whom Strabo ascribes the fall of Greek Bactria, and which Ptolemy also seems to name from a source relating to the time when the invasion began. From these data, compared with our Chinese sources, we can be sure that the ochari are the great Yue-chi, the former being probably the name of the nation and the Iatter that of the leading horde. The Asii of Strabo, Asiani of Trogus, Jatii of Ptolemy, will then be all attempts to render the difficult name of the horde which the Chinese call Yue-chi. But, while the classical writers place the Sacarauce in the west to balance the Tochari in.the east, the Chinese know no second great nation between the latter and the Parthians in Margiana. We must therefore suppose that the Sacarauce are the Scythians who occupied part of the Greek lands, and were in turn conquered by Parthia according to Strabo (xi. 515); that this part was Margiana is known from a drachma of Phraates IJ. (Gardner, Parthian Coinage, p. 83); the conquest must have taken place a good while before 128, when Chang-kien visited Sogdiana, since by that time the Parthians had again displaced them. But he must have known and mentioned the Sacarauce in some form, and thcy can hardly be other than the most powerful nation known to him in Trans- oxiana, the Khang-kiu. These, like the Sacarauce, came from beyond the Jaxartes; they were the northern neighbours of Parthia just at the time when the Sacarauce are so described. The only other tribe that can be thought of, the Yen-tsai, are known to the Greeks and Romans by a different name, as the Aorsi; and Trogus (Prol., xlii.) mentions the fall of the Sacarauce as one of the latest events in Scythian history, which, as he wrote soon after 2 B.c., agrees with the fact that the last mention of the Khang-kiu in Chinese history is in 11 B.c. ; while the Aorsi are mentioned much later. Khang-kiu seems to be properly the name of a country identical with the Katigha of the Khorda-Avesta and the Gangdiz of Firdausi. Finally, the Pasice or Pasiani are the same as the Apasiace of the earlier Parthian history ; the Sacarauce will have conquered them and swept them with them as the Mongols did with many Tatar tribes. The conquest of Bactria probably fol- lowed soon after the last hopes of the Eistcrn Greeks in Demetrius II. came to nothing. It is very remarkable that

Chang-kicn notices no difference between the Greeks who had been rulers and the Iranians who were their subjects. This implies not merely some lapse of time but a marked decrease in the number of the Greeks, and probably also that here, as in other Eastern parts, they had become more and more completely Orientalized.

Phraates IJ.,1 who succeeded his father in 138, and continued his work, wresting Margiana from the Scythians of Bactria in an expedition commemorated on extant coins, had also to meet the last and most formidable attempt to restore the sovereignty of the Seleucids. Antiochus VIL, one of the ablest kings of his race, had put down the civil wars in Syria, even taking Jerusalem and compelling the Jews to acknowledge his might by paying him military service, and in 130 he marched eastward at the head of a force of 80,000 combatants, swollen by camp-followers to a total of 300,000. Many of the small princes, on whom the hand of Parthia lay heavy, joined him as they had joined his brother; the enemy was smitten on the Great Zab, and in two other battles ; Babylon and then Ecbatana

1 In coins Arsaces Theopator Euergetes Epiphanes Philhellen.

opened their gates to the conqueror; and the subject-nations rose against the Parthians, who, when Antiochus took up his winter quarters in Media, were again confined to their ancient limits. When the snows began to melt, an embassy from Phraates appeared to ask for peace; but the terms demanded by Antiochus—the liberation of Demetrius, the surrender of all conquests, and the payment of tribute for the old Parthian country—were such as could not be accepted without another appeal to the fortunes of war, Demetrius, indeed, was released and sent to Syria, but only to stir up a hostile party in his brother’srear. During the winter the Syrian host had been dispersed over a wide range of cantonments; the disorderly insolence of the soldiers, for which the general Athenzeus was held to be mainly responsible, and of the levies raised in the towns had disgusted the natives; the Medes made secret terms with Parthia, and all the cantonments were attacked by concert on a single day. Hastening to relieve the nearest corps, Antiochus was met by the

Parthian with a superior force of 120,000 men ; he refused the advice of his officers to fall back to the neighbouring mountains, and accepted battle on a field too narrow for the evolution of his troops. The Syrian soldiers, enervated by luxury, were readier to imitate the flight of Athenzeus than the valour of his master; the whole host was involved in the rout and annihilated. Antiochus himself escaped wounded from the fray and cast himself from a rock that he might not be taken alive. This catastrophe (February 129) freed the Parthians for ever from danger from Syria.

Phraates paid funeral honours to the fallen king, and afterwards sent his body to Syria in a silver coffin. He entertained his captive family royally, married one of the two daughters, and sent the eldest son Seleucus to Syria to claim the sovereignty, and so serve future plans of his own; for an attempt to follow and recapture Demetrius, made immediately after the battle, had proved too late. But dangers in the east soon turned the Parthian's attention away from enterprises in the west. In his distress he had bribed the Scythians? to send him help; as they arrived too late he refused to pay them, and they in turn began to ravage the Parthian country. Phraates marched against them, leaving his charge at home to his favourite, the Hyrcanian Euhemerus, who chastised the countries that had sided with Antiochus, made war with Mesene, and treated Babylon and Seleucia with the utmost cruelty. But the Scythian war proved a disastrous one; the enemy overran the whole empire, and for the first time for five hundred years Scythian plunderers again appeared in Mesopotamia'; in a decisive battle Phraates was deserted by the old soldiers of Antiochus, whom he had forced into his service and then treated with insolent cruelty; the Parthian host sustained a ruinous defeat, and the king himself was slain (spring 128, or somewhat later).®

Artabanus I.° (third son of Phriapatius), who now became Arts d anus

king, was an elderly man. 'The Scythians, according to? the too favourable account by our chief authority, were con- tent with their victory, and moved homewards, ravaging the country. But we know from John of Antioch (66, 2) that the successor of Phraates paid them tribute ; and the southern part of Drangiana must now have been per-

2 The date is fixed by Livy, who, according to Orosius, v. 10, and Obseq., De Prodig., 28, places the expedition in the consular year 130. With this it agrees that Antiochus came to the throne in 138 and reigned nine years. Too much weight is often attached to Porphyry's dates by Olympiads, which are merely calculated from the years of reigns.

3 Justin, xlii. 2, 1-2, plainly distinguishes these Scythians from the Tochari, so the Sacarauce must be meant.

4 Jo. Ant., in Miiller, iv. 561.

5 The remains of Antiochus reached Syria in the reign of Alexander II., who came to the throne in 128 (Justin, xxxix. 1, 6).

6 Arsaces Theopator Nicator of the coins.

PRRS 1A

manently occupied by the Scythian tribes, who gave it the name of Sacastane (Sistan), for that name appears in Isidore of Charax (1 B.c.), which implies that the Scythian occupa- tion was even then of long standing. Finally, the coins reveal the existence of Arsacids who were rival kings to

EMPIRE. | 595 Artabanus IT. was the next monarch,® but after him the 128-66.

style of king of kings was taken by the Armenian Tigranes,

one of the most dangerous foes Parthia ever had. In Tigranes

86 it was still a reason for choosing Tigranes as king of 4r-

of part of Syria that he was in alliance with Parthia ™!*

LT a A ee

Artabanus I. and Mithradates I]., and perhaps borrow from individual successes against the Scythians the proud titles which so strongly contrast

with the really wretched condition of the empire. One of these pretenders, Arsaces Euergetes Dicaios Philhellen, resumes the style “king of kings,” which had lapsed since Mithradates I.; and his title “the just,” which seems to be imitated from the Bactrian Heliocles, suggests that he may have come with the Scythians from the land where Heliocles once reigned. Meanwhile it would appear that the men of Seleucia, driven to desperation, had seized the tyrant Euhemerus and put him to a cruel death! Artabanus, when they sought his pardon, threatened to put out the eyes of every man of Seleucia, and was prevented only by his death, in battle with the Tochari, after a very short reign.

His son and successor, Mithradates II. the Great,? was the restorer of the empire. We are briefly told that he valiantly waged many wars with his neighbours, added many nations to the empire, and had several successes against the Scythians, so avenging the disgrace of his predecessors. His successes, however, must have been practically limited to the recovery of lost ground, and the eastern frontier was not advanced. It has been common to connect with his successes the appearance of Parthian names among the Indo-Scythian princes of the Cabul valley ; but this must be false, for even Candahar (U-ghe-shan-li), which lies so much farther west, is repre- sented by the Chinese as an independent kingdom in.the middle of the 1st eentury B.c. On the other hand, Mithra- dates, if not the first to conquer Mesopotamia, was the first to fix the Euphrates as the western boundary of the empire, and towards the end of his reign he was strong enough to interfere with the concerns of Great Armenia and place Tigranes IT. on the throne in a time of disputed succes- sion (94), accepting in return the cession of seventy Armenian valleys. Now, too, the Parthians, as lords of Mesopotamia, came for the first time into contact with Rome, and in 92, when Sulla came to Cappadocia as propretor of Cilicia, he met on the Euphrates the ambas- sador of Mithradates seeking the Roman alliance.+ This embassy was no doubt connected with the Parthian schemes against Syria; Mithradates about this time was at war with Laodice, queen of Commagene or some neigh- bouring part; and her cousin, Antiochus X.,° who supported her, fell in battle with the Parthians. A few years later Strato, tyrant of Bercea, called in the Arab phylarch Azizus and the Parthian governor of Mesopotamia, Mithradates Sinaces, against Demetrius ITI., who reigned at Damascus. The Seleucid was compelled to surrender with

his whole army and ended his life as a captive at the Parthian court. Mithradates the Great seem: to have died just after this event ; there is no reason to suppose that he lived to see the disasters which followed so close on his great successes.

1 In Diod., Exc. Vat., p. 107, there can be little doubt that éviov is a corruption of Evnpépov.

2 On coins Arsaces Theos Euergetes Epiphanes Philhellen.

3 The time of his accession follows approximately from the date 123 on a coin of his rival, Arsaces Nicephorus.

4 The ambassador allowed Sulla to take the place of honour, and on his return was punished for this by death.

5 The queen rév TadtxnyGv of Jos., Ant., xiii, 13, 4 (Leyden MS.— the usual text has “queen of Gilead”), is doubtless the Laodice Thea Philadelphos, daughter of Antiochus VIII. of Syria, who, as Mommsen has shown (Mitth. Arch. Inst. Athen., i. 32), was ancestress of the later sovereigns of Cominagene. The word in Josephus is not perhaps a corruption of Commagene but of some neighbouring place—say Kadduyixnvav,

(Just., xl. 1, 3), but very soon the latter state was so ruined by civil and foreign war that it was no match for Armenia (Plut., Ducullus, 36). Of the details in this history we know only the last act. In 77 the Arsacid Sinatruces’ returned from the land of the Sacarauce to take the throne at the age of eighty, and reigned seven years, There were probably other usurpers; the silence of the coins does not prove the contrary, but rather that the times were so bad that no money was struck, a case of which Parthian numismatics offer other examples. Tigranes conquered Media—primarily, that is, Atropatene —but he also entered Great Media and destroyed the city of Adrapanan, 7 miles west of Ecbatana, “the castle of those who have their seat in Batana” (Ecbatana),® 7.¢., of a line of the Arsacids, for, though Mithradates I. had had his seat in Hyrcania, Phraates II. and his successors down to Mithradates III. held their court in Media (Diod., Zac. Vat., p. 603). The seventy valleys which had been the price of his throne were restored to

Tigranes, and he also ravaged the country of Arbela and Nineveh, and compelled the cession of Adiabene, hitherto a Parthian dependency, and of Mesopotamia, with the fortress of Nisibis. This last war was against Sinatruces,? and was probably going on in 73 when Mithradates Eupator of Pontus made a vain appeal for help to both combatants (Memnon, in Photius, p. 234 b, 27).

Phraates ITI. succeeded his father Sinatruces a little Phraates before the arrival of Lucullus in the East in 70,!° and in U!-

69 refused a second invitation to give help against Rome which Mithradates and Tigranes addressed to him jointly, the latter offering to reward him by giving up all that he had taken from the Parthians. His hatred of Tigranes made him more disposed to alliance with Rome ; and after a period of hesitating neutrality Phraates accepted the overtures of Pompey and prepared to invade Armenia (66), guided by the younger Tigranes, who had quarrelled with his father and taken refuge in Parthia, where he wedded the daughter of the king. Tigranes the elder fled to the mountains; and, after forming the siege of Artaxata, which proved tedious, Phraates turned home- ward, leaving young Tigranes with part of the army to continue the war. The latter, who alone was no match for

his father, fled after an utter defeat to Pompey, who was Pompey just preparing to invade Armenia, and to whom the elder in Ar-

Tigranes presently surrendered at discretion. The Roman, however, gave him very good terms, altogether abandon- ing his son’s cause and even casting him into chains.

6 In Trogus, Prol., 41, the sentence “successores deinde cius Artabanus et Tigranes cognomine Deus a quo subacta est Media et Mesopotamia dictusque in excessu Arabie situs” is wrongly referred (after Vaillant) to Mithradates I. of Parthia. It can really refer only to the famous Tigranes, and in that case must have originally belonged to Prol., 42, having dropped out by homoioteleuton, and been restored from the margin ina false place. Artabanus II., therefore, followed Mithradates II., and his probably are the base coins of Arsaces Euergetes Epi- phanes Philhellen, which according to Gardner, p. 88, seem to belong to this time.

7 On coins Arsaces Autocrator Philopator Epiphanes Philhellen,

8 sid. Char., in Geog. Gr. Min., i. 250.

9 Sallust, Hist., iv. fr. 19, § 3.

10 So Memnon, ir Photius, p. 239 a, 18, confirmed by Phlegon, z7d., p. 84 a, 15. These sources, being independent, have more weight than Appian, Afithr., 104, and Dio Cassius, xxxvi. 45, who speak of the arrival of Pompey. Phraates III. is the ‘‘king of kings, Arsaces Dicaios Epiphanes Theos Eupator Philhellen,” whose coins Gardner wrongly ascribes to Mithradates III. We have express testimony that Phraates was styled “king of kings” and had the epithet “Theos ” (Plut., Pomp., 38; Dio Cass., xxxvii. 6; Phlegon, wd sup. ME

66-53 B.c.

Orodes I.

596

Meantime Phraates had occupied the Parthian conquests of Tigranes, which the Romans had promised him, and invaded Corduene (Beth-Kardo, now Jezirat beni “Omar), whence he sent an embassy to Pompey to intercede for his son-in-law. But the Romans had no further occasion for Parthian help; and, instead of granting his request, Pompey commanded him to leave Corduene, and followed up the command by sending Afranius to clear the coun- try and restore it to Tigranes. Immediately afterwards Pompey’s officer marched into Syria through Mesopotamia, which by treaty had been expressly recognized as Parthian ; and it was another grievous insult that Pompey in writing to Phraates had withheld from him the style of “king of kings.” This no doubt was done out of regard to Tigranes, who claimed the sole right to the title, and had probably enforced his claim upon the weak predecessors of Phraates. Of the four subordinate kingships, the patronage of which was held to give a right to the title, Atropatene, Adiabene, Corduene are known, and the fourth was probably Or- rhoene. All these had once stood under Parthian suzerainty, and, now that Phraates had recovered the lost territory of his predecessors including these states, he resumed, as

his coins show, the proud title which had dropped since the ‘days of Mithradates I., and to which Tigranes had lost his real claim. Nevertheless Phraates at first contented him- self with again sending a fruitless embassy to demand that Pompey would observe the treaty and acknowledge the Euphrates as the Parthian frontier, and it was only when Pompey had gone to Syria (64) that he again attacked and defeated Tigranes. Pompey declined to interfere by force and burden himself with a Parthian war while Mithradates of Pontus was still under arms, but, as both sides appealed to him, he sent umpires to settle the dis- pute (which probably turned on the possession of Cor- duene), and a peaceable solution was effected.!_ The Romans had done more than enough to irritate Parthia and not enough to inspire respect, but, as the Parthians were only beginning to recover from the inner and outer troubles of the last two decennia, they were not yet prepared to enter on a struggle with Rome.

For a century and a half up to the death of Mithradates the Great there had been an unusual degree of unity in the house of the Arsacids; but the corruptions to which every Eastern dynasty ultimately falls a prey appeared at length. About 57 Phraates, the restorer of the empire, was murdered by his two sons, one of whom, Orodes or Hyrodes I. (Zend, Huraodha), took the throne, while his brother Mithradates IIT. got Media ;? but the latter ruled so cruelly that he was expelled by the Parthian nobles, and Orodes reigned alone. Mithradates, with a loyal follower, Orsanes, fled to Gabinius, proconsul of Syria, who had already crossed the Euphrates to restore him by force when he was summoned by Pompey to restore Ptolemy XI. to the throne of Egypt (55). Mithradates, dismissed by the Romans, now tried what he could do without help. Orodes had at first to flee, but soon regained his position, mainly through the help of Surenas, a young noble who had the hereditary right of crowning the king, and was the second person in the empire in point of wealth, nobility, and

1 Dio, using in xxxvii. 6 a different source from that which lay before him at xxxvi. 51, has not observed that the former recapitulates the whole story from the beginning, including the rebellion and defeat of the younger Tigranes as related above.

2 This is Dio’s account, and, though other writers dissent, it is justified by the coins. Thecolns of Arsaces Philopator (or Theopator) Euergetes Epiphanes Philhellen belong to Mithradates, —not, as Gardner thinks, to his father, for Theopator denotes a king whose father was Arsaces Theos, and these coins call him only “ great king,’”’ while Orodes (Arsaces Philo- pator—or Euergetes—Dicaios Epiphanes Philhellen) is called “king of kings.” Both princes, it will be observed, ultimately give up the

title of Philopator, which marks them as colleagues or recognized heirs of their father,—an indirect confirmation of their guilt as parricides.

PEHERSi a

[PARTHIAN

influence, and the first in courage and political skill, Surenas took Seleucia by storm ; Babylon received Mithra- dates, but was reduced by famine; Mithradates then sur- rendered to his brother and was killed before his eyes. These events carry us far into the year 54.

Meantime Crassus, hoping for a rich and easy prey, Cam. had invaded Mesopotamia without a shadow of pretext, paign of had defeated a small Parthian force at Ichne, and occu- Crssus.

pied a number of large towns, such as Nicephorium, Ichnee, Carrhe, whose Greek inhabitants welcomed the Romans as liberators. As Mithradates was at this time in arms in Babylonia, we can understand why Crassus was blamed for a grave error of judgment in not march- ing direct from Nicephorium on Seleucia and Babylon (Plut., Crassus, 17). Instead of this, he retired to winter- quarters in Syria, leaving 7000 foot and 1000 horse to garrison the Mesopotamian cities. Thus his hands were tied for the following campaign, and he could not accept the invitation of Artavasdes II. of Armenia to advance through his country and have his co-operation. A Par- thian embassy appeared in Syria in spring to remonstrate against the faithlessness of Rome, but at the same time the Parthians were ready for war. Surenas, with Silaces, satrap of Mesopotamia, was pressing the Roman garrisons, and prepared to confront Crassus with an army wholly composed of cavalry, while Orodes in person invaded Armenia. In the spring of 53

Crassus crossed the Euphrates at Zeugma with seven legions and 8000 cavalry and light troops, making up a total of 42,000 or 43,000 men,? and was persuaded by Abgar of Orrhoene to leave the river and march straight across the plains against Surenas. At mid- day, 6th May (9th June as the calendar then stood) the Romans had crossed the Balissus (Nahr Belik) and met Surenas half way between Carrhe and Ichne, or a little nearer the latter town. They were not, therefore, in the desert—as the older account represents—for it begins be- yond the Chaboras.* Surenas kept the mass of his troops concealed by a wooded hill, showing only the not very numerous vanguard of cataphracts till the Romans were committed to do battle. The Roman cavalry under Publius Crassus, son of the proconsul, charged the enemy to pre- vent a threatening flank movement, and were drawn away from the mass of the army by the favourite Parthian man- ceuvre of a simulated flight, and then surrounded and cut to pieces. The mass of the Roman host lost courage at this disaster, and already had suffered terrible loss from the light-armed hordes of Parthian serfs who hovered round the enemy at a safe distance and galled it with arrows shot with deadly precision. The legionaries serried their ranks and covered themselves with their shields; but in this close order they were easily broken by the charge of the Parthian freemen with their long heavy lances and almost impenetrable suits of complete armour. The heat, too, thirst, and dust oppressed the Romans, and this first day would have decided their fate but that the Parthians withdrew before evening, true to their rule of encamping

3 Florus says eleven legions and Appian 100,000 men; but Appian has made the mistake of adding to the legion its auxiliaries and count- ing the whole at the higher footing adopted under the empire. Seven such legions with the 8000 cavalry and light troops, and the 8000 men in garrison, make up his total. For the campaign of Crassus we have two independent narratives preserved in Plutarch and Dio; Plutarch’s is the older account, full of colour and valuable detail, but lacking in topographical precision ; in this respect Dio’s source is much to be preferred, but it has suffered from that author’s somewhat arbitrary way of meddling with his materials. The accounts based on Livy (Perioche lib., 106; Florus, iii, 11; Festus Rufus, Brev., 17, and Orosius, vi. 13) agree in all essential points with Plutarch, who, how- ever, draws not from Livy but from some Greek writer, perhaps Nicolaus of Damascus.

- Plutarch himself speaks of marshes (cap. 25); the only modern account that agrees with the facts is that of G. Rawlinson, p. 163 sg.

at a distance from the foe. Crassus retired at night, leav- ing all who were badly wounded behind him, and reached Carrhe safely ; but his army was sadly demoralized, and he himself lost his head, and, though fairly secure at Carrhe, thought only of immediate retreat to Syria.1 He marched by night northwards towards the mountains; the several divisions lost one another and each sought only to shift for itself. The questor Cassius, one of Crassus's best officers, returned to Carrhe and thence regained Syria in safety. Crassus himself, after getting dangerously en- tangled in marshy ground, had almost reached the moun- tains when he was induced, by the despair of his troops rather than by error of his own judgment, to yield to treacherous proposals of Surenas and descend again into the plain. As he mounted the horse which was to convey him to a meeting with the enemy's general the gestures of the Parthians excited suspicions of treachery, a struggle ensued, and Crassus was struck down and slain. Scarcely 10,000 men out of the whole host reached Syria by way of Armenia (Appian, B. C., ii. 18); 20,000 had fallen and 10,000 captives were settled in Antioch, the capital of Margiana. The token of victory, the hand and head of Crassus, reached Orodes in Armenia just as he had made peace with Artavasdes and betrothed his eldest son Pacorus to the daughter of the Armenian king. The Roman disaster was due primarily to the novelty of the Parthian way of assault, which took them wholly by sur- prise, and partly also to bad generalship ; but the Romans always sought a traitor to account for a defeat, and in the present case threw the blame partly on Andromachus of Carrhe, who really did mislead Crassus in his retreat, and was rewarded by the Parthians with the tyranny of his native town (Nic. Dam., in Athen., vi. p. 252 D),? but had no great influence on the disaster, and partly on Abgar, whose advice was no doubt bad, but not necessarily treach- erous,® while the silence of the older account disposes of Dio's improbable assertion that the men of Orrhoene fell on the rear of the Romans. That the Parthians did not count Abgar their friend and punished him with deposi- tion may be fairly inferred from the list‘ of kings of Edessa given by Dionysius of

Telmahar, which shows that the reign of Abgar IT. ended in 53, and was followed by a year of interregnum.

Surenas, the victor of Carrhe, whose fame was now too great for the condition of a mere subject, was put to death a little later, the victim of Orodes's jealousy ; the victory itself was weakly followed up. Not till 52 was Syria invaded, and then with forces so weak that Cassius found

'the defence easy. In July 51 (Sextilis, according to the

old calendar) the attack was renewed with greater forces ; the Romans were still weak in troops, their harshness and injustice had alienated the provincials, and some districts— as Judzea—openly sympathized with the foe. Thus all the chances were still favourable to the Parthians, who indeed overran the open country, but were too unskilled in Siege to take Antioch. As they drew off, Cassius stopped their way at Antigonia and inflicted on them a defeat in which Osaces, the real leader of their host under the young prince Pacorus,was mortally wounded (August 51). Pacorus wintered in Cyrrhestica, the Romans under the new pro- consul Bibulus not venturing beyond the walls of Antioch ;

1 That he waited for the new moon—+.e., some twenty days, as Dio Says—seems to be a mistake. Perhaps it is due to Dio himself; at all events, the older account is preferable. -™

- The Parthians leaned much on the despots of the Greek cities. Zenodotia, the only Mesopotamian town that Crassus had to storm, had a despot, Apollonius.

3 The alternative of a march along the Euphrates was also open to Serious military objections.

4 It must be remembered that a correction of four years has to be applied to all the dates in this list.

FERS TA

but, the satrap of Mesopotamia’ having raised a revolt 53-88 3.0,

against Orodes in the name of Pacorus, the latter was recalled by his father and Syria was entirely evacuated by May 50.

Orodes avoided the threatened breach with his son by associating Pacorus in the empire;® but the Parthians took little advantage of the civil wars that preceded the fall of the Roman republic. They occasionally stepped in to save the weaker party from utter annihilation, but even this policy was not followed with energy, and Orodes refused to help Pompey in his distress because the Roman would not promise to give him Syria. The Pompeian Cexcilius Bassus was saved from Ceesar’s general Antistius Vetus by the sudden appearance of a Parthian force under Pacorus, which, however, retired when winter came on (December 45). In 43, again, Cassius had a force of mounted Parthian bowmen with him in Syria, but dismissed them when he marched to join Brutus and face the triumvirs. Labienus was with Orodes negotiating for help on a larger scale when the news of Philippi arrived, and remained with him till 40, when he was at last sent back to Syria, together with Pacorus and a numerous host. The Roman garrisons in Syria were old troops of Brutus and Cassius, who had been taken over by Antony ; those in the region of Apamea joined Labienus; Antony’s legate Decidius Saxa was defeated, and fled from the camp afraid of his own men. Apamea, Antioch, and all Syria soon fell into the hands of the Parthians, and Decidius was pursued and slain. Pacorus advanced along the great coast road and received the submission of all the Phoenician cities save Tyre. Simultaneously the satrap Barzaphranes appeared in Galilee; the patriots all over Palestine rose against Phasael and Herod (see Israzt, vol. xiii. p. 425); and five hundred Parthian horse appearing before Jerusalem were enough to overthrow the Roman party and substitute Antigonus for Hyrcanus. The Parthian administration was a favour- able contrast to the rule of the oppressive proconsuls, and the justice and clemency of Pacorus won the hearts of the Syrians. Meantime Labienus had penetrated Asia Minor as far as Lydia and Ionia; the Roman governor Plancus could only hold the islands ; most of the cities opened their gates to Labienus, the ‘“ Parthicus Imperator,” Stratonicea alone resisting and successfully standing a siege. But Rome even in its time of civil divisions was stronger than Parthia; in 39 Ventidius Bassus, general for Antony, suddenly appeared in Asia and drove

Labienus and his provincial levies before him without a battle as far as the Taurus. Here the Parthians came to Labienus's help, but, attacking rashly and without his co-operation, they were defeated by Ventidius, and Labienus's troops were involved in the disaster. Labienus himself escaped to Cilicia, but was captured and executed by the Egyptian governor of Cyprus. In the passes of the Amanus the Romans were again in danger, but Ventidius at length gained a decisive victory at Trapezon, north of the Orontes valley, where Phranipates, the ablest lieutenant of Pacorus, fell ; and the Parthians evacuated Syria. Before Ventidius had com- pleted the resettlement of the Roman power in Syria and Palestine, and while his troops were dispersed in winter- quarters, the Parthians fell on him again with a force of more than 20,000 men and an unusually large proportion of free cavaliers in full armour. Ventidius, however, gained time to bring up legions from Cappadocia by de- ceiving a dynast of Cyrrhestica, who was Pacorus's spy. Then a battle was fought near the shrine of Hercules at Gindarus in Cyrrhestica, on the anniversary, it is said, of the defeat of Crassus (9th June 38), and the Parthians were

5 The name was Orondapates, corrupted to "Opvodamrdyrn in Dio,

xl. 30. ® So the coins show, Gardner, p. 41.

utterly routed and Pacorus himself slain. His head was sent round to the cities of Syria which were still in revolt to prove to them that their hopes had failed. There was no further resistance save from Aradus and Jerusalem.

Orodes, now an old man and sorely afflicted by the death of his favourite son, nominated his next son, Phraates, as his colleague, and the latter began his reign by making away with brothers of whom he was jealous as the sons of a princely mother, daughter of Antiochus of Commagene, and then strangling his father, who had not concealed his anger at the crime (37). The

reign of Orodes was the culminating point of Parthian greatness, and all his successors adopted his title of “king of kings, Arsaces Euergetes” (taken from Phraates II.) “Dicaios” (first borne by the pretendant spoken of at p. 595, who was perhaps father of Sinatruces, and so ancestor of the succeeding princes) ‘“Epiphanes” (like Mithradates I.) “Philhellen ”! (like Phriapatius). It was he who moved the capital westward to Seleucia, or rather to Ctesiphon (Taisefun), its eastern suburb.?

Phraates IV. continued his reign in a series of crimes, murdering every prominent man among his brothers, and even his own adult son, that the nobles might find no Arsacid to lead their discontent. Many of the nobles fled to foreign parts, and Antony felt encouraged to plan a war of vengeance against Parthia.? Antony had no hope of forcing the well-guarded Euphrates frontier, but since the death of Pacorus Armenia had again been brought under Roman patronage, and he hoped to strike a blow at the heart of Parthia through Atropatene. Keeping the Parthians in play by feigned proposals of peace while he matured his preparations, he appeared in Atropatene in 36 with 60,000 legionaries and 40,000 cavalry and auxiliary troops, and at once formed the siege of the capital Phraaspa (Takht-i-Suleiman). The Median king Artavasdes, son of Ariobarzanes,* had marched to join Phraates, who looked for the attack in another quarter. Phraates had only 40,000 Parthians, including but 400 freemen who never left the king, and probably 10,000 Median cavalry ;> but these forces were well handled, and the two kings had reached the scene of war before Antony was joined by his baggage and heavy siege-train, and opened the campaign by capturing the train and cutting to pieces its escort of 7500 men under the legate Oppius Statianus. Antony was still able to repel a demonstration to relieve Phraaspa, but his provisions ran short, and the foraging parties were so harassed that the siege made no progress ; and, as it was now October, he was at length forced to open negotia- tions with Phraates. The Parthian promised peace if the Romans withdrew, but, when Antony took him at his word, abandoning the siege-engines, he began a vigorous pursuit, and kept the Romans constantly on the defensive, chastising one officer who hazarded an engagement by a defeat which cost the Romans 3000 killed and 5000 wounded. Still

1 Orodes indeed knew Greek and cared for Greek literature. The Bacchse was performed at his son's betrothal.

2 Ctesiphon was capital at the time of Crassus's invasion, and Amunianus (xxiii. 6, 23) calls Pacorus the second founder of the city, the first Vardanes being perhaps a mythical person. A coin of Orodes with the title xréorys (Gardner, 39) may refer to this,

- Of this war we have three accounts, all based on one source, prob- ably a monograph by Dellius. The best is Plutarch's (Ant., 37 sq., favourable to Antony). The later minor historians (who drew from Livy) and Dio (xlix. 23 sq.) are hostile to Antony (Octavianist) ; but the former, while sharing Dio's general point of view, approach Plutarch in many points of detail. Plutarch drew from the original source, indirectly perhaps through Nic. Dam.; Dio used Livy, but not exclu- sively. The point in the story where the mutual relations of the several narratives come out most clearly is in what is said of the adviser who saved the Romans from utter destruction.

4 Mon. Ancyr., col. vi. 1. 12.

@ Plut., Ant., 44; Justin, xli. 2, 6. The number 10,000 is given by Apollonides in Strabo, xi. p. 523.

greater were the losses by famine and thirst and dysentery ; and the whole force was utterly demoralized and had lost a fourth part of its fighting men, a third of the camp- followers, and all the baggage when, after a retreat of twenty-seven days from Phraaspa to the Araxes by way of Mianeh (276 miles), they reached the Armenian frontier,

Eight thousand more perished of cold and from snow-

storms in the Armenian mountains ; the mortality among the wounded was terrible; the Romans would have been undone had not Artavasdes of

Armenia allowed them to winter in his land. The failure of the expedition was due partly to the usual Roman ignorance of the geo- graphical and climatic conditions, partly to a rash haste in the earlier operations, but very largely also (as in the case of Napoleon's Russian campaign) to the lack of dis- cipline in the soldiers of the Civil War, which called for very stern chastisement even during the siege of Phraaspa, and culminated at length in frequent desertions and in open mutiny, driving Antony to think of suicide. The Romans laid the whole blame on Artavasdes, but without any adequate reason. At the same time the disaster of Antony following that of Crassus seemed to show that within their own country the Parthians could not safely be attacked on any side, and for a century and a half Roman cupidity left them alone.

The Median Artavasdes, whose little country had borne the whole brunt of the war, fell out with the Parthians about the division of booty, and made overtures to Antony for alliance with Rome; and in 33, when the Romans had treacherously seized the person of the Armenian Arta- vasdes and occupied his land, a treaty was actually con- cluded by which Symbace, which had once been Median, was again detached from Armenia, and Roman troops were sent to co-operate with the Median king in repelling the efforts of the Parthians to reseat on the throne of his fathers Artaxes, son of the deposed king of Armenia. These troops, however, were recalled before the battle of Actium, and then Media and Armenia fell before the Parthians ; the Romans who were still in the country were slain, and Artaxes II. was raised to the Armenian throne (30). In the very next year, however, the course of Par- thian affairs led Artaxes to make his peace with Rome.®

Phraates's tyranny had only been aggravated by his successes, and open rebellion broke out in 33. We have coins of an anonymous pretender dating March to June 32."

To him succeeded Tiridates II., whose rebellion was at a Tiridate | climax during the war of Actium. Towards the end of Il

30 Tiridates succumbed and fled to Syria, where Octa- vian, who was wintering in the province, allowed him to

remain. A fresh attempt made from this side, with the help

perhaps of the Arabs of the desert, and by crossing the Euphrates at the island now called Koha, had better success. The order of events here given is that deduced by Vaillant and Longuerue, combining the Roman history of Dio with the Parthian of Trogus,—Lachmann, who makes Tiridates be expelled only once and supposes a mistake on the part of Trogus as to place and date of his meeting with Augustus, assigning Ist March 29 as the date of Horace, Carm., ili. 8; but the chronological difficulties of this view are insuperable. Phraates was taken by surprise and fled, slaying his concubines that they might not fall a prey to his victor (Isid. Char., 1); Tiridates seated him- self on the throne in June 27,8 and Phraates wandered for some time in exile till he persuaded the Scythians to undertake his cause.

6 See coins in Eckhel, vi. 82, compared with Dio, li. 16, and the reference in Horace, Carm., ii. 9, 20-22.

7 Ascribed to Tiridates I]. by Gardner, p. 44 sq.

8 Desius, 285 Sel. In this month there are coins of Phraates and also of an Arsaces Kuergetes Autocrator Epiphanes Philhellen, who must be Tiridates I.

EMPIRE. |

To understand who his helpers were we must take up again the thread of the history of the far Eastern lands. It was now a century since the Tibetan races who had supplanted the Greeks to the north of the Hindu Kush had first exercised a decisive influence on western affairs, and during most of that time there had been little change in the boundaries of empire in eastern Iran. Since the time of Eucratides the centre of Greek influence had lain more to the south of the Hindu Kush and in India proper, and this was perhaps one reason why Sogdiana and Bactria were lost so early; since that loss Greek power and culture had their chief and most lasting seat in the Cabul valley, where colonies of Alexander were particularly numerous.

The places where coins have been found—and these are almost our only source of knowledge 1—prove that on the death of Eucra- tides the Indian country fell to Apollodotus and Bactria to Heliocles. Each of these held for a time the greater part of east Iran, but Apollo- dotus was the last Greek

king who ruled over Kandahar and Sistan. For a time there were also separate kingdoms in the Cabul valley under Antialcides, and in the district of Peshawar under Lysias, but after a period of civil wars they were all merged in one great Greco- Indian realm extending from Cabul to the Sutlej, and at times as far south as Barygaza; the capital was (akala (officially called Euthy- demia). Eight Yavana kings, says the Véyu-Purdna, rcigned eighty- two years, and just eight names? are found on coins whose distri- bution justifies us in attributing them to kings whose sway extended over the whole Greek realm. This confirms the historical value of the Indian source, and the eighty-two years will have to be reckoned from the time when Demetrius was driven out of Bactria and fixed his residence in the Punjab (c. 175), so that the end of the kingdom will fall about 98. Menander, the most important of the eight (ec. 125-c. 95 2),3 carried his arms farther than any of his predecessors, crossed the Hypasis, and pushed as far as the "Isamus," a locality which must be sought much farther east than used to be supposed, since his coins are common as far as Mathura (Muttra) and Rampur, and Indian sources tell us that the Greeks subducd Ayodhya, the land of the Panchala, and Mathura, and even took the old capital, Pataliputra. The Greeks were too few to hold these exorbitant conquests without much concession to native habits and prejudices, and we learn without very great surprise from a Buddhist book that Menander became a Buddhist. The same source? tells us that Menander was born at Alasanda (Alexandria ad Caucasum) or at the (neighbouring ?) village of Kalasi. Buddhism was strong ir this quarter at an early date, and a Buddhist stupa appears as type on a coin of Agathocles, who reigned in Arachosia and Drangiana about 180-165 (Sallet, op. cit., p. 95). A Greek source praises Men- ander's just rule ; the Milinda-prasna says, "In the whole of Jam- budipa there was no one comparable to Milinda Raja. . . he was endowed with riches . . . and guarded by military power in a state of the utmost efficiency " (Jour. As. Soc. Beng., v. 5382). When he died in the camp he received every honour paid to a deceased " chakravartti,'' and his ashes were divided, as Buddha's had been, in cenotaphs erected in every town. Perhaps political mingled with pious motives ; the struggle for the dust of Menander mentioned by a Greek writer may be compared with that among the ''diadochi " for the bones of Alexander, and so will be one phase of the many and long divisions among the Indian Greeks testified to by the coins. In little less than a century we have the names of twenty-three kings

all later than Eucratides, and nine of them apparently later than Menander. Thcy appear to belong to four kingdoms, the upper and lower Cabul valley, Peshawar, and the Punjab, and as there are but two names common to more than one king we may conclude that the rapid changes were often violent, that these were not fixed dynasties, perhaps that the kings rose by military election. All this confirms the Indian source (in Kern, wt supra, p. 38), “the fiercely-fighting Greeks did not stay in Madhyadega ; there was a cruel dreadful war in their own kingdom between themselves.”

All the time that the Greek kingdom lasted there was beside it another whose kings bear Scythian or Parthian names ; their coins belong chiefly to the western Punjab the outrunners of the Kashmir Himalayas, and west of the Indus, ajawar, and sometimes Bamian. The founder of this kingdom was Maues, a younger contemporary of Demetrius and Apollodotus, whose types are imitated on his coins. The coins confirm the Chinese notice that the Sse, driven from their seats at Balkash and Issi-kul, founded a kingdom in Kipin (Cabul valley) about 161, with the correction that the kingdom did not at once extend so far west, the coins of Maues being found only in the Punjab. Now this is just the country (between the Indus and Hydaspes) which is said to have submitted

1 For the facts used in this paragraph see especially Cunningham, in Num. Chron., new series, x., xii.

2 Demetrius, Eucratides, Apollodotus, StratoI., Strato II., Zoilus, Menandcr, Dionysius.

3 He must have had a long reign; see Sallet, Nachfolger Al. d. Gr., p. 34.

4 “Gérei-Sanhita,” in Kern, Vardha-Mihira, p. 87. This is an astronomical work of the Ist century of our era. The Isamus of Strabo, x1. p. 516, is probably the Sambus of Arr., Ind., 4, 4. The name is presumably corrupt, and Cunningham’s conjecture, Dodvov (the Céna) for “Ioduov, would suit best

but for the graphical difficulty it involves. ; 5 ‘‘Milinda-prasna,” in Hardy, Manual of Buddhism, pp. 516, 440.

riR Si sa

without a war to Mithradates I. of Parthia, and we must probably ¢.175-32 assume that it was the Sse who put themselves under the Parthian B.c.

empire, but that the arrangement was not a lasting one, the parties to it lying so far apart.

The kings of the Sse do not seem to have been Parthians,® but Kings of the nation was one of the many Iranian nomad tribes that once the Sse.

roamed over the steppes north of Sogdiana, while their coins show that they were influenced by the culture of the Indian Greeks, from whom they copied the titles of “satrap” and “strategus.”” The kingdom lay north of the Greeks, roughly bounded by the Cabul river and a line continuing eastward in the same latitude, and it is one of the unsolved puzzics of this obscure history how such a strip of mountain-land ever became so prosperous and powerful as it did under the second king, Azes, and how it was able to resist the might of Menander. We know from the Periplus that on the lower Indus the Parthians who fixed themselves there in the first Christian century had been preceded by a Scythian kingdom of sufficient permancncy to leave to the district the name of Scythia or Indo-Scythia. But that the Sse were the founders of this remote kingdom is not so certain as is usually supposed ; it is quite as possible that at the time when the Scythians overran Iran the founders of the Indo-Scythian kingdom advanced from Sacas- tane through the Bolan Pass. The Sse certainly did not force themselves wedge-like between the Greek settlements, and the chronology of the coins precludes the easy solution that their power developed only after the fall of the Greeks. The coins name five supreme kings—Maues, Azes, Azilises, Onones, Spalirises ; the dynasty began about 161 ; Azes, the second king, restruck coins of Apollodotus ; and there is not the least reason to doubt that he directly followed him, and that the power of the Sse under Azes fell in the time before Menander, when the Greeks were weak and divided. It was probably Menander who again drove the Scythians within narrower limits. ‘The coins show further a lack of unity in the later days of the Scythian kingdom, and, taking this fact with the smallness of the total number of names, we cannot con- clude that it lasted much later than the Greek realms.

Hermeus, the last of the Greek kings, held the lower valley of Chinese the Cabul river and Peshawar with the district around it and the annals.

belt of the Punjab opposite, and he reigned, as the effigies on his coins show, from youth to old age. These last days of Greek rule in the East fortunately receive light from the Chinese Annals (of the first Han).? After the opening of trade with the West about 105 p.c. the Chinese also visited Kipin, but their agents in this remote realm were repeatedly plundered by the King U-to-lao (between 105 and 87). At length, under the son of the latter, the Chinese commander on the frontier joined In-mo-fu, sou of the king of Yung-khiu, in a sudden attack on the king of Kipin, who was slain and In-mo-fu installed in his place. Difficulties arose between the new king and China, and when In-mo-fu ultimately tried to make his peace the emperor Hiao-yuan-ti had just resolved to break off all connexion with the distant western lands. As the Chinese kept no military guard of the western frontier till 59 B.c.,° and the new policy of Hiao-yuan-ti began soon after 49," In-mo-fu must have begun to reign in Kipin some time between 59 and 51. In 32 he again, but still in vain, sent tribute and attempted to reopen the profitable commerce with China. The coins keep us so well in- formed of the names of rulers in this period that In-mo-fu must be capable of identification, and no ruler can be meant but Hermeus, who in the commonest dialect of Prakrit would be Hermaid, a word necessarily mutilated by Chinese inability to pronounce 7. Yung- khiu is therefore Yonaki "' the city of the Greeks." The dethroned king of Kipin and his father U-to-lao must, from what the Chinese records tell of the origin of their power, be kings of the Sse ; U-to-lao is probably Azo Rad, '' king Azes."

We have Chinese accounts of the eastern lands of Iran in the time of open trade along the great south road from Phi-shan on the Chinese frontier over the Hanging Pass (beside Lake Yashil-Kul at the west end of the Alichur Pamir),!° and so south-west to Hian-tu (the Indians), and then to the fruitful and temperate plain of Kipin. The king of Kipin, a mighty lord, resided at Siin-Siin (perhaps Avovicou, Dionysopolis or Nagara, now Jalalabad). The inhabitants were industrious and ingenious in carving, building, weaving, and embroidery, and in silk manufacture ; vessels of gold and silver, utensils of copper and tin, were found in their bazaars. 'Their coins of gold

and silver had a horseman on one side and a human head on the other. The silver pieces here described may be those of Hippostratus, or of any other of the later Greek, or of the Scythian kings; but as none of these kings struck gold the pieces of

6 Mains differs only by a formative syllable from Mavéxys, leader of the Sace at Gaugamela (Arr., iii. 8, 3). *Ovdyys is a Parthian name, but really identical with that of Eunones, king of the Aorsi (Tac., Ann., xii. 15); the

names can hardly be Parthian. ; Ot eee Ritter, Erdkunde, wait, 8, 682 sq.; and Abel Remusat, Nouveaux Mélanges Asiatiques, i. 205 sq. –

8 Abel Rémusat, Mém. del Ac., viii. (1827) p. 119. oa

9 See what is related for the year 46 in Hist. Gén. de la Chine, iil. 161.

10 This identification is obtained by comparing the old description of the Hanging Pass (Rémusat, Nouv. Mél., 1. 209) with that of the pass traversed by the Chinese expedition to Badakhshan in 1759 (Hist. Gén., xi. 572).

27 B.c.- Eucratides with his bust on one side and the mounted Dioscuri

PUL AW)

on the other will still have had course. South-west of Kipin lay the hot plain of U-ghe-shan-li (Kandahar and Sistan), where the southern road ended (necessarily at a considerable commercial town, therefore at Alexandria in Arachosia). Hence a road leads to An-si (in its original sense, supra, p. 593), first northward (to Herat) and then east (to Merv). The inhabitants of U-ghe-shan-li, which was too remote to be often visited from China, hated blood- shed and had weapons adorned with gold and silver. Their coins are described in the same terms as those of Kipin ; and probably the latter had course, and there was no native mint. But there was an independent kingdom ; and, asit is certain that Drangiana and Arachosia were not at this time (middle of 1st century B.c.) subject to the Greeks—no coins of the successors of Apollodotus having been found there—we conclude that this

kingdom was that of the Sace, who overran Iran in 128. Later Chinese writers say that the country was subject to An-si (Parthia), and Isidore of Charax (1 B.c.) makes Arachosia a Parthian satrapy. It was prob- ably under Orodes that Arachosia was conquered and the Sace confined to Sacastane.

The latest coins of Hermeus bear also the name of a king, Kujula- Kaso, first in the Arianian and finally also in the Greek legend (Kofovdo-Kad¢gifov). Now the Chinese tell us (Afém. de U'Ac., xxv. 27, 29) that about a century after the Tochari (Yue-chi) conquered Bactria—t.e., 89-27 —Kieu-tsieu-khio, prince of Kuei-shuang, conquered the other four principalities of the Tochari and named his whole kingdom Kuei-shuang (Kashan). He then warred against the Parthians and took the great land of Kao-fu (Cabul), which had been subject to India, Kipin, and Parthia, as well as the neigh- bouring lands of Po-ta (north of U-ghe-shan-li; to be identified

'with the Pactyes or Patans originally settled in Ghér) and Kipin.

Wars and anarchy,

The last fact shows that Kicu-tsieu-khio is none other than Kofovdo-Kaddifov, who indeed is called on the coins Kashana- Yavugo, ''king of Kashan," and ''steadfast in the faith," d.¢., in Buddhism, which early found entrance among the Tochari. With this account of the conquest of Cabul it agrces that Isidore names Arachosia but not Cabul as Parthian. Now the war of the king of Kashan with the Parthians is none other than that undertaken by the Scythians to restore Phraates to the throne. Trogus had an excursus in this connexion on the Asianic kings of the Tochari and the fall of the Sacarauce (doubtless before the increased might of the realm of the Tochari). These intestine conflicts of the Scythians seem to have been at their height during the exile of Phraates, aud their issue decided his fortunes. The Romans followed these movements with attention because they threatened Tiridates, and Horace has repeated references to them of a kind that is more than poetic fancy (Carm., i. 26, 8 sg., and especially ill. 29, 26 sg.,—"' Tanais discors," wars of Tochari and Sacarauce ; '"plans of the Seres,"' the Chinese stood in close relation to these lands and had powerfully intervened in the affairs of the Sacarauce in 44),

Before the great host of the Scythians Tiridates retired without a contest. On Ist March 261 the news of this had not reached Rome; but in June, as the coins prove," Phraates again held the throne. 'Tiridates fled to Augustus, who refused to give him up, but agreed not to support him, and restored to Phraates a son whom Tiridates had carried off and placed in his hands as a hostage. The Parthian in return promised to give up the captives and ensigns taken from Crassus and Antony, and fulfilled his promise in 20, when Augustus was in Syria. He would hardly have done so perhaps had not his throne been again insecure; there is a break in the Parthian coinage after October 23, and it is not resumed for many years —a Sure sign of inner troubles, There is just one coin known of Phraates's later years (October 10 B.c.; Gardner, p. 62), which probably marks his return from a second exile; for we know from Josephus (Ant., xvi. 8, 4) that between 12 and 9 B.c. Mithradates IV. was on the throne of the Arsacids, and that Herod of Judea was accused of plotting with him against Rome? The revolt of Media Atropatene, which asked a king from Rome some time between 20 B.c. and 2 a.p., and received Ario- = ee ee ee ee

1 Hor., Cats ii, 19-20, belongs to this year, as appears from Phraates's coinage of Desius, 286 Sel. The reduction of the Can- tabrians refers to Augustus's personal presence in Spain in the end of 27 (Dio, liii. 22), not to their second reduction in 25, which could hardly be known in Rome on 1st March. The retreat of the Scythians refers to the Sarmatian war (Florus, iv. 12, 20).

2 Prokesch-Osten, Monnaies des Rois Parthes, p. 37.

3 Vaillant having missed this passage, no later writer cites it.

barzanes II., son of Artavasdes, was probably about this time (Aon. Anc., vi. 9). In 10 or 9 B.c. Phraates took the precaution of sending his family to Rome so that the rebels might have no Arsacid pretender to put forward, keeping only and designating as heir his youngest son by his favourite wife Thea Musa Urania, an Italian slave-girl presented to him by Augustus. This

was mainly a scheme of Urania's, and she and her son crowned it by murdering the old tyrant. Phraates V., or as he is usually called Phraataces (diminutive), was thus the third Arsacid, in successive generations, to reach the throne by parricide.4

Phraates V., whose first coin is of May 2 B.c., tried an Phrases energetic policy, expelling Artavasdes III. and the Roman V.

troops that supported him from Armenia, and seating on the throne Tigranes IV., who had been a fugitive under Parthian protection. Ariobarzanes of Atropatene was probably expelled at the same time; a little later we find him in exile at Rome, and (in spite of Strabo, xi. p. 523, who perhaps had not the latest news) the old line of Atropates seems now to have been superseded by a line of Parthian princes. As Augustus did not wish to extend the empire, and Phraates was not very secure on his throne, neither party cared to fight, and an agreement was patched up after some angry words, Phraates resigning all claim on Armenia and leaving his brothers as hostages in Rome (1 4.D.). Phraates now married his mother, who appears with him on coins from April 2 a.p.,a match probably meant to conciliate the clergy, as he knew that the nobles hated him. In fact he was soon driven by a rebellion (after October 4 a.D.) to flee to Roman soil, where he died, it seems, not long afterwards.

The Parthians called Orodes II. from exile to the throne. Civil Of him we have a coin of autumn 6 a.p.: but his wild wars

2

and cruel temper soon made him hated, and he was

murdered while out hunting. Anarchy and bloodshed now gaining the upper hand, the Parthians sent to Rome (before 9 a.D.), and received thence as king Vonones, the eldest of the sons of Phraates IV., a well-meaning prince, whose foreign education put him quite out of sympathy with his country. He preferred a litter to a horse, cared nothing for hunting and carousals, liked to be with Greeks, and relaxed the stringent etiquette that barred approach to the sovereign, and at the same time he tried to check peculation. A strong reaction of national feeling took place, and the main line of the Arsacids

being now exhausted by death or exile, Artabanus, an Arsacid on the mother’s side, who had grown up among the Dahe and had after- wards been made king of Media (Atropatene), was set up as pretendant in 10 or 1] a.p. Artabanus was defeated at first,° but ultimately gained a great and bloody victory and seated himself in Ctesiphon. Vonones fled to Armenia and was chosen as king of that country (16 a.p.), but Tiberius, who was anxious to avoid war, and did not wish

to give Artabanus III. any pretext to invade Armenia, Arta- By and by he was banus interned in Cilicia, and in 19 a.p. lost his life in an

persuaded Vonones to retire to Syria.

attempt to escape.

The clearest proof of the miserable results of continual civil war in Parthia at this time is that a Jewish robber state maintained itself for fifteen years in the marshes of Nearda and the Babylonian Nisibis a little after 21 a.p.,

4 Of the Beni Jelldb, who reigned in Tugurt till after the middle of the present century, every sultan is said to have murdered his father, and Mahmud Shah of Guzerat (1538-54) made all his wives procure abortion as the only possible protection for a king against attempts of sons on his life,

> A drachma of King Vonones when he had conquered Artabanus is one of the earliest examples of the use of the personal name of the king instead of the throne name. The practice became common, and marks an era of disputed successions, when it was necessary to indi- cate to which pretendant a coin belonged.

tarzes 1 Var- ‘nes,

EMPIRE. |

PER

and that, when some satrapies were in revolt and others threatened it, the great king made a pact with the bandits to keep Babylonia in control in his

absence. Yet amidst such constant rebellions Artabanus III., shrewd and energetic, not merely held his own but waged successful foreign wars, set his son Arsaces on the throne of Armenia, and challenged Rome still more directly by raising claims to lordship over the Iranian population of Cappadocia. Through the whole first century of the Roman empire all relations to Parthia turned on the struggle for influence in Armenia, and, much as he loved peace, Tiberius could not suffer this disturbance of the balance of power to pass un- noticed. He persuaded Pharasmanes, king of Iberia, to put forward his brother Mithradates as claimant to the Armenian throne. The Iberians, after having procured the assassination of Arsaces, advanced and took Artaxata, the capital ; and, when the Parthians came against them under Orodes, another son of Artabanus, Pharasmanes strengthened himself by opening the Caucasian Gates to the Sarmatians,! whose chiefs were easily gained to fight where there was money or booty to be got. A bloody battle ensued; Orodes was wounded in single combat with Pharasmanes, and his troops fled, believing him to be dead. In 36 Artabanus himself took the field, but a widespread revolt, long prearranged by Tiberius with a Parthian party led by Sinnaces, rose behind him in the name of Tiridates, a grandson of Phraates IV., who had been chosen as pretendant from the Parthian princes at Rome, and Artabanus retired to Hyrcania to resume his old relations with the adjacent nomads. The Roman legate of Syria, Lucius Vitellius, with his legions, led Tiridates into Parthia, where his followers joined him; Mesopo- tamia, Apolloniatis, and Chalonitis did homage; and the Syrian and Jewish population of Seleucia, which hated the party of Artabanus (the oligarchy of the 300 “adi- ganes” drawn from the old Greek families), were grati- fied by democratic institutions. In Ctesiphon Tiridates was crowned by Surenas, but without waiting for Phraates and Hiero, satraps of two chief provinces (Upper and Rhagian Media?), who became his enemies for this slight. Nor were they alone in their jealousy of the absolute court-influence of Sinnaces and his father Abdagases. Artabanus was called back and appeared from Hyrcania with an auxiliary force of Dahz and Sacz ; Tiridates re- tired to Mesopotamia, where his party was strongest, but his army melted away, and in 36 a.p. he took refuge in Syria. Much as Artabanus hated the Romans, his insecure position at home drove him in 37 to make an accommoda- tion on terms favourable to them and send his son Darius as hostage to Tiberius. Indeed, he was again for a short time an exile with Izates of Adiabene, who, however,

effected his restoration and was rewarded by the transference of Nisibis to him from Armenia, which the Parthians had again got in their hands, taking advantage of the foolish policy of Gaius Cesar, who had tempted Mithradates of Armenia to Rome and imprisored him there. Artabanus died soon after his second restoration, probably in 40 A.D., as Josephus (Ant., xviii. 7, 2) still mentions him in 39.

In Artabanus's lifetime the second place in the empire had been held by one Gotarzes, who appears to have been his colleague in the upper satrapies, and perhaps his lieu- tenant in his flight to Adiabene. But there is monumental evidence? that he was not, as Josephus says and Tacitus

1 Josephus, Ant., xviii. 4, 4 (according to the MSS.), says Alans ; SxvOas is an interpolation. In modern as in ancient times Tberian kings have repeatedly followed the same dangerous policy to increase their strength. The power of the Christian kings of Georgia in the 12th century rested wholly on alliance with the mountain tribes.

2 On a Greek inscription at Bisutun he is "satrap of satraps and T'edrro8 pos" (son of Géw); on a coin he probably appears as Goterzés, king of the kings of the Areani (east Iranians), son of Ge, "kalymenos A

implies, Artabanus's son (except by adoption), and so we 21-45 a.p.

find that the succession first fell to Vardanes, who coined money in September 40. But in 41 Gotarzes appears as king. The cruelties of Gotarzes gave Vardanes an oppor- tunity of return; in two days he rode 345 miles, and taking his rival by surprise forced him to flee, and occupied the lower satrapies, where he coins regularly from July 42 onwards. Vardanes now laid siege to Seleucia, which had been in rebellion since it opened its gates to Tiridates in 36, but was presently called away to meet Gotarzes, who had secured the aid of the Hyrcanians and Dahe. The renewal of civil war enabled the emperor Claudius, with the aid of the Iberians, to drive the Parthian satrap Demonax from Armenia and reseat Mithradates on the throne.? Meantime Gotarzes and Vardanes were face to face in the plain of western or Parthian Bactria, but an attempt on the life of the latter having

been disclosed by his foe they made peace, and Gotarzes withdrew to Hyr-
cania, while Vardanes, confirmed in his empire, returned to Seleucia and
took it in 43 after a siege of seven years.

Seleucia was then a city of vast resources; in the time of Pliny Seleucia.

it reckoned 600,000 souls, and the neighbourhood of Ctesiphon had: not
ruined it as Seleucia had ruined Babylon. Indeed Strabo (xvi. p. 748) is
probably to be believed when he says that Ctesiphon was founded as the
winter residence of the Parthian kings mainly out of consideration for
Seleucia, whose merchants would have been incommoded by the quartering
on them of the rude hordes of nomads who formed the larger part of the
army which surrounded the court. The friendship of the Parthians was
necessarily impaired by the long rebellion and the insolence of the
Seleucians,; in 41 the Syrians and Greeks put aside their own quarrels and
united to slaughter the Jews; the survivors fled to Ctesiphon, and even here
the hatred of the Seleucians followed them in despite of the great king.
Probably, therefore, it was as a rival to Seleucia that Volagases (or
Vologeses) I. founded a little later Vologesocerta (near Hira) on a site very
favourable for commerce. From the middle of the first Christian century
Greek influence declined, and Orientalism revived in Parthia. The types of
the Arsacid drachme —the imperial money—grow more and more barbaric
from the time of Artabanus III. ; and Pahlavi legends, first found on coins
of Volagases I., become predominant with Mithradates VI., the con-
temporary of Trajan. . Vardanes was deterred from an attempt on Armenia
by the threatening attitude of Vibius Marsus, legate of Syria from 42 to 44,
and the rest of his reign was fully occupied by internal affairs. In February
45 Gotarzes had renewed

his pretensions and struck money, supported by the re-

bellious nobles, and Vardanes, after defeating him at the Var- passage of the
Erindes,* pursued him eastwards through anes.

the deserts, driving the nomads before him as far as the Sindes (‘Tejend),
which divided the Dahe from the Arians, and returned boasting “that he had
reduced nations who never before had paid tribute to an Arsacid.” The glory
that was held to surround these exploits on a stage scarcely different from

that on which the oldest Parthian history had been enacted is a striking proof of the neglect of the original home of the monarchy under the pressure of Western affairs; but that Vardanes was a great king is plain from the high praise of Tacitus and the attention which the greatest of Roman historians bestows on a reign which had no direct relations to Rome. Vardanes, whose last coin is of August 45, was murdered while huntmg—a victim, we are told, to the hatred produced by his severity to his subjects. But in judging of the charges brought against him and his two predecessors we must remember that the rise of a new dynasty like that of Artabanus is of Artabanus. ‘The last title seers to mean “alter ego” ; it appears miswritten Tadtpevos in Dio, xl. 12, as applied to Silaces, whom Orodes I. sent against Crassus; comp. New Persian kaherman, agent.” Philostratus, in his life of Apollonius, which contains much that is useful for this period, regards the expulsion of Gotarzes as a restoration

of the Arsacids. 3 In the chronology of what follows Longuerue’s arrangement has been brilliantly confirmed by the coins. 4 Or Charindas (Ptol., vi. 2, 2), now the Kerind, which separates Mazandaran from Astarabad. xvi — 76

45-75 A.D.

Gotarzes.

Vola- gases I.

602

always accompanied by deeds of violence, and that the oppressed subjects are simply the utterly unruly Parthian nobles who had lost all discipline in the long civil wars, and could only be controlled by force.

After another period of dispute we now find Gotarzes again on the throne and coining regularly from September 46 onwards. But his qualities had not improved, and in 47 a secret embassy of malcontents was at Rome asking Claudius to send them as king Meherdates, son of Vonones. In 49 the legate, Gaius Cassius, did in fact conduct Meher- dates (Mithradates V.) as far as Zeugma, where he was met by divers Parthian magnates, and ultimately,

after a detour through the snows of Armenia, got as far as Nineveh and Arbela. But his only real strength lay in Carenes, satrap of Mesopotamia ; Abgar V. and Izates, the kings of Orrhoene and Adiabene, pretended to be with him, but were in private understanding with Gotarzes, and deserted before the decisive battle in which Carenes was surrounded and Meherdates taken (50 a.p.). Gotarzes cut off his rival's ears, but spared his life—an act of leniency most unusual in the East, which proves how much the national feeling of the Iranians despised the pretenders foisted on them by Rome.

Gotarzes died of a sickness, not before June 51, and was followed by Vonones IT., who had been king in Atro- patene, and was probably a brother of Artabanus III. According to the coins his short reign began before Sep- tember 51 and did not end before October 54.1 He was succeeded by his eldest son, Volagases I., the brothers acquiescing in his advancement, although his mother was only a concubine from Miletus (comp. Tac., Ann., xii. 44, with Plut., Crassus, 32), and receiving their compensation by being nominated to kingdoms which gave them the second and third places after the " king of kings,"—Pacorus to Media or Atropatene and Tiridates to Armenia,? which the Parthians invaded (in 52 ?) to expel the usurper Rada- mistus, murderer of King Mithradates. Radamistus was not finally disposed of till 54, when his own people rose against him. The Armenians now offered no resistance to the Parthians, but the Romans were not content to lose their influence in the land, and their plans were favoured by the rising of a new pretendant, the son of Vardanes, against Volagases. The latter had marched to chastise Izates of Adiabene, whose conduct had been very ambiguous in previous embroilments with Rome, when a great army of Dahze and Sace entered Parthia. Of the son of Vardanes 8 we have coins from December 55 to July 58, and as the series of coins of Volagases begins only in 61 it was prob- ably not till then that he had quite mastered his more powerful rival and consolidated his own authority. At first he had to evacuate Armenia, and in 55 he even gave up the chief Arsacids as hostages to Domitius Corbulo, Nero's commissioner on the frontier. In 58, however, Volagases was again able to commence great operations in Armenia, though direct war between Parthia and Rome was still avoided, both sides accepting the fiction that what was done in Armenia was the private affair of Tiridates. The Parthians, indeed, were still

in no condition for a great war ; the intestine discords continued, and in 58 Hyrcania,

? Gardner (p. 51) is wrong in ascribing this coin to Volagases I. Tacitus makes Volagases come to the throne in 52 or 53, but if this is right he must have been associated in the empire under Vonones.

2 Tac., Ann., xv. 2. There was at this time a fourth monarchy under a Parthian king in east Iran and on the Indus, and a fifth among the Scythians (or rather the Maskhuth) on the northern slopes of the Caucasus, where an Arsacid reigned in 19 a.p. (Tac., Ann., ii. 68). As the Median kingdom was subsequently united to the chief empire, the later Armenian historians, Agathangelus (Langlois, i. 109) and Sebéus (

3 His name was probably Nanes, for BNANO on a copper coin (Gardner, p. 51) must be read Blacihéws] Navo[v].

one of the oldest Parthian lands, revolted and sent an embassy to seek alliance with Rome. In the same year,

and in that which followed, Corbulo was able with little resistance to destroy Artaxata, occupy Tigranocerta, and

set on the Armenian throne, supported by Roman troops, Tigranes V., a prince of that branch line of the Herods which had been established in Cappadocia. At length,

in 61, Volagases made peace with the Hyrcanians, ac- knowledging their independence ; then, solemnly crowning Tiridates as king of Armenia, he directed his whole forces against Tigranes. Open war with Rome, however, was still delayed by negotiations with Corbulo, who proposed

a peace with a secret condition that the Roman troops should be withdrawn from Armenia. He felt, no doubt, that Tigranes, who had inherited the

servility but not the vigour of his ancestor Herod, was not strong enough to secure the obedience of a population which greatly pre- ferred the rule of the Parthians as their brethren in faith, manners, and descent. But Rome refused to confirm the treaty, and war was declared.4 The first year of the war (62) was unfortunate for the Romans, and ended with the capitulation of Czsennius Pzetus (who now commanded in Armenia) at Randea, on the southern bank of the Arsanias (2.e., Aradzani, the Armenian name for the upper Euphrates), near Arsamosata. The Romans evacuated Armenia and had also to build the Parthians a bridge over the Arsanias. Corbulo meantime was in Syria, and had purposely left Petus in the lurch, contenting himself with securing the passages of the Euphrates and guarding them by castles

on Parthian soil. He now came to an agreement with the Parthian general, Monzses, to raze the castles in return

for the evacuation of Armenia by the Parthians till Rome should be again consulted. Next year the war was re- sumed, and Corbulo, crossing the Euphrates at Melitene, had penetrated into Sophene when the Parthians earnestly sought peace. It was agreed that Tiridates should lay down his diadem and go to Rome in person to receive it again from the emperor, which was done accordingly in

66. The real advantage of the war lay more with Parthia than with Rome, for, if the Roman suzerainty over Armenia

was admitted, the Parthians had succeeded, after a contest which had lasted a generation, in placing an Arsacid on

the Armenian throne. After Nero’s death Volagases formed very friendly relations with Vespasian, which endured till

75. Meantime all Iran was sorely troubled by the Alans, Alan | who had spread themselves a little before over the plains inroad.| on the north-west slopés of the Caucasus as far as the Don and the Sea of Azoff. In 72 the king of Hyrcania opened the pass of Derbend to these barbarians, who ravaged Media and drove King Pacorus into the recesses of his mountains, even capturing his harem. Armenia was also plundered, and the bandits

retired laden with booty. In 75 the Alans entered Parthia itself and pressed Vola- gases so hard that he made an ineffectual application for help to Vespasian.> Vespasian's refusal very nearly led to war, and Trajan, who was now governor of Syria, was pre- pared for a Parthian invasion,' but Vespasian's pacific firmness ultimately averted an outbreak.'

We have the evidence of Tacitus (Ann., xi. 8) and J osephus (Ant., xx. 4, 2) that Bactria was the eastern limit of the Parthian empire

4 Tacitus and Dio in this part of the history are both dependent on the very mendacious memoirs of Corbulo. Tacitus, as appears from Ann., xv. 16, distrusted his source and followed it with more discrimi- nation than Dio, but is still more favourable to Corbulo than a criticism strictly proceeding on the known facts can admit to be right.

> It must have been against the Alans that Vespasian in this year, according to a Greek inscription of Metskheta (Journ. As., ser. 6, xii, 93), fortified the castles of the Iberian Mithradates and of the Jamasdaites.

S This is all that is meant by " Parthica laurus," Plin., Paneg., 14,

7 In Victor, Cxs., 9, 10, read "ab illo" for "ac bello," comparing the epitome.

EMPIRE. |

in 42 and 54 A.D., but in 59 the Hyrcanian ambassadors were able to return home from a port on the Persian Gulf without touching Parthian soil (Tac., Ann., xiv. 25). This implies that all the upper satrapies had been lost to the empire. The Hyrcanians were still independent ¢. 155 during the reign of Antoninus Pius (Victor, Epit., 15, 4). In 72 they held the whole southern coast of the Cas- pian, and for a time at least bordered on a Parthian kingdom which had succeeded that of the Scythians in Sacastane at a date subse- quent to that of Isidore of Charax (1 B.c.). The names of seven kings of this dynasty, beginning apparently with an Arsaces Dicxus, are known from coins. The most powerful of these was the Gon- dophares under whom, according to the legendary Acta Thome,} the apostle Thomas came to India in 29 a.p.; he reigned over a great territory, which in large part had

formerly belonged to Par- thia, his coins being found mainly in Herat, Sistan, and Kandahar, but also in Begram and sometimes in the Punjab; an inscription at Takht-i-Bahi, north-cast of Peshawar, makes his twenty-sixth year the hundredth of an era which is probably that of the intro- duction of Buddhism in the Cabul valley.2_ The dynasty of Gon- dophares, however, was but loosely constituted : we often find two kings at one time ; and the Periplus (70 a.p.), which tells us of the possession of old Indo-Scythia by these Parthians, says that one king was constantly displacing another, a sure symptom of a mori- bund condition. One of the last kings, Sanabares, reigned a little after 78 A.D. (Sallet, op. cit., p. 158). The author of the Periplus had also heard of the independent and very warlike nation of the – Bactrians, ¢.¢., the Tochari, whose greatest conquests fall at this time. Kieu-tsieu-khio, the founder of their power, died, according to Chinese accounts, at the age of eighty, and was succeeded by his son Yen-kao-chin, who conquered the Indus lands. The Tochari were then more powerful than ever, and ruled as far as Shao-ki or Oude. The coins, on the other hand, lead us to distinguish between Kozola-Kadaphes, the immediate successor of Kozulo-Kadphizu (who borrows the latter's name and titles, and whose copper money found at Manikyala in the Punjab may be dated by its offering a close imitation of the head of Augustus on denarii struck between 4 B.c. and 2 A.D.), and the real conqueror of India, Ooémo-Kad- phisés (Ar. Hima Kapi¢d), who reigned from about the middle of the 1st century 4.D., and whose might is proved by his striking gold, which no one had done since Eucratides. His coins, frequent in Kabulistan and the Punjab, have been found as far as Benares. This evidence is reconciled with the Chinese account by an Indian notice in Kern, Vardéha-Mthira, p. 89, which shows that the con- quests of the Tochari were for a time interrupted. It speaks of a robber (aka king who was very powerful (z.¢., Yen-kao-chin, or Kozola-Kadaphes), after whom there were five native kings. Of these the first four reigncd but a few years, while the fifth, who is unnamed, had a reign of twenty years over a happy land, after which

in earnest but for the disorders of the times, indicated by 75-115 a.p.

a break in the Parthian coinage between 84 and 93, in which latter year Pacorus appears as sole king.§

At this time the political horizon of Parthia was very wide, and its intercourse with the farthest East was livelier than at any other date. In 90 the Yue-chi had come to war with the governor of Chinese Tartary and been reduced to vassalship; in 94 a Chinese expedition slew their king, and, advancing to the “North Sea”

| (Lake Aral), subdued fifty kingdoms.? The Tochari, one

sees, like the Greeks before them, had neglected the lands north of the Hindu-Kush in their designs on India ; even of Ooémo-Kadphisés no coins are found north of that range. In 97 Chinese envoys directed to Rome actually reached the Mediterranean, but were dissuaded from going farther by Parthian accounts of the terrors of the sea voyage, and in 101 Muon-kiu, king of the An-si (Parthians), sent lions and gazelles of the kind called “fu-pa” (BotBados) to the emperor of China. Muon-kiu reigned in Ho-to, ae, Carta or Zadracarta in Hyrcania; he was therefore a king of the Hyrcanians, who also held the old Parthian lands east of the Caspian Gate, and may be identical with a king, rival to Pacorus, who struck copper coins in 107 and 108, if the latter is not identical with the later monarch Osroes. But anyhow the representative of the Parthian power in the west was still Pacorus IL, who in 1108 sold the crown of Edessa to Abgar VII. bar Izat, and died soon after, making way for his brother Osroes, who coins in the same year, but had to reckon with two rivals, viz., Volagases II. (who reappears after an interval of thirty-three years), from 112 onwards, and Meherdates (Mithradates) VI. The latter was a brother of Osroes, and so probably was the former. None of the three was strong enough to conquer the others, and continual war went on between them till Osroes was foolish enough to provoke Roman intervention by taking Armenia from Exedares, son of Pacorus, to whose appointment Rome had not objected, and transferring it to another son of Pacorus called Parthamasiris.

Trajan, who had quite thrown over Trajan’s the principle of the Julii and Flavii, that the Danube and ©°n- the Euphrates were the boundaries of the empire, and was 1¢*-

the Cakas began their depredations again. The unnamed king may be identified with a king wearing earrings, and therefore Indian,

whose coins, found by sackfuls in Begram, and occasionally in the Punjab, Malwa, and even farther east, mark him as a neighbour and probably contemporary of Gondophares ; they bear no name, but only the title “king of kings” and “great saviour.”? The Tecommencement of the Caka conquest will thus begin with Ooémo-Kadphisés, who was the immediate predecessor of Kanérki or Kanishka, the founder of the Turushka dynasty, whose accession in 79 A.D. is the epoch of the (aka era (Oldenberg, Z. f. Nwm., Vili, 290 sq.), and marks the consolidation of affairs in the East.

Volagases I. died soon after the Alan wars, leaving a just reputation by his friendly relations to his brothers—a thing so long unknown—his patient steadfastness in foreign war and home troubles, and his foundation of a new capital. Perhaps also he has the merit of collecting ‘from fragments or oral tradition all that remained of the Avesta. From June 78 we find two kings coining and reigning together, Volagases II. and Pacorus II., probably brothers. From 79 there isa long break in the coins of the former, and Artabanus IV. takes his place with a coin struck in July 81. This Artabanus appears as the pro- tector of a certain Terentius Maximus, who pretended to be Nero®; he threatened to restore him and displace Titus by force, and, though the pretender was at length given up, the farce, which was kept up till 88, might have ended

1 See WV. Rhein. Mus., xix. 161 sq.

- This was 500 years after Buddha (Z. f. K. d. Morgenl., iii. 129), Which would give the date 57 a.p. j

3 This is perhaps the king gud regnavit sine nomine of Suetonius, De Regibus (Auson., Ep., 19).

4 Dinkart, in Haug, Pahl.-Paz. Gloss., p. 144, calls the king who did this only Valkosh (7.e., Volkash), descendant of Ashkan.

5 Zonaras, xi. 18; Orac. Sib., iv. 124, 137.

fully embarked on the old Chauvinist traditions of the republic, would not let such an occasion slip; and, refus- ing an answer to an embassy that met him at Athens, he entered Armenia and took Arsamosata® without battle, after receiving the homage of western Armenia (114). Parthamasiris submitted himself to the emperor, but Trajan declared that Armenia must be a Roman province, appointed an escort to see the Parthian over the border, and when he resisted and tried to escape ordered his execution,— a brutal act, meant to inspire terror and show that the Arsacids should no longer be treated with on equal terms. Armenia and the neighbouring kings to the north having given in their submission, Trajan marched back by Edessa, receiving the homage of Abgar. The campaign of 115 was in Mesopotamia, and the burden of it fell on Mebar- sapes of Adiabene and his ally Mannus of Singara. At

6 There is a naive personal character about all the feelings of the Arsacids towards the Caesars. Artabanus III. orders deep mourning for Germanicus, and sends Tiberius an insulting letter, advising him to escape the hate of his subjects by suicide. Volagases I. urges the senate to honour the memory of Nero. In the support given to the pseudo- Nero legitimist sympathies with the Julii may have combined with

| the wish to pay back in their own coin the Romans who had so often

backed Parthian pretendants. 7 Hist. Gén. dela Chine, iii. 393 sq.

8 The third year of Abgar VII. was the fifteenth of Trajan (Cureton, Ane. Syr. Doc., p. 41); this involves a correction of +23 years applied to all Dionysius of Telmahar’s dates for the later kings of Edessa, as well as a blank of nineteen years before Abgar VII.

9 Read péxpis “Apsapoocdrwy in Dio, lxviii. 19. Samosata was a Roman town, and if they had lost it first this would have been mentioned.

115-191. its close Mesopotamia was made a Roman province ; the

Cardueni and the Marcomedi! of the Armenian frontier had also been reduced, and Trajan received the title of “Parthicus.” In 116 the Tigris was crossed in face of the enemy (probably at Jezirat ibn ‘Omar), and a third new province of Assyria absorbed the whole kingdom of Mebarsapes. Once more the Tigris was crossed and Babylonia invaded, still without resistance from the Parthians, whose intestine disorders continued. A Roman fleet descended the Euphrates and the ships were conveyed across on rollers to the Tigris, to co-operate with the army ; and now Ctesiphon fell and Osroes fled to Armenia, the north-east parts of which cannot have been thoroughly subdued. The Roman fleet descended the Tigris and received the submission of Mesene ; but now, while Trajan was engaged in a voyage of reconnaissance in the Persian Gulf—plainly aiming at Bahrein—all the new provinces revolted and destroyed or expelled the Roman garrisons. The rebels, whose centre was in Mesopotamia, set Meher-

dates VI. at their head ;? and, when he died by a fall from”

his horse in a foray on Commagene, his son, Sinatruces II., took his place, and was aided by an army which Osroes sent from Armenia under his son Parthamaspates. The reconciliation of the Arsacids among themselves was rewarded by the defeat and death of the Roman general Maximus; but jealousy now sprang up between the cousins, and of this Lusius, a second general sent by Trajan from Babylon, took advantage to draw Parthamaspates to the Roman side by a promise of the Parthian throne. Sina- truces was defeated and slain, Nisibis retaken, Edessa stormed and destroyed, and the whole rebellion put down ; but Trajan now saw what it would cost to maintain direct Roman rule over such wide and distant conquests, and Parthamaspates was solemnly crowned in the great plain by Ctesiphon in the presence of Romans and Parthians (winter 117). An unsuccessful siege of Atra (Hatra) in the Mesopotamian desert was Trajan’s next undertaking ; illness and the revolt of the Jews prevented him from resuming the campaign, and after Trajan’s death (7th August 117) Hadrian wisely withdrew the garrisons from the new provinces, which would have demanded the con- stant presence of the imperial armies, and again made the Euphrates the limit of the empire. Parthamaspates too had soon to leave Parthia, and Hadrian gave him Orrhoene.® Thus Trajan’s Chauvinist policy had no other result than to show to the world the miserable weakness to

which discord had reduced the Parthians. And the discord did not cease even now, for, though Osroes was restored, Vola- gases still continued to coin, whether as rival or as partner of his rule, in some part of the realm. Hadrian continued to preserve peace, though a war threatened in 123,> and in 130 he restored to Osroes his daughter taken captive by Trajan at Ctesiphon. Osroes died soon after, and Volagases II. became sole monarch, dying in November 148 at the age of about ninety-six, after a reign of seventy-one years.®

1 Rutr., viii. 3; Festus Rufus, Brev., 20. Marcomedi are the Medes called Markh, the plural of Mar, “ Mede” in Armenian.

2 ‘What follows is drawn from Malalas, who has two passages (i. 351- 352 and 357-358) drawn from Arrian’s Parthica, but placed in a wrong context.

3 He is the Parnathsapat who was king of Edessa from 119 to 128 ; this fact and its relation to Spart., Hadr., 5, has escaped notice owing to the false chronology of Dion. Telm.

4 A proof of this is that very few silver drachmez and no tetra- drachms were struck between 96 and 120.

> See Diirr, Reisen des K. Hadrian, p.48. The removal of Partha- maspates and restoration of the old dynasty of Osrhoene may have been a concession made on this occasion.

6 The Volagesus who appears in connexion with an Alan invasion of Media, Armenia, and Cappadocia in 185 is from the context a different person, viz., the unnamed king of Armenia who was appointed

by Hadrian in 117 (Spart., Hadr., 21), and whose successor took the throne between 140 and 143 (Eckhel, Doct. num. vet., vii. 14).

PHRSITA

Volagases ITI., who succeeded, had designs on Armenia, Vola. | but an interview between him and Antoninus Pius (spring 8asesI.

155) delayed for a time the outbreak of war.’ However, martial preparations went on, and on the death of Antoninus Volagases entered Armenia (162),° expelled the Arsacid Sohzemus, who was a client of Rome, and made Pacorus king. The destruction of a Roman legion under the legate of Cappadocia (Atlius Severianus), who fell on his own sword, laid Cappadocia and Syria open to the Parthians ; Attidius Cornelianus, legate of Syria, was routed, and the provincials were in such distress that they even began to speak of revolt from Rome. When late in the year Adlius Verus arrived from the capital he found the troops so demoralized by defeat that he was ready to offer peace; but, when Volagases refused to treat, the able lieutenants whom Verus directed from Antioch soon changed the face of affairs. The war had two theatres, and was officially called the Armenian and Parthian war.® Armenia was regained and Sohzmus restored by Statius Priscus and Martius Verus (163, 164), while Avidius Cassius drove Volagases from Syria in a bloody battle at Europus, and, entering north Mesopotamia, took Edessa and Nisibis, though not without serious opposition.!° At length, deserted by his allies (¢.e., by the local kings, who were becoming more and more independent), Volagases abandoned Meso- potamia, and Cassius entered Babylonia, where, on a frivo- lous pretext, he gave up to rapine and fire the friendly city of Seleucia, still the first city of the East, with 400,000 inhabitants. The destruction of Seleucia was a hideous crime, a mortal wound dealt to Eastern Hellenism by its natural protectors ; that Cassius next, advancing to Ctesi- phon, razed the palace of Volagases to the ground may, on the other hand, be defended as a symbolical act calcu- lated more than anything else to impair the prestige of the Parthian with his Oriental subjects. Cassius returned to Syria in 165, with his victorious army uch weakened through the failure of the commissariat and by the plague, which, breaking out in Parthia immediately after the fall of Seleucia, spread over the whole known world. In the same year Martius Verus won hardly less considerable successes in Media Atropatene, then apparently a separate kingdom.!!_ The peace which followed in 166 gave Meso- potamia to Rome. This was the greatest of all wars between Rome and Parthia, alike in the extent of the lands involved and the energy of attack shown by the Parthians. The Romans used their

victory with modera- tion, but Parthia, after this last effort, continued steadily to sink.

The Romans at the same time made an effort to compete with Parthia for the Chinese trade (especially in silk), which the latter had jealously kept in their own hands, and in 166 an envoy of An-thun (M. Antoninus) reached the court of the emperor Huan-ti, via the sea and Tong- king. But the effort to establish a direct trade with China was unavailing, and the trade still flowed in its old channels when a second Roman agent reached China in 226, a little before the fall of the Parthian empire. The Chinese tell us that with India also the Parthians drove a considerable trade.!?

? Aristides, Or. Sacra, i. 498, Cant.; cp. Waddington, in Mém. Ac. Inscer., xxvi. (1867) p. 260 sq.

8 For this war cp. the excellent monograph of E. Napp, De rebus imp. M. Aur. Ant. in Or. gestis, 1879.

9 CI. L., vi. Nos. 1877, 1457, 1497. Lucian, De Consc. Hist., 30.

10 Details in Suidas, s.v. Zefyua; Luc., op. cit., 29; Fronto, Epp. ad Verum, ii. 1, 121, Naber.

11 This seems to follow from the fact that both emperors, who were already called ‘‘ Armeniacus” and “ Parthicus Maximus,” also call them- selves “ Medicus” (on a coin earlier than 28th August 165), Eckhel, iv. 76; inser. of Signia, Orelli, No. 859.

2 The “ Annals of the Second Han,” in Deguignes, Afém. Ac. Inscr.,

For the order of events cp.

m-

_ yerus,

| |

EMPIRE. |

Volagases IIT. died in 191, having reigned forty-two years without civil war, and was succeeded by Volagases IV. During the civil troubles of Rome which preceded the establishment of the military empire this prince maintained friendly relations with Pescennius Niger; and his vassal Barsenius of Atra was permitted to supply a force of bowmen, who took part in the fighting against Septimius Severus at Nicza (194). When Niger's cause declined, however, Volagases allowed his clients of Adiabene to join with Orrhoene, now in revolt against the Roman power. The strongholds of Mesopotamia were taken, and their garrisons put to the sword; Nisibis itself was besieged. In truth, the Parthian could no longer pretend to control the policy of the princes on his frontier, who felt them- selves their own masters since they had borne the chief brunt of the last two Roman wars. But in summer 195 Severus appeared in Mesopotamia, received the submission

igas of of Abgar VIII. of Orrhoene, and from Nisibis (which, with

true insight into its strategic importance, he raised to a colony and great military station) directed two successful campaigns against Adiabene! (196) and the Arabs of the Singara district, incorporating the latter in the province of Mesopotamia.? The Parthians made no movement till Severus was busy with Albinus, when they ravaged Meso- potamia and besieged Laetus in Nisibis; but in 198 Severus was again on the scene of war, and they fell back without fighting, leaving the emperor free to prepare for next year a campaign on a great scale. In 199 a fleet on the Euphrates co-operated with the Roman army, and Severus, taking up an unaccomplished plan of Trajan, dredged out the old Naarmalca canal, through which his ships sailed into the Tigris, and took the Parthians wholly by surprise. Seleucia and Coche? were deserted by their inhabitants ; Ctesiphon was taken by the end of the year with terrible slaughter, 100,000 inhabitants: being led cap- tive and the place given up to pillage, for the great king had fled powerless at the approach of the foe. Severus, whose force was reduced by famine and dysenteries, did not attempt pursuit, but drew off up the Tigris. The army was again in its quarters by Ist April 200 (C.Z.Z., vi. 225 a), and for some time thereafter Severus was occupied in Armenia. But in 201 he undertook a carefully organ- ized expedition against Atra, from whose walls the Romans had been repulsed with great loss when Severus, returning from the Tigris in the previous year, had attempted to carry it by a coup de main.

This city, which in Trajan’s time was neither great nor rich, was now a wealthy place, and the sun-temple contained vast treasures. The classical authors call Atra Arabian, but the king’s name is Syriac, Barsenius, z.¢e., Bar Sin, son of the moon, and we may suppose that it was really an Arameean principality,* which, like Palmyra, had its strength from the surrounding Arab tribes that it could call into the field. Severus lay before Atra for twenty days, but the enemy’s cavalry cut off his foraging parties, the admirable archers galled the Roman troops, a great part of the siege train was burned with naphtha; and, when, in addition, two assaults had been repulsed with tremendous loss on two successive days, the emperor was compelled to raise the siege,—a severe blow to Roman prestige in the East, and one that greatly raised the name of Atra and its prince, but did not help the decay- ing power of Parthia in the least. xxxii. (1768), p. 358; Pian-i-tian, in Mém. Ac. Inscr., vill. (1827) p. 124 sg.; and Journ. As., ser. 3, viii. 278, 280 sg.

1 In Dio, lxxv. 3, read rhv ’ApBydirw for Thy apx7yr.

2 Not only Herodian, iii. 9, but Capitol., Macrinus, 12, implies that these Arabs were Yemenites ; the great migration of southern Arabs, which led to the foundation of the kingdom of Hira, had therefore

already taken place. : 3 Dio, Exc., xxv. 9, has Babylon, but it was a mere heap of ruins

in the beginning of the 2d century a.D. 4 Cp. Noldeke, Tabart, p. 34.

In 209 Volagases IV. was succeeded by his son Volagases 191-219.

V., under whom in 212 the fatal troubles in Persis began, while in 213 his brother Artabanus rose as rival claim- ant of the kingship ;° and the civil war lasted for many years. A fresh danger arose when Tiridates, a brother of Volagases IV., who had long been a refugee with the Romans and had accompanied Severus’s campaign of 199, escaped, in company with a

Cilician adventurer, the Cynic Antiochus, to the court of his nephew Volagases ; for the emperor Antoninus (Caracalla) demanded their surrender, and obtained it only by a declaration of war (215). About

the same time Artabanus gained the upper hand, and in Arta- 216 he held Ctesiphon and its district ; but Volagases stil] banus.

held out in the Greek cities of Babylonia, as his tetra- drachms prove (till 222). Artabanus's strength lay in the north ; the Arab histories of the Sds4nians make him king of the Median region, and agreeably with this he coins only drachme.® Presently Artabanus had a war with Rome on his hands; the pretext was that he had refused his daughter to Antoninus, but the emperor was mindful of his father's dying advice to enrich the soldiers and despise all other classes, and saw a prospect of rich booty. In 216 the Romans penetrated to Arbela by way of Carduene and Calachene,' and violated the graves of the kings of Adiabene, which they falsely took for those of the Arsacids. Thus far the Parthians, who had been taken by surprise in full peace, had offered little or no resistance, but Antoninus was murdered (8th April 217) while he was preparing for a new foray, and his successor Macrinus at once found that Artabanus was now armed, and was not the man to let the insult to his territory pass with im- punity. An overwhelming Parthian force fell on Mesopo- tamia and refused to be appeased by the restoration of the captives of the previous year ; Macrinus was beaten in two engagements® and compelled to retire to Syria, abandoning the Mesopotamian plain; and in the winter of 217/218 he was glad to purchase peace for an indemnity of 50,000,000 denarii (£1,774,298). In or about 222 Artabanus must also have displaced his brother in Babylonia, for he was a patron of Rab Abba, who became head of the Jewish school of Sura in 219.9

Persis, which dealt the last blow to the Arsacids, had Persis.

through the whole Parthian period held an isolated position, and is so seldom mentioned that our knowledge of its history and native princes is almost wholly due to recently-

found coins.1°

These embrace a triple series of silver coins and a class of copper pieces. The oldest of the latter class bears the name of Camnascires, and his is the only name in the class known to us from other sources, for Hyrodes and Phraates (each of which names was borne by two kings of the series) are not Arsacid great kings, as their title is only “king,” not “king of kings” (against Mordtmann). Nor do they seem to have ruled in the same quarter with the kings who struck silver ; the latter were native kings of Persis, the former rather Elymeans, who in the times after Camnascires were forced back in a south-east direction (as appears from the places in which the coins are found), and ruled parts of Persis side by side with the nr

---

5 According to Mani, in the book Skaburkan, the 4th year of Ardhab4n = 216/217 ; see Al-Béruni, tr. by Sachau, pp. 121, 190. This proves that in 216 Artabanus was the recognized sovereign in the district of Ctesiphon to which Mardinu (on Habl Ibrahim) belongs ; cf. Noldeke, Tabart, p. 16.

6 See above, p. 601. 7 Dio says they invaded Media, but Antoninus had not such a hold

of Armenia as to open to him the route of the triumvir Antony, and a march from Gazaca to Arbela over Mount Zagrusisincredible. But, if Media at this time extended so far west as to include Arrapachitis and Calachene (the Marcomedians of Trajan’s wars), the campaign is intelligible, and Spartian’s mention of the Cadusians and Babylonians can be explained as a misreading of Kapdovaias kal *ApBiAwy in a Greek source.

8 The lacuna in Dio, Ixxviii. 26, is to be supplied by a passage of Xiphilinus, not given in recent editions.

9 Jost, Gesch. d. Jud., ti, 139.

10 See Mordtmann in Z. f. Num., iv. 152 sq., vii. 40 sq.

219-228. native princes.

Indo- Iranian frontier.

Camnascires appears as an old man on coins of 82 and 81 B.c., and his ten successors whom we know from the coins carry us down to 36 a.D., the latest date at which the Elymzans are mentioned as independent (Tac., dnn., vi. 44). The older coins have Greek inscriptions and often figures of Greek gods, but under the fifth successor of Camnascires, 7.¢., about the time of Christ, Pahlavi takes the place of Greek and Mithras of Serapis.

The silver class, again, has in all three series Pahlavi legends and the fire-altar on the reverse. The first series has seven princes with the unexplained title " Feritkara," the second has three kings (Malka), the third ten kings; the names are throughout either Achemenian (Artahshetr, Daryav), pointing perhaps to a claim of Acheemenian descent, or sacred names like those common with the Sasanians (Nerseh, Yezdikert), or are taken from sacred legend (Minuchetr). The second and third series appear to be continuous (against Mordtmann) ; the last king of the second series is Zaturdat (II.), the first of the third Daryav (I.) son of Zaturdat. With Daryav I. the kings assume a Parthian costume, and his son Artahshetr II. is the only king of that name who from the number and various types of his coins can be fairly identified with the Artaxerxes of Isidore of Charax, who reigned " in the time of his fathers" (c. 80-50 B.c.), and was slain at the age of ninety-three by his brother Gosithres. As Daryav I. must also have reigned for a considerable time this datum places him about the commencement of the Parthian supremacy, which naturally explains his Parthian dress. Then the princes of the first silver series will be Seleucid vassals, and the shorter series of kings before Daryav independent princes falling between the Seleucid and Parthian suzerainty. Finally Gosithres, brother of Artahshetr II., has the same name as Gozihr, the last Bazrangi king before the rise of the Sdsanians, so that it was probably one dynasty. The eight kings, in at least six different generations, who appear on coins between Artahshetr II. and Tirdat IL, will carry us roughly to the middle of the second Christian century, leaving a space sufficient for Gézihr, the last Bazraugian, and the anarchy of the first days of the Sasanians.

The emblems on the coins show that Persis was always loyally Zoroastrian, and at Istakhr stood the famous fire- temple of the goddess Andhédh. Its

priest was Sdsdn, whose marriage with a Bazrangian princess, Rambehisht, laid the foundation of the greatness of his house, while priestly influence, which was very strong, doubtless favoured its rise. PAbak, son of Sdsdn, and Ardashir, son of Pabak, begin the history of the Sdsd4nian dynasty, which occupiés the next section of this article. Artabanus did nothing to check the use of the new power till Ardashir had all Persis in his hand (224) and had begun to erect a palace and temple at Gor (Firuzabad). Nirdfar, king of Elymais, was then sent against him, but was defeated, and now Ardashir passed beyond Persis and successively reduced Ispahan (Pareeta-cene), Ahwaz (Elymais), and Mesene.! After this victory Ardashir sent a challenge to Artabanus himself; their armies met by appointment in the plain of Hormizdjan, and Artabanus fell (28th April 227). Ctesiphon and Babylonia must have fallen not much later, though Vola- gases V. seems to have re-established himself there on his brother's death, and a tetradrachm of 539 Sel. shows that he held the city till autumn 227. The conquest of Assyria and great part of Media and Parthia is assigned by Dio expressly or by implication to the year 228, and so the Parthian empire was at an end.

The part of Parthia of which Dio speaks can only be Choarene and Comisene ; it was only in a later expedition that Ardashir reached Sacastane, Hyrcania, Nishapur, and Merv, and these do not seem to have been Parthian. Indeed, from 58 4.p. Comisene appears to have been the most eastern satrapy of the Arsacid empire. Eastern Iran was in this period very flourishing under the Tochari of the dynasty which Indian sources call Turushka, and which can be traced on inscriptions till 213 and 259 (or 359). Kanishka, the founder of the dynasty, is said to have ruled Cabul and all Hindustan, and in fact his coins extend over all northern India. The empire of which Kashmir was a main province was wider than that of the Greeks had been, and also more consolidated, for strategi took the place of the native kings (Journ. As., ser. 3, viii. 264, and ser. 4, x. 95). So,

1 The flourishing state of Mesene had, as its coins show, been long sinking into barbarism ; the latest date they supply is 167 (Z. f. Num., Viil. 212 sq.). A little earlier, in 148, they are associated with coins of Meredates, son of Phobas, king of the Omanians. The latter, already known to Pliny as

dwelling in the desert west of Charax, must be the Azd from ‘Oman, a part of whom shared the great migration and finally settled in Anbar and Hira.

SIA

too, Kanishka banished the native language from his coins, using Greek letters and his own foreign language. His predecessor had supplanted the Greek gods, except Helios, by Oriental divinities, and now Helios too gives way to the Iranian Mupo or Miopo. The motley pantheon on the coins of Kanishka and his successors gives an interesting glimpse of the faiths of the Indo-Iranian frontier, We find here the old Iranian popular deities: Mao, the moon-god ; Mupo, the sun-god ; Nava, the goddess of war ; Oado, the wind-god ; OpAayvo, 4.¢., Verethraghno (see Benfey, Z. D. M. G., viii. 459) ; Aupo, identical with the Zoroastrian Ahura-mazda ; we find also abstrac- tions like the Izeds of the heavenly hierarchy in official Zoroastrian- ism, ¢.g., Ovep, t.¢e., Aniran, the eternal self-created lights, and @appo (Pers., farr ; synonymous with Zend, hvaránd), the royal majesty, side by side with Indian deities, such as Siva, and a number of un- known deities with barbarous names brought from the old homes of the Tochari. Heracles and Helios appear transformed by barbarous pronunciation or epithets, and Zaparo is the cosmopolitan Serapis, probably introduced, asin Elymais, by Alexandrian sailors. Buddha, too, appears (Sallet, Machf. Al., p. 189 sq.). The Buddhists were the most active religious body in the kingdom, and the king, if not actually a convert, as the legend claims, showed them such favour as gave their faith a wide missionary field and unparalleled success. The kings built many Buddhist meeting-houses, monasteries, and shrines, and it was Kanishka who called together in Kashmir the council of 500 fathers that finally redacted the Tripitaka collection. Ptolemy (vii. 1, 47) speaks of Tochari as the Kaomipato ; the Chinese bear witness to their might in 159 ; and from 220 to 265 their empire retained its old compass (Journ. As., ser. 3, viii. 268, 268). Kashmir was lost in the course of the 3d century, but the western provinces remained. About 100 .D. Greek ceased to be understood in east Iran, and from this time we can trace a growing Iranian influence on the coins of the Tochari, especially in the Sasanian period. The latest coins of the Tochari come mostly from Balkh, so that they seem to have been gradually pushed backwards to the point from which they started. Finally,

their empire was overthrown by another branch of their own race, for, early in the 5th century, those of the Great Yue-chi who had remained in their old homes, a little west of Badakhshan, were compelled, by the pressure of the Juan- juan of Tartary, to move west to Po-lo or Balkh, and thence, under their warlike king Ki-to-lo (Kidara ; whence they are called Cidaritic Huns by Priscus, in Fr. H. Gr., iv. 102), crossed the Hindu-Kush and destroyed the old empire of the Tochari, founding in its place the kingdom of the Little Yue-chi. The date of this invasion can, from a variety of data, be fixed as c. 430, just about the time when the Sasdnians, in 429, destroyed the last of the Arsacids in Armenia ; and with this agrees the Indian statement that eighteen (aka kings reigned 380 years (50-430 a.p.). Their successors were still powerful in India about 520, and in their old homes their empire fell in 562.

[PARTHIAN EMPIRE,

Sources.—1, For THE Macepontan Prrtop.—For Alexander the sources are of two classes. (1) Arrian, and for the most part Plutarch also, drew from official Macedonian sources, especially the works of King Ptolemy and Aristo- bulus of Cassandrea, (2) An unofficial history, written by a Greek Clitarchus for the Greeks, is faithfully excerpted by Diodorus. Curtius and Justin (or rather Trogus) drew from a later work based on the same source but supplemented by extracts from a book of the first class and another book hostile to Alexander and of very indifferent authority. Droysen follows the writings of the first class exclusively, and indeed for military and historical points they alone are to be trusted. Grote uses also the works of the second class, which, though rhetorical, romantic, and uncritical, have the advantage of telling us many things that the official histories pass over, and, though they show little judg- ment themselves, are rich in materials to guide our judgment. The historian must deal with the material as a philologist would deal with a book preserved in two classes of MSS., one good, the other interpolated but independent. One must first restore as nearly as may be the archetype of the second class and then use it to correct the text—or here the history—based on the first class. For the immediate successors of Alexander, Diodorus, the excerpts from Arrian in Photius, and Plutarch’s lives of Eumenes and Demetrius are our best guides, all three drawing from the excellent Hieronymus of Cardia. Trogus (Justin) makes a

defective use of indifferent sources, and is good for little. Droysen's is the best modern book ; Grote is useful because he does not take so purely Macedonian a standpoint, but he deals mainly with the West. We have no really continuous ancient account for 301-220 B.c., for Justin's narrative is even less worthy of the name of a history than in the preceding period. The scattered material is best collected by Droysen. From 220 onwards we have the excellent work of Polybius, at first complete and then in large excerpts. There are some good modern monographs, but nothing that can be called even a tolerable general history of the latest period of Macedonian rule in Asia.

2. For THE PARTHIAN Periop.—The only continuous account of Parthian and Bactrian history which has reached us is Justin's abridgment of Trogus Pompeius, ending with 9 B.c., and having also a lacuna, due to Justin's care- lessness, between 94 and 55 B.c. For the wars with Rome in 53 and 36 B.c., Plutarch's Crassus and Antonius give full accounts. Under the early Cesars the Parthians were, in a sense, viewed as sharing the empire of the world with Rome (Strabo, xi. p. 515; Just., xli. 1, 1), and Roman historians began briefly to note events in Parthian history which had no direct connexion with Roman affairs. Thus, from 69 B.c. to 72 a.p., Dio, Josephus, and Tacitus give us pretty complete accounts. Between 94 and 69 B.c. and between 72 and 227 a.p. the history is very much lost. The coins are most valuable, especially after 37 B.C., when they begin to be dated; for the later period they are our chief aid, the excerpts from Dio not helping us much.

Aids.—Foy Vaillant, Arsacidarum impertum (Paris, 1728), and Du Four de Longuerue, Annales Arsacidarum (Strasb., 1732), are still indispensable compila- tions, to which G, E. J, Guilhem de Sainte-Croix, ''Mém. sur le gouvernement des Parthes," Mém. Ac. Inscr., 1. 48 sq., 755 sq., gives a good supplement. The most important modern books are those that explain the coins historically—

jashir

SASANIAN EMPIRE. |

E. Q. Visconti, Icon. Gr., iii.; Bartholomei, "Rech. sur la num. Arsac.," Mém. Soc. Arch., ii.; A. de Longpérier, Mém. sur la chron. et Viconogr. des

rois Parthes Arsac. (Paris, 1853}—and the catalogues of coins in Prokesch-Osten's Monnaies des rois Parthes (Paris, 1874-75) and P. Gardner's Parthian Coinage (London, 1877). There are also recent histories of Parthia by Rawlinson, Schneiderwirth, and Spiegel, and a book on the coins by Lindsay… As regards Bactria Bayer's Historia (Petersb., 1738) is poor, and quite upset by recent finds of coins. The Chinese inaterial is still best given by Deguignes in Mém. Ac. Inser., XXv. 7 sg. Of recent books see H. H. Wilson, Ariana Antiqua (London, 1841); Lassen, Zur Gesch. der Griech. und Indoskyth. Kénige (Bonn, 1838) and Ind. Alterthumsk., ii. Prinsep, Essays on Ind. Antiquities, ii. 173 sq.; A. Cunningham, in Num. Chron., vols. vili.-xii.; and Sallet, Nachfolger Alexanders des Gr. in Baktrien and Indien (Berlin, 1878). (A. v. G.)

Section III.—SAsANIAN Empire,

Of the minor kings who ruled in Persis, in the Arsacid period, in real or nominal allegiance to the Parthian "king of kings" we know some names from coins or ancient writers, but we cannot tell whether they were all of one dynasty. In the beginning of the 3d century the kings, who then belonged to a dynasty of which the name prob- ably was Bazrangik, had lost much of their power ; lesser potentates ruled in various parts of the land, which, by being all mountainous, falls naturally into ill-connected sections. One of these local princes was PApak, or, in the more modern pronunciation, Pabak,! son or descend- ant of Sasan, a native of the village of Khir on the southern margin of the great salt lake east of Shiraz. Pabak overthrew Gdézihr, the last prince of the Bazrangik, and became master of the district of Istakhr (Persepolis), and the coins and inscriptions of his son give him the title of king. His legitimate heir was his son Shdpur, for whom Pabak is said to have asked recognition from the Arsacids ; but on Pébak's death a second son, Ardashir, refused to acknowledge his brother, and was in arms against him when Shdpur died suddenly, and hardly by mere accident. That Ardashir's claims were opposed by his brothers and that he put them to death are not to be doubted, as we have these facts from a tradition of strictly legitimist tendency.

Tradition names various local princes conquered by Ardashir for himself or for his father, and perhaps Pabak before his death was already lord of all

Persis. Ardashtr, at least presumably, was so when he struck the coins still extant.2 Ardashir, who is to the Sds4nian what Cyrus was to the Achemenian empire, probably came to the throne in 211/212 a.p.3 From the first he plainly leaned on the clergy of the Zoroastrian faith, which all through the Macedonian and Parthian eras had undoubtedly continued to be the religion of the people in Iran proper, and especi- ally in Persis. The Parthian monarchs were Zoroastrians, but probably often very lukewarm in the faith. Ardashtr, on the contrary, ostentatiously placed symbols of fire-wor- ship on his coins, and on his inscriptions boasts himself a " Mazdayasn," or orthodox Zoroastrian. From his days onward the often fanatical and persecuting clergy enjoyed great power in the Sds4nian empire, and the hierarchical organization of the state church, so similar to that of the Christian clergy, probably dates from Ardashir; it is referred to, at least, on the inscriptions of his immediate successors. Popularity and a certain religious prestige were the natural fruits of this orthodox zeal on the part of Ardashtr, but his success was essentially the fruit of his energy and

1 The Arabs, having no p, pronounce Babak ; but this is not Persian. Th general the forms of proper names followed in this article give the More recent pronunciation, which may have prevailed about the end of the Sasdnian period.

- These show a full-face portrait with the legend " Artakhshathr king." The reverse has his father's portrait in profile with the legend "son of the divine Papak." The older form of Ardashir's name, Artakhshathr, is the ancient Achxmenian name, which the Greeks write Artaxerxes, and which, singularly enough (together with the name Darius, Dary4v, Dérdb, Dard), had survived in the home of the Ache- Menians, although genuine Persian tradition had lost all memory of

the old empire. ® See A. v. Gutschmid, in Z.D. M.G., xxxiv. 734.

PERSi «A

The best works on the coins are by Thomas, in his edition of

valour. Slowly and not without toil he rose from king 212-233, of Persis to be king of the kings of Iran. He began by subduing successively Kiran, Susiana, and the petty states – at the mouth of the Tigris. But after this he came into conflict with the great king, whom, according to the con- temporary account of Dio Cassius, he smote in three battles. The decisive engagement with Ardavan (Artabanus) in which the last Parthian monarch fell, and where Ardashir gained the title of “king of kings,” seems to have been on 28th April 224 (or 227, according to A. v. Gutschmid), and was probably fought in Babylonia or Susiana, for the next enterprise of Ardashir was an unsuccessful attack on the strong walls of Hatra, which perhaps was not taken and destroyed till the reign of his successor. Ardashir con- quered Media, where an Arsacid prince was his adversary, and gained the greater part of the Iranian highlands, but failed in Armenia, whither a son of Ardavan had fled.

The Romans saw with concern the rise of a prince who already directed his aims against their Asiatic possessions, and seems to have had some success in this quarter, till in 233 he was smitten by Alexander Severus in a great battle.4 Henceforth, though peace was often made between the two powers, they remained constant rivals,—and rivals on equal terms, for, though under able rulers and when the inner condition of the empire was not greatly disturbed, the Europeans of Rome or Byzantium were still too strong for the Asiatics, the tables were not seldom turned, and Rome sustained many a shameful defeat. This struggle fills the chief place in the political history of the Sdsdnians : and the inner development of the empire, its martial and political institutions, its art and industry, were also most powerfully influenced by the superior civilization of the

. West.

The nominal capital was always at Istakhr, where, for Sasdnian example, the holy ‘‘pyreum” of the royal house stood, and SW4Y- where the heads of conquered foreign kings were hung up. But the real metropolis was the Arsacid capital of Ctesiphon, with Ardashir’s new foundation of Veh-Ardashir, just across the Tigris on the site of the old Seleucia. The rich alluvial land that surrounded these twin cities was no part of Irén proper,

and its inhabitants were mainly Sem- ites ; but old example, and probably its vicinity to Roman soil, marked it out for the true seat of government.

The extent of the empire at the time of Ardashir's death is uncertain, for the national tradition ascribes to him some conquests that were really made by his successors, and others which the Sésdnians never made at all. Shapur, his son, calls himself on his inscriptions king of the kings of Iran and non-Iran, where his father says only "of Iran" ; so that it was the son who first extended the realm beyond the bounds of what was then known as Iran. Non-Iran may refer to districts in the far East, where, however, the Sdsan-ian power never reached so far as that of the Achzmenians, and it may also include Armenia. At any rate, Ardashir won a great empire and consolidated it, so that it held to- gether for four centuries. He gave a powerful blow to the system of vassal states, which had become more and more prevalent under the Arsacids, and reduced most of these states to provinces. In this sense he is justly viewed by tradition as the restorer of the unity of Irdn ;> but the

4 Lampridius, Al. Sev., 56. His statement rests on documentary evidence, and is accepted by Tillemont and by Clinton, who confirms it from coins. The attachment of the troops from Orrhoene for Alexander (Capitol., Afaximinus, ii.) was probably connected with his liberation of their country from the Persians, Rawlinson's and Spiegel's preference for the statement of the romancer Herodian, that the Per- sians were the victors, is pseudo-criticism.

5 It must not be supposed that the Persians had a clear recollection of the might and breadth of the Achemenian empire, though Western writers, who knew the old history from books, sometimes make Per- sians speak as if they sharcd in that knowledge. No doubt a Sdsdnian would sometimes hear from a Greek or Syrian how his predecessors

233-282.

Shapur I.'s wars with Rome.

unity, of course, was not such as in a modern European state. The great barons in particular were still very powerful, and were more than once a danger to the kings. At bottom they were a continuation of the Parthian nobility, falling into divers classes, headed, as in the Achemenian empire, by the seven noblest houses. There was also a numerous minor nobility. Later generations looked back upon the founder of the empire as the best of lawgivers and the ideal monarch ; and, of course, so great a patron of Zoroastrianism left a high reputation for piety. A man of mark he certainly was, but the fratricide that opened his reign, and such a barbarity as tradition itself relates of his conduct to the conquered Ardavan, whose head he spurned with his feet, show him to have been very far from a pattern character. It is interesting to find his memory intertwined with similar romantic legends to those told of Cyrus. He was born of (we are told) a mean father, and lived as a page at the court of Ardavan, as Cyrus lived at that of Astyages, and so forth. Dreams and portents figure in the later as in the earlier legend, and even a mythical conflict with a dragon is recounted. Fortunately a much more historical picture has been preserved by genuine tradition.

Ardashir is said to have adopted his son Shapur as partner of his throne, and this is confirmed by coins on which a youthful head appears along with Ardashir's like- ness. He died late in 241 or early in 242. Shaptr IL. (older form Shahpuhr ; Sapor or Sapores of the Westerns) was probably crowned on 20th March 242. Legendary tradition makes his mother an Arsacid princess taken at the capture of Ctesiphon ; but, according to a more probable account, Shaptr was already able to bear arms in the decisive battle with Ardavan. Nor can he have been a mere stripling when his reign began, as his prowess against Rome shows ; for in Ardashir's last years, in the reign of Maximin (236-238), the war had been renewed, and Nisibis and Carrhz (Haran), two fortresses which constantly re- appear in this history, had been taken. In 242 Shapur had penetrated to Antioch, before Gordian ITIL. or rather his father-in-law Timesitheus, drove him back and retook the Mesopotamian strongholds. The Persians were defeated at Réshaind, and Gordian proposed to march on the capital by way of the Euphrates, as Julian subsequently did; when almost on the frontier, a little below the junction of the Euphrates and Chaboras, he was murdered by Philip the Arab (244), who concluded a humiliating peace with Shapur, and is said—

for the details are obscure—to have given up to him Armenia and Mesopotamia. Our whole knowledge of the Perso-Roman wars in the 3d century is very defective ; but there seems now to have been a lull for some years, till in 251 or 252 Shapur again was in motion, now at length effecting an occupation of Armenia and com- pelling its king to flee to Roman soil. The Roman world was at this period so shaken that Syria was again and again invaded,—how often we can hardly say; nay, a Syrian, Cyriades, himself led the Persians to Antioch and assumed the purple under their protection. At last the emperor Valerian took the field in person ; but, after pro- tracted operations in Mesopotamia, fortune turned against the Romans and Valerian himself became Shapur's captive (260), under unknown circumstances, and, according to

had reigned as far as Constantinople, but this was not living tradition. Western scholars again sometimes mixed up the old and the new State, as when Libanius supposes that Susa, the residence of Xerxes and Artaxerxes, must also be the residence of his contemporary Sapor (Shdptr). The Sdsdnians, however, regarded themselves as successors of the mythical kings of Irdn.

? An abridged extract of the romantic history of Ardashir has been preserved in the original Pahlavi, and has been published by Noldeke (see p. 185, note 1, above). 'The same legendary material is used by Firdausi ; ep. also Z7.D.M.G., xxxiv. 585, 599.

Roman accounts, through treachery, but certainly not till he had entered into negotiations and vainly sought to purchase a free retreat for his army with gold. Shapur now pene- trated with an invading host far into Roman territory towards Asia Minor, but he met with not unsuccessful opposition. The general Ballista cut off many Persians ; but a heavier blow was struck by Odzenathus at the head of his Palmyrenes, who, in this or a subsequent campaign, smote the retreating Persians and even captured the royal harem ; nay, once, if not twice, he laid siege to Ctesiphon itself (for details see Panmyra). Presumably now as in later times the Persian empire proved

unable to sustain the cost of prolonged campaigns. These Oriental kingdoms are on the whole poor, though they include some fertile regions, and though the kings accumulate large stores of treasure. The Persians had no great standing army like the Romans, and the levies summoned to the standard could not long be kept together; hence so many brilliant débuts in warfare without lasting result. Shdpur effected no permanent gain of territory, for even Armenia seems now to have fallen again under Roman suzerainty.? But Valerian was not delivered, and died in captivity. The figures of the victorious king and the captive Czesar are still to be seen hewn, perhaps by Roman subjects, on the rocks of Persis, and Persian tradition, which preserves so few historical facts as to the immediate successors of Ardashir, has not forgotten this crowning humiliation of Rome. Some of the traditional deeds of Shapur I. really belong to Shaépur IL, but we may accept him as the author of the great irrigation works at Shushtar, and it was he who built Gundév Shapur (Ar. Jundai-Sdébur, Syr. Béth Lapat), which was often used by the kings as their second residence, and stood to Ctesiphon as its neighbour Susa in Achemenian times did to Babylon. Shaptr's sway over non-Ir4nian peoples has been already referred to; but the Augustan historians are certainly right in speaking of the Bactrians as a nation still independent and often hostile to Persia, and the same is true of the Cadusians (Pollio, Val., ch. i.), 2.¢., the Délamites of Gilan, who were never subdued by the Sdsd4nians. At the very beginning of Shaptr's reign Mani, founder of the Manichzan sect (see MaNicH@IsM), began to preach, against which the Persian priests fought for centuries as vigorously as against the various sections of Nicene Christians.

The close of Shdépur's reign saw great changes in the Roman east (see Patmyra). At the fall of Palmyra Shapur was probably no longer alive.

previously been governor of Khorasan. hero," appears to have been gained by prowess against the Romans before his accession, for his reign of one year gave little time for great deeds.

His successor, Bahram (Varahrdn) I., was not his son as tradition represents, but, according to an inscription, his brother. He is said to have been a weak prince, given to pleasure. The execution of Mani falls within his reign, which (subject to a possible error of as much as two years, which affects all

dates of reigns between Bahram I. and Sh4pur II.) may be dated between 274 and 277.

Of his son, Bahram II. (c. 277-294), Persian tradition has next to nothing to tell. To him may be probably ascribed two long but ill-preserved inscriptions, religious in content, almost sermonizing, and of very clerical colour. He had wars with Rome, of which we only know that they were terminated by a peace with Probus (276-282),3 and that Probus was murdered before he could renew the con-

2 See an essay by Gutschmid, 7. D.M.G., xxxi. 51, which is instruct ive as to the relations between Persia and Armenia generally.

3 Vopiscus, Probus, 17, who, as Tillemont remarks, wrongly puts “ Narseus ” for ‘‘ Bahram.”

His son Hormizd 8u)* (Ohkrmazd) I. came to the throne in 272 or 273, having 8) His title, “the” |

EMPIRE. |

Paro lA.

flict. Carus, however, in 283 led his army as far as the hostile capital, and had taken Ctesiphon and Coche (a part

609

buildings. To break up congregations he often constrained 282-368. prominent church members to stone their own priests.

of Seleucia) when he suddenly died (by lightning, it is said), and the Romans drew off. Carus is said to have been favoured by intestine disorders, which at this period

The Persian priests, of course, used the opportunity to gratify their hatred of the Christians, and other impure passions Increased the cruelty of Shaptir’s hard measures,

were certainly common in Persia.- In 291 a rhetorician mentions the rebellion of a certain Hormizd (Ormies) against his brother the king, in alliance with barbarians. A youthful son, who appears opposite the queen on coins of Bahram IT., seems never to have ascended the throne,

The Christians on their part showed much heroic courage mixed with not a little cowardice,

Roman sources tell us that the war was begun by the Shéptr Persians with an invasion of Mesopotamia. Constantine IL's con-

died on 22d May 337, before he could march against them. aha.

‘

which was probably contested between Bahram III. (a son of Hormizd I. 1) and Narseh (according to an inscrip- tion, son of Shaptr L.). Bahram III, called Sagan Shah, because he had been governor of Sagastan (Sistan), reigned, or at least held the capital, for a very short time; Narseh reigned from c. 293 to 303, and, following up Shdpur's policy, occupied Armenia and defeated Galerius (probably in 297) between Carrhz and Callinicus (Rakka) in Meso- potamia. But under Diocletian's wise rule Galerius soon restored the honour of the Roman arms, totally defeating Narseh in Armenia and taking his wives and children. A brilliant peace (298) rewarded the victors ; to recover his family the Persian ceded Armenia and Mesopotamia, and even some districts east of the Tigris as far as Kurdistan. The peace lasted forty years.

Narseh's son, Hormizd IT., came to the throne about 303 _and was succeeded early in 310 by his son, Adharnarseh, "who was soon deposed, and probably slain, ostensibly for

his cruelty. The nobles now held the reins of power, and, having blinded one brother of the fallen king and im-

‘ Shéptr prisoned another (Hormizd),! crowned Shapur IT., the new- ie

born (or unborn) son of Queen Ifra (1) Hormizd (310). The rule of the queen-mother and nobles was what may be readily imagined in an Oriental empire, which above all things needs a strong man at the head; but such a man young Shapur, one of the greatest princes of the dynasty, soon proved himself to be. Persian tradition preserves few really historical notices of Shéptr II., but is full of stories of astounding campaigns against the Arabs, highly coloured by hatred of that race; and there is no doubt that Shapur did devote himself with energy to the always important task of repelling the plundering Bedouins from the civilized lands on which their deserts border. Another notable undertaking was the new foundation of Susa after it had rebelled and been chastised by total demolition, the very ground being stamped down by the king's elephants. Niswdptr (q.v.);¢.¢., Wév-shdhpuhr, may be his foundation, or that of Shapur I.

In Shapur's youth fell the victory of Roman Christian- ity over paganism under Constantine, and the Christians of Persia at once threw in their sympathies with the Christian state. These feelings were openly shown when Shapur in 337 or 338 began a Roman war, as appears in a homily of the Syrian bishop Aphraates, a subject of Persia. The bishop of the capital, too, ventured to use language against the king which no Oriental prince, least of all

Acts of Persian Martyrs give a lively picture,—instructive, too, for the light cast on persons and affairs in the realm. Shapur was no fanatic, as even the Acts of the martyrs show, and he did not molest the Jews, whom his priests hated quite as much as the Christians. But, like Diocle- tian, he wished to destroy the organization of the church, and therefore used the utmost rigour against the lower as well as the higher clergy, and destroyed the ecclesiastical

t Hormizd escaped to the Romans in 323 and remained with them

all his life. As late as 368 he shared the Roman campaign against his half-brother Shapur.

But Shapur's great preparations, as we learn from Aphraates, fell in the year that begins with autumn 337. With many vicissitudes and long pauses the war endured for twenty- five years, but only for its second part do we

possess fuller accounts by contemporaries and in part eye-witnesses. Shaptr's aim was to drive the Romans from the upper Tigris, where they were dangerously near Ctesiphon, and especially to seize Nisibis, and then to reduce Armenia,' that old apple of discord between East and West. Three times Nisibis victoriously resisted a severe siege (338, 346, 350), and other sieges occupy a great place in the story of the war. Constantius, when he took the field in person, was always defeated, as in 348 at the great battle of Sin- gara (Shingdr, Ar. Sinjar). Yet Shapur's successes bore little fruit, mainly perhaps because Diocletian and Con- stantine had put the fortresses in the best condition, and in all respects had made wise provisions to cover the threatened districts. Even when victorious the Persians could hardly penetrate into western Mesopotamia, and if Shéptr had taken all the strong places he could hardly have garrisoned them. Thus he took Amida (Amid) after long and costly sieges, and in the very next year (360) the Romans found it ungarrisoned. The Romans were helped, too, by the trouble which Shaptr had with barbarous ene- mies ; the third siege of Nisibis was all but successful when the Persian was called away to Khordsén by urgent affairs there. These eastern conflicts were the prelude to a long pause in the contest (350-358), broken only by small forays. When, however, the Romans opened negotiations (356 to 358) Shadpur had made peace in the east and offered no conditions that could be accepted. In 359 and 360 the war was again hotly renewed, and Shdpur took several im- portant fortresses. Then there was a lull till 363, when the warlike, active, and ambitious Julian, now sole emperor, resolved to strike at the capital of the enemy, as Trajan, Severus, and Carus had done. He left Antioch for Meso- potamia in March and swiftly descended the Euphrates, wasting the enemy's land with fire and sword and taking several cities by short sieges, among others the royal city of Mahéz Malka, not far from Ctesiphon. Julian now occupied Seleucia, but, finding he was not strong enough to take Ctesiphon, the fortified capital on the opposite bank of the Tigris, he ordered a retreat along the left bank. And now for the first time Shaptr's troops began to harass him, but the army might have regained Roman soil without seri- ous loss had not Julian fallen mortally wounded in a skir-

| Perseeu- one like Shapur, could submit to. And so almost simul- | mish (26th June 363). The army chose Jovian emperor, ae taneously with the Roman war a terrible persecution of | a man too weak for such an occasion,

who managed his ioe the Christians broke out (339/340), of which the Syrian | soldiers and the negotiations so badly that a shameful peace

was the result, and Shapur regained the lands east of the Tigris lost to Galerius, and part of Mesopotamia with Nisibis and Singara. Nisibis was the gravest loss, for in all future wars it was to the Persians a sure base for advance and a bulwark for defence. But a still more shameful condition was that the Romans should not help their ally Arsaces of Armenia against Shapur. The Persian, nevertheless, did not find Armenia an easy con- quest. He took Arsaces captive, but this did not decide the fate of the whole country, divided as it was by nature into a number of separate regions under almost independent

captains. The Christian Armenians leaned on the whole towards Rome, while the Zoroastrians, who still formed a large part of the nation, inclined to Persia, and the personal interests of the great barons, who preferred to recognize no lord, inclined them now to this side, now to that. Papa, son of Arsaces, fled to the Romans and got help from them, first secretly and then openly ; but he was only their tool in the design of reducing Armenia to a province. Con- flicts between the rival empires took place also to the north of Armenia in Iberia, and after five years they were practically again at war. In 371 Shaéptr was openly met by Roman troops in Armenia, which both parties were determined to have by force or by fraud. Once and again negotiations failed, but a general war was still averted by external circumstances (on Rome’s part by the Gothic war) and considerations of prudence.

Shaptr IL, who is justly celebrated by the later tradi- tions, died towards the end of the summer of 379, and was succeeded by his brother, Ardashir II., an old man, who was perhaps chosen king for similar reasons to those which governed the choice of Shaptr as an infant. As prince and governor of Adiabene Ardashir had taken an active part in the suppression of Christianity in 344 and as late as 376, but with his accession the persecution ceased —whether of purpose or merely from the Oriental lack of persistency we cannot tell—and a bishop was again ad- mitted even in the capital. Ardashir was deposed in 383 or 384, having taken strong measures against the nobles and put some of them to death.

His successor, Shaptr III., son of Shépur IL., at once sent ambassadors to Constantinople and made a definite treaty of peace (384). In 388 or 389 he was murdered by the nobles. His successor (a son, or perhaps a brother), Bahram IV., called Kirman Shéh,! kept peace with Rome and was clement to the Christians. In 390 Armenia was divided by treaty, much the larger part becoming a vassal state of Persia and the rest falling to Rome. The division, with various modifications and vicissitudes, lasted into Arab times. Bahrdm was shot by a band of “miscreants” in the summer of 399.

Yazdegerd I., son of Shapur IT. or Shépur ITT., seems to have been designated heir to the throne while Bahram IV. was still alive, or at least he held such high dignity that his name appears on coins of his predecessor. Persian tradition makes him wise but very wicked. Christian witnesses, on the other hand, speak very favourably of him, and it appears certain that his surname, “the Sinner,” was gained by a severity, perhaps tyrannical, towards the grandees, by tolerance towards the Christians, and little favour shown to the priests. In 410 the Christians were even allowed to hold a regularly constituted synod in the capital, and the king employed the “‘ Catholicus ”—z.¢., the primate of the church, a functionary possessed of full religious autonomy—on a mission to the emperor, and even in settling differences with his own brother, who governed Persis. Yazdegerd had no personal inclination towards Christianity, and he severely punished the fanaticism of Bishop ‘Abda, who had insulted a Zoroastrian sanctuary in Susiana, but his habitual tolerance was enough to make him hated of the Persian priests. The warlike nobles also found cause for dissatisfaction in his earnest endeavours to keep on quiet terms with Rome, with whom he

made a treaty of peace and friendship in the summer of 408, when he seems to have pledged himself to support the throne of Theodosius II. during his minority. Over Persian Armenia he set his own son Shaptir. We have every reason to deem Yazdegerd an excellent prince for the time and circum-stances, but he was not well pleasing to the god of the

i ee Rag : ae He had ruled in Kirman, and from him two towns, in Kurdistan and in Kirman, take the name Kirmdnshahan.

re RS’ Ss

with Rome.

[sASANIAN

Persians, who smote him with sudden and miraculous death in distant Hyrcania. The explanation of the miracle is no doubt that he was murdered by the magnates (probably late in summer 420).

Shapur, hurrying from Armenia on the news of his father’s death, was slain by the grandees, who had resolved altogether to exclude from the throne the seed of the hated Yazdegerd. A distant relation, Khosrau, was made king, but had to contest the throne with another son of Yazdegerd, Bahrém, who in his father’s lifetime had dwelt apparently in a sort of exile, with the powerful vassal prince Al-Mondhir (Alamundaros) of Hira, on the borders of the desert to the west of the Euphrates. Mondhir energetically supported the claims of his guest-friend, and appeared with a vast Arab horde before the gates of Ctesiphon, which is only three or four days’ march from Hira. As Bahram doubtless had support among the Persians also, Khosrau gave way, and Bahram took the throne, but with a promise to reign in a different spirit from his father and please the magnates and the priests. This is the first important intervention of the Arabs in the affairs of Persia.

Bahram V., surnamed Gér or Wildass, is the favourite Bahra hero of Persian tradition, which tells many incredible V-

stories about him. He came to the throne young, and was always a jolly prince, very fond of women, and whose personal strength and prowess as a

huntsman, perhaps also in war, blinded men's eyes to the real weakness of his sway. The change of policy was at once announced in a systematic persecution of the Christians and in war For the latter there were pretexts enough on both sides, but the Romans would not have begun the war merely because the Christians were persecuted ; its real authors were presumably the Persian nobles. The chief seat of war was the north of Persian Mesopotamia and the mountain-land above. The Persians were led by one of the greatest nobles, Mihr Narseh, whom Persian tradition represents as taking Constantinople, while we know that he really sustained heavy defeat at the very commencement of the war (August 421). Nisibis was attacked by the Romans, but relieved after a siege of some length. In 422 both parties were glad to make peace ; religious freedom was given to Christians in Persia and to Zoroastrians in the Roman empire. There seems to have been no change of frontier, but the Romans promised to receive no Arabs who wished to change their allegiance,? and to pay an annual sum towards the maintenance of the defences of the Caucasian Gates (the pass of Dariel), which protected both powers from the inroads of the northern barbarians. This last condition reappears in almost all treaties and always caused soreness. For, how- ever carefully the provision was worded, both sides looked on the contribution as a tribute, of which the Romans evaded payment whenever they could.

The Persians, we may suppose, were the readicr to make peace that they were again embroiled with the nation of Kushdn or Haitél, the Hephthalites or "white Huns," who then ruled in Bactria and the surrounding lands. Constant wars of Persia with this people went on during the 5th century and gave the Romans repose, and we are hardly bound to believe the Persian tradition that Bahram had a glorious victory over the Hephthalites.

A movement for freedom had taken place in Persian

Armenia during the Roman war; but after the peace Bahram established a new vassal king, till in 429 the conduct of the selfish Armenian nobles led the Persians

2 The Bedouin tribes, "nec amici nobis unquam nec hostes optandi" (Ammian., xiv. 4, 1), and the petty states that had been formed out of them,

under Roman or Persian suzerainty, were a constant trouble to both empires in war and in peace.

amie

<2 RA eee ar a a

—_— 4

1 Yazde- gerd II.

Balash.

EMPIRE. |

to make Armenia a province,—a change which was sup- ported by a strong party among the Armenians themselves. But the Persian governors had as much trouble with barons and clergy as the old kings had had.

Bahram, dying in 438 or 439, was succeeded by his son, Yazdegerd I1., of whom little good can be said. He per- secuted both Jews and Christians, abolished the audiences on the first day of each month on which every man of posi- tion could approach the king with petitions or complaints, and is recorded to have married his daughter (that, of course, was no crime in a Zoroastrian) and then murdered her.

In 441 he very nearly came to war with Rome, but peace was concluded without further conflict than some harrying of the marches, and it was provided (as in later and probably in earlier treaties) that no new fortresses should be erected on the border by either party. Yazdegerd was much in Khorasan, where he sustained repeated defeats from the Hephthalites; and in 450/451 he had to deal with a serious rebellion in Armenia, mainly produced by persecution of the Christians, which was not quelled till he promised complete freedom of Christian worship.

On the death of Yazdegerd II. (457) the throne was for two years contested between his two sons by Dinak 1— Hormizd, prince-governor of Sagastén, and Péréz. The latter, who was the younger, proved successful by aid of the

Hephthalites and the energy of Rahdm of the house of Mihran, and put his brother and three others of the nearest royal kin to death. Péréz was again a persecutor of Jews and Christians, but had political wisdom enough to favour the reception of Nestorianism by his Christian subjects when that party was driven from the Roman empire. At the synod of Béth Lapat (483 or 484) the old Christian church of Persia adopted the Nestorian confession, and was thus separated from Byzantium by a wide breach. But in truth Christianity in Persia had never been really much of a danger to the state.?

The Hephthalites and Péréz soon fell out about the reward for their services, and fierce fighting ensued, in which Péréz gained several victories ; but the seat of war was a desert very unfavourable to his operations, and twice he had to make peace on disadvantageous terms, while at least once he was himself taken prisoner and released on heavy ransom, leaving his son Kavadh a hostage for its payment for the space of two years. But Péréz always broke faith again with the foe, and at length, in 484, he was among the missing after a terrible battle, in which his daughter was taken captive and placed in the harem of the Hephthalite king. The conquerors now overflowed Persia, which for a time was without a monarch till order was restored by Zarmihr, of the great house of Ka4ren, who at the time of Péréz's death had been successfully dealing with a revolt in Armenia, and now hastened to the capital and made Baldsh, Péréz's brother, king. The Hephthalites seem to have been bought off by a yearly tribute. Baldsh's brother, Zareh, who also claimed the crown, was vanquished and put to death. But the new king had little power, and secured the obedience of the Armenians only by granting that the Persian state religion should be wholly excluded from their land. The clemency of Baldsh is praised by the Syrians and Armenians, possibly for no other reason than that his relations with the Persian priesthood were unfriendly. Their enmity proved fatal to him ; his treasuries were empty, so that he could neither

1 Dinak's likeness is preserved on agem; see B. Dorn, in Compite- rendu dela Com. Arch. pour 1878, 1879, p. 162 sq. (St Petersburg).

2 The Armenians, on the other hand, joined the Monophysites, who had a large party in the Roman empire and often had the upper hand there,

3 Persian tradition makes Sékhré (i.e., Zarmihr) humble the enemy and compel them to restore their booty.

gain a party among the nobles nor secure the support of 429-526,

an army, and in 488 or 489 he was deposed and blinded.

His nephew and successor, Kavadh I., son of Péréz, Kavédh

found the land in a very disturbed state; there were I. rebellions among the barbarous mountain tribes and there was another rising in Armenia. Now Kavddh was not disposed to be the humble servant of the priests and nobles to whom he owed the crown, and to humiliate them he played the dangerous game of encouraging Mazdak, the energetic priest of a new religion, which demanded in the name of justice that he who had a superfluity of goods and several wives should impart to those who had none. This theory was actually put in practice to some consider- able extent, but then the nobility and clergy rose, deposed Kavadh, and imprisoned him in the “Castle of Oblivion,” 4 placing his brother Jamasp on the throne (c. 496). But Kavadh escaped to the Hephthalites, where he had once lived as a hostage, received in marriage the daughter of the king (whose mother was the captive sister of Kavadh), and with his help expelled Jaémasp and recovered his king- dom (498 or 499). Kav4dh held severe judgment on the traitors, and it was probably at this time that he gave up Zarmihr into the hands of his most dangerous rival, Shapur of the house of Mihran. He does not seem to have carried his Mazdakite experiment farther, and he had put the realm into fair order when he began a war with Rome.

Between Rome and Persia there had been such a series of negotiations and compacts, none of which had been scrupulously observed, that either side could find a casus bella at will. Kavddh had the will, and in summer 502 he opened that era of hideous strife between Rome and Persia which so exhausted both powers as to pave the way for the new empire of the Arabs. In August he seized without a fight Theodosiopolis (Karin, Erzerum),

capital of Roman Armenia. On 10th January 503 Amida fell after a siege of three months and was cruelly chastised for its resistance, tens of thousands of the inhabitants being put to the sword. The Romans acted with little energy or unity of plan, and in the course of the war Mesopotamia suffered terribly. Amida was restored to the Romans by compact, or rather by purchase, after a long siege in 504; and after much fighting a peace was concluded in the autumn of 506, leaving things as they were before the war. The Persians, we are told, were ready for peace because they had on their hands a war with the ‘‘Huns,”—a very vague word in the mouth of a Greek. But Kavddh must have been in considerable difficulty, for he tamely submitted to a gross breach of the treaty when Anastasius raised the village of Dara to a great fortress to hold Nisibis in check. There was no more war while Anastasius was emperor, but Justin I. (518-527) seems to have ceased the payment for the Caucasian Gates again stipulated in the peace of 506, to which Kavadh replied by letting loose his Arabs on the empire, and the Romans retaliated by forays in Persian Armenia. There were also serious disputes about the suzerainty of the lands between Caucasus and Pontus, but . Kavadh was still anxious to avert war, from which pre- sumably he saw that no permanent advantage could flow. At the same time he was very eager to secure the succes- sion for his favourite son, Khosrau, who was not his eldest ; and he thought that if he could induce the emperor to adopt Khosrau as his own son this would form a sort of guarantee and greatly impress the Persians. A nego-

4 Identified by Sir H. Rawlinson as Gilgerd in northern Susiana,

5 Kavddh’s escape and restoration seem to have been favoured by some of the greatest nobles, and Persian tradition, which, however, is very confused in this whole chapter, makes Zarmihr the companion of his flight.

6 Of this war we have good accounts in contemporary Syriac sources.

526-546,

Mondhir of Hira.

Khosrau 178 itis ternal rule.

tiation on this and other matters at Nisibis (525 or 526) seems, however, to have been badly managed on both sides, and its failure cost the Roman ambassador his place and the Persian his head. War now began on the borders in 527 before Justin's death (7.¢., before 1st August). A Roman attack on Nisibis and a Persian on Dara failed. Fighting, broken by negotiations, went on for several years, and in it Belisarius first came to the front as a general.

An important episode in this war is the invasion of Syria by Mondhir of Hira. This prince seems to have been more powerful than was safe for Persia, and Kavadh had stripped him of all or part of his possessions and given them to Harith, a scion of the widespread house of the kings of the Kinda. When war broke out Mondhir, who was an expericnced warrior, was restored to his old sway, and in 529 he fell on Syria, pillaging and holding captives to ransom as far as Antioch. Mondhir was a savage heathen, who on one day sacrificed 400 nuns of a Syrian cloister to his goddess 'Uzza (the planet Venus). In the same year he slew Harith in battle and exccuted in Hira a number of captives of the Kinda house. For half a century he was the terror of the subjects of Rome, little recking whether they were at peace or at war with his master, till in 554 he fell in battle with a Roman vassal, EHérith ibn Jabala, whose son he had also sacrificed to 'Uzza.

Under Mondhir's influence Kavddh in 531 undertook a regular campaign against Syria, the first since centuries. The Persians crossed the Euphrates and had pressed far to the north when Belisarius compelled them to turn back. In a battle at Rakka Belisarius was defeated, but the Persians found it expedient to continue their retreat (19th April.531). In Mesopotamia the Persians were this year successful, and had almost reduced the great fortress of Martyropolis (Maiferkat, Arab. Maydfdrikin) when news came of Kavaddh's death, and a truce was made.

In 528 or 529 Kavddh, through his son Khosrau, had made a bloody end of the Mazdakites, whose success proved too dangerous to society to be longer endured.

Kavadh died, eighty-two years old, 13th September 531, and was succeeded by his destined heir, Khosrau (Chosroes), surnamed Anésharvan, “the Blessed,” whom his father is said to have caused to be crowned as he lay on his death- bed.? Khosrau I. was a great king, and deserved the title of “the Just,” though he was not the ideal prince that Eastern writers make him. By carrying out the regula- tion of the land-tax already commenced by his father, and by measures to control the collection of taxes, he benefited his subjects as well as the treasury. In Babylonia at least, the richest province, his fiscal ordinances proved productive, and, according to an Eastern standard, not too oppressive, down to the fall of the Sasd4nian empire ; the Arabs themselves contrast the old Persian system with the oppressive taxation of Moslem times, which was ruinous to the finances of the state as well as to the inhabitants. The public welfare, too, was served by the construction or repair of bridges, canals, embankments, and the like. The priests favoured Khosrau for his extirpation of the Mazdakites, which he completed at the beginning of his reign; but they were not permitted to rule his policy. He managed the great nobles with tact, rather strengthen- ing than weakening the aristocratic basis of the realm, but making it serviceable to himself. Measures were taken to relieve the insecurity which the Mazdakites had introduced in relations of property and the family, and the army was the object of special care. Khosrau had a decided leaning to Western civilization ; and, though an Oriental despot could not be expected to sympathize with the highest fruits of Hellenic genius at a time when they

1 The principal sources for this war are Procopius and the Syrian account in Land, Anecdota, iii. ay That the nomination of Khosrau surprised the Persian nobles is simply impossible. Procopius, it must be remembered, drew for the events at Khosrau’s accession on the tales of the (true or false) pre- tendant Kavadh, son of Jam, and grandson of King Kavadh. But it 1s quite possible that such things as the removal of princes and the execution of valuable officials took place under Khosrau.

were little appreciated even in Europe, and the heathen

philosophers who came to Persia to seek a philosophic

state soon returned undeceived, it is to his honour that | the Persian secured for them the free exercise of their

faith by a clause in the treaty of 549. The Christians,

so long as they obeyed the laws, were unmolested ; nay,

Khosrau helped to maintain the worship not only of the Nestorians but even of the Monophysites, who had much

more friendly relations to the Roman empire. Apostasy

from Zoroastrianism was forbidden by ancient law, and

proselytizing by Christians was strictly prohibited, yet the Monophysite abbot Ahudemmeh, who had got a large

contribution from the king to build his monastery, and

thereafter baptized a son of Khosrau, who presently fled

to the Romans, was punished only by a mild imprisonment,

in which he was allowed to see his scholars. Nor did

the Christians suffer for their sympathy with the rebellious prince Andshazidh ; and yet Khosrau was no weakling,

but energetic, warlike, and on occasion cruel.4

The negotiations begun in 531 issued in September 532

in a “perpetual peace,” the Romans promising a large annual subsidy and other concessions, while the Persians

gave back certain castles in Lazistén at the eastern end of the Black Sea. Khosrau had need of peace, and used it

probably to protect the frontiers from divers barbarous foes, for tradition speaks of his measures for the safety of

the borders towards the Caucasus and on the east. Un- manageable tribes, too, were moved to new homes. Ina few years he was strong enough to go to war again, feel- ing perhaps that Justinian's successes in Africa and Italy

had made the hereditary foe too strong. This danger, no doubt, was forcibly set before him by the emissaries of the Gothic king Vitiges, and a tempting opportunity was

presented by an appeal which came to him fron: the rebel

nobles of Roman Armenia, Christians though they were.

Pretexts for war were never lacking, if only through the

Arab subjects of the two powers.

Syria as Shd4pur I. had done, and marched through the land to the shore of the " Roman sea," taking and pillaging such strong cities as did not buy him off. Antioch in particular yielded an enormous booty ; it was burned and the inhabitants carried captive. Turning homewards, the Persian traversed north Syria and Mesopotamia from west to east, levying a contribution even from the hated fortress of Dara. Carrhz alone, whose population was still mainly heathen, and so presumably inclined to the non-Christian empire, escaped scot free. Ctesiphon was reached at the close of summer, the whole campaign having come off without a single pitched battle. Khosrau, still more than Shapur IT., sought in the barbarous old usage of whole- sale captivities a means of appropriating to his own service the culture and technical skill of the West. Thus he made for the captive Antiochians a new municipality (Khosrau-Antiochia, or "the Roman town") hard by the royal residence, which was a notable tribute to the superiority of Roman culture and life. The town was made as Western in character as could be, and the inhabit- ants were established in comfort, and had religious freedom, and evena Christian mayor. They retained their national manners till the fall of the empire. Chariot-races, for example, were as popular as they had been in old Antioch.

Next year Khosrau was invited to Lazistan by the natives, and penetrated to the Black Sea and took the strong place of Petra. In Mesopotamia war went on for several “3 ‘This is known from an unprinted Syrian biography by a disciple of Ahudemmeh, who manages to make the king a tyrant by inventing a silly miracle to explain his clemency. Ahudemmeh died, after two years’ imprisonment, 2d August 575.

4 Procopius naturally speaks unfavourably of so dangerous an enemy of the Romans.

But Khosrau certainly War w} desired the war, and early in 540 he set forth to attack Rome.

Second Roman war,

EMPIRE. |

years with chequered fortune. In 546 the Romans paid a large sum for a five years’ truce, and another five years’ truce followed in 553, though Lazistan was excluded from both truces until 556, when the Romans had gained successes there; but during all this time the Persian and Roman Arabs never laid down their arms. At length, about Christmas 562, a fifty years’ peace was concluded, the Romans again promising a considerable yearly subsidy, and the Persians withdrawing their claims on Lazistdn, though the possession of the neighbouring Suania was left an open question. The treaty also provided for religious freedom to the Persian Christians, while all proselytizing among Zoroastrians was strictly forbidden.

During the truces (546-562) great changes had taken place in the East, where a powerful empire had been formed in the northern steppes by the Turks, whose name then, for the first time, became known in the West. The khakan of the Turks, whom the Greeks call Silzibulos and the Arabs (after the Persians) name Sinjibi, took from the Hephthalites the right bank of the Oxus, while Khosrau (seemingly in alliance with the khakan, whose daughter he wedded) occupied the left bank (c. 560). Thus Bactria, from which the Sdsdnians had suffered so much, was at length embodied in their empire, and Péréz was fully avenged.! But the friendship of Turks and Persians was soon changed to that hostility which has long made the rulers

of Turkestan and the deserts appear the natural enemies of the lords of Khords4n. Khosrau must have made other conquests about the same time, for in the negotiations with Rome the Persian representative boasts that his master had conquered ten nations, and tradition enumerates the conquest, or rather recovery, of seven eastern lands. These statements must be taken with some discount, and it is not to be believed that Khosrau really ruled in Afghanistan or Sind, as tradition says, though he doubtless widened and secured the eastern limits of the empire."

About 570 an expedition was sent against Yemen, which the Christian Abyssinians had conquered in 525. A native prince invited Khosrau to expel the Blacks, and, after some hesitation, he sent a small force under Vahriz which easily effected this object. Persian rule was nominally maintained in Yemen till the time of Islam, and tribute was paid more or less irregularly ; but, as the Persians were not a seafaring people, this remote province beyond the waters was of no practical use to them in the way of diverting trade from the hands of the Romans. Khosrau had presumably hoped otherwise, for affairs of trade, especially the overland silk trade in inner Asia, had considerable influence on Sdsdnian policy.

About 551 Khosrau had to deal with a rebellion of his son Andéshazadh, who was then in disgrace in Susiana ; hearing that his father was dangerously ill, he claimed the crown, leaning on the Christians, whose religion was that of his mother. The rebel was easily overpowered and taken; his punishment was not death, but such a partial blinding as made him unfit to reign.

In his last years Khosrau had again to face the Romans. The Roman alliance with the Turkish khakan, the efforts of Khosrau to hamper their intercourse with that potent- ate, now his dangerous foe, the annoyance of the Christian empire at the fall of the Christian realm in Yemen, and the refusal of Justin II. (565-578) to pay the stipulated subsidy were all pretexts for war, but the decisive thing was that all Armenia suddenly threatened to become Roman. There were already plans of rebellion among the

1 A curious proof of the late character of Persian tradition is that it regards the Oxus as having always divided Iran and Turdn, and the Turks as having always been next neighbours of Persia.

2 Purely fabulous exploits, like the conquest of Ceylon, mean only that to the Persians Khosrau, like Bahram V., was lord of the whole world.

Armenian nobles when an outburst of popular fanaticism 546-589,

was caused by the attempt to erect a fire-temple in the capital Dovin, and the.Persian Surén? was slain (spring 571). The rebels and the king of Iberia turned to Con- stantinople, and were taken under the protection of the incapable emperor, who fancied that he could regain both countries. This, of course, was a declaration of war. The events that followed are known from good contemporary sources, but cannot be arranged in clear chronological order. One of the first operations was an unsuccessful siege of Nisibis by the Romans. Khosrau, on the other hand, took Dara in 573, after a siege of six ,months, and. was joined beneath its walls by his captain Adharmahan, returning from a successful campaign in Syria on the model of that of 540, in which he had destroyed Apamea.‘ Tiberius, who with the empress Sophia held the reins of power in Constantinople and was recognized as co-regent in the end of 574, desired peace; but Armenia was ex- cluded from the three years’ truce that he procured. In 575 Khosrau penetrated through that country into Cappa- docia, and, though he had to retire before the Romans and leave his camp to be pillaged, he escaped safely, burning Sebastia and Melitene on the way. The Romans pressed forward and spent the winter in Persian Armenia, but were driven back next year; they had not even secured the sympathy of the Monophysite population. Even beyond Armenia the war broke out again before the truce had expired, and the Romans conducted it with no more humanity than the Persians, leading captive the Christian inhabitants of Arzanene, and making it a special favour to give them a place in Cyprus (577). Negotia- tions for peace were frequent; the Romans saw that it was vain to try to hold Armenia and Iberia, and might even have consented to give up the temporal and spiritual heads of the rebellion who had taken refuge at Constan- tinople, but they very naturally would not make peace without recovering Dara. So things stood when Tiberius became sole emperor, and some months later Khosrau died (c. February 579).

Hormizd IV., son of Khosrau by the Turkish princess, Hormizd The Greeks speak ill of LV-

was a proud enterprising prince. him, and indeed were much offended from the first that he neglected the usual courtesy of formally announcing his accession at Constantinople. Persian tradition makes him ill-disposed and a shedder of blood, and we know that he put his brothers to death when he took the throne, but that, as the contemporary Christian narrator says, was a Persian custom. On the other hand, tradition acknowledges the strict impartial justice with which he upheld the cause of the poor against the great. It was the great man who felt his severity. In the army, too, he was careful of the plebeian troops, and lowered the status of the aristocratic cataphracts. Much to his honour is his reply to the priests when they asked him to withdraw his favour from the Christians. “As our royal throne,” he said, “cannot stand

| on its front legs alone, so our rule cannot stand and be

firm if we turn against us the Christians and members of other alien religions. Cease, therefore, your attacks on the Christians and follow zealously good works, that the Christians and others of alien faith may see them, and give praise and be drawn towards your faith.” In many respects Hormizd seems to have resembled Yazdegerd L., whose fate, too, he shared ; the misfortune was that he had not his father’s tact in managing the nobles and the clergy.

The war with Rome went on throughout his reign with varying fortune. There was a serious war, too, with the Turks, but over these, or rather over one of their vassals, the Persian general Bahram Chébin gained so complete

3 A member of the same house with the conqueror of Crassus. 4 Part of the captive Apameans were settled in New Antioch.

589-623.

a victory that he is said to have made the Turks pay instead of receiving tribute. Bahram was next sent into the lands south of the Caucasus to strike a great blow at Ronie (589), but here he was utterly defeated, and Hor- mizd was foolish enough to dismiss him with disgrace. The general, who was head of the great house of Mihran, replied by open revolt, feeling, no doubt, that he could reckon on the discontent of the nobles and the other armies. The troops in Mesopotamia which had been driven back on Nisibis by the Romans and were afraid of punishment did in fact mutiny and open communication with Bahram, who marched against the capital and reached the Great Zab. An army sent forth against him also mutinied, but declared for Hormizd's son, Khosrau, who was on bad terms with his father. Next, part of the troops rose in Ctesiphon, whither Hormizd had hurried from Media. Bindée, Khosrau's maternal uncle, was in prison there, and his brother Bist4m (Vistahm) set him free by force. Hormizd was deposed and soon after put to death, and Khosrau, who had probably consented to a crime he could not prevent, was proclaimed king (summer

590).

PHBRSILA

[SASANIAN

disorders were ruinous. Nor was Khosrau II. the king fit for such times. A weak coarse-minded nian, at once boastful and timid, avaricious and fond of luxury and splendour, he was at best a very ordinary Oriental despot. He found the treasury empty and left it full, while the empire was impoverished by wars. And in these he won no' glory; his victories were those of his generals. To the Christians he long extended protection and favour, and even built them churches; for he fancied that not only the Christian empire but St Sergius himself, the chief saint of the Roman Syrians and Arabs, had a share in his restoration, and he was much under the influence of a Christian wife, Shirin, and of some other Christians, such as his physician Gabriel.2 But in later years his disposition toward the Christians was altogether reversed.

When Maurice fell by treason and the hideous tyrant Phocas seized the throne (November 602) Khosrau felt himself called to avenge his "father"

and protect Maurice’s supposed son, Theodosius, who had fled to the Persian court. Narses too, the commandant of Edessa, called for help against Phocas. Khosrau accordingly imprisoned the ambassadors who came to announce the new accession,

Civil Khosrau IT. Parvéz, “the conqueror,” had now to deal | and a war began, early in 604, which for twenty years laid

war. with Bahram, who sought the crown, or at least the regency, | the Roman lands open to such ravages as had never before for himself. But the pusillanimous king could not inspire | been known; so helpless was the empire under the bad | his troops with courage to face the experienced general; | rule of Phocas and through the pressure of Avars and he was deserted in the first shock of battle, and fled to | other barbarians. Khosrau was present at the taking of Circesium to cast himself on the aid of the emperor | Dara (604),? but had no personal share in the war after Maurice, who undertook to restore Khosrau, but, able | that event. After a few years the Persian armies were prince as he was, missed the great opportunity of securing | seen as far west as Chalcedon over against Constantinople. an adequate equivalent for the service. Himself a man | Yet the real weakness of the Sdésd4nian realm was strikingly of obscure descent, he seems to have been flattered by the | exposed in these very years (604-610) in the battle of idea of posing as “father” of a legitimate king of ancient | Dhi Kar, a small affair in itself, but very significant. stock. The enterprise was not very difficult, for though | Khosrau had abolished the kingdom of Hira and put King Bahram had seized the crown and begun to coin in his | No‘man to death, thus ridding himself of a troublesome own name the nobles would not submit to one of their | vassal, but at the same time losing a very useful own peers, and the people were still stricter legitimists | means of influencing and checking the desert tribes. than they had been under the Arsacids. In their view the | And soon after No‘man’s fall the tribe of Bakr ibn Wail royal majesty (farrahi kaydnik) was innate in the house actually defeated a regular army at Dhu Kar near the of Ardashtr, and none outside of it could be king. Bahram | Euphrates, but a few days’ journey from Ctesiphon, and had to put down an insurrection in Ctesiphon itself, and | maintained themselves on the soil in spite of the Persians. Bindée escaped and took up his nephew’s cause. In the | Arabic vanity greatly exaggerated

this success, and the beginning of 591 a Roman host drew near, and Khosrau | result was a notable increase of self-confidence on the part caused the gates of Martyropolis! and Dara to be opened | of the Arabs, by which the Moslems ultimately benefited to them. He was now joined by the Persian army of | when they came to attack Persia. Nisibis, and Persian and some Armenian grandees came in The Romans still had the worst of the war when in to him day by day. The other armies took the same side. | October 610 Phocas gave place to the valiant Heraclius. In Atropatene Bist&ém, Bindéde's brother, gathered a host | The new emperor, hard pressed on all sides, vainly asked against Bahrdm, while the united Persian and Roman | for peace. In 613 Damascus was taken, and the country forces advanced along the left bank of the Tigris and | round it, on which the Persians had never before set foot, smote him in a decisive battle near the Z4b (summer 591). | was ravaged in a way of which countless ruins bear wit- Seleucia, Ctesiphon, and New Antioch had already been | ness to this day. In June 614 Jerusalem fell, and, to the taken by troops sent through the Mesopotamian desert. | horror of all Christendom, the "precious and life-giving

oe Thus Khosrau was restored, and peace with Rome followed | cross" went into captivity. Next Egypt was conquered,

of course. The Romans ceased to pay tribute, but only recovered their old frontier, Nisibis still remaining Per- sian, Bahrdm fled to the Turks and was honourably re-

and Asia Minor swept as far as Chalcedon. Heraclius was Cam- — not able to strike a counter blow till 622, when an ex- er pedition towards Armenia and the Pontine territories from {2 |

clius, Khosrau

ceived, but was murdered not long afterwards. was still so insecure that he asked a bodyguard of 1000 Romans, and now he set himself to remove all dangerous persons, especially Bindée and the other conspirators who had overthrown his father and set himself on the throne, Bistém was not so easily reached. When he saw himself condemned he made himself king in Media, and held out for almost six years with the help of the remnants of

Bahram’s forces and in alliance with Turks and Délamites. He fell by treachery probably in 595 or 596.

To a land already weakened by long wars all these

u This towu had been betrayed to the Persians, and the Romans had lain before it for some time,

the Gulf of Issus restored respect for the Roman arms. His great campaigns began in the following year and carried him deep into the Persian country, often quite cut off from his base, in a way that could not have succeeded with any leader who was not a great politician as well as a great general. In the first year of these campaigns he destroyed one of the holiest of Persian shrines, the fire-temple of Ganjak, near Lake Urmiyah, and so

- Shirin and the king even took part in the quarrels of Nestorians and Monophysites, and foolishly took the side of the latter, who were the minority and less Persian in sympathy. ‘There are good contem- porary Syriac records of all this which in part are still unused.

3 Land, Anecd. Syr., i. 15.

Anarchy.

EMPIRE. |

avenged Jerusalem. Now we find him near the Caucasus, now in eastern Asia Minor, now again in Mesopotamia, never beaten, often victorious, but oftener perhaps out- witting superior forces by adroit movements. In 626 Khosrau attempted a diversion by sending his best gene- ral, Shahrbaraz, with a great force directly against Chal- eedon. It was an anxious summer in Constantinople, with the Avars behind and the Persians in front, and the emperor almost lost in the depths of Asia. But in the beginning of August the Avars drew off, the Persians, who had no ships, having failed to cross the Bosphorus and effect a junction with them. Heraclius replied by drawing the Kwazars (¢.v.) down into Persian territory, and in 627 he ventured to strike a blow at the heart of the monarchy. The feast of 6th January 628 he cele- brated in Dastagerd, which was but some three days’

march from Ctesiphon, and had been Khosrau's usual residence for twenty-four years. Jhosrau had fled in terror, and did not deem himself safe till he and his harem were over the bridge of Ctesiphon. The capital was, of course, too strong to be carried by the small forces that the Roman had been able to lead by a rapid march from the Caucasus, and Heraclius turned swiftly before any great army could be gathered against him, and cut his way through the enemy's country back to Ganjak over the Kurdish Alps amid the snows of February and March,—an exploit almost unparalleled in the history of war.

Meantime there was revolution in Ctesiphon. Khosrau's tyranny and greed had offended high and low; his panic flight had made him contemptible ; and, to crown all, his legitimate heir Kavadh and most of his brothers were pining in prison to leave the heirship open to Mardanshah, son of Shirin, who, even in advanced years, had retained absolute command of her husband, in spite of his thousands of other wives. Certain nobles liberated Kavadh and pro- claimed him king (25th February 628), and Khosrau, deserted by all, was dragged from his hiding-place and executed (29th February). Thus miserably perished a prince whose armies had covered almost the whole breadth of the Achemenian empire. No hand was raised to help

him, and the Christians, who had never forgiven the insult

to the true cross, were the first to welcome the elevation of the parricide Kavddh, in which, indeed, one of their own number, Shamta, son of the farmer-general Yazdin, had a leading part.

The first act of Kavadh II. Shéréde was to murder some eighteen brothers, his second to ask peace from the Romans. A truce was conceded, but Heraclius was too much master of the situation to agree to a final peace at once. Persian troops were recalled from Roman soil, but, when Heraclius, after a hasty reorganization of Mesopotamia, had gone on to Syria, he learned that the Persian king was already dead after a reign of but six months, in which the chief occurrence was a terrible pestilence.

Ardashir ITL., son of Kavddh, was now crowned at the age of seven. An era of distress and trouble followed, in which children or women sat on the

throne, and the nobles disputed with one another for the reality of power. The holy cross was sent back from Ctesiphon through the primate of the Nestorians; and the feast of the Elevation of the Cross still commemorates the joyful day (14th September 629) when Heraclius solemnly re-erected it in Jerusalem. The Government at Ctesiphon was powerless ; the Khazars harried the empire ; and it was perhaps at this time that Khosrau, son of Kavadh, and grandson of Hormizd IV., who had been brought up among the Turks, sought to make himself king in Khordsdn, but was slain after a few months. A more dangerous pretendant was the victorious general Shahrbar4z, who met with Hera- clius in June 629 at Arabissus in Cappadocia, and prob-

Pine 1 «&

615

ably there obtained an approval of his enterprise from the 623-634.

emperor, who naturally favoured the cause of disorder in Persia. Shahrbaraz took Ctesiphon with a small force aided by treason within ; Ardashir was put to death (27th April 630); and robbery, murder, and every terror raged in the royal city. But Shahrbaraz, too, fell on the 9th of June a victim to the envy of his peers and the spirit of legitimism. His body was dragged through the streets, and tradition speaks with grotesque irony of the man who sought to be king but could not, because he was not of the lawful house.

Boran, daughter of Khosrau IL., now sat for a time on the throne (till about autumn 631), and appears to have closed the treaty of peace with Heraclius. The conditions are not recorded, but were probably the same as in the peace with Maurice; at all events the Persians kept Nisibis. Bérdn was followed in Ctesiphon by her sister

Azarmidokht, probably after a short interval in which a

certain Péréz reigned. But in Nisibis the soldiery of theslain Shahrbaraz put forward Hormizd V., a grandson of Khosrau II., and he maintained himself in that quarter for a time (631-32). Azarmidokht was dethroned by Rustam,

the powerful hereditary marshal of Khords4n, whose father’s death she had procured. Our confused records of this age of disorder do not permit us to give a clear chrono- logical or geographical view of all pretenders who arose in the capital and provinces; but in Ctesiphon, we know, * there reigned for a time a certain Ferrukhzadh (or Khor- rezidh) Khosrau, apparently a child! But another child,

Yazdegerd III., son of Shahriydr, and so a grandson of Yazde- Khosrau II., was put forward by certain nobles in Persis, gerd HI.

and crowned in the fire-temple of Ardashir (second half of 632 or first half of 633). Soon Khosrau was slain and Yazdegerd acknowledged in the capital, and without much resistance in the provinces also.

Fond hopes could now be entertained that the wounds of the monarchy might be healed under a legitimate prince unstained by descent from the parricide Shérde, conse- crated in the cradle of the monarchy, and upheld by the strong hand of Rustam. Some temporary recovery seems actually to have taken place ; but a new foe more danger- ous than Julian or Heraclius was already knocking at the gates of the monarchy. That Yemen and some tracts in north Arabia had already been lost by Persia to the Moslems had scarcely been observed at Ctesiphon amidst so many greater disasters. But now the Moslems already hovered on the frontier. Mothanna, one of the boldest leaders of those Bedouins who since Dhu Kar had made frequent forays on Persian soil, accepted Islam, and had its strength at his back. These attacks became bolder and bolder.

562), appeared with a small force on the lower Euphrates to take the lead of these Bedouins. Persian troops and their Arab allies were repeatedly beaten in small engage- ments, and soon a number of frontier-posts were in the hands of the Moslems.2. The inhabitants of the western bank of the lower Euphrates, who were all Christians and had little attachment to Persia, submitted themselves and promised to supply the victors with intelligence. Soon the Arabs ventured to cross the river and plunder the villages west of the Tigris.? In the early summer of 634, however, Khalid was called away to Syria; his successor, Abt ‘Obaid of Taif, though strengthened by reinforce-

1 He appears beardless on his only known coin. By some accounts he was the only son of Khosrau IJ. who had escaped massacre.

2 The history of the conquest is here given mainly after Beladhori, whose short notices stand examination much better than Tabari and the historians who follow him. The chronology is in many points

uncertain. 3 Baghdad, then such a village, was plundered on a fair tide.

Presently Khalid, in all the prestige of his victory Moslem over the revolt of the Arabs against Islam (see vol. xvi. p. invasion.

Plate VIII.

ments, was utterly defeated and slain on his first meeting with a regular Persian host in the hard-fought “ battle of the bridge” at the Euphrates, and Mothanndé had great difficulty in saving the remains of the army (26th Novem- ber 634). Not without hesitation the caliph ‘Omar resolved to send a greater force to ‘Irak, calling on his Arabs to win for themselves the treasures of the Khosraus and paradise ; and now for the first time a considerable Persian army was defeated at Bowaib (635 or 636), with the loss of its general, a prince of the house of Mihran. In Sa‘d ibn Abi Wakkas the Moslems had now an ener- getic and cautious leader, and the Persian court began to see its danger, especially when the news arrived of the battle of Yarmuk, by which Syria was lost to Heraclius. Rustam in person placed himself at the head of a great army, over which, in sign of the gravity of the enterprise, was borne the venerable sacred banner of the empire (dirafshi kéviydn). Sad fell back before the Persian advance and posted himself at Kadisfya on the edge of the desert south or south-west of Hira, where the armies lay facing each other for months. The Arab force must have been inferior in strength, for no great army could have long held such a barren post nourished only by forays and what the caliph could send from Medina, At length, towards the close of the year 636, or in 637, battle was jomed and raged for several days, Sa‘d giving orders to his men in spite of a sickness under which he laboured. The Persians were better armed, but the Arabs fought with desperate energy. The elephants, which formed part of

every regular Persian army, greatly terrified them at first, but ultimately these huge beasts, getting out of com- mand, only aided the discomfiture of the Persians. Of the mass of a Persian host no great bravery was to be expected ; yet it was only after a hard fight that the victory was de- cided, Rustam slain, and the sacred banner taken.

The battle of Kadisiya virtually decided the fate of the Tigris valley ; but there was still some fighting on the plains of Babylonia, at Birs (Borsippa), and Seleucia was not taken without a lengthy siege. Then the Arabs crossed the Tigris and fell on Ctesiphon, Yazdegerd fleeing before them to Holwdn on the Medo-Babylonian frontier. At Jaltilé on the road to Holwdn the Arabs gained a fresh victory over Rustam's brother, Khorrezddh, and Yazdegerd continued his flight. Meantime another body of Arabs had occupied Lower 'Irak and entered Susiana. A strong and wise leader might still perhaps have saved Iran proper, and "Omar, as energetic as cautious, was in fact slow to allow his armies to assail the highlands. It was not till some time between 640 and 642 that the

Prime tA

[SASANIAN EMPIRE,

"victory of victories," as the Arabs rightly call it, was gained at Nehdvend (a little south of the old high road from Babylon to Ecbatana), and the last great army of

the Persians was shattered by N: oman, who fell on the Over. Even now many indi- throw vidual provinces and cities did not yield without stubborn "™Pir

field, and the Meccan Hodhaifa.

resistance, and in many places rebellion after rebellion had to be crushed, especially in the region around Istakhr, the cradle and sacred hearth of the fallen monarchy, Everywhere the great local barons and even the lesser nobility dealt with the Arabs as independent chiefs, and in many cases came to peaceful terms with them.

Yazdegerd fled from one to another of his lieutenants without venturing himself to strike a blow for his crown and his life. He still retained the forms of sovereignty, and coins were still struck in his name; but one host after another dismissed him as a burdensome guest, and at length he was miserably murdered in the remote dis- trict of Merv, not, it would appear, without the conniv- ance of Mahée, governor of that province (651 or 652).

The great similarity in the ends of the Achemenian and Sdsdnian empires is no mere accident, but significant of the internal resem- blance between the two. Granicus which showed the reality of the danger, Issus which lost Darius his western provinces, Gaugamela which broke up the monarchy and yet did not at once give pos- session of the several lands of the realm, have their parallels a thousand years later at Bowaib, Kadisiya, and Nehdvend, The flight of Darius to the farthest north-east, and his death by the hand of traitors, not of the foe, are repeated in the fate of Yazde- gerd, who resembles Darius also in his lack of heroism. The nobles showed more loyalty and patriotism against the Arabs than against Alexander, and indeed religious antipathy and the bar- barism of the Arabs made it less easy in the later case for a Persian to accept the foreign yoke; yet even now there were too many traitors and deserters among the nobles high and low. Fully to subdue the Persian monarchy cost the Arabs a much longer time than it had cost the Macedonians; but the conquest went far deeper, —Hellenism never touched more than the surface of Persian life, but Iran was penetrated to the core by Arabic religion and Arabian ways. See MoHAMMEDANISM.

A fragment of the Sdsdnian empire lasted for a considerable time in the mountains of Tabaristan (Mazandaran), to which the here- ditary generals (Spdhpat, Ispehbedh) of Khorasan, of the house of Karen, withdrew, and wherc they reigned for over a hundred years, though sometimes paying tribute to the caliphs. They remained faithful to Zoroastrianism, and apparently viewed themselves as direct successors of Yazdegerd, since the cra employed on their coins seems to have his death as its epoch.

Literature.—G. Rawlinson, The Seventh Great Oriental Monarchy (London, 1876), is inadequate. Fuller but stil] inadequate use of Oriental sources is imade by Spiegel, Eranische Alterthtimer, vol. iii. (Leipsic, 1878). The docu- mentary evidence is mostly collected in Néldeke’s translation of

Tabari (Geschichte der Perser, &c., Leyden, 1879). For the relations of the Sasanians with Rome, Tillemont, Hist. des Emperewrs, and Clinton, Fasti Romani, must be used, and Saint – Martin's notes to Lebeau, Hist. du Bas-Empire (Paris, 1828-36), are still useful. A great deal of serviceable matter is to be found in Hoffmann's translation of excerpts from the Syriac Acts of Persian Martyrs (Syrische Akten Persischer Martyrer, Leipsic, 1880). (TH. N,)

PART IL—MODERN PERSIA.

SECTION I.—GEoGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

Lone prior to the Christian era the satrapies of Cyrus comprehended roughly an immense range of territory, from the Mediterranean to the Indus and from the Caucasian chain and Jaxartes to the Persian Gulf and Arabian Ocean. In the 17th and 18th centuries a.p. the conquests of "Abbas and Nadir kept up these boundaries

more or less on the east, but failed to secure them on the –

west, and were limited to the Caucasus and Oxus on the north. Persia of the present day is not only, in the matter of geographical definition, far from the vast empire of Sacred Writ and remote history, but it is not even the less extensive, though very expansive dominion of the Safawi kings and Nadir Shah. It may be said, however, to comprise now quite as much settled and consolidated territory as at any period of its political existence of which we can speak with the authority of intimate acquaintance.

If it has less extent of land than before its latest disastrous war with Russia, there is certainly within its recognized limits less rebellion and more allegiance. And, if the true interests of Persia, considered as a living power, were only understood by her kings and ministers, she might reason- ably seek to attain a state of security which would amply compensate for the loss of precarious and profitless ex- panse.

Boundaries.—The region of Ararat presents a good starting-point for the definition of a western and northern boundary to the kingdom of

NAsruw’d-Din Sh4h. East of the Greater Ararat a short oblique line from the Arras to the south-west divides it from Russia. Below this

more than twenty-five years, has been rather a careful delineation of the disputed tract than the delimitation of

an exact boundary, while the cession of Kotur to Persia, though part of the general question, must, if carried out at all, be looked upon as a separate result, due only to later diplomacy. The territorial claims of Turkey and Persia bear chiefly upon Kurdistan and the respective tribes which inhabit the plains and valleys of that exten- sive mountain region. They are founded upon the treaty of Sultan Murad IV. with Sh4h Sufi in 1639, a later one of Nadir Shah with Sultan Mahmud LI. in 1736, and one more recent still between Fath ‘Ali Shah and Mahmud II. in 1823,—the last two maintaining the status quo established by the first. But, when the Anglo-Russian commission first met, the boundary of possession fell far short of Turkish pretensions. These would have extended the pashalik of Baiyazid (Bayazid) in the province of Arzrum (Erzeroum) to a line including Maku, chief place in the district, and situated on the bank of the river of that name.! Farther south, again, the sultan insisted on increasing the area of the province of Van by the forcible annexation of Kotur. Such an act, after the assembly of a commission for the demarcation of the disputed frontier, was neither justified by precedent nor could it enhance the merits of the Turkish claim, and the reason alleged, that Kotur was essential to the Ottoman Government for stra- tegical reasons—in other words, that it gave the Turk free access into his neighbour’s territory—could scarcely be taken to account in the estimation of their opponents. The question was submitted on behalf of Persia to ~~the Berlin Conference in 1878, and a special Anglo~~ Russian commission appointed to consider it in July 1880. The proposed cession, if accepted, would substitute for the present curve eastwards a line more direct but with a westerly inclination, whereby the fort and _ station of

within the Ottoman territory the border-fort of Sardasht, on the left bank of the Aksu.

Continuing the line of disputed frontier to the southward, the same difficult country still presents itself to perplex the decisions of commissioners or arbitrators, but from the warmly-contested district of Zohab in the province of Karmanshah up to Dizful on the Diz river the mountains may be said generally to indicate Persian and the plains Turkish territory. Luristan and Khizistan (with Arabistan) are the frontier provinces of the shah, and the Hamrin Hills, with Hawizah, Muhamrah, and the east bank of the Shattu ’l-‘Arab, show the Persian possessions to the head of the gulf.

The want of a determined line of demarcation between the two countries for the 700 miles from Ararat to the Shatt, or outlet into.the sea of the waters of the Tigris and Euphrates, may have political advantages, but is inconvenient to the geographer and most unfavourable to the cause of order and good government. Even without the evidence of open conflict, it may be assumed that there are few inhabited sections of the strip of disputed frontier (from 20 to 40 miles in breadth) where mutual ill feeling is not the rule, and where the Turkish Sunni does not abstain from friendly association with the Persian Shi‘ah. More recently attempts have been made, and apparently with success, to reconcile differences by British and Russian mediation, and a renewal of the days need not be antici- pated when telegraph-posts were torn up or destroyed, lands laid waste, and villages plundered, owing to the prevalence of the old spirit of hostility.

From the already-adverted-to point on the Arras east of Russo- the Greater Ararat the river itself supplies a northern Persian boundary to Persia up to the fortress of ‘Abbasabad, where “tier

Kotur become embodied in Persian territory. This section of frantier is overlooked on the north by the

mountains Bebi Kourgui, Guerdi Beranan, and Khidhr line.

Baba, passes through Tépé Avristan on the west to the Turkish road to Kotur, follows this road to the west for half a mile, and then turns due south between Mount Kevlik and the river Shiva Resh to the sources of the latter,

whence it zigzags to the eastward to re- join the general boundary-line overlooked by the Kara Hisar, Mir ‘Omar, Guéré-Sourava, and Guéré-Berian Mountains. Sir Henry Rawlinson saw difficulty in de- fining a line of frontier from Ararat to Kotur; for the country was not only intersected by ranges running in every possible direction, but it wanted a fixed population, and was, moreover, liable to the incursions of wild Kurdish tribes, who would have no respect for boundary-marks. Below Kotur, and south-west of the important Persian town of Khof, the old line of possession inclined consider- ably’to the westward, but Turkey claimed a more advan- tageous line running nearly north and south to the passes between Sik Bulak and Rowandiz, one of which was crossed in 1875 by Thielmann, who gives an interesting account of the surrounding country. The plain of Lahijan on the Persian side—-some 20 miles long and 20 niiles broad—he describes to be at an elevation of 5650 feet, “watered by the two sources of the Little Zab, which, several miles after their junction, traverses the mountain range through a deep rent… and then flows towards the Tigris.” On the west of this district is the “ gigantic wall of the Zagros Mountains, the frontier-line between Turkey and Persia.” Hence, to the latitude of Sulimaniya, or for more than 100 miles, the Turks claimed farther than the ancient limits assigned to them, and sought to include

1 Under the treaty of San Stefano (8d March 1878) the old Perso- Turkish became the Perso-Russian frontier as far south as to include the post-road below Baiyazid ; but the territory so taken from the Turks was restored under the later treaty of Berlin.

a cession of strategical works to Russia is noted by a loop on the southern bank. Thence the line is generally matked by the bed of the Arras for a distance of about 180 miles, descending as low as 38° 50’ N. lat., and rising again to 39° 30’ north-east of the steppe of Moghan. An oblique line running south-east to the Bulgaru, Chai makes that stream the southern boundary for 13 miles to the conflu- ence of the Adina Baz4r and Sairkamish, the former of which then limits the Persian territory on the east. From the source of the Adina Bazar the crest of the mountains towering over the more distant Russian ports on the western shores of the Caspian, and separating the Talish from the Arsha, marks the division of the two territories up to the river of Astara, the port of which name completes the

demarcation on the sea-coast. Thus far the result of the treaty of Turkmanchai, dated 10 [22] February 1828, which involved Persia in a serious loss. To the southward all is Persian, and the two large maritime provinces of Gilan and Mazandaran, both laved by the waters of the Caspian, represent the northernmost parts of the shah's dominions be- tween the 49th and 54th meridians of E. long. In the south- eastern corner of the Caspian the island of Ashurada in the Bay of Astrabad was appropriated by Russia in 1842 as a convenient post for overawing the Turkmans (Turkomans).

Eastward of the Caspian, from the Hasan Kuli Gulf, North- the line of Persian territory cannot be indicated with east

absolute certainty, because the Russian maps do no correspond with those prepared by the war department in England; and if need hardly be added that the former give to Russia far more land than do the others. Accord- ing to Colonel Stewart, an officer for some time resident in the vicinity of the Atak, or skirt of the mountains fronting the Black Sand Desert, the line follows the Atrak (Atrek) from its mouth to Shatt, where it leaves the river XVIUL — 78

t frontier-

and passes obliquely west of the Simbar to a point within 15 miles of Kizil Arvat,! and then turns towards the Tekke range to Darahgaz, which district it includes in an outer curve, passing on to the Tajand at Sarakhs. The Russian official map, however, brings the line south and east of the Simbar, and otherwise impoverishes Persia to the benefit of her powerful neighbour. But the first article of the Russo-Persian treaty signed in December 1881 at Tehran (Teheran) thus describes the situation :—

"From Chat (Shatt?) the frontier-line follows in a north-easterly direction the ridges of the Songou Dagh and Sagirim ranges, thence extending northward to the Chandir river, reaching its bed at Cha- kan Kala. From this point it runs in a northerly direction to the mountains dividing the Chandir and Simbar valleys, and extends along the ridge of these in an easterly

direction, descending into the bed of the Simbar at the spot where the Ak-Agayan stream falls into it. Hence, eastward, the bed of the Simbar marks the frontier as far as the ruins of Masjid Damanah, where a local road forms the boundary to the ridge of the Kopet Dagh, along which the frontier extends south-eastward, turning south among the mountain heights which divide the valley of the Simbar from the source of the Garmab. Taking a south-easterly course across the summit of the Misino and Chubest Mountains, it then strikes the road between Garmab and Ribat at a distance of less than a mile north of the latter, and, following a high ridge, procecds in a north-easterly direction to the boundaries of Giuk Kaital. Hence, after crossing the gorge of the river Firuzé, it turns south-east till it reaches the summits of the mountain range, bounding the valley on the south, through whieh the road from the Russian station of Askabad to Firuzé passes, and pursues its course along the crest of these moun- tains to the most easterly part of the range. The frontier-line now crosses over to the northernmost summit of the Aselm range, whence it seeks out the junction of the mountains called Ziri Kuh and Kizil Dagh, extending south-castward along the summits of the former until it issues into the valley of the Baba Durmaz stream. It then takes a northerly direction and reaehes the oasis at the road from Gawars to Lutfabad, leaving the fortress of Baba Durmaz to the east.”

The distance from Baba Durmaz to Sarakhs is about 185 miles, and the intervening boundary is that of the ataks of Darahgdz and Kelat, both of which districts belong to Persia. The word “atak,” signifying “skirt,” apples to the whole hill-country separating Persia from the Turkman desert, though these mountains and their passes and valleys are not all within the shah’s present dominion. That they present a formidable barrier and remarkable geographical features may be inferred from the ascertained height of the loftier peaks, which, though in- ferior to those situated some 50 miles to the south, can still boast a figure varying from 5000 to 10,000 feet. In the

p tx

querors to continue the unchecked exercise of their infamous profession in Khurdsan (Khorasan).

| GEOGRAPHY,

Special mention of Sarakhs, the extreme outpost of Sarakh

Persia in the north-east, appears to be appropriate, both on account of its geographical position and of its political importance. This place, situated on the plain of the same name," was fifty years ago a mere outpost of Maz- duran, the frontier hill-station on the shortest of three roads (and somewhat more than midway) between Mashhad the capital of Khurdsan and Sarakhs. It was visited in 1860 by M. de Blocqueville, who found there a recently- con- structed Persian fort, with strong walls and protected by a ditch. Some of the towers contained as many as ten guns. He says nothing of the ruins of the old town on the east of the Tajand, though he forded the river; but Burnes, who in 1833 put up in a ruined tomb amid the Turk- man tents or "khargahs" in that particular locality, had been equally silent regarding it. The last-named traveller speaks of the shrine of a Muhammadan saint, of a small weak fort, and of a few mud-houses only, and states that, at the third mile after leaving his encampment to enter

- Persia, he crossed the Tajand,—not supposing it, however,

to be the Herat river. Sir Charles Macgregor was at New Sarakhs in 1879. He describes the fort as immense,—an irregular polygon, with eleven bastions, and citadel attached. It had a garrison of some 700 infantry, with a few horse- men, and eleven guns of more or less use. From its walls he reviewed the surrounding country. On the north stretched one vast plain almost unbroken by tree, bush, mound, or undulations, for the bed of the Tajand winding round to the north-west was too low to be visible. On the north-east lay the road to Merv stretched out beyond the dark tamarisk foliage of the river. To the east all was clear; south-east were undulating rounded ridges extending towards the Murghab; south was Mazduran ; and north of west was a confused mass of rugged hills in the direction of Kelat- i-Nddiri. Lastly, we have the testi- mony of Lessar, the Russian engineer, who, visiting the place in 1882, found it extensively fortified and occupied by a battalion of Persian infantry ; the armament of the fortification, however, consisted only of six old guns, which were never discharged, while the artillerymen were igno- rant of their duties, and neither drilled nor exercised. Water was supplied from wells inside the walls and by canal from the Tajand.®

Hazar Masjid range is one of 10,500. Adopting Rawlin- son's divisions and distances, the whole Atak, or " Daéman-i- Kuh," as the Persians call it, is divided into three districts:

To define the eastern boundary of Persia, the lower Easter course of the Hari Rud, under its name of Tajand, may be boun

ary.

the Akhal Atak, extending for 160 miles, from Kizil Arvat to Darahgaz, the last Tarkman camp (obah) in which is at Gawars; the Darahgdz Atak, 70 miles, to Abiverd; and the Kelat Atak, 60 miles, to Mehna. Thence to Sarakhs another 70 miles may be reckoned, to accomplish which the traveller leaves the mountains on his right and the wonderful natural fortress of Kelat-i-Nadiri in his rear, to strike the Tajand at the crossing point between Merv and Mashhad (Meshed).

The subjection by Russia of the Turkman tribes and the planting of her standard in the hill-country on the western side of the Atak have immensely strengthened her power in the region east of the Caspian. These new Cos- sacks of the Black Sand Desert will be a great acquisition to her force, though their antecedents denote propensities rather aggressive than protective. In one respect the Persians should be gainers by the encroachment. It is hardly probable that under the new arrangements in the Atak the north-east frontier of Persia will be so frequently the scene of plunder and invasion as it has been of old, or that the marauders will be allowed by the Russian con- SS eee

1 5 . ie ; Probably a plural or perversion of ribdt, a caravansara.

accepted generally up to Pul-i-Khattn, whence to Tuman Agha the line is continued by the river in its own name. From this point it runs*due south across the mountain range overtopped by the conical peak of the Sang-i-Dukhtar, and through the edge of the Salt Desert, leaving Kuhsan and Zangi Suwar, villages near the Hari Rud, and the more important Ghurian in Afghan territory.4 Again crossing the ranges which intersect the desert from the north-east, the line, inclining somewhat to the west of south, is continued to Chah Sagak (the "'dog's well"), an elevated spot on the old

caravan route between India and Persia, as far as which the Afghans have the right of pasturage. To the westward is the Persian province of Kaiyan. The surrounding country bears the significant name of Dasht-i-Na-Umaid, or “ Waste of Hopelessness.” For 8 miles south-east, 8 miles due east, and 24 miles south, in all about 40 miles, the line is carried to the

? West of the Tajand, ealled by Dr Wolff the ‘‘ Dariya” (or sea) of Sarakhs,

3 Other modern travellers have written of Sarakhs, among them an intelligent Indian, Daud Khan, but they give no information additional to that of the authorities quoted.

4 When Mr Forster was at Khaf in 1783, Timur Shah, the ruler in Afghanistan, had his boundary between that place and Turshiz.

Siy4h Kuh, or “Black Hill,” on the border of the district of Nehbandan. Here begins the line of frontier determined by the Sistan arbitration of 1872. The British commis- sioner (Sir F. Goldsmid) decided that an oblique line drawn from the Siy4h Kuh to the southern limit of the reedy marsh called “ Naiz4r,”.and prolonged to the main outlet of the Helmand, would fairly separate and dis- tinguish the possessions of the two states respectively in the north of Sistan. On the east the bed of the Helmand itself would be the boundary up to Kuhak, where was the large “band” or dam which diverted the waters of the river into the more fertile lands to the west. From Kuhak a line south-west to the Kuh Malik Siy&h completed the delimitation by leaving the two banks of the Helmand in the hands of the Afghans, and placing a large tract of partly desert and partly inundated country between the litigants. Subsequent surveys by Sir Charles Macgregor have thrown new light upon the large and little-populated tract to the far south of Sistan, and are suggestive of an Aighan-Baluch as well as of a Perso-Afghan frontier.

In whatever light it be regarded, the line of Persian frontier from the Kuh Malik Siydh to the sea rather con- cerns Baluchistan than Afghanistan ; but,

though roughly delineated by St John and Macgregor, it cannot be described with scientific accuracy until it reaches the district of Jalk,

or after a south-easterly passage of 170 miles through the

deserts of Pir Kaisar and the Mashkel or Mashkid,—names used as the more likely to identify the region traversed. From Jalk the Perso-Kelat boundary begins, as determined by Major-General Goldsmid, the British commissioner in 1871, and verified in the subsequent year by Captain (now Sir Oliver) St John, R.E. The state of Kelat (Khelat), it should be explained, is now that of western Baluchistan, the western half of that country having become annexed to Persia by a process of gradual encroachment. It was this action of Persia, and the disquiet and mischief which it occa- sioned in Makran and other parts of Baluch and Brahui territory, that brought about the British mediation.

From Jalk to the sea is about 150 miles as the crow flies. By the line laid down it is very much farther, as the nature of the country and of the claims of the con- tending parties did not admit of other than a tortuous course. The small district of Kuhak, lying south-east of Jalk, should, in a geographical sense, have been included among the lands on the Persian side, but the evidence of right and possession was insufficient to warrant its separa- tion from Kelat, and, whatever may have been its subse-

quent fate, it was not made over to the shah's governors

by the original decision, which was expressed in the following terms :— :

"The territory of Kelat is bounded to the west by the large Persian district of Dizak, composed of many dehs or minor districts, those on the fronticr being Jalk and Kalagin. Below these two last- named is Kuhak, including Kunarbasta and Isfandar. This small district belongs to the Naushirwanis, and, as its chief pays no tribute, cannot be included among the conquests of Persia. It therefore remains as a tract of country within the Kelat frontier. Adjoining Kuhak to the east is the district of Panjgur, with Parum and other dependencies, which are in the possession of Kelat ; while on the Persian side Bampusht is the frontier possession. Below Panjgur the frontier possessions of Kelat to the sea are Bulaida, including Zamran and other

dependencies, Mand, and Dasht. Within the Persian line of frontier are the villages or tracts belonging to Sarbaz and Bahu Dastiari. The boundary of Dasht is marked by a line drawn through the Drabol hill, situated betwcen the rivers Bahu and Dasht, to the sea, in the bay of Gwatar.”

The boundaries of the frontier districts or village-lands named are well known, and may be distinguished by mlountains, hills, hillocks, rivers, streams, or cultivation. In some places desert tracts occur which can offer no in- ducement for encroachment on either side, but through which a line may at any time be declared, if necessary, both by geographical computation and the erection of pillars.

i Eek lt

619

The frontiers of Persia on the west, north, and east have Southern now been described. The southern, or more strictly the coast- south-western merging into the southern boundary, is the !™*

coast-line of the Persian Gulf and Arabian Ocean. This extends from the Khor Abdullah west to the port of Gwatar east, and may be held to be comprised between the meridians 49° and 61° 30’ E. long. It will be observed that the Caspian Sea boundary, on the immediate north of Persia, is only two-fifths of this extent. On the Persian shores of the gulf are the ports of Bushahr (Bushire), Lingah, and Bandar-‘Abbds, with the islands of Karag, Shaikh Sh‘ab, Hindarabi, Kais, Kishm, Hangim, Hormuz (Ormus), and Larak, of which the last four are habitually held in lease by the im4m of Maskat (Muscat). On the Perso-Baluch coast are the telegraph stations of Jask and the quasi-ports of Charbar (or Chahbar) and Gwatar. In some parts of the generally dry and barren coast are ranges of rugged mountains, sometimes rising to a very considerable height.

Physical Geography.—Major (now Sir Oliver) St John, R.E., is perhaps the latest recognized authority on the physical characteristics of the large extent of country comprised within the boundaries just described. He has himself surveyed or travelled over no insignificant portion, and has carefully studied the labours of his colleagues and predecessors in a similar field. In

the following adapta- tion of that officer's account of its orography and hydro- graphy attention has been given to the results of independ- ent observation, as well as to those theories put forward by other travellers which seem to merit acceptance.

Persia—that is, modern Persia—occupies the western and larger half of the great Iranian plateau which, rising to a height of from 4000 to 8000 feet between the valleys of the Indus and Tigris, covers in round numbers more than a million square miles. Taking the Kuren Dagh and Kopet Dagh to form the northern scarp of this plateau east of the Caspian, we find a prolongation of it in the highlands north of the political frontier on the Arras, and even in the Caucasus itself. In St John's own words :—" The Caucasian provinces of Russia are but an excrescence of the great elevated mass to the south-east ; differing from it only in characteristics produced by the more bounteous rainfall which has scooped out the valleys to a greater depth." On the north-west Persia is united by the high- lands of Armenia to the mountains of Asia Minor ; on the north-east the Paropanisus and Hindu Kush connect it with the Himalayas of ancient India. The lines of boundary on the western and eastern faces are to be traced amid high ranges of mountains broken here and there by deserts and valleys. These ranges lie for the most part north- west and south-east, as do those in the interior, with a marked exception between Tehran (Teheran) and Bujnurd, and in the more recently acquired territory of Baluchistan, where they lie rather north-east and south-west, or, in the latter case, sometimes east and west. The real lowlands are the tracts near the sea-coast belonging to the forest- clad provinces of the Caspian in the north and the shores of the Persian Gulf below Basrah and elsewhere.

With regard to the elevation of the Persian mountains, Moun- the Russian Caspian survey gives to the highest, Damavand, tains.

18,600 feet, and to Mount Savalan in Adarbaijan (Azer- bijan) 14,000. St John estimates the Kuh Hazar and summits of the Jamal Bariz in the province of Karman (Kirman) at a greater figure than the last, but he believes the chain of the Kuh Din4r—snow-clad mountains in Fars, visible from the sea at a distance of 130 miles, and over ranges known to be 10,000 feet high—to present the highest continuous range in Persia. To the Kuru

range, between Ispahan and Kashan, he gives an elevation of above 11,000 feet, and notes the absence of prominent spurs in all ranges

620

except the Alburz (Jilburz), and to a lesser extent in the |

Khurasan hills.

iP HR a

[GEOGRAPHY,

The three rivers belonging essentially to Persia, in reference to the Caspian watershed, are the Kizil Uzain or

Plains. The Khuzistan delta is cited as the only plain of extent | Safid Rud on the south-west and the Atrak and Gurgan and importance at sea-level. In the north-west, that part | at the south-eastern corner of that inland sea. The first of the Moghan steppe which belongs to Persia and the | is stated by St John to drain about 25,000 square miles delta of the Safid Rud are large and fertile tracts. St | of country east and south of the Urmiya basin. According John writes :— to Colonel Stewart, the Atrak has its source in the Hazar

“Inland the long and narrow plains between the ridges rise gradu- | Masjid range of mountains, a distance, probably, of 250 ally from 1000 feet to eight times that height in the valleys between | miles as the crow flies, from the river mouth. The Gurgan a Saami aoe o os ee ee ee rises to the west of it and passes to the sea south of the

: ains ? ; : ; ave aid esac polis Me.about 6000 feet ; that of Karman somewhat | Atrak. Observing that the Tajand, taking a sweep round higher. The valleys of Adarbaijan present alluvial slopes furrowed | Sarakhs, forms a swamp in the Atak about the 58th by torrents, and the only extensive tableland in Persia, that of | meridian, the same authority explains that as far south Sultaniah, ag 30° N. lake ite Bees ae Wier aad Chee Ae Te an ee a “the eastern slopes of the ranges which shut off the valley of ; : en Fe vee the Helmand from the deserts of eastern Persia drain directly replaced by

gravelly deserts, which culminate in wastes of shifting | towards the Sistin Lake. South of that parallel the surplus water sand. The valley between Abadah and Yazd, a prolongation of the flows by several channels in a south-easterly direction, or away from Zaindamnd valley) con tause) thestinat of tiese sen aes le the lake. About latitude 29°, the water-parting of the Baluchistan ee GB Asphalt scl agus wae Que sieeelly mountain-system, running east and west, changes the direction of ee cultivated. tracts. The original city of these streams, and collects them into a single channel, which, under ee ee of Tehran, is said to have been abandoned on the name of the Mashkid river, bursts through the northern scarp : ‘ : : of the Baluch hills into the Kharan desert. Here it takes a north-

River Estimating the extent of Persia proper at 610,000 square | westerly course, thus revérsing the original direction of its waters,

drainage. miles, St John thus distributes the drainage :—(1) into the | which are lost in the desert not far from their most northern sources. Arabian Sea and Persian Cult, 190;000; (2) imo gine, Caspian and Aral Seas, 100,000 ; (3) into the Sistan Lake, | °° fen ee i : a — hi h 7 1 be File pct –

y ‘2 ; southern o e€ Tce depressions which, unite y flood-waters,

40,000 ; (4) into the large lake of Urmfya or Orumtyah, form the HA4miun or Sistan Lake.”

20,000 ; (5) interior drainage, 320,000. No. (1) comprises The great central area of Persia, included in the water-

the south-west provinces and the whole of the coast-region | sheds he has described, “forms a figure nearly triangular,

up to the small port of Gwatar in Baluchistan ; (2) relates | with a base running south-west about 1000 miles long,

to the tracts south, south-west, and south-east of the Cas- | and nearly equal sides north and east of 700 miles.”

pian ; (3) is the tract adjudicated to Persia, including the St John observes that the streams draining southern Streaw

Haémun and part of the Helmand basin ; (4) is a compara- | and western Persia into the sea diminish regularly in im- of Wes

tively small area on the western frontier containing the | portance from north-west to south-east. He notes the an

basin of Lake Urmiya, shut off from the rest of the inland | Diydlah and Karkhah flowing into the Tigris from the ,

draining of Persia; (5) takes in Ispahan, Karman, and | mountains of Kurdistan ; the Diz and Karin, which unite

the province of Khurdsan, with the Dasht-i-Kavir, or | below Shustar (Shuster), and reach the Shattu ’l‘Arab at

“Great Salt Desert.” He points out that the area draining | Muhamrah; and the Jardhi and Tab, which with the

into the ocean consists of a long strip nearly parallel to | Karin form “the delta of Persian Arabistan, the most

the Tigris and sea-coast without a single protrusion in- | extensive and fertile plain in Persia.” After these he lays

land, but is uncertain whether an outlet exists from the | stress upon the fact that not a single stream unfordable at

Bampur plain in Persian Baluchistan to the sea. A later | all seasons bars the passage of the traveller along the coast

traveller, Floyer, mentions the names of two rivers de- | till he reaches the Indus. Those rising amid the high

bouching on the coast, namely the Sadaich and Gabrig, | mountains north of Bushahr and Bandar-‘Abbas are, with

which might represent such outlets, but their courses have | the exception of the Mira, which debouches at 60 miles

not been traced with sufficient completeness to supply a | below Bushahr, nameless in the most trustworthy maps ;

solution to the problem. If the native evidence taken by | and in Persian Baluchistan we have the Jagin, Gabrig,

Major Goldsmid at Fanoch in 1866 can be relied on, the | Sadaich, Rabij, Kair, and Kaju.

river entering the pass of that name from the highlands of The Kartin merits especial notice as a navigable river

Bampur, after undergoing two or three changes of nomen- | for small steamers up to within a mile or two of Shustar,

clature, passes out into the ocean as the Kalig. though not favourable to the establishment of a regular on According to St John, a narrow strip of land, not more | service, owing to the existence of rapids at Ahwaz. By

than 30 to 50 miles wide, along the southern coast of the Caspian, drains into that sea, On the west it suddenly widens out to a depth of 250 miles, meeting the watershed of the Tigris on the one side and that of the Euphrates and Lake Van on the other, and embracing between the two the basin of Lake Urmiya, which forms with the basin of Lake Van what may be termed the supplementary plateau of Armenia, differing only from the Persian and Helmand basins in its superior altitude and smaller area. On the east the watershed of the Caspian gradually in- creases in breadth, the foot of the scarp extending con- siderably to the north of the south-east angle of that sea, three degrees east of which it turns to the south-east, parallel to the axis of the Kuren and Kopet ranges, which, as before stated, are a prolongation of the Caucasus. A little short of Herat the Caspian water-parting turns east- ward, separating the valleys of the Hari Rud and Hartt rivers. West of Herat the desert plateau of Khaf divides the Caspian from the Helmand basin.

land there are perhaps somewhat more than 100 miles from Muhamrah to Shustar; and Colonel Champain, an excellent authority, states that from Shustar to Ispahan the distance is as nearly as possible the same as from Shiraz to Ispahan, the high road for ordinary travellers passing to and fro between Tehran and the sea-coast. Little need be said on the streams having no outlet to the sea, the water of which is utilized by cultivators both before they reach the alluvial plain between the ranges and afterwards in irrigating the banks. Referring to these St John notes the constant affluents which prevent the rapid exhaustion of water, and the salt swamps or lakes formed by the rivers at points far removed from their source. Six of these inland streams he mentions by name, viz., the Aji Chai and Jaghatu, flowing into the salt-lake of Urmtya ; the Hamadan Rud or Kara St and the Shurdb, flowing eastwards to the Salt Desert ; the Zainda Rud, a river of Ispahan, lost in an unexplored swamp; and the Kur or Bandamir, which forms the salt-lake of Niris. He sees

Rainfall and winds.

Kavirs,

GEOLOGY. |

cause for believing the lakes of Shiraz and Kazrun to be fed mainly by springs. ;

St John writes further :—

“Tt will be readily believed that the rainfall on the Oceanic and Caspian watersheds is far in excess of that on the interior. Whcrever the water-parting is formed, as it is in most parts, by a lofty moun- tain ridge, it intercepts the moisture-bearing clouds from the sea which are discharged from its outer slopes. The Alburz chain, which shuts off the plateau from the Caspian, may be taken as the typical instance of this. Its northern face is furrowed into deep valleys by the constant and heavy showers which have clothed them in forests of almost tropical luxuriance, while the southern generally presents a single abrupt scarp, rising above long gravel slopes, unchannelled by anything worthy the name of a river, and bare of any vegetation rising to the dignity ofa tree. At the most moderate estimate the

rainfall of Gilan and Mazandaran may be taken as five times that of the adjoining districts across the ridges to the south.

‘‘In other parts, however, we find the water-parting consider- ably below the level of the summits farther inland; and here the interior has a more plenteous rainfall than the coast. This is par- ticularly the case in south-eastern Persia, where the Khurasan, Sarhad, and Dizak hills, far exceeding in altitude the ranges to the south, attract to themselves the major portion of the scanty supply of moisture borne inland from the sea. Again the rainfall differs very much in different parts of the country, under apparently similar conditions as regards mountains and distance from the sea ; the east and south being far drier than the north and west, while the dampest parts of the Tigris valley have not half the rainfall of the southern and south-eastern shores of the Caspian.

“Two palpable causes unite to produce the prevailing winds throughout Persia and the Persian Gulf. These are, with an extraor- dinary uniformity, north-west or south-east. The first cause is the position of the Black Sea and Mediterranean on the north-west, and of the Arabian Sea on the south-east. The second is the bear- ing of the axes of the great mountain chains, which lie mainly in the same direction, and thus tend to guide the currents of air in a uniform course. The south-west, moreover, is not felt, cxcept as moderating the temperature of the Makran coast inside a line from Ras-al-Hadd, south of Maskat, to Karachi.

‘*The effect of the sun on the great Iranian plateau is to produce a heated stratum of air, which, when it rises, is succeeded by a current from the colder atmospheres above the seas to the south- east or north-west. Naturally the latter is the colder, and there- fore, as might be expected, north-west winds are most prevalent. But in southern Persia and the gulf it often occurs that the two currents meet, and that a north-westerly gale is raging at Bushahr while a south-easter is blowing at Bandar-Abbas. This latter wind is the rain-bearer throughout the greater part of Persia, the excep- tion being the north-west, where occasional rain-clouds from the Black Sea and the Caspian find their way across the Kurdish mountains or the Albtrz. It is true that it often rains even on the gulf during a north-

wester, but only when this has followed a succession of south-easterly gales, the moisture borne by which is returned from the opposite quarter.”

There are no sufficient statistics available accurately to estimate the rainfall in Persia, but St John, himself a resident of some years in the country, was of opinion that in no part of it excepting the watersheds of the Caspian and Persian Gulf (north of 28° lat.) and their immediate reverse slopes, with perhaps the Urmfya basin, is there an average of 10 inches, taking mountain and hill together. He believed that throughout the greater part of central and south-eastern Persia and Baluchistan the annual rain- fall could not be much more than five inches, and that, were it not for the snow stored on the lofty hills, nine- tenths of the country would be the arid desert which one- half was found to be when he wrote (1876). Cultivation is carried on mainly by artificial irrigation, the most approved arrangement being an underground tunnel called “kanat,” whereby wells are connected and supplies of water ensured. ;

One remarkable feature in the plains of Persia which naturally engaged St John’s attention was the salt-swamp called “kavir.” He applied the term to those bogs of slimy mud found in the lowest depressions of the alluvial soil, where the supply of water, though constant, was insufficient to form a lake. In winter they are covered with brine, and in summer with a thick crust of salt. The principal kavir is that in Khurdsan, and marked in the maps as the Great Salt Desert. St John describes

it as “the eastern part of what is probably the most extensive plain in Persia, that intercepted between the Alburz and its parallel ridges on the one hand and the heads of the ranges of the central plateau which run south- east on the other. Westward, it is divided into two valleys, originating, one in the Sultaniah plateau, and the other north of and near Hamadan. These are drained by rivers named respectively the Shurab and the Kara Su, which, with another considerable affluent from Turshiz, on the east, unite to form the great kavir.” He was unable to determine the altitude of this extensive

swamp further than that it might be below the level of the sea, but could not be much above it.

Other kavirs he finds in the Sarjan or Sayidd4bad plain west of Karman and in the neighbouring valley of Kutru. Among ordinary kavirs, which are “innumerable,” he con- siders the largest to be on the south of Khaf, and the best known that north of Kum.

It is clear, from the description given, that the range of these particular salt-swamps or kavirs is confined to the actual depres- sion which has been directly affected by the passage of water, and that the term is not intended to apply to the surrounding wastes. But it seems to have been otherwise understood by the generality of travellers, and the better-known writers on Persia have seldom made the actual distinction here implied. Malcolin in 1800 crossed a salt-desert” between Pul-i-Dallak and Hauz-i-Sultan, which, he says, was called Dariya-i-Kabir, or “the great sea.” Morier, nine years later, calls the place the “swamp of kaveer, ... part of the great desert which reaches unto Khurasan, the soil of which is composed of a mixture (at least equal) of salt and earth.” Colonel Johnson, passing over precisely the samc road in 1817, describes it as leading “over a saline plain, leaving here and there hollows of considerable magnitude, white with salt; ... eastward it stretches as far as the eye can see, and is said to reach to Mausila, distant 40 miles.” ‘The writer would probably have been surprised to learn that it extended for at least ten times the distance named. He does not, however, use the word “kavir,” which, while duly recorded as a Persian word in the dictionary, meaning salsuginous ground, is strangely like the Arabic adjective “kabir,” which Malcolm, as just mentioned, has coupled with “dariya” in his Sketehes of Persia. St John states that in the south the salt-swamps are called “kafeh.”’

The last writer asserts that but one European, Dr Biihsé, a Russian, had seen the true kavir, having crossed it in about 34° lat., when going from Damghan to Yazd. Sir Charles Macgregor must have been close upon this traveller’s track in 1875, for in the district of Biabanak (the “little desert”), which he visited, one of the eight villages, Jandak, is marked in St John’s map as an oasis just above the parallel mentioned. Biabanak is, according to Macgregor, situ- ated “south of the kaveer,” but it is joined to Semnan (on

the Tehran-Mashhad highway) by a “regular road” which “crosses a bit of kaveer of about 80 miles without water.”

The drier deserts of Karman and Bampur cannot be included in the category of swamps; and the term “ut,” made use of by the Russian geographer Khanikoff in reference to the former, whatever its original derivation, must simply be accepted as the common local expression, in eastern Persia and western Baluchistan, for a waste waterless tract.

Geology.—Mr W. T. Blanford has given us an interest- Geology.

ing sketch of the geology of Persia. He found that by far the greater number of those who had treated the same subject before him had restricted their inquiries to the north-western provinces, and that few had penetrated east of Damavand or south of Tehran. Mr Loftus had imparted a fair knowledge of western Persia, and Russian and German explorers had made students tolerably acquainted with Adarbaijan, Gilan, and Mazandaran. Khurdasan and eastern Persia generally were, however, in a geological sense unknown, and the south was almost equally a terra incognita, unless exception were made for certain stray observations on the shores of the Persian Gulf. The fol- lowing passages are extracted from his paper.

‘‘The most striking circumstance noticed during a journey in Persia is the great prevalence of formations, such as gravel, sand, and clay, of apparently recent origin ; the whole of the great plains, covering at least one-half the surface of the country, consist either

of a fine, pale-coloured alluvial loam, which covers the lowest portion of the surface, or of gravel, fine or coarse, which usually forms a long gentle slope from the surrounding hills to the alluvial flat, and fills up with long slopes the broad valleys opening into the larger plains. All these deposits are more conspicuous than they are in most countries in consequence of the paucity of vegeta- tion and the absence of cultivation throughout the greater part of the surface. Nor is this prevalence of recent or sub-recent de- trital accumulations confined to the plains, for the slopes of the hills up to a considerable elevation are in some cases composed of similar

unconsolidated formations, from which only occasional peaks of solid rock emerge. This, however, is by no means uni- versally the case, many ranges consisting entirely of rock. Again, the descent in Baltchistan from the plateau to the sea-coast is over broad terrace-like flats of gravel and sand, separated from each other by ranges of hills running parallel to the coast-line. :

‘The mountains and hill-ranges of Persia comprise a consider- able variety of geological formations, a few of which, however, prevail over large areas of country. So far as our knowledge at present extends, the great mass of the Zagros chain (the term being used in the widest sense for the whole inountain-range from Mount Ararat to Shiraz, together with the numerous parallel minor ranges north-east of the main chain) consists of cretaceous (hippuritic) and tertiary formations, the former constituting the north-east half of the range and its slope towards the central plain of Persia, whilst the nummulitic and later formations prevail almost exclusively on the-south-west watershed overlooking the Tigris valley. Older rocks occur, but they are of subordinate importance, and it appeared probable, both to Mr Loftus and myself, that part at least of the altered rocks which form no inconsiderable portion of the range to the north-east is very probably of cretaceous origin. Old granite rocks, however, form a great band, extending from Lake Urumiah to a point nearly due west of Isfahan, and the same crystalline masses appear in the ranges between Isfahan and Kashan.”

The general direction of the Persian mountains north-west to south-east has already been noticed. Speaking of these, Blanford says that, so far as they have been examined, ‘‘they have the saine geological features as the Zagros, and consist similarly in the main of cretaceous and nummulitic rocks, the former prevailing to the north-east towards the desert, the latter to the south-west near the sea. Here, again, metamorphic rocks occur, some of them granite, others but little altered, and closely resembling in facies the cretaceous beds in their neighbourhood. Volcanic formations also occupy an extensive arca, and whilst some appcar of very late origin, others are possibly contemporaneous with the cretaceous epoch.”

vor the southern bordcr-land of the Persian plateau he writes— ‘Where crossed by Major St John and myself, between Gwadar and Jalk, it

consisted of low ranges running east and west, and, except near the sea, was almost entirely composed of unfossiliferous sandstones and shales, associated with a few beds of nummulitic limestone. So far as could be ascertained, these ranges appear to belong entirely to the older tertiary epoch. Here and there a few isolated masses of basaltic igneous rock have been introduced through the strata, but their occurrence is exceptional. Along the sea-coast, however, from the fronticr of Sind to the Persian Gulf, and probably throughout a large portion of the north-east shores of the gulf, a newer series of rocks rests upon the nummulitics. This newer series is easily recognized by the presence of thick beds of hardened clay or marl; it is of great thickness, and abounds in fossils, a few of which appear to be living forms, whilst others are extinct. The exact age has not been ascertained; the mineral character is very different from that described by Loftus as charac- teristic of the gypseous series, and it is therefore premature to class these beds of the Persian coast, for which I have proposed the name of Makran group, more definitely than as newer tertiaries. It is highly probable that they represent a portion at least of the gypseous scries. Along the coast itself are a few mud-volcanoes."

Remarking that hippuritic limestone had not been noticed on the eastern frontier, he turns to north-western Persia, a region " widely explored by various Russian and German travellers."

"There would appear, both in Adarbaijan and the Alburz range, to be a greater development of older Mesozoic and Palozoie forma- tions than in any other parts of western or in southern Persia. From the very brief visits I was enabled to pay to the Alburz and the small area examined, I can form but an imperfect conception of the range as a whole, but the impression produced by my visits is that the geological composition of this mountain-chain presents a striking contrast to that of all other parts of Persia which I had previously seen. It appears probable that a very considerable portion of this range consists of carboniferous and Devonian beds, and that Jurassic or Liassic rocks are also extensively developed. The same formations extend to Adarbaijan, but here, as well as in the eastern parts of the Alburz, cretaceous and nummulitic rocks are also found. Metamorphies (granite, &c.) exist in several places,

1 Jt has since been found extensively in southern Afghanistan and around Kwatta.

PERSIA

[GEOGRAPHY,

whilst volcanic outbursts occupy a considerable area, and the highest mountain in Persia, Damavand, in the Alburz chain, about 60 miles east-north-east of Tehran, is a voleano which, although dormant in the historical period, is of recent formation, and still gives vent to heated gases. The volcanic masses of Ararat, Sahend, south of Tabriz, and Savalan are also, in great part at least, of geologically recent origin.”

Minerals, &c.—Of the value and extent of minerals in Persia Minera Iron and lead are to be &e,

much still remains a matter of surmise. found, copper and coal also, but gold and silver have not yet become substantial results, and the turquoise is perhaps the only product of high price and estimation. This gem, however, is not readily procurable at Nishapur, its birthplace, but should rather be sought for at Tehran or Ispahan, where it comes into the market with other cxotics. The mines are situated at the base of the hill of Sulaimaniyah, lying north of Zamdnabad, a village on the high- road from Mashhad to Tehran. When the Sistan mission was at Nishapur in 1872 they were farmed by the Government for 8000 “‘tumans ” per annum, or about £3200 in English money.

In Malcolm’s days, though coining was held to be a choice privi- lege of royalty, foreign piastres and ducats were in considerable vogue. Accounts are kept in “tumans,” ‘“krans,” and “shahis,” of which the value of the first has deteriorated to 8s., the second is barely the French franc, and the third is about a halfpenny. Less than the last is called “pul-siyah,” or black money. The ‘‘shahi” and the “panabat,” a silver coin worth about 5d., have for long been in common circulation. In late years the manufacture of false money and forging the royal seals had become such common practices that the old rough hammer-struck coinage was called in, and medals in gold and silver

with milled edges were substituted. But these also were counterfeited, and a head of police was called in from Austria to endeavour to check the evil.

The Yazd marble has a watered appearance with yellowish tinge. A handsome specimen is to be seen in the tomb of Hafiz at Shiraz. There is a quarry on the road from Yazd to Karman. The petri- factions called Tabriz or Maragha marble are found on the road between those two places.

Eastwick describes the coal obtained from the pits at Hit, in the hill-country west of Tehran, as light, brittle, glittering, and with occasional red stains. There were no large blocks visible.

Though petroleum and naphtha appear indigenous to Persia, and Floyer visited an oil-spring in Bashakard, the produce of which was burnt in lamps at Minab near Bandar- Abbas, the produce of the oil-wells at Baku has found its way to Mashhad, and meets there with a ready sale. In connexion with this circumstance, Lovett states that a great number of lamps of the most trumpery German manufacture are imported into Khurasan and sold at large profits.

Dr Bellew, referring to the twelve divisions of the district of Nishapur, and to its 1200 villages and hamlets, mentions the report that it possesses also twelve different mines, yielding turquoise, salt, lead, copper, antimony, iron, together with marble and soap-stone. The statement needs, however, verification.

Climate.—The climate of Persia varies much according Climat!

to locality. In the Caspian provinces, where rain is fre- quent, it is hot, humid, and unhealthy for the greater part of the year. In the tablelands it is intensely cold in win- ter, and, though it is hot in summer, its dry clear heat is temperate in comparison with that of Sind and the Punjab. The spring and autumn are the best seasons. In the south and south-west, towards the Persian Gulf and in Baluch- istan, the heat is intense throughout the summer and often in the spring and autumn. The three regions of Nearchus and the old travellers—illustrated by parching heat, sand, and barrenness in the south, a temperate climate, pastures, and cultivation in the centre, and severe cold with bare or snow-clad mountains in the north—may still be

accepted as conveying a fairly accurate descrip- tion of the tracts lying generally between Bushahr and Tehran ; but of course there are seasons and seasons, and it may be very hot as well as very cold in the north as elsewhere. In June the traveller, starting from the former place en route to the capital (Tehran), will for more than 50 miles, or up to the bridge of Ddlaki, experience a fierce heat during the day, and not always find relief in a cool night. Reaching the plateau of Kundér Takhtah, 12 miles farther, at an elevation of 1800 feet, he will not then necessarily have escaped the influence of hot winds and a thermo- meter ranging to 100°. Some 50 miles farther he will have felt a most agreeable change at an altitude of 7000 feet ; and in another 24 miles, at Khan-i-Zanian, he will

have had every cause to be grateful for a delightful tem- perature. Shirdz, though some 4750 feet above sea-level, and in respect of climate so belauded by the native poets, can be hot enough in the summer, and is subject to drought, scarcity, and other contingencies of Persia.

Mounsey considers May the finest month, when the plains are fresh and green, the gardens filled with roses and nightingales, the cherries ripe, and the green almonds in vogue. Binning, writing from Ispahan on the 1st of July, had not seen the thermometer higher than 87° in his room ; in the morning at sunrise it was generally 70°. Sleeping, as others, on the roof of his house, he described the air to be very dry, and the nights clear and bright, the little dew which fell being so pure as to be innocuous. He expected hotter weather towards the close of the month, but a long autumn would make amends for a little heat. Many years before Binning, Mr Jukes had recorded that, from the average of 27 days, including the end of May and beginning of June, the thermometer at Ispahan at sunrise was 56°, at 2 p.m. 87°, and at 9p.m. 67°. Sir John Malcolm remarked that this city appeared to be placed “in the happiest temperature” that Persia could boast. Lady Sheil, whose experi- ences were chiefly gained in Tehran, limits the “ glorious weather of Persia” from the “ Nau-ruz” or New Year (21st March) to the middle of May ; but most persons would perhaps prefer the autumn in the highlands of the north, as in many other parts of the country. September and October are beautiful months. The blue sky, with its tempering haze, as

it were a veil of reflected snow gathered from the higher peaks and ridges of continuous mountain chains, is too exquisite a sight to be readily forgotten ; and the enjoyment is all the more complete when the temperature is that of October. To those who come from India direct, or to whom an Indian heat is habitual, the change to Persia is most grateful. In the late spring, fashion moves out a few miles from Tehran to the “yalaks of Shamiran,” or cooler residences near the hills, and summer rendezvous of the various foreign legations, returning in the late autumn to the precincts of the capital, which, it may be noted, have been considerably extended of late years, and are de- signed for yet further extension. On the 5th of June 1871 the thermometer in Tehran was at 1 A.M. at 62° and at 2 P.M. at 75°. On the two following days it was at 6 A.M. at 62° and at 2 P.M. at 80°. In February the traveller across the plains of Sulimaniya, ‘or approaching the capital from Tabriz, will sometimes expericnce the most bitter cold.

Bushahr and the Caspian provinces have already been mentioned, but the heat of the former place is fairly shared by other ports on the seaboard to the south,—among them, Lingah, Bandar-“Abbas, and Charbaér. When the Sistan mission was at Bandar“Abbaés in December 187], malarious fevers were prevalent, and enlarged spleen was acommon complaint. The average maximum temperature was then only 72° and the minimum 52°; but the summer and winter heats are in this locality extreme. More than a month later the officers of the mission slept out on the desert plains south of Sistan, and woke in the morning to find their beds and bedding covered with frost and icicles. With reference to the Caspian provinces the consular report to the English Foreign Office for 1881 is available. Major Lovett, remarking that the “minimum isotherms passing through the north of continental Europe are deflected con- siderably to the south on approaching the longitude of the Caspian,” calls attention to the fact that, while during the winter the northern part of that large inland sea is frozen over, farther south, at only 10° distance, the climate of Astrabad (if there be no wind from the north and the sun shine) is like that of Madeira at the same time of the year. Though the preceding cold season had been un- usually severe, and heavy snow had fallen at Baku and lower down, the lowest reading of the thermometer was 25° Fahr., and the maximum during the months of December, January, and February was 62° in the shade.

The following extract from the report is interesting, as it bears on the products as well as the climate of the north of Persia.

“It must be remembered, in connexion with the influence the Caspian Sea has on the climate of its shores, that its surface is 84 feet below the level of the ocean; and, consequently, the superin- cumbent strata of air being denser than, exteris paribus, elsewhere, it is also more capable of absorbing solar heat and moisture than the air at ocean-level. This partly accounts for the mildness as well

as for the dampness of the climate. I cannot give the amount of rainfall, having no gauge ; but it rained, during the 245 days of recorded observations, forty-five times, and the sky was overcast seventy times besides. This tolerable proportion of rain and cloud is doubtless due to the action of cold northerly blasts impinging on the warm and moisture-laden air shrouding the slopes of the Elburz, and hemmed in, as it were, between them and the icy northern wind. Currents thereupon are set up from the central region of the southern shores of the Caspian that blow to the east and to the west. The central region is a zone of much greater rainfall than the districts moreremote. ‘The westerly current, passing over this province, has its fertilizing influence expended on reaching the Goklan hills, 100 miles from the sea. The breadth and intensity of this moisture- bearing current is well marked by the gradually proportionate denseness of the vegetation extending from the sands of the Atrak steppe to the mountain summits. The action of these damp winds is distinctly traceable on all portions of the mountain-range exposed to the sea-breeze, even by the channels afforded by the valleys of the rivers that debouch on to the Caspian. Such are densely clothed with forest of a type similar to that found in southerly temperate climates. The flora is distinctly not tropical. In addition to the trees already mentioned, I should add that wild hops and plums are to be found. In the spring the hillsides are covered with thick excellent pasture. In the gardens and orchards of Astrabad are to be found vines, fig trees, orange trees, pome- granate, and lemon trees, and the vegctables chiefly cultivated are melons, pumpkins, marrows, lettuce,

aubergines, &c., that form at their seasons food-staples for the people. Tobacco, used for manu- facturing cigarettes, is also grown hcre on a small scale.

“The Turkman steppe lying north of Astrabad is, as far as the Atrak, a prairie of exceeding fertility. Wheat reproduces itself more than a hundredfold without artificial irrigation or any trouble beyond sowing.”

Soil and Products—Where there is irrigation the pro- ductiveness of the soil in Persia is remarkable, but un- fortunately there is too much truth in the notion that two-thirds of the tablelands of the country are sterile from want of water. The desert is the rule, fertility the exception, and generally in the form of an oasis. wheat, barley, and other cereals are grown in great per- fection ; there are the sugar-cane and rice also, especially in Mazandaran, where the soil is favourable and water pro- curable ; opium, tobacco, and cotton, madder roots, henna, and other dyes, are as well-known exports as the woollen goods of Persia; and the first may become of importance in its bearing upon the Indian market.!_ In Gilan, famous for its mulberry plantations, silk has been one of the most valuable of products. Yazd and Mazandaran contribute also the same material, but of late years the worm has comparatively failed to do its office, and disease has de- stroyed crop after crop. According to Mr Secretary Dickson’s report of August 1882 the peasants of Gilan had turned their attention to the cultivation of rice, and, though a marked improvement was perceptible in the silk produce, they were not disposed to revert to this branch of culture on the former large scale. ‘Silk, once the staple produce of Persia, upon which it mainly depended for repaying the cost of its imports, is not likely,” he fears, “to resume its former importance. In its flourishing days about 20,000

: tod

bales, or 1,400,000 tb, representing a value of £700,000, were annually exported. Now not more than a fourth of that quantity can be obtained.” Rice was found to suit the cultivators better; it gave them less trouble and pro- vided them with an article of daily food. The production of silk, on the other hand, profited the richer landed pro- prietors, and subjected the cultivators to oppression.

Consul Beresford Lovett, in his report before quoted, says that at Astrébad the soil is so productive, and subsistence is practicable on so small a piece of land and with so little labour and expense, that many very poor emigrants come

1 In 1881 the crop at Karmanshah yielded about 13,500 fb; Ispa- han claimed to have produced 3000 chests; in Khurasan it was re- ported that the cultivation of the poppy had increased tenfold, and so extended was the area that the opium realized was estimated at an eighth of the whole produce of the province, the yield for 1882 being reckoned at 33,750 Tb. At Yazd it was largely cultivated, at Tehran to a small extent only.

Yet Products.

there to settle from distant parts of Persia, Afghanistan, and the Indian border. “Rice,” he writes, ‘is husked under tilt-hammers worked by a water-wheel apparatus, a rude and clumsy contrivance, but strong, simple, and cheap. Corn and barley are ground by water-mills of primitive construction ; the best wheat-flour produced is inferior to English ‘middlings.’ They are careless as to the use of rusty corn; the effect of eating bread made with flour containing any of the noxious element is to render those unused to it very giddy.”

Sir John Malcolm considered the shores of the Persian Gulf to be sandy and unproductive in comparison with the rich clayey soil on those of the Caspian. Yet at Bushahr, and elsewhere on the lowlands of the southern border, patches of luxuriant vegetation may be found and a soil producing wheat and barley.

ornaments of the European parterre. Of the roses, Lady Sheil observes that they are so profuse during the spring at Tehran that some are cultivated in

fields as an object of trade to make rosewater. The double-coloured orange rose at Nishapur is exceptionally attractive and fragrant.

As with fruits and flowers, so also with vegetables for Vege. If the parsnip be excepted, which is probably tables.

the table. not found because not wanted, all those commonly used in England are to be had in Persia.

Fauna.—Mr W.T. Blanford has described with great care and minuteness the zoology of Persia. In company with Major St John, R.E., he made a large collection of the verte- brate fauna in a journey from Gwatar to Tehran in 1872. Having added to this a previous collection made by the same officer with the assistance of a native from Calcutta, he had before him the principal materials for his work.

Wines. Vines are abundant, and the Persian grapes are not only | Before commencing his analysis he adverted to his prede- of a good flavour and kind, but the wines made from them | cessors in the same field, 7.e., Gmelin (whose travels were by the Jews and Armenians have more than a mere local | published in 1774-84), Olivier (1807), Pallas (1811), reputation. That of Shiraz is the most universally known | Ménétries (1832), Belanger (1834), Eichwald (1834-41), and celebrated ; but a description of port manufactured at | Aucher Eloy (1851), Loftus, Count Keyserling, Kok- Ispahan is equally palatable and less astringent. It might | schy, Chesney, the Hon. C. Murray, De Filippi (1865), not, however, bear the vicissitudes of export. A light | Hume (1873), and Professor Strauch of St Petersburg. wine made at Hamadan, diluted with water, is found very | All of these had, more or less, contributed something to drinkable by European visitors and residents. Other | the knowledge of the subject, whether as writers or cities in Persia could be cited where the juice of the grape | as collectors, or in both capacities, and to all the due is turned to similar account. Samuel Gottlieb Gmelin, | meed of credit was assigned. Blanford divided Persia into who explored the southern shores of the Caspian in 1771, | five zoological provinces : (1) the Persian plateau, or from Zoolog) observed that the wines of Gilan and Mazandaran were | the Kopet Dagh southwards to nearly 28° N. lat., includ- cal pre all made from the wild grape only. ing all Khurdsan to the Perso-Afghan border, its western “2°

Forests. _ /lora.—Eastwick refers to the trees in the low country | limit being indicated by a long line to the north-west from of Gflan as “part of that great forest which extends some | near Shiraz, taking in the whole upper country to the 400 miles from Astarabad to Talish.” No longer do the | Russian frontier and the Alburz; (2) the provinces south sparse olive and occasional plantation of fruit-trees here | and south-west of the Caspian; (3) a narrow strip of wooded meet the eye of the traveller descending from the Persian | country south-west of the Zagros range, from the Diyah plateau, but his path will be through dense thickets of | river in Turkish Arabia to Shiraz; (4) the Persian side of ‘“jangal,” amid which the birch and the box and many | the Shattu’l-‘Arab, and Khizistan, east of the Tigris ; and familiar friends are recognized. There is an oak-forest | (5) the shores of the Persian Gulf and Baluchistan. The in the vicinity of Shirdz, but no part of the country is so | fauna of the Persian plateau he described as “ Palearctic, thickly wooded as the tract south of the Caspian. For the | with a great prevalence of desert forms 3 or, perhaps more greater part of the province of Astrabéd, Lovett surmises | correctly, as being of the desert type with Palearctic that nine-tenths of the surface is covered with forest. He | species in the more fertile regions.” In the Caspian pro- excepts the pasture-lands of Shah Kuh, a high mountain- | vinces he found the fauna, on the whole, Palearctic also, range between Shah Rud and the sea. The trees are | “most of the animals being identical with those of south- mostly deciduous. He had counted forty different kinds, | eastern Europe.” But some were essentially indigenous, including shrubs, but was unable to identify all. There | and he observed “a singular character given to the fauna were the oak, beech, elm, walnut, plane, sycamore, ash, | by the presence of certain Eastern forms, unknown in other yew, box, and juniper, but no pine, fir, or cedar,—though | parts of Persia, such as the tiger, a remarkable deer of the these last were said to exist in the dense forests of Fin- | Indo-Malayan group, allied to Cervus axis, and a pit viper derisk, and on the slopes of the Goklan Hills to the east- | (Halys).” Including the oak-forests of Shiraz with the ward. He applies to the oak, beech, and elm used in | wooded slopes of the Zagros, he found in his third division building the native names of “ mazt,” “nts,” and “azad.” | that, however little known was the tract, it appeared to

Fruits. Fruits and flowers are abundant, and are fully appre- | contain, like the second, “a Palearctic fauna with a few ciated in Persia. Poets sing of them, and prince and | peculiar species.” As to Persian Mesopotamia, he con- peasant delight in them. Of fruits the variety is great, | sidered its fauna to belong to the same Palearctic region and the quality, though not always the best, is in some | as Syria, but could scarcely speak with confidence on its cases unrivalled. There is perhaps no melon in the world | characteristic forms. The fifth and last division, Baluch- superior to that of Nusrabad, a village between Kashan | istan and the shores of the Persian Gulf, presented, and Kum. It were easier to name the few English fruits | however, in the animals common to the Persian highlands —such as the gooseberry, strawberry, raspberry, currant, | “for the most part desert types, whilst the characteristic and medlar—that are seldom, if at all seen, than the | Palearctic species almost entirely disappear, their place many that are commonly enjoyed by Persians. Apples | being taken by Indian or Indo-African forms.” Blan- and pears, filberts and walnuts, musk-melons and water- | ford adds: “Just as the fauna of the Persian plateau has melons, grapes, peaches, plums, nectarines,—all these are | been briefly characterized as of the desert type with a to be had in profusion and so cheap as to be within reach large admixture of Palearctic forms, that of Baluchistan

- of the poorest inhabitant. and the shores of the Persian Gulf may be described as

owers,

Among the flowers are roses of many kinds, the mari-

being desert with a small admixture of Indian species.”

gold, chrysanthemum, hollyhock, narcissus, tulip, tube- rose, convolvulus, aster, wallflower, dahlia, white lily (much valued), hyacinth, violet, larkspur, pink, and many

irrespective of scientific classification and detail, it may be Domes

stated that among the tame animals of Persia the horse, animals mule, and camel occupy an important position, and, jointly

perhaps with oxen (used for tilling purposes), are first and foremost in usefulness to man. The Persian-Gulf Arab, though not equal to the pure Arabian, is a very serviceable animal, and has always a value in the Indian market. Among others, the Kashgais, or those wandering semi- Turkish tribes brought down from Turkestan to the neigh- bourhood of Shirdz, have the credit.of possessing good steeds. The Turkman horse of Khurdsan and the Atak is a large, bony, and clumsy-looking quadruped, with marvellous power and endurance. Colonel C. E. Stewart speaks of a ‘“‘splendid breed of camels” in the north- eastern district, of which Radkan, a small town of 4000 inhabitants with a deputy-governor, is the capital. He also states that the Khurasan camel is celebrated for its size and strength, that it has very long hair, and bears cold and exposure far better than the ordinary Arabian or Persian camel, and that, while the ordinary Persian camel only carries a load of some 320 ib and an Indian camel one of some 400 ib, the Khurasan camel will carry from 600 to 700 ib. The best animals, he notes, are across between the Bactrian or two-humped and the Arabian or one- humped camel. Sheep, goats, dogs, and cats are good of their kind ; but not all the last are the beautiful creatures which, bearing the name of the country, have arrived at such distinction in Europe. Nor are these to be obtained, as supposed, at Angora in Asia Minor. Lake Van or Ispa- han is a more likely habitat. The cat at the first place, called by the Turks “Van kedisi,” has a certain local reputation.

Among the wild animals are the lion, tiger, leopard, – lynx, wolf, jackal, fox, hare, wild ass, wild sheep, wild cat, mountain-goat, gazelle, and deer. The tiger is peculiar to the Caspian provinces. Lovett says they are plentiful in Astrabad ; “they do not attack men, but hardly a week passes but some cow belonging to this town is reported to have fallen a victim to the tiger’s rapacity.” He measured two specimens, one 10 feet 8 inches, the other 8 feet 10 inches from the tip of the nose to the end of the tail. Lynxes and bears were to be found in the same vicinity, and the wild pig was both numerous and destructive.

Poultry is good and plentiful, and the game birds, if not of many varieties, have admirable representatives in the “durrdj” (black partridge) and the three kinds of partridge called respectively the ‘“‘kabk,” “kabk darah,” and “tihu.” The ‘“hubara,” a kind of bustard, is well known to the sportsman in northern India.

Commerce, d:c.—The most direct and accurate information obtain- able in England on the trade of Persia must be looked for in the reports of the secretary of H.M. Legation at Tehran, the resident at Bushahr (Bushire), and the consul-gencral at Tabriz.

Mr Seerctary Dickson’s report of the 30th August 1882 is hopeful as to the general prospects of trade and improvement of the condition of the people. There had been a good harvest ; but money was scaree at the capital, cash sales were difficult operations, and considerable failures had occurred to render the native bankers cautious. Man- chester goods, however, still sold well at Ispahan and elsewhere.

The comparative failure of silk had given an impetus to the culti- vation of opium, the greater part of which, when prepared for the market, was shipped to China. Carpets had found new favour in Europe, and the value of those exported was estimated at ten times the amount of former days. But a fear was expressed that the introduction of European designs and dimensions, and deterioration in quality of the articles supplied, would eventually prove prejudicial to the trade.

The larger traffic in opium effected both in 1880 and immediately

preceding years is remarkable, and will be seen in the following table—

Number| Value in r Number! Value in

Peer, of Cases.| Rupees. Feat. of Cases.| Rupees.

1871-72 870 696,000 1876-77 2570 2,313,000 1872-73 1400 1,120,000 1877-78 4730 4,730,000 1873-74 2000 1,600,000 1878-79 5900 5,900,000 1874-75 2030 1,625,000 1879-80 6100 6,100,000

1875-76 1890 1,701,000 || 1880-81 | 7700 8,470,000

Persian opium was, it appears, first exported from Ispahan in

1853. Since that period it has been grown in several parts of the country. The destination is usually China. In 1879, for instance eighteen steamers took 49714 chests from Bushahr, of which all but 236—for London—were for Hong-Kong. Exeept in Ispahan there is every probability of extended cultivation, and that the production will increase to an appreciable degree year by year. In the statement of a private firm, quoted by Mr Baring in his report from Tehran in September 1881, is the following passage :— “The Persian drug has already succeeded in throwing out Turkish sorts from the China market, and, with due abstinence from adul- teration, it can at any moment command a large outlet in Europe, America, and in the Dutch colonies.” Mr Baring himself says: ‘Whether the Persian opium trade in its present conditions con- stitutes a danger to the Indian revenue is, of course, a question to which I can furnish no reply. It depends upon circumstances respecting which I have no information. As matters at present stand, we have a trade that has been increasing steadily for several years past, and which the majority of persons think will continue to Increase. The cultivation pays, and the limit of land and labour has not yet been reached. There are so many reasons, in fact, why it should extend, so few why it should fall off.”

Carriageable roads were still a desideratum, and the want of these Commu- On the other hand, it was nication.

obstructed the development of trade. remarked that a fair road had been constructed between Kazvin and Tehran, a supply of carriages and carts had been obtained from Russia, and postal stations had been built at regular distances of 12 miles from each other. In the capital also the streets had been put into repair, and the palace, square, aud main streets lit with gas ; and there was a greater number of private carriages. A concession had been granted for a railway from Rasht to Tehran ; Mr Dickson, while approving of this line as a step in the right direction, was very strongly in favour of another to join Tehran to Baghddd. A branch from Karmanshah or Hamadan to Shistar or Dizful, whence goods could be exported by the Karin, would, he argued, give Persia an independent outlet for her commerce ; but he doubted whether Baghdad, with its prestige and advantages of climate, would not be accepted as the niain commercial entrepdt. The navigability of the Karun river has been already noticed.

The Bushahr reports on the trade of the Persian Gulf for 1880 Imports show that, as regards southern Persia, the year was unfavourable and from a commercial point of view. Large imports from India served exports.

to avert famine ; but the seed so provided for 1881 was not at hand in time to allow full advantage being taken of an unusually good rainfall in autumn and winter. Increased imports in sugar from France and Java, the introduction of tea from Japan, and a decrease in exports of cotton and other ordinary produce owing to drought were all noticed.

The table showing the total estimated value of imports into Bushahr during the year 1882 gives a total of 10,188,980 rupees, —say something less than £1,000,000. Of this about four-ninths are from England and more than a third is from India. Of the exports, amounting to 6,566,220 rupees, —say £650,000—more than two-fifths are for China, not a fifth is for England, and more than a fifth is for India. The most valuable items of import are the piece-goods and brass, —the last from England and India only ; and of export, opium, of whieh just three-fourths go to China, and wheat, of which more than two-thirds go to England.

As regards the trade of Lingah, the year 1882 showed a decrease. The total value of imports was 6,922,000 rupees, of which pearls formed the largest portion. These were brought ehiefly from Bahrain and the Arab eoast, but some from the Persian Gulf and Makran and Aden. Rice, almost wholly from India, was the next most valuable item. The total value of exports was 5,999,945 rupees. In this also pearls formed by far the largest item. Next in value mother-of-pearl shells exemplified a traffic almost entirely carried on with England. ;

From Gez on the Caspian, Consul Lovett gives to the exports of 1881 a value of £86,280. These consisted of silk, cotton, wools, furs and skins, dried fruits, rice, corn, and miscellaneous articles. Silk represented nearly the half, and furs and skins nearly a quarter of the total figure. The imports he valued at £287,640, of which the amount for piece goods was entered at £256,000. The remain- ing articles specified were sugar, tea, 1ron, copper, steel, crockery, hardware, and brass utensils.

Manufactures, &c.—The handbook on Persian art published by Manu- Colonel Murdoch Smith, R.E., in 1876, with reference to the collection factures.

purchased and sent home by him for the South Kensington Museum, has an instructive account of the more common manulfaetures of the eountry. They are classified under the respective heads of “porcelain and earthenware,” ‘‘ tiles,” ‘‘arms and armour,” “‘ textile fabrics,’ ‘needlework and embroidery,” ‘“ metal-work,” ‘‘ wood carving and mosaic-painting,” “manuscripts,” “enamel,” “jewelry,” and “musical instruments.” Specimens of the greater number are not only to be procured in England, but are almost familiar to the ordinary Londoner. It need scarcely be said that the tiles have rather in- creased in value than deteriorated in the eyes of the connoisseur, that the ornamentation of metal-work, wood carving and inlaying,

XVII. — 79

Carpets.

Shawls.

gem and seal engraving, are exquisite of thcir kind, and that the carpets manufactured by the ‘‘ustads” or skilled workmen of local repute, when left to themselves and their native patterns, are toa great extent unrivalled. One shown to Colonel Goldsmid at Karman, under preparation for the tomb of Shah Niy‘amat Ullah, situated at the neighbouring village of Mahun, would have been greatly prized in Europe. In company with Murdoch Sinith that offieer visited the carpet manufactories of the city in 1865. Of this interesting branch of Persian art Smith writes :—‘“‘Carpets are now made in many parts of Persia, but chiefly in Kurdistan, Khurasan, Feraghan (in Irak), and Karman ; each of these districts producing a distinctive kind both in texture and style. The finest are unques- tionably those of Kurdistan, of which good specimens exist in the museum. The pattern does not represent flowers, bouquets, or other objects thrown up in relief from a uniform ground, like so many of the inappropriate designs of Europe, but looks more like a layer of flowers strewn on the ground, or a field of wild flowers in spring ; a much more suitable style of ornament for a fabric meant to lie under foot. The borders are always well marked and usually of brighter colours than the centre. Besides the ordinary ‘ kali,’ or pile carpet, others, called ‘do-ru,’ very thin and smooth and alike on both sides, are made in Kurdistan, of which there is a specimen in the museum. These ‘do-ru,’ from their portability, are much used in travelling for spreading by the roadside during the halts for pipes and tea. The carpets of Feraghan resemble those of Kurdistan in style, although the texture is looser and the pattern simpler. They are consequently much cheaper and in more general use. . . . The Khurasan carpets arc somewhat supcrior in texture to those of Feraghan, but the patterns are generally more realistic ; the flowers, &c., being represented as standing out of the ground. There is a fine Khurasan carpet in the museum made by the Kurdish settlers on the Turkman frontier. Karman carpets are the next in value to those of Kurdistan, but the designs are usually still more realistic than those of Khurasan. Besides flowers, figures of men and animals are not uncommon.” Referring to the Turkman carpet he says: ‘‘The texture is very good and the pile is pecu- liarly velvety to the touch. The design, however, is crude, and the colours although rich are few in number. Still it is astonishing to think that, such as they are, these carpets are woven in the tents of a wild nomadic race like the Turkmans. Of

late years there has been unfortunately a slight importation from Europe into Persia both of colours and designs which are far from being an improve- ment. The carpets of every description are made without even the simplest machinery, the loom being simply a frame on which the warp is stretched. The woof consists of short threads woven into the warp with the fingers without a shuttle. -When a row of the woof is thus completed, a sort of comb is inserted into the warp and pressed or hammered against the loose row of woof until it is sufficiently tightened to the rest of the web. The pile is formed by merely clipping the ends of the woof until an even surface is obtained. The weaver sits with the reverse side of the web towards him, so that he depends solely on his memory for the formation of the pattern. . . .

"'Felts or namads are made in many parts of Persia, but chiefly at Ispahan and Yazd. The material consists of all kinds of wool mixed together, that of the camel predominating. The colour is generally brown, but the surface on one side, and sometimes on both, is ornamented with geometric and other designs in different colours which are inlaid (so to speak) in the namad, and not simply stamped on the surface.

'*The shawls of Karman are not much inferior to those of Kash- mir. They are woven by hand similarly to the carpets. The material called 'kirk' of which the shawls are made is the under wool of a particular kind of white goat: numerous flocks of this animal are in the neighbourhood of Karman. Like the merino sheep in Spain, these flocks migrate annually according to the season, in which respect they are like almost all the flocks and herds of Persia. I therefore made cnquiries at Karman why the 'kurk '- producing goats were only to be found in that neighbour- hood, and was informed that in that district the rapid descent froin the high plateau of Persia to the plains near the sea afforded the means of keeping the flocks throughout the year in an almost even temperature and in abundant pastures, with a much shorter dis- tance between the summer and winter quarters than in other parts of Persia, and that such an even climate without long distances to traverse in the course of migration was necessary to the delicate constitution of the animal, or rather to the softness of its wool. The whole of the 'kurk' is not made use of in the looms of Karman, a large quantity being annually exported to Amritsar in upper India, where it is manufactured into false

Kashmir shawls. Besides the ordinary long shawls of which men's and women's tunics are made, others of a single colour are made at Karman, which are afterwards richly ornamented with needlework. Of these there are in the museum several specimens, in which the softness of the shaw] and the riehness of the embroidery are both to be admired. Shawls of a coarser kind are also made at Yazd, of whieh a speci- men may be seen in the museum in a pair of door curtains."

Pel has Tee

[GEOGRAPHY,

Political Divistons.—According to the latest information obtained, or up to 1884, the 36th year of the reign of Nasru 'd-Din Shah, Persia is found to be portioned out into four large divisions and six smaller governments, of which governors-general or governors are appointed by the king. The four divisions are :—(1) Adarbaijan (Azerbijan) in the west; (2) the North Central Districts; (3) Khurasan in the east, including Sistan; (4) Southern Persia, or from the Shattu '1- Arab to the Mashkid. 'The minor governments are :—(5) Astrabdd, (6) Mazandaran, (7) Gilan, (©) Khamsah with Zanjan, (9) Kazvin, (10) Gerrus.

Adarbaijan, the ancient Atropatene, is under the " wali-'ahd," or Adar. heir-apparent, Muzaffaru'd-Din Mirza, second son of the shah, who baijar

resides at Tabriz, and appoiuts governors to the several districts within hisrange. Among the more important of these are Ardabil, Sarab, and Khalkhal towards the Caspian, Maku, Khot, and Urumiya in the west, Maragha in the centre, and Solduz, Saujbulak, and Sain Kalah in the south. Adarbaijan is about 250 miles in length from the Little Ararat to Sardasht, and the same distance in breadth from Kotur to the Talish. It is separated from Armenia in the north by the Arras, which rises in the mountains to the westward, and from 'Irak in the south by the Kizil Uzain, which, after a long winding course from Kurdistan, and union with other streams, empties itself into the Caspian under the name of Safid Rud. On the west it is enclosed by the Kurdish mountains, and to a great extent on the east by those overlooking the Caspian shores. It is a land of mountains, ravines, plains, and plateaus. Lake Urumiya, about 75 miles in length by an average

breadth of 30, is one of its most remarkable geographical fcatures. In parts it is fertile, and produces wheat, barley, and maize, also cotton and tobacco. Markham says that its villages “are embosomed in orchards and gardens, which yield delicious fruits,” and that its most picturesque and flourishing portion is around the towns of Urumiya (west of the lake) and Khoi. Tabriz, the capital, has long been the most populous city of Persia. The other chief towns of the province are Ardabil, Urumiya, Khoi, and Maragha.

The North Central Districts isa name given to the country under Nort the immediate supervision of the naibu ’s-sultanah, or “deputy of Cent) the kingdom,” the shah’s third son, who appoints governors to Dist

Tehran and Firuzkuh in the north, to Zarand, Sawah, Kum, Kashan, and Natanz, south of Teliran, and to Mahalat, Sultanabad in ‘Irak, Malaiyir, Nahawand, Hamadan, and Tisirkan, west of Kum and Kashan. The places named will serve to indicate the range of this division, one of some 150 miles in length, but of very irregular breadth. There are included in it remarkable centres of popu- lation, besides Tehran. Kum is held in high repute as a sacred city, second in importance to Mashhad only. It contains the tomb of Fatima, the sister, or, as some affirm, the daughter of the imam Riza, and the bones of thousands of Muhammadans, bequeathed to its honoured soil by the affection or superstition of sorrowing friends and relatives. It is a large, straggling, ill-kept, seimi- ruined, uninviting place, relieved by patches of a new and well- built bazaar. The many domes of Kum recall it readily to memory, but they are more characteristic than striking. Kashan has not much more attraction as a residence, but is held in good estimation for its silks, and is deservedly famous, above all towns in Persia, for its tiles and potteries.

The large province of Khurasan is perhaps not less than 500 Khu) ~ miles in length from the Perso-Turkman frontier to the southern asan/

limit of Persian Sistan. In breadth it is irregular, but from Pul-i- Khatun or the Lady’s Bridge on the Tajand to Pul-i-Abrishm or the Bridge of Silk on the Kal Mura—a fair limitation for Khurasan proper, exclusive of Sistan—it is about 260 miles. The mountainous character of its northern frontier has been noticed in the descrip- tion of the gencral boundaries of Persia. It is, however, worthy of remark that the supposed connexion of the Alburz

range and that of the Parapanisus does not prevent an easy passage into Herat by the valley of the Hari Rud. The mention of rivers east and west of Khurdsan must not Iead to the inference that the water- supply is abundant; one, the Tajand, has to fertilize the desert tracts of the Persian Atak ; at the other, the Kal Mura, the bridge is often useless, owing to the dryness of the river-bed. Central and southern Khurdsan are more or less a vast desert with kavirs. Parts of Kaiyan and Sistan on the Afghan bordcr are fertile, though barren mountains and desert plains abound in the former, and the second has no lack of wastc, notwithstanding the proximity of the Helmand.

The principal city in Khurdsan proper is Mashhad, the capital, which may be said to contain, without contradiction, the most venerated and popular shrine in the whole of Persia, that of the eighth imam, Riza. A pilgrimage to this spot has, owing to its convenient site, become a duty more essential if not more important than one to Karbala in Turkish Arabia, or even to Mecca aud Medina; and the thousands who year by year win the privilege of becoming “ Mashhadis”’ testify to the value set upon it. Mashhad, built on the perpetual Persian plain, and admirably situated as to roads of trafic with Bukhara (Bokhara), Khiva, Herat, and Kandahar, has little in its general exterior, except the imam’s golden dome, to dis-

!

5

j

‘

FRE SY 4

tinguish it from other cities in the shah’s territory; but it can boast also the tomb of the famous Harun al-Rashid and of Ganhar Shah Agha, the favourite wife of Shah Rukh; and its canal and quays

POPULATION. |

627

Astrabad is a town and district near the entrance of the bay of Minor the same name on the Caspian. In 1884 it was governed by govern- Habib Ullah Khan, the “sa‘idu ’I-daulah,” or “arm of the state.” ments.

nerit at least a passing remark from their rarity. It is divided into two towns, the sacred and the secular, each of which has its distinct governor—the first called the “ mutawali,” the second being also governor of the whole province of Khurasan, and often a prince of the blood-royal. After Mashhad, among the chief towns of Khurasan are Nishaptir and Sabzawar on the highroad to Tehran, the first an ancient city within walls, the second notable for its surrounding cultivation ; Bujnurd on the north, which in Burnes’s time was “a rather large place standing in a spacious valley” ; Tirbat-i-Haidari, the chief town of a populous district with ten villages, visited by Conolly in 1830, by Goldsmid in 1872, and by Stewart in 1880; Sultanabad, capital of the Turshiz district (in which there is uo specific “Turshiz”), called by Colonel Stewart “a small and flourishing town of some 5000 inhabitants” ; Kaiyan, once capital of the district of that name, and still a town of some importance, much frequented by “mullas” and “ saiyids”; Tun, which Macgregor describes as “decidedly a picturesquely situated town, surrounded by a wall (of irregular outline), which goes outside all the houses, and encloses besides a space—-quite equal to that occupied by the houses—taken up with cultivation and gardens. Thus it is,” he adds, “that Tun may be said to be a town 4 miles in circum- ference, though, if only the space occupied by houses was calculated, it would dwindle to one-eighth of this. There are no buildings of any note in the place, but a few mosques and colleges are to be found, while most of the better houses, of which there is a total of about 1500, have badgirs.”1 Conpled with Tun is Tabas, to which the same writer gives no importance ; then come Birjand, pictur- esque and clean, with a better class of mud buildings, well situated at the foot of hills, and having rather high mountains to the west- ward, the modern capital of the Kaiyan district ; and finally, Sikuha, the true but somewhat insignificant chief town of Sistan, here chosen in preference to Nasrabad, its military headquarters. Mr Rozario, medical attaché to the mission of 1872, described Sikuha as “‘ com- posed of 200 arch-roofed mud-built houses, connected with each other without any kind of woodwork about them,” the land wanting in rice and timber, but producing wheat, barley, beans, and cotton in abundance.

The fourth, Southern Persia, is a very extensive division, cm- bracing not only the whole seaboard between 48° and 61° 30’ E. long. but a great part of the country as far north as 32° 40’, the parallel of Ispahan. Nothing could better illustrate the arbitrary and uncertain mode of parcelling out a kingdom than the separa- tion of natural and the combination of abnormal elements of union to be found in this vast territory entrusted to the charge of the “7i)i-sultan,” or ‘“‘shadow of the monarch,” the title given to the shah’s eldest son. That such an arrangement ean work at all is one of many strange truths which are intelligible only to persons acquainted with the centralizing power exercised in Tehran. General Schindler, an officer of great local knowledge and experience, has guaranteed the correctness of the statement that the prince-gover- hor or governor-general of Southern Persia—residing himself at Shiraz (or at Ispahan)—appoints governors to the following places :—Kurdistan, Karmanshah, Luristan, Burujird, Dizful, Shistar, Muhamrah, Behbahan, and Ram Hormuz in the west ; the tracts occupied by the Bakhtiaris, Gulpaigan, Khonsar, Fari- dun, Chahér Mahal, Yazd (with Nain, Baft, and Shahr-i-Babek) ; Fars (with Fasa, Darab, Lar, Parum, and Kazarun) in the centre ; Bushahr and Lingah on the coast ; and Karman (with Bam, Bam- pur, Rafsinjan, Khabis, Sirjan, Jiruft, and Rudbar) to the east. Among the more prominent cities or towns within this range are: —Ispahan, a fine city, still worthy from its site, buildings, gar- dens, river, ‘and surroundings to be the royal residence ; Shiraz, happily situated with pleasant neighbouring resorts and the ordi- nary requirements of a first-class Persian town,—possessing, more- over, a special national prestige for high and low, yet not a genial residence for strangers, who can accomplish its lions in a couple of days; Yazd, a large and fairly populated city, with one remark- able mosque and a handsome new bazaar, but somewhat gloomy in character and drearily situated on a flat plain in an amphitheatre of hills; Karman, a place of pleasant recollection to those English travellers who experienced the genuine kindness and hospitality of the wakilu ’l-mulk, Muhammad Ismail Khan, its governor In 1865-66, and not wanting in material attractions of its own ; lastly, Bam and Bampir, visited by Lieutenant Pottinger in 1810, more than half a century afterwards by Colonel Goldsmid, and later still by Majors St John and Lovett,—the one a froiitier town with associations of border warfarc, the other a mere Perso – Baluch cantonment with a fort and mud buildings, long the residence of Ibrahim Khan, a chief of notoriety serving the interests of Persia.

Muhamrah, Bushahr, Lingah, and Bandar“ Abbas are ports, but there is no real harbour between Féo at the mouth of the Shattu Arab and Karachi (Kurrachee) in British India.

1 Literally ‘‘ wind-catchers,”—towers erected on the roofs of houses for pur- poses of ventilation.

Mazandaran and Gilan are the Caspian provinces, par of Persia. General Schindler rasken en TccutL peat but they appear to have once formed part of the northern division under the prince-governor.

Khamsah, a district on the high road between Tabriz and Tehran of which the chief town, Zanjan, isa place of some importance. The governor’s name in 1884 was Nasr Kult Khan, the ‘‘‘amidui ‘l-mulk,” or “prop of the kingdom.” ~

Kazvin, a considerable town, with surrounding district, in the plains south of the Alburz, and not a hundred miles from Tehran, was governed in 1884 by Mirza Riza, the ‘‘mu’‘ayinu ’l-sultanah,” or ‘‘ helper of the kingdom.”

Gerrus is a district on the south of Khamsah.

Population.—Although the present section deals with statistics only, the following well-considered remarks of Mr Robert Grant Watson, formerly a secretary in the Persian legation, form an appropriate preface to the record of population.

“Persia is peopled by men of various races. portion of the population is composed of wandering tribes, that is, of a large number of families who passa portion of the year on the hills. It is in this sense only that they can be considered wanderers, They invariably occupy the same pasture-grounds one year after another. Their chiefs are possessed of great authority over the tribesmen, and all dealings between the Government and the tribes are carried on through the heads of these divisions. Through the chief the taxes, whether in money or in kind, are paid, and through him the regiments which his tribe may furnish are recruited. ‘Ihe office of chief is hereditary. The tents in which the tribesmen dwell are for the most part composed of a light framework of the shape of a beehive. This is covered with a coating of

reeds, and above it is placed a thick black felt. It has but one door, and no window or chimney. This is the Turkman tent, which is used by the Shahsavand and other tribes, but the Iliyats in central Persia make use of tents of another construction, with flat or slightly-sloping roofs.

“The provinces near the Persian Gulf contain many Arabs and men of Arab extraction. Such are for the most part the inhabitants of Laristan and of the country lying to the left of the Shattu’l-Arab and of the lower part of the Tigris. The Bakhtiari mountains, between the valley of the lower Tigris and the plain of Ispahan, are the dwelling-place of tribes of another race, and of whom and their country very little is known. The mountains of Kurdistan give birth to a warlike people, who are attached to their own tribe- chiefs, and who never go far from the borders of Turkey and of Persia, sometimes proclaiming themselves subjects to the Porte, and sometimes owning allegiance to the Shah. At the foot of one part of these mountains, on the borders of the lake of Urimtia, there is a plain on which dwell many Christian families who hold the tenets of Nestorius. At Ispahan, at Tehran, at Tabriz, and in other parts of Persia, there is a more or less considerable popu- lation of Armenians. At Hamadan, at Ispahan, at Tehran, at Mashhad, at the town of Damavand, and elsewhere in Persia, Jews are found in considerable numbers. The province of Gilan is in- habited by a race of men peculiar to itself, the descendants of the ancient Gele. The people of Mazandaran speak, as do the Gileks, a dialect of their own. The province of Astrabad is partly inhabited by Turkmans; and in the districts claimed by Persia, which border on Afghanistan and Baluchistan, the Afghan and Baluch elements are prominent in the population. At Karman a few Hindtis reside, and at Yazd there are about 2000 families of the original fire-worshippers of Iran.? But the two principal races to be met with in Persia are the Turks and the Persians or Mongols. The former are, as a general rule, spread over the northern pro- vinces; the latter over the southern. The Persians of Mongol extrac- tion for the most part speak only the Persian language, while those of Turkish race spcak the Turkish language in preference to Persian.

“The inhabitants of Persia may be divided into two classes,— those who inhabit the towns and villages, and those who dwell exclusively in tents. The former class remain stationary during the greater part of the year, the

richer orders only leaving the towns for two months during the summer heats, when it is possible to obtain cool air in the hills or upper grounds close by. The tribes who dwell in tents move from place to place with the varying scasons of the year. In the springtime they drive their flocks and herds to their accustomed pasture-grounds, and if they havea right to the pasture of mountains which are inaccessible in spring, they move up to their summer quarters as soon as the snow disappears. Winter finds them on the plains, prepared, in their black tents, to brave its utmost rigour. These Iliyat tribes serve each a separate chief. For the Iliyats of Fars there is a hereditary chief called the Ilkhanf, to whom they all owe allegiance ; from whom they receive the laws that rule their eonduct ; and to whom they pay the revenue imposed upon them. They contribute a certain number

2 Since greatly reduced in numbers.

A very great pro- Races.

Statisties

of popu- lation.

Adminis- tration.

of soldiers to the Shah's army. Very little is known as to the numbers and the peculiarities of, these nomads. 'The Iliyat tribes of Turkish descent have an Ilkhani appointed by the Shah. Besides these tribes there are wanderers who are less numerous, and who occupy a less prominent position,—the gipsies common to so many countries."

It is difficult to form an estimate of the population of Persian towns or districts. In the first place, opinion is divided upon the approximate figure to be accepted for the kingdom at large. Accord- ing to St John, the discrepancy is between ten and four millions ; and if the smaller one were made a basis there would be but a scanty number indeed for partition among the cities and principal centres. The famine of 1870 was, moreover, severe and fatal enough to eause aconsiderable diminution in the totals

calculated prior to its occur- rence. When returning through Mashhad in the spring of 1872 the British commissioner for the Sistan boundary settlement was informed that no less than 100,000 persons had been carried off within the limits of the prinee-governor's rule, of whom 24,000 were from the city itself, where, exclusive of passing pilgrims, reckoned by thousands, a population of 70,000 might well be sup- posed. In Yazd and Ispahan the losses were also very great, and must have sensibly affected the figures.

The official estimate for 1881 is recorded as follows :—inhabitants of cities, 1,968,800 ; wandering tribes, 1,909,800 ; inhabitants of villages and country, 3,780,000; total, 7,658,600. It is probable that 8,000,000 would be a fair estimate in round numbers; and this should include the comparatively new accessions of territory in Sistan and western Baluchistan.

The population of eertain cities may be recorded as follows. Those figures marked with an asterisk are from the official returns given in the Statesman's Year Book for 1884. Tehran, *100,000 ; Astrabad (city), 8000 —in the province, 26,000 (Lovett, 1881); Tabriz, *120,000 ; Urumfya, *40,000; Hamadan, *30,000; Kar- manshah, 25,000; Rasht, 20,000; Kazvin, 25,000; Zanjan or Zanjanah, 20,000 (Eastwick, 1860) ; Kim, 20,000 (Euan Smith said in 1871 that out of 20,000 houses which it originally possessed only 4000 were then habitable) ; Ispahan, 60,000; Shiraz,*80,000; Bush- ahr, 11,000; Yazd, *40,000; Karman, 40,000 ; Birjand, 12,000 (Sis- tan mission, 1872); Ardakan (Khurasan desert), 20,000 (Colonel Stewart, 1880) ; Bam, 600C (Goldsmid, 1866-72).

With regard to three interesting places in eastern Persia visited by Macgregor in 1875, this active explorer gives no clue to the population of Tabas, beyond the fact that it is a wall-enclosed town about half a mile in length by a quarter in breadth, with an "ark" or citadel, but no bazaars; of Tun, lis 1500 " better houses " may imply about 6000 well-to-do people only ; and Bashruyah, between Tabas and Tun, he calls a village of some 600 houses, equivalent to a population of between'3000 and 4000.

Government.—The shah is regarded as vicegerent of the Prophet, and, as such, claims implicit obedience so long as his commands do not go against the Koran and the sacred law. 'The executive government is carried on by a ministry of which the personnel is subject to constant change, and the

distribution of duties depends much upon the standing in royal favour of individual ministers. It may be said, as a rule, that those who fill the more important functions and do the most real work are better known by their family names than the official titles accorded them. The some- what common prefix ‘‘mirza” is usually taken by high function- aries of state,—a word which invariably denotes a member of the royal house when used as an affix.)

The division of the country for administrative purposes has been mentioned above, p. 626. Provinces are further subdivided into districts under ‘‘hakims,” or chiefs, who eollect the revenue as well as exercise a general superintendence. In villages the “kat- khuda,” or magistrate, administers justice.

Of the Armenians under Persian rule there are said to be 43,000, chiefly in Julfa near Ispahan, and of Nestorians and Chaldeans 23,000, chiefly in Urumiya and Salmas. There are probably 70,000 Christians of every denomination. The number of Jews given is 19,000, and of Gabars (Guebres) or Parsis 8000. Perhaps the Nes- torians have been under- estimated ; but the Parsis have greatly dim- inished in recent years. However tolerant the declared principles of the Government towards aliens in religion, there is no doubt that much could yet be done to improve the condition of the shah’s non- Moslem subjects in respeet of taxation, civil and social rights, and general treatment by local authorities. Efforts on behalf of the Nestorians have from time to time been made in late years, with the support of the British Government, and special agents have been deputed to Urumtya to report upon supposed grievances

1 In 1884 the following were among the more prominent ministers :— War. —Naibu ’s-Saltanah, Kamran Mirza. Interior and Finance.—Mustofiu ’1-Mamdlik, Mirza Yusuf Khan. Foreign Affairs.— Nasru 1-Mulk, Mirza Mahinid Khan. Justice.—Mushira *d-Daulah, Mirza Abdul Wahab. Worship and Teleyraphs.—Makhbaru ’d-Daulah, ‘Ali Kuli Khan. z a ode gona a wale “nasru ’l-mulk,” had been minister in ondon. is predecessor in the cabinet had been always kno i Mirza Satid han, os enauaaiinaitiaas ¢

FESTA

with a view to their alleviation or removal. The temporary appointment of a Christian governor was an indieation of the shah's good wishes, but can hardly be said to have attained the desired end. It is just possible that the desire awakened in England in the second half of the 19th century to know more of the Eastern churehes may result in the exercise of a beneficial influence over the fortunes of a people who have suffered various forms of oppression for five centuries or more. See Nesronrays, vol. xvil. p. 357 sg., where statistics, &c., are given.

Army.—Military service is not popular, and could not be pro- Amy.

vided for at all but by compulsory enrolment. Pay is always kept in arrears, generally for two or three years ; and, when issued, it is reduced from its legitimate amount by the exaetions of distri- buting officers, from the ‘‘sarhang,” or lieutenant-eolonel, down- wards. The native officers are, as a rule, incapable and ignorant of military affairs; and the European drill-instructors, whatever their local rank, have no actual command in the native army. The common ‘‘sarbaz,” or Persian infantry soldier, might with good officers and good training be made very efficient. In the perform- ances of his long marches—24 or even 40 miles a day—he has very often a companion, his donkey, without which adjunct no picture of a Persian infantry soldier would be complete. Setting such aid aside, the marching and endurance of the sarbaz are wonderful, and, though better food might in some respects improve his physique, his frugality is such as to aceount in some measure for his bodily strength. Ifwanting in the discipline that is eonsidered in England essential to the well-being of the service, the fault is that of his superiors, by whom he is ill-commanded, ill-taught, and ever accursed with an evil example. In fact, the moral value of the soldier deteriorates as the social grade rises. It is much the same in Turkey, where the state of things is perhaps Oriental rather than national. The post of ‘‘ wakil,” or non-commissioned officer, beconies thus the first step to demoralization. Above this person is the ‘‘naib,” or lieutenant, corresponding to the Turkish ‘‘imulazim” ; then comes the ‘‘sultén,” or captain, the Turkish “‘yuzbashi” ; “ yawar,” or major, the Turkish “binbashi”; “ sar- hang,” or lieutenant-colonel, the Turkish ‘‘k4im-makdm”;

and the ‘‘sartip,” or colonel, the Turkish ‘‘ mir-alai’’; sueh are roughly the respective grades which represent the commissioned ranks.

The most business-like cavalry the present writer can recall in the shah’s dominions were the stray horsemen met with in the Karman province. Their dress, brown from top to toe, with the xupBacia of Herodotus and the earbine slung over the back, ap- peared simple and soldier-like; and nothing but hereditary aptitude could make the horseman so fitted to the horse. Both in 1866 and in 1871 the governor of Bampur, in Baluchistan, had good stuff to diseipline into irregular cavalry in his mounted Baluehis as well as Persians ; and the same remark applies to the Persian governor of Sistan in 1872. The “‘istikbal,” or motley troop of cavaliers, sent out to meet the writer by either chief, presented a singular specimen of rough but sufficiently formidable-looking satellites— men who had, clearly, fighting propensities, and might be moulded, without much effort, into very serviceable soldiers. Colonel (now Sir Charles) Macgregor found the few irregular cavalry incidentally brought under his observation in Khurdsan very fairly mounted in a working sense. Over the saddle and behind it they seemed to carry all that belonged to them. With less than £2 year in pay, over and above a grain allowance, he says truly of these cava- liers, that, ‘‘if not the best light horsemen in the world, they are the very cheapest.” At Mashhad he saw several Persian regiments encamped outside the city. They were composed of men generally of fine physique, hardy and muscular; but their small pay of seven ‘‘tumans” (not £2, 16s.) per annum was seldom realized up to half the amount, and they had to subsist chiefly on their rations. Their uniform consisted of a black lamb’s-wool busby, with a lion and sun in brass on the front, a dark-blue tunic, on the European model, with white bands across the breast, blue trousers with red stripe, and shoes (if they like to wear them). They had “‘clumsy percussion, smooth-bore muskets and bayonets, with locks of French manufacture”; but they did not clean them, and it was probable that more than half were unfit for actual use. The artillery he states to be probably the most efficient branch of the service, not smart, but rough and ready.

Although there were no English officers employed in training the Persian troops during any of the present writer’s visits to Tehran, there were two Englishmen connected with the arsenal to whoin the local Government was

indebted for useful service. The ehief control of the arsenal, however, and indeed the direction of the whole Persiau artillery, was in the hands of an Armenian ; the two principal drill-instructors were Italians, a Florentine and a Neapolitan ; while that vital part of the public works department comprising roads and bridges was under an Austrian officer hold- ing the rank of general. There were, besides, two or three other Europeans holding quasi-military posts.

Sir Henry Rawlinson, who was for five years in the shah's army, believes that, "if the Persian material were placed at the disposal of a European power who would encourage and take care of the

Nationa] character,

men, and develop their military instincts, a fine working army, very superior to anything that Turkey could produce, might be obtained in a very short period of time."

It is difficult to rely on statistics in the present case, but the following are found in the latest and most trustworthy records, 1

"The Persian army, according to official returns of the minister of war, numbers 105,500 men, of whom 5000 form the artillery, 58,900 the infantry, 31,000 the cavalry, regular and irregular, and 7200 militia. Of these troops, however, only one-third are em- ployed in active service, the standing army of Persia consisting, on the peace footing, of a total of 30,000 men. By a decree of the Shah, issued in July 1875, it was ordered that the army should for the future be raised by conscription, instead of by irregular levies, and that a term of service of twelve years should be substi- tuted for the old system, under which the mass of the soldiers were retained for life ; but the decree has not been enforced to any ex- tent. The organization of the army is by provinces, tribes, and dis- tricts. A province furnishes several regiments ; a tribe gives one, and sometimes two, and a district contributes one battalion to the army. The commanding officers are almost invariably selected from the chiefs of the tribe or district from which the regiment is raised. The Christians, Jews, and Guebres in Persia are

exempt from all military service. In recent years the army has been under the training and organization of European officers.”

Revenue.—According to the Statesman’s Year Book for 1884 the revenue and expenditure of the Government are known only from estimates. If we accept these as based on consular reports, the total receipts of the Government amounted, on the average of the years 1872 to 1875, to £1,900,000 per annum, while the expendi- ture during the same period was at the rate of £1,756,000 per annum. The receipts of the year 1882 amounted to £1,600,000 in money, besides £280,000 in kind, consisting of barley, wheat, rice, and silk, making the total revenuc equal to £1,880,000; and of this sum £1,520,000 came from direct taxes and £353,600 from customs. The expenditure amounted to £1,800,000, of which £760,000 was for the armiy ; £360,000 for the regal court ; the priest- hood, &c., £240,000; foreign affairs, £28,000; other departments, £60,000; education, £12,000. The surplus is paid into the shah’s treasury. About one-fourth of the receipts are constituted by pay- mentsin kind, mostly reserved for the use of the army and the shah’s own household. The whole revenue is raised by assessinents upon towns, villages, and districts, each of which has to contribute a fixed sum, the amount of whicli is changed from time to time by tax-assessors appointed by the Government. Almost the entire burthen of taxation falls npon the labouring classes, and among these upon the Muhammadan subjects of the shah. The amount of revenue collected from the Christian population, the Jews, and the Gabars is reported to be very small. The Government has no public debt. The Almanach de Gotha adds to the above items of expenditure in 1882 the sum of £80,000 for the priesthood, &c.

In 1868 the revenue demanded from each province, under the divisions then made, was :—Adarbaijan, £248,000 ; Gilan, £176,000 ; Ispahan, £168,000; Fars, £152,000; Khurasan, &c., £88,000; Arabistan, £86,000; Tehran, &c., £84,000; Karman, £84,000; Karmanshah, &c., £80,000; Khamsah, £72,000; Yazd, £68,000; Mazandaran, £44,000 ; Kazvin, £28,000 ; Kashan, £28,000 ; Buru- jird, £24,000; Gulpaigan, £24,000; Kurdistan, £20,000; Hamadan, £12,000; Astrabdd, £10,000; Kim, £6000; total, £1,502,000. The customs were £214,664, and the value of income reccived in kind was £220,336,—making a total revenue of £1,937,000, or something less than two millions.

A prince-royal appointed to a province is often little more than a nominal ruler. On the other hand, some governors, such as Muhammad Isma‘il Khan, the late wakilu ’1-mulk of Karman, attend to even the minute details of administration, and pay especial attention to the collection of revenue. It is not always an easy matter to pay into the royal treasury the sum insisted on, or even voluntarily offered for the government of a province.

National Character.—Maleolm’s Sketches and Morier’s Hajjt Baba are still, after more than half a century, unsuperseded as standard records of accurate information on the manners and customs of an Oriental people. A clever volume? published in 1883, which is also worth quoting, contains, aniong many other faithful delineations, the following.

“The character of the Persian is that of an easy-going man with a wish to make things pleasant generally. He is hospitable, obliging, and specially well disposed to the foreigner. His home virtues are many : he is very kind and indulgent to his children, and, asa son, his respect for both parents is excessive, developed in a greater degree to his father, in whose presence he will rarely sit, and whom he is in the habit of addressing and speaking of as ‘master.’ The full stream of his love and reverence is reserved for his mother ; he never leaves her to starve, and her wishes are laws tohim. The mother is always the most important member of the household, and the grandmother is treated with veneration. The

1 Statesman’s Year Book, 1884, pp. 796, 797. 2 Wills, In the Land of the Lion and Sun, 1883.

presence of the mother-in-law is coveted by their sons-in-law. who look on them as the guardians of the virtue of their wives. The paternal uncle is a much nearer tie than with us ; while men look er oer first cousins on the father’s side as their most natura]

ss Black slaves and men-nurses or ‘Jallaks’ are much respected ; the ‘dyah’ or wet nurse is looked on as a second mother and usu. ally provided for for

life. Persians are very kind to their servants – a master will often be addressed by his servant as his father, and the servant will protect his master's property as he would his own. A servant is invariably spoken to as ' bacha' (child). The servants expect that their master will never allow them to be wronged. The slaves in Persia have a good time; well fed, well clothed, treated as spoiled children, given the lightest work, and often given in marriage to a favourite son or taken as 'segah' or con- cubine by the master himself, slaves have the certainty of a well- cared-for old age. They are looked on as confidential servants, are entrusted with large suins of money, and the conduct of the most important affairs; and seldom abuse their trust. The greatest punishment to an untrustworthy slave is to give him his liberty and let him earn his living. They vary in colour and value: the 'Habshi' or Abyssinian is the most valued ; the Suhali or Somali, next in blackness, is next in price ; the Bombassi, or coal-black negro of the interior, being of much less price, and usually only used as a cook. The prices of slaves in Shirdz are, a good Habshi girl of twelve to fourteen £40, a good Somali same age, half as much ; while a Bombassi is to be got for £14, being chosen merely for physical strength. They are never sold, save on lnportation, though at times they are given away. . . . I have never seen a Persian unkind to his own horse or his slave, and when overtaken by poverty he will first sell his shirt, then his slave.

""In commercial morality, a Persian merchant will compare not unfavourably with the European generally. . . . To the poor, Persians are unostentatiously generous; most of the rich have regular pensioners, old servants, or poor relations who live on their bounty; and though there are no workhouses, there are in ordinary times no deaths from starvation ; and charity, though not organized, is general. . . . Procrastination is the attribute of all Persians, 'to-morrow' being ever the answer to any proposition, and the 'to-morrow' means indefinite delay. A great dislike is shown gener- ally to a written contract binding the parties to a fixed date ; and, as a rule, on breaking it the Persian always appeals for and expects delay and indefinite days of grace… .

'*Persians are clean in their persons, washing themselves and their garments frequently. The Persian always makes the best of his appearance ; he is very neat in his dress, and is particular as to the sit of his hat and the

cut of his coat. All Persians are fond of animals, and do not treat them badly when their own property.

“Cruelty is not a Persian vice ; torture and punishments of an unusual and painful nature being part of their judicial system. There are no vindictive punishments, such asa solitary confinement, penal servitude for long terms of years, &c. Seldom, indeed, is aman imprisoned more thau twelve months, the rule being that there is a general jail delivery at the New Year. Royal clemency is frequently shown, often, perhaps, with want of judgment.”

The close adherence to ceremony and etiquette, the ready adaptation to foreign habits, together with the capacity for using and love of receiving the grossest forms of flattery—which in the days of Herodotus were found to be notable features of the national character—are still to be seen in the 19th century.

Morier, in his Sccond Journey through Persia, relates how on arrival at Bombay his fellow-traveller, the Persian ambassador, returning from a mission to the court of St James’s, would not call at Government House until the governor had visited him, on the plea that, when in London, the chairman and deputy-chairman, whom he styled the father and grandfather, of the Hast India Company, as well as the “viziers” and “grand vizier” himself (Mr Spencer Perceval), had made the first call upon him,—clothed, moreover, in the very dress they had worn before their own sove- reign! The present writer, when discussing the necessary conduct of British diplomatists accredited to Persia, said:3 “In some courts

. . there is a meaning in ridiculous minuti#, the comprehension of which is of vital importance to the envoy and the cause he advocates. . . . A chair pushed one iuch or two forward or back- ward, so as to transgress the border of a particular carpet marked for its limit, may cause serious offence ; a cup of tea, or a tobacco pipe missing from the conventional number offered to a guest, may awake hostile feelings, there may be hidden mischief in a misapplied word of welcome or farewell, in a clumsy gesture, in a new-fashioned article of wearing apparel. Trifles could hardly go further in the way of puerility ; but it is a part of common-sense diplomacy

to acknowledge with gravity things which are to all sceming the most opposed te common-sense.” ; a”

Forms of compliment and adulation are in such constant requisi- tion with him that a Persian is never at fault to find occasion for their use. If the following example be too characteristic to be

3 Lecture at the Royal United Service Institution, 26th May 1876.

admitted, be it understood that it indicates a grosser kind of pro- cedure than that which, at the present day, is known to the higher classes. It is a common custom on the arrival at the gate of a town ofa distinguished traveller for some duly appointed official to strike off the head of a sheep, and roll it, with the blood drip- ping, across the path of the new-comer. Morier gives a revolting ulustration of the length to which this ceremony was carried on the arrival of the shah at the halting-place of Morehikar. The head man of the village went so far as to strip his own son naked from the waist upwards, and, having tied the lad’s hands behind his back, to lift his knife as though to cut the victim’s throat. The conclusion of the story is not told ; but it is tu be hoped that the shah exercised his prerogative of preventing any cvil results.

Costwme.—The costume ! of the Persians may be shortly described.

as fitted to their active habits. The men invariably wear an un- starched shirt of cotton, sewn with white silk, often, particularly in the south of Persia, elaborately embroidered about the neek. It fastens in front by a flap, having two small buttons or knots at the left shoulder, and seldom comes below the hips. It has no collar, and the sleeves are loose. The lower orders often have it dyed blue ; but the servant and upper classes always prefer a white shirt. Silk shirts are now seldom seenonmen. Among the very religious during the mourning month (“Muharram”) the shirt is at times dyed black. The “zir- jamah,” or trousers, are of cloth among the higher classes, particularly those of the military order, who affect a garment of a tightness approaching that

worn by Europeans. The ordinary “zir-jamah” are of white, blue, or red cotton, very loose, and are exactly similar to the “ pai-jamahs” worn by Europeans in India. They are held up by a thin cord of red or green silk or cotton round the waist, and the labouring classes, when engaged in heavy or dirty work, or when running, generally tuck the end of these garments under the cord, which leaves their legs bare and free to the middle of the thigh. The amplitude of this part of his attire enables the Persian to sit without discomfort on his heels ; chairs are only used by the rich, great, or Europeanized. Over the shirt and ‘‘zir-jamah’’ comes the “arkhdalik,” generally of quilted chintz or print, a closely-fitting garment, collarless, with tight sleeves to the clbow, whenee, to the wrist, are a number of little metal buttons, fastened in winter, but not in summer. Above this is the “kamarchin,” a tunic of coloured calico, cloth, Kashmir or Karman shaw], silk, satin, or velvet (gold embroidered, or otherwise), according to the time of year and the purse and position of the wearer. This, like the ‘‘arkhalik,” is open in front, and shows the shirt. It sometimes has a small standing collar, and is double-breasted. It has a pocket-hole on either side, giving access to the pockets which are always in the “arkhdalik,” where also is the breast-pocket in which watch, money, jewels, and seals are kept. The length of the “kamarchin” denotes the class of the wearer. The military and official classes and the various servants wear it short, to the knee, while fops and sharpers wear it even shorter. Priests, merchants, villagers, especially about Shiraz, townsmen, shopkeepers, doctors, and lawyers wear it’ very long, often nearly to the heels. Over the “kamarchin” is worn the “kulajah,” or coat. This is, as a rule, cast off in summer, save

on formal occasions, and is often borne by a servant, or carried over

the shoulder by the owner. It is of eloth, shawl, or camel-hair cloth and is lined with silk or cloth, flannel or fur. It has, like the Turkish frockcoat, a very loose sleeve, with many plaits behind. It has lapels, as with us, and is trimmed with gold lace, shawl, or fur, or is worn quite plain. It has a roll collar and false pockets. Besides these garments there are others: the long “jubba,” or cloth cloak, worn by “ mirzas”’ (secretaries), Government employés of high rank, as ministers, farmers of taxes, courtiers, physicians, priests ; the “abba,” or camel-hair cloak of the Arab, worn by tra- vellers, priests, and horsemen ; the “pustin,” or Afghan skin-cloak, used by

travellers and the sick or aged ; the “nimtan,” or commou sheepskin jacket, with short sleeves, used by shopkeepers and the lower class of servants, grooms, &c., in winter; the “ydpanjah,” or woollen Kurdish cloak, a kind of felt, having a shaggy side, of immense thickness, worn generally by shepherds, who use it as greatcoat, bed, and bedding. ‘There is also the felt eoat of the villager, very warm and inexpensive, the cost being from 5 to 15 krans (a kran=10d.). The “kamarband,” or girdle, is also charac- teristic of class. Itis made of muslin, shawl, or cotton cloth among the priests, merchants, bazaar people, the secretary class, and the more aged Government employés. In it are carried, by literati and merchants, the pen-case and a roll of paper ; its voluminous folds are used as pockets; by the bazaar people and villagers, porters and merchants’ servants, a small sheath knife is stuck in it; while by “farrashes,” the carpet-spreader class, a large “khanjar,” or curved dagger, with a heavy ivory handle, is carried. The headgear 1s very distinctive. The turban worn by priests is generally white, consisting of many yards of muslin. When the wearers are “sdiyid ” of the Prophet, a green turban is worn, also a “kamarband” of green muslin, or shawl or cotton cloth. Merchants generally wear a turban of muslin embroidered in colours, or of a yellow pattern on straw-

1 Dr. Wills’s instructive volume again supplies this information.

coloured muslin, or of calico, or shawl. The distinctive mark of the courtier, military, and upper servant class is the belt, generally of black varnished leather with a brass clasp ; princes and courtiers often replace this clasp by a huge round ornament of cut stones, The “kulah,” or hat, is of cloth or sheepskin on a frame of paste- board. The fashions in hats change yearly. The Ispahan mer- ehant and the Armenian at times wear the hat very tall. (The waist of the Persian is generally small, and he is very proud of his fine figure and broad shoulders.)

The hair is generally shaved at the crown, or the entire head js shaved, a ‘‘kakul,” or long thin lock, being sometimes left, often 2 feet long, from the middle of the crown. This is to enable the prophet Muhammad to draw up

the believer into paradise. ‘The lower orders generally have the hair over the temporal bone long, and brought in two long locks turning backwards behind the ear, termed ‘“‘zulf”; the beaux and youths are constantly twisting and combing these. The rest of the head is shaven. Long hair, however, is going out of fashion in Persia, and the more civilized affect the cropped hair worn by Europeans, and even have a part- ing in it. The chin is never shaved, save by “ beauty men,” or ‘‘kashangs,” though often clipped, while the moustache is usually left long. At forty a man generally lets his beard grow its full length, and cherishes it much ; part of a Persian’s religious exercises is the combing of his beard. Socks, knitted principally at Ispahan, are worn ; they are only about 2 inches long in the leg. The rich, however, wear them longer. They are of white cotton in summer and coloured worsted in winter. Villagers only wear socks on state occasions. Shoes are of many patterns. The ‘‘umissi,” or Russian shoe, is the most common ; next, the ‘‘kafsh” or slipper of various kinds. The heel is folded down and remains so. The priests wear a peculiar heavy shoe, with an ivory or wooden lining at the heel. Green shoes of shagreen are common at Ispahan. Blacking is un- known to Persians generally. Boots are only used by horsemen, and are then worn much too large for ease. Those worn by couriers often come up the thigh. With boots are worn ‘‘shalwars,” or baggy riding breeches, very loose, and tied by a string at the ankle ; a sort of kilt is worn by couriers. Pocket-handkerchiefs are seldom used, save by the rich or the Tehranis. Most Persians wear a ‘‘shab kulah,” or night hat, a loose baggy cap of shawl or quilted material, often embroidered by the ladies.

Arms are usually carried only by tribesmen. The natives of the south of Persia and servants carry a ‘‘kammah,” or dirk. The soldiery, on or off duty, always carry one of these or their side- arms, sometimes both. They hack but never thrust with them. On the road the carrying of weapons is necessary.

The costume of the women has undergone considerable change in the last century. It is now, when carried to the extreme of fashion, highly indecent and must be very uncomfortable. The garment doing duty as a chemise is called a ‘‘pirdhan”; it is, with the lower orders, of white or blue calico, and comes down to the middle of the thigh, leaving the legnude. Among the upper classes it is frequently of silk. At Shiraz it is often of fine cotton, and

elaborately ornamented with black embroidery. With the rich it is often of gauze, and much embroidered with gold thread, pearls, &c. The head is usually covered with a "'char-kadd," or large square of embroidered silk or cotton, folded so as to display the corners, and fastened under the chin by a brooch. It is often of eonsider- able value, being of Kashmir shawl, embroidered gauze, &e. A "'jika," a jewelled feather-like ornament, is often worn at the side of the head, while the front hair, cut to a level with the mouth, is brought up in love-locks on either cheek. Beneath the ''char- kadd " is generally a small kerchief of dark material, only the edge of which is visible. The ends of the ''char-kadd" cover the shoulders, but the gauze ''pirahan" is quite transparent. A pro- fusion of jewellery is worn of the most solid description, none hollow; silver is worn only by the very poor, coral only by negresses. Neck- laces and bracelets are much affected, and chains with seent-caskets attached, while the arms are covered with clanking glass bangles ealled "'alangu," some twenty even of these being on one arm. Jewelled '' bazibands," containing talismans, are often worn on the upper arm, while among the lower orders and south Persian or Arab women nose-rings are not uncommon, and bangles or anklets of beads.

The face on important occasions is usually much painted, save by young ladies in the heyday of beauty. The colour is very freely applied, the eheeks being as much riddled as a clown's, and the neck smeared with white, while the eyelashes are marked round with ''kuhl." This is supposed to be beneficial to the eyes, and almost every woman uses it. The eyebrows are widened and painted till they appear to meet, while sham moles or stars are painted on the ehin and cheek ; even spangles arestuck at times on the chin and forehead. Tattooing is common among the poor and in villages, and is seen among the upper classes. The hair, though generally hidden by the "char-kadd," is at times exposed aud plaited into innumerable little tails of great length, while a coquettish little skull-cap of embroidery, or shawl, or coloured silk is worn. False hair iscommon. The Persian ladies' hair is very luxuriant, and never cut ; it is nearly always dyed red with henna, or with indigo

Geogra- phical sum-

mary.

to a blue-black tinge ; it is naturally a glossy black. Fair hair is not esteemed. Blue eyes are not uncommon, but brown ones arc the rule. A full-moon face is much admired, and a dark com- plexion termed ‘ namak ”’ (salt) is the highest native idea of beauty. Most Persian women are small, with tiny feet and hands. The figure is always lost after maternity, and no support of any kind is worn.

A very short jacket, of gay colour, quite open in front, having tight slecves with many metal buttons, is usually worn in summer, and a lined outer coat in cold weather. Jn winter a pair of very short white cotton socks are used, and tiny shppers with a high heel; in summer in the house ladies go often barefoot. The rest of the costume is composed of the “tumbun” or “shalwar,” short skirts of great width, held by a running string,—the outer one being usually of silk, velvet, or Kashmir shawl, often trimmed with gold lace, or, among the poor, of loud-patterned chintz or print. Beneath are innumerable other garments of the same shape, varying in tex- ture from silk and satin to print. The whole is very short, among the women of fashion extending only to the thigh. In winter an over-mantle like the “kulajah,” or coat of the man, with short siceves, lined and trimmed with furs, is worn. Leg-coverings are now being introduced. In ancient days the Persian ladies always wore them, as may be seen by the pictures in the South Kensington Muscum. Then the two embroidered legs, now so fashionable as Persian embroideries (“nakoh”’), occupied a girl from childhood to marriage in making; they are all sewing in elaborate patterns of great beauty, worked on muslin iu silk. The outdoor costume of the Persian women is quite another thing. Enveloped in a huge blue sheet, with a yard of linen asa veil perforated for two inches square with minute holes, the feet thrust into two huge bags of coloured stuff, a wife is perfectly unrecognizable, cven by her hus- baud, when out of doors. The dress of all is the same ; and, save in quality or costliness, the effect is similar.

As for the children, they are always when infants swaddled ; when they can walk they are dressed as httle men and women, and with the dress they generally ape the manners. It is a strange custom with the Persian ladies to dress little girls as boys, and little boys as girls, till they reach the age of

seven or eight years ; this is often done for fun, or on account of some vow, —oftencr, to avert the evil eye.

A summary of personal impressions of Persia may serve to convey a tolerably correct idea of the country, without the necessity of serious study or the aid of science and statistics. The reader is asked to suppose a tableland dropping to the Caspian Sea for nearly one-third of its northern frontier, and to the Persian Gulf for its southern limit. The lowlands, naturally, are the coast-tracts. In the north these are covered with forest, and the climate there is damp, feverish, relaxing ; in the south they are dry and barren, and the winds are hot and violent, yet a relief to the scorching summer atmosphere. In the central highlands (that is, Persia generally) there are few rivers, and the country is either composed of parallel mountain-ranges and broad intervening plains, or of irregular moun- tain-masses with fertile valleys, basins, and ravines. One plain on the last is of exceptionally large extent, and is called the Salt Desert of Khur4san. The theory that this was once a sea is supported by the circumstance that at one of its extreme edges is the village of Yunsi, so called because the prophet Jonah (Yunas) is locally believed to have been cast up there by the whale. For irrigation the plains and valleys depend on the mountains, and at the base of these are “kandts,” or underground canals, with watercourses on the surface. Yet where rain and snow fail during the year there is scarcity of water, and where both are wanting there is always distress and sometimes famine. The valleys and ravines are more fertile than the plains, affording often bright, picturesque, and grateful prospects, while the latter are for the most part barren and sandy wastes, scored or streaked, as it were, rather than orna-mented with patches of green oases. Forests are rare and, except in Gilan, not dense; numerous gardens are com- monly found in the neighbourhood of large towns, not cared for as in Europe, yet pleasant in their wildness ; and there are many beautiful trees usually also near the centres of population. Persian cities are not like cities in Europe. The passing stranger sees no street or house in any of them at all comparable to a respectable street or building, as

‘writings of Timur.

England, France, or Germany rate structural respectability. Blank mud-walls and narrow ill-paved thoroughfares are the rule ; the windowed or terraced front of a Persian house is for the inner court or inner precincts of the abode, and not for the world without. Some mosques are handsome, some caravansaras solid, some bazaars highly creditable to the designer and builder; but everything is irregular, nothing is permanent, and architectural ruin blends with architect- ural revival in the midst of dirt, discomfort, and a total disregard of municipal method. Even Constantinople and Cairo cannot bear the ordeal of close inspection. Beautiful and attractive as they may be from without—and the first – has a charm beyond description, while the second is always interesting in spite of her barbarous boulevard—they are palpably deficient in completeness within ; and yet Tehran, Baghdad, Ispahan, Tabriz, Mashhad, Shiraz are far behind them in civilized construction and order. Sources.—Indcpendently of original sources, information has been obtained from official and parliamentary records, to which access' was kindly facilitated under authority ; from Lastern Persia, 2 vols. (1876) ; and various books of travel by authors already named. The writer has also to express his thanks to General Schindler, in the service of the shah, to Mirza Hasan 'Ali Khan, attaché to the Russo- Afghan boundary commission ; to Colonel Bateman-Chanipain, R.E., Mr W. T. Blanford, Mr Andrews (of the Indo-European

telegraph), and others, who have more or less favoured him with special information, written or oral.

Section IT.—History.

Oriental history, as told by Oriental historians, is for the majority of readers in Europe a study of little attrac- tion. Its genealogies and oft-repeated names are weari- some ; its stories of battle, murder, and rapine are mono- tonous and cast in one mould; the mind cannot readily impart life to the dry bones of the more prominent dramatis persone by conceiving for them any flesh-and- blood individuality. The court-chronicler of an Eastern potentate writes to order, and in accordance with a pre- cedent which fetters style and expression ; and even the painter of state-portraits strives rather to turn out a con- ventional and model monarch than the likeness of an original human

being. In the palace of Kirich, near Tehran, is a picture of Fath ‘Ali Shah and his sons. There may be a certain waxwork beauty in some of the faces, but they give no more signs of innate character or mental idio- syncrasy than do the kings and knaves of a pack of cards.

The Timurides in these respects were exceptionally fortu- nate. Timur himself, their great progenitor, though not the distinct figure of an English king as delineated by Macaulay, has been handed down to us in some kind of personality in the history called Zafarnéma,! in his Malfizdt or utterances, and in the Tuzikdt or institutes.” There are, moreover, portraits of him in existence which are professed likenesses. Babar, Akbar, and Jahdngir were either their own chroniclers or had comparatively competent men to write for them ; and, to illustrate the period in which they lived, we obtain—in addition to records of events—biography, memoirs, and something also of the current sayings, writings, and doings. But the reigns of these three monarchs rather concern the annals of India than of Persia, whereas Timur has so much to do with the latter that a brief retrospect of the career of that conqueror and his immediate descendants as it affected the countries generally south of the Caspian will be an appropriate opening to the present history.

1 Unfortunately, perhaps, there are two histories bearing this title. In the one, as Sir William Jones explains, “the Tartarian conqueror is represented as a liberal, benevolent, and illustrious prince”; in the other he is ‘‘as deformed as impious, of a low birth and detestable principles.” The authenticity of the Malfizdt is disputed.

2 Both these last terms, however, are indifferently applied to the Tuzuk is the passive participle of tuzmak, ‘to arrange,” hence tuzdkdt, “ arrangement.”

1405-1506.

Timur.

Timur’s success- ors.

The Timurides and Tiérkmans (1405-1499),—Timur died in 1405, when in the seventieth year of his age and about to enter upon a new war,—an invasion of China. Besides exercising sovereignty over Transoxiana and those vast regions more or less absorbed in Asiatic Russia of the 19th century, inclusive of the Caucasus, Astrakhan, and the lower Volga, and overrunning Meso- potamia, Syria, Asia Minor, Afghanistan, and India, he had at this time left his indelible mark upon the chief cities and provinces of Persia. Khurdsan and Mazandaran had submitted to him in 1381, Adarbaijan had shortly after followed their example, and Ispahan was seized in 1387. If the chroniclers are to be trusted, the occupation of this place was accompanied by the slaughter of 70,000 inhabitants, —a number in excess of its whole population as officially estimated in 1868. From Ispahan he passed on to Shir4z, and thence returned in triumph to his own capital of Samarkand. Five years later his cruel hand was stretched out to subdue a formidable resistance in Mazandaran, and later still he was again at Shiraz, having effected the subjugation of Luristan and other provinces in the west. It may be said that from north to south, or from Astrabad to Hormuz, the whole country had been brought within his dominion.

The third son of Timur, Miran Shah, had ruled over part.of Persia in his father's lifetime ; but he was said to be insane, and his incapacity for government had caused the loss of Baghdad and revolt in other provinces. His claim to succession had been put aside by Timur in favour of Pir Muhammad, the son of a deceased son, but Khalil Shah, a son of the discarded prince, entered the lists against the nominee and won the day. The reign of this chief, however, was not of any duration. His lavish waste of time and treasure upon a fascinating mistress named Shadu 'l-Mulk, the "delight of the kingdom," soon brought about his ruin and deposition, and in 1408 he gave way to Shah Rukh, who, with the exception of Miran Shah, was the only surviving son of Timur. In fact the uncle and nephew changed places,—the one quitting his government of Khurdasan to take possession of the Central- Asian throne, the other consenting to become governor of the vacated Persian province and abandon the cares of the empire at Samarkand. In the following year Khalil Shah died ; and the story goes that on his death Shadu '1- Mulk stabbed herself and was buried in the same tomb with her royal lover at Rhé, one of the towns which his grandfather had passed through and partly destroyed.

Shah Rukh, the fourth son of Timur, reigned for thirty- eight years, and appears to have been a brave, generous, and enlightened monarch. He removed his capital from Samarkand to Herat, of which place he rebuilt the citadel, restoring and improving the town. Merv also profited from his attention to its material interests. Sir John Malcolm speaks of the splendour of his court and of his encourage- ment of men of science and learning. He sent an embassy to China; and an English version of the travels to India of one of his emissaries, ‘Abdu r-Razzak, is to be found in the volumes of the Hakluyt Society. As regards his Persian possessions, he had some trouble in the north-west, where the Turkmans of Asia Minor, known as the Kara Koiytn,! or “ Black Sheep,” led by Kara Yusuf? and his sons Iskandar and Jahan Shah, had advanced upon Tabriz, the capital of Adarbaijan, a province in which they had supplanted the settlers of Halaku, called, after him, ‘I]khant. The distance from Herat—supposing that city to represent eT ee, eee

1 They were commonly called Kara Koiytin-li and the “White Sheep” Turkmans Ak Koiyun-lu, the affix “14” signifying possession, t.€., possession of a standard bearing the image of a black or white sheep.

2 According to Erskine, this chief killed Miran Shah, whose dwelling- place was Tabriz.

Pe Rs 1 se

[MODERN

the centre of imperial power —was favourable to intrigue and revolt in these parts. On the death of Shah Rukh in 1446 he was succeeded by his son Ulugh Bey, whose taste for scientific pursuits and active patronage of scientific men are practically demonstrated in the astronomical tables bearing his name, quoted by European writers when determining the latitude of places in Persia. He was, moreover, himself a poet and patron of polite literature, and built a college as well as an observatory at Samarkand, On the other hand, there is no evidence to show that he did much to consolidate his grandfather’s conquests south of the Caspian. Ulugh Bey was put to death by his son ‘Abdu ’l-Latif, who, six months later, was in his turn slain by his own soldiers. Babar—not the illustrious founder of the

Mughal dynasty in India, but an elder member of the same house—next obtained possession of the sovereign power, and established himself in the govern- ment of Khurdsan and the neighbouring countries. He did not, however, achieve any special reputation, and died after a short rule, from habitual indulgence in intemperate habits,—an abuse which he had vainly striven to check by the registry of a solemn vow. After him Abt Sa‘id, grandson of Miran Shah, and once governor of Fars, became a candidate for empire, and was to a great extent successful. This prince allied himself with the Uzbek Tatars, seized upon Bukhara, entered Khurdsan, and waged war upon the Turkman tribe aforesaid, which, since the invasion of Adarbaijan, had, under Jahan Shah, over- run ‘Irak, Fars, and Karman, and pillaged Herat. But he was eventually taken prisoner by Uzun Hasan, and killed in 1468. It is difficult to assign dates to the few events recorded in Persian history for the eighteen years following the death of “Abdu ’1-Latif; and, were it not for the happy intervention of chance European missions, the same diffi- culty would be felt in dealing with the period after the death of Abi Sa‘id up to the accession of Isma‘il Suff in 1499. Nor can the chain of events within the range of Persia proper be connected with certainty for the period specified by the aid of native annals or histories. Sultan Ahmad, eldest son of Abu Sa‘id, reigned in Bukhara; his brother, ‘Umar Shaikh, in Farghana; but the son of the latter, the great Babar, was driven by the Uzbeks to Kabul (Cabul) and India. More to the purpose is it that

Sultan Husain Mirza, great-grandson of ‘Umar Shaikh, Husatr His Mirza. | |

son of Timur, reigned in Herat from 1487 to 1506. siege and capture of the fort of that city are incident- ally told in Babar’s Commentaries, where he is described as an old and experienced soldier. learned men, and as such his reign is remarkable for many brilliant names inscribed as visitors to his court. Among others are those of the historians Mirkhund and Khiun- damir, and the poets Jami and Hatifi. But at no time could the control exercised by this scion of a far-famed stock have extended over central and western Persia. The nearest approach to a sovereignty in those parts on the death of Abi Sa’id is that of Uzun Hasan just mentioned, who achieved his greatness by individual prowess and the force of circumstances. He was the leader of the Ak Koiytin, or “White Sheep” Tiurkmans, and conqueror of

the “Black Sheep,” whose chief, Jahan Shah, he defeated and slew. Between the two tribes there

had long been a deadly feud. Both were composed of Uzun 1 settlers in Asia Minor, the “Black Sheep” having con- Has™.

solidated their power at Van, the “White” at Diarbekir.

Sir John Malcolm states that at the death of Abu Sa‘id, Sultan Husain Mirza “made himself master of the empire,” and, a little later, that “‘Uzun Hasan, after he had made himself master of Persia, turned his arms in the direction of Turkey”; but the reader is left to infer

He was a patron of |

‘ |

HISTORY. |

for himself what was the real “empire” of Husain Mirza, and what the limit of the “ Persia” of Uzun Hasan. The second could not well be included in the first, because the Turkmans were in possession of the greater part of the Persian plateau, as understood in modern geography, while the “sultan” was luxuriating in Herat, to which Khurdsan belonged. It may be assumed as a broad fact that an empire like that acquired by Timur could not long be maintained by his descendants in its integrity, even though separate kingdoms or sovereignties were formed in its more important divisions. The retention of particular provinces, or groups of provinces, must have depended not only on the loyalty but on the capability of particular rulers and their subordinate governors ; and it was manifestly impos- sible for an emperor at Samarkand or Herat to know what revolutions were taking effect at Baghdad, Tabriz, or similarly remote places, mland or on the seaboard, which passed away from the original “empire” through the weakness or treachery of unfit agents, even when these were lineal descendants of its distinguished founder.

The Turkish adjective uzun, .) ajo! “long,” applied to Hasan, the Tirkman monarch of Persia (called also by the Arabs Hasanu ’t-Tawil), is precisely

the qualifying

Persian word i) used in the compound designation of Artaxerxes Longimanus ; and Malcolm quotes the state-

enetian ment of a Venetian envoy in evidence that Uzun Hasan avoys. was ‘“‘a tall thin man, of a very open and engaging counte-

nance.” This reference, and a further notice in Markham’s more recent history, supply the clue to a store of valuable information on the place and period made generally avail- able by the publications of the Hakluyt Society. The narratives of Caterino Zeno, Barbaro, and Contarini, envoys from Venice to the court of Uzun Hasan, are in this respect especially interesting, and throw much light on the personality of one who was a genuine shah of Iran. Zeno was sent in 1471 to incite this warlike ruler against the Ottoman sultan, and succeeded so far in his mission as to bring the two powers into open warfare. That the result was disastrous to the shah is not surprising, but the whole affair seems to hold a comparatively unimportant place in the annals of Turkey.

Uzun Hasan had married Despina (Gr. Aéczovva), daughter of the emperor of Trebizond, Calo Johannes of the house of the Comneni; and Zeno’s wife was niece to this Christian princess. The relationship naturally strengthened the envoy’s position at the court, and he was permitted to visit the queen in the name of the republic which he represented. Barbaro and Contarini met at Ispahan in 1474, and there paid their respects to the shah together. The description of the royal residence—‘“ in the middle of a field, through which a river flowed, in a very delightful locality ”—recalls the palaces in that city, such as the Haft Dast, where strangers of distinction are lodged in the present day. Moreover, the continual and excessive instalments of “ good confections ” brought to satisfy the travellers’ appetites show that the lavish hospitality of the local authorities is a time-honoured institution. Kum and Tauris or Tabriz (then the capital) were also visited by the Italian envoys following in the royal suite ; and the incidental notice of these cities, added to Contarini’s formal statement that “the extensive country of Ussun-cassan [sic] is bounded by the Ottoman empire and by Caramania,” and that Siras (Shir4z) is comprehended in it, proves that at least Adarbaijan, ‘Irdk,

and the main part of the provinces to the south, inclusive of Fars, were within the dominions of the reigning monarch.

There is good reason to suppose that Jahan Shah, the Black Sheep Turkman, before his defeat by Uzun Hasan, had set up the standard of royalty ; and Zeno, at the

outset of his travels, calls him “king of Persia”! in 1450, 1468-1499.

Chardin alludes to him in the same sense 3 but, even ad- mitting the validity of his precarious tenure, the limits of his sovereignty were too confined to warrant more than casual mention of his name in an historical summary. Hasan the Long is a far more prominent figure, and has hardly received justice at the hands of the historian. Indeed, his identity seems to have been lost in the various modes of spelling his name adopted by the older chroniclers, who call him indiscriminately? Alymbeius, Asembeius, Asembec, Assimbeo, or Ussan Cassano. He is said to have earned the character of a wise and valiant monarch, to have reigned eleven years, to have lived to the age of seventy, and, on his death in 1477 or (according to Krusinski and Zeno) 1478, to have been succeeded on the throne of Persia by his son Ya‘kub. This prince, who had slain an elder brother, died by poison, after a reign of seven years. ‘The dose was offered to him by his wife, who had been unfaithful to him and sought to set her paramour on his throne. Krusinski thus tells the story.

“Notwithstanding the assurance she put on at the very moment she was acting the crime, the king her husband fancying he saw an air of confusion in her countenance, had a suspicion of her, and required her to drink first. As she could not get off of it without condemning herself, she swallowed the poison with an affected intrepidity ; which deceived the king, and so encouraged him that after he had drunk of it himself, he commended it to the lips of the prince his son, then with him, who was eight years of age. The poison was so quick, that all three died of it that night in the year 1485.”

Writers differ as to the succession to Ya‘ktb. Zeno’s Anarchy.

account is that a son named Allamur (called also Alamut, Alvante, El-wand, and Alwung Bey) was the next king, who, ‘besides Persia, possessed Diarbekir and part of greater Armenia near the Euphrates.” On the other hand, Kru- sinski states that, Ya‘kub dying childless, his relative Julaver, one of the grandees of the kingdom, seized the throne and held possession of it for three years. Baisingar, it is added, succeeded him in 1488 and reigned till 1490, when a young nobleman named Rustan (Rustam ?) obtained the sovereign power and exercised it for seven years. This account is confirmed by Angiolello, a traveller who followed his countrymen Barbaro and Contarini to Persia; and from the two authorities combined may be gathered the further narration of the murder of Rustam and usurpation of the throne by a certain Ahmad, whose death, under torture, six months afterwards, made way for Alamut, the young son of Hasan. These discrepancies can be reconciled on reference to yet another record bound up with the narratives of the four Italians aforesaid, and of much the same period. In the Zravels of a Alerchant in Persia the story of Ya‘kub’s death is supplemented by the statement that “the great lords, hearing of their king’s decease, had quarrels among themselves, so that for five or six years all Persia was in a state of civil war, first one and then another of the nobles becoming sultan. At last a youth named Alamut, aged fourteen years, was raised. . to the throne, which he held till the succession of Shaikh Ismail.” Who this young man was, is not specified ; but other writers call Alamut and his brother Murad the sons of Ya‘kub, as though the relationship were unquestioned Now little is known, save incidentally, of Julaver or Rustam ; but Baisingar is the name of a nephew of “Umar Shaikh, king of Farghéna (Ferghana) and contemporary of Uzun Hasan. There was no doubt much anarchy and confusion in the interval between the death of Ya‘kub and the restoration, for two years, of the dynasty of the White Sheep. But the tender age of Alamut would, even in civilized countries, have necessitated a regency; and it may be assuined that he was the next legitimate and more

2 Knolles, Purchas, Zeno.

1 See also Ramusio’s preface.

1480-1499. generally recognized sovereign.

Shaikh Sufi.

Shaikh Haidar.

634

Markham, in designating this prince the last of his house, states that he was de- throned by the renowned founder of the Safawi dynasty. This event brings us to one of the most interesting periods of Persian history, any account of which must be defective without a prefatory sketch of Isma‘il Sufi.

The Sifi or Safawt Dynasty (1499-1736).—Shaikh Saifu ’d-Din Izhak!—lineally descended from Musa, the seventh imém—was a resident at Ardabil, south-west of the Caspian, some time during the 14th century. It is said that his reputation for sanctity attracted the attention of Timur, who sought him out in his abode, and was so charmed by the visit that he released, at the holy man’s request, a number of captives of Turkish origin, or, as some affirm, Georgians, taken in the wars with Baiyazid, who had been probably reserved for some more cruel end. The act ensured to the shaikh the constant devotion and gratitude of these men,—a feeling which was loyally maintained by their descendants for the members of his family in success- ive generations. Morier’s description of the mausoleum erected to the memory of Shaikh Sufi in Ardabil enables the reader to form some idea of the extraordinary venera- tion in which he was held. Among the offerings on the tomb,? which was covered with brocades and shawls, bunches of feathers, ostrich eggs, and other ornaments, was a golden ewer set with precious stones, said to have been presented by the Indian emperor Humdaiyun.

His son Sadru ’d-Din and grandson Kwajah ‘Ali (who visited Mecca and died at Jerusalem) retained the high reputation of their pious predecessor. Junaid, a grandson of the last, and not a whit less prominent in the pages of history, married a sister of Uzun Hasan, and by her had a son named Shaikh Haidar, who married his cousin Martha, daughter of Uzun Hasan and Queen Despina. Three sons were the issue of this marriage, Sultan ‘Alf, Ibrahim

Mirza, and the youngest, Isma‘il, the date of whose birth is put down as 1480 for reasons which will appear here- after. So great was the influence of Shaikh Haidar, and so earnestly did he carry out the principles of conduct which had characterized his family for five generations, that his name has become, as it were, inseparable from the dynasty of his son Isma‘fl; and the term “ Haidari” (leonine) is applied by many persons to indicate generally the Safawis of Persia. As to the nature of his teaching, and the peculiar tenets professed, this is hardly the place for their discussion; but it may be broadly stated that the outcome was a division of Muhammadanism vitally momentous to the world of Islam. The Persian mind was peculiarly adapted to receive the form of religion prepared for it by the philosophers of Ardabil.

The doctrines presented were dreamy and mystic ; they rejected the infallibility of human wisdom, and threw suspicion on the order and arrangement of human ortho- doxy. They breathed in harmony with the feelings of a people who, partly in the Athenian spirit and wholly with Athenian perversity, were ever ready “to tell or to hear some new thing.” There was free scope given for the indulgence of that poetical imagination which revels in revolution and chafes at prescriptive bondage. As Malcolm truly and happily remarks, “the natives of Persia are enthusiastically devoted to poetry; the meanest artisan of the principal cities of that kingdom can read or repeat some of the finest passages from their most admired

1 According to Langlés, the annotator of Chardin, his real designa- tion was Abt ’l-Fath Izhdk, the Shaikh Saifu ’‘l-Hakk wu ’d-Din or “pure one of truth and religion.”

; 2 Langlés finds 1334 to be the year of his death. This is impos-

sible if he was contemporary with Timir, who was born in 1336. Malcolm’s opinion, derived from the Zubdatu t-tawdrikh, that the conqueror’s visit was paid to Sadru ’d-Din, is, however, the more credible theory.

writers ; and even the rude and unlettered soldier leaves his tent to listen with rapture to the strain of the minstrel who sings a mystic song of divine love, or recites the tale of a battle of his forefathers." And he adds, "the very essence of Sufi-ism is poetry… the Masnavi. . . the works of the celebrated Jami… the book of moral lessons of the eloquent Sa'di, and the lyric and mystic odes of Hafiz . to them they (the Sufis) continually refer ; and the gravest writers who have defended their doctrine take their proofs from the pages of these and other poets whom they deem to have been inspired by their holy theme." Those authorities who maintain that Ya'kub Shah left no son to succeed him consider valid the claim to the vacant throne of Shaikh Haidar Sufi. At any rate, he could not be otherwise than formidable to a usurper such as Rustam, both from relationship to the deceased monarch and position as one of the most noted of Sufi teachers. Purchas says that Ya'kub himself, "jealous of the multitude of Aidar's disciples and the greatness of his fame, caused him to be secretly murthered" ; but Krusinski attributes the act to Rustam a few years later. Zeno, the anonymous merchant, and Angiolello affirm that the devotee was defeated and killed in battle,—the first making his conqueror to be Alamut, the second a general of Alamut's, and the third an officer sent by Rustam named Sulaiman Bey. Malcolm, following the Zubdatu 't-tawdrikh, relates that Shaikh Haidar was vanquished and slain by the governor of Shirwan. The subsequent statement that his son, Sultan 'Ali, was seized, in company with two younger brothers, by Ya'kub, "one of the descendants of their grandfather Uzun Hasan, who, jealous of the numerous disciples that resorted to Ardabil, confined them to the hill fort of Istakhr in Fars," seems to indicate a second interpretation of the passage just extracted from Purchas, and that there is confusion of persons and incident somewhere. One of the sons here alluded to was Isma'il, whom Malcolm makes to have been only seven years of age when he fled to Gilan in 1492. Zeno states that he was then thirteen, which is much more probable,? and the several data available for reference are in favour of this supposition.

The life of the young Sufi from this period to his assump- Isma't] |

tion of royalty in 1499 was full of stirring adventure ; and lis career as Isma'il I. was a brilliant one for the annals of Persia. According to Zeno, who seems to have carefully recorded the events of the time, he left his

temporary home on an island of Lake Van before he was eighteen, and, passing into Karabagh,* between the Arras and Kur, turned in a south-easterly direction into Gilan. Here he was enabled, through the assistance of a friend of his father, to raise a small force, with which to take pos- session of Baku on the Caspian, and thence to march upon Shumakhi in Shirwan, a town abandoned to him without a struggle. Hearing, however, that Alamut was advancing to meet him, he was compelled to seek new levies from among the Jengian Christians and others. In this he — was quite successful. Finding himself at the head of an army of 16,000 men, he thoroughly routed his opponents, and, having cleared the way before him, marched straight upon Tabriz, which at once surrendered. He was soon after proclaimed shah of Persia (1499), under the designation which marked the family school of thought.

Alamut had taken refuge at Diarbekir ; but his brother Murad, at the head of an army strengthened by Turkish auxiliaries, was still in the field with the object of con- testing the paternal crown. Isma‘{l lost no time in moving against him, and won a new victory on the plains of Tabriz. Murad fled with a small remnant of his soldiers to Diar-

3 So thinks the editor and annotator of the Italian Travels in Persia,

Mr Charles Grey. * Possibly Kara-dagh, as being the more direct road.

bekir, the rallying-point of the White Sheep Turkmans. One authority (Zeno) states that in the following year Isma‘il entered upon a new campaign in Kurdistan and Asia Minor, but that he returned to Tabriz without accom- plishing his object, having been harassed by the tactics of Alau’d-Daulah, a beylarbey, or governor in Armenia and parts of Syria. Another, ignoring these movements, says that he marched against Murdd Khan in ‘Irdk-‘Ajmi

not being in a position to oppose the shah in the field, 1499-1514,

repaired to Merv, where he could obtain sufficient rein- forcements, or whence he could, if hard pushed, retire across the Oxus. Isma‘il quickly followed him there, and enticed him out to battle by the use of taunt and reproach at his remaining within walls. Shaibini was defeated and fled, but was overtaken in his flight, surrounded, and put to the sword, together with numerous relatives and

(Trak-“Adjemi) and Shiraz. This last account is ex- tremely probable, and would show that the young Turkman had wished to make one grand effort to save Ispahan and Shiraz (with Kazvin and the neighbouring country), these

companions (see Moncozs, vol. xvi. p. 749).

The next remarkable event in Isma‘il’s reign is his war War with Sultan Salim I. Its origin may be traced to the with Ottoman emperor’s hatred and persecution of all heretical S#4™ 1

being, after the capital Tabriz, the most important cities of Uzun Hasan’s Persia. His men, however, apparently dismayed at the growing prestige of the enemy, did not support him, and he was defeated and put to flight. One writer says that he was slain in battle; and, since he appears to have made no further attempt on Persia, the statement is perhaps correct. There is similar evidence of the death of Alamut, who, it is alleged, was treacher- ously handed over to be killed by the shah’s own hands.

Isma‘il returned again to Tabriz (1501) “and caused _ great rejoicings to be made on account of his victory.” ‘In 1503 he had added to his conquests Baghdad, Mosul, and Jazirah on the Tigris. The next year he was called to the province of Gilan to chastise a refractory ruler. Having accomplished his end, he came back to his capital and remained there in comparative quiet till 1507. Malcolm’s dates are somewhat at variance with the above, for he infers that Baghdad was subdued in that particular year; but the facts remain. All writers seem to agree that in 1508 the king’s attention was drawn to an inva- sion of Khurdsan by Shaibdni, or Shahi Beg, the Uzbek,a descendant of Jenghiz and the most formidable opponent of Babar, from

whom he had, Seven years before, wrested the city of Samarkand, and whom he had driven from Turkestan to Kabul. Since these exploits he had obtained great successes in Tashkand, Farghana, Hissar, Kunduz, and Khwarizm (Kharezm), and, at the time referred to, had left Samarkand intent upon mischief south and west of the Oxus, had passed the Murghab, and had reached Sarakhs. Isma‘il encamped on this occasion at Ispahan, and there concentrated the bulk of his army,—strengthening his northern (and probably north-eastern) frontier with large bodies of cavalry. Zeno’s statement that the royal troops were kept for the whole year in a state of suspense and preparation for encountering their powerful adversaries derives a colour of truth from the circumstance that, before the Uzbek army of invasion could have quite overrun the Khurdsan of Husain Mirza, it found occupation to the eastward in Herat and Kandahar ; and it must have been represented, even in Mashhad, Nishapur, Astrabad, and Turshiz—all named as the scenes of conflict—rather by lieutenants than by the leader in person. Such diversion from any direct invasion of his own territories may have caused the shah to maintain an attitude of simple watch- fulness. In 1510, when Shaibani had invaded Khurasan the second time, and in person, and had entered the fine province of Mazandaran—then in the possession of an inde- pendent chief—it was discovered that his troops, in the wantonness of success, had ravaged the Persian province of Karman. Shah Isma‘il had asked for redress, referring to the land encroached on as “hereditary” ; and Shaibani had replied that he did not understand on what was founded the claim “to inherit.” Mutual taunt and recrimination followed ; and eventually the Persian troops Were put in movement, and the Uzbeks, having been divided into small detachments scattered over the country, fell back and retreated to Herat. Their leader, however, i 1 Angiolello.

Moslems in his dominions, and the shah’s anger at the fanaticism which had urged him to the slaughter of 40,000 Turks suspected to have thrown off the orthodox Sunni doctrines. The declaration of war sent by Salim in the form of a letter is one of the most singular of documents, and breathes the true spirit of the age: ‘I, the glorious Sultan . . . address myself to thee, Amir Isma‘il, chief of the Persian troops, who art like in tyranny to Zohak and Afrasiab, and art destined to perish like the last Dara.” Words such as these might well provoke a less haughty potentate than the Sufi; and, when to them was added the accusation of iniquity, perjury, blasphemy, impiety,

heresy, and schism, it is not surprising that the response was a ready resort to arms? As a preliminary, however, to this decisive step Isma‘il replied to the sultan in a calm and dignified letter, denying the existence of a casus belli, expressing willingness to resume peaceful relations, and regretting the mode of address it had been thought fit to adopt towards himself; but he nullified the conciliatory passages by the ironical conclusion that the sultan’s com- munication must have emanated from the brain of a secre- tary who had taken an overdose of narcotics,—a remark the significance of which was aggravated by the accom- paniment of a box of opium, and the popular belief that Salim was addicted to the use of the drug.

The sultan’s army advanced into Adarbaijan and western Persia through Tokat and Arzinjan. Isma‘il had at this time the greater number of his soldiers employed in his newly-conquered province of Khurdsan, and was driven to raise new levies in Kurdistan to obtain a sufficient force to resist the invasion. It is asserted by some that his frontier then extended westward to Sivas, a city situated in a large high plain watered by the Kizil Irmak, and that thence to Khoi, 90 miles west of Tabriz, he followed the approved and often successful tactics of ravaging and retreating, so as to deprive his advancing enemy of sup- plies. There is good evidence to show that the Turkish janissaries were within an ace of open revolt, and that but for extraordinary firmness in dealing with them they would have abandoned their leader in his intended march upon Tabriz. In fine, at or near Khoi, the frontier-town of Adarbaijan, the battle (1514) was fought between the two rival monarchs, ending in the defeat of the Persians and the triumphant entry of Salim into their capital.

There are stirring accounts of that action and of the gallant deeds performed by Salim and Isma‘tl, both person- ally engaged in it, as well as by their generals.* Others maintain that Isma‘il was not present at all* It is tolerably

2 Creasy’s History of the Ottoman Turks.

3 Knolles, Malcolm, Creasy, Markham, &c.

4 Zeno. Angiolello says that “the Sophi monarch had left for Tauris [Tabriz] in order to assemble more troops.” Krusinski infers much to the same effect, for he notes that. ‘Selim came in person and took Tauris from Ismail, but at

the noise of his approach was obliged to retreat with precipitation.” The battle must thus have been fought and the victory gained when the shah was himself absent. Yet Markham quotes a journal which thus records his feats of prowess : ‘Tt was in vain that the brave Shah, with a blow of his sabre, severed a chain with which the Turkish guns were fastened together to resist the shock of the Persian cavalry.”

1514-1561.

Ismail’s character.

Shah Tahmasp.

certain that the Turks won the day by a better organization of the arms of the military service, superiority of numbers, and more especially the use of artillery. On the side of the Persians the force consisted of little more than cavalry.

Salim remained at Tabriz no more than eight days. Levying a contribution at that city of a large number of its skilled artisans, whom he sent off to Constantinople, he marched thence towards Karabagh with intent to fix his winter quarters in those parts and newly invade Persia in the spring, but the insubordination of his troops rendered necessary his speedy return to Turkey. His expedition, if not very glorious, had not been unproductive of visible fruits. Besides humbling the power of an arrogant enemy, he had conquered and annexed to his dominions the pro- vinces of Diarbekir and Kurdistan.

From 1514 to 1524, although the hostile feeling between the two countries was very strong, there was no serious nor open warfare. Salim’s attention was diverted from Persia to Egypt; Isma‘il took advantage of the sultan’s death in 1519 to overrun and subdue unfortunate Georgia, as Jahan Shah of the “Black Sheep” had done before him; but Sulaiman had not won without cause his attri- bute of “great,” and was too strong a successor to the imperial throne to admit of retaliatory invasion being carried out with impunity at the cost of Turkey.

In 1524 Isma‘il died! at Ardabil when on a pilgrimage to the tomb of his father. ‘The Persians dwell with rapture on his character,” writes Sir John Malcolm, for they deem him ‘not only the founder of a great dynasty, but the person to whom that faith in which they glory owes its establishment as a national religion. He is styled in their histories Shah Shian, or ‘king of the Shiahs,’ an appellation which marks the affection with which his memory is regarded. Though he may not be entitled to their extravagant praises, he certainly was an able and valiant monarch.” And he quotes a note handed down by Purchas from a contemporary European traveller which reports of him thus. ‘ His subjects deemed him a saint, and made use of his name in their prayers. Many dis- dained to wear armour when they fought under Ismail ; and so enthusiastic were his soldiers in their new faith that they used to bare their breasts to their enemies and court death, exclaiming, ‘Shiah! Shiah!’ to mark the holy cause for which they fought.”

The proposition has been already laid down that Oriental celebrities, whether heroes or tyrants, as depicted by native limners, bear commonly so strong a family resemblance one with another that the European reader is unable to discriminate between the ‘Abbdses and Akbars, the Timurs and the Nadirs; and it cannot be pleaded that Isma‘il Shah Suff is an exception to the rule. He is belauded and reviled according to the lights or prejudices of his historian. “ Reputed one of the greatest and most famous kings that ever ruled in the East,” ? he is at the same time charged with acts of the greatest cruelty and most flagrant vice. Purchas, apparently guided by the “Italian mer- chant” and Angiolello, has described him as “of faire countenance, of reasonable stature, thicke and large in the shoulder, shauen al but the mustaches ; left-handed, and stronger than any of his nobles.”

Shah Tahmasp,‘ the eldest of the four sons of Isma‘il,

1 Malcolm says 1528, Krusinski 1525; Angiolello heard of his death at Cairo in August 1524. ‘Krusinski adds that he was forty- five years of age.
2 Krusinski.

3 See chaps. xiv. and xxii. of Travels of a Merchant in Persia, Hak-

luyt reprint, 1873.

- Angiolello calls him “Shiacthemes.” As an instance of the absurd transliterating current in France as in England the word ““Ach-tacon”” may be mentioned. It is explained in Chardin’s text to mean “les hépitaux a Tauris: c’est-a-dire leux ou l’on fait profusion de vivres.” Chardin’s editor remarks, “lua derniére partie de ce mot

SILA [MODERN

succeeded to the throne on the death of his father. The principal occurrences in his reign, placed as nearly as possible in chronological order, were a renewal of war with the Uzbeks, who had again invaded Khurdasan, and the overthrow of their army (1527); the recovery of Baghdad from a Kurdish usurper (1528); the settlement of an internal feud between Kizil-bash tribes (Shamlu and Tukulu), contending for the custody of the royal person, by the slaughter of the more unruly of the disputants (1529); the rescue of Khurdsan from a fresh irruption, and of Herat from a besieging army of Uzbeks (1530); a new invasion of the Ottomans, from which Persia was saved rather by the severity of her climate than by the prowess of her warriors (1533) ; the wresting of Baghdad from Persia by the emperor Sulaiman (1534); the king’s youngest brother’s rebellion and the actual seizure of Herat, necessitating the recovery of that city and a march to Kandahar (1536); the temporary loss of Kandahar in the following year (1537), when the governor ceded it to

‘Prince Kamran, son of Babar; the hospitable reception

accorded to the Indian emperor Humdiytn (1543); the rebellion of the shah’s brother next in age, Ilkhds, who, by his alliance with the sultan, brought on a war with Turkey (1548) ;® and finally a fresh expedition to Georgia, followed by a revengeful incursion which resulted in the enforced bondage of thousands of the inhabitants (1552).

Baiyazid, a son of the Turkish emperor, rebelled, and his army was beaten in 1559 by the imperial troops at Koniah in Asia Minor. He fled to Persia and took refuge with Shah Tahmasp, who pledged himself to give him a permanent asylum. Sulaiman’s demand, however, for extradition or execution was too stern and peremptory for refusal; the pledge was broken, and the prince was delivered up to the messengers sent to take him. Another

account ignores the pledge and makes the surrender of the guest to have been caused by his own bad con- duct. Whatever the motive, the act itself was highly ap- preciated by Sulaiman, and became the means of cement- ing a recently-concluded peace between the two monarchs, which theretofore, perhaps, had been more formal than real. Perhaps the domestic affliction of the emperor and the anarchy which in his later years had spread in his dominions had, however, more to do with the maintenance of tranquillity than any mere personal feeling. It is to be feared that at this time not only was there religious fana- ticism at work to stir up the mutual hatred ever existing between Sunni and Shi‘ah, but the intrigue of European courts was probably directed towards the maintenance of an hostility which deterred the sultan from aggressive operations north and west of Constantinople. “Tis only the Persian stands between us:and ruin” is the reported saying of Busbecq, ambassador at Sulaiman’s court on the part of Ferdinand of Austria; “the Turk would fain be upon us, but he keeps him back.”

In 1561 Anthony Jenkinson arrived in Persia with

est méconnaissable, et je ne puis deviner quel mot Persan signifiant profusion a pu donner naissance a la corruption qu’on voit ici.” In other words, the first syllable “ach” (Anglice ash) was understood in its common acceptance for “food” or “victuals”; but “tacon” was naturally a puzzler. The solution of the whole difficulty is, however,

to be found in the Turco-Persian 1S Kis khastah khénah, pro-

nounced by Turks hasta hona, or more vulgarly asta khon and even to a French ear ash-tacon, a hospital, literally a sick-house. This word is undoubtedly current at Tabriz and throughout northern Persia.

® The other brothers were Ilkhds, Bahram, and S4m Mirza, each having had his particular apanage assigned him.

§ Professor Creasy says that “Suliman led his armies against the Persians in several campaigns (1533, 1534, 1535, 1548, 1553, 1554), during which the Turks often suffered severely through the difficult nature of the countries

traversed, as well as through the bravery and activity of the enemy.” All the years given were in the reign of Tahmasp I.

War with Turkey,

HISTORY. |

a letter from Queen Elizabeth to the shah. He was to treat with his majesty of “Trafique and Commerce for our English Marchants,” 1 but his reception was not encour- aging, and led to no result of importance.

Tahmasp died in 1576, after a reign of about fifty- two years. He must have been some sixty-six years of age, having come to the throne at fourteen. Writers describe him as a robust man, of middle stature, wide- lipped, and of tawny complexion. His long reign was hardly a profitable or glorious one to Persia, especially in respect of the losses to Turkey. He was not wanting in soldierly qualities; but his virtues were rather negative than decided. While one writer acquits him of any re- markable vices, and even calls him prudent and generous, another taxes him with love of ease, avarice, and injustice. If it be true that he abandoned his old capital, Tabriz, for Kazvin because the former was too close to Ardabil, his birthplace, and reminded him too keenly of the mean con- dition of his grandfather, Shaikh Haidar, his morale must have been low indeed.

The deceased shah had a numerous progeny, and on his death his fifth son, Haidar Mirza, proclaimed himself king, supported in his pretensions by the Kizil-bash tribe of Ustujulu. Another tribe, the Afshar, insisted on the succession of the fourth son, Isma‘il. Had it not been that there were two candidates in the field, the contention would have resembled that which arose shortly after Tahmasp’s accession. As it was, the claim to guardian- ship of the royal person was put forward, but each tribe declared for its own particular nominee. Finally Isma‘il, profiting from his brother’s weak character and the in- trigues set on foot against him, obtained his object, and was brought from a prison to receive the crown.

The reign of Isma‘il II. was a short one,—less than two years. He was found dead in the house of a confectioner in Kazvin, having left the world either drunk, drugged, or poisoned. No steps were taken to verify the

circumstances, for the event itself was a cause of general relief and joy. He has been represented as a tyrant of the worst type, but it is only right to observe that his youth and part of his manhood had beenembittered by injustice and ill-treatment. A prisoner in a dreary fort for years, if his accession to power was marked by cruelties such as disgraced the name of Tiberius, he had, like Tiberius, been brutalized by a hard and continuous provocation.

He was succeeded by his eldest brother, Muhammad Mirza, otherwise called Muhammad Khudabanda, whose claim to sovereignty had been originally put aside on the ground of physical infirmity. A few words will dispose of this prince's career as a sovereign of Persia. Historians are divided as to his qualities, though he certainly failed to prove, in any shape, equal to the opportunity opened to him. He had the good sense to trust his state affairs almost wholly to an able minister ; but he was cowardly enough to deliver up that minister into the hands of his enemies. His kingdom was distracted by intestine divi- sions and rebellion, and the foe appeared also from without. On the east his youngest son, 'Abbas, held possession of Khurdsan ; on the west the sultan's troops again entered Adarbaijan and took Tabriz. His eldest son, Hamza Mirza, nobly upheld his fortunes to the utmost of his power, reduced the rebel chieftains, and forced the Turks to make peace and retire ; but he was stabbed to death by an assas- sin, On the news of his death reaching Khurasan, Murshid Kuli Khan, leader of the Usttjulu Kizil-bash, who had made good in fight his claims to the guardianship of "Abbas, at once conducted the young prince from that province to Kazvin, and occupied the royal city. The object was ev1- dent, and in accordance with the popular feeling. "Abbas,

1 Purchas. 2 Krusinski.

PE Rese I &

637

who had been proclaimed king by the nobles at Nishapur 1561-1609, some two or three years before this occurrence, may be said to have now undertaken in earnest the cares of sovereignty. His ill-starred father, at no time more than a nominal ruler, was at Shiraz, apparently deserted by

soldiers and people. Malcolm infers that he died a natural death, but when? or where is not stated. Alluding to him at this period, he writes, '"He was never afterwards mentioned." The stories originated by Olearius that Hamza and a second son, Isma'il, each reigned a few months may refer to attempts on the part of the Kizil-bésh chiefs to assert, for one or the other, a share of sovereign power, but do not seem to merit particular consideration.

Shah 'Abbas, the Great, commenced his long and glorious 'Abb4s reign (1586) by retracing his steps towards Khurasan, which the had been reinvaded by the Uzbeks almost immediately after ae his departure thence with the Kizil-bash chief. They had besieged and taken Herat, killed the governor, plundered the town, and laid waste the surrounding country. "Abbas advanced to Mashhad, the provincial capital and great resort of Persian pilgrims as the burial-place of Imém Riza, but owing to internal troubles he was compelled to return to Kazvin without going farther east. In his absence 'Abdul Munim Khan, the Uzbek commander, attacked the sacred city, obtained possession of it while the sh4h lay helplessly ill at Tehran, and allowed his savage soldiers full licence to kill and plunder. The whole kingdom was perplexed, and 'Abbés had much work to restore confidence and tranquillity. But circumstances rendered impossible his immediate renewal of the Khurdsan warfare. He was summoned to Shirdz to put down re- bellion in Fars; and, that being over, before he could give his individual attention to drive out the Uzbeks, he had to devise the best means of securing himself against Turkish inroads threatening from the west. He had been engaged in a war with Murad III. in Georgia. Peace was con- cluded between the two sovereigns in 1590 ; but the terms were unfavourable to Persia, who lost thereby Tabriz and one or more of the Caspian ports. A somewhat offensive stipulation was included in the treaty to the effect that Persians were not to curse any longer the first three khalits, —a sort of privilege previously enjoyed by Shiahs as part and parcel of their religious faith.

In 1597 'Abbas renewed operations against the Uzbeks, and succeeded in recovering from them Herat and Khurasan. Eastward he extended his dominions to Balkh, and in the south his generals made the conquest of Bahrain (Bahrein), on the Arabian side of the Persian Gulf, and the territory and islands of the Persian seaboard, inclusive of the moun- tainous province

of Lar. He strengthened his position in Khurdsan by planting colonies of Kurdish horsemen on the frontier, or along what is called the “atak” or skirt of the Turkman mountains north of Persia. In 1601 the war with the Ottoman empire, which had been partially renewed prior to the death of Sultan Murad in 1595, with little success on the Turkish side, was now entered upon by “Abbas with more vigour. Taking advantage of the weak- ness of his ancient enemy in the days of the poor volup- tuary Muhammad III, he began rapidly to recover the provinces which Persia had lost in preceding reigns, and continued to reap his advantages in succeeding campaigns under Ahmad I., until under Othman II. a peace was signed restoring to Persia the boundaries which she had obtained under the first Isma‘fl. On the other side Kandahar, which Tahmasp’s lieutenant had yielded to the Great Mughal, was recovered from that potentate in 1609. The following slightly abridged extract from Clements Markham’s history of Persia, relating to dis- tinguished Englishmen of the period, will be an appro-

3 Krusinski says in 1585.

1598-1641.

European

envoys.

Charac- ter aud power of “Abbas.

priate conclusion of the narrative of events as above summarized,

“In 1598 Sir Anthony and Robert Shirley, two English gentle- men, arrived at the Shah’s court at Kazvin with a numerous retinue. They were well received, and after some months Sir Anthony returned to Europe with credentials to several Christian princes. Robert, with five Englishmen, remained at the court of the Shah. He married a Circassian lady named Teresia, and in 1607 was sent by ‘Abbas as his ambassador to James I. of England. After travelling through Europe and remaining a long time at

Madrid, Sir Robert Shirley and his Circassian wife landed in his native country in 1611, and was received by James I. with every respect, as the ambassador of a powerful sovereign. His object was to open a trade between England and Persia, but he did not meet with success, owing to the opposition of the Levant mer- chants. He sailed from Dover with his wife in 1613, and after visiting the court of the Great Mogul, reached Isfahan in 1615. He was soon afterwards sent as ambassador to Spain, where he re- mained until 1622. In 1618, while Shirley was residing at Madrid, the government of Philip III. of Spain seut an embassy to Persia, at the head of which was Don Garcia de Silva y Figueroa, an able and learned diplomatist, who madc good use of his time in collect- ing information, and in writing a detailed account of his mission and of Persia, including a Life of Timur. Garcia de Silva landed at Ormuz, and proceeded thence to Shiraz, where he was most hospitably entertained. The ambassador was forwarded to Kazwin in June, and had an audicnce of the Shah, who received him very graciously. Many conversations afterwards took place between ‘Abbas and the stately Spaniard, touching Spanish victories over the Turks, and other matters of state. But the main object of the embassy, namely, security for Ormuz, which was now, through the absorption of Portugal, a Spanish possession, was not obtained. Garcia de Silva returned home by way of Aleppo, and embarked at Tripoli for France on 12th November 1619, devoutly praying that his friend the Shah might be victorious over the Grand Turk.

‘‘In the meanwhile Shah ‘Abbas was occupied in establishing and regulating the important trade of the Persian Gulf. Lar had previously been completely subdued ; and Fars was ruled by one of the Shah’s most trusty and faithful servants. In 1622 the Shah determined on the expulsion of the Portuguese from the Persian Gulf. They had seized upon the Isle of Ormuz in 1507, under the famous Albuquerque, and in their hands it had attained great prosperity, and become the emporium of all the commerce of the gulf. But they were quite independent of the Shah of Persia, Whose jealousy and resentment they excited. Assisted by the English East India Company, ‘Abbas collected a fleet at Gombroon, and embarked a Persian forec under Imam Kuly Khan. They laid siege to Ormuz, and the Portuguese, having no hope of succour, were forced to surrender. The island is now covered with desolate heaps of ruins. The port of Gombroon, on the mainland, and

sheltered by the islands of Kishm and Ormuz, rose on the fall.of the Portuguese city. It received the name of Bandar ‘Abbds, and both the English and Dutch were allowed to establish factories there.

“In 1623 Sir Robert Shirley again arrived in England on an embassy from the Shah ; and in 1627 sailed for Persia, in company with Sir Dormer Cotton, who was sent as envoy from Charles I. of England to the Shah of Persia. They landed at Gombroon in 1628, and Sir Dormer obtained a very gracious reception from ‘Abbas, at Kazvin, where he soon afterwards dicd. Sir Robert Shirley had now grown old in the service of Persia. On his return he was slighted by the Shah and his favourite, Muhammad ‘Aly Beg, and he died at Kazvin in July 1628. Of all the brave and gallant adven- turers of the glorious age of Elizabcth, Sir Robert Shirley was by far the greatest traveller, with the exception, perhaps, of Anthony Jenkinson.”

At the age of seventy, after a reign of forty-two years, ‘Abbas died at his favourite palace of Farahabad, on the coast of Mazandaran, on the night of the 27th January 1628. Perhaps the most distinguished of all Persian kings, his fame was not merely local but world-wide. Ispahan was his capital, and he did much: for its embellishment and enlargement. At his court were ambassadors from England, Russia, Spain, Portugal, Holland, and India. To his Christian subjects he was a kind and tolerant ruler, His conquests have been already mentioned ; but there are few sovereigns of an age so closely following the medizval who have done such real good to their country by material improvement and development of resources. The establish- ment of internal tranquillity, the expulsion of interlopers and marauders like Turks and Uzbeks, the introduction of salutary laws, and the promotion of public works of utility—

these alone would render remarkable his two-score years of enlightened government. Even in the last quarter of the 19th century the gratified traveller admires the magni- ficent caravansards which afford him rest and shelter, and the solid bridges which facilitate his “ chapar” (posting), and of which, if he ask particulars, he invariably hears that they were constructed

by Shah ‘Abbds.1_ With a fine face, ‘‘of which the most remarkable features were a high nose and a keen and piercing eye,”? he is said to have been below the middle height, robust, active, a sportsman, and capable of much endurance. It is, however, to be regretted that this monarch’s memory is tarnished by more than one dark deed. The murder of his eldest son, Sufi Mirza, and the cruel treatment of the two younger brothers, were stains which could not be obliterated from the page of history by an after-repentance. All that can be now said or done in the matter is to repeat the testimony of historians that his grief for the loss of Sufi Mirza was profound, and that, on his death-bed, he nominated that prince’s son (his own grandson) his successor. Krusinski adds that, on being told at that time by his confidential officers of a prophecy which some astrologers had made to the effect that the new king would reign but three months at most, he replied, ‘Let him reign as long as he can, though it be but three days. Ishall be glad of the assurance that one day, at least, he will have that crown upon his head which was due to the prince, his father.”

Sam Mirza was seventeen years of age when the nobles, Shéh in fulfilment of the charge committed to them, took him Sti.

from the “haram ” and proclaimed him king under the title of Shah Sufi. He reigned fourteen years, and his reign was a succession of barbarities, which can only be attributed to an evil disposition acted upon by an education not only wanting the ingenux artes but void of all civilizing elements and influences. Taught to read and write, his diversions were to shoot with the bow and ride upon an ass. There was a rumour, moreover, that his father, to stunt the possible growth of wit, ordered him a daily supply of opium. When left to his own devices, he became a drunkard and a murderer, and is accused of the death of his mother, sister, and favourite queen, Among many other sufferers Imam Kulf Khan, conqueror of Lar and Ormuz, the son of one of ‘Abbas’s most famous generals, founder of a college at Shiraz, and otherwise a public benefactor, fell a victim to his savage cruelty. During his reign the Uzbeks were driven back from Khurdsan, and a rebellion was suppressed. in Gilan; but Kandahar was again handed over to the Mughals of Dehli (Delhi), and Baghdad retaken from Persia by Sultan Murdd,—both serious national losses, Tavernier, without charging the shah with injustice to Christians, mentions the circumstance that “the first and

only European ever publicly executed in Persia was in his reign.” He was a watchmaker named Rodolph Stadler, who had slain a Persian on suspicion of intrigue with his wife. Offered his life if he became a Moslem, he resolutely declined the proposal, and was decapitated. His tomb is to be recognized at Ispahan bythe words “Cy git Rodolphe” on a long wide slab. Shah Suff{ died (1641) at Kashan and was buried at Kum.

His son, ‘Abbas II., who succeeded him, appears to‘Abbis

have possessed some good qualities, and to have been I actuated by liberal sentiments; but his accession to the throne in extreme youth, and the restraint put upon him by his advisers, were fatal to healthy development, and on arriving at an age which should have been that

1 It would be unfair, however, to forget that there are, in parts of Persia, especially Karman, some fine caravansar4s whose construction is due to the munificence of governors or private individuals, ‘Abbas seems certainly to have set the example, and to have furnished the best specimens, 2 Malcolm.

julai- nan.

HISTORY. |

of discretion he became wilfully indiscreet. Beyond the credit of regaining Kandahar, an operation which he is said to have directed in person when barely sixteen, there is not much to mark the period of his life to the outer world. As to foreign relations, he received em- bassies from Europe and a deputation from the French East India Company ; he sought to conciliate the Uzbeks by treating their refugee chiefs with unusual honour and sumptuous hospitality; he kept on good terms with Turkey ; he forgave the hostility of a Georgian prince when brought to him a captive; and he was tolerant to all re- ligions,—always regarding Christians with especial favour. But he was a drunkard and a debauchee, and chroniclers are divided in opinion as to whether he died from the effects of drink or licentious living. That he changed the system of blinding his relatives from passing a hot metal over the open eye to an extraction of the whole pupil is indicative of gross brutality. ‘Abbas II. died (1668) at the age of thirty-eight, after a

reign of twenty-seven years, and was buried at Kum in the same mosque as his father.

‘Abbas was succeeded by his son, Shah Sufi IT., crowned a second time under the name of Shah Sulaiman.

Sir John Malcolm remarks that from the middle of the reign of “Abbas IT. till the elevation of Nadir Shah, or for about eighty years, there are but few Persian histories which give particular or authentic accounts of current events ; and he attributes this circumstance to the absence for nearly a century of any one political event of magni- tude. “And yet,” he writes—

“this extraordinary calm was productive of no advantage to Persia. The princes, nobles, and high officers of that kingdom, were, it is true, exempt from the dangers of foreign or internal war; but their property and their lives were the sport of a succession of weak, cruel, and debauched monarchs. The lower orders were exposed to fewer evils than the higher, but they became every day more unwarlike ; and what they gained by that tranquillity which the state enjoyed, lost almost all its value when they ceased to be able to defend it. This period was distinguished by no glorious achievements. No characters arose on which the historian could dwell with delight. The nation may be said to have existed upon the reputation which it had before acquired till all it possessed was gone, and till it became, from the slow but certain progress of a gradual and vicious decay, incapable of one effort to avert that dreadful misery and ruin in which it was involved by the invasion of afew Afghan tribes, whose conquest of Persia affixed so indelible

a disgrace upon that country, that we cannot be surprised that its historians have shrunk from the painful and degrading narration.”

Though weak, dissolute, and cruel, Sulaiman is not with- out his panegyrists. Chardin, whose testimony is all the more valuable from the fact that he was contemporary with him, relates many stories characteristic of his temper and habits. The statement that on one occasion he compelled his grand wazir to drink to intoxication, and on another to have his hair cut by a barber after the unorthodox fashion of the day, contrary to the old man’s religious prejudices, belongs to the record of unworthy and disgraceful acts.

He kept up a court at Ispahan which surprised and delighted his foreign visitors, among whom were ambassadors from European states ; and one learned writer, Kaempfer, credits him with wisdom and good policy. Aw reste, during his reign Khurdsan was invaded by the ever-encroaching Uzbeks, the Kapchak Tatars plundered the shores of the Caspian, and the island of Kishm was taken by the Dutch ; but the kingdom suffered otherwise no material loss. He died in 1694, in the forty-ninth year of his age and twenty-sixth of his reign.

About a year before his death he is described by Sanson,' & missionary from the French king Louis XIV., as tall, strong, and active, "a fine prince, —a little too effeminate for a monarch," with "a Roman nose very well proportioned to other parts," very large blue eyes, and "a midling mouth, a beard painted black, shav'd round, and

1 Present State of Persia, London, 1695.

well turn'd, even to his ears." but nevertheless majestic"; he had a masculine and agree- able voice, and sweet manner of speaking, and was "so very engaging that when you but bow'd to him he seem'd in some measure to return it by a courteous inclining of his head, and which he always did smiling." The same writer greatly praises him for his kindness to Christian missionaries.

Krusinski's menioir is full of particulars regarding Shah Husain.

Husain, the successor of Sulaiman. He had an elder and a younger brother, sons of the same mother, but the eldest had been put to death by his father's orders, and the youngest secreted by maternal precaution lest a similar fate should overtake him. There was, however, a second candidate for power in the person of a half-brother, 'Abbas. The latter prince was the worthier of the throne, but the other better suited the policy of the eunuchs and those noblemen who had the right of election. Indeed Sulaiman himself is reported to have told the grandees around him, in his last days, that "'if they

were for a martial king that would always keep his foot in the stirrup they ought to choose Mirza ‘Abbas, but that if they wished for a peace- able reign and a pacific king they ought to fix their eyes upon Husain.” But he himself made no definite choice.

Husain was selected, as might have been anticipated. On his accession (1694) he displayed his attachment to religious observances by prohibiting the use of wine,— causing all wine-vessels to be brought out of the royal cellars and destroyed, and forbidding the Armenians to sell any more of their stock in Ispahan. The shah’s grand- mother, by feigning herself sick and dependent upon wine only for cure, obtained reversal of the edict; and the process by which the venerable lady made her son, in pure regard to herself, drink the first glass with her (and there- by become a confirmed tippler) is woven into a story good enough to attract a writer of vaudevilles. or the follow- ing account of Shéh Husain and his successors to the accession of Nadir Shah, Markham’s abstract history has been mainly utilized.

The new king soon fell under the influence of mullas, and was led so far to forget his own origin as to persecute the Sufis. Though good-hearted, he was weak and licentious; and once out of the hands of the fanatical party he became ensnared by women and entangled in harem: intrigues. For twenty years a profound peace prevailed throughout the empire, but it was the precursor of a terrible storm destined to destroy the Safawi dynasty and scatter calamity broadcast over Persia. In the mountainous districts of Kandahar and Kabul the hardy tribes of Afghans had for centuries led a wild and almost independent life. They were divided into two great branches—the Ghilzdis of Ghazni and Kabul and the Saduzais of Kandahar and Herat. More than one fanciful explana- tion is given of the etymology of the first name ; the most probable one is perhaps that which connects them with a Turki tribe of Khalji or Khilagi, a word not impossibly derived from the Turkish kilij, “a sword,” the affix “chi” or “ji” always denoting posses- sion. ‘The second take their name from Sadu, their leader in the time of Shah ‘Abbas. In 1702 a newly-appointed governor, one Shah Nawdz, called Gurji Khan from having been “wali” or ruler of Georgia, arrived at Kandahar with a tolerably large force. He was a clever and energetic man, and had been instructed to take severe measures with the

Afghans, some of whom were suspected of intriguing to restore the city to the Dehli emperor. At this time Kandahar had been for sixty years wninterruptedly in the shah's possession. The governor appears to have given great offence b the harshness of his proceedings, and a Ghilzai chief named Mir Wa'iz, who had complained of his tyranny, was sent a prisoner to Ispahan. This person had much ability and no little cunning. He was permitted to go on a pilgrimage to Mecca, and on his re- turn in 1708 he so gained upon the confidence of the Persian court that he was allowed to go back to his country. At Kandahar he planned a conspiracy against the Government, slew Gurji Khan and his retinue, seized the city, defeated two Persian armies sent against him, and died a natural death in 1715. His brother, Mir 'Abdallah, succeeded him in the government of the Afghans; but after a few months, Mahmud, a son of Mir Wa'iz, a very young man, murdered his uncle and assumed the title of a sovereign prince.

In the meanwhile dark clouds were rising all round the horizon

His air was "affable, 1641-1715.

1715-1736.

Afghan invasion.

" by twenty-four field-pieces.

Mah- mud's usurpa- tion.

640

ready to overwhelm the doomed Safawi dynasty. The Saduzai tribe revolted at Herat, and declared itself independent in 1717 ; the Kurds overran the country round Hamadan ; the Uzbeks deso- lated Khnrasan ; and the Arabs of Maskat seized the island of Al- Bahrain and threatened Bandar-'Abbdés. Thus surrounded by dangers on all sides the wretched shah was bewildered. He made one vain attempt to regain his possessions in the Persian Gulf; but the Portuguese fleet which had promised to transport his troops to Al-Bahrain was defeated by the imam of Maskat and forced to retreat to Goa. :

The court of Ispahan had no sooner received tidings of this disaster than Mahmud, with a large army of Afghans, invaded Persia in the year 1721, seized Karman, and in the following year advanced to within four days' march of the city of Ispahan. The shah offered him a sum of money to return to Kandahar, but the Afghan answered by advancing to a plaee called Gulnabad, within 9 miles of the capital. The effeminate and luxurious courtiers were taken completely by surprise ; no preparation had been made, and the capital was unprovided with either provisions or ammunition. The ill-disciplined Persian army, hastily collected, advanced to attack the rebels. Its centre was led by Shaikh 'Ali Khan, covered The wali of Arabia commanded the right, and the 'itimddu' d-daulah, or prime minister, the left wing. The whole force amounted to 50,000 men, while the Afghans could not count half that number.

On 8th Mareh 1722 the richly-dressed hosts of Persia appeared before the little band of Afghans, who were scorched and disfigured by their long inarches. The wali of Arabia commenced the battle by attacking the left wing of the Afghans with great fury, routing it, and plundering their camp. The prime minister immediately afterwards attacked the enemy's right wing, but was routed, and the Afghans, taking advantage of the confusion, captured the Persian guns and turned them on the Persian centre, who fled in confusion without striking a blow. The wali of Arabia escaped into Ispahan, and Mahmud the Afghan gained a complete victory. Fifteen thousand Persians remained dead on the field.

Turkey and Russia were not slow to take advantage of the cala- mities of Persia. The Turks seized on Tiflis, Tabriz, and Hamadan, while Peter the Great, whose aid had been sought by the friendless Tahmasp, fitted outa fleet on the Caspian.? The Russians occupied Shirwan, and the province of Gilan on the south-west corner of the Caspian® ; and Peter made a treaty with Tahmasp II. in July 1722, by which he agreed to drive the Afghans out of Persia on condition that Darband (Derbend), Baki, Gilan, Mazandaran, and Astrabad were ceded to Russia in perpetuity. These were all the richest and most important northern provinces of Persia.

Meanwhile the cruel invader was deluging Ispahan with the blood of its citizens. Dreading rebellion, in 1723 he invited three hundred of the

principal Persian nobility to a banquet and massacred them. To prevent their children rising up in vengeance they were all murdered also. Then he proceeded to slaughter vast numbers of the citizens of Ispahan, until the place was nearly depopulated. Not content with this, in February 1725 he assem- bled all the captives of the royal family, except the shah, in the courtyard of the palace, and caused them all to be murdered, com- mmencing the massaere with his own hand. The wretched Husain, a aS Sere i ee

1 We have an aceount of the Afghan invasion and sack of Ispahan from an eye-witness, Father Krusinski, proeurator of the Jesuits at that place, whose interesting work was translated into English in the last century.

_” In 1721 Sultan Husain sent an embassy to the Russians, seeking aid against the Afghans. In May 1722 a flotilla descended the Volga commanded by Czar Peter, and on 19th July the Russian flag first waved over the Caspian. Glan was oeeupied by 6000 men under General Matuschkin.

e The Russians remained in Gflan until 1734, when they were obliged to evaenate it, owing to the unhealthiness of the climate.

Pi Res ee

[MODERN

frantic with grief, rushed to this scene of horror, and was himself wounded in endeavouring vainly to save his infant son, only five years of age. All the males of the royal family, exeept Husain himself, Tahmasp, and two children, are said to have perished. At length the inhuman misereant Mahmud died, at the early age of twenty-seven, on 22d April 1725. With scarcely any neck, he had round shoulders, a broad face with a flat nose, a thin beard, and squinting eyes, which were generally downcast.

Mahmud was sueceeded in his usurpation by his first cousin Ashraf, the son of Mir ‘Abdallah. He was a brave but cruel Afghan. He gave the dethroned shah a handsome allowance, and strove, by a mild policy, to acquire popularity. In 1727, after a short war, he signed a treaty with the Turks,

acknowledging the sultan as chief of the Moslems. But the fortunate star of Tahnidsp II. was now beginning to rise, and the days of Afghan usurpation were numbered. He had collected a small army in Mazandaran, and was supported by Fath ‘Ali Khan, the powerful chief of the Kajar tribe. In 1727 the fugitive shah was joined by Nadir Kil, a robber chief, who was already famous for his undaunted valour, and who was destined to become the mightiest conqueror of the age. He murdered Fath ‘Ali, and, having easily appeased the shah, received the command of the royal army.

Nadir at Damghan, and forced to retreat. The Persian general followed close in his rear, and again eutirely defeated him outside Ispahan in November of the same year. The Afghans fled through the town ; and Ashraf, murdering the poor old shah Husain on his way, hurried with the wreck of his army towards Shiraz. On 16th November the victorious Nadir entered Ispahan, and was soon followed by his master, the young shéh Tahmasp II., who burst into tears when he beheld the ruined and defaced walls of the palace of his ancestors. His mother, who had escaped the numerous massacres by disguising herself asa slave, and performing the most degrading offices, now came forth and threw herself into his arms. Nadir did not give his enemies time to recover from their defeat. He followed them up, and again utterly routed them in January 1730. Ashraf tried to escape to Kandahar almost alone, but was murdered by a party of Baluch robbers; and thus, by the genius of Nadir, his native land was delivered from the terrible Afghan invaders.

The ambition of Nadir, however, was far greater than his loyalty. On the pretext of incapacity he dethroned Tahmasp IT. in 1732, and sent him a prisoner into Khurdsan, where he was murdered some years afterwards by Nadir’s son, while the conqueror was absent on his Indian expedition. For a short time the wily usurper placed Tahmasp’s sou on the throne, a little child, with the title of ‘Abbas ITI., while he contented himself with the office of regent. the year 1736, and Naddir then threw off the mask. claimed shah of Persia by a vast assemblage on the plain of Moghan.

By the fall of the Safawi dynasty Persia lost, as it were, her race of national monarchs, considered not only in respect of origin and birthplace but in essence and in spirit. The Persians have never been governed by more truly

representative kings than Isma‘il, Tahmasp, and ‘Abbas ; and, whatever their faults and failings, they were Persian and peculiar to Persians. Thoroughly to realize this truth we must endeavour for a moment to change our own for the Oriental standpoint, and accept even the murders and excesses committed as an outcome of the age, place, and circumstances, and as natural as are the freaks of unrestrained childhood. Regarded in a sober English spirit, the reign of the great ‘Abbas is rendered mythical by crime. No sovereign could be great in the estimation of civilized Europe who acted as he did on certain occasions. No victory or healthy legislation could compensate for moments of madness, which, under Western orthodoxy, must mara whole career. But something liberal in the philosophy of their progenitors threw an attractiveness over the earlier Safawi kings which was wanting in those who came after them. In course of time the old philo- sophical element disappeared ; and one of Shah Husain’s immediate predecessors not only disavowed all sympathy with Sufism but threatened to crush it where detected. The fact is that, two centuries after Shah Isma‘il’s acces- sion to the throne, the Safawi race of kings was effete ; and it became necessary to make room for a more vigorous if not a more lasting rule. Nadir was the strong man for

In 1729 Ashraf Expul- | beeame alarmed at these formidable preparations in the north, and sion of led an Afghan army into Khurdsan, where he was dcfeated by Afghan:

Poor little ‘Abbas died at a very convenient time, in Fall of } He was pro- Safawis.

d

ersia in

728.

HISTORY. |

the hour and occasion. He has been designated a “robber chief”; but his antecedents, like those of many others who have filled the position, have redeeming points of melodramatic interest. He was driven to this mode of

life by injustice, and raised to consideration above ordi- nary banditti by ability as much as by physical force. It was the repute he had thus obtained which caused Saifu ’d-Din Beg, a general of Shah Tahmasp, and chief of a tribe, to unite his fortunes to Nddir’s, and so enable him to rise on the ladder of his ambition. That Nadir misused his advantages by acts of treachery is not to be denied. Such was, unfortunately, one of the visible roads to success in those barbarous times.

A map attached to Krusinski’s volumes (see Plate VIII.) illustrates the extent of Persian territory in 1728, or one year before Ashraf was finally defeated by Nadir, and some eight years prior to the date on which Nadir was himself proclaimed king. It shows, during the reign of the Safawis, Tiflis, Erivan, Khoi, and Baghdad to have been within the limits of Persia on the west, and in like manner Balkh and Kandahar to have been included within the eastern border. There is, however, also shown, as a result of the Afghan intrusion and the impotency of the later Safawi kings, a long broad strip of country to the west, including Tabriz and Hamadan, marked “conquests of the Turks,” and the whole west shore of the Caspian from Astrakan to Mazandaran marked “conquests of the czar of Muscovy ”; Makran, written Mecran, is designated “a warlike inde- pendent nation.” If further allowance be made for the district held by the Afghan invaders as part of their own country, it will be seen how greatly the extent of Persia proper was reduced, and what a work Nadir had before him to restore the kingdom to its former proportions.

But the former proportions had been partly reverted to, and would doubtless have been in some respects exceeded, both in Afghanistan and the Ottoman dominions and on the shores of the Caspian, by the action of this inde- fatigable general, had not his sovereign master, Tahmasp IT., acting on his own account, been led into a premature treaty with the Turks. Nadir’s anger and indignation had been great at this weak proceeding; indeed, he had made it the ostensible cause of the shah’s deposition. He had addressed letters to all the military chiefs of the country, calling upon them for support; he had sent an envoy to Constantinople insisting upon the sultan’s restora- tion of the Persian provinces still in his possession—that is, Georgia and part of Adarbaijan,—and he had threatened Baghdad with assault. As regent, he had failed twice in taking the city of the khalifs, but

on the second occasion he had defeated and killed its gallant defender, Topal ‘Othman, and he had succeeded in regaining Tiflis, Kars, and Erivan.}

Russia and Turkey, naturally hostile to one another, had taken occasion of the weakness of Persia to forget their mutual quarrels and unite to plunder the tottering kingdom of the Safawi kings. A partition treaty had been signed between these two powers in 1723, by which the ezar was to take Astrabad, Mazandaran, Gilan, part of Shirwan and Daghistan, while the acquisitions of the Porte were to be traced out by a line drawn from the Junction of the Arras and Kur rivers, and passing along by Ardabil, Tabriz, and Hamadan, and thence to Karman- shah. Tahmdsp was to retain the rest of his paternal kingdom on condition of his recognizing the treaty. The Ingenious diplomacy of Russia in this transaction was manifested in the fact that she had already acquired the greater part of the territory allotted to her, while Turkey had to obtain her share by further conquest. But the combination to despoil a feeble neighbour was outwitted

1 Malcolm.

by the energy of a military commander of remarkable 1728-1738.

type.

Nadir Shéh.—Nadir, it has been said, was proclaimed Nadir’s Mirza Mahdi ©orena- relates how this event was brought about by his address to i”

shéh in the plains of Moghan in 1736.

the assembled nobles and officers on the morning of the * Nau-ruz,” or Persian New-Year’s Day, the response to that appeal being the offer of the crown. In the spirit of the third English Richard, he refused to accept the high dignity, but eventually suffered his petitioners, on certain conditions, to “buckle fortune on his back.” The conditions were that the crown should

be hereditary in his family, that the claim of the Safawis was to be held for ever extinct, and that measures should be taken to bring the Shi‘ahs to accept uniformity of worship with the Sunnis. The mulla bashi (or high priest) objecting to the last, NAdir ordered him to be strangled, a command which was carried out on the spot. On the day following, the agreement having been ratified between sovereign and people, he was pro- claimed emperor of Persia. At Kazvin the ceremony of inauguration took place. Having girt on the royal scimitar and put the crown on his head, he took the accustomed oath. The edict expressing the royal will on the religious question is dated in June, but the date of coronation is uncertain. From Kazvin Nadir moved to Ispahan, where he organized an army for a proposed expedition against Kandahar, then in the possession of a brother of Mahmud, the conqueror of Shah Husain. But before setting out for Afghanistan he took measures to secure the internal quiet of Persia, attacking and seizing in his stronghold the chief of the marauding Bakhtidris, whom he put to death, retaining many of his men for service as soldiers. With an army of 80,000 men he marched through Khur- dsan and Sistan to Kandahar, which city he blockaded ineffectually for a year; but it finally capitulated on the loss of the citadel. Balkh fell to Riza Kuli, the king’s son, who, moreover, crossed the Oxus and defeated the Uzbeks in battle. Besides tracing out the lines of Nadirabad, a town since merged in modern Kandahar, Nadir had taken advantage of the time available and of opportunities pre- sented to enlist a large number of men from the Abdali and Gnhilzai tribes. It is said that as many as 16,000 were at his disposal. His rejection of the Shi‘ah tenets as a state religion seems to have propitiated the Sunni Afghans, and it is not to be otherwise wondered at that a man of his war- like habits should have succeeded in attaching many of the rough mountaineers to his person. Such a force, in addi- tion to his own army, rendered him a truly formidable foe, and the prospect which now opened out before him must have fired his heart and the hearts of his warriors witli restless exultation.

He had sent an ambassador into Hindustan requesting Invasion the Mughal emperor to order the surrender of certain of India.

unruly Afghans who had taken refuge within Indian terri- tory, but no satisfactory reply was given, and obstacles were thrown in the way of the

return of the embassy. The Persian monarch, not sorry perliaps to find a plausible pretext for encroachment in a quarter so full of promise to booty-seeking soldiers, pursued some of the fugitives through Ghazni to Kabul, which city was then under the immediate control of Nasr Khan, governor of eastern Afghanistan, for Muhammad Shah of Dehli. This function- ary, alarmed at the near approach of the Persians, fled to Peshawar. Kabul had long been considered not only an integral part but also one of the main gates of the Indian empire ; notwithstanding a stout resistance on the part of its commandant, Shir or Shirzah Khan, the place was stormed and carried (1738) by Nadir, who, after slaugh- tering the greater part of the garrison, took possession of it and moved on to the eastward. Mirza Mahdi relates

1738-1747. that from the Kabul plain he addressed a new remonstrance

North- ern con- quests.

to the Dehli court, but that his envoy was arrested and killed, and his escort compelled to return by the governor of Jalalabad. The same authority notes the occupation of the latter place’ by Persian troops and the march thither from Gandamak. There are some doubts as to the exact route now taken, but it was probably through the Khaibar (Khyber) Pass that he passed into the Peshawar plain, for it was there that he first defeated the imperial forces.

The invasion of India had now fairly commenced, and its successful progress and consummation were mere questions of time. It will not do to cite a triumphal march of an irresistible horde in example of what may still be achieved by an inroad upon modern Hindustan. The prestige of this Eastern Napoleon was immense. It had not only reached but had been very keenly felt at Dehli before the conquering army had arrived. There was no actual religious war; all sectarian distinction had been disavowed ; the contest was between vigorous Muhammadans and effete Muhammadans. Nadir had not, like Cesar, come, and seen, and conquered. His way had been prepared by circumstances, and as he progressed from day to day his army of invaders increased. There must have been larger accessions by voluntary recruits than losses by death or desertion. The victory on the plain

of Karnal, whether accomplished by sheer fighting or the intervention of treachery, was the natural outcome of the previous situation ; it was the shifting of the scene as anticipated and prepared, and the submission of the emperor followed asa matter of course. But the coming and going of Nadir are studies quite as interesting and instructive as the coming and going of Alexander, and belong to compara- tively recent days.

Dehli must have experienced a sense of relief at the de- parture of its conqueror, whose residence there had been rendered painfully memorable by carnage and riot. The marriage of his son to the grand-daughter of Aurangzib and the formal restoration of the crown to the dethroned emperor, both prominent parts of the first pageant, were doubtless politic, and his parting counsels to the wretched Muhammad Shah were, it is probable, good and appro- priate ; but the descendant of Babar could not easily forget how humiliating a chapter in history would remain to be written against him. The return march of Nadir to Per- sia is not recorded with precision. On the 5th May 1739 he left the gardens of Shalimar, north of Dehli, to proceed, by Lahore and Peshawar, through the passes to Kabul. Thence he seems to have returned to Kandahar and, either in person or by his lieutenants, to have recrossed the Indus into Sind. But the subjection of Nur Muhammad, the Kalhora chief then ruling in that province, would hardly have been a sufficient inducement to bring back the great Nadir Kuli so far as “Umarkot; and in May 1740—just one year after his departure from Dehli—he was in Herat displaying the imperial throne and other costly trophies to the gaze of the admiring inhabitants. Sind was cer- tainly included in the cession to him by Muhammad Shah of “all the territories westward of the river Attok,” but only that portion of it, such as Thattah (Tatta), situated on the right bank of the Indus.

From Herat he moved upon Balkh and Bukhara, and at a short distance from the latter city received the sub- mission of Abu ’l-Faiz Khan, the Uzbek ruler, whom he restored to his throne on condition that the Oxus should be the acknowledged boundary between the two empires. The khan of Khwarizm was his next opponent; and, as this chief rejected conciliation, and had given serious cause of offence by repeated depredations in Persian terri- tory, he was made prisoner and doomed, with some of his officers, to execution. Nadir then visited the strong

Em ike ie

[MODERN

fortress of Kelat, a place which now bears his name and to which he was greatly attached as the scene of his boyish exploits, and Mashhad, which he constituted the capital of his empire. Here he spent three months in festivity ; and if extension of dominion be a cause for gratulation he could well justify the demonstration, for he had extended his boundary on the east to the Indus, and to the Oxus on the north.

On the south he was restricted by the Arabian Ocean Wars and Persian Gulf; but the west remained open to his im the |

further progress. He had in the first place to revenge the death of his brother Ibrahim Khan, slain by the Lesghians ; and a campaign against the Turks might follow in due course, The first movement was unsuccessful, and indirectly attended with disastrous consequences. Nadir, when hastening to the support of some Afghan levies who were doing good service, was fired at and wounded by a stray assailant; suspecting his son, Riza Kuli, of complicity, he commanded the unfortunate prince to be seized and deprived of sight. From that time the heroism of the monarch appeared to die out. He became morose, tyrannical, and suspicious. An easy victory over the Turks gave him but little additional glory ; and he readily concluded a peace with the sultan which brought but insignificant gain to Persia.! Another battle won from the Ottoman troops near Diarbekir by Nasr Ullah Mirza, the young prince who had married a princess of Dehli, left matters much the same as before. “It was agreed that prisoners on both sides should be released, that Persian pilgrims going to the holy cities of Mecca and Medina should be protected, and that the whole of the provinces of Irak and Adarbaijan should remain with Persia, except an inconsiderable territory that had be- longed to the Turkish Government in the time of Shah Ismail, the first of the Suffavi kings.’’? .

The last years of Nadir’s life were full of internal trouble. On the part of the sovereign, murders and executions ; on that of his subjects, revolt and conspiracy,—these were the ordinary topics of common interest throughout the country. Such a state of things could not last, and certain proscribed

persons plotted together for the destruction of a sovereign who had now become a half-demented tyrant. He was despatched by Salah Bey, captain of his guards, to whom, with three others, was committed the work of his assassina- tion (1747). He was some sixty years of age, and had reigned eleven years. About the time of setting out on his Indian expedition he was described as a most comely man, upwards of 6 feet high, well-proportioned, of robust make and constitution ; inclined to be fat, but prevented by the fatigue he underwent ; with fine, large black eyes and eye- brows ; of sanguine complexion, made more manly by the influence of sun and weather; a loud, strong voice; a moderate wine-drinker ; fond of simple diet, such as pildos and plain dishes, but often neglectful of meals altogether, and satisfied, if occasion required, with parched peas and water, always to be procured.?

Malcolm winds up a long account of his idiosyncrasies with the following.

“The character of this wonderful man is, perhaps, exhibited in its truest colours in those impressions which the memory of his actions has left upon the minds of his countrymen. They speak of him as a deliverer and a destroyer; but while they expatiate with pride upon his deeds of glory, they dwell with more pity than horror upon the cruel enormities which disgraced the lattcr years of his reign ; and neither his crimes, nor the attempt he made to

abolish their religion, have subdued their gratitude and veneration for the hero, who revived in the breasts of his degraded countrymen

1 Professor Creasy says the war broke out in 17438, but was termi- nated in 1746 by a treaty which made little change in the old arrange- ments fixed under Murad IV.

2 Malcolm. 3 Fraser’s History of Nadir Shah (1742).

eriod of

jnarchy- death of Nadir Shah something like anarchy prevailed for

HISTORY. |

a sense of their former fame, and restored Persia to her independence as a nation.”

During the reign of Nadir an attempt was made to establish a British Caspian trade with Persia. The names of Jonas Hanway and John Elton were honourably con- nected with this undertaking; and the former has left most valuable records of the time and country.

From Nadir Shaéh to the Kajér Dynasty.—After the

thirteen years in the greater part of Persia as it existed under Shah ‘Abbas. No sooner had the crime become known than Ahmad Khan, chief of the Abdali Afghans, marched off rapidly with his men to Kandahar and took possession of that city and a certain amount of treasure. The chief of the Bakhtidris, Rashid, also with treasure, fled to the mountains, from which his people had been drawn prior to the Indian expedition ; and the conspirators who had done the murderous deed invited ‘Ali, a nephew of the deceased monarch, to ascend the vacant throne. By the action of Ahmad Abdali, Afghanistan was at once lost to the Persian crown, for this leader was strong enough to found an independent kingdoni. The Bakhtiari encouraged his brother, ‘Alf Mardan, to compete for the succession to Nadir ; and the nominee of the disaffected party hastened from Sistan to Mashhad to take advantage of his nomina- tion. The prince was welcomed by his subjects; he told them that the murder of his uncle was due to his own instigation, and, in order to conciliate them towards him in a practical manner, remitted the revenues of the current year and all extraordinary taxes for the two years following.

Taking the title of ‘Adil Shah, or the “just” king, he commenced his reign by putting to death the two princes Riza Kuli and Nasr Ullah, as well as all relatives who could, in his estimation, be considered his competitors, with the exception of Shah Rukh, son of Riza Kuli, whom he spared in case a lineal descendant of Nadir should at any time be required by the people. His calculations proved, however, no wiser than beneficent. He had not removed all dangerous members of the royal house, nor had he gauged the temper of the times or people. ‘Adil Shah was soon dethroned by his own brother, Ibrahim, and he in his turn was defeated by the adherents of Shah Rukh, who made their leader king.

This young prince had a better and more legitimate title than that of the grandson of Nadir, whose usurpa- tion was too recent an occurrence to have eradicated and supplanted a comparatively ancient dynasty of national kings. He was also grandson, on the mother's side, of the Safawi Shah Husain. Amiable, generous, and liberal-

ture Ahmad Shah Abdali reappeared in Persian Khurdsan 1747-1759.

from Herat ; he attacked and took possession of Mashhad, slew Mir 'Alam, and, pledging the local chiefs to support the blinded prince in retaining the kingdom of his grand- father, he returned to Afghanistan. But thenceforward this unfortunate young man was a mere shadow of royalty, and his purely local power and prestige had no further influence whatever on Persia as a country.

The land was partitioned among several distinguished Further persons, who had of old been biding their opportunities, confu-

or were born of the occasion. Foremost among these was Muhammad Hasan Khan, hereditary chief of those Kajars who were established in the south-east corner of the Caspian. His father, Fath 'Ali Khan, after sheltering Shah Tahméasp IL. at his home in Astrabad, and long acting as one of his most loyal supporters, had been put to death by Nadir, who had appointed a successor to his chiefdom from the "Yukari" or "upper" Kajars, instead of from his own, the " Ashdgha," or "lower."! Muhammad, with his brother, had fled to the Turkmans, by whose aid he had attempted the recovery of Astrdbad, but had not succeeded in regaining a permanent footing there until Nadir had been removed. On the murder of the tyrant he had raised the standard of independence, successfully resisted Ahmad Shah and his Afghans, who sought to check his progress in the interests of Shah Rukh, and eventually brought under his own sway the valuable pro- vinces of Gilan, Mazandaran, and Astrab4d,2— quite a little kingdom in itself. In the large important province of Adarbaijan, Azad Khan, one of Nadir's generals, had established a separate government; and 'Ali Mardan, brother

of the Bakhtiari chief, took forcible possession of Ispahan, empowering Shah Rukh's governor, Abu '1-Fath Khan, to act for the new master instead of the old.

Had 'Ali Mardan declared himself an independent ruler he would have been by far the most important of the three persons named. But such usurpation at the old Safawi capital would have been too flagrant an act for general assent ; so he put forward Isma'il, a nephew of Shah Husain, as the representative of sovereignty, and himself as one of his two ministers,—the other being Karim Khan, a young chief of the Zend Kurds. Shah Isma'il, it need scarcely be said, was a mere nominal king, and possessed no real authority; but the ministers were strong men in their way, and the Zend especially promised to be useful in his generation, for he had many high and excellent qualities. After a time 'Ali Mardan was assassinated, and Karim Khan became the sole living power at Ispahan. The story of the period is thus told by Watson.

"The three rivals, Karim, Azad, and Muhammad Hasan, pro- Struggle ceeded to settle, by means of the sword, the question as to which of of the them was to be the sole master of Persia. A threc-sided war then three ensued, in the course of which each of the combatants in turn rivals.

minded, and of prepossessing exterior, he proved to be a popular prince. But his friends and supporters had done well to have left him in honourable obscurity ; for he was

neither of an age nor character to rule over a people led hither and thither by turbulent and disaffected chiefs, ever divided by the conflicting interests of personal ambition. No sooner had his claim to succession been admitted than his authority was subverted. Sa'id Muhammad, son of Mirza Daud, a chief mulla at Mashhad, whose mother was the reputed daughter of Sulaiman, collecting a body of men, and assuming the name of his maternal grandfather, declared himself king, and imprisoned and blinded Sh4h Rukh. Yusuf 'Ali, the general command- ing the royal troops, came to the rescue, defeated and slew Sulaiman, and replaced his master on the throne, reserving to himself the protectorship or regency. A new combina- tion of chiefs, of which Ji'afir the Kurd and Mir 'Alam the Arabian are the principal names handed down, brought about the death of Yusuf 'Ali and

the second imprisonment of Shth Rukh. These events were followed by a quarrel terminating in the supremacy of the Arab. At this June-

seemed at one time sure to be the final conqucror. Karim, when he had arranged matters at Ispahan, marched to the borders of Mazandaran, where the governor of that province was ready to meet him. After a closely-contested battle victory remained with Muhammad Hasan ; who, however, was unable to follow up the foe, as he had to return in order to encounter Azad. That leader had invaded Gilan, but, on the news reaching him of the victory which. the governor of Mazandaran had gained, he thought it prudent to retrace his steps to Sultaniyah. Karim reunited his shattered forces at Tehran, and retired to Ispahan to prepare for a second campaign. When he again took the-field it was not to measure himself once more with the Kajar chief, but to put down the pre- tensions of Azad. The wary Afghan, however, shut himself up in Kazvin, a position from which he was enabled to inflict much. in- jury on the army of Karim, while his own troops remained unharmed

1 There were three branches of the Kajar tribe, z.e., the Suldus, Tingkut, and Jalaiyar. The last, according to Watson, became settled in fran and Turan, and seem at first to have given their name to all the tribe. ‘ :

2 Watson. Malcolm says that Gilan was under one of its own chiefs, Hidéiyat Khan.

behind the walls of the town. Karfm retired a second time to Ispahan, and in the following spring advanced again to meet Azad. A pitched battle took place between them, in which the army of Karim was defeated. He retreated to the capital, closely pressed by the foe. Thence he continued his way to Shirdz, but Azad was still upon his traces. He then threw himself upon the

mercy of the Arabs of the Garmsir, or hot country, near the Persian Gulf, to whom the name of the Afghans was hateful, and who rose in a body to turn upon Azad. Karim, by their aid, once more repaired his losses and advanced on Ispahan, while Muhammad Hasan with fifty thousand men was coming from the opposite direction, ready to encounter either the Afghan or the Zend. The Afghan did not await his coming, but retired to his government of Tabriz.

‘The Zend issued from Ispahan, and was a second time defeated in a pitched battle by the Kajar. Karfm took refuge behind the walls of Shiraz, and all the efforts of the enemy to dislodge him were ineffectual. Muhammad Hasan Khan in the following year turned his attention to Adarbaijan. Azad was no longer in a posi- tion to oppose him in the field, and he in turn became master of every place of importance in the province, while Azad had to seek assistance in vain—first from the Pasha of Baghdad, and then from his former enemy, the Tsar of Georgia. Next year the conquering Kajar returned to Shiraz to make an end of the only rival who now stood in his way. On his side were 80,000 men, commanded by a general who had twice defeated the Zend chief on an equal field. Karim was still obliged to take shelter in Shiraz, and to employ artifice in order to supply the place of the force in which he was deficient. Nor were his efforts in this respect unattended with success: seduced by his gold, many of the troops of the Kajar began to desert their banners. In the meantime the neighbour- hood of Shiraz was laid waste, so as to destroy the source from which Muhammad Hasan drew his provisions ; by degrees his army vanished, and he had finally to retreat with rapidity to Ispahan with the few men that remained to him. Finding his position there to be untenable, he retreated still further to the country of his own tribe, while his rival advanced to Ispahan, where he re- ceived the submission of nearly all the chief cities of Persia. The ablest of Karim’s officers, Shaikh ‘Ali, was sent in pursuit of the Kajar chief. The fidelity of the commander to whom that chief- tain had confided the care of the pass leading into Mazandaran, was corrupted ; and, as no further retreat was open to him, he found himself under the necessity of fighting. The combat which ensued resulted in his complete defeat, although he presented to his followers an example of the most determined valour. While attempting to effect his escape he was recognized by the chief of the other branch, of the Kajar tribe, who had

deserted his cause, and who had a blood-feud with him, in pursuance of which he how put him to death.

‘* For nineteen years after this event Karim Khan ruled with the title of wakil, or regent, over the whole of Persia, excepting the province of Khurasin. He made Shiraz the seat of his government, and by means of his brothers put down every attempt which was made to subvert his authority. The rule of the great Zend chief was just and mild, and he is on the whole, considering his educa- tion and the circumstances under which he was placed, one of the most faultless characters to be met with in Persian history.”

Karim Khan died at his capital and favourite resi- dence in 1779 in the twentieth year of his reign, and, it is said, in the eightieth of his age. He built the great bazaar of Shir4z, otherwise embellishing and im- proving the city, had a tomb constructed over the re- mains of Hafiz, and repaired the “tirbat” at the grave of Sa‘di, outside the walls. He encouraged commerce and agriculture, gave much attention to the state of affairs along the shores of the Persian Gulf, and carefully studied the welfare of the Armenian community settled in his dominions. In his time the British factory was removed from Gombroon to Bushahr (Bushire). It would be plea- sant, if space allowed, to repeat the anecdotes creditable to his memory; for it is unusual to find so worthy a figure in Oriental annals, 3

On Karim’s death a new period of anarchy supervened. His brother, Zaki, a cruel and vindictive chief, and withal a pardoned rebel—for, when governor of Ispahan, he had revolted against Karim—assumed the government. At the same time he proclaimed Abu ’l-Fath Khan, second son of the deceased monarch, and his brother Muhammad ‘Alf, Joint-successors to the throne. The seizure of the citadel at Shiraz by the adherents of the former, among whom were the more influential of the Zends, may have induced him to

Pw Ss iA

bo fl

[MODERN

adopt this measure as one of prudent conciliation. But the garrison held out, and, to avoid a protracted siege, he had recourse to treachery. The suspicious nobles were solemnly adjured to trust themselves to his keeping, under promise of forgiveness. They believed his professions, tendered their submission, and were cruelly butchered. Zaki did not long enjoy the fruits of his perfidious dealing. The death of Karim Khan had raised two formidable adver- saries to mar his peace, who could not fail to bring ona dénotement of some kind seriously affecting his interests,

Agha Muhammad, son of Muhammad Hasan, the Kajar chief of Astrabad, a prisoner at large in Shirdz, was in the environs of that city awaiting intelligence of the old king's decease, and, hearing it, instantly escaped to Mazandaran, there to gather his tribesmen together and put himself in a condition to compete for the crown of Persia. 'Taken prisoner by Nadir and barbarously mutilated by "Adil Shah, he had afterwards found means to rejoin his people, but had surrendered himself to Karim Khan when his father was killed in battle. On the other hand, SAdik, brother to Zaki, who had won considerable and deserved repute by the capture of Basrah from the Turkish governor, abandoned his hold of the conquered town on hearing of the death of Karim, and appeared with his army before Shiraz. To provide against the intended action of the first, Zaki detached his nephew, 'Alf Murad, at the head of his best troops to proceed with all speed to the north; and, as to the second, the seizure of such families of SAdik's followers as were then within thé walls of the town, and other violent measures, struck such dismay into the hearts of the besieg- ing soldiers that they dispersed and abandoned their leader to his fate. From Karman, however, where he found an asylum, the latter addressed an urgent appeal for assistance to "Ali Murad. This chief, encamped at Tehran when the communication reached him, submitted the matter to his men, who decided against Zaki, but put forward their own captain as the only master they would acknowledge. 'Ali Murad, leaving the pursuit of Agha Muhammad, then re- turned to Ispahan, where he was received with satisfaction, on the declaration that his one object was to restore to his lawful inheritance the eldest son of Karim Khén, whom Zaki had set aside in favour of a younger brother. The sequel is full of dramatic interest. Zaki, enraged at his nephew's desertion, marched out of Shir4z towards Ispahan. On his way he came to the town of Yezdikhast,—a singular place, steep and rugged,

something like a section, or three upper stories, of the old town of Edinburgh set upon a natural foundation of crumbling stone. It comes upon the traveller as an abrupt elevation in a dreary vale, and the surrounding scenery savours of the weird and romantic. Here he demanded a sum of money from the inhabitants, claiming it as part of secreted revenue; the demand was refused, and eighteen of the head men were thrown down the precipice beneath his window ; a “saiyid,” or holy man, was the next victim, and his wife and daughter were to be given over to the soldiery, when a suddenly-formed con- spiracy took effect, and Zaki’s own life was taken in retribu- tion for his guilt (1779).

When intelligence of these events reached Karman, Sadik Khan hastened to Shiraz, proclaimed himself king in place of Abu ’l-Fath Khan, whom he declared incompetent to reign owing to dissipation and indolence, and put out the eyes of. the young prince. He despatched his son Ji‘afir to assume the government of Ispahan, and watch the move- ments of “Ali Murad, who appears to have been then absent from that city; and he gave a younger son, ‘Ali Naki, com- mand of an army in the field. A campaign ensued with success from time to time on either side, but ending in the

capture of Shiraz and assumption of sovereignty by ‘Ali’

Murad, who caused Sadik Khan to be put to death.

Alt Murad.

HISTORY. |

From this period up to the accession of Agha Muhammad Khan the summarized history of Markham will supply the principal facts required.

‘Ali Murad reigned over Persia until 1785, and carried on a successful war with Agha Muhammad in Mazandaran, defeating him in several engagements, and occupying Tehran and Sari. He died on his way from the former place to Ispahan, and was suc- ceeded by Ji‘afir, son of Sadik,1 who reigned at Shiraz, assisted in the government by an able but unprincipled ‘‘ kalantar,” or head magistrate, named Hajji Ibrahim. This ruler was poisoned by the agency of conspirators, one of whom, Saiyid Murad, succeeded to

the throne. Hajji Ibrahim, however, contriving to maintain the loyalty of the citizens towards the Zend reigning family, the

utf ‘Ali usurper was killed, and Lutf ‘Ali Khan, son of Ji‘afir, proclaimed

chan.

king. He had hastened to Shiraz on hearing of his father’s death and received a warm welcome from the inhabitants. Hajji Ibrahim became his chief adviscr, and a new minister was found for him in Mirza Husain Shirazi. At the time of his accession Lutf ‘Ali Khan was only in his twentieth year, very handsome, tall, graceful, and an excellent horseman. ‘To his fearless bravery and indomitable perseverance he united the nobler virtues of generosity and mag- nanimity. He formed many enduring friendships ; and, though false-hearted traitors forsook him in the hour of adversity, others loyally stood by him to the last. While differing widely in character, he was a worthy successor of Karim Khan, the great founder of the Zend dynasty. Lutf ‘Ali Khan had not been many months on the throne when Agha Muhammad advanced to attack him, and in- vested the city of Shiraz, but retreated soon afterwards to Tehran, which he had made the capital of his dominions. The young king then enjoyed a short period of peace. Afterwards, in the year 1790, he collected his forces and marched against the Kajars, in the direc- tion of Ispahan. But Hajji Ibrahim had been intriguing against his kind young sovereign, to whose family he owed everything, not only with his officers and soldiers but also with Agha Muhammad, the chief of the Kajars, and arch-enemy of the Zends. Lutf ‘Ali Khan was suddenly deserted by the whole of his army, except seventy faithful followers; and when he retreated to Shiraz he found the gates closed against him by Hajji Ibrahim, who held the city for the Kajar chief. Thence falling back upon Bushahr, he found that the shaikh of that town had also betrayed him, Surrounded by treason on every side, basely deserted alike by his dearest friends and by those who had been raised from the dust by his family, yet, still undaunted by the black clouds that gathered round him, with his little band he boldly attacked and routed the chief of Bushahr and blockaded the city of Shiraz. His uncon- querable valour gained him many followers, and he defeated an army sent against him by the Kajars in 1792.

Agha Muhammad then advanced in person against his gallant young rival. He encamped with an army of 30,000 men on the plain of Mardasht, near Shiraz. Lutf ‘Ali Khan, in the dead of night, suddenly attacked the camp of his enemy with only a few hundred followers. The Kajars were completely routed and thrown into confusion ; but Agha Muhammad, with extraordinary presence of mind, remained in his tent, and at the first appcarance of dawn his “muazzin,” or public crier, was ordered to call the faithful to morning prayer asusual. Astonished at this, the few Zend cavaliers, thinking that the whole army of Kajars had returned, fled with precipitation, leaving the field in possession of Agha Muhammad. The successful Kajar then entered Shiraz, and promoted the traitor Hajji Ibrahim to be his wazir. Lutf ‘Ali Khan took refuge with the hospitable chief of Tabas in the heart of Khurasan, where he succeeded in collecting a few followers; but, advancing into Fars, he was again defeated, and forced to take refuge at Kandahar.

In 1794, however, the undaunted prince once more crossed the Persian frontier, determined to make a last effort, and either regain his throne or die in the attempt. He occupied the city of Karman, then a flourishing commercial town, half-way between the Persian Gulf and the province of Khurasan. It had a very fine bazaar and was well fortified. Agha Muhammad besieged it with a large army in 1795, and, after a stout resistance, the gates were opened through treachery. For three hours the gallant young warrior fought in the streets with determined valour, but in vain. When he saw that all hope was gone he spurred his faithful horse against the ranks of thé enemy and, with only three followers, fought his way through the Kajar host and escaped to Bam-Narmashir, the ‘pi eastern district of the province of Karman on the borders of Sistan.

Furious at the escape of his rival, the savage conqueror ordered a general massacre ; 20,000 women and children were sold into slavery, and 70,000 eyes of the inhabitants of Karman were brought to Agha Muhammad on a platter. The monster counted them with the point of his dagger, then, turning to his minister, he exclaimed, ‘‘If one had been wanting I would have made up the

1 A five days’ usurpation of Bakir Khan, governor of Ispahan, is not taken into account.

rER st A

645

number with your own eyes.” from the effects of this fiend’s atrocities,

Lutf “Ali Khan took refuge in the town of Bam ; but the gov- ernor of Narmashir, anxious to propitiate the conqueror, basely surrounded him as he was inounting his faithful horse Kiran to seek a more secure asylum. The young prince fought bravely ; but, being badly wounded and overpowered by numbers, he was secured and sent to the camp of the Kajar chief. The spot wherc he was seized at Bam, when mounting his horse, was marked by a pyramid, formed, by order of his revengeful enemy, of the skulls of the most faithful of his adherents. The most hideous indignities and atrocities were committed upon his person by the cruel Kajar, in whose breast not one spark of generous or humane feeling had ever found a place. Finally, the last reigning prince of the house of Zend was sent to Tehran and murdered, when only in his twenty- sixth year. Every member of his family and every friend was ordered to be massacred by Agha Muhammad ; and the successful but guilty miscreant thus founded the dynasty of the Kajars, at the price of all the best and noblest blood of Iran.

The Zend is said to be a branch of the Lak tribe, dating from the time of the Kaianian kings, and claims to have been charged with the care of the Zend-Avesta by Zoroaster himself.2_ The tree attached to Markham’s chapter on the dynasty contains the names of eight members of the family only, z.e., four brothers, one of whom had a son, grandson, and great-grandson, and one a son. Four of the eight were murdered, one was blinded, and one cruelly mutilated. In one case a brother murdered a brother, in another an uncle blinded his nephew.

Kajér Dynasty.—Agha Muhammad was undoubtedly Agha one of the most cruel and vindictive despots that ever Muham-

disgraced a throne. But he was not without care for the honour of his empire in the eyes of Europe and the outer world, and his early career in Mazandaran gave him a deeply-rooted mistrust of Russia, with the officers of which power he was in constant contact. The following story, told by Forster,? and varied by a later writer, is charac- teristic. A party of Russians having obtained permission to build a ‘‘counting-house” at Ashraf, in the bay of that name, erected instead a fort with eighteen guns. Agha Muhammad, learning the particulars, visited the spot, ex- pressed great pleasure at the work done, invited the officers to dine with him, imprisoned them, and only spared their lives when they had removed the whole of the cannon and razed the fort to the ground. As this occurrence must have taken place about 1782, when he was engaged in family feuds, and the sovereign power was vested in the hands of ‘Alf Murad, it may be received as an illustra- tion not only of his patriotism but of the independent action he was ever ready to exercise when opportunity offered.

Forster was travelling homeward by the southern shores of the Caspian in January 1784, and from him we gather many interesting details of the locality and period. He calls Agha Muhammad chief of Mazandaran, as also of Astrabad and “some districts situate in Khurasan,” and describes his tribe, the Kajar, to be, like the Indian Rajput, usually devoted to the profession of arms. Whatever hold his father may have had on Gilan, it is certain that this province was not then in the son’s possession, for his brother, Ji‘afir Kul, governor of Balfrush (Balfroosh), had made a recent incursion into it and driven Hidaiyat Khan, its ruler, from Rasht to Enzali, and Agha Muhammad was himself meditating another attack on the same quarter. The latter’s palace was at Sari, then a small and partly fortified town, thickly inhabited, and with a plentifully- supplied market. As “the most powerful chief in Persia” since the death of Karim Khan, the Russians were seeking to put their yoke upon him, and he was naturally averse to the infliction. It is not clear, however, from the context

2 Markham. Morier says of Karim Khan’s family, “it was a low branch of an obscure tribe in Kurdistan.”

3 Journey from Bengal to England (1798), vol. ii. p. 201; see also Markham, pp. 341, 342.

Karman has never fully recovered 1779-1783.

1783-1797.

646

what Forster means when he writes that Agha Muhammad is “the only Persian chief bordering on the Caspian Sea whom the empire of Russia has yet made tributary, or rendered subservient to its policy.”

PEraAas t&

[MODERN

holy city the generals of Timur Shah, king of the Afghans, had made three expeditions on Shah Rukh’s behalf. Mash- had had been taken and retaken as though he were not a resident in it, much less its de jure king. Moreover, his two

Cam- As Agha Muhammad’s power increased, his dislike and | sons Nadir Mirza and Wali Ni‘amat had been long waging, Paige t jealousy of the Muscovite assumed a more practical shape. | one with the other, a predatory war, and the former was Carin His victory over Lutf ‘Alf was immediately followed by an | practically in 1796 the actual ruler of the place. Three expedition into Georgia. After the death of Nadir the | years before Timur had died, and his third son, Zaman wali or prime ruler of that country had looked around him | Shah, by the intrigues of an influential sardar, Paiyanda for the safest and surest means of shaking off the offensive | Khan, had been proclaimed his successor at Kabul. yoke of Persia ; and in course of time an opportunity had Agha Muhammad’s entry into Mashhad was effected offered of a promising kind. In 1783, when the strength | without a struggle on the part of those in possession. The of the Persian monarchy was concentrated upon Ispahan | Kajar shah walked on foot to the tomb of Im4m Riza, and Shiraz, the Georgian czar Heraclius entered into an | before which he knelt and kissed the ground in token of agreement with the empress Catherine by which all con- | devotion, and was recognized as a Shi‘ah of Shi‘ahs. Shah nexion with the shah was disavowed, and a quasi-vassal- | Rukh submissively followed in his train. Then began the age to Russia

substituted,—the said empire extending her | last act of the local tragedy. The blind king’s gradual eegis of protection over her new ally. Agha Muhammad | revelation, under horrible torture, of the place of conceal- now demanded that Heraclius should return to his position | ment of his several jewels and treasures, and his deporta- of tributary and vassal to Persia, and, as his demand was | tion and death (of the injuries thus received, at Damaghan, rejected, prepared for war. Dividing an army of 60,000 | en route to Mazandaran), must be classed among the darkest men into three corps, he sent one of these into Daghistan, | records of Oriental history. another was to attack Erivan, and with the third he him- From Mashhad Agha Muhammad sent an envoy to self laid siege to Shishah in the province of Karabagh. The | Zaman Shah, asking for the cession of Balkh, and explain- stubborn resistance offered at the last-named place caused | ing his invasion of Khurasan; but the Afghan monarch him to leave there a small investing force only, and to | was too perplexed with the troubles in his own country move on with the remainder of his soldiers to join the corps | and his own insecure position to do more than send an Varmée at Erivan. Here, again, the difficulties presented | unmeaning reply. It is not shown what was the under- caused him to repeat the same process and to effect a junc- | stood boundary between the two countries at this particular tion with his first corps at Ganja, the modern Elisabethpol. | period ; but Watson states that on the shah’s departure At this place he encountered the Georgian army under | he had received the submission of the whole of Khurasan, Heraclius, defeated it, and marched upon Tiflis, which he | and left in Mashhad a garrison of 12,000 men. pillaged, massacring and enslaving! the inhabitants. Then Agha Muhammad had now fairly established his capital Death he returned triumphant to Tehran, where (or at Ardabil on | at Tehran. On his return thither in September 1796 he andcha the way) he was publicly crowned shah of Persia. Erivan | dismissed his troops for the winter, directing their re- i surrendered, but Shishah continued to hold out. These | assembly in the following spring. The reinvasion by Mohan proceedings caused Russia to enter the field. Darband | Russia of the provinces and districts he had recently mad. was taken possession of by Imhoff, Baku and Shumakhi | wrested from her west of the Caspian had made great were occupied, and Gilan was threatened. The death of | progress, but the circumstance does not seem to have the empress, however, caused the issue of an order to | changed his plans for the army. Olivier, who had in retire,

and Darband and Baku remained the only trophies | those days come to the Persian court on a commercial and of the campaign. political mission from the French republic, and whose Opera- In the meantime Agha Muhammad's attention had | book is quoted by Watson, expressed his surprise to the es ™ been called away to the east. Khurdsan could hardly | prime minister that, while his majesty thought it necessary a be called an integral part of the shah's kingdom so long | to strangle some twenty-seven Russian sailors sent in as

as it was under even the nominal rule of the blind grand- son of Nadir. But the eastern division of the province and its outlying parts were actually in the hands of the Afghans, and Mashhad was not Persian in 1796 in the sense that Dehli was British at the outbreak of the Indian mutiny. Shah Rukh held his position, such as it was, rather under Ahmad Shah and his successors in Afghanistan than under any other sovereign power. Agha Muhammad determined to restore the whole province to Persia, and, after a brief residence in Tehran on his return from the Georgian expedition, he set out for Mashhad. It is im- portant to note that on the occasion of his coronation he had girded on the sabre consecrated at the tomb of the founder of the Safawis,—thus openly pledging himself to support the Shi'ah faith.

But there had been continual dissatisfaction in the capital of Khurdsan, and there had been constant inroads upon it from without, which the powerless royal puppet was unable to prevent. His popularity was real, but wholly wanting in political vigour. It never seemed to have effect outside the limited sphere of personal sympathy and regard. Owing to the frequent revolutions in the

? Lady Sheil says (1849) : 'I saw a few of these unhappy captives,

who all had to embrace Mahommedanism, and many of whom had risen to the highest stations, just as the Circassian slaves in Constantinople. "'

prisoners, he took no immediate measures to check the Muscovite forces in the field. The reply was that there was no hurry in the matter. Although, when the spring arrived and the shah led his forces to the Arras, the Russians had, it is true, retreated, yet territory had been regained by them as

far south as the Talish. Agha Muhammad had now arrived at the close of his career. He was enabled, with some difficulty, to get his troops across the river, and take possession of Shishah, which had given them so much trouble a year or two before. There, in camp, he was murdered (1797) by his own personal attendants,— men who, singularly enough, were under sentence of death, but allowed to be at large. He was then fifty-seven years of age, and had ruled over part of Persia for more than eighteen years,— over the kingdom generally for about three years, and from his coronation for about one year only.

The brutal treatment he had experienced in boyhood under the orders of ‘Adil Shah, NAdir’s wretched nephew, and the opprobrious name of “eunuch” which attached to him, and with which he was taunted by his enemies, no doubt contributed to embitter his nature. His vindic- tiveness and inhumanity were notorious, and exemplified at almost every period of his life. On the other hand, his contempt of luxury and frugality of diet, his avoidance

of hyperbole and dislike of excessive ceremony, his pro- tection to commerce and consideration for his soldiers, the reluctance with which he assumed the crown almost at the close of his reign, his positive refusal to wear any royal headgear but the small circular pearl-adorned diadem in which he is commonly represented by the native painter,—all these would have been praiseworthy in another man ; but the fearful weight of evil on the other side of the scales made them of comparatively small con- sideration, and on his death the memory of his atrocious tyranny alone survived. Those who have seen his portrait once will recognize the face wherever presented. “ Beard- less and shrivelled,” writes Sir John Malcolm, “it re- sembled that of an aged and wrinkled woman, and the expression of his countenance, at no time pleasant, was horrible when clouded, as it very often was, with indigna-

of age, and died at sixty-eight, after a reign of thirty-six years. 1797-1809,

The period was an eventful one. It was that of George III. G

1V., and William IV. in England, of N apoleon I. ae first conte to emperor, of the restoration of the Bourbon kings and the inter- position of the house of Orleans, in France. The sons of Paul

Alexander and Nicholas, were emperors of Russia; and, except for the last few years of Salim IL, the second Mahmid ruled over the Turkish dominions. No other European nations had any direct concern with Persia. In Afghanistan it was the epoch of the revolution which broke up its short-lived unity as a kingdom. The struggles of Mahmud Shéh and Shuj‘au ’l-Mulk enabled them to be quasi-sovereigns for a time; but Kabul was divided from Kandahar, and Kandahar from Herat, and the work of Ahmad Abdali was all undone. Among the governors-general of India in those days are the distinguished names of Welleslcy, Cornwallis, Hastings, and William Bentinck.

Persia’s great aim was to recover in the north-west, as in the north- east of her empire, the geographical limits obtained for her by the Safawi kings ; and this was no easy matter when she had to contend with a strong European power whose territorial limits touched her

tion. He was sensible of this, and could not bear that any one should look at him.” Agha Muhammad had made up his mind that he should

own. Fath ‘Ali Shah undertook, at the outset of his reign, a con- War test with Russia on the western side of the Caspian, which became with constant and harassing warfare. Georgia was, clearly, not to revert Russia.

to a Muhammadan suzerain.

be succeeded by his nephew Fath ‘Ali Shah, son of his full brother, Husain Kuli Khan, and governor of Fars, a young prince with whom he had always been on good terns, and to whom he had proved himself exceptionally well disposed. There was a short: interval of confusion after the murder. The remains of the sovereign were exposed to insult, the army was disturbed,

the recently- captured fort on the left bank of the Arras was abandoned ; but the wisdom and resolution of the minister, Hajji Ibrahim, and of Mirza Muhammad Khan Kajar, a high functionary, prevailed to secure order and acceptance of the duly-appointed heir. The first, proclaiming his own allegiance, put himself at the head of a large body of troops and marched towards the capital. The second closed. the gates of Tehran to all comers until Fath ‘Ali Shah came himself from Shiraz. Though instantly proclaimed on arrival, the new monarch was not crowned until the spring of the following year (1798).

The so-called rebellions which followed were many, but not of any magnitude. Such as belong to local history are three in number, 7.¢., that of SAdik Khan Shakaki, the general whose possession of the crown jewels enabled him, after the defeat of his army at Kazvin, to secure his personal safety and obtain a government; of Husafn Kulf Khan, the shah’s brother, which was compromised by the mother’s intervention ; and of Muhammad, son of Zaki Khan, Zend, who was defeated on more than one occasion in battle, and

In 1800 its czar, George, son and successor of Heraclius, notwithstanding his former professions of allegiance to the shah, renounced his crown in favour of the Russian emperor. His brother Alexander indignantly repudiated ‘the act and resisted its fulfilment, but he was defeated by General Lazeroff on the banks of the Lora. Persia then re-entcred the field. Among the more notable occurrences which followed were a three days’ battle, fought near Etchmiadzin near Erivan, between the crown prince, ‘Abbas Mirza, and General Zizianoff, in which the Persians suffcred much from the enemy’s artillery, but would not admit they were defeated ; unsuccessful attempts on the part of the Russian cominander to get possession of Erivan ; and a surprise, in camp, of the shah’s forces, which caused them to disperse, and necessitated the king’s own presence with reinforcements. On the latter occa- sion the shah is credited with gallantly swimming his horse across the Arras, and setting an example of energy and valour. In the following year ‘Abbas Mirza advanced upon Shishah, the chief of which place and of the Karabagh, though an old foe to Agha Muhammad, had declared for Russia; much fighting ensued, and Erivan was formally taken possession of in the name of the shah. The Russians,

morcover, made a futile attempt on Gilan by landing troops at Enzali, which returned to Baku, where Zizianoff fell a victim to the treachery of the Persian governor. Somewhat later Ibrahim Khalil of Shishah, repenting of his Russophilism, deter- mined to deliver up the Munscovite garrison at that place, but his plans were betrayed, and he and his relatives put to death. Reprisals and engagements followed with varied success ; and the crown prinee of Persia, after a demonstration in Shirwan, returned to Tabriz. He had practically made no progress; yet Russia, in securing possession of Darband, Baku, Shirwan, Sheki, Ganja, the Talish, and Moghan, was probably indebted to gold as well as to the force of arms. At the same time Persia would not listen to the overtures of peace made to her by the governor-general who had succeeded Zizianoff.

Relations had now commenced with England and British India. Relations A certain Mahdi ‘Ali Khan had landed at Bushahr, entrusted by with the governor of Bombay with a letter to the shah. His mission England, had reference to the politics of Afghanistan, aud appears to have India, been fairly successful ; but he was followed shortly by an English and envoy from the governor-gencral, Captain Malcolm of the Madras France.

fled into Turkish territory. There may have been other names mixed up with these, but of aiders and abettors rather than principals. Later, Sadik Khan, having again incurred the royal displeasure, was seized, confined, and

mercilessly bricked up in his dungeon to die of starvation.

Another adversary preserited himself in the person of Nadir Mirza, son of Shah Rukh, who, when Agha Muhanimad appeared before Mashhad, had taken refuge with the Afghans. This prince, hearing of the death of his father’s destroyer, gathered around him a military force and made a show of independence. Fath ‘Ali sent to warn him of the consequences of his act, but without the desired effect. Finally, he advanced into Khurdsan with an army which appears to have met with no opposition save at Nishaptir and Turbat, both of which places were taken, and when it reached Mashhad Nadir Mirza tendered his submission, which was accepted. Peace having been further cemented by an alliance between a Kajér general and the prince’s daughter, the shah returned to Tehran.

Now that the narrative of Persian kings has been brought up to the period of the consolidation of the Kajar dynasty and commence- ment of the 19th century, there remains but to summarize the principal events in the rcigns of Fath ‘Ali Shah and his immediate Successors, Muhammad Shah and Nasru ’d-Din Shah.

Fath ‘Ali Shah came to the throne at about thirty-two years

army. He had not only to talk about the Afghans but about the French also, and the trade of the Persian Gulf. The results were a political and commercial treaty, and ‘a return mission to India from Fath ‘Alf Shah. To him France next sent her message. In 1801 an Amcrican merchant from Baghdad had appeared as the bearer of credentials from Napolcon, but his mission was mistrusted and came to nothing. .Some five years afterwards Jaubert, after detention and imprisonment on the road, arrived at Tehran and went back to Europe with a duly-accredited Persian ambassador, who concluded a treaty with the French emperor at Finkenstein. On the return of the Persian diplomatist, a mission of many officers under General Gardanne to instruct and drill the local army was sent from France to Persia. Hence arose the counter-mission of Sir Harford Jones from the British Government, which, on arrival at Bombay in April 1808, found that it had been anticipated by a previously-sent mission from the governor-general of India, under Malcolm again, then holding the rank of brigadier-general. The home mission, however, proceeded to Bushahr, and Malcolm’s return thence to India, from pressure of circumstances, enabled Sir Harford to move on and reach the capital in February 1809.

1809-1830.

Renewal of Rus- sian war.

648

concluded a treaty with Persia the month after his arrival at the capital ; but the Government of India were not content to leave matters in his hands: notwithstanding the anomaly of a double mission, Malcolm was in 1810 again despatched as their own parti- cular envoy. He brought with him Captains Lindsay and Christie to assist the Persians in the war, and

presented the shah with some serviceable field-pieces ; but there was little occasion for the exercise of his diplomatic ability save in his non-official intercourse with the people, and here he availed himself of it to the great advantage of himself and his country.' He was welcomed by the shah in camp at, Ujani, and took leave a month afterwards to return via Baghdad and Basrah to India. The next year Sir Harford Jones was relieved as envoy by Sir Gore Ouseley. ;

Meanwhile hostilities had been resumed with Russia: the crown prince vainly attempted to penetrate Georgia ; and one or two en- gagements ensued with more or less assertion of success on either side. In 1812 the British envoy used his good offices for the restora- tion of peace between the belligerents, and a Russian officer of high rank was sent to the Persian camp to propose the appointment of deputies. But there was no possibility of agreement, and the endeavour failed. To add to the Persian difficulty, it so happened that in July of this year a treaty was concluded between England and Russia "for re-establishing the relations of amity and good understanding between the two kingdoms respectively"; and this circumstance caused the envoy to direct that British officers should take no further part in Russo-Persian military operations. Christie and Lindsay, however, resolved to remain at their own risk, and advanced with the Persian army to the Arras. On the 31st October the force was surprised by an attack of the enemy, and retreated ; the next night they were again attacked and routed at Aslanduz. Christie fell bravely fighting at the head of his brigade ; Lindsay saved two of his nine guns; but neither of the two Englishmen was responsible for the want of proper disposition of the troops which mainly caused the disaster. Lankuran was taken by Persia, but retaken by Russia during the next three months; and on the 13th October 1813, through Sir Gore Ouseley's intervention, the treaty of Gulistan put an end to the war. Persia formally ceded Georgia and the seven provinces before named, with Karabagh.

On the death of the emperor Alexander in December 1825 Prince Menschikoff was sent to Tehran to settle a dispute which had arisen between the two Governments regarding the prescribed frontier. But, as the claim of Persia to a particular district tlen occupied by Russia could not be admitted, the special envoy was given his congé, and war was

recominenced. The chief of Talish struck the first blow, and drove the enemy from Lankuran. The Persians then carried all before them ; and the hereditary chiefs of Shirwan, Sheki, and Baku returned from exile to co-operate with the shah's general in the south. In the course of three weeks the only advanced post held by the governor-general of the Caucasus was the obstinate little fortress of Shishah. But before long all was again changed. Hearing that a Russian force of some 9000 men was concentrated at Tiflis, Muhammad Mirza, son of the crown

plaints of Persian travellers, merchants, and pilgrims culminated in a declaration of war. This made 'Abbas Mirza at once seize upon the fortified places of Toprak Kal'ah and Ak Sarai within the limits of the Ottoman empire, and, overcoming the insufficient force sent against him, he was further enabled to extend his inroads to Mush, Bitlis, and other known localities. The Turkish Government retaliated by a counter-invasion of the Persian frontier on the south. At that time the pasha of Baghdad was in command of the troops. He was defeated by Muhammad 'Ali Mirza, then prince- governor of Karmanshah, who drove his adversary back towards his capital and advanced to its immediate environs. Being attacked with cholera, however, the Persian commander recrossed the frontier, but only to succumb under the disease in the pass of Kirind. In the sequel a kind of desultory warfare appears to have been prosecuted on the Persian side of Kurdistan, and the shah himself came down with an army to Hamadan. Cholera broke out in the royal camp and caused the troops to disperse.

In the north the progress of 'Abbas Mirza was stopped at Baiyazid by a like deadly visitation ; and a suspension of hostilities was agreed upon for the winter season. At the expiration of four months the sardar of Erivan took possession of a Turkish military station on the road to Arzrum (Erzeroum), and the crown prince marched upon that city at the head of 30,000 men. The Ottoman army which met him is said to have numbered some 52,000; but victory was on the side of their opponents. Whether the result was owing to the defection of 15,000 Kurds or not the evidence adduced is insuffi- cient to decide. In the English records of the period it is stated that

“the defeat of the Turks was complete; the greater part of their army fled in disorder from the field, abandoning all their tents and baggage, and fourteen pieces of artillery.” It is added: “the prince royal followed up his successes, and advanced within two days’ march of Arzrum, but the cholera morbus is said to have again broken out in his army, and in such a manner as effectually to arrest its further advance.” ?

Profiting from this victory, ‘Abbas Mirza repeated an offer of peace before made without avail to the pasha of Arzrum ; and, in order to conciliate him more effectually, he retired within the old limits of the dominions of the shah, his father. But more troubles arose at Baghdad, and other reasons intervened to protract negotiations for a yearanda half. At length, in July 1828, the treaty of Arzrum closed the war between Turkey and Persia. It may be remarked that this document is sensible and business-like, and provides especially against a recurrence of the proved causes of war, such as interference in one another’s fronticr districts, extorting taxes from Persian travellers or pilgrims, disrespect to the ladies of the royal harem and other ladies of rank proceeding to Mecca or Karbala (Kerbela), irregular levies of custom-duties, non-punishment of Kurdish depredators transgressing the boundary, and the like. Fath ‘Ali Shah in it is styled ‘‘ King of kings, the Sultan son of a Sultan— the Conqueror,” and Mahmud II. is ‘‘ Protector of the Faith, Guardian of the Holy Cities, Ruler by Sea and Land, the Sultan son of a Sultan —the Conqueror.”

prince, advanced to meet them on the banks of the Zezam. He was defeated ; and his father, seeking to repair the loss, was routed more seriously still at Ganja. The shah made great efforts to renew

With respect to the eastern boundaries of his kingdom, Fath ‘Ali The Shéh was fortunate in having to deal with a less dangerous neigh- Afgbal) bour than the Muscovite of persistent policy and the Turk of questic

the war ; but divisions took place in his son’s camp, not conducive to successful operations, and new proposals of peace were made. Ardabil, and even Tabriz, had been threatened, and, although the threat had been rather signified than expressed, the presence of Russian troops south of the Arras was calculated to strike terror in Adarbaijan. But Russia demanded Erivan and Nakhtchivan (Nakhichevan) as well as the cost of the war; and in 1827

the campaign was reopened. Briefly, after successive gains and losses, not only Erivan was taken from Persia but Tabriz also, and finally, through the intervention of Sir John Macdonald, the English envoy, a new treaty was concluded at Turkmanchai, laying down the boundary between Russia and Persia very much as it has been formed in 1884. Among the hard conditions for the latter country were the cession in perpetuity of the khanates of Erivan and Nakh- tchivan, the inability to have an armed vessel in the Caspian, and the payment of a war indemnity of some £3,000,000.

precarious friendship. The Afghan was neither a contemptible foe nor a sure ally, but he was not tainted with that fictitious civiliza- tion of semi-Oriental people which makes duplicity the essence of diplomatic intercourse. He had scen too little of Europeans to imitate them in their worst and weakest points; and, though equal to the Persian in physical force and prowess, he was his inferior in worldly knowledge and experience. Quite as dishonest as his neighbours and more treacherous than most, he had not the polished ingenuity to conceal his dishonesty and double-dealing. Moreover, the family divisions among the ruling houses of Afghanistan grew from day to day more destructive to that patriotism and sense of nationality which Ahmad Shah had held out to his countrymen as the sole specifics for becoming a strong people.

The revolt of Nadir Mirza had, as before explained, drawn the shah’s attention to Khurasan in the early part of his reign ; but, although quiet had for the moment been restored at Mashhad by

War After Russia, the neighbouring state next in importance to the | the presence of the royal camp, fresh grounds of complaint were with wellbeing of Persia was Turkey, with whom she was united on the | urged against the rash but powerless prince, and recourse was had Turkey. west by a common line of frontier. Fath ‘Ali Shah was fortunate in | to extreme measures. Charged with the murder of a holy saiyid,

having had but one war with the sultan during his whole reign, and that one of no duration. Salim had not scrupled, it is true, in 1804 and 1805, to allow the Russians to make free use of the south-eastern coasts of the Black Sea, to facilitate operations against the shah’s troops ; and there had been a passage of arms between the king’s eldest son, Muhammad ‘Ali Mirza, and

Sulaiman Pasha, son-in-law of the governor-general of Baghdad, which is locally credited as a battle won by the former. But there was no open rupture between the two sovereigns until 1821, when the frontier disputes and com-

aie "'wakilu 'l-mulk," governor of Karman, told Colonel Goldsmid, when his guest in 1866, that "his father had been Sir John Maleolm's Mihmandar,. There never Was such a man as 'Malcolm Sahib.' Not only was he generous on the part of his government, but with his own money also" (Telegraph and Travel, p. 585).

his hands were cut off and his tongue was plucked out, as part of the horrible punishment inflicted on him,

It does not appear that Nadir Mirza's cause was ever seriously espoused by the Afghans, nor that Fath 'Ali Shah's claim to Mash- had, as belonging to the Persian crown, was actively resisted. But the large province of Khurasan, of which Mashhad was the capital, and which included Darahgaz and Kelat-i-Nadiri in the north and Kaiyan in thesouth, had never been other than a nominal dependency of the crown since the death of Nadir; and in the autumn of 1830

2 Annual Register, '* History of Europe" (1822), There is a note in connexion with the text from which these extracts are taken, on the state of Anglo-Persian relations and the predominance of Russian influence at Tehran, well worthy the reader's perusal.

the shah, under Russian advice, assembled a large force to bring into subjection all turbulent and refractory chiefs on the east of his kingdom. Yazd and Karman were the first points of attack ; Khurasan was afterwards entered by Semnan, or the main road from Tehran. The expedition, led by 'Abbas Mirza, involved some hard fighting and much loss of life. A considerable extent of ground was traversed ; several forts and places were captured, among them Kabushan and Sarakhs ; and it may be concluded that the objects contemplated were more or less attained. An English officer, Colonel Shee, commanded what was called the '' British detach-

ment” which accompanied the prince. Thus far as regards Yazd, Karman, and Khurasan. It was otherwise with Herat.

Hajji Firizu’d-Din, son of Timur Shah, reigned undisturbed in that city from 1800 to 1816. Since Fath ‘Ali Shah’s accession he and his brother Mahmud had been, as it were, under Persian protection ; and, when the king retraced his steps homeward after his expedition to Mashhad, at the commencement of the century, it is supposed that he did so at the request of an ambassador from Zaman Shah of Kabul. Persia claimed the principality of Herat as part of the empire of Nadir, but her pretensions had been satisfied by payments of tribute or evasive replies. Now, however, that she marched her army against the place, Firazu ’d-Din called in the aid of his brother Mahmud Shah of Kabul, who sent to him the famous wazir, Fath Khan Barakzdi. The latter, intriguing on his own account, got possession of the town and citadel ; he then sallied forth, engaged and defeated the Persian forces, and forced them to retire into their own country. ‘There are various accounts of this action, and the Persian story is that the Afghans were defeated ; but no one dis- putes the result, ¢.¢c., the retreat of the invading army. In 1824, on a solicitation from Mustafa Khan, who had got temporary hold of Herat, more troops were despatched thither, but, by the use of money or bribes, their departure was purchased. Some eight or nine years afterwards ‘Abbas Mirza, when at the head of his army in Mashhad, invited Yar Muhammad Khan of Herat to discuss a settlement of differences between the two Governments. The meeting was unproductive of good. Again the Persian troops advanced to Herat itself under the command of Muhammad Mirza, son of ‘Abbas ; but the news of his father’s death caused the com- mander to break up his camp and return to Mashhad.

Sir Gore Ouseley returned to England in 1814, in which year Mr Ellis, assisted by Mr Morier—whose ‘‘ Hajji Baba”’ is the un- failing proof of his ability and deep knowledge of Persian character —negotiated on the part of Great Britain the treaty of Tehran. England was to provide troops or a subsidy in the event of unpro- voked invasion, while Persia was to attack the Afghans should they invade India. Captain Willock succeeded Mr Morier as chargé d’affaires in 1815, and since that period Great Britain has always been represented at the Persian court. It was in Fath ‘Ali Shah’s reign that Henry Martyn was in Persia, and completed his able translation of

the New Testament into the language of that country. He had met Malcolm and Mackintosh at Bombay, and Sir John had recommended him to Sir Gore Ouseley, to whose mission he officiated as chaplain prior to departure from Shiraz in 1812. Martyn died at Tokat in Asia Minor, on his homeward

journey. Little more remains to be here narrated of the days of

Fath ‘Ali Shah. Among the remarkable occurrences may be noted the murder at Tehran in 1828 of M. Grebayadoff, the Russian envoy, whose conduct in forcibly retaining two women of Erivan pro- voked the interference of the mullas and people. To repair the evil consequences of this act a conciliatory embassy, consisting of a young son of the crown prince and some high officers of the state, was despatched to St Petersburg. Shortly afterwards the alliance with Russia was strengthened, and that with England slackened in proportion. There were reasons why this should be the outcome of the previous situation, some of which will be self- evident to the reader of blue-books, while others will remain mere matters of opinion.

FEW Sl A

649

each side are two square pillars, on which are perched birds, probably intended 1830-1836.

for peacocks, studded with precious stones of every description, and holdi each a ruby in their beak. The highest part of the iron composed of . oval ornament of jewelry, from which emanate a great number of diamond rays.

_One passage may be added as not only significant of the indi- vidual monarch but also of the national character. __ When the audience was finished, the king desired one of his ministers to inquire from Ji‘afir ‘Ali Khan (the English Agent) what the foreigners said of him, and whether they praised and admired his appearance.”

Fath ‘Ali Shah had a numerous family. Agreeably to the Persian custom, asserted by his predecessors, of nominating the heir-apparent from the sons of the sovereign without restriction to seniority, he had passed over the

eldest, Muhammad ‘Ali, in favour of a junior, ‘Abbas ; but, as the nominee died in the lifetime of his father, the old king had proclaimed Muhammad Mirza, the son of ‘Abbas, and his own grandson, to be his successor. Why a younger son had been originally selected, to the prejudice of his elder brother, is differ- ently stated by different writers. The true reason was probably the superior rank of his mother. Markhain’s estimate of the char- acter of the crown prince, based upon conflicting evidence, but apparently correct, is that “he possessed enlightened views,” was “desirous of improving the condition of his country,” yet “was deficient in talent, rather weak-minded, and loved flattery.”

It is worthy of remark that the selection of Muhammad Mirza was made with the express concurrence of the British and Russian Governments, communicated to their respective representatives at the shah’s court ; and the British minister at St Petersburg was in- structed to express to the Government of the czar the gratification of his own Government at finding that the two powers were “ acting with regard to the affairs of Persia in the same spirit,” and were “equally animated by a sincere desire to maintain not only the ee pendualagy but also the independence and integrity of

ersia.’

Muhammad Shah was twenty-eight years old when he came to Muham- the throne in 1834. He died at the age of forty-two, after a reign maa of about thirteen and a half years. His accession was not publicly Shéh.

notified for some months after his grandfather’s death, for it was necessary to clear the way of all competitors, and there were two on this occasion, — one ‘Ali Mirza, governor of Tehran, who actually as- sumed a royal title, and one Hasan ‘Ali Mirza, governor of Shiraz. Owing to the steps taken by the British envoy, Sir John Camp- bell, assisted by Colonel Bethune, at the head of a considerable force, supplied with artillery, the opposition of the first was neu- tralized, and Muhammad Shah, entering Tehran on 2d January, was proclaimed king on the 31st of the same month. It cost more time and trouble to bring the second to book. Hasan ‘Ali, “ farman- farma,” or commander-in-chief, and his brother and abettor, had an army at their disposal in Fars. Sir Henry Lindsay Bethune marched his soldiers to Ispahan to be ready to meet them. An engagement which took place near

Kumishah, on the road between Ispahan and Shiraz, having been successful, the English com- mander pushed on to the latter town, where the two rebel princes were seized and imprisoned. Forwarded under escort to Tehran, they were, according to Watson, ordered to be sent on thence as state prisoners to Ardabil, but the farman-farma died on the way, and his brother was blinded before incarceration. Markham, however, states that both ‘Ali Mirza and Hasan ‘Ali were allowed to retire with a small pension, and that no atrocities stained the beginning of the reign of Muhammad Shah. It is presumed that the fate of the prime minister, or “ kdim-makam,” who was strangled in prison, was no more than an ordinary execution of the law. This event, and the prevalence of plague and cholera at Tehran, marked somewhat gloomily the new monarch’s first year. , The selection of a premier was one of the first weighty questions for solution. .A member of the royal family, the ‘‘asafu ’d-daulah,” governor of Khurasan, left his government to urge his candidature for the post. The king’s choice, however, fell on Hajji Mirza Aghasi, a native of Erivan, who in former years, as tutor to the

ath As an Oriental despot Fath ‘Ali Shah was neither cruel nor un- | sons of ‘Abbas Mirza, had gained a certain reputation for learning lis just, but acts of cruelty and injustice were committed under his | and a smattering of the occult sciences, but whose qualifications larac- sanction. The treatment of Nadir Mirza has been mentioned. That | for statesmanship were craftiness and suspicion. Such a counsellor t, &c. of the old minister, Hajji Ibrahim, was perhaps more barbarous still. | was hardly fitted for Muhammad Shah, whose natural bigotry

His fondness for sport and his literary tastes gave him the capacity of suiting his conversation to visitors of different kinds; but the love of money was a drawback to the exercise of his sympathies, and the loss of territory to Russia, involving as it did loss of revenue,

could scarcely fail to accept the short-sighted policy which the minister would be sure to advocate. As might have becn antici- pated, the hajji fell into the hands of Russia, represented by Count Simonich, who urged him to a fresh expedition into Khurasan and

the siege of Herat. There was no doubt a plausible pretext for both Expedi- proposals. The chiefs, reduced to temporary submission by ‘Abbas tion Mirza, had again revolted ; and Shah Kamran, supported by his against wazir, Yar Muhammad, had broken those engagements and pledges Herat. on the strength of which Fath ‘Ali Shah had withdrawn his troops.

was not calculated to arouse any strong sentiment of friendship towards the czar’s European allies. Morier’s description of the king’s person was thus given in 1809.

‘He isa man of pleasing manners and an agreeable countenance, with an aquiline nose, large eyes, and very arched eyebrows. His face is obscured by c Be renee Pr nes te Inioe my aie gre Bepevery beeen me ee In addition to these causes of offence he had aphopratcl ne when he talks and smiles that his mouth is discovered. is voice : : igh, Petes hadi lou atessed to ho been fine, and is still harmonious ; though now hollow, and obviously that of | province of Sistan, over pie c Theiee ay oe to go farther a man who has led a free life… . He was seated on a species of throne | the rights of suzerainty. _ Bu e king Po, called the takht-i-tdzis, or the throne of the peacock, which is ise ey frau than retaliation or chastisement. He pied to rie any the ground, and appears an oblong square of 8 feet broad an et i separate government whatever on the part of the Afghans. could see the bust mg of his majesty, as the rest of his body was hidden by right to sepa 8 iP : an elevated railing, the upper work of the throne, at the corners of which were placed several ornaments of vases and toys. The back is much raised; on

1 Correspondence relating to Persia and Afghanistan, London, 1839.

1836-1848. and Kandahar and Ghazni were to be recovered, as belonging to

Siege of Herat.

the empire of the Safawi dynasty. The advice of the British envoy was dissuasive in this respect, and therefore distasteful. seam Sir John Campbell, in less than a year after the sovcreign's

installation, went home, and was succeeded as British envoy by .

Mr Henry Ellis. The change in personnel signified also a transfer of superintendence of the Persian legation, which passed from the Government in India to the authorities in England. In 1836, on the return home of Mr Ellis, Mr M'Neill became chargé d'affaires.

About this time the arrangements for the expedition were matured. It was to commence with a campaign against the Turkmans,—Herat being its later destination. The king would command in person, and the army would be formidable in numbers and war material. Such counter-proposals as Mr Ellis had suggested for consideration, in his earnest endeavours to divert the shah from his purpose, had

been politely put aside, and the counscls of the war-party had pre-.

yailed. Should the main operations designed be successful, and Herat fall to Persia, it was impossible to foretell the result; and the case was now more than ever complicated by the action of the Barakzai chiefs of Kandahar, who had sent a mission to Tehran to offer assistance against their Saduzai rival at Herat. Fresh provo- cation had, moreover, been given to the shah's Government by the rash and incapable Kamran.

About the close of the summer the force moved from Teliran. The royal camp was. near Astrabad in November 1836. Food was scarce: barley sold

for ten times the usual price, and wheat was not procurable for any money. The troops were dissatisfied, and, being kept without pay and on short rations, took to plundering. There had been operations on the banks of the Gurgan, and the Turkimans had been driven from one of their strongholds; but little or no progress had been made in the subjection of these marauders, and the Heratis had sent word that all they could do was to pay tribute, and, if that were insufficient, the shah had better march to Herat. A military couneil was held at Shahrud, when it was decided to return to the eapital and set out again in the spring. Accordingly the troops dispersed, and the sovereign's presence at Tehran was taken advantage of by the British minister to renew his attempts in the cause of peace. But rcmonstrance was vain, and, although on the present occasion Count Simonich ostensibly aided Mr M 'Neill, no arguinent was of any avail to divert the monarch from his pur- pose. He again set out in the summer, and, invading the Herat territory in November 1837, began the siege on the 23d of that month.

Not until September in the following year did the Persian army withdraw from before the walls of the city ; and then the move- ment only took place on the action of the British Government. Ordinary pressure and argument had failed. It had become neces- sary to use strong language, and to resort to strong measures, the purport of which could not be mistaken. Mr M'Neill, who had joined the Persian camp on 6th April, left it again on 7th June. He had in this interval done all in his power to effect a reasonable agreement between the contending parties by personal communi- cation with Afghans in Herat as well as with the shah and his minister ; but both in this respect and in the matter of a com-

mercial treaty with England, then under negotiation, his efforts had –

been met with evasion and latent hostility, and this last feeling had been notably evinced in the seizure and violent treatment of a messenger bearing an official communication from a foreign Govern- ment to the British minister at Tehran. The Russian envoy, who had appeared among the tents of the besieging army almost simul- taneously with his English colleague, no sooner found himself alone in his diplomacy than he resumed his aggressive counscls, and little more than a fortnight had elapsed since Mr M'Ncill's departure when a vigorous assault, planned, it is asserted, by

Count Simonich himself, was made upon Herat. The Persians attacked at five points, at one of which they would in all likelihood have been successful had not the Afghans been aided by Eldred Pottinger, a young Englishman, who with the science of an artillery officer combined a courage and determination which inevitably influenced his subordinates. Through his exertions the assailants were beaten back, as they were also independently at the other points noted. Still the garrison was disheartened; and, had not Colonel Stoddart's arrival on 11th August to threaten the shah with British inter- vention put a stop to further action, there is no knowing what mischief might have resulted from the incompetence and intrigues of Kamran and his advisers. As it happened, Colonel Stoddart's firm attitude and refusal to allow any but British mediators to decide the pending dispute won the day ; and that officer was able to report that on 9th September Muhammad Shah had "mounted his horse" and gone from before the walls of the beleaguered city. The siege of Herat was the great event in the reign of Muhammad Shah. It lasted for nearly ten months; and the story of its pro- gress 1s a strange record of a desultory campaign in which intrigue and conspiracy were the continuously working agencies, while military action was spasmodie. The British expedition in support of Shah Shuj'a, which may be called its natural consequence, in- volves a question foreign to the present narrative. Persia's cou-

nexion with Afghanistan can only be partial, and confined to Herat, Kabul, Kandahar, or one section of the country only. A united Afghanistan would always be distasteful to her. —

The remainder of the king's reign was marked by new difficul- ties with the British Government; the rebellion of Agha Khan Mahlati, otherwise known as the chief of the Assassins; a new rupture with Turkey; the banishment of the asafu 'd-daulah, governor of Khurasan, followed by the insurrection and defeat of his son; and the rise of the sect of the Babis. The first of these only calls for any detailed aecount.

In the demands of the British Government was included the Difi- cession by Persia of places such as Ghurian, Farah, and Sabzawar, culty which had been taken during the war from the Afghaus, as well as with

reparation for the violence offered to the courier of the British legation. The shah, in ill-humour at his fruitless expedition to Herat, deferred compliance with these requisitions, and indeed sought to evade them altogether. M‘Neill gave a certain time for decision, at the end of which, no satisfactory reply having reached him, he broke off diplomatic relations, ordered the British officers lent to the shah to proceed towards Baghdad en route to India, and retired to Arzrum with the members of his mission. On the Persian side, charges were made against M‘Neill, and a special envoy, sent to England to support them, was instructed to represent the so- called injuries which British diplomatic action had inflicted on the shah. An endeavour was at the same time made to interest the cabinets of Europe in influencing the British Government on behalf of Persia. The envoy managed to obtain an interview with the minister of foreign affairs in London, who, in July 1839, supplied him with a statement, fuller than before, of all English demands upon his country. Considerable delay ensued, but the outcome of the whole proceedings was not only acceptance but fulfilment of all the engagements contracted. In the meantime the island of Karak had been taken possession of by an expedition from India. On 11th Oetober 1841 a new mission arrived at Tehran from London, under Mr (now Sir) John M‘Neill, to renew diplomatic relations. It was most cordially received by the shah, and it nced scarcely be added that, as one of its immediate results, Karak was evacuated by the British-Indian troops. There had been a long diplomatic correspondence in Europe on the proceedings of Count Simonich and other Russian officers at Herat. Among the papers is a very important letter from Count Nesselrode to Count Pozzo di Borgo in which Russia declares herself to be the first to counsel the shah to acquiesce in the demand made upon him, because she found ‘‘ justice on the side of England” and ‘‘wrong on the side of Persia.” She withdrew her agent from Kandahar and would “not have with the Afghans any relations but those of commerce, and in no wise any political interests.” She recalled to the English cabinet her wishes before expressed. “To re-establish promptly the relations of friendship between the courts of London and of Tehran; to put_an end to the hostile measures adopted in the Persian Gulf; to abstain

from disturbing the tranquillity of the people of the centre of Asia by nourishing their animosities ; to be contented with competing in industry in those vast countries, but not to engage there in a struggle for political influence ; to respect the independence of the intermediate countries which separate" her own from British territory. Such, it was emphatically stated, was "'the system which England and Russia have a common interest invariably to pursue, in order to prevent tlie possibility of a conflict between these two great powers, which, that they may continue friends, require to

remain each within its own limits, and not to advance against each other in the centre of Asia." 1

Agha \han's rebellion was fostered by the defection to his cause of a large portion of the force sent against him ; but he yielded at last to the local authorities of Karman and _fled the province and country. He afterwards resided many years at Bombay, where, while maintaining among natives a quasi-spiritual character, he is better known among Europeans for his doings on the turf.

The quarrel with Turkey, though specific in the case of indi- vidual actors, was generally about frontier relations and trans- gressions of the border. . Eventually the matter was referred to an Anglo-Russian commission, of which Colonel Williams (since Sir Fenwick Williams of Kars) was president. .A massacre of Persians at Karbala might have seriously complicated the dispute, but, after a first burst of indignation and call for vengeance, an expression of the regret of the Ottoman Government was accepted as a sufficient apology for the occurrence.

The rebellion of the asafu 'd-daulah, maternal uncle of the shah, was punished by exile, while his son, after giving trouble to his opponents, and once gaining a victory over them, took shelter with the Turkmans.

Sa'id Muhammad 'Ali, founder of the Babis, was born at The Shiréz about 1810.2 Adopting a life of seclusion, and practising Babis

a kind of exaggerated Sufism, he followed for some time the call- ing of a dervish, and when at Kazimain near Baghdad he openly asserted his pretensions as a prophet. The Turkish authorities

1 Correspondence relating to Persia and Afghanistan, London, 1839. The annexation of Sind and the Panjab will, it is. presumed, be given as excuses for the partial absorption of Turkestan. But the cases are in no way analogous, The occupation by Russia of the Persian island of Ashurada in the south-east corner of the Caspian followed the British reverses in Kabul of 1841.

2 Lady Sheil. Gobineau says 1824.

would have put him to death, but the Persian consul, claiming him as a subject, saved his life, and sent him to his native place. Thenceforward his career is strange and adventurous; and even when he himself had been committed to prison his agents were

employed in promulgating his doctrine, with sufficient success to _

occasion the issue of a decree making it a capital crime to profess the tenets of Babism. More will be said on the subject shortly.

Before closing the reign of Muhammad Shah note should be taken of a prohibition to import African slaves into Persia, and a commercial treaty with England,—recorded by Watson as gratifying achievements of the period by British diplomatists. The French missions in which occur the names of MM. de Lavalette and de Sartiges were notable in their way, but somewhat barren of results.

In the autumn of 1848 the shah was seized with the malady, or combination of maladies, which caused his death. Gout and erysipelas had, it is said,! ruined his constitution, and he died at his palace in Shamiran on 4th September. He was buried at Kum, where is situated the shrine of Fatima, daughter of Imém Riza, by the side of his grandfather, Fath ‘Ali, and other kings of Persia. In person he is described as short and fat, with an aquiline nose and agreeable countenance.?

On the occasion of his father’s death, Nasru ’d-Din Mirza, who

had been proclaimed wali ‘ahd, or heir-apparent, some years before, was absent at Tabriz, the headquarters of his province of Adar- baijan. Colonel Farrant, then chargé d’affaires on the part of the British Government, in the absence of Coloncl Sheil, who had succeeded Sir John M‘Neill, had, in anticipation of the shah’s decease and consequent trouble, sent a messenger to summon him instantly to Tehran. The British officer, moreover, associated himself with Prince Dolgorouki, the representative of Russia, to secure the young prince’s accession ; and there was no doubt in the minds of the wiser lookers-on that, if the two diplomatists were really of one mind in the matter, they would attain their end in spite of all obstacles.

They did soafter a time, and with the aid of the queen-mother, who, as president of the council, showed much judgment and capacity in conciliating adverse parties. But the six or seven weeks which passed between the death of the one king and the coronation of the other proved a disturbed interval, and full of stirring incident.

The old minister, Hajji Mirza Aghasi, incurred the displeasure of | the influential part of the community by shutting himself up in,

the royal palace with 1200 followers, and had to take refuge in the sanctuary of Shah ‘Abdu ’l-‘Azim near Tehran. On the other hand Mirza Agha Khan, a partisan of the asafu ’d-daulah, and himself an ex-mninister of war, whom the hajji had caused to be banished, was welcomed back to the capital. At Ispahan, Shiraz, and Karman serious riots took place, which were with difficulty sup- pressed. While revolution prevailed in the city, robbery was rife in the province of Yazd ; and from Kazvin the son of ‘Ali Mirza, otherwise called the ‘‘zillu ’s-sultan,” the prince-governor of Tehran, who disputed the succession of Muhammad Shah, came forth to contest the crown with his cousin, the heir-apparent. The last-named incident soon camc to an inglorious termination for its hero. Buta more serious revolt was in full force at Mash- had when, on the 20th of October 1848, the young shah entercd his capital and was crowned at midnight king of Persia.

The chief events in the long reign of the present shah, Nasru ’d-Din, may be reviewed under four heads: (1) the insurrection in Khurasan, (2) the insurrection of the Babis, (8) the fall of the amiru ’n-nizam, and (4) the war with England.

It has been stated that the asafu’d-daulah was a competitor with Hajji Mirza Aghasi for the post of premier in the cabinet of Muhammad Shah, that he was afterwards, in the same reign, exiled for rising in rebellion, and that his son, the salar, took shelter with the Turkmans. Some four months prior to the late king’s decease the latter chief had reappeared in arms against his authority ; he had gained possession of Mashhad itself, driv- ing the prince-governor, Hamza Mirza, into the citadel; and so firm was his attitude that Yar Muhammad of Herat, who had come to help the Government officials, had retired after a fruitless co-operation, drawing away the prince-governor also. The salar now defied Murad Mirza, Nasru ’d-Din’s uncle, who was besieging the city ; he found secret means of obtaining money and supplies ; and, by occasionally repelling an assault or effecting a skilful sortie, he kept up a prestige of power, which, added to his personal popu- larity, commanded the sympathy and good wishes of the multitude. In April 1850, after a siege of more than eighteen months, fortune turned against the bold insurgent, and negotiations were opened between the citizens and besiegers for the surrender of the town and citadel. Treachery may have had to do with the result, for when the shah’s troops entered the holy city the salar sought refuge in the mosque of Imam Riza, and was forcibly expelled. Je and _ his brother were seized and put to death, the instrument used being, according to Watson, “the bowstring of Eastern story.” The con- queror of Mashhad, Murad Mirza, became afterwards himself the prince-governor of Khurasan.

1 Watson. 2 Markhani.

Lady Sheil has written a graphic account of the death of Sa‘id 1848-1851.

Muhaminad ‘Ali. After repeated arrests and warnings to no pur- pose the spread of his doctrines had become so rapid among all classes that it was thought necessary to remove him by the severest punishment of the law. He was conveyed to Tabriz, and brought out in the great square for execution.

“A company of soldiers was ordered to despatch Bab by a volley. When the smoke had cleared away BAb had disappeared from sight. It had so happened that none of the balls had touched him, and, prompted by an impulse to preserve his life, he rushed from the spot. Had Bab possessed sufficient presence of inind to have fled to the bazar . . . he would in all probability have succeeded in effecting his escape. A miracle palpable to all Tabriz would have been performed, and a new creed would have been established. But he turned in the opposite direction, and hid himself in the guard-room, where he was immediately discovered, brought out, and shot. His body was thrown into the ditch of the town, where it was devoured by the half-wild dogs which abound outside a Persian city. Bab possessed a mild and benignant counte- nance, his manners were composed and dignified, his eloquence was impressive, and he wrote rapidly and well.”

Later on she wrote—

“This year (1850) seven Babis were executed at Tehran for an alleged con- Spiracy against the life of the prime minister. Their fate excited general sym- pathy, for every one knew that no criminal act had been committed, and suspected the accusation to be a pretence. ... Previously to decapitation they received an offer of pardon, on the condition of reciting the kalama (or Muhammadan creed). . . . It was rejected, and these visionaries died stedfast in their faith. . . . In Zanjan the insurrection, or the religious movement, as the Babis termed it, broke out with violence. This city is only 200 miles from Tehran, midway to Tabriz. At its head was a mulla of repute and renown, who, with his associates, retired into an angle of the city, which they strength- ened as best they could. For several months they defended themselves witli unconquerable resolution against a large force in infantry and guns, sent against them from Tehran. Jt was their readiness to meet death that made the Babis so formidable to their assailants. From street to street, from house to house, from cellar to cellar, they fought without flinching. All were killed at their posts, excepting a few who were afterwards bayoneted by the troops in cold blood.” ;

_ In the summer of 1852 his majesty was attacked, while riding in the vicinity of Tehran, by four men, one of whom fired a pistol and slightly wounded him. This man was killed, and two others were captured by the

royal attendants; the fourth jumped down a well. The existence of a conspiracy was then discovered, in which some forty persons were implicated ; and ten of the con- spirators (one a young woman) were put to death,—some under cruel torture. A short reign of terror then ensued which is well

illustrated in the following extract from Watson's History.

"The prime minister . . . was fearful of drawing down upon himself and his family the vengeance of the followers of the Bab; and, in order that others might be implicated in these executions, he hit upon the device of assigning a criminal to each department of the state; the several ministers of the Shah being thus compelled to act as executioners. The minister for foreign aflairs, the minister of finance, the son of the prime minister, the adjutant-general of the army, and the master of the mint, each fired the first shot, or made the first cut with a sabre, at the culprits assigned to their several departments, respectively. The artillery, the infantry, the camel-artillery, and the cavalry, eachi had a victim.3. . . But the result of all this slaughter was, as might have been expected, to create a feeling of sympathy for the Babis, whose crime was lost sight of in the punishment which had overtaken them. They inet their fate with the utmost firmness, and none of them cared to accept the life which: was offered to them on the simple condition of reciting the Muslim creed. While the lighted candles were burning the flesh of one follower of the Bab, he was urged by the chief magistrate of Tehran to curse the Bab and live. He would not renounce the Bab; but he cursed the magistrate who tempted hiin to do so, he cursed the Shah, and even cursed the prophet Muham- mad, his spirit rising superior to the agony of his torture." d

The movement, however, was not only felt in Tehran and Zanjan but also in Mazandaran, Fars, Karman, and Tabriz ; and, in spite of the fearful punishments with which the professors of the doctrine have been visited, the complete extinction of Babism by fire and sword is a consummation hardly to be set within the range of

human probability. —_ Mirza Taki, the amiru 'n-nizim (vulgarly amir nizam), or com-

Perse- cution of the Babis.

Fall of

mander-in-chief, was a good specimen of the self-made man of Mirza

Persia. Shaéh's brother, and he had filled high and important offices of

state and amassed much wealth when he was made by the young shah Nasru'd-Din, on his accession, both his brother-in-law and his prime minister. The choice was an admirable one ; he was honest, hard-working, and liberal according to his lights ; and the services of a loyal and capable adviser were secured for the new regime. For the rebellion in Khurdsan and all emergencies that occurred during his three years' tenure of office, he was the same active and intelligent mentor that he had been when associated with the prince in his government of Adarbaijan. Unfortunately, he did not boast the confidence of the queen-mother ; and this circumstance greatly strengthened the hands of those eneinies whom an honest minister must ever raisc around him in a corrupt Oriental state. For a time the shah closed his eyes to the accusations and insinuations breathed against him; but at last he fell under the evil influence of designing counsellors, and acts which should have redounded to the minister's credit became the charges on which he lost his office and his life. He was credited with an intention to grasp in his own hands the royal power ; his influence over the army was

3 "'Hyen the Shah's admirable French physician, the late lamented Dr Cloquet, was invited to show his loyalty by following the cxample of the rest of the court. He excused himself, and pleasantly said that he killed too many men professionally to permit him to increase their number by any voluntary hoimi-

cide on his part" (Lady Sheil).

He was the son of a cook of Bahrdém Mirza, Muhammad Taki.

1851-1872.

cited as a cause of danger; and on the night of 138th November 1851 he was summoned to the palace and informed that he was no longer premier. Mirza Agha Khan, the "'itimadu 'd-daulah," was named to succeed him, and had been accordingly raised to the dignity of ''sadr'azim."' As the hostile faction pressed the neces- sity of the ex-minister's removal from the capital, he was offered the choice of the government of Fars, Ispahan, or Kum. He declined all; but, through the mediation of Colonel Sheil, he was afterwards offered and accepted Kashan. It is not probable that Mirza Taki, once fallen from his high estatc, would have long survived, or rather would have been long suffered by his rivals or foes to survive, this crisis in his carecr. For intriguers and ehar- latans he was too real a character to be harmless, and means would have doubtless been devised to get rid of him altogether. As it happened, opportunity was taken of an ill-timed if well-meant interference on his behalf of the Russian legation, and the shah's ire was aroused more than ever against him.

'Once having got him out of the way," writes Major Euan Smith from information gathered on the scene of the tragedy he is recounting, "'his enemies had full play, and, forty days after his banishment, prevailed upon the king to issue orders for his execution. . .. The executioners arrived at Fin, and, seeing the ex-minister, told him that they had been sent by the shah to ask after his health. Mirza Taki Khan at once saw that his fate was sealed; he merely asked that, instead of having his throat cut, he might be allowed to die in his own way. The request was granted; he went into the hammdm, where the king's barber opened the two principal arteries in each arm, and he quietly sat there and bled to death." !

Po its Wee

| HISTORY.

'This occurred_in December, the same month in which the British envoy quitted Tehran. In the first week of 1856, negotiations were opened at Constantinople, when the Persian chargé d'affaires in that city related his version of the quarrel to our well-known ambassador there. Discussion was prolonged for some months in 1856, during which an 'ultimatum' from Lord Clarendon had been put forward without avail; and in October, a plenipotentiary nained Farrukh Khan arrived at the Porte with the Shah's

instructions to settle the whole matter in dispute. But although this personage went so far as to signa declaration that Herat should immediately be evacuated by the troops of his sovereign, other engagements were required from him which he could not undertake, and the attempt at a settlement failed. Lord Stratford presented a new ‘ultimatum’ on November 22d; but it was then too late to avert an out- break. The news that Herat had been captured on October 26th, and that three proclamations declaring war against Persia had been issued by the governor-general of India on November Ist, soon reached Constantinople, and Farrukh Khan’s occupation was, for the moment, gone.”

In less than three weeks after issue by the governor-general of India of the proclamation of war with Persia the Sind division of the field force left Karachi (Kurrachee). On 18th January following the Bombay Government orders notified the formation of a second division under Lieutenant-General Sir James Outram. Before the general arrived the island of Karak and part of Bushahr had both been occupied, and the fort of Rishir had been attaeked and car- ried. After the general’s arrival the march upon Barazjin and the engagement at Khushab—two places on the road to Shiraz— and the operations at Muhamrah and the Karun river deeided the campaign in favour of England. On 5th April, at Muhamrah, Sir James Outram received the news that the treaty of peace had

Rupture | When England was engaged in the Crimean War of 1854-55 her | been signed in Paris, where Lord Cowley and Farrukh Khan had with alliance with a Muhammadan power in no way added to her popu- | conducted the negotiations. The stipulations regarding Herat were England, larity or strengthened her position in Persia. The Sunni Turk | much as before; but there were to be apologies made to the mission

was almost a greater enemy to his neighbour the Shi‘ah than the formidable Muscovite, who had curtailed him of so large a section of his territory west of the Caspian. Hence during the war Persia coquetted with Russia as to a possible secret alliance, rather than

with France or England. Moreover, since Sir John M‘Neill’s arrival ‘

in Tehran in 1841, formally to repair the breach with Muhammad Shah, there had been little differences, demands, and explanations, which were portentous of a storm in the future ; and these symptoms had culminated in 1856, the year of the peace with Russia. As to Afghanistan, the wazir Yar Muhammad had in 1842, when the British troops were perishing in the passes, or otherwise in the midst of dangers, caused Kamran to be suffocated in his prison. Since that event hc had himself reigned supreme in Herat, and, dying in 1851, was succeeded by his son Sa‘id Muhammad. This chief soon entered upon a series of intrigues in the Persian interests, and, among other acts offensive to Great Britain, suffered one ‘Abbas Kult, who had, under guise of friendship, betrayed the cause of the salar at Mashhad, to occupy the citadel of Herat, and again place a detachment of the shah’s troops in Ghurian. Colonel Sheil remoustrated, and obtained a new engagement of non-interference with Herat from the Persian Government, as well as the recall of ‘Abbas Kuli. In September 1855 Muhammad Yusuf Sdduzai seized upon Herat, putting Sa‘id Muhammad to death with some of his followers who were supposed accomplices in the murder of lis uncle Kamran.

About this time Kohan Dil Khan, one of the chiefs of Kandahar, died, and Dost Muhammad of Kabul annexed the city to his terri- tory. Some relations of the deceased chief made their escape to Tehran, and the shah, listening to their complaint, directed the prince-governor of Mashhad to march across to the eastern frontier and occupy Herat, declaring that an invasion of Persia was imminent. Such was the situation when the Hon. Mr Murray was fulfilling his second year of duty at the legation in Tehran. He had relieved Mr Taylour Thomson, Colonel Sheil’s locwm tenens, at a time when relations were somewhat strained, and coolness and want of con- fidence were daily becoming more apparent between the British representative and the court to which he was accredited. The following passage is from a recently-published work treating of the place and period.?

“At the end of 1855, our relations with the court of Tehran were anything but satisfactory. Even the outward semblance of civility towards the English representative was disregarded, and, in like manner, the veneer of courtesy was wanting in the official communications bearing the sign-manual of the Shah or

his responsible minister. So great was the tension of ill-feeling occasioned, that our envoy withdrew to Baghdad, declining to resume the functions of his

for past insolence and rudeness, and the slave trade was to be sup- pressed in the Persian Gulf.

With the exception of a small force retained at Bushahr under General John Jacob for the three months assigned for execution of the ratifications and giving effect to certain stipulations of the treaty with regard to Afghanistan, the British troops returned to India, where their presence was greatly needed, owing to the out- break of the mutiny. The envoy retraced his steps from Baghdad to Tehran, to receive the excuses of the shah's minister. Before Mr Murray's arrival, however, an act of so-called retaliation, but savouring rather of sheer revenge, had been perpetrated, which could not have commended itself to the mind of an English diplo- matist on the spot. One of the articles of the treaty of peace pro- vided for the release of all prisoners taken by the Persians at Herat. Among these was the ex-ruler Muhammad Yusuf, who, having resisted the besieging army, had been brought captive to Tehran. The provision of merey was in his case tantamount to a sentence of savage death, for the relatives of Sa'id Muhammad (whom he had slain in return for the murder of his uncle Shah Kamran) awaited his release literally to hew him to pieces in front of the Kasri Kajar, a royal palace about 5 miles from the walls of the capital. When Colonel Taylor and the officers deputed with him to certify the evacuation of Herat by the Persian soldiers reached their destination, they were received by a newly-appointed governor, Sultan Ahmad Khan, better known as Sultan Jan, nephew and son-in-law of the amir Dost Muhammad. It is unnecessary to refer to other than the political reasons of the war. They soon ceased to interest the minds of even European residents in Persia ; and the war became a thing of the past. Mr Murray was succeeded in 1859 by Sir Henry Rawlinson as British envoy. No more popular nomination could have been made than that of this justly ~~dis~~ tinguished Oriental statesman; but he barely remained a year at the work. Retiring at his own request, he was succeeded by Mr Charles Alison, whose marvellous acquaintance with Turks and their language had rendered him an invaluable secretary at Constantinople.

It now only remains to mention those incidents which have engaged the attention of the British Government, or in which British officers have had to play a part. Such are the establishment of a telegraph, the settlement of the Perso-Baluch, and the arbi- tration on the Perso-Afghan frontier. The proceedings of Russia in the countries east of the Caspian and bordering on the Oxus have, moreover, a bearing morc or less direct on the interests of Great Britain, with especial reference to her Indian empire.

office until ample apology lad been made, by certain persons named, for certain offences charged, after a manner detailed by himself. A crisis such as this may, it is true, be brought about in Persia by ourselves, through defective diplomacy and ignorance of the native character, ways, prejudices, and, to some extent, language; butit may also arise from many other causes—among others,

The question of constructing a telegraph in Persia as a link in Anglo-}) the overland line to connect England with India was broached in Indian} Tehran by Colonel Patrick Stewart and Captain Champain, officers telegra), of engineers, in 1862, and an agreement on the subject con-lime |}

a wilful pre-determination on the part of the local government. Once instructed to give offence to strangers and provoke a rupture, the Persian is a wonderful adept in fulfilling his instructions; and will prove as capable in bandying insult and innuendo as inthe more complex and refined game of compliment and cajolery. In the present instance, there was in the attitude of Persia evidence of wilfulness and an exhibition of more than ordinary temper; for not only were the Shah’s own words full of insult, but his expressions were supplemented by deeds. Finally, by sending a large military expedition under his royal uncle, Prince Murad Mirza, to take possession of Herat, he showed his contempt of treaties, and aimed a blow at England’s Eastern policy in the most sensitive part.

1 Eastern Persia, vol. i. p. 156. The palace of Fin, near Kashan, was the residence of the amir nizim.

2 James Outram: a Biography, vol. ji., London, 1880.

cluded by Mr Edward Eastwick, when ehargé d'affaires, at the close of that year. Three years later a more formal convention, including a second wire, was signed by Mr Alison and the Persian foreign minister ; meantime the work had been actively carried on, and communication opened on the one side between Bushahr and Karachi and the Makran coast by cable, and on the other between Bushahr and Baghdad via Tehran. The untrustworthy character of the line through Asiatic Turkey caused a subsequent change of direction ; and an alternative line—the Indo-European—from London to Tehran, through Russia and along the eastern shores of the Black Sea, was constructed, and has worked well since 1872,

in conjunction with the Persian land telegraph system and the Bushahr-Karachi line.}

The Sistan mission, under Major-General (afterwards Sir Fred- eric) Goldsmid, left England in August 1870, and reached Tehran on 3d October. Thence it proceeded to Ispahau, from which city it moved to Baluchistan, instead of seeking its original destina- tion. Difficulties had arisen both in arranging the preliminaries to arbitration and owing to the disordered state of Afghanistan, and it was therefore deemed advisable to commence operations by set- tling a frontier dispute between Persia and the Kelat state. Unfor- tunately, the obstructions thrown in the way of this settlement by the Persian commissioner, the untoward appearance at Bampur of an unexpected body of Keldtis, and the absence of definite instructions marred the fulfilment of the programme sketched out; but a line of boundary was proposed, which has since been accepted by the litigants, and which, except perhaps in the case of a small district on the north, has, it is believed, been generally respected. In the following year the same mission, accompanied by the same Persian commissioner, proceeded to Sistan, where it remained for more than five weeks, prosecuting its inquiries, until joined by another mis- sion from India, under Major-General (afterwards Sir Richard) Pollock, accompanying the Afghan commissioner. Complications then ensued by the determined refusal of the two native officials to meet in conference ; and the arbitrator had no course available but to take advantage of the notes already obtained on the spot, and return with them to Tehran,

there to deliver his decision. This was done on 19th August 1872. The contending parties appealed to the British secretary of state for foreign affairs, as provided by previous understanding ; but the decision held good, and was event- ually accepted on both sides (see above, p. 619).

The Russo-Persian boundary question of 1881 might have been considered to belong to history, but has been treated elsewhere. It is, however, a strictly pacific arrangement, and has nothing in common with the treaties of Gulistan or Turkmanchai.

Mr Alison died at Tehran in April 1872. Mr Ranald Thomson, whose experience of Persia is of thirty-five years' duration, then

became chargé d'affaires, and held the post until relieved by his brother, Mr (since Sir) Taylour Thomson from Chili. On the re- tirement of the latter in April 1879, Mr (sinceSir Ranald) Thomson succeeded as envoy. During the later years of the reign of Nasru'd- Din several Englishmen have distinguished themselves as explorers in the north-east. Among them the names of O'Donovan, Napier, Baker, Gill, Clayton, and Stewart will be readily remembered. Colonels Bateman-Champain, Murdoch Smith, Sir Oliver St John, Beresford Lovett, and the late Major Pierson, all enginecr officers connected with the telegraph, have made their mark in the country. Nasru'd-Din Shah, unlike his predecessors, has paid two visits to Europe,—one in 1873 and one in 1879. On the first occasion only he extended his journey to England, and was then attended by his ''sadr 'azim," or prime minister, the late Mirza Husain Khan, an able and enlightened adviser, withal a Grand Cross of the Star of India. His second visit was to Russia, Germany, France, and Austria, but he did not cross the Channel. Among the shah's latest projects are the possession of a little fleet in the Persian Gulf, and of some vessels on the Karin. In 1884 it was stated that a thousand-ton steamer (the "' Persepolis") and a smaller one for river ee were actually in course of construction. The route by the Karun was to be opened, and a carriageable road constructed from Shustar to Tehran, viv Dizful, Khuramabad, Burujird, Sultanabad, and Kim. Orders had been given for

building two tugs to pull native craft up the Karin. The arrangements for the road, transport, and administration from Muhamrah to Tehran were confided to General Houtum Schindler, the inspector-general of Persian telegraphs.” The works which have been mainly followed and quoted in the above his- torical sketch are Sir Jolin Malcolm’s History of Persia; the more modern histories by Robert Grant Watson and Clements Markham; the Travels of Venetians in Persia, edited by Lord Stanley of Alderley, printed for the Hakluyt Society (1873); and the History of the late Revolutions in Persia, taken from the memoirs of Father Krusinski, procurator of the Jesuits at Ispahan (1733). Those which have contributed information in a minor degrec are Lady Sheil’s Diary in Persia; Erskine’s Buibar; Chardin’s Travels, annotated by Langlés ; Professor Creasy’s History of the Ottoman Turks; Ferrier’s History

of the Afghans; Telegraph and Travel (1874); and others mentioned in the footnotes. (F. J. G.)

PART IIL.—LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE.

Section I.—Prrstan (IRANIAN) LANGUAGES.

Under the name of Persian is included the whole of that great family of languages occupying a field nearly coincident with the modern Iran, of which true Persian is simply the western division. It is therefore common and more correct to speak of the Iranian family. The original native name of the race which spoke these tongues was Arian. King Darius is called on an inscriptio. “‘a Persian, son of a Persian, an Arian of Arian race”; and the followers of the Zoroastrian religion in their earliest records never give them- selves any other title but Airyavs danghavé, that is to say, “* Arian races.” The province of the Iranian language is bounded on the west by the Semitic, on the north and north-east by the Ural-altaic or Turanian, and on the south-east by the kindred language of India.

The Iranian family of languages is one of the seven great branches of the Indo-European stem, and was first recognized as such by Sir William Jones and Friedrich Schlegel. Whatever uncertainty still remains as to the exact relationship between all the several branches of the Indo-European family, it is at least certain that Indian and Persian belong together more closely

than the rest, and that they continued to develop side by side for a long period after the other branches had been already severed from the parent stem.

The common characteristics of all Iranian languages, which dis- tinguish them especially from Sanskrit, are as follows.

(1) Change of the original s into the spirant h. Thus—

Sanskrit. Zend, Old Persian. New Persian. sindhu (Indus) hindu hindu hind sarva (all) haurva haruva har sama (whole) hama hama ham santi (sunt) henti hantiy hend.

(2) Change of the original aspirates gh, dh, bh (=x, 9, ¢) into the corresponding medials—

Sanskrit. Zend. Old Persian. New Persian. bhuimi (earth) bumi bumi bum dhita (Gerés) data data dad gharma (heat) garema garma garm.

(3) %, t, p before a consonant are changed into the spirants kh,

?

Sanskrit. Zend. Old Persian. New Persian. prathama (first) fratema fratama fradum (Parsi) kratu (insight) khratu ano khirad.

(4) The development of soft sibilants—

1 The Indo-European Telegraph Company have now (1884), on rather more than 450 miles of ire, from i ulfa on tle Arras to Tehran, in what is called the “Maintenance Department,” six stations with fifteen employés; the ‘‘com- mercial” stations, with twenty employés, are at Tabriz and Tehran only. The Persian telegraph system, under British officers, has fourteen stations in all, the chief being at Teliran, Ispahan, Shiraz, and Bushahr. The official staff numbers between thirty-five and forty. The number of paid words passing through these lines has steadily inereased from 305,485 in 1877 to 1,177,412 in 1883. The average time taken by a message from

London to Calcutta via Tehran varies from one and a half to two and a half hours.

Sanskrit. Zend. Old Persian. New Persian. Asuré Medhas 3 Ahuro Mazdéo Auraniazda Ormuzd bahu (arm) bazu ete bazu

hima (hiems) zima oaae zim.

Our knowledge of the Iranian languages in older periods is too fragmentary to allow of our giving a complete account of this family and of its special historical development. It will be sufficient here to distinguish the main types of the older and the more recent periods. From antiquity we have sufficient knowledge of two dialects, the first belonging to eastern Iran, the second to western.

1. Zend, or Old Bactrian.—Neither of these two titles is well Zend.

chosen. The name Old Bactrian suggests that the language was limited to the small district of Bactria, or at least that 1t was spoken there,—which is, at the most, only an hypothesis. Zend, again (originally dzaintish), is not the name ofa language, as Anquetil Duperron supposed, but means “interpretation ” or “explanation,” and is specially applied to the medieval Pahlavi translation of the Avesta. Our “Zend-Avesta” does not mean the Avesta in the Zend language, but is an incorrect transcription of the original expression “ Avistak va zand,” é.¢., “ the holy text (Avesta) together with the translation.” But, since we still lack sure data to fix the home of this language with any certainty, the convenient name of Zend has become generally established in Europe, and may be provisionally retained. But the home of the Zend language was certainly in eastern Iran ; all attempts to seek it farther west—e.9., in Media 4—must be regarded as failures.

Zend is the language of the so-called Avesta,® the holy book of the Persians, containing the oldest documents of the religion of Zoroaster. Besides this important monument, which is about twice as large as the Iliad and Odyssey put together, we only possess very scanty relics of the Zend language in medieval glosses and scattered quotations in Pahlavi books. These remains, however, suffice to give a complete insight into the structure of the language. Not only amongst Iranian languages but amongst all the

languages of the Indo-European group, Zend takes one of the very highest places in

2 In the transcription of proper names in Part II. an endeavour to render the pronunciation current in Persia has caused the modification of the more conventional, and perhaps the more strictly correct, mode elsewhere followed inthis work. On this principle it is that the e is replaced by @ and a, and the o by u, as in Makran for Mekran, Rigan for Regan, Khurasan for Khorasan, &e. In Arabic words, however, the w is not exchanged for v, nor is the y necessarily used for the (5, except where the repetition of ¢ would be confusing, as in sdiyid. Asa general rule the system of spelling Indian words, accepted for official correspondence, has been applied to the transliteration of Persian. When a final a is not accented it represents ah, as kara for kdrah, and so forth.

3 Name of the supreme,god of the Persians. :

4 Cp. I. Darmesteter, Etudes Iraniennes, i. 10 (Paris, 1883).

5 As was said above, this, and not Zend-Avesta, is the correct title for the original text of the Persian Bible. The origin of the word is doubtful, and we cannot point to it before the time of the Sasanians. Perhaps it means “announcement,” “revelation.”

importance for the comparative philologist. In age it almost rivals Sanskrit ; in primitiveness it surpasses that language in many points ; it is inferior only in respect of its less extensive literature, and because it has not been made the subject of systematic gram- matical treatment. The age of Zend must be examincd in connexion with the age of the Avesta. the work of a single author or of any one age, but embraces collec- tions produced during a long period. “The view which became current through Anquetil Duperron, that the Avesta is throughout the work of Zoroaster (in Zend, Zarathushtra), the founder of the religion, has long been abandoned as untenable. But the opposite view, which is now frequently accepted, that not a single word in the book can lay claim to the authorship of Zoroaster, also appears on closer study too sweeping. In the Avesta two stages of the language are plainly

distinguishable, for which the supposition of local dialectic variation is not sufficient explanation, but which appear rather to be an older and a younger stage in the development of the same language. The older is represented in but a small part of the whole work, the so-called Gdthds or songs. These songs form the true kernel of the book Yasna!; they must have been in existence long

before all the other parts of the Avesta, throughout the whole of

which allusions to them occur. These gathas are what they claim to be, and what they are honoured in the whole Avesta as being, — the actual productions of fhe prophet himself or of his time. They bear in themselves irrefutable proofs of their authenticity, bringing us face to face not with the Zoroaster of the legends but with a real person, announcing a new doctrine and way of salvation, no super- natural Being assured of victory, as he is represented in later times, but a mere man, often himself despairing of his final success, and

struggling not with spirits and demons but with human conflicts of

every sort, in the midst of a society of fellow-believers which was yet feeble and in its earliest infancy. It is almost impossible that a much later period could have produced such unpreteutious and

almost depreciatory representations of the deeds and personality of

the prophet ; certainly nothing of the kind is found outside the gathas. If, then, the gathds reach back to the time of Zoroaster, and he himself, according to the most probable estimate, lived as early as the 14th century B.c., the oldest component parts of the Avesta are hardly inferior in age to the oldest Vedic hymns. The gathas are still extremely rough in style and expression ; the lan- guage is richer in forms than the more recent Zend ; and the voca- bulary shows important differences, The predominance of the long vowels is a marked characteristic, the constant appearance of a long final vowel contrasting with the preference for a final short in the later speech.

Sanskrit. Gathd, Later Zend. abhi (near) aibi aiwi tha (work) izha, izha.

The clearest evidence of the extreme age of the language of the gathds is its striking resemblance to the oldest Sanskrit, the language of the Vedic poems. The gatha language (much more than the later Zend) and the language of the Vedas have a close resemblance, exceeding that of any two Romanic languages ; they seem hardly more than two dialects of one tongue. Whole strophes of the gathas can be turned into good old Sanskrit by the applica- tion of certain phonetic laws ; for example—

“mat vao paddish ya frasruta izhay4o pairijasai mazda ustanazasto at vao asha aredrahyaca nemangha at vao vanghéush mananghd hunaretata,” becomes in Sanskrit—

The language of the other parts of the Avesta is more modern, but not all of one date, so that we can follow the gradual decline of Zend in the Avesta itself. The later the date of a text, the simpler is the grammar, the more lax the use of the cases. We have no chronological points by which to fix the date when Zend

Persian tradition at least regards the collection and arrangement of the holy texts as At that period they are said to have been already written out on dressed cowhides and preserved in

a very imperfect knowledge of the original language. Its value for modern philology has been the subject of much needless contro-

Visparad, 8 collection of prayers and forms fur divine service ; (2) Vendidad,

2 “With verses of my making, which now are heard, and with prayerful

hands, I come before thee, Mazda, and with the sincere I ility of i man and with the believer’s song of praise.” ie a

PERS 1 &#

In its present forni the Avesta is not

[LANGUAGE,

versy amongst European scholars. It is only a secondary means towards the comprehension of the ancient text, and must be used with discrimination. A logical system of comparative exegesis, aided by constant reference to Sanskrit, its nearest ally, and to the other Ivanian dialects, is the best means of recovering the lost sense of the Zend texts. i h

The phonetic system of Zend consists of simple signs which express the different shades of sound in the language with great precision. In the vowel-system a notable feature is the presence of the short vowels ¢ and 0, which are not found in Sanskrit and Old Persian ; thus the Sanskrit santi, Old Persian hantiy, becomes henti in Zend. The use of the vowels is complicated by a tendency to combinations of vowels and to epenthesis, 7.¢., the transposition of weak vowels into the next syllable; e.g., Sanskrit bharatt, Zend baraiti (he carries); Old Persian margu, Zend méurva (Mery) ; Sanskrit rinakti, Zend irinakhtt. Triphthongs are not uncommon; é.g., Sanskrit agvebhyas (dative plural of agva, a horse) is in Zend aspaéibyé ; Sanskrit krnoti (he does), Zend kerenaoiti. Zend has also a great tendency to insert irrational vowels, especially near liquids ; owing to this the words scem rather inflated 5 2.9.5 SAVvYA (on the left) becomes in Zend hdvaya; bhrdjati (it glitters), Zend bardzattt ; gnd (-yurj), Zend gend. In the consonantal system we are struck by the abundance of sibilants (s and sh, in three forms of modification, z and zh) and nasals (five in number), and by the complete absence of 7. A characteristic phonetic change is that of rt into sh; e.g., Zend asha for Sanskrit rla, Old Persian arta (in Artaxerxes) ; fravashi for Pahlavi fravardin, New Persian Server (the spirits of the dead). The verb displays a like abundance of primary forms with Sanskrit, but the conjugation by periphrasis is only slightly developed. The noun has the same eight cases as in Sanskrit. In the gathds there is a special ablative, limited, as in Sanskrit, to the “a” stems, whilst in later Zend the ablative is extended to all the stems indifferently.

We do not know in what character Zend was written before the time of Alexander. From the Sasanian period we find an alpha- betie and very legible character in use, derived from Sasanian Pahlavi, and closely resembling the younger Pallavi found in books. The oldest known manuscripts are of the 14th century A.D.

Although the existence of the Zend language was known to the Oxford scholar Hyde, the Frenchman Anquetil Duperron, who went to the East Indics in 1755 to visit the Parsi priests, was the first to draw the attention of the learned world to the subject. Scientific study of Zend texts began with E. Burnouf, and has since then made rapid strides, especially since the Vedas have opened to us a knowledge of the oldest Sanskrit.

2. Old Persian.—This is the language of the ancient Persians Old properly so called,* in all probability the mother-tongue of Middle Persian. Persian of the Pahlavi texts, and of New Persian, We know Old Persian from the rock-inscriptions of the Achemenians, now fully deciphered. Most of them, and these the longest, date from the time of Darius (Old Persian, Darayavaush) ; but we have specimens as late as Artaxerxes Ochus. In the latest inscriptions the language is already much degraded; but on the whole it is almost as antique as Zend, with which it has many points in common. For instance, if we take a sentence from an inscription of Darius, as—

“ Auramazda hya imam bumim ada hya avam asmanam ada hya martiyam ada hya siyatim ada martiyahya hya Darayavaum khshayathiyam akunaush aivam paruvnam khshayathiyam,” it would be in Zend—

“‘Ahur6 mazddo yé imam bimim adat yé aom asmanem adat yo mashim adat y6 shaitim addt mashyahé yé dérayatvoham khshaétem akerenaot oytim pouru- nam khshaétem.” 5

The phonetic system in Old Persian is much simpler than in Zend ; we reckon twenty-four letters in all. The short vowels e, oare wanting; in their place the old “a” sound still appears as in Sanskrit, ¢.g., Zend bagem, Old Persian bagam, Sanskrit bhagam ; Old Persian hamarana, Zend hamerena, Sanskrit samarana. As regards consonants, it is noticeable that the older z (soft s) still preserved in Zend passes into d,—a rule that still holds in New Persian ; compare—

Sanskrit. Zend. Old Persian. New Persian. hasta (hand) zasta dasta dast jrayas (sea) zrayo daraya darya aham (1) azem adam

Also Old Persian has no special 7. Final consonants are almost entirely wanting. In this respect Old Persian goes much farther than the kindred

idioms, ¢.g., Old Persian abara, Sanskrit abharat, Zend abarat, pepe ; nominative baga, root-form baga-s, Sanskrit

3 Grammar by Spiegel (Leipsic, 1867) ; Dictionary by Justi (Leipsic, 1864); edition of the Avesta by Westergaard (Copenhagen, 1852), translation into German by Spiegel (Leipsic, 1852), and into English by Darmesteter (Oxford, 1880) in the Sacred Books of the Eust. F

4 And perhaps of the Medes. Although we have no record of the Median language, we cannot regard it as differing to any great extent from the Persian. The Medes and Persians were two closely-connected races. There is nothing to justify us in looking for the true Median language either in the cuneiform writings of the second class or in Zend.

5 “Ormnzd, who created this earth and that heaven, who created man and man’s dwelling-place, who made Darius king, the one and only king of many.

LITERATURE. |

bhagas. The differences in declension between Old Persian and Zend are unimportant.

Old Persian inscriptions are written in the cuneiform character of the simplest form, known as the “first class.’ Most of the inscriptions have besides two, translations into the more complicated kinds of cuneiform character of two other languages of the Persian empire. One of these is the Assyrian; the real nature of the second is still a mystery. The interpretation of the Persian cunei- form, the character and dialect of which were equally unknown, was begun by Grotefend, who was followed by Burnouf, Rawlinson, and Oppert. The ancient Persian inscriptions have been collected in a Latin translation with grammar and glossaries by Spiegel (Leipsic, 1862). The other ancient tongues and dialects of this family are known only by name; we read of peculiar idioms in Sogdiana, Zabulistan, Herat, &c. It is doubtful whether the languages of the Scythians, the Lycians, and the Lydians, of which hardly anything remains, were Iranian or not.

After the fall of the Achainenians there is a period of five centuries, from which no document of the Persian language has come down to us.

Under the Arsacids Persian nationality rapidly declined ; all that remains to us from that period—namely, the inscriptions on coins —is in the Greek tongue. Only towards the end of the Parthian dynasty and after the rise of the Sasanians, under whom the national traditions were again cultivated in Persia, do we recover the lost traces of the Persian language in the Pahlavi inscriptions and literature.

3. Middle Persian.—The singular phenomena presented by Pah- . lavi writing have been discussed in a separate article (see PAHLAV!). The language which it disguises rather than expresses— Middle Persian, as we may call it—presents many changes as compared with the Old Persian of the Achemenians. The abundant gram- matical forms of the ancient language are much reduced in number ; the case-ending is lost; the noun has only two inflexions, the singular and the plural; the cases are expressed by prepositions, —e.g., ruban (the soul), nom. and ace. sing., plur. rubdndn; dat. val or avo ruibdn, abl. min or az ribdn. Even distinctive forms for gender are entirely abandoned, ¢.g., the pronoun avo signifies “he,” “she,” “it.” Inthe verb compound forms predominate. In this respect Middle Persian is almost exactly similar to New Persian.

4, New Persian.—The last step in the development of the lan- – guage is New Persian, represented in its oldest form by Firdausi. In grammatical forms it is still poorer than Middle Persian ; except English, no Indo-European language has so few inflexions, but this is made up for by the subtle development of the syntax. The structure of New Persian has hardly altcred at all since the Shdh- néma ; but the original purism of Firdausi, who made every effort to keep the language free from Semitic admixture, could not long be maintained. Arabic literature and speech exercised so powerful an influence on New Persian, especially on the written language, that it could not withstand the admission of an immense number of Semitic words. There is no Arabic word which would be refused acceptance in good Persian.. But, nevertheless,-New Persian has remained a language of genuine Iranian stock.

Among the changes of the sound system in New Persian, as con- trasted with earlier periods, especially with Old Persian, the first that claims mention is the change of the tenues &, ¢, p, ¢, into

g, d, b, 2. Thus we have—

Old Persian or Zend. Pahlavi. New Persian. mahrka (death) mark marg Thraétaona Fritin Feridun – Ap (water) ap hvatd (self) khoét khod raucah (day) roj ruz haca aj az.

Amongst modern languages and dialects other than Persian which Modern must be also assigned to the Iranian family may be mentioned— dialects,

_ 1. Kurdish, a language nearly akin to New Persian, with which it has important characteristics in common. It is chiefly dis- tinguished from it by a marked tendency to shorten words at all costs, ¢.g., Kurd. berd (brother) = New Persian birddar ; Kurd. dim (I give) = New Persian diham; Kurd. spt(white) = New Persian sipéd.

2. Baluch, the language of Baluchistan, also very closely akin to New Persian, but especially distinguished from it in that all the old spirants are changed into explosives, e. g-, Baluch véb (sleep) = Zend hoafna ; Baluch kap (slime)=Zend kafa, New Persian kaf ; Baluch hapt (seven) = New Persian haft.

3. Ossetic, true Iranian, in spite of its resemblance in sound to the Georgian.

4. Afghan, which has certainly been increasingly influenced by the neighbouring Indian languages in inflexion, syntax, and vocabu- lary, but is still at bottom a pure Iranian language, not merely intermediate between Iranian and Indian.

The position of Armenian alone remains doubtful. Some scholars attribute it to the Iranian family ; others prefer to regard it as a separate and

independent member of the Indo-European group. Many words that at first sight seem to prove its Iranian origin are only adopted from the Persian.® (K. G.)

Section I].—Mopern Persian Literature.

Persian historians are greatly at variance about the origin of their national poetry. Most of them go back to the 5th Christian century and ascribe to one of the Sasanian kings, Bahramgur or Bahram V. (420-439), the invention of metre and rhyme ; others mention as author of the first Persian poem a certain Abulhafs of Soghd, near Samarkand. In point of fact, there is no doubt that the later Sasanian rulers fostered the literary spirit of their nation (see Paniavi). Pahlavi books, however, fall outside of the present subject, which is the literature of the idiom which shaped itself out of the older Persian speech by slight modifications and a steadily increasing mixture of Arabic words and phrases in the 9th and 10th centuries of our era, and which in all essential respects has remained the same for the last thousand years. The national spirit of Iran, although smothered and stifled by the Arab con- quest, could not be entirely annihilated. The system of centralization was at no time very strong in the extensive dominions of the Omayyad and ‘Abbasid dynasties ; and the more their power and influence decayed the more they lost their hold on Persia, especially since the native element began to aspire to governorships and to take the political management into its own hand. The death of Hartn al-Rashid in the beginning of the 9th century, which marks the commencement of the decline of the caliphate, was at the same time the starting-point of movements for national independence and a national litera- ture in the Iranian dominion, and the common cradle of the two was in the province of Khorasan, between the Oxus and Jaxartes. In Merv, a Khorasdnian town, a

certain ‘Abbés composed in 809 a.D. (193 a.H.), accord- Earliest

ee oe ing to the oldest biographical writer of Persia, Mohammed modern

Old Persian or Zend. Pahlavt. New Persian. : i Z Persian kaufa (mountain) kof – ‘Aufi, the first real poem in modern Persian, in honour of ee athu (place), Z. gatu as g : : eee: t) ° Ginese (four) : ate cihar the ‘Abbasid

prince Ma’mun, Harun al-Rashid’s son, who oy con bandak Lan had himself a strong predilection for Persia, his mother’s

spada (arm oo sipa Zi : 5

dadami (I give) ~— diham. native country, and was, moreover, thoroughly imbued with

Old d and dh frequently become y—

Old Persian or Zend. Pahlavi. New Persian. madhu (wine) Bo mal baodh6 (consciousness) béd. boi padha (foot) noo pal kadha (when) 4 kai.

Old y often appears as 7: Zend ydma (glass), New Persian jam ; yavan (a youth), New Persian javén. Two consonants are not allowed to stand together at the beginning of a word ; hence vowels are frequently inserted or prefixed, ¢g., New Persian sitédan or istédan (to stand), root sté ; birddar (brother), Zend and Pahlavi brdtar.)

1 Grammars of New Persian, by Lumsden (Calcutta, 1820), Chodzko (Paris, 1852), Vullers (Giessen, 1870). For the New Persian dialects see Fr. Miiller, in the Sitzungsber. der Wien. Akad., vols. Ixxvii., lxxviii.

the freethinking spirit of his age. Soon after this, in 820 (205 a.u.), Tahir, who aided Ma’mtn to wrest the caliphate from his brother Amin, succeeded in establishing the first semi-independent Persian dynasty in Khorasan, which was overthrown in 872 (259 a.H.) by the family of the Saffa- rids, founded by Ya‘ktb b. Laith, originally a brazier in Sistan or Zabulistan.

The development of Persian poetry under these first native dynasties was slow. Arabic language and literature had gained too firm a footing to be supplanted at once

2 Compare Hiibschmann, in Kuhn’s Zeitschrift, xxiv. 396. 3 Compare P. de Lagarde, Armenische Studien (Gottingen, 1877) ; H. Hiibschmann, Armenische Studien (Leipsic, 1883).

by a new literary idiom still in its infancy ; nevertheless the few poets who arose under the Téahirids and Saffarids show already the germs of the characteristic tendency of all later Persian literature, which aims at amalgamating the enforced spirit of Islamism with their own Aryan feelings, and reconciling the strict deism of the Moham- medan religion with their inborn loftier and more or less pantheistic ideas; and we can easily trace in the few fragmentary verses of men like Hanzalah, Hakim Firuz,

Forms ofand Abu Salik those principal forms of poetry now used Fastern. in common by all Mohammedan nations—the forms of

poetry.

Minstrels and sciences in his dominions.

of 10th

the kasida (the encomiastic, elegiac, or satirical poem), the ghazal or ode (a love-ditty, wine-song, or religious hymn), the rubdé% ov quatrain (our epigram, for which the Persians invented a new metre in addition to those adopted from the Arabs), and the mathnawi or double-rhymed poem (the legitimate form for epic and didactic poetry). The first who wrote such a mathnawi was Abu Shukur of Balkh, the oldest literary representative of the third dynasty of Khorasan, the Sdmdnids, who had been able in the course of time to dethrone the Saffarids, and to secure the government of Persia, nominally still under the supremacy of the caliphs in Baghdad, but in fact with full sovereignty. The undisputed reign of this.family dates from the accession of Amir Nasr IT. (913-942 ; 301-331 .u.), who, more than any of his predecessors, patronized arts The most accomplished minstrels of his time were Mohammed Fardladi; Abu

century. *1*Abbas of Bokhara, a writer of very tender verses; Abt

Tabart.

1-Muzaffar Nasr of Nishépur; Abu ‘Abdall4h Mohammed of Junaid, equally renowned for his Arabic and Persian poetry; Ma‘naw1, full of

original thoughts and spiritual subtleties ; Khusrawani, from whom even Firdausi condescended to borrow quotations ; Abt ’l-Hasan Shahid of Balkh, the first who made a diwan or alphabetical collection of his lyrics ; and Master Rudagi, the first classic genius of Persia, who impressed upon every form of lyric and didactic poetry its peculiar stamp and individual character (see RUpacf). His graceful and captivating style was imitated by Hakim Khabbaz, a great baker, poet, and quack; Abi Shu’‘aib Salih of Herat, who left a spirited little song in honour of a young Christian maiden; Raunaki of Bokhar4; Abu’l-Fath of Bust, who was also a good Arabic poet; the amir Abt Hasan “Alf Alagatchi, who handled the pen as skilfully as the sword ; “‘Umarah of Merv, a famous astronomer ; and Kisa‘i, a native of the same town, a man of stern and ascetic manners, who sang in melodious rhythm the praise of “Alf and the twelve imams. All these poets flourished under the patronage of the Sdménid princes, who also fostered the growing desire of their nation for historical and antiquarian researches, for exegetical and medical studies. Mansur I., the grandson of Rudagt’s patron, ordered (963 ; 352 a.u.) his wazir Bal‘ami to translate the famous universal history of Tabar{ (224-310 a.n.) from Arabic into Persian; and this Ta’rikh-i-Tabari, the oldest prose work in modern Persian, is not merely remarkable from a philological point of view, it is also the classic model of an easy and simple style. The same prince employed the most learned among the ulema of Trans- oxiana for a translation of Tabart’s second great work, the Tafsir, or commentary on the Koran, and accepted the dedication of the first Persian book on medicine, a phar- macopceia by the physician Abi Manstir Muwaffak b. ‘Alf of Herat (edited by Seligmann, Vienna, 1859), which forms a kind of connecting link between Greek and Indian medi- cine. It was soon after further developed by the great Avicenna (died 1037; 428 a.n.), himself a Persian by birth, and author of pretty wine-songs, moral maxims, psychological tracts, and a manual of philosophic science, the Ddnishnémai-Ald’%, in his native tongue.

PERS «A

[LITERATURE,

A still greater impulse was given, both to the patriotic feelings and the national poetry of the Persians, by Mansur’s son and successor, Prince Nuh

IT., who ascended the throne in 976 (865 a.u.). Full of enthusiasm for the glorious past of the old Iranian kingdom, he charged his court poet

Dakiki, who openly professed in his ghazals the Zoroastrian Dakiki,

creed, to turn the Parsi collection of the venerable legends and traditions of the heroic ages of Iran, the Khodd@'indma, or "Book of Kings" (which had been translated from the Pahlavi under the Saffarid Ya'kub b. Laith), into Per- sian verse. Shortly after commencing this work Daktki was murdered in the prime of life; and the fall of the minstrel was soon followed by that of the Samanid dyn- asty itself, which was supplanted by the younger and more vigorous house of Sabuktagin, the founder of the Ghaznawids, who had rapidly risen from the rank of a common Turkish soldier to that of an independent ruler of Ghazna (Ghazni, Ghuznee)and all the surrounding countries, including a considerable portion of India. But Dakikd's great enterprise was not abandoned ; a stronger hand, a higher genius, was to continue and to complete it, and this genius was found in Firdausi (940-1020; 328-411 a.n.), with whom we enter the golden age of the national epopee in Persia (see Frrpousf). In 1011, after thirty-five years of unremitting labour, he accomplished his gigantic task, and wrote the last distichs of the immortal Shdhndma, that "glorious monument of Eastern genius and learning," as Sir W. Jones calls it, '' which, if ever it should be gener- ally understood in its original language, will contest the merit of invention with Homer itself." And, although it was not he, the unrivalled master of epic art, but his old friend and patron, the less-renowned 'Unsurt, who officiated as '"king of poets" in the court of Mahmtd of Ghazna (998-1030 ; 388-421 a.u.), who had continued his father Sabuk- tagin's conquests, and founded an empire extending from the Caucasus to Bengal and from Bokhardé and Kashgar to the Indian Ocean, he was nevertheless the central sun round which all the minor stars revolved, those four hundred poets who formed the famous "Round Table" in the sultan's magnificent palace. Firdausi's fame eclipsed that of all his contemporaries (however well founded their claim upon literary renown),—men like "Unsuri, Farrukhi, Asjadi, Ghada'irl, Minutchehri, and others, whose eloquent praises of Mahmud have come down to us in very scarce copies, and even that of his own teacher Asad{, who survived his great pupil, and established a reputation of his own by introducing into Persian literature the novel form

of the mundzarah or strife-poem, the equivalent of the Provencal tenson and the English estrif or joust.

irresistible fascination upon all minds that there was soon a keen competition among the younger poets as to who should produce the most successful imitation of that classic model ; and this competition has gone on under different forms through all the following centuries, even to the most recent times. First of all, the old popular traditions, so far as they had not yet been exhausted by Firdausi, were ransacked for new epic themes, and a regular cycle of national epopees gathered round the Book of Kings, drawn almost exclusively from the archives of the princes of Sistan, the family of Firdausi's greatest hero, Rustam. The first and most ambitious of these competitors seems to have been Asadi's own son, "Ali b. Ahmad al-Asadi{, the author of the oldest Persian glossary, who completed in 1066 (458 A.H.), in upwards of 9000 distichs, the Garshdspndma, or marvellous story of the warlike feats and love-adventures of Garshasp, one of Rustam's ancestors. The heroic deeds of Rustam's grandfather were celebrated in the Sémndma, which almost equals the Shdéhndma in length; those of Rustam's two sons, in the Jahdngirndma and the Fard-

The Shdéhndma, Imite-

from the very moment of its appearance, exercised such an _

0

Shéh- NEM

Firdaus

LITERATURE. |

murendma ; those of his daughter, an amazon, in the Brunhild style of the German Nibelunge, in the Band Gushdspndéma ; those of his grandson, in the Barseindma 2 those of his great-grandson, in the Shahriydrndma (ascribed to Mukhtari and dedicated to Mas'ud Shah, who is probably identical with Mas'id b. Ibrahim, Sultan Mahmud's great- grandson, 1088-

1114 ; 481-508 a.4.); and the wonderful exploits of a son of Isfandiydr, another hero of the Shdéh- ndma, in the Bahmanndma.

When at last these old Iranian sources were almost entirely exhausted, the difficulty was met in various but equally ingenious ways. Where some slight historical re- cords of the heroic age—no matter how doubtful their authenticity—were still obtainable, poetical imagination seized upon them at once, and filled the wide gaps by its own powerful invention; where no traditions at all were forthcoming, fiction pure and simple asserted its indisputable right ; and thus the national epopee gave way to the epic story, and—substituting prose for verse—to the novel and the fairy tale. Models of the former class are the various Iskandarndmas, or "Books of Alexander the Great," the oldest and most original of which is that of Nizdmi (com- pleted about 1202; 599 a.u.); the latter begins with the Kitdb~-Samak 'Iydr, a novel in three volumes (about 1189 ; 585 a.u.), and reaches its climax in the Biustén-i-Khaydi, or "Garden of Imagination," a prose romance of fifteen large volumes, by Mohammed Taki Khayal, written between 1742 and 1756 (1155 and 1169 a.u.). Many aspirants to poetical fame, however, were not satisfied with either of these expedients : they boldly struck out a new path and explored hitherto unknown regions, and here again a twofold tendency manifested itself. Some writers, both in prose and verse, turned from the exhausted fields of the national glory of Persia to the comparatively original soil of Arabian traditions, and chose their subjects from the chivalrous times of their own Bedouin conquerors, or even from the Jewish legends of the Koran. Of this description are the Anliydndma, or history of the pre-Mohammedan prophets, by Hasani Shabistari 'Ayani (before the 8th century of the Hijra); Ibn Husdm's Khdwarndma (1427; 830 a.H.), or the deeds of 'Ali; Badhil's Tamla-i-Ilaidart, which was completed by Najaf (1723; 1135 a.u.), or the life of Mohammed and the first four caliphs; Kazim's Far- ahndma-i-Fdtima, the book of joy of Fatima, Mohammed's daughter (1737 ; 1150 a.u.),—all four in the epic metre of the Shdhndma ; and the prose stories of [/détim 7@%, the famous model of liberality and generosity in pre-Islamitic times ; of Amir /Tamzah, the uncle of Mohammed ; and of the Mu'jizét-i-Musawi, or the miraculous deeds of Moses, by Mu'in-almiskin (died about 1501; 907 a.x.).

Quite a different turn was taken by the ambition of another class of imitators of Firdausi, especially during the last four centuries of the Hijra, who tried to create a new heroic epopee by celebrating in rhythm and rhyme stirring events of recent date. The gigantic figure of Timur inspired Hatiff (died 1521; 927 a.n.) with his Témdrndma ; the stormy epoch of the first Safawi rulers, who succeeded at last in reuniting for some time the various provinces of

the old Persian realm into one great monarchy, furnished ’

Kasimi (died after 1560 ; 967 a.u.) with the materials of his Shdhndma, a poetical history of Shah Isma‘il and Shah Tahmdsp. Another Shdhndma, celebrating Shah ‘Abbas

of Poonah by the English in 1817. In India especially this kind of epic versification has flourished since the beginning of Huméyin’s reign (1530-1556); the court- poets of the great Mogul emperors of Delhi, as well as of all the minor dynasties, vied with one another in glorifying the exploits of their respective sovereigns, as is sufficiently proved by the Zafarndéma-t-Shdhjahdni by Kudst (died 1646 ; 1056 a.1.); the Shdhinshdhndéma by Talib Kalim (died 1651 ; 1061 a.u.), another panegyrist of Shah J ahan ; Atasht’s ‘Adilnéma, in honour of Shah Mohammed ‘Adil of Bijapur, who ascended the throne in 1629 (1039 ASE)! the Tawérikh-i-Kuli Kutbshah, a metrical history of the Kutb shahs of Golkonda; and many more, down to the Fath- ndma-t-Tipa Sultén by Ghulam Hasan (1784 ; 1189 A.H.).

But the national epopee, with both its legitimate and its illegitimate offspring, was not the only bequest the great Firdausi left to his nation. This rich genius gave also the first impulse to the higher development of those other branches of poetical art which were to flourish in the following ages —particularly to romantic, didactic, and mystic poetry ; and even his own age produced powerful co-operators in these three most conspicuous departments of Persian literature.

A.H.) brilliant pictures of the struggles and passions in the human heart (see NizAmi, vol. xvii. pp. 521, 522), sent forth its first tender shoots in the numerous love-stories of the Shdhndma, the most fascinating of which is that of Zal and Rudabeh, and developed almost into full bloom in Firdausi's second great mathnawi Ydsuf u Zalikhd, which the aged poet wrote after his flight from Ghazna, and dedicated to the reigning caliph of Baghdad, Alkadir- billah. It represents the oldest poetical treatment of the Biblical story of Joseph, which has proved so attractive to the epic poets of Persia, among others to 'Am'ak of Bokhara (died 1149), who was the first after Firdausi to write a Yusuf «u Zalikhd (which can be read in two dif- ferent metres), to Jami (died 1492), Mauji Kasim Khan, Humaytn's amir (died 1571), Nazim of Herat (died 1670), and Shaukat, the governor of Shiraz under Feth 'Alf Shah. Perhaps prior in date to Firdausi's Yaésuf was his patron 'Unsuri's romance Wdamik u Adhrd, a popular Iranian legend of great antiquity, which had been first written in verse under the Téhirid dynasty. This favourite story was treated again by Fasihi Jurjani (in the course of the same 5th century of the Hijra), and by many modern poets,—as Damiri, who died under the Safawi Shah Mohammed (1577-1586 ; 985-994 a.u.), Nami, the historiographer of the Zand dynasty, and Husain of Shiraz under Feth "Ali Shah, the last two flourishing towards the beginning of the present century. Another love-story of similar anti- quity, which had originally been written in Pahlavi, formed the basis of Fakhr-uddin As'ad Jurjani's Wis u Rédmin, which was composed in Isfahin (Ispahdn) about 1048 (440 a.H.),—a poem remarkable not only for its high artistic value but also for its close resemblance to one of the epic masterpieces of medizval German literature, Gott- fried von Strasburg's Tristan und Lsolt.

The last-named Persian poet was apparently one of the earliest eulogists of the Seljuks, and it was under this Turkish dynasty, which soon became a formidable rival both of the Ghaznawids and of the Arabian caliphs of

Romantic fiction, which achieved its Romantic highest triumph in Niz4m{ of Ganja's (1141-1203; 535-599 fiction.

Baghdad, that lyrical romanticism—that is, panegyrical Encomi- and satirical poetry—rose to the highest pitch. What a cs Firdausi, in his exalted descriptions of royal power and :

the Great, was written by wamali of Sabzawar ; and even the cruelties of Nadir Shah were duly chronicled in a

pompous epic style in ‘Ishrati’s Shdéhndma-i-Nddirt (1749; 1162 a.u.). But all these poems are surpassed in length by the 33,000 distichs of the Shdhinshdhnéma by the poet-laureate of the late Feth ‘Ali Shah of Persia, and the 40,000 distichs of the Georgendma, a poetical history of India from its discovery by the Portuguese to the conquest

dignity, and the court-poets of Sultan Mahmid, in their unbounded praise of the great sovereign and protector of arts, had commenced, what other encomiasts under Mahmiud’s successors—for instance, Abt ’l-Faraj Runi of Lahore and Mas‘td b. Sa‘d b. Salman (under Sultan XVIII. — 83

Didactic and mystic poetry.

658

Ibrahim, 1059-1088)—had successfully continued, reached its perfection in the famous group of panegyrists who gathered in the first half of the 6th century of the Hijra round the throne of Sultan Sanjar, and partly also round that of his great antagonist, Atsiz, shah of Khwarizm. This group included Adib Sabir, who was drowned by order of the prince in the Oxus about 1145 (540 a.n.), and his pupil Jauhari, the goldsmith of Bokhér4; Amir Mu‘izzi, the king of poets at Sanjar’s court, killed by a stray arrow in 1147 (542 a.u.) ; Rashid Watwat (the Swallow), who died in 1172 (568 a.u.), and left, besides his kasidas, a valuable treatise on poetry (odd ik-essihr) and a metrical transla- tion of the sentences of “Ali; ‘Abd-alwaési‘ Jabali, who sang at first, like his contemporary Hasan Ghaznawi (died 1169; 565 a.u.), the praise of the Ghaznawid shah Bahram, but afterwards bestowed his eulogies upon Sanjar, the con- queror of Ghazna ; and Auhad-uddin Anwari, the most cele- brated kasida-writer of the whole Persian literature. Anwari (died between 1191 and 1196; 587 and 592 A.H.), who in early life had pursued scientific studies in the madrasah of Tus and who ranked among the foremost astronomers of his time, owes his renown as much to the inexhaustible store of poetical similes and epitheta ornantia which he showered upon Sanjar and other royal and princely personages as to his cutting sarcasms, which he was careful enough to direct, not against special

individuals, but against whole classes of society and the cruel wrongs worked by an in- exorable fate,—thus disregarding the more manly example of Firdausi, whose bold attack upon Sultan Mahmud for having cheated him out of the well-earned reward for his epopee is the oldest and, at the same time, most finished specimen of personal satire. This legitimate branch of high art, however, soon degenerated either into the lower forms of parody and travesty—for which, for instance, a whole group of Transoxanian writers, Sizani of Samar- kand (died 1174 ; 569 a.w.) and his contemporaries, Abt ‘Alf Shatranji of the same town, Lami of Bokhara, and others gained a certain literary reputation—or into mere comic pieces and jocular poems like the “Pleasantries ” (Hazliyydt) and the humorous stories of the “Mouse and Cat” and the “Stone-cutter” (Sangtarash) by ‘Ubaid Zékant (died 1370; 772 a.n.), Anwart’s greatest rival was Khakani (died 1199 ; 595 a.x.), the son of a carpenter in Shirwan, and panegyrist of the shahs of Shirwdn, usually called the Pindar of the East on account of the difficult and enigmatic style of his verses. Oriental critics, of course, greatly admire the obscure allusions, far-fetched puns, and other eccentricities with which the otherwise energetic and harmonious language, both of his laudatory odes and of his satires, is loaded; to European taste only the shorter epigrams and the double-rhymed poem Tuhfat- ulirdkain, in which Khakant describes his journey to Mecca and back, give full satisfaction. Among his numerous contemporaries and followers may be noticed Mujir-uddin Bailakani (died 1198; 594 a.u.), Zahir Farydbi (died 1202; 598 a.u.), and Athir Akhsikat{ (died 1211; 608 A.H.,),— all three panegyrists of the atabegs of Adharbaijan (Azer- bijan), and especially of Sultan Kizil Arslan —Kamal-uddin Isfahdn{, tortured to death by the Moguls in 1237 (635 A.H.), who sang, like his father J amal-uddin, the praise of the governors of Isfahan, and gained, on account of his fer- tile imagination, the honorary epithet of the “creator of fine thoughts ” (Khall4k-ulma‘anf) ; and Saif-uddin Isfarangt (died 1267 ; 666 a.x.), afavourite of the shdhs of Khwérizm. _ Fruitful as the 6th and 7th centuries of the Hijra were in panegyrics, their literary fame did not rest upon these alone ; they attained an equally high standard in two other branches of poetry, the didactic and the mystic, which after a short period of separate existence entered into a close and henceforth indissoluble union. The origin of

both can again be traced to Firdausi and his time. In the ethical reflexions, wise maxims, and moral exhortations scattered throughout the Shdhndma the didactic element is plainly visible, and equally plain in it are the traces of that mystical tendency which was soon to pervade almost all the literary productions of Persian genius. Sufic pantheism, which tends to reconcile philosophy with revealed religion, and centres in the doctrine of the universality and absolute unity of God, who is diffused through every particle of the visible and invisible world, and to whom the human soul during her temporary exile in the prison-house of the body strives to get back through progressive stages till she is purified enough to be again absorbed in Him, is already hinted at in the numerous verses of the " Book of Kings" in which the poet cries out against the vanity of all earthly joys and pleasures, and expresses a passionate desire for a better home, for a reunion with the Godhead. But the most characteristic passage of the epopee is the mysterious disappearance of Shah Kaikhosrau, who suddenly, when at the height of earthly fame and splendour, renounces the world in utter disgust, and, carried away by his fervent longing for an abode of everlasting tranquillity, vanishes for ever from the midst of his companions. The first Persian

who devoted poetry exclusively to the illustration of Sufic Sufic doctrines was Firdausi's contemporary, the renowned poets |

sheikh Abu Sa'id b. Abt 'l-Khair of Mahna in Khords4n (968-1049; 357-440 a.n.), the founder of that specific form of the ruba'i which gives the most concise expression to religious and philosophic aphorisms,—a form which was further developed by the great freethinker 'Omar Bz. Kuayydm (g.v.), and Afdal-uddin Kashi (died 1307 ; 707 A.H.). The year of Abu Sa'id's death is most likely the same which gave to the world the first great didactic mathnawi, the Rishan@indéma, or "Book of Enlighten- ment," by NAsir B. Kuosrav (g.v.), a poem full of sound moral and ethical maxims with slightly mystical tendencies. About twenty-five years later the first theoretical handbook of Stifism in Persian was composed by 'Ali b. 'Uthman al-jullabi al-hujwiri in the Kashf-ulmahjib, which treats of the various schools of Sufis, their teachings and observ- ances. A great saint of

the same period, Sheikh ‘Abdallah Ansari of Herat (1006-1089 ; 396-481 a.H.), assisted in spreading the pantheistic movement by his Mundjdt or in- vocations to God, by several prose tracts, and by an import- ant collection of biographies of eminent Suiffs, based on an older Arabic compilation, and serving in its turn as ground- work for Jamt’s excellent Vafahdt-aluns (completed in 1478; 883 a.H.). He thus paved the way for the publication of one of the earliest text-books of the whole sect, the adékat- ulhakikat, or “Garden of Truth” (1130; 525 a.n.), by Hakim Sand’f of Ghazna, to whom all the later Stific poets refer as their unrivalled master in spiritual knowledge. In this extensive mathnawi in ten cantos, as well as in his smaller poetical productions, he skilfully blended the purely didactic element, which is enhanced by pleasant stories and anecdotes, with the chief tenets of higher theosophy,—an example which has been strictly adhered to by all the following Stific poets, who only differ in so far as they give preponderance either to the ethical or to the mystical side of their writings. As the most uncompromising Stfis appear the greatest pantheistic writer of all ages, Jelal- uddin Rumi (1207-1273 ; 604-672 a.u.; see RUmf), and his’ scarcely less renowned predecessor Farid-uddin ‘Attar, who was slain by the Moguls at the age of 114 lunar years in 1230 (627 a.u.). This prolific writer, originally a druggist (‘attar) in Nishdpur, after having renounced all worldly affairs and performed the pilgrimage to Mecca, devoted him- self to a stern ascetic life, and to the composition of Sufic works, partly in prose, as in his valuable “ Biography of eminent Mystic Divines,” but mostly in the form of math-

adi.

urther ifie orks,

ric etry,

hazal- riters,

LITERATURE. |

nawis (upwards of twenty in number), among which the Pandnéma, or “ Book of Counsels,” and the Mantik-uttair, or the “‘Speeches of Birds,” occupy the first rank. In the latter, an allegorical poem, interspersed with

moral tales and pious contemplations, the final absorption of the Sufi in the deity is most ingeniously illustrated, and the seven valleys through which the birds travel on their way to the fabulous phcenix or simurg (literally thirty birds), and in which all except thirty succumb, are the seven stations of the mystic road that leads from earthly troubles into the much-coveted Fana or Nirvana.

In strong contrast to these advanced Sufis stands the greatest moral teacher of Persia, Sheikh Sa‘di of Shiraz (died about 110 lunar years old in 1292; 691 a.n.; see Sa‘Di), whose two best known works, the Bistdn, or “ Fruit-garden,” and the C’ulistén, or ‘“ Rose-garden,” owe their great popularity both in the East and the West to the purity of their spiritual thoughts, their sparkling wit, charming style, and the very moderate use of mystic theories. However, both have found comparatively few imitations,—the former in the Dastéirndéma of Nizari of Kohistan (died 1320 ; 720 a.u.), in the Dah Bab, or “Ten Letters,” of Katibi (died 1434; 838 a.u.), and in the Gulzdr of Hairati (murdered 1554 ; 961 a.u.); the latter in Mu‘in- uddin Juwaini’s Wigdristén (1335; 735 a.u.) and Jémt’s Bahdristdn, or ‘“Spring-garden” (1487 ; 892 a.u.); whereas an innumerable host of purely Sufic compositions followed in the wake of Sand’i’s, ‘Attar’s, and Jelél-uddin Rumt’s mathnawis. They consist partly of mere expositions of doctrines with or without illustrations by tales and anec- dotes, partly of complete Stific allegories, often disfigured by the wildest eccentricities. It will suffice to name a few of the most conspicuous in each class. To the former belong the Lama‘dt, or “Sparks,” of ‘Iraki (died between 1287 and 1309; 686 and 709 a.u.), the Zéd-ulmusdjirin, or “Store of the Wayfarers,” by Husain{ (died 1318; 718 A.H.), the Gulshan-t-Rdz, or “ Rose-bed of Mystery,” by Mahmud Shabistari (died 1320 ; 720 a.u.), the Jém-2-Jam, or “Cup of Jamshid,” by Auhadi (died 1338; 738 a.u.), the Anjis-ul ‘Arifin, or “Friend of the Mystics,” by Kasim ɨ Anwar (died 1434; 837 a.u.), and others; to the latter ‘Assar’s Mihr u Mushtari, or “Sun and Jupiter” (1376 ; 778 a.u.), ‘Arifi’s Gadi u Chaugdn, or “The Ball and the Bat” (1438; 842 a.u.), Lusn u Dil, or “Beauty and Heart,” by Fattahi of Nishapur (died 1448; 852 a.n.), Sham‘ u Parwdna, or “The Candle and the Moth,” by Ahli of Shiraz (1489 ; 894 a.u.), Shah u Gadd, or ‘King and Dervish,” by Hilali (put to death 1532; 939 a.n.), Baha-uddin “A mili’s (died 1621 ; 1030 a.u.) Nan u Halwa, or “Bread and Sweets,” Shir u Shakar, or “ Milk and Sugar,” and many more.

During all these periods of literary activity, lyric poetry, pure and simple— z.e., the ghazal, in its legitimate form— had by no means been neglected ; alniost all the renowned poets since the time of Rudagi had sung in endless strains the pleasures of love and wine, the beauties of nature, and the almighty power of the Creator ; but, however rich the ghazals of Sa‘di in lofty thoughts and pious feelings, how- ever sublime the hymns of Jelal-uddin Rumi, it was left to the incomparable genius of Hafiz (died 1389 ; 791 .A.H.; see HAriz) to give to the world the most perfect models of lyric composition ; and the lines he had laid down were more or less strictly followed by all the ghazal-writers of the 9th and 10th centuries of the Hijra, —by Salman of Sawa (died about 1377; 779 a.u.), who excelled besides

- in kasida and mathnawi; Kamal Khujandi, Hafiz’s friend,

and protégé of Sultan Husain (776-784 a.u.); Mohammed Shirin Maghribi (died at Tabriz in 1406 ; 809 a.H.), an inti- mate friend of Kamal ; Ni‘mat-ullah Wali (died 1431 ; 834 A.H.), the founder of a special religious order; Kasim-1-

PHEST A

659

Anwar (see above) ; Amir Shahi (died 1453 ; 857 A.H.), of the princely family of the Sarbadars of Sabzawar ; Banna’ (died 1512; 918 a..), who also wrote a romantic poem, Bahrém u Bihriz; Baba Fighant of Shiraz (died 1519; 925 .u.), usually called the “Little Hafiz” ; Nargis (died 1531; 938 a.n.); Lisdni (died 1534; 941 4.u.), who himself was imitated by Damiri of Isfahan, Muhtasham Kashi, and Wahshi Bafiki (all three died in the last decade of the 10th century of the Hijra); Ahli of Shiraz (died 1535; 942 A.H.), author of the Sihr-i-Haldl, or “ Lawful Witchcraft,” which, like Katibt’s (died 1434; 838 a.u.) Jf ajma‘-ulbahrain, or the ‘“‘ Confluence of the Two Seas,” can be read in two different metres ; Nau’‘i (died 1610 ; 1019 A.H.), who wrote the charming romance of a Hindu princess who burned herself in Akbar’s reign with her deceased husband on the funeral pile, styled Siviz u Guddz, or “Burning and Melt- ing,” &c. Among the immediate predecessors of Hafiz in the 8th century of the Hijra, in which also Ibn Yamin, the great kit‘ah-writer,! flourished, the highest fame was

gained by the two poets of Delhi, Amir Hasan and Amir Khosrau. The latter, who died in 1325 (725 a.u.), two years before his friend Hasan, occupies the foremost place among all the Persian poets of India by the richness of his imagination, his graphic style, and the historical interest attached to his writings. Five extensive diwdns testify to his versatility in all branches of lyric poetry, and nine large mathnawis to his mastership in the epic line. Four of the latter are poetical accounts of contemporary events during the reigns of the emperors of Delhi, ‘Ald-uddin Mohammad Shah Khiljf (1296-1311), his predecessor Fi{ruz Shah, and his successor Kutb-uddin Mubarek Shah,— the Miftah-ulfutih, or “ Key of Mysteries,” the Kirdn-ussa‘- dain, or “The Conjunction of the Two Lucky Planets,” the Nuh Sipihr, or “Nine Spheres,” and the love-story of Khidrkhdén u Duwalrdni. His other five mathnawis

formed the first attempt ever made to imitate NizAmi’s

famous Khamsah, or five romantic epopees, and this attempt turned out so well that henceforth almost all epic poets wrote quintuples of a similar description. Khwaji Kirmani (died 1352; 753 a.H.) was the next aspirant to Nizdmi’s fame, with five mathnawis, among which Humdi u Humdytin is the most popular, but he had to yield the

palm to ‘Abd-urrahman Jami (1414-1492 ; 817-898 a.H.), Jdémi the last classic poet of Persia, in whose genius were summed and later

up, as it were, all the best qualities of his great predecessors, and who combined, in a manner, the moral tone of Sa‘di with the lofty aspirations of Jelal-uddin Rumi, and the graceful ease of Hafiz’s style with the deep pathos of Nizdmi, to whose Khamsah he wrote the most successful counterpart (see his Yeisuj u Zalikhd mentioned above). Equally renowned are his numerous prose works, mostly on Sufic topics, and his three diwans, Many poets followed in Jamt’s footsteps, first of all his nephew Hatifi (see above), and either wrote whole khamsahs or imitated at least one or other of Nizdmti’s epopees; thus we have a Laid u Majnin, for instance, by Maktabi (1490), Hilali (see above),and Ruh-ulamin (died 1637). But their efforts could not stop the growing corruption of taste, and it was only at the court of the Mogul emperors, particularly of the great Akbar (1556-1605), who revived Sultan Mahmtd’s “round table,” that Persian literature still enjoyed

some kind of “Indian summer” in poets like Ghazali of Mash- had or Meshed (died 1572); ‘Urfi of Shiraz (died 1591), who wrote spirited kasidas, and, like his contemporaries Wahsht and Kauthari,a mathnawi, Farhdd u Shirin ; and Faidi (died 1595), the author of the romantic poem, Val u Daman, who also imparted new life into the ruba‘i. In Persia proper

1 A kit’ah or mukatta‘ah is a poem containing moral reflexions and differs from the kasida and ghazal only by the absence of a matla‘ or initial distich.

The drama,

His- torical works.

only Zulali, whose clever romance of “ Sultan Mahmud and his favourite Ay4z” (1592) is widely read in the East, S#’ib (died 1677), who is commonly called the creator of a new style in lyric poetry, and, among the most modern, Hatif of Isfahan, the singer of sweet and tasteful odes (died about 1785), deserve a passing notice.

But we cannot conclude our brief survey of the national literature of Persia without calling attention to the rise of quite a novel form of Iranian poetry, the drama, which has only sprung up in the beginning of the present century. Like the Greek drama and the Mysteries of the European Middle Ages, it is the offspring of a purely religious cere- mony, which for centuries has been performed annually during the first ten days of the month Moharrern,—the recital of mournful lamentations in memory of the tragic fate of the house of the caliph ‘Alf, the hero of the Shi‘itic Persians. Most of these passion-plays deal with the slaughter of ‘Ali’s son Hosain and his family in the battle of Kerbela. But lately this narrow range of dramatic subjects has been considerably widened; Biblical stories and even Christian legends have been brought upon the Persian stage; and there is a fair prospect of a further develop- ment of this most interesting and important movement.

In the various departments of general Persian literature, not touched upon in the foregoing pages, the same wonder- ful activity has prevailed as in the

realm of poetry and fiction, since the first books on history and medicine ap- peared under the Samdnids (see above). The most im- portant section is that of historical works, which, although deficient in sound criticism and often spoiled by a highly artificial style, supply us with most valuable materials for our own research, especially when they relate contemporary events in which the authors took part either as political agents or as mere eye-witnesses. Quite unique in this respect are the numerous histories of India, from the first invasion of Sultan Mahmud of Ghazna to the English con- quest, and even to the first decades of the present century, most of which have been described and partly translated in the eight volumes of Elliot's History of India (1867-78). Persian writers have given us, besides, an immense variety of universal histories of the world, with many curious and noteworthy data (see, among others, Mirkhond's and Khwandamfr's works under MirKHonp, vol. xvi. p. 499) ; histories of Mohammed and the first caliphs, partly translated from Arabic originals, which have been lost ; detailed accounts of all the Persian dynasties, from the Ghaznawids to the still reigning Kajars, of Jenghiz Khan and the Moguls (in Juwaint's and Wassdf's elaborate Twrikhs), and of Timur and his successors (see an account of the Zafarndéma under PETIS DE LA Crorx); histories of sects and creeds, especially the famous Dabistdn, or "School of Manners" (translated by Troyer, Paris, 1843) ; and many local chronicles of Iran and Turan. Next in importance to history rank geography, cosmography, and travels (for instance, the Vuzhat-ulkulib, by Hamdalla4h Mustaufi, who died in 1349, and the translations of Istakhri's and Kazwint's

© I ms

Arabic works), and the various tadhkiras or biographies of Sufis and poets, with selections in prose and verse, from the oldest of "Aufi (about 1220) to the last and largest of all, the Makhzan-ulghard'b, or "Treasure of Marvellous Matters" (completed 1803), which contains biographies and specimens of more than 3000 poets. We pass over the well-stocked sections of philosophy, ethics, and politics, of theology, law, and Sufism, of mathematics and astronomy, of medicine (the oldest thesaurus of which is the "Treasure of the sh4h of Khwarizm," 1110), of Arabic, Persian, and Turkish grammar and lexicography, and only cast a part-

ing glance at the rich collections of old Indian folk-lore Indian and fables preserved in the Persian versions of Kalilah y folk-lore

Dimnah (see RuDact), of the Sindbddndma, the Tvitindma, or “Tales of a Parrot,” and others, and at the translations of standard works of Sanskrit literature, the epopees of the Ramdyana and Mahdbhérata, the Bhagavad-Gitd, the Yoga-Vasishtha, and numerous Purdnas and Upanishads, for which we are mostly indebted to the emperor Akbar’s indefatigable zeal.

A complete history of Persian literature is still a desideratum. Hammer’s Schéne Redekiinste Persiens, Vienna, 1818, is altogether unsatisfactory and obsolete. Concise sketches of Persian poetry are contained in Ouseley’s Biographical Notices ; in Fltigel’s article in Ersch and Gruber’s Allgemeine Encyklopddie (1842) ; in Bland’s papers in the Journal of the Roy. Asiatic Society, vol. vii. p. 845 sq. and vol. ix. p, 122 sq.; and in Barbier de Meynard’s Poésie en Perse, Paris, 1877. Real mines of information are the catalogues of Sprenger, Calcutta, 1854; Morley, London, 1854; Fliigel, 3 vols., Vienna, 1865; and Rieu, 3 vols, London, 1879-83. For the first five centuries of the Hijra compare Ethé’s editions and metrical translations of “ Rudagi’s Vorliufer und Zeitgenossen,” in Morgenldndische Forschungen, Leipsic, 1875; of Kisd’i’s songs, Firdausi’s lyrics, and Abt Sa‘id b. Abt ’1-Khair’s ruba‘is, in Sitz- ungsberichte der bayr. Akademie (1872, p. 275 sq.; 1878, p. 622 sq.; 1874, p. 188 sq.; 1875, p. 145 sg.; and 1878, p. 88 sq.); of Avicenna’s Persian poems, in Géttinger Nachrichten, 1875, p. 555 sq.; and of Asadi and his munazarat, in “ Persische Tenzonen,” Verhandlungen des 5icn Oricntalisten-Congresses, Berlin, 1882, part ii., first half, p. 48 sg.; Zotenberg’s Chronique de Tabari, Paris, 1867-74; Jurjani’s Wis u Ramin, edited in the Bibl. Indica, 1864 (trans- lated into German by Graf in Z. D. M. G., xxiii. 875 sq.); and Kasi- mirski’s Spécitmen du diwdn de Menoutchehri, Versailles, 1876. On Khakani, see Khanykoff’s ‘‘ Mémoire,” in Journal Asiatique, 6th series, vol. iv. p. 187 sg. and v. p. 296 sg., and Salemann’s edition of his ruba‘is, with Russian transl., Petersburg, 1875; on Farid- uddin ‘Attar, Sacy’s edition of the Pandndma, Paris, 1819, and Garcin de Tassy’s Mantik-uttair, Paris, 1857 ; on the Gulshan-i-rdz, E. H. Whinfield’s edition, London, 1880; and on Amir Khosrau’s mathnawis, the abstracts given in Elliot’s History of India, vol. iii. p- 524 sg. German translations of Ibn Yamin were published by Schlechta-Wssehrd,

Bruchstiicke, Vienna, 1852; of Jami's minor poems, by Rosenzweig, Vienna, 1840; by Riickert, in Zeitschrift fir die Kunde des Morgenlandes, vols. v. and vi., and Zeitschrift der. D. Morgenl. Gesellsch., vols. ii., iv., v., Vi., XXiV., XXV., and xxix. ; and by Wickerhauser, Leipsic, 1855, and Vienna, 1858; German trans- lation of Yusuf u Zalikhd, by Rosenzweig, Vienna, 1824, English by Griffith, London, 1881; French translation of Latlé u Majnin, by Chézy, Paris, 1805, German by Hartmann, Leipsic, 1807; Hilali's ‘‘ Konig und Derwisch," by Ethé, in Morgcnland. Stud., Leipsic, 1870, p. 197 sy. On the Persian drama, compare Gobineau's Religions et Philosophies de lV Asie centrale, Paris, 1866; Chodzko's Théétre persan, new ed., Paris, 1878; and Ethé, ‘‘ Persische Pas- sionspiele," in Aforgenldnd. Stud., p. 174 sq. (H. E.)

INDEX.

Gilan, 621, 623, 627. Gotarzes, 601. Hephthalites, 610, 613. Herat, 650, 652. Hormizd IV., 613. Husain, 639. India invaded, 569, 583,

586, 591, 599, 641.

‘Abbas I., 637. ‘Abbas II., 638. Achemenians, 565. Babylon, 566, 572. Adarbaijan, 626. Bactrian Greeks, 587, 589, Afghans, 639, 640, 648 599,

Bahram V., 610. Cambyses, 567.

Chinese accounts, 592 sq.,

Artaxerxes III., 580. Astrabad, 627.

sq. Agha Muhammad, 645. Alexander, 581.

Antiochus I., 587. 599. lonian revolts, 570, 578, – II., 587. Crassus, 596. 4g GIR 9 TII., 588. Cyaxares, 563. lran, 561.

" V., 589. Cyrus, 564 sq. Ardashir, 606, 607. » (satrap), 576, 577. Arsaces I., 587. Darius I., 568, 569.

Isma‘il I., 634 sq. Ispahan, 627, 628, 638, 640. Kajars, 648, 645 sq.

Arsacids, 590. peo Wis ise Karman, 626, 645. Artabanus III., 600. sinus, Ll-; SSL. Kavadh T., 611 sq.

a IV., 605. Demetrius I., 590. Kazvin, 627, 628, 637. Artaxerxes I., 573. re II., 591. Khosrau 1., 612.

z IL., 576. Fath ‘Ali Shah, 647. ky, Gi,

Sse, 591, 598, 599.

Sulaiman, 639.

Tabriz, 626, 628, 633, 637.

Tehran, 623, 627, 628.

Tigranes (Armenia), 595.

Timurides, 632, 633.

Tiridates, 598.

Tochari, 592, 594, 600, 603,

606.

Phraates II., 594. oy JIL., 595. IV., 598.

Khurasan, 621, 626, 646,

651.

Lutf ‘Ali Khan, 645. 5 Mashhad, 626, 628, 687. Safawids, 634 sq. Mazandaran, 621, 623, 627. | Sarakhs, 618.

Medes, 561 sg. Scythians, 563, 570, 594, Mithradates I., 590, 591. 599, 603.

o +» 595. Seleucia, 587, 601, 604. Mondhir of Hira, 610, 612. | Seleucids, 585 sq. Moslems, 615. Seleucus I., 585. Muhammad Shah, 649. Severus, 605.

Nadir Shah, 641 sq. Shah Rukh, 643. Nagru ’d-Din Shah, 651. 50

Trajan, 603, 604. Vardanes, 601. Volagases I., 602. Sufi, 638. 5 608

Nineveh, 563. », Tahmasp, 636 sq. 90 TII., 604. Orodes I., 596 sq. Shaikh Sufi, 634. Xerxes I., 572. Pacorus, 597. Shapur I., 608. Yazdegerd I., 610.

Parthians, 587, 592. Pérdz, 611. Persis, 561, 565, 605.

Ld, 600. Shiraz, 623, 624, 627, 628.

Se IIL., 615. Yue-chi, 592, 593, 594, 600.

|

PER—PER

PERSIGNY, Jean Gitperr Vicror Fiauin, Duc DE (1808-1872), the most devoted servant of Napoleon III., who with the duc de Morny and Marshal Saint-Arnaud formed the triumvirate which established the second em- pire, was born at Saint-Germain Lespinasse (Loire) on 11th January 1808. He came of a ‘90d family, but not a noble one, and, as his father had been killed at the battle of Sala- manca in 1812, he was brought up by an uncle, who sent him to be educated at the college of Limoges. He entered the 3d Hussars in 1825, the cavalry school at Saumur in 1826, and became maréchal des logis in the 4th Hussars in 1828. He was at this time a Legitimist, but was soon made a Republican by his captain, and he helped to persuade his regiment to assist in the insurrection of 1830. For this service he expected great rewards, but got none, and was eventually dismissed from the army for insubordination in 1831. Finding himself without resources, he took to journalism, and assisted in editing the Temps, and in 1833, by which time he had become a profound Bonapartist, he issued a solitary number of a new journal, the Occident francais, in which he proclaimed his political creed. This number was sent to Queen Hortense

at Arenenberg, and when M. Fialin followed it in person, calling himself the vicomte de Persigny, he met with a warm reception, and soon became indispensable to Louis Napoleon. He had two qualities which gave him ascendency over the young prince, fidelity and audacity. He it was who planned the attempt on Strasburg in 1836, and that on Boulogne in 1840. For his share in the last escapade he was sentenced to imprisonment in a fortress for twenty years, which was commuted into detention at Versailles, where he wrote a curious book to prove that the Pyramids were built to keep the Nile from silting up. When the Revolution of 1848 broke out he laboured indefatigably for the Bona- partist cause, securing the election of Louis Napoleon to the Constituent Assembly in June and in September 1848, and to the presidency in December 1848. His own prosperity was now secured ; he was made aide-de-camp to the prince president, and elected to the Legislative Assembly in May 1849 for the department of the Loire. He then became one of the secret plotters of the coup d'état, and was at first designed for the office of minister of the interior, but a man of more capacity, De Morny, was chosen for this post, and Persigny only accompanied Colonel Espinasse to take possession of the hall of the assembly. On securing the throne Napoleon ITI. hastened to reward his most faithful personal adherent. Persigny became minister of the interior in the place of De Morny in January 1852, and a senator in December 1852. He resigned office in 1854 and became ambassador in London, with but one short interval (1858-59), from May 1855 to November 1860, when he again became minister of the interior. His second tenure of office lasted till June 1863, when he resigned in disgust at the influence which M. Rouher was attaining over the mind of the emperor, and was made duc de Persigny in September 1863. As a minister he showed very little capacity, and throughout the years of his political influence he never seemed to understand, like De Morny, the real bases of the existence of the second empire. He, however, from dislike of Rouher, supported Ollivier in 1869, and defended the plébiscite, and when the empire fell in 1870 escaped to England. He did not long survive the overthrow of the idea which he had so strenuously supported, and died at Nice on 11th January 1872. Fialin de Persigny was certainly only an adventurer, but he had one merit, which the other founders of the second empire did not possess, fidelity to his master.

For Persigny's life, see a most eulogistic biography by Delaroa

(Le duc de Persigny et lcs doctrines de Vempire, 1865); a short biography in Mirecourt's Portraits contemporains (18 58); and Cas-

tille's Portraits politiques et historiques (1859). His own curious book, De la destination et de Vutilité permanente des Pyramides ad' Egypte et de Nubie, was published in 1845, and he wrote various political pamphlets, of which the most interesting relates to the Strasburg attempt, Relation de Ventreprise du prince Napoléon Lowis (Lond. 1837). For his political career under the empire, see Taxile Delord's Histoire du second empire (1868-75).

PERSIMMON, the name given to the fruits of Diospyros virginiana in the United States. The tree which bears them belongs to the order Hbenacex, and lias oval entire leaves, and moneecious flowers on short stalks. In the male flowers, which are numerous, the stamens are sixteen in number, arranged in pairs, and with the anthers opening by slits. The female flowers are solitary, with traces of stamens, and have a glabrous ovary with one ovule in each of the eight cells,—the ovary being surmounted by four styles, which are hairy at the base. The fruit-stalk is very short, bearing a subglobose fruit an inch or rather more in diameter, of an orange-yellow colour, and with a sweetish astringent pulp. It is surrounded at the base by the persistent calyx-lobes, which increase in size as the fruit ripens. The astringency renders the fruit somewhat unpalatable, but, after it has been subjected to the action of frost, or has become partially rotted or "'bletted" like a medlar, its flavour is improved. In some of the south- ern States the fruit is said to be kneaded with bran, made into cakes, and baked. From the cakes a fermented liquor is made with the aid of yeast. The tree is cultivated in England, but rarely if ever ripens its fruit, and in the States it is said not to ripen north of New Jersey.

The Chinese and Japanese cultivate another species, the Diospyros Kaki, of which there exist numerous ill-defined vavieties, which, according to Mr Hiern in his exhaustive monograph of the Ebcnacew, all belong to one species. The fruits are larger than those of the American kind, variable in shape, but have similar properties. Some varieties have been introduced into Great Britain, and have produced their fruits in orchard-houses. The fruit is in appearance something like that of the apricot, but very astringent to the

taste. After ‘‘bletting,” however, 1t becomes sweet and agreeable. Some specimens analysed by Dr Voelcker for the scientific committee of the Royal Horticultural Society contained, roughly, 84 per cent. of water, 24 per cent. of tannic acid, and 9°8 of sugar, pectin, &c., with small quantities of woody, albuminoid, and mineral matters.

PERSIUS (A. Persrus Fiaccus) stands third in order of time of those recognized by the Romans as their four greatest satirists. These represent four distinct periods of the national development—the revolutionary era of the Gracchi, the years immediately preceding the establishment of the monarchy, the first years of the reign of Nero, the age of Domitian and the dawning of the better era which followed on the accession of Nerva. Their relative value consists in the truth, freedom, and power with which they expressed the better spirit of their time, commented on its vices and follies, and described the actual personages, the prevailing types of character, and the fashions and pur- suits—the “quicquid agunt homines”—by which it was marked. Of these four representatives of the most dis- tinctly national branch of Roman literature— Luciltus, Horace, Persius, and Juvenal—Persius is the least im- portant. He is indeed inferior to none of them in the purity and sincerity with which he expresses the best spirit of his age; but he was inferior in literary originality and vigour to Lucilius, in literary art to Horace and Juvenal,—less powerful in his denunciation of evil than Lucilius and Juvenal, less searching in his criticism than Horace,—less true to life in his delineation of men and manners than the two earlier satirists, less powerful in his effects than the latest among them. This inferior- ity is to be ascribed partly to the circumstances of his age. Its literature was more artificial, and also more opposed to the true principles of art, than that of any other stage in the development of Roman letters. The generation which succeeded the Augustan age—the generation which. lived

under Tiberius, Gaius, and Claudius—had not the genius to originate a literature of its own nor the sense of security which would enable it to perpetuate the literary accomplish- ment of the preceding age. No period between the Cicer- onian era and the reign of Hadrian was so unproductive. The accession of the young emperor, in whom were ulti- mately realized the

worst vices of the tyrant along with the most despicable weaknesses of the letterateur and artiste— "'scenicus ille-" is the term of contempt applied to him in Tacitus—gave a fresh impulse to that fashion of verse- making which Horace remarked as almost universal among his educated contemporaries, and which was stimulated by the rhetorical education of the day. But the writers of the Neronian age had neither the genius nor the true sense of art which distinguished the Ciceronian and Augustan ages, nor had they acquired the cultivated appreciation and good taste of the later Flavian era, nor were they animated by that sense of recovered freedom of speech and thought which gave to Roman literature its two last great repre- sentatives. The writing of the Neronian age was, for the most part, a crude and ambitious effort to produce sensa- tional effects by rhetorical emphasis. Of its representatives four can still be read with a certain though by no means an unmixed pleasure,—Seneca, Lucan, Petronius, and Persius. Of these Persius had least of the true literary gift. He had neither the smooth and fluent elegance of Seneca, the "ingenium amcenum et auribus illius temporis accom- modatum " attributed to him by Tacitus, nor the rhetorical passion of Lucan, nor the cynical realism and power of representation which enabled Petronius to originate a new form of literature. Persius could not have become a satirist of the type of Petronius or of Martial: he could not have treated human degradation in a spirit of cynical sympathy or of amused tolerance. On the other hand earnest satire directed against its legitimate objects, the emperor and his favourites, could not at such a time express itself openly. '""Pone Tigellinum" is an expressive reminder that it was safer to write sickly sentimentalism about " Phyllis and Hypsipyle" than to assume the réle of Lucilius.

But apart from the influence of his time and the natural limitations of his genius, the personal circumstances of Persius were unfavourable to success in the branch of literature to which he devoted himself. The shortness of his life and the retirement in which it was spent, his studious tastes, his delicate health, and that which is most admirable in him, his exceptional moral purity, all con- tributed to keep him ignorant of that world which it is the business of a satirist to know. Lucilius, Horace, Petronius, Martial, Juvenal, were all men of the world, who knew the life of their day by close personal contact with it, and had no need to imagine it through the medium of impressions received from literature, or situations in- vented as themes for

rhetorical exercises. Some aspects of his time, such as the outward signs of literary affectation and effeminacy, did come within the range of Persius's observation, and these he describes with no want of the pungency, "Italum acetum," characteristic of his race. But from any intimate knowledge, even through the medium of conversation, of the vices and vulgarities from which Petronius lifts the curtain he was debarred by the purity alike of his moral instincts and of his taste. Thus his satire, while able to lash "the sickly morals" of his time ("pallentes radere mores ") in fervid generalities, cannot perform the more important function of probing them through living examples.

But Roman satire had another function besides the re- presentation and criticism of men and manners. More than any other branch of literature it was the expression of the writer's own nature and convictions. The frank sincerity with which these were expressed was a great cause

of the personal hold which Lucilius had on his readers ; it is still one of the secrets of the personal charm of Horace, The sympathy with which Persius was read in the early days of Christianity and the enthusiasm which many readers have felt for him in modern times are mainly due

to the impression of character which he produces. But he is to be regarded further, not as an isolated specimen of purity in an impure age, but as an important witness of that undercurrent of moral 'and spiritual sentiment which gathered force as a protest against the corruption and tyranny of the first century of the empire. The conscious- ness of moral evil which became intensified during that period is very apparent when we compare the spirit of Cicero and Horace, men in their own day seriously con- cerned with questions of conduct, with that of Tacitus and Juvenal. This great inward change was stimulated and directed by the teaching of Stoicism; and it was in the reign of Nero that Stoicism gained its chief ascendency over educated men, and supplanted among the adherents of the republic the fashionable Epicureanism of the days of Lucretius and Horace. Of the Stoical spirit of that time, represented also by Seneca and Lucan, Persius is the purest representative. His chief claim to consideration is, not that he is a great poet, satirist, or humorist, or even an agreeable writer, but that he is one of

the earliest, and, amongst classical writers, one of the most sincere preachers of a pure personal morality based on a spiritual conception of religion.

The impression of him produced by his writings is confirmed by the accounts transmitted of his life, for which we are indebted to the contemporary grammarian, Valerius Probus of Berytus. Written when the impression left by him was fresh on the memory of his friends, it may be accepted as trustworthy in regard both of outward facts and of the sentiments which he inspired.

Well born and well connected, and the inheritor of a good estate, Persius lived the uneventful life of a student, and was chiefly remarkable for his affection for his friends, his teachers, and his family. He was a native of Etruria, a district which contributed less than any other in Italy to the literary distinction of Rome. And it is noticeable that, while Persius has all the characteristic moral fervour of the more serious Roman writers, he shows less, compared with those who have an important place in the national litera- ture, of that sensuous vivacity and susceptibility to beauty in art and nature with which the purely Italian race was pre- eminently endowed. He was born at Volaterre: in the year 34 A.D., and received his early education there. His father died when he was six years of age, and his mother, Fulvia Sisennia, whose latter name by its termination is indicative of an Etruscan stock, married a second time and was soon again left a widow. In one of the satires he speaks of the eagerness with which his father used to bring his friends to listen to his recitation of the dying speech of Cato. It is not likely that at the age of six he could have been so far advanced in his rhetorical education, and perhaps, though he uses the word “pater,” this reminiscence, which is told not without satirical colouring, may be a testi- mony to the interest which his stepfather took in watching his progress. The nature of the lesson—‘ morituri verba Catonis”—is suggestive of an early direction towards Stoicism given in his teaching ; but by what he tells us of his way of shirking his lessons and of his healthy pre- ference of play to work, he seems to have done what he could to escape the doom of becoming a precocious prodigy. He was taken at the age of twelve to Rome, and continued his education under the two most famous grammarians and rhetoricians of the day, Remmius Palemon and Virginius.

Flavus. The decisive influence of his life was his friend- ship with the Stoic philosopher, Annzeus Cornutus, whose

|

PERS TUS

pupil he became on assuming the “ toga virilis” at the age of sixteen. To the charm of this man’s conversation and teaching Persius attributes his escape from the temptations to a life of pleasure, to which youths of good position and fortune were exposed at Rome. Besides his friendship with Cornutus, he enjoyed during ten years of his life the inti- mate friendship of Thrasea Peetus, the noblest specimen of Stoicism which the Roman world produced in the first century of the empire. This intimacy was probably due, in the first place, to the relationship of Persius to the younger Arria, the wife of Thrasea. Though a much younger man, he gained so completely the affection of Thrasea that he often went with him as the companion of his travels. The knowledge that he was an intimate mem- ber of the circle of Thrasea and Helvidius gives an addi- tional interest to the opinions of Persius on literature and conduct, and also to the indications of his attitude towards the reigning power. He was introduced also to Seneca, but was not much attracted by his genius. The influence of Thrasea may have had something to do with this want of sympathy. The true Stoic, who “kept as holidays the birthdays of the two Brutuses and of Cassius,” was not likely to have been among the admirers of the apologist for parricide.}

He was also intimate with some of the younger poets of the time, especially with Cesius Bassus, to whom he addresses his sixth satire. He was acquainted with his younger and more famous contemporary, Lucan, who is said, with the generous impulses which seemed to have been mixed with the fatal weaknesses of his character, to have been carried away by great enthusiasm when he first heard Persius reciting some of his verses. His biographer tells us that the impulse to writing satire was derived from reading a book of Lucilius. He was evidently a diligent student both of him and of Horace. He himself justifies his adoption of this mode of writing by his natural tendency to satiric criticism,—“sum petulanti splene cachinno.” But his satire shows as little of the humorous amusement in contemplating the comedy of life, which is one of the motives of the satire of Horace, as of

the fierce indigna- tion which the tragic spectacle of its crimes produced in Juvenal. We should rather be inclined to conclude that, as his Stoicism was a protest against the vices and tyranny of the time, so his adoption of that masculine national form of literature which took its subjects from the actual expe- rience of Roman life was a protest against the effeminate style and exotic themes which were then fashionable with the social class to which he belonged.

There is no trace in his writings of any participation in the active interests of public or professional life. More than any other Roman writer, except perhaps Lucretius, he chose the "secretum iter et fallentis seniita vite" (the flowery path that winds by stealth). But his life, if appa- rently much happier, was not enriched by the fulness of contemplative interest and of delight in nature which lightened up the gloom of the older poet. His latest satire, addressed to his friend Cesius Bassus, is written from the port of Luna on the Gulf of Genoa; but, while celebrating the mildness of its winter climate, grateful to him as an invalid, he is silent about the charm of its natural beauty. He died at the age of twenty-eight, on one of his own estates on the Via Appia, within eight miles of Rome. His satires were revised by Cornutus, and edited at his own request by Cesius Bassus. The former is said to have altered into a vague generality an expression re- flecting on the poetical gifts of Nero, a subject as danger- ous to deal with as his vices and tyranny. Dying in the

1 Cf. "Ergo non iam Nero, cuius immanitas omnium questus anteibat, sed Seneca adverso rumore erat, quod oratione tali confessionem scrip- sisset'"' (Tac., Ann., xiv. 11).

year 62 a.p., Persius did not witness the worst crimes of that reign, and escaped the fate which awaited Seneca, Lucan, and Thrasea.

His character is thus summed up by his biographer. "He was of a most gentle disposition, of maidenly modesty, handsome Jn person, and marked by exemplary affection towards his mother, sister, and aunt. He lived soberly and chastely." The characteristic of "virginalis pudicitia" it 1s natural to associate with the pure family atmosphere in which he lived ; and

the existence of cultivated women who could exercise such an influence is a warning not to Judge Roman society, even in its worst time, altogether from the representation of Juvenal. The letters of Pliny amply confirm the belief that the world was not all so bad as if appears in that representation. The tone of the biographer as well as his explicit statements attest the warm affection which Persius inspired in his lifetime. Mere asceticism unaccompanied by other graces of character cannot account for this sentiment of affection; and the Roman world had a keen eye to detect insincere professions of austerity. But, while there are many signs of inexperi- ence of life and much forced and artificial writing in Persius, there is in the expression of his deepest convictions an unmistakable ring of genuineness. He seems to love virtue without effort, because his nature finds in the love and practice of virtue the secret of happiness. There is also in the personal addresses to his friends, as in that to Macrinus, a tone of genial sympathy with the innocent enjoyments of life. In the expression of affection for those whom he loved no ancient writer is so cordial and single-minded, except one, as much separated from him by the licence of his life as by the force of his genius, who also died in early youth, the ardent true-hearted poet of Verona.

Persius is said to have written slowly and seldom, and, though he seems to have composed, probably before he devoted himself to satire, a tragedy on a Roman subject, an account in verse of some of his travels, and some lines on the elder Arria (none of which were ever given to the world), the only result of his literary activity is the short book of six satires which we now possess. The contrast between the small amount of his contributions to literature and the reputation which he enjoyed is noticed by two ancient writers, who indicate their appreciation of his value, Quintilian and Martial. The satires are not only fewer in number than those of Horace and Juvenal, but they are for the most part shorter. Only one of them, the first, fulfils the proper function of satire by representing any phase of the life of the time and pointing its moral. It exposes by personal sketches and representative imitations the fashionable taste in poetry, and marks its connexion with the luxury and effeminacy of the age. The satire was believed in ancient times to be aimed at the emperor ; and this is confirmed, not only by the tradition of the substitution by Cornutus of the vague generality “quis non ” for the pointed ‘‘ Mida rex,” but also by the parody ‘‘Torva Mimal- loneis

implerunt cornua bombis," &c., which is in keeping with the account we have in Tacitus and other writers of the style of the emperor's compositions. In an age abounding in informers it would have been dangerous to have published or even to have read before a circle of friends a more direct comment ; but the attitude of Pcrsius towards the absolute ruler of the day may be inferred from other references in the satires, as from the passage lil. 35, be- ginning " Magne pater divum" ; and again ativ. 20, in the words, 'Ast ego Dinomaches," we may suspect a protest against the de- gradation of the Roman world in submitting to be governed by the son of Agrippina. Even in the abstinence from one single word of compliment to the ruling power we enjoy an agreeable contrast to the time-serving of Seneca and the adulation of Lucan.

While the first satire is, like most of those of Lucilius, Horace, and Juvenal, essentially representative, and has its motive in the desire to paint in satiric colours a prevailing fashion and some of the actual personages or types of character of the day, all the rest are essentially didactic and have their motive in the desire to enforce and illustrate some lesson of morality or tenet of Stoicism. The second is an admirable sermon on prayer, and illustrates by ex- amples that union of worldliness and covetousness with religious faith and practice which has not been absolutely confined to Pagan- ism. The third is aimed at the exposure and correction of the weakness of character which, in spite of good resolutions, succumbs to the attacks of sloth and pleasure. The fourth, suggested by the first Alcibiades of Plato, though perhaps also written with covert reference to one whose " Greek levity' may have prompted him to

pose as a Roman Alcibiades, is directed against the arrogant claims of a sensual youth to deal, on the ground of his hereditary distinc- tion, with affairs of state and to govern men. The fifth, the most elaborate of all, illustrates the Stoical doctrine of the difference between true and false freedom, and shows the power of avarice, luxury, the passion of love, ambition, and superstition to make men slaves. It is the same subject as that which Horace treats in the third satire of the second book ; but it is treated with neither the irony nor the direct knowledge of life which Horace applies

to it. The last satire is chiefly devoted to a subject which played a large part in the satire of Horace and Lucilius,—the proper use of money. In all these latter pieces the subjects are the common- places of satire and moral disquisition, illustrated rather by new versions of old characters than by pictures of the living men and women of the day. Though he expresses admiration for the spirit of Lucilius and the old comedy, he seems to keep clear of all personality and detraction. He professes ‘‘ingenuo culpam defigere ludo,” and, whatever may be thought of his humour, he at least always writes in the spirit of a gentleman. So far as there is real contact with life in his satires, it is with the vanity and weakness of the class to which he himself belonged that he shows familiarity. Other sketches, however, show original observation, as that of the pro- vincial zdile, of the brawny centurion who laughs at all philosophers, and, the most elaborate of all, that of the man torn asunder by his avarice and his love of luxury, who shrinks from the hard roughing of a sea-voyage, to which he is prompted by his cupidity (i. 129, li. 76-87, v. 141-150).

In point of form he aims at reproducing the dialogue of the old ‘‘satura,” to which Horace finally adhered. But for the dramatic vivacity of ordinary speech he substitutes the curt questions and answers of Stoicaldisquisition. This isa great source of the obscurity of his writing. Some of his satires take the form of a familiar epistle, but in them also there is a large intermixture of dialogue. In style, while he protests against other modes of affectation, he can- not escape the perverse fashion of forced and exaggerated expression. While disclaiming imaginative inspiration and avoiding poetical ornament, he falls into the opposite extreme of excessive realism, and disguises his plain meaning under contortions of metaphor, taken from the forge, the potter’s wheel, the carpentcr’s rule, the baker’s oven, &c. He is fond, too, of the realism of physical ex- pression to denote states of mind and feeling, such as ‘‘fibra,” “*pulpa,”’ ‘‘ gluto,” &¢.; and this tendency, combined perhaps with the wish to imitate Lucilius, has led him occasionally to disfigure the purity of his pages with unnecessary coarseness. It is only rarely, and when he is at his best, that we are not conscious of a constant strain to express his meaning with unnecessary emphasis. Though single phrases of forcible condensation can be quoted from him, yet almost every period and paragraph seems to have been made harsh and obscure with the purpose of arresting attention. In the pictures

which he draws from life, as in that of the reciting poet in the first satire, he strives by minuteness and exaggeration of dctail to produce a strong sensational impression ; and this is still more observable in those numerous cases where he distorts and cari- catures the temperate and truthful effects of Horace's sketches. No Latin writer is less natural. His works have engaged the industry of many commentators both in ancient and modern times. None could claim less the praise which Martial claims for his own, of " pleasing grammarians without needing the aid of their interpretation."

It is not, accordingly, among writers but among moralists that he holds a high place. Among the professors of Stoicism some were better writers, others were greater men ; no one was purer in all his instincts, more sincere in all his nature, or inspired with a more genuine enthusiasm for virtue. It is when he gives expression to this enthusiasm and to his single-hcarted affection for his friends that he is able for a few lines to write with simple force and with impassioned earnestness. Such lines as these—

" Compositum ius fasque anime, sanctosque recessus Mentis, et incoctum generoso pectus honesto" (ii. 73, 74); "* Quid sumus et quidnam victuri gignimur. . . -.. que te deus esse Jussit et humana qua parte locatus es in re" (iii. 66-72), &c.; are in a strain more in accordance with the best modern ideas of man's highest duty and his true position in the world than anything to be found in the other satirists of Rome. The aim of Lucilius was to make men good citizens. He judged their life by the standard of public virtue and utility. The aim of Horace's satire was to make men happier in themselves and more agreeable in their intercourse with one another. He judged them by the standard of good sense, good feeling, and good manners. The aim of Juvenal—so far as it was sincere—was to raise human life from the degradation into which it had fallen. The standard by which he judged the men of his day was that of the manliness and dignity realized in the best ages of the republic. The aim of Persius was to make men live in accordance with the dictates of a pure conscience. His standard was that ideal of human conduct

which has arisen out of the aspirations and convictions of an en- lightencd theism.

The best recent editions of Persius are those of O. Jahn and of Professor Conington. The edition of Mr Pretor is also to be named. All of these contain, in their introductions, important contributions to the critical estimate of Persius. An excellent account of his life, character, and writings is to be found in Martha's Les Moralistes Romains, and an interesting, though some- what disparaging, criticism of him as a writer is contained in Nisard's Poétes Latins de la Decadence. W. Y. 8.)

PERSONAL ESTATE. Strictly speaking, the term Estate (g.v.) is confined in English law to the extent of interest which can exist in real property. But 'personal estate" is a term often conveniently, if not accurately, applied to all property that is not real property. The division of property into real and personal represents in a great measure the division into immovable and mov- able incidentally recognized in Roman law and generally adopted since. "The only natural classification of the objects of enjoyment, the only classification which corre- sponds with an essential difference in the subject-matter, is that which divides them into moveables and immove- ables" (Maine, Ancient Law, ch. viii.) " Things personal," according to Blackstone, ''are goods, money, and all other moveables which may attend the owner's person wherever he thinks proper to go" (Comm., vol. ii. p. 16). This identification of things personal with movables, though logical in theory, does not, as will be seen, perfectly express the English law, owing to the somewhat anomal- ous position of chattels real. In England real property is supposed to be superior in dignity to personal property, which was originally of little importance from a legal point of view. This view is the result of feudal ideas, and had no place in the Roman system, in which immov- ables and movables were dealt with as far as possible in the same manner, and descended according to the same rules. The law of personal property has developed more rapidly and freely than that of real property, as it is of more modern growth and has not been affected by the notion of tenure. The main differences between real and personal property which still exist in England are these. (1) In real property there can be nothing more than limited ownership (see Estate); there can be no estate properly so called in personal property, and it may be held in complete ownership. There is nothing correspond- ing to an estate-tail in personal property ; words which in real property would create an estate-tail will give an absolute interest in personalty. A life-interest may, however, be given in

personalty, except in articles quz tpso usu consumuntur. Limitations of personal property, equally with those of real property, fall within the rule against perpetuities. (See Reat Estarr.) (2) Personal property is not subject to various incidents of real property, such as rent, dower, or escheat. (3) On the death of the owner intestate real property descends to the heir ; personal property is divided according to the Statute of Distribu- tions. (4) Real property as a general rule must be trans- ferred by deed ; personal property does not need so solemn a mode of transfer. (5) Contracts relating to real pro- perty must be in writing by the Statute of Frauds, 29 Car. I]. c. 3,s. 4; contracts relating to personal property need only be in writing when it is expressly so provided by statute, as, for instance, in the cases falling under s. 17 of the Statute of Frauds. (6) A will of lands need not be proved, but a will of personalty or of personal and real property together must be proved in order to give a title to those claiming under it. (7) Devises of real estate fall as a rule within the Mortmain Act, 9 Geo. IIL. c. 36 (see CHARITIES, CORPORATION); bequests of personal pro- perty, other than chattels real, are not within the Act. (8) Mortgages of real property need not generally be registered ; mortgages of personal property for the most part require registration under the Bills of Sale Acts (see PLepGE ; and Birt or Sats, vol. iii. p. 674).

Personal estate is divided in English law into chattels

real and chattels personal ; the latter are again divided into choses in possession and choses in action. Chattels real are personal interests in real estate, which, though they are annexed to land, still descend ,1n the same manner as personal estate. Blackstone speaks of them as being “ of a mongrel amphibious nature.” Examples are a term of years, the next presentation to a benefice, an estate pur autre vie, and money due upon a mortgage. Under the head of chattels personal fall all kinds of property other than real estate and chattels real. In cases of bequest to a charity the terms pure and impure or mixed personalty are often used. The latter class is almost conterminous with chattels real. It falls as a rule within the Mortmain Act. A chose in action denotes the right of recovery by legal proceedings of that which, when recovered, becomes a chose in possession.

Choses in action were before the Judicature Acts either legal, as debts (whether arising from contract or tort), recoverable in a court of law, or equitable, as legacies (residuary personal estate of a deceased person), or money in the funds. A legal chose in action was not assignable. A consequence of this view was that until 1875 (subject to one or two statutory ex- ceptions, such as actions on policies of insurance) an action on an assigned chose in action must have been brought at law in the name of the assignor, though the sum recovered belonged in equity to the assignee, and in equity he might have sued in his own name, making the assignor a party as co-plaintiff or as defendant. The Judicature Acts have made the distinction drawn between legal and equitable choses in action of no importance. The Judicature Act, 1873, 36 and 37 Vict. c. 66, s. 25, (6), enacts that the legal right to a debt or other legal chose in action may be passed by absolute assignment in writing under the hand of the assignor. The old law as to the reduction into possession by a husband of his wife's choses in action (see Huspanp AND Wire) seems to have been practically rendered obsolete by the Married Women's Property Act, 1882. Blackstone, who is followed by Mr Joshua Williams (Law of Personal Property), recognizes a further division of encorporeal personal property, standing between choses in action and choses in possession, and including personal annuities, stocks and shares, patents, and copyrights,

Interest in personal property may be either absolute or qualified. The latter case is illustrated by animals fere nature, in which property is only coextensive with detention. Personal estate may be acquired by occupancy (including the accessio, commixtio, and confusio of Roman law), by invention, as patent and copyright, or by transfer, either by the act of the law (as in bankruptcy, judgment, and intestacy), or by the act of the party (as in gift, con- tract, and will).

There are several cases in which, by statute or other- Wise, property is taken out of the class of real or personal to which it seems naturally to belongs By the operation of the equitable doctrine of conversion money directed to be employed in the purchase of land, or land directed to be turned into money, is in general regarded as that species of property into which it is directed to be converted. An example of property prima facie real which is treated as personal is an estate pur autre vie, which, since 14 Geo. Il. ¢. 20, s. 9 (now

replaced by 1 Vict. c. 26, s. 6), is distributable as personal estate in the absence of a special occupant. Examples of property prima facie personal which is treated as real are FrxrurEs (q.v.), heirlooms, such as deeds and family portraits, and shares in some of the older companies, as the New River Company, which are real estate by statute. In ordinary cases shares in com- panies are personal estate, unless the shareholders have individually some interest in the land as land.

The terms heritable and movable of Scotch law to a great extent

correspond with the real and personal of English law. The main points of difference are these. (1) Leases are heritable as to the succession to the lessee, unless the destination expressly exclude heirs, but are movable as to the fisk. (2) Money due on mortgages and securities on land is personalty in England. At common law in Scotland debts secured on heritable property are themselves heritable. But by 31 and 82 Vict. c. 101, s. 117, heritable securi- ties are movable as far as regards the succession of the creditor, unless executors are expressly excluded. They still, however, remain heritable quoad fiscwm, as between husband and wife, in computing legitim, and as far as regards the succession of the debtor. (8) Up to 1868 the heir of heritage succeeded to certain movable goods called heirship movables,.which bore a strong likeness to the heirlooms of English law. This right of the heir was abolished by 81 and 82 Vict. c. 101, s. 160. (4) Annuities, as having tractwm Suturi temporis, are heritable, and an obligation to pay them falls upon the heir of the deceased (Watson, Law Dict., s.v. “ Annuities”). The law in the United States agrees in most respects with that of England. Heirlooms are unknown, one reason being, no doubt, that the importance of title-deeds is much less than it is in England, owing to the operation of the Registration Acts. Long terms in some States have annexed to them the properties of freehold estates. Thus in Massachusetts, if the original term be a hundred or more years, it is deemed a fee as long as fifty years remain unexpired (Mass. Gen. Stat., c. 90, §20). In the same State estates pur autre vie descend like real property (Gen. Stat., c. 91,§ 1). In New York and New Jersey an estate pur autre vie is deemed a freehold only during the life of the grantee; after his death it

becomes a chattel real. In other States the heir has a scintilla of interest as special occupant (Kent, Comm., vol. iv. p. 27). In some States railway rolling-stock is considered as purely personal, in others it has been held to be a fixture, and so to partake of the nature of real property. Shares in some of the early American corporations were, likc New River shares in England, made real estate by statute, as in the case of the Cape Sable Company in Maryland (Schouler, Law of Personal Property, vol. i. p. 619). In Louisiana animals employed in husbandry are, and slaves were, regarded as immovables. Pews in churches are generally real property, but in some States they are made personal property by statute, ¢.g., in Massachusetts (Gen. Stat., c. 80, § 38). The assignment of choses in action is generally permitted, and is in most States regulated by statute. The circuit court has no jurisdiction in the case of an assigned chose in action unless a suit might have been prosecuted in that court if no assignment had been made (Revised Stat. of VY. S., tite xm. § 629). (amity)

PERSPECTIVE. See PRoJEcTION.

PERTH, an inland county of Scotland, is situated almost in the centre of the country between 56° 4’ and 56° 57’ N. lat., and between 3° 4’ and 4° 50’ W. long. The larger part of its border-line is formed of natural bound- aries, the Grampians separating it on the west and north from Argyll, Inverness, and Aberdeen; while the Ochils and the Firth of Tay in the south-east divide it from Kinross, Clackmannan, and Fife. In the south the river Forth forms a large portion of the boundary with Stirling, but the boundary with Forfar in the north-east is almost at no point defined either by rivers or mountains. The county is of an irregular circular form, the diameter being about 70 miles. A small portion in the south-east is separated from the main portion at the junction of Clackmannan and Fife, and another small portion is sur- rounded by Stirlingshire. Perthshire is the fourth largest county in Scotland, the total area being 1,617,808 acres, or 2528 square miles. Situated on the Highland border, Perthshire embraces characteristics scarcely combined in any other county of Scotland, and it excels them all in the picturesqueness and multiform variety of its scenery. The finest passes into the Highlands are Killiecrankie, Leny, and the Trosachs. With hardly any exception the rivers and streams flow east and south and reach the ocean either by the Forth or the Tay. They generally issue from large elongated lochs formed by

depressions at the foot of the mountains. The Ericht in the extreme north-west unites Loch Ericht and Loch Rannoch ; and from the latter flows the Tummel, which, after passing through Loch Tummel and forming a series of rapids and falls, joins the Tay. The Tay, which rises on the borders of Argyllshire, passes through Loch Dochart and Loch Tay, and in its course

. vu en

of rather over 100 miles receives nearly the whole drainage of the county, discharging a larger volume of water to the sea than any other river in Great Britain; its principal tributaries are the Tummel at Logierait, the Bran near Dunkeld, the Isla near Kinclaven (after its junction with the Ericht), the Almond near Perth, and the Earn from Loch Earn, at the borders of Fifeshire. The Forth from Loch Ard skirts the southern boundary of the county, and receives the Teith from Lochs Katrine, Achray, Vennacher, Voil, and Lubnaig, the Goodie Water from Loch Menteith, and the Allan, which rises in the Ochil Hills. Loch richt, partly in Inverness-shire, and Loch Tay are each more than 14 miles in length, Loch Rannoch is 9 miles long, Lochs Earn and Katrine are 7 each, and Lochs Ven- nacher, Lubnaig, and Voil each between 5 and 3. There are an immense number of small lochs varying in length from 1 to 3 miles, among which may be mentioned Garry, Tummel, Lows, Lyon, Dochart, Freuchie, Ard, and Men- teith. The lochs and rivers abound in salmon and varieties of trout; and scarcely any of the streams have been per- ceptibly injured by the pollution of manufactures. About four-fifths of the surface of the county, chiefly in the west and north-west, is occupied by the Grampians, or encroached on by their ridges or by isolated summits, among the highest of the chain in Perthshire being Ben Lawers (3984 feet), north of Loch Tay; Ben More (3843) and Stobinnain (3821), south of Loch Dochart ; Ben-y-Gloe (3690), and other peaks, near Glen Tilt; Schiehallion (3547), south of Loch Rannoch; and Ben Voirlich (3180), south of Loch Earn. The Ochils, occupying a consider- able area in the south-east, attain in many cases a height of over 2000 feet, and the Sidlaws, practically a con- tinuation of the Ochils running into Forfarshire, reach a height of about 1500 feet. The lowland districts consist chiefly of the straths and river-valleys, as Strathtay ; Strath- more, extending into

Forfarshire ; Strathearn, stretching across the county from west to east, and bounded on the south by the Ochils ; the district of Menteith between the Teith and the Forth; and the Carse of Gowrie between the Sidlaws and the Firth of Tay.

Geology and Minerals.—As regards its geology Perth- shire consists of two distinct areas, that differ from each other entirely in the rocks of which they are composed and consequently in their scenery. The larger of these regions comprises the mountainous ground and occupies the northern and by much the larger part of the county. The rocks in this region belong to the series of crystal- line schists, and include varieties of gneiss, mica-schist, clay-slate, hornblende-rock, &c., with important bands of quartzite, quartz-schist, and limestone. These rocks are arranged in approximately parallel folds, the axes of which range in a general sense from south-west to north- east, the same groups of strata being repeated again and again by successive plications. The quartzites from their durability and whiteness form specially marked zones across the county, as in the ranges of Schiehallion and Ben-y-Gloc. The limestones also from their persistence afford excellent horizons for interpreting the geological structure. A notable band of them runs along the valley of Loch Tay, plunging under Ben Lawers and rising up again in Glen Lyon, whence it continues across Strath Tummel into Glen Tilt. These various crystalline rocks are believed to be prolongations of the schistose series that overlies the Lower Silurian rocks of Sutherland 3 but they have not yet yielded fossils. They are here and there pierced by masses of granite, porphyry, or other eruptive rocks.

The southern (or more correctly south-eastern) limit of the mountain ground is defined by a line drawn from the foot of Loch Lomond by Aberfoyle, Pass of Leny, Comrie,

PER TH

a little below Dunkeld, and Bridge of Cally, to Lintrathen, On the southern side of this line the ground presents distinctively lowland scenery. It is occupied by the Lower Old Sandstone with its included conglomerates, flagstones, and voleanic rocks. A remarkable dislocation, which nearly coincides with the line just traced, separates the younger series of formations from the older rocks of the mountains. But here and there on the

north side of the fracture, in bay-like hollows of the hills, the massive conglomerates of the Old Red Sandstone can be seen rest- ing upon the upturned edges of the schists. These con- glomerates with their associated strata appear to have been laid down in a large lake or inland sea which lay across central Scotland and northern Ireland, and was tenanted by the peculiar Old Red Sandstone fishes (Cephalaspis, &c.). A long line of active volcanoes extended through this lake. Their sites are still traceable in the Ochil and Sidlaw Hills. See GroLoey, vol. x. p. 343 sg. Much of the lower ground is covered with the clays, gravels, and sands left by the ice- sheets and glaciers that once occupied the surface. Raised beaches marking recent upheaval of the land are seen in the Firth of Tay. The larger rivers present a succession of three or more alluvial terraces. Copper ore is found in the southern Ochils and coal at their base. Ironstone is wrought at Culross. Lead and other metals are found sparingly in the neighbourhood of Tyndrum, Ben Ledi, and Glen Lyon. Roofing slates are quarried at Birnam. In many valleys there are large deposits of peat.

Agriculture.—The climate and soil of Perthshire present greater varieties than in any other county of Scotland. In the higher western regions it is very moist ; and long stretches of exposed uplands alternate with finely-sheltered valleys. The arable land is chiefly in the drier eastern districts. For the most part the soil is sharp and fertile. The county, agriculturally, may be classed in four divisions: deer-forests, chiefly the wilder mountain districts ; grazing and pasture lands on the hills, embracing about four-fifths of the total area; light soils in the lower undulating dis- tricts, including the north portion of Menteith and the upper portion of the principal river-valleys, specially suited for oats, barley, turnips, and potatoes ; clay and carse land, chiefly in the Carse of Gowrie, which extends to about 100,000 acres, in the Carse of Stirling north of the Forth and in the lower part of Strathearn below and above Bridge of Karn. The Carse of Gowrie has as its basis the boulder clay, above which rests the blue clay proper, or peat, or the carse clay,—a mixture of sand and clay, ranging from the finest clay soil to poor whitish “end clay.” The best heavy carse land is very rich and productive, but requires to be thoroughly wrought, limed, and manured. The dis- trict is well adapted for wheat, although the area sown is decreasing. A considerable area is occupied by orchards, the light quick soil on Tayside and in the upper districts of Menteith being admirably adapted for apples.

Between 1875 and 1880 the number of holdings decreased from 5296 to 5123, although their area increased from 331,890 to 344,728 acres. Of the holdings 179 in 1880 were above 300 acres in extent, 1033 between 100 and 800 acres, 786 between 50 and 100 acres, and 3125 did not exceed 50 acres each. There are a large number of small holdings in the Highland valleys and in the neighbourhood of the villages and small towns. According to the agricultural returns for 1883 there were 344,240 acres, or only a little less than a fifth of the total area, under cultivation, 103,050 acres being under corn crops, 50,799 acres green crops, 100,631 rotation grasses, 87,064 permanent pasture, and 2696 fallow. Of the corn crops, 70,424 acres were under oats, 22,770 acres barley and bere, 6238 wheat, and 3087 beans; and of the green crops, 31,059 acres were under turnips and swedes and 18,611 under potatoes. The number of horses was 13,651, of which 10,524, chiefly Clydesdales, were used solely for agricultural purposes. Cattle numbered 73,097, of which 18,755 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf. Although dairy-farming is not in itself an im- portant industry, a large number of cows are generally kept on the lowland farms. The cows are principally Ayrshires, but the West

PP ait ee PET

Highland or Kyloe breed of cattle is common in the straths and lower grounds adjoining the Highlands. Shcep in 1883 numbered 696,640. All the pasturage in the Grampians, not in deer-forests, is occupied by sheep, and there are also large sheep-runs on the Ochils. The blackfaced are principally kept in the Grampians, but there are also a large number of Cheviots, and in the lower grounds South Downs and Leicesters are common. In 1812 there were 203,880 acres under wood, of which 61,164 were planted and 142,716 natural. The area under woods in 1884 was 94,563 acres, in addition to which 424 acres were under orchards, 535 acres market-gardens, and 113 acres nurseries. In Breadalbane and Menteith there are still extensive remains of the old forest.

According to the latest return (1872-73) the land was divided among 5737 proprietors, possessing 1,612,001 acres at an annual value of £959,365, or about 11s. 10d. an acre. Of the proprictors 4680, or nearly four-fifths, possessed less than onc acre each. The follow- ing possessed upwards of

20,000 acres each, viz., duke of Athole, 194,640; earl of Breadalbane, 193,504; Baroness Willoughby d'Eresby, 76,837 ; trustees of marquis of Breadalbane, 40,662 ; earl of Moray, 40,553 ; Hon. Lady Menzies, 35,500; Sir A. D. Drummond Stewart, 33,274; trustees of R. Stewart Menzies, 33,000; Sir Robert Menzies, 32,784 ; duke of Montrose, 32,294; earl of Mans- field, 31,197; D. R. Williamson, 29,494; C. H. Drummond Moray, 24,980; Mrs Mary Stuart Robertson, 24,000; W. M. Macdonald, 22,600; David Carnegie, 22,205; and Lieutenant-Colonel Far- quharson, 20,056.

Manufactures.— The manufacture of coarser linen fabrics is largely carried on in the towns and villages, and there are a con- siderable number of flour-mills. Cotton-works exist at Deanston and Stanley ; hand-loom weaving is carried on at Auchterarder, Dunblane, Doune, Crieff, and elsewhere, and in several places the manufacture of shawls, blankets, and other fabrics. For the indus- tries of the city of Perth see below.

Railways.—The lowland districts of the county are intersected by branches of the principal railway lines of Scotland, supplying convenient communication between all the principal towns ; and by the Highland and Oban railways, supplemented by coaches and steamers on the larger lochs, the finest scenery in the county has been rendered easy of access.

Administration and Population. Anciently the county was divided into the hereditary jurisdictions of Athole in the north, Balquhidder in the south-west, Breadalbane in the west, Gowrie in the east, Menteith in the south, Perth in the south-east, Rannoch in the north-west, and Stormont and Strathearn in the middle. These jurisdictions were abolished by the Act of 1748, aud in 1795 an Act was passed dividing the county for administrative purposes into the ten districts of Auchterarder, Blairgowrie, Carse of Gowrie, Crieff, Culross, Coupar-Angus, Dunblane, Dunkeld, Perth, and Weem. The sheriffdom is divided into an eastern and a western district, the seat of the one being Perth and of the other Dunblane. The eounty is represented in parliament by one member, the city of Perth by one member, and Culross is included in the Stirling dis- trict of burghs. Perthshire embraces eighty-one parishes, and con- tains three ancient cities, Perth, formerly the capital of Scotland, and Dunkeld and Dunblane, formerly the seats of bishoprics, as

_ was also Abernethy. The zveyeh burghs are Perth (27,207) and

Culross (380); and Auchterarder, Abernethy, and Dunblane formerly held this rank. The police burghs are Abernethy (906), Alyth (2377), Blairgowrie (4537), Callander (1522), Coupar-Angus (partly

in Forfarshire), Crieff (4469), Dunblane (2186), Perth (26,951), and

Rattray (2533). The population of the county in 1831 was 142,166, which by 1851 had diminished to 138,660, and by 1871 to 127,768; but in 1881 it had increased to 129,007, of whom 61,552 were males and 67,455 females. The increase has been wholly in the town population, from 44,250 (in 1871) to 49,642 (in 1881), there being a decrease in the village population from 23,321 to 22,349, and in the rural from 60,197 to 57,016. The number of persons speaking Gaelie was 14,505, or more than one-ninth of the total population.

History and Antiquities.—In the 2d eentury the district was divided, according to Ptolemy, among three tribes. The Damnonii inhabited Menteith, Strathearn, and Forthryfe (including the western part of Fife), and had three principal oppida—Alauna, at the junction of the Allan and Forth, guarding the entrance to the Highlands from the south ; Lindum, at Ardoch ; and Victoria, at Loch Orr in Fife. The Venicones inhabited part of Fife and the adjoining district of Perthshire, with the town of Orrea, probably Abernethy, at the junction of the Earn and Tay, the nearest Roman station to which was at Ardargie. The Vacomagi skirted the High- land region, and had the towns of Tamea in Inchtuthil (an island in the Tay), where remains still exist, and Banatia, at Buchanty on the Almond, where therc was a strong Roman station. In 83 A.D. Agricola explored the country beyond the Forth, and in the following ycar probably carried his legions to the foot of the Gram- pians. At Mons Graupius or Granpius, whose site is not ascertained, but which is, according to the most probable conjecture (Mr Skene’s), in the district of Stormont in Perthshire, amongst the outliers of

the Grampians near Meikleour, where the Cleavers Dyke and Buzzard Dykes perhaps mark the camps of Agricola and Galgacus and the Hill of

Blair the scene of battle, the Romans (according to their own accounts) defeated the tribes of Caledonia with great slaughter ; but they dcemed it imprudent to pursue the victory. Perthshire was accordingly left in the possession of its native tribes till its invasion by Severus in 207. The Roman road of Severus passed by Alauna to Lindum at Ardoch, where there are extensive remains of a Roman station, and thence by Strageath near Auchterarder, Dalgin Ross near Comrie, where there were prominent remains a century ago, and Buchanty, where one branch passed eastwards to the coast, and the other turned northwards over the Grampians.

As Severus renewed the wall of Antoninus, he does not appear to have retained possession of the county north of the Forth and the Clyde. Perthshire was included in the kingdom of the Southern Picts, who had their capital first at Abernethy and afterwards at Forteviot. On the burning of Forteviot by the Northmen in the 8th century the seat of the Government was changed to Scone, which continued to be the capital of Albany, the chief royal resi- dence in Scotland, and the place where its kings were crowned, though circumstances led to James II., James III., and Mary being crowned elsewhere. But, as Perth increased in population, it became the seat of the parliament, and the favourite residence of the kings, until it was succeeded by Edinburgh in the reign of James II. In the early history of the county fall the defeat of the Danes at Luncarty in the 10th century and of Macbeth by Earl Siward at Dunsinane in 1054. To its later history, apart from incidents connected with the eity of Perth, belong the removal of the coronation stone from Scone to Westminster by Edward I.; the battle of Dupplin, where Edward Baliol defeated the earl of Mar ; the rout of the troops of General Mackay at Killiecrankie by the Highlanders under Dundee, 17th July 1689; and the indecisive battle at Sheriffmuir, 13th November 1715, between the adherents of the Pretender under the earl of Mar and the forces of the Govern- ment under Argyll. Apart from the camp at Ardoch Roman remains are not important. Of hill-forts the most remarkable is that on Dunsinane Hill. Among other relics of an early period are a ship-barrow of the vikings ou the Hill of Rattray ; weems in the parishes of Monzie, Alyth, and Bendochy ; the witchstone near Cairnbeddie, where Macbeth is said to have met the witches,—pro- bably a sepulchral memorial of some old battlefield ; another stone in Meigle parish

called Macbeth’s Stone; a group of standing stones near Pitlochrie; and a number of sculptured stones at Mcigle.

Abernethy, originally founded by the Pictish king Nertan in the 5th century, and refounded by St Columba in the 6th, succeeded Iona as the seat of the primacy of Scotland, afterwards transferred to St Andrews. The round tower in the churchyard, resembling those in Ireland, is supposed to have been built in the time of Kenneth Macalpine. The Culdees had monastic churches at Dun- blane, Dunkeld, Abernethy, and Muthill. DunBLANE (g.v.) and DUNKELD (q.v.) were subsequently erected into bishoprics. The Canons Regular had an abbey at Scone, founded in 1124 and burned in 1559, its site being now occupied by a modern mansion ; a priory at Loch Tay, 1114; a priory at Inchafray, 1200 ; a priory at Strath- fillan, 1314; and a priory at Abernethy, 1273. The Dominicans had a convent at Perth, 1231, where there was also a Carthusian monastery, 1429, and a Greyfriars monastery, 1460. Culross abbey, of which the tower and the Gothie choir still remain, was founded by the Cistercians in 1217, and there was also an abbey of Cistercian nuns at St Leonards, Perth, founded in 1296. A Carmelite convent was founded at Tulliallan in 1267. There were collegiate churches at Methven and Tullibardine. Ofthe old castles of the chiefs mention may be made of Elcho Castle on the Tay, 4 miles south of Perth; Blair Castle, garrisoned by Montrose in 1644, stormed by Croniwell in 1653, occupied by Claverlouse in 1689, dismantled in 1690, and restored in 1870; Castle Huntly, built in 1452 by Lord Grey, master of the household to James II.; the ruins of Castle Dhu, near Moulin, once a stronghold of the Campbell family; the ruins of Finlarig Castle, Killin, the cradle of the Breadalbane family ; Cluny Castle, on the island in the loch of the same name between Dunkeld and Blairgowrie ; and Doune Castle, on the Teith, a pic- turesque ruin of very old date, rebuilt by Murdoch, duke of Albany. Among modern mansions the principal are Keir House, the seat of the late Sir W. Stirling-Maxwell; Blair Drummond House, the seat of the Drummonds; Blair Castle, duke of Athole; Taymouth Castle, earl of Breadalbane; Doune Lodge, earl of Moray ; Dupplin Castle, earl of Kinnoul ; Scone Palace, earl of Mansfield ; Gleneagles, earl of Camperdown; Strathallan Castle, Viscount Strathallan; and Drummond Castle, Baroness Willoughby d’Eresby. ; ’

PERTH, an ancient city, a royal and parliamentary burgh, and the chief town of the above county, is beauti- fully situated at the foot of Kinnoul Hill, chiefly on the west bank of the Tay, about 40 miles north of Edinburgh

and about 20 west of Dundee. It is substantially built

668

of stone, and contains a number of good public buildings, while the lower slopes of Kinnoul Hill are studded with villas embosomed in woods. To the north and south of

rn RT

in cargo and in ballast that entered the port in 1883 was 124 of 9767 tons, that cleared 124 of 9731 tons. are Baltic timber, coal, salt, and manure, and the exports corn,

the town along the banks of the Tay are the extensive meadows of the North and South Inches. The Tay is crossed by a stone bridge forcarriagetraflic, erected in 1771 and widened in 1869, and by a stone and iron rail- |, way bridge with a footway. Notwithstanding its importance in early times, the city now re- tains almost no relics of anti- quity. The religious houses were razed by the mob after jp John Knox preached his famous |} sermon in St John's church || against the idolatries of Romie. | The Dominican or Blackfriars | monastery, founded by Alex- ander II. in 1231 and a residence of the Scottish kings, occupied a site near the west end of the present bridge; the site of the Carthusian monastery, founded by James I. in 1429, and where he and his queen, and Margaret queen of James lV.,were buried, has since 1750 been occupied by the hospital founded by James VI.; Greyfriars monas- tery, founded in 1460, stood on the present Greyfriars church- yard ; and a little west of the town was a house of the Carmelites or Whitefriars, founded in 1260. The parliament house, where the ancient parlia- ments of Scotland were held, was cleared away in 1818, and was succeeded by the Freemasons' Hall ; Earl Gowrie's palace, founded in 1520, was removed in 1805 to make way for the county buildings; the Spey tower near the Spey gate, a mural fortress long used as a prison, was taken down about fifty years ago. The cross, erected in 1668 in place of that

demolished by Cromwell, was removed in 1807. The old church of St John is said to have been founded in the 5th century; the transept and nave of the existing structure date from the early part of the 13th century and the choir in its present state from the 15th; the building is now divided into an east, a middle, and a west church. Among other public edifices the principal are the county buildings (erected 1819-20 at a cost of £32,000, and enlarged in 1866), the general prison for Scotland (originally erected in 1812 as a depét for French prisoners, remodelled as a convict prison in 1840, and enlarged in 1858 and 1881), the city and county jail (1819), the military barracks (1793-94), the public seminaries (1807), Marshall Museum and Library (1823), Murray's Royal Lunatic Asylum (1827), the infirmary (1836), the general railway station (1848), the new public hall (1881), the Boys' and Girls' Religious Society hall (1881), the new municipal buildings (1881), —a fine range in the Tudor style, cost £13,000.

Some of the most extensive bleach-fields in the kingdom are in the immediate neighbourhood of Perth on the banks of the Tay and the Almond. Perth itself has manufactories of gauge glasses, muslins, ginghams, imitation India shawls and scarfs, union goods, and boots and shoes ; and there are rope-works, coach-building yards, iron-foundries, breweries, and distilleries. The Tay has valuable salmon fisheries. The navigation of the river is considerably obstructed by sand. In 1834 an Act was obtained for constructing a harbour and docks and enlarging the quays, which were further extended in 1856. In 1840 Perth was made an independent port ; vessels of 200 tons can unload at its quays. The number of vessels

_by Edward I. in 1298.

bl : sa # i : rj — ny ey lea ; ‘ ? SPzYGarE é : wine ER phere id

PIO ie Jo

Plan of Perth.

potatoes, timber, and slates. The population of the parliamentary burgh in 1851 was 23,835 ; this had increased by 1861 to 25,250, and by 1881 to 28,949, of whom 13,453 were males and 15,496 females,

History.—Perth is stated to have been anciently called Bertha, and to have been situated at the junction of the Almond and Tay, whence it was removed to its present site after an inundation in 1210. In any case the church of St John was founded long before this ; and a variety of Roman remains seem to indicate that there was a Roman station on the present site of the city. The obscurity of its early history is accounted for by the fact that its records were removed by Edward I. Perth is stated to have been a burgh as earlyas1106. The charter granted it by James VI. makes mention also of another granted by David I., and the charter of King David was renewed by William the Lion, by whom Perth was created a royal burgh. It was fortified by the last-named king in 1210 and again It was attacked without success by Robert Bruce in 1306, but in 1311 he succeeded in scaling its walls one dark night. It was captured by Edward III. in 1335 and retaken by the Scots in 1339. The earl of Cornwall is stated by Fordun to have been stabbed in 1336 by his brother Edward III. before the great altar in the parish church of St John. In 1396 a famous combat took place on the North Inch, between Clan Chattan and Clan Kay, which has been made familiar to English readers by Sir W. Scott in his Fair Maid of Perth. The Blackfriars monastery, where the kings then resided, was the scene in 1437 of the murder of James I. by Walter, earl of Athole, and Gowrie House in 1600 of, a mysterious conspiracy against James VI. Perth succeeded Scone as the capital of Scotland, but after the murder of James I. the parliament and courts were transferred to Edinburgh, which was declared the capital in 1482. The city was visited by the plague in 1512, 1585-87, 1608, and 1645, by the cholera in 1832, and by inundations in 1210, 1621, 1740, 1773, and 1814. It was taken by Montrose in 1644, capitulated to Cromwell in 1651, and was occupied by Dundee in 1689 ; it was recovered by Argyll from the adherents of the Pretender in 1715, and was occupied by Prince Charles Edward in 1745. The famous articles of Perth were agreed to at a meeting of the General Assembly in the parish church of St John, 25th August 1618.

Scott, Statistical Accownt of the Town and Parish of Perth, 1796 ; Maidment, The Chronicle of Perth from 1210 to 1668, 1831; Penney, Traditions of Perth, 18863 Lawson, The Book of Perth, 1847; Peacock, Perth, its Annals and Archives, 1849.

PERTH, a city of Australia, capital of the colony of Western Australia, is picturesquely situated on the Swan

The principal imports |

ag

PE R—PER

river, 31° 57’ 10” S. lat., 115° 52’ 20” E. long., 12 miles above Freemantle and 1700 west-north-west of Melbourne. The streets are wide and regular, and the houses are built chiefly of brick and stone. It is the seat of an Anglican and of a Roman Catholic bishop. In addition to the cathedrals the principal buildings are the town-hall, built entirely by convict labour, the mechanics’ institute, the governor’s palace, and the high school. Perth was founded in 1829, received a municipal constitution in 1856, and was created a city in 1880. In the same year railway communication was opened up by means of the Eastern Railway. The population of the city, including the military, in 1871 was 5007, and in 1881 it was 5044.

PERTHES, Friepricu CuristopH (1772-1843), German publisher, was born at Rudolstadt on 21st April 1772. At the age of fifteen he became an apprentice in the service of Bohme, a bookseller in Leipsic, with whom he remained about six years. In Hamburg, where he settled in 1793 as an assistant to the bookseller Hoffmann, he started in 1796 a bookselling business of his own, in developing which he soon gave evidence of remarkable tact, energy, and intelligence. In 1798 he entered into partnership with his brother-in-law, J. H. Besser, with whose aid he rapidly succeeded in forming an establishment which commanded universal confidence and respect. By his marriage with a daughter of the poet Matthias Claudius (in 1797) he was brought into intimate relation with a group of Protestant writers, who, although of a liberal tendency, retained a strong belief in the essential doctrines of Christianity ; and they exercised a powerful influence on the growth of his religious opinions. This, however, did not prevent him from being on friendly terms with a number of eminent Roman Catholic authors. Perthes was an ardent patriot ; and during the period of Napoleon’s supremacy he distinguished himself by his steady resist- ance to French pretensions. His zeal for the national cause led him to

issue (in 1810-11) Das Deutsche Museum, to which many of the foremost publicists in Germany contributed. For some time the French made it impos- sible for him to live in Hamburg ; and when, in 1814, he returned, he found that his business had greatly fallen off and that it would have to be thoroughly reorganized. In 1821, his first wife having died, he left Hamburg, trans- ferring his business there to his partner, and went to Gotha, where he established what ultimately became one of the first publishing houses in Germany. Among other important works issued by him may be named the 7Z'heo- logische Studien und Kritiken and the Geschichte der europdischen Staaten, the latter conducted in the first instance by Heeren and Ukert, afterwards by Giesebrecht. Perthes died at Gotha on 18th May 1843.

Of the three sons of Perthes, the youngest, A. H. T. Perthes, succeeded him asa publisher. The eldcr sons became authors of some eminence, and one of them, C. T. Perthes, wrote an excellent biography of his father, Friedrich Perthes' Leben. In 1785 a pub- lishing house was founded in Gotha by the uncle of F. C. Perthes, J. G. Justus Perthes, whose son Wilhelm became distinguished as a publisher of works relating to geography. Bernhard Wilhelm,

Wilhelm's son, who succeeded to the business in 1853 and died in 1857, greatly extended its operations. In 1854 he established a geographical institute, and the Mittheilungen aus Justus Perthes' geographischem Institut, conducted by A. Petermann, soon gained a European reputation. This house issues the Almanaeh de Gotha, and has published the maps and writings of many of the most eminent German geographers and travellers.

PERTINAX, Hetvivus, Roman emperor, was the son of a charcoal-burner, and was born in 126 a.p. in Liguria, or at Villa Martis among the Apennines. From being a teacher of grammar he rose through many important offices, both civil and military, to the consulate, which he held twice. Chosen on 31st December 192 to succeed the murdered Commodus, he was himself assassinated in a mutiny of the soldiers after a reign of eighty-six days.

PERTZ, Grore Hernricn (1795-1876), editor of the Monumenta Germaniz Historica, was born at Hanover on 28th March 1795. From 1813 to 1818 he studied at Gottingen, chiefly under Heeren. His graduation thesis, published in 1819, on the history of the Merovingian mayors of the palace, attracted the attention of Baron Stein, by whom he was engaged in 1820 to edit the Caro- lingian chroniclers of the newly-founded Historical Society of Germany. In search of materials for this purpose, Pertz made a prolonged tour through Germany and Italy, and on his return in 1823 he received at the-instance of Stein the principal charge of the entire work of the society, which was to be the publication, under the title of Monwmenta Germanizx Historica, of accurate texts of all the more im- portant historical writers on German affairs down to the year 1500, as well as of laws, imperial and regal archives, and other valuable documents, such as letters, falling within this period. In the discharge of this, the principal task of his life, Pertz made frequent journeys of exploration to the leading libraries and public record offices of Europe, pub- lishing notes on the results of his explorations in the Archiv der Gesellsch. f. Deutsche Geschichtskunde (1824-72). In 1823 he had been made secretary of the archives, and in 1827 principal keeper of the royal library at Hanover ; from 1832 to 1837 he edited the Hannover- ische Zeitung, and more than once sat as a representative in the Hanoverian Second Chamber. In 1842 he was called as chief librarian to Berlin, where he shortly after- wards was made a privy councillor and a member of the Academy of Sciences. Failing health and strength led to the resignation of all his appointments in 1874, and on 7th October 1876 he died at Munich while attending the sittings of the historical commission.

The Monumenta, with which the name of Pertz is so closely asso- ciated, began to appear in 1826, and at the date of luis resignation 24 volumes (“Scriptores,” “ Leges,” “Diplomata”) had appeared. The work, which for the first time made possible the existence of the modern school of scientific historians of medieval Germany, continues to be carried on under Waitz, Wattenbach, Diimmler, and others. In connexion with the MJonwmenta Pertz also pub- lished Scriptores rerum Germaniearum in usum Seholarum ; among his other literary labours may be mentioned an edition of the Gesammelte Werke of Leibnitz,and a life of Stein (Leben des Ministers Freiherrn vom Stein, 6 vols., 1849-55; also, in an abridged form, Aus Stein’s Leben, 2 vols., 1856).

BER has, in different periods, included areas of terri-

tory of varying extent. The empire of the Yncas and the Spanish viceroyalty were not conterminous with the modern republic nor with each other. In the present article the sections relating to physical geography and the moral and material condition of the people will be confined to the limits of the republic, while in the historical section there will necessarily be references to events which took place beyond the existing limits of the country.

Extent.—The republic of Peru is situated between the Extent.

equator and the Tropic of Capricorn, yet, owing to the differences of elevation, it includes regions with every variety of climate. It lies between the parallels of 3° 21’S. and 19° 10’ S. and between 68° and 81° 20’ 45” W. long., and has an area of about 480,000 square miles.1 The

1 Before the war with Chili the southern limit of Peru was in 22°

23’ S. lat., the coast-line measured 1400 miles, and the area was 504,000 square miles (see p. 679 below).

Bound- aries.

Physical regions.

The coast.

length along the Pacific coast is 1240 miles, while the width ranges from 300 to 400 miles.

Boundaries.—The republic is bounded on the W. by the Pacific Ocean, on the E. by Brazil and Bolivia, on the N. by Ecuador, and on the S. by Chili. The northern boundary commences at the village of Santa Rosa, near the southern shore of the Gulf of Guayaquil, whence it passes southwards to the river Macara, a tributary of the Chira, which falls into the Pacific. It takes

the course of the Macara, up the ravine of Espindula, to its source in the cordillera of Ayavaca; in the Amazonian basin it follows the river Cauches to its junction with the Chinchipe, and the Chinchipe to the Maraiion. The Maraiion then forms the boundary until the first Brazilian town is reached at Tabatinga. The frontier with Brazil was determined by article ii. of the treaty of San Ildefonso in 1777. A treaty dated 23d October 1851 further settled the boundary, which was fixed by the commissioners who explored the Yavari in 1866 and 1871. It first follows the course of the Yavari from the point where it falls into the Amazon, in 4° 13’ 21”S., up to a point near its source in 7° 1’17”S. ; from this it forms a straight line to a point in 6° 52’ 15” S. on the left bank of the Madeira, being half the distance between the mouth of the Mamoré and that of the Madeira. This is the point’ where the frontiers of Peru, Brazil, and Bolivia meet. The Peru-Bolivian frontier, within the basin of the Amazon, has not been accurately defined. It follows the Madeira to the mouth of the Mamoré, then the Beni and its tributary the Madidi to the junction of the latter with a stream called the Pablo-bamba, ascending the ravine of the Pablo-bamba to the source of that stream in the eastern Andes. The line then crosses the Andes in a straight line southwards to the village of Conima on the shore of Lake Titicaca. Thence it passesacross the lake in another straight line to the isthmus of Yunguyo, and thence to the mouth of the Desaguadero. From the Desaguadero the frontier takes a south-south-west direction to the source of the river Mauri, and then, until the recent war with Chili, it ran south along the watershed of the Maritime Cordillera to the source of the river Loa, which falls into the Pacific. The southern boundary separating the Peruvian province of Tarapaca from the Bolivian province of Atacama was formed by the ravine of Duende, south of the Loa, to the coast of the Pacific in 22° 23’ S. near Tocapilla. This part of the frontier was carefully delineated in 1628, and the boundary marks are recorded in a document which is still extant. But the Chilians conquered and in 1884 annexed the Peruvian province of Tarapaca.

Physical Geography.—Peru is divided longitudinally into three well-defined regions, the coast, the sierra, and the montaiia. The coast, extending from the base of the Maritime Cordillera to the Pacific Ocean, consists of a safidy desert crossed at intervals by rivers, along the banks of which there are fertile valleys. The sierra is the region of the Andes, and is about 250 miles in width. It con- tains stupendous chains of mountains, elevated plains

and tablelands, warm and fertile valleys, and ravines. The montana is the region of tropical forests within the valley of the Amazon, and skirts the eastern slopes of the Andes,

The coast has been upraised from the ocean at no very distant geological epoch, and is still nearly as destitute of vegetation as the African Sahara. It is, however, watered by fifty streams which cross the desert at intervals, Half of these have their origin in the summits of the Andes, and run with a permanent supply of water into the ocean. The others, rising in the outer range, which does not reach the snow-line and receives less moisture, carry a volume of water to the sea during the rainy season, but for the rest of the year are nearly dry. The absence of rain here is caused by the action of the lofty uplands of

PERU

the Andes on the trade-wind. The south-east trade-wind blows obliquely across the Atlantic Ocean until it reaches Brazil. By this time it is heavily laden with vapour, which it continues to bear along across the continent, depositing it and supplying the sources of the Amazons and La Plata, Finally, the trade-wind arrives at the snow-capped Andes, and here the last particle of moisture is wrung from it that the very low temperature can extract. Coming to the summit of that range, it rushes down as a cool and dry wind on the Pacific slopes beyond. Meeting with no evaporating surface, and with no temperature colder than that to which it is subjected on the mountain-tops, this wind reaches the ocean before it becomes charged with fresh

coast is from the south. From November to April there on coast

are usually constant dryness, a clear sky, and considerable, though by no means oppressive, heat. From June to September the sky is obscured for weeks together by fog, which is often accompanied by drizzling rain called “garua.” In 1877 the maximum temperature at Lima was 782° Fahr. in February and the minimum 614° Fahr. in July. At the time when it is hottest and driest on the-coast it is raining heavily in the Andes, and the rivers are full. When the rivers are at their lowest, the “‘garua” prevails on the coast.

The climate of various parts of the coast is, however, modified by local circumstances.

The deserts between the river-valleys vary in extent, the largest being upwards of 70 miles across. On their western margin steep cliffs generally rise from the sea, above which is the “tablazo” or plateau, in some places slightly undulating, in others with ridges of considerable height rising out of it, the whole apparently quite bare of vegetation.

The surface is generally hard, but in many Sand-

places there are great accumulations of drifting sea-sand, hills.

The sand usually forms isolated hillocks, called “medanos,” of a half-moon shape, having their convex sides towards the trade-wind. They are from 10 to 20 feet high, with an acute crest, the inner side perpendicular, the outer with a steep slope. Sometimes, especially at early dawn, there is a musical noise in the desert, like the sound of distant drums, which is caused by the eddying of grains of sand in the heated atmosphere, on the crests of the “ medanos.” Appa-

rently the deserts are destitute of all vegetation ; yet three Coast kinds of herbs exist, which bury themselves deep in the flora.

earth, and survive long periods of drought. One is an amar- anthaceous plant, whose stems ramify through the sand- hills ; the other two area Martynia and an Aniseia, which maintain a subterranean existence during many years, and only produce leafy stems in those rare seasons when suffi- cient moisture penetrates to the roots. Ina few hollows which are reached by moisture the trees of the desert find support, the “algarrobo” (Prosopis horrida), a low tree of very scraggy growth, the ‘“‘vichaya” (Capparis crotonoides), and “zapote del perro” (Colicodendrum scabridum), mere shrubs. Far away towards the first ascents to the Andes a tall branched cactus is met with, and there are Salicornias and Salsolas near the coast. But, when the mists set in, the low hills near the coast bordering the deserts, which are called “lomas,” undergo a change as if by magic. A blooming vegetation of wild flowers for a short time covers the barren hills. Near Lima one of the low ranges is brightened by the beautiful yellow lily called

“amancaes” (Ismene Amancaes). The other flowers of the “lomas” are the “papita de San Juan” (Begonia geranifolia), with red petals contrasting with the white inner sides, valerians, the beautiful Bomarea ovata, several species of Oxalis, Solanum, and crucifers. But this carpet of flowers is very partially distributed and lasts but a short time. Generally the deserts present a desolate aspect, with no sign of a living creature or of vegetation. Only in the very loftiest

moisture. The constantly prevailing wind on the Peruvian

Po

regions of the air the majestic condor or the turkey buzzard may be seen floating lazily; perhaps a lizard will dart across the path; and occasionally a distant line of mules or a solitary horseman seems to shimmer weirdly in the refraction on the distant horizon.

The valleys form a marvellous contrast to the surround- ing desert. A great mass of pale-green foliage is usually composed of the “algarrobo” trees, while the course of the river 1s marked by lines or groups of palms, by fine old willows (Salix humboldtiana), fruit-gardens, and fields of cotton, maize, sugar, and lucerne. In some valleys there are expanses of sugar-cane, in others cotton, whilst in others vineyards and olive-yards predominate. The woods of “algarrobo ” are used for pasture, cattle and horses greedily enjoying the pendulous yellow pods.

For purposes of description the coast-region of Peru may be . divided into six sections, commencing from the north :—(1) the Piura region ; (2) the Lambayeque and Truxillo section ; (8) the Santa valleys; (4) the section from Lima to Nasca; (5) the Are- quipa and Tacna section ; (6) Tarapaca.

(1) The great desert-region of Piura extends for nearly 200 miles from the Gulf of Guayaquil to the borders of the Morrope valley, and is traversed by three rivers—the Tumbez, Chira, and Piura, the two former receiving their waters from the inner cordillera and breaking through the outer range. It is here that the coast of South America extends farthest to the westward until it reaches Capes Blanco and Pariiia, and then turns southward to the Bay of Payta. The climate of Piura is modified by the lower latitude, and also by

the vicinity of the forests of Guayaquil. Fog and ‘‘garua” are much less frequent than in the coast-region farther south, while positive rain sometimes falls. At intervals of about ten years there are occasional heavy showers of rain from February to April. (2) The second section of the coast-region includes the valleys of the Morrope, the Chiclayo, and Lambayeque, the Safia, the Jequc- tepeque, the Chicama, Moche, Viru, and Chao. With the inter- vening deserts this section extends over 200 miles. All these valleys, except Morrope and Chao, are watered by rivers which have their sources far in the recesses of the mountains, and which furnish an abundant supply in the season when irrigation is needed. (8) The third section, also extending for 200 miles, contains the valleys of Santa, Nepefia, Casma, Huarmcy, Fortaleza, Pativilca, Supé, and Huaura. The river Santa, which rises in the lake of Conococha, 12,907 feet above the sea, and has an entire length of 180 miles, is remarkable for its long course betwecn the outer and central ranges of the Andes, in a trough known as the “Callejon de Huaylas,” 100 miles in length. It then breaks through in a deep gorge, and reaches the sea after a course of 35 miles over the coast-belt, and after fertilizing a rich valley. The Santa and Nepefia valleys are separated by a desert 8 leagues in width, on the shores of which there is a good anchorage in the bay of Ferrol, where the port of Chimbote is to be the terminus of a projected railway. The Nepefia, Casma, Huarmey, Fortaleza, and Supe rivers rise on the slope of an outer range called the Cordillera Negra, and are consequently dry during the great part of the year. Wells are dug in their beds, and the fertility of the valleys is thus maintained. The Pativilca (or Barranca) river and the Huaura break through the outer range from their distant sources in the snowy cordillera, and havea perennial supply of water. There are 9 leagues of desert between the Nepefia and Casma, 16 between the Casma and Huar- mey, and 18 between the Huarmey and Fortaleza. The latter desert, much of which is loose sand, is called the ‘‘ Pampa de Mata Cavallos,” from the number of exhausted animals which die there. Betwecn the Supé and Pativilca is the desert called the “ Pampa del Medio Mundo.” (4) The next coast-section extends for over 300 miles from Chancay to Nasca, and “includes the rivers of Chancay or Lacha, of Carabayllo, Rimac, Lurin, Mala, Cafiete, Chincha, Pisco or Chunchanga, Yea, and Rio Grande. Here the maritime range approaches the ocean, leaving a narrower strip of coast, but the fertile valleys are closer and more numerous. Those of Carabayllo and Rimac are connected, and the view from the Bay of Callao

extends over a vast expanse of fertile plain bounded by the Andes, with the white towers of Lima in a setting of verdure. Lurin and Mala are smaller valleys, but the great vale of Cafiete is one grcen sheet of sugar-cane ; and narrow strips of desert separate it from the fertile plain of Chincha, and Chincha from the famous vineyards of Pisco. The valleys of Yca, Palpa, San Xavier, and Nasca are rich and fertile, though they do not extend to the sea; but between Nasca aud Acari there isa desert 60 miles in width. (5) The Arequipa and Tacna section extends over 350 miles, and comprises the vallcys of Acari, Atequipa, Atico, Ocota, Majes or Camana, Quilca, with the interior valley of Arequipa, Tanibo, Ylo or Moquegua, Ite or Locumba, Sama, Tacna, and Azapa or Arica. Here the Maritime Cordillera recedes, and the important valley of Arequipa, though

on its western slope, is 7000 feet above the sea, and 90 miles from the coast. Most of the rivers here have their sources in the central range, and are well supplied with water. The coast-valleys through which they flow, especially those of Majes and Locumba, are famous for their vineyards, and in the valley of Tambo there are extensive olive plantations. (6) The most southern coast-section is that of Tarapaca, extending, between the cordillera and the Pacific, in a narrow strip from the ravine of Camarones, south of Arica, to the former southern frontier of Peru. Only two rivers reach the sea in Tarapaca, the Tiliviche in the north of the province, and the Loa in the extreme south. The other strcams are lost in the desert soon after they issue from their ravines in the Andes. The reason of this is that in Tarapaca there is an arid range of hills parallel with the sea-shore, which is about 30 miles in width, and covered with sand and saline substances. Between this coast-range and the Andes is the great plateau called the “ Pampa de Tamarugal,” from 3000 to 3500 feet above the sea, which is about 30 miles wide, and extends the whole length of Tarapaca. This plateau is covered with sand, and contains vast deposits of nitrate of soda. Here and there a few “tamarngas” or acacia trees are met with, which give their name to the region.

The coast of Peru has few protected anchorages, and Islands.

the headlands are generally abrupt and lofty. These and the few islands are frequented by myriads of sea-birds, whence come the guano-deposits, the retention of ammonia and other fertilizing properties being due to the absence of rain. The islets off the coast are all barren and rocky. The most northern is Foca, in 5° 18’ 30” S., ncar the coast to the south of Payta. The islands of Lobos de Tierra and Lobos de Afuera (2), in 6° 27’ 45” S. and 6° 56’ 45” S. respectively, are off the desert of Sechura, and contain deposits of guano. The two Afuera islands are 60 and 36 miles from the coast at the port of San José. The islets of Macabi, in 7° 49’ 20”S., also have guano-deposits, now nearly exhausted. . The two islets of Guafiape, surrounded by many rocks, in 8° 34’S., contain rich deposits. Chao rises 450 feet above the sea, off the coast, in 8° 46’ 30”S. Corcobado is in 8° 57’ S. La Viuda is off the port of Casma, in 9° 23’ 30’ S. ; and Tortnga is 2 miles distant to the north. Santa Islet lies off the bay of Cosca, in 9° 1’ 40”, and the three high rocks of Ferrol in 9° 8’ 30” S. Farther south there is the group of islets and rocks called Huaura, in 11° 27’ S., the chief of which are El Pelado, Tambillo, Chiquitana, Bravo, Quitacalzones, and Mazorque. The Hormigas are in 11° 4’ S. and 11° 58’, and the Pescadores in 11° 47’S. The island of San Lorenzo, in 12° 4’S., is a lofty mass, 43 miles long by 1 broad, forming the Bay of Callao; its highest point is 1050 feet. Off its south-east end lies a small but lofty islet called Fronton, and to the south-west are the Palomitas Rocks. Horadada Islet, with a hole through it, is to the south of Callao Point. Off the valley of Lurin are the Pachacamac Islands, the most northern and largest being half a mile long. The next, called San Francisco, is like a sugar-loaf, perfectly rounded at the top. The others are mere rocks. Asia Island is farther south, 17 miles north-west of Cerro Azul, and about a mile in circuit. Pisco Bay contains San Gallan Island, high, witha bold cliff outline, 24 miles long by 1 broad, the Ballista Islets, and farther north the three famous Chincha Islands, whose vast guano- deposits are now exhausted. South of the entrance to Pisco Bay is Zarate Island, and farther sonth the white level islet of Santa Rosa. The Infiernillo rock is quite black, about 50 feet high, in the form of a sugar-loaf, a mile west of the Point of Santa Maria, which is near the mouth of the Yea river. Alacran is a small islet off the lofty “morro” of Arica. A low island protects the anchorage of Iquique on the coast of Tarapaca, and farther south are the three islets of Patillos in 20° 46’ 20” S., and the Pajaros, with guano- deposits, in 22° 6’

4”S. All these rocks and islets are barren and uninhabitable, mere outworks of the desert headlands.

The more common sea-birds, which haunt the islets and Sea- birds Tr eo

headlands in countless myriads, are the Sula variegata o guano-bird, a large gull called the Larus modestus, the Pelecanus thayus, and the Sterna Ynca, a beautiful tern with curved white feathers on each side of the head. The rarest of all the gulls is also found on the Peruvian coast, namely, the Xema furcatum.! The immense flocks of birds, as they fly along the coast, appear like clouds, and one after another is incessantly seen to plunge from a height into the sea to devour the fishes, which they find in extraor- dinary numbers. The guano-deposits are in layers from 40 to 50 feet thick, of a greyish-brown colour outside, and more and more solid from the surface downwards, owing to the gradual deposit of strata and evaporation of fluid par-

AS gle ee eee ee 1 The third known example was shot in Paraccas Bay, near Pisco, by Captain Markham, in 1881.

Earth- quakes.

The sierra.

Maritime

Cor- dillera,

ticles. Sea-lions (Otaria forsteri) are common on the rocky islands and promontories. These large creatures frequent particular islets for the purpose of breathing their last, the wounded or aged being helped there by their companions.

The Maritime Cordillera, overhanging the Peruvian coast, contains a long line of volcanic mountains, most of them inactive, but their presence is probably connected with the frequent and severe earthquakes, especially in

the southern section of the coast. Since the year 1570 there have been seventy violently destructive earthquakes recorded on the west coast of South America, but the register is of course incomplete in its earlier part. The most terrible was that of 1745, which destroyed Callao. There had been subterranean noises for some days previ- ously ; the first shock was at 10.30 p.m. on 28th October, and there were 220 shocks in the following twenty-four hours. The town was overwhelmed by a vast wave, which rose 80 feet ; and the shocks continued until the following February. On 13th August 1868 an earthquake nearly destroyed Arequipa, and great waves rolled in upon the ports of Arica and Iquique. On 9th May 1877 nearly all the southern ports were overwhelmed. These fearful catastrophes are in greatest force where there are vol- canoes, whether active or extinct, in the vicinity. That of 1877 had its origin in the voleanic mountains near the frontier of Peru and Bolivia, and spent its chief fury near its centre of origin, gradually working itself out as it went north. Usually the line of disturbance is meridional and along the coast, but in some instances the line takes a seaward direction at an angle with the mountain-chains.

The most important part of Peru is the region of the cordilleras of the Andes divided into “puna” or lofty unin- habited wilderness, and “sierra” or inhabitable mountain slopes and valleys. This great mountain-system, running south-east to north-west with the line of the coast, consists of three chains or cordilleras. The two chains which run parallel, and near each other on the western side, are of identical origin, and have been separated by the action of water during many centuries. On these chains are the volcanoes and many thermal springs. The narrow space between them is for the most part, but not always, a cold and lofty region known as the “puna,” containing alpine lakes,—the sources of the coast-rivers. The great eastern chain, rising from the basin of the Amazon and forming the inner wall of the system, is of distinct origin. These three chains are called the Maritime Cordillera, the Central Cordillera, and the Andes. Paz Soldan and other Peruvian geographers give the name of Andes, par excellence, to the eastern cordillera.

The Peruvian Maritime Cordillera contains a regular chain of volcanic peaks overlooking the coast-region of Tarapaca, which attain a height of 16,000 to 18,000 feet. Chief among them are the snowy peak of Lirima over

the ravine of Tarapaca, the voleano of Isluga overhanging Camiiia, the unmeasured peak of Sehama, and Tacora near the Bolivian frontier. “In rear of Moquegua there is a group of volcanic peaks, clustering round those of Ubinas and Huaynaputina. A great eruption of Huaynaputina commenced on 15th February 1600 and continued until the 28th. An incessant rain of fine white sand was poured over the surrounding country for a distance of 40 miles, accompanied by a mighty subterraneous roaring sound. But generally these volcanoes are quiescent. Farther north the Misti voleano rises over the city of Arequipa in a perfect cone to a height of over 18,000 feet, and near its base are the hot sulphur and iron springs of Yura. As the maritime chain advances northward it fully main- tains its elevation. The peak of Sarasara, in Parinacochas (Ayacucho), is 19,500 feet above \the sea, and in the mountains above Lima the passes attain a height of more

than 15,000. In latitude 10° §. the maritime chain separates into two branches, which run parallel to each other for 100 miles, enclosing the remarkable ravine or Callejon de Huaylas,—the eastern or main branch being known as the Cordillera Nevada and the western as the Cordillera Negra. On the Nevada the peak of Huascan reaches a height of 22,000 feet, according to the trigo- nometrical measurement of the railway engineer Hindle, The Huandoy peak, above Carhuaz, reaches to 21,088 feet; the Hualcan peak, overhanging the town of Yungay, is 19,945 feet high ; and most of the peaks in this part of the chain reach a height of 19,000 feet. During the rainy season, from October to May, the sky is generally clear at dawn, and the magnificent snowy peaks, with sharply-defined outlines, stand out in lovely contrast to the deep-blue background. But as the day advances the clouds collect, and the whole is shrouded in a dense veil. In most parts of the Peruvian Andes the line of perpetual snow is at 16,400 feet above the sea ; but on the Cordillera Nevada, above the Callejon de Huaylas, it sinks to 15,400 feet. This greater -cold is obviously caused by the intervention of the Cordillera Negra, which intercepts the warmth from the coast. As this lower chain does not reach the snow-line, the streams rising from it are very scantily supplied with water, while the Santa, Pativilca, and other coast-rivers which break through it from sources in the snowy chain have a greater volume from the melted snows. At the point where the river Santa breaks through the Cordillera Negra that range begins

to subside, while the Maritime Cordillera continues as one chain to and beyond the frontier of Ecuador.

The Central Cordillera is the true water-parting of the Central system. Noriver, except the Marajion, breaks through it Cor- either to the east or west, while more than twenty coast- ‘illet streams rise on its slopes and force their way through the maritime chain. The Central Cordillera consists niainly of crystalline and volcanic rocks, on each side of which are aqueous, in great part Jurassic, strata thrown up almost vertically. In 14° 30’S. lat. the central chain is connected with the Eastern Andes by the transverse mountain-knot of Vilcafiota, the peak of that name being 17,500 feet above the sea. The great inland basin of Lake Titicaca is thus formed. The central chain continues to run parallel with the Maritime Cordillera until, at Cerro Pasco, another transverse knot connects it with the Andes in 10° 30’ 8, lat. It then continues northward, separating the basins of the Marafion and Huallaga ; and at the northern frontier of Peru it is at length broken through by the Maraiion flowing to the eastward.

The Eastern Andes is a magnificent range in the southern Eastern part of Peru, of Silurian formation, with talcose and clay Andes. slates, many quartz veins, and eruptions of granitic rocks, Mr Forbes says that the peaks of Illampu (21,470 feet) and Illimani (21,040 feet) in Bolivia are Silurian and fossiliferous to their summits. The eastern range is cut through by six rivers in Peru, namely, the Marafion and Huallaga, the Perene, Mantaro, Apurimac, Vilcamayu, and Paucartambo, the last five being tributaries of the Ucayali. The range of the Andes in south Peru has a high plateau to the west and the vast plains of the Amazonian basin to the east. The whole range is highly auriferous, and the thickness of the strata is not less than 10,000 feet. It is nowhere disturbed by volcanic eruptions, except at the very edge of the formation near Lake Titicaca, and in this respect it differs essentially from the Maritime Cordil- lera. To the eastward numerous spurs extend for varying distances into the great plain of the Amazons. It is here that the majestic beauty of the Andean scenery is fully realized : masses of dark mountains rise for thousands of feet, with their bases washed by foaming torrents and their

ctions sierra.

kes.

vers of (ra.

PE

summits terminating in sharp peaks or serrated ridges; the lower slopes are covered with dense vegetation ; and everywhere there is flowing water in cascades or rushing torrents, the condensed moisture of the trade-winds hurry- ing back to the Atlantic. The Andes lose their majestic height to the northward; and beyond Cerro Pasco the eastern chain sinks into a lower range between the Hual- laga and Ucayali. But throughout the length of Peru the three ranges are clearly defined,

For purposes of description the sierra of Peru may be conveni- ently divided into four sections, each embracing portions of all three ranges. The first, from the north, comprises the upper basins of the Marafion and the Huallaga, and is 350 miles long by 100 broad. The second extends from the Knot of Cerro Pasco to Aya- cucho, about 200 miles, including the Lake of Chinchay-cocha and the basin of the river Xauxa. The third or Cuzco section extends 250 miles to the Knot of Vilcaitota with the basins of the Pampas, Apurimac, Vilcamayu, and Paucartambo. The fourth is the basin of Lake Titicaca, about 150 miles in length and breadth.

The Lake of Chinchay-cocha, in the second section, is 36 miles long by 7 miles broad, and 18,000 feet above the sea. Its marshy banks are overgrown with reeds and inhabited by numerous water- fowl. From this lake the river Xauxa flows southwards through a populous valley for 150 miles before entering the forests. Lake Titicaca, in the fourth or most southern section, is about 80 miles long by 40 broad, the frontier of Bolivia passing across it diagonally. It is 12,545 feet above the sea by the railroad-levels. The drainage is carried off southwards by the river Desaguadero to the great swampy Lake of Aullagas in the south of Bolivia, while it is fed by streams from the Andes and the Central Cordillera. The largest is the Ramiz, formed by the two streams of Pucara and Azangaro, both coming from the Knot of Vilcafiota to the north. The Suchiz, formed by the Cavanilla and Lampa streams, falls into the lake on the north-west side, as well as the Yllpa and Ylave. Much of the water flows out by the Desaguadero, but a great

proportion is taken up by evaporation in the dry season from April to September. The waters are gradually receding undcr the combined influenee of evaporation and the sediment brought down by the rivers. The decpest part of the lake is on the Bolivian side; in other parts it is very shoaly, and along the shore there are many acres of tall reeds. The principal islands are Titicaca and Coati (at the south end near the peninsula of Copacabana), Campanaria (9 miles from the east shore), Soto, and Esteves. There are two other lakes in the Collao, as the elevated region round Titicaca is called. Lake Arapa, a few miles from the northern shore of Titieaca, is 80 miles in circumference. Lake Umayo is on higher ground to the west- ward. The lake in Peru which is third in size is that of Parina- cochas on the coast watershed, near the foot of the snowy peak of Sarasara. It is 12 miles long by 6 broad, but has never been visited and described by any modern traveller. The smaller alpine lakes, often forming the sources of rivers, are numerous.

The great rivers of the sierra are the Marafion, rising in the Lake of Lauricocha and flowing northward in a deep gorge between the Maritime and Central Cordilleras for 350 miles, when it forces its way through the mountains at the famous Pongo de Mauseriche and enters the Amazonian plain. The Huallaga rises north of Cerro Pasco, and, passing Huanuco, flows northwards on the other side of the Central Cordillera for 300 miles. It breaks through the range at the Pongo de Chasuta and falls into the Marafion. The other great rivers are tributaries of the Ucayali. The Pozuzu, flowing eastward from the Knot of Cerro Pasco, joins the Pachitea, which is the most northern important affluent of the Ucayali. The Xauxa, becoming afterwards the Mantaro, receives the drainage of Xauxa, Huancavelica, and Ayacucho. The southern valleys of this part of the sierra furnish streams which form the main rivers of Pampas, Pachachaca, and Apurimac. These, uniting with the Mantaro, form the Ene, and the Ene and Perene (which drains the province of Tambo) form the Tambo. The elassic river of Vilcamayu rises on the Knot of Vilcafiota, flows north through a lovely valley, receives the Yanatilde and Paucartambo on its right bank, and, uniting with the Tambo, forms the Ucayali. Most of these main streams flow through profound gorges in a tropical climate, while the upper slopes yield products of the temperate zone, and the plateaus above are cold and bleak, affording only pasture and the hardiest cereals.

The great variety of elevation within the sierra produces vege- tation belonging to every zone. There is a tropieal flora in the dcep gorges, higher up a sub-tropical, then a temperate, then a sub-arctic flora. In ascending from the eoast-valleys there is first an arid range, where the great-branched eacti rear themselves up among the rocks. Farther inland, where the rains are more plenti- ful, is the native home of the potato. Here also are other plants with edible roots—the “oca” (Oxalis tuberosa), “ulluca ’ _ (Ullueus tuberosus),“ massua ” (T’ropwoluim tuberosum), and “learcd ” (Polym-

in, U 673

nia sonchifolia). Among the first wild shrubs and trees that are met with are the “ehilca” (Baccharis Feuillei), with a pretty yellow flower, the Mutisia aewminata, with beautiful red and orange flowers, several species of Senecio, caleeolarias, the Schinus Molle, with its graceful branches and bunehes of red berries, and at higher elevations the “lambras” (Alnus acuminata), the “saueo” (Sambucus peruviana), the “ quetiuar” (Buddlcia ineana), and the Polylepis racemosa. The Buddicia, locally called “oliva silvestre,” flourishes at a height of 12,000 feet round the shores of Lake Titicaca. The temperate valleys of the sierra yield fruits of many kinds. Those indigenous to the country are the delicious “chiri- moyas,” “paltas” or alligator pears, the “ paccay,” a species of Inga, the “lucma,” and the “granadilla” or fruit of the passion- flower. Vineyards and sugar-cane yicld crops in the warmer raviues ; the sub-tropical valleys are famous for splendid crops of maize ; wheat and barley thrive on the mountain slopes ; and at heights from 7000 to 13,000 feet there are crops of “ quinua” (Cheno- podium Quinua). In the loftiest regions the pasture chiefly con- sists of a coarse grass (Stipa Ychu), of which the Mamas eat the upper blades while the sheep browse on the tender shoots beneath. There are also two kinds of shrubby plants, a thorny Composita called “ecanlli” and another called “tola,” which is a resinous Baccharis, and is used for fuel.

The animals whieh specially belong to the Peruvian Andes are Fauna.

the domestie llamas and alpacas and the wild vieufias. There are deer, called “taruco”’ (Cervus antisensis), the “viseacha,” a large rodent, a species of fox called “atoc”; and the “puma” (Felis eoneolor) and “ucumari” or black bear with a white muzzle, when driven by hunger, wander into the

loftier regions. The largest bird is the condor, and there is another bird of the vulture tribe, with a black and white wing feather, formerly used by the Yneas in their head-dress, called the “coraquenque ” or “alcamari.” The “‘pito” is a brown speckled creeper which flutters about the rocks. There is a little bird, the size of a starling, with brown back striped with black, and white breast, which the Indians call “ ynea- hualpa” ; it utters a monotonous sound at each hour of the night. A partridge called “yutu” frequents the long grass. On the lakes there is a very handsome goose, with white body and dark-green wings shading into violet, called “huachua,” two kinds of ibis, a large gull (Larus serranus), frequenting the alpine lakes in flocks, flamingoes called “parihuana,” ducks, and water-hens. Many pretty little finches fly about the maize-fields and fruit-gardens, and a little grecn parakeet is met with as high as 12,000 feet above the sea.

The third division of Peru is the region of the tropical Montafia.

forests, at the base of the Andes, and within the basin of the Amazons. It is traversed by great navigable rivers. The Maraiion, having burst through the defile of the Pongo de Mauseriche, and the Huallaga through that of Chasuta, enter the forests and unite after separate courses of about 600 and 400 miles, the united flood then flowing eastward to the Brazilian frontier. After 150 miles it is joined by the Ucayali, a great navigable river with a course of 600 miles. The country between the Huallaga and the Ucayali, traversed by the eastern cordillera, is called the Pampa del Sacramento. The forests drained by the Maraiion, Huallaga, and Ucayali form the northern portion of the Peruvian montafia. The southern half of the mon- taiia is watered by streams flowing from the Eastern Andes, which go to form the river Madre de Dios or Amaru-mayu, the principal branch of the river Beni, which falls into the Madeira. The region of the Peruvian montaiia, which is 800 miles long from the Maraiion to the Bolivian frontier, is naturally divided into two sections, the sub- tropical forests in the ravines and on the eastern slopes of the Andes and the dense tropical forests in the Amazonian plain. The sub-tropical section is important from the value of its products, and interesting from the grandeur and beauty of its scenery. Long spurs run off from the Andes, gradually decreasing in elevation, and it is sometimes a distance of 60 or 80 miles before they finally subside into the vast forest-covered plains of the Amazon basin. Numerous rivers flow through the

valleys between these spurs, which are the native home of the quinine-yielding chinchona trees. The most valuable species, called C. Cali- saya, is found in the forests of Caravaya in south Peru and in those of Bolivia. The species between Caravaya and the head-waters of the Huallaga yield very little of | the febrifuge alkaloid. But the forests of Huanuco and XVIII. — 85

Popula- tion.

Political divisions.

674 PE

Huamalies abound in species yielding the grey bark of commerce, which is rich in chinchonine, an alkaloid effica- cious as a febrifuge, though inferior to quinine. With the chinchona trees grow many kinds of Melastomaceex, especi- ally the Lasiandra, with masses of purple flowers, tree-ferns, and palms. In the warm valleys there are large planta- tions of coca (Erythroxylon Coca), or Cuca (see vol. vi. p. 684), the annual produce of which is stated at 15,000,000 fb. The other products of these warm valleys are most ex- cellent coffee, cocoa, sugar, tropical fruits of all kinds, and gold in great abundance. In the vast untrodden forests farther east there are timber trees of many kinds, incense trees, a great wealth of india-rubber trees of the Hevea genus, numerous varieties of beautiful palms, sarsaparilla, vanilla, ipecacuanha, and copaiba. The abundant and varied fauna is the same as that of the Brazilian forests.

Population.—The earliest reliable enumeration of the people of Peru was made in 1793, when there were 617,700 Indians, 241,225 mestizos (Indian and white), 136,311 Spaniards, 40,337 negro slaves, and 41,404 mulattos, giv- ing a total of 1,076,977 souls, without counting the wild Indians of the montafia. The ecclesiastics numbered 5496, including 1260 nuns. This tells a sad story of depopu- lation since the fall of the Yneas, to which the abandoned terraces on the mountain-sides, once highly cultivated, bear silent testimony. In 1862 the population was officially esti- mated at 2,487,716. The latest census was taken in 1876 with much care. The result was 2,673,075 souls (males 1,352,151, females 1,320,924); of these 57 per cent. were Indians, 23 per cent. mestizos, and 20 per cent. of Spanish descent, negroes, Chinese, and foreigners ; so that Peru is still the country of the Ynea people.

Political Divisions.—The empire of the Yncaswas divided into four main divisions, Chinchay-suyu to the north of Cuzco, Anti-suyu to the east, Colla-suyu to the south, and Cunti-suyu to the west, the whole empire being called Ttahuantin-suyu, or the four governments, Each was ruled by a viceroy, under whom were the “ huaranca-camayocs,” or officers ruling

over thousands, and inferior officers, in regular order, over 500, 100, 50, and 10 men. All disorders and irregularities were checked by the periodical visits of the ‘‘tucuyricocs ” or inspectors. The Spanish conquest threw this complicated system out of gear. In 1569 the governor, Lope Garcia de Castro, divided Peru into “ corregimientos ” under officers named “corregidors,” of whom there were 77, each in direct communication with the Government at Lima. An important administrative reform was made in 1784, when Peru-was divided into 7 “ intendencias,” each under an officer called an “intendente.” These “intendencias” included about 6 of the old “corregimientos,” which were called “partidos,” under officers named “* sub-delegados.” Thus the number of officers reporting direct to Lima was reduced from 77 to 7, a great improvement. The republic adopted the same system, calling the “intendencias” “departments” under a prefect, and the “partidos ” “provinces ” under a sub-prefect. Peru is divided into 18 departments, 2 littoral provinces, and what is called the constitutional province of Callao. The departments contain 95 provinces. The Government recognizes 65 cities, 70 towns, 1337 smaller towns, 641 villages, 40 hamlets on

the sea-coast, and 600 in the rural districts, The depart- ments (going from north to south) are :— Coast. Sierra. Montatia.

Piura. Caxamarca. Amazonas and Loreto.

Lambayeque. Huanuco. |

Libertad. Junin.

Ancachs. Huancavelica.

Lima. Ayacucho.

iWicae Apurimae.

Arequipa. Cuzco.

Moquegua. Puno.

Tacna.

RU

from the seashore. Pizarro in 1532, is on the river of the same name, The towns in all parts of Peru are built on the same plan where the ground will allow of it, in squares or "'quadras," with the streets at right angles, and a quadrangular open space or "plaza," one side being occupied by the principal church, near the centre. The church usually has an orna- mental fagade in the Renaissance style, with two towers, The houses on the coast are flat-roofed, with folding doors to the street, leading to a court or "patio," with rooms opening on it. Piura is a town of this class, Farther south are the cities of Lambayeque, Chiclayo, and Saiia. Truxillo, founded by Pizarro in 1535, is of more importance. It is of oval shape, and was surrounded by walls with fifteen bastions, built in 1686, which have recently been demolished, Besides the cathedral, seat of a bishopric founded in 1609, there are three churches, and formerly four monasteries and a Jesuit college. Truxillo is the most important city north of Lima.

To the north of Lima there are five principal ports and thirteen smaller ones. Payta has a good anchorage and exports the cotton of the Chira and Piura valleys, the anchorages of Tumbez to the north and Sechura to the south being subsidiary to it. Pimentel is the port for the valleys of Lambayeque and Chiclayo, and Eten for that of Ferretiafe, the older port of San José having been abandoned as more dangerous. Pacasmayo, also a pre- carious anchorage, is the port which taps the rich valley of Jequetepeque, Farther south Malabrigo is the port for the valley of Chicama. Huanchaco was formerly the port for Truxillo, but Salaverry, a few miles to the south, has been substituted as affording a safer anchorage. San- tiago de Chao and Guafiape in the Viru district are lesser ports, the latter being resorted to by ships loading with guano at the adjacent islands. Chimbote, in the bay of Ferrol, has a good anchorage, and is important as the principal outlet for the Santa valley and the department of Ancachs. Farther south are the lesser ports of Santa, Samanco, Casma, Huarmey, Supé, Huacho, Chancay, and Ancon,

Lima, the capital (see vol. xiv. p. 644), according to the census of 1876, had a population of 100,046, of whom 33,020 were of European descent, 23,010

half-castes, 19,630 Indians, 15,378 foreigners, and 9008 negroes. South of Lima are the cities of Chincha and Yea, with the principal seaport of Pisco, whence the wines and spirits of the adjacent valleys are exported. The small ports of Cerro Azul and Tambo Mora export the sugars of the Caiiete and Chincha valleys. Farther south the exposed port of Chala, with a bad anchorage, is used for the valley of Acari and the province of Parinacochas in the mountains. South-east of Yca are the charming agricultural towns of Palpa and Nasca. AREQUIPA (see vol. ii. p. 484), the most important coast-city south of Lima, was founded by Pizarro in 1536. South of Arequipa is the littoral province of Moquegua, with a pleasant town, the centre of a vine-growing industry. The cities of Tacna, Arica, and Iquique are in the Chilian province of Tarapaca. The ports of Arequipa were formerly Quilca, then Islay, and now Mollendo. Ylo and Pacocha, in the same bay, are the ports of Moquegua; Safia, under the lofty headland of the same name, is a port where landing is impossible except in “balsas,” and it is little

j used. Arica was a very important port before the Chilian

invasion, as through it passed all the trade to Bolivia. Iquique and Pisagua are the chief ports of Tarapaca, the others being Junin, Mexillones, Molle, Chucumata, Patillos.

In the sierra there is the same regularity in intention in laying out the plan of the towns, but it is often interfered

Powns and Seaports.—The principal towns on the coast, Towns except Payta, Callao, and Arica, are always some distance and San Miguel de Piura, founded by S¢aports,

erce,

. 2 hw

with by the irregularity of the ground. High-pitched red tiled roofs take the place of the flat roofs of the coast. The upper stories often recede, leaving wide corridors under the overhanging eaves, and in the “ plazas” there are frequently covered arcades. Fruit-gardens and fields waving with lucerne

and barley encircle the towns, and there is almost always a background of mountain-ranges. The principal interior towns in the north of Peru are Caxamarca, Huaraz, Huanuco, Cerro Pasco, the centre of the great silver-mining industry, 13,200 feet above the sea, Tarma, and Xauxa. Huancavelica owed its existence to the famous quicksilver mine. Ayacucho, formerly Guamanga, founded by Pizarro in 1539, is a charming abode amidst lovely scenery. Be- tween Ayacucho and Cuzco are the pleasant towns of Andahuaylas and Abancay. Cuzco (see vol. vi. p. 744), the centre of Peru, the old capital of the Yncas, lies at the foot of the famous hill of Sacsahuaman. South of Cuzco are many delightful places in the vale of Vilcamayu, and the towns in the Collao, the chief being Puno on the shore of Lake Titicaca.

Commerce.—The resources of Peru consist of its mineral wealth, its flocks, yielding valuable wool, its crops, and the products of its virgin-forests. Silver-mines extend along the whole length of the cordilleras from Hualgayoc to Puno. The mines are worked here and there, the great centre of this industry being at Cerro Pasco, where 1,427,592 ounces of silver were produced in 1877. Thc value of the silver exported from Peru in that year was £575,000, of copper £330,000; of gold there is no return. The exportation of guano from the Chincha Islands began in 1846 and continued until 1872. Between 1853 and 1872 there were 8,000,000 tons shipped from these islands. The deposits on the Guafiape Islands were first worked in 1869, and from that year to 1871 as many as 838,853 tons were shipped, — 460,000 tons remaining. On the three Macabi Islands there were 400,000 tons of guano in 1872, and large deposits on the Lobos Islands. But the most important discoveries of guano- deposits, since the exhaustion of the Chincha Islands, have been on the coast of Tarapaca. In 1876 the quantity at Pabellon de Pica was calculated at 350,000 tons, at Punta de Lobos 200,000 tons, at Huanillos 1,000,000 tons (buried under huge boulders of rock), at Chipana 250,000 tons. The total quantity of guano on islands north of Lima may be 600,000 tons, and on the coast of Tarapaca 1,800,000 tons.

Since 1830 nitrate of soda has been exported from the southern ports of Peru, the deposits being found on the western side of the Pampa de Tamarugal in Tarapaca. This region contains sufficient nitrate for the supply of Europe for ages. From 1830 to 1850 the export from Iquique amounted

to 239,860 tons; in 1875 the annual export reached its maximum (826, 869 tons).

The sugar cultivation in the coast-valleys is a great source of wealth. In 1877 the yield was estimated at 85,000 tons, valued at £1,360,000 ; of this quantity 63,370 tons went to Great Britain. Cotton, an indigenous product of the coast-valleys, is next in im- portance to sugar, the estates being worked with intelligence and a due outlay of capital. The cultivation of the vine is also a pro- fitable industry,—a well-known spirit and excellent wine being made in the valleys of Pisco and Yea, and in the districts of Majes and Moquegua. Rice-crops are raised at Ferrefiafe ; olives are grown largely in the Tambo valley ; and the silk-worm and cochineal insect have been successfully cultivated. In the sierra large quantities of wheat, barley, and potatoes are raised, and millions of pounds of alpaca and sheep's-wool are exported. From the forests of the montafia come chinchona bark, coca, coffee of the finest quality, cocoa, india-rubber, and some medicinal roots.

Communication.—Scveral railroads have bcen constructed of late years to connect the coast-towns and valleys with their seaports. That from Payta to Piura, contracted for in 1872, is 63 miles long ; onc from the port of Pimentel to Chiclayo and Lambayeque has a length of 45 miles. There are 50 miles of railway from Eten to Ferrefiafe, 93 from Pacasmayo to Magdalena, 25 from Malabrigo to Ascope and the Chicama valley, 85 from Salaverry to Truxillo, 172 from Chimbote to Huaraz (only 52 finished). Several short lines radiate from Lima.

tunnels the Andes at a height of 15,645 feet. There are sixty-three tunnels, and the bridge of Verrugas spans a chasm 580 feet wide, resting on three piers, the centre one being 252 feet high, made of hollow wrought-iron. This great work is completed (1884) as far as Chicla, a distance of 863 miles. Another railroad across the Andes connects Arequipa with Puno on the shores of Lake Titicaca. The summit is crossed in a cutting only 6 feet deep, 14,660 feet above the sea. The first locomotive reached Puno on Ist J anuary 1874. The line is 282 miles long, and is to be prolonged to Cuzco. The cost of the Oroya line has been £4,625,887, and of the Arequipa and Puno line £4,346, 659.

Two steamers were launched on Lake Titicaca in March 1874, which carry the traffic from Bolivia to Puno. Extensive harbour- works have been completed at Callao since 1870 ; and iron piers have been constructed at other ports. Steam communication connects the Peruvian ports on the Huallaga and Maraiion with the Brazilian line at Tabatinga.

_ Lducation and Literature. Universities and colleges were founded Educa- in Peru very soon after the conquest, and there was intellectual tion.

progress both among the Indians and the families of Spanish descent. The university of San Marcos at Lima is the most ancient in the New World, having been created by order of Charles V.in 1551. The college of San Carlos was founded in 1770, and the school of medicine in 1792. At Cuzco the university of San Antonio Abad was founded in 1598, and the college of San Geronimo at Arequipa in 1616. Since the independence there has been very considerable intellectual and educational progress in the country. ‘there is a university of the first rank at Lima, 5 lesser universities, 33 colleges for boys and 18 for girls, 1578 schools for boys and 729 for girls, besides private schools.

of an epic poem called Lima Fundada and many other works. Towards the latter end of the last century scientific studies began to receive attention in Peru. M. Godin, a member of the French com- mission for measuring an are of the meridian near Quito, became professor of mathematics at San Marcos in 1750; and the botanical expeditions sent out from Spain gave further zest to scientific re- search. Dr Gabriel Moreno (died 1809), a native of Huamantanga in the Maritime Cordillera, studied under Dr Jussieu, and became an eminent botanist. Don Hipolito Unanue, born at Arica in 1755, wrote an important work on the climate of Lima and contributed to the Mercurio Peruano. This pcriodical was commenced in 1791 at Lima, the contributors forming a society called ‘‘ Amantcs del Pais,” and it was completed in eleven volumes. It contains many valuable articles on history, topography, botany, mining, commerce, and statistics. An ephemeris and guide to Peru was commenced by the learned geographer Dr Cosme Bueno, and continucd by Dr Unanue, who brought out his guides at Lima from 1793 to 1798. In 1794 a nautical school was founded at Lima, with Andres Baleato as instructor and Pedro Alvarez as teacher of the nse of instruments.

Baleato also constructed a map of Peru. A list of Peruvian authors in viceregal times occupies a long chapter in the life of St Toribio! by Montalvo ; and the bibliographical labours of the Peruvian Leon Pinelo are still invaluable to Spanish students.

The topographical labours of Cosme Bueno and Unanue were ably continued at Lima by Admiral Don Eduardo Carrasco, who compiled annual guides of Peru from 1826. But the most eminent Peruvian geographer is Dr Don Mariano Felipe Paz Soldan, whose Geografia del Peru appeared in 1862. His still more important work, the Diccionario geografico estadistico del Peru (1877), is a gazetteer on a most complete scale, displaying an immense amount of labour, research, and literary skill. In 1868 appeared his first volume of the Historia del Peru Independiente, and two others have since been published. The earlier history of Peru has been written in three volumes by Sebastian Lorente; Mariano Rivero has ably discussed its antiquities ; and Manuel Fuentes has edited six interesting volumes of memoirs written by Spanish viceroys. But the most valuable and important historical work by a modern Peruvian is undoubtedly General Mendiburu's Diccionario Historico- Biografico del Peru, a monument of patient and conscientious re- search, combined with critical discernment of a high order, which has certainly secured for its accomplished author a permanent place in the history of literature. As laborious historical students, Don José Toribio Polo, the author of an ecclesiastical history of Peruvian dioceses, and Don Enrique Torres Saldamando, the historian of the Jesuits in Peru, have great merit. Among good local annalists may be mentioned Juan Gilberto Valdivia, who has written a history of Arequipa, and Pio Benigno Mesa, the author of the Annals of Cuzco.

The leading Peruvian authors on constitutional and legal sub- jects are Dr José Santistevan, who has published volumes on civil and criminal law; Luis Felipe Villaran, author of a work on con-

1 The city of Lima produced two saints, the archbishop St Toribio, who flourished from 1578 to 1606, and Santa Rosa, the patron saint – of the city of the kings (1586-1616), whose festival is celebrated on 26th August.

2 for g The most prolific Litera- author in Spanish times was Dr Pedro de Peralta y Barnuevo, author ture.

stitutional right; Dr Francisco Garcia Calderon (late president of Peru), author of a dictionary of Peruvian legislation in two volumes ; Dr Francisco Xavier Mariategui, one of the fathers of Peruvian inde- pendence ; and Dr Francisco de Paula Vijil (died 1875), orator and statesman as well as author, whose work Defensa de los Globiernos is a noble and enlightened statement of tlic case for civil govern- ments against the pretensions of the court of Rome. Manuel A. Fuentes, an able statistician and the author of the Estadistiea de Lima, has also written a inanual of parliamentary practice.

On the whole, Peruvian literature since the independence has attained to highest merit in the walks of poetry andromance. The Guayaquil author Olmedo, who wrote the famous ode on the victory of Junin, and the Limenians Felipe Pardo and Manuel Segura are names well known wherever the Spanish language is spoken. Pardo, as well as Segura, wrote in a satirical vein. Both died between 1860 and 1870. The comedies of Segura on the customs of Lima society, entitled Un Paseo a Amaneaes and La Saya y Manto, have no equal in the dramatic literature of Spanish Amcrica and few in that of modern Spain. From 1848 date the first poetical efforts of Arnaldo Marquez, Manuel Nicolas Corpancho, Adolfo Garcia, Clemente Althaus, Pedro Paz Soldan (better known under his nom de plume of “Juan de Arona”), Carlos Augusto Salaverry, a son of the ill-fated general, Luis Benjamin Cisneros, Trinidad Fernandez, Constantino Carrasco, Narciso Arestegui, José Antonio Lavalle, Ricardo Palma, and Numa Pompilio Llona. Marquez is undoubtedly the most correct in diction and the most richly endowed with ima- ginative sentiment among Peruvian poets of the present generation. Corpancho was a dramatist of the romantic school and author of a bright little volume of poems entitled Brevas. He perished in a shipwreck off the coast of Mexico when barely thirty years old. Adolfo Garcia is the poet of most robust and vigorous thought, and he has written much, but only one voluine of his select poems has been published (Havre, 1870). Among other productions of great merit this book contains a sonnet to Bolivar, which is one of the most beautiful that has appeared from the muse of Peru. Althaus (d. 1880) was a poet, imaginative, tender, elegant,

and very careful as regards rhythm and diction. Paz Soldan, a good classical scholar, has published three volumes of poems. Salaverry is one of Peru's best lyrical poets ; and the novels of Cisneros, entitled Julia and Hdgardo, have secured him a lasting reputation. Fer- nandez and Carrasco were two poets of merit who died very young. The principal work of Carrasco was his metrical version of the Quichua drama of Ollantay. Lavalle and Arestegui are chiefly known as novelists. Palma has published three books of poetry, entitled Armonias, Verbos y Gerundos, and Pasionarias. Since 1870 he has devoted his great literary powers to writing the his- torical traditions of Peru in prose, of which six volumes have already appeared. They display great research, and are written in a graceful and agreeable style. Palma is a member of the Spanish Academy, a distinction shared, among Peruvian poets, with Felipe Pardo, The collected poems of Llona have recently been pub- lished ; his Canto de la Vida is highly spoken of for its depth of thought and elegance of diction.

Peruvians have not neglected their early history and the study of the literature and language of the Yncas. Several have followed in the footsteps of Rivero. José Sebastian Barranca, the naturalist and antiquary, and Gavino Pacheco Zegarra, a native of Cuzco, have published translations of the ancient Ynca drama of Ollantay.

Among Peruvian naturalists since the independence the most distinguished have been Rivero, the geologist and mineralogist, and his friend and colleague 'Nicolas de Picrola, author of Memorial de Ciencias Naturales. Dr Cayetano Heredia, rector of the college of medicine in Lima from 1845 to his death in 1861, was an ardent patron of medical science. His successor, Dr Miguel de los Rios, has followed in his footsteps ; and since 1856 many valuable con- tributions have been published by Peruvian physicians in the Gaceta Medica de Lima.

The most prominent publicists of Peru have been Mariategui, Vijil, Reynaldo and Cesareo Chacaltana, Ricardo Heredia, José Casimiro Ulloa, Toribio Pacheco, and Luciano Cisneros,

The Peruvian priesthood, though justly accused of tyranny in their relations with the Indians in early times, and of immorality in many instances, can point to numerous learned and upright pre- lates, to devoted parish priests,

to noble-minded teachers and ardent patriots, in their body. Founded in 1541, and raised to archiepis- copal rank in 1545, the see of Lima has been ruled by twenty-three prelates. The first was a Dominican friar, Dr Geronimo de Loaysa (1542-1575), who was more a politician than a priest. But the second, Dr Toribio Mogrovejo (1581-1606), devoted himself to the welfare of his flock, and died in the odour of sanctity, being finally canonized as StToribio. Since the independence, Archbishop Luna Pizarro has added lustre to the see by his learning and ability. The bishopric of Cuzco was founded by Pope Paul ITI. in 1537, and has had twenty-seven prelates. Among them, Dr Gorrichategui (1771-76) was an excellent Quichua scholar and preacher and a devoted friend of the oppressed Indians; Dr Moscoso y Peralta (1777-89) was a prelate of corisummate virtue and learning. The

bishoprics of Arequipa, Guamanga (Ayacucho), and Truxillo were created in 1609. The missionary bishopric of Maynas or Chachapoyas was founded in 1802, those of Huanuco and Puno in recent times, The Jesuits were once very powerful and wealthy in Peru, and both Jesuits and Franciscans, while working at their calling as mission- aries, achieved much valuable geographical work on the rivers and in the forests of the montafia. Since the independence the religious orders have been gradually suppressed, yet monks as well as priests were in the front rank in advocating the cause of liberty. The ecclesiastical seminary at Lima, founded by St Toribio in 1601, was removed to part of the monastery of San Francisco in 1859, where it still flourishes, and where youths intended for holy orders are educated. The priests oceupya very important position in the social system, and much of the teaching is in their hands. Such men as Luna Pizarro and Vijil have performed their duties in a singularly faithful and enlightened spirit. Unfortunately there is still deplorable laxity among parish priests, though there are many noble exceptions.

Inhabitants. —The early inhabitants of Peru originally consisted Native of several distinct nations, subdivided into many tribes, which were inhabit. The principal ants,

eventually combined in the empire of the Yncas. trace was that of the imperial Yncas themselves, inhabiting the two central sections of the sierra, from the Knot of Cerro Pasco to that of Vilcafiota, a distance of 380 miles. Here nature has worked on her grandest and most imposing scale. The scenery is magnificent, the products of every zone are collected in the valleys and on the mountain-sides ; but the difficulties in the way of advancing civilization, caused by the obstacles of nature, are such as to tax man's ingenuity to the utmost. A country like this was well adapted for the cradle of an imperial race. Six nations originally peopled this central mountain-region—the Yncas in the valley of the Vilcamayu and surrounding platcaus, the Canas round the sources of the Apurimac, the Quichuas along the upper courses of the Pachachaca and the Apurimac, the Chancas, a very warlike people, from Guamanga to the Apurimac, the Huancas in the valley of the Xauxa, and the Rucanas round the summits and on the slopes of the Maritime Cordillera. These six nations were divided into "ayllus" or tribes, the most distinct of which were the still famous Morochucos and Yquichanos, brave mountaineers of the Chanca nation. There are reasons for believing that these nations once spoke different languages, especially the Chancas, but, excepting a few words imbedded in the general language of the Yncas, they are now lost.

In the basin of Lake Titicaca there was another race, anciently called Colla, but now better known as Aymara. Their language survives, and, though closely allied grammatically, the vocabulary differs from that of the Yncas. Within the Colla region, but differing from the rest of the inhabitants both in language and physical appearance, there was a savage tribe called Urus, inhabit- ing the reed-beds and islands in the southern part of Lake Titicaca. In the region north of the Knot of Cerro Pasco comprising the basin of the Marafion there were many warlike tribes speaking a language which the Yncas called Chinchaysuyu. The most important of these tribes were the Conchucos, Huamachucos, and Ayahuecas far to the north.

The Peruvian coast appears originally to have been inhabited by a diminutive race of fishermen called Changos, a gentle and hos- pitable people, never exceeding 5 feet in height, with flat noses. They fished in boats made of inflated seal-skins, lived in seal-skin huts, and slept on heaps of dried seaweed. Vestiges of this early race may be traced in the far south,

as well as at Eten, Morrope, and Catacaos in the north. The later and more civilized coast- people were a very different and an extremely interesting race. They appear to have formed distinct communities in the different valleys each under a chief, of whom the most civilized and powerful was the Chimu, who ruled over the five valleys of Pativilca, Huarmey, Santa, Viru, and Moche, where Truxillo now stands. The subjects of this prince made great advances in civilization, and his vast palaces near Truxillo now form extensive ruins. The irrigation works of this coast-people were most elaborate ; every acre of cul- tivable ground was brought under cultivation, and water was con- veyed at high levels from great distances. The Yncas called these people Yuncas, but they have entirely passed away, giving place to the negroes and Chinese labourers who now swarm in the coast-valleys. There is no dictionary of the Yunca language, but there is a grammar and a short list of words written in 1644, before it had entirely ceased to be spoken.

The Ynea or Quichua tribes of the Andes of Peru average a height of 5 feet.to 5 feet 6 inches. They are of slender build, but with well-knit muscular frames, and are capable of enduring great fatigue. Their complexions are of a fresh olive-colour, skin very smooth and soft, beardless, hair straight and black, the nose aquiline. They are good cultivators, and excel as shepherds by reason of their patience and kindness to animals. They are natur- ally gentle, most affectionate to their families, with an intense love of home ; but at the same time they are enduring and brave. The Aymaras are more thick-set than the Yncas, and their chief phy-

|

opire Yneas,

mquest

zarro,

Pie U

sical peculiarity is that the thigh, instead of being longer, is rather shorter than the leg. The whole build is admirably adapted for mountain-climbing.

The policy of the Yncas was to enforce the use of their language, called by the earliest Spanish grammarian ‘‘Quichua,” among all the conquered tribes. Hence its very general use throughout the mountainous part of Peru, the only differences being the survival of words in some of the districts from the language or dialect that was superseded. Quichua was the language ofa people far advanced in civilization ; it was assiduously cultivated by learned men for several centuries ; not only songs but elaborate dramas and rituals were composed in it; and it is still the language of the majority of the people of Peru. Aymara, which is a closely-allied tongue, is spoken along the shores of Lake Titicaca.

The wild Indians of the montafia, except a few tribes on the skirts of the Andes, do not belong to the Peruvian family. They are part of the great Tupi group of nations, and belong to the region of the Amazons. On the banks of the Huallaga are the Cocomas, Cholones, Panos, and Motilones; and on the Ucayali the wild tribes of the Cashibos, Capahuanas, Remos, Amajuacas, and Mayorunas. The Conibos, Pirros, Sencis, Setebos, and Shipibos are peace- ful traders. The Antis or Campas form a large and important tribe on the upper course of the Ucayali, with probably a large share of Ynca blood in their veins. The savage Indians on the tributaries of the Beni are called Chunchos. It is, however, to another family of the American race that the tribes of the Amazons mainly belong.

History.—Cyclopean ruins of vast edifices, apparently never com- pleted, exist at Tiahuanaco near the southern shore of Lake Titicaca. Remains of a similar character are found at Huaraz in the north of Peru, and at Cuzco, Ollantay-tambo, and Huifiaque between Huaraz and Tiahuanaco. These works appear to have been erected by powerful sovercigns with unlimited command of labour, possibly with the object of giving employment to subjugated people, while feeding the vanity or pleasing the taste of the conqueror. Their unfinished state seems to indicate the break-up of the Government which conceived then: and which must have held sway over the whole of Peru, and the occurrence of Aymara words, especially in the names of places over the whole area, points to an Aymara origin for this lost and prehistoric empire. It is ccrtain that for ages afterwards the country was again broken up into many sepa- rate nations and tribes. Then the most civilized and most powerful people, the Yncas of Cuzco and the Vilcamayu,

began slowly to build wp and cement together a later and more civilized empire. This great work, which probably occupied five centuries, was just completed when the Spaniards discovered Peru. The history of Ynea civilization has yet to be written. Our knowledge even of the Spanish writers who collected information at the time of the conquest is still very incomplete. Much that is esscntial for a correct appreciation of this interesting subjcct is still inedited and in manuscript. But, to comprehend it, a knowledge is also neccs- sary of the people, of their country and languages. Without such qualifications for the task, the numerous traditions, customs, and beliefs cannot be understood nor assigned to the particular epochs and nationalities to which each belonged. With our existing imperfect knowledge the subject cannot be adequately treated with- out a detailed and critical examination of conflicting evidence which would be foreign to the purpose of the present article.

The great Ynea Huayna Ccapac died in 1527, the year when Pizarro first appeared on the coast. His consolidated empire extended from the river Ancasmayu north of Quito to the river Maule in the south of Chili. The Yneas had an elaborate system of state-worship, with a ritual, and frequently recurring festivals. History and tradition were preserved by the bards, and dramas were enacted before the sovereign and his court. Roads with post- houses at intervals were made over the wildest mountain-ranges and the bleakest deserts for hundreds of miles. A well-considered system of land-tenure and of colonization provided for the wants of all classes of the people. The administrative details of govern- ment were minutely and carefully organized, and accurate statistics were kept by means of the “quipus” or system of knots. The edifices displayed marvellous building skill, and their workmanship is un- surpassed. The world has nothing to show, in the way of stone- cutting and fitting, to equal the skill and accuracy displayed in the Ynca structures of Cuzco. As workers in metals and as potters they displayed infinite variety of design, though not of a high order, while as cultivators and engineers they in all respects excelled their European conquerors.

The story of the conquest has been told by Prescott and Helps, who give ample references to original authorities; it will be sufficient here to enumerate the dates of the leading events. On 10th March 1526 the contract

for the conquest of Peru was signed by Almagro and Luque, Gaspar de Espinosa supplying the funds. In 1527 Francisco Pizarro, after enduring fearful hardships, first reached the coast of Peru at Tumbez. In the following year he went to Spain, and on 26th July 1529 the capitulation with the crown for the conquest of Peru was executed. Pizarro sailed from

San Lucar with his brothers in January 1530, and landed at Tumbez in 1532. The civil war between Huascar and Atahualpa, the sons of Huayna Ceapac, had been fought out in the meanwhile, and the victorious Atahualpa was at Caxamarca on his way from Quito to Cuzco. On 15th November 1532 Francisco Pizarro with his little army entered Caxamarca and in February 1533 his colleague Almagro arrived with reinforcements. The murder of the Ynca Atahualpa was perpetrated on 29th August 1533, and on 15th Nov- ember Pizarro entered Cuzco. He allowed the rightful heir to the empire, Manco the legitimate son of Huayna Ccapac, to be solemnly crowned on 24th March 1534. Almagro then undertook an expe- dition to Chili, and Pizarro founded the city of Lima on 18th January 1535. In the following year the Yncas made a brave attempt to expel the invaders, and closely besieged the Spaniards in Cuzco during February and March. But Almagro, returning from Chili, raised the siege on 18th April 1537. Immediately afterwards the dispute arose between the Pizarros and Almagro as to the limits of their respective jurisdictions. An interview took place at Mala, on the sea-coast, on 18th November 1537, which led to no result, and Almagro was finally defeated in the battle of Las Salinas near Cuzco on 26th April 1538. His execution followed. His adherents recognized his young half-caste son, a gallant and noble youth generally known as Almagro the Lad, as his successor. Bitterly discontented, they conspired at Lima and assassinated Pizarro on 26th June 1541. Meanwhile Vaca de Castro had been sent out by the emperor, and on hearing of the murder of Pizarro he assumed the title of governor of Peru. On 16th September 1542 he defeated the army of Almagro the Lad in the battle of Chupas near Guamanga. The ill-fated boy was beheaded at Cuzco.

Charles V. enacted the code known as the “‘ New Laws” in 1542. Civil “ Encomiendas,” or grants of estates on which the inhabitants were wars.

bound to pay tribute and give personal service to the grantee, were to pass to the crown on the death of the actual holder; a fixed sum was to be assessed as tribute ; and forced personal service was for- bidden. Blasco Nunez de Vela was sent out, as first viceroy of Peru, to enforce the “New Laws.” Their promulgation aroused a storm among the conquerors. Gonzalo Pizarro rose in rebellion, and entered Lima on 28th October 1544. The viceroy fled to Quito, but was followed, defeated, and killed at the battle of Anaquito on 18th January 1546. The “New Laws” were weakly revoked, and Pedro de la Gasca, as first president of the Audiencia (court of justice) of Peru, was sent out to restore order. He arrived in 1547, and on 8th April 1548 he routed the followers of Gonzalo Pizarro on the plain of Xaquixaguana near Cuzco. Gonzalo was executed on the field. La Gasca made a redistribution of “encomiendas”’ to the loyal conquerors, which caused great discontent, and left Peru before his scheme was made public in January 1550. On 23d September 1551 Don Antonio de Mendoza arrived as second viceroy, but died at Lima in the following July. The country was then ruled by the judges of the Audiencia, and a formidable insurrection broke out, headed by Francisco Hernandez Giron, with the object of maintaining the right of the conquerors to exact forced service from the Indians. In May 1554 Giron defeated the army of the judges at Chuquinga, but he was hopelessly routed at Pucara on 11th October 1554, captured, and on 7th December executed at Lima. Don Andres Hurtado de Mendoza, marquis of Caftete, entered Lima as third viceroy of Peru on 6th July 1555, and ruled with an iron hand for six years. He at length brought the turbulent conquerors to their knees. All the leaders in former disturbances were put on board a ship at Callao and sent toSpain. Corregidors, or governors of districts, were ordered to try summarily and execute every tur- bulent person within their jurisdictions. All unemployed persons were sent on distant expeditions, and moderate “encomiendas’ were granted to a few deserving officers. The previous anarchy was thus completely stamped out. At the same time the viceroy wisely came to an agreement with Sayri Tupac, the son and successor of the Ynca Manco, and granted him a pension. He took great care to supply the natives with priests of good conduct, and pro- moted measures for the establishment of schools and the founda- tion of towns in the different provinces. The cultivation of wheat, vines, and olives, and European domestic animals were introduced. The next viceroy was the Conde de Nieva (1561-64). His successor, the

licentiate Lope Garcia de Castro, who only had the title of governor, ruled from 1564 to 1569. From this time there was a succession of viceroys until 1824. The viceroys were chief magis- trates, but they were not supreme. In legal matters they had to consult the Audiencia of judges, in finance the Tribunal de Cuentas, in other branches of administration the Juntas de Gobierno and

de Guerra.

Don Francisco de Toledo, the second son of the count of Oropesa, Toledo's Fearing that adminis-

the little court of the Ynca Tupac Amaru (who had succeeded his tration.

entered Lima as viceroy on 26th November 1569.

brother Sayri Tupac) might become a formidable focus of rebellion, he sent troops to seize the young prince, and unjustly beheaded the last of the Yncas in the square of Cuzco in the year 1571. After a minute personal inspection of every province in Peru, he, with the experienced aid of the learned Polo de Ondegardo

Vice- royalty.

Peru inde- pendent

678

and the judge Matienza, established the system under which the native population of Peru was ruled for the two succeeding cen- turies ; and future viceroys referred to hin as the great master of statesmanship who was their guide, and to his ordinances as their acknowledged text-book. His Libro de Tasos fixed the tribute to be paid by the Indians, exempting all men under eighteen and over fifty. He found it necessary, in order to secure efficient government, to revert in some measure to the system of the Yncas. The people were to be directly governed by their native chiefs, whose duty was to collect the tribute and exercise magisterial functions. The chiefs or "curacas" had subordinate native officials under them called " pichea-

pachacas ” over 500 men, and “pachacas” over 100 men. The office of curaca (or “ cacique ”) was made hereditary, and its possessor enjoyed several privileges. Many curacas were descended from the imperial family of the Yncas, or from great nobles of the Yncarial court. In addition to the tribute, which was in accordance with native usage, there was the “mita,” or forced labour in mines, farms, and manufactories. Toledo enacted that one-seventh of the male population of a village should be subject to conscription for this service, but they were to be paid, and were not to be taken beyond a specified distance from their homes.

In their legislation the Spanish kings and viceroys showed a desire to protect the people from tyranny, but they were unable to prevent the rapacity and lawlessness of distant officials. The country was depopulated by the illegal methods of enforcing the mita, and an air of sadness and desolation spread over the land. Toledo was succeeded in 1581 by Don Martin Henriquez, who died at Lima two years afterwards. The subsequent history of the vice- royalty is well worthy of detailed attention by students of history in all countries possessing a colonial empire. ‘The Spanish colonies suffered from the strict system of monopoly and protection, which was only slightly relaxed by the later Bourbon kings, and from the arbitrary proceedings of the Inquisition. Between 1581 and 1776 as many as fifty-nine heretics were burned at Lima, and there were twenty-nine “autos,” but the Inquisition affected Europeans rather than natives, for the Indians, as catechumens, were exempted from its terrors. The curacas sorrowfully watched the gradual extine- tion of their people by the operation of the mita, protesting from time to time against the exactions and cruelty of the Spaniards. At length a descendant of the Yneas, who assumed the name of Tupac Amaru, rose in rebellion in 1780. The insurrection lasted until July 1783, and the cruel executions which followed its sup- pression failed to daunt the people. The death of Tupac Amaru shook the power of Spain and made it totter to its fall. From that time both Indians and Peruvians of Spanish descent began to think for themselves, and to entertain ideas of liberty and pro- gress. Tupac Amaru was followed by Dr Pedro José Chavez de la Rosa, the Spanish bishop of Arequipa, and Dr Toribio Rodriguez de Mendoza, rector of the university of San Carlos at Lima, whose pupils, among whom were the future republican statesmen Drs Luna Pizarro and Vijil, became ardent advocates of reform. When, on 3d August 1814, Mateo

Garcia Pumacagua, a Peruvian chief, raised the cry of independence at Cuzco, he was joined by many Peruvians of Spanish descent, but was defeated in the battle of Umachiri (12th March 1815), taken, and executed. At the same time the youthful and enthusiastie poet Melgar suffered death in the cause of his country.

Peru was the centre of Spanish power, and the viceroy had his military strength concentrated at Lima. Consequently the more distant provinces, such as Chili and Buenos Ayres, were able to throw off the yoke first. But the destruction of the viceroy's power was essential to their continued independent existence. The conquest of the Peruvian coast must always depend on the command of the sea. A fleet of armed ships was fitted out at Valparaiso in Chili, under the command of Lord Cochrane and officered by Englishmen. It convoyed an army of Argentine troops, with some Chilians, under the command of the Argentine general San Martin, which landed on the coast of Peru in September 1820. San Martin was enthusiastically received, and the independence of Peru was proclaimed at Lima on his entrance, after the viceroy had withdrawn (28th July 1821). On 20th September 1822 San Martin resigned the protectorate, with which he had been invested, saying that the "presence of a fortunate soldier is dangerous to a newly- constituted state," and on the same day the first congress of Peru became the sovereign power of the state. After a short period of government by a committee of three, the congress elected Don José de la Riva Aguero to be first president of Peru on 26th F ebruary 1823. He displayed great energy and capacity as an administrator, but the aid of the Colombians under Bolivar was sought, and the native ruler was unwisely deposed. Bolivar arrived at Lima on Ist September 1823, and began to organize an army to attack the Spanish viceroy in the interior. On 6th August 1824 the cavalry action of Junin was fought with the Spanish general Canterac near the shores of the lake of Chinchay-cocha. It was won bya gallant charge of the Peruvians under Colonel Suarcz at the critical moment, Soon afterwards Bolivar left the army to proceed to

'the coast, and the final battle of Ayacucho (9th December 1824)

Pe ho U

with the viceroy and the whole Spanish power was fought by his second in command, General Sucre. The Spaniards were com- pletely defeated. The viceroy and all his officers were taken prisoners, and Spanish power in Peru came to an end,

General Bolivar now showed that he was actuated by personal ambition ; he intrigued to impose a constitution on Peru, with himself as president for life. He failed, and left the country on 3d September 1826, followed by all the Colombian troops in March

1827. General Lamar, who commanded the Peruvians at Ayacucho, Karly was elected president of Peru on 24th August 1827, but was deposed, presi. after waging a brief but disastrous war with Colombia, on 7th June dents,

1829. General Gamarra, who had been in the Spanish service, and was chief of the staff in the patriot army at Ayacucho, was elected third president on 81st August 1829.

For fifteen years, from 1829 to 1844, Peru was painfully feeling her way to a right use of independence. The officcrs who fought at Ayacucho, and to whom the country felt natural gratitude, were all-powerful, and they had not learned to settle political differences in any other way than by thesword. From 1837 to 1839 there was a lawless and unprincipled intervention on the part of Chili which increased the confusion. Three men, during that period of proba- tion, won a prominent place in their country's history, Generals Gamarra, Salaverry, and Santa Cruz. Gamarra, born at Cuzco in 1785, never accommodated himself to constitutional usages ; too often he made his own will the law ; but he attached to himself many loyal and devoted friends, and, with all his faults, which were mainly faults of ignorance, he loved his country and sought its welfare according to his lights. Salaverry was a very different character. Born at Lima in 1806, of pure Basque descent, he joined the patriot army before he was fifteen and displayed his audacious valour in many a hard-fought battle. Feeling strongly the necessity that Peru had for repose, and the guilt of civil dissension, he wrote patriotie poems which became very popular, Yet he too could only see a remedy in violence. He seized the Supreme power, and perished by an iniquitous sentencc on 18th February 1836.1 Andres Santa Cruz was an Indian statesman. His mother was a lady of high rank, of the family of the Yncas, and he was very proud

of his descent. Unsuccessful as a general in the field, he nevertheless possessed remarkable administrative ability and for nearly three years (1886-39) realized his lifelong dream of a Pceru-Bolivian confederation.2 But Peruvian history is not confined to the hostilities of these military rulers. Three constitutions were framed, in 1828, 1838, and 1839. There were lawyers, statesmen, and orators who could defend the rights and liberties of the people. On 7th November 1832 Dr Vijil, the deputy for Tacna, rose in his place in congress and denounced the unconstitutional acts of President Gamarra in a memorable speech of great eloquence. Nor should a much humbler name ever be omitted in writing the history of republican Peru. Juan Rios, a private soldier, was sentry at the door of congress when Gamarra illegally sent his troops to disperse the members. He defended his post against two companies, and fell mortally wounded.

In 1844 General Ramon Castilla restored peace to Peru, and was elected constitutional president on 20th April 1845. Ten years of peace and increasing prosperity followed. In 1849 the regular pay- ment of the interest of the public debt was commenced, steam com- munication was established along the Pacific coast, and a railroad was made from Lima to Callao. “After a regular term of office of six years of peace and moral and material progress Castilla resigned, and General Echenique was elected president. But the proceedings of Echenique’s government in connexion with the consolidation of the internal debt were disapproved by the nation, and, after hos- tilitics which lasted for six months, Castilla returned to power in January 1855. From December 1856 to March 1858 he had to contend with and subdue a local insurrection headed by General Vivanco, but, with these two exceptions, there was peace in Peru from 1844 to 1879, a period of thirty-five years.

Slavery and the Indian tribute were abolished ; by its provisions the president is elected for four years, and there are two vice- presidents. The congress consists of a scnate and chamber of deputies. The senators are clected by departments and the deputies by the people, every 80,000 inhabitants having a representative. When congress is not sitting there is a permanent commission of the legislature, elected at the end of each session, and consisting of seven senators and eight deputies. The chamber of deputies may accuse the president of infractions of the constitution and the

senate passes judgment. The president appoints the prefects of depart- ments and sub-prefects of provinces; the prefects nominate the governors of districts. In each province there is a judge; a superior court of justice sits at the capital of each department; and there is

1 The romance of his life has been admirably written by Manuel Bilbao (1st ed., Lima, 1853 ; 2d ed., Buenos Ayres, 1867).

2 The succession of presidents and supreme chiefs of Peru from 1829 to 1844 was as follows :—1829-33, Agustin Gamarra; 1834-35, Luis José Orbegoso; 1835-36, Felipe Santiago Salaverry; 1836-39, Andres Santa Cruz; 1839-41, Agustin Gamarra ; 1841-44, Manuel Menendez.

The existing consti- os tution was framed in 1856, and revised by a commission in 1860, tion.

ver Sl- its.

ery ve Uy

an appeal to the supreme court at Lima. Castilla retired at the end of his term of office in 1862, and died in 1868. On 2d August 1868 Coloncl Balta was elected president. Before his time the public debt had been moderate, amounting to £4,491,042, and the interest had been regularly paid since 1849. But Balta's govern- ment increased it to £49,000,000, the payment of the interest of which from the ordinary revenues was simply impossible. The creditors, as security, had the whole of the guano and nitrate de- posits assigned to them. With the vast sum thus raised President Balta commenced the execution of public works, principally rail- roads on a gigantic scale. His period of office was signalized by the opening of an international exhibition at Lima. He was succeeded (2d August 1872) by Don Manuel Pardo, an honest and enlightened statesman, who did all in his power to retrieve the country from the financial difficulty into which it had been brought by the reckless policy of his predecessor, but the conditions were not capable of solution. He regulated the Chinese immigration to the coast- valleys, which, from 1860 to 1872, had amounted to 58,606. He paid great attention to statistics, promoted the advance of educa- tion, and encouraged literature. He was the best president Peru has ever known, and his death in

1878 was a public calamity. On 2d August 1876 General Prado was elected, and his term of office saw the commencement of that calamity which has since overwhelmed his country.

On 5th April 1879 the republic of Chili declared war upon Peru, the alleged pretext being that Peru had made an offensive treaty, directed against Chili, with Bolivia, a country with which Chili had a dispute ; but the publication of the text of this treaty made known the fact that it was strictly defensive and contained no just causc of war. The true object of Chili was the conquest of the rich Peruvian province of Tarapaca, the appropriation of its valu- able guano and nitrate deposits, and the spoliation of the rest of the Peruvian coast.

After the capture of the ‘‘ Huascar”’ off Point Angamos on 8th October 1879 by two Chilian ironclads and four other vessels, the Peruvian coast was at the mercy of the invaders, and Tara- paca, surrounded by trackless deserts, yet open to the sea, though bravely defended for some time by the Peruvian army, fell into the hands of the enemy after the hotly-contested battle of Tarapaca on 17th November 1879.

Chili then landed an army farther north, and on 26th May 1880 the battle of Tacna was fought, followed by the capture of the port of Arica on 7th June. In these combats the Peruvians lost 147 officers alone. The possession of the sea enabled the Chilian ships to desolate the whole coast; and, the Peruvian army having been almost annihilated, only a force of volunteers and raw recruits could be assembled for the defence of the capital. After the two desperately-contested battles of Chorrillos and Miraflorcs on the 13th and 15th of January 1881, Lima was entered on the 17th, and was not evacuated by the invaders until 22d October 1883. During that period General Caceres, the hero of the defence, carried on a gallant but unequal struggle in the sierra. At last a provi- sional Government, under General Iglesias, signed a treaty with the Chilians on 20th October 1883, by which the province of Tarapaca was ceded to the conquerors, Tacna and Arica were to be occupied by the Chilians for ten years, and then a vote by plebiscitum is to decide whether they are to belong to Peru or Chili; and there are clauses respecting the sales of guano ; while all rights to the nitrate deposits, which are hypothecated to the creditors of Peru, have been

appropriated by the Chilian conquerors. This most disastrous war has brought ruin and misery on the country, and has thrown Peru back for many years. The country contains the elements of

recovery, but it will be a work of time.

Bibliography.—The history of Ynea civilization is to be found in works con- temporaneous with the conquest or written in the succeeding century, in the native literature, and in the modern descriptions of ruins and other remains. The highest authority is Pedro de Cieza de Leon, whose Chronicle, which bears the stamp of impartiality, accuracy, and intelligence, was written within twenty years of the conquest (Eng. tr. of parts i. and ii. by the Hakluyt Society, 1864, 1883). The valuable writings of the learned lawyer Polo de Ondegardo, which discuss the polity and administrative rule of the Yneas, have been edited in Spanish, and one of his intcresting reports has been translated and issued by the Hakluyt Society. Cristoval de Molina, the priest of the hospital of Cuzco, has described the rites, ceremonies, and ritual of the Yncas in great detail ; he wrote in 1580, but his manuscript was not translated and issued (by the Hakluyt Society) until 1873. It has since been ably edited in Spanish, at Madrid. Miguel Balboa, who was in the country from 1566 to 1586, wrote an excellent historical work, which is translated into French in the series of M. Ternaux Compans. The Natural History of the Indies, by the Jesuit José de

Acosta, is a work of considerable repute, first published in 1590. An English version, which originally appeared in 1604, was reprinted and edited for the Hakluyt Society in 1880. The famous commentaries of Garcilasso de la Vega were published in 1609; and the first part, relating to the Yncas, was trans- lated and issued by the Hakluyt Society in 1869. The Suma y Narracion de los Yncas, by Juan de Betanzos, is certainly one of the most valuable of the earlier authorities, as the author was an excellent scholar, well acquainted with the Ynea language, and a citizen of Cuzco. But most of his work is lost. The remainder was edited in Spanish by Sefior Espada in 1880. The works of Avila, Arriaga, and Ramos give accounts of local superstitions and beliefs soon after the conquest. In the 17th century valuable labours on Ynea history were given out by Fernando Montesinos,

whose work was translated into French in the Ternaux Compans edition, and by a native named Juan de Santa Cruz Saleamayhua. The latter curious narrative has been edited in Spanish recently, and issued in a translated form by the Hakluyt Society. General accounts of Ynea civilization have been written by Robertson, Prescott, and Helps, none of whom, however, were acquainted with more than a portion of these author- ities, or with the native languages, and none had been in the country. A valuable modern work on Peruvian antiquities is the Antiguedades Peruanas, by Don Mariano,Rivero, published at Vienna in 1851, and translated into Eng- lish at New York. Markham's Cuzco and Lima (1855) contains the results of a personal visit to the coast and to the ruins in and round Cuzco. D'Orbigny has described the ruins near Lake Titicaca ; but the best modern work treat- ing of architectural remains throughout Peru, as they may be seen now, is E. G. Squier's Peru (1877). Pérou et Bolivie, by Charles Wiener (1880), is also a valuable work. The language and literature of the Yncas have been treated of by Rivero, who gives a list of earlier grammars and vocabularies; in the Quichua grammar and dictionary, and the translation of the drama of Ollantay, by Markham ; in Dr Von Tschudi's Kechua Sprache (1853), and in his subsequent critical work published in 1875; and by Gavino Zegarra in the fourth volume of Collection Linguistique Americaine (1878). Don Vicente Lopez of Buenos Ayres has also written a learned work on the subject entitled Races Aryennes.

The career of Pizarro and the conquest of Peru are recounted in the general histories of Herrera and Gomara, and in Garcilasso de la Vega (part ii.). The best accounts of the first part of the conquest are by Francisco de Xeres, the conqueror's secretary, and by Hernando Pizarro. Both have been translated into English and issued by the Hakluyt Society. The narrative of Pedro Pizarro has only recently been edited at Madrid, and, as the author was one of the conquerors and an eye-witness, it is very important. Agustin de Zarate, who was employed in Peru very soon after the conquest, wrote ahistory which is valuable, especially the latter portion relating to events of which he was an eye-witness. The history of the Quito war by Cieza de Leon remained in manuscript until 1877, when it was admirably edited by Sefior Espada. These authorities (excepting the last) were made use of by Robertson, Prescott, and Helps. But none of the three brings the narrative down to the conclusion of the civil wars in Peru and the settlement of the

country. An account of the last rebellion, led by Francisco Hernandez Giron, and of the final settlement, is given by the Palencian Diego Fernandez in his history of Peru (Seville, 1571). There is no translation of this work. There is no history of the colonial period ; there are, however, abundant materials for it in the laws and ordinances, in the detailed reports of successive viceroys, in the histories of religious orders, and in innumerable memoirs, biographies, and reports both printed and in manuscript. Stevenson, in his narrative (3 vols., 1823), gives some account of the last years of viceregal government. A mass of documents relating to the great rebellion of the Ynea Tupac Amaru was published by Don Pedro de Angelis at Buenos Ayres in 1836. The work of Don Gregorio Funes, dean of Cordova, published in 1817, contains further information, and the diary of the governor of La Paz, while besieged by the Indians, will be found in Temple's Travels in Peru. There are narratives of the rebellion in the Voyage dans le nord de Bolivie by Weddell, and in the Travels in Peru and India (1862) by Markham. The events which led to the final achievement of Peruvian independence have been traced out in an interesting work by Don Benjamin Vicufia Mackenna, entitled La Historia de la Independencia del Peru, 1809-1819 (Lima, 1860). The events of the war of independence are narrated by the Spaniards Garcia Camba and Terrazas, and in English in the charming Memoirs of General Miller, and, as regards naval affairs, in the autobiography of the earl of Dundonald. Three volumes of the history of the republic have been published by Dr Don Paz Soldan. There are useful materials for history in the two anonymous volumes published in 1858 and signed ‘‘ Pruvonena,” in the lives of Lamar by Villaran, of Salaverry by Bilbao, and in the history of the campaign of Yungay by Placencia. The works of Colonel Espinosa, especially his Diccionario Repub- licano, and of Dr Vijil arc also important. Histories of the war between Peru and Chili have been hurriedly published by two Chilians, Diego Barros Arana and Vieufia Mackenna. The former is a mere partisan production of no value asahistory. The latter, though prejudiced, is honestly written, and is useful as containing many original documents. Another history will be written by Paz Soldan; and meanwhile narratives have been published in English by Markham, and in Italian by Caivano. :

The most valuable geographical and topographical works on Peru are by Peruvians, including the writings of Cosine Bueno and Unanue, articles in

the Mercurio Peruano, and the works already mentioned of Dr Paz Soldan. Some papers by Haenke, Miller, Bollaert, Raimondi, Pentland, and Markham will be found in the Journais of the Royal Geographical Society. | But the most import- ant of all is the great official work by Don Antonio Raimondi, three volumes of which have already appeared, besides the same author's geographical account of the department of Ancachs. The natural history of Peru has been described in the German works of Dr Von Tschudi, and briefly in the English translation of his travels (1847). The first great work on Peruvian botany was the Flora Peruviana by Riuz and Pavon, followed by the Chloris Andina of Dr Weddell, which forms two volumes of the great work of Castelnau. In his Quinologie Weddell describes the quinine-yielding chinchona trees of Peru and Bolivia, and further information on the chinchona genus, as well as on coca cultivation, Cuzco maize, and quinoa, will be found in Markhain's Peruvian Bark (1880). Besides the works already mentioned, Dr A. Smith published a book giving useful information respecting the climate of Lima and other parts of Pern entitled Peru as it is (1839); and there are some other books of travel of no

special value. (C. R. M.)

PERU, a city of the United States in La Salle county, Illinois, lies 68 miles above Peoria at the head of naviga- tion on the Illinois river, is a station on the Chicago, Rock

1 The succession of presidents of Peru, since the establishment of peace by Castilla in 1844, has been as follows :—1845-51, Ramon Castilla ; 1851-55, José Rufino Echenique ; 1855-62, Ramon Castilla ; 1862-63, Miguel San Roman (died 3d April 1863); 1863-65, Jose Antonio Pezet (vice-president) ; 1865-68, Mariano Ignacio Prado ;

Island, and Pacific Railroad, and is connected by a tramway (1 mile) with La Salle, the terminus of the Llnois and Michigan Canal. Flour-mills, a plough-factory, and zinc- works are among the chief industrial establishments ; coal- 1868-72, José Balta; 1872-76, Manuel Pardo; 1876-79, Mariano Ignacio Prado; 1879-81, Nicolas de Pierola (supreme chief); 1881 (12th March), Francisco Garcia Calderon; 1883 (20th October), General Iglesias.

mining is largely prosecuted in the vicinity ; and 125,000 tons of ice are yearly despatched to the southern markets. The population was 3132 in 1860 and 4632 in 1880 (township, 5053).

PERUGIA, a city of Italy, the chief town of the pro- vince of Perugia (formerly Umbria), lies 1550 feet above the sea on a beautiful and green-clad hill, which affords a magnificent view over a wide sweep of the Apennines and the great Umbrian plain through which the Tiber flows. The railway station at the foot of the ascent, more than a mile from the city-gate, is 484 miles south-east of Arezzo and 152 miles north of Rome. The walls, which follow a very irregular ground-plan, have a circuit of 8300 yards, and the length from Sant' Angelo in the north-west to Porta San Costanzo in the south-east is 2500 yards. Of the forty-two towers which could be counted in the 14th century only three or four—the Torre degli Scalzi, &ce.— remain; but away from the line of the present enceinte there are several relics of the ancient Etruscan and Roman fortifications, notably the so-called arch of Augustus, a magnificent gateway in the Piazza Grimana, with the ancient inscription AvevsTaA Prervsta on the archivolt and a beautiful Renaissance loggia boldly crowning one of its towers. The Cittadella Paolina—a great fortress erected by Paul III. on a site previously occupied by ten churches, two monasteries, the palaces of the Baglioni, and a number of private houses—was destroyed by the citizens in 1848, and its place has been partly taken by a substan- tial block of public offices (the museum, é&c.). In modern Perugia the great centre of interest is the Piazza del Duomo at the north end of the Corso. On one side stands the cathedral of San Lorenzo, a Gothic structure of the 14th and 15th centuries, in the plan of a Latin cross 5 On the other side is the Palazzo Pubblico, presenting a fine Gothic facade of the first half of the 14th century with the figures of the Perugian griffin and the Guelf lion above the outside stair ; and in the centre rises the great marble fountain constructed about 1277 by Bevignate, Frate Alberto (both Perugians), and Boninsegna (a Venetian), and adorned by statues and statuettes sculptured by Niccold and Giovanni Pisano. The cathedral contains the burial- place of the three popes, Innocent III., Urban IV., and Martin IV., and a reputed relic of great celebrity in ltaly— the Virgin's wedding-ring ; and at the north-west corner, in the Piazza del Papa, is a

sitting statue! of Pope Julius III. by Vincenzio Danti, erected about 1555 by the people of Perugia in gratitude for the restoration of their civic privileges. On the decoration of the Sala del Cambio or old exchange, contiguous to the Palazzo Pubblico, Perv- GINO (7.v.) put forth the full force of his genius. Most of the movable paintings for which Perugia is famous have since 1863 been collected in the Pinacoteca Vannucci, established in the same Monte Morcino monastery of the Olivetans which now accommodates the university ; besides a considerable number of pieces by Perugino, there are specimens of Pinturicchio, Niccold Alunno, Bonfigli, é&e. This centralization has somewhat impaired the interest of several of the churches; but others remain with undimi- nished wealth. San Domenico, a Gothic edifice originally designed by Giovanni Pisano, but rebuilt in 1632, contains that artist's magnificent monument of Pope Benedict XI., and in its east front a beautiful stained- glass window by Bartolommeo da Perugia. San Pietro de' Casinensi (out- side the Porta Romana) is a basilica with a triple nave, founded in the beginning of the 11th century by Vincioli, and remarkable for its conspicuous spire, its granite and marble columns, its walnut stall-work designed by Raphael, and its numerous pictures (by Perugino, Parmigiano, Ra- phael, &c.). The Chiesa Nuova (formerly San Giovanni

1 See Hawthorne's description in the Murble Faun.

Rotondo) possesses the tombs of Baldassare Ferri, the Perugian musician, and Vermiglioli, the leading Perugian antiquary. The university, which is not one of the " royal universities," though it dates from 1307 and has faculties of law, science, and medicine, numbers only seventy-nine students (1881-82). Other educational and benevolent institutions are a botanical garden, a meteorological obser- vatory, a commercial library founded in 1582 by Prospero Podiani,? the Santa Margherita lunatic asylum, and the hospital of Santa Maria. Woollens, silks, wax candles, and liqueurs are manufactured on a small scale. The popula- tion of the city was 16,708 in 1871, and 17,395 in 188ig that of the commune 49,503 and 51,354 respectively.

A notice of ancient Perugia (Perusia) has been given under Etruria, vol. viii. p. 635. After the disasters of the Perugian war (41 B.c.) the city was rebuilt by Augustus and took the title Augusta ; and at a later date it became a regular colony, Colonia Vibia. Its recovery from the Goths by Belisarius in 587, its pro- tracted siege and sack by Totila (549), its restoration to the Eastern empire by Narses in 552, and its long occupation by the Lombards are the main points in the history of Perugia previous to the 9th century. At that time, with the consent of Charles the Great and Louis the Pious, it passed under the supremacy of the popes; but for many centuries the papal authority existcd rather in name than in reality, and the city continued to maintain an independent and enterprising life, warring against its enemies and subduing many of the neighbouring lands and cities,—Foligno, Assisi, Spoleto, Montepulciano, &c. It remained true for the most part to the Guelfs. On various occasions the popes found a personal asylum within its walls, and it was the meeting-place of the conclaves which elected Honorius II. (1124), Honorius IV. (1285), Celestine V. (1294), and Clement V. (1805). But Perugia had no mind simply to subserve the papal interests. At the time of Rienzi's unfortunate enterprise it sent ten ambassadors to pay him honour ; and, when papal legates sought to coerce it by foreign soldiery, or to exact contributions, they met with vigorous resistance. In the 15th century the real power, after passing from despot to despot, was at last concentrated in the Baglioni family, who, though they had no legal position as rulers or magistrates, defied all other authority, and filled the streets of the city with their broils and butcheries. Gian Paolo Baglioni was lured to Rome in 1520, and beheaded by Leo X. ; and in 1584 Rodolfo, who had slain a papal legate, was defeated by Pier Luigi Farnese, and the city, captured and plundered by his soldiery, was deprived of its privileges and given over to the "'worse tyranny of priests and bastards." In 1797 Perugia was occupied by the French; in 1882, 1838, and 1854 it was visited by earthquakes ; in May 1849 it was seized by the Austrians ; and, after a futile insurrection in 1859, it was finally united, along with the delegation, to Piedmont in 1860.

See B. Rossi Scotti, Guida di Perugia; Bonazzi, Storia di Perugia (1875, &e.); J. A. Symonds, Sketches in Greece and Italy (1874).

PERUGINO, Przrro (1446-1524), whose correct family name was VANNUCCI, one of the most advanced Italian painters immediately preceding the era of Leonardo da Vinci and Raphael, was born in 1446 at Citta della Pieve in Umbria, and belongs to the Umbrian school of painting. The name of Perugino came to him from Perugia, the chief city of the neighbourhood. Pietro was one of several children born to Cristoforo Vannucci, a member of a re- spectable family settled at Citta' della Pieve. Though respectable, they seem to have been poor, or else, for some reason or other, to have left Pietro uncared for at the opening of his career. Before he had completed his ninth year the boy was articled to a master, a painter at Perugia. Who this may have been is very uncertain ; the painter is spoken of as wholly mediocre, but sympathetic for the great things in his art. Benedetto Bonfigli is generally surmised ; if he is rejected as being above mediocrity, either Fiorenzo di Lorenzo or Niccold da Foligno may possibly have been the man. Pietro painted a little at Arezzo; thence he went to the headquarters of art, Florence, and frequented the famous Brancacci Chapel in the church of the Carmine. It appears to be sufficiently established that he studied in the atelier of Andrea del Verrocchio, where Leonardo da Vinci was also a pupil. He may have learned perspective, in which he particularly

- See the curious history in The Fortnightly Review, 1866.

excelled for that period of art, from Pietro della Francesca. The date of this first Florentine sojourn is by no means settled ; some authorities incline to make it as early as 1470, while others, with perhaps better reason, postpone it till 1479. Pietro at this time was extremely poor, and his prospects of rising in his art, save by the exercise of incessant diligence day and night, were altogether dim ; he had no bed, but slept on a chest or trunk for many months, and, bent upon making his way, resolutely denied himself every creature-comfort.

Gradually Perugino rose into notice, and in the course of some years he became extremely famous not only throughout all Italy but even beyond her bounds. He was one of the earliest Italian painters to practise oil- painting, in which he evinced a depth and smoothness of tint which elicited much remark; he transcended his epoch in giving softness to form and a graceful

spacious- ness to landscape-distances, and in perspective he applied the novel rule of two centres of vision. The Florentine school advanced in amenity under his influence. Some of his early works were extensive frescos for the Ingesati fathers in their convent, which was destroyed not many years afterwards in the course of the siege of Florence; he produced for them also many cartoons, which they executed with brilliant effect in stained glass. Though greedy for gain, his integrity was proof against temptation ; and an amusing anecdote has survived of how the prior of the Ingesati doled out to him the costly colour of ultra- marine, and how Perugino, constantly washing his brushes, obtained a surreptitious hoard of the pigment, which he finally restored to the prior to shame his stingy suspicious- ness. Another (and possibly apocryphal) anecdote, to show that he was not incapable of rising superior to all sordid considerations, is that he painted some excellent frescos for the oratory annexed to 8. Maria de' Bianchi and would only accept an omelette as a gratuity. A third anecdote (but it belongs to a late period of his life) is that, as he would trust no one, he was accustomed to carry his money about with him in travelling after he had received a pay- ment, and on one occasion was robbed and had a narrow escape of his life; eventually, however, the bulk of the money was recovered. A good specimen of his early style, in tempera, is the circular picture in the Louvre of the Virgin and Child enthroned between Saints.

Perugino returned from Florence to Perugia, and thence, towards 1483, he went to Rome. The painting of that part of the Sixtine Chapel which is now immortalized by Michelangelo's Last Judgment was assigned to him by the pope; he covered it with frescos of the Assumption, the Nativity, and Moses in the Bulrushes. These works were ruthlessly destroyed to make a space for his suc- cessor's more colossal genius, but other works by Perugino still remain in the Sixtine Chapel, — Moses and Zipporah (often attributed to Signorelli), the Baptism of Christ, and Christ giving the keys to Peter. This last work is more especially noted, and may be taken as a typical example both of Perugino's merits and of his characteristic defects, —such as formal symmetry of composition, set attitudes, and affectation in the design of the extremities. Pintu- ricchio accompanied the greater Umbrian to Rome, and was made his partner, receiving a third of the profits; he may probably have done some of the Zipporah subject.

Pietro, now aged forty, must have left Rome after the completion of the Sixtine paintings in 1486, and in the autumn of that year he was in Florence. Here he figures by no means advantageously in a criminal court. In

July 1487 he and another Perugian painter named |

Aulista di Angelo were convicted, on their own confession, of having in December waylaid with staves some one (the mame does not appear) in the street near S. Pietro

Maggiore. Perugino limited himself, in intention, to assault and battery, but Aulista had made up his mind for murder. The minor and more illustrious culprit was fined ten gold florins, and the major one exiled for life. The next recorded incident in his career is also not wholly honourable to Perugino,—that of his undertaking but not fulfilling a contract to paint in Orvieto ; as the commission fell through we need not pursue the details.

Between 1486 and 1499 Perugino resided chiefly in Florence, making one journey to Rome and several to Perugia. He had a regular shop in Florence, received a great number of commissions, with proportionate gain and fame, and continued developing his practice as an oil- painter, his system of superposed layers of colour being essentially the same as that of the Van Eycks. One of his most celebrated pictures, the Piet& in the Pitti Gallery, belongs to the year 1495. From about 1498 he became increasingly keen after money, frequently repeating his groups from picture to picture, and leaving much of his work to journeymen. In 1499 the guild of the Cambio (money-changers or bankers) of Perugia asked him to undertake the decoration of their audience-hall, and he accepted the invitation. This extensive scheme of work, which may have been finished within the year 1500, com- prised the painting of the vault with the seven planets and the signs of the zodiac (Perugino doing the designs and his pupils most probably the executive work), and the representation on the walls of two sacred subjects—the Nativity and Transfiguration—the Eternal Father, the four Virtues of Justice, Prudence, Temperance, and Forti- tude, Cato as the emblem of wisdom, and (in life-size) numerous figures of classic worthies,

prophets, and sibyls. On the mid-pilaster of the hall Perugino placed his own portrait in bust-form. It is probable that Raphael, who in boyhood, towards 1496, had been placed by his uncles under the tuition of Perugino, bore a hand in the work of the vaulting ; but, besides Raphael, the master had many and distinguished scholars acting as his assistants. The Transfiguration in this series has often been spoken of as the latest work of eminent excellence produced by Peru- gino, and from about 1500 he declined in a marked degree ; this, however, is not to be accepted as true without some qualification, as we shall see in the sequel. It may have been about this time (though some accounts date the event a few years later) that Vannucci married a young and beautiful wife, the object of his fond affection ; he loved to see her handsomely dressed, and would often deck her out with his own hands. He was made one of the priors of Perugia in 1501.

While Perugino, though by no means stationary or unprogressive as an executive artist, was working con- tentedly upon the old lines, and carrying out, almost to their highest point of actual or potential development, the ancient conceptions of subject-matter, treatment, style, and form, a mighty wave of new art flooded Florence with its rush and Italy with its rumour. Michelangelo, twenty- five years of age in 1500, following after and distancing Leonardo da Vinci, was opening men's eyes and minds to possibilities of achievement as yet unsurmised. Vannucci in Perugia heard Buonarroti bruited abroad, and was impatient to see with his own eyes what the stir was all about. In 1504 he allowed his apprentices and assistants to disperse, and he returned to Florence. It was not in the nature of things that he should simply swell the chorus of praise. Though not openly detracting, he viewed with jealousy and some grudging the advances made by Michel- angelo; and Michelangelo on his part replied, with the intolerance which pertains to superiority, to the faint praise or covert dispraise of his senior and junior in the art. On one occasion, in company, he told Perugino to

his face that he was "a bungler in art" (goffo nell' arte). This was not to be borne, and Vannucci brought, with equal indiscretion and ill success, an

action for defamation of character. Put on his mettle by this mortifying trans- action, he determined to show what he could do, and he produced the chef-d'ceuvre of the Madonna and Saints for the Certosa of Pavia. The constituent parts of this noble work have now been sundered. 'The only portion which remains in the Certosa is a figure of God the Father with cherubim. An Annunciation has disappeared from cog- nizance ; three compartments—the Virgin adoring the infant Christ, St Michael, and St Raphael with Tobias— are among the choicer treasures of the London National Gallery. The current story that Raphael bore a hand in the work is not likely to be true. This was succeeded in 1505 by an Assumption, in the Cappella dei Rabatta, in the church of the Servi in Florence. The painting may have been executed chiefly by a pupil, and was at any rate a failure: it was much decried; Perugino lost his scholars; and towards 1506 he once more and finally abandoned Florence, going to Perugia, and thence in a year or two to Rome.

Pope Jtilius IT. had summoned Perugino to paint the Stanza in the Vatican, now called that of the Incendio del Borgo; but he soon preferred a younger competitor, that very Raphael who had been trained by the aged master of Perugia; and Vannucci, after painting the ceiling with figures of God the Father in different glories, in five medallion-subjects, found his occupation gone; he retired from Rome, and was once more in Perugia from 1512. Among his latest works one of the best is the extensive altar-piece (painted between 1512 and 1517) of 8. Agostino in Perugia; the component parts of it are now dispersed in various galleries.

Perugino's last frescos were painted for the monastery

of S. Agnese in Perugia, and in 1522 for the church of Castello di Fontignano hard by. Both series have dis- appeared from their places, the second being now in the South Kensington Museum. He was still at Fontignano in 1524 when the plague broke out, and he died. He was buried in unconsecrated ground ina field, the precise spot now unknown. 'The reason for so obscure and unwonted @ mode of burial has been discussed, and religious scepti- cism on the painter's own part has been assigned as the cause; the fact, however, appears to be that, on the sudden and widespread outbreak of the plague, the panic-struck local authorities ordained that all

victims of the disorder should be at once interred without any waiting for religious rites. This leads us to speak of Perugino's opinions on religion, Vasari is our chief, but not our sole, authority for saying that Vannucci had very little religion, and was an open and obdurate disbeliever in the immortality of the soul. Gasparo Celio, a painter of the 16th century, cites Niccolo delle Pomarance (whose wife was related to Perugino's wife) as averring that the aged master on his deathbed rejected the last sacraments, and refused to confess, saying he was curious to know the final fate of an unconfessed soul, and therefore he was buried in uncon- secrated ground. For a reader of the present day it is easier than it was for Vasari to suppose that Perugino may have been a materialist, and yet just as good and laudable a man as his orthodox Catholic neighbours or brother-artists; still there is a sort of shocking discrepancy between the quality of his art, in which all is throughout Christian, Catholic, devotional, and even pietistic, and the character of an anti-Christian contemner of the doctrine of immortality. It is difficult to reconcile this discrepancy, and certainly not a little difficult also to suppose that Vasari was totally mistaken in his assertion ; he was born twelve years before Perugino's death, and must have talked

with scores of people to whom the Umbrian painter had been well known. in 1494 painted his own portrait, now in the Uffizi Gallery

We have to remark that Perugino

of Florence, and into this he introduced a scroll lettered "Timete Deum." That an open disbeliever should inscribe

himself with "Timete Deum" seems odd 3 one's first im- pression is either that he cannot have been a disbeliever

or else that he must have been a hypocrite as well, which,

however, is still inconsistent with Vasari's account of the

facts. It is possible, after all, that a man might fear God and yet have no confidence in immortality, or in many of the things which seemed in 1494 to be essentials of religion, The portrait in question shows a plump face,

with small dark eyes, a short but well-cut nose, and sensuous lips; the neck is thick, the hair bushy and frizzled, and the general air imposing. The later portrait in the Cambio of Perugia shows the same face with traces of added years. Perugino died possessed of coniderable property, leaving three sons.

The character of Perugino's art is, as we have just said, through- out religious, although, in some instances already indicated, he strayed outside the circle of Christian history and tradition. His art is reserved, self-contained, not demonstrative, yet conspicuously marked by a tendeney to posing and balance, and to little artifices wherein the graceful merges in the affected. He had a particular mastery over abstracted purism of expression ; this appears con- stantly in his works, and, while it carries the finer of them toa genuinely ideal elevation, it leaves upon raany a mincing and mawkish taint which it is not easy to view without some impatience, Perugino did not recruit his strength from study of the antique; his drawing, though frequently solid and able, is unequal, and there is a certain littleness of style in his forms, especially (with rare exceptions) the nude. His technical attainment was excep- tional, and in colour he may be regarded as standing first in his generation in central Italy if we except Francia. Perugino does not leave upon us the impression of personal greatness ; he does not seem to have had struggling within him a profounder message to convey than he succeeded in conveying. There is neither massiveness of thought, nor novel initiative, nor glowing intensity, though there is some fervour of inspiration. Still, within his own province, he is a rare and excellent master.

Among the very numerous works of Perugino a few not already named require mention. Towards 1501 he produced the picture of the marriage of Joseph and the Virgin Mary (the "Sposalizio ") now in the museum of Caen; this served indisputably as the original, to a great extent, of the still more famous Sposalizio which was painted by Raphael in 1504, and which forms a leading attraction of the Brera Gallery in Milan.

Our account of Perugino follows in its main lines that given by Crowe and Cavalcaselle in their History of Painting in Italy, vol. iii. Vasari is, as usual, by far the most graphic narrator, but lax in his facts (though not so much so as in several other instances). Other leading authorities are Orsini, Vita, &c.,

di Pietro Perugino e degli Scolari, 1804, and Mezzanotte, Vita, &c., di Pietro Vannucci, 1836, (W. M. R.)

PERUVIAN BARK. See Crncrona and QUININE.

PERUZZI, BatpassarE (1481-1536), architect and painter of the Roman school, was born at Ancajano, in the diocese of Volterra, and passed his early life at Siena, where his father resided. While quite young Peruzzi went to Rome, and there studied architecture and painting ; in the latter he was at first a follower of Perugino. The choir-frescos in San Onofrio on the Janiculan Hill, usually attributed to Pinturicchio, are by his hand. One of the first works which brought renown to the young architect was the villa on the banks of the Tiber in Rome now

_—

known as the Farnesina, originally built for the Sienese Agostino Chigi, a wealthy banker. This villa, like all Peruzzi's works, is remarkable for its graceful design and the delicacy of its detail. It is best known for the frescos painted there by Raphael and his pupils to illustrate the stories of Psyche and Galatea. One of the loggie has frescos by Peruzzi's own hand,—the story of Medusa, a work of considerable decorative beauty. On account of his success in this building Peruzzi was appointed by Leo X. in 1520 architect to St Peter's at a salary of 250 scudi, a handsome sum for that time ; his design for its completion was not, however, carried out. During the sack of Rome in 1527 Peruzzi was taken prisoner, and barely escaped with his life, on condition of his painting the portrait of Constable de Bourbon, who had been killed during the siege (see Vasari). From Rome he escaped to his native city Siena, where he was made city architect, and designed fortifications for its defence, a great part of which still exist. Soon afterwards he returned to Rome, where he made designs for a palace for the Orsini family, and built the palaces Massimi and Vidoni, as well as others in the south of Italy. He died in 1536, and was buried by the side of Raphael in the Pantheon.

Peruzzi was an eager student of mathematics and the science of perspective ; he was also a fair classical scholar, and was much influenced by the treatise of Vitruvius. Like many of the great artists of his time, he was remark- able for the varied extent of his knowledge and skill. A most able architect, a fair painter, and a scientific engineer, he also practised minor arts, such as stucco-work in relief, sgraffito, and the decorative painted arabesques which the influence of Raphael did so much to bring into use. His best existing works in fresco are in the Castel di Bel- caro and the church of Fontegiusta in Siena. Tor Siena cathedral he also designed a magnificent wooden organ- case, painted and gilt, rich with carved arabesques in friezes and pilasters; he also designed the high altar and the Cappella del Battista.

His chief pupil was the architect Serlio, who, in his work on architecture, gratefully acknowledges the great debt he owed to Peruzzi's instruction. The English National Gallery possesses an interesting drawing by his hand (No. 167). The subject is the Adoration of the Magi, and it is of special value, because the heads of the three kings are portraits of Michelangelo, Raphael, and Titian. The Uffizi and the library at Siena contain a number of Peruzzi's designs and drawings, many of which are now of priceless value to the student of Roman anti- quities, as they show ancient buildings which have been destroyed since the 16th century.

Vasari, Vita di Baldassare Peruzzi (Milanesi's ed., vol. iv. p. 489, 1882) ; Milizia, Memorie degli Architetti (1781, vol. i. pp. 210-215); Della Valle, Lettere Sanesi (1782-86); Gaye, Carteggio inedito ad' Artisti (1839-40); Lanzi, Storia Pittorica (1804); and Platner, Beschreibung der Stadt Rom (1830-42).

PERVIGILIUM. See Vier.

PERVIGILIUM VENERIS, the Vigil of Venus, a short Latin poem, in praise of spring as the season of love and flowers. Written professedly in early spring on the eve of a three-nights' festival (Vigil) in honour of Venus (probably April 1-3), it describes in warm and poetical lan- guage the annual awakening of the vegetable and animal world in spring through the all-pervading influence of the foam-born goddess, whose birth and connexion with Rome and the Cesars are also touched upon. The joyous

tone which runs through the poem passes suddenly at the close into one of lyric sadness: ‘The nightingale is singing, but Iam silent. When comes my spring?” It consists of ninety-three verses in trochaic tetrameter catalectic and is divided into strophes of unequal length by the re- frain, “Cras amet qui nunquam amavit ; quique amavit

683

cras amet.” ‘The author, date, and place of composition are unknown. Formerly it was ascribed to Catullus, but from its late Latinity, approximating in some points to Italian,’ it can hardly have been earlier, and was prob- ably later, than the latter half of the 2d century A.D. It is certainly earlier than Fulgentius (about 480-550 A.D.), who imitated it. The references to Hybla and Etna (or Enna), from which some have thought that the poem is Sicilian, need be no more than poetical allusions to Sicily as the flowery land. Virgil’s description of spring (Georg., i. 323-342) is imitated somewhat closely; compare especi- ally verse 62 with Virgil’s 327; again, v. 85 is a copy of Ameid, xi. 458, This seems to disprove Bernhardy’s con-

| jecture that the poem is a translation from the Greek.

From its exuberant rhetoric Orelli ascribes it toan African poet of the 3d or 4th century a.p. Biicheler places it between Florus and Nemesianus, 2.e., in the 2d or 3d century A.D. Wernsdorf suggested as its author Annius Florus in the time of Hadrian; Heidtmann conjectured Appuleius ; Baehrens refers it to Tiberianus, a poet of the 4th century. But there are not data enough to determine the authorship.

The Pervigilium is preserved in the Paris MSS. 10318 (Codex Salmasianus) and 8071 (Codex Thuaneus or Pithoeanus); the former (the better of the two) belongs to the 7th or beginning of the 8th century, the latter to the 9th or beginning of the 10th. They differ too much to have been copied from the same original. The age of the MSS. refutes the theory, sometimes broached, that the poem is modern. The first edition was published by Lipsius at Antwerp in 1611; and there are modcrn editions by Wernsdorf (Poetex Latini Minores, vol. iii.), Orelli (1832), Biicheler (1859), Baehrens (1877). There are translations into English verse by Thomas Stanley (1651)

and Parnell, into prose by W. K. Kelly; a French translation by Sanadon ; a German one by Kircliner.

PESARO, a city and seaport of Italy, the capital of the province of Pesaro and Urbino, les on the coast of the Adriatic 36 miles north of Ancona and 203 south of Rimini on the right bank of the Foglia, the ancient Pisaurus. The ground on which it is built is only from 10 to 40 feet above the sea, but it is surrounded by hills,— on the east by Monte Ardizio, on the west by Monte Accio or San Bartolo, which derives one of its names from the Roman dramatist L. Attius, born and buried on the spot. The city walls, which were strengthened by bastions and moat and made a circuit of about a mile, were in 1830 transformed into a public promenade. Besides the ancient cathedral of the Annunciation (restored since 1860) the more conspicuous buildings are the prefecture (a palace originally erected by the Sforza, and restored by Francesco Maria della Rovere), the seminary, the Rossini theatre (opened in 1818), the fortress or Rocca Costanzia (built by Costanzo Sforza in 1474), the harbour-fort (due to Napoleon I), and the large lunatic asylum. Rossimi, who was a native of Pesaro, left all his fortune to found a musical lyceum in the city, and his statue by Marochetti (1864) stands near the railway station. The Olivieri library (established by the antiquary of that name, author of Marmora Pisaurensia, &c.) contains about 14,000 volumes, MSS. of Tasso's, &c., various antiquities, and a fine collection of majolica from the old Urbino manufactory. Among the industries of Pesaro are the growing, spinning, and weaving of silk, tanning, iron-founding, and the manufacture of glass and pottery. The harbour is of no great importance, and the aggregate burden of the 437 vessels entering or clearing in 1883 was less than 12,000 tons. The population of the city and port in 1870 was 11,952 and in 1880 12,913; that of the commune 19,691 and 20,909 in the same years.

The ancient Pisaurum in the territory of the Galli Senones became a Roman colony in 184 B.c. and soon grew to be a flourish-

1 Thus de is very frequently used like Italian di; tote (v. 22) in- stead of omnes, Ital. tutti ; and mane (7.) in the sense of "to-morrow, Ital. domant.

ing town. It was recruited with a body of military colonists by Mark Antony, and after the disastrous earthquake of 31 3.c. re- ceived another accession from Augustus and took the title Colonia Julia Felix, Destroyed by Vitiges the Goth, it was restored and strengthened by Belisarius, and afterwards along with Ancona, Fano, Sinigaglia, and Rimini formed the Pentapolis Maritima. In the course of the 13th century Pesaro was sometimes under the govern- ment of the popes, sometimes under that of the emperors; but the Malatesta family, whieh first took root in the city about 1285, gradually became the real masters of the place. In 1445 they sold their rights to Francesco Sforza ; and in 1512, through the influence of Julius IJ., the Sforza were supplanted by his nephew Francesco Maria, duke of Urbino. Leo X. took the city away from Francesco and gave it to Lorenzo de' Medici ; but on Lorenzo's death Fran- cesco was restored and Pesaro became the ordinary residence of the dukes of Urbino till the death of Francesco Maria II. in 1631, when it reverted to the States of the Church. It has formed part of the present kingdom of Italy since 1860. Terenzio Manziani della Rovere, poet and statesman, was born at Pesaro in 1800.

PESHAWAR,! or PresHAwur, a district in the lieu- tenant-governorship of the Punjab, with an area of 2504 square miles, situated in the extreme north-western corner of British India, between 33° 50' and 34° 30' N. lat. and 71° 30' and 72° 50' E. long. Except on the south-east, where the Indus flows, it is encircled by mountains, and is bounded on the N. by the Mohmand, Utman Khel, and other hills, E. by the Indus, S. by the Khatak and Afridi Hills, and W. by the Khyber Mountains. It forms an important part of the frontier of the Punjab, being crossed by the great route from India to Cabul. The only hills of any consequence in the district are the Khatak Hills, a continuation of the Afridi Hills, which are themselves a spur of the great Sufed Koh range. The plain consists of alluvial deposits of silt and gravel, and throughout the whole valley its surface is studded with water-worn shingle or boulders. The district presents, especially in its western and central portions, an appearance of great beauty: it is covered with luxuriant vegetation, which is relieved by the meanderings of the numerous canals and set off by its bare stony surroundings and the far distant snowy peaks. Its rivers, all tributaries of the Indus, are the Cabul, Swat, Bara, Budni, and Ludnai. The district is naturally fertile and well watered, and the valley is entirely drained by the Cabul river. The temperature ranges from a

minimum of 17° in February to a maximum of 137° in July. The average rainfall is about 14 inches.

According to the census of 1881 the population was 592,674, of whom 329,524 were males and 263,150 females. The people are mostly Afghans and almost entirely of the Moslem religion, no less than 546,117 being Mohammedans, while Hindus numbered only 39,321, Christians 4088, Sikhs 3103, and others 45. The largest tribe in the district is that of the Pathans, of whom in 1881 there were 276,656. The Moslem portion of the population is occupied chiefly in agriculture and the rearing of cattle, while the Hindus are engaged in trade as bankers, merchants, and shop- keepers. The prevailing languages are the Urdu and Pushtu.

Out of the total area of 2504 square miles 1414 are cultivated and 470 are returned as cultivable. The chief products are wheat, barley, maize, millet. Peshawar also produces some of the finest rice in the world, known as “ Bara rice,” named after the river by which the ground yielding it is irrigated. Since the district came into British possession its trade has increased considerably. The principal foreign markets with which it deals are Cabul and Bok- hara ; the imports from the former are chiefly silk, nuts and fruits, skins, timber, dyes, and spices, and from the latter gold bullion and gold thread, which go principally to Bombay. The exports consist mainly of piece goods, tea, fancy wares, sugar, salt, and spices. The chief manufactures are Peshawar scarves, celebrated throughout India for their fine texture and tasteful colouring, leather goods, cutlery, the preparation of snuff, and a great deal of broadcloth, The gross revenue of the district in 1882-83 was £95,931, of which the land revenue contributed £68,201.

Peshawar in 1881 had five towns with a population exceeding 5000, namely Peshawar (see below) ; Nowshera, 12,963; Tangi, 9037; Maira Parang, 8874; and Charsadda, 8363.

1 The division of this name comprises the three districts of Peshawar, Kohat, and Hazara, with an area of 8381 square miles. In 1881 it had a population of 1,181,289—males 649,509, females 531,780. By religion 1,101,095 were Moslems, 68,992 Hindus, 6724 Sikhs, 4390 Christians, and 88 others.

History.—The first authentic record of the tribes seated about Peshawar is in the time of Mahmud. What little is heard of them before then points to their being a bold and independent race, Buddhism was introduced into the district in the reign of Asoka, 263 B.c., and one of his rock edicts still exists. From the time of Sabuktagin, governor of Khorasan, in 978 a.D., who took possession of the country up to the Indus, Peshawar became the scene of fierce contests. Mahmud, his son, was the first Moslem conqueror of Hindustan, and succeeded in converting the Pathans to the Moham- medan faith ; and this tribe remained true to him in all his subse- quent engagements with the infidels. The last decisive battle of Mahmud with the Hindus was fought on the plains of Chach in Rawal Pindi, where he totally defeated Anang Pal, the last cham- pion of the Hindu creed and nationality in the north. For a century and more after Mahmud's death (1028) Peshawar continued to be a province of Ghazni; and under his numerous successors it acquired great importance, becoming the centre of their dominions, which were extended to Lahore. Timur's invasion of India at the close of the 13th century did not disturb the district or the tribes about it, but a century later the Khakhai Pathans, a body of roam- ing adventurers, invaded the district in three main clans—the Yusafzai, Gigianis, and Muhammadzai—and obtained permission from the Dilazaks, who then held it, to settle on a portion of their waste lands. Quarrelling with the Dilazaks, they routed them and swept them into the neighbouring district of Hazara. The Gigianis then settled in the fertile strip of land about the confluence of the Swat and the Cabul ; the Muhammadzai took Hashtnagar, and the Yusafzai the remainder of the country north of the Cabul river. For some time these tribes remained unmolested, but in 1519 Babar, fifteen years after his capture of Cabul, allied himself with the in- jured Dilazaks and subdued the Afghans of Peshawar. After his death in 1530 the country was the scene of constant feuds, which ended in the Dilazaks being completely ousted. The year 1553 marks the last immigration of Afghans into the district. In 1587 Akbar came to the throne. During the next three reigns the valley rendered an unwilling allegiance to the central authority, and in the reign of Aurangzeb the Pathans succeeded in freeing themselves from Mogul supremacy. In 1738 Nadir Shah held pos- session of the district, and under the succeeding Durani dynasty it was often the residence of the Cabul court.

On the death of Timur Shah in 1793 the throne was left to be contended for by his sons, whose adventurous enterprises and varied fortunes form a romantic page in Oriental history. In 1818 the Sikhs advanced into the valley and overran the whole district to the foot of the hills; and the country continued to be ravaged by them until it at last fell into their hands, when they ruled it with their usual severity. In 1848 the district became an integral portion of British India, and, except for its eonnexion with the mutiny in 1857, there is little else of importance to notice.

PESHAWAR, chief town in the above district, situated in 34° 2’ N. lat. and 71° 37’ E. long., is about 14 miles east of the Khyber Pass, and distant from Lahore 276 miles and from Cabul 190 miles. Its population in 1881 was 79,982 (50,322 males, 29,660 females). It is built on a plain 1068 feet above the sea, and is surrounded by a mud wall 10 feet high. Among the chief buildings of the town are the Ghor Khatri, originally a Buddhist monas- tery, afterwards rebuilt as a Hindu temple, and now used asa serai, Peshawar is commanded by a mud-fort to the north-west, built on the ruins of Bala Hissar; and it is well watered, and said to be one of the best-drained cities in the Punjab.

PESSIMISM is a word of very modern coinage, employed to denote a mode of looking at and estimating the world, and especially human life, which is antithetical to the estimate designated by the term (a much older one) “Optimism.” Both terms have a genetal as well as a special application. In their non-technical usage they denote a composite and ill-defined attitude of mind which gives preponderating ‘importance to the good or to the evil, to the joys or to the sorrows, respectively, in the course of experience. The optimist sees everything in couleur de rose ; the pessimist always turns up the seamy side of things. But in their special and technical employment, optimism and pessimism denote specific theories elaborated by philo- sophers,—the former to show that the world is the work of an author of infinite goodness and wisdom, and is, all things considered, conducive to the happiness of its sentient life; the latter, that existence, when summed up, has an

| | |

tural t in- ictive n.

sthods relief.

Pes s § Ts M

enormous surplus of pain over pleasure, and that man in particular, recognizing this fact, can find real good only by abnegation and self-sacrifice. As a speculative theory optimism is chiefly associated with the 7héodicée of Leib- nitz (1710), while pessimism is the work of Schopenhauer (Die Welt als Wille und Vorstellung, 1st ed. 1819) and Von Hartmann (Philosophie des Unbewussten, 1st ed. 1869). In either case, however, the modern doctrines have their pre- decessors. The Stoics and the Neoplatonists were earlier labourers in the cause of optimism, in their attempt to exhibit the adaptations in nature for the welfare of its supreme product man. And in the metaphysical dogmas of Brahmanism, as well as in the practical philosophy of the Buddhists, the creed of the modern pessimist, that the world is vanity and life only sorrow, is found preluded with startling sameness of tone.

Though later as a philosophical creed in the European world, pessimism is far earlier than optimism as a mood of feeling in mankind at large. The ordinary human being, so long as he is engrossed with action and identified with his immediate present, is neither optimist nor pessimist. But in proportion as reflexion awakens—as the fulness of life and vigour of will give place to the exhaustion of age or to brooding thoughtfulness—there comes a sense of doubt as to the value of the aims on which energy is spent and as to the issue of the struggle with nature. It is failure that excites meditation: the obvious disproportion between desire and attainment impresses the poet and thinker, as they scan the page of human life, with the pre- dominant darkness of the record. The complaint is heard from every land and in every language that the days of man are few and evil, that the best lot of all is not to be born at all, and next in order is the fate of those cut off by early death. Even the great king himself (says Socrates in the Apology, xxxii.), far less any private man, as he reviews the course of his past life, cannot point to any better or happier time than a night of dreamless sleep ; and Byron bids us—

‘Count o’er the joys thine hours have seen, Count o’er thy days from anguish free, And know, whatever thou hast been, Tis something better not

to be.”

Inareligious form this pessimism appears as a belief that man is a creature at the mercy of more potent agents, to whom his wishes and fears are of slight importance. Called into existence by instrumentalities over which he has no control, he is involved in a lifelong conflict with forces, natural and supernatural, which work out their inevitable issues with utter indifference to his weal or woe. The wheels of the universe are deaf to the cry of human hearts. There is a hopeless sense of inequality in the struggle between the petty self-centred will of man and the capri- cious and irresistible forces of nature.

This natural and instinctive pessimism is contempo- raneous with the non-theistic religions of the world,—with all the forms of nature-worship, from the grossest and most trivial polytheism to the abstrusest schemes of naturalistic pantheism. In such a state of belief man tries to obtain relief from the burden of troubles in various ways. There is first of all the vulgar method of adulation and sacrifice. The powers of the unknown which lie ready to thwart the plans of man, and which he conceives in the likeness of beings with vaster forces but with passions and susceptt- bilities like his own, may be bribed by gifts or placated by flattery. Hence the common practices of superstitious worship. A second means of escape from the burden of life is given by what may be called Epicureanism. While not denying the divine, it explains away the gods of popular religion, and at the same time rejects the attempt to trans- form the idea of necessary connexion from a principle for

the explanation of phenomena into a controlling agency at the summit of the universe. Within the limits fixed by his natural conditions it represents man as free to work out his own welfare without interference from superior powers. But it is forced to admit that the happiness which man can obtain is after all only negative,—all plea- sure is but the withdrawal of pain, and the utmost range of pleasure lies in varying the methods of such deliverance. Epicureanism is pessimistic; but it is an egoistic pessimism which is content to aim at the maximum of painlessness for the individual, and which

ignores the metaphysics of universal pain and of universal relief from that pain.

The third method of relief from the troubles of existence Buddh- has a closer analogy with the pessimism of modern times, istic It is the Buddhism of the East. Buddhism, whatever be a

the uncertainty attaching to its founder's personal story, is to all intents a shoot which has been cut off from the main tree of Brahmanism. Its theory rests on the metaphysics of the Brahmanical schools; its scheme of life is one out of the many phases of Hindu asceticism. Buddhism left the parent stock of Hindu religion at a time when the metaphysicians had carried up the polytheism of their country into a unified pantheism, when the philosophy of the Upanishads had worked up the comparatively rude theology of the Vedic hymns into a compact doctrine. The fundamental dogma presented by this system is the contrast between the true self or permanent reality of the world and the changes and plurality of the phenomenal scene in which men live or seem to live. On the one hand is Brahma, or Atman: from one side, the universe, the All, and everything,—from another, the true self, the Ego, the absolute, whose name is the No, No, because no words can describe him, the very reality of reality. On the other hand is the world of growth and decay, of sorrow and death,—the world, as it was subsequently called, of illu- sion, Maya, where the semblance of firm reality is deceit- fully assumed by the phantoms of creation. And as in the universe, so is the contrast in the human soul. There is the unredeemed soul, which desire and action (the will in posse and in esse) hold fast in the bonds of changeable existence, in the mutations of metempsychosis ; there is also the redeemed soul, which by ascetic virtues, by renun- ciation of domestic ties, by the continued practice of self- denial and mortification, has found its way from the world of illusory semblances to its true and abiding self.

It is on some such conception of the world, in which over against Brahma in his eternal quiet there stands man suffering and yearning for relief, that Buddhism ultimately reposes. But, while the speculative theories of the Brah- mans put in the foreground the august mystery of the Alone, Buddha starts from the other side of the picture, from the actual experience of life.

The four truths of Buddhism, which are the foundation of its religious creed and the recurring burden of its teachings, leave the meta- physical basis out of sight. AI life is sorrow, says the first: birth, age, disease, death, is sorrow ; and the cause of this sorrow, adds the second truth, is the thirst which leads from birth to birth,—the thirst for pleasures, for existence, for power. The third is, that sorrow can only be removed by the complete annihilation of desire ; and the fourth prescribes the means of word and act forming the eight parts of the way which frees from sorrow. The practical need is everything; the theoretical basis, the Brahma, which the orthodox schools presented as the sole reality, is so completely lost sight of that the modern critics are at variance with each other as to how far the goal of Buddhist endeavour can be described as anything positive. That all life is pain is the one perpetual refrain of Buddh- ism. The search for pleasure is vain and ends in increased misery. But the true Buddhist does not allow the per-

ception of this fact to cause, still less to perpetuate, a feel- ing of melancholy. It only urges him to have compassion on his suffering brothers, and to look forward joyously to

the goal of release which he has set before himself.

For further details reference may be made to the article It is enough to say here that the chief point of Buddhist theory is to see in all apparent being only a process of becoming: events happen, nothing is :

on BUDDHISM.

the only permanence can be but the law of their occurrence. The cosmic philosophy of Buddha is like that of Heraclitus. “All things flow; nothing abides”;

of man is thereby rendered vain.

Brahma, not felicity in a higher and better world. It is,

to cast off the conditions which trammel existence, the consciousness which leads to desire and action, the body and all its appurtenances ; it is, to attain death in life, to have so mortified flesh and spirit that the individual can He has attained, when so perfected, what is called Nirvana, “the

no longer be in the ordinary sense said to exist.

land of peace where transitoriness finds rest.”

Religious recon- ciliation.

philosophy. It is in the belief of a moral God—a good and

Wise creator and governor of the universe—that the opti-

mistic problem and theory finds its chief origin. When the idea of God has been purged of its naturalism and identified with the ideal of wisdom, goodness, and justice, there soon arises for thinking minds the necessity of a “théodicée,”—a justification of providence. Can the evil and misery found upon earth, the disproportion between

merit and recompense, be explained on the hypothesis of

a wise and beneficent ruler in heaven? One of the most familiar and typical instances of such a feeling is given by the book of Job. In the later times of Israel, when the vigour of creative faith was undermined by a critical spirit, born of bitter fates and foreign influences, voices were heard, like those of the writer of Ecclesiastes, giving utter- ance to pessimistic doubt. The story of Job is another and more edifying presentation of the same theme. How, it is asked, can the misfortunes of the just man be har- monized with the idea of a righteous God? Is suffering the penalty of sin, and must virtue be always paid its wages in pleasure ?

The difficulty, it is evident, arises with the perception of the antagonism between the natural and the moral, and implies a desire to bridge over the gulf between them. With the gradually deepening conviction that the central principle of the universe is a moral principle, the need is felt for explaining the immorality (so to speak) of the natural laws, fo? reconciling the

unconditional imperative of the word of duty with the indifference to right and wrong displayed in the facts of life. Sometimes we are referred for answer to another world, which shall compen- sate for the mistakes of the present. At other times it is suggested that physical evil has the function of a moral discipline, that suffering teaches nobility, that misfortunes are blessings in disguise.

Leib- The optimism of Leibnitz is of a different cast, and goes nitz's op- more boldly to face the real difficulty of the situation. It timism. argues against the common estimate of moral and physical evil, and seeks to reduce them both to little more than privations of good,—to mere absence of good, to a defect rather than a blemish, to what is called metaphysical evil.

only this flux of everything serves to emphasize the fact that the happiness The end which Buddha seeks is the redemption of man from this toilsome world of birth and death. It is not absorption in the unity of

Before discussing the development of this pessimistic ethics in modern days, it remains to notice a fourth issue from the evil that is in the world. This view of life and of the universe is specially connected with Hebrew mono- theism and its later developments in Mohammedan as well as Christian doctrine under the potent stimulus of Greek

PESSIMISM

The world, it is admitted, is far from perfect, but it is as good as it could be made if all the good which it contains was to be realized. Like everything else, it is not free from the defects of its qualities. It is, we may be sure, the best of possible worlds. But this is far from saying that it is a good world. Ignorant as we are of the limits of what is possible, it is not for us to say that the quality of the best, under the given circumstances, is at all distin- guishable from what is really very bad. The defence of theism which Leibnitz thus undertook against the sceptical suggestions of Bayle is only the common argument that the work must be judged as a whole, that it is unfair to pronounce judgment on an isolated event or thing apart from the question how it is affected by its interdepend- ence. But, unfortunately, in the case before us, in the problem of the universe, we do not know the

whole, and can only grope our way tentatively from point to point, feebly endeavouring to forecast the plan of the total structure. ’

But Leibnitz goes farther than this assertion of inter. connexion or adaptation. It is the ultimate assumption of his argument that the forces of the universe are in the hands of a perfectly wise intelligence, that, as in man there is a rational power of initiation and guidance, so in the world as a macrocosm there is a primal reason which governs its movements and co-ordinates them to a desirable end. The actual phases of existence only carry out in palpable shape and successive or simultaneous manifesta- tions an ideal or rational plan, which is their original and sufficient reason. The world at large is somewhat of a machine, or a congeries of machines, which run down according to their own internal and innate conditions of existence ; but these machines are wound up by one supreme machinist, who has predetermined the aim and object of their combined movements. Thus the doctrine of the pre-established harmony, while on the one hand it is an apotheosis of logic by the emphasis it lays on the necessary causal interdependence of the several partial movements, is on the other hand, by its principle of suffi- cient reason—the principe du meilleur or de convenance—— a doctrine of teleology, whereby an ideal principle of de-sign interpolates the contingent and subordinates necessity to freedom. The world is not a mere group of causes and effects governed by the logic of contradiction and identity ; over and above the necessitarian logic is a mind which looks behind and before, and combines all events, not reck- lessly or necessarily, but in the bands of reciprocal subser- vience to the greatest good of which they admit.

In this argument Leibnitz is open to the criticism of Kant, that he has passed from a legitimate conception presiding over the synthesis of phenomena to the illegiti- mate idea of a self-subsistent and personal principle, which, far from being a mere ideal of complete synthesis, itself creates and predetermines that synthesis. To the logical scientist the phenomena are merely connected by a formal unity ; to the theist like Leibnitz this unity is identified with a cosmical mind, an intelligent power which regulates the evolution of things and subordinates them all to the fulfilment of its original plan. Leibnitz thus manipulates two ideas, the logical and the religious, as if they were interchangeable, though in reality they lie in different planes. The

reason which at one time is treated as an abstract principle of self-consistency is at another time clothed in the concrete mental life associated with it under its human aspects. Mere reason, says Aristotle, can initiate no change ; it neither chooses nor commands, but simply asserts. But human reason is always in the long- Tun wrapped up with some aim, is always (in the technical sense) practical, ‘and only for moments of abstraction ever merely theoretical. ‘Thus the reagon in the universe was

spoken of as God, and conceived anthropomorphically after the pattern of human personality.

The optimism of Leibnitz found its well-sounding but somewhat misleading phrase that all is for the best in this best of possible worlds bitterly satirized in Voltaire’s Candide, and painfully commented upon by the earthquake of Lisbon. But the real object of the Frenchman’s wit was the baser optimism of the age which sheltered its vulgar features under the mask of the Leibnitian Théodicée, An easy-going generation had settled down in the pleas- ing faith that their barns were filled with good things for many years, and that they might eat, drink, and be merry. The creed found in England a prophet of solemn pomp in Pope, whose Lssay on Man has fixed in pregnant lines the main half-truths of the Leibnitian theory, which the poet had probably learned from Bolingbroke. The same optimism appears in Shaftesbury (“’Tis good which is predominant”), and shows its presence in Paley. Some opposition to the current eudzemonism is found in the well-weighed and all but sceptical judgments pronounced by Butler, as well as in the cynical pessimism that tried to raise its voice in Mandeville. But the great instance against the comfortable view of life is the striking passage which Hume in his Dialogues concerning Natural Religion has put in the mouth of Demea, beginning ‘The whole earth, believe me, Philo, is cursed and polluted. A _per- petual war is kindled amongst all living creatures,” &c.

In Germany, under the head of Natural Theology, the ordinary optimism flourished amain. The whole range of

thus taught bore fruit. At first indeed idealism with its optimistic interpretations returned. The double-faced

dictum of Hegel, that the real is the rational and the Hegel's rational the real, was often understood to justify the prin- ideal op- The net of Hegelian !™s™.

ciple that, whatever is, is right. thought seemed to grasp everything; everything fell as it were naturally into its place, and seemed to be justified by the symmetry of its position in the logical evolution. For in idealism we find the true home of optimism. The world as experienced in sense and feeling is full of discords and defects, and the more we abstract each part of the whole into its "beggarly elements," the greater seems the weakness and the triviality. But, when we rise in thought to the contemplation of the unity and order, these real discords pale before the spectacle of ideal harmony. The formal symmetry carries the day. The corpse may be hideous and yet the theory of the anatomist has its beauty. The sorrows of the hero do not make impossible the plea- sure of the spectator in the drama. Just as the hardships long ago endured are sweet to remembrance, so the indi- vidual sufferings are lost in the conception of the universal ends they subserved. The real pain is compatible with a formal pleasure ; reason can find commendable and good what is torment to flesh and blood.

But, while the life-work of Hegel had been to show that at bottom the principle of being and the principle of thought were the same, that nature and history were the incarna- tions of reason, the succeeding philosophy of Schopenhauer . reverted to the distinction of Kant, which it emphasized,

between thought and existence. Schopenhauer dethroned Schopen- reason and claimed to have discovered the real root of that at a being which we know as an idea. This root of existence V¥) the

is what he called Will. The source of the reality which aie

creation was ransacked to show how well man had been provided for by God. The poetry of Brockes (the translator of Pope) is full of the theme,— the laudation of the many gifts we owe to Providence, of the multifarious uses to

which each animal and plant can be put. It is an anthro- pocentric optimism which thus makes man's welfare the main end of the creation, and which, above all, finds that welfare in what we eat and drink and wherewithal we are clothed. The good which Leibnitz had spoken of was understood as material prosperity, comfort, happiness. God's goodness was measured by the amount of worldly wellbeing which He bestows upon us.

The great Kant, as late as 1759, when he printed a – short sketch On Optimism, was still inclined to keep terms with this base caricature of a great theory, and spoke with full agreement of that theory itself. But here as elsewhere Hume's influence was potent upon him, and in a paper published in 1791 (On the Failure of all Philosophical Attempts in Theodicy) he had altered his tone. Our intelli- gence, he argues, is absolutely powerless to discover the proportion in which the world, at least as known to us in experience, stands to the supreme wisdom. And to the grounds adduced to prove that the pleasures of life far exceed its pains his reply is: take a man of sound mind, who has lived long enough and thought enough on the value of life to be able to form a judgment on the subject, and ask him whether he would like to play out the game of life once more (not on the same terms, but) on any terms he pleases, be it only in this terrestrial world of ours, and not in fairy land. In one direction indeed Kant may be called optimist (or at least meliorist),—in his belief in the ample possibilities of moral and political improvement, and in his enthusiastic hopes for the cessation of some chief causes of human misery.

But in one way Kant had laid the axe to the chief root of optimism. That root is the utilitarian or eudemonistic theory of conduct,—the theory which seeks to explain morality away into a sort of magnified selfishness, and regards the authority of moral rules as due to their origin in counsels of prudence. The moral law, said Kant, is the one clear utterance of the Absolute. And the lesson

we cognize——the secret essence which is objectified in the forms of the universe as it presents itself to our concep- tions—is Will. By this Will he meant a blind but irre- sistible effort to exist, a craving of inexpugnable strength towards life and objective being, an unconscious lusting after the pleasure of manifesting itself as something acting here and now. It is

something less than Will, as we know will, and yet something more than force. Under every known kind of actions and phenomena in space-and-time— phenomena, known by their reciprocal relations—there is an unknown but felt something, an endless, aimless, limitless struggle to be upraised into the light of existence. This ultimate basis of will-foree we must assume as the fact presupposed by all specific causal explanations. But in its generic basis the Will has no definite aim; it is the will to be everything in general and nothing in particular,— the will to be, to do, to act. End or purpose supervenes only with the rise of consciousness. Intelligence comes forward at first as a mere organ in the service of the Will; it is only a means for the preservation of the individual and the species. It is observable first in the animal, where the purely instinctive stimuli fail to procure sufficient material for subsistence, where the food has to be selected, and the motions of the animal are accordingly dependent on motives, 7.e., on conceptions of objects to be attained. It is this need which occasions the development of the brain ; with the brain intelligence rises upon the scene ; and thus the world now comes to see itself, not in its reality, but in its phenomenal objectification, as the realm of causes and effects in the element of space and time. This conscious knowledge, which at first consists merely in momentary and individual perceptions, attains higher powers, as abstract and general reason, by the aid of speech.

Now intelligence, which originally came with the forma- tion of brain-tissue as a mere tool of the Will in the more complex forms of its objectification, may rise at length, according to Schopenhauer, to be the liberator of the

human race from the restless tyrant which works in them now, as it erewhile brought them to the birth. For, firstly, knowledge in its own character emancipates ; it lets its possessor know that he suffers and why he suffers. Such is the first prerogative of reason. But, secondly, in the occasional intervals when the storm of Will is laid to rest, the mind, instead of striving in the interests of practical intelligence to detect the causal relations of things, can concentrate itself exclusively on a single isolated object. A

transformation is thus accomplished whereby the object, ceasing to be a mere particular, becomes the type-idea, the

Will and eternal form, the generic and adequate embodiment of

Will in a special grade; while, on the other hand, the in- dividual who has become absorbed in such contemplation is no longer a mere individual, but has become the “ will- less, painless, timeless subject of knowledge.” It is this power of rising above the prosaic requirements which science gratifies, of seeing the permanent and one reality in the dependent and disunited phenomena of the particu- lars, which what we call Art imitates by production. The artist produces the eternal types which the blind Will only realizes in many imperfect and particular adumbrations ; he conquers nature by fixing in a single image the traits which constitute the true and permanent meaning con- fusedly presented by her in many exemplars. For the mind which can see that idea in the natural forms, or which beholds it in the works of art, for him who contem- plates without reference to the Will, “the wheel of Ixion stands still; freed from the prison-house of blind desire, he enjoys the sabbath of esthetic beatitude.”

PHESs IM ITS

“And,” adds Schopenhauer (§ 67), “I think I may assume that along with the highest manifestation of will the feebler counterpart of it in the animal kingdom would also dis. appear.” Man, by ascetic mortification of the will, and by sanctity of beneficence, becomes the redeemer even of the rest of the animated creation.

The contrast between nature and grace, between the physical and the moral, the life of the flesh and the life of the spirit, stands out in these outlines as the central doctrine of pessimism. It is in essentials the same doctrine which was preached by Buddha, which is put into the mouth of Socrates in the Phedo (philosophy is a rehearsal of death : perernpa Savdrov) ; it is the doctrine which stands indelible in the early archives of Christianity, and was proclaimed as the better and more excellent way by myriads of the noblest Christian teachers for more than ten centuries of the church. The pessimistic ethics of Schopenhauer casts aside the feeble compromises by which it is alternately asserted that morality makes for happiness and happiness — is morality ; it rejects the postulates by which Kant tried to lighten for human nature the burden of imperative duty; it goes behind the

social sanctions which see in good conduct acts subservient to the good of a human

community. In pessimistic ethics—and the pessimism of -—

Schopenhauer has essentially an ethical aim—we have the wreck left on the wastes of time by Hegelianism. Hegel- ianism had taught, or seemed to teach, that God was in the beginning by Himself as a Logos, or self-evolving idea, which uttered itself in the unconscious forms of nature, till in the conscious spirit of man He gradually realized Him-

Schopen- But the relief obtained in art is only for blessed | self in moral and intellectual life, in art and religion. — moments. Perennial consolation can be found only in the | Schopenhauer stripped this cycle of its first period. There

ethical life, and in an ethics of asceticism and self-sacrifice. True life begins only when we have learnt that happiness is impossible by means of gratifying the cravings of desire. Each satisfaction of the will is only a starting-point for fresh effort ; the achievement of the desired object sug- gests a new want. “Alles Leben ist Leiden.” At every point desires are thwarted ; even when they gain their end the satisfaction is merely negative. The weary Titan of humanity knows no repose ; his feeble pleasures are drops in a sea of pain. Thus the central principle of pessimism asserts that in the order of nature, 7.e., so long as the will to live remains unbroken, happiness in the true sense is impossible, Life as life necessarily involves misery. No doubt the man of the world may turn round and declare that notwithstanding this he means to gather the rose without the thorn. Undismayed by the analysis of the consequences involved in will, he affirms the will to life. Adopting the principles of the Cyrenaic hedonists, he closes his eyes to far-reaching eventualities and lives in the moment ; he turns life in every portion into art ; he revels in the inspiring sense of action without care for past obli- gations and future anxieties. It is otherwise with the man who has surveyed all the issues of things, who looks at the net result of life as a whole and in all individuals, For him it isa duty to deny and abjure this will to life. He must, in other words, renounce the works of egoism and of injustice. He must see through the illusion of the principium individuationis, must recognize that his very self, his will, is identical in

essence with every creature, even with the suffering. When he has done this, and is in love and sympathy with all around him, “the veil of Maya” has for him become transparent. In every way he proceeds (over and above cultivating in active love com- passion for others) to deny the exercise of the will to life in his individual case, in his own body. He will, above all, according to Schopenhauer, perpetually keep the vow of chastity ; he will by fasting and penance so mortify his body that the will to life shall be utterly broken in him.

was no idea, no logical machinery, at the basis of things; nature began out of a blind impulse; and it was only in man’s intelligence that the vague longing of the heaving world knew itself to be. But that intelligence has for its supreme aim—not, as in Hegel, to enter into and carry on the great process which is the absolute, but—to deny its creator and annihilate the principle of being. The world of Will, in its process of objectification, has thus given birth to a child which in the fulness of time will destroy the womb that bore it.

It will be apparent that in Schopenhauer’s system we can distinguish two parts,—the first, the doctrine of the positivity of pain, and that life is always and only pain; the second, the ethical condemnation of the principle of such a world, and the method for correcting the evil which it had introduced. In the latter lies his chief and charac- teristic achievement,—in what we may call his metaphysic of ethics. Man by morality (ascetical morality) is to be the redeemer of the world. In this conviction Schopen- hauer shows himself the descendant of the metaphysical systems of the past, which find in man the key to the mystery of the universe. It is a strange and a weary way of redemption which he delineates; the cross is heavier than humanity seems able to bear. Yet the suggestion to deliver ourselves shows that the old belief in human spontaneity, in the primacy of the moral principle, in the possibility of noble deeds and of a victory over egoism, was still vigorous in his mind. Another pessimism neglects this ethical element altogether. To this ignoble pessimism man is in truth only an animal like the rest, and the distinction on which he prides himself—his moral nature—is but a confused and illusory product of simpler animal experiences. He has knowledge of wider range, it is true ; but knowledge is powerless to change his nature. His acts in every case are necessarily determined ; his fancied

freedom is found on examination to be no whit more spon- taneous than the fall of the unsupported stone. The necessitarianism of evolution did away with the independ-

fees EMITS w

ent existence of morality, and reduced it to conventional stereotyping of natural symbols, with forgetfulness and misinterpretation of their meaning and applications.

To an age so minded the consolations of pessimism sounded faint and unreal. They had lost the old wot ora, —the optimistic creed that man was the undisputed head of creation. They saw themselves no longer a select race, favourites of God, but as engaged in the struggle for life with thousands of other species. The rdle of saviour of the world was not for them. And so, turning a deaf ear to the high words of Schopenhauer, they sought easier con- solations in the common and casual pursuits and pleasures in the world ; they determined to make the best of this vale of tears,—even in Pandemonium there might be shady spots and cool retreats. A few spirits who had drunk more deeply at the wells of suffering, and who were alike without the mental energy of Schopenhauer and the comfortable inconstancy of the mass of men, could not rise beyond the ever-present sense of the emptiness and in- felicitv of life. There are many such types in literature ; but perhaps no more perfect expression has been given to the strange abysmal melancholy of a withered life than by

with no unskilful or incompetent hand the vague and in- coherent tendencies of the cultivated masses. The world which has lost hold of, and perhaps broken with, the faith of its fathers is on the look-out for a “ Weltanschauung ” ; it wants to know the metaphysical inferences to be gathered from the recent advances of scientific theory. Not merely had Darwinism, as may be seen from the character of Hackel’s Natural History of Creation, caught the public ear more widely in Germany than in England, but the deductions from its principles had been carried to far greater lengths. Amid the decay of distinctively Chris- tian beliefs, and even of theism, the doctrine of pessimism attracted a sort of religious fervour. The

prevalent sense of dissatisfaction and baffled endeavour was met by a theory that the principle of the universe was radically per- verse, and could not be amended. And, if it be urged that it is difficult to believe in the genuineness of a pes- simism when its professors take their ease and mirthfully jeer the stranger who expected to find people not clad in soft raiment nor dwelling in kings' houses, it may be replied that pessimism is not the only temporizing creed. The moral indignation (Hntriistungs-Pessimismus) of a

tee the Italian poet-scholar Leopardi. At one time dallying | Carlyle or a Juvenal, which pours its vials of scorn on the perdis lovingly with the idea of death, at another finding only | selfish meanness of mankind, and the churchly exhibition in deception and illusion in love, liberty, progress, and all | of the sores and frailties of human flesh and blood in

human ideals, and almost always with irony, bitterness, and hopelessness living in the sense of an inexorable destiny, a malign nature, which calmly motions man to

which books like the De Contemptu Mundi of Innocent IIT. revel, alike overshoot their mark and leave the world un- convinced of its nothingness.

destruction, Leopardi presents pessimism in its naked It is out of place here to enter into any lengthened ex- Von

terrors. For him there are no consolations, either base or | position of Hartmann's metaphysics. This world, accord- ae noble. Man is at the mercy of a pitiless nature ; he must | ing to him, is the work of an Unconscious, a being which 7 vy) :

endure a thousand deaths daily. This mood of Leopardi's, | is at once will and intelligence,—a will urging to be and physics.

Various pessim- istic

writers,

however he himself protested against the suggestion, was unquestionably to a main extent due to the tremendous disproportion in which his mental and esthetic nature stood to the circumstances of his life, and not a little to the general political condition of his country.

When the first edition of Schopenhauer's great work appeared in 1819 it did not attract much immediate attention. Pessimism was in the air: the Romantic school in Germany, and especially Heine and Lenau, Byron in England, and Chateaubriand in France,—not to mention many other names, —all in their several ways gave expression to the "Weltschmerz." Yet it was not till 1844 that a second and much enlarged edition of the work appeared, followed by a third in 1859, By this time the doctrines of Schopenhauer had found many enthusiastic followers, and a flood of literary works poured from the press in criticism or support of them. With the year 1866 the title " Pessimism" began to show itself in books which discuss his views. And in 1869 appeared the Philosophy of the Unconscious, by E. von Hartmann. The popularity of this work was enormous. In the ten years which elapsed between its publication and that of Hartmann's next systematic work (The Phenomenology of the Moral Con- sciousness) it had run through eight editions. The lesser works of Hartmann, his articles in reviews, the pamphlets by friends and opponents during the last fifteen years, are truly named legion. The question "Is life worth living?" has become a question of the day, to which the problems of socialism, liberalism, and religion contribute their quota. The novels of Turgenieff and Sacher-Masoch are full of the ideas of Schopenhauer's pessimism.

Hartmann's first work was written when its author was twenty-five. It bears traces of the paradox and exaggera- tion which sometimes go with youthful talent, and occa- sionally pays the tribute of imitation to the naturalistic pruriency and sensationalism of the contemporary novel. The style is cumbersome and pretentious. And yet its popularity proves that its author has the faculty of directing

to do somewhat and an intelligence which adapts means to ends. But the will is only instinct, and the intelligence is the unconscious reason which guides the somnambulist or the clairvoyant. Thus there is wisdom in the frame of the world, but the original resolution to exist was the work of a

blind will. Reason did not prompt the initial act, yet at every movement towards existence an unconscious reason effectively correlates the elements into united action. The various individuals seem indeed to be acting of them- selves: they pursue aims of their own; but they are only puppets in the hand of nature, the unconscious intelligence and will. Apparently, there are many agents, each in some degree independent ; really, there is only one source of action, the union of will and idea in instinctive adapta- tion and unwitting design.

With man at length consciousness awakes, and the pos- sibility is laid for a new relation between the two elements in the universal principle. Knowledge, however, 1s not an end in itself; it is not enough to know the process of the world. The consciousness which is generated at length by the unconscious reason out of the workings of will has its function marked out for it beforehand by its uncon- scious author. Its final purpose is to revoke the effects of that irrational step by which the unconscious will in its eagerness to exist dragged the idea with it in its service. The hour of vengeance may come some day. The intelli- gence which has become conscious in man may at length induce his will to take the backward step, to retire nto non-existence even as it erewhile rose into existence. In that day when the force of will has been mainly accumu- lated in the province where intelligence prevails, it is prob- able that a successful act of suppression of the will to life on the part of human reason vould entail the utter prostration and annihilation of the will to life throughout the universe. By the act of its intelligent portion, in which the major part both of the cosmical will and intelli- gence has been gradually accumulated, the world, as a whole, will commit suicide.

XVIII. — 87

Von Hart- mann’s ethics.

Critical remarks,

690

But Hartmann is not merely a metaphysician ; he pro- poses to supply inductive proof for his propositions. The question of the preponderance of

pleasure or pain in the world is to be worked out by observation of facts and summation of figures. So far differing from Schopenhauer, he admits the positivity of pleasure, but maintains nevertheless that pleasure and pain are representable by quantities of the same denomination, prefaced respectively by the plus or minus sign. When the accounts of debt and credit are drawn out, it appears that the balance is enormously on the side of pain. To him who has once perceived the surplus of pain it is an obvious duty to extinguish the source whence sprang the unmitigated evil. Yet inankind in the past has shrunk from the acceptance of this conclusion, and sought refuge in three successive illusions: (1) the naive illusion of the natural mind that happiness is to be found in this present world; (2) the illusion that happiness, though a failure here, will be realized in the world beyond the grave; (3) the illusion which puts its hopes on the amelioration of humanity in the future history of the world. One after another these illusions are shown to be vanity. A little taste of pleasure, amid the insipidity and bitterness of life, is snatched by a select few from the consolations of art and science. But at last, as wisdom grows and the hopeless monotony of grief is more acutely felt by the race, humanity will rise

up boldly to the last great act of despairing suicide, and.

reduce the unconscious to its primeval nullity.

If we pass from this grandiose drama of the birth and destruction of the universe to consider the ethical doctrine which Hartmann supposes himself to base upon his meta- physical theory, we find ourselves on safer ground. For, apart from the method by which he reaches it, his moral principle is not very different from the general view on such subjects. The basis of morality in his theory is the relation of the individual consciousness to the Absolute in which consists its true being. It is in this ultimate identity of the individual with the All-one—not merely in the preservation of his phenomenal welfare, or of the

welfare of the society he belongs to, or the furtherance.

of some one ideal good—that the obligation to be moral is to be sought. On the other hand, there is nowhere in the universe a surplus of pleasure; and therefore the moral agent cannot either here or elsewhere look for happi-

ness in a positive sense as the reward of his virtue. Ego- ism of every range —from the more materialistic to the more religious pleasures—is incompatible with genuine virtue. The aim of morality is the redemption of the whole world from the evil into which its initial act has plunged it. And in this act of redemption—the result of which will not be joy, but rest, the quietude of the universe—man by his intelligence and will is the main worker, the fellow-worker of the Absolute; it is by him that God works out the redemption of himself and of the universe. ‘‘ Real existence,” so closes the Phenomenology of the Moral Consciousness, “is the incarnation of the God- head ; the world-process is the story of the Passion of the God who has become flesh, and at the same time the way to the redemption of Him who is crucified in the flesh; but morality is the co-operation towards shortening this way of suffering and redemption.”

It would be vain to criticize in detail these speculations, out of which a few principal points have been adduced, and which, besides being in themselves vague, are pliable in the hands of their author. But a few remarks may be made on some main issues involved in the dispute. It may be admitted in the first place that the doctrine of the origin of existence in an a-logical principle is but an extra- vagant way of stating that the intelligence when it awakes to consciousness finds itself in presence of another world of

nature and custom which seems irrational and antagonistic —a world which is outside of us and seems to mock our puny individual efforts for its improvement. Secondly, it may be admitted that there is no evidence for the thesis that the world was intended to suit the convenience of man, or of any species whatever. As a matter of fact, there is abundance of misery in the world. But, quite apart from the reducibility of the amount by the application of intelligent means, it seems certain that no attempt to draw up a balance-sheet of absolute cosmic misery or hap- piness is ever likely to be successful. It is as irrational to pronounce this to be the worst of all possible worlds as the best. ‘The superlatives employed in the terms “ optimism ” and “pessimism” betray a passionate estimate of things. Life, one has said, would be tolerable but for its pleasures. Even those who, like Leopardi, have declared themselves in love with death, show, by still electing to live,

that life has something not measurable by pleasures, yet chosen even amid mental tortures and extreme ill-health. As Aristotle said long ago, we are not unbiassed judges in re Pleasure v. Pain. Thirdly, if it were worth while, it might be urged that the main terms of the pessimists are ex- — tremely vague. The “ Will” and the “ Unconscious” can- not be tied down to a definite meaning without losing their power ; the contrast between the positivity and negativity of pleasure and pain shows an ignorance of logic; and, above all, the habit of transferring the terms of religion to express what are supposed to be analogous ideas in pessimistic metaphysics is misleading.

The pessimistic theories of modern times are in part a commendable protest against the common compromises which slur over the antithesis between the moral and the natural. They show tolerably conclusively that the world is not a felicific institution, and that he who makes happi- ness the aim of his life is on the wrong tack. But, when they proceed to dogmatize that existence has a root of bitterness and life is a burden of pain, they fall into the common error of exaggerating a statement relatively true into an absolute principle. You cannot tell if life is worth living, so long as life is held to be the sum or difference of pains and pleasures. If pains and pleasures were only and always such, the argument might be admitted ; if they were permanent real entities, not liable to be transformed into each other, not constantly associated in the same act, it might be possible to treat them as ultimate and irreversible standards for our estimate of life and the guidance of our conduct. If pleasure and pain are unequally and unfairly distributed, it is probable that this is a fault which human agency can cure to an unspeakable degree, quite without the desperate remedy of self-torture or cosmic suicide. If pessimism can teach the world that the highest reward of virtue is self-respect, and that there is no pleasure available anywhere to bribe us to be good, it has done well. It has also done well if it points out the barriers to happiness in this world, so long as these barriers prevent true life and can be removed by wise methods. But in the meanwhile, till the burden of existence has become universally unbear- able, it may be well to remember that we shall be as likely to benefit the Absolute by doing our work well as by macerating ourselves, and that the sum of existence is a big thing, of which it were rash to predicate either that it is altogether and supremely good or altogether and supremely bad.

The works on pessimism have been numerous lately. Most of them, however, deal with it mainly in connexion with the two German philosophers, and of these several treat exclusively of the special metaphysical and psychological theories. For Buddhism, see BUDDHISM, vol. iv. p. 424 sg., and also Oldenberg's Buddha (1881), since translated into English. An account of Schopen-

hauer was given by R. Adamson in Mind for 1876, and in Miss Zimmern's Life of Schopenhauer (1876) ; the first account of Hart-

mann to English readers was given in an article by E. Wallace in the Westminster Review (1876). In 1877 there was published a full discussion of the subject by J. Sully, Pessimism: a History and a Criticism. There are chapters on the question in many recent works ; among the latest Tulloch, Modern Theories in Philosophy and Religion (1884). In France we have Ribot, Schopenhauer (1874) ; Caro, Le Pessimisme au XIX* Siéele (1878), who gives an account of Leopardi, Schopenhauer, Hartmann. In Italian may be mentioned Barzelotti, Ii pessimismo dello Schopenhauer (1878). The books published in Germany are countless, ¢.9., Diihring, Der Werth des Lebens (1865); Bahnsen, Zur Philosophie der Geschichte (1872) and Pessimisten-Brevier (1879); Hartmann, Philosophische Abhandlungen (1872); Meyer, Weitelend uw. Weltschmerz (1872); Taubert, Der Pessimismus und seine Gegner (1873) ; Volkelt, Das Unbewusste u. der Pessimismus (1878); E. Pfleiderer, Der Moderne Pessimismus (1875); Gass, Optimismus u. Pessimismus (1876) ; Huber, Der Pessimismus (1876); Rehmke, Die Philosophie des W eilt- schmerzes (1876); Sommer, Der Pessimismus und die Sittenlehre (1883) ; Pliimacher, Der Pessimismus in Vergangenheit u. Gegenwart, gesch. w. kritisch. (1884). There is a list of books on the subject up to 1880 in Laban's Schopenhauer Litteratur. For LEOPARDI, see vol, xiv. p. 464 sg. Schopenhauer's Welt als Wille und Vorstellung is in course of translation by Haldane and Kemp (vol. i., 1883) ; and Hartmann's Philosophie des Unbewussten has becn translated by W. Coupland, 3 vols. (1883). (W. W.)

PESSINUS, or Prstnus (Ilecowots, Ieowots), an ancient city of Galatia in Asia Minor, situated on the southern slope of Mount Dindymus. It stood on

the left bank of the river Sangarius, about 150 stadia (17 miles) from its source, and 16 miles south of Germa on the road from Ancyra to Amorium. It was the capital of the Tolistobogii and the chief commercial city of the district. It was famous for its worship of the mother of the gods (Cybele), who here went by the name of Agdistis. Her priests were anciently princes as well, but in the time of Strabo (1st century B.c.) their privileges were much diminished. The kings of Pergamum built a new temple adorned with porticos of white marble. The image of the goddess, a stone (or piece of wood) said to have fallen from heaven, was taken to Rome in 204 B.c., in compliance with an oracle in the Sibylline books to the effect that the foreign foe could be driven from Italy if the Idzan Mother (Cybele) were brought from Pessinus to Rome. But the goddess continued to be worshipped in her old home as well as at Rome ; her priests, the Galli, went out to meet Manlius on his march in 189 B.c., and ata later age the temple was visited by Julian the Apostate. In the division of the empire under Constantine, Pessinus was made the capital of the province Galatia Salutaris. _ It was also the seat of a metropolitan bishopric. After the 6th century the town disappears from history. The Tuins discovered by Texier occupy three hills near the village of Bala-Hissar, 9 or 10 miles south-east of Sevri- Hissar. They include a theatre in partial preservation and numerous fragments of marble columns, friezes, &c. The modern town of Sevri-Hissar is built at the height of about 3000 feet on the southern base of a steep granite rock, half-way up which are the ruins of a castle.

PESTALOZZI, Jonann Hernricn (1746-1827). See Epucartion, vol. vii. p. 677.

PESTH, the chief town of Hungary and the second of the Austrian-Hungarian monarchy, is situated on the left bank of the Danube, 140 miles to the south-east of Vienna, in 47° 29’ 10” N. lat. and 19° 2’56” E. long. Since 1873 it has formed one municipality with Bupa (g.v.) on the opposite bank, and the joint city, officially styled Buda- pest (Ger. Pest-Ofen), is the capital of Hungary, the second residence of the Austrian emperor, the seat of the Hungarian ministry, diet, and supreme courts, and the headquarters of the commander of the Honvéds or Hun- garian landwehr.

The imposing size of the Danube, here somewhat wider than the Thames at London, and the sharp contrast of the two banks, place Budapest among the most finely-situated

PiS 691

of the larger towns of Europe. On the one side is a flat sandy plain in which lies Pesth, modern of aspect, regularly laid out, and presenting a long frontage of handsome white buildings to the river. On the other the ancient town of Buda straggles capriciously over a series of small and steep hills, commanded by the fortress and the Blocksberg, and backed by spurs of the vine-clad mountains beyond. The Danube is crossed by three bridges; the fine suspension bridge constructed by the brothers Clark in 1842-49, at a cost of £440,000; the iron Margarethenbriicke, a little farther up, dating from 1872-76; and a long railway bridge at the lower end of the town.

Budapest is divided into ten municipal districts, three of which are on the right bank and belong to Buda. The nucleus of the town on the left bank 1s 1ormed by the inner town or old Pesth on the Danube, in a semicircle round which lie the districts of Leopoldstadt, Theresien- stadt, Elisabethstadt, Josephstadt, and Franzstadt, while

~

| «

oly

a WN

WN

2

«

=<

> “

- 2

io

2 = ~ = ~ – < 3

©,

Plan of Pesth.

1. New Building. 7. Town House. 13. Academy of Music. 2. Academy. 8. National Museum. 14. Exhibition.

3. Exchange, 9. National Theatre. 15. Ludoviceum.

4. Redoute. 10. Custom House. 16. Synagogue.

5. Carl’s Barracks. 11. Opera House. 17. Post Office.

6. Parish Church. 12. Leopold Church. 18. Palace.

19, Arsenal.

to the east of these is the outer district of Steinbruch. Perhaps the most attractive part of Pesth is the line of broad quays on the Danube, which extend for a distance of 24 miles, from the Margarethenbriicke to the custom- house, and are lined with imposing white buildings. The inner town, part of which is somewhat irregularly built, is separated from the other quarters by a ring of spacious boulevards on the site of the old wall, and the lines of demarcation between the different districts also consist of wide tree-shaded streets, mostly paved with asphalt. Most of the larger public buildings are in the Leopoldstadt, which shares in the fine frontage on the Danube, or in the handsome new Radial Strasse, which traverses the Theresienstadt, with a width of 100 to 150 feet. Pesth covers more ground than most towns of a similar popula- tion on account of the large number of one-storied houses, which form 70. per cent. of its buildings (as compared with 8 per cent. in Paris, 3 per cent. in Leipsic, &c.). Though of ancient origin, Pesth has nothing to show in the shape of venerable buildings ; and the modern edifices may perhaps be described as more noticeable for the

general air of prosperity they diffuse than for marked individual merit. The oldest ecclesiastical edifice is the parish church, dating from 1500, while the university church and those of the Leopoldstadt and the Franzstadt are the best of the more modern structures. The synagogue, however, is finer in many respects than any of its Christian rivals. The long range of substantial buildings fronting the Danube

includes the new houses of parliament, the academy, the exchange, the redoute, a large structure in a mixed Romanesque and Moorish style, erected for balls and other social purposes, the Greek church, the parish church, the old town-house, the extensive custom-house at the lower end of the quays, and several fine hotels and insurance offices. In the Radial Strasse are the new opera-house, the academy of music, the exhibition build- ing, and the national drawing-school. The largest building in Pesth is the so-called New Building, in the Leopoldstadt, erected by Joseph II., and covering as much ground as an ordinary London square. It is at present used as artillery barracks ; and the Carl's Barracks in the inner town, also used for housing troops, are little inferior in size. Another large military establishment is the Ludoviceum, or officers' college, at the south-east end of the town. The remaining buildings remarkable for their size or interest are the new town-house, the post-office, the national museum, the theatres (of which there are about half a dozen), and the palaces of several of the Hungarian magnates. To the south-east of the town lie the new slaughter-houses, which are admirably fitted up, and, with the adjacent cattle market, cover nearly 30 acres of ground.

The artistic and scientific culture of Pesth, and indeed of Hungary, finds its most conspicuous outward expression in the academy of sciences and the national museum, two large and handsome modern buildings. The academy, founded for the encouragement of the study of the Hungarian language and the various sciences, possesses a library of 100,000 volumes, and harbours the national picture gallery, a good collection of 700 to 800 works, formed by Prince Eszterhazy, and purchased for £130,000. The national museum contains extensive collections of antiquities, natural history, and ethnology, a gallery of mediocre paintings, and a library of 150,000 printed volumes

and 12,000 documents. Pesth also possesses numerous societies for the cultivation of science and art, most of which, however, limit their usefulness by publish- ing their proceedings in the Magyar tongue alone. The university of Pesth, the only one in Hungary proper, was established at Tyrnau in 1635, removed to Buda in 1777, and transferred to Pesth in 1783. It is attended by up- wards of 2000 students, and possesses the usual medical and scientific collections, an admirable chemical labora- tory, a botanic garden, and a library of 120,000 volumes. Pesth also contains a Protestant theological college and a rabbinical institute. The second place among the educa- tional establishments of the town is taken by the Poly- technic Institute, with its three faculties of applied chemistry, engineering and architecture, and mechanics ; it is attended by about 1000 students. The other schools comprise six gymnasia, six normal seminaries, and a large number of special and elementary schools, in spite of which 32 per cent. of the adult population were unable to read or write in 1880. The charitable institutions of the city are on a liberal scale. Characteristic of Budapest is the large number of its public baths, the most interest- ing of which are at Buda.

In commerce and industry Budapest is by far the most important town in Hungary, and in the former, if not also in the latter, it is second to Vienna alone in the Austrian- Hungarian monarchy. The chief articles of manufacture are machinery, railway plant, carriages, gold and silver wares, chemicals, cutlery, starch, tobacco, and the usual articles produced in large towns for home consumption. The great staple of trade is grain, of which about 4} million bushels are brought into the town annually. One-fourth of this amount merely passes through Pesth, while most of the remainder is ground into flour and exported in this form. Other important articles of commerce are wine, wool,

cattle, timber, hides, honey, wax, and “slivovitza,” an in- ferior spirit made from plums. The imports, so far as they do not belong to the transit trade, consist chiefly of manu- factured articles and colonial produce. The four annual fairs, formerly attended by many thousand customers, have now lost much of their importance. The swine market of Steinbruch is the largest in

Hungary, about half a million animals being annually disposed of. The trade of Pesth is in great part carried on by the Danube, the navigation of which has increased enormously since the introduction of steamboats in 1830; but the town is also connected by railway with all the chief places of Austria and Hungary.

The largest and most popular of the public gardens and promenades in Pesth itself is the Stadtwildchen on the north-east side, with its pleasant lake and trees. A still more delightful resort, however, is the Margaret Island, a long narrow island in the Danube, laid out in the style of an English park, with fine trees, velvety turf, and a group of villas and bath-houses.

Few European towns have grown so rapidly as Pesth during the present century, and probably none has witnessed such a thorough transformation in the last twenty years. In 1780 Pesth was still a badly-built town of the third rank, with only 13,500 inhabitants, and it was not till 1799 that its population (29,000) surpassed that of Buda (24,000). By 1840, however, Buda had added but 14,000 souls to its population, while that of Pesth had more than doubled ; and of the joint population of 270,000 in 1869 fully 200,000 fell to the share of Pesth. In 1880 the population of Budapest was 370,767 souls, including a garrison of 10,000 men, showing an increase since 1869 of 32 per cent., and since 1800 of an average of 6 per cent. perannum. Of this total 198,746 were returned as having Hungarian for their mother-tongue, 119,902 as Germans, and 21,581 as Slovaks. Divided according to. religious sects, we find 242,981 Roman Catholics, 70,879 Jews, 42,254 Protestants, and 3014 members of the Greek Church. Of these the Jews show the greatest relative increase since 1869 (56 per cent.) and the Roman Catholics the least. Of the gross increase of population in Hungary between 1869 and 1880 no less than two-thirds are due to Budapest alone, which in the same interval rose from the twenty- third to the fifteenth place among the towns of Europe. About 25 per cent. of the population are supported by trade and industry, 20 per cent. are engaged in service, and 4 per cent. belong to the pro- fessional and official classes. Nearly 50 per cent., including women and children, are returned as belonging to the non-working classes, but less than 1 per cent. are described as living on their capital or property. In spite of the large proportion of one-

storied houses, the ratio of inhabitants to each dwelling-house is somewhat high (33, as compared with 8 in London, 35 in Paris, and 59 in Vienna).

As Paris is sometimes said to be France, so may Pesth with almost greater truth be said to be Hungary. Its composite population is a faithful reflexion of the heterogeneous elements in the empire of the Hapsburgs, and the trade and industry of Hungary are centralized at Pesth in a way that can scarcely be affirmed of any other Euro- pean capital. In virtue of its museum and academy it is also the scientific centre of Hungary, and nine-tenths of all books in the Magyar tongue are published here. The average rate per head of imperial taxation is five or six times as great in Pesth as in the rest of Hungary. The recent patriotic movement in favour of Magyarizing all institutions has found its strongest development in Pesth, where the German names have all been removed from the streets and buildings. It is found, too, that the children of German parents born in Pesth easily become Magyarized, while a survey of Hungary at large during the last sixty years shows a relative increase of barely 1 per cent. in the Hungarian as opposed to the German tongue. The inhabitants are good-natured, hos- pitable, and fond of luxury and display. The upper classes are much addicted to sports of all kinds, and cultivate horse-racing, fox-hunting, and rowing with energy and success. Almost the only popular festival of importance is that of St Stephen on the 20th August, when thousands of people flock to inspect the relics of that saint in the palace-church of Buda.

History.—The origin of Pesth proper is obscure, but the name, apparently derived from the old Slavonic “ pestj,” a stove (like Ofen, the German name of Buda), seems to point to an early Slavonic settlement. The Romans never gained a foothold on this side of the river, though Aquincum, on the site of old Buda, is believed, from the extant remains, to have contained about 80,000 inhabit- ants. When it first appears in history Pesth was essentially a German settlement, and a chronicler of the 13th century describes it as “Villa Teutonica ditissima.” Christianity was- introduced early in the 11th century. In 1241 Pesth was destroyed by the Tatars, after whose departure in 1244 it was created a royal free

city by Bela IV., and repeopled with colonists of various national- ities. The succeeding period seems to have been one of consider- able prosperity, though Pesth was completely eclipsed by the sister- town of Buda with its fortress and palace. In 1526 Pesth was taken and pillaged by the Turks, and from 1541 to 1686 Buda was the seat of a Turkish pasha. Pesth in the meantime entirely lost its importance, and on the departure of the Turks was left little more than a heap of ruins. Its favourable situation and the renewal of former privileges helped it to revive, and in 1723 it became the scat of the highest Hungarian officials. Maria Theresa and Joseph II. did much to increase its importance, but the rapid growth which euabled it completely to outstrip Buda belongs entirely to the 19th century. A signal proof of its vitality was given in 1838 by the speed and ease with which it recovered from a disastrous inundation that destroyed 3000 houses. In 1848 Pesth becanie the seat of the revolutionary diet, but in the following year the insurgents had to retire before the Austrians under Windischgritz. A little later the Austrians had to retire in their turn, leaving a garrison in the fortress of Buda, and, while the Hungarians en- deavoured to capture this position, General Hentzi retaliated by bombarding Pesth, doing great damage to the town. The inhabit- ants to the number of 80,000 took refuge in the Stadtwaldchen. Between 1867 and 1873 Pesth is said to have doubled in size, and during the last four or five years the building activity has been

little if at all inferior.

See Hiuffier, ‘‘ Budapest,” Historische Skizzen, I. Abth. (1854); Hevesi, Buda- pest und seine Umgebungen (1873); Sturm, Kulturbilder aus Budapest (Leipsic, 1876); Heksch, Illustrierter Fuhrer durch Budapest (1882); Korési, Die Haup- stadt Budapest im Jahre 1881; publications of the Statistical Bureau in Buda- pest. (J. F. M.)

PETAU, Denys (1583-1652), better known in some departments of literature under the Latin form of his name as Dionysius Prravius, a highly-distinguished Catholic theologian and one of the most learned men of the 17th century, was born on 21st August 1583 at Orleans, where his father was a well-to-do merchant with some literary culture. Petau received his early education at Orleans, but finished his university course in Paris, where, after gradu- ating in arts, he attended theological lectures at the Sor-

bonne. By Isaac Casaubon, who had perceived his abilities, he was introduced to the MS. treasures of the Bibliotheque Royale; and, at the suggestion of that scholar, he began to work for the edition of Synesius which he afterwards published. In 1603, before he had completed his twentieth year, he received a teaching appointment in the faculty of philosophy at the university of Bourges ; here his leisure hours were devoted to his editorial labours and to a system- atic study of the ancient philosophers and mathematicians. Having come under the influence of the learned Jesuit Fronton le Duc, he was induced to resign his post at Bourges in order that he might. join the Society of Jesus, and in June 1605 he entered upon his novitiate at Nancy. After an interval of four years, he taught rhetoric success- ively at Rheims, La Fléche, and Paris, taking the four vows of the order at the last-named place in 1618; from 1621 to 1644 he was professor of positive theology in the college of the order. On account of growing infirmities and to secure leisure for his great work, to be mentioned below, he then retired from teaching duties, but retained the librarianship in the Collége de Clermont until his death, which took place on 11th December 1652.

The list of Pctau's literary labours bears witness to an extraor- dinary and many-sided activity, and includes several works which still enjoy the recognition of scholars. He edited Synesius (1611, 2d ed. 1631, 3d ed. 1633), Themistius (1613), Julian (1630), the Breviarium of Nicephorus (1616), and Epiphanius (1622) ; his Animadversiones on the last-named have been reprinted by Dindorf, as a still unexhausted mine of valuable material, in the fifth vol. of his Epiphanii Opera (1859). Carrying on and improving on the chronological labours of Scaliger, he published in two folio volumes an Opus de doctrina temporum (1627 ; frequently reprinted), followed in 1630 by Uranologion s. systema variorum authorum qui de sphera ac sideribus corumque motibus greee commentati sunt and Variarum dissertationum ad Uranologion libri VIII. Of the first-mentioned of these he made an abridgment, entitled Ration- ariwm temporwm, which passed through numerous editions, was translated into English and French, and in a recent reprint has been brought down to the year 1849. In theology proper Petau's

first appearance was polemical, and quite in the manner of that time,—a pseudouymous criticism on the recently-published com-

-A in John).

693

mentary of Salmasius on Tertullian's De Pallio (Antonii Kerkoetti Aremorict animadversionum liber, 1622). The controversy was con- tinued in a series of replies and rejoinders, and was renewed in connexion with other publications of his distinguished antagonist. In particular, some references to the church doctrine as to the authority of bishops made by Salmasius in his De fenore trapezitico was the occasion of Petau's Dissertationwm ecelesiasticarum libri duo, in quibus de episcoporum dignitate et potestate deque aliis ecclesiasticis dogmatibus disputatur (1641) and also of his De ecelesiastica hierarchia libri V. (1641). Petau also had his share in the Jansenist controversy, and has the honour of being twice mentioned as a Jesuit authority in the Provinciales. His first appear- ance in the dispute was against Arnauld's De la fréquente communion, which he met with a treatise, De la pénitence publique et de la pré- paration & la convmuavion (1643) ; his subsequent works, viewed in the light of the struggle then at its height, explain themselves by their titles (De lege ct gratia libri IT. (1648), De Tridentini concilii interpretatione et S. Augustint doctrina (1649), De adjutorio sine quo non et adjutorio quo (1651). In his great but unfinished work, De theologiets dogmatibus (5 vols. fol., 1644-50), he deals with the doctrine of God, the Trinity, Creation, and the Incarnation ; his design had been to complete it by an exhaustive treatment of the sacraments and of the Christian graces and virtues. Its scope, which was to free theology from the subtleties of scholasticism and to rest the science on the simple and firm basis of Scripture, the councils, and the fathers, is well enough explained by his own avowal, ‘‘nova querant alii, nil nisi prisca peto.” The work is a treasury of well-digested learning, and justly entitles its author to the praise of Muratori, who speaks of him as ‘‘ the restorer of dog- matic theology.” By some of his fellow-Jesuits he was supposed to have been too ready to recognize the Jansenism of Augustine, and in various quarters his declaration that many of the ante-Nicene fathers were less orthodox than the decrees of the first council has been made a

matter of reproach. But in these charges the impar- tial critic will recognize only proof of his candour. Petau, it may be added, was a rigid ascetic, and in particular is said to have indulged in the discipline of self-flagellation to a degree that injured his health.

PETER. Simon Peter was “an apostle of Jesus Christ” (1 Peter i. 1). His two names are both found

in two forms: of the one the full form is Symeon (f¥Dv,

Svpedv, which is found in the speech of James, Acts xv. 14, and in most MSS. of 2 Peter i. 1), the shorter and more usual form being Simon; the other is found both in its Greek form Peter (Ilérpos) and in the Grecized form Cephas (Kndas) of the Aramaic Kepha (85°32). Simon is the name by which he is always addressed by Jesus Christ ; Peter is that by which he is most commonly spoken of in the Synoptic Gospels, the Acts of the Apostles, and subsequent ecclesiastical literature ; the combined name, Simon Peter, is found once in St Matthew, once in St Luke, and frequently in St John; sometimes Peter is expressly stated to be a surname (Matt. iv. 18, x. 2; Acts x. 5, 18, 32, xi. 13); St Paul, in 1 Cor. and in Gal. i. 18, ii, 11, 14 (according to the chief uncial MSS., except D), uses Cephas, but in Gal. ii. 7, 8, he uses Peter.1 The name of his father is also found in two forms, John (Iwavyys, Iwdvys, in most MSS. of John 1. 42, xxi. 15, 16) and Jonas (Iwvés, Matt. xvi. 17, and cod. In John i. 44 he is said to have been of Bethsaida, which was possibly the place of his birth ; but it appears from Mark i. 29 (= Matt. vill. 14; Luke iv. 38) that he and his brother Andrew had a house together at Capernaum. With the same brother, and with James and John as partners, he was engaged in what was probably the thriving business of a fisherman on the Lake of Genne- saret ; and from the fact that he went back to his business after the resurrection it has been inferred that, at least up to that time, he had never wholly left it. That he was married is clear from the mention of his wife’s mother

1 Throughout the New Testament the Peshito-Syriac uses Cephas where the Greek has Peter, and there is no reasonable doubt of the identity of the two names; but Clement of Alexandria, in a fragment preserved by Eusebius, HW. £., i. 12, 3, and the so-called ‘Two Ways ” (Harnack, Lehre der zwilf Apostel, p. 225, and Hilgenfeld, Nov. Test. extra Canonem receptum, fasc.

iv. p. 111) take them to refer to differ- ent persons, probably from an unwillingness to believe that Gal. ii. 11 really referred to Peter.

(Mark i. 30 and parallels), and that his wife accompanied him when he finally left his home to preach the gospel is implied by St Paul (1 Cor. ix. 5); there is an early tradi- tion, which is not inconsistent with probability, that she also suffered martyrdom, and that Peter called out to her as she was being led away, ‘“‘O wife, remember the Lord!” 1 The statement that he had children? is probably only an inference from the fact of his having been married ; the alleged name of his daughter, Petronilla, is as suspicious as the story of his having cured her of the palsy?; and the majority of commentators take the expression ‘ Mark, my son,” in 1 Peter v. 13, to refer only to spiritual kinship.

Of the beginning of his discipleship there are two accounts which have sometimes (by Baur, Keim, Holtzmann, and others), though without sufficient reason, been supposed to be inconsistent with each other.

(1) According to St John, he was brought to Jesus by his brother Andrew, who had been a follower of John the Baptist, but who, after the Baptist’s testimony, recognized in Jesus the promised Messiah (John i. 40-42). The fact that he was then not at Capernaum but in the Jordan valley, where John was baptizing, seems to indicate that he, like his brother, had been attracted by John’s preach- ing. It is not stated that he at once became one of those who followed Jesus, and there is consequently room for the supposition that he returned home ; and the statement that it was upon the occasion of this first meeting that he received his distinctive surname, Cephas or Peter, is not inconsistent with Mark iii. 16, Luke vi. 14, which men- tion the fact rather than the occasion, or with Matthew xvi. 18, which gives to an existing name a new application.

(2) According to St Matthew and St Mark, it was at the beginning of the Galilean ministry that Jesus called Simon and Andrew to become “fishers of men” (Matt. iv. 18-20; Mark i. 16-18). The manner of the call seems to imply a previous acquaintance, and is consequently not out of harmony with that of St John. It is less easy to determine whether the account in

Luke vy. 1-11 refers to the same or to a different incident; Schleiermacher, Neander, Bleek, and others treat it as the fuller and more accurate account ; Ewald, Weiss, Keim, and others regard the miraculous draught of fishes as a reminiscence of a later tradition, and probably identical with John xxi. 5-11.

From the time of his call Peter has a place in most of the important events of the Gospel narrative. It was to his house in Capernaum that Jesus went as if to a home (Matt. viii. 14; Mark i. 14, 33; Luke iv. 38), and it is consequently sometimes spoken of as simply “the house” (Matt. ix. 28, xiii. 1, 36, xvii. 25). He formed, with his two former partners, James and John, an apostolic trium- virate, which was admitted when all others were excluded, and to whom, with Andrew, was committed the great pro- phecy of the last days (Mark xiii. 3), The most important incident which is recorded of him between his call and the crucifixion , is that which happened at Cxsarea Philippi (Matt. xvi. 13-23; Mark viii. 27-33; Luke ix. 18-22; probably recorded in substance, though in a different form, in John vi. 66-69). The incident links itself closely with the history which had immediately preceded it. The ex- pectation which the Galilean peasantry had begun to form of Jesus had been disappointed ; the miracles of healing and feeding had not been followed by the assumption of the national leadership ; many of the disciples had begun to drift away, and those who were looking for the Messiah saw in Him only “one of the prophets.” Those who

a pc: Alex., Strom., vii. 10, p. 869, quoted by Eusebius, ZZ. Z., iii, 80, 2.

2 Clem. Alex., Strom., iii. 6, p. 585, quoted by Eusebius, zbid.

3 St Augustine, c. Adimant. Manich., c. 17 , vol. viii. 189, ed. Ben.

Pei TY fe

remained were tested by a direct question; whether the form of the question was that of the Synoptists, “Whom say ye that lam?” or that of St John, “Will ye also go away?” it was Peter who answered for the rest, in words which have an equivalent meaning, whether they were in the form “ Thou art the Christ,” or in the form “ Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life.” The further detail which St Matthew gives, xvi. 17-

19, has sometimes been thought to be a later addition, reflect- ing a fact of subsequent ecclesiastical history; but its absence from St Mark does not seem to be an adequate ground for rejecting it, and its substance is found in Justin Martyr (Tryph., c. 100). Round the words which St Matthew records many controversies have raged ; nor does it seem possible, with existing means of investigation, to fix to the sentence “upon this rock I will build My church ” a meaning that will be beyond dispute. Whatever may be its precise meaning, it seems at any rate to be in har- mony with other passages of the Synoptic Gospels, which indicate, not only that Peter was foremost among the apostles by virtue of natural force of character, but that he was also their ordinary leader and representative: the most important passage is Matt. x. 2, where the expression “the first,” which is applied to him, cannot be restricted to mere priority of enumeration in the list. It is possible that his colleagues James and John, or their more ambi- tious mother, endeavoured to dispute this position with him (Matt. xx. 20, 21; Mark x. 35-37), and it has been contended (Baur, Strauss, Holtzmann) that in the Fourth Gospel John holds the place which the Synoptists assign to Peter; but even if this contention were admitted it would merely afford one more argument to show that the priority of rank was limited by natural affection as well as by the law of equality among the Christian brotherhood (Matt. xxiii. 8-11; Mark ix. 33-35; Luke xxii. 24-27). But, although Peter was foremost in expressing the con- fident belief of the disciples that Jesus was the Messiah, it seems clear that in his conception of the Messiah he did not rise above the current ideas of his countrymen. “He that should come” was to be a national deliverer. This conception appears on two occasions especially—when Jesus first told the disciples of His coming sufferings, “Peter took Him and began to rebuke Him,” and received the answer, “Get thee behind Me, Satan,” as though this atti- tude of the disciples were a new temptation (Matt. xvi. 21-23; Mark viii. 31-33); and, when Jesus was actually in the power of His enemies, and no “legions of angels” appeared either to rescue or to enthrone Him, Peter’s natural hopefulness gave way to complete despondency, and he more than once “denied that he knew Him.”

In the earliest account of the resurrection (that of St Paul, 1 Cor. xv. 5) it is mentioned that Jesus appeared to Peter before and separately from the twelve; and the last chapter of the Fourth Gospel gives him an especial pro- minence : it adds one more example of the impulsive energy of his

character (ver. 7); it portrays more vividly than any other passage in the Gospels the depth of his attachment to his Master (vers. 15-17); and it forecasts the manner of his death (vers. 18, 19). His prominence in the early community at Jerusalem is proved by the testimony of St Paul; for it was to visit ‘“‘Cephas” that he made his first journey to Jerusalem after his conversion, and fourteen years afterwards, though James and John as well as Cephas “were reputed to be pillars,” it was the latter who stood out above the rest as the special preacher of “the gospel of the uncircumcision ” (Gal. i. 18, ii. 1-10). These facts undoubtedly confirm the general picture of the relations of Peter to the early church which is drawn in the Acts of the Apostles; at the same time no part of the New Testament has been more strongly attacked by modern

writers than the first twelve chapters of that book, in which the “Acts of Peter” are contained. The attack has been made (Baur, Schwegler, Overbeck, Zeller, and others) partly on the speeches and partly on the narrative. (1) It is alleged that the Petrine speeches form no exception to the general uniformity of phraseology and style which characterizes the Acts, and that they ignore the marked differences in the conception of Christianity between Peter and Paul. It must be admitted that the coincidences are such as to render it probable that the author of the Acts dealt freely with his materials, but at the same time the peculiarities are sufficiently numerous to support the view that these speeches contain a true representation of the primitive teaching.1 (2) The narrative passages which have been most keenly contested are those which relate to Simon of Samaria and to Cornelius. It is alleged that the account of the former is the mere reflex of the later legends in which the name of Simon Magus was substituted for that of St Paul as the representative of false Christ- lanity, and it is said of the latter that it is a mere attempt to claim for Peter the opening of the door to the Gentiles which was the special honour of Paul, and that it cannot be reconciled with the division of labour between the apostle of the circumcision and the apostle of the uncir- cumcision which is spoken of in the Epistle to the Gala- tians.? At the great crisis of early Christianity which is known as the conference or council of Jerusalem Peter advocated (according to the Acts), or accepted (according to Paul), the

policy of conciliation. Afterwards he went to Antioch, where Paul had preceded him, and there he carried out his acceptance of Gentile Christianity to the further point of eating at the common meals at which Gentiles were present. For this step the members of the original community at Jerusalem were not prepared ; and, when a deputation from them came to Antioch, Peter “drew back and separated himself” (Gal. ii. 12). There- upon followed an argument and a remonstrance on the part of Paul which has been fruitful of results to both ancient and modern Christianity. Peter was “withstood to the face” because of (1) inconsistency, (2) practical calumny of Christ, (3) transgression of the law, (4) making void the gift of God (Gal. ii. 14-21). It is altogether too much to assume that this remonstrance led to a permanent alien- ation of the two apostles from one another; it is more probable that with a character such as Peter’s, which had more energy than steadiness of resolution, it may even have been effectual. But it is upon the assumption of such an alienation that the Jewish party in the ancient church pictured Peter as the champion and hero of the faith, and Paul as its vanquished opponent, and also that in modern times the Tiibingen school have endeavoured to reconstruct not only early church history but also the New Testament.

This incident at Antioch is the last that is certainly known of Peter. The prophecy recorded in John xxi, Is, 19, is in harmony with early tradition in pointing to a violent death. But of the time and place of that death we know nothing with even approximate probability. The only historical mention of him for more than a hundred years afterwards is in Clement of Rome (£p., i. 5, 4), who sets before the Corinthians the example of “Peter, who through zeal undertook not one or two but numerous labours, and so having borne witness went to the place Se ee

? The question of the relation of their language to the rest of the Acts and to the Petrine epistles is discussed in detail with various Tesults by several writers, ¢.g., Mayerhoff and Weiss in the works mentioned below, and more fully Kahler in Studien u. Kritiken for 1873, p. 492 sq.

- The details of the discussion will be found in most recent books Which deal with the Acts ; on the negative side the most convenient book for

English readers is the translation of Zeller's Contents and Origin of the Acts of the A |postles, 1875.

that was due to him." It is sometimes supposed that an indication of the place in which he "bore witness" or "suffered martyrdom" is afforded by the phrase "among us," t.e., among the Romans, in the next chapter ; but this, though possible, is quite uncertain. Outside this state- ment, which if it were more definite would be conclusive, there is only the doubtful interpretation of " Babylon" in 1 Peter v. 13 as meaning "Rome," and the echo of a vague tradition in the apocryphal Petri et Pauli Predicatio.3 The testimony of the " presbyter" who is quoted by Papias in reference to Peter's connexion with Mark (Euseb., H. L., il. 39, 15) says nothing of the place at which they were together, and the coupling of the names of Peter and Paul by Ignatius (Ad Roman., c. 4) would not, even if the early date of Ignatius were established, afford a solid argument that "in their death they were not divided." But from the beginning of the last quarter of the 2d century the testimony to the presence and death of Peter at Rome is almost uniform ; the tradition, whatever may have been its foundation in fact, had firmly established itself. Diony- sius of Corinth (Euseb., H. £., ii. 25, 8) says that Peter and Paul founded the church at Corinth together and then proceeded to Italy. Irenzeus (Adv. Heres., iii. 1) speaks of Peter and Paul as having together founded the church at Rome; the Muratorian Fragment (not earlier than the end of the 2d century) refers to the "passion of Peter" a.¢., his martyrdom ; the presbyter Gaius (Euseb., H. Z., ii, 25, 7, early in the 3d century) says that he saw the tporata (whatever that may mean) of the two apostles Peter and Paul at Rome; in Tertullian (e.g., Scorp., c. 15 ; De Prescr., c. 24 and 36) the tradition is fairly established ; and no later Latin father expresses any doubt of it.

But, besides the fact that there is an interval of more than a hundred years between what must have been, in the ordinary course of nature even if not through violence, the approximate time of Peter's death and the first certain tradition of the place and manner of it, there are two other important considerations which render the ordinary patristic statements doubtful. (1) One stream of tradition, for the existence of which it is difficult to account

if the other tradition had been uniform, represents Peter as having worked at Antioch, in Asia Minor, in Babylonia, and in the "'country of the barbarians" on the northern shores of the Black Sea. This is in harmony with the geo- graphical details of the first of the two epistles which bear his name. That epistle is addressed to the "elect who are sojourners of the dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappa- docia, Asia, and Bithynia," and the " Babylon" from which it is obviously written (v. 13) is best understood not as a cryptographic expression for Rome, but, like the other geographical names of the epistles of the New Testament, in a literal sense. All this, no doubt, is not inconsistent with the supposition that Peter went to Rome towards the end of his life, but it seems to exclude the theory that he made a lengthened stay there and was the founder of the Roman Church. (2) The other consideration is that the presence of Peter at Rome is almost inextricably bound up with a story of whose legendary character there can be little doubt, that of the Simon Magus of the Clementines.4 Under the name of Simon Magus the conservative Jewish Christians, who could never forgive the admission of the Gentiles to be " fellow-heirs" with the "children of the promise," seem to have represented Paul>; and, throwing

3 Hilgenfeld, Nov. Test. extra Can. rec., fasc. iv. p. 57.

4 Uhlhorn, Die Homilien u. Recognitionen des Clemens Romanus, Gottingen, 1852, makes an unsuccessful attempt to show that the two stories may be separated.

5 For the detailed proofs of this reference may be made to Baur, Church History, E. T., vol. i. p. 91; Zeller, The Acts of the A postles, E. T., vol. i. p. 250; and Hilgenfeld, in his Zeitschrift f. wissensch. Theologie, 1868, p. 367.

back into the lst century, and into the personal relations between the two apostles, the violent controversies between the catholic and the Jewish parties which came to a head in the 2d century, they framed a romance of which Peter was the hero, and in which, under the mask of Simon Magus, Paul played the part of the "false apostle." The romance in its original form has perished ; its substance is partly preserved and partly recast in the

Clementine Homilies and Recognitions, of which the former exist in their original Greek, the latter in an incomplete Latin translation. In course of time the original identity of Paul with Simon Magus was forgotten, and in the later forms of the legend (see the Acts of Peter and Paul below) Peter and Paul are joined together in the combat with the pretender. But in almost all later patristic accounts of Peter Simon Magus has an important place ; he is said to have gone to Rome in the time of Claudius, and Peter is said to have at once followed him in 42 A.D. ; hence, as Peter lived until the Neronian persecution in 67 there was room for an episcopate of twenty-five years. This last tradition can hardly be reconciled with the facts mentioned in the New Testament of his presence at Jerusalem and at Antioch (Acts xv.; Gal. li.); but Lipsius has endeavoured to show, not only that single points in the story must be given up, but that the whole tradition of the presence of Peter at Rome is a fiction which grew out of the Judeo-Christian attack upon Paul.

The probabilities of the case are evenly balanced ; on the one hand it is difficult to account, for the complete silence as to Peter in the Pauline epistles, and it is impos- sible with those epistles in sight to regard Peter as the founder of the Roman community; on the other hand, it is difficult to suppose that so large a body of tradition had no foundation in fact ; such a supposition, besides its general improbability, would assume that the extreme form of Judzo-Christianity which the Clementines reflect had a much greater influence over the conceptions of the 2d century than the evidence warrants.!

1 The question whether Peter was ever at Rome has been so much discussed that the following list of the chief treatises and articles on either side will be convenient for reference ; it is not exhaustive. The question was at first discussed as one between Protestants and Catholics. The earliest treatise on the Protestant side is probably that of Ulrich Vehlen (Velenus) in his Demonstratio contra Romani pape primatus JSigmentum, 1520, reprinted by M. Flacius Ilyricus in his Refutatio invective Bruni contra centurias historie ecclesiastice, p. 86; it was answered at the time by Bishop Fisher of Rochester in his Convulsio calumniarum Aldrichi Velent, reprinted in his works, ed. Wurzburg, 1597, p. 1299. The most complete account of the older arguments on the Lutheran side is that of Spanheim, Dissertatio de

ficta profectione Petri Apostoli in urbem Romam deque non una traditionis origine, 1679, reprinted in his works, Leyden ed., 1708, vol. ii. p. 831. In modern times the question has been discussed chiefly on literary grounds and without reference to its bearing on the Roman controversy. It was first stated on the negative side by Baur in the Tubingen Zeit- schrift fiir Theologie, 1831, p. 136, and in his Paulus, E. T., vol. i. p. 228. His most important follower has been Lipsius, whose two works, the Chronologie der rimischen Bischife, Kiel, 1869, and Die Quellen Aer rimischen Petrus-Sage, Kiel, 1872, are of great value apart from the results which they endeavour to establish; he also deals with the question more concisely in the Jahrbb. f. deutsche Theol., 1876, p. 561. On the same side are Mayerhoff, Historisch-kritische Einleitung in die petrinischen Schriften, Hamburg, 1835; Gundert, in the Jahrbb. f. deutsche Theol., 1869, p. 306 ; Holtzman, s.v. “ Petrus,” in Schenkel’s Bibellexicon ; Hausrath, NTliche Zeitgeschichte, vol. iii. p. 344; Zeller, in the Deutsche Rundschau, 1875, p. 215 (reprinted in his Vortrige u. Abhandlungen, 2te Samml., 1877), and in the Z. /. wissensch. Theol., 1876, p. 81. The truth of the early tradition has been maintained in opposition to these writers by Credner, Linleitung in das N. T., 1836, p. 628; Olshausen, Rémerbr., 1840, p. 40 ; Wieseler, Chronologie des apost. Zeitalters, 1848, p. 552; Ewald, Gesch. des Volkes Isract, vol. vi. p. 616 ; Hilgenfeld, in his 7. f. wissensch. Theol., 1872 p. 372, 1876 p. 57 (in answer to the article of Zeller in the same number mentioned above), 1877 p. 486 (in answer to the article of Lipsius mentioned above); Delitzsch, in Stud. und Krit., 1874, p. 213; Renan, L’ Antechrist, p. 186, and appendix; Seyerlen, Entstehung

|

PT eh

It would be inappropriate to enter in the present article into the causes and consequences of the enormous influence which the belief that Peter founded and presided over the first Christian community at Rome has exercised upon Christianity. It was no doubt natural, considering that influence, that curiosity should be largely exercised as to the details of his life and death at Rome, and that legends of respectable antiquity should express themselves in visible memorials. Modern Rome contains many such memorials. The chapel of 8. Pietro in Carcerc preserves the tradition that he was imprisoned

in the Tullianum, and that a spring of water issued from the ground that he might baptize his gaolers. The churches of S. Prassede and S. Pudenziana preserve the tradition that much of the later part of his life at Rome was spent in the house of Pudens on the Viminal Hill. The latest localization of a legend has built a church outside the old Porta Capena to mark the spot where, when he was fleeing from persecution, he met his Master going into Rome. “Lord, whither goest Thou?” (Domine, quo vadis?) was his question. ‘‘I go to Rome to be ¢rucified again” was his Mas- ter’s answer.” Besides these visible memorials of Petrine legends there are four annual feasts. (1) On 29th June is celebrated the Feast of St Peter and St Paul. The day is supposed to be that of their martyrdom ; it is in reality that of the reburial of their supposed remains in 258, which is recorded in the Kalendarium LInberianum of 354 (printed by Mommsen in the 4bhandlungen der konigl. séichs. Gesellschaft, phil.~~hist. Classe, 1850, p. 362). Those of Peter were then reburied ‘‘ad catacumbas,” 7.e., in the ceme~~ tery of St Sebastian on the Appian Way; they were afterwards said to have been transferred to the basilica which Constantine erected on the Vatican. (2) On 22d February is celebrated a feast in commemoration of Peter as bishop of Antioch (Festwm Cathedrz Petri Antiochenz), which also is mentioned as early as the Kalend. Liberianum. (8) On 18th January has been celebrated since the 8th century a feast in commemoration of his bishopric of Rome. (4) On Ist August has been celebrated since the 9th century a feast in commemoration of his imprisonment (Festum S. Petri ad Vincula), but whether of that by Herod which is mentioned in Acts xii., or of that by Nero, is uncertain.

Besides the two canonical epistles (see PETER, EPISTLES OF) the following works have either been (erroneously) attributed to him or bear closely upon his history.

1. The Gospel according to Peter.—Kusebius (H. #., vi. 12, 2-6) mentions that the public use of this Gospel was at one time allowed, but afterwards disallowed on the ground of its Docetism, by Sera- pion, the successor of Theophilus in the bishopric of Antioch (191- 213). It is mentioned by Origen (Hom. in Matt., x. 17, vol. iii. p. 462), by Jerome (De Vir. Illustr., c. 1), and by Theodoret (Heret. Fab., ii. 2). Hilgenfeld (Nov. Test. extra canon. rec., fase. iv. p. 89) thinks that it held a middle place between the Gospel

according to the Hebrews and the Gospel of the Ebionites. No certain fragments of it remain.

2. The Preaching of Peter (Ilérpov xipvypa) ; and.

3. The Journcys of Peter (Iérpov zreptoda).—These two works are mentioned together in the Epistle to James which is prefixed to the Clementine Recognitions ; the former appears to have been Judzo-Christian ; the latter was an attack on Paul under the guise of Simon Magus. Both works underlie the Clementine Recognitions and Homilies ; the patristic references to them will be found in Hilgen- feld, U.¢., p. 52, and Hinleitung, pp. 42, 155, 580, 613.

4. The Preaching of Peter and Paul.—This, in distinction from the preceding, belongs to the period at which Pauline and Petrine tendencies had become combined. The fragments of it and refer- ences to it are collected by Hilgenfeld, J.c., p. 56.

5. The Acts of Peter and Paul.—The history of this work is obscure ; in its present form (as printed by Tischendorf, Acta Apos- tolorum Apocrypha, pp. 1-39) it is probably a late recasting of an earlier work or works. Of such earlier work or works there are traces which are collected by Hilgenfeld, /.c., p. 66; in addition to these it has been thought that the Martyriwm Petri et Pauli of Symeon Metaphrastes contains part of the original Acts of Peter; but the section of the great work of Lipsius, Die apok. Apostelgesch. u. Apostelleg., which will probably unravel the present literary difficulties of these Acts has not yet (1884) appeared.

6. The Apocalypse of Peter.—This is mentioned as a deutero- canonical book in the Muratorian Fragment, by Clement of Alex- andria (ap. Euseb., H. £., vi. 14, 1), and by Eusebius (H. Z., iii. 25, 4). Methodius of Tyre placed it “among the inspired Scriptures ” (Sympos., ii. 6), and Sozomen (H. £., vii. 19) says that in some churches of Palestine it was publicly read once a year. A few short

und erste Schicksale der Christengemeinde zu Rom, 1874, p. 51; Schmid, Petrus in Rom, Lucerne, 1879 (which is a convenient summary of earlier literature and arguments rather than an independent contribution to the

subject); Langen, Geschichte der rémischen Kirche, 1881, p. 40; Sieffert, in Herzog-Plitt, R. H., s.v. “ Petrus.”

2 The story is first found in a sermon sometimes attributed to St Ambrose and printed in some editions of his works, e.g., ed. Paris, 1603, vol. v. p. 100.

fragments of it are collected by Grabe, Spicil., i. 74, and by Hilgen- feld, . ¢., p. 71. (The work under the same title which was partly translated by Jacobus de Vitriaco in the 13th century, and of which some MSS. still remain, e.g., an Arabic translation in the Bodleian library — MSS. Arab. Ohrist., xlviii.—is a much later composition.)

7. Epistle of Peter to James.—This is prefixed to the Clementine Homilies (ed. Lagarde, p. 1) ; according to Photius (Biblioth., cod. 42, 118) there was a similai letter, which is now lost, prefixed to the Recognitions. Its character and literary value are the same as those of the Clementines in general.

8. The Teaching of Simon Cephas in Rome.—This treatise exists in Syriac, and was first published and translated by Cureton, Ancient Syriac Documents, 1864, p. 35 (since by B. P. Pratten, in the Ante- Nicene Library, vol. xx.). (A. HA.)

PETER, Episties or, 1 Peter.—The first of the two canonical epistles which bear the name of St Peter is addressed “to the elect who are sojourners of the disper- sion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia.” Most commentators in both ancient and modern times (e.¢., of the former, Athanasius, Jerome, Epiphanius; of the latter, Lange, Weiss, and Beyschlag) have interpreted this phrase to refer primarily to Jewish Christians. But this interpretation creates a difficulty. The countries named were countries in which St Paul and his companions had been especially active, and in which they had formed many communities, chiefly from the Gentile population. If therefore “the sojourners of the dispersion ” be understood to refer to Jews, it becomes necessary to suppose the existence side by side in the same countries of two sets of communities, Pauline and Petrine, and further to suppose either (with Weiss) that the latter were already in exist- ence when

Paul preached, or (with the majority of writers) that Peter followed Paul upon his own ground. Both these suppositions are improbable, and it is preferable to understand the phrase of the “children of God that are scattered abroad” whether Jews or Gentiles. That some of the latter were included in it seems clear from i. 21, ii. 10, which imply that before they were Christians they knew not God, and from iii. 6, which implies that their wives had only now become daughters of Abraham.

The epistle was evidently written at a time when the Christians of Asia Minor were both calumniated (ii. 12, iii. 16, iv. 4, 14) and persecuted (i. 6, 7, iii. 14-17, iv. 12-19). It exhorts those to whom it was addressed not only to bear their trials patiently, and even to rejoice inasmuch as they were “ partakers of the sufferings of Christ ” (iv. 13), but also to give no occasion to the hostile world which surrounded them to reproach them as evil- doers (ii. 12, 15, iv. 14, 15), and it specializes this ex- hortation to well-doing by addressing separately servants (ii. 18-25), wives (ili. 1-6), and husbands @a 7). ‘This fact that Christianity had come to be persecuted, and also the fact, which is manifested in its whole tone, that Christians were in danger of retrograding, show that the epistle cannot be placed in the earlier part of the apostolic age. The time of the Neronian persecution is the earliest that will satisfy the required conditions; and some (e.g, Schwegler, Baur, Hilgenfeld) have thought that even this is too early for those conditions, and that it must be referred to the time of Trajan. It may, however, be said in reference to this latter view that the words of Tacitus in regard to the Christians under Nero, if they be not merely a reflexion from his own time, exactly suit the circum- stances to which this epistle refers; “quos per flagitia invisos vulgus Christianos appellabat ” (Ann., xv. 44).

Like most documents of the apostolic age, it deals less with doctrine than with practice. But, though the doctrine is incidental, it is clear; taken in connexion with the Petrine speeches in the Acts of the Apostles, with which it is on the whole in harmony, it probably gives a faithful transcript of the original apostolic teaching. The Messiah

of whom the prophets had spoken had been revealed (i. 10-12); He had come to suffer (i. 11) for sins (ii. 24, iii. 18), and by His sufferings He had

rescued the elect from their former evil life (i. 18-20) and brought them to God (ili. 18), and in His conduet under suffering left an example for them to follow (ii. 21-23). Belief in God who raised Him from the dead on the one hand is a purification of the soul and an obedience to the truth, and on the other it results in love of the brethren (i. 22); it constitutes a bond of brotherhood, like that which had existed between the children of Abraham, and made the elect, what the Jews had failed to be, “a royal priesthood, a holy nation ” (ii. 9, from Exod. xix. 6). But the fulfilment of the promise is not for this world ; Christians are “strangers and tra- vellers” (ii. 11); the end of all things is at hand Gv. 7), and that is the revelation of the glory of the Messiah in which those who believe in Him will be partakers (iviel35 v2 1):

The picture of the Christian communities which the epistle presents is of the simplest, and is in entire harmony with the general facts of the apostolic and sub-apostolic

age. The organization was that of the Jewish synedria ;

the “elders” were as shepherds of the flock, exercising over the younger members the control of a simple discipline. The ministering to the wants of those who needed help was the common and personal duty of all who had where- with to minister (iv. 10), and a special class of officers for the purpose was not yet needed. It is evident that “liberty of prophesying” prevailed; the only injunction on the point is, “if any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God” (iv. 11).

The coincidences of thought and expression between some pass- ages of this epistle and some passages in the epistle of James and in both the disputed and undisputed epistles of St Pau] have given rise to much discussion. The chief coincidences are the fol- lowing :—(1) between 1 Peter and James, i. 6, 7, and i. 2, 3, i. 12 and i. 25, i. 22 and iv. 8, ii. 1 and i. 21, iv. 8 and v. 20, We B, O and iv. 6, 7, v. 6 and iv. 10; (2) between 1 Peter and Romans, i. 14 and xii. 2, ii. 5 and xii. 1, il. 6-10 and ix. 32, ii. 13 and xiii, il, iil. 9 and xii. 17, iii. 22 and viii. 34, iv. 3, 7, and xiii. iit, ey, the 9 and xiii. 13, iv. 10 and xii. 6; (3) between 1 Peter and Ephe- sians, i. 1 sg. and i. 3 sq., i. 14 and ii. 3, ii. 18 and vi. 5, iii. 1 and v. 22, iii. 22 and i. 20, v. 5 and v. 21. Of these coincidences several explanations have been given. Weiss

(Die petrinisehe Lehrbegriffe, 1855, and Biblieal Theology of the New Testament, E. T., vol. i. p. 167) holds that this epistle preceded the other epistles and gave rise to the expressions which they contain. The Tiibingen school hold that the contrary is the case, and that it represents either a late and weakened form of Panlinism (Baur, Zeller, Pfleiderer), or an attempt to mediate between the Pauline and Petrine parties by clothing the doctrines of the latter in the phraseology of the former (Schwegler). Others (notably Mayerhoff, Einleitung in die petr. Sehriften, 1835) consider that there is no copy- ing on either the one side or the other, but that all the coincidences of expression come from a common stock of apostolic teaching.

The epistle was nsed by Papias and is possibly referred to by Polycarp, and it is expressly quoted by Irenxus and Tertullian ; it is not mentioned in the Muratorian Fragment, but it is trans- lated in the Peshito version, and is included by Eusebius among the admitted books (homologowmena). Its genuineness was generally admitted until the present century ; and some of its peculiarities have been accounted for by the hypothesis of its having been originally written in Aramaic, and translated, or possibly amplified, by Mark or Silvanus. On the other hand there are some who hold that the attacks upon it by Schwegler, Baur, Pficiderer, Holtz- mann, and others have been stronger than the defence of it.

2 Peter—The second epistle is addressed to a wider circle than the first, 7.e., to Christians in general. Its aim is mainly polemical ; it is directed partly against a tendency towards libertinism, which was growing up and which took for one of its supports the Pauline doctrine of Christian freedom (ii. 1, iii. 16), and partly against the reaction which had set in against the earlier eschatology (iii. 3, 4). It protests in powerful language against the separation of Christianity from holy living, maintaining that Christ- lanity without holy living is worse than no Christianity at

all (c. ii.) ; and it reasserts the reality of the Second Coming, resting it upon the reality of the supernatural evidence of the First Coming (i. 16-18).

The correspondence between this epistle, especially c. 11., and that of Jude is too strong to be a mere coincidence. It was at one time supposed to be the original which Jude imitated (so Semler and Michaelis, and more recently Luthardt and Hofmann), but the preponderance of opinion in modern times is in favour of the opposite view (not only by those who question the authenticity of this epistle but by some also of those who maintain it, e.g., Weiss). A leading argument in favour of the latter hypothesis 1s that 2 Peter ii. 13-17 is an amplification (and some main- tain also a misapplication) of Jude 11, 12, and that 2 Peter ii, 11 requires Jude 9 for its explanation. An equally well-marked correspondence has recently been pointed out between this epistle and Josephus, and the balance of prob- ability is in favour of the priority of the latter.

The differences of style which distinguish the second from the first epistle have been noted since the tinie of Jerome (De Vir. Illustr., c. 1, and Epist. ad [Hedib., c. 11). They are sometimes explained on the ground of the epistles having had different purposes, or having been written at different times; they are more commonly used as indica- tions of a difference of authorship ; and, although the argu- ment from differences of style in comparatively short documents cannot be held to be decisive where the external evidence in their favour is strong, such is not the case with this epistle. The external evidence for it is singularly weak ; there are no certain traces of it earlier than the 3d century, when Origen (ap. Euseb., 77. £., vi. 25), who is the first to mention it, also mentions that it was questioned. It is not included in either the Muratorian Fragment or the Peshito-Syriac (though it is in the later Philoxenian). Eusebius (Z/. £,, iii. 3) ranks it among the disputed books (antilegomena), and Jerome, although he included it in his translation (which fact probably accounts for its general acceptance in the Western churches), méntions that many rejected it. These doubts of early writers, which were revived by Erasmus and Calvin, have been shared by a large proportion of those who have written on the book in modern times; at the same time it cannot be said that there is a consensus of opinion against it.

The best editions of both the epistles are those in the comment- aries of De Wette and Meyer, as revised the former by Briickner and the latter by Huther (this has been translated, with the rest of Meyer’s Commentary, into English) ; there is a convenicnt short English commentary by Dean

Plumptre in the Cambridge Bible Sor Schools. For the doctrinal and other questions which arise out of the two epistles reference may be made, in addition to the works mentioned in the course of the article, to Weiss, ‘‘ Die petrinische Frage,” in Stud. wu. Krit., 1865, p. 619; Grimm, “ Das Problem d. ersten Petrnsbr.,” 2bid., 1872, p. 657; Schmid, New T’es- tament Theology, translated in Clark’s Foreign Theological Library ; Messner, Die Lehre der Apostel, 1856; Farrar, Early Days of Christ- ianity, vol. i. pp. 121, 174; and Sieffert, s.v. “ Petrus,” in Herzog- Plitt’s Real-Eneyklopidie, 2d ed. vol. xi. (E. HA.)

PETER oF Biots, otherwise known as PETRUS BLESENSIS, a writet of the 12th century, was born at Blois in France about the year 1120. He studied theology at Paris, where one of his teachers was John of Salisbury, who exercised a considerable influence over him ; he afterwards resided for some time as a student of law at Bologna. He was then appointed preceptor to William II. of Sicily, and in 1167 made keeper of the privy seal (sigillifer) ; political occur- rences, however, compelled his return in the following year to France, whence he was invited into England by Henry IL., who made him his private secretary. About 1176 he withdrew from court and entered the household of Richard, archbishop of Canterbury, whose chancellor he became.

1 Abbott, in the Hzpositor, 1882, p. 49, and Farrar, The Early Days of Christianity, vol. i. p. 190.

PETER

This office he also held under Baldwin, Richard’s successor, by whom he was sent to Rome in 1187 to support his cause in the controversy with the monks of Canterbury. Peter died about 1200.

His writings, which cover all the fields of intellectual activity then accessible, show him to have been one of the most widely and deeply learned men of his age. ‘They include a number of allegorizing sermons and edifying tracts, a hortatory address, De Jeresolymitana peregrinatione acceleranda, a discourse Contra per- jfidiam Judzorum, and, most interesting for its bearing on the political and ecclesiastical history of his time, a collection of 183 letters to Henry II., as well as to varions popes,

prelates, and scholars, including his old master John of Salisbury. The best edition of his works is that of Pierre de Goussainville, Paris, 1667, fol.

PETER tHe Hermit, the apostle of the first crusade, was born of good family, it is supposed, in the diocese of Amiens about the year 1050. His early history is obscure, but he appears to have seen some military service under the counts of Boulogne before his withdrawal from the world as a hermit. Huis crusading zeal originated in a pilgrimage he made to the Holy Sepulchre shortly before 1094, in which year he began to preach in the transalpine countries the immediate deliverance of Jerusalem from the infidel (see Crusapgs, vol. vi. p. 623 sq.). After the failure of the expedition headed by him in 1096, he founded and became first prior of the abbey of Neuf- moustier at Huy in the diocese of Liége, where he died on (th duly 1115.

PETER IL, ALExEIEevicH, surnamed THE Great (1672- 1725), czar of Russia, was born at Moscow on 11th June 1672. His mother, Natalia Narishkina, was the second wife of the czar Alexis. He was taught reading and writing, and the limited range of subjects which then con- stituted education in Russia, by the deacon Nikita Zotoff. He came to the throne in the year 1682, on the death of his elder brother Feodore; there was another brother, Ivan, who was six years his senior, but he was weak both in body and mind, Feodore therefore had wished Peter to succeed him, but Sophia, his sister, a woman of strong character and great ambition, was desirous that Ivan should rule, so that she might be proclaimed regent and in reality exercise the sovereignty. She therefore fomented a revolt of the ‘“streltzi,” or native militia, and the result was a compromise, whereby Ivan and Peter were to reign jointly. On the death of Ivan in 1696 Peter became sole ruler, and punished Sophia by incarcerating her for life in the Devichi monastery, where she died in 1704. .

With the aid of Lefort, a Swiss adventurer, and other foreigners, Peter commenced his remarkable reforms, for which see Russta. Here nothing more than a brief sum- mary of the leading events of his life is given. In the year 1696 he besieged and took Azoff, his great object being to give Russia a seaboard. In 1697 he made his first Continental tour, on which occasion he worked at the dockyards of Zaandam and Deptford. On leaving Eng-

land he took with him many ingenious men who wished to try their fortunes in a new country,—among them Perry the engineer, who has left us an interesting account of Russia at that time. From England Peter went to Vienna, where he studied the tactics of the imperial army, then enjoying 4 great reputation throughout Europe, and was meditating a visit to Italy when he heard of a revolt of the streltzi, fomented by the partisans of the old régime, in consequence of which he hurried back to Moscow, and on his arrival punished the rebels with the greatest severity.

In the year 1700 he joined Poland and Denmark against Sweden. Although defeated at Narva the same year, he pursued his plans unremittingly, and in 1709 won the battle of Poltava, after which Charles, the Swedish king, became a fugitive in Turkey. In 1703 the foundations of St Petersburg were laid. Peter had married in 1689

Eudoxia Lopukhin, but had divorced her in 1696; she bore him a son, Alexis. In 1711 he took as his second wife Martha Skavronska, whom he caused to be baptized in the Greek Church under the name of Catherine. In this year took place Peter's unsuccessful campaign in Turkey, which ended with the loss of Azoff. The well-known story of his being rescued by Catherine when on the point of being obliged to surrender to the enemy has been shown to be of very doubtful authority. In 1713 Peter had made himself master of a considerable strip of the Swedish coast. In 1716 he went on another European tour in the company of his wife ; on this occasion he visited, among other places, Amsterdam, Copenhagen, and Paris. During his absence his son Alexis, who had been a constant source of trouble to him, became more rebellious and estranged from his father. He was openly leagued with the reactionary party in Russia, who looked forward to his assistance in reversing the policy of Peter, as soon as he should succeed to the throne. Peter on his return in 1718 forced his son to renounce al] claim to the sovereignty. Alexis was after- wards tried for high treason and sentenced to death ; soon it was given out that he had died suddenly. The fate of this wretched young man has only been ascertained in modern times ; it seems tolerably clear that he sank under repeated inflictions of torture. His death is a dark stain upon the character of Peter. On 10th September

1721 the peace of Nystad was concluded, by which Sweden ceded Livonia, Esthonia, Ingria, Carelia, Viborg, and the adjacent islands to Russia. In 1724 Peter went to inspect the works on Lake Ladoga, and further weakened his constitution, which had long been in an unhealthy state on account of the continual excitement and arduous labours of his hfe. The czar died on 28th January 1725.

The character of Peter exhibits a strange congeries of opposed qualities. According to some he "'knouted" Russia into civilization ; others see in him the true "father of his country " and the founder of Russian greatness. In spite of his errors, no one will deny that he was a man of great genius; his was the " fiery soul that, working out its way," exhausted prematurely a vigorous physical organization. Although frequently cruel, on many occasions he showed humanity and tenderness, and even in his most violent fits of temper was amenable to advice, as he evinced in enduring the rebukes of Prince James Dolgoruki. All Russia seems but the monument of this strange colossal man. He added six provinces to her dominions, gave her an outlet upon two seas, a regular army trained in European tactics in lieu of the disorderly militia previously existing, a fleet, and a naval academy, and, besides these, galleries of paint- ing and sculpture and libraries. The title of "Great" cannot justly be refused to such a man.

PETER IL, Atexerevicy (1715-1730), son of Alexis and grandson of Peter the Great, was born at St Peters- burg in 1715, and ascended the throne in 1727. He was under the guardianship of Menshikoff, to whose daughter Mary he was betrothed. The faction of the Menshikoffs was overthrown, however, by the Dolgorukis, to a daughter of whose house the czar was now to be married. All these political plans were rudely broken by the death of Peter in January 1730. During his short reign this youth showed reactionary tendencies, and it seemed as if the capital of Russia was again to be transferred to Moscow. The young czar was buried in the cathedral of the Archangel in that city.

PETER III., Froporovicu (1728-1762), was son of Anna, daughter of Peter the Great, who had married the duke of Holstein. He was born at Kiel in 1728, his real names being Karl Peter Ulrich; he went to Russia in 1742 on

being named heir to the throne. In 1745 he married Sophia Augusta, princess of Anhalt-Zerbst, who,

on entering the Greek Church, took the name of Catherine. They lived very unhappily together. In January 1762 the ezarina Elizabeth dicd and Peter succeeded her. He soon became unpopular on account of his fondness for the. Prussians and the introduction of German regulations in the army. His wife took advantage of his unpopularity and caused herself to be crowned empress, July 1762. Peter showed great want of energy, and only attempted to stem the insurrection when it was too late. He was removed to Ropsha in the government of St Petersburg, and, after having been forced to sign a renunciation of all rights to the throne, was strangled by Orloff and others. He was first buried in the Alexandro-Nevski monastery, but his remains were removed in 1796 by Paul to the Petropavlovski church,

PETERBOROUGH, a city and municipal and parlia- mentary borough, chiefly in Northamptonshire, but partly in Huntingdonshire, is situated on the river Nene, 76 miles north of London by the Great Northern Railway. The town is also a station on the London and North-Western, the Great Eastern, and the Midland systems. It is built chiefly along the river on the north side, the streets being straight and wide, and containing many good houses. The first bridge over the Nene at Peterborough was erected in 1140, the present bridge in 1872. The cathedral of St Peter is the third church that has occupied the site; the first, founded by Peada, king of the Mercians, in 656, was entirely destroyed by the Danes in 870, and the second, founded by King Edgar in 971, was accidentally burnt in 1116. The present building, founded in the following year, was, inclusive of the west front, 120 years in build- ing, being consecrated on 4th October 1237. It is one of the three Norman cathedrals in England, and, though scarcely entitled to a place among cathedrals of the first rank, possesses special features rendering it second almost to none in point of architectural interest. It embraces in all eight periods of construction, and in no other building can the transition be better studied through the various grades of Norman to Early English, while the later addition is an admirable example of Perpendicular. The edifice proceeded as usual from east to west, and, while an increase in elegance and

elaboration is observable in the later parts, the character of the earlier buildings has been so carefully kept in mind that no sense of incongruity is produced. A series of uniform Decorated windows were added through- out the church in the 14th century, and the effect has been rather to enhance than detract from the unity of design. The choir, Early Norman, was founded on 12th March 1117 (or 7th March 1118) by John de Sez, and dedicated in 1140 or 1143; the aisles of both transepts and the whole of the south transept were built by Martin of Bec, 1140-55; the remaining portions of the transepts and the central tower, of three stories, were completed by Wilham de Waterville, 1155-75; the nave, Late Norman, was com- pleted by Abbot Benedict, 1177-93, who added a beautiful painted roof of wood; the western transepts, Transition Norman, were the work of Abbot Andrew, 1193-1200; the western front, with its magnificent triple arch, the unique feature of the building, and one of the finest specimens of Early English extant, must have been built between 1200 and 1250 ; but there exists no record of its construc- tion. The lady chapel, built parallel with the choir by William Parys, prior, was consecrated in 1290; the bell- tower was erected by Abbot Richard between 1260 and 1274; the south-west spire, the pinnacles of the flanking tower of the west portal, and the enlargement of the witidows of the nave and aisles were the work of Henry de Morcot in the beginning of the 14th century ; the new building or eastern chapel in the Perpendicular style, be- gun in 1438, was not completed till 1528. In 1541 the

church was converted into a cathedral, the abbot being made the first bishop. The extreme length of the building is 471 feet, and of the nave 211 feet, the breadth of the west front being 156; the height of the central tower, as reconstructed in the 14th century, was 150, that of the spires and tower of the west front is 156 feet. In 1643 the building was defaced by the soldiers of Cromwell, who destroyed nearly all the brasses and monuments, burnt the ancient records, levelled the altar and screen, defaced the windows, and demolished the cloisters. To obtain mate- rials for repairs the lady chapel was taken down. In the latter part of the 18th century the church was repaved. In 1831 a new throne, stalls, and choir-screen were erected and other restorations completed. On account of the in- secure state of the

central tower in 1883, it was taken down; but it is now (1884) being rebuilt. Catherine of Aragon was interred in the cathedral in 1536, and Mary queen of Scots in 1588, but the body of the Scottish queen was removed to Westminster Abbey in 1612. Of the mon- astic buildings there are some interesting remains. The cathedral is approached by a Norman gateway, above which is the chapel of St Nicholas, built by Abbot Bene- dict, and now used as the music school, and on the left the chapel of St Thomas a Becket, built by Abbot Ashton in the 15th century, and now used as the grammar-school. The gateway to the bishop's palace, formerly the abbot's house, was built by Abbot Godfrey de Croyland in 1319, and the deanery gate by Abbot Kirton in 1515. One of the canonry houses is formed partly from a hall of the 13th century. To the north of the cathedral is Touthill, said to have been erected for the defence of the monastery.

Peterborough is included for civil purposes in the parish of St John the Baptist, but for ecclesiastical purposes it is divided into four, the additional parishes being St Mary's Boongate (1857), St Mark's (1858), and St Paul's (1869). The old parish church of St John originally stood to the east of the cathedral, but was rebuilt on its present site in the centre of the city (1401-7) in the Perpen- dicular style. It consists of chancel, nave, aisles, and an embattled tower adorned with pinnacles. The educational establishments in- clude the Henry VIII. grammar or chapter school; the St Peter's training college for schoolmasters for the dioceses of Peterborough, Ely, and Lincoln, erected from designs of Sir Gilbert Scott (1864), and attended by forty-six pupils; the practising school attached to the training college, attended by 250 boys; and Deacons and Ireland's charity school, established in 1721 for the clothing and educating of twenty poor boys, but lately rcorganized. The prin- cipal public buildings are the market-house (1671), used as a town- hall, the corn exchange (1848) in the Italian style, the liberty jail and house of correction in the Norman style (erected in 1848 and enlarged in 1855 and 1870), the assembly rooms (1853), and the county court and probate office (1878). A cattle-market, 5 acres in cxtent, was opened in 1867, The benevolent institutions in- clude the dispensary and infirmary, several almshouses, and the union workhouse. The modern prosperity and rapid growth of the town are chiefly due to the trade caused by the junction of so many railway lines. Adjoining the town are extensive works and sheds connected with the Great Northern and Midland Railways.

Im- portant cattle-markets and fairs are held, and there is a large transit of meat and cattle to London and elsewhere. An extensive trade in corn, coal, and timber is also carried on. The principal manufacture is that of agricultural implements. The entire par- liamentary city of Peterborough has an area of 6558 acres (of which 6310 are.in Northamptonshire), with a population of 22,394 (of whom 20,123 are in Northamptonshire). The population of the municipal borough (area, 1818 acres) in 1871 was 16,310, and in 1881 it was 21,228. Since 1841 it has more than trebled.

The ancient name of Peterborough was Medeshamstede. The foundation of the great Benedictine abbey of St Peter was laid in 655 by Oswy, king of Northumbria, and Peada, the first Christian king of Mereia. It was the first of the Benedictine abbeys in Gyrwa land (Fenland). In 870 it was plundered by the Danes, after which it remained desolate till 966, when it was restored to its former splendour by Athwald, bishop of Winchester. From that time the town was called a borough, being probably then surrounded by walls; and under Abbot Leofric, nephew of Earl Leofric of Mercia, the abbey became one of the wealthiest in England. In 1169 it was plundered by Hereward. Since the first of Edward IV. the borough has returned two members to parliament. Until 1874 the city was included in the liberty or

soke of Peterborough, the government of which was vested in the lord paramount, the custos rotulorum, and magistrates appointed by the erown, with powers equal to those of judges of assize; a high bailiff of the city was appointed by the dean and elhapter as lords of the manor, who acted as returning officer till the incorpora- tion of the city in 1874. Peterborough is divided into three wards ; for municipal and sanitary purposes it is governed by a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen councillors, but for magisterial and sessional purposes is still included in the liberty of Peterborough.

Gunton, History of the Church of Peterborough, 1686; Britton, History and Antiquities of the Abbey and Cathedral Church of Peterborough, 1828; Paley, Remarks on the Architecture of Peterborough Cathedral, 1849 ; Sweeting, Notes on Peterborough Cathedral, 1869.

PETERBOROUGH anp MONMOUTH, Cuaruzs Mor- DAUNT, Eart oF (c. 1658-1735), a man whose whole life was passed in the turmoil of excitement, was born about 1658. His father, John Mordaunt, was created Baron Mordaunt of Reigate, Surrey, in 1659; his mother was Elizabeth, the daughter and sole heiress of Thomas Cary, the second son of Robert Cary, earl of Monmouth. He entered upon a long career of warfare when only about sixteen years of age by joining Sir John Narborough's fleet in the Mediterranean, and won his first distinction in arms in Cloudesley Shovel's destruction of the dey's fleet under the very guns of Tripoli. On two subsequent occasions— the first in September 1678, the second in June 1680—he 'embarked in expeditions for the relief of Tangier, but the adventure met with little success, and that troublesome possession was soon after abandoned. His father died 5th June 1675, and Charles Mordaunt succeeded to the peerage. On his return from the second expedition to Tangier he plunged into active political life as a zealous Whig and an unswerving opponent of the duke of York. But his con- tinued hostility to James II. forced him to retire to Holland, when he proposed to William of Orange to invade England. The disposition of the cold and cautious William had little in common with the fierce and turbulent English peer. His plan was rejected, though the prudent prince of Orange deemed it judicious to retain his fiery adherent by his side. When William sailed to Torbay his friend accom- panied him, and when the Dutch prince was safely estab- lished on the throne of England honours without stint were showered upon Lord Mordaunt. He was sworn of the privy council 14th February 1689, made a lord of the bedchamber in the same month, created lord-lieutenant of Northamptonshire shortly after, and in April of the same year appointed first lord of the treasury and advanced in the peerage to be earl of Monmouth. In less than a year he was out of the treasury, but he still remained by the person of his monarch. He was with William in his dangerous passage to Holland in January 1691; and in June 1692, when crossing from England to the same country, he narrowly escaped shipwreck. Although the English king had refused his consent to a bill for triennial parliaments in the previous session, Lord Monmouth did not shrink from reintroducing it in December 1693. This led to a disagreement with the court, though the final breach did not take place until January 1697, when Mon- mouth was accused of complicity in Sir John Fenwick's con- spiracy and of the use of "undutiful words" towards the king. He was committed to

the Tower, staying in confine- ment until April 1697, and deprived of his employments. Some consolation for these troubles came to him in June of the same year, when he succeeded to the earldom of Peterborough. The four years after his release from the Tower were mainly passed in retirement at Parson's Green, Fulham, at a house long since pulled down, but famous for its "extraordinary good rooms" and its spacious gardens. At the close of William's reign Lord Peterborough emerged from his suburban retreat for a time to take part in the prosecution of Lord Somers, and on the accession of Anne he plunged into political life again with avidity. His first act was to draw down on himself in February 1702 the

censure of the House of Commons for the part which he took in the attempt to secure the return of his nominee for the borough of Malmesbury. In the same year he was appointed governor of Jamaica, but he never visited the island over which he ruled, preferring to remain in a part of the world where he could play a more active part in the government of affairs. Through the fear of the ministry that his restless spirit would drive him into opposition to its measures if he stayed at home, he was appointed early -in 1705 to command an expedition of English and Dutch troops in Spain. He was created sole commander of the land-forces and joint-commander with Sir Cloudesley Shovel of the fleet, and at the same time was reinstated a member of the privy council. His first exploit was to seize Denia in Valencia; then, with all the impetuosity of his char- acter, he urged upon the Austrian claimant to the throne the expediency of dashing for Madrid, less than 250 miles distant, only to find that he was overruled by his col- leagues in council. After this repulse he sailed for Bar- celona (August 1705) and commenced to besiege that town. For three weeks the siege languished, until, by a sudden night-attack on 14th September, Peterborough seized the outworks of Montjuich, and three nights later captured the citadel itself. On 14th October the city was his. This was his greatest feat, and in this enterprise he showed, what was usually wanting in his character, both tact and conciliation. After this victory Catalonia declared for the Austrian prince, and Peterborough advanced into Valencia with the object of reducing it to subjection. By threats, cajolements, intrigues, and plots he obtained pos- session of its chief towns, but the prince for whom he was

fighting allowed himself to be surrounded in Barcelona. Peterborough's advice, that Charles should travel by sea to Lisbon and march against Madrid with the allied force of 25,000 men, was disregarded, and the English commander with his little body of 2000 foot and 600 horse then advanced towards Barcelona, which was besieged by a greatly superior force of the enemy. The city was on the point of being captured, when Peterborough, warned of the approach of the English fleet—it is said that the signal of its arrival was a blank sheet of paper—put off in an open boat, and, after journeying to and fro, met with his country's vessels. On 8th May he brought the leading ships into the port of Barcelona, and three days later the French beat a retreat. Again did the English commander urge upon the Austrian claimant of the Spanish throne the expediency of imme- diately advancing to Madrid, and again was the advice rejected, although the capital was occupied by the allied forces under Galway and Das Minas. Charles remained at Barcelona for some weeks, and when at last he did move towards Madrid it was by a route which Peterborough dis- approved of. When difficulties beset Charles on his way the earl joined him, but he soon retired to Valencia in disgust, and then left the country to raise money at Genoa. In a short time he returned to Spain once more, but during his absence the prospects of the allied forces had passed from bad to worse. The leaders of the army differed in their views, and Lord Peterborough quitted the country for ever (March 1707).

On his return to England he allied himself with the Tories, and received his reward in being contrasted, much to his advantage, with the Whig victor of Blenheim and Malplaquet. The differences betwéen the three peers, Peterborough, Galway, and Tyrawley, who had served in Spain, formed the subject of angry debates in the Lords, when the majority declared for Peterborough ; after some fiery speeches the resolution that he had performed many great and eminent services was carried, and votes of thanks were passed to him without any division. His new friends were not desirous of detaining him long on English soil,

and they sent him on a mission where he characteristically engaged the ministry in pledges of which they disapproved. His resentment at this

disagreement was softened by the command of a cavalry regiment, and by his appointment as a Knight of the Garter. A few months before the close of Queen Anne's reign (November 1713) he was despatched as ambassador-extraordinary to the king of Sicily, but was recalled by the Whigs as soon as they obtained the reins of power. With the accession of George I. Lord Peter- borough's influence was gone. Hatred of Marlborough be- came the ruling passion of his mind. His last twenty years of life were passed with the recollection of disappointed hopes and with the continual presence of disease. Worn out with suffering, he died at Lisbon, 25th October 1735. His remains were brought to England and buried at Turvey in Bedfordshire, 21st November.

Lord Peterborough was short in stature and spare in habit of body. His activity knew no bounds. He was said to have seen more kings and postilions than any man in Europe, and the whole point of Swift's lines on " Mordanto" consisted in a description of the speed with which he hastened from capital to capital. Nature had bestowed many gifts upon him, but had denied him more. He was eloquent in debate and intrepid in war, but his influence in the senate was ruined through his inconsistency, and his vigour in the field was wasted through his want of union with his colleagues. He could do nothing like other men. His first wife, Carey, daughter of Sir Alexander Fraser of Mearns, died 13th May 1709, and was buried at Turvey 20th May. Some years later he married Anas- tasia Robinson, a dramatic singer of great beauty and sweetness of disposition ; but she was unrecognized as his wife, and lived apart from him at her mother's house at Parson's Grecn. Nor was it until a few months before his death that she was introduced to society as the countess of Peterborough. (W. P. C.)

PETERHEAD, a seaport, market town, burgh of barony, and parliamentary burgh of Aberdeenshire, Scotland, is situated on a rocky peninsula on the North Sea, about 30 miles north-north-east of Aberdeen and 2 north of Buchan Ness. It has railway communication by a section of the Great North of Scotland line, opened in 1862. The town is built of the red granite of the district. At the extrem- ity of the peninsula is the insular suburb of Keith-Inch. Among the principal buildings are the town-hall (1788), with a granite spire 125 feet high, the music hall, and the court-house. The reading society (1808) possesses a library with upwards of 5000 volumes, and the

mechanics’ insti- tute one with about 1000 volumes. The Arbuthnot Museum contains natural history specimens, a collection of coins, and objects of antiquarian interest. In front of the town-hall is a statue to Field-Marshal Keith (1696- 1758), presented to the burgh by William I. of Prussia in 1868. A market cross was erected in 1832 when the town was created a parliamentary burgh. Peterhead at an early period had an extensive trade with the ports of the Baltic, the Levant, and America. Formerly it was a bonding sub- port to Aberdeen, but was made independent in 1832. The north and south harbours lie between the town and Keith-Inch, and the isthmus dividing them is pierced by a canal, which is crossed by an iron swing-bridge. In the north harbour are two graving-docks. A new harbour was completed in 1878, and the south harbour has been deepened and enlarged. The south bay is to be converted into a national harbour of refuge. The Arctic seal and whale fishing, which in 1802 was prosecuted by only one vessel, employed in 1857 as many as 32 vessels, but since that time it has declined somewhat. The herring fishing, in which the port has long held a leading position (631 boats in 1883), was begun in 1818 by a joint-stock com- pany. The general trade is of considerable importance. The chief exports are herrings (£180,000 in 1883), granite, cattle, and agricultural produce. In 1883 the number of vessels that entered the port with cargoes and in ballast was 864 of 87,839 tons, the number that cleared 840 of 86,318 tons. The town possesses ship and boat building

yards, saw-mills, an iron-foundry, cooperages, agricultural implement works, woollen manufactories, breweries, and a distillery. In the neighbourhood there are extensive granite and polishing works. The limits of the police burgh and the parliamentary burgh are identical, with a population in 1871 of 8535 and in 1881 of 10,922.

The town and lands of Peterhead belonged anciently to the abbey of Deer, built by William Cumming, earl of Buchan, in the 13th century. When the abbey was ereeted into a temporal lordship in the family of Keith, the superiority of the town fell to the earl marischal, with whom it eontinued till the forfeiture of the earldom in 1715. The town and lands were purchased in 1720 by a fishing company in England, and on their failure by the Merehant

Maiden Hospital of Edinburgh for £3000, who are still the superiors of the town. Peterhead was made a burgh of barony in 1598 by George Keith, fourth earl marischal of Scotland. It was the seene of the landing of the Pretender, 25th December 1715. Peterliead is in- cluded in the Elgin district of burghs.

PETERHOF, a town of European Russia, in the govern- ment of St Petersburg, and 18 miles west of the capital, on the south coast of the Gulf of Finland, has grown up round the palace built by Peter the Great in 1711, was constituted a district town in 1848, and has increased its population from 7647 in 1866 to 14,298 in 1881. It is almost exclusively a residential town, but is garrisoned by a cavalry regiment and has the military schools lodged in its barracks for six weeks in the summer. The palace, which is still occupied by the imperial family during part of the summer, has undergone alterations and additions, but retains a distinct Petrine stamp. It is built on a height 60 feet above the sea. The gardens, which owe their magnificence to Alexander I. and Nicholas IL, are laid out in the Versailles style, with elaborate water-works. From the “Marly” summer-house Peter I. loved to watch his fleet beneath the Cronstadt batteries, and in that of ‘“ Mon- plaisir” he died. It was at Peterhof that the empress Alexandra used to celebrate her birthday by fétes at which more than 100,000 persons were present. Peterhof is connected with Oranienbaum on the west and with Strelma on the east by an uninterrupted series of gardens and villas.

PETERS, or Peter, Hueu (1598-1660), a man whose name has for three centuries been rarely mentioned except in terms of infamy, was the son of Thomas Dyckwoode alias Peters, by Martha, daughter of John Freftry of Fowey, Corn- wall, and was baptized in Fowey parish church 29th June 1598. His parents were in good circumstances, and they sent him to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he took the degree of B.A. in 1616 and M.A. in 1622. About the latter date he was licensed by Dr George Montaigne, bishop of London, to the lectureship at St Sepulchre’s, London, but his first definite post in the church was at Rotterdam (1623-32), as colleague of William Ames, whom he much admired, and who died “in his bosom.” In October 1635 he emigrated to Boston in New England, and in the following year became the minister of the first church at Salem in Massachusetts. His abilities soon gave him a prominent place in all the civil and ecclesiastical

affairs of the colony, and in 1641 his reputation was so |

great that he was sent to England as the best guardian of the colony's interests at home. His shrewd judgment, his ready wit, and his zeal for the cause of the Parliament endeared him to the army and its leaders ; he accompanied Fairfax and Cromwell on their campaigns, and described their achievements in numerous letters to the House of Commons. To the adherents of the vanquished cause Hugh Peters always lent his good offices. He was desirous that Laud should be banished, and not executed. It was through his influence that Juxon was permitted to attend Charles after his condemnation, and his acts of kindness to some of the Royalist clergy are mentioned in Walker's Sufferings of the Clergy. Through the favour of the Pro-

| £5 miles to the north-west of Belgrade.

PET—PET

tector he filled several important offices. He was one of the twenty-one persons appointed to consider the abuses of the national laws; he was a judge for granting probates of wills, and a trier for licensing candidates to the ministry. At the Restoration he was seized and imprisoned in the Tower of London, where he composed his affecting tract, "A Dying Father's Last Legacy to an Only Child." His trial as a regicide took place on 13th October 1660, and he was, of course, condemned to death. Four days later he was drawn on a sledge to Charing Cross and there hanged and quartered, his head being set on a pole on London Bridge. Hugh Peters suffered his cruel death without any sign of wavering. For many years after his death the grossest charges against his memory were cir- culated in catchpenny pamphlets by his enemies, and his name was held up to general execration; but it is clear that these accusations are but the creation of party malice He was twice married ; his first wife was Elizabeth, said to have been the daughter of Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh, Essex, and the widow of Edmund Read, who died at Wick- ford in the same county November 1623. She died about 1640, and he subsequently married Deliverance Sheffield, the mother of his only child, Elizabeth Peters. The writings of Hugh. Peters and the publications, in print and manuscript, relating to his life are described in the Bibliotheca Cornubiensis. He pleaded, in opposition to Prynne and others,

for the admission of the Jews into England. The chief blot on his fame is his advocacy of the burning of the records.

PETERSBURG, a city and port of entry of the United States, in Dinwiddie county, Virginia, lies 23 miles south of Richmond on the south side of the Appomattox river, which is navigable for large vessels from the James river up to the falls opposite the city, and for flat boats 107 miles above the falls to Farmville. Petersburg is an important railway junction, manufactures tobacco, cotton goods, and iron wares, and carries on a very extensive shipping trade in the export of tobacco, cotton, flour, and peanuts (groundnuts). Its public buildings comprise a court-house, a custom-house, and post-office, two markets, and a theatre; there are two public libraries and a public park (Poplar Lawn). The population was 14,010 in 1850, 18,266 in 1860, 18,950 (10,185 coloured) in 1870, and

21,656 in 1880.

Petersburg was laid out at the same time with Richmond (17388) by Colonel William Byrd, on the site of an Indian village destroyed in 1676. It was first incorporated in 1748. During the Revolu- tionary War it was twice the headquarters of the British under General William Phillips, who died while in possession of the town in1781. The bravery of the Petersburg volunteers on the Canadian frontier in 1812 procured it the title of Cockade City of the south. The terrible siege of Petersburg, lasting from June 1864 to 3d April 1865, was the final Scene of the Civil War.

PETERWARDEIN (Hungarian Petervérad, Servian Petrovaradin), a town and strong fortress of Hungary, is situated on a promontory formed by a loop of the Danube, It is connected with Neusatz on the opposite bank by a bridge of boats

800 feet long. The fortifications consist of the upper

fortress, on a lofty serpentine rock rising abruptly from the plain on three sides, and of the lower fortress at the northern base of the rock. The latter includes the town, which contains (1880) 3603 inhabitants, engaged in wine- growing, agriculture, and the manufacture of liqueurs (rosoglio) and

vinegar. The two fortresses can accom- modate a garrison of 10,000 men. The arsenal contains interesting trophies of the Turkish wars.

Peterwardein, the “Gibraltar of Hungary,” is believed to repre- sent the Roman Acumincum, and received its present name from Peter the Hermit, who here marshalled the levies of the first

erusade. It was captured by the Turks in 1526 and retained by them for 160 years. In 1716 it witnessed a signal defeat inflicted

onthe Turks by Prince Eugene. During the revolutionary struggles of 1848-49 the fortress was hcld by the insurgents for a short time.

PETION DE VILLENEUVE, Jerome (1753-1794), was the son of a procureur at Chartres, where he was born in 1753. He himself became an avocat in his native place in 1778, and at once began to try to make a name in litera- ture. His first printed work was an essay, Sur les Moyens de prévenir (Infanticide, which failed to gain the prize for which it was composed, but pleased Brissot so much that he printed it in vol. vii. of his Bibliothéque philosophique des Legislateurs. Pétion’s next works, Les Lois Civiles, and Essai sur le Mariage, in which he advocated the marriage of priests, confirmed his position as a bold reformer, and when the elections to the States-General took place in 1789 he was elected a deputy to the Tiers Etat for Chartres. Both in the assembly of the Tiers Etat and in the Con- stituent Assembly Pétion showed himself a radical leader. He supported Mirabeau on 23d June, attacked the queen on 5th October, and was elected president on 4th December 1790. On 21st June 1791 he was chosen one of three commissioners appointed to bring back the king from Varennes. After the last meeting of the assembly on 30th September 1791 Robespierre and Pétion were made the popular heroes and were crowned by the populace with civic crowns. Pétion received a still further proof of the affection of the Parisians for himself on 14th November 1791, when he was elected second mayor of Paris in succession to Bailly. In his mayoralty he exhibited clearly his republican tendency and his hatred of the old monarchy, especially on 20th June 1792, when he allowed the mob to overrun the Tuileries and insult the royal family. For neglecting to protect the Tuileries he was

suspended from his func- tions by the Directory of the department of the Seine, but the leaders of the Legislative Assembly felt that Pétion's cause was theirs, and rescinded the suspension on 13th July. On 3d August, at the head of the municipality of Paris, Pétion demanded the dethronement of the king, and on 10th August, while the monarchy was falling with the Tuileries, he patiently underwent a form of detention in his own mairie. He was still mayor of Paris when the mas- sacres of September in the prisons took place, and must bear the blame of not having endeavoured to interfere. He was elected to the Convention for Eure-et-Loir, and became its first president. Manuel then had the folly to propose that the president of the Assembly should have the same authority as the president of the United States ; his proposition was at once rejected, but Pétion got the nickname of 'Roi Pétion," which contributed to his fall. His jealousy of Robespierre allied him to the Girondin party, as did also his assiduous attention at Madame Roland's salon. With the Girondins he voted for the king's death and for the appeal to the people, as one of them he was elected to the first committee of general defence in March 1793, as their representative he attacked Robespierre on 12th April, and it is no matter of wonder, therefore, that his name was among those of the twenty-two Girondin deputies proscribed on 2d June. Pétion was one of those who escaped to Caen and raised the standard of provincial insurrection against the Convention ; and when the Norman rising failed he fled with Guadet, Buzot, Barbaroux, Salle, and Louvet to the Gironde, and hid in a grotto at St Emilion. At last, but a month before Robespierre's fall in June 1794, the escaped deputies felt themselves tracked down, and deserted the grotto ; Louvet found his way to Paris, Salle and Guadet to Bordeaux, where they were soon taken; Barbaroux committed suicide ; and the bodies of Pétion and Buzot were found in

a field, half-eaten by wolves. For Pétion's published works, see the cdition of his Guvres, 3 vols., 1792 ; for his life, see the ridiculous eulogy in J.J. Regnault-

Mémoires de Buzot ct de Barbarowx, with an introduction by C. A. Dauban, 1866 ; and for his last days and death, see C. Vatel, Char- lotte

Corday et ics Girondins, 3 vols., 1872.

PETIS DE LA CROIX, Francois (c. 1653-1713), the best representative of Oriental learning in France during | the last decades of the 17th century and the beginning of the 18th century, was born in Paris about 1653. He was son of the Arabic interpreter of the French court, and inherited this office at his father's death in 1695, after- wards transmitting it to his own son, Alexandre Louis Marie. At an early age he was sent by Colbert to the East ; during the ten years he spent in Syria, Persia, and Turkey he mastered Arabic, Persian, and Turkish, and also collected rich materials for future writings.1 He found, besides, opportunity to equip himself for those diplomatic missions which the French Government entrusted to him soon after his return to Paris in 1680. Having served a short time as secretary to the French ambassador in Morocco, he accompanied as interpreter the French forces sent against Algiers, and greatly contributed to the satis-factory settlement of the treaty of peace between the two countries, which was drawn up by himself in Turkish and ratified in 1684. Ina similar capacity he conducted the negotiations with Tunis and Tripoli in 1685 and those with Moroccoin 1687 ; and the zeal, tact, and linguistic knowledge he manifested in these and other transactions with Eastern courts were at last rewarded in 1692 by his appointment to the Arabic chair in the Collége Royal de France, which he filled until his death in 1713.

He published Contes Turcs, Paris, 1707, and Les Mille et un Jours, 5 vols., Paris, 1710-12, and proved his acquaintance with the Armenian and Ethiopic languages(a powerful impulse to the study of the latter having been given just at that time by the masterly works of Hiob Ludolf) in his Armenian Dictionary and his Aeeount of Ethiopia. But the lasting monument of his literary fame, the one standard work that has outlived many generations and still kecps a distinct merit of its own, is his excellent French version of Sharaf-uddin 'Ali Yazdi's Zafarndma, or History of Timur (completed 828 A.H.;

| 1425 a.p.), which was given to the world nine years after his dcath,

1722 (4 vols., Paris ; translated into English by J. Darby, London, 1728). This work, renowned throughout the East as a model of elegant style, and one of the rare specimens of a fairly critical history Persia can boast of, was

compiled under the auspices of Mirza Ibrahim Sultan, the son of Shah Rukh and grandson of the great Timur himself. This prince collected all the official records of Timur's reign, both in Turkish and Persian, collated and revised them, and had then an accurate text drawn up by his secretaries, which was turned by Sharaf-uddin into elegant and refined language and revised by Ibrahim Sultan himself (see Rieu's Cat. Persian MSS. in the Brit. Mus., i. p. 173 sqg.). The only error committed by Petis de la Croix in his otherwise very correct translation is that he erroneously ascribed the important share which Ibrahim Sultén had in the Zafarndma to Timur himself.

PETITION is an application for redress by a person aggrieved to an authority capable of relieving him. It may be made in the United Kingdom to the crown or its delegate, or to one of the houses of parliament.

The right of petitioning the crown was recognized in- directly as early as Magna Charta in the famous clause, Nulli vendemus, nulli negabimus aut differemus, rectum aut justitiam, and directly at various periods later, e.g., in the articles of the Commons assented to by Henry IV., by which the king was to assign two days in the week for petitions, it being an honourable and necessary thing that his lieges who desired to petition him should be heard (Rot. Parl., 8 Hen. IV., p. 585). The case of the seven bishops in 1688 confirmed the right, and finally the Bill of Rights in 1689 declared "that it is the right of the subjects to petition the king, and all commitments and prosecutions for such petitioning are illegal." Petitions to the crown appear to have been at first for the redress of

1 Many of these—as the account of Jerusalem, Modern and Ancient, the Travels through Syria and Persia, the Antiquities and Monuments of Egypt, the translations of Pseudo-Wakidt's Congwest of Syria and of Haji Khalfa's Dictionary, and the History of the Ottoman Empire—

Warin's Vie de Pétion, 1792, and Mémoires inédits de Pétion. et | still remain in manuscript.

private and local grievances, or for remedies beyond those possessed by the courts. As equity grew into a system, peti- tions of this kind tended to become superseded by bills in chancery (see CHANCERY). Statutes were originally drawn up by the judges at the close of the session of parliament from the petitions of the Commons and the answers of the crown. In the drawing up of the statutes frauds were at times committed, the judges not always reciting correctly the tenor of the petition or answer. To obviate this danger complete statutes in the form of bills began to be introduced into parliament in the reign of Henry VI. The crown could accept or reject them, but could not alter them (see Hallam, Middle Ages, ch. viii. pt. 3). A relic of the old form of the statute founded upon petition still remains in the preamble of Appropriation Acts and other statutes creating a charge upon the public revenue. It runs thus: “We, your majesty’s most dutiful and loyal subjects, the Commons of the United Kingdom . . . do most humbly beseech your majesty that it may be enacted; and be it enacted, &c.,” from this point following the en- acting words common to all statutes. Petitions to the crown from the House of Commons in other matters now usually take the form of addresses. The crown may refer petitions presented to it to be adjudicated upon by a dele- gated authority. This is the course pursued in the case of peerage claims, which are referred to the House of Lords, and by that House to the committee for privileges, and in the case of petitions to the crown in council, with which the judicial committee in most cases deals (see below); or the crown may delegate the power of receiving petitions in the first instance. Examples of petitions to the delegated authority are those addressed to a court of justice or those addressed to the home secretary for the pardon or mitigation of punishment of a convicted criminal. Petitions to the houses of legislature seem to have been later in origin than petitions to the crown. The political importance of petition- ing dates from about the reign of Charles I. The develop- ment of the practice of petitioning had proceeded so far in the reign of Charles IT. as to lead to the passing of 13 Car. II. c. 5 against tumultuous petitioning. This is still law, though it has ceased to be enforced. It provides that no petition or address shall be presented to the king or either house of parliament by more than ten persons; nor shall any one procure above twenty persons to consent or set their hands to any petition for alteration of matters estab- lished by law in church or state, unless with the previous order of three justices of the county, or the major part of the grand jury. Up to 1688 petitions usually

dealt only with some specific grievance; from that time dates the present practice of petitioning with regard to general measures of public policy. Since 1833 more than 700,000 petitions on public matters have been presented to the House of Commons. Petitions to the crown need not apparently be in any particular form, but no doubt they would not be received if couched in unbecoming language. Petitions to the Houses of Lords and Commons must be framel in a prescribed form. They must be properly superscribed, and must conclude with a prayer. They must be in writing (in the Commons), must contain none but genuine signatures, and must be free from disrespectful language or imputations upon any tribunal or constituted authority. They must be presented by a member of the House, except petitions to the House of Commons from the corporation of London, which may be presented at the bar by the sheriffs, and from the corporation of Dublin, which may be presented by the lord mayor. Though a petition is made to the House, in practice petitions to the Commons are referred to the committee on public peti- tions, under whose directions they are classified and analysed. In the Lords receivers and triers of petitions

i? eae Pee Py

are still appointed, though their functions have long been obsolete. of either house, provided they fulfil certain conditions as to weight, &c. (see May, Parliamentary Practice, ch. xika

Petitions may be sent free by post to members

In the United States the right of petition is secured by Art. 1 of the Amended Constitution, which enacts that “Congress shall make no law abridging . . . the right of the people peaceably to assemble and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.”

Petitions to a Court of Justice.—Strictly speaking these are no doubt an indirect mode of petitioning the crown, for in the theory of English law the crown is the fountain of justice. But it is more convenient to treat them sepa- rately, as they now form a part of the practice of the courts. Appeals to the House of Lords and the privy council are prosecuted by petition of appeal. The House of Lords has now no original jurisdiction in judicial matters ; the original jurisdiction of the privy council in such matters is

confined to petitions under certain statutes, such as the Endowed Schools Acts 1867 and 1873, the Public Schools Act 1868, the Universities Act 1877, and the Patents Act 1883. In most cases the petitions are referred to the judicial committee of the privy council. Petitions may be addressed to the lord chancellor in a few instances, such as the sealing of patents and the removal of coroners and county court judges. The most important use of petitions in England is in the Chancery Division of the High Court of Justice. They may be presented either as interlocutory proceedings in the course of an action, or as original proceedings where no litigation exists,—a petition being generally a more cheap and speedy form of remedy than an action. Petitions in the course of an action are usually presented to the court in which the action is brought. Examples of original petitions are those under the Lands Clauses Acts, the Trustee Acts, the Companies Acts. In a few cases they may be brought by way of appeal, ¢.g., under the Charitable Trusts Act 1860. Peti- tions are also modes of procedure in other courts with juris- diction in equity, as the chancery courts of the county palatine of Lancaster and the county courts, in the latter only in certain cases falling within the County Courts Act 1865, 28 and 29 Vict. c. 99, s. 1 (5) and (6). They are used to initiate proceedings in bankruptcy and divorce, but are almost unknown in the Queen's Bench Division ; the only case of procedure by petition in that division seems to be the petition to sue in forma pauperis. Evi- dence in support of a petition is usually given by affidavit.

In Scotland petitions in the Court of Session are either original or in a pending action. Original petitions are presented to one of the divisions of the inner house, unless they are included in any of the matters mentioned in 20 and 21 Vict. c. 56, s. 4, when they are brought before the junior lord ordinary, or unless, by special statutory provision, they may be brought before any lord ordinary, as in the case of petitions under the Conjugal Rights Act 1861, or the Trusts Act 1867. In the sheriff court actions are commenced by petition (39 and 40 Vict. c. 70, s. 6). A petition and complaint is a process of a quasi-criminal nature by which certain matters of extraordinary jurisdic- tion are brought under the notice of the Court of Session. It lies against magistrates and officers of the law for breach of duty, against parties guilty of contempt of court, &c. The concurrence of the lord advocate is necessary to a petition and complaint. A reclaiming

petition, obsolete in the Court of Session, is a form of process of appeal in the sheriff court. See 39 and 40 Vict. ¢. 70-8. 28, 36

In the United States petitions can be presented to the courts under much the same circumstances as in England. “Tt is a general rule in such cases that an affidavit should be made that the facts therein contained are true as far as

known to the petitioner, and that those facts which he states as knowing from others he believes to be true” (Bouvier, Law Dict.).

Election Petition.—The article ELEcTIOoNS must now be read subject to the Parliamentary Elections Act 1879 and the Judicature Act 1881. By the Act of 1879 the trial of an election petition is conducted before two judges instead of one, as before. If the judges differ in opinion as to whether the member petitioned against is duly elected or not, he is deemed to be duly elected. The Act of 1881 provides for the annual appointment of three judges of the Queen's Bench Division for the trial of election petitions, and makes the judgment of the High Court of Justice in election cases final unless leave be given to appeal to the Court of Appeal. No appeal lies to the House of Lords, nor can any judge who is a peer sit on the trial of an election petition.

Petition of Right is a term confined to English law. It is used in two senses. (1) It denotes the statute 3 Car. I. c. 1, a parliamentary declaration of the liberties of the people. (See ENGLAND, vol. viii. p. 345.) (2) It denotes a mode of prosecuting a claim against the crown by a sub- ject. This remedy is said to owe its origin to Edward I. It lies as a rule for obtaining possession of real or personal property, or for breach of contract, not for breach of public duty, as failure to perform treaty obligations, or for trespass, or for negligence of crown servants. The remedy where the crown is in possession of property of the sup- pliant, and the title of the crown appears-by record, as by inquest of office, is a somewhat different one, called mon- strans de droit. The procedure on a petition of right is either at common law or by statute. At common law the petition suggests such a right as controverts the title of the crown, and the crown indorses upon the petition Sozt droit fait al partie. Thereupon a commission is issued to inquire into the truth of the suggestion. After the return to the commission, the attorney-general pleads or demurs, and the merits are then determined as in actions between subject and subject. If the right be determined against the crown, judgment of ousterlemain or amoveas manus is given in favour of the suppliant. The Petitions of Right Act 1860 (23 and 24 Vict. c. 34, extended to Ireland by 36 and 37 Vict. c. 69) preserves to the suppliant his right to proceed at common law, but gives an alternative remedy. In proceedings under the statute the petition is left with the secretary of state for the home department for her majesty's consideration. She, if she think fit, grants her fiat that right be done, whereupon the fiat is served upon the

solicitor to the treasury, and a statement of defence is put in on behalf of the crown. The proceed- ings are thenceforth assimilated as far as possible to those in an ordinary action. A judgment in favour of the sup- pliant is equivalent to a judgment of amoveas manus. Costs are payable to and by the crown. A petition of right is tried in the Chancery or Queen's Bench Division, unless the subject-matter of the petition arises out of the exercise of belligerent right on behalf of the crown, or would be cognizable in a prize court if the matter were in dispute between private persons. In either of these cases the suppliant may at his option intitule his petition in the Admiralty Division (27 and 28 Vict. c. 25, s. 52). (3. wT.)

PETRA (7 Ilérpa, in ecclesiastical writers also ai Hérpaz), the capital city of the NAaBATHANS (q.v.), and the great centre of their caravan trade, is described by Strabo (xvi. p. 779) as lying in a level place, well supplied with water for horticulture and other uses, but encircled bya girdle of rocks, abrupt towards the outer side. The surrounding country was barren, especially towards Judzea ; the distance from Jericho was three to four days' journey, and from Phoenicum on the Red Sea, coast five (see plate VI., vol. vii.). Accord-

ing to Pliny (WV. #., vi. 144) the little valley of Petra is not quite 2 miles across, and lies at the junction of two roads, from Palmyra and Gaza respectively, 600 miles from the latter. These and other ancient notices leave no doubt as to the identity of the site with the modern Wady Musé in the mountains which form the eastern wall of the great valley between the Dead Sea and the Gulf of Akaba. Wady Musa lies just north of the watershed between the two seas, in 30° 19' N. lat. and 35° 31' E. long.! Travellers coming up the Arabah usually approach the ruins of Petra from the south-west by a rough path, partly of artificial construc- tion"; but the natural entrance is from the east down a narrow defile more than a mile long, called the Sik ("shaft"). The Sik is a contraction in the valley of a stream which comes down from the east, rising in a spring now known as the Fountain of Moses ('Ain Muséd),* and passing between the villages of Elji and 'Aireh (Palmer). Both these places are ancient; the latter is the fortress Wo'aira of YAkut,* while Elji, mentioned by Edrisi, is the "Gaia

urbs juxta civitatem Petram” of the Onomasticon.® Below these and above the ravine the characteristic rock- cut tombs and dwellings of the Nabatzans begin to appear. But to reach the city proper from these upper settlements one must traverse the whole length of the defile, which is simply a narrow waterway, in some places not more than 10 or 12 feet broad, and walled in by rich brown or red precipices rising from 60 to 120 feet (De Luynes; Stanley doubles this height) above the stream. In ancient times there was a paved path beside the channel, and remains of an arch spanning it are seen high in the air near the en- trance. Towards the lower end of the gorge, a turn in the dark path and the descent of a side valley admit a sudden flood of light, and here stands the most famous ruin of Petra, the so-called Khazna, or ‘treasury of Pharaoh,” with a rich facade of late Roman style, not built but hewn out of the rose-coloured limestone. The next turn gives room for a rock-cut theatre, and from this point the gorge begins to open out into the little plain described by Strabo, and gives perhaps the most striking view of the multi- plicity of grottoes with elaborate classical fagades which line the enclosing mountain-wall. The plain itself is strewn with ruins of temples and other buildings, and stairs once led up the rocky walls to higher structures, of which the most notable is now called the “convent” (Al-Deir). The grottoes are inhabited in cold weather by the Liyé- thina Fellahin, who also hold the upper part of the valley, and are so troublesome and extortionate that no thorough exploration of the district has yet been carried out. It is not even known where the torrent-bed leads on leaving the plain of Petra. De Luynes describes the water as wholly absorbed by the sands near the theatre, but there is an unexplored gorge to the south-west which is the con- tinuation of the valley.

The Nabatzeans, as we see from Diodorus, used Petra as a place of refuge and a safe storehouse for their treasures of frankincense, myrrh, and silver before they gave up their nomadic habits. But Petra was not only safe and well

1 The latitude and longitude are taken from De Luynes’s map. Ptolemy, who, according to Olympiodorus, spent some time in Petra, and doubtless owes to this fact his excellent information about the caravan-routes in Arabia, gives the latitude, with surprising accuracy, as 80° 20’.

2 Compare Diod., xix. 97, who describes the Nabatean fortress— it was not a town at the time in question (312 B.c.), for the Nabateans were still nomads when they were attacked by Antigonus—as ascended to by a single artificial path.

3 This seems to be the fountain mentioned by Nowairi, ap. Quatre- mére's Mélanges, p. 84, which flowed with blood and was changed to water by Moses. The name Od-dema, which gave rise to this legend, may possibly be a relic of the old name of Edom.

4 Perhaps also the Iram, OVY, of Gen. xxxvi. 43.

5 See Tuch's Genesis, 2d ed., p. 271, note.

watered, it lay close to the most important lines of trade. | s.a. ; Palmer, Desert of the Exodus, vol. ii., 1871; Stanley, Sinai

The modern pilgrim-road from Damascus to Mecca, which has taken the place of the old incense-route, passes indeed a little to the east by Ma'an. But to touch Petra involves no great detour even on this line, and in ancient times, when Gaza was the great terminus of the Arabian trade, Petra was the place where the Gaza road branched off from that to Bostra, Palmyra, and north Syria. The route from Egypt to Damascus is also commanded by Petra, and from it too there went a great route direct through the desert to the head of the Persian Gulf. Thus Petra became a centre for all the main lines of overland trade between the East and the West, and it was not till the fall of the Nabatean kingdom that PatmyRra (q.v.) superseded it as the chief emporium of north Arabia. Many Roman and other foreign merchants were settled here even in the time of Strabo, and he describes the caravans which

passed between it and Leuce Come on the Red Sea coast as comparable to armies.

Petra! is a Greek name which cannot have been that used by the Semitic inhabitants, and from Josephus (Axt., iv. 7,1; 4,7) and the Onomastica (ed. Lag., p. 286 sq.) it may be concluded that the natives called the place Rekem (aps), a designation probably derived from the variegated colours of the rocks about Wady Musa, to which all travellers refer with admiration.2 But Petra had yet another ancient name familiar from the Bible. The Biblical Sela (generally with the article ybpn), a city of

Edom (2 Kings xiv. 7 ; Isa. xvi. 1 ; also Judges i. 36, where E.V. has “the rock” ; perhaps also Isa. xi. 11), appears to be identified with Petra by the LXX., and certainly is so by the Onomastica. Petra, in fact, or the ‘‘rock,” seems to be simply a translation of Sela, but a somewhat loose one,—for the Hebrew name, corresponding to the Arabic Sal‘, is properly a hollow between rocks, just such a place as Petra is. The fortress of Edom, according to Obadiah 3, lay “in the clefts of the Sela,” and seemed impregnable. And that the name of Sela survived the Nabatzean occupation is known from Yakut, who places a fortress Sal‘ in Wady Mus& (comp. Néldeke in Z7.D.IL.G., xxv. 259). Petra, therefore, was a city before the Nabateans, and, occupying one of the few cultivable spots in the dis- trict, probably never wholly ceased to be inhabited. This identification disposes of another which was accepted alike by the Jewish and Christian Aramaic versions of the Old Testament, and, passing from the Aramzans to the Arabs, has given rise to the modern names Fountain and Wady of Moses (comp. Yakut, iv. 879). According to these versions Rkém, Rkaém, or more precisely Rkém of Gaid (that is, Elji), is Kadesh Barnea, where flowed the waters of Strife or “well of judgment” (Gen. xiv. 7; Num. xx. 1 sq., xxvil. 14), where Moses struck the rock. This view is ably supported by Greene (The Hebrew Migration from Egypt); others identify Kadesh with ‘Ain Kadifs (Kudais) on the south border of Judea.

Petra survived the fall of the Nabatean kingdom, and indeed most of the buildings may be dated from the 2d and 3d centuries. It appears from coins that Hadrian took it into favour and gave it his name. But Palmyra absorbed its trade with the Persian Gulf, and long before Islam the great ineense-

route was deserted and left Petra, like the more southern Nabatean city of Egra (Hijr), to fall into ruin. The ruins were an object of euriosity in the Middle Ages, and were visited by Sultan Bibars (Quatremére, J.c.). The first European to describe them was Burekhardt, and sinee his time they have often been visited. See the descriptions, plans, and views of Laborde and Linant, Arabie Petrée (Paris, 1830-34) ; the Due de Luynes, Voyage d'cxploration a& la mer morte, &e., Paris,

1 Arabia Petrea is not properly Stony Arabia, but the Arabia of which Petra is the centre—% xara Iérpay ApaBla of Agathemerus.

2 The rock-hewn city of Rakim (Istakhri, 64 ; éogr. d' Abulf., Fr. tr., i. 2, 5), which Schultens (Ind. Geog. in Vit. Sal.) proposes to Mee with Petra, is a different place, close to 'Amman (Mokaddasi, p. :

and Palestine; Guérin, Terre Sainte, 1888. (W. R. 8S.)

PETRARCH (1304-1374). Francesco Petrarca, eminent in the history of literature both as one of the four classical Italian poets and also as the first true reviver of learning in medieval Europe, was born at Arezzo on 20th July 1304. His father Petracco held a post of notary in the Florentine Rolls Court of the Riformagioni ; but, having espoused the same cause as Dante during the quarrels of the Blacks and Whites, Petracco was expelled from Florence by that decree of 27th January 1302 which condemned the poet of the Dzvine Comedy to lifelong exile. With his wife he took refuge in the Ghibelline township of Arezzo ; and it was here, on the very night when his father, in company with other members of the White party, made an unsuccessful attempt to enter Florence by force, that Francesco first saw the light. He did not remain long in his birthplace. His mother, having obtained permission to return from banishment, settled at Incisa, a little village on the Arno above Florence, in February 1305. Here Petrarch spent seven years of boyhood, acquiring that pure Tuscan idion1 which afterwards he used with such con- summate mastery in ode and sonnet. Here too, in 1307, his brother Gherardo was born. In 1312 Petracco set up a house for his family at Pisa ; but soon afterwards, finding no scope there for the exercise of his profession as jurist, he removed them all in 1313 to Avignon. 'This was a step of no small importance for the future poet-scholar. Avignon at that period still belonged to Provence, and owned King Robert of Naples as

sovereign. But the popes had made it their residence after the insults offered to Boniface VIII. at Anagni in 1303. Avignon was there- fore the centre of that varied society which the high pontiffs of Christendom have ever gathered round them. Nowhere else could the youth of genius who was destined to impress a cosmopolitan stamp on medieval culture and to begin the modern era have grown up under conditions more favourable to his task. At Incisa and at Pisa he had learned his mother-tongue. At Carpentras, under the direction of Convennole of Prato, he studied the humani- ties between the years 1315 and 1319. Avignon, at a distance from the party strife and somewhat parochial politics of the Italian commonwealths, impressed his mind with an ideal of civility raised far above provincial pre-judices. What Petrarch lost in depth and intensity he gained in breadth and serenity by this exile's education. That disengagement from local circumstance which marks his patriotic theories, that conception of self-culture as an end in itself which distinguishes the humanism he in-augurated, were natural toa man who had no country, and who found the spiritual city of his studies and his aspira- tions in all quarters of the habitable globe.

Petrarch's real name, according to Tuscan usage, was Francesco di Petracco. But he altered this patronymic, for the sake of euphony, to Petrarca, proving by this slight change his emancipation from usages which, had he dwelt at Florence, would most probably have been imposed on him. It does not appear that he was attached to either his father or his mother ; and, though he loved his brother Gherardo dearly, we recognize in him that type of character for which the self-chosen ties of friendship are more en-thralling than the piety of domestic affection. Petracco, who was very anxious that his eldest son should become an eminent jurist, sent him at the age of fifteen to study law at Montpellier. Like Ovid and many other poets, Petrarch felt no inclination for his father's profession. His intellect, indeed, was not incapable of understanding and admiring the majestic edifice of Roman law; but he shrank with disgust from the illiberal technicalities of practice. There is an authentic story of Petracco's flinging

the young student's books of poetry and rhetoric upon the fire, but saving Virgil and Cicero half-burned from the flames at his son's passionate entreaties. Notwithstanding Petrarch's firm determination to make himself a scholar and a man of letters rather than a lawyer, he so far submitted to his father's wishes as to remove about the year 1323 to Bologna, which was then the headquarters of juristic learning. There he stayed with his brother Gherardo until 1326, when his father died, and he returned to Avignon. Banishment and change of place had already diminished Petracco's fortune, which was never large ; and a fraudulent administration of his estate after his death left the two heirs in almost complete destitution. The most precious remnant of Petrarch's inheritance was a MS. of Cicero. There remained no course open for him but to take orders. This he did at once on his arrival in Provence ; and we have good reason to believe that he advanced in due time to the rank of priest. A great Roman noble and ecclesiastic, Giacomo Colonna, afterwards bishop of Lombez, now befriended him, and Petrarch lived for some years in partial dependence on this patron.

On the 6th of April 1327 happened the most famous event of Petrarch's history. He saw Laura for the first time in the church of St Clara at Avignon. Who Laura was remains uncertain still, That she was the daughter of Audibert de Noves and the wife of Hugh de Sade rests partly on tradition and partly on documents which the abbé de Sade professed to have copied from originals in the last century. Nothing is now extant to prove that, if this lady really existed, she was the Laura of the Canzon- zere, while there are reasons for suspecting that the abbé was either the fabricator of a romance flattering to his own family, or the dupe of some previous impostor. We may, however, reject the sceptical hypothesis that Laura was a mere figment of Petrarch's fancy ; and, if we accept her personal reality, the poems of her lover demonstrate that she was a married woman with whom he enjoyed a respectful and not very intimate friendship.

Petrarch's inner life after this date is mainly occupied with the passion which he celebrated in his Italian poems, and with the friendships which his Latin epistles dimly reveal to us. Besides the bishop of Lombez he was now on terms of intimacy with another member of the great Colonna family, the Cardinal Giovanni. A German, Lud- wig, whom he called Socrates, and a

Ronian, Lello, who received from him the classic name of Lelius, were among his best-loved associates. He probably owed his livelihood to the generosity of prelates, with whom he played the courtier or the secretary ; for we do not hear of his having occupied any benefice at this period. Avignon was the chief seat of his residence up to the year 1333, when he became restless, and undertook his first long journey. On this occasion he visited Paris, Ghent, Liége, Cologne, making the acquaintance of learned men and copying the manuscripts of classical authors. On his return to Avignon he engaged in public affairs, pleaded the cause of the Sealigers in their lawsuit with the Rossi for the lordship of Parma, and addressed two poetical epistles to Pope Benedict XII. upon the restoration of the papal see to Rome. His eloquence on behalf of the tyrants of Verona was successful. It won him the friendship of their ambas- sador, Azzo di Correggio,—a fact which subsequently in- fluenced his life in no small measure. At the same time his treatment of the papal question made him pose as an Italian patriot clinging to the ideal of Rome as the sovereign city of civilization. Not very long after these events Petrarch made his first journey to Rome, a journey memorable from the account which he has left us of the impression he received from its ruins.

It was some time in the year 1337 that he established

Yeu? himself at Vaucluse and began that life of solitary study heightened by communion with nature in her loneliest and wildest moods, which distinguished him in so remarkable a degree from the common herd of medieval scholars. Here he spent his time partly among books, neditating on Roman history, and preparing himself for the Latin epic of Africa. In his hours of recreation he climbed the hills or traced the Sorgues from its fountain under those tall limestone cliffs, while odes and sonnets to Madonna Laura were committed from his memory to paper. We may also refer many of his most important treatises in prose, as well as a large portion of his Latin correspondence, to the leisure he enjoyed in this retreat. Some woman, unknown to us by name, made him the father of a son, Giovanni, in the year 1337; and she was probably the same who brought him a daughter, Francesca, in 1343. Both children were afterwards legitimized by papal bulls. Meanwhile his fame as a poet in the Latin and the vulgar tongues steadily increased, until, when the first draughts of the

Africa began to circulate about the year 1339, it became mani- fest that no one had a better right to the laurel crown than Petrarch. A desire for glory was one of the most deeply-rooted passions of his nature, and one of the points in which he most strikingly anticipated the humanistic scholars who succeeded him. It is not, therefore, surprising to find that he exerted his influence in several quarters with the view to obtaining the honours of a public corona- tion. The result of his intrigues was that on a single day in 1340, the 1st of September, he received two invitations, from the university of Paris and from King Robert of Naples respectively. He chose to accept the latter, jour- neyed in February 1341 to Naples, was honourably enter- tained by the king, and, after some formal disputations on matters touching the poet's art, was sent with magnifi- cent credentials to Rome. There, in the month of April, Petrarch assumed the poet's crown upon the Capitol from the hand of the Roman senator amid the plaudits of the people and the patricians. The oration which he delivered on this occasion was composed upon these words of Virgil: '*Sed me Parnassi deserta per ardua dulcis Raptat amor."

The theme was well chosen ; and the ceremony, though we cannot but regard it with a somewhat pitying smile, was symbolical of much. According to medizval concep- tions, Rome, though abandoned by her emperor and pope, was still the mistress of the world; and the poet, who upon that April day uttered the passion for Parnassus which drew him through steep and desert regions, was destined to revive the arts and sciences in the midst of a barren age. The ancient and the modern eras met together on the Capitol at Petrarch's coronation, and a new stadium for the human spirit, that which we are wont to style Renaissance, was opened.

With the coronation in Rome a fresh chapter in the biography of Petrarch may be said to have begun. Hence- forth he ranked as a rhetorician and a poet of European celebrity, the guest of princes, and the ambassador to royal courts. During the spring months of 1341 his friend Azzo di Correggio had succeeded in freeing Parma from subjugation to the Scaligers, and was laying the foundations of his own tyranny in that city. He invited Petrarch to attend him when he made his triumphal entry at the end of May; and from this time forward for a con- siderable period Parma and Vaucluse were the two head- quarters of the poet. The one he called his

transalpine, the other his cisalpine Parnassus. The events of the next six years of his life, from May 1341 to May 1347, may be briefly recapitulated. He lost his old friend the bishop of Lombez by death and his brother Gherardo by the entrance of the latter into a Carthusian monastery. Various

small benefices were conferred upon him; and repeated offers of a papal secretaryship, which would have raised him to the highest dignities, were made and rejected. Petrarch remained true to the instinct of his own vocation, and had no intention of sacrificing his studies and his glory to ecclesiastical ambition. In January 1343 his old friend and patron Robert, king of Naples, died, and Petrarch was sent on an embassy from the papal court to his suc- cessor Joan. The notices which he has left us of Neapolitan society at this epoch are interesting, and it was now, perhaps, that he met Boccaccio for the first time. The beginning of the year 1345 was marked by an event more interestingin the scholar's eyes than any change in dynasties. This was no less than a discovery at Verona of Cicero's Familiar Letters. It is much to be regretted that Petrarch found the precious MS. so late in life, when the style of his own epistles had been already modelled upon that of Seneca and St Augustine. No one, not even Erasmus, would have profited more by the study of those epistolary masterpieces, or would have been better able to imitate their point and ease of diction, had he become acquainted with them at an earlier period.

In the month of May 1347 Cola di Rienzi accomplished that extraordinary revolution which for a short space revived the republic in Rome, and raised this enthusiast to titular equality with kings. Petrarch, who in politics was no less visionary than Rienzi, hailed the advent of a founder and deliverer in the self-styled tribune. Without considering the impossibility of restoring the majesty of ancient Rome, or the absurdity of dignifying the medieval Roman rabble by the name of Populus Romanus, he threw himself with passion into the republican movement, and sacrificed his old friends of the Colonna family to what he judged a patriotic duty. To follow the meteoric course of Rienzi through those months of mock supremacy, exile, and imprisonment at Avignon does not concern Petrarch's biographer. It will be enough to say that the poet con- tented himself with writing a rhetorical

exhortation to the Roman people on the occasion of the tribune's downfall, giving vent, as usual, through eloquence to emotions which men of more practical character strove to express in act.

Petrarch built himself a house at Parma in the autumn of 1347. Here he hoped to pursue the tranquil avocations of a poet honoured by men of the world and men of letters throughout Europe, and of an idealistic politician, whose effusions on the questions of the day were read with plea- sure for their style. But in the course of the next two years this agreeable prospect was overclouded by a series of calamities. Laura died of the plague on the 6th April 1348. Francesco degli Albizzi, Mainardo Accursio, Roberto de' Bardi, Sennuccio del Bene, Luchino Visconti, the car- dinal Giovanni Colonna, and several other friends followed to the grave in rapid succession. All of these had been intimate acquaintances and correspondents of the poet. Friendship with him was a passion ; or, what is more true perhaps, he needed friends for the maintenance of his intellectual activity at the highest point of its effectiveness, Therefore he felt the loss of these men acutely. We may say with certainty that Laura's death, accompanied by that of so many distinguished associates, was the turning-point in Petrarch's inner life. He began to think of quitting the world, and pondered a plan for establishing a kind of humanistic convent, where he might dedicate himself, in the company of kindred spirits, to still severer studies and a closer communion with God, Though nothing came of this scheme, a marked change was henceforth perceptible in Petrarch's literary compositions. The poems written In Morte di Madonna Laura are graver and of more religious tone. The prose works touch on retrospective topics or deal with subjects of deep meditation. At the

raTnia ke &

same time his renown, continually spreading, opened to him ever fresh relations with Italian despots. The noble houses of Gonzaga at Mantua, of Carrara at Padua, of Este at Ferrara, of Malatesta at Rimini, of Visconti at Milan, vied with Azzo di Correggio in entertaining the illustrious man of letters. It was in vain that his correspondents pointed out the discrepancy between his professed zeal for Italian liberties, his recent enthusiasm for the Roman republic, and this alliance with tyrants who were destroying the

freedom of the Lombard cities. Petrarch remained an incurable rhetorician ; and, while he stigmatized the despots in his ode to Italy and in his epistles to the emperor, he accepted their hospitality. They, on their part, seem to have understood his temperament, and to have agreed to recognize his political theories as of no practical import- ance. The tendency to honour men of letters and to patronize the arts which distinguished Italian princes throughout the Renaissance period first manifested itself in the attitude assumed by Visconti and Carraresi to Petrarch. When the jubilee of 1350 was proclaimed, Petrarch made a pilgrimage to Rome, passing and returning through Florence, where he established a firm friendship with Boccaccio. It has been well remarked that, while all his other friendships are shadowy and dim, this one alone stands out with clearness. Each of the two friends had a distinguished personality. Each played a foremost part in the revival of learning. Boccaccio carried his admira- tion for Petrarch to the point of worship. Petrarch repaid him with sympathy, counsel in literary studies, and moral support which helped to elevate and purify the younger poet's over-sensuous nature. It was Boccaccio who in the spring of 1351 brought to Petrarch, then resident with the Carrara family at Padua, an invitation from the seigniory of Florence to accept the rectorship of their recently-founded university. This was accompanied by a diploma of re- storation to his rights as citizen and restitution of his patrimony. But, flattering as was the offer, Petrarch declined it. He preferred his literary leisure at Vaucluse, at Parma, in the courts of princes, to a post which would have brought him into contact with jealous priors and have reduced him to the position of the servant of.a com- monwealth. Accordingly, we find him journeying again in 1351 to Vaucluse, again refusing the office of papal secretary, again planning visionary reforms for the Roman people, and beginning that curious fragment of an auto- biography which is known as the Epistle to Posterity. Early in 1353 he left Avignon for the last time, and entered Lombardy by the pass of Mont Genévre, making his way immediately to Milan. The archbishop Giovanni Visconti was at this period virtually despot of Milan. He induced Petrarch, who had long been a friend of the Visconti family, to establish himself at his court, where he found employment for him as ambassador and orator. The most memorable of his diplomatic missions was to Venice in the autumn of 1353. Towards the close of the long struggle between Genoa and the republic of St Mark the Genoese entreated Giovanni Visconti to mediate on their behalf with the

Venetians. Petrarch was entrusted with © the office ; and on 8th November he delivered a studied oration before the doge Andrea Dandolo and the great council. His eloquence had no effect; but the orator entered into relations with the Venetian aristocracy which were afterwards extended and confirmed. Meanwhile, Milan continued to be his place of residence. After Giovanni's death he remained in the court of Bernabd and Galeazzo Visconti, closing his eyes to their cruelties and exactions, serving them as a diplomatist, making speeches for them on ceremonial occasions, and partaking of' the splendid hospitality they offered to emperors and princes. It was in this capacity of an independent man of letters,

highly placed and favoured at one of the most wealthy courts of Europe, that he addressed epistles to the emperor Charles IV. upon the distracted state of Italy, and en- treated him to resume the old Ghibelline policy of imperial interference. Charles IV. passed through Mantua in the autumn of 1354. There Petrarch made his acquaintance, and, finding him a man unfit for any noble enterprise, declined attending him to Rome. When Charles returned to Germany, after assuming the crowns in Rome and Milan, Petrarch addressed a letter of vehement invective and reproach to the emperor who was so negligent of the duties imposed on him by his high office. This did not prevent the Visconti sending him on an embassy to Charles in 1356. Petrarch found him at Prague, and, after plead- ing the cause of his masters, was despatched with honour and the diploma of count palatine. His student's life at Milan was again interrupted in 1360 by a mission on which Galeazzo Visconti sent him to King John of France. The tyrants of Milan were aspiring to royal alliances ; Gian Galeazzo Visconti had been married to Isabella of France ; Violante Visconti, a few years later, was wedded to the English duke of Clarence. Petrarch was now com- missioned to congratulate King John upon his liberation from captivity in England. This duty performed, he returned to Milan, where in 1361 he received news of the deaths of his son Giovanni and his old friend Socrates. Both had been carried off by plague.

The remaining years of Petrarch's life, important as they were for the furtherance of humanistic studies, may be briefly condensed. On 11th May

1362 he settled at Padua, from the neighbourhood of which he never moved again to any great distance. The same year saw him at Venice, making a donation of his library to the republic of St Mark. Here his friend Boccaccio introduced to him the Greek teacher Leontius Pilatus. Petrarch, who possessed a MS. of Homer and a portion of Plato, never acquired the Greek language, although he attempted to gain some little knowledge of it in his later years. Homer, he said, was dumb to him, while he was deaf to Homer ; and he could only approach the Jliad in Boccaccio's rude Latin version. About this period he saw his daughter Francesca happily married, and undertook the education of a young scholar from Ravenna, whose sudden disappear- ance from his household caused him the deepest grief. This youth has been identified, but on insufficient grounds, with that Giovanni Malpaghini of Ravenna who was destined to form a most important link between Petrarch and the humanists of the next age of culture. The public affairs of Italy and Europe continued to interest him; nor was he ever idle in composing letters and orations, some of which were not without political importance, while all of them contributed to form a style that had the greatest influence over successive generations of Italian chancellors and secretaries. Gradually his oldest friends dropped off. Azzo di Correggio died in 1362, and Lelius, Simonides, Bar- bato, in the following year. His own death was reported in 1365; but he survived another decade. Much of this last stage of his life was occupied at Padua in a contro- versy with the Averroists, whom he regarded as dangerous antagonists both to sound religion and to sound culture. A curious treatise, which grew in part out of this dispute and out of a previous duel with physicians, was the book Upon his own Ignorance and that of many others. At last, in 1369, tired with the bustle of a town so big as Padua, he retired to Arqua, a village in the Euganean hills, where he continued his usual train of literary occupations, employ- ing several secretaries, and studying unremittingly. All through these declining years his friendship with Boccaccio was maintained and strengthened. It rested on a solid basis of mutual affection and of common studies, the

different temperaments of the two scholars securing them against the disagreements of rivalry or jealousy. One of Petrarch's last compositions

was a Latin version of Boceaccio's story of Griselda. On 18th July 1374 his people found the old poet and scholar dead among his books in the library of that little house which looks across the hills and lowlands toward the Adriatic.

When we attempt to estimate Petrarch's position in the history of modern culture, the first thing which strikes us is that he was even less eminent as an Italian poet than as the founder of Humanism, the inaugurator of the Renaissance in Italy. What he achieved for the modern world was not merely to bequeath to his Italian imitators masterpieces of lyrical art unrivalled for perfection of workmanship, but also, and far more, to open out for Europe a new sphere of mental activity. Standing within the threshold of the Middle Ages, he surveyed the king- dom of the modern spirit, and, by his own inexhaustible indu:try in the field of scholarship and study, he deter- mined what we call the revival of learning. By bringing the men of his own generation into sympathetic contact with antiquity, he gave a decisive impulse to that European movement which restored freedom, self-consciousness, and the faculty of progress to the human intellect. The warm recognition which he met with in his lifetime and the extra- ordinary activity of his immediate successors prove indeed that the age itself was ripe for this momentous change. Yet it is none the less certain that Petrarch stamped his genius on the spirit of the time, that he was the hero of the humanistic effort. He was the first man to collect libraries, to accumulate coins, to advocate the preservation of antique monuments, and to collate MSS. Though he knew no Greek, he was the first to appreciate its vast importance ; and through his influence Boccaccio laid the earliest foundations of its study. More than this, he was the first to approach the great authors of antiquity with intelligence. It was not the extent but the lucidity of his erudition, not the matter but the spirit of his scholar- ship, that placed him at an immeasurable distance of superiority above his predecessors. When we compare the use which even Dante made of classical knowledge in his De Monarchia with Petrarch's touch upon the ancients in his numerous prose works, we perceive that we have passed from the medieval to the modern conception of literature. For him the authors of the Greek and Latin world were living men,—more real, in fact, than those with whom he corresponded; and the rhetorical epistles he addressed to Cicero, Seneca, and Varro prove that he dwelt with them on

terms of sympathetic intimacy. So far- reaching were the interests controlled by him in this capacity of humanist that his achievement as an Italian lyrist seems by comparison insignificant.

Petrarch's ideal of humanism was essentially a noble one. He regarded the orator and the poet as teachers, bound to complete themselves by education, and to exhibit to the world an image of perfected personality in prose and verse of studied beauty. Self-culture and self-effectuation seemed to him the highest aims of man. Everything which contributed to the formation of a free, impassioned, liberal individuality he regarded as praiseworthy. Everything which retarded the attainment of that end was contempt- ible in his eyes. The authors of antiquity, the Holy Scrip- tures, and the fathers of the church were valued by him as one common source of intellectual enlightenment. Emi- nently religious, and orthodox in his convictions, he did not seek to substitute a pagan for the Christian ideal. This was left for the scholars of the 15th and 16th centuries in Italy. At the same time, the Latin orators, historians, and poets were venerated by him as depositaries of a tradition only second in importance to revelation. For

him there was no schism between Rome and Galilee, be- tween classical genius and sacred inspiration. Though the latter took the first rank in relation to man's eternal wel- fare, the former was necessary for the perfection of his intellect and the civilization of his manners. With this double ideal in view, Petrarch poured scorn upon the French physicians and the Italian Averroists for their illiberal philistinism, no less than for their materialistic impiety. True to his conception of independent intellectual activity, he abstained from a legal career, refused import- ant ecclesiastical office, and contented himself with paltry benefices which implied no spiritual or administrative duties, because he was resolved to follow the one purpose of his life,—self-culture. Whatever in literature revealed the hearts of men was infinitely precious to him ; and for this reason he professed almost a cult for St Augustine. It was to Augustine, as to a friend or a confessor, that he poured forth the secrets of his own soul in the book De Contemptu Mundi.

In this effort to realize his truest self Petrarch was eminently successful. Much as he effected by restoring to the world a sound conception of learning, and by rousing that genuine love and curiosity which led to the revival, he did even more by impressing on the age his own full- formed and striking personality. In all things he was original. Whether we regard him as a priest who published poem after poem in praise of an adored mistress, as a plebeian man of letters who conversed on equal terms with kings and princes, as a solitary dedicated to the love of nature, as an amateur diplomatist treating affairs of state with pompous eloquence in missives sent to popes and emperors, or again as a traveller eager for change of scene, ready to climb mountains for the enjoyment of broad prospects over spreading champaigns; in all these divers manifestations of his peculiar genius we trace some contrast with the manners of the 14th century, some emphatic anticipation of the 16th. The defects of Petrarch's char- acter were no less striking than its qualities, and were indeed their complement and counterpart. That vivid conception of intellectual and moral self-culture which deterniined his ideal took the form in actual life of all- absorbing egotism. He was not content with knowing himself to be the leader of the age. He claimed autocracy, suffered no rival near his throne, brooked no contradiction, demanded unconditional submission to his will and judg- ment. His friends were treated by him as subordinates and vassals with exacting magnanimity. The preoccu- pation with himself, which makes his letters and prose treatises a mine of autobiographical information, rouses a certain contempt when we watch it degenerating into vanity, appetite for flattery, intrigues for the poet's crown, restless change from place to place in search of new admirers, desire for ceremonial pomp, and half-concealed detraction of superior genius. Petrarch was made up of contradictions. Praising solitude, playing the hermit at Vaucluse, he only loved seclusion as a contrast to the society of courts; while he penied dissertations on the futility of fame and the burden of celebrity, he was trimming his sails to catch the breeze of popular applause. No one professed a more austere morality, and few medieval writers indulged in cruder satire on the female sex ; yet he passed some years in the society of a concubine, and his living masterpiece of art is the apotheosis of chivalrous passion for a woman. These discords of an undecided nature displayed themselves in his political theories and in his philosophy of conduct. In one mood he was fain to ape the antique patriot ; in another he affected the monastic saint. He was

clamorous for the freedom of the Roman people ; yet at one time he called upon the popes to re-establish themselves in the Eternal City ; at another he besought the emperor to make it his

headquarters ; at a third he hailed in Rienzi the founder of a new republic. He did not perceive that all these plans were incompatible. His relations to the Lombard nobles were equally at variance with his professed patriotism ; and, while still a housemate of Visconti and Correggi, he kept on issuing invectives against the tyrants who divided Italy. It would not be difficult to multiply these antitheses in the character and the opinions of this singular man. But it is more to the purpose to remark that they were harmonized in a personality of potent and enduring force. Petrarch was essentially the first of the moderns, the ancestor of Hamlet and Faust, Rousseau and Childe Harold. That strange spirit of unrest and melancholy, of malady and isolation, which drove him from time to time into the desert, where he sought companionship with the great writers of the past, was the inner witness to an irresoluble contradiction between himself and the age in which he lived.

The point to notice in this complex personality is that Petrarch's ideal remained always literary. As philosopher, politician, historian, essayist, orator, he aimed at lucid and harmonious expression,—not, indeed, neglecting the import- ance of the material he undertook to treat, but approach- ing his task in the spirit of an artist rather than a thinker or a man of action. This accounts for his bewildering versatility, and for his apparent want of grasp on conditions of fact. Viewed in this light Petrarch anticipated the Italian Renaissance in its weakness,—that philosophical superficiality, that tendency to ornate rhetoric, that pre- occupation with stylistic trifles, that want of profound con- viction and stern sincerity, which stamp its minor literary products with the note of mediocrity. Had Petrarch been possessed with a passion for some commanding principle in politics, morality, or science, instead of with the thirst for self-glorification and the ideal of artistic culture, it is not wholly impossible that Italian humanism might have assumed a manlier and more conscientious tone. But this is not a question which admits of discussion ; for the con- ditions which made

Petrarch what he was were already potent in Italian society. He did but express the spirit of the period he opened ; and it may also be added that his own ideal was higher and severer than that of the illus- trious humanists who followed him.

As an author Petrarch must be considered from two points of view,—first as a writer of Latin verse and prose, secondly as an Italian lyrist. In the former capacity he was speedily outstripped by more fortunate scholars. His eclogues and epistles and the epic of Africa, on which he set such store, exhibit a comparatively limited command of Latin metre. His treatises, orations, and familiar letters, though remarkable for a prose style which is emi- nently characteristic of the man, are not distinguished by purity of diction. Much as he admired Cicero, it is clear that he had not freed himself from current medieval Latinity. Seneca and Augustine had been too much used by him as models of composition. At the same time it will be conceded that he possessed a copious vocabulary, a fine ear for cadence, and the faculty of expressing every shade of thought or feeling. What he lacked was that insight into the best classical masterpieces, that command of the best classical diction, which is the product of suc- cessive generations of scholarship. To attain to this, Giovanni da Ravenna, Colluccio Salutato, Poggio, and Filelfo had to labour, before a Poliziano and a Bembo finally prepared the path for an Erasmus. Had Petrarch been born at the close of the 15th instead of at the open- ing of the 14th century there is no doubt that his Latinity would have been as pure, as versatile, and as pointed as that of the witty stylist of Rotterdam.

With regard to his Italian poetry Petrarch occupies a

very different position. The Mame in Vita e Morte di Madonna Laura cannot become obsolete, for perfect metrical form has here been married to language of the choicest and the purest. It is true that even in the Can- zomere, as Italians prefer to call that collection of lyrics, Petrarch is not devoid of faults belonging to his age, and affectations which have imposed themselves with disastrous effect through his authority upon the literature of Europe. He appealed in his odes and sonnets to a restricted audi- ence already educated by the chivalrous love-poetry of Provence and by Italian

imitations of that style. He was not careful to exclude the commonplaces of the school, nor anxious to finish a work of art wholly free from fashion- able graces and from contemporary conceits. There is therefore a certain element of artificiality in his treatment; and this, since it is easier to copy defects than excellencies, has been perpetuated with wearisome monotony by versi- fiers who chose him for their model. But, after making due allowance for peculiarities, the abuse of which has brought the name of Petrarchist into contempt, we can agree with Shelley that the lyrics of the Canzoniere "are as spells which unseal the inmost enchanted fountains of the delight which is the grief of love." That is to say, Petrarch in this monumental series of odes and sonnets depicted all the moods of a real passion, and prescnted them in a style of such lucidity, with so exquisite a command of rhythmical resources, and with humanity of emotion so simple and so true, as to render his portrait of a lover's soul applicable to all who have loved and will love for ages. If space sufficed much might be written about the peculiar position held by Petrarch between the metaphysical lyrists of Tuscany and the more realistic amorists of succeeding generations. True in this respect also to his anticipation of the coming age, he was the first Italian poet of love to free himself from allegory and mysticism. Yet he was far from approaching the analysis of emotion with the directness of a Heine or De Musset. Though we believe in the reality of Laura, we derive no clear conception either of her person or her character. She is not so much a woman as woman in the abstract ; and perhaps on this very account the poems written for her by her lover have been taken to the heart by countless lovers who came after him. The method of his art is so general- izing, while his feeling is so natural, that every man can see himself reflected in the singer and his mistress shadowed forth in Laura. The same criticism might be passed on Petrarch's descriptions of nature. That he felt the beauties of nature keenly is certain, and he frequently touches them with obvious appreciation. Yet he has written nothing so characteristic of Vaucluse as to be inapplicable to any solitude where there are woods and water. The Canzoniere is therefore one long melodious monody poured from the poet's soul, with the indefinite form of a beautiful woman seated in a lovely landscape, a perpetual object of delightful contemplation. This dis- engagement from local circumstance without the sacrifice of emotional sincerity is a merit in Petrarch, but it became a fault in his imitators. Lacking his intensity of passion and his admirable faculty

for seizing the most evanescent shades of difference in feeling, they degenerated into colourless and lifeless insipidities made insupportable by the frigid repetition of tropes and conceits which we are fain to pardon in the master.

Petrarch did not distinguish himself by love-poetry alone in the Italian language. His odes to Giacomo Colonna, to Cola di Rienzi, and to the princes of Italy display him in another light. They exhibit the oratorical fervour, the pleader's eloquence in its most perfect lustre, which Petrarch possessed in no less measure than subjective pas- sion. Modern literature has nothing nobler, nothing more

harmonious in the declamatory style than these three patriotic effusions. Their spirit itself is epoch-making in the history of Europe. Up to this point Italy had scarcely begun to exist. There were Florentines and Lombards, Guelfs and Ghibellines ; but even Dante had scarcely con- ceived of Italy as a nation, independent of the empire, inclusive of her several component commonwealths. To the high conception of Italian nationality, to the belief in that spiritual unity which underlay her many discords and divisions, Petrarch attained partly through his disengage- ment from civic and local partisanship, partly through his large and liberal ideal of culture. It was the function of the Renaissance to bring all parts of the Italian peninsula into an intellectual harmony by means of common enthu- siasm for arts and letters. But it remained for the present century to witness the political consolidation of the Italian people under a single government.

The materials for a life of Petrarch are afforded in abundance by his letters, eollected and prepared for publieation under his own eyes. These are divided into Familiar Correspondence, Correspond- enee in Old Age, Divers Letters, and Letters without a Title; to which may be added the curious autobiographical fragment entitled the Epistle to Posterity. Next in importance rank the epistles and eclogues in Latin verse, the Italian poems, and the rhetorieal addresses to popes, empcrors, Cola di Rienzi, and some great men of antiquity. For the comprehension of his character the treatise De Contemptu Mundi, addressed to St Augustine and styled his Secret, is invaluable. Without attempting a complete list of Petrarch's works, it may

be well to illustrate the extent of his eru- dition and his activity as a writer by a brief enumeration of the most important. In the section belonging to moral philosophy we find De Remediis Utriusque Fortun#, a treatise on human happi- ness and unhappiness ; De Vita Solitaria, a panegyrie of solitude ; De Otio Religiosorum, a similar essay on monastic life, inspired by a visit to his brother Gherardo in his eonvent near Marseilles. On historical subjects the most considerable are Rerwm Memorandarum Libri, a miscellany from a student's commonplace-book, and De Virts illustribus, an epitome of the biographies of Roman worthies. Three polemical works require mention : Contra eujusdam anonymi Galli calumnias Apologia, Contra Medieum quendam Invectivarum Libri, and De sui ipsius et multorum Ignorantia,—controversial and sarcastic compositions, which grew out of Petrarch's quarrels with the physicians of Avignon and the Averroists of Padua. In this connexion it might also be well to mention the remarkable satires on the papal court, included in the Epistolz sine Titulo. Five public orations have been preserved, the most weighty of which, in explanation of Petrarch's conception of literature, is the speeeh delivered on the Capitol upon the occasion of his coronation. Among his Latin poems Africa, an epic on Scipio Africanus, takes the first place. Twelve Eclogues and three books of Zpisties in verse close the list. In Italian we possess the Canzoniere, whieh includes odes and sonnets written for Laura during her lifetime, those written for her after her death, and a miscellaneous section containing the three patriotic odes and three famous poetical invectives against the papal court. Besides these lyrical composi- tions are the semi-epical or allegorical Trionfi,—Triumphs of Love, Chastity, Death, Fame, Time, and Divinity, written in terza rima of smooth and limpid quality. Though these Triumphs, as a whole, are deficient in poetic inspiration, the second eanto of the Z'rionfo della Morte, in whieh Petrarch describes a vision of his dead love Laura, is justly famous for reserved passion and pathos tempered to a tranquil harmony.

The complete bibliography of Petrarch forms a considerable volunie. Such a work was attempted by Domenico Rossetti (Trieste, 1828). 1t will be enough here to mention the Basel edition of 1581, in folio, as the basis for all subsequent editions of his collected works. Two editions of the Canzoniere deserve especial notice,—that of Marsand (Padua, 1820) and that of Leopardi in Le Monnier's col- lection. Nor must Fracassetti's ltalian

version of the Letters (published in 5 vols. by Le Monnier) be neglected. De Sade's Life of the poet (Amsterdam, 1764-67) marks an epoch in the history of his numerous biographies ; but this is in many important points untrustworthy, and it has been superseded by Gustav Koerting's exhaustive volume on Petrarca's Leben und Werke (Leipsic, 1878). Georg Voigt's Wiederbelebung des classischen Alterthums (Berlin, 1859) contains a well-digested estimate of Petrarch's relation to the revival of learn- ing. Meziere's Petrarque (1868) is a monograph of merit. English readers may be referred to a little book on Petrarch by Henry Reeve, and to vols. ii. and iv. of Symonds's Renaissance in Italy. (J. A. 8.)

PETREL, the name applied in a general way to a group of Birds (of which more than 100 species are recognized) from the habit which some of them possess of apparently walking on the surface of the water as the apostle St Peter (of whose name the word is a diminutive form) is recorded (Matt. xiv. 29) to have done. Fora long while the Petrels were ranked as a Family, under the name of Procell-

artvidz,! and thought to be either very nearly allied to the Gulls, Laride, or intermediate between that Family and the Steganopodes ; but this opinion has gradually given way, and it is now hard to resist the conclusion that they have to be regarded as an ''Order," to which the name 7'ubinares has been applied from the tubular form of their nostrils, a feature possessed in greater or less degree by all of them, and by which each may at a glance be recognized. They have usually been subdivided into three groups or Sub-families, (1) Pelecanoidine (or Halodrominz), containing some three or four species known as Diving-Petrels, with habits very different from others of the Family, and almost peculiar to high southern latitudes from Cape Horn to New Zealand ; (2) Procellarune, or Petrels proper ; and (3) Diomedeinz, or Albatrosses (cf. MALLEMUCK, vol. xv. p. 334). Recently, however, the anatomy of the group has been subjected to very close examination by Garrod and W. A. Forbes, the latter of whom has summed up the results obtained by himself and his predecessor in an ela- borate essay, forming part ix. of the Zoology of the voyage of the " Challenger," which shew determinations that differ greatly from any that had been reached by prior

system- atists. According to these investigators, the Tubinares are composed of two Families, Procellaricdz and Oceanitidz, whose distinctness had never before been suspected 2—the latter consisting of four genera not very much differing in appearance from many others, while the former includes as Subfamilies the Albatrosses, Diomedeinx, with three genera, Diomedea, Thalassiarche, and Phebetria, and the true Petrels, Procellariinz, in which last are combined forms so different externally and in habit as the Diving-Petrels, above noticed, the Storm-Petrels, Procellaria, the Flat-billed Petrels, Prion, the FutmMar (vol. ix. p. 817), the SuEar-WATERS (g.v.), and others. Want of space forbids us here dwelling on the characters assigned to these different groups, or the means which have led to this classification of it, set forth at great length in the essay cited, where also will be found copious references to previous studies of the Petrels, among which may here be especially men- tioned those of MM. Hombron and Jacquinot (Comptes fiendus, 1844, pp. 353-358, and Zool. Voy. au Pol Sud, vol. iii.), Prof. Coues (Proc. Acad. Philadelphia, 1864, pp. 72-91, 116-144, and 1866, pp. 25-33, 134-197), and Mr Salvin (Orn. Miscellany, ii. pp. 223-238, 249-257; and Zoology, Voy. “ Challenger,” pt. viii. pp. 140-149). Petrels are dispersed throughout all the seas and oceans of the world, and some species apparently never resort to land except for the purpose of nidification, though nearly all are liable at times to be driven ashore, and often very far inland, by gales of wind.? It would also seem that during the breeding-season many of them are wholly noc- turnal in their habits, passing the day in holes of the ground, or in clefts of the rocks, in which they generally nestle, the hen of each pair laying a single white egg, sparsely speckled in a few species with fine reddish dots. Of those species that frequent the North Atlantic, the common Storm-Petrel, Procellaria pelagica, a little bird which has to the ordinary eye rather the look of a Swift or Swallow, is the “ Mother Carey’s chicken ” of sailors, and is widely believed to be the harbinger of bad weather P but seamen hardly discriminate between this and others

nearly resembling it in appearance, such as Leach’s or the eS ae ee ee

1 Most commonly but erroneously spelt Procellaride.

? It is due to Prof. Coues to state that in 1864 he had declared the genus Oceanttes, of which he only knew the external characters, to be “the most distinct and remarkable” of the ‘ Procellariex,” though he never thought of making it the type of a separate Family.

3 Thus (strelata hesitata, the Capped Petrel, a species whose proper home seems to be Guadeloupe and some of the neighbouring West-Indian Islands, has occurred in the State of New York, near Boulogne, in Norfolk, and in Hungary (bis, 1884, p. 202)!

PET—PET

Fork-tailed Petrel, Cymochorea leucorrhoa, a rather larger but less common bird, and Wilson’s Petrel, Oceanites oceanicus, the type of the Family Oceanitidx mentioned above, which is more common on the American side, But it is in the Southern Ocean that Petrels most abound, both as species and as individuals. The Cape-Pigeon or Pintado

Petrel, Daption capensis, is one that has long been well

known to mariners and other wayfarers on the great waters, while those who voyage to or from Australia, whatever be the route they take, are certain to meet with many more species, some, as Ossifraga gigantea, as large as Alba- trosses, and several of them called by sailors by a variety of choice names, generally having reference to the strong smell of musk emitted by the birds, among which that of ‘‘Stink-pot ” is not the most opprobrious. None of the Petrels are endowed with any brilliant colouring —sooty- black, grey of various tints (one of which is often called “blue”), and white being the only hues their plumage exhibits; but their graceful flight, and their companion- ship when no other life is visible around a lonely vessel on the widest of oceans, give them an interest to beholders, though this is too often marred by the wanton destruction dealt out by brutal or thoughtless persons who thus seek to break the tediousness of a long voyage. The distri- bution of the several species of Petrels in the Southern Ocean has been ably treated by Prof. A. Milne-Edwards in the Annales des Sciences Naturelles for 1882 (ser. 6, Zoo- logve, vol. xiii. art. 4, pp. 1-22), of which essay a transla- tion will be found in the Mittheilungen des Ornithologischen Vereins in Wien for 1884. (A. WN.)

PETRIE, Georce (1790-1866), Irish antiquary, was the son of James Petrie, a native of Aberdeen, who had settled in Dublin as a portrait and miniature painter. He was born in Dublin in January 1790, and was educated to become a painter. Besides attaining considerable reputa- tion as a landscape painter of Irish scenes, he devoted much of his artistic skill to the illustration of the anti- quities of the country. Even in boyhood his love of archeology vied with his love of art and of nature. In 1828 he was appointed to conduct the antiquarian and historical section of the Ordnance Survey of Ireland, but this department of the work was not persevered in by the Government. In 1832 he became editor of the Dublin Penny Journal, a periodical designed to disseminate in- formation among the masses, to which he contributed numerous articles on the history of the fine arts in Ireland. Petrie may be regarded as the first scientific investigator of Irish archeology, his contributions to which are also in themselves of prime importance. His Essay on found Towers, for which in 1830 he received the prize of the Irish Academy, must still rank, whether or not his opinion be accepted that the round towers served the joint purpose of belfries and fortalices, as the standard work on the subject. A second edition was published in 1845. Among his other more important contributions to Irish archeology are his Essay on the Military Architecture of Ireland and his History and Antiquities of Tara Hill. In 1847 he received the degree of LL.D. from the university of Dublin, and in 1849 he was placed on the civil list for an annual pension of £300. He died 17th January 1866.

See the Life and Labours in Art and Archzxology of George Petrie, by William Stokes, 1868. —

PETROLEUM. The word “petroleum” (rock-oil ; Germ., erdél, steindl) is used to designate the forms of bitumen that are of an oily consistence. It passes by insensible gradations into the volatile and ethereal naph- thas on the one hand and the semi-fluid malthas or mineral- tars on the other.

INstory.—Petroleum has been known by civilized man

—

rureonrT Uv M

from the dawn of history. Herodotus wrote of the springs of Zacynthus (Zante), and the fountains of Hit have been celebrated by the Arabs and Persians. Pliny and Dioscorides describe the oil of Agrigentum, which was used in lamps under the name of “Sicilian oil,” and mention is made of petroleum springs in China in the earliest records of that ancient people. The abundance of petroleum and the fire- temple at Baku on the Caspian have been frequently de- scribed by travellers who have gone overland from Europe to India, from the time of Marco Polo to recent years. Petro- leum in North America was first mentioned by a Franciscan missionary, Joseph de la Roche d’Allion, in a letter written in 1629 and published in Sagard’s Histoire du Canada in 1636. Peter Kalm described the springs on Oil Creek in his book of travels in North America, published in London in 1772. In 1750 the French commander at Fort Duquesne described them in a letter to General Montcalm, and later, towards the close of the last century, frequent mention is made of-oil-springs in correspondence relating to what is now western Pennsylvania, Ohio, West Virginia, and Ken- tucky. In 1765 and 1826 the British Government sent embassies to the court of Ava, in the reports of which mention is made of the petroleum springs and wells near Rangoon on the Irawadi. During the early years of the present century the occurrence of bitumen, and particularly of its liquid forms, was noticed by scientific men and travellers in various localities. In Europe, Boussingault’s researches upon the petroleum of Bechelbronn (Lower Alsace) and the discovery of paraffin by Reichenbach attracted much attention. Petroleum was observed and described as early as 1814 in Washington county, Ohio, in wells at that time being bored for brine. In 1819 a well bored for brine in Wayne county, Kentucky, yielded so much black petroleum that it was abandoned. It has continued to yield small quantities until the present time. In 1829 a well drilled for brine near Burkesville, Cumber- land county, Kentucky, yielded such a flow of petroleum that it was regarded as a wonderful natural phenomenon. This well is estimated to have yielded, up to 1860, 50,000 barrels of oil, the larger part of which was wasted. Of the rest a few barrels were bottled and sold as a liniment in the United States and Europe under the name of “ Ameri- can oil.”

About the year 1847 E. W. Binney of Manchester, Eng- land, called attention to the petroleum discovered at Rid- dings, near Alfreton in Derbyshire, and a few years later he, together with James Young and others,

commenced the manufacture of illuminating and other oils from it. The supply of crude material from this source soon became in- adequate, and they then commenced distilling the Boghead mineral that had been found near Bathgate in Scotland. The success attending this enterprise soon attracted atten- tion in the United States of America,and a number of estab- lishments were in operation in the course of a few years, some of them being licensed under Young's patents. In 1851, when petroleum on Oil Creek was worth 75 cents a gallon in the crude state, it was tested as a crude material for the manufacture of illuminating oil by Messrs William and Luther Attwood, and Joshua Merrill, at the United States Chemical Manufacturing Company's works at Waltham, near Boston, Massachusetts, and its merits for that purpose fully established. But its scarcity at that time prevented its use in commercial quantities, and the establishments at Boston and Portland, Maine, under the charge of Messrs Merrill and William Attwood, continued to use Boghead mineral and albertite for a number of years after petroleum was produced in sufficient quantity. Petroleum was refined and offered for sale in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, as early as 1855, but the quantity was too small to influence even the local trade ; it, however, created a small demand for the

crude oil. The well-known fact that brine-wells often pro- duced petroleum led those who sold the " American oil" to embellish the label on the bottles with a derrick and other accompaniments of a brine-well; and the story is told that the projector of the first well drilled exclusively for petro- leum was led to undertake it through reflecting upon this picture. Some oil from one of the natural springs near Titusville, Pennsylvania, was sent to Professor B. Silliman, junior, of Yale College, and he made a report upon it which has become a classic in the literature of petroleum. This report was so satisfactory that a company was organized in New Haven, and E. L. Drake was sent to drill a well upon land that was leased in the valley of Oil Creek, a short distance below the spot where the city of Titus- ville now stands. The region was then almost a wilder- ness, and many delays were experienced before he succeeded in getting his men and machinery in operation. He was at first thwarted by quicksands and water, but he finally drove an iron pipe 36 feet down to the rock. This device, said to have been

original with Drake, has been of great value in artesian boring ever since he used it. After drilling 33 feet on the 28th of August 1859, the drill fell suddenly 6 inches into a crevice, and was left until the next day, when the drill-hole was found to be nearly filled with petroleum. No spot in the entire territory where petroleum has since been obtained could have been selected where the oil was to be obtained nearer the surface. The success of this enterprise led to the immediate drilling of other wells, first in the valley of Oil Creek and its tributaries, and later over the higher land between Oil Creek and the Alleghany river below Tidioute. As this territory began to be exhausted, the region of the lower Alleghany, in Butler and Clarion counties, yielded wells of great richness, and finally the Bradford field in M‘Kean county became the centre of production. A careful com- parison of the situations of some of the most productive wells led to the discovery that the areas yielding oil were not irregular in outline, but extended across the country in narrow belts, without regard to the present configuration of the surface. The areas of these belts were in general parallel, and extended in a north-east and south-west direction, 15° to 20° from the meridian. As the exhaustion of the oil-fields of Butler and Clarion counties led pro- ducers to seek a more productive locality, lines were run by compass on the supposed axis of the oil-belt over forest- covered hills for many miles, until they reached the town of Bradford, near which wells had previously been drilled without success. Deeper wells were drilled, and oil was obtained, resulting in the development since 1875 of about 68,000 acres of the most uniformly productive and exten- sive oil-territory yet discovered.

In the province of Ontario, Canada, principally in the vicinity of Enniskillen, a territory of limited extent but great productiveness has been under development for the last twenty years. In the region about Baku and in the valley of the Kuban, at the eastern and western extrem1- ties of the Caucasus, petroleum has been obtained for an unknown period, and is now being produced from artesian borings in large quantities. In Galicia and Roumania it is also obtained in commercial quantities. These regions with the United States furnish the petroleum of commerce. Japan, China, Burmah, and Italy have yielded petroleum in quantities sufficient to supply a local demand, but the vast quantity of the American oil and low price at which it is furnished have rendered the production in these coun- tries unprofitable.

Geographical Distribution.—Petroleum “was found about one hundred years since in making the duke of Bridge- water’s tunnel at Worsley, at Wigan and West Leigh in the Lancashire coal-fields, at Coalbrookdale and Wellington

XVIII. — 90

714

in Shropshire and Riddings in Derbyshire, two other coal- fields ; also in a peat-bog at Down Holland, near Orms- kirk, in Lancashire, but never in commercial quantities. The greatest supply has not been more than fifty gallons a day, and even that soon diminished.” A tar-spring was known at Coalport, in Shropshire, early in the present century. Although there are extensive deposits of solid bitumen in eastern France and Switzerland, the petroleum springs that occur at Saint Boés, Basses Pyrénées, are un- important. In Alsace, at Lobsann and Bechelbronn, petro- leum has been obtained for many years for local uses. Although reported from many localities in Germany, the only point that has promised to be of any importance is the Liineburg heath, south of Hamburg. Petroleum is also reported near Holle, in Dithmarschen, Schleswig-Holstein. On the eastern shores of the Adriatic—in Dalmatia and Albania—and in the Jonian Islands, petroleum springs have been mentioned by the writers of classical antiquity. In Armenia and Persia petroleum has been used for un- known centuries, and it appears to be widely distributed in the mountains that surround the tableland of Iran. In Algeria, Egypt, Kashmir, the Punjab, Assam, Java, and other East Indian islands petroleum is reported. In North America the successful development of the petroleum-fields of north-west Pennsylvania following the completion of Drake’s well led in a few years to the drilling of wells in a great many localities where petroleum-springs had been observed. The following so-called “ petroleum-fields ” have produced oil in commercial quantities more or less valuable.

| Maximum

} arrels: | means: Dn 0 au c lees es Oil Creek, Venango county, Pennsylvania | 1862 | 35,517,297 |

Pithole, * – | 1866 8,816,289 | Central Alleghany, ,, se 1871 6,182,900 Lower Alleghany, Butler and Clarion 1874 37,342,978 | counties 96 Tidioute, Venango and Warren counties ,, 1874 4,674,345 Bullion, Venango county Ae 1877 2,312,090 Bradford, M‘Kean county a | 1881 | 44,574,921 Warren, Warren county | 1878 | 448,213 Smith’s Ferry, Beaver county 5p | 1879 | 889,631 Mecca, Trumbull county, Ohio …….) Grafton, Lorain county, ,, . —sses..ssesss

‘Macksburg, Washington county, ,, ...,

‘ Horse Neck, Pleasants county, W. Virginia

Volcano, Wood county, 5

_ Burning Spring, Wirt county, of

| Glasgow, Barren county, Kentucky …..... |

Santa Clara Valley, Ventura county, Cali- | fornia J

A continuous small production since 1865. No record.

Besides these localities petroleum has been observed over an area 1500 miles long by an unknown breadth in the valley of the Mackenzie and its tributaries, and in New Brunswick, Newfoundland, and other portions of eastern Canada. It also occurs at many different points along the Appalachian system of mountains from Point Gaspé on the St Lawrence to northern Alabama. It has been noticed in Kansas, Missouri, Wyoming, Colorado, and Texas in the United States, in southern Mexico, in the West India Islands, and in the northern states of South America, Petroleum is one of the most widely distributed substances occurring in nature, but an examination of the geograph- ical localities in which it chiefly occurs will show them to be intimately connected with the principal mountain-chains of the world.

Geological Relations.—It has been frequently remarked that petroleum occurs in all geological formations, from the Silurian up to the Tertiary.

While this is true as a general statement, it is misleading, for petroleum is not uniformly distributed through all formations, but occurs

Pere OL tw

the Silurian and the lower half of the Tertiary. The vast accumulations along the principal axis of occurrence in the western hemisphere are found in Silurian and Devonian rocks ; the most productive axis of occurrence in the eastern hemisphere lies in the Eocene and Miocene of the Car- pathians, Transylvania, and the Caucasus. In England the small quantity of petroleum that has been observed has sprung from the Coal-measures. In the valley of the Rhone and in Savoy it is in Jurassic limestones. The bitumen of the Apennines, of Dalmatia and Albania, of Roumania, Galicia, and the Caucasus, issues for the most part from rocks that are Eocene. But little is known

respecting the geology of the bitumen of Asia Minor and —

Persia ; the Punjab is also Eocene, and the little that is known of the deposits in Burmah and the East Indian Islands indicates that they are of the same age. ast of the Mississippi river petroleum has been reported from localities that describe an ellipse upon the border of the Cincinnati anticlinal, which consists of an elevation of Silurian rocks extending from central Kentucky to Lake Erie, with the city of Cincinnati nearly in its centre, slop- ing beneath the newer formations in all directions. Start- ing at Great Manitoulin Island, in the northern part of Lake Huron, it is next reported at Port Huron, Michigan ; Chicago, Illinois; Terre Haute, and in Crawford county, Indiana; Henderson, Cloverport, Bowling Green, and Glasgow, Kentucky; and around Nashville, and south-east- wards to Chattanooga, Tennessee, where the Silurian rocks again reach the surface. Turning north, the line extends almost unbroken through the eastern counties of Kentucky into Ohio and West Virginia, into Pennsylvania and New York, the ellipse being completed by the petroleum-fields of Canada. At Great Manitoulin Island petroleum was obtained in the Trenton limestone, at Chicago and Terre Haute in the Niagara limestone, both of which are Silurian. The Kentucky geologists regard the great Devonian black slate as the source of the oil in that State. There it is found saturating sandstones at Glasgow, and in crevices at Burkesville and other points on

the Cumberland river. In the neighbourhood of Nashville, where the .Lower Silurian rocks reach the surface, petroleum occurs within geodes, which are enclosed in the solid mass of the blue limestone. North-east of Nashville the present location of the oil is found to be in rocks that lie in an ascending series. Around Burkesville it is found in the Upper Silurian, immediately beneath the Devonian black slate. Farther north it lies in the Devonian and Subcarbonifer- ous sandstones, which, in Johnson county, Kentucky, are now partly above the drainage-level of the country. The so-called “oil-break” of West Virginia and Ohio yields petroleum from sandstones that lie within the Coal- measures. Still farther to the north-east, in Pennsylvania and New York, the oil-sands are all found beneath the Coal-measures in the Upper Devonian, while in Canada they again descend to the Lower Devonian. “Petroleum exists in the Cretaceous rocks which extend along the eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains from British Colum- bia to Mexico, and in many of the interior valleys.” The bitumen of the Pacific slope, of Mexico, the West Indies, and South America, is Miocene in California and Eocene in Trinidad and Peru. From these statements it will be seen that there is a vast area in the Mississippi valley, estimated at 200,000 square miles, beneath which petroleum has been obtained, the formations of which are nowhere more recent than the Coal-measures. Another vast area, extending from California through Mexico to Peru, and including the West India Islands, yields petroleum from Tertiary rocks ; while on the eastern continent a belt of country extends from the North Sea to Java, the bitumen-bearing

principally in two epochs of geological history ; these are | rocks of which are Tertiary so far as is known, At present

the bulk of petroleum produced issues from rocks older than the Carboniferous, while the formations yielding bitumen, in by far the greater number of localities, are of Eocene age. In the great “oil-region” of the United States petroleum occurs in crevices to a very limited extent. In Canada and West Virginia it occurs beneath the crowns of anticlinals, and in Pennsylvania it saturates the porous portions of formations that lie far beneath the influence of superficial erosion, like sand-bars in a flowing

stream or detritus on a beach. These strata are not of any particular geological age, but run through a vast accumulation of sediments embraced in all the forma- tions between the Lower Devonian and Upper Carboniferous. ‘They lie conformably with the enclosing rocks, and slope gently to the south-west. The Bradford field in particular resembles a sheet of coarse-grained sandstone 100 square miles in extent, by from 20 to 80 feet in thickness, lying with its south-western edge lowest and submerged in salt water, and its north-eastern edge highest and filled with gas under an extremely high pressure. In Galicia the sandstones holding the oil are very much dis- turbed, while in the Caucasus the deposits of sand are erratic both in regard to position and extent, and lenticular in outline, being enclosed in a formation consisting of stiff blue clay.

Chemistry.—The first chemical research upon petroleum was conducted by Vauquelin in 1817 upon the naphtha of Amiano. Prior to the discovery of petroleum in commer- cial quantities, a number of European chemists had made determination of the atomic constitution of several different varieties, and it had become generally understood that the oil consisted of an equal number of atoms of carbon and hydrogen. It has since been determined that some varieties of petroleum contain nitrogen and others contain sulphur and oxygen. These last-named elements are, however, to be properly considered as components of impurities. The proximate principles of petroleum have been determined and examined chiefly by Schorlemmer in England, Pelouze and Cahours in France, and C. M. Warren and S. P. Sadtler in the United States. Many other chemists have contri- buted valuable assistance to the work. These researches have established the fact that Pennsylvania petroleum con- sists chiefly of two homologous series of isomeric compounds having the general formula C,H, +9, at one extremity of which marsh gas is found and solid paraffin at the other (see Pararrin). This oil also contains a smaller propor- tion of the olefine series, having the formula C,Ho,, with traces in the Bradford oil of the benzole series. Rangoon petroleum contains a larger proportion of both the olefine and the benzole series than Pennsylvania oil. It has been shown that Caucasian petroleum contains the additive compounds of the benzole group which have the same per- centage composition as the olefines and furnish an illumin- ating oil containing more carbon than Pennsylvania oils of the same specific gravity. The residues from the manu- facture of petroleum have been shown to

contain very dense solids and liquids of high specific gravity, having a large proportion of carbon and possessed of remarkable fluorescent properties. Some petroleums are easily cxidized into asphaltum and kindred products. Colourless illumin- ating oils under the action of light absorb oxygen, which is converted into ozone, and they become yellow and viscid and of greatly impaired quality when the action is prolonged.

Origin.—The origin of petroleum has been a subject of speculation among scientific men during the last half cen- tury. It is a subject involved in much greater obscurity than the origin of coal, for, unlike coal, it has no organic structure; hence it can only be inferred upon circumstantial evidence that it is of organic origin; yet such evidence is so strong that few competent judges have ventured to decide

otherwise. The arguments in favour of a chemical origin have been advanced almost wholly by a school of French chemists during the last twenty years, They are based upon the results of a class of experiments first inaugurated by Berthelot, in which powerful deoxidizing agents like the alkali metals or iron at a white heat are caused to react with steam and carbonic acid. The hydrogen of the water and the carbon of the carbonic acid, having been deprived of their oxygen, unite in the nascent state to form a mix- ture of oily fluids closely resembling petroleum. Sufficient quantities of these oils have been prepared to prove their identity with each other and with crude petroleum. Be- fore concluding from this circumstance that petroleum is the product of similar reactions, it is necessary to assume a condition of the earth’s interior concerning which we know nothing ; and, while the theoretical chemistry of the earth, based upon the nebular hypothesis, does not forbid such possibilities, there are other considerations relating to the origin of petroleum based upon the known rather than the possible that render the assumption that petroleum is of mineral origin forced and unnecessary. It is found that, when shale, coal, peat, wood, or animal matter, in fact any recent or fossil organic matter, is subjected to destructive distillation at low temperatures, there is ob- tained among other products an oily fluid which chemistry shows to consist chiefly of the same compounds of carbon and hydrogen as are found in Pennsylvania

petroleum. There are other petroleums, however, occurring in Canada, Tennessee, and other localities somewhat different in com- position, which are often found under conditions that make it extremely difficult to account for their origin upon any hypothesis that does not regard them as a product of the decomposition of animal remains. They fill the cavities of fossil corals and orthoceratites in Canada and of geodes in Tennessee, in all of which the oil appears to be hermetically sealed until the rock-mass is broken. The formation in which these oils occur consists of thickly-bedded Silurian limestones that were probably deposited in a deep sea at a somewhat high temperature, in which vast quantities of sea-animals perished and became buried. It is therefore most strictly in accordance with observed facts to assume that these oils, in whatever manner they may have been produced from the original animal remains, are indigenous to the rocks in which they are found. These indigenous oils do not occur locally in considerable quantity, although the aggregate amount scattered through any formation in which they occur can easily be shown to be large.

In those localities, notably north-western Pennsylvania and eastern Ohio, where petroleum occurs in large quan- tity, it occurs quite uniformly, saturating heavy beds of uncemented sandstone. This sandstone is overlaid with an impervious shell of slate, containing much silica, that holds down both the oil and gas within the sandstone under great pressure, not locally in cavities but over wide areas. The sandstone is also, so far as can be ascertained, underlaid with a vast formation of shale more than 1000 feet in thickness, containing large numbers of fossil animals and such a quan- tity of fossil sea-weeds that Dr J. 8. Newberry has suggested that the Silurian ocean here contained a veritable sargasso sea. This shale, so filled with the remains of fucoids, has been several times submitted to destructive distilla- tion, and has yielded as high as 50 gallons to the ton of distillate oil that was in many respects scarcely to be dis- tinguished from crude petroleum. During the present century the French chemical geologists have held that all forms of bitumen are the product of metamorphism. Prominent among these may be mentioned Daubrée, who in his Observations sur le Métamorphisme has shown the strict correspondence between his laboratory experiments, in which all forms of bitumen were produced, and the opera-

tions of nature. No evidence appears to be lacking to show that those operations of nature in which heat, pressure, and steam have joined, usually denominated by physicists ‘‘ metamorphism,” when acting upon strata containing organic remains, are an adequate origin for petro- leum as it occurs in the oil-regions of Pennsylvania and in Galicia. Petroleum occurs on the western slope of the Appalachian system from Point Gaspé on the Gulf of St Lawrence to northern Alabama, and there it is most abun- dant in the neighbourhood of strata in which there is the greatest accumulation of organic remains. The accumu- lations of sediment from which this mountam-system was constructed were deposited in a current whose course was parallel with the axis of the system, and, as has been so fully shown by Professor James Hall (Paleontology of New York, vol. iii., Introduction), these sediments were deposited in great thickness and of very coarse materials in the north-east, gradually thinning and increasing in fine- ness as they reached the Mississippi valley in the south- west. From the latest conclusions of American geologists it may be inferred that originally the eastern border of these deposits lay over a region now covered by the Atlantic Ocean. When the elevation took place that brought the metamorphic rocks of New England, New York, Pennsylvania, and Virginia to the surface, the eastern border remained submerged, while the western border was brought above the sea-level. The facts that concern petroleum are found in the comparatively un- disturbed and nearly level position of this western border, in which the rocks holding the petroleum lie at present, like sand-bars in a current, and the further evidence that they afford that the metamorphic action which has altered nearly all the formations of the eastern border became extinct along a plane that descended deeper and deeper from the surface as the western slope of the system is traversed. This evidence further shows that along the western borders of the system, although the rocks and the coal that they enclose are unaltered near the surface, at the same time vast areas of the fucoidal shale and even limestones containing indigenous petroleum may have been invaded by the heat-action and their volatile con- tents distilled at great depths. This distillate, being forced up by heat and hydrostatic pressure, would natur- ally accumulate in any overlying bed of rock porous enough to receive it. In Galicia, Roumania, and Tran- sylvania the metamorphic core of the Carpathians is flanked by beds of fucoidal shale rich in the remains of marine animals, which are intercalated with the beds of sandstone that

contain the oil. regards petroleum as a distillate, includes the facts as thus far observed, is in harmony with scientific possi- bilities, and is reasonable, as it does not require any ex- traordinary assumption of either chemical or geological con- ditions. While the maintenance of any particular theory concerning the origin of petroleum is primarily of very little practical value, it is indirectly of value to conclude whether by some deep-seated chemical action the oil is at present being prepared in the laboratories of nature, or whether its generation has been long since completed. If a correct interpretation of the phenomena observed in rela- tion to petroleum leads to the hypothesis that the fluid is in most instances a distillate, and especially in those localities where it is most abundant, then the conclusion is inevitable that the generation of petroleum is practically completed, and the deposits are vast natural storehouses which when once emptied are as completely removed from future production as a worked-out bed of coal.

Methods of Production.—While petroleum has been pro- duced for an immemorial period in Persia, China, Japan, Burmah, Baku, and Galicia, and while the primitive

This hypothesis, which

en Tho Eb fe ey

methods employed in each country in its production fur- nish interesting subjects for study, it is scarcely possible in this article to do more than indicate in a general man- ner how the vast quantities produced at the present time in the United States and Canada are brought to the surface, stored, and transported. In both Galicia and the Caucasus, which, with Canada and the United States, now furnish the petroleum of commerce, the ancient methods of production are being rapidly superseded by those employed in America. In the United States the development of oil-territory has acquired a habit that has become well defined, and has been repeatedly exemplified during the last twenty years. The first step is the sinking of a test or “wild-cat” well outside the limits of any proved productive territory, the progress of such well being eagerly watched not only by those who pay for it but also by many others who hope to profit by the experi- ment. The striking of oil in such a well is the signal for a grand rush, and a speculative floating population invades the place. After a time the speculative phase is

succeeded by that of settled development. The oil-territory has be- come outlined. The sagacious ones have secured control of the most profitable tracts, while the floating element has moved on to a new field. Between the period of active development and absolute exhaustion comes that of decay, when the derricks are rotting and falling to wreck, and when property that has ceased to be productive has been sold at an extravagant price, and after accumulating debts has been abandoned. Finally the wave passes over and nature restores as she restores after the ruin of battle fields. A visit to.Pithole city, which in 1865 was, next to Philadelphia, the largest post-office in Pennsylvania, showed in 1881 fields of maize and timothy where some of the most famous wells had been, and of the city a score of houses tumbling to decay and not an inhabitant. It is not to be inferred, however, that any of the sections into which the oil-regions have been divided entirely cease to produce oil. There are wells now producing within sight of the spot where Drake drilled the first well; but large tracts cease to be centres of speculative investment, the old wells cease to be remunerative, and the new wells no longer hold out the possibilities of a grand lottery.

Wells are sometimes drilled by the owners of the land, but the larger part are drilled under leases. These leases are drawn with a great variety of conditions, but they usually stipulate that the lessor shall pay to the lessee a certain portion of the oil produced, the amount varying from one-tenth to one-fourth in proportion to the supposed richness of the territory. One well to five acres is considered as many as a judicious arrangement will allow, but many wells have been drilled much closer, and in some instances several wells have been drilled on one acre. The oil-sand of different localities varies as it occupies different geological horizons. The Venango oil-sand extends from Tidioute in Warren county to Herman Station in Butler county, Pennsylvania, a distance of 62 miles. It is uniformly a conglomerate of smooth white quartz pebbles, from a quarter to three-quarters of an inch in thickness. In other districts of the United States, Canada, and Galicia the oil-sand is a true sandstone of varying colour and texture. In the Caucasus the sand is fine, and resembles a quicksand, as it rises with the oil and accumulates around the wells.

When the location of a well has been determined, a derrick or “rig” is built, which consists of the derrick itself and a small house for an engine, with the

necessary foundation for both. This foundation is made of heavy timbers dovetailed and keyed together. The derrick consists of a framework firmly braced in the form of a truncated pyramid, and about 70 feet high At its base are two large reels, upon one of which the drilling cable is coiled and upon the other the sand-pump rope. At one side of the derrick a heavy post, called the Samson post, is framed into the main sill, upon the top of which rests the walking-beam, one end of it being connected with the engine of from 12 to 15 horse-power, whilst the other supports the drill. When the engine is in motion the walking- beam alternately raises and drops the drill. The boiler is made like the tubular boilers usually employed on locomotives, and is placed at a distance from the well to prevent the ignition of the gas that often accompanies the oil. The engine should be reversible, and so

PETROLEUM

placed that the driller in the derrick can easily control its motion

by the use of cords and pulleys. A string of is represented in fig. 1. First we have the a, which is attached directly to the end of beam, into the jaws of which the cable is set-screw b, and the long screw of which, ¢, is ward by the driller as the rock is penetrated. of the cable is fastened to the rope-socket screwed into the sinker-bar e, that 1s, a solid about 20 feet in length which serves to give tools. The sinker-bar is screwed into the the jars. The jars, f, consist of two links of of which are 21 inches long, with cross-heads 8 inches deep, in consequence of which the links have 13 inches of play. The lower link of the jars is screwed into another long iron bar called the auger-stem, g, which is in turn screwed to the bit or drill 2. The jars are the centre of action, and the manner in which they per-

Sea wos ne eae way. Suppose the tools to have been just run to the bottom of the well, the jars a eS SSS BE closed, and the cable slacked, 2 Sar = the men now reel up the Cees slack until the sinker-bar Qn See ‘ rises, the ‘‘ play” of the jars allowing it to come up 13 inches without lifting the Z

a Hos — ae OY

ag TEMPER SCREW

drilling tools temper – screw the walking- clamped by the worked down-
The free end d, which is bar of iron firmness to the upper link of () steel, the slots

auger-stem ; when the links =

come together they slack § back about 4 inches ando

clamp the cable into the®

temper-screw. If now the Q== vertical movement of the »

walking-beam is 24 inches,

the sinker-bar rises 4 inches,

when the cross-heads of the

links come together with a

smart blow ; then the auger-

stem is picked up and lifted

20 inches. On the down-

stroke the auger-stem falls

BOTTOM OF. ==

sing=—= =

20 inches, while the links

slide 4 inches carrying the

sinker-bar down 24 inclies.

The links are never allowed

to strike on the down-stroke,

RED SLATE or SHALE.

Nil

while the blow of the up-

(i

strake prevents the drill

from becoming wedged into

any seam or crevice into which its weight might drive it. When the tools are all ready for operation, cither a wooden conductor is placed perpendicularly in a sort of shaft sunk to the bed-rock, or an iron tube called a

TAT

PPP PPP m=

PPPE Pw rere: > bP PPPPRPP? wD PPP bP: PPE PPPPPPPPPPP

it through the soil. In either & case great care is taken tog start the well perpendicularly 9 to the derrick-floor. The

tools are swung into position , «

oc

05

On

from the top of the derrick, w~ and the free end of the cable is coiled around the shaft of @ the reel in such a manner

that when the free end is S tightened the tools are lifted, =

shaft revolves within the »%@eo°oSts coils. By holding the cable 6 33 5] # firmly the tools rise, and as

it is loosened they fall. The 2

well is started in this man- 4 5>934°> ner and carried down until 3 222.05

the string of tools can be == suspended beneath the walk-

Fig. 1.—String of Tools.

ing-beam,when acable as long as the supposed depth of the completed

717

well is wound upon the reel, the end carried over a pulley at the top of the derrick and then fastened into the rope-socket, the temper- screw attached, and the drilling continued to the bottom of the well. Day and night the machinery is kept in motion, one driller and one engineer and tool-dresser work from noon until midnight, and another pair work from midnight until noon. The driller, with a short lever inserted in the temper-screw, walks round and round to rotate the drill. He watches the jars, and at intervals lets down the temper-screw. When the screw is run out or the drill needs sharpening, he arranges the slack cable so that it will run freely over the pulley and proceeds to ‘‘draw out.” The cable is unclamped from the temper-screw and the engine disconnected from the walking-beam and attached to the cable-reel. When all -is ready the long cable is reeled up and the = tools drawn out. The bit is replaced by one newly % sharpened, and after the well – has been sand-pumped the tools are again lowered and 2¢- drilling resumed. When the drilling proceeds without ac- = cident the work is exceed- = ingly monotonous. os From the top of the bed-

rock to a point below the S=—= surface-water of the region, = the well is drilled of the same diameter as the in- terior of the drive-pipe. This point is usually from = 300 to 400 feet below the surface. At this point the drill-hole is tapered, and a pipe armed with a steel shoe is ground into the tapered hole to a water-tight joint. = The inside diameter of this casing-pipe is 53 inches, and below.it the well is carried down 54 inches in diameter

OIL DELIVERY PIPE

FLOOR ————

SLA TA

2: PRESS

=e Se

CD SES S55 OE ON EF

.———

to the bottom. The casing 2 = | sort om or7/2 HOLE pipe excludes the fresh sur- = Bor ToMmor 5 % Casinc

face-water, and only water enough is put into the well = to wash out the drillings, == unless salt water is encoun- – tered. The casing-pipe be- – comes a permanent fixture, : into which is introduced the : 2-inch pipe, through which _ the oil flows or is pumped. [>> This 2-inch pipe may be in-

be

sty] | troduced or removed at plea- 25s2S3 S558 ae3 sure, without disturbing the to 9seel28 cot i . . S = 39 O’s Co9 S69 a0″ a eaeorn ce casing-pipe or drive-pipe, or Geqsoe.230828ou 3 S58 327 = 7 oO; = 2o°%° ° letting water into the well SocfS2=°5 2 i a ae ae reales me 5O Fa upon the oil. SB3BTS 2S Fas Soy 28 By rs ae ee im When drilling has ben Seep BESS

completed the well is tor- pedoed. From one to twenty- .~ five gallons of nitro-glycerin 4° are lowered into the well in >< tin cylinders and exploded, usually by percussion. The = effect of firing such a large

amount of this powerful = explosive is not apparent = at the surface, but soon. a <2 gurgling sound is heard ap- proaching from beneath ; the oil rises from the well and falls first like a fountain and

then like a geyser, forming sc =e les Sea a torrent of adie fluid, SSsz5222e5 | Fo 2-O ‘ t 2566405 82 2 Pr oD 2/0

accompanied by a rattle of small stones and fragments of the canister in a shower a ee pees See soem ome of spray 100 feet in height. Fig. 2.—Pumping Well. The generation of such an enormous volume of gas in a limited ‘ area, the walls of which are already under a very high gas-pressure,

230-On. SCOT

718

and which is held down by 2000 feet of motionless air, must be followed by an expansion into the porous rock that drives both oil and gas before it, until a point of maximum tension is reached. The resistance then becomes greatest within the rock, and, reaction following, oil and gas are driven out of the rock and out of the well until the expansive force is Py

expended.

Figs. 2 and 3 show the general arrangement of pumping and flowing wells. After the well is torpedoed it is prepared for flowing. A section of 2-inch pipe, per- forated with holes, which serves as a strainer, is low- ered into the well and other sections coupled to it, until .- a sufficient length is intro- < duced to reach from the bot- : tom to a point above the oil- – sand. An indiarubber packer : is then attached in such a manner that within it = 2

ipe that is above it slides =sa=<— in that which is below it, S=—=seee and the rubber is forced < against the sides of the drill- = hole with the weight of 1200 — to 1800 feet of 2-inch pipe, thus making a gas-tight = joint. The pressure of the = gas within the oil-sand and S= below the packer forces the = oil to the surface. As the === flow diminishes, a pump- barrel is introduced to the bottom of the well and the oil is lifted to the surface. – Gas-pumps are also used to = remove the pressure of the = atmosphere from the well and rock. In some of the = older districts from twelve to – forty wells are attached to one engine, and pumped by – what is called a “sucker-

rod” = connexion. In West Vir- ginia five different horizons = of sandstone have yielded oil.

The average duration of =2%2 the profitable production of an oil-well is estimated at five years. This period is subject to great fluctuations, as there are wells in the Cole Creek district of the Bradford field that were abandoned in two years, while wells on Triumph Hill, Venango county, where the sand is 125 feet thick, have been pumped fifteen years. The yield of some single wells has been enormous. A well in Donegal township, Butler county, Pennsylvania, produced more

ae SSE, ff TO OIL TANK

a BOTTOM oF

| | | | ut OF DRIVE PIPE SECTION.

———

is)

2

m

2

BOTTOMor CASING SECTION.

PCO TF)

PAXAN AA AN A. ’ % KAAKARALD AS AN Zen 2 AANA A DN. FPSO Oo SO

ae P eI OSI SS | >>> >>P 22S Pa > PEPE, SaaS SSS 1

PETROLEUM

than 110,000 barrels in ten years, and twelve wells, of which this was one, on the same farm produced over 750,000 barrels. :

In Burmah and other Eastern countries petroleum was stored and transported in flasks and jars. In the United States it was for many years transported in barrels made tight for oil by being coated on the inside with a stiff solution of glue. Later, it was transported on the rivers in bulk barges, and on the railroads in tanks upon cars. These tanks were at first made of wood, but they have lately been made of iron. The usual form is a plain cylinder, 24 feet 6 inches long and 66 inches in diameter, having a capacity of from 4000 to 5000 gallons. These cars are also used in the Caucasus. At the present time, in all the regions pro- ducing petroleum in commercial quantities, the bulk of the crude oil is transported through pipe-lines, which consist of lines of pipe carried across the country, often for hunareds of miles, through which the oil is forced by powerful pumps under a pressure of from 1000 to 1600 tb to the square inch. Each well has a tank into which the oil flows from the well, and from which it is carried in a 2-inch pipe by gravity to a pumping station, where it is pumped into the “main line.” Main lines run out of the oil-regions of Pennsylvania to Cleveland (Ohio), Pittsburgh (Pennsylvania), Buffalo (New York), and New York, Philadelphia, and Baltimore on the Atlantic coast. They are constructed of 6-inch pipe, the joints of which are screwed into couplings like sections of gas-pipe. During recent years the production of petroleum in excess of any demand for it has led to the storage of vast quantities (30,000,000 barrels in 1882) in iron tanks of enormous size. Many of these tanks are owned by private individuals, but the majority belong to the pipe-lines. There are 1375 iron tanks connected with the united pipe-lines, ranging in capacity from 1000 to 38,000 barrels, and representing a total storage capacity of 38,000,000 barrels. These tanks are frequently fired by lightning or other accidents, and when burning present a spectacle of unsurpassed grandeur.

The bulk of the trade in crude petroleum in the United States is conducted through the pipe-lines and their certificates. When oil is received into the line from a well, the amount is ascertained and passed to the credit of the well-owner on the books of the comipany, less 3 per cent. to cover loss in handling. This oil is held like a bank-deposit, subject to transfer on a written order. When such an order has been ‘‘accepted” by an officer of the

company it becomes an ‘‘acceptance” or ‘‘certificate,” and is then negotiable like a certified cheque. As the exchanges deal only in certificates of 1000 barrels they are made of that amount so far as is possible. When oil is delivered by the pipe-lines a pipage charge of 20 cents per barrel is paid and a storage fee of $12°50 per 1000 barrels per month must be paid at least once in six months. The issuing of certificates by the pipe-lines has made speculation in oil, brokerage, and exchanges possible to an extent vastly beyond the requirements of any actual trade in the oil itself.

About 250,000,000 barrels of petroleum have been produced in the United States and Canada from 1859 to 1884. No reliable statistics are to be had of the production in other regions, but of late years the Caucasian fields have yielded about 5,000,000 barrels perannum. The total annual production for 1888 cannot be far from 35,000,000 barrels.

Technology.—The technology of petroleum is quite simple. In the crude state it enters largely into mixtures with other oils, tallow, lead, soap, graphite, &c., that are chiefly used for lubrica- tion. Crude petroleum is also filtered through charcoal. Crude oils that are too fluid for lubrication are reduced to the required consistence by partial evaporation, both by exposure to the sun in shallow tanks and also by distillation of the more volatile portion in stills. Such oils are called ‘‘reduced oils.” In the technology of petroleum by distillation a great variety of details are employed by different manufacturers, but in general they may be treated under the three heads of destructive distillation or ‘‘ cracking,” distilla- tion with superheated steam, and distillation im vacuo. The stills used vary greatly in respect of form and capacity. Formerly stills holding 80,000 gallons were used, but recently they have been constructed of a capacity of from 40,000 to 48,000 gallons. They are ordinarily made either in the form of plain cylinders 30 feet in length and 12 feet 6 inches in diameter, and set horizontally in banks of three or more, or there may be an upright cylinder 30 feet in diameter and 9 feet in height, set vertically with numerous fire- boxes arranged around the circumference. Another form of still is an upright cylinder holding about 1000 gallons, heated from beneath and furnished with a steam-coil immersed in the body of the oil. In this coil the steam is superheated to the tempera- ture of the oil, and is then allowed to escape into it, by which means the overheating of the oil is prevented and the distillation assisted by

the mechanical action of the steam in lifting the oil- vapour out of the still. Another form of still is a vacuum still, in which a partial vacuum is maintained by a pump. The top of the still is usually constructed with a high dome, into which the vapours rise and from which they escape into the condensers. The condensers usually consist of a large number of 2-inch pipes immersed in water contained ina long trough. The distillation

commenees at a very low temperature and proceeds at a constantly rising temperature, the distillate steadily increasing in specifie gravity. The last portions distil at nearly a red heat, and are nearly solid at ordinary temperatures, with a specific gravity above 900°. The oil is first allowed to settle in large tanks, when about 1 per cent. of water and sediment is removed. It is then pumped to stills into whieh “live” steam is introduced. Distillation com- mences at once and is allowed to proceed until the specific gravity of the distillate reaches ‘74 (60° B). ‘The oil in this condition is called “gas-oil,” and is used to a limited extent in the manu- facture of illuminating gas. The distillate is crude naphtha, and is redistilled and divided into (1) rhigolene or cymogene, having a specific gravity of *62 and boiling at 65° Fahr.; (2) gasolene, specific gravity °66 (90° to 80° B.); (8) C naphtha, specific gravity ‘70 (80° to 68° B.); (4) B naphtha, specific gravity °72 (68° to 64° B.) ; and (5) A naphtha, specific gravity °74 (64° to 60° B.). Below 60° goes to illuminating oil. The crude oil from which the naphtha has been removed is then put into a suitable still and distilled until the distillate has a specific gravity of °81 (40° B.). This distillate is crude illuminating oil. The oil remaining in the still may then be ‘‘cracked”’ by destructive distillation, or may be distilled for lubricating oil. If it is to be ‘‘cracked” the fires are slacked and the distillation allowed to proceed slowly, in consequence of which the vapours of the heavy oil are repeatedly condensed upon the dome of the still and made to fall back upon the hot oil beneath. The result is the production of a large volume of permanent gas, chiefly marsh gas and hydrogen, a distillate of suitable specific gravity for illuminating oil, and a heavy tarry residue, called ‘‘residuum,” that remains in the still. By this method of manipulation the crude oil is converted into crude naphtha, crude illuminating oil, and residuum, while the gas is burned as a waste product. The residuum is run

out of the still and sold to manufacturers of lubricating oil. If the oil is not to be cracked, the heavy oil, from which the illuminating oil and naphtha have been removed, is often distilled with superheated steam and treated for lubricating ol. If simply distilled and treated with chemicals after removal of the paraffin, the oil is called in the United States ‘‘ paraffin oil.” The crude paraffin oil is placed in barrels in an ice-house, and, after it has been several days at rest, paraffin crystallizes from it. The paraftin is removed by pressure, and may be purified by any of the methods described under PARAFFIN (p. 242 above). The oil from whieh the paraffin has been pressed may be subjected to a further distillation in a steam-coil or other suitable still, and deprived of certain oils that boil at a high temperature but have a pungent and offensive odour. When drawn off, the oil remaining in the still is found to be light-coloured and nearly tasteless and odourless. It is called ‘‘deodorized neutral heavy hydrocarbon oil,” and is found to be a very valuable lubrieating oil. The distillate above meutioned after treatment is called “mineral sperm,” and is used as an illu- minating oil on cars and steamboats, where a more volatile oil would be objectionable. Any of these distillates, from gasolene to the most dense lubricating oil, may be purified by filtration or by treatment with acids and alkalis. Filtration is usually applied to the different grades of naphtha to deprive them of disagreeable odour, for which purpose gravel and both wood and animal char- coal are used, either separately or together. Lubricating oils are often filtered through animal charcoal to deprive them of both colour and odour. The dense vacuum residues recently prepared under the name of cosmoline, vaseline, &c., are filtered through animal charcoal while hot and perfectly fluid. Oils are treated with chemicals in high cylindrical tanks of small diameter, where they are thoroughly mingled by means of air forced into the bottom of the tank under pressure. These agitators often hold 50,000 gallons. The illuminating oils are usually treated with 5 per cent. of oil of vitriol at a temperature of about 60° Fahr. The acid “sludge,” consisting of the oil of vitriol combined with the impuri- ties of the oil and forming a black tarry liquid, settles to the bottom of the tank and is drawn off. The oil is then agitated with water, then treated with a solution of caustic soda, and finally washed with water containing causticammonia. Hydrochloric acid is used toa limited extent, aud nitric and chromic acids are used to destroy fluorescence in dense oils. Those illuminating oils especially that are prepared by cracking are thrown after treatment, and while warm, in a thin

spray into a large tank. This causes a small amount of very volatile oil produced by cracking to be evaporated, and brings the oil up to test. Finally the oil is exposed under a skylight in large shallow tanks until it has become perfectly clear froin settling of all impurities. The acid “sludge” is for the most part sold to manufacturers of commercial fertilizers or restored by evaporation and used over again. More than 45,000 tons of oil of vitriol were used in 1880 by the manufaeturers of petroleum in the United States. The alkali sludge is thrown away. The following table shows the average percentage of commercial pro- duets obtained from crude petroleum of °79 (45° B.) from Pennsyl- vania, Ohio, &c.—

712

Per cent.

GaSOLEM eRe pate sec Pita Woe teas wee lto 4 US (OS Le TUNT DR” ae rere ey se oe 10

a esigaetis ola itieuime cee Ne eee cee Se 24

BA GROAPHUHOMES: ree her mee ta sc cu, 2to 25

16} Tiluminatineyoil so. ce ce. snc sane cores coe ccs 50 to 54

Teabricatinpsaill ee ese yeadeac cece oe ane 174 Paraffin wax=44 ib per barrel ……. 2 ORS Merci. Acs eee ce 10 T° rr] . . 100

If the oil is “cracked,” the yield is—

Naphthashs ci eee: o-oo: ee 16% Lobes OU cagegnsqaes sescsaneonnouee 70 ESIC mein” eyes ry ey nen 2

884

GOSS ret (ere) s.ac. soe ee ee 114

100

Lubricating Oils.—Crude petroleum and the heavy distillates from petroleum, finished either by treatment or by filtration, have been slowly winning their way with consumers of lubricating oils for the last twenty years, and may now be said to havea recognized value. This result has been due as much to improved processes of manufacture, and consequently to improved quality of the pro- ducts, as to a recognition of their merits. When properly prepared, and exempt from volatile matter and offensive odour, they are found to be possessed of great endurance, to be free from a tendency to gun, and to be incapable of spontaneous combustion. When mixed with animal and vegetable oils liable to spontaneous combustion these oils prevent it. They are therefore now in large demand, a demand which is likely to increase as new applications are found for them and their quality is improved.

Illuminating Oils.—Oils of this class manufactured from petro- leum have nearly superseded the use of other illnminating fluids throughout the world. They are largely sold in Great Britain under the name of “paraffin oils”; in the United States they are called “kerosene,” and on the European continent “refined petroleum.” The different qualities are known as “water white,” “standard,” and “prime,” and are further distinguished as “low test” and “high test” oils. The characters chiefly relied on in the trade are “colour” and “test.” The colour should be as light and free from opalescence as possible. Colour is, however, a matter of little importance except as it indicates unskilful manufacture of the oil. The “test” is of paramount importance, and indicates the tempera- ture Fahr. at which the oil will give off a sufficient amount of vapour to ignite explosively when the oil is properly tested. While the methods of testing petroleum vary greatly, the apparatuses used for that purpose may be divided into three classes. The first class is designed to ascertain the tension of the vapour given off by a given sample at a certain fixed temperature ; these are chiefly uscd in France. The others are designed to show at what temperature a given amount of oil, usually half a pint, will give off a sufficient amount of vapour to form an explosive mixture with the air above the oil. These are divided into “open testers,” in which the oil is heated in an open vessel, and “closed testers,” in which the oil is heated in a closed vessel. The tester invented by Sir F. A. Abel (see PARAFFIN, p.239) has been adopted in Great Britain and hercolonies, while in the United States and on the

Continent a great variety are in use. The numerous accidents, many of a frightful nature, and involving great loss of property and often of human life, that have followed the use of illuminating oils which had not been properly freed from the volatile products of the petroleum, have led in most European countries and many of the Ameriean States to the enact- ment of stringent laws orbidding the sale or use of oils the test of which does not come within the prescribed legal limits. Very valu- able researches on the flashing of oils have been made by Dr C. F. Chandler of New York, and by other American chemists. Dr Chand- ler showed that oils burning in lamps of ordinary construction in a room the temperature of which was below 90° Fahr. failed to reach an average temperature of 100° Fahr. In metal lamps, particularly "student lamps," the average temperature was several degrees higher than in glass lamps, a fact which shows glass lamps to be safest in this respect. Dr C. B. White of New Orleans has examined illu- minating oils with respect to the amount of volatile material that, when added to good oil, will render it dangerous. He found that from 1 to 5 per cent. of the ordinary naphthas of commerce would render illuminating oil of the best quality extremely danger- ous. Five per cent. of crude naphtha reduced the flashing point from 118° to 70° Fahr. These researches have all demonstrated the wisdom of English legislation on this subject, but unfortunately have not been productive of equally good results in the United States. Petroleum legislation is there in a very unsatisfactory con- dition. The very worthless law passed by Congress in 1867 has long been repealed, and no other has been substituted for it. A number of the States (seventeen in 1880) are without legislation in reference to this subject, while legislation in other States is based upon local influence rather than fixed principles, and ranges in its

requirements from extreme laxity to unreasonable exaction, in con- sequence of the lack of intelligent national Governmental action. Nearly all the nations of continental Europe have petroleum laws in the main based upon an intelligent appreciation of the subject, and but little inferior to English legislation.

The Uses of Naphtha.—The lightest products obtained from petroleum are rhigolene, which is used in surgery, and cymogene, which is used as the volatile fluid in ice-machines. Gasolene is the lightest fluid obtained in considerable quantity, and is used in automatic gas-machines for the carburation of gas or air. The question of increasing the illuminating power of gas (see Gas, vol. x. p. 101), by causing it to absorb fluid hydrocarbons, was discussed as early as 1832, but it was only after petroleum furnished a cheap and suitable fluid that inventors succeeded in securing results of any value. While hundreds of machines have been patented in England, America, and continental Europe for accomplishing this purpose, it is only quite recently that an American inventor, Dr Walter M. Jackson, has succeeded in constructing a machine that satisfactorily meets all the requirements of the problem. His inetrical carburetter measures both the fluid and the gas or air in such a manner that the lcast amount of the hydrocarbon fluid required to produce the effect sought is furnished to the gas, and the whole is immediately absorbed. By this means a uniform carburation is secured, furnishing a gas of uniform quality, that never contains a sufficient amount of fluid to admit of condensation in any part of the apparatus. Both crude petroleum and the products of its manufacture have been used as a material for the manufacture of gas by distillation. The different qualities of naphtha are used in mixing paint, in the manufacture of oil-cloths for floors and of varnishes, as a solvent for gums and resins, in the preparation of alkaloids, in the manufacture of india-rubber, in washing wool, and in removing oils and grease from seeds and textile fabrics.

Petroleum as Fuel.—In the region of the Caucasus and on the Caspian Sea, where other fuel is scarce and dear and petroleum is plentiful and cheap, the latter is used with complete success on both steamships and locomotives. Petroleum and its products have been used with practical success in the manufacture of iron in the United States. Both illuminating oil and naphtha are now very widely used in stoves; but naphtha-stoves are extremely dangerous, and their’use should be prohibited by law. In the valley of the Euphrates, near Mosul, petroleum is used as a fuel in burning lime.

Petroleum in Medicine.—Although petroleum has been used as a remedial agent for an unknown period in the countries where it is a natural product, its physiological effects have never been very fully investigated. Barbados

tar, Haarlem oil, Seneca oil, and American oil, all consisting wholly or in large part of crude petroleum, were sold by apothecaries for years before petroleum was obtained by boring. They were mainly used as liniments for external application, particularly in rheumatism. The oil of the Alleghany valley early had a local reputation as an internal remedy for consumption, and it has lately been prescribed for bronchitis. The most volatile product of petroleum obtained by distillation, called rhigolene, has been used to produce local insensibility, by means of the intense cold resulting from its rapid evaporation ; and the same fluid when inhaled as vapour or the gas escaping from fresh oil will produce an intoxication or insensibility resembling the effects of laughing- gas, resulting in death if its action is pro- longed. The products of petroleum that have proved most valu- able in medicine are the filtercd paraffin residues sold under the names of cosmoline, vaseline, &c., that are now so widely used as ointments, either plain or medicated. They are of about the con- sistence of butter, with very little taste or odour, and will keep indefinitely without becoming rancid. These valuable properties have caused them to almost entirely supersede all other prepara- tions containing animal or vegetable fats.

Looking towards the past, it may be said that petroleum has attained universal diffusion as a lighting agent ; it is fast displacing animal and vegetable oils as a lubricator on all classes of bearings, from railroad ~~axles to mule~~ spindles, and also where other oils are liakie to spontaneous combustion ; it is very largely used as fuel for stoves, both for heating and cooking ; it is very successfully used for steam purposes when other fuel is scarce and petroleum plentiful; it is likely to be used for the production of pure iron for special purposes ; and it has become a necessity to the apothecary as petroleum ointment. Looking towards the future, what assur- ance have we that these varied wants, the creation of a quarter of acentury, will be satisfied? While it is not probable that the de- posits of petroleum in the crust of the earth are being practically Increased at the present time, there is reason to believe that the supply is ample for an indefinite period. Yet the fact is worthy of serious consideration that the production of petroleum as at present conducted is everywhere wasteful in the extreme.

There are very few works that treat exclusively of petroleum. An article in the Bull. de la Soc. Géol. de France, xxv., gives the best résumé of the

mention made by classical writers. Travellers overland to India and Persia have usually described Baku (see Kaempfer, 1712; Hanway, 1743; Foster, 1784; Kinnier,

1848). On the occurrence of petroleum in Burmah, see Journals of the Embassies to the Court of Ava, Symes (1795), Crawfurd (1826), Yule (1855); in Persia,

PET P Et –

Carl Ritter's Erdk. v. Asien, 1840; in Japan, B. 8. Lyman's Reports, Geolog. Survey of Japan,1874-75 ; in Galicia, Von Hauer (1853), Fotterle (1853, 1859, 1862), J. Noth (1873), Bruno Walter (1880), in Jahrbuch der K.-K. Geo. Reichsanstalt; in Roumania, Von Hauer, Geologie Siebenbiirgens, 1863; H. Coquand, Bul. Soe, Géol. de France, xxiv. 505, 1867; in Canada, T. Sterry Hunt, in Reports of Geol. Survey of Canada of various dates, 1863-73; in Pennsylvania, J. F. Carll, Reports, L, IL, and IIL, with maps, Second Geological Survey of Pennsylvania, 1874-1880. On the chemistry of petroleum, see CU. M. Warren, in American Journal of Science and Chemical News; Shorlemmer, in Quar. Journal of the Chemical Society; Pelouze and Cahours in Ann. de Chimie et de Physique; Berthelot in the same, all at various dates, 1863-1880. On the origin of petroleum, see Lesquereux, in Trans. Am. Phil. Soc., xili., 1866; J. S. Newberry, in Ohio Ag. Report, 1859; T. Sterry Hunt, in Chem. News, vi. 5 et sq.; Byasson, in Revue Industrielle, 1876 ; Mendeljeff, in Bull. Soc. Chim. de Paris, 1877. On testing petroleum, see John Attfield, in Chem. News, xiv. 257; F. Crace Calvert, Chem. News, xxi. 85; C. F. Chandler, in American Chemist, ii. 409 ; Boverton Redwood, in English Mechanic and World of Science, xxii. 335, 1875; F. A. Abel, in Chem. News, xxxv. 73. On the general subject, see T, Sterry Hunt, ‘‘ History of Petroleum or Rock Oil,” in Canadian Naturalist, [1], vi. 245; Chem. News, vi. 5; Report of Smithsonian Institution, 1862; J. Lawrence Smith, in Report to the Judges of the Centennial Exposition, Philadelphia, 1876; S. F. Peckham, monograph on petroleum, in- cluding bibliography of petroleum and allied subjects to 1881, in Reports of the Tenth Census of the United States. See also, for an account of wells at Baku, Engineering, 22d February to 16th May 1884, London. (8. F. P.

PETROLOGY. See Rocks.

PETRONIUS. Petronius Arbiter, although excluded from the list of classical writers available for the purposes of education, is one who enjoyed a great reputation, especi- ally in France, at a time when Latin authors were more read as literature than they are in the present day. A recent critic! of Petronius has stated, though with evident exaggeration, that no ancient writer except Aristotle has found so many interpreters. But there is perhaps none about whose history and era there has been so much controversy, nor is the controversy yet settled with abso- lute certainty. He hides himself so completely behind the mask of his fictitious personages that we learn nothing of his fortunes, position, or even of the century to which he belonged, directly from himself. He does not belong to any of the classes of "viri illustres" (poets, orators, historians, philosophers, grammarians, and rhetoricians) whose lives were written by Suetonius. Though he is mentioned by critics, commentators, and grammarians of a late date (such as Macrobius, Servius, and Priscian), the only hint we have of anything bearing on his personal position is contained in two lines of Sidonius Apollinaris, a writer of the latter part of the 5th century a.D., who associates him with the masters of Latin eloquence, Cicero, Livy, and Virgil, in the lines—

'¢ Et te, Massiliensium per hortos

Sacri stipitis, Arbiter, colonum

Hellespontiaco parem Priapo."' Tf these lines are to be construed as implying that Petronius lived and wrote his work at Marseilles, this inference could hardly be reconciled with the indirect evidence which leads to the identification of the author of the Satire with the C. Petronius of whom Tacitus has painted so vivid a picture in the sixteenth book of the Annals (ch. 18, 19), His place of residence in his later years at least was not Marseilles but Rome. There is nothing, however, in what Tacitus says incompatible with the sup- position that Marseilles was his birthplace ; or perhaps the allusion might be explained by the supposition—supported by a note of Servius on Virgil, /., iii. 57 that the scene in the early part of the long novel, of which two fragmentary books have been preserved, was laid at Marseilles. The chief personages of the story, as they appear in these fragments of books xv. and xvi., are evidently strangers in the towns of the

south of Italy where the adventures in which they share are supposed to take place. Their Greek- sounding names (Encolpius, Ascyltos, Giton, &c.), and their literary trainmg also, accord with the character- istics of the old Greek colony in the Ist century A.D. The high position among Latin writers assigned by Sidonius to Petronius, and the mention of him by Macro- bius in juxtaposition with Menander, when compared with the absolute silence of such writers as Quintilian,

1 J, N. M. De Guerle, Recherches Sceptiques sur le Satyricon.

Juvenal, and Martial, who might have been expected to have taken some notice of him if he had flourished imme- diately before their own day, seem adverse to the generally received opinion that the Satire was a work of the age of Nero. Yet the silence of Quintilian may be explained by the fact that Petronius is not one of those writers who were capable of being turned to use in the education of an orator. The silence of Martial and Juvenal may be accidental. Even if it is to be explained on the ground of want of ap- preciation, this would prove nothing more than that a work so abnormal in form and substance was more highly prized by later generations than by the author's contemporaries.

But, if we pass from these faint traces of external evi- dence to that afforded by the style of the book and the state of manners described in it, we are led to the inference that there is no other age to which it can be assigned on better grounds than the age of Nero. If, again, we compare the impression we form of the character, genius, and habits of the writer with the elaborate picture which Tacitus paints of a man who, so far as he plays any part in history, is merely one of the victims of an abortive conspiracy, we find grounds of probability for identifying them with one another. 'Tacitus does not tell us that he was the author of any important work, and this has been urged as con- clusive on the question. But Tacitus does not think it necessary in what he tells us of Germanicus or Claudius to mention their poetical and historical works. In intro- ducing Silius Italicus as the witness of a particular occur- rence he does not add that he was the author of the poem on the Punic War. He mentions that the poetical gifts and reputation of Lucan and Seneca were among the causes that excited Nero's jealousy,

but he does not mention the Pharsalia of the one or the Tragedies of the other. The prominence which Tacitus gives to the portrait of Petronius points to his enjoyment of greater notoriety than was due to the part he played in history. He paints him with the keen and severe eye with which he fastens on the traits of character and the manner of life illustrative of the moral corruption of the time, but at the same time with that appreciation of intellectual power which forces him to do justice to men who in other respects were detestable. Such a work as the Satire he could, from a moral point of view, have regarded with no other feelings than those of detestation ; yet he could not have refused his admiration to the unmistakable proof it affords of easy careless power, and of a spirit, if not courageous in any good sense, yet indifferent to death, and capable of meeting calamity with Epicurean irony.

The account he gives of C. Petronius is “that he spent his days in sleep, his nights in attending to his official duties or in amusement, that by his dissolute life he had become as famous as other men by a life of energy, and that he was regarded as no ordinary profligate, but as an accomplished voluptuary. His reckless freedom of speech, being regarded as frankness, procured him popularity. Yet during his provincial government, and later when he held the office of consul, he had shown vigour and capacity for affairs. Afterwards returning to his life of vicious indulgence, he became one of the chosen circle of Nero’s intimates, and was looked upon as an absolute authority on questions of taste (‘arbiter elegantiz’) in connexion with the science of luxurious living.” This ex- cited the jealousy of Tigellinus, and led to his condemnation. Petronius’s death is then described, which was in keeping with his mode of life and character. He selected the slow process of opening his veins and having them bound up again, while in conversing with his friends he avoided the serious subjects natural at such a time, and listened to their recitation of light odes and trifling verses. He then dined luxuriously, slept for some time, and, so far from

imitating the practice of others by flattering Nero or Tigellinus in his will, he wrote, sealed, and sent to the emperor a document which professed to

give, with the names of the partners of his vices, a detailed account of the scandalous life of the court.

That this portrait, drawn with such characteristic lines, and painted in such sombre colouring, is sketched from the life in Tacitus's most graphic manner is unquestionable. A fact confirmatory of its general truth is added by the elder Pliny (who calls him T, Petronius), who mentions that just before his death he destroyed a murrhine vase of great value to prevent its falling into the hands of Nero. The question arises whether there is ground for identifying the author of the fragment which we possess under the name of Satire with the person so minutely and faithfully described by Tacitus. Do the traits of this picture agree with that impression of himself which every writer of marked individuality unconsciously leaves on his work ? Further, is there any reason for supposing, as some have maintained, that in this fragment we possess the actual document sent to Nero? The last question may be at once dismissed. The only fragments connected by any kind of continuity which we possess profess to be extracts of the fifteenth and sixteenth books of a work that must have extended to a great length. It would have been impossible to have composed one-tenth part even of this fragment in the time in which Petronius is said to have composed his memorial to Nero. Those who find in the representation of the vulgar, ostentatious, illiterate, but tolerably good- natured Trimalchio a satire on Nero or Tigellinus are capable of finding any meaning they desire in any literary work of a pastage.! But at the same time it is legitimate to note that the author of the banquet of Trimalchio and of the lives of Encolpius and Giton had both the experience and the literary gifts which would enable him to describe with scathing mockery the

"Tuxuriam imperii veterem noctesque Neronis," and that he was not one to be restrained by any prudery from describing them in their most revolting details.

On the other hand, the arguments against identifying the writer of the fragment with the original of the portrait of Tacitus, based on the silence of the historian as to his authorship, may be explained by reference to the historian's practice in regard to the authors of other literary works. Unless these works had any bearing on the part which their authors played in

history, he did not feel himself called upon to mention them; and such a work as the Satire he would have regarded as especially beneath the dignity of history, of which he had so proud a consciousness. The impression of his personality produced by the author corresponds closely with that of the Petronius of the Annals, not only in the evidence it affords of intimate familiarity with the vices of the age, but in the union of an immoral'sensualism with a rich vein of cynical humour and an admirable taste, which we should expect to find in one who rose to favour by his social and convivial qualities, and who received the title of "elegantiz arbiter." The Epicurean maxims, such as—

"Vivamus dum licet esse bene,' quoted by his actors, and the frequent introduction of short poems into their conversations, are in conformity with the opinions and tastes of one who in his last hours "audiebat referentes nihil de immortalitate anime et sapientium placitis, sed levia carmina et faciles versus." Further, the name " Arbiter," by which he is mentioned in later writers, is not an ordinary Latin cognomen, but may have been bestowed on him by his contemporaries from the fact that his judgment was regarded as the criterion

! "Phe supposition of M. Gaston Boissier that the individual satirized

is Pallas, the freedman of Claudius, is much more probable.

of good taste, and Tacitus, in the phrase he perpetuates, may have fixed this as his designation for later writers.

The style of the work, where it does not purposely reproduce the solecisms, colloquialisms, and slang of the vulgar rich—for the most part freedmen of foreign origin—is recognized by the most competent critics as written in the purest Latin of the Silver Age. Coinci- dences of expression and thought with passages in the satires of Persius are not infrequent.1 The false taste in literature and expression fostered by the false style of education is condemned by Persius and Petronius on the same grounds. When the latter

speaks of the ‘“ mellitos verborum globulos” he may possibly have had Seneca in his eye. Again, there would have been no point in putting into the mouth of the old poet whom the adventurers pick up verses on the capture of Troy and the Civil War at any other era than that in which the Troica of Nero and the Pharsalia of Lucan were the fashionable poems. The pertinacity of the reciting poet, which is exposed with such quiet humour by Petronius, is a feature of the age, common to it with the age of Martial and Juvenal. But we learn from Tacitus that the luxury of the table, which appears so profuse and extravagant in the “dinner of Trimalchio,” reached its highest pitch under Nero, and afterwards fell out of fashion (Tac., Anm., iii. 55).

The internal evidence based on the style and character of the work thus appears to favour the opinion that the book was written in the time of Nero; nor is there any one more likely to have been its author than the C. Petronius whose manner of life and whose death are so elaborately described by Tacitus.

The work, of which there have been preserved 141 sections or chapters of a narrative, in the main consecutive, although interrupted by frequent gaps, must have been one of great originality as regards form, subject-matter, and mode of treatment. The name Satire, by which it is designated in the best MSS., indicates that it claims to be of the type of the original “satura” or “ miscellany” to which Varro, in imitation of the Greek writer Menippus, had given the character of a medley of prose and verse composition. But, while in the title and form of the work it belonged to a familiar type, yet from another point of view it is to be regarded as the earliest extant specimen of an original and most important invention in Roman liter- ature. We find in it indeed not only a medley of prose and verse composition, in which the former is much the most prominent element, but also much desultory matter, disquisitions on art and eloquence, stories and anecdotes, &c. But the novelty of form recognized in Petronius con- sists in the string of fictitious narrative by which these are kept together. The original Italian satura, superseded by the Latin comedy, had developed into the poetical satire of Lucilius and Horace, and into the miscellaneous prose and verse essays of Varro. In the hands of Petronius it assumed a new and most important phase in its develop- ment. The careless prodigal who gave his

days to sleep and his nights to pleasure was so happily inspired in his devices for amusing himself as to introduce into Roman literature, and thereby transmit to modern times, the novel

1 E.g., compare Persius, ii. 9, 10—

: . HORN Ebulliat patruus, preclarum funus, et O si Sub rastro crepet argenti mihi seria dextro Hercule”—

with Satire 88, “Alius domum promittit, si propinquum divitem extulerit, alius si thesaurum effoderit,” &c. The “ebulliat patruus” may be compared with a phrase in the dinner of Trimalchio, “homo bellus tam bonus chrysanthus animam ebulltit.” Persius has the phrase “Dives arat Curibus quantum non milvus oberrat,” which 1s a close parallel to Petr., 37, “fundos habet qua milvi volant.” Again, both Persius and Petronius use the rare word “ baro,” which occurs only two or three times elsewhere.

PET Owi v’s

based on the ordinary experience? of contemporary life,— the precursor of such novels of adventure and character as Gil Blas and Roderick Random. ‘There is no evidence of the existence of a regular plot in the Satire ; but we find one central figure, Encolpius, who professes to narrate his adventures, and to describe all that he saw and heard, while allowing various other personages to exhibit their peculiarities and express their opinions dramatically. From the nature of the adventures described there seems no reason why the book should not have gone on to an inter-

minable length.

The fragment opens with the appearance of the hero, Encolpius, who seems to be an itinerant lecturer travelling with a companion named Ascyltos and a boy Giton, in a portico of a Greek town, apparently in Campania. Encolpius delivers a lecture, full of admirable sense, on the false taste in literature, resulting from the prevailing system of education, which is replicd to by a rival de- claimer, Agamemno, who shifts the blame from the teachers to the parents. ‘he central personages of the story next go through a series of questionable adventures, in the course of which they are involved

in a charge of robbery. A day or two after they are present ata dinner given by a freedman of enormous wealth, Trimalchio, who had risen, as he boasted, “from a penny,” and who entertained with ostentatious and grotesque extravagance a number of men of his own rank, who had not been so prosperous in life. We see actually in flesh and blood specimens of those “Cappadocian knights” to whom we have many pointed references in Martial and Juvenal. We witness their feats of gluttony ; we listen to the ordinary talk of their guests about their neighbours, about the weather, about the hard times, about the public games, about the education of their children. We recognize in a fantastic and extra- yagant form the same kind of vulgarity and pretension which the satirist of all times delights to expose by pen or pencil in the illiter- ate and ostentatious millionaires of the age. Next day Encolpius separates from his companions in a fit of jealousy, and, after two or tliree days’ sulking and brooding on his revenge, enters a picture gallery, where he meets with an old poet, who, after talking sensibly on the decay of art and the inferiority of the painters of the age to the old masters, proceeds to recite in a public portico some verses on the capture of Troy, till his audience take to stoning him. The scene is next on board ship, where Encolpius finds he has fallen into the hands of some old enemies. They are shipwrecked, and Encol- pius, Giton, and the old poet get to shore in the neighbourhood of Crotona, where, with the view of attracting the attention of the inhabitants, notorious fortune-hunters, the adventurers set up as men of fortune. The fragment ends with a new set of question- able adventures, in which prominent parts are played by a beautiful enchantress named Circe, a priestess of Priapus, and a certain matron who leaves them her heirs, but attaches a condition to the in- heritance which even Encolpius might have shrunk from fulfilling.*

What, then, may be said to be the purpose of the book, and what is its ethical and literary value? It can hardly be called a satire in the ordinary, and certainly not in the Roman sense of the word. There is no trace of any purpose of exposing vice with any wish to correct it. If we can suppose the author to have becn animated by any other motive than the dcsire to amuse himself, it might be that of convincing himself that the world in general was as bad as he was himself. Juvenal and Swift are justly regarded as among the very greatest of satirists, and their estimate of human nature is perhaps nearly as unfavourable as that of Petronius ; but their attitude towards

human degradation is not one of compla- cent amusement but of indignant condemnation. They too, like Petronius, take pleasure in describing things most repugnant to all sense of delicacy with the coarsest realism, but theirs is the realism of disgust, not, like that of Petronius, a realism of sym- pathy. It might have been thought difficult to sink lower in the cynical tolerance of immorality than Martial occasionally has sunk. But there is all the difference in the world between Martial and Petronius. Martial does not gloat over the vices of which he writes with cynical frankness. He is perfectly aware that they are vices, and that the reproach of them is the worst that can be cast on any one. But further, Martial, with all his faults, is, in his affections, his tastes, his relations to others, essentially human, friendly, generous, true. There is perhaps not a single sentence in Petronius which implies any knowledge of or sympathy with the existence of affection, conscience, or honour, or even the most elementary goodness of heart, or of that amount of mutual confi- dence which is necessary to keep a band of brigands or a circle of

2 Tn this respect the work of Petronius seems to have differed from the Greek romances.

3 Omnes qui in testamento meo legata habent, preter libertos meos, hac conditione percipient que dedi, si corpus meum in partes conci- derint et astante populo comederint (141).

swindlers together. In estimating such a work, which in its spirit not less than in its form and its literary execution is essentially abnormal, it is necessary to bear in mind that it has reached us in so fragmentary and mutilated a shape that we may altogether have missed the key to it, and that it may have been intended by its author to be a sustained satire, written in a vein of reserved and powerful irony, of the type realized in our modern Jonathan Wild or Barry Lindon. But, if this is not the explanation, we must fall back on the more obvious but still diffieult solution that, in the entire divorce of intellectual power and insight from any element of right human feeling, the work is an exceptional phenomenon in literature. From an ethical and human point of view it is valuable only as a gauge of the degradation in whieh much of Roman society was sunk in the age when

Persius wrote his satires—a work more pervaded by a spirit of moral purity than any other in Latin litera- ture—and Christianity made its first converts in Rome,

But, as a work of original power, of humorous representation, of literary invention and art, the fragment deserves all the admira- tion which it has received. We recognize the ‘‘arbiter elegantiz ” in the admirable sense of the remarks scattered through it on education, on art, on poetry, and on eloquence. Though a better critie than a poet, yet he can write verse not only with good taste and simplicity, rare among the poets of that age, but with a true feeling of nature, as, for instance, in his description of a grove of plane-trees, cypresses, and pines—

“Has inter ludebat aquis errantibus amnis Spumeus et querulo vexabat rore lapillos.” And in some of his shorter pieces he anticipates the terseness and elegance of Martial. The long fragment on the Civil War does not seein to be written so much with the view of parodying as of enter- ing into rivalry with the poem of Lucan, but he has caught the tone and style of the author whom he censures. In the epigram extemporized by Trimalchio late on in the panquet, “ Quod non expectes, ex transverso fit— Et supra nos Fortuna negotia curat, Quare da nobis vina Falerna, puer,”

we have probably a more deliberate parody of the style of verses produced by the illiterate aspirants to be in the fashion of the day. We might conjccture that the chief gift to which Petronius owed his social and his literary success was that of humorous mimicry, in which the most intellectual and at the same time sensual among the Romans—as, for instance, Sulla—took a great delight. The man who could deseribe the dinner of Trimalchio and mimic the talk and peculiarities of the various guests with such humorous zest was just the man to keep the table in a roar during the pro- longed revels in the palace of Nero. If the old ‘‘vexata questio” of the distinction between wit and humour were to be revived, the critic who could determine by analysis what is the essence of the talent of Martial on the one hand and of Petronius on the other would go very near to solving it. He would have, however, to abandon the theory that humour is more essentially humane and sympathetic than wit. Petronius is perhaps the most strictly humorous among Latin writers, and humour is in him

combined with the rarer gift of conceiving and representing character. In Trimalchio and his various guests, in the old poet, in the culti- vated, depraved, and moody Encolpius, in the Chrysis, Quartilla, Polyznis, &c., we recognize in living examples the play of those various appetites, passions, and tendencies which satirists deal with as abstract qualities. Another gift he possesses in a high degree, which must have availed him in society as well as in literature,— the gift of story-telling ; and some of the stories which first appear in the Satire—e.g., that of the Matron of Ephesus —have enjoyed a great reputation in later times. His style, too, is that of one who must have been an excellent talker, who could talk sense when sense was wanted, who could have discussed questions of taste and literature with the most cultivated men of any time as well as amused the most dissolute society of any time in their most reckless revels. One phrase of his is often quoted by many who have never come upon it in its original context, ‘‘ Horatii curiosa felicitas.”

Perhaps next after a day spent in the ruins of Pompcii nothing else makes us feel so near the actual daily life 3f the Roinan world in all its petty details in the Ist century a.p. as this fragment of Petronius. Another obvious observation that is suggested by it is that of the superiority of the novel over any other form of literature for the purpose of literally reproducing the commonplace experience of actual life in every age. Opinions may differ as to the value or interest of the literal reproduction of the customs and manners of such an age as that of Nero.

Compared with the amount of attention which was given to Petronius both by scholars and men of letters in the 17th and 18th centuries, comparatively little has been done for him in recent times. The only good critical edition of the fragments is that of Biichler. An interesting chapter is devoted to him in M. Gaston Boissier’s L’Opposition sous empire. For those who wish to read him

in a modern translation, the French version by M. H. De Guerle is the one to be recommended. We Youisa)

PETROPAVLOVSK, a district town of western Siberia, in the government of Akmolinsk, is situated on the right bank of the Ishim river, 185 miles to the west of Omsk.

The old fort occupies a hill about 100 feet high, which slopes abruptly to the Ishim, while the wooden houses and the broad, unpaved, but regular streets of the town occupy partly the declivities of the hill and partly the (sometimes inundated) banks of the river. The fertile steppes to the east, west, and south of the town largely supply it with corn and cattle, and at the same time give great facilities for trade with the Kirghiz, with Turkestan, and with Bokhara. Its exports passing through the custom-house are estimated at an annual value of about £200,000, the chief items being cottons (upwards of £100,000), woollen stuffs, corn, metals, metallic wares, and spirits. The value of the cattle imports exceeds £150,000 annually, and the aggregate value of the skins, cotton goods, furs, tea, and wool imported reaches the same figure. The town has several tallow-melting houses, tanneries, and glue and soap works; and its industries are steadily increasing. The population (7850 in 1865) now exceeds 11,500.

The small fort of Petropavlovsk, consisting of an earthen palisaded wall, was founded in 1752, and was the military centre of the Ishim line of fortifications. It became at once a place of trade with the Kirghiz, and in 1771 had a population of 914 inhabitants. It received municipal institutions in 1807.

PETROPAVLOVSK is also the name of a Russian seaport in Kam- chatka, on the eastern shore of the Bay of Avateha in 53° N. lat. and 158° 44’ E. long. Its beautiful harbour, one of the best on the Pacific, is but little frequented, and the town eonsists merely of a few huts with some 500 inhabitants. Its naval institutions were transferred to Nikolaicvsk after the attack of the allies in 1854.

PETROPOLIS, a town of Brazil, in the province of Rio de Janeiro, lies at a height of 2400 feet above the sea on a beautiful and healthy plateau, surrounded by the wooded heights of the Serra da Estrella, which lie between it and the coast region. It is about 25 miles almost due north from Rio de Janeiro, and is reached by a railway (22 miles) from Maua; the last 103 miles are on the Rigi system. Founded by the emperor of Brazil as a colony for dis- tressed German immigrants, Petropolis has grown into an elegant and thriving town of 8000 or 10,000 inhabitants, and, besides the royal palace and park, has a number of good hotels and public buildings.

PETROVSK, a town of European Russia, in the pro- vince of Saratoff, lies on both banks of the Medvyeditza, a tributary of the Don, 64 miles north-north-west of Saratoff on the Volga by the highway to Moscow. It was founded by Peter I. in 1698 to defend the district from the en- croachments of the Kuban Tatars, and by the beginning of the 19th century it had become a place of 6921 inhabit- ants, with ten churches and a monastery (St Nicholas). In 1864 the population was 10,128, and it has since increased to upwards of 15,000.

This Petrovsk must not be confounded with (1) Petrovsk, a sea- port town of from 4000 to 5000 inhabitants in northern Daghestan, which possesses one of the best roadsteads on the west coast of the Caspian ; nor (2) with the crown iron-works of this name in Trans- baikalia, deserving mention for its convict establishment, where the ‘ Decembrists ” were kept for several years.

PETROZAVODSK, a town of Russia, capital of the government of Olonetz, lies on the western shore of Lake Onega, 300 miles to the north-east of St Petersburg. The small river Lososinka divides it into two parts,—the town proper and the iron-works. Two cathedrals built towards the end of last century, two lyceums for boys and girls, a mining school, an ecclesiastical seminary, and several primary schools are the chief public buildings and institu- tions. The Government cannon-foundry can turn out annu- ally more than 5000 tons of pig-iron, and the same weight of guns, gun-carriages, and ammunition, but its actual pro- duction is subject to great fluctuations. Within the district there are a few private iron-works as well as important saw- mills. The inhabitants engage in agriculture and fishing, and there is some trade with St Petersburg,—timber, fish, and furs being exported in exchange for corn, groceries,

and manufactured wares. The population (11,027 in 1865) was 11,970 in 1881.

Peter I., who was the first to give attention to the mineral re- sources of Olonetz, founded an iron-work, Petrovskii Zavod, on the Lososinka river, in 1703; the ‘‘zavod” prepared guns and arms, and within its walls a small

palace and a church were built for the czar. The iron-work continued in operation for only twenty-four years ; a copper-work, and subsequently a private iron-work, founded by Frenchmen, had no better success. The Government cannon- foundry was instituted in 1774; the settlement that sprang up was called Petrovsk, and received municipal institutions in 1777. Petrozavodsk became capital of the government of Olonetz in 1802.

PETTY, Sir Witt1am (1623-1687), statistician and political economist, and author of the Down Survey of Irish Lands, was born on 26th May 1623. He was the son of a clothier at Romsey in Hampshire, and received his early education at the grammar-school there. About the age of fifteen he went to Caen (Normandy), taking with him a little stock of merchandise, on which he traded, and so maintained himself whilst learning French, improving himself in Latin and Greek, and studying mathematics and other sciences. On his return to England he seems to have had for a short time a place in the royal navy. He went abroad again in 1643, and remained for three years in France and the Netherlands, pursuing his studies at Utrecht, Leyden, Amsterdam, and Paris. In the last- named city he read Vesalius with the celebrated Hobbes. The philosopher was then preparing his 7ractatus Opticus, and it is said that Petty drew the diagrams for him. In 1647 Petty obtained a patent for the invention of double writing, or, in other words, of a copying machine. In politics he espoused the side of the Parliament. His first

publication was a letter to Samuel Hartlib in 1648, en-

titled Advice for the Advancement of some Particular Parts of Learning, the object of which was to recommend such a change in education as would give it a more practical character. In the same year he took up his residence at Oxford, where he was made deputy professor of anatomy, and where he gave instruction in that science and in chem- istry. In 1649 he obtained the degree of doctor of physic, and was soon after elected a fellow of Brasenose College. He gained some notoriety in 1650 by restoring to life a woman who had been hanged for infanticide.

professor of music at Gresham College. to Ireland, having been appointed physician to the army

in that country. In 1654, observing that the admeasure-

ment and division of the lands forfeited in 1641 and granted to the soldiers had been (to use his own words) “most inefficiently and absurdly managed,” he entered into a contract to execute a fresh survey, which he com- pleted in thirteen months. and part of the money he invested profitably in the purchase of soldiers’ debentures. He thus became pos- sessor of so large a domain in the county of Kerry that, according to Aubrey, he could behold from Mount Man- gerton 50,000 acres of his own land. He set up iron-works in that neighbourhood, opened lead-mines and marble- quarries, established a pilchard-fishery, and commenced a trade in timber. In Macaulay’s History of England there is an account of the settlement which he founded at Ken- mare. Besides the office of commissioner of distribution of the lands he had surveyed, he held that of secretary to the lord lieutenant, Henry Cromwell, and was also during two years clerk of the council. In January 1658 he was elected to Richard Cromwell’s parliament as member for West Looe in Cornwall. He was accused by Sir Jerome Sankey before the House of Commons of malversation and fraud in the conduct of his survey; but the matter did not come to an issue in consequence of the dissolution of the parliament, and Petty afterwards published tracts in his defence. After the Restoration he returned to England

PE T—

and was favourably received and knighted by Charles IL, who was “much pleased with. his ingenious discourses,” and who, it is said, intended to create him earl of Kilmore, He obtained from the king a new patent constituting him surveyor-general of Ireland. notice by the success of his invention of a double-bottomed ship, which twice made the passage between Dublin and

In 1651 he

was made professor of anatomy at Oxford, and also became In 1652 he went

By this he gained £9000, .

Ff U

In 1663 he attracted much

Holyhead, but was afterwards lost in a violent storm. He was one of the first members of the Royal Society, and sat on its council. He died at London on the 16th of December 1687, and was buried in the church of his native place. His will, a curious and characteristic document, is printed in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

Petty was a man of remarkable versatility, ingenuity, and re- source. Evelyn declared he had ''never known such another genius," and said of him, 'If I were a prince I would make him my second councillor at least." His character does not seem to have been an elcvated one, though Henry Cromwell, who knew him well, appears to have csteemed him highly.

The survey executed by Petty was, somewhat whimsically, called the '' Down Survey," because the results were set down in maps; it is called by that name in Petty's will. He left in MS. a full account of the proceedings in connexion with it, which was edited by the late Major-General Sir Thomas A. Larcom for the Irish Archeological Society in 1851. The maps, some of which were injured by a fire in 1711, are preserved in the Public Record Office, Dublin. The survey "stands to this day," says Larcom, "with the accompanying books of distribution, the legal record of the title on which half the land of Ireland is held; and for the pur- pose to which it was and is applied it remains sufficient." Petty's name is associated with the foundation, or, as it is safer to say, the successful prosecution of what has been somewhat too ambitiously termed "the science of political arithmetic." It is esseutially the same with what is called comparative statistics, In Petty's time trust- worthy numerical expressions of social facts could seldom be directly obtained, and thus large room was left for more or less probable inference from the available data. As we might have expected from his intellectual character, the expedients to which he resorts in seeking to arrive at determinations of this kind are very ingenious, but often unsatisfactory and even delusive. Whilst, however, he sometimes makes too much of the defective matcrials he could command, he strongly insists on accurate and continued observa- tion as the only sure basis.

Petty was not merely a statistician, he was also a political econo- mist, and one of no mcan rank. He is one of the first in whom we find a tendency to a view of industrial phenomena which was at variance with the then dominant mercantilist ideas, and he exhibits a statesmanlike sense of the elements in which the strength of a nation really consists. Roscher names him as having, along with Locke and Dudley North, raised the English school to the highest point it attained before the time of Huine. His Treatise of Taxes and Contributions has been recently pronounced to be “the first great work on economic theory, which it may fairly be said to have founded.” However this may be, it certainly contains a clear statement of the doctrine that price depends on the labour neces- sary for production. Petty is much concerned to discover a fixed unit of value, and he thinks he has found it in the necessary susten- ance of a man foraday. He understands the cheapening cffect of the division of labour. He states correctly the notion of “natural and true” rent as the remainder of the produce of land after pay- ment of the cost of production ; but he seems to have no idea of the “law of diminishing returns.” He has much that is just on the subject of money : he sees that there may be an excess of it as well as a deficiency, and regards the prohibition of its exportation as contrary to sound policy. But he errs in attributing the fall of the rate of interest which takes place in the progress of industry to the increase in the quantity of money. He protested against the fetters imposed on the tradc of Ireland, and advocated a union of that country with Great Britain. Whilst the general tendency in his day was to represent England as in a state of progressive decline— an opinion put forward particularly in the tract entitled Britannia Languens— Petty declared her resources and prospects to be not inferior to those of France.

A complete list of his works is given in the Athene Oxonienses. The most important are: the Treatise of Taxes and Contributions (1662, 1667, and 1685); Political Arithmetic, presented in MS. to Charles II., but, because it contained matter likely to be offensive to France, kept unpublished till 1691, when it was edited by Petty’s son Charles; Quantulumeunque, or a Tract concerning Money (1682); Observations upon the Dublin Bills of Mortality in 1681, and the State of that City (1683); Essay concerning the Multiplication of Mankind (1686) ; Political Anatomy of Ireland (1691). Several papers appearcd in the Philosophical Transactions. Itis much to be regretted, as M‘Culloch long since remarked,

that a complete and uniform edition of his writings has not been published.

PETUNIA. See Horricurrurg, vol. xii. p. 264. PEUTINGER, Conrap (1465-1547), a prominent and

PE W—PF E

useful citizen of Augsburg, remembered for his services to the new learning. He was one of the first to publish Roman inscriptions (see vol. xiii. p. 124), and his name remains associated with the famous Tabula Peutingeriana (see Maps, vol. xv. p. 517), which was in his hands when he died, and was found again among his MSS. in 1714. This important Roman itinerary table was first published as a whole by Scheyb (Vienna, 1753); the most elaborate edition is by Desjardins (Paris, 1869 and following years).

PEWTER! is a generic term for a variety of alloys, which all agree in this, that tin forms the predominating com- ponent. The finest pewter (sometimes called “tin and temper ”) is simply tin hardened by the addition of a trifle of copper. Ordinary pewter is tin alloyed with lead, which latter ingredient is added chiefly on account of its cheapness, and therefore often in excessive proportion. The law of France restricts the percentage of lead to 16°5, with a toleration of 1°5 per cent. of error, an alloy of this or a higher degreé of richness in tin being, according to an old investigation by Vauquelin, as proof against sour wine or vinegar as pure tin is. Higher percentages of lead are dangerous, and besides spoil the appearance of the alloy. The composition of an alloy containing only these two components can be ascertained approximately by deter- mining the specific gravity (see MrTats, vol. xvi. p. 67 sq.).

Plate pewter is a hard variety much used for plates and dishes ; a good quality is composed of 100 parts of tin, 8 of antimony, 2 of bismuth, and 2 of copper. Closely allied to it is the silver-white alloy called “Britannia metal,” which is much used in Great Britain for the making of tea- pots more especially. To give an idea of its very variable composition the following two analyses may be quoted :—

MUTE 55.0. naees 85°7 81°9 ATIIMONY ...2..200000025 10°4 16-2 CERNE: oii cesses sexes 10 0°0 ZMIN Geese were es ee tees aaaeen BAe

1:9

100°0 100°0

Pewter wares are shaped chiefly in three ways. Measures and spoons are cast in moulds of brass made of two closely- fitting but detachable halves, the surface of the mould being powdered over with sandarach, or painted over with white of egg or oil, before use to prevent adhesion. Plates and dishes are made preferably by hammering. In large establishments milk-jugs and similar articles are often produced by "'spinning," 7.e., by pressing a flat plate of pewter against a rapidly-revolving blunt tool, and thus raising it into the desired shape. (Cf. LzaD, vol. xiv. p.378.)

PFAFF, Curist1AN Hetnricu (1773-1852), chemist and physicist, younger brother of J. F. Pfaff noticed below, took his degree as doctor of medicine at Stuttgart in 1793. He travelled with a noble family as physician, and practised for a time at Heidenheim ; but he afterwards became pro- fessor (extraordinary in 1797, ordinary in 1801) of medi- cine, physics, and chemistry at the university of Kiel. He was a most prolific author of memoirs on sanitary and medical, and especially on chemical and physical, subjects. His work in chemistry was chiefly analytical and mineral- ogical. In physics he was distinguished as one of the earlier experimenters with the voltaic current, and had a considerable share in the experimental investigation of its properties. He also made important researches on the carrying power of magnets, more particularly on the effect of the extent of the attracting surface. Comparatively few of his memoirs are now quoted, owing to the fact that none of his results contained any capital discovery ; never- theless he deserves to be remembered as one of the ener- getic workmen who aided in raising the stately pile of modern experimental science.

1 Old Fr. peutre ; Ital. peltro ; comp. Eng. spelter.

PFAFF, Jowann Friepricn (1765-1825), German mathematician, was born on 22d December 1765 at Stutt- gart. He received his early education at the Carlsschule, where Schiller, afterwards his life-long friend, was a school-

companion. His mathematical capacity was early noticed ; and after leaving school he pursued his studies in that department at Gdttingen under Kastner, author of a History of Mathematics; and in 1787 he went to Berlin and studied practical astronomy under Bode. In 1788 Pfaff became professor of mathematics in Helmstadt, and so continued until that university was abolished in 1810. From that time till his death (20th April 1825) he held the chair of mathematics at Halle. Pfaff's researches bore chiefly on the theory of series, to which he applied the methods of the so-called Combinatorial School of German mathematicians, and on the solution of differential equa- tions. His two principal works are Disquisitiones analytice mamme ad calculum integralem et doctrinam serierum pertinentes (4to, vol. i, Helmstadt, 1797) and " Methodus generalis, zequationes differentiarum particularum, nec non zquationes differentiales vulgares, utrasque primi ordinis inter quotcumque variabiles, complete integrandi " in Adh, d. Berl. Acad. (1814-15). The former work con- tains Pfaff's discussion of the equation (a+ bx") x°d?y/dx* + (c+ ex") xdy/dx + (f + gx") y =X, which generally bears his name, but which had originally been treated in a less complete manner by Euler. The latter work contains an important addition to the theory of partial differential equations as it had been left by Lagrange.

An interesting review of Pfaff's memoir was published by Gauss in the Gottingen Gelehrte Anzeigen for 1815 (republished in vol. iv. of his complete works). For fuller details regarding Pfaff and his work, consult Gerhardt, Geschichte der Mathematik in Deutschland oe 1877, p. 198), and Pfaff s correspondence, edited by C. H.

ait,

Another brother of this family, JoHANN WiLHELM ANDREAS

PraFF (1774-1835), was professor of pure and applied mathematics successively at Dorpat, Nuremberg, Wiirzburg, and Erlangen.

PFALZBURG, a town of German Lorraine, lies high on the west slopes of the Vosges, 25 miles to the north-north- west of Strasburg. In 1880 it contained 3379 (mainly Roman Catholic) inhabitants. The principality of Pfalz- burg, originally a part of Luxemburg, afterwards belonged in turn to the bishop of Metz, the bishop of Strasburg, and the duke of Lorraine, and

passed into the possession of France in 1661. The town was of importance as com- manding the passes of the Vosges, and was strongly forti- fied by Vauban in 1681. The works resisted the Germans for four months in 1870, but have since been razed.

PFEIFFER, Franz (1815-1868), an eminent writer on medieval German literature and on old forms of the German language, was born at Solothurn on the 27th of February 1815. Having studied at the university of Munich, he went to Stuttgart, where in 1846 he became librarian at the royal public library. In 1857, having established his fame as one of the foremost authorities on his special subject, he was appointed professor of German literature and language at the university of Vienna; and in 1860 he was made a member of the Imperial Academy of Sciences. He died on the 29th of May 1868.

As an editor of medieval literature Pfeiffer was unsurpassed among the scholars of his day, and by his work in this department he did much to foster the critical study of writers who before his time were known only to specialists. Among the many writings edited by him may be mentioned the works of the German mystics of the 14th century, the Buch der Natur of Conrad of Megenberg, the Predigten of Berthold of Ratisbon, the Edelstein of Ulrich Boner, the Barlaam und Josaphat of Rudolf of Ems, and the poems of Walther von der Vogelweide. Of his independent writ- ings the most important are Zur deutschen Literaturgeschichte, Ueber Wesen und Bildung der héfischen Sprache in mittelhoch- deutscher Zeit, Der Dichter des Nibclungenliedes, Forschung wnd Kritik auf dem Gebiete des deutschen Alterthums, and Altdeutsches Uebungsbuch. Pfeiffer’s style is clear and vigorous, and on every

subject which he discussed he was able to throw fresh light. A biographical sketch of him by Bartsch occurs in Uhland’s Brief- weehsel mit Fretherrn von Lassberg, which Pfeiffer. edited.

PFEIFFER, Ipa Lavra (1797-1858), traveller, was born at Vienna, the daughter of a merchant named Reyer, 14th October 1797. Ida was the only sister of six brothers, and in her youth acquired masculine habits. Her training was Spartan, and accustomed her to the endurance of hard- ships and deprivations. On 1st May 1820 she married Dr Pfeiffer, a prosperous

advocate of Lemberg, twenty-four years older than herself. Through over-zeal in denouncing abuses her husband incurred official persecution, and ina few years after his marriage was reduced to the greatest poverty. Ida, living mostly apart from her husband, underwent great drudgery, but, through her own exertions, managed to educate her two sons. After being relieved of this responsibility she resolved to indulge her intense longing to travel, and, with the most limited means, succeeded in making a series of journeys which, in extent, are probably unparalleled in the case of any other woman. In 1842 Madame Pfeiffer visited Egypt and Palestine, and, with considerable hesitation, published an account of her journey in three small volumes, Reise einer Wienerin in das Heilige Land, in 1845. In the same year she set out again, this time to Scandinavia and Iceland, describing her tour in two volumes, Reise nach dem Skandinavischen Norden und der Insel Island (Pesth, 1846). In 1846 she started on her first. journey round the world, visiting Brazil, Chili, and other countries of South America, Tahiti, China, India, Persia, Asia Minor, and Greece, and reaching home in 1848. The results were published in three volumes at Vienna in 1850, under the title Zine Frauenfahrt um die Welt. For her next and most extensive journey she re- ceived the support of the Austrian Government to the small extent of £150. Starting in 1851, she went by London to South Africa, her purpose being to penetrate into the interior ; but, this proving impracticable, she pro- ceeded to the Malay Archipelago, spending eighteen months in the Sunda Islands and the Moluccas. After a visit to Australia, Madame Pfeiffer proceeded to California, Oregon, Peru, Ecuador, New Granada, the Missiones Territory, and north again to the American lakes, reaching home in 1854. Her narrative, Meine zweite Weltreise, was published in four volumes at Vienna in 1856. In May of the same year Ida set out to explore Madagascar, where at first she was cordially received by the queen. Unfortunately, she un- wittingly allowed herself to be involved in the plot of a Frenchman to overthrow the government, and, with brutal treatment, was expelled from the country. After being de- tained by her sufferings in Mauritius for some months, Ida returned by England to Vienna, where she died 27th October 1858. The Reise nach Madagascar was issued in 1861, with a biography by her son.

All Madame Pfeiffer’s narratives have been translated into English as well as other languages, and have maintained a steady popularity up to the

present time. Although Ida Pfeiffer can hardly be said to have Uroken up new ground in her travels, she certainly did much to increase our knowledge of countries about which our in- formation was most meagre. Moreover, her scientific collections— for she was as good a collector as observer—were of considerable extent, and great value and novelty, and were regarded as important acquisitions by the Vienna museum. She was made an honorary member of the Berlin and Paris Geographical Societies, and received from the king of Prussia the gold medal of science and art. Her travels altogether covered 150,000 miles by sea and 20,000 by land. Ida Pfeiffer was short in stature, and latterly slightly bent ; her manners were simple, unassuming, and womanly.

PF ORZHEIM, one of the chief industrial towns in the grand-duchy of Baden, is pleasantly situated at the con- fluence of the Nagold, the Wiirm, and the Enz, on the northern margin of the Black Forest, 15 miles to the south-east of Carlsruhe. The most prominent buildings are the old palace of the margraves of Baden-Durlach and

the Schlosskirche, the latter an interesting edifice of the 12th to the 15th centuries, containing the tombs and monu- ments of the margraves. The staple industry is the manu- facture of gold and silver ware and jewellery, which gives employment to nearly 10,000 workmen, besides which there are iron and copper works, and manufactures of chemicals, paper, leather, cloth, and other articles. A brisk trade is maintained in timber, cattle, and agricultural produce. In 1880 the population was 24,037, having almost doubled itself in twenty years. Four-fifths of the inhabitants are Protestants.

Pforzheim (Porta Hercyniz) is of Roman origin, and has belonged to Baden for 600 years. From about 1300 down to 1565 it was the seat of the margraves of the Baden-Durlach-Ernestine line, now extinct. The town was taken by the troops of the Catholic League

in 1624, and was destroyed by the French in 1689. The story of the 400 citizens of Pforzheim who sacrificed themsclves for their

prince after the battle of Wimpfen (1622) has been relegated by .

recent historical research to the domain of legend. The humanist Reuchlin was born at Pforzheim in 1455.

PHADROS, the author of five books of Latin fables in verse, lived in the reigns of Augustus, Tiberius, Cali- gula, and Claudius. To his literary vanity we owe most of our scanty knowledge of his life. He was born on the Pierian Mountain in Macedonia, but seems to have been brought at an early age to Italy, for he mentions that he read a verse of Ennius as a boy at school. According to the heading of the chief MS. he was a slave and was freed by Augustus. He incurred the wrath of Sejanus, the powerful minister of Tiberius, but on what grounds is not known. Devoting himself to literature, he lived in poverty and died at an advanced age. The first two books of his fables were published together; the third, fourth, and fifth appeared later, each by itself. The third book is dedicated to Eutychus, a wealthy man of business and probably a freedman, to whom the poet appeals for promised help. The fourth book is dedicated to Parti- culon, who seems to have dabbled in literature. From the fact that Seneca, writing in 43 or 44 a.p. (Consol. ad Polyb., 27), knows of no Latin writer of fables we may infer that Phzedrus published his fables after that time, but the exact date is unknown. His work shows little or no originality ; he simply versified (in iambic trimeters) the fables current in his day under the name of “sop,” in- terspersing them with anecdotes drawn from daily life, history, and mythology. He tells his fable and draws the moral with business-like directness and simplicity ; his language is classical, neat, and clear, but thoroughly prosaic, though it occasionally attains a dignity bordering on eloquence. He is fond of abstract words. From a literary point of view Phedrus is far inferior to those masters of fable-writing, Babrius and La Fontaine; he lacks the quiet picturesqueness and pathos of the former, and the exuberant vivacity and humour of the latter. Though he frequently refers to the envy and detraction which pursued him, Phzdrus seems to have attracted little attention in antiquity. He is mentioned by Martial (iii. 20, 5), who imitated some of his verses, and by Avianus. Prudentius must have read him, for he imitates one of his lines (Prud., Cath., vii. 115; cp. Phzedrus, iv. 6, 10).

The first edition of the five books of Phedrus was pub- lished by Pithou at Troyes in 1596. But, from the gaps in the books as well as from the

disproportionate short- ness of some of them, it is plain that this collection is incomplete. In the beginning of the 18th century there was discovered at Parma a MS. of Perotti (1430-1480), archbishop of Siponto, containing sixty-four fables of Phedrus, of which thirty-two were new. These new fables were first published at Naples by Cassitto in 1808, and afterwards (much more correctly) by Jannelli in 1811. Both editions were superseded by the discovery of a much

better preserved MS. of Perotti in the Vatican, which was published by Angelo Mai in 1831. For some time the authenticity of these new fables was disputed, but they are now generally accepted, and with justice, as genuine fables of Phzedrus. They do not form a sixth book, for we know from Avianus that Phzdrus wrote five books only, but it is impossible to assign them to their original places in the five books. They are usually printed as an appendix. Even thus it is probable that we have not the whole of Phzdrus.

In the Middle Ages Phedrus exercised a considerable influence through the prose versions of his fables which were current, though his own works and even his name were forgotten. Of these prose versions the oldest existing seems to be that known as the “ Anony- mus Nilantianus,” so called because first edited by Nilant at Leyden in 1709 from a MS. of the 10th or beginning of the 11th century. It approaches the text of Phedrus so closely that it was probably made directly from it. Of the sixty-seven fables which it contains thirty are derived from lost fables of Phedrus. But the largest and most influential of the prose versions of Phedrus is that which bears the name of “Romulus.” It contains eighty-three fables, is as old as the 10th century, and seems to have been based on a still ear- lier prose version, which, under the name of “ Aisop,” and addressed to one Rufus, may have been made in the Carlovingian period. The preface of Romulus, in which he professes to have translated the fables from the Greek, is a mere fiction of the copyist ; no such Romulus as this ever existed, although in the Middle Ages he was sometimes thought to have been a Roman emperor, and has still a place in the Biographie Universelle (1863). The collection of fables in the Weissenburg (now Wolfenbiittel) MS. is based on the same version (the

#sopus ad Rufum) as Romulus. These three prose versions contain in all one hundred distinct fables, of which fifty- six are derived from the existing and the remaining forty-four presumably from lost fables of Phedrus. Some modern scholars, as Burmann, Dressler, and L. Miiller, have tried to restore these lost fables by versifying the prose versions.

The collection bearing the name of Romulus became in its turn the source from which, during the second half of the Middle Ages, almost all the collections of Latin fables in prose and verse were wholly or partially drawn. A version of the first three books of Romulus in elegiac verse enjoyed a wide popularity, even into the Renaissance. Its author (generally referred to since the edition of Névelet in 1610 as the Anonymous of Névelet) was long unknown, but Hervieux has lately shown grounds for identifying him with Walther of England, chaplain to Henry II. and afterwards arch- bishop of Palermo. The version dates from the latter part of the 12th century. It was especially popular in Italy, where the Italian translation of Accio Zuccho (Verona, 1479) was frequently reprinted. Another version of Romulus in Latin elegiacs was made by Alexander Neckam, born at St Albans in 1157, and towards the end of his life (early part of 18th century) abbot of the Augustinian monastery at Exeter. Neckam knew and copied Walther's version, but his own never had the same popularity. Amongst the collections partly derived from Romulus the most famous is probably that in Freuch verse by MARIE DE FRANCE (q.v.). About 1200 a collection of fables in Latin prose, based partly on Romulus, was made by the Cistercian monk Odo of Sherrington; they have a strong medieval and clerical tinge. In 1370 Gerard of Minden wrote a poetical version of Romulus in Low German.

Since the first edition of Phedrus by Pithou in 1596 the editions and transla- tions have been very numerous; among the editions may specially be mentioned those of Burmann (1718 and 1727), Bentley (1726), Schwabe (1806), Berger de Xivrey (1830), Orelli (1832), Eyssenhardt (1867), L. Miller (1877), Hervieux, in his work Les Fabulistes Latins depuis le siécle d' Auguste jusqu'd la fin du moyen age, Paris, 1884. For the medieval versions of Phedrus and their de- rivatives see L. Roth, in Philologus, i. p. 523 sq. ; H. Oesterley, Romulus die Paraphrasen des Phedrus und die aesopische Fabel im Mittelalter, 1870 (untrust- worthy); E. Grosse, in

Jahrbb. f. class. Philol., vol. ev. (1872); and especially the learned work of Hervieux, who gives the Latin texts of all the medieval

imitators (direct and indirect) of Phedrus, some of these texts being now edited for the first time. (J. G. FR.)

PHAETHON (“the shining one”), in Homer an epithet of the sun, and used by later writers as a name for the sun, is more generally known in classical mythology as a son of the Sun and the ocean nymph Clymene. He persuaded his father to let him drive the chariot of the sun across the sky, but he lost control of the horses, and driving too near the earth scorched it; mountains were set on fire, rivers and seas dried up, Libya became a desert, and the fMthiopians were blackened by the heat. To save the earth from utter destruction Zeus killed Phaethon with a thunderbolt. He fell to earth at the mouth of the Eri- danus, a river of northern Europe (identified in later times with the Po), on the banks of which his weeping sisters

were transformed into poplars and their tears into amber. This part of the legend points to the mouth of the Oder or Vistula, where amber abounds. Phaethon was the sub- ject of a drama of Euripides, of which some fragments remain. The suggestion that the legend of Phaethon is a mythical expression of vast increases of temperature pro- duced at long intervals by changes in the relative position of the earth and the heavenly bodies was made by Plato (Timexus, 22 C, D).

PHALANGER. Among the anonymous additions to Charles l’Ecluse’s posthumous work Cure posteriores ; seu plurimarum non ante cognitarum aut descriptarum .. . ammalium nove descriptiones, published at Leyden in 1611, occurs the following :—

“In our third expedition, under Admiral Van der Hagen, there was seen at Amboyna a rare and truly marvellous animal. The ‘cousa,’ as it is called by the natives, is a reddish animal, a little larger than a cat, which has under its belly a kind of pouch in which the mamme are placed, and in this the young are born, and remain there hanging firmly on until large enough to be turned out by their mother. They return, however, continually to the pouch until

sufficiently developed to follow their mother and to find food for themselves. These animals live on grass, green leaves, and other vegetable food, and their flesh is eaten by the Portuguese and other native Christians, but not by the Moliammedans, who con- sider the cousa to be an unclean and forbidden animal, mainly on account of its want of horns.”

This early account forms the first mention of any of the numerous marsupials of the eastern hemisphere, as there can be no doubt that the animal called the cousa by the natives of Amboyna nearly 300 years ago was the Grey Cuscus (Cuscus orientalis), a member of the only marsupial genus occurring in any Eastern land then known to Euro- peans. About a hundred years afterwards the same animal was seen by the Dutch traveller Valentyn, also at Amboyna, and still later Buffon gave to a pair of cuscuses examined by him the name that heads this article, ‘‘ Phalanger,” on account of the peculiar structure of the second and third toes of the hind feet, which are united in a common skin up to the nails, a character now known to be present in a large proportion of the Australian marsupials. Later, Captain Cook in 1770 and 1777, Governor Phillip in 1788, and J. White in 1790 discovered various different kinds of phalangers, and now we know of not less than ten genera, with about thirty-five species, forming the sub-family Phalangistine of the family Phalangistidx, whose general characters have already been noticed in the article Mam- MALIA (vol. xv. p. 382). :

Phalangers as a whole are small woolly-coated animals, with long, powerful, and often prehensile tails, large claws, and, as in the American opossums, with opposable nailless great toes. Their expression seems in the day to be dull and sleepy, but by night they appear to decidedly greater advantage. They live mostly upon fruit, leaves, and blossoms, although some few feed habitually upon insects, and all relish, when in confinement, an occasional bird or other small animal. Several of the phalangers possess flying membranes stretched between their fore and hind limbs, by the help of which they can make long and sus- tained leaps through the air, like the flying squirrels; but it is interesting to notice that the possession of these flying membranes does not seem to be any indication of special affinity, the characters of the skull and teeth sharply dividing the flying forms, and uniting them with other species of the non-flying groups. Their skulls (see fig. 1) are as a rule broad and flattened, with the posterior part swollen out

laterally, owing to the numerous air-cells situated in the substance of the squamosals, The dental formula is very variable, especially as regards the pre- molars, of which some at least in each genus are reduced to mere functionless rudiments, and may even vary in number on the two sides of the jaw of the same individual. The

incisors are always 8, the lower one very large and pro- clivous, and the canines normally }, of which the inferior

F

Fig. 1.—Skull of Naked-eared Cuseus (Cuscus gymnotis). After Peters.

is always minute, and in one genus generally absent. The true molars number either 4 or 3.

The genera, of which not less than ten must be allowed as valid, may be arranged as follows.

4 C 4 1. Molars with curved crests, Tt (A.) Pm.? minute or absent; pm.1 and pm.3 functional, the latter stand-

ing obliquely.

a. Canines separated from incisors; tail hairy…... 1. Phalangisia. b. Canines close to incisors; tail naked, scaly ….2. Cuscus. (B.) Pm.? functional; pm.3 forming an even series with the molars.

c. Without a flying membrane; first two anterior toes opposable to rest; tail prehensile …...3. Pseudochirus. ad. With a fiying membrane; toes normal; tail bushy, non-prehensile …….....00ceee cee 004. Petaurista. II. Molars with round or pointed cusps.

(C.) Molars >} Functional premolars aes

e. Lower premolar row interrupted; upper i.l directed forwards; pm.2 functionless …..... 5. Dactylopsila. jf. Lower premolar row continuous;

upper il directed downwards ; pm.2 functional. GAN PINE MEMPIABES Ly. 5.5 4.c0.6 21c.ciei0is ores od 6. Petaurus. B: No flying membrane…..,.....7. Gymnobvelideus.

(D.) Molars ‘.

g. Functional premolars sh ; tail round; no fly-

Hig’ HIGHIDTAHE 105/506 sisi Cieid nye deveeisisicjere ier ees 8. Dromicia. h. Functional premolars <=; taildistichous ; no fly-

II OMAN TICS, £2550, a.etzpars einiexessis oa coeteteiesienelelesers 9. Distoechurus. i. Functional premolars 4 ; tail distichous; a fly-

hives oars 8 Wao pocher socodhad coGc05 Sopnds 10. Acrobata.

1. Phalangista, Cuv.

Upper incisors forming a semicircular series. Upper i.’ scarcely larger than the others, parallel, its anterior surface flattened, point transversely truncated. Canines some way from and shorter than incisors, in front of the premaxillary-maxillary suture* Pm.! small, some way separated both from canine and pm.°; pm.” sup- pressed ; pm.® large, obliquely placed. Molars large, quadrangular, their summits with distinct crescentic ridges. Lower incisors large ; canines very small, but persistent ; pm.1 and pm.” small, or, com- monly, absent; pm.® large and obliquely placed ; molars like the

upper ones.

1 108. 1.2.3.4

Dental formula,>—i, eo C.> PM. reor5 ML. Fg 4 X 2= 34 to 38.

Skull low, without frontal sinuses ; bulle scarcely inflated ; pre- maxillary long ; the anterior palatine foramina almost confined to the premaxille ; mandible with no trace of an external opening into the inferior dental canal.

Feet normal; tail long and bushy, only naked for a few inches along the under-side of the tip.

Range.—The whole of Australia and Tasmania; not yet found in New Guinea. ;

This genus, by its somewhat elongated premaxille, restriction

- At the point of exit from the bone, but the roots are of course situated in the maxilla.

> In this special dental formula, necessitated by the peculiar develop- ment of the teeth of the phalangers, the numbers are those of each individual tooth,—the larger numbers representing fully-developed functional teeth, and the smaller the minute and functionless ones. An asterisk to one of the latter shows that the tooth is sometimes or commonly absent, though it should be remarked that the presence or absence of these minute teeth is not of any systematic importance.

of the palatine foramina to the latter bones, and by the shape of its upper pm.%, shows a certain tendency towards the kangaroos (Macropodidz), the family to which the Phalangistidw are un-

doubtedly most nearly allied.

The true phalangers, or opossums as they are called by the Aus- tralian colonists, consist of four or five hardly separable species, of which the best known is the Vulpine Phalanger (Ph. vulpecula), so common in zoological gardens, where, however, it is seldom seen, owing to its nocturnal habits. It is of about the size and general build of a small fox, whence its name ; its colour is grey, witha yellowish white belly, white ears, and a black tail. It is a native of the greater part of the continent of Australia, but is replaced in Tasmania by the closely allied Brown Phalanger (Ph. fuliginosa). Its habits are very similar to those of the Yellow-bellied Flying- Phalanger (Petaurus australis) described below,—except that, of course, it is unable to take the wonderful flying leaps so character- istic of that animal. Like all the other phalangers, its flesh is freely eaten both by the natives and by the lower class of settlers.

2. Cuscus, Lacép.

Upper incisor row angular in front. Upper i.) considerably longer than the others, round, pointed. Canines close against the last in- cisors, longer than any of the other teeth, placed apparently on the suture. Pm.’ well developed ; pm.? minute or absent ; pm.? large, rounded, its axis slightly oblique. Molars and all the lower teeth much as in Phalangista, but rather larger in proportion.

tae 4 123. Leese

Dental formula.—i. 75 ¢. 7 PM. Frgr3 M. Fogg X 2=84 to 40.

Frontal region of skull in adult animals markedly convex, owing to the presence of large frontal sinuses ; bulle not inflated ; pre- maxillary bones very short ; palatine foramen entering the maxilla; no external opening into the inferior dental canal.

Feet normal; tail long, naked and scaly for its terminal two- thirds, prehensile.

Range.—From Celebes to the Solomon Islands, and southwards through New Guinea to North Queensland.

The cuscuses are curious sleepy-looking animals, which inhabit the various islands of the East Indian archipelago as far west as Celebes, being the only marsupials found west of New Guinea. As already noted, it was a member of this genus, the Grey Cuscus (C. orientalis), a native of Amboyna, Timor, and the neighbouring islands, which was the first Australian marsupial known to European naturalists. There are altogether about eight species known, all of about the size of a large cat; their habits resemble those of other phalangers, except that they are said to be somewhat more carnivorous.

3. Pseudochirus, Ogilb.

Upper incisor row angular. First upper incisor but little longer than the others, but nevertheless the longest tooth in the jaw. Canine small, behind suture. Pm.! rather small; pm.? and pm? larger, each with two roots, neither placed at all obliquely. Molars quadrangular, with very distinct crescentic

ridges; all the teeth from the incisors backwards forming a nearly continuous series. Lower pm.* only forming part of the molar series.

vi28 3 1.2.8. 1.23.4 Dental formula.—i. =F C7 PW. 53M Fogg

x 2=86 to 40.

Skull without frontal sinuses; palatine foramina entering —

maxille, as in all the following genera except Dactylopsila ; bulla inflated ; palate generally complete; a minute external opening into the inferjor dental canal generally present in the position of the large vacuity characteristic of the Macropodida.

Ears large ; fore-feet with the first two toes together opposable to the remaining three ; tail thinly-haired, prehensile.

Range.—Tasmania, Australia, and New Guinea.

There are about four species of this genus known, of which the commonest is Cook’s Ring-tailed Phalanger (Pseudochirus caudt- volvulus), an animal discovered by Captain Cook during his first voyage, at Endeavour river, North Queensland.

4, Petaurista, Desm.

Teeth almost exactly as in Pscudochirus, except that the lower canine is generally absent, as well as the minute first and second premolars.

Dental formula.—i. 5 cg Pm. Fears m. ESE x 2=34 to 40.

Bulle inflated, but small; palate generally incomplete from the level of the second molar; a distinct external opening into the inferior dental canal.

Sides of the body with a broad flying membrane stretching from the elbow to just below the knee; ears large and hairy; claws long and sharp; tail bushy, round, and non-prehensile.

Habitat.—New South Wales.

The only species belonging to this genus is the large black Taguan Flying Phalanger (P. volans), an animal very similar to certain of the large Indian flying squirrels, and which fully agrees in its habits with the Yellow-bellied Flying-Phalanger described below. In its affinities it seems to be, so to speak, a highly- specialized

Pseudochirus, in which the teeth have become somewhat further diminished and the flying membrane has been developed. 5. Dactylopsila, Gray.

Upper i.1 very long, directed forwards. Canine shorter than i3, close to it. Pm.* minute or absent ; pm.® oval, in line with molars. Molars square-sided, forming a straight line, the third as

long as the second. All lower premolars small and deciduous.

Dental formula.—i. 3s cpm. teat m. oS x 2=32 to 40.

Palatal foramen in premaxilla; palate complete; bulle small ; no external opening into inferior dental canal.

Form normal ; fourth forc-toe very much longer than the others ; tail bushy, rounded.

Range.—From the Aru Islands through New Guinea to North Queensland.

Of this genus two closely-allied species are described. They are beautifully striped down the back with white and grey, and are said to be insectivorous in their habits.

6. Petaurus, Shaw.

Upper i} very long, directed downwards. Canine intermediate in length betweeni.tandi.2 Pm.? the smallest, but yet functional. Molars much rounded, as are those of all the succeeding genera ; m.? much smaller than m.? Lower premolars, though small, yet

permanent and forming an uninterrupted serics. 12.8 7 4 V2.8 ane. gt

Dental formula.—i. FFy CT PM. Fy M. Foz Xx 2= 40.

Palatal foramen entering maxilla; bulle inflated ; a small ex- ternal opening into the inferior dental canal.

Sides of body with a flying membrane stretching from the outside of the tip of the anterior fifth toc to the ankle; tail bushy ; ears large and nearly naked. ;

fange.—From New Ireland to South Australia, but not Tasmania.

This genus contains about five species, the largest of which is the Yellow-bellied Flying-Phalanger (P. australis), whose habits are recorded by Mr Gould as follows. “This animal is common in all the brushes of New South Wales, particularly those which stretch along the coast from Port Philip to Moreton Bay. In these vast forests trees of one kind or another are perpetually flowering, and thus offer a never-failing supply of the blossoms upon which it feeds; the flowers of the various kinds of gums, some of which are of great magnitude, are the principal favourites. Like the rest of the genus, it is nocturnal in its habits, dwelling in holes and in the spouts of the larger branches during the day, and displaying the greatest activity at night while running over the small leafy branches, frequently even to their very extremities, in search of insects and the honey of the newly-opened blossoms. Its structure being ill adapted for terrestrial habits, it seldom descends to the ground except for the purpose of passing to a ttee too distant to be

<= <=

Fi¢. 2.—Squirrel Flying-Phalanger (Petaurus seiureus)

attained by springing from the one it wishes to leave. The tops of the trees are traversed by this animal with as much ease as the most level ground is by such as are destined for terra firma. If

chased or forced to flight it ascends to the highest branch and performs the most enormous leaps, sweeping from tree to tree with wonderful address ; a slight elevation gives its body an impetus which with the expansion of its membrane enables it to pass to a considerable distance, always ascending a little at the extremity of the leap ; by this ascent the animal is prevented from receiving the shock which it would otherwise sustain.”

A second species, P. setureus, in some ways one of the most beautiful of all mammals, has been chosen for the accompanying cut (see fig. 2).

7. Gymnobelideus, M‘Coy.

Like Petaurus in every respect, but without any trace of a flying membrane.

Habitat.—Victoria.

8. Dromieia, Gray.

First upper incisor and canine very long. Pm.! and pm.? very minute ; pm.* large. Molars rounded; their series bowed inwards. Lower canine and first two premolars very small but persistent ;

pm.° either large and functional or minute. 2 oee 3 1*,2*.3 ss

Dental formula. —i. 1.00% 7 P™. 733 ors) ™- = x 2=82 to 36.

Palate incomplete ; bulle very large and inflated.

No flying membrane ; claws short, exceeded in length by the pads under them ; toes subequal ; tail thinly haired, prehensile.

Five species of Dormouse Phalangers are recorded, ranging from New Guinea to Tasmania. 9. Distoechurus, Peters.

Upper teeth much as in Aerobaia, but pm.* reduced, shorter than molars, and crowded obliquely out of the molar series. Lower teeth also as in Acrobata, but pm.* is entirely suppressed.

es a oh Dental formula.—i. re ey

[0,0 Cc. 7 pm. 1.5.0 m. 1.2.3 × 234.

Skull as in Acrobata.

No flying membrane ; tail distichous ; ears very short; claws well developed.

Habitat.—New Guinea only, whence a single species is known. 10. Aerobata, Desm. ‘ Upper it long. Canine proportionally more developed than in any other phalanger, pressed close against last incisor. Premolars all long, narrow, sharply pointed, and two-rooted. Lower pm.! minute, but always present; pm.? and pm. functional, shaped like the upper ones.

1.2.3 1.2.8

pm. 1.2.3 m. 23 × 2=36,

Palate incomplete ; bulle low and small ; palatal foramen nearly all in the maxillary ; a well-marked external opening into the in- ferior dental canal ; squamosals but little swollen by air-cells.

A flying membrane present, stretching from the elbow to the knee, but very narrow in its centre; tail distichous, probably slightly prehensile ; toes subequal; claws small and far surpassed by the very remarkable toe-pads, which are broad and ribbed, re- sembling those of a gecko, and evidently have a very definite adhesive power.

Range.—South and eastern Australia. ; ; ;

There is only one species in this genus, the beautiful little Pigmy Flying-Phalanger, not so big as a mouse, which feeds on the honey it can abstract from flowers, and on insects. Its agility and powers of leaping are exceedingly great, and itissaid by Mr Gould to make a most charming little pet. (0. T.)

PHALARIS, a Greek tyrant, who ruled Agrigentum (Acragas) in Sicily for sixteen years (probably between c. 571 and 549 B.c.). He was the son of Laodamas, and his family belonged to the Dorian island of Astypalea, near

Cnidus. Asa leading man in the new city (for Agrigentum had been founded by the neighbouring city of Gela only a few years before, 582 B.c.) Phalaris was entrusted with the building of the temple of Zeus Atabyrius on the citadel, and he took advantage of his position to make himself master of the city. Under his rule Agrigentum seems to have attained a considerable pitch of external prosperity. He supplied the city with water, adorned it with fine build- ings, and strengthened it with walls. His influence reached to the northern coast of the island, where the people of Himera elected him general, with absolute power, in spite of the warnings of the poet Stesichorus. Eastward on the coast he had fortified posts at Ecnomus and Phalarium, and he is said to have conquered Leontini; but that he ruled the whole of Sicily, as Suidas asserts, is unlikely. He was at last overthrown, apparently by a combination of the noble families, headed by the rich and distinguished Telemachus, and he was burned, along with his mother

XVIII. — 92

1.2.3 1

Dental formula.—i. [00 & 7

730

and friends, in the brazen bull. A decree was carried that

no one should thereafter wear a blue dress, as blue had been the tyrant’s livery.

After ages have held up Phalaris to infamy for his excessive cruelty. In his brazen bull, invented, it is said, by Perilaus of Athens, and presented by him to Phalaris, the tyrant’s victims were shut up and, a fire being kindled beneath, were roasted alive, while their shrieks, conveyed through pipes in the beast’s nostrils, represented the bellowing of the bull. Perilaus himself is said to have been the first victim. There is hardly room to doubt that we have here a tradition of human sacrifice in connexion with the worship of the Pheenician Baal, such as prevailed at Rhodes, where Zeus Atabyrius was no other than Baal; when misfortune threatened Rhodes the brazen bulls in his temple bellowed. The Rhodians brought this worship to Gela,

which they founded conjointly with the Cretans, and from Gela it passed to Agrigentum. Human sacrifices to Baal were common, and, though in Pheenicia proper there is no proof that the victims were burned alive (see MoLocu), the Carthaginians had a brazen image of Baal, from whose down-turned hands the children slid into a pit of fire; and the story that Minos had a brazen man who pressed people to his glowing breast points to similar rites in Crete, where the child-devouring Minotaur must certainly be connected with Baal and the favourite sacrifice to him of children. So, too, we have the fire-spitting bull of Marathon which burned Androgeus. The stories that Phalaris threw men into boiling cauldrons and vessels filled with fire, and that he devoured sucklings, all tell the same tale. From this point of view we may perhaps reconcile with history the apparently con- tradictory tradition which seems to have prevailed in later times, that Phalaris was a naturally humane man and a patron of philo- sophy and literature. This is the view of his character which we find in the declamations ascribed to Lucian, and in the Ictters which bear Phalaris's own name. Plutarch, too, though he takes the unfavourable view, mentions that the Sicilians gave to the severity of Phalaris the name of justice and a hatred of crime. It is recorded that he once pardoned two men who had conspired against him. Phalaris may thus have been one of those men, not unknown in history, who combine justice and even humanity with a religious fanaticism which shrinks from no horrors believed to be demanded by the cause of God.

The letters bearing the name of Phalaris (148 in number) are now chiefly remembered for the crushing exposure they received at the hands of Bentley in his controversy with the Hon. Charles Boyle, who had published an edition of them in 1695. The first edition of Bentley's Dissertation on Phalaris appeared in 1697, and the second edition, replying to the answer which Boyle published in 1698, came out in 1699, From the mention in the letters of towns (Phintia, Alesa, and Tauromenium) which did not exist in the time of Phalaris, from the imitations of authors (Herodotus, Democritus, Euripides, Callimachus) who wrote long after he was dead, from the reference to tragedies, though tragedy was not yet invented in the lifetime of Phalaris, from the dialect, which is not Dorian but Attic, nay, New or Late Attic, as well as from absurdities in the matter, and the entire absence of any reference to them by any writer before Stobzus (who lived apparently about 500 a.p.), Bentley sufficiently proved that the letters were

written by a sophist or rhetorician hundreds of years after the death of Phalaris. Suidas admired the letters, which he thought genuine, and in modern times, before their exposure by Bentley, they were admired by some, e.g., by Sir William Temple, though others, as Politian and Erasmus, perceived that they were not by Phalaris.

There are editions of the epistles of Phalaris by Lennep and Valckenaer, Groningen, 1777 (re-edited, with corrections and additions, by Schaefer, Leipsic, 1823), and by R. Hercher, in Epistolographi Greci, Paris, 1873. The latest

edition of Bentley's Dissertation is that with introduction and notes by W. Wagner, London, 1883.

PHARAOH (nynp; @apad), which the Old Testament

oftea uses as if it were a proper name, applicable to any king of Egypt, though sometimes such a distinguishing name as Hophra (Apries; Jer. xliv. 30) or Nechoh (Nekos) (2 Kings xxiii. 29) is added, is really an Egyptian title of the monarch (Peraa or Phuro), often found on the monu- ments. Apart from Hophra and Necho the Biblical Pharaohs cannot, in the present state of Hebrew and Egyptian chronology, be identified with any certainty.

PHARISEES (a'v98, Papirator), the Jewish party of the scribes, the opponents of the Sadducees. See ISRAEL, vol. xiii. p. 423 sg., and MrssrauH.

PHARMACOPCIA (lit. the art of the dappaxorosds, or drug-compounder) in its modern technical sense denotes a book containing directions for the identification of simples and the preparation of compound medicines, and

published by the authority of a Government or of a medical or pharmaceutical society. The name has also been applied to similar compendiums issued by private individuals. The first work of the kind published under Government authority appears to have been that of Nuremberg in 1542; a passing student named Valerius Cordus showed a collection of medical receipts, which he had selected from the writings of the most eminent medical authorities, to the physicians of the town, who urged him to print it for the benefit of the apothecaries, and obtained for his work the sanction of the senatus. An earlier work, known as the Antidotarium Florentinum, had been pub- lished, but only under the authority of the college of medicine of Florence. The term “pharmacopeia”’ first appears as a distinct title in a work published at Basel in 1561 by Dr A. Foes, but does not appear to have come into general use until the beginning of the 16th century. Before 1542 the works principally used by apothecaries were the treatises on simples by Avicenna and Serapion ; the De Synonyms and Quid pro Quo of Simon Januensis ; the Liber Servitorts of Bulchasim Ben Aberazerim, which described the preparations made from plants, animals, and minerals, and was the type of the chemical portion of modern pharmacopeeias ; and the Antidotarium of Nicolaus de Salerno, containing Galenical compounds arranged al- phabetically. Of this last work there were two editions in use,—Nicolaus magnus and Nicolaus parvus; in the latter, several of the compounds described in the larger edition were omitted and the formule given on a smaller scale.

Until 1617 such drugs and medicines as were in common use were sold in England by the apothecaries and grocers. In that year the apothecaries obtained a separate charter, and it was enacted at the same time that no grocer should keep an apothecary’s shop. The preparation of physicians’ prescriptions was thus confined to the apothecaries, upon whom pressure was brought to bear, in order to make them dispense accurately, by the issue of a pharmacopeia in May 1618 by the College of Physicians, and by the

power which the wardens of the apothecaries received in common with the censors of the College of Physicians of examining the shops of apothecaries within 7 miles of London and destroying all the compounds which they found unfaith- fully prepared. This, which was the first authorized London Pharmacopoeia, was selected chiefly from the works of Mezue and Nicolaus de Salerno, with a few additions from those of other authors then in repute, but it was found to be so full of errors that the whole edition was cancelled, and a fresh one was published in the follow- ing December. At this period the compounds employed in medicine were often heterogeneous mixtures, some of which contained from 20 to 70, or more ingredients, while a large number of simples were used in consequence of the same substance being supposed to possess different qualities according to the source from which it was derived. Thus crabs' eyes, pearls, oyster-shells, and coral were supposed to have different properties. Among other disgusting ingredients entering into some of these formule were the excrements of human beings, dogs, mice, geese, and other animals, calculi, human skull and moss growing on it, blind puppies, earthworms, &c. Although other editions of the London Pharmacopeva were issued in 1621, 1632, 1639, and 1677, it was not until the edition of 1721, published under the auspices of Sir Hans Sloane, that any important altera- tions were made. In this issue many of the ridiculous remedies previously in use were omitted, although a good number were still retained, such as dog's excrement, earth- worms, and moss from the human skull; the botanical names of herbal remedies were for the first time added to the official ones ; the simple distilled waters were ordered

of a uniform strength; sweetened spirits, cordials, and ratifias were omitted as well as several compounds no longer used in London, although still in vogue elsewhere. A great improvement was effected in the edition published in 1746, in which only those preparations were retained which had received the approval of the majority of the pharmacopceia committee ; to these was added a list of those drugs only which were supposed to be the most efficacious. An attempt was made to simplify further the older formule

by the rejection of the superfluous ingre- dients which had been introduced during a succession of ages, and by retention of the known active ingredients. In the edition published in 1788 the tendency to sim- plify was carried out to a much greater extent, and the extremely compound medicines which had formed the principal remedies of physicians for 2000 years were dis- carded, while a few powerful drugs which had been con- sidered too dangerous to be included in the Pharmacopoia of 1765 were restored to théir previous position. In 1809 the French chemical nomenclature was adopted, and in 1815 a corrected impression of the same was issued. Sub- sequent editions were published in 1824, 1836, and 1851.

The first Edinburgh Pharmacopeia was published in 1699 and the last in 1841; the first Dublin Pharmacopeia in 1807 and the last in 1850.

The preparations contained in these three pharmacopceias were not all uniform in strength, a source of much incon- venience and danger to the public, when powerful pre- parations such as dilute hydrocyanic acid were ordered in the one country and dispensed according to the national pharmacopeeia in another. This inconvenience led to the insertion of a provision in the Medical Act of 1858, by which it was ordained that the General Medical Council should cause to be published under their direction a book containing a list of medicines and compounds, and such other matters and things relating thereto, as the General Council should think fit, to be called the British Pharmacopeia, which should for all purposes be deemed to be a substitute throughout Great Britain and Ireland for the several above-mentioned pharmacopeeias. Hitherto these had been published in Latin. The first British Pharmacopeia was published in the English language in 1864, but gave such general dissatisfaction both to the medical profession and to chemists and druggists that the General Medical Council brought out a new and amended edition in 1867. This dissatisfaction was probably owing partly to the difficulty met with in selecting a due propor- tion of formule from each pharmacopceia so as to avoid giving offence to national susceptibilities, and partly to the fact that the majority of the compilers of the work were men not engaged in the actual practice of pharmacy, and therefore competent rather to decide upon the kind of preparations required than upon the method of their manu- facture. The necessity for this element in the construc- tion of a

pharmacopceia is now fully recognized in other countries, in most of which pharmaceutical chemists are duly represented on the committee for the preparation of the legally recognized manuals.

National pharmacopeias now exist in the following countries : —

example, has a pharmacopeia dating from 1853; Modena, Parma, and Piacenza have one in common, published in 1839 ; in the States

Jol

of the Church as well as in Tuscany and Lucca an unofficial com- pilation is in use entitled Orosi Farmacologia technica practica ovvero Farmacologia Italiana ; Naples has its Ricettario Farmaceutico Napolitano (1859); and Lombardy and Venice use the Austrian pharmacopeia. Although Switzerland has anational pharmacopeia, this does not possess Government authority, the French Codex being recognized in Geneva, and the canton of Ticino having a pharma- copeeia of its own. ;

The French Codex has probably a more extended use than any other pharmacopeeia outside the limits of its own country, being, in connexion with Dorvault's L' Officine, the standard for. druggists in a large portion of Central and South America ; it is also official in Turkey. The sum-total of the drugs and preparations it con- tains is about 2000, or more than double the average of other modern pharmacopeias. The progress of medical knowledge during the last two hundred years has led to a gradual but very perceptible alteration in the contents of the various pharmacopeias. The original very complex formule have been gradually simplified until only the most active ingredients have been retained, and in many cases the active principles have to a large extent replaced the crude drugs from which they were derived. From time to time such secret remedies of druggists or physicians es have met with popular or professional approval have been re 'esented by simpler official preparations.

International Pharmacopeia.—The increased facilities for travel during the last fifty years have brought into greater prominence the importance of an approach to uniformity in the formule of the more powerful remedies, such as the tinctures of aconite, opium, and nux vomica, in order to avoid danger

to patients when a prescrip- tion is dispensed in a different country from that in which it was written. Attempts have been made during the last few years by international pharmaceutical and medical conferences to settle a basis on which an international pharmacopeeia could be prepared, but, owing to national jealousies and the attempt to include too many preparations in such a work, it has not as yet been produced. At the fifth International Pharmaceutical Congress held in London in 1881, however, a resolution was passed to the effect that it was necessary that such a pharmacopeia should be prepared, and a commission consisting of two delegates from each of the countries represented was recommended to be appointed in order to pre- pare within the shortest possible time a compilation in which the strength of all potent drugs and their preparations should be equalized,—the work, when complete, to be handed over to their respective Governments or to their pharmacopceia committees. It appears probable that such a work will be presented for considera- tion by the commission at the forthcoming meeting of the con- gress at Brussels in 1885.

Several unofficial universal pharmacopeias have been published from time to time in England and in France, which serve to show the comparative strength of parallel preparations in different countries ; but the results of discussions which have taken place at the international conferences above alluded to indicate that the production and acceptance of an international pharmacopeia will be a work of time, and that in such a work the numerous drugs and preparations intended to meet an unprofessional demand rather than the wants of physicians will have to be omitted. The advances that have been made in this direction are as follows. The metric or decimal mode of calculation and the centigrade scale of temperature are adopted in all pharmacopceias except those of Great Britain, of India, and in some instances of Greece. The majority omit chemical formule. An alphabetical arrangement is followed in all except the French, Spanish, and Greek. The great increase of medical literature and international exchange of medical journals has led to the adoption in almost every country of all the really valuable remedial agents, and the more extended use of active principles has given rise to an approximation in strength of their solutions. The difficulty of nomenclature could probably be overcome by a list of synonyms being given with each article, and that of language by the use of

Latin. The greatest stumbling- blocks in the way of uniformity are the tinctures and extracts,—a class of preparations containing many very powerful drugs, but in which the same name does not always indicate the same thing ; thus, extract of aconite signifies an extract of the root in the pharmacopeeias of the United States, Austria, Hungary, and Russia, extract of the leaves in the Danish and Portuguese, inspissated Juice of the fresh leaves in the British, Indian, Spanish, and Greek, and dry extract of the leaves with sugar of milk in the Norwegian phar- macopeias. Itappears probable, however, that the growth of phar- maceutical chemistry will indicate clearly, in course of time, which of those in use form the most active and reliable preparations, while the general adoption of the metric system will lead to clearcr approxi- mation of strength than hitherto. The method adopted by the Portuguese pharmacopeeia comes nearest to that uniformity which is so desirable in such preparations, as the tinctures of the fresh plants are all prepared with equal parts of the drug and alcoholic inenstruum ; siniple tinctures in general, with unfortunately a few exceptions, with one part of the drug in five parts of alcohol of given

strength ; ethereal tinctures arc in the proportion of one part in

ten ; and the tinctures of the alkaloids and their salts contain one

part of the alkaloid in ninety-nine of menstruum. ; Homeopathic and eclectic practitioners as well as dentists have

also their special pharmacopeeias.

See Bell and Redwood, Progress of Pharmacy (London, 1880); Scherer, Literatura Pharmacopearum (Leipsic and Sorau, 1822); Flint, Report on the Pharmacopeias of all Nations (Washington, 1883); Report of the Proceedings of the Fifth International Pharmaceutical Congress (1881). (E. M. H.)

PHEASANT, Middle-English Fesaunt and Fesaun, German Fasan and anciently Fasant, French Faisan—all from the Latin Phasianus or Phasiana (sc. avis), the Bird brought from the banks of the river Phasis, now the

Rioni, in Colchis, where it is still abundant, and introduced by the Argonauts, it is said, in what passes for history, into Europe. Asa matter of fact nothing is known on this point ; and, judging from the recognition of the remains of several species referred to the genus Phasianus both in Greece and in France, it seems not impossible that the ordinary Pheasant, the P. colchicus of ornithologists, may have been indigenous to this quarter of the globe. If it was introduced into England, it must almost certainly have been brought hither by the Romans; for, setting aside several earlier records of doubtful authority,? Bishop Stubbs has shewn that by the regulations of King Harold in 1059 “unus phasianus” is prescribed as the alternative of two Partridges or other birds among the “ pitantiz” (rations or commons, as we might now say) of the canons of Waltham Abbey, and, as Prof. Dawkins has remarked (Ibis, 1869, p. 358), neither Anglo-Saxons nor Danes were likely to have introduced it into England. It seems to have been early under legal protection, for, according to Dugdale, a licence was granted in the reign of Henry I. to the abbot of Amesbury to kill hares and pheasants, and from the price at which the latter are reckoned, in various documents that have come down to us, we may conclude that they were not very abundant for some centuries, and also that they were occasionally artificially reared and fattened, as appears from Upton,? who wrote about the middle of the 15th century, while Henry VIII. seems from his privy purse expenses to have had in his household in 1532 a French priest as a regular “ fesaunt breder,” and in the accounts of the Kytsons of Hengrave in Suffolk for 1607 mention is made of wheat to feed Pheasants, Partridges, and Quails.

Within recent years the practice of bringing up Pheasants by hand has been extensively followed, and the numbers so reared vastly exceed those that are bred at large. The eggs are collected from birds that are either running wild or kept in a mew,‘ and are placed under domestic Hens; but, though these prove most attentive foster-mothers, much additional care on the part of their keepers is needed

1 These are P. archiaci from Pikermi, P. altus and P. medius from the lacustrine beds of Sansan, and P. desnoyersit from Touraine, see A. Milne-Edwards, Ois. foss. de la France (ii. pp. 229, 239-243),

? Among these perhaps that worthy of most attention is in Probert's translation of The Ancient Laws of Cambria (ed. 1823, pp. 367, 368), where?) extracts are given from Welsh triads, presumably of the age of Howel the Good, who died in 948. One of them is "There are three barking hunts: a bear, a squirrel, and a pheasant." 'The ex- planation is 'A pheasant is called a barking hunt, because when the pointers come upon it, and chase it, it takes toa tree, where it is hunted by baiting." The present writer has not been able to trace the manu- script containing these remarkable statements so as to find out what is the original word rendered " Pheasant" by the translator; but a reference to what is probably the same passage with the same mean- Ing is given by Ray (Synops. Meth. Animalium, pp. 213, 214) on the authority of Liwyd or Lloyd, though there is no mention of it in Wotton and Clarke's Leges Wallice (1730). A charter (Kemble, Cod. Dipiom., iv. p. 236), professedly of Edward the Confessor, granting the wardenship of certain forests in Essex to Ralph Peperking, speaks of 'fesant hen" and "fesant cocke," but is now known to be spurious.

3 In his De studio militari (not printed till 1654) he states (p. 195) that the Pheasant was brought from the East by "Palladius ancorista."'

- The writer is informed that, in 1883, 134,000 Pheasants' eggs were sold from one estate in Suffolk.

PH E—

DP to ensure the arrival at maturity of the poults ; for, being necessarily crowded in a comparatively small space, they are subject to several diseases which often carry off a large proportion, to say nothing of the risk they run by not being provided with proper food, or by meeting an early death from various predatory animals attracted by the assemblage of so many helpless victims. As they advance in age the young Pheasants readily take to a wild life, and indeed can only be kept from wandering in every direction by being plentifully supplied with food, which has to be scattered for them in the coverts in which it is desired that they should stay. Of the proportion of Pheasants artificially bred that "'come to the gun" when the shooting season arrives it is impossible to form any estimate, for it would seem to vary enormously, not only irregularly according to the weather, but regularly accord- ing to the district. In the eastern counties of England, and some

other favourable localities, perhaps three-fourths of those that are hatched may be satisfactorily accounted for ; but in many of the western counties, though they are the objects of equally unremitting or even greater care, it would seem that more than half of the number that live to grow their feathers disappear inexplicably before the coverts are beaten. The various effects of the modern system of Pheasant-breeding and Pheasant-shooting need here be treated but briefly. It is commonly condenined as giving encouragement to poaching, and, especially under ignorant management, as substituting slaughter for sport. Un- doubtedly there is much to be said on this score; but in reply to the first objection it has been urged that as a rule the poacher does not like visiting coverts that he knows to be effectively preserved, and that coverts con- taining a great stock of Pheasants, whose rearing has cost a considerable sum of money, are probably the most effectively preserved. As to the second objection it is to be observed that what constitutes sport is in great measure a matter of individual taste, and that the reasonable limit of a sportsman's "bag" is practically an unknown quantity. One man likes shooting a Pheasant rising at his feet or sprung by his spaniels, as it flies away from him through the trees and is still labouring to attain its full speed; another prefers shooting one that has mounted to its greatest height, and, assisted perhaps by the wind, is traversing the sky at a pace that almost passes calculation. If skill has to be considered in the definition of sport there can be no doubt as to which of these cases most requires it. In regard to cruelty—that is, the proportion of birds wounded to those killed—there seems to be little difference, for the temptation to take "long shots" is about equal in either case. The Pheasant whose wing is broken by the charge, if at a great height, is often killed outright by the fall, whereas, if nearer the ground, it will often make good its escape by running, possibly to recover, or more possibly to die after lingering in pain for a longer or shorter time. On the other hand, high-flying Pheasants, having their vital parts more exposed, are often hit in the body, but not hard enough to bring them down, though the wound they have received proves mortal, and the velocity at which they are travelling takes them beyond reach of retrieval. Formerly Pheasants were taken in snares or nets, and by hawking ; but the crossbow was also used, and the better to obtain a "'sitting shot," for with that weapon men had not learnt to "shoot flying"; dogs appear to have been employed in the way indicated by the lines under an engraving by Hollar, who died in 1677 :-—

“* The Feasant Cocke the woods doth most frequent, Where Spaniells spring and pearche him by the sent.” 5

> Quoted by the writer (Broderip ?) of the article “Spauiel ” in the Penny Cyclopedia. The lines throw light on the asserted Welsh prac- tice mentioned in a former note.

The use of firearms has put an end to the older practices, and the gun is now the only mode of taking Pheasants recognized as legitimate.

Of the many other species of the genus Phasianus, two only can be dwelt upon here. These are the Ring-necked Pheasant of China, P. torquatus, easily known by the broad white collar, whence it has its name, as well as by the pale greyish-blue of its upper wing-coverts and the light buff of its flanks, and the P. versicolor of Japan, often called the Green Pheasant from the beautiful tinge of that colour that in certain lights pervades almost the whole of its plumage, and, deepening into dark emerald, occupies all the breast and lower surface that in the confmon and Chinese birds is bay barred with glossy black scallops. Both of these species have been to a considerable extent introduced into England, and cross freely with P. colchicus, while the hybrids of each with the older inhabitants of the woods are not only perfectly fertile inter se, but cross as freely with the other hybrids, so that birds are frequently found in which the blood of the three species is mingled. The hybrids of the first cross are generally larger than either of their parents, but the superiority of size doe: not seem to be maintained by their descendants. White and pied varieties of the common Pheasant, as of most birds, often occur, and with a little care a race or breed of each can be perpetuated. A much rarer variety is some- times seen ; this is known as the Bohemian Pheasant, not that there is the least reason to suppose it has any right to such an epithet, for it appears, as it were, accidentally among a stock of the pure P. colchicus, and offers an ex- ample analogous to that of the japanned Peafowl already noticed (PEACOCK, supra, p. 443), being, like that breed, capable of perpetuation by selection. Toa small extent two other species of Pheasant have been introduced to the coverts of England—P. reevese from China, remarkable for its very long tail, white with black bars,! and the Copper Pheasant, P. semmerringi, from

Japan. The well- known Gold and Silver Pheasants, P. pictus and P. nycthemerus, each the type of a distinct section or sub- genus, are both from China and have long been introduced into Europe, but are only fitted for the aviary. To the former. is allied the still more beautiful P. amherstiz and to the latter about a dozen more species, most of them known to Indian sportsmen by the general name of ““Kaleege.” The comparatively plain Pucras Pheasants, Pucrasia, the magnificent Monauls, Lophophorus, and the fine Snow-Pheasants, Crossoptilum—of each of which genera there are several species—must, for want of space, be only mentioned here. All the species known at the time are beautifully figured from drawings by Mr Wolf in Mr Elliot’s grand Monograph of the Phasianide (2 vols., fol., 1870-72)—-the last term being used in a somewhat general sense. With a more precise scope Mr Tegetmeier’s Pheasants: their Natural History and Practical Manage- ment (4to, ed. 2, 1881) is to be commended as a very useful work. (a. N.)

PHENOL. See Cargoric Act, vol. v. p. 85.

PHERECRATES, one of the chief poets of the Old Attic Comedy, was a contemporary of Cratinus, Crates, and Aristophanes, being older than the last and younger than the two former. At first an actor, he seems to have gained a prize for a play in 438 3.c. The only other ascertained date in his life is 420, when he produced his play The Wild Men. Like Crates, whom he imitated, he abandoned personal satire for more general themes. Still in some.of the fragments of his plays we find him attacking Alcibiades and others. He was especially famed for his inventive imagination, and the elegance and purity

1 The introduction of this species by Lord Tweedmouth near Guisachan in Inverness-shire is said to have been remarkably successful.

of his diction are attested by the epithet drrioéraros (“most Attic”) applied to him by Athenzeus and the sophist Phrynichus. However, Meineke has shown from his remains that his language deviated considerably from the standard observed by the other comic poets of the day. There is genuine feeling in his address to old age (pre- served by Stobzeus, /lor., 116, 12). He

was the inventor of a new metre, which was called, after him, Pherecratean,? and frequently occurs in the choruses of Greek tragedies and in Horace.

Pherecrates is variously stated by ancient authorities to have com- posed eighteen and sixteen plays; Meineke reduces the list of his undoubted plays to thirteen. None of them are extant, but a con- siderable number of fragments have been preserved. These are given in Meineke, Fragmenta Comicorwm Grecorum, vol. ii. (1839), and in Bothe, Frag. Com. Gr. (Paris, 1855).

PHERECYDES oF Syros, one of the earliest Greek philosophers, was the son of Babys and a native of the island of Syros. The dates of his life are variously stated, but there seems to be no doubt that he lived in the 6th century B.C.; amongst his contemporaries were Thales and Anaximander. He was sometimes reckoned one of the Seven Wise Men, and a very uniform tradition repre- sented him as the teacher of Pythagoras. Many wonder- ful tales were told of him, e.g., that from drinking water drawn from a well he was able to predict an earthquake three days before it took place. The accounts of his death are very discrepant, but the commonest was that he died of the morbus pediculosus. But, if the minute description which Hippocrates gives of the death of Pherecydes refers to the philosopher, he would seem to have died of a viru- lent fever, perhaps spotted typhus. He is said to have been the first Greek author who wrote in prose, but per- haps the chronicler Cadmus of Miletus preceded him. The statements of late writers, that he drew his philosophy from secret writings of the Phoenicians, and that he was a disciple of the Egyptians and Chaldzeans, deserve little attention, made as they were at a time when it was the fashion to regard all wisdom as derived from the Kast. He was credited with having originated the doctrine of metempsychosis, while Cicero and Augustine even assert that he was the first to teach the immortality of the soul. Of his astronomical studies he left a proof in the “ helio- tropion,” a cave at Syros which served to determine the annual turning-point of the sun, like the grotto of Posillipo at Naples.

In his book, to which Suidas gives the name of érrduuxos Fro Oeoxpacta 4 Oeoyovla, he enunciated a system in which philosophy and mythology were

blended. In the beginning, according to Pherecydes, were Zeus, Chronos (Time) or Cronus, and Chthon (Earth) ; Chronos begat Fire, Wind, and Water, and these three begat numerous other gods. Siac

Another Puerecypes of Athens, an early Greek historian, was a native of the island of Leros, and lived in the former half of the 5th century Bo. Amongst his contemporaries were Hellanicus and Herodotus. Of his works “On Leros,” “On Iphigenia,” “On the festivals of Dionysus” nothing remains ; but numerous fragments of his great work on mythology, in ten books, have been preserved, and are collected by C. Miiller in his Fr. Hist. Gr., vol. 1.

PHIDIAS (®e.déas), the most famous of Greek sculptors, was born about 500 B.c., and began his artistic career, probably under the guidance of his father, Charmides of Athens, with the study of painting, an art which at that time had attained a singular largeness and dignity of style, while in sculpture these qualities were as yet being sought for with only a somewhat bold and rude result, as may be seen from the remains of it now at Olympia. To do justice to the art of sculpture in this direction there was need of a far greater mastery of tech- nical methods, and we may suppose it to have been with this end in view that Phidias, when he had determined to

2_. _|— Uu|— —, or, as it may be otherwise divided,

—+|—u— 78

devote himself to sculpture, became a pupil of Ageladas of Argos. It is tempting to believe that it was still under the influence of this master that he executed (between 469 and 463) the Athenian monument at Delphi com- memorating the battle of Marathon; for Ageladas had sculptured at Delphi also a monumental group serving a similar purpose. In the group of Phidias was a portrait statue of Miltiades, and from this circumstance it is rightly inferred that the work had been commissioned at the time when Cimon, the son of Miltiades, was at the head of affairs in Athens. It was apparently at this same period that Phidias was employed to execute for the acropolis of Athens a statue of Athena. This statue, known in after times as “‘the Lemnian” and also as “‘the beauty,” seems to have represented the goddess

in the attitude of standing at rest, helmet in hand, as in a terra-cotta statuette from Cyprus in the British Museum.! When Pericles succeeded to the administration of affairs, and it was determined to erect new temples and other public buildings worthy of the new glory which Athens had acquired in the Persian wars, it was to Phidias that the supervision of all these works was entrusted, with an army of artists and skilled workmen under him. By 438 the Parthenon was com- pleted, with its colossal statue of Athena in gold and ivory by Phidias himself, and with its vast extent of sculp- ture in marble, executed at least under his direction and reflecting in most parts his genius.2, Meantime the enor- mous expense of these undertakings had involved Phidias in the public discontent which was growing up round Pericles (Aristoph., Peace, 605). The story related by Plutarch (Pericles, 31) is that Menon, a former assistant of Phidias, had brought a charge against him of having appropriated part of the gold and ivory allowed him for the statue of Athena, and that, being acquitted on this charge, he was next denounced for introducing portraits of himself and of Pericles on the shield of Athena, and in consequence of this charge died in prison, either a natural death or by poison. But these statements cannot be reconciled with the tradition that, after completing his Athena, he was invited to undertake at Olympia what proved to be the grandest work of his life, the colossal gold and ivory statue of Zeus in the newly-erected temple. According to this same tradition he died at Olympia, and it may be inferred that he died much honoured there from the fact that his workshop was preserved in after times as a show-place for visitors, and that his descendants obtained an hereditary right to look after the great statue of Zeus. As a means of reconciling these conflicting statements it has been supposed that the charge of appropriating the gold had been made before he went to Olympia, and the charge of sacrilege when he had returned thence to Athens. Others again prefer to accept the story of Plutarch as it stands, and to assign the stay of Phidias in Olympia to an early period of his life—-previous to 455. As to the charge of theft, it could never have reached a public trial, because every one acquainted with the management of the public treasures knew that the gold of the Athena was so sculptured that it could be removed annually and weighed by the officials of the treasuries. Pericles told the Athe- nians (Thuc., ii. 13) that it could be removed and utilized for the war. ‘The other charge of having placed portraits of himself as a bald-headed old man (438) and of Pericles on the shield of Athena is incredible. Pericles with the

helmet which he always wore was almost an ideal Greek In appearance. Among the Greeks fighting with the a See ; 1 See A. S. Murray, Greek Sculpt., ii. pl. 17 ; compare the Greek Inscription from the base of a statue of Athena in Cyprus, which says that she was made after the Phidian model, and had laid aside her

arms, Hirschfeld, Tituli statuar., No. 178, or C. I. Gr., No. 2073. > See A. S. Murray, op. cit., ii. p. 98 sg.

Amazons on the shield of Athena it was probably easy to find a figure not unlike him. The same may be said of the bald-headed old man who was identified with Phidias. But there is a wide difference between idle gossip and a criniinal charge. It is true that there is in the British Museum a marble fragment of what professes to be a copy of the shield, and on it there are portraits of Phidias and of Pericles; but these portraits answer so minutely to the description of Plutarch that there can hardly be a doubt of their having been produced subsequently to illus- trate some current story on which that description was founded. The workmanship is several centuries later than Phidias, and it would be strange if the portraits for which he had paid with his life had been left for so long a time on the shield, or had even been allowed at any moment to be perpetuated in a copy. In answer to this objection it was fabled that the portraits had been so fixed on the shield that they could not be removed without bringing down the whole work !

To obtain something like a fair judgment of the style of Phidias it is to the sculptures of the Parthenon now in the British Museum that we must turn (see ARCHAOLOGY, vol. ii. p. 356). Though executed in what was to him an inferior material, marble, it yet happened that the elevated position which these sculptures were to occupy on the temple was such as to give scope for the highest powers of composition, and so far they may be regarded as a worthy monument of his genius. Alike in the frieze, the metopes, and the remaining figures of the pediments we have the same perfect rendering of the true effects of light and shade, which above all reveals the artist who can com- pose his figures and his groups so as to make the spectator feel that nature would not have done otherwise had nature been a sculptor. For composition of this kind there was necessary a

most complete knowledge of form in all its details, since no part was so minute as not to affect the aspect of the whole. In this respect Phidias was famed in antiquity, and the Parthenon sculptures justify that fame. He must, however, have found finer opportunities in the colossal statues of gold and ivory, where the greater difficulty of duly distributing light and shade was rewarded with greater splendour of effect. In these statues the nude parts, such as the face, hands, and feet, were of ivory, the drapery of gold ; and in the statue of Zeus at Olympia the gold was enriched with enamelled colours, and the impression of the whole is described by ancient writers with unbounded praise (see vol. ii. p. 355, and A. S. Murray, Gr. Sculpt., ii. p. 123). Of the Athena in the Parthenon there exist two small copies in marble found in Athens, but so rude in execution as to be of no service in conveying a notion of the style of the original. On the acropolis, and not far from the Parthenon, stood a colossal bronze statue of Athena Promachos by Phidias, the attitude- and to some extent the type of which may be gathered from the small bronze found at Athens, and figured in vol. ii. p. 355. In Elis he executed a statue of Aphrodite in gold and ivory, and at Platzea a colossal Athena of wood gilt, with the face, hands, and feet of Pentelic marble. Bright but simple colours had been traditional in art before the time of Phidias. It is not supposed that he had sought to refine upon them as a colorist. What he did was to com- bine with their simplicity and brightness the ideal large- ness and dignity of conception which he shared with the great painters of his day, and the perfection of execution which he shared with the greatest of contemporary sculptors. A. 8. M.)

PHIGALIA (®cyéAea, also called Piadia), a city in the south-west angle of Arcadia, situated on an elevated rocky site, among some of the highest mountains in the Peloponnesus,—the most conspicuous being Mount Coty-

lium and Mount Eleum ; the identification of the latter is uncertain.

In 659 B.c. Phigalia was taken by the Lacedzemonians, but soon after recovered its Independence ; it was on the whole unfortunate during the Peloponnesian War; and, in common with the other cities of Arcadia, it appears from Strabo to have fallen into utter decay under the Roman rule.

The notices of itin Greek history are rare and scanty. Though its existing ruins of city-wall and forts and the

description of Pausanias show it to have been a place of

considerable strength and importance, yet no autonomous coins of Phigalia are known. Nothing now remains above ground of the temples of Artemis or Dionysus and the numerous statues and other works of art which still existed at the time of Pausanias's visit, about 170 a.p. A great part of the city-wall, built in fine Hellenic "isodo- mous" masonry, and a large square central fortress with a circular projecting tower, are the only remains now traceable,—at least without the aid of excavation. The walls, once nearly 2 miles in circuit, are strongly placed on rocks, which slope down to the little river Neda.

One very important monument of the wealth and artistic taste of the Phigalians still exists in a fairly perfect state ; this is a temple dedicated to Apollo Epicurius (the Pre- server), built, not at Phigalia itself, but at the village of Bassze, 5 or 6 miles away, on one of the peaks of Mount Cotylium ; it commemorates the aid rendered by Apollo in stopping the progress of a plague which in the 5th century B.C. was devastating Phigalia. This temple is mentioned by Pausanias (viii. 41) as being (next to that at Tegea) the finest in the Peloponnesus, "from the beauty of its stone and the symmetry of its proportions." It has also a special interest in having been designed by Ictinus, who, with Callicrates, was joint architect of the Parthenon at Athens. Though visited by Chandler, Dodwell, Gell, and other English travellers, the temple was neither explored nor measured till 1811-12, when Chas. Rob. Cockerell and some other archeologists spent several months in making excavations there. After nearly fifty years' delay, Professor Cockerell published the results of these labours, as well as of his previous work at A'gina, in Temples of 4igina and Basse (1860), one of the most careful and beautifully illustrated archzeological works that has ever been produced. The labours of Professor Cockerell and his companions were richly rewarded ; not only were suffi- cient remains of the architectural features discovered to show clearly what the whole design had been, but the internal sculptured frieze of the cella was found almost

perfect. This and other fragments of its sculpture are now in the British Museum.

Fig. 1 shows the plan of the temple, which is of the Doric order, but has an internal arrangement of its cella quite unlike that of any other known temple. It stands on an elevated and partly artificial plateau, which commands a most glorious and extensive view of the oak-clad mountains of Arcadia, reaching away to the blue waters of the Messenian Gulf. Unlike other Doric temples, which usually stand east and west, this is placed north and south ; but it has a side entrance on the east. Itis hexastyle, with fifteen columns on its flanks ; thirty-four out of the thirty-eight columns of the .peristyle arc still standing, with the greater part of their architrave, but the rest of the entablature and both pediments have fallen, together with the greater part of the internal columns of the cella. It will be seen from the plan that these are very strangely placed, apparently without symmetry, as regards the interior, though they are set, for what reason it is hard to say, regularly opposite the voids in the peristyle. :

With the exception of one at the south end, which is Corinthian, the internal columns are of the Ionic order, and are built, not free, but engaged with the cella-wall, forming a series of recesses, which may have been designed to contain statues. Another peculiarity of this interior is that these columns reach to the top of the cella in one order, not in two ranges of columns, one over the other, as was the usual Dorie fashion. These inner columns carried an Ionic entablature, of which the frieze now in the British Museum formed

apart. The pediments and external metopes of the peristyle appear to have contained no sculpture, but the metopes within the peri- style on the exterior of the cella had seulptured subjects ; only a [f few fragments of these were, how- ||: ever, discovered. The position occupied by the great statue of Apollo is a difficult problem. Cockerell, with much probability, places it in the vestibule of the cella, opposite the eastern side door, so that it would be lighted up by the rays of the rising sun. The main entrance is at the northern end through the pronaos, once defended by a door in the end of the cella and a metal screen, of which traces were found on the two columns of the pronaos. There was no door between the posticum | aud the cella. The

general pro- |} portions of the fronts resemble 8 those of the Theseum at Athens, ||; except that the entablature is less massive, the columns thicker, and the diminution less,—all propor- | || tionally speaking. In plan the temple is long in proportion to its width,—measuring, on the top of | |’<10° 4+ the stylobate, 125 feet 7 inches by | 48 feet 2 inches, while the Theseum (built probably halfa century earlier) is about 104 feet 2 inches by 45 feet 2 inches.

The material of which the temple is built is a fine grey limestone (once covered with painted stucco), except the roof-tiles, the capitals of the cella columns, the archi- traves, the lacunaria (ccilings) of the posticum and pronaos, and the sculpture, all of which are of white marble. The roof-tiles, specially noticed by Pausanias, are remarkable for their size, workmanship, and the beauty of the Parian marble of which they are made. They measure 2 feet 1 inch by 3 feet 6 inches, and are fitted together in the most careful and ingenious manner. Unlike

PosTicuM

VESTIBULE

‘2

H ORINTHIAN COLUMN. —~ Yu) “

Nu i _

PERISTYLE PERISTYLE

o

a @

Frc. 1.—Plan of the Temple at Basse.

those of the Parthenon and the temple of Agina, the dpuod or “‘joint-tiles ” are worked out of the same piece of marble as the flat ones, at a great additional cost of labour and material, for the sake of more perfect fitting and greater security against wet.

Traces of painting on various architectural members were found by Professor Cockerell, but they were too much faded for the colours

Fig. 2,—Oune slab of the Basse frieze ; combat of Greeks and Amazons.

to be distinguished. The designs are the usual somewhat stiff and E liciomcar Exonk patterns,—the fret, the honeysuckle, and the egg and dart. ’ : ;

The sculpture is of the greatest interest, as being an important example of the school of Phidias, designed to decorate one of the fincst buildings in the Peloponnesus in the latter half of the 5th century B.c. ; see Phigaleian Marbles, Brit. Mus. Publications.

The frieze, now in the British Museum, is quite complete ; it is nearly 101 feet long by 2 feet high, carved in relief on twenty-three slabs of marble 44 to 5 inches thick (see fig. 2). The subjects are the battle of the Lapithe and the Centaurs, and that between the Amazons and the Greeks, the two favourite subjects in Greek plastic art of the best period. They are designed with wonderful fertility of invention, and life-like realism and spirit ; the composition is arranged so as to forma series of diagonal lines or zigzags /W, thus forming a pleasing contrast to the unbroken horizontal lines

Plate X.

of the cornice and architrave. The various groups are skilfully united together by some dominant line or action, so that the whole subject forms one unbroken composition.

The relief is very high, more than 34 inches in the most salient parts, and the whole treatment is quite opposite to that of the Parthenon frieze, which is a very superior work of art to that at Basse. Many of the limbs are quite detached from the ground ; the drill has been largely used to emphasize certain. shadows, and

‘in many places, for want of due calculation, the sculptor has had

to cut into the flat background behind the figures. From this it would appear that no finished clay-model was prepared, but that the relief was sculptured with only the help ofa drawing. The point of sight, more than 20 feet below the bottom of the frieze, and the direction in which the light fell on it have evidently been carefully considered. Many parts, invisible from below, are left comparatively rough. The workmanship throughout is unequal, and the hands

of several sculptors can be detected. On the whole, it must be ad- |

mitted that the execution is not equal to the beauty of the design, and the whole frieze is somewhat marred by au evident desire to produce the maximum of effect with the least possible amount of

labour,—very different from the almost gem-like finish of the Par- |

thenon frieze. Even the design is inferior to the Athenian one ; most of the figures are ungracefully short in their proportions, and there is a great want of refined beauty in many of the female hands and faces. It is in the fire of its varied action and its subtlety of expression that this sculpture most excels. The noble move- ments of the heroic Greeks form a striking contrast to the feminine

weakness of the wounded Amazons, or the struggles with teeth |

PHI—PHI

substratum of the city is a clay soil mixed with more or less sand and gravel.

The site of the present Philadelphia was originally settled by the Swedes, and so Penn found it when he came to lay

<

and hoofs of the brutish Centaurs ; the group of Apollo and Artemis | R SA
\

in their chariot is full of grace and dignified power. The marble in which this frieze is sculptured is somewhat coarse and crystalline; the slabs appear not to have been built into their place but fixed afterwards, with the aid of two bronze bolts driven through the face of each.

Of the metopes, which were 2 feet 8 inches square, only one exists nearly complete, with eleven fragments ; the one almost per- fect has a relief of a nude warrior, with floating drapery, overcom- ing a long-haired bearded man, who sinks vanquished at his feet. The relief of these is rather less than that of the fricze figures, and the work is nobler in character and supcrior in execution. The other pieces are too fragmentary to show what were their subjects.

No modern Greek village exists now on the site either of Basse or of Phigalia.

In addition to the works mentioned in the text the following may be con- sulted :—Leake, Morea (vol. i. p. 490, and ii. p. 319); Curtius, Peloponnesos (i. 319); Ross, Reisen in Peloponnesos ; Stackelberg, Der Apollo-Tempel zu Basse (1826); Lenormant, Bas-reliefs du Parthenon et de Phigalie (1834); and Frie- derichs, Geschichte der griechischen Plastik (1868). (J. H. M.

PHILADELPHIA, the name of several cities of anti- quity, of which the two most important have been noticed under ALA-SHEHR, vol. i. p. 443, and AMMONITES, vol. i. p. 743.

PHILADELPHIA, the chief city of Pennsylvania, and the second city in the United States of America, is situ-

a

General Plan of Philadelphia.

out the city ; and many of the original patentees for town lots under him were descendants of these first settlers. The original city limits were from east to west 10,922 feet 5

ated (39° 57’ 7-5” N, lat., 75° 9’ 23-4” W. long.) on the | inches, and from north to south 5370 feet 8 inches, or more west bank of the Delaware river, 96 miles from the | than 2 square miles. The boundaries were Vine street on Atlantic and in a direct line 125 miles north-east of | the N., Cedar (now South) street on the S., the Delaware

Washington, D.C., and 85 miles south-west of the city of New York. Its greatest length north-north-east is 22 miles, its breadth from 5 to 10 miles, and its area 82,603 acres, or about 129 square miles (greater than that of any other city in America). The surface of the city between the rivers Delaware and Schuylkill—the latter running parallel with the Delaware and dividing the city about in half,~~east and west—is remarkably level. It varies, how~~ ever, in elevation from 244 feet above the sea to 440 feet, the latter in the northern and suburban sections. The eastern and western sections of the city are connected by eight bridges. The length of river-front on the Delaware is nearly 20 miles, and the length of wharves 5 miles. On both sides of the Schuylkill, to Fairmount dam, the front is 16 miles and the length of wharves 4 miles. The mean low-water mark of the Delaware is 24 feet, and the tide rises 6 feet, while the average depth of water at the city wharves is 50 feet. The wharf-line, which varies from 14 feet to 68 feet, gives extraordinary accommodation for ship- ping. The Delaware is navigable at all seasons of the year for vessels of the heaviest burden, and Philadelphia affords one of the best protected harbours in the country. The

river on the E., and the Schuylkill river on the W. And this was the city of Philadelphia from its foundation until the 2d day of February 1854, when what is known as the Consolidation Act was passed by the legislature of the ~ State, and the old limits of the city proper were extended to take in all the territory embraced within the then county of Philadelphia. This legislation abolished the districts of Southwark, Northern Liberties, Kensington, Spring Garden, Moyamensing, Penn, Richmond, West Philadelphia, and Belmont; the boroughs of Frankford, Germantown, Manayunk, White-Hall, Bridesburg, and Aramingo; and the townships of Passyunk, Blockley, Kingsessing, Roxborough, Germantown, Bristol, Oxford, Lower Dublin, Moreland, Bybery, Delaware, and Penn; and it transferred all their franchises and property to the consolidated city of Phil- adelphia under one municipal government. The present boundaries of the city are: on the E. the

Delaware, on the N.E. Bucks county, on the N.N.W. and W. Montgomery county, and on the W. and S. Delaware county and the Delaware. The greater part is laid out in parallelograms, with streets at right angles to each other. Each main parallelogram contains about 4 acres, or is 400 feet on each

Pat L, 2)

of its sides, divided by one or more small thoroughfares. Upon the city plans there are plotted 191,928 separate town lots. The main streets running north and south are num- bered from First or Front to Sixty-third streets, and those running east and west were formerly named after the trees and shrubs found in the province. Thus, while the principal street in the city is named Market street, other main streets are named Chestnut, Walnut, Spruce, Pine, &c.! The main streets of Philadelphia are 50 feet wide, with some few exceptions: Broad or Fourteenth street is 113 feet wide, and Market street is 100 feet wide. The streets are gener- ally paved with rubble stone, although square or Belgian blocks of granite are being extensively introduced. There are laid down on the city plans upwards of 2000 miles of streets, but at present (1884) only 10604 miles are opened, of which 573°54 miles are paved and 44°28 macadamized. The pavements are chiefly of brick, but some of the more prominent streets have flagstone sidewalks. Market street and Chestnut street, below Eighth street, and Front street are the localities where the main wholesale business of the city is conducted. Most of the retail stores are situated in the upper part of Chestnut street and Eighth street. The principal banking institutions are in Chestnut street, between Second and Fifth streets, and in Third street between Walnut and Chestnut streets. Walnut street in the southern section of the city, and Spring Garden and Broad streets in the northern section of the city, are the chief streets for large and luxurious private residences. There is not a street of any consequence which has not a tramway along it; and the tramway system has done a great deal to increase building, until now Philadelphia is emphatically 'the city of homes." There are upwards of 160,000 dwelling-houses, of which at least 110,000 are owned by the occupants. According to the returns for the census of 1880, there were 146,412 dwelling-houses in the city, which, taking the population as given by that census, 847,170, gave 5°79 persons to each house, while the num- ber of dwellings in New York to

the population gave 16°37 to each house. On the original plan of the city five squares, equidistant, were reserved for public parks. One of these, called Centre square, situated at the intersection of Broad and Market streets, has been taken for the erec- tion of the city-hall, and the remaining four, situated at Sixth and Walnut, Sixth and Race, Eighteenth and Walnut, and Eighteenth and Race, and named respectively Wash- ington, Franklin, Rittenhouse, and Logan, have a com- bined area of 29°06 acres. There are six other public squares in the city, with a total area of 18°90 acres. In addition to these public squares, Fairmount Park, with an area of 2791% acres, including 373 acres of the water-sur- face of the Schuylkill river, is the most extensive public park in the United States. It lies in the north-western section of the city, and the Schuylkill river and Wissa- hickon creek wind through the greater portion of it.2 In the park Horticultural Hall and Memorial Hall remain

1 The geometrical laying out of the city into parallelograms made easy the adoption of the decimal system of numbering for the houses, which is readily understood aud greatly helps strangers and citizens in finding their way about the streets. The houses in streets running east and west are numbered by hundreds, beginning at the Delaware and going west. Thus, from Delaware river to Front street the houses are numbered from 1 to 100; from Front street to Second street from 100 to 200 ; above Second street 200; above Third street 300; and soon. The even numbers are placed on the south side of the street and the odd numbers on the north side of the street. Mar- ket street is taken as a dividing line between north and south, and all the main streets stretching north and south, which lie north of Market street, are in the same way numbered running northerly, and those which lie south of Market street are numbered running southerly. The west side is given the even numbers and the east side the odd numbers.

2 There are 34°27 miles of footwalk, 30°46 miles of carriage-drives, and 7°82 miles of bridle-paths within the boundaries of the park.

as mementoes of the Centennial Exhibition held there in 1876. The garden of the Zoological Society, covering 33 acres, on the outskirts of the park, was opened Ist July 1874, as the pioneer of such enterprises in the United

States. Until within the last score of years the buildings in Philadelphia bore a singular resemblance to each other, especially the dwelling-houses. The predominant material for building was, and is, red brick, the soil affording the finest clay for brick found in the United States. The desire for uniformity in buildings, both in style and material, has happily undergone a change in recent years, although the danger now is of running to the other extreme, and thus giving the streets a decidedly bizarre appearance. There are 238} miles of sewers in Philadelphia, but the drainage of the city is wholly inadequate. The streets are lighted by 12,805 gas-lamps, and Chestnut street by the electric light. There are 748 miles of gas main, and the average daily consumption is 10,624,000 cubic feet.

Bualdings.—The old brick Swedes Church in Swanson street in the extreme south-eastern section, dedicated on the first Sunday after Trinity 1700, is the oldest building of character now standing in the city. When it was completed it was looked upon as a great masterpiece, and nothing was then equal to it in the town. The four other colonial buildings of importance still standing are Christ (Protestant Episcopal) Church, the old State House (Inde- pendence Hall), the Pennsylvania Hospital, and Carpenter's Hall, all of them built of red brick with black glazed headers. Dr. John Kearsley, a physician, was the archi- tect of the first-mentioned, and Andrew Hamilton, a lawyer, the architect of the second. Christ Church stands on the west side of Second street between Market and Arch streets, and its erection was begun in 1727, but it was not finished, as it now appears with tower and spire, until 1754. It was built on the site of a still older Christ Church, which was also of brick, erected in 1695. Queen Anne in 1708 presented a set of communion plate to the church, which is now used on great occasions. During his presidency Washington worshipped at this church, and his pew is still preserved, as is also that of Franklin. In 1882 the interior of the church was restored to its ancient character at an expense of about $10,000. 'The nave is 75 feet long by 61 feet in width and 47 feet high; the chancel is 15 feet by 24; and the spire is 196 feet 9 inches high. The old State House or Independence Hall, on the south side of Chestnut street between Fifth and Sixth streets, was commenced in 1731, and was ready for occupancy by the Assembly towards the close of 1735. It was the scene of almost all the great civil events of the Revolutionary War. It is 100 feet in length on Chestnut street by 44 feet in depth ; and prior to the

centennial celebration its exterior and interior were restored as nearly as possible to their original appearance. The Pennsylvania Hospital occupies the square of ground bounded by Spruce, Pine, Eighth, and Ninth streets, and the corner-stone of the building was laid on 28th May 1755. Carpenter's Hall, where the first Congress met, stands back from Chestnut street, east of Fourth street, and was begun in January 1770. These four buildings are all very simple in their construc- tion, but substantial and imposing, and are interesting specimens of colonial architecture. Among the notably fine buildings in Philadelphia are the old United States bank, now the United States custom-house, the Girard bank, the United States mint, and the Girard College, all of which, with the exception of the last-named, were built more than half a century ago. 'They are all of white marble and of the different orders of Grecian architecture, with porticos and high fluted columns. Other fine build-

3 The collection numbers 673 specimens,—mammals 251, birds 372, reptiles and batrachians 50, valued at $46,726.

ings are the Masonic Temple, the Ridgway branch of the Philadelphia library, the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts, and the Academy of Natural Sciences. There are also very many beautiful churches. 'The two newest build- ings of magnitude are the new United States post-office, at the corner of Ninth and Chestnut streets, which is just completed (1884) at a cost of $8,000,000, and the new municipal buildings for the city of Philadelphia at the intersection of Broad and Market streets, which are in course of construction. The post-office, which is Roman- esque, is of granite, and was more than ten years in building, from October 1873 to March 1884. It has a frontage of 425 feet, a depth of 175 feet, and a height of 164 feet. The carrier delivery of the Philadelphia post- office covers the greatest territory of any city in the world, excepting London; it employs 900 men, of whom 448 are letter-carriers. The annual sales of stamps amount to $1,600,000. About half a million of letters, &c., pass through the post-office each day. The new public build- ings, as they are called, or city-hall, were begun in August 1871, and when completed will be the largest single build-

ing in America. It covers an area, including courtyards, of nearly 44 acres, the dimensions being 470 feet east and west and 486 feet north and south. The building will contain 520 rooms, and the topmost point of the dome, on the tower, will be 537 feet 4 inches above the courtyard, or the highest artificial construction in the world. The ex- terior structure is now roofed in and completed, with the exception of the tower. The total amount expended on this building to 31st December 1883 was $9,731,488-81, and the estimated total cost is $13,000,000. The archi- tecture is rather rococo in character.

Population.—Previous to the census of 1830 Philadel- phia was the most populous American city, but since then New York has taken the first place. In 1683 it was esti- mated that Philadelphia had 80 houses and 500 inhabitants. The next year the population increased 2000, and by the beginning of the last century there were 700 dwelling- houses and 4500 people. In 1800 there were 9868 dwell- ings and 81,009 inhabitants, and in 1820, the last census when Philadelphia stood first, she had a population of 119,325. By the census of 1880 the population of the city is placed at 847,170 (males 405,989, females 441,181), while in 1870 it was 674,022, and in 1860 565,529. About one-third of the population in 1880 were foreign born. In 1883 there were 21,237 births, of which 11,102 were males and 10,135 females. The number of emigrants landed in the year at Philadelphia was 23,473, of whom 13,899 were males and 9574 females,—a decrease of 9778 from 1882. Of these emigrants 7304 were from England, 6023 from Ireland, 5232 from Sweden and Norway, and 2991 from Germany. The mayor of Philadelphia in his annual message to councils in April 1884 places the popu- lation of the city at 1,023,000, while the Board of Health estimate it at 907,041. The death-rate of the city in 1883 was 22°13 per thousand. By the census of 1880 41 per cent. of the population were engaged in gainful occupa- tions, In 1884 there were in Philadelphia 1294 lawyers and 1637 physicians. The city has 622 places of worship, viz., Baptist 83, Hebrew 11, Lutheran 32, Methodist eae Moravian 5, Presbyterian 110, Protestant Episcopal 96, Quaker 15, Reformed Dutch 20, Reformed Episcopal 10, Roman Catholic 47, Swedenborgian 3, Unitarian 3, Uni- versalist 4, and 52 among 23 other different denomina- tions. There are 53 cemeteries and burial-grounds in the city.

Municipal Government.—By Penn's charter of 25th October 1701 Philadelphia was first created a borough city with a government of its own, separate from that of the province and county. Under

this charter, with many modifications, the city was governed until the Act of the legislature of the State incorporating the city was

fe Pat A

passed, 11th March 1789. This is the fundamental law governing the city to-day, but with such changes as have become necessary by the altered condition of affairs and the development of the entire country. The most important change was the Consolidation Act of 2d February 1854, already mentioned, whereby the old county of Philadelphia became the city of Philadelphia, the county of Phila- delphia being at the same time continued as one of the counties of. the State. The city is divided territorially and politically into thirty- one wards, and is governed by a mayor, elected by the people for three years, and by two bodies, called the select and common couneil. The upper branch is composed of one member from each ward elected for three years, who must have attained the age of twenty-five years and have been a citizen and inhabitant of the State for four years next before his election, and the last year thercof an inhabitant of the ward for which he shall be chosen. Each ward has a member of common council, elected for two years, for every 2000 taxable inhabitants ; he must be twenty-one years of age and have the other qualifications required for the upper body. The mayor is the executive chead of the city and the councils are the law-making power. The mayor has the right of veto upon the acts of the councils. Councils in joint meeting appoint all heads of depart- ments not elected, establish the rate at whieh all taxes shall be levied that are authorized by law, and fix the salaries of all muni- cipal officers elected by the people, as well as those they appoint. The city can make no binding contract or incur any debt unless authorized by law or ordinance and an appropriation sufficient to pay the same be previously made by councils. The sanitary care of the city is vested in a board of health composed of nine members appointed by the judges of the Courts of Common Pleas of the county, who have charge of the sanitary condition of the city and citizens. Among the duties of the board is that of keeping an ac- curate record of all

births, marriages, and deaths. The poor of the city are under the charge of a board of twelve guardians elected by councils. These several bodies, councils, board of health, and guardians of the poor all serve without pecuniary compensation. Edward Shippen was named in the charter of 1701 as first mayor of the city. The last mayor under the English crown was Samucl Powel, elected 3d October 1775, and he was also the first mayor under the United States, being re-elected 13th April.1789. During the interim of the Revolutionary War the municipal government was suspended, and the affairs of the city were carried on by the councils of safety and other loeal bodies.

Police, Fire, Water.—The mayor is the nominal head of the police of the city, and all the appointments and removals are in his hands. The force consists of 1415 men, of whoni 1225 are patrolmen. There are four captains and one chief of police; and the fire marshal is attached to the police department. The number of arrests made in 1883 was 45,612, and the number of commitments to the county prison 23,245.

The fire department is governed by a board of fire commissioners elected by councils, and consists of a chief engineer, six assistant engineers, and four hundred men. They are divided into twenty- nine steam-engine companies and five hook and ladder companies, with the addition of hose and hose-carriage to each. In 1883 there were 804 fires.

The largest portion of Philadelphia is supplied with water from the Schuylkill, and it was in great part for the preservation of the purity of this water-supply that Fairmount Park was created. The park has not, however, served its purpose in this respect, and the water supplied to the city is most impure. The supply also is hardly adequate to the demand, and many other sources have been suggested. The capacity of the present waterworks allows a daily aycrage pumpage of 90,000,000 gallons, and the seven reservoirs have a total capacity of 191,224,560 gallons. The total number of gallons of water pumped in 1883 was 25,182,775,641, or a daily average of about 69,000,000. There are 784 miles of pipe under ground to supply at least 170,000 buildings, of which 151,096 are (January 1884) dwelling-houses. The dwellings are charged for water according to the number and character of appliances in use, irrespective of the amount of water used or

the number of the occupants of the house. The streets have a number of fountains, erccted by the Philadelphia Fountain Society, for the use of horses, dogs, and men; and there are also 5752 hydrants for the use of the fire department; but these are wholly insufficient to protect the city.

Finances.—On ist January 1884 the-funded debt of the city of Philadelphia-was $66, 365,591°24, and the floating debt $689, 355° 36 or a total indebtedness of $67,054,946°60. The city assets at the same period were $28,096,394°75, so that the excess over assets was $38,958,551°85. This is a reduction of the city's debt from its highest point, 1st January 1880, when it amounted to $72,264,595°76. The assessed valuation of real estate in the city of Philadelphia, Ist January 1884, was $583,613,683, and the annual tax for the year amounted to $10,383,381°84. In 1883 the receipts from all sources for municipal purposes were $13,632,842°38. The various trust funds of the city are under the control of a board of directors of city trusts, composed of twelve prominent citizens appointed by the judges of the Courts of Common Pleas. The board has charge of the

Pee, Pee Ei Poe fA.

Girard Fund ; the Wills Hospital Fund, for the relief of indigent blind and lame; the Franklin Fund, for aiding young married artificers ; and sundry funds for furnishing the poor with fuel and other purposes,—amounting in the aggregate, on 31st December 1883, to $11,606,320°92.

There are thirty-two national banks in Philadelphia with an ageregate capital of $17,578,000, and for the week ending 30th June 1884 their loans and discounts were $78,525,885, deposits $64,436,411, and circulation $8,416,013. Their surplus on 31st December 1883 was $8,712,303, In addition to the national banks there are six banks chartered by the State with an aggregate capital of $714,600 ; eight trust and safe deposit companies, where deposits are received and a quasi banking business done, with a total capital of $8,625,000, and a surplus on 31st December 1883 of $4,589,732 ; and three saving funds without any capital, but where all the de- positors are interested in the profits, with total deposits on 31st December 1883 of $28,503,200°98. Philadelphia has fourteen joint- stock fire insurance companies, with a capital of $3,950,000; five joint-stock fire and marine companies, with a capital of $4,860,000 ; six mutual fire

insurance companies; and six life insurance com- panies. In addition to these there are a real estate title insurance company and a plate-glass insurance company, their objects being expressed in their titles.

Commerce.—Until within the last sixty years Philadelphia was the commercial emporium of the United States, but since that time her commerce has been gradually declining, until now she ranks fifth in the order of ports, being preeeded by New York, Boston, San Francisco, and New Orleans. At the same time her inanufactures have been steadily increasing, until she has become the great manufacturing centre of the country. On 30th June 1884 there were registered as belonging to the port of Philadelphia 854 vessels, having a tonnage of 197,491 tons, 295 being steamers. For the year ending 31st December 1883 724 coast-wise vessels having a tonnage of 418,625 tons entered, and 1213 with a tonnage of 576,719 tons cleared. During the same period there entered 1066 foreign vessels with a tonnage of 813,706 tons, and 942 cleared with a tonnage of 732,333 tons. For the six months ending 30th June 1884 there entered 290 American vessels with a tonnage of 134,807 tons, and 199 cleared with a tonnage of 101,908 tons. In the same period 285 foreign vessels entered with a tonnage of 263,577 tons, and 246 cleared with a tonnage of 238,929 tons. Statistics of the exports and imports of the city have been kept since 1821; and they show that the greatest exports in any one year were in 1876, the centennial year, when they amounted to $50,539,450. The greatest imports ($38,933,832) were in 1880. For 1883 the exports were $38,662,434 and the imports $32,811,045. For the six months ending 30th June 1884 the exports were $17,605,271, and the imports $18,245,733. The total receipts for duties at this port for the year 1883 were $11,834,014‘55, and for the six months ending 30th June 1884 $6,917,376°71. Lines of steamers run to Liverpool, Glasgow, New York, Boston, Baltimore, Savannah, Charleston, and other ports. Philadelphia is also the centre of the three great internal carrying lines of the State, the Pennsylvania Rail- road, the Lehigh Valley Railroad, and the Reading Railroad. The last two are principally coal-roads from the great anthracite coal- fields of Pennsylvania, while the first, with its numerons branches, is the main artery from the west for the transportation of its agricultural products. The gross receipts for 1883 of the Penn- sylvania Railroad, from all lines connecting directly with Phil- adelphia, were $57,512,766°36. The total tonnage moved

over these same lines was 57,879,115 tons, and the number of passengers for the same period was 36, 584,435, and the picces of baggage 1,774,192. The tonnage of the other two roads is proportionately large.

Industries. —The largest single classes of manufactures are the iron and steel and the textile industries. The first-named, which ineludes all forms of machinery and of iron and steel articles, em- ployed in 1883 31,917 persons in 712 establishments, producing articles valued at $58,608,781. The manufactures of wool, cotton, silk, &c., employed 60,897 persons in 1018 establishments, pro- ducing textile fabrics to the value of $102,087,128; and these figures are rather below than above the actual facts. In the earpet manufaeture alone, for which there are 216 establishments, there are 35,000,000 yards of carpet made annually. The census for 1880 gave Philadelphia 8567 manufacturing establishments, with a eapital of $187,148,857, employing 185,527 hands and producing articles valued at $324,342,935 per annum. 'The seven classes producing over $10,000,000 a year were—sugar-refineries (11), £24,294,929; factories of woollen goods (89), $21,349,810; men's clothing manufactories (426), $18,506,748; cotton-mills (145), $14,268,696; carpet manufactories (170), $14,263,510; foundry and machine shops (226), $13,455,238 ; drugs and chemicals manu- factories (54), $11,804,793. Since then, however, Philadelphia has nade great strides, and the close of 1882 showed 12,063 manufac- turing establishments, employing 147,137 men, 67,050 women, and 28,296 children under sixteen years of age, or a total of 242,483, and yielding products of the value of $481, 226,309. The large and important industry of brick-making, for which there are 63 yards,

produces annually about 350,000,000 bricks, of a market value of at least $3,500,000. The fine " pressed brick" of Philadelphia is used in all parts of the country, and of late years moulded bricks of various designs and of any size have been extensively and success- fully made.

Charities. —There are not less than 300 charities proper in Phil- adelphia, leaving out institutions of learning which come within the legal definition of the word. A few of them are municipal, but the majority are wholly private in their origin and conduct. Among the former may he classed the Blockley

Almshouse for the care of the indigent poor of the city, and the house of correction, employ- ment, and reformation at Holmesburg. This last is a mixed insti- tution, being a workhouse both for criminals and paupers, and in 1883 thero were received into it 7290 men, women, and children. On 31st December 1883 there were 1236 inmates, of whom 197 were females. 'The city bath-houses are another important municipal charity. There are twenty-two hospitals in Philadelphia, the most important being the Pennsylvania Hospital, projected in 1751 by Benjamin Franklin and Dr Thomas Bond. It is governed princi- pally by the Quakers, and is supported wholly by voluntary contri- butions. It has a capacity for 230 patients, and recent accident cases are always admitted. The insane department of this hospital is located on Haverford road, and was opened in 1841, since which time to January 1884 there have been 8852 patients. In addition to this hospital for the insane there is an insane department attached to the City Hospital at the Almshouse, and a Friends' Asylum for the Insane at Frankford. Other important charities are the Phil- adelphia Dispensary, Home for Consumptives, Home for Incurables, Preston Retreat (lying-in charity), Orphans' Society, Philadelphia Working Home for Blind Men, Sheltering Arms for Infants, the Sick Diet Kitchen, and the House of Refuge for Juvenile Delin- quents. This last receives children committed by the court of Oyer and Terminer upon conviction of a criminal offence, also vagrant, incorrigible, or vicious children committed by magistrates on complaint of the parent or any other person that the parent or guardian is incapable or unwilling to control them.

Education.—Penn in his fraine of government provided that a committee of manners, education, and art should be appointed, so that all "wicked and scandalous living may be prevented, and that youth may be trained up in virtue, and useful arts and knowledge." The first school in Philadelphia of which we have knowledge was opened the year following the foundation of the colony. At a ineeting of the provincial council held in Philadelphia "ye 26th of 10th month 1683" the governor and couneil, " having taken into serious consideration the great necessity there is of a schoolmaster for the instruction—and sober instruction—of youth in the town of Philadelphia, sent for Enoch Flower, an inhabitant of the said town, who for twenty years past hath been exercised in that care and employment in England," and engaged him to instruet the youth of the eity. In the year 1689 the first

public school in Pennsylvania was established at Philadelphia under the care of the celebrated George Keith. It was incorporated by the provincial council 12th February 1698, and was entitled "The Overseers of the Public Sehools founded in Philadelphia at the request, costs, and charges of the people of God called Quakers," and in 1711 received a charter from Penn. This sehool, although supported by the Quakers, was open to all, and for more than sixty years continued to be the only public place for instruction in the Pee It thrived and was held in high estimation, and its legitimate successor is still in operation in Philadelphia, where it maintains its ancient reputa- tion. In 1749 Franklin published his Proposals Relative to the Education of Youth in Pennsylvania, which resulted the next year in the establishment of the academy and eharitable sehool, which became a college in 1755, and in 1779 was incorporated as the university of Pennsylvania. The university at present occupies a site in Woodland avenue, in what was formerly West Philadelphia, and gives instruction in ten departments (Arts, Music, Medicine, Law, Dentistry, Philosophy, Auxiliary of Medicine, Veterinary Medi- cine, Towne Seientifie School, and Wharton School of Finance and Economy). 'The faculty consists of 132 professors, leeturers, and instructors in the various departments, and for the college year 1883-84 there were 1000 students.

The public school system of Pennsylvania was not really firmly fixed until] 1818, when by an Aet of the legislature Philadelphia was made the first school district of Pennsylvania with a distinct educational system from that of the State in general. This district is governed by a board of public education composed of 31] members, one from each ward of the city, who are appointed, one-third each year for three years, by the judges of the Courts of Common Pleas of the county. They have the finaneial control and general super- vision of schools, the selection of the books to be used, the over- sight of the teachers, and the building of the schoolhouses. In addition to this board there are the directors of the public schools, twelve from each ward, who have the local supervision of the schools in their respective sections. They are elected by the people, one- third each year for three years. The schools are divided into primary, secondary, and grammar schools, in addition to which

there is a central high school, a finishing school for boys, and a normal school which is a finishing sehool for girls, and where they can also be qualified to become teachers. There are 465 public schools in Philadelphia and 236 school-buildings of a value of $4,186,200. In 1883 the city appropriated $1,637,651°04 to educa- tion. During the same period 105,424 children attended the public schools, at an average cost per pupil of $15°35, and 82 male and 2086 female teachers are employed in their instruction. Another noted educational institution in Philadelphia is Girard College for orphans, endowed by Stcphen Girard in 1831 for the benefit of poor white male orphan children. By the will a prefer- enee is given first to orphans born in Philadelphia, second to those born in Pennsylvania, third to those born in New York city, and fourth to those born in New Orleans. To be qualified for admis- sion the orphans must be between six and ten years of age; anda child without a father, while the mother is living, is held to be an orphan entitled to admission. The buildings cost $1,933,821°78, and were formally opened in January 1848. The total value of the estate applicable to the purposes of the college was on 31st Deeember 1883 $10,138,268°10, and the gross receipts of income for the year 1883 were $976,961°06. During the same period there were 1105 boys inmates of the college. At Philadelphia are also the Pennsyl- vania Institution for the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb; the Pennsylvania Institution for the Instruction of the Blind; the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts, founded in 1805, and the first art school in Ameriea ; the School of Design for Women ; the Pennsylvania Museum and School of Industrial Art; and the Jefferson Medical College.

Libraries.—Philadelphia was for many years not only the first city commercially in the country, but it was also the seat of letters. When the poet Moore visited America in 1804 he wrote to his mother, of Philadelphia, "it is the only place in America that can boast of a literary society." Unfortunately it has much degenerated in this respect in eighty years, and to-day but little attention is paid by its people to letters and literature. To Franklin, again, its first library is due. It grew out of the Junto, and in 1731 the Library Company of Philadelphia was established. In 1769 it absorbed the Union Library Company, which had been formed some few years before ; and in 1792 the Loganian Library, a valuable col-

lection of classical and other works provided for under the will of

James Logan, a friend of Penn, was transferred to the Philadelphia library. It subsequently acquired, by bequest, the libraries of the Rev. Samuel Preston of London and of Williain Mackenzie of Phil- adelphia, Among the rarities in the latter was a copy of Caxton's Golden Legend, 1486. In 1869 it was made the beneficiary, under the will of Dr James Rush, of an estate valucd at over a million dollars. It has two library buildings and possesses about 145,000 volumes, as well as valuable manuscripts and broadsides. The

Mercantile Library Association is the popular circulating library of

the city, and contains 149,000 volumes. Other libraries are the Atheneum, Apprentices' Library, Library of the Law Association, and Friends' Library.

*Learned Societies.—The American Philosophical Society is the oldest organized body for the pursuit of philosophical investigation in its broadest sense in America. It was founded also by Franklin, 25th May 1743, and incorporated 15th March 1780, with its founder as president. It began the publication of its transactions in 1773, and the 22d volume has been recently issued. The publication of the proceedings of this society was commenced in 1838, and still continues. Its library contains about 23,000 volumes, and the society also possesses valuable manuscript correspondence of Franklin. The Academy of Natural Sciences was organized in 1812, and its ornithological collection, which contains over 25,000 specimens, is claimed to be the finest in the world. It has a fine library of works on the natural scienccs, and publishes a journal and its proceedings. The Franklin Institute for the promotion of the mechanic arts started in 1824. It has a valuable library of over 20,000 volumes devoted to mechanics and kindred subjects, and has ever*sinee its organization published a monthly journal. The Historical Society of Pennsylvania was founded in 1824, and is devoted to the preservation of material relating to the history of the State. Its collections are of great historical value, and its library contains more than 20,000 volumes. The Numismatic and Antiquarian Society of Philadelphia, founded in 1858, was the first organization on the American continent to engage in the pursuit of numismatic science. It has a fine collection of eoins and a good library.*

Another notable body is the College of Physicians and Surgeons, with a medical library of 23,000 volumes and a fine museum of prepared specimens.

Newspapers.—The American Weekly Mercury was the first news- paper published in Philadelphia and the third in the colonies. It was started on 22d December 1719 by Andrew Bradford, a son of William Bradford, the first printer in the middle colonies, and this paper was the first newspaper in the same section. On 21st September 1784 the first daily newspaper in the United States was issued at Philadelphia. It was the American Daily Advertiser, subsequently published as Powlson's Daily Advertiser, and later

FHI ka YD Eat PTA

merged into the North American and United States Gazette, which is thus by succession the oldest daily newspaper in the United

States. There are at present (July 1884) twenty daily newspapers

published in Philadelphia, eight of them being afternoon papers,

with an average circulation of 375,000, and seventy-seven weekly newspapers, chiefly religious and Sunday secular papers.

Social Life.—Among Philadelphia's claims to priority she has in her midst one of the oldest purely social clubs in existence,—the Colony or State in Schuylkill, which was formed in 1732. The other purely social clubs in the city are the Philadelphia Club, Social Art Club, and University Club. The Union League (Repub- lican) and Commonwealth (Democratic) are mixed social and poli- tical clubs. There are some organizations of a mixed social and charitable character, such as the St George Society (1772), the St David Society (1729), the St Andrew's Society (1749), and the Sons of St Patrick or Hibernian Society (1771). The First Troop of Philadelphia City Cavalry, formed in 1774, is a military organiza- tion of high social standing. There are also a gentlemen's driving park or racecourse and innumerable cricket and boat elubs. There is an opera-house capable of accommodating 3500 persons, and five first-class theatres, but Philadelphia as a community scems not to be a theatre-going people.

History.—Down to the War of Independence the history of Philadelphia is virtually that of PENNsyLVANtA (g.v.). The patent granted to William Penn (see PENN, p. 495) for the territory em- braced within the present Commonwealth of Pennsylvania was signed by Charles II. on the 24th of March 1681, and in the autumn of that year Penn appointed three commissioners to proceed to the new province and lay outa great city. This seems to havc been his chief thought in settling the province, and his instructions to his commissioners were to select a site on the Delaware where " it is most navigable, high, dry, and healthy; that is where most ships can best ride, of deepest draught of water, if possible to load or unload at the bank or key side without boating or lightering of it." These commissioners were William Crispen, Nathaniel Allen, John Bezar, and William Heage. Crispen, who was a kinsman of the proprietor, died on the voyage out, and the remaining com- missioners arrived toward the close of the year. They had been preceded by Penn's cousin, Captain William Markham, as deputy- governor, and were soon followed by the surveyor-general of the province, Thomas Holme, who, as may be understood from his office, was one of the most important men in the early history of the city and State. The site of the city was speedily determined upon, and Holme proceeded to lay it out according to the modified instructions of Penn, and his Portraiture of the City of Philadelphia tn the Province of Pennsilvania in Ameriea was published and sold by Andrew Sowle in Shoreditch, London, in 1683. This plan shows the old part of the city as it is to-day, covering between 1200 and 13800 acres. Unfortunately no date can be fixed, even ap- proximately, for the founding of the city; nor is the date known of Penn's first visit to the capital of his province. He landed at Newcastle on the Delaware on 27th October 1682, and two days later came up as far as Upland, now Chester, 13 miles south of Philadelphia. He doubtless did not remain long so near his pet scheme without viewing it, but when he did first come to Phila- delphia is now unknown.!

The seat of government was fixed in Philadelphia by the meeting of the governor and council on the 10th of Mareh 1683, and the General Assembly met two days later. For 117 years the city continued to be the capital of Pennsylvania and was the most important town, commercially, politically, and socially, in the colonies during nearly the whole of this period. In October 1685 the first printing press established in the middle

colonies was set up here by William Bradford ; the earliest specimen of his work which has survived to our day is his Kalendariwm Pennsylvaniense or America's Messenger, being an Almanaek for the year of Grace 1686. The printing press was followed in 1690 by a paper-mill, erected by William Rittenhousc, a Mennonite preacher, on the Wissahickon creek, a locality which has ever since remained a favourite for the manufaeture of paper. The one man, next to William Penn, whose influence was most deeply impressed npon Philadelphia as upon the affairs of the colony, was Benjamin Franklin, whose power was felt almost on his first landing in October 1723, when in his eighteenth year, and its impress is seen to-day. Four years after he settled here he formed a club for mutual improvement, which he called the "Junto," out of which subsequently grew the American Philosophical Society for the pro- motion of useful knowledge and the Library Company of Philadel- phia. He also originated the present university of Pennsylvania, organized the first fire-engine company in the city, and was instru- mental in founding the Pennsylvania Hospital. In March 1753

1 In Philadelphia for many years stood a famous elm tree, known as the treaty tree, and when it was blown down in 1810 a stone was placed to mark the spot. Tradition had it that under this tree Penn, on his first coming to Philadelphia, held a treaty of amity"and friendship with the Indians,—a treaty not sworn to and never broken. The light of investigation has dispelled this

tradition and relegated it to the category of mythology, along with the stories of William Tell and Captain Smith and Pocahontas.

the first Arctic expedition evcr sent out from America sailed from Philadelphia. The vesscl, called the " Argo," was commanded by Captain Swaine, but her voyage accomplished nothing of import- ance. In 1770 the first factory for the manufacture of fine porce- lain in the colonies was established at Philadelphia by a Swiss and an Englishman, but the difficulty of obtaining competent workmen forced its abandonment two years later. During the war of the re- volution Philadelphia was the virtual capital of the colonies and the scene of all the prominent civil events of those stirring

times. The first Congress met at Carpenter's Hall on 4th September 1774; on 24th May 1775 Congress reconvened in the old State house and 'here continued its sittings, except when the city was threatened by the enemy and in his possession. Ou 2d July 1776 the "resolutions respecting independency" were passed, and on the 4th July 1776 Philadelphia was the scene of the adoption of the Declaration of Independence ; and the old State house became ever afterwards Independence Hall. On 9th July 1778 "the articles of confedera- tion and perpetual union between the independent States of America" were here adopted and signed, and in the same place the convention to frame a constitution for the United States of America inet on 14th May 1787, with Washington as presiding officer, and continued its sessions until 17th September, when the work was finished and the fundamental law of the land given to the world. The affairs of state were thus placed on a firm foundation, while the affairs of the church had received the attention of the people the previous year. In June 1786 the clerical and lay delegates from the Protestant Episcopal churches in the United States met in Philadelphia and formally organized "the Protestant Episcopal Church in North America." The Congress of the United States had held its opening session in New York, but in December 1790 it reassembled at Philadelphia ; and for ten years the seat of govern- ment was at Philadelphia, until it was permanently removed to~ the District of Columbia. Here Washington delivered his farewell address to the people of the United States, and here he retired from public life. As in Philadelphia the first bank in the colonies had been opened—the bank of North America in 1781—so in Phil- adelphia the first mint for the coinage of the money of the United States was established in 1792. Both of these institutions are still in full operation. In April 1816 Congress incorporated the bank of the United States, which was the second banking institution of that name chartered by the Government, and fixed it at Philadel- phia. The affairs of this institution form a very important chapter in the history of the city, as indeed in the history of the whole country. It had an unsettled existence, until the final blow came from President Jackson, towards the close of his first term of office, in 1833. Being opposed to the continuance of the bank, he with- drew the public deposits, amounting to about $8,000,000, the result of which was widespread ruin and business depression, not only in Philadelphia but elsewhere.

The two events of greatest note which have taken place in the city in recent years have been the centennial celebration of the independence of the colonies in 1876, and the bi-centennial cele- bration of the landing of William Penn in 1882. The centennial celebration was of the greatest moment, owing to the Exposition of the Industries of All Nations, which was open from 10th May to 10th November ; the total admissions reached the number of 9,910,966 persons. ve (CR Here)

PHILA. See Eeyrt, vol. vii. p. 783 sq.

PHILEMON, the oldest poet of the New Attic Comedy, was the son of Damon, and was born at Soli in Cilicia, or, according to others, at Syracuse ; but early in life he settled at Athens. Since he died in 262 B.c. at an age variously stated at from 96 to 101 years, he must have been born somewhere about 360. He was thus older than his contemporary and great rival Menander, whom he fre- quently vanquished in poetical contests, and whom he long survived. Posterity, however, reversed the judgment of their contemporaries and assigned the palm to Menander. Philemon's first play was put on the stage about 330, while Menander did not exhibit until 321. It appears that, once being worsted in a poetical competition, Philemon went into exile. He certainly made a journey to the East, but whether on the occasion of his exile or in compliance with the invitation of Ptolemy, king of Egypt, we cannot say. On this journey, being driven by a storm to the coast of Cyrene, he was treated with cool contempt by Magas, king of Cyrene, whom he had satirized. From the various legends told about his death he would seem to have died in the full enjoyment and use of his poetical powers. Of the ninety-seven plays which he is said to have composed none are extant; the titles of fifty-three

'have composed fifty-four comedies.

741

have been preserved, but some of these may have been the work of his son, the younger Philemon, who is said to The Merchant and The Treasure of Philemon were the originals respectively of the Mercator and Trinummus of Plautus. The New Attic Comedy, of which Philemon was in a sense the founder, dealt mainly with subjects drawn from private life, which were

worked up in elaborate plots and treated in a prosaic style, to the exclusion, on the whole, of the political tendency, stinging personal satire, and warm poetical colouring, which had marked the Old Attic Comedy. These characteristics of the New Comedy had already appeared, though in a less degree, in the Middle and even in the Old Attic Comedy; so that to Philemon belongs the credit, not of inventing, but of developing a style which had occasionally been employed before. In its absence of poetical idealism and restriction to the prosaic realism of daily life the New Comedy stands to the Old somewhat as the comedies of Moliére or Sheridan stand to those of Shakespeare. Its repertoire was limited to a few stock characters—the imprudent lover, the designing fair, the stingy father, the greedy parasite, the blustering swashbuckler—and its plots rang the changes on the well- worn theme of thwarted but faithful love, rescued from its difficulties by the discovery of a long-lost relative and ending in marriage. In the many fragments of Philemon preserved by Stobzeus, Athenzeus, and other writers there is much wit and good sense.

The fragments have been collected and edited by Meineke, Menandri et Philemonis Reliquiz, Berlin, 1823 ; and again in his

Fragmenta Comicorum Grecorum, vol. iv., Berlin, 1841. They are also appended to the Didot edition of Aristophanes (Paris, 1839).

PHILEMON, Epistie To. This, which is the shortest of the extant epistles of St Paul, stands to the other books of the New Testament in a relation similar to that of the book of Ruth to the other books of the Old Testament. It is an idyl of domestic life. Onesimus, the slave of one of Paul's converts in Asia Minor, had run away from his master, probably, as was often the case with runaways, after stealing some of his money. He had come to Paul, more probably at Rome than, as some have thought, at Czesarea, and Paul had converted him. Paul sends him back to his master, begging that he may be kindly treated as being now a brother Christian, and formally undertak- ing to repay what he owed. The epistle is addressed not only to Philemon but to Apphia, who was probably his wife, to Archippus (possibly the head of the community at Colossz or Laodicea, Col. iv. 17), and to the community which either, like some of the Roman collegia, consisted of Philemon's household or held its meetings in his house. It has sometimes been regarded

as an appendix to the epistle to the Colossians on the grounds (1) that Onesimus was sent with both letters (Col. iv. 9; Philem. 10-12), (2) that in both letters salutations are sent to Archippus (Col. iv. 17; Philem. 2), and (3) that the same persons are men- tioned in both letters as being with Paul at the time of writing (Col. i. 1, iv. 7-14; Philem. 1, 23, 24). This ap- parent connexion with the epistle to the Colossians is the basis of the chief arguments which have been used against its genuineness. Baur (Paul, E. T., vol. ii. p. 84) thinks that this "attractive, graceful, and friendly letter" is merely a practical commentary, in the form of a fiction, on the general conception of the relations of masters to Christ- ian slaves which is set forth in Col. iv. 1. But this view has few supporters. The genuineness of the epistle is almost universally admitted. The best modern works upon it are Bishop Lightfoot's Colosssans and Philemon (3d ed., London, 1879) and Holtzmann's essay, " Der Brief an Philemon," in the Zettschr. f. wissensch. Theol., 1873, p. 428.

7A2

PHILETAS, a distinguished poet and critic of the Alexandrian school, was the son of Telephus and a native of the island of Cos. He lived in the reigns of Philip, Alexander the Great, and Ptolemy I. of Egypt, the last of whom appointed him tutor to his son Ptolemy Philadelphus. His life thus fell in the latter part of the 4th and early part of the 3rd century B.c. He was a contemporary of Menander, a friend of the poet Hermesianax of Cos, and lived into the time of Aratus. Amongst his pupils were Theocritus and Zenodotus. He was sickly and so thin that he was said to carry lead in his shoes to keep himself from being blown away. The story runs that he died from the excessive assiduity with which he sought the answer to the sophistical problem called "The Liar."!

The fame of Philetas rested chiefly on his elegiac verses, in which, however, he was esteemed inferior to the younger poet Callimachus. He is frequently mentioned by the Latin elegiac poets Propertius and Ovid. From Hermesianax and Ovid we gather that his verses were amatory and celebrated the praises of the fair Bittis or Battis, but her name does not occur in the existing frag- ments, which are of a melancholy rather than an amatory tone. In one of his poems (Demeter) he depicted the grief of

Demeter for the loss of Proserpine ; in another (Hcrmes) the love of Polymele for Ulysses. The latter poem appears from the fragments to have been composed in hexameter verse. Further, he wrote epigrams and poems called Ialyva. There is no evidence that he wrote bucolic poems, for the passage in Moschus formerly quoted to prove this is an interpolation of Musceus. Some iambic verses are attri- buted to him, probably by a mistake arising from a common con- fusion between names beginning with Phil. Besides his poems, Philetas was the author of a vocabulary explaining the meanings of rare and obscure words, including words peculiar to certain dialects. He also wrote notes on Homer. The work on Naxos (Nagiaxd), sometimes attributed to him, was perhaps rather by Philteas. The fragments of Philetas have been edited by Kayser, Gottingen, 1793, and by Bach, Halle, 1829.

PHILIDOR, Francois AnpRE Danican (1726-1795), See Cuzss, vol. v. p. 601.

PHILIP, one of the twelve apostles, mentioned fifth in all the lists (Matt. x. 3; Mark ili. 18; Luke vi. 14; Acts i. 13), isa mere name in the Synoptists, but a figure of some prominence in the Fourth Gospel. There he is said to have been "'of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter," and to have received his call to follow Jesus at Bethany, having previously been, it would seem, a disciple of the Baptist (John i. 43, 44). Philip was at that time the means of bringing Nathanael to Jesus (John i. 45), and at a later date he, along with Andrew, carried the request of the inquiring Greeks to the Master (John xii. 22). Philip and Andrew alone are mentioned by name in con- nexion with the feeding of the five thousand (John vi. 5, 7), and Philip is also one of the few interlocutors in John xiv, After the resurrection he was present at the election of Matthias as successor to Judas, but he does not again appear in the New Testament history; it is, however, implied that he still continued in Jerusalem after the out- break of the first. persecution.

According to Polycrates, bishop of Ephesus, in his controversial letter written to Victor of Rome towards the end of the 2d century (ap. Euseb., 1. £., iii. 31, v. 24), the graves of Philip, "one of the twelve," and of his two aged virgin daughters were in {the Phrygian] Hierapolis ; a third daughter, "who had lived in the Holy Ghost," was buried at Ephesus. 'Dialogue of

Caius," a writing of somewhat later date than the letter of Polycrates, mentions (ap. Euscb., H. E., iii, 31) "four prophetesses, the daughters of Philip at Hierapolis in Asia, whose tomb and that of their father are to be seen there." But Eusebius himself proceeds expressly to identify this Philip with the Philip mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles as living in Cesarea ; and in another place he alludes to Philip "the apostle" as having preached the gospel to the Ethiopian cunuch (H. #., ii. 1). Clement of Alexandria also (Strom., iii. 6 [52]) incidentally speaks of "Philip the apostle" as having begotten children and as having given daughters in marriage. In another place (Strom., iv. 973) Clement quotes, with concurrence, a passage from the Gnostic

1 The problem was this: If a man says he is telling a lie, does he speak truly or falsely ?

Proclus, one of the interlocutors in the –

PHI—PHI

Heracleon, in which it is expressly said that Matthew, Philip, Thomas, and others died without "confession of the voice," or, in other words, were not, properly speaking, confessors or martyrs. A later stage of the tradition regarding Philip appears in various late apocryphal writings which have been edited by Tischendorf in his Acta Apostolorum Apocrypha, and in his Apocalypses Apocryphex. According to the Acta Philippi, this apostle, along with Bartholo- mew and Mariamne, the sister of the latter, came to Ophioryma or Hierapolis, where the success of their preaching, and more par- ticularly the conversion and miraculous healing of Nicanora, the wife of the governor, provoked bitter hostility. Philip was crucified head downwards, and invoked curses on his persecutors. His im- precations were heard, but the Lord Jesus immediately afterwards appeared to him and rebuked him for his want of meeknéss, further announcing his approaching death, and that on account of his sin he would be kept back forty days from the gates of paradise. The Acta Philippi in Hellade (7.c., "in the city of Athens, called Hellas") are still more fantastical. An apocryphal book, under the title Actus Philippi, is condemned in the canon of Gelasius. Since the 6th century Philip has been commemorated in the West, along with St James the Less, on Ist May, their relics being deposited in the same church

in Rome ; in the Eastern Chureh Philip's day is 14th November, and that of James the Less 23d October.

PHILIP, "the evangelist," is first mentioned in the Acts (vi. 5) as one of "the seven" who were chosen to attend to certain temporal affairs of the church in Jerusa- lem in consequence of the murmurings of the Hellenists against the Hebrews. After the martyrdom of Stephen he went to Samaria, where he preached with much success, Simon Magus being one of, his converts. He afterwards instructed and baptized the Ethiopian eunuch on the road between Jerusalem and Gaza; next he was "caught away" by the Spirit and "found at Azotus" (Ashdod), whence 'passing through he preached in all the cities till he came to Ceesarea" (Acts vill.). Here some years after- wards, according to Acts xxi. 8, 9, he entertained Paul and his companion on their way to Jerusalem; at that time 'he had four daughters which did prophesy." Ata very early period he came to be confounded with the sub- ject of the preceding notice (q.v.); the confusion was all the more easy because, while he undoubtedly could in a certain well-understood sense of the word be called an "apostle," writers naturally refrained from applying to him the more ambiguous designation of ' evangelist." " Philip the deacon" is commemorated on 6th June.

PHILIP, tetrarch of Itureea. See HErop Purxip, vol. can Ds (OHS

PHILIP, the name of five kings of Macedon. The greatest of these was Puruip II. (382-336 B.c.), the first founder of the MacreponiAn Empire (q¢.v.). After the death of Alexander the Great, Arrhideus, a bastard of Philip II., reigned as Putiip IIL, till he was put to death by Olympias in 317. Putte IV., son of Cassander, reigned only for a few months in 296. Pruip V., the last but one of the kings of Macedon and son of Demetrius II., was born in 237, and came to the throne on the death of his uncle, Antigonus Doson, in 220. In the course of the next three years he acquired a brilliant reputation by his ex- ploits against the Aitolians and their allies in the Pelo- ponnesus in the Social War; but after this, though his whole career was marked by military and even political ability, the bad sides of his character became predominant, and he appeared more and more as a perfidious, morose, and cruel tyrant, thus alienating the affections of the Greeks and ultimately even of his own subjects. His life was full of ambitious schemes,

but he made the cardinal error of siding with Carthage against Rome. His character made it easy for the Romans to raise against him a power- ful coalition of his neighbours, but Philip held his ground with vigour till the armies of the republic themselves appeared on the field. How he was finally driven out of Greece has been related under FLamininus. After 196 Philip for some time accepted his reverses and sought the friendship of Rome, helping the republic against Antiochus ;

Pe bi 1 P 743

but his ambition and the jealousy of the senate gradually led to fresh complications, and a new war was imminent when Philip died in 179, mainly of remorse for the death of his younger son Demetrius, the favourite of Rome, whom he had executed on an accusation forged by his elder son and heir Perseus,

PHILIP I. (1052-1108), king of France, was the son of Henry I. and Anne of Russia, and was born in 1052. He was associated with his father on the throne in 1059, the consecration taking place at Rheims (23d May), and he succeeded to the undivided sovereignty in the following year (4th August 1060), first under the regency of his mother, and afterwards, from 1062 to 1067, under that of Baldwin V., count of Flanders. In 1072 he married Bertha, daughter of Robert the Frisian, at whose hands he had sustained a shameful defeat at Cassel in the pre- ceding year. His jealousy of William the Conqueror led him into an act of overt hostility in 1075, when his troops raised the siege of Dol, and a state of war, interrupted by inconsiderable intervals, continued thenceforward to subsist until the death of William. Philip afterwards supported, but ineffectually, the pretensions of Robert of N ormandy against William Rufus. In 1092 he brought himself into collision with the church by shutting up his wife Bertha with her three children in the castle of Montreuil, and espousing Bertrada of Montfort, whom he had induced to leave her husband, Fulk of Anjou. The marriage was indeed sanctioned after Bertha's death by a subservient council at Rheims in 1094, but led to the king's excom- munication by the council of Autun in the same year —a censure which was renewed by Pope Urban II. at Clermont in 1095. Having dismissed Bertrada early in 1097, he was forthwith absolved, but on a repetition of the offence three years afterwards the sentence was

re- newed, at Poitiers, and only removed by Paschal II. after Philip had once more submitted himself to the church. In 1100 he made his son Louis (afterwards Louis VIL.) joint king, and his death took place at Melun on 29th July 1108. See France, vol. ix. pp. 537-539.

PHILIP IL. (1165-1223), surnamed " Augustus," king of France, was the son of Louis VII., and was born in August 1165. When fifteen years old he was crowned joint king at Rheims on 1st November 1179. In the following year he was again crowned along with his newly-wedded wife, Margaret of Hainault, at St Denis (29th May 1180) ; the death of his father took place a few months afterwards. For an account of Philip II.'s character and of the leading events of his reign the reader is referred to FRANCE, vol. ix. pp. 540-542. He died at Mantes on 14th July 1223,

PHILIP IIT. (1245-1285), surnamed "the Rash," king of France, was born in 1245 and succeeded his father Louis IX. on 25th August 1270, at Tunis, where, after con- tinuing the siege for some time, he made a truce of ten years and embarked for France in the following November. He was twice married, first to Isabella of Aragon in 1258, and subsequently to Mary of Brabant. He died at Per- pignan on 5th October 1285. See FRANCE, vol. ix. p. 544.

PHILIP IV. (1268-1314), surnamed "the Fair," son of the preceding, was born at Fontainebleau in 1268, was married to Joanna, queen of Navarre, in 1284, accompanied his father into Aragon in 1285, and was proclaimed king of France at Perpignan on 6th October of that year. See FRANCE, vol. ix. pp. 544-545. He died at Fontainebleau on 29th November 1314.

PHILIP V. (1293-1322), surnamed "the Tall," second son of the preceding, succeeded his elder brother, Louis X., in January 1317, and was succeeded by his younger brother Charles IV. in January 1322.

PHILIP VI. (1293-1350) was the eldest son of Charles, count of Valois, the younger brother of Philip IV., and

was born in 1293. He succeeded his cousin Charles Iie in 1328, and died at Nogent-le-Roi near Chartres on 22d August 1350. See Francx, vol. ix. pp. 545-546.

PHEEIP T. (1478-1506), of Castile and Aragon, sur- named "the Handsome," was the son of the emperor Maximilian I. and Mary, the only child of Charles the Bold, last prince of the house of Burgundy, and was born at Bruges on 22d July 1478. He succeeded his mother in 1482, Maximilian being recognized as governor and guardian during the minority by all the provinces, except Flanders, the burghers of which took possession of Philip, and carried on the government in hisname, This arrange- ment subsisted until 1489, when a long struggle resulted in the triumph of Maximilian, who henceforth had the guardianship uncontrolled. In 1494 Philip received the homage of the various states of the Netherlands, and in 1496 he was married to Joanna (Juana la Loca), second daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella of Castile and Aragon, On the early death of the other children of these sovereigns the succession vested in Joanna, and Philip as her husband proceeded to Spain, where he was recognized as heir-pre- sumptive by the cortes of Toledo and Saragossa (represent- ing Castile and Aragon respectively) in 1502. He returned, however, to Flanders before the close of the year, and was still absent when, on the death of Isabella in November 1504, Ferdinand caused Joanna and Philip to be proclaimed sovereigns of Castile, but at the saine time assumed the regency to himself. It was only with difficulty that Ferdinand was induced to retire to Aragon and so make way for the new king in June 1506. Philp died three months afterwards (25th September 1506) at Burgos. His children by Joanna were Charles V., emperor, and king of Spain ; Ferdinand L., emperor ; Isabella, queen of Denmark ; Leonora, queen of Portugal and afterwards of France; Mary, queen of Hungary and governor of the Netherlands ; and Catharine, queen of Portugal.

PHILIP TI. (1527-1598), king of Spain, was the son of the emperor Charles V. and Isabella of Portugal, and was born at Valladolid on 21st May 1527. He was brought up in Castile under the care of his mother, who died when he was twelve years old. As Philip grew up, his father, though he rarely saw his son, watched carefully over his education and strove to fit him for political life. In 1543 Philip married Mary of Portugal, who died in 1545, soon after the birth of a son, Don Carlos. In 1548 Charles V. summoned Philip to Brussels, that he might gain some experience of the peoples whom he would be called upon to rule. He was not, however, popular with his future subjects. He had already formed his character upon the model of

Spanish haughtiness. He was cold, reserved, punctilious about decorum, and wanting in geniality. The Italians did not care for him ; the Flemings disliked him ; the Germans hated him. His appearance and manner did not further his father's plan of securing his election to the empire. The scheme failed, and Philip's presence was in no way helpful. In 1551 he returned to the more congenial task of governing Spain.

The death of Edward VI. of England opened out to Charles V. new prospects for his son. Queen Mary regarded the emperor as her only friend, and submitted herself entirely to his guidance. She received with joy a proposal for her marriage with Philip. The English opposition broke down with the failure of Wyatt's rebellion, and in 1554 Philip came to England to claim his bride. Charles V. resigned to him Naples and Sicily that he might not come as a needy prince. Philip was well sup- plied with Spanish gold, and was charged by his father to Spare no pains in conciliating the English. He tried his best ; but his cold, ungenial manner was a hopeless obstacle to his success. Mary was devotedly attached to her hus-

band, who exercised a moderating influence over the queen's zeal for the re-establishment of Catholicism. Charles V. wished to secure England as an ally, and subordinated religious to political considerations. Philip was not natur- ally fitted for conciliatory action, and was not happy in England. He found that his wife was destined to be childless and that he had no prospect of succeeding to the English crown. At the end of 1555 he joyfully obeyed lis father's summons to go to Brussels. Charles V., worn out by the fatigue of a long reign, resolved to abdicate in favour of his son, and this he did on 16th January 1556.

Philip II. was now king of Spain, Naples, and Sicily, duke of Milan, lord of Franche Comté and the Nether- lands, ruler of Tunis and the Barbary coast, the Canaries and Cape de Verd Islands, the Philippines and Spice Islands, large colonies in the West Indies, and the vast territories of Mexico and Peru. These great dominions had fallen into his father's hands and were united only by their dependence on their ruler. It was Philip's task to give them an organic unity and combine them into a system. First he had to face a threatening league against his power. Pope Paul IV., a Neapolitan, was

imbued with hatred of the Spanish rule, and formed an alliance with Henry II. of France. Philip sent the duke of Alva, who speedily reduced the intractable pope. But Philip was too good a Catholic to press his victory. He was content to leave the pope powerless, and Alva on his knees asked pardon for bearing arms against the church. The war against France was pursued with equal success and greater results. Philip's army, led by Philibert of Savoy, entered Picardy and besieged St Quentin. The French were defeated in an attempt to relieve the city, and St Quentin was stormed. The French retaliated by seizing Calais from England, and thence advanced into Flanders, where they were again defeated in the bloody battle of Grave- lines. Both Philip II. and Henry II. were destitute of resources and wished for peace; but Philip IT. was the better diplomatist. The treaty of Cateau Cambrésis in 1559 restored to him all that France had won by its long war- fare against Charles V. in Italy and the Netherlands.

Thus Philip began his reign with glory, and Europe saw that Charles V. had no unworthy successor. Yet Philip was not anxious for military glory. His finances were embarrassed and he felt the need of a period of peace. For the purpose of maintaining his political supremacy he proposed to continue his English alliance by marrying Elizabeth when she succeeded Mary on the English throne. Elizabeth did not at once reject the proposal; but she gradually entered upon a religious policy which made marriage with Philip impossible. The Spanish king rapidly changed his plans and cemented his alliance with France by a union (24th June 1559) with Isabella, daughter of Henry II. He made arrangements for the government of the Netherlands, and at the end of 1559 returned to Spain, where-he remained for the rest of his life.

The policy of Philip was steadily directed towards welding his dominions together in dependence on himself and extending his influence over Europe. The power of Charles V. had had no definite centre. The emperor had recognized the claims of his separate dominions upon him, and had striven to be neither German, Spanish, Flemish, nor Italian. Philip identified himself entirely with Spain. Castile was to be the seat of his monarchy, and that monarchy was to be absolute. He was devoted to Catholicism, and during his reign superseded the pope as the head of the Catholic party in Europe. But the interests of Catholicism were in his mind identified with his

own personal interests, and under the cover of zeal for the church he pursued the aggrandizement of Spain. In Spain itself his care for the maintenance of the Catholic

Peer! dd Se eT

faith accorded with the temper of the people. The long continuance of war against the Moors had identified ortho- doxy with purity of race, and heresy was regarded as a taint in the blood. The rigour of the Inquisition preserved the national honour ; the auto-da-fé was a means of ridding the land of dangerous elements. This uncompromising spirit of Spain in religious matters its king wished to extend to the rest of his dominions.

Philip had none of his father's personal activity. Though his mind was always engaged in the business of the state, he did not care for the excitement of personal conflict. He was no warrior, and never took the field, He felt himself best qualified to direct his policy from afar. He was resolved to make the fullest use of others, yet to keep the guidance of affairs in his own hands. He increased the number of councils for the managenient of the business of the different provinces of his realm, and in these councils natives of the various provinces had seats. But the general direction of affairs was in the hands of a privy council, entirely composed of Spaniards. At first this council consisted chiefly of the members of Philip's house- hold, the men whom he had known in early days. Fore- most amongst them were the duke of Alva and Ruy Gomez de Silva, prince of Eboli. Alva was a general, Gomez a courtier, and the two men were in permanent opposition. This exactly suited Philip's views. He was never present in person at the sittings of the council. All questions on which he wished for its opinion were reduced to writing and laid before it. Its recommenda- tions were similarly submitted to the king in writing. There was no initiative except by his pleasure, no decision which was not due to his personal approval. He gained, all the advantages of opposing views amongst his ministers without identifying himself with any. No minister could become a necessity to him, and he could withdraw his favour at will. Philip's regents and ministers in the several provinces had large authority, but were never allowed to forget their dependence on the central power. Every land was submissive except the Netherlands, where the nobles resented their exclusion from the

government, and saw with alarm the steady advance of Philip's system. A new ecclesiastical organization increased the number of bishops, who were all dependent on the king, and dimin- ished the revenues of the monasteries, which furnished provisions for the younger members of the noble families. The introduction of the Spanish Inquisition fhreatened to destroy entirely the political importance of the nobles. In the general discontent the Protestant feeling of the towns made common cause with the national jealousy of the nobles. A strong opposition was formed, and in 1566 the Netherlands were in revolt. For a time Philip wavered between a policy of conciliation and a policy of repression. At last he listened to the advice of the duke of Alva, and sent him to reduce the rebels. Alva treated the revolted provinces with merciless severity; he crushed, but he could not subdue. The Netherlands were still unpacified, while Alva's cruelty destroyed their commerce. Their wealth had been the chief source of revenue to Charles V.; Philip II. no longer found it flow into his coffers. For seven years Alva resolutely tried his policy of repression; but the spirit of the Netherlands remained unbroken, and round their slumbering revolt all the enemies of the Spanish monarchy began to gather. Alva was recalled and fell into disgrace. A more pacific successor, Don Luis de Requesens, was sent to try a more conciliatory policy.

In domestic life, meanwhile, Philip was unhappy. His son Don Carlos developed an ungovernable temper, and did not hesitate to condemn his father's caution as un- worthy of the traditions of his house. He wished to distinguish himself, and was on the point of quitting

Primi & Ht.

Spain when his father, as a measure of precaution, had him imprisoned. In prison Don Carlos yielded to sullen despair, and gave way to excesses, which Philip did not try to check. In consequence of this. unwholesome life Don Carlos died in 1568, and it was a bitter blow to the haughty king to inform foreign princes of the facts. It would seem that Philip was glad to be rid of one whom he could not manage ; he did not hasten the death of Don Carlos, but he took no steps to prevent it. A few months later died Queen Isabella, leaving Philip without a male heir. In 1570 he married his fourth

wife, Anne of Austria, his niece, who died in 1580. Only one of her sons survived to manhood, and he succeeded his father as Philip ITI.

Meanwhile the hopes of Spain were fixed on Philip's half- brother, Don John of Austria, who first showed his military skill by putting down a serious revolt of the Moriscos in the Alpuxarras, and was then sent to command the Spanish fleet in the joint expedition of the Mediterranean powers against the Turk. He commanded at the decisive battle of Lepanto in 1571, which stemmed the tide of Turkish conquest. Brave and ambitious, Don John longed for a kingdom, and offered to undertake the conquest of the African coast. But Philip did not wish his brother to gain too much military glory. He sent him in 1576 to succeed Requesens in the Netherlands. Don John was full of great schemes,—to pacify the Netherlands, invade England, release Mary Queen of Scots, and become her husband. But the Spanish treasury was exhausted. Philip would send no more supplies, and left Don John to temporize with the Netherlanders, a task for which he was entirely unfit. Overwhelmed with disappointment and the sense of failure, Don John died in 1578, leaving the work which he could not accomplish to be undertaken by the patient genius of Alexander Farnese.

Don John had had the art of impressing his great schemes on those around him. He sent his secretary, Escovedo, to urge his wishes on Philip, whose jealous mind was filled with suspicion. Escovedo awakened the personal dislike of Antonio Perez, and was murdered by that minister's instrumentality (see PEREz). The fall of the old parties in the council brought forward new men and inaugurated a new policy. Cardinal Granvella, Juan Idiaquez, and Chris- toval de Moura became the king's chief advisers. They were men who depended solely on his favour, and were not connected with the old nobility of Castile. Hitherto Philip's policy had been in the main pacific. He had aimed at the internal consolidation of the monarchy, and had striven by every means to overcome the revolt of the Netherlands. But the resolute temper of the Nether- landers was encouraged by hopes of foreign help. England, France, and even Austria in turn displayed their jealousy of Philip's power by helping to keep alive the insurrection. Round the revolt of the Netherlands centred the chief questions of European politics. Philip at length deter- mined to make the subjection of

the rebellious provinces part of a great scheme to extend the power of Spain over Europe. In the second period of his reign he came forward as the disturber of European peace, determined to reduce western Christendom to religious unity under his own rule. He interfered in the internal politics of every country and seized on every opportunity for pursuing his own schemes. His first step in the career of aggrandize- ment was taken in 1580 by the reduction of Portugal, when he claimed the vacant crown by right of his mother. The duke of Alva overran the country before any other power had time to interfere. The last of the great Spanish nobles, who had already felt the weight of the king's displeasure, was still a willing instrument in extending the royal despotism. Philip succeeded in im- pressing on Spain an unreasoning loyalty, which took

the place of its old chivalrous patriotism. In the Nether- lands he put William of Orange under the ban, and the assassination of William was the first sign of the fana- tical bitterness which Philip was ready to encourage and to use. In France he resolved to check the power of the court and obtain an influence over French affairs. The strongly Catholic party resented the favour shown by Henry IIT. to the Huguenots, and was anxious about the succession to the crown. Headed by the Guises, they formed a league with Philip in January 1585, which plunged France into long and bitter warfare. The rapid advance of the League in France and the successes of Alexander Farnese in the Netherlands awakened the alarm of England. 'Troops were sent to the Netherlands, and the English privateers redoubled their attacks upon the treasure-ships of the Indies in the Spanish Main. Resolved to remove all hindrances from his path, Philip undertook the reduction of England. THe trusted to the strength of the Spanish navy, the military skill of Alexander Farnese, and the discontent of the English Catholics. In 1588 the French king had become a mere instrument of the League, and Philip sent against England the "Invincible Armada." Its failure involved the failure of all his schemes, though this fact was not at first obvious. Philip bore his loss with resignation. "I sent my ships," he said, "against men, not against the billows. I thank God that IT can place another fleet upon the sea." But he was never able to renew his attack upon England. The murder of Henry III. of France raised the question of the

succession to the French crown, and Philip's protectorate over the titular Charles X. was admitted. On the death of Charles the Catholic party were willing to recognize Philip's daughter Isabella as their queen. But the resolute bearing of Henry of Navarre kindled anew the national feeling, and the discussions about Isabella's future husband brought political questions into the foreground and weakened the cohesion of the League. The death of Alexander Farnese in 1592 deprived Philip of the great general who alone could hold in check Henry of Navarre, and Henry's change of religion and absolution by the pope in 1593 did much to remove the religious difficulty to his recognition by all parties in France. Philip's schemes for a general European ascendency entirely failed. He could not even recover the Netherlands for the Spanish monarchy. The northern provinces, banded together as the United Nether- lands, made good their independence. The southern pro- vinces returned to their obedience, but were ceded by Philip to his daughter Isabella and her husband Albert of Austria. The English cruisers became more and more dangerous in the Spanish Main, and in 1596 the English fleet sacked Cadiz. Philip II.'s reign ended in general failure. His resources were exhausted, and in 1597 he repudiated his debts. His economic policy was disastrous. He checked commerce by unwise taxes, trusted unduly to the wealth of the Indies, and encouraged the indolent haughtiness of the Castilians. He raised Spain to a high position, but left it with a ruinous system of govern- ment, which could only end in financial decay. Yet he was resolute and persevering to the end. He bore with constancy a painful and lingering illness, and his last words were, "I die like a good Catholic, in faith and obedience to the Holy Roman Church." But he knew that he left a feeble successor. His jealous temper showed itself in the narrow education and secluded life which he prescribed for his son, and thereby intensified the boy's natural timidity. "God has not been pleased," he sadly said at the last, "'to grant ine a successor capable of ruling my great realm." He died at the Escorial in September

1598.

Philip TI.'s character is impressed on the great archi-

ao in — om

tectural monument of his reign, the Escorial, built in the solitude of the Guadarrama hills. The mighty mass of buildings contained a monastery, a burying-place for the royal house, and a palace for the king. It was built in con- sequence of a vow made at the battle of St Quentin. The battle was fought on St Lawrence's day 1557, and this fact was commemorated by arranging the building in the form of a gridiron. The cloister of the monastery supplied the bars, and the royal palace projected like the handle. Philip loved solitude. It harnionized with his habits of quiet industry. He governed his dominions by means of des- patches, as a merchant seated in his office transacts com- mercial business in different quarters of the globe. All that could be done by patient industry, without political insight, Philip II. did. His strength lay in his steady persistency. During his reign he was the foremost figure in European history, but the only work which he accom- plished was the formation of the Spanish character into the definite shape in which it influenced European culture.

Literature.—Cabrera, Filipe Segundo ; Leti, Vita di Filippo IT. ; Sepulveda, De Rebus Gestis Philippi II.; Alberi, Relaziont Venete ; Weiss, Papiers d'Hiat de Cardinal Granvelle; Gachard, Corre- spondance de Philippe II., and Don Carlos ct Philippe II.; Calendar of State Papers, Mary and Elizabcth ; Documentos ineditos para la Historia de Espatia; Prescott, History of Philip I1.; Mignet, Antonio Perez ct Philippe II. ; Motley, The Rise of the Dutch Re- public, and The United Netherlands; Froude, History of England under Mary and Elizabcth; Ranke, Geschichte Frankreichs, and Fiirsten und Volker von Siid-Huropa ; Raumer, History of the Siax- teenth and Seventecnth Centuries; Forneron, Histoire de Philippe IT, ; Stirling-Maxwell, Don John of Austria. (M. C.)

PHILIP III. (1578-1621), king of Spain, son of Philip II. by his fourth wife, Anne of Austria, was born at Madrid on 14th April 1578, succeeded his father on 13th September 1598, married Margaret of Austria on 18th April 1599, and died at Madrid on 31st March 1621. In personal character he was weak and indolent, and his time was mostly spent at the Escorial in hunting and other pursuits of a private country gentleman, while the conduct of public affairs was left almost entirely in the hands of the duke of Lerma, who held the office of first minister from the king's accession until October 1618. See SParn.

PHILIP IV. (1605-1665), king of Spain, son of Philip IIT., was born at Valladolid on 8th April 1605, was married to Isabella of France on 25th November 1615, succeeded his father on 3lst March 1621, and died on 17th Sep- tember 1665. From 1621 to 1643 the well-known duke of Olivares held the reins of real power in the Peninsula ; he was afterwards succeeded by the duke of Carpio. See SPAIN,

*PHILIP V. (1683-1746), king of Spain, was the second son of the French dauphin, Louis, by his wife Maria Anna of Bavaria, and was born at Versailles on 19th De- cember 1683. In 1700 Philip, at that time duke of Anjou, was called by the testament of the childless Charles IT. to the throne of Spain. Quitting Versailles to take pos- session of his*inheritance on 4th December, he arrived at the Buen-Retiro palace in Madrid on 18th February of the following year. At their parting his grandfather, Louis XIV., who a few months previously had concluded with England and Holland a treaty for the partition of the Spanish dominions, exhorted him to be a good Spaniard, but never to forget that he had been born a Frenchman ; it was on the same occasion that he uttered the famous mot, "' Mon fils, il n'y a plus de Pyrénées." Philip's re- cognition as king by the other European powers did not take place until the war of the Spanish succession was brought to an end by the treaty of Utrecht in 1713. In 1702 he married Maria Louisa, daughter of Victor Ama- deus, duke of Savoy; shortly after her death in February 1714, which he felt deeply, he married Elizabeth Farnese (December), a step to which he was advised by the then*

all-powerful princesse des Ursins. The disgrace of the princess immediately followed, and her place in the royal counsels was taken by ALBERONI (9.v.), who remained in power till December 1719. In 1724 Philip, under the influence of a profound melancholy which had seized him, resigned the crown by royal decree, dated 14th January 1724, in favour of his eldest son, Louis, who, however, died after a short reign of only seven months. Philip died on 9th July 1746 and was succeeded by his son, Ferdinand VI. See SPAIN.

PHILIP. For the dukes of Burgundy of this name, surnamed respectively 'the Bold" (1342-1404) and "the Good" (1396-1467), see Burcunpy, vol. iv.

p. 536, and FRANcE, vol. ix. p. 548. For Archduke Philip, ‘the Handsome,” see Puruip I. of Castile and Aragon (p. 743).

PHILIP or Swasia (c. 1170-1208), rival of the em- peror Oruo IV. (¢.v.), younger son of the emperor Freder- ick I., was born about 1170. He was originally intended for the church, and, after being provost of Aix-la-Chapelle, was chosen bishop of Wiirzburg in 1191; but in 1195 his elder brother brought about his marriage with a Byzan- tine princess, Irene, on which occasion he was named duke of Tuscany and Spoleto. In the following year he received also the duchy of Swabia. On the death of his elder brother he was elected king by a large body of princes and prelates at Miihlhausen (March 1198) ; this, however, was not acquiesced in by those opposed to the continuance of the imperial crown in the house of Hohenstaufen, whose choice fell on Otho. The coronation of the latter at Aix- la-Chapelle in July was soon followed by that of his rival at Mainz, and a civil war ensued, which, carried on with varying fortunes for ten years, was only brought to an end by the murder of Philip by Otho of Wittelsbach at Bamberg on 21st June 1208.

PHILIPPI, a city of ancient Macedonia, on a steep hill near the river.Gangites (now the Angista), overlooking an extensive plain and at no great distance from the coast of the Aigean, on the highway between Neapolis (Kavalla) and Thessalonica. Originally called Crenides, or ‘ Foun- tains,” it-took the name by which it has become famous from Philip of Macedon, who made himself master of the neighbouring gold-mines of the Hill of Dionysus, and fortified the city as one of his frontier-towns. Octavius and Antony having in 42 B.c. gained a great victory over Brutus and Cassius in the plain of Pliulippi, the place received a Roman colony, Colonia Julia Philippensis, which was probably increased after the battle of Actium (Col. Aug. Julia Phil.). The inhabitants received the Jus Italicum, and Philippi was one of the cities specially de signated as “first cities” (tparn . . . wéAus, Acts xvi. 12; see Marquardt, Rom. Staatsverwaltung, vol. i. p. 187). It was the scene of a striking incident in the life of St Paul, and it was to his converts here that he addressed the epistle noticed below. The site of the city, now alto- gether uninhabited, is marked by a number of ruins—the substructions of an amphitheatre, parts of a great temple of Claudius, &c.—which have furnished a variety of inter- esting inscriptions.

At a little distance to the east is a huge stone monument, known to the Turks as Dikelitash and to the Greeks as the Manger of Bucephalus.

See Clarke's Travels, iii.; Hacket, in Bible Union Quarterly, 1860 ; Heuzey, Mission arch. en Macédoine, and C.J. L., ili. 1.

PHILIPPIANS, EpistLE To THE. 'This is one of the most characteristic of the letters of St Paul. It was ad- dressed to the community at Philippi (see above), the first important European city which St Paul had visited, where he had formed a community with the apparently new organization of "bishops" and "deacons," and with which he had relations of especial intimacy. The immediate occa- sion of his writing the letter was his receipt of money

Piel hie es | ANS

which the Philippians had sent by Epaphroditus to supply St Paul's personal wants. They were probably wealthier thau some of the other communities which he had founded, and consequently he had not the reluctance which he felt elsewhere to receive money from them; the money so sent was no doubt part of the offerings of the community which constituted the Christian sacrifice (iv. 18),—a fund which was administered by the officers of administration, 7.e., the bishops and deacons. It was consequently to those officers that he specially addressed his acknowledgment of it.

He begins by a warm recognition of their steadfastness in the faith and of their sympathy with him (i. 3-7), and, as he is certain that their steadfastness will continue, so he prays that their love may abound more and more in enlightened well-doing (i. 9-11).. He proceeds to tell them about himself and about other preachers of the gospel at Rome: as for himself, he is full of hope because his imprisonment has tended to make the gospel known, and has emboldened others to 'speak the word of God with- out fear"; as for other preachers (probably the Jewish Christians who denied his apostleship and disparaged his special teaching), though some of them preach insincerely and controversially, yet, whatever be their motive, 'Christ is proclaimed," and therein he finds cause of rejoicing (i. 12-18). His position is critical, for he may be condemned to death ; but, whether he

Hves or dies, Christ will be glorified through him, so that he cannot tell which he would prefer; for himself it would be far better "to depart and to be with Christ," but for the Philippians it is better that he should 'abide in the flesh" (i. 19-24). Hence he feels confident that he will hve, and that he will see the Philippians again ; and hence also he exhorts them not to be discouraged by persecutions, and to be at unity among themselves (i. 25, ii. 2). The reason for this second exhortation is uncertain: it may be that the differ- ences of race at Philippi, the mingling of Romans and Greeks, of Europeans and Asiatics, had led to the factious assertion by each race of its own superiority, or it may be, though less probably, that there as elsewhere the feud raged between Gentile and Jewish Christians. And, since faction comes of self-assertion, he urges as its antidote the cultivation of "lowliness of mind," which he enforces by the great example of Jesus Christ, who, so far from assert- ing the divinity which belonged to Him, emptied Himself of it and took the form of a bond-servant ; to this St Paul adds a strong appeal on his own account, that his work aniong them may not seem to have been in vain (ii. 3-18). He then, with an expression of regret that some of his fellow-workers are no longer with him, announces that he hopes to send Timothy to them as soon as he knows the issue of his coming trial; and he is hopeful that he may be able to go himself; however that may be, he sends back their own messenger, Epaphroditus, who after coming to Rome had almost sacrificed his life in the energy of his work (ii. 19-30). Then follows an abrupt transition to another subject, which has sometimes been thought to mark the commencement of a new letter. He suddenly begins to warn the Philippians in strong terms against false teachers, either Judaizing Christians, or, more probably, Jews, who were preaching the necessity of circumcision (Holsten thinks that there is a reference to the murder of James the Just) ; he maintains that, although he was him- self a "Hebrew of Hebrews," and therefore possessed whatever "confidence in the flesh" such a one might claim, yet he counted it all as "'loss" in order that he might gain "the righteousness which is of God by faith" ; and borrowing a metaphor from the Greek games he regards this as a prize which has to be won by a contiuu- ous effort (iii. 2-16). He urges the Philippians to follow him in this struggle towards moral perfection, in contrast

either to the Christians who had lapsed into Epicureanism or, as some think, to the antinomian Jews (iii. 17, iv. 1). He then gives some personal messages to Euodia and Syntyche (whom Schwegler considers to be personifications of the Jewish and heathen Christian parties respectively), and to Synzygus (or, if the word be not a proper name, an anonymous '"yoke-fellow" who has been variously supposed to be Paul's wife, Clement of Rome, St Peter, Lydia the purple-seller, or Epaphroditus), and mentions "Clement," about whom it has been much discussed, but to little purpose, whether he was a Philippian or a

Roman, and, if the latter, whether he was the same per-

son who figures in early legends as bishop of Rome, or whether, as Baur thinks, the name is really that of the Flavius Clemens who was condemned under Domitian for "atheism." The personal messages are followed by general exhortations to joyfulness, forbearance, trustful- ness, and steadfastness in Christian virtue; and then comes that which was probably the special occasion of writing, an acknowledgment of the money which they had sent to him (iv. 4-20).

It is the more probable opinion that the epistle was written from Rome, and not from Cesarea ; whether it was written in the earlier or the later period of his stay there is a question which has been much discussed, but which the scantiness of the evidence respecting that stay does not allow of being satisfactorily answered ; most writers (De Wette, Wieseler, Wiesinger, Meyer) place it in the later period, others (Bleek, Ewald, Beyschlag, Light-foot) in the earlier; the latter view is more probable on account of the general agreement of this epistle with the epistle to the Romans. It throws an interesting light on St Paul's external relations. He was a prisoner, probably in charge of the prefect of the pretorian guard, and conse- quently with opportunities of making the gospel known among the soldiers ; and the mention of Czesar's household, though no doubt that term covered a large number of scattered individuals, makes it possible that he was lodged near the imperial palace on the Palatine.

The genuineness of the epistle was attacked by Baur on three grounds, which he himself states to be (1) the appearance of gnostic ideas in ii. 6-11, (2) the want of anything distinctively Pauline, (3) the questionableness of

some of the historical data.1 The attack has been re- newed by one section of his followers ; but it is generally admitted even by critics who reject the epistles to the Ephesians and Colossians? that the attack upon this epistle has failed. The supposed gnosticism of ii. 5-11 is not proved ; the supposed identification of Clement (iv. 3) with Flavius Clemens, the cousin of Domitian, is merely an arbitrary guess ; and the list of expressions which are not found in other epistles of St Paul is not greater than may reasonably be expected from the differences in the subject- matter.?

The doctrinal importance of the epistle is considerable, for it contains a passage which, if it could be certainly understood, would be at once the key and the summary of St Paul's Christology. In 2 Corinthians viii. 9 he had

1 Paul, E. T., vol. ii. p. 453; Theol. Jahrb., 1849, 501, which is partly reprinted as an addendum in Paul, H. T., vol. ii. p. 64.

2 E.g., Hilgenfeld, Hinleitung, p. 333; Renan, St Paul, p. 63 Pfleiderer, Paulinism, HE. T., vol. i. p. 29.

3 Baur was followed in this attack by Schwegler (Das nachapost. Zettalter, vol. ii. p. 183) and Volkmar (in the Theol. Jahrb., 1856, p. 309); and he was answered by Liinemann (Pauli ad Philipp. Epist.

. . defendit, Gottingen, 1847), Bruckner (Hpist. ad Philipp… .« vindicata, Leipsic, 1848), Hilgenfeld (in the Zettschr. f. wissensch: Theol., 1871, p. 309). A new attack was made by Hinsch in the same Zeitschrift, 1873, p. 59 (criticized by Hilgenfeld, itid., p. 178), and by Holsten in the Jahrbb. f. prot. Theol. (1875, p. 425; 1876, p. 58), which has been met by the important treatise of P. W. Schmidt, Neutestamentliche Hyperkritik, Berlin, 1880.

said of Christ that "though He was rich yet for your sakes He became poor"; in Philippians ii. 5-7 this is expanded into the explicit declaration that "being in the form of God He counted it not a prize (?) to be equal with God, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant, being made in the likeness of men." Each phrase of the passage is of great significance, but it is also of great uncertainty of meaning: the main points of uncertainty are (1) whether the subject of the sentence is the incarnate or the pre-incarnate Christ ; (2) what is implied by the phrase "in the form of God," and what is its relation to the phrase "to be equal with God," some thinking that it implies an identity, others an inferiority of status; (3) what is meant by the word here rendered " prize" (apraypov), some thinking that this is the right rendering, and that the meaning is "He did not tenaciously cling to His divinity but surrendered it," others thinking that it should be rendered "an act of robbery," and that the meaning is 'He did not think it a usurpation to assert His divinity" ; (4) what is meant by "emptied Himself," whether He only divested Himself of the outward sem- blance of divinity, or whether He reduced Himself to the bare consciousness of personality in becoming

incarnate ; this last question, that of the nature of the kenosis, has bearings of especial importance on the general doctrine of the Person of Christ.

Discussions of these questions from various points of view will be found not only in commentaries on the passage (¢.g., Lightfoot) and works on New Testament theology (e.g., Weiss), but more particularly in Baur, Paul, E. T., vol. ii. p. 45 (who thinks that the conceptions arc gnostic and un-Pauline) ; Ernesti, in Studien wu. Kritiken, 1848, p. 889, and 1851, p. 602 (who thinks that dprayudy refers by way of contrast to the first Adam, who tried to seize what was not his own); Hilgenfeld, in the Zectschr. f. wissensch. Lheol., 1871, p. 192, and zbid., 1873, p. 178; Grimm, zbid., 1873, p. 83 ; Hinsch, 7bid., 1873, p. 59; R. Schmidt, Paulinisehe Christo- logic, 1870, p. 163 (whose explanation deserves especial considera- tion); Pfleiderer, Paulinism, E. T., vol. i. p. 146; and more recently Weiffenbach, Zur Auslegung der Stelle Phil., ii. 5-11, Karlsruhe, 1884. For the question as to the nature of the kenosis, see Gess, Die Lehre von der Person Christi, Basel, 1856, pp. 81, 294.

The best modern editions of the epistle are those of B. Weiss, Der Philipperbrief ausgelegt, Leipsic, 1859, and Lightfoot, The Epistle to the Philippians, 3d ed., London, 1873. (E. HA.)

PHILIPPICUS, or Purtepicus, emperor of Constanti- nople from December 711 to June 713, was the son of the patrician Nicephorus, and became distinguished as a soldier under Justinian II. His proper name was Bardanes. Relying on the support of the Monothelete party, he made some pretensions to the throne on the outbreak of the first great rebellion against Justinian ; these led to his relega- tion to Cephalonia by Tiberius Absimarus, and subsequently to his banishment, by order of Justinian, to Cherson. Here Bardanes, taking the name of Philippicus, success- fully incited the inhabitants to revolt against a prince who had made them the objects of one of his most vindictive expeditions, and on the assassination of Justinian in Asia Minor he atvonce assumed the purple. Among his first acts were the deposition of Cyrus, the orthodox patriarch of Constantinople, in favour of John, a member of his own sect, and the summoning of a " conciliabulum " of Eastern bishops which abolished the canons of the sixth general council, and restored to the diptychs the names of Sergius and

Honorius. Meanwhile Terbelis, king of the Bulgarians, attacked Constantinople, burning some of its suburbs and carrying off many prisoners and much booty, while shortly afterwards the Saracens made similar inroads from the Asiatic side. The short reign of Philippicus was brought to a close through a conspiracy headed by two of his generals, who caused him to be blinded in the hippodrome in June 713. Of the remainder of his life nothing is known. He was succeeded by his secretary, Artemius, known as Anastasius II. .

|

PHI—PHI PHILIPPINE ISLANDS (Span. Jslas Filipinas), or Plate xr,

PHILIPPINES, an archipelago in the south-east of Asia, ex- tending from 4° 40’ to 20° N. lat., and from 116° 40’ to 126° 30’ E. long. On the west and north-west it is sepa- rated by the China Sea from China and the Indo-Chinese peninsula ; towards the east lies the Pacific ; on the north a number of smaller islands stretch out towards Formosa; and on the south, while a double connexion with Borneo is formed by the lines of the Palawan and Balabac and the Sulu Islands, the basin of the Celebes Sea, with a central depth of from 1000 to 2600 fathoms, extends, for a distance of 300 miles, between its southernmost island (Mindanao) and Celebes. As the number of the Philippines is believed to exceed 1400, and the larger islands are in several cases only beginning to be properly explored, it is impossible to give a definitive statement of their aggregate land-area. A measurement on Domann’s map (1882) resulted in 114,356 square miles. Nor is it in regard to the area alone that our knowledge is defective. Though for three centuries the greater part of the territory has been nomi- nally in Spanish possession, the interior of some of the larger islands has never been surveyed; several of the native tribes, especially in Mindanao, are altogether inde- pendent ; the geology of Luzon, the best known of all the archipelago, is to a large extent matter of conjecture ; and the visit of a passing botanist or naturalist is enough to add facts of primaryimportance to the register of flora and fauna. While none of the summits, with the exception perhaps of Apo! in Mindanao, exceeds 9000 feet—the loftiest prob- ably being Halcon in Mindoro (8865 feet), Malindang in Mindanao (8685 feet), Mayon in Luzon (8275 feet), and Malaspina in Negros (8190

feet)—all the islands may be described in general as mountainous and hilly. The prin- cipal ranges have a tendency to run north and south, with a certain amount of deflexion east or west, as the case may be, so that the orographic diagram of the archipelago as a whole would have a certain similarity to a fan with northern Luzon as its centre of radiation. The geologist finds his task in the Philippines exceptionally difficult, owing to so much of the surface being covered with a dense vegetation, which often obliges him to be contented with no better indication than the pebbles of the alluvium. Nowhere, almost, are there cuttings or excavations to open up the records of the rocks. It seems certain, from the frequency not only of large tracts of coral reef along the coasts but of raised beaches at a considerable distance and elevation inland, containing shells similar to those of the adjacent seas, that much of the archipelago has been heaved from below the sea-level within compara- tively recent times. As the neck of land between the Bay of Sogod and the Bay of Ragay or Guinayangan and that between this latter bay and the Bay of San Miguel consist of alluvium, tufis, and marls, with modern shells, it appears probable that the southern parts of Luzon were at no very distant date separate islands. According to Drasche, southern and central Luzon comprises (1) a group of chloritic slates and gneiss; (2) diabases and gabbros ; (3) Eocene limestones ; (4) volcanic minerals and tuffs; (5) recent formations with marine fossils—tuffs, limestones, clays, and marine and fluvial alluviums. In his travels through the more northern parts of the island the same geologist verified the existence of (1) diorite, gneiss, proto- genic and chloritic slates; (2) an extensive system of strati- fied conglomerates and sandstones ; (3) modern volcanic rocks (quartzose trachyte, amphiboliferous and sanidinic

1 According to the Spanish hydrographic maps, the height of this mountain is 8813 feet; but the barometer of Rajal and Montano's expedition (which ascended to the top in 1880) indicated 10,270 feet, and that used by Schadenberg and Koch in 1882 no less than 10,827 (see Bull. Soc. de Géogr., Paris, 1881, p. 566).

miei PP IN eS

trachyte, amphiboliferous andesite and dolerite) ; (4) tuffs and tufaceous sandstones, with banks of limestone and marl; (5) banks of coral and

breccia of coraliferous lime- stone, and recent volcanic products. The late origin of the coralliferous limestone is shown by the corals belonging to genera still existing in the Indian Ocean—Galazea, Favia, Meandrina, Porites,and Astracopora—and being specifically similar, though not identical. A remarkable feature is the stratification of the limestone.

Voleanic forces, as has been already implied, have had a great share in shaping the archipelago, and a large number of the mountains bear the stamp of their former activity. But those that still have the credit of being working volcanoes are comparatively few.

Monte Cagua (3910 feet), discovered by Claudio Montero on the north-eastern promoutory of Luzon, appears to discharge smoke con- tinually, and the Babuyanes group (to the north of Luzon) contains several orifices belonging to the same centre of eruption, —a regular volcano in Babuyan Claro, a solfatara in the Didica rocks, and a vol- canic island thrown up in 1856. Of greater importance are the three burning mountains of southern Luzon—Taal, Albay, and Bulusan. Taal lies 45 miles almost due south of Manila. Being only 850 feet high, it is reniarkable as one of the lowest volcanoes in the world. The present craters are situated in a small triangular island in the middle of Lake Bombon or Bongbong. 4 tradition exists (and has been accepted without question by many writers) that this lake, covering an area of 100 square miles, and having in the south and east a depth of 109 fathoms, was formed in 1700 on occasion of a terrible eruption, which undermined the whole mass of a gigantic mountain, 8000 or 9000 feet high ; and, whether (for this is extremely doubtful) the event took place within historic tines or not, the vast deposits of porous tuff in all the surrounding country appear to show that such a voleano must have existed. The water in the lake is now swect, but tradition again asserts that it was at one time salt, possibly through direct communication with the sea. As it is exposed to strong evaporation and discharges into the sea by the Pansipit without being recruited by any considerable affluent, it is probably fed by subterranean sources. To the east of Lake Bombon stands the extinct volcano of Maquiling, at whose foot are the hot springs of Los Bajios ; and about 15 miles farther east is Majaijai (7020 feet), of which the last eruption was in 1730. Away in the south-east of Luzon there is quite a series of high volcanic cones, —Isarog, Iriga, Mazaraga, and Albay or Mayon.

The last, one of the most active volcanoes in the archipclago, is extremely regular in form, rising gradually from a base about 50 miles in circuit. The first partial ascent was made by Esteban Solis in 1592, and the first complete ascent by Paton and Stewart, two young Scotchmen, in 1858.

1 Tt was supposed till quite recently that there were two mountains in this distriet,—one being Macaturing, the other Sugut, Polloe, or Cottabato.

partially destroyed by earthquakes. Apo, according to Schaden- berg and Koch, has three summits, in the midst of which lies the great crater, now extinct and filled with water. Considerable energy is still displayed by the solfataras and boiling springs lower down.

It is difficult to say how these various volcanoes are related to each other; José Centeno suggests with con- siderable probability that they form two lines of activity, an eastern comprising Isarog, Albay, Bulusan, Camiguin, Apo, and Butulan, and a western Buguias (extinct), Arayat (extinct), Taal, Canlaon, Macaturing. Three only of the larger islands, it will be observed, contain actual centres of eruption, and some of the larger volcanoes appear to be in the later stages of their activity,—Albay generally discharg- ing an incoherent form of lava, whilst Taal and others dis- charge nothing but ashes. Other phenomena usually associ- ated with volcanic activity are common enough throughout the archipelago: there is a great deposit of sulphur in the middle of the island of Leyte; inflammable gas bursts out in the south of Panay; and there are hot springs at Buguias, at Los Bafios or Maynit, already mentioned, at Pagsanghan, at San Luis or Maynit in Batangas, in the Taysan Moun- tains, at Tibi or Tivi, &c. At Los Bafios there was a regular bathing establishment erected by the Franciscans in 1671 ; but it was burned down in 1727, and, though rebuilt by public subscription in 1880, may be said to be in a chronic state of decay. The Tibi springs, described in detail by Jagor (Reisen, pp. 114, 115), are remarkable for beautiful cones produced by the deposit of siliceous material. The water in some cases is hot enough to cook food. They are situated on the east coast of Luzon on Lagonoy Bay.

Earthquakes.—Earthquakes are sufficiently frequent and violent in the Philippines to affect the style adopted in the erection of buildings ; in 1874, for instance, they were very numerous throughout the archipelago, and in Manila and the adjacent provinces shocks were felt daily for several weeks. The most violent earthquakes on record in the Philippines occurred in July 1880, when the destruction of property was immense, both in the capital and in other important towns of central Luzon.

Minerals.—Though hitherto little advantage has been taken of its existence, there appears to be in several of the islands a fair amount of mineral wealth. Two coal-fields are known to exist, one beginning in Caransan in the south of Luzon, and probably extending southwards across the Strait of San Bernardino to Catbalongan in Samar, and another occupying the western slopes of Cebu and the eastern slopes of Negros, and thus probably passing under the Strait of Taiion. In the first basin there is a bed from 10 to 20 feet thick cropping out at Gatbo, which has given good results as a fuel for steamboats ; in the second Centeno reports at least five beds of varying thickness and quality. The first discovery of the mineral was made in Cebu in 1827. Hitherto little success has attended the schemes of exploitation. Iron-ore of excellent purity occurs in various parts of Luzon, in Laguna, Bulacan, Pampanga, Camarines Norte, and notably in the Camachin Mountains between the Bulaon and the Garlan; but, with the excep- tion of a few small foundries in Bulacan province, there are no iron-works in the country. In this department there was actually more activity a century ago. Copper- mines are worked at Mancayan, Suyuc, Bumucum, and Agbao in the province of Lepanto, by the Cantabro- Philippine Company, founded in 1862; and the heathen natives of that region (perhaps having learned the art from Chinese or Japanese strangers) appear to have long been accustomed to manufacture copper utensils for their own use and for sale in the Christian settlements. The ore at Mancayan contains upwards of 16 per cent. of copper, 24 of sulphur, 5 of antimony, and 5 of arsenic. For a short time after 1847 copper-mines were worked

at Assit in the island of Masbate; and it is known that copper ores exist in the provinces of Tayabas and Camar- ines Sur (Luzon), Antique (Panay),

and the island of Capul. Gold is very generally distributed throughout the

archipelago, but mostly in insignificant quantities. From

the deposits in Camarines Norte (in Paracale, Mambulao, Labo), where it occurs in placers and in quartz and other rocks, about 30 oz. per month are obtained. Much more important are the gold-washings of Misamis and Surigao in Mindanao, the former of which yield about 150 oz. per month. Neither the mercury nor lead veins discovered at different tines have proved of economic value.! Climate.—As the north part of Luzon is as far from the south of the Sulu Islands as the north of England from the south of Italy, and as the archipelago is divided by the line of the ecliptic, the climate of one region differs considerably from that of another, though the general characteristics are everywhere tropical. The northern islands lie in the region of the typhoons. Three seasons are usually recognized,—a cold, a hot, and a wet. The first extends from November to February or March; the winds are northerly, and, though there is no need for fire, woollen garments can be worn with comfort in the morn- ings; the sky is for the most part clear and the atmo- sphere bracing ; and Europeans look forward to this period as the most enjoyable of the year. The hot season lasts fron March to June, and the heat becomes very oppressive before the beginning of the southerly monsoon. Thunder- storms, often of terrific violence, are of frequent occurrence in May and June. The wet season is usually ushered in by the heavy rains locally known as "collas." During July, August, September, and October the rain comes down in torrents and large tracts of the lower country are flooded. According to the observations of the Jesuits at Manila during the eight years 1870 to 1877 the total rain- fall (distributed over 113 days) amounted to 66°6 inches.

Cold. Hot. Wet. |

é Mean temperature…..... 72°32 87°26" | 84°°56 at { ar eee inches} 8°65} 10°47 | 36-01 Coon Mean temperature…..... 75°°02 | 86°23 | 75°°86 [Reprrnt eee eee Inches | 12°54 9:29 | 26°90

ies { Mean temperature…..... 8690) | 88270) e711 atrial ooo cessce-ceee inches | 16°53 39°27 | 32°15

Sain. ee temperature…….- 81°98 | 82°°97 | 83°0s 1is2500) | Ree inches | 15°74 Soren) | Tooeae

Fauna.—The mammals of the Philippines are strikingly few, especially when contrasted with those of such an island as Java; but their number may yet be slightly increased, and nine-tenths of them are peculiar species. Since Cyno- pithecus niger was struck out of the list, the only monkey known to science is Macacus cynomolgus (chongo of the Tagals), found in all the islands; but there are also pure white monkeys (not albinos) in Mindanao, and specimens are occasionally sold at Manila. The lemuroids are repre- sented by the'strange little Tarstus spectrum, the insecti- vora proper by Galeopithecus philippensis and a " tupaia," or squirrel-shrew. Of carnivora there are three species, two civets and a wild cat, as well as the ordinary domestic animal, The rodents comprise only a few squirrels, Sciurus phalippensis, &e., a porcupine, and two or three rats. Of bats there are between twenty and thirty species. The wild boar is regularly hunted in all the islands ; the natives throughout the archipelago keep large numbers of black

1 The best résumé of geological facts in regard to the Philippines is J. Roth, " Ueber die geologische Beschaffenheit der Philippinen," pub- lished as an appendix to Jagor's Reisen, but, like the other appendices, left out in the untrustworthy English translation. Drasche gives a good deal of fresh material in Fragmente zu einer Geologie der Insel Luzon, reproduced in Boletin de la Comision del Mapa Geologico de

Espatia, vol. viii., 1881. Perrey has collected information about the Philippine earthquakes in Afém. del' Acad. de Dijon, 1860, &c.

PM eet Pe Pees

pigs; and the Babuyanes group take their name from babuy, "a pig." Of deer there are three species, Cervus mariannus, C. philippensis, and C. Alfredi; and a chevrotain or mouse- deer (Tragulus) is found, more especially in Bataan. Tapa, or sun-dried deer's flesh, is a favourite food with the natives. The statement that the horse has become wild in the interior of several islands is founded on a mistake. The ordinary domestic variety, probably of Spanish, Chinese, and Japanese origin, is " generally

small, but well-shaped and hardy, the largest and best breeds coming from Batan- gas, Albay, and Camarines, the smallest and probably the hardiest from Ilocos" (D. M. Forbes). For all kinds of field work the buffalo ("'carabao") is employed ; ordinary cattle and goats are common enough, and some of the former are of great excellence. As there is a Tagalog name for it, it has been supposed that the elephant was at one time to be met with in the Philippines; and in the Sulu Islands, at least, it is said to have existed in the 17th century. The birds of the Philippines proper show the isolated character of the group by the absence of a large number of ordinary Malayan forms, and at the same time there is a con- siderable proportion of genera from Australia, India, and China. Viscount Walden (Z'rans. Zool. Soc., vol. ix., 1877) found the known species nunibered 219, and R. B. Sharpe, by the assistance of Professor Steere's collections, brought the total up to 287 species, of which 151 were peculiar to the Philippines. To these must be added several species hitherto only found in the Sulu Islands. Palawan has a strong Bornean element. It is enough here to mention a number of peculiar woodpeckers, beautiful little parakeets (Loriculus), a number of pigeons (including at least one peculiar genus, Phapitreron), cockatoos, mound-builders, and a peculiar hornbill, Penelopides, known from its note as "'calao" to the natives, who frequently tame it. The prin- cipal game bird is the jungle-fowl (Gallus bankiva).? Alligators abound in some of the lakes and rivers ; and turtles, tortoises, and various kinds of lizards are familiar enough forms; one of the last, the "chacon," is believed by the natives to be a defence against earthquakes. The beauty and variety of the butterflies and the destructiveness of the termites are obtrusive features of the insect life ; the land-shells are peculiar, numerous, and remarkable for delicacy of form and colour. Some of the molluscs attain gigantic dimensions ; the "taclobo" shell sometimes weighs 200 ib, and is used for baptismal fonts. One of the most valuable kinds of fish is the "dalag" (Ophiocephalus vagus), and one of the most peculiar the Hemiramphus vivipara. flora.—The flora of the Philippines is essentially Malay- an, intermixed with a Chinese element, but with sufficient individuality to constitute a sub-region. According to Llanos's edition of Manuel Blanco's Flora de Filipinas,3 4479 species are known belonging to 1223 genera and 155 orders. Among the dicotyledons the orders most abun- dantly represented are: Leguminose (77 genera), Rubiacez and Composite (each 41), Huphorbiacer (32), Urticacer (25), Acanthacezx (28),

Apocynacee (22), Asclepiadaceee (20), Sapindacee (20); and among the monocotyledons Orchid- acee (80), Palmzx (28), Aracez (27), Graminacez (72). Of . ferns there are 50 genera. The forests contain more than 200 kinds of wood thought worthy of trial in the arsenal at Manila. Among them may be mentioned the teak- like molave (Vitex altissima and geniculata); the dongon (Sterculia cymbiformas) ; the ipel (Eperua decandra), greatly prized for its hardness ; the lauan or lawaan (Dipterocarpus thurvfer), a light stringy wood, often used by the Malays for their canoes ; the bolongaeta (Diospyros pilosanthera), em- ployed for fine kinds of furniture. 2 See Wallace, Geogr. Distr. of Animals, and Island Life.

3 First ed., Manila, 1837 ; second ed., 1845 ; Llanos's ed., 4 vols., 1877-80 (summary in vol. ii.),

Poa 1 i 7

Products.—Mangoes, plantains, mangosteen, jaek-fruit, medlars, and in general most of the Malayan fruits are to be met with ; the lanzon oecurs in the north, and the durian in the south, more especially in the Sulu Islands. Rice is the staple food of the natives, but, though it is extensively cultivated, the supply is uot always equal to the demand. Sweet potatoes (camote), a kind of yam (palawan), the ground-nut, and gourds are pretty generally grown, as well as occasionally peas, potatoes, and in the higher regions even wheat. The plants which are of primary commercial importance are tobacco, Manila-hemp, sugar-cane, coffee, and cocoa.

Tobacco was made a Government monopoly by Captain General José Basco y Vargas in 1781, and remained so till 1st July 1882. Though it was free to any one to grow the plant to any extent he pleased, the Governinent was the only purchascr, fixed its own price, and, paying its debts according to its own convenience, was sometimes three or four years in arrear. Besides, certain districts were bound to furnish a certain quantity of the leaf, and the pea- sant was thus often forced under severe penalties to devote himself to the tobacco erop when he would have obtained better results from something else. The best tobacco comes from the provinces of Isabela and Cagayan, and it is there that the cultivation is most systematically carried on; but the plant is also grown in other provinces of Luzon (Union, Ilocos, Lepanto, &c.) as well as in the Visayas Islands. The

average production in the ten years 1872-81 was 214,400 quintals (each 101°43 English Ib), of which 114,400 were from Isabela and Cagayan. About 25,000 quintals were sent to Spain as tribute, and another portion was sold by public auction for foreign export. For tobacco of the first class from Cagayan and Isabela the Government paid in recent years between 18 and 14 dollars per quintal, for the second class between 10 and 11, for the third between 7 and 8, and for the fourth between 6 and 7. About 280 million cigars were manufactured annually in six fac- tories employing 20,000 hands, 95 nmullions for foreign export and the rest for home consumption. Of the foreign cigars 50 millions went to Singapore, Java, the Moluccas, and India, 30 millions to China and Japan, 4 millions to Australia, and 11 millions to Europe. Hitherto tobacco-planting has been carried on (with few exceptions) only by people of small means; but since the abolition of the monopoly several companies have been started, and the whole con- dition of the industry will probably soon be greatly modified. Abaedt or MANILA-HEMP (g.v.) is best grown in the south-east of Luzon, in Samar, Leyte, and Bohol. Its cultivation requires little trouble, and the plantations, usually small, are each the property of a native family. Hand-labour and a few simple machines of native construction are all that is required in the preparation of the fibre. The abaca districts are generally very poor. Coffee was introduced, probably from Brazil, in the latter part of the 18th century, but the first plantation on a large scale was formed only in 1826. The cultivation is now pretty cxtensive. Philippine coffee appears in the European markets as Manila or Zamboanga coffee. The former, whieh comes from Batangas, Cavite, and Laguna to the amount of 70,000 piculs (a Spanish picul=140 fb) per annum, is a small but well-flavoured berry; the latter, princi- pally grown in Mindanao and Sulu, which send a good deal of their produce direct to Singapore, is in less repute, because, while the berry is larger, less care is bestowed on the gathering and sorting. Franee was at one time the only great purehaser of Philippine coffee, but about two-thirds of the crop now finds its way to Spain, Fngland, the Netherlands, and Austria. In general far too little care is given to the plantations. Sugar is extensively cultivated, and the export has increased from 1,399,434 piculs in 1871 to 3,382,664 in 1881. About a third of the whole is produced by Pampanga ; and Cavite, Laguna, Pangasinan, Buluean, and Bataan also contribute. About 1,200,000 piculs are exported from Iloilo, which collects from Panay and Negros, &c. 'The finest is

probably that from Capiz in Panay, where, as in this southern district generally, the violet-coloured cane is grown. Most of the larger plantations (some exceeding 1000 acres) are monastic property, and are leased out to Chinese half-breeds, who are said to succeed better than Europeans. The smaller are cultivated by the proprietors with the assistance of their families and relatives, and less fre- quently of bond or hired labourers. A tendency has shown itself

"since 1870 to create larger estatcs, and to import better machinery ; but it will be some time before the Philippine sugar-crop is gener- ally treated according to scientific methods. The finest Manila quality is sent to Spain, and the secondary qualities to England ; for the Iloilo sugars the United States are the principal destination.

Trade.—Before the conquest there was considerable commercial intercourse between the Philippines and China and Japan, but this, which would naturally have developed enormously if the Spanish trade between Manila and America (Navidad and Aeapulco) had been left frec, was interrupted, and at times almost completely stopped, by a series of absurd restrictions, devised in the supposed interest of the trade between Spain and Anierica. Fora long period only a single galleon, under Government supervision, was allowed to proceed yearly from Manila to Acapulco, the value of the cargo each way being bound not to exceed a certain sum. Direct trade

with Europe via the Cape was commenced in 1764; but, as if the exclusion of all exeept Spanish ships was not sufficient, a practical monopoly of this field of enterprise was in 1785 bestowed on the Royal Company of the Philippines. With the elose of the 18th century a certain amount of liberty began to be eonceded to foreign vessels ; the first English commercial house was established at Manila in 1809 ; and in 1834 the monopoly of the Royal Company expired. Manila remained the only port for foreign trade till 1842, when Cebu was also opened ; Zamboanga (Mindanao), Iloilo (Panay), Sual (Luzon), Legazpi or Albay (Luzon), and Tacloban (Leyte) are now in the same category, but only Manila, Iloilo, and Cebu have proved of real importance, as they are the only ports where foreign- bound vessels

have hitherto loaded. The following table shows how rapidly the trade of the country has recently developed.

Entered. Cleared.

Spanish. British.

Tons. |Vessels.| Tons. Vessels. | Tons. | Vessels.

Tons.

| Vessels.

341

eulil

356 445 458 – 542

235,418 216,785 251,417 303,420

317,069 |

449,937

222,613 224,442 249,649 305,168 325,695 459,145

245 241 226 314 318 328

| 391,312

The American trade increased in tlis period from 101 vessels (129,439 tons) to 164 (202,653). The value of the imports rose from $11,987,162 to $25,493,319 and of the exports from $14,837,796 to $23,450,285. In 1883 333 vessels (270,000 tons) entered at Manila alone, the Spanish numbcring 110 (93,000 tons) and the British 1382 (92,000 tons); .the exports in the same year were valued at $29,996,000.

The manufactures of the Philippines consist ofa variety of textile fabrics (pifia fibres, silk, cotton), some of great excellence and beauty, hats, mats, baskets, ropes, furniture, coarse pottery, carriages, and musical instruments.

Islands and Provinces.—The Batancs and Babuyanes, the most northerly of the Philippines, have an area of only 280 square miles, with 8700 inhabitants, who pay no tribute. The rearing of horses is the principal oceupation. The chief settlement is San José de Tbana in the island of Batan. Camiguin, the southernmost of the Babuyanes, is about 30 miles from the eoast of Luzon.

Luzon or Lucon, with an area of 40,885 square miles, is the largest island in the whole archipelago, and as the seat of the Government at Manila it is the most important. The northern trunk, so to speak, extends north and south for 340 miles. From the mountains known as Caraballos of Balar or Nueva Eeija two ranges bifurcate and stretcl: northward—the Sierra Oriental, skirt- ing the eastern coast till it ends at Cape Engafio, and the Sierra Oeeidental, keeping all the way at a distance of 25 or 30 miles from the western. Between these ranges lies the basin of the Rio Grande de Cagayan, which with its numerous affluents (Bangag, Nayon, Mayat, Pongul, Ibulao, &c., from the east ; Calao, Cabagan, Pinacananauang, and Tulay from the west) forms the largest river- system in the whole archipelago. On the western slopes of the Sierra Occidental rise two other large rivers—the Abra, which reaches the sea at Vigan or Villa Fernandina, and the Agno, which after a winding course falls into the Gulf of Lingayan. To the south-west of the mountains extends a comparatively flat region, which continues southwards to the Bay of Manila and forms one of the richest agricultural districts in the island. It is watered by the lower part of the Agno and its lower tributaries, and the Rio Grande de Pampanga with its affluents, which ultimately discharges into Manila Bay, and thus forms a convenient water-way for con- veying produce to the capital. There are also in these lowlands a number of extensive lagoons, such as that of Candava. To the west of the flat region the country rises into the considerable Cordillera de Zambales, which contains a number of peaks 5000 or 6000 feet high, and terminates northwards in a great peuinsula forming the Gulf of Lingayan and southwards in a similar promontory (Sierra de Mariveles)

which helps to form the Bay of Manila. To the east and south of this bay the general configuration is again hilly and even mountainous; but the large area of 350 square miles is occupied by the Laguna de Bay, connected with Manila by the Pasig, on which small steamers ply. The depth of this basin, though the southern side is bordered by a semicireular range of extinct volcanoes 6000 or 7000 feet high, seldom exceeds 4 fathoms. Two long eapes project from the northern side, the western one being continued by the island of Talim. From the south-east eorner of the trunk of Luzon there extends for 180 miles a very irregular peninsula formed by a series of cordilleras running in a north- westerly and south-easterly direction. The following are the pro- vinces and districts into which Luzon is divided, with their chief towns: Manila (258,274 inhabitants! in 1877), Manila; Bulacan (252,149), Bulacan; Pampanga (226,309), Bacolor ; Principe (4158),

1 The figures of the censuses may be trusted for the provinces of Luzon, &c., | but often give no idea of the actual native population of the remoter districts.

Baler; Bataan (49,999), Balanga; Zambales (94,551), Iba; Pan- gasinan (293,291), Lingayen; Union (113,370), 8. Fernando ; Ilocos Sur (201,049), Vigan ; Jlocos Norte (156,715), Laoag ; Abra (42,647), Bangued ; Cagayan (72,697), Tuguegarao ; Lsabela (38,616), Tumauini; Nueva Vizcaya (16,107), Bayombong; Nueva LHeija (123,771), San Isidro; Laguna (182,504), Santa Cruz; Cavite (132,064), Cavite ; Batangas (275,075), Batangas ; Tayabas (53,668), Tayabas ; Camarines Norte (30,661), Daet ; Camarines Sur (156,400), Nueva Caceres ; Albay (257,533), Albay.

To the south-east of Luzon lie the Visayas—Samar, Leyte, Bohol, Cebu, Negros, and Panay, with various smaller islands. :

Samar (area, 4367 square miles) is separated from the Albay penin- sula by the Strait of San Bernardino, 10 miles across. From north- west to south-east it is 120 miles long; its greatest breadth is 60 miles. The provincial capital is Catbalongan on the west coast, on a bay difficult of access. he island is watered by a number of considerable streams—the Catubig, Loquilocum or Ulut, Suribao, &c. At Nipa-Nipa on the south-west coast

there is a remarkable series of rock-caves in which the people were wont to deposit their dead in coffins.1 The narrow but extremely beautiful Strait of S. Juanico scparates Samar from the island of Leyte. The lesser islands of Buat, Parasan, &c., are included in the province of Samar (178,890 inhabitants). Leyte (2716 square miles) is 100 miles Jong and 30 miles wide. The chief town and port, Tacloban, lies at the eastern entrance of the Strait of S. Juanico. Sulphur for the Manila powder-factory is obtained from the solfatara at Monte Manacagan. According to Jagor, the east coast is rising and the west is suffering from the encroachments of the sea at Ormoc to the extent of fifty yards in six years, South-west of Leyte is Bohol (area, 1496 square miles); the chief town is Tagbilaran, at the south-west corucr. The province (226,546 inhabitants) comprises Siquijor and other islands. The important island of Cebu (2413 square miles; provincil population, 403,405) is 185 miles long from north to south, but only 30 miles broad at the most. The chief town, Cebu, is the capital of the Visayas group and is next to Iloilo in the matter of commerce. It is only along the coast that cultivation is easy, and none of the villages lie farinland. Parallel with Cebu and separated from it by a strait 15 miles wide, is Negros (4670 square miles ; population, 204,669), with large sugar planta- tions, but only one large town, Jimamaylan, and no good ports. Bacolod is the administrative centre. North-west of Negros lies Panay (4633 square miles), which is divided into the three pro- vinees of Antique (124,103), Iloilo (410, 430), and Capiz (248,244), in accordance with its physical conformation. Iloilo is the chief town and the seat of the sec of Jaro. Off the south-east coast of Panay lies the island of Guimaras (215 square miles).

In a line with the peninsula of Tayabas (Luzon) and the island of Leyte is Burias (190 square miles), which forms a province by itself (128 inhabitants), and Afasbate (1211 square miles) and Zicao (121 square miles), which, comparatively sterile and thinly peopled (17,170), are united together. West of these islands isa considcrable cluster, I. de Tablas (327 square miles), Sibuyan (159 square miles), Romblon, &c., constituting the province of Romblon (28,154). Mindoro (3934 square miles), one of the largest of the Philippines, lies only 10 miles south of Luzon, but its interior, peopled by about 30,000 Manguianes, a race of doubtful affinity, is practically unex- plored, and its cighteen “ Spanish ” villages are scattered along the coast at great distances from each other and with no proper

means of communication. The principal settlement is Calapan, on the north-east coast. Marinduque (348 square miles), included in the province of Mindoro (58,128), is a flourishing island with 48,000 inhabitants exporting various staples. South-west of Mindoro are the Calamianes (17,041 inhabitants), a great cluster of very small islands, the two largest being Busuanga (416 square miles) and Calamian ; and beyond these extends for 230 miles in a south- westerly direction the island Palawan or Paragua (4576 square miles), which nowhere exceeds a width of 30 miles and sometimes narrows to 10. It is little visited, and apart from Pucrto Princesa, the chief town (578 inhabitants), there are few Spanish posts. The Sulu or Jolé Archipelago? (948 square miles ; about 100,000 inhabitants), annexcd by Spain in 1878, consists of about 150 islands divided into the Balanguingui, Sulu, Tapul, Kecuapoussan, Tawi-Tawi, Tagbabas, and Pangutarang groups. Many of the smaller islands are uninhabited, but the larger are occupied by an industri- ous Mohammedan population. They formerly constituted, along with a portion of northern Borneo, an independent state with an hereditary sultan and a regular nobility of great political influence. The highest hill in the principal island, Buat Timantangis, or Hill of Tears, is so called because it is the last point visible to the natives as they sail away from their native land. Sulu, the present capital, lics on the north coast of the island of Sulu.? ee ee ee eee ee ee

1 For the antiquities diseovered there, see Z. fiir Ethnol., Berlin, 1869,

2 See for full deseription in Geographical Magazine, 1875, and B fe : Geo. de Madrid, 1878. © — oie ge as!

3 See the elaborate accounts of Koner in Z. der Ges, fiir Erdk., Berlin, 1867, pp. 105, 142, and of Garin in Bol. de la Soc. Geo. de Madrid, 1881, as well as the old report of Dalrymple in Oriental Repositor Y.

|

PHEti Pre Ins

The whole chain of the Sulus is practically a continuation of the south-western promontory of Mindanao or Maguindanao (37,256 square miles), the second largest island of the archipelago, contain- ing the Spanish

provinces of Surigao (56,246), Misamis (88,376), Zamboanga (14,144), Davao (1695), Cottabatd (1282). Since about 1876 much light has been thrown on this interesting island? by the Jesuit missionaries. It is remarkably mountainous, and appears to be divided by the Rangaya or Sugut Cordillera, which runs north- west and south-east, and is continued throughout the great western peninsula of Zamboanga, and, at the other extremity, bends south to form the peninsula of Butulan. Between the Rangaya range and that of the Tiruray lies the valley of the Rio Grande, a river navi- gable as far as Matingcahuan (70 or 80 miles) and connected with two great lakes, Lingauasan and Buluan, which during the rainy season merge, or nearly merge, into one. On the north side of thc Rangaya range and connected with the sea by the river Iligan is the great crater-lake of Lanao, which with its little group of secondary erater-lakes probably gave rise to the name of the island, Maguin- danao, " Land of Lakes." Towards the east and sloping northwards extend the valleys of the Cagayan, the Tagoloan, and the Agusan. This last is the largest river in the whole island. Rising in the Kinabuhan Mountains in the south-east, it pursues a very sinuous course for more than 200 miles and falls into Butuan Bay; in the lower regions it is navigable for craft of considerable burden. Mindanao is throughout well peopled, much of it being occupied by independent Mohammedan sultanates.

Administration, &c.—The Philippines are subject to a governor- general with supreme powers, assisted by (1) a "junta of authorities" instituted in 1850, and consisting of the archbishop, the commander of the forces, the admiral, the president of the supreme court, &c.; (2) a central junta of agriculture, industry, and commerce (dating from 1866); and (3) a council of administration. In the provinces and districts the chief power is in the hands of alcaldes mayores and civico-military governors. The chief magistrate of a com- mune is known as the gobernadorcillo or capitan ; the native who is responsible for the collection of the tribute of a certain group of families is the cabeca de barangay. Every Indian between the ages of 16 and 60 subject to Spain has to pay tribute to the amount of $1:17—descendants of the first Christians of Cebu, new con- verts, gobernadorcillos, &c., being exempted. Chinese are subject to special taxes; and by a law of 1883 Europeans and Spanish half-castes are required to pay a poll-tax of $2°50.

Ecclesiastically the Philippines comprise the archbishopric of Manila and the suffragan bishoprics of Nueva-Caceres, Nueva- Segovia, Cebu, and Santa Isabel de Jaro, which were all constituted by the bull of Clement VIII., 14th August 1595, with the exception of the last, whose separation from Cebu dates only from the bull of Pius IX., 27th May 1865. The Agustinos Calzados were established in the Philippines in the year 1565, the first prelate being Andres Urdaneta, and they have convents in Manila, Cebu, and Guadalupe. The Franciscans date from 1577, and have convents at Manila and San Francisco del Monte; the Dominicans (1587) at Manila and San Juan del Monte; the Recollects or Strict Franciscans (1606) at Manila, Cavite, and Cebu. The Jesuits, restored in 1852, main-

tain the missions of Mindanao and Sulu ; and they have charge in –

Manila of the municipal atheneum, the normal school for primary teachers, and an excellent meteorological observatory. There are also sisters of charity, and nuns of the royal monastery of Santa Clara, founded in 1621.

Ldwcation.— A good deal has been done for the diffusion of primary education among the natives (every pueblo is bound to have a school), but the standard is not a high one. The press is under strict civil and ecclesiastical control, and all discussion of Spanish or general European politics is forbidden. Several daily papers, however, are published at Manila, El Diario de Manila dating from 1848.

Population.—As far as is known, the original inhabitants of the Philippines were the Aetas or Negritos,® so called from their dark complexion. They still exist sporadically, though in limited numbers (perhaps 25,000), throughout most of the archipelago, the Batanes, Babuyanes, Samar, Leyte, Bohol, and Sulu excepted. Their headquarters are the northern part of Nueva Ecija, the provinces of Principe, Isabela, and Cagayan. To their presence in Isla de Negros the island owed its name. They are dwarfish (4 feet 8 inches being the average stature of the full-grown man), thin and spindle-legged, have a head like a Negro's, with flattish nose, full lips, and thick frizzled black hair, and possess an extraordinary prehensible power in their toes. They tattoo themselves, and wear very little clothing. Cigars they often smoke with the buming end between the teeth—a practice occasionally observed among the civilized Indians. They have no fixed

abodes. Honey, game, fish, wild fruits, palm-cabbages, and roots of arums, &c., constitute their food ; they sell wax to Christians and Chinese in exchange for betel and tobacco. The dog is their only domestic animal.

1. *See Montano in Bull. Soc. de Géogr., Paris, 1882, and Blumentritt's mono- graph and map in Zeitseh. der Ges. fiir Erdk., Berlin, 1884. 5 In Mindanao they appear as Mamanuas.*

,

PHI—PHI

The Negritos! seem to have been driven into the more inaceessible parts by successive invasions of those Malay tribes who in very different stages of civilization and with considerable variety of physical appearance now form the parti-coloured but fairly homo- geneous population of the islands.

First among these rank the Tagals. They are by preference inhabitants of the lowlands, and generally fix their pile-built dwell- ings near water. In Manila, Cavite, Batangas, Bulacan, Morong, Infanta, Tayabas, and Bataan they form the bulk of the population, and they also appear in Zambales, Principe, Isabela, Nueva Ecija, Mindoro, Marinduque, Polillo, &c. Their language (Tagalog) espcci- ally has made extensive encroachments on the other Philippine tongues since the conquest. The Tagal is physically well developed, has a round head, high cheek bones, flattish nose, low brow, thickish lips, and large dark eyes. The lines from the nose to the mouth are usually strongly marked. The power of smell is of extraordinary acuteness.

Before the arrival of the Spaniards they had an alphabet of their.

own (see Stanley's translation of Morga), and they still possess a body of lyrical poetry and native melodies. On the death of an adult a feast is sometimes held among the better families, but the funeral itself is conducted after the ordinary Roman Catholic fashion.

The Visayas inhabit all the islands to the south of Luzon, Mas- bate, Burias, Ticao, and Mindoro, and to the north of Borneo, Sulu, and Mindanao. In the 15th and 16th centuries they were called ""Pintados" (7.e., painted people)

by the Spaniards. ‘Though they had attained a considerable degree of civilization before the con- quest, they readily accepted Christianity and assisted in the subju- gation of the Tagals. The mountains in the interior of some of the Visaya Islands are occupied by savage Visayas, generally styled Infieles, Montesinos, or Cimarrones. The Calamianes, who inhabit the islands of that name, and the Caragus, who inhabit the east coast of Mindanao from Cape Surigao to Cape St Augustin, are usually classed with the Visayas.

The Igorrotes or Igolotes proper (for the name is by many writers very loosely applied to all the pagan mountain tribes of Luzon) inhabit the districts of Bangued, Lepanto, Tiagan, Bontoc. From their cranial eharacteristics they seem to be distinct from the Tagals and other “ Malay ” tribes, and they are said to show traccs of Chinese and even Japanese intermixture. Dirty and savage-like in person, they are none the less industrious agriculturists—laying out their fields on artificial terraces on the mountain sides, and constructing irrigation canals with remarkable skill; and they also excel as miners and workers in metal. In the matter of scxual morality they form a striking eontrast to the licentious Malays ;

_they are monogamists, allow no divorce, and inflict severe punish- ment for infidelity. Though an attempt to subdue the Igorrotes was made as early as 1660, it was not till 1829 that Spanish supremacy was acknowledged.

For details in regard to the other tribes of the Philippines—the Ilocanes, Pampangos, Pangasinanes, Ibanags or Cagayans, Tingu- ianes (Itanegas or Tingues), Apayaos, Catalanganes, Vicols, &e.— the reader is referred to Professor Ferd. Blumentritt’s monograph, Versuch einer Ethnographie der Philippinen, Gotha, 1882. No fewer than thirty languages are officially recognized. In 1865 it was estimated that Visaya was spoken by upwards of 2,000,000 persons, Tagalog by 1,300,000, Cebuano by 386,000, &c.

Chinese immigrants, in spite of massacres and administrative restrictions, form a powerful element in the Philippines; in Manila alone they numbered 30,000 in 1880, and there is hardly a pueblo of any size in which one or more of them is not to be found. The petty trade and banking are nearly all in their hands. Chinese mestizos or half-breeds (Mestizos de Sanglay, or Mestizos Chinos) are numer- ous enough to form separate communities ; in

1867 they were said to be 211,000 strong. The European element has never been numerically important—some 8000 or 9000 at the most ; but there has grown up a considerable body of Europcan mestizos. Traces of Indian sepoys are still seen in the neighbourhood of Manila, where sepoy regiments were quartered for about eighteen months after the conquest of Manila by the English. Owing partly to ep II.'s prohibition of slavery the Negro is eonspicuous by his absence.

There are no accurate statistics of the whole population of the Philippiues ; and even the number of the Spanish subjects was up till 1877 only estimated according to the number of those who paid tribute. Diaz Arenas in 1833 stated the total at 3,153,290, the

1 See Meyer, in Z. f. Hthn., vols. v., vi., vii.

ecclesiastical census of 1876 at 6,173,632, and the civil census of 1877 at 5,561,232; Moya y Jimenez, founding on certain calcula- tions by Del Pan, and admitting an annual increase of 2 per cent., brings the number up to 10,426,000 in 1882.

Hlistory.—The Philippine, or, as he called them, the St Lazarus Islands were discovered by Magellan on 12th March 1521, the first place at which he touched being Jomonjol, now Malhou, an islet in the Strait of Surigao between Samar and Dinagat. By 27th April he had lost his life on the island of Mactan off the coast of Cebu. The surrender of the Moluccas by Charles V. in 1529 tended to lessen the interest of the Spaniards in the Islas de Poniente, as they generally called their new discovery, and the Portuguese were too busy in the southern parts of the Indian Archipelago to trouble about the Islas de Oriente, as they preferred to call them. Villalo- bos, who sailed from Navidad in Mexico with five ships and 370 men in February 1543, accomplished little (though it was he who suggested the present name of the archipelago by ealling Samar Filipina); but in 1565 Legazpi founded the Spanish settlement of San Miguel at the town of Cebu, which afterwards became the Villa de Santisimo Nombre de Jesus, and in 1571 determined in large measure the future lines of conquest by fixing the capital at Manila. It is in a letter of Legazpi's in 1567 that the name Islas Filipinas appears for

the first timc. The subjugation of the islands, thanks to the exertions of the Roman Catholic missionaries and to the large powers which were placed in their hands by Philip, was effected, not of course without fighting and bloodshed, but without those appalling massacres and depopulations which characterized the conquest of South America. Contests with frontier rebellious tribes, attacks by pirates and reprisals on the part of the Spaniards, combine with volcanic eruptions, earthquakes, and tornadoes to break the comparative monotony of the subsequent history. Manila was captured by the English under Draper and Cornish in 1762, and ransomed for £1,000,000; but it was restored in 1764.

Professor Blumentritt published a Bibliographie der Philippinen in 1882; minor lists of authorities will be found in his Versuch einer Lthnographie, in Moya y Jimenez, &c. It is enough to mention Morga, Sucesos de las Islas Fili- pinas, Mexico, 1609 (English translation by Henry E. J. Stanley, Hakluyt Soe., 1868); Chirino, Relacion de las I. F., Rome, 1604; Combez, Hist. de las Islas de Mindanao, Jolé, &c., Madrid, 1667; Agustin, Conquistas de las I. Bs, Madrid, 1698; Juan de la Concepcion, Hist. general de Philipinas, Sampaloc, 1788; Zufiga, Hist. de Philipinas, Sampaloe, 1803 (English partial translation by John Maver, 1814); Comyn, Estado de lus I. F. en 1810, Madrid, 1820 (new edition, 1877); Mas, Informe sobre el Estado de las I. F. en 1842, Madrid, 1843; Mallat, Les Philippines, Paris, 1846; Diaz Arenas, Memorias hist. y estad., Manila, 1850; Buzeta and Bravo, Diccionario estad., &c., de las I. F., Madrid, 1850; La Gironniére, Vingt ans aux Philippines, 1853 ; Semper, Die Philippinen u. thre Bewohner, Wiirzburg, 1869 ; Ferrando, Hist. de los PP. Dominicanos en las I, F., &¢., Madrid, 1870; Jagor, Reisen in den Philippinen, Berlin, 1873; Scheidnagel, Las Colonias Espanolas de Asia, Madrid, 1880 ; Cafiamaque, Las Islas Filipinas, Madrid, 1880; Cavada, Guia de Filipinas, 1881; Francisco Javier de Moya y Jimenez, Las I. F. en 1882, Madrid, 1883. (HAP W:)

PHILIPPOPOLIS, Finipporet, and (Turkish) Feuis, a city of Thracia, previous to 1878 the chief town of a sanjak in the Turkish vilayet of Adrianople, and now the capital of the independent province of Eastern Roumelia and the chief town of one of the six departments, lies 112 miles west-north-west of Adrianople by rail and thus 309 miles from

Constantinople, mainly on the right bank of the Maritza (the ancient Hebrus). The railway runs farther up the river to Sarambey and Simcina, but has no direct connexion with the other railway systenis of Europe. High- ways, however, from Bulgaria, Servia, and Macedonia meet at Philippopolis, which, besides being the centre of an ex- tensive trade, carries on considerable manufactures of silk, cotton, and leather. The city is built partly on a striking group of granite eminences (whence the old Roman name, Trimontium) and partly on the low grounds along the river, which in the outskirts are occupied by rice-fields. On the left side of the river and connected with the city by a long bridge is the suburb of Karshiaka. The popula- tion, estimated at 24,000 to 28,000, consists of Bulgarians, and, in smaller proportions, of Greeks, Turks, Armenians, Jews, and Gipsies. A Greek archbishop has his see in the city, and among the public buildings are a number of Greek churches and a Greek lyceum (1868).

Eumolpia, a Thracian town, was captured by Philip of Macedon and made one of his frontier posts ; and, though the soldiers seem to have given it the title of " Poneropolis," or City of Hardships, and it was not long afterwards recovered by the Thracians, the name of Philip's City has stuck to it ever since. Under the Romans Philippopolis or Trimontium became the eapital of Thracia ; and, even after its destruction by the Goths, when 100,000 persons are said to have been slain, it continued to bea flourishing city till it was again laid in ruins by Joannes Romaioctonus, the Bulgarian king. It passed under Turkish rule in 1360; in 1818 it was

conflagration. During the war of 1877-78 the city was occupied by the Russians.

PHILIPPSBURG, a small town of the grand-duchy of Baden, situated on a sluggish arm of the Rhine, 15 miles to the north of Carlsruhe, was formerly an important fortress of the German empire, and played a somewhat conspicuous part in the wars of the 17th century. It originally belonged to the ecclesiastical principality of Spires, and was named Udenheim, but in

1618 it was forti- fied and re-christened by Bishop Philip von Sotern. At the peace of Westphalia (1648) the French remained in military possession of Philippsburg, but in 1679 it was restored to Germany, and though again captured by the French in 1688 it was once more restored in 1697. In 1734 the dilapidated fortress fell an easy prey to the French under Marshal Berwick, who, however, lost his life beneath its walls, and in 1800 the works were razed. The town was assigned to Baden in 1803. The population in 1880 was 2549.

PHILIPS, Ampross (1671-1749), English man of letters, was born of a good Leicester family in 1671. While at St John's College, Cambridge, he gave evidence of literary taste and skill, in verses forming part of a memorial tribute from the university on the death of Queen Mary. Going to London on the completion of his studies, Philips speedily became "one of the wits at Button's," and thereby a friend of Steele and Addison. He began to write for Tonson, working at such heterogeneous subjects as trans- lated "Persian Tales" and a summary of Hacket's Life of Archbishop Williams. The first product really character- istic of the author, after his settlement in London, is the series of Pastorals which opened the sixth volume of Tonson's Miscellanies (1709). Pope's Pastorals, curiously enough, closed the same volume, and the emphatic pre- ference expressed in the Guardian, in 1713, for Philips's pastoral style over all other successors to Spenser gave rise to Pope's trenchant ironical paper in No. 40 of the same periodical. The breach between these two wits speedily widened, and Philips was at length concerned in the great quarrel between Pope and Addison. He had come to bea man of some note both for literary work and political acti- vity. The Spectator had loaded with praises the drama of The Distress'd Mother, which Philips adapted from Racine's Andromaque and brought upon the stage in 1712, and he was thus a recognized member of Addison's following. There is some doubt as to the particular part he played in the notorious contest of the two chiefs, but, whether he threatened to beat Pope or not (with the rod which he is said to have hung up at Button's for that purpose), there is ample evidence to show that both Pope and _ his friends had a bitter feeling towards him. Not only is he honoured with two separate lines in the Dunciad, but he figures for illustrative purposes in Martinus Scriblerus, and he receives considerable attention in the letters of both Pope and Swift. The latter found occasion for special allusion to Philips

during Philips's stay in Ireland, whither he had gone as secretary to Archbishop Boulter. He had done good work in the Mreethinker (1711) along with Boulter, whose services to the Government in that paper gained him preferment from his position as clergyman in South- wark, first to the bishopric of Bristol and then to the primacy of Ireland. Up to this time Philips had shown disinterested zeal in the Hanoverian cause, though he had received no greater reward than the positions of justice of peace and commissioner of the lottery (1717). He had also written some of his best epistles, while in 1722 he published two more -dramatic works— The Briton and Humphry, Duke of Gloucester—neither of which has had the fortune, like their predecessor, to be immortalized by

destroyed by an earthquake ; and in 1846 it suffered from a severe | romantic criticism.

It was, no doubt, a grateful change for Philips to go to Ireland under the patronage of Arch- bishop Boulter, and to represent, through the same in- fluence, the county of Armagh in the Irish Parliament, while his sense of his own political worth must have been flattered when he became secretary to the lord chancellor in 1726, and in 1733 judge of the prerogative court. After the archbishop's death he by and by returned to London, and dedicated a collected edition of his works to the duke of Newcastle. He died in 1749,

While it can hardly be said that Philips's Pastorals show poetic quality of a high order, they must be commended—and perhaps the third in particular—for ease and fluency and rhetorical vigour. In these features they are not surpassed by the pastorals in The Shepherd's Week, which Gay wrote, at Pope's instigation, as a burlesque on Philips's work; but the grasp of rustie simplicity and the exquisite play of fancy possessed by Gay are manifest advantages in his performance. The six epistles evince dexterous management of the heroic couplet, an energetic directness of pur- pose, and (particularly the " winter piece" addressed to the earl of Dorset) a noticeable appreciation of natural beauty. Similar felicitous diction and sympathetic observation, together with a determined bias towards weakness of sentiment, are characteristic of the poet's odes, some of which—

addressed to children—gave oceasion for various shafts from both Swift and Pope, as well as for the nickname of " Namby-Pamby," coined by Henry Carey as a descriptive epithet for Philips. The epigrams, and the translations from Pindar, Anacreon, and Sappho, need merely be named as completing the list of the author's works.

See Johnson's Lives of the Poeis; Spence's Anecdotes; the Spectator; the

Works (especially the correspondence) of Pope and Swift; Stephen's Pope and Courthope's Addison, in English Men of Letters.

PHILIPS, Joun (1676-1708), English man of letters, son of Dr Stephen Philips, archdeacon of Salop, was born at Bampton in Oxfordshire in 1676. After receiving private education at home, he went to Winchester School, and in due course became a student of Christ Church, Oxford. At school he showed special aptitude for exact scholarship, and at the university, under Dean Aldrich, he became one of the most remarkable men of his time. He was an ardent and successful student of the ancient classics, and took special pleasure in making himself thoroughly familiar with Virgil. At the same time he was diligent in his scientific pursuits preparatory to the medical profession he intended to follow, and, although the botany and other branches he made himself familiar with were never actually turned to account in the business of life, his acquired knowledge gave him material' for literary purposes. But, over and above these studies, Philips was a careful and critical reader of the English poets that fell in with his tastes, and devoted much time to Chaucer, Spenser, and Milton. When he began to write, the influence of the two former told to some extent on his diction, and he was so enamoured of the strenuous movement and the resonant harmonies of Milton's blank verse that he adapted the form of all his original English writings to that supreme model. Were it for nothing else, John Philips will be remembered as the first to have a genuine literary appreciation of Milton. He was well known in his college for scholarship, taste, and literary resource long before publishing any of his writings, but the appearance of The Splendid Shilling, about the year 1703, at once brought him under the favourable notice of critics and readers of poetry. The Zatler (No. 250) hailed the poet as the writer of "the best burlesque poem in the British language," nor will the modern reader care to detract

much from this verdict, even granting that the model and the imitation, mutually constituting a great revelation to the literary dictators of the period, would cause them considerable surprise. Philips in this poem showed the dexterous ease that comes of long study and perfect familiarity, combined with fertility of resource and humorous ingenuity of application. One important result of the work was the interested notice of the earl of Oxford and Lord Bolingbroke. The poet went to London, and

was asked to celebrate the victory of Blenheim, which he did in his favourite manner, but without conspicuous suc- cess. The Blenheim, published in 1705, lacks, of course, the element of burlesque, and it is difficult to resist the impression that the poet must have felt himself restrained and hampered by the stern necessity of being seriously sublime. A year later (1706) Philips published, in two books, his didactic poem entitled C'yder, which is his most ambitious work and is written in imitation of Virgil's Georgics. While there is no denying the poet's admirable familiarity with his original, or his skilful employment of the Miltonic blank verse, or the sustained energy and grace of some of the episodes in the second part, or even his intimate knowledge of the minute details connected with the management of fruit, it cannot be said that the work is a notable contribution to English poetry. It is streaked with genius, but, like the Latin Ode to St John (and, for that matter, the author's other works as well), it is little more than the expression of a poetical scholar feeling his way outwards into life. Philips never got beyond the enjoyment of his pipe and his study, both of which figure prominently in all his poems. He was medi- tating a still further work on the Last Day, when he was cut off by consumption, in 1708, at the early age of thirty- two. His friend Edmund Smith, himself a distinguished scholar and poet, wrote an elegy on the occasion, which Johnson says "justice must place among the best elegies which our language can show." Philips was buried at Hereford, and a monument to his memory, with an in- scription from the pen of Atterbury, was erected between those of Chaucer and Drayton in Westminster Abbey.

See Johnson's Lives of the Poets, including Smith's Prefatory Dis- course ; Sewell's Life of Mr John Philips; the Tatler, &c.

PHILIPPUS, M. Juxrus, Roman emperor from 244 to 249 a.p., often called "' Philip the Arab," was a native of Bostra or the Trachonitis, who, exchanging the predatory life of the Arabs who hung on the desert borders of the empire for Roman military service, rose to be preetorian pre- fect in the Persian campaign of Gordian IIL., and, inspiring the soldiers to mutiny and to slay the young emperor, was raised by them to the purple (244). Of his reign little is known except that he celebrated the secular games with great pomp in 248. A rebellion broke out among the legions of Mcesia, and Decius, who was sent to quell it, was forced by the troops to put himself at their head. Philip was defeated near Verona and perished in or after the battle, leaving a very evil reputation. Eusebius knows a current opinion that Philip was a Christian; Jerome and later writers state this as a fact. But at best his Christianity must have been merely nominal and had no effect on his life or reign. With Philip perished his son and colleague, then a boy of twelve, who is known as Philippus IT.

PHILISTINES (D'nv 5), the name of a people which, in the latter part of the age of the Judges and up to the time of David, disputed the sovereignty of Canaan with the Israelites (see Israrz, vol. xiii. p. 402 sg.). The Philistine country (nye, Palestina ; the authorized version still uses the word in this its original sense as equivalent to Philistia) embraced the rich lowlands on the Mediter- ranean coast (the Shephelah) from somewhere near Joppa to the Egyptian desert south of Gaza, and was divided between five chief cities, Ashdod or Azorus (g.v.), GAZA (q.v.), and Askelon (Ashkelon, AscaLon, g.v.) on or near the coast, and Garu (q.v.) and Exron (q.v.) inland. The five cities, of all of which except Gath the sites are known,! formed a confederation under five "lords" (Seranim).?

1 Their modern names are Azdtd, Ghazza, 'Askalan, 'Akir.

2 The word seren, pl. seranim, means an axle, and seems to be ap- plied metaphorically like the Arabic Koto.

FNS)

Ashdod was probably the foremost city of the confedera- tion in the time of Philistine supremacy ; for it heads the list in 1 Sam. vi. 17, and it was to the temple of Dagon in Ashdod that the ark was brought after the battle of

Aphek or Ebenezer (1 Sam. v. 1). Hebrew tradition recognizes the Philistines as immigrants into Canaan with- in historical times, like the Israelites and the Arameans (Amos ix. 7), but unlike the Canaanites. They came, according to Amos, from Caphtor (comp. Jer. xlvii. 4), and Deut. 1. 23 relates that the Caphtorim from Caphtor dis- placed an earlier race, the 'Avvim, who were not city- dwellers like the Canaanites, but lived in scattered villages. The very name of Philistines probably comes from a Semitic root meaning "to wander"; the Septuagint calls them 'AAAddvaAo., "aliens." The date of their immigration cannot be determined with certainty.2 We are scarcely en- titled to take Gen. xxi., xxvi., as proving that the inhabit- ants-of Gerar in patriarchal times were identical with the later Philistines, and the other references in the Penta- teuch and Joshua are equally inconclusive. The first real sign of the presence of the Philistines is when the Danites, who in the time of Deborah were seated on the sea-coast (Judges v. 17), were compelled—obviously by the pressure of a new enemy—to seek another home far north at the base of Mount Hermon (Judges xviii.). This marks the commencement of the period of Philistine aggression, when the foreigners penetrated into the heart of the Israelite country, broke up the old hegemony of Ephraim at the battle of Ebenezer, and again at the battle of Mount Gilboa destroyed the first attempt at a kingdom of all Israel. The highest power of the Philistines was after the death of Saul, when David, who still held Ziklag, and so was still the vassal of Gath, reigned in Hebron, and the house of Saul was driven across the Jordan. But these successes were mainly due to want of union and discipline in Israel, and when David had united the tribes under a new sceptre the Philistines were soon humbled. After the division of the kingdom the house of Ephraim appears to have laid claim to the suzerainty over Philistia, for we twice read of a siege of the border fortress of Gibbethon by the northern Israelites (1 Kings xv. 27, xvi. 15); but the Philistines, though now put on the defen- sive, were able to maintain their independence. Philistia was never part of the land of Israel (2 Kings 1. 3, vill. 2 ; Amos vi. 2), and its relations with the Hebrews were embittered by the slave trade, for which the merchants of Gaza carried on forays among the Israelite villages (Amos i. 6). On the other hand, the trading relations between Gaza and Edom (Amos, wt sup.) probably imply that in the 8th century Judah, which lay between the two, was open to Philistine commerce (comp. Isa. i. 6); Judah under Uzziah had reopened the Red Sea trade, of which the

Philistine ports were the natural outlet. Soon, how- ever, all the Palestinian states fell under the great empire of Assyria, and Tiglath-Pileser, in 734 B.c., subdued the Philistines as far as Gaza. But the spirit of the race was not easily broken; they were constantly engaged in intrigues with Egypt, and had a share in every conspiracy and revolt against the great king. Of two of these revolts, first against Sargon in 711, and afterwards against Sennacherib on Sargon's death (705), a memorial is preserved in Isa. xx., xiv. 29 sg. In the latter revolt Hezekiah of Judah was also engaged ; it was to him that*

3 For some Egyptian evidence, see PHGENICIA.

4 The Chronicler, who represents the relations of Judah and Philistia as generally unfriendly, makes Uzziah subdue the latter country as wellas Edom, assuming perhaps that he was the fulfiller of the pro- phecy in Amos i., in which, however, it is the Assyrians who are really pointed to as the ministers of divine justice. The old history has no trace of pretensions of Judah to sovereignty in Philistia till the time of Hezekiah. Comp. Wellhausen, Prolegomena, p. 217.

Padi, kinglet of Ekron and a partisan of Assyria, was delivered for custody by the rebels. In 701 Sennacherib marched westward and reduced the rebel cities of Ascalon and Ekron ; kinglets faithful to his cause were established in both places, and the territories of these Philistine princes and of those of Gaza and Ashdod were enlarged at the cost of Judah. The Philistine war of Hezekiah spoken of in 2 Kings xviii. 8 was probably undertaken to regain the lost territory after the disaster of Sennacherib's army. Under Esarhaddon and Assurbanipal the inscrip- tions still speak of the cities of Philistia as governed by kinglets tributary to Assyria ; and, as the power of Nineveh declined and the monarchs of Egypt began to form plans of aggrandizement in Syria, the Philistine fortresses were the first that opposed their advance. According to Herodotus (ii. 157) Psammetichus besieged Ashdod for twenty-nine years, from which we may at least conclude that the Shephelah was the scene of a protracted conflict between the two great powers. The prophecy of Zeph- aniah ii. 4 sg. has by some been held to point to these events; but most recent writers prefer to connect

it with the invasion of the Scythians, who in the reign of Psammetichus ravaged the Phcenician. coast and plundered the famous temple of Aphrodite Urania (Astarte) at Ascalon (Herod., i, 105). The next king of Egypt, Necho, also made war in the Philistine country and smote Gaza (Jer. xlvii.), an event recorded also by Herodotus, who gives to Gaza (Ghazzat, Assyrian Khaziti) the name of Cadytis (Herod., ii. 159, comp. iii. 5).!_ Amidst all these calamities Philistia, like the other countries of Syria in the Assyrio-Babylonian period, must have lost great part of its old individuality. The Philistine towns continued to be important, and Gaza in particular became a great seat of international commerce —Herodotus estimates Cadytis as being almost as large as Sardis—but we can hardly speak further of a Philistine people. After the captivity Nehemiah speaks not of Philis- tines but of Ashdodites (iv. 7), speaking an " Ashdodite " dialect (xiii. 24), just as Strabo regards the Jews, the Idumeans, the Gazans, and the Ashdodites as four cognate peoples having the common characteristic of combining agriculture with commerce. In southern Philistia at least the population was modified by Arabian immigration. In the time of Cambyses the Arabs touched the sea immedi- ately south of Gaza (Herod., iii. 5), and this perhaps had something to do with the fact that Gaza was the only Syrian city that resisted Cyrus, just as the Persian and Arab garrison of Gaza offered to Alexander the only re- sistance that he found on his march from Tyre to Egypt. We have still to consider the much-vexed question of the origin of the Philistines. That they were a Semitic or at least a thoroughly Semitized people can now hardly be made matter of dispute. The short list of proper names derived from the Bible has been considerably enlarged from the Assyrian monuments, and suffices to prove that before as after the captivity their language was only dialectically different from that of the Israelites. The religion too was Semitic, and of that older type when the gods were not yet reduced to mere astral powers, but had individual types and special relations to certain animals. Thus Ekron had its local "Fly-Baal" (Baal-Zebub, 2 Kings i, 2 sq.), the fame of whose oracle in the 9th century B.c. extended as faras Samaria. The more famous Dagon, who had temples at Ashdod (1 Sam. v.; 1 Mae. x. 83) and Gaza (Judges xvi. 21 sq.), seems to have been more than a mere local deity ; there was a place called Beth-Dagon in Judea (Josh. xv. 41) and another on the borders of Asher (Josh. xix. 27). The name Dagon seems to come from 37, "fishy amd

1 The reference to Necho and Gaza is not in the Septuagint of Jer. xlvii. 1, and it would be more natural to think of Chaldea as the enemy from the north whom Jeremiah describes.

PH ies sain Es

that his idol was half-man half-fish is pretty clear from 1 Sam. v. 4, where, however, the text is hardly sound, and we ought probably to read, omitting one of two consecutive nuns, "only his fish-part was left to him."

There are two other views about Dagon. (1) Philo Byblius (Miiller, Fr, Hist. Gree., iii. 567 sg.) makes Dagon the inventor of corn and the plough, whence he was called Zeds 'Apérpios. This implies an etymology of a very improbable kind from the Hebrew and Phe- nician {1'T, "corn." But it is probable that, at least in later times, Dagon had in place of, or in addition to, his old character that of the god who presided over agriculture; for in the last days of paganism, as we learn from Marcus Diaconus in the Life of Porphyry of Gaza (§ 19), the great god of Gaza, now known as Marna (our Lord), was regarded as the god of rains and invoked against famine. That Marna was lineally descended from Dagon is probable in every way, and it is therefore interesting to note that he gave oracles, that he had a circular temple, where he was sometimes worshipped by human sacrifices, that there were wells in the sacred circuit, and that there was also a place of adoration to him situated, in old Semitic fashion, outside the town. Certain "marmora" in the temple, which might not be approached, especially by women, may' perhaps be connected with the threshold which the priests of Dagon would not touch with their feet (1 Sam. v. 5; Zeph. 1.9); (2) Schrader (K. A. 7., 2d ed., p. 181 sg.) identifies Dagon with the Assyrian god Dakan, and believes that the word is Accadian. We are here in a region of pure conjecture ; the attributcs of Dakan are unknown, save only that Berosus speaks of an Assyrian merman- god 'Q6dxw».

To the male god Dagon answers in the Bible the female deity Ashtoreth, whose temple spoken of in 1 Sam. xxxi. 10 is probably the ancient temple at Ascalon, which Herodotus regarded as the oldest seat of the worship of Aphrodite Urania. This Ashtoreth is the Derketo of Diodorus (ii, 4) and Lucian (De Dea Syr., 14), the Atargatis of Xanthus (fr. Hist. Grec., i. 155), whose sacred enclosure and pool were near Ascalon, and whose image had

a human head, but was continued in the form of a fish.2 The association of Ashtoreth with sacred pools and fish was common in Syria, and the sacred doves of Ascalon mentioned by Philo (cd. Mangey, ii. 646) belong to the same worship.' Of the details of Philistine religion in the Biblical period we know almost nothing. Their gods were carried into battle (2 Sam. v. 21), a usage found among other Semites ; their skill in divination is alluded to in Isa. ii. 6, and we have already seen that oracles were a feature in their shrines. The whole record shows a religion characteristically Semitic in type ; and it is also noteworthy that at the earliest date when the Philistines appear in history the great sanctuaries are all on the coast with deities of a marine type. This raises a presumption that the Philistines came from over the sea, and that Caphtor, their original home, was an island or maritime country.° In point of fact the Philistines must have entered their later seats either by sea or from the desert between Canaan and Egypt. In the latter case they come from Egypt, for a city-building people, which supplanted a race of villagers, cannot have been a tribe of Arabs. And so the theories about the origin of the Philistines reduce themselves to two, one class of writers holding that Caphtor must be sought across the Mediterranean, another placing it in the

- *The name Atargatis is a later compound, of which the first half is the Aramaic form of Ashtar ('Attar), and the second is NM.*

3 The Aphrodite of Gaza in Marcus, Vit. Porph., § 59, is rather Aphrodite Pandemos. She gave oracles by dreams in matters relating to marriage.

4 Schrader thinks that traces of Jehovah (Iahveh) worship among the Philistines are to be found in the Philistine names Padi, Mitinti, Sidké, &c., on the Assyrian inscriptions (see also Friedrich Delitzsch, Wo lag das Paradies? p.162sq.). It is probable enough that Sidk4 at least is a shortened form of a name in which the second element was that of a god ; but such Pheenician names as Kalba (side by side with Kalbélim), Hanno, Abda or Bodo, &c., show that the shortening does not in the least imply that the divine name was Iahveh.

° The expression "isle " (or coastland, Hebrew '®) of Caphtor in Jer. xlvii. is generally cited as conclusive to this effect ; but in the context it is by no means clear that it means anything more than the coastland of Philistia.

Delta. Ancient tradition gives no help ; for it takes Caphtor to be Cappadocia, led, it would seem, merely by a super- ficial similarity of the names. Of the two main theories the former is that which has recently found most support, and it has a definite point of attachment in the fact that the Philistines, or a part of them, are also called in the Bible Cherethites (1 Sam. xxx. 14; Ezek. xxv. 16; Zeph. ii. 5), while David's Philistine guards are in like manner called the Cherethites and Pelethites (2 Sam. viii. 18, xv. 18, &.). Cherethites (Krétim) can hardly be anything but Cretans, as the LXX. actually renders it in Ezekiel and Zephaniah, and Caphtor would thus be the island of Crete, —an identification which seems to satisfy the conditions of a reasonable hypothesis. For, though the points of contact between Crete or Cretan religion and the Philistine coast which have been sought in Greek and Latin writers (chiefly in Steph. Byzant., s.v. " Gaza") are very shadowy, there is no doubt that Crete had an early connexion with Pheenicia and received many Semitic inhabitants and a Semitic civilization before the Greeks gradually asserted themselves in the Augean and forced back the tide of Semitic influence (for details, see the article PHanicta). These facts give a reasonable explanation of the settlement on the Philistine coast within historical times of a mari- time people, cognate to the Pheenicians in so many points and yet having certain distinct characters, such as would naturally be produced in a place like Crete by the grafting of a Semitic stock and culture on ruder races not Semitic (the Eteocretans).1 The opposite view, which places Caphtor in the Delta, rests on more complicated but less satisfactory arguments. There were certainly many Semites in the Delta of Egypt, and so long as the history of the Hyksos (who were no doubt Semites) remains in its present obscurity it is always possible to suppose that their ex- pulsion from Egypt explains the settlement of the Philis- tines in Canaan. But it is very questionable if the dates will fit; the name Caphtor is connected with the Delta by no historical testimony, but only by elaborate hypotheses, as that Caphtor may mean in Egyptian Great Pheenicia, and that this again may have been a name for the Egyptian coast, where there was a large Semitic population ;? and the characteristic Philistine peculiarity of uncircumcision, intelligible enough on the Cretan theory, is scarcely con- ceivable in a race which had been long settled in Egypt. The mainstay of the Egyptian hypothesis is found in Gen. x. 13, 14,

—-verses which belong to the older part of the chapter (see Noax), and reckon in the very obscure list of descendants of Mizraim or Egypt "Casluhim (whence came forth Philistim) and Caphtorim." This account places Caphtorim in some relation to Egypt, but not necessarily in a very close relation, for the Ludim, who are also made descendants of Egypt, are scarcely different from Lud or Lydia, which appears at ver. 22, in the later part of the chapter, in another connexion. But further, if the text as it stands is sound, it gives a new account of the origin of the Philistines, which can be reconciled with the other Biblical evidence only by making Casluhim a halting-place of the Philistines on their way from Caphtor to Canaan. Accordingly the advocates of the Egyptian theory propose to identify Casluhim with the arid district of Mount Casius on the coast of the Egyptian desert. But this is false etymology. Mount Casius is named from the temple of Jupiter Casius, that is, the well-known Semitic

1 In 2 Sam. xx. 23, Ktib, and 2 Kings xi. 4, 19, the foreign mercenaries are called not Krethim but Kari, perhaps Carians. The Carian seamen and pirates had also a strong Semitic strain, and were at bottom the same race with the Eteocretans.

2 So Ebers, Aegypten und die Biicher Mosis, where the theory is supported by a very long and complex argument. Another etymology in support of the theory is given by Dietrich in Merz's Archiv, i. 318 sq.

God Ysp,? whose name as written in Semitic letters has no possible affinity to Casluhim. And in truth the statement that the Philistines came from Casluhim, presented with- out a hint as to their connexion with Caphtorim, which is mentioned immediately afterwards, lies under strong suspicion of being a gloss, originally set on the margin by a copyist who meant it to refer to Caphtorim. In this case the original author will have meant Caphtorim to denote, or at least include, the Philistines (who, as they are not Canaanites, and had close relations with Egypt in historical times, fall readily enough under the Egyptian group), and tells us nothing about the origin of the race. Literature. —UHitzig, Urgeschichte . . . der Philistder, 1845, where the now untenable hypothesis of a Pelasgic origin of the Philistines is maintained ; Ewald, Gesch. des V. Isracl, i. 848 sq.; and in*

general the books on Hebrew history and commentaries on Gen. x. and on Amos. A useful monograph is Stark's Gaza wnd die philistdische Kiiste, Jena, 1852. For the Assyrian evidence see especially Schrader, Keilinschriften und Altes Testament, 2d ed., Giessen, 1883. (W. B.S.)

PHILLIP, Jon (1817-1867), subject and portrait painter, was born at Aberdeen, Scotland, on 19th April 1817. His father, an old soldier, was in humble circum- stances, and the son became an errand-boy to a tinsmith of the place, and was then apprenticed to a painter and glazier. Meanwhile he was employing in the pursuit of art all the time he could spare from his daily duties, and, having received some technical instruction from a local artist named William Mercer, he began, at the age of about fifteen, to paint portraits. In 1834 he was enabled to make a very brief visit to London, where he studied with delighted interest in the Royal Academy Exhibition and the National Gallery. At this time, or shortly after- wards, he became assistant to James Forbes, an Aberdeen portrait-painter, under whose tuition he made considerable progress. Previously, however, he had gained a valuable patron. Having been sent to repair a window in the house of Major P. L. Gordon, his interest in the works of art which hung on the walls attracted the attention of their owner. He brought the young artist under the notice of Lord Panmure, who bought several of his productions, and in 1836 sent the lad to London, pro- mising to bear the cost of his art-education. At first Phillip was placed under T. M. Joy, but he soon entered the schools of the Royal Academy, where he worked dili- gently, but with no exceptional promise or success, for two years. In 1839 he figured for the first time in the Royal Academy Exhibition with a portrait and a landscape, and in the following year he was represented by a more ambitious figure-picture of Tasso in Disguise relating his Persecutions to his Sister. For the next ten years he supported himself mainly by portraiture and by painting subjects of national incident, such as Presbyterian Catechizing, Baptism in Scotland, and the Spaewife. His productions of this period, as well as his earlier subject- pictures, are reminiscent of the practice and methods of Wilkie and the Scottish genre-painters of his time, often possessing considerable grace of form, executed in a thin delicate style of painting, inclining to brownish tones of colour, and with the more powerful pigments introduced cautiously and with reserve The Letter-writer of Seville, shown in the Royal Academy of 1854, marks a distinct change of both style and subject. Three years previously the artist's health had shown signs of

delicacy, and his medical advisers had recommended a residence in a warmer climate. Spain was selected, and a fresh potency came to his art as well as to his physical frame. He was brought face to face for the first time with the brilliant sunshine and the splendid colour of the South, and it was in coping 3 See De Vogué, Syrie Centrale: Inscr. Sem., p. 103 sq.

4 So Olshausen, and Budde, Biblische Urgeschichte, p. 331, note. A mere transposition (so Ewald, Tuch, &c.) is much less probable.

with these that he first manifested his artistic individuality and finally displayed his full powers. In the Letter- writer, commissioned by the Queen at the suggestion of Sir Edwin Landseer, who had been greatly impressed by some of Phillip's Spanish sketches, we see the change of method in its initial stages rather than in its complete triumph. 'The artist is struggling with new difficulties in. the portrayal of unwonted splendours of colour and light, the draperies are somewhat crude and textureless, and the picture may justly be charged with a want of complete harmony and of a due sense of the finer gradations of nature. In 1857 Phillip was elected an associate of the Royal Academy, and in 1859 a full member. In 1855 and in 1860 other two visits to Spain were made, and in each case the painter returned with fresh materials to be embodied with increasing power and subtlety in the long series of works with which his name is exclusively associated in the popular mind, and which has won for him the title of "Spanish Phillip." His highest point of execution is probably reached in the La Gloria of 1864 and a smaller single-figure painting of the same period entitled El Cigarillo. These Spanish subjects were varied in 1860 by a rendering of the Marriage of the Princess Royal with the Crown Prince of Germany, executed by command of the Queen, and in 1863 by a picture of the House of Commons, subjects presenting extreme artistic difficulties, but treated with much skill and dexterity. During his last visit to Spain Phillip occupied himself in a.careful study of the art of Velazquez, and the copies which he made after that 'artist fetched large prices after his death, examples having been secured by the Royal and the Royal Scottish Academies, The year before his death he visited Italy and devoted much attention to the works of Titian. The results of this study of the old masters are visible in such of Phillip's works

as La Loteria Nacional, left uncompleted at his death. This and several other of his later works exhibit symptoms of a fresh change of method, and show signs that his art was again about to take a fresh departure. During this period he resided much in the Highlands, and seemed to be returning to his first love for Scottish subjects, painting several national scenes, and planning others that were never completed. His health had been always delicate, and his strength had been taxed by severe domestic affliction and by the very exceptional rapidity and quantity of his artistic production. In the end of 1866 his excessive application to work for the next year's exhibition induced an attack of bilious

fever, which was succeeded by paralysis, and the genial.

and talented artist expired at London on 27th February

1867 at the age of fifty.

In execution Phillip was singularly direct, forcible, and rapid. He was a noble colourist, a painter in the first and simplest sense of the word, concerning himself mainly with the visible and sen- suous beauties of his subjects, their purely artistic problems of colour, tone, lighting, and texture. His art dealt with the appear- ances of things, a sufficiently legitimate sphere for the painter, and was seldom permeated with any very deep human or dramatic in- terest. His works were collected in the International Exhibition of 1873, and many of them have been excellently reproduced by the engravings of T. Oldham Barlow. In addition to the paintings which we have already specified the following are among tle more important: —Life among the Gipsies of Seville (1853), El Paseo (1855), Collection of the Offertory in a Scotch Kirk (1855), a Gipsy Water-carrier in Seville (1855), the Prayer of Faith shall save the Sick (1856), the Dying Contrabandist (1856), the Prison Window (1857), a Huff (1859), Early Career of Murillo (1865), a Chat round the Brasero (1866).

PHILLIPS, Joun (1800-1874), one of the foremost of the early geologists of England, was born 25th December 1800 at Marden in Wiltshire. His father belonged to an old Welsh family, but settled in England as an officer of excise and married the sister of William Smith, the "Father of English Geology." Both parents dying when

he was a child, Phillips passed into the care of his uncle, Before his tenth year he had attended four schools, until he entered the old school at Holt Spa, Wiltshire, where he remained for five years, gaining among other acquisitions. that taste for classical learning which remained one of his distinguishing traits to the end. From school he went to the house of the Rev. B. Richardson, an accomplished naturalist, in whose charge he remained a year, and from whom he obtained not only much knowledge but the strong bent towards the study of nature which thenceforth became the master-pursuit of his life. His uncle, "Strata Smith," at that time lived in London, where he exercised the profession of a civil and mining engineer, though a very large part of his time and earnings was given to the preparation of those maps of England and the English counties on which his fame now rests. In his zeal for geological pursuits Smith often neglected his proper pro- fessional work, until, as his nephew said, "he had thrown into the gulf of the Strata all his patrimony and all his little gains." Eventually he gave up his London house and wandered about the country, as the requirements of his maps led him. From the time that young Phillips joined his uncle in London he remained constantly with him, sharing in every piece of professional work, in the preparation of every book and map, and in every tour for fresh geological information. A youth so trained could not fail to become a geologist. In the spring of 1824 Smith went to York' to deliver a course of lectures on geology, and his nephew accompanied him. This was the starting-point in Phillips's career. His extensive knowledge of natural science and especially of fossils was now turned to account. He accepted engagements in the principal Yorkshire towns to arrange their museums and give courses of lectures on the collections contained therein. York became his residence, where he obtained the situation of keeper of the Yorkshire Museum and secretary of the Yorkshire Philosophical Society. From that centre he ex- tended his operations to other towns beyond the county ; and in 1831 he included University College, London, in the sphere of his activity. In that year the British Association for the Advancement of Science was founded at York, and Phillips was one of the active minds who organized its machinery. He became the assistant general secretary, a post of great labour and proportionate use- fulness, which he held for upwards of thirty years. In 1834 he accepted the professorship of geology at King's

College, London, but retained his post at York, coming up to London every year to give a course of lectures there. This arrangement lasted for six years, until, in 1840, he resigned his charge of the York Museum and was appointed one of the staff of the Geological Survey of Great Britain under De la Beche. In this connexion he spent some time in studying the Paleozoic fossils of Devon, Cornwall, and west Somerset, of which he published descriptions and illustrations. Thereafter he made a detailed survey of the region of the Malvern Hills, of which he prepared the elaborate account that appears in vol. ii. of the Memowrs of the Survey. His direct connexion with the National Survey was but of short duration, for in 1844 | he accepted the professorship of geology in the university of Dublin. Nine years later, on the death of Strickland, who had acted as substitute for Dr Buckland in the readership of geology in the university of Oxford, Phillips succeeded to the post of deputy, and eventually, at the dean's death, became himself reader, a post singularly congenial to him, and which he held up to the time of his own death, which was almost tragic in its suddenness. He dined at All Souls' College on 23d April 1874, but in retiring slipped and fell headlong down a flight of stairs. Paralysis at once ensued, and he expired on the afternoon

of the next day. In 1864 he had been elected president of the British Association.

Phillips was distinguished among his contemporaries for the sweetness and bright cheerfulness of his nature. He had great fluency as a speaker, and always spoke in so pleasant and interest- ing a manner as to make him a welcome and indeed indispensable interlocutor at the annual gatherings of the British Association. His social gifts were not less conspicuous than his attainments in science. But he was not a mere geologist. His sympathies went actively forth into the whole domain of science, and he him- self contributed largely to astronomical literature as well as to meteorology.

From the time when he wrote his first paper in 1826 "On the Direction of the Diluvial Currents in Yorkshire" down to the last days of his life Phillips continued a constant contributor to the literature of his science. The pages of the Journal of the Geological Society, the Geological Magazine, and

other publications of the day are full of valuable essays by him. He was also the author of numerous separate works, some of which had an extensive sale and were of great benefit in extending a sound knowledge of geology. Among these may be specially mentioned: JJJustrations of the Ceology of Yorkshire (1835); A Treatise on Geology (1837 – 39); Memoirs of William Smith, the Father of English Geology (1844); The Rivers, Mountains, and Sea-Coast of Yorkshire (1853) ; Manual of Geology, Practical and Theorctical (1855); Life on the Earth : its Origin and Succession (1860); Vesuvius (1869); Geology of Oxford and the Thames Valley (1871). To these should be added his monographs in the Memoirs of the Geological Survey and the publications of the Paleontographical Society, and his geological sections and maps.

PHILLIPS, Samuer (1815-1854), an industrious and successful lettérateur, was the son of a Jewish tradesman in Regent Street, London, and was born in 1815. A somewhat precocious talent for mimicry and recitation had disposed his parents to train him for the stage; but they were afterwards induced, through the advice of the duke of Sussex, to send the lad to University College, London. After remaining a year at that institution Phillips pro- ceeded to the university of Gottingen. Having renounced the Jewish faith, he returned shortly afterwards to Eng- land and entered Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge, with the design of taking orders. His father's death, however, altered his plans; and, after an unsuccessful attempt, in conjunction with his brother, to carry on his father's busi- ness, he in 1841 took to literature as a profession. His first work, the novel of Caleb Stukely, appeared originally in the pages of Blackwood's Magazine, and he subsequently contributed other anonymous tales to that and to other periodicals. In 1845 he began, through the interest of Lord Stanley, to write political leaders for the Morning Herald; and about the same time he obtained an appointment as literary critic on the staff of the Times. In the following year he purchased the John Bull news- paper, which he edited for only a year; for, finding his strength, which was slowly wasting under the influence of confirmed consumption, quite unequal to such laborious work, he was constrained to abandon the undertaking. From that period till his death Phillips worked cheerfully and courageously as literary critic for the Times, and also wrote an occasional review for the Literary Gazette. Two

anonymous volumes of Hssays from the Times were pub-.

lished by him in 1852 and 1854. They are written in a light, dashing, picturesque style, sometimes eloquent, fre- quently bitter, and with a tolerable. show of fairness. Phillips took an active part in the formation of the Crystal Palace Company. He was appointed their literary director ; he wrote their Guide to the Crystal Palace and Park, and the Portrait Gallery of the Crystal Palace. In 1852 the university of Gottingen conferred upon him the honorary degree of LL.D. He died at Brighton on the 14th of October 1854. ; PHILLIPS, Tuomas (1770-1845), portrait and subject painter, was born at Dudley in Warwickshire on 18th October 1770. Having acquired the art of glass-painting at Birmingham, he visited London in 1790 with an intro-

duction to Benjamin West, who found him employment on the windows in St George's chapel at Windsor. In 1792 Phillips painted a view of Windsor Castle, and ere the two succeeding years had passed he exhibited the Death of Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury, at the Battle of Castillon, Ruth and Naomi, Elijah restoring the Widow's Son, Cupid disarmed by Euphrosyne, and other pictures of that class. From the year 1796, however, he seems to have mainly confined himself to portrait-painting; and it was in this walk that he was destined to acquire his reputa- tion as an artist. It was not long before he became the chosen painter of men of genius and talent, notwithstand- ing the rivalry of Hoppner, Owen, Jackson, and Lawrence; and he has left behind him portraits of nearly all the illustrious characters of his day. His works of this kind are distinguished by simplicity, careful and finished hand- ling, and truth of portraiture, but in colour they are com- monly eold and feeble. In 1804 he was elected associate and four years later member of the Royal Academy. In 1824 Phillips succeeded Fuseli as professor of painting to the Royal Academy, an office which he held till 1832. During this period he delivered ten Lectures on the H astory and Principles of Painting, which were published in 1833. He likewise wrote a large number of the articles on the fine arts in Rees's Cyclopedia. He died on the 20th of April 1845.

PHILLIPS, Witrtam (1775-1828), an able mineralogist and geologist, who did much to foster in Britain the study of the sciences to which he was

devoted, was born in May 1775. His Outline of Mineralogy and Geology was pub- lished in 1815 and passed through several editions. His Introduction to the Knowledge of Mineralogy, published in 1816, was for upwards of forty years one of the standard text-books in that science. Successive editions of it were brought out under different editors after his death. It was specially distinguished by its elaborate crystallographic details, based upon measurements with Wollaston's reflect- ing goniometer. But it is chiefly the services rendered by Phillips to the science of geology, then in its infancy, that entitle his name to grateful recollection. In addition to the first work above-named, he published in 1818 a most useful digest of English geology, under the title of A Selection of Facts, from the best Authorities, arranged so as to form an Outline of the Geology of England and Wales. This little volume contained a geological map of the country, based on that of W. Smith and some horizontal sections. Its importance in geological literature is to be found mainly in the fact that it formed the foundation of the larger work undertaken by Phillips in conjunction with W. Conybeare, of which only the first part was published, entitled Outlines of the Geology of England and Wales ; and comparative Views of the Structure of Foreign Countries (1822), This volume made an era in geology. As a model of careful original observation, of judicious com- pilation, of succinct description, and of luminous arrange- ment it has been of the utmost service in the develop- ment of geology in Britain. Phillips was a member of the Society of Friends. He was a Fellow of the Royal, Geological, and other learned societies. He died in 1828.

PHILO, often called Putto Jupzxus, Jewish philo- sopher, appears to have spent his whole life at Alexandria, where he was probably born c. 20-10 3B.c. His brother Alexander was alabarch or arabarch (that is, probably, chief farmer of taxes on the Arabic side of the Nile), from which it may be concluded that the family was influential and wealthy (Jos., Ané., xviii. 8,1). Jerome's statement (De Vir. Iil., 11) that he was of priestly race is confirmed by no older authority. The only event of his life which can be exactly dated belongs to 40 a.p., when Philo, then a man of advanced years, went from Alexandria to Rome,

at the head of a Jewish embassy, to persuade the emperor | have been preserved by Clement of Alexandria and

Caius to abstain from claiming divine honour of the Jews. Of this embassy Philo has left a full and vivid account (De Legatione ad Caium). Various fathers and theologians of the church state that in the time of Claudius he met St Peter in Rome ;+ but this legend has no historic value, and probably arose because the book De vita contemplativa, falsely ascribed to Philo, in which Eusebius already recog- nized a glorification of Christian monasticism, seemed to indicate a disposition towards Christianity.

Though we know so little of Philo's own life, his numer- ous extant writings give the fullest information as to his views of the universe and of life, and his religious and scientific aims, and so enable us adequately to estimate his position and importance in the history of thought. He is quite the most important representative of Hellenistic Judaism, and his writings give us the clearest view of what this development of Judaism was and aimed at. Since the time of Alexander many Jews had been led to settle beyond Palestine either with commercial objects or attracted by the privileges conferred by the diadochi on the inhabit- ants of the cities they founded. In the great towns of Syria, Asia Minor, and Egypt there were Jewish communi- ties many thousands strong, but the Jews were most numerous in Alexandria, where from its first foundation they formed a considerable part of the population. The development of Judaism in the diaspora differed in im- portant points from that in Palestine, where, since the successful opposition of the Maccabee age to the Hellen-

ization which Antiochus Epiphanes had sought to carry

through by force, the attitude of the nation to Greek culture had been essentially negative. In the diaspora, on the other hand, the Jews had been deeply influenced by the Greeks ; they soon more or less forgot their Semitic mother-tongue, and with the language of Hellas they appropriated much of Hellenic culture. They were deeply impressed by that irresistible force which was blending all races and nations into one great cosmopolitan unity, and so the Jews too on their dispersion became in speech and nationality

Greeks, or rather " Hellenists." Now the distinguishing character of Hellenism is not the absolute disappearance of the Oriental civilizations before that of Greece, but the combination of the two with a preponderance of the Greek element. So it was with the Jews, but in their case the old religion had much more persistence than in other Hellenistic circles, though in other respects they too yielded to the superior force of Greek civilization. This we must hold to have been the case not only in Alexandria but throughout the diaspora from the com- mencement of the Hellenistic period down to the later Roman empire. It, was only after ancient civilization gave way before the barbarian immigrations and the rising force of Christianity that rabbinism became supreme even among the Jews of the diaspora. 'This Hellenistico- Judaic phase of culture is sometimes called " Alexandrian," and the expression is justifiable if it only means that in Alexandria it attained its highest development and flourished most. For here the Jews began to busy them- selves with Greek literature even under their clement rulers, the first Ptolemies, and here the law and other Scriptures were first translated into Greek ; here the pro- cess of fusion began earliest and proceeded with greatest rapidity ; here, therefore, also the Jews first engaged in a scientific study of Greek philosophy and transplanted that philosophy to the soil of Judaism. We read of a Jewish philosopher Aristobulus in the time of Ptolemy VI. Philometor, in the middle of the 2d century B.c., of whose philosophical commentary on the Pentateuch fragments

Euseb., Wf. E., ii. 17,13 Jer., ut supra; Phot., Bibl., Cod. 105 ; Suid., 5% "Bioy,"

Eusebius. So far as we can judge from these, his aim was to put upon the sacred text a sense which should appeal even to Greek readers, and in particular to get rid of all anthropomorphic utterances about God. Eusebius regards him as a Peripatetic. We may suppose that this philosophical line of thought had its representatives in Alexan- dria between the times of Aristobulus and Philo, but we are not acquainted with the names of any such. Philo certainly, to judge by his historical influence, was the greatest of all these Jewish philosophers, and in his case we can follow in detail the methods by which Greck culture was harmonized with Jewish faith. On one side he is quite a Greek, on the other quite a Jew. His

language is formed on the best classical models, especially Plato. He knows and often cites the great Greek poets, particu- larly Homer and the tragedians, but his chief studies had been in Greek philosophy, and he speaks of Heraclitus, Plato, the Stoics,; and the Pythagoreans in terms of the highest veneration. He had appropriated their doctrines so com- pletely that he must himself be reckoned among the Greek philosophers ; his system was eclectic, but the borrowed elements are combined into a new unity with so much originality that at the same time he may fairly be regarded as representing a philosophy of his own, which has for its characteristic feature the constant prominence of a funda- mental religious idea. Philo's closest affinities are with Plato, the later Pythagoreans, and the Stoics.2 Yet with all this Philo remained a Jew, and a great part of his writings is expressly directed to recommend Judaism to the respect and, if possible, the acceptance of the Greeks. He was not a stranger to the specifically Jewish culture that prevailed in Palestine; in Hebrew he was not pro- ficient, but the numerous etymologies he gives show that he had made some study of that language. His method of exegesis is in point of form identical with that of the Palestinian scribes, and in point of matter coincidences are not absolutely rare.¢ But above all his whole works prove on every page that he felt himself to be thoroughly a Jew, and desired to be nothing else. Jewish "philo- sophy" is to him the true and highest wisdom ; the know- ledge of God and of things divine and human which is contained in the Mosaic Scriptures is to him the deepest and the purest.

If now we ask wherein Philo's Judaism consisted, we must answer that it lies mainly in the formal claim that the Jewish people, in virtue of the divine revelation given to Moses, possesses the true knowledge in things religious. Thoroughly Jewish is his recognition that the Mosaic Scriptures of the Pentateuch are of absolute divine author- ity, and that everything they contain is valuable and significant because divinely revealed. The other Jewish Scriptures are also recognized as prophetic, ¢.¢., as the writings of inspired men, but he does not place them on the same line with the law, and he quotes them so seldom that we cannot determine the compass of his canon. The decisive and normative authority is to him the "holy laws" of Moses, and this not only in the sense that every- thing they contain is true but that all truth is contained in them. Everything that is right and good in the

- *The fathers of the church have specially noticed his Platonism and Pythagoreanism ; an old proverb even says, with some exaggeration, 7} Wdrov girrwviger } Pihwv TAaTwvlger (Jerome, Photius, and Suidas, ut supra). Clement of Alexandria directly calls him a Pythagorean. Eusebius (H. E., ii. 4, 3) observes both tendencies. Recent writers, especially Zeller, lay weight also on his Stoic affinities, and with justice, for the elements which he borrows from Stoicism are as numerous and important as those derived from the other two schools.*

3 See the list of these in Vallarsi's edition of Jerome (iii. 731-734), and compare Siegfried, " Philonische Studien," in Merz's Archiv, ii.

143-163 (1872).

- *See Siegfried, Philo, pp. 142-159.*

Paine

doctrines of the Greek philosophers had already been quite as well, or even better, taught by Moses. Thus, since Philo had been deeply influenced by the teachings of Greek philosophy, he actually finds in the Pentateuch everything which he had learned from the Greeks. From these premises he assumes as requiring no proof that the Greek philosophers must in some way have drawn from Moses,—a view indeed which is already expressed by Aristobulus. To carry out these presuppositions called for an exegetical method which seems very strange to us, that, namely, of the allegorical interpretation of Scripture. The allegorical method had been practised before Philo's date in the rabbinical schools of Palestine, and he himself expressly refers to its use by his predecessors, nor does he feel that any further justification is requisite. With its aid he discovers indications of the profoundest doctrines of philosophy in the simplest stories of the Pentateuch.!

This merely formal principle of the absolute authority of Moses is really the one point in which Philo still holds to genuinely Jewish conceptions. In the whole substance of his philosophy the Jewish point of view is more or less completely modified—sometimes almost extinguished— by what he has

learned from the Greeks. Comparatively speaking, he is most truly a Jew in his conception of God. The doctrine of monotheism, the stress laid on the absolute majesty and sovereignty of God above the world, the principle that He is to be worshipped without images, are all points in which Philo justly feels his superiority as a Jew over popular heathenism. But only over popular heathenism, for the Greek philosophers had long since arrived at least at a theoretical monotheism, and their influence on Philo is nowhere more strongly seen than in the detailed development of his doctrine of God. The specifically Jewish (7.¢., particularistic) conception of the election of Israel, the obligation of the Mosaic law, the future glory of the chosen nation, have almost disappeared ; he is really a cosmopolitan and praises the Mosaic law just because he deems it cosmopolitan. The true sage who follows the law of Moses is the citizen not of a particular state but of the world. A certain attachment which Philo still manifests to the particularistic conceptions of his race is meant only "in majorem Judeorum gloriam." The Jewish people has received a certain preference from God, but only because it has the most virtuous ancestry and is itself distinguished for virtue. The Mosaic law is binding, but only because it is the most righteous, humane, and rational of laws, and even its outward ceremonies always disclose rational ideas and aims. And lastly, outward prosperity is promised to the pious, even on earth, but the promise belongs to all who turn from idols to the true God. Thus, in the whole substance of lis view of the universe, Philo occupies the standpoint of Greek philosophy rather than of national Judaism, and his philosophy of the world and of life can be completely set forth without any reference to conceptions specifically Jewish.

His doctrine of God starts from the idea that God is Being absolutely bare of quality. All quality in finite beings has limitation, and no limitation can be predicated of God, who is eternal, unchangeable, simple substance, free, self-sufficient, better than the good and the beautiful. To predicate any quality (zo.dryns) of God would be to reduce Him to the sphere of finite existence. Of Him we can say only that He is, not what He is, and such purely negative predications as to His being appear to Philo, as to the later Pythagoreans and the Neo-Platonists, the only way of securing His absolute elevation above the world. At bottom, no doubt, the meaning of these negations is that God is the most perfect being; and so, con-

1 For details, see Gfrorer, Fhilo, i. 68 sg. ; Zeller, Phil. der Gr., 3d ed., vol. iii., pt. ii. 846-852 ; Siegfried, PAzlo, 160 sg.

versely, we are told that God contains all perfection, that He fills and encompasses all things with His being.

A consistent application of Philo's abstract conception of God would exclude the possibility of any active relation of God to the world, and therefore of religion, for a Being absolutely without quality and movement cannot be con. ceived as actively concerned with the multiplicity of individual things. And so in fact Philo does teach that the absolute perfection, purity, and loftiness of God would be violated by direct contact with imperfect, impure, and finite things. But the possibility of a connexion between God and the world is reached through a distinction which forms the most important point in his theology and cos- mology; the proper being of God is distinguished from the infinite multiplicity of divine Ideas or Forces: God himself is without quality, but He disposes of an infinite variety of divine Forces, through whose mediation an active relation of God to the world is brought about. In the details of his teaching as to these mediating entities Philo is guided partly by Plato and partly by the Stoics, but at the same time he makes use of the concrete religious conceptions of heathenism and Judaism. Following Plato, he first calls them Ideas or ideal patterns of all things; they are thoughts of God, yet possess a real existence, and were produced before the creation of the sensible world, of which they are the types. But, in distinction from Plato, Philo's ideas are at the same time efficient causes or Forces (6vvdéyecs), which bring unformed matter into order conformably to the patterns within themselves, and are in fact the media of all God's activity in the world. This modification of the Platonic Ideas is due to Stoic influence, which appears also when Philo gives to the ideas or Suvdpers the name of Aoyou, #.¢., operative ideas,—parts, as it were, of the operative Reason. For, when Philo calls his mediat- ing entities Adyor, the sense designed is analogous to that of the Stoics when they call God the Logos, 2.e., the Reason which operates in the world. But at the same time Philo maintains that the divine Forces are identical with the 'demons " of the Greeks, and the "angels" of the Jews, a.¢., servants and

messengers of God by means of which He communicates with the finite world. All this shows how uncertain was Philo's conception of the nature of these mediating Forces. On the one hand, they are nothing else than Ideas of individual things conceived in the mind of God, and as such ought to have no other reality than that of immanent existence in God, and so Philo says expressly that the totality of Ideas, the xécpos vonrés, is simply the Reason of God as Creator (Qcov Adyos 75 Kogporo.otvTos), Yet, on the other hand, they are repre- sented as hypostases distinct from God, individual entities existing independently and apart from Him. This vacil- lation, however, as Zeller and other recent writers have justly remarked, is necessarily involved in Philo's premises, for, on the one hand, it is God who works in the world through His Ideas, and therefore they must be identical with God; but, on the other hand, God is not to come into direct contact with the world, and therefore the Forces through which He works must be distinct from Him. The same inevitable amphiboly dominates in what is taught as to the supreme Idea or Logos. Philo regards all indi- vidual Ideas as comprehended in one highest and most general Idea or Force—the unity of the individual Ideas— which he calls the Logos or Reason of God, and which is again regarded as operative Reason. The Logos, therefore, is the highest mediator between God and the world, the firstborn son of God, the archangel who is the vehicle of all revelation, and the high priest who stands before God on behalf of the world. Through him the world was created, and so he is identified with the creative Word of God in Genesis (the Greek Aéyos meaning both "reason "

XVIII. — 96

762

and "word"). Here again, we see, the philosopher is unable to escape from the difficulty that the Logos is at once the immanent Reason of God, and yet also an hypo- stasis standing between God and the world. The whole doctrine of this mediatorial hypostasis is a strange inter- twining of very dissimilar threads ; on one side the way was prepared for it by the older Jewish distinction between the Wisdom of God and God Himself, of which we find the beginnings even in the Old Testament (Job xxvill. 12 sg.; Prov. viii., ix.), and the fuller development in the books of Ecclesiasticus and

Wisdom, the latter of which comes very near to Philo's ideas if we substitute for the term "wisdom" that of (divine) "Reason." In Greek philosophy, again, Philo, as we have seen, chiefly follows the Platonic doctrines of Ideas and the Soul of the World,

and the Stoic doctrine of God as the Adyos or Reason opera-

tive in the world. In its Stoic form the latter doctrine was pantheistic, but Philo could adapt it to his purpose simply by drawing a sharper distinction between the Logos and the world.

Like his doctrine of God, Philo's doctrine of the world and creation rests on the presupposition of an absolute metaphysical contrast between God and the world. The world can be ascribed to God only in so far as it is a cosmos or orderly world ; its material substratum is not even indirectly referable to God. Matter (vAy, or, as the Stoics said, ovcia) is a second principle, but in itself an empty one, its essence being a mere negation of all true being. It is a lifeless, unmoved, shapeless mass, out of which God formed the actual world by means of the Logos and divine Forces. Strictly speaking, the world is only formed, not created, since matter did not originate with God.

Philo's doctrine of man is also strictly dualistic, and is mainly derived from Plato. Man is a twofold being, with a higher and a lower origin. Of the pure souls which fill airy space, those nearest the earth are attracted by the sensible and descend into sensible bodies; these souls are the Godward side of man. But on his other side man is a creature of sense, and so has in him a fountain of sin and allevil. The body, therefore, is a prison, a coffin, or a grave for the soul which seeks to rise again to God. From this anthropology the principles of Philo's ethics are derived, its highest maxim necessarily being deliverance from the world of sense and the mortification of all the impulses of sense. In carrying out this thought, as in many other details of his ethical teaching, Philo closely follows the Stoics. But he is separated from Stoical ethics by his strong religious interests, which carry him to very different views of the means and aim of ethical development. The Stoics cast man upon his own resources; Philo points him to the assistance of God, without whom man, a captive to sense, could never raise himself to walk in the ways of true wisdom and virtue. And as moral effort can bear fruit only with God's help, so too God Himself is the goal of that effort. Even in this

life the truly wise and virtuous is lifted above his sensible existence, and enjoys in ecstasy the vision of God, his own consciousness sinking and disappearing in the divine light. Beyond this ecstasy there lies but one further step, viz., entire liberation from the body of sense and the return of the soul to its original condition ; it came from God and must rise to Him again. But natural death brings this consummation only to those who, while they lived on earth, kept themselves free from attachment to the things of sense ; all others must at death pass into another body ; transmigration of souls is in fact the necessary consequence of Philo's premises, though he seldom speaks of it expressly.

Philo's literary labours have a twofold object, being directed either to expound the true sense of the Mosaic law, 2.€., the philosophy which we have just described, to his Jewish brethren, or to convince

Poe To

heathen readers of the excellence, the supreme purity and truth, of the Jewish religion whose holy records contain the deepest and most perfect philosophy, the best and most humane legislation. Thus as a litcrary figure Philo, in conformity with his education and views of life, stands between the Greeks and the J ews, seeking to gain the Jews for Hellenism and the Greeks for Judaism, yet always taking it for granted that his standpoint really is Jewish, and just on that account truly philosophical and cosmopolitan.

The titles of the numerous extant writings of Philo present at first sight a most confusing multiplicity. More than three-fourths of them, however, are really mere sections of a small number of larger works. Three such great works on the Pentateuch can be distinguished.

(I.) The smallest of these is the Zmriuara cal Woes (Questiones et solutiones), a short exposition of Genesis and Exodus, in the form of question and answer. The work is cited under this title by Eusebius (H. £., ii. 18, 1, 5; Prep. Ev., vii. 18), and by later writers, but the Greek text is now almost wholly lost, and only about one-half preserved in an Armenian translation. Genesis seems to have occupied six books.! Eusebius tells us that Exodus filled five books. In the Armenian translation, first published by

the learned Mechitarist Aucher in 1826, are preserved four books on Genesis and two on Exodus, but with lacune. A Latin frag- ment, about half of the fourth book on Genesis (Phil. Jud. CIL questt. . . . super Gen.), was first printed at Paris in 1520. Of the Greek we have numerous but short fragments in various Flori- legia. The interpretations in this work are partly literal and partly allegorical.*

(II.) Philo's most important work is the Néuwy tepav adAnyoplar (Euseb., H. E., ii. 18,1; Phot., Bibl., Cod. 103), a vast and copious allegorical commentary on Genesis, dealing with chaps. ii,~~iv., verse by verse, and with select passages in the later chapters. The readers in view are mainly Jews, for the form is modelled on the rabbinic Midrash. The main idea is that the characters which appear in Genesis are properly allegories of states of the soul (rpémox ris Wuyjs). All persons and actions being interpreted in this sense, the work as a whole is a very extensive body of psycho~~ logy and ethics. It begins with Gen. ii. 1, for the De mundi opificio, which treats of the creation according to Gen. i., ii., does not belong to this series of allegorical commentaries, but deals with the actual history of creation, and that under a quite different literary form. With this exception, however, the Néuwv adAryopiat includes all the treatises in the first volume of Mangey's edition, viz. :—

Nouwv iepSv adrnyopia rpGra rOv pera Thy é£atuepov (Legum alle- goriarum, lib. i., M. i, 43-65), on Gen. ii, 1-17. (2) Néu. iep. GAN. GevdTepar (Leg. ail., lib. ii, M. i. 66-86), on Gen. ii, 18-iii. la, (8) Nou. lep. add. Tplrat (Leg. all., lib. iii., M. i. 87-187), on Gen. iif. 8b-19, The commentaries on Gen. iii. 1b-8a, 20-23 are lost. (4) Ilepi r&v xepouBlu Kal rAs proylyys poupalas kal rod xricbévros mpurou e& dvOpmmrou Kdiv (De cherubim et fiammeo gladio, M. i. 138-162), on Gen. iii. 24 and iv. 1. (5) Ilepi Gy tepovp- yotou "ABed re kal Kdiv (De sacrifictis Abelis et Caint, M. i. 163-190), on Gen, iv, 2-4. The commentaries on Gen. iv. 5-7 are lost. (6) Ilept rod 7d xetpov r@ Kpelrrove gudeiy émiribec Oar (Quod deterius potiori insidiart soleat, M, i. 191- 225), on Gen. iv. 8-15. (7) Ilepi rv rot Soxnotsdpov Kdiv éyydver xal ds MeTavaorns yiverat (De posteritate Caint, &e., M. i. 226-261), on Gen. iv, 16-25 ; this book, which is wanting in editions prior to Mangey's, is incorrectly given by him, but much more correctly by Tischendorf, Philonea, pp. 84-143. None of the preceding is

mentioned by its special title by Euseb., H. £,, ii. 18, while he cites all that follow by their titles. The reason must be that all up to this point, and no farther, are included by him in the Néuwy lepSv addyoplat ; agreeing with this we find that these and these only are cited under that general title in the Florilegia, especially the so-called Johannes Monachus tneditus (see Mangey's notes before each book). We may therefore conclude with confidence that Philo published the continuous commentaries on Gen. ii.-iv. under the title Allegories of the Sacred Laws, and the following commentaries on select passages under special titles, though the identity of literary character entitles us to regard the latter as part of the same great literary plan with the former. (8) Ilept yeydvrwy (De gigantibus, M. i. 262-272), on Gen. vi. 1-4. (9)"Ort drper- Tov Td Oetov (Quod Deus sit immutabilis, M. i. 272-299), on Gen. vi. 4-12. (10) Ilept yewpylas (De agricultwra, M. i. 300-328), on Gen. ix. 20a. (11) Ilepl gpuroupyias N&e rd devrepov (De plantatione Noe, M. i. 329-356), on Gen. ix, 20b. (12) Ilept wé@ns (De ebrietate, M. i. 357-391), on Gen. ix. 21; the introdue- tion shows that this book was preceded by another which put together the views of the philosophers about drunkenness. (13) Ilept rod é&évnwe N&e (De sobrietate, M. i. 392-403), on Gen. ix, 24. (14) Ilepi cvyxtoews dtadéxrwv (De confusione linguarwm, M. i. 404-485), on Gen. xi, 1-9. (15) Ilepi adrroixlas (De migratione Abrahami, M. i. 436-472), on Gen. xii. 1-6. (16) Ilepl rod ris 6 TOY Oelwv mpaypdtwv Kdypovduos (Quis rerum divinarwm heres sit, M. i. 473-518), on Gen. xv. 1-18. (17) Ilepl rijs els ra mpomadeduara cuvddov (De congressu querend# eruditionis causa, M. i. 519-545), on Gen. xvi. 1-6. (18) Tlept puyddwy (De profugis, M. i. 546-577), on Gen. xvi. 6-14, (19) Tept rdv perovouagouévev Kal Gv evexa perovoudtovrar (De mutatione nominum, M. i, 578-619), on Gen. xvii. 1-22; in this work Philo mentions that he had

1 See, especially Mai, Scriptt. vett. nov. coll., vol. vii. pt. i. pp.

100, 106, 108. ; .

2 See Opp., ed. Mangey, ii. 648-680; Mai, op. czé., vol. vii. pt. i. 96 sg.; Euseb., Prep. Ev., vii. 18. A fragment on the cherubim, Exod, xxv. 18, has been published by Mai, Class. Auctt., iv. 480 sq., by Grossmann (1856), and by Tischendorf (p. 144 sq.).

rari©

written two books, now wholly lost, [epi dsadyxe@v (M. i. 586). (20) Ilepi rob Oeoréumrous elvat rovs dvelpous (De somntis, lib. i., M. i. 620-658), on the two dreams of Jacob, Gen. xxviii. and xxxi. (21) Book ii. of the same (M. i. 659-699), on the dreams of Joseph, the chief butler, the chief baker, and Pharaoh, Gen. xxxvii. and xl., xli. Eusebius makes Philo the author of five books on dreams ; three, therefore, are lost.

(III.) A work of a very different kind is the group of writings which we may call " An Exposition of the Mosaic law for Gentiles," which, in spite of their very various contents, present on nearer examination indubitable marks of close connexion. In them Philo seeks to give an orderly view of the chief points of the Mosaic legislation in the Pentateuch, and to recommend it as valuable to Gentile readers. The method of exposition is somewhat more popular than in the allegorical commentaries, for, though that method of interpretation is not wholly excluded, the main object is to give such a view of the legislation as Philo accepted as his- torical. 'This work has three main divisions: (a) an Account of the Creation (xospomota), which Moses put first, to show that his legislation was conformed to the will of nature, and that thcrefore those who followed it were true cosmopolitans ; (5) the Biographies of the Virtuous,—being, so to speak, the living unwritten laws which, unlike written laws, present the general types of moral conduct ; (c) Legislation Proper, in two subdivisions—(a) the ten principal chapters of the law, (8) the special laws belonging to each of these ten. An appendix adds a view of such laws as do not fall under the rubrics of the decalogue, arranged under the headings of certain cardinal virtues.

The treatises which belong to this work are the following. THs Mwiicéws Kooporotias (De mundi opificio, M. i. 1-42) This work does not fall within the number of the allegorical commentaries. On the other hand, the introduction to the treatise De Abrahamo makes clear its im- inediate connexion with the De mundi opificio. The position of the De mundi opificio at the head of the allegorical commentaries, which is at present usual in the editions, seems indeed to go back toa very early date, for even Eusebius cites a passage from it with the formula dad Tol mpwrou r&v els Toy vdmov (Prep, Ev., viii. 12 fin., ed. Gaisford). The group of the Bio: copay is headed

by (2) Blos copot rot xara didacxadiay TrerewHévros 7} mepl vouwv aypapwy [a], 8 dort wept ABpadu (De Abrahamo, M. ii. 1-40). Abraham is here set forth as the type of didackadixny apeTy, %.¢., of virtue as a thing learned. This biography of Abraham was followed by that of Isaac as a type of pvotkh dpery, i.e., of innate or natural virtue, which in turn was succeeded by that of Jacob as representing doxynrikh dpeTy, i.e., virtue acquired by practice ; but both these are now lost. Hence in the editions the next treatise is (8) Blos modurixds Sep éorl rept "Iwan (De Josepho, M. ii. 41-79), where Joseph is taken as the pattern of the wisc man in his civil relations. The Biographies of the Virtuous are followed by (4) Ilepi rav déxa doyiwy & Kepadrata vduwv eiol (De decalogo, M. ii. 180-209) and (5) Ilept r&v dvadepo- pévow év cider vouew els Ta cuvTeivovTa Kepddata Tay Oéxa AOywv (De specialibus legibus ; the unabridged title is given by Eusebius, H. £., ii. 18, 5). Here under the rubrics of the ten commandments a systematic review of the special laws of the Mosaic economy is given; for example, under the first and second commandments (divine worship) a survey is taken of the entire legisla- tion relating to priesthood and sacrifice ; under the fourth (.c., the Sabbath law, according to Philo's reckoning) there is a survey of all the laws about feasts ; under the sixth (adultery) an account of matrimonial law; and so on. According to Eusebius the work embraced four books, which seem to have reached us entire, but in the editions have been perversely broken up into a considerable number of separate tractates. (a) The first book (on the first and second commandments) includes the following: De circumeisione (M. ii. 210-212); De monarchia, lib. i. Gi. 213-222); De monarchia, lib. ii. (ii. 222-232); De premiis sacerdotum (ii. 232-237); De victimis Gi. 237-250); De sacrificantibus, or De victimas offerentibus (ii. 251-264); De mercede meretricis non accipienda in sacrarium (ii. 264-269). (b) The second book (on the third, fourth, and fifth commandments, 1.e., on perjury, Sabbath observance, and filial piety) is incomplete in Mangey (ii. 270-298), the section De septenario (on the Sabbath and feasts in general) being imperfect, and that De colendis parentibus being entirely wanting. Mai to a large extent made good the defect (De cophini festo et de colendis parentibus, Milan, 1818), but Tischen- dorf was the first to edit the full text (Philonea, pp. 1-83). (c) The third book relates to the sixth and seventh commandments (adultery and murder; M. ii. 299-334). (d) To the fourth book (relating to the last three conimandments) belongs all that is found in

Mangey, ii. 335-374, that is to say, not merely the tractates De judice (ii. 344-348) and De concupiscentia (ii. 348-358), but also those De justitia (ii. 358-361) and De creatione principum (ii. 361-374). The last-named is, properly speaking, only a portion of the De justitia, which, how- ever, certainly belongs to the fourth book, of which the superscription expressly bears that it treats also wept dixatootyys. With this tractate begins the appendix to the work De specialibus legibus, into which, under the rubric of certain cardinal virtues, such Mosaic laws are brought together as could not be dealt with under any of the decalogue rubrics. The continuation of this appendix forms a book by itself. (6) Ilepl rpudv dperav rot wept dvdpelas kal diravOpwrlas Kal peravolas (De fortitudine, M. ii. 375-383 ; De caritate, ii. 883-405; De penitentia, ii. 405-407). Finally, in less intimate connexion with this entire work is another treatise still to be mentioned, (7) Ilepi &@Awy Kal éririyslewv (De premiis et penis, M. ii, 408-428) and Ilepl apay (De exe- crationibus, M. ii. 429-457), two parts which constitute a single whole and deal with the promises and threatenings of the law. rs

(IV.) Besides the above-named three great works on the Penta- teuch, Philo was the author of a number of isolated writings, of which the following have reached us either in their entirety or in fragments. (1) Iept Blov Mwoéws (Vita Mosis, lib. i-ili., M. i. 80-179). It is usual to group this, as being biographical in its character, with the Blo: copay, and thus to incorporate it Imme- diately after the De Joscpho with the large work on the Mosaic legislation. But, as has been seen, the Blo cop@v arc intended to represent the general types of morality, while Moses is by no means so dealt with but as a unique individual. All that can be said is

(1) Tlepi

763

that the literary character of the Vita Mosis is the same as that of the larger work. As in the latter the Mosaic legislation, so in the former the activity of the legislator himsclf, is delineated for the benefit of Gentile readers. (2) Ilept rod mdyra omovoatoy elvat édevepov (Quod omnis probus liber, M. ii. 445-470). In the intro- duction to this treatise reference is made to an earlier book which had for its theme the converse proposition. The complete work was still extant in the time of Eusebius (Z. £,, ii. 18, 6): Ilepi rod

Sobor elvan wavta pairov, é&fs éorw 6 wept roo wdvra omovdatov €devOe pov elvat. The genuineness of the writing now possessed by us is not undisputed ; but see Lucius, Der Esscnismus (1881), pp. 18-28. (3) Eis ®ddxxov (Adversus Flaccum, M. ii. 517-544) and (4) Ilept dperay kal mpeoBelas mpds Tdiov (De legatione ad Caiwm, M. ii. 545-600). These two works have a very intimate connexion. In the first Philo relates how the Roman governor Flaccus in Alexandria, towards the beginning of the reign of Caligula, allowed the Alex- andrian mob, without interference, to insult the Jews of that city in the grossest manner and even to persecute them to the shedding of blood. In the second he tells how the Jews had becn subjected to still greater sufferings through the command of Caligula that divine honours should be everywhere accorded to him, and how the Jews of Alexandria in vain sought relief by a mission to Rome which was headed by Philo. But both together were only parts of a larger work, in five books, of which the first two and the last have perished. For itis clear from the introduction to the Adversus Flaccum that it had been preceded by another book in which the Jewish persecutions by Sejanus, under the reign of Tiberius, were spoken of, and the Chronicon of Eusebius (ed. Schoene, vol. ii. pp. 150, 151) informs us that these persecutions of Sejanus were related in the second book of the work now under discussion. But from the conclusion of the Legatio ad Caiuwm, which we still possess, we learn that it was also followed by another book which exhibited the radwwdta, or change of Jewish fortuncs for the better. Thus we make out five books in all,—the number actually given by Eusebius (H. #., ii. 5,1). (5) Tept rpovolas (De providentia). This work has reached us only in an Armenian translation, which has been edited, with a Latin translation, by Aucher (see below). It is mentioned by its Greek title in Eusebius (Z. £., ii. 18, 6; Prep. Ev., vii. 20 fin., viii. 13 fin., ed. Gaisford). The Armenian text gives two books, but of these the first, if genuine at all, at any rate appears only in an abridged and somewhat revised state. Eusebius (Prep. Hv., viii. 14) quotes from the second book to an extent that amounts to a series of excerpts from the whole.

The short passage in Prep. Ev., vii. 21, is also taken from this book ; aud it appears that Husebius knew nothing at all about the first. (6) 'AA€Eavdpos 4 mepl Toh Noyou éxew Td ddoya fHa (De Alexandro ct quod propriam rationem muta animalia habcant; so Jerome, De Vir. {il.,¢. 11) ; the Greek title is given in Euseb., H. £., ii. 18, 6. This also now exists only in an Armenian translation, which has been edited by Aucher. Two small Greek fragments occur in the Florilegium of Leontius and Johannes (Mai, Scr. vet. nov. coll., vii. 1, pp. 99, 100a). (7) 'Ymoerixd, a writing now known to us only through fragments preserved in Euseb., Prep. Ev., viii. 6, 7. The title, as Bernays? has shown, means "Counsels," " Recom- mendations," the reference being to such laws of the Jews as can be recommended also to non-Jewish readers. (8) Ilept "Tovdaiwy, a title met with in Euseb., H. £., ii. 18, 6. The writing is no doubt the same as 'H bép'lovéalwy dmondoyia, from which a quotation is given in Euseb., Prep. Ev., viii. 11. To this place also, perhaps, belongs the De nobilitate (M. ii. 487-444), which treats of that true noblesse of wisdom in which the Jewish people also is not wanting.?

(V.) Spurious works ascribed to Philo. (1) Iepi Blov Qewpyrixotd 4 ixer@v aperav (De vita contemplativa, M. ii. 471-486). That the Therapeutic life here praised is that of Christian monks was scen by Euseb., H. £., ii. 17 (who, however, accepted the book as Philo's), and the same view was long prevalent in the church. But, if the Therapeute are monks, the book cannot be genuine ; see especially Lucius, Die Therapceuten und thre Stellung in der Gesch. der Askesc, Strasburg, 1879. There arc, however, so many othcr objections to its genuineness that the book is now given up even by such as do not admit that the Therapeute are monks.® (2) Ilepl dp@apotas xécpou (De incorruptibilitate mundi, M. ii. 487-516). Bernays, who first showed that the reccived text is disordered by misplacement of leaves (Monatsh. Berl. Akad., 1863, p. 34 sq.), published a cor- rected text with German version in 40h. Berl. Akad., 1876. An unfinished commentary of the same critic was posthumously pub- lished in the Berlin Abhandlungen, 1882. (8) Ilept xéopouv (De mundo, M. ii. 601-624). That this collection of extracts from Philo, and especially from the De incor. mundi, is spurious has been long recognized. (4) Two orations, De Sampsone and De Jona, pub-*

i ee Dicls, Doxographi Greci, 1879, pp. 1-4; Zeller, Phil. d. Gr., ili. 2, p. 340 3d ed.). ‘ 2 Monatsb. d. Berl. Akad. (1876), pp. 589-609.

3 This conjecture is Dihne’s, Theol. Stud. u. Krit. (1833), pp. 990, 1037.

4 So still Montfaucon, the learned notes to whose French translation are still valuable (Paris, 1709).

5 Nicolas, in Rev. Théol., Strasburg, 1868, p. 25 sq. ; Kuenen, Godsdienst, ii. 440-444; Weingarten, “Monchtum,” in Herzog-Plitt, R. E., x.

lished from the Armenian by Aucher in 1826, are generally held to be spurious.! (5) The lexicon of Hebrew proper names with Greek interpretations (‘Epyyveia trav éBpaixay dvoudrwy), which Origen eompleted by adding the New Testament names, and which Jerome rewrote, was often ascribed to Philo. It appears from ancient testi- monies that it bore no author’s name, so that Philo’s part in it is at least very problematical ; nor does its original form seem to be extant (see Orig., Comm. in Joan., vol. ii. c. 27 ; Kuseb., ESE: ii, 18, 7; Jerome in the preface to his recension of the book). Various Greek and Latin recensions are given by Vallarsi and in Lagarde’s Onomustica saera, 1870 ; see also on this class of literature asa whole Fabricius-Harles, Bib. Gr., iv. 742 8q-, Vie 199 sq., vii. 226 sg. (6) Ona Latin work, De biblicis antiquitatibus, ascribed to Philo, see Fabr.-Harl., iv. 743. (7) For the pseudo – Philonic Breviariwm temporum, a forgery of Annius of Viterbo, see ibid. (8) The book On Virtue, published as Philo’s by Mai (Phil. Jud.

de virt. ejusque partibus, 1816), is a work of Gemistus Pletho. — Editions. —The first, very imperfect, edition of the Greek text of Philo is by Turnebus (Paris, 1552). Some additional pieces were given by Héschel (Frank- fort, 1587; Augsburg, 1614). Other editions are those of Geneva, 1613 ; Paris, 1640 ; Frankfort, 1691 (a page-for-page reprint of the Paris edition); but the best is still that of Mangey (2 vols., London, 1742), which alone is based on a nuinber of MSS. and gives a critical apparatus. Pfeitfer’s unfinished edition, vols. i.-v., appeared at Erlangen in 1785-95, 2d ed. 1820. An important supple- ment to Mangey is given by Aucher’s publications from

the Armenian— Phil. Jud. sermones tres inediti, Venice, 1822. Phil. Jud. paralipomena Armena, Venice, 1826. The Greek pieces newly published since Mangey are less exten- sive: The editions by Mai, Grossmann, and Tischendorf have been already noticed. Aucher's publications and Mai's of 1818 are contained in the con- venient edition of Richter (Leipsic, 1828-30) and in the Tauchnitz stereotype edition (1851-53). Of editions of particular works, J. G. Miiller's Des Juden Philo Buch v. d. Weltschépfung (Berlin, 1841), with commentary, claims special notice. Compare further for the editions and versions, Fiirst, Bibl. Jud.; Grasse, Trésor de livres rares et précieux, v. 269-271 (1864); and Eng. tr. by

Yonge, 4 vols., London, 1854-55. Literature.—{A.) On Philo's writings in general. Fabricius-Harles, Bibl. Gr.,

iv. 721-750. On the order of Philo's works, Gfrirer, Philo und die Alexan- drinische Theosophie, i. (1831); Dahne, in Stud. und Krit., 1833, p. 984 sq. ; Grossmann, De Phil. Jud. operum continua serie et ordine chronol., pts. i., ii., Leipsic, 1841-42. On the text, Creuzer, in Stud. und Krit., 1832, p.3 sq. J. G. Miller, Teateskritik der Schr. des Juden Philo, Basel, 1839, reprinted in his edition of the Weltschépfung, 1841. On Philo's language, method, and infiu- ence on posterity, see Siegfried, Philo von Alex. als Ausleger des A. T… ., Jena, 1875. On his knowledge of Palestinian legal tradition, B. Ritter, Philo und die Halacha, Leipsic, 1879. (B.) On Philo's teaching. Gfrorer, op. cit. ; Dihne, Gesch. Darstellung der jud.-alex. Religionsphilosophie, Halle, 1834: Zeller, Phil. d. Griechen, pt. iii. sect. ii. (8d ed., 1881),—this is on the whole the best geueral sketch; Gfrérer and Dahne give fuller material. On special points, see Keferstein, Philo's Lehre von dem géttlichen Mittelwesen, Leipsic, 1846; Heinze, Lehre vom Logos, 1872; Soulier, La doctrine du Logos chez Philon, Turin, 1876. (Gob Sie)

PHILO. A Jewish Hellenist of this name is the author of an epic poem in Greek hexameters on the History of Jerusalem, and lived at an earlier date than the philosopher, Alexander Polyhistor quoting several passages of his book about 80-60 B.c. From Alexander Eusebius derives these extracts from the poem (Prep. Hv., ix. 20, 24, 37). This is probably the Philo who is mentioned by Clemens Alex- andrinus (Strom., i. 21, 141) and Josephus (C.

Ap., i. 23). See Philippson's work on the Jewish poets Ezechiel and Philo (1830) and Miiller, /r. Hist. Gr., ili. 213 sq.

PHILO BYBLIUS, «.e., Philo of Byblus (Gebal, Jubeil), was born, according to Suidas, in 42 a.D., and lived into the reign of Hadrian, about which he wrote a book now wholly lost. He was a grammarian by profession and author of many books, of which those oftenest cited are: (1) a work About Cities and the Famous Men they have pro- duced, which was epitomized by Serenus, and (2) Phenician History. Of the latter there are very considerable frag- ments, chiefly preserved by Eusebius in the Preparatio Evangelica, and presenting a Euhemeristic réchauffé of Phoenician theology and mythology which is represented as translated from the Phoenician of Sanchuniathon. 'The fragments of Philo are collected in Miiller, Mr. Hist. Gr., 11. 560 sg. To the literature there cited add Ewald's essay in the Abhandlungen of the Royal Society of Gottingen, vol. v. (1853); Renan's in Mém. Acad. des Inscript., vol. Xxiii. (1858) ; and Baudissin, Studien zur semitischen Religions- geschichte, i. 3 sq.

PHILO or BYZANTIUM, author of a treatisé on mechanics, of which only two books now remain, flourished in the 2d or 3d century A.D. The extant books, which refer to machines used in war and to siege works, are

1 See Dihne, Stud. und Krit., 1833, p. 987 sq.; Freudenthal, Die

Fl. Joseph, beigelegte Schrift iiber die Herrsehaft der Vernunft, 1869, pp. 9 sg., 141 sg.

edited with a German translation in Kéchly and Riistow's Griechische Kriegsschriftsteller, vol. i. (Leipsic, 1853).

For a list of other Philos, see Fabricius, Bzbl. Greca, iv. p. 750sq., ed. Hiarl:

PHILOLAUS, next to Archytas the most illustrious of the Pythagorean philosophers, was born at Tarentum or, according to Diogenes Laertius, at Crotona.2 He was said to have been intimate with Democritus, and was

prob- ably one of his teachers. After the death of Pythagoras great dissensions prevailed in the cities of lower Italy, which were allayed only after the lapse of many years through the intervention of the Acheans. According to some accounts Philolaus was obliged to flee, and owed his escape to his youthful energy. He took refuge first in Lucania, then in Greece; he lived at Thebes, where he had for pupils Simmias and Cebes, who subsequently, being still young men (veavicxor), were present at the death of Socrates. Prior to this Philolaus had left Thebes and returned to Italy, where he was the teacher of Archytas. Pythagoras published nothing, nor did the other early Pythagoreans ; the members of the brotherhood, moreover, piously referred their discoveries back to their master ; hence many doctrines have been attributed to Pythagoras which were first propounded later in the school. He entered deeply into the number-theory, which constituted the dis- tinctive feature of the Pythagorean philosophy, and in particular dwelt on the properties inherent in the decad —the sum of the first four numbers, consequently the fourth triangular number, the tetractys—which he called great, all-powerful, and all-producing. The discovery of the regular solids is attributed to Pythagoras by Eudemus, and Empedocles is stated to have been the first who main- tained that there were four elements. Philolaus, con- necting these ideas, held that the elementary nature of bodies depended on their form, and assigned the tetra- hedron to fire, the octahedron to air, the icosahedron to water, and the cube to earth; the dodecahedron he assigned to a fifth element, ther, or, as some think, to the universe. This theory indicates considerable know- ledge of geometry on the part of its author; it gave, moreover, a great impulse to the study of that science, and many important results were arrived at, so that Aristzeus, who lived before Euclid, was able to write a book on the comparison of the five regular solids.

Philolaus was the first to propound the doctrine of the motion of the earth ; some, however, attribute this doctrine to Pythagoras, but there is no evidence in support of their view. Philolaus supposed that the sphere of the fixed stars, the five planets, the sun, moon, and earth, all moved round the central fire, which he called the hearth of the universe, the house of Zeus, and the mother of the gods ; but as these made up only nine revolving bodies he con- ceived, in accordance with his number-theory, a tenth, which he called counter-earth, dvtixOwv. He was the first who published a book

on the Pythagorean doctrines, a treatise of which Plato made use in the composition of his Timezus. This work of the Pythagorean, to which the mystical name Bd«yas is sometimes given, seems to have consisted of three books: (1) Iept xécpov, containing a general account of the origin and arrangement of the universe ; (2) [epi di'cews, an exposition of the nature of

numbers ; (3) Iept Yvyis, on the nature of the soul.

See Boeckh, Phzlolaos des Pythagercers Leluren webst den Bruch- stiicken seines Werkes (Berlin, 1819); also Fabricius, Bibliotheca Greea ; Zeller, History of Greek Philosorhy ; and Chaignet, Pythagore ct la Philosophie Pythagoricienne, conte . .nt les Fraginents de Philolaiis ct d' Architas (1873).

2 Boeckh places his life between the 70th and 95th Olympiads (496-396 B.c.). He was a contemporary of Socrates and Democritus, but senior to them, and was probably somewhat junior to Empedocles, so that his birth may be placed at about 480.

Divi- sions.

Nature of the science.

765

Pei Lore ae

PART I.—SCIENCE OF LANGUAGE IN GENERAL.

HILOLOGY is the generally accepted comprehensive name for the study of the word ; it designates that branch of knowledge which deals with human speech, and with all that speech discloses as to the nature and history of man. Philology has two principal divisions, corre- sponding to the two uses of "word" or "speech," as signifying either what is said or the language in which it is said, as either the thought expressed—which, when recorded, takes the form of literature—or the instrument- ality of its expression: these divisions are the literary and the linguistic. Not all study of literature, indeed, is philological: as when, for example, the records of the ancient Chinese are ransacked for notices of astronomical or meteorological phenomena, or the principles of geometry are learned from the text-book of a Greek sage; while, on the other hand, to study Ptolemy and Euclid for the history of the sciences represented by them is philological more than scientific. Again, the study of language itself has its literary side: as when the vocabulary of a com- munity (say of the ancient Indo-Europeans or Aryans) is taken as a document from which to infer the range and grade of knowledge of its speakers, their circumstances, and their institutions. The two divisions thus do not admit of absolute distinction and separation, though for some time past tending toward greater independeiace. The literary is the older of the two; it even occupied until recently the whole field, since the scientific study of language itself has arisen only within the present century. Till then, literary philology included linguistic, as a merely subordinate and auxiliary part, the knowledge of a lan- guage being the necessary key to a knowledge of the literature written.in that language. When, therefore,

instead of studying each language by itself for the sake

of its own literature, men began to compare one language with another, in order to bring to light their relationships, their structures, their histories, the name 'comparative philology " naturally enough suggested itself and came into use for the new method; and this name, awkward and trivial though it may be, has become so firmly fixed in English usage that it can be only slowly, if at all, displaced. Continental usage (especially German) tends more strongly than English to restrict the name philology to its older office, and to employ for the recent branch of knowledge a specific term,

like those that have gained more or less currency with us also: as glottic, glossology, linguistics, linguistic science, science of language, and the like. It is not a question of absolute propriety or correctness, since the word philology is in its nature wide enough to imply all language-study, of whatever kind ; it is one, rather, of the convenient distinction of methods that have grown too independent and important to be any longer well included under a common name.

Philology, in all its departments, began and grew up as classical; the history of our civilization made the study of Greek and Latin long the exclusive, still longer the pre- dominant and regulating, occupation of secular scholar- ship. The Hebrew and its literature were held apart, as something of a different order, as sacred. It was not imagined that any tongue to which culture and literature did not lend importance was worthy of serious attention from scholars. 'The first essays in comparison, likewise, were made upon the classical tongues, and were as erroneous in method and fertile in false conclusions as was to be expected, considering the narrowness of view and the con- trolling prejudices of those who made them ; and the

admission of Hebrew to the comparison only added to the confusion. The change which this century has seen has been a part of the general scientific movement of the age, which has brought about the establishment of so many new branches of knowledge, both historical and physical, by the abandonment of shackling prejudices, the freedom of inquiry, the recognition of the dignity of all knowledge, the wide-reaching assemblage of facts and their objective comparison, and the resulting constant improvement of method. Literary philology has had its full share of advantage from this movement ; but linguistic philology has been actually created by it out of the crude observa- tions and wild deductions of earlier times, as truly as chemistry out of alchemy, or geology out of diluvianism. It is unnecessary here to follow out the details of the development ; but we may well refer to the decisive in- fluence of one discovery, the decisive action of one scholar. It was the discovery of the special relationship of the Aryan or Indo-European languages, depending in great measure upon the introduction of the Sanskrit as a term in their comparison, and demonstrated and worked out by the German scholar Bopp, that founded

the science of linguistic philology. While there is abundant room for further improvement, it yet appears that the grand features of philologic study, in all its departments, are now so distinctly drawn that no revolution of its methods, but only their modification in minor respects, is henceforth probable. How and for what purposes to investigate the literature of any people (philology in the more proper sense), combining the knowledge thus obtained with that derived from other sources; how to study and set forth the material and structure and combinations of a language (grammar), or of a body of related languages (comparative grammar) ; how to co-ordinate and interpret the general phenomena of language, as variously illustrated in the infinitely varying facts of different tongues, so as to exhibit its nature as a factor in human history, and its methods of life and growth (linguistic science),—these are what philology teaches. The first two subjects are mainly disposed of in this work in the various articles devoted to countries and races, with their literatures and dialects ; the last was briefly touched upon in the article ANTHRO- POLOGY, but requires fuller treatment here, along with a general view of the classification of languages, as thus far effected.

The study of language is a division of the general science of anthropology, and is akin to all the rest in respect of its objects and its methods. Man as we now see him is a twofold being: in part the child of nature, as to his capacities and desires, his endowments of mind and body ; in part the creature of education, by training in the knowledge, the arts, the social conduct, of which his predecessors have gained possession. And the problem of anthropology is this: how natural man has become culti- vated man; how a being thus endowed by nature should have begun and carried on the processes of acquisition which have brought him to his present state. The results of his predecessors' labours are not transmuted for his benefit into natural instincts, in language or in anything else. The child of the most civilized race, if isolated and left wholly to his own resources, aided by neither the example nor the instruction of his fellows, would no more speak the speech of his ancestors than he would build their houses, fashion their clothes, practise any of their arts, inherit their knowledge or wealth. In fact, he would

Relation to an- thropo-

possess no language, no arts, no wealth, but would have to go to work to acquire them, by the same processes which began to win them for the first human beings. One advantage he would doubtless-enjoy : the descendant of a cultivated race has an enhanced aptitude for the recep- tion of cultivation ; he is more cultivable; and this is an element that has to be allowed for in comparing present conditions with past, as influencing the rate of progress, but nothing more. In all other respects, it is man with the endowments which we now find him possessed of, but destitute of the gradually accumulated results of the exer- cise of his faculties, whose progress we have to explain. And it is, as a matter of necessity, by studying recent observable modes of acquisition, and transferring them, with due allowance for different circumstances, to the more primitive periods, that the question of first acqui- sition or origin is to be solved, for language as for tools, for arts, for family and social organization, and the rest. There is just as much, and just as little, reason for assuming miraculous interference and aid in one of these departments as in another. If men have been left to themselves to make and improve instruments, to form and perfect modes of social organization, by implanted powers directed by natural desires, and under the pressure of cir- cumstances, then also to make and change the signs that constitute their speech. All expressions, as all instruments, are at present, and have been through the known past, made and changed by the men who use them; the same will have been the case in the unknown or prehistoric past. And we command now enough of the history of language, with the processes of its life and growth, to determine with confidence its mode of origin—within certain limits, as will appear below.

It is beyond all question, in the first place, that the desire of communication was the only force directly im- pelling men to the production of language. Man's social- ity, his disposition to band together with his fellows, for lower and for higher purposes, for mutual help and for sympathy, is one of his most fundamental characteristics. To understand those about one and to be understood by them is now, and must have been from the very beginning, a prime necessity of human existence ; we cannot conceive of man, even in

his most undeveloped state, as without the recognition of it. Communication is still the univers- ally recognized office of speech, and to the immense majority of speakers the only one; the common man knows no other, and can only with difficulty and imperfectly be brought to see that there is any other; of the added dis- tinctness and reach of mental action which the possession of such an instrumentality gives him, he is wholly uncon- scious: and it is obvious that what the comparatively cultivated being of to-day can hardly be made to realize, can never have acted upon the first men as a motive to action. It may perhaps be made a question which of the two uses of speech, communication or the facilitation of thought, is the higher; there can be no question, at any rate, that the former is the broader and the more funda- mental. That the kind and degree of thinking which we do nowadays would be impossible without language-signs is true enough ; but so also it would be impossible without written signs. That there was a time when men had to do what mental work they could without the help of writ- Ms, a an art not yet devised, we have no difficulty in realizing, because the art is of comparatively recent device, and there are still communities enough that are working without it ; it is much harder to realize that there was a time when speaking also was an art not yet attained, and that men had to carry on their rude and rudimentary thinking without it. Writing too was devised for conscious purposes of communication only ; its esoteric uses, like

ee ate Ou, Ou. Y

those of speech, were at first unsuspected, and incapable of acting as an inducement; they were not noticed until made experience of, and then only by those who look beneath the surface of things. There is no analogy closer and more instructive than this, between speech and writ- ing. But analogies are abundant elsewhere in the history of human development. Everywhere it is the lower and more obvious inducements that are first effective, and that lead gradually to the possession of what serves and stimu- lates higher wants. All the arts and industries have grown out of men's effort to get enough to eat and pro- tection against cold and heat—just as language, with all its uses, out of men's effort to communicate with their fellows. As a solitary man now would never form even the beginnings of speech, as one separated from society unlearns his speech by disuse and becomes virtually dumb, so early man, with all his powers, would never have acquired speech,

save as to those powers was added sociality with the needs it brought. We might conceive of a solitary man as housing and dressing himself, devising rude tools, and thus lifting himself a step from wildness toward culti- vation ; but we cannot conceive of him as ever learning to talk. Recognition of the impulse to communication as the efficient cause of language-making is an element of primary importance in the theory of the origin of language. No one who either leaves it out of account or denies it will, however ingenious and entertaining his speculations, cast any real light on the earliest history of speech. To inquire under what peculiar circumstances, in connexion with what mode of individual or combined action, a first outburst of oral expression may have taken place, is, on the other hand, quite futile. The needed circumstances were always present when human beings were in one another's society; there was an incessant drawing-on to attempts at mutual understanding which met with occasional, and then ever more frequent and complete success. There inheres in most reasoning upon this subject the rooted assumption, governing opinion even when not openly upheld or con- sciously made, that conceptions have real natural names, and that in a state of nature these will somehow break forth and reveal themselves under favouring circumstances. The falsity of such a view is shown by our whole further discussion.

The character of the motive force to speech determined Begin- the character of the beginnings of speech. That was first nings of

signified which was most capable of intelligible significa- tion, not that which was first in order of importance, as judged by any standard which we can apply to it, or first in order of conceptional development. All attempts to determine the first spoken signs by asking what should have most impressed the mind of primitive man are and must be failures. It was the exigencies and possibilities of practical life, in conditions quite out of reach of our distinct conception, that prescribed the earliest signs of communication. So, by a true and instructive analogy, the beginnings of writing are rude depictions of visible objects; it is now thoroughly recognized that no alphabet, of whatever present character, can have originated in any other way; everything else is gradually arrived at from that—as, indeed, in the ingeniously shaping hands of man, from any central body of signs, though but of small extent, all else is attainable by processes

of analogy and adaptation and transfer. Now what is it that is directly signifiable in the world about us? Evidently, the separate acts and qualities of sensible objects, and nothing else. In writing, or signification to the eye, the first element is the rude depiction of the outline of an object, or of that one of the sum of its characteristic qualities which the eye takes note of and the hand is capable of intelligibly reproducing ; from that the mind understands the whole

Instru- mental- ities of expres- sion.

The voice.

Pte) bh Ol O-e Y

complex object itself, and then whatever further may in the circumstances of its use be suggested by it. So, for example, the picture of a tree signifies primarily a tree, then perhaps wood, something made of wood, and so on; that of a pair of outstretched wings signifies secondarily flight, then soaring, height, and whatever else these may lead to. No concrete thing is signifiable in its totality, or otherwise than by a facile analysis of its constituent qualities, and a selection of the one which is both sufti- ciently characteristic in itself and capable of being called up by a sign before the mind addressed.

And what quality shall be selected depends in great measure upon the instrumentality used for its signification. Of such instrumentalities, men are possessed of a consider- able variety. We must leave out of account that of depiction, as just instanced, because its employment belongs to a much more. advanced state of cultivation, and leads the way to the invention not of speech but of the analogous and auxiliary art of writing. There remain gesture, or changes of position of the various parts of the body, especially of the most mobile parts, the arms and hands; grimace, or the changes of expression of the features of the countenance (in strictness, a variety of the preceding) ; and utterance, or the production of audible sound. It cannot be doubted that, in the first stages of communicative expression, all these three were used to- gether, each for the particular purposes which it was best calculated to serve. The nearest approach to such action that is now possible is when two persons, wholly ignorant of one another's speech,

meet and need to communicate— an imperfect correspondence, because each is trained to habits of expression, and works consciously, and with the advantage of long experience, towards making himself un- derstood ; yet it is good for its main purpose. What they do, to reach mutual comprehension, is like what the first speechless men, unconsciously and infinitely more slowly, learned to do: face, hands, body, voice, are all put to use. It is altogether probable that gesture at first performed the principal part, even to such extent that the earliest human language may be said to have been a language of gesture-signs ; indeed, there exist at the present day such gesture-languages, as those in use between roving tribes of different speech that from time to time meet one another (the most noted example is that of the gesture-language, of a very considerable degree of development, of the prairie tribes of American Indians); or such signs as are the natural resort of those who by deafness are cut off from ordinary spoken intercourse with their fellows. Yet there never can have been a stage or period in which all the three instrumentalities were not put to use together. In fact, they are still all used together; that is even now an ineffective speaking to which grimace and gesture ("'action," as Demosthenes called them) are not added as enforcers ; and the lower the grade of development and culture of a language, the more important, even for intelligibility, is their addition. But voice has won to itself the chief and almost exclusive part in communication, insomuch that we call all communication "language" (1.¢., "' tonguiness")

'just as a race of mutes might call it ''handiness," and

talk (by gesture) of a handiness of grimace. This is not in the least because of any closer connexion of the thinking apparatus with the muscles that act to produce audible sounds than with those that act to produce visible motions; not because there are natural uttered names for conceptions, any more than natural gestured names. It is simply a case of "survival of the fittest," or analogous to the pro- cess by which iron has become the exclusive material of swords, and gold and silver of money: because, namely, experience has shown this to be the material best adapted to this special use. The advantages of voice are numerous

and obvious. There is first its economy, as employing a mechanism that is available for little else, and leaving free for other purposes those indispensable instruments the hands. Then there is its superior perceptibleness: its nice differences impress themselves upon the sense at a distance at which visible motions become indistinct ; they are not hidden by intervening objects; they allow the eyes of the listener as well as the hands of the speaker to be employed in other useful work ; they are as plain in the dark as in the light; and they are able to catch and command the attention of one who is not to be reached in any other way. We might add as the third advantage a superior capability of variation and combination on the part of spoken sounds ; but this is not to be insisted on, inasmuch as we hardly know what a gesture-language might have become if men's ingenuity in expression had been expended through all time upon its elaboration ; and the superiority, however real, can hardly have been obvious enough to serve as a motive: certainly, there are spoken languages now existing whose abundance of resources falls short of what is attainable by gesture. Oral utterance is the form which expression has inevitably taken, the sum of man's endowments being what it is; but it would be a mistake to suppose that a necessity of any other kind is involved in their relation. The fundamental conditions of speech are man's grade of intellectual power and his social instinct ; these being given, his expression follows, availing itself of what means it finds best suited to its purpose ; if voice had been wanting, it would have taken the next best. So, in certain well-known cases, a marked artistic gift, on the part of individuals deprived of the use of hands, has found means of exercise in the feet instead. But men in general have hands, instruments of exquisite tact and power, to serve the needs of their intellect ; and so voice also, to provide and use the tools of thought ; there is no error in maintaining that the voice is given us for speech, if only we do not proceed to draw from such a dictum false conclusions as to the relation between thought and utterance. Man is created with bodily instruments suited to do the work prescribed by his mental capacities ; therein lies the harmony of his endowment.

It is through imitation that all signification becomes Imita- The first written signs are (as already tion.

directly suggestive. noticed) the depictions of visible objects, and could be nothing else ; and, by the same necessity, the first uttered signs were the imitations of audible sounds. To repro- duce any sound of which the originating cause or the cir- cumstances of production are known, brings up of course before the conception that sound, along with the originator, or. circuinstances of origination, or whatever else may be naturally associated with it. There are two special direc- tions in which this mode of sign-making is fruitful: imitation of the sounds of external nature (as the cries of animals, and the noises of inanimate objects when in motion or acted on by other objects) and imitation of human sounds. The two are essentially one in principle, although by some held apart, or even opposed to each other, as respectively the imitative or onomatopoetic and the exclamatory or interjectional beginnings of speech ; they differ only in their spheres of significance, the one being especially suggestive of external objects, the other of inward feelings. There are natural human tones, indica- tive of feeling, as there are natural gestures, poses, modes of facial expression, which either are immediately intel- ligible to us (as is the warning cry of the hen to the day- old chicken), or have their value taught us by our earliest experiences. If we hear a cry of joy or a shriek of pain, a laugh or a groan, we need no explanation in words to tell us what it signifies, any more than when we see a sad face or a drooping attitude. So also the characteristic cry

or act of anything outside ourselves, if even rudely imi- tated, is to us an effective reminder and awakener of con- ception. We have no reason to question that such were the suggestions of the beginnings of uttered expression. The same means have made their contributions to language even down to our own day; we call words so produced "onomatopoetic " (7.¢., "'name-making"), after the example of the Greeks, who could not conceive that actually new additions to language should be made in any other way. What and how wide the range of the imitative principle, and what amount of language-signs it was capable of yielding, is a subject for

special investigation—or rather, of speculation, since anything like exact knowledge in regard to it will never be attained ; and the matter is one of altogether secondary consequence; it is sufficient for our purpose that enough could certainly be won in this way to serve as the effective germs of speech.

All the natural means of expression are still at our command, and are put to more or less use by us, and their products are as intelligible to us as they have been to any generation of our ancestors, back to the very first. They are analogous also to the means of communication of the lower animals; this, so far as we know, consists in observing and interpreting one another's movements and natural sounds (where there are such). But language is a step beyond this, and different from it. To make language, the intent to signify must be present. A cry wrung out by pain, or a laugh of amusement, though intelligible, is not language ; either of them, if consciously reproduced in order to signify to another pain or pleasure, is language. Soa cough within hearing of any one attracts his attention ; but to cough, or to produce any other sound, articulate or inarticulate, for the purpose of attracting another's attention, is to commit an act of language- making, such as in human history preceded in abundance the establishment of definite traditional signs for concep- tions. Here begins to appear the division between human language and all brute expression ; since we do not know that any animal but man ever definitely took this step. It would be highly interesting to find out just how near any come to it; and to this point ought to be especially directed the attention of those who are investigating the communication of the lower animals in its relation to human communication. Among the animals of highest intelligence that associate with man and learn something of his ways, a certain amount of sign-making expressly for communication is not to be denied ; the dog that barks at a door because he knows that somebody will come and let him in is an instance of it; perhaps, in wild life, the throwing out of sentinel birds from a flock, whose warning cry shall advertise their fellows of the threat of danger, is as near an approacii.to it as is anywhere made.

But the actual permanent beginnings of speech are only reached when the natural basis is still further abandoned, and signs begin to be used, not because their natural suggestiveness is seen in them, but by imitation, from

the example of others who have been observed to use the same sign for the same purpose. Then for the first time the means.of communication becomes something to be handed down, rather than made anew by each individual ; it takes on that traditional character which is the essential char- acter of all human institutions, which appears not less in the forms of social organization, the details of religious ceremonial, the methods of art and the arts, than in lan- guage. That all existing speech, and all known recorded speech, is purely traditional, cannot at all be questioned. It is proved even by the single fact that for any given conception there are as many different spoken signs as there are languages—say a thousand (this number is rather far within than beyond the truth), each of them intelli-

gible to him who has learned to use it and to associate it with the conception to which it belongs, but unintelligible to the users of the nine hundred and ninety-nine other signs, as these are all unintelligible to him ; unless, indeed, he learn a few of them also, even as at the beginning he learned the one that he calls his own. What single sign, and what set of signs, any individual shall use, depends upon the community into the midst of which he is cast, by birth or other circumstances, during his first years. That it does not depend upon his race is demonstrated by facts the most numerous and various; the African whose purity of descent is attested by every feature is found all over the world speaking just that language, or jargon, into the midst of which the fates of present or former slavery have brought his parents; every civilized community contains elements of various lineage, combined into one by unity of speech ; and instances are frequent enough where whole nations speak a tongue of which their ancestors knew nothing: for example, the Celtic Gauls and the Germanic Normans of France speak the dialect of a geographically insignificant district in central Italy, while we ourselves can hardly utter-a sentence or write a line without bringing in more or less of that same dialect. There is not an item of any tongue of which we know any- thing that 7s "natural" expression, or to the possession of which its speaker is brought by birth instead of by education; there is even very little that is traceably founded on such natural expression ; everywhere Gécus or human attribution reigns supreme, and the original dvous or natural significance has disappeared, and is only to be found by

theoretic induction (as we have found it above). It seems to some as if a name like cuckoo (one of the most striking available cases of onomatopeeia) were a “ natural ” one; but there is just as much @éovs in it as in any other name; it implies the observation of an aggregate of qualities in a certain bird, and the selection of one among them as the convenient basis of a mutual understanding when the bird is in question; every animal conspicuous to us must have its designation, won in one way or another ; and in this case, to imitate the characteristic cry is the most available way. If anything but convenience and availability were involved, all our names for animals would have to be and to remain imitations of the sounds they make. That the name of cuckoo is applied also to the female and young, and at other than the singing season, and then to related species which do not make the same sound—all helps to show the essentially conventional character of even this name. An analogous process of elimination of original meaning, and reduction to the value of conventional designation merely, is to be seen in every part of language, throughout its whole history. Since men ceased to derive their names from signs having a natural suggestiveness, and began to make them from other names already in use with an understood value, every new name has had its etymology and its historical occasion— as, for example, the name quarantine from the two-score (quarantaine) of days of precautionary confinement, or volume from its being rolled up, or book from a beech-wood staff, or copper from Cyprus, or lunacy from a fancied influence of the moon, or priest from being an older (peo Birepos) person, or butterfly from the butter-yellow colour of a certain common species: every part of our language, as of every other, is full of such examples—but, when once the name is applied, it belongs to that to which it is applied, and no longer to its relatives by etymology ; its origin is neglected, and its form may be gradually changed beyond recognition, or its meaning so far altered that comparison with the original shall seem a joke or an absurdity. This is a regular and essential part of the process of name-making in all human speech, and from

Brute speech and human speech,

Perit © 50% ¥

the very beginning of the history of speech : in fact (as pointed out above), the latter can only be said to have begun when this process was successfully initiated, when uttered signs began to be, what they have ever since continued to be, conventional, or dependent only on a mutual understanding. Thus alone did language gain the capa- city of unlimited growth and development. The sphere and scope of natural expression are narrowly bounded ; but there is no end to the resources of conventional sign- making.

It is well to point out here that this change of the basis of men's communication from natural suggestiveness to mutual understanding, and the consequent purely conven- tional character of all human language, in its every part and particle, puts an absolute line of demarcation between the latter and the means of communication of all the lower animals. The two are not of the same kind, any more than human society in its variety of organization is of the same kind with the instinctive herding of wild cattle or swarming of insects, any more than human architecture with the instinctive burrowing of the fox and nest-building of the bird, any more than human industry and accumula- tion of capital with the instinctive hoarding of bees and beavers. In all these cases alike, the action of men isa result of the adaptation of means at hand to the satisfac- tion of felt needs, or of purposes dimly perceived at first, but growing clearer with gradually acquired experience. Man is the only being that has established institutions — gradually accumulated and perfected results of the exercise of powers analogous in kind to, but greatly differing in degree from, those of the lower animals. The difference in degree of endowment does not constitute the difference in language, it only leads to it. There was a time when all existing human beings were as destitute of language as the dog ; and that time would come again for any number of human beings who should be cut off (if that were prac- ticable) from all instruction by their fellows: only they would at once proceed to re-create language, society, and arts, by the same steps by which their own remote ancestors created those which we now possess ; while the dog would remain what he and his ancestors have always been, a creature of very superior intelligence, indeed, as compared with most, of infinite intelligence as compared with many, yet incapable of rising by the acquisition of culture, through the formation and development of traditional institutions. There is just the same saltus existent in the difference between man's conventional speech and the natural com-

munication of the lower races as in that between men's forms of society and the instinctive associations of the lower races ; but it is no greater and no other ; it is neither more absolute and characteristic nor more difficult to explain. Hence those who put forward language as the distinction between man and the lower animals, and those who look upon our language as the same in kind with the means of communication of the lower animals, only much more complete and perfect, fail alike to comprehend the true nature of language, and are alike wrong in their argu- ments and conclusions. No addition to or multiplication of brute speech would make anything like human speech ; the two are separated by a step which no animal below man has ever taken ; and, on the other hand, language is only the most conspicuous among those institutions the development of which has constituted human progress, while their possession constitutes human culture.

With the question of the origin of man, whether or not developed out of lower animal forms, intermediate to the anthropoid apes, language has nothing to do, nor can its study ever be made to contribute anything to the solution of that question. If there once existed creatures above the apes and below man, who were extirpated by primitive

769

| man as his especial rivals in the struggle for existence, or

became extinct in any other way, there is no difficulty in supposing them to have possessed forms of speech, more rudimentary and imperfect than ours. At any rate, all existing human speech is one in the essential characteristics which we have thus far noted or shall hereafter have to consider, even as humanity is one in its distinction from the lower.animals; the differences are in non-essentials, All speech is one in the sense that every human being, of whatever race he may be, is capable of acquiring any existing tongue, and of using it for the same purposes for which its present possessors use it, with such power and effect as his individual capacity allows, and without any essential change in the mental operations carried on by means of speech—even as he may acquire any other of the items of culture belonging to a race not his own. The difference between employing one language and another is like that between employing one instrument and another in

mechanical arts; one instrument may be better than another, and may enable its user to turn out better work, but the human ingenuity behind both is the same, and works in the same way. Nor has the making of language anything whatever to do with making man what he is, as an animal species having a certain physical form and intel- lectual endowment. Being what he is by nature, man has by the development of language and other institutions become what he is by culture. His acquired culture is the necessary result of his native endowment, not the contrary. The acquisition of the first stumbling beginnings of a superior means of communication had no more influ- ence to raise him from a simian to a human being than the present high culture and perfected speech of certain races has to lift them up to something more than human, and specifically different from the races of inferior culture. It cannot be too absolutely laid down that differences of language, down to the possession of language at all, are differences only in respect to education and culture.

How long man, after he came into being such as he now is, physically and intellectually, continued to communicate with imitative signs of direct significance, when the pro- duction of traditional signs began, how rapidly they were accumulated, and how long any traces of their imitative origin clave to them—these and the like questions it is at present idle to try to answer even conjecturally : just as it is to seek to determine when the first instruments were used, how soon they were shaped instead of being left crude, at what epoch fire was reduced to service, andsoon. The stages of development and their successionare clear enough ; to fix their chronology will doubtless never be found prac- ticable. There is much reason for holding, as some do, that the very first items of culture were hardest to win and cost most time, the rate of accumulation (as in the case of capital) increasing with the amount accumulated. Beyond all reasonable question, however, there was a positively long period of purely imitative signs, and a longer one of mixed imitative and traditional ones, the latter gradually gaining upon the former, before the present condition of things was reached, when the production of new signs by imitation is only sporadic and of the utmost rarity, and all language-signs besides are traditional, their increase in any community being solely by variation and combination, and by borrowing from other communities.

Of what nature, in various respects, this earliest The root-

language-material was is sufficiently clear. The signs, in the first place, were of the sort that we call "roots." By this is only meant that they were integral signs, signifi- cant in their entirety, not divisible into parts, of which one signified one thing and another another thing, or of which one gave the main significance, while another was an added sign of kind or relation. In a language of XVIII. — 97

Lan- guage

and cul-

ture.

Develop- ment of language-

signs,

stage,

Earliest phonetic forms.

770

developed structure like our own, we arrive at such "roots" mainly by an artificial stripping-off of the signs of relation which almost every word still has, or can be shown to have once had. In wun-cost-li-ness, for example, cost is the cen- trally significant element ; so far as English is concerned, it is a root, about which cluster a whole body of forms and derivatives ; if we could follow its history no farther, it would be to us an ultimate root, as much so as bend or sing or mean. But we can follow it up, to the Latin com- pound con-sta, a root sta with a prefixed formative element con. Then sta, which in slightly varied forms we find in a whole body of related tongues called " Aryan," having in them all the same significance "stand," is an Aryan root, and to us an ultimate one, because we can follow its history no farther; but there always remains the possibility that it is as far from being actually original as is the English root cost: that is to say, it is not within

our power ever to get back to the really primitive elements of speech, and to demonstrate their character by positive evidence. The reason for accepting a primitive root- stage of language is in great part theoretical: because nothing else is reconcilable with any acceptable view of the origin of language. The law of the simplicity of beginnings is an absolute one for everything of the nature of an institution, for every gradually developed product of the exercise of human faculties. That an original speech-sign should be of double character, one part of it meaning this and another part that, or one part radical and the other formative, is as inconceivable as that the first instruments should have had handles, or the first shelters a front room anda back one. But this theoretical reason finds all the historical support which it needs in the fact that, through all the observable periods of language- history, we see formative elements coming from words originally independent, and not from anything else. Thus, in the example just taken, the ~~le~~ of costliness is a suffix of so recent growth that its whole history is distinctly traceable ; it is simply our adjective like, worn down in both form and meaning to a subordinate value in combina- tion with certain words to which it was appended, and then added freely as a suffix to any word from which it was desired to make a, derivative adjective—or, later but more often, a derivative adverb. The ness is much older (though only Germanic), and its history obscurer ; it con- tains, in fact, two parts, neither of them of demonstrable origin ; but there are equivalent later suffixes, as ship in hardship and dom in wisdom, whose derivation from in- dependent words (shape, doom) is beyond question. The un- of uncostliness is still more ancient (being Aryan), and its probably pronominal origin hardly available as an illustration ; but the. comparatively modern prefix be-, of become, belie, &e., ccmes from the independent preposition by, by the same process as -ly or ~~li~~ from like. And the con which has contributed its part to the making of the quasi-root cost is also in origin identical with the Latin preposition cwm "with." By all the known facts of later language-growth, we are driven to the opinion that every formative element goes back to some previously existing independent word; and hence that in analysing our present words we are retracing the steps of an earlier synthesis, or following up the history of our formed words toward the unformed roots out of which they have grown. The doctrine of the historical growth of language-structure leads by a logical necessity to that of a root-stage in the

history of all language ; the only means of avoiding the latter is the assumption of a miraculous element in the former.

Of what phonetic form were the earliest traditional speech-signs is, so far as essentials are concerned, to be inferred with reasonable certainty. They were doubtless

Ef 1 "OC here

articulate: that is to say, composed of alternating con- sonant and vowel sounds, like our present speech ; and they probably contained a part of the same sounds which we now use. All human language is of this character ; there are no sounds in any tongue which are not learned and reproduced as easily by children of one race as of another ; all dialects admit a like phonetic analysis, and are representable by alphabetic signs; and the leading sounds, consonant and vowel, are even practically the same in all; though every dialect has its own (for the most part, readily definable and imitable) niceties of their pronuucia- tion, while certain sounds are rare, or even met with only in a single group of languages, or in a single language. Articulate sounds are such as are capable of being combined with others into that succession of distinct yet connectable syllables which is the characteristic of human speech- utterance. The name "articulate" belongs to this utter- ance, as distinguished from inarticulate human sounds and cries, and from the sounds made by the lower animals,

The word itself is Latin, by translation from the Greek,

and, though very widely misunderstood, and even deliber- ately misapplied in some languages to designate all sound,

of whatever kind, uttered by any living creature, is a most

happily chosen and truly descriptive term. It signifies

"jointed," or broken up into successive parts, like a limb

or stem; the joints are the syllables; and the syllabic

structure is mainly effected by the alternation of closer or consonant sounds with opener or vowel sounds. The simplest syllabic combination (as the facts of language show) is that of a single consonant with a following vowel ; and there are languages even now existing which reject any other. Hence there is much plausibility in the view that the first speech-signs will have had this phonetic form, and been monosyllabic, or dissyllabic only by repetition (reduplication) of one syllable, such as the speech of very young children shows to have a peculiar ease and natural-ness. The point, however, is one of only secondary import-ance, and may be left to the further progress of phonetic study to settle, if it can; the root-theory, at any rate, is not bound to any definite form or extent of root, but only denies that there can have been any grammatical struc- ture in language except by development in connexion with experience in the use of language. What particular sounds, and how many, made up the first spoken alphabet, is also a matter of conjecture merely ; they are likely to have been the closest consonants and the openest vowels, medial utterances being of later development.

As regards their significant value, the first language-Char- signs must have denoted those physical acts and qualities acter of which are directly

apprehensible by the senses; both Rect

; rae ., Speech. because these alone are directly signifiable, and because it was only they that untrained human beings had the power to deal with or the occasion to use. Such signs would then be applied to more intellectual uses as fast as there was occasion for it. The whole history of language, down to our own day, is full of examples of the reduction of physical terms and phrases to the expression of non- physical conceptions and relations ; we can hardly write a line without giving illustrations of this kind of linguistic growth. So pervading is it, that we never regard ourselves as having read the history of any intellectual or moral term till we have traced it back toa physical origin, And we are still all the time drawing figurative comparisons between material and moral things and processes, and call- ing the latter by the names of the former. There has never been any difficulty in providing for new knowledge and more refined thought by putting to new uses the earlier and grosser materials of speech.

As a matter of course, whatever we now signify by our simple expressions for simple acts, wants, and the like,

Develop- ment of language,

in Aryan

speech.

FPHeoiitonL Ove ¥

was intended to be signified through the first speech-signs by the users of them. But to us, with our elaborated apparatus of speech, the sentence, composed of subject and predicate, with a verb or special predicative word to signify the predication, is established as the norm of expression, and we regard everything else as an abbreviated sentence, or as involving a virtual sentence. With a view to this, we must have "parts of speech": that is, words held apart in office from one another, each usable for such and such a purpose and no other, and answering a due variety of pur- poses, so that when they are combined they fit together, as parts composing a whole, and the desired meaning is made clear. Inflexions, too, lend their aid; or else

auxiliary words of various kinds answering the same pur- pose—namely, of determining the relations of the members of the sentence. But all our success in understanding the earliest stages of language depends upon our power to con- ceive a state of things where none of these distinctions were established, where one speech-sign was like another, calling up a conception in its indefinite entirety, and leay- ing the circumstances of the case to limit its application. Such a language is far below ours in explicitness; but it would suffice for a great deal of successful communication ; indeed (as will be shown farther on), there are many lan- guages even now in existence which are little better off. Soa look of approval or disgust, a gesture of beckoning or repulsion, a grunt of assent or inquiry, is as signifi- cant as a sentence, means a sentence, is translatable into a sentence, and hence may even in a certain way be called a sentence ; and in the same way, but only so, the original roots of language may be said to have been sentences. In point of fact, between the holophrastic gesture or uttered sign and the sentence which we can now substitute for it—for example, between the sign of beckoning and the equivalent sentence, "'I want you to come here "—lies the whole history of development of inflective speech. What has been this history of development, how the first scanty and formless signs have been changed into the immense variety and fulness of existing speech, it is of course impossible to point out in detail, or by demonstra- tion of facts, because nearly the whole process is hidden in the darkness of an impenetrable past. The only way to cast any light upon it is by careful induction from the change and growth which are seen to have been going on in the recent periods for which we have recorded evidence, or which are going on at the present time. Of some groups of related languages we can read the life for three or four thousand years back, and by comparison can infer it much farther ; and the knowledge thus won is what we have to apply to the explanation of periods and languages otherwise unknown. Nothing has a right to be admitted as a factor in language-growth of which the action is not demonstrable in recorded language. Our own family of languages is the one of whose development most is known, by observation and well-warranted inference ; and it may be well here to sketch the most important features of its history, by way of general illustration. ; Apparently the earliest class-distinction traceable in Aryan speech is that of pronominal roots, or signs of posi- tion, from the more general mass of roots. It 1s not a

formal distinction, marked by a structural difference, but, so far as can be seen, is founded only on the assignment by usage of certain elements to certain offices. Formal distinction began with combination, the addition of one element to another, their fusion into a single word, and the reduction of the one part to a subordinate value, as sign of a certain modification of meaning of the other. Thus, doubtless by endings of pronominal origin, were made the first verb-forms, or words used only when predi- cation was intended (since that is all that makes a verb),

MAA

conveying at first a distinction of persons only, then of persons and numbers, while the further distinctions of tense and mode were by degrees added. 'To the nouns, which became nouns by the setting up of the separate and special class of verbs, were added in like manner distinctions of case, of number, and of gender. With the separation of noun and verb, and the establishment of their respective inflexion, the creative work of language-making is virtually done; the rest is a matter of differ- entiation of uses. For the noun (noun substantive) and the adjective (noun adjective) become two parts of speech only by a gradually deepened separation of use; there is no original or formal distinction between them ; the pro- nouns merely add the noun-inflexion to a special set of stems ; adverbs are a part of the same formation as noun- cases; prepositions are adverbs with a specialized construc- tion, of secondary growth ; conjunctions are the products of a like specialization ; articles, where found at all, are merely weakened demonstratives and numerals.

To the process of form-making, as exhibited in this history, belong two parts: the one external, consisting in the addition of one existing element of speech to another and their combination into a single word; the other internal, consisting in the adaptation of the compound to its special use and involving the subordination of one element to the other. Both parts appear also abundantly in other departments of language-change, and throughout the whole history of our languages; nothing has to be assumed for the earliest formations which is not plainly illustrated in the latest. For example, the last important addition to the formative apparatus of English is the common adverb-making suffix -ly, coming, as already pointed out,

from the independent adjective like. There was nothing at first to distinguish a compound like godly (godlike) from one like storm-tossed, save that the former was more adaptable than the other to wider uses; resem- blance is an idea easily generalized into appurtenance and the like, and the conversion of godlike to godly is a simple result of the processes of phonetic change described farther on. The extension of the same element to combination with adjectives instead of nouns, and its conversion to adverb-making value, is a much more striking case of adaptation, and is nearly limited to English, among the Germanic languages that have turned like into a suffix. A similar striking case, of combination and adaptation, is seen in the Romanic adverb-making suffix mente or ment, coming from the Latin ablative mente, "with mind." So, to make a Romanic future like donneraz, "I shall give," there was needed in the first place the pre-existing elements donner, "to give," and az, "I have," and their combination ; but this is only a part; the other indispensable part is the gradual adaptation of a phrase meaning "I have (some- thing before me] for giving" to the expression of simple futurity, ""donabo." So far as the adaptation is concerned, the case is quite parallel to that of j'az donné, "I have given," &c. (equivalent phrases or combinations are found in many languages), where the expression of possession of something that is acted on has been in like manner modified into the expression of past action. Parallel in both combination and adaptation is the past tense loved, from love-did, while we have again the same adaptation without combination in the equivalent phrase did love.

That these are examples of the process by which the whole inflective structure of Aryan language was built up admits of no reasonable question. Our belief that it is so rests upon the solid foundation that we can demonstrate no other process, and that this one is sufficient. It is true that we can prove such an origin for our formative elements in only a small minority of instances; but this is just what was to be expected, considering what we know

All formal elements once material.

7/2

of the disguising processes of language-growth. No one would guess in the mere y of ably (for able-ly) the presence of the adjective like, any more than in the altered final of sent and the shortened vowel of Jed the effect of a did once added to send and lead. The true history of these forms can be shown, because there happen to be other facts left in existence to show it; where such facts are not within reach, we are left to infer by analogy from the known to the unknown. The validity of our inference can only be shaken by showing that there are forms incapable of having been made in this way, or that there are and have been other ways of making forms. Of the former there is evidently but small chance; if a noun-form meaning "with mind" can become the means of conversion of all the adjectives of a language into adverbs, and a verb meaning "have" (and, yet earlier, "seize") of signifying both future and past time, there is obviously nothing that is impossible of attainment by such means. As regards the latter, no one appears to have even attempted to demonstrate the genesis of formative elements in any other way during the historical periods of language ; it is simply

assumed that the early methods of language-making will |

have been something different from and superior in spon- taneity and fruitfulness to the later ones; that certain forms, or forms at certain periods, were made out-and-out, as forms ; that signs of formal distinction somehow exuded from roots and stems; that original words were many- membered, and that a formative value settled in some member of them—and the like. Such doctrines are purely fanciful, and so opposed to the teachings both of observa- tion and of sound theory that the epithet absurd is hardly too strong to apply to them. If the later races, of developed intelligence, and trained in the methods of a fuller expression, can only win a new form by a long and gradual process of combination and adaptation, why should the earlier and comparatively untrained generations have been able to do any better? The advantage ought to be, if anywhere, on our side. The progress of language in every department, accompanying and representing the advance of the race, on the whole, in the art of speaking as in other arts, is from the grosser to the more refined, from the physical to the moral and intellectual, from the material to the formal. The conversion of compounds into forms, by the reduction of one of their elements to forma- tive value, is

simply a part of the general process which also creates auxiliaries and form-words and connectives, all the vocabulary of mind, and all the figurative phraseology that gives life and vigour to our speech. If a copula, expressive of the grammatical relation of predication, could be won only by attenuation of the meaning of verbs signifying " prow," "breathe," "stand," and the like mit our auxiliaries of tense and mode all go traceably back to words of physical meaning (as have to "seize," may to 'be great or strong," shall to "be under penalty," and so on) ; if of comes from the comparatively physical of, and Jor from "before, forward" ; if relative pronouns are special- ized demonstratives and interrogatives ; if right means etymologically "straight," and wrong means "twisted " ; if spirit is "blowing," and intellect a " picking out among," and understanding a "getting beneath," and development an "unfolding"; if an event takes place or comes to pass, and then drops out of mind and is Jorgotten (opposite of gotten)—then it is of no avail to object to the grossness of any of the processes by which, in earlier language or in later, the expression of formal relations is won. The mental sense of the relation expressed is entirely superior to and independent of the means of its expression. He who, to express the plural of man, says what is equivalent to man-man or heap-man (devices which are met with in not a few languages) has just as good a sense of plurality

. PHT beoOm Oe y

as he who says men or homines; that sense is no more degraded in him by the coarseness of the phrase he uses to signify it than is our own sense of eventuality and of pastness by the undisguised coarseness of take place and have been. In short, it is to be laid down with the utmost distinctness and confidence, as a law of language-growth, that there is nothing formal anywhere in language which was not once material ; that tle formal is made out of the material, by processes which began in the earliest history of language and are still in action.

We have dropped here the restriction to our own or Laws of Aryan language with which we began, because it is evident change

that what is true of this family of speech, one of the most

: : é th. highly organized that exist, may also be true of the rest °°”

must be true of them, unless some valid evidence be found to the contrary. The unity of human nature makes human speech alike in the character of its beginnings and in the general features of its after-history. Everywhere among men, a certain store of expression, body of tradi- tional signs of thought, being given, as used by a certain community, it is capable of increase on certain accordant lines, and only on them. In some languages, and under peculiar circumstances, borrowing is a great means of increase ; but it is the most external and least organically important of all. Out-and-out invention (which, so far as we can see, must be of the kind called by us onomato- poetic) is found to play only a very insignificant part in the historical periods of language,—clearly because there are other and easier modes of gaining new expression for what needs to be expressed. In the course of phonetic change, a word sometimes varies into two (or more) forms, and makes so many words, which are differently turned to account. Everything beyond this must be the product of combination ; there is no other way, so far as concerns the externals of speech. Then, partly as accompanying and aiding this external growth, partly as separate from and supplementing it, there is in all language an internal growth, making no appearance in the audible part of speech, consisting in multiplication of meanings, their modification in the way of precision or comprehension or correctness, the restriction of words to certain uses, and soon. Along with these, too, a constant change of phonetic form constitutes an inseparable part of the life of language. Speech is no more stable with respect to the sounds of which it is composed than with respect to its grammatical forms, its vocabulary, or the body of concep- tions signified by it. Even nearly related languages differ as much in their spoken alphabets and the combinations of sounds they admit, and in their uttered forms of words historically the same, as in any other part; and the same is true of local dialects, and of class dialects within the same community. Phonetic change has nothing whatever to do with change of meaning; the two are the product of wholly independent tendencies. Sometimes, indeed, they chance to coincide, as in the distinction of minite “small,” and minute “moment” ; but it is only by chance, as the spoken accordance of second in its two meanings (“next” and “sixtieth of a minute ”) shows ; words that maintain their identity of value most obstinately, like the numerals, are liable to vary

indefinitely in form (so four, Jidvor, quatuor, técoap-es, &c., from an original katwar ; Jive, quinque, wévte, coic, &e., from penka—while, on the other hand, two and three show as striking an accordance of form as of meaning through all the same languages) ; what is far the most common is that the word becomes very unlike its former self in both respects, like priest from the Greek zpecBurepos (presbyter), literally "older man." Human convenience is, to be sure, the governing motive in both changes; but it is convenience of two different kinds: the one mental, depending on the fact

eH Loe Oe Y

(pointed out above) that a name when once applied belongs to the thing to which it is applied, to the disregard of its etymological connexions, does not need to be changed when the thing changes, and is ready for new application to anything that can be brought into one class with the latter ; and the other physical, depending on the organs of speech and their successive movements, by which the sounds that make up the word are produced. Phonetic convenience is economy of effort on the part of those organs ; and to no other law than that of economy of utterance have any of the phenomena of phonetic change been found traceable (though it is also to be noted that some phenomena have not hitherto been successfully brought under it, and that the way of effecting this is still unclear). " Euphony," which used to be appealed to as explanation, is a false principle, except so far as the term may be made an idealized synonym of economy. The ear finds that agreeable which the organs of utterance find facile. Economy in utterance is no isolated tendency ; it is the same that plays its part in all other kinds of human action, and in language appears equally in the abbreviation of the sentence by leaving out parts that can be spared without loss of intelligibility. It is an insidious tendency, always lying in wait, like gravitation, to pull down what is not sufficiently held up,—the holding-up force in language being the faithfulness of tradition, or accurate reproduction by the learner and user of the signs which he has acquired. No generation of men has any intention to speak otherwise than as its predecessor has spoken, or any consciousness that it is doing so; and yet, from generation to generation, words are shortened, sounds are assimilated to one another, and one element passes out of use while a new one is introduced. Abbreviation and assimilation are the most conspicuous

departments of phonetic change, and those in which the nature of the governing tendency is most plainly seen. Taken by itself, one sound is as easy as another to the person who has accustomed himself to it from childhood ; and those which the young child most easily acquires are not those which in the history of speech are least liable to alteration ; it is especially in the combinations and transitions of rapid speaking that the tongue, as it were, finds out for itself easier ways of performing its task, by dropping and slurring and adapting. To trace out the infinitely varied items of this change, to co-ordinate and compare them and discover their reasons, constitutes a special department of language- study, which is treated under the head of SpEEcH SouNDs. It only needs to be pointed out here that phonetic change plays a necessary part in the structural development of language, by integrating compound words through fusion and loss of identity of their component parts, and, what is of yet more importance, by converting them into forms, through disguise of identity of one of the parts and its phonetic subordination to the other part. It is this that turns, for example, the compound god-like into the deriva- tive godly, the compound Jdove-did into the verbal form loved. And yet one further result sometimes follows: an internal change is wrought by phonetic influence in the body of a word, which change then may in the further history of the word be left as the sole means of distinction between one form and another. It is thus that, in the most recent period, the distinction of led from lead and met from meet and so on has been made ; the added auxi- liary which originally made these preterites induced a shortening of the root-vowel, and this was left behind when the auxiliary disappeared by the usual process of abbreviation. It is in the same way that the distinctions of men from man, of were from was, of set from sit, with all théir analogues, were brought about: bya modification of vowel-sound (Ger. Umlaut) occasioned by the presence

Vis

in the following syllable of an ¢-vowel, which in the older stages of the language is still to be seen there. And the distinctions of sing, sang, sung, and song, of bind, bound, band, and bond, are certainly of the same kind, though they go back so far in the history of our family of lan- guages that their beginnings are not yet clearly demon- strable; they were in their origin phonetic accidents, inorganic, mere accompaniments and results of

external combinations which bore the office of distinction of mean- ing and were sufficient to it; in some of our languages they have been disregarded and cffaced, in others they have risen to prominent importance. To regard these internal changes as primary and organic is parallel with assuming the primariness of the formative apparatus of language in general; like this, it ignores the positive evidence we have of the secondary production of such differences ; they are, like everything else in linguistic structure, the outcome of combination and adaptation. Borrowing, or the taking-in of material out of another lan- guage, has been more than once referred to above as some- times an important element in language-history, though less deep-reaching and organic than the rest. There is nothing anomalous about borrowing ; it is rather in essen- tial accordance with the whole process of language-acquisi- tion. All our names were adopted by us because they were already in use by others; and a community is in the same way capable of taking a new name from a community with which it comes in contact as an individual from individuals. Not that it seeks or admits in this way new names for old things; but it accepts new things along with the names that seem to belong to them. Hence any degree of intercourse between one community and another, leading to exchange of products or of knowledge, is sure to lead also to some borrowing of names; and there is hardly a language in the world, except of races occupying peculiarly isolated positions, that does not contain a certain amount of foreign material thus won, even as our English has elements in its vocabulary from half the other tongues in the world. The scale of borrowing is greatly increased when one people becomes the pupil of another in respect of its civilization: hence the abundant classical elements in all the European tongues, even the non-Romanic; hence the Arabic material in Persian and Turkish and Malay ; hence the Chinese in Japanese and Corean; and, as a further result, even dead languages, like the Greek and Latin and the Sanskrit, become stores to be drawn upon in that learned and conscious quest of new expression which in the school-stage of culture supplements or even in a measure replaces the unconscious growth of natural

~~*speech. So, in mixture of communities, which is a highly*~~

intensified form of contact and intercourse, there follows such mixture of speech as the conditions of the case deter- mine; yet not a mixture on equal

terms, through all the departments of vocabulary and grammar; the resulting speech (just as when two individuals learn to speak alike) is essentially that of the one constituent of the new com- munity, with more or less material borrowed from that of the other. What is most easily taken in out of another language is the names of concrete things ; every degree of removal from this involves additional difficulty—names of abstract things, epithets, verbs, connectives, forms. Indeed, the borrowing of forms in the highest sense, or forms of inflexion, is well-nigh or quite impossible ; no example of it has been demonstrated in any of the historical periods of language, though it is sometimes adventurously assumed as a part of prehistoric growth. How nearly it may be approached is instanced by the presence in English of such learned plurals as phenomena and strata. This extreme resistance to mixture in the department of inflexion is the ground on which some deny the possibility of mixture in

o

Borrow. ing or mixing,

Isolating lan- guages.

774

language, and hence the existence of such a thing as a mixed language. The difference is mainly a verbal one; but it would seem about as reasonable to deny that a region is inundated so long as the tops of its highest mountains are above water. According to the simple and natural meaning of the term, nearly all languages are mixed, in varying degree and within varying limits, which the circumstances of each case must explain.

These are the leading processes of change seen at work in all present speech and in all known past speech, and hence to be regarded as having worked through the whole history of speech. By their operation, every existing tongue has been developed out of its rudimentary radical condition to that in which we now see it. The variety of existing languages is well-nigh infinite, not only in their material but in their degree of development and the kind of resulting structure. Just as the earlier stages in the history of the use of tools are exemplified even at the present day by races which

have never advanced beyond them, so is it in regard to language also—and, of course, in the latter case as in the former, this state of things strengthens and establishes the theory of a gradual development. There is not an element of linguistic struc- ture possessed by some languages which is not wanting in others ; and there are even tongues which have no formal structure, and which cannot be shown ever to have ad- vanced out of the radical stage. The most noted example of such a rudimentary tongue is the Chinese, which in its present condition lacks all formal distinction of the parts of speech, all inflexion, all derivation ; each of its words (all of them monosyllables) is an integral sign, not divisible into parts of separate significance ; and each in general is usable wherever the radical idea is wanted, with the value of one part of speech or another, as determined by the connexion in which it stands: a condition parallel with that in which Aryan speech may be regarded as existing prior to the beginnings of its career of formal development briefly sketched above. And there are other tongues, related and unrelated to Chinese, of which the same description, or one nearly like it, might be given. To call such languages radical is by no means to maintain that they exhibit the primal roots of human speech, unchanged or only phonetically changed, or that they have known nothing of the combination of element with element. Of some of them, the roots are in greater or less part dissyl- labic ; and we do not yet know that all dissyllabism, and even that all complexity of syllable beyond a single con- sonant with following vowel, is not the result of combina- tion or reduplication. But all combination is not form- making ; it needs a whole class of combinations, with a recognized common element in them producing a recog- nized common modification of meaning, to make a form. The same elements which (in Latin, and even to some extent in English also) are of formal value in con-stant and pre-dict lack that character in cost and preach ; the same luke which makes adverbs in tru-ly and right-ly is present without any such value in such and which (from so-like and who-like) ; cost and preach, and such and which, are as purely radical in English as other words of which we do not happen to be able to demonstrate the composite character. And so a Chinese monosyllable or an Egyptian or Poly- nesian dissyllable is radical, unless there can be demon- strated in some part of it a formative value ; and a lan- guage wholly composed of such words is a root-language. N either is the possibility to be denied that a language like Chinese may have had at some period of its

history the weak beginnings of a formal developmeat, since ex- tinguished by the same processes of phonetic decay which im English have wiped out so many signs of a formal character, and brought back so considerable a part of the

Miah O16 CY

vocabulary to monosyllabism ; but it remains thus far a possibility merely ; and the development would need to have been of the scantiest character to be so totally destroyed by phonetic influences. In languages thus constituted, the only possible external alteration is that phonetic change to which all human speech, from the very beginning of its traditional life, is liable; the only growth is internal, by that multiplication and adaptation and im- provement of meanings which is equally an inseparable part of all language-history. This may include the reduc- tion of certain elements to the value of auxiliaries, particles, form-words, such as play an important part in analytical tongues like English, and are perhaps also instanced in prehistoric Aryan speech by the class of pronominal roots, Phrases take the place of compounds and of inflexions, and the same element may have an auxiliary value in certain connexions while retaining its full force in others, like, for instance, our own have. It is not easy to define the distinction between such phrase-collocations and the beginnings of agglutination ; yet the distinction itself ig in general clearly enough to be drawn (like that in French between donnerai and ai donné), when the whole habit of the language is well understood.

Such languages, constituting the small minority of human tongues, are wont to be called "isolating," 7.e., using each element by itself, in its integral form. All besides are "'agelutinative," or more or less compounded into words containing a formal part, an indicator of class- value. Here the differences, in kind and degree, are very great; the variety ranges from a scantiness hardly superior to Chinese isolation up to an intricacy compared with which Aryan structure is hardly fuller than Chinese. Some brief characterization of the various families of language in this respect will be given farther on, in connexion with their classification. The attempt is also made to classify the great mass of agglutinating tongues under different heads: those are ranked as simply "agelutinative " in which there is a

general conservation of the separate identity of root or stem on the one hand, and of formative element, suffix or prefix, on the other ; while the name "inflective," used in a higher and pregnant sense, is given to those that admit a superior fusion and integration of the two parts, to the disguise and loss of separate identity, and, yet more, with the development of an internal change as auxiliary to or as substitute for the original agglutination. But there is no term in linguistic science so uncertain of meaning, so arbitrary of application, so dependent on the idiosyncrasy of its user, as the term " inflective." Any language ought to have the right to be called inflective that has inflexion: that is, that not merely distinguishes parts of speech and roots and stems formally from one another, but also conjugates its verbs and declines its nouns; and the name is sometimes so used. If, again, it be strictly limited to signify the possession of inner Jlexion of roots and stems (as if simply agglutinated forms could be called "exflective "), it marks only a difference of degree of agglutination, and should be carefully used as so doing. As describing the fundamental and predominant character of language-structure, it belongs to only one family of languages, the Semitic, where most of the work of gram- matical distinction is done by internal changes of vowel, the origin of which thus far eludes all attempts at explana- tion. By perhaps the majority of students of language it is, as a generally descriptive title, restricted to that family and one other, the Indo-European or Aryan; but such a classification is not to be approved, for, in respect to this characteristic, Aryan speech ranks not with Semitic but with the great body of agglutinative tongues. To few of these can the name be altogether denied, since there is hardly a body of related dialects in existence that does

Agglu-

tinative an-

guages.

Inflect- ive.

Value of

struc- ture.

not exhibit some items of “‘inflective” structure; the Aryan is only the one among them that has most to show. Out- side the Semitic, at any rate, one should not speak of inflective and non-inflective languages, but only of languages more inflective and less inflective.

To account for the great and striking differences of structure among human languages is beyond the power of the linguistic student, and will doubtless always continue so. Weare not likely to be able even to demonstrate a correlation of capacities, saying that a race which has done this and that in other departments of human activity might have been expected to form such and such a language. livery tongue represents the general outcome of the capa- city of a race as exerted in this particular direction, under the influence of historical circumstances which we can have no hope of tracing. There are striking apparent anomalies to be noted. The Chinese and the Egyptians have shown themselves to be among the most gifted races the earth has known ; but the Chinese tongue is of unsur- passed jejuneness, and the Egyptian, in point of structure, little better, while among the wild tribes of Africa and America we find tongues of every grade, up to a high one, or to the highest. This shows clearly enough that mental power is not measured by language-structure. But any other linguistic test would prove equally insufficient. On the whole, the value and rank of a language are determined by what its users have made it do. The reflex action of its speech on the mind and culture of a people is a theme of high interest, but of extreme difficulty, and apt to lead its investigators away into empty declamation ; taking everything together, its amount, as is shown by the instances already referred to, is but small. The question is simply one of the facilitation of work by the use of one set of tools rather than another; and a poor tool in skilful hands can do vastly better work than the best tool in unskilful hands—even as the ancient Egyptians, without steel or steam, turned out products which, both for colossal grandeur and for exquisite finish, are the despair of modern engineers and artists. In such a history of development as that of human speech a fortunate turn may lead to results of unforeseen value; the earlier steps determine the later in a degree quite beyond their own intrinsic importance. Everything in language depends upon habit and analogy ; and the formation of habit is a slow process,

while the habit once formed exercises a constraining as well as a guiding influence. Hence the persistency of

change from the first beginnings of human expression. Many of these separate lines we clearly see to converge and unite, as we follow them back into the past ; but whether they all ultimately converge to one point is a question quite beyond our power to answer. If in this immensity of time many languages have won so little, if everywhere language-growth has been so slow, then we can only differ as to whether it is reasonably certain, or probable, or only possible, that there should have been a considerable first period of human existence without tra- ditional speech, and a yet more cousiderable one before the fixation of so much as should leave abiding traces in its descendants, and that meanwhile the race should have multiplied and scattered into independent communities. And the mere possibility is enough to exclude all dogmatic assertion of the unity of origin of human speech, even assuming unity of origin of the human race. For to prove that identity by the still existing facts of language is utterly out of the question ; the metamorphosing effect of constant change has been too great to allow it. In point of fact, taking languages as they now exist, only those have been shown related which possess a common structure, or have together grown out of the more primitive radical stage, since structure proves itself a more constant and reliable evidence than material. And this is likely ever to be the case ; at any rate, to trace all the world's languages so far back toward their beginnings as to find in them evidences of identity is beyond the wildest hope. We must be con- tent with demonstrating for those beginnings a unity of kind as alike a body of formless roots. But, on the other hand, since this unity is really demonstrated, since all structure is the result of growth, and no degree of difference of structure, any more than of difference of material, refuses explanation as the result of discordant growth from identical beginnings, it is equally inadmissible to claim that the diversities of language prove it to have had different beginnings. That is to say, the question of the unity of speech, and yet more that of the unity of the race, is beyond the reach of the student of language; the best view he can attain is the hypothetical one, that, if the race is one, the beginnings of speech were perhaps one— but probably not, even then. This negative

conclusion is so clearly established as to leave no excuse for the still oft-repeated attempts to press language into service on either side of the controversy respecting human unity of race.

That all making and changing of language is by the Uncon- act of its speakers is too obvious to call for discussion. No ped other force capable of acting and of producing effects is St"

g : 5 through either demonstrable or conceivable as concerned in the jnajyid.

work, The doctrine that language is an organism, growing uals.

language-structure : when a certain sum and kind of ex- pression is produced, and made to answer the purposes of expression, it remains the same by inertia; a shift of direction becomes of extreme difficulty. No other reason can at present be given why in historical time there has

Unity of most ancient recorded dialects.

been no marked development out of one grade of structure into another; but the fact no more shakes the linguistic scholar's belief in the growth of structure than the absence of new animal species worked out under his eyes shakes the confidence of the believer in animal development. The modifying causes and their modes of action are clearly seen, and there is no limit to the results of their action except what is imposed by circumstances.

It is in vain to attempt to use dates in language-history, to say when this or that step in development was taken, and how long a period it cost, especially now that the changed views as to the antiquity of man are making it probable that only a small part of the whole history is brought within the reach even of our deductions from the At any rate, for aught

origin of that we know or have reason to believe, all existing dialects

speech,

are equally old ; every one alike has the whole immeasur- able past of language-life behind it, has reached its present condition by advance along its own line of growth and

by its own inherent powers, exempt from the interference of those who use it, is simply an indefensible paradox. Every word that is uttered is so by an act of human will, at first in imitation of others, then more and more by a formed and controlling habit ; it is accessible to no change except by influences working in the speaker's mind, and leading him to make it otherwise. Not that he is aware of this, or directs his action knowingly to that end. The whole process is unconscious. If any implication of re- flective or intended action can be shown to inhere in any doctrine of linguistic science, it vitiates that doctrine. The attitude of the ordinary speaker towards his language is that of unreasoning acceptance; it seems to him that his names for things are their real names, and all others unintelligent nicknames ; he thinks himself to possess his speech by the same tenure as his sight or hearing; it is "natural" to him (or, if he reasons about it, he attributes it to a divine origin, as races beginning to philosophize are wont to ascribe their various social institutions to their

Dialectic varia- tion.

776

gods); he knows nothing of its structure and relations ; it never occurs to him to find fault with it, or to deem it insufficient and add to or change it ; he is wholly unaware that it does change. He simply satisfies his social needs of communication by means of it; and if he has anything to express that is different from what has been expressed before, he takes the shortest way to a provision for the need; while any relaxation of the energy of utterance tends to a variation in the uttered combinations ; and thus changes come by his act, though without his knowledge. His sole object is, on the basis of what language he has, to make known his thought in the most convenient way to his fellow ; everything else follows with and from that. Human nature and circumstances being what they are, what follows actually is, as already shown, incessant growth and change. For it we have not to seek special disturbing causes in the history of the speakers, although such may come in to heighten and quicken the change ; we know that even

in a small community, on a narrow islet, cut off from all intercourse with other communities, the speech would grow different—as certainly, if not as rapidly, as anywhere in the world—and only by the action of its speakers : not that the speakers of a language act in unison and simultaneously to produce a given change. This must begin in an individual, or more or less accord- antly in a limited number of individuals, and spread from such example through the community. Initiation by one or a few, acceptance and adoption by the rest,—such is the necessary method of all linguistic change, and to be read as plainly in the facts of change now going on among ourselves as in those of former language. The doctrine of the inaccessibility of language to other action than that of its speakers does not imply a power in the individual speaker to create or alter anything in the common speech, any more than it implies his desire to do so. What he suggests by his example must be approved by the imitation of his fellows, in order to become language. The common speech is the common property, and no one person has any more power over it than another. If there are, for example, a thousand speakers of a certain dialect, each one wields in general a thousandth part of the force required to change it—with just so much more as may belong to his excess of influence over his fellows, due to recognized superiority of any kind on his part. His action is limited only by their assent ; but this is in effect a very narrow limitation, insuring the adoption of nothing that is not in near accordance with the already existing ; though it is also to be noted that he is as little apt to strike off into startling change as they to allow it ; since the governing power of already formed habits of speech is as strong in him as inthem. That change to which the existing habits naturally lead is easy to bring about ; any other is practically impossible. It is this tendency on the part of the collective speakers of a language to approve or reject a proposed change according to its conformity with their already subsisting usages that we are accustomed to call by the fanciful name "the genius of a language."

On the relation of the part played in language-change by the individual to that by the community, in combina- tion with the inevitableness of change, rests the explana- tion of the dialectic variation of language. If language were stable there would of course be no divarication 3 but since it is always varying, and by items of difference that proceed from individuals and become general by diffusion, there can be uniformity of change only so far

as diffu- Slon goes, or as the influences of communication extend. Within the limits of a single community, small or large, whatever change arises spreads gradually to all, and so becomes part of the general speech ; but let that com- munity become divided into two (or more) parts, and then

roitGLont@¢d vy

the changes arising in either part do not spread to the other, and there begins to appear a difference in linguistic usage between them. It is at first slight, even to insig- nificance ; not greater than exists between the dialects of different localities or ranks or occupations in the same community, without detriment to the general unity of speech. This unity, namely, rests solely on mutual intel- ligibility, and is compatible with no small amount of individual and class difference, in vocabulary, in grammar, and in pronunciation ; indeed, in the strictest sense, each individual has a dialect of his own, different from that of every other, even as he has a handwriting, a countenance, a character of his own. And every item of change, as it takes place, must have its season of existence as a local or class or trade peculiarity, before it gains universal currency ; some of them linger long in that condition, or never emerge from it. All these differences in the speech of different sub-communities within the same community are essentially dialectic ; they differ not in kind, but only in degree, from those which separate the best-marked dialects ; they are kept down by general communication within the limit of general mutual intelligibility. Where that restraining influence ceases, the limit is gradually but surely overpassed, and real dialects are the result, From what we know of the life of language we can say posi- tively that continued uniformity of speech without con- tinued community is not practicable. If it were possible to divide artificially, by an impassable chasm or wall, a people one for ages, and continuing to occupy the same seats, the language of the divided parts would at once begin to be dialectically different; and after sufficient time had elapsed, each would have become unintelligible to the other. That is to say, whenever a community of uniform speech breaks up, its speech breaks up also ; nor do we know of any other cause of dialectic diversity.

In applying this explanation of dialectic growth we have to allow for modifying circumstances of various nature, which alter not indeed the fact

but the rate and kind of divarication. Some languages grow and change much more rapidly than others, with a corresponding effect upon divarication, since this is but a result of dis- cordant growth. Usually, when there is division of a community, the parts get into different external circum- stances, come in contact or mingle with different nelgh- bouring communities, and the like; and this quickens and increases their divergence of speech. But the modify- ing factor of by far the highest importance, here as elsewhere in the history of language, is civilization. Civilization in its higher forms so multiplies the forces of communication as to render it possible that the widely- divided parts of one people, living in circumstances and under institutions of very different character, should yet maintain a substantial oneness of speech ; of this there is no more striking example than the two great divisions of the English-speaking people on opposite sides of the Atlantic. On the other hand, a savage people cannot spread even a little without dialectic disunity ; there are abundant examples to be met with now of mutually un- intelligible speech between the smallest subdivisions of a race of obviously kindred tongue—as the different clusters of huts on the same coral islet. It is with linguistic unity precisely as it is with political unity, and for the same reasons. Before the attainment of civilization the human race, whether proceeding from one centre of dispersion or from several, was spread over the earth in a state of utter disintegration ; but every centre of civilization becomes also a centre of integration ; its influences make for unity of speech as of all other social institutions. Since culture has become incontestably the dominant power in human history, the unifying forces in language have also been

stronger than the diversifying ; and with culture at its | full height, and spread equally to every land and race, one universal language, like one universal community, is not an absurdity or theoretic impossibility, but only a Utopian or millennial dream.

Dialectic variation is thus simply a consequence of the movements of population. As the original human race or races, so the divisions or communities of later formation, from point to point through the whole life of

man on the earth, have spread and separated, have jostled and inter- fered, have conquered and exterminated or mingled and absorbed ; and their speech has been affected accordingly. Hence something of these movements can be read in the present condition of languages, as in a faithful though obscure record—more, doubtless, than can be read in any other way, however little it may be when viewed absolutely. Dialectic resemblances point inevitably back to an earlier unity of speech, and hence of community ; from what we know of the history of speech, they are not to be accounted for in any other way. The longer the separation that has produced the diversity, the greater its degree. With every generation, the amount of accordance decreases and that of discordance increases ; the common origin of the dialects is at first palpable, then evident on examination, then to be made out by skilled research, then perhaps no longer demonstrable at all; for there is plainly no limit to the possible divergence. So long, now, as any evidence of original unity is discoverable we call the languages "related dialects," and combine them into a "family." The term "family" simply signifies a group of languages which the evidence thus far at command, as estimated by us, leads us to regard as descended by the ordinary pro- cesses of dialectic divarication from one original tongue. That it does not imply a denial of the possibility of wider relationship is obvious from what has been said above. That there is abundant room for error in the classification represented by it is also clear, since we may take purely accidental resemblances, or the results of borrowing, for evidence of common descent, or may overlook or wrongly estimate real evidences, which more study and improved method will bring to light. Grouping into families is nothing more than the best classification attainable at a given stage in the progress of linguistic science ; it is in no small part provisional only, and is always held liable to modification, even sweeping, by the results of further research. Of some families we can follow the history by external evidences a great way back into the past; their structure is so highly developed as to be traced with con- fidence everywhere ; and their territory is well within our reach: such we regard with the highest degree of con- fidence, hardly allowing for more than the possibility that some other dialect, or group, or now-accepted family even, may sometime prove its right to be added on. But these are the rare exceptions; in the great majority of cases we have only the languages as they now exist, and in more or less scanty collections, of every degree of trust- worthiness ; and even their first

grouping is tentative and incomplete, and involves an adjournment of deeper ques- tions to the day of more light. To complete and perfect the work of classification by relationship, or the establish- ment of families and their subdivisions, is the first object of the comparative study of languages. No other classifi- cation has a value in the least comparable with it; that by grade of structure is a mere recreation, leading to no- thing ; that by absolute worth is of no account whatever, at any rate in the present state of our knowledge. On genetic relationship, in the first place, is founded all investi- gation of the historical development of languages ; since

it isin the main the comparison of related dialects, even in the case of families having a long recorded history, and

Tee

elsewhere only that, that gives us knowledge of their earlier condition, and enables us to trace the lines of change. In the second place, and yet more obviously, with this classification is connected all that language has to teach as to the affinities of human races ; whatever aid linguistic science renders to ethnology rests upon the proved relationships of human tongues.

That a classification of languages, to which we have Recapit- now to proceed, is not equivalent to a classification of ulation.

races, and why this is so, is evident enough from the principles which have been brought out by our whole discussion of languages, and which, in their bearing upon this particular point, may well be recapitulated here. No language is a race-characteristic, determined by the special endowments of a race; all languages are of the nature of institutions, parallel products of powers common to all mankinid—the powers, namely, involved in the application of the fittest available means to securing the common end of communication. Hence they are indefinitely trans- ferable, like other institutions—like religions, arts, forms of social organization, and so on—under the constraining force of circumstances. As an individual can learn any language, foreign as well as ancestral, if it be put in his way, so also a community, which in respect to such a matter is only an aggregate of individuals. Accordingly, as individuals of very various race are often found in one community, speaking together one tongue, and utterly ignorant of

any other, so there are found great communi- ties of various descent, speaking the dialects of one common tongue, which at some period historical circumstances have imposed upon them. The conspicuous example, which comes into every one's mind when this subject is discussed, is that of the Romanic countries of southern Europe, all using dialects of a language which, 2500 years ago, was itself the insignificant dialect of a small district in central Italy ; but this is only the most important and striking of a whole class of similar facts. Such are the results of the contact and mixture of races and languages. If language- history were limited to growth and divarication, and race- history to spread and dispersion, it would be a compara- tively easy task to trace both backward toward their origin ; as the case is, the confusion is inextricable aud hopeless. Mixture of race and mixture of speech are coincident and connected processes ; the latter never takes place without something of the former; but the one is not at all a measure of the other, because circumstances may give to the speech of the one element of population a greatly disproportionate preponderance. Thus, there is left in French only an insignificant trace of the Celtic dialects of the predominant race-constituent of the French people ; French is the speech of the Latin conquerors of Gaul, mixed perceptibly with that of its later Frankish conquerors ; it was adopted in its integrity by the Norse conquerors of a part of the land, then brought into Britain by the same Norsemen in the course of their further con- quests, this time only as an element of mixture, and thence carried with English speech to America, to be the language of a still further mixed community. Almost every possible phase of language-mixture is traceable in the history of the abundant words of Latin origin used by American negroes. What events of this character took place in pre- historic time we shall never be able to tell. If any one chooses to assert the possibility that even the completely isolated dialect of the little Basque community may have been derived by the Iberian race from an_ intrusive minority as small as that which made the Celts of Gaul speakers of Latin, we should have to admit it as a possibility —yet without detriment to the value of the dialect as indicating the isolated race-position of its speakers. In strictness, language is never a proof of race, AVIIL. — 98

Classifi- cation.

Aryan.

Semitie.

778

either in an individual or in a community; it is only a probable indication of race, in the absence of more authori- tative opposing indications ; it is one evidence, to be com- bined with others, in the approach towards a solution of the confessedly insoluble problems of human history. But Wwe must notice, as a most important circumstance, that its degree of probability is greatest where its aid is most needed, in prehistoric periods and among uncultivated races ; since it is mainly civilization that gives to language a propagative force disproportionate to the number of its speakers. On the whole, the contributions of language to ethnology are practically far greater in amount and more distinct than those derived from any

other source.

The genetical classification of languages, then, is to be taken for just what it attempts to be, and no more: prim- arily as a classification of languages only ; but secondarily as casting light, in varying manner and degree, on move- ments of community, which in their turn depend more or less upon movements of races. It is what the fates of men have left to represent the tongues of men—a record im- perfect even to fragmentariness. Many a family once as important as some of those here set down has perhaps been wiped out of existence, or is left only in an incon- spicuous fragment; one and another has perhaps been extended far beyond the limits of the race that shaped it,—which, we can never tell to our satisfaction.

We begin with the families of highest importance and nearest to ourselves.

1. Aryan (Indo-European, Indo-Germanic) Family.—To this family belongs incontestably the first place, and for many reasons : the historical position of the peoples speaking its dialects, who have now long been the leaders in the world's history ; the abundance and variety and merit of its literatures, ancient and modern, which, especially the modern, are wholly unapproached by those of any other division of mankind ; the period covered by its records, hardly exceeded in duration by any other; and, most of all, the great variety and richness of its development. These advantages

make of it an illustration of the history of human speech with which no other family can bear a moment's comparison as to value, however important various other families may be in their bearing on one and another point or department of history, and however necessary the combination of the testimony of all to a solution of the problems involved in speech. These advantages have made Aryan language the training-ground of comparative philology, and its study will always remain the leading branch of that science. Many inatters of importance in its history have been brought up and used as illus- trations in the preceding discussion ; but as its constitution and ascertained development call for a fuller and more systematie expost- tion than they have found here, a special section is devoted to the subject (see p. 781 sq. below).

2. Semitic Fumily.—This family also is beyond all question the second in importance, on account of the part which its peoples (Hebrews, Pheenicians, Assyrians, Syrians, Arabs, Abyssinians, &c.) have played in history, and of the rank of its literatures. For a special treatment of it see Semitic. Some of the peculiarities of the language have been alluded to above ; in the monotony and rigidity of its triliteral' roots, and in the extended use which it makes of internal vowel-change ("inflexion" in the special sense of that term) for the purposes of grammatical distinction, it is more peculiar and unlike all the other known families of language than these are unlike one another. There are, and perhaps will always be, those to whom the peculiarities just mentioned will seem original ; but if the views of language and its history taken above are in the main true, then that opinion is untenable ; Semitic language must have grown into its present forms out of beginnings accordant in kind, if not identical in substance, with those of other families ; and the only question remaining to be solved is, through what processes and under what governing tendencies Semitic speech should have arrived at its present state. And with this solution 1s most obviously and incontestably bound up that of the other interesting and much discussed question, whether the Semitic family can be shown to be related with other families, especially with our own Aryan. To some the possession in common of grammatical gender, or of the classification of objects in gencral as masculine and feminine, is of itself enough to prove such relation- ship ; but, though the fact is a striking one, and of no small Importance as an indication, this degree of value can by no means be

attributed to it in the present state of our knowledge—any more than to any other single item of structure among the infinite varicty

Pe Peo nu 0O-G Y

of such, distributed among the multitude of human tongues, Many others compare the Semitic and Aryan "roots" with one another, and believe themselves to find there numerous indications of identity of material and signification ; but these also must pass for insufficient, until it shall prove possible by their aid to work out an acceptable theory of how Semitic structure should have grown out of such radical elements as underlie Aryan structure, or out of the accordant initial products of a structural growth that after- wards diverged into two so discordant forms. To show that, both the material and the method have been hitherto wanting, and any confident decision is at least premature ; but present probabilities are strongly against the solubility of the question. While many general considerations favour the ultimate unity of these two great civilized and civilizing white races of neighbouring homes, and no discordance of speech (as was shown above) can ever be made to prove their diversity of origin, it seems in a high degree unlikely that the evidence of speech will ever be made to prove them one. As regards the often-claimed relationship of Semitic with Hamitic language, see the following section.

3. Hamitic Family.—The is due to a single one of its members, the Egyptian ; in all other respects it is quite insignificant. It oceupies the north-eastern corner of Africa, with the border-lands of that continent stretching westward along the whole shore of the Mediterranean, and south- ward to beyond the equator. It falls into three principal divisions : (1) the ancient Egyptian, with its descendant, the more modern Coptic (itself now for some centuries extinct ; see Ecyrt, Corts) ; (2) the Libyan or Berber languages of northern Africa ; (8) the Ethiopic languages of eastern Africa. Its situation thus plainly suggests the theory of its intrusion from Asia, across the isthmus of Suez, and its gradual spread from that point ; and the theory is strongly favoured by the physical character of the Hamites, and the historical position especially of the Egyptians, so strikingly different from that of the African races in general. Linguistic evidences of the relationship of Hamite with Semite have also been sought, and by many believed to be

found; but the mainte- nance of the two families in their separateness is an indication that those evidences have not yet been accepted as satisfactory ; and such is indeed the case. The Egyptian is a language of extreme simplicity of structure, almost of no structure at all. Its radical words are partly monosylabic, partly of more than one syllable, but not in the latter case any more than in the former showing traceable signs of extension by formative processes from simpler elements. It has no derivative apparatus by which noun-stems are made from roots ; the root is the stem likewise ; there is nothing that can be properly called either declension or conjugation ; and the same pronominal particles or suffixes have now a subjective value, indicating use as a verb, and now a possessive, indicating use asanoun, There is no niethod known to linguistic science by which the relationship of such a tongue as this with the highly and peculiarly inflective Semitic can be shown, short of a thorough working out of the history of development of each family taken by itself, and a retracing in some measure of the steps by which each should have arrived at its present position from a common starting- point ; and this has by no means been donc. In short, the problem of the relation of Semitic with Hamitic, not less than with Aryan, depends upon that of Semitic growth, and the two must be solved together. There are striking correspondences between the pro- nouns of the two families, sueh as, if supported by evidences from other parts of their material, would be taken as signs of relation- ship ; but, in the absence of such support, they are not to be relied upon, not till it can be shown to be possible that two languages could grow to be so different in all other respects as are Egyptian and Hebrew, and yet retain by inheritance corresponding pronouns. And the possession of grammatical gender by Aryan, Semitic, and Hamitic speech, and by them almost alone, among all human languages, though an extremely noteworthy fact, is (as was pointed out above) in the present condition of linguistic science quite too weak a basis for a belief in the original identity of the three families,

Egyptian is limited to the delta and valley of the Nile, and is the only Hamitic language which has ancient records ; of the others the existing forms alone are known.

The Libyan or Berber division of the family occupies the inhabit- able part of northern Africa, so far as it has not been displaced by intrusive tongues

of other connexion—in later times the Arabie, which since the Mohammedan conquest has been the cultivated tongue of the Mediterranean coast, while the earlier Vandal, Latin, and Punic have disappeared, except in the traces they may have left in Berber dialectic speech. The principal dialects are the Kabyle, the Shilha, and the Tuarek or Tamashek, corresponding nearly to the ancient Numidian, Mauretanian, and Gztulian respectively. Some authorities add the Haussa, from farther south, while by others this is considered a Semitic, and by yet others a negro tongue,

The third or Ethiopic division includes as its chief members the Beja or Bisharin, the Saho, the Dankali, the Somali, and the more

prominent importance of this family Hamitie,

South- 4. Monosyllabic or South-ceastern Asiatic Family.—This body of | is, lacking that higher degree of integration which issues in internal eastern languages may well enough be the next taken up; and here again | change. Whether this degree is wholly wanting in Finnish and Asiatie. (as was the case with the preceding family) on account of the | Hungarian is made a question; at any rate, the languages named prominent importance of one of its dialects and of the people | have uo reason to envy the tongues technically called "inflective." speaking it—the Chinese people and language. The territory of | Of a value not inferior to that of inflective characteristics is one the family includes the whole south-eastern corner of Asia: China | that belongs to all the Ural-Altaic tongues, in varying measure and on the north-east, Farther India in the south, and the high plateau | form, and helps to bind them together into a single family—the of Tibet, with the neighbouring Himalayan regions, to the west- | harmonic sequence of vowels, namely, as between root and endings, ward. The ultimate unity of all these languages rests chiefly upon | or a modification of the vowels of the endings to agree with that the evidence of their form, as being all alike essentially mono- | of the root or its final syllable. syllabic and isolating, or destitute of formal structure ; the material While the physical race-characteristics known as Mongolian are correspondences among them, of accordant words, are not sufficient | wanting in the speakers of the western dialects of this family, they to prove them related.

The Chinese itself can be followed up, in | are conspicuously present in the people of Japan and Corea; and contemporary records, to a period not far from 2000 B.c., and the | hence the tendency of scholars to endeavour to connect the languages language, the people, and their institutions, are then already in | of the two latter countries, since they also are of agglutinative struc- the main what they have ever since continued to be (see CHINA); | ture (sce JAPAN and CorEA), with the family now under treatment, the other leading tongues come into view much later, as they | as also with one another. Neither connexion, however, can at: receive culture and religion from China on the one hand (the | present be regarded as proved. ‘ ; Anamites), or from India on the other (the Tibetans, Burmese, Other languages of north-eastern Asia, too little known to group, Siamese) ; and the territory includes great numbers of wild tribes | and too unimportant to treat as separate families, may be mentioned unknown until our own times, whose race-relations and language- | here by way of appendix to their neighbours of the most diversified relations are as yet very obscure. Current opinion tends to regard | and widespread Asiatic family. They are the Aino, of Yezo and the Anainites, Peguans, and Cambodians as forming a more nearly | the Kurile Islands with part of the neighbouring coast; the related group or division of the family, and as having been the | Kamchatkan; and the Yukagir and Tchuktchi, of the extreme earlier population of Farther India, in part dispossessed and | north-east. | ; driven forward by the later intrusion from the north of Siamese The opinion was recently held by many scholars that the agglutin- and Burmese, of whom the former are more nearly related | ative dialects—Accadian, Sumirian, &c.—of the presumed founders to the Chinese, and the latter to the Tibetans; but these group- | of Mesopotainian culture and teachers of the Assyrian Semites (see ings rest as yet upon too slender evidence to be accepted with | Banytonta) belonged to the Ural-Altaic family, and specifically confidence. — to its Finno-Hungarian branch; but it is believed to be now The character of the languages of this family, especially as in- | generally abandoned. The mere possession of an agglutinative stanced by its most important inember, the Cea has oe pretty Se ae cannot be taken as proving anything in the’ way of rth in the general discussions above. They are languages | relationship. — We iter ia tay, there is not demonstrable in any of their 6. Dravidian or South-Indian Family.—This is an important Dravi- words a formative part, limiting the word, along with others simi- | body of nearly and clearly

related tongues, spoken by about dian. larly characterized, to a certain office or set of offices in the formation | 50,000,000 people, doubtless representing the main population of the sentence. That the words are ultimate roots, come down | of all India at the time when the intrusive Aryan tribes broke in from the first period of language-making, we have no reason what- | from the north-west, and still filling most of the southern peninsula, ever to believe ; and they may possibly have passed through pro- | the Deccan, together with part of Ceylon. In an earlier article cesses of growth which equipped them with some scanty supply of (see INDIA) the names of the dialects have been given, with indica- forms: but no evidence to that effect has yet been produced. The tion of their locality and relative importance, and with some se Our indications relied on to show an earlier polysyllabism in the family | of their Icading features. They are languages of a high erade of (though already in Chinese reduced to monosyllabism before the | structure, and of great power and euphony ; and the principal li carliest historical appearance of the language, some 4000 years ago) have enjoyed a long eultivation, founded on that of the Sanskrit. are the comparatively recent loss of certain final mutes in Chinese As they obviously have no Aryan affinities, the attempt has been words, and the presence ou a considerable scale in Tibetan spelling made to connect them also with the Ural-Altaic or Turanian family, of added initial and final consonants, now silent in the literary | but altogether without success, although there is nothing in their dialect, but claimed to be still uttered in some parts of the country. style of structure that should make such connexion impossible. If the theory connecting these phenomena be established, Not all the tribes that. make up the non-Aryan population of the Tibetan will approve itself to be by far the most primitive India speak Dravidian dialects. The Santals and certain ae of the dialects of the family, furnishing the key to the history | wild tribes appear to be of another lineage, and are now generally of the rest. known as Kolarian. ; ae a For further details respecting the various tongues of the mono- 7. AMalay-Polynesian Family. —The islands, ee an — er; at syllabic family, the articles on the different divisions of its territory | lying off the south-eastern coast of Asia and those ee over Pol y: (BuRMAH, CHINA, SIAM, TIBET, &c.) may be consulted. The lan- | the Pacific, all the way from Madagascar to Easter Island, are nesian, guages all alike show an addition to the resources of distinction | filled with their own peculiar families of

languages, standing in no possessed by languages in general, in the use of tones: that is to | known relationship with those of the mainland. a le say, words of which the alphabetic elements are the same differ in | one among them is the great Malay-Polynesian aes y: a b alls meaning according as they are uttered in a higher or a lower tone, | into two principal divisions, Malayan and Polynesian. oe with the rising or the falling inflexion, and so on. By this means, | includes, besides the Malay proper (see MALAys), which enue for example 'the monosyllabic elements of the literary Chinese, | the Malaccan peninsula (yet doubtless not as original home o 1e numbering but 500 as we should write them, are raised to the | division, but by immigration from the islands), the languages also number of about 1500 words. ' of Sumatra, Java, Borneo, &c., of the Philippine Islands, of ae eee Ural 5. Ural-Altaic (Scythian, Turanian) Family.— China and Tibet | and of Madagascar, together with the coasts of Celebes and other Altaie are bordered on the north and west by the eastern brauches of | islands occupied in the interior by Papuans. The Polynesian division

Piet LO LO GY

inland Galla; the first two lying along the Red Sea north of Semitic Abyssinia, the others south of it, to the equator. By some authoritics (Lepsius, Bleek) there is added to the Haimitic family as a fourth division a group from extreme southern Africa, the Hottentot and Bushman languages. The ground of this classifica- tion is the possession by the Hottentot of the distinction of gram- matical gender, and even its designation by signs closely corre- sponding to those used in the Ethiopic division. Others deny the sufficiency of this evidence, and rank the Hottentot as a separate group of African dialects, adding to it provisionally the Bushman, until better knowledge of the latter shall show whether it is or is not a group by itself. Ifthe Hottentot be Hamitic, we shall have to suppose it cut off at a very remote period from the rest of the family, and forced gradually southward, while all the time suffering mixture both of speech and of blood with the negro races, until the physical constitution of its speakers has become completely metaniorphosed, and of its original speech no signs are left save those referred to above ; and while such exceptional phon- etic peculiarities have been worked out as the use of the clicks or clucking sounds (see HOTTENTOTS): and this must be regarded as at least extremely difficult.

another immense family, which stretches through central and

northern Asia into Europe, overlapping the European border in Turkey, and reaching across it in Russia and Scandinavia to the very shore of the Atlantic. Usage has not so definitely determined as in the case of most other families by what name it shall be called ; Turanian is perhaps the commonest appellation, but also the most objectionable. Five principal branches are generally reckoned as composing the family. The two easternmost are the Tungusian, with the Manchu for its principal division, and the Mongol (see Mowneots). Of these two the language is exceedingly simple in structure, being raised but little above the formlessness of the Chinese. The three others are: the Turkish or Tatar, the dia- lects of which reach from the mouth of the Lena (Yakut) to Turkey in Europe ; the Samoyed, from the Altai down to the arctic shore of Asia, and along this to the White Sea—an unimportant congeries of barbarous tribes ; and the Finno-Hungarian, including the tongues of the two cultivated peoples from which it takes its name, and also those of a great part of the population of northern and central Russia, to beyond the Ural Mountains, and finally the Lappish, of northern Scandinavia. The nearer relation of the Samoyed is with the Finno-Hungarian. The Turkish is a type of a well-developed language of purely agglutinative structure: that

includes most of the tongues of the remaining scattered groups of

Aus- tralian.

Papuan.

Cau- casian.

Basque.

Etrus- can,

Bantu.

islands, and that of New Zealand. Probably to these are to be added, as a third division, the Melanesian dialects of the Melanesian Archi- pelago, of which both the physical and the linguistic peculiarities would in that case be ascribed to mixture with the black Papuan races, All these languages are extremely simple in phonetic form, and of a low grade of structure, the Polynesian branch being in both respects the lowest, and some of the Malayan dialects having reached a development considerably more advanced. The radical elements are much oftener of two syllables than of one, and reduplication plays an important part in their extension and variation. Malay literature goes back as far as to the 13th century, and there are Javan records even from the early centuries of our era, the result of religion and culture introduced into that island from Brahmanic India ; but none of these have yet been utilized, as they doubtless in time will be, for tracing out the special laws of historical develop- ment prevailing in the family. A

8. Other Occanie Fanilies.—At least two other families, un- connecte with the preceding and with one another, are found among the Pacific islands, and only there. The continental island of Australia, with its dependency Tasmania (where, however, the native tongue has now become extinct), has its own body of probably related dialects, as its own physical type. They have been but imperfectly investigated, their importance, except to the professed student of language, being nothing ; but they are not destitute of a rude agglutinative structure of their own. Still Jess known are the Papuan or Negrito languages, belonging to the black race with frizzled hair inhabiting most of New Guinea, and found also in the interior of some of the other islands, having been driven from the coasts by superior intruders of the Malay race.

9. Caueasian Languages.—Of the existing languages of Asia there remain to be mentioned only those of the Caucasian moun- tains and highlands, between the Black and Caspian Seas, pressed upon the north by Slavonians and Turks, upon the south by Armenians and Kurds and Turks. Its situation makes of the Caucasus a natural eddy in all movements of emigration between Asia and Europe ; and its linguistic condition is as if remnants of

many families otherwise extinct had been stranded and preserved there. The dialects north of the principal range—Circassian, Mitsjeghian, Lesghian, &c.—have not been proved to be related either to one another or to those of the south. Among the latter, the Georgian is much the most widespread and important (see GEORGIA), and, alone among them all, possesses a literature. The Caucasian dialects present many exceptional and difficult features, and are in great part of so high a grade of structure as to have been allowed the epithet inflective by those who attach special importance to the distinction thus expressed.

10. Remnants of Families in Europe. —The Basque people of the western Pyrenees, at the angle of the Bay of Biscay, are shown by their speech to be an isolated remnant of some race which was doubtless once much more widely spread, but has now everywhere else lost its separate identity ; as such it is of extreme interest to the ethnologist. The Basque language appears to be unrelated to any other on earth. It is of a very highly agglutinative structure, being equalled in intricacy of combination only by a part of the American dialects. Limited as it is in territory, it falls into a number of well-marked dialects, so that it also may not be refused the name of a " fainily."

The only other case of the kind worth noting is that of the Etruscan language of northern central Italy, which long ago became extinct, in consequence of the conquest and absorption of Etruria by Rome, but which stil] exists in numerous brief inscrip- tions (see ETRURIA). Many attempts have been made to connect the language with other families, and it has even quite recently been pronounced Aryan or Indo-European, of the Italican branch, by scholars of high Tauk ; yet it is altogether likely to be finally acknowledged, like the Basque, as an isolated fragment.

In order to complete this review of the languages of the Old World it only remains to notice those of Africa which have not been already mentioned. They are grouped under two heads : the languages of the south and those of the centre of the continent.

ll. South-African or Bantu Family.—This is a very extensive and distinctly marked family, occupying (except the Hottentot and Bushman territory) the whole southern peninsula of the conti- nent from some degrees north of the

equator. It has been already partly described under KAFFRARIA, and will be treatcd more in detail under the head of Zu). It is held apart from all other known families of language by a single prominent characteristic

‘of physical type as well as of speech in the central

OEE ee ae Oe Ye

The pronominal determinants of the verb, both subject and object, also come before it; but the determinants of mode of action, as causative, &c., are mostly suffixed. The language in general is rich in the means of formal distinction. Those dialects which border on the Hottentots have, apparently by derivation from the latter, the clicks or clucking-sounds which form a conspicuous part of the Hottentot spoken alphabet. a 12. Central African Languages. —The remaining

the Bantu on the south and the Hamitic on the east and north, They are by no means to be called a family, but rathera great mass of dialects, numbering by hundreds, of varying structure, as to the relations of which there is great discordance of opinion even among the most recent and competent authorities. It is no place here to enter into the vexed questions of African linguistics, or even to report the varying views upon the subject ; that would require a space wholly disproportioned to the iinportance of African speech in the general sum of human language. There is no small variety belt ; and, partly upon the evidence of lighter tint and apparently higher endowment, certain races are set off and madca separate division of; such is the Nuba-Fulah division of F. Miller, rejected by Lepsius. The latter regarded all the varicties of physical and linguistic character in the central belt as due to mixture between pure Africans of the south and Hamites of the north and east ; but this is at present an hypothesis only, and a very improbable one, since it implies modes and results of mixture to which no analogies are quotable from languagcs whose history is known ; nor does it appear at all probable that the collision of two races and types of speech should produce such an immense and diverse body of trans- itional types. It is far from impossible that the present promi- nence of the South-African or Bantu family may be secondary, due to the grcat expansion under favouring circumstances of a race once having no more importance than belongs now to many of the Central-African races, and speaking a tongue which differed

from theirs only as theirs differed from one another, None of the Central-African languages is a prefix-language in the same degree as the Bantu, and in many of them prefixes play no greater part than in the world's languages in general ; others show special forms or traces of the prefix-structure ; and some have features of an extraordinary character, hardly to be paralleled elsewhere. One group in the east (Oigob, &c.) has a gender distinction, involving that of sex, but really founded on telative power and dignity: things disparaged, including women, are put in one class ; things extolled, including men, are put in the other. This is perhaps the most significant hint anywhere to be found of howa gender- distinction like that in our own Aryan languages, which we usually regard as being essentially a distinction of sex, while in fact it only includes such, may have arisen. Common among the African languages, as among many other families, especially the Ameri- can, is a generic distinction between animate beings and inanimate things.

13. American Languages.—With these the case is closely the Ameri- same as with the Central-African languages: there is an immense can,

number of dialects, of greatly varied structure, of which as yet even the nearer groupings are only in part made out, while the grade and kind of relationship between the groups, if such there exist, is wholly unclear. Some general statements respecting Amcrican languages have been given under AMERICA, and a detailed list and classification of them in the article INDIANS; hence it is un- necessary to go over the subject again in this place. What we most need to note is the very narrow limitation of our present knowledge. Even among neighbouring families like the Algonquin, Iroquois, and Dakota, whose agreement in style of structure (poly-synthetic), taken in connexion with the accordant race-type of their speakers, forbids us to regard them as ultiinately different, no material correspondence, agreement in words and meanings, is to be traced ; and there are in America all the degrees of polysynthetism, down to the lowest, and even to its entire absence. Such being the case, it ought to be evident to every one accustomed to deal with this class of subjects that all attempts to connect American languages as a body with languages of the Old World are and must be fruitless ; in fact, all discussions of the matter are at present

unscientific, and are tolerably certain to continue so through all time to come.

Literatwre.—Many of the theoretic points discussed above are treated by the writer with more fulness in his Language and the Study of Language (1867) and Life and Growth of Language (1875). Other English works to consult are M. Miiller's Lectures on the Science of Language; Farrar's Chapters on Language ; Wedgwood's Origin of Language; Sayce's Principles of Philology and Introduction to the Science of Language, &c. In German, see Paul's Principien der Sprachge- schichte (Halle, 1880) ; Delbriick's Finleitung in das Sprachstudium (Leipsic, 1880; there is also an English version); Schleicher's Deutsche Sprache; also the works of W. von Humboldt and of H.Steinthal. As to the classification and relation- ships of languages, sce Hovelacque's La Linguistique (Paris, 1876), and F. Miiller's Grundriss der Sprachwissenschajt (Vienna, still in progress). As to the – history of the study, see Lersch's Sprachphilosophie der Alten (1840); Stein- thal's Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft bei den Griechen und Romern (1868) ;

Benfey's Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft und Orientalischen Philologie in Deutschland (1869). (W. D. W.)

languages of Central Africa form a broad band across the centre of the continent, between African,

Histor- ical sketch.

Bopp aud J. Grimm.

PPT Law iso e vy

781

PART IL—COMPARATIVE PHILOLOGY OF THE ARYAN LANGUAGES.

The study of Aryan comparative philology has from its outset necessarily been in close connexion with the study of Sanskrit, a language unparalleled amongst its cognates in antiquity and distinctness of structure, and

consequently the natural basis of comparison in this field. It is there- fore not to be wondered at that we find no clear views of the mutual relationship of the individual members of the Aryan family or their position with regard to other lan- guages until Sanskrit began to attract the attention of European philologists, or that the introduction of Sanskrit as an object of study was closely followed by the discovery of the original community of a vast range of languages and

dialects hitherto not brought into connexion at all, or only'

made the objects of baseless speculations. We meet with the first clear conception of this idea of an Indo-European community of languages in the distinguished English scholar Sir William Jones, who, as early as 1786, expressed himself as follows: "The Sanskrit language, whatever may be its antiquity, is of wonderful structure; more perfect than the Greek, more copious than the Latin, and more exquisitely refined than either, yet bearing to both of them a stronger affinity, both in the roots of verbs and in the forms of grammar, than could have been produced by accident ; so strong that no philologer could examine all the three without believing them to have sprung from some common source which, perhaps, no longer exists. There is a similar reason, though not quite so forcible, for supposing that both the Gothic and the Celtic, though blended with a different idiom, had the same origin with the Sanskrit."! But neither Sir William Jones nor any of his older contemporaries who had arrived at similar con- clusions ever raised this important discovery from a brilliant apercu into a valid scientific theory through a detailed and systematic comparison of the languages in question. To have achieved this is the undoubted merit of the German, Franz Borr (q.v.), the founder of scientific philo- logy of the Aryan languages, and subsequently through this example also the founder of comparative philology in general, Next to him Jacob Grimm (q.v.) must be men- tioned here as the father of historical grammar. The first part of his famous Deutsche Grammatik appeared in 1819, three years after Bopp had published his first epoch-making book, Ueber das Conjugationssystem der Sanskritsprache. Bopp's results were here at once utilized, yet Grimm's whole system was entirely independent of that of Bopp, and had no doubt been worked out before Grimm knew of his illustrious predecessor. In fact, their scientific aims and inethods were totally different. Bopp's interest was

not concentrated in comparison as such, but chiefly inclined towards the explanation of the origin of gram- matical forms, and comparison to him was only a means of approaching that end.

In this more or less speculative turn of his interest Bopp showed himself the true son of a philosophical period when general linguistics received its characteristic stamp from the labours and endeavours of men like the two Schlegels and Wilhelm von Humboldt. Jacob Grimm's aims were of a less lofty character than those of Bopp, whose work, to his own mind, was crowned by his theory of the origin of inflexion through agglutination. In con- fining his task to a more limited range than the vast field of Aryan languages embraced in Bopp's researches, and thus fixing his attention on a group of idioms exhibiting a striking regularity in their mutual relationship, both where

1 For this quotation and the following historical sketch in general see Th. Benfey, Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft, p. 438, Munich, 1869, and especially B. Delbriick, Zntroduction to the Study of Lan- guage, p. 1, Leipsic, 1882 (a second German edition appeared in 1884).

they coincide and where they differ, he made it his foremost object to investigate and illustrate the continuous progress, subject to definite laws, by which these languages had been developed from their common source. He thus raised the hitherto neglected study of the development of sounds to an equal level with the study of grammatical forms, which had so far almost exclusively absorbed all the interest of linguistic research. Grimm's discovery of the so-called "Lautverschiebung," or Law of the Permutation of Conson- ants in the Teutonic languages (which, however, had been partly found and proclaimed before Grimm by the Danish scholar Rask), became especially important as a stimulus for further investigation in this line. Grimm's influence on comparative philology (which is secondary only to that of Bopp, although he was never a comparative philologist in the sense that Bopp was, and did not always derive the benefit from Bopp's works which they might have afforded him) is clearly traceable in the work of Bopp's successors, amongst whom Friedrich August Pott is universally judged to hold the foremost rank. In his great work, Etymologische Forschungen auf dem Gebiete der indo-germanischen Sprachen, mut

besonderem Bezug auf die Lautumwandlung im Sans- krit, Grvechischen, Lateinischen, Littauischen, und Gothischen (Lemgo, 1833-36), we find Indo-Germanic etymology for the first time based on a scientific investigation of general Indo-Germanic phonology. Amongst Pott's contemporaries

Theodor Benfey? deserves mention on account of his Griech- Benfey.

- *Theodor Benfey was born on 28th January 1809 at Norten, Hanover, the son of a Jewish tradesman who had gained some reputa- tion as an acute and learned Talmudic scholar. At the early age of sixteen he entered the university of Gottingen (which he afterwards exchanged for Munich) to devote himself to the study of classical philology. It was not until after 1830, when he had settled in Frank- fort-on-the-Main as a private teacher, that his attention was drawn towards the study of Sanskrit. In 1834 he went back to Gottingen and began lecturing as a privat-docent. For some time his lectures extended over various branches of classical philology as well as of Oriental and comparative philology, but he soon began to concentrate himself on the latter departments. After he had joined the christian church he received, in 1848, an extraordinary professorship, and in 1862 he was appointed ordinary professor of Sanskrit and comparative philology. He died on 26th June 1881. Benfey also began his long and brilliant literary career in the field of classics. Besides his dis- sertation Observationes ad Anacreontis fragmenta genuina (Gottingen, 1829), his translation of the comedies of Terence (Stuttgart, 1837) deserves special notice. This was followed by his Wurzellexikon in 1839, and his quarto volume on "India"? in Ersch and Gruber's Fincyklopidie, 1840. Through these he at once gained a position of authority both in comparative and Indian philology. Of his other writings the more important are, Ueber die Monatnamen einiger alten Volker, insbesondere der Perser, Cappadocier, Juden, Syrer (written in conjunction with A. Stern), Berlin, 18386; Ueber das Verhdltniss der dgypt. Sprache zum semit. Sprachstamm, Leipsic, 1844 ; Die pers. Keilinschriften, mit Uebersetzung und Glossar, Leipsic, 1847 ; Die Hymnen des Samaveda, Leipsic, 1848 ; Vollstindige Grammatik der Sanskritsprache, Leipsic, 1852; Chrestomathte aus Sanskritwerken, Leipsic, 1853 ;*

Pantschatantra, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1859; Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft und oriental. Philologie in Deutschland, Munich, 1869. Of his numerous contributions to the various scientific periodicals of the time, those published in the Abhandlungen der Gattinger Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften are especially meritorious : ~~— "Ueber die indog. Endungen des Gen. Sing.," vol. xix. ; " Hinleitung in die Grammatik der ved. Sprache," vol. xix. ; " Die quantititsver~~ schiedenheiten in den Samhita- und Padatexten der Veden," vols. xix. – xxvil.; "Das indog. Thema des Zahlworts 'Zwei' ist 'du,'" vol. xxi. ; "Hermes, Minos, Tartaros,"' vol. xxii. ; ' Alipers. mazdah=Zend mazdaonh=Skr. medhas," vol. xxiii. ; '" Hinige Derivate des indog. Verbums anbh=nabh," and 'Ueber einige Worter mit dem Binde- vocal ij im Rigveda," vol. xxiv. ; " Behandlung des auslautenden a in na 'wie' und na 'nicht' im Rigveda, nebst Bemerkungen iiber die urspr. Aussprache und Accentuierung der Worter im Veda," vol. xxvi. Some of his smaller articles in the Géttingcr Gelehrte Anzetgen were reprinted under the titles of Vedica und Verwandtes, Strasburg, 1877, and Vedica und Linguistica, ibid., 1880. As the preceding list shows, Benfey's interest had become more and more concentrated on Vedic studies towards the end of his days, and indeed he had planned, as the crowning work of his life, an extensive grammar of Vedic Sans-

Schleicher,

New lin- guistic School.

782

isches Wurzellexicon (Berlin, 1839), a work equally remark- able for copiousness of contents and power of combination, yet showing no advance on Bopp's standpoint in its con- ception of phonetic changes.

A third period in the history of Indo-Germanic philology is marked by the name of August Schleicher, whose Com- pendium der verglerchenden Grammatik der indo-german- aschen Sprachen first appeared in 1861. In the period sub- sequent to the appearance of Pott's Htymologische Lorsch- ungen, a number of distinguished scholars, too large to be recorded here

individually,! had devoted their labours to the different branches of Aryan philology, especially assisted and promoted in their work by the rapidly progressing Vedic (and Avestic) studies that had been inaugurated by Rosen, Roth, Benfey, Westergaard, Miiller, Kuhn, Aufrecht, and others. Moreover, new foundations had been laid for the study of the Slavonic languages by Miklosich and Schleicher, of Lithuanian by Kurschat and Schleicher, of Celtic by Zeuss. Of the classical languages Greek had found a most distinguished repre- sentative in Curtius, while Corssen, Mommsen, Aufrecht, Kirchhoff, &c., had collected most valuable materials towards the elucidation of Latin and the cognate Italic idioms. In his Compendium Schleicher undertook and solved the difficult task of sifting down the countless details amassed since the days of Bopp and Grimm, and thus making the individual languages stand out clearly on their common background, while Bopp's attention had been especially occupied with what was common to all Indo-Germanic tongues. There are two prominent features which characterize this part of Schleicher's work,—his assumption and partial reconstruction of a prehistoric parent-speech, from which the separate Indo-Germanic languages were supposed to have sprung, and the estab- lishment of a long series of phonetic laws, regulating the changes by which that development of the individual idioms had taken place. On Schleicher's views of and contributions towards general comparative philology (which he erroneously proposed to consider as a branch of natural science) we need not enter here.

For some time after Schleicher's premature death (in 1868) Indo-Germanie philology continued in paths indi- cated by him and Curtius, with the exception, perhaps, of the school founded by Benfey, who had always stood on independent ground. The difference between the two schools, however, was less strikingly marked in their writings, because it chiefly concerns general views of language and the Indo-Germanic languages in particular, although the characteristic task of the period alluded to was that of working out the more minute details of compari- son ; but behind all this the general interest still clung to Bopp's old glottogonic problems. Lately, however, a new movement has begun, and a younger school of linguists has Sprung up who are united in their opposition to many theories of the older generation, yet often differ materially krit. Death, however, prevented him from completing more than the above-mentioned preliminary studies by means of

which he had intended to open the field for his greater work. (For fuller biographical details see Bezzenberger, in his Beitrdage, viii. 239 sq.)

1 The extensive progress made in this period is best illustrated by the foundation of two periodicals especially devoted to Aryan comparative philology, Kuhn's Zeuschrift fiir vergleichende Sprach-~ Sorschung, Berlin, from 1851 (now 27 vols.), and Kuhn's Beitrige zur vergleichenden Sprachforschung, Berlin, from 1858 (8 vols.), Benfey's school 18 More especially represented by the contributors to Benfey's Orient und Occident, Gottingen (3 vols.), from 1862, and subsequently through Bezzenberger's Beitrige zur Kunde der indogermanischen Sprachen, Gottingen (8 vols.), from 1877. France possesses two Periodicals of the same kind, the Revue de Linguistique, Paris, from 1868, and the Mémoires de la Société de Linguistique de Paris, also from 1868, while England is represented by the Proceedings and Trans-

actions of the Philological Society, and America by the Transactions of the American Philological Association (from 1868).

e

PE fb OE 0%

[ARYAN

both with regard to method and the solution of individual problems. In its present state this younger school (often branded with the name of Neo-Grammarians, "Junggram- matiker," by its opponents real and imaginary) is marked by certain distinct tendencies. In the first place, they are inclined more or less to abandon glottogonic problems as insoluble, if not for ever, yet for the present and with the scanty means that Aryan philology alone can furnish for this purpose. In this they are in opposition to the whole of the older school. In the second place, they object to the use of all misleading metaphorical compari- sons of processes in the history of language with processes of organic development,—comparisons used at all times, but especially cherished by Schleicher. In the third

place—and this has been of the greatest practical import- ance—they hold that our general views of language and our methods of comparison should be formed after a careful study of the living languages, because these alone are fully controllable in every minute detail, and can there- fore alone give us a clear insight into the working of the different motive forces which shape and modify language, and that the history of earlier periods of language, conse- quently, can only be duly illustrated by tracing out the share which each of these forces has had in every individual case of change. especially prominent—phonetic variation and formation by analogy. They generally work in turns and often in opposition to one another, the former frequently tending to

Of these forces two are found to be

differentiation of earlier unities, the latter to abolition of

earlier differences, especially to restoration of conformity disturbed by phonetic change.

There are, however, other important differences in the action of the two forces,

Phonetic change affects exclusively the pronunciation of a Phonetic language by 'substituting one sound or sound-group for change.

another. From this simple fact it is self-evident that phonetic changes as such admit of no exceptions. Pronun- ciation—that is, the use of certain sounds in certain cou- binations—is perfectly unconscious in natural unstudied speech, and every speaker or generation of speakers has only one way of utterance for individual sounds or their com- binations. If, therefore, a given sound was once changed into another under given circumstances, the new sound must necessarily and unconsciously replace its predecessor in every word that falls under the same rules, because the older sound ceases to be practised and therefore disappears from the language. Thus, for instance, the sound of the short so-called Italian in English has become exchanged for the peculiarly English sound in man, hat, &c., which is so exclusively used and practised now by English speakers that they feel great difficulty in pronouncing the Italian sound, which at an earlier period was almost as frequent in English as in any other language that has preserved the Italian sound up to the present day. Again, the sound of the so-called long English a in make, paper, &e., although once a monoplithong, is now pronounced as a diphthong, combining the sounds of the English short ¢ and 7, and no trace of the old monophthong is left, except where it was followed by 7, as in hare, mare (also azr, their, where, &c.), where the a has a broader sound somewhat approaching that of the short in hat. This last instance may at the same time serve to illustrate the restrictions made above as to sounds changing their pronunciation in certain groups or combinations, or under given circumstances only. We may learn from it that phonetic change need not always affect the same original sound in the same way in all its combinations, but that neighbouring sounds often influence the special direction in which the sound is modified, The different sounds of the English a in make and hare are both equivalents of the same Old English sound & (= the Italian short a) in macian, hara. The latter sound has

Ana- logical change.

LANGUAGES. |

been split in two, but this process again has taken place with perfect regularity, the one sound appearing before 7, the other before all other consonants. It is easy to see that the common practice of comprising the history of the Old English in the one rule,—that it was changed into the sound of the a in make except when followed by an 7,—can only be defended on the practical ground that this rule is convenient to remember, because the words exhibiting the former change are more numerous than the instances of the latter ; apart from this there is nothing to justify the assumption that one of these changes is the rule and the other the exception. The fact is, that we have two inde- pendent cases of change, which ought to be stated in two distinct and independent rules according to the different positions in which the original stood before the splitting began. It is also easy to observe that the variety of modifying influences may be much more manifold than in the present instance of make and hare, and that the number of special phonetic rules in such cases must be increased in proportion to the progress made in the investigation of the said modifying powers. In this respect much stil] remains to be done, but what has been achieved is more than sufficient to prove the correctness of the statement from which we started above, that phonetic rules in them- selves are without exceptions, however often phonetic processes may have been crossed and more or less effaced by non-phonetic influences in actual (especially literary)

'language, such as mixture of dialects, formation by

analogy, and the like.

Analogical change, on the other hand, does not affect the pronunciation of a language as a whole in the way phonetic change does, but is confined to the formation and inflexion of single words or groups of words, and therefore very apt to bear an entirely arbitrary and irregular character. A few instances will be sufficient to illustrate this. In Old English a certain number of substantives formed their plurals by mutation of the root-vowels, as fét—fét or b6c— béc. In Modern English this system of inflexion has been preserved in some cases, as in foot—feet, and altered in others as book —books. Now, while foot, feet, and book are the regular modern phonetic

*equivalents of the old fé¢, fé, b6c, the plural books can in no way be phonetically traced back to the old béc, the phonetical equivalent of which in Modern English would be *beech. The only possible ex- planation of a form like books is that the older béc was at some date given up and replaced by an entirely. new forma- tion, shaped after the analogy of the numerous words with a plural in -s without modification of the root-vowel. That this should have been done in the case of book, but not in that of foot, is an accident, which must be accepted as a fact not allowing of any special explanation. Let us now" take another instance from the English verb. In Old English the different persons of the preterite indicative in the so-called strong (irregular) verbs were generally dis- tinguished by different root-vowels ; ridan, 'to ride," and bindan, "to bind," for instance, form their preterites thus: tc rdd, S& ride, hé rdd, wé, gé, hié ridon, and ic band, St bunde, hé band, wé, gé, hié bundon. In Modern English this difference in the root-vowels has been abandoned, and rode, bound now stand for all persons, rode being the modern phonetic equivalent of the 1st and 3d sing. rdd, while bound represents the u-forms of bindan. Inasmuch as a similar process of levelling has been carried through in all prcterites of Modern English, regularity prevails even here. But when we look to its results in the indi- vidual verbs we soon find that the choice amongst the different forms which might have served as starting-points has been entirely arbitrary. It is indeed impossible to say why the old singular form should have been chosen as a model in one case, as in rode, and the old plural form in*

be hook oO eG ¥

783

another, as in bound. From these and numerous similar instances we must draw the conclusion that it is beyond our power to ascertain whence analogical changes may start, and to what extent they may be carried through when once begun. All we can do is to carefully classify the single cases that come under our observation, and in this way to investigate where such changes are especially apt to take place and what is their general direction. As to the latter points, it has been observed before that levelling of existing differences is one of the chief features in ana- logical change (as in the case of rode and bound). As to the former, it must be borne in mind

that, before any analogical change can take place, some mental connexion must exist between the words or forms serving as models and those which are remodelled after the types suggested to the mind of the speakers through the former. Of such natural mental cOmbinations two classes deserve especial notice : the mutual relationship in which the different, say in- flexional, forms of the same word stand to each other, and the more abstract analogies between the inflexional systems of word-groups bearing a similar character, as, for instance, the different declensions of nouns and pronouns, or the different conjugations of verbs. The instance of rode, bound may serve to illustrate the former category, that of books the latter. In the first case a levelling has taken place between the different forms of the root- vowels once exhibited in the different preterite forms of ridan or bindan, which clearly constitute a natural group or mental unity in consequence of their meaning. 'The form of rode as a plural has simply been taken from the old singular, that of bound as a singular from the old plural. In the case of book—books for béc—béc, this explanation would fall short. Although we might say that the vowel of the singular here was carried into the plural, yet this would not explain the plural ~~*s. So it becomes evident that the old declension of béc—béc was remodelled after the declen*~~ *sion of words like arm—arms, which had always formed their plurals in -s. Isolated words or forms, on the other hand, which are no part of natural groups or systems, inflexional or formative, must be regarded as commonly safe from alterations through analogy, and are therefore of especial value with regard to establishing rules of purely phonetic development.*

It is true that the distinction between phonetic and analogical change has always been acknowledged in com- parative philology. At the same time it cannot be denied that analogical changes were for a long time treated with a certain disdain and contempt, as deviations from the only course of development then allowed to be truly "organic" and natural, namely, that of gradual phonetic change (hence the epithet "false" so constantly attached to analogy in former times). Amongst those who have recently contributed most towards a more correct evalua- tion of analogy as a motive-powcr in language, Professor Whitney must be mentioned in the first place. In Ger- many Professor Scherer (Zur Geschichte der deutschen Sprache, 1868) was the first to apply analogy as a prin- ciple of explanation on a larger scale, but in a wilful and unsystematic way. Hence

he failed to produce an immediate and lasting impression, and the merit of having introduced into the practice of modern comparative philo- logy a strictly systematic consideration of both phonetic and analogic change as co-ordinate factors in the develop- ment of language rests with Professor Leskien of Leipsic,

and a number of younger scholars who had more or less The New Amongst these Brug- School.

experienced his personal influence. mann, Osthoff, and Paul rank foremost as the most vigorous and successful defenders of the new method, the correctness of which has since been practically acknow- ledged by most of the leading philologists of all shades,

The

parent- language.

Aryan groups,

784

who in point of fact follow it in their investigations, in spite of the lively theoretical protest which some of them continue to maintain against it, and in spite of the general feeling of hostility and inclination towards mutual distrust often but too clearly visible in recent linguistic publications, from whatever side they may come.!

From this historical sketch we may now proceed to a short examination of some of the chief results of Aryan comparative philology.

The most prominent achievement of the researches of Bopp and his followers was to prove that the majority of the European languages and dialects, together with a certain number of important languages spoken in Asia, form one great family,—that is, that they have sprung from one common source or parent-language. The name now mostly used in England for this community is Aryan languages. American and French scholars generally pre- fer to say Indo-European languages, while the name of Indo-

Germanic languages is still almost universally used in Germany. It is hard to decide for or against any of these names from a scientific point of view. The word Jndo- Germanic was not inappropriately coined by combining the names of the most easterly and westerly members of the family, the Indian and the Germanic or Teutonic group.? Indo-European seems to be a less lucky invention, as this combination of geographical names would erroneously point to all the languages of India and Europe as the constituents of our family, while a large number both of Indian and European idioms belong to entirely un- related groups of languages. Aryan would no doubt be the best name in itself, for it seems that the primitive forefathers of the Aryan nations used the word Aria as a national name themselves. We find at least the Sanskrit Arya thus used in India, and similarly the Old Persian Ariya (in the cuneiform inscriptions of Darius), Zend Airya in Persia (whence the later Eran, Irén), and per- haps Hriu, gen. Erenn, as the national name for Ireland. But before the word Aryan came to be applied in the sense defined above it had for some time been used, and it is still largely used, in a more restricted sense as the special collective name for the languages of the Indian and Persian or Iranian groups of the Indo-Germanic family. This ambiguity renders the use of the word Aryan less recommendable than it would be had its meaning been properly fixed from the beginning. It seems that outside of England Aryan will hardly gain ground ; some recent attempts to introduce the name into Germany have utterly failed, and in the same way the other nations who share in scientific research in this demesne cling to the older names.

This large Indo-Germanic or Aryan family, then, to re- vert to our principal task, consists of ten groups or sub-

1 The fullest systematical treatment of these questions of method will be found in Paul's Principien der Sprachgeschichte, Halle, 1880. See also Osthoff, Das physiologische und psychologische Moment in der sprachlichen Lormenbildung, Berlin, 1879, and Misteli, ' Laut- gesetz und Analogie," in Zeitschrife fir Vélkerpsychologie, xi. p. 365 sg. Of those who on principle stand in theoretical opposition, the several schools of Benfey (now especially represented by Fick), Scherer, and Johannes Schmidt may be mentioned.

2 The word Indo-Germanic, it is true, was invented before the Celtic languages were known to belong to the same family. But even after that discovery it was unnecessary to substitute the name Jndo- Celtic as some authors have tried to do; for certainly the most westerly branch of Indo-Germanic in Europe (disregarding the Aryan colonies in America) is Icelandic, an undoubtedly Germanic language. Other hames, such as Japhetic or Sanskritic, have hardly found any use in Scientific literature.

For particulars see Professor Max Miiller's Lect. on the Science of Lang., lect. vi. (first series), and ARYAN, vol. if. p. 672 sq.; for this etymology of Kriz see especially H. Zimmer, " Arisch," in Bezzen- berger's Beitr. 2. Kunde der indogerm. Sprachen, iii, p. 137 sq.

Po tio bo G Y

[ARYAN

*families of languages, three of which are located in Asia. while the rest belong to Europe.**

1. The Indian Family, in which Sanskrit, especially in its oldest form, preserved in the Vedic texts, stands fore- most inrank. Of the older stages of the language Prakrit and Pali may be mentioned here,—the former, in its various branches being the mother of the modern Indian dialects of Aryan descent (including also the Gipsy lan- guage), the latter (see above, p. 183) the idiom of the sacred books of the southern Buddhists.5

2. The Zranian or Persian Family, represented in the earliest period by Old Persian, scanty remnants of which have come down to us in the Achemenian cuneiform in- scriptions, and Zend, or, as it is also called, Old Bactrian, the language of the Zend-Avesta, the sacred books of the Zoroastrians. The chief modern representatives of this group are Persian, Afghan, Kurdish, and Ossetic.®

3. The Armenian Family, consisting of the different living dialects of Armenian. Armenian has but recently been proved to be an independent member of the Aryan family. It partakes of many peculiarities of the Iranian group, but at the same time shares several important characteristics of the

European languages, so that it cannot be classed as a subdivision of either of these groups."

4. The Greek Family, comprising the various old dialects of Greek, and the modern Romaic idioms, which have been developed out of the later xow7 that had gradually super- seded the old dialectal varieties.®

5. A fifth family, which may once have had a far larger extension, is now only represented by one surviving member, the Albanian language. As we have no old sources for this idiom, and only know it in its modern state of utter decay, it is extremely difficult to obtain definite results concerning its origin and position relatively to the sur- rounding languages. Bopp seems to have proved, however, that Albanian actually is an Aryan idiom.2 It is also certain that it belongs to the European type of Aryan, yet it is not particularly closely allied with Greek, as has often been assumed, but shows some remarkable coincidences with the northern European languages,10

6. The Italic Family. Its most important representative is Latin, from which the modern Romance languages have sprung. Closely connected with Latin was the Faliscan dialect, which is preserved in a few inscriptions only.

4 The fullest, yet now somewhat antiquated, account of all the members of the Aryan family will be found in the article " Indo-ger-

.manischer Sprachstamm," by A. F. Pott, in Ersch and Gruber's Ency-

klopddie (Leipsic, 1840). See also especially Th. Benfey, Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft, pp. 601-683.

° For further particulars see SANSKRIT.

® See the articles PAHLAVI (supra, p. 134 sq.) and Persta (supra, p- 653 sq.), and for the linguistic characteristics of this group H. Hiibsch- mann, in Zeitschrift fir vergl. Sprachforschung, xxiv. p. 372 sq.

7 See H. Hiibschmann, "Ueber die Stellung des Armenischen im Kreise der indo-germanischen Sprachen," in Zeitschr. vergi. Sprachf., xxiii. p. 5 sg.,

where further references to earlier treatments of this question are given.

8 See GREECE, vol. xi. p- 129 sg. An exhanstive summary of all prior contributions towards linguistic elucidation of Greek is given in Gustav Meyer's excellent @riechische Grammatik, Leipsic, 1880, which must now be considered the standard book on Greek grammar, together with the well-known works of G. Curtius, quoted at vol. xi. p. 136.

9 Bopp, "Ueber das Albanesische in seinen verwandtschaftlichen Beziehungen," Berlin, 1855, in AUhandl. Berl. Akad.

10 See especially G. Meyer, "Die Stellung des Albanesischen im Kreise der indo-germ. Sprachen," in Bezzenberger's Beitrige, viii. p. 185 sqg., and Albanesische Studien, Vienna, 1883. For other refer- ences, cp. Benfey, Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft, p. 643 Sq.

1 A sketch of the history of Latin is given under Latin LANGUAGE; a list of the chief books concerning the other dialects will be found in the appendix to Sayce's Intr. to the Scvence of Lang., vol. ii.

LANGUAGES. |

remnants in the north-west of France and in the British islands. Among its extinct members the language of the Galatians in Asia Minor may be mentioned, of which little more is known than that it was Celtic. The earliest docu- ments of Celtic speech we possess are some inscriptions in the idiom of the Gallic inhabitants of France and northern Italy. The surviving branches of Celtic show a clear division into two groups: the Northern or Gaelic group, formed by Irish, Gaelic or Scotch, and Manx, and a Southern or Britannic group, consisting of Welsh or Cymric, Cornish (extinct since 1778), and Armorican or Bas Breton in Brittany. The fundamental authority for the comparative study of Celtic grammar is Zeuss, Grammatica Celtica, 1853 (2d ed. by H. Ebel, 1871). After Zeuss, Stokes and Rhys in England, Ascoli in Italy, Ebel, Windisch, and Zimmer in Germany, aud D'Arbois de Jubainville and H. Gaidoz in France have been the chief contributors to this field of research. The last-named is also the editor of a periodical especially devoted to Celtic studies, the Revue Celtique (Paris, from 1870).

8. The Germanic or Teutonic Family. This well-de- veloped family is divided into two main groups, which are now commonly denoted Eastern and Western Germanic. The members of the former are Gothic (see GotTHic Lancuacs, vol. x. p. 852 sq.) and Scandinavian, with an eastern and a western subdivision, the former compris- ing Swedish and Danish, the latter Norse and Icelandic. Western Germanic, on the other hand, consists of English, Frisian (these two seem to form a separate branch), Saxon or Low German, Frankish (including Dutch), and Upper German (see article GERMAN LANGUAGE). The dialects of the numerous other Teutonic tribes not mentioned here have died out without leaving sufficient materials for linguistic classification.

9. The Baltic Family, comprising three distinct idioms —Prussian, Lithuanian, and Lettish. Prussian became extinct in the 16th century. The few specimens of this highly interesting language which have been preserved are collected by Nesselmann, Die Sprache der alten Preussen (Konigsberg, 1845), and Hin deutschpreussisches Vocabul- arium (tbid., 1868). The same author has also published a dictionary, Thesaurus linguxe Prussice (Berlin, 1873). Amongst other contributions to Prussian grammar, Bopp's essay, Ueber die Sprache der Altpreussen (Berlin, 1853), is especially noteworthy. Of the two other branches, Lithu- anian is the more important for comparative philology. The chief grammars are those by Schleicher (7andbuch der litauischen Sprache, 2 vols., Prague, 1856-57) and Kurschat (Litauische Grammatik, Halle, 1876); the best dictionary is by Kurschat (Woérterbuch der lit. Sprache, 2 vols., Halle, 1878-83). Some of the oldest texts are now being re- printed by Bezzenberger.2, For Lettish, Bielenstein's grammar (Die lettische Sprache, 2 vols., Berlin, 1863-64) and Ulmann's dictionary (Settisches Wéorterbuch, Riga, 1872) are the first books to be consulted.

10. The Slavonie Family. There are two main branches of Slavonic. The so-called Southern or South-Eastern branch embraces Russian, Ruthenian (in Galicia), Bul- garian, Servian, Croatian, and Slovenian. The second branch is generally designated by the name of Western Slavonic. It is chiefly represented by Cechish or Bohemian and Polish. With the former the Sorbian dialects spoken

1 For further particulars see article CELTIC LITERATURE, and the very exhaustive critical and bibliographical study by Windisch, “ Kelt- ische Sprachen,” in Ersch and Gruber’s Encyklopddie. ‘

2 Litauische und Lettische Drucke des 16ten Jahrhunderts, Got- tingen, 1878 sq.; cp. also Beitrdge zur Geschichte der lit. Sprache, Gottingen, 1877, by the same author.

Pet 0 iO Ce

7. The Celtic Family, once covering a large part of western Europe, but now reduced to comparatively scanty

in Lusatia are very closely connected, Polish, again, is sub- divided into Eastern Polish or Polish Proper and Western Polish, a few remnants of which now survive in the Kas- subian dialects of Prussia. About the extinct members of this last group, which are generally comprehended under the name of Polabian dialects, Schleicher’s Laut- und For- menlehre der polabischen Sprache (St Petersburg, 1871) and an article by Leskien in Lm neuen Reich, ii. p. 325, may be consulted. The oldest Slavonic texts, some of which go as far back as the 10th century, are a number of books destined for the use of the church. From this circum- stance the peculiar dialect in which they are written is often called Church Slavonic. Schleicher and others identify this dialect with Old Bulgarian, while Miklosich thinks it should be classed as Old Slovenian. For com. parative purposes as well as for Slavonic philology this idiom is the most important. The chief grammars are Schleicher, Mormenlehre der kirchenslavischen Sprache (Bonn, 1852); Miklosich, Laut- und Formenilehre der altsloven. eschen Sprache (Vienna, 1850) ; and Leskien, Zandbuch der altbulgarischen Sprache (Vienna, 1871). The fundamental works on comparative Slavonic philology are Miklosich, Vergleichende Grammatik der slavischen Sprachen (4 vols., Vienna, 1852-68 ; 2d ed. of vol. i., Lautlehre, 1879), and Lexicon Palxoslovenico-Greco-Latinum (Vienna, 1862-65). A large number of special contributions are collected in Jagié, Archiv fiir slavische Philologie (Berlin, from 1876). The mutual relationship of these ten families may be shortly characterized by saying that they are dialects of the primitive Aryan parent-speech, which at

an early period of its existence must have formed a linguistic unity, but subsequently became dissolved into these subdivi- sions. This fundamental view now seems to be universally admitted to be correct. But it is extremely difficult to go beyond it in attempts to trace out the history of the process of dissolution. One problem offering itself at the very outset of such an attempt (although more of an ethnological than philological character) must at once be dismissed as insoluble,—the question of the original home of our Aryan forefathers and the directions of the wander- ings that brought the single members of the great original tribe to the seats occupied in historical times by the several Aryan nations. There exist indeed no means for deciding whether they came from the north-eastern part of the Iranian plateau near the Hindu-Kush Mountains, as was once generally assumed, or whether Europe may boast of being the mother of the Aryan nationality, as some authors are now inclined to believe.? The chief philological diffi- culty lies in the fact that some of these ten families stand in closer relationship with certain others than with the rest, so that they seem to form separate independent groups, and yet these groups cannot be severed from the rest without overlooking important linguistic facts which seem to speak for the existence of a closer connexion between single members of one group and single members or the whole of another. Before attention was drawn to this latter point it was easy enough to account for the origin of the grouping alluded to. If everything that is Genea- common to all Aryan languages must have originated in logical the common parent-speech—and the correctness of this 8TCUP2& assumption can hardly be doubted—then everything that is common to all the families of one particular group, but strange to the others, must be assigned to a period when these families formed a unity by themselves and were dis- connected with the other stock. The fact, for instance, that all the European languages possess the three vowels a, é, 0, where the Indian and Iranian group show the uniform a, which was then believed to be the primitive

3 On this much vexed question see especially O. Schrader, Sprach- vergleichung und Urgeschichte, Jena, 1883, passim.

Genea- logical theory criticized,

sound, seemed to indicate that the primitive Aryan stock had once been split into two halves, one of which remained in Asia and retained the primitive a-sound, while the other half emigrated to Europe and_ there developed the new vowel-system, before any new divisions took place. The Aryan parent-speech would thus appear to have been spht into a European and an Asiatic " base-language." Similar facts in the history of the single European languages then led to the further assumption of a southern European base as the parent of Greek, Italic, and Celtic, and a northern European base for Germanic, Baltic, and Slavonic, and, with further subdivision, an Italo-Celtic and a Litu-Slavic base for Italic and Celtic on the one hand and for Baltic and Slavonic on the other. The prehistoric development of Aryan, according to this genealogical theory (which makes division of language dependent on division of nations), may be illustrated by the following genealogical table.

Aryan. Asiatic. as ll Indlan. oe Southern European. Northern European. | oe ae oe Greek. Italo-Celtic. Germanic. a ental le iL I. ; Italic. Celtic. Baltic. Slavonic.

*It may still be admitted that at least the mutual position of the ten families is not the same in all cases. It cannot be doubted that Indian and Iranian resemble each other more than either of them does any other family. The same may also be said of Baltic and Slavonic, and even of Italic and Celtic, however different the latter two may appear to be at first sight.2 But it is impossible to carry this system of genealogical grouping through. It will be observed that not all the ten families are represented in the genealogical tree given above ; Albanian and Armenian have not found a place in it, nor could they be introduced without disturbing the entire table. If we look at Ar- menian, for instance, we find that its structure and phono- logy on the whole follow the Asiatic type, and yet Armenian shares the European vowel-system alluded to before ; com- pare, for instance, Armenian berem, "I bear," with Greek épw, Latin fero, Old Irish berimm (and dobiur for *do-beru), Gothic baira (pronounced béra), Lith. bert, Slavonic bera, against Sanskrit bhdérami, Zend baramt. Armenian, then, is half European, half Asiatic, and if such an intermediate idiom exists it is impossible to make a*

strict distinction between Asiatic and European. Let us take another in- stance. All the Asiatic languages have changed the ori- ginal palatal / into sibilants, and the same change we find again in Slavonic and Baltic, both of which otherwise clearly belong to the European type ; compare, for instance, Sanskrit and Zend dacan, "ten," Armenian tasn, Slavonic deseti, Lith. dészimt, with Greek déxa, Latin decem, Old

1 This pedigree is the one ultimately given by Schleicher. Others have assumed more or less diffcrent degrees of relationship. Greek and Italic, for instance, were for a long time believed to be particularly near relations. A totally contrary view would come nearer the truth. Greek and Latin are about as different, both in phonology and gram- matical structure, as any two members of the Aryan family ; indeed there is nothing to recommend their combination but the intimate connexion in which the two nations and their literatures have stood within historical times, and the custom derived therefrom of studying the two classical languages together from our schooldays.

2 Amongst the characteristics of these two groups the general resemblance in the declension, and in the verb the formation of a future in 6 or f (Latin amabo, Old Trish carfa, ruo charb) and of a passive in r (Latin fertur, Old Irish carthir, &c.), are the most important.

PAY 17 O° LO" F

|

[ARYAN

*Trish deich (for *dekim), Gothic taihun. In a similar way Litu-Slavic and Germanic are connected by the formation of a plural dative in m, as in Gothic waudfam, Lith. vilkams, Slavonic veékomd, against the Sanskrit -bhyas, Latin -bus, Trish* ~~*; andsoall round. The consequence is that every attempt at grouping the Aryan families of speech on the genealogical basis must fail, because it would have to cut asunder some of the natural ties that hold the single families together. It is true that some of the coincid*~~ *ences falling under this head may be due to mere chance, especially those in phonology ; for we often see the same phonetic processes going on in*

languages which stand in no connexion whatever at the time. Yet in the case before us the number of the actual coincidences is too large to allow of such an explanation, and the fact of their existence is made all the more striking from the circumstance that it is each pair of newghbouring families which shows these connecting links. If they prove anything (and it cannot be doubted that they do), we must necessarily come to the conclusion that every such link is a witness for at least a temporary connexion between the two languages or families it holds together. To assume such teniporary connexions in the time after a true division of nations had taken place (that is, to assume, for instance, that Slavonic had come into contact with the Asiatic languages after the Europeans had migrated from Asia to Europe, or the forefathers of the present Asiatic nations from Europe to Asia, as the case may be) seems impossible. It is likewise highly improbable that con- nexions intimate enough to leave distinct marks in lan- guage existed at a time when the original tribe had spread over the wide regions now covered by the Aryans, even sup- posing this spreading to have been so gradual as not to cause any break in the continuity of the Aryan population. And, even if we concede this, how are we to account for the fact that we have no longer the supposed continuity of speech, but well-defined single languages, whose separa- tion must, after all, be due to breaks in the continuity of intercourse between the respective speakers? These and similar reasons point to the assumption that the origin of the phenomena alluded to must be sought in a remote period, when the Aryan tribe had an extension small enough to permit continuity of intercourse, and yet large enough to allow of dialectic variations in its different districts. In other words, when the actual break-up of the Aryan tribe into different nations came to pass the Aryan parent-speech was no longer a homogeneous idiom, but the development of dialects had begun. On their following wanderings, then, those tribes or clans would naturally cling together which had until then lived in the closest connexion both of intercourse and dialect (for community of intercourse and of speech always go together), or, as we might also say, the old unity would naturally be broken up into as many parts as there had been dialectic centres. Transition dialects, which might have been spoken in the outlying parts of the old dialectic districts, would also naturally be then reduced to a common level in consequence of the general mixture of speakers that could not but have taken place on wanderings so extensive as those of the Aryan tribes must have been. Such an assumption would indeed

solve most of the difficulties mentioned above, especially the peculiar way in which the single families of Aryan are linked together. Each of these would then correspond to one of the main dialects of the parental language, and thcir mutual affini- ties would therefore be of the same kind as those of neigh- bouring dialects, say, of any living speech. And in these nothing is more common, nay even more characteristic, than the gradual transition from one to the other, so that each dialect of an intermediate position partakes of some

Stopped sounds.

LANGUAGES. |

of the peculiarities of its neighbours to the right and left. In Old English the Kentish dialect, for instance, in some respects goes with West Saxon against Mercian, in others with Mercian against West Saxon, sometimes West Saxon and Mercian combine against Kentish, and sometimes each of them stands by itself, as the following table will show.

West Saxon. Kentish, Mercian. hilpd hilpd HI helped (he) helps. Ledht leéht H léht light. ded HI déd déd deed. hierde I] hiorde hiorde (shep-)herd. dil { dél | dl deal. gylden { gelden | gylden golden. field lI Seld | faélicd (he) falls. wierpd NI weorpa | weorped (he) throws.

If the inhabitants of the old kingdoms of Wessex, Kent, and Mercia had separately left their English abodes and wandered back to different parts of the Continent after their dialects had developed in the way illustrated above, would not their dialects have gradually developed into independent languages exhibiting the same characteristic features of mutual relationship as those found in the Indo-Germanic idioms ?1

It remains to give a short review of the main character-

istics of Indo-Germanic, both phonetic and structural.

A. Phonology.—The eonsonant system of the Aryan parent-language was chiefly characterized by the prevalence of stopped (explosive) sounds and the scarcity of spirauts. The only representatives of the latter class were s,

and in a few cases z, while there is no trace of sounds so common in modern languages as the English /, th, sh, or the German ch. Besides stops and spirants the system comprised nasals, liquids, and semi-vowels.

The stops were either voiceless (surd), like the English g, ¢, &, or voiced (sonant), like the English },d,g, and either pure (unaspirated) or aspirated. By combining these two distinctions we arrive at four chief varieties of stops, which are generally thus symbolized : p, ph, b, bh for the labial, ¢, th, d, dh for the dental elass, &c. Here the », ¢, & denote unaspirated voiceless stops, ph, th, kh their aspirates ; 6, d, g voiced stops, and 06h, dh, gh their aspirates. In pronouncing these sounds English readers should be careful not to give the Aryan p, t, k the value of the English p, ¢, x, be- cause these are always slightly aspirated. The true unaspirated sound is still found in the Romance and the Slavonic languages, in modern Greek, &c. The aspirates ph, th, kh should be sounded with a strong escape of breath after the explosion of the stop, inserting a distinct A between the initial p, ¢,% and the following sound (as is often done in Irish pronunciation ; initial p, ¢, # in Danish may also be taken as examples). In the so-called medi b, d, g the voice should always be distinctly audible, as in French, or in English medial 8, d,g (initial 6,d,g in English are often voiceless). The pronunciation of the voiced aspirates bh, dh, gh is a very vexed question, as these sounds have disappeared from all the living Aryan languages except the modern Indian dialects, and these seem to show differences in the prouunciation of the aspirates which have not yet been sufficiently cleared up. The old Indian grammarians made their aspirates out to be voiced stops followed by a corresponding, that is voiced, aspiration, and this description seems to correspond with the observations of Mr Alex. Ellis, who found that in the Benares pronunciation of Sanskrit bha, dha, gha are distinguished from ba, da, ga merely by a somewhat stronger pronunciation of the vowel. It seems, however, that another pro- nunciation exists in the west, and that bia, for instance, in Bombay is actually pronounced as a distinctly voiced 6 followed by a common h; the voice is broken off simultaneously with the opening of the lips, so that no vocalic sound is inserted between the 6 and the h. If this pronunciation was not origiual in Aryan, it seems to have come in at an early period ; for it would be extremely difficult to explain the transition of original bh, dh, gh into the Greek voiceless*

1 A detailed history of the different views expressed with regard to the mutual relationships of the Indo-Germanie languages has been given by O. Schrader, Sprachvergleichung und Culturgeschichte, p. 66 sg.; cp. especiaily Joh. Schmidt, Dve Verwandschaftsverhalinisse der indog. Sprachen, Vienna, 1872; A. Fick, Die ehemalige Sprach- einheit der Indogermanen Furopas, Gottingen, 1873 (reviewed by Schmidt, in Jenaer Literaturzeitung, 1874, p. 201 sg.); A. Leskien, Die Deklination im Slavisch-Litawischen und Germanischen, Leipsic, 1876 (Introduction); Paul, Princtpien der Sprachgeschichte, ch. xii. ; K. Brugmann, " Zur Frage nach den Verwandtschaftsverhaltnissen der indog. Sprachen," in Techmer, [nicrnationale Zeitschrift fiir allgem. Sprachwissenschaft, i. (1884), p. 226 sq.

2 On Early English Pronunciation, iv. p. 1185 sq.

aspirates $, 0, x (as in Greck ¢épw, originally pronouneed p-héré, compared with Sanskrit bhdrdmi), unless we start from a voiceless aspiration.

With regard to their positions, the labials p, ph, b, bh do not seem to have differed from the common European labials of the present day. The so-ealled dentals ¢, th, d, dh were really dental, that is, formed by touching the lower rim or back of the upper teeth with the tip of the tongue (in the pronunciation of the English t, d the tongue is raised towards the upper gums). This purely dental pronunciation is still preserved in most of the Asiatic and some European languages. The supradental class represented in the Indian languages by the so-ealled cerebrals or linguals /, th, d, dh seems not to have existed in primitive Aryan, but was most prob- ably imported into Indian from the Dravidian idioms of southern India, where these sounds are very common. Of back consonants Aryan possessed two distiuct parallel sets, now generally symbolized by k', kh}, g}, gh! and k?, kh?, g?, gh? respectively.2 They may be charaeterized as front and back gutturals, or possibly as palatals and gutturals proper (compare the Semitie distinction of 3 and p). The distinction of the two series is best preserved in

*the Asiatic languages and Litu-Slavic, where the front gutturals or palatals passed into spirants, while the back gutturals (at least originally) retained their eharacter of explosives. In the other languages the difference is less elearly marked, as will be seen from the following table of correspondences.**

i Lith. | Greek. |

ae |Sans.| Zend. | Arm. | Slay. Lat. Trish. | Germ. kl ¢ s 8 8 me \ ie ¢ Cache [n (g) ie [lawl Be | eee

a k, ¢ ea kh k,Gc} k K,7(7T)| G ¢ Ss a0 h (w,9) ge? ie fos 7) bot lta 2 aa h g | to? oe

Of nasals there were four, correspouding to the four classes of stops, Nasals m, 2, and two guttural ones, which may be written 7! and 7; the and latter only occur before the corresponding explosives. Of liquids we liquids.

find 7 and Zin the individual languages, but frequently interchang- ing. Ithas been assumed, therefore, that Aryan had only one sound instead of the two, which was afterwards developed into either 7 or i. There seems to be sufficient reason, however, to believe that the later distinetion of 7 and 7 was founded on some parallel distinction in Aryan ; most probably we have to assume the cvexistence of two varieties of r-sounds ; the one which, at a later period, passed into 7 may have been a distinct trilled r, while the second, the ante- eedent of 2, may have been an untrilled variety. We find a similar

distinction in the semi-vowels y and w, each of which must have Semi- The first variety of y is in Greek vowels.

had two distinct varieties. represented by ‘, the second by § as in és, gvydv, compared with Sanskrit yds and yugdm, &e.; from these correspondences it would seem that the first y was a real semi-vowel, like the English y—that is, a non-syllabic 7—and the second a more spirant sound, like the North-German 7.

with vavdrdha, p. vavrdhis.' Here the transition of v into wu points to a semi-vocalie pronuneiation, asin English w. The other sound, which remains unaltered, may have been more like the spirant English v The sound of the sibilant s cannot be fixed exactly ; it may have been dental either like the French s, or more supra- dental as in English. The voiced z is of extremely rare occur- rence; it was confined to combinations of a sibilant with a voiced mute, such as 2d, zdh, zy; compare, for instance, Aryan mizdho-,*

3 This fact was first discovered by Ascoli, Corst di glottologia, 1870, p. 51 sg., and Fick, Die ehem. Spracheinhett der Indo-germanen Europas, p. 8 sq.3 cp. also Joh. Schmidt, in Jenaer Lit.~~Zeitung, 1874, p~~ 201 sg., and Zeitschr. f. vergl. Sprachf., xxv. p. 1 sg.; H. Hibsch- mann, in Zeitschr. f. vergl. Sprachf., xxiii. pp. 20 sq., 385 sg., xxiv. p. 372 sq.; H. Moller, Dic palatalreihe der indog. Grundsprache im Germanischen, Leipsie, 1875 ; H. Collitz, in Bezzenberger's Bevér., iti. p. 177 sq.; F. Kluge, Beitrdge zur Geschichte der german. Conjugation, Strasburg, 1879, p. 42 sq.

4 The voiceless aspirates are left out here because they are hardly frequent enough to enable us to make out exact rules of correspondence. It may be noticed here that in Sanskrit and Greek the old aspirates have been replaced by the corresponding unaspirated sounds (that is, b, d,g,j and 7, 7, x respectively) whenever they were followed by another aspirate. See especially Grassmann, in Zeitschr. f. vergl. Sprachf., xii. p. 81 sq. :

5 Compare also the parallel of Sanskrit cyaja, perfect of 4/yaj, and Greek dfouat, &-yos, with initial. The discovery of the two y-sounds was first made by G. Schulze, Ueber das Verhdltniss des ¢ zu den ent- sprechenden Lauten der verwandten Sprachen, Gottingen, 1867.

As to the w, the existence of a double sound Other seems to follow from the different way in which initial v is treated eonson- in Sanskrit reduplication ; compare perfects like wvdca, 3d plural acus ants.

Vocalic sounds,

Primitive

Qy0,0;

Syllabic r and 7.

788

Sanskrit midha, Zend mizhda, Greek juc6és, Slavonic mizda, Gothic mizd6.1 }

Up to a very recent date the Aryan vowel-system was considered not to have contained more than the three " primitive " vowels a, i, uw, and the diphthongs ai and au (regardless of quantity). The sounds of e and 0, which are frequent in the European languages (and also in Armenian, as has been pointed out before), but do not oeeur in Sanskrit,? were regarded as later developments from the originala. We knownow that these views were erroneous. Aryan not only had the five common vocalic sounds a, ¢, 0,7, u, both long and short, but also often used the liquids and nasals r, 7, m, nm, 9, as vowels, that is, with syllabic value (as, for instance, in English battle, bottom, mutton, pronounced bat-tl, bot-tm, mut-tir), also both short and long. Besides these simple vocalic sounds, there were twelve diphthongs proper, at, e7, 07, wu, eu, ou, and Gi, 61, dt, Gu, &u, du, setting aside the similar combinations of a, é, 0, &c., with liquids and nasals. It will be observed at a glance that the Greek vowels and diphthongs

a € 0 Bh a 7 mo @ Ff a ea oa g n Q av ev ou au nu wu

are exactly those of the Aryan system. The only case, indeed, where Greek has changed the Aryan sounds is that of the syllabic liquids and nasals, as will be shown hereafter.

The first proofs for the priority of the European a, ¢, o in com- parison with the uniform Indo-Iranian were discovered independ- ently by Amelung and Brugmann.? Since then the number of proofs has been considerably increased. The most striking of all 1s perhaps the observation, made independently by Verner and Collitz, that the original back gutturals of Aryan are changed into palatals in Indo-Iranian when followed by ,y, or an corre- sponding to a European e, but are preserved without alteration when followed*

by other sounds, especially an a corresponding to a Euro- pean a oro. We thus find not only forms like Sanskrit eid corre- sponding to Greek 7, Latin guid, but also Sanskrit Ca, pafich, janas, &e., corresponding to Greek re, révre, yévos, Latin que, quingue, genus, while the old guttural is kept in words like Sanskrit katara, garbha=Greek mérepos (Ionian xérepos), Slavonic kotoryj, Gothic hwathar, and German kalb. A special instance of this Indo-Iranian law of palatalization is exhibited in the formation of the redupli- cative perfect, where initial gutturals are changed into palatals before the vowel of the reduplicative syllable, which is ¢ in Greek and elsewhere ; compare Sanskrit perfects like cakara, jagrdbha with Greek rérpoga, Nédourra, &c. If, then, the Indo-Iranian a(= European e) once had the same influence on preceding gutturals as the palatal vowel and semi-vowel ¢ and y, it must necessarily itself have had a similar palatal, that is ¢-like, pronunciation distinguishing it from the other a's that go along with the non-palatal European and 0. The proofs for the coexistence of a and o in primitive Aryan are no less convineing than those for the existence of the palatal "'a-vowel," that is ¢, but they are too complicated to be discussed here. 5

*The Aryan syllabic liquids and nasals were also discovered by Brugmann. In Sanskrit the short syllabic liquids are preserved in the so-called 7-vowel and i-vowel, as in krtd, klpté ; the long ones have passed over into ir or ur, as in stirnd, purnd, and gurti. These Sanskrit vocalic r and 7 are the only direct remnants of the whole class. In all other cases the original system has been more or less destroyed. Thus, to give only a few instances, the syllabic nasals appear as@in Sanskrit and Greek, as in Sanskrit tatd, Greek Tarés for tntd- (past part. of /ten, in Sanskrit tanémi, Greek retvw for *revjw), Sanskrit catd, Greek é-xaréy, "hundred" (for k'nté-m); or as an before vowels, as in Sanskrit tant, "thin," Greek ravds, for dissyllabic ¢n-4. In Latin and Celtic an ¢ has been developed before ' po Osthoff, in Zeitschr. f. vergl. Sprachf., xxiii. p. 87, and Kluge, ibid., xxv.*

2 It must be borne in mind that the Sanskrit sounds generall i

by e and o were originally diphthongs, = ai and au. sasdieiaibisee: 3 See A. Amelung, Die Bildung der Tempusstimme durch Vi ocalstetgerung, Berlin

1871, also in Zeitschr. f. vergl. Sprachf., xxii. p. 309, and Zeitsch. f. deutsches Alter.

thum, Xvi. p. 161 sg.; and Brugmann, in Curtius's Studien, ix. pp. 287, 363. In

his earlier publications Brugmann wrote ay, as, 3 for e, 0, a respectively : A was

te substituted for a3 by De Saussure ; others, again, introduced a® and a? for Trugmann's a) and ae, and simple @ for his az. The spelling e, 0, a, now gener-

r iii. p. 177 sg.; Verner's discover

iy Bee ee by Osthoff, in Morphologische heruah inane, Tgp. 1G, ana

Dy ti schmann, in Zettschr. f. vergl. Sprachf., xxiv. p. 409. See also the full See of this problem by Joh. Schmidt, ibid., xxv. p- 1 sq.

ai ees i oe given above, compare for this and the following especi-

a sf baie ooo cur, zur Geschichte der german. Conjugation, Strasburg, 1879 ;

Petersburg, 1879; F. de Saussure, Mémoire sur le systeme primttif des voyelles

1S Les Mahlow, Die langen Vocale 7 2 x ee tae europ. Sprachen, Berlin, 1879; Osthoff and Erase Morpho- ig : A ae ersuchungen auf dem Gebiete der indog. Sprachen, 4vols., Leipsie, 1878, ee oe eyer, Griechische Grammatik, Leipsic, 1880 ; and a long series of articles aoe co Brugmann, Meyer, Osthoff, Joh. Schmidt, in Zeitschr. f, vergl. me ee + XXill. sg.. and by Bezzenberger, Collitz, and Fick, in Bezzen- 3 ie ae i il. sq. 3 also Fick in Géttinger gelehrie Anzeigen, 1880, i. ie Ae 881, ii. p. 1418 ; Paul, in Paul

and Braune, Beitrdge zur Geschichte eutschen Sprache und Literatur, vi. p. 108; H. Méller, ibéd., vii. p. 482.

Pe Tee OG yy

[ARYAN

*the nasal, Latin centwm, tenu-is, Irish e¢t (for *eent), in Germanic a u, Gothic hund, Old High German dunnt. Original syllabic r and Z arc in the same way represented by Greek pa (ap) and da (ad), as in @paxov, Bpadis (for *upadis), that's (=Sanskrit ddream, mrdt, priht), and in Germanic by wr, ud (more seldom ru, 2), as il Gothic thaursus, "dry" (for *thursus), wulfs, "wolf" (=Sanskrit trshu, vfka), and so forth.*

"The most brilliant result, however, of these recent researches was not the more exact fixing of the phonetic values of the single Aryan vowels, and of the rules of correspondence between these and the vowels of the individual languages, but the discovery that the system of etymological vowel-change which pervades the whole of Aryan word-forma.ion and inflexion, and which had until then generally borne the name of vowel- gradation, was chiefly deve- loped under the infiuence of stress and pitch. It is well known how the theory by which the old Sanskrit grammarians tried to explain vowel-differences in words or forms derived from the same

"root" considered the shortest form of a root-syllable discernible Shortest in all its derivations as the most primitive shape of the root, and form let the fuller forms be devcloped from it through a process of of root.

increase, which Sanskrit grammar is accustomed to call guna and vrddhi. 'Taking, for instance, the inflexions of perfects like véda, véttha, véda (originally pronounced vaida, &c.), plur. vidind, vidd, vidis, or eakdra, cakdrtha, cakara, plur. cakrmd, eakrd, eakris, past part. krtd, they would start from vid and kr as "roots," and say that ved- (vaid-) and kar- in véda (vaida) and cakara, &e., were derived from these through guna, that is, through the insertion of an @ before the original root-vowels 7 and 7. This doctrine has been adopted by Bopp, and thus become one of the fundamental theories of comparative philology, although the objections that can be raised against it are both numerous and obvious. Even if we pass

over the difficulty of giving a satisfactory phonetic explana- tion of the assumed process of insertion, how are we to account for the fact that in cases like ydjamt, past part. ishthd, or perfects like jagrdébha, plur. jagrbhmd, the "inserted" a stands after the "root-vowel" instead of before it? Or, if we look at forms like paptimd, perf. plur. of pdtdmi, "I fly," or smds, sthd, sénti, plur. of dsmi, "I am," must we not take pt and s as the original roots, and is it possible to imagine that such roots could ever have existed ? All such difficulties disappear by assuming the new theory, that the fuller forms are more original. As the above instances show,

the fuller forms appear wherever the "root-syllable " is accentuated, Funetion that is, stressed ; the shorter ones are confined to stressless syllables. of stress.

What, then, more natural than to assume that the a of the fuller forms was the original " root-vowel," and that it was dropped in the shorter forms on account of their being unaccentuated ? Loss of stressless vowels is one of the most frequent phonetic phenomena in all languages, and we have only to look to modern English pro- nunciation to find the most striking analogies to the processes assumed above. Every-day pronunciations like p'tdto, S'ptémber for the written potato, September are exact parallels to the Sanskrit pa-ptimd, and the common mi(lérd), mi(lddy) against the usual full mg to the Sanskrit vidmd against vdida ; even the r-vowel is quite well known in rapid speech in forms like J prpdse, or histry, natshral for the written propose, history, natural,

So far the new theory of vowel-gradation may be summed up as follows. Every root-syllable originally contained one of the three primitive vowels a, ¢, 0, either short or long ; 7, w, the liquids and nasals, only occurred as semi- vowels or consonants, that is, form- ing monosyllabic (diphthongic) combinations with these vowels, which may either precede or follow the consonants. Thus, taking the combinations with the short vowels as an instance, we get the following table—

ai et ot and ya ye yo QU eu Ou 4, wa we wo areror ,, ra re ro an enon ,, n& ne no &e. In originally stressless syllables long vowels were shortened and short vowels dropped. If the original short vowel were sur- rounded by mutes, the mutes would come into contact through the loss of the vowel, as

*in Sanskrit pap-timd from *papatimd, or Greek ér-réuny from mérouat, or éo-xov from éxw (for *céyw). If, however, the root-vowel were combined with a semi-vowel (7, u, or y, w), liquid or nasal, the latter would, on account of their vowel-like character, become syllabic (that is, vocalic) if followed by another consonant, but remain consonants if followed by a vowel ; compare the follow- Ing instances taken from Sanskrit (for the sake of distinctness we write the original ai, au for the common é, 6). vdida —vidis [tutéuda—tutudis daddrea —dadrcé yajamt—ishthad~ vaktum —uktd { Jagrabha—jagrbhus Jigdya —jigyus cakéra —eakris tatina—tatd (for tntd, see above) » —tatniré*

*In the same way we find in Greek olda—ldetv, pev-yw—aquyely, d€pxopat—ébpaxor (for *dpxov = Sanskrit ddream ; see above), rpémw— étparoy (for *érprov), &c., and correspondingly in the other languages.*

LANGUAGES. | PaEL OE OG Y 789

It is obvious that through these rules the existence of 3, %, 7, 1, 7 B. Grammatical Strueture.— cannot be explained, and yet they do exist. Osthoff has suggested here, as a full ClaraCeniStiS of rene poke Coa ee the explanation that they represent intermediate stages of shorten- | without entering into a mass of more or less ere details 2 ing between the full diphthongs and the short 7, w, &c., which were Since the days of Bopp comparative philologists have ‘on the Deriy sometimes kept under the influence of a sort of half-stress.1_ They | whole accepted the theory of the old Sanskrit paren held ti me may just as well be subsequent lengthenings of the shorts due to | all Indo-Germanic words and forms must be traced back to simple i some reason as yet unknown ; but this whole chapter is still very | no longer divisible, monosyllabic elements, which have been salted obscure, and it may be doubted if the point will ever be sufficiently roots. We cannot undertake here to discuss the question how far elucidated. _ ; _ | this theory, which has never becn uncontested and is beginning ‘ The principle of explanation by presence or absence of stress in | to be doubted more and more, is historically correct. However, roots” is also applicable to derivative or inflexional syllables. It | so much

*may be conceded that, after removing all the elements s evident that forms like the Greek édevs (for *wéAefes)—mdXs, or | which seem to serve in the formation of single words or forms yhuxets (for *yhuxéFes)—yhuxis, or rarépa, marépes—mratpdot—marpa&v | or the formation of groups of such only in contrast with the whole follow the same rule as Acimw—hureiv, petyw—agpvyeiv, dépxouac— | mass of-a system of cognate words or forms, there generally remains édpaxoy, &c. But analogy and change of stress from one syllable | a monosyllable, which for practical purposes we may take as a philo- to another (which even in root-syllables have often somewhat | logical starting-point, without asking whether these preparations obscured the original state of things) have done much to render | of the philological laboratory ever had an actual existencc of their i working of the old laws indistinct, so that no more than this | own or whether they are mere abstractions. The general means by tion 8 a hint can ee ae aes ; sei ; which words and forms are derived from these ‘‘roots,” or from a lere are yet other interchanges of vowels in Aryan, quite as | other ready-made words and forms, are partly external, partly pitch. important as those which find their explanation in presence or | internal, Cn the whole, Indo-Germanic derivation and inflexion, absence of stress, which do not seem to fall under the principle | looked at from this point of view, are based on a system of suffixes, applied here. Amongst these the change of ¢ and o or é and 6, | that is, individualizing formative elements added at the end of both in roots and derivative syllables, is the most frequent. Thus we | less compound and less individualized formations. Infixes instead have in Greek Adyw—eldoxa, Adyos; Ael@w—hédovtra, Nowwds ; éAev- | of suffixes occur only by exception, the chief instance being the Gopat—eihyjrovba ; dépxopar—dédopxa ; tpémw—rérpoda ; pyyvuui— | insertion of a nasal, especially in certain verbal formations (as in éppuwya ; or Nbyo-s—Dbye ; yévos—vyéveos (for -**yéver-os); pépo-uev— | Latin ju-n-go against jugum, Greek X\a-u-Bdvw against é\aBov, San- pépe-Te 5 TaThp—Himdrwp, ppatwp ; woujv—axuov, &e. It is abso- | skrit yu-ndjmi, yu-i-jmds against yugdém). The third external lutely incredible that difference of stress could have changed either | element we meet is reduplication. Prefixes in the proper***

sense do é into o, or o into ¢; for the greater or less effort in pronouncing a | not seem to occur; even the verbal augment, which is the only vowel can have nothing to do with the quality of the vowel uttered, | case of an apparently real prefix, most likely was once an inde- as vowel-quality is only regulated by the position of the tongue | pendent word, so that augmentation must be reckoned among the and lips. If, then, any distinguishing principle in the utterance | numerous cases of composition. As means of internal change we of human speech governs these changes —and that assumption is | may mention the shifting of stress and pitch over the different incvitable—it must have been difference of pitch. This explana- | syllables of words and forms, and the vowel-changes which, as we tion was suggested independently by Fick and Moller? some years | have seen, originally followed these variations of accent, yet may ago, but has not found its due share of attention, although it re- | soon have become independent formative principles. commends itself both upon physiological and philological grounds. As to inflexion, Indo-Germanic is known to hold the foremost Inflexion There zs a natural physiological connexion between the palatal e | rank among all inflective languages. The distinction of nouns, of noun. and high pitch and between the guttural o and low pitch; for in | pronouns, and verbs is fully developed. In the nouns the intro- uttering a high tone we generally raise the larynx above its normal | duction in the substantives of grammatical gender is especially level, and consequently push the tongue forward with it towards a | noteworthy. Substantives and adjectives were inflected in the more palatal position ; for a low tone the larynx is lowered, and | same way, though some of the individual languages have deviated the tongue follows this movement by sliding backwards, that | from this rule ; the pronouns, at least, in many cases had their own is, towards the position of the guttural vowels (as can easily be | inflexions; otherwise they agree with the nouns in the distinc- observed in singing the vowel a on different notes). On the other | tion of numbers and cases. There were three numbers—singular, hand, we know that in Sanskrit the stress syllables were uttered | dual, and plural. The number of original cases cannot be settled in a high tone (wddtta), and regularly followed by a low-pitch | with certainty. The highest number we find distinguished in any syllable (svarita). This combination of high tone + low tone | language is seven— nominative, accusative, genitive, dative, instru- again corresponds with

***the sequel of ¢ + 0 observable in a great | mental, and locative (besides the vocative or interjectional case). many types of Aryan words or forms, such as \éyw, yévos, dédopxa; | But, judging from the fact that the same cases often have different compare also Birdrwp against marnp, dxuwv against rouujy, &c. | endings in different declensions, one might be inclined to think So far this theory seems very' probable; yct several difficulties | that once a still greater variety of case-distinctions had existed. still remain. In the first place, the additional hypothesis must be | The single declensions are distinguished according to the various made, that not all "accentuated," that is stressed, syllables had | stem-suffixes immiediately preceding the case-endings. The two the high tone; if o is the characteristic vowel of low-pitch syllables, | chief subdivisions accordingly are the declensions of vocalic and words like \éyos, ¢épos must have had low pitch on their first | consonantal stems. It may be noticed in passing that the so-called syllable, while the ¢ of \éyw, ¢épw was uttered with the high tone. | 7 and w stems follow the type of the consonantal declension ; this, Strange as such an accentuation might sound to English or German | however, appears but natural if we consider that the final i and u ears, it involves no practical difficulty ; for there are at least some | of these stcms most probably arc reductions of older diphthongs living Aryan idioms which possess similar distinctions : in Servian, | ending ina semi-vocalic or consonantal element. For declensional for instance, the nominative véda is pronounced with a high rising | distinctions only one of the general external formative principles tone on the first and a falling tone on the second, the stress being | is used, namely, that of combining ready-made stems with snffixal nearly equally divided between the two syllables; the accusative | endings, at the same time expressing case and number. — vodu, again, has a well-marked stress on the first syllable, but is The verb, too, has in like manner its inflexional endings to ex- Inflexion pronounced in a low falling tone.** *In the second place, this theory | press the distinctions of number and person ; but it also makes use of verb. requires a supplementary inquiry into the relations of pitch and | of all the other formative principles, both internal and external. stress in Aryan, for it seems evident that stress and high pitch did The shifting of accent and the vowel-changes connected therewith not always go together. That the reduplicated perfccts like the | are nowhere more distinctly traceable than in the verb. Besides, Sanskrit daddrea, Greek dédopxe, for instance,*

originally had the | we find the use of special suffixes for the distinction of tenses and stress on the root-syllable is certain from the evidence of Germanic, | moods, sometimes the infixion of a nasal in the formation of tense- yet that same root-syllable has the low-pitch vowel 0, while the | stems, then again on a larger scale the use of reduplication, and unstressed reduplicative syllable shows the high-pitch vowel e. lastly, the use of the augment as a conimon sign for the different The original pronunciation of Aryan dedorke, therefore, must | tenses of the past. None of the individual languages seems to have = . preserved the original stock of Aryan verbal forms to its full extent. have been something like ® (, while afterwards the stress was | The oldest Sanskrit seems to come nearest to poe is os attracted by the hgh-tnealable ip Gres andthe high tone by | ee acre ony now the old stress-sy lable in Sanskrit. In this direction the investiga- forms, Eonie oi which still Poni to baffle all attempts at an tions of Fick and Méller cannot be considered more than an open- 1 : 5 : . : explanation. Germanic may serve as a type of the opposite ing of the field for further research ;. and the same must be salt of | character ; it has lost all but the old present and the old redupli- what has been done hitherto with regard to an explanation of other | sated perfect, but supplied the loss by the extensive cmployment vowel-changes of a similar character. S| of ausiliaries. The differences thus exhibited by the different 1 Morphologische Untersuchwngen, vol. iv., which treats of the Aryan? and | languages make it a difficult task to determine which formations 2 Fick, in Gittinger gelehrte Anzeigen, 1880, i. p. 417 sy., and Moller, in | hejong to the primitive Aryan stock and which were added at Paul and Braune, Beitrége, vii. p. 482 sq. later periods. General consent, however, seems to take the follow-

3 See L. Masing, “ Die Hauptformen des serbisch-chorwatischen Accents,” | + A ; ake : : in Afém. Acad. Imp. des aes, vol. xxiii., St Petersburg, 1876. ” | ing points for settled. Of the three voices distinguished in Greek,

only two are of primitive growth, the active and the middle voice, the passive voice being a later specialization of the middle. There were three moods, an indicative, a subjunctive, and an optative ; the difference of the latter two from the indicative lay partly in the inflexional endings, partly in the addition of a special mood-suffix before these terminations. There was also an imperative. The distinction of numbers was the same as in declension, —singular, dual, plural, each of which had three persons. The tenses may be divided into three groups. The first group comprises the present and perfect, the former of which is supposed to have been used originally as a general predicative form, being neither past, present, nor future, while the perfect was used to indicate the completion of the action signified by the root. The present is rarely formed

aorist either from the root simple or reduplicated (root-aorist, corresponding to the so-called second aorist in Greek), or by insert- ing an s between the root and the inflexional endings (sibilant, or sigmatic aorist, the first aorist of Greek). The existence of a plu- perfect derived from the perfect in a way similar to the derivation of the imperfect from the present is doubtful and not generally admitted. The last division is formed by the future, which, like the first aorist, inserts a sibilant after the root-syllable. None of the other formations of the future occurring here and there is believed to have existed in the parent-speech. Of participles there were three sets, belonging to the present, the perfect, and the aorist respectively. An infinitive had not yet been devcloped ; its place in Aryan was supplied by the use of verbal nouns.

C. Comparative Syntax,) to conclude with, is the youngest Com- branch of Aryan philology. Its chief object so far has been to parative settle the original meanings and the primitive rules of use of the syntax.

direct from the root, but more generally from a special tense- stem derived from the root by the addition of some special tense

suffix or infix, or reduplication. Of the different formations of the perfect met with in the individual languages only that through reduplication of the root-syllable is believed to be of Aryan origin. The second group is that of

the past tenses, the imperfect and two aorists. In all these the past sense is marked by the augment. The imperfect is regularly formed from the present stem, and the

PHILOMELA. See NicHTINGALE, vol. xvii. p. 499.

PHILOPGiMEN, 'the last of the Greeks" as he was called by an admiring Roman, was a leading champion of the Achzan League, which preserved in Peloponnesus a last shred of Greek freedom. Sprung from an illustrious Arcadian family, he was born at Megalopolis in Arcadia in 252 B.c. His father Craugis dying in his infancy, Philo- poemen was brought up by his father's friend Cleander, an exile from Mantinea. In his youth he associated with Ecdemus and Megalophanes, who had studied the Academic philosophy under Arcesilaus, and had proved themselves friends of freedom by helping to rid Megalopolis and Sicyon of tyrants. Philopcemen soon distinguished him- self in war and the chase. Hard-featured but of an iron frame, simple and hardy in his way of life, blunt and straightforward in speech and manner,? he was a born soldier, delighting in war and careless of whatever did not bear on it. Thus he would not practise wrestling because the athlete's finely-strung habit of body is ill-fitted to bear the strain of a soldier's life. He read books of a martial and stirring tone, like the poems of Homer, together with works on military history and tactics. Epaminondas was his pattern, but he could not school his hot temper into the unruffled patience of the Theban. Indeed we miss in this rugged soldier that union of refinement at home with daring in the field which had stamped the soldier-citizens of the best age of Greece. His leisure was devoted to the chase or to the cultivation of his farm, where he worked like one of his hinds. In 222, when Cleomenes king of Sparta made himself master of Megalopolis by a night attack, Philopcemen secured by his valour the retreat of the main body of the citizens to Messene, and encouraged them to refuse the insidious invitation of Cleomenes to return to their homes on condition of renouncing their connexion with the Achzan League.' Thus baffled, Cleo- menes laid the city in ruins and retired. At the battle of Sellasia (early summer 221), where Cleomenes was defeated by the combined Achwan and Macedonian forces under Antigonus, king of Macedonia, Philopcemen greatly distinguished himself by charging, without orders, at the head of the Megalopolitan cavalry and thus saving from

defeat the wing on which he fought. His conduct won the admiration of Antigonus, who offered him a command in the Macedonian army, but he declined it and went to the wars in Crete. Returning after some time with fresh laurels, he was at once chosen to command the Achzan cavalry, which, from an ill-mounted, raw, and cowardly

u A list of books concerning Aryan syntax will be found in the ap- pendix to Sayce's Introduction to the Science of Language, vol. ii.

**~ The simplicity of his manners is illustrated by a tale like that of Alfred and the cakes, Plut., hile oe*

different cases, moods, and tenses. Some attempts have also been recently made to fix the rules of primitive word-order. About all these questions we must refer the reader to the original investiga- tions of the different authors who have more especially cultivated this branch of research. (E. SL.)

body he soon turned into a highly-trained and thoroughly efficient force ; at the head of it he overthrew the Atolian and Elean horse, and slew their commander with his own hand (209). He was elected general of the Achzan League for the first time in 208. In this, the highest dignity of the confederacy, he infused greater vigour and independence into the councils of the League than had been shown by Aratus, who had leaned on Macedonia and trusted to diplomacy rather than the sword. Philopcemen entirely changed the equipment and tactics of the troops of the League, substituting complete armour, long lances and large shields for the lighter arms hitherto in use, and adopting the Macedonian phalanx as the fighting order. But he did more: by example and precept he turned a nation of dandies into a nation of soldiers, who now spent on arms and accoutrements the wealth they had before lavished on dinners and dress, With the army thus trans- formed he defeated Machanidas, tyrant of Sparta, at the battle of Mantinea. The tyrant fell by Philopcemen's hand, Tegea was taken, and Laconia ravaged. A bronze statue representing Philopcemen slaying Machanidas was set up at Delphi by the Acheans. At the Nemean festival which followed the battle Philopcemen, then general for the second time, was hailed by the people as the liberator of Greece. Jealous of the degree of independence to which Philopcemen had raised the League, Philip king of Mace- donia sent emissaries to murder him, but they were

foiled. So great was the terror of his name that at the bare report that he was coming the Beeotians raised the siege of Megara and fled. When Nabis, successor of Machanidas in the tyranny of Sparta, seized Messene, Philopcemen, though he held no office at the tine and the general of the League refused to stir, collected his fellow-townsmen and drove out the tyrant. In his third generalship (201-200) he mustered the Achean forces with great secrecy at Tegea and, invading Laconia, defeated the troops of Nabis. The Romans were now about to cross the sea for the war with Philip of Macedonia, and Philopcemen was the means of preventing the Acheans from concluding an alliance with Philip against Rome. At the expiry of his year of office he sailed once more to Crete, where he successfully led the troops of the Gortynians, beating the Cretans with their own weapons of craft and surprise. Philopcemen did not return to Peloponnesus till after the Romans under Flamininus had conquered Philip. He found the Romans and Achzans making war on Nabis and was again elected to the generalship (192). Nabis was besieging Gythium, which with the other towns on the Laconian coast had been wrested from him by the Romans, handed over by them to the Spartan exiles, and attached to the Achwan League. Being defeated in an attempt to relieve Gythium

by sea, Philopcemen landed and surprised a part of the tyrant's forces not far from that town, burned their camp, and slew many. After ravaging Laconia he marched on Sparta in the hope of compelling Nabis to raise the siege. But Nabis took Gythium and awaited the Achzans in a pass. Philopcemen was surprised, but by skilful general- ship he not only extricated himself but routed the Spartans and cut off most of the fugitives. When Nabis was assassinated Philopcemen hastened to Sparta and induced it to join the Achezan League. In the same year (192) Antiochus, king of Asia, crossed into Greece to fight the Romans. By the advice, or at least with the concurrence, of Philopcemen the Achzans rejected the king's proposal that they should remain neutral, and declared war against him and his allies the A'tolians. In the following year Diophanes, general of the League, hearing that Sparta showed signs of revolt, marched against it accompanied by Flamininus. Philopceemen had remonstrated in vain against this step, and he now boldly threw himself into Sparta, composed

the disturbances, and closed the gates against Diophanes and Flamininus. The grateful Spartans offered Philopcemen a splendid present, but he bade them keep such bribes for their enemies. In 189 Philopcemen, again general, proposed and carried in an assembly, which he summoned at Argos, a decree that the general assembly of the League should meet in all the cities of the League in rotation, instead of, as hitherto, at AZgeum only. This measure was obviously meant to deprive Achza of its position as head of the League, and to make the allied cities more equal. In the same year the Spartans made an unsuccessful attack on one of the maritime towns occu- pied by the exiles. As these towns were under Achean protection the League required Sparta to surrender the authors of the attack. Far from complying, the Spartans put to death thirty partisans of Philopcemen and re- nounced their connexion with the League. The Achzans declared war, and in the following spring (188) Philo- poemen, having been re-elected general, marched against Sparta, which was forced to pull down its walls, to expel the foreign mercenaries and the slaves whom the tyrants had freed, to exchange the laws and institutions of Lycurgus for, those of the Achzans, and, lastly, to receive back the exiles. It would seem that on this occasion Philopcemen allowed his hatred of the old enemy of Megalopolis to overpower his judgment ; his conduct was as unwise as it was cruel, for it afforded the Romans—what Philopcemen had hitherto been careful not to furnish them with—a pretext for meddling in the affairs of Greece. His treat- ment of Sparta was censured by the senate, and Roman officers in Greece remonstrated with the League on the subject. In 183, the last year of his life, Philopcemen was general for the eighth time (his seventh generalship perhaps fell in 187, but this is uncertain). He lay sick of a fever at Argos when word came that Messene, under Dinocrates, had revolted from the League. At first he despatched his friend and partisan Lycortas to put down the revolt, then growing impatient, in spite of the fever and his seventy years, he hurried in a single day to Megalopolis, and, taking with him the cavalry of his native town, entered Messenia and routed Dinocrates. But, the enemy being reinforced, he was compelled to fall back over broken ground. In his anxiety to cover the retreat of his troopers he was left alone, and, his horse stumbling, he was thrown to the ground and taken prisoner. He was conducted with his arms pinioned through the streets of Messene and cast into a dungeon. At nightfall on the second day an executioner was sent to him witha cup of poison. Seeing the light and the

executioner standing by, Philopceemen sat up with difficulty, for he was weak, and, taking the cup in his hand, he asked the man, What tidings of the

cavalry? Being told that they had mostly escaped, he bowed his head and said that it was well. Then he drained the cup and lay down to die. Swift vengeance overtook his murderers. The indignant Achzans, under Lycortas ravaged Messenia, and when the capital surrendered all who had had part in the murder of Philopcemen were obliged to kill themselves. Dinocrates had already com- mitted suicide. The body of Philopcemen was burned and his bones conveyed to Megalopolis with every mark of respect and sorrow, the urn, almost hidden in garlands, being borne by his fellow-townsman, the historian Polybius. Numerous statues were set up and honours decreed to him in the cities of the League. After the destruction of Corinth by Mummius some one proposed to destroy the statues of a man who had been no friend of the Romans ; but the Roman general rejected the base proposal. Philopeemen's lot was cast in evil days. Hardly were the Achzans freed by him from Macedonia when they had to submit to Rome. His policy towards the Romans was marked by a prudence and moderation hardly to be expected from one of his passionate nature. He saw that the final subjugation of Greece was inevitable, but he did his best to delay it, not by a war which would only have precipi- tated the catastrophe, but by giving the Romans no ground for interference, and by resisting their encroachments, so far as this could be done, by an appeal to reason and justice. Our authorities for the life of Philopcemen are Polybius, Livy, Plutarch, and Pausanias. Polybius's work on Philopcemen was in

three books, but it is lost. Plutarch's biography, like the account in Pausanias (viii. 49-51), is based on Polybius. (J. G. FR.)

PHILOSOPHY is a term whose meaning and scope have varied very considerably according to the usage of different authors and different ages ; and it would hardly be possible, even having regard to the present time alone, to define and divide the subject in such a way as to command the adhesion of all the philosophic schools. The aim of the present article will be, however, leaving controversial details as far as possible in the background, to state generally the essential nature of philosophy as

distinguished from the special sciences, and to indicate the main divisions into which, as matter of historical fact, its treatment has fallen.

Historical Use of the Term.—The most helpful introduc- tion to such a task is afforded by a survey of the steps by which philosophy differentiated itself, in the history of Greek thought, from the idea of knowledge and culture in general. These steps may be traced in the gradual specification of the term. The tradition which assigns the first employment of the word to Pythagoras has hardly any claim to be regarded as authentic ; and the somewhat self-conscious modesty to which Diogenes Laertius attri- butes the choice of the designation is, in all probability, a piece of etymology crystallized into narrative. It is true that, as a matter of fact, the earliest uses of the word (the verb ¢iAocodéw occurs in Herodotus and Thucydides) imply the idea of the pursuit of knowledge; but the distinction between the codos, or wise man, and the g:Adcodos, or lover of wisdom, appears first in the Platonic writings, and lends itself naturally to the so-called Socratic irony. The same thought is to be found in Xenophon, and is doubtless to be attributed to the historical Socrates. But the word soon lost this special implication. What is of real interest to us is to trace the progress from the idea of the philosopher as occupied with any and every department of knowledge to that which assigns him a special kind of knowledge as his province. A specific sense of the word first meets us in Plato, who defines the philosopher as one who appre- hends the essence or reality of things in opposition to the man who dwells in appearances and the shows of sense. The philosophers, he says, "are those who are able to grasp the eternal and immutable"; they are "' those who set their

affections on that which in each case really exists" (Rep., 480). In Plato, however, this distinction is applied chiefly in an ethical and religious direction ; and, while it defines philosophy, so far correctly, as the endeavour to express what things are in their ultimate constitution, it is not yet accompanied by a sufficient differentiation of the sub- sidiary inquiries by which this ultimate question may be approached. Logic, ethics, and physics, psychology, theory of knowledge, and metaphysics are all fused together by Plato in a semi-religious synthesis. It is not till we come to

Aristotle—the encyclopzdist of the ancient world— that we find a demarcation of the different philosophic dis- ciplines corresponding, in the main, to that still current. The earliest philosophers, or " physiologers," had occupied themselves chiefly with what we may call cosmology ; the onc question which covers everything for them is that of the underlying substance of the world around them, and they essay to answer this question, so to speak, by simple inspection. In Socrates and Plato, on the other hand, the start is made from a consideration of man's moral and intellectual activity ; but knowledge and action are con- fused with one another, as in the Socratic doctrine that virtue is knowledge. To this correspond the Platonic con- fusion of logic and ethics and the attempt to substitute a theory of concepts for a metaphysic of reality. Aristotle's methodic intellect led him to separate the different aspects of reality here confounded. He became the founder of logic, psychology, ethics, and esthetics as separate sciences ; while he prefixed to all such (comparatively) special in- quiries the investigation of the ultimate nature of existence

as such, or of those first principles which are common to,

and presupposed in, every narrower field of knowledge. For this investigation Aristotle's most usual name is " first philosophy"; but there has since been appropriated to it, apparently by accident, the title "metaphysics." " Philo- sophy," as a term of general application, was not, indeed, restricted by Aristotle or his successors to the disciplines just enumerated. Aristotle himself includes under the title, besides mathematics, all his physical inquiries. It was only in the Alexandrian period, as Zeller points out, that the special sciences attained to independent cultivation. Nevertheless, as the mass of knowledge accumulated, it naturally came about that the name "philosophy " ceased to be applied to inquiries concerned with the particulars as such. The details of physics, for example, were aban- doned to the scientific specialist, and philosophy restricted itself in this department to the question of the relation of the physical universe to the ultimate ground or author of things. This inquiry, which was long called "rational cosmology," may be said to form part of the general science of metaphysics, or at all events a pendant to it. By the gradual sifting out of the special sciences philosophy thus came to embrace primarily the inquiries grouped as " meta- physics" or "first philosophy." These would

embrace, according to the scheme long current, ontology proper, or the science of being as such, with its branch sciences of (rational) psychology, cosmology, and (rational or natural) theology. Subsidiary to metaphysics, as the central in- quiry, stand the sciences of logic and ethics, to which may be added esthetics, constituting three normative sciences, —sciences, that is, which do not, primarily, describe facts, but rather prescribe ends. It is evident, however, that if logic deals with conceptions which may be considered con- stitutive of knowledge as such, and if ethics deals with the harmonious realization of the highest known form of exist- ence, both sciences must have a great deal of weight in the settling of the general question of metaphysics.

Modern modifications of the above scheme will be pre- sently considered ; but it is sufficiently accurate as a start- Ing-point, and its acceptance by so many generations of

thinkers is a guarantee for its provisional intelligibility. Accordingly, we may say that "philosophy" has been under- stood, during the greater part of its history, to be a general term covering the various disciplines just enumerated. It has frequently tended, however, and still tends, to be used as specially convertible with the narrower term "meta- physics." This is not unnatural, seeing that it is only so far as they bear on the one central question of the nature of existence that philosophy spreads its mantle over psychology, logic, or ethics. The organic conditions of perception and the associative laws to which the mind, as a part of nature, is subjected, are nothing to the philosopher; and therefore the handing over of (empirical) psychology to special investigators, which is at present taking place, can be productive of none but good results. Similarly, logic, so far as it is an art of thought or a doctrine of fallacies, and ethics, so far as it is occupied with a natural history of impulses and moral sentiments, do neither of them belong, except by courtesy, to the philosophic pro- vince. But, although this is so, it is perhaps hardly desirable to deprive ourselves of the use of two terms instead of one. It will not be easy to infuse into so abstract and bloodless a term as "metaphysics" the fuller life (and especially the

inclusion of ethical considerations) suggested by the more concrete term " philosophy."

We shall first of all, then, attempt to differentiate philo- sophy from the special sciences, and afterwards proceed. to take up one by one what have been called the philosophical sciences, with the view of showing how far the usual sub- ject-matter of each is really philosophical in its bearing, and how far it belongs rather to the domain of science strictly so called. We shall also see in the course of this inquiry in what these various philosophical disciplines differ from one another, and how far they merge into another, or have, as a matter of fact, been confused at different periods in the history of philosophy. The order in which, for clear- ness of exposition, it will be most convenient to consider these disciplines will be psychology, epistemology or theory of knowledge, and metaphysics, then logic, «esthetics, and ethics. Finally, the connexion of the last-mentioned with politics (or, to speak more modernly, with jurisprudence and sociology) and with the philosophy of history will call for a few words on the relation of these sciences to general philosophy.

Philosophy and Science.—In distinguishing philosophy from the sciences, it may not be amiss at the outset to guard against the possible misunderstanding that philo- sophy is concerned with a subject-matter different from, and in some obscure way transcending, the subject-matter of the sciences. Now that psychology, or the observa- tional and experimental study of mind, may be said to have been definitively included among the positive sciences, there is not even the apparent ground which once existed for such an idea. Philosophy, even under its most discredited name of metaphysics, has no other subject-matter than the nature of the real world, as that world lies around us in everyday life, and lies open to observers on every side. But if this is so, it may be asked what function can remain for philosophy when every portion of the field is already lotted out and enclosed by specialists ? Philosophy claims to be the science of the whole ; but, if we get the knowledge of the parts from the different sciences, what is there left for philosophy to tell us? To this it is sufficient to answer generally that the synthesis of the parts is something more than that detailed knowledge of the parts in separa- tion which is gained by the man of science. It is with the ultimate synthesis that philosophy concerns itself

peat has to show that the subject-matter which we are all deal- ing with in detail really 7s a whole, consisting of articulated ‘members. Evidently, therefore, the relation existing be-

if et Ores @ P A Y

tween philosophy and the sciences will be, to some extent, one of reciprocal influence. The sciences may be said to furnish philosophy with its matter, but philosophical criti- cism reacts upon the matter thus furnished, and transforms it. Such transformation is inevitable, for the parts only exist and can only be fully, «.¢. truly, known in their relation to the whole. A pure specialist, if such a being were possible, would be merely an instrument whose results had to be co-ordinated and used by others. Now, though a pure specialist may be an abstraction of the mind, the tendency of specialists in any department naturally is to lose sight of the whole in attention to the particular cate- gories or modes of nature’s working which happen to be exemplified, and fruitfully applied, in their own sphere of investigation ; and in proportion as this is the case it becomes necessary for their theories to be co-ordinated with the results of other inquirers, and set, as it were, in the light of the whole. This task of co-ordination, in the broadest sense, is undertaken by philosophy; for the philosopher is essentially what Plato, in a happy moment, styled him, ovvorrixds, the man who insists on seeing things together. The aim of philosophy (whether attain- able or not) is to exhibit the universe as a rational system in the harmony of all its parts ; and accordingly the philo- sopher refuses to consider the parts out of their relation to the whole whose parts they are. Philosophy corrects in this way the abstractions which are inevitably made by the scientific specialist, and may claim, therefore, to be the only concrete science, that is to say, the only science which takes account of all the elements in the problem, and the only science whose results can claim to be true in more than a provisional sense.

For it is evident from what has been said that the way in which we commonly speak of “facts” is calculated to convey a false impression. The world is not a collection of individual facts existing side by side and capable of being known separately. A fact is nothing except in its relations to other facts; and as these relations are multi- plied in the progress of

knowledge the nature of the so- called fact is indefinitely modified. Moreover, every state- ment of fact involves certain general notions and theories, so that the "facts" of the separate sciences cannot be stated except in terms of the conceptions or hypotheses which are assumed by the particular science. Thus mathe- matics assumes space as an existent infinite, without investi- gating in what sense the existence or the infinity of this "Unding," as Kant called it, can be asserted. In the same way, physics may be said to assume the notion of material atoms and forces. These and similar assump- tions are ultimate presuppositions or working hypotheses for the sciences themselves. But it is the office of philo- sophy, or theory of knowledge, to submit such conceptions to a critical analysis, with a view to discover how far they can be thought out, or how far, when this is done, they refute themselves, and call for a different form of statement, if they are to be taken as a statement of the ultimate nature of the real! The first statement may frequently turn out to have been merely provisionally or relatively true ; it is then superseded by, or rather inevit- ably merges itself in, a less abstract account. In this the same "facts" appear differently, because no longer sepa- rated from other aspects that belong to the full reality of the known world. There is no such thing, we have said, as an individual fact ; and the nature of any fact is not fully known unless we know it in all its relations to the

1 The revisional office which philosophy here assumes constitutes 'her the critic of the sciences. It is in this connexion that the mean- ing of the definition of philosophy as "the science of principles" can best be seen. vague, one of the least misleading.

This is perhaps the most usual definition, and, though |

system of the universe, or, in Spinoza's phrase, "sub specie eternitatis." In strictness, there is but one res completa or concrete fact, and it is the business of philosophy, as science of the whole, to expound the chief relations that constitute its complex nature.

The last abstraction which it becomes the duty of philo- sophy to remove is the abstraction from the knowing subject which is made by all the sciences,

including, as we shall see, the science of psychology. The sciences, one and all, deal with a world of objects, but the ultimate fact as we know it is the existence of an object for a sub- ject. Subject-object, knowledge, or, more widely, self-con- sciousness with its implicates—this unity in duality is the ultimate aspect which reality presents. It has generally been considered, therefore, as constituting in a special sense the problem of philosophy. Philosophy may be said to be the explication of what is involved in this relation, or, in modern phraseology, a theory of its possibility. Any would-be theory of the universe which makes its central fact impossible stands self-condemned. On the other hand, a sufficient analysis here may be expected to yield us a statement of the reality of things in tts last terms, and thus to shed a light backwards upon the true nature of our subordinate conceptions.

Psychology, Epistemology, and Metaphysics.—This leads to the consideration of our first group of subsidiary sciences —PsycwoLoey (q.v.), epistemology (theory of knowledge, Erkenntnisstheorie), and metaphysics (ontology; see Mzra- pHysic). A special relation has always existed between psychology and systematic philosophy, but the closeness of the connexion has been characteristic of modern and more particularly of English thought. The connexion is not diffi- cult to explain, seeing that in psychology, or the science of mind, we study the fact of intelligence (and moral action), and have, so far, in our hands the fact to which all other facts are relative. From this point of view we may even agree with Sir W. Hamilton when he quotes Jacobi's dictum—' Nature conceals God; man reveals God." In other words, as has just been said, the ultimate explana- tion of things cannot be given by any theory which excludes from its survey the intelligence in which nature, as it were, gathers herself up. But knowledge, or the mind as knowing, willing, &c., may be looked at in two different ways. It may be regarded simply as a fact, in which case the evolutions of mind may be traced and reduced to laws in the same way as the phenomena treated by the other sciences. This study gives us the science of empirical psychology, or, as it is now termed, psychology sans phrase. In order to give an adequate account of its subject-matter, psychology may require higher or more coniplex categories than are employed in the other sciences, just as biology, for example, cannot work with mechanical categories alone, but introduces the conception of development or growth.

But the affinities of such a study are manifestly with the sciences as such rather than with philosophy; and it has been already pointed out that the division of labour in this respect is proceeding rapidly. Since it has been taken up by specialists, psychology is being established on a broader basis of induction, and with the advantage, in some departments, of the employment of experimental methods of measurement. But it is not of mind in this aspect that such assertions can be made as those quoted above. Mind, as studied by the psychologist—mind as a mere fact or phenomenon —grounds no inference to any- thing beyond itself. The distinction between mind viewed as a succession of "states of consciousness " and the further aspect of mind which philosophy considers is very clearly put in a recent article by Professor Croom Robertson, who also makes a happy suggestion of two terms to designate the double point of view.

XVIII. — 100

794 PHILO

"We may view knowledge as mere subjective function, but it has its full meaning only as it is taken to represent what we may call objective fact, or is such as is named (in different circumstances) real, valid, truc. As mere subjective function, which it is to the psychologist, it is best spoken of by an unambiguous name, and for this there seems none better than Intellection. We may then say that psychology is occupied with the natural function of Inéed/cetion, seeking to discover its laws and distinguishing its various modes (perception, representative imagination, conception, &c.) according to the various circumstances in which the laws are found at work. Philosophy, on the other hand, is theory of Knowledge (as that which is known)."—' Psychology and Philosophy," Afind, 1883,

ml 5, 16. ' ;

"a The confusion of these two points of view has led, and

still leads, to serious philosophical misconception. It is hardly an exaggeration to say that, in the English school since Hume, psychology superseded properly philosophical inquiry. The infusion of epistemological matter into the numerous analyses of the human mind rendered the sub-

stitution plausible and left men satisfied. And we find even a thinker with a wider horizon like Sir W. Hamilton encouraging the confusion by speaking of '" psychology or metaphysics,"! while his lectures on metaphysics are mainly taken up with what belongs in the strictest sense to psychology proper, with an occasional excursus (as in the theory of perception) into epistemology. That this con- fusion is on the way to be obviated for the future is largely due to the Kantian impulse which has been strongly felt of late in English thought, and which has acted in this matter on many who could not, by any laxity of termino- logy, be numbered as Kantians or Neo-Kantians. The distinction between psychology and theory of knowledge was first clearly made by Kant, who repeatedly insisted that the Critique of Pure Réason was not to be taken as a psychological inquiry. He defined his problem as the quad juris or the question of the validity of knowledge, not its quid facti or the laws of the empirical genesis and evolution of intellection (to use Professor Robertson's phraseology). Since Kant philosophy has chiefly taken the form of theory of knowledge or of a criticism of experience. Not, indeed, a preliminary criticism of our faculties or conceptions such as Kant himself proposed to institute, in order to determine the limits of their application ; such a criticism ab extra of the nature of our experience is essentially a thing im- possible. The only criticism which can be applied in such a case is the immanent criticism which the conceptions or categories exercise upon one another. The organized criti- cism of these conceptions is really nothing more than the full explication of what they mean and of what experience in its full nature or notion is. This constitutes the theory of knowledge, and lays down, in Kantian language, the con- ditions of the possibility of experience. These conditions are the conditions of knowledge as such, of self-conscious- ness in general, or, as it may be put, of objective conscious- ness. 'The inquiry is, therefore, logical or transcendental in its nature, and does not entangle us in any decision as to the conditions of the genesis of such consciousness in the individual. When we inquire into subjective conditions, we are thinking of facts causing other facts. But the logical or transcendental conditions are not causes or even factors of knowledge ; they are the statement of its idea. Hence the dispute at the present time between evolutionist and transcendentalist rests, in general, on an ugnoratio elencht ; for the history of the genesis of an idea (the his- torical or genetic method) does not contair' an answer to— though it may throw light on—the philosophic

question of its truth or validity. Speaking of this transcendental consciousness, Kant goes so far as to say that it is not

5 It is true that he afterwards modifies this misleading identification by introducing the distinction between empirical psychology or the phenomenology of mind and inferential psychology or ontology, 7.e.,

metaphysics proper. But he continues .to use the terms " philosophy," metaphysics," and "mental science" as synonymous.

o OP il ¥

of the slightest consequence " whether the idea of it be clear or obscure (in empirical consciousness), no, not even whether it really exists or not. But the possibility of the logical form of all knowledge rests on its relation to this apperception as a faculty or potentiality" (Werke, ed. Hartenstein, ili. 578 note). Or, if we return to the distinction between epistemology and psychology, by way of illustrating the nature of the former, we may take the summing up of Mr Ward in a valuable article on "Psychological Principles" recently contributed to Mind (April 1883, pp. 166, 167). "Comparing psychology and epistemology, then, we may say that the former is essen- tially genetic in its method, and might, if we had the power to revise our existing terminology, be called biology; the latter, on the other hand, is essentially devoid of every- thing historical, and treats, sub specie aternitatrs, as Spinoza might have said, of human knowledge, conceived as the possession of mind in general."

Kant's problem is not, in its wording, very different from that which Locke set before him when he resolved to "inquire into the original, certainty, and extent of human knowledge together with the grounds and degrees of belief, opinion, and assent." Locke's Hssay is undoubtedly, in its intention, a contribution to the theory of knowledge, as any one may verify for himself by turning to the headings of the chapters in the fourth book. But, because time had not yet made the matter clear, Locke suffered himself to digress in his second book into the purely psychological question of the origin of our ideas, or, as Kant called it, the physiology of the human mind. Appearing thus, first, as the problem of perception (in Locke and his English successors), Widening its scope and becoming, in Kant's hands, the

question of the possibility of experience in general, epistemology may be said to have passed with Hegel into a completely articulated "logic," that claimed to be at the same time a metaphysic, or an ultimate ex- pression of the nature of the real. This introduces us to the second part of the question we are seeking to determine, namely, the relation of epistemology to metaphysics.

It is evident that philosophy as theory of knowledge must have for its complement philosophy as metaphysics or ontology. The question of the truth of our knowledge, and the question of the ultimate nature of what we know, are in reality two sides of the same inquiry ; and therefore our epistemological results have to be ontologically ex- pressed. But it is not every thinker that can see his way with Hegel to assert in set terms the identity of thought and being. Hence the theory of knowledge becomes with some a theory of human ignorance. This is the case with Herbert Spencer's doctrine of the unknowable, which he advances as the result of epistemological considerations in the philosophical prolegomena to his system. Very similar positions were maintained by Kant and Comte ; and, under the name of "agnosticism," the theory has popu- larized itself of late in the outer courts of philosophy, and on the shifting borderland of philosophy and literature. The truth is that the habit of thinking exclusively from the standpoint of the theory of knowledge tends to beget an undue subjectivity of temper. And the fact that it has become usual for men to think from this standpoint is very plainly seen in the almost universal description of philosophy as an analysis of "experience," instead of its more old-fashioned designation as an inquiry into "the nature of things." Now it is matter of universal agree- ment that the problem of being must be attacked indirectly through the problem of knowledge; and therefore this substitution certainly marks an advance, in so far as it implies that the fact of experience, or of self-conscious existence, is the chief fact to be dealt with. But if so, then self-consciousness must really be treated as existing,

ame sD a

and as organically related to the rest of existence. If self-consciousness be treated in this objective fashion, then we pass naturally from epistemology to metaphysics or ontology. (For, although the term "ontology" has been as

good as disused, it still remains true that the aim of philo- sophy must be to furnish us with an ontology or a coherent and adequate theory of the nature of the existent.) But if, on the other hand, knowledge and existence be ab initio opposed to one another—if consciousness be set on one side as over against existence, and merely holding up a mirror to it—then it follows with equal naturalness that the truly objective must be something which lurks un- revealed behind the subject's representation of it. Hence come the different varieties of a so-called phenomenalism. The upholders of such a theory would, in general, deride the term "metaphysics" or "ontology"; but it is evident, none the less, that their position itself implies a certain theory of the universe and of our own place in it, and philosophy with them will consist, therefore, in the estab- lishment of this theory.

Without prejudice, then, to the claims of epistemology to constitute the central philosophic discipline, we may simply note its liability to be misused. The exclusive preoccupation of men's minds with the question of know- ledge during the last quarter of a century or more drew from Lotze the caustic criticism that "the continual sharpening of the knife becomes tiresome, if, after all, we have nothing to cut with it." Stillingfleet's complaint against Locke was that he was "'one of the gentlemen of this new way of reasoning that have almost discarded substance out of the reasonable part of the world." The same may be said with greater truth of the devotees of the theory of knowledge ; they seem to have no need of so old-fashioned a commodity as reality. Yet, after all, Fichte's dictum holds good that knowledge as knowledge—i.e., so long as it is looked at as knowledge—is, ipso facto, not reality. The result of the foregoing, however, is to show that, as soon as epistemology draws its conclusion, it becomes metaphysics ; the theory of knowledge passes into a theory of being. The ontological conclusion, moreover, is not to be regarded as something added by an external process ; it is an immediate implication, The metaphysic is the epistemology from another point of view—regarded as completing itself, and explaining in the course of its exposition that relative or practical separation of the indi- vidual known from the knowable world which it is a sheer assumption to take as absolute. This, not the so-called assumption of the implicit unity of being and thought, is the really unwarrantable postulate ; for it is an assumption which we are obliged to retract bit by bit, while the other offers the whole doctrine of knowledge as its voucher.

Logic, Aisthetics, and Ethics.—If the theory of know- ledge thus takes upon itself the functions discharged of old by metaphysics, it becomes somewhat difficult to assign a distinct sphere to logic. It has already been seen how the theory of knowledge, when it passed out of Kant's hands, and tried to make itself (a) complete and (0) pre- suppositionless, became for Hegel a logic that was in reality ametaphysic. This is the comprehensive sense given to logical science in the article Lore (q.v.) in this work; and it is there contended that no other definition can be made consistent with itself. It is, of course, admitted that this is not the traditional use of the term (see vol. xiv. p. 802). Ueberweg's definition of logic as "the science of the regu- lative laws of thought" (or "the normative science of thought ") comes near enough to the old sense to enable us to compare profitably the usual subject-matter of the science with the definition and end of philosophy. The introduction of the term "regulative" or "normative" is intended to differentiate the science from psychology as the

| science of mental events. In this reference logic does not

tell us how our intellections connect themselves as mental phenomena, but how we ought to connect our thoughts if they are to realize truth (either as consistency with what we thought before or as agreement with observed facts). Logic, therefore, agrees with epistemology (and differs from psychology) in treating thought not as mental fact but as knowledge, as idea, as having meaning in relation to an objective world. To this extent it must inevitably form a part of the theory of knowledge. But, if we desire to keep by older landmarks and maintain a distinction between the two disciplines, a ground for doing so may be found in the fact that all the main definitions of logic point to the investigation of the laws of thought in a subjective reference,—with a view, that is, by an analysis of the operation, to ensure its more correct performance. According to the old phrase, logic is the art of thinking. Moreover, the fact that ordinary logic investigates its laws primarily in this reference, and not disinterestedly as immanent laws of knowledge or of the connexion of con- ceptions, brings in its train a limitation of the sphere of the science as compared with the theory of knowledge. We find the logician uniformly assuming that the process of

thought has advanced a certain length before his exami- nation of it begins; he takes his material full-formed from perception, without, as a rule, inquiring into the nature of the conceptions which are involved in our perceptive ex- perience. Occupying a position, therefore, within the wider sphere of the general theory of knowledge, ordinary logic consists in an analysis of the nature of general state- ment, and of the conditions under which we pass validly from one general statement to another. But the logic of the schools is eked out by contributions from a variety of sources (e.g., from grammar on one side and from psychology on another), and cannot claim the unity of an independent science.

ESTHETICS (¢.v.) may be treated as a department of psy- chology or physiology, and in England this is the mode of treatment that has been most general. To what peculiar ex- citation of our bodily or mental organism, it is asked, are the emotions due which make us declare an object beautiful or sublime? And, the question being put in this form, the attempt has been made in some cases to explain away any peculiarity in the emotions by analysing them into simpler elements, such as primitive organic pleasures and prolonged associations of usefulness or fitness. But, just as psychology in general can in no sense do duty for a theory of knowledge, so it holds true of this particular application of psychology that a mere reference of these emotions to the mechanism and interactive play of our faculties cannot be regarded as an account of the nature of the beautiful. The substitution of the one inquiry for the other may doubtless be traced in part to the latent assumption—standing very much in need of proof—that our faculties are constructed on some arbitrary plan, with- out reference to the general nature of things. Perhaps by talking of "emotions" we tend to give an unduly sub- jective colour to the investigation ; it would be better to speak of the perception of the beautiful. Pleasure in itself is unqualified, and affords no differentia. In the case of a beautiful object the resultant pleasure borrows its specific quality from the presence of determinations essentially intellectual in their nature, though not reducible to the categories of science. We have a prima facie right, there- fore, to treat beauty as an objective determination of things. The question of zsthetics would then be formu- lated—What is it in things that makes. them beautiful, and what is the relation of this aspect of the universe to its ultimate nature, as that is

expounded in metaphysics ? The answer constitutes the substance of esthetics, con-

sidered as a branch of philosophy. But it is not given simply in abstract terms ; esthetics includes also an exposi- tion of the concrete phases of art, as these have appeared in the history of the world, relating themselves to different stages of the spirit's insight into itself and into things.

Of Erutcs (g.v.) it may also be said that many of the topics commonly embraced under that title are not strictly ethical at all, but are subjects for a scientific psychology employing the historical method with the conceptions of heredity and development, and calling to its aid, as such a psychology will do, the investigations of ethnology, and all its subsidiary sciences. To such a psychology must be relegated all questions as to the origin and development of moral ideas. Similarly, the question debated at such length by English moralists as to the nature of the moral faculty (moral sense, conscience, &c.) belongs entirely to psychology. This is more generally admitted in regard to the controversy concerning the freedom of the will, though that still forms part of most ethical treatises. If we ex- clude such questions in the interest of systematic correct- ness, and seek to determine for ethics a definite subject- matter, the science may be said to fall into two departments. The first of these deals with the notion of duty, as such, and endeavours to define the ultimate end of action; the second lays out the scheme of concrete duties which are deducible from, or which, at least, are covered by, this abstractly-stated principle. The second of these depart- ments is really the proper subject-matter of ethics considered as a separate science; but it is often conspicuous by its absence from ethical treatises. However moralists may differ on first principles, there seems to be remarkably little practical divergence when they come to lay down the particular laws of morality. Hence, as it must necessarily be a thankless task to tabulate the commonplaces of con- duct, the comparative neglect of this part of their subject is perhaps sufficiently explained. It may be added that, where a systematic account of duties is actually given, the connexion of the particular duties with the universal form- ula is in general more formal than real. It is only under the head of "'casuistry" that ethics has

been much cultivated as a Separate science. The first department of ethics, on the other hand, is the branch of the subject in virtue of which ethics forms part of philosophy. As described above, it merges in general metaphysics or ontology, and ought rather to be called, in Kant's phrase, the meta- physic of ethics, A theory of obligation is ultimately found to be inseparable from a metaphysic of personality. The connexion of ethics with metaphysics will be patent as a niatter of fact, if it be remembered how Plato's philosophy is summed up in the idea of the good, and how Aristotle also employs the essentially ethical notion of end as the ultimate category by which the universe may be explained or reduced to unity. But the neces- sity of the connexion is also apparent, unless we are to Suppose that, as regards the course of universal nature, man is altogether an imperium in imperio, or rather (to adopt the forcible phrase of Marcus Aurelius) an abscess or excrescence on the nature of things. If, on the con- trary, we must hold that man is essentially related to "a common nature," as the same writer puts it, then it is a legitimate corollary that in man as intelligence we ought to find the key of the whole fabric. At all events, this method of approach must be truer than any which, by restricting itself to the external aspect of phenomena as presented in space, leaves no scope for inwardness and life and all that, in Lotze's language, gives existence "value." Historically we may be said in an intelligible sense to explain the higher by showing its genesis from the lower. But in philosophy it is exactly the reverse; the lower is always to be explained by the higher. In the ethical

reference it has been customary to argue, as Sir W. Hamilton does, from man's moral being to "an Intelligent Creator and Moral Governor of the Universe." It is evident that the argument ex analogia hominis may sometimes be carried too far ; but if a '"' chief end of man" be discoverable —

Politics, Sociology, Philosophy of EHistory.—In Aristotle we can observe how ethics is being differentiated from politics, but this differentiation does not, and ought not to, amount toa complete separation. The difficulty, already hinted at, which individualistic systems of ethics experi- ence in connecting particular duties with the abstract prin- ciple of duty is a proof

of the failure of their method. For the content of morality we are necessarily referred, in great part, to the experience crystallized in laws and institutions and to the unwritten law of custom, honour, and good breeding, which has become organic in the society of which we are members. The development of society is therefore brought within the scope of philosophy. So far as this development is traced in a purely historical spirit, it will be simply a sequence of efficient causes, in which, starting with abc, we eventually arrive at A B C. But, if this sequence is to be philosophized, it must be shown that we have no means of knowing what abc is except in its relation to A B C, its resultant. We interpret the process, therefore, as the realization of an immanent end. The state, as the organism in whose play morality is realized, becomes an interest of reason; and the different forms of state-organization are judged accord- ing to the degree in which they realize the reconciliation of individual freedom and the play of cultured interests with stable objectivity of law and an abiding conscious- ness of the greater whole in which we move. So far as the course of universal history can be truly represented as an approximation to this reconciliation by a widening and deepening of both the elements, we may claim to possess a philosophy of history. (A. SE.)

PHILOSTRATUS, the eminent Greek sophist, was prob- ably born in Lemnos between 170 and 180 a.p. From his incidental statements respecting himself we learn that he studied at Athens, and was afterwards attached to the court of the empress Julia Domna, consort of Severus. Since he does not speak of her as living, while mentioning her as his patroness in his Lafe of Apollonius of T'yana, this work was probably written after her death. From some passages in it and his Lives of the Sophists, he would seem to have been in Gaul with Caracalla, and he may probably have accompanied that emperor on his progress through his dominions. The only other fixed date we possess for his life is afforded by his dedication of the Lives of the Sophasts to Antonius Gordianus as proconsul. Gordianus was consul in 230, and his proconsulship must have been between that year and 234. It seems to be implied that Philostratus resided in Rome, and, according to Suidas, he lived until the reign of Philip (244-249). His works now extant are a biography of Apollonius of Tyana, Lives of the Sophists, Heroicon, Imagines, and Epistles.

The Life of Apollonius of Tyana has been partly discussed under APoLLonius. It may be compared to the Cyropedia of Xenophon as a romance founded :on fact, treating of a distinguished historical person, not in an historical spirit, but as an ideal model for imitation. While, however, the

incidents of Xenophon's romance were mostly his own invention, Philostratus was indebted for his to the narrative attributed to Damis, Apollonius's travelling companion ; and many of the sayings ascribed to Apollonius, such as his bon-mots against Domitian and his protest against gladiatorial combats, are probably authentic. The rest of the work testifies to the increasing fondness of the age for the marvellous, which Lucian had vainly endeavoured to stem in the preceding generation, and to the tendency to set up semi-mythical sages like Pythagoras as prophets, at the expense of sober reasoners like Zeno and Epicurus. Philostratus, however, is careful to disclaim all connexion of his hero with mere vulgar thaumaturgy. The sorcerer, he expressly says, is a miserable person. Apollonius is the sage who foreknows the future not by incantations but by wisdom and conformity to the will of the gods,—a new Pythagoras, the prototype, we can now see, of Apuleius, Plotinus, and the other later Platonists, who, without wholly discarding philosophical method, coquetted with ecstasy and revelation. Philosophy, in truth, had become bank- rupt, physical science did not yet exist, and the best minds of the time were necessarily thrown back on the super- natural. Philostratus gives this tendency of the age a concrete expression, and there is no reason to conceive that his work was composed in any spirit of antagonism to Christianity, whose Founder, equally with Apollonius himself, was venerated by his patron Alexander Severus. Though a mass of fiction, it is still very valuable as de- lineating the ideal of the philosophic character as recog- nized in the 3d century. It is full of errors in geography and chronology, but possesses great literary merit, being varied, entertaining, animated, and lively and accurate in its pictures of character. Sophistice certe artis egregium dedit in hoc libro specimen, says Kayser. The distinction between a philosopher and a sophist is clearly laid down by Philostratus himself in his next important work, the Lives of the Sophists. The philosopher investigates truth independently ; the sophist embellishes

the truth, which he takes for granted. The distinction is much the same as that between the theologian and the preacher, or the jurist and the advocate, Philostratus, though by no means attempting detailed biography after the fashion of Diogenes Laertius, has given us interesting sketches of a number of distinguished ornamentsof the sophistical profession, mostly his immediate predecessors or contemporaries. He thus affords a lively picture of the intellectual standard of an age full of curiosity and intelligence, but unable to make progress in knowledge for want of a scientific method or a scientific spirit, living on old literary models which it was unable to emulate or vary, and hence compelled to prefer show to substance, and manner to matter. The Heroicon is a good specimen of the popular literature of the day. It may have arisen out of Caracalla's visit to Ilion, and the games celebrated by him in honour of Achilles. The subject is the injustice of Homer to Palamedes, which is expounded to a Phcenician merchant by a Thracian vine- dresser on the authority of the latter's tutelary demon, the hero Protesilaus. It was probably a common theme of declamation in the schools, to which Philostratus has contributed an elegant and graceful setting. The Zmagines, after the life of Apollonius the most entertaining of Philo- stratus's writings, is perhaps the most valuable of any from the light it throws on ancient art. The writer 1s introduced as living in a villa near Naples, which contains a collection of choice paintings. To please the son of his host and his young companions he undertakes to describe and explain the pictures, which are sixty-four in all, includ- ing mythological, historical, allegorical, and landscape sub- jects. The descriptions are exceedingly good, and reveal the skilful word-painter no less than the accomplished

connoisseur of art. As pointed out by M. Bougot, they either actually are or are intended to be taken for impro- visations, which explains some irregularities in the style. It has been much disputed whether they are genuine de- scriptions of actually existing works of art. The affirmative has been maintained by Goethe and Welcker, the negative by Heyne. In our days the controversy has been revived by two eminent German archeologists, Friederichs and Brunn, the former impugning, the latter maintaining the actual existence of the pictures. Their arguments are reviewed in a recent and valuable work by E. Bertrand, who sides with Brunn, as also does

Helbig. Perhaps the point is not of such extreme moment, for, if Philostratus had not actual pictures in his mind, he must nevertheless have described such as his hearers or readers were in the habit of seeing. The traces of improvisation, however, pointed out by M. Bougot afford a strong argument that he was lecturing upon a visible collection, and in any case his work is a most valuable guide to the manner in which heroic figures were delineated in ancient paintings, to the general grouping and arrangement of such works, and to the qualities which they were expected to possess. Philo- stratus's Hpistles are entirely artificial, and mostly amatory. The style is good, and the originals of some pretty conceits appropriated by modern poets may be found in them.

The first complete edition of the works of Philostratus was pub- lished by F. Morel, Paris, 1608. It is not much esteemed. 'That by Olearius (Leipsic, 1709) is much better; but the chief restorer of the text is C. F. Kayser, who, after having edited most of the writings of Philostratus, separately published a collective edition at Zurich in 1844, reissued in 1858, and again at Leipsic in 1870-71. There is a very good edition, with a Latin translation, by Wester- mann (Paris, 1849); this also contains Eunapius's Lives of the Sophists and the declamations of Himerius. 'The first two books of the Life of Apollonius were translated into English by the cele- brated and unfortunate Charles Blount in 1680; but the unortho- dox nature of the commentary, attributed in part to Lord Herbert of Cherbury, occasioned the work to be prohibited, and it was not continued. A complete translation by E. Berwick, an Irish clergyman, was published in 1809. A French translation by Chassang (Le Merveilleux dans l' Antiquité, Paris, 1862) contains some valuable notes. The most important works on the Jmagines are: Friederichs, Die Philostratischen Bilder, 1860; Brunn, Dze Philostratisehen Gemilde, 1861; A. Bougot, Une galerie antique, 1881; and E. Bertrand, Un critique d'art dans Vantiquité: Philo- strate et son éeole, 1882. (2aG>)

PHILOXENUS, one of the last of the dithyrambic poets of Greece, was born in 435 B.c., in the island of Cythera. When the island was conquered by the Athe- nians in 424 Philoxenus was sold as a slave to Agesylas, who gave him the name of Myrmex ("ant"). On the death of Agesylas he was bought by the dithyrambic poet Melanippides, who educated him, no doubt in his

own pro- fession. Philoxenus afterwards resided in Sicily, at the court of Dionysius, tyrant of Syracuse, whose bad verses he declined to praise, and was in consequence sent to work in the quarries. Being fetched back again and asked by the tyrant how he liked his verses now, the poet made no reply but "'Take me away to the quarries." He is said to have quitted Sicily in disgust at the luxury and vulgarity of the people, abandoning an estate which he owned in the island. From Sicily he seems to have gone to Tarentum, and thence perhaps to Corinth. He visited Colophon in Asia Minor and died at Ephesus in 380. According to Suidas, Philoxenus composed twenty-four dithyrambs and a lyric poem on the genealogy of the Alacide. In his hands the dithyramb seems to have been a burlesque drama in verse, which was acted and sung to the accom- paniment of elaborate instrumental music and enlivened

1 A younger Philostratus, also called the Lemnian, is several times mentioned by the elder as a contemporary sophist. He speaks of him as a friend, but does not say that he was a kinsman. Another and much inferior collection of Jmagines is extant under the name of this writer, who claims relationship with the elder Philostratus. It is probably a supposititious work.

with the dance,—in short, it was a sort of comic opera. The music, which Philoxenus himself composed, appears to have been of a debased, Offenbachian character. His masterpiece was the Cyclops or Galatea, a pastoral bur- lesque on the love of the Cyclops for the fair Galatea. Its general style may probably be gathered from the sixth idyl of Theocritus. The work must have been well known before 388, for it was parodied by Aristophanes in his play the Plutus, performed in that year. Another work of Philoxenus, sometimes attributed to a notorious parasite and glutton of the same name, is the Ae?rvoy (Dinner), of which considerable fragments have been preserved by Atheneus. This poem, of which the text is very obscure and corrupt, is little more than an elaborate bill of fare put into verse, and, as such, possesses more interest for cooks than scholars. In the time of Aristotle it was the one book read by the Athenian quidnuncs. The great popularity enjoyed by Philoxenus is attested not only by the allusions to him

in the comic poets of his day but also by a complimentary resolution passed by the Athenian senate in 393 on the motion of the dithyrambic poet Cinesias. The intention of the decree was doubtless mainly political—to propitiate Dionysius—but the poet was included in it. Nor was his popularity transient : the poet Antiphanes of the Middle Comedy spoke of Philoxenus as a god among men; Alexander the Great had his poems sent to him in Asia along with the tragedies of Alschylus, Sophocles, and Euripides; the Alexandrian grammarians received him into the canon; and down to the time of Polybius his works were regularly learned and annually acted by the Arcadian youth. The scanty frag- ments of his works are to be found in Bergk's Poete Lyrici Greci, vol. iit.

PHLEGON, of Tralles in Asia Minor, a Greek writer of the 2d century, was a freedman of the emperor Hadrian. His chief work was the Olympiads (chronicles, or col- lection of Olympic victories and chronicles), a universal history in sixteen books, from the 1st down to the 229th Olympiad (776 B.c. to 137 aD.). If we may judge from the sample preserved by Photius, the work contained lists of the victors in the Olympic games together with a bare and disjointed summary of the chief historical events oat is probable, however, that Photius quoted from an epitome in eight books which we know to have existed, and which, together with another epitome in two books, is ascribed by Suidas to Phlegon himself, Portions of another work of Phlegon, On Marvels, along with parts of another On Long-lived Persons, and the opening part of his Olympiads, are extant in a Heidelberg MS. of the 10th century.

The book On Marvels contains some ridiculous stories about ghosts, prophecies, and monstrous births. The work On Long-lived Persons includes a list, extracted by Phlegon from the Roman censuses, of persons who had lived a hundred yearsand upwards. He mentions two men aged 186 years each, one of whom he professes to have seen. Other works ascribed to Phlegon by Suidas are a description of Sicily, a work on the Roman festivals in three books, and a topography of Rome. Alius Spartianus tells us that a life of Hadrian was published in Phlegon's name, but that it was written by the emperor himself. A work on JW, omen Wise and Brave tn War has sometimes becn wrongly attributed to Phlegon. From his remains Phlegon is secn to have been credulous and superstitious to

absurdity, but his literary style deserves the re- mark of Photius that, without being pure Attic, it is not very bad. The complaint of Photius, that Phlegon wearied his readers by the numerous oracles which he dragged in, is fully borne out by the remains of his works. These remains are collected by Westermann

in his Seriptores rerum mirabilium Greci (1839) and by Miiller in his Fragmenta Historicorum Grecorum, vol. iii.

PHLOX, a considerable genus of Polemoniacezx, chiefly consisting of North-American perennial plants, with entire, usually opposite, leaves and showy flowers generally in terminal clusters. Each flower has a tubular calyx with five lobes, and a salver-shaped corolla with a long slender

tube and a flat limb. The five stamens are given off from the tube of the corolla at different heights and do not pro- trude beyond it. The ovary is three-celled with one to two ovules in each cell; it ripens into a three-valved capsule. Many of the species are cultivated for the beauty of their flowers ; and the forms obtained by cross-breeding and selection are innumerable. The garden varieties fall under three groups,—the annuals, including the lovely P. Drum- mondi from Texas and its many forms ; the perennials, including a dwarf section of alpine plants (forms of P. subulata), suitable, by reason of their prostrate habit and neat mode of growth, for the rockery; and the taller- growing decussate phloxes which contribute so much to the beauty of gardens in late summer, and which have probably originated from P. paniculata. The range of colour in all the groups is from white to rose and lilac.

PHOCEA, in ancient geography, was one of the cities of Ionia, on the western coast of Asia Minor. It was the most northern of the Ionian cities, and was situated on the coast of the peninsula that separates the Gulf of Cyme, which was occupied by olian settlers, from the Hermean Gulf, on which stood Smyrna and Clazomenz.! Its advantageous position between two good harbours, called Naustathmus and Lampter, is pointed out by Livy (xxxvii. 31), and was probably the cause which led the inhabitants to devote themselves from an early period to maritime pursuits. We are expressly told

by Herodotus that the Phoczans were the first of all the Greeks who undertook distant voyages and made known. to their countrymen the coasts of the Adriatic, as well as those of Tyrrhenia and Spain. In the latter country they estab- lished friendly relations with Arganthonius, king of Tartessus, who even invited them to emigrate in a body to settle in his dominions, and, on their declining this offer, presented them with a large sum of money. This they employed in constructing a strong wall of fortification around their city, a defence which stood them in good stead when the Ionian cities were attacked by Cyrus in 546. On that occasion they refused to submit when besieged by Harpagus, the general of Cyrus; but, mistrusting their power of ultimate resistance, they determined to abandon their city, and, embarking their wives and children and most valuable effects, to seek a new home in the western regions, where they had already founded several flourishing colonies, among others those of Alalia in Corsica and the important city of Massilia in the south of Gaul. A large part of the emigrants, however, relented, and, after having proceeded only as far as Chios, returned to Phocsea, where they submitted to the Persian yoke. The rest, however, having bound themselves by a solemn oath never to return, proceeded to Corsica, where they settled for a time; but, being afterwards expelled from the island, they founded the colony of Velia or Elea in southern Italy.

Phocea continued to exist under the Persian government, but greatly reduced in population and commerce, so that, although it Joined in the revolt of the Ionians against Persia in 500, it was only able to send three ships to the combined fleet that fought at Lade. Nor did it ever again assume a prominent part among the Ionian cities, and it is rarely mentioned in Greek history. But at a later period it was sufficiently powerful to oppose a vigorous resistance to the Roman pretor Amilius during the war against Antiochus in 191. On that occasion the town was taken and plundered, but it continued to survive, and we learn from its coins that it was a place of some importance throughout the Roman empire. The ruins still visible on the site bear the name of Palea Foggia, but they are of little interest. A small town in the im-

mediate neighbourhood, known as Nova Foggia, appears to date only from Byzantine times.

1 It was said to have been founded by a band of emigrants from Phocis, under the guidance of two Athenian leaders, named Philogenes and Damon, but it joined the Ionian confederacy by accepting the government of Athenian rulers of the house of Codrus,

PH O—PHO

PHOCAS, emperor of the East from 602 to 610, was a Cappadocian of humble origin, and was still but a cen- turion when chosen by the army of the Danube to lead it against Constantinople. A revolt within the city soon afterwards resulted in the abdication of the reigning em- peror MAvRICE (q.v.) and in the speedy elevation of Phocas to the vacant throne (23d November 602). The secret of his popularity is hard to discover, but perhaps it is to be sought in the sheer recklessness of his audacity ; courage is nowhere imputed to him, and he is known to have been ignorant, brutal, and deformed. ‘ Without assuming the office of a prince he renounced the profession of a soldier ; and the reign of Phocas afflicted Europe with ignominious peace, and Asia with desolating war.” By the representa- tions of Theodosius, Maurice’s supposed son, and of Narses, the Byzantine commander-in-chief on the Persian frontier, Chosroes (Khosrau) II. was induced to take up arms against the emperor in 604 (see PERstA, above, p. 614). The failures of the generals of Phocas could not but tend to weaken his always insecure tenure of the imperial crown, and the appearance of the Persian armies as far west as Chalcedon in 609-610 made his deposition by HERAcLIUS (g.v.) an easy task. He was beheaded by his successful rival on 4th October 610.

PHOCION, an Athenian statesman, whose private virtues won him the surname of “the Good,” but whose mistaken policy fatally contributed to the downfall of Athens, was born about 402 B.c. His father, Phocus, was a pestlemaker, but would seem to have been a man of means, for Phocion in his youth was a pupil of Plato. If Plutarch is right in saying that he afterwards studied under Xenocrates, this implies that he kept up his philo- sophical studies in later life, for Xenocrates was his junior and did not succeed to the headship of the Academy until 339. As men of kindred character, they may well have been friends; we find them on one occasion serving on the same embassy. It was perhaps from the Academic philosophy

that Phocion learned that contempt for luxury and that truly Socratic simplicity and hardiness which characterized him throughout life. From Plato too he may have caught that scorn for the Athenians of his day which he often betrayed—a scorn harmless, perhaps, in the study, but fatal in the council and the camp. His words, though few, were pithy and forcible, his wit keen and caustic. Many of his trenchant sayings have been pre- served by Plutarch. He was the only orator whom Demosthenes feared ; when Phocion rose to speak Demo- sthenes used to whisper to his friends, " Here comes the chopper of my speeches." Gruff in manner, he was kind at heart, ever ready to raise the fallen and succour those in peril, even' when they were his enemies. Being once reproached for pleading the cause of a bad man, he replied that the good had no need of help. When other generals were sent by Athens to the allies, the people closed their gates against them and prepared for a siege, but if it was Phocion they went out to meet him and conducted him in joyful procession into their midst. In his youth he saw service under the distinguished general Chabrias, whose temper, by turns sluggish and impetuous, he alternately stimulated and repressed. He thus won the regard of his good-natured commander, and was introduced by him to public notice and employed on important services. When Chabrias defeated the Spartans in the sea-fight off Naxos (September 376) Phocion commanded with distinction the left wing of the Athenian fleet. After the death of Chabrias (357) Phocion cared for the relatives of his patron, patiently endeavouring to train to virtue his wild and wayward son. A consistent advocate of peace, he was yet a good officer, and held the annual office of general no less than forty-five times, though he never sought election.

(oe

He was amongst the last of the Athenian leaders who combined the characters of statesman and soldier. In 351 Phocion and Evagoras, lord of the Cyprian Salamis were sent by Idrieus, prince of Caria, with a military and naval force to put down a revolt which had broken out against the Persians in Cyprus. The task was successfully accomplished. Next year! Phocion commanded a force which the Athenians sent to Eubcea in support of the tyrant Plutarch of Eretria. For a time the Athenians were in a dangerous position, but Phocion extricated him- self and defeated the

enemy on the heights above Tamyne. After the battle he humanely dismissed all his Greek prisoners, fearing the vengeance which the Athenians too often wreaked on their fallen foes. In 341 he returned to the island and put down Clitarchus, whom Philip, king of Macedonia, had set up as tyrant of Eretria. Demo- sthenes had long warned the Athenians against Philip, but there is nothing to show that in this he was backed by Phocion. On the contrary, from the opposition which he so often offered to Demosthenes, as well as from his subse- quent policy, we may infer that Phocion discredited rather than corroborated the warnings of his contemporary. But, when Philip laid siege to Byzantium, the Athenians, at last thoroughly aroused to their danger, sent Chares with an expedition to relieve it. He failed to do so, and Phocion took his place (340). The Byzantines had refused to admit Chares into their city, but they welcomed Phocion. Athenians and Byzantines fought side by side, and Philip was compelled to raise the siege and retire from the Hellespont. Phocion afterwards retaliated on the king's territory by raids, in one of which he was wounded. When the Megarians appealed to Athens for help,? Phocion promptly marched to their aid, fortified the port Nisza, and connected it with the capital by two long walls, thus securing Megara and its port against attacks by land.2 In spite of the successful issue of his expedition to Byzantium Phocion advised the Athenians to make peace with Philip. But the war party led by Demosthenes prevailed, and the battle of Chzronea (August 338), in which Philip over- threw the united armies of Athens and Thebes, converted Greece into a province of Macedonia. This brought Phocion and the peace party into power, but Phocion consulted the dignity of Athens so far as to advise the people not to take part in the congress of the Greek states summoned by Philip to meet at Corinth until they knew what terms Philip meant to propose. The Athenians soon had reason to regret that they did not follow this advice. When the

1 Diodorus (xvi. 46) speaks of Phocion as still in Cyprus in 350. But this can hardly be true if Phocion led the expedition to Eubea in Anthesterion (end of February and beginning of March) 350. See next note.

2 The dates and even the order of the events from the Cyprian down to the Megarian expedition are variously given by modern writers. The order in the text is that of Plutarch and Diodorus. The dates assigned to the

Cyprian, second Eubcean, and Megarian expeditions are those of Diodorus, The first expedition to Hubca (as to the date of which see Clinton's Fasti Hellenici, vol. ii.) and that to Megara are not mentioned by Diodorus. Plutarch mentions the Megarian after the Byzantine expedition. But the siege of Byzantium was not raised till the earlier half of 339, and Phocion afterwards spent some time in Macedonian waters. Thus he could hardly have been at Megara before midsummer 339. But Elatea was seized by Philip in the winter of 339/338, and its seizure was the occasion of a league between Athens and Thebes. Hence, as the motive assigned for the Megarian expedition was distrust of Thebes, that expedition cannot have taken place after the seizure of Elatea. But the six months between midsummer and winter 339 would hardly suffice for the con- struction of the Long Walls. Perhaps, then, Plutarch has misplaced the expedition to Megara, and it ought to be dated earlier. Thirlwall assigns it to 343.

3 The Athenians had rendered the same service to the Megarians more than a century before, but these first Long Walis had been destroyed by the Megarians themselves in the Peloponnesian War

(424).

800

news of Philip's assassination reached Athens (336) Phocion vainly dissuaded the people from publicly expressing what he termed a dastardly joy. a After the revolt of Thebes and its destruction by Philip's son and successor Alexander the Great, Athens, having been implicated in the movement, was called on by Alex- ander to surrender the orators of the anti-Macedonian party, including Demosthenes (335). Phocion advised the men to give themselves up, but nevertheless by his intercession he induced the conqueror to relent.! Alex- ander conceived a high opinion of Phocion, and ever after- wards treated him with marked respect. He would have loaded him with presents, but Phocion steadily declined them, the only favour he asked being the release of some prisoners. When Harpalus, a Macedonian officer who had betrayed the confidence reposed in him by Alexander, fled for refuge to Athens, Phocion, though he contemptuously refused the bribes which Harpalus offered him, neverthe- less resisted the proposal to surrender the fugitive (324) ; and, after the death of Harpalus,

Phocion and his son- in-law cared for his infant daughter. The wild joy which the death of Alexander (323) roused at Athens was not shared by Phocion, and he had nothing better than scorn for that heroic effort to shake off the Macedonian yoke known as the Lamian War (323-322). When the news of Leosthenes's victory over Antipater, the regent of Macedonia, was greeted at Athens with enthusiasm (323), Phocion sneeringly asked, " When shall we have done con- quering?" Still, when a body of Macedonian and imer- cenary troops under Micion landed in Attica and ravaged the country, Phocion led out a force and defeated them with loss, After the battle of Crannon (322) Phocion's personal influence induced the victorious Antipater to spare Attica the misery of invasion, but he could not pre- vent the occupation of Munychia (one of the ports of Athens) by a Macedonian garrison. However, Menyllus, the commander of the garrison, was a friend of Phocion and respected the feelings of the Athenians. Further, the Athenians were required by Antipater to surrender the chief members of the anti-Macedonian party, amongst them Demosthenes and Hyperides, and to restrict their franchise by a property qualification. In consequence Hyperides was executed, Demosthenes died by his own hand, and over 12,000 citizens lost the franchise, many of them going into exile. These disfranchised citizens had afterwards an important influence on Phocion's fate. For some years Athens dwelt in peace, if not in honour, under the shadow of Macedonia. Phocion had the direction of affairs and filled the magistracies with respectable men. By his intercession with Antipater he procured for niany of the exiles a repeal or mitigation of their sentence, but he declined to petition Antipater to withdraw the garrison from Munychia. The presents offered him by Antipater and Menyllus he refused. In 318 Antipater died, leaving as his successor in the regency of Macedonia the veteran general Polysperchon, instead of his own son Cassander. The new regent, finding himself isolated and wishing to strengthen himself against his enemies, tried to attach the Greeks to his cause by proclaiming in the name of the young king Philip Arrhidzus that the oligarchies estab- lished by Antipater in the Greek cities should be abolished and the democracies restored, and that all exiles, with a few exceptions, should be allowed to return. A special letter to Athens in the king's name announced the restora- tion of the democracy. But Cassander was not to be set aside lightly ; he was naturally supported by all who a IR ois Sa age

_1 So Plutarch, Phocion, c.17. But Diodorus (xvii. 15) and Plutarch himself elsewhere (Demosth., c. 23) ascribe to Demades the credit of having mollified Alexander. Phocion's name is not mentioned in this connexion by Arrian (Anad., i. 10) nor by Justin (xi. 4).

reOU row'

had benefited by his father's measures, 7.¢., by the oligar- chical and Macedonian party in the Greek states. Before the news of the death of Antipater got abroad Cassander sent Nicanor, an adherent of his own, to relieve Menyllus of the command in Munychia. Menyllus unsuspectingly resigned the command to him, and Nicanor held the place for Cassander. When, a few days later, the death of Anti- pater became known, there were angry murmurs at Athens that Phocion had been a party to the deception. Phocion heeded them not, but, following his usual policy, pro- pitiated Nicanor in favour of Athens. But the people were excited by the promises of Polysperchon ; Phocion could no longer hold them in. In a public assembly at which Nicanor was present an attempt was made to seize the obnoxious Macedonian, but he escaped. Warnings now poured in on Phocion to beware of him, but he confided in Nicanor's good intentions and would take no © precaution. So Nicanor was enabled to seize and intrench himself in Pirzeus, the chief port of Athens. The irritation against Phocion was intense. An attempt to treat with Nicanor failed; he simply referred the envoys, of whom Phocion was one, to Cassander. The arrival in Attica of Alexander, son of Polysperchon, revived the hopes of the Athenians. He came at the head of an army and brought in his train a crowd of the exiles, and it was thought that, along with the constitution, he would restore Muny- chia and Pirzeus to Athens. Far from doing so, it soon appeared that his intention was to seize and hold these ports for Polysperchon, and rumour said that to this step he was instigated by Phocion. The people were furious. In a public assembly they deposed the existing magis- trates, filled their places with the most pronounced demo- crats, and sentenced all who had held office under the oligarchy to exile or death. Among these was Phocion. With some of his companions in misfortune he fled to Alexander, who received the fugitives courteously and sent them to Polysperchon and the king, who were with an army in Phocis. Thither, too, came an embassy from Athens to accuse Phocion and his fellows before the king and to demand the

promised independence. Polysperchon resolved to propitiate the Athenians with blood ; so, after an audience disgraceful to all who took part in it except to Phocion, the refugees were packed in carts and sent to Athens to be tried by what Polysperchon called the now free people. A savage mob filled the theatre where the trial was to take place; the returned exiles mustered in force, and with them were women, aliens, and slaves. The prisoners were charged with having betrayed their country in the Lamian War and overturned the demo- cracy. Every attempt Phocion made to defend himself was drowned in a storm of hooting. At last, renouncing the attempt, he was heard to say that for himself he pleaded guilty, but the rest were innocent. 'Why," he asked, "will you kill them?" He was answered with a great shout, "Because they are your friends." Then Phocion was silent. All were condemned to die, the multi- tude rising to their feet like one man to give the verdict. A howling rabble followed them with curses to the prison. Phocion was the last to die (317), for he allowed his best friend Nicocles, as a last token of regard, to die before him. His old disdainful wit did not desert him. When his turn came there was not poison enough left, and he had to pay for more, remarking that at Athens a man could not even die for nothing. His body was cast out of Attic territory, but his faithful wife? secretly brought back his bones and interred them by the hearth. Afterwards the

2 The story that this service was rendered by a Megarian woman rests on a false reading in Plutarch, Phoc., c. 87, Meyapixy before yw? being the interpolation of an ignorant copyist who mistook the preceding rijs Meyapixjjs.

See vol. xi. plate I.

repentant Athenians buried them with public honours and raised a bronze statue to his memory.

The chief authorities for the life of Phocion are Diodorus (xvi. 42, 46, 74, xvii. 15, xviii. 18, 64-67) and the biographies of Plutarch and Nepos. (J. G. FR.)

PHOCIS was in ancient times the name of a district of central Greece, between Bceotia on the east and the land of the Ozolian Locrians on the west. It adjoined the Gulf of Corinth on the south, while it was separated on the north from the Malian gulf by the ridge of Mount Cnemis and the narrow strip of territory occupied by the Epi- cnemidian and Opuntian Locrians. In early times, indeed, a slip of Phocian territory extended between these two Locrian tribes to the sea, and the port of Daphnus, opposite to the Cenzean promontory in Eubcea, afforded the Phocians an opening in this direction; but in the time of Strabo Daphnus had ceased to exist, and its territory was incor- porated with Locris (Strabo, ix. 3, § 1).

Phocis was for the most part a rugged and mountainous country. In the centre of it rose the great mountain mass of Parnassus, one of the most lofty in Greece, attaining to the height of 8068 feet, and an underfall of this, Mount Cirphis (4130 feet), sweeps round to the Gulf of Corinth on the south, separating the Gulf of Crissa from that of Anticyra, both of which were included in the Phocian territory. The range of Mount Cnemis on its northern frontier was of less elevation (about 3000 feet), but rugged and difficult of access, while the upper valley or plain of the

Cephissus, which intervened between this and the northern |

slopes of Mount Parnassus, constituted the only consider- able tract of fertile and level country comprised within the limits of Phocis. The little basin adjoining the Crissaan gulf, though fertile, was of very limited extent, and the broad valley leading into the interior from thence to Amphissa (now Salona) belonged to the Ozolian Locrians. Besides the Cephissus, the only river in Phocis was the Pleistus, a mere torrent, which rose in Mount

Parnassus, and, after flowing past Delphi, descended through a deep ravine to the Crisszean gulf.

Phocis possessed great importance in a military point of view, not only from its central position with regard to the other states of northern Greece and its possession of the great sanctuary of Delphi, but from its command of the pass which led from the Malian gulf across Mount Cnemis to Elatea in the valley of the Cephissus, and afforded the only access for an invader who had already passed Thermopyle into Bceotia and Attica. Hence the alarm of the Athenians in 339 when it was suddenly announced that Philip had occupied Elatea. Again, the only practicable communication from Beeotia with Delphi and the western Locrians lay through a narrow pass known as the Schiste Hodos, between Mount Cirphis and the underfalls of Mount Helicon. From this point another deep valley branches off to the Gulf of Anticyra, and the Triodos or junction of the three ways was the spot celebrated in Greek story as the place where Gidipus. met and slew his father. ;

The most important city in Phocis after Delphi was Elatea, the position of which has already been described ; next to this came Abe, also in the valley of the Cephissus, near the Beeotian frontier, celebrated for its oracle of Apollo. In the same neighbourhood stood Daulis and Ambrysus ; while farther south, towards the Corinthian gulf, lay Anticyra, on the gulf of the same name. Crissa, which had been in early times one of the chief cities of Phocis, and had given name to the Crissean_ gulf, was de- stroyed by order of the Amphictyonic council in 591, and never rebuilt. The other towns of Phocis were places of

no importance, and their names scarcely appear in history. The whole extent of Phocis did not excced half that of Beotia, but it was broken up into a number of small townships—twenty-

PH SOL

two in all—forming a confederacy, the deputies of which used to meet in a "synedrion" or council-chamber near Daulis. But from au early period the predominance of Delphi, owing to the influence of its celebrated oracle, threw all the others into the shade. At first (as has been already stated in the article DeLpHi) the Phocians were masters of the oracle, and of the town

that had grown up on its site ; but after the first Sacred War in 595 pz. c., and the destruc- tion of Crissa, Delphi became an independent city, and from this period a strong feeling of hostility subsistcd between the Delphians and the Phocians. The latter, however, thus deprived of their chief city, sank into a position of insignificance, and playcd but an unimportant part in the affairs of Greece. During the Persian War of 480 thcir territory was ravaged by the invader, and several of their small cities destroyed. In the Peloponnesian War they were zealous allies of the Athenians, and for a short timc recovered possession of Delphi, which was, however, soon after wrested from them ; and it maintained its independence from the peace of Nicias in 421 till the outbreak of the Sacred War in 357. On this occa- sion the Phocians, who had been sentenced by the Amphictyons to the payment of a heavy finc, rose in arms against the decree, which they attributed to the hostile influence of the Thebans, and, under the command of Philomelus, made themselves masters of Delphi, and seized on the sacred treasurcs of the temple. With the assistance of these resources they were able to maintain the contest, under the command of Onomarchus, Phayllus, and Phalezcus, for a period of ten years, not only against the Thcbans and their

allies but even after the accession of Philip, king of Macedonia,

to the side of their adversaries. This was the only occasion on which the Phocians bore a prominent part in Greek history. After their final defeat by Philip a decree was passed by the Amphictyons, in 346, that all the Phocian towns except Abe should be de- stroyed, and the inhabitants dispersed in villages. Notwithstand- ing the ruin thus brought upon their country, many of their towns seem to have been subsequently rebuilt, and the Phocians were able to take part with the Athenians in the final struggle for Greek indc- pendence at Cheronea, and in the Samian War. ‘heir last appcar- ance in history was in defence of Delphi against the attack of the Gauls in 279; but they still continued to subsist as a separate though obscure people in the days of Strabo.

Of the origin of the Phocians as a people we have no information. The earliest traditions conncct them with the pre-Hellenic Leleges, as was the case also with the Locrians, and this statement was probably intended to

convey the fact that the two nations were tribes of the same race. They first appear under the name of Phocians in the Homeric catalogue as having jointd the Greek armament against Troy under the command of the two sons of Iphitus (Z/iad, ii. 517), and were restored amongst the olic division of the northern Greeks.

For the ancient geography of Phocis, see Strabo (ix. 8) and Pausanias (x.). The country and the existing remains of anti- quity are described by Dodwell (vol. i. chaps. 6 and 7) and Leake (Northern Greece, vol. ii.).

PHGBUS (¢o?Bos, the bright or pure), a common epithet of APoLLo (q.v.). Artemis in like manner is called Phoebe; and in the Latin poets and their modern followers '"'Phoebus" and "Phebe" are often used simply for the sun and the moon respectively.

'PHGENICIA (Gr. Bowvixn) forms part of the seaboard of Syrra (¢.v.), extending along the Mediterranean (some- times called the Phceenician Sea) from the mouth of the Eleutherus in the north to Mount Carmel in the south, a distance of rather more than two degrees of latitude. In early times Phcenicians were settled beyond this district, but for the Persian period Dor may be taken approximately as the limit towards the south. In the north a strip of country on the other side of the Eleutherus (Nahr al-Kebir) was frequently reckoned to Pheenicia. Formed partly by alluvium carried down by perennial streams from the mountains to the east, and fringed by great sand-dunes thrown up by the sea, Phoenicia is covered by a very fertile vegetable soil. It is only at Eleutherus in the north, and near Acre (Akka) in the south, that this strip of coastland widens out into plains of any extent; a smaller plain is found at Beirtt (Beyrout). For the most part the moun- tains approach within not many miles of the coast, or even close to it, leaving only a narrow belt of lowland, which from remote antiquity has been traversed by a caravan- route. To the south of Tyre the cliffs sometimes advance so close to the sea that a passage for the road had to be hewn out of the rocks, as at Scala Tyriorum (Ras an-

Nakura), and farther north at Promontorium Album (Ras al-Abyad). It is not known how far inland the Phcenician territory extended; the limit was probably different at different times. Both the maritime district, partly under artificial irrigation, and the terraces, laid out with great care on the mountain-sides, were in antiquity in a high state of cultivation; and the country—more especially that portion which lies north of the Kasimfye (Litani) along the flanks of Lebanon—still presents some of the richest and most beautiful landscapes in the world, in this respect far excelling the Italian Riviera. The lines of the lime- stone mountains, running for the most part parallel to the sea, are pierced by deep river-valleys; those that debouch to the south of the Kasimiye have already been mentioned in the article PALESTINE; the most important of those to the north are the Nahr Zaherani, Al-Auwali, Damur (Tamy- ras), Nahr Beirtt, Nahr al-Kelb (Lycus), Nahr Ibrahim (Adonis), Nahr Abu Ali (Kaddisha). The mountains are not rich in mineral products; but it may be mentioned that the geologist Fraas has recently discovered indubitable traces of amber-digging on the Phcenician coast. The purple-shell (Murex trunculus and brandarvs) is still found in large quantities. The harbours on the Pheenician coast which played so important a part in antiquity are nearly all silted up, and, with the exception of that of Beirut, there is no safe port for the large vessels of modern times. A few bays, open towards the north, break the practically straight coast-line ; and there are a certain number of small islands off the shore. It was, in the main, such points as these that the Phcenicians chose for their towns; since, while affording facilities for shipping, theyalso enabled the Phceni- cians to protect themselves from attacks from the mainland, which was subject to them within but narrow limits.

ftace.—The ethnographic relations of the Phcenicians have been the subject of much debate. As in Gen. x., Sidon, the firstborn of Canaan, is classed with the Hamites, many investigators are still of opinion that, in spite of their purely Semitic language, the Phoenicians were a distinct race from the Hebrews. They attach great weight to the peculiarities that mark the course of Phcenician civiliza- tion, and, above all, to their political organization and colonizing habits, which find no analogies among the Semites. In favour of the opposite and more probable view, that the Phcenicians, like the Canaauites, are an early offshoot from the Semitic stock, it may be urged (1) that the account in Gen. x. is not framed on strict ethno- graphic

lines, and (2) that the absence from Pheenicia of all trace of an original non-Semitic form of speech cannot be reconciled with the theory of an exchange of language. The close connexion which existed from an early period between the Phcenicians and the Egyptians accounts for many coincidences in the matter of religion. Phoenician civilization, being on the whole of but little originality, may have been that of a Semitic people, who, from their situation on the narrow strip of country at the east end of the Mediterranean, were naturally addicted to trade and colonization.

Language.—Inscriptions, coins, topographical names pre- served by classical writers, proper names of persons, and the Punic passages in the Penulus of Plautus combine to show that the Phcenician language, like Hebrew, belonged to the north Semitic group. Even the Phenician which survived as a rustic dialect in north Africa till the 5th century of our era was very closely akin to Hebrew. Though it retained certain old forms obsolete in Hebrew, Pheenician, as we know, represents on the whole a later stage of grammatical structure than the language of the Old Testament. Its vocabulary, in like manner, apart from a few archaisms, coincides most nearly with later Hebrew. At a very early period Semitic words were

Poe aG@NiecTAaA

adopted into Greek from Pheenician ; and it is also quite certain that the Phcenicians had at least a great share in the development and diffusion of the alphabetic character which forms the foundation of all European alphabets. We possess, however, only a few Phoenician inscriptions and coins of very early date. The longest and most im- portant of the inscriptions—that on King Eshmun‘azar’s tomb—is in letters which, while very ancient in certain of their features, present a series of important modifications of the original type of the Semitic alphabet, as it can be fixed by comparison of the oldest documents. Still more divergent from the ancient characters are the forms of the letters on the Pheenician, 7.e., Punic, monuments of north Africa. (A. 80.) Religion.—Considering the great part which the Pheeni- cians played in the movements of ancient civilization, it is singular how fragmentary are our sources of know- ledge for all the most essential elements of their his- tory. What we are told of

their religion is only in appearance an exception to this rule. Eusebius in the Przparatio Evangelica cites at length from the Greek of Philo of Byblus a cosmogony and theogony professedly translated from a Berytian Sanchuniathon, who wrote 1221 3.c. But that this work is a forgery appears from the apocryphal authorities cited, and the affinity displayed with the system of Euhemerus. The forger was Philo himself, for the writer borrows largely from Hesiod and was therefore a Greek ; he gives Byblus the greatest pro- minence in a history professedly Berytian, and was there- fore a Byblian ; and finally Philo was a fanatical Euhemer- ist, and the admitted object of the work was to make converts to that system. The materials used by Philo were, however, in all probability mainly genuine, but so cut and clipped to fit his system that they must be used with great caution and constantly controlled by the few scattered data that can be gathered from authentic sources. The two triads of Hannibal's oath to Philip of Macedon (Polyb., vii. 9, 2)—Sun, Moon, and Earth, and Rivers, Meadows, and Waters—contain the objects on which all Phcenician worship is based. Rivers were generally sacred to gods, trees to goddesses ; mountains, too, were revered as nearer than other places to heaven; and betylia or meteoric stones were held sacred as divine messengers. Philo's second generation of men (Genos and Genea) first worshipped the plants of the earth, till a drought ensued and they. stretched out their hands towards the sun as the Lord of Heaven or Beelsamén (Baal-Shamaim), —an indication that the worship of heavenly bodies was regarded as a later development of religion. Baudissin, on the other hand, has lately maintained that all Pheenician deities were astral and only manifested themselves in the terrestrial sphere, that the things holy to them on earth were symbols, not dwelling-places, of the gods. And there seems to be little doubt that this was the theory of later Phoenician theology, as appears in the legend of the fiery star of the queen of heaven that fell into the holy stream at Aphaca (Sozom., ii. 5, 5), in the coincidence of the names of sacred rivers with those of the celestial gods, and in the name Zets Oadrdooros (Hesych.) for a Sidonian sea-god. But surely this theory was devised to remove a contradiction which theologians felt to be involved in the popular religion. In the latter logical consistency is not necessarily to be presumed, and astral and terrestrial worships might well exist side by side. In historical times the astral element had the ascendency ; the central point in religion, and the starting-point in all Phcenician mythology, was the worship of the Sun, who has either the

Moon or (as the sun-god is also the heaven-god) the Earth for wife. In Byblus, for_which alone we possess some details of the local cult, El was the founder and

Peas ICcia

lord of the town, and therefore of course had the pre-emi- nence in religion; and so the Byblian Philo makes El to be the highest god and the other élim or eldhim sub- ordinate to him. In the other towns also the numen patrium was a form of the sun-god, or else his wife, and enjoyed somewhat exclusive honour—a step in the direction of monotheism similar to the Moabite worship of Chemosh (cp. the Mesha stone). EI is represented as the first to introduce circumcision and the first who sacrificed an only son or a virgin daughter to the supreme god. He wanders over all the earth, westward towards the setting sun, and leaves Byblus to his spouse Baaltis—this is meant to explain why she had the chief place in the cult of Byblus; her male companion Eliiin, Shadid (or péysorros Oeéds), is conceived as her youthful lover, and El is transformed into a hostile god, who slays Shadid with the sword. Accord- ing to another legend the youthful god is killed by a boar while hunting, and the mourning for him with the finding of him again make up a chief part of Byblian worship, which at an early date was enriched with elements borrowed from Egypt and the myth of Osiris. In other places we find as spouse of the highest god the moon- goddess Astarte with the cow's horns, who in Tyre was worshipped under the symbol of a star as queen of heaven. With her worship as with that of Baaltis were associated wild orgies ; and traces of the like are not lacking even at Carthage (Aug., Civ. Dei, ii. 4), where theology had given a more earnest and gloomy character to the goddess. Astarte was viewed as the mother of the Tyrian sun- god Melkarth (Eudoxus, in Athen., ix. p. 392 D), or, as his full title runs, "our lord Melkarth the Baal of Tyre" (C.Z.S., No. 122). On account of his regular daily course the Sun is viewed as the god who works and reveals himself in the world, as son of the god who is above the world, and as protector of civil order. But, again, as the Sun engenders the fruitfulness of the earth, he becomes the object of a sensual nature-worship, one feature of which is that men and women interchange garments. A chief feast to his honour in Tyre was the "awaking of Heracles" in the month Peritius (February/March ; Menander of Eph., in Jos., Ant., viii. 5, 3), a

festival of the returning power of the sun in spring, probably alluded to in the sarcasm of Elijah (1 Kings xviii. 27). Peculiar to Berytus is the worship of Poseidon and other sea-gods, who are connected genealogically with Zeus Belus, a son of El, born beyond the Euphrates, and perhaps therefore connected with the Babylonian fish-gods. Berytus was also a chief seat of the worship of the Cabiri, the seven nameless sons of Sydek, with their brother Eshmin, who is the eighth and greatest of the Cabiri. Philo supplies for them a genealogy which is an attempt to present the growth of man from rude to higher civilization, and pre- sents analogies, long since observed, to the genealogy of the sons of Cain in Genesis. Not only their half-divine ancestors but the Cabiri themselves belong to a compara- tively recent stage of religious development. They are the patron deities of manual arts and civil industry, and as such are the great gods of the Phcenician land, specially worshipped in the federal centre Tripolis. On coins of this town they are called Syrian (i.e., perhaps Assyrian) gods,! which seems to imply that the Phcenicians them- selves regarded as not primitive the many Egyptian elements which were quite early introduced into the religion of the Cabiri, and especially of Eshman. On the other hand, a figure allied to Eshmin, Taaut, the inventor of the alphabet, is certainly borrowed from the Egyptian Tehuti. So, too, Onka (Steph., s.v. ‘’Oyxaias”) is prob- ably the Anuke of Sais, and it is possible that the whole

1 Eckhel, D.N.V., iii. 374.

cycle of gods who revealed and interpreted the sacred books is Egyptian ; some of the latter have the form of a serpent.

The Pheenicians did not set up anthropomorphic statues of the gods, but symbolic pillars of stone, or, in the case of the queen of heaven, of wood (ashérah). If an actual image was used, likeness to man was avoided by fantastic details: the god had two heads or wings, or some animal emblem, or was dwarfish or hermaphrodite, and soon. The sacrifices were of oxen and other male domestic animals— as explatory offerings also stags®—and for minor offerings birds. Human sacrifices were exceptionally offered by the state to avert great disasters; the victim was chosen from among the citizens and must be innocent, wherefore children were chosen, and by

preference firstborn or only sons. The same idea that the godhead demanded the holiest and most costly gift explains the prostitution of virgins at certain feasts in the sacred groves of the queen of heaven, and the temporary consecration of maidens or matrons as kédéshoth (iepddovdor). For this custom, as for that of human sacrifice, substitutes were by and by introduced in many places; thus at Byblus it was held sufficient that the women cut off their hair at the feast of Adonis (De Dea Syr., c. 6).

Origin of the Phenicians.—The oldest towns were held to have been founded by the gods themselves, who pre- sumably also placed the Pheenicians in them. Imitating the Egyptians, the race claimed an antiquity of 30,000 years (Africanus, in Syncellus, p. 31), yet they retained some memory of having migrated from older seats on an Eastern sea. Herodotus (vii. 89) understood this of the Persian Gulf; the companions of Alexander sought to prove by learned etymologies that they had actually found here the old seats of the Phoenicians. But all this rested on a mere blunder, and the true form of the tradition is pre- served by Trogus (Just., xviii. 3, 3), who places the oldest seats of the Phcenicians on the Syrium stagnum or Dead Sea—with which the Greeks before the time of the Dia- dochi had no acquaintance—and says that, driven thence by an earthquake, they reached the coast, and founded Sidon. This earthquake Bunsen has ingeniously identified with that which destroyed Sodom and Gomorrha, and with which Genesis itself connects the migrations of Lot. Perhaps it played much such a part in the mythic history of the peoples of Canaan as the breach of the dam of Marib does in the history of the Arabs.

In historical times the Pheenicians called themselves Canaanites and their land Canaan (Kéna‘an, Kéna‘; Xva in Hecatzeus, fr. 254), the latter applying equally to the coast which they themselves held and the inland highlands which the Israelites occupied. The Greeks call people and land Poivixes, Powiky ; the former is the older word, which in itself disposes of the idea that Phoenicia means the land of the date-palm, which the Greeks called dot, 2.¢., Phoenician.? In truth, Potvices, with an antique termination used in forming other names of nations (AtOixes, Opyexes), is derived from qouvds, “blood-red,” probably in allusion to the dark complexion of the race. ~

When the southern part of the coast of Canaan was occupied by the Philistines the region of Ekron became the boundary of Pheenicia to the south (Josh. xii. 3); the northern boundary in the time of the Persians was the town of Posidium and the mouth of the Orontes (Herod., ili. 91; Pseudo-Scylax, § 104). Under the Seleucids these limits contracted, the southern boundary being the Chorseus (Ptol., Codd. B. E., Pal. 1), which falls into the sea north of the tower of Straton, and the northern the river

2 For stags offered to Tanit see Clermont-Ganneau, Journ. As., ser. 7, vol. xi. p. 232 sq., 444 sq.

3 In reality the date-palm is not aboriginal in these regions, Hehn, Kulturpflanzen, &e., 3d ed., p. 233.

Eleutherus, so that Orthosia was the last town of Phcenicia and the whole region of Aradus was excluded.1_ Under the Roman empire the southern boundary was unchanged, but the northern advanced to a little south of Balanea.2 A still narrower definition of Canaan is that in Gen. x. 19 and Josh. xiii. 2-6, where Sidon or its territory is the northern limit ; but the reference is only to the land destined to be occupied by Israel, for a younger hand has added to Sidon (the firstborn of Canaan) and Heth a list of other nations, sons of Canaan, extending northwards as far as Hamath.?

It is a singular fact that alike in the Old Testament and in Homer, in the time of Tyre's greatest might, we con- stantly read of Sidonians and not of Tyrians. The explan- ation that Sidonians is a synonym of Pheenicians in general is defended on 1 Kings v. 1 [15] compared with ver. 6 [20], but is not adequate ; the same chapter distinguishes between the Sidonians and the Giblites or men of Byblus (E.V., 'stone squarers," ver. 18 [32]). And in Gen. x. we have besides Sidon the peoples of Arce, Sinna, Aradus, and Simyra enumerated in order from south to north—mostly unimportant towns afterwards absorbed in the land of Aradus—and yet Tyre is lacking, though one fancies that we could better miss even Aradus, which was a colony from Sidon (Strabo, xvi. p. 753), only Aradus was founded by fugitives, and so must, from the first, have been inde- pendent. Hence we may conjecture that the list in Genesis is political in principle; and this gives us a solution of the

whole difficulty, viz., that, during the flourishing period of Pheenicia, Sidon and Tyre formed a single state whose kings reigned first in Sidon and then in Tyre, but whose inhabitants continued to take their name from the old metropolis. The first unambiguous example of two dis- tinct kings in Tyre and Sidon is in the end of the 8th century B.C., On an inscription of Sennacherib (Schrader, K.A.T., 2d ed., p. 286 sq.), and there is every reason to think that the revolt of Sidon from Tyre about 726 spoken of by Menander (Jos., Ant. ix. 14, 2) was a revolt not from Tyrian hegemony but from the Tyrian kingdom. The several Pheenician cities had lists of their kings back to a very early date. Abedbalus reigned at Berytus in the time which Philo had ciphered out as that of the judge Jerubbaal, z.¢., about the beginning of the 13th century B.C., and in Sidon there is word of kings at the time to which the Greeks referred the rape of Europa (15th cen- tury ; see Leetus, in Tatian, Adv. Grecos, 58). The leading Phcenician towns are mentioned in connexion with the Syrian wars of the Pharaohs of the XVIIIth, XTXth, and XXth Dynasties (16th-13th century); thus under Thothmes III. we read of Berytus, Ace, Joppe, and repeatedly of Aradus, which is commonly spoken of along with Haleb (Aleppo) and other eastern districts. The mention of Tyre is less certain, as there were two cities which the Egyptians called T'ar ; but there is no mistake as to the city on the sea called "T'aru the haven" in the journey of an Egyptian of the 14th century (Rec. of the Past, ii. 107 sq.), —"' water 1s carried to it in barks, it is richer in fish than in sands" : the noble aqueducts therefore, of which the ruins are still seen, were not yet constructed.*

The oldest parts of Tyre were taken to be the town on the main- land, afterwards known as Paletyrus, and the so-called temple of Hercules built on a rocky islet, which Hiram by and by united with the insular part of the town. According to native historians this pa was more properly one of Olympian Zeus, that is, of Baal- 8 ae, the Lord of Heaven.' Herodotus, after inquiries made a Strabo, xvi. p. 753; Ptol., v. 15, 4, 5, both seemingly from

rtemidorus. The Eleutherus as boundary appears also in Jos., Ant., xv. 4, 1 e¢ sep.

- *Phin, iN. H.,y 69, 79; Itin. Hicros*

, Ste . Hreros., pp. 582, 585 (Wess.).

: See Wellhausen in Jahrb. f. d. Theol., 1876, p. 403. inal pee ene for "ASéABados, in Porphyry, ap. Euseb.,

° This appears by comparing Herod., ii. 44, with the mention of the same golden stele by Menander (Jos., Cont. Ap., i. 18).

PH Ge wWiCcri sa

on the spot, fixes the founding of the city in 2756 B.c. ; but Tyre did not attain great importance till the later island city was built. According to Trogus (Justin, xvill. 3, 5) the Phoenicians (not the people of Sidon, as the passage is often misread to mean), who had been subdued by the king of Ascalon, took ship and founded Tyre a year before the taking of Troy. This goes well with the spread of the Philistine power in the time of the later Judges and with the fact that Ascalon was still a Canaanite town under Rameses IT. (c. 1385 B.c.), while in the eighth year of Rameses III. (c. 1246) the Pulosata made a raid into Kgypt.® Philistus (in Euseb., Can., No. 808) gives us without knowing it the era used in Tyre and in early times also in Carthage when he says that Zorus (7.c., Gér, Tyre) and Carchedon built Carthage in 1213 B.c., or rather, according to avery good MS. (Regin.), in 1209, which agrees with the date 1208 for the fall of Troy on the Parian marble, and also may be recon- ciled with the notice (taken from Philistus) in Appian, Punica, i., that the founding of Zorus and Carchedon was fifty years before tlie fall of Troy, if we suppose that Philistus took for the latter event the latest date we know of, viz., that assigned by Democritus.? Now Josephus (Ant., vill. 3, 1) counts 229 years from the building of Tyre to Hiram, and places the foundation of Carthage (Cont. Ap., i. 18) in the 155th year from Hiram's accession. The best authority for the last-named event is Timeus, who puts it in 814 B.c. This gives us for the founding of Tyre a date twelve years later than that of Philistus, but it is probable that Josephus in summing up the individual reigns between Hiram and the building of Carthage as given by Menander departed from the intention of his author in assuming that the twelve years of Astartus and the twelve of the contemporaneous usurper were not to be reckoned separately.? This hypothesis enables us to give a restored chronology which cannot be far from the truth (see infra).

Manufactures and Inventions.—The towns of the Pheeni- cian coast were active from a very early date in various manufactures. Glass work, for which the sands of the Belus gave excellent material, had its chief seat in Sidon ; embroidery and purple-dyeing were favoured by the preva- lence of the purple-giving murex all along the coast. The ancients ascribed to the Pheenicians the invention of all three industries, but glass-making seems to have been borrowed from Egypt, where this manufacture is of im- memorial antiquity ; and several circumstances indicate that the other two arts probably came from Babylon—in particular, the names of the two main tints of purple— dark red (argaman) and dark blue (tékhéleth)—seem not to be Phcenician. The Pheenicians, however, brought these arts to perfection and spread the knowledge of them. In other-particulars also the ancients looked on the Phceni- cians as the inventive people par excellence: to them as the great trading nation was ascribed the invention of arithmetic, measure, and weiglit, which are really Babylon- ian in origin, and also of writing, although it is not even quite certain that it was the Phcenicians who adapted the Egyptian hieroglyphic alphabet to Semitic use.2 Yet here again the Phcenicians have undisputedly the scarcely inferior merit of having communicated the art to all the nations of the Mediterranean basin.

Nangation, Trade, Colonies.—The beginnings of navi- gation lie beyond all human memory, but it is not hard to understand how the ancients made this also an inven- tion of the Pheenicians, whose skill as seamen was never matched by any ancient people before or after them. Even in later times Greek observers noted with admiration the exact order kept on board Pheenician ships, the skill with which every corner of space was utilized, the careful disposition of the cargo, the vigilance of the steersmen and their mates (Xen., Wc., viii. 11 sg.). They steered by the pole-star, which the Greeks therefore called the Pheenician star (Hyginus, Po. Ast., ii. 2); and all their

§ See Brugsch, Geschichte Aeqyptens, pp. 516, 598.

? If Democritus was born in 470 (Thrasyllus), his date for the fall of Troy is 1160.

8 He is contemporaneous on the reading Me6' of "Aorapros given by Theophilus, Ad Aufol., iii. 19. If Josephus took it so, then according to the

best readings he would get exactly 155 years.

® That the Semitic alphabet did not come from cuneiform writing may be taken as certain; but also it is not probable that it came from the hieratic character of the Egyptians.

Paiva iC 1 A

vessels, from the common round yavAos, to the great Tar- shish ships, the East-Indiamen—so to speak—of the ancient world, had a speed which the Greeks never rivalled. Of the extent of the Phcenicians' trade in the last days of Tyre's glory Ezekiel (xxvii. 12-25) has left a lively picture, which shows how large was the share they had in overland as well as in naval commerce. It was they, in fact, who from the earliest time distributed to the rest of the world the wares of Egypt and Babylon (Herod., i. 1). To the lands of the Euphrates and Tigris there were two routes : the more northerly passed obliquely through Mesopotamia and had on it the trading places of Haran (Carrhze), Canneh (Czenz), and Eden; the other, more southerly, had Sheba (Sabzea) for its goal, and led down the Euphrates, passing Asshur (Sura) and Chilmad (Charmande). There were other routes in the Persian and Macedonian period, but they do not belong to the present history.

Actual inland settlements of the Phcenicians seem to have been few; we know of one near the head of the northern trade road, Laish, which was lost to the Danites in the time of the judges (Judges xviii.), and one on the southern route, Eddana on the Euphrates (Steph. B., s.v.), which corresponds in name with Eden, but is not the same place, but perhaps rather the Giddan of Isidore of Charax (§ 1). In the Arabian caravan trade in perfume, spices, and incense for worship the Phcenicians had a lively interest (Herod., iii, 107). These wares were mainly pro- duced not in Arabia but in eastern Africa and India; but Sheba in Yemen was the emporium of the whole trade, and the active commerce of this rich and powerful state in the times before the Persian is seen better than by any direct testimony from the exact knowledge of the Sabzean lands shown in Gen. x., from the many references to Arabia and Sheba in the Assyrian monuments, and from such facts as Euting's discovery at Taima in the heart of Arabia of an Aramaic inscription of the 6th century B.c., composed by a man with an Egyptian name.

In Egypt Phoenician trade and civilization soon took firm root; they alone were able to maintain their Egyptian trade and profits in the anarchic times of the XXIIId to the XXVth Dynasties (825-650 B.c.), times like those of the Mameluke beys, in which all other foreign merchants were frightened away and the Greek legend of the inlios- pitable Busiris originated.? The Tyrians had their own quarter in old Memphis (Herod., ii. 112), but there never were real colonies of the Phcenicians in Egypt.

That in matters economic Syria and Palestine depended on Pheenicia might have been inferred even if we had not the express testimony of Ezekiel that these lands were in- cluded in the sphere of Tyrian trade; so too was Togarmah, an Armenian district.

Cilicia was important to the Phcenicians as the natural point of shipment for wares from the Euphrates regions ; and the opposite island of Cyprus attracted them by its store of timber for shipbuilding, and of copper. Both these countries were originally peopled by the non-Semnitic Kittim, who have left their name in the Cilician district Cetis and the Cyprian city Citium ; but they came under profound Semitic influences, mainly those of the Phoe- nicians, who on the mainland had settlements at Myri- andus (Xen., Anab., i. 4, 6) and Tarsus,? while in Cyprus Citium—which to the last remained the chief seat of the

2 XdABns, the herald of Bnsiris, is simply ab, "dog."

3 Tarsus was founded by Aradians, Dio Chr., xxxiii. 40. Aig, a city of the Phoenicians in Hecateus, fr. 259, is probably not Algz but Gaza.

writing in 346 B.c., knows Carpasia, Cerynea, and Lapethus as Phoenician ; but the view that Phoenician sway in Cyprus was very ancient and that the Phcenicians were gradually driven back by the Greeks appears not to be sound. On the contrary, the balance of power seems to have varied greatly ; the Assyrian tribute-lists of 673 and 667 (Schrader, KAT, p. 354 sq.) contain but two names of Phcenician cities in Cyprus, Silli (Soli) and Kartihadast- (probably New Paphos); not one of the later Phcenician kingdoms is mentioned, so that presumably none of them then existed, and not one of the

ten Cyprian kings mentioned appears to be Phcenician by name. Menander tells us (Jos., Axt., ix. 14, 2) that the kings of Tyre ruled over Cyprus at the close of the 8th century ; but a very clear proof that there was no ancient and uninterrupted political connexion with Pheenicia hes in the fact that the Cyprian Greeks took the trouble to frame a Greek cuneiform character modelled on the Assyrian.

The Homeric poems represent the Phoenicians as present in Greek waters for purposes of traffic, including the pur- chase and capture of slaves, but not as settlers. Tradition (see especially Thucyd., i. 8) is unanimous in representing the Carians and Phcenicians as having occupied the islands of the Augean before the migrations of the Greeks to Asia Minor, but so far as the Phoenicians are concerned this holds only of the southern islands—afterwards occupied by Dorians—where they had mining-stations, and also establishments for the capture of the murex and purple- dyeing. The most northerly of the Cyclades on which we can prove a Phcenician settlement is Oliarus (Steph., s.v.), which was occupied by Sidonians, probably with a view to the use of the marble quarries of Paros, which lies opposite. Similarly the Byblians occupied Melos (Steph., s.v.), which produced a white pigment (Melian earth), alum, and sulphur. Two great islands were held as main seats of the purple trade, Cythera (Herod., i. 105) and Thera, with the neighbouring Anaphe (Herod., iv. 147 ; Steph., s.v. " MeuBXtapos" '),—as also the town Itanus at the eastern extremity of Crete (Steph., s.v.). Specially famous was the purple of the Laconian waters,—the isles of Elishah of Ezekiel xxvii, 7. Farther east the Phoenicians were settled in Rhodes.® The Greek local tradition about the Phe- nicians seems, in Thera and Rhodes, to embody real his- torical reminiscences, and it is confirmed for Thera and Melos by the discoveries of Phceenician pottery and orna- ments in the upper strata of the tuff, and for other places by peculiar cults which survived among the later Dorian settlers. Thus the Aphrodite Urania of Cythera was identical with the Oriental goddess of love at Paphos, and Herodotus (i. 105) makes her temple to be founded from Ascalon ; the coins of Itanus (Mionnet, 11. 284 sq.) show a fish-tailed deity ; in Rhodes human sacrifices to Cronus were long kept up (Porph., De Abs., 11. 54). The legends of Rhodes and Crete have a character quite distinct from that of other Greek myths, and so give lasting testimony to the deep influence in both islands of even the most hideous aspects of

Phcenician religion; it is enough to refer in this connexion to the stories of the eight children of Helios in Rhodes, of Europa, the Minotaur, and the brazen Talos in Crete. The pre-Hellenic inhabitants of the islands, the Carians and their near kinsmen the Eteo- cretans or Mnditze (probably identical with the PHILISTINEs, q.v.), had no native civilization, and were therefore wholly under the influence of the higher culture of the Phcenicians. But on the Greeks too the Phoenicians had no small influ-

4 As an enormous supply of murex was needed for this industry, the conjecture of Duncker is probably sound, that the purple stations were the oldest of all Phoenician settlements.

5 Rodanim, 1 Chron. i. 7, by which Dodanim in Gen. x. 4 must be corrected ; see Ergias (2?) and Polyzelus, in Athen., viii. p. 360 D.

ence, as appears even from the many Pheenician loan-words for stuffs, utensils, writing materials, and similar things connected with trade! From the Phcenicians the Greeks derived their weights and measures; pva, the Hebrew maneh, became a familiar Greek word. From Pheenicia too they had the alphabet which unanimous tradition con- nects with the name of Cadmus, founder of Thebes. Hence Cadmus has been taken to mean "eastern" (from D7), and Thebes viewed as a Phoenician colony; but the Greeks did not speak Phoenician, and the Phcenicians would not call themselves Easterns. Further, an inland colony of Phoenicians is highly improbable; and all other traces seem to connect Cadmus with the north. But the Cadmeans, who traced their descent to Cadmus, colonized Thera, and it was they who, mingling with the Phcenicians left on the island, learned the alphabet. It was in Thera, where the oldest Greek inscriptions have been found, that the inven- tion of letters was ascribed to the mythic ancestor, and that he was made out to be a Pheenician. We now know better than we did a few years ago how much the oldest Greeks depended before the migrations on the movements of Eastern civilization, and can well believe that the Phe- nicians played a very important part in this connexion. Thus in the tombs of Mycenz we find Phoenician idols, objects of amber, and an ostrich egg side by side with rich jewels of gold, Oriental decoration, and images of Eastern plants and animals ; thus too the rock-

tombs of Hymettus closely resemble those of Phoenicia ; and above all we find on the Isthmus of Corinth, that most ancient seat of com- merce, the worship of the Tyrian Melkarth under the name of Melicertes. Yet with all these proofs of a lively trade there is no trace of Phoenician settlements on the Greek mainland and the central islands of the Algean; but in the north Thasus was occupied for the sake of its gold mines (Herod., vi. 47), and so probably was Galepsus on the opposite Thracian coast (Harpocr., s.v.), where also it was Phoenicians (Strabo, xiv. p. 680; from Callisthenes) who opened the gold mines of Pangeus. Beyond these points their settlements in this direction do not seem to have extended; the Tyrians, indeed, according to Ezekiel, traded in slaves and bronze-ware with the Greeks of Pontus (Javan), the Tibareni (Tubal), and Moschi (Meshech); but all supposed traces of actual settlements on these coasts prove illusory, and Pronectus on the Gulf of Astacus, which Stephanus attributes to the Phcenicians, lies so isolated that it was perhaps only a station of their fleet in Persian times.

The great centre of Phcenician colonization was the western half of the Mediterranean and the Atlantic coasts to the right and left of the straits. In especial the trade with Tarshish, that is, the region of the Tartessus (Guadal- quivir), was what made the commercial greatness of the Phoenicians ; for here they had not only profitable fisheries (tunny and murena) but above all rich mines of silver and other metals, to which the navigable rivers Guadiana and Guadalquivir gave easy access. The untutored natives had little idea of the value of the metals ; for long there was no competition, and so the profits were enormous ei: was said that even the anchors were of silver in ships re- turning from Spain (Diod., v. 35). Next the Phcenicians ventured farther on the ocean and drew tin from the mines of north-west Spain or the richer deposits of Cornwall; the tin islands (Cassiterides) were reached from Brittany, and are always distinguished from the British mainland, so that the old view which makes them the Scilly Islands 1s probably right. The tin was supposed to be produced where it was exchanged,—a very common case.2, Amber too was brought in very early times from the farthest north ; amber ornaments are often mentioned by Homer,

*1 See A. Miiller, in Beitr. z. K. d. indog. Spr., i. 278 sq. * See Lit. Centrbl., 1871, p. 528.*

Pot WoT a'

and have been found in the oldest tombs of Cumez and in those by the Lion gate at Mycenz. The Phceenicians can hardly have fetched the amber themselves from the Baltic or even from the North Sea (where it scarcely can have ever been common) ; it came to them by two trade routes, one from the Baltic to the Adriatic, the other up the Rhine and down the Rhone. But indeed a deposit of amber has been found in the Lebanon not far from Sidon,? and perhaps the Pheenicians worked this and only concealed, after their manner, the origin of the precious ware. Cer- tainly the ancients knew of Syrian amber, and knew also that amber could be dug from the ground. The rich trade with Spain led to the colonization of the west (Diod., ut supra). Strabo (i. 48) dates the settlements beyond the Pillars of Hercules soon after the Trojan War, in the time, that is, of Tyre's first expansion. Lixus in Maure- tania was older than Gades (Pliny, xix. 63) and Gades a few years older than Utica (Vell., i. 2), which again was founded 1101 B.c. (Pseudo-Arist., Aftr. ausc., 134; Bocchus, in Plin., xvi. 216). Most of the African colonies were no doubt younger; we have dates for Aoza (887-855, Men- ander) and Carthage (814, Timeus). Here, as generally in like.cases, the farthest points were settled first and the need for intermediate stations to secure connexion was felt later. The colonization was carried out on a great scale. Ophelas (Strabo, xvii. 826) may exaggerate when he speaks of 300 cities on the Mauretanian coast beyond the Pillars of Hercules; but the colonists and the Cartha- ginians after them stamped west Africa with a thoroughly Phoenician character, and their language was dominant, at least in the cities, far beyond the limits of their nation- ality, just as was the case with Latin and Arabic in later times. It is most likely that so great a mass of colonists was not wholly drawn from the narrow bounds of Pheenicia, but that the inland Canaanites, pushed back by Hebrews and Philistines, furnished many recruits; the supposed testimonies to this fact, however, are late, and certainly apocryphal.*

Surveying the great settlements of the Phcenicians from east to west, we find them first in Sicily, occupying, in a way typical of the commencement of all their settlements, projecting headlands

and neighbouring islets, from which they traded with the Siculi (Thueyd., vi. 2). Their chief seat seemingly was Macara (Hera- clides, Polit., 29), on the south coast, pd!) & on coins, Heraclea Minoa of the Greeks. Before the Greeks they retired to the north coast, where they held Motye, Panormus, and Soloeis, supported by their alliance with and influence over the Elymi, and by the neighbourhood of Carthage, which here and elsewhere succeeded to the heritage of Tyre, and gave protection to the Pheenician colonies. The islands between Sicily and Africa—Melite, with its excellent harbour and commanding position on the naval highway, Gaulus, and Cossura—were also occupied (Diod., v. 12), and a beginning was made with the colonization of Sardinia (ib., v. 35), where Caralis is said to bea Tyrian foundation (Claudian, B. Gild., 520) ; but real sovereignty over this island and Corsica was first exercised by the Carthaginians.5 It is uncertain if Phoenician trade with and influence on the Etruscans is older than the political alliance of the latter with Carthage; there were, at least, no Phenician colonies in Italy. On the east coast of Spain Barcino (Auson., Epist., xxiv. 68) and Old Carthage (Ptol., ii. 6, 64) are settlements apparently older than the Spanish empire of Carthage, but their origi is not therefore necessarily Phenician, especially as Old Carthage lies in- land ; they may date from the conflicts of Carthage and the Massa- liotes. In Tartessus, on the other hand, or Turdetania, as it was called later, all the important coast towns were Pheenician (Strabo, ili. 151, 156 sq., 169 sg. } —Abdera, Sex (which was regarded as one of the oldest of the Tyrian settlements in Spain), Malaca, Carteia, and, most famous of all, Gades, with its most holy shrine of Hercules ; it lay on an islet which had not even drinking water, but the posi- tion was a commanding one. Still farther off lay Onoba, where the Tyrians are said to have settled before they were in Gades. In Africa the most easterly settlement was Great Leptis, which is the only colony ascribed to Sidonians, driven from their home by

3 Fraas, Drei Mon. im Lib., p. 94, and Aus dem Orient, ii. 60 sq.

- *Pliny, V.H., xxxvii. 87, 40, reading with Detlefsen ex humo.*

> The Greeks of the 6th century had a very fantastic idea of the value of these islands (Herod., i. 170, v. 106, 124).

PH a Nic it A

civil tronbles (Sallust, Jug., 78), and is therefore presumably one of the oldest. Less certain are the accounts that the sister cities (ia and Sabratha were founded, the former by Phenicians from Sicily, the latter from Tyre (Sil. Ital., iii. 256 sq.). The district Emporia on the Lesser Syrtis was named from its many Pheenician trading towns. Here, on the river Cinyps, corn produced three- hundredfold, and a great trade-road led inland to the land of the Garamantes. That the commercial town of Tacape (Kabis) and the island of Meninx (Jirba), with its purple-dyeing trade, were Phee- nician is proved by inscriptions, and Capsa, in inland Numidia, was deemed a foundation of the Tyrian Hercules (Oros., v. 15). Among the Phenician towns in Africa proper Achulla was Melitan (Steph., s.v. ""AxoA\a'"'), Lesser Leptis and Hadrumetum Tyrian (Pliny, v. 76; Solin., 27, 9), as was also Aoza (Menander), that is, rather the Uzita of Strabo and Ptolemy (cp. Wilmanns on CRE» vill. 68), 55 miles inland from Leptis, than Auzia in inland Maure- tania. On the north coast Carthage and Utica are Tyrian colonies, and probably also Hippo Zarytus, though Sidon, on a coin, claims it and other Tyrian colonies as her daughters (Movers, Phénizier, ii, 2, p. 184). The unidentified town of Canthele and the island Eudeipne are called Liby-Pheenician (Steph., s.cv.), and this name in later times denoted the Pheenicians in Africa apart from and in contrast to Carthage. The Semitic populations were thickly sown over all this region, but we cannot generally distinguish Pheenician colonies, Carthaginian foundations, and native settlements that had become Punic. Chalce, on the coast east of Oran, in the country of the Masesyli, was Pheenician, but their great domain was the Atlantic coast of Mauretania. . Tingis and Zelis, if originally Berber, became thoroughly Pheenician cities (Mela, ii. 6, 9; Strabo, ili. 140); the chief colony here was Lixus (Ps.-Seylax, § 112), a city accounted greater than Carthage. Southward, on the so-called Kéd7os 'Europixés, and onwards to the mouth of the Dra river Tyrian colonies lay thick, and here a great trade-route went inland to the country of the Blacks. These colonies were ruined by the invasion of the Pharusii and Nigrita (Strabo, xvii. 826), who spread destruction just as did the Almoravids when they issued from the same region in the 11th century ; the Carthaginians saved the rem- nant of their kinsmen by sending Hanno to found the new colony of Thymiaterium and plant 30,000 Liby-Phcenicians in the old ports of Karikon Teichos, Gytte, Acra, Melitta, and Arambys. The most westerly point reached by the Phenicians was the For- tunate Island (the largest of

the Canaries, probably), which later fancy painted in glowing colours after intercourse with so distant a region had ceased (Diod., v. 20).

The trading connexions of the Phcenicians reached far beyond their most remote colonies, and it must have been their knowledge of Africa which encouraged Pharaoh Necho to send a Pheenician expedition to circumnavigate Africa, This greatest feat of ancient seamanship was actually accom- plished in 611-605 8.c., at a time when the mother-country had already lost its independence, and the colonial empire had but a shadow of its former splendour. The power of Tyre rested directly on her colonies, which, unlike the Greek colonies, remained subject to the mother-city ; we read of rebellions in Utica and Citium which were put down by arms. The colonies paid tithes of all their revenues and sometimes also of booty taken in war to the Tyrian Hercules, and sent envoys to Tyre for his chief feast. But Tyre was too remote long to exercise as effective a control over her dependencies as was possible to the more favourably placed Carthage ; the relation gradually became looser, and the more substantial obligations of the colonies ceased to be discharged ; yet Carthage certainly paid tithes to the Tyrian Hercules as late as the middle of the 6th century B.c,

Lragments of History.—Josephus (Ant., viii. 5, 3, and Ap., i. 17, 18) has fortunately preserved extracts of two Hellenistichistorians, Dius and Menander of Ephesus, which supply at least the skeleton of the history of the golden age of Tyre. From them we learn that Hiram (or rather Hirdm) I., son of Abibal, reigned from 980 to 946 B.c. He enlarged the insular town to the east by filling up the so-called evpvxwpov, united the temple of Baal-Shamaim with the main island by a mole, placed in it a golden pillar, and splendidly renewed the temples of Hercules! and Astarte. The inhabitants of Utica—so the text must be corrected

1 This is the Agenorium at the northern extremity of the island (Arr., ii. 24). Except in this point the topography of Renan (Miss. de Phén., p. 546 sq., and Pl. 1xix.) is here followed.

(Irvxatows)—having ceased to pay tribute, Hiram reduced them in a victorious expedition, after which he founded the feast of the awaking of Hercules in the month Peritius.

The Tyrian annals also mentioned the connexion of Hiram

with Solomon king of Jerusalem. The relations of Phoenj- cians and Israelites had been generally friendly before this ; it appears from Judges v. 17, Gen. xlix. 13, 20, that Asher,

Zebulon, and Dan acknowledged some dependence on Sidon, and had in return a share in its commerce; and the only

passage in the older period of the judges which represents Israelites as subject to Sidonians, and again casting off the yoke, is Judges x. 12, which perhaps refers to the time of

power of the Canaanites of Hazor (Graetz, i. 412). The

two nations drew closer together under the kings. Hiram built David's palace (2 Sam. v. 11), and also gave Solomon cedar and fir-trees, as well as workmen for his palace and temple, receiving in exchange large annual payments of oil and wine, and finally the cession of a Galilean district (Cabul), in return for the gold he had supplied to decorate the interior of the temple. The temple was quite in Phoe- nician style, as appears particularly in the two pillars Jachin and Boaz. Wemay also judge that it was Hiram's temples that led Solomon to propose to himself a similar work.2 One commercial result of the alliance with Solomon was the united expedition from Eziongeber on the Gulf of Akaba to Ophir (Malabar).3 ~The oldest known Phcenician inscription (C.Z.S., No. 5) is of a servant of "Hiram king of the Sidonians," a title which, as we have seen, 18 quite suitable for the king of Tyre. Hiram's grandson Abdas- tarte I. (929-920) was murdered by his foster-brothers, and the eldest took the regal title (920-908), but in the last twelve years of his reign he shared his throne with a scion of the old house, [Abd]Astarte IT. (908-896). His brother Astharym or Abdastharym (896-887) was murdered by a third brother Phelles, who, in turn, after a reign of but eight months, was slain by Ithobal I., priest of Astarte, whose reign (887-855) marks a return to more settled rule. Ithobal

was beloved of the gods, and his intercession put an end to a year of drought which Josephus recognized as that which is familiar to us in the history of Elijah and Ahab. In 1 Kings xvi. 31 Ithobal appears as Ethbaal, king of the Sidonians. At this time the Tyrians still continued to ex- pand mightily. Botrys in Phoenicia and Aoza in Africa are foundations of Ithobal ; the more famous Carthage owed its foundation to the civil discords that followed on the death of King Metten I. (849-820). According to the legend current in later Carthage (Justin, xviii. 4,3 – 6,9), Metten's son Phygmalion (820-773), who began to reign at the age of nine, slew, when he grew up, his uncle Sicharbas, the priest of Hercules and second man in the kingdom, in order to seize his treasures. The wife of Sicharbas was Elissa, Phygmalion's sister, and she fled and founded Carthage. Truth and fable in this legend are not easy to disentangle, but as Elissa is named also in the Tyrian annals she is probably historical.

From the time of Ithobal downwards the further progress of Phoenicia was threatened by a foreign power. The older campaigns of the empires of the Euphrates and Tigris against the Mediterranean coast had left no abiding results —neither that of the Chaldeans in 1535 or 1538 (Eus., Can., No. 481), nor that of Tiglath Pileser I. c. 1120 B.c.4

? The date 11 or 12 Hiram which Josephus gives for the building of the temple (Avdz., viii. 83, 1; Ap. i. 18) must in the Tyrian annals have referred to the cutting of wood in Lebanon for the native temples, which Josephus then misinterpretel by 1 Kings v. 620 sq.

3 So Caldwell, Comp. Gram. of Dravidian Languages, p. 66 ; Burnell, Indian Antiquary, 1872, p. 230. The decisive argument is that the Hebrew word for "peacocks" can only be the Tamil ¢é6kez [see, how- ever, OPHIR].

4 He had the control of the ships of the Aradians ; Ménant, Ann. des rots d' Assyrie, p. 50.

808

More serious was the new advance of the Assyrians under Ashurnacirpal (c. 870), when this prince took tribute from the lords of Tyre, Sidon, Byblus,

Mahallat, Maiz, Kaiz, the Westland, and the island Aradus. A king of Aradus was one of the allies of Rammanidri of Damascus whom Shalman-eser IIT. smote at Karkar in 854 ; thereafter the Assyrian took tribute of Tyre in 842 and 839, and in the latter year also from Byblus. Again in 803 Rammanniraru boasted of exacting tribute from Tyre and Sidon, but thereafter there was a respite until Tiglath Pileser IT., the real founder of the Assyrian empire, to whom Tyre paid tribute in r4l, and again along with Byblus in 738. In Tiglath Pileser's Philistine campaign of 734 Byblus and Aradus paid tribute, but a heavy contribution had to be exacted from Metten of Tyre by an Assyrian captain. For the history of Elu- leeus, who reigned in Tyre under the name of Pylas? (ce. 728-692), we have a fragment of Menander. He sub- dued a revolt of the Cittzi in Cyprus, but thereafter was attacked by Shalmaneser IV.,? to whom Sidon, Ace, Palee- tyrus, and many other cities submitted, revolting from Tyre. A new kingdom was thus formed under a king [E]luh, whose name makes it likely that he was a relative of the Tyrian prince, and who presently appears on the monu-ments as lord of Great Sidon (the same name as in Josh, xix. 28), Lesser Sidon (= Paletyrus?), and other cities, But insular Tyre did not yield, and Shalmaneser had to make a second expedition against it, for which the jealous particularism of the other Phcenician cities supplied the ships. With much inferior forces the Tyrians gained a naval victory and the king drew off. But the blockade was continued, and seems to have ended after five years in a capitulation. This siege probably began about the same time with that of Samaria, and may be dated 724-720. About 715 Ionian sea-rovers attacked Tyre and were re- pulsed by Sargon (Schrader, K.A.7., p. 169), an affair in which we may find the historical basis of such legends as that in the Cyclic Cypria, that Sidon was taken by Priam's son Alexander. {[E]luli did not prove a faithful subject; Sennacherib attacked him, and he had to flee to Cyprus, Ithobal being set in his place (701). Among the Pheeni- cian kings who appeared to do homage to Sennacherib a prince of Tyre does not appear. One sees from all this how barbarous and ill-consolidated the Assyrian power in the west was; after the retreat of Sennacherib it was even for a time seriously threatened by the Ethiopian dynasty which then held Egypt; and this may explain the revolt of Abdimilkut, king of Sidon, which was visited by Esar- haddon with the destruction of the city, the captivity of part of the inhabitants, and the execution of the rebel king (680 B.c., Ménant, p. 241 sq.). Further unsuccessful revolts of Tyre (Baal I. being

king, 662 or later) and of Aradus are recorded in the reign of Ashurbanipal; but at last the war of this monarch with his brother seems to have enabled Phcenicia to throw off the yoke without a contest (c. 650).

The Assyrians had proved their inability to create any- thing ; but their talent for destruction was brilliantly ex- hibited in Phoenicia, and the downfall of Tyre was occa- sioned, if not caused, by their intervention in the west. For what Justin (xviii. 3, 6 sq.) relates of the Tyrians, that they were so reduced in number by protracted war with the Persians that, though they were at last victorious, their slaves were able to overpower and slay them to a man, all save Straton, whom a faithful servant saved, and whom the slaves chose, on account of his wisdom, to be king and founder of a new dynasty (Abdastarte IIT.), is only to be understood by reading Assyrians for Per-

1 So Codd. Samb. Big. The name may be Pil-eser.

2 The best MSS.—Paris, 1421, and Oxon.—offer (according to a private communication of Professor Niese) traces pointing to the read- ing éwi rovrov Ledduyas.

PH @NTOra

sians.? The catastrophe must have occurred soon after the events already noticed ; and in the same period fallg the decay of the colonial power of Tyre, which we cannot follow in detail, though we can recognize some of its symptoms. After reaching the Mediterranean the Assyrians estab- lished themselves in Cyprus (709); in the Greek islands farther west the Phcenicians had before this time been gradually displaced by the Dorian migration, which, how- ever, must not be taken to be a single movement eastward in the 11th century, but a long course of colonizing ex- peditions, starting from Argos and continued for genera- tions, about which we can only say that the whole was over by the middle of the 8th century. Thasus, the most northern settlement in the Aigean, was already deserted by the Phcenicians when the father of the poet Archilochus led a Parian colony thither in 708. But the loss of the more western colonies seems to have been contemporary with the fall of Tyrian independence. About 701 Isaiah looks for a revolt of Tartessus (xxiii. 10), and the first Greek visitor, the Samian

Coleus (639), found no trace of Phcenician competition remaining there (Herod., iv. 152). These circumstances seem to justify us in under- standing what the contemporary poet Anacreon (fr. 8) says of the hundred and fifty years' reign of Arganthonius over Tartessus as really applying to the duration of the king- dom ; and as he died in 545 the kingdom will date from 695. In Sicily the Phoenicians began to be pushed back from the time of the founding of Gela (690) ; and Himera (648) and Sélinus (628) mark the limits of Greek advance towards the region on the north-west coast, which the Phcenicians continued to hold. In 654 the Carthaginians occupied the island Ebusus, on the sea-way to Spain (Diod., v. 16), a step obviously directed to save what could still be saved. Soon after this, when Psammetichus opened Egypt to foreigners (650), the Greeks, whose mental superiority made them vastly more dangerous rivals than the Assyrians, supplanted the Pheenicians in their lucrative Egyptian trade ; it is noteworthy that Egypt is passed over in silence in Ezekiel's full list of the trading connexions of Tyre.

In the last crisis of the dying power of Assyria the Egyptians for a short time laid their hand on Pheenicia, but atter the battle of Carchemish (605) the Chaldeans took their place. Apries made an attempt to displace the Chaldzans, took Sidon by storm, gained over the other cities, and defeated the king of Tyre, who com- manded the Phcenician and Cyprian fleet (Herod., ii. 161 ; Diod., 1. 68). The party hostile to Chaldea now took the rule all through Phcenicia. The new king of Tyre, Ithobal IT., was on the same side (589), and after the fall of Jerusalem Nebuchadnezzar laid siege to the great merchant-city, which was still rich and strong enough to hold out for thirteen years (587-574).4 Ezekiel says that Nebuchadnezzar and his host had no reward for their heavy service against Tyre, and the presumption is that the city capitulated on favourable terms, for Ithobal's reign ends with the close of the siege, and the royal family is subsequently found in Babylon, obviously as cards that might on occasion be played against the actual princes of Tyre. The king appointed by Nebuchadnezzar was Baal IT. (574-564), on whose death a republic was formed under a single suffet. This form of government lasted a year, and then after three months' interregnum under the high priest Abbar there were for six years

3 There was no Straton, king of Tyre, between 587 and 480; a war between Tyrians and Persians between 480 and 390 is nowhere heard of, and is highly improbable, and Straton, from what we learn of his descendants, cannot have reigned later than this.

4 See the Tyrian sources in Jos., Ap., i. 21, compared with Ezek. Ooi I Gh, sonbe, WY Ce

> See Winer's "Pfingstprogramm" : De Nebuc. exp. Tyr. ad Ez. xxvi.-xxviii. (Leipsic, 1848).

Pe aan TC iA

two suffets—presumably one for the island and one for Old Tyre—after which an elected king, Balatorus, ruled for a year (557-556). The next two kings (556-532) were brought from Babylon. Under the second of these, Hiram III., Phoenicia passed in 538 from the Chaldeans to the Persians ; at the same time Amasis of Egypt occupied Cyprus (Herod., ii. 182). There seems to have been no struggle, the great siege and the subsequent civil disorders had exhausted Tyre completely, and the city now becomes second to Sidon. Accordingly about this time Carthage asserted her independence ; the political activity of Hanno the Great, the real founder of the Carthaginian state, falls in the years 538-5211 Of Hanno it is said that he made his townsmen Africans instead of Tyrians (Dio Chrys., Or., xxv. 7). The old dependence was changed for a mere relation of piety.

Constitution As Carthage was of old a republic, and its constitution underwent many changes, it is not safe to infer from the two Carthaginian suffets that Tyre also stood in the oldest time under two such magistrates. All Canaanite analogy speaks for kingship in the several cities as the oldest form of Phcenician government. The royal houses claimed descent from the gods, and the king could not be chosen outside their members (Curt., iv. 1, 17). The land belonged to the king, who was surrounded by much splendour (Ezek. xxviii. 13), but the highly-devel- oped independent activity of the citizens limited his actual power more than in ordinary Oriental realms ; it was pos- sible for war or peace to be decided at Tyre in the king's absence, and in Sidon against his will (Arrian, ii. 15, 16; Curt., iv. 1, 16). In Tyre the high priest of Hercules was the second man in the state (Just., xviii. 4, 5),

and so the office was by preference given to a kinsman of the king. The sovereign had a council of elders, who in Sidon were in number a hundred ; of these the most distinguished were the ten First whom we find at Marathus and Carthage (Diod., ii. 628; Just., xviii. 6, 1),—originally, it may be supposed, heads of the most noble houses. The third estate was the people; the freemen, however, were much outnumbered by the slaves, as we have seen in Tyre. Under the Persians there was a federal bond between the cities, which we may suppose to be due to that great organizer DariusI. The federation comprised Sidon, Tyre, and Aradus—Sidon being chief—and contributed 300 triremes to the Persian fleet (Herod., vii. 96-99); the contingents of the lesser towns were under the command of the great cities, which probably had the rule in other matters also. This holds for Marathus, Sigon, Mariamme, which belonged to Aradus (Arr., 11. 13), even for Byblus also, which had its own kings in the Persian period, and seems from the number of its coins and inscriptions to have been very flourishing. We know the names of sixteen kings of Sidon, ten of Byblus, eight of Aradus, but none of Berytus in historical times ; presumably it formed with Byblus a single kingdom, and in later times the capital was moved to the latter. Tripolis was a bond of three cities, Sidonian, Tyrian, and Aradian, a stadium distant from one another (Diod., xvi. 41). Here sat the federal council under the kings of the three leading states, who were accompanied to Tripolis by their senators (probably 300 in all). Among the chief concerns of this council were the relations to the Persian Government, which was represented at the meetings.

Under Persian Rule.—Pheenicia, Palestine, and Syria formed the fifth satrapy, paying a tribute of £99,296. The Phoenicians were favoured subjects for the sake of

1 This date is got from Justin, who in xix. 1, 1 says of his Mago the same thing that others say of Hanno ; for the defeat spoken of in xviii. 7, 1 is the battle against the Phoczans in 538, and the war with a Spartan prince in Sicily (xix. 1, 7) is the war with Dorieus (510). Taking into account the eleven years of Hasdrubal's dictator- ship we get Hanno's date as above.

their indispensable fleet; and having also common interests against Greece they were amongst the most loyal subjects of the empire. Sidon, as we have seen, was now the chief city ; its king at the time of the expedition of Xerxes was Tetramnestus. Among his descendants was the youthful Eshmun‘azar, whose inscription on the great sarcophagus in Egyptian style now in the Louvre, taken with other notices, enables us to make out the following fragment of a genealogical table with much probability.2

Eshmun‘azar I. I . Tabnit I. 7 ashtart (priestess of Astarte).

| Eshmum azar IT. Straton I. (Bod’ashtart; C..S., No. 4).

Tabnit II. (Tévyys).

Straton IT.

Reckoning back from Straton IL, and remembering that Eshmun‘azar IT. died as a minor under the regency of his mother, we may place the death of the latter c. 400 B.c.; the gift of Dor and Japho, which he received from the great king, may have been a reward for fidelity in the rebellion of the younger Cyrus. Certainly it was not Eshmun‘azar who led the eighty ships that joined Conon in 396 (Diod., xiv. 79), an event which may have been the beginning of the friendly relations between Sidon and Athens, indicated in a decree of “ proxenia” for Straton I. (C. I. Gr., No. 87). Tyre was then quite weak ; between 391 and 386 it was stormed by Evagoras of Salamis (Isocr., Paneg., 161, and Evag., 23, 62; Diod., xv. 2), who had already made the Greek element dominant over the Phee- nician in Cyprus. Straton was friendly with Evagoras’s son Nicocles; they rivalled one another in debauchery, and both found an unhappy end through their implication in the great revolt of the satraps (Ath., xii. 531). When Tachos entered Phcenicia Straton joined him, and on his failure (361) was about to fall into the hands of the foe when his wife slew him first and then herself (Jerome, ii. 1, 311 Vall.). A new revolt of Sidon against Persia took place under Tennes II. on account of insults offered to the Sidonians at the federal diet at Tripolis. Again they joined the Egyptian Nectanebus IT., carried the rest of Phoenicia with them, and with the aid of Greek mercenaries from Egypt drove the satraps of Syria and Cilicia out of Phee- nicia. Tennes, however, whose interests were not identical with those of the citizens at large,

betrayed his people and opened the city to Artaxerxes III. The Sidonians, to the number of 40,000, are said to have burned themselves and their families within their houses (345 B.c., Diod., xvi. 41-45). Tennes himself was executed after he had served the ends of the great king. The Perzplus ascribed to Scylax (§ 104) describes the respective possessions of Tyre and Sidon in the year before this catastrophe ; Sidon had the coast from Leontopolis to Ornithopolis, an Aradus near the later Sycaminon, and Dor; Tyre had Sarepta and Exope (2) in the district of the later Calamon, farther south a town seemingly called Cirtha, and, strangely enough, the important Ascalon. Tyre now again for a short time took the first place. When, however, Alexander entered Pheeni- cia after Issus and the kings were absent with the fleet, Aradus, Byblus, and Sidon joined him, the last-named showing special zeal against Persia. The Tyrians also offered submission, but refused to allow Alexander to enter the city and sacrifice in the temple of Hercules. Alexander was determined to make an example of the first sign of opposition that did not proceed from Persian officials, and

2 See for details Gutschmid, in Jahrbb. f. Phil. vu. Pédag., 1857, p. 613 sg.

at once began the siege. It lasted seven months, and, though the king, with enormous toil, drove a mole from the mainland to the island, he made little progress till the Persians were mad enough to dismiss the fleet and give him command of the sea through his Cyprian and Pheenician allies. The town was at length forced in July 332; 8000 Tyrians were slain, 30,000 inhabitants sold as slaves, and only a few notables, the king Azemilcus, and the Cartha- ginian festal envoys, who had all taken shelter in the fane of Hercules, were spared (Arr., ii. 13, 15 sg.). Tyre thus lost its political existence, and the foundation of Alexandria presently changed the lines of trade and gave a blow per- haps still more fatal to the Phcenician cities. The Pheeni- cians thenceforth ceased to be a great nation, though under the Greeks Tyre and Sidon were still wealthy towns, the seats of rich merchants.

Sources and Helps. —The only at all continuous records of ancicnt tradition are the account of Pheenician mythology by Philo of Byblus, the extracts of the Tyrian annals by Josephus from Menander of Ephesus, and what Justin

in the 18th book of his abridgment of Pompeius Trogus has taken from Timeus. Every- thing else has to be pieced together in mosaic fashion. The chief help is Movers's unfinished work, Die Phénizicr, i., ii. 1-3 (Bonn, 1841-56), which must be compared with his article " Phoenizien," in Ersch and Gruber (1848). Both works are learned and indis- pensable, but to be used with caution wherever the author's judg- ment on his material is involved, especially in the treatment of the mythology, which is mercly syncretistic, whereas it is essential to aright understanding of this subject to distinguish the peculiari- ties of the several Semitic nations. Selden, De diis Syris (London, 1617), is still a valuable mine. The best recent contributions are those of Baudissin, Studien zur semitischen Religionsgeschichte (Leipsic, 1876, 1878). For the colonial history Bochart's monu- mental Chanaan (Caen, 1646) is not superseded even by Movers, who, as has been wittily observed, has created with the help of etymo- logy Pheenician chambres de réunion ; and, though Olshausen (N. Rhein. Mus. , 1853, p. 321 sq.) does not go quite so far, both he and Miillenhoff (Deutsche Alterthumskunde, i., 1870) follow the steps of Movers much too closcly. A good corrective is given by Meltzer (Gesch. d. Karthager, i., 1879), though he, again, is sometimes too sceptical. Movers is best on the history proper; and the admirable sketch in Grote's History of Grecce should also be consulted. See also Duncker, Gesch. des Alterthums, and Maspero, Hist. anc. de U' Orient. (A. v. G.)

Art.—Of Pheenician buildings few remains now exist on Pheenician soil; the' coast has always been, and still is, densely peopled, and the builders of successive generations, like those of the present day, have regarded ancient edifices as their most convenient quarries. Phcenician architecture had its beginning in the widening and adaptation of caves in the rocks; the independent buildings of later times, constructed of great blocks of unhewn stone, are direct imitations of such cave-dwellings. As Syrian limestone (which is the material employed) does not admit of the chiselling of finer details, the Phoenician monuments are somewhat rough and irregular. Not a vestige remains of the principal sanctuary of this ancient people, the temple of Melkart in Tyre; but Renan dis- covered a few traces of the temple of Adonis near Byblus, and a peculiar mausoleum, Burj al-Bezzak, still remains near Amrit (Marathus). It may also be conjectured that the conduits of Ras al-Ain, south of Tyre, are of ancient date. Various notices

that have come down to us render it probable that the Phcenician temples, in the erection of which great magnificence was undoubtedly displayed, were in Many respects similar to the temple at Jerusalem ; and confirmatory evidence is afforded by the remarkable remains of a sanctuary near Amrit, in which there is a cella in the midst of a large court hewn out of the rock, and other buildings more of an Egyptian style. In the domain of art originality was as little a characteristic of the Pheenicians as of the Hebrews ; they followed foreign and especially Egyptian models. This influence is mainly evident in sculptured remains, in which Egyptian motifs such as the Ureeus frieze and the winged sun-disk not unfrequently

occur. It was in the time of the Persian monarchy that Phoenician art reached its highest development ; and to this period belong the oldest remains, numismatic as well as other, that have come down to us. The whole artistic movement may be divided into two great periods: in the first (from the earliest times to the 4th century B.C.) Egyptian influence is predominant, but the national Pheenician element is strongly marked; while in the second Greek influence has obtained the mastery, and the Pheenician element, though always making itself felt, is much less obtrusive. In the one period works of art, as statues of the gods and even sculptured sarcophagi, were sometimes imported direct from Egypt (such statues of the gods have been found even in the western colonies) ; in the other Greek works were procured mainly from Rhodes. The Pheenicians also adopted from the Egyptians the custom of depositing their dead in sarcophagi. The oldest examples of those anthropoid stone coffins are made after the pattern of Egyptian mummy-cases ; they were painted in divers colours, and at first were cut in low relief ; afterwards, however, towards and during the Greek period, the contours of the body began to be shown in stronger relief on the cover. Modern excavations show that, besides stone coffins (in marble or basalt), which indeed cannot be considered the oldest kind of receptacle, the Phoenicians employed coffins of wood, clay, and lead, to which were often attached metal plates or, at times it may be, decorations in carved wood. Embalming also seems to have been frequently practised as well as covering the body with stucco. Great care was bestowed by the Pheeni-clans on their burial-places, and their cemeteries are the most important

monuments left to us. The tombs are subterranean chambers of the most varied form: the walls and roof are not always straight ; sometimes there are two tiers of tombs one above the other, often several rows one behind the other. While in early times a mere perpendi- cular shaft led to the mouth of these excavations, at a later date regular stairs were constructed. The dead were deposited either on the floor of the chamber (often in a sarcophagus) or, according to the later custom, in niches. The mouths of the tombs were walled up and covered with slabs, and occasionally cippi were set up. The great sepul- chral monuments (popularly called maghdzil, "spindles 4 which have been found above the tombs near Amrit are very peculiar: some are adorned with lions at the base and at the top with pyramidal finials. Besides busts (which belong generally to the Greek period), the smaller objects usually discovered are numerous earthen pitchers and lamps, glass wares, such as tear-bottles, tesserze, and gems. Unrifled tombs are seldom met with.

Literature.—For topography and art, see Renan, Mission de Phénicic (Paris, 1846); for language, Schroder, Dic phénizische Sprache (Halle, 1869), and Stade in Morgenléndische Forschungen

(1875, p. 167); and for inscriptions, Corp. Inscr. Sem. (Paris, 1881, and following years). (A. SO.)

PHQENIX. Herodotus (ii. 73), speaking of the animals in Egypt, mentions a sacred bird called "phoenix," which he had only seen in a picture, but which the Heliopolitans said visited them once in five hundred years on the death of its father. The story was that the phcenix came from Arabia, bearing its father embalmed in a ball of myrrh, and buried him in the temple of the sun. Herodotus did not believe this story, but he tells us that the picture represented a bird with golden and red plumage, and closely resembling an eagle in size and shape. The story of the pheenix is repeated with variations by later writers, and was a favourite one with the Romans. There is only one pheenix at a time, says Pliny (W./, x. 2), who, at the close of his long life, builds himself a nest with twigs of cassia and frankincense, on which he dies ; from his corpse is generated a worm which grows into the young

phoenix. The young bird lays his father on the altar in the city of the sun, or burns him there, as Tacitus has it (Ann., vi. 28). The story of the birth and death of the pheenix has several other forms. According to Horapollo (ii. 57) he casts himself on the ground and receives a wound, from the ichor of which the new pheenix springs ; but the most familiar form of the legend is that in the Physvologus, where the phoenix is described as an Indian bird which subsists on air for 500 years, after which, lading his wings with spices, he flies to Heliopolis, enters the temple there, and is burned to ashes on the altar. Next day the young pheenix is already feathered; on the third day his pinions are full-grown, he salutes the priest and flies away. The period at which the phcenix re- appears is very variously stated, some authors giving as much as 1461 or even 7006 years, but 500 years is the period usually named; and Tacitus tells us that the bird was said to have appeared first under Sesostris, then under Amasis, again under Ptolemy III., and once more in 34 A.D., after an interval so short that the genuineness of the last phoenix was suspected. The phoenix that was shown at Rome in the year of the secular games, a.u.c. 800, was universally admitted to be an imposture.}

The form and variations of these stories characterize them as popular tales rather than official theology ; but they evidently must have had points of attachment in the mystic religion of Egypt, and indeed both Horapollo and Tacitus speak of the phoenix as a symbol of the sun. Now we know from the book of the Dead and other Egyptian texts that a bird called the "bennu" was one of the sacred symbols of the worship of Heliopolis, and Wiedemann (Ztsch. f. Aeg. Sprache, xvi. p. 89 sq.) has made it toler- ably clear that the bennu was a symbol of the rising sun, whence it is represented as "self-generating" and called "the soul of Ra (the sun)," "the heart of the renewed Sun." All the mystic symbolism of the morning sun, especially in connexion with the doctrine of the future life, could thus be transferred to the bennu, and the lan- guage of the hymns in which the Egyptians praised the luminary of dawn as he drew near from Arabia, delighting the gods with his fragrance and rising from the sinking flames of the morning glow, was enough to suggest most of the traits materialized in the classical pictures of the Phoenix. That the bennu is the prototype of the phenix is further confirmed by the fact that the former word in Egyptian means also "palm-tree," just as the latter does in Greek. How far the Egyptian priests

translated the symbolism of the bennu into a legend it would be vain to conjecture ; that the common people did so is only what we should expect ; and it is to be observed that the monu- ments have not yet shown any trace of the element in the classical legend which makes the phcenix a prodigy instead of a symbol—its actual appearance at long intervals. The very various periods named make it probable that the periodical return of the phoenix belongs only to vulgar legend, materializing what the priests knew to be symbolic. The hieroglyphic figure of the bennu is that of a heron

(bennu, or ne bah), and the gorgeous colours and plumed head spoken of by Pliny and others would be least inappropriate to the purple heron (Ardea purpurea),

1 Some other ancient accounts may be here referred to. That ascribed to Hecatzus is, in the judgment of Cobet (Jfnemosyne, 1883), stolen from Herodotus by a late forger. The poem of the Jew Ezechiel quoted by Eusebius (Prep. Ev., ix. 29, 30) appears to refer to the phoenix. Here the sweet song is first mentioned,—a song which, according to the poem on the phenix ascribed to Lactantins, accom- panies the rising sun. The bird is often spoken of in Latin poetry, and is the subject of an idyl by Claudian. See also Solinus, cap. xxxiii., with Salmasius's Exercitationes; Tertullian, De resur. carnis, c. 88; Clemens Rom., Hp. i. ch. xxv.

S11

with which, or with the allied Ardea cinerea, it has been identified by Lepsius and Peters (Aelteste Texte des Todten- buchs, 1867, p. 51). But it must be remembered that the bennu in the Egyptian texts is really a mere symbol, hav- ing the very vaguest connexion with any real bird, and the golden and purple hues described by Herodotus may be the colours of sunrise rather than the actual hues of the purple heron. How Herodotus came to think that the bird was like an eagle is quite unexplained ; perhaps this is merely a slip of memory.

Many commentators still understand the word bin, chél, in Job xxix. 18 (A.V. "sand"') of the phenix. This interpretation is per- haps as old as the (original) Septuagint, and is current with the later Jews, whose appetite for fable, however, is often greater than their exegetical sagacity. Compare

Eisenmenger's Entdecktes Juden- thum, vol. i. passim. Among the Arabs the story of the phcenix was confused with that of the salamander; and the samand or samandal (Damiri, ii. 36 sq.) is represented sometimes as a quad- ruped, sometimes as a bird. It was firmly believed in, for the incombustible cloths woven of flexible asbestos were popularly thought to be made of its hair or plumage, and were themselves called by the same name (comp. Yakut, i. 529, and Dozy, s.v.). The

'anka (Pers. simurgh), a stupendous bird like the roc (rukh) of

Marco Polo and the Arabian Nights, also borrows some features of the pheenix. According to Kazwini (i. 420) it lives 1700 years, and when a young bird is hatched the parent of opposite sex burns itself alive. In the book of Kalilah and Dimnah the simur or 'ank4 is the king of birds, the Indian garida on whom Vishnu rides.

PHGENIXVILUE, a borough in the United States, in Schuylkill township, Chester county, Pennsylvania, is situated 274 miles north-west of Philadelphia by the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad, on the right bank of the Schuylkill river, which is there joined by French Creek, crossed by eight fine bridges. Phoenixville is best known as the seat of the blast-furnaces and mills of the Phoenix Tron Company, which had its origin in a rolling and slitting mill erected in 1790 by Benjamin Longstreth, and long ranked as the largest in the States. The works cover 150 acres and employ sometimes 2500 men. Pheenixville also contains a pottery, a sash and planing mill, a shirt-factory, and needle works ; and iron, copper, and lead are all mined in the neighbourhood. The vicinity of the borough is noted for its large number of magnificent iron bridges. The population was 2670 in 1850, 4886 in 1860, 5292 in 1870, and 6682 in 1880.

PHONETICS (74 qdwvytixd, the matters pertaining to the voice, @wv7) is the science and art of the production of sounds, including cries, by means of the organs of speech in man and their analogues in other animals.

This very extensive subject may be divided into the following three parts. (1) Anatomical, the accurate descrip- tion of all the organs employed, emissive (lungs, with the muscles acting on them, trachea, larynx, pharynx, mouth and its parts, nose and its passages, with its closing valve the uvula)

and receptive (the ear, external and internal, and parts of the brain with which the auditory nerve com- municates). As all voice-sounds are produced by imita- tion, defects in the receptive organs entail defects in the action of the emissive. The congenitally deaf are conse- quently mute. (2) Physiological, the co-ordinated action of the parts just referred to in hearing and uttering sounds, and especially expiration and inspiration, with laryngeal, oral, and nasal actions, and the relation of these actions to the will (on these see Voicr). (3) Acoustical, with especial reference to the action of double membranous reeds, as in the glottis; the effects of resonance chambers, both fixed and variable in shape and size, open and closed, single and combined, and of the passage of air, more or less in a state of sonorous vibration, through tubes of variable lengths and widths, with walls of variable hardness, and with or without the interposition of semi-viscous fluids, as well as of flapping, smacking, or vibrating parts, and of other obstructions ; also investigations into the nature, pro-

duction, and appreciation of qualities of tone, and their gradual but rapid gliding one into another, as well as into the nature of sympathetic vibration, not only of the differ- ent cavities filled with air in the organs of speech but of the solid bony parts, and also the softer cartilages, sinews, and muscles connecting and supporting them. This part of the subject, which is far from having been fully investi- gated at present, has two main subdivisions—(a) musical, regarding the nature and properties of musical sound, and especially song, with their varieties due to force, pitch, and quality, as partly investigated in Helmholtz's Sensations of Tone ; (6) rhetorical, regarding the mechanism of speaking as distinct from singing, the blending and differentiation of qualities of tone, partly musical and partly unmusical, with constantly variable and ill-defined pitch and force, influenced by feeling; this subdivision embraces speech in particular, its special sounds for conveying thought and feeling, with their constantly-shifting characters, and also eries of joy and pain, as well as, properly speaking, the cries of the lower animals by which they communicate with those of the same kind; hence it comprehends also language, elocution, and philology in their fundamental constitution.

In a more restricted sense, applied solely to human be- ings and to articulate significant sounds (that is, exclusive of cries of pain and pleasure, or the inarticulate and often unconscious noises of snoring, snuffling, gargling, pant- ing, laughing, crying, sobbing, sneezing, and the like), the term "phonetics" is used to designate a work on the enu- meration, evaluation, relations, classification, analysis, and synthesis of SpEEcH-Sounps (q.v.),—that is, of the sounds actually used in speech for conveying and recording thought by different nations and tribes, together with a means of fixing them by visible signs. The alphabet has followed speech-sounds with very halting steps. It is only in quite recent times that sufficient knowledge of the nature of speech has been obtained to enable us in some measure to understand and unravel the mysteries of the old enigmatic forms, and thus to construct a securer basis for philology than the guesses on which it once rested.

In a still more restricted and popular sense the term "phonetics" has been recently used for attempts to construct a new practical alphabet for English or other individual languages, or for several such languages simultaneously, with a view either of superseding the alphabets at present in use, or of improving their employment, or, at any rate, of facilitating the generally very difficult tasks of teaching and learning to read and write. Attempts of this kind are by no means recent: witness Loys Meigret, Traité touchant le commun usage de Vescriture francoise (1545) ; Sir Thomas Smith, De recta et emendata lingux Anglice seriptione (1568) ; J. Hart, An orthographie, conteyning the due order and reason, howe to write or punte thimage of mannes voice, most like to the life or nature (1569) ; [William] Bullokars Booke at large for the Amendment of Orthographie for English speech (1580); Alexander Gill (master of St Paul's school, London, when Milton was there), Logonomia Anglica: qué gentis sermo facilins addis- ctur (1619 and 1621); Charles Butler, The English Grammar, or the Institution of Letters, Syllables, and Words m the English tongue (1633). All these works are more or less printed in the orthography proposed, and each orthography is different. They are described and illus- trated in A. J. Ellis's Karly English Pronunciation, parts 1, and ni. It is, however, not necessary in this place to go beyond attempts made by persons still living. In 1847, after three years of experiments, Isaac Pitman and Alexander John Ellis

brought out their phonotypy, consisting of twenty-three old types and seventeen new ones, with which, among much other matter, the Bible

PH O—

eae ae

and the Phonetic News newspaper were printed in 1849, and extensive experiments were made, showing that read- ing in this alphabet could be rapidly taught, and that when children had learned to read phonotypy well they could easily learn to read in ordinary spelling. The new letters were subsequently much and frequently altered in meaning by Pitman, who in 1884 still produced a Phonetic Journal weekly in his present phonotypy. Very numerous forms of phonotypy, following either the old or the new edition, have also appeared in America. Many other systems have been tried by accenting, italicizing, supernumbering, or diacritically marking the letters to make the ordinary letters of English spelling convey their sounds. Almost every new "pronouncing dictionary" has its own method. This last plan has been, on the whole, successfully applied for teaching to read by many writers. In order to avoid new types, or even accented letters, and yet have a practical phonetic alphabet for English and its dialects, Ellis prefixed to part iii. of his Barly English Pronunciation (1871) an account of "Glossic, a new system of spelling intended to be used concurrently with the existing English orthography, in order to remedy some of its defects without detracting from its value." This has been extensively used by the English Dialect Society and in Ellis's works on Pro- nunciation for Singers (1877) and Speech in Song (1878), in which it is fully explained and used in complete: practical accounts of the phonology of English, German, French, Italian, and Spanish. Henry Sweet, in his Handbook of Phonetics (Oxford, 1878), proposed his " Broad Romic," admitting, however, a few inverted letters. Subsequently, the English Spelling Reform Association was started, and great numbers of new attempts at phonetic alphabets for English only were made, which will be found described and illustrated at full length in W. R. Evans's Spelling Experimenter and Phonetic Investigator (2 vols., September 1880 to April 1883). There is also an American spelling reform association. But neither association has as yet agreed upon a new alphabet. In 1881 the Philological Society of London approved of certain " partial

correc- tions of English spelling" submitted by Sweet, and these are more or less used in the Proceedings of that society, as edited by Sweet, and are generally approved by the American association, but they are not by any means an entirely phonetic scheme. In the books referred to, and particularly Evans's, the whole of this special branch of the subject of phonetics, so far as English is concerned, may be sufficiently examined. AT) PHORMIUM, or New Zeananp Fuax (also called "New Zealand hemp"), is a fibre obtained from the leaves of Phormium tenax (ord. Liliacee). The plant is a native of New Zealand, the Chatham Islands, and Norfolk Island ; it is now cultivated as an ornamental garden-plant in Europe, and for economic purposes it has been introduced into the Azores. The leaves grow from 3 to 6 and even 9 feet in height and from 2 to 3 inches in breadth, spring- ing from the extremity of a rhizome. After the tuft of leaves has continued growing for about three years a flower- ing stalk springs up to the height of about 16 feet, and when it comes to maturity the whole plant dies down. Meantime, however, lateral branches or fans have been given off from the main rhizome, and thus the life of the plant is continued by stem as wellas seed. Phormium has been treated as a cultivated plant in New Zealand, though only to a limited extent, and with no promising results ; for the supplies of the raw material dependence has been principally placed on the abundance of the wild stocks and on sets planted as hedges and boundaries by the Maoris. Among these people the fibre has always been an article of considerable importance, yielding cloaks, mats, cordage,

fishing-lines, &c., its valuable properties having attracted the attention of traders even before colonists settled in the islands. The leaves, for fibre-yielding purposes, come to maturity in about six months, and the habit of the Maoris is to cut them down twice a year, rejecting the outer and leaving the central immature leaves. Phormium is prepared with great care by native methods, only the mature fibres from the under-side of the leaves being taken. These are collected in water, scraped over the edge of a shell to free them from adhering cellular tissue and epidermis, and more than once washed in a running stream, followed by renewed scraping till the desired purity of fibre is attained. This native process is exceedingly wasteful, not more than one- fourth of the leaf-fibre being thereby utilized.

But up till 1860 it was only native-prepared phormium that was known in the market, and it was on the material so carefully, but wastefully, selected that the reputation of the fibre was built up. The troubles with the Maoris at that period led the colonists to engage in the industry, and the sudden demand for all available fibres caused soon afterwards by the Civil War in America greatly stimulated their endea- vours. Machinery was invented for disintegrating the leaves and freeing the fibre, and at the same time experiments were made with the view of obtaining it by water- retting and by means of alkaline solutions and other chemical agencies. But the fibre produced by these rapid and economical means was very inferior in quality to the product of Maori handiwork, mainly because weak and un- developed strands are, by machine preparation, unavoidably intermixed with the perfect fibres, which alone the Maoris select, and so the uniform quality and strength of the material are destroyed. No means have yet been devised for producing by mechanical or chemical means fibre in the perfect condition it shows when selected and prepared by Maoris. Phormium is a cream-coloured fibre with a fine silky gloss, capable of being spun and woven into many of the heavier textures for which flax is used, either alone or in combination with flax. It is, however, principally a cordage fibre, and in tensile strength it is second only to Manila hemp ; but it does not bear well the alternations of wet and dry to which ship-ropes are subject. It is largely used as an adulterant of Manila hemp in rope-making, and recently it has come into use as a suitable material for the bands of self-binding reaping-machines. Between 1864 and 1876 there were exported from New Zealand 26,434 tons of phormium, valued at £592,218; in 1881 the exports were 1307 tons, of the value of £26,285.

PHOSPHORESCENCE, a name given to a variety of phenomena due to different causes, but all consisting in the emission of a pale more or less ill-defined light, not obviously due to combustion. The word was first used by physicists to describe the property possessed by many substances of themselves becoming luminous after ex- posure to light. Such bodies were termed " phosphori," 'and the earliest known appears to have been barium sulphide, which was discovered by Vincenzo Cascariolo, a cobbler of Bologna, at the beginning of the 17th century. See PuospHorus. Subsequently, when certain animals were observed to be similarly endowed, the word " phos- phorescent" was applied to them also. It is clear, how-

ever, that the light derived from previous exposure to light, which thus becomes, as it were, stored up, is hardly comparable with that which is produced by living proto- plasm and evidently under the control of the nervous system. It has been suggested that. this' latter should have a special name appropriated to it, and here it will certainly be convenient to divide the subject into two heads in accordance with this distinction.

A. PHospHORESCENCE IN MinERALS.—In addition to the phosphorescence after insolation already alluded to

813

(see Licur, vol. xiv. p. 603) many minerals exhibit this property under other circumstances : (2) on heating to a temperature much below what is known as "red heat" (fluorspar, lepidolite, quinine)—this being often attended with a change in molecular structure or in specific heat ; (0) on friction, as in the case of fused calcium chloride (Homberg's phosphorus) ; (c) on cleavage, a property mani- fested by mica, the two split portions becoming electrified— the one positive, the other negative ; (d) on crystallization, as boracic acid after fusion, or water on rapid freezing.!

A few meteorological phenomena may here be mentioned. Rain has been seen to sparkle on striking the ground, and waterspouts and meteoric dust have presented a luminous appearance. The cynis fatuus, or will-o'-the-wisp, seen in marshy districts, has given rise to much difference of opinion: Kirby and Spence suggest that it may be due to luminous insects; but this explanation will certainly not apply in all cases, and it is perhaps on the whole more reasonable to believe that the phenomenon is caused by the slow combustion of marsh gas (methyl hydride).

B, PHosPHORESCENCE IN Orcanisms.—The vegetable kingdom has furnished few instances of the property under consideration ; the earliest on record took place in the year 1762, when a daughter of Linnzeus saw luminous emana- tions from a species of 7"ropzolum, since which time a like appearance has been noticed in Helianthus annuus, Lilium bulbiferum, Calendula officinalis, Tagetes patula, and T. erecta, all of which are red or orange-coloured flowers. A few cryptogams have been seen to shine-in the dark, €.g., Schistostega osmundacea among the liverworts ; Rhizo- morpha

subterranea, Fungus igneus in Amboyna, and other fungi in Brazil and Italy ; and the mycelium (thread-like fibres) of other species growing in decayed wood is also occasionally luminous. There are also a number of small marine phosphorescent organisms? (Pyrocystis, Peridinium), concerning which it is impossible to say with certainty whether they should be referred to the animal or the vege- table kingdom. But the most brilliant as well as the most varied and interesting cases of phosphorescence belong to the animal world, and there is not one of the larger groups which does not furnish some instances of it.

Nature of the Light.—The light emitted by different animals varies very much in colour: green has been noticed in the glow-worm, fire-flies, some brittle-stars, centipedes, and annelids ; blue is seen in the Italian fire- fly (Luciola italica) ; and this and light green are the pre- dominant colours exhibited by marine animals, although the beautiful Girdle of Venus and some species of Salpa and Cleodora appear red, and Pavonaria and other gorgonoids

lilac. The curious lantern-fly (Pulgora pyrorhynchus) has a purple light. One very remarkable instance is mentioned

of an Appendicularia in which the same individual appeared first red, then blue, and finally green.? In comparatively few cases has the light been examined by the spectroscope. Panceri states that in every instance observed by him it was monochromatic, the spectrum consisting of a continu- ous band without any separate bright lines; in Pholas this band extended from the line E of the solar spectrum to a little beyond F; in Umbellula, examined on the voyage of the " Challenger," it was sharply included between the lines 6 and D.5*

Luminous Organs.—In the lowest forms of life and in

1 Phipson, Phosphorescence, London, 1862.

2 Ehrenberg, Das Leuchten des Meeres, 1835, and in Abhandl. k. Akad. Wiss., Berlin (1834), 1836.

3 Giglioli, “La Fosforescenza del Mare,” in Bollet. d. Soc. Geog.- Geol. Ital., 1870.

4 Numerous papers in Atti Accad. Sci. Fis. e Mat., Naples, 1870- 78, and abstr., Ann. Sci. Nat., ser. 5, vol. xvi., 1872.

® Thomson, Voyage of the Challenger: the Atlantic, London, 1877, WO th Jo, LED,

many jelly-fish there seem to be no organs specially set apart for the production of light, this being emitted from the whole surface of the body; but even in the latter group a degree of specialization is found, for in some it is only the marginal sense-organs, in others the radial canals and ovaries, that are luminous. In other groups of animals the localization of the photogenic property in certain organs or tissues is universal, and these present the utmost variety in structure and situation. In the sea-pens (Pennatula) every polyp has eight luminous bands on the outer surface of the stomach ; when the colony is touched the light com- mences at the point irritated and then spreads to other portions. Pyrosoma, a colonial free-swimming ascidian, has two small patches of cells at the base of each inhalent tube; the cells have no nucleus, but contain a material which appears from its chemical relations to be fatty ; as in Pennatula, the light spreads from the irritated point. In the transparent pelagic molluse (Phyllirrhoe) there are rounded cells connected with the nerve-twigs from which, as also from the ordinary cells of the nerve-ganglia, the light emanates. Several annelids (Chetopterus, Tomopteris) have luminous organs at the bases of lateral processes of the body. The rock-boring mollusc (Pholas), whose phos- phorescent properties were known as long ago as the time of Pliny, has three distinct luminous organs—(1) a curved band along the anterior border of the mantle, (2) two small triangular patches at the entrance of the anterior siphon, and (3) two long parallel cords situated within this latter ; these are all covered with ciliated epithelium, like that of other parts of the mantle, but having granular contents.1 The glow-worm (Lampyris splendidula) has been investi- gated by Max Schultze ;? he finds that the male has a pair of organs in each of the two segments preceding the last in the abdomen ; each organ consists of a

pale transparent superficial layer, which gives off the light, and a deep opaque layer, whose function is less obvious, but which may serve as a reflector. Quite recently Emery‘ has examined the Italian fire-fly, in which both male and female are luminous.*

of a very brilliant display of this phosphorescence during the “ Triton” expedition in the Faroe Channel.

Many deep-sea fish possess round shining bodies im- bedded in the skin, either in the vicinity of the eye or along the sides of the body ; some of these resemble modi- fied eyes, whilst the structure of others recalls a glandular organ without the usual duct,® and it is supposed that some or all of these are luminous organs, the lens in the former group acting as a bull’s eye (see IcHTHYOLOoGY, vol. xii. p. 684).

Dead and putrescent animals are not unfrequently phos- phorescent ; this fact has most commonly been observed in fish, though instances are not wanting in which the pro- perty has been manifested by molluscs and other animals, and even by the human body. Furthermore, a few startling but apparently well-authenticated instances are on record in which human beings have been luminous while yet alive owing to certain states of disease.”

Causes of Phosphorcscence.—On this head it is at present impos- sible to write with certainty ; it seems likely, however, from the variety of the effects produced by different chemical and physical agents, that the causes are manifold. In many instances light is only emitted after stimulation, either mechanically, chemically (by fresh water, milk, ammonia), or by electricity, though there are cases in which this last has no effect whatever. The fact that the nervous systein is so often closely connected with the luminous organs indicates that the exhibition of the light is either dependent on the volition of the animal or is the reflex result of the stimula- tion of sensory nerves (Panceri). In the glow-worm the distribu- tion of trachez (air-tubes) throughout the photogenic apparatus, and the fact that carbonic acid extinguishes the light while oxygen in- tensifies it, suggest that it is due to some form of slow combustion, while the fatty contents of the luminous cells

of this and many other animals point to the probability that a fat containing free phosphorus is the active agent in the process. Since a large num- ber of luminous organs retain their power after the death of the animal, and even after desiccation and subsequent moistening, there seems no necessity to adopt the theory that we have to deal with an instance of the direct transformation of vital into radiant energy.

The well-known phosphorescence of the sea is due to the animals which inhabit it, except in a few cases in which it has been ascribed to putrescent matter. This was known as long ago as 1749, when Vianelli® discovered in the waters of the Adriatic a luminous animal- cule which was named by him Nerevs noctiluca, and was probably the creature now known as Noctiluca miliaris. This minute animal swarms in countless myriads on the surface of the sea not very far from land, and is the commonest cause of its diffuse luminosity, although other low forms of life such as Peridiniwm (Ceratium) contribute in no small degree ; and in mid-ocean another organism, Pyrocystis, which has often been mistaken for Noctiluca, appears to replace it, and is very abundant. The brilliant sparkling phos- phorescence morc rarely seen is caused by the presence of copepods and other small surface crustaceans.

Uses of Phosphorescence.—The service rendered by this property to its possessors is in many cascs by no means obvious ; indeed it would seem certain that to crustacean larve and other surface- organisms surrounded by voracious enemies phosphorescence must be a "perilous gift." It is possessed by so many anthozoa and jelly-fish, which have also stinging organs, that fish have perhaps learned to shun instinctively all phosphorescent animals; fishermen state that fishes avoid nets in which phosphorescent AMfcduse# have become entangled ; if such be the case, it would be possible for animals otherwise defenceless to obtain protection by acquiring this property. A similar hypothesis has been propounded with respect to the Italian fire-fly,?° although, as regards the glow-worm, it has been generally believed that the light serves to attract the opposite sex, and the same has been stated with respect to the earth-worm. The fact that so many deep-sea animals are phosphor- escent, coupled with the discovery that many fish from those regions have large and normally-developed eyes whilst others have organs which appear to be adapted for the production of

light, has led to the belief that this source of light becomes of great importance in the depths of the ocean where no sunlight penetrates,—an hypothesis which is known as the "abyssal theory of light." | (W. E. HO.)

1 Panceri, op. cit.

2 "Zur Kenntn. d. Leuchtorgane v. Lampyris splendidula," in Archiv f. mikr. Anat., vol. i., 1865.

3 Heinemann, "Unters. ii. d. Leuchtorgane d. b. Vera Cruz vor- komm. Leuchtkafer," in Archiv J. mikr. Anat., vol. viii., 1872.

- *Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., vol. xl., 1884.*

5 Narrative of the " Challenger" Expedition, vol. i. 1885.

F Ussoff, Bull. Soc. Imp. Nat. Moscow, vol. liv. part i. p. 79,

1879.

? Phipson, op. cit.

8 Nuove Scoperte intorno alle Luci notturne dell' Acqua marina, Venice, 1749.

® Verrill, in Nature, vol. xxx. p. 281, 1884.

0 Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., xl., 1884.

PH®pPHOR US

PHOSPHORUS anp PHOSPHATES. "Phosphorus " (pwspdpos, light-bringer) had currency in chemistry as a generic term for all substances which shine in the dark without burning, until the name came to be monopolized by a peculiar kind of ' phosphorus" which was discovered, some time previous to 1678, by the German alchemist Brand of Hamburg. Brand, hoping to obtain thereby an essence for the "ennobling" of silver into gold, sub- jected urine-solids to dry distillation. In lieu of the hoped-for essence he obtained as part of the distillate a wax-like, easily fusible solid

which, besides being phos- phorescent, readily caught fire, to burn with a dazzling light into a white solid acid. The new phosphorus natur- ally excited universal interest ; but it was, and remained, only a rather costly chemical curiosity until Scheele, in 1771, starting from the discovery of Gahn that bone-ash is the lime-salt of a peculiar non-volatile acid, proved that this acid is identical with the one formed in the com- bustion of phosphorus, and that the latter, being only "phlogisticated" bone-ash acid, can be obtained from it by distillation with charcoal at a high temperature. This method of Scheele's is used to the present day for the manufacture of phosphorus, and even the theoretical notion on which it rests is recognized as correct as far as it goes, anhydrous bone-ash acid being a compound of phosphorus with oxygen the formation of which involves the liberation of part of the energy (" phlogiston ") of each in the kinetic form of heat. That phosphorus is an elementary sub- stance was originally a surmise, which, however, has been confirmed by all subsequent experiences. In compara- tively recent times it was found that Brand's phosphorus is susceptible of passing (by mere loss of energy) into two allotropic modifications, known as "red" and " metallic" phosphorus respectively, so that the name " phosphorus" has again come to assume a generic meaning, being used for these three substances and the element as such conjointly.

Manufacture.—¥or the manufacture of ordinary phos- phorus any kind of phosphate of lime might be used, and in fact mineral phosphates are used occasionally, though as a rule the bones of domestic animals are employed as a raw material. Such bones (apart from a large percent- age of water and a small admixture of fats and other subsidiary organic components) consist essentially of two things, namely, (1) osseme—a nitrogenous organic com- pound, insoluble in water, but convertible by long treat- ment with hot water into a solution of '" glue"—and (2) an infusible and incombustible part,—the two being united together (perhaps chemically) into a cellular tissue. The following analysis of the humerus of an ox gives an idea of the constitution of the second part and its ratio to the whole.

Phesphate of lime, P,O;8C20…:.....0.20.: 61°4

Phosphate of magnesia, P,0,3Mg0O …..... 17

(Gar Morar OnOlplIMG ss, cote. tee cue e oqeteestaaeees SiG efile

(OSS 3B cosSpteeSonce ene a encR ne aera ncmeren Maeerrcnec one 28°3 100°0

The percentages, however, in bones generally are sub- ject to great variation. When bones are heated to red- ness in the absence of air the organic part is destroyed, and there remains ultimately a cellular tissue of bone- phosphate impregnated, so to speak, with finely-divided charcoal. This black residue, known as " bone-black," is used largely for the decoloration of sugar-syrup, and, after having been exhausted in this direction, forms a cheap niaterial for the manufacture of bone-ash and con- sequently of phosphorus ; but, as a rule, the phosphorus- manufacturer makes his bone-ash direct from bones, by burning them in a furnace (constructed and wrought pretty much like a limekiln) between alternate layers of coal.

The burned bones (which retain their original shape)

815

are ground up into granules of about the size of lentils, and these are then placed in a wooden tank coated inside with lead, to be decomposed by means of about their own weight of chamber-acid, 7.¢., sulphuric acid containing about 60 per cent. of real H,SO,. To accelerate the action the bone-meal is mixed with boiling water previous to the addition of acid, and steam may be passed into the magma when its temperature threatens to fall too low. The acid readily decomposes the carbonate of the bone- ash, and then acts, more slowly, on the phosphate, the process being completed in about twenty-four hours; and the result, in regard to the latter, is that about two-thirds of the phosphate are decomposed into sulphate of lime (gypsum), which separates out as a precipitate, and phos- phoric acid, which unites with the residual one-third of the phosphate and the water into a solution of superphos- phate of lime—

2H,0

P30; CaO =F xAq.

To eliminate the gypsum the mass is diluted with water, allowed to settle, and the solution drawn off with lead syphons, then the residue is washed by decantation, and ultimately filtered off through a bed of straw contained in a cask with a perforated bottom. The spent heat of the distillation-furnace is utilized to concentrate the united liquors to about 1°45 specific gravity, when a remnant of gypsum separates out, which must be removed. The clari- fied liquor is then mixed with about one-tenth of its weight of granulated charcoal, and the whole evaporated in an iron basin until the mass is sufficiently dry to be passed through a copper sieve and granulated. The granules are heated cautiously over a fire, to be dehydrated as far as possible without loss of phosphorus (as phosphuretted hydrogen) ; and the dry mass is then transferred to fire- clay retorts—either pear-shaped with bent-down necks, or cylinders, about 18 inches long and 4 inches in diameter, with straight necks—arranged within a powerful furnace. The condensers are made of earthenware, and must be so arranged that loss of phosphorus by combustion is avoided as far as possible; its condensation takes care of itself. One construction is to give the condenser the form of a bell-jar resting in a saucer containing water ; lateral orifices in the bell serve to couple every two bells into one, to unite each with its retort-neck, and to send the vapour (of phosphuretted hydrogen, carbonic oxide, and other poisonous gases) into a chimney, where they take fire spontaneously, and the products are carried away by the draught. While the condensers are being adjusted the fire is kindled and raised very slowly, but ultimately forced up to the highest temperature which the retorts can stand, and maintained at this pitch until the appearance of the flames of the escaping vapours proves the absence from them of phosphorus, free or combined. This takes from thirty-six to forty-eight hours. The reduction- process, though in reality very complex, is in its principal features easily understood. Theacid-phosphate behaves as if it were a mere mixture of 2x P,O,+4 x P,0,3CaO (bone-phos- phate). The quasi-free acid (2P,0;) is reduced by the charcoal with formation of carbonic oxide and phosphorus- vapour, one-third of the phosphorus remaining in its original form of bone-phosphate.

The distillation of phosphorus is rather a dangerous operation, because the connecting pipes at the condensers are apt to get blocked up with frozen phosphorus, and consequently must be cleared from lime by copper or iron wires being pushed through them (at a certain risk to the operator). Another

difficulty is that, although a retort may be quite whole in the ordinary sense, it may, and asa rule does, admit of the perspiration of phosphorus-vapour. To render retorts as nearly as possible impermeable to the

vapour they are being provided with two or three coats of some kind of cement, such as a mixture of slaked lime and borax, or a magma of clay, horse-dung, and water. In the collecting and further manipulation of the phosphorus the dangerous inflammability of the substance demands that all operations be conducted under water.

As soon as the retorts have cooled down sufficiently the condensers are detached and their tubuli bunged up to prevent access of air to the inside. The necks of the retorts are knocked off and thrown into water to save the phosphorus which has condensed within them and to unite it with that of the condensers. From the analysis of the ox-bone quoted we calculate that its ash contains 17°6 per cent. of phosphorus, of which two-thirds (= 11°7 per cent.) should be recoverable as free phosphorus ; according to Fleck, the yield of phosphorus is 8 per cent., while Payen puts it down at 8 to 10 per cent. But this crude phos- phorus is largely contaminated with blown-over bone-ash and charcoal and with "red" phosphorus. Its purifica- tion used to be effected everywhere by melting it under water of about 60° C., and pressing it through chamois leather by means of a force-pump. In certain French works porous fireclay serves as a filtering medium, while superheated steam supplies at the same time the necessary heat and pressure. By the addition of coarsely-powdered charcoal to the phosphorus the clogging-up of the pores of the fireclay septum is precluded. A more effectual method of purification is to re-distil the crude (or perhaps the previously filtered) phosphorus from out of cast-iron retorts, the necks of which dip half an inch deep into water contained in a bucket. A chemical method of purification is that of Bottcher, who fuses the crude phos- phorus (100 parts) under water, with addition of 3°5 parts of oil of vitriol and 3°5 parts of bichromate of potash. The phosphorus passes, with a feeble gas-evolution, into an almost colourless liquid, with a loss of only 4 per cent. of its weight, as against the 10 to 15 per cent. unavoid- ably involved in the distillation process. To bring the purified phosphorus into the traditional

form of sticks it is fused under water and sucked up into slightly conical glass tubes about two-fifths of an inch wide and a foot long; the tubes are closed below with the finger and immersed in cold water to cause the contents to freeze. The solid stick is then pushed out by means of a rod, and cut into pieces with a pair of scissors. For emission into commerce the sticks are put into cylindrical wide-necked glass bottles, or into tin canisters, full of water, which latter had better be mixed with a sufficiency of alcohol or glycerin to prevent freezing (and bursting) in winter time.

Seubert, about 1844, invented an ingenious apparatus for the continuous casting of phosphorus-sticks, consisting of a funnel-shaped vessel of copper, terminating below in a long horizontal copper tube, the outer end of which lies within a tank full of cold water. The phosphorus is placed in the funnel, covered with water, and the whole up to the cold-water tank raised (by means of a water-bath and steam-pipes) to a suitable temperature, matters being ar- ranged so that the phosphorus freezes just on arriving at the exit end of the tube. The workman then catches the protruding button of phosphorus and pulls out an endless stick, which is cut up into pieces of the desired length. This ingenious apparatus, however, has not been found to work satisfactorily, and has been given up again in favour of some form of the old method. The loss of one-third of the phosphorus contained in the bone-ash, which is unavoid- ably involved in the ordinary method of phosphorus- making, can be avoided, according to Wéhler, by adding finely-powdered quartz to the mixture which goes into the retorts. The superphosphate is then completely decom- posed with formation of a residue of silicate, instead of

phosphate, of lime. An improvement by Fleck aims at the utilization of the organic part of the bones. He pro- poses to recover the fat from the bones by boiling them with water and then the gelatin by digesting them in

hydrochloric acid of 1:05 specific gravity. The gelatin

remains in a coherent form; the phosphate passes into solution as mono-calcic salt, which is recovered by evapora- tion in crystals and then reduced by distillation with charcoal. None of these (and other) proposals have been

much heeded ; the manufacture of phosphorus at present, in fact, is almost a monopoly, the bulk of what occurs in commerce being produced by two firms, viz., Albright and Wilson of Oldbury, near Birmingham, and Coignet and Son in Lyons. According to E. Kopp, the production. in 1874 amounted to 1200 tons.

Recently purified phosphorus is a slightly yellowish or colourless solid of about the consistence of beeswax. At low temperatures it is brittle ; specific gravity = 1°83 at 10°C. It fuses at 44°°3 C. into a strongly light-refracting liquid of 1-743 (Kopp) specific gravity. Neither in the solid nor in the liquid state does it conduct electricity. When heated further (in an inert atmosphere such as hydrogen or carbonic-acid gas) it boils at 290° C., and assumes the form of a colourless vapour which at 1040° C. is 4°5 times as heavy as air or 65:1 times as heavy as hydrogen, whence it follows that its molecular weight is 2 × 65°1 = 130°2 = very nearly four times the atomic weight of phosphorus (31:0). Phosphorus is insoluble in water, more or less sparingly soluble in alcohol, ether, fatty oils, and oil of turpentine, and very abundantly soluble in bisul- phide of carbon. When exposed to the air, and especially to moist air, it suffers gradual oxidation into phosphorous and phosphoric acids with evolution of a feeble light. Phos- phorus does not phosphoresce in the absence of oxygen. Singularly, it does not phosphoresce in pure oxygen either, unless the tension of the gas be reduced to some point considerably below one atmosphere (Graham). Phosphorus is a most dangerous poison; doses of as little as 0°1 gramme (=1°5 grains) are known to have been fatal to adults. The heads of a few lucifer matches may suffice to kill a child. Phosphorus is used chiefly for the manu- facture of lucifer matches (see MatcHEs, vol. xv. pp. 625, 626) and also in the manufacture of iodide of methyl and other organic preparations used as auxiliary agents in the tar-colour industry. Phosphorus-paste, made by working up a small proportion of phosphorus melted under water in a hot mortar with flour, is used as poison for vermin.

Red Phosphorus.—A red infusible solid which is always produced when ordinary phosphorus is made to burn in an insufficient supply of air, and also by the long-continued action of sunlight on phosphorus-sticks kept under water, used to be taken for a lower oxide of the element, until A. v. Schrotter of Vienna showed, in 1845, that it is nothing but an allotropic

modification of the elementary substance. A given mass of ordinary phosphorus can be converted alinost completely into the red modification by keeping it at 240° to 250° C. in the absence of air for a sufficient time. The addition of a trace of iodine to phosphorus at 200° C. brings about the conversion suddenly with large evolution of heat (Brodie). Red phosphorus is now an article of chemical manufacture. The phos- phorus is simply heated, and kept at the requisite temperature, within a large iron pot which communicates with the atmosphere by only a narrow pipe. At a very slight expense of the material the air within the apparatus is quickly deoxygenated and con- verted into (inert) nitrogen. The requisite steady temperature is maintained by means of a bath of molten solder. By the mere effect of the heat the phosphorus becomes more and more viscid and darker and darker in colour, and is at last completely con- verted into a dark-red opaque infusible solid. This, however, always includes a small proportion of the ordinary modification, which is most readily extracted by powdering the crude product and exhausting it with bisulphide of carbon, which does not affect the red kind. A less expensive method is to boil the powdered raw product with successive quantities of caustic-soda ley, when the ordinary phosphorus only is dissolved as hypophosphite with evolution of phosphuretted hydrogen. The residue is washed and

dried and then sent out in bottles or canisters like any ordinary chemical preparation. It is not at all affected by even moist air, nor by aerated water, hence it is neither phosphorescent nor poisonous. When heated in air to about 260° C. it begins to pass into the ordinary modification and consequently burns, readily enough, into the same phosphoric acid P.O, as ordinary phosphorus does. But its combustion-heat amounts to only 5070 Centigrade- units per unit-weight of fuel as against the 5953 units produced in the combustion of ordinary phosphorus. The balance of 883 units is the equivalent of the surplus of energy contained in the yellow as compared with the red modification. This accounts for the relative chemical inertness of the latter. The specific gravity of red phosphorus is 2-089 to 2-106 at 17°C. ; its electric conduct- ive power is about -000,000,1 of that of silver wire (Matthiesen). It is used in making safety-matches.

Metallic Phosphorus.—This, discovered by Hittorf, is obtained by heating ordinary phosphorus with lead in sealed-up tubes to redness for forty hours. After removal of the lead by nitric acid metallic phosphorus remains, partly in the shape of dark re- splendent plates, partly in the form of microscopic rhombohedra. It requires a temperature of 358° to be converted into ordinary phosphorus-vapour. The specific gravity is 2°24 at 15° C.

Detection of Phosphorus.—The detection of (ord.) phosphorus in medico-legal cases offers no difficulty as long as the phosphorus has not disappeared by oxidation. In the case of a mass of food or the contents of a stomach the first step is to spread out the inass on a plate and view it in the dark. A very small admixture of phosphorus becomes visible by its phosphorescence. Failing this, the mass is distilled with water from out of a glass flask connected with a glass Liebig's condenser in a dark room. The minutest trace of phosphorus suffices to impart phosphorescence to the vapours at some stage of the distillation. Should this second test fail we must search for phosphorous acid, which may be there as a product of the oxidation of phosphorus originally present as such. To test for phosphoric acid would be of no use, as salts of this acid are present in all animal and vegetable juices and tissues. Phosphorous acid, if present, can be detected by treating the mass, in a properly constructed gas-evolution appa- ratus, with pure hydrochloric acid and zinc. The hydrogen gas evolved must be purified by passing it over pieces of solid caustic potash, and inade to stream out of a narrow platinum nozzle. If the reagents are pure and phosphorous acid is absent the gas burns with a colourless flame, which remains so even when depressed by means of a porcelain plate; in the presence of phos- phorous acid the gas contains phosphuretted hydrogen, which causes the flame of the gas to exhibit a green core, at least when depressed by means of a porcelain plate. The test is very delicate, but in interpreting a positive result it must be remembered that it applies likewise to hypophosphorous acid, and that certain salts of this acid are recognized medicinal agents.

*Of all phosphorus compounds ortho-phosphates are the com- monest, and they can be detected by the tests given below under '*Phosphates." All other phosphorus compounds, when fused with carbonate of alkali and nitre, or heated in sealed-up tubes with strong nitric acid to a sufficient*

temperature, are changed so that the phosphorus assumes the form of ortho-phosphoric acid, which is easily detected. Either of the two operations named (by the mere action of the alkali or of the acid qua acid) converts what may be present of meta-phosphoric or pyro-phosphoric into ortho-phosphoric acid.

LPhosphor-Bronze.—This name has been given to a class of useful metallic substances produced by the chemical union of either pure copper or of copper alloys with phosphorus. Most commercial copper is contaminated with a small proportion of its own sub- oxide, which, in the casc of an otherwise pure metal, detracts from its tenacity and plasticity ; and all ordinary bronze is subject to a similar contamination, because, whatever kind of copper may have been used in making it, the tin is sure to suffer partial oxidation, and some of this oxide, as Montefiori- Levi and Kiinzel found, remains diffused throughout the casting, and diminishes its homo-geneity and solidity. Experience shows that both in the case of copper and bronze the oxygen prescnt as metallic oxide can be re- moved by introduction into the fused metal of a judiciously limited proportion of phosphorus, which takes out the oxygen (and itself) into the slag as phosphate, and thus produces a purcly metallic and consequently superior metal. A small excess of phosphorus in either case effects further improvement. A phosphor-copper con- taining 0°1 to 0°5 per cent. of the non-metallic element has all the plasticity of the pure metal coupled with higher degrees of hard-

ness and solidity. An alloy of from 0°5 to 2°0 per cent. gives good .

castings, because, unlike the pure metal, it does not form blisters on solidifying. In the case of phosphorized bronze the presence of somewhat more than 0°5 per cent. of phosphorus (in the finished alloy) produces a warmer tone of colour (more gold-like than that of the plain alloy), a finer grain (similar to that of steel), a higher degree of elasticity, and a higher breaking-strain. The latter may be more than double that of the corresponding plain bronze. By

increasing or diminishing the proportion of phosphorus the mechan- ical properties of a phosphor-bronze can be modified at will, within wide limits. it lends itself particularly well for the casting of artistic or orna- inental articles. is best effected by fusing it with the proper proportion of a rich phosphor-copper.

of phosphorus can phosphorus ("phosphorus mass") is made by mixing superphos- phate of lime with 20 per cent. of charcoal, and dehydrating the Inixture at a dull red heat. mixed with 975 of copper-turnings and 75 of charcoal, and kept at copper-fusion heat for sixteen hours within a graphite crucible. The phosphor-copper is obtained in the form of detached granules, which are picked out, re-fused, and cast out into cast-iron moulds, Phosphor-bronze has only come to be popularly known during the last decade or two; mingham took out a patent for phosphoriferous metallic alloys.

By its fine colour and its perfect fluidity when molten The introduction of phosphorus into the metal

A phosphor-copper containing about 9 per cent. be produced as follows. A kind of potential

Six hundred parts of this mass are

but as early as 1848 A. & H. Parkes of Bir-

Phosphuretted Hydrogens. —Of these threc are known, namely, (1)

phosphine,-a gas of the composition and specific gravity PH,, (2) a volatile liquid of the composition and vapour-density P,H,, and (3) a yellow solid of the liquid compound (No. 2) at once takes fire when it comes into contact with air, and a small admixture of its vapour to any inflam- mable gas, such as coal-gas, renders the latter self-inflammable. The most important and best known of the three hydrides is phosphine, PH. acid is heated—thus, 4PH,0,=3PH,0,+PH;; also when phos- phorus is being dissolved in hot solutions of caustic potash, soda, or baryta,

probable composition P,H,. The

This gas is formed when (syrupy) phosphorous

4P +3(KHO + H,0)=3PH,KO, +PH,; Hypophos- phite.

also by the action of water on the phosphides of highly basilous metals. The gas evolved by any of these processes is impure ; that obtained by the second or third invariably includes vapour of ile and consequently is self-inflammable. obtained only by decomposing solid iodide of phosphonium with

Pure phosphine can be

concentrated caustic potash-ley in a suitable gas-cvolution bottle

previously filled with hydrogen to avoid explosions. It is a colour- less gas, smelling intensely like putrid fish, and very poisonous. It is slightly soluble in water, and takes fire in air only beyond 100° C.

It may be mixed with pure oxygen without change ; but when the mixture is suddenly expanded it explodes violently. Notwith- standing its analogy to ammonia (NH;), phosphine is only very feebly basic. It unites with gaseous hydriodic or hydrobromic acid into solid phosphonium salts PH,(I or Br); but these are both decomposed by water into the respective acids and phosphine. Pure phosphine is little known ; chemists are more familiar with the (impure) gas which is evolved when "phosphide of calcium" is thrown into water, and which, containing vapour of P,H,, at once catches fire when it bubbles out of the water into the air, with formation of steam and a smoke of meta-phosphoric acid, which latter, in a still atmosphere, assumes the form of an exquisite vortcx-ring. During the last decade or so this reaction has come to be pretty extensively utilized in navigation for producing a light on the surface of the sea at night, in case of accidents, and for other purposes. A British patent for this useful application of phosphide of calcium was granted (as No. 1828) to the agent of Silas and Pegot Ogier of Paris on the 8th of August 1859, but allowed to lapse in 1863, to be subsequently wrought by others. The manufacture of the phosphide is now (1884) being chiefly carried on by one firm (in Warrington, England), and through the courtesy of their chemist, Mr W. G. Johnston, the writer is enabled to give the following details. The preparation of the phosphide is

effected within a crucible standing on a support within a furnace, and divided by a perforated false bottom into two compartments. The lower is charged with pieces of phos- phorus, the upper, up to the closcly-fitting lid, with fragments of quicklime. The firing is conducted so that the lime is red hot before the phosphorus, through the radiation and conduction of the heat applied above, begins to volatilize. A charge yielding 20 Tb of product is finished in from five to eight hours. The reaction is very complex, but it is easy to see through its general course ; part of the phosphorus deoxidizes lime with formation of P,O;, which unites with other lime into phosphate, and of calcium, which combines with other phosphorus into phosphides. Of the latter, PCa seems to predominate, and consequently the product, when thrown into water, should yield chiefly the hydride P,H,; but this latter very readily breaks up into phosphine and solid hydride P,H. The crude phosphide forms a brown stone- like mass, which must at once be secured in air-tight receptacles. But most of it is immediately worked up into "lights" of various kinds, of which the "life-buoy light" may be selected as an example. It consists of a cylindrical tinned-iron box, the upper half of which is taken up by an inverted hollow box, which serves as a float when the light is in the water. The lower half contains

me 16 oz. of fragments of phosphide of calcium. T Rails portions of Me top and bottom respectively consist of soft metal (lead). These are pierced with an appended pricker before the apparatus goes overboard along with the buoy, to which it is attached by means of a cord. The water penetrates through the lower hole and the gas comes out through the upper and burns with a brilliant flame, which is from 9 to 18 inches high and lasts for about half an hour. A larger similar contrivance, intended to be accommodated within a bucket full of water on deck, serves as an inextinguishable night-signal to ships in distress. By the British Merchant Shipping Act, 1876, Vict. 21, every sea- going passenger-steamer and every emigrant-ship must be provided with arrangements for inextinguishable distress- lights and life-buoy lights. In the British navy a peculiar form of the phosphide of caicium light is used in connexion with torpedo-practice. :

Phosphorus Bases.—This is a generic name for organic bases which are related to phosphine (PH,), as the "compound ammonias"' are to NH,. Sce CHEMISTRY, vol. V. Pp. 516 sg.; also METHYL, vol. xvi. p. 197. Tri-ethyl phosphine P(C,H,)3, a colourless sclf-inflammable liquid, readily unites with bisulphide of carbon into a red crystal- line compound, and consequently is available as a dclicate reagent for the detection of the vapour of this compound in coal-gas.

PHOSPHATES.

" Phosphates," in chemistry, is a generic term for the salts formed by the union of the acid-anhydride P,O, with bases or water or both. As explained in CHEMISTRY (vol. v. pp. 517, 518) there are three classes of phosphates customarily distinguished by the prefixes ortho, pyro, and meta, The last two nowhere occur in nature, and are hardly known to the arts ; hence in this article only the ortho- compounds will be noticed, and their specific prefix will be dropped except where it is needed for definiteness. Combined phosphoric acid is universally diffused throughout the three kingdoms of nature, and (it is perhaps as well to add) to the practical, if not absolute, exclusion of all other phosphorus compounds. All organic tissues and juices contain it: of animal matters boncs and blood- solids, of vegetable the sceds of cereals, may be referred to as being exceptionally rich in phosphates. Of mineral phosphates the follow- ing may be here referred to :—pyro-

morphite, 3(P,0;.3PbO) + PbCl., where the chlorine may be replaced partially by fluorine; wavellite, 2(Al,0,.P,0;) + Al,0;3H,0 + 9Aq (this is a crystalline mineral ; an amorphous or massive phosphate of alumina, known as "rotondo- mineral," occurs asa large deposit ona West Indianisland); vivianite, P,0;3Fe0 +8H,0. All these and any others that might be named are rare minerals compared with apatite and its derivatives.

Apatite. —This exists in a variety of forms, but, as long as unde- composed, always answers the formula 3(P,0;.3CaO)+(CaX,). In the fluor-apatites the X, is wholly F, (fluorine) ; in the chlo-apatites it stands for (Cl,, F)., 7.¢., chlorine and fluorine coming up conjointly to two equivalents. See vol. xvi. p. 407.

Phosphorites. —Phosphorite is the name given to many impure forms of amorphous or massive apatite, modified morc or less by disintegration. It occurs (a) in massive, irregular, corroded-looking nodules embedded in limestone or other kinds of soft rock near Amberg (Bavaria), in Baden, Wiirtemberg, the Weser hills, and in the Teutoburger Wald, and contains from 40 to 80 per cent. of phosphate and up to 3 per cent. of fluoride of calcium ; the phos- phorite nodules in the sandstone of Kursk and Voronezh, the "South Carolina phosphate," and the "Lot phosphate" belong to the same category. It is met with (6) in more or less extensive beds, as '"'kidneys," as stalactites, or as a connective ceinent in breccias ; such phosphorite, of which large quantities are found in the Lahn valley, generally contains only from 25 to 60 per cent. of phosphate of lime, and includes large percentages of clay or marl, and more or less of the phosphates of iron and alumina. Another variety is © black phosphorite slate. A deposit contain- ing 20 per cent. of P,O; occurs in the Coal-measures of Horde (Westphalia), also in Wales; an earthy deposit is found in the "braunkohle" of Pilgramsreuth in the Fichtelgebirge. Phosphorite is also found (d) in veins, as a stone of very varying structure, generally intermixcd with quartz,—for instance at Logrosan in Estremadura (65 to 80 per cent. of phosphate and up to 14 per cent. of fluoride of calcium), also in the Silurian slate of the Dniester.

Coprolites.—According to Buckland, coprolites are derived from the excrements of extinct animals. They consist of highly impure phosphate of lime. All native phosphate of calcium being fluor- iferous, we need not wonder at the constant occurrence of traces of phosphates in the bones of vertebrate animals; the wonder is that the fluorine in these amounts to only '005 per cent.}

Preparation. —For the preparation of phosphates the oxide P,O; affords a natural starting-point. This substance is produced when phosphorus burns in an abundant supply of oxygen or air. Appa- ratus for the convenient execution of the process on a preparative scale are described in the handbooks of chemistry. Phosphoric anhydride forms a snow-white, loose, inodorous powder, which,

1 Some books (Nicklés) quote as high : Pe wee a gh percentages as 1 or 1°5, but these are

Two small | when heated in a hard glass tube to redness, sublimes slowly. It

is extremely hygroscopic. When thrown into water it hisses like a red-hot iron and passes into the meta-acid, most of which, in spite of its abundant solubility, separates out as a sticky precipitate, which is rather slow in dissolving. It is the most energetic of all dehydrating agents; even sulphuric acid, when distilled with an excess of it, suffers dehydration, and passes into SOs. The pre- paration is liable to be contaminated with red phosphorus and phosphorous anhydride (P,0s), also with 'white arsenic," because most commercial phosphorus, being made by means of pyrites-vitriol, is arseniferous. A freshly-prepared solution of the anhydride in water, being one of the meta-acid, coagulates albumen (as HNO, does) and gives a white precipitate with nitrate of silver. But, when the solution is allowed to stand, the dissolved meta-acid gradually passes into pyro-acid (P,0,;2H,O), and this latter again gradually passes into ortho-acid (P,0;3H,0), the highest hydrate. At a boiling heat, especially if a little nitric acid be added, the whole of the dissolved P,O; is converted into ortho-acid in the course of one or two hours. The solution then does not coagulate albumen ; it gives no precipitate with nitrate of silver unless the mixture be

neutralized with an alkali, when a yellow precipitate of the salt P,0;.3Ag,0 comes down. The aqueous ortho-acid, when evaporated at temperatures not exceeding 160° C., and ultimately dried at this temperature, leaves its substance P,0,;.3H,0 as a thick syrup, which, when left to itself in a dry atmosphere, slowly freezes into crystals. At 215°C. the ortho-acid loses one-third of its water and becomes pyro-acid ; at a red-heat it is reduced to a "glass" of meta-acid, P,O;H,O, which retains its water even at the highest temperatures. The substance known in pharmacy as "acidum phosphoricum glaciale" is very impure meta-acid.

Ortho-Phosphoric Acid, H,PO,.—The synthetical method de- scribed in the last paragraph is not so easy in practice as it appears on paper ; hence it is generally preferred to prepare this substance by the oxidation of ordinary phosphorus with nitric acid. An acid of 1°2 specific gravity works best ; weaker acid acts too slowly ; if stronger it may act with dangerous violence. One part of phos- phorus is placed in a large tubulated, retort, connected with an ordinary globular receiver, and treated therein, at a carefully regu- lated heat, with ten or twelve parts of the acid. When about half the acid has distilled over, it is poured back and the opera- tion resumed and kept on until all the phosphorus is dissolved. The excess of nitric acid is then distilled over as far as conveniently possible and thus recovered. Towards the end of the distillation afresh gas-evolution sets in through the conversion of previously produced phosphorous acid (H3PO;) into phosphoric. The residual liquid in the retort is now poured out into a Berlin porcelain (or, what is bettcr, a platinuin) basin, and, if it still contains phosphor- ous acid, fully oxidized by evaporation with occasional addition of strong nitric acid. Phosphorous acid, if present, is easily detected by the following tests: (1) its solution, when mixed with nitrate of silver and excess of ammonia, gives a black precipitate of metallic silver ; (2) when heated with a solution of corrosive sublimate, HgCl, it produces a white precipitate of calomel, HgCl; (8) when heated to boiling with excess of aqueous sulphurous acid it gives a precipitate of sulphur, or, if arsenious acid is present, of sulphide of arsenic. When the final oxidation is accomplished the acid needs only be freed of the remnant of nitric acid by repeated evaporation with water to be ready for use if arsenic be absent. Asa rule, however, this impurity is present and must be renioved by diluting the acid, passing in sulphuretted hydrogen first at 70° C., and then in the cold, and

allowing to stand for twenty-four hours, when all the arsenic is converted into sulphide, which, after elimination of the excess of sulphuretted hydrogen by continued exposure to air at a gentle heat, is filtered off. In practice, as a rule, the filtrate is being concentrated to some predetermined specific gravity and preserved as aqueous phosphoric acid, which preparation is official, and used besides for the cleansing of metallic surfaces, in lithography, and for other purposes. The British pharmacopceia prescribes for the official acid a strength corresponding to 10 per cent. of P,O;.

Hager has published a complete table showing the dependence of the specific gravity, taken at 17°°5 C., on the strength of the

acid. From it the following is extracted.

Spec. Grav. Percentages of Spec. Grav. Percentages of POs. H3P04 P20s. H3P04

1809 68-0 93°7 1:271 30°0 41°3

1677 60°0 82°7 1°218 25°0 34°4

1521 50°0 68°9 1°169 20°0 276

1°448 45°0 62°0 ie.) 15°0 20°7

1383 40°0 55-1 1-079 10°0 13°8

1°325 35°0 48°2 1-037 50 6:9

Aqueous phosphoric acid has all the properties of a decided acid, but, for a mineral acid, the exceptional qualities of an agreeably sour taste and of non-poisonousness. Phosphoric is the only mineral acid which might be uscd as a condiment in place of vinegar

PH O—PH O

or citric acid ; but the writer is far from recommending the substi- tution. Professor Gamgee has made the very surprising discovery that meta-

phosphoric and pyro-phosphoric, although so closely allied to ortho-phosphoric acid, are poisons, as phosphorous acid is.

Phosphoric acid readily combines with and neutralizes alkalis, even when these are given as carbonates. The concentrated acid, when heated in porcclain or glass, strongly attacks either material ; hence its concentration ought always to be effected in platinum. In former times, when phosphorus was expensive, the acid, or rather an apology for the same, used to be prepared from bone-ash.

Alkaline Phosphates.—Of these the di-sodic salt is of the greatest practical importance. It is prepared by somewhat more than neutralizing the hot aqueous acid with carbonate of soda. A cheaper (manufacturing) process is to prepare a solution of "super-phos- phate" from bone-ash by the action of vitriol, and, after elimination of the gypsum, to supersaturate the liquid with carbonate of soda and filter off the phosphate of lime produced (see p. 815 swpra, where the process is explained indirectly). The salt, from sufficiently strong hot solutions, separates out in large transparent crystals of the composition PO,HNa,+12H,0, which lose their crystal-water on exposure to dry air, even at ordinary temperatures, and very quickly at 100°C. The residue, PO,HNa,=3(P,0,.2Na,0.H,0), when heated to redness, loses its remnant of water and becomes pyro-phosphate, which latter retains its specific character on being dissolved in water. A solution of the (original) salt in water has a mild taste (hence its preferential application as a pleasant purga- tive) ; it colours red litmus-paper intensely blue, and does not act upon alkaline carbonate. But, when evaporated with the calculated proportion of carbonate of soda (Na,CO; per P,O,) to dryness at, ultimately, a red heat, it yields a residue of tri-sodic salt (PO,Nag) as a white mass, infusible at the highest temperature producible within a platinum crucible over a glass blowpipe. The solution of this salt in water has all the properties of a mixed solution of PO,Na,H+Na0OH ; yet it is capable of depositing crystals of the composition PO,Nag+12H,O. The mono-sodic salt (PO,H,Na), producible by mixing together solutions containing the quantities H,PO, and Na,HPO,, is of no importance. Of the three potash salts, the mono-metallic salt (PO,KH,) is the most readily produced. It forms beautiful anhydrous quadratic crystals which at a red heat lose their H,O and become meta-phosphate, PO,K.

Ammonia Salts.—A strong solution of the acid, when super- saturated with ammonia, deposits on cooling crystals of the di- ammonic salt PO,NH,).H, liable to be contaminated with the mono-ainmonic salt. The tri-ammonic salt is very unstable, and hardly known.

The double salt PO,NH,)NaH+4H,O was known to the al- chemists as "sal microcosmicum urine," and is interesting his- torically as having served Brand as a raw material for the mak- ing of phosphorus. It is easily prepared, either by mixing the solution of the two quantities PO,Na,HPO, and PO,(NH,),HPO, together and allowing to crystallize, or by dissolving the former along with NH,Cl parts of sal-ammoniac in water, and removing the chloride of. sodium produced by crystallization in the heat. Microcosmic salt, when heated to redness, leaves a viscid glass of meta-phosphate of soda, which dissolves all basic metallic oxides pretty much as fused borax does, with formation of glasscs which often exhibit colours characteristic of the dissolved oxides. Hence its application in blowpipe analysis. ;

Phosphates of Lime.—The normal salt P,0;.8CaO or PO,cas, where ca=4Ca=one equivalent of calcium, or perhaps a compound of it and carbonate of lime, forms the predominating component of bone-ash. A hydrate of the salt is produced by precipitating chloride of calcium solution with excess of ordinary phosphate of soda, mixed with enough of ammonia to produce (virtually) tri- alkaline salt, as a gelatinous precipitate similar in appearance and behaviour on filtration to precipitated alumina. A suspension of this precipitate in water, when mixed with a carefully adjusted quantity of hydrochloric acid, gradually passes into a mass of mnicroscopic crystals of di-calcic salt, POca,H+axAq, which latter is used medicinally. A solution of the di-calcic or tri-calcic salt, in the proper proportion of hot aqueous hydrochloric acid, deposits on cooling crusts of crystals of the mono-calcic salt PO,H,ca, which is soluble in about 700 parts of cold water, but is decomposed, by hot water or by prolonged contact with a proportion of cold water insufficient to dissolve it, into free acid and a precipitate of di- calcic salt, 2PO,caH,=PO,H3+PO,ca,H. A very impure form of this salt, known as "superphosphate," enters into the composition of many artificial manures. Such superphosphate is made in- dustrially by treating broken-up bones, or powdered bone-ash, or powdered phosphorite, or coprolitc, or occasionally apatite with chamber-acid, meaning vitriol of

about 60 per cent., as it coimes out of the chamber. The phosphate is mixed with the acid ina lead-lined trough by means of machinery, when a rather lively reaction scts in, involving the evolution of vaponr of water mixed with hydrofluoric acid, and fluoride of silicon if mineral phosphate is used, possibly also with traces of fluoride or chloride of arsenic, and, in any case, with stinking volatile organic substances. The

vapour, therefore, must be removed by means of suitable draught arrangements. The mass passes from the trough intoa (ventilated) chamber, where the reaction gradually accomplishes itself with ulti- mate formation of a porous friable mass, dry to the touch. This is superphosphate as it goes out into commerce or is used asan ingredi- eut in making more complex manures. Its value is determined chiefly by its percentage of "soluble phosphoric acid," meaning the percent- age of P,O;, extractable as PO,H; or PO,caH, by a certain large proportion of cold water. This percentage is liable to decrease on long-continued storing, especially in the case of mineral superphos- phate, through a gradual formation of (or regeneration of origin- ally present) phosphate of iron and alumina, partly, perhaps, also through the spontaneous decomposition of some of the mono-calcic salt into insoluble di-calcic salt and free acid. The portion of the P,0O; which has thus become insoluble is designated "reduced " phosphoric acid. In regard to other phosphates than those named reference may be made to the handbooks of chemistry. Analysis.—Phosphoric acid, when given in any form, soluble in solution of ammonia, can be detected and determined by " magnesia mixture " (a solution of chloride of magnesium and sal-ammoniac, MgCl, . 2NH,Cl, strongly alkalinized by addition of aqueous am- monia). The phosphoric acid is very gradually, but at last completely, precipitated in microscopic crystals of the salt PO,MgNH,+6H,0, which, though slightly soluble in water, can be washed pure, with- out loss, with dilute ammonia. All other acids except arsenic acid (As,0O;)—which behaves like phosphoric, and, if present, must be removed by sulphuretted hydrogen—remain dissolved. The precipi- tate, when kept at a red heat, assumes the composition P,O;2Mg0, and from the weight of the ignited precipitate that of the phos- phoric acid present is easily calculated. Phosphates soluble in acids, and reprecipitated from their solutions as such

by ammonia—as phosphate of lime or aluimina, or ferric oxide—used to give great difficulties to the analysts until Sonnenschein founded an excellent quantitative method for their analysis upon a reaction discovered by Swanberg and Struve, which is explained under MotyspENUM (vol. xvi. p. 697). The phosphate is dissolved in nitric acid (hydrochloric is less to be recommended) and the solution mixed, and kept for some hours at 40° C., with a large excess ofa solution of molybdate of ammonia in excess of nitric acid. The phosphoric acid (along with any arsenic acid that may be present) comes down as yellow crystalline phospho-molybdate of ammonia, soluble in phos- phoric acid and slightly in water, but insoluble in diZute nitric acid in the presence of a sufficiency of nitrate of ammonia. The precipitate is soluble in aqueous ammonia, and from the solution its P,O, can be precipitated by magnesia mixture as above explained. Neither of the two methods applies directly to meta-phosphates or pyro- phosphates. Regarding these, see the last paragraph of the section "phosphorus " above. (OV Ds)

PHOTIUS, patriarch of Constantinople from 857 to 867 and again from 877 to 886, a.D., the most eminent literary and ecclesiastical character of his age, was probably born between 820 and 825. If we could credit the asser- tions of his adversaries, his father, an official of the im- perial court, named Sergius, was of heathen extraction, and his mother, Irene, a faithless nun. It is more certain that he displayed from an earlyage the most extraordinary talent and appetite for knowledge, and that, having mastered whatever Greek literature could give him (Latin and Hebrew he never acquired), he began to teach with dis- tinguished success grammar, rhetoric, divinity, and philo- sophy. The way to public life was probably opened for him by the brilliant marriage of his maternal uncle to the princess Irene, sister of the empress Theodora, who, upon the death of her husband Theophilus in 842, had assumed the regency of the empire. Photius became captain of the guard and subsequently first imperial secretary. Some- where about 850 he was entrusted with a mission to the " Assyrians," by whom the Saracens must be meant, pos- sibly to the court of the caliph of Baghdad. Just previous to his departure on this mission he compiled his Bibliotheca, or Myriobiblion, the noblest monument of his erudition, and, from the number of classical authors whose writings it has partially preserved, by much the most important of his works.*

Some time after his return from this embassy an un- expected path was opened to Photius's ambition by the dissensions between the patriarch Ignatius and Bardas, the uncle of the youthful emperor Michael ITI., who had suc- ceeded to the regency on the disgrace of Theodora. Ignatius,

/

820

a man of austere morals and apparently not exempt from spiritual pride, had excommunicated Bardas on the ground of an alleged incestuous connexion with his daughter-in- law. Bardas retorted by an accusation of a conspiracy. Ignatius was arrested and imprisoned (November 857), and upon his refusing to resign was illegally deposed, when Photius, receiving all the necessary sacerdotal orders within six days, was installed as patriarch in his place. This sudden elevation of a layman to the highest ecclesi- astical office could not but provoke scandal, even though the laic, as was actually the case, might be the first theo- logian of his age. Ignatius, continuing to refuse the abdi- cation which could alone have given it a semblance of legality, was treated with extreme severity, and a violent persecution broke out against his adherents. Photius urged clemency in his epistles to Bardas, probably with sincerity, but shrank from taking the only step which could have effectually repressed the persecution and healed the schism,—the resignation of the patriarchate. In judging his conduct, however, two circumstances have to be borne in mind,—the fact that the party of Ignatius dwindled away so rapidly as to flatter Photius with the hope of its extinction, and the espousal of his competitor's cause by Nicholas, bishop of Rome, in a manner highly offensive to the independent feeling of the Eastern Church. Photius felt himself the champion of Eastern Christianity against Latin pretensions; and, when in 863 Nicholas finally anathematized and deposed him, he replied by a counter- excommunication. He also sought to ally himself with Western bishops who had been displaced or suspended by the arrogant Nicholas, and with the latter's secular adver- saries, while at the same time he was more honourably engaged in endeavours to reunite the Armenians to the Eastern Church, in combating the Paulicians, and in success- ful missions to the Russians and Bulgarians. While these transactions were proceeding the situation was suddenly

changed by the murder of Photius's patron, Czesar Bardas, by order of the emperor Michael, who was himself assassin- ated by his colleague Basil in the following year (867). The fall of Photius immediately ensued, but the attendant circumstances are exceedingly obscure. According to Georgius Hamartolus, or rather his continuator, the cause was Photius's stern reproof of the crime by which Basil had obtained the throne. As the only definite testimony of any kind, this statement cannot be wholly disregarded, but it is certainly difficult to reconcile it with the general suppleness of Photius in his relations with the Byzantine court. Whatever the cause, Photius was removed from his office and banished about the end of September 867, a few days after the accession of Basil, and the deposed Ignatius, brought back from his exile, was reinstated on 23d November. The convocation of a general council followed, to give the restoration of Ignatius a character of indisputable legality. This synod, regarded by the Latins as the eighth cecumenical council, but rejected as such by the Greeks, met in October 869. The attendance of Eastern bishops was relatively very small; Photius's friends and creatures generally remained faithful to him; and the ostentatious patronage of Pope Hadrian must have been irritating to the Orientals. Photius, when brought before the assembly, maintained a dignified silence, which per- plexed his accusers, but could not avert his condemna- tion. It seems, nevertheless, to have been generally felt that the proceedings of the council were entitled to little moral weight. The usurper, for such he unquestionably was, had successfully identified himself with the cause of his church and nation. In his captivity, which, notwith- standing his complaints, the extent of his correspondence Proves to have been mild, he maintained the same unbend- ing spirit, and rejected all overtures of compromise. About

Pia OoTivs

876 he was suddenly recalled to Constantinople and en- trusted with the education of Basil's children. A tale of his having regained favour by forging an illustrious gene- alogy for the upstart emperor may be dismissed without hesitation as an invention of his enemies. The cause was in all probability Basil's recognition of the fact that he had disgraced and banished the ablest man in his dominions, and the best qualified to fill the patriarchate upon the decease of the aged Ignatius. This event soon

occurred, probably in October 877, and after a decent show of reluct- ance Photius again filled the patriarchal throne. Accord- ing to his own account, which there seems no reason to discredit, he had become fully reconciled to his predecessor, and had shown him much kindness. Photius now proceeded to obtain the formal recognition of the Christian world. In November 879 a synod, considered by the Greeks as the eighth cecumenical council, and far more numerously attended than the one by which he had been deposed, was convened at Constantinople. The legates of Pope John VIII. attended, prepared to acknowledge Photius as legiti- mate patriarch, a concession for which John was so much censured by Latin opinion that Baronius rather fancifully explains the legend of Pope Joan by the contempt excited by his want of spirit. John, however, was firm on the other two points which had long been contested between the Eastern and Western Churches, the ecclesiastical juris- diction over Bulgaria and the introduction of the "filioque" clause into the creed. He disowned his legates, who had shown a tendency to yield, again excommunicated Photius, and thus kindled smouldering ill-will into the open hostility which has never been appeased to this day. Strong in the support of the council, Photius simply ignored him. He has been accused of interpolating John's letters, a charge not improbable in itself, but which can neither be proved nor disproved at this date. At the height of glory and success he was suddenly precipitated from his dignity by another palace revolution. Archbishop Theodore Santa-baren, his confidant and favourite, had accused Basil's son, Leo, of a conspiracy against his father. Leo owed his liberty and eyesight to Photius's entreaties ; nevertheless, on his accession in 886, he involved his benefactor in the ruin of his accuser. Arrested, degraded from the patri-archate, banished to the monastery of Bordi in Armenia, Photius, as if by magic, disappears from history. No letters of this period of his life are extant, which leads to the inference that his imprisonment was severe. The precise date of his death is not known, but it is said to have occurred on 6th February 891.

For long after Photius's death his memory was held in no special honour by his countrymen. His literary merits were obscured by the growing barbarism of the times, and the anarchy and apparent decrepitude of the Roman Church made his protest against its pre- tensions seem superfluous. But, when, in the crusading age, the Greek Church and state were alike in

danger from Latin encroach- ments, Photius became a national hero, and is at present regarded as little short of a saint. To this character he has not the least pretension. Few men, it is probable, have been more atrociously calumniated ; but, when every specific statement to his prejudice has been rejected, he still appears on a general review of his actions worldly, crafty, and unscrupulous. Yet, however short he may fall of the standard of an Athanasius or a Luther, he shows to no little advantage when regarded as an ecclesiastical statesman. His firmness was heroic, his sagacity profound and far-seeing ; he sup- ported good and evil fortune with equal dignity ; and his fall was on both occasions due to revolutions beyond his control. If his original elevation to the patriarchate was unquestionably irregular, his re-enthronement was no less certainly legal; he began as a usurper and ended asa patriot. His zeal for the promotion of learn- ing, education, and missions was most genuine, and fruitful in good. In erudition, literary power, and force and versatility of intellect he far surpassed every contemporary. The records of his actions are so imperfect or so prejudiced that in endeavouring to judge his personal character we have to rely principally upon the internal evidence of his own letters. With every allowance for their ex parte and rhetorical character and the writer's manifest desire to display

himself in the most favourable light, they nevertheless seem to afford sufficient testimony of a magnanimous spirit and a feeling heart.

The most important of the works of Photius is his renowned Myriobiblion, a collection of extracts from and abridgments of 280 volumes of classical authors, the originals of which are now to a great extent lost. Dictated in haste immediately before lis departure on his Eastern embassy, it is open to the charges of imper- fect recollection and hasty criticism, but these are as nothing in comparison with its merits. It is especially rich in extracts from historical writers. To Photius we are indebted for almost all we possess of Ctesias, Memnon, Conon, the lost books of Diodorus Siculus, and the lost writings of Arrian. Theology and ecclesi- astical history are also very fully represented. The best edition is Bekker's (Berlin, 1824-25), which, however, has neither notes nor a Latin version. The next of his works in importance is

the Amphilochia, a collection of 333 questions and answers on difficult points in Scripture, addressed to Amphilochius, archbishop of Cyzicus. This valuable work has exposed Photius to charges of plagiarism, which, as he does not claim entire originality, are wholly undeserved. The only complete edition is that published by Sophocles iconomus at Athens in 1858. Photius is further

Bao $21

| author of a Lexicon (London, 1822), of a Nomocanon or harmony of the ecclesiastical canons with the imperial edicts relating to the discipline of the church, a work of great authority, but based on the labours of his predecessors, and of numerous theological writ- ings. The more important of these are his treatise Against the Paulicians, in four books, and his controversy with the Latins on the procession of the Holy Spirit. His Epistles are valuable from their contents, but the style is often affected or unsuitable to the subject. The most complete edition is Valetta's (London, 1864). Many of Photius's works yet remain in manuscript. The only complete edition is Bishop Malou's in Migne's Patrologia Greea, and this is very imperfect and unsatisfactory.

After the allusions in his own writings the chief contemporary authority for the life of Photius is his bitter enemy Nicetas the Paphlagonian, the biographer of his rival Ignatius. In modern times his life has been written with great prejudice and animosity by Baronius, and by Weguclin in the Memoirs of the Berlin Academy, and more fairly by Hankins (De Byzantinarum Rerum Scriptor- ibus, pt. 1). But all previous writers are superseded by the classical work of Cardinal Hergenroéther, Photius, Patriarch von Constantinopel (8 vols., Ratisbon, 1867-69). As a dignitary of the Roman Catholic Church Cardinal Hergenrother is Inevitably biassed against Photius as an ecclesiastic, but his natural candour and sympathy with intellectual eminence have made him just to the man, while

his investigation of all purely historical and literary questions is industrious and exhaustive in the highest degree.

Pa OT OG EM PRY

T would be somewhat difficult to fix a date when what we now know as "photographic action" was first re- corded. No doubt the tanning of the skin by the sun's rays was what was first noticed, and this is as truly the effect of solar radiation as is the darkening of the sensitive paper which is now in use in photographic printing opera- tions. We may take it that Scheele, the Swedish chemist, was the first to enter upon a scientific investigation of the darkening action of sunlight on silver chloride. He found by experiment that when silver chloride was exposed to the action of light beneath water there was dissolved in the fluid a substance which, on the addition of caustic (silver nitrate), caused the precipitation of new silver chloride, and that on applying liquor ammonia to the blackened chloride an insoluble residue of metallic silver was left behind. He also noticed that of the rays of the spectrum the violet most readily blackened the silver chloride. In Scheele, then, we have the first who applied combined chemical and spectrum analysis to the science of photo- graphy. found that in fifteen seconds the violet rays blackened silver chloride as much as the red rays did in twenty minutes.! About twenty years later than Scheele's experi- ments Count Rumford contributed a paper to the Philo- sophical Transactions of the Royal Society (1798) entitled 'An inquiry concerning the chemical properties that have been attributed to light," in which he tried to demonstrate that all effects produced on metallic solutions could be brought about by a temperature somewhat less than that of boiling water. Robert Harrup in 1802, however, con- clusively showed in Wicholson's Journal that, at all events, salts of mercury were reduced by visible radiation and not by change of temperature. In 1801 we come to the next decided step in the study of photographic action, when Ritter proved the existence of rays lying beyond the violet limit of the spectrum, and found that they had the power of blackening silver chloride. Such a discovery naturally gave a direction to the investigations of others, and See- beck (between 1802 and 1808) and Bérard turned their attention to this particular subject, eliciting information which at the time was of a valuable nature. We need only mention two or three other cases where the influence of light was noticed at the beginning of this century. Wollaston observed the conversion of yellow gum gualacum into a green tint by the violet rays, and the restoration of the colour by the red rays, —both of which, be it observed, aa Mi ae mee a? ee

1 It may here be remarked that had he used a pure spectrum he would have found that the red rays did not blacken the material in the slightest degree.

Senebier repeated Scheele's experiments, and |

are the effect of absorption of light, the original yellow colour of the gum absorbing the violet rays, whilst the green colour to which it is changed absorbs the red rays. Davy found that puce-coloured oxide of lead, when danip, became red in the red rays, whilst it blackened in the violet rays, and that the green oxide of mercury became red in the red rays,—again an example of the necessity of ab- sorption to effect a molecular or chemical change in a sub- stance. Desmortiens in 1801 observed the change effected in Prussian blue, and Béckman noted the action of the two ends of the spectrum on phosphorus, a research which, it may be mentioned, Draper extended further in America at a later date.

To England belongs the honour of first producing a Wedg- photograph by the utilization of Scheele's observations on wood.

chloride of silver. In June 1802 Wedgwood published in the Journal of the Royal Institution the paper—' An account of a method of copying paintings upon glass and of making profiles by the agency of light upon nitrate of silver, with observations by H. Davy." He remarks that white paper or white leather moistened with a solution of nitrate of silver undergoes no change when kept in a dark place, but on being exposed to the daylight it speedily changes colour, and, after passing through various shades of grey and brown, becomes at length nearly black. The alteration of colour takes place more speedily in proportion as the light is more intense.

"In the direct beam of the sun two or three minutes are sufficient to produce the full effect, in the shade several hours are required, and light transmitted through different-coloured glasses acts upon it with different degrees of intensity. Thus it is found that red rays, or the common sunbeams passed through red glass, have very little action upon it; yellow and green are more efficacious, but blue and violet light produce the most decided and powerful effects."

Wedgwood then goes on to describe the method of using this prepared paper by throwing shadows on it, and infer- entially by what we now call "contact printing." He states that he has been unable to fix his prints, no wash- ing being sufficient to eliminate the traces of the silver salt which occupied the unexposed or shaded portions. Davy in a note states that he has found that, though the images formed by an ordinary camera obscura were too faint to print out in the solar microscope, the images of small objects could easily be copied on such paper.

*'*In comparing the effects produced by light upon muriate of silver (silver chloride) with those upon the nitrate it seemed evident that the muriate was the most susceptible, and both were more readily acted upon when moist than when dry—a fact long ©*

| ago known. Even in the twilight the colour of the moist muriate of silver, spread upon paper, slowly changed from white to faint

Seebeck,

822

violet ; though under similar circumstances no intermediate altera- tion was produced upon the nitrate. . .. Nothing but a method of pre- venting the unshaded parts of the delineations from being coloured by exposure to the day is wanting to render this process as useful as it is elegant."'

In this method of preparing the paper lies the germ of the silver-printing processes which are practised at the present time (1884), and it was only by the spread of chemical knowledge that the hiatus which was to render the "process as useful as it is elegant" was filled up— when hyposulphite of soda, discovered by Chaussier in 1799, or three years before Wedgwood published his paper, was used for making the print permanent. Here we must call attention to an important observation by Dr Seebeck of Jena in 1810. In the Parbenlehre of Goethe he says:

"When a spectrum produced by a properly constructed prism is thrown upon moist chloride of silver paper, if the printing be con- tinued for from fifteen to twenty minutes, whilst a constant position for the spectrum is

maintained by any means, I observe the follow- ing. In the violet the chloride is a reddish brown (sometimes more violet, sometimes more blue), and this coloration extends well be- yond the limit of the violet ; in the blue the chloride takes a clear blue tint, which fades away, becoming lighter in the green. In the yellow I usually found the chloride unaltered ; sometimes, how- ever, it had a light yellow tint ; in the red and beyond the red it took arose or lilac tint. This image of the spectrum shows beyond the red and the violet a region more or less light and uncoloured. This is how the decomposition of the silver chloride is seen in this region. Beyond the brown band, . . . which was produced in the violet, the silver chloride was coloured a grey-violet for a distance of several inches. In proportion as the distance from the violet increased, the tint became lighter. Beyond the red, on the contrary, the chloride took a feeble red tint for a considerable distance. When moist chloride of silver, having received the action of light for a time, is exposed to the spectrum, the blue and violet behave as above. In the yellow and red regions, on the other hand, it is found that the silver chloride becomes paler; . . . the parts acted upon by the red rays and by those beyond take a light coloration."

This has been brought prominently forward by Dr J. M. Eder as being undoubtedly the first record we have of photographic action lending itself to production of natural colours, a fact which, in describing the history of photo- graphic phenomena, has been more or less overlooked.

- We shall see later on that this observation of Seebeck was

N. de Niepce.

allowed to lie fallow for many years, until it was again taken up and published as a novelty. In photography perhaps, above all other technical applications of science, there has been a great flood of rediscovery, owing, no doubt, in the first instance to the fact that much published in one country has remained unknown in others, and also to the fact that it is difficult to boil down photographic literature and to ascertain what is really scientifically true and what is merely the result of unscientific use of the imagination. Photography has suffered greatly also from the fact that those who follow it are usually artists rather than scientific men, and fall into mistakes of theory which must of necessity lead to wrong conclusions.

_ The first to found a process of photography which gave pictures that were subsequently unaffected by light was Nicéphore de Nigpcx (g.v.). His process, which he called provisionally "héliographie, dessins, et gravures," consists in coating the surface of a metallic plate with a solution of asphaltum in oil of lavender and exposing it to a camera image. In his description he recommends that the asphaltum be powdered and the oil of lavender dropped upon it in a wine-glass, and that it be then gently heated. A polished plate is covered with this varnish, and, when dried, Js ready for employment in the camera. After requisite exposure, which is very long indeed, a very faint image, requiring development, is seen. Development is effected by diluting oil of lavender with ten parts by volume of white petroleum. After this mixture has been allowed to stand two or three days it becomes free from turbidity and is ready to be used. The plate is placed in a dish

and covered with the solvent. By degrees the parts un- affected by light dissolve away, and the picture, formed of modified asphaltum, is developed. The plate is then lifted from the dish, as much as possible of the solvent being allowed to drain away. It is next placed on an inclined support and carefully freed from all the remaining solvents by washing in water. Subsequently, instead of using oil of lavender as the asphaltum solvent, Niepce employed an animal oil, which gave a deeper colour and more tenacity to the surface-film than did his original agent.

Later still, Daguerre and Niepce used as a solvent the brittle residue obtained from evaporating the essential oil of lavender dissolved in ether or alcohol,—a transparent solution of a lemon-yellow colour being formed. This solution was used for covering glass or silver plates, which, whien dried, could be used in the camera. The time of exposure varied somewhat in length. Daguerre remarked that "the time required to procure a photographic copy of a landscape is from seven to eight hours, but single monuments, when strongly lighted by the sun, or which are themselves very bright, can be taken in about three hours." Perhaps there is no sentence which could be quoted that illustrates more forcibly the advance made in photography from the days when this process was described. The ratio of

three hours to z}5th of a second is a fair estimate of the progress made since Niepce. The develop- ment was conducted by means of petroleum-vapour, which dissolved the parts not acted upon by light. As a rule silver plates seem to have been used, and occasionally glass ; but it does not appear whether the latter material was chosen because an image would be projected through it or whether simply for the sake of effect. Viewed in the light of present knowledge, a more perfectly developable image in half-tone would be obtained by exposing the film through the back of the glass. The action of light on most organic matter is apparently one of oxidation. In the case of asphaltum or bitumen of Judea the oxidation causes a hardening of the material and an insolubility in the usual solvents. Hence that surface of the film is generally hardened first which first feels the influence of light. Where half-tones exist, as in a landscape picture, the film remote from the surface first receiving the image is not acted upon at all, and remains soluble in the solvent. It is thus readily seen that, in the case of half-tone pictures, or even in copying engravings, if the action were not con- tinued sufficiently long when the surface of the film farthest from the glass was first acted upon, the layer next the glass would in some places remain soluble, and on develop- ment would be dissolved away, carrying the top layer of hardened resinous matter with it, and thus give rise to imperfect pictures. In carbon-printing development from the back of the exposed film is absolutely essential, since it depends on the same principles as does heliography, and in this the same mode of procedure is advisable. It would appear that Niepce began his researches as early as 1814, but it does not appear that he was very successful in his first endeavours: it was not till 1827 that he had any success worth recounting. At that date he communi- cated a paper to Dr Bauer of Kew, the secretary of the Royal Society of London, with a view to its presentation to that society. Its publication, however, was prevented because the process, of which examples were shown, was a secret one. There lies before the present writer an authentic MS. copy of Niepce's "Mémoire," dated " Kew, le 8 Décembre 1827," in which he says it will be found that "in his framed drawings made on tin the tone is too feeble, but that by the use of chemical agents the tone may be darkened." This shows that Niepce was familiar with the idea of using some darkening medium even with his photographs taken on tin plates.

Paeroch & Phy

Daguerre Daguerreotype-—We have already noticed in the joint a process of Daguerre and Niepce that polished silver plates iepce.

Da- guerreo- type process.

were used, and we know from the latter that amongst the chemical agents tried iodine suggested itself. Iodine vapour or solution applied to a silvered plate would cause the formation of silver iodide on those parts not acted upon by light. The removal of the resinous picture would leave an image formed of metallic silver, whilst the black parts of the original would be represented by the darker silver iodide. This was probably the origin of the daguerreotype process. Such shrewd observers as Niepce and Daguerre, who had formed a partnership for prosecut- ing their researches, would not have thus formed iodide of silver without noticing that it changed in colour when exposed to the light. What parts respectively Daguerre and Niepce played in the development of the daguerreo- type, which we shall shortly describe, will probably never be known with absolute accuracy, but in a letter from Dr Bauer to Dr Bennett, F.R.S., dated 7th May 1839, the former says :

"T received a very interesting letter from Mons. Isidore Niepce, dated 12th March [about a month after the publication of the daguerreotype process], and that letter fully confirms what I sus- pected of Daguerre's manceuvres with poor Nicéphore, but Mr

Isidore observes that for the present that letter might be considered confidential."

Dr Bauer evidently knew more of 'poor Nicéphore's " work than most people, and at that early period he clearly thought that an injustice had been done to Niepce at the hands of Daguerre. It should be remarked that Nicéphore de Niepce died in 1833, and a new agreement was entered into between his son Isidore de Niepce and Daguerre to continue the prosecution of their researches. It appears further that Niepce communicated his process to Daguerre on 5th December 1829. At his death some letters from Daguerre and others were left by him in which the use of iodine, sulphur, phosphorus, &c., is mentioned as having been used on the metal plates, and their sensi- tiveness to light, when thus treated,

commented upon. We are thus led to believe that a great part of the success in producing the daguerreotype is due to the elder Niepce ; and indeed it must have been thought so at the time, since, on the publication of the process, life-pensions of 6000 francs and 4000 francs were given to Daguerre and to Isidore Niepce respectively. In point of chronology the publication of the discovery of the daguerreotype process was made subsequently to the Talbot-type process. It will, however, be convenient to continue the history of the daguerreotype, premising that it was published on 6th February 1839, whilst Talbot's process was given to the world on 25th January of the same year.

Daguerreotype pictures were originally taken on silver- plated copper, and even at the present day the silvered surface thus prepared serves better than electro-deposited silver of any thickness. An outline of the operations is as follows. A brightly-polished silver plate is cleaned bymeans, first of finely-powdered pumice and olive oil then of dilute nitric acid, and a soft buff is employed to give it a brilliant polish, the slightest trace of foreign matter or stain being fatal to the production of a perfect picture. The plate, thus prepared, is ready for the iodizing operation. Small fragments of iodine are scattered over a saucer, covered with gauze. Over this the plate is placed, face down- wards, resting on supports, and the vapour from the iodine is allowed to form upon it a surface of silver iodide, which is the sensitive compound. It is essential to note the colour of the surface-formed iodide at its several stages, the varying colours being due to interferences caused by the different thicknesses of the minutely thin film of iodide of silver. The stage of maximum sensitiveness 1s obtained when it is of a golden orange colour. In this

state the plate is withdrawn and removed to the dark slide of the camera, ready for exposure. A plan frequently adopted to give an even film of iodide was to saturate a card with iodine and hold the plate a short distance above the card. Long exposures were required, varying in Paris from three to thirty minutes. The length of the exposure was evidently a matter of judgment, more particularly as over-exposure introduced an evil which was called "solar- ization," but which was in reality due to the oxidation of the

iodide, itself altered by prolonged exposure to light. As a matter of history it may be interesting to remark that the development of the image by means of mercury- vapour is said to be due to a chance discovery of Daguerre. It appears that for some time previous to the publication of the daguerreotype method he had been experimenting with iodized silver plates, producing images by what would now be called the "printing out" process. This operation in- volved so long an exposure that he sought some means of reducing it by the application of different reagents. Having on one occasion exposed such a plate to a camera-image, he accidentally placed it in the dark in a cupboard containing various chemicals, and found after the lapse of a night that he had a perfect image developed. By the process of exhaustion he arrived at the fact that it was the mercury- vapour, which even at ordinary temperatures volatilizes, that had caused this intensification of the almost invisible camera-image. It was this discovery that enabled the exposures to be very considerably shortened from those which it was found necessary to give in mere camera- printing. The development of the image was effected by placing the exposed plate over a slightly heated (about 75° C.) cup of mercury. The vapour of mercury condensed on those places where the light had acted in an almost exact ratio to the intensity of its action. This produced a picture in an amalgam of mercury, the vapour of which attached itself to the altered iodide of silver. Proof that such was the case was subsequently afforded by the fact that the mercurial image could be removed by heat. The developing box was so constructed that it was possible to examine the picture through a yellow glass window whilst the image was being brought out. The next operation was to fix the picture by dipping it in a solution of hyposulphite of soda. The image produced by this method is so delicate that it will not bear the slightest handling, and has to be protected from accidental touching.

The first great improvement in the daguerreotype pro- cess was the resensitizing of the iodized film by bromine vapour. Mr Goddard published his account of the use of bromine in conjunction with iodine in 1840, and M. Claudet employed a combination of iodine and chlorine vapour in 1841. In 1844 Daguerre published his improved method of preparing the plates, which is in reality based on the use of bromine with iodine. That this addition points to additional sensitiveness will be readily understood when we remark that so-called instantaneous pictures of yachts in full sail, and of

large size, have been taken on plates so prepared,—a feat which is utterly impossible with the original process as described by Daguerre. The next improvement to be noticed in the process was toning or gilding the image by a solution of gold, a practice introduced by M. Fizeau, Gold chloride is mixed with hyposulphite of soda, and the levelled plate, bearing a sufficient quantity of the fluid, is warmed by a spirit-lamp until the required vigour is given to the image, as a consequence of which it is better seen in most lights. Nearly all the daguerreotypes extant have been treated in this manner, and no doubt their permanence is in a great measure due to this operation. Images of this class can be copied by taking electrotypes from them, as shown by Grove and others. These repro- ductions are admirable in every way, and furnish a posi-

Fox- Talbot process.

Calotype.

Albumen process on glass.

tive proof, if any were needed, that the daguerrean image is a relief,

Fou-Talbot Process. —In January 1839 Fox Talbot described the first of his processes, photogenic drawing, in a paper to the Royal Society. He states that he began experimenting in 1834, and that in the solar microscope he obtained an outline of the object to be depicted in full sunshine in half a second. We must turn, however, to the Philosophical Magazne for the account of the full details of his method, which consisted essentially in soak- ing paper in common salt, brushing one side only of it with about a 12 per cent. solution of silver nitrate in water, and drying at the fire. Fox Talbot stated that by repeating the alternate washes of the silver and salt—always ending, however, with the former—greater sensitive- ness was attained. This is the same in every respect as the method practised by Wedgwood in 1802; but, when we come to the next process, which he called " calotype" or "beautiful picture," we have a distinct advance. This process Talbot protected by a patent in 1841. It may be briefly described as the application of iodide of silver to a paper support. Carefully-selected

paper was brushed over with a solution of silver nitrate (100 grains to the ounce of distilled water), and dried by the fire. It was then dipped into a solution of potassium iodide (500 grains being dissolved in a pint of water), where it was allowed to stay two or three minutes until silver iodide was formed. In this state the iodide is scarcely sensitive to light, but is sensitized by brushing " gallo-nitrate of silver" over the surface to which the silver nitrate had been first applied. This "gallo-nitrate" is not a chemical compound, but merely a mixture, consisting of 100 grains of silver nitrate dissolved in 2 oz. of water, to which is added one-sixth of its volume of acetic acid, and immediately before applying to the paper an equal bulk of a saturated solution of gallic acid in water. The prepared surface is then ready for exposure in the camera, and, after a short insolation in the dark, develops itself, or the development may be hastened by a fresh application of the "gallo-nitrate of silver." The picture is then fixed by washing it in clean water and drying slightly in blotting paper, after which it is treated with a solution of potassium bromide, and again washed and dried. Here there is no mention made of hyposulphite of soda as a fixing agent, that having been first used by Sir J. Herschel in February 1840. In a strictly historical notice it ought to be mentioned that development by means of gallic acid and nitrate of silver was first known to Rev. J. B. Reade. When impressing images in the solar microscope he employed gallic acid and silver in order to render more sensitive the chloride of silver paper that he was using, and he accidentally found that the image could be developed without the aid of light. The priority of the discovery was claimed by Fox Talbot ; and his claim was sustained after a lawsuit, apparently on the ground that Reade's method had never been legally published. It would be beyond the scope of the present article to give the slight improvements which Talbot afterwards made in the process. In one of his patents he recognizes the value of the proper fixing of his photogenic drawings by the use of hyposulphite of soda, and also the production of positive prints from the calotype negatives, We pass over his application of albumen to porcelain and its subsequent treatment with iodine vapour, as also his application of albumen in which iodide of silver was held in suspension to a glass plate, since in this he was undoubtedly preceded by N iepce de St Victor in 1848. _ Albumen Process on Glass.—It was a most decided step in advance when Niepce de St Victor, a nephew of Nicé- phore de Niepce,

employed a glass plate and coated it with iodized albumen. The originator of this method did not

PHowoGgrk 2Y Y

meet with much success. In the hands of M. Blanquart Evrard it became more practicable ; but it was carried out in its greatest perfection by M. Le Gray. The outline of the operations is as follows. The whites of five fresh eggs are mixed with about one hundred grains of potassium iodide, about twenty grains of potassium bromide, and ten grains of common salt. The mixture is beaten up into a froth with an egg-whisk or fork, and allowed to settle for twenty-four hours, when the clear liquid is decanted off. A circular pool of albumen is poured on a glass plate, and a straight ruler (its ends being wrapped with waxed paper to prevent its edge from touching the plate anywhere except at the margins) is drawn over the plate, sweeping off the excess of albumen, and so leaving an even film. The plate is first allowed to dry spontaneously, a final heating being given to it in an oven or before the fire. The heat hardens the albumen, and it becomes insoluble and ready for the nitrate of silver bath. One of the difficulties is to prevent crystallization of the salts held in solution, and this can only be effected by keeping them in defect rather than in excess, The plate is sensitized for five minutes in a bath of nitrate of silver, acidified with acetic acid, and exposed whilst still wet, or it may*

_be slightly washed and again dried and exposed whilst in

its desiccated state. The image is developed by gallic acid in the usual way. After the application of albumen many modifications were introduced in the shape of starch, serum of milk, gelatin, all of which were intended to hold iodide om situ on the plate; and the development in every case seems to have been by gallic acid. At one time the waxed- paper process subsequently introduced by Le Gray was a great favourite. Paper that had been made translucent by white wax was immersed in a solution of potassium iodide until impregnated with it, after which it was sensi- tized in the usual way, development being by gallic acid. This procedure is still followed in some meteorological observatories for obtaining transparent magnetograms, barograms, &c, Reflexion will show that in images ob- tained by this process the high lights are represented by metallic silver,

whilst the shadows are translucent. Such a print is technically called a "negative." When chloride of silver paper is darkened by the passage of light through a negative, we get the highest lights represented by white paper and the shadows by darkened chloride. A print of this kind is called a " positive."

Collodion Process.—A great impetus was given to photo- Collo- graphy in 1850, rendering it easy of execution and putting dion.

it into the hands of the comparatively untrained. This was the introduction of collodion, a vehicle which up to the present day holds its own against the more rapid pro- cesses on account of the facility with which the plates are prepared, and also because it is a substance totally un- affected by silver nitrate, which is not the case when any organic substance is employed, and, it may be said, in- organic as well in many instances. Thus albumen forms a definite silver compound, as do gelatin, starch, and gum. The employment of collodion for use in photo- graphy was first suggested by Le Gray, who has been already mentioned in connexion with the albumen process. He does not appear to have gone beyond suggestion, and it remained for Archer of London, closely followed by Fry, to make a really practical use of the discovery. Collodion is a solution of cotton or cellulose in which some atoms of its hydrogen have been replaced by N O, by treatment with a more or less dilute mixture of sulphuric and nitric acids. The action of the sulphuric acid is to take up the molecules of water formed by elimination of the hydrogen from the cotton, which combines with oxygen from the nitric acid, the latter acid supplying the cotton with NO,. According to the temperature of the acids and

Collo- dion process.

POW © GRA P HY

their dilution a tri-nitro or di-nitro cellulose is said to be

formed, one of which is the explosive gun-cotton, insoluble in ether and alcohol, whilst the other, though inflammable, is readily soluble in a mixture of these two solvents, When collodion is poured on a glass plate it leaves on drying a hard transparent film which under the microscope is slightly

reticulated. Before drying, the film is gelatinous and per- fectly adapted for holding 2n situ salts soluble in ether and alcohol. Where such salts are present they crystallize out when the film is dried, hence such a film is only suitable where the plates are ready to be immersed in the silver bath. As a rule, about five grains of the soluble cotton are dissolved in an ounce of a mixture of equal parts of ether and alcohol, both of which must be of low specific gravity, '725 and '805 respectively. If the alcohol or ether be much diluted with water the cotton (pyroxylin) precipitates, but, even if less diluted, it forms a film which is "'crapey" and uneven. Such was the material with which Le Gray proposed to work, and which Archer actu- ally brought into practical use. The opaque silver plate with its one impression was abandoned; and the paper support of Talbot, with its inequalities of grain and thick- ness, followed suit, though not immediately. When once a fine negative had been obtained with collodion ona glass plate—the image showing high lights by almost complete opacity and the shadows by transparency (as was the case, too, in the calotype process)—any number of impressions could be obtained by means of the silver-printing process introduced by Fox Talbot, and they were found to pos- sess a delicacy and refinement of detail that certainly eclipsed the finest print obtained from a calotype nega- tive. To any one who had practised the somewhat tedious calotype process, or the waxed-paper process of Le Gray with its still longer preparation and development, the advent of the collodion method must have been extremely welcome, since it effected a saving in time, money, and uncertainty. The rapidity of photographic action' was much increased, and the production of pictures became possible to hundreds who previously had been excluded from this art-science by force of circumstances. We can merely give an outline of the procedure, referring the reader for further information to the manuals of photography. A glass plate is carefully cleaned by the application of a detergent such as a cream of tripoli powder or spirits of wine (to which a little ammonia is often added), then wiped with a soft rag, and finally polished with a silk handkerchief or chamois leather previously freed from grease. A collodion containing soluble iodides and bro- mides is made to flow over the plate, all excess being drained off when it is covered. A good standard formula for the collodion may be taken to be as follows,—55 grains of pyroxylin, 5 oz. of alcohol, 5 oz. of ether ; and in this liquid are dissolved 2} grains of ammonium lodide, 2 grains of cadmium iodide, and 2 grains of cadmium

bromide. When the collodion is set, ¢.¢., when it is in a gelatinous condition, the plate is immersed in a bath of nitrate of silver—a vertical form being that mostly used in Britain, whilst a horizontal dish is used on the Continent—a good formula for which is 350 grains of silver nitrate with 10 oz. of water. The plate is steadily lowered into this solu- tion without pause, and moved in it until all the repellent action between the aqueous solution of the silver and the solvents of the collodion is removed, when it is allowed to rest for a couple of minutes, after which period it is taken out and placed in the dark slide ready for exposure in the camera. After undergoing proper exposure the plate is withdrawn, and in a room lighted with yellow light the developing solution is applied, which originally was a solu- tion of pyrogallic acid in water restrained in its action by the addition of acetic acid. One of the old formule

employed by Delamotte was 9 grains of pyrogallic acid, 2 drachnis of glacial acetic acid, and 3 oz. of water. The Image gradually appears after the application of this solu- tion, building itself up from the silver nitrate clinging to the film, which is reduced to the metallic state by degrees. Should the density be insufficient a few drops of nitrate of silver are added to the pyrogallic-acid solution and the developing action continued.

In 1844 Hunt introduced another reducing agent, which has continued to be the favourite down to the present time, viz., ferrous sulphate. By its use the time of neces- sary exposure of the plate is reduced, and the image de- velops with great rapidity. A sample of this developing solution is 20 grains of ferrous sulphate, 20 minims of acetic acid, with 1 oz. of water. This often leaves the image thinner than is requisite for the formation of a good print, and it is intensified with pyrogallic acid and silver. There are other intensifiers used to increase the deposit on a plate by means of mercury or uranium, followed by other solutions to still further darken the double salts formed on the film; but into these it is not necessary to enter here. Such intensifying agents have to be applied to the image after the plate is fixed, which is done by a concentrated solution of hyposulphite of soda or by cyanide of potassium, the latter salt having been first introduced by Martin and Gaudin in 1853 (La Lumiére, 23d April 1853). Twenty-five grains of

cyanide of potassium to one ounce of water is the strength of the solution usually em- ployed. The reaction of both these fixing agents is to form with the sensitive salts of silver double hyposulphites or cyanides, which are soluble in water, not, as is often considered to be the case, to merely dissolve the silver salt itself. It may be well to remark that the utility of bromides in the collodion process seems to have been recognized in its earliest days, Archer (1852) and Bingham (1850) both mentioning it. We notice this, since as late as the year 1866 a patent-right in its use was sought to be enforced in America, the patent being taken out by James Cutting in July 1854. .

Positive Pictures by the Collodion Process.—In the infancy Positive of the collodion process it was shown by Mr Horne that collodion a negative image could be made to assume the appearance P!0C¢ss- of a positive by whitening the metallic silver deposit. This he effected by using with the pyrogallic acid developer a small quantity of nitric acid. A better result was obtained by Mr Fry with ferrous sulphate and ferrous nitrate, whilst Dr Diamond gave effect to the matter in a practical way. Mr Archer used mercuric chloride to whiten the image. To Mr Hunt, however, must be awarded the credit of noticing the action of this salt on the image, in his paper in the Philosophical Transactions of 1843. The whitened picture may be made to stand out against black velvet, or black varnish may be poured over the film to give the necessary black background, or, as has been done more recently, the positive pictures may be produced on japanned iron plates (ferrotype plates) or on japanned leather. This process is still practised by some photographers, and from the number of ferrotype plates sold the number of portraits taken by it must be still very large.

Most Collodion Process.—From what has been stated Moist above it will be seen that for the successful working of the collodion collodion process it was necessary that the plate should PFocess- be exposed very shortly after its preparation; this was a drawback, inasmuch as it necessitated taking a heavy equipment into the field. In May 1854 Messrs Spiller and Crookes published in the Philosophical Magazine a process whereby they were enabled to keep a film moist (so as to prevent crystallization of the silver nitrate) several days, enabling plates to be prepared at home, exposed in the field, and then developed in the dark room. The plate

XVIIT. — 104

Collo-

dion dry with collodion dry plates were due to M. Gaudin.

826

was prepared in the usual way and a solution of zinc nitrate and silver nitrate in water was made to flow over it. The hygroscopic nature of the zinc salt kept sufficient moisture on the plate to attain the desired end. Various modifications in procedure have been made since, but it is scarcely necessary to record them here; for details the reader may consult the volumes of the Photographic Journal, 1854-55.

Dry Plates.—It would appear that the first Spe n

PH@EOGRAPH Y

An image was obtained from the double film by means of the developer, which penetrated through the upper unexposed film, and the development was prolonged until an image appeared through the same film, when the plate was fixed, washed, and dried. A piece of gelatinous paper was cemented on the upper film, and a similar piece on the lower after both had been stripped off the glass. When quite dry the two papers were forcibly separated, a, film adhering to each. The upper film, although never exposed to light, showed an image in some cases more

plates. 74 Lumiere of 22d April and 27th May 1854 he describes | intense than the under film. The action of the alkaline his researches on the question; whilst in England Mr G. | developer was here manifest: the bromide of silver in R. Muirhead, on the 4th August 1854, stated that light | close contiguity to the exposed particles was reduced to acts almost as energetically on a dry surface as on a wet | the metallic state. Hence, from this and similar experi- after all the silver has been washed away from the former | ments Abney was able to announce that silver bromide could previous to desiccation. Dr Taupenot, however, seems to | not exist in the presence of freshly precipitated or reduced have been the first to use a dry-

plate process that was | metallic silver, and that a sub-bromide was immediately really workable. His original plan was to coat a plate | formed. Thus Ag,Bry+Ag.=2Ag,Br. From this it will with collodion, sensitize it in the ordinary manner, wash | be seen that the deposited silver 1s well within the sphere it, cause a solution of albumen to flow over the surface, | of molecular attraction, and that consequently a less ex- dry it, dip it in a bath of silver nitrate, acidified with acetic | posure (7.e., the reduction of fewer molecules of the sensi- acid, and wash and dry it again. The plate was then in a | tive salt) would give a developable image. condition to be exposed, and was to be developed with pyro- The alkalis used embraced the alkalis themselves and gallic acid and silver. In this method we have a double | the mono-carbonates. The sole reducing agent up till manipulation, which is long in execution, though perfectly | recent times was pyrogallic acid. In the year 1880 Abney effective, as we know from experience. found that hydrokinone was even more effective than Alkaline A great advance was made in all dry-plate processes | pyrogallic acid, its reducing power being stronger. Various devel- by the introduction of what is known as the "alkaline | other experimentalists tried other kindred substances, but oper developer," which is, however, inapplicable to all plates on | without adding to the list of really useful agents. In

which silver nitrate is present in the free state. It will be remembered that the developers previously described, either for collodion or paper processes, were dependent on

the reduction of metallic silver by some such agent as ferrous Another set of developers for dry plates dependent on Other sulphate, the reduction taking place gradually and the | the reduction of the silver bromide and the metallic state ary Pee reduced particles aggregating on those portions of the film | is founded on the fact that certain organic salts of iron i "etl

which had been acted upon by light. The action of light being to reduce the silver iodide, bromide, or chloride to the state of sub-salts (¢.g., sub-iodide of silver), these re- duced particles really acted as nuclei for the crystallized metal. It will be evident that in such a method of develop- ment the molecular attraction acts at distances relatively great compared with the diameters of the molecules them- selves. If it were possible to reduce the

altered particles it was plain that development would be more rapid, and also that the number of molecules reduced by light would be smaller if the metallic silver could be derived from silver compounds within shorter distances of the centres of mole- cular attraction. Alkaline development accomplished this to a very remarkable extent ; but the method is only really practicable when applied to films containing bromide and chloride of silver, as iodide is only slightly amenable to the alkaline body. We have not been able to trace the exact date of the introduction of this developer. It is be- lieved to be of American origin; and it is known that in the year 1862 Major Russell used it with the dry plates he introduced. An alkaline developer consists of an alkali, a

_teducing agent, and a restraining agent. These bodies,

when combined and applied to the solid bromide or chloride

1884, however, Herr Egli and Arnold Spiller brought out hydroxylamin as a reducing agent, which promises to be of great use if it can be prepared cheaply enough.

can be utilized. In 1877 Mr Carey Lea of Philadelphia and Mr William Willis announced almost simultaneously that a solution of ferrous oxalate in neutral potassium oxalate was effective as a developer, and from that time it has been universally acknowledged as a useful agent in that capacity; and it is a rare favourite, more especially amongst Continental photographers. In 1881 Abney showed that the addition of a small quantity of sodium hyposulphite very greatly increased its rapidity of action by reducing the time of exposure necessary to get a developable image. In 1882 Dr Eder demonstrated that gelatin chloride of silver plates could be developed with ferrous citrate, which could not be so readily accomplished with ferrous oxalate The exposure for chloride plates when developed by the latter was extremely prolonged. In the same year Abney showed that if ferrous oxalate were dissolved in potassium citrate a much more powerful agent was formed, which allowed not only gelatino-chloride plates to be readily developed but also collodio-chloride plates. These, it may be said, were undevelopable except by the precipitation method until the advent of the agents last-mentioned ; the chloride being as readily reduced as the sub-chloride rendered the development of an image impracticable.

of silver, after being acted upon by light, as when a plate was exposed to the camera image, were able to reduce the sub-bromide or sub-chloride, and to build up an image upon it, leaving the unaltered bromide intact, except so far as it

Aniongst the components of an alkaline developer we Re-_ mentioned a restrainer. This factor, generally a bromide ee or chloride of an alkali, serves probably to form a com-}? 23%

line de- pound with the silver salt which has not been acted upon velopel

was used in the building up. In 1877 Abney investigated this action and was able to demonstrate what actually occurred during the development. One of the experiments will show on what grounds this conclusion was arrived at. A dry plate was prepared by the bath process in the usual manner (to be described below), and exposed in the camera. The exposed film was covered with another film of collodio- bromide emulsion, which of course had not seen the light.

by light, and which is less easily reduced than is the silver salt alone,—the altered particles being left intact. The action of the restrainer is regarded by some as due to its combination with the alkali. But whichever theory is correct the fact remains that the restrainer does make the primitive salt less amenable to reduction. Such restrainers as the bromides of the alkalis act through chemical means ; but there are others which act through physical means, an

Pa @® hock A P HY

example of which we have in the preparation of a gelatin plate. In this case the gelatin wraps up the particles of the silver compound in a colloidal sheath, as it were, and the developing solution only gets at them in a very gradual manner, for the natural tendency of all such reducing agents is to attack the particles on which least work has to be expended. In the case of bromide of silver the developer has only to remove one atom of bromine, whereas it has to remove two in the case of sub-bromide of silver. The sub-bromide formed by light and that sub- sequently produced in the act of development are therefore reduced. A large proportion of gelatin compared

with the silver salt in a film enables an alkaline developer to be used without any chemical restrainer; but when the gelatin bears a small proportion to the silver such a restrainer has to be used. With collodion films the particles of bromide are more or less unenveloped, and hence in this case some kind of chemical restrainer is absolutely necessary. We may say that the organic iron developers require less restraining in their action than do the alkaline developers.

Alkaline development was first used by Major Russell in a dry-plate process in which the collodion was merely bromized by means of bromides soluble in alcohol. The plate was prepared by immersion in a strong solution of silver nitrate and then washed and a preservative applied. The last-named agent executes two functions, one being to absorb the halogen liberated by the action of light and the other to preserve the film from atmospheric action.

exposed the image appears rapidly and gradually gains in intensity, and when all action from the developer ceases the plate is washed and further intensified with pyrogallic acid and silver as is a wet plate. The image is finally fixed in sodium hyposulphite.

In photographic processes not only has the chemical condition of the film to be taken into account but also the optical. When light falls on a semi-opaque or translucent film it is scattered by the particles in it and passes through the glass plate to the back. Here the rays ere partly transmitted and partly reflected, a very small quantity of them being absorbed by the material of the glass. Theory points out that the strongest reflexion from the back of the glass should take place at the vertical angle. In 1875 Abney investigated the subject and proved that practice agreed with theory in every respect, and that the image of a point of light in development on a plate was surrounded by a ring of reduced silver caused by the reflexion of the scattered light from the back surface of the glass, and that this ring was shaded inwards and outwards in such a manner that the shading varied with the intensity of the light reflected at different angles. To avoid "halation," as this phenomenon is called, it was usual for photographers to cover the back of their dry plates with some material which should be in

optical contact with it, and which at the same time should absorb all the photographically active rays, and only replace those which were incapable of reducing the silver salt. This was called “ backing a plate.”

Collodion Emulsion Processes—In 1864 Bolton and Collo-

Tannin, which Major Russell employed, if we mistake not, f Sayce published the germ of a process which revolutionized tion

is a good absorbent of the halogens, and acts as a varnish en

to the film. Other collodion dry-plate processes carried out by means of the silver-nitrate bath were very numerous at one time, many different organic bodies being also employed. In most cases ordinary iodized collodion was made use of, a small percentage of soluble bromide being as a rule added to it. When plates were developed by the alkaline method this extra bromide induced density, since it was the silver bromide alone which was amen- able to it, the iodide being almost entirely unaffected by the weak developer which was at that time in general use.

photographic manipulations, and by a subsequent substi- tution of gelatin for collodion gave an impetus to photo- graphy which has carried it to that state of perfection at which it has arrived at the present time (1884). In the ordinary collodion process it will be recollected that a sen- sitive film is procured by coating a glass plate with collodion containing the iodide and bromide of some soluble salt, and then, when set, immersing it in a solution of silver nitrate in order to form iodide and bromide of silver in the film. The question that presented itself to Bolton

Dry- One of the most successful bath dry-plate processes was | and Sayce was whether it might not be possible to get the plate introduced by Mr. R. Manners Gordon and was a really | sensitive salts of silver formed 7 the collodion whilst bath beautiful process. The plate was given an edging of | liquid, and a sensitive film given to a plate by merely let- proveS®- albumen and then coated with ordinary iodized collodion | ting this collodion, containing the salts in suspension, flow

to which one grain per ounce of cadmium bromide had been added. It was kept in the silver-nitrate bath for ten minutes, after which it was washed thoroughly. The following preservative was then applied :—

over the glass plate. Gaudin had attempted to do this with chloride of silver, and later G. W. Simpson had suc- ceeded in perfecting a printing process with collodion con- taining chloride of silver, citric acid, and nitrate of silver ; but the chloride until recently has been considered a slow

WePMUM NAC) Jo… .2siesunaonoarueneeesecee esos at 20 grs. a 1 Sug 1 fea ERE ci Sac sce a anacece i working salt, and nearly incapable of development. Up Water Be a mew ewe e eee er eee erases eetereseeeeetetsesses 6 dr. to the time of Bolton and Sayce's experiments 1odide of Z ee meme ee +S silver had been considered the staple of a sensitive film ; ALOT vcccceccccecccccetcccccsseevcccscsccssesceses .

These ingredients were mixed just before use and, after filtering, applied for one minute to the plate, which was allowed to drain and set up to dry naturally. Great latitude is admissible in the exposure ; it should rarely be less than four times or more than twenty times that which would be required for a wet plate under ordinary circum- stances. The image may be developed with ferrous sulphate restrained by a solution of gelatin and glacial acetic acid, to which a solution of silver nitrate is added just before application, or by the following alkaline developer :—

and, though bromide had been used by Major Russell and others, it had not met with so much favour as to lead to the omission of the iodide. At the date mentioned the suspension of iodide of silver in collodion was not thought practicable, and the inventors of the process turned their attention to bromide of silver, which they found could be secured in such a fine state of division that it remained suspended for a considerable time in collodion, and even when precipitated could be resuspended by simple agita- tion. The outline of the method was to dissolve a soluble bromide in plain collodion, and add to it drop by drop an

1 ayro Oa cuaet dy. o…2.2 ee one -waeterts sear 96 grs. alcoholic solution of silver nitrate, the latter being in : sl eae dont aS ae A ma excess or defect according to the will of the operator. To Ee a EE prepare a sensitive surface

the collodion containing the g, { Ammonium carbonate «0… 80 grs. emulsified sensitive salt was poured over a glass plate, NE eee carte vn ne eves n ~~*ooeteonsrnensnares 1 02. allowed to set, and washed till all the soluble salts result*~~

The development of the image requires 6 minims of No. 1, 4 drachm of No. 2, with 3 drachms of No. 3. If properly

ing from the double decomposition of the soluble bromide and the silver nitrate, together with the unaltered soluble

Modifi- cations in the process,

828

bromide or silver nitrate, were removed, when the film was exposed wet, or allowed to dry and then exposed. The rapidity of these plates was not in any way remark- able, but the process had the great advantage of doing away with the sensitizing nitrate of silver bath, and thus avoiding a tiresome operation. The plates were developed by the alkaline method, and gave images which, if not primarily dense enough, could be intensified by the ap- plication of pyrogallic acid and silver nitrate as in the wet collodion process. Such was the crude germ of a method which was destined to effect a complete change in the aspect of photographic negative taking ;! but for some time it lay dormant. In fact there was at first much to discourage trial of it, since the plates often became veiled on development. Mr Carey Lea of Philadelphia, and Mr W. Cooper, jun., of Reading, may be said to have given the real impetus to the method. Mr Carey Lea, by introducing an acid into the emulsion, established a practicable collodion emulsion process, which was rapid and at the same time gave negative pictures free from veil. To secure the rapidity Carey Lea employed a fair excess of silver nitrate, and Colonel Wortley gained further rapidity by a still greater increase of it; the free use of acid was the only means by which this could be effected without hopelessly spoiling the emulsion. It may be well to mention that the effect of the addition of the mineral acids such as Carey Lea employed is to prevent the forma- tion of (or to destroy when formed) any sub-bromide or oxide of silver, either of which acts as a nucleus on which development can take place. Captain Abney first showed the theoretical effect of acids on the

sub-bromide, as also the effect of oxidizing agents on both the above compounds (see below). A more valuable modification was introduced in 1874 by Mr W. B. Bolton, one of the originators of the process, who allowed the ether and the alcohol of the collodion to evaporate, and then washed away all the soluble salts from the gelatinous mass formed of pyro- xylin and sensitive salt. After washing for a considerable time, the pellicle was dried naturally or washed with alcohol, and then the pyroxylin redissolved in ether and alcohol, leaving an emulsion of silver bromide, silver chloride, or silver iodide, or mixtures of all suspended in collodion, In this state the plate could be coated and dried at once for exposure. Sometimes, in fact generally, preservatives were used, as in the case of dry plates with the bath, in order to prevent the atmosphere from rendering the surface of the film spotty or insensitive on development. This modification had the great advantage of allowing a large quantity of sensitive salt to be prepared of precisely the same value as to rapidity of action and quality of film. A great advance in the use of the collodion bromide process was made by Colonel Stuart Wortley, who in June 1873 made known the powerful nature of a strongly alkaline developer as opposed to the weak one which up to that time had usually been employed. The brief exposure necessary for a collodion emulsion plate, or indeed any dry plate, had not been recognized till the introduction of this developer. This at once placed in the hands of photographers an instru- ment which by judicious use enabled them to shorten the tame of exposure of their plates and to render possible effects which had before been considered out of the question. As an example of the preparation of a collodion emulsion and the developer usually employed with it we give the following,— 24 oz. of alcohol, 5 oz. of ether, 75 grains of pyroxylin. In 1 oz. of alcohol are dissolved 200 grains of zinc bromide ;2 it is then acidulated with 4 or 5 drops

An account of Mr Sayce's process is to be found in the Photo- peal cae of October 1865, or the Photographic Journal of the same date.

oe advantages of this salt were pointed out by Mr. Warnerke in

PHD TOG ha © oH Y

of nitric acid, and added to half the above collodion. In 2 drachms of water are dissolved 330 grains of silver nitrate, 1 oz. of alcohol being added. The

silvered alcohol is next poured into the other half of the collodion and the brominized collodion dropped in, care being taken to shake between the operations. An emulsion of bromide of silver is formed in suspension ; and it is in every case left for 10 to 20 hours to what is technically called "ripen," or, in other words, to become creamy when poured out upon a glass plate. When the emulsion has ripened it may be used at once or be poured out into a flat dish and the solvents allowed to evaporate till the pyroxylin becomes gelatinous. In this state it is washed in water till all the soluble salts are carried away. After this it may be either spread out on a cloth and dried or treated with two or three doses of alcohol, and then redissolved in equal parts of alcohol (specific gravity, 805) and ether (specific gravity, '720). In this condition it is a washed emulsion, and a glass plate can be coated with it and the film dried, or it may be washed and a preservative applied. An ex- cellent preservative introduced by Colonel Stuart Wortley is as follows :—

1. Salycin, a saturated solution in water.

CDRA aun couaus sree aneematee ie neecess eae 60 grs. "T Dstilled swear choccy er ccatye uses socee cases 1 02,

UGCA iis cua Teen akacs'scsookeee 48 ors, "NG WEEDING « sca carmcteaias, siete a a eas Oona eee ioz,

To make the preservative, take 2 oz. of No. 1, 1 oz. of No. 2, $ oz. of No. 3, 40 grains of sugar, and 7 oz. of water. The plates are immersed in this solution and dried. It is often necessary to give the plate a previous coating with very dilute albumen or gelatin in order to make the film of collodion adhere during development, which can be effected by the strong alkaline developer, or by the ferrous oxalate developer, previously noticed. ;

The type of a useful alkaline developer is as follows :—

Pyro gall imenewiec. 0, Seren… 96 grs. AIOE Bite eee ei esis Aca eee ulaat tsa 1 02. Potassiam bromide ….....0occsse.case803 12 grs,

- *(eWWaliow 'aitst ll lies 2.5 sacs ceeccanves ecatstees es il eye. 3 { ATMO My CarbOmate. 0-.00:s*

To develop the plate 6 minims of No. 1, $ drachm of No. 2, and 3 drachms of No. 3 are mixed together and made to flow over the plate after washing the preservative off under the tap. Sometimes the development is conducted in a flat dish, sometimes the solution is poured on the plate. The unreduced salts are eliminated by either cyanide of potassium or sodium hyposulphite. Intensity may be given to the image, if requisite, either before or after the "fixing" operation. Where resort is had to ferrous oxalate development, the developer is made in one of two ways—(1) by saturating a saturated solution of neutral potassium oxalate with ferrous oxalate, and adding an equal volume of a solution (10 grains to 1 oz. of water) of potassium bromide to restrain the action, or (2) by mixing, according to Eder's plan, 3 volumes by measure of a saturated solution of the potassium oxalate with 1 volume by measure of a saturated solution of ferrous sul- phate, and adding to the ferrous oxalate solution thus obtained an equal bulk of the above solution of potassium bromide. The development is conducted in precisely the same manner as indicated above, and the image is fixed by one of the same agents.

*Gelatin Emulsion Process.—The facility with which Gelatin collodion emulsion plates could be prepared had turned al] emulsion investigation into this channel, and collodion was not the P'°**

only vehicle that was tried for holding the sensitive salts in suspension, As early as September 1871 Dr R. L.

3 For further details the reader is referred to Instruction in Photo- graphy, p. 99.

EE Ooroa Rk & P Ti ¥

Maddox had tried emulsifying the silver salt in gelatin, and had produced negatives of rare excellence, as the present writer can testify from personal knowledge. In November 1873 Mr King described a similar process, getting rid of the soluble salts by washing. Efforts had also been made in this direction by Mr Burgess in July 1873. Mr R. Kennett in 1874 may be said to have been the first to put forward the gelatin emulsion process in a practical and workable form, as he then published a formula which gave good and quick results. It was not till 1878, however, that the great

capabilities of silver bromide when held in suspension by gelatin were fairly known ; in March of that year Mr C. Bennett showed that by keeping the gelatin solution liquid at a low temperature for as long as seven days extraordinary rapidity was conferred on the sensitive salt. The molecular condition of the silver bromide seemed to be altered, and to be amenable to a far more powerful developer than had hitherto been dreamt of. In 1874 the Belgian chemist Stas had shown

in 1879. Another improvement was effected by Mr W. B. Bolton by emulsifying the silver salt in a small quantity of gelatin and then raising the emulsion to boiling point, boiling it for from half an hour to an hour, when extreme rapidity was attained. It would be impossible to enumer- ate many minor improvements in this process that have from time to time been made; it is sufficient to have stated in historical sequence the different important stages through which it has passed. It may be useful to give an idea of the relative rapidities of the various processes we have described.

Daguerreotype, originally …..... half an hour's exposure.

Calotymelc cies: ecteesece ete aes 2or8minutes' ,, Colllodiion.
....c.ccteceren ee eee eee 10 seconds' – Collodionsemmullsion® 2..—.--5
—«.4- see 15 seconds' 55 Rapid gelatin emulsion …..... sth second 5

By this it will be seen what advances have been made in the art of photography during the forty-five years of its existence.

The following is an outline of two representative processes. All Gelatin operations should be conducted in light which can act but very emul- slightly on the sensitive salts employed, and this is more necessary sions.

that various modifications of silver bromide and chloride were possible, and it seemed that the green molecular

condition (one of those noted by Stas) of the bromide was attained by prolonged warming. It may in truth be said that the starting-paint of rapid plates was 1878, and that the full credit of this discovery should be allotted

to Mr C. Bennett. Both Kennett and Bennett got rid of the soluble salts from the emulsion by washing; and in order to attain success it was requisite that the bromide should be in excess of that necessary to combine with the silver nitrate used to form the emulsion. In June 1879 Abney showed that a good emulsion might be formed by precipitating a silver bromide by dropping a solution of a soluble bromide into a dilute solution of silver nitrate. The supernatant liquid was decanted, and after two or three washings with water the precipitate was mixed with the proper amount of gelatin. Dr van Monckhoven of Ghent, in experimenting with this process, hit upon the plan of obtaining the emulsion by splitting up silver car- bonate with hydrobromic acid, leaving no soluble salts to be extracted. He further, in August 1879, announced that he had obtained great rapidity by adding to the bromide emulsion a certain quantity of ammonia. This addition rapidly altered the bromide of silver from its ordinary state to the green molecular condition referred to above. At this point we have the branching off of the gelatin emulsion process into two great divisions, viz., that in which rapidity was gained by long-continued heating, and the other in which it was gained by the use of ammonia—a subdivision which is maintained to the present day. Photographers' opinions as to the respective merits of the two methods are much divided, some maintaining that the quality of the heated emulsion is better than that produced by alkalinity, and vice versa. We may mention that in 1881 Dr Herschell intro- duced a plan for making an alcoholic gelatin emulsion with the idea of inducing rapid drying of the plates, and in the same year Dr H. Vogel of Berlin brought forward his ideas for combining gelatin and pyroxylin together by means of a solvent which acted on the gelatin and allowed the addition of alcohol. in order to dissolve the pyroxylin. This micthod was called "collodio-gelatin emulsion," and apparently was only a shortlived process, which is not sur- prising, since its preparation involved the inhalation of the fumes of acetic acid.

The warming process introduced by Bennett was soon superseded. Colonel Stuart Wortley in 1879 announced that, by raising the temperature of the vessel in which the emulsion was stewed to 150° Fahr., instead of days being required to give the desired sensibility only a few hours were necessary. A further advance was made by boiling the emulsion, first practised, we believe, by Mr Mansfield

with this process than with others on account of the extreme ease with which the equilibrium of the molecules is upset in giving rise to the molecule which is developable. The light to work with, and which is safe, is gaslight or candlelight passing through a sheet of Chance's stained red glass backed by orange paper. Stained red glass allows but few chemically effective rays to pass through it, whilst the orange paper diffuses the light. If daylight be em- ployed, it is as well to have a double thickness of orange paper. The following should be weighed out :—

Pe ROLASSINIEOCICe meri er cte sete iee sere rte 5 grs. Oe SPotassiviiy Dram pase) 2 sisie islets EIS) 5

3. Nelson's No. 1 photographic gelatin …..... SOuess

Be USulversitraueuee eee sie eke ckeielstere saci ts ar We ry

5 { Autotype or other hard gelatin…..... OGRE. "eNelsoniSeNO. Wpekitine. .... smear nnieeel act OCI,

Nos. 8 and 5 are rapidly covered with water or washed for a few seconds under the tap to get rid of any adherent dust. No. 2 is dissolved in 14 oz. of water, and a little tincture of iodine added till it assumes a light sherry colour. No. 1 is dissolved in 60 minims, of water. No. 4 is dissolved in 4 oz. of water, and No. 3 is allowed to swell up in 1 oz. of water, and is then dissolved by heat. All the flasks containing these solutions are placed in water at 150° Fahr. and carried into the "dark room," as the orange-lighted chamber is ordinarily called ; Nos. 3 and 4 are then mixed together in a jar or flask, and No. 2 added drop by drop till half its bulk is gone, when No. 1 is added to the remainder, and the double solution is dropped in as before. When all is added there ought to be formed an emulsion which is very ruddy when examined by gaslight, or orange by daylight. The flask containing the emul- sion is next placed in boiling water, which is kept in a state of ebullition for about three-quarters of an hour. It is then ready, when the contents of the flask have cooled down to about 100° Fahr., for the addition of No. 5, which should in the interval be placed in 2 oz. of water to swell and finally be dissolved. The gelatin emulsion thus formed is placed in a cool place to set, after which it is turned into a piece of coarse canvas or mosquito-netting made into a bag. By squeezing, threads of gelatin

containing the sensitive salt can be made to fall into cold water; by this means the soluble salts are extracted. This is readily done in two or three hours by frequently changing the water, or by allowing running water to flow over the emulsion-threads. The gelatin is next drained by straining canvas over a jar and turning out the threads on to it, after which it is placed in a flask, and warmed till it dis- solves, half an ounce of alcohol being added. Finally, itis filtered through chamois leather or swansdown calico. In this state it is ready for the plates.

The other method of forming the emulsion is with ammonia. The same quantities as before are weighed out, but the solutions of Nos. 2and 8 are first mixed together and No. 4 is dissolved in 1 oz. of water, and strong ammonia of specific gravity '880 added to it till the oxide first precipitated is just redissolved. This ammoniacal solution is then dropped into Nos. 2 and 3 as previously described, and finally No. 1 is added. In this case no boiling 1s required ; but to secure rapidity it is as well that the emulsion should be kept an hour at a temperature of about 90° Fahr., after which half the total quantity of No. 5 is added. When set the emulsion is washed, drained, and redissolved as before ; but in order to give tenacity to the gelatin the remainder of No. 5 is added before the addition of the alcohol, and before filtering.

Coating the Plates.—Glass plates are best cleaned with nitric Coating acid, rinsed, and then treated with potash solution, rinsed again, theplate.

Expo- sure.

Develop- ment of plate.

Intensi- fying negative.

Varnish-

ing nega- tive.

Sensitiz- ing bath.

Toning and fix- ing print.

and dried with a clean cloth. They are then ready for receiving the emulsion, which, after being warmed to about 120° Fahr., is poured on them in sufficient quantity to cover well the surface. This being done, the plates are placed on a level shelf and allowed to stay there till the gelatin is thoroughly set ; they are then put in a drying cupboard, through which, by a simple contrivance, a current of warm air is made to pass. It should be remarked that the warmth is only necessary to enable the air to take up the moisture from the plates. They ought to be dry in about twelve hours, and they are ready for immediate use. '

Lxposure.—With a good emulsion and on a bright day the ex- posure of a plate to a landscape, with a lens whose aperture is one- sixteenth that of the focal distance, should not be more than one- half to one-fifth of a second. This time depends, of course, on the nature of the view ; if there be foliage in the immediate foreground it will be longer. In the portrait-studio, under the samc circum- stances, an exposure with a portrait-lens may be from half a second to four or five seconds.

Development of the Plate.—To develop the image either a ferrous oxalate solution or alkaline pyrogallic acid may be used. The former is conveniently prepared as described on p. 826. No chemical restrainer such as bromide of potassium is necessary, since the gelatin itself acts asa physical restrainer. If the alkaline developer be used, the following may be taken as a good standard :—

Pyrogallol 1. < Citric acid

\ ETC cos APe i tet ere Meng Ja) 1 oz 9 { Potassium bromide

IMEC. ener hehe aaa en eae

One drachm of each of these is taken and the mixture made up to 2 oz. with watcr. The plate is placed in a dish and the above poured over it without stoppage, whereupon the image gradually appears and, if the exposure has been properly timed, gains suff- cient density for printing purposes. It is fixed in a solution of hyposulphite of soda, as in the other processes already

described, and then thoroughly washed for two or three hours to eliminate all the soluble salt. This long washing is necessary on account of the nature of the gelatin.

Intensifying the Negative. —Sometimes it is necessary to intensify the negative, which can be done in a variety of ways with mercury salts. An excellent plan, introduced by the Platinotype Company, is to use a saturated solution of mercuric chloride in water, and a subsequent addition of 2 grains to the ounce of platinic chloride.

This is put in a dish and the metallic solution allowed to act till.

sufficient density is obtained. With most other methods with mercury the image is apt to become yellow and to fade ; with this apparently it is not.

Varnishing the Negative.—The negative is usually protected by receiving first a film of plain collodion and then a coat of shellac or other photographic varnish. This protects the gelatin from moisture and also from becoming stained with the silver nitrate owing to contact with the sensitive paper used in silver printing.

Printing Processes.

The first printing process may be said to be that of Fox Talbot (see above, p. 824), which has continucd to be generally employed to the present day (with the addition of albumen to give a surface to the print,—an addition first made, we believe, by Fox Talbot). Paper for printing is prepared by mixing 150 parts of ammonium chloride with 240 parts of spirits of wine and 2000 parts of water, though the proportions vary with different manufacturers. These Ingredients are dissolved, and the whites of fifteen fairly-sized eggs are added and the whole beaten up toafroth. In hot weather it 1s advisable to add a drop of carbolic acid to prevent decomposition. The albumen is allowed two or three days to settle, when it is filtered through a sponge placed in a funnel, or through two or three thicknesses of fine muslin, and transferred to a flat dish. The paper is cut of convenient size and allowed to float on the solution for about a minute, when it is taken off and dried in a warm room. For dead prints, on which colouring is to take place, plain salted paper is useful. It can be made of the

following pro- portions—80 parts of ammonium chloride, 100 parts of sodium citrate, 10 parts of gelatin, 5000 parts of distilled water. The gelatin is first dissolved in hot water and the remaining components are added. It is next filtered, and the paper allowed to float on it for three minutes, then withdrawn and dried.

Sensitizing Bath.—To sensitize the paper it is made to float on a 10 per cent. solution of silver nitrate for three minutes. It is then hung up and allowed to dry, after which it is ready for use. To print the image the paper is placed in a printing-frame over a negative and exposed to light. It is allowed to print till such time as the image appears rather darker than it should finally appear.

Toning and Fixing the Print.—The next operation is to tone and fix the print. In the earlier days this was accomplished by means of a bath of sel d'or,—a mixture of hyposulphite of soda and anric chloride. This gilded the darkened parts of the print which light

P HO O'Grk 2 ir a ¥

had reduced to the semi-metallic state; and on removal of the chloride by means of hyposulphite an image composed of inetallic silver, an organic salt of silver, and gold was left behind. There was a suspicion, however, that part of the coloration was due to a combination of sulphur with the silver, not that pure sulphide of silver is in any degree fugitive, but the sulphuretted organic salt of silver seems to be liable to change. This gave place to a method of alkaline toning, or rather, we should say, of neutral toning, by employing auric chloride with a salt, such as the carbonate or acetate of soda, chloride of lime, borax, &. By this means there was no danger of sulphurization during the toning, to which the method by sel d'or was prone owing to the decomposition of the hyposulphite. The substances which can be employed in toning seem to be those in which an alkaline basc is combined with a weak acid, the latter being readily displaced by a stronger acid, such as nitric acid, which must exist in the paper after printing. This branch of photography owes much to the Rev. T. F. Hardwich, he having carried on extensive researches in connexion with it during 1854 and subsequent years. MM. Davanne and Girard, a little later, also

investigated the matter with fruitful results. The following may be taken as two typical toning-baths :—

AUTICCMIOMGE) ccc aateiee ete ee eee ee 1 part. Sodiumicarbenateyn. =: eer ere eee 10 parts. Winter, © cece rer oe are 5000 ,, BOTA oc o:.,0 sane cee a Cee 100); (a) { yore POA b AL LOR PROM ee 4000 ,, ») Aurie chloride 1 part. g WEED? 55s .c ete eee 4000 parts.

In the latter (a) and (8) are mixed in equal parts immediately

before use. Each of these is better used only once. A third bath is :— NUTIC CHIOMIGeIN eae eee eee meee 2 parts. Civleridevoislimes «. 26 eee enn 46 1 aarti ear en ae ices ee ER rescicur holo Beate nen 40 ,, IWRLET: & Sciicc saison yn eee eee ee 8000 ,,

These are mixed together, the water being warmed. When cool the solution is ready for use. In toning prints there isa distinct difference in the modus operandi according to the toning – bath employed. Thus in the first two baths the print must be thoroughly washed in water to enable all free silver nitrate to be carried away from the image, that salt forming no part in the chemical reactions. On the other hand, where free chlorine is used, the presence of free silver nitrate or some active chlorine absorbent is a necessity.

.In 1872 Abney showed that with such a toning-bath free silver

nitrate might be eliminated, and if the print were immersed in a solution of a salt such as lead nitrate the toning action proceeded rapidly and without causing any fading of the image whilst toning, which was not the case when the free silver nitrate was totally removed and no other chlorine absorbent substituted. This was an important factor in the matter, and one which had been overlooked. In the third bath the free silver nitrate should only be partially removed by washing. The print, having been partially washed or thoroughly washed, as the case may be, is immersed in the toning- bath till the image attains a purple or bluish tone, after which it is ready for fixing. The solution used for this purpose is a 20 per cent. solution of hyposulphite of soda, to which it is best to add a few drops of ainmmonia in order to render it alkalinc. About ten minutes suffice to cffect the conversion of the

chloride into hyposulphite of silver, which is soluble in hyposulphite of soda and can be removed by washing. The organic salts of silver seem, however, to form a different salt, which is partially insoluble, but which the ammonia just recommended helps to remove. If it is not removed, there is a sulphur compound left behind, according to Spiller, which by time and exposure becomes yellow.

The use of potassium cyanide for fixing prints is to be avoided, as this reagent attacks the organic coloured oxide which, if removed, would render the print a ghost. The washing of silver prints should be very complete, since it is said that the least trace of hyposulphite left behind renders the fading of the image a mere matter of time. Whether this be due to the hygroscopic nature of the hyposulphite and its reaction on the organic salt of silver, or to the destruction of the hyposulphite and sulphurizing of the black organic salt, seems at present to be an undetermined question. The stability of a print has been supposed to be increased by immersing it, after washing, in asolution of alum. The alum, like any other acid body, decomposes the hyposulphite into sulphur and sulphurous acid. If this be the case, it seems probable that the destruction of the hyposulphite by time is not the occasion of fading, but that its hygroscopic character is. This, however, as has already been said, is a moot point. It is usual to wash the prints some hours in running water. We have found that half a dozen changes of water, and between successive changes the application of a sponge to the back of each print sepa- rately, are equally or more efficacious. On drying, the print assumes a darker tone than what it has after leaving the fixing-bath.

Different tones can thus be given to a print by different toning- baths ; and the gold itself may be deposited in a ruddy form or in a blue form. The former molecular condition gives the red and' sepia tones, and the latter the blue and black tones. The degree

.

FROTOG RAGA Y

of minute subdivision of the gold may be conceived when it is stated that, on a couple of sheets of albuminized paper fully printed, the gold necessary to

give a decided tone does not exceed half a grain. Collodio- Collodio-chloride Silver Printing Process.—In the history of the chloride emulsion processes we have already stated that Gaudin had attempted emul- _ to use silver chloride suspended in collodion, but it was not till the sion. year 1864 that any practical use was made of the suggestion so far as silver printing is concerned. In theautumn of that year Mr George Wharton Simpson worked out a method which has been more or less successfully employed, and is still one of the best with which we are acquainted. The formula appended is the original one which Mr Simpson published :—

60 parts.

60

br svetntavenatn ciatecens aso eee 64, ieee CONGIMM yr tras 5 oo) dase es seiee eens 100 op 3 {oie EIEIT less create Sveti oi ate eae ee mes 64, BPP AC ON ONG.) queer ce eeinaiaen hhc eoni ace 1000s,

To every 1000 parts of plain collodion 30 parts of No. 1, previ-

ously mixed with 60 parts of alcohol, are added ; 60 parts of No. 2

are next mixed with the collodion, and finally 30 parts of No. 3.

This forms an emulsion of silver chloride and also contains citric

acid and silver nitrate. The defect of this emulsion is that it con-

‘tains a large proportion of soluble salts, which are apt to crystallize

out on drying, more particularly if it be applied to glass plates.

The addition of the citric acid and the excess of silver nitrate is

the key to the whole process ; for, unless some body were present

which on exposure to light was capable of forming a highly-

coloured organic oxide of silver, no vigour would be obtained in

printing. If pure chloride be used, though an apparently strong image would be obtained, yet on fixing only a feeble trace of it

would be left, and the print would be worthless. The collodio-

chloride emulsion may be applied to glass, as before stated, or to

paper, and the printing carried on in the usual manncr. The

toning takes place by means of the chloride-of-lime bath or by

ammonium sulpho-cyanide and gold, which is practically a return

to the sel d'or bath. The organic salt formed in this procedure

does not seem so prone to be decomposed by keeping as docs that

formed by albumen, and the washing can be more completely

carried out. This is a beautiful process, and deserving of more attention than has hitherto been given to it.

Gelatino- Gelatino-citro-chloride Emulsion.—A modified emulsion printing

citro- _ process was introduced by Abney in 1881, which consisted in sus-

chloride pending silver chloride and silver citrate in gelatin, there being no

emul- excess of silver present. The formula of producing it is as follows :—

sion. {Peas chloride il.

*Potassium citrate…..... Water 2 ; BILVORAINIU TLL C rae ante vests eraser eee eee *(Water 3 {Wate Pie ROCHE ing tenes OT OIC OA OIIOS * (Water*

Nos. 2 and 3 are mixed together whilst warm, and No. 1 is then gently added, the gelatin solution being kept in brisk agitation. This produces the emulsion of citrate and chloride of silver. The gelatin containing the suspended salts is heated for five minutes at boiling point, when it is allowed to cool and subsequently slightly waslied, as in the gelatino-

bromide emulsion. It is then ready for application to paper or glass. The prints are of a beautiful colour, and seem to be fairly permanent. They may be readily toned by the borax or by the chloride of lime toning-bath, and are fixed with the hyposulphite solution of the strength before given. Printing Printing with Salts of Uraniuwm.—The sensitiveness of the salts with of uranium to light seems to have been discovered by Niepce, and uranium the fact was subsequently applied to photography by Burnett in salts. England. One of the original formule consisted of 20 parts of uranic nitrate with 600 parts of water. Paper, which is better if slightly sized previously with gelatin, is floated on this solution. When dry it is exposed beneath a negative, and a very faint image is produced ; but it can be developed into a strong one by 6 to 10 per cent. solution of silver nitrate to which a trace of acetic acid has been added, or by a 2 per cent. solution of auric chloride. In both these cases the silver and gold are deposited in the metallic state. Another developer ts a 2 per cent. solution of ferro-cyanide of potassium to which a trace of nitric acid has been added, sufficient to give a red coloration. The development takes place most readily by letting the paper float on thesc solutions. Wothly Type.—A variation was introduced in the uranium pro- cess by Herr Wothly in 1864, when he employed uranic nitrate with other salts in the collodion, and then coated starched paper with the product. The paper was printed until it assumed a bluish- black image, which was subsequently intensified by means of gold. The most generally uscd Wothly-type formula, however, consisted of a triple salt of silver nitrate, uranic nitrate, and ammonic nitrate, which were dissolved in collodion. This compound was applied to paper sized with arrowroot, and, after drying, the printing pro- ceeded in the usual manner, the image being subsequently fixed

Wothly type.

with hyposulphite of soda. The prints produced by this method were very beautiful, but for some reason they found no great favour with the public.

Printing with Chromates.—The first mention of the use of Printing purposes seems to have been with made by Mungo Ponton in May 1839, when he

stated that paper, chrom- if saturated with this salt and dried, and then exposed to the sun's ates,

potassium bichromate for printing

rays through a drawing, would produce a yellow picture on an orange ground, nothing more being required to fix it than wash- ing it in water, when a white picture on an orange ground was obtained. In 1840 M. E. Becquerel announced that paper sized with iodide of starch and soaked in bichromate of potash was, on drying, more sensitive than unsized paper. Joseplt Dixon of Massachusetts, in the following year, produced copies of bank-notes by using gum arabic with bichromate of potash spread upon a litho- graphic stone, and, after exposure of the sensitive surfacc through a bank-note, by washing away the unaltered gum and inking the stone as in ordinary lithography. The same process, with slight modifications, has been used quite recently by Simonet and Toovey of Brussels, and is capable of producing most excellent results, Dixon's method, however, was not published till 1854, when it appeared in the Scientific American, and consequently, as regards priority of publication, it ranks after Fox Talbot's photo-engraving process (see below), which was published in 1852. On 18th Decem- ber 1855 M. Alphonse Poitevin took out a patent in England, in which he vaguely described a method of taking a direct carbon- print by rendering gelatin insoluble through the action of light on bichromate of potash. This idea was taken up by Mr Pouncey of Dorchester, who perhaps was the first to produce veritable

carbon-prints, notwithstanding that Testud de Beauregard took Carbon-

out a somewhat similar patent to Poitevin's at the end of 1857. Mr Pouncey published his process on 1st January 1859; but, as described by him, it was by uo means in a perfect state, half- tones being wanting. The cause of this was first pointed out by Abbé Laborde in 1858, whilst describing a kindred process in a note to the French Photographic Society. He says, "In the sensi- tive film, however thin it may be, two distinct surfaces must be recognized—an outer, and an inner which is in contact with the paper. The action of light commences on the outer surface; in the washing, therefore, the half-tones lose their hold on the paper and are washed away." Mr J. C. Burnett in 1858 was the first to endeavour to get rid of this defect in

carbon-printing. In a paper to the Photographic Society of London he says, "There are two essential requisites . . . (2) that in printing the paper should have its wnprepared side (and not its prepared side, as in ordinary printing) placed in contact with the negative in the pressure- frame, as it is only by printing in this way that we can expect to be able afterwards to remove by washing the unacted-upon portions of the mixture. Ina positive of this sort printed from the front or prepared side the attainment of half-tones by washing away more or less depth of the mixture, according to the depth to whic it has been hardened, is prevented by the insoluble parts being on the surface and in consequence protecting the soluble part from the action of the water uscd in washing ; so that either nothing is removed, or by stecping very long till the inner soluble part is sufficiently softened the whole depth comes bodily away, leaving the paper white." This method of exposing through the back of the paper was crude and unsatisfactory, and in 1860 Fargier patented a proccss in which, after exposure to light of the gelatin film which contained pigment, the surface was coated with collodion, and the print placed in warm water, where it separated from the paper support and could be transferred to glass. Poitevin opposed this patent, and his opposition was successful, for he had used this means of detaching the films in his powder-carbon process, in which ferric chloride and tartaric acid were used. Fargier at any rate gave an impetus to carbon-printing, and J. W. Swan (to whom electric lighting owes so much) took up the matter, and in 1864 secured a patent. One of the great features in Swan's innovations was the

production of what is now known as "carbon-tissue," made by Carbon-coating paper with a mixture of gelatin, sugar, and colouring tissue.

matter, and rendered sensitive to light by means of bichromate of potash or ammonia. After exposure to light Swan placed the printed carbon-tissue on an india-rubber surface, to which it was made to adhere by pressure. The print was immersed in hot water, the paper backing stripped off, and the soluble gelatin containing colouring matter washed away. The picture could then be re- transferred to its final support of paper. In 1869 J. R. Johnson of London took out a patent in which he claimed that carbon-tissue which had been soaked in water for a short period, by its tendency to swell further, would adhere to any waterproof surface such as glass, metal, waxed paper,

&c., without any adhesive material being applied. Tlris was a most important and fruitful improvement. Johnson also added soap to the gelatin to prevent its excessive brittleness on drying, and made his final support of gelatinized paper, rendered insoluble by chrome alum. In 1874 J. R. Sawyer patented a flexible support for developing on; this was a sized paper coated with gelatin and treated with an ammoniacal solution of

shellac in borax, on which wax or resin wastubbed. The advantage of this flexible support is that the dark parts of the picture have no tendency to contract from the lighter parts, which they were apt to do when a metal plate was used, as was the case in Johnson's original process. With this patent, and minor improvements made since, carbon-printing has arrived at the state of perfection in whieh we find it to-day.

According to Liesegang, the carbon-tissue when prepared on a large scale consists of from 120 to 150 grains of gelatin (a soft kind), 15 grains of soap, 21 grains of sugar, and from 4 to 8 grains of dry colouring matter. The last-named may be of various kinds, from lamp-black pigment to soluble colonrs such as alizarin. The gelatin, sugar, and soap are put in water and allowed to stand for an hour, and then melted, the liquid afterwards receiving the colours, which have been ground with a mallet on a slab. The mixture is filtered through fine muslin. In making the tissue in large quantities the two ends of a piece of roll-paper are pasted together and the paper hung on two rollers; one of wood about 5 inches in diameter is fixed near the top of the room and the other over a trough contain- ing the gelatin solution, the paper being brought into contact with the surface of the gelatin by being made to revolve on the rollers. The thickness of the coating is proportional to the rate at which the paper is drawn over the gelatin: the slower the movement, the thicker the coating. The paper is taken off the rollers, cut through, and hung up to dry on wooden lathes. If it be required to make

is treated with potassium ferri-cyanide a blue compound is formed. If, therefore, a solution of a ferric salt be brushed over a paper, and the latter be dried, and then exposed behind a tracing, the parts of the ferric salt on

the papcr exposed beneath the white ground are converted into a ferrous salt, and if potassium ferri-cyanide be brushed over the paper, or the paper floated upon it, the tracing shows white lines on a blue ground. Another method is to mix ferri-cyanide of potassium with a ferric salt, and expose it behind a tracing or drawing. Where the light acts, the mixture is con- verted into a blue compound. The resulting print is the same as the foregoing. Another method of producing blue lines on a white ground is to expose paper coated with gum and a ferric salt to light, and then treat it with potassium ferro-cyanide. This body forms an insoluble blue compound with the ferric salt, whilst the ferrous salt is inactive, or only gives a soluble body. A further development of printing with salts of iron is the beautiful platinotype process. Sized paper is coated with a solution of ferric oxalate and a platinous salt, and exposed behind a negative. It is then floated on a hot solution of neutral potassium oxalate, when the image is formed of platinum black. This process was introduced by Mr W. Willis in 1874. The rationale of it is that a ferrous salt when in solution is capable of reducing a platinum salt to metallic platinum. In this case the ferrous salt is dissolved by the potassium oxalate, and at the moment of solution the platinum salt is reduced and forms the image. i

Photo-mechanical Printing Processes.— Allusion has already been Photo- made to the invention of Poitevin, who claimed to have discovered mechani- that a film of gelatin impregnated with bichromate of potash, eal print- after being acted upon by light and damping, would receive greasy ing.

the tissue sensitive at once, 120 grains of potassium dichromate should be mixed with the ingredients in the above formula. The carbon-tissue when prepared should be floated on a sensitizing bath consisting of one part of potassium dichromate in forty parts

Printing slowly dried. As the tissue is coloured, it is not possible to | metallic plates with gelatin impregnated with bichromate or tri- with ascertain by inspection of it whether the printing operation is | chromate of potash or ammonia and mercuric chloride, then treat- carbon- sufficiently carried out, and in order to ascertain this it is usual | ing with oleate of silver, exposing to light through a negative, tissue. _ to place a piece of ordinary silvered paper in an "actinometer," or | washing, inking with a

lithographic roller, and printing from "photometer," alongside the carbon-tissue to ascertain the amount | the plates as for an ordinary lithograph. The half-tints by this of light that has acted on it. There are several devices for ascer- | process were very good, and illustrations executed by it are to be taining this amount, the simplest being an arrangement of a | found in several existing works. The method of producing the varying number of thicknesses of gold-beater's skin. The value | plates, however, was most laborious, and it was not long before it of 1, 2, 3, &c., thicknesses of the skin as a screen to the light | was simplified by Albert of Munich. He had been experimenting is ascertained by experiment. Supposing it is judged that a | for many years, endeavouring to make the gelatin films more dur-sheet of tissue under some one negative ought to be exposed to | able than those of Tessie de Motay. He added guw-resins, alum, light corresponding to a given number of thicknesses, chloride of | tannin, and other such matters, which had the property of hardening silver paper is placed alongside the negative beneath the actinometer | gelatin ; but the difficulty of adding sufficient to the mass in its and allowed toremain there until it takes a visible tint beneath a | liquid state before the whole becaine coagulated rendered these un- number of thicknesses equivalent to the strength of the negative. | manageable. It at last occurred to him that if the hardening action After the tissue is removed from the printing-frame—supposing a | of light were utilized by exposing the surface next the plate to light double transfer is to be made—it is placed in a dish of cold water, | after or before exposing the front surface of the film and the image, face downwards, along with a piece of Sawyer's flexible support | the necessary hardness might be given to the gelatin without adding (already described). When the edges of the tissue begin to curl up, | auy chemical hardeners to it. In Tessie de Motay's process the its surface and that of the flexible support are brought together and | hardening was almost absent, and the plates were consequently not placed flat. The water is pressed out with an india-rubber squeezer | durable. It is evident that to effect this one of two things had to called a "squeegee"' and the two surfaces adhere. About a couple | be done: either the metallic plate used by Tessie de Motay must of minutes later they are placed in warm water of about 90° to 100° | be abandoned, or else the film must be stripped off the plate and Fahr., and the paper of the tissue, loosened by the gelatin solution exposed in that manner. Albert adopted the transparent plate, next it becoming soluble, can be

stripped off, leaving the image | and his success was assured, since instead of less than a hundred (reversed as regards right and left) on the flexible support. An | impressions being pulled from one plate he was able to take over a application of warm water removes the rest of the soluble gelatin | thousand. This occurred about 1867, but the formula was not and pigment. When dried, the image is transferred to its permanent | published for two or three years afterwards, when it was divulged support. This usually consists of white paper coated with gelatin by Ohm and Grossman, one of whom had been employed by Albert and made insoluble with chrome alum, though it may be mixed | of Munich, and had endeavonved to introduce a process which with barium sulphate or other similar pigments. This transfer- | resembled Albert's earlier efforts. The name of "Lichtdruck" was paper is made to receive the image by being soaked in hot water given about this time to these surface-printing processes, and Albert till it becomes slimy to the touch ; and the surface of the damped | may be considered, if not the inventor, at all events the perfecter print is brought in contact with the surface of the retransfer-paper | of the method. Another modification of "Lichtdruck" was patented in the same ntanner as was done with the flexible support and the | in England by Ernest Edwards under the name of " heliotype." Helio- carbon-tissue. When dry the retransfer-paper bearing the gelatin | This consisted in coating a glass plate, the surface of which was type. image can be stripped off the flexible support, which may be used | very finely ground, with bichromated gelatin to which a certain again as a temporary support for other pictures, amount of chrome alum had been added. 'The film itself was much Such isa brief outline of carbon-printing as practised at the pre- | thicker than that of the Albert type, since it had to be detached meee mea of course, to various modifications which need from the surface of the glass by stripping, which was rendered not be entere into here. We ought, however, to mention that if possible by the previous application of a waxing solution to the ie negative be used the image may be transferred at once plate. After the film was stripped off it was "exposed under a ae final support instead of to the temporary flexible support, | negative for the time necessary to give a good image with printing – = te a of practical value, since single-transfer are better | ink, after which the inner side was exposed to light for almost the eeee Ps : oS e Pa prints. ; _ | same length of time. The gelatin sheet was then transferred to a g rinting

with Salts of Iron.—Sir Johu Herschel and Mr Hunt in pewter plate, to which it was cemented by thick india-rubber cement

of water. This is effected by turning up about 1 inch from the end of the sheet of tissue (cut to the proper size), making a roll of it, and letting it unroll along the surface of the sensitizing solu- tion, where it is allowed to remain till the gelatin film feels soft. It is then taken off and hung up to dry in a dark room through wluch a current of dry warm air is passing. Tissue dried quickly, though not so sensitive, is more manageable to work than if more

with salts sundry papers and publications entered into various methods of

of iron,

printing with salts of iron. At the present time there are two or three which are practised, being used in draughtsmen's offices for copying tracings. When a ferric salt is exposed to light it be- comes reduced to the.ferrous state, and when this latter compound

ink on those parts which had been affected by light. But Paul Oreloth seems to have made the discovery previous to 1854, for in his patent of that year he states that his designs were inked with printing ink before being transferred to stone or zine. Tessie de Motay (in 1865) and Marechal of Metz, however, seem to have been the first to produce half-tones from gelatin films by means of greasy ink. Their general method of procedure consisted in coating

and soaked in water till all the soluble bichromate was extracted. After this it was placed in a type printing-press and inked with a lithographic or gelatin roller, and an impression pulled on paper in the same manner as in printing with type, save that a greater pressure was brought to bear on the surface. This pressure was necessary

. fe OSO'G RH AP Hy

for two rcasons,—the relief of the image would be too great if only a moderate pressure were used, and the entire surface was so large that a

heavy pressure was requisite to make the paper bite on the ink. Between each pull the gelatin film was damped, the surface moisture taken off with a dry cloth, and the inking proceeded with. The drawback to this process is undoubtedly the great relief that is given from the film being so thick, but it is a miore manageable process in some respects than that of Albert, since the support is unbreakable. We should mention that Edwards also patented the use of two or more inks of different degrees of stiffness. The stiffest, which was generally black, adhered to the most deeply printed parts of the image, the next stiffest to the next most deeply printed parts, and so on. By this means the least deeply printed parts acquired a different tone from that of the deeper printed parts, which was an advantage as regards artistic effect. The same method of inking could be applicd to Albert's process with the same results. Since the time of the heliotype patent many im- provements have been made in the minor details of the operations, and various firms now produce prints in greasy ink very little if at all inferior to silver prints.

833

basis in printer's ink. Being anxious to produce copies of such prints mechanically, he conceived the idea of trans- ferring the greasy ink impression to stone, and multiplying the impressions by mechanical lithography. Following very closely upon Asser, J. W. Osborne of Melbourne made a similar application ; his process is described by himself in the Photographic Journal for April 1860 as follows. "A negative is produced in the usual way, bear- ing to the original the desired ratio. . . . A positive is printed from this negative upon a sheet of (gelatinized) paper, so prepared that the image can be transferred to stone, it having been previously covered with greasy printer's ink. The impression is developed by washing away the soluble matter with hot water, which leaves the ink on the lines of print of the map or engraving." The process of transferring is accomplished in the ordinary

Wood- Woodbury Type.—This process was invented by Mr W. Wood- | way. arly in 1860 Colonel Sir H. James, R.E., F.R.S., bury bury about the year 1864, though we believe that Mr J. W. Swan brought forward the Southampton method of photo-litho- South- type. had been working independently in the same direction about the graphy, which had been

carefully worked out by Captain ampton same time. In October 1864 a description of the invention was dae : Scott WE. Wee dace ae ¢ method. given in the Photographic News. M. Gaudin claimed the principle | © VOUFCY Scott, tr.4, € give & detailed description o of the process, insisting that it was old, and basing his pretensions | 1# as practised at Southampton. on the fact that he had printed with translucent ink from intaglio Preparation of the Paper.—The mixture consists of 3 blocks engraved by hand ; bnt at the same time he remarked that oz. of Nelson's "fine art" gelatin and 2 oz. of potassium the application of the principle might lead to important results. : F . It was just these results which Mr Woodbury obtained, and for bichromate dissolved Me 10 oz. of water and added to the which he was entitled to the fullest credit. Woodbury type is a 40 oz. of water with which the gelatin, after Eas soak- combination of the principle upon which intaglio printing is base in as been previously mixed. ood and gralniess ban ination of the principle up hich intaglio printing is based g, has been p ly d. Good and grainless bank with that upon which a carbon-print is obtained. The general post-paper (chosen on account of its toughness) of medium features of the procedure will be understood from the foregoing de- phiclotess is) weaderto. Noak oa tea (after it has scription of the carbon-process. An image is obtained on bichro- : Rie" rich : matized gelatin from a negative of the usual kind by exposing a been strained) for three TMUEBUUES; when it is ung up mm thick layer of gelatin to hght and then washing away all its soluble | the dark to dry. It is again floated on the solution and it is necessary toobtain. At first Woodbury made electrotypes from which were previously uppermost, and then passed throu gh the mould, from which he could obtain prints mechanically. The 1 lith hi ee He th intaglio was placed on a specially devised printing-press, and the | copper-plate or lithographic press to obtain a smoo mould filled with gelatin containing colouring matter such as Indian | surface. The paper is next placed upon a negative and ink. A piece of papcr perfectly even in thickness was placed in con- printed in the ordinary manner, the negative being very iad eu eae Ba eee a Eee ee ee dense in those parts which should print white, and perfectly own upon this. e excess of p n é : : out, and, when slightly sct, it adhered to the paper and was brought | transparent where the black lines have to be impressed. away fromthe mould. After drying, a perfect picture was obtained |

From about two minutes’ exposure in sunshine to an in pigment, the image being reversed as regards right and left; | hour in dull light is requisite to give sufficient intensity to ian Soar eam lege eee ee by oe naira eee the prints, which are next covered with greasy printer’s and also by a modification of the process subsequcutly introduced | . : : me age: : : by Mr AW oftlsary. The gelatin rclief was made as before, and then ink, made from lithographic printing ink, pitch, varnish, by means of very heavy pressure in a hydraulic press the mould | palm oil, and wax. The inking is best done by covering a was squeezed into soft metal, from which the prints could be after- | lithographic stone with a fine layer by means of a roller, 1 ae ae : er vy ; : wards taken off. pa = ie ee are fa Pee ue hile and then passing the paper through the press as if pulling nature-printing is conducted, and at first sight it seems strange ° : wena : : that ie eh as gelatin should be able toimpress metal. Mr | lithographic print,—an operation ate my have to be Woodbury found that it made very little if any difference in the | repeated twice to ensure the whole suriace being covered, sharpness of the image if the relief was reversed and the back of | and yet not too thickly. The inked print is placed face the relief pressed into the out ae of Sige made ee print | uppermost on water of a temperature of about 90° Fahr., eorrect as regards right and left. e has not, however, been con- : tent with his original operations, but has further simplified them, and, when the soluble parts – the Soe tie a uP the outcome being what is known as the “stannotype process.” In their full quantity of water, the paper is laid onas oping 1880 he read a description of it before the French Photographic | glass plate, inked surface uppermost, and a gentle stream Society. The modification ae in eae : ake ee of warm water poured over it. This removes the soluble from a positive on glass. The mould, when hardened by ehemica : . . tle mew means a was indeed the casc with the original Woodbury-type gelatin and ie a) a nk y ieee ft aia a we process), was attached to a sheet of flat glass, and then covered by helped by th e application of a very solt sponge. en the foil and passed through a rolling press the cylinders of which | all the gelatin and ink except that forming the image have were covered with thick india-rubber. This forced the tinfoil into | heen removed, the paper is allowed to dry till ready to every crevice of the ite yielding a es ny aol a hae es transfer

to stone. The method admits of several variations to } tin impressions taken from it. rst Mr | . : . : ; Woolbacy ek acre from the relief, covered with tinfoil, | in detail, such as coating the gelatin with albumen and obtained from a negative, but he abandoned this for a simpler plan. | removing the soluble albumen by cold water, some of them a positive on glass in the ordinary manner adopted by | being excellent, especially where the relief of the developed He took a p c : ; oh; g é » especially Boe! photographers, from which he made a mould in gelatin. This he | }yin¢ is small, as relief isan enemy to the production of eovered with tinfoil and printed direct from it. fine work on a lithographic stone, since the ink, in passing Photo-Lithography. through the press, squeezes out and produces broad lines Photo- Reference has already been made to the effect of light | which should be otherwise fine. litho- —_ on gelatin impregnated with bichromate of potash, where- Another method of producing a transfer, called the Papyro-graphy. by the gelatin becomes insoluble, and also incapable of | "papyrotype process," was published by Abney in 1870, type

method.

absorbing water where the action of the light has had full play. It is this last phenomenon which occupies such an important place in photo-lithography. In the spring of 1859 Asser of Amsterdam produced photographs on a paper

in which the ink is put on to a surface of gelatin by means of a soft roller; and this has the great advantage that the ink can be removed at pleasure if any part is not satisfactorily inked, without the basis of the print being XVIII. — 105

Photo- engrav- ing.

834

PHOTOGRAPHY

destroyed. In this process tough paper is coated with a | already quoted from the Marbenlehre of Goethe, where Photo-

fine layer of gelatin and subsequently treated with alum or chrome alum, afterwards receiving another coating, as in the Southampton method. The printing too is carried out as in the Southampton method, but not so deeply. After withdrawing the prints from the printing-frame they are soaked in cold water, and a roller is passed over them charged with an ink made of 4 parts of best lithographic chalk ink mixed with | part of palm oil. A roller coated with velvet is said to be better than the ordinary composi- tion rollers. The ink takes when the work is all clear ; the transfer is exposed to light, and is ready to be put down on stone or zinc.

Photo-Engraving and Photo-Reliefs.

This may be divided into two classes, one the production of an engraved plate for printing by the copper-plate press,

and the other for the production of clichés for printing'

with type. Niepce's process is still generally employed for the first when line engravings have to be reproduced. A copper plate is covered with asphaltum, a film negative placed in contact with it, and the necessary exposure given. After development with olive oil and turpentine the lines are shown as bare copper. The plate after being waxed at the back is next plunged into an acid bath and etched as are etched plates. When a half-tone negative has to be reproduced on copper Fox Talbot's method, described in his patents of 1852 and 1858, is still the simplest. A print on gelatin is transferred to a copper plate, and the surface etched by means of different strengths of ferric chloride, which renders the gelatin insoluble and imper- meable ; hence it will be seen that a weak solution of ferric chloride is able to reach the copper through the gelatin more readily than a strong one. In order to be successful it is necessary to give a grain to the plate; this is effected by sprinkling it with powdered resin, which is then warmed.

Relief plates for printing with type are usually made on zinc, If an ordinary photo-lithographic transfer be trans- ferred to zinc and then sprinkled with resin, the zinc may be immersed in weak acid and the uncovered parts eaten away. The regularity of the erosion is much increased by previously immersing the plate in a weak solution of copper sulphate. The particles of metallic copper deposited on the zinc form with it and with dilute acid

galvanic couples, which rapidly eat away the zinc. The etching bath should be kept in motion. The depth of the erosion is increased by littering the surface again with powdered resin, which adheres to the lines, and then heating the plate. The warmed resin runs down the eroded lines and protects them from under-cutting when again placed in acid, This process is applicable to line-engravings. Niepce's bitumen process is also applicable, but in that case a posi- tive must be applied to the plate to be etched, There exist several methods by which half-tone negatives may be reproduced for working off in the printing-press. They depend principally on breaking up the whole surface by means of lines. Thus, if, between the surface on which the printing is to take place (and which has been coated with some sensitive medium) and the positive, a film on which a network of lines has been photographed be inter- posed, it is evident that the resulting print will consist of the half-tone subject together with an image of the net- work of lines. This can be etched in the manner described above. Most of these processes are secret, but it is be- lieved that this is the one most generally practised.

Photographs in Natural Colours.

The first notice on record of coloured light impressing its own colours on a sensitive surface is in the passage

Seebeck of Jena (1810) describes the impression he ob- tained on paper impregnated with moist chloride of silver. In 1839 Sir J. Herschel (Athenzum, No. 621) gave a somewhat similar description. In 1848 Edmond Becquerel succeeded in reproducing upon a daguerreotype plate not only the colours of the spectrum but also, up to a certain point, the colours of drawings and objects. His method of proceeding was to give the silver plate a thin coating of silver chloride by immersing it in ferric or cupric chlor- ides. It may also be immersed in chlorine water till it takes a feeble rose tint. Becquerel preferred to chlorinize the plate by immersion in a solution of hydrochloric acid in water, attaching it to the positive pole of a voltaic couple, whilst the other pole he attached toa platinum plate also immersed in the acid solution. After a minute's subjection to the current the plate took successively a grey,

a yellow, a violet, and a blue tint, which order was again

repeated. When the violet tint appeared for the second time the plate was withdrawn and washed and dried over a spiritlamp. In this state it produced the spectrum colours, but it was found better to heat the plate till it assumed a rose tint. At a later date Niepce de St Victor chlorinized by means of chloride of lime, and made the surface more sensitive by applying a solution of lead chlor- ide in dextrin. G. W. Simpson also obtained coloured images on silver chloride emulsion in collodion, but they were less vivid and satisfactory than those obtained on daguerreotype plates. Poitevin obtained coloured images on ordinary chloride of silver paper by preparing it in the usual manner and washing it and exposing it to light. It was afterwards treated with a solution of bichromate of potash and cupric sulphate, and dried in darkness. Sheets So prepared gave coloured images from coloured pictures, which he stated could be fixed by sulphuric acid (Comptes fendus, 1868, vol. Ixi. p. 11). In the Bulletin de la Soctété Frangaise (1874) St Florent describes experiments which he made with the same object. He immerses ordi- nary or albuminized paper in silver nitrate and afterwards plunges it into a solution of uranium nitrate and zinc chloride acidulated with hydrochloric acid ; it is then ex- posed to light till it takes a violet, blue, or lavender tint. Before exposure the paper is floated on a solution of mer- curic nitrate, its surface dried, and exposed to a coloured image.

It is supposed—though it is very doubtful if it be so— that the nature of the chloride used to obtain the chloride of silver has a great effect on the colours impressed; and Niepce in 1857 made some observations on the relationship which seemed to exist between the coloured flames pro- duced by the metal and the colour impressed on a plate prepared with a chloride of such a metal. In 1880 (Proc. Roy. Soc.) Abney showed that the production of colour really resulted from the oxidation of the chloride that was coloured by light. Plates immersed in a solution of hydro- xyl took the colours of the spectrum much more rapidly than when not immersed, and the size of the molecules seemed to regulate the colour. He further stated that the whole of the spectrum colours might be derived from a mix- ture of two or at most three sizes of molecules. In 1841, during his researches on light, Robert Hunt published some results of colour-photography by means of fluoride of silver. A paper was washed with nitrate of silver and with sodium fluoride, and afterwards exposed to the spectrum. The action of the

spectrum commenced at the centre of the yellow ray and rapidly proceeded upwards, arriving at its maximum in the blue ray. As far as the indigo the action was uniform, whilst in the violet the paper took a brown tint. When it was previously exposed, however, a yellow space was occupied where the yellow

graphy

0

colours,

PHOTOGRAPHY

rays had acted, a green band where the green had acted, whilst in the blue and indigo it took an intense blue, and over the violet there was a ruddy brown. In reference to these coloured images on paper it must not be forgotten that pure salts of silver are not being dealt with as a rule. An organic salt of silver is usually mixed with chloride of silver paper, this salt being due to the sizing of the paper, which towards the red end of the spectrum is usually more sensitive than the chloride. If a piece of ordinary chloride of silver paper is exposed to the spectrum till an impression is made, it will usually be found that the blue colour of the darkened chloride is mixed with that due to the coloration of the darkened organic com- pound of silver in the violet region, whereas in the blue and green this organic compound is alone affected, and is of a different colour from that of the darkened mixed chloride and organic compound. This naturally gives an impression that the different rays yield different tints, whereas this result is simply owing to the different range of sensitiveness of the bodies. In the case of the silver chlorinized plate and of true collodio-chloride, in which no organic salt has been dissolved, we have a true coloration by the spectrum. At present there is no means of permanently fixing the coloured images which have been obtained, the effect of light being to destroy them. If protected from oxygen they last longer than if they have free access to it, as is the case when the surface is exposed to the air. That photography in colours may one day be

tilizes to a certain extent and fills the tube. When exposed to light chlorine is liberated from the chloride, and calomel forms on the sides of the tube. In this case the chloride darkens. Again, dried chloride sealed up in dry hydrogen discolours, owing to the combination of the chlorine with the hydrogen. Poitevin and H. W. Vogel first enunciated the law that for the reduction by light of the haloid salts of silver halogen absorbents were necessary, and it was by following out this law that the present rapidity in obtain- ing camera images has been rendered possible. To put it briefly, then, the action of light is a reducing action, which is aided by or entirely due to the fact that other bodies are present which will absorb the halogens. There is another action which seems to occur almost simultane- ously when exposure takes place in the absence of an active halogen absorbent, as is the case when the exposure is given in the air,—that is, an oxidizing action occurs. The molecules of the altered haloid salts take up oxygen and form oxides. An example of this has already been shown in the section on " photographs in natural colours." If a sensitive salt be exposed to light and then treated with an oxidizing substance, such as bichromate of potash, per- manganate of potash, hydroxyl, ozone, an image is not developed, but remains unaltered, showing that a change has been effected in the compound. If such an oxidized salt be treated very cautiously with nascent hydrogen the oxygen is withdrawn, and the image is again capable of development.!

Spectrum Effects on Silver Compounds.—The next in- Spec- quiry is as to the effect of the spectrum on the different trum silver compounds. We have already described Seebeck's ae =

(1810) experiments on the chloride of silver with the oom- spectrum whereby he obtained coloured photographs, but pounds.

accomplished is still possible, though the bright tints of nature can never be hoped for, since, as a rule, they are produced by sunshine, whereas on the plate they have to be viewed by diffused light.

Reducing Action of Light on Silver Salts—The action of light on

action of sensitive bodies has occupied the attention of many experi-

light.

mentalists from a very early period of photography. In 1777 Scheele, according to Hunt (Researches in Light), made the following experiments : —

"TI precipitated a solution of silver by sal-ammoniac ; then I edulcorated it and dricd the precipitate and exposed it to the beams of the sun for two weeks; after which I stirred the powder, and repeated the same several times. Hereupon I poured some caustic spirit of sal-ammoniac (strong ammonia) on this, in all appearance, black powder, and set it by for digestion. This men- struum dissolved a quantity of Zwna cornua (horn silver), though some black powder remained undissolved. The powder having been washcd was, for the greater part, dissolved by a pure acid of nitre (nitric acid), which, by the operation, acquired volatility. This solution I precipitated again by means of sal -ammoniac into horn silver. Hence it follows that the blackncss which the luna cornua acquires from the sun's light, and likewise the solution of silver poured on chalk, is silver by reduction. . . . mixed so much of distilled water with well-edulcorated horn silver as would just cover this powder. The half of this mixture I poured into a-white crystal phial, exposed it to the beams of the sun, and shook it scveral times each day ; the other half I set ina dark place. After having exposed the one mixture during the space of two weeks, I filtrated the water standing over the horn silver, grown already black ; I let some of this water fall by drops in a solution of silver, which was immediately precipitated into horn silver."

This, as far as we know, is the first intimation of the re- ducing action of light. From this it is evident that Scheele had found that the silver chloride was decomposed by the action of light liberating some form of chlorine. Others have repeated these experiments and found that chlorine is really liberated from the chloride ; but it 1s necessary that some body should be present which would absorb the chlorine, or, at all events, that the chlorine should be free to escape. A tube of dried silver chloride, sealed up am vacuo, will not discolour in the light, but keeps its ordinary white colour. A pretty experiment is to seal up in vacuo, at one end of a bent tube, perfectly dry chloride, and at the other a drop of mercury. The mercury vapour vola-

Scheele in 1777 allowed a spectrum to fall on the same material, and found that it blackened much more readily in the violet rays than in any other. Senebier's experi- ments have been already quoted at the beginning of this article. We merely mention these two for their historical interest, and pass on to the study of the action of the spectrum on different compounds by Sir J. Herschel which is to be found in the Philosophical Transactions for 1840. He there describes many interesting experiments, which became the foundations of nearly all subsequent researches of the same kind. The effects of the spectrum have been studied by various experimenters since that time, amongst whom we may mention Becquerel, Draper, Poitevin, H. W. Vogel, Schumann, and Abney. Fig. 1 (see pp. 836-38), which appeared in the Proceedings of the Royal Society for 1882, shows the most recent researches by the last-named. experimenter as regards the action of the spectrum on the three principal haloid salts of silver. We may mention that in two instances exception has been taken to these results—(1) by H. W. Vogel, who recognizes a difference of behaviour in the spectrum in chloride and bromide of silver when precipitated in alcoholic and aqueous solutions, and (2) by Schumann to the effect of the spectrum on the double iodide and bromide, and iodide and chloride. The latter experimenter finds that when the two salts are mixed after precipitation the results are correct, but that if the precipitations of the two salts take place together the most refrangible maximum of sensitiveness disappears. The dia- gram (see fig. 1), however, will give a very approximate approach to the truth. Nos. 33 and 34 show the effect of the spectrum on a peculiar modification of silver bromide made by Abney, in which the silver bromide is seen to be sensitive to the infra-red rays. This modification is, and will be, largely used in investigating this part of the spectrum.

1 See Abney, "Destruction of the Photographic Image," in Phil. Mag., vol. v., 1878; also Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxvii., 1878.

836 FROTO Gh A

[P.=print; D.= developed; le. =long exposure; s.e.= short exposure.]

Fie. 1.—Spectrum Effects on Salts of Silver.

- *AgI-t+AgNOs on paper…... P.*

F E DCBA Vy;

! . ee a n WLLL

a1 Sa TIA eet — eb coeeuei7® eH

AgNOs, soaked in NaCl, washed from excess, and exposed with KNO2

Paper floated on AgNO3 .. P.

AgI on paper washed from P,

excess of AgNO; – and

treated with KNO, AgI on paper washed from P. esa al ee ies! er ee |

AglI on paper washed from P. excess of AgNOs, ruddy tint

AgI on paper washed from P. excess of AgNOs, treated with KI and KNOj; or Agl in collodion

AgiI+AgNOg3 in albumen ., P.

AglI prepared in bath,treated D. with KI, washed, redipped (1.e.) in silver bath, developed

y with pyrogallic acid

ht 2 2

29 32

® AgI unpurified, treated, and D. developed as above…... Qe.) | it | f | AgI with trace of AgCl or D. AgBr, developed by acid (le.) or alkaline method

2? 2?

AgI+AgNOzin albuminized D. collodion, or on paper washed, acid development Agi+AgNOz in albuminized D. collodion, or on paper washed,

ferrous citrate developer Agl + AgNOs, prolonged ex- D. posure

TV

==

if

| im Cad SS Sey eH GET poser)

&

td Lr] 3 aR

&

A (o) w

on paper .. P.

33 os Pp;

{ 33 33 ee iP.

4

ee 7s Jez

Green AgBr in collodion, with P. || or without AgNO;

!

i Orange AgBr in collodion P. i| gelatin, with or without

|| Grey AgBr in gelatin …... P.

AgBr on paper washed from D. AgNOs, acid or ferrous (.e.) citro-oxalate developer

} h ”? ” |

IH

Grey AgBr in gelatin, de- D. veloped alkaline or ferrous (l.e.) oxalate

i 2 ”?

Pipe

wip

ey

Orange AgBr in collodion or D. gelatin, alkaline ferrous (l.e.) oxalate or acid developer

= a8 ices

PHY

Eifect of Dyes on Sensitive Films.—In 1874 Dyes and Dr Vogel of Berlin called attention to this sub- sensitive ject. He found that when films were stained #™s. with certain aniline and other dyes and exposed to the spectrum an increased action on develop- ment was shown in those parts of the spectrum which the dye absorbed. The dyes which pro- duced this action he called “ optical sensitizers,” whilst preservatives which absorbed the halogen liberated by light he called “chemical gensi- tizers.” A dye might, according to him, be an optical and a chemical sensitizer. He further claimed that, if a film were prepared in which the haloid soluble salt was in excess and then dyed, no action took place unless some “ chemi- cal sensitizer” were present. The term “optical sensitizer” seems a misnomer, since it is meant to imply that it renders the salts of silver sensi- tive to those regions of the spectrum to which they were previously insensitive, merely by the addition of the dye. The idea of the action of dyes was at first combated by many, but it was soon recognized that such an action did really exist. Abney showed in 1875 that certain dyes combined with silver and formed true coloured organic salts of silver which were sensi- tive to light; and Dr Amory went so far as to take a spectrum on a combination of silver with eosine, which was one of the dyes experimented upon by Major

Waterhouse, who had closely followed Dr Vogel, and proved that the spectrum acted simply on those parts which were absorbed by the compound. Abney further demonstrated that, in many cases at all events, the dyes were themselves reduced by light, thus acting as nuclei on which the silver could be deposited. He further showed that even when the haloid soluble salt was in excess the same character of spectrum was produced as when the silver nitrate was in excess, though the exposure had to be prolonged. This action he concluded was due to the action of the dye. The subject has been discussed again recently owing to the production of so-called iso-chromatic films, 2.¢., films which are supposed to be sensitive to all colours, and which are prepared on gelatin or collodion plates by dyeing them with eosine or some similar dye ; and the instructions given indicate that, if a coloured picture or landscape be photographed through yellow glass, the "yellows" will be denser in the negative than will the "blues." Experiment shows if a film after preparation be dipped in a solution of "eoside of silver," made by precipitating eosine with silver nitrate, wash- ing the precipitate, and then dissolving in water faintly alkaline, a negative taken in the usual way will give the "yellows" equally as dense as the "blues." The action of the yellow glass is to cut off the blue rays to which the normal salt is most sensitive, and to leave the yellow rays unaltered ; these then expend their energy upon the organic salt of silver. The advantage of rendering the yellows of a picture most in- tense in a negative is that the resulting print will be more nearly true to nature, since these are the most luminous rays. Further experi- ment ought surely to show how this can be done without the introduction of the tinted glass.

Action of the Spectrum on Chromic Salts — The salts most usually employed in photography

PHOTOGRA

z= > o a] ™ S o o >

Green AgBr in collodion, D. developed ferrous oxalate (L.e.)

/

aN

» oA Sicatax ARO

f ———

ia | a

AgCl+AgNOg on paper …. P.

wy Ry S

N

aa

AgCl+AgNO3 on paper, P. slight preliminary exposure

Mt

AgCl on paper washed from P. excess of AgNO3

| mie

&

J

AgCl on paper washed, P. treated with NaCl, washed again; also colladio-chloride of silver, and yel- low AgCl in gelatin

Grey AgCl in gelatin Pr

AgCl in collodion, excess of D. AgNOg3 or NaCl present, (1.e.) ferrous citrate or acid development

33 »

fo lh ee ee

Yellow AgClin gelatin, acid D. or ferrous citro-oxalate (1.e.) development —

> 3000 ee

Grey AgCl in gelatin, acid D. or ferrous citro-oxalate (1.e.) development

AMAA

ecole chee)

32 33

AgCl in collodion, short pre- D. liminary exposure, acid or ferrous citro-oxalate

| development

| Agi + AgBr + AgNO3 paper, moist

AgI+AgBr, AgNO3

i a ea el

on P.

N

NS

WY)

S Re h Rs Ss SS Ss

washed from P.

as 3 developed D. ferrous citro-oxalate

Dih)

i apiblui

Agi + AgBr+ AgNOz3, wet D. plate, acid or alkaline developer

AgI+AgBr in gelatin, devel- D. oped ferrous oxalate

**

||AgBr+AgI in collodion, D. acid or alkaline developer (Le.)

ce etes as (s.e.)

/8AgI+AgBr on paper…... PE

83AgI+ AgBr on paper, devel- D. oped gallic acid

A

», developed ferrous D. citrate

3AgI+AgBr+AgNOg3 collo- D. dion, wet plate, acid or(l.e.) alkaline developer :

*uh ee * iy*

3AgI+AgBr in gelatin, al- D. kaline or ferrous oxalate (1. & developer 8.e, shown.)

AgI+3AgBr on paper or in D. collodion, "ferrous citro- (1.e.) oxalate developer

t ill 24 | " "? AgI+3AgBr in gelatin, fer- D. rous oxalate developer le.) bs i

BON (4)

Ae a a8 ee = ie eae & Th C.F EO CEA BAgI + AgCl + AgNO on P. . aper, or paper washe 64 ee ral \ oe both dry : AgI+AgCl+AgNOz wet, or P. 3AgI+AgCl+KNOz2 wet

be

%.

ta

rae eek Yf of

(4

yo

8AgI + AgCl + AgNOs, or D. 8AgI + AgCl+KNOg on paper, developed with gal- lic acid or ferrous citro- oxalate

ri = 837

are the bichromates of the alkalis. The result Spec- of spectrum action in connexion with them is #™m™ confined to its own most refrangible end, com- eens mencing in the ultra-violet and reaching as far gaits,

as in the solar spectrum. The accompanying diagram (fig. 2) shows the relative action of the

H & G E 2 DiGB”A

No.!

No. 2 5 ae | B G Y OR

Fig. 2. The top letters have reference to the Fraunhofer lines; the bottom letters are the initials of the colours. The relative sensitiveness is shown by the height of the curve above the

_ base-line.

various parts of the spectrum on potassium

bichromate. If other bichromates are employed, the action will be found to be tolerably well represented by the figures. No. 1 is: the effect of a long exposure, No. 2 of a shorter one. It should be noticed that the solution of bichro- mate of potash absorbs those rays alone which

are effective in altering the bichromate. A

reference to pp. 831, 833 will show that the change is only possible in the presence of organic matter of some kind, such as gelatin or albumen.

Action of the Spectrum on Asphaltum.—This Spec- seems to be continued into and below the red ; trum ac- the blue rays, however, are the most effective. et The action of light on this body is to render it ‘ less soluble in its usual solvents. Compare this statement with that on p. 822.

Action of the Spectrum on Salts of LIron.— Spee- Many ferric salts have been used from time to trum- time in the production of prints, the most prays common at the present time being the ferric seaih oxalate, by which the beautiful platinotype prints are produced. We give this as a repre- sentation (fig. 3) of the spectra obtained on ferric

H 4.G FE DOBA

No.3

No.4 vi BG YOR

Fic. 3.—Same description as for fig. 2.

salts in general. Here, again, we have an ex- ample of the rigorous law that exists as to the correlation between absorption and chemical action. One of the most remarkable compounds of iron is that experimented upon by Sir J. Herschel and later by Lord Rayleigh, viz., ferro- cyanide of potassium and ferric chloride. If these two be brushed over paper and the paper be then exposed to a bright solar spectrum, action is exhibited into the infra-red region. This is one of the few instances in which these light- waves of low refrangibility are capable of pro- ducing any effect. The colour of this

solution is a muddy green, and analysis shows that it cuts off these rays as well as generally absorbs those of higher refrangibility.

Action of Light on Uranium.—tThe salts of Light uranium are affected by light in the presence of action on organic matter, and they too are only acted upon a by those rays which they absorb, Thus nitrate

nen. Uke % Bet and of uranium, which shows, too, absorption-bands in

ashe + Ag on D. :

paper, ferrous citro-oxal- the green blue, is affected more where these occur ate developer than in any other portion of the spectrum.

ieee at [me | 3AgI+AgCl in gelatin, de- D. It would be going beyond our province to do N\ aner arrer e more than enumerate the other metallic com- r AgI+AgCl in gelatin, de- D. | pounds which are amenable to chemical change SEARS SORE CAEN by the impact of radiation; suffice it to say AgI+3AgClon paper,washed P, | that some salts of mercury, gold, copper, lead, manganese, molybdenum, platinum, vanadium, Agl+SAg(l+AgNOs, wet .. P, | are all affected, but in a less degree than those which we have discussed. In the organic world AgI+3AgCl in gelatin, or D, | there are very few substances which do not

wale ey deed eae change by the continuous action of light, and it will be found that as a rule they are affected by

gCl+AgNOs, acid D. aera i i ae the blue end of the spectrum rather than by

AgBr, exposed to light, p, | the red end. For a more detailed account we treated with I, exposed to also} must refer the reader to The Chemical Lffects of spectrum. D. =

the Spectrum by Dr J. M. Eder (London).

The following table gives the names of the observers of the 3 : : : ; Sees ubstance. Observer. Date. action of light on different substances with the

date of publication of the several observations. It is nearly identical with one given Oxalate (mercuric) ..... ru 1776 by Dr Eder in his Geschichte der Photo-Chemic. Oxalate (MErGGNORS) oo a3 op ne cnmcia pf MMMM siecssins coe os cp oasis 1836 Sulphate and amnionia (mercurous) | Fourcroy …..... 1791 Acetate (mercurous) be dans ae SPOMOb Maori te 8 eta, os 1826 Substance. Observer. Date. Bromide (nerentic) 5.24 sciec.eg soee ohh Bi dlesokatel sae nilevsnsi 2 anaisyaye' 1828 ; a, Iodide (mercurous) ..... { OPGQE WICH Aetoei aga 2 3-7 1836 Silver. SATAG Beal cverc aes. s asic, cieaioviek 1836 Nitrate solution mixed with chalk, | J. H. Schulze …..... ieerg Lodid ¢ (HBKSUIRE) Sealine asjaca MEIN Ac meee ok ee 1836 gives in sunshine copies of writing Citrate Qmeremrig)) 5.2 eccacs oe wiesnicres BAO torent rece CATER S 1836 Nitrate solution on paper …..... EEeMOR® 55 Seh.eee § Setaneptse 1737 Tartrate and potassium (mercurous) | Carbonell and Bravo…... 1831 Nitrate photographically used…... Wedgwood and Davy …. 1802 Carbonate (merenme)) | ladeciacon «|| DRY once t o.cnescccenk. 1812 oF Weenie On BIE © oeecs ccc es cou, { ae auoiEkdiowatenets yates ae . eerrn : ene Fs Sea ce Bee a, DI ABOISNGe Osea cr = | Nitrate with white of egg …..... WB, MABCHORS «5 erste soe einec oF eA > ee ee ee ee eee ae Nitrate with lead salts ….. es Herschel 2. wecissacccussl | 1839 Iron. COIR eR ogi, th, eee ae | Jf, Bs BOGESRINS® oostevo oa 1757 Sulphate (ferrous) ..... CHITA Bs 25 cei Bap 1877 Chloride in the spectrum …..... ONCE ety. oe emia aces & 1777 Chloride (ferric) and alcohol…..... Bestuscheff 22.52.6652 << 1725 Chloride photographically used ….} Wedgwood …..... 1802 Cilloride and iher ...5..-escss0- SMCAROG satets teed sscink Scns & 1782 eee Dlaekened).. 7.5 saeecctatr es | eee Sie Aas cb toaeme 1839 Oxalate (enmay ise a5 sean. WOBEROMIOR ox ...e.c scoie ara oc 1831 OMIdO Fo ecg fearowo ces ccna ee: MEY Belo reste ous cheyere eee oe 1814 Ferro-cyanide of potassium ..... St, seen 1808 ~— My action of iodine(on metallic} Daguerre .....+... 1889 Sulpho-cyanide . a sit, usiokatetarseetviaya{all| ROME exaqeye 5 yosenear, syle 1818 silver Prussian biGe 5.2.65. bnecleacen coud BRS OOUE Fes e.g, Acieisiciem ernie Iodide photographically used ..... Bleached fois acyassieie s cadens 1840 Ferric Cineas with ammonium..... Herschel SRebO500 30-0900 i880 Iodide with gallic acid ..... PRION Ace dg, . € chsinioite 1841

Perrie tartrate: «ssc: secee denna ws UROL. oo cicsensceyserenaica ¢ 1840 Iodide with ferrous sulphate ..... PRG 2S 0 Peictars Se 5 ohisee, os <A 1844 CHrOMmBhe” ...ciasaias teen ee MSMR 2 yc F aietat isha tsre aie No.5. « 1844 Chloride and iodide by chlorine and | Claudet Meee sii, Ho.8 5 stopaicier- se 1840 iodine (on metallic silver Copper. Bromide ..... Aes std Tepercriee TSS NIOR 5 i103 ws eronchensray Hoe 1826 Chloride (cupric dissolved in ether) | Gehlen ....., 1804 Bromide by action of bromine (on| Goddard ..... 1840 Oxalate with sodium ..... BE WON Wetter rect pit 1813 metallic silver) CAROMREG 4. cece etiae cece Soe ersuids suoodeotbesuesosubEe has tye ON ha So asics Ba eu teen with ammonium ..... Hunt POD On tat te han ocr Ee eee Goo aan eecundasan. PED OWE «orig as seuss Se 8 13 Se Oxide with ammonia ..... MUTISOMEPNEH 5 2.606 c:0 ci. cc.0 1827 Iodide a ies eee ig RU RAG, 05 Mgr access er ceveraaet, BOVE AAN 5 Fe aic.no Pe wcities 1779 a re rrr ae Chromaie! Oe cats. iis tant Mitt GOMID .°.eaisevere ». ste 1798 Chloride (caproug) ai... .c.c5.c cece. cs iB WGC). escapee see ced 1859 CARDONGGBL Nas, K Sack earcincleis. Sachs Bee, says. « 3 x: avetsrs ave anee 1800 ane IPAROCMK 53 ois osczre< aco ean 1841 OR BIINE cocsia at eines Brot gis etE sc Bergman: socgeaseascal LTO Copper plates (iodized) ..... { AUG oy cigs fone teOea: 1841 BEB ROU Er 2 4s Satan jane IA PromansdOrl . eo ie:Ms s wcved 1793 Manganese. CCUG ae 8 At AR Bees One eae” ee WEOGQCNN cocscncosncuccsait ae Sul pHa, 22. sn mest ea ds ee tec eee Brandenburg ..... 1815 ae scratdeoencG eee nonne ae heeas i and Plisson.....] 1829 ORB 501.352 eryeeics ey OEE RIE CHOW, d- Ges cern cag 1832 tba se nore chaos pra ogi ORD. i oes e aseceeert) CARBO Potassium permanganate ..... PIPOMIMADELG) 55.0 7… USUI) ee aap ooanoe toot 1844 POPINIR e50010 841 ain tee | ME 1844 oo Sulphide by vapour of sulphur Cee Ge” axa ctereis roe Seer 1820 eo i ee DAVY casnne see sis une i – metallic silver) em Umrao g Schdnbein 1850 osphide by vapour of phos horus Ni ut 6 UDINE so. ose ai iain a Lecter ee AL en en ee eee (on metallic sliver) ss a aaa Bee Wee 1820 Benoni < 58 sts ok ee ee Gay -TUSBa@: onus ocd osc se 1811 mas = and cyanide of potassium ao. Feneageaocne coon oF 1844 old. CELMGE, ©

1512).< nan (erereralensialstelerieiee ene UNG oe cece eee eee eee 1 OO 6 ONS coe os eo chieela ctsgc1(ea ut occ 1777 i = Chloride on paper…2.222 2222221277 ee me si Gel, Chloride on silk 1777221777721 7111; Fulhame 1.1.2.2. 2.22, | 1794 ries Negro A Pe Chloride in ethereal solution …...! Rumford …...001.1/7’””| p793 Pe Lg ME 21: | SMR oi cesta oneeeeiny, Chloride with ferro-cyanide and ferri-| Hunt ….....0 00.00.00] 1844 ee abet ee cyanide of potassium Tin. Chloride and oxalic acid …..... Dobereiner …... 1831 Purple of cassius ….....{ Uncertain, BORRAUOL 0s eee A yt ae ee a ey eee 1844 i Plate of gold and iodine vapour ….| Goddard |||! hee Mele 1842 Cobalt Poe evaae es Hunt 1844 Platinwn. yer sulphide (realgar) a ee Sage per Sonica 1803 Chloride invetiie® .....:95040.0.6. 0. Gehlen . perenne OT Nn ae we Chloride with Time 22.2220 010201. Herschel 2020020000200 1840 ee one Meee ag. [ne 1844 id er We . Taig ee ee ee i sje ose te fel sewe\e) dw aeuetelere. ee | Aoaets ie Henseliel, ‘27 sae ee 1840 Rhodium salts …..... Crunida tes ee ere \ Eitinit, Se ee en ee 1844 LE dean eeomnaheer ae Re eee IAISCGG LAE nissan SRM SAS 1874 Double chloride of Pn eUg ed Jee : ridium ammonium chloride…..... WDobereimer 75 sss. secee sae 1831 oes ride of platinum and | Débereiner …..... 1828 Potassium bichromate …..... Mungo Ponton A 1838 a Potassium with iodide of starch ….| Becquerel …..... 1840 Oxide (mercurou — ; Metallic chromates …..... BDA fee. accusers 26 caus 1843 ae S)) ax obese ee ee Gay-Lussac and Thénard..! 1811 Chlorine and hydrogen …....| Gay-Lussac and Thénard..| 1809 ie aoe i Seat em cae ergs oe Peer eee oe Cine Gathonized) 0225s aeoeaes: iPPnen cea. Me aoakic pees 1842 fogs Soaks sete NS (tue tetoveaa P-faloiess: 6 slap eee hilorine and ether® 2<.sce.c oc… | GRROUNS: <.656.o eres cea eens 1810 Oxide (more accurate observations) 4 cee ee ce Baa care | ee | { | Chlorine in water …..... 1… 200.) BePth@leb.. 2. cscs. sof 1PRB Chloride (mercurous) .....| K. Reston, previously to| 1739 te aa —_ ethylene….....| Gay-Lussac and Thénard..} 1809 Chloride Gasmeaney Boalla 1803 orine and carbon-monoxide ….| Davy …....cccecccecece 1812 Manet with oxalic acid ….__ oeyiel eaecenane EY eee 1776 Chloride i Epa icacid …. Sorulla rr, 4. 1827 BmMann …..... a YRC BEE Gy. 2 SOMO) 9 Aeterieeies Saceie! werese ulphate …. metho ae a MPN Gy Ott ye asters a eopee 1764 | Bromide and hydrogen :

Substance. | Observer. Date Iodine and ethylene ees | RNY) Bieri a wie cre aid apnea es 1821 Cyanogen, solution of…..... Pelouze and Richardson .. 1837 Various other methyl compounds ..| Cahours…..... 1846 Hydrocyanic acid….....) Torosewiez .. 1836 Hypochlorites (calcium and potass- | Dobereiner .. 1813 jum eae chloride and ether…..... Gehlen save tysielOateee sat 1804 Molybdenate of potassium and tin | Jager …... ve eeeyte Dae 1800 salts Se . Girt eel oats creretevese clcretae 1722 emeyepen! of salts under influ Chaptal 1788 Dize 1789 = (in hydrogen, nitrogen, | Bockmann 1800 Ge Phosphuretted hydrogen …....| A. Vogel 1812 RUMI DINED (oe aise. HE ba. ctroe ats « neice! MERCEIS Va [ad HEIs op of op peocesosdece soos uc Vogel 1806 lon Gil Se onlge pe nos snoeoar op eaeeor Fier.. 1832 PNeirie Ua e Pers etn ope) creys 1c (o°e ona molene cehe |b BAC DED: x CPTI cleo oie epeiti ao. cleo ani sf ER BRODIBI wis asso fe reiejaseis-e: e's 1782 Bitumens all decomposed, all resi- | Daguerre …..... 1839 dues of essential oils Coloured extracts from flowers | OME DIOR crested etveniatte. acts 3 1782 Similar colouring matters spread ; Herschel 1842 upon paper Yellow wax bleached ….....| Pliny .| leent, A.D. Eudoxia macrembolitissa(purpledye)| .....0. cece eese eee eeees 10th cent. 'ole siayeteielo ehstaueters 6 1684 Other purple dyes RURCAUINUT Gc iactors csessvcaine os iyg ol Oils generally .—..| Senebier Saha eb rales Oe 1782 Nitric ether .. Aen ps ilcicne UAene or Sogou oceton 1782 Nicotine . saeenescs ce socneses.| Henry & Boutron-Charlard 1836 BEASTEORIETPON syo. ors 8) 2tele, swe ays lonerenctonercle cposc RL CRBE) oles oletcieusiatiate:)-Telokelotatet ele 1883

Bibliography.—Hardwich and Taylor, Photographic Chemistry (9th ed., 1883) ; Abney, Text-Book of Photography (1878), Instruction in Photography (1874 ; 6th ed., 1884), Emulsion Processes in Photography (1878), and Photographic Optics, 1884; Burton, Modern Photography (3d ed., 1883); Robinson and Abney, Silver Printing (1880); Eder, Chemical Effects of the Spectrum (Eng. tr., by Abney, 1884) ; oo Photography jor Amateurs (1884); and Hunt, Researches on Light

1854).

Tue CAMERA.

Any article descriptive of photography would be incomplete without a brief notice of the development of the camera. The inventor of the camera obscura was Giambattista della PorTA (q.v), who was born at Naples about 1540. Except as a scientific toy, his apparatus was not of any practical use, though it is the parent of the apparatus which have grown up with photography. The principles which govern photographic lenses have been briefly given under Lieut (vol. xiv. p. 598 sg.) and Optics (vol. xvii. p. 802 sg.), and we need only state here that the finest camera which can_ be manufactured is useless unless the lens with which it has to be worked gives a flat field and an approximately achromatic image. Fic. 4.—Daguerre's Camera. M, stop of lens; J, lens; A, Dagucrre's camera ground glass plate, on which the image formed by the . . Jens is thrown, and for which the sensitive plate is sub- is shown in the stituted ; B, a mirror held at 45° by means of L, on which accompanyilg the operator viewed the image on the ground glass. The figure (fig. 4), ac- focus was obtained by sliding the inner box D towards cording to Hunt

f Z WANISSSLETISLSELILLLLLELLELALILLLTHL ELLE. SJ a SY

D Yc

J Sean 2B a —S of Z) th

or from the lens

(Photography, 4th ed., p. 39), by which it will be seen that at first the idea existed of moving the plate away from the camera.

The first camera made in England, as far as is known, was that by Mr Palmer of Newgate Street, London, on the plan of Mr Fry and for him, in 1839. It was a very primitive apparatus, and was furnished with a lens made in the same year. 'he ordinary form of camera was simply a box, at one end of which was a lens, and at the other a ground glass for focusing, for which could be substituted a dark slide holding a sensitive plate. The adjustment of the focus was made by a rack and pinion motion attached to the lens. 'The arrangement, however, subsequently introduced for ob- taining a rough approximation to focns was to have a sliding inner box as in Daguerre's camera ; and finally to obtain the greatest sharp- ness the

rack and pinion motion attached to the lens was used. It is evident that this form of camera has an advantage over the single box, since it allows more than one lens to be used. Ottewill's folding camera was a great improvement, in that, for outdoor work, it enabled a cumbersome article to be folded up into a compact space. Figs. 5 and 6 show it set up for use, and folded. A still more portable form was made by Mr George Edwards of Carlton Colville (Suffolk) in 1853, and for it he obtained the medal of the Society of Arts. Its portability is shown by the fact that for a 7-inch by 53-inch plate its weight was only 2 fb 302. Broadly speaking its principle was that of a couple of frames attached by screws to a solid bar, one of

which carried the dark slide and the other the lens. The two were connected together and enclosed in a cloth bag, which in reality

Fig. 5.—Ottewill's Camera, set up for use. Fic. 6.—Ottewill's Camera, folded.

was the camera. This instrument is still used at the present day. It did not come into general use owing to its complicated arrangement of screws,—for the main point in any camera is that there should be as few loose screws as possible. The next improvement is that known as the bellows form, originally introduced, it is believed, by Captain Fowke, R.E., about 1854. Its introduction may be said to mark a new era in camera construction, and from that time to the present the bellows is to be found in nearly every improved form. After this invention the square instead of the tapering form of bellows was that most generally adopted. It is unnecessary to trace every improvement that has been introduced, but we give two typical

Fic. 7.—Hare's Camera.

ones (figs. 7 and 8), which are manufactured by Hare and Meagher

respectively. It will be noticed that in both these cameras there is an arrangement by which the focusing screens can be made to tilt at an angle

with the axis of the lens. This is called a swing-back ar- rangement, and is necessary when pho- tographing architec- tural subjects to pre- 9. vent vertical lines ~ converging in the picture. When the ground glass is in a Fic. 8.—Meagher's Camera.

vertical plane, no matter what tilt is given to the camera, vertical lines will always be shown as parallel in the picture. It will also be noticed that in these cameras there is an arrangement for focusing the lens by means of a rack and pinion motion in fig. 7, and by means of a screw in fig. 8. The gradual motion which can thus be given to the focusing screen is a great advantage, since lenses need not be constructed with rack and pinion mo- tion. Many suggestions have been put forward for adapting

1 —<—

Fic. 9.—Marion & Co.'s' Camera,

the camera for a developing chamber, and we believe Archer's could be used for this purpose. Mr Newton in 1852 introduced a camera in which wet plates after exposure were developed by dipping in troughs of solutions ; and we might name many others who sub-

sequently worked at the same idea. It met, however, with no very | instruments is that they possess no striking advantage and many

great suecess. The introduction of dry plates was a great step for the landscape photographer, as it enabled him to carry a supply of plates in the field, and to develop them at home. To economize spaee and weight, what are known as "double baeks" were in- vented.

PHOTOMETRY, Crtestrau. The earliest records that have come down to us regarding the relative positions of the stars in the heavens have always been accompanied with estimations of their relative brightness. With this brightness was naturally associated the thought of the relative magnitudes

of the luminous bodies from whence the light was assumed to proceed. Hence in the grand catalogue of stars published by Ptolemy (c. 150 a.p.), but which had probably been formed three hundred years before his day by Hipparchus, the 1200 stars readily visible to the naked eye at Alexandria were divided into six classes according to their lustre, though instead of that term he uses the word péyeGos or "magnitude"; the brightest he designates as being of the first magnitude, and so down- wards till he comes to the minimum visibile, to which he assigns the sixth. These magnitudes he still further divides each into three. To those stars which, though ranged in any particular order of brightness, nevertheless exceed the average of that order in lustre he attaches the letter #, the initial letter in peifwv (greater), and to those in the same order which exhibit a lustre inferior to that of the average he affixes the letter «, the initial letter of éAdcowv. With this sort of subdivision he passes through all the six orders of magnitude. He does not, indeed, tell us the precise process by which these divisions were esti- mated, but the principle involved is obvious. The eye was here made the natural photometer, and it is certain that even in the instances where modern instrumental ap- pliances are called into requisition the ultimate appeal is made to perception by the eye. Moreover, it is one of the many remarkable instances of the acuteness and precision of the Greek mind that for upwards of 1590 years no real improvement was made in these estimations of lustre by any of Ptolemy's numerous successors in this field of re- search, Flamsteed was the first astronomer who extended the estimation of magnitude to stars visible only by the telescope, and he improved Ptolemy's notation by writing 4°3 instead of 6, »—indicating thereby an order of mag- nitude brighter than the average of a fourth, but inferior to that of a third— and 3-4 for 6, «¢, and so on. Later astronomers have sometimes adopted a more precise nomen- clature by subdividing the several orders decimally, but it does not appear that by any immediate and unaided effort the eye can estimate subdivisions of lustre exceeding the thirds adopted by the Greek philosopher.

It was not till the year 1796 that any real advance was made in stellar photometry. Sir W. Herschel, instead of assigning a particular magnitude to stars, arranged them in small groups of three or four or five, indicating the order in which they differed from each other in lustre at the time of observation. This method was admirably adapted to the discovery of any

variations in brightness which might occur in the lapse of time among the members of the group. Sir William observed in this way some 1400 stars, pub- lished in catalogues scattered through the Philosophical Transactions from 1796 to 1799 ; but he discontinued the work before its conclusion. It might be urged that such

disadvantages, unless for very special purposes. Hven for a minia- ture camera for taking instantaneous street views whilst holding the apparatus in the hand the use of double backs is to be preferred. An exeellent specimen is a camera made by Marion & Co. of London (see fig. 9): it is entirely of metal, and fitted with a finder and in- stantaneous shutter, —one which should stand any amount of rough usage. The whole apparatus, including a dozen plates, can easily be earried in the pocket. 'The dark slides are strongly made of metal. In the preeeding sketch, brief though it is, of the successive improvements in cameras, probably enough has been said to show the very remarkable development that has taken place since the days when a cigar-box and spectacle lens were used to obtain an image on a sensitive plate. (W. pE W. A.)

a work touches on no human interests, but it rightly seemed otherwise to the philosophic mind of the great astronomer. He remarked that the sun is, after all, only one among the stars, and that what befalls them in the way of varying light as time proceeds may also befall the sun. He puts the question, "Who would not wish to know what degree of permanency we ought to ascribe to the lustre of our sun?

Not only the stability of our climates, but the very exist-

ence of the whole animal and vegetable creation itself, is involved in the question. Where can we hope to receive information upon the subject butfrom astronomical observa- tions?" These researches of the elder Herschel were in due time followed by those of his son, Sir J ohn, about the year 1836 at the Cape of Good Hope. He both extended and improved the methods adopted by his father at Slough, and by a method of estimated sequences of magnitude he hoped to arrange all the stars visible to the naked eye at the Cape or in England in the order of their relative lustre, and then to reduce his results into the equivalent magni- tudes adopted by the universal consent of astronomers. Sir John, however, like his father, left this

important labour incomplete. Not only is the work one of great and con- tinuous effort, but the effects of ever-varying meteoro- logical conditions greatly impede it. Moreover, there is an unsatisfactory indefiniteness attending all estimations made by the unaided eye ; numerical or quantitative com- parisons are out of the question, and hence we find Sir John, in the very midst of establishing his "sequences," adopting also an instrumental method which might lead him to more definite results,

In the year when Sir John Herschel concluded his photometric work at the Cape (1838) Dr Argelander com- menced, and in 1843 completed, his Uranometria Nova, in which the magnitudes of all stars visible to the unaided eye in central Europe are catalogued with a precision and completeness previously unknown. It contains 3256 stars, and although it will probably be superseded by instru- niental photometry it must ever remain a monument of intelligent patience. Argelander's labours were confined to stars visible to the naked eye; by the aid of his assist- ants, Dr Schénfeld and Dr Kriiger, a catalogue of magni- tudes and celestial coordinates was ultimately published in their well-known Durchmusterung, extending to the enormous number of 324,000 stars.

Dr Gould also, in his Uranometria Argentina, has done similar work for stars visible only in the southern hemi- sphere, and with the aid of his colleagues has attained to an exactness and precision in his estimations of stellar lustre certainly not hitherto surpassed. There have been other worthy labourers in the same field, each of whom has rendered efficient service, such as Dr Heis and M. Houzeau ; but it is chiefly to the labours of Argelander and Gould that astronomers at present make their appeal,

It is to Sir John Herschel that we are indebted for the first successful attempt at stellar photometry by what may

1 Phil. Trans., 1796, p. 184.

jana iO aa Lae

be termed "artificial" means. By the aid of appliances of the simplest kind he deflected the light of the moon (by means of the internal reflexion of a rectangular prism) through a small lens 0°12 inches in diameter and of very

short focus, 0°2253 inches, so as to form a sort of artificial star in its focus. By the instrumentality of strings and a wooden pole he could move this artificial star of compari- son so as to be in the same line of sight with any actual star whose light he proposed to measure. Other strings enabled him to remove this microscopic lunar image to such a distance from the eye that its light was adjudged to be sensibly the same as that of the star compared. The dis- tance of the short focused lens with the image contiguous to it was measured by a graduated tape, and the inverse squares of these distances afforded relative numerical mea- sures of the brightness of the several stars thus brought into ocular juxtaposition with the equalized light of the tiny lunar image. In this way he proceeded with the ob- servations of a considerable number of stars, and these, by appropriate methods, were reduced so as to afford the means of the comparison of their relative brightness when set side by side with results obtained by means of his '" sequences," and with the estimated magnitudes of preceding astro- nomers. Sir John, however, did not go on to the formation of a complete "uranometria." While he was thus busy at the Cape of Good Hope, Steinheil at Munich had com- pleted for Dr Seidel an instrument nearly the same in principle but more manageable in form. He divided the small object-glass of a telescope into two halves, one of which was movable in the direction of its axis. The images of two stars whose light he desired to compare were formed by the intervention of prismatic reflexion, nearly in the same line of sight, and one of the lenses was then moved until the light of the two stars near the respective foci of the semi-lenses seemed equal to the judgment of the observer's eye. The distance through which it was neces- sary to bring the movable lens furnished the data for com- paring the relative lustre of the two stars in question. A large amount of work was thus achieved by Seidel, which for a considerable time has been, with greater or less reason, regarded as worthy of confidence in regard to precision (Trans. Mun. Acad., vol. ii.). Br Zéllner substituted the deflected and reduced image of a lamp for one of Steinheil's stars, and the intensity of this light, or artificial star, he could by means of double refraction reduce in any measur- able proportion he pleased according to the well-known relations of polarized light. In this way he could equalize the light of the artificial lamp- star with that of the real star with which he compared it; and the division of the lens was thus dispensed with, but a new difficulty was intro- duced in the impossibility of maintaining the constancy of the flame. Dr Zéllner also

availed himself of the effects of double refraction in altering at will the colour of his artificial star of comparison. This ingenious form of photometer has enjoyed considerable reputation, but no astronomer has yet persevered in producing a complete '"'uranometria" by its aid. The most recent and probably the most successful device for a stellar photometer on the principle of equalizing lights is that invented by Professor Pickering of Harvard College. He deflects the light of Polaris, or of some other star such as A Ursa Minoris, by means of prismatic reflexion, and he contrives to form an image of it contiguous to the image of any other star selected on the meridian. The equalization of the lights is then effected by the intervention of a polarizing appa- ratus, such as that adopted by Zéllner. Thus the artificial and in many respects objectionable lamp-star of Zéllner is dispensed with. Professor Pickering, with singular invent- ive power, has devised many other forms of stellar photo- meters on virtually the same principle; for a detailed

Mm her ROY S41

account of these labours the reader is referred to the Annals of the Harvard College Observatory (vol. xi.). Unlike his eminent predecessors, the American astronomer is persever- ing in the formation of a complete catalogue of star- magnitudes,

It has been already stated that mere estimations of relative brightness by the unaided eye are inadequate to the production of numerical quantitative results. In the instrumental devices explained, whether by means of the alteration of distances or by the known alteration of planes of polarization, no such defect exists. By their means it is possible to obtain a fairly exact numerical expression for the ratio of the intensities of the two lights measured. On applying a photometric measurement it is found that

- the ratio of the intensities of the lights in passing from one

magnitude to the next, even in the conventional magni- tudes of Argelander and Gould, is not by any means con- stant, and even hardly definite. At the suggestion of Mr Pogson it is now generally accepted by astronomers. that the adopted and conventional ratio of the intensity of light in passing from one magnitude to another shall be 27512, a convenient number because its

logarithm is ‘4, which is easily remembered, and still more so because on the whole it agrees better than any other number with the varying light-ratio existing among the hitherto received orders of magnitude obtained by eye-estimation alone.

There remains still another principle on which a stellar photometer may be successfully formed, and which has been recently largely applied to.the determination of star- magnitudes at the university observatory, Oxford. It is constructed on the principle that the absorption of light in passing through a uniform medium depends, ceteris paribus, upon the thickness. On this principle a thin wedge is constructed of homogeneous and nearly neutral-tinted glass, through which the images of stars formed in the focus of a telescope are viewed. Simple means are con- trived for measuring with great exactness the several thicknesses at which the light of these telescopic star- images is extinguished. In this way the light of any star can be readily compared with that of Polaris (or any other selected star) at the moment of observation, and tlius a catalogue of star-magnitudes can be formed. This method has been already applied by Professor Pritchard to all the brighter stars north of the equator; the results are published in the forty-seventh volume of the Memoirs of the Royal Astronomical Society, and are to be speedily followed by a complete catalogue, extending to all the stars in Argelander’s Uranometria Nova north of the equator, and to a few others beyond. For the details of the processes adopted the reader must here, as in all other cases, consult the original researches.

Even in a rapid sketch of so extensive a subject some notice must be taken of the application of photometry to the determination of the relative amount of light received on the earth from the sun, the moon, and the planets. The methods by which these ratios have been obtained are as simple as they are ingenious ; and for them we are mainly indebted to the labours of Bouguer and Bond. The former philosopher compared the light received from the sun with that from the moon in the following fashion in 1725. A hole one-twelfth of a Paris inch was made in the shutter of a darkened room; close to it was placed a concave lens, and in this way an image of the sun 9 inches in diameter was received on a screen. Bouguer found that this light was equal to that of a candle viewed at 16 nches from his eye. A similar experiment was repeated with the light of the full moon. The image now formed was

only two-thirds of an inch in diameter, and he found that the light of this image was comparable with that of the same candle viewed at a distance of 50 feet. From

these data and a very simple calculation it followed that the light of the sun was about 256,289 times that of the moon. Other experiments followed, and the average of all the results was that the light of the.sun was about 300,000 times the average light of a full moon, both being viewed in the heavens at the same altitudes. The details will be found in Bouguer's Z'raité @Optique. Wollaston in 1829 tried a series of experiments in which the ratio 801,072 was obtained ; but the omission of certain necessary pre-cautions vitiates the result (Phil. Trans., 1829). Bond (Mem. Amer. Acad., 1851, p. 295) adopted a different process. He formed the image of the sun on a silvered globe of some 10 inches diameter ; the light of this image was reflected on to a small mercurial thermometer bulb ; and then this second image was compared with a Bengal light so moved that the lights appeared to be equal. The same process was adopted with the full moon instead of with the sun. The result was that the sun's light was 470,980 times that of the moon. Seidel long before this date had compared the light of the mean full moon with that of Jupiter in mean opposition ; his result is 6430. So also this light of Jupiter was found to be °4864 times that of Venus at her brightest; and Jupiter was found to give 8-2 times the light of a Lyre. If, then, these numbers could be accepted with confidence, we should have the means of comparing the light received from the sun with that received from any of the stars. Adopting these pre- carious numbers on the authorities of Bond and Seidel we have the following results—

Sun's light= 470,980 that of the full moon. a = 622,600,000 ,, Venus at her brightest. – = 302,835,000 ,, Jupiter at mean opposition. 5, =5,970,500,000 ,, Sirius.

Lastly, Bouguer, by comparing the light of the full moon viewed at different altitudes with an artificial light, found that the atmosphere absorbs °1877 of the light incident on it at the zenith of any place. Professor Pritchard, from

photometric measures taken at Cairo, found this number to be °157. At Oxford it was ~~209. Thus Bouguer's determination indicates an absorptive capacity in the atmosphere of Brittany just midway between those of Oxford and Cairo. Seidel at Munich expresses "sur~~ prise" at finding his own results so nearly accordant with Bouguer's. These numbers, therefore, may be regarded as close approximations to fact. Oe)

PHOTOPHONE. See TELEPHONE.

PHRENOLOGY. This name was given by Forster in 1815 to the empirical system of psychology formulated by Gall and developed by his followers, especially by Spurz- heim and Combe. At first it was named "cranioscopy," "craniology," "'physiognomy," or "zoonomy," but Forster's naine was early adopted by Spurzheim, and became that whereby the system is now known. The principles upon which it is based are four: (1) the brain is the organ of the mind ; (2) the mental powers of man can be analysed into a definite number of independent faculties ; (3) these faculties are innate, and each has its seat in a definite region of the brain ; (4) the size of each of these regions is the measure of the power of manifesting the faculty associated with it. While phrenology is thus, on the one hand, a system of mental philosophy, it has a second and more popular aspect as a method whereby the disposition and character of the individual may be ascertained. These two sides of the subject are distinct from each other, for,

' Since this article was put in type, Professor Pickering at Harvard College has published his concluded results. Professor Pritchard at Oxford has also completed his photometric measures of some 2000 of the same stars. Taken as a whole, and as comprising the first com- plete and systematic efforts in a new and difficult line of research. the agreements of the two catalogues may fairly be regarded as very satis- factory, not to say surprising.

while it can only serve as a reliable guide for reading character on the assumption of its truth as a philosophic system, yet the possibility of its practical application does not necessarily follow from the establishment of the truth of its theoretic side. .

History.—That the phenomena of mind are in some measure connected with the action of the brain has been recognized from a very early age of philosophy. It is true that Aristotle? describes the brain as the coldest and most bloodless of bodily organs, of the nature of water and earth, whose chief purpose is to temper the excessive heat of the heart, as the cooler regions of the firmament condense the vapours rising from the earth. In his view, as in that of most of the earlier writers of other nations of antiquity, the heart is the seat of hfe; to it, not to the brain, the Hebrew writers refer thoughts and affections, while they considered judgment as seated sometimes in the head, sometimes in the kidneys. This was, likewise, the teach- ing of the ancient Egyptian philosophy ; and hence, while many rites were practised and many prayers offered for the preservation of the heart of the deceased, the brains were passed over with very little precaution for their pre- servation.4 The influence of the Aristotelian teaching is traceable in that of some of the earlier classic writings on philosophy, as is that of the Hebrews in our own collo- quial language ; but we learn from Diogenes Laertius° that much more accurate physiological views were held by Pythagoras, who believed the mind and the intellect to have their seat in the brain. The theory of Hippocrates was Pythagorean rather than Aristotelian, for, although in one passage in his work De Corde he expresses himself rather doubtfully, yet elsewhere he clearly states that he considers the brain to be the index and messenger of the intellect.6 The cerebral seat of sense-perception is also taught by Plato,' who puts into the mouth of Socrates the theory that the brain is the organ affected by the senses, whereby memory and opinion arise, and from whence know- ledge springs. The classic poets also notice this depend- ence of mind on brain; for example, in the Clouds (v. 1276) Strepsiades accuses Amynias of not being in his right mind, and, on being asked why, responds, '"' You seem to me as if you had had a concussion of the brain."

The two founders of anatomical science, Erasistratus and Herophilus, who lived in the days of Ptolemy Soter, taught not only that the brain was the seat of sensation and of intellect, but also that there was therein a certain degree of localization of function. Erasistratus believed that the sensory nerves arose from the brain-membranes, the motor from the cerebral substance. Herophilus was apparently the first who held that the vital forces resided in and circulated from the ventricles of the brain, at least so we

gather from Celsus and the other authors who have preserved his views. By the influence of the writings of Galen,® which directly teach that the brain is the seat of

2 De partibus animalium, ii. c. 7 (Paris, 1629, p. 986).

3 In the Chaldee portion of Daniel (ii. 28, iv. 5, vii. 1) visions and thoughts are referred to the head. For other particulars as to early views see Nasse on the psychical relations of the heart in Zeitschr. f. psychische Aerate, i.,1818. A few of the later medical writers express similar views ; see Santa Cruz, Opuscula medica, Madrid, 1624.

4 Book of the Dead, ch. xxvi.-xxx.

> viii. 30, ed. Cobet, Paris, 1850, p. 211,—“ @pévas 6¢ xai vodv, ra év TH eryKepary.”

§ “De morbo sacro,” in Opp., ed. Ktihn, i. 612 sq.; also Epist., iii. 824. Among later writers Licetus of Genoa taught the coextension of soul and body, upon which subject he wrote two books (Padua, 1616). In this connexion may be noted a curious work by Schegkius, Dia- logus de anime principatu, Aristotelis et Galeni rationes preferens quibus ille cordi, hic cerebro, principatum atirtbuit, Tiibingen, 1542.

7 Phedo, ch. xlv., Valpy’s ed., 1838, p. 128. See also Haller’s Bibl. anat., i. 30.

8 De usu partium, ed. Kiihn, iii. 700,—‘ ras pev ofv dodelées TOU THY AoyLoTIKhY Wuxi oikely év eyxépary, Kal mvedua WuxeKdy

soul and intellect, the Pythagorean doctrine became uni- versally received among philosophers. According to the Galenical theory of life, the animal spirits arising from the brain are conveyed thence by the arteries through the body. These animal spirits have their origin in the ven- tricles of the brain, and pass thence to the heart. It is true that in one place (viii. 159) he refers their origin to the cerebral substance, but the ventricular theory was

that adopted by his followers. This view is held by the Greek physicians,' some of whom even speculated on the relation of the intellect to the shape and size of the head. The Arabians adopted the same hypothesis, so we find Aver- rhoes? correcting Aristotle's notion of cerebral physiology in favour of Galen's view. Rhazes? also extended this by giving a sketch of a scheme of psychic localization ; and Avicenna added to the regions recognized by pre- vious authors by interpolating one of his own. Such of the early Christian authors as had occasion to refer in their writings to the relation of soul to body naturally adopted the teaching of Galen, and suited it to their theology, thereby conferring on it an importance which rendered correction difficult. Thomas Aquinas® thus ex- presses his acquiescence in the theory of localization, as also in a sense does Tertullian.®*

Early in the 13th century Albertus Magnus' gave a detailed description of the distribution of mental and psychical faculties in the head. The anterior region he assigned to judgment, the middle to imagination, and the posterior to memory. A somewhat similar allocation was made by Gordon, professor of medicine in Montpellier (1296), who assigned common sensation and the reception of impressions to the anterior cornua of the lateral ven- tricles, phantasia to the posterior, this power being two- fold (tmaginativa and cogitativa), judgment or xstimativa to the third ventricle, and memory to the fourth.® Figures of a similar division were given by Petrus Montagnana! and Lodovico Dolce," still later by Ghiradelli }? of Bologna and by Theodore Gall of Antwerp.!8 That the "vital spirits " resided in the ventricles was doubted by many, and refuted by a few of the anatomists of the 17th century. Bauhin in 162114 attacked the old view, and Hoffmann of Altorf

atr@ mepréxecOar waumodv." See also v. 288, viii. 159, xv. 360. In his Definitiones medice (467, xix. 459) he says that the brain has a puxixh Svvauts, but does not specify in what part the power inheres.

1 Sce Paulus Atgineta, Stephens's ed., 1567, cap. 62, col. 363, also Actuarius, De actionibus et affectibus spiritus animalis, Paris, 1556,

5 DOS Te 4 2 Comment. in Arist., Latin tr., Venice, 1550, vi. 73.

3 “Tmaginatio quidem in duobus ventriculis anterioribus perficitur. Cogitatio vero in medio expletur. Memoria autem posteriorem possidet ventriculam.” De re medica, Gérard’s tr., Basel, 1554, i. p. 9.

4 Lib. can., 1507, p. 19, and De naturalibus, c. 6.

5 Summa theologiw, ed. Migne, i. pp. 1094, 1106-7. – Prochaska and his translator Laycock (Jind and Brain, ii. 163) charge Duns Scotus with holding this view, which most probably he did; he does not express it, however, but simply specifies the cerebrum and its root, the spinal cord, as the source of the nerves along which sensory impulses travel. Comment. de anima, Leyden, 16387, i. 515.

6 De anima, exiv., ed. Franeker, 1597, p. 268.

7 Opera, Leyden, 1651, iii. 124, vi. 20.

& Lilium medicine, Venice, 1494, 101.

9 Avicenna’s fifth region is interposed between imaginativa and wstimativa (De naturalibus, c. vi.). Thomas Aquinas combines the last two, which he says are possessed by the same eminence (op. Cit. i. 1107). On the other hand, he says of ratio particulars, medici assionant determinatum organum, scilicet mediam partem capitis” (i. 1106). 10 Physiognomia, Padua, 1491.

11 Dialogo nel quale si ragione del modo di accrecere e conservar la memoria, Venice, 1562, 27. 12 Physiognomia, 1670.

13 Tabule element. scientiz, Rome, 1632.

14 Theatr. anat., Basel, 1621, iii. 314; Caspar Hoffmann, De usu cerebri, Leipsic, 1619. See also Spigelius, De corp. humant fabrica, Amsterdam, 1645, 296 ; Varolius, 1591, p. 6; Wepfer, Historiarum apoplecticarum potissimum anatonuz subjectorum aucta- rium, Amsterdam, 1681. See also many of the anatomical works of this age, such as those of Fernel, Cabrol, Argenterius, Rolfinck, &c.

showed that, as the ventricles were closed cavities, they could not transmit any material fluid. That these spirits existed at all was doubted by Alexander Benedictus,1® Plater,!® and a few others; but they were believed in by the great majority of 17th and even of 18th century medical writers, many of whom conceived that the ven- tricles were "semper pleni spiritibus animalibus flammulis similibus, quorum beneficiis intelligimus, sentimus,et move- mus,"!" and the opponents of this view were strongly assailed by Riolan and others as revolutionary. The grey matter of the surface of the cerebrum was first re- cognized as the true dynamic element by Malpighi 8 and Willis.19 The latter regarded the convoluted surface of the cerebrum as the seat of the memory and the will, the convolutions being intended to retain the animal spirits for the various acts of imagination and memory. Ima- gination he 'described as seated in the corpus callosum,

'Sense-perception in the corpus striatum, and impetus et

perturbatio in the basal parts of the cerebrum above the crura. The thalami he regarded as the centres of sight and the cerebellum of involuntary acts. Columbus"? ridi- culed the idea that the convoluted surface can have any- thing to do with intellect, as the ass, a proverbially stupid animal, has a convoluted cerebrum. According to his view, the convolutions are for the purpose of lightening the brain and facilitating its movements. Succeeding anatomists simply varied these localizations according to their respective fancies. Lancisi placed sensc- perception in the corpus callosum, Vieussens in the centrum ovale majus. Descartes supposed the soul to be seated in the pineal gland, Lotze in the pons Varolii.2!_ Meyer considered abstract ideas to arise in the cerebellum, and memory to have its seat at the roots of the nerves.22

Of later writers three deserve special notice as having largely prepared the way for the more modern school of phrenology. Unzer of Halle in his work on physiology ex- tended the pre-existing theories of localization. Metzger, twenty years before the publication of Prochaska's work, had proposed to make a series of observations on the anatomical characters of the brains of persons of marked intellectual peculiarity ; but it is not known to the present writer whether he ever carried this into effect. In a more special manner Prochaska of Vienna may be looked upon as the father of

*phrenology, as in his work on the nervous system, published in Vienna in 1784, are to be found the germs of the later views which were propounded in that city twelve years later.*4*

The system formulated by Gall is thus a modern ex- pansion of an old empirical philosophy, and its immediate parentage is easily traced, although, according to Gall's

15 Alexander Benedictus, Anatomica, vol. iii., Basel, 1527. Quer- cetanus is said by Laycock (following Prochaska) to have assailed this doctrine of spirits,—on what ground is not apparent, as he certainly expresses himself as a believer in the old view; see Tetras graviss. totius capitis affect., Marburg, 1606, x. 89. Possibly Prochaska may allude to an obscure passage in the work of the other Quercetanus (Eustachius), Acroamaton in librum Hippocratis, Basel, 1549, p. 14, not to the better-known Josephus Armeniacus, but he gives no reference.

16 Onera, Basel, 1625, col. 22, 89.

WW Joelis opera medica, Amsterdam; 1668, 22.

18 "Fpist. de cerebro et cort. cereb. ad Fracassatum,' Geneva, 1685, vol. ii.

19 De anima brutoruwm, Oxford, 1677, p. 71, "he particule sub- tilissime, spiritus animales dicte, partium istarum substantias corti- eales primo subeuntes, exinde in utriusque meditullia," &c., also p. 76 sq.

2 De re anatomica, Frankfort, 1598, p. 350.

21 Fechner, Psychophysica, ti. 382.

22 Some of the medieval views were very fanciful, thus Schabtai Donolo taught that the spirit of life has its seat in the brain-mem- brane, expanded over the brain and subarachnoid fiuid, as the Shekinah in the heavens arched over the earth and waters. See Der Mensch als Gottes Hbenbild, ed. Jellinek, Leipsic, 1854.

23 Vermischte medicinische Schriften, 1764, i. 58.

24 Sce Laycock's trans., in Sydenh. Soctety's Pub., 1851.

>

in Opp.,

844

account, it arose with him as the result of independent observations. These, he tells us, he began to make at an early age, by learning to correlate the outward appearances and mental qualities of his schoolfellows.1 Gall's first published paper was a letter in the Deutscher Merkur of December 1798, but his principal expositions were oral, and attracted much popular attention, which largely increased when, in 1802, he was commanded by the Austrian Govern- ment, at the instance of the ecclesiastical authorities, to discontinue his public lectures. In 1804 he obtained the co-operation of Spurzheim (1776-1832), a native of Long- wich near Treves, who became his pupil in 1800, and proved a powerful ally in promulgating the system. Master and pupil at first taught in harmony, but they found it advis- able to separate in 1813; and we find Spurzheim, several years after their parting, declaring that Gall had not introduced any new improvements into his system since their separation (notes to Chenevix, p. 99). " My philo- sophical views," he also says, "' widely differ from those of Gall."

In Paris, where he settled in 1807, Gall made many influential converts to his system. Broussais, Blainville, Cloquet, Andral, Geoffroy St-Hilaire, Vimont, and others warmly attached themselves to it, and countenanced its progress. Gall visited Great Britain, but the diffusion of phrenology there was chiefly due to Spurzheim, who lec- tured through the country and through America, and, with the aid of his pupil George Combe, soon attracted a large popular following. His most influential disciples were Elliotson, Andrew Combe, Mackenzie, Macnish, Laycock, and Archbishop Whately, and in America Caldwell and Godman. On the opposite side many influential men took up a strongly antagonistic position, prominent among whom were Barclay the anatomist, Roget, Sir Charles Bell, Sir W. Hamilton, Jeffrey, Brougham, T. Brown, and Sir B. Brodie. The nature of the system rendered it eminently fitted to catch public attention, and it rapidly attained to so great a degree of popularity that in 1832 there were twenty-

nine phrenological societies in Great Britain, and several journals devoted to phrenology in Britain and America ; of these the Phrenological Journal, a quarterly edited chiefly by George Combe with aid from others of the Edinburgh confraternity, notably Sir George Mackenzie and Macnish, "the modern Pythagorean," lived from 1823 to 1847, through twenty volumes. The. controversy in many places was heated and often personal, and this largely increased the popular interest. In the Hdinburgh Review the theory was severely criticized by Thomas Brown, and afterwards in a still more trenchant manner by J effrey. In Blackwood it was ridiculed by Professor Wilson. Being a subject which lent itself easily to burlesque, it was parodied cléverly in a long rhyme by two authors, "The Craniad," 87 pages long, published in 1817, while, on the other hand, verse was pressed into its service in the rhyme " Phrenology in Edinburgh" in 1824.2 The best defence of the system was that by Chenevix in the third number of the Foreign Quarterly, afterwards reprinted with notes by Spurzheim.

The popularity of phrenology has waned, and few of the phrenological societies now survive; the cultivation of the system is confined to a few enthusiasts such as will be found attached to any cause, and some professional teachers who follow phrenology as a vocation, Like many similar systems, it has a much larger following in

America than in Europe. Based, like many other artificial | philosophies, on an admixture of assumption and truth, |

' For a brief sketch of the life of Gall, see GALL, vol. x. p. 37.

? Other burlesque and satirical writings were published at this time, notably The Phrenologists, a farce by Wade, 1830 ; The Headpiece, or Phrenology opposed to Divine Revelation, by James the Less ; and A Helmet for the Headpicce, or Phrenology incompatible with Reason, by Daniel the Seer.

Poi Rell NOME OG: Y

certain parts will survive and become incorporated into scientific psychology, while the rest will in due course come to be relegated to the limbo of effete heresies.

The Faculties and their Localities.—The system of Gall was constructed by a method of pure empiricism, and his so-called organs were for the most part identified on slender grounds, Having selected the place of a faculty, he ex- amined the heads of his friends and casts of persons with that peculiarity in common, and in them he sought for the distinctive feature of their characteristic trait. Some of his earlier studies were made among low associates, in jails, and in lunatic asylums, and some of the qualities located by him were such as tend to become perverted to crime. These he named after their excessive manifestations, map- ping out organs of murder, theft, &c. ; but as this cast some discredit on the system the names were changed by Spurz- heim, who claimed as his the moral and religious consider- ations associated with it. Gall marked out on his model of the head the places of twenty-six organs as round en- closures with vacant interspaces. Spurzheim and Conibe divided the whole scalp into oblong and conterminous patches (see the accompanying figures). Other methods of division and other names have been suggested by succeed- ing authors, especially by Cox, Sidney Smith (not Sydney), Toulmin Smith, Carus of Dresden, Don Mariano Cubi i Solar, Powell of Kentucky, Buchanan of Cincinnati, Hittel of New York. Some, like the brothers Fowler, raise the number of organs to forty-three ; but the system of Spurz- heim and Combe is that which has always been most popular in Britain.

Spurzheim separated the component faculties of the human mind into two great groups and subdivided these' as follows.

I. Feelings, divided into— 1. Propensities, internal impulses inviting only to certain actions. 2. Sentiments, impulses which prompt to emotion as well as to action. A. Lower,—those common to man and the lower animals. B. Higher,—those proper to man. II. Intellectual faculties.

1. Pereeptive faculties. 2. Reflective faculties.

Im the following list the locality and the circumstances of the first recognition of the organ are appended to the names, which are mostly the inventions of Spurzheim. Gall's names are placed in brackets.?

Propensities.

(1) Amativeness (Instinct de la génération), median, below the inion ; first determined by Gall from its heat in an hysterical widow, supposed to be confirmed by many observations, and referred to the cerebellum.4

(2) Philoprogenitiveness (Amour de la progéniture), median, on the squama oeeipitis, and selected as the organ for the love of children because this part of the skull is usually more prominent in apes and in women, in whom the love of children is supposed to be stronger than in men.

(3) Concentrativeness, below the obelion and over the lambda. This is a region of uncertain function, unnoticed by Gall, but de- scribed as Inhabitiveness by Spurzheim, because he found it large in cats and ina clergyman fond of his home. It has since been con- sidered by Combe to be the seat of the power of concentration, whereof he belicved Inhabitiveness to be a special case.

(4) Adhesiveness (Amitié), over the lateral convoluted area of the lambdoidal suture. This region was prominent in a lady intro- duced to Gall as a model of friendship, and is said by him to be the region where persons who are closely attached put their heads together.

(5) Combativeness (Instinct de la défensc}, above the asterion ; it was found by Gall by examining the heads of the most quarrelsome

% For topographical purposes Broca's names are adopted as the most convenient for localities on the head.

4 Apollonius Rhodius speaking of the love of Medea for Jason (Argonautica, iii. 760-765) says, "ddxpu & dw' éb0aduGy péev &vdo0 3d aiel reip' ddtvn cutxovoa did xpods, dudl dpaias ivos cal Kepadfs, umd velarov iviov dypis, .. ."*

of his low companions whom he had beforehand stimulated by alcohol. It was verified by comparing this region with the same part of the head of a quarrelsome young lady.

/

eee ss t “a NE enn – i

/

.

/

(6) Destructiveness (Instinet earnassier), above the ear meatus. This is the widest part of the skulls of carnivorous animals, and was found large in the head of a student so fond of torturing animals that he became a surgeon, also large in the head of an apothecary who became an executioner.

(6a) Alimentiveness, over the temporal muscle and above the ear. Hoppe describes it as being large in a gourmand aequaintance, and he therefore supposes it to be the organ of selecting food.

(7) Secretiveness (Ruse, Finesse), the posterior part of the squam- ous suture.

(8) Aequisitiveness (Sentiment de la propriété), on the upper edge of the front half of the squamous suture. This part of the head Gall noticed to be prominent in the pickpockets of his acquaintance.

(9) Constructiveness (Sens de méchanique), on the stephamnion ; deteeted by its prominence on the heads of persons of mechanical genius. It was found large on the head of a milliner of uncommon taste and on a skull reputed to be that of Raphael.

The organ of Vitativeness, or love of life, is supposed by Combe to be seated at the base of the skull. To this locality Herophilus referred most of the intellectual powers.

Lower Sentiments.

(10) Self-esteem (Orgueil, Fierté), at and immediately over the obelion ; found by Gall in a beggar who excused his poverty on account of his pride.

This was confirmed by the observation that proud persons held their heads backwards in the line of the organ.

(11) Love of Approbation (Vanité), outside the obelion; the region in which Gall saw a protuberance on the head of a lunatic who fancied herself queen of France. : ;

(12) Cautiousness (Cireonspection), on the parietal eminenec ; placed here because an ecclesiastic of hesitating disposition and a vacillating councillor of state had both large parietal eminences.

Superior Sentiments.

(13) Benevolence (Bonté), on the middle of the frontal bone in front of the coronal suture ; here Gall noticed a rising on the head of the highly-commended servant of a friend, as well as on a bene- volent schoolmate who nursed his brothers and_ sisters when they were ill. To this spot Xenocrates referred the intellectual powers. hie ‘

(14) Veneration (Sentiment réligieux), median at the bregma. Gall noted when visiting churches that those who prayed with the greatest fervour were prominent in this region, and it was also pro- minent in a pious brother.

845

(15) Conscientiousness, unknown to Gall ; recognized by Spurz- heim usually from its deficiency, and placed between the last and the parietal eminence.

(16) Firmness (Fermeté), median, on the sagittal suture from behind the bregma to the front of the obelion. Lavater first pointed out that persons of determination had lofty heads.

(17) Hope, not regarded as primary by Gall, who believed hope to be akin to desire and a function of every faculty which desires, and left this territory unallocated.

(18) Wonder, said to be large in vision-seers and many psychic researchers. A second similar organ placed between this and the next is called Mysterizingness by Forster, and is said to preside over belief in ghosts and the supernatural.

(19) Ideality (Poésie), noted by Gall from its prominence in the busts of poets ; said to be the part touched by the hand when ecom- posing poetry.

(20) Wit (Esprit caustique), the frontal eminence, the organ of the sense of the ludicrous, prominent in Rabelais and Swift.

(21) Imitation (Faculté dimiter), disposition to mimicry, placed between Benevolence and Wonder.

Pereeptive Faculties.

(22) Individuality, over the frontal sinus in the middle line; the capacity of recognizing external objects and forming ideas therefrom ; said to have been large in Michelangelo, and small in the Seots.

(28) Form (Mémoire des personnes), capacity of recognizing faces ; gives a wide interval between the eyes ; found by Gall in a squinting girl with a good memory for faces.

(24) Size, over the trochlea at the orbital edge; described by Spurzheim and Vimont as the capacity of estimating space and distanee.

(25) Weight, outside the last on the orbital edge and, like it, over the frontal sinus. The prominence of ridge here is due to large sinus or a projecting bone. Certain old writers, such as Strato Physiecus, loeated the whole intellect in this ridge.

(26) Colour, also on the orbital edge external to the last.

(27) Loeality (Sens de loealité), placed above Individuality on each side, and corresponding to the upper part of the frontal sinus and to the region immediately above it.

(28) Number, on the external angular proccss of the frontal bone, large in a ealeulating boy in Vienna.

(29) Order, internal to the last, first noted by Spurzheim in an orderly idiot.

(30) Eventuality (Afémoire des choses), the median projection above the glabella, supposed to be the seat of the memory of events.

(31) Time, below the frontal eminence and a little in front of the temporal crest.

(32) Tune (Sens des rapports des tons), on the foremost part of the temporal muscle, where Gall noticed a bulge on the head of a musical prodigy of five.

(33) Language (Sens des mots), behind the eye. This was the first organ noticed by Gall, as a elever schoolfellow, quick at lan- guages, had prominent eyes. Old authors have noted the con- nexion between prominent eyeballs and mental development ; thus Gazzali and Syenensis Medicus Cyprius place the intellect and soul in and behind the eyeballs.

Reflective Faculties.

(34) Comparison (Sagaeité comparative), median, at the top of the bare region of the forehead, where a savant friend of Gall's, fond of analogies, had a prominent boss.

(35) Causality (Esprit métaphysique), the eminence on each side of Comparison, noticed on the head of Fichte and on a bust of Kant ; the seat of the faeulty of correlating causes and effects.

The first identification of each organ was made by an induction from very limited data, but the founders and exponents of the system have collected all available instances wherein enlargements of each of these regions coexisted with increased powers of the faculty supposed to reside therein, and in some cases they have discovered coineidenees of a surprising nature. When, however, such do not exist, a convenient excuse is found by reference to the indefinite article of temperament, or by a supposed explanation of the faeulty in question as not simple but produeed by the co-operation of other

influences. Thus, as Sheridan's bump of wit was small, he is said not to have been truly witty, but to have had eomparison and memory strongly developed. The girl Labrosse (described in Férussac's Bulletin for October 1831), who exhibited strong amative- ness but had a rudimentary cerebellum, is said to have obliterated it by over-use. Thurtell, a cold-blooded murderer whose organ of benevolence was large, is said to have been generous, as he once gave half a guinea to a friend, &c.

The method whereby the sizes of organs are estimated is arbitrary and the boundaries of the regions indefinite. The attempts of Nicol, Straton, and Wight to devise mechanical and accurate modes of measurement have not been very successful and have not found favour with the professional phrenologist.

Anatomical Aspect of Phrenology.—The phrenological |

controversy served the useful purpose of stimulating research into the anatomy of the brain; but we owe very little of solid progress to the advocates of the system. Gall is the only writer of his creed in whose works original observations of value are to be found. Although the study of the surface of the cerebrum is of the essence of phreno- logy, yet nowhere in the circle of phrenological literature are the convolutions of the brain accurately described ; our knowledge of their order and disposition comes from the morphologist, not from the phrenologist. The first real step towards their systematic description was made by Rolando,! who in 1830 described the fissure to which his name is attached, and very little advance was made until the publication in 1856 of Gratiolet's ? and Huschke's? memoirs. These works for the first time placed the de- scription of the surface of the brain, imperfectly attempted by Desmoulins in 1825, on a satisfactory basis. Most of the anatomical details contained in the works on phreno- logy relate to controversial matters of secondary importance, and presuppose the truth of the theory ; but even in con- nexion with these they give us no statistical details of any value. It would be important, for instance, to have tabulated a sufficiently large number of measurements of the relative thicknesses of scalp and skull in different regions, of the variations in development of the diploe, of the varying range of the frontal*

sinus; but of these we find no sufficient nor definite researches in the whole circle of books cited below. :

As under Anatomy (vol. i. p. 874) a careful descrip- tion of the brain has been given, we need only allude to such anatomical points involved in the examination of phrenology as are not included in that account.

i. Any psychological theory which correlates brain-action and mental phenomena requires a correspondence between brain-size and mental power; aud, speaking generally, we find that the brains of those whose capacities are above the average are larger

than those of the general run of their fellow-men. The details

of brain-weights will be found at pp. 879, 880 of the article

cited.

2. Direct measurements of the relative devclopments of different portions of brains are difficult and troublesome to make ; but their importance to phrenologists is so great that it is remarkable that no attempts to obtain any such were made by them. The series given by Wagner of the relative sizes of the cerebral lobes of four brains is almost the only record of importance in this direction, and is

*appended. nom | aes on | -,/ On ie i a Oe | ; | 2 : Se |2il ell & |. 3 3 SUS e | See mela t. i ale la|s ful Son leelee & IBLE |e 33/8 |S jad Po /lPsi8#S) 5 is4|n | s ae = ol eos =D fone mS om S Bo(e |e loc] 288 leclac, 8 eel oie Brainof | 65 a & las gasF leas BME} 2 [|S oA Oo |oo} Sa wp) ow F | ort] oS go| S| (Se) BES |SElHe| 3 eel els B8/8)3 le?) sae |S2i/se 2 84/8 |e Tis || gs | 2S | ese ee ee ao) ee Ss |s B/E |B? | S28 jaelss) IA | 5 le aa|é ee [aglee| & | * Ge a | a at, Fuchs, clinical teacher …./143+4/69°5/59 67°5) *419 | +203} ~~340 j210°7,281°3 342 {1499 Gauss, mathe~~ ¢ | matician ..|139 |70°6/59°4/68-4| -407 °207 | °374‘112-8:228-2i341 |1499]- Workman ….|113-262+3}50°3}62 | +385 | -214/-885| 97-4 193-6/201 [1273 — | ————\————)____ | ————=— |} WiOmane Jone. 180 |65 |51 /66-8| °409 +204} -370 107 *5 209 *9 317° 4/1185*

_ From this it appears that the woman exceeded Gauss in percep- tive and reflective organs, exceeded Fuchs in sentiment, and fell below the workman in propensities. It must be said, however, that the phrenological divisions do not accurately coincide with the anatomical. Other series constructed along these lines are very

*k Della Struttura degli Emisferi Cerebrali, Turin, 1830. * Mémoire sur les plis cérébrauz de Chomme et des primates, Paris, 1856.*

® Schddel, Hirn, und Seele, Jena, 1856. 4 Magendie and Desmoulins, Anat. du syst. nerveux, Paris, 1825.

much wanted, and it would furnish important physiological data if the brains of men distinguished for special qualities were examined in this or some comparable way.

3. It is important in relation to phrenology to ascertain the constancy of the convolutions. Many varieties in the detail of the surface-patterns have been recorded by Tenchini, Poggi, Gia- comini, Riidinger, and Sernow,? but the general plan is fairly uni- form. A still more important question has been recently raised by Langley, viz., how far identical spots on identical convolutions in different brains consist of nerve-cells with precisely the same connexions. The convoluted arrangement results from growth of brain-surface under constraint, hence as the different tracts of surface undergo proportional overgrowth they fold along different lines. The occurrence of small differences in the rate of overgrowth, testified to by the varieties of the resulting pattern, will cause con- siderable alteration in the place of definite territories of grey cells. Some method for the determination of the limits of these shiftings of place is much required.

4, The comparison of the rate of growth of brain with the development of mental faculties is important not only to the phrenologist but to the psychologist. No observations on this point were made by phrenological writers, and they simply refer to the first and rather crude observations of the earlier anatomists. We have, however, recently learned from the researches of Bischoff, Tuczec, and Exner® many particulars as to the rate and progress of brain-growth. At birth the brain weighs one-tenth of the weight of the body, and averages about 11 ounces. For the first year brain-

growth and consequently expansion of the skull proceed with great rapidity, the growth during a large part of this period averag- ing one cubic centimetre daily. This enormous increase is chiefly due to the rapid development of medullated nerve-fibres, which are deficient in the fcetal brain. During the second and third years growth takes place more slowly, the occipital and parietal lobes increasing more than the 'frontal or temporo-sphenoidal. During these and the four succeeding years the base elongates commensurately with the increasing depth of the face. In the sixth and seventh years the frontal lobes grow faster than the parietals, and at seven the average brain has attained the weight of 1340 grammes, being to the weight of the body as 1:20. In the period between seven years and puberty growth is slight, but at puberty the whole brain grows actively, especially the frontal lobes. This activity lasts until about eighteen years of age, then diminishes ; but the average brain does not reach its maximum size until about thirty, from a little after which period the brain tends to diminish towards senility.7 These measurements illustrate the relation between brain-growth and mental development, but are as casily explicable on any psychological theory of brain-action as on the phrenological. The relation supposed by Davaine to subsist between development of the brain and stature is not borne out by statistics.§

5. The estimation of the relative development of grey and white mattcr in the several lobes is important to any theory of cerebral dynamics which allocates functions specifically diverse to each separate part of the brain-surface; but no attempt has been made by the phrenologist to obtain precise results in this direction, nor even to determine the physical constants of the two forms of brain-matter. The recently-introduced method of Bourgoin and Danilewski, based upon the differing specific gravities of grey and white matter, promises to give definite information as to the relative amounts of these forms of brain-matter; but further cxperiments are needed to perfect the method.®

6. The relations, if any, between the alterations which take place in the shape and position of the head and alterations in brain-surface have been speculated on by the phrenologist. Broussais is reported to have said that his organ of causality had enlarged with increasing use, and a list of cases of similar alterations of head-shape is given by Deville (Phrén. Jour., xiv.

32), most of which are simply age- changes, of the kind described by Professor Cleland (Phil. Trans., 1870). There arc no exact measurements recorded which indicate the occurrence of topical increases of a normal brain in special directions coincident with the cultivation of definite faculties. All the so-called cases are given vaguely, with no measurements, and the careful measurements of George Combe in such cases as were available to him showed no appreciable alterations in adult heads even at long intervals of time (see also Andrew Combe, Phren. Journ. x. 414).

> Rivista Sperimentale di Freniatria, ii. 193 (1883) ; zbéd. iv. 408 ; Archiv fiir Anthropologie, 1879, xi. 289.

8 Neurologisches Centralblatt, 1888, p. 457.

7 Weisbach, Med. Jahrbuch der k. Gleselisch. der Aerzte, Vienna, 1869, xvii. 183 ; Merkel, Beitr. z. post-embryonale Lintwickelung des menschl. Schddel, Bonn, 1882; Calori, Afem. de l' Accad. di Bologna, WEVAL, x BYa,

8 Lebon, Revue d' Anthropologie, 1879, 15; Marshall, Proc. Roy. Soc., 1875, 564; Engel, Wiener med. Wochenschrift, 1863.

° Centralblatt, 1880, No. 14 ; Bettrage zur Biologie, Stuttgart, 1882.

ec]

Pie hat NO) OG Y

7. The phrenological want of knowledge of the topography of the brain-surface was necessarily correlated with ignorance of the exact relations of the convolutions to the interior of the cranial bones ; these have been carefully worked out by Huschke, Heffler, Turner, and Reid. Some latitude, however, must be allowed in

topography, as the exact relation of convolution to skull varies

with the shape of the skull. Giacomini showed that the fissure of Rolando is perceptibly farther back from the coronal suture in dolichocephalie than in

brachyccphalic skulls, and it is still farther back in the extreme boat-shaped form of long-headedness. Passet shows that there is a slight topographical difference in the two sexes (Arch. f. Anthrop., 1882, xiv. 89), and in the heads of those with unsymmetrically-shaped skulls there is often a want of lateral symmetry of convolution. Artificial deformations likewise alter the topographical relations of convolutions, and have served not a little to puzzle the phrenologist. Thus, the artificial dolichocephaly of the Caribs having bulged the squama occipitis, they decided that these people must be amiable lovers of children,! &c.

8. The existence of structural differences between different areas of cerebral surface is important to any theory of cerebral localiza- tion, but no phrenologist has given us any original information on this point. Since the investigation of Baillarger,? it has been shown that some local differentiations of structure do really exist. Thus in the convolutions around the fissure of Rolando the gan- glion-cells of the fourth layer are of large size (giant-cells of Betz), and in the convolutions of the temporo-sphenoidal lobe a layer of smal] angular cells (granule-cclls) is interposcd between the larger pyramidal and the ganglion-cells, so that, while in the parts of the brain above the fissure of Sylvius the grey cortex is for the most part five-layered, below and behind that fissure it is six-layered. There is no abrupt passage from the onc to the other, the only sudden transition of structure of the grey cortex being at the hippocampal sulcus ; and giant-cells, although of smaller size, and less like these of the anterior cornu of the spinal cord, are scattered over other parts of the cerebral grey matter. In fig. 71, vol. i. p. 874, the relations of the convolutions to the internal surface of the skull are represented, and their want of accurate correlation to the phreno- logical areas can be seen by comparing that figure with the fore- golng serics.

The teachings of anatomy with regard to phrenology may be summarized thus: (1) the rate of growth of brain is concurrent with the rate of development of mental faculty ; (2) there is some degree of structural differentiation as there are varying rates of development of different parts of the cerebral surface ; (3) there is no accordance between the regions of Gall and Spurzheim and definite areas of cerebral surface.

Physiological Aspect.—The theory of some of the older metaphysicians, that the mind, in feeling and reflexion, makes use of no material instrument is not now accepted by psychologists. It was advanced by Brougham and Jeffrey as against the theory of phrenology; but the doctrine that the brain is the organ of the mind is now universally received. While it is probable that certain molecular changes in the grey matter are antecedents or concomitants of mental phenomena, the precise nature of these processes, to what extent they take place, or how they vary among themselves have not as yet been deter- mined experimentally ; the occurrence of the change can only be demonstrated by some such coarse method as the altered pulsation of the carotid arteries, the increase of the temperature of the head,° the abstraction, during brain- action, of blood from other organs as shown by the plethys- mograph, or the formation of lecithin and other products of metabolism in brain-substance. As yet not a single step has been made towards the understanding of the con- nexion between the molecular changes in the nerve-cell and the phenomena of thought and feeling. While our*

1 Martius tells us that the Caribs castrate their own children, fatten and eat them, an abuse of the organ of philoprogenitiveness ; see also Garcilaso de la Vega, Hist. des Incas, i. 12.

2 Mém. del' Acad. de Médecine, 1840, vill. 149.

3 For further particulars of structure, in addition to the authors quoted at vol. i. p. 878, see Bevan-Lewis and Clark, P. R. S., 1878, and Phil. Trans., 1880 and 1882. a"

4 See Eugéne Gley, "Sur les Conditions Physiologiques de la Pensee,' in Archives de Physiologie, 1881, 742.

5 Lombard, N.Y. Med. Journal, June, 1867, and Experimental Researches on the Regional Temperature of the Head, London, 1872.

knowledge of the anatomy of the brain, especially of the grey nuclei and of the white bands uniting them, has within the last few years become much

more accurate, brain-function has not as yet been so definitely determined ; indeed, much of nerve-physiology, especially that part which relates to the division of labour in the nerve-centres, is largely hypothetical and based on anatomical structure. Certain masses of grey nerve-matter situated in the spinal cord and medulla oblongata are so linked by nerve-cords to organs outside the nervous system which are set apart for the discharge of separate functions that they obviously form parts of the mechanism for the fulfilment of such functions. In the cases where these can be subjected to experiment we learn that they are nervous centres presid- ing over the discharge of such functions; and it has been determined by experiment, or else deduced from anatomical structure, that in those lower parts of the nervous centres which are more directly connected with the segmental elements of the body there is a certain localization of function ; hence the centres of pelvic actions, of respira- tion, cardiac action, and inhibition of vaso-motor influence, deglutition, secretions, &c., can be mapped out in ascend- ing series. As certain of these centres are united by bands of fibres to the larger and higher-lying grey portions of the nervous centres there is an a priori presumption in favour of the extension of this principle of -localization. This has been premised on metaphysical as well as on anatomical grounds. Bonnet believed each portion of the brain to have a specifically separate function, and Herbert Spencer has said that "no physiologist can long resist the conviction that different parts of the cerebrum subserve different kinds of mental action.

Localization of function '

is the law of all organization whatever ; separateness of |

duty is universally accompanied with separateness of struc- ture, and it would be marvellous were an exception to exist in the cerebral heniispheres. Let it be granted that the cerebral hemispheres are the seats of the higher psychical

activities; let it be granted that among these higher !

psychical activities there are distinctions of kind which,

though not definite, are yet practically recognizable, and |

it cannot be denied, without going in direct opposition to established physiological principles, that these more or less distinct kinds of psychical activity must be carried on in more or less distinct parts of the cerebral hemisphere."

For the results of experiment on the brain, see Puysio- LOGY, section " Nervous System."

There is a large weight of evidence, which cannot be explained away, in favour of the existence of some form of localization of function. So little is known of the physical changes which underlie psychical phenomena, or indeed of the succession of the psychical processes them- selves, that we cannot as yet judge as to the nature of the mechanism of these centres. So much of the psychic work of the individual life consists in the interpretation of sen- sations and the translation of these into motions that there are strong a priort grounds for expecting to find much of the material of the nerve-centres occupied with this kind of work, but in the present conflict of experimental evi- dence it is safer to suspend judgment. That these local areas are not centres in the sense of being indispensable parts of their respective motor apparatuses is clear, as the function abolished by ablation of a part returns, though tardily, so that whatever superintendence the removed region exercised apparently becomes assumed by another part of the brain.® Experimental physiology and pathology, by suggesting other functions for much of the brain-surface, are thus directly subversive of much of the phrenology of Gall and Spurzheim.

Bianchi, Za Psichiatria, i. 97.

=

§ For cases, see Rochefontaine, Archives de Physiologie, 1883, 28 ;

Psychological Aspect.—The fundamental hypothesis |

which underlies phrenology as a system of mental science is that mental phenomena are resolvable into the mani- festations of a group of separate

faculties. A faculty is defined as "a convenient expression for the particular states into which the mind enters when influenced by par- ticular organs; it is applied to the feelings as well as to the intellect, thus the faculty of benevolence means every mode of benevolence induced by the organ of benevolence " (Combe). In another work the same author says it 1s "used to denote a particular power of feeling, thinking, perceiving, connected with a particular part of the brain." The assumption is contained in the definition that the exercise of a faculty is the physical outcome of the activity of the organ, and in several of the standard works this is

illustrated by analogies between these and other organs ;

thus the organs of benevolence and of firmness are said to be as distinct as the liver and pancreas. The mind, according to another author, consists of the sum of all the faculties. In this view the unity of consciousness is some- what difficult to explain, and consequently there is assumed by others a single unifying substratum, and on this the organs are supposed to act; thus thoughts are defined as "relations of the simple substance, mind, to certain por- tions of the encephalon" (Welsh, Phren. Journ., i. 206). Gall himself believed that there was but a single principle which saw, felt, tasted, heard, touched, thought, and willed (Fonctions du Cerveau, i. 243); and the American exponent of phrenology, Caldwell, says "the mind is as single in its power as it is in its substance ; it is a quickening and operating principle, essential to all the mental faculties, but does not, by any means, possess them itself" (Hle- ments, p. 16). It is not easy to understand the supposed relation of this hypothetical substratum to the separate faculties acting on it. It must be both immaterial and unconnected with the brain, as the whole two thousand million cells supposed to exist in the cerebral hemispheres are all parcelled out among the faculties, and none are left for the unifying nous.

Each organ is considered as engaged, either independ- ently in bringing forth its own product, or collectively with others in elaborating compound mental states, and according to their several degrees of development and activity they are considered capable of perceiving, conceiving, recollect- ing, judging, or imagining each its own subject. This mechanical conception of the division of labour in the pro- duction of the phenomena of

mind has the charm of sim- plicity, but is attended with the difficulty that arises in discriminating the operations of the different organs one from the other. Phrenologists are apt to be vague respect- ing the limits of the several faculties, as about the bound- aries of the separate organs. It was pointed out by Jeffrey that the lines of demarcation between benevolence, ad- hesiveness, and philoprogenitiveness were indeterminate, although the organs are not very close, and the same applies to other organs.

It is unfortunate for the clearness of the definition that, although historically the faculties were the first pheno- mena noted, independent of and previous to their localiza- tion, yet in the definition the faculties are defined in terms of their localities.

The following arguments are adduced in favour of the fundamental separateness of the faculties : (1) analogy,— clsewhere in the animal economy division of labour is the rule; (2) the variety of mental endowment observed among children before they are influenced by education, and the inequalities in the mental endowments of indi- viduals; (3) the phenomena of insanity, especially of inonomania ; (4) the varying periods at which individual faculties attain their maximum development ; (5) the

phenomena of dreams, and the awakening of a limited number of faculties during them ; (6) pain being felt in an organ when it is overtaxed.1

Such faculties are supposed to be primary—(1) as exist in some animals and not in others, (2) as vary in their development in the sexes, (3) as are developed in varying proportions with regard to other faculties, (4) as may act separately from other faculties, (5) as are not necessarily simultaneous with other faculties in action, (6) as are hereditary, and (7) as may be singly diseased.

According to the development of their powers mankind may be divided into six classes: (1) those in whom the highest qualities are largely developed and the animal qualities feeble ; (2) those with the reversed conditions developed, with large animal and feeble intellectual and moral faculties ; (3) those in whom good and evil are in constant war, with active animal and

strong intellectual faculties and sentiments; (4) those partial geniuses in whom a few qualities are unusually developed, while the rest are at or below the mediocre standard ; (5) those men of moderate endowment in whom some faculties are nearly or quite deficient ; (6) those with an unvarying standard of undistinguished mediocrity in all their faculties.

It is perhaps unfortunate that the word "faculty" has been used in this sense of original power by phrenologists. It would have been better to employ, as Mr Lewes suggests, the term "function" for the native activity of an organ, and to leave "faculty" for the expression of an acquired activity. 'Faculty is properly limited to active power, and therefore is abusively applied to the mere passive affections of the mind" (Hamilton, Lectures, i. 177).

Practical Application.—" Die Schadellehre ist allerdings nicht so sehr Irrthum in der Idee als Charlatanerie in der Ausfithrung," says one of its most acute critics. Even though no fault could be found with the physiology and psychology of phrenology, it would not necessarily follow that the theory could be utilized as a practical method of reading character ; for, although the inncr surface of the skull is moulded on the brain, and the outer surface approximates to parallelism thereto, yet the correspondence is sufficiently variable to render conclusions therefrom un- certain. The spongy layer or diploe which separates the two compact tables may vary conspicuously in amount in different parts of the same skull, as in the cases described by Professor Humphry (Journ. of Anat., vol. viii. p. 137). The frontal sinus, that opprobrium phrenologicum, is a reality, not unfrequently of large size, and may wholly occupy the regions of five organs. The centres of ossifica- tion of the frontal and parietal bones, the muscular crests of these and of the occipital bones also, differ in their prominence in different skulls. Premature synostoses of sutures mould the brain without doing much injury to its parts. Artificial malformations alter the apparent skull- shape considerably and affect the relative development of the brain but little. All these and other cogent reasons of a like kind, whose force can be estimated by those accustomed to deal with the component soft parts of the head, should lead phrenologists to be careful in predicating relative brain-development from skull-shape. Psychology, physiology, and experience alike contribute to discredit

1 It is interesting in this connexion to note that in a case published by Professor Hamilton in Brain (April 1884), where a tumour existed on the occipital lobe, the pain was persistently referred to the fore- head. Many similar cases are to be noticed among the records of localized brain-lesions. Bearing on this point also it is worth noting, once for all, that in nothing is the purely hypothetical nature of phreno- logical description better realized than in the accounts of what these authors call the "natural language of the faculties,'—that poets are supposed to touch ideality when composing, musicians to press on tone and time, and painters on form and colour, when in the exercise of their arts! Yet we are gravely taught this in the standard works on the subject.

See plate II. vol. xv.

rH RP R 849

the system and to show how worthless the so-called dia- gnoses of character really are. Its application by those who are its votaries is seldom worse than amusing, but it 1s capable of doing positive social harm, as in its proposed application to the discrimination or selection of servants and other subordinate officials. It has even been proposed to use it for the purposes of the guarantee society and for the selection of parliamentary representatives. The sar- castic suggestion which originated with Christopher North of moulding children's heads so as to suppress the evil and foster the good was actually repeated in good faith by a writer on phrenology, but experience of the effects of mal- formation leads one to be sceptical as to the feasibility of this mode of producing a social Utopia. The application of phrenology to the art of painting and sculpture has been suggested, but a careful examination of some of the best pictures of the best masters, who were close observers of nature, shows that no phrenological principles were accepted by them in their works. An application to ethnology has also been proposed ; but, although there are in most cases well-marked racial characters presented by the skull, yet all attempts at correlating national characteristics there- with have been groundless and worthless. For further particulars on allied subjects, see PaystocNomy. LiTERATURE.—Prochaska, Functions of the Nervous System (tr. by Laycock, in Sydenham Society's series, 1851); Gall, Recherches sur le

Systeme Nerveux, &c. (Paris, 1809), Anatomie et Phystologie du Systeme Nerveux, &c. (Paris, 1810-19), Traité des Dispositions tnnées de Ame et de U Esprit (Paris, 1811), and Sur les Fonctions du Cerveau (6 vols., 1825); Beryk, Bemerkungen w. Zweifel tiber die Schddellehre des Dr Gali's (Leipsic, 1803) ; Marton, ZLeicht- fassliche Darstellung der Gehirn- u. Schéddellehre (Leipsic, 1803) ; Metzger, Ueber den menschlichen Kopf (Konigsberg, 1803) ; Walther, Neue Untersuchungen der Gall'schen Gehirn~ und Schédellehre (Munich, 1804); Kessler, Priifung des Gall'schen Systems (Jena, 1805) ; Bischoff, Darstellung des Gallschen Gehirn- und Schddellehre, &c. (Berlin, 1805) ; Ackermann, Die Gallsche Gehirnlehre widerlegt (Heidelberg, 1806); Himly, Lrérterung der Gallschen Lehre (Hale, 1806) ; Forster, "Sketch of the New Anatomy and Physiology of the Brain," in Pamyphleteer (1815, No. ix., reprinted with additions 1817) ; Spurzheim, Zhe Physiognomical System of Gall and Spurz- heim (London, 1815), Phrenology, or the Doctrine of the Mind (1825), and The Anatomy of the Human Brain (1826); Gordon, Observations on the Structure of the Brain, comprising an estimate of the claims of Gall and Spurzheim, &c. (1817) ; G. Combe, Essays on Phrenology (Edinburgh, 1819), Elements of Phrenology (1824), System of Phrenology (1825), Constitution of Man (1827), Lectures on Phrenology by Boardman (1839), and Outlines of Phrenology (1847) ; Dewhurst, Guide to Human and Comparative Phrenology (London, 1831); Otto, Phrenologien eller Galls og Spurzheims Hjerne- og Organlzre (Copenhagen, 1825); Broussais, Cours de Phrénologie (Paris, 1836); Vimont, Traité de Phrénologie humaine et comparéc (1836); Noel, Grundztige der Phrenologie (Leipsic, 1836), and Die materielle Grundlage des Seelenlebens (Leipsic, 1874); Macnish, Introduction to Phrenology (Glasgow, 1836) ; Capen, Phrenological Library (Boston, 1836); Ferrarese, Aemorie risguardanti la Dottrina Frenologica (1836-38); Watson, Statistics of Phrenology (1836) ; Azais, Traité de la Phrénologie (Paris, 1839) ; Sidney Smith, Principles of Phrenology (Edinburgh, 1838) ; Joshua T. Smith, Synopsis of Phrenology ; Forichon, Le Matérialisme et la Phrénologie combattu (Paris, 1840); K. G. Carus, Grundziige einer newen und wissenschaftlich begriindeten Kranioskopte (Stutt- gart, 1841); Castle, Die Phrenologie (Stuttgart, 1845) ; Struve, Geschichte der Phrenologie (Heidelberg, 1843); Idjiez, Cours de Phrénologie (Paris, 1847); Flourens, Hxamen de la Phrénologie (Paris, 1842); Serrurier, Phrénologie Morale (Paris, 1840); Mariano Cubi i Solar,

Legons de Phrénologie (Paris, 1857) ; Morgan, Phreno- logy; Donovan, Phrenoiogy; Struve and Hirschfeld, Zeitschrift Siir Phrenologie (Heidelberg, 1843-45) ; Phrenological Journal (20 vols., 1823-47); Lelut, Qw'est ce que la Phrénologie? (1836), and

Rejet de (Organologie phrénologique (1843) ; Tupper, Lnguiry into

Dr Gall's System (1819); Wayte, Antiphrenology (1829); Stone, Observations on the Phrenological Development of Murderers (Edin- burgh, 1829); Epps, Hore Phrenologice (1829) ; Crock, Com- pendium of Phrenology (1878); Aken, Phrenological Bijou (1839) ; Hall, Phreno-Magnet (1843). (A. MA.) PHRYGIA was the name of a large country in Asia Minor, inhabited by a race which the Greeks called Ppvyes, Freemen.1_ Roughly speaking, Phrygia comprised the

. . . 2 ra ” 1 The meaning is given in Hesych., s.v. “ Bpiyes.

western part of the great central plateau of Anatolia, extending as far east as the river Halys ; but its bound- aries were vague,? and varied so much at different periods that a sketch of its history must precede any account of the geography. According to unvarying Greek tradition the Phrygians were most closely akin to certain tribes of Macedonia and Thrace ; and their near relationship to the Hellenic stock is proved by all that is known of their language and art, and is accepted by almost every modern authority. The country named Phrygia in the better known period of history lies inland, separated from the sea by Paphlagonia, Bithynia, Mysia, and Lydia. Yet we hear of a Phrygian “ thalassocracy ” at tite beginning of the 9th century B.c. The Troad and the district round Mount

Sipylus are frequently called Phrygian, as also is the sea-

port Sinope; and a district on the coast between Sestus and the river Cius was regularly named Little Phrygia. Again, Abel? has pointed to the wide currency of names like Mygdones, Doliones, and Phryges or Briges both in Asia Minor and in Europe, and many other examples might be added. The inference has been generally drawn that the Phrygians were a stock widespread in the countries which lie round the Augean Sea. There is, however, no decisive evidence, and no agreement among modern scholars, as to whether this stock came from the East over Armenia, or whether it was European in origin and crossed the Hellespont into Asia Minor.

According to Greek tradition there existed in early time a Phrygian kingdom in the Sangarius valley, ruled by kings among whom the names Gordius and Midas were common. It was known to the ancient Greeks of Ionia and the Troad as something great and half-divine. When the goddess appeared to her favourite Anchises she repre- sented herself as daughter of the king of Phrygia; the Phrygians were said to be the oldest people, and their language the original speech of mankind ; the Phrygian kings were familiar associates of the gods, and the heroes of the land tried their skill against the gods themselves ; we hear of the well-walled cities of Phrygia and of the riches of its kings. Tradition is completely corroborated by archeological evidence. In the mountainous region on the upper waters of*

the Sangarius, between Kutayah and Afium Kara Hissar, there exist numerous monuments of great antiquity, showing a style of marked individuality, and implying a high degree of artistic skill among the people who produced them. On two of these monuments are engraved the names of " Midas the King" and of the goddess "Kybile the Mother." Even the title "king" (évag)> appears to have been borrowed by Greek from Phrygian.

It is impossible to fix a date for the beginning of the Phrygian kingdom. It appears to have arisen on the ruins of an older civilization, whose existence is revealed to us only by the few monuments which it has left. These monuments, which are found in Lydia, Phrygia, Cappa- docia, and Lycaonia, point to the existence of a homogene- ous civilization over those countries; they show a singularly marked style of art, and are frequently inscribed with a peculiar kind of hieroglyphics, engraved bowstrophedon, which have not as yet been deciphered.6 There can be

2 The difficulty of specifying the limits gave rise toa proverb— xwpis Ta PpvyGy, Strabo.

3 Art. " Phryges," in Pauli's Real- Encykl.

4 Herod., ii. 2; Pausan., i. 14, 2; Claudian, In Hutrop., ii. 251 f Apul., Afet., xi. p. 762.

° Favaxres on the Midas tomb. It is expressly recorded that TUpavvos is a Lydian word. Bagid-'s resists all attempts to explain it as a purely Greek formation, and the termination assimilates it to ecrtain Phrygian words.

6 It is common to name these monuments " Hittite," but this name presupposes the truth of an historical hypothesis, namely, the conquest of Asia Minor by a race whose capital was in Syria, which has not as

| yet been supported by any convincing arguments.

traced in Asia Minor an ancient road-system, to which belongs the "royal road" from Sardis to the Persian capital, Susa (Herod., v. 55). The royal road followed a route so difficult and circuitous that it is quite unintelligible as the direct path from any centre in Persia, Assyria, or Syria to the west of Asia Minor. It can be understood only by reference to an imperial centre far in the north. The old trade-route from Cappadocia to Sinope, which had passed out-of use centuries before the time of Strabo (pp. 540, 546), fixes this centre with precision. It must be far enough west to explain why trade tended to the distant Sinope,! hardly accessible behind lofty and rugged mountains, and not to Amisus by the short and easy route which was used in the Graeco-Roman period. This road- system, then, points distinctly to a centre in northern Cappa- docia near the Halys. Here must have stood the capital of some great empire connected with its extremities, Sardis or Ephesus on the west, Sinope on the north, the Cilician Gates on the south, by roads so well made as to continue in use for a long time after the centre of power had changed to Assyria, and the old road-system had become circuitous and unsuitable.2 The precise spot on which the city stood is marked by the great ruins of Boghaz Keui, probably the ancient Pteria, of which the wide circuit, powerful walls, and wonderful rock-sculptures make the site indis- putably the most remarkable in Asia Minor.

The ancient road from Pteria to Sardis crossed the upper Sangarius valley, and its course may be traced by the monuments of this early period.? Close to its track, on a lofty plateau which overhangs the Phrygian monu- ment inscribed with the name of '" Midas the King," is a great city, inferior indeed to Pteria in extent, but sur- rounded by rock-sculptures quite as remarkable as those of the Cappadocian city. The plateau is between 2 and 3 miles in circumference, and presents on all sides a per- pendicular face of rock 50 to 200 feet in height. In part, at least, this natural defence was crowned by a wall built of large squared stones.4 This city was evidently the centre of the old Phrygian kingdom of the Sangarius valley, but at least one of the monuments in it seems to belong to the older period of Cappadocian supremacy, and to prove that the city already existed in that earlier time.® The Phrygian kingdom and art therefore took the place of an older civilization. It isas yet impossible to determine the relation in which the Phrygians stood to the ruling race of that older period, whether they came in from the north-west, or whether they were a primitive people taught, and

for a time ruled, by foreigners from Cappadocia, but at last expelling their teachers. It is probable that the tradition of battles between the Phrygians and the Amazons on the banks of the Sangarius preserves the memory of a struggle between the two races.®

Of the monuments that exist around this city two classes may be confidently referred to the period of Phrygian greatness. That which is inscribed with the name of "Midas the King" is the most remarkable example of one class, in which a large perpendicular surface of rock

5 Sinope was made a Greek colony in 751 B.¢., but it is said to have existed long before that time.

2 When the Persians conquered Lydia they retained, at least fora time, this route, which they found in existence, and the royal messengers went first across the Halys to Pteria, and then by the road across Cappadocia to the Cilician Gates.

3 See a paper on "The Karly Historical Relations between Phrygia and Cappadocia," in Journ. Roy. As. Soc., 1883.

; # The small fortress Pishmish Kalessi is a miniature of the great

city beside it; see Perrot, Explor. Archéol., p. 169 and pl. viii.

® A large tumulus exists in this district between Bei Keui and Ak Kuren, from which one large stone, with an inscription in the usual Cappadocian hieroglyphics, has already been dug.

a Abel (/.c.) identifies these two races, and makes the city at Boghaz Keui a Phrygian city.

i i ie es.

is covered with a geometrical pattern of squares, crosses, and meanders, surmounted by a pediment supported in the centre by a pilaster in low relief. In some cases a floral pattern occupies part of the surface, and in one case the two sides of the pediment are filled by two sphinxes of

extremely archaic type.' In some of these monuments a doorway is carved in the lower part ; the door is usually closed, but in one case, viz., the sphinx monument just alluded to, the valves of the door are thrown wide open and give access to a little chamber, on the back of which is sculptured in relief a rude image of the Mother-goddess Cybele, having on each side of her a lion which rests its forepaws on her shoulder and places its head against hers. Sometimes a grave has been found hidden behind the carved front; in other cases no grave can be detected, but it is probable that they are all sepulchral.° The imitation of wood-work is obvious on several monuments of this kind. The second class is marked by the heraldic type of two animals, usually lions rampant, facing one another, but divided by a pillar or some other device. This type is occasionally found conjoined with the preceding; and various details common to both classes show that there was no great difference in time between them. The heraldic type is used on the monuments which appear to be the older, and the geometrical pattern is often employed on the inscribed monuments, which are obviously later than the uninscribed. Monuments of this class are carved on the front of a sepulchral chamber, the entrance to which is a small doorway placed high and inaccessible in the rocks.

Early Phrygian art stands in close relationship with the art of Cappadocia, but has such individuality, such freedom from conventionality, such power of varying and combining types learned from other peoples, as to show that the Phrygians possessed high artistic faculty very similar in character to the Greek. The monuments of the type of the Midas tomb are obviously imitated from patterns employed in cloth and carpets. Such patterns were used in Cappadocia, and the priest in the rock- sculpture at Ibriz wears an embroidered robe strikingly similar in style to the pattern on the Midas tomb; but the idea of using the pattern as the Phrygians did seems peculiar to themselves. The heraldic type of the second class is found also in the art of Assyria, and was undoubt- edly adopted by the Phrygians from earlier art ; but it is used so frequently in Phrygia as to be specially character- istic of that country.? While Phrygian art is distinctly non-Oriental in spirit, its resemblance to archaic Greek art is a fact of the greatest importance. It is not merely that certain types are employed both in Phrygia and in Greece, but most of the favourite types in early Greek art can be traced in Phrygia, employed in similar spirit and for similar purposes. The heraldic type of the

two lions is the device over the principal gateway of Mycenz, and stamps this, the oldest great monument on Greek soil, with a distinctly Phrygian character. Mycenze was the city of the Pelo- pide, whom Greek tradition unhesitatingly declares to be Phrygian immigrants.

7 Published in Journ. Heil. Stud., 1884.

8 The monuments of Phrygia fall into two groups, which probably mark the sites of two cities about 16 miles distant from each other. One group lies round the villages of Kumbet, Yapuldak, and Bakshish ; the other beside Liyen, Bei Keui, Demirli, and Ayazin.

9 The heraldic type continues on gravestones down to the latest period of paganism. Carpets with geometrical patterns of the Midas- tomb style are occasionally found at the present time in the houses of the peasantry of the district.

FR ¥ GT a

appears to be the city of Midas,! and the name is one more link in the chain that binds Mycene to Phrygia. This connexion, whatever may have been its character, belongs to the remote period when the Phrygians inhabited the ffigean coasts. In the 8th and probably in the 9th cen- tury B.c. communication with Phrygia seems to have been maintained especially by the Greeks of Cyme, Phocea, and Smyrna. About the end of the 8th century Midas king of Phrygia married Damodice, daughter of Agamemnon, the last king of Cyme. Gyges, the first Mermnad king of Lydia (687-653), had a Phrygian mother. The worship of Cybele spread over Phocza to the west as far as Massilia : rock monuments in the Phrygian style and votive reliefs of an Anatolian type are found near Phocea. Smyrna was devoted to the Phrygian Meter Sipylene. It is then natural that the lays of the Homeride refer to Phrygia in the terms above described, and make Priam's wife a Phrygian woman. After the foundation of the Greek colony at Sinope in 751 there can be no doubt that it formed the link of connexion between Greece and Phrygia. Phrygian and Cappadocian traders brought their goods, no doubt on camels, to Sinope, and the Greek sailors, the dewvatrat of Miletus, carried home the works of Oriental and Phrygian artisans. The Greek alphabet was carried back to Phrygia and Pteria, either from Sinope or

more probably from Cyme, in the latter part of the 8th century. The immense importance of Sinope in early times is abun- dantly attested, and we need not doubt that very intimate relations existed at this port between the Ionic colonists and the natives. The effects of this commerce on the development of Greece were very great. It affected Ionia in the first place, and the mainland of Greece indirectly ; the art of Ionia at this period is almost unknown, but it was probably most closely allied to that of Phrygia.? A striking fact in this connexion is the frequent use of a very simple kind of Ionic capital on the early Phrygian monuments, making it practically certain that the " proto- Ionic" column came to Greece over Phrygia. It is obvious that the revolution which took place in the relations between Phrygians and Greeks must be due to some great movement of races which disturbed the old paths of communication. Abel is probably correct in placing the inroads of the barbarous European tribes, Bithynians, Thyni, Mariandyni, &., into Asia Minor about the beginning of the 9th century B.c. The Phrygian element on the coast was weakened and in many places annihilated ; that in the interior was strengthened; and we may suppose that the kingdom of the Sangarius valley now sprang into greatness. The kingdom of Lydia appears to have become important about the end of the 8th century, and to have completely barred the path between Phrygia and Cyme or Smyrna. Ionian maritime enterprise opened a new way over Sinope.®

The downfall of the Phrygian monarchy can be dated with comparative accuracy. Between 680 and 670 the Cimmerians in their destructive progress over Asia Minor overran Phrygia; the king Midas in despair put an end to his own life ; and from henceforth the history of Phrygia is a story of slavery, degradation, and decay, which contrasts strangely with the earlier legends. The catastrophe seems to have deeply impressed the Greek mind, and the memory of it was preserved. 'The date of the Cimmerian invasion is fixed by the concurrent testimony of the contemporary

1 A city Midea occurs also in Beeotia, a village Midea on the Hellespont, and a city Mideum in the Sangarius valley.

2 See Furtwangler, Goldfund von Vettersfelde, Winckelm. Progr., 1884. The closest analogies of old Phrygian art are to be found in the earliest Greek

bronze work in Olympia, Italy, and the northern

lands. 3 Hipponax, fr. 36 [49], proves that a trade-route from Phrygia

down the Meander to Miletus was used in the 6th century.

S51 poets Archilochus and Callinus, of the late chronologers Kusebius, &c., and of the inscriptions of the Assyrian king Essar-haddon. The Cimmerians were finally expelled from Asia Minor by Alyattes before his war with the Medes under Cyaxares (590-585 3.c.). The Cimmerians, therefore, were ravaging Asia Minor, and presumably held possession of Phrygia, the only country where they achieved complete success, till some time between 610 and 590. Phrygia then fell under the Lydian power, and by the treaty of 585 the Halys was definitely fixed as the boundary between Lydia and Media. The period from 675 to 585 must there- fore be considered as one of great disturbance and probably of complete paralysis in Phrygia. After 585 the country was ruled again by its own princes, under subjection to Lydian supremacy. To judge from the monuments, it appears to have recovered some of its old prosperity, but the art of this later period has to a great extent lost the strongly-marked individuality of its earlier bloom. The later sepulchral monuments belong to a class which is widely spread over Asia Minor, from Lycia to Pontus. The graves are made inside a chamber excavated in the rock, and the front of the chamber imitates a house or temple. No attempt is made to conceal the entrance or render it inaccessible. The architectural details are in some cases unmistakably copied without ntentional modi- fication from the architecture of Greek temples, others point perhaps to Persian influence, while several—which are perhaps among the early works of this period—show the old freedom and power of employing in new and original ways details partly learned from abroad. This style continued in use under the Persians, under whose rule the Phrygians passed when Cyrus defeated Croesus in 546, and probably lasted till the 3d century B.c. One monument appears to presuppose a development of Greek plastic art later than the time of Alexander. It would, however, be quite wrong to suppose that the influence of truly Hellenic art on Phrygia began with the conquest of Alexander. Under the later Mermnad kings the Lydian enipire was penetrated with Greek influence, and Xanthus, the early Lydian historian, wrote his history*

in Greek. Under the Persian rule perhaps it was more difficult for Greek manners to spread far east ; but we need not think that European influence was absolutely unfelt even in Phrygia. The probability is that Alexander found in all the large cities a party favourable to Greek manners and trade. Very little is to be learned from the ancient writers with regard to the state of Phrygia from 585 to 300. The slave-trade flourished: Phrygian slaves were common in the Greek market, and the Phrygian names Midas and Manes were stock-names for slaves. Herodotus (i. 14) records that a king Midas of Phrygia dedicated his own chair at Delphi; the chair stood in the treasury of Cypselus, and cannot have been deposited there before 680 to 660 B.c. It is not improbable that the event belongs to the time of Alyattes or Croesus, when Greek influence was favoured throughout the Lydian empire ; and it is easy to understand how the offering of a king Midas should be considered, in the time of Herodotus, as the earliest made by a foreign prince to a Greek god. The Phrygian troops in the army of Xerxes were armed like the Armenians and led by the same commander.

It is to be presumed that the cities of the Sangarius valley gradually lost importance in the Persian period. Formerly the great line of communication across Anatolia traversed the Sangarius valley, but a better and shorter path south of the Salt Desert came into use in this period, from which these cities were far distant. The final cata- strophe was the invasion of the Gauls about 270 to 250 ; and, though the circumstances of this invasion are almost

4A gorgoneum, on a tomb engraved in Jowr. Hell. Stud., pl. xxvi.

unknown, yet we may safely reckon among them the com- plete devastation of northern Phrygia. At last Attalus Te settled the Gauls permanently in eastern Phrygia, and a large part of the country was henceforth known as Galatia. Strabo mentions that the great cities of ancient Phrygia were in his time either deserted or marked by mere villages. The great city over the tomb of Midas has remained un- inhabited down to the present day. About 5 miles west of it, near the modern Kumbet, stood Merus, a bishopric in the Byzantine time, but never mentioned under the Roman empire.

Alexander the Great placed Phrygia under the command of Antigonus, who retained it when the empire was broken up. When Antigonus was defeated and slain at the decisive battle of Ipsus, Phrygia came under the sway of Seleucus. As the Pergamenian kings grew powerful, and at last confined the Gauls in eastern Phrygia, the western half of the country was incorporated in the kingdom of Pergamum. Under the Roman empire Phrygia had no political existence under a separate government,' but formed part of the vast province of Asia. In autumn 85 B.c. the pacification of the province was completed by Sulla, and throughout the imperial time it was common for the Phrygians to date from this era. The imperial rule was highly favourable to the spread of Hellenistic civilization, which under the Greek kings had affected only a few of the great cities, leaving the mass of the country purely Phrygian. A good deal of local self-government was permitted : the cities struck their own bronze coins, in- scribed on them the names of their own magistrates,? and probably administered their own laws in matters purely local. The western part of the country was pervaded by Greco-Roman civilization very much sooner than the central, and in the country districts the Phrygian language® continued in common use at least as late as the 3d century after Christ.

When the Roman empire was reorganized by Diocletian at the end of the 3d century Phrygia was divided into two provinces, distinguished at first as Prima and Secunda, or Great and Little, for which the names Pacatiana and Salutaris soon came into general use. Pacatiana com- prised the western half, which had long been completely pervaded by Greco-Roman manners, and Salutaris the eastern, in which the native manners and language were still not extinct. Each province was governed by a " preses " or #yenov about 412 a.v., but shortly after this date an officer of consular rank was sent to each province (Hierocles, Synecd.). About 535 Justinian made some changes in the provincial administration: the governor of Pacatiana was henceforth a "comes," while Salutaris was still ruled by a "consularis." When the provinces of the Eastern empire were reorganized and divided into "themata" the two Phrygias were broken up between the Anatolic, Opsician, and Thracesian themes, and the name Phrygia finally dis- appeared. Almost the whole of the Byzantine Phrygias is now included in the vilayet of Broussa or Khodavendikya, with the exception of a small part of Parorius and the district about Themisonium (Karayuk Bazar) and*

Ceretapa (Kayadibi), which belong to the vilayet of Koniyeh, and the district of Laodicea and Hierapolis, which belongs

1 An imperial officer named Procurator Phrygiw is mentioned in a few inscriptions of the 2d century; but he belongs to a financial, not an administrative division.

2 This liberty was not granted to the cities of any other province in Anatolia.

3 A number of inscriptions in a language presumably Phrygian have been discovered in the centre and east of the country ; they belong generally to the end of the 2d and to the 8d century.

; 4 The name Salutaris is first found in Polemius Silvius about 385; in the Wotit. Dignit., about 412 a.p., the names Pacatiana and Salu- taris are used.

Pini Yaw &

to Aidin. The principal modern cities are Kutayah (Cotyzum), Eski Sheher (Doryleum), Afium Kara Hissar (near Prymnessus), and Ushak (near Trajanopolis).

It is impossible to say anything definite about the boundaries of Phrygia before the 5th century. Under the Persians Great Phrygia extended on the east to the Halys and the Salt Desert ; Xenophon (Anab., 1. 2, 19) includes Teonium on the south-east within the province, whereas Strabo makes Tyrizum the boundary in this direction. The southern frontier is unknown: the language of Livy (xxxviii. 15) implies that Metropolis (in the Tchul Ova) belonged to Pisidia; but Strabo (p. 629) includes it in Phrygia. Celzenze, beside the later city of Apamea (Dineir), and the entire valley of the Lycus were Phrygian. The Meander above its junction with the Lycus formed for a little way the boundary between Phrygia and Lydia. The great plateau now called the Banaz Ova was entirely or in great part Phrygian. Mount Dindymus (Murad Dagh) marked the frontier of Mysia, and the entire valley of the Tem- brogius or Tembris (Porsuk Su) was certainly included in Phrygia. The boundaries of the two Byzantine Phrygias were not always the

same. Taking Hierocles as authority, the extent of the 'two provinces at the beginning of the 6th century will be readily gathered from the accompanying list, in which those towns which coined money under the Roman empire are italicized and the nearest modern

village is appended.

I. PacaTIANA.—1. Laodieea(Eski Hissar); 2. Hierapolis (Pambuk Kalessi) ; 8. Mosyna (Geveze) ; [4. Metellopolis, only in Notitie Episeop. (Geuzlar)]; 5. Attudda (Assar, south-west from Serai Keui); 6. Trapezopolis (perhaps between Davas Ova and Karayuk Ova) ; 7. Colosse (near Chonas); 8. Ceretapa Dioewsarea (Kayadibi) ; 9. Thenrisontum (Karayuk Bazar) ; 10. Tacina (Yarishli) ; 11. Sanaus Sari Kavak, in Daz Kiri) ; 12. Dionysopolis (Orta Keui) ; 13. Ana- stasiopolis, originally a village of the Hyrgalis (Utch Kuyular) ; 14. Attanassus (Eski Aidan); 15. Lunda (Eski Seid); 16. Peltz Karayashlar) ; 17. Hwmenea (Ishekly) ; 18. Siblia, (Homa); 19. Pepuza (Yanuik Euren) ; 20. Bria (Garbasan or Suretly); 21. Sebaste Sivasly) ; 22. Eluza or Aludda (Hadjimlar); 23. ~~Aemonia (Ahat Keui); 24. Alia (Kirka); 25. Hieroeharax (Otourak); 26. Dioclea Dola); 27. Aristinm (Karaj Euren, in Sitchanly Ova) ; 28. Cidyessus (Cutch Eyuk); 29. Apia (Abia); 30. Cotyeum (Kutayah); 31. Afzani (Tchavdir Hissar); 32. Ttberiopolis (Altyntash) ; 38. Cadzx Gediz); 84. Ancyra (Kilisse Keui); 35. Synaus (Simav); 36. Llaviopolis Temenothyrx (ara Tash); 37. Trajanopolis Grimeno~~ thyre (Giaour Euren, near Orta Keui); 38. Blawndus (Suleimanly).®

II. SALUTARIs. —1. Ewearpia (near Mentesh); 2. Hteropolis(Kotch Hissar) ; 8. Otrows (Tchor Hissar) ; 4. Steetoriwm (Emir Assar) ; 5. Bruzus (Kara Sandykly)®; 6. Bewdus (Aghzi Kara); 7. Augustopolis, formerly Anabura (Surmeneh); 8. Szb¢dunda (perhaps Yeni Keui); 9. Lysias (perhaps Bazar Agatch) ; 10. Synnada (Tchifut Cassaba) ; 11. Prymnessus (Seulun) ; 12. Ipsus, formerly Julia (near Sakly) ; 13. Polybotus (Bolawadun) ; 14. Doetmiwm (Istcha Kara Hissar) ; 15. Metropolis, including Conni (B. Tchorgia) and Ambasus (Ambanaz) ; 16. Merus (Kumbet); 17. Nacolea (Seidi Ghazi); 18. Doryleum (Eski Sheher) ; 19. A/idawm (Kara Eyuk) ; 20. Lycaones (Kalejik) ; 21. Aulocra (in Dombai Ova); 22 and 23. Amadassus and Pre- penissus (unknown). In latcr times the important fortress (and

bishopric) of Acroenus was founded on the site of the present Aflum Kara Hissar,

Besides these, certain cities beyond the bounds of the Byzantine Phrygias belonged under the Roman empire to the province of Asia and are usually considered Phrygian—({1) in Byzantine Pisidia, Philomelium (Ak Sheher), Hadrianopolis (Arkut Khan); (2) in Byzantine Galatia, Amoriwm (Assar near Hamza Hadji), Orcistus (Alikel or Alckian), Tricomia or Trocmada or Trocnada (Kaimaz) ; (8) in Byzantine Lycia, Cibyra (Horzum).

Phrygia contains several well-marked geographical districts. (1) Parorivs, the narrow, flat, elevated valley stretching north-west to south-east between the Sultan Dagh and the Emir Dagh from Holmi (about Tchai) to Tyrizum (Hghin); its waters collect within the valley, in three lakes, which probably supply the great foun- tains in the Axylum, and through them the Sangarius. (2) AXYLUM, the vast treeless plains on the upper Sangarius; there burst forth at various points great perennial springs, the Sakaria fountains

> Ococlia, which is known only from coins, probably belongs to this province. Hierocles adds Theodosia, probably a name of Daldis (Demirji), which is usually included in Lydia. Mionnet gives coins of Mosyna, but they are falsely read and belong to the Mosteni.

§ Nos. 1-5 were called the Phrygian " Pentapolis."

PH R—PHR

(Strabo, p. 548), Ilije Bashi, Bunar Bashi, Geuk Bunar, Uzuk Bashi, which feed the Sangarius. Great part of the Axylum was assigned to Galatia. (3) The rest of Phrygia is mountainous (except the great plateau, Banaz Ova), consisting of hill-country intersected by rivers, each of which flows through a fertile valley of varying breadth. The northern half is drained by rivers which run to the Black Sea; of these the eastern ones, Porsuk Su (Tembris or Tembrogius), Scidi Su (Parthenius), Bardakchi Tchai (Xerabates), and Bayat Tchai (Alandrus), join the Sangarius, while the western,! Taushanly Tchai (Rhyndacus) and Simay Tchai (Macestus), meet and. flow into the Propontis. The Hermus drains a small district included in the Byzantine Phrygia, but in earlier times assigned to Lydia and Mysia. Great part of

southern and western Phrygia is draincd by the Meander with its tributaries, Sandykly Tchai (Glaucus), Banaz Tchai, Kopli Su (Hippurius), and Tchuruk Su (Lycus) ; moreover, some upland plains on the south, especially the Dombai Ova (Aulocra), communicate by underground channels with the Meander. Finally, the Karayuk Ova in the extreme south-west drains through the Kazanes, a tributary of the Indus, to the Lycian Sea. Phrygia Parorius and all the river- valleys are exceedingly fertile, and agriculture was the chief occupation of the ancient inhabitants ; according to the myth, Gordius was called froin the plough to the throne. The high-lying plains and the vast Axylum furnish excellent pasturage, which formerly nourished countless flocks of sheep. The Romans also obtained fine horses from Phrygia. Grapes, which still grow abundantly in various parts, were much cultivated in ancient times. Other fruits are rare, except in a few small districts. Figs cannot be grown in the country, and the ancient references to Phrygian figs are either erroneous or due to a loose use of the term Phrygia.2 Trees are exceedingly scarce in the country; the pine-woods on the western tributaries of the Sangarius and the valonia oaks in parts of the Banaz Ova, and a few other districts, form exceptions. The underground wealth is not known to be great. Iron was worked in the district of Cibyra, and the marble of Synnada, or more correctly of Docimium, was largely used by the Romans. The scenery is generally monotonous ; even the mountainous districts rarely show striking features or boldness of character ; where the landscape has beauty, it is of a subdued melancholy character. The water-supply is rarely abundant, and agriculture is more or less dependent on an uncertain rainfall. The circumstances of the country are well calculated to impress the inhabitants with a sense of the overwhelming power of nature and of their complete depend- ence onit. Their mythology, so far as we know it, has a melan- choly and mystic tone, and their religion partakes of the same character. The two chief deities were Cybele, the Mother, the re- productive and nourishing power of Earth, and Sabazius, the Son, the life of nature, dying and reviving every year. The annual vicissitudes of the life of Sabazius, the Greek Dionysus, were accom- panied by the mimic rites of his worshippers, who mourned with his sufferings and rejoiced with his joy. They enacted the story of his birth and life and death ; the Earth, the Mother, is fertilized only by an act of violence by her own child ; the representative of the god was probably slain each year by a cruel death, just as the god himself died. The rites were characterized by a frenzy

of devotion, unrestrained enthusiasm, wild orgiastic dances, and wanderings in the forests, and were accompanied by the music of the flute, cymbal, and tambourine. At an early time this worship was affected by Oriental influence, coming over Syria from Baby- lonia. Sabazius was identified with Adonis or Atys, Cybele with the Syrian goddess ; and many of the coarsest rites of the Phrygian worship, the mutilation of the priests, the prostitution at the shrine,® came from the hot countries of the south-east. But one curious point of Semitic religion never penetrated west of the Halys: the pig was always unclean and abhorred among the Semites, whereas it was the animal regularly used in purification by the Phrygians, Lydians, Lycians, and Greeks.© The Phrygian religion exercised a very strong influence on Greece. In the archaic period the Dionysiac rites and orgies spread from Thrace into Grecce, in*

1 This district was according to the Greek view part of Mysia.

- *In Strabo, p. 577, éhardpurov must be wrong; dueddguror is true to fact, and is probably the right reading. Olives cannot grow on the uplands.*

3 Those cults of Greece which are most closely related to the Phry- gian were certainly accompanied originally by human sacrifices.

4 The influence which was exerted on Greck music and lyric poetry by the Phrygian music was great; see Marsyas, OLYMPUS.

5 There is no direct evidence that this was practised in the wor- ship of Cybele, but analogy and indirect arguments make it pretty certain. ; ‘

6 Cleon, the Phrygian, when high priest of the Cappadocian goddess at Comana, caused much scandal by using pigs in the sacred precincts (Strabo, p. 574); he only carried out the customs of his country. Pigs were used in all Greek purificatory rites, which were also practised in Lydia (Herod., i. 35). A pig is under the seat of the deified dead on

the harpy tomb.

spite of opposition which has left many traces in tradition, and the worship of Demeter at Eleusis was modified by Cretan influence ultimately traceable to Asia Minor. Pindar erected a shrine of the Mother of the gods beside his house, and the Athenians were directed by the Delphic oracle to atone for the execution of a priest of Cybele during the Peloponnesian War by building the Metroon. In these and other cases the Phrygian character was more or less Hellenized ; but wave after wave of religious influence from Asia Minor introduced into Greece the unmodified " barbarian " ritual of Phrygia. The rites spread first among the common pcople and those engaged in foreign trade. The comic poets satirized them, and Plato and Demosthenes inveighed against them; but they continued to spread, with all their fervid enthusiasm, their super- stition, and their obscene practices, wide among the people, whose religious cravings were not satisfied with the purely external reli- gions of Hellenism. The orgies or mysteries were open to all, free- men or slaves, who had duly performed the preliminary purifi- cations, and secured to the participants salvation and remission of sins. Under Mysrsrigs (g.v.) a distinction of character has been pointed out between the true Hellenic mysteries, such as the Eleusinian, 'and the Phrygian ; but there certainly existed much similarity between the two rituals. In the first centuries after Christ only the Phrygian and the Egyptian rites retained much real hold on the Graeco-Roman world. Phrygia itself, however, was very early converted to Christianity. Christian inscriptions in the country begin in the 2d and are abundant in the 3d century. There is every appearance that the great mass of the people were Christians before 300, and Eusebius (H. E., v. 16) is probably correct in his statement that in the time of Diocletian there was a Phrygian city in which every living soul was Christian. The great Phrygian saint of the 2d century was named Abercius ; the mass of legends and miracles in the late biography of him long brought his very existence into dispute, but a recently-discovered fragment of his gravestone has proved that he was a real person, and makes it probable that the wide-veaching conversion of the people attri- buted to him did actually take place. The strange enthusiastic character of the old Phrygian religion was not wholly lost when the country became Christian, but is clearly traced in the various heresies that arose in central Anatolia. Especially the wild ecstatic character and the prophecies of the Montanists recall the old type of religion. Montanus (see MonrTanism, vol. xvi. p. 775) was born on the borders of Phrygia and

Mysia (doubtless in the Murad Dagh), and was vehemently opposed by Abercius.

Of the old Phrygian language very little is known ; a few words are preserved in Hesychius and other writers. Plato mentions that the Phrygian words for "dog," "fire," &¢., were the same as the Greek ; and to these we may add from inscriptions the words for "mother" and "king." A few inscriptions of the ancient period are known, and a somewhat larger number of the Roman period have been found, but not yet published.

Owiug to the scantiness of published material about Phrygia frequent reference has been made in this article to unpublished monuments, and historical views are stated which have only quite recently been published by the writer. Besides the works already quoted of Abel and Perrot, see Ritter's " Kleinasien," in his Erdkunde von Asien ; Leake's Asia Minor ; Kiepert's appendix to Franz, Fiinf Inschr. u. fiinf Stidte Kleinasiens ; Haase, in Ersch and Giuber's Encyklop. ; Hamilton's Travels in Asia Minor; Hirschfeld's ' Reisebericht," in the Berl. Monatsber. (1879) ; Texier, Asie Mineure ; Steuart, Ancient Monuments ; besides the special chapters in the geographical treatises of Cramer, Vivien St Martin, Forbiger, &c.; Ramsay, in Mittheil. Instit. Athen. (1882), Bulletin de Corresp. Hellén. (1882-83), and Journal of Hellenic Studies (1882 sq.). CW. M. RA.)

PHRYNE, a celebrated Greek courtesan, flourished in the time of Alexander the Great (4th century B.c.). She was born at Thespiz in Boeotia, but seems to have lived at Athens. Originally so poor as to earn a living by gathering capers, she acquired so much wealth by her extraordinary beauty that she offered to rebuild the walls of Thebes, which had been destroyed by Alexander (335), on condition of inscribing on them, " Destroyed by Alexander, restored by Phryne the courtesan." On the occasion of a festival of Poseidon at Eleusis she laid aside her garinents, let down her hair, and stepped into the sea in the sight of the people, thus suggesting to the painter Apelles his great picture of Aphrodite rising from the Sea, for which Phryne sat as model. The sculptor Praxiteles was one of her lovers, and she is said to have been the model of his celebrated Cnidian Aphrodite, which Pliny declared to be the most beautiful statue in the world." There were statues of her by Praxiteles at Delphi and in

7 So Athenzus, 590, 591. But according to others (Clemens Alex- andrinus, Protrep., 53, and Arnobius, Adv. Gentes, vi. 13) Praxiteles's model for the Cnidian Aphrodite was Cratina; and Pliny (xxxv. 87) says that some declared that Apelles's model was Pancaspe.

her native town; the former was golden or plated with gold, the latter was of marble. It is said that at her request Praxiteles promised her the most beautiful of his works, but would not tell her which was it. Having dis- covered by a stratagem that of his works he prized most a statue of Love (Eros) and one of a Satyr, she asked of him the former and dedicated it in Thespiz. Being accused of impiety by Euthias, she was defended by the orator Hyperides, one of her lovers. When it seemed that the verdict was about to be against her, he rent her robe and displayed her lovely bosom, which so moved her judges that they acquitted her. According to others it was Phryne herself who thus displayed her charms. She is said to have made an attempt on the virtue of the philo- sopher Xenocrates, and to have signally failed.

PHRYNICHUS, the name of a number of distinguished Greeks, of whom the most prominent were the following.

1. Parynicuus, one of the earliest tragic poets of Athens, was the son of Polyphradmon, and a pupil or follower of Thespis, who is commonly regarded as the founder of tragedy. But such were the improvements introduced by Phrynichus that some of the ancients regarded him as its real founder. He flourished, according to Cyrillus and Eusebius, in 483 B.c., but he gained a, poetical victory (probably his first) as early as 9511. His famous play the Capture of Miletus was probably composed shortly after the conquest of that city by the Persians (494). It moved the Athenians to tears ; they fined the poet 1000 drachms for reminding them of the woes of their friends, and decreed that the play should never be used again. In 476 Phrynichus won another poetical victory, probably with his play the Phenisse, which celebrated the defeat of Xerxes at Salamis (480). The drama derived its name from the chorus of Phcenician women. On this occasion Themistocles acted as choragus, and it is probable that the play was written to revive his waning popularity by reminding the Athenians of

his great deeds. The Persians of Aischylus (exhibited in 472) was an imitation of the Phenisse of Phrynichus. Phry- nichus died in Sicily, perhaps at the court of Hiero, tyrant of Syracuse, who welcomed those other great contemporary poets AMschylus and Pindar. The titles of his plays mentioned by Suidas and others show that he treated mythological as well as contemporary subjects ; such are the titles Zhe Danaides, Acton, Alcestis, Tantalus. But in his plays, as in the early tragedies generally, the dramatic element was subordinate to the lyric element as represented by the chorus. Indeed in his earliest dramas there can only have been one actor, for the introduction of two actors was a novelty due to his younger contemporary fischylus, who first exhibited in 499. Phrynichus was especially famous for the sweetness of his songs, which were sung by old people down to the time of Aristophanes. Connected with the predominance of the chorus in early tragedies was the prominence in them of the dance. There is an epigram ascribed to Phrynichus in which he boasts that the figures of his dances were as various as the waves of the sea. According to Suidas it was Phrynichus who first introduced female characters on the stage (played by men in masks). The few remains of his works are collected by Wagner and Nauck in their editions of the fragments of the Greek tragedians.

2, PHRYNICHUS, a poet of the Old Attic Comedy and a contemporary of Aristophanes, is said by Suidas to have been an Athenian, but according to the scholiast on Aristo- phanes (Frogs, 13) he was satirized as a foreigner. His first comedy was exhibited in 429 B.c. (according to Suidas, as corrected by Clinton and Meineke). He composed ten plays, of which the Solitary (“‘Monotropos”) was exhibited in 414 along with the Birds of Aristophanes and gained

(London, 1881).

the third prize, and the JJuses carried off the second prize in 405, Aristophanes being first with the Frogs. This poet (Mrogs, 13) accuses Phrynichus of employing vulgar tricks to raise a laugh, and he was further charged with plagiarism and defective versification, but such accusations were too commonly bandied between rival poets to merit much attention.

He was not included by the Alexandrian critics in their canon of the best poets. The remains of his works, which have been edited with the other frag- ments of the Attic Comedy by Meineke and Bothe, are too scanty to allow us to judge of their merits.

3. PHRYNICHUS ARABIUS, a grammarian of Bithynia, lived in the reigns of the emperors Marcus Antoninus and Commodus (2d century a.p.). According to Suidas he was the author of the following works: (1) an Atticist, or On Attic Words, in two books; (2) TiWepevav cvvaywyy; (3) Zofiorrixy mwapackev}, or Sophistical Preparation, in forty-seven or (according to others) seventy-four books. We have an account of the last-mentioned work by Photius, who had read thirty-six books of it. The copy used by Photius contained only thirty-seven books, but he states that the author in a preface addressed to the emperor Commodus, to whom the work was dedicated, promised, if life lasted, to write as many more books. Separate parts of the work were dedicated to various friends, and Phrynichus excused its delays and imperfections on the ground of numerous illnesses. It consisted of a collection of Attic words and phrases, arranged in alpha- betical order, and distinguished according to the purposes they were meant to serve, whether oratorical, historical, conversational, jocular, or amatory. The models of Attic style, according to Phrynichus, were Plato, Demosthenes and the other nine Attic orators (viz., Antiphon, Ando- cides, Lysias, Isocrates, Iszeus, Mschines, Dinarchus, Lycurgus, Hyperides), Thucydides, Xenophon, schines the Socratic, Critias, Antisthenes, Aristophanes and the other poets of the Old Comedy, together with Aischylus, Sophocles, and Euripides. Of these, again, he assigned the highest place to Plato, Demosthenes, and Adschines the Socratic. The work was learned, but prolix and garrulous. A fragment of it, contained ina Paris MS., was published by Montfaucon, and again by Im. Bekker in the first volume of his Anecdota Graca (Berlin, 1814). We possess another work of Phrynichus which is not mentioned by Photius, but is, perhaps, identical with the Atticist mentioned by Suidas. This is the Selection (Heloge) of Attic Words and Phrases. It is dedicated to Cornelianus, a man of literary tastes, and one of the emperor's secretaries, who had invited the author to undertake the work. It is a collection of current words and forms which deviated from the Old Attic standard. Side by side with these incorrect words and forms are given the true Attic equiva- _ lents. The work is thus a

“lexicon antibarbarum,” and is interesting as illustrating the changes through which the Greek language had passed between the 4th century B.c. and the 2d century a.D. Phrynichus is especially severe upon Menander, and wonders what people can see in him to admire so much. The style is concise and pointed, and is occasionally relieved by touches of dry humour. The book is divided into two parts, of which the second appears in some editions as a separate work under the title of Epitome. Editions of it, with valuable notes, have been published by Chr. Aug. Lobeck (Leipsic, 1820) and W. G. Rutherford Lobeck devotes his attention chiefly to the later, Rutherford to the earlier usages noticed by Phrynichus.

There was also an Athenian general Phrynichus in the Pelopon- nesian War, who took a leading part in establishing the oligarchy of the Four Hundred at Athens in 411 B.c. He was assassinated in the same year.

PHT—PAHT

PHTHALIC ACID. This name was given by Laurent to a di-basic acid, C,H,O,, which he obtained by the oxida- tion of naphthalin or its tetra-chloride with nitric acid. Schunck subsequently obtained the same acid by boiling alizarin with nitric acid, but failed to recognize its iden- tity with Laurent’s.

One part of naphthalin is mixed with two parts of chlorate of potash, and the mixture added cautiously to ten parts of crude muriatic acid. The product, C,)H,.Cl,, is washed with water and then with “ligroin’” (the more volatile fraction of petroleum). The chloride thus purified is oxidized by boiling it with ten parts of (gradually added) nitric acid of 1-45 specific gravity, evaporated to dryness, and the residue distilled to obtain the anhydride C,H ,0,, or

rationally Gi =O. long colourless needles fusing at 128° C.,

—the boiling point being 276°. When boiled with water it becomes

phthalic acid, rat. formula Ge oes thombic crystals, fusing at

184° C. with transformation into anhydride, very slightly soluble in water (100 parts at 11° dissolve 0°77 parts), more soluble in alcohol (100 of absolute dissolve 10-1 parts at 15°). Phthalic acid, when heated to redness with lime, breaks up into CO, and benzol ; the lime salt when mixed with one equivalent caOH of lime, and kept at 330° to 350° C., yields carbonate and benzoate—

CoH sgn 4 + chOH = CaCO, + CgH,COOca (Ca=2ea = 40).

Hence phthalic acid should be obtainable by the oxidation of di-derivatives, CgH,R'R", of benzol (R= CH;, C.H;, &c.), and indeed two acids, CgH, (COOH),, can be thus produced, but neither is identical with phthalic.

Terephthalic acid is obtained by the oxidation of ordinary cymol,

pOgHy ath, or other similar "para" bodies with bichromate of

potash and sulphuric acid. It isa white powder, quite insoluble in water, sublimable without fusion or dehydration.

Isophthalic acid is obtained similarly from "mcta" derivatives, CgH4R., of benzol, hair-fine needles fusing above 300°, almost insoluble in water, but pretty easily soluble in alcohol.

Ortho-bi-derivatives of benzol ought to give " ortho," z.e., Laurent's phthalic acid; but this acid itself is oxidized by the bichrome mixture into CO, and H,0.

Phthaleins are a most interesting family of coloured derivatives of phthalic anhydride, which were discovered by Baeyer, and soon found their way into the colour industry. As an example we quote phenol-phthalein, obtained by the union of the anhydride with phenol, CgH;0H=H +O,H,.OH=H+"Phen." The phthalein is

CoHic(Phen), 2 Phthalic rest.

and, as will easily be understood, something widely different from the di-phenyl-phthalic ether. Phthalic anhydride and resorcin— one of the three

di-hydroxyl derivatives, C,H,(OH),, of benzol— unite into "fluorescin," distinguished by the strong fluorescence of its solutions. Tetra-brom-fluorescin, a beautiful red colour, is used industrially as eosin (from Greek és, the morning-red).

PHTHISIS (¢6éo1s) or Consumption. This term, al- though applicable to several forms of wasting disease, is commonly used to designate a malady having for its chief manifestations progressive emaciation of the body and loss of strength, occurring in connexion with morbid changes in the lungs and in other organs.

Few diseases possess such sad interest for humanity as consumption, both on account of its widespread prevalence and its destructive effects, particularly among the young ; and in every age of medicine the subject has formed a fertile field for inquiry as to its nature, its cause, and its treatment. On all these points medical opinion has under- gone numerous changes with the advance of science and the application of more accurate methods of investigation; yet, notwithstanding the many important facts which within recent years have been brought to light, it must be admitted that our knowledge of this disease is still far from complete. As regards the nature or pathology of consumption it is unnecessary in a notice like the present to refer at length to the doctrines which have from time to time been held upon the subject, further than merely to indicate in a general way the views which have been more or less widely accepted in recent times. In the early part of the present century the study of the diseases of the

be evolved out of this condition.

chest received a great impetus from the labours of Laennec, whose discovery of the stethoscope led to greater minute-

ness and accuracy in investigation (see AUSCULTATION).

This physician held that phthisis depended on the develop- ment of tubercles in the lungs, which, undergoing various

retrograde changes, led to the breaking down and excava-

tion of these organs,—in short, produced the whole pheno-

mena of consumption ; and, further, that this tuberculous formation affected various other parts and organs, and was the result of a morbid constitutional condition or diathesis.

This doctrine, which was generally taught during the first

half of the century, and even longer, was to some extent superseded by that to which the greatest prominence was given by Niemeyer and others, namely, that the majority of cases of phthisis had their origin in an inflammation of the lung (catarrhal pneumonia), but that tubercle—the

existence of which was freely admitted—might occasionally This view has had wide acceptance, but has been modified in a variety of ways, especially by its extension to inflammation in other parts besides the lungs, the unabsorbed products of which are

held to be capable of producing tubercle by infection from

within the system. Still more recently there has arisen another doctrine in connexion with the discovery by Koch of the micro-organism or bacillus of tubercle, which can be cultivated and which, when inoculated, appears capable of producing tubercular disease, namely, the doctrine of the infectiveness of phthisis by means of this " microbe " received into the system from without. This view, which is supported by many striking facts and arguments, has been extensively adopted as furnishing in all probability a rational basis of the pathology of tubercular consumption. Yet it has not been universally accepted, being held by many to be insufficient to account for the origin and course of the disease in numerous instances and in certain of its forms. It is impossible to deny an important place in the course of the disease to inflammatory processes. Even in. those cases where the lungs are infiltrated with tuber- cular deposit evidence of inflammation is abundantly pre- sent, while, on the other hand, it would seem that in not a few instances the process is inflammatory throughout. That phthisis, therefore, is not the same process in all cases, but that there are distinct

varieties of the disease, is made clear by the morbid anatomy of the lungs no less than by other considerations.

Whatever be the form, the common result of the presence of these disease-products is to produce consolidations in the affected portions of the lungs, which, undergoing retrograde changes (caseation), break down and form cavities, the result being the destruction in greater or less amount of lung-substance. These changes most commonly take place at the apex of one lung, but with the advance of the disease they tend to spread throughout its whole extent and to involve the other lung as well. When the disease is confined to a limited area of a lung it may undergo arrest—even although it has advanced so far as to destroy a portion of the pulmonary tissue, and a healing process may set in and the affected part cicatrize. This is, how-ever, exceptional, the far more common course being the progress of the destructive change either by the spread of the inflammatory process or by infection through the lymphatics, &c., from the existing foci of diseased lung- tissue. Various morbid changes affecting the lungs them- selves or other organs frequently arise in the course of phthisis, complicating its progress and reducing the chance of recovery. Of these the more common are affections of the pleura, stomach, liver, kidneys, and especially the in-testines, which in the later stage of the disease become ulcerated, giving rise to the diarrhoea which is so frequent and fatal a symptom at this period.

856

The causes influential in producing phthisis are numer- ous and varied, but they may for general consideration be embraced under two groups, namely, those which are pre- disposing and operate through the constitution as a whole, and those which are exciting and act immediately upon the organs implicated. These two sets of causes may be more or less distinctly associated in an individual case ; but, on the other hand, one may appear to act in both ways—as predisposing and exciting. The following may serve to illustrate some of the conditions of a predisposing kind. A constitutional tendency to scrofula and its manifestations lends itself readily to the production of phthisis. This morbid constitution is characterized among other things by a liability to low chronic forms of inflammation affecting

gland-textures, mucous membranes, é&c., the products of which show little readiness to undergo absorption, but rather to degenerate. Inflammations of this character affecting the lungs, as is not uncommon, have a special tendency to lead to the breaking down of lung-texture and formation of phthisical cavities. Many high authorities hold that tubercle-formation may be evolved out of scrofu- lous inflammations of glands, such as those of the neck, by an infective process, like that already referred to. The mention of this constitutional state naturally suggests another powerful predisposing cause, namely, hereditary transmission. The extent to which this influence operates as a cause of consumption has been differently estimated by writers, owing probably to the various aspects in which the matter is capable of being viewed. It is impossible to deny that the children of parents one or both of whom are consumptive are liable to manifest the disease,— that is, they inherit a constitution favouring its development under suitable exciting causes. But a similar constitu- tional proclivity may be induced by other influences acting through the parents. Should either or both of them be enfeebled by previous disease or by any other weakening cause, they may beget children possessing a strong pre- disposition to consumption. Marriages of near relatives are held by some to induce a consumptive tendency,— probably, however, owing to the fact that any constitu- tional taint is likely to be intensified in this way. Phthisis is a disease of early life, the period between fifteen and thirty-five being that in which the great majority of the cases occur, and of these by far the larger proportion will be found to take place between the ages of twenty and thirty. The influence of sex is not marked. Occu- pations, habits, and conditions of life have a very im- portant bearing on the development of the disease apart altogether from inherited tendency. Thus occupations which necessitate the inhalation of irritating particles, as in the case of+stone- masons, needle-grinders,. workers in minerals, in cotton, flour, straw, &c., are specially hurtful, chiefly from the mechanical effects upon the delicate pul- monary tissue of the matter inhaled. No less prejudicial are occupations carried on in a heated and close atmosphere, as 1s often the case with compositors, gold-beaters, semp- stresses, &c. Again, habitual exposure to wet and cold or to sudden changes of temperature will act in a similar way In inducing pulmonary irritation which may lead to phthisis. _ Irregular and intemperate habits are known predisposing causes ; and over-work, over-anxiety, want of exercise, insufficient or unwholesome food, bad hygienic

surroundings such as overcrowding and defective ventila- tion, are all powerful agents in sowing the seeds of the disease. Consumption sometimes arises after fevers and other infectious maladies, or in connexion with any long- continued drain upon the system, as in over-lactation. The subject of climate and locality in connexion with the causation of phthisis has received considerable attention and some interesting facts have been ascertained on tis

|

Pb a Pe Pes

point. That phthisis is to be met with im all climes, and it would seem fully as frequently in tropical as in tem- perate regions, is evidence that climate alone exercises but little influence. It is very different, however, with locality, elevation appearing to affect to a considerable extent the liability to this disease. It may be stated as generally true that phthisis is less prevalent the higher we ascend. The investigations of Dr H. J. Bowditch in New England and of Dr George Buchanan of the Local Government Board in the counties of Surrey, Kent, and Sussex agree in proving that elevated regions with dry- ness of soil are hostile to the prevalence of consumption, while low-lying and damp districts seem greatly to favour its development ; and it has been found that the success- ful drainage of damp localities has occasionally had a marked effect in reducing their phthisis mortality. In all such observations, however, various modifying circum- stances connected with social, personal, and other condi- tions come into operation to affect the general result. As regards immediate or exciting causes, probably the most potent are inflammatory affections of the respiratory pass- ages produced as the result of exposure. The products of such attacks are liable under predisposing conditions, such as some of those already mentioned, to remain unabsorbed and undergo degenerative changes, issuing in the breaking down and excavation of the pulmonary texture. A neces- sary consequence of the modern doctrine of the contagious nature and inoculability of tubercle has been to bring to the front a view as to phthisis once widely prevalent and in some countries—e.g., Italy——never wholly abandoned, namely, its infectiousness. By some supporters of the recent theories of tubercle it is maintained that phthisis is communicated by

infection and in no other way, the infecting agent being the bacillus. Others, while holding the view of the specific nature of the disease, deny that it can be communicated by infection like a fever, and cite the experience of consumption hospitals (such as that described by Dr C. T. Williams with respect to the Brompton Hospital) as to the absence of any evidence of its spreading among the nurses and officials. Others, again, deny both its specific nature and its direct infectious character. There appears, however, to be a growing opinion that phthisis may occasionally be acquired by a previously healthy person from close association with one already suffering from it, and, if this view be well founded, it affords a strong presumption that some infecting agent (such as the tubercle bacillus) is the medium of communi- cation, The whole subject of the infectiousness of this disease is as yet unsettled; but there appears to be suffi- cient reason for special care on the part of those who of necessity are brought into close contact with patients suffering from it.

Cases of phthisis differ widely as regards their severity and their rate of progress. Sometimes the disease exhibits itself as an acute or galloping consumption, where from the first there is high fever, rapid emaciation, with cough and other chest symptoms, or with the comparative absence of these, and a speedily fatal termination. In such instances there would probably be found extensive tuberculization of the lungs and other organs. In other instances, and these constitute the majority, the progress of the disease is chronic, lasting for months or years, and along with periods of temporary improvement there is a gradual pro- gress to a fatal issue. In other cases, again, the disease is arrested and more or less complete restoration to health takes place.

It is unnecessary to describe the symptoms or course and progress of all the varieties of this malady. It will be sufficient to refer to those of the ordinary form of the disease as generally observed. The onset may be somewhat

sudden, as where it is ushered in by hemoptysis (spitting of blood), but more commonly it is slow and insidious and may escape notice for a considerable time. The patient is observed to be falling away in flesh and strength. His appetite fails, and dyspeptic symptoms trouble him. But the most marked

feature of the condition is the presence of a cough, which is either persistent or recurs at certain times, as in lying down in bed or rising in the morning. The cough is dry or is accompanied with slight clear ex- pectoration, and the breathing is somewhat short. Feverish symptoms are present from an early period, the tempera- ture of the body being elevated, especially in the evening. The patient often complains of flying pains in the chest, shoulders, and back. Such symptoms occurring, especially in one who may possess by inheritance or otherwise an evident tendency to chest' disease, should excite suspicion, and should be brought under the notice of the physician. They constitute what is commonly known as the first stage of phthisis and indicate the deposit of tubercle or else inflammatory consolidation in the lung. Not unfre- quently the disease is arrested in this stage by judicious treatment, but should it go on the symptoms characteriz- ing the second stage (that of softening and disintegration of lung) soon show themselves. The cough increases and is accompanied with expectoration of purulent matter in which lung-tissue and the bacillus of tubercle can be detected on microscopic examination.2 The symptoms present in the first stage become intensified: the fever continues and assumes a hectic character, being accom- panied with copious night-sweats, while the appetite and digestion become more and more impaired and the loss of strength and emaciation more marked. Even in this stage the disease may undergo abatement, and improve- ment or recovery take place, though this is rare; and by careful treatment the advance of the symptoms may be in a measure held in check. The final stage (or stage of excavation), in which the lung has become wasted to such an extent that cavities are produced in its substance, is characterized by an aggravation of all the symptoms of the previous stage. In addition, however, there appear others indicating the general break-up of the system. Diarrhcea, exhausting night-perspirations, and total failure of appetite combine with the cough and other pulmonary symptoms to wear out the patient's remaining strength and to reduce his body to a skeleton. Swelling of the feet and ankles and soreness of the mouth (aphthz) proclaim the approach of the end.? Death usually takes place from exhaustion, but sometimes the termination is sudden from hemorrhage, or from rupture of the pleura during a cough and the consequent occurrence of pneumothorax. A _ re- markable and often painful feature of the disease is the absence in many patients of all sense of the nature and

1 The examination of the chest by the usual methods of physical diagnosis reveals in this stage the following as among the chief points. On inspection the thorax is observed to be narrow and poorly developed, or it may be quite natural. At its upper region there may be noticed slight flattening under the clavicle of one side, along with imperfect expansion of that part on full inspiration. On percussion the note may be little if at all impaired, but frequently there is dulness more or less marked at the apex of the lung. On auscultation the breath- sounds are variously altered. Thus they may be scarcely audible, or again harsher than natural, and the expiration may be unduly pro- longed. Sometimes the breathing is of an interrupted or jerky char- acter, and is occasionally accompanied with fine crepitations or rales. Pleuritic friction-sounds may be audible over the affected area.

2 In this stage the physical signs are more distinctive of the disease. Thus the flattening of the chest-wall is still more marked, as is also the dulness to percussion, while on auscultation the breathing is accompanied with coarse moist sounds or rales, which become more audible on coughing. The voice-sound is broncho-phonic.

3 The physical signs now present are those of a cavity in the lung— viz., in general absolute dulness on percussion—cavernous breathing, gurgling rales, and pectoriloquy.

857

gravity of the malady from which they suffer, and their singular buoyancy of spirits (the spes phthisica), rendering them hopeful of recovery up till even the very end.

This description is but a brief and imperfect outline of the course and progress of an ordinary case of phthisis. It is scarcely necessary to remark that the disease is greatly modified in its course and progress and in the presence or absence of particular symptoms in individuals. Thus in some the chest-symptoms (cough, é&c.) are pro- minent throughout, while in others these are compara- tively in abeyance, and diarrhcea or fever and exhausting perspirations or throat-troubles specially conspicuous. Nevertheless, essentially the same pathological conditions are present in each case. Further, as has been already mentioned, there are types of the

disease which obviously influence alike its main features and its duration; these have beer embraced under two classes, the acute and the chronic. In the former, which includes the acute tuber- culous and acute inflammatory or pneumonic phthisis, the progress of the disease is marked by its rapidity and the presence of fever even more than by local chest-symptoms. Such cases run to a fatal termination in from one to three or four months, and are to be regarded as the most severe and least hopeful form. The chronic cases, of which the description above given is an example (and which embrace various chronic changes, e.g., chronic interstitial pneumonia or cirrhosis of the lung), progress with variable rapidity. Their duration has been estimated by different authorities at from two to eight or more years. Much, however, necessarily depends on the effect the disease exercises upon the patient's strength and nutrition, on his circum-_ stances and surroundings, and on the presence or absence of weakening complications. Many cases of this class remain for long unchanged for the worse, perhaps under- going temporary improvement, while in a few rare in- stances, where the disease has become well marked or has even attained to an advanced stage, what is virtually a cure takes place.

The treatment of phthisis has received much attention from physicians as well as from empirics, by the latter of whom chiefly many so-called cures for consumption have from time to time been given forth. It need scarcely be stated that no "cure" for this disease exists; but, while this is true, it is no less true that by the adoption of certain principles of treatment under enlightened medical guidance a very great deal may now be done to ward off the disease in those who show a liability to it, and to mitigate and retard, or even arrest, its progress in those who have already become affected by it. The preventive measures include careful attention to hygienic conditions, both personal and surrounding. In the case of children who may inherit a consumptive tendency or show any liability to the disease mucli care should be taken in bringing them up to promote their general health and strengthen their frames. Plain wholesome food with fatty ingredients, if these can possibly be taken, milk, cream, &c., are to be recommended. Ex- ercise in the open air and moderate exercise of the chest by gymnastics and by reading aloud or singing are all advantageous. An ample supply of fresh air in sleeping apartments, schools, &c., is of great importance, while warin clothing and the use of flannel are essential, especially in a climate subject

to vicissitudes. The value of the bath and of attention to the function of the skin is very great. The like general hygienic principles are equally applicable in the case of adults. When the disease has begun to show any evidence of its presence its treatment becomes a matter of first importance, as it is in the early stages that most can be done to arrest or remove it. Special symptoms, such as cough, gastric disturbances, pain, &c., must be dealt with by the physician according to the indi-

vidual case; but it is in this stage of the disease that the question of a change of climate in the colder seasons of the year arises among those whose circumstances render such a step practicable. There can be no doubt that as regards Great Britain the removal of patients threatened by or already suffering from consumption to some mild locality, either in the country or abroad, proves in many instances most salutary. The object aimed at is to obtain a more equable climate, where the atmosphere may have a soothing influence on the respiratory organs, and where also open-air exercise may be taken with less risk than at home. Of British health-resorts Bournemouth, Hastings, Torquay, Ventnor, Penzance, &c., in the south of England, are the best known and most frequented, and although the climate is not so certain as in places farther south in Europe they possess the advantage of home residence, and may be resorted to by persons who are unable to undertake a farther journey. The climate of the Riviera (Maritime Alps) is of superior efficacy owing to its mild- ness and the dry bracing character of its air, and, despite the long journey, is as a rule to be recommended as one of the best for the greater proportion of the cases of phthisis. The same may be said for Algiers and Egypt. Of recent years the air of elevated dry regions, such as Davos in the Alps and the Rocky Mountains in America, has been strongly recommended, and in not a few cases appears to be productive of good in arresting the disease at its outset, and even advantageous in chronic cases where there is no great activity in its progress. Of like value, and in a similar class of cases, are long sea-voyages, such as those to Australia or New Zealand. Nevertheless, there is no doubt that consumptive patients are often sent abroad manifestly to die.

It may be stated generally (although doubtless there may be exceptions) that where the disease exhibits a decidedly acute form, even in its earlier stages, any distant change is rather to be discouraged ;

PATHIS IS

while in the advanced stages, where there is great prostra- tion of strength, with colliquative symptoms, the removal of a patient is worse than useless, and frequently hastens the end.

Throughout the whole course of the malady the nutrition of the patient forms a main part of the treatment, and tonics which promote the function of the digestive organs are especially helpful. Codliver oil has long been held to be of eminent value, as it appears not merely to possess all the advantages of a food but to exert a retarding effect on the disease. Where it is well borne, not only will the weight of the body be found to increase, but the cough and other symptoms will markedly diminish. The oil is as a rule best administered at first in small quantity. The frequently employed substitutes, such as malt extract, tonic syrups, &c., although not without their uses, are all inferior to codliver oil. The occasional employment of counter- irritation to the chest in the form of iodine or small blisters is of service in allaying cough and relieving local pains. Respirators to cover the mouth and nose, and so con- structed as to contain antiseptic media through which the air is breathed, are sometimes found to lessen cough and other symptoms of chest-irritation.

Among the most serviceable drugs in the treatment of the symptoms of phthisis are the preparations of opium. Administered along with such agents as hydrocyanic acid and expectorants, they are eminently useful in soothing severe cough; along with astringents they are equally valuable in controlling diarrhcea; while with quinine, digit- alis, &c., they aid in allaying fever and restlessness and in procuring sleep. But besides these many other medi- cinal agents, too numerous to mention here, are employed with much advantage. Each case will present its own features and symptoms calling for special attention and treatment, and details upon these points must be left to the advice of the medical attendant. (JO? A.)

END OF VOLUME EIGHTEENTH.

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.

=.) Be Wooton . } rat [pes acote a ficley AN OONR se Arde Df a

Zs

stm) Yowell aed

Puates, Vou. XVIIJ.—Drrections to BrInDER,

When insertion throughout the text is desired, the Plates to be placed opposite the following pages :-—

Plate I. page 93 Plate VII. page 561 q 46°, 2 » TUL , 616 — Ma gp TIE ” | es. gy! EO o Bu dye 098 o 7 Ne pe BEE – ai, yy F488 we Whe. ag SS

858

*vidual case ; but it is in this stage of the disease that the question of a change of climate in the colder seasons of the year arises among those whose circumstances render such a step practicable. There can be no doubt that as regards Great Britain the removal of patients threatened by or already suffering from consumption to some mild locality, either in the country or abroad, proves in many instances most salutary. The object aimed at is to obtain a more equable climate, where the atmosphere may have a soothing influence on the respiratory organs, and where also open-air exercise may be taken with less risk than at home. Of British health-resorts Bournemouth, Hastings, Torquay, Ventnor, Penzance, &c., in the south of England, are the best known and most frequented, and although the climate is not so certain as in places farther south in Europe they possess the advantage of home residence, and may be resorted to by persons who are unable to undertake a farther journey. The climate of the Riviera (Maritime Alps) is of superior efficacy owing to its mild- ie a 7 « 7 ee eee | *. re*

ws on Sa

}

PHTH Ter s

while in the advanced stages, where there is great prostra- tion of strength, with colliquative symptoms, the removal

| of a patient is worse than useless, and frequently hastens

the end.

Throughout the whole course of the malady the nutrition of the patient forms a main part of the treatment, and tonics which promote the function of the digestive organs are especially helpful. Codliver oil has long been held to be of eminent value, as it appears not merely to possess all the advantages of a food but to exert a retarding effect on the disease. Where it is well borne, not only will the weight of the body be found to increase, but the cough and other symptoms will markedly diminish. The oil is as a rule best administered at first in small quantity. The frequently employed substitutes, such as malt extract, tonic syrups, &c., although not without their uses, are all inferior to codliver oil. The occasional employment of counter- irritation to the chest in the form of iodine or small blisters

is of-service in allaying cough and relieving local pains. Danntinntann ta anvar tha manth and nase and sa econ-

END OF VOLUME EIGHTEENTH.

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH

PLATE I.

OXFORD, BUCKINGHAM. & BERKS.

20° Jo’ p 50’

;

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

“NOILIGS HININ VOINNVLISE WiGHdOTIAING

“Mopuoy % YsnguIpyT UoweAyor WAM

‘sPssa\ Iapjo pun aaSanyeyy Ss qh Pmeg uo spent suoursresqe oy uroay poardoad NV390 3HL 40 SU3LVM 39VINNS SHI NI ALISNIQ 4O NOILNGIYLSIG JHL ONIMOHS

sszor’” o9z0 1 ” Sgz01

*sozor oLz01 **

o9tot q9ZoT ”

oszot easoqe [| XMaNI

os

BaNLIAvT 40 S3IN9IG |JO BIWVIS IWANOZINON

Ome one — a a —. – : a ym: =P = = — ——EEEEI————_ = Ng po 7 oor oo% ouss

2 3 ; 4

os 3 : es 2.9 Sees 2 – oo08 ooor a 3 8.46 fore} Y 7.98 Be ¥ ce ie | |: — | t: |

co

3 =

SwWOHivs 26 31VOS TWVOLNAA

$ &

SWOHLY 4O 3T7IS IINLBTA

*3 se : | | Hi | | Ng is Mw 3 | | : | / | me a: f : ee | | | ; | 1] |e | 49,98 | he. te Bs : % F/T Ss lels / | | + | lor oslse wos t 1g q 43 | q ort / | Ov ll ge WOnd ty | co * i | Es 04 |se wows | | ae | } | | | | f ‘ii re | |g | q Z| yo | | i | | fReeis ttt ¥laig | i | | pees &/8) 6 i ees | | | | Ey | / | | | park | Je | : psi 5, linall | | | | fs *| Le | | Es | be 8|8 oa | ee \ beet | \ tielels | ee ee ee Be ie ee | Pete eb el t % OS [oil.se wows + | 3) | . . fe nae Sees. a= = — eit – eto non | 7 ; pra = is eco a g = — <= ——— = == = . 2 ae or, a — — Es 0 ——————— ma 73 Oro 8 a = ey nN =l4n cI ny ne nN » n n N nw n o is rg get 7 7 oz? go “ow oO > a © ye e e w ra – a +O 08 S68 G18 Z.2e 8.8 < ie Hd g ts So 8 3 $e o ey 5 ie ee | ie aS aay Be aa SPR . id S Gis “enh eh ee ver ween we + * o e o a = ; oy 2 2 a o 4 ~ ~ o s o y “ 3 4 = gg a fel He é ve. te ne OR: 5: is oes it Sw Ean ae, Pa S p 66 «Ge UE E z 6 ee Zaz) 639 Ged Cad EBD EHD FD yee ce GD CLD E22 ZB (2a z) G92 63% G3H G3B GoD GSD 32 E92 ow 3 4 4 $ a z 2 z Os z = q | s e ‘< Fiey s . oy | Ea E BOE a. .. ys e = = & * QOVINdIHOUY NHALSVE 20.30 spumpst ap 44 posoyoue SOF Jo PIeRg om ON -gE JH [TeARG ap mor | uoNdeg sanyeaediray, feuorperayy’ NVTIO OLIVA PAGE EERIE ORE PS Dern manele*

Hasyid IHMAX “TOA

NV@00O OIWIOVd

TEL

lee ee eo ew – 2 ————

wopwOyT % WPIMgUTy wow wyO Ll HY eM

“NOILIGS HININ “VOINNVLIYS “VIDHdOTIAING

OST

ytameerg Zo

ee eee ee eee es eens

Chae aaoe ch

Boe smp possoudxe e4v wobuayoyg Fyi 4O esunoo 24 Buoyo saumyousdues wonog “ouz,

(yng) asnbny 4a, sueyiosy eropeng ILET % ELRT “KoPuareyy ‘s WEY so yowar SUOYILY 00% Cad od 000% ? O00 r 000¢ ? 000z

4

WT ALVTdLI

0002 2 000! wanagy i nae

» Suays 000i & eur Wsv07 SUOYTLL 0001 AkBA® 4naj}0D amg yo ybuaas buasvesoua ky -umays cv URIg MB yO sygdep 74y

NVAOO Old1OVd | |

oot

TMAX “TOA

— hme ya —

JN

VOL. XVII

PALESTINE

PLATE I¥

Scale of English Miles o 10

Note : The map ts coloured according to present administrative divisions Ce RO fp a a

Mutessaritlike of EL Buds…

Red

i AA Sek

2)

Fe Sil) us nh vas

5, ag OE a ‘ Le Sige el Bee ee

‘ We

Vis

<

Ave:

ue a

I” eel nn

Sar

AS tii we yee

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

‘W & AK. Johnston. Edinburgh & London.

**) kee| ion ma bes os ee ees a f~ ag Sw ra = or: Ps “a > —” 9, > Lo. ENS SP / Le A SS cent aS NLA ze Sa. a he LA Jo Mo Lh Fe HH] L. <. ie / Ky “| v ‘ CSE +e Y\5 ses Cj TY, y Z i. &® 4 “ = 2 ye Eg . ~~ Py) y bad ¢ ? WV + = 4 (es A SQ A i a \ ey, .. / = faa ay O Q d X a ¥ : wu y ¢ is - Sy ASS z OA Gea Saas > % ws > =| fs l o & Avs A Pas : ; Ye 2S rf ¥ Ba SI f weed “277 2f) ee eri “iS 3 § Se R ” ui : e) (| ait) 4 a) i flit} Cok ire Né ¢ | YY Zz “= v*

*-| ne y Lii/\e a ot? . is — stare “ { | i – | – ia J 7s 2 * Ye I if wp a = S Y mMw* c wr Ly Gy j es 5 ot <2) . 2 ITT, ° " SQ. 3 “— r °5 & P~ vs %,. » 4 3 a 8 «, wy We \ ~PNOS Sie g, » “b iS: XK*

~ 7 = _ 5

a iE : © ‘o ‘7 Oo { oaks) \e’ ; , > g mS eS : , $: : i Si 53) by . . = > oN a 5S x 4 : ° 2 43 t i N pip} ip

2

!

ce

&

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANEA

M

°

=

= “" "

VOL. XVII.

&

SEU Ga

oom

parent teens anneal rate Ht oy tf A sears oud P, a ote : AS. SO f \ — = ” s a MORT ‘ “eae

PLAT RH Ve

Fee eye

i) Boul. BEAU MARCHALS <

Te

hy

eh

: jaf ey,

NBA, NINTH EDITION,

of t

7 in i i 5 _ i q a< =f 0a = : P ¢ i a 1 a i " t ‘i “y ; ¥] J i

3 =

i {

.

J A i u > i Ci ‘ i

-

‘

,

{ ‘ b oe ‘ + ‘

~

ri ‘ b .

3 –

‘ i

~ =

: i ; ‘

4

‘ ' i ‘ \ . —_— he ; s ’ Fy ‘ i . : i ‘ x

-

‘

! 4

‘ i i i]

zi

i °

.

® ‘

- .

« ‘ ’

‘

i rat . Cn ®

.

*fi ‘ se wy a ‘ – aa a *, ‘ 3 ¥ “*

=

‘ i ‘ ’ ‘ ft i ‘

.

at

*. **

PENNSY|!

pam : se 78 Longitudeffes!

io’ Edi ADviog) mborough

Wess

§ Middletown 7 Z Washington ye

Beallsvitles (aj % : pennswile : Pt S, S “Brown, ~ tig ee = A Schellsburgh %

} Greensbyrough ;

{ o. f oe

aught

Long. West from Washington

ENCYCLOPADIA BRIT

ale Wey tn

iE

ANIA. PLATE VI

»st from Greenwich oF sae _ : So – = = —— a

Seale of Statute Miles

20 30 40

Railroads —..... Canals Walton} PF

SF Nareywsbaurgs 4

~

Fle: sees

Je

Barneston Chester, Spr.2

from Washington

W.& AK Joinston. Edinburgh & London

(MICA. NINTH EDITION

” ~~” A

*2 * –*

tal e i rs ’ – b- ’ p – c , : « ’ ” ° n ‘4 J – 4 ‘ iy : ‘ s ie ~! bs

= = . –

1 ‘ A = . al ‘ 3 » 7 ; LS Os

= .

- ne : \ = > : : : o 4 . ¥

: – .

S Tt ‘ > = > ‘ ‘ ’ ’ ° ‘ ‘ . ;

. . . ”

,e~

*. * –*

‘ = .

. .

- ee) r . Ay ‘ « as ‘ ; i : ‘

. –

- *” ‘ ‘ : – ‘ ‘ ,*

-

a . . a – at, . – : , ‘ . A – 7 i – a A ‘

“Mop wo’y y ‘ysanqmp yr usw, eV ¥ Mh a is “

“NOILIGS HININ “VOINNVIIEE VICHAOTIAING

ae Vie

ap ale

sip OR

> wz me | B,.0\Wl, Phyey “ me ee ss \ i) AS

side aN

WON iY 4) ”

wmmerg Jo ss wer epmsioyT

*Log swophiny pelgns y andug ur * eee ‘Og edu UDIUOpIIn Ky —*

OO00L

sot qsysuy,

NWT ULNA NW

Visdadd

THAX TOA

*5 – (**

*7 i ~ – – a – i – > r a oo rc * “*

= 4

ba a o a > a S

2) &

7 > U 7 – By U

. ,.

—- : ae i c 5

‘

, –

“NOILIGR HLNIN ‘VOINNVLINS YIGHAOTIAING “Wopuoy % Ysmquipy ‘unsuyor YY M

ot

‘ost oor og ° o Spe 2 Bp: sary ysTsey

} as ae ”

7 —= =, ?

p na 4 . ny by he aes ce 7

1" Tae WPor 0 Sprang Ba > OD Mz. a

“oa tes mr smQUMoYs ‘gzzy 07 an VOLE UVIESTAL Y YSWYN], ~ BON*

TAX “IOA.

HIA ALV Td

VOL. XVII

Paca Paca Malalyigo RS

Macabi le Santiak

Gulebras PR Sere War-ca

WConsava

Pucani

English ‘Stauate Miles.

100

Railways

80 |

o a ia ‘ VET aaS ee . W &AK Johnston, Edinburgh & London
ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION. :

> ‘4 – nd. i – s

1 . .

“4 ‘ ‘ ‘ . é ‘

4 : . , !

’ ‘

; 7

t . t

.

F *

-

‘ ‘ ~

‘

‘

2 * *

’ »

; * = . *5*

— *al i* , ‘ *; i%*

- = , – =

’ _

_ : .

‘ ‘ | — ‘ ‘

< : .

“

wea ; U hy

—

BS anal 7 i

ML

: Nia fi Sala eel aS

TAA MTT |

oon i Hy

Ty

Hl tt

i

=

A na

[iD wien all

cy

PHILADELPHIA (CentTRAL Part) iS

VOL. XVI

NSS i

Ui a

es

a ih = =a

Dep ella Bal iS SS LUDA

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

vO. XVI. PHILIPPINE ISLANDS. | PLATE XI

126

16 L

es BE ay Ie

—

urh

‘ 2 pe RR

- : howe Se Stmiza) A. Se AN D It ;) , os Paynes A . agna Fr y 7 a ina My.
*< CibasifP sates ‘pheccin 3 ss: | ; % E * oF . Ea, H*

- Se or yo LAMIANES ‘

7

oe Sw é’ aid

; PS AROHIPELAGO

sar

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

oo ‘ a i! p . 1 . 7+

. 2 4

‘ a

7 . – .

‘

.

‘ ‘

- . . ‘ ‘

’

•

‘ <] . .

. 5 . ‘

P i

- :

~ . ?

‘ .

ee

. .

—

. –

: \

. . : –

4 ”

+ .

- *b*= *

: * . * * , ... *

e s >

*ehSba hens dade cbahes 3 i: yi h Sete, = eae 45 : *

>

Hitt

—— : os = een be ene eae ae See a Soe toe

ees es 2 <= =

Se ee ee ee

aeae— enn SSa-

Vol 19 (PHY-PRO)

Britannica 9th

Mt see

-

Wak Y

saath,

)

y

,

7

mn

‘ 0

-

‘

i Fear

-

- AAD ae an, ct Pe, ethers

axe

he

he

=

Poo: = ere – ¢ ae me : . . 5 of a . – f G * f Rarer

Teo P : : aes – . s ¥ Oe he ORES 4 7 : : . ft yo at

Con

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA DICTIONARY

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XIX

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXV

[All Rights reserved.]

ENCYCLOPAIDIA

BRITANNICA.

PHY-PAE

HYLACTERY (dvAaxrtyjpiov) is the name given in P the New Testament to the yon (tefillin) or ‘“ prayer- thongs” of the Jews. Every Jew wears at prayer two of these thongs—(1) the hand-tefilla, a leather thong wound round the left arm and supporting a small case containing a parchment strip with the passages Exod. xiii. 1-10, 11-16, Deut. vi. 4-9, xi. 13-21 written in four columns; (2) the head-tefilla, a similar thong with the four passages inscribed on four separate slips of parchment, and worn round the head so that the box with the texts rests on the forehead. The use of these phylacteries is justified by a literal inter- pretation of expressions in the passages above cited, and they form, together with the M¥¥ (zizith) or “fringe” (Numb. xv. 37 sg.) and the MnM) (meztiza) above the door, the

three sets of visible signs by which the Israelite is constantly reminded of his duty to God. The zizith is no longer placed on the outer garment as in New Testa- ment times (Matt. xxiii. 5), but on the woollen scarves called mdy (tallith), of which the Jewish man always wears one, while another is wound round the head and neck during prayer. The meztfiza is now a longish box fixed over the right doorpost of houses or rooms and containing a parchment with Deut. vi. 4-9, xi. 13-21.

In their origin there can be little doubt that the phylacteries are, according to the proper sense of the Greek word, a kind of amulet, not essentially different from the Aramaic kmt‘é, and in fact “the Hebrew” of the Hexapla uses the word “ phylacteries” for the amulets (EZ. V. pillows) of Ezek. xiii. 18. Phylactery and meziiza were supposed to keep off hurtful demons (Targ. on Cant. viii. 3). For further particulars, see Surenhusius, Aisha, i. 9 sq., and Bodenschatz, Kirch. Verf. d. heutigen Juden, iv. 9 sq.

PHYLLOXERA. See VINz.

PHYSICAL CONSTANTS. See WeicHtTs AND MEa- SURES.

PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY. See vol. x. pp. 210-212.

PHYSICAL SCIENCES.! According to the original meaning of the word, physical science would be that knowledge which is conversant with the order of nature— that is, with the regular succession of events whether

1 The paper of the late Professor J. Clerk Maxwell which is pre- sented to the reader under this head was prepared at the time when the ninth edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica was being planned, and bore in his M8. the title ‘‘ Remarks on the Classification of the Physical Sciences.”

mechanical or vital—in so far as it has been reduced to a scientific form. The Greek word “physical” would thus be the exact equivalent of the Latin word “natural.” In the actual development, however, of modern science and its terminology these two words have come to be restricted each to one of the two great branches into which the knowledge of nature is divided according to its sub- ject-matter. Natural science is now understood to refer to the study of organized bodies and their development, while physical

science investigates those phenomena primarily which are observed in things without life, though it does not give up its claim to pursue this investi- gation when the same phenomena take place in the body of a living being. In forming a classification of sciences the aim must be to determine the best arrangement of them in the state in which they now exist. We there- fore make no attempt to map out a scheme for the science of future ages. We can no more lay down beforehand the plan according to which science will be developed by our successors than we can anticipate the particular dis- coveries which they will make. Still less can we found our classification on the order in time according to which different sciences have been developed. This would be no more scientific than the classification of the properties of matter according to the senses by which we have become acquainted with their existence.

It is manifest that there are some sciences, of which we may take arithmetic as the type, in which the subject- matter is abstract, capable of exact definition, and incap- able of any variation arising from causes unknown to us which would in the slightest degree alter its properties. Thus in arithmetic the properties of numbers depend entirely on the definitions of these numbers, and these definitions may be perfectly understood by any person who will attend to them. The same is true of theoretical geometry, though, as this science is associated in our minds with practical geometry, it is difficult to avoid thinking of the probability of error arising from unknown causes affecting the actual measurement of the quantities. There are other sciences, again, of which we may take biology as the type, in which the subject-matter is con- crete, not capable of exact definition, and subject to the influence of many causes quite unknown to us. Thus in

biology many abstract words such as “species,” “ genera- tion,” &c., may be employed, but the only thing which we can define is the concrete individual, and the ideas which the most accomplished biologist attaches to such words as “species” or ‘“ generation” have a very different degree of exactness from those which mathematicians associate, say, with the class or order of a surface, or with the umbilical generation of conicoids. Sciences

of this kind are rich in facts, and will be well occupied for ages to come In the co-ordination of these facts, though their cultivators may be cheered in the meantime by the hope of the discovery of laws like those of the more abstract sciences, and may indulge their fancy in the contemplation of a state of scientific knowledge when maxims cast in the same mould as those which apply to our present ideas of dead matter will regulate all our thoughts about living things.

What is commonly called “physical science” occupies a position intermediate between the abstract sciences of arithmetic, algebra, and geometry and the morphological and biological sciences. The principal physical sciences are as follows.

A. The Fundamental Science of Dynamics, or the doctrine of the motion of bodies as affected by force.—The divisions of dynamics are the following. (1) Kinematics, or the investigation of the kinds of motion of which a body or system of bodies is capable, without reference to the cause of these motions. This science differs from ordinary geometry only in introducing the idea of motion,—that is, change of position going on continuously in space and time, Kinematics includes, of course, geometry, but in every existing system of geometry the idea of motion is freely introduced to explain the tracing of lines, the sweeping out of surfaces, and the generation of solids. (2) Statics, or the investigation of the equilibrium of forces, —that is to say, the conditions under which a system of forces may exist without producing motion of the body to which they are applied. Statics includes the discussion of systems of forces which are equivalent to each other. (3) Kinetics, or the relations between the motions of material bodies and the forces which act on them. Here the idea of matter as something capable of being set in motion by force, and requiring a certain force to generate a given motion, is first introduced into physical science. (4) Energetics, or the investigation of the force which acts between two bodies or parts of a body, as dependent on the conditions under which action takes place between one body or part of a body and another so as to transfer energy from one to the other.

The science of dynamics may be divided in a different manner with respect to the nature of the body whose motion is studied. This formsa cross

division. (1) Dyna- mics of a particle ; including its kinematics or the theory of the tracing of curves, its statics or the doctrine of forces acting at a point, its kinetics or the elementary equations of motion of a particle, and its energetics, including, as examples, the theory of collision and that of central forces. (2) Dynamics of a connected system, including the same subdivisions. This is the most important section in the whole of physical science, as every dynamical theory of natural phenomena must be founded on it. The sub- divisions of this, again, are—a. dynamics of a rigid system, or a body of invariable form; 6. dynamics of a fluid, including the discussion (a) of its possible motion, (8) of the conditions of its equilibrium (hydrostatics), (y) of the action of force in producing motion (hydro-dynainics, not so unsatisfactory since Helmholtz, Stokes, and Thomson's investigations), and (6) of the forces called into play by change of volume; c. dynamics of an elastic body ; d. dynamics of a viscous body.

B. The Secondary Physical Sciences.—Each of these

SCIENCES

sciences consists of two divisions or stages. In the ele- mentary stage it is occupied in deducing from the observed phenomena certain general laws, and then employing these laws in the calculation of all varieties of the phenomena. In the dynamical stage the general laws already discovered are analysed and shown to be equivalent to certain forms of the dynamical relations of a connected system (A, 2), and the attempt is made to discover the nature of the dynamical system of which the observed plenomena are the motions. This dynamical stage includes, of course, several other stages rising one above the other; for we may successfully account for a certain phenomenon, say the turning of a weathercock towards the direction of the wind, by assuming the existence of a force having a parti- cular direction and tending to turn the tail of the cock in that direction. In this way we may account not only for the setting of the weathercock but for its oscillations about its final position. This, therefore, is entitled to rank as a dynamical theory. But we may go on and discover a new fact, that the air exerts a pressure and that there is a greater pressure on that side of the cock on which the wind blows. This is a further development of the theory, as it tends to account for the force already discovered. We may go on and

explain the dynamical connexion be- tween this inequality of pressure and the motion of the air regarded as a fluid. Finally, we may explain the pressure of the air on the hypothesis that the air consists of molecules in motion, which strike against each other and against the surface of any body exposed to the air.

The dynamical theories of the different physical sciences are in very different stages of development, and in almost all of them a sound knowledge of the subject is best acquired by adopting, at least at first, the method which we have called ‘elementary,’—that is to say, the study of the connexion of the phenomena peculiar to the science without reference to any dynamical explanations or hypo- theses. Thus we have—

(1) Theory of gravitation, with discussion of the weight and motion of bodies near the earth, of the whole of physical astronomy, and of the figure of the earth. There is a great deal of dynamics here, but we can hardly say that there is even a beginning of a dynamical theory of the method by which bodies gravitate towards each other.

(2) Theory of the action of pressure and heat in chang- ing the dimensions and state of bodies, This is a very large subject and might be divided into two parts, one treating of the action of pressure and the other of heat. But it is much more instructive to study the action of both causes together, because they produce effects of the same kind, and therefore mutually influence each other. Hence the term ‘“‘ thermodynamics” might be extended to the whole subject were it not that it is already restricted to a very important department relating to the transformation of energy from the thermal to the mechanical form and the reverse. The divisions of the subject are seven. (a) Physical states of a substance,—gaseous, liquid, and solid ; elasticity of volume in all three states ; elasticity of figure in the solid state; viscosity in all three states ; plasticity in the solid state ; surface-tension, or capillarity ; tenacity of solids ; cohesion of liquids ; adhesion of gases to liquids and solids. (6) Effects of heat in raising temperature, altering size and form, changing physical state. (c) Ther- mometry. (d) Calorimetry. (¢) Thermodynamics, or the mutual convertibility of heat and work. (/) Dissipation

-of energy by diffusion of matter by mixture, diffusion of

motion by internal friction of fluids, diffusion of heat by conduction. (g) Theory of propagation of sound, vibra- tions of strings, rods, and other bodies.

(3) Theory of radiance. (a) Geometrical optics ; theory of conjugate foci and of instruments. (b) Velocity

PHY—PHY 3

(c) Prismatic analysis of

of light in different media. visible radiance,

light, spectroscopy, radiant heat, ultra-violet rays, calorescence, &c., fluorescence, &c. (d) Colours of thin plates, diffraction, ke, (d’) Proof of the existence of wave-lengths and wave-periods (prepara- tion for dynamical theory). (¢) Polarized light, radiant heat, &c. (e’) The disturbance is transverse to the ray. (7) Quantity of energy in the total radiation from a hot body ; Prévost’s theory of exchanges, &c. (g) Theory of three primary colours.

(4) Electricity and magnetism. (a) Electrostatics, or distribution and effects of electricity in equilibrium. (6) Electrokinematics, or distribution of currents in conductors. (c) Magnetism and magnetic induction (diamagnetism, &e.). (d) Electromagnetism, or the effects of an electric current at a distance. Under (%) we may discuss electro- chemistry, or the theory of electrolysis ; under © terres- trial magnetism and ship’s magnetism; and after (d) comes electrokinetics, or electromagnetic phenomena considered with reference to the fundamental science of dynamics. There is also Faraday’s discovery of the effect of magnet- ism on light and the electromagnetic theory of light.

Chemistry is not included in this list, because, though dynamical science is continually reclaiming large tracts of good ground from the one side of chemistry, chemistry is extending with still greater rapidity on the other side into regions where the dynamics of the present day must put her hand upon her mouth. Chemistry, however, is a physical science, and a physical science which occupies a very high rank. (5. C. M.)

PHYSIOGNOMY. By the Act of Parliament 17 George II. c. 5 all persons pretending to have skill in physiognomy were deemed rogues and vagabonds, and were liable to be publicly whipped, or sent to the house of correction until next sessions.![1] The pursuit thus stigma- tized as unlawful is one of great antiquity, and one which in ancient and medieval times had an extensive though now almost forgotten literature. Physiognomy was re- garded by those who cultivated it as a twofold science— (1) a mode of discriminating character by the outward appearance and (2) a method of divination from form and feature. It was very early noticed that the good and evil passions by their continual exercise stamp their impress on the face, and that each particular passion has its own expression. Thus far physiognomy is a branch of physiology, and from a very early age of human thought it attracted philosophic attention. But in its second aspect it touched astrology, of which Galen[2] says that the physiognomical part is the greater, and this aspect of the subject bulked largely in the fanciful literature of the Middle Ages.

The name originated with the Greeks, who called it provoyvopia, prrvoyvwpovia, or Pvtwyvepoctvy. Accord- ing to Principal Blackwell[3] of Aberdeen, Homer wrote upon the lines of the hand; but this is not supported by classical authority. That Homer was a close observer of appearance as correlated with character is shown in his description of Thersites* and elsewhere. Hippocrates, writing about 450 B.c., refers to this subject, but not in

1 The Act 39 Elizabeth c. 4 declared “all persons fayning to have knowledge of Phisiognomie or like Fantasticall Ymaginacions ” liable to “be stripped naked from the middle upwards and openly whipped until his body be bloudye.” This was modified by 13 Anne c. 26, still further by 17 George II. c. 5, which was re-enacted by 5 George IV. c. 88. This last Act only specifies palmistry.

2 Galen, Iepi xaraxloews mpoyvworikd (ed. Kiihn, xix. 530).

3 Proofs of the Inquiry into the Life and Writings of Homer, London, 1747.

4 JL, ii. 214. See also Blackwell’s Inquiry, 2d ed., 1736, p. 330. A physiognomical study of the Homeric heroes is given by Malalas,

Chronogr., ed. Dindorf, v. p. 105.

detail.5 He believed in the influence of environment in determining disposition, and in the reaction of these upon feature,—a view in which he is supported later by Trogus. Galen speaks of it at more length in his work [epi rov THs Wuxis 79wv, in which, having discussed the nature and immortality of the soul, he proceeds in chapter vii. to a brief study of physiognomy (ed. Kiihn, iv. 795). How- ever, at the end of the chapter he passes over the current physiognomical speculations, saying that he might criticize them but feared to waste time, and become tedious over them. In the eighth chapter he quotes with approbation the Hippocratic doctrine referred to above; and in a later work, [epi xataxAioews tpoyvwotixd, he speaks of its relations to medicine thus: '" Hippocrates igitur, et vetustate admodum notus et scientia admirandus, in- quit, 'quocunque exercentes medicinam, physiognomonie sunt expertes, horum mens in tenebras devoluta torpida senescit,'" &c.6 We learn both from Iamblichus' and Porphyry § that Pythagoras was in the habit of diagnos- ing the characters of candidates for pupilage before ad- mitting them. However, he seems to have discredited the current physiognomy of the schools, as he rejected Cylo the Crotonian from his discipleship on account of his professing these doctrines, and thereby was brought into considerable trouble.® Plato also tells us that Socrates predicted the promotion of Alcibiades from his appearance ; and Apuleius !° speaks of Socrates recognizing the abilities of Plato at first view. On the other hand, it has been recorded by Cicero! that a certain physiognomist, Zopyrus, who professed to know the habits and manners of men from their bodies, eyes, face, and forehead, characterized Socrates as stupid, sensual, and dull (bardus), "in quo Alcibiades cachinnum dicitur sustulisse." Alexander Aphrodisiensis !* adds that, when his disciples laughed at the judgment, Socrates said it was true, for such had been his nature before the study of philosophy had modified it. Zopyrus is also referred to by Maximus Tyrius}° as making his recognitions " intuitu solo."

That one's occupation stamps its impress on the out- ward appearance was also noticed at an early period. In the curious poem in praise of literature found in the Sallier papyrus (II.) in the British Museum this is ex- patiated on, and the effects of divers handicrafts on the workmen are compared with

the elevating influences of a literary life by an Egyptian scribe of the XIIth Dynasty, perhaps 2000 years B.c.14 Josephus tells us that Casar detected the pretence of the spurious Alexander by his rough hands and surface.!°

The first systematic treatise which has come down to us is that attributed to Aristotle,!® in which he devotes six chapters to the consideration of the method of study, the general signs of character, the particular appearances characteristic of the dispositions, of strength and weakness,

5 Tlept dépwr, vddrwv, Torwy (ed. Kiihn, i. 547).

8 Op, cit., xix. p. 530.

7 Tlept Blov WvOayopixod débyos, i. 17, Amsterdam, 1707, p. 59.

8 De vita Pythagore, Amsterdam, 1707; p. 16. This author tells us that he applied the same rule to his friends. See also Aulus Gellius, i. ix. ® Tamblichus, p. 49.

10 Philosophi Platonic, i., ‘‘De dogmate,” Leyden, 1714, p. 34.

ll De fato, Geneva, 1684, iii. p. 303, 1. 25.

12 Tlepi ciuappévys, § 6, London, 1658.

13 Diss., xv., Cambridge, 1703, p. 157.

14 Select Papyri, pl. xv., xix., and (Anastasi) ibéd., cxxviii.-cxxxiii.

VA, xviie 12; 2.

16 Authors differ in their views as to its authenticity, but Diogenes Laertius (v. 22) and Stobeus (Serm., clxxxix.) both believe it to be genuine. The chief difficulty is the reference to a certain sophist, Dionysius, but this is probably an interpolation. There are physio- gnomic references in other writings of Aristotle (cf. Anal. pr., li. c. 30; Hist. anim., i. 8, &c.) sufficient to justify the attribution of the treatise to him. On this, see Franz, Preface, p. vi. sg., of his Scrip- tores physiognomie veteres, Leipsic, 1780.

of genius and stupidity, of timidity, impudence, anger, and their opposites, &c. Then he studies the physiognomy of the sexes, and the characters derived from the different features, and from colour, hair, body, limbs, gait, and voice. He compares the varieties of mankind to animals, the male to the lion, the female to the leopard. The general character of the work may be gathered from the following specimen. While discussing noses, he says that those with thick bulbous ends belong to persons who are insensitive, swinish; sharp-tipped belong to the irascible, those easily provoked, like dogs ; rounded, large, obtuse noses to the magnanimous, the lion-like ; slender hooked noses to the eagle-like, the noble but grasping ; round-tipped retroussé noses to the luxurious, like barn- door fowl; noses with a very slight notch at the root belong to the impudent, the crow-like ; while snub noses belong to persons of luxurious habits, whom he compares to deer ; open nostrils. are signs of passion, &c. Several good editions have been published,! and numerous voluminous commentaries written upon it ;? most subsequent authors have copied from it, with or without acknowledgment.

References exist to a work on physiognomy by Theo- |

phrastus, but it is not extant; and the next important author is Melampus, the Egyptian hierogrammateus, who lived at the court of Ptolemy Philadelphus, and wrote, about 270 B.c., the work Ilept wadpov pavtixy. This, while descriptive, like that of Aristotle, deals largely in omens, in divination from nevi and the twitchings of limbs. It was edited by Camillus Peruscus, and published at Rome (1545) along with those of Polemon and Adaman- tius.3 References to physiognomy are to be found in many of the Greek classics.4 Apion speaks of the metopo- scopists who judge by the appearance of the face, and Cleanthes the Stoic says it is possible to tell habits from the aspect (cf. Ecclus. xix. 29, 30). Polemon (c. 150 A.D.) is the next in order who has left a treatise on the subject, similar in character to that of Aristotle; but he excels in graphic descriptions of different dispositions and differs only from Aristotle in some of his animal com- parisons. The best modern edition of his work is contained in Franz’s Scriptores phystognomix veteres. It was trans- lated into Latin and published at Venice by Nicholas Petreius in 1534.

This book was referred to by Albertus Magnus, who attributes to its author a second work on the subject. A more important contribution to the literature of physiognomy was added by a converted Jew, Adaman- tius, about 415. This work is in two books, the first on the expression of the eye, the second on physiognomy in general, mostly Aristotelian in character. He professes to have learned much from the Egyptians, and tells us that nature speaks in the forehead and face and in the silence of the mouth. He follows Aristotle in holding rather a low opinion of the intellect of the female sex, whom he makes the subject of some rather depreciating com- parisons, His work was edited with the foregoing by Franz.> Artemidorus, Loxus, Philemon, Posidonius,® Con-

1 That of J. G. Franz (Leipsic, 1780) is the best ; Andreas Lacuna

published a Latin version, Paris, 1585; Willichius, another at Wittenberg, 1538,

? Fontain's Commentary (Paris, 1611), Camillus Baldus of Bologna (1621), Sanchez of Toulouse (1636).

; And later by Franz (op. cit., p. 470).

See an interesting paper on "Stretching and Yawning as Signs of Madness, by Professor Ridgeway (Trans. Camb. Philol. Soc., vol. i. p. 210), which refers to Aristoph., Wasps, 642, with which he compares Plautus, Menzchmi, 279. Other references exist to physiognomy in Cassiodorus, Isidorus, Meletius, and Nemesius, but none of any very great importance.

It was edited by Janus Cornaro at Marburg, 1543, by Bonum of Paris ten years later, by Camillus Peruscus, by Petreius, and by Sylburg in the sixth volume of his Aristotle,

c Tlept waduGv. See Justin Martyr's Quast. ad orthodox, xix., vol, ii., Paris, 1742, p, 461.

stantinus," are other early authors frequently quoted by 16th-century writers, while Phemonoe, Antiphon, Helenus of Syracuse, and Eumolpius

are mentioned as writers by Porta, Albertus Magnus, and others, but their works are not extant.

The Latin classics occasionally refer to physiognomy : Juvenal (vi. 383) speaks of the examination of forehead and face, but not with much respect; Suetonius (Vita Titz, 2) tells us, ‘Quo quidem tempore, aiunt, metoposcopum a Narcisso, Claudio liberto, adhibitum, ut Britannicus in-spiceret”; and Pliny also refers to it (47. WV., xxxv. 10). Refcrences also exist in the writings of Clement of Alexandria; and Origen,’ while speaking of the Jewish fable as to the birth of Christ, asks, Is it possible, if there be any truth in the science taught by Zopyrus, Loxus, and Polemon, that such a soul as Christ’s could have been provided with a suitable body in such a way? Sir George Wharton quotes the text Job xxxvii. 7, ‘He impresseth (DFM) the hand of every man, that all may know His work,” as an authority for chiromancy, and other chiro- mantists have followed him in so doing.? ;

Hitherto the physiognomy of the schools had been chiefly descriptive; in the succeeding period the astro- logical side, whose gradual development may be noted, becomes the most important part. Hence in the sub- sequent or second stage of history chiromancy is specially predictive in character, and attains an importance it had not originally possessed. The treatises also contain occa- sional digressions on onychomancy, alectoromancy, clido-mancy, coscinomancy, podoscopy, spasmatomancy, &e.

Along with the medical science of the period the Arabians took up the study of physiognomy: ‘Ali b. Ragel wrote a book on nevi; Rhazes (1040) devoted several chapters of his medical work to it ; and Averroes (1165) made many references to it in his De Sanztate (p. 82, Leyden, 1537). Avicenna also makes some acute physiognomical remarks in his De Animalibus, which was translated by Michael Scott about 1270, but printed subsequently (without date or place). Albertus Magnus (born 1205) devotes much of the second tract of his De Animalibus to the consideration of physiognomy. There is, however, nothing original in the treatise, which largely consists of extracts from Aristotle, Polemon, and Loxus. He does not enter so much into the animal comparisons of his predecessors, but occupies himself chiefly with simple descriptive physiognomy as indicative of character; and the same is true of the many scattered notes in the writ-

ings of Duns Scotus and Thomas Aquinas. The famous sage of Balwearie, Michael Scott, while court astrologer to the emperor Frederick I1., wrote his treatise De hominis phisionomia (c. 1272), much of which is physiological and of curious interest. It was not printed until 1477, and the edition was not illustrated. The physiognomical treatise forms the third part of his work De secretes nature, In 1335 Petrus de Abano of Padua delivered in Paris a course of lectures on this subject (afterwards edited by Blondus, 1544), a few years before he was burned for heresy. Shortly after the introduction of printing in the 15th century a large number of works on physiognomy were produced ; probably the oldest is the block book by Hartlieb, Die Kunst Ciromantia. This is an exceedingly rare folio, of which one fine copy is extant in Paris; each page bears a figure of a giant hand from 7 to 104 inches long, inscribed with characteristic words, and with a small amount of description below ; there are twenty-seven such

7 Constantinus Africanus, De humana natura et prinetpalibus membris corporis humant, Basel, 1541, folio.

8 Contra Celsum, i. 38.

® For other references to Scriptural allusions to physiognomy, see Vecchius, Observationes in div. script., Naples, 1641.

plates. A description of another perfect copy belonging to Earl Spencer occurs in Dibdin’s Bibliographical De- cameron (1817), vol. i. p. 148, and four imperfect copies are known to exist elsewhere. The date of Hartlieb’s work is probably 1470. This and Michael Scott’s books were the first printed works on the subject.

The 16th century was particularly rich in publications on physiognomy. Not only were the classical works printed, but additions were made to the literature by Cocles, Corvus, Johannes de Indagine, Cornaro, Blondus, Douxciel, Pompeius Ronnseus, Gratarolus, Niquetius, Pom- ponius Gauricus, Tricassus, Cardan, Tiberius, Thaddzeus ab Hayck, Taisnierus, Rizzacasa, Campanella, Hund, Picci- olus, Rothman, Johannes Padovanus, and, last and greatest of all, Giantbattista della Porta. Several works also ap-

peared in England, the earliest being the anonymous On the Art of foretelling Future Events by Inspection of the Hand (London, 1504). A second anonymous work, A pleasant Introduction to the Art of Chiromancie and Physiognomie, was published at the same place in 1558. Neither of these is of any merit. The first English work with the author's name is that of Dr Thomas Hill (1571), Zhe Contemplation of Mankynde, contayning a singular Discourse after the Art of Phisiognomie. Thisis rather quaintly written, but is simply an adaptation from the Italian writers of the day. Another anonymous author about this period, but whose work has no date, writes, under the name " Merlin Britannicus," upon moles and nevi after the model of 'Ali b. Ragel. The word '"physiognomy" had been introduced into England before this century, and, from analogy with the Greek, had been used in the sense of the outward appearance, or the face: thus in Udall's translation of the paraphrase of Erasmus on Mark iv. it occurs spelt " phisnomi"; the pugnacious bishop of Ossory, Bale, in his Hnglish Votaries, spells it " physnomie" (pt. i. ch. ii. p. 44).

The rise of the study of anatomy served largely to bring physiognomy into discredit by substituting real facts for fictions ; hence in the 17th century its literature, while not smaller in quantity, was less important in quality. The principal authors are Goclenius, Fuchs, Timpler, Tischbein, Gallimard, Moldenarius, Septalius, Hertod, Scarlatini, Saunders, Withers, Helvetius, Lebrun, Elsholtius, De la Belliére, Philipp May, Evelyn, Freius, Baldus, Torreblanca, Otto, Bulwer, Rhyne, Merbitzius, Fludd, Zanardus, Finella, Tamburini, Etzler, Vecchius, Pretorius, De la Chambre, and Giraldus.

The 18th century shows a still greater decline of interest in physiognomy. Historians of philosophy, like Meursius and Franz, re-edited some of the classical works, and Fiilleborn reviewed the relation of physiognomy to philo- sophy. Indeed the only name worthy of note is that of Lavater (q.v.). The other authors of this century are Peuschel, Spon, Lichtenberg, Schutz, Wegelin, Pernetty, Girtanner, Grohmann, and several anonymous writers, and from the anatomical side Lancisi, Parsons, and Peter Cam- per. The popular style, good illustrations, and pious spirit pervading the writings of Lavater have given to them a popularity they little deserved, as there is really no system in his work, which largely consists of rhapsodical comments upon the several portraits. Having a happy knack of estimating

character, especially when acquainted with the histories of the persons in question, the good pastor con- trived to write a graphic and readable book, but one much inferior to Porta's or Aristotle's as a systematic treatise. With him the descriptive school of physiognomists may be said to have ended, as the astrological physiognomy expired with De la Bellitre. The few straggling works which have since appeared are scarcely deserving of notice, the rising attraction of phrenology having given to pure phy- slognomy the coup de grdce by taking into itself whatever

was likely to live of the older science. The writers of this century are Horstig, Maas, Rainer, Cross, Stohr, Sehler, Diez, Carus, Piderit, Burgess, and Gratiolet.

The physiological school of physiognomy was fore- shadowed by Parsons and founded by Sir Charles Bell, as his Essay on the Anatomy of Expression, published in 1806, was the first really scientific study of expression. He was one of the first who accurately correlated the motions expressive of the passions with the muscles which produce them, and in the later editions of his work these descriptions are much enlarged and improved. Shortly after the appearance of the first edition of Bell's Hssay Moreau published his first edition of Lavater along some- what the same lines (1807). The experiments of Duchenne (Mécanisme de la Physionomie ITumaine, Paris, 1862) showed that by the use of electricity the action of the separate muscles could be studied and by the aid of photography accurately represented. These tested and confirmed by experimental demonstration the hypothetic conclusions of Bell. The machinery of expression having thus been clearly followed out, the correlation of the physical actions and the psychical states was made the subject of specula- tion by Spencer. (Psychology, 1855), and such speculations were first reduced to a system by Darwin (Expression of Emotions, 1872), who formulated and illustrated the fol- lowing as fundamental principles.

(1) Certain complex acts are of direct or indirect service under certain conditions of the mind in order to relieve or gratify certain sensations or desires; and whenever the same state of mind is induced the same set of actions tend to be performed, even when they have ceased to be of use. (2) When a directly opposite state of inind is induced to one with which a

definite action is correlated, there is a strong and involuntary tendency to perform a reverse action. (8) When the sensorium is strongly excited nerve - force

is generated in excess, and is transmitted in definite directions, depending on the connexions of nerve-cells and on habit.

It follows from these propositions that the expression of emotion is for the most part not under the control of the will, and that those striped muscles are the most expressive which are the least voluntary. The philosophy of phy- siognomy may be formulated upon this definite theoretic basis. (1) The actions we look upon as expressive of emotions are such as at some time were serviceable in relieving or gratifying the desires or sensations accom- panying the emotion. (2) Such actions become habitually associated with the mental condition and continue even where their utility is lost. (3) Certain muscles which pro- duce these actions become from habitual action strength- ened, and, when the skin diminishes in fulness and elasticity with advancing age, the action of the muscle produces furrows or wrinkles in the skin at right angles to the course of the fibres of the muscle. (4) As the mental disposition and proneness to action are inherited by children from parents, so the facility and proneness to expression are similarly developed under the law of heredity. (5) To some extent habitual muscular action and the habitual flow of nerve-force in certain directions may alter the contour of such bones and cartilages as are thereby acted upon by the muscles of expression. Illustrations of these theoretic propositions are to be found in the works of Bell, Duchenne, and Darwin, to which the student may be referred for further information.

For information on artistic anatomy as applied to physiognomy see the catalogue of sixty-two authors by Ludwig Choulant, Geschichte und Bibliographic der anatomischen Abbildwng, &c., Leipsic, 1852, and the works of the authors enumerated above, especially those of Aristotle, Franz, Porta, Cardan, Corvus, and Bulwer. An attempt has been made recently to rehabilitate palmistry by D’Arpentigny and Desbarrolles, for summaries of which see the works of Beamish and Craig. For physiognomy of disease, besides the usual medical handbooks, see Cabuchet, Essai sur I’ Expression de la Face dans les Maladies, Paris, 1801. For ethnological physiognomy,

see amongst older authors Gratarolus, and amongst moderns the writers cited in the various text-books on anthropology. (A. MA.)

6 PHYS@tonocwus

PHYSIOLOGUS, the most common title of a collection of some fifty Christian allegories much read in the Middle Ages, and still existing in several forms and in about a dozen Eastern and Western languages. As nearly all its imagery is taken from the animal world, it is also known as the Bestiary. There can be hardly a doubt about the time and general circumstances of its origin. Christian teachers, especially those who had a leaning towards gnostic speculations, took an interest in natural history, partly because of certain passages of Scripture that they wanted to explain, and partly on account of the divine revelation in the book of nature, of which also it was man's sacred duty to take proper advantage. Both lines of study were readily combined by applying to the interpretation of de- scriptions of natural objects the allegorical method adopted for the interpretation of Biblical texts. Now the early Christian centuries were anything but a period of scientific research. Rhetorical accomplishments were considered to be the chief object of a liberal education, and to this end every kind of learning was made subservient. Instead of reading Aristotle and other naturalists, people went for information to commonplace books like those of lian, in which scraps of folk-lore, travellers' tales, and fragments of misapprehended science were set forth in an elegant style for the enjoyment of the general reader. Theological writers with a merely literary training were not in the least prepared to question the worth of the marvellous descriptions of creatures that were current in the schools on the faith of authorities vaguely known as "the history of animals," 'the naturalists," and "the naturalist" in the singular number (dvawwAdyos).! So they took their notions of strange beasts and other marvels of the visible world on trust and did their best to make them available for religious instruction. In some measure we find this practice adopted by more than one of the fathers, but it was only natural that the Alexandrian school, with its pronounced taste for symbolism, should make the most of it. Clement himself had declared that natural lore, as taught in the course of higher Christian education accord- ing to the canon of truth, ought to proceed from '' cosmo- gony" to "the theological idea,"* and even in the little that is left

of the works of Origen we have two instances of the proceeding in question. And yet the fact that these reappear in the Phystologus would not suffice to stamp the work as a series of extracts from Alexandrian writings, as parallels of the same kind can be adduced from Epiphanius (doc. cit.) and Ephraem Syrus (Opp. Syr., il. pp. 17, 130). Father Cahier would even trace the book to Tatian, and it is true that that heresiarch mentions a writing of his own upon animals. Still the context in which the quotation occurs makes it evident that the subject-matter was not the nature of particular species nor the spiritual lessons to be drawn therefrom, but rather the place occupied by animal beings in the system of creation. On the other hand, the opinion of Cardinal Pitra, who referred the Physiologus to the more orthodox though somewhat peculiar teaching of the Alexandrians, is fully borne out by a close examination of the irregularities of doctrine pointed out in the Physiologus by Cahier, all of which are to be met with in Origen. The technical words by which the process of allegorizing is designated in the Physwologus, like épynveio, Oewpia, dvaywyh, &dAnyopia,

1 Origen, Sel. in Jerem., xvii. 11, “év 7H Pe oP Epiphan., Adv. Her. i. 3, » 24 oe Ce ate is nee ol

puovoroyo.” ; Origen, Hom. xvii., in Gen. xliv. 9, “nam physiologus de catulo leonis scribit.”

2 Strom., iv. p. 564 (ed. Potter),) yotv xara rév rfjs ddnGelas kavéva yrworikhs mapaddcews pvovoroyla, paddov 6é émromrela, €x

ToU mepl Koopoyovlas jptytat Adyou, évOévde dvaBalvovoa éml 7d BeodoytKdv eldos.

has, moreover, been remarked that almost all the animals mentioned were at home in the Egypt of those days, or at least, like the elephant, were to be seen there occasion- ally, whereas the structure of the hedgehog, for instance, is explained by a reference to the sea-porcupine, better known to fish-buyers on the Mediterranean. The fables of the phoenix and of the conduct of the wild ass and the ape at the time of the equinox owe their origin to astro- nomical symbols belonging to the Nile country.*? In both chapters an Egyptian month is named, and elsewhere the antelope bears its Coptic name of ‘“ antholops.”

That the substance of the Physiologus was borrowed from commentaries on Scripture * is confirmed by many of the sections opening with a text, followed up by some such formula as "‘ but the Physiologus says." When zoological records failed, Egypto-Hellenic ingenuity was never at a loss for a fanciful invention distilled from the text itself, but which, to succeeding copyists, appeared as part of the teaching of the original Physiologus. As a typical instance we may take the chapter on the ant-lion,—not the insect, but an imaginary creature suggested by Job iv. ll. The exceptional Hebrew for a lion (dayish) appeared to the Septuagint translators to call for a special rendering, and as there was said to exist on the Arabian coast a lion-like animal called "‘myrmex" (see Strabo, xvi. p. 774; Aélian, NV. A., vii. 47) they ventured to give the compound noun "myrmekoleon." After so many years the commentators had lost the key to this unusual term, and only knew that in common Greek ‘‘myrmex" meant an ant. So the text "the myrmekoleon hath perished for that he had no nourish- ment" set them pondering, and others reproduced their meditations, with the following result: "The Physiologus relates about the ant-lion: his father hath the shape of a lion, his mother that of an ant; the father liveth upon flesh, and the mother upon herbs. And these bring forth the ant-lion, a compound of both, and in part like to either, for his fore part is that of a lion, and his hind part like that of an ant. Being thus composed, he is neither able to eat flesh like his father, nor herbs like his mother; therefore he perisheth from inanition"; the moral follows.

At a later period, when the church had learnt to look with suspicion upon devotional books likely to provoke the scoffing of some and lead others into heresy, a work of this kind could hardly meet with her approval. A synod of Pope Gelasius, held in 496, passed censure, among others, on the "Liber Physiologus, qui ab hereticis conscriptus est et B. Ambrosii nomine signatus, apocryphus," and evidence has even been offered that a similar sentence was pro- nounced a century before. Still, in spite of such measures, the Physvologus, like the Church History of Eusebius or the Pastor of Hermas, continucd to be read with general interest, and even Gregory the Great did not disdain to allude to it on occasion. Yet the Oriental versions, which had certainly nothing to do with the Church of Rome, show that there was no systematic revision made according to the catholic standard of doctrine. The book remained essentially the same, albeit great liberties were

taken with its details and outward form. There must have been many imperfect copies in circulation, from which people tran- scribed such sections as they found or chose, and afterwards completed their MS. as occasion served. Some even re- arranged the contents according to the alphabet or to zoological affinity. So little was the collection considered as a literary work with a definite text that every one assumed a right to abridge or enlarge, to insert ideas of his

3 Cp. Leemans on Horapollo, i. 16, 34.

4 Including the Apocrypha. See the Icelandic account of the ele- phant, also a decidedly Alexandrian fragment upon the udpyos, founded upon 4 Maccab. i. 3, which has got into the scholia upon the Odyssey, xviii, 2 (ii. p. 583, ed. Dindorf, Oxford, 1855).

own, or fresh Scriptural quotations ; nor were the scribes and translators by any means scrupulous about the names of natural objects, and even the passages from Holy Writ. Physiologus had been abandoned by scholars, and left to take its chance among the tales and traditions of the un- educated mass. Nevertheless, or rather for this very reason, its symbols found their way into the rising literature of the vulgar tongues, and helped to quicken the fancy of the artists employed upon church buildings and furniture. The history of the Phystologus has become entwined from the beginning with that of the commentaries on the account of creation in Genesis. The principal production of this kind in our possession is the Heraemeron of Basil, which contains several passages very like those of the Physiologus. Yor instance, in the seventh homily the fable of the nuptials of the viper and the conger-eel, known already to A®lian and Oppian, and proceeding from a curious misreading of Aristotle (fist. An., v. 4, p. 540 b, Bekk.), serves to point more than one moral. Notwith- standing the difference in theology, passages of this kind could not but be welcome to the admirers of the Alexan- drian allegories. In fact a medley from both Basil and the Physiologus exists under the title of the Zexaemeron of Eustathius ; some copies of the first bear as a title Hepi pvovodAoyias, and ina Milan MS. the “morals” of the Physiologus are ascribed to Basil. The Leyden Syriac is

- supplemented with literal extracts from the latter, and

| the whole is presented as his work. Other copies give the

names of Gregory Theologus, Epiphanius, Chrysostom, and Isidore.

As far as can be judged, the emblems of the original Physiologus were the following: (1) the lion (footprints rubbed out with tail ; sleeps with eyes open ; cubs receive

| life only three days after birth by their father's breath) ;

(2) the sun-lizard (restores its sight by looking at the sun) ; (3) the charadrius (Deut. xiv. 16; presages recovery or death of patients); (4) the pelican (recalls its young to life by its own blood); (5) the owl (or nyktikorax ; loves darkness and solitude) ; (6) the eagle (renews its youth by sunlight and bathing in a fountain); (7) the phoenix (revives from fire); (8) the hoopoe (redeems its parents from the ills of old age) ; (9) the wild ass (suffers no male besides itself) ; (10) the viper (born at the cost of both its parents' death) ; (11) the serpent (sheds its skin; puts aside its venom before drinking; is afraid of man in a state of nudity; hides its head and abandons the rest of its body); (12) the ant (orderly and laborious ; prevents stored grain from germinating ; distinguishes wheat from barley on the stalk) ; (13) the sirens and onocentaurs (Isa. xiii, 21, 22; compound creatures); (14) the hedgehog (pricks grapes upon its quills) ; (15) the fox (catches birds by simulating death); (16) the panther (spotted skin ; enmity to the dragon; sleeps for three days after meals ; allures its prey by sweet odour) ; (17) the sea-tortoise (or aspidochelone ; mistaken by sailors for an island); (18

the partridge (hatches eggs of other birds); (19) the vul- ture (assisted in birth by a stone with loose kernel) ; (20) the ant-lion (able neither to take the one food nor to digest the other) ; (21) the weasel (conceives by the mouth and brings forth by the ear) ; (22) the unicorn (caught only by a virgin); (23) the beaver (gives up its testes when pur- sued) ; (24) the hyena (a hermaphrodite) ; (25) the otter (enhydris ; enters the crocodile's mouth to kill it); (26) the ichneumon (covers itself with mud to kill the dragon ; another version of No. 25); (27) the crow (takes but one consort in its life);

(28) the turtle-dove (same nature as No. 27); (29) the frog (either living on land and killed by rain, or in the water without ever seeing the sun) ; (30) the stag (destroys its enemy the serpent) ; (31) the salamander (quenches fire); (32) the diamond (powerful

against all danger); (33) the swallow (brings forth but once ; misreading of Aristotle, Hist. An., v. 13); (34) the tree called peridexion (protects pigeons from the serpent by its shadow); (35) the pigeons (of several colours; led by one of them, which is of a purple or golden colour) ; (36) the antelope (or hydrippus; caught by its horns in the thicket) ; (37) the fire-flints (of two sexes ; combine to produce fire); (38) the magnet (adheres to iron); (39) the saw-fish (sails in company with ships); (40) the ibis (fishes only along the shore) ; (41) the ibex (descries a hunter from afar); (42) the diamond again (read " car- buncle" ; found only by night); (43) the elephant (con- celves after partaking of mandrake ; brings forth in the water; the young protected from the serpent by the father; when fallen is lifted up only by a certain small individual of its own kind); (44) the agate (employed in pearl-fishing) ; (45) the wild ass and ape (mark the equinox) ; (46) the Indian stone (relieves patients of the dropsy) ; (47) the heron (touches no dead body, and keeps to one dwelling-place); (48) the sycamore (or wild fig; grubs living inside the fruit and coming out); (49) the ostrich (devours all sorts of things; forgetful of its own eggs). Besides these, or part of them, certain copies contain sections of unknown origin about the bee, the stork, the tiger, the woodpecker, the spider, and the wild boar.

The Greek text of the Physiologus cxists only in late MSS., and has to be corrected from the translations. In Syriac we have a full copy in a 12th-century Leyden MS., published in J. P. N. Land's Aneedota Syriaea ; thirty-two chapters with the "morals" left out in a very late Vatican copy, published by Tychsen ; and about the same number in a late MS. of the British Museum (Add. 25878). In Armenian Pitra gave some thirty-two chapters from a Paris MS. (13th century). The Athiopic exists both in London and Paris, and was printed at Leipsic by Dr Hommel in1877. In Arabic we have fragments at Paris, of which Renan translated a specimen for the Spieilegium Solesmense, and another version of thirty-seven chapters at Leyden, probably the work of a monk at Jerusalem, which Land translated and printed with the Syriac. The Latin MSS. of Bern are, after the

Vatican glossary of Ansileubus, the oldest of which we know; there are others in several libraries, and printed editions by Mai, Heider, and Cahier. Besides these a few fragments of an old abridgment occur in Vallarsi's edition of Jerome's works (vol. xi. col. 218). A metrical Physiologus of but twelve chapters is the work of Theobaldus, probably abbot of Monte Cassino (1022-1085 A.D.). From this was imitated the Old-English fragment printed by Th. Wright, and afterwards by Maetzner; also the Old-French Sensuyl le bestiaire d'amours. The prose Physiologus was done into Old High German before 1000, and afterwards into rhyme in the same idiom; since Von der Hagen (1824) its various forms have found careful editors among the leading Germanists. The Icelandic, in a Copenhagen MS. of the 18th century, was printed by Prof. Th. Mobius in his Analecta norroena (2d ed., 1877); at the same time he gave it in German in Dr Hommel's Aethiopic publication. Some Anglo-Saxon metrical fragments ~~are to be found in Grein's Bibliothek, vol. i. The Provencal (c. 1250), pub~~ lished in Bartsch's Chrestomathie provencale, omits the "morals," but is remarkable for its peculiarities of form. Before this there had been translations into French dialects, as by Philippe de Thaun (1121), by Guillaume, ''clere de Normandie," also, about tlie same period, by Pierre, a clergyman of Picardy. All the Old-French materials have not yet been thoroughly examined, and it is far from improbable that some versions of the book either remain to be detected or are now lost past recovery. A full account of the history of the Phystologus should also cmbrace the subjects taken from it in the productions of Christian art, the parodies suggested by the original work, ¢9., the Bestiaire d'Amour by Richard de Fournival, and finally, the traces left by it upon the encyclo- pedical and literary work of the later Middle Ages.

Nearly all the information now obtainable is to be found in the following works, and such as are there quoted : S. Epiphanius ad Physiologum, ed. Ponce de Leon, Rome, 1587 (with woodcuts); another edition, Antwerp, 1588 (with copper-plates); S. Hustathii in Hexahemeron Commentarius, ed. Leo Allatius, Lyons, 1629 (cp. H. van Herwerden, Kaercitt. Critt., Hague, 1862, pp. 180-182) ; Physiologus Syrus, ed. O. G. Tychsen, Rostock, 1795; Classici Auctores, ed. Mai, vol. vii., Rome, 1835, pp. 585-596; G. Heider, in Archiv fiir Kunde Osterretch. Geschichisquellen, Vienna, 1850, vol. ii. p. 545 sq. ; Cahier and Martin, Mélanges d' Archéologie, &c., vol. ii., Paris

(1851), p. 85 sq., vol. iii. (1853) p. 203 sq., vol. iv. (1856) p. 55 sq. ; Cahier, Nouveaux Mélanges (1874) p. 106 sq. ; J. B. Pitra, Spicilegiwm Solesmense, vol. iii., Paris, 1855, pp. xlvii. sq., 338 sq., 416, 535; Maetzner, Altengl. Sprachproben, vol. i. pt. i., Berlin, 1867, p. 55 sq.; J. Victor Carus, Gesch. der Zoologie, Munich, 1872, p. 109 sq.; J. P. N. Land, Anecdota Syriaca, vol. iv., Leyden, 1874, p. 31 sq., 115 sqg., and in Verslagen en Mededeel- ingen der kon. Akad. van Wetenschappen, 2d series, vol. iv., Amsterdam, 1874 ; Mobius and Hommel in their publications quoted above. (J. P. N. 1.)

Morpho- logy.

Physio- logy de- fined.

8

PHYSIOL G XT

PART I.—GENERAL VIEW.

HE word “ physiology ” may be used either in a general or in a more restricted sense. In its more general meaning it was used largely of old, and is still occasion- ally used in popular writings, to denote all inquiry into the nature of living beings. A very slight acquaintance, however, with the phenomena of living beings shows that these can be studied from two, apparently very different, points of view.

The most obvious and striking character of a living being is that it appears to be an agent, performing ac- tions and producing effects on the world outside itself. Accordingly, the first efforts of inquirers were directed towards explaining how these actions are carried on, how the effects of a living being upon its surroundings are brought about. And the dissection or pulling to pieces of the material body of a living being was, under the name of Anatomy (g.v.), regarded as simply an analysis pre- paratory and necessary to the understanding of vital actions. But it soon became obvious that this anatomical analysis gave rise of itself to problems independent of, or having only distant relations to, the problems which had to do with the actions of living beings. Hence in course of time a distinct science has

grown up which deals exclusively with the laws regulating the form, external and internal, of living beings, a science which does not seek to explain the actions of living beings, and takes note of these actions only when they promise to throw light on the occurrence of this or that structural feature. Such a science, which is now known under the name of Morpnotocy (q.v.), might be carried on in a world in which all living things had, in the ordinary meaning of the word, become dead. Were the whole world suddenly petrified, or were a spell to come over it like that imagined by Tennyson in his “Day Dream,” but more intense, so that not only the gross visible movements but the inner invisible movements which are at the bottom of growth were all stayed, the morphologist would still find ample exercise for his mind in investigating the form and struc- ture of the things which had been alive, and which still differed from other things in their outward lineaments and internal build.

In its older sense physiology embraced these morpho- logical problems, and so corresponded to what is now called BIOLOGY (q.v.) ; in its more modern sense physiology leaves these matters on one side and deals only with the actions of living beings on their surroundings (the study of these necessarily involving the correlative study of the effect of the surroundings on the living being), and appeals to matters of form and structure only so far as they throw light on problems of action. Looking forward into the far future, we may perhaps dimly discern the day when morphology and physiology will again join hands, and all the phenomena of living beings, both those which relate to form and those which relate to action, will be seen to be the common outcome of the same molecular processes. But that day is as yet most distant; and, though occasion- ally even now the two sciences cross each other’s path, action explaining form and form in turn explaining action, the dominant ideas of the two are so distinct, the one from the other, that each must for a long time yet be developed along its own line. It is proposed to treat in the following pages of physiology in this narrower, more restricted sense.

If any one at the present day, making use of the know- ledge so far gathered in, were to attempt a rough prelimi-

nary analysis of the phenomena of action of a living being, —for instance of one of the more complex, so-called higher animals, such as man—he might proceed in some such way as the following.

One of the first, perhaps the first and most striking fact Moy about man is that he moves: his body moves of itself from ™ place to place, and one part of the body moves on another, ™™

Tf we examine any one of these movements, such as the bending of the forearm on the arm, we find that it is brought about by certain masses of flesh, called muscles, which from time to time contract, that is, shorten ; and these muscles are so disposed that, when they shorten, and so bring their ends nearer together, certain bones are pulled upon and the arm is bent. Upon further examina- tion it will be found that all the gross movements of the body, both the locomotion of the whole body and the movements of parts upon parts, are carried out by the contraction or shortening of muscles. The muscles, together with bones, tendons, and other structures, are arranged in various mechanical contrivances, many of them singularly complex ; hence the great diversity of movement of which an animal or man is capable; but in all cases the central fact, that which supplies the motive-power, is the contrac- tion of a muscle, a shortening of its constituent fibres whereby its two ends are brought for a while nearer together.

When, pushing the analysis farther, we attempt to solve the question, Why do muscles contract? we find that the muscles of the body are connected with what is called the

central nervous system by certain strands of living matter N called nerves ; and we further find that, with some few ex- 54

ceptions, which need not concern us now, the contractions of muscles are brought about by certain occult invisible changes called nervous impulses which travel along these nerves from the central nervous system to the muscles. Hence, when a nerve is severed, the muscle to which the nerve belonged, thus cut adrift from the central nervous system, no longer stirred by impulses reaching it from thence, ceases to contract, and remains motionless and as it were helpless. Pushing the problem still farther home,

and asking how these impulses originate in the central nervous system, we find that this central nervous mass is connected,

not only with the muscles by means of nerves which, carry- |

ing impulses outward from itself to the muscles and so serving as instruments of movement, are called motor or efferent nerves, but also with various surfaces and parts of the body by means of other nerves, along which changes or impulses travel inwards to itself in a centripetal fashion. Moreover, the beginnings or peripheral endings of these

other nerves appear to be so constituted that various changes |

in the surroundings of the body, or internal changes in the body itself, give rise to impulses, which, thus originated, travel inwards to the central nervous system ; hence these nerves are spoken of as sensory or afferent. Such sensory impulses reaching the central nervous system may forth- with issue as motor impulses leading to movement; but on many occasions they tarry within the central mass, sweeping backwards and forwards along particular areas of its substance, thus maintaining for a while a state of molecular agitation and leading to movement at some subsequent period only. Moreover, we have reason to think that molecular disturbances may arise within the central nervous system apart from the advent, either past or present, of any impulses along sensory nerves. Lastly, the presence of these molecular agitations in the central

Peel OL OG Y 9

nervous system, whether the immediate result of some new afferent impulse, or the much delayed and complicated ‘outconie of some impulse which arrived long ago, or the product of internal changes apparently independent of all disturbance from without and so far spontaneous, may be indicated by corresponding phases of what we speak of as ~~consciousness. We are thus led to conceive of the central nervous system as, chiefly at least, the seat of a molecular turmoil maintained by multitudinous afferent impulses streaming in along the various afferent nerves, a turmoil which makes itself felt within as changes of conscious~~ ness, and produces effects without by movements wrought _ through motor nerves and muscles. And

one large part of physiology has for its task the unravelling of the laws which goyern this turmoil, which determine, in relation to the advent of afferent impulses and the occurrence of intrinsic changes, the issue of motor impulses, and thus the characters of the resulting movements. al The movements of man or of an animal are not, how- ever, the only salient facts of his existence. Equally _ characteristic of him are the facts, (1) that he from time to time eats, and must eat in order to live, and (2) that a supply of frésh air containing a certain quantity of oxygen is indispensable to his remaining alive. Viewed from a chemical point of view, an animal body, whether dead or alive, is a mass of complex unstable chemical substances, combustible in nature, 7.e., capable of being oxidized, and of being reduced by oxidation to simpler, more stable sub- stances, with a setting free of energy. Combustible in the ordinary sense of the word an animal body is not, by

composition ; but an animal body thoroughly dried will in the presence of oxygen burn like fuel, and, like fuel, give out energy as heat. The material products of that com- bustion are fairly simple, consisting of water, carbonic acid, some ammonia or nitrogen compounds, and a few salts. And these same substances appear also as the pro- ducts of that slower combustion which we call decay ; for, whether the body be burnt swiftly in a furnace or rot away slowly in earth, air, or water, the final result is the same, the union of the complex constituent substances

reason of the large excess of water which enters into its |

sciousness, and of the beating heart and writhing visceral muscles, is sooner or later, by friction or otherwise, con- verted into heat ; and it is as heat that the energy evolved in this labour leaves the body. Manifold as seems the body’s energy, it has but one source, the decay of living material, z.¢., the oxidation of complex substances diversely built up into various living matters, and but two ends, heat and muscular work. – The continued setting free of energy which thus marks the living body, entailing as it does the continued breaking up and decay of living substance, con- stitutes a drain upon the body which must be met by con- stantly-renewed supplies, or otherwise the body would waste away and its energy flicker out. Hence the necessity on the one hand for that which we call food, which, however

varied, is essentially a mixture of complex combustible energy-holding bodies, and on the other hand for that other kind of food which we call breath, and which supplies the oxygen whereby the complex oxidizable substances may be oxidized to simpler matters and their potential energy made to do work. Thus food supplies the energy of the body, but in. quantity only, not in quality. The food by itself, the dead food, can exhibit energy as heat only, with intervening phases of chemical action; before its energy can be turned into the peculiar grooves of nervous and muscular action it needs to be transmuted into living sub- stance, and in that transmutation there is a preliminary expenditure of part of the food's store of energy.

Here, then, we have a second view of physiological labour. To the conception of the body as an assemblage of* mole- cular thrills—some started by an agent outside the body, by light, heat, sound, touch, or the like ; others begun within the body, spontaneously as it were, without external cause: thrills which, travelling to and fro, mingling with and commuting each other, either end in muscular movements or die away within the body —to this conception we must add a chemical one, that of the dead food continually being changed and raised into the living substance, and of the living substance continually breaking down into the waste inatters of the body by processes of oxidation, and thus supplying the energy needed both for the unseen molecular thrills and the visible muscular movements.

Hence the problems of physiology may in a broad sense Prob- be spoken of as threefold. (1) On the one hand, we have lems of to search the laws according to which the complex unstable PhYsio- food is transmuted into the still more complex and still °°

with the oxygen furnished from the air, and their reduc- tion thereby to the above-named products, with a develop- ment of heat, which either as in the first case is rapid and appreciable, or as in the second is so slow and gradual as

to be with difficulty recognized. Moreover, during life also the same conversion, the same oxidation, the same reduc- tion of complex substances to simpler matters, the same setting free of the energy present in the former but absent in the'latter, may be noted. The animal body dies daily, in the

sense that at every moment some part of its sub- stance is suffering decay, is undergoing combustion; at every moment complex substances full of latent energy are by processes of oxidation reduced to simpler substances devoid of energy or containing but little.

of This breaking down of complex substances, this con- tinued partial decay, is indeed the source of the body's energy ; each act of life is the offspring of an act of death. Each strain of a muscle, every throb of the heart, all the inner work of that molecular turmoil of the nervous system of which we spoke above, as well as the chemical labour wrought in the many cellular laboratories of glands and membranes, every throw of the vital shuttle, means an escape of energy as some larger compacted molecule splits into smaller simpler pieces. Within the body the energy thus set free bears many shapes, but it leaves the body in two forms alone, as heat and as the work done by the muscles of the frame. both that of the chemical gland-cells, of the vibrating nherve-substance with its accompanying changes of con-

All the inner labour of the body,

more unstable living flesh, and the laws according to which this living substance breaks down into simple, stable waste products, void or nearly void of energy. (2) On the other hand, we have to determine the laws according to which the vibrations of the nervous substance originate from extrinsic and intrinsic causes, the laws according to which these vibrations pass to and fro in the body acting and reacting upon each other, and the laws according to which they finally break up and are lost, either in those larger swings of muscular contraction whereby the movements of the body are effected, or in some other way. (3) And lastly, we have to attack the abstruser problems of how these neural vibrations, often mysteriously attended with changes of consciousness, as well as the less subtle vibrations of the contracting niuscles, are wrought out of the explosive chemical decompositions of the nervous and muscular sub- stances, that is, of how the energy of chemical action is transmuted into and serves as the supply of that vital energy which appears as movement, feeling, and thought. Even a rough initial analysis, however, such as we have just attempted to sketch, simple as it seems with our present knowledge, is an expression of the

accumulated and corrected inquiries of many ages; the ideas which it embodies are the results of long-continued investigations, and the residue of many successive phases of opinion. XIX. — 2

Animal

10

In the natural hierarchy of the sciences, physiology fol-

and vital lows after chemistry, which in turn follows physics, molar

spirits.

Organs and func tions.

and molecular; and ina natural development, as indeed is evident from what we have just seen, the study of the two latter should precede that of the former. At a very early age, however, the exigencies of life brought the study of man, and so of physiology, to the front before its time ; hence the history of physiology consists to a large extent, especially in its opening chapters, of premature vain attempts to solve physical and chemical problems before the advent of adequate physical or chemical knowledge. But no ignorance of these matters could hide from the observant mind, even in quite early times, two salient points which appear also in the analysis just given, namely, that, while some of the phenomena of living beings seem due to powers wholly unknown in things which are not living, other phenomena, though at first sight special to living beings, appear to be in reality the peculiar outcome of processes taking place as well in things not alive. It was further early seen that, while the former are much more conspicuous, and make up a greater part of the life of the individual in those living beings which are called animals, especially in man, and in animals more closely resembling man, than in those which are called plants, the latter are common to both divisions of living things. Both sets of phenomena, however, were at first regarded as the products of certain special agencies ; both were spoken of as the work of certain spirits; and the distinction between the two was formulated by speaking of the spirits as being in the former case animal and in the latter vital.

From the very outset even the casual observer could not fail to be struck with the fact that many of the pro- cesses of living beings appear to be the results of the various contrivances or machines of which a living body is largely built up. This indeed was evident even before the distinction between animal and vital spirits was recog- nized ; and, when that differentiation was accepted, it was seen that the part played by these machines and contriv- ances in deterntining the actions of living beings was much more conspicuous in the domain of vital than of animal spirits. As inquiry was pushed forward the prominence and importance of this machinery became greater and greater, more especially since the phenomena supposed to be due to the agency of vital spirits proved more open to direct observation and experiment than those attributed to the animal spirits. It was found that the most fruitful path of investigation lay in the direction of studying the structure and independent action of the several constituent machines of the body, and of unravelling their mutual relations.

These machines received the names of organs, the work or action of an organ being at a later: period spoken of as its function, And, when it became clear that many of the problems concerned with what was supposed to be the work of the vital spirits could be solved by the proper appreciation of the functions of certain organs, it was in ferred that the more difficult problems belonging to the animal spirits could be solved in the same way. Still later on it was found that the conception of organs and functions was not only quite separable from, but indeed antagonistic to, the hypothesis of the entities called spirits.

In this way the first great phase, as it may be called, of the science of physiology was evolved,—a phase which lasted till quite recent times. Under this conception every living being, plant or animal, was regarded as a complex of organs, each with its respective function, as an engine built up of a number of intricately contrived machines, each performing its specific work. The whole animal body was parcelled out into organs, each of which was supposed to have its appropriate function; and the

iP a Y @ 1 OSLOl6 W

efforts of investigators were directed, on the one hand, to a careful examination of the structural features of an organ with the view of

determining by deduction what its function must be, and, on the other hand, to confirniing or correcting by observation and experiment the conclusions thus reached by the anatomical method. And the fruit- fulness of this line of inquiry proved so great that the ideas directing it became absolutely dominant. In many cases the problem to be worked out was in reality a purely mechanical one. This was notably so in the great ques- tion of the circulation so brilliantly solved by Harvey. Putting aside for a while the inquiry as to the origin of the force with which the walls of the heart press on the blood contained in its cavities, accepting the fact that the blood is thus pressed at each beat of the heart, all the other truths of the circulation which Harvey demonstrated are siniply the outcome of certain mechanical conditions, such as the position and arrangement of the valves, the connexion of various patent tubes, and the like. And many other problems —as, for instance, those connected with respiration—proved to be similarly capable of solution by the application of ordinary mechanical principles to anatomical facts.

So fruitful, and consequently so adequate, seemed this conception of living beings as built up of contrivances or organs, in contrast with the lifeless world in whose mono- tonous masses no such structural disposition could be recognized, that the word “organic” came into use as a term distinctive of living things. The phrase was especi- ally adopted by the chemists, who for a long time classified their material into “organic” substances, 2.¢., substances found only in living beings, and into inorganic substances, that is, substances occurring in lifeless bodies as well. Indeed, this nomenclature has not even yet been wholly abandoned. Triumphant, however, as was this mode of inquiry in these and similar instances, there remained in every investigation an unsolvable residue, like the question of the origin of the force exerted by the heart referred to above in speaking of Harvey’s work; and in many other instances the questions which could not be solved on mechanical principles formed a great part of the whole problem. Thus in the case of the liver careful dissection showed that minute tubes starting from all parts of the liver joined into one large canal, which opened into the small intestine, and observation and experiment taught that these tubes during life conveyed from the liver to the intestine a peculiar fluid called bile, which appeared on the one hand to originate in the liver, and on the other to be used up for some purposes in the intestine. But here the mere mechanieal

flow of the bile along the gall- ducts, instead of being of primary, was merely of second- ary importance, and the problem of how the bile was generated and made its way into the small beginnings of the ducts was the greater part of the whole matter. This latter problem was left unsolved, and indeed for a while unattempted. Nevertheless the success in other directions attending the conception of organs and functions encour- aged physiologists to speak of the liver as an organ whose function was to secrete bile, and further, led them to ignore to a large extent the great unsolved portion of the problem, and to regard the mere enunciation of the function as the chief end of physiological inquiry.

Moreover, whenever attempts were made to unravel these obscurer problems, the efforts of investigators were mainly confined to a fuller and more complete elucidation of the supposed function of an organ, and the method of inquiry adopted was in most cases one which regarded the finer elements of the part studied as minute organs making up the whole gross organ, and which sought to explain the functions of these smaller organs on the same mechanical

principles which had proved so successful in the case of the whole organ. When the improvements in the micro- scope opened up a new world to the anatomist, and a wholly fresh mechanical analysis of the structure of living bodies became possible, great hopes were entertained that the old method applied to the new facts would soon solve the riddles of life by showing how the mysterious opera- tions of the living substances out of which the grosser organs were built were the outcome of structural arrange- ments which had hitherto remained invisible, were in fact the functions of minute component organs.

Long before, in the previous century, the genius of Caspar Wolff had led him to maintain that the bodies of living beings may be regarded as composed of minute constituent units, which, being in early life all alike and put together as an unformed mass, gradually differentiate and are ultimately arranged into the tissues and organs of the adult being. But, though Wolff was not unaware of the physiological bearing of his conception, his mind was chiefly bent towards morphological views, and

his cell- theory is essentially a morphological one. The cell-theory, however, which became famous in the third decade of the present century, and to which the twin names of Schwann and Schleiden will always be attached, was essentially a physiological one. The chief interest which these authors felt in the ideas that they put forth centred in the convic- tion that the properties of the cell as they described it were the mechanical outcome of its build; and for a time it seemed possible that all physiological phenomena could be deduced from the functions of cells, the anatomical characters of the various kinds of cells determining in turn their special functions. In the cell-theory the con- ception of organs and functions reached its zenith; but thenceforward its fall, which had been long prepared, was swift and great. Two movements especially hurried on its decline.

It had long been a reproach to physiologists that, while to most organs of the body an appropriate function had been assigned, in respect to certain even conspicuous organs no special use or definite work could be proved to exist. Of these apparently functionless organs the most notorious instance was that of the spleen, a large and important body, whose structure, though intricate, gave no sign of what its labours were, and whose apparent use- lessness was a stumbling-block to the theological specula- tions of Paley. While in the case of other organs a definite function could be readily enunciated in a few

left for inquiry as touching the liver seemed to be those which should show how the minute structure of the organ was adapted for carrying on this work. About the middle of this century, however, the genius of Claude Bernard led him to the discovery that the secretion of bile was by no means the chief labour of the liver. He showed that this great viscus had other work to do than that of secreting bile, had another “function” to perform, but a function which seemed to have no reference whatever to the mechanical arrangements of the organ, which could never have been deduced from any inspection however complete of its structure, even of its most hidden and minute features, and which therefore could not be called a function in the old and proper sense of that word. By a remark- able series of experiments, which might have been carried out by one knowing

absolutely nothing of the structural arrangements of the liver beyond the fact that blood flowed to it along the portal vein, and from it along the hepatic vein, he proved that the liver, in addition to the task of secreting bile, was during life engaged in carrying on a chemical transformation by means of which it was able to manufacture and store up in its substance a peculiar kind of starch, to which the name of glycogen was given. Bernard himself spoke of this as the glycogenic function of the liver, but he used the word “function” in a broad indefinite sense, simply as work done, and not in the older narrower meaning as work done by an organ structurally adapted to carry on a work which was the inevitable outcome of the form and internal build of the organ. In this glycogenic function organization, save only the arrangements by means of which the blood flows on from the portal to the hepatic channels in close proxi- mity to the minute units of the liver-substance, the so-called hepatic cells, appeared to play no part whatever ; it was not a function, and in reference to it the liver was not an organ, in the old senses of the words. This discovery of Bernard’s threw a great flash of light into the darkness hitherto hiding the many ties which bound together dis- tant and mechanically isolated parts of the animal body. Obviously the liver made this glycogen, not for itself, but for other parts of the body; it laboured to produce, but they made use of, the precious material, which thus became a bond of union between the two.

The glycogenic labours of the simple hepatic substance carried out independently of all intricate structural arrange- ments, and existing in addition to the hepatic function of secreting bile, being thus revealed, men began to ask theraselves the question, May not something like this be true of other organs to which we have allotted a function and thereupon rested content? And further, in the cases where we have striven in hope, and yet in vain, to com- plete the interpretation of the function of an organ, by finding in the minute microscopic details of its structure the mechanical arrangements which determine its work, may we not have followed throughout a false lead, and sought for organization where organization in our sense of the word does not exist? The answer to this question, and that an affirmative one, was hastened by tle collapse of the cell-theory on its physiological side, very soon after it had been distinctly formulated.

words, and their existence therefore easily accounted for, the spleen remained an opprobrium, existing, as it appeared to do, without purpose, and therefore without cause.

The progress of discovery during the present century, by a cruel blow, instead of pointing out the missing use of the spleen, rudely shook the confidence with which the

The “cell,” according to the views of those who first Cell- propounded the cell-theory, consisted essentially of an mem- envelope or “cell-membrane,” of a substance or substances >™®

¢ oe cell-con- contained within the cell-membrane, hence called cell- tents contents, and of a central body or kernel called theana “nucleus,” differing in nature from the rest of the cell- nucleus.

contents.

physiologists concluded that they had solved the riddle of an organ when they had allotted to it a special function. From very old times it had been settled that the function

of the liver was to secrete bile; and the only problems |

And, when facts were rapidly accumulated, all tending to prove that the several parts of the animal or vegetable body, diverse as they were in appearance and structure, were all built up of cells more or less modified,

Proto- plasm.

Proto- plasmic theory.

Tissues.

12

the hope arose that the functions of the cell might be deduced from the mutual relations of cell-membrane, cell- contents, and nucleus, and that the functions of an organ might be deduced from the modified functions of the

con- stituent modified cells. Continued investigation, however, proved destructive of this physiological cell-theory. It soon became evident that the possession of an investing envelope or cell-membrane was no essential feature of a cell, and that even the central kernel or nucleus might at times be absent. It was seen in fact that the anatomical unit need have no visible parts at all, but might be simply a minute mass, limited in various ways, of the material spoken of as cell-contents. Under the cell-theory, the cell was supposed to be the first step in organization, the step by which a quantity of formless unorganized plasm became an organized unit ; this plasm was further supposed still to form the chief part of the cell-contents, and soon became recognized under the name of protoplasm. Hence the destructive anatomical researches which deprived the cell of its cell-membrane, and even of its nucleus, left nothing except a mass of protoplasm to constitute an anatomical unit. For such a unit the word “cell” was a misnomer, since all the ideas of organization denoted by the word had thus vanished ; nevertheless it was retained with the new meaning, and up to the present time the definition of a cell is that of a limited mass of proto- plasm, generally but not always containing a modified kernel or nucleus.

With this anatomical change of front the physiological cell-theory was utterly destroyed. The cell was no longer a unit of organization ; it was merely a limited mass of protoplasm, in which, beyond the presence of a nucleus, there was no visible distinction of parts. It was no longer possible to refer the physiological phenomena of the cell to its organization ; it became evident that the work done by a “cell” was the result not of its form and cellular structure but simply of the nature and properties of the apparently structureless protoplasm which formed its body. A new idea pressed itself on men’s minds, that organization was a concomitant and result of vital action, not its condition and cause; as Huxley in one of his earliest writings put it, “They [cells] are no more the producers of the vital phenomena than the shells scattered in orderly lines along the sea-beach are the instruments by which the gravitative force of the moon acts upon the ocean. Like these, the cells mark only where the vital tides have been, and how they have acted.”! Hence arose the second of the two movements mentioned above, that which may be called the “protoplasmic” movement, a movement which, throwing overboard altogether all conceptions of life as the outcome of organization, as the mechanical result of structural

conditions, attempts to put physiology on the same footing as physics and chemistry, and regards all vital phenomena as the com- plex products of certain fundamental properties exhibited by matter, which, either from its intrinsic nature or from its existing in peculiar conditions, is known as living matter, —mechanical contrivances in the form of organs serving only to modify in special ways the results of the exercise of these fundamental activities and in no sense determining their initial development. ;

Long before the cell-theory had reduced to an absurdity the “organic” conception of physiology, the insight of the brilliant Bichat, so early lost to science, had led him to prepare tlhe way for modern views by developing his doctrine of “tissues.” That doctrine regarded the body as made up of a number of different kinds of living material, each kind of material having certain innate qualities proper to itself

(1853) p. 314. : ev., Vol. xii.

Tu YSionroeg ys

«

as well as certain structural features, and the several kinds of material being variously arranged in the body. Each of these body-components was spoken of as a tissue, muscular tissue, nervous tissue, and the like; and the varied actions of the body were regarded as the result of the activities of the several tissues modified and directed by the circum- stance that the tissues were to a great extent arranged in mechanical contrivances or organs which largely deter- mined the character and scope of their actions.

The imperfection of microscopic methods in Bichat’s time, and, we may perhaps add, his early death, prevented him from carrying out an adequate analysis of the qualities or properties of the tissues themselves. During the nuddle portion of this century, however, histological investigation, i.¢., inquiry into the minute structure of the tissues, made enormous progress, and laid the basis for a physiological analysis of the properties of tissues. In a short time it became possible to lay down the generalization that all the several tissues arise, as far as structure is concerned, by a differentiation of a simple primitive living matter, and that the respective properties of each

tissue are nothing more than certain of the fundamental properties of the primordial substance thrown into prominence by a division of labour running to a certain extent parallel to the differ- entiation of structure. Developed in a fuller manner, this modern doctrine may be expounded somewhat as follows.

In its simplest form, a living being, as illustrated by Evo some of the forms often spoken of as amcebee, consists of tion a mass of substance in which there is no obvious distinc- ; In the body of such a creature even the of ; highest available powers of the microscope reveal nothing plas

tion of parts.

more than a fairly uniform network of material, a network sometimes compressed, with narrow meshes, sometimes more open, with wider meshes, the intervals of the mesh- work being filled, now with a fluid, now with a more solid substance or with a finer and more delicate network, and minute particles or granules of variable size being some- times lodged in the open meshes, sometimes deposited in the strands of the network. Sometimes, however, the net- work is so close, or the meshes filled up with material so identical in refractive power with the bars or films of the network, and at the same time so free from granules, that the whole substance appears absolutely homogeneous, glassy or hyaline. Analysis with various staining and other re- agents leads to the conclusion that the substance of the network is of a different character from the substance filling up the meshes. Similar analysis shows that at times the bars or films of the network are not homogeneous, but composed of different kinds of stuff; yet even in these cases it is difficult if not impossible to recognize any de- finite relation of the components to each other such as might deserve the name of structure; aud certainly in what may be taken as the more typical instance, where the network seems homogeneous, no microscopic search is able to reveal to us a distinct structural arrangement in its substance. In all probability optical analysis, with all its aids, has here nearly reached its limits; and, though not wholly justified, we may perhaps claim the right to con- clude that the network in such case is made up of a substance in which no distinction of parts will ever be visible, though it may vary in places or at times in what may be spoken of as molecular construction, and may

carry, lodged in its own substance, a variety of matters foreign to its real self. This remarkable network is often spoken of as consisting of protoplasm, and, though that word has come to be used in several different meanings, we may for the present retain the term. The body of an amceba, then, or of a similar organism consists of a network or framework which we may speak of as protoplasm, filled up with other matters. In most cases it is true that in

the midst of this protoplasmic body there is seen a peculiar body of a somewhat different and yet allied nature, the so-called nucleus; but this we have reason to think is specially concerned with processes of division or reproduction, and may be absent, for a time at all events, without any injury to the general properties of the proto- plasmic body.

Now such a body, such a mass of simple protoplasm, homogeneous save for the admixtures spoken of above, is a living body, and all the phenomena which we sketched out at the very beginning of this article as characteristic of the living being may be recognized in it. There is the same continued chemical transformation, the same rise and fall in chemical dignity, the same rise of the dead food into the more complex living substance, the same fall of the living substance into simpler waste-products. There is the same power of active movement, a move- ment of one part of the body upon another giving rise to a change of form, and a series of changes of form resulting eventually in a change of place. In what may be called the condition of rest the body assumes a more or less spherical shape. By the active transference of part of the mass in this or that direction the sphere flattens itself into a disk, or takes on the shape of a pear, or of a rounded triangle, or assumes a wholly irregular, often star-shaped or branched form. Each of these transformations is simply a rearrangement of the mass, without change of bulk. When a bulging of one part of the body takes place there is an equivalent retraction of some other part or parts ; and it not unfrequently happens that one part of the body is repeatedly thrust forward, bulging succeeding bulging, and each bulging accompanied by a corresponding retrac- tion of the opposite side, so that, by a series of movements, the whole body is shifted along the line of the protuber- ances.

The tiny mass of simple living matter moves on- ward, and that with some rapidity, by what appears to be a repeated flux of its semi-liquid substance.

The internal changes leading to these movements may begin, and the movements themselves be executed, by any part of the uniform body ; and they may take place with- out any obvious cause. So far from being always the mere passive results of the action of extrinsic forces, they may occur spontaneously, that is, without the coincidence

ourselves this total change which we denote by the term “metabolism” as consisting on the one hand of a down- ward series of changes (katabolic changes), a stair of many steps, in which more complex bodies are broken down with the setting free of energy into simpler and simpler waste bodies, and on the other hand of an upward series of changes (anabolic changes), also a stair of many steps, by which the dead food, of varying simplicity or complexity, is, with the further assumption of energy, built up into more and more complex bodies. The summit of this double stair we call “protoplasm.” Whether we have a right to speak of it as a single body, in the chemical sense of that word, or as a mixture in some way of several bodies, whether we should regard it as the very summit of the double stair, or as embracing as well the topmost steps on either side, we cannot at present tell. Even if there be a single substance forming the summit, its existence is abso- lutely temporary: at one instant it is made, at the next it is unmade. Matter which is passing through the phase of life rolls up the ascending steps to the top, and forthwith rolls down on the other side. But to this point we shall return later on. Further, the dead food, itself fairly but far from wholly stable in character, becomes more and more unstable as it rises into the more complex living material. It becomes more and more explosive, and when it reaclies the summit its equilibrium is overthrown and it actually explodes. The whole downward stair of events seems in fact to be a series of explosions, by means of which the energy latent in the dead food and augmented by the touches through which the dead food becomes living pro- toplasm, is set free. Some of this freed energy is used up again within the material itself, in order to carry on this same vivification of dead food; the rest leaves the body as heat or motion. Sometimes the explosions are, so to

speak, scattered, going off as it were irregularly throughout the material, like a quantity of gunpowder sprinkled over a surface, giving rise to innumerable minute puffs, but pro- ducing no massive visible effects. Sometimes they take place in unison, many occurring together, or in such rapid sequence that a summation of their effects is possible, as in gunpowder rammed into a charge, and we are then able to recognize their result as visible movement, or as appre- ciable rise of temperature.

of any recognizable disturbance whatever in the external

These various phenomena of protoplasm may be conven- Proper-
conditions to which the body is exposed. They appear to

ientlyspoken of under the designation of so many properties, renee proto-

be analogous to what in higher animals we speak of as acts of volition. They may, however, be provoked by changes in the external conditions. A quiescent amoeba may be excited to activity by the touch of some strange body, or by some other event,—by what in the ordinary language of physiology is spoken of as a stimulus. The protoplasmic mass is not only mobile but sensitive. When a stimulus is applied to one part of the surface a movement may com- mence in another and quite distant part of the body; that is to say, molecular disturbances appear to be propagated along its substance without visible change, after the fashion

or attributes, or powers of protoplasm, it being understood that these words are used in a general and not in any definite scholastic sense. Thus we may speak of proto- plasm as having the power of assimzlation, 1.e., of building up the dead food into its living self; of movement, or of contractility as it is called, 2.¢., of changing its form through internal explosive changes; and of irritability or sensitiveness, t.c., of responding to external changes, by less massive in- ternal explosions which, spreading through its mass, are not in themselves recognizable through visible changes, though they may initiate the larger visible changes of movement.

of the nervous impulses we spoke of in the beginning of this article. The uniform protoplasmic mass of the amoeba exhibits the rudiments of those

attributes or powers which in the initial sketch we described as being the fundamental

These and other fundamental characters, all associated Differ- with the double upward and downward series of chemical entia- changes, of constructive and destructive metabolism, are “0% a

é é to- present in protoplasm wherever found; but a very brief at

oO

characteristics of the muscular and nervous structures of the higher animals.

These facts, and other considerations which might be brought forward, lead to the tentative conception of proto-

je Plasm as being a substance (if we may use that word in

a somewhat loose sense) not only unstable in nature but subject to incessant change, existing indeed as the ex- pression of incessant molecular, that is, chemical and phy- sical change, very much as a fountain is the expression of an incessant replacement of water. We may picture to

survey soon teaches us that specimens of protoplasm existing in different beings or in different parts of the same being differ widely in the relative prominence of one or another of these fundamental characters. On the one hand, in one specimen of protoplasm the energy which is set free by the series of explosions constituting the down- ward changes of destructive metabolism may be so directed as to leave the mass almost wholly in the form of heat, thus producing very little visible massive change of form. Such a protoplasm consequently, however irritable and

Endo-

explosive, exhibits little power of contractility or move- ment. In another specimen, on the other hand, a very large portion of the energy similarly set free may be spent in producing visible changes of form, the protoplasm in

this instance being exquisitely mobile. Such differences must be due to different internal arrangements of the proto- plasm, though, since no vision, however well assisted, can detect these arrangements, they must be of a molecular nature rather than of that grosser kind which we generally speak of as structural. It is true that, as the differences in properties become more and more prominent, as the protoplasm becomes more and more specialized, features which we can recognize as structural intervene ; but even these appear to be subsidiary, to accompany and to be the result of the differences in property, or to be concerned in giving special directions to the activities developed, and not to be the real cause of the differences in action. We are thus led to the conception of protoplasm as existing in various differentiated conditions while still retaining its general protoplasmic nature, a difference of constitution making itself felt in the different character of the work done, in a variation of the results of the protoplasmic life. We have a division of physiological labour going hand in hand with a differentiation of material, accompanied ulti- mately by morphological results which may fairly be spoken of as constituting a differentiation of structure. Some of the simpler and earlier features of such a divi- sion and differentiation may be brought out by comparing with the life of such a being as the amoeba that of a more complex and yet simple organism as the hydra or fresh- water polyp. Leaving out certain details of structure, which necd not concern us now, we may say that the hydra consists of a large number of units or cells firmly attached to each other, each cell being composed of proto- plasm, and in its broad features resembling an amceba. The polyp is in fact a group or crowd of amceba-like cells so associated together that, not only may the material of each cell, within limits, be interchanged with that of neighbouring cells, but also the dynamic events taking place in one cell, and leading to exhibitions of energy, may be similarly communicated to neighbouring cells, also within limits. These cells are arranged in a particular way to form the walls of a tube, of which the body of the hydra practically consists. They form two layers in appo-

derm and sition, one an internal layer called the endoderm, lining the

ectoderm

cells.

tube, the other an external layer called the ectoderm, form- ing the outside of the tube. And, putting aside minor details, the differences in structure and function observ- able in the organism are confined to differences between the ectoderm on the one hand, all the constituent cells of which are practically alike, and the endoderm on the other, all the cells of which are in turn similarly alike. The protoplasm of the ectoderm cells is so constituted as to exhibit in a marked degree the phenomena of which we spoke above as irritability and contractility, whereas in the endoderm these phenomena are in abeyance, those of assimilation being prominent. The movements of the hydra are chiefly brought about by changes of form of the ectoderm cells, especially of tail-like processes of these cells, which, arranged as a longitudinal wrapping of the tubular body, draw it together when they shorten, and lengthen it out when they elongate, and it is by the alternate lengthening and shortening of its body, and of the several parts of its body, that the hydra changes its form and moves from place to place. Inaugurating these changes of form, the products of contractility, are the more hidden changes of irritability ; these also are especially developed in the ectoderm cells, and travel readily from cell to cell, so that a disturbance originating in one cell, either from some extrinsic cause, such as contact with a

PH YsTt O92 ©¢@ Y

foreign body, or from intrinsic events, may sweep from cell to cell over the surface of the whole body. The animal feels as well as moves by means of its ectoderm cells. In the endoderm cells the above phenomena, though not wholly absent, are far less striking, for these cells are almost wholly taken up in the chemical work of digesting and assimilating the food received into the cavity, the lining of which they form.

Thus the total labour of the organisni is divided between these two membranes. The endoderm cells receive food, transmute it, and prepare it in such a way that it only needs a few final touches to becoine living material, these same cells getting rid at the same time of useless ingredi- ents and waste matter. Of the food thus prepared the endoderm cells, however, themselves use but little; the waste of substance involved in the explosions which carry out movement and feeling is reduced in them to a mini- mum ;

they are able to pass on the greater part of the elaborated nourishment to their brethren the ectoderm cells. And these, thus amply supplied with material which it needs but little expenditure of energy on their part to convert into their living selves, thus relieved of the greater part of nutritive labour, are able to devote nearly the whole of their energies to movement and to feeling.

Microscopic examination further shows that these two kinds of cells differ from each other to some extent in visible characters ; and, though, as we have seen, the differ- ences in activity appear to be dependent on differences in invisible molecular arrangement rather than on gross visible differences such as may be called structural, still the invisible differences involve or entail, or are accom- panied by, visible differences, and such differences as can be recognized between endoderm and ectoderm, even with our present knowledge, may be correlated to differences in their work; future inquiry will probably render the correlation still more distinct.

The ectoderm cells together constitute what we have spoken of above as a tissue, whose function in the modern sense of the word is movement and feeling, and the endo- derm cells constitute a second tissue, whose function is assiinilation; and the phenomena of the whole being result from the concurrent working of these two functions. Of organs, in the old sense of the word, of mechanical contrivances, there is hardly a trace.1 The performances of the being are, it is true, conditioned by its being moulded in the form of a long tubular sac with a crown of like tubular arms, but beyond this the explanation of every act of the hydra’s life is first to be sought in the characters of the endoderm and ectoderm. The physiology of the hydra is, for the most part, a series of problems, dealing on the one hand with the intimate nature of the ectodermic protoplasm and the changes in that protoplasm which give rise to movement and feeling, as well as with the laws whereby those changes are so regulated that movement and feeling come and go as the needs of the organism may require, and on the other hand with the intimate nature of the endodermic protoplasm and the changes in that protoplasm whereby the dead food is, also according to the needs of the economy, transformed into living substance. Whereas the older physiology dealt almost exclusively with mechanical problems, the physio-

logy of to-day is chiefly busied with what may be called molecular problems.

_ The physiology of the higher animals, including man, is merely a development of the simpler physiology of the hydra, which has been rendered more complex by a greater division of physiological labour, entailing greater differen-

iL : , : ; aaa The existence of certain minute mechanisms called urticating

organs lodged in the ectoderm cells does not affect the present argument,

re yoronL oc Y

tiation of structure, and been varied by the intercalation of numerous mechanical contrivances.

In the hydra each ectoderm cell—for, broadly speaking, they are all alike—serves three chief purposes of the body. (1) It is sensitive, that is, it is thrown into peculiar mole- cular agitations, with expenditure of energy, when acted upon by external agents. In man and the higher animals certain cells of the original ectoderm of the embryo are differentiated from their fellows (which, losing to a large extent this sensitiveness, remain as a mechanical covering to the body) by a more exquisite development of this power of reaction, and moreover are differentiated from each other in their relative sensitiveness to different agents, so that one set of cells becomes peculiarly susceptible to light, another set to pressure, and the like. Thus the uniform ectoderm of the hydra, uniformly susceptible to all agencies, is replaced by a series of special groups of cells forming the basis of sensory organs, each group being specially sensitive to one agent, and having the nature of its con- stituent cells correspondingly modified. (2) In each ecto-derm cell of the hydra the agitations primarily induced by the exciting agent become so modified by changes taking place in the cell that the outcome is not always the same. According to processes taking place in the cell, movement of one kind or another, or no movement ~~at all, may result, and such movement as results may take 'place immediately or at some other time; it may be at a time so distant that the connexion between the exciting 'disturbance is lost, and the movement appears to be spon~~ taneous. In man

and the higher animals these more complex “neural” processes are carried on, not by the simple sensory cells which receive the primary impression, but by a group of cells set apart for the purpose. These

the like (tissues of mechanical virtues, manufactured by an active protoplasm, but themselves passive, no longer

active), into various mechanical contrivances. Similarly the

sensory cells, as notably those of the eye and the ear, set apart to be acted upon by special agents, are provided with special mechanisms in order that the agent may act with more complete precision. Thus the sensory cells consti- tuting the retina of the eye, in which alone sensory, visual impulses are generated, are provided with an intricate dioptric mechanism, formed partly of inert tissues such as the lens, partly of peculiarly arranged muscular and nervous elements.

In this way the simple ectoderm of the hydra is replaced by a complicated system composed of organs, some of them of extremest intricacy. But the whole system may be re- duced to two sets of factors. On the one hand there are organs in the old sense of the word, that is, mechanical arrangements, some connected with the muscles and others connected with the sensory cells, organs whose functions have for the most part to be interpreted on mechanical principles, since their most important factors, putting aside intervening muscular and nervous elements, are the inert products of protoplasm doing simple mechanical work. On the other hand there are organs in the later sense of the word, namely, sensory cells differentiated to be sensi- tive to special influences, central nervous cells differentiated to carry on the inner nervous work, muscles differentiated to contract, and nerves differentiated to bind together these three other factors. The work of these latter organs is dependent on the nature of their protoplasm ; mechanical arrangements play but little part in them; and the results of their activity can in no way be explained on simple mechanical principles,

Corresponding with this differentiation of the ectoderm Differ- cells runs a somewhat similar differentiation of the endo- entia- derm cells. In the hydra each endoderm cell appears to #0? of

cells constitute a central nervous system, in which a still further division of labour and differentiation of structure

takes place, the simple neurotic processes of the hydra, i

with its dim volition and limited scope of action, being de- veloped in a complex manner into processes which range from simple elaboration of the initial additional agitation of the sensory cell into what we speak of as intelligence and thought. (3) Each octoderm cell, by its tail-like prolonga- tion, or by its whole body, contributes to the movement of the animal while still carrying on the two other actions just ‘described. In man and the higher animals the material of the sensory cell and of the central nervous cells is too precious to be wasted in movements; these accordingly are carried out by groups of cells constituting the mus- cular tissue, in which both the sensitiveness and the higher neurotic processes of the primitive cell are held in abey- ance ; indeed, the latter have almost disappeared in order that the energy of the protoplasm may be more completely directed to producing those changes of form which deter- mine the movements of the animal.

Further, the separation in space of these three groups of cells or tissues necessitates the introduction of elements whereby the agitations set up in the sensory cell should be communicated to the central nervous cells, where these agitations are further elaborated, as well as of elements whereby the muscular tissue may receive vibrations from the central nervous cells, so that the movements of the body may be determined by these. Hence strands of irritable protoplasm whose energy is not spent in move- ment, but wholly given up to the rapid and easy trans- mission of molecular vibrations, unite, as sensory nerves, the sensory cells with the central nervous cells, and, as motor nerves, these with the muscles.

Lastly, for the adequate carrying out of complex move- ments, the contractile cells, elongated into specially con- structed fibres and constituting the muscles, are arranged, with mert tissues such as bones, cartilages, tendons, and

receive some of the food bodily into itself and there to elaborate it into what may be spoken of as prepared nutri- tive material. Some of this material the cell retains within itself in order to renew its own protoplasm ; the rest oozes out to the ectoderm cells, the replenishment of whose pro- toplasm is thereby effected with a saving of labour. In the higher animals the preparation of food is far more com- plicated. The endodermic sheet of the alimentary canal is folded and arranged into organs called glands, with the mechanical advantage that a large amount of surface is secured within a small bulk; and the constituent endo- dermic cells of their glands pour out, or secrete, as is said, divers fluids into the cavity of the canal, so that much pre- liminary preparation of digestion of the food takes place before the food really enters the body. Further, these secreting glandular cells are so differentiated as to pour out special juices acting on special constituents of a meal, and the food subjected in turn to the action of these several juices becomes thoroughly prepared for reception into the body. This reception is carried out by other endoderm cells, which in receiving the digested food probably act upon it so as still further to heighten its nutritive value ; and the absorbed food, before it is presented to the mus- cular and nervous tissues, for whose use it is largely, though of course not exclusively, intended, is subjected to the action of other cells, such as those forming the lymphatic glands and the liver, in order that it may be still further elaborated, still further prepared for the final conversion into living protoplasm.

As in the case of the tissues and organs of ectodermic origin, so also here, the wide separation in space of the masses of differentiated cells constituting tissues necessi- tates the introduction of mechanical contrivances for the carriage of material from place to place. In the simple

Vascular minute hydra the nutritive material can permeate the system. whole body by simply oozing from cell to cell. In the

higher animal a hydraulic system for the distribution of nutritive material is introduced. A fluid 1s distributed in a ceaseless flow all over the body by a mechanical arrangement, consisting of a pump with branching tubes, worked on mechanical principles, and capable of being imitated artificially,

save that the power which drives the machine is the energy set free by living muscle. As this circulating fluid or blood rushes past the endoderm cells which have gorged themselves from the rich contents of the alimentary canal, it receives from them some of the material which they have absorbed and elaborated, and carries this nutritive supply to muscles, nerves, and all parts of the body. Similarly it carries away from muscles, nerves, and other tissues the waste-products of their ac- tivity, those broken fragments of simpler stuffs into which, as we have seen, the complex protoplasm, wherever 1t exists, is for ever splitting up, and bears them back to differentiated endoderm and other cells, whose work has become, so to speak, inverted, since their activity is directed to casting things out of the body, instead of receiving things into the body. And lastly, by a special arrange- ment, by a peculiar property of those red corpuscles which inake blood red, this circulating material at one and the same time carries to each corner of the body, not only the nutritive material required for building up protoplasm, but also the oxygen by which the constructed protoplasm may suffer oxidation, and in being oxidized set free that energy the manifestation of which is the token of life. Blood is in fact the medium on which all the various parts of the body live. Just as an amceba finds in the water which is its home both the food with which it builds itself up and the oxygen with which it breaks itself down, and returns to the water the waste-products of its continued disintegra- tion, so each islet of the living substance of the higher animal, be it muscle or nerve or gland, draws its food and its oxygen from the red blood-stream sweeping past. it, finding therein all its needs, and sheds into the same stream the particles into which it is continually breaking up, and for which it has no longer any use. Hence the blood becomes, as it were, a chemical epitome of the body: from it each tissue takes something away ; to it each tissue gives something back. As it sweeps by each tissue, losing and gaining, it makes the whole body common, and when working aright brings it about that each tissue is never in lack of the things which it wants, never choked up with the things with which it has done.

This vascular system, consisting of a force-pump and branching tubes, constitutes, as we have said, a mechanical arrangement worked on mechanical principles. Neverthe- less occult protoplasmic processes intervene as factors in its total work. Not only is the force-pump itself a

living muscular organ, not only are the walls of the tubes muscular in nature, so that the mere mechanical working of the system is modified by changes not of mechanical origin taking place in them, but the living material which lines the tubing throughout, especially in the minuter channels, finds work to do, also not of a mechanical nature. The gross phenomena of the flow of blood through the capillary channels may (see VASCULAR SysTEM) be inter- preted on simple hydraulic principles ; but no appeal to the ordinary physical laws of dead material will explain the phenomena of the interchange between the blood on a oi Bawah bir the tissue-elements on the blood, so far iain re oe eae sea omnes aa iors _ being actually in contact with the

protoplasmic units of the tissue, is separated by the protoplasmic film of the capillary wall, and by a space or Spaces, greater or smaller, filled with the fluid called lymph

and lined to a greater or less extent with protoplasmic cells, which lining, often at least, parts the tissue-units from the lymph. Hence the tissue lives upon the lymph, while the lymph is replenished from the blood ; and the interchange between the tissue-unit and the blood is de- termined, not only by the direct action of the tissue-unit on the lymph, but also by the relations of the lymph to the blood, as regulated by the capillary wall and the cell- ular lining of the lymph-spaces. We may speak of the interchange as broadly one of diffusion or osmosis through filmy membranes; but diffusion is not the lord in the matter: it is rather a humble servant directed hither and thither by occult molecular processes in the protoplasmic structures concerned.

The foregoing rough analysis leads to a conception of the physiology of the animal body which may be expressed somewhat as follows. The body is composed of different kinds of matter; each kind of matter, arranged in units more or less discrete, constitutes a tissue ; and the several tissues, though having a common likeness in token of their origin from a common primordial protoplasm, have dissimi- lar molecular constitutions, entailing dissimilar modes of activity. Nor is each tissue homogeneous, for two parts of the body, though so far alike as to be both examples of the same general

tissue, may be different in molecular con- stitution, more or less distinctly expressed by microscopic differences of structure, and correspondingly different in action, Thus a liver-cell and a kidney-cell, though both examples of glandular tissue, are quite distinct; so also several varieties of muscular tissue exist ; and in the domi- nant nervous tissue we have not only a broad distinction between nerve-fibres and nerve-cells, but the several groups of nerve-cells which are built up into the brain and spinal cord, and indeed probably the single nerve-cells of these, though all possessing the general characters, both in struc- ture and function, of nervous protoplasm, differ most widely from each other. These several tissues of diverse consti- tution and activity, ranging as regards the rapidity of the molecular changes taking place in them from tlie irritable, unstable, swiftly-changing nerve-cell to the stable, slowly- changing, almost lifeless tendon or bone, are disposed in the body in various mechanical arrangenients constituting organs or machines, whereby the activities of the constitu- ent tissue-elements are brought to bear in special direc- tions. These organs range from those in which the mechan- ical provisions are dominant, the special activity of the tissue-elements themselves being in the background, and supplying only an obscure or even unimportant factor, as in the organs of respiration, to those in which the mechan- ical provisions are insignificant, as in the central nervous system, where the chief mechanical factor is supplied by the distribution in space of the nerve fibres or cells.

Hence it is obvious that almost every physiological in-N quiry of any large scope is, or sooner or later becomes, P of a mixed nature. On the one hand, investigation has‘ to be directed to the processes taking place in the actual tissue-elements, in the protoplasmic cells and modifications of cells. These are essentially of a molecular, often of a chemical or chemico-physical nature; in the problems thus raised matters of form and structure, other than that of molecular structure, which no microscope can ever reveal, are of secondary moment only, or have no concern in the matter at all. These may be spoken of as the purely physiological or as the molecular problems. On the other hand, the natural results of these tissue-activities are con- tinually being modified by circumstances whose effect can be traced to the mechanical arrangements under which the tissue in question is acting,

whence arise problems which have to be settled on simple mechanical principles.

We may take as an illustration the physiology of the

kidney. In the old language the function of the kidney is to secrete urine.

When we come to inquire into the matter, we find, in the first place, that the secretion of urine —that is, the quantity and quality of the urine escaping from the duct of the kidney in a given period—is partly determined by the quantity of blood passing through the kidney and the circumstances of its passage. Now the quantity of blood reaching the kidney at any one time is dependent partly on the width of the renal arteries, partly on the general pressure of the blood in the arterial sys- tem. The width of the renal arteries is in turn dependent on the condition of their muscular walls, whether con- tracted or relaxed ; and this condition is determined by the advent of nervous impulses, the so-called vaso-motor im- pulses, arising in the central nervous system and passing down to the renal arteries along certain nerves. The emis- sion of these vaso-motor impulses from the central nervous system is further determined, on the one hand by the con- dition of certain parts of the central nervous system, the so-called vaso-notor centres, and on the other by the passage of certain afferent sensory impulses to those vaso-motor centres from sensory surfaces such as the skin. Similarly the general blood-pressure is dependent on the condition, patent or narrowed, of the small arteries generally, this

‘ being likewise governed by the vaso-motor system and on ‘ the coincident work done by the heart in driving blood into _ the great blood-vessels, this work being also governed by the nervous system. Hence in attacking such a problem as to

how any particular event, such as the exposure of skin to the

cold, influences the flow of blood through the kidney and

thus the secretion of urine, the investigator, without staying to inquire into the nature of nervous impulses, or into the nature of changes taking place in vaso-motor centres, «c., directs his attention to determining what impulses are

- generated under the circumstances, what paths they take, to

what extent they are quantitatively modified, how far they and their effects react upon each other, and so on. His inquiry in fact takes on to a large extent the characters of an attempt to unravel an intricate game, in which the counters are nervous impulses, muscular contractions, and elastic reactions, but in which the moves are determined by topographical distribution and mechanical arrangements.

But there are other problems connected with the phy- siology of the kidney of quite a different nature. The kidney is, broadly speaking, constructed of living proto- plasmic cells so arranged that each cell is on one side bathed with blood and lymph, and on the other forms the boundary of a narrow canal, which, joining with other canals, ultimately opens into the urinary bladder. Here the question arises how it is that these protoplasmic cells, having nothing to draw upon but the common blood, which is distributed to other organs and tissues as well, are able to discharge on the other side of them into the canal the fluid urine, which is absolutely distinct from blood, which contains substances wholly unknown in blood, as well as substances which, though occurring in blood, are found there in minute quantities only, and, moreover, are not found to escape from the blood into any other tissues or organs. In attempting to answer this question we come upon an inquiry of quite a different nature from the pre- ceding, an inquiry for the solution of which mechanical suggestions are useless. We have to deal here with the molecular actions of the protoplasmic cell. We must seek for molecular explanations of the questions, why a current sets across the cells from blood-capillary and lymph-space to the hollow canal; why the substances which emerge on the far side are so wholly unlike those which enter in on the near side; why, moreover, the in- tensity of this current may wax and wane, now flooding the canal with urine, now nearly or quite drying up; why

not only the intensity of the current but also the absolute and relative amount of the chemical substances carried along it are determined by events taking place in the cell itself, being largely independent of both the quantity and quality of the blood which forms the cell's only source of supply. These and other like questions can only be solved by looking with the mind's eye, by penetrating through careful inferences, into those inner changes which we call molecular, and which no optical aid will ever reveal to the physical eye.

These two lines of inquiry, which we may call the mechanical and the molecular, obtain in all parts of physio- logy, sometimes the one and sometimes the other being dominant. A study of the special articles dealing with the several parts of physiology (see "Nervous System " below, Nurririon, REpropucTion, ResprraTIoN, VAscu- LAR System) will perhaps sufficiently show this; but it may be worth while to give a very brief survey of the whole field from this point of view.

The master tissues and organs of the body are the nervous and muscular systems, the latter being, however, merely the instrument to give effect and expression to the motions of the former. All-the rest of the body serves simply either in the way of mechanical aids and protection to the several parts of the muscular and nervous systems, or as a complicated machinery to supply these systems with food and oxygen, 7.¢., with blood, and to keep them cleansed from waste matters throughout all their varied changes. The physiology of the muscular system is fairly simple. The mechanical problems involved have been long ago for the most part worked out, and the molecular problems which touch on the nature of muscular contractions, their dependence on the blood-supply, and their relations to nervous impulses are being rapidly solved. The physiology of the nervous system, on the other hand, is in its infancy. The mechanical side of the inquiry is here represented, inasmuch as the various actions of the system are condi- tioned by the distribution and topographical arrangement of the constituent fibres and cells; and even these simple problems, as may be seen from the article ' Nervous Sys- tem" below, are as yet largely unworked. The deeper molecular problems, those which deal with the real nature of the processes taking place in cell and fibre, even the simpler of these, such as the one which asks why the neural protoplasm of one cell, or group of cells, seems

quiescent until stirred by some foreign impulse, its own vibrations being otherwise retained and lost within its own substance, while the neural protoplasm of another cell is continually, or from time to time, discharging vibrations, as rhythmic molecular pulses, along adjoining fibres,— these, at the present day, can hardly be said to be touched. The physiology of the nervous system is emphatically the physiology of the future.

The rest of the body may, from a broad point of view, be regarded as a complex machinery for supplying these master tissues with adequately-prepared food and oxygen, for cleansing them from the waste-products of their activity, and for keeping them at a temperature suitable for the development of their powers. As we have already said, the blood is the agent which not only supplies both food and oxygen but sweeps away all refuse, and, we may add, is the instrument for maintaining an adequate temperature. All the rest of the body may in fact be looked upon as busied in manufacturing food into blood, in keeping up the oxygen supply of the blood, in sifting out from the blood all waste material, and in maintaining the blood at a uniform heat. This work, of which blood is, so to speak, the centre, is, as we have already seen, carried out by protoplasmic cells, many of which are themselves of a mus- cular nature, often forming part of complicated mechanical

contrivances, built up partly of inert tissues, partly of active tissues, such as muscle and nerve. In tracing the food and oxygen into the blood and the waste matters out of the blood, in studying the distribution of the blood itself and the means adopted to maintain its even temperature, we come, as before, on problems partly mechanical or chemical and partly molecular. The changes which the food undergoes in the intestine can be, and have been, successfully studied as a series of purely chemical prob- lems conditioned by anatomical arrangements, such as the existence of an acid

fluid in the stomach, succeeded by alkaline fluids in the intestine, and the like ; but the ques- tions concerned in the discharge of the digestive juices into the alimentary canal, in the secretory activity of the digestive glands, raise up protoplasmic molecular inquiries. In the reception or absorption of the digested food we similarly find the purely physical processes of diffusion and the like overridden by the special protoplasmic activities of the constituent cells of the lining of the canal. In the further elaboration of the digested products the action of cells again intervenes, as it similarly does in the, so to speak, inverted action by which waste matters are cast out of the body, though in both cases the results are in part conditioned by mechanical contrivances. The circulation of the blood is carried on by means of an intricate mechanical contrivance, whose working is determined and whose effects are conditioned by molecular changes occur- ring in the constituent muscles and other protoplasmic cells; the work done by the heart, the varying width of the channels, the transit of material through the filmy capillary walls, all these are at once the results of proto- plasmic activity and factors in the mechanical problems of the flow of blood. The oxygen passes into and carbonic acid out of the blood, through simple diffusion, by means of the respiratory pump, which is merely a machine whose motive-power is supplied by muscular energy, and both oxygen and carbonic acid are carried along in the blood by simple chemical means ; but the passage of oxygen from the blood into the tissue and of carbonic acid from the tissue into the blood, though in themselves mere diffusion processes, are determined by the molecular activity of the constituent cells of the tissue, Lastly, the blood, however well prepared, however skilfully driven to the tissue by the well-timed activity of the vascular system, even when it has reached the inner network of the tissue-elements, is not as yet the tissue itself. To become the tissue it must undergo molecular changes of the profoundest kind: it must cross the boundary from dead material to living stuff. The ulti- mate problems of nutrition are of the molecular kind. All the machinery, however elaborate, is preparatory only, and it is the last step which costs the most,

Of the many problems concerned in these several depart- ments of physiology the one class which we have spoken of as being mechanical in nature is far too varied to be treated of as a whole. The problems falling under it have but few features in common ; each stands, as it were, on 1ts

own bottom, and has to be solved in its own way. The problems of the other class, however—those which we have spoken of as being molecular in nature—have a certain common likeness ; and it may be worth while to consider, in a brief and general Manner, some of their most striking characters, .

For this purpose we may first of all turn to the changes taking place in a secreting cell, for these have of late years been studied with signal success. They illustrate what may be called the chemical aspects of vital actions, Just as the changes in @ muscular fibre, on the other hand, po ie cei — a form, the kinetic aspects i ns. we examine a secreting gland,

pancreas or a salivary gland, we find that it is

Pit Yio | DLO GY

composed of a number of similar units, the unit being a

secreting cell of approximately spheroidal form, one part |

of the surface of which borders a canal continuous with the duct of the gland, while another part is bathed in lymph, The process of secretion consists in the cell discharging into the canal a fluid which is of a specific character, inso- much as, though it consists partly of water and other sub-stances common to it and other fluids of the body, these

are present in it in special proportions ; and it also contains |

substances or a substance found in itself and nowhere else, To enable it to carry on this work the cell receives supplies of material from the lymph in which it is bathed, the lymph in turn being replenished from neighbouring capillary blood-vessels. The secreting cell itself consists of a soft protoplasmic ‘‘ body,” of the nature previously described, in the midst of which lies a “‘ nucleus.” the actions carried out by the nucleus may, for simplicity’s sake, be left on one side for the present; and we may regard the cell as a mass of protoplasm consisting, as we have seen, of a network of a particular nature, and of other substances of different nature filling up the meshes or interstices of the network.

The consideration of |

Such a cell may exist under two different conditions, —

At one time it may be quiescent: although the blood

vessels surrounding it are bathing it with lymph, although —

this lyniph has free access to the protoplasm of the cell,

no secretion takes place, no fluid whatever passes from the —

cell into the canal which it borders. At another time, under, for instance, some influence reaching it along the nerve distributed to the gland, although there may be no change in the quantity or quality of the blood passing through the adjacent blood-vessels, a rapid stream of

—-—-

material flows froin the protoplasmic cell-body into the

canal. How is this secretion brought about?

If we examine certain cells, such, for instance, as those

of the pancreas, we find that during a period of rest sue

ceeding one of activity the cell increases in bulk, and further that the increase is not so much an enlargement of the protoplasmic network as an accumulation of material in the meshes of the network ; in fact, there appears to be a relative diminution of the actual protoplasm, indicating, as we shall see, a conversion of the substance of the net work into the material which is lodged in the interstices of the network. This material may, and frequently does, exist in the form of discrete granules, recognizable under the microscope ; and in the pancreas there is a tendency for these granules to be massed together on the side of the cell bordering the lumen of the canal. During activity, while the cell is discharging its secretion into the canal, these granules disappear, so that the protoplasmic network is after prolonged activity left with a very small burden of material in its meshes; at

the same time there also ap- pears to be an accompanying absolute increase of growth of the mass of the protoplasm itself. We have further evi- dence that the substance which is thus stored up in the meshes of the cell, forming the granules, for instance, just spoken of, is not, as it exists in the cells, the same sub- Stance as that which occurs in the secretion as its charac- teristic constituent. Thus the characteristic constituent of pancreatic juice is a peculiar ferment body called “ tryp- sin,” and we possess evidence that the granules in the pan- creatic cells are not trypsin. But we have also evidence that these granules consist of material which, upon a very slight change, becomes trypsin, of material which is an ante cedent of trypsin, and which has accordingly been called “‘trypsinogen.” Thus the cell during rest stores up tryp- Sinogen, and the change which characterizes activity is the conversion of trypsinogen into trypsin, and its consequent discharge from the cell. These ‘are facts ascertained by observation and experiment, viz., that trypsinogen appears

- — =

Peer tS” i OE tO”, Y

in the protoplasm of the cell, and that in the act of secre- tion this trypsinogen is discharged from the cell in the form of the simpler trypsin. When, however; we come to consider the origin of the trypsinogen we pass to matters of inference and to a certain extent of speculation.

Two views seem open to us. On the one hand, we may _ adopt an old theory, once generally accepted, and suppose that the cell picks out from the lymph which bathes it part- icles of trypsinogen, or particles of some substance which is readily transformed into trypsinogen, and deposits them

stability. The substances or mesostates appearing in the former we may speak of as “anastates,” those of the latter we may call “katastates.” At each step of the former, by which a simpler anastate becomes, or by which simpler anastates become, a more complex one, energy is absorbed ; at each step of the latter energy is set free. And, since in the animal-cell the initial anastates seem always or at least generally more complex than the final

katastates, the total life of the animal-cell is virtually a giving forth of energy.

initssubstance. This may be called the “selective ” theory. On the other hand, we may suppose that the trypsinogen results from the breaking down, from the katabolic or de-

So far we have spoken of the secreting cell, but we have Mole- evidence that in the activity of a muscle a similar series cular

_ structive metabolism of the protoplasm, being thus wholly formed in the cell. This may be called the ‘metabolic ” theory. Our present knowledge does not permit us wholly to prove or wholly to disprove either of these theories ; but such evidence as we possess is in favour, and increasingly in favour, of the metabolic theory. All efforts to detect in the blood or in the lymph such substances as trypsinogen, or analogous substances in the case of other glands, have hitherto failed ; and, although such a negative argument has its weakness, still it is of avail as far as it goes. On

| the other hand, the diminution of the protoplasm in the

| pancreatic cell, part passu with the increase of trypsinogen, ‘ and its subsequent renewal previous to the formation of

‘| | new trypsinogen, strongly support the metabolic theory,

and a number of other facts drawn from the history of ‘ various animal and vegetable cells all tend strongly in the ‘ same direction. We have further a certain amount of evidence that trypsinogen arises from an antecedent more complex than itself, as it in turn is more complex than trypsin. So, although clear demonstration is not as yet _ within our reach, we may with considerable confidence conclude that trypsinogen and other like products of secreting cells arise from a breaking down of the cell- ‘ substance, are’‘manufactured by the protoplasm of the cell ‘ out of itself.

We are thus led to the conception that the specific material of a secretion, such as the trypsin of pancreatic juice, comes from the protoplasm of the cell, through a number of intermediate substances, or mesostates as they

|) are called; that is to say, the complex protoplasm breaks

| down into a whole series of substances of decreasing com- | plexity, the last term of which is the specific substance of the secretion. Now the protoplasm is undoubtedly formed at the expense of the material or pabulum brought to it from the blood through the medium of the lymph; the pabulum becomes protoplasm. Here also two views are open tous. On the one hand, we may suppose that the ‘ crude pabulum is at once by a magic stroke, as it were, _ built up into the living protoplasm. On the other hand, _ we may suppose that the pabulum reaches the stage of protoplasm through a series of substances of increasing _ complexity and instability, the last stage being that which _ we call protoplasm. And here, too, no absolute decision | between the two views is possible, but such evidence as ‘ we do -possess is in favour, and increasingly in favour, of the latter view.

| We may therefore with considerable confidence anti- eipate the future arrival of evidence which will demonstrate _ the as yet only probable view that in the secreting cell

of events takes place. Reduced to theoretical simplicity, a

the unit a number of which go to form a muscle is a proto- plasmic cell, undergoing, like the secreting cell, a con- tinual metabolism, with a change in the results of that metabolism at the moment of functional activity. Put in a bald way, the main difference between a secreting cell and a muscle-cell, or elementary muscle-fibre as it is often called, is that in the former the products of the metabolism constitute the main object of the cell’s activity, a change of form being of subordinate importance, whereas in the latter the change of forni, an increase of one axis at the expense of another, a shortening with corresponding thick- ening, is the important fact, the products of the metabol- ism which thus gives rise to the change of form being of secondary value.

Now we have evidence, which, as in the case of the secreting cell, though not demonstrative, is weighty and of daily increasing weight, that the change of form, the contraction of a muscle, is due to a sudden metabolism, to an explosive decomposition of what may be called “contractile substance,” a substance which appears to be used up in the act of

contraction, and the consumption of which leads with other events to the exhaustion of a muscle after prolonged exertion. We know as a matter of fact that when a muscle contracts there is an evolution of a considerable quantity of carbonic acid, and a chemical change of such a kind that the muscle becomes acid. This carbonic acid must have some antecedent, and the acidity must have some cause. It is of course possible that the protoplasm itself explodes, and is the immediate parent of the carbonic acid and the direct source of the energy set free in the contraction ; but evidence analogous to that brought forward in relation to the secreting cell leads to the conclusion that this is not so, but that the explosion takes place in, and that the energy is derived from, a specific contractile substance. And there is further evidence that this hypothetical substance, to which the name of "inogen" has been provisionally given, is, like its analogue in the secreting cell, a katastate. So that the contracting activity of a muscular fibre and the secreting activity of a gland-cell may be compared with each other, in so far as in each case the activity is essentially a decom- position or explosion, more or less rapid, of a katastate, the inogen in the one instance, the trypsinogen or some other body in the other instance, with the setting free of energy, which in the case of the secreting cell leaves the sub- stance wholly as heat, but in the case of the muscle partly as movement, the activity being followed in each case by the discharge from the fibre or cell of the products, or some of the products, of this decomposition. :

there are two series of events, two staircases, as it were, of chemical transformation,—one an ascending staircase of

Further, we may carry on the parallel to nervous sub- In ner-

stance. Asa nervous impulse travels along a nerve-fibre or bite sub- stance.

synthetic, anabolic processes through which the pabulum, consisting of several substances, some of them already com- plex and unstable, is built up into the still more complex _ and still more unstable protoplasm ; the other a descending _ staircase, consisting of a series of katabolic processes giving rise to substances of decreasing complexity and increasing

pursues its intricate course along the fibrillar tracts of a nerve-cell, the amount of chemical change is too slight to be satisfactorily appreciated by

the methods at present under our command. There is certainly no massive ex-

‘plosion like that of a muscular fibre, and the most striking

phenomena attending the passage of a nervous impulse are

Meta- bolic changes in cen- tral nervous system.

-of an electrical nature.

20

We cannot indeed distinctly prove that any chemical change does really accompany nervous activity ; but from many considerations it 1s extremely probable that a chemical change, an explosive decomposition of more complex into more simple substances, is the basis of a nervous impulse. The energy, however, which 1s set free by this decomposition is not discharged from the nervous substance to so great an extent as is the case In the muscle-fibre, but is largely consumed in conveying or con- ducting the decomposition from one particle of the nervous substance to succeeding ones,—that is to say, In carrying out that which is the essential work of the nervous sub- stance. Moreover, even ina muscle, while the explosion of inogen and the consequent shortening and thickening of the muscle-substance travel along the fibre from particle to particle in the form of a wave starting from the junction of the nerve-fibre with the muscular fibre, or from some other point of stimulation, this wave of visible con- traction is preceded by invisible molecular changes also travelling along the fibre in the form of a wave, changes which manifest themselves by no massive explosions, which are indicated by electrical phenomena chiefly, and which are exceedingly like the nervous impulses of proper nervous structures. In the very substance of the muscular fibre there appears to be a material which is not inogen, but which is capable of undergoing changes, probably of the nature of an explosive decomposition, and it is these which in turn induce the more massive decomposition of the inogen. It is possible, indeed probable, that the con- stituent particles of inogen are not able to communicate their explosions to each other, so that the presence in the muscular fibre of an impulse-carrying material is a neces- sity. Be this as it

may, a change antecedent to the explosion which is the cause of the actual contraction does occur in every particle of the muscle which contracts, and, as we have urged, the change is probably one taking place in a special substance. This substance may be the verit- able protoplasm itself of the fibre, but considerations analogous to those urged before would lead us to suppose that it too is a katastate, but a katastate different in qualities from inogen ; and we may furthur suppose that a very similar katastate is manufactured by nervous proto- plasm, and by its decomposition gives rise to nervous energy. This katastate is, as it were, the fuse or trigger whose action fires the massive charge of the muscular gun, and might receive the name of “apheter.”

If we accept this view as to the nature of the simple nervous impulses which sweep along nerve-fibres—and in this respect motor and sensory nerves would seem wholly alike—there is no great difficulty in extending the con- ception to the more complicated processes taking place in the central nervous system. An ordinary reflex act, so called, is perhaps one of the simplest labours of that system, and we have evidence that in a reflex act sensory impulses arriving along a sensory fibre at the protoplasm of a nerve- cell induce in that protoplasm changes which, though in certain respects differing from, are fundamentally analogous to, those changes in motor and sensory nerve-fibres which constitute their respective nervous impulses. The chief difference is that, whereas along sensory and motor fibres the impulses pursue an even course, possibly undergoing some augmentation, but one which is not sufficiently marked to be beyond doubt, in the nerve-cell, on the contrary, an unmistakable augmentation accompanied bya systematic dispersion takes place. So great is the augment- ation in some cases that a gentle short series of sensory im- pulses reaching one of a group of nerve-cells along a single sensory fibre may throw the whole group of nerve-cells into such profound agitation that repeated series of even violent impulses may be discharged along a multitude of

due to difference in the kind of impulses brought about

motor fibres. Allowing for this increase in the energy set free, the changes in the nerve-cells do not seem to differ fundamentally from those in the nerve-fibres (which indeed differ to a certain extent among themselves), and may, like them, be regarded as due essentially to the decomposi- tion of some katastate or katastates.

Further, just as the apheter of the muscular fibre, that which inaugurates the explosion of the contractile inogen, differs from the apheter of the nerve-fibre, so we may suppose that in the various nerve-cells of different parts of the central nervous system difference of function, while partly due to the mere arrangement and distribution of nervous impulses of the same kind, is also and more largely

by difference in the composition and mode of decomposition of the nervous material. For instance; certain changes in the nervous system are accompanied by distinct changes of consciousness, while others are not. And, while we may justly refuse.to attempt any explanation of consciousness, Om it is nevertheless within our right to suppose that, in that sam nervous substance which is the highest development of ™} protoplasm and to whose service the whole body minis- ters, amid the many substances of increasing complexity and dignity which enter into its composition there should be a substance or some substances the changes in which are, or may be, accompanied by consciousness. The doc- trine of evolution compels us to admit that consciousness must be potentially present in the simple protoplasm of the amoeba, and must be similarly present in all the tissues of the highly-developed animal, instead of being confined to some limited portion of the nervous system. Evolution refuses to admit a sharp line of demarcation between a “conscious” and a “non-conscious ” part, and this decision is increasingly supported as our knowledge of the nervous system advances. But a great deal of the earlier part of this article was directed to show that all the powers of the complex animal are the outcome of the differentiation of a primordial protoplasm, while the discussion concerning the molecular changes of tissues in which we are now engaged is simply an attempt to trace out how that differentiation has taken place. And, as far as we can see, there are no just reasons why the differentiation which sets apart the nervous tissue from other parts of the body should ‘ not obtain in the nervous tissue itself, and the obscure — rudiments of consciousness

present in all nervous material become by differentiation developed, in some particular ‘ kinds of nervous substance, into consciousness more strictly so called.

In the case, then, of secreting cells, of muscular tissue, and of the various forms of nervous tissue the tendency of inquiries into the molecular processes taking place in them is to lead us to regard the varied activities of these tissues as due to molecular disruptive changes in their several katastates, these being various stages of the down- ward metabolism or katabolism of protoplasm.

Similar considerations might be extended to other tissues of the body which are neither nervous nor muscular, and, though engaged in chemical work, are not distinctly secretory or excretory, such, for instance, as the hepatic cells engaged in the elaboration of glycogen. They might also be extended to those tissues in which the katastates are not exploded and discharged, but retained and massed up in the body for mechanical or other purposes, to car- tilage, for instance, the chondrigenous basis or ground- substance which many considerations show to be a product or katastate of protoplasm. We are thus led to the con- ception, brought forward in an earlier part of this article, that all over the body protoplasm is continually building itself up out of the pabulum supplied by food, and con- tinually breaking down, giving rise in different tissues and 1

different parts of the body to different katastates with

different composition and different properties, the various |

activities of the body being the outcome of the various properties of the various katastates. Tf this be admitted, it almost inevitably follows that what we have called proto-

plasm cannot be always the same thing, that there must’

be many varieties of protoplasm with different qualities and with correspondingly different molecular structure and composition. If this be so,

the question naturally arises, why use the word protoplasm at all, since, by the showing, it seems to have no exact meaning? But it has an exact meaning. All the evidence at our disposal goes to show

that a katastate of any given degree cannot form a fresh

katastate of the same degree; any one katastate can only arise from the decomposition of a preceding more.complex katastate, and that in turn from a katastate still more complex. Passing upwards, we come at last to something which, instead of proceeding from a more complex sub- stance, builds itself up out of a less complex, more simple substance, and it is this something, whatever its exact composition, into whatever katastates it is destined to fall asunder, to which the generic name “ protoplasm ” should be given. Possibly another new name were better, but there are advantages in retaining the old term. It is protoplasm in this sense which is alone living; it is its synthetic power which is its token of being alive. That synthetic power is, we must admit, exercised along the ascending series of anastates. But here our knowledge is a blank ; and it would be simply waste of time to speculate as to the details of the constructive processes. Using the word “protoplasm” in this sense, it is obvious that the varieties of protoplasm are numerous, indeed almost in- numerable. The muscular protoplasm which brings forth a contractile katastate must differ in nature, in com- position—that is, in construction—from glandular proto- plasm, whose katastate is a mother of ferment. Further, the protoplasm of the swiftly contracting striped muscular fibre must differ from that of the torpid smooth unstriated fibre ; the protoplasm of human muscle must differ from that of a sheep ora frog; the protoplasm of one muscle must differ from that of another muscle in the same kind of animal; and the protoplasm of Smith’s biceps must differ from that of Jones’s.

We may, for a moment, turn aside to point out that this innate difference of protoplasm serves to explain the con- clusions to which modern investigations into the physiology of nutrition seem to be leading. So long as we speak of muscle or flesh as one thing, the step from the flesh of mutton which we eat to the flesh of our body which the mutton, when eaten, becomes, or may become, does not seem very far; and the older physiologists very naturally assumed that the flesh of the meal was directly,

without great effort and without great change, as far as mere chemical composition is concerned, transformed into the muscle of the eater. The researches, however, of modern times go to show that the substances taken as food undergo many changes and suffer profound disruption before they actually become part and parcel of the living body, and conversely that the constructive powers of the animal body were grossly under-rated by earlier investigators. If one were to put forward the thesis that the proteid of a meal becomes reduced almost to its elements before it undergoes synthesis into the superficially similar proteid of muscle, the energy set free in the destruction being utilized in the subsequent work of construction, he might appeal with confidence to modern results as supporting him rather than opposing him in his views. It would almost seem as if the qualities of each particle of living protoplasm were of such an individual character that it had to be built up afresh from almost the very beginning ; hence the im-

mense construction which inquiry shows more and more clearly every day to be continually going on as well in the animal as in the vegetable body. .

Taking into consideration all the fine touches which make up the characters of an individual organism, and remembering that these are the outcome of the different properties or activities of the several constituent tissues of the body, working through-a delicately-balanced complicated machinery, bearing in mind the far-reaching phenomena of heredity by which the gross traits and often the minute tricks of the parents' body are reproduced in the offspring, if there be any truth at all in the views which we have urged, tracing the activities of the organism to the con- stitution of its protoplasm, this must be manifold indeed. The' problems of physiology in the future are largely con- cerned in arriving, by experiment and inference, by the inind's eye, and not by the body's eye alone, assisted as that may be by lenses yet to be introduced, at a knowledge of the molecular construction of this protean protoplasm, of the laws according to which it is built up, and the laws according to which it breaks down, for these laws when ascertained will clear up the mysteries of the protean work which the protoplasm does.

And here we may venture to introduce a word of caution. We have, in speaking of protoplasm, used the words "con- struction," "composition,"

“decomposition,” and the like, as if protoplasm were a chemical substance. And it is a chemical substance in the sense that it arises out of the union or coincidence of certain factors, which can be resolved into what the chemists call ‘ elements,” and can be at any time by appropriate means broken up into the same factors, and indeed into chemical elements. This is not the place to enter into a discussion upon the nature of so-called chemical substances, or, what is the same thing, a discus- sion concerning the nature of matter ; but we may venture to assert that the more these molecular problems of phy- siology, with which we are now dealing, are studied the stronger becomes the conviction that the consideration of what we call “structure ” and “ composition” must, in har- mony with the modern teachings of physics, be approached under the dominant conception of modes of motion. The physicists have been led to consider the qualities of things as expressions of internal movements ; even more impera- tive does it seem to us that the biologist should regard the qualities (including structure and composition) of proto- plasm as in like manner the expression of internal move- ments. He may speak of protoplasm as a complex sub- stance, but he must strive to realize that what he means by that is a complex whirl, an intricate dance, of which what he calls chemical composition, histological structure, and gross configuration are, so to speak, the figures; to him the renewal of protoplasm is but the continuance of the dance, its functions and actions the transferences of figures. In so obscure a subject it is difficult to. speak otherwise than by parables, and we may call to mind how easy it is to realize the comparison of the whole body of man to a fountain of water. As the figure of the fountain remains the same though fresh water is continually rising and falling, so the body seems the same though fresh food is always replacing the old man which in turn is always falling back to dust. And the conception which we are urging now is one which carries an analogous idea into the study of all the molecular phenomena of the body. We must not pursue the subject any further here, but we felt it necessary to introduce the caution concerning the word “ substance,” and we may repeat the assertion that it seems to us necessary for a satisfactory study of the problems on which we have been dwelling for the last few pages to keep clearly before the mind the conception that the phenomena in question are the result not of properties of kinds of

desirable to touch upon it since it illustrates a possible or probable new departure. What we have said of it and of the more manageable molecular problems of physiology will perhaps show that, vast and intricate as is the maze before the physiologist of to-day, he has in his hand a clue which promises, at least, to lead him far on through it.

Space forbids our entering upon a discussion concerning Maj} the methods of physiology; but, accepting the truth of of the preceding discussion as to the nature of physiological 4) problems, the means of solving these problems speak for themselves.

From the earliest times the methods of physiological inquiry have belonged to one of two categories : they have been anatomical or experimental. And the same distinc- tion holds good to-day, though both methods are often joined together in one inquiry, and indeed at times may be said to merge the one into the other. By the anatom- ical method the observer ascertains the gross outlines, the minute structure, and if necessary the physical characters and the chemical composition of an organism or part of an organisin ; and by comparison of these with those of differ- ent organisms, or of the same organism placed by nature —that is, not by himself—in different circumstances, he draws conclusions as to the actions taking place in it while it was alive. In early times the comparison of gross struc- tures gave important results, but they have now been to a great extent exhausted ; and the most valuable conclusions reached at the present day by the anatomical method are those arrived at by histological investigation of minute structures and by chemical analysis. The marks of this method are that on the one hand it deals for the most part with things which are no longer alive, and hence must necessarily fail to make touch with the inner workings of which we have spoken above, and on the other hand in its comparison of organisms under different conditions it has to wait till Providence brings about what it requires, and has to be satisfied with such differences as the chapter of accidents provides. In the experimental method the observer places the organism or part of the organism under conditions of his own choosing, and applies to the organism under those conditions the same analysis as in the former methods. He ascertains changes in the gross features, minute structure, physical characters, and chemical com- position, as before. So that in reality the two methods are in part identical, and differ

chiefly by the fact that in the latter the observer chooses the conditions in which to place the organism. But an important corollary follows, viz. that by choosing his own conditions the observer is able to bring his analysis to bear on an organism or part of an organism while still alive.

The history of physiology, especially in recent times, shows that this method is the one not only of the greatest fertility but one becoming more and more essential as inquiry 1s pushed deeper and deeper into the more abstruse parts of physiology. If there be any truth in the sketch given above of the modern tendencies of molecular physio- logy, it will be clear to every mind that the experimental method alone can in the future give adequate results. It might indeed be urged that when molecular physics has advanced far enough the molecular problems of physiology will be interpreted by its light without recourse to experi- ment. It will be a long waiting till that comes. Mean- while, all the power over not only the body but, what is more important, the mind of man which the physiology of

matter, in the vulgar sense of these words, but of kinds of motion. In the above brief sketch we have dealt chiefly with such well-known physiological actions as secretion, muscular contractions, and nervous impulses. But we must not hide from ourselves the fact that these grosser activities do not comprise the whole life of the tissues. Even in the simple tissues, and more especially in the highly-developed nervous tissues, there are finer actions which the conception out- lined above wholly fails to cover. Finer Two sets of vital phenomena have hitherto baffled in- activities quirers,—the phenomena of spontaneous activity, rhythmic of proto- y other, and the phenomena of “inhibition.” All attempts “to explain what actually takes place in the inner working of the tissues concerned when impulses passing down the pneumogastric nerve stop the heart from beating, or in the many other analogous instances of the arrest of activity through activity, have signally failed; the superficial re- semblance to the physical “interference of waves” breaks down upon examination, as indeed do all other hypotheses which have as yet been brought forward. And we are wholly in the dark as to why one piece of protoplasm or muscular fibre or nervous tissue remains quiescent till stirred by some stimulus, while another piece explodes into activity at rhythmic intervals. We may frame ana- logies and may liken the phenomena to those of a constant force

rhythmically overcoming a constant resistance, but such analogies bring us very little nearer to understanding what the molecules of the part are doing at and between the repeated moments of activity. Hering's Further, if the ingenious speculations of Hering, that ee specific colour-sensations are due to the relation of assimi- mp ation (anabolism) to dissimilation (katabolism) of proto- plasmic visual substances in the retina or in the brain, should finally pass from the condition of speculation to that of demonstrated truth, we should be brought face to face with the fact that the mere act of building up or the mere act of breaking down affects the condition of protoplasm in other ways than the one which we have hitherto considered, viz., that the building up provides energy to be set free and the breaking down lets the energy forth. In Hering's conception the mere condition of the protoplasm, whether it is largely built up or largely broken down, produces effects which result in a particular state of consciousness. Now, whatever views we may take of consciousness, we must suppose that an affection of con- sciousness is dependent on a change in some material, But in the case of colour-sensations that material cannot be the visual substance itself, but some other substance, That is to say, according to Hering's views, the mere con- dition of the visual substance as distinct from a change in that condition determines the changes in the other sub- Stance which is the basis of consciousness, So that, if Hering's conception be a true one (and the arguments in favour of it, if not wholly conclusive, are at least serious), we are led to entertain the idea that, in addition to the rough propagation of explosive decompositions, there are continually passing from protoplasm to protoplasm delicate touches compared with which the nervous impulses which with such difficulty the galvanometer makes known to us are gross and coarse shocks, And it is at least possible if not probable (indeed present investigations seem rapidly tending in this direction), that an extension of Hering's view, with such modifications as future inquiry may render necessary, to other processes than visual sensations, more especially to the inner working of the central nervous Sys- tem, may not only carry us a long way on towards under. standing inhibition and spontaneous activity but may lay the foundation of a new molecular physiology. This, how- ever, Is speculative and dangerous ground. But it seemed

“matter” which could not be discovered by the examina- tion of bodies which had never lived.

- Tt would not be a hard task to give chapter and verse for the assertion that the experimental method has, especi- ally in these later times, supplied the chief means of progress in physiology ; but it would be a long task, and we may content ourselves with calling attention to what is in many respects a typical case. We referred a short time back to the phenomena of “inhibition.” It is not too much to say that the discovery of the inhibitory function of certain nerves marks one of the most important steps in the pro- gress of physiology during the past half-century. The mere attainment of the fact that the stimulation of a nerve might stop action instead of inducing action con- stituted in itself almost a revolution ; and the value of that fact in helping us on the one hand to unravel the tangled puzzles of physiological action and ‘yeaction, and on the other hand to push our inquiries into the still more diffi- cult problems of molecular changes, has proved immense. One cannot at the present time take up a physiological memoir covering any large extent of ground without find- ing some use made of inhibitory processes for the purpose of explaining physiological phenomena.

Now, however skilfully we may read older statements between the lines, no scientific—that is, no exact—know- ledge of inhibition was possessed by any physiologist until Weber, by a direct experiment on a living animal, dis- covered the inhibitory influence of the pneumogastric nerve over the beating of the heart. It was of course previously known that under certain circumstances the beating of the heart might be stopped ; but all ideas as to how the stoppage was or might be brought about were vague and uncertain before Weber made his experiment. That experiment gave the clué to an exact knowledge, and it is difficult, if not impossible, to see how the clue could

have been gained otherwise than by experiment; other experiments have enabled us to follow up the clue, so that it may with justice be said that all that part of the recent progress of physiology which is due to the introduction of a knowledge of inhibitory processes is the direct result of

the experimental method. But the story of our know- ledge of inhibition is only one of the innumerable instances of the value of this method. In almost every department of physiology an experiment or a series of experiments has proved a turning-point at which vague nebulous fancies were exchanged for clear decided knowledge, or a starting- point for the introduction of wholly new and startling ideas. And we may venture to repeat that not only must the experimental method be continued, but the progress of physiology will chiefly depend on the increased application of that method. The more involved and abstruse the problems become, the more necessary does it also become that the inquirer should be able to choose his own con- ditions for the observations he desires to make. Happily, the experimental method itself brings with it in the course of its own development the power of removing the only valid objection to physiological experiments, viz., that in certain cases they involve pain and suffering. For in nearly all ex- periments pain and suffering are disturbing elements. These disturbing elements the present imperfect methods are often unable to overcome ; but their removal will become a more and more pressing necessity in the interests of the experi- ments themselves, as the science becomes more exact and exacting, and will also become a more and more easy task as the progress of the science makes the investigator more and more master of the organism. In the physiology of the future pain and suffering will be admissible in an ex- periment only when pain and suffering are themselves the object of inquiry. And such an inquiry will of necessity take a subjective rather than an objective form. (M. F.)

PART IL—NERVOUS SYSTEM

To supplement the foregoing general sketch some detailed account must be given of the physiology of the several functions. NUTRITION (q.v.) has received separate treatment ; a sketch of the ‘‘ Nervous System ” is now appended ; and RESPIRATION and REPRODUCTION will be dealt with in their places.

However complex may be the anatomical arrangements in man and the higher animals, the nervous system consists essentially of three portions: (1) central masses of nervous matter, or ganglia, constituting the brain and spinal cord, and containing invariably nerve-cells ; (2) peripheral or

terminal arrangements, existing in the organs of sense, in muscle, and in electric organs ; and (3) nerves, or internuncial cords connecting the central with the peripheral organs. The nerves may be regarded as conductors of a inode of energy which, for want of a better term, is termed “ nerve-force,” originating either in the nerves themselves on the application of a stimulus or in the terminal organs or in the central organs. Thus, if a nerve be irritated at any point of its course, a change is set up in the nerve-fibres at the point of irritation, and this change is propagated along the nerve-fibres toa central or terminal organ, thus producing a characteristic phenomenon, —it may be a sensation of pain or of pleasure, an involuntary movement, the contraction of a muscle, or a discharge of electricity. Again, the stimulus may act ona terminal organ, such as the retina, setting up a change which is then propagated or conveyed to the brain by the optic nerve, there giving rise to a sensation of light or colour. Finally, the nervous action may originate in a central organ, as is the case when a vol- untary movement is made. The voluntary impulse, in this instance, originates in the brain ; a change passes along nerve-fibres from the brain to the muscles, and as a result the muscles contract. We have therefore to discuss the general properties and modes of action of nerves, terminal organs, and central organs.

1.—NERVEs.

Structure of Nerves.—A general description of the structure of nerves and of nerve-fibres will be found in vol. i. p. 859 sq.; but there are a few points of physiological importance still to be noticed. Two kinds of nerve-fibres exist in the body, white or medullated fibres, so called because each fibre has a sheath indi- cated by a double contour (see fig. 1), and the pale or non-medul- lated. The medullated nerve-fibres form the white part of the

brain, spinal cord, and nerves. They vary in diameter from the xeooth to the ye}sath of an inch, and when of very small size often show varicosities or swellings. ach fibre consists of three parts: (1) an external sheath, or primitive sheath ; fpr

(2) within this the medullary sheath or white substance of Schwann; and (3)in the centre an axial fibre, the cylinder axis of Purkinje, or band of Remak. The axis-

cylinder in a fresh nerve seems to be homogeneous ; but with high powers and proper illumination, and more especially

Fig. 1. Fig. 2.

Fic. 1.—(1) Medullated nerve-fibres, showing double contour ; (2) a similar fibre in which A is primitive membrane, B medullary sheath, C axial cylinder protruding beyond the broken end of the fibre ; (3) transverse section through medullated fibres of a nerve showing axial eylinder in each fibre. Between the fibres is the interfibrous connective tissue.

Fic. 2.—Medullated nerve-fibres. A, medullated nerve-fibre, showing subdivision of medullary sheath into cylindrical sections imbrieated with their ends; a nerve-corpusele with an oval nucleus is seen between neurilemma and medullary sheath ; B, medullated nerve-fibre at a node or constriction of Ranvier; the axis-cylinder passes uninterruptedly from one segment into the other, but the medullary sheath is interrupted. (Key and Retzius.)

by the action of perosmic acid, it is scen to be formed of extremely fine fibrille. It is continuous from end to end of the nerve. The medullary sheath shows at certain intervals interruptions called the “nodes of Ranvier” (see fig. 2). In the middle of each internode an oval nucleus is found in the medullary sheath. The pale or non-medullated fibres, sometimes called the “fibres of

Chemi- eal con- stitution.

Exeita- bility,

Stimuli of nerves.

Remak,” are found chiefly in branches of the sympathetic nerve. They have no double contour, and they often give off branches which anastomose, a condition never found in the course of medul- lated nerves. If the axis-cylinder of a nerve-fibre be traced in-

wards to a nerve-centre it is found to end in the pole or process of a nerve-cell, whilst in the periphery it ends in a terminal organ, in

muscle, blood-vessel, gland, skin, or electric organ. It may there- fore be presumed that the axis-rod is the conducting and so far the essential constituent of the nerve-fibre. . Chemical Constitution.—Little is known of the chemical con- stitution of the nerve-fibre. The medullary matter contains fatty substances such as lecithin (Cy;Hgj)NPO,). The axis-rod appears to contain albuminous substances. Cholesterin (CygH,,O + H,O) and creatin (C,H,N,O,) have been obtained from nerves along with a small amount of gelatin and a horny matter, neurokeratin (Her- mann). Nerves contain about 30 per cent. of water. Their reaetion to test-paper is neutral. Nothing is known regarding the chentical

changes occurring in a nerve-fibre during a state of activity, nor of

the chemical products formed at that time. It has been stated that

a nerve becomes acid after death (Funke).

As to the miero-chemistry of the nervous elements, it may be stated that the axis-cylinder contains an albuininous substance different from myosin; it gives a red colour on boiling with Milton's reagent (an acid nitrate of mercury) ; it is dissolved in weak solutions of ammonia, caustic potash, and chloride of sodiuin; it is hardened by solutions of chromic acid, bichromate of potash, and corrosive sublimate; it reduces the chloride of gold; and it shows transverse markings on the action of nitrate of silver. The white substance of Schwann is blackened by perosmic acid and is soluble in alcohol, ether, and oil of turpentine, thus showing its fatty character. The primitive sheath is a substance of a collagenous nature,—that is, it yields gelatin on boiling. According to some, digestion in gastric or pancreatic juice leaves an insoluble matter like that found after the digestion of corneal or epidermie tissues, and hence called ''neurokeratin."

Exeitability.—The special property of a nerve-fibre is termed "excitability." Every kind of living protoplasmic matter is irrit- able, —that is, it responds in some way toa stimulus. Thus, if a morsel of protoplasm, such as an ameba or a cartilage-cell or a white blood-corpusele, be stimulated

mechanically or by shocks of electricity, it will contract or change its form. Again, if living muscular fibre be thus stimulated it also will contract. This pro- perty of responding to a stimulus is termed “irritability”; and in the structures mentioned the property is manifested by movement as the obvious phenomenon, but it is well known that more obscure phenomena follow the application of the stimulus. In the case of living nerve there is irritability also,—that is, the nerve responds to a stimulus; but in a portion of isolated nerve no change is visible. If, however, the nerve be connected at one end with its appropriate central or terminal organ we may have evidence of something having been transmitted along the nerve. Thus there may be sensation or movement, or both. Nerves are more irritable than contractile matter, and the term “excitability ” is applied to the special irritability of nerve. The same strength of stimulus will act more powerfully on a nerve than on a muscle (Rosenthal). The use of the term “property” in physiology does not imply the idea of any kind of inherent force or entity, but simply that, in the case of muscle and nerve, irritation is followed by certain phenomena seen only in living matter. :

(1.) The exeitability of nerves is affected by certain conditions. Injury to the nerve, the application of caustics, and drying quickly destroy it. When a nerve is divided the excitability is increased for a short time, then rapidly diminishes, and finally disappears near the point of section, The end of the nerve stil] connected with central organs undergoes these changes in excitability more quiekly than the portion eut off. As shown by Augustus Waller, when a nerve is separated from its central organ, such as the grey matter of the spinal cord for the motor roots, and the ganglia on the posterior roots for the sensory roots, the end of the nerve sepa- rated from the centre undergoes fatty degeneration. If, however the cut ends of the nerve be brought into accurate contact, union soon takes place. Surgeons have frequently observed a return of sensibility to a part within a few days after the sensory nerve had been divided and the cut ends again brought into contact. Con- tinued or excessive activity of a nerve soon lowers and may abolish excitability, thus produeing exhaustion. On the other hand, a lengthened period of absolute repose lowers excitability, and if the nerve be inactive beyond a certain time it wastes, becomes thinner and fatty degeneration occurs in its substance. Heat increases, whilst cold diminishes, excitability. In the case of frogs’ nerves temperatures above 45° QC,

destroy excitability the more rapidly as they approach 70°, at which point it is almost instantaneously destroyed. Below 45° a rise of temperature first increases and then diminishes excitability, and it has been observed that whilst Homann 1 pie oa it diminishes its duration (Afanasieff,

mann). Finally, a dimini i oar isin” shed supply of blood quickly causes

(2.) Nerves may be excited by various kinds of stimuli: mechanically, as by intermittent pressure, beating, ed ee ing, &c. ; (0) thermally, by variation of temperature ; (c) chemically by the application of’ such substances as acids, alkalis, or metallic

salts ; (d) electrically, by continuous or induced currents; and (ec) normally, by changes in the central or terminal organs, Mechanical irritation is applied during life when the trunk of a nerve is pressed upon. Radiant heat acts on the nerves of the skin, or heat may be applied by conduction from a hot body in contact with the surface. Little is known as to the specific effects of heat on the nerves of the human being. In the frog it hag been found that a temperature of from 34° to 45° C. stiniulates the motor nerves; about 40° C, sudden alterations of temperature may cause twitching of the connected muscles (Hermann). Many chemical substances in sufficient concentration will quickly destroy a nerve; but if they are in weak solutions the result may be stimu- lation. Thus, concentrated solutions of the mineral acids, alkalis, alkaline salts, concentrated lactic acid, and concentrated glycerin may act as strong stimulants (Kiihne). ;

(3.) The influence of electrical stimulation of nerves demands more elaborate description. The effects, as already indicated, can be observed only when the nerve is connected with a muscle or with a central organ. In the first case electrical stimulation is followed by contraction of the muscle, in the second by a sensation if the central organ is the brain. Consequently we have to consider the phenomena following electrical stimulation (a) of a motor nerve and (0) of a sensory nerve. .

(a.) Electrical Stimulation of a Motor Nerve.—A perfectly con- By stant current of elcctricity, of moderate quantity and intensity, tig) flowing through a portion of nerve produces no evident effect on stig). the muscle, but any variation in the intensity or density of the tig) current causes irritation, and the muscle gives a twitch. The mo effect is most apparent when the current is allowed to flow into nem! the nerve and when it is suddenly cut off, or, in other words, at the moment of opening and of closing the circuit. The rapidity with which the variation in the density of the current is effected also has an important influence. Thus the shocks of frictional electricity stimulate strongly, because, although the amount of electricity is small, the currents are extremely rapid in appearing and disappearing. In like manner the quick shocks from induction- coils produced by rapidly opening and closing the primary circuit are strongly stimulating. Again, a very powerful current may pass through a nerve without exciting it, if it pass gradually, Occasionally a very weak current sent through a portion of nerve will cause a contraction, whilst a very strong current may fail to do so. In fact, the phenomenon of contraction ofa muscle is influenced (a) by the direction and (f) by the strength of the |}, current sent through the nerve. When the current is transmitted | from the muscle in the direction of the spinal cord it is called an “upward” or “centripetal” current, when from the cord in the direction of the muscle it is called a “ downward” or “ centrifugal ” current, Its strength is graduated by employing small Grove’s cells, one cell giving a weak current, two or three giving a medium current, and four to six or seven a strong current. To graduate its amount more precisely resistance-coils may be introduced into the circuit, or we may employ a rheochord, by which a portion of the current is shunted back to the battery, whilst the remainder is allowed to pass to the nerve. In the circuit a key or interrupter is interposed, and so arranged that when the key is opened the current is broken or interrupted, and when the key is closed the circuit is completed and the current passes to the nerve. With these arrangements, and employing the sciatic nerve of a frog attached to the limb, the following results are readily obtained.

=

Current Strength. Key. Upward Current. Downward Current. Weak. Close. Contraetion. Contraetion. Weak. Open. Rest. Rest. Mediuin. Close. Strong

eontraction, Strong contraction. Mediuin. Open. Strong contraction. Strong eontraction. Strong. Close. Rest. Rest. Strong. Open. Very strong eontraetion. Contraction.

That is to say, on beginning with a very feeble current neither opening nor elosing causes a contraction, but on strengthening it up to a certain point contraction appears first on closing, whilst opening produces no effect. By increasing the strength of the current a contraction is obtained both on opening and on closing the key, and by and by, when a certain strength of current is reached, the closing contraction becomes weaker and finally dis-appears, leaving only a contraction on opening the key. Thus the effects of a strong current are usually the reverse of those caused by a weak current. These facts, usually included under the term

Pfliiger’s Law of Contraction,” have been specially investigated by Pfliiger, and the following is the explanation offercd by him and generally accepted by physiologists.

Suppose that stretched over t

current coming from the Grove’s elements. the negative

SYSTEM. |

positive pole it is diminished,—that is to say, a stimulus from the induction-coil, not sufficient to excite the nerve so much as to cause a muscular contraction if applied near the positive pole, will at once do so if applied near the negative pole; or, a stimulus so strong as to cause tetanus in the muscle when applied near the negative pole may produce no effect when applied near the positive pole. In other words, the nerve near the negative pole is more excitable than in the normal state, whilst near the positive pole itis less so, indicating that at least one of the physiological properties of the nerve has been changed by the action of the continuous current. Buta nerve-fibre has also the property of conducting the effects ofan impression, or the nerve-force travels with a certain velocity along a nerve, as will be shown lower down. It has been ascer- tained that near the negative pole the rate of conductivity is increased, whilst near the positive pole it is diminished. Finally, a piece of living nerve, when connected with the terminals of a galvanometer, so that the one terminal touches the surface whilst the other touches the transverse section of the nerve, shows the existence of a current of electricity travelling from the surface of the nerve through the galvanometer to the transverse section,—that is, the surface is positive to the transverse section. This condition is also modified by the transmission through the nerve of a continuous current, so that the difference of potential is increased near the positive pole and diminished near the negative. These results are thus sumined up,

State of Nerve. Functions of Nerve.

Electromotive force. Conductivity. Excitability. Near positive pole
Increased Diminished Diminished Near negative pole Diminished Increased

Increased

EE EE EE The properties of the nerve, therefore, are altered by the passage through it of a continuous current, and the altered condition is termed the ‘‘electrotonic state,” the condition in the neighbourhood of the positive pole, or anode, being termed “‘anelectrotonic,” whilst that near the negative pole or katode is called “katelectrotouic.” A certain portion of nerve near each pole is thrown during the assage of a continuous current into these conditions of anelectrotonus and of Taasieetrotonns, whilst the amount of nerve thrown into the one condition or the other depends on the strength of the current, Further, there is always be- tween the two poles a point of indifference, in which the properties of the nerve seem to be unaltered, and the position of this point depends on the strength of the current. Thus, with a current of medium strength the point is midway between the poles; with a weak current the point is near the positive pole,— that is, a large portion of the nerve near the negative pole is in the katelectro- tonic state in which the excitability is increased ; and with a strong current the point is near the negative pole,—that is, a large portion of the nerve near the positive pole is in the anelectrotonic state in which the excitability is diminished, Now, according to Pfliiger, the stimulating effect of closing the current occurs at the katode only, whilst the stimulating effect of opening the current occurs at the anode only, or a nerve is stimulated by a current on the appearance or increase of katelectrotonus, on closing the circuit, or by the disappearance or diminution of anelectrotonus on opening the circuit. If we suppose that this depends on the modification of excitability near the negative pole, by the molecules of the nerve becoming more mobile, the matter is in- telligible. Thus the passage of the molecules from the normal stable con- dition to the katelectrotonic less stable condition acts as a stimulus, whilst the passage backwards has no effect. On the other hand, the passage from the more stable condition in anelectrotonus to the normal stable condition acts as a stimulus, whilst, again, the reverse action has no effect. This explains why it is that a weak current gives contraction on closing, because on closing a large portion of the nerve near the negative pole passes from the normal into the katelectrotonic state, and this acts as a stimulus. On the other hand, a strong current causes contraction on opening, because on opening a large por- tion of nerve near the positive pole passes back from the anelectrotonic state into the normal state, and this acts as a stimulus.

Again, with currents of medium strength, as both states are equally produced, there is contraction both on opening and on closing. Thus Pfliiger's theory accounts for most of the facts; but its weak point is that no reason can be given why a nerve is stimmlated only by the appearance of katelectrotonus and by the disappearance of anelectrotonus. It remains only to add that currents passing transversely through nerves produce no stimulating effect. In ascending currents the shorter the piece of nerve between the electrodes the greater the stimulating effect, whereas in descending currents the reverse holds good (Hermann). |

(b.) Electrical Stimulation of Sensory Nerves.—The effect of stim- ulating sensory nerves as distinguished from the direct stimulation of sensory or terminal organs has not been sufficiently studied, but, so far as is known, the laws seem to be the same as those relating to motor nerves. When a sensory nerve is stimulated the test must be the resulting sensation. As stimulation of the motor nerve in the condition of anclectrotonus or of katelectrotonus may or may not be followed by a contraction, so stimulation of the sensory nerve may or may not be followed by a sensation, or the character of the sensa- tion may vary just as the muscular contraction may be weak or strong. Further, Donders has shown that electrical stimulation of the vagi or pncumogastric nerves is attended by analogous pheno- mena, so far as-the movements of the heart are concerned. In this case, however, as will be shown lower down in discussing the pheno- mena of nervous inhibition, the result is not movement but arrest of movement.

(c.) Chauveau's Researches on Unipolar Excitation.—Chauveau has studied the comparative influence of the two poles of any arrange- ment supplying a continuous current,—that is, he has tried the stimulating effect, supposing either the positive or the negative pole be applied to the nerve whilst the other is in contact with another part of the body. He has found, amongst other more abstruse and less practical results, that there is in each case a certain intensity of current corresponding to the physiological con- dition of the nerve by which the influence of one pole is the same as that of the other. If the intensity of the current be below this medium strength the effect of the negative pole on motor nerves is greater than that of the positive ; but, if the intensity be above, the reverse is the case, —that is, the positive pole is the stronger excitant. In the case of sensory nerves Chauveau found that

application of the negative pole with a moderately strong current was more painful than application of the positive pole. Thus the inflnence of unipolar

excitation with a strong current on motor nerves is the reverse of that on sensory nerves,—that is, the positive pole is the more powerful on motor nerves, the negative pole on sensory nerves.

(d.) Production of Tetanus.—Tetanus or cramp of a muscle is Produc- produced when its nerve is stimulated by successive irritations tion of at intervals so short that the muscle has no time to relax between tetanus.

them, and consequently it passes into a state of more or less firm contraction. A single muscular contraction may be called a twitch of the muscle, but in tetanus or cramp the individual contractions are fused together so as to maintain a rigid state of the muscle for some time. A rapid series of induction shocks, each of short duration, always produces tetanus, even if they are sent to the muscle at the rate of 15 per second. A continuous current, on the other hand, usually causes contraction only at the moment of open- ing and closing the circuit, but occasionally tetanus may be seen during the passage of the current. Tetanus during the passage of a constant current has been attributed to electrolytic changes in the nerve. Pfliiger holds that this is a normal production of tetanus and may be seen even with feeble currents ; but certainly it is very difficult to demonstrate. Long ago Ritter showed that, if a constant current of sufficient intensity be sent up a nerve for a considerable time, say half an hour, and then be suddenly interrupted, tetanus lasting for eight or ten seconds may be seen, which disappears on again closing the current. Ritter’s tetanus, according to Pfliiger, is really due to the stimulation caused by the disappearance of an- electrotonus, which occurs, as we have seen, when the current is opened, and the proof he offers is that the tetanus disappears when the muscle is cut off from the anelectrotonic portion, Tetanus may also be caused by the mechanical irritation of the nerve, or by heat, or by chemical substances.

Nervous Conductivity. —When a nerve is irritated at any point in its course a change is produced which is propagated along the nerve,—that is, the nerve conducts, and the phenomenon is called the ‘‘nerve-current.” The velocity of transmission can be measured only by the use of delicate apparatus, as the time occupied is too short to directly affect consciousness. For example, when the tip of the finger is touched the mind apparently perceives the contact without any loss of time. But it can be shown that an appreciable interval of time clapses between the instant the finger is touched and the instant the mind perceives the impression. During this time a change passes along the nerve from the point touched to the brain. The method usually employed for determining the velocity of the nerve-current consists in preparing the gastrocnemius muscle of a frog with the sciatic nerve attached, and connecting it with a recording apparatus, so that if the muscle be caused to contract by irritating the nerve the record of the contraction may be made on a rapidly-moving surface. If, then, the nerve be irritated in two consecutive experiments, first close to the muscle, and secondly at a distance from it, and the muscle be caused to contract in each case, it will be found that it does not contract so soon when the nerve is irritated at a distance from the muscle as when it is irritated close to it; in other words, if the nerve be irritated at a distance from the muscle the transmission of the nervous impression from the point irritated to the muscle occupies an appreciable time. If, then, we know the length of nerve between the two points irritated, we can determine the length of time the nerve-current took in passing along that distance of nerve.

(1.) Measurement of Velocity in Motor Nerves.~~Many ingenious methods have been devised for this purpose, but the simplest is the use of the ‘‘spring myo~~ graphion ” of Du Bois-Reymond (see fig.3). The apparatus consists of a smoked-glass plate, which is driven in front of the re- cording stylet of the myograph by the recoil of a steel spring C. Underneath the frame carrying the glass plate are two binding screws 1 and 2, to one of which is attached a rectangular arm of brass 1, which can so move horizontally as to establish metallic connexion between the two binding screws (marked Break, F). By means of these binding screws the myograph is interposed in the circuit of a galvanic element and the primary coil I of an cs ae i mye ah is Lea ing screws, thus completing the circuit, 200VIB.PER

SEC.) stoked glass plate there deseonds a small fates Sein (aan: an iene plate, oy RAPIDITY OF NERVE CURRENT

Fia. 3.—Diagram showing arrange-

releasing a catch not seen in the figure, but close to C, is driven across by the ment of apparatus in measuring rapidity of nerve-current.

CELL

spiral spring from left to right) pushes the brass arm aside and thus interrupts the circuit of the primary coil. When this occurs an opening shock is trans- mitted from the secondary coil II to a commutator E, an instrument by which electric currents may be transmitted to the nerve either at a point close to the muscle at A, or at a distance from it at B. Suppose the ap- paratus all arranged so as to send the shock to the nerve at a point close

XIX. — 4

Nervous conduct- ivity.

Measure- ment of velocity innerves.

Heat-

produc- tion by neryes,

_ exciting electrolytic decomposition.

26 PHYSI

fl f he muscle A, the muscle stimulated contracts, and draws by means 0 te ae on the smoked surface of the glass, the curve seen in the lower part of it at A. This leaves the horizontal line (which would be drawn bs the stylet were the muscle at rest) at A. Arrangements are then — 4 another experiment, in which the nerve will be stimulated at a a gee — the muscle, at the point B in the upper part of the diagram. i is wie by again placing the smoked-glass plate in proper position, closing the ane y circuit by the brass arm at the binding screws, as already described, an hs yersing the

commutator so as to send the shock along the wires to iv “A muscle again contracts when the primary circuit is opened, and this ime / describes on the smoked surface the curve B, seen to the left of the curve A. It will be perceived that this curve leaves the horizontal line at B,—that is, a little later than when the nerve was stimulated close to the muscle. It follows, therefore, that the distance on the horizontal line from A to B represents the time occupied by the transmission of the nervous impulse from B to A of the nerve. With suitable arrangements, the rate of movement of the glass plate ~ be measured by bringing into contact with it a marker on one of the prongs 0 a vibrating tuning-fork. The waves thus recorded enable the experimenter to measure with accuracy the rate of movement of the glass plate, and ae quently the minute interval of time between A and B. In the diagram it ie be observed that there are 24 waves between A and B; each represents y4,th of a second; therefore the ,jth of a second is the time represented by the distance A, B; or, in other words, the ,,;th of a second was occupied by the nerve-current in passing along the portion of nerve from B to A.

(2.) Measurement of Velocity in Sensory Nerves.—Supposea sensory nerve to be excited in the hand ; the theory of nervous conduction is that a change is pro- pagated along the nerve to the brain, and that in the brain the molecular changes occur which result in a sensation. The individual having the sensa- tion nay feel it and make no sign by which any one else might be made aware that he has felt it, or the subject of the sensation might, by a muscular move- ment, such as the motion of an arm, let any one else see that he has felt the sensation. We have no means of knowing whether or not an individual has felt a sensation except by the individual making some kind of gesture or muscular movement. Now it is clear that, if we regard the brain as the seat of the changes resulting in sensation, the nearer any stimulated portion of skin is to the brain the sooner will the brain feel and respond to the stimulus. Thus, if the skin on the big toe of the right foot be stimulated, the effect of the stimulus passes to the brain and there calls forth a sensation, but if the stimulus be applied to the skin at the top of the thigh it is evident the effect has to pass along a shorter length of nerve and that the sensation in the brain will be aroused sooner. If we suppose that in each case the individual who is the subject of the experiment indicates the moment he feels the sensation, and that the instant the stimulus is applied

successively to the skin on the toe and on the thigh is also accurately recorded, it is clear that he will signal the sensation of stimulation of the toe a little later than when he signals stimu- lation of the skin on the thigh, and that the difference will indicate the time required by the change in the nerve to pass along the length of nerve from the toe to the thigh. In the observation it is assumed that the time required for the changes in the brain resulting in sensation and volition, for the trans- mission along the motor nerve, and for the muscular contraction required to signal is the same in each experiment. Thus, supposing the total time between the moment of stimulating to the moment when the signal that the sensation has been felt and responded to is a, it is clear that this time is composed of a, the time required for the passage of the nerve-current in the first experiment from the toe to the brain, of b, the time required for the changes in the brain involved in sensation and volition, and of ¢, the time required for the trans- mission along the motor nerves and for the muscular contraction to move the signal, —that is, z=a+b-+-c. But, if the time between the moment of stimu- lating the thigh to the moment of signalling be shorter, and supposing that b and c are constant, then a varies according to the length of the nerve. Suppose the difference of time between the registration of stimulating at the toe and at the thigh to be y, then in the second experiment =a—y+b+c,—that is, y=the time occupied by the passage of the nerve-current from the toe to the thigh. This method has also been used to measure the time required for signalling a nervous impression in various circumstances, or what is usually called the “reaction period.” The most convenient apparatus for the purpose is a chronograph ade by Konig of Paris, the instrument being fully described in M‘Kendrick’s Outlines of Physiology, pp. 588-542.

The general result of measurements made by these methods is that the nerve-current travels slowly compared with the velocity of electricity or of light. In the motor nerves of the frog the velocity is about 87 feet (26 to 27 metres) per second, and in man aud warm-blooded animals somewhat faster, 115 to 130 feet (35 to 40 metres) per second. The results as to velocity in sensory nerves vary from 50 to 100 metres per second. Cold retards, heat accel- erates, the velocity. As already stated, the velocity is also retarded In a herve 1n an anelectrotonic, and accelerated ina katelectrotonic state. The remarkable point is that the transmission of the

nerve- current is slow, and that events appearing to our consciousness instantaneous require a considerable time for their occurrence. It may be laid down asa general truth that all kinds of nervous actions, even those considered as purely psychical, require time.

Production of Heat by Nerves. —It is extremely doubtful whether the production of heat by a nerve in action has been detected, although theoretically one would expect heat to be so produced. Schiff observed an increase of temperature on tetanization in the nerves of warm-blooded animals that had been artificially cooled ; on the other hand, Helmholtz and Heidenhain's experiments yielded

from the galvanometer were I e removed from an anima] newly I I current would be obtained, and even if there were a current it might be due to contact of the metallic conductors with the ea tissue Hence it is necessary to have a uid in- terposed between the metal and the animal tissue, say, fox example, the tine wire or plate forming the terminals of the galvanometer is immersed in a rte lon se of sulphate of zinc. But as sulphate of zine solution 1 d have the living muscle it is necessary t inactive substance between the tissue and the sulphate of zinc qeiaiion: ae these conditions are fulfilled by the non- polarizable electrodes of Du Bois-

[NERVOUS

OLOGY

f which there are various forms. Two zinc troughs, mounted on med es pinion of vuleanite, have the inner surfaces carefully amalgamated, These are filled with a saturated solution of sulphate of zinc, and in each trough is placed a small cushion of clean blotting or filter paper, which quickly becomes permeated with the solution. Finally, a small plate of sculptor's clay, or kaolin, moistened with a half per cent. solution of common salt, or,

mas Cj

UCT we

hy,

El

—

Fic. 4.—Diagrain of apparatus of Du Bois-Reymond for experiments on elec- a, zinc troughs, mounted on pieces

of vulcanite 6; c, paper pads; d, e, small pieces of moist clay ; f, f, binding screws for attaching terminals of galvanometer g. A small piece of paper connects d and e, and thus completes the galvanometer circuit. (Wundt.)

still better, with saliva, is laid on each paper pad. These clay pads are for guarding the tissue from the irritant action of the sulphate of zinc. Wires are carried from the troughs to the galvanometer, and a key is interposed in the circuit. The object of these careful arrangements is to secure that no current is formed by the apparatus itself. If now a small piece of nerve be so placed on the clay pads that the transverse scction touches one pad and the longitudinal surface the other, and the key is opened, a current passes through the galvano. meter, as indicated by the swing of the needle. Suppose that the needle is allowed to come to rest, the amount of deflexion of course indicating the strength of the current, and the nerve is now irritated so as to call forth its physiological activity, then the needle swings back towards zero. This back- ward swing is called the negative variation of the nerve-current. The electro- motive force of the current obtainable from a frog's sciatic nerve is about ~~022 of a volt, and somewhat more from the sciatic nerve of a rabbit. This is some~~ what less than the electromotive force of a frog's muscle, which varies from -035 to '075 of a volt. According to the views of Hermann, the negative variation. current is a true current indicating, and indeed preceding, the physiological activity of the nerve. He denies that the currents pre-exist in nerve or muscle, and states that the first current observed when the nerve is laid on the pads is simply due to the lower potential of the transverse section, caused by the rapid death of the nerve-substance. The nerve-current excited by a series of irrita- tions, say feeble induction-currents, may be regarded as composed of a wave- like series of momentary currents, each of which is preceded by a negative variation-current. Thus the electrical phenomena of nerve are similar in kind to those manifested by living muscle.

Nutrition of Nerves.— Probably nerves are nourished by the Nut plasma reaching the axis-cylinder at the nodes of Ranvier ; but it tion rom the researches of Waller that the nutrition of nen

would appear the uerve-fibre is influenced by the nerve-cell with which it is con- nected. The so-called ‘‘law of Waller” is well illustrated in the case of division of the roots of the spinal nerves. Fach of these nerves has two roots,—a posterior, sensory, on which there is a ganglion; and an anterior, motor. If the anterior root be divided, in the course of a few days the end of the nerve cut off from the spinal cord is found to be undergoing degeneration, whilst the end attached to the cord is still normal. Again, if the posterior root be divided between the ganglion and the cord, the end remaining in connexion with the ganglion remains unaffected, whilst the other end undergoes degeneration. This degeneration, in the case of a motor nerve, affects the nerve to its very terminations. The axis- cylinder ie ie ev into drops of fatty matter, and the medullated structure entirely disappears. It is well known that when a nerve 1s cut the ends may reunite so completely as to ensure a return of the normal function in from two to five weeks. According to Ranvier, the axis-cylinders in connexion with the central portion play an important part in this regeneration. They become larger, striated, and by and by form new axis-cylinders, which pass into the cicatricial tissue and come into contact with the other end of the divided nerve. This is a remarkable confirmation of the view of Waller that the nutritional activity of a nerve-fibre is in the direction of its physiological activity.

m a herve-fibre effected by a stimulus is quite unknown ; but it ise important to appreciate clearly the view that a nerve is both a Tecelver and a conductor of impressions. It can be stimulated in any part of its course, and from the stimulated point some kind of change is propagated along the nerve. This change is analogous to the passage of electricity along a conductor, or to the rapid decompositions, as when a properly prepared is scen to slowly to the quick transmission of isomeric but the analogy is not complete in any case. Whatever

Nature of Nerve-currents.—The intrinsic nature of the change ,

long thin band of gun-cotton burn from end to end, or to changes ;

the change may be, however, it does not appear to pass from one nerve-fibre to another running alongside of it. Each fibre con- ducts only its own impression, and there is nothing analogous to the inductive effect of one electrical conductor wpon an adjacent one. Another question much debated is whether scnsory and motor nerves act in the same way ; or, in other words, is there any essential difference between them? ‘There appears to be no difference in mode of action ; the difference in the effect produced depends on | the apparatus in which the nerve ends. Thus there may be con- ‘ traction of a muscle if the nerve terminates in a muscle, change of the calibre of a blood-vessel if the nerve ends in that structure, ‘ secretion from a gland if the nerve is in connexion either with the – vessel or the nerve-cells of a gland, an electrical discharge if the nerve ends in the electrical organ of a Torpedo or Gymnotus, and a feeling or sensation if the nerve-fibres go to a sentient brain. In all these instances the nature of the change in the nerve and the mode of its transmission are the same, and the results are differ- ent because the nerves terminate in different kinds of structure. It would appear from experimental evidence that, when a nerve- fibre is irritated, say about the middle of its length, a change is simultaneously propagated towards each end ; but, as only one end is in connexion with an apparatus capable of responding, the effect at this end is the only one observed. Thus, if a motor nerve be irritated, there is muscular contraction, in consequence of the stimulus rousing the muscular substance into activity, probably through the agency of the end-plates ; but there will be at the same time a backward wave along the nerve to the motor centres in the cord or brain. It is doubtful whether the nerve-energy be- comes weaker or gathers intensity as it passes along a nerve ; but the balance of evidence is in favour of the view that the so-called | ‘avalanche theory” of Pfliiger, according to which the energy | gathers intensity as it passes along, is incorrect. | Classifieation of Nerves.—Functionally, nerves may be classified into motor, sensory, vascular, secretory, and inhibitory. The original meaning attached to the term “motor” nerve was a nerve entirely composed of fibres by the excitation of which influences were conveyed to a muscle which caused the muscle to contract. As these influences passed outwards from a

nerve-centre towards _ the periphery of the body they were also termed “efferent” nerves. _ On the other hand, nerves were found which, when stimulated, _ gave rise to sensations of pleasure ar of pain, and these were called “sensory” nerves. Finally, it was shown that a third class of nerves were composed both of sensory and of motor fibres, and they were called “senso-motor” nerves. Sensory nerves were also sub- divided into those of general and those of special sensibility. This was an artificial classification based on the fact that when a nerve of so-called special sensibility, such as the optic, was stimulated in

SYSTEM. |

CENTRIFUGAL, or EFFER- ENT, or Motor, convey- ing influences outwards } 4 from a nerve-centre.

any way the same kind of sensation followed. Thus stimulation of the optic nerve by cutting, pricking, pressure, or electricity is always followed by a luminous sensation. But the progress of research showed that when certain nerve-fibres were stimulated the result was not necessarily a muscular contraction: it might be contraction of a blood-vessel, modified secretion of a gland, or a diminution or arrest of some kind of nervous action. ‘These facts demand another classification of nerves such as the following.

1. Motor, sometimes termed efferent, to muscles, exciting contraction. ;

2, Secretory, to the cells of glands, causing secre- tion, possibly a particular kind of secretion.

3. Vascular, or vaso-motor, to the walls of blood- vessels, so as to cause contraction (vaso-motor) or dilatation (vaso-dilators, or vaso-inhibitors).

. Inhibitory, so atfecting other centres of nervous activity as to moderate or neutralize their action. :

5, Electrical, so affecting a special organ as to call forth electrical discharges, as in electric fishes, Torpedo, Gymnotus, Malapterurus, &c.

a. General, conveying to nerve-

centres in brain influences

which cause sensations of a

vague character, scarcely perceptible to conscious-

1. Sensory, caus- ing i! Ste oe ness, and not permanent, to} CENTRIPETAL, or AFFER- less acute veges RAED NAAT, ae ENT, or SENSoRY, con- sensations. Sy Oe

bv. Special, conveying to nerve- centres in brain influences which cause visual, audit- ory, gustatory, olfactory,

W or tactile seusations.

. Afferent, or reflex, conveying to nerve-centres in- fluences which usually cause no sensation, and which may or may not be followed by inove- nents, secretions, changes in calibre of vessels,

No &e,

.In addition there are nerve-fibres connecting nerve-cells in the great centres,

to which no special functions cau be attributed.

veying influences in-< wards towards & nerve- centre.

to

‘ 2.—TERMINAL ORGANS.

ia Although, as has been shown, a nerve may be stimulated in any part of its course, the stimulus is usually applied to a special structure adapted physiologically for the reception of the particular kind of stimulus. Such a special structure may be termed a

“terminal organ.” For example, in the mechanism of vision (see Eye, vol. viii. p. 821 sg.) there are the retina or terminal organ, the optic nerve or conductor, and the brain or a portion of it, the recipient of the impression. The fibres of the optic nerve are not affected by light, but when they are mechanically or electrically irritated the result is a luminous sensation, because the action of the fibres of the optic nerve is to call forth in the brain the mechanism connected with luminous sensations. But light has a specific action on the retina, and in turn the activity of the retina stimulates the fibres of the optic nerve. The retina 1s therefore the terminal organ adapted for the reception of rays of light. In like manner, cach sense has its appropriate terminal apparatus, and these are described under the headings of the various senses, EAR, Evyg, Smet, Taste, Toucu. To understand the true nature of nervous action it is necessary to be clear as to the functions of the terminal organs. They are liberating mechanisms. transform the outer energy into the physiological energy, uervous action; but they call it into action. Thus light acting on the retina is not directly transformed into nervous energy, but it excites changes in the retina, which in turn produce activity of the optic nerve. The structure of each of these terminal organs need not be here described, but it may be stated that they all essentially consist of modified epithelium-cells, or what may be called ‘‘nerve-epithelium.” In tracing their development throughout the animal sins eerie it will be found that the simplest terminal organs are epithelium-cells on the surface of the body ; but during evolutionary progress from lower to higher forms these cells become more and inore modified and more and more protected by descending deeper into the structure of the animal, until we meet with the complicated organs of special sense in the higher animals. Another class of ter- minal organs is that comprehending the forms at the ends of motor nerves. Such are the end-plates found in muscle, and described in vol. i. pp. 861, 862. The different modes of nerve-termination may be here briefly classified.

Organ. Skin (see Toucn)

Terminal Organ.

Tactile cells of Merkel, in the epi->, dermis.

Tactile corpuscles of Wagner and Meissner, in papille of the skin.

End-bulbs of Krause, in conjunc- tiva, penis, and clitoris.

Effect.

Touch, pressure, or

Pacinian bodies, attached to temperature. nerves of hand or foot, or in the mesentery. Corpuscles of Grandry, found in bills of birds. Network of fibres, as in cornea. Ear (see vol. i. p, 894, Hair-cells, supported by arches Hearing. and vol, vii. p. 591). of Corti, and connected with the basilar membrane. Eye (see vol. i. pp. 886 Rods and cones of retina,..... .. Vision. and 888, and vol. viii. p. 816), Nose (see SMELL) .... Rods and olfactory cells…..... Smell. Tongue (see TasTE) .. Taste-buds and gustatory cells.. Taste. Muscles (vol. i. p. 862) Motorial end-plates of Doyere, Motion. Kithne, Krause, Ranvier, &c. (Cl chalol Salam qoleaiaao Ono a Nerve-endings in secreting cells Secretion.

—Pfliiger and Kupffer, Lamine with free cilia-like pro- cesses,

Electric organs (see vol.

c Electric discharge. xii. pp. 649, 650).

38.—CENTRAL ORGANS. A,—General Physiology of Central Organs.

General Structwre.—The central organs consist of a special kind of cells called ‘‘nerve-cells,” of nerve-fibres, both medullated and non-medullated, and of a variety of connective tissue, termed “neuroglia.”* On cutting into any central nervous organ, such as the spinal cord or brain, two kinds of nervous matter are seen, the white and the grey. The grey consists of nerve-cells, nerve – fibres, and neuroglia, whilst the white is com- posed chiefly of nerve-fibres with a small amount of neuroglia and no nerve-cells. Nerve cells vary much in Fig. 5.—Various forms of nerve-cells. form, as will be seen by referring to fig. 5. They may be spher- oidal, ovoidal, or ir-regularly triangular. The cells of the spinal ganglia are usually rounded ; those of the sympathetic more angular ; those of the spinal cord multipolar, — that is, having many processes or poles connected with them ; those of the cerebrum triangular or pyramidal; and those of the cere-

a, multipolar, from grey matter of spinal cord ; }, d, bipolar, from ganglia on posterior roots of spinal nerves; ¢, 9, uni- polar, from cerebellum; g shows indications of a process coming off at lower end; ¢, union of three multipolar cells in spinal cord; f, union of three tripolar cells in grey inatter of cerebral hemispheres.

They do not:

Shapes

of nerve-

cells.

Chemical

sub- stances in nerv- ous matter.

Excita- bility and blood-

supply.

Nervous centres.

28

llum flask-shaped, having processes at each end. A nerve-cell cee a large far nucleus Lat a small nucleolus, whilst the — substance is very granular. Some observers think they have trace into the substance of the cell a fibrillated structure from the axis- cylinder of the nerve-fibre ending in the pole or process ; but this is doubtful, and the appearance may be accounted for by the cto of the reagent employed and by the great difficulty of wong interpreting optical appearances under very high powers. the neuroglia is a delicate interstitial connective substance having small connective-tissue corpuscles imbedded in it. ie

Chemical Constitution of Grey and White Matter.—This is still imperfectly known, and throws almost no light on the functions of the central organs. By various chemical processes the following substances have been obtained

from nervous matter: cerebrin, lecithin, albumin, neurokeratin, cholesterin and fats, creatin, xanthin, hypoxanthin, inosite, lactic acid, volatile fatty acids, salts, and water. The grey matter of the brain is distinguished chemically from the white chiefly by containing more water, albumin, lecithin, and lactic acid, and less cholesterin, fat, and protagon (Hermann). Doubtless many of these substances are de- rived from the disintegration of a more complex chemical substance not yet isolated in a pure state from nervous matter. Petrowsky gives the composition of grey and white matter as follows.

Grey matter, | White matter.

ENC one kM EOP OT OTaCT. 4 OCD? OCR te 81°6 68°4 Solas SA. yor Meat A riciiais Silxaieg* iti ee couskes® 18°4 31°6 The solids consist of— on Albumins and gelatin 55-4 27 Bu SCOUT LIB iae autis oo: cbebauatte hater ans Uy2 9°9 Cholesterin and fats ……..... 18‘7 51°9 Gate I Weaysteteissnicraneth ateaeGtetr etnies) everers, ha 816) 3% 0°5 9 5 Substances soluble in ether……..... 6’°7 83 Ree texctefoseye tis ote ershe ne erat Pies csatalsia Goin mieulli a ous as 0°6

The salts found in nervous matter are similar to those in blood, and it would appear that phosphates, or rather combinations in which phosphorus exists, are the most prominent products of analysis. Thus about 40 per cent. of the salts consist of phos- phates of soda and of potash—that is, the ash, on analysis, gives this result ; but it must not be inferred that in nervous tissue phosphates of the alkalis exist to this amount, as there is every reason to think that phosphorous compounds, along with alkalis, exist in nervous matter, although not in the form usually called phosphates, The remarkably large amount of water, amounting to no less than from 70 to 80 per cent., indicates matter in a condition suitable for rapid molecular changes, on which, no doubt, the functions of the tissue depend.

Exeitability of Grey Matter.—As grey matter contains both nerve- fibres and nerve-cells, and as these cannot be separated in any experi- ment, it is clear that no precise results can be obtained from any effort to distinguish the excitability of grey matter from that of white. The excitability of the grey matter must depend on blood- supply and on the rapid removal of waste-products. If the first be deficient either in quantity or quality, or if the

second be not carried on so rapidly as to get rid of the waste-products as they are formed, the activity of the nerve-cells must suffer. The sudden deprivation of blood, as when the heart ceases to beat for even half a second, will cause unconsciousness; the mixture with the blood of a small quantity of bromide of potassium, or of alcohol, or of chloroform or other anesthetic, or of morphia, will affect the activity of the brain. And it is well known that, when disease of the kidney, or such a disease as an acute fever, affects the body, matters may accumulate in the blood which so contaminate it as to make it unfit to carry on the vital changes on which activity of brain depends, and the result is delirium or unconsciousness. There is every reason to believe that the activity of nerve-cells is delicately attuned to surrounding conditions. A small excess per cent. of carbonic acid, ora small amount of what we call a poison, is sufficient to modify or arrest their action. The rhythmic action of various centres, such as those controlling the movements of re- spiration, is in favour of the view that the activity of such centres depends on delicate equipoises. If during expiration there is for the moment a deficiency of oxygen in the blood, or an accumula- tion of carbonic acid, the result will be an attempt at inspiration. This gets rid of the carbonic acid and introduces oxygen, and an expiration ensues. It is not pretended here to state what exactly happens, as these phenomena of respiration are still obscure, but they are brought forward with the view of showing that the actions of the rhythmic centres of respiration depend on the delicate balance established between the external conditions and those centres. If this be the case there is little doubt that a similar effect is produced on other centres by the nature of the blood supplied, and that the quality and quantity of the supply are important factors in the production of all conscious conditions.

_ General Phenomena manifested by Nervous Centres.—Before enter- ing on a detailed description of the functions of the great centres such as spinal-cord and brain, it is well to take a survey of some of

the general phenomena manifested by such centres. These may be grouped under the heads of (1) reflex actions, (2) inhibitory actions, (3)-accelerating

actions, (4) vaso-motor actions, (5) secretory actions, (6) sensations, and (7) intellectual acts.

Reflex Aetions.—Impressions made on sensory nerves are con- veyed to nerve-centres, where they may or may not awaken COD ac sciousness. A sensation may be defined as the consciousness of an impression, and may or may not be followed by motion. Hither motion may be voluntary, or it may be caused by direct stimulation of the motor nerve distributed to the muscles. The latter kind of action in the living body is not common. Usually motor nerves are acted on by the will or by emotional states ; but it not unfrequently happens that physical stimuli occasion motion in an indirect manner, the impressions being carried along sensory nerves to a central organ, where changes are excited which result in a discharge of nervous energy along motor nerves to various muscles, Thus a frog in which the brain and medulla oblongata have been destroyed will draw up its limbs-if the foot be pinched. Such actions, taking place without consciousness, are called ‘* reflex actions,” and the mechanism required for their performance may be thus described: (1) excitation of a sensory or afferent nerve, (2) excitation of an intermediate neryous or reflex centre, and (3) excitation of a motor or efferent nerve, which causes a muscular contraction. The dia- gram in fig. 6 shows the sim- plest mechanism; but it is rare to find the arrangements so simple, and the mechanism may become more complex (see fig. 7) either by the existence of a number of cells or groups of cells in the nerve-centre, or by the existence of numerous afferent or efferent nerves. The essence of a reflex action is the transmutation by means of the

Fic. 6.—Simple reflex action; 1, sensory surface ; 2, muscle; a, sensory nerve; b, nerve-cell; c, motor nerve. The arrows indicate the direction in which the influence travels.

Fic. 7.—Double reflex action, or action in which two or more nerve-cells are involved ; 1, 2, as in fig. 6; a, motor nerve; b, c, nerve cells. irritable protoplasm of a nerve-cell of afferent into efferent impulses (Foster). The following is a brief summary of the leading facts

relating to reflex action.

(a) The initial excitation may occur both in nerves of general sensibility and in those of the special senses; but certain nerves more easily excite reflex actions than others. Thus when light falls on the retina there is contraction of the pupil, the afferent nerve in this case being the optic (see vol. viii. p. 821 sq.).

(b) A reflex movement may occur whether we excite a sensory nerve at its commenceinent or at some point in its course, but in the latter case the action is less intense than in the former.

(e) Grey matter containing nerve-cells constitutes the chief por- tion of reflex centres, and groups of such reflex centres are frequently associated by internuncial fibres. The excitability is increased when these centres are severed from communication with psychical centres which preside over voluntary movements. Thus, after decapitation, reflex movements occur with greater intensity than in the injured animal ; they are also more active during sleep. It is evident, therefore, that reflex actions may be restrained or hindered in their development by the action of higher centres. This is termed the “inhibition of reflex action.”

(2) Reflex movements may occur in one muscle, or in many muscles or groups of muscles. One or more groups of muscles may be involved according to the strength of the stimulus applied to the sensory sur- face and the degree of excitability of the reflex centre at the time (see fig. 8). The facts are thus summarized by Pfliiger. Unilateral action; if in a decapitated frog we excite th the hind foot p, the excitation is ¢ 4, ¢, nerve-cells; 1, 2,3, 4, 5, transmitted from the centre a to the 5» 5» 5: muscles. muscles 1 of the foot on the same side. the excitation be more intense, it is trans

|

fac

e skin of Fic. 8,—p, sensory surface; a, 0,

Symmetrical action ; if mitted to a centre on the

opposite side 6, and contractions may occur in the muscles of the | and gullet; vomiting, ponies by ketal: in gional, or in cna, or follow- : : – eae aie 4 evn C ing nausea ; forced contractions of the sphincter muscles of the anus, Urinary j hind limbs Ke both sides 1, 2. Irradiation ; if the excitation be pladder, and yagina, under local irritation ; erection and emission under the still increased in intensity, 1t influence of irritation of the nerves of the penis and other parts in the vicinity ; affects higher centres ¢, 4, . area Nn age of lympaiie hearts in reptiiea : fap howe provenen @ ‘ ne heart by the action of cardiac ganglia ; peristaltic motions e stomac there etl be Pan atts =. 7 and alimentary canal, in digestion and in defecation, &c., under the influence of oe s “es . pape re ual impressions conveyed to the ganglia by the splanchnic and intestinal nerves ; if the excitation be still turther increased, it may pass to a still

action of the bladder in expelling urine; expulsive action of the uterus in par- turition ; contractions and dilatations of the blood-vessels under the influence

- 3 of the vaso-motor system of nerves ; many obscure and complex morbid actions higher reflex centre @, and the such as palpitations of the heart, cramps in the limbs caused by irritation in result is general convulsions. the stomach or intestinal canal, fainting from concussion or from peculiar

(e) Reflex centres may be so odours, dilatation of the pupil and grinding of the teeth from the irritation of arranged in the body as to con- worms, and the convulsive seizure sometimes occurring during teething. stitute a series in which those Inhibitory and Accelerating Actions. —As we have seen, stimula- Tnhi- of the cerebrum govern or con- ; 2> aA 2 tion of a nerve may cause a sensation, a reflex action, or the direct bitory trol others in the deeper gan- K ,) contraction of a muscle; but in some instances when the nerve and glia of the brain, while these, ; is stimulated movements may be arrested. This occurs where accel- in turn, have an influence over 16 ») 9 1 14) & of rhythmic and apparently spontaneous or automatic actions are erating still lower centres in the spinal y \ Y ¢ , ur restrained or inhibited by the activity of certain nerves. The most actions, cord. This arrangement is oy BY gy ‘| SS J S| En striking instance of inhibition 1s IE

termed the ‘‘superposition of mA offered by the heart. The subject MEDULLA, ,77---~-. reflexes” (see fig. 9). will be readily understood with the

surface may simultaneously pro- 1, 1, series of reflex centres on one side, innervation of the heart and blood- duce, by a reflex mechanism, under the control of 2, 2, which are | vessels and especially the inhibition movement, secretion, and con- “8! governed by 3. ‘There is a cor- | and action of the depressor nerve.

v

i : respondi series, 1’, 1’; 2’, 2’; 8 a : movement, soeretion, emiimmont evoing serew 1 1 2) 2; 8.00 | Tt is well known that the heart Hy in the mouth may cause in- over by 4. Thus a stimulus reaching of a warm- blooded animal ceases to = voluntary twitchings of the 4 might excite the activity of all the beat almost immediately after re- =! muscles, secretion of saliva and muscles m, m ; if it reached 8, only one | moval from the body, but the heart 2 ib ; ’ half of the muscles ; if it reached 2, to f 1d – blooded Seokal J ze

a sensation (see fig. 10). the left, only three of the muscles; | 1 @ cold- blooded animal, such as Hs (g) Certain substances, in and, finally, if it affected 1, to the left, | the frog, will beat for hours or even id particular strychnin, increase only one muscle m. days, especially if it be supplied with a)

refiex excitability, so that the slightest external stimulation of the defibrinated blood. The rhythmic sensory nerves of the skin is sufficient to cause severe convulsions. | beat depends to some extent on the On the other hand, existence in the heart of ganglia or bromide of potas- small nerve- centres (fig. 11, I, A, sium, hydrate of R). It is quite true, however, that chloral, and atro- rhythm may go on in a portion of pin diminish reflex the heart containing no ganglionic excitability. structure. Now the heart receives

(h) Individual nerves from two sources, from the stimuli only excite vagus or pneumogastric nerve and a reflex act when from fibres derived from the

spinal they are very pow- cord through the sympathetic. If erful, but stimuli wy the vagus be cut and the lower

i 1 nd sti ; i ~~._ Fic. 11.—The origins of pheumogas~~ Pinu es Noort end stimulated by feeble induction- *’.-‘s4 vaso-motor systems are in intervals act the

shocks, the heart beats more slowly, medulla, that of the sympathetic more quickly and and will probably be brought to a in upper portion of cord. The powerfully the

stand-still in a dilated condition, arrows indicate direction of nervé- more rapidly they Fic. 10.—Diagram illustrating a complex reflex mechan-

S-:----

Lo ak

- ◦ currents. In the heart R represents A strong stimulation of the vagus 4g yeflex centre, I an inhibitory

succeed each other. ism. The arrows indicate direction of currents. 1, will invariably arrest the action of centre, and A an accelerating

To produce the re- Sensory surface; 2, muscle; 8, gland; a, sensory | the heart, and the organ will be centre.

i nerve ; 0, reflex centre, connected with another reflex ; : sh

centre, therefore, a nerve; f, secretory nerve passing to gland 3. From | of the stimulus the heart will soon resume its beats. It is clear summation or ad- the other side of d is seen a fibre passing to the brain, that the vagus cannot be regarded as the motor nerve of the heart, die of conta * there exciting changes which result in asensation. | because, if so, stimulation would have arrested the action of the

petal excitations is required. When these reach a certain number | heart in a state of contraction or systole. The question, then, is the centre responds (Stirling). whether the fibres of the vagus possessing this remarkable power

(i) Reflex actions involve time. Thus the time between the of inhibiting or restraining the action of the heart terminate 1n the stimulation and the movement ean be measured, and, if we take muscular fibres, or In some intermediate structures, such as ganglia into consideration the time occupicd by the passage of the nerve- The influence of various polsons has shed light on this question. current along the nerves involved, and the latent period of muscular A minute dose of atropin injected into. the blood paralyses this contraction, and subtract this from the total time, the remainder | inhibitory action. After such a dose stimulation of the vagus 1s will represent the time occupied by the changes in the centre or | followed by no effect, and the heart beats as usual.

14 ‘ s ‘ “47 “ Again, in slight urari poisoning the inhibitory action of the vagus is still the — gs Fag eas been found to be from *0555 to 0471 of present ; in the profounder stages it disappears, but even then inhibition may asecond. It is lengt ened by cold and shortened by increasing | bc obtained by applying the electrodes to the sinus. Tn order to explain this the strength of the stimulus and by strychnia. result, it has been supposed that what we may call the inhibitory fibres of the

(k) In compound reflex acts the initial excitation may occur | Ya8”s terminate in an inhibitory mechanism (probably ganglionic in nature) in psychical centres, as when the rec aati f rl seated in the heart itself, and that the urari, while in large doses it may psy » a 2 recollection of an odour causes | paralyse the terminal fibres of the vagus, leaves this inhibitory mechanism nausea, or when a feeling of ennui is followed by a yawn. intact and capable of being thrown into activity. by a stimulus applied directly

(1) Some reflex movements are the result of inherited peculiar- | t° ge Fee ag hes been Bee ee cannot be arene aie : . . * about by stimulation either o e vacus fibres or of the sinus, or indced o ities of structure, as those made by a new-born child when it seizes any part of the heart. Hence it is inferred that atropin, unlike urari, paralyses

the breast. Other reflex movements are acquired during life. Such | thjs intrinsic inhibitory mechanism. After the application of muscarin or

are at first voluntary, but they become automatic by repetition. pilocarpin the heart stops beating, and remains in diastole in perfect stand- xin- The following are some of the more common examples of reflex movements. still. Its appearance is then exactly that of a heart inhibited by promt and \Cof Motions of the muscles in any part of the limbs or trunk under the influence | sting vagus stimulation. This effect is not hindered by ca the b gs of sensory impressions on the skin, such as tickling, pricking, &c.; shud- tion, however, of a small dose of atropin at once restores the tin m oe dering from cold, shuddering caused by grating noises, &c. ; contraction of facts are interpreted as meaning that muscarin (or Lagi Yes AC nm. the pupil under the influence of light on the retina ; winking, from irritation excites the inhibitory apparatus spoken of above, which atropin paralyses or of the sensory nerves of the conjunctiva; sneezing, from irritation of the | Places hors de combat” (Foster, Text-Book of Physiology, 4th ed., P- 186). Schneiderian membrane, or by a glaring light on the eye ; spasm of the glottis Thus physiologists are satisfied that, when the vagus 1s stimulated,

and coughing, from irritation of the larynx or trachea ; laughing, caused by 6 i f the intrinsic tickling the skin; the first respiration of the child at birth, from the im- currents of nerve-energy pass pe is Sieeses Sancta @ &

pression of cold upon the nerves of the skin, and especially those of the chest : ganglia of the heart and inhibit or restrain these, so that the heart respiratory movements in the adult, from the impression cansed by the afferent beats more slowly or is arrested altogether. But the centres in the nerves of the lungs (sympathetic or vagus), by the presence of carbonic acid | heart may also be stimulated. After division of both vagi in a

in the air cells and passages, or in those of the general system, —also, occasional 4G , j a modifications of tne respiratory movements from impressions of cold, &e., on mammal, =)? rabbit, the heart’s beat may be quiekened or acceler

the surface of the body ; sucking in infancy ; deglutition or swallowing, with ated by stimulation of the cervical spinal cord. Fibres having this all the complicated movements then occurring in the tongue, fauces, larynx, | power of accelerating the action of the heart have been traced from

Nerves and blood- vessels.

Nerves and glands.

the cervical spinal cord through the last cervical and first thoracic ganglia of the sympathetic. Stimulation of these aecelerator nerves causes a quickening of the heart's beat, in which, however, what is gained in rate is lost in force" (Foster). They are referred to here as showing another kind of nervous action, quite different from inhibition. Thus any nerve-centre concerned in reflex movements may have, by impulses reaching it from the periphery, its action inhibited or restrained or accelerated. :

Influence of Nerves on Blood-Vessels.—If the sympathetic nerve be divided in the neck, there is a dilatation of the vessels and an increase of temperature on the same side; but irritation by weak induction-currents of the cephalic end will cause the vessels to contract and the temperature to fall. In the sympathetic, there- fore, there are nerve-fibres which influence the contractile coats of the blood-vessels. These fibres, called "'vaso-motor," originate from a vaso-motor centre in the medulla oblongata between the point of the calamus scriptorius and the lower border of the corpora quadrigemina, in the floor of the fourth ventricle. From this chief vaso-motor centre nervous influences emanate which tend to keep the smaller vessels in a more or less contracted condition. if it be injured, paralysed, or destroyed there is at once great dilatation of the vessels, more especially those in the abdominal cavity, and the blood collects in these dilated vessels. This of course dimi- nishes the arterial pressure in the larger vessels, Consequently, by observations on blood-pressure, it has been found possible to study the conditions of vaso-motor action. By connecting a kymo- graph (a recording manometer) with a large vessel, say the carotid, observing for a time the mean blood-pressure, and afterwards injuring the supposed vaso-motor centre, Ludwig and his pupil Owsjannikoff at once observed an enormous fall of blood-pressure, to be explained by the paralysis of the smaller and a consequent oe of the larger vessels.

The vaso-motor centre may be influenced—that is, inhibited, or possibly strengthened—by impulses coming from the periphery. Such impulses may

be sent to the centre along any sensory nerve, but in 1866 Cyon and Ludwig discovered a nerve which apparently exercises this function to a remarkable extent. In the rabbit it originates by two roots from the superior laryn- geal and from the vagus. Stimulation of the distal end of this nerve pro- duces no effect, but stimulation of the cephalic end causes at once a great fall of blood-pressure in the arterial system and a diminution in the frequency of the pulse. As this nerve, therefore, inhibits, restrains, or depresses the activity of the vaso-motor ceutre it has received the name of the "' depressor nerve of Cyonand Ludwig." It appears to influence chiefly the vaso-motor arrangeinents of the abdomen and lower extremities. Thus, after section of the splanchnics, which control the vessels of the abdominal viscera, it is said that excitation of the depressor does not produce nearly the same diminution of pressure in the carotid vessels. By the influence of the depressor a balance is kept up between the central and the peripheric circulations. Imagine the heart to be pumping blood through the vessels. If from some cause the smaller vessels become constricted so as to offer greater resistance to the passage of the blood, the arterial pressure in the larger vessels is increased, and the heart has more work to do to overconie this resistance. When the resistance reached a certain amount the heart would be in danger of exhaustion in endeavouring to over- come it. But by the depressor this danger is removed, as an influence may pass from the heart along the fibres of the depressor to the vaso-motor centre, the effect of which is to inhibit the activity of this centre, and thus allow the smaller vessels to dilate. When this occurs, either locally, as in the abdominal region, or generally, the result is a depletion of the larger vessels, a consequent fall of pressure in them, and therefore less resistance to the efforts of the heart. Thus it would appear that in the heart itself there is an arrangement by which, to a certain extent, it governs its own work, and there is an adjust-

ment between the activity of the heart and distribution of blood throughout the body (see fig. 11).

he vaso-motor nerves causing contraction of vessels have been called '' vaso-constrictors" ; but there are other nerve-fibres possess- ing the property of causing a dilatation instead of a contraction. These have been called ''vaso-dilators." Excitation of the chorda- tympani nerve, for

example, causes the vessels of the sub-maxillary gland to dilate (see vol. xvii. p. 672). Erection, as it occurs in the penis, has long been known to depend on dilatation of vessels and consequent increased afflux of blood. Stimulation of the nerves of the sacral plexus may cause erection. But how do such nerve- fibres act? It cannot be that they directly cause relaxation of the muscular fibres in the walls of the vessels. These contain layers of involuntary muscular fibres in the transverse and longitudinal directions, and it is difficult to understand how any contraction of fibres in either of these directions could possibly cause dilatation of the vessel. Probably the effect is brought about by the action of some kind of inhibitory mechanism. Ganglia abound in the walls of the vessels. From these, fibres pass to and from the muscular elements of the vessel. Such ganglia or local reflex centres may be supposed to be under the influence of two sets of nerve-fibres: (1) accelerating or strengthening, corresponding to the accelerating fibres that influence the heart ; and (2) inhibitory like the fibres of the vagus distributed to the heart, having the power of restraining the action of the local ganglia, According to this view, the fibres in the chorda which cause dilatation of the vessels of the sub-maxillary gland on stimulation are vaso-inhibitory nerves.

Influence of Nerves on Glands.—This has already been described under N UTRITION (vol. xvii. p. 672), but the facts may be here briefly summarized.

the gland, whilst the third set directly affects the activity of the secreting cells. According to Heidenhain, in addition to the vascu- lar nerves supplying a gland there are secretory and trophic nerves, ‘Stimulation of secretory fibres leads to an increased flow of water, stiinulation of the trophic to an increased secretion of specific sub- stances and to an increased production of protoplasm” (Gamgee). The vaso-constrictor fibres of a gland are derived from the sympa- thetic, and the vaso-dilator and secretory from the cerebro-spinal system.

core of Nerve-Centres.— Although these are usually Ney, classified anatomically, according to the organ in which they are cent situated, they may also be arranged according to their functions, as clagy, follows :—(1) receptive centres, to which influences arrive which fied, may excite

sensations (in grey matter of brain), or some kind of activity not associated with consciousness (reflex centres of the cord and of the brain) ; (2) psychical centres, connected with sensa- tion in the sense of conscious perception, emotion, volition, and intellectual acts (in the grey matter of the brain) ; (3) discharging centres, whence emanate influences which, according to structures

at the other ends of the nerves connected with them, may cause movements, secretions, or changes in the calibre of vessels (in brain and spinal cord) ; (4) inAibitory centres, which inhibit, restrain, or arrest the actions of other centres.

B.— Special Physiology of Central Organs.

General Physiological Anatomy.—The central organs of the nervous system consist of ganglia or of what is called a “cerebro- spinal axis.” The anatomy of the latter is described under ANA- Tomy, and some account of the gangliated cords in invertebrates and of the rudimentary nervous systems of the lower forms of vertebrates will be found under the articles Crustacra, INsxcrts, AMpHIBIA, Brrps, IcHTHyouocy, &c. But, as one of the most effective ways of obtaining an intelligent conception of the com- plicated nervous system of man and of the higher animals is to trace its various forms in the scale of animal existence, and to observe the close correspondence between complexity of structure and complexity of function, a short introductory review of its comparative anatomy, from the physiological side, will here be given. In the first place, we find that the different forms of nervous systems may be divided into (a) those consisting of ganglia or chains of ganglia, as found throughout the invertebrates, and (6) those having a great axis of nervous matter forming a brain and spinal cord, the cerebro-spinal axis, as seen in vertebrates.

Comparative View of Nervous System of Invertebrates.—In the New simplest forms of animals the protoplasmic cell is the scat of syst sensation and of motion; but as the contractile or muscularofin) layers become more marked sensation is relegated to the cells of tebl the ectoderm, or outer layer of the body. As portions of this sensory layer become of higher value to the organism, their protec- tion is accomplished by some of the sensory cells sinking into the body of the organism so as to be covered by less

important structures. The portions, originally of the surface, thus differen- tiated and protected become ganglia, and processes pass from them on the one hand to cells in the periphery, so that they may still be influenced by external energies, and on the other to the contractile parts of the organism by which movements are accomplished. Still higher in the scale of life, the ganglia are connected by inter- nuncial fibres, and the plan of the primitive nervous system bears a relation to the general type of structure of the animal. Thus in radiate animals the gangliated cords show a radiated arrangement, and when the animal form is bilateral and symmetrical the nervous arrangements are on the same type. It is also to be noted that the ganglion specially connected with the rudimentary organs of sense attains a size and importance proportionate to the development of the sense-organs, The nerves of the sensc-organs are chicfly con- nected with the supra-cesophageal ganglion, which thus may be looked on as a rudimentary brain, When the body of the animal becomes more complicated by the development of similar segments (or metameres), we find that by a reduplication, as it were, of the subcesophageal ganglion a ventral chain of ganglia is formed, a pair of ganglia for each segment, the individual ganglia being connected by longitudinal commissures. Such an arrangement is seen in the ringed worms and in arthropods, The next step is a fusion of ganglia into masses, according to the size and importance of the part of the body to be innervated (see vol. vi. p. 636, figs. 7 and 9).

No trace of a nervous system can be detected in Protozoa. The Scyphomedu- soid forms of Hydrozoa show nerve-fibres and ganglion-cells (Schafer) in the sub-umbrella and around the tentaculo-cysts (see vol. xii. p. 552, fig. 15), and in the Iiydromedusoid forms the nerve-ganglion cells form a ring round the margin of the disk. In some of the Actinozoa (anemones, &c.) fusiforni gan- euOme cells united by nerve-fibres are said to exist (P. M. Duncan). In all

he worms (Vermes) the most important central organs of the nervous system are placed in the anterior part of the body near the beginning of the alimentary a Tf they have a distinct head the nervous organ is in it and supplies

Hee les to the Sense-organs. Froin thence nerve-trunks radiate to the peri-
phery of the body, often in the form of two longitudinal trunks on the
ventral surface. Frequently there is a nervous ring round the esophagus.
Nerve- ens have been found in all the Platyhelminthes, Rotatoria, and
Bryozoa. The emathelminthes show a further advance. The central organ is
placed on the esophagus, surrounding it as a ring, from which nerves radiate
forwards aud

SYSTEM. |

backwards. Often six strands of nerve run forwards, whilst a dorsal and a _
ventral trunk pass backwards. The size of these trunks depends on the
length _ of the body. The cephalic ganglion is bilateral and is largely
developed. In | the Hirudinia and Annelida the cerebral ganglia are
connected by commissures with a ventral cord, which, in turn, shows
individual ganglia connected by commissures. Each ganglion cousists of
two equal portions with a transverse commissure, and in the higher forms
they are so close as to form almost a single cord. It is also evident that the
cerebral ganglia are composed of several ganglia fused together, and
acquire functional importance as the sense-organs are more highly
developed. In the Echinodermata the nervous system consists of a number
of trunks placed ventrally and having a radial arrangement. Each of these
trunks corresponds to the ventral ganglionic chain of the Annulata. In
Asterida (star-fishes) each radial nerve consists of two bands thickened in
the middle, and at the end there isa swelling connected with an optical
appa- ratus placed there. In the Echinus (sea-urchin) the nervous ring lies
above the floor of the oral cavity, between the oesophagus and the lips of
the ossicles of the masticatory apparatus. From this ring lateral branches
issue which accom- pany the branches of the ambulacral vessels. In
Holothwroida (sea-cucumbers) the nervous ring lies in front and near the
mouth, and is thicker than the five nerves which it gives off, thus differing
from the Asteroida and Echinoida. The uervous system of the Arthropoda
resembles that of the Annelida, There is a large ganglion above the
cesophagus, the cerebral ganglion, united to a ventral ganglion by two
commissures so as to form a nervous ring. From the ventral ganglion a
series of ganglia united by commissures extends along the ventral surface of
the body. The increased size of the cerebrum is the most striking

characteristic, and no doubt bears a relation to the higher degree of development of the sense-organs, more especially those of sight. In some Crustacea the optic nerves arise from distinct lobes. As pointed out by Gegen- bauer, when the optic organs are reduced or lost the cerebrum becomes so small as to be represented by nothing but a commissure. In the individuals having a large portion of the body composed of similar metameres the ganglia are regular in size, appearing in pairs. On the other hand, in the Thoracostraca (crabs, &c.) the anterior ganglionic masses are fused into larger masses So as to correspond to the concrescence of the anterior metameres into a cephalo-thorax. In the abdominal portion of the body, where the metameres are smnall, distinct, and more or less regular, the ganglia are also distinct and in pairs. In the Protracheata (Peripatus) the nervous system is simpler, and consists of the cesophageal collar with a double ventral cord having no ganglia or swellings on it, although nerve-cells are distributed through it. In the Myriapoda there isa well-inarked ventral cord, with ganglia corresponding to the metameres. In the Arachnida the ventral ganglia are often reduced in number and fused, They are characterized by the close connexion between the cerebral ganglia and the ventral cord, owing to the extreme shortness of the commissures (Gegenbaucr). In the Scorpions the nervous system is richly segmented, and remarkable for the large size of the ganglion giving off the pedal nerves. The Spiders have a single large ganglion in the cephalo-thorax, no doubt consisting of several ganglia. Inthe Acarina(mites) the cerebral ganglion is extremely small, and the other ganglia are fused so as to form one single mass, giving off nerves all round, These minute animals show a remarkable degree of concentration of the nervous system. In Insecta (see fig. 12) the ventral cord traverses the whole length of the body, the ganglia being at equal distances, and all united by commissures. This condition is well seen in the larval condition, and is like the permanent state of the Myriapoda. When the insect passes into the adult condition changes occur, con- sisting essentially of tle fusion of * ganglia and a shortening of the com- inissures. The cerebral ganglion is : composed primitively of three pairs, Aaah and in most cases does not unite Fic, 12.—Typical forms of nervous system with the rest of the ventral cord. in invertebrates. A, in Serpwla,a marine It shows hemispheres and a com- annelid; a, cephalic ganglion. B, ina plicated structure. The first gan- crab; a, cephalic ganglion; 6, ganglia glion of the ventral cord supplies fused under cephalo-thorax. C, in a the organs of the

mouth ; the three white ant (Termes); a, cephalic ganglion. succeeding send nerves to the ap- (Gegenbauer.) pendages, feet, and wings; the re-

naining ganglia are small, except the last, which supplies the generative organs. There is great variety among the Insecta in the number of ganglia in the ventral cord, but coalescence always indicates a higher type of structure. The nervous system of the Brachiopoda is formed of masses of ganglia near the oesophagus. From these nerve-fibres pass to various parts of the body. There is an cesophageal ring, but the superior ganglion is very small, owing to the absence of higher sensory organs. In Mollusca (see vol. xvi. p. 635, fig. 1) the nervous system is divided into a superior ganglionic mass, which lics above the com- mencement of the esophagus—the supra-cesophageal or cerebral ganglia—and a ventral mass which is connected with the other by commissures, and forms the inferior or pedal ganglia. They are both paired. The cerebral ganglion is connected with the sense-organs. Both the cerebral and the pedal ganglionic masses really consist of ganglia fused together. This is well shown in some of the lower forms, in which the pedal ganglia are divided, and form an arrange- ment like the ventral cord of the Annulata. The remarkable feature in the nervous system of Mollusca is the great development of the visceral ganglia and nerves supplying the heart, branchial apparatus, and generative organs (see vol, xvi. p. 643, figs. 17,18; p. 644, figs. 20, 21, 22; p. 647, figs. 34, 35; p. 648, fig. 36), In the Lamellibranchia the cerebral ganglia are very small, owing to the absence of a head and its sensc-organs. In some forms they are placed so much to the side as to be united by a long commissure. There are also two pedal ganglia, of a size proportional to the degree of development of the foot. The visceral ganglionic mass is often the largest. It lies behind the posterior adductor muscle, and is united by long commissures to the cerebral ganglion (vol. xvi. p. 693, fig. 144). The nervous system of the Gastropoda is remark- able for the large size of the cerebral ganglia. In the Pteropoda the cerebral ganglia either retain their lateral position or approach the pedal ganglia, with which the visceral ganglia are also fused. The three ganglionic masses, cerebral, pedal, and visceral, are also represented in the Cephalopoda, but they are more approximated by the shortening of the commissures. The ganglionic masses consequently are of great size, and they are more differentiated than any other ganglia in invertebrates. 1t is possible to distinguish an outer grey layer. formed of ganglionic cells,

surrounding a white layer, composed of fibres (vol. xvi. p. 679, figs. 113, 114, 115). Lastly, in Tunicata the nervous system is dorsal, instead of ventral, as in other invertebrates. It is developed from the ectoderm, or outermost layer of the embryo, by an infolding so as to form at first a groove and afterwards a tube. In the Ascidian larve this nervous tube reaches throughout the length of the tail, and we have thus the remarkable condition of a dorsal-median nerve-cord, analogous to the cerebro-spinal system of vertebrates. Further, embryologists are of opinion that this rudimentary nervous system is the true central organ, although the greater portion of it

disappears by the atrophy of the tail in the passage from the larval to the adult state. (Gegenbauer.)

Comparative View of Nervous System of Vertebrates.—To under- Nervous stand the structure of the complicated eentra]l nervous system of system of vertebrates, and to appreciate the physiological importance of its verte- various parts, it is necessary to trace its development in the embryo brates.

and to note the various forms it presents from the lowest to the highest vertebrates. A consideration of the embryological and morphological aspects of the subject elears up many difficult problems which a study of the human nervous system, by far the most complicated physiological system in the body, fails to do, and in particular it gives an intelligent conception of its architecture, as scen both in simple and complex forms. The cerebro-spinal axis begins in the embryo as a tube of nervous matter produced by an infolding of the epiblast, or outermost embryonic layer. The tube widens at its anterior end, and, by constrictions in its wall, three primary cerebral vesicles are formed, which afterwards become the anterior, middle, and posterior parts of the brain. In the fully- developed condition the cavity of the tube remains as the central canal of the spinal cord and the ventricles of the brain, whilst the various parts of the brain and cord are

formed by thickenings in its walls. The three cerebral vesicles have been called the fore- brain, the mid-brain, and the hind-brain. A protrusion from the anterior cerebral vesicle, at first single, but afterwards divided by a median cleft, becomes the rudiment of the eerebral hemispheres (prosen- cephala), the eavity remain- ing in the adult condition as the lateral ventricle on each side. From each cerebral vesicle another hollow process protrudes which constitutes the olfactory lobe .(rhinen- cephalon). i remains of the cavity of the first vesicle ; : becomes “the third ventricle _ = wl ‘. tear 7 IG. »— Outhne om above of emoryo opetig rece Ie be chick in first half of the second day. ”

: : to 2, three primary encephalic vesicles proseneephala a thickening enclosed in front and at the sides by is formed which becomes

the cephalic fold; 8, hinder extremity of the corpora striata, two large medullary canal dilated into a rhomboid bodies in the floor of the

space in which is the primitive trace ; 4, : 4, seven proto-vertebral somites. (Quain’s lateral ventricles of the adult Anatomy.) brain, whilst the roof is modi- we kee athe ne —_ Ne or s tS] 5 fied into the substance of the medullary canal is now closed in; ¢, an- cerebral hemispheres. Im- terior encephalic vesicle; 0, primitive mediately behind the corpora

optic vesicle; au, primitive auditory striata, and in the floor of vesicle, opposite third encephalic vesicle; the thalamencephalon, two

am, cephalic fold of amnion ; ov, vitelline similar thickenings occur

veins entering heart posteriorly ; pv, proto-vertebral somites. (Quain’s Ana-

which become the optie tha- 1™v-) lami, a thin layer between the two constituting the tania semi- etreularis, and the Y-shaped canal passing from the eavity be- tween the thalami to the cavities in the cerebral hemispheres (lateral ventricles) is the foramen of Monro. The floor of the third ventricle is produced into a conical process, the infwndt- bulum, at the blind end of which is the pituitary body, or hypo- physis cerebri. The roof of this ventricle is very thin, and in con- nexion with it is developed the pineal gland, or epiphysis cerebri. Transverse fibres pass from the one corpus

striatum to the others, constituting the white commissure, whilst the two optic thalami are connected by two grey commissures. In mammals the two cerebral hemispheres are connected by a large and important set of commissural fibres, forming the corpus callosum. In addition there are certain sets of longitudinal eommissural fibres. Thus two scts of fibres arise from the floor of the third ventricle, areh upwards, and form the anterior pillars of the fornix. These are eontinued over the roof of the third ventricle and run backwards, constituting the body of the fornix. Behind this the bands diverge so as to form the posterior pillars of the fornix. In the higher vertebrates the upper lip of the foramen of Monro thickens, and becomes converted into a bundle of longitudinal fibres, which is continuous anteriorly with the anterior pillars of the fornix. These are eontinued back between the inner boundary of the cerebral hemisphere and the margin of the corpora striata and optic thalami, and project into the lateral ventricle, forming the hippocampus major. Asin highly- formed brains the corpus callosum passes across considerably above the level of the fornix, a portion of the inner wall of the hemisphere on each side and a space between are intercepted. The two inner walls constitute the septum lueidwm, and the space the cavity of

the fifth ventricle. By a thickening of the floor of the middle cerebral vesicle (mesencephalon) two large bundles of longitudinal fibres, the erura cerebri, are formed, whilst its roof is modified into the optic lobes, corpora bigemina or corpora quadrigemina. The cavity, reduced to a mere tube, is the der a tertio ad quartum ven- trieulum, or the aqueduet of Sylvius. The third cerebral vesicle, myleneephalon, undergoes less modification than the others. The upper wall is exceedingly thin before the cerebellum so as to form a lamina, the valve of Viewssens, whilst the part behind is covered only by membrane, and opens into the posterior subarachnoid space. The cerebellum makes its appearance as a thin’ medullary lamina, forming an arch behind the corpora quadrigemina across the wide primitive medullary tube. The portion forming cerebellum, pons Varolii, and the anterior part of the fourth ventricle is termed the epencephalon, whilst the remaining portion, forming the medulla oblongata and fourth ventricle, is the metencephalon. These facts are briefly summarized as follows (Quain, vol.

ii. p. 828). Cerebral hemispheres, corpora striata, corpus callosum, fornix, lateral ventricles, olfactory bulb

1, Anterior cerebral (rhinencephalon). in a vesicle, C Thalamenceph- ° { Optic thalami, pineal gland, pitui-

a. Prosencephalon —Fore-brain.

alon — Inter- tary body, third ventricle, optic brain. nerve (primarily).

5 Corpora quadrigemina, crura cere- 2. Middle cerebral c. Mesencephalon dl . 5 Haiein. { =_Mid-beain, bri, aqueduct of Sylvius, optic

nerve (secondarily). : d. Epencephalon { Cerebellum, pons Varolii, anterior —Hind-brain, part of the fourth ventricle. e. Metencephalon { Medulla oblongata, fourth ven- —After-brain. { tricle, auditory nerve.

8. Posterior primary vesicle.

The general architecture of the brain considered in this way will be understood by the diagram in fig. 15, whilst details as to the

Pu wb av

Fig. 15.—Diagrammatic longitudinal and vertical section of a vertebrate brain. The lamina terminalis is represented by the strong black line between 1M and 8. Mb, mid-brain, what lies in front of this being the fore-brain, and what lies behind the hind-brain ; Olf, the olfactory lobes; Hmp, the hemispheres ; ThE, the thalamencephalon ; Pn, the pineal gland; Py, the pituitary body ; FM, the foramen of Monro ; CS, the corpus striatum; Th, the optic thalamus ; CQ, the corpora quadrigemina; CC, the crura cerebri; Cb, the cerebellum; PV, the pons Varolii; MO, the medulla oblongata ; I, olfactorii; II, optici; III, point of exit from the brain of the motores oculorum; IV, of the pathetici; V, of the abducentes; VI-XII, origins of the other cerebral nerves; 1, olfactory ventricle; 2, lateral ventricle; 8, third ventricle; 4, fourth ven- tricle. (Huxley.)

exact anatomy of the human brain will be found under ANATOMY (vol. i. p. 869 sq.).

The complex structure of the brain in the higher animals arises to a large extent from the great development of the cerebral hemi- spheres. At a very early period these grow forward and project more and more beyond the region of the first primary vesicle, A which, as has been noticed, never ad-

vances farther forward than the pituitary fossa (lamina terminalis); in expanding upwards they take the place previously occupied by the mid-brain, and fill the most peeos part of the head ; and by a downward and lateral enlargement —

Fic. 16.—Surface of foetal brain at six months (from R. Wagner). This figure is intended to show the commencement of formation of the principal fissures

and convolutions. A, from above ; B, from left side, F, frontal lobe; P,

parietal; 0, occipital; 7, temporal ; a, a, a, slight appearance of several — Ca tetone | 5 Beivien fissure ; 3’, its ectlindae “aiiehon : within C entral lobe or convolutions of island of Reil; fiss : 9, parieto-occipital fissure. (Quain.) i aia cia

they form the temporal lobes. Thus frontal, parietal, and tem- poral lobes come to be distinguishable, and somewhat later, by a farther increase posteriorly, the hindmost lobes constitute the

occipital lobes, and the cerebrum at last covers completely all the lower parts of the brain. The hemispheres, therefore, which are small in the early embryo of all animals, and in adult fishes perma- nently, attain so large a size in man and in the higher animals as to conceal all the other parts. Whilst this general development is going on the layer of grey matter on the surface of the hemispheres increases to such an extent as to throw the

surface into folds or con- volutions. The upper surface of the hemispheres is at first smooth (see fig. 16). The first appearance of division into lobes is that of a blunt notch between the frontal and temporal parts below, in what afterwards becomes the Sylvian fissure. In the fourth and fifth months there appear the vertical fissure, separating the parietal and occipital lobes, and the transverse fissure, called the fissure of Rolando, which divides the frontal and parietal lobes superiorly, and which is peculiarly characteristic of the cerebral type of man and of the apes (Allen Thomson). Then the convolutions appear from the formation of secondary grooves or sulci, for even at birth they are not fully perfected; and by the deepening of the grooves and the formation of subordinate ones the process goes on during the first years of infancy. For the convolutions see vol. i. p. 873; also PHRENOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 847.

The evolution of the brain throughout the animal kingdom shows Deve a graduated series of increasing complication proceeding out of the ment same fundamental type; so that the forms of brain found perma- bnini nently in fishes, amphibians, reptiles, birds, and in the lower mam- anim mals are repetitions of those shown in the stages of the embryonic seria,

development of the brain of one of the higher animals.

In the whole class of fishes the brain retains throughout life more or less of the elementary form,—that is, it consists of a series of enlargements, single or in pairs (see fig. 17, C). The simplest of all forms is in the lancclet (Branchio-

2

stoma), in which there is ,)| no distinction between l brain and cord, there being 5 4

no anterior enlargement to form an encephalon. In the Cyelostomata, as the lampreys, the form is nearer that of the embryo when the five fundamental parts of the brain can be distinguished. At this stage the cerebrum and cerebellum are extremely sinall, whilst the ganglia chiefly developed are those connected with the organs of sense, more especially those of vision. In the sharks aud skates (Selachit, or cartilaginous fishes) the cerebral

portion is consi- derably larger. In osseous fishes (Teleostei) the thalamencephalon is so fused with the mesencephalon as to make the homology of the parts difficult to trace, but both cerebellum and cerebrum are still small relatively to the rest of the brain. The most important part of the brain of a fish is the part behind the mesencephalon, as from it all the cerebral nerves originate. Thus not only are the optic lobes relatively important as being the centres of vision, but the medulla oblongata is usually very large. In many sharks it forms the largest part of the brain (Gegenbauer). The spinal lobes of the electric fishes are differentiations of this portion of the encephalon,

In the Amphibia the hemispheres are larger, and are divided into two parts (see fig. 17, B). In the Urodela (siren, proteus, triton, newt) the mesencephalon remains small, and consists of one lobe, but in the Anwra (frogs, toads, &c.) there is an advance in this part, it being divided into two. In reptiles there is still an advance in the size of the thalamencephalon and mesencephalon, and the pros: encephalon is so large as to pass backwards and overlap the thalam- encephalon, The cerebellum (metencephalon) is still small, especially so in Ophidit (serpents) and Saurii (lizards), but in the Chelonti (tortoises, &c.) and in Crocodilini (crocodiles, alligators) it is larger. In the crocodile there is a transverse grooving of the cerebellum, giving rise to foliation or laminar division, which is carried much farther in birds and mammals, indicating a greater power of co-ordination or regulation of movement.

In birds (fig. 18) the vesicles of the mid-brain are partially hidden by development of the cerebral hemispheres. These are connected by a fine anterior commissure, and they contain a large amount of ganglionic matter bulging into the primitive cavity or ventricles, which are of very small size. The middle portion of the cerebellum shows a distinctly laminated structure and a differentiation into white and grey matter. But there is no pons Varolii, nor corpus In the floor of the lateral

Fia. 17.—Typical forms of brains of lower vertebrates. A. Brain of tortoise (Testudo). 1, olfactory; 2, cerebral lobes; 8, corpora striata; 4, optic lobes; 5, medulla. Part of the surface of the cerebral lobes has been removed to show the cavities in the interior, termed ‘‘the ventricles.” Immediately be- hind 4,

the optic lobes, is the imperfectly- developed cerebellum. B. Brain of common frog (Rana). a, olfactory; b, cerebral lobes covering corpora striata; c, corpora quadri- gemina, or optic lobes; d, cerebellum (rudi- mentary); s, back of medulla, showing fossa. C. Brain of gurnard (T'rigla). 1, olfactory; 2, cerebral lobes; 8, optic lobes; 4, cerebellum.

callosum, nor fornix, nor hippocampus.

SYSTEM. |

ventricles may be seen a ganglionic mass corresponding to corpus striatum and optic thalanms. The optic lobes are relatively large and show considerable differen- tiation of structure.

Mammals, even the lower orders, not only show a general enlargement of the cerebral hemispheres, but we find a commissure, the corpus cal- losum, uniting them. This en oa Se oop EN

issure i i y. 18.—Typical brain of bird. A,

pe petal — yew Pan pre B, lateral view ofa bisected : : brain, A.—a, olfactory; 8, cerebral

part of the hemispheres in jopes; c, optic or bigeminal lobes; 4,

Monotremata(Ornithorhynchus, cerebellum i é, apelie-cepnnn ae

seuiess) ont. once be ¢, olfactory ¢ a, optic nerves ; e,

(kangaroos, &c.), and in some jy) eqntia;'f, spinal cord.

of the Zdentata (ant-eaters,

sloths, &e.), but it gradually extends farther and farther back as

we ascend to the higher orders. The chief changes thus occur 1n

the prosencephalon. In the lower orders of mammals the hemi-

(iL) Sm ul oll Capeey ATI) ag Hubs

spheres are comparatively small and simple, and do not present any division into convolutions, and very little distinction even of

lobes. ing mid- brain, the higher Primates (monkeys, apes, and man). — general enlargement of the brain and of the cranial cavity. The development of a posterior lobe only takes place in the higher orders, and in these also the enlargement of the frontal lobes brings the front of the cerebrum more and more over the nasal eavities, causing a development of forehead. This also explains how the olfactory bulbs in more highly-formed brains are thrown below the frontal part of the hemispheres, instead of originating at their anterior borders. But the internal arrangements of the brain also become more complicated. The fornix, already described, establishes, by its longitudinal commissural fibres, a connexion between the anterior and posterior lobes of the cerebrum. In the Monotremata and Marsupialia the mid-brain retains a bifid form, constituting the optic lobes, or corpora bigemina, but in all higher animals each is divided into two by a transverse groove, forming the corpora quadrigemina, of which the anterior pair is the largest. As we rend also, we find the surface of the brain becoming more and more convoluted (see figs. 19 and 20). This is the general fact ; but whilst the convolutions are most numerous and deepest in the highest orders there is no regular gradation, as in each group there are very great variations in the degree of convolution (Allen Thom- son), Thus in the AMonotremata the Echidna has a more convoluted eerebrum than the Ornithorhynchus, whilst in the Primates the brains of the marmosets show a compara- tively smooth non-convoluted sur- face, in striking contrast to the rich convolutions seen on the brains of the higher monkeys and of the apes. It is important to note that the cerebellum also becomes more and more complicated as we ascend from the lower to the higher groups. At first merely a lamina or band, as secn in fishes and amphibia, it is a centrally differentiated body in crocodiles. In birds there is an indication of a division into three portions, # ecntral and two lateral, whilst the central is by far the larger, the two lateral being feebly developed. In Monotremata the central portion is larger than the lateral, but, whilst it is larger in Marsupialia, Edentata, and Cheiroptera (bats, &c.), it is elear that the lateral as are increasing in size so as to make the disproportion ess. But in Carnivora

(felines, hyena, otter, bear, &c.) and in Ungulata (sheep, ox, camel, rhinoceros, horse) the lateral lobes, or hemispheres, of the cerebellum develop to a much greater size ; and in most of the Primates they are much larger than the median portion, which is now called the worm or ‘“‘vermiform pro- cess.” As regards the development of the spinal cord continuous with the medulla oblongata, it need only be said that it does not show any marked peculiarities of structure in different animals. The grey matter from which nerve-fibres originate and in which they end is found in the centre of the cord, and it is most abundant in the regions associated with the development of limbs. The white matter is external, and, in the cords of the higher animals, ean be differentiated by fissures into columns, the special functions of which will be hereafter considered. The size of the cord is influenced by the masses of nerves given off from it, so that it attains its greatest thickness and development in the four higher

The cerebral hemispheres gradually grow backwards, cover- cerebellum, and medulla oblongata, as we find in

Fig. 19. Fig. 20.

Fic. 19.—Rabbit’s brain. 1, olfac- tory; 2, surface of cerebral hemi- sphere; 8, lateral ventricle, on the floor of which is seen the corpus striatum ; 4, cerebellum.

Fic. 20.—Cat’s brain, showing con- voluted surface, Contrast the form of the cerebellum in the cat and the rabbit. In the cat the central lobe is small, whilst the lateral lobes are largely developed.

PH Y38 LO L.0 G Y

There is also a

divisions of the vertebrates possessing limbs. Thus, too, are formed cervical, dorsal, and lumbar enlargements, contrasting with the more uniform and ribbon-like form of the cord in fishes, although even in these

there are special enlargements corresponding to the points of exit of important spinal nerves.

Size and Weight of Brain.—The gradual increase in the size of the brain, as Size and compared with that of the body, which is observed as we rise in the animal weight of scale, has some intimate proportional relation to a corresponding increase of, ae the nervous and mental endowments. Information as to the size of the brain Pee may be obtained by direct measurement of dimensions and weight; but as this is often difficult recourse may be had to the measurement of the capacity of the cranium, which contains, however, not only the brain but its accessories, such as membranes and blood-vessels. Details will be found in vol. i. p. 879. After considering the measurements of several thousand skulls made by differ- ent observers, the late Dr Allen Thomson arrived at the conclusion that the cranial capacity is on the whole greater among the highly-civilized than among the savage races, and that there is even a very manifest difference to be found between persons of higher mental cultivation and acknowledged ability and those of the uneducated class and of inferior intellectual powers ; and he states further that the amount of this difference may be from 5 to 7} per cent. in persons of the same race, and about double that range in those of different races. Thus, the average adult brain of men in Britain being taken at 3 Ib, or, more precisely, at 494 oz, avoir. (women, about 44 to 444 0z.), at an average specific gravity of 1040, would give a bulk of 82°5 cubic inches of brain-sub- stance; 10 per cent. being deducted for loss by membranes, fluid, &c., the cranial capacity will be about 90 inches. Conversely, the weight of the brain may be calculated from the known cranial capacity. If, therefore, the brain of the uneducated class falls 2°5 oz. below the average, whilst that of the more culti- vated persons rises to the same amount above it, or to 52} oz., we may regard these brain-sizes as corresponding with brain-bulks and cranial capacities of 78 and 87 cubic inches, and of 88 and 97 cubic inches respectively. The average brain-weight of an Australian aboriginal man is about 42 0z., corresponding to a brain-bulk of about 70 cubic inches, and a cranial capacity of about 78 cubic inches. There are, however, great variations in all races. Thus the prain of Cuvier, the great naturalist, weighed 65 0z. avoir., corresponding to a brain- bulk of 108 cubic inches and a cranial capacity of 118 cubic inches ; whilst, on the other hand, in Europeans the brain-weight has fallen as low

as 82 oz., or a brain-bulk of 53 cubic inches and a cranial capacity of 63 cubic inches. The brains of the anthropoid apes—gorilla, chimpanzee, and orang—are all inferior to man in their dimensions. In the gorilla the brain does not attain more than a third of the weight of the average human brain, and in the chimpanzee and orang it does not reach a fourth, so that the ratio of brain-weight to body- weight in these animals may be as 1 to 100, whilst in man it ranges from 1 to 40 to 1 to 50. It is remarkable that in general among the largest animals of any group the brain does not reach a size proportionate to the greater magni- tude of the other organs or of the whole body, so that in the smaller members of the same order a considerably greater proportional size of the brain is observed. Thus in the small marmosets the proportion of the brain-weight to

the body-weight may be 1 to 20, or more than double the proportion in man.

Similar facts are brought out in comparing the brains of cetaceans, pachyderms,

dogs, &¢., a8 shown in the following table.

Table of comparative sizes of Brain and Body.

Internal

Brain- ; Whole weight | Proportion | Examples. weight in oa of the body | of brain to

02, avOil.| Gub in. in Ib. body weight Average European inan | 48 (3 fb) | 85 to 88 140 1 to 46 Child at birth ….....| 12 22 7h 1 to 10 Chimpanzee …...5…] 10 19 50 1 to 80 MaviMOBOt 0.0 ceases } 4 6 oz. 1 to 18 Middle-sized dog …... 38 6 36 lto 164 BMAUAOR vo clnce coves 25 4 7 1to 45 PSP A Gioia. om oistsierererevss 144 (9 Ib) 300 6,720 (3 tons) | 1to 747 ee en ecaes 6 by) Ser 94 1to 250 Whplel! ccowsessees nes 96 (6 tb) 650 | 134,400 (60 tons)| 1 to 22,400 AL OROPRE [ere ,oktonelauskehons 16 30 60 1 to 60

Although the proportion of brain-weight to body-weight ina male child at birth is1to10, yet so rapidly does the brain continue to grow during the early

period of childhood that by the age of three years it has attained more than three- fourths of its full size, by the age of seven years it has reached the proportion of nine-tenths, and after this, only by slow and small gradations, it attains the full size between the ages of twenty and twenty-five years.2_ See PHRENOLOGY.

From this survey of the comparative development of the brain Com- the following general conclusions can be drawn. parative 1. The first and essential portion of the cerebro-spinal axis is develop- the portion forming the spinal cord and medulla oblongata, inas- ment of much as it is found throughout the whole range of vertebrate brain. existence, and is connected with the reflex or automatic movements on which locomotion, respiration, and the circulation more or less depend, and with the simple sense of contact, or touch, or press- ure. This portion is necessary to mere existence. 2. When higher senses are added, such as those of taste, smell, hearing, vision, portions of the anterior part of the cerebro-spinal axis are differentiated so as to form centres. The earliest and most important of these senses (next to touch) is vision, hence the high degree of development of the optie lobes even in the lowest forms ; to these are added the optic thalami, which may be regarded as the centres of tactile sensations involving appreciation of differences of touch as to softness, smoothness, hardness, &c., requiring in the periphery special terminal organs. Special centres for hearing, taste, and smell are not differentiated. It is remarkable that the organs relating to the sense of smell are most anterior and most closely related with the prosencephalon, indicating, apparently, that this sense is one of the earliest in appearance, and probably, along with vision and touch, one of the most necessary to existence. 1 The large cranial bulk in this instance is connected with the enormous size of the roots of the cranial nerves.

2 Many of the facts of this paragraph as to size and weight of brain are derived from an unpublished lecture by the late Dr Allen Thomson.

Spinal cord,

It is equally striking that the origin of the auditory nerves should be placed so far back as in the medulla oblongata and cerebellum, indicating the primitive nature of simple auditory impressions and their relation to co-ordination of movement. The sense of taste originates in nerves springing from the medulla, and in close con- nexion with those regulating the movements of the tongue and swallowing. q

3, When sensations of a simple character are elaborated into ideas and give rise to the physical changes in some way correlated to mental states, involving memory, emotions, volitions, and intel- lectual acts, a part of the cerebro-spinal axis is differentiated for these functions in proportion to the extent to which such mental phenomena are manifested by the animal. J udging from the facts obtained by comparing animal intelligences, so far as they can be appreciated by us, we have the right to infer that in proportion to the degree of development in size and complexity of structure so is the mental condition of the animal. Taking it broadly, there can be no question that the intelligence of a bird is higher than that of a reptile, amphibian, or fish, and that the intelligence of the higher mammals, such as one of the Primates, is superior to that of the lower, as one of the Insectivora (hedgehog), or of the Marsupialia (kangaroo); and along with the higher intelligence is the more complex brain. There are qualifications to this statement to be afterwards alluded to, but they arise from deficient knowledge and do not vitiate the main conclusion. In proportion, therefore, to the degree of development of the prosencephalon do we find the intelligence of the animal, and we may regard this portion as superadded to the cerebro-spinal axis as the organic mechanism for such mental operations.

4, There is also a correspondence between the degree of develop- ment of the cerebellum and the faculty of co-ordination of move-

ment. Movements of the members of the body may be of a very | cornua of grey simple character, or they may be very complex. They may be due | matter. Some of to the action only of flexor and extensor muscles, causing the limb | the fibres of the to move almost in the same plane, or they may be associated with | anterior roots

the action of adductor and abductor muscles, by which there may be many kinds of circular or rotatory movements. There isa great difference between the movements of a fish's fin, of a bird's wing, of a horse's fore-leg, and of the arm of a monkey ora man. In the first. three they are almost to-and-fro movements, unlike the deli- cate movements of flexion, extension, pronation, supination, and prehension seen in the latter. Delicacy of movement of the anterior limb reaches its highest condition in man. It may be put generally that simplicity of movement is associated with an imperfectly- developed cerebellum, whilst in animals having the power of com- plicated movements, involving especially the knowledge of how the limbs are acting at any moment, and of adjustiment of movement in special circumstances, the cerebellum is highly developed. From this point of view, the degree of development of the cerebellum is as characteristic of man as the degree of development of the cere- brum. That this is no accidental correspondence will be shown in treating of the functions of the cerebellum.

Having reviewed the physiological anatomy of the cerebro-spinal system, an account will now be given of the more special physio-

OLOGY

found along the whole of the anterior part of the anterior cornua, many of the processes of the nerve-cells being continuous with the nerve-fibres of the anterior roots of the spinal nerves. This column of nerve-cells has been called the ‘‘ motor ganglionic column,” or the ‘‘vesicular column of the anterior cornua.” (2) A group or column of nerve-cells at the inner or mesial angle of the base of the posterior cornu, in the middle region of the cord from the third lumbar to the seventh cervical nerve. This is termed the ‘‘ posterior vesicular column,” or ‘‘ Clarke's column,” after the late Mr Lockhart Clarke, who did much to unravel the intricate anatomy of the nerve-centres. The nerve-cell processes are continuous chiefly with nerve-fibres coming from the lateral column. This vesicular column is best developed where the column of the anterior cornu is least so. (8) The third column of nerve-cells is in the outer- most portion of the grey matter, midway between the anterior and posterior cornua. Development has shown that at an early period the anterior horns are distinctly differentiated from the posterior, and that the grey matter between them is the last to be formed,

The nuclei in the latter may be regarded, therefore, as accesso nuclei. It has also been observed by Flechsig and others that the white substance of the cord also makes its appearance first in the neighbourhood of the anterior and posterior roots. The cord ata very early period consists almost entirely of grey matter, and_the columns are superadded in the anterior first, the posterior last. The posterior can also be traced to the cortex of the cerebellum (Flechsig).

The anterior and posterior roots of the spinal nerves are attached along the sides pmf of the cord, op- eS posite to the corresponding

end in nerve-cells in the anterior cornu, Others pass through the grey matter and cross to the other side of the cord through theante- rior commissure, a layer of white matter at the bottom of the anterior median fissure.

umn and to the Fic. 22.—Diagram to illustrate the course taken by the posterior cornu. fibres of the nerve-roots on entering the spinal cord ~

logy of the centres composing it,—namely, spinal cord, medulla | The course of eat ca rou tibes Oa oblongata, pons Varolii, basal ganglia (including corpora striata | these fibres is _ into lateral cells of anterior cornu; 1’, 1’, others passing

optic thalami, and corpora quadrigemina), cerebellum, and hemi- spheres of the cerebrum.

Spinal Cord.—The spinal cord is described at vol. i. p. 865 sq., but it is necessary here to allude to a few points of physiological importance. The cord consists externally of white and internally of grey matter. The white matter, com- posed of nerve-fibres,

into mesial cells of same cornu; 2, 2, fibres passing to lateral column of same side without joining nerve-cells ; 8, 3, fibres passing towards posterior cornu ; 4, 4, fibres passing across anterior commissure, to enter nerve-cells in anterior cornu of other side ; p, funiculus of posterior. root; pl, fibres of its external or lateral division coming through and around gelatinous

substance of Rolando}; some of these (5) are represented as becoming longi- tudinal in the latter, others (6, 6) as passing towards anterior cornu, either directly or after joining cells in

shown in fig. 22. A portion of the fibres of the pos- terior roots ends in the grey mat- ter on the same side, but many cross to the grey

forms a series of. tation ~~< th posterior cornu, and others (7) as curving inwards to~~ strands or columns in it ae id e wards grey commissure ; pm, fibres of mesial or inner aach balk af tha oud opposl @ side. division, entering into posterior column and then be:

: al There is thus qa Coming longitudinal; p’m’, fibres from a posterior root The grey matter in decussation of which had joined the cord lower down and entered pos

the central part of the cord is arranged in two crescentic masses, and shows under the microscope numerous multipolar cells con- nected with nerve-fibres and imbedded in neuroglia, or the special connective tissueofthe nerve-cen-

Fic. 21.—Transverse section through spinal cord. AF, antero-median, and PF, postero-median fis- sures ; PC, posterior, LC, lateral, and AC, anterior

tres. columns; AR, anterior, and PR, posterior nerve-

terior column, now passing into the grey matter at root of posterior cornu. Of these, 8 is represented as enter- ing Clarke’s column, 9 as curving round this and coursing to anterior commissure, and 10 as passing towards an- terior cornu,—the axis-cylinder processes of the cells of Clarke’s column are shown arching round and taking the direction of the lateral column; am, anterior median fissure; pm, posterior median fissure ; cc, central canal ; SR, substantia gelatinosa of Rolando.

fibres connected with both the anterior and the posterior roots. The arrangement of the white or fibrous columns of the cord is seen in the table under medulla oblongata below.

The spinal cord acts (1) as a transmitter of motor and sensory— or centrifugal and centripetal—impressions between the encephalon and the periphery, and (2) as a reflex centre.

The neuroglia

ig c ompose dof a kind roots ; C, central canal of cord, with its columnar

a — : of semi-fluid matrix, the grey mati is shown by the demos aknice fibrils, and peculiar Portion.

cells having numerous branches called ‘“ Deiter’s cells.” (See fig 21.) These nerve-cells are arranged in definite groups and occupy the same relative position in successive sections, forming the gan- glionic or vesicular columns of the grey matter, as follows. (1) Cells

1. Transmission of Motor and Sensory Impressions.—Each spinal Moto nerve, as already mentioned, is connected with the spinal cord by and two roots, an anterior and a posterior. Section of a number ofsen! anterior roots causes paralysis of motion of muscles on the same imp” side of the body, whilst irritation of the distal or peripheral end of sio™ the divided roots causes twitchings or tetanus of the muscles. Neither section nor irritation has any effect on sensation. Hence the anterior roots contain motor fibres, carrying impressions from

.

Sih Read SE

SYSTEM. |

is followed by loss of sensation of a part of the body on the same side, and, if the proximal ends of the divided roots—those next the cord—be irritated, painful sensations are excited. The posterior roots, therefore, contain sensory fibres, carrying impressions Into the cord from the periphery. As we have seen, these roots are connected with the grey and white matter of the cord, and it is practically impossible to trace all their ramifications. Recourse must there- fore be had to the evidence supplied by experiment

(cutting, or by the Wallerian method, p. 26) and by pathological observation. In tracing the path of fibres, what may be called the " developmental method" has been pursued. It has been shown by Flechsig that, "if the development of the cord be carefully observed, the medul- lary substance of the nerve-fibres is formed later along eertain traets of the white columns than in the rest of the white matter, so that in transverse sections of the cord these tracts are easily dis- tinguishable by their more transparent grey appearance " (Quain, vol. ii. p. 277). If the anterior columns be cut by an incision ex- tending into the grey matter, leaving the posterior columns intact, voluntary movements disappear in the parts below the section. Again, section of the posterior columns and grey matter, leaving the anterior uninjured, enfeebles but does not destroy the power of voluntary movement below the section. Finally, section of an antero-latcral column on one side paralyses voluntary motion on the same side. From these facts it is inferred (a) that the motor tracts passing from the brain to the periphery are in the antero- lateral columns, and (6) that the fibres forming these tracts are chiefly distributed to the same side of the body. These inferences are supported by pathological observation. In diseases where the anterior horns of grey matter are affected paralysis ensues, with complete flaceidity of the limbs ; and if, from hemorrhage, soften- ing, or the pressure of tumours, the anterior portion of the cord be irritated there are spasmodic twitchings of muscles. Complete transverse section of the posterior columns does not abolish sensi- bility in the parts below; but there is a loss of the power of making co-ordinated movements. Section of the posterior columns and of the antero-lateral columns, leaving only the grey matter in the centre of the cord intact, does not abolish sensibility. Again, section of the antero-lateral columns aud of the whole of the grey matter, leaving only the posterior columns uninjured, is followed by complete loss of sensibility in the parts bencath. The inference therefore is that sensory impressions pass through the grey matter. As already seen, many of the sensory fibres conncted with the posterior roots decussate in the grey matter. This explains some of the results obtained by Brown-Séquard, that hemi-section of the cord, involving the grey matter, enfeebled sensibility on the opposite side more and more as the section cut deeply into the grey matter; that a vertical section in the bottom of the posterior median fissure caused loss of sensibility on both sides; and that a lateral section, whilst it caused loss of sensibility (anesthesia) on the opposite side, was followed by increase of sensibility

(hyper- wsthesia) on the same side,—a curious fact, explained by Brown-Séquard as being due to irritation caused by paralysis of the vessels of the cord on the side of the section. It would appear also that tactile impressions travel, for a certain distance at all events, in the posterior columns. This has been inferred chiefly from the fact that in certain eases of paralysis involving the posterior columns, where the sensation of touch was absent, the patient could still feel a painful sensation, as when a needle was thrust into the skin ; whilst in other cases, in which these columns were not affected, the converse held good. In the disease known as locomotor ataxia (see Avaxy and PaTHotoey, vol. xviii. p. 392) the patient first passes through a period in which there are disorders of general sensibility, especially lancinating pains in the limbs and back. By and by there is unsteadiness of gait when the eyes are closed or in the dark, and to a large extent the patient loses the power of co-ordinating movement. Especially he is unable to judge of the position of the limbs without seeing them ; in other words, the so-called muscular sense is enfeebled. At last there is a stage before death in which there is almost complete paralysis, A study of this disease has thrown much light on the physiology of the cord. It is known to be caused by a slow disorganization or sclerosis of the posterior root-zones, the posterior columns,—slowly passing on to affect the columns of Goll, the lateral columns, and the anterior grey horns, and ultimately involving the cord. The disordered sensations at an early stage, the staggering gait at a later, show that the posterior part of the cord has to do with the transmission of sensory impres- sions. The man staggers, not because he is paralysed as regards the power of movement, but because, in consequence of the scnsory tracts being involved, he does not receive those peripheral impres- sions which exeite or indirectly regulate all well-ordered movements of locomotion.

2. As a Reflew Centre.—The grey matter of the lower cervical, dorsal, and lumbar regions of the cord may be regarded as composed of reflex eentres associated with the general movements of the body, whilst in the upper cervieal region there are more differentiated centres corresponding to special actions. The initial excitation

‘ the cord outwards. Again, section of a number of posterior roots

may commenee in any sensory nerve ; the effeet passes to the eord, and sets up changes in the nerve-cells of the grey matter, involving time, and resulting in the transmission outwards along motor fibres of impulses which excite particular groups of muscles. There is an exact co-ordination, with a given strength of stimulus, between eertain areas of skin and eertain groups of muscles, and thus movements may be so purpose-like as to simulate those of a con- scious or voluntary character. Thus irritation near the anus of a decapitated frog will invariably cause. movements of the limbs towards the irritated point. The activity of reflex centres may be inhibited, as already shown, by highcr centres, or possibly by certain kinds of scnsory impressions reaching them directly from the periphery. Hence removal of these higher centres is followed by apparently inercased reflex excitability. Strychnia and the alkaloids of opium increase it, whilst aconite, hydrocyanic acid, ether, chloral, and chloroform have an opposite effect. In certain pathological conditions also, as in tetanus, or in some slow progressive diseases of the cord, reflex excitability may be much inereased. In tetanus the slightcst touch, a movement of the bedclothes, the closing of a door, the vibration caused by a footstep, may throw the patient into severe and prolonged con- vulsions. The earlier formed ganglionic cells are those specially concerned in reflex acts.

Spectal reflex centres have been clearly made out in the cord. (1) A cilio-spinal centre, between the sixth cervical and third dorsal nerves, associated with the movements of the iris. The fibres controlling the radiating fibres of the iris, and found in the sympathetic, originate here (see Eyr). Hence irritation of this region causes dilatation of the pupil, an effect not produced if the sympathetic fibres have been divided. (2) Accelerating centres, supply- ing fibres to the sympathetic which ultimately reach the heart, and irritation of these centres quickens the movements of that organ. (3) Respiratory centres, The movements of respiration, of a reflex character, involve the action of many thoracic and abdominal muscles. Section of the cord above the eighth dorsal paralyses the abdominal muscles; above the first dorsal, the intercostals ; above the fifth cervical, the serratus magnus

and the pectorals ; and above the fourth cervical, by paralysing the phrenics, it arrests the action of the diaphragm. (4) Genito-spinal centre. This is in the lumbar region. Irritation causes erection, &c.; destruction or disease is followed by loss of virile power. (5) Ano-spinal and vesiculo-spinal centres. These, connected with the movements of the sphincter ani and of the bladder, exist in the lower portion of the dorsal and upper portion of the lumbar regions. Disease or injury involving these centres causes involuntary evacuation of the bowel and com- plete paralysis of the bladder, with non-retention of urine. The bladder may be full whilst the urine constantly escapes in small quantity.

3. As a Trophie Centre. —The ganglion-eclls in the anterior coruua undoubtedly have a trophic or nutritive influence upon muscles. This has been determined chicfly on pathological evidence. If these cells undergo atrophy or degenerative changcs, the muscles, even though they may be kept periodically in a state of activity by galvanism, become soft and fatty changes take place. There is thus a correlation between the nutritive condition of muscle and nerve-centre, and influences affecting the one affect the other also.

It has been supposed that the cells in Clarke’s vesicular column may form the centres in visceral innervation. They arc bipolar, like those in the sympathetie, and not multipolar as in the rest of the cord, and the columns are absent in the lumbar and cervical enlargements. The cells are found where nerves come off that influence the viscera, and similar cells are found at the roots of the vagus in the medulla,—a nerve also much concerned in the innerva- tion of viscera.

Inhibition of Reflex Actions.—The reflex actions of the spinal eord may be inhibited or restrained to a greater or less extent by the action of centres in the encephalon, so that pure reflex actions only occur after removal of the ecrebrum, or during profound sleep, when the cerebrum is inactive. Thus a strong effort of the will may restrain from scratching an irritated part of the skin, whilst the same amount of irritation would certainly cause reflex movements if the will were in abeyance. Such power of voluntary control, however, is limited with respect to most reflex actions, whilst some reficx acts cannot be so influenced. Any movement that may be orginated by the

will may be inhibited or restrained to a certain extent when the movement is of a reflex character; but, if the movement be invariably involuntary, it can never be inhibited. Thus the ejaculation of semen cannot be voluntarily induced, whilst the reflex act once provoked cannot be arrested (Hermann). That these inhibitions of reflex actions of the cord depend on mechanisins in the brain is proved by the fact that removal of the brain is fol- lowed by an increase in the reflex excitability of the cord, and that even section of the cord permits of increased reflex excitability below the plane of section (Setschenoff). Further, after section of the spinal cord in the ccrvical region, irritation of the lowcr end arrests reflex movements dependent on reflex centres in the lower eervieal, dorsal, and lumbar regions (M ‘Kendrick).

Medulla Oblongata.—This is the prolongation into the cranium of the spinal cord so as to unite it with the brain. Strictly speak-

Special reflex eentres.-

Cord as trophie eentre.

Inhibi- tion of reflex

actions.

Medulla oblon-

ing, the medulla spinalis and the medulla oblongata form one organ. gata.

The columns of white matter of the cord undergo changes in form, structure, and relative position when they pass into the medulla (see vol. i. p. 870). Without again detailing the minute anatomy, it is necessary to show, as in the following table, the connexions of the cord and of the medulla with the rest of the brain.

Columns of

‘ i in Medulla the Spinal | Divided into age eo Pass on to A. a. Lateral, or crossed, Decussate in anterior pyra-| Cerebrum. Pyramidal) fibres from the

pos- inids. tract. terior part of the lateral column as low as the third or fourth sacral 7 nerves. b. Anterior, or un-|Pass under crossed, fibres from | pyramid on ; the dorsal region| same side, | 1. Posterior} Cerebrum. of the cord-col-| and form | longitudi- uns of Tiirck, or} longitudinal nal bundle columns of Lock-} fibres of the (in pons. hart Clarke. reticularis al- { 2. Traet of} Corpora ‘ ba in dorsal] the fillet. quadri- a part of me- geimina. 3 sial area. 8 B. c. Cerebellar tract, | Restiform body. Cerebellum. | Cerebellar} between latera} g tract. pyramidal tract 8 and the outer sur- } face of the cord as 3 low as the second E or third lumbar. All the|. Principal tract of antero- | anterior column, lateral that is, the antero- columns! lateral eolumn less except the fibres in b. Not AandB,| continued up— probably comunis- sural from one side of cord to the other. e. From anterior col- | Pass below olivary body to | Cerebellum. umn, form part of restiform body. Sometimes called the ‘‘ band of Solly ’—not always present. a. Posterior white column, or Goll’s tract, from middle of dorsal region. b. Posterior lateral| Posterior median column, | Cerebrum. column, between] becoming the funiculus posterior median] gracilis, which, with the Posterior column and pos-] expansion called the clava, column. tero- lateralgroove.| becomes the posterior py- ramids. c. Funiculns of Ro-}Funigulus cuneatus, form-| Cerebellum.

lando, between the} ing, with cerebellar tract posterior lateral! fromantero- lateralcolumn, column b and pos-| the restiform body. tero-lateral groove

higher up.

It is important to note the fact that each column of the cord, through the medulla, is thus connected both with the cereorum and with the cerebellum. Development has shown that the fibres of the bundles which are first formed develop a medullary sheath at a time when the fibres of the later- formed bundles are non-medullated. ‘When the cord of a human embryo is examined at the end of the fifth month it will be found that the pyramidal fibres of the lateral columns, the fibres of the columns of Tiirck, and of the columns of Goll are non-medullated ; while the fibres of the anterior and pos- terior root-zones and the cerebellar fibres of the lateral columns are medullated” (Ross). It would appear, therefore, that the latter are the more priinitive structures, and that the former are super- added in the cords of the

higher animals. The grey matter of the inedulla is broken up by changes in the distribution of the white matter into nuclei or masses of nerve-cells, instead of having the crescentic form seen in the spinal cord. These nuclei are connected with the roots of important cranial nerves, and may be regarded as corresponding with the anterior horns of grey matter, with the posterior horns, and with the grey matter between these.

The following nuclei can be found :—(1) the hypoglossal nucleus for the hypoglossal nerve, the motor nerve of the tongue ; (2) a common nucleus, for a portion of the spinal accessory, vagus, and glosso-pharyngeal nerves; (3) the principal or lower auditory nucleus, for the auditory nerve; (4) nuclei for the sixth or abducent nerve, supplying the external rectus muscle of the eye ; (5) nucleus for the fourth nerve, supplying the superior oblique muscle of the eye; (6) the facial nerve, the motor nerve of the face; (7) the cor- pus dentatum of the olivary body, not directly connected with the roots of nerves, but containing nerve-cells. “Some fibres, both of the sensory and motor roots of the fifth nerve, originate also as far back as the medulla. The third, fourth, sixth, and hypoglossal nerves belong to the system of anterior motor nerves, related to the anterior cornua, whilst the spinal accessory, vagus, glosso- pharyngeal, and fifth belong to the ‘‘ mixed lateral system, that 1s, they are related to the posterior cornua and intermediate grey matter. –

Like the spinal cord, the medulla may be regarded as containing

tracts for sensory and motor transmission, and as constituting a series of reflex centres for special movements.

1. As a Conductor of Motor and Sensory Impressions. —Inasmuch Moti also, as such movements as those of the circulation, respiration, and and vaso-motor action are necessary to life, destruction of the Be medulla causes almost instant death. Motor fibres coming from t the brain above decussate in the anterior pyramids and then runsiony down the lateral columns of the cord, issuing to the muscles by mej! the anterior roots of the spinal nerves. Hence, whilst section of an antero-lateral column of the cord will cause paralysis of motion on the same side, section of an anterior pyramid above the decus- sation causes paralysis of motion on the opposite side. But fibres carrying sensory impressions also decussate in the grey

matter at the bottom of the posterior median fissure of the cord. It follows, therefore, that disease, such as rupture of a vessel causing a clot in the brain, say in the left corpus striatum and left optic thalamus, causes paralysis both of motion and of sensation on the opposite side,—that is, in the case supposed, there would be right hemiplegia. The path of sensory impressions is probably in the grey matter but the precise course of sensory fibres has not been traced.

2. Asa Reflex Centre.—Numerous special centres have been re- Meth ferred to the medulla oblongata. a8 rely

(1) Respiratory centres, two in number, expiratory and inspiratory, connected centr, with the roots of the pneumogastric nerves. Destruction at once causes cessa- tion of respiratory movements. (2) Vaso-motor centre, regulating the calibre of the smaller blood-vessels throughout the body (see p. 30). (3) Cardiac centres, probably two in number—one accelerating, associated with the sympathetie; the other inhibitory, connected with the pneumogastric (see p. 29). (4) Centres for deglutition, associated with the sensory and motor nerves involved in this process (see NuTRITION, vol. xvii. p. 670). (5) Centre for voice, regu- lating to some extent, through the sterno-cleido-mastoid muscle, the emission of air through the glottis in expiration and phonation. (6) Centre influencing glycogenesis, probably by the action of the vaso-motor centre on the blood- vessels of the liver (see NUTRITION, vol. xvii. p. 682), (7) Centre directly in- fluencing salivary secretion, from which originate those fibres of the facial, forming the chorda tympani and lesser superficial petrosal, distributed to the salivary glands (see NuTrition, vol. xvii. p. 672). (8) Centre for the moter fibres supplying the face and muscles of mastication. These exist in the facial for the muscles of the faccand in the motor portion of the fifth for the muscles of mastication. Further, the medulla receives nervous influences from the higher centres, by which all the centres above enumerated may be more or less influenced,

Pons Varolii.—The pons Varolii is above and in front of the Pos medulla oblongata, and between the hemispheres of the cerebellum, Vani It consists of fibres passing in two directions, viz., longitudinally, connecting the brain above with the medulla and cord below ; and transversely, connecting the

lateral hemispheres of the cerebellum, thus forming the middle peduncles of that organ. Its general position and appear- ance are seen in fig, 28. Mixed up with these fibres are various nuclei of grey matter connected with the roots of cranial nerves. The most important of these nuclei are—(1) the nucleus of the facial nerve ; (2) the motor nucleus of the fifth nerve; (3) the upper sensory nucleus of the fifth nerve ; (4) the inner or chief nucleus of the auditory nerve; (5) the outer or superior nucleus of the auditory nerve; (6) the accessory nucleus of the auditory nerve; (7) the nu- cleus of the sixth nerve. It will be observed that several of these nerves are also con- : nected with nuclei in the Fic. 23.—Section of medulla oblongata and medulla oblongata. Like pene to show the course of fibres. a, so

; : cial, and a’, deep transverse fibres of pons, the cord and medulla, the 4, b, anterior pyramids ascending at 0! pons is to be regarded as_ through pons; ¢, ¢, olivary bodies; ¢, ol a conductor of impressions vary fasciculus in pons; d,d, anterior

cal i : Le eoht and probabl : i columns of cord; e, inner part of righ I y also as a reflex column joining anterior pyrainid ; f, outer

centre. Motor transmission part going to olivary fascicnlus ; g, lateral occurs chiefly in the an- column of cord; h, the part which decus- terior part. As the fibres of sates at k, the decussation of the pyramids;

: , : l, the part whieh joins the restiform body; ~ facial nerve decussate in m, that which forms the fasciculus teres} the pons, and then Carry 1N- , arciform fibres. 1 and 2, sensory and fluences outwards, unilateral motor roots of the fifth nerve; 3, sixth

inj i nerve; 4, portio dura; 5, portio inter- i is wi Sanne ie pens media} 6, portio mollis of the seven hay cause paralysis of the nerve; 7, glosso- pharyngeal ; 8, pneumo

face on the same side as the gastric; 9, spinal accessory; 10, hypo disease, and paralysis of the glossal nerve.

limbs on the opposite side if the disease has affected the facial before its decussation in the pons. Usually in cases of paralysis of one side

(hemiplegia) from a clot or disorganization in one corpus striatum the paralysis of the face is on the same side as that of the limbs. In diseases of the pons loss of sensibility is a much more

=

tet

ani.

SYSTEM. |

rare result than loss of motion, and is always on the opposite side.

According to Brown-Séquard, tactile, thermal, and painful impres- sions pass through the central part of the pons.

centres in the pons are associated in complex reflex movements.

Nothnagel has described it as a convulsive centre, because irritation but this was no doubt due to irritation of the

caused severe cramps, : motor strands passing through it. _ Cerebral Peduneles. —Thesc contain both sensory and motor fibres,

and they establish a connexion between the cerebellum and the

cerebrum, and also between the ganglia at the base,—corpora striata, optic thalami, and corpora quadrigemina on the one hand, and the pons and medulla on the other. except that they are conductors. the animal to move to the side opposite the lesion, circle somewhat in the manner of a horse in a circus. may cause pain or movements of various groups of muscles.

Basal of the cerebro-spinal system, the brain consists of a series of gan- glia, in pairs, more or less overlapped by the cerebral hemispheres.

These ganglia, termed the “basal ganglia,” are usually held to include, from behind forwards, the corpora quadrigemina, the optic thalami, and the

corpora striata ; but in addition.there are bodies they cannot be regarded as belonging to the cerebral hemispheres. These are

meriting an equal amount of attention, inasmuch as

the locus niger, the red nucleus of the tegmentum, and the corpora geniculata ; but we have no knowledge of their functions. No doubt all these ganglia act along with the cercbral hemispheres, so that practically the whole mass forms one organ.

Corpora Quadrigemina.—These are two pairs of rounded bodies found above the Sylvian aqueduct, which passes between the third and fourth ventricles. They are situated behind the optic thalami, and are intimately related to the crura, and through these to the pons, medulla, and cord. Homologous with the optic lobes seen in the brain of the fish, frog, and bird (see figs. 17 and 18), and in marsupials and monotremes, their relative size to the mass of the encephalon is much less in the brain of man and of the higher animals. These bodies contain grey matter, covered by a thin stratum of white matter. The two posterior bodies are probably connected with the cerebellum by the superior peduncles of that

organ; at all events these peduncles disappear under the base of

the corpora quadrigemina. ‘The two posterior bodies arc also related to the crura cerebri by the prominences on the sides of the crura known as the inner genicilate bodies. Both anterior and posterior bodies, more especially the anterior, are connected with the optic tracts, and finally, the two antcrior bodies unite with the optic thalami. (See fig. 24 below ; also, plate XVIII., vol. i., fig. 1, 9, 9.) As shown by their anatomical connexions, the corpora quadri- gemina are part of the mechanism of vision. Destruction causes immediate blindness. If, in a pigeon, the encephalon be removed with the exception of thesc bodies, the iris will still continuc to contract on the influence of light. On then destroying onc of these bodies, the iris is immobile, and the power of accommodation is lost. As the third cranial nerve (which is known to contain fibres controlling the circular fibres of the iris by which the pupil con- tracts, and the fibres governing the ciliary muscle by which the eye is accommodated or focused to varying distances) originates in the grey matter of the floor of the Sylvian aqueduct, close to

the corpora quadrigemina, it is held that these bodies are the centres of the reflex movements of the iris and of the ciliary muscle. The corpora quadrigemina are also the first recipients of visual impres- sions. When light falls on the retina changes are there induced which stimulate the optic nerve-fibres, and these fibres carry impres- sions through the optic tracts to the corpora quadrigemina. What then occurs is matter of conjecture. Whether sensation is there excited, or whether to produce sensation it is necessary that the impulses be sent onwards to the cerebrum, or whether the impres- sions directly received from tlie retina may excite, through the corpora quadrigemina and adjacent ganglia, reflex movements (like those of the somnambulist, who may sec so that his steps are taken rightly, but who may at the same time not see consciously), are all speculative questions. We know that these boilies are concerned in the movements of the iris and of the ciliary muscle, but their great proportionate size in lowly-formed brains indicates that this is probably a secondary function, and that they are largely con- cerned in the phenomena of consciousness of light and colour. Optic Thalami.—These are two ganglionic masses placed behind the corpora striata and in front of the corpora quadrigemina. The internal surfaces are seen chiefly in the third ventricle, the upper surfaces in the same ventricle and the lateral ventricles (see vol. i. pp. 875, 876, figs. 74 and 75), whilst the external and under surface of each thalamus is united with other parts of the brain. The under surface receives fibres from the crus cerebri, whilst the upper surface is covered by fibres which diverge and pass between the thalamus and a mass of grey matter in the extra-ventricular portion of the corpus striatum (called lenticular nucleus), to form a white layer called the ‘‘internal capsule.” From the internal capsule, which thus contains fibres from the optic thalamus, fibres

RBEFYysiloOWoGy

The numerous

Little is known of their functions Destruction of one peduncle causes describing a Irritation

Ganglia.—As already shown in tracing the development

oF

radiate outwards to the surface of the cerebral hemispheres. The under surface of the thalamus is connected with the tegmentum,— that is, with the layer of fibres forming the upper surface of the crus cerebri. They also receive fibres from the corpora quadrigemina, and according to some authorities from the superior peduncles of the cerebellum. The substance of the thalamus contains nerve- cells, scattered and also aggregated into two nuclear masses, but the relations of these to nerve-tracts have not been ascertained. It is important physiologically to notice that the thalami receive fibres from the back of the crura, and therefore are probably related to the posterior or sensory portion of the spinal cord.

There is still much uncertainty as to the functions of the optic thalami. The most commonly received opinion is that they are centres for the reception of peripheral impulses, which they may elaborate and transmit forwards to the corpora striata, or directly to the cerebral hemispheres. If the scnsory impulses received by the optic thalami are sent to the corpora striata, and by these trans- mitted downwards and outwards through the crura cerebri, then reflex actions may occur in which the basal ganglia are the centres ; but, if the impulses are sent up, in the first place, to the cerebral hemispheres, and by these transmitted down to the corpora striata, then the action must include the higher mechanism of the grey matter of the hemispheres. In the first case it is supposed by those who hold that consciousness is specially connected with the grey matter of the hemispheres .that the action would be purely reflex and unconscious. Experiment has not thrown much light on this problem, owing to the deep-seated situation of these bodies rendering the results of operative interference untrustworthy. The little that has been done shows that injury to them does not cause paralysis of motion. Nor can it be said that such injuries cause loss of sensation, the only phenomenon observed being that the animal places its limbs in anomalous positions, and does not seem to beaware of havingdoneso. Meynert is of opinion that the optic thalami fulfil the same functions as to tactile impressions—that is, impressions on the periphery of the body—that the corpora quadri- gemina do for visual impressions—that is, impressions on the retina. In cases of apoplexy in which these bodics are involved there are always sensory disturbances on the side opposite the lesion. This would lead to the inference that the optic thalaini are the sensory ganglia of the opposite sides of the body. They are not, however, the first ganglionic apparatus through

which scnsory impressions pass, but they probably co-ordinate in some way centripetal impulses before these are sent to the cerebral hemispheres, where they are correlated with feeling. Further, as the old name ‘‘ optic thalami” indicates, these ganglia are concerned in some way in vision, because, if seriously injured, blindness, or at all events disturbauce of vision, is one of the constant results. This favours the view that they are the “middlemen” between special sensory ccntres and the higher centres of the cerebrum,

Corpora Striata.—These ganglia, sometimes termed the “ ganglia Corpora of the cerebral hemispheres,” sitnated in front and on the outer striata. side of the optic thalami, are seen in the lateral ventricles. (See vol. i. pp. 875, 876, figs. 74 and 75.) The greater part of each is imbedded in the white substance of the hemisphere (extra-ventri- cular portion), whilst the part seen in the floor of the lateral ventricle is called the intra-veutricular portion. Each of these contains a nucleus of grey matter, the nucleus caudatus in the intra-ventri- cular and the nweleus lentiewlaris in the extra-ventricular. The latter is separated internally froin the intra-ventricular portion by a laycr of white matter called the “internal capsule,” whilst on the outer side there is another layer of white matter called the “external capsule,” beyond which, again, is a lamina or web of grey matter, called the “claustrum,” which scparates the external capsule from the island of Rcil. The internal capsule is of great importance inasmuch as it is continuous with the eruwsta, a portion of the erus cerebri, which, in turn, is a continuation of the pyramidal fibres of the medulla oblongata and the pons. Multipolar nerve- cells are found in the nucleus caudatus ; in the claustrum the cclls are small and spindle-shaped. Postcriorly, therefore, the corpus striatum is related by fibres with the optic thalamus ; inferiorly, through the internal capsule, with the pyramidal portion of the medulla and cord; and externally and superiorly with the grey matter of the cerebrum. The corpus striatum is a centre for the co-ordination of centrifugal or motor impulses. It may be roused into activity by impressions reaching it directly from the optic thalamus, but probably it usually acts in obedience to impulses coming from the cerebral hemispheres. When a clot of blood is formed in, say, the right corpus striatum there is motor paralysis of the opposite side of the body, and, according to the size of the clot, the paralysis may affect more or less completely the different groups of muscles. Destruction of the

two bodies destroys voluntary movement, but the animal may move forwards asinrunning. De- struction of the nucleus caudatus renders movements of progression impossible, and the animal performs movements of rotation. Noth- nagel by injecting a minute drop of a solution of chromic acid destroyed the nucleus lenticularis of a rabbit, with the result of throwing the animal into complete unconsciousness. He also states

; [NERVOUS ©

frritation causes movements of the eyeballs and other movements ~ indicative of vertigo. Section of the middle peduncle on one side causes the animal' to roll rapidly round its longitudinal axis, the rotation being towards the side operated en., '. 77 If the cerebelluin be removed gradually by successive slices—an operation easily done in a pigeon—there is a progressive effect on locomotive actions. Qn — taking away only the upper layer tliere is some weakness and a hesitation in gait. When the Sections have reached the iniddle of the organ the animal staggers much, and assists itself by its wings in walking. . The sections being continued further, it is no longer able to preserve its equilibrium withdut the. assistance of its wings and tail; its attempts to fly or walk resemble the fruit- less efforts ofa nestling, and the slightest touch knocks it over. At last, when the whole cerebel- lun is removed, it can- not support itself even with the aid of its wings and tail; it makes vio- lent efforts to rise, but only rolls upand down; then, fatigued with struggling, it remains for a few seconds at rest on its back or ab- domen, and then again commences its vain struggles to rise and walk, Yet all the while sight and hearing are ' perfect. See fig. 26. It attempts to escape, and appears to have all its sensa- tions perfect. The results contrast very strongly with those of removing the cerebral lobes, ''Take two pigeons," says Longet; ''from'one remove com- pletely the cerebral lobes, and from the other only half the cerebellum; the next day the first will be:firm on its feet, the second will exhibit the unsteady and uncertain gait of drunkenness," 2

There is thus a loss of the power of co-ordination, or of regula. | + tion of movement, without the loss of sensibility, and hence it has | . been assumed that in some way or other the cerebellum acts ag the co-ordinator of movements: , ;

Co-ordination of Movement.—The nervous mechanisms by which Oooh — movements are co-ordinated—that is, adapted to specific ends—are dinaliin not thoroughly understood, but a short description of what is of moe known may be here given. Muscular movements may be either ment . simple or complex. In winking, the movement of the eyelid is

that in the corpus striatum -of the same animal there is a point; the nodus cursorius, the excitation of which caused the rabbit to rush forwards. ‘This obServation’ agrees with the statement of Magendie that, when he injured the corpora striata, the animal seemed to have an irresistible propulsion forwards. Ferrier states that when the corpora striata were stimulated by an interrupted current convulsive movements of the opposite side of the body took

Fig, 26.—Pigeon

from which the cerebellum has been removed.

wee

ium

Fic. 24.—Three pairs of cerebellar peduncles (from Sappey, after Hirschfeld and Leveillé. Quain). On the left the three cerebellar peduncles have been cut short; on the right side the hemisphere has been cut obliquely to show its connexion with the superior and inferior peduncles. 1, median groove of fourth ventricle ; 2, the same groove at the place where the auditory striz emerge from it to cross the floor of the ventricle; 8, inferior peduncle or restiform body; 4, funiculus gracilis; 5,5, superior peduncles,—on the right the dissection shows the superior and inferior peduncles crossing each other as they pass into the white substance of cerebellum; 6, 6, fillets at the side of crura cerebri ; 7, lateral grooves of crura cerebri; 8, corpora quadrigemina.

place ; and when the current was powerful the side of the body opposite to the side of the brain stimulated p.. was forcibly drawn into an arch.

effected by two muscles, one bringing the lid down, the other rais- ing it. But pieking up a pen from the table, taking a dip of ink,

Pedun- Cerebellum.—In connexion with the phy- and writing a few words involve a complicated set of movements cles of siology of this organ it is important to note of the muscles of the trunk, shoulder, arm, forearm, fingers, and cere- its conuexions with the rest of the cerebro- thumb. To perform the movements with precision ‘each muscle or bellum, spinal axis. It has three peduncles : (1) the group of muscles must act at the right time and to the proper superior peduncles (see fig. 24)—crura ad cere- amount. ‘It is also clear that all this is accomplished autotmatic- brum, or processes ad testes —together with |v ally. Weare not conscious of the requisite combinations ; but it the valve of Vieussens, connect the cerebellum “| must be noted that many of these complicated movements are first to the cerebrum ; (2) the inferior peduncles, |* acquired by conscious efforts, and that they become automatic only or crura ad medullam, are the superior ex- | by repetition. Again, in walking, equilibrium is maintained by a tremities of the restiform bodies; (8) the A delicate series of muscular adjustments. When we swing forward middle peduncles, or crura ad pontem, much one leg and balance the body on the other many muscular’ move- the largest, are the lateral extremities of the i) ments occur, and with every change in the position of the centre transverse fibres of the pons Varolii. They’ of gravity in the body there are corresponding adjustments. It act as commissural fibres for the hemispheres 7J || would appear that in all mechanisms of co-ordination the first part of the cerebellum. All these peduncles pass q | of the process is the transmission of sensory impressions from the into the interior of the cerebellum at its fore- | p4)\| \ periphery. These sensory impressions may be derived from the part. In the interior of the organ, where the] [/\j/ skin or muscles, and may be caused by variations of pressure arising peduncles enter, we find a nueleus of grey Puy in them. Thus, if we lift a heavy weight, as a large stone, by the matter, the corpus dentatum. The cortical £4 right hand and raise it to the bend of the elbow we throw the body substance consists of two layers,—an outer —] to the other side by the action of the muscles of that side, thus molecular layer, consisting of a delicate ma- 5% maintaining the equilibrium. We judge of the amount of force trix containing a few round cells and fibres, 4 necessary to overcome an obstruction by the feeling of resistance we and an inner or

granule layer, containing ¢ encounter. All the movements of the body, therefore, give rise to granules or nueleated eorpuseles closely feelings of varying pressures, and these feelings regulate the amount packed together. The corpuscles are from or degree of muscular action necessary to maintaih equilibrium, or zvyoth to zsyoth of an inch in diameter, to perform a requisite movement. This is at first a conscious ex- and are mixed with a network of delicate perience, and a child has to pass through an education, often involyv- nerve-fibres. At the junction of the granu- ing pain, before the nervous mechanisms become automatic and the lar layer with the molecular layer there are movement is done without effort. But the ordinary sensory nerves, peculiar large cells called “ Purkinje’s cells.” s8¢ coming from skin and muscle, are not the only channels by which They are flask-shaped and about {5th to 28 such guiding mechanisms are set in action. As one would expect, tooth of an inch in diameter, and the long sensory impressions, such as those associated with sight and hearing, process is directed towards the surface of the “== may be brought into play. oie (see fig. 25). The white centre of ee e 1. Peripheral Impressions from Semicircular Canals.—If the Tmpres = ny ra of delicate nerve-fibres, °==«=== —— membranous pager of the horizontal semicircular caval in the S100 eabstateva dead tata = =. = internal ear of a pigeon be cut, the bird moves its head from side to | inter cian 8 sitio Abaue il cd ey “ —— side, and if one of the vertical canals be divided it moves the head sem Teeny open ll ni cingetg e pat e an * o hinovany section | up and down. The effects may pass off in a few days if only one ” On ws heen ; urxinjes cells. Phrough cortex of cere- | canal has been cut. If the canals on both sides be divided them n comparing the section of cerebrum (fig, bellum (Sankey). «, pia | movements are e ted and th dition b t 28) with that of cerebellum (fig. 25) the con. Mater; > external layer; | 7. ay iy Se nd eee tae is atric Th 8 ¢, layer of cells of Pur- will then be observed that the animal has lost the power of co- { iking. e structure of eerebellum kinje; d, inner or gran- ordinating its movements It t with only a twitcliin is more like that of the retina (vol. i. p. 888, Ule layer; ¢ medullary | perhaps. of th head, b if j pint eee Boe : eo Experi- fig. 78) than of any other nerve-centre. centre. perhaps, of the head, but if it attempt to fly or walk its movements asia Ge, Reeuiing a Beene ae ata ae are indefinite and irregular, like those of a dizzy person, or like _ esults of Experiments. —The cerebellum is insensible to mechan- | those described as following in} P i] cine. teal exaltation. © ie Bees :

ollowing injury to the cerebellum. The irregular excitations uncture causes no indications of pain, but there | movements do not arise from deaf. ises in th tial bellum. may be twisting of the head to the side. 2 Dene deena oY hoes ee ee

Ferrier states that Faradaic

paralysis, or from an uncontrollable impulse. Any strong sensory

SYSTEM. |.

. guided and controlled by the sense of vision. Simply blindfolding

impression, such as holding the bird, supporting its beak, or hold-

ing a brilliant light before its eyes, will steady it, and it has been noticed that ‘it can, even without assistance, clean its feathers and * seratch its head, its beak and foot being in these operations guided

by contact with its. own body.” It has been supposed that the semicircular canals are concerned in the mechanism of equibration,

—a view urged chiefly by Mach and Crum-Brown. Ifa blindfolded |

man ds seated on a horizontal rotating table, such as that used in a lighthouse for rotating or eclipsing the light, and the table is turned round, at first there is a sensation of movement in the same direction as that of the table; then this sensation fades away, until he has no sensation of movement, although the table may be rapidly rotating ; finally, if the table be stopped without a jerk there is first a very short period in which there is no definite sensation, which is succcedéd by a sense of rapid movement in the opposite direction, often accompanied by a feeling of nausea, Now it is evident that neither sight. nor touch nor muscular sensations can give a sense of rotation in these circumstances, and yet it is possible to form a fairly accurate judgment. of the angle through which the body has moved. It has been suggested that this is effected by the action of the semicircular canals. tions are surrounded by a fluid called the ‘‘ endolymph,”.and are free to move through a short distance. Hence it has been supposed that

rotations more or less rapid must cause variations of tension of the membranous portion. Thus, if the membranous part, especially the ampulla or dilated ends of the canals, lag behind when rotation in one direction takes place, the nerves ending in them will be subjected to a strain ; by and by both membranous portions and surrounding parts will be moving with the same velocity, when there will be no strain and no sense of movement ; and at last, when

_the rotatory movement.is arrested, there will be a tendency on the

art of the membranous portions, as they are floating in a fluid, to move on a little farther than the rest, and thus again produce a strain, causing a sensation of movement in the opposite direction. By similar reasoning it can be shown that if we take the peculiar position of the three canals into consideration any movement in space might be thus appreciated, and these appreciations enter into the judgment we form of the movements. According to this theory, the sense of equilibrium may be largely due to impressions derived from the position of the head, and, as muscular movements required for placing the body in definite positions are determined, as we have seen, by peripheral impressions, the irregular movements of the pigeon, ‘after injury to these canals, may be accounted for. It is not improbable that in the bird, which from the structure ‘of its extremities—feet and wings—can have no peripheral impressions so delicate as those derived from the papille of the skin on the extremities ofother animals, the sense of equilibrium is maintained chiefly by impressions from these canals, and this may account for thé comparatively large size of these organs in birds and fishes. This is in correspondence also with the requirements of birds in the balancings of flight and of fishes in swimming. It is well known that disease or injury of these canals in the human being produces symptoms of vertigo and a diminution of the power of co-ordinated action, as in Menibre’s disease, showing that the canals, even ir man, have similar functions to those in the bird. : 2. Peripheral Impressions from the Eye.—Many movements are

a bird usually makes it passive, and it will not attempt either to walk or to fly ; the same effects to a less degree may be seen in a mammal ; and a blindfolded man will stagger in his gait. The wonderfully accurate

movements of the blind in walking are ac- quired by long and laborious effort, and are guided by the sensa- tions of hearing, of touch, and of resistance. If the optic lobes of a frog be destroyed, its power of balancing itself is lost. There are thus at least three channels by which peripheral impressions pass to the centres-and seem to guide or co-ordinate movement: (1) from the periphery, by nerves of ordinary sensibility arising in the skin, muscles, and viscera ; (2) from the semicircular canals of the ear, by special nerve-fibres in the auditory nerve ; (3) from the eye, by fibres of the optic nerve. How and where these skeins of sensi- tive impressions are gathered up and so arranged as to call forth the requisite movements can only be conjectured ; but the cerebellum is the organ most likely to be concerned in such a mechanism. It is in organic connexion with many of the nerve-fibres conveying sensory impressions. By the restiform bodies it receives many of the sensory fibres of the spinal cord ; the auditory nerve has roots intimately related to the cerebellum ; and it is fair to assume that there are communications between the corpora quadrigemina and

the cerebellum. Stimulation of the cerebellum causes movements |

of the eyeballs, and disease of the cerebellum is sometimes attended by blindness. How the cerebellum co-ordinates movement is quite unknown, and the difficulty in explaining its functions is not lessened by the clinical fact that extensive disease of this organ may exist without any appreciable sensory or motor disturbance. There is no evidence to support the view of the founders of phrenology that the cerebellum has to do with the sexual functions.

Cerebral Hemispheres.—As these have been fully described in vol.

The membranous por- |

i: p. 873, it is only necessary here to point out the anatomical facts that assist in explaining the functions of the organ. It is import- ant to observe,

first, the gencral arrangements, of the fibres, and, secondly, the arrangement and structure of the grey matter. The white matter of the cerebrum consists of ascending or peduncular fibres, longitudinal or collateral fibres, and of transverse or com- missural fibres. x.

(1.) Peduneular Fibres.—The crusta of the cerebral peduncles consists of bundles of ‘ah longitudinal fibres de- si rived mainly from the anterior pyramid of the medulla. The crust is quadrilateral in form, but in ascending to the hemispheres it becomes flattened from above downwards, so that the fibres spread out like a fan. The fan formed by these fibres is bent into the form of an incom- plete hollow cone, the convex surface of which is directed upwards and inwards. ‘Thus the fibres)p pass between the optic thalamus and the lenti- cular nucleus, forming the internal capsule. Higher up the fibres pursue their course be- neath and to the outside of the thalamus and the caudate nucleus, and over the lenticular nu- cleus, ‘‘Still higher up the internal capsule has spread out from before backwards, while the anterior half forms an obtuse angle with the posterior, The angle where the halves meet is called the knee (fig. 27, K), while the divi- sions themselves are called the anterior’ (fig. 27, IK’) and_ posterior segments of the internal capsule ” (Ross). On emerging from the basal anglia the fibres of the internal capsule radiate in all directions to reach the cortex of the brain, giving rise to the appear- ance called the ‘corona radiata.” The following sets of fibres have been traced into connexion with the cerebrum.

(a) Sensory peduncular fibres, derived from the posterior root-zones and the

columns of Goll. These are in connexion with the cerebellum ; but, as shown by Meynert, Flechsig, and others, many pass up through the pons to reach the

EK

vc

Fra. 27.—(After Flechsig.) Horizontal section of brain of child ‘nine months old, only a portion of the right side being shown. F, frontal, TS, temporo-sphenoidal, and 0, occipital lobes ; op, operculum ; Jn, island of Reil ; Cls, claustrum ; f”, third frontal convolution ; Th, optic thal- amus ;

NC, caudate nucleus; NC’, tail of caudate nucleus ; LN, lenticular nucleus ; IJ, III, second and third divisions of lenticular nucleus; EK, external capsule; IK, posterior division, 1K’, anterior division, and K, knee of internal cap- sule; ah, ph, anterior and posterior horns re- spectively of lateral ventricles; gcc, knee of corpus callosuin ; sp, splenium ; me, middle com- missure ; Jf, fornix ; sl, septum lucidum.

erus cerebri, occupying the posterior and external portion of the pyramidal

tract. They do not appear to be connected with the optic thalamus and the lenticular nucleus, but pass between them to the cortex. (6) Fibres from the roots of the optic nerves, reaching the brain by what have been called the ‘optic radiations of Gratiolet.”” This bundle of fibres issues from the posterior and external border of the optic thalamus, and is closely applied to the pedun- cular sensory tract in its passage through the internal capsule, and the fibres seem to be connected with the convolutions of the occipital lobe. It is im- portant to note that at least one of the roots of the optic nerve (the internal) passes into the external geniculate body and thence into the anterior bodies of the corpora quadrigemina. Thus there is a path for the passage of impressions from the retina to the cortex of the brain. (c) Fibres from the olfactory lobes have been traced to a junction with the optic radiations of Gratiolet, and pass with them to the convolutions of the cortex of the occipital or temporo-sphen- oidal lobe. (d) The pyramidal tract has already been traced through the spinal cord, medulla, and pons. It then goes on, as already seen, to form the internal capsule and the corona radiata, the fibres ending in the parietal lobule, the paracentral lobule, the superior extremities of the ascending frontal and parietal convolutions, probably the posterior extremity of the first frontal convolution, the posterior extremity of the third frontal, and the inferior extremities of the ascending frontal and parietal convolutions,—in short, in the convolutions forming the middle and parietal region of the surface of the cortex. (e) Fibres issuing from the external surface of the optic thalamus to join the internal capsule. These are distributed to the convolutions of the frontal and parietal lobes. (f) Fibres issuing from the external surface of the caudate nucleus, passing also into the corona radiata. (g) Fibres issuing from the superior and internal surface of the lenticular nucleus to join the ascending fibres of the internal capsule. (h) Fibres ascending from the superior peduncle ofthe cerebellum. Flechsig

says that some of the fibres of the superior peduncle of the cerebellum of the opposite side pass uninterruptedly through the red nucleus and along the internal surface of the fibres of the pyramidal tract to

Pedun- cular

fibres ot

cere- brum.

Longi- tudinal fibres of cere- brun.

Com- missural fibres of cere- brumn.

Arrange- ment and

structure A web or sheet of it is also thrown over the

of grey matter.

AO

be distributed to the central convolutions of the cerebrum. (i) Fibres issuing from the corpus callosum and descending into the internal capsule. (k) Fibres of the external capsule which ascend from the crusta and ultimately reach the cortex through the corona radiata.

In addition to the peduncular fibres above enumerated, all of

which belong to what may be termed the system of the internal capsule and corona radiata, fibres from the fornix, tenia seml- circularis, outer layer of septum lucidum, and the fillet of the crus also pass from below upwards to the cortex of the hemispheres (Ross).

(2.) Longitudinal mediately below the

or Collateral Fibres.—(a) Fibres running im- surface of the cortex, and connecting the grey matter of adjacent convolutions. (5) Fibres in the gyrus fornicatus, a convolution immediately above the corpus callosum. It is said

that bands of these fibres arise in the anterior perforated space and pass completely round the corpus callosum to end in the same per- forated space, and that offsets of these fibres pass upwards and backwards to reach the summits of the secondary convolutions derived from the gyrus fornicatus near the longitudinal fissure. (c) Longitudinal fibres of the corpus callosum (nerves of Lancisi), connecting the anterior and posterior ends of the callosal convolu- tion. (d) Longitudinal septal fibres, lying on the inner surface of the septum lucidum, and entering into the gyrus fornicatus. (¢) The fasciculus uncinatus, passing across the bottom of the Sylvian fissure and connecting the convolutions of the frontal and temporo- sphenoidal lobes. (f) The longitudinal inferior fasciculus, connect- ing the convolutions of the occipital with those of the temporal lobe. (3.) Transverse or Commissural Fibres.— Tr 7 FT (a) Many, if not all, of the fibres of the — corpus callosum pass transversely from ! YY 1 t one side to the other ye connect ecw sponding convolutions in the hemispheres. This is the generally accepted view; but At Hy VK f 4 Professor Hamilton of Aberdeen has recently (f A } (\ NN is gh! stated that his preparations show that there 9 it (h I} Al! \A is no such commissural system between con- t { A 4 \i volutions, and that the fibres decussating in the corpus callosum are not continued to convolutions on the other side, but pass downwards. (b) The fibres of the anterior commissure wind backwards through the lenticular nuclei to reach the convolutions round the Sylvian fissure. (c) The fibres of the posterior commissure run through the optic thalami.! , Arrangement and Structure of Grey Mat-

ter.—The grey matter in the medulla and basal ganglia has been already considered.

Wy

surface of the cerebrum, and forms the outer portion of all the convolutions. The cor- tical substance consists of cells and fibres imbedded in a matrix similar to the neuroglia of the spinal cord. It may be divided into five layers, which merge into each other by almost insensible gradations, The most cx- ternal layer consists of delicate nerve-fibres, neuroglia, and a few small round cells desti- tute of processes (see fig. 28). Going deeper we find cells of a characteristic pyramidal , form, the largest being in the deepest

layer. ” Their bases are turned inwards, and their apices towards the surface of the convolu- tion. Cleland states that fibres passing from the apices are continuous with the delicate fibres found on the very surface of the cor- tex. In tne ascending frontal convolu- tions Betz and Mierzejewski have found : pyramidal cells two or three times larger = than those of other regions of the cortex, and these have been termed “ giant-cells.” All the pyramidal cells, no doubt, anasto- pyg, 98 mose by their processes, and give origin to Vertic the nerve-fibres of the white substance, but it is rarely possible to trace the fibres from cell to cell. A consideration of these ana- tomical facts, along with those mentioned in connexion with the comparative anatomy of the brain, shows that the cerebral hemi- spheres are in intimate connexion by fibres with all the other portions of the cerebro- spinal system. Further, they are not on’y intricate in structure themselves, but the the claustrum); m, me- commissural sets of fibres indicate that dulary lamina,” ”

there is harmony of function between one part and another. In

—(After Meynert.) Vertical section of a fur- row of third cerebral con- volution of man. 1, layer of scattered small corti- cal corpuscles; 2, layer of close-set sinall pyra-

mnidal corpuscles; 3, layer of large pyramidal cortical corpuscles; 4, layer of small close-set irregular-shaped corpus- cles ; 5, layer of fusiform corpuscles (like those in

1 In preparing the foregoing sketch of the fibres of tl ri Ti is much indebted to Ross, Diseases of the Nervous 8) on ng hain ia

determining the function of so complicated an apparatus recourse must be had to the evidence (1) of development, (2) of compara- tive anatomy, (3) of human anatomy, (4) of the observed effects of disease before and after death, and (5) of experiment. Facts have already been collected from the first three of these fields of inquiry, all tending to show that the grey matter of the hemi- sphere is associated with the manifestation of intelligence in it various forms. The phenomena of disease support the same con. clusion. Diseases producing slow changes in the layer of grey matter on the cortex are invariably associated with mental disturb. ance, such as melancholia, mania, or dementia. If the grey matter be suddenly injured or submitted to compression, as by a blow causing fracture and depression of a portion of the skull, or the effusion of fluid consequent on inflammation, unconsciousness is a certain result. So long as the pressure continues there is no con- sciousness ; if it be removed, consciousness may soon return. On the other hand, if the disease affect the white matter of the central portions or the ganglia at the base, there may be paralysis or con- vulsions without consciousness being affected. All the facts, therefore, of pathology relating to the brain indicate that the grey matter on the surface of the hemispheres is the organ of conscious ness and of all mental operations. This statement

is nowan axiom of medical science, and the basis of the rational treatment of the insane and of all maladies of the central nervous organs.

Two methods of experiment upon the cerebrum have usually been followed, and both have yielded important results.

(a.) Removal.—Flourens and the older observers were aware of Ren the fact that as successive slices of grey matter are removed fromofgy

the surface of the cere- brum an animal be- comes more dull and stupid, until at last all indications of percep- tion and volition dis- appear. A pigeon in this condition (see fig. 29), if carefully fed, may live for many months; to quote from —==Sa=e= . = Dalton – : = “The effect of this muti- F1a. 29.— Pigeon, in which the cerebrum has bee lation is simply to plunge injured or removed. the animal into a state of profound stupor, in which it is almost entirely inattentive to surrounding objects. The bird remains sitting motionless upon his perch or standing upon the ground, with the eyes closed and the head sunk between the shoulders, The plumage is smooth and glossy, but is uniformly expanded by a kind of erection of the feathers, so that the body appears somewhat puffed out, and larger than natural. Occasionally the bird opens its eyes with a vacant stare, stretches its neck, perhaps shakes its bill once or twice, or smooths down the

ey upon its shoulders, and then relapses into its former apathetic con- dition.”

Similar observations have also been made on reptiles and mammals, but the latter survive the operation for a comparatively short time. In watching such an animal it is difficult to divest one’s mind of the belicf that it still feels and sees and hears. It may be observed that it rarely makes movements unless stimulated from without, Thus it may remain motionless for many hours ; but if pushed, or gently touched, it moves. As remarked by Prof. M. Foster— ‘“No image, either pleasant or terrible, whether of food or of an enemy, pro duces any effect, on it, other than that of an object reflecting more or less light. And, though the plaintive character of the cry which it gives forth when pinched suggests to the observer the existence of passion, it is probable thatis. a wrong interpretation of a vocal action ; the cry appears plaintive, simply be- cause, in consequence of the completeness of

the reflex nervous machinery and the absence of the usual restraints, it is prolonged. The animal is able to execute all its ordinary bodily movements, but in its performance nothing 1s ever seen to indicate the retention of an educated intelligence.”

(b.) Electrical Stimulation of Surface of Brain.—It is remarkable Blecis that, although many of the early workers in cerebral physiology stint stimulated the surface of the brain by electric currents, they tion Mattencci, Longet, brill Weber, Budge, Schiff, and others taught that irritation of the surfie

observed no effect, and therefore Magendie,

surface of the hemispheres called forth no muscular movements; and it was generally accepted that the grey matter on the cortex of the brain was entirely concerned in the phenomena of sensation, volition, and intellectual action. During the Franco-German wat in 1870 Hitzig had occasion to apply galvanism to a portion of the exposed brain of a wounded soldier, and he observed contrac tions of the muscles of the eyeball. When peace was restored, experiments Were made on the lower animals by Hitzig and F ritsch, in which a portion of exposed brain was irritated by 4 continuous current, and it was observed that the phenomena took place on opening and closing the current. By these experiments the German observers discovered that, when certain areas of grey matter were stimulated, contractions of certain muscles occurred, and they were thus able to map out areas for grotips of muscles. Immediately afterwards the research was taken up by Professor David Ferrier of King’s College, London, who, using a Faradaic instead of a continuous current, greatly extended the field of Inquiry, and obtained many important results, which are not only

|

i

1

J

of value in cerebral physiology but have been successfully applied to the diagnosis of various diseases of the nervous system. The motor areas as determined by Ferrier in the monkey are shown in fig. 30. Dr Ferrier has also indicated the corresponding motor areas in man by carefully comparing the convolutions with those of the monkey.! An inspection of the figures shows that the areas which, when stimu- lated, give rise to definite movements are distributed only over a part of the cortex. As stimulation gives rise to no movements over other regions of the brain, these have been assumed to be conneeted with psychi- cal states, such as sensation, volition, &c. Much controversy has arisen as to the real

Fia. 30.—A. Li ft hemisphere of monkey. B. Upper surface of hemisphere of monkey. The numbers in A and Bcorrespond. 1, advance of opposite leg as in walking; 2, complex movements of thigh, leg, and foot, with adapted movements of trunk; 3, movements of tail; 4, retraction and adduction of opposite fore-limb; 5, extension forward of opposite arm and hand, as if to reach or touch something in front; a, 0, ¢, d, individual and combined move- ments of fingers and wrists, ending in clenching of fist ; 6, supination and flexion of forearm, by which the hand is raised towards the mouth ; 7, action of zygomatics, by which the angle of the mouth is retracted and elevated ; 8, elevation of ala of nose and upper lip, with depression of lower lip, so as to expose the canine teeth on the opposite side ; 9, opening of mouth with protrusion of tongue ; 10, opening of mouth with retraction of tongue ; 11, retraction of angle of mouth ; 12, eyes opening widely, pupils dilating, head and eyes turning towards opposite side ; 13, 13’, eyeballs moving to opposite side,—pupils generally contracting ; 14; sudden retraction of opposite ear ; 15, subiculum cornu ammonis,— torsion of lip and nostril on same side. (Ferrier.)

nature of these so-called ‘‘ motor areas.” It has been clearly ascer-

tained that the effects are not due to diffusion of the electric currents influencing other parts of the brain. That there is to some extent such

diffusion between the electrodes there can be no doubt, but the exact correspondence between the area stimulated and the

movements produced, and the fact that shifting the electrodes a

very short distance to one side or another is followed by different

results, show that the effect is somehow owing to changes excited by the electric current in that particular area of grey matter.

Hitzig, Ferrier, and others have also found that removal of the

layer of grey matter of a ‘‘ motor centre” is followed by enfeeble-

ment of the movements assigned to the area, but in the course of

a few days the paralytic symptoms disappear. The latter effect

cannot be due to the corresponding centre on the opposite side

taking up the work ‘‘as subsequent destruction of the latter pro- duced the usual paralysis on the side opposite to the lesion, but

did not cause a repetition of the paralysis on the side opposed to

the first lesion” (Carville and Duret). It would appear, therefore,

that after destruction of a centre on one side some other part of the same hemisphere may take up the functions of the destroyed part. Goltz of Strasburg has removed large portions of the grey eortex (even to the extent of almost the whole of one hemisphere) by a jet of water so as to avoid hemorrhage, and still recovery of motor power took place after a time, although there remained

‘‘clumsiness in the execution of certain movements.” His opinion

is that the paralytic phenomena are caused by the injury exciting

an inhibitory aetion on lower centres. This view, substantially that advocated for many years by Brown-Séquard does not explain why it is that gentle irritation of the centre by a weak Faradaic current calls forth movements of a definite character. The evidence, therefore, is strongly in favour of the view that there are definite motor areas of grey matter on the cortex,—that is, in ordinary circumstances these areas are intimately related to specific muscles or groups of muscles. It is quite possible, however, that each group o muscles does not depend on one area alone, but on several, whilst it is more intimately related to one than to the others. This would account also for the fact that movements of a group of muscles re be excited by stimulation of other areas than those mapped out

y Ferrier and Hitzig. Recently areas associated with definite move- ments of the thorax, abdomen, and pelvis have been discovered by

PFReeyeroLo

Al

Ferrier has also attempted to differentiate sensory centres.

and associated movements of the head, and he regarded the pheno- mena as being "' merely reflex movements on the excitation of sub- jective visual sensation." He then found that, '' when the angular gyrus of the left hemisphere was destroyed, the animal was blind on the right eye soon after the operation, but recovered sight com- pletely on the following day." On destroying the angular gyri of both hemispheres, an animal became permanently blind in both eyes. In neither case was there motor paralysis. By similar processes of thought and experiment he placed the auditory centre in the superior temporo-sphenoidal convolution, the centres of taste and smell at the extremity of the temporo-sphenoidal lobe, and that of touch in the gyrus uncinatus and hippocampus major. On the other hand, Goltz asserts that even after removal of a con- siderable part of the cortex the animal is not actually blind, but suffers from an imperfection of sight; and he states that he "can no more obtain distinct evidence of localization in reference to vision or other sensations than in reference to movements." Ferrier's view is supported by the observations of Munk, who finds that destruction of a considerable portion of the occipital lobes causes blindness.

Munk has put forth the important distinction that there may be blindness in the sense of total deprivation of vision, and “psychical blindness,” or the ‘inability to form an intelligent comprehension of the visual impressions received”; and he supposes that the grey matter of the cortex over the occipital isten tint to do with the elaboration of simple visual impressions into perceptions. In like manner he concludes that other parts of the cortex may have to do with the elaboration of tactile, olfactory, gustatory, and auditory sensations. This is a likely hypothesis, and not very dissimilar to what has been held for many years, the only novelty being that there is localization in these actions. At present the question cannot be regarded as settled ; but it may be stated generally that the posterior portion of the brain has to do chiefly with the reception of sensory impressions, and the middle and lateral regions with the transmission outwards of motor impulses, But there still remains the anterior portion. Electrical irritation of the pre-frontal region of the cortex in the moukey causes no motor reaction. Complete destruction causes no paralysis of motion and no sensory disturbance. Dr Ferrier states :—

‘Removal or destruction by the cautery of the antero-frontal lobes is not followed by any definite physiological results. The animals retain their appetites and instincts; and are capable of exhibiting emotional feeling. The sensory faculties—sight, hearing, touch, taste, and smell—remain unimpaired. The powers of voluntary motion are retained in their integrity, and there is little to indicate the presence of such an extensive lesion or a removal of so large a part of the brain. And yet, notwithstanding this apparent absence of physiological symptoms, I could perceive a very decided alteration in the animal’s character and behaviour, though it is difficult to state in precise terms the nature of the change. The animals operated on were scleeted on account of their intelligent character. After the operation, though they might seem to one who had not eompared their present with the past fairly up to the average

of monkey intelligence, they had undergone a considerable psychological altera- tion. Instead of, as before, being actively interested in their surroundings, and curiously prying into all that came within the field of their observation, they remained apathetic or dull, or dozed off to sleep, responding only to sensations or impressions of the moment, or varying

their listlessness with restless and purposeless wanderings to and fro. While not actually deprived of intelli- gence, they had lost to all appearance the faculty of attentive and intelligent observation ” (Functions of the Brain, 1st ed., p. 231).

Thus the frontal lobes appear to have to do with cognition and intellectual action. If so, the grey matter on the surface of the brain may be mapped out into three great areas—an area concerned in cognitions, and volitions in front, a motor or ideo-motor area in the middle, and a sensory area behind. These distinctions are no doubt arbitrary to a considerable extent ; but, if they are retained as the expressions of a working hypothesis, they are of service. Long ago, and prior to the researches above alluded to, Dr Hughlings Jackson pointed out that disease of certain areas of grey matter on the cortex of the hemispheres may occasion epileptiform convulsions, localized to particular groups of museles. The theory of the localization of motor functions has been of great service in the diagnosis and prognosis of such diseases. As to the localization of the faculty of language in the third left frontal convolution, founded on pathological evidence, see APHASIA, vol. ii. p. 171.

The functions of the nervous system have now been described ; but they are so complicated and so closely related to each other as to make it no easy matter to form a conception of the system working as a whole. The progress of discovery naturally tends to differentiation, and probably to attach too much importance to one organ as compared with the others, so that we are in danger of losing sight of the solidarity of the whole nervous system. Probably every nervous action, however minute and evanescent, affects more or less the entire system, and thus there may be an under-current of nervous action streaming into and out of the nerve-centres, along with a perpetual series of interactions in the centres them- selves, contributing to and accounting for the apparent continuity

On Sensory stimulating the angular gyrus he obtained movements of the eye centres.

Horsley and Sehifer, and thus almost all the muscular mechanisms

; : of conscious experience. Certain relations of one nerve-centre to have been connected with some of the cerebral convolutions. P

the others are indicated in fig. 31. No one now déubts that con- Consciousness has an anatomical substratum, but the great problein scious- of the relation between the two is as far from solution as in the ness.

XIX. — 6

1 For figures of human brain showing motor areas, see Foster’s Physt stol 4th ed., figs. 86 and 87, pp. 627, 628. ; mt = Ge

Cireula- tion in brain.

42

days when little or nothing was known of the physiology of the nervous system. Consciousness has been driven step by step upwards until now it takes refuge 5 in a few thousand nerve-cells in a portion of the grey matter of the cortex of the brain. The ancients believed that the body partici- pated in the feelings of the mind, and that, in a real sense, the heart : might be torn by contending Ag emotions. As science advanced, consciousness took refuge in the Maays brain, first in the medulla and lastly in the cortex. But even supposing we are ultimately able KIB to understand all the phenomena —chemical, physical, physiologi- cal—of this intricate ganglionic mechanism we shall be no neare1 a solution of the problem of the connexion between the objective and subjective aspects of the phenomena. It is no solution to resolve a statement of the phenomena into mental terms

or expressions aud to be content with pure idealism ; nor is it any better to resolve all the pheno- mena of mind into terms describ- ing physical conditions, as in pure materialism. A philosophy : “4 : eee nie Bae j . Fia. 81.—M., muscle; SK., skin ; CE ay

that Tecognizes ong i nm P = reflex centre A INH., inhibitory centre; ctl ee mutua Sousa ee MOT., motor centre; G.SE., centre of ever interacting, may be no ex- general sensation; S.SH., centre of planation ; but at all events it is ora ee ms — ra

4 y ° ibrium; ay ¥ re; vam oe pare atin: peel facts, emotional centre ; ID., ideational cen- and does not delude the mind by tre; EY., eye; EA., ear; TA., taste ; offering a solution which is no SM., smell; V., vessel; G., gland; solution at all. But apart from &V., heart and hy he pd the ultimate question there is the {7 Organs In Borne ese ee Ly fol. t q indicate direction of currents, by fol- important one of whether phy- lowing which the influence of one siologists are on the whole right centre over another may be studied. in relegating sensation or consciousness entirely to the grey matter of the brain. The facts of comparative physiology are against such an exclusive notion, because we cannot deny consciousness to many animals having rudimentary nervous systems. As already said, research in anatomy and physiology and the observation of disease have driven physiologists to adopt the view that the brain is the organ of sensation. This is no doubt true in the sense that it ultimately receives all those nervous impressions that result in consciousness ; but the parts transmitting the nervous impressions are in another sense as much concerned in the produc- tion of conscious states as the brain. This view of the matter, put forward by Professor John Cleland in 1870, has not received from psychologists the attention it deserves, His thesis is— “‘that the consciousness extends from its special seat so far as there is con- tinuity of the impressed condition ; that when an irritation is applied to a nerve-extremity in a finger or elsewhere the impression (or rather impressed condition) travels, as is generally understood, but exists for at least a moment along the whole length of the nerve, and that as soon as there is continuity of the impressed condition from finger to brain the consciousness is in connexion with the nerve and is directly aware of the irritation at the nerve-extremity ” (Evolution, Expression, and Sensation, Glasgow, 1881, p. 106). This view is quite consistent with all the facts of nervous physio- logy and presents fewer difficulties than the one generally held, which drives consciousness into the recesses of the nerve-cells in the cortex of the cerebral hemispheres. It appears to kcep clear of the prevailing error in the philosophy of modern physiology, —that of regarding the body and even the nervous system as a vast series of almost independent organs, losing sight of the community of function and interdependence of parts, characteristic of the body of one of the higher animals.

CIRCULATION IN THE BRAIN.

A due supply of healthy arterial blood and the removal of venous blood are essential to cerebral activity. The brain is contained in an osseous case of which the total capacity is variable. The cere- bral substance undergoes almost insignificant changes of volume even under a pressure of 180 mm. of mercury. The quantity of blood in the cranium may vary. In the rabbit not more than 1 per cent. of the total qnantity of blood of the body (equal to about 5 per cent. of the total weight of the organ) is present at any one time in the brain, whereas in the kidney, by weight, the blood may amount to nearly 12 per cent., and in the liver to as much as nearly 30 per cent. (Foster). If a small round window be made in the cranium and a suitable piece of glass fitted into it, the veins of the pia mater may be observed to dilate or contract if inter- mediate pressure be made on the veins of the neck. There is

evidently, then, within the cranium some arrangement by which such variations become possible. This is probably accomplished by the anatomical arrangements of the sub-arachnoid spaces. These spaces, containing fluid, communicate freely with each other and with the space surrounding the spinal cord, so that when the quan- tity of blood increases in the cranium a corresponding quantity of fluid escapes into the spinal space, the walls of which are not inextensible like those of the cranium. In young children, before the fontanelles are closed, the variations of circulation and blood- pressure cause pulsations, of which there are two kinds—those coinciding with the ventricular systole, produced by the pulsation of the arteries at the base of the brain, and those coinciding with expiration. Pressure on the brain-substance beyond a limit leads to paralysis, unconsciousness, and death. The large sinuses prob- ably assist in equalizing internal pressure, and, as inspiration favours the flow of blood from the sinuses, too great distension of these is also avoided. Vaso-motor nerves regulate the calibre of the arteri- oles of the brain, but we know nothing of the conditions affecting the nerves. Nor do we know how the waste-products of the brain are got rid of. There are no lymphatic vessels, but there are spaces around many of the vessels. These probably

communicate with the cavities in the membrane containing the cerebro-spinal fluid, the value of which, as suggested by Foster, ‘‘ depends in all prob- ability more on its physiological properties as lymph than on its

2 4 2

1 ex RA c Kt ” A val Ne cs Nui)

fm ae

ee Lge EG

ZS wei

\? MWA lhe } Hi ies

Fy. TA Ys

Zl

bo om : IW (thea ae ” Rhy ie) N

ZT Tp eal

DY wip hog eH 8 Seip Nie lice } i Re od RSS

ae AD |

a =

) Aa is NN | A Re

ih

bo — ee

==

2th

=

‘

.,

‘.

..

‘.

Fig. 82.—Injected convolution of cerebrum (Duret). 1, 1, medullary arteries; l’, group of medullary arteries in fissure between two neighbouring con- volutions; 1”, arteries of system of arcuate fibres; 2, 2, 2, arteries of grey substance of cortex; a, large-meshed capillary network situated under pia niater; b, smaller-meshed capillary network situated in middle layers of cortex ; c, somewhat larger network in internal layers adjoining white sub- stance ; d, capillary network of white substance.

mechanical properties as a mere fluid.” The grey matter is much more richly supplied with capillaries than the white matter, as seen in fig. 32.

CRANIAL NERVES.

7

The general anatomy of these nerves is described under ANATOMY, Crania vol. i. p. 880 sg., and it remains only to enumerate their functions. nervs

Their deep roots have also been alluded to in treating of the medulla oblongata and the pons Varolii above.

1. The olfactory nerve. The nerve of smell (see SMELL).

2. The optic nerve. The nerve of sight (see EYE).

8. The oculo-motor or third nerve,—motor, supplying all the muscles of the eyeball except the superior oblique and external rectus ; it also supplies the circular fibres of the iris and the ciliary muscle (see EY).

4, a pathetic or fourth nerve,—motor, supplying the superior oblique muscle.

_5. The trigeminal or fifth nerve. It has three branches: (A) The ophthalmic division of the fifth, or nerve of Willis, is sensory and supplies (a) the skin of the forehead, the eyebrow, the upper eyelid, the root and lobule of the nose; (b) the palpebral and ocular conjunctiva, the mucous membrane of the lacrymal passages, the frontal sinuses, the upper part of the nasal mucous membrane; (c) the cornea, the iris, the choroid, and the sclerotic; (d) the periosteum and bones of the frontal, orbital, and nasal regions ; and (e) muscular sensibility to the intra-orbital muscles. It also influences the secretion of the lacrymal gland. It contains the fibres from the sympathetic governing the radiating fibres of the iris (see Eyk), and also the vaso-motor fibres for the iris, choroid, and retina. It is associated with the otic ganglion. (B) The supertor maxillary division of the fifth furnishes sensory branches to (a) the skin of the lower eyelid, alee of the nose, upper lip, and skin covering the malar bone; (0) the mucous membrane of the nasal, pharyngeal, and palatine regions, the maxil- lary sinuses, the gums, the upper lip, and the Eustachian tube ; (c) the peri- osteum ofthe bones corresponding to its distribution ; and (d) the teeth of the upper jaw. It furnishes filaments to the nasal and palatine glands, and prob-

1

1S.

y 28 Y (¢ ram,

VEGETABLE. |

ably to the glands of the velum palati. It contains vaso-motor fibres from the sympathetic for the vessels, and is associated with the spheno- palatine ganglion. (C) The inferior moaillary division of the fifth contains sensory branches to (a) the skin of the cheeks, temples, lower lip, chin, front part of

the ear, and external auditory canal ; (6) the mucous membrane of the cheeks, lips, gums, front part of the tongue, the mucous membrane of the tympanum, and the mastoid cells ; (c) the periosteum of the lower jaw and temporal bones ; (d) the teeth of the lower jaw ; (e) the temporo-maxillary articulation ; and (f) the muscles in the neighbourhood (muscular sensibility). It thus exercises an influence on taste, hearing, and secretion (see Nutrition). It contains vaso-motor fibres for the blood-vessels. Its motor branch is distributed to the muscles of mastication; and it is related to two ganglia, the otic and the sub-maxillary.

6. The sixth nerve is motor, and supplies the external rectus muscle of the eyeball only. .

7. The facial or seventh nerve is purely motor, and supplies all the muscles of expression. Italso contains secretory fibres influencing the action of the salivary glands (see NuTriTion). Some assert that the chorda tympani con- tains gustatory fibres, but the question has not been settled. Claude Bernard found that the facial contains vaso-motor fibres. ”

8. The auditory or eighth nerve is the nerve of hearing (see Ear). In addition to purely auditory filaments it contains fibres from the semicircular canals having to do with impressions of movement in space (see pp. 38, 39).

9. The glosso-pharyngeal nerve is sensory to (a) the mucous membrane of the posterior part of the tongue (nerve of taste), the pillars of the fauces, the anterior face of the epiglottis, and the tonsils; and (6) the mucous membrane of the tympanum, the fenestra ovalis and fenestra rotunda (see Bar), the mastoid cells, and the Eustachian tube along with the fifth. It probably supplies motor fibres to the muscles of the pharynx, but this is doubtful. Vulpian states that it contains vaso-dilator fibres for the vessels of the posterior third of the tongue.

10. The pnewmogastric or vagus nerve has any complicated actions. (A) Itis sensitive to (a) the mucous membrane of all the respiratory passages, includ- ing specially the larynx; (b) the heart; (c) a portion of the digestive tube, namely, the base of the tongue, the velum palati, the pharynx, cesophagus, stomach, and probably the duodenum ; (d) it confers muscular sensibility on the muscles to which it is distributed ; (e) the mucous

membrane of the biliary passages; (f)a part of the dura mater corresponding to the transverse and occipital sinuses; (g) the posterior part of the auditory canal. By the laryn- geal branches it specially stimulates expiratory movements. (B) It is motor to (a) many of tle muscles of the palate ; (b) the constrictors of the pharynx ; (c) the cesophagus ; (d) the larynx by (a) the superior laryngeal to the crico-

thyroid muscle and a portion of the arytenoid, and by (8) the inferior or recurrent laryngeal to the rest of the muscles of the larynx; and (e) to the muscular fibres of the bronchial tubes. (C) It contains vaso-inhibitory fibres for the heart. In connexion with this organ the vagus also contains sensory fibres and fibres belonging to the depressor system. (D) It influences secretion in the stomach (see Nurririon); but it is doubtful whether it has any action on the renal secretion. (E) It influences the production of glycogen in the liver (see NuTriT10N).

11. The spinal accessory is a motor nerve supplying the sterno-cleido-mastoid muscle and the trapezius. It gives an important branch to the vagus (tnternal braueh), which supplies all the motor fibres in that nerve distributed to the larynx, except those in the superior laryngeal supplying the crico- thyroid muscle, and also the motor fibres of the vagus sent to the pharynx. Accord- ing to Heidenhain, it also supplies the vagus with the inhibitory cardiac fibres.

12. The hypoglossal is exclusively a motor nerve supplying the muscles of the tongue and also the sub-hyoid muscles (see Anatomy). It also contains vaso-motor filaments.

SpinaAL NERVES.

The spinal cord gives origin in its course to thirty-one pairs of spinal nerves, each nerve having two roots, anterior and posterior, the latter being distinguished by its greater thickness and by the presence of an enlargement called a ganglion, in which are found numerous bi-polar cells. The anterior root is motor, the posterior sensory. The mixed nerve after junction of the roots contains (#) sensory fibres passing to the posterior roots ; (6) motor fibres com- ing from the anterior roots; (¢) sympathetic fibres, either vaso-motor or vaso-dilator.

SYMPATHETIC SYSTEM.

The fibres of the sympathetic system consist of two kinds—(1) of grey or gelatinous fibres, destitute of the white substance of Schwann ; and (2) of medullated fibres similar to those met with in the cerebro-spinal centres. The grey fibres originate in the ganglia so prevalent in the sympathetic system, whilst the medullated fibres arc believed to come from the cerebro - spinal system. The trunk of the great sympathetic nerve consists of a chain of swellings or ganglia, connected by intermediate cords of grey nerve-fibres, and extending nearly symmetrically on each side of the vertebral column, from the base of the cranium to the

etm Yet OwmOe Y

coceyx. On this part of the nerve twenty-four ganglia are placed on each side. This great trunk, as it passes along the spine, is connected with the spinal nerves, the connecting fibres being of the two kinds already described. The grey fibres dominate in the sympathetic nerves, and the medullated in the cerebro-spinal ; and these two elements are mixed in various proportions in both of the great divisions of the nervous system. At their lower extremities the main trunks of opposite sides generally unite in the middle line ; and at the upper ends each trunk, after being connected with the eighth and ninth cranial nerves, extends to the cranium, passes into that cavity along with the internal carotid artery, and there, as well as in other situations, comes into connexion with all the remaining cranial nerves, except the olfactory, auditory, and optic. This conjunction may be cffected directly, as with the fourth, sixth, and ninth nerves; or through a ganglion, as the ophthalmic, with the third and fifth ; the spheno-palatine, otic, and sub-maxillary, with the fifth and seventh, or facial; the geniculate, with the seventh or facial; the jugular, with the glosso- pharyngeal; and with the vagus, through one of its own ganglia. On the fibres of the sympathetic distributed to the viscera numerous ganglia, or plexuses in which ganglia exist, are met with, and frequently there is a plexus following the course of each vessel.

As to the functions of the sympathetic, experiment has led to the following conclusions. ;

(a.) The vaso-motor fibres of the head are supplied by the cervical portion of the sympathetic, and originate in the cervical region of the cord, proceeding from it by the anterior roots of the lower cervical and upper dorsal nerves. The fibres supplying the radiat- ing fibres of the iris also come from that region (see Eyr).

(b.) The vaso-motors of the upper limbs and of the thorax come (a) from the inferior cervical and superior thoracic ganglia, and (8) from the cord, by communicating branches between the third and seventh dorsal vertebre.

(e.) The vaso-motor fibres of the lower limbs come from the cord through the sciatic and crural nerves, whilst those of the pelvic organs are derived from the abdominal ganglia of the Stilt gay

(d.) The vaso-motors of the abdominal viscera exist chiefly in the splanchnic nerves; some fibres supplying the stomach appear to be derived from the pneumogastric.

(e.) The splanchnie nerves all arise in man from the thoracic ganglia of the sympathetic—the greater splanchnic from the fifth to the tenth ganglia, the lesser splanchnic from the tenth and eleventh, and the smallest splanchnic from the twelfth ganglion. The splanchnics supply the stomach, liver, spleen, pancreas, intestines, and kidneys. Division causes dilatation of vessels ; irritation causes contraction of vessels, and appears also to arrest or inhibit peristaltic motions of the stomach and intestines. Probably they also contain secretory filaments. The functions of vaso-motor nerves have been already described.

A very complete bibliography of works relating to the nervous system will be found in the Dictionnaire Encyclopédique des Sciences Médicales, 2d ser., xii. p. 619. For the comparative anatomy of invertebrates consult Gegenbauer, Elements of Comparative Anatomy (trans. and rev. by F. Jeffrey Bell aud E. Ray Lankester, London, 1878); for the comparative auatomy of vertebrates, Owen, Anatomy of Vertebrates (3 vols., London, 1866); for details in human anatomy, Quain, Elements of Anatomy (9th ed.,

ed. by Allen Thomson, E. A. Schafer, and G. D. Thane, London, 1882); for general physiology, Foster, Teat-Book of Physio- logy (4th eq., London, 1883); for special details in physiology, H. Beaunis, Nouveaux Eléments de Physiologie Humaine (2d ed., Paris, 1881) ; (specially for the functions of the cranial nerves) Flint, Physiology of Man (vol. v.. New York, 1872); Ferrier, On the Functions of the Brain (London, 1876, also new ed.); Meynert, "On the Brain of Mammals," in Stricker's Manual of Human and Comparative Histology (vol. ii., the New Syd. Soc., London, 1872); Flechsig, Die Leitungsbahnen im Gehirn und Riickenmark des Menschen (Leipsic, 1876), also "Zur Anatomie und Entwickelungsgeschichte der Leitungsbahnen im Grosshirn des Menschen," in Du Bois-Reymond's Archiv fiir Anatomie (Leipsic, 1881); Gudden, "'Experimentaluntersuchungen tiber das peripherische und centrale Nervensystem," in Arch. f. Psychiatrie (vol. ii., 1869, p. 713); Hitzig, Untersuchungen tiber das Gehirn (new series, 1874); Goltz, '' Ueber die Verricht- ungen des Grosshirns," in Pfliiger's Archiv (1876), also "'The discussion on the localization of function in the cortex cerebri," in Trans. of Inter. Med. Cong. (vol. i., 1881, p. 218); Munk, Ucber die Functionen der Grosshirnrinde

(Berlin, 1881); Ross, Treutise on the Diseases of the Nervous System (2d ed., London, 1883). (J. G. M.)

PART IIL—PHYSIOLOGY OF PLANTS.

Tue body of a plant, like that of an animal, consists of one or more structural units which are termed ' cells," and in plants, as in animals, the cell consists essentially of an individualized mass of protoplasm.

The probable structure and chemical composition of protoplasm have been already considered. It need only be stated here that the protoplasmic cell-contents do not consist of pure protoplasm, but that the protoplasm con- tains imbedded in it particles of various substances which may be of the nature of food, or which may have been formed from food, or which are products of the metabolism of protoplasm ; it is to the presence of these particles that

the granular appearance of protoplasm is largely due. Moreover, there is present in the protoplasm of the cell, in the vast majority of cases at least, a well-defined, highly- refractive, usually somewhat spherical body, also proto- plasmic in nature, the nucleus.

The cell or cells constituting the body of a plant pre- sent, in most cases, the important peculiarity that the protoplasm is enclosed in a membrane termed the “cell- wall.” This membrane does not consist of protoplasm, but of a substance, cellulose, belonging to the group of the carbohydrates, and having the formula zC,H,,O,. All cell-walls do not, however, consist exclusively of this sub-

Fune-

tions of

sympa- thetic.

Cell- walls.

Struc- ture of cell.

Funce- tions of cells,

4A

stance, though this is probably always the case at their first formation ; but the cell-wall may undergo consider- able modification during the life of the cell. It may, for example, undergo lignification ; it then comes to consist largely of a substance termed “lignin,” which is much richer in carbon than is cellulose; this takes place typically in those cells which form woody or sclerenchymatous tissue. Or it may undergo cuticularization, when it comes to consist largely of a substance termed “‘suberin ” or “ cutin,” which, like lignin, is richer in carbon than cellulose. Or, again, it may become gummy or mucilaginous. These chemical differences are accompanied by differences in the physical properties of the cell-wall. A cellulose cell-wall is extensible, capable of swelling from taking up water into itself by imbibition, and is readily traversed by water. A lignified or cuticularized

cell-wall is more rigid and less capable of swelling by imbibition ; moreover, a cuticularized cell-wall is almost impermeable to water. A gummy or mucilaginous cell-wall is more extensible and more capable of swelling by imbibition.

The structure of the plant-cell is not the same at all periods of its life. When a cell is young the protoplasm occupies the whole of the cavity enclosed by the cell-wall. But in the course of growth the increase in bulk of the protoplasm is not nearly so great as the increase in sur- face of the cell-wall, so that in the mature cell the proto- plasmic contents form merely a rather thin layer known as the primordial utricle, which lies in close contact with the internal surface of the cell-wall at all points. There thus comes to be a relatively large cavity in the cell, the vacuole, which is filled with a liquid, the cedl-sap, consisting of water holding various substances, organic and inorganic, in solution. The structure of a mature living cell is then this: it consists of a cell-wall, lined with a layer of protoplasm, which encloses the vacuole, filled with cell-sap.

The protoplasm of plants is endowed with all those fundamental properties which are possessed by that of animals. When a plant is unicellular these properties are all exhibited, so far as they are necessary to the main- tenance of the organism, by its protoplasm; in other words, all the necessary vital functions are performed by the protoplasm of the single cell of which the plant con- sists. The performance of all the necessary vital functions by the protoplasm of one cell obtains also in the case of not a few multicellular plants,—in those, namely, in which all the cells are similar to each other in structure and contents. In the great majority of multicellular plants, however, the functions are distributed to a greater or a less extent; there is more or less complete physiological division of labour. In these plants the cells are not all similar in appearance, and their diversity is to be ascribed to their adaptation in different ways to the performance of parti- cular functions. Further, the cells which have undergone modification in some particular direction for the perform- ance of some particular function are grouped together in certain parts of the plant, and these parts are spoken of as “organs.” ‘Thus the roots of one of the higher plants are the organs for the absorption from the soil of water and substances in solution ; the leaves are the organs for the absorption of gases from the air, and, in virtue of the

green colouring-matter chlorophyll, which their cells contain, they are also the organs in which certain im- portant constructive processes are carried on. But the extent to which physiological division of labour is car- ried out in plants is not nearly so considerable as it is in animals, and accordingly the protoplasm of the dif- ferent cells of plants exhibits only in a very slight degree that specialization of structure which is so conspicuous in animals.

PiRYesitoOobocy

[VEGETABLE,

Absorption.

1. Absorption of Water and Substances in Solution. —The bodies of plants, unlike those of the great majority of animals, do not contain any internal cavity into which the food may be taken as a preliminary to its being absorbed by the tissues. The materials of the food of plants are therefore taken up directly from without into the cells of

the absorbent organs. The cells which are especially con- Absor. cerned in absorption are, in the higher and subaerial plants, tion by the root-hairs,— thin-walled, unicellular, unbranched fila-1

ments which are developed from the epidermal cells some way behind the growing-point of the root; in the lower plants, and even in those of the higher plants which lie submerged, all the cells of the plant may take part in absorption. Since the food is directly absorbed by the cells, and since the cells all possess a cell-wall, the materials of the food must be taken up in solution. Salts and other substances are, as a natter of fact, taken up by the ab- sorbent cells in the form of watery solutions. Substances which are soluble in water are dissolved in the water which is present in a greater or smaller proportion in all soils, and of those which are not soluble in water many are brought into solution by the acid sap which saturates the walls of the root-hairs. The actual process of absorption is an in-

stanceof diffusion through a membrane,—that is, of osmosis, Osmotis

Only such substances can be absorbed by a root-hair, for instance, as are capable of diffusing not only through the cell-wall but also through the protoplasmic primordial utricle. Further, only such substances can be absorbed by the root-hair as are present in larger proportion in the water to be absorbed than they are in the cell-sap of the root-hair ; this inequality between the proportion of any substance in solution in the liquid on the one side and in that of a membrane on the other is a necessary condition of osmosis. Hence, in order that the absorption of any particular ‘substance by the root-hairs may be continuous, it is necessary that the substance in question should not accumulate in the cell-sap ; this accumulation is prevented either by the actual consumption (¢.¢., chemical decomposi- tion) of the substance in the cell or by the withdrawal of it to supply the needs of adjacent cells. In fact, so far as the process of absorption is concerned, the cell-sap of the internal cells of the root stands in the same relation to the cell-sap of the root-hairs as the cell-sap of the root- hairs does to the external liquid; and, as this relation exists between the successive internal layers of cells, there is set up a current of absorbed substances which travels from the surface towards the centre.

It appears from the foregoing considerations that the amount of any particular salt absorbed in a given time

depends upon (1) its diffusibility and (2) its consumption i

in the plant. Of these two conditions the second is the one which is of real physiological importance, and, if only the given time is sufficiently long, the first condition may be neglected. For instance, let us suppose that a plantis absorbing by its roots two salts—the one (A) being very diffusible, the other (B) much less diffusible—and that, whilst the former undergoes no change in the plant after absorption, the latter is at once decomposed. Now, if the time of observation is short, it may happen that the amount absorbed of the salt A will be found to be greater than that of the salt B; but, if the time be extended, the amount absorbed of the salt B will certainly be found to be greater than that of the salt A. The explanation is that the salt A would at first be absorbed very rapidly, on account of its high diffusibility ; but the absorption of it would gradually diminish, in consequence of the

accumu- lation of it in the cell-sap of the plant, until it ceased alto- gether. The absorption of the salt B, on the other hand,

ts alts,

Cond tions

(

a : absorbed.

|

“VEGETABLE. |

*¢ Jess active at first than that of A, would be continuous,

and thus, over a relatively long period of time, the amount of it absorbed would come to be much greater than that

of A.

As a matter of fact, it has been ascertained that when different salts or other substances are presented to the root of a plant they are absorbed in different quantities. And further, it has been ascertained that the different salts are

absorbed in different proportions by the roots of different

plants ; it is, in fact, upon this that the necessity for the “rotation of crops” depends. A striking illustration of this is afforded by a comparison of the amount of silica present in the ash of equal dry weights of gramineous and leguminous plants. According to Wolff—

100 parts meadow-hay contain 27°01 per cent. of silica.

r wheat-straw i, 50 os ne »» red clover m LL x 0 2 pea-straw ss 6°83 50 ”

The absorption of salts in certain proportions by a plant is the expression of what may be conveniently termed its “specific absorbent capacity.” It must

not be supposed that this term suggests that the roots possess any selective power by which they absorb this salt and reject that one, or by which this one is absorbed in larger proportion than that one, The question as to whether or not a particular sub- stance will be absorbed is a purely physical one, dependent'

' upon the relation between the molecules of the substance

and the cell-wall and primordial utricle which they have to traverse, and in no degree dependent upon the useful- ness or hurtfulness of the substance to the plant. The amount absorbed of any particular substance depends ulti- mately upon the activity with which the plant chemically alters the substance after absorption. To return to the illustration just given. The great difference between the amounts of silica present in the ash of gramineous and of leguminous plants respectively is the expression of the fact that the former are capable of withdrawing relatively large quantities of absorbed silica from the sphere of osmotic activity, and depositing it in the insoluble form in the tissues, whereas the latter can only do so to a comparatively small extent. The specific absorbent capa- city of a plant is simply a manifestation of its specific metabolic properties.

The amount of the various salts absorbed is not, how- ever, exclusively dependent upon the specific absorbent capacity of the plant, for it is materially affected by the composition of the soil. The larger the quantity of any substance presented to the roots, the greater, other things being equal, will be the amount of it absorbed. This does not mean that substances can be absorbed by the roots in solutions of any degree of concentration. It appears that the root-hairs can only absorb very dilute solutions ; but for the watery solution of any salt capable of being absorbed there is a certain degree of concentration at which the proportion of the amount of the salt absorbed to that of the water absorbed is the same as that of the solution. If the solution be more concentrated the propor- tion of water absorbed will be greater, if the solution be more dilute the proportion of salt absorbed will be greater. This is the general "law of absorption" determined by the experiments of De Saussure and of Wolff. It must, however, be borne in mind that, though the proportion of salt absorbed is larger in the case of a dilute than of a more concentrated solution, yet the absolute quantity of it

absorbed from a more concentrated solution in a given time is greater than that absorbed from a dilute solution.

2. Absorption of Gases,—An interchange of gases is con- stantly taking place between the plant and the medium in which it lives—in the case of terrestrial plants, between the plant and the air; in the case of aquatic plants, between

the plant and the water. When the plant is a simple one each of its cells is in direct relation with the external medium ; when it is of complex structure there is usually some means provided by which the more internal cells are brought into relation with it, namely, a coritinuous system of intercellular spaces which communicate with the exterior in terrestrial plants by certain apertures termed “stomata,” in the epidermis of the leaves and young stems, and by others termed “lenticels,” in the cortical tissue of older stems and of roots.

The gases principally absorbed by plants are oxygen and carbon dioxide. The former is absorbed by every living cell, and at all times; the latter is absorbed exclu- sively by cells which contain chlorophyll, and by them only when exposed to light. In the more highly – organized plants the cells which contain chlorophyll are confined almost entirely to the leaves, so that the leaves may be regarded as the organs by which these plants absorb carbon dioxide. It has been held that the stomata are of great importance in promoting the absorption of this gas by the leaves, but the experiments of Boussingault prove that this view is not well founded. He discovered, namely, that the upper surface of the leaves of various plants with which he experimented absorbed carbon dioxide more actively than the lower surface, although the upper surface had scarcely any stomata, whereas they were very numerous on the lower. The absorption of carbon dioxide by the leaves is directly effected by the superficial cells.

Gases, like solid substances, are only absorbed in solu- tion by the cells of plants. They may be brought to the surface of the cell-wall already

dissolved in water, as in the case of submerged plants, or they may be dissolved from the atmosphere by the sap which saturates the cell- wall, as in the case of land-plants; in either case they reach the interior of the cell in solution, When a gas has been taken up at the surface it diffuses throughout the cell- sap; and in the case of a gas like nitrogen, for instance, which is not chemically altered in the cell, the absorption of it will cease when the cell-sap has become saturated with it. If, however, the metabolism of the cell changes the chemical condition of a gas its absorption will be continuous. This accords with what has been said with regard to substances absorbed by the roots.

‘Another analogy exists between the absorption of gases and the absorption of substances in solution, namely, that, just as the root can only absorb a solution below a certain degree of concentration, so the leaf can only absorb a gas below a certain degree of pressure. Let us take in ‘llustration the case of carbon dioxide. The pressure of the carbon dioxide in the air is very slight (0°04 per cent. by volume). It was first observed by Percival that an increase in the quantity of carbon dioxide in the air is favourable to the nutrition of green plants; De Saussure found that a considerable increase is prejudicial; and subsequently Godlewski showed that the optimum proportion is from § to 10 per cent.,—that is, that carbon dioxide is most readily absorbed by the plant when its pressure is about 200 times greater than in ordinary air. Boussingault found that when leaves are exposed to sunlight in an atmosphere of pure carbon dioxide at the ordinary pressure they cannot decompose it, but if the gas is at a low pressure (in his experiment 0°17 mm. of mercury) they can do so.

Besides oxygen and carbon dioxide other gases are also absorbed by plants, but to a small extent only. Nitrogen ss absorbed in small quantities merely in virtue of its solubility and diffusibility ; as mentioned above, it is not in any way acted upon by the cells after its absorption. Tt appears that ammonia may be absorbed from the air in the form of gas by the leaves, and that, when thus absorbed, it contributes to the nutrition of the plant. Other gases,

Oxygen and carbon dioxide.

Absorp- tion of

gases in solution.

Other gases absorbed.

Osmotic circula- tion.

Root- pressure,

such as sulphur dioxide, sulphuretted hydrogen, and hydro- chloric acid, which are occasionally present in the air as impurities, are absorbed by the leaves, as is shown by the pernicious effects which they produce.

Circulation.

It is obviously necessary, in multicellular plants in which certain cells only are in a position to absorb food-materials from without, that these food-materials should be conveyed from the absorbent cells to the remainder of the plant. In no plant is there any organ comparable to the heart of animals by means of which a distribution throughout the tissues of absorbed food-materials is effected. The distribu- tion is accomplished by purely physical means, principally by osmosis. When the cell-sap of a cell becomes charged, by absorption from without or from neighbouring cells, with any substance, diffusion-currents are at once set up between this cell and any adjacent cells the cell-sap of which may contain the substance in question in smaller proportion, and these currents will persist until osmotic equilibrium, as far as this substance is concerned, is estab- lished. The diffusion-currents do not flow in any definite direction, but their course is determined simply by inequali- ties in the chemical composition of the cell-sap of the cells in different parts of the plant. Since in subaerial plants the roots are as a rule the only organs which absorb sub- stances from the soil, and since the cell-sap of their cells is therefore relatively rich in absorbed food-materials, the general direction of the diffusion-currents is from the roots upwards into the stem and leaves.

In cellular plants—that is, in plants which possess no vascular tissue—the distribution of absorbed food-materials is effected solely by osmosis. Many

of these plants are small, so that the distribution is effected from cell to cell with sufficient rapidity by this means. Those of them that are large have a very considerable absorbent surface, many of them being aquatic in habit, so that the absorbed substances have no great distance to travel. In vascular plants, more particularly in those which are subaerial in habit, the distribution of the water, holding substances in solution, which is absorbed by the roots is effected to a considerable extent by means of the vascular system. The forces by which the flow of liquid through the vascular tissue is maintained are the following. ‘The first is the root-pressure. It is a matter of common observation that, when the stems of vascular plants are cut across, particularly in the spring, an escape of water takes place

from the surface of that portion of the stem which still

remains connected with the root, an escape which may persist for some considerable time. It has been ascertained that this outflow of water takes place under considerable pressure ; for instance, Hales observed, in the case of a Vine, that the pressure was sufficiently great to support a column of mercury 324 inches in height. But the root- pressure not only manifests itself by causing a flow of water from the cut surfaces of stems, it also causes in many plants the exudation of drops of water at the free surface. Drops may commonly be seen on the surface of certain Fungi (Pilobolus crystallinus, Penicillium glaucum, Merulius lacrimans), which are exuded in consequence of the hydrostatic pressure set up in the plant by the active absorption effected by the organs (rhizoids) which here perform the functions of roots. Again, drops are frequently to be found on the margins and at the apices of the leaves, especially the younger ones, of many plants, such as Grasses, Aroids, Alchemillas, Saxifrages, &e. That the formation of these drops depends upon the forcing of water upwards through the vessels by the root-pressure is proved by the fact that, if the stem be cut off from the root and then placed with its cut end in water, no more drops will appear

on the leaves. The water thus forced into the vascular system is not pure water, but a watery solution of various substances, principally salts absorbed by the roots. It is therefore obvious that the root-pressure assists in the dis- tribution of these substances throughout the plant.

In order to understand how the root-pressure is set up Sti, it will be necessary to give a brief description of the oft general structure of the root. It consists of a central fibro-vascular cylinder which is surrounded by several layers of parenchymatous cells, the most external of these layers being in contact with the epidermal layer, certain cells of which are developed into root-hairs. Water is absorbed by the root-hairs and passes from them by osmosis into the subjacent parenchymatous cells. It is obvious, however, that osmosis cannot take place between the cells of the innermost layer and the vessels, for the conditions of osmosis are not fulfilled, inasmuch as the vessels at first contain no liquid. The passage of water from the cells into the vessels can only take place by filtration. For this a certain pressure is necessary, and this pressure is set up by the absorbent activity of the root-hairs and of the parenchymatous cells, The system of cells absorbs large quantities of water, more indeed than the cells can contain, so that at length the resistance of the cell-walls is overcome at what is presumably the weakest point, and water filters into the cavities of the vessels of the wood. There it collects, and it may, under certain circumstances, fill the whole vascular system ; then, since absorption is still going on at the surface of the roots, sufficient pressure is set up to cause that exudation of drops on the leaves to which allusion has been made, and, if the stem be cut across, to cause “bleeding” at the cut surface. From the foregoing account it is apparent that the root-pressure is the expres- sion of the absorbent activity of the root-hairs.

But the vessels of the wood do not always contain water, Tm Hales observed that, whereas a Vine will bleed freely if itsS!™” stem be cut across in the month of April, no bleeding is observed if it be cut in July. And yet it cannot be doubted that the plant is absorbing water by its roots more actively in July than in April. The explanation of these facts is that, although in July the plant is absorbing water ae- tively by its roots, yet it is losing so much in the form of vapour from its leaves that water does not accumulate in the cavities of the vessels. This loss of water in the form 4 of vapour from the general surface of the plant exposed to the air is termed “transpiration.” The parts of the plant which are more especially concerned in transpiration are the leaves. By their structure they are peculiarly adapted | for this purpose. The tissue of a leaf is penetrated in

all directions by intercellular spaces, which communicate : directly with the external air by means of the stomata in q the epidermis. In this way a very large surface of moist | and thin cell-wall is brought into contact with the air, a

condition most favourable to evaporation. Some idea of : the activity of transpiration in a plant is afforded by the following determinations made by Hales. In the case of | a Sunflower with a leaf-surface of 5616 square inches the amount of water transpired during twelve hours of daylight was 30 fluid oz. (a pint and a half); in the case of a Cabbage with 2736 square inches of leaf-surface the amount of water transpired in the same time was 25 fiuid oz. The activity of transpiration is very much affected by Light — external conditions,—the moister the air, the smaller willy sin' be the transpiration; and conversely, the drier the air and gion, the higher the temperature, the greater will be the amount

of water transpired. Light, too, has a remarkable influence:

it has been ascertained by a great number of observers that transpiration is more active in light than in darkness.

It seems probable that this is to be attributed largely to the influence of light upon the stomata. Each stoma is

RY 31

5

_ left between them; the stoma is then open.

-tribution of water through the plant is very great.

reon

VEGETABLE. |

usually bounded by two cells, termed "guard-cells," which are capable of so altering their form as to close or to open the aperture between them. The form of the guard-cells is dependent upon the amount of water which they

contain. When they hold comparatively little water, and are flaccid, their adjacent free surfaces are straight and in contact with each other; the stoma is then closed. When, how- ever, they contain so much water that their cell-walls are under considerable pressure from within—in a word, when the guard-cells are turgid—they curve so that their ad- jacent free surfaces are no longer in contact, but a space is It appears that the guard-cells become turgid under the influence of light; and it is probably to this open condition of the stomata that the greater transpiration of leaves when exposed to light is to be ascribed.

It is obvious that the effect of transpiration upon the dis- It sets up a rapid current, known as the “transpiration-current,” which travels from the roots upwards towards the leaves. Sachs has made some observations as to its rate by means of the lithium-method, which consists in supplying the root of a plant with a solution of a salt of lithium, and determining by means of the spectroscope the length of stem in which lithium could be detected after the lapse of a given time. He estimates the rate per hour to be in Nicotiana Tabacum 118 centimétres (46°458 inches), in Helianthus annuus 63 (24°793 inches), and in Vitis vint- fera 98 (38°583 inches). But the water of the transpira- tion-current holds salts and other substances in solution. It is clear, therefore, that transpiration promotes the dis- tribution not only of water but:also of the substances which the water holds in solution. Sachs’s experiments go to prove that salts travel in solution in the current ; hence it affords a ready means of transport of substances from the roots, where they are absorbed, to the leaves where (as will be shown below) the food undergoes certain changes which fit it for the nutrition of the plant. There is yet another important point to be noted with regard to the physiological significance of transpiration. It has been mentioned that the roots absorb from the soil only very dilute solutions of salts and other substances, so that for any given quantity of a salt absorbed an excessive quantity of water has to be absorbed likewise. It is obvious that the absorption of salts from the soil by the roots can only go on provided that the plant is able to get rid of the excess of absorbed water, and this is effected chiefly by transpiration, though, as mentioned above, an actual ex- cretion of water in the form of drops not unfrequently takes place.

It has been conclusively proved that the channel along which the transpiration-current travels is the fibro-vascular tissue, and that it is the xylem or woody portion of a fibro-vascular bundle which is the conducting tissue. In the case of plants like Conifers and Dicotyledons, in which there is a formation of secondary xylem or wood from a cambium-layer, it is the younger wood, the alburnum, along which the transpiration-current passes. The older wood, the duramen, it is true, usually contains water, but it does not serve as a conducting channel, only as a reservoir.

The question now arises as to the mode in which the

transpiration-current travels through the wood. Since the vessels contain no water in their cavities at the time when transpiration is most active, it is clear that it is not In the cavities of the vessels that the water of the current travels. Sachs is of opinion that it moves in the substance of the lignified cell-walls. Others, amongst whom Hartig may be especially named, consider that it travels from the cavity of one wood-cell to that of the next by filtration under pressure. The mechanism of conduction would, in

Pee 2 Sl OL OG YY

AZ

the latter case, be this: the conducting cells contain air and water; when water is withdrawn from one ‘of them the contained air becomes rarefied, and the water in that cell is then subject to a lower pressure than that in neigh- bouring cells; as a consequence water is forced into the former cell through the thin membranes of the pits in its walls until equilibrium is re-established. Inasmuch, then, as the air in the conducting wood-cells in the leaves is constantly undergoing rarefaction in consequence of tran-spiration, a current is set up towards the leaves from the stem and the root.

There can be no doubt, however, that, as Hales first Negative pointed out, transpiration has the effect of diminishing the Pressure.

pressure of the gases contained in the cells and vessels. Von Hohnel has found that, if the stem of a transpir- ing plant be cut through under mercury, the mercury will at once rise to a height of several centimétres in the

vessels, the greatest height being reached in the younger vessels. This rise can only be accounted for by ascribing it to the difference between the atmospheric pressure and the pres- sure of the gases in the vessels, the lower pressure of the latter being due to the removal of water by transpiration, which necessarily involves an expansion, and therefore also a diminished pressure of the gases. The effect of this so- called “negative pressure” is to set up diffusion-currents of gases from the surrounding tissues into the cells and vessels of the fibro-vascular bundles. It must not be assumed, however, that the vessels are the principal channels in which gases circulate throughout the plant. They circulate principally in the intercellular spaces which communicate with the external air by means of the stomata.

Stating the foregoing facts in the most general terms, Recapit- it appears that in a plant the food-materials travel by ulation.

osmosis from the absorbent organs to the organs in which the processes of constructive metabolism are carried on— in one of the higher plants, for instance, from the roots to the leaves—and that the distribution of the food-materials is assisted and accelerated by root-pressure and by tran- spiration, the fullest expression of this being the transpira- tion-current in terrestrial vascular plants. And just as there is a current of food-materials tending towards the organs in which the processes of constructive metabolism are carried on, so also there is a current of the organic nutrient substances formed in these organs travelling from them to the other parts of the plant. The final cause of the current is the same in both cases. A given salt, for instance, which has been absorbed by the root travels towards the leaves because it is in some way undergoing chemical alteration in those organs; similarly, a given organic substance fornted in the leaves travels from them towards any part of the plant in which that substance is being chemically altered, or, to use a somewhat different expression, is being consumed. The cause of the diffusion in either case is the disturbance of osmotic equilibrium by the chemical alteration of the substance, and the result is a current of the substance from those parts which are relatively rich in it to those which are relatively poor.

Distribution of Organic Nutrient Substances.—In vas- Distribu- cular plants the distribution of the organic nutrient sub- ton of

stances is, like the conduction of substances absorbed by

the roots, assisted by the vascular tissue ; but, whereas it sap. is the wood which is the conducting tissue in the latter stances.

case, in the former it is the bast or phloem, and more especially the bast-vessels or sieve-tubes. These vessels consist of elongated cells placed end to end, the septa be- tween the adjacent cells being perforated so as to admit of a direct continuity between their protoplasmic contents. The importance of the wood and of the bast respectively as conducting tissues is well illustrated by the “ringing” experiments which have been repeatedly made on plants,

such as Dicotyledons and Conifers, which have the fibro- vascular bundles arranged in a ring in the stem. When a ring of tissue, extending inwards as far as the cambium- layer, is removed from the stem of a dicotyledonous plant the following facts are to be observed: (1) that the leaves which are borne on branches arising from the stem above the level at which the ring of tissue has been removed will not exhibit any signs of withering ; (2) that the part of the stem below the incision will not increase in thickness to nearly the same extent as the part above the incision. From these facts it is clear (1) that the operation in question has not materially affected the conduction of water and food- materials in solution upwards to the leaves, and, since the wood is the only unimpaired tissue, it is obviously in the wood that the upward current travels; and (2) that the operation has materially affected the conduction of organic nutrient substances to the parts below the incision, the diminished growth of these parts being the result of in- adequate nutrition; this effect of the operation is to be ascribed, principally at least, to the destruction of the con- tinuity of the bast-tissue.

though, so far as is known, they are not essential constitu. ents of the organized structure of the plant, are neverthe. less essential to the maintenance of its life; they may not, indeed, go to build up the plant-substance, but in some way or other they promote the metabolic processes,

The method which has afforded the most valuable results yx, bearing upon the relative physiological importance ofeulk various food-materials is that which is known as “ water. culture.” It consists in growing plants with their roots immersed in water holding certain salts in known quantities in solution. The mixture of salts can, of course, be varied at pleasure, and the effect upon the plant of the absence of certain elements, as of their presence in smaller or larger quantities, can be observed. Further, by an analysis of that portion of the solution which remains unabsorbed at the close of the experiment, the proportion in which the various salts have been absorbed can be ascertained.

The elements of the food of plants may be conveniently classified into two groups, the first consisting of those which enter into the composition of organized plant-sub- stance, the second consisting of those which, without ae-

tually entering into the structure of the plant, are essential to the proper performance of the metabolic processes. To the first group belong the elements C, H, O, N,8, P; to

Laticifer: In various families of vascular plants, and in some oustissue cellular plants also (certain Fungi), there are to be found ~ cells, forming what is known as “laticiferous tissue,” which

a probably assist in distributing both food-materials and organic nutrient substances throughout the plant. In some plants (Zuphorbiacex, Asclepiadacee, Morex, &c.) the cells are quite distinct from each other, and extend from one end of the plant to the other, growing with its growth, so that they attain a very considerable size, and are much branched ; these are spoken of as “ laticiferous cells.” In other plants (Cichoriacex, Papaveracee, &c.) the cells are comparatively small, and fuse together to form an intri-cate network; these are spoken of as “laticiferous vessels.” The cells of the laticiferous tissue contain a milky liquid, termed “latex,” which consists of

water holding inorganic salts, sugar, gum, extractives and proteids, in solution, and holding in suspension resinous and fatty bodies. The cells contain protoplasm in addition, and not uncommonly starch-granules.

Food of Plants.

A rough idea of the nature of its food can be obtained by analysing a plant. It is found that, in the process of incineration, a considerable weight of its dry solid is burned up and given off in the form of gas ; this represents the combustible or organic portion of the plant. The in- combustible residue, the ash, is found to be of a mineral or inorganic nature. The gases given off are carbon dioxide, watery vapour, and nitrogen, showing that the combustible portion of the plant contained the elements carbon, hydrogen, and nitrogen. In the ash occurs a num- ber of elements, of which the principal are sulphur, phos- phorus, potassium, calcium, magnesium, iron, sodium, chlorine, and silicon. But it does not necessarily follow that, because any given chemical element can be detected in a plant, that element is to be regarded as part of the food of the plant, for, as has been already pointed out, plants may absorb substances which in no way contribute to their nutrition, or are even injurious. When an element enters into the chemical composition of the substances of which the organized structure of the plant consists (as C, H, O in starch and cellulose, C, H, O, N, 8, P in pro- teids), then it is clear that this element must form part of the food; but, when, as in the case of the rest of the elements mentioned above, an element does not thus con- tribute to the building up of the organized substance of the plant, its admission to the rank of a food-material must be the subject of direct experiment. It has been ascertained that many of the elements enumerated above,

the second, K, Ca, Mg, Fe, Cl (?).

We will now briefly discuss the form in which the various chemical elements are absorbed, and their use in the economy of the plant, beginning with those which enter into the composition of organized plant-substanee. A few words will also be said about those elements, such as sodium and silicon, which, though always present in the ash of plants, appear to have no real physiological signifi- cance as far as nutrition is concerned.

Carbon. —This element constitutes a large percentage of the total fo dry weight of plants. It enters into the composition of all thee organic substances, such as starch, cellulose, and other carbohydrates, fats and other hydrocarbons, proteids, organic acids, alkaloids, &e., which may be present in plants. The form in which carbon is absorbed depends upon the nature of the plant. It may be broadly stated that all those which contain chlorophyll absorb their carbon in the form of carbon dioxide, whereas those which do not contain chlorophyll absorb their carbon in the form of more complex carbon compounds which contain C, H, and O, and in which the C is directly combined with H. Moreover, in green plants it is only those cells which contain chlorophyll that can absorb carbon dioxide, and this only under the influence of light. It must not be assumed, however, that plants containing chlorophyll are in- capable of absorbing complex carbon compounds. It is known from the researches of Darwin and others that the " insectivorous" plants absorb such compounds by their modified leaves, and it is known also that a number of green plants, such as the Mistletoe, the Rattle, and others, live parasitically on other plants. It has indeed been proved by direct experiment that green plants can ab- sorb substances such as urea, glycocoll, asparagin, leucin, tyrosin, ' which are all highly complex carbon compounds. The physio- logical distinction to be drawn between plants which do and those which do not contain chlorophyll is really that the former are capable of assimilating carbon in a simple compound, such as C0z, whilst the latter are incapable of doing this, and require, there-

fore, compounds of more complex constitution. Plants which do not contain chlorophyll are either parasites (that is, they live upon other living organisms) or saprophytes (that is, they live upon the products of the waste and decay of other living organisms). The plants which do not contain chlorophyll are the Fungi and a few Phanerogams,—Epipogium Gmelini, Cuscuta, Monotropa, Lathrea, Corallorhiza. Of these the Fungi include both parasites and sapro- phytes ; Epipogium Gmelini is a saprophyte, Cuscuta a parasite, and Monotropa may apparently be either the one or the other. The Orobanchex, which are parasitic, and Neottia, which is saprophyt¢, have not a green colour, but small quantities of chlorophyll have nevertheless been detected in them.

Hydrogen.—This element is absorbed by all plants in the form of water and of ammonia and its compounds; it may also be absorbed in the form of organic compounds.

: Oxygen.—Oxygen is taken up either in the free state, or in com- bination in the form of water or of salts; it may also be absorbe’ in the form of organic compounds. The free oxygen absorbed 1s especially concerned in the processes of destructive metabolism, the combined oxygen in those of constructive metabolism.

rmyoro LOG ¥

Witrogen.—Nitrogen is absorbed in the form of ammonia and its compounds and of nitrates ; it may also be absorbed in the form of organic nitrogenous compounds. ‘The researches of Lawes, Gilbert, | and Pugh, as also those of Boussingault, have proved that plants “are incapable of assimilating free nitrogen. It appears that, on the

whole, nitrogen absorbed in the form of ammonia compounds is

more readily assimilated by plants than nitrogen absorbed in the form of nitrates. Pasteur has shown, for instance, that the Yeast plant cannot assimilate nitrates. Sulphur.—Sulphur is absorbed from the soil as sulphates, those of ammonium, potassium, magnesium, and calcium being the most | | advantageous. It may also be absorbed to some extent in the form of organic: compounds. neil “A Phosphorus.— Phosphorus is absorbed from the soil in the form of phosphates. Besides being a constituent of certain substances ! allied to the proteids, such as nuclein and plastin, phosphorus scems to bear an important relation to certain of the metabolic processes. Phosphates are to be found especially in those parts of plants which are rich in protoplasmic cell-contents. It appears that a supply of phosphates promotes considerably the assimilation of nitrogen by the plant. Potassium.—Potassium is absorbed in the form of a variety of salts,

VEGETABLE. | A9

Silicon. —Silicon is absorbed in the form of soluble silicates, and possibly as soluble silicic acid. The silicates are brought into solution to some extent

by the carbon dioxide present in the soil, and also by the acid sap of the root-hairs. It is always present in the ash of plants, sometimes in large quantity ; in wheat-straw, for instance, it constitutes 67°50 per cent. of the ash (Wolff). It was thought that silicon must be essential to nutrition. Sachs found, however, that a Maize plant will grow well in a water-culture from which it can obtain no silicon. On the other hand, Wolff has ascer- tained that in the case of Oats the number of perfect seeds formed is greater when the plant is abundantly supplied with silicon.

Constructive Metabolism (Anabolism).

When a plant is adequately supplied with appropriate Meta- food-materials, the external conditions to which it is bolism. exposed being favourable, it increases in weight, owing to an accumulation of the substances which constitute its organized structure. But this gain in weight is only rela- tive ; for side by side with the constructive processes by

en; ts which the food is converted into the substance of the

bn – of which the chloride is the most advantageous form, according

to Nobbe. Like phosphorus, it is to be found in largest quantity in those parts of plants which are rich in protoplasmic cell-contents. It appears to have an important influence on the constructive meta- bolic processes of plants which contain chlorophyll. Nobbe found, in the case of a Buckwheat plant, that in the absence of a supply

of potassium its growth was diminutive, and that the amount of

starch in the plant was very small. On the addition of potassium chloride. to the water-culture the starch-grains became morc numerous in the chlorophyll-corpuscles, and made their appearance also in the tissues of the stem. The precise significance of potas- sium in relation to these processes is not known. Liebig was of opinion that it played an important part in the distribution of carbohydrates throughout the plant, but this view has not been confirmed. It appcars rather that the facts upon which this view was based point to an effect due not to the potassium itself but to the particular salt of it which was absorbed (see “ chlorine ” below). There can be no

doubt, however, that potassium bears some im- portant relation to the formation and storing up of carbohydrates, for it is always present in large quantity in organs, such as leaves, tubers, seeds, &c., in which these processes especially take place.

Caleiwm.—The compounds in which calcium is usually absorbed are the sulphate, phosphate, nitrate, and carbonate, the last-named salt undergoing decomposition in the process. It appears that the chloride is injurious to plants. The precise usc of calcium is un- known. It very commonly occurs in the cells of plants in the form of crystals of the carbonate or the oxalate, and possibly one of its important functions is to form insoluble salts with acids which are of no further use in the plant, and are even injurious to it.

_ Moagnesiwm.—Like calcium, this may be advantageously absorbed in the form of all its salts, execpt the chloride. Nothing definite is known as to its use.

Tron.—It appears that iron may be absorbed in the form of any of its salts. 1t is known to be essential only to those plants which contain chlorophyll. If a scedling he cultivated by the method of water-culture, with its roots in a solution which contains no iron, the leaves formed will be successively paler in colour until at length theyare nearly white; in this state the plant is said to be “chlorotic.” If a small quantity of a salt of iron be then added to the solution in which the roots are, or if the pale leaves be painted over with a dilute solution of iron, they will soon become green. Iron, there- fore, plays an important part in connexion with the formation of the green colouring-matter chlorophyll. It is still a debated question whether or not iron enters into the composition of the chlorophyll-molccule.

Chlorine.—Chlorine is absorbed from the soil in the form of chlorides. The evidence as to its significance in the nutrition of plants is conflicting. Nobbe, Leydhecker, Beyer, and morc recently Farsky have observed that water-cultures of Buckwheat, Barley, and Oats do not flourish when grown in solutions containing no chlorides, and since the chlorophyll-corpuscles of the plants become crowded with starch-grains it was thought that chlorine had some import- ance in connexion with the translocation of carbohydrates. Knop and Dworzak have observed, on the other hand, that Maize plants will grow well in solutions containing no chlorine, and further,

that the accumulation of starch in the chlorophyll-corpuscles may be induced by various abnormal external conditions.

Sodiwm.—This clement is never absent from the ash of plants, and in some cases, cspecially in maritime plants, it is present in considerable quantity. It might be inferred from its constant occurrence in the ash that sodium is of some importance as a food- material ; it was thought, in fact, that it might serve as a substitute for potassium, but this has not been found to be the case. Its con-

stant presence in the ash is due merely to its universal distribution in the soil.

plant—processes, that is, which have as their result the formation of relatively complex from relatively simple chemical compounds—there are going on destructive pro- cesses—processes, that is, which have as their result the formation of relatively simple from relatively complex chemical compounds—which are attended by a loss of weight. The gain in weight by the plant represents the difference between the activity of the constructive and of the destructive metabolic processes respectively. The end of constructive metabolism is the formation of protoplasm. Protoplasm is certainly a very complex substance, though its precise constitution is unknown, and the food-materials of plants are much simpler substances ; there must, there- fore, be a considerable number of processes to be gone through before protoplasm can be produced from the food- materials. We will now study these processes, and, in the first instance, confine our attention to those which have been ascertained to take place in plants which possess chlorophyll.

It has been already mentioned that a green plant absorbs Building Under these P of

carbon dioxide when it is exposed to light. circumstances it also increases in weight; it does not increase in weight when kept in the dark, nor when it is kept in an atmosphere from which all carbon dioxide has been removed. ‘The absorption of carbon dioxide is then an indication that the plant is performing certain con- structive processes,—that it is assimilating carbon. The absorption of carbon dioxide is accompanied by an evolu- tion of

oxygen gas, the volume of the latter exhaled being approximately equivalent to that of the carbon dioxide absorbed. ‘This is an indication that the absorbed carbon dioxide is undergoing chemical change. It seems probable that the change is of the nature expressed by the following equation— 2CO, +#H,0=«(CH,0) +20, —that is, that from carbon dioxide and water a substance allied to formic aldehyde, or a polymer of it, is formed, free oxygen being evolved. It may be stated generally, with some considerable probability, that the first step in the constructive metabolism of a plant contaming chloro- phyll is the formation of a non-nitrogenous organic compound. It is just this formation of non-nitrogenous organic substance from carbon dioxide and water that the plant which is destitute of chlorophyll is unable to per- form ; and it is on account of this inability that the carbon of its food must be supplied to it in the form of organic compounds, as pointed out above. The further processes of constructive metabolism appear to be much the same in all plants, whether they contain chlorophyll or not. The next step is probably the formation of some relatively simple nitrogenous organic substances from the nitrogen of the food and the non-nitrogenous organic substance pd Fi)

which has been either formed in the plant or absorbed as food from without. The nitrogenous substances thus formed are probably crystallizable bodies, such as asparagin and leucin, which all contain nitrogen in the form of the group NH,. The derivation of these substances from the nitrogenous food when it contains nitrogen in the form of ammonia (NH,) is sufficiently obvious. When, how- ever, it consists of nitrates it appears probable that the nitrogen of the nitric acid has to be transformed into the nitrogen of ammonia, —that is, to be combined directly with

Destructive Metabolism (Katabolism).

Just as all the processes by which increasingly complex organic substances are formed in the plant, and which intervene between the food-materials on

the one hand and the protoplasm on the other, are designated collectively “constructive metabolism,” so all the processes of decom. position by which relatively simple substances are produced from relative complex ones, and which intervene between the protoplasm on the one hand and the excreta and other waste-products on the other, are designated collectively ‘destructive metabolism.”

hydrogen ; it is probably owing to their inability to effect this transformation that some plants, as mentioned above, cannot be supplied with nitrogen in the form of nitrates. The first step in this transformation is probably, as

Of all the various processes Sj of destructive metabolism the most fundamental jis the dew. decomposition of the protoplasm. It appears that this pal decomposition is spontaneous—that it is, as Pfliiger terms y.”

| plasu,

Emmerling has pointed out, the decomposition of the absorbed nitrates by the organic acids, especially the oxalic, of the plant ; the liberated nitric acid then under- goes chemical change, resulting in the formation of ammonia. It is impossible to say with precision how this is effected, but there can be little doubt that it does take place ; some direct evidence is afforded by Hosaeus’s

it, a “self-decomposition”; and it is, in fact, only so long as this self-decomposition is proceeding that protoplasm can be said to be living. The destructive metabolism of an organism is not, however, confined to the self-decom- position of its protoplasm; the various complex organic substances which the cells contain may undergo chemical change quite independently of their entering into the

observation that ammonia salts were to be found on ana- lysis in a number of plants which had been supplied with manure containing no ammonia. The next process is an

metabolism of the protoplasm. The most active agents Ui in producing chemical changes of this kind are certain gtuini bodies which are termed

“‘ferments,” and are distinguished ™™

tnerease in the size and complexity of the molecule, attended in certain cases by the introduction of new elements (S and P), the product being one of those sub- stances which are known as “‘proteids.” The last stage is the formation of living protoplasm from the proteid and other organic substances.

as “unorganized ” ferments from the so-called “ organized” ferments, such as Yeast and Bacteria. But little is known as to their chemical composition, and nothing as to the peculiarity of chemical constitution upon which their char-

acteristic properties depend. The unorganized ferments which have hitherto been detected in

Forma The formation of nitrogenous organic substance may | plants may be classified, according to the nature of the chemical fie, take. placolinvany living-cel, and, unlterthe fomeaaag (re tee cnet tari tarsi) on ce

- : . . ces 4 vert star iga ic fer genous non-nitrogenous organic substance, it goes on quite ind © | These have been found to be very widely. distributed in plants, organic pendently of the presence of chlorophyll and of the action | and in fact it seems probable that a ferment of this kind is preseut sub- of light. But there is evidence to show that in green | inall living plant-cells. Their mode of action is generally indicated stance. plants it is especially in the cells which contain the chloro- | by the following equation—

phyll that the process goes on. The experiments by which this evidence has been obtained were made on plants with distinctly differentiated leaves. Emmerling observed in the Bean that, whereas in the root a relatively large quantity of nitric acid could be detected, there was much less in the stem, and in the leaves none at all, and he inferred that as the nitrates are supplied to the leaves they are used up in the formation of organic nitrogenous substance. Further, from the researches of Kellner, Emmerling, Borodin, and others it appears that the leaves contain the above-mentioned crystallizable organic sub- stances, asparagin, leucin, &c., in considerable quantity ; and it is quite possible that these substances may be formed

synthetically in the leaves, though it is true that they may be formed in other ways as well. Finally, Pott has found that the proportion of proteid in the plant increases from the roots upwards towards the leaves, the proportion in the latter being about twice as great as that in the former of many of the plants which he analysed.

The formation of living protoplasm from the organic substances elaborated from the food necessarily goes on in every living cell. It has been already mentioned that de- structive metabolism—that is, processes of decomposition— is active in living cells, and it is especially the protoplasm which is the seat of these processes. The maintenance of the life of the cell is therefore an, indication of the fact that the activity of the destructive metabolism is at least equalled by the activity of the constructive metabolism. In a young cell the latter exceeds the former, so that the protoplasm is increased in quantity; then for a time the two are approximately equivalent, until at length the destructive gradually gains the upper hand, and eventually the death of the cell is the result.

Starch. Maltose. 2(CgH 1905) + HyO =C,.H»,0y.

2. Ferments which convert cane-sugar into glucose (inverting ferments). A ferment of this kind, termed ‘‘invertin,” has been obtained from Yeast ; it is probable that a similar ferment is present in succulent fruits, for they commonly contain a mixture of cane- sugar and glucose. The following equation will indicate the natme of the process—

Cane-sugar. Dextrose. Levulose. CypHo0 1 + HO = CgHy.0¢ + CoH 206.

3. Ferments which decompose glucosides. The most familiar members of this group are emulsin or synaptase, found in the Bitter Almond; myrosin, in the sccd of the Black Mustard ; eryth- rozym, in the root of the Madder. The following equation repre sents the decomposition of the glucoside amygdalin by emulsin—

2 Oil of Bitter Prussic Amygdalin. Witanaee wat! Glucose.

C.9Ha NO), + 2H,,0 = C,H,0 a HCN a 2(C,H,.05).

4, Ferments which convert proteids that are indiffusible and may be insoluble in water into others (peptones) which are both soluble and diffusible. These, which are only active in the presence of free acid, are termed ‘‘ peptic ” ferments. They have been found in quantity in the latex of certain plants (Carica Papaya and Ficus Carica) and in the liquid excretion of carnivorous plants, It is, of course, impossible to represent by an cquation the nature of the chemical change which these ferments induce. F

It is probable that other ferments than these may be present m plants, but they have not yet been actually obtained. There 1s probably one which decomposes fats (glycerides) into glycerin and the corresponding fatty acid, thus—

Olein. Oleic Acid. Glycerin. C57 9406 + 3H,O = 3C,,H3,0, a C,,H,05.

Miintz and Von Rechenberg have pointed out that the quantity of free fatty acids in oily seeds increases very much during germma- tion, and the only satisfactory explanation of this fact which can at present be offered is that it is the result of the decomposition of the fats, in the manner indicated above, by an unorganized ferment. Again, it was mentioned above that crystallizable nitrogenous organic substances, such as leucin, asparagin, and tyrosin, occur in plants, and it was pointed out that they may be formed synthe ally. But there can be no doubt that they may be, and frequently are, formed analytically,—that is, by the decomposition, of more

rr it~ D1

VEGETABLE. |

complex substances. For instancc, when the seeds of leguminous plants, such as the Pea or the Bean, germinate, the quantity of proteid substance diminishes, and the quantity of amides, notably asparagin, increases ; there can be no doubt that the latter are derived from the former. It is well known that similar changes take place in the pancreatic digestion of animals, that leucin and tyrosin are formed from protcids, and that this is effected by an unorganized ferment termed ‘“‘trypsin”; it is quite possible that a ferment of this kind may be present in plants. Finally, there is probably, in cer- tain plants at least, a ferment which converts cellulose into sugar. For instance,

the Date seed contains a quantity of non-nitrogenous reserve material stored up as cellulose in its very thick cell-walls ; on germination this undergoes absorption and is conveyed to the embryo ; it is extremely probable that the conversion of the in- soluble cellulose into some soluble substance (doubtless sugar) is cffeeted by the action of aferment. The penetration of the absorb- ent organs of parasites into the tissnes of their hosts is probably effected by the action of a fermeut of this kind which is excreted by the parasite. : ;

But there are still other chemical changes to be accounted for as the result of which substances relatively rich in oxygen are produced from others which are relatively poor in that element. Some of these are, so far as is known, processes of simple oxidation, which go on as readily out- side the organism as within it; for instance, chlorophyll is oxidized quite as readily in alcoholic solution as when it exists in the chlorophyll-corpuscles of a plant; these processes of simple oxidation may then be regarded as going on independently of the vital activity of the organism. But there are other and more complex oxidations which may be termed “oxidative decompositions”; these involve something more than mere oxidation, and appear to de- pend upon the vital activity of the organism.

The following instances may be given to illustrate the nature of these changes. Ethyl-alcohol becomes oxidized, under the influence of a Fungus known as the Mycoderma Aceti, as follows—

Acetie acid. C,H,O aa O.<= C,H,0, AP H,0. Another similar Fungus, the Mycoderma Vint, induces a more com- plete oxidative decomposition of aleohol,—carbon dioxide and water being the products of its action. Again, a substance termed “‘pyrocatechin” and various organic acids occur in plants, and there seems reason, from the researches of Hoppe-Seyler and of Carl Kraus, to believe that they are derived from carbohydrates in some such way as the following— Glucose. Pyrocatechin. Succinic acid. 80,H,,0¢ ap 40, = C,H,0. fe 380,H 04 Te 3H,0,

it being understood that this suggests ouly one of the ways in which the vegetable acids are formed.

There are yet other processes of decomposition which, like the oxidative decompositious, are effected under the influence of living protoplasm, but which, unlike them, do not depend upon the presence of oxygen; on the contrary, these decompositions, which may be generally termed “ fermentations,” depend upon the absence of free oxygen, for their activity is the greater the more limited the supply of this element. A characteristic example of this kind is afforded by the decomposition of sugar into alcohol and carbon dioxide, which is effected by Yeast, and is known as the “alcoholic fermentation.” Its nature is indicated by the following equation —

; C,H, .0,=2C,H,0 +2C0,.

Again, various forms of Bacteria effect decompositions of this kind. Of these the putrefaction of organic matter, the lactic and butyric fermentations, are examples. It must not be supposed, however, that the property of exciting fermentation is confined to the protoplasm of lowly plants such as Yeast and Bacteria. It has been found that various fermentations are set up when living plant-organs of any kind—leaves, flowers, fruits, seeds—are kept in an atmo- sphere which contains no free oxygen.

The characteristic accompaniment of the destructive metabolism of plants, as of all living organisms, is, under normal conditions, that interchange of gases between the plant and the atmosphere which is known as ‘‘ respiration,” and which consists in the absorption of oxygen and the

ruag si ohec Y

ol

evolution of carbon dioxide. It may be stated generally that the continual absorption of free oxygen is essential to the existence of at least the more highly-organized plants, and that in the absence of a supply of free oxygen they die. Death under these circumstances is to be attributed to the arrest of those metabolic processes which are accompanied by an evolution of kinetic energy in the organism—that is, of the destructively metabolic processes ; and of these by far the most important is the self-decom-

position of the protoplasm. It would appear that the absorption of oxygen is essential to the self-decomposition of the protoplasm-molecule. It is impossible to say any- thing definite as to the mode in which oxygen affects this process. Pfltiger has, however, suggested that the absorbed oxygen enters into the protoplasm-molecule as “ intra- molecular ” oxygen, that the molecule is thereby rendered unstable, and that it then readily undergoes decomposition.

In contrast to the plants which continue to live only Anaero- Pasteur biotic

when supplied with free oxygen (the aerobia, as has termed them) stand the anaerobia—those, namely, which thrive best in the absence of free oxygen, and to which, in certain cases, the access of free oxygen is fatal ; of the latter, certain Schizomycetes and Saccharomycetes may be taken as examples. It is remarkable that it is just the anaerobiotic plants which are most highly endowed with the property of exciting fermentation ; and this, taken in conjunction with the fact that the activity of fermenta- tion stands in an inverse relation to the supply of free oxygen, indicates the existence of some sort of correlation between the normal respiratory and the fermentative pro- cesses. It appears that in aerobiotic plants the normal processes of destructive metabolism, of which the absorption of oxygen and the evolution of carbon dioxide are the out- ward expression, may be replaced for a longer or shorter time by those abnormal processes of which fermentation is the outward expression; in completely anaerobiotic plants the fermentative are the normal processes. It is difficult to explain the physiological significance of fermentation, and to determine the manner in which it contributes to the maintenance of the life of the organism. Pasteur has suggested that it is the expression of an effort of the organism to obtain oxygen from substances which contain it in combination. Another possible view is that the organism obtains, by the fermentative decomposition of the substances upon which it acts, the supply of energy which, in the case of an aerobiotic plant, is afforded by the normal decomposition of its own protoplasm-molecules.

The products of destructive metabolism are extremely numerous and of very different chemical nature. They may be roughly classified into two groups: (1) the waste-products, substances which cannot be used in the

constructive meta- bolism of the plant, and which may be excreted ; and (2) the plastic products, substances which can enter into the constructive metabolism.

1. Waste-Products.—Among the waste-products the Waste- most constant are carbon dioxide and water, which are products.

exhaled in respiration ; it may, in fact, be stated generally that all living plants and parts of plants exhale carbon dioxide and watery vapour at all times. There is, however, no constant relation between the volumes of carbon dioxide exhaled and of oxygen absorbed in respiration, and the processes of destructive metabolism, of which the respira- tory interchange of gases is the external expression, are so complex that the relation, whatever it may be, between the volumes of these gases in any particular case cannot be accounted for. The degree of independence between these processes is well illustrated by the fact that the absorption of oxygen is relatively greater at low temperatures, and that the exhalation of carbon dioxide is relatively greater at high temperatures. This seems to indicate that ata

Organic acids.

Aroma- tic sub- stances.

low temperature the storing-up of intramolecular oxygen is relatively more active than the decomposition of the protoplasm-imolecules, whereas at a high temperature the converse is the case. At medium temperatures these pro- cesses are about equally active, for it has been ascertained in various cases that the volumes of oxygen absorbed and of carbon dioxide exhaled are under these circumstances approximately equal. It must not, however, be concluded that the exhalation of carbon dioxide is entirely independ- ent of the absorption of oxygen, for the observations of Broughton, Wilson, and Wortmann all show that when plants are deprived of a supply of free oxygen the activity of the exhalation of carbon dioxide rapidly diminishes.

Among the other waste-products the following are those which are of most common occurrence, —organic acids, aromatic substances, colouring matters, bitter principles, certain fatty bodies, alkaloids.

(1.) Organte Acids.—The organic acids are very generally pre- sent in plants, either frec or in combination with organic or in- organic bases, and it is to the presence of these acids or of their acid-salts that the acid reaction of plant-tissues is due. Those most commonly occurring are the malic, tartaric, citric, oxalic, and fatty acids, the last-named being generally in combination with glycerin, forming fats (glycerides). There can be little doubt that they are to be regarded as products of destructive metabolic processes, though Liebig regarded some of the more highly-oxidized acids as the first products of constructive metabolism, and as being formed from carbon dioxide and water in the cells which contain chlorophyll. It is not so clear that they are all to be regarded as waste-products ; it appears possible that some of the less highly- oxidized may undergo reduction with the formation in carbo- hydrates, for it has been observed, especially by Beyer, that in ripening fruits the acids diminish and the sugar increases in quantity. Again, there can be no doubt that fats entcr into con- structive metabolism, and hence the fatty acids must be regarded as plastic products. The more highly-oxidized acids are almost certainly waste-products. Oxalic acid, for instance, is commonly found as crystals of calcium oxalate which, in most cases at any rate, undergo no alteration. It appears that the oxalic acid is withdrawn in this way from the sphere of metabolism, and, inas- much as these crystals are deposited especially in the deciduous parts of the plant, it is also ultimately got rid of. It is probable that the organic acids are largcly produced as the result of oxidative decompositions (see swpra). There can be no doubt that the self- decomposition of protoplasm is attended by a formation of acids, especially of nitrogenous acids, such as the aspartic and gluta- minic, and of fatty acids.

In addition to their significance in the constructive metabolism of plants the organic acids are of use in other ways. Their presence in the living cells contributes to the maintenance of the turgid con- dition ; the presence of acid-sap in the root-hairs renders possible the solution and absorption of mineral substances which are insoluble in water; oxalic acid, at least, decomposes the salts absorbed by the roots ; and finally it appears that the

organic acids are capable of inducing the conversion of one carbohydrate into another—cane- sugar into glucose, for instance—and they may in this way play an important, though hitherto undctermined, part in the general metabolisin of plants.

(2.) Aromatic Substances.—These occur generally in the form of glucosides, the most common of which is tannin. The glucosides are bodies, for the most part non-nitrogenous, which yield sugar on decomposition amongst other substances. In so far as they yield sugar they may be regarded as plastic products; but the aromatic substances to which they give rise on decomposition are waste-products, for it appears from the observations which have been made on this point that the higher plants, at least, cannot avail themselves of carbon when combined in an aromatic molecule for the purposes of their constructive metabolism. Probably the resins which are so commonly present in plants are derived from tannin. The first step is the formation of a terpene (C,,H,,) in the secreting cells; this is then excreted into the ducts and undergoes partial oxidation with the formation of resin. In connexion with the terpenes two hydrocarbons, caoutchouc and gutta-percha (C5H,)a, may be mentioned, which occur in the latex of certain plants.

It is not possible to make any definitive statement as to the mode of origin of the aromatic substances in the plant, but the fact that tannin is constantly present in the cells of parts in which destruc- tive metabolism is active—growing points, mobile organs of lcaves, galls, for example—tends to prove that this glucoside at least may be derived from protoplasm. It must not be overlooked, too, that substances like tyrosin, which contain an aromatic radical, occur in plants, and that they are derived more or less directly from protoplasin.

PH YSTrOeise F

[VEGETABLE,

(8.) Colouring Matters. — The principal colouring matters of Colom,' plants are—(q) those which occur in the walls of the bark-cells ofing trees and shrubs (phlobaphenes); (4) those of woods, such aS Matter logwood ; (c) those which occur in solution in the cell-sap, as in most flowers ; (d)

those which occur in connexion with protoplasmic corpuscles, as in the Algw and in the leaves and other green parts of the higher plants. With regard to the three first-named groups it appears probable that they are derived in various ways from tannin.

Of the colouring matters which occur in connexion with proto- plasmic corpuscles by far the most important is chlorophyll, the substance to which plants owe their green colour. The corpuscle has a spongy structure, the interstices of which are occupied by the chlorophyll in solution in some fatty substance. The other colour- ing matters which may be present in corpuscles are—etiolin, yellow, which is apparently present in all chlorophyll-corpuscles, conspicuously so in those in parts of normally green plants which have been growing in darkness, and is apparcntly an antecedent of chlorophyll ; xanthophyll, also yellow, and commonly present in chlorophyll- corpuscles, especially in those of fading leaves, prob- ably a derivative of chlorophyll ; anthoxanthin, also yellow, the colouring matter of yellow flowers, and a derivative of chlorophyll ; phycoxanthin, brownish, present in the chlorophyll-corpuscles of the brown Algz (Phxophycex or Melanophycex) ; phycoerythin, red, present in the chlorophyll-corpuscles of the red Alga (Rhodophycee, Floridex).

Chlorophyll is a substance of such great physiological Form importance that the conditions of its formation and its tion of properties must be treated of in some detail. The general ot conditions upon which its formation depends are (a) ex.P 7 § posure to light, (6) a sufficiently high temperature, (c) a supply of iron. Plants which are normally green are not green if they have been grown in the dark, or if the tem- perature has been too low, or if they have not been supplied with iron; they are usually yellow, and in the last case especially they may be quite colourless. Normally green plants which have been kept in the dark or at too lowa temperature are said to be “etiolated,” since they form etiolin; plants which have grown in absence of a supply of iron are said to be “chlorotic.” There are good grounds for regarding etiolin as an antecedent to chlorophyll. It is formed in the corpuscle in darkness and at a tempera- ture lower than that which is necessary for the formation of chlorophyll. It appears from the researches of Gris, Mikosch, and others that when the corpuscle is about to form etiolin it contains a starch-granule, and that as it assumes a yellow colour the

included starch-granule dimi- nishes in size and may disappear. It must not be inferred from this observation that the etiolin is directly formed from the starch. . It is more probable that it is derived from the protoplasm, and that, as the protoplasm is con- sumed in the formation of the etiolin, the starch is used in the construction of fresh protoplasm. Under the in- fluence of light and of a sufficiently high temperature the — yellow etiolin is converted into the green chlorophyll, but nothing is known as to the nature of the process by which the conversion is effected.

With regard to the physical properties of chlorophyll Pro | it has long been known that it is soluble in alcohol, ether, pete | benzol, chloroform, carbon disulphide, and various oils. ohyll | / Hansen has obtained, by a process of saponification, from? 7 the alcoholic extract of leaves a green crystalline substance, \f probably the purest form of chlorophyll yet obtained, |

which is readily soluble in water. All solutions of chloro- phyll in the above-mentioned media are fluorescent,—that | is, when they are viewed by reflected light they appear | opaque and of a deep lake-red colour, but when thin | layers are viewed by transmitted light they appear green.

If the light which has passed through a layer of a moder- } ately strong solution be examined with the spectroscope

a characteristic absorption-spectrum will be observed. Beginning at the red end of the spectrum, a well-marked dark band will be seen between Fraunhofer’s lines B and

C, extending rather beyond ©, a second dark band in the orange between C and D, a third very faint band at the

Alka- oids,

PHYsI

junction of the yellow and the green, and a fourth more distinct band in the green near F. When an alcoholic extract of leaves is used, as is ordinarily the case, the whole of the blue end of the spectrum beyond F is absorbed, in consequence of the coalescence of three broad bands, which can be seen

separately when a very dilute solution is used, two of the bands being in the blue between F and G, and one at the end of the violet. The spectrum of the alcoholic extract presents then seven bands in all. According to Hansen, the spectrum of solutions of his erystallized chlorophyll possesses only the first four of the above-mentioned bands, and it is only when very thick layers are used that the blue end of the spectrum is absorbed ; this is true also of the spectrum of the green colouring matter obtained by Tschirch.

Little is as yet known as to the chemical composition of chlorophyll. Gautier and Hoppe-Seyler have both obtained a crystalline green substance from the alcoholic extracts of leaves, termed by the latter “ chlorophyllan,” which is not to be regarded as pure chlorophyll. The following are their analyses of this substance, to which is added for comparison Hansen’s analysis of the green crystalline substance which he obtained—

VEGETABLE. |

Gautier. Hoppe-Seyler. Hansen. © nontnts Ob (OCB E Soe ce aE Eee 73°97 73°34 60°33 RMR case ccscccnte aa. 9°80 9°72 9°37 IN) cocconeoo sng esesgge nea 4°15 5°68 4°77 «) cogaenenh@segesspoEaaneEge 10°33 9°54 14°77

i P. 1°38 ae 175 Me. Rei 10°76

Hansen states that the ash found by him is due to the previous processes of preparation, and that the only normal ash-constituent is iron, which neither Gautier nor Hoppe- Seyler had discovered. Tschirch on reducing chlorophyllan by means of zinc-dust has obtained a green substance which does not crystallize, and is soluble in alcohol, ether, and oils, but not in water. This he believes to be pure chloro- phyll. From the percentage composition of the crystals of chlorophyllan Gautier deduces the formula C,yH».N.Os, and draws attention to the similarity between this and the formula of bilirubin (C,,H,,N,O3). Hoppe-Seyler concludes that chlorophyllan contains phosphorus in its molecule, and is either a lecithin or a lecithin compound. Schunck has found that the residue of an ethereal solution of chlorophyll when treated with sulphuric or hydrochloric acid yields glucose amongst other products ; he therefore regards chlorophyll as a glucoside.

(4.) Bitter Principles.—It has been ascertained that some of these are glucosides, and some alkaloids, but the chemical nature of many of them is still undetermined. Such are santonin (Cy3H,,03), aloin (C,;H,,0,), quasiin (CypH,.0,). It is impossible at present to say anything as to the possible mode of their origin or as to their physiological significance in the plant.

(5.) Certain Fatty Bodies.—The ordinary fats (glycerides) are to be regarded as plastic products, and they will be subsequently treated of under that head. But there are certain fatty bodies of which this statement caunot be made; these are cholesterin, lecithin, and wax. It is not known how these substances are formed, but probably they, like the ordinary fats, are derived from protoplasm. This view is especially probable with regard to lecithin, which is a nitrogenous and phosphorized fat. Wax occurs especi- ally in the external cell-walls or on the surface of those parts of plants which have a cuticularized epidermis; the “pbloom”’ on fruits, for example, is a layer of wax.

(6.) Alkaloids.—The alkaloids arc regarded as waste-products, because, as the observations of Knop and Wolff show, the demand for combined nitrogen cannot be met by suy plying the plant with it in the form of alkaloids, though the plant can avail itsclf of such organic nitrogenous substances as urea, uric acid, leucin, tyrosin, or glycocoll. The alkaloids are compound ammonias which are not volatile at ordinary temperatures. With regard to their mode of origin in the plant, there can be little doubt that they are derived more or less directly from protoplasm, or at least from proteid, as are urea and uric acid in the animal body. But, although these nitrogenous waste-products are formed in the destructive metabolism of plants, their formation is not accom-

© iO G Y 53

panied by a loss of nitrogen, for they are not excreted, as is the case in animals, but are deposited in the cells.

2. Excretion.—Of the waste-products, some, such as oxygen, water, and carbon dioxide, are excreted in the gaseous form—the oxygen and the carbon dioxide through the superficial cell-walls of the plant, the watery vapour through the stomata. Some of the carbon dioxide may combine with

earthy bases to form carbonates, which are either retained in the plant or excreted in solution. The resins and ethereal oils, as well as wax, are frequently

in different cases. excreted by means of special glandular organs. may be a hair on the surface, and it is then commonly the terminal cell at the free end which is secretory ; or it may be a group of epidermal cells between which large inter- cellular spaces are formed, which serve as receptacles for the excreted substance; or it may be formed by the absorp- tion of the adjoining walls of a group of cells belonging partly to the epidermis and partly to the underlying ground-tissue, a cavity being thus constructed, which con- tains the excreted substance ; or again, longitudinal strands of cells may become separated so as to enclose an elongated intercellular space into which they excrete (resin-ducts). In many cases the substance to be excreted may be detected in the glandular cells; not unfrequently, however, and always in the case of wax, no trace of it can be discovered in the cells themselves ; it is first to be found in the cell- walls between the cuticular and the deeper layers. The actual excretion is usually effected, in the case of super- ficial glands, by the rupture of the cuticle which is con- tinuous over the gland, and by the consequent escape of the contents ; in some cases the gland remains closed, and any volatile substances (ethereal oil) which may be present escape by evaporation.

The excretion of the earthy carbonates in solution is most commonly effected by means of a well-developed gland. Such a gland consists of a group of modified parenchymatous cells in connexion with the termination of a fibro-vascular bundle; and one or two openings, termed “water-pores,” and somewhat resembling stomata, are present in the epidermis immediately over it. Under the action of the root-pressure the gland excretes water which holds the carbonates in solution. Glands of this kind are present in the leaves of various Saxifragaceous and Crassulaceous plants. In other cases these salts appear to be excreted by ordinary epidermal cells. In certain Ferns (various species of Polypodiwm and Aspidium), for instance, scales of calcium carbonate are found on depres- sions in the surface of the leaves which are situated imme- diately over the terminations of the fibro-vascular bundles.

It not unfrequently happens that plants excrete sub- stances other than waste-products, but this has the effect of securing indirect advantages. In the great majority of flowers there are glandular organs which excrete a watery fluid holding principally sugar in solution ; these organs are termed "'nectaries," and the excretion "nectar." The nectary has essentially the same structure as the water-gland de- scribed above, the only important difference being that, whereas the gland is sunk in the tissue and is covered by the epidermis, the nectary has a large free surface, so that the nectar is at once poured out on to the exterior. But there is an important functional difference between them, namely, that, whereas excretion by the gland can only take place under the influence of the root-pressure, excretion by the nectary is independent of the root-pressure, for it will continue when the flower has been removed from the plant. Another instance of an excretion of this kind is afforded by the carnivorous plants. The glands of their leaves excrete a watery liquid which holds in solution a peptic

excreted, The mechanism of excretion is widely different Gland- The resins and ethereal oils are usually Ular ex- The glan d cretion.

Nectary excre- ion.

ferment and one or more organic acids. The use of the nectar is to attract insects, and thus to ensure cross- fertilization. The use of the excretions of the carnivorous plants is to dissolve the organic matter (usually insects) which has been deposited on the leaves, so as to bring it into a form in which it can be absorbed.

are also commonly to be found in plants. Glucose may be regarded as having been derived by the action of an unorganized ferment from one or other of the other carbo- hydrates, except in certain plants, the Onion for example, in which it appears to be formed in the chlorophyll-cor-

puscles in the first instance. Nothing is known at present Cane.

Waste- Many of the waste-products are not excreted, but remain | as to the mode of origin of cane-sugar, which exists in Suge. products in the plant. Thus the terpenes are indeed excreted by | such large quantities in certain plants, as the Beet and the not eX- the cells which line the resin-ducts, but these ducts have Sugar-cane. ae no aperture on the surface of the plant. Similarly the With regard to the fats, it is commonly assumed that Fats, | caoutchoue and gutta-percha which are contained in the | they are formed directly from the carbohydrates, because | laticiferous tissue of certain plants have no means of egress. | in oily seeds, for example, as the starch which they contain This is also true of the tannic acid, of the calcium carbonate | when young diminishes in quantity it is replaced by fats, (usually) and oxalate, of the alkaloids, and of silica. These | There is, however, sufficient evidence to prove that the substances are usually deposited in the cells. Calcium | fats are the products of the decomposition of protoplasm, carbonate and oxalate are deposited in the form of crystals | The disappearance of the starch in ripening oily seeds is either in the cell-wall or in the cell-cavity, and silica in | due to its being used up in the construction of protoplasm, the cell-wall. In some cases calcium carbonate is deposited | as the protoplasm undergoes decomposition in connexion on cellulose processes which extend into the cell from its | with the formation of fat. wall, the whole body being termed a “cystolith.” The nitrogenous plastic products are proteids and Proteid: 3. Plastic Products.—The principal non-nitrogenous | amides. There can be little doubt that the proteids may : plastic products are the carbohydrates and the fats (gly- | be derived from protoplasm. If the molecule of living cerides); to these, as suggested above, some of the organic | protoplasm be regarded as an extremely complex one, acids are perhaps to be added. there is no difficulty in inferring that proteid may be Starch. Of the carbohydrates the substance which most demands | one of the products of the decomposition of the proto- attention is starch. Starch makes its appearance in the | plasm-molecule. The amides may also be products of the Amide form of minute granules in chlorophyll-corpuscles in which | decomposition of protoplasm, or they may be formed from constructive metabolism is being actively carried on. It | proteids by the fermentative action of living protoplasm ; was thought that it was the immediate product of the | or by the action of some

as yet undiscovered unorganized decomposition and recombination of carbon dioxide and | ferment, as pointed out above. of water in the corpuscle under the influence of light, the It has been stated that the plastic products are so called process being represented by some such equation as the | because they are substances which can be used in the con- following— structive metabolism of plants. But it must not be inferred 6CO, + 5H,0=C,H,,0, + 60,. that they are so used immediately. The very fact that it Increased knowledge of the conditions under which | is possible to detect their presence in considerable quantity starch makes its appearance in plants has, however, made | isa proof that this is not the case. They are largely stored it evident that this is not the case. Starch may be regarded up either for the use of the plant itself at some future as the first wstble product of the constructive metabolism | time, or for the benefit of the progeny of the plant. In going on in a chlorophyll-corpuscle, but it is not the first | a perennial plant, for example, plastic products are stored non-nitrogenous substance formed. That, as has been | in the persistent parts for the use of the plant when it pointed out, is probably a body allied to formic aldehyde. | recommences its active growth ; they are also stored up in The starch is formed as one of the products of the decom- | seeds and spores to be used by the young plant during the position of the protoplasm of the corpuscle. That this is early stages of germination. Plastic products thus stored so is made evident when the formation of starch in parts up are termed “reserve materials,” and the organs in which of plants which are not green and which are not exposed | they are deposited are termed “depositories for reserve to light is considered. In the cells of these parts there | materials.” The non-nitrogenous reserve materials are Non are certain small colourless protoplasmic bodies which are | stored up in the form of carbohydrates or of fats. The nitro- termed “‘starch-forming corpuscles” or “leukoplasts,”and it | starch which is formed in the green parts of the plant is by these that the starch-granules are formed. It appears | (which is, be it observed, a temporary reserve material) mate. that the starch-granule is formed in the first instance by | is converted into a soluble substance, probably glucose, rials, the deconiposition of a portion of the protoplasm of the | and is conveyed in solution to the depository ; and from corpuscle, successive layers of starch being deposited upon | it, directly or indirectly, the non-nitrogenous reserve the primitive granule by the decomposition of successive | materials are formed. The reserve carbohydrates are layers of

protoplasm. It is in this way that the stratified | stored up either in the insoluble or the soluble form. In structure of these starch-granules is produced. There is | the former case they are deposited as starch-granules, or as no reason for assuming that the process of starch-formation | cellulose (as in the endosperm of the Date) in thick cell- in chlorophyll-corpuscles is essentially different from that | walls ; in the latter they exist as various forms of sugar in leukoplasts ; on the contrary, in view of the close re- | in solution in the cell-sap. The starch-granules are formed lationship of these bodies, the one being convertible into | in these depositories by the leukoplasts. From the soluble it the other, there is every reason for believing it to be the on-nitrogenous substance, probably glucose, together with Me same. There is, however, this functional difference between nitrogenous substances conveyed to the cells, the leuko- iH chlorophyll-corpuscle and leukoplast, that in the former plasts construct protoplasm ; and it is as the result of the | the synthetic processes, 7.¢., the construction of protoplasm, | decomposition of this protoplasm in a certain way that | begin with such simple substances as carbon dioxide, | starch is formed. This is true also of the reserve cellu- water, and mineral salts, whereas in the latter they begin | lose. From the plastic materials, both nitrogenous and (see below) with tolerably complex substances, such, for non-nitrogenous, which are supplied to the cells proto- example, as glucose and asparagin. Starch, then, is the | plasm is constructed, and the external layers of proto- immediate product, not of constructive, but of destructive plasm undergo decomposition in such a way that cellulose mi metabolism. is formed and deposited in successive layers upon the ucose.

Various kinds of sugar, notably glucose and cane-sugar,

internal surface of the cell-wall. The various kinds of

VEGETABLE. |

sugar (cane-sugar in the Beet root, glucose in the Onion, inulin in the Dahlia root, mannite in the unripe fruits of the Olive and in some Agarics, trehalose in many Agarics) are probably formed more or less directly from the glucose conveyed from other parts to the depository in each case. The fats occur as reserve materials characteristically in seeds and sometimes in fruits; they are not stored up in any considerable quantity in any other kind

of depository. They too are formed by the decomposition of protoplasm which has been constructed from plastic materials, nitrogenous and non-nitrogenous, which have been conveyed to the cells, The nitrogenous reserve materials are stored either in solution or as solid granules. In the former case they are amides, such as aSparagin and glutamin, leucin and tyrosin, and are held in solution in the cell-sap ; they are present characteristically in roots and tubers, but they have also been found, though in small quantity, in seeds. In the latter case these materials are stored in the form of proteids, chiefly globulins and peptones, and the granules in which they are deposited are termed “aleurone grains.” The aleurone grain may consist simply of an amorphous mass of proteid, or a portion of the proteid may have crystallized out so as to form a crystalloid ; in most cases the grain contains a small mass of mineral matter which consists, according to Pfeffer, of double phosphate of lime and magnesia. Aleurone grains occur characteristically in seeds, and they are especially well developed in oily seeds. When once deposited, the reserve materials suffer no

\ xe of further change, or at most the proteids may slowly undergo rive some alteration (globulin being converted into albuminate), — so long as the organ in which they are deposited remains g vth, wan inactive condition. But when the external conditions

become favourable the quiescent organ resumes its active life—in a word, it germinates—and the reserve materials which it contains then undergo chemical changes of such a nature as to convert them into substances which can readily travel to the seat of growth and can be used as plastic material by the growing cells. In a germinating seed, for instance, as the embryo grows the reserve materials of the seed diminish in quantity ; they are evidently conveyed to the seedling, and are used by it in the construction of new protoplasm. Beginning with the non-nitrogenous reserve materials, the starch in starchy seeds and the cellulose in such seeds as the Date are converted into sugar; this is proved by the detection of sugar as well in the seed as in the seedling, and by the detection in the seed of an unorganized ferment which possesses the property of con- verting starch into sugar. In oily seeds the fats are replaced by starch, formed through the intermediation of protoplasm, and the starch so formed is converted into sugar. With regard to the reserve proteids, they are converted into amides, for it has been

ascertained that, as they diminish in quantity, the amides, and notably asparagin, increase.

The effect of the absorption of these plastic substances by the embryo is that the cell-sap of its cells becomes charged with them, for the supply is more rapid than the consumption in the formation of protoplasm. If the seed- ling is growing under favourable conditions these sub- stances gradually diminish in quantity. Some light has been thrown upon the nature of these conditions by the researches of Pfeffer. He found that Lupin seedlings grown in the dark contained a very large quantity of asparagin so long as they continued to live, but that if they were exposed to light the asparagin gradually diminished. But he ascertained further that mere exposure to light is not the cause of this, since the asparagin did not diminish in seedlings exposed to light in an atmosphere which con- tained no carbon dioxide. The disappearance of the asparagin depended, therefore, upon conditions which were

Fe yeionLoGc y

5d

essential to the formation of non-nitrogenous organic sub- stance by the seedlings. Now the Lupin seed is one which is particularly rich in nitrogenous reserve materials, the quantity of non-nitrogenous reserve materials being relatively small. The accumulation of the asparagin in the seedlings grown in the dark is then to be ascribed to the absence of an adequate supply of non-nitrogenous substance with which it could combine to form proteid. When the seedlings were exposed to light this supply was forthcoming, and then the asparagin disappeared.

Supply of Energy.

It is evident that the various chemical processes which make up Supply the metabolism of plants involve an expenditure of energy ; hence of the maintenance of the life of the plant is dependent upon a supply energy. of energy.

In the case of animals the food affords the principal supply of energy. It consists for the most part of complex organic substances which represent a considerable amount of potential energy, and when these substances are decomposed in the body the potential energy appears in the kinetic form. This holds good also witli reference to plants which are destitute of chlorophyll, for their food necessarily includes, like that of animals, complex organic substances. But with plants which possess chlorophyll the casc is entirely different. Their food consists of inorganic substances which do not represent any considerable amount of potential energy ; from these simple substances green plants build up complex orgauic substances which do represent a considerable amount of potential energy ; it is evident, therefore, that green plants must be largely supplied from without with kinetic energy in some form or other. It has been already mentioned that the metabolic processes of plants are materially affected by external conditions, especially by the pre- sence or absence of light, and by variations in the temperature of the surrounding medium. A somewhat elevated temperature is essential to the active life of all plants, but light is essential only to the life of those which contain chlorophyll. This naturally suggests that the energy requisite for the maintenance of the life of plants is obtained by them in the form either of light or of heat.

Light.—In discussing the constructive metabolism of green plants Light a it was pointed out that such can only assimilate their food—that source of is, can only construct protoplasm from it—when exposed to light, plant- whereas plants which do not possess chlorophyll can assimilate energy. their food in the absence of light. It is true that a green seedling ean live for a time in continuous darkness and increase in light, but it does so, not by assimilating its food, but at the expense of the organic reserve materials which may be present in it. The fact of the dependence of green plants upon exposure to light sug- gests that the energy necessary for the processes of their constructive metabolism is obtained in the form of light, and that their chloro- phyll enables them to avail themselves of this form of kinetic energy. The function of chlorophyll has been made clear by the researches of Timiriaseff and of Engelmann. They have shown that the evolution of oxygen by a plant coutaining chlorophyll, which is the expression of the first stages of constructive metabolism, is most active when the plant is exposed to those rays of the solar spectrum which correspond to the

absorption-bands of the chloro- phyll-spectrum ; the more conspicuous the absorption-band, the greater is the degree of activity, so that the evolution of oxygen is most considerable in the rays between the lines B and C of the solar spectrum, at the junction of the red and the orange, which correspond to the absorption-band I in the chlorophyll-spectrum. It is, then, in consequence of this absorption by the chlorophyll that the kinetic energy of the solar rays is made available for the work of constructive metabolism in the plant. The whole of the kinetic energy absorbed by the chlorophyll is not converted into potential energy; still the chlorophyll-corpuscle appears to be a very perfect machine in this respect, for, according to Timiriaseff's calculations, it converts into the potential form as mucli as 40 per cent. of the absorbed energy. Inasmuch as light exercises so great an influence upon the constructive metabolism of green plants, it may be inferred that it must indirectly affect the absorption of food-materials by the roots. Rudolph Weber has, in fact, ascer- tained that the greatest absorption of the essential ash-constituents takes place when the plant is kept exposed to those rays of light which are most efficacious in promoting its constructive metabolism.

The effect of light upon the destructive metabolism of plants appears to be unimportant. This subject has been investigated by means of observations upon the respiration of plants ; and such a method is calculated to afford the necessary information, inasmuch as the activity of respiration may be taken as a measure of the activity of destructive metabolism.

It has been generally stated that chlorophyll is not formed in the absence of light. There are, nevertheless, certain cases in which its formation in complete darkness has been observed, provided

Heat a

source of blooded animals.

energy.

Accumu- lation of energy.

Dissipa- tion of energy,

that the temperature has been sufficiently high, namely, in the cotyledons of some Conifers and in the leaves of Ferns. The colouring matter etiolin is formed in the corpuscles in darkness, but the conversion of this into chlorophyll can only take place, as a rule, under the influence of light. The formation of chlorophyll will take place in light of very low intensity, but, as Wiesner's experiments show, there is a lower limit of intensity below which light is inactive. With regard to the relative efficacy of the differ- ent rays of the spectrum in promoting the formation of chlorophyll, it appears from Wiesner's researches that all the rays between Fraunhofer's lines B and H promote it in different degrees, and further, in confirmation of older observations, that seedlings turn green more rapidly in the yellow than in any other part of the spectrum. This last statement is true only for light of moderate intensity; when the light is very intense the formation of chlorophyll takes place more rapidly in blue than in yellow light. The reason of this is that in intense light chlorophyll undergoes decomposition, or at least chemical alteration of the nature of oxidation, which gocs on most actively in yellow light.

Heat.—Plants behave in relation to temperature like the cold- When they are maintained at a low temperature they cease to exhibit any signs of life. The meaning of this is that at a low temperature the activity of the metabolic processes is so reduced that they appear to be altogether arrested. But the im- portance of a moderately high temperature for the maintenance of the active life of the plant is not, as might be supposed, that it affords a continuous supply of energy to be converted into work ; it is rather that it determines the initiation of chemical processes which are carried on by means of energy obtained from other sources. Hence the supply of energy in the form of heat is rela- tively small as compared, on the one hand, with the supply of potential energy afforded by their food to the plants which do not possess chlorophyll, and, on the other hand, with the supply ob- tained in the form of light by plants which do possess chlorophyll.

It is not possible within the limits of this article to enter fully into the relations existing between plant-life and temperature. The following statements will at least indicate their general nature. In the first place, the

tolerance of extreme temperatures is different for different plants, as determined in the case of any particular organ, such as the seeds for instance. Secondly, for each of the processes which can be studied separately, such as germination, growth, respiration, the formation of chlorophyll, the action of unorganized ferments, the evolution of oxygen by green plants in light, &c., there are threc cardinal points of temperature to be noted—the minimum or zero point, at which the performance of the process is just possible; the optimum point, at which it is carried on with the greatest activity; the maximwm point, at which it is arrested. But these different phenomena do not all stand in precisely the same relation to temperature,—that is, the cardinal points for the exhibition of any two or more of thesc phenomena by one and the saine plant do not necessarily coincide. Thirdly, the larger the proportion of water in an organ, the more liable it is to be injured by exposure to extreme temperatures.

Expenditure of Energy.

We have now to ascertain what becomes of energy supplied to the plant. The matter may be briefly stated thus: a portion of it is stored up in the plant in the form of potential energy ; the re- inainder is lost to the plant, being either spent in the performance of mechanical work in connexion with growth or movement, or given off, most generally in the form of heat, occasionally in the form of light, and possibly in the form of electricity. The storing- up of energy in the potential form may be termed the “accumula- tion of energy,” the loss as the “dissipation of energy.”

1. Accumulation of Energy.—The accumulation of energy is the necessary accompaniment of constructive metabolism ; the forma- tion of more and more complex organic substances involves the conversion of kinetic into potential energy. By taking into con- sideration the amount of organic substance formed by a plant from its first development to its death, it is possible to arrive at some ilea of the amount of kinetic energy which the plant has stored up in the potential form. For the heat which is given out by burning the organic substance is but the conversion into kinetic energy of the potential energy stored up in the substance; it is but the reappearance of the kinetic energy which was used in produc- ing the substance. The heat, for instance, which is given out by burning wood or coal represents the

kinetic encrgy, derived prin- cipally from the sun’s rays, by which were effected the processes of constructive metabolism of which the wood or the coal was the product. The amount of energy thus stored up by plants in the potential form is very large, because they produce relatively large quantitics of organic substance.

2. Dissipation of Energy.—The expenditure of energy in con- nexion with growth and movement, and with the evolution of heat, light, and electricity, is dependent upon destructive meta- bolism, for the conditions which are essential to destructive meta- bolism are also those which are essential to the exhibition of these

phenomena. Taking growth, for example—that is, continuous change of form accompanied usually by increase in bulk—it appears that in an aerobiotic plant it is dependent upon the following ex- ternal conditions, namely, a supply of free oxygen and an adequate temperature, conditions which are precisely those upon which the destructive metabolic proccsses of such a plant also depend. This is true in such plants of the other above- mentioned phenomena also, Anaerobiotic plants can grow when the conditions are such that they can induce active fermentation,—that is, when their destruc. tive metabolism is active. After what has been said in the section on the “ Nervous System” above (p. 38 sq.) about animal movement it is hardly necessary to prove that the movements of plants, which are of essentially the same nature as those of animals, depend upon destructive metabolism and involve a dissipation of energy.

An evolution of energy in the form of heat is the inseparable result of destructive metabolism. With regard to plants, it may be stated generally that the cvolution of heat ig not sufficiently active to raise the temperature of the plant-body above that of the surrounding medium, it being remembered that plants are constantly losing heat, principally by radiation and in connexion with tran- spiration. In organs, however, in which destructive metabolism is very active it is easy to detect a rise of temperature, especially when a large number of them are collected together. A good instance of this is afforded by germinating seeds; for example, a rise of temperature is a familiar fact in the process of the malting of Barley. It

can also be readily observed in the case of opening flowers in dense inflorescences ; Warming observed, for example, that, at the time of the opening of the flowers, the inflorescence of an Aroid (Philodendron bipinnatifidum) attained a temperature of 18°°5 C. above that of the air.

The evolution of light by plants is a phenomenon which has been known from the times of Aristotle and of Pliny, and is commonly spoken of as “phosphorescence.” All the well-authenticated in- stances of luminosity are confined to the Fungi, to various Agarics, and to Schizomycetes (Bacteria), The so-called “phosphorescence ” of decaying wood is due to the presence of the mycelium of A garicus melleus (Rhizomorpha), and that of putrefying meat and vegetables to micrococci. See PHOsPHORESCENCE. The evolution of light is essentially dependent upon the life of the organism, and further, it is dependent upon the destructive metabolism ; for it ceases when the organism is killed (as by dipping it into hot water), or deprived of its supply of free oxygen, which is essential to the metabolic processes,

In view of the changes, both chemical and physical, which are

oing on with greater or less activity in the various parts of a liv- ing plant it has not been unnaturally inferred that the electrical equilibrium is being constantly disturbed, and that differences of electrical potential energy may exist in different parts. Many experimenters have investigated this subject, and such differences have been apparently observed. It is impossible to enter here into a detailed consideration of the results obtained ; it may suffice to state that in the majority of cases the electrical currents detected do not indicate a dissipation of the energy of the plant, but are due to physical causes, and in some cases even to the effect upon the organism of the apparatus employed for the purpose of detecting them. It has been clearly made out in certain instances that the currents persist in organs whicli have been suddenly killed in such a way as not to destroy their gross organization.

There is, however, one instance in which an electrical current has been detected which seems to be connected with the destructive metabolism of the plant. Burdon-Sanderson and Munk have both observed that, when the two electrodes are placed upon a mobile leaf of Dionzxa muscipula

(Venus's Fly-trap) when at rest, a certain electrical current is indicated by the galvanometer. When the leaf is stimulated, whether the stimulation be or be not followed by a movement, the direction of the observed current is suddenly re- versed. This change in the direction of the current—or "negative variation," as it is termed—is, according to Burdon-Sanderson, the "visible sign of an unknown molecular process," which he considers to be "an explosive molecular change," of the same nature as the negative variation which follows upon the stimulation of the muscles and nerves of animals,

[VEGETABLE,

In concluding this part of the subject it may be well, for the Income sake of clearness, to draw up an account of the income and expendi- and er

ture of a plant. In the case of a plant possessing chlorophyll the income of matter

consists of the food (salts, water, carbon dioxide, free oxygen), and plants.

the income of energy of kinetic energy in the form of light and heat, the former being the more important of the two items. The great bulk of the food absorbed is converted into organic matter, and is for the most part retained by the plant in the form of organ- ized structures, of reserve materials, and of waste-products which are not excreted ; but a certain proportion of it is lost in the form of the carbon dioxide and water exhaled in respiration, of oxygen exhaled by green parts in sunlight, and of excreted organic or inorganic matter. Besides these items of loss there are yet others. All plants lose a certain amount of matter in connexion with repro-

=.

b {

] ve- 1 at,

te of & wth.

duction, for all plants throw off in the course of their lives certain portions of their structure in the form of seeds, spores, antherozoids, &e. Again, plants whieh persist for more than one period of growth Jose matter by the falling off of eertain of their organs and of por- tions of their structure,—for example, by the falling of the leaves in autumn, and by the shedding of bark, fruits, Xe. With reference to the expenditure of energy, a large proportion of the income of energy remains stored up in the potential form in the organic matter which the plant accumulates. A dissipation of energy as heat.and in connexion with growth is common to all plants: in some there is dissipation of energy in the form of motion, in some in the form of light, in some, probably, in the form of electricity. A loss of energy—potential energy—occurs also when the plant loses organic matter in any of the ways mentioned above. These various items may be tabulated under the two heads of “ineome” and “ expendi- ture.” The water lost in transpiration is not considered, for it simply traverses the plant ; only that amount of water is considered which may be assumcd to enter into the processes of constructive metabolism or to be produced in the processes of destructive

metabolism. Plant possessing Chlorophyll. Income. Expenditure. Matter. Food— Inorganic salts. Carbon dioxide. Water. Free oxygen.

Matter. Organic substance formed. Carbon dioxide) evolved in respir-
Water ation. Free oxygen, evolved in light. Excreted substances, organic or inorganic. Reproduction (spores, seeds, &c.). Other losses (leaves, fruits, bark, &c.). Energy. Constructive metabolism. Growth. Movement (in some cases). Heat. Light. Electricity (in some cases). Potential energy (when organic matter is excreted or thrown off).

Balance in favour of Plant. Matter.—Organic substance (including tissues, reserve materials, and unex- ereted waste-products). Energy.—Potential energy, represented by the accumulated organic sub- stance.

Plant destitute of Chlorophyll. Expenditure.

Same as above, except that no free oxygen is given off.

Energy.

Rays of light absorbed by chloro- phyll.

Heat.

Income. Matter. Food— Inorganic salts. Organic substances. sh apt ree oxygen (in most cases). pormgen(oe) Balance in favour of Plant.

Same items as above.

Energy. Potential energy of organic food. Heat.

Movement of Plants.

It has been pointed out above that movement, ineluding in the conception the slow movement of growth, is an item in the ex- penditure of energy by the plant. The phcnomena connected with movement are of such physiological importance that it will be well to consider them rather fully.

In dealing with this large subject attention will be directed for the present simply to the external phenomena, leaving the internal causes and mechanisins till subsequently, and those presented by growing organs will be taken first.

1. Growth.—In commencing the study of growth it is important to have a perfectly elear idea of what the word means. It means the continual change in form of the body of the plant, or of any organ of it, the change being frequently accompanied. by increase in bulk, though this is not necessarily the case. For the purposes of this article it will be convenient to use “ growth” as meaning, unless expressly stated otherwise, growth in length, that is, the elongation of the organ along the linc joining its base aud its apex. The conditions upon which growth is dependent are—(1) a supply of plastic material for the formation of new protoplasm ; (2) favour- able external conditions, especially an adequate temperature ; (3) a supply of free oxygen in the case of aerobiotic plants, or, in the case of anaerobiotic plants, of fermentable substance ; (4) a supply of water to maintain the turgidity of the cells. Any variation in these essential conditions will lead to a variation in the rate of growth. The capacity for growth is limited, as a rule, to a certain period of the life of an organ and of its constituent cells ;

when this period is past growth ceases, however favourable the external con- ditions may eontinue to be.

The rate of growth of an organ is not uniform. At first the organ grows slowly, then more and more rapidly, until a maximum rapidity is reached, and then the rate diminishes until growth ceases altogether. This eycle of spontaneous variation in the rate of growth is known as the ‘‘grand period of growth.” It can be conveniently studied by marking on the growing point of an organ a series of transverse zones of known length, and observing their relative elongation in a given time. It will be found that the

youngest (nearest the apex) have elongated slightly, that the elon- gation is greater the farther each sueeessive zone is from the apex, until a zone of maximum elongation is reached ; the elongation of the zones lying behind this will be found to be less and less, until at last zones will be found which have not elongated at all. In addition to the variations in the rate of growth in length of an organ which make up its grand period it is found, if its growth be watehed from hour to hour, or at even shorter intervals, that it presents irregular variations, which are likewise to be regarded as spontaneous. Variations in the rate of growth may be induced by variations in the external conditions, especially by variations of temperature and of illumination. It will be of interest to inquire briefly into these relations between growth and temperature and growth and light.

Inasmueh as the decompositions which determine the evolution Growth of energy in the plant are dependent upon temperature, their and tem- activity being promoted by a rise of temperature within certain perature.

limits, it will be readily understood that growth, which is one ex- pression of the evolntion of energy, should likewise be affected by variations in temperature. It has been found, in faet, that the growth of any given plant will only take place within certain limits of temperature, a lowest or minimum temperature on the one hand and a highest or maximum temperature on the other; and further, that between these two points there is

one, the optimum temperature, at which the rate of growth is most rapid. Growth is more rapid-at each degree as the temperature rises from the minimum to the optimum point ; it is less rapid at each degree as the temperature continues to rise from the optimum to the maxi- mum point ; and conversely, growth is more rapid at each degree as the temperature falls from the maximum to the optimum, and less rapid at each degree as the temperature further falls from the optimum to the minimum. This dependence of growth on temper- ature, and this relation betwcen different degrecs of temperature and different rates of growth, may be convenicntly spoken of as the ‘‘tonie influence” of temperature. The mere variation in temperature as such does not appear, as a rule, to affeet the rate of growth. Roots exposed to rapid and considerable variations of temperature for some time are found by Pedersen to have grown to about the same extent as similar roots which had been growing for the same time at the mean temperature. The only case in which it appears that variation in temperature produces a distinct effect is afforded by Pfeffer’s observations upon the opening and closing of flowers. He found that a rise of temperature caused the flowers to open and a fall to close, the opening or closing being an expression of the accelerated growth in length of the organ as a whole. This effect of variation of temperature is distinguished as the ‘stimulating ” effect.

In considering the relation of light to growth we have prinei- Growth pally to consider its influenee as being an essential normal condition and of growth, its “ tonie ” influence, —that is, it is a question whether or light.

not light exereises any influence whieh ean be regarded as ‘‘ stiniu- lating” on the rate of growth. Speaking generally, it may be stated that plant-organs, with the exception of ordinary flattened horizontally expanded Icaves and other organs of similar organiza- tion, grow at least as well in darkuess as in light,—that exposure to light is not an essential condition of their growth. With leaves and Teaf-like organs the case is different. When plants are kept for some time in darkness one of the most striking features is the smallness of the lcaves of the shoots whieh have been developed during that time. This is not to be ascribed to an absenee of plastie material, for it is exhibited when plastie material is abun dantly present in the tissues; nor can it be attributed to the fact that in darkness the leaves are not able to

carry on the formation of organic substance, for it is not all leaves which remain small in darkness, but only those which have the organization described above. The long tubular lcaves of the Onion, for example, continue to grow in darkness, and so do the long flattened leaves of Irises. The arrest of the growth of flattened horizontally ex- panded leaves in darkness is due to some peculiar effect, which we must regard as of a “tonic” nature, exereised by light upon the growing cells. Intermittent exposure to light for brief periods suffices to enable the leaves to carry on their growth in darkness, and it is not necessary that the light should be intense. The in- » termittent exposure induces in the leaf a condition, though it can- not be precisely stated what, whieh permits of the continuanee of growth,—a condition which is termed “nhototonus.” Assuming that the organ is actually growing, we find that in all cases light retards the rate of growth, and this the more markedly the greater its intensity. Wiesner has, in fact, shown that growth may be altogether arrested by exposure of the growing organ to intense light. The effect of light in retarding growth has been ascertained by comparative measurements of similar organs growing, some in darkness others in light, and is proved negatively by the greater length usually attained by shoots which have grown in darkness for a given time as compared with that attained in an equal time by shoots growing in light. It appears that variations in the in- tensity of light, as such, affect the rate of growth. Pfeffer has

found that exposure to light causcd certain flowers to open, and to darkness to close. Probably this is accompanied, as in the parallel case of temperature, by an acceleration of the mean rate of growth.

The relation of the long axis of a growing organ to the line of action of gravity appears also to affect its rate of growth. Elfving has found that the sporangiferous hyphe of Phycomyces, which normally grow vertically upwards, grow somewhat less rapidly when they are maintained in the inverse position, that their growth in length is more rapid in opposition to the action of gravity than in the same direction, and this he thinks is true of all organs which normally grow vertically upwards. Gravity would appear, there- fore, to exercise a tonic influence on growth. The substitution for gravity of a considerable centrifugal force produced no apparent effect on the rate of growth. ’

The direction of growth of an organ is determined partly by in- herent and partly by external causes, Beginning with the inherent causes, we find that, when the action of external directive influences upon growing organs is as far as possible eliminated, the axis of growth—that is, the line joining the apex and the basc—is approxi- mately a straight line. Thus Véchting has shown that, when growing shoots are caused to grow in darkness and to rotate slowly about a horizontal axis by means of an instrument termed a “clino- stat,” their long axes become straight. This is the expression of an inherent tendency which he terms “ rectipetality.” But the line of growth is not at all times straight ; for instance, the apex of an organ growing vertically upwards does not travel upwards in a straight line, but oscillates from side to side of the vertical. This oscillation is termed ‘‘ nutation,” and is due to the fact that growth in length is not uniformly rapid on all sides of the growing organ, but that during any given period of time one side grows more rapidly than the others. This unequal growth, which we may term “heterauxesis,” is apparently spontaneous. The particular path which the apex of an organ describes in the course of its growth depends upon the propertics of the organ, a point which may now be conveniently dealt with.

Some information as to the properties of an organ may be ob- tained from observation of its anatomical structure. For instance, cylindrical organs, such as many shoots, are radially syinmetrical in structure, and they are in most cases found to be also physio- logically radial. Some organs, again, such as the leaves of some Irises, are bilaterally symmetrical in structure, and they are found to be physiologically bilateral. Other organs, finally, such as flattened expanded leaves, Liverworts, though, like the bilateral

organs, they present two opposed surfaces, are not bilaterally symmetrical in structure, inas- much as the tissues in relation with the two surfaces are differently constituted. Such organs are dorsiventral both anatomically and physiologically. The properties of an organ are not, however, always to be inferred from structure. In some cases radial sym- metry of structure is accompanied by dorsiventral properties. This is the case, as Sachs has shown, with the shoots of Tropxolwm majus under certain circumstances,

The question now naturally arises, How are the peculiar pro- perties induced? In some cases they can only be accounted for by regarding them as inherent; this is true of radial organs, of bi- lateral organs, and to a certain extent of dorsiventral organs. The lateral branches of dicotyledonous trees have, in many cases, been found to possess inherent dorsiventral properties. In other cases, however, dorsiventrality is induced. It has been found by Frank —and his observation has been corroborated by De Vries— that the dorsiventrality of the lateral shoots of Conifers is induced by their relation to gravity. When maintained in a horizontal position during their growth the side which is uppermost becomes the dorsal surface, the other the ventral surface. Again, Sachs has shown that the young shoot of 7’ropxolwm is radial, but that if it be exposed tostrong unilateral illumination it exhibits dorsiventral properties, the more strongly illuminated side becoming the dorsal surface, and further, that the plane of dorsiventrality may be altered by causing the light to fall on a fresh side of the shoot. A similar case of the induction of dorsiventrality is offered by the thalloid shoot of Marchantia. Tracing the development of the shoot from a gemma, we find the gemma to be bilaterally symmetrical in structure and in physiological properties. It falls to the earth with one surface undefmost, which becomes the ventral surface, whilst the upper surface becomes the dorsal. That the dorsiven- trality is in this case induced by light is proved by the fact that, if an experiment. be so arranged that the light falls on the under surface of the gemma, this becomes the dorsal surface, whilst the upper surface becomes the ventral.

The further question now arises, How can the nature of the pro- perties of an organ be determined, if, as has been shown, it cannot always be determined by an examination of the structure? The answer is, that it can be determined by observing the mode of growth of the organ, and especially its

response to the action of ex- ternal directive influences. Thus, the spontaneous heterauxesis of a radial organ is such that each side in turn is the one which is growing with the greatest rapidity, so that, seen from above, the

PiYS som og y

apex will appear to describe a somewhat circular orbit, and its path upwards will be spiral.

prothallia of Ferns, thalloid shoots of

¥

[VEGETABLE,

This kind of nutation is termed “revolving nutation,” or ‘ circumnutation ” (Darwin). Similarly,

in bilateral organs each of the two sides grows alternately the more rapidly, so that, seen from above, the apex appears to oscillate from side to side of the vertical, and its path will be a zigzag line. Algo in dorsiventral, as in bilateral, organs alternately the more rapidly, but the period of alternation is much

each of the two sides grows

longer, and may occur only once during the whole period of growth, For instance, the young leaves of Ferns are rolled up upon their internal (dorsal) surfaces ; they present what is known as “ circinate vernation.” This is due to the fact that at first the lower (ventral) surface of the leaf grows more rapidly than the upper (dorsal) ; it is only towards the end of the period of growth that the upper surface grows the more rapidly, and then the leaf expands. Special terms have been applied to these phases of growth ; when the upper surface of the organ is growing the more rapidly the growth is said to be ‘‘epinastic,” when the lower “ hyponastic.””

The spontaneous variations in the direction of growth of an organ Extery thus afford some indication of the nature of its organization, but directiy this is more clearly shown by its response to the action of external influ. ences,

f

radia that it tends to place its long axis parallel to the direction of the ius)

directive influences. These will now be taken in order.

Radiant Energy.—It will be convenient to consider separately the phenomena exhibited by organs of different physiological properties.

Beginning, then, with radial shoot-organs, it is usually found that Helio. an organ the organ curves tropism

when light falls upon one side of such soas to direct its apex towards the source of light,—in other words, in

incident rays. The effect of the unilateral illumination is to cause heterauxesis of the organ such that the side upon which the light dircctly falls is the one which grows the most slowly, and therefore becomes concave. Inasmuch as all curvatures induced by light are included under the term ‘“heliotropism,” organs which exhibit the kind of curvature above described may be said to be ‘* positively heliotropic.” As examples of positively heliotropic radial organs may be mentioned radial stems, the multicellular stipes of some Fungi (Coprinus, Claviceps), the sporangiferous hyphe of unicclular Fungi (Aucor, Pilobolus), radial leaves, such as those of the Onion, and, as exceptional cases, some roots (Onion, Ranuneulus aquattlis), In other cases the effect of unilateral illumination is the reverse of the above: the organ curves so as to direct its apex away from the source of light, though it still tends to place its long axis parallel to the direction of the incident rays. Organs curving in this manner are said to be ‘negatively heliotropic.” This condi- tion has been frequently observed in roots, and among shoots it is characteristic of the hypocotyl of the Mistletoe. Many cases of negative hcliotropism in shoots have been mentioned, particularly the tendrils of Vitis and Ampelopsis, in which its

existence was first detected by Knight ; but the apparent negative heliotropism in these cases is probably the expression of something altogether different, as will be subsequently pointed out. There appear to be some well-authenticated cases of a reversal of heliotropic properties in the course of development of certain organs. Hofmeister states that the floral peduncles of Linaria Cymbalaria are positively heliotropic, but that when the fruit has replaced the flower the peduncle is negatively heliotropic; and Wiesner states that the peduncle of Helianthemum vulgare is negatively heliotropic after fertilization has taken place. The nature of the heliotropic pro- perties appears thus to vary with the biological conditions of the organs.

Tien organs are exposed throughout the whole period of their growth to unilateral illumination they usually take up a certain position which is termed the “fixed-light position,” such that they curve towards the direction of incidence of the brightest light. In some cases this is not so. This may be explained by an absence of heliotropic sensitiveness, but in some cases it is due to the fact that the organs follow the daily course of the sun. Wiesner mentions Sonchus arvensis as a striking example of the latter condition. The activity of the curvature stands in a direct relation to the intensity of the incident light. The same botanist has found that for the organs of cach plant there is an optimum intensity of light which produces the maximum of heliotropic effect, and that any increase or diminution of this intensity is followed by a diminished heliotropic effect.

With regard to the relative heliotropic effect of rays of different wave-length, it has long been known that the rays of high refrangi- bility are much more powerful than those of low refrangibility. Wiesner finds the distribution of heliotropic effect in the spectrum to be more exactly this: the greatest curvature is produced by the rays at the junction of the ultra-violet and violet ; from this point the heliotropic effect diminishes until, in the yellow, it disappears; it begins to manifest itself again in the orange, and increases until it reaches a small secondary maximum in the ultra-red. Helio- tropic effect is by no means confined to the luminous rays of the spectrum. Wiesner, and more recently Wortmann and Barthé- lemy, have shown that the dark heat-rays possess it. The curva-

(strop- i. of

1 ial Cans,

VEGETABLE. |

tures produced by the dark rays are sometimes designated by the term ‘‘ thermotropism.”

The effect of unilateral illumination is not immediately ex- hibited, nor does it cease immediately upon the withdrawal of the organ from light. If an organ be exposed for only a short time to unilateral itlumination, it may not exhibit any curvature during the period of exposure, but will curve subsequently in darkness. The exposure had sufficed to induce heliotropic curvature. This Wiesner terms ‘‘ photo-mechanical induction,” but it is simply due to the slow response of the organ to the directive influence of the incident rays,—to a long “latent period.”

Turning now to the part played by the growing organ in helio- tropic curvature, it is clear that the curvature will largely depend upon the heliotropic sensitiveness of the organ, and it must be porne in mind that organs vary widely in this respect. The cur- yature is in all cases confined to the growing region of the organ, or, to put it more generally, to the region which is capable of growing. In connexion with this point, the further one naturally arises as to the seat of heliotropic sensitiveness. It is usually assumed that those zones which are growing most rapidly are those which are most sensitive, but Darwin found that in some cases (cotyledons of Phalaris and Avena, hypocotyls of Cabbage and Beet) illumination of the tip of the organ appeared to induce heliotropic curvature. Thiscanunot at present be regarded as fully established.

With regard to the heliotropic phenomena presented by simply pilateral organs, such as the leaves of Irises, it will suffice to say that they are positively heliotropic.

The heliotropic phenomena presented by dorsiventral organs are morecomplicated. It has been observed that dorsiventral branches (including the tendrils of Vitis and Amypelopsis mentioned above), when

exposed to vertical light, tend to assume a horizontal position, whereas in darkness they usually grow erect. Dorsiventral leaves usually remain horizontal in darkness. A full discussion of these facts cannot be entered upon here; a few remarks must suffice. It is argued by some, especially by De Vries, that the horizontal position of dorsiventral organs when exposed to light is due to negative heliotropism ; but there is no adequate proof that this is really the case. Bache says on the subject, ‘‘So far as I cau apprehend the facts, the negative heliotropism of the Marchantia-shoot, and that of many other shoots which behave in the same way, is the same phenomenon as the epinasty of foliage-leaves described by De Vries.” Detmer has in fact found that exposure to light, quite independently of the direction of the incident rays, induces the rapid growth of the dorsal surface of dorsiventral leaves—in a word, induces photo-epinasty. Continued photo-epinasty would clearly cause the organ to curve downwards below the horizontal plane, and this is occasionally actually the case. But more fre- quently the organ remains in the horizontal plane when the light falls vertically upon it, or, to put the case more generally, the organ takes up such a fixed-light position that its long axis is at right angles to the direction of the incident rays. Moreover, it has been ascertained that it is always the dorsal surface of leaves which is directed towards the brightest incident light. It is clear that, in addition to the induction of photo-epinasty, light exercises a directive influence upon the growth of these organs. The attempt has been made to explain this by ascribing to the dorsiventral organs merely the heliotropic properties which belong to radial organs, but this explanation is quite insufficient. They can only be accounted for by attributing to dorsiventral organs, as Frank has done, a peculiar heliotropic sensitiveness, which he terms ‘‘trans- verse heliotropism ” and Darwin ‘‘diaheliotropism,” which mani- fests itself in the assumption of such a position that the dorsal surface of the organ is placed at right angles to the direction of the incident rays.

Gravity.—The influence of gravity in determining the direction of growth of an organ manifests itself in phenomena which are designated by the term ‘‘ geotropism.” We will again consider sepa- rately the phenomena which are presented by organs of different physiological properties.

Beginning with radial organs, we find that a great number of them normally grow either upwards or downwards; thus, primary shoots grow upwards and primary roots grow downwards. If any attempt is made to alter the direction of growth of these organs they at once curve so as to regain their normal direction. That the direction of growth is actually the result of the action of gravity was first demonstrated by Knight. He caused seeds to germinate on a wheel revolving with sufficient rapidity to set up a considerable centrifugal force, and he found that the roots and stems of the seed- lings behaved with regard to the direction of the centrifugal force precisely as they do with regard to that of gravity: the roots grew radially outwards, and the stems radially inwards. He states his conclusion thus: “I conceive myself to have proved that the radi- cles of germinating seeds are made to descend, and their plumules to ascend, by some external canse, and not by any power inherent in vegetable life; and I see little reason to doubt that gravitation

is the principal, if not the only, agent employed in this case by Nature.”

In conformity with the terminology used with reference to helio- tropism, organs which grow towards the centre of the earth are said to be “positively geotropic’’ and those growing in the opposite direction ‘‘ negatively geotropic.” As examples of positively geo- tropic radial organs may be mentioned, in addition to primary roots, the hyphe of Moulds which penetrate into the substratum, the root-like filaments of Vawcheria, Caulerpa, and other Algz, the rhizoids of Muscincx, the rhizomes of some plants, such as Yucca and Cordyline. As examples of negatively geotropic radial organs may be mentioned, in addition to primary shoots, the stipes of Mushrooms, the sporangiferous hyphe of Moulds, the stalks of the receptacles of Liverworts, the sete of Muscinew, the peduncles of many flowers, the climbing roots of various epiphytes. Cases of the absence of geotropic irritability are afforded by the hypocotyl of the Mistletoe, and by the aerial roots of various epiphytes. A reverse of its geotropic properties may take place in the course of the development of an organ. Vochting has found, for instance, that the peduncle of the Poppy is negatively geotropic

whilst the flower is in the bud, but positively geotropic during flowering and fruiting.

In dealing with these phenomena we have first to consider the effect of gravity acting at different angles. Sachs concludes, and his conclusion is generally accepted, that the geotropic influence of gravity is greatest when the long axis of the organ is at right angles to the vertical, and that it is zero when the long axis of the organ coincides with the vertical, whether the apex point upwards or downwards, or whether the organ be positively or negatively geo- tropic,—that is, if the force of gravity acting at any point of an organ be decomposed into two forces, the one acting at right angles to the long axis of the organ and the other along it, it is only the former which produces a geotropic effect. Sachs bases this view upon the fact that geotropic curvature is more rapidly produced when an organ is horizontal than when it is in any other position. Elfving has made observations which suggest a different view, namely, that the geotropic action of gravity upon an organ is greatest when that organ is removed as far as possible from its normal relation to the vertical.

The degree of geotropic sensitiveness is different in different organs. This is shown by the different directions of growth taken by different organs when grown under conditions which prevent to a sufficient extent other directive influences from producing any effect. For instance, primary roots grow vertically downwards, but lateral roots grow more or less nearly horizontally. It has been ascertained, by means of centrifugal force, that lateral roots can be induced to behave like primary roots if only the force is sufficient: lateral roots grow – s outwards on the wheel when the centrifugal force is 4g (g=force of gravity). It may be inferred that their geotropic sensitiveness is one-fourth of that of primary roots. The response of an organ to the directive influence of gravity, as in the case of heliotropism, is not immediate, but is preceded by a long latent period. An organ placed horizontally will not begin to curve for some time, and if then placed vertically the curvature will proceed for some time. Geotropic curvature, like heliotropic curvature, isa phenomenon of induced heterauxesis, the result being the assumption by the organ of such a position that gravity ceases to exert any directive influence upon it. Primary shoots and roots, for instance, find the vertical to be their position of rest, whereas lateral

branches take up a more or less inclined position. It appears that, generally at least, the most rapidly growing zones of organs are those in which geotropic influ- ence is most active. It has been hitherto generally accepted that the seat of most active curvature was also the seat of geotropic sensitiveness. Darwin recently brought forward the view, based upon the behaviour of roots with their tips cut off, that, in the root at least, the tip is the seat of geotropic sensitiyeness. This suggestion has given rise to a number of researches, the results of which are so conflicting that it is impossible at present to come to any definite conclusion on the subject.

With regard to the geotropic properties of simply bilateral organs (leaves of Irises, &c.) it need only be said that they are negatively geotropic.

Coming, finally, to the geotropic phenomena presented by dorsi- Geotrop- ventral organs, we find that many organs which when growing ism of exposed to light have a more or less oblique direction of growth, dorsi- grow erect in darkness. This is obviously an effect of gravity, and ventral the organs arc clearly negatively geotropic (examples are afforded organs. by the runners of Polygonum aviculare, Atriplex latifolia, and others, by radical leaves, and by thalloid shoots of Marchantia). But some dorsiventral organs do not grow erect in darkness. Frank mentions the runners of Fragaria lucida, lateral branches of Conifers, and many dicotyledonous shrubs and trees as examples. He finds, further, that when these organs are placed otherwise than horizontally they curve until they come to lie in that plane, and, if they are placed in an inverse position so that their normally inferior surface (ventral) is uppermost, they twist on their own axes until the normal relation of their surfaces with respect to the vertical is attained ; many leaves also behave in this way. Frank

Hydro- tropism,

Galvano- tropism.

Sub- stratum.

Contact.

Twining of ten- drils.

accounts for these phenomena by ascribing to such dorsiventral organs a peculiar geotropie sensitiveness, which he terms "'trans- verse geotropism," and Darwin ''diageotropism." De Vries has severely criticized this assumption. He regards the curvatures of shoots and branches into the horizontal plane as being, to some extent, the expression of the negative geotropism of the stems inter- fered with by the weight of the leaves, and, to some extent, also the expression of those forms of spontaneous heterauxesis termed epinasty and hyponasty which were alluded to above. Similarly he aecounts for the torsions observed by Frank by ascribing them to the unequal twisting moment of the leaves on the two sides of the shoot when in the inverse position. In view of the existence of diaheliotropism, it may be regarded as probable that diageotropism exists also. But at present the case for the latter is not sufficiently made out. More experimental evidence must be forthcoming be- fore the assumption of diageotropism can be regarded as fully justified.

Moisture.—It has long been known that roots when brought into the neighbourhood of a moist surface curve towards it. For instance, when seeds are sown in a box of damp sawdust, the bottom of the box being perforated with sufficiently large holes, the roots of the seedlings grow downwards into the sawdust, and ultimately project through the holes. They then no longer grow vertically downwards, but curve so as to apply themselves to the moist surface offered by the bottom of the box. To these phenomena Darwin has applied the term ''hydrotropism." Organs which curve in this way are said to be '' positively hydrotropic"; but there are also ''negatively hydrotropic" organs. Wortmann has observed, for instance, that the sporangiferous hyphe of Phycomyces curve away from a moist surface. The phenomenaare precisely similar to those of heliotropism and of geotropism. The curvature is in this case also the expression of induced heterauxesis. It takes place in this case also with the greatest activity in the region of most rapid growth. Darwin came to the conclusion that the hydrotropic sensitiveness of roots at least is localized in their tips, a conclu- sion which, though opposed by Detlefsen and Wiesner, is so far confirmed by Molisch's results that it may be accepted as well founded.

Hlectricity.—Elfving found that when a root is placed vertically between two electrodes it curves towards the positive electrode,—that is, against the direction of the current. In one case (Cabbage) the curvature was towards the negative electrode. Miiller (Hettlingen), in repeating Elfving's experiments, found that the curvature was in all cases such as to tend to place the long axis of the root in the plane of the current, the curvature being towards the negative pole. These phenomena are spoken of as ‘‘galvanotropism.” Miiller found that the curvature was induced when the current traversed only the tip of the root, thus affording apparently another instance of localization of sensitiveness in the tip.

Lhe Substratum.—Dutrochet long ago observed that the hypo- cotyl of the Mistletoe, in whatever position the seed may have been placed, assumes such a direction of growth that its long axis is perpendicular to the surface ou which the seed has germinated. Sachs has shown, by means of rotation on the clinostat, that this position is assumed both by shoots and roots. It is clear that the substratum exercises a directive influence upon the organs growing either outwards from its surface or inwards into its surface, but the nature of this influence has not yet been investigated. It is certainly not to be ascribed, as Van Tieghem suggested, to the mcre mass of the substratum. The effect of a cube of turf or a pot of earth would vanish entirely in comparison with the attraction of the earth, —in other words, with the influence of gravity. The pheno- mena are designated generally by the term “ somatotropism.”

Contact.—The effeet of coutaet upon the direction of growth of an organ must be clearly distinguished from the effects of cousider- able pressure. The latter are of two kinds: in the one case the pressure arrests the growth of that side of the organ which is exposed to it; in the other it excites the organ to active growth, particularly in thickness. Examples of the former effect are so common that they need not be specified ; examples of the latter are afforded by the thickening of tendrils and of climbing stems when they have firmly grasped some support. The phenomena now to be considered are such as are induced by slight pressure. Striking instances of this are afforded by tendrils. A very slight touch suffices, in the case of the very sensitive, such as those of Passiflora gracilis and of Sicyos angulatus, to

induce very per- ceptible curvature, which can be detected, according to Darwin, in half a minute after the touch.

In order to illustrate the subject adequately a brief account will be given here of the more important phenomena connected with the twining of tendrils. Darwin has shown that tendrils are not sensitive during the whole of their existence ; speaking generally, they are not sensitive when they are either very young or full grown, and are most sensitive when they are about three-fourths grown. Darwin has also found that their sensitiveness is localized. In most the lower or basal part is either not at all sensitive or is sensitive only to prolonged contact. Most tendrils have their tips

PS ¥ oa Calo Y

| Cissus discolor) they are sensitive on all sides; in Mutista the in-

it travels over a large area, and there is eonsiderable

just below the point of attachment to the support. The coiling of

[VEGETABLE,

slightly but permanently hooked, and the sensitiveness is localized in the concavity of the hook. In some cases (Cobwa scandens,

ferior and lateral surfaces are sensitive. Asa rule, when in its most sensitive condition the tendril is actively circumnutating, so that probability that it will come into contact with some body around which it can twine. When contact takes place the tendril begins to eurve round the support. As it does so new points of the sensitive surface are stimulated, and the curvature increases and extends until the whole of the tendril lying between the original point of contact and the apex is wound in a spiral coil round the support. In some cases this is all that takes place. In the great majority of cases, how- ever, the coiling of the apical portion of the tendril round a support is followed by the spiral coiling of more or less of that portion of the tendril which lies between the original point of contact and the insertion of the tendril upon the stem, provided that this is mechanically possible. The spiral coiling of the basal part of the tendril involves, namely, a

considerable shortening, and, if both the stem and the support are immovably fixed, this shortening eannot take place. The turns of the coil are not all in the same direction ; they are grouped into two or more spires, separated by short straighter portions, the turns of any two successive spires being in opposite directions. This is a mechanical necessity asso- ciated with the spiral coiling of a filament attached at both ends, The spiral coiling of the basal part of the tendril usually begins

tendrils, like all the curvatures hitherto considered, is a pheno- menon of induced heterauxesis. Hence it is that the possibility of the twining of a tendril round a support depends upon the thickness of the support and upon that of the tendril. Most tendrils, inas- much as they are very thin, can twine round strings, but those which are relatively thick can only twine round a support of some thickness, for there is a mechanical limit to the excess of elonga- tion of the convex over the concave side. The spiral coiling of the untouched portion of the tendril has an especial interest, as it offers a striking sineemtion of the transmission of a stimulus. It is true that the tendrils of many plants, if they fail to come into contact with a support, likewise coil spirally ; but this is a much slower process, and only begins at the time when the tendrils are ceasing to grow aud to be sensitive.

Tendrils are not, however, the only organs which are sensitive to contact. Other instances are afforded by the petioles of most leaf-elimbers, by shoots, and apparently by roots.

In the case of sensitive shoots Dutrochet observed that the twin- ing stem of Cuscuta is sensitive like a tendril. Von Mohl suggested that all climbing stems are sensitive, but both Darwin and De Vries were unable to detect the sensitiveness. This view of Von Mohl has been recently revived by Kohl, who finds that the inter- nodes of climbing stems are sensitive to a long-continued pressure which is insufficient to produce any simply mechanical effect. Darwin found the young internodes of Lophospermum scandens, which is not a stem-climber, as also the peduncles of Mawrandia semperflorens, to be seusitive to touch, and Kerner states that this is also the case with the peduncles of many flowers (Poppy, Anemone, Ranunculus, Tulip).

With regard to roots, Darwin was led to suspect, by observing Dar- the behaviour of the radicles of seedlings in their attempts to pass winiat over obstacles in the soil, that the tip of the radicle is sensitive to eurva- contact, and that the stimulus is transmitted from this, the sen- ture. sory organ, to the growing zones behind it, in which the necessary — curvature is then effected. He made experiments by attaching small objects to one side of the tip of the radicle in various plants, by touching one side of the tip with caustic, and by cutting a thin slice off one side, and found in most cases that the radicle curved away from the touched or injured side, that the curvature is pre- cisely the opposite of that performed by tendrils when touched.

The peculiar curving of radicles has been termed the “ Darwinian curvature.” Darwin’s conclusions as to the sensitiveness of the radicle have given rise to considerable discussion, It is clear, in the first place, as he himself showed, that radicles are not perceptibly affected by brief contact or by friction ; the contact must be pro- longed. Those who dissent from Darwin’s view, such as Wiesner, Burgerstein, and Detlefsen, urge that the curvatures induced in his experiments are pathological. It seems probable that this objection is valid. It may be admitted at once in the case of the experiments made by means of slicing the root-tip or touching it with caustic. With regard to the effect of small objects, such as pieces of card, it appears that the curvature of the radicle is due mainly, if not entirely, to the substances used in attaching them. In some cases, for instance, they were attached by a drop of shellae. It has been shown that the mere presence of the drop of shellac is sufficient to induce thé Darwinian curvature, and microseopieal

examination has proved that ‘the part touched by the shellac had died away. Moreover, it is known that a radicle can grow down- wards against considerable resistance: it can penetrate into mer- cury ; it can perforate tinfoil without deflexion ; Darwin, in faet,

estimates the force of downward growth of the radicle at } Tb, and its lateral pressure, in particular cases, at 8 and 3 Ib respectively. The evidence leads to the conclusion that the Darwinian curvature of roots is not the

expression of sensitiveness to contact, but that it is the result of injury of one side of the root. ;

Combined Effects. Now that the influences which determine the direction of growth have been individually considered, it is possible to account for the characteristic positions taken up by organs in the course of their development. In dealing with this subject it is convenient, as Sachs suggests, to classify organs, according to their ultimate position, into two groups, —those which, under normal conditions, have their long axes vertical and those which have their long axes more or less inelined to the vertical ; the former Sachs terms ‘‘ orthotropic” organs, the latter ‘‘plagiotropic.” —

The direction of growth of plant-organs under normal conditions is the expression of the resultant effect of various external directive influences. To illustrate this in the case of orthotropic organs, let us consider the primary shoot and the primary root of a seedling growing under conditions which may be taken as normal. In the case of a shoot growing upwards into the air when light falls verti- cally upon it, its vertical upward growth is chiefly due to the action of gravity,—that is, it is the expression of the particular degree and quality of the geotropic sensitiveness of the shoot. Since the light is equally intense on all sides of the shoot, it exerts no direct- ive influence. Orthotropism is then mainly due to negative geo- tropism. That this is so can be readily proved in various ways. For instance, the hypocotyl of the Mistletoe, as mentioned above, is not geotropic at all; hence it cannot be included among either orthotropic or plagiotropic organs, for it may grow vertically or it may grow obliquely, its direction of growth being determined chiefly by its somatotropism. Again, when a normally orthotropic organ is grown in darkness on a clinostat its direction of growth is hori- zontal. Passing now to the case of aay roots growing in the earth, when the conditions are normal—that is, especially when the earth is uniformly moist around the root—their direction of growth is vertically downwards. This is chiefly due to their strong positive geotropism. Let us suppose, now, that the conditions of growth of these organs are somewhat different from those which we have regarded as normal ; let us suppose that the shoot or the root is exposed to lateral light, or that the soil about the root is not equally moist on all sides. In the former case, the action of light will

tend to induce heliotropic curvature, but it will depend upon the relative strength of heliotropic and of geotropic sensitiveness whether or not a curvature actually takes place. In the case of most ortho- tropic shoots a curvature (positive) would take place, thus showing the heliotropic sensitiveness of shoots to be greater than the geo- tropic, but in some instances it would not take place ; in the case of most orthotropic roots no curvature would take place, but in some instances (Sinapis alba and others) a curvature (negative) would take place, showing that in most cases the heliotropic sensitiveness of roots is less than their geotropic sensitiveness. The unequal moisture in the soil around the root would cause hydrotropic curva- ture, inasmuch as the sensitiveness of roots to the influence of moist surfaces is greater than their sensitiveness to gravity.

We will deal with plagiotropic organs in a similar way. The majority of such are lateral members, as branches, leaves, &c. The direction of growth of a lateral member, certainly of branches of stems and roots and probably also of leaves, is at first determined by its relation to the parent axis. It has been found—by Dutrochet, Sachs, and others—that at their first development the long axes of lateral organs make a definite angle—tcrmed the "‘ proper angle ”— with the long axis of the parent organ. Dutrochet thought that the proper angle was in all cases a right angle, that the relation of lateral organ to parent axis was of the nature of somatotropism ; but this is a too general statement. The original direction of growth of a lateral organ determined by its proper angle would be maintained, in the absence of internal directive influences, by its rectipetality, but in nature it is affected by light, by gravity, &c. Lateral shoot-branches, for example, are either inherently dorsi- ventral or they become dorsiventral under the influence of gravity or of unilateral illumination ; they are then diaheliotropic, though the manifestation of their diaheliotropism may be interfered with by photo-epinasty ; they are usually negatively geotropic. Their direction of growth—that is, the direction of their long axes when mature—is the resultant effect of diaheliotropism and of negative geotropism. In the case of lateral root-branches these are plagio- tropic but radial ; they grow outwards, slightly inclined downwards

raYstoeonhocadc yYy

a few inches above the ground it appears to be growing almost vertically upwards, but as it elongates the last-formed internodes exhibit well-marked circumnutation. It continues to grow upwards mainly in virtue of its negative geotropism, the direction of its growth being little, if at all, affected by light in consequence of its low degree of heliotropic sensitiveness. If now one of the young growing apical internodes comes into contact with a vertical support it begins to twine around it in virtue of the sensitiveness to per- manent though slight pressure which, as mentioned above, these organs possess, the direction of the curvature round the support being also that of cireumnutation. The coils formed are nearly horizontal when the support is thick and become more nearly ver- tical as the support grows thinner ; in any case, the steepness of the spire always increases after it is first formed, its diameter is thus diminished, and the stem gains a firm grip of the support. As the stem twines round the support it undergoes torsion around its own axis, so that any one side maintains throughout the same position, whether it be directed inwards, towards the support, or outwards or laterally. The direction of torsion may be either the same as that of coiling or the reverse,—that is, either homodromous or antidromous. The direction of torsion appears to depend princi- pally on the relation between the thickness of the climbing stem and that of the support, and on the smoothness or roughness of the surface of the support ; when the support is relatively thin the torsion is homodromous, but when it is relatively thick the torsion is antidromous; with smooth supports, up to a certain limit of thickness, the torsion is homodromous, and with rough supports, down to a certain limit of thinness, the torsion is antidromous; in a word, the direction of torsion is determined by the degree of friction between the climbing stem and the support.

2. Movements.—We pass now to the consideration of movements Proto- other than those associated with growth, and we take first move- plasmic These may be classified into two move- categories, —(1) those which are performed by naked protoplasm, — ments.

ments exhibited by protoplasm.

by protoplasm, that is, which is not enclosed in a cell-wall ; (2) those exhibited by protoplasm enclosed in a cell-wall. The move- ments of naked protoplasm are effected in two ways,—either by the protrusion of portions of the protoplasm, termed ‘‘pseudopodia, ” or by permanent flagelliform protoplasmic filaments, termed ‘‘cilia”; the first kind of movement is known as ‘‘amceboid,” the second as ‘‘ciliary” movement. The ameeboid movement is exhibited, though rarely, by isolated cclls—for instance, by the zoospores of the Myxo- myeetes—and characteristically by those large axgregates of cells which constitute the plasmodia of this group of Fungi. The pseudo- podia are thrown out at first as protrusions of the denser hyaline outer layer of the mass of protoplasm, the ectoplasm, and into this the more watery eg internal protoplasmic substance, the endoplasm, gradually flows. The repeated formation of pseudopodia in any given direction will result in locomotion taking place in that direction. The ciliary movement is characteristic of zoospores and of antherozoids. In some cases the organism, asin the case of Volvox and Pandorina, passcs a large part of its existence in the mobile condition, and then the protoplasm is enclosed within a cell-wall which is perforated by the cilia. The number of cilia may be only one ; more commonly in zoospores it is two, and sometimes four ; occasionally the cilia are numerous, as in the zoospores of Vaueheria and Cdogoniwm ; in antherozoids they are usually numerous. The cilia are constantly performing a lashing movement, which causes the organism to move forward and at the same time to rotate on its own axis.

In considering the movements of protoplasm when enclosed within a cell-wall, the typical structure of a plant-cell, as described at the beginning of this section (p. 44), must be borne in mind. In many cells the vacuole is found to be traversed by protoplasmic filaments which extend between one part of the primordial utricle and another. These filaments are continually varying in number, in position, and in size ; they are formed and withdrawn in the same manner as the pseudopodia of naked masses of protoplasm. This kind of movement is, in fact, amcecboid movement exhibited by protoplasm enclosed within a cell-wall. In all actively living proto- plasm, whether naked or enclosed in a cell-wall, a streaming of the more fluid endoplasm can be observed, the direction and rapidity of the current being clearly shown by the granules which are carried along in it. This is very conspicuous in closed cells (as in leaf-cells of Vallisneria spiralis and root-

hairs of Hydrocharis Morsus Ranz) when the whole of the endoplasm rotates in a con- stant direction.

below the horizontal ; as they grow in the dark,—assuming that the moisture of the soil around them is uniform,—their direction of growth is affected to some extent by their slight positive geotropism. Though their geotropic sensitiveness is slight, their hydrotropic

Movements of Mobile Organs. —With regard now to the movements Move- exhibited by mobile organs, to the ‘‘movements of variation” as ments of they are sometimes termed, sometimes they are spontaneous, like varia- the protoplasmic movements just considered ; in other cases they tion.

Sensitiveness is great, so that their direction of growth is often ae a modified by their coming into relation with moist areas soil. A complicated case of the action of a number of directive in- fluences is afforded by climbing stems, and it may be worth while to specially consider it. When the stem is young and extends only

are only performed in consequence of stimulation : they are induced, Instances of spontaneous movements of variation are, for reasons to be given hereafter, comparatively rare. A case in point is afforded by the Telegraph Plant, Hedysarwm (Desmodium) gyrans. Under favourable conditions, particularly of temperature, the two lateral leaflets of the trifoliolate leaf move upwards and downwards, their

Pes TOL Oe Y

It appears that anaerobiotic plants (Schizomycctcs) are mobile in the absence of oxygen.

Nature and Mechanism of Movements.—On comparing the state. Condi. ments which have been made above as to the movements of STOW- tions ing organs and of mature mobile organs, their general similarity essenti is at once apparent. The spontaneous movement of growth isto move comparable to the spontaneous movements of protoplasm and of ment,

apices describing nearly a circle, a revolution taking from two to five minutes. , A familiar example of an induced movement is afforded by the leaves of the Sensitive Plant (Mimosa pudica), Whena leaf is touched the lateral leaflets close in pairs, folding upwards and forwards, and, if the stimulus be strong enough, the main petiole sinks downwards. The movement of this plant.is of special interest, inasmuch as it affords an instance of the transmission of a stimulus.

[VEGETABLE,

It suffices, namely, to touch the terminal leaflet to cause the closing of the successive pairs of lateral leaflets and the sinking down of the main petiole. Another example of induced movement is afforded by the so-called ‘‘sleep” of plants; the leaves of many plants, namely, take up during the night a position different from that which they take up during the day. Taking the Sensitive Plant as an example, during the day its leaflets are widely expanded, and its main petioles are directed obliquely upwards; at night its leaflets are folded together and its main petioles are directed obliquely downwards ; it takes up at night, in fact, a position similar to that which is induced by a touch. Excessive illumina- tion tends to induce closing. Other examples are afforded by the mobile stamens of the Cynarce# and of Berbcris and Mahonia.

The relation of these movements to external conditions is as follows :—

mobile organs, and the performance of the former is dependent upon the same external conditions as the lattcr. The reaction to the influence of external agents is the same in many instances ; for example, strong light arrests growth, and it arrests also the spontancous movements of the leaves of Afimosa and other plants, and contact stimulates tendrils as it stimulates the leaves of the Sensitive Plant. Again, light exercises a directive influence on the growth of growing organs ; it also exercises a directive influence on the movenients of zoospores and plasmodia. These considerations lead to the conclusion that the causes of the movements must in all cases be the same.

It has been already pointed out that growth and movement are expressions of the expenditure of energy on the part of the organism, that they are dependent upon the decomposition of some complex substance forming part of, or at least present in, the protoplasm.

External 1. Yemperatwre.—These movements, like the slow movement of | The conditions which are essential to movement of any kind are, condi- growth, only take place within certain limits of temperature, which, | then, these: that the decomposable substance in question is formed tions of however, vary in different cases. Movements of protoplasm, speak- | and decomposed in sufficient quantity, in other words, that the these ing generally, will only go on at temperatures between 0° and 50°C., protoplasm is irritable ; that the protoplasm is capable of mani- move- and between these limits there is an optimum temperature at which festing by a molecular change, which may be accompanied by a ments. they are most rapid. In the case of movements of variation the change in external form, the cvolution of energy attending the

lower limit lies considerably higher, from 15° to 20°C. The fore- going illustrates the tonic relation between temperature and move- ment. Sudden changes of temperature have a stimulating effect. For instance, Dutrochet observed that the protoplasm of the inter- nodal cells of a Chara exhibited rotation in water at 7° C., which

decomposition ; and, finally, in the case of protoplasm surrounded by a cell-wall, that the anatomical structure is such as to permit of a movement ensuing upon the change in the protoplasm. It is clear that, if the cell-wall is rigid, no change in the protoplasm can cause a change in form of the cell as a whole.

|

soon ceased when the plant was placed in water at 32°C. ; after some time the movement returned, and was again arrested on replacing the plant in water at 7° C.

2. Light.—In most cases of protoplasmic movements light ap-

We may regard spontaneous movement as being due to the Spon. spontaneous decomposition of the decomposable substance whereby taneous _ the protoplasm undergoes a molecular change. The automatic move | decomposition not unfrequently takes place, as in the case of the ment

pears to exert no influcnce ; in other cases it exerts a tonic influ- ence. For instance, Engelmann has discovered a form of Bacterium, termed by him Bacterium photometricum, which is only mobile when exposed to light. Again, organs which exhibit spontaneous movements of variation, like the leaflets of Hedysarum, or induced movements, like the leaflets of Mimosa, lose their power of move- ment when kept in darkness for a day or two. Exposure to light, or, as it is termed, the state of ‘‘phototonus,” is an essential condi- tion of their movement. Bright light tends to arrest movement. For instance, the protrusion of pseudopodia by the plasmodium of Aithalium septicum is less active in light than in darkness. This is well shown in the sleep of plants, alluded to above. The ‘diurnal position” of the leaves is due to exposure to light, the “ nocturnal position” to its absence. This is perhaps most clearly exhibited by the Sensitive Plant. Under the normal alternation of day and night the leaves assume alternately the diurnal and nocturnal positions. Ifa plant be kept for some time in darkness, at a suit- able temperature, it will be found that the leaves exhibit periodic movements of opening and closing. They are, in fact, endowed, like those of the Telegraph Plant, with the power of spontaneous movement, which is arrested when the plant is exposed to light. Variations in the intensity of light act as stimuli. For instance, a sudden variation will cause the closing of the leaves of Mimosa, Light also exercises a directive influence on mobile protoplasm in some cases. For instance, when bright light falls obliquely on a plasmodium of 4thalium scpticum, it causes it to creep away from the light. Again, the chlorophyll-corpuscles in the cells of leaves exposed to bright light are found to accumulate on those surfaces of the cells which are least exposed, to assume what is termed the position of ‘‘apostrophe,” a change of position which is due to move- ments in the protoplasm in which the corpuscles are embedded. Finally, the direction of movement of ciliated zoospores swimming in water is affected by light. When light falls obliquely upon a vessel of water containing zoospores, they place themselves so that their long axes are more or less nearly parallel

to the direction of the incident rays, and it is along this line that they move. They may either move towards the incident light or away from it, the direction being apparently determined by the intensity of the light, by the age of the zoospores, and by the amount of oxygen in the water. Protoplasmic masses which respond to the directive action of light are said to be ‘‘ phototactic.”

3. Other Stimuli.—lt has been mentioned that movements may be induced in the Sensitive Plant by mechanical stimulation, by variations of temperature, and variations in the intensity of light. They may also be induced by electrical and chemical stimuli. The effect of an electrical stimulus on protoplasm exhibiting the ameeboid movement is to cause retraction of the pseudopodia. It arrests also the rotating movement of the protoplasm for a time.

4, Oxygen.—The presence of oxygen is an essential condition of movement of any kind, in the case at least of aerobiotic plants.

Telegraph Plant, at regular intervals, so that the movement is shyt or periodic. Spontaneous movement is most active when a certain favourable combination of external conditions is ensured ‘ any variation in the combination leads to a diminution in the activity, or even to complete arrest, of the movement. External conditions may affect the process either of formation or of decom- position of the decomposable substance. For instance, movements are arrested at a low temperature, most probably because either the formation of the decomposable substance or the necessary explosive decomposition does not take place under such circumstances with sufficient activity. Again, when movement is arrested at a high temperature, or by continuous darkness, it is probably for similar reasons. In this way the tonic effect of external conditions may be accounted for. The stimulating effect of external agents may be accounted for in a similar manner.

Movement, whether spontaneous or induced, is regarded as a phenomenon of contractility (see above, p. 13), but we have at present no knowledge of the exact nature of the molecular changes which constitute a contraction. It must be borne in mind not only that protoplasm contracts, but that, after contraction, it returns to its condition of rest. Spontaneous movement is the

expression of automatic contraction, External tonic conditions either promote

or retard movement, by either promoting or retarding contraction

and recovery. Stimuli induce contraction. 5

The mechanism of the movements of protoplasm-masses appears Meehan) to be as follows. Taking first the case of the ameboid movement, ism of the protrusion of pseudopodia is due to a molecular change, of the move | nature of a contraction of the protoplasm, which takes place in the ments. |

ectoplasm at the spot where the pseudopodium is to be formed, an elevation being gradually produced into which the more fluid endo- plasm is, as it were, sucked. The rotating movement of protoplasm appears to depend upon a kind of ameeboid movement taking place coustantly in one direction,—to be, that is, a creeping movement. Ciliary movement appears to depend on the alternate contraction of each longitudinal half of the cilium. It is not possible at present to attempt any explanation of the directive influence of light on moving protoplasm, but the fact itself is of great physiological importance.

The mechanism of the movements of organs, whether unicellular or multicellular, in which the cell-wall has to be considered is more complicated. The cells possess the structure described above: they consist of a cell-wall lined by the protoplasmic primordial utricle enclosing the cell-sap. They are, moreover, in a state of turgidity,—that is, they are tensely filled with water. The state of turgidity in a cell depends upon three conditions, —(1) upon a tendency to absorb more water in consequence of the presence of osmotically active substances dissolved in the cell-sap ; (2) upon the resistance offered by the primordial utricle to the escape of water from the cell; (3) upon the elasticity of the cell-wall. The elasticity of the primordial utricle is so small that it may be

Pe Y © I

neglected. The growth in length of a filament of Vawcheria may be taken as a case illustrative of the importance of turgidity as a condition of growth in

unicellular organs. This growth cannot be attributed to a greater hydrostatic pressure at the apex of the cell, for the pressure is necessarily the same at all points, and clearly it cannot be referred to a diminished resistance on the part of the rimordial utricle to the passage outwards of water at that point. It must be referred to the cell-wall, and it can only be accounted for on the assumption that the elasticity of the eell-wall is less at the apex than at any other point of its surface. Growth is not, however, to be regarded as the result merely of the mechanical expansion of the cell which is rendered permanent.

same nature as that of unicellular organs. Applying the above explanation of the curvature of unicellular organs to multicellular organs, the conclusion to be drawn would be that the curvature of the latter is due to the induction of the same changes in the protoplasin in each of their growing cells.

The phenomenon of spontaneous heterauxesis, as exhibited in nutation, may be accounted for in precisely the same way, but it is possible to imagine that it may be due to some extent in the case of unicellular organs to local variations in the extensibility of the cell-wall, and in that of multicellular organs to variations in the extensibility of the cell-walls of groups of cells on different sides of the organ.

There is every reason to believe that the protoplasm takes an active part in producing this expansion, and in determining the direction in which expansion shall more particularly take place. The arrest of growth by strong light is a case in point. There is no reason to pelieve that this is to be ascribed to an increased rigidity of the

The phenomenon exhibited by mature mobile organs, such as the Function leaves of the Sensitive Plant, &c., remains finally to be considered. of pul- The movement of the leaf as a whole is effected by a group of cells, vinus. constituting a swelling, the pulvinus, at the insertion of the main

eell-wall, or to a diminution of the attraction of the cell-sap for water. It can only be ascribed to a molecular change in the proto- plasm, which causes it to offer considerable resistance to any change of form, either spontaneous or such as is induced by the hydro- static pressure. The arrest of growth which, as we have seen, usually occurs when leaves are kept in continuous darkness is another case in point. ‘The arrest of growth of the cells under these circumstances cannot be referred to a change in the physical pro- perties of either the cell-wall or the cell-sap, but must be attri- buted to a change in the molecular condition of the protoplasm. The phenomena of heterauxesis, spontaneous and induced, have now to be considered. It will be convenient to deal with induced heterauxesis first, and we will begin with the case of a unicellular organ. It has been mentioned that heterauxesis, in the form of curvature, is induced by the action of light, gravity, &c. In- asmuch as the hydrostatic pressure is necessarily the same at all points of the internal surface of the cell, the curvature must depend upon a local variation of the properties either of the cell- wall or of the protoplasm. In the case of the cell-wall either its rigidity is increased on one side, the concave, or its extensibility increased on the other, the convex. It is just conceivable, with regard to the action of light, that such a difference in properties might be induced by the more direct exposure of one side of a deli- eate filament to light, though the difference of intensity on the two sides would be very small. But it is not at all conceivable that such a difference could be induced by the action of gravity, and no explanation can be regarded as satisfactory which fails to meet all eases of curvature. The cause of the curvature is doubtless to be sought in the protoplasm. Unilateral illumination of the organ, or an abnormal relation to the line of action of gravity, acts as a stimulus on the organ and causes an alteration in the properties of its protoplasm, which is perhaps of such a nature that it becomes relatively rigid on the side which becomes concave. The induced heterauxesis of multicellular organs is certainly of essentially the

petiole, and of each leaflet by a similar organ at its attachment to the main petiole. The structure of the pulvinus is briefly a mass of parenchymatous cells having the same structure as that described above, traversed by a strand of flexible fibro-vascular tissue. When the leaf is fully expanded, its position is maintained by an equality between the downward pressure of the portion of the pulvinus above the fibro-vascular strand and the upward

pressure of the portion below it. The downward movement of the leaf as a whole is due to a sudden diminution of the upward pressure of the lower portion of the main pulvinus ; similarly, the upward movement of a leaflet is due to the sudden diminution of the downward pressure of the upper portion of its pulvinus. In both cases the diminution of pressure is due to a loss of turgidity of the portion of the pulvinus concerned: the cells become flaccid. This loss of turgidity has been shown to be due to an escape of water from the cells, which can only be accounted for by ascribing it to a change in the molecular condition of their protoplasm. In spontaneous movements this change is induced automatically, in induced movements by the action of astimulus. This molecular change is probably of such a kind that the protoplasm takes up water into itself, and at the same time allows it to pass through. The recovery of turgidity is slow. The arrest of movement which is induced by long-continued darkness or by exposure to light is probably due to the preveution of the occurrence of molecular change in the protoplasm. The con- duction of a stimulus, which undoubtedly takes place in the leaves of the Sensitive Plant, and probably in many other plant-organs (see above on heliotropism, geotropism, hydrotropism, tendrils), is effected by means of the delicate filaments of protoplasm which, as Gardiner has clearly shown in the pulvinus, are continuous between the protoplasm-bodies of adjacent cells.

For the reproduction of plants, see REPRODUCTION.

Literature.—The following works on the physiology of plants may be consulted,—Sachs, Lehrbuch (2d Eng. ed., Oxford, 1882) and Vorlesungen ber Pflanzenphysiologie (Leipsic, 1882); Pfeffer, Phanzenphysiologie (Leipsic, 1881) ; Van Tieghem, Traité de Botanique (Paris, 1884); Darwin, Climbing Plants (1875) and The Power of Movement in Plants (1880). (S. H, V.)

INDEX TO PHYSIOLOGY.

Absorption, of gases, 45. Consciousness, 20, 41.

Ash of plants, 45, 49. Basal ganglia, 37. Bitter principles, 53. Blood-vessels, influence of nerves on, 30. Brain, development of, 32, 33. » physiological anatomy of, 31, 32. » size and weight of, 33. Cane-sugar, 54. Carbon dioxide, 45. Cell-contents, 11. Cell-inembrane, 11. Cells, functions

of in plants, 44. », structure of, 44, Cell-sap, 44. Cell-theory, 11. Cell-walls, 43, 63. Central nervous organs, 20, 27. Cerebellum, 32, 38, Cerebral hemispheres, physiological anatomy of, 39. ” nf removal of, 40. 9 peduncles, 37. on vesicles, 31. Cerebrum, commissural fibres of, 40. a longitudinal fibres of, 40. aS peduncular fibres of, 39. Chlorophyll, 48, 52, 53. Circinate vernation, 58. Circulation, in brain, 42. oe osmotic, 46. Colouring matters in plants, 52.

spheres, 40. 0 aa of nerves, 24 sq. Electricity in plants, 56. Electrotonus, 24, 25.

Encephalon, 32. Endoderm cells, 14, 15.. Energy, accumulation of in plants, 56. ee dissipation of in plants, 56. oe source of bodily, 9. £6 supply of in plants, 55 sq. Epinasty, 58, 60. Equilibrium, sense of, 38, 39. Excitability of grey matter, 28.

a of nerves, 24. Excretion, glandular, 53.

a nectary, 53. Experimental method, 23. Experiments, on cerebellum, 38.

7 on cerebrum, 40. oP electrical, 24, 25, 26, 41. Fats in plants, 54. Fatty bodies, 53. Fermentation, 51. Ferments, unorganized, 50. Ferrier’s experiments, 41. Fixed-light position, 58. Food, 9.

», Of plants, 48, 49. Function, 10.

Galvanotropism, 60. Geotropisim, 59.

Glands, influence of nerves on, 30.

” ? Heart, nervous arrangement of, 29, Heat, in nerves, 26. », source of plant-energy, 56. Heliotropism, 58, 59. Hering’s speculations, 22. Heterauxesis, 58, 63. Hydrotropisin, 60. Hyponasty, 58, 60. Inhibition, 22, 29, 35. Internal capsule, 87. hrritability, of nerves, 24. * of protoplasm, 13. Katabolism, 13, 19 sq., 50. Katastates, 19, 20. Laticiferous tissue and cells, 48. Light, influence on growth of plants, 57. movement of plants,

62.

transpiration, 46.

22 tr)

source of plant-energy, 55, 56.

22

Medulla oblongata, 32, 35.

3 ag as conductor of ner- vous impressions,

36.

nuclei of, 36,

physiological ana- tomy of, 36.

3 3 as reflex centre, 36.

Mesostates, 19.

Metabolism, constructive, 13, 49.

“A destructive, 13, 50.

Molecular actions, 18.

a law of, 45. Contact in plants, 60. Glucose, 54. oF changes in muscle, 19. 3 of water, 44, Contractility of protoplasm, 13, 62. Goltz’s experiments, 41. 6 A nervous sub- os actions, 29, Corpora quadrigeimina, 32, 37. Gravity, influence on growth of plants, – stance, 19. ; aloids, 53. striata, 31, 37. 58, 59. Lotor areas, 41. Amides, 54, Corpus callosum, 31. Grey matter of nerves, 28, 35. 3 centres in brain-cortex, 41. Anabolism, 18, 19, 22, 49. Cranial nerves, 36, 42. 6) “A arrangement and +, nherves, 8, 24. Anaerobiotic plants, 51. Darwinian curvature, 60. structure of, 40. | Movement, of body, 8. Anastates, 19, 20. Depressor nerve, 30. Growth of plants, 57 sq. 6 co-ordination of, 38. Animal spirits, 10. Ectoderi cells, 14, 15. 60 BS direction of, 58,) in plants, 56, 57 sq., 62. Aromatic substances,

52. Electrical stimulation of cerebral hemi- : rate of, 57. + protoplasmic, 13, 61.

an of variation, 61. Muscles, contraction of, 8, 24 sq. Negative pressure, 47. Nerve-cells, 27. Nerve-currents, nature of, 25, 26. ‘5 3 velocity of, 25, 26. Nerves, chemical constitution of, 24, 28. » classification of, 27. » conductivity of, 25. » electrical phenomena of, 26. », nutrition of, 26. », origin of in medulla, 36. », Stimuli of, 24. » structure of, 23. Nervous centres, 28, 30. 55 Ai classification of, 30. » impulses, 8, 20. 6 system, 8, 23 sq., 30 sq. comparative view of, in invertebrates,

30, 31.

comparative view of, in vertebrates, 31,

32.

tissue, 28. Nodus cursorius, 38. Nucleus caudatus, 37. 3 Omcelnat. » Jenticularis, 37. Nutation, 58, Optic thalami, 31, 37,

2”? ”

Led 39

64 PH YP ia

INDEX TO PHYSIOLOGY (continued).

Plastic products, 51, 54. Pons Varolii, 32, 36. Primordial utricle, 44. Proteids, 54.

Protoplasm, 12, 21. assimilation of, 13. Ap of plants, 43 Protoplasmic theory, 12 Pulvinus, 63. Rectipetality, 58.

Reflex actions, 28, 29.

», centres, 35, 36. Reserve materials, 54, 55. Respiration, 51.

Root, structure of, 46. Root-hairs, 44, 46. Root-pressure, 46. Secretion, 11, 17, 18. Semicircular canals, 38.

Organic acids, 52. 5, substance in plants, 47, 50. Organs, 10, 44. » bilateral, 58, 59. AA dorsiventral, 58, 59 af orthotropic, 61. » An plagiotropic, 61. » Yadial, 58, 59. 4 terminal, 27. Osinosis, 44, Oxidation, of body, 9. n6 in plants, 51. Oxygen in plants, 45, 62. Peripheral impressions, 39. Piliiger's law of contraction, 24. Physiology, definition of, 8. ég methods of, 22. 36 problems of, 9, 16. Pillars of fornix, 31.

PIACENZA (Fr., Plaisance; Lat., Placentia), a city of Italy, a bishop's see, and the chief town of a province, lies on the Lombard plain, 217 feet above sea-level, not far from the right bank of the Po, just below the confluence of the Trebbia. By rail it is 43 miles south-east of Milan and 354 north-west of Parma. Formerly a place of con- siderable strength, it is still surrounded by walls with bastions and fosse in a circuit of 4 miles. The cathedral was erected between 1122 and 1233, in the Lombardo- Gothic style, under the direction of Santo da Sambuceto, on the site of a church of the 9th century which had been destroyed by earthquake. The west front has three doors with curious pillared porches. The campanile is a massive square brick tower'223 feet high ; the iron cage attached to one of its windows was put up in 1495 by Ludovico il Moro for the confinement of persons guilty of treason or sacrilege. The crypt is a large church supported by one hundred columns. Sant' Antonino, which was the cathedral church till 877, and occupies the spot where it was reputed that St Barnabas preached to the people, was built by St Victor, the first bishop of Piacenza, in 324, restored in 903, rebuilt in 1104, and altered in 1857. It was within its walls that the deputies of the Lombard League swore to the conditions of peace ratified in 1183 at Constance. The brick vestibule (I] Paradiso) on the north side is one of the older parts of the building. San Francesco, a spacious edifice begun by the Franciscans in 1278, occu- pies the site of Ubertino Landi's palazzo, and is famous as the place where Agostino Landi harangued the people after the murder of Pierluigi, and where in 1848 the deputies of Piacenza proclaimed the annexation of their city to the Sardinian kingdom. San Sisto, which dates from 1499, and takes the place of the church founded in 874 by Angilberga (consort of the emperor Louis II.) for the Benedictines, lost its chief attraction when Raphael's Sistine Madonna (now in Dresden) was

sold by the monks in 1754 to Frederick Augustus ITI. San Sepolcro and Sta Maria della Campagna are both after Bramante's designs ; the latter is rich in works of Pordenone. Sant' Anna, dating from 1334, was the church of the barefooted Carmelites. Of the secular buildings in the city the most interesting is the Palazzo Communale, begun in 1281. In the main front the lower story, constructed of red and white marble, presents a series of five open pointed arcades ; the upper story, in brick, has six very rich round-arched windows, each of five lights; and above the cornice rise forked battlements. The square in front is known as the Piazza dei Cavalli, from the two bronze equestrian statues of Ranuccio (1620) and his father Alexander, prince of Parma, governor of the Netherlands (1625). Both were designed by Francesco Mocchi. The Farnese palace was begun after Vignola's designs by Margaret of Austria in 1558 ; but it was never completed, and since 1800 it has been used as barracks. Other buildings or institutions of

Sensory centres in brain-cortex, 41. Tetanus, 25. »» _herves, 8, 25 Thermotropism, 59. Somatotropism, 60. Tissues, 12.

» . constitution of, 16. Transpiration, 46.

a current of, 47, Unipolar excitation, 25. Vacuole, 44.

Vagi electrotonus, 25. Vascular system, 16.

Spinal cord, physical anatomy of, 34. as reflex centre, 35. as transmitter of nervous impressions, 34. + », as trophic centre, 35. » herves, 43. Starch in plants, 54. Stimuli, of nerves, 24 sq. » of plant-moveinent, Stomata, 45 sq. Velocity, measurement of in nerves, Sympathetic system, 43. 25,026. Temperature, influence of on growth of | Vital spirits, 10. plants, 57. Waller's law, 26. influence of on movement | Waste-products, 51, 54. of plants, 62. Water-culture, 48. Tendrils, twining of, 60. White matter of nerves, 28, 35.

" "? 3 bBy

Vaso-inhibitory nerves, 30. Vaso-motor fibres, 30.

note are the old and the new bishop's palace, the fine theatre designed by Lotario Tomba in 1803, the great hospital dating from 1471, the library presented to the commune in 1846 by the marquis Ferdinando Landi, and the Passerini library founded in 1685. About a mile to the east of the city is the Collegio Alberoni, instituted in 1751 for the education of priests and missionaries. Ata distance of about 2 miles in the opposite direction the Trebbia is crossed by a bridge of twenty-three arches, erected in 1825 at a cost of £47,000; the Austrians blew up two of the arches in 1859. Piacenza is an important point in the Italian railway system—the Lombardy, Piedmont, and Ligurian lines meeting there with those of Central Italy. Silk, cotton, and woollen goods, pottery, and hats are among the local manufactures. The popula- tion of the commune (which in this case is almost exactly identical with the city) was 34,985 in 1871 and 34,987 in 1881. .

Piacenza, originally, it is supposed, a Ligurian and afterwards a Gallic town, was made a Roman colony in 219 B.c. While its walls were yet unfinished it had to repulse an attack by the Gauls, whose hopes were excited by the news of Hannibal's approach, and in the latter part of 218 it afforded protection to the remains of the Roman army under Scipio which had been defeated by the Carthaginian general in the great battle on the Trebbia. In 207 it withstood a protracted siege by Hasdrubal, Hannibal's brother, and thus contributed largely to the ultimate success of the Romans. Seven years later the Gauls surprised and burned the city ; and the colony was so diminished in strength that in 190 it had to be recruited with three thousand families. In 187 it was connected with Rimini and the south by the construction of the AZmilian Way. During the later republic and the empire Placentia is named in connexion with a defeat of the forces of Marius in the neighbourhood (82 B.c.), a mutiny of Julius Cesar's garrison (49 B.c.), another mutiny under Augustus (41 B.c.), the defence of the city by Spurinna, Otho's general, against Cvcina, Vitellius's

general (69 A.D.), and the defeat of Aurelian by the Marcomanni —

outside the walls (271 A.D.). In 546 Totila reduced Piacenza by famine. Between 997 and 1035 the city was governed by its bishops, who had received the title of count from Otho III. In the latter part of the 12th

century it was one of the leading members of the Lombard League. For the most part it remained Guelph, though at times, as when it called in Galcazzo Visconti, it was glad to appeal to a powerful Ghibelline for aid against its domestic tyrants. In 1447 the city was captured and sacked by Francesco Sforza. Having placed itsclf directly under papal protection in 1512, it was in 1545 united with Parma (q.v.) to form an hereditary duchy for Pierluigi Farnese, son of Paul III. In 1746 a battle between the Franco-Spanish forces and the Austrians was fought under the city walls. In 1848 Piacenza was the first of the towns of Lombardy to join Piedmont; but it was re-occupied by the Austrians and had to wait for its emancipation till 1859. Lucius Calpurnius Piso (father-in-law of Julius Ceesar), Pope Gregory X., and Alexander Farnese, duke of Parma, were natives of the city. Among the local historians are Boselli, Rossi, Bonara, and Gemmi.

PIANOFORTE. The group of keyed stringed instru- ments, among which the pianoforte is latest in order of time, has been invented and step by step developed with the modern art of music, which is based upon the simul taneous employment of different musical sounds. In the

- 1323) teaches how true relations

‘invented. Perhaps one of the

PrAn OEP ORT E

10th century the “ organum ” arose, an elementary system of accompaniment to the voice, consisting of fourths and octaves below the melody and moving with it; and the organ, the earliest keyed instrument, was, in the first instance, the rude embodiment of this idea and convenient means for its expression. ‘here was as yet no keyboard of balanced key levers ; batons were drawn out like modern draw-stops, to admit the compressed air necessary to make the pipes sound. About the same time arose a large stringed instrument, the organistrum, the parent of the now vulgar hurdy-gurdy ; as the organ needed a blower as well as an organist, so the player of the organistrum required a handle-turner, by whose aid the three strings of

the instrument were made to sound simultaneously upon | a wheel, and, according to the well-known sculptured | relief of St George de Boscherville, one string was_ manipulated by means of a row of stoppers or tangents |

pressed inwards to produce the notes. The other strings were drones, analogous to the drones of the bagpipes, and

differing in effect from the changing “ organum” of the |

organ. In the 11th century, the epoch of Guido d’Arezzo, to whom the beginning of musical notation is attributed, the Pythagorean monochord, with its shifting bridge, was used in the singing schools to teach the intervals of the plain-song of the church. The practical necessity, not merely to demonstrate the proportionate relations of the intervals, but also to initiate pupils into the different grada- tions of the church tones, had soon after Guido’s time brought into use quadruplex-fashioned monochords, which were constructed with scales, analogous to the modern practice with thermometers which are made to show both Réeaumur and Centigrade, so that four lines indicated as many authentic and as many plagal tones. This arrange- ment found great acceptance, for Aribo, writing about fifty years after Guido, says that few monochords were to be found without it. Had the clavichord then been known, this make-shift contrivance would not have been used. Aribo strenuously endeavoured to im- prove it, and “by the grace of God” invented a monochord measure which, on account of the rapidity of the leaps he could make with it, he named a wild-goat (caprea). Jean de , Muris (Musica Speculativa,

may be found by a single- string monochord, but recom- mends a four-stringed one, pro- perly a tetrachord, to gain a knowledge of unfamiliar inter- vals. He describes the musical | imstruments known in his time, but does not mention the clavi- chord or monochord with keys,

which could not have been then Fie. 1.—Farliest existing represen- tation of a Keyed Stringed Instru- ment from St Mary’s, Shrewsbury (primitive Clavichord). Before 1460. Drawn by Miss Edith Lloyd.

earliest forms of such an instru- ment, in which stoppers or tan- gents had been adopted from the organistrum, is shown in fig. 1, from a wood carving of a vicar choral or organist, preserved in St Mary's Church, Shrewsbury. The latest date to which this interesting figure may be attributed is 1460, but the conventional representation shows that the mstrument was then already of a past fashion, although perhaps still retained in use and familiar to the carver.

A keyboard of balanced keys may have been first intro- duced in the little portable organ known as the regal so

often represented in old carvings, paintings, and stained windows. It derived its name regal from the rule (regula) or graduated scale of keys, and its use was to give the singers in religious processions the note or pitch. The only instrument of this kind known to exist in the United Kingdom is at Blair Athole, and it bears the very late date of 1630. The Brussels regal may be as modern. These are instances of how long a some-time admired musical instrument may remain in use after its first inten- tion is forgotten. We attribute the adaptation of the narrow regal keyboard to what was still called the mono- chord, but was now a complex of monochords over one resonance board, to the latter half of the 14th century; it was accomplished by the substitution of tangents fixed in the further ends of the balanced keys for the movable bridges of the monochord or such stoppers as are shown in the Shrewsbury carving. Thus the monochordium or "»ayre of monochordis" became the clavichordium or " payre of clavichordis "—pair being applied, in the old sense of a " pair of steps," to a series of degrees. This use of the word to imply gradation was common in England to all keyed instruments; thus we read, in the Tudor period and later, of a pair of regals, organs, or virginals.

The earliest known record of the clavichord occurs in some rules of the minnesingers, dated 1404, preserved at Vienna. The monochord. is named with it, showing a differentiation of these instruments, and of them from the clavicymbalum, the keyed cymbal, cembalo (Italian), or psaltery. From this we learn that a keyboard had been thus early adapted to that favourite medizval stringed instrument, the "cembalo" of Boccaccio, the " sautrie" of

Chaucer. There were two forms of the psaltery:—(1) the trapeze, one of the oldest representations of which is to be found in Orcagna's famous Trionfo della Morte in the Campo Santo at Pisa, and another by the same painter in the National Gallery, London ; and (2) the contemporary "testa di porco," the pig's head, which was of triangular shape as the name suggests. The trapeze psaltery was strung horizontally, the " istromento di porco" either hori- zontally or vertically,—the notes, as in the common dul- cimer, being in groups of three or four unisons. In these differences of form and stringing we see the cause of the ultimate differentiation of the spinet and harpsichord. The compass of the psalteries was nearly that of Guido's scale ; but, according to Mersenne, the lowest interval was a fourth, G to C, which is worthy of notice as anticipating the later "short measure" of the spinet and organ.

The simplicity of the clavichord inclines us to place it, in order of time, before the clavicymbalum or clavicembalo; but we do not know how the sounds of the latter were at first excited. There is an indication as to its early form to be seen in the church of the Certosa near Pavia, which compares in probable date with the Shrewsbury example. We quote the reference to it from Dr Ambros's History of Music. He says a carving represents King David as hold- ing an "istromento di porco" which has eight strings and as many keys lying parallel to them ; he touches the keys with the right hand and damps the strings with the left. The attribution of archaism applies with equal force to this carving as to the Shrewsbury one, for when the monastery of Certosa was built chromatic keyboards, which imply a considerable advance, were already in use. 'There is an authentic representation of a chromatic keyboard, painted not later than 1426, in the St Cecilia -panel (now at Berlin) of the famous Adoration of the Lamb by the Van Eycks. The instrument depicted is a positive organ, and it is interesting to notice in this realistic painting that the keys are evidently boxwood as in the Italian spinets of later date, and that the angel plays a common chord—A with the right hand, F and C with the left. But diatonic organs XIX. — 9

with eight steps or keys in the octave, which included the B flat and the B natural, as in Guido’s scale, were long preserved, for Pretorius speaks of them as still existing nearly two hundred years later. This diatonic keyboard, we learn from Sebastian Virdung (Musica getutscht und auszgezogen, Basel, 1511), was the keyboard of the early clavichord. We reproduce his diagram as the only autho- rity we have for the disposition of the one short key.

seieeeges ap

Fig. 2.—Diatonie Clavichord Keyboard (Guido’s Scale) fromVirdung. Before 1511.

The extent of this scale is exactly Guido’s. diagram of the chromatic is the same as our own familiar keyboard, and comprises three octaves and a note, from F below the bass stave to G above the treble. But Virdung tells us that even then clavichords were made longer than four octaves by repetition of the same order of keys. The introduction of the chromatic order he attributes to the study of Boetius, and the consequent endeavour to restore the three musical genera of the Greeks—the diatonic, chro- matic, and enharmonic. But the last-named had not been attained. Virdung gives woodcuts of the clavicordium,

the virginal, the clavicimbalum, and the claviciterium. We |

reproduce three of them (figs. 3, 6, and 12), omitting the virginal as obviously incorrect. All these drawings have been continually repeated by writers on musical instru- ments up to the present day, but without discerning that in the printing they are reversed, which puts the keyboards entirely wrong, and that in Luscinius’s Latin translation of Virdung (Musurgia, sive Praxis Musice, Strasburg, 1536), which has been hitherto chiefly followed, two of the engrav- ings, the clavicimbalum and the claviciterium, are trans- posed, another cause of error. Martin Agricola (Musica Instrumentalis, Wittenberg, 1529) has copied Virdung’s illustrations with some differences of perspective, and the addition, here and there, of errors of his own.

LETT Ah ee

WY YAU LEEPER j LZZZZZZTTZIT ZT i Y)

(ae ees et ey ae CLZIZTITLLE LODE,

Fia, 3.—Virdung’s Clavichordium, 1511; reversed Sacsimile,

Still vulgarly known as monochord, Virdung’s clavi- chord was really a box of monochords, all the strings being of the same length. He derives the clavichord from Guido’s monochord as he does the virginal from the psaltery, but, at the same time, confesses he does not know when, or by whom, either instrument was invented. We observe in this drawing the short sound-board, which always

remained a clavichord peculiarity, and the straight sound- |

board bridge—necessarily so when all the strings were of

one length. To gain an angle of striking place for the |

tangents against the strings the keys were made crooked, an expedient further rendered necessary by the “ fretting, ’— three tangents, according to Virdung, being directed to stop as many notes from each single group of three strings tuned in unison; each tangent thus made a different vibrating length of string. In the drawing the strings are

PIANOTOERT i

Virdung’s |

| merely indicated. The German for fret is Bund, and such a clavichord, in that language, is known as a “ gebunden” one, both fret (to rub) and Bund (from binden, to bind) having been taken over from the lute or viol. The French and Italians employ “touche” and “tasto,” touch. Pre. torius, who wrote a hundred years later than Virdung, says two, three, and four tangents were thus employed in stopping. The oldest clavichords extant have no more | than two tangents to a note formed by a pair of strings, no longer three. Thus seven pairs of strings suffice for an octave of twelve keys, the open notes being F, G, A, B flat, C, D, E flat, and by an unexplained

peculiarity, perhaps derived from some special estimation of the notes which was connected with the church modes, A and D are left throughout free from a second tangent. A corresponding

value of these notes is shown by their independence of

chromatic alteration in tuning the double Irish harp, as explained by Galilei in his treatise on music, published in 1581. Adlung, who died in 1762, speaks of another fretting, but we think it must have been an adaptation to the modern major scale, the “free” notes being E and B. Clavichords were made with double fretting up to about the year 1700,—that is to say, to the epoch of J.§. Bach, who, taking advantage of its abolition and the consequent use of independent pairs of strings for each note, was enabled to tune in all keys equally, which had been impossible so long as the fretting was maintained. The modern scales having become established, Bach was now able to produce, in 1722, Das wohkltemperirte Clavier, the first collection of preludes and fugues in all the twenty- four major and minor scales for a clavichord which was tuned, as to concordance and dissonance, fairly equal. The oldest clavichord, here called manicordo (as French, manicorde, from monochord), known to exist is that shown in fig. 4. It will be observed that the lowest octave is

sii dd Md Pee cea AMAR

Fig. 4.—Manicordo (Clavichord) d’Eleonora di Montalvo, 1659; Kraus Museum, Florence.

here already “ bundfrei ” or fret-free.

| longer of equal length, and there are three bridges, divi- sions of the one bridge, in different positions on the sound-board. Mersenne’s “manicorde” (Harmonie Umiverselle, 1636), shown 3 in an engraving in that work, has the strings still nearly of equal length, but divides the sound-board bridge into five. The fretted clavichords made in _ Germany in the last years of the 17th century have the curved sound-board bridge, like a spinet. In. ia

the clavichord the tangents = — always form the second | bridge, indispensable for the vibration, as well as act as | the sound exciters (fig. 5).

The common damper to all the strings is a list of cloth, interwoven behind the tangents. As the tangents quitted the strings the cloth immediately

The strings are no —

PIANOFORTE

stopped vibration. Too ‘much cloth would diminish the tone of this already feeble instrument, which gained the name of “dumb spinet” from its use. The cloth is accurately painted in the clavichord Rubens’s St Cecilia (Dresden Gallery) plays upon,—interesting as perhaps representing that painter’s own instrument. The number of keys there shown is three octaves and a third, F to A, __the same extent as in Handel’s clavichord now in the museum at Maidstone (an Italian instrument dated 1726, and not fretted), but with a combined chromatic and short octave peculiarity in the lowest notes we shall have to refer to when we arrive at the spinet; we pass it by as the only instance in the clavichord we have met with. The clavichord must have gone out of favour in Great Britain and the Netherlands early in the 16th century, before its expressive power, which is of the most tender and intimate quality, could have been, from the nature of the music played, observed,—the more brilliant and elegant spinet being preferred to it. Like the other key- board instruments it had no German name, and can hardly have been of German origin. Holbein, in his drawing of the family of Sir Thomas More, 1528, now at Basel, indi- cates the place for “ Klavikordi und ander Seytinspill.” But it remained longest in use in Germany—until even the beginning of the present century. It was the favourite “Klavier” of the Bachs. Besides that of Handel already noticed, there are in existence clavichords the former possession of which is attributed to Mozart and Beethoven. The clavichord was obedient to a peculiarity of touch possible on no other keyboard instrument. This is described by C. P. Emmanuel Bach in his famous essay on playing and accompaniment, entitled Versuch tber die

wahre Art das Klavier zu spielen (An Essay on the True |

Way to play Keyboard Instruments). It is the “ Bebung” (trembling), a vibration in a melody note of the same nature as that frequently employed by violin players to heighten the expressive effect ; it was gained by a

repeated move- ment of the fleshy end of the finger while the key was still held down. The “ Bebung” was indicated in the notation by dots over the note to be affected by it, perhaps

showing how many times the note should be repeated. | now refers to the illustration], so that there are five keys

According to the practice of the Bachs, as handed down

to us in the above mentioned essay, great smoothness of |

touch was required to play the clavichord in tune, As with the monochord, the means taken to produce the sound disturbed the accuracy of the string measurement _ by increasing tension, so that a key touched too firmly in the clavichord, by unduly raising the string, sharpened the pitch, an error in playing deprecated by C. P. Emmanuel Bach. This answers the assertion which has been made that J. S. Bach could not have been nice about tuning when he played from preference on an instrument of un- certain intonation.

The next instrument described by Virdung is the Virginal (virginalis, proper for a girl), a parallelogram in shape, with a projecting keyboard and compass of keys the same as the clavichordium. Here we can trace deriva- tion from the psaltery in the sound-board covering the entire inner surface of the instrument and in the triangular disposition of the strings. The latter in Virdung’s drawing has an impossible position with reference to the keyboard, which renders its reproduction as an illustration useless.

But in the next drawing, the clavicimbalum, this is rectified, | ‘ich ‘clavicimbalum, spinet, or virginal, derived from the

and the drawing, reversed on account of the key-board, can be accepted as roughly representing the instrument so called (fig, 6), .

_ There would be no difference between it and the virginal were it not for a peculiarity of keyboard compass, which emphatically refers itself to the Italian “spinetta,”

® name unnoticed by Virdung or by his countryman |

Arnold Schlick, who, in the same year 1511, published his Spiegel der Orgelmacher (“ Organ-builders’ Mirror”), and

Fic. 6.—Virdung’s Clavicimbalum (Spinet), 1511; reversed Sacsimtle.

named the clavichordium and clavicimbalum as familiar instruments. In the first place, the keyboard, beginning apparently with B natural, instead of F, makes the clavicimbalum smaller than the virginal, the strings in this arrangement being shorter ; in the next place it is almost certain that the Italian spinet compass, beginning appar- ently upon a semitone, is identical with a “short measure ” or “short octave” organ compass, a very old keyboard arrangement, by which the lowest note, representing B, really sounded G, and C sharp in like manner A. The origin of this may be deduced from the psaltery and many representations of the regal, and its object appears to have been to obtain dominant basses for cadences,—harmonious closes having early been sought for as giving pleasure to the ear. We have found a hitherto unnoticed authority for this practice in Mersenne, who, in 1636, expressly describes it as occurring in his own spinet (espinette). He says the keyboards of the spinet and organ are the same. Now, in his Latin edition of the same work he renders espinette by clavicimbalum. We read (Harmonie Uni- verselle, Paris, 1636, liv. 3, p. 107)—“ Its longest string [his spinet’s] is little more than a foot in length between the two bridges. It has only thirty-one steps [“ marches *| ia its keyboard, and as many strings over its sound-board [he

hidden on account of the perspective,—that is to say, three naturals and two sharps [“ feintes,” same as the Latin jicts], of which the first is cut into two (a divided sharp form- ing two keys); but these sharps serve to go down to the third and fourth below the first step, C so/ [tenor clef C], in order to go as far as the third octave, for the eighteen principal steps make but an eighteenth, that is to say, a fourth more than two octaves.” The note we call F he,

| on his engraving, letters as C, indicating the pitch of a

spinet of the second size, which the one described is not. The third and fourth, reached by his cut sharp, are conse- quently the lower E and D; or, to complete, as he says, the third octave, the lowest note might be I, but for that he would want the diatonic semitone B, which his spinet, according to his description, did not possess.1 Mersenne's statement sufficiently proves, first, the use in spinets as well as in organs of what we now call "short measure," and, secondly, the intention of cut sharps at the lower end of the keyboard to gain lower notes. He speaks of one string only to each note; unlike the double and triple strung clavichord, those instruments,

could only present one string to the mechanical plectrum which twanged it. As regards the kind of plectra earliest used we have no evidence. The little crow-auill points, Scaliger, who was born in 1484, ex-

TMr A. J. Ellis (History of Musical Pitch, p. 318) sees the B in Mersenne's outline diagram.

psaltery,

pressly says were introduced when he was a boy. They project from centred tongues in uprights of wood known as "jacks" (fig. 7), which also carry the d The quills, rising by the depression of the keys in front, set the strings vibrating as they pass them,—springs at first of steel, later of bristle, giving energy to the twang and governing their return. Scaliger remem- bered the "harpichordum" and " clavi- cimbalum" being without those quill- points (mucrones), and attributes the intro- duction of the name " spinetta" to them (from spina, a thorn). We will leave har- pichordum for the present, but the early identity of clavicimbalum and spinetta is certainly proved. Scaliger's etymology has remained unquestioned until quite re- cently ; it is due to Signor Ponsicchi of Florence to have discovered another de- rivation, He has found in a rare ~~book entitled Conclusione nel suono dell organo, di D. Adiano Banchieri (Bologna, 1608), the following passage, which translated reads: —"Spinetta was thus named from the inventor of that oblong form, who was one Maestro Gio~~ vanni Spinetti, a Venetian; and I have seen one of those instruments, in the possession of Francesco Stivori, organist of the magnificent community of Montagnana, within which was this inscription

—Joannes Spinetus Venetus fecit, A.D. 1503.” Scaliger’s and Banchieri’s state- ments may be combined, as there is no discrepancy of dates, or we may rely upon whichever seems to us to have the greater authority, always bearing in mind that neither invalidates the other. The intro- duction of crow-quill points, and adaptation to an oblong case of an instrument previously in a trapeze form, are synchronous ; but we must accept 1503 as a late date for one of Spinetti’s instruments, seeing that the altered form had already become common, as shown by Virdung, in another country as early as

PIANOFTOR T’E

The apparent compass of the keyboard in Italy generally exceeded four octaves by a semitone, E to F; but we may regard the lowest natural key as usually C, and the lowest sharp key as usually D, in these instruments, according to “short measure.”

The rectangular spinet, Virdung’s “ virginal,” early gu Pp gs gs y

assumed in Italy the fashion of the large “casone” or wedding chests. The oldest we know of in this style, and dated, is the fine specimen belonging to M. Terme which figures in L’Art Decoratif (fig. 9). Virginal is not an Italian name ; the rectangular instrument in Italy is “ spinetta tavola.” In England, from Henry VII. to Charles Ig all quilled instruments (stromenti di penna), without distinction as to form, were known as virginals, It was a common name, equivalent to the contemporary Italian clavicordo and Flemish clavisingel. From the latter, by apocope, we arrive at the French clavecin,—the French claner, a keyboard, being in its turn adopted by the Germans to denote any keyboard stringed instrument. Mersenne gives three sizes for spinets,—one 2) feet wide, tuned to the octave of the “ton de chapelle” (in his day a whole tone above the present English medium pitch), one of 34 feet, tuned to the fourth below, and one of 5 feet, tuned to the octave below the first,—the last being therefore tuned in unison to the chapel pitch. He says his own spinet was one of the smallest it was custom-

1511. After this date there are frequent references to spinets in public records and other documents, and we have fortunately the instruments themselves to put in evidence, preserved in public museums and in private

collections, The oldest spinet we can point out is in the Conservatoire, Paris. It isa pentagonal instrument made by Francesco di Portalupis at Verona, 1523. The Milanese Rossi were famous spinet-makers, and have been accredited (La Nobilita di Milano, 1595) with an improve- ment in the form which we believe was the recessing of

the keyboard, a feature which had previously entirely pro- |

jected ; by the recessing a greater width was obtained for the sound-board. The spinets by Annibalo Rosso at South Kensington, dated respectively 1555 (fig. 8) and 1577,

_their use was to heighten the brilliant effect.

SSS : : SSS SSS TAS E Fic. 9.—Spinetta Tavola (Virginal), 1568; collection of M. Terme.

ary to make, but from the lettering of the keys in his drawing it would have been of the second size, or the spinet tuned to the fourth. The octave spinet, of trapeze form, was known in Italy as “ottavina” or “spinetta di serenata.” It hada less compass of keys than the larger instrument, being apparently three and two-third octaves, E to C,—which by the “short measure” would be four octaves, CtoC. We learn from Pretorius that these little spinets were placed upon the larger ones in performance; In the double rectangular clavisingel of the Netherlands, in which there was a movable octave instrument, we recognize a similar intention. There is a fine spinet of this kind at Nuremberg, Pretorius illustrates the Italian spinet by a form known as the “ spinetta traversa,” an approach towards the long clavicembalo or harpsichord,—the tuning pins

Fie. 8.—Milanese Spinetta, by Annibale Rosso, 1555; South Kensington Museum.

show this alteration, and may be compared with the older and purer form of one, dated 1568, by Marco Jadra (also

known as Marco “dalle spinette,” or “dai cembali”). Besides the pentagonal spinet, there was an heptagonal variety ; they had often withdrawn from

decorated cases when required for performance, In other instances, as in the 1577 Rosso spinet, the case of the instrument itself was richly adorned.

neither covers nor stands, and were |

being immediately over the keyboard. This trans- posed spinet, more powerful than the old trapeze one, became fashionable in England after the Restoration,—Haward, Keene, Slade, Player, Baudin, the Hitchcocks, Mahoon, Haxby, ‘the Harris family, and others having made such “ spinnets” during a period for which we have dates from 1668 to 1784. Pepys bought his “Espinette” from Charles Haward for £5,

| July 13, 1668,

The spinets of Keene and Player, made about 1700, have frequently two cut sharps at the bass end of the key-

—

PrANOWOR T E

board, which Mersenne’s short measure, and the realization at that time of the independence of each key in the chromatic scale, may be taken when combined to explain.

Fic. 10.—English Spinet (Spinetta Traversa), by Carolus Haward. About 1668. Collection of Mr W. Dale, London.

Hitherto such cut sharps have been assumed to be quarter tones, but enharmonic intervals in the extreme bass can have no justification. From the tuning of Handel’s Italian clavichord already mentioned, which has this peculiarity, we are led to infer that the nearer halves of the two cut sharps were the chromatic semitones, and the farther halves the lower thirds or fourths below what they appeared to be. Thomas Hitchcock (for whom we have a date 1703 upon a spinet jack in an instrument of older model with two cut sharps by Edward Blunt) and his son John made a great advance in con- structing spinets, giving them the wide compass of five octaves, from G to G, with very fine keyboards in which the sharps were inlaid with a slip

of the ivory or ebony, as the case might be, of the naturals. Their instruments, always numbered, and not dated as has been sometimes supposed, became models for the contemporary and subsequent Eng- lish makers.

We have now to ask what was the difference between Scaliger's harpichor- dum and his clavicymbal. Galilei, the father of the astronomer of that name (Dialogo della Musica Antica e Moderna, Florence, 1581), says that the harpichord was so named from having resembled an "arpa giacente," a prostrate or

couched" harp,—proving that the clavicymbal was at first the trapeze-shaped spinet; and we should therefore differentiate harpi- chord and clavicymbal as, in form, suggested by or derived from the harp and psaltery, or froma "testa di porco" and an ordinary trapeze psaltery. We are inclined to prefer the latter. The Latin name "clavicymbalum," having early been replaced by spinet and virginal, was in Italy and France bestowed upon the long harpichord, and was con- tinued as clavicembalo (gravecembalo, or familiarly cembalo only) and clavecin. Much later, after the restoration of the Stuarts, the first name was accepted and naturalized in England as harpsichord, which we will define as the long quill instrument shaped like a modern grand piano,

instrument of this kind so old as the Roman cembalo at South Kensington (fig. 11). It was made by Geronimo of Bologna in 1521, two years before the Paris Portalupis spinet. The outer case is of finely tooled leather. It has a spinet compass of keyboard of nearly four octaves, E to D. The natural keys are of boxwood, gracefully arcaded in front. The keyboards of the Italian cembalo were after- wards carried out to the normal four octaves. There is an existing example dating as early as 1526, with the bass keys carried out in long measure. It is surprising to see with what steady persistence the Italians adhered in making the instrument to their original model. As late as the epoch of Cristofori, and in his 1722 cembalo at Florence, we still find the independent outer case, the single keyboard, the two unisons, neither of which could be dispensed with by using stops. The Italians have been. as conservative with their forms of spinet, and are to this day with their

organs. The startling “piano e forte” of 1598, brought to light from the records of the house of D’Este, by Count Valdrighi of Modena, after much consideration and a desire to find in it an anticipation of Cristofori’s subsequent invention of the pianoforte, we are disposed to regard as an ordinary cembalo with power to shift, by a stop, from two unisons (forte) to one string (piano), at that time a Flemish practice, and most likely brought to Italy by one of the Flemish musicians who founded the Italian school of composition. About the year 1600,~~when accom~~ paniment was invented for monody, large cembalos were made for the orchestras to bring out the bass part—the performer standing to play. Such an instrument was called “archicembalo,” a name also applied to a large cembalo, made by Vito Trasuntino, a Venetian, in 1606, intended by thirty-one keys in each of its four octaves—one hundred and twenty-five in all—to restore

Frc. 11.—Roman Clavicembalo, by Geronimo of Bologna, 1521; South Kensington Museum.

the three genera of the ancient Greeks. How many attempts have been made before and since Trasuntino to purify intonation in keyboard instruments by multiplying keys in the octave? Simultaneously with Father Smith’s well-known experiment in the Temple organ, London, there were divided keys in an Italian harpsichord to gain a sepa- rate G sharp and A flat, and a separate D sharp and E flat.

Double keyboards and stops in the long cembalo or harpsichord came into use in the Netherlands early in the 16th century. We find them imported into England. The following citations, quoted by Rimbault in his History of

; | the Pianoforte, but imperfectly understood by him, are and resembling a wing, from which it has gained the | German appellation “ Fliigel.” We can point out no long |

from the privy purse expenses of King Henry VIII, as extracted by Sir Harris Nicolas in 1827.

“1530 (April). Item the vj daye paied to William Lewes for ii payer of virginalls in one coffer with iiii stoppes brought to Grenewiche iii li. And for ii payer of virginalls in one coffer brought to the More other iii li.”

Now the second instrument may be explained, virginals meaning any quilled instrument, as a double spinet, like that at Nuremberg by Martin Van der Beest, the octave division being movable; but the first cannot be so explained ; the four stops can only belong to a harpsichord, and the two pair instrument to a double-keyed one, one keyboard being over, and not by the side of the other. Again from the inventory after the king’s death—

“Two fair pair of new long Virginalls made harp-fashion of Cipres, with keys of ivory, having the King’s Arms crowned and supported by his Grace’s beastes within a garter gilt, standing over the keys.”

Rimbault saw in this an upright instrument, and such a one was not then impossible, Virdung’s claviciterium (fig. 12) being no more than a horizontal —_ harpsichord turned up upon its broad end, which a slight modi- fication of the action rendered facile, but if upright, the two fair pair of new long virginalls would not have been “long ”—but high. We explain “ harp-fashion ” according to Galilei’s “arpa giacente,” and are disposed to believe that we have here another double keyboard harpsi- chord. We read in an inventory of the furniture of Warwick Castle, 1584, Fie. 12.—Virdung’s Claviciterium (upright “a faire paire of double Harpsichord), 1511.

virginalls,” and in the Hengrave inventory, 1603, “ one great payre of double virginalls.” Hans Ruckers, the great clavisingel maker of Antwerp, lived then too late to have invented the double keyboard and stops, evident adaptations from the organ, but we may not withhold from him the credit of introducing the octave string, so

Hill \ |

i i

| UI |

long attributed to him, which incorporated the octave |

spinet with the large instrument, to be henceforth play-

able without the co-operation of another performer. It |

had been attached to the bent or angle side of harpsi- chords, as shown in a modern instrument which forms part of the famous Plantin Museum at Antwerp, and also in one by Hans Ruckers himself, dated 1594, preserved in the Kunst und Gewerbe Museum, Berlin. The double harpsi- chord by that maker at the Conservatoire, Paris, dated

1590, which is four years earlier than the above, has the |

octave string. From that date until the last harpsichord was made by Joseph Kirkman in 1798, scarcely an instru- ment of the kind was made, except in Italy, without the octaves. Hans Ruckers had two sons, Hans the younger and Andries the elder, who followed and rivalled him in skill and reputation. the former, appears to have done but little, at least for him- self; but a nephew, Jan Couchet, a grandson of old Hans Ruckers, continued the prestige of this distinguished family, Huygens being a witness to the rare ability of Couchet. All these men, and, in fact, all the clavisingel makers of Antwerp, affiliation being recognized from the close alliance at that time of the arts, the painter having often as much to do with the musical instrument as the maker himself. The Ruckers harpsichords in the 18th century were fetching such prices as Bologna lutes did in the 17th or Cremona

Another Andries, the son of |

belonged to the artist’s guild of St Luke, the |

FLIANOGUPOR TE

violins do now. There are still many specimens existing

in Belgium, France, and England. Handel had a Ruckers _ harpsichord, which may be the one long sought for and _lately discovered by Mr Julian Marshall in Windsor

Castle ; it completes the number of sixty-three existing Ruckers instruments catalogued in Grove's Dictionary of Music and Musicians.

After the Antwerp make declined, London became pre- eminent for harpsichords,—the representative makers being Jacob Kirckmann and Burckhard Tschudi, pupils of a Flemish master, one Tabel, who had settled in London, and whose business Kirckmann continued through marriage with Tabel's widow. 'Tschudi was of a noble Swiss family belonging to the canton of Glarus. According to the custom with foreign names obtaining at that time, by which Haendel became Handel, and Schmidt Smith, Kirckmann dropped his final » and Tschudi became Shudi, but he resumed the full spelling in the facies of the splendid harpsichords he made in 1766 for Frederick the Great, which are still preserved in the New Palace, Potsdam, By these great makers the harpsichord became a larger, heavier-strung, and more powerful instrument, and fancy stops were added to vary the tone effects. To the three shifting registers of jacks of the octave and first and second unisons were added the "lute," the charm of which was due to the favouring of high harmonics by plucking the strings close to the bridge, and the "harp," a surding or muting effect produced by impeding the vibration of the strings by contact of small pieces of buff leather. Two pedals were also used, the left-hand one a combination of a unison and lute, rendered practicable by first moving the "machine," a sixth stop, with the left hand of the player; the right-hand pedal was to raise a hinged portion of the top or cover and thus gain some power of "swell" or creg- cendo, an invention of Roger Plenius, to whom also the harp stop may be rightly attributed. This ingenious harp- sichord maker had been stimulated to gain these effects by the nascent pianoforte which, as we shall find, he was the first to make in England. The first idea of pedals for the harpsichord to act as stops appears to have been John Hay- ward's (? Haward) as early as 1676, as we learn from Mace's Musick's Monument. The French makers preferred a kind of knee-pedal arrangement known as the " genouillére," and sometiines a more complete muting by one long strip of buff leather, the "sourdine." As an improvement upon Plenius's clumsy swell, Shudi in 1769 patented the Venetian swell,

a framing of louvres, like a Venetian blind, which opened _ by the movement of the pedal, and, becoming in England

a favourite addition to harpsichords, was early transferred to the organ, in which it replaced the rude “ nag’s-head” swell. A French harpsichord maker, Marius, whose name is remembered from a futile attempt to design a piano-

forte action, invented a folding harpsichord, the “clavecin, _ brisé,” by which the instrument could be disposed of in

a smaller space. One, which is preserved at Berlin, probably formed part of the camp baggage of Frederick the Great.

It was formerly a custom with kings, princes, and nobles who were well-disposed towards music to keep large collec-

tions of musical instruments,—not as now for beauty of

decoration, form, and colour, or historical associations, but for actual playing purposes in the domestic and festive music of their courts. There are records of their inventories, and it was to keep such a collection in playing order that Prince Ferdinand dei Medici engaged a Paduan harpsichord maker, Bartolommeo Cristofori, the man of genius who in-vented and produced the pianoforte. We fortunately pos- sess the record of this invention in a literary form from a well-known writer, the Marchese Scipione Maffei; his

| description appeared in the Giornale dei letterati d’Italia,

PEFANOPFORT E

v1

a publication conducted by Apostolo Zeno. ‘The date of | ness, he adopted the bold expedient of inverting it, driving

Maffei’s paper was 1711. Rimbault reproduced it, with a technically imperfect translation, in his History of the Piano- forte. We learn from it that in 1709 Cristofori had completed four ‘“gravecembali col piano e forte”—keyed-psalteries with soft and loud—three of them being of the

long or usual harpsichord form. A synonym in Italian for the original cembalo (or psaltery) is “salterio,” and if it were struck with hammers it became a “salterio tedesco” (the German hackbrett, or chopping board), the latter being the common dulcimer. Now the first notion of a pianoforte is a dulcimer with keys, and we may perhaps not be wrong in supposing that there had been many attempts and failures to put a keyboard toa dulcimer or hammers to a harpsichord before Cristofori successfully solved the problem. The sketch of his action in Maffei’s essay shows an incomplete stage in the invention, although the kernel of it, the principle of escapement or the controlled rebound of the hammer, is already there. He obtains it by a centred lever (linguetta mobile) or hopper, working, when the key is depressed by the touch, in a small projection from the centred hammer butt. The return, governed by a spring, must have been un- certain and incapable of further regulating than could be obtained by modifying the strength of the spring. More- over, the hammer had each time to be raised the entire distance of its fall. Cristofori in Florence, dated respectively 1720 and 1726, which show a much improved, we may even say a perfected, construction, for the whole of an essential piano movement is there. The earlier instrument has undergone some re- storation, but the 1726 one, which is in the Kraus Museum, retains’ the original leather hammerheads. Both instru- ments possess alike a contrivance for determining the radius of the hopper, and both have been unexpectedly found to have the “check” (Ital. paramartello) which regulates the fall of the hammer according to the strength of the blow which has impelled it to the strings. After this discovery of the actual instruments of Cristofori, there can be no longer doubt as to the attribution of the invention to him, in its initiation and its practical completion with escapement and check. To Cristofori we are indebted not only for the power of playing piano and forte, but for the infinite variations of tone, or mwances, which render the in- strument so delightful.

But his problem was not solved by the devising of a working action ; there was much more to be done to instal the pianoforte as a new musical instrument. The reson-

I

Fig. 13.—Cristofori’s Escapement Action, 1720. ance, that most subtle and yet all-embracing factor, had been experimentally developed to a certain perfection by Many generations of spinet and harpsichord makers, but the resistance structure had to be thought out again. Thicker stringing, rendered indispensable to withstand even Cristofori’s light hammers, demanded, in its turn, a stronger framing than the harpsichord had needed. To make his structure firm, he considerably increased the strength of the block which holds the tuning-pins, and, as he could not do so without materially adding to its thick-

There are, however, two pianofortes by |

‘ends of the strings,

his wrest-pins, harp-fashion, through it, so that tuning was effected at their upper, while the wires were attached to their lower ends. Then to guarantee the security of the case he ran an inde- pendent string-block round it of stouter wood than had been used in harpsichords, in which block the hitch-pins were driven to hold the farther

which were spaced at equal distances (unlike the harpsi- chord), the dampers lying between the pairs of unisons.

Cristofori died in 1731. Hehad pupils, but did not found a school of Italian pianoforte making, perhaps from the peculiar Italian con- servatism in musical instruments we have already remarked upon.

The essay of Scipione Maffei was translated into German in 1725, by Kénig, the court poet at Dresden, and friend of Gottfried Silbermann, the renowned organ builder and harpsichord and clavichord maker.! Incited by this publication, and perhaps by having seen in Dresden one of Cristofori’s pianofortes, Silbermann appears to have taken up the new instrument, and in 1726 to have manufactured two, which J. S. Bach, according to his pupil Agricola, pronounced failures. The trebles were too weak; the touch was too heavy. There has long been another version to this story, viz., that Silbermann borrowed the idea of his action from a very simple model contrived by a young musician named Schroeter, who had left it at the electoral court in 1721, and, quitting Saxony to travel, had not afterwards

claimed it. It may be so; but Schroeter's letter, printed in Mitzler's Bibliothek, dated 1738, is not supported by any other evidence than the recent discovery of an altered German harpsichord, the hammer action of which, in its simplicity, may have been taken from Schroeter's diagram, and would sufficiently account for the condemnation of Silbermann's earliest pianofortes if he had made use of it. In either case it is easy to distinguish between the lines of Schroeter's interest- ing communications (to Mitzler and later to Marpurg) the bitter disappointment he felt in being left out of the practi- cal development of so important an instrument.

But, whatever Silbermann's first experiments were based upon, it has been made certain by the personal investiga- tions of the present writer that he, when successful, adopted Cristofori's pianoforte without further alteration than the compass and colour of the keys, and the style of joinery of the case. In the Silbermann grand pianofortes, in the three palaces at Potsdam, known to have been Frederick the Great's, and to have been acquired by that monarch prior to J. 8. Bach's visit to him in 1747, we find the Cristofori framing, stringing, inverted wrest-plank, and action complete. Fig. 15 represents the instrument on which J. 8. Bach palyed in the Town Palace, Potsdam.

It has been repeatedly stated in Germany that Frederici of Gera in Saxony, an organ builder and musical instrument

Fic. 14.—Cristofori's Piano e Forte, 1726; Kraus Museum Florence.

1 This translation, reproduced in eatenso, may be read in Dr Oscar Paul's Geschichte des Claviers, Leipsic, 1868.

maker, invented the square or table-shaped piano, the "fort

bien" as he is said to have called it, about 1758-60. No square piano by this maker is forthcoming, but M. Victor

wy

jig

i I a TRNTUUE CHOUESUSLELLEAEPUE LER peeved CEEREE NTN

Lo

FrIANUVUPOERTE

do with the invention of it!) a square piano, which was to become the most popular domestic instrument, tells us all about Zumpe; and his instruments, stil]

Burney

existing, fix the date of the first at about 1765. In his simple “old man’s head” action, we have the nearest approach to a realization of Schroeter’s simple idea, Tf will be observed that Schroeter’s damper would stop all vibration at once. This de. fect is overcome by Zumpe’s ““mopstick ” damper. Another piano action had, however, come into use about that time or even earlier in

Germany. The discovery of it in the simplest ,

TEU a i

2:

form is to be attributed to M. Mahillon, who has found it in a square piano belonging to M. Henri Gosselin, painter, of Brussels,

=e ===

Fra. 15.-—Silbermann Forte Piano; Stadtschloss, Potsdam, 1746. Engraved by permission of H.I.H.

the Crown Princess of Prussia,

Mahillon of Brussels has acquired a Frederici “upright | grand” piano, dated 1745, and contributes a diagram of | the simple action (fig. 16). In

Frederici’s upright grand action we have not to do with Ra

the ideas of either Cristofori or Schroeter ; the movement is practi- cally identical with the hammer action of a German clock, and has its counterpart in a piano at Nuremberg, a fact which needs further elucidation. We note here the earliest example of the leather hinge afterwards so com- mon in piano actions, and only how going out of use. Where are we to look for Schroeter’s copyist, if not found in Silber- mann, Frederici, or, as we shall

presently see, perhaps Wagner ? It might be in the harpsichord we have mentioned, which, made in 1712 by one Brock for the elector of Hanover (after- Wr

wards George I. of Fic, 16.—Frederici’s Upright Grand Piano Action, England), was by 1745. Instrument now transferred to the museum

- of the Brussels Conservatoire.

him presented to

the Protestant pastor of Schulenberg near Hanover, and has since been rudely altered into a pianoforte (fig. 17). There is an altered harpsichord in the museum at Basel which appears to have been no more successful. But an attempted combination of harpsichord and pianoforte appears as a very early intention. The English poet Mason, the friend of Gray, bought such an

Fie, 17.—Hammer and Lifter of altered Harpsichord by Brock. Instrument in the collection of Mr Kendrick Pyne, Manchester,

instrument at Hamburg in 1755, with “the cleverest mechanism imaginable.” ;

It was only under date of 1763 that Schroeter pub- lished for the first time a diagram of his proposed inven- tion, designed more than forty years before. It appeared in Marpurg’s Kritische Briefe (Berlin, 1764). Now, immediately after, Johann Zampe, a German in London who had been one of Shudi’s workmen, invented or introduced (for there is some tradition that Mason had to

———— The principle of this action is that which was later perfected by the addition of a good escapement by Stein of Augsburg, and was again later experimented upon. by Sebastian Erard. Its origin is perhaps due to the contrivance of a

piano action that should suit the shallow clavichord and

r

Fig, 18.—Schroeter's Model for an Action, 1721,

| permit of its transformation into a square piano; a trans _ formation, Schroeter tells us, had been going on when he

Fig. 19.—Zumpe's Square Piano Action, 1766.

wrote his complaint. It will be observed that the hammer

1s, as compared with other actions, reversed, and the axis

Fie. 20.—Old Piano Action on the German principle of Escapement. Square Piano belonging to M. Gosselin, Brussels. rises with the key, necessitating a fixed means for raising the hammer, in this action effected by a rail against which the hammer is jerked up. It was Stein's merit to graft the hopper principle upon this simple action ; and Mozart's

2 Mason really invented the " celestina,'" as we know from the cor- respondence of Mary Granville. Under date of the 11th January 1775 she describes this invention or improvement of the poet as a short harpsichord in form, 2 feet long, but played with the right hand only. The left hand controlled a kind of violin-bow, which produced a charming sostinente, in character of tone between the violin tone and that of musical glasses. Mason played upon it with great ex- pression,

PIANOFORBT E

approbation of the invention, when he met with it at Augs- burg in 1777, is expressed in a well-known letter addressed to his mother. No more

“blocking” of the hammer, destroying all vibration, was henceforth to vex his mind.

Fic, 21.—Stein’s Action (the earliest so-called Viennese), 1780. He had found the instrument that for the rest of his short

life replaced the harpsichord. M. Mahillon has secured for his museum the only Johann Andreas Stein piano which is known to remain. It is from Augsburg, dated 1780, and has Stein’s escapement action, two unisons, and the knee pedal, then and later common in Germany.

Mozart’s own grand piano, preserved at Salzburg, and the two grand pianos (the latest dated 1790) by Huhn of Berlin, preserved at Berlin and Charlottenburg, because they had belonged to the Prussian Queen Louise, follow Stein in all particulars. These instruments have three unisons upwards, and the muting movement known as celeste which no doubt Stein had also. The wrest-plank is not inverted; nor is there any imitation of Cristofori. We imay regard Stein, coming after the Seven Years’ War which had devastated Saxony, as the German reinventor of the grand piano. Stein’s instrument was accepted as a inodel, as we have seen, in Berlin as well as Vienna, to which city his business was transferred in 1794 by his daughter Nanette, known as an accomplished pianist and friend of Beethoven, who at that time used Stein’s pianos. She had her brother in the business with ~~her, and had already, in 1793, married J. A. Streicher, a pianist from Stuttgart, and distinguished as a personal friend of Schiller. In 1802, the brother and sister dissolving partnership, Streicher began himself to take his full share of the work, and on Stein’s lines improved the Viennese instrument, so popular for many years and famous for its lightness of touch, which contributed to the special character of the Viennese school of pianoforte playing. The firm of Streicher still exists in Vienna; but since 1862, when Steinway’s example caused a complete revolution in German and Austrian piano~~ making, the old wooden cheap grand piano has died out. We will quit the early German piano with an illustration (fig. 22) of an early square piano action in an instrument

Fic. 22.—German Square Action, 1783. Piano by Wagner, Dresden.

made by Johann Gottlob Wagner of Dresden in 1783. This interesting discovery of M. Mahillon's introduces us to a rude imitation (in the principle) of Cristofori, and it appears to have no relation whatever to the clock hammer notion seen in Frederici's.

Burney, who lived through the period of the displace- ment of the harpsichord by the pianoforte, is the only authority we can refer to as to the introduction of the latter Instrument into England. He tells us,! in his gossiping way, that the first hammer harpsichord that came to England was made by an English monk at Rome, a ee ee

1 Rees's New Cyclopedia, article " Harpsichord."

Father Wood, for an English gentleman, Samuel Crisp of Chesington ; the tone of this instrument was superior to that produced by quills, with the added power of the shades of piano and forte, so that, although the touch and mechanism were so imperfect that nothing quick could be executed upon it, yet in a slow movement like the Dead March in Saul it excited wonder and delight. Fulke Greville afterwards bought this instrument for 100 guineas, and it remained unique in England for several years, until Plenius, the inventor of the lyrichord, made a pianoforte in imitation of it. In this instrument the touch was better, but the tone was inferior. We have no date for Father Wood. Plenius produced his lyrichord, a sostinente harpsichord, in 1745. When Mason imported a pianoforte in 1755, Fulke Greville's could have been no longer unique. The Italian origin of Father Wood's piano points to a copy of Cristofori, but the description of its capabilities in no way supports this supposition, unless we adopt the very possible theory that the instrument had arrived out of order and there was no one in London who could put it right, or would perhaps divine that it was wrong. Burney further tells us that the arrival in London of J. C. Bach in 1759 was the motive for several of the second-rate harpsichord makers trying to make pianofortes, but with no particular success. Of these Americus Backers, said to be a Dutchman, appears to have gained the first place. He was afterwards the inventor of the so-called English action, and, as this action is based upon Cristo- fori's, we may suppose he at first followed Silbermann in copying the original inventor. There is an old play-

bill of Covent Garden in Messrs Broadwood’s possession, dated the 16th May 1767, which has the following announce- ment :—

“End of Act 1. Miss BrickLER will sing a favourite song from JUDITH, accompanied by Mr Dippin, on a new instrument call’d PIANO Forts.’

The mind at once reverts to Backers as the probable maker of this novelty. Be that as it may, between 1772 and 1776, the year of his death, he produced the action continued in the direct principle to this day by the firm of Broadwood, or with a reversed lever and hammer-butt introduced by the firm of Collard in 1839,

Fig, 23.—Grand Piano Action, 1776. The“ English” action of Americus Backers.

The escapement lever is suggested by Cristofori’s first action, to which Backers has added a contrivance for regulating it by means of a button and screw. The check is from Cristofori’s second action. No more durable action has been constructed, and it has always been found equal, whether made in England or abroad, to the demands of the most advanced virtuosi. John Broadwood and Robert Stodart were friends, Stodart having been Broadwood’s

pupil; and they were the assistants of Backers in the XIX. — 10

74 FLaNGrorktt &

installation of his invention. On his death-bed he com- mended it to Broadwood’s care, but Stodart appears to have been the first to advance it, —Broadwood being pro-

Er

Fria. 24.—Broadwood’s Grand Piano Action, 1884. English direet meehanism. bably held back by his partnership with his brother-in-law, the son of Shudi, in the harpsichord business. (The elder Shudi had died in 1773.) Stodart soon made a con. siderable reputation with his “grand” pianofortes, a

Fig. 25.—Collard’s Grand Piano Action, 1884. English action, with reversed hopper and eontrivanee for repetition added.

designation he was the first to give them. In Stodart’s

in framing and resonance entirely on the harpsichord prin- ciple, the sound-board bridge being still continued in one undivided length. The strings, which were of brass wire in the bass, descended in notes of three unisons to the lowest note of the scale. Tension was left to chance, and a reasonable striking line or place for the hammers was not thought of. Theory requires that the notes of octaves should be multiples in the ratio of 1 to 2, by which, taking the treble clef C at one foot, the lowest F of the five-octaye scale would require a vibrating length between the bridges of 12 feet. As only half this length could be conveniently afforded, we see at once a reason for the above-mentioned deficiencies. Only the three octaves of the treble, which had lengths practically ideal, could be tolerably adjusted. Then the striking-line, which should be at an eighth or not less than a ninth or tenth of the vibrating length, and had never been cared for in the harpsichord, was in the lowest two octaves out of all proportion, with corresponding dis-advantage to the tone. John Broadwood did not venture alone upon the path towards rectifying these faults. He called in the aid of professed men of science—Cavallo, who in 1788 published his calculations of the tension, and Dr Gray, of the British Museum. The problem was solved by dividing the sound-board bridge, the lower half of

which was advanced to carry the bass strings, which were

still of brass. The first attempts to equalize the tension and improve the striking-place were here set forth, to the great adyantage of the instrument, which in its wooden construc- tion might now be considered complete. pianists of that epoch, except Mozart and Beethoven,

were assembled in London,—Clementi, who first gave the.

pianoforte its own character, raising it from being a mere variety of the harpsichord, his pupils Cramer and for a time Hummel, later on John Field, and also the brilliant virtuosi Dussek and Steibelt. To please Dussek, Broad-wood in 1791 carried his five-octave, F to F, keyboard, by

grand piano we first find an adaptation from the lyrichord adding keys upwards, to five and a half octaves, F to C.

of Plenius, of steel arches between the wrest-plank and bellyrail, bridging the gap up which the hammers rise, in itself an important cause of weakness. in any contemporary German instruments, but may have been part of Backers's. Imitation of the harpsichord by "octaving" was at this time an object with piano makers. Zumpe's small square piano had met with great success ; he was soon enabled to retire, and his imitators, who were legion, continued his model with its hand stops for the dampers and sourdine, with little change but that which straightened the keys from the divergences inherited from the clavichord. John Broadwood took this domestic instru- ment first in hand to improve it, and in the year 1780 succeeded in entirely reconstructing it. He transferred the wrest-plank and pins from the right-hand side, as in the clavichord, to the back of the case, an linprovement uni- versally adopted after his patent, taken out in 1783, expired. In this patent we first find the damper and piano pedals, since universally accepted, but at first in the grand pianofortes only. Zumpe's action remaining with an altered damper, another inventor, John Geib, about this time patented the hopper with two separate escape- ments, one of which soon became adopted in the grass- hopper of the square piano, it is believed by Geib him- self; and Petzold, a Paris maker, appears to have taken later to the escapement effected upon the key. We may mention here that the square piano was developed and continued in England until about the year 1860, when it went out of fashion.

To return to John Broadwood,—having launched his reconstructed square piano, he next turned his attention to the grand piano to continue the improvement of it from the point where Backers had left it, The grand piano was

These are not found | to the piano.

In 1794 the additional bass half octave to C, which Shudi had first introduced in his double harpsichords, was given Steibelt, while in England, instituted the familiar signs for the employment of the pedals, which owes its charm to excitement of the imagination instigated by power over an acoustical phenomenon, the sympathetic vibration of the strings. In 1799 Clementi founded a pianoforte manufactory, to be subsequently developed and carried on by Messrs Collard.

The first square piano made in France is said to have been constructed in 1776 by Sebastian Erard, a young Alsatian. London manufactory of harps and pianofortes bearing his name. That eminent mechanician and inventor is said to

Fic, 26.—Erard's Double Eseapement Action, 1884. The double eseapement or repetition is effeeted by a spring in the balanee pressing the hinged lever upwards, to allow the hopper which delivers the blow to return to its position under the nose of the hammer, before the key has risen again.

have at first adopted for his pianos the English models However, in 1794 and 1801, as is shown by his patents,

The greatest

In 1786 he came to England, and founded the —

PIANOFORTE

he was certainly engaged upon the elementary action described as appertaining to M. Gosselin's piano, of probably German origin. In his long-continued labour of inventing and constructing a double escapement action, Erard appears to have sought to combine the English power of gradation of tone with the German lightness of touch. He took out his first patent for a " repetition" action in 1808, claiming for it "the power of giving repeated strokes without missing or failure, by very small angular motions of the key itself." He did not, however, succeed in producing his famous repetition, or double escapement action until 1821; it was then patented by his nephew Pierre Erard, who, when the patent expired in England in 1835,

proved a loss from the difficulties of carrying out the invention, which induced the House of Lords to grant an extension of the patent.

Although some great pianists have been opposed to double escapement, notably Kalkbrenner, Chopin, and Dr Hans von Biilow, Erard's action, in its complete or a shortened form as introduced by Herz, is now more extensively used than at any former period. Erard invented in

Fic. 27.Steinway's Grand Piano Action, 1884. The double escapement as in Erard's, but with shortened balance and usual check.

1808 an upward bearing to the wrest-plank bridge, by means of agraffes or studs of metal through holes in which the strings are made to pass, bearing against the upper side. The wooden bridge with down-bearing strings is clearly not in relation with upward-striking hammers, the tendency of which must be to raise the strings from the bridge, to the detriment of the tone. A long brass bridge on this principle was introduced by William Stodart in 1822. A pressure-bar bearing of later introduction is claimed for the French maker, M. Bord, and is very fre- quently employed, by German makers especially. The first to see the importance of iron sharing with wood (ultimately almost supplanting it) in pianoforte framing was a native of England and a civil engineer by profession, John Isaac Hawkins, who has been best known as the inventor of the ever-pointed pencil. He was living at Philadelphia, U.S., when he invented and first produced the familiar cottage pianoforte—" portable grand" as he then called it. He patented it in America, his father, Isaac Hawkins, taking out the patent for him in England in the same year,

1800. It will be observed that the illustration here given (fig. 28) represents a wreck; but a draughtsman's restora- tion might be open to question.

_There had been upright grand pianos as well as upright harpsichords, the horizontal instrument being turned up upon its wider end and a keyboard and action adapted to it, William Southwell, an Irish pianomaker, had, in 1798, tried a similar experiment with a square piano, to be repeated in later years by W. F. Collard of London ; but Hawkins was the first to make a piano, or planino, with the strings descending to the floor, the keyboard being raised, and this, although at the moment the chief, was not his only

merit. He anticipated nearly every discovery that has since been introduced as novel. His instrument is in a complete iron frame, independent

of the case; and in this frame, strengthened by a system of iron resistance rods combined with an iron upper bridge, his sound-board is entirely suspended. An apparatus for

PR STATE LGU SIS Ig testes ies tes pals gots ts gs ea TSS Sis wean}

Reeiers MIN
QLANUCNSENGEALAAUATUATOOEENCTVVCTENTOCTONOASG
A GATES CP

|

i

|

sf

|

Fic, 28.—Hawkins's Portable Grand Piano, 1800. An upright instrument, the original of the modern cottage piano or pianino. In Messrs Broadwood's museum and unrestored.

tuning by mechanical screws regulates the tension of the strings, which are of equal length throughout. The action, in metal supports, anticipates Wornum's in the checking, and still later ideas in a contrivance for repetition. This remarkable bundle of inventions was brought to London and exhibited by Hawkins himself, but the instrument being poor in the tone failed to bring him pecuniary reward or the credit he deserved. Southwell appears to have been one of the first to profit by Hawkins's ideas by bringing out the high cabinet pianoforte, with hinged sticker action, in 1807. All that he could, how- ever, patent in it was the simple damper action, turning on a pivot to relieve the dampers from the strings, which is

still frequently used with such actions. The next steps for producing the lower or cot- tage upright piano were taken by Robert Wornum, who in 1811 produced a dia- gonally and in 1813 a vertically strung one. Wornum's perfected crank action was not complete until 1826, when it was patented for a cabinet piano; but it was not really introduced until three years later, when Wornum applied it to his little "piccolo." The principle of this centred lever check action was introduced into Paris by Pleyel! and Pape, and thence has gone to Germany and America. In Eng- land it has now nearly superseded the once favourite leather-hinged action.

It was not, however, from Hawkins's invention that iron be- came introduced as essential to the structure of a pianoforte. This was due to William Allen, a young Scotsman in the employ of the Stodarts. He devised a metal system of framing intended primarily for compensation, but soon to become, in other hands, a framing for resistance. His idea was to meet the divergence in tuning caused in brass and iron strings by

Fic, 29,—Wornum's Upright Action, 1826. The original of the now universal crank action in upright pianos.

1 Pleyel exhibited a small upright piano in Paris in 1827. Pierre

Erard did not turn his attention to upright pianos until 1831.

atmospheric changes by compensating tubes and plates of the same metals, guaranteeing their stability by a cross batoning of stout wooden bars and a metal bar across the wrest-plank. Allen, being simply a tuner, had not the full practical knowledge for carrying out the idea. He had to ally himself with Stodarts' foreman, Thom; and Allen and Thom patented the invention in January 1820. The firm of Stodart at once acquired the patent. We have now arrived at an important epoch in pianoforte construction,— the abolition, at least in England and France, of the wooden construction in favour of a combined construction of iron and wood, the former material gradually asserting pre- eminence. Allen's design is shown in fig. 30, The long

bars shown in the dia- ie N i

Lh Lh Hi}

attached being in the same correspondence. At once a great advance was made in the possibility of using heavier strings than could be stretched before, without danger to the durability of the case and frame. The next step was in 1821 to a fixed iron string-plate, the in- vention of one of Broad- woods' workmen, Samuel Hervé, which was in the first instance applied to one of the square pianos of that firm. The great advantage in the fixed plate was a more even '1890. 'The first complete sactal framing solid counterpoise to the 8ystem applied over the strings.

drawing or tension of the strings and the abolition of their undue length behind the bridge, a reduction which Isaac Carter! had tried some years before, but unsuccessfully, to accomplish with a plate of wood. So generally was attention now given to improved methods of resistance that it has not been found possible to determine who first practically introduced those long iron or steel resistance bars which are so familiar a feature in modern grand pianos. They were experimented on as substitutes for the wooden bracing by Joseph Smith in 1798; but to James Broadwood belongs the credit of trying them first above the sound-board in the treble part of the scale as long ago as 1808, and again in 1818; he did not succeed, however, in fixing them properly. The introduction of fixed resist- ance bars is really due to observation of Allen's compen- sating tubes, which were, at the same time, resisting. Sebastian and Pierre Erard seem to have been first in the field in 1823 with a complete system of nine resistance bars from treble to bass, with a simple mode of fastening them through the sound-board to the wooden beams beneath, but, although these bars appear in their patent of 1824, which chiefly concerned their repetition action, the Erards did not either in France or England claim them as of original invention, nor is there any string-plate combined eee

those of iron lie over the ETT TT,

iron or steel wire, while

those of brass lie over HH HE i a: =H dll lll cE) aa a

the brass wire, the metal plates to which they are ei | ececanentarnerta| tntanatTantaacs is i : “TO, |

Fie.30.—Allen’s Compensating Grand Piano,

a Sometime foreman to the pianoforte maker Mott, who attracted much attention by a piano with sostenente effect, produced by a roller and silk attachments in 1817, But a sostenente piano, how-

ever perfect, is no longer a true piano such as Beethoven and Chopin wrote for,

FORTE

with them in their patent. James Broadwood, by his patent of 1827, claimed the combination of string-plate and resistance bars, which was clearly the completion of the wood and metal instrument, differing from Allen’s jn the nature of the resistance being fixed. Broadwood, however, left the bass bars out, but added a fourth bar in the middle to the three in the treble he had previously used. It must be borne in mind that it was the trebles that gave way in the old wooden construction before the tenor and bass of the instrument. But the weight of the stringing was always increasing, and a heavy close overspinning of the bass strings had become general. The resistance bars were increased to five, six, seven, eight, and, as we have seen, even nine, according to the ideas of the different English and French makers who used them in their pursuit of stability.

The next important addition to the grand piano in order of time was the harmonic bar of Picire Erard, introduced in 1838. This was a gun-metal bar. of alter. nate pressing and drawing power by means of screws which were tapped into the wrest-plank immediately above the treble bearings; making that part of the instrument nearly immovable, this favoured the production of higher harmonics to the treble notes, recognized in what we com- monly call “ring.” A similar bar, subsequently extended by Broadwood across the entire wrest-plank, was to prevent any tendency in the wrest-plank to rise, from the combined upward drawing of the strings. A method of fastening the strings on the string-plate depending upon friction, and thus dispensing with “eyes,” was a contribution of the Collards, who had retained James

Stewart, who had been in America with Chickering, and was a man of considerable inventive power. This invention was intro- duced in 1827. Between 1847 and 1849 Mr Henry

Fowler Broadwood, son of James, and grandson of John

Broadwood, and also great grandson of Shudi (Tschudi), in- vented agrand piano- forte to depend prac- ||} tically upon iron, in which, to avoid the conspicuous inequali- ties caused by the breaking of the scale with resistance bars, there should be no bar parallel to the strings except a bass bar, while another flanged __ resistance bar, as an entirely novel feature, crossed p over the strings from the bass corner of the wrest-plank to a point upon the string-plate | where the greatest accumu- lation of tension strain was found. Mr Broadwood has Fre. 31.—Broadwood's Iron Grand Piano, 1884. not continued, with- —— iron frame with diagonal resistance out some compro- —

mise, this extreme renunciation of ordinary resistance means. Since the Great Exhibition of 1851 he has employed an ordinary straight bar in the middle of his concert grand scale, his smaller grands having frequently two such as well as the long bass bar. From 1862 he has covered his wrest-plank with a thick plate of iron into

PIANOFORTE

which the tuning pins screw as well as into the wood beneath, thus avoiding the crushing of the wood by the constant pressure of the pin across the pull of the string, an ultimate source of danger to durability.

The introduction of iron into pianoforte structure has been differently and independently effected in America, ' the fundamental idea there being a single casting for the _ metal plate and bars, instead _of forging or casting them in separate pieces. Alpheus Babcock was the pioneer to this kind of metal construction. He also was bitten with the compensation notion, and had cast an iron ring for a square piano in 1825, which is not said to have succeeded, but gave the clew to a single casting resistance framing, which was suc- cessfully accomplished by Conrad Meyer, in Philadelphia, in 1833, in a square piano which still exists, and was shown in the Paris

Exhibition of 1878. Meyer’s idea was taken up and improved upon by Jonas Chickering of Boston, who applied it to the grand piano as well as to the square, and brought the principle up to a high degree of perfection, —establish- ing by it the independent construc- tion of the American pianoforte.

We have now to do with over- or cross-stringing, by which the bass division of the strings is made to cross over the tenor part of the scale in a single, double, or treble disposi- “tion at diverging angles,—the object being in the first instance to get longer bass strings than are attainable in a parallel scale, and in the next to open out the scale and extend the area of bridge pressure on the sound- board. In the 18th century clavi- chords were sometimes overstrung in the lowest octave to get a clearer rye. 32.—Meyer’s Metal tone in that very indistinct part Frame for a Square Mano, of the instrument (strings tuned an =» ores octave higher being employed). ‘The first suggestion for the overstringing in the piano was made by the cele- brated flute-player and inventor Theobald Boehm, who carried it beyond theory in London, in 1831, by employing a small firm located in Cheapside, Gerock & Wolf, to make some overstrung pianos for him. Boehm expected to gain in tone; Pape, an ingenious mechanician in Paris, tried a like experiment to gain economy in dimensions, his notion being to supply the best piano possible with the least outlay of means. Tomkinson in London continued Pape’s model, but neither Boehm’s nor Pape’s took perma- nent root. The Great Exhibition of 1851 contained a grand plano, made by Lichtenthal of St Petersburg, overstrung in order to gain symmetry by two angle sides to the case. It was regarded as a curiosity only. A few years later, in 1855, Henry Engelhard Steinway (originally Steinweg), who had emigrated from Brunswick to New York in 1849, and had established the firm of Steinway & Sons in 1853 in that city, effected the combination of an overstrung scale with the American iron frame, which, exhibited in grand and square instruments shown in London in the International Exhibition of 1862, excited the attention of European pianoforte makers, leading ultimately to import- ant results. The Chickering firm claim to have antici- pated the Steinways in this invention. They assert that Jonas Chickering had begun a square piano on this com- bined system in 1853, but, he dying before it was completed, it was brought out later. It is often difficult to adjudicate

Z

0

90

7

upon the claims of inventors, so rarely is an invention the product of one man’s mind alone. However, the principle has been taken up and generally adopted in America and Germany, and has found followers elsewhere, not only in grand but in upright pianos, to the manufacture of which it has given, and particularly in Germany, a powerful impetus. But, in spite of this general recognition, the overstringing, as at present effected, is attended with grave disadvantages, in disturbing the balance of tone by in- troducing thick, heavy basses, which, like the modern pedal organs, bear no just relation to that part of the keyboard where the part-writing lies. The great increase also of tension which is held up as a gain, acts pre- judicially upon the durability of the instrument, as no artificial screw- ing up of the sound-board can always preserve the elasticity of the fibres of the fir tree (Abies excelsa in Europe, Adzes alba in America) of which it is made. The re- markableimprove- ments in the draw- ing of the cast steel wire pro- duced in Birming- ham, Vienna, and Nuremberg (this last initiated by Boehm) have ren- dered very high tensions practic- Fie. 33.—Steinway’s Grand Piano, 1884. Metal framing able. We believe in a single casting and overstrung.

they have been overstated in figures ; it is certain, however, that Broadwood’s seven-octave concert grands have a tension of not less than sixteen tons when at the English orchestral pitch,—the notes of the ideal lengths each draw- ing 450 tb. We have no such accurate statement to offer of the American and German concert grands, but we regard Steinway’s as of not less than twenty-two tons tension.

Whatever of importance has been introduced in the structure of the pianoforte we believe we have attributed to its legitimate inventor or to the manufacturer who has placed it in the light of day. It would be impossible within reasonable limits to chronicle the variations which have taken place

in the barrings of sound-boards on which their resonant structure depends, the disposition of wooden beams or metal bars, the adaptation of mechanical action, or any of those countless modifications upon which finally depends the individual character of an instrument worthy to be presented and upheld as a work of art. There are many names of first-rate pianoforte makers whose place has not been in this record, simply because they have not ranked with the initiators or perfecters of inventions that have been accepted as of paramount importance.

The earliest keyboard instrument makers were to be found in monasteries or collegiate foundations, and such lay help as may have been employed was at best of the roughest kind. In the next epoch the artists' guilds in cities absorbed lay musical instrument makers, notably on account of the then universal practice of making such instruments beautiful ; and, indeed, we are indebted

to this for the preservation of many spinets and harpsichords in museums and private collections. The full members of the craft-

_ Ses See

— 5

78

guilds were all masters who had terminated their apprenticeships by producing complete instruments as "master-pieces," made according to the rules and to the satisfaction of the wardens or deacons of the guilds. A trial of this kind lasted long in many crafts—for instance, in the case of Scottish cabinetmakers' inden- tures, an apprentice's freedom was only gained after the test produc- tion of an "essay " piece of work, duly authenticated aud admitted. Spinets and harpsichords were bound to bear the inscription of the maker's name, or to show his trade mark as a guarantee for honest workmanship. The master's sons and apprentices were, in the master's workshops, probationers of the guild and protected by it. Even in the 17th century we hear little about journeymen, who, as the name implies, would be paid by the day. But the extension of musical instrument workshops about the beginning of the 18th century was one of the signs of the

weakened power of the guilds—particularly in Great Britain. In France it needed the Revolution to entirely abolish them.

Throughout the 18th century journeywork and apprenticeship were general, Wages, compared with the cost of living, were meagre, and the day's work, not unfrequently extended by overtime, was a long one. The result was a slow production. The English cabinet- makers, however, owing to disputes which at last called for judicial interferenee, in the year 1788 brought out their book of prices which was the foundation of the present piece-work system. Piano- forte makers in course of time adopted this new departure with the result of quicker work and higher wages, benefiting alike the master and man. The next industrial revolution was inaugurated some-where about 1815, by the introduction of machinery to save manual labour, the division of which had already been instituted, and by the use of steam. Machinery has, as yet, been extended to its furthest limit in America, where labour-saving is relied upon as a powerful ally against strikes, which are more frequently victorious in the New thau in the Old World. Simultaneously a dislike has arisen to apprenticeships ; and even in Germany, the traditional land of the apprentice, this mode of acquirement has weakened.

Turning to the commercial importance of the pianoforte, we find that we have to face great difficulties in order to obtain anything like trustworthy information. It is true official blue-books give yearly statements of exports and imports, but as they do not separate the pianoforte from other musical instruments an analysis is impossible. Personal inquiry again among pianoforte makers brin gs but scattered information, partly from the natural inclination to enhance business returns, and partly from an equally natural disinclination to impart that which, if spoken of at all, should be confidential. From this dilethma we fall back upon gleanings of intelligence either of our own gathering or as afforded by the leading pianoforte trade organs in England and Germany—the London Music Trades Review and the Leipsic Zeitschrift fiir Instrumentenbau.

The chief centres of the pianoforte trade are London, Paris, Berlin, Leipsic, Dresden, Stuttgart, Hamburg, Vienna, St Petersburg, Brussels, New York, Boston, and Baltimore. The greatest cen- tralizations are found in London

and Paris, —very few pianofortes being made in the United Kingdom or France, excepting perhaps at Marseilles, out of those cities. But in Germany and the United States there are pianoforte makers in many towns besides those we have named. Pianofortes are made in Italy at Turin, Milan, Florence, Naples, and Palermo, and in Spain at Barcelona (principally), Madrid, and Saragossa. The large export trade belonged formerly to England and France, but it has been weakencd of late years by the comniercial activity of the Germans, who have besides copied successfully and with the advantage of much lower wages recent American models. German pianofortes are now much found in Great Britain, where free trade has favoured their introduction, and in the Australian colonies ; they have also outrivalled the French in Holland; but we believe France still keeps the trade of southern Europe, as the United States mainly supply Canada. English exports of good makers will be found all over the world ; but some important markets have been lost through the inferior instruments consigned or sold because they were cheap, and were supposed to be good enough.

The United States and Germany appear to employ the greatest number of workmen in the pianoforte handicraft, Germany pro- ducing the largest numbers of instruments. In adopting, how- ever, the statistics given, we must not forget to take into account that custom of advertising which leavens nearly every statement. There are said to be upwards of 8000 workmen employed in piano- making in America. The Messrs Steinway claim for America an annual production of about 25,000 pianofortes of all kinds. We hardly feel disposed to allow Germany 73,000, with a less number of workmen, viz., 7834 ; but such is the statement put forward, it is said, by a seml-official source, the Deutsche Consulats-Zeitung. It must be borne in mind that maehinery adds its power in- definitely to the number of men employed, but this occurs more in America than in Germany. A recent strike in Paris repre- sented the pianoforte trade society as consisting of 5000 members ; and we shall not be far out in crediting that city with a produc- tion of 20,000 instruments yearly. The number made in London aunually may be taken as reaching at least 35,000.

PJA—

ge ie

Bibliography.—A. Schlick, Spiegel der Orgelmacher, Mainz ?, 1511, Berlin repr., 1869; S. Virdung, Musica getuscht und auszgezogen, Buscl, 1511, reprinted in fac. simile, Berlin, 1882; M. Agricola, Musica Instrumentalis, Wittembcrg, 1529; 0, Luscinius, Musurgia sive Praxis Musicx, Strasburg, 1536; M. Preetorius, Syntagma Musicum, vol. i., Wittemberg. 1615, vols. ii. and iii. in German, Wolfen- biittel, 1619; M. Merscnne, J/armonicorum (Paris, 1635), and~M/armonie Univer- selle (Paris, 1636); C. Huygens, Correspondance, Jonkbloct ct Land, Leyden, 1882; T. Mace, Afusick's Monument, London, 1676; J.S. Bach, Das Wohitem- perirte Clavier, Coethen, 1722; C. P. E. Bach » Versuch tiber die wahre Art das Clavier zu spielen, Berlin, 1753; J. Adlung, Musica Mechanica Organedi, Berlin, 1768; C. Burney, The Present State of Music in France and italy (London, 1771), and The Present State of Mustc in Germany, the Netherlands, &c. (London, 1772); W. A. Mozart, Briefe, Leipsic, 1878; D. Steibelt, Taree Sonatas, Op. 35, preface (London, 1799), and Aféthode de Piano Forte (Paris, 1805); F. J. Fétis, Esquisse de l'Histoire du Piano," in the Revue et Gazette Musicale (Paris, 1830), partly translated in the Harmonicon (London, 1830-31), " Exposition Universelle de Londres," in Gazette Musicale (Paris, 1851), Exposition Universelle de Paris, Rapport du Jury (Paris, 1855), " Exposition Internationale de Londres" in Gazette Musicale (Paris, 1862), and Exposition Universelle de Paris, Rapport du Jury (Paris, 1867); J. S. Broadwood, Some Notes made in 1838, with obscrva- tions and elucidations by H. F. Broadwood, London, 1862; Kuctzing, Das Wissen- schaftliche der Fortepiano Baukunst, Bern, 1844; S. and P. Erard, London Exhibition, London, 1851; W. Pole, " Musical Instruments of the Great Exhibi- tion," from Newton's Patent Journal (London, 1851), and in Jurors' Reports, International Exhibition (London, 1862); J. Fischhoff, Versuch einer Geschichte des Clavierbaues, Vicnna, 1853; Anonymous, Notes sur les Travaux de MM, Erard, Paris, 1855; C. A. André, Der Clavierbau, Offenbach, 1855; H. Welcker von Gontershausen, Der Fliigel oder die Beschagfenhett des Pianos in allen Formen (Frankfort, 1856), and Der Clavierbau in seiner Theorie, Technik, und Geschichte (Frankfort, 1870); E. F. Rimbault, The Pianoforte, London, 1860; J. Broadwood and Sons, Jnternational Exhibition, London, 1862; L. de Burbure, Recherches sur les Facteurs de Clavecins d'Anvers, Brussels, 1863; A, W. Ambros, Geschichte

der Musik, vol. ii., Breslau, 1864; O. Paul, Geschichte des Claviers (Leipsic, 1868), and Amiliche Bericht iiber die Wiener Ausstellung im Jahre 1873 (Brunswick, 1874); G. F. Sievers, Ji Pienoforte Guida Pratica, N aples, 1868; Patents: Abridgments of Specifications relating to Musical Instruments, London, 1871; P. Rombonts and T, Van Lerius, De Liggeren der Antwerpsche Sint Lucasgilde, vol.i., Antwerp, 1872, and vol. ii., The Hague; J. Bluethner and H. Gretschel, Lehrbuch des Pianofortebaues, Leipsic, 1872; C. Engel, Musical Instruments in the South Kensington Museum (London, 1874), and "Some Account of the Clavichord," in Musical Times (London, July, Aug., Scp., 1879); E. Vander Stracten, La Musique aux Pays Bas, vol. iii., Brussels, 1875; Chickcring & Sons, The Pianoforte, Boston, 1874; C. Chouquct, Le Musée du Conservatoire National de Musique (Paris, 1875), and Haxposition Universelle et Internationale de Paris, Rapport du Jury (Paris, 1880); L. Puliti, Della Origine di Pianoforte, Florence, 1876; C. Meyer & Son, On the Full Iron Plate Frame for Pianos, Philadelphia, 1876; C. Ponsicchi, Ji Pianoforte, sua ortgine e sviluppo, Florence, 1876; Bosanquet, Elementary Treatise on Musical Intervals, London, 18763 A. Kraus, Catalogue des Instruments de Musique du Musée Kraus, Vlorencc, 1878; V, Mahillon, Annu- aires du Conservatoire Royale de Musique de Bruxelles (Brusscls, 1877 to 1883), and Catalogue descriptif et analytique du Musée Instrumental du Conservatoire Royal de Musique de Bruxetles (Ghent, 1880-81); L. F. Valdrighi, Musurgiana, Modena, 1879; E. Brinsmead, Mistory of the Pianoforte, London, 1879; §S, Blondel, Listotre Anecdotique du Piano, Paris, 1880; A, Reissmann, Jllustrirte Geschichte der Deutschen Musik, Leipsic, 1880-81; A. J. Ellis, * History of Musical Pitch," with appendices in Journal of the Society of Arts, London, 1880; A, J. Hipkins, various articles in Sir George Grove's Dictionary of Music and Musicians, " History of the Pianoforte," with appendix, in Journal of the Society of Arts (London, 1883), and '' The Pianoforte and its Precursors," in the English Illustrated Magazine (London, 1884), (A. J.

PIARISTS, the popular name of the "clerici regulares scholarum piarum," the Pauline Congregation of the Mother of God, which was founded by Joseph Calasanza (Josephus a Matre Dei) at Rome in the beginning of the 17th century. Calasanza, a native of Calasanz in the province of Huesca in Aragon, was born on September 11, 1556, studied at Lerida and Alcala, and

after his ordina- tion to the priesthood removed to Rome. Here he became zealously interested in the education of poor and orphan children, and with this end he organized, in 1607, a brother- hood which ultimately, in 1617, became an independent – Congregation, numbering at that time fifteen priests, under Calasanza as their head. To the three usual vows they added a fourth, that of devotion to the gratuitous instruc- tion of youth. In 1622 the Congregation received a new constitution from Gregory XV., and had all the privileges of the mendicant orders conferred upon it, Calasanza being recognized as general. In this capacity he busied himself with the extension of the order, not only in Italy, but also in Germany, Poland, and other countries, until 1643, when the jealousy of the Jesuits led to conflicts which resulted in his removal from office; owing to the same cause the Congregation was deprived of its privileges by Innocent X. in 1646. Calasanza, who died on August 22, 1648, was beatified in 1748, and canonized in 1767. The privileges of the Congregation were successively restored in 1660, 1669, and 1698. ‘The Piarists, who are not a numerous body, are found chiefly in Italy, Spain, the West Indies, Germany, and especially in Austria-Hungary.

PIATRA, a town of Roumania (Moldavia) at the head of the department of Neamtsu, on the left bank of the | Bistritza, an affluent of the Sereth. It is about 45 miles

by road from Roman, a station on the railway from Galatz and Czernowitz. The population of the prefecture in 1878 was 25,383 (9887 Jews). It contained seven Orthodox churches,—-the most remarkable being St John’s, or the Prince’s Monastery, founded by Stephen the Great in 1497. There are five annual fairs, and a large trade is done in grain and timber—the latter being rafted down the Bistritza from the mountains to Galatz.

PIAZZA ARMERINA (Sicilian, Chiazza), a city of Italy, in the province of Caltanisetta, Sicily, on a hill 39 miles by road east-south-east of the city of that name, and 30 miles north of Terranova on the coast. It is a flourishing and populous place (17,038 inhabitants in the city and 19,591 in the commune in 1881), has an 18th-century cathedral, an episcopal palace, and

a communal library (1859). The church of Sant’ Andrea, less than a mile distant, has a fresco of date 1486, and other objects of interest.

Of the ancient city, which old local antiquaries held to have been built by a colony of refugees from Platea, little is known. The name sometimes occurs as Plutia. In 1095 Piazza was taken by Count Roger of Sicily, who bestowed onit a banner reputed to bear a likeness of the Virgin painted by St Luke. William I. destroyed the city in 1160, but it was rebuilt on a new site in 1163.

See Piazza antica, &c., by J. P. Chiaranda (a native), of which a Latin transla- tion by Mosheim is given in Grevius’s Thesaurus ant. et hist. Sic., vol, xii.

PIAZZI, Giuserps (1746-1826). See AsTRoNomy.

PICARDY (Za Picardie), one of the old feudal pro- vinces of France, was bounded N. by Hainault, Artois, and the English Channel, E. by Champagne, 8. by fle-de France, and W. by Normandy and the Channel. Northern Picardy (subdivided into Upper and Lower Picardy) was formed into one of the great military governorships of the kingdom, while Southern Picardy was included in the governorship of {le-de-France. Upper Picardy comprised the districts (pays) of Amienois, Santerre, Vermandois, and Thierache ; Lower Picardy Boulonnais, Ponthieu, Vimeu, and the Pays Reconquis (or Calais, Guines, Ardre, and Oye); and Southern Picardy Beauvaisis, Soissonais, and Laonnais. The territory is now divided among the depart- ments of Pas-de-Calais, Somme, Aisne, Oise, and Nord.

The name Picardy does not appear before the 13th century. Under the Romans the country formed part of Belgica Secunda, and was inhabited by various Belgian tribes—the Morini, Ambiani, Veromandui, Bellovaci, and Suessiones, whose names still appear in Amiens, Vermandois, Beauvais, and Soissons. After forming part of the kingdom of Soissons and of Neustria, Picardy (that is, the countship of Vermandois, &c.) passed to the counts of Flanders. It was finally united with the French crown by Louis XI.

See De Verité (1770-74), Dubelloy (1770), La Bourt (1840), Roger (1842-43), and Cocheris (1854), V. de Beanvillé has published a magnificent

Mecuetl de documents inédits concernant la Picardie, 1861, 1867, &c.

PICCINI, or Piccrnn1, Niccota (1728-1800), musical composer, was born at Bari in 1728, and educated, under Leo and Durante, at the Conservatorio di San Onofrio in Naples. His first opera, Le Donne dispettose, produced in 1754, won him a high reputation, which he maintained creditably until 1760, when he composed, at Rome, the chef Peewvre of his early life, La Cecchina, ossia la Buona Figliuola, an opera buffa which attained a European success, little less remarkable than that of Pergolesi's Serva Padrona. In a very short time this charming piece found its way not only to every theatre in Italy, but to Paris, to London, and to every great city on the Continent. It was even re- presented by marionettes ; and every new fashion was named alla Cecchina. Six years after this Piccini was invited to Paris. He knew nothing of French, but his librettist, Marmontel, assisted him to such good purpose that, after the production of his first French opera, Roland, he was carried home from the theatre in triumph. All his next works were successful; but, unhappily, the directors of the Grand Opéra conceived the mad idea of deliberately oppos- Ing him to Gluck, by persuading the two composers to treat the same subject—Iphigéme en Tawride—simultaneously. The Parisian public now divided itself into two rival parties,

which, under the names of Gluckists and Piccinists, carried on an unworthy and disgraceful war, equally ruinous to both artists, who would gladly have withdrawn from its violent excesses. That the final victory should be obtained by the Gluckists was inevitable ; for Piccini, though a brilliant ornament of the Italian school, was no match for his illustrious antagonist. Gluck's masterly [phigénie was first produced on May 18, 1779. Piccini's Iphagénie followed on January 23, 1781, and, though performed seventeen times, was afterwards consigned to oblivion. The fury of the rival parties continued unabated, even after Gluck's departure from Paris in 1780; and an attempt was after- wards made to inaugurate a new rivalry with Saccliini. Still, Piccini held a good position, and on the death of Gluck, in 1787, proposed that a public monument should be erected to his memory,—a suggestion which the Gluck- ists themselves declined to support. On the

breaking out of the Revolution in 1789, Piccini returned to Naples, where he was at first well received by King Ferdinand IV.; but the marriage of his daughter to a French demo- crat brought him into irretrievable disgrace. For nine years after this he maintained a precarious existence in Venice, Naples, and Rome; but, deriving new hope from the declaration of peace, he returned in 1798 to Paris, where the fickle public received him with enthusiasm, but left him to starve. He died at Passy, May 7, 1800.

Fétis gives a complete list of Piccini's works, including cighty

operas, and much choral music. It is certain that the list of operas is very far from complete.

PICENUM. See Iraty, vol. xiii. pp. 444, 447.

PICHEGRU, Cuartes (1761-1804), the conqueror of Holland, was born at Arbois in the Jura on February 16, 1761. His father was only a labourer, but the friars who managed the college of Arbois gave the boy a good educa- tion, and one of his masters, the Pére Patrault, took him to the military school of Brienne. In 1783 he entered the first regiment of artillery, where he rapidly rose to the rank of adjutant-sub-lieutenant. When the Revolution began he at once became leader of the extreme revolutionary party in Besangon, where he was stationed; and, when a regiment of volunteers of the department of the Gard marched through the city, the popular society recommended him for the rank of lieutenant-colonel, to which he was at once elected. 'Ihe fine condition of his regiment was soon remarked in the army of the Rhine, to which it was attached, and his organizing ability was made use of by an appointment on the staff, and finally by his promotion to the rank of general of brigade. In 1793, when Dumouriez had deserted, and all generals of noble birth had been super- seded, Carnot and Saint Just were sent to find roturier generals who could be successful ; Carnot discovered Jour- dan, and Saint Just discovered Hoche and Pichegru. In co-operation with Hoche and the army of the Moselle, Pichegru, now general of division and in command of the army of the Rhine, had to reconquer Alsace and reorganize the disheartened troops of the republic. They succeeded ; Pichegru, instead of fighting great battles, made use of the élan of his soldiers to win innumerable small engagements, and with Hoche forced the lines of Haguenau, and relieved Landau. In December 1793 he

superseded Hoche, became commander-in-chief of the united armies of the Rhine and Moselle, whence he was summoned to succeed Jourdan in the army of the North in February 1794. It was now that he fought his three great campaigns of one year. The English and Austrians held a strong position along the Sambre to the sea. After vainly attempting to break the Austrian centre, Pichegru suddenly turned their left, and defeated Clerfayt at Cassel, Menin, and Courtrai, while Moreau, his second in command, defeated Coburg at Turcoing in May 1794; then after a pause, during which

Pichegru feigned to besiege Ypres, he again dashed at Clerfayt and defeated him at Rousselaer and Hooglede, while Jourdan came up with the new army of the Sambre and Meuse, and utterly routed the Austrians at Fleurus on June 27, 1794. After a pause Pichegru began his second campaign by crossing the Meuse on October 18, and after taking Nimeguen drove the Austrians beyond the Rhine. Instead of going into winter-quarters, he prepared his army for a winter campaign. On December 28th he crossed the Meuse on the ice, and stormed the island of Bommel, then crossed the Waal in the same manner, and, driving the English before him, entered Utrecht on January 19, and Amsterdam on January 20, and soon occupied the whole of Holland. This grand feat of arms was marked by many points of interest, such as the capture of the Dutch ships which were frozen in the Helder by the French hussars, and the splendid discipline of the ragged battalions in Amster- dam, who, with the richest city of the Continent to sack, yet behaved with perfect self-restraint. This conquest aroused a storm of admiration in France. The former friend of Saint Just now offered his services to the Thermidorians, and after receiving from the Convention the title of Sauveur de la Patrie, subdued the sans-culottes of Paris, when they rose in insurrection against the Convention on 12 Germinal (1 April). Honoured by the republicans, and with the greatest military reputation in France, Pichegru then took command of the armies of the North, the Sambre and Meuse, and the Rhine, and crossing the Rhine in force took Mannheim in May 1795. When his fame was thus at its height he be- came a traitor, and for the promise of a marshal’s baton, the governorship of Alsace, the castle of Chambord, 1,000,000 francs in cash, and 200,000 francs a year, sold his army and his country. He allowed Jourdan to be

beaten before Mannheim, and betrayed all his plans to the enemy. His intrigues were suspected, and when he offered his resigna- tion to the Directory in October 1795 it was to his surprise promptly accepted. He retired in disgrace, but hoped to serve the royalist cause by securing his election to the Council of Five Hundred in May 1797. He was there the royalist leader, and planned a coup d'état, but on the 18th Fructidor he was arrested, and with fourteen others de- ported to Cayenne in 1797. Escaping, he reached London in 1798, and served in the archduke Charles's staff in the campaign of 1799. He went to Paris in August 1803 with Georges Cadoudal tohead a royalist rising against Napoleon; but, betrayed by a friend, he was arrested on February 28, 1804, and on April 15th was found strangled in prison. It has often been asserted, but without a shadow of proba- bility, as he was certain to have been condemned if brought to trial, that he was murdered by the orders of Napoleon.

Pichegru's campaigns of 1794 are marked by traits of an audacious genius which would not have disgraced Napoleon ; like him, he per- ceived the intrinsic fitness of the French soldiers for strokes of daring rather than for sustained battles. But a more thorough traitor never commanded anarmy. He flattered in turn Saint Just

and the Terrorists, the Thermidorians and the Directors, and seemed altogether unmoved by considerations of loyalty or patriotism.

There is no really good life of Pichegru; perhaps the best is Gassier's Vie du général Pichegru, Paris, 1814. For his treason, trial, and death consult Mont- gaillard's Mémotres concernant la trahison de Pichegru, 1804; Fauche-Borel's Mémoires , Savary, Mémoires sur la Mort de Pichegru, Paris, 1825; and G. Pierret, Pichegru, son Procés et son Mort, 1826,

PICKLES. The term pickie was originally applied to herrings preserved in salt brine, and by a pickle is still meant any preservative solution for either animal or vegetable food, that for flesh and fish being a brine of common salt, usually with saltpetre, sugar, and certain Spices added, while for vegetable substances vinegar is the principal pickling medium. Preparations of the latter description—vegetables saturated with vinegar—constitute the ordinary pickles of domestic use, Acid fruits and suc- culent fleshy vegetables are the proper materials for pickles.

The vegetable substances principally treated in this way are—beetroot, cabbage, cauliflower, gherkins (small cucum. bers), capers, French beans, onions, shallots, mushrooms, green peaches, mangoes, green walnuts, and several tropical fruits besides those mentioned. These are variously dealt with. Such as are soft and in themselves hot and spicy require simply to have vinegar of the proper strength poured over them, after the materials have been carefully selected, washed, and, if necessary, shred. Vegetable sub- stances of a harder and tougher character require first to be steeped in salt brine for some time, then washed, and the vinegar poured over them hot; and yet more leathery and fibrous vegetables must be softened with boiling brine, and then prepared with boiling vinegar. The vinegar employed may be either wood or strong malt vinegar; the former, being free from mucilage, has no tendency to fer- mentation, and can be obtained of greater strength than that prepared from malt. The vinegar is commonly flavoured with spices or aromatic herbs, flavours being chosen with special reference to the fruit or vegetable operated on. The flavouring materials, of which pepper, allspice, red pepper, cloves, horse-radish, garlic, and ginger are examples, are either added whole to the pickle or may be separately infused in the vinegar. For the preservation of pickles it is necessary that the jars in which they are stored should be secured with stoppers tied over with bladder and sealed, so as to render them as far as possible air-tight. It is of the utmost consequence that in the compounding and storing of these acid preparations no vessels or fittings of copper, brass, zinc, or lead, which yield, with acetic acid, poisonous products, should be used. Contamination with copper is especially to be avoided ; yet, as small quantities of acetate of copper give to pickled vegetables a fine, fresh green, natural colour, such an adulteration is not unfre- quently practised ; and some of the older cookery books actually recommend the use of copper vessels, and even the addition of small pieces of verdigris, to improve the colour of the pickles. As food adjuncts, pickles should be sparingly used, their chief merit being piquancy, though the acid they contain exercises a solvent influence on the more directly nutritious constituents of food, and, the added spices having a stimulating effect, they thus aid the process of digestion.

PICO, Giovanni, or Mrranpota (1463-1494), was the youngest son of Giovanni Francesco Pico, prince of Mirandola, a small territory about 30 Italian miles west of Ferrara, afterwards absorbed in the duchy of Modena.

‘The family was illustrious and wealthy, and claimed descent from Constantine. From his childhood Pico was remark- able for his quick and tenacious memory, and gave promise of his future distinction as a scholar. In his fourteenth year he went to Bologna, where he studied for two years, and was much occupied with the Decretals. The tradi- tional studies of the place, however, disgusted him 3 he was eager to know all the secrets of nature, and devoting him- self wholly to speculative learning he spent seven years wandering through all the schools of Italy and France and collecting a precious library. Like most men with brilliant faculties of acquisition and assimilation, Pico was constitu- tionally an eclectic ; and he owes his place in the history of learning and thought to the indefatigable spirit of inquiry which left him dissatisfied with current teaching and drove him to studies then new and strange. Besides Greek and Latin he knew Hebrew, Chaldee, and Arabic ; and his Hebrew teachers (Eliah del Medigo, Leo Abarbanel, and Jochanan Aleman—see L. Geiger, Johann Reuchlin [1871], p. 167) introduced him to the Kabbalah, which had great fascinations for one who loved all mystic and theosophic speculation. His learned wanderings ended at Rome, where he set forth for public disputation a list of nine hundred questions and conclusions in all branches of

q

PI C—

philosophy and theology. He remained a year in Rome, put the disputation he proposed was never held. He was an object of envy to many for the range of attainments, which earned him the title of the Phoenix of his age, and detractors found it easy to fix on his conclusions a suspicion of heresy. ‘The pope prohibited the little book in which they were contained, and Pico had to defend the impugned theses in an elaborate Apologia. His personal orthodoxy was, however, finally vindicated by a brief of Alexander VL, dated 18th June 1493. The suspected theses included such points as the following :—that Christ descended ad inferos not in his real presence but quoad effectum ; that no image or cross should receive Jatreca even in the sense allowed by Thomas; that it is more reasonable to regard Origen as saved than as damned ; that it is not in a man’s free will to believe or disbelieve an article of faith as he pleases. But perhaps the most startling

thesis was that no science gives surer conviction of the divinity of Christ than “magia” (2.c., the knowledge of the secrets of the heavenly bodies) and Kabbalah. Pico was the first to seek in the Kabbalah a proof of the Christian mysteries, and it was by him that Reuchlin was led into the same delusive ath.

: Pico had been up to this time a gay Italian nobleman ; le was tall, handsome, fair-complexioned, with keen grey eyes and yellow hair, anda great favourite with women. But his troubles led him to more serious thoughts ; he burned his amorous verses and gave himself wholly to sacred letters, publishing as the first fruits of his studies, in his twenty-eighth year, the Heptaplus, a mystical exposition of the creation. Next he planned a great sevenfold work against the enemies of the church, of which only the section directed against astrology was completed. After leaving Rome he again lived a wandering life, often visiting Florence, to which he was drawn by his friends Politian and Marsilius Ficinus, and where also he came under the influence of Savonarola. It was at Florence that he died in 1494. Three years before his death he parted with his share of the ancestral principality, and gave much of his wealth to the poor. He was now increasingly absorbed in ascetic exercises and religious meditation, and designed, when certain literary plans were completed, to give away all he had and wander barefoot through the world preach- ing Christ, or perhaps to join the preaching friars. But these plans were cut short by a fever which carried him off just at the time when Charles VIII. was at Florence. Pico’s attainments and the beauty of his character and piety produced a profound impression on his contemporaries, but his works, published by his nephew Giov. Fran. Pico, with a biography, at Bologna in 1496, and more than once reprinted, cannot now be read with much interest. The man himself, however, is still interesting, partly from his influence on Reuchlin and partly from the spectacle of a truly devout mind in the brilliant circle of half-pagan scholars of the Florentine renaissance.

PICTON, Str Tuomas (1758-1815), general under Wellington in the Peninsular War, was the younger son of Thomas Picton, of Poyston, Pembrokeshire, where he was bornin August 1758. In 1771 he obtained an ensign’s commission in the 12th regiment of foot, but he did not join until two years afterwards. The regiment was then stationed at Gibraltar, where

he remained until he was made captain in the 75th in January 1778, when he returned to England. The regiment was shortly after- wards disbanded, and in 1794 he embarked for the West Indies without an appointment, on the strength of a slight acquaintance with Sir John Vaughan, who made him his aide-de-camp and gave him a captaincy in the 17th foot. Shortly afterwards he was promoted major. Under Sir Ralph Abercromby he took part in the capture of St Lucia

and St Vincent. After the reduction of Trinidad he was made governor of the island, and in October 1801 he was gazetted brigadier-general. Resigning the governorship of Trinidad in 1803, he took part in an expedition against St Lucia and Tobago, and he held the governorship of the latter island until forced to resign it by public clamour in England. In 1807 he was put upon his trial for applying torture to a female slave in Trinidad to extort confession respecting a robbery, and a general verdict of guilty was returned. A new trial was, however, granted, and after protracted litigation the court, on 10th February 1810, ordered “the defendant’s recognizance to be respited until they should further order.” Previous to this he had taken part in the capture of Flushing, of which in 1809 he was made governor. At the special solicitation of Wellington he was named to the command of a division of the army in Spain, and during the Peninsular campaign he was placed in the post of honour, and so distinguished himself that he seven times received the thanks of the House of Commons. The capture of Badajoz was effected chiefly through his daring self-reliance and penetration in convert- ing what was intended to be only a feint attack into a real one. At the battle of Quatre Bras.on the 16th June 1815 he was dangerously wounded, and at Waterloo on the 18th, while repulsing with impetuous valour what Wellington denominated “ one of the most serious attacks made by the enemy on our position,” he was struck dead by a ball on the temple. A public monument was erected to his memory in St Paul’s Cathedral.

See Robinson, Life of Sir Thomas Picton, 2d ed., London, 1836.

PICTOR, Fasrus. See Fazius Prcror; also Livy, vol. xiv. p. 728-29.

PICTS. See ScoTLaNnp.

PIEDMONT (Italian, Piemonte ; Low Latin, Pedemons and Pedemontium), a region of northern Italy, bounded N. by Switzerland, W. by France, S. by Liguria, and E. by Lombardy. Physically it may be briefly described as the upper gathering-ground and valley of the river Po, enclosed on all sides except towards the Lombard plain by the vast semicircle of the Pennine, Graian, Cottian, Maritime, and Ligurian Alps. In 1859 it was divided into the four pro- vinces of Alessandria, Cuneo, Novara, and Torino (Turin), which still remain as provinces of the kingdom of Italy. In 1858 its population was 2,738,814.

The name of Lombardy was used as inclusive of the upper valley of the Po as late as 1091, when the house of Savoy lost most of its Italian possessions by the death of Adelaide; but in the time of Thomas I. (1177-1233), duke of Savoy, while the name Savoy was applied more especially to the ducal territory on the French side of the Alps, that of Piedmont came into use as a collective term for the territory on the Italian side. Thomas II. of Savoy, count (not Thomas II., count of Savoy, as he is often wrongly called), son of Thomas I., obtained (1255) part of Piedmont as an apanage from his brother Amadeus IV., and was appointed imperial vicar in Piedmont by Frederick II.; and, though he was afterwards obliged to renounce all the concessions he had received alike from pope and emperor, his son Thomas III. became the founder of the line which bore the title “Princes of Achaia and Morea, and lords of Pied- mont.” Louis, the last of these lords, dying in 1418, left his possessions to Amadeus VIII.

PIERCE, FRANKLIN (1804-1869), fourteenth president of the United States, was descended from an old yeoman family of New England, and was born at Hillsborough, New Hampshire, 23d November 1804. His father, Ben- jamin Pierce, served through the revolutionary war, after- wards attaining the rank of major-general, and became governor of his State. The son entered Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Maine, in 1820. Nathaniel Hawthorne, who was in the class below him, and was his intimate friend, mentions as his most notable characteristic at this time his “ fascination of manner, which has proved so magical in winning him an

unbounded popularity.” The same charac- teristic remained with him through life, and was the chief

cause of his success. his classmates, and, although he took at length a good position, he was not distinguished for scholarship. After leaving college in 1824 he studied law with Judge Wood- bury at Portsmouth, and afterwards in the law school at Northampton, Mass., and with Judge Parker at Amherst, and came to the bar in 1827. His first appearance as a pleader was a failure, but this only incited him to redoubled perseverance and determination. From the first he was a zealous supporter of the Democratic party, and he took an active part in promoting the election of Andrew Jackson tothe presidency. In 1829 he was elected by his native town to the State legislature, of which he was speaker in 1832-33. In the latter year he was chosen a member of Congress, and in 1837 he was elected to the senate of the United States. He displayed no striking oratorical gifts, but as a member of the judiciary and other committees gained general respect. In 1842 he resigned his seat in the senate, and returned to the practice of the law. His reputation at the bar was very high, his success being largely due to his power of identifying himself with his client’s cause, and his strong personal influence over a jury. In 1846 he was offered the position of attorney-general of the United States, but declined it. On the outbreak of the Mexican War he joined as a volunteer one of the companies raised in Concord. He was soon after appointed colonel of the 9th regiment, and in March 1847 brigadier-general. At the battle of Contreras on the 19th of August he was severely injured by the fall of his horse. At the close of the war in December 1847 he resigned his commission. In 1850 he was president of the convention for revising the constitution of New Hampshire. In 1852, as candi- date of the Democratic party, he was elected president of the United States by 254 electoral votes against 42 given to General Scott. The special feature of his inaugural address was the support of slavery in the United States, and the announcement of his determination that the Fugi- tive Slave Act should be strictly enforced. This was the keynote of his administration, and pregnant with vital consequences to the country. From it

came during his term the Ostend conference and “ manifesto,” the repeal of the Missouri compromise, and the troubles in Kansas and Nebraska, which crystallized the opposing forces into the Republican party, and led later to the great rebellion. President Pierce, surrounded by an able cabinet, among them Jefferson Davis as Secretary of War, firmly adhered throughout his administration to the pro-slavery party. He failed, notwithstanding, to obtain re-nonination, but was succeeded by James Buchanan, March 4, 1857, and retired to his home in Concord, N. H., after spending some years in Europe. During the war of 1861-65 his sympa- thies were wholly with the South, but, with the exception of delivering a strong speech at Concord in 1863, he took no very active part in politics. He died 8th October 1869.

Among several lives of General Pieree, published during his

eandidature for the presideney, special mention may be made of that by his friend Nathaniel Hawthorne.

PIERO (or PIETRO) DE’ FRANCESCHI (1415- 1492), a leading painter of the Umbrian school. This master is generally named Piero della Francesca (Peter, son of Frances), the tradition being that his father, a woollen- draper named Benedetto, had died before his birth, This is not correct, for the mother’s name was Romana, and the father continued living during many years of Piero’s career. The painter is also named Piero Borghese, from his birthplace, Borgo San Sepolcro, in Umbria. The true family name was, as above stated, Franceschi, and the family still exists under the name of Martini-F ranceschi.

Piero first received a scientific education, and became an adept in mathematics and geometry. This early bent

Tis abilities did not greatly impress |

of mind and course of study influenced to a large extent his development as a painter. He had more science than either Paolo Uccello or Mantegna, both of them his con- temporaries, the former older and the latter younger, Skilful in linear perspective, he fixed rectangular planes in perfect order and

measured them, and thus got his figures in true proportional height. He preceded and excelled Domenico Ghirlandajo in projecting shadows, and rendered with considerable truth atmosphere, the harmony of colours, and the relief of objects. He was naturally therefore excellent in architectural painting, and, in point of technique, he advanced the practice of oil-colouring in Italy.

The earliest trace that we find of Piero as a painter is in 1439, when he was an apprentice of Domenico Veneziano, and assisted him in painting the chapel of S. Egidio, in S. Maria Novella of Florence. Towards 1450 he is said to have been with the same artist in Loreto; nothing of his, however, can now be identified in that locality. In 1451 he was by himself, painting in Rimini, where a fresco still remains. Prior to this he had executed some exten- sive frescos in the Vatican; but these were destroyed when Raphael undertook on the same walls the Liberation of St Peter and other paintings. His most extensive ex- tant series of frescos is in the choir of S. Francesco in Arezzo,—the History of the Cross, beginning with legendary subjects of the death and burial of Adam, and going on to the entry of Heraclius into Jerusalem after the overthrow of Chosroes. This series is, in relation to its period, remarkable for effect, movement, and mastery of the nude, The subject of the Vision of Constantine is particularly vigorous in chiaroscuro; and a preparatory design of the same composition was so highly effective that it used to be ascribed to Giorgione, and might even (according to one authority) have passed for the handiwork of Correggio or of Rembrandt. A noted fresco in Borgo San Sepolcro, the Resurrection, may be later than this series ; it is preserved in the Palazzo de’ Conservatori. An important painting of the Flagellation of Christ, in the cathedral of Urbino, is later still, probably towards 1470. Piero appears to have been much in his native town of Borgo San Sepolcro from about 1445, and more especially after 1454, when he finished the series in Arezzo. He grew rich there, and there he died, and in October 1492 was buried.

Two statements made by Vasari regarding “ Piero della Franeesca” are open to much controversy. He says that Piero beeame blind at the age of sixty, which cannot be true, as he continued paint- ing some years later ; but scepticism need perhaps hardly go to the extent of inferring that he was never blind at all. Vasari also says that Fra Luea Pacioli, a diseiple of Piero

in scientific matters, defrauded his memory by appropriating his researches without acknowledgment. This is hard upon the friar, who constantly shows a great reverence for his master in the sciences. One of Pacioli's books was published in 1509, and speaks of Piero as still living. Henee it has been propounded that Piero lived to the patriarehal age of ninety-four or upwards ; but, as it is now stated that he was buried in 1492, we must infer that there is some mistake in relation to Pacioli's remark—perhaps the date of writing was several years earlier than that of publication. Piero was known to have left a manuscript of his own on perspeetive ; this remained undiseovered till a reeent date, when it was found by E. Harzen in the Ambrosian Library of Milan, ascribed to some supposititious " Pietro, Pittore di Bruges." The treatise shows a knowledge of perspective as dependent on the point of distanee.

In the London National Gallery are four paintings attributed to Piero de' Franceschi. One of them, a profile of Isotta da Rimini, may safely be rejeeted. The Baptism of Christ, which used to be the altarpiece of the Priory of the Baptist in Borgo San Sapolero, is an important example; and still more so the N ativity, with the Virgin kneeling, and five angels singing to musieal instruments. This is a very interesting and- charactcristie speeimen, and_ has

indeed been praised somewhat beyond its deservings on eesthetie grounds.

Piero's earlier style was energetic but unrefined, and to the last he laeked seleetness of form and feature. The types of his visages are peculiar, and the costumes (as especially in the Arezzo series)

singular. He used to work assiduously from clay models swathed in real drapery. Luca Signorelli was his pupil, and probably to some extent Perugino ; and his own influence, furthered by that of Signorelli, was potent over all Italy. Belonging as he does to the Umbrian school, he united with that style something of the Sienese and more of the Florentine mode.

PIETISM. Pietism is the name of an exceedingly influential, instructive, and interesting movement in the Lutheran Church which arose towards the

end of the 17th and continued during the first half of the following century. The name of Pietists was given to the ad- herents of the movement by its enemies, as a term of ridicule, like that of ‘‘ Methodists” somewhat later in England. The origin and nature of the movement itself inay be both traced to defects in the Lutheran Church of the time and to isolated efforts to correct them. That church had in the 17th century become a creed-bound theological and sacramentarian institution, which orthodox theologians ruled with almost the absolutism of the papacy. Correctness of creed had taken the place of deep religious feeling and purity of life. Christian faith had been dismissed from its seat in the heart, where Luther had placed it, to the cold regions of the intellect. The dogmatic formularies of the Lutheran Church had usurped the position which Luther himself had assigned to the Bible alone, and as a consequence they only were studied and preached, while the Bible was neglected in the family, the study, the pulpit, and the university. Instead of advocating the priesthood of all believers, so powerfully proclaimed by Luther, the Lutheran pastors had made themselves a despotic hierarchy, while they neglected the practical pastoral work of caring for the moral and spiritual welfare of their flocks. One of the consequences, as the Pietists believed, of all this was that immorality, irreligion, and heathenish ignorance of Christianity abounded in the land, and cried to heaven against an unfaithful church. As forerunners of the Pietists in the strict sense, not a few earnest and powerful voices had been heard bewailing the shortcomings of the church and advocating a revival of practical and devout Christianity. Amongst them were Jacob Boehme (Bemen), the theosophic mystic; Johann Arndt, whose principal devotional work on Z’rue Christiamty is universally known and appreciated ; Heinrich Miiller, who described the font, the pulpit, the confessional, and the altar as the four dumb idols of the Lutheran Church; the theologian Johann Valentin Andrea, the court chaplain of the landgrave of Hesse ; Schuppius, who sought to restore to the Bible its place in the pulpit ; and Theophilus Grossgebauer of Rostock, who from his pulpit and by his writings raised “the alarm cry of a watchman in Sion.” The direct originator of the movement was Philip Jacob Spener. Born in Alsace January 13, 1635, as a child trained in piety under the influence of a devout godmother and books of devotion recommended by her, particularly Arndt’s Zrue Christianity, accustomed to hear the sermons of a pastor who preached the Bible more than the Lutheran creeds, he was early convinced of the necessity of a

moral and religious reformation of the German church. He studied theology, with a view to the Christian ministry, at Strasburg, where the professors at the time were more inclined to practical Christianity than to theological disputation. He afterwards spent a year in Geneva, and was powerfully influenced by the strict moral life and rigid ecclesiastical discipline prevalent there, and also by the preaching and the piety of the Waldensian professor Antoine Leger and the converted Jesuit preacher Jean de Labadie. During a: stay in Tiibingen he read Grossgebauer's Alarm Cry, and in 1666 he entered upon his first pastoral charge at Frankfort-on-the-Main, profoundly impressed with a sense of the danger of the Christian life being sacrificed to zeal for rigid orthodoxy. Pietism, as a

distinct movement in the German church, was then origin- ated by Spener by religious meetings at his house (collegia pretatis), at which he repeated his sermons, expounded passages of the New Testament, and induced those present to join in conversation on religious questions that arose. These meetings were largely attended, produced a great sensation, and were soon imitated elsewhere. They gave rise to the name '" Pietists." In 1675 Spener published his Pia Desideria, or Harnest Desires for a Reform of the True Evangelical Church, the public literary exposition and defence of his position and aims. In this publication Spener made six proposals as the best means of restoring the life of the church :—(1) the earnest cultivation of a more general and thorough familiarity with the Holy Scriptures by means of private meetings, ecclesiole in ecclesia; (2) a practical carrying out of the principle of the universality of the Christian priesthood by a participation of the laity in the spiritual government of the church and by the holding of family worship; (3) a serious laying to heart of the fact that a knowledge of Christianity must be attended by the practice of it as its indispensable sign and supplement ; (4) the conversion of the habit of making merely didactic, and often bitter, attacks on the heterodox and unbelievers into a treatment of them instigated by genuine affection and animated by the simple desire of doing them good; (5) a reorganization of the theological training of the universities, in such a way that young divines should be urged not only to diligence in their studies but above all to lead devout lives; and (6) a different style of preaching, namely, in the place of pleasing rhetoric, the

implanting of Christianity in the inner or new man, the soul of which is faith, and its effects the fruits of life. This work produced a great impression throughout Germany. Although large num- bers of the orthodox Lutheran theologians and pastors were deeply offended by it, its complaint and its demands were both too well justified to admit of their being point- blank denied. A large number of pastors at once practi- cally adopted Spener's proposals. In 1686 Spener accepted an appointment to the court-chaplaincy at Dresden, which opened to him a wider though more difficult sphere of labour. He succeeded in reviving the catechetical instruc- tion of the young in religious truth in Saxony. In Leipsic, where Scriptural exegesis had almost wholly disappeared, a society of young theologians was formed under his influence, for the learned study and devout application of the Bible. Three magistri belonging to that society, one of whom was August Hermann Francke, subsequently the founder of one of the noblest works of Pietism—the orphanage at Halle—commenced courses of expository lectures on the Scriptures of a practical and devotional character and in the German language, which were zealously frequented by both students and townsmen. The lectures aroused, however, the ill-will of the other theologians and pastors of Leipsic, and their promoters, charged with having slighted the established worship of the land as well as true learning, were ordered to discon- tinue them. Francke and his friends left the city, and with the aid of Christian Thomasius and Spener founded the new university of Halle, which became the chief home of the Pietists, and the object of the jealousy and unspar- ing attacks of the older universities of Wittenberg and Leipsic. The theological chairs in the new university were filled in complete conformity with Spener's proposals. The main difference between the new Pietistic school and the orthodox Lutherans was not one affecting doctrine directly, inasmuch as Spener adhered in every point to the Lutheran faith. The difference arose from his conception of Christianity as chiefly consisting in a change of heart and consequent holiness of life, while the orthodox Lutherans

Q4 rin—FPis

of the time made it to consist mainly in correctness of doctrine. At the same time, the greater importance which he attached to the religious life and to practical godliness than to correctness of belief, and his restoration of the

Bible to its place of superiority over the creeds, involved numerous possible departures from and advances beyond the Luther- anism of the 17th century. Again, the earnestness with which he had insisted on the necessity of a new birth, and on a separation of Christians from the world, led to exaggera- tion and fanaticism among followers less distinguished than himself for wisdom and moderation. Many Pietists soon maintained that the new birth must always be preceded by agonies of repentance, and that only a regenerated theo- logian could teach theology, while the whole school shunned allcommon worldly amusements, such as dancing, the theatre, and public games, and affected a severe austerity with re- gard to dress, meals, and conversation. Through these extravagances a reactionary movement arose at the begin- ning of the 18th century, one of the most distinguished leaders of which was Loescher, superintendent at Dresden. But it was only as the opponents of Pietism gradually ceased their attacks that the movement lost its strength and by degrees handed over its vital truths and truest work to various representatives of a new and better age of the church. As a distinct movement it had run its course before the middle of the 18th century. The spirit of the school of Spener long made itself felt amongst the Pro- testants of north and south Germany, and particularly at Halle. Pietism could claim to have contributed largely to the revival of Biblical studies in Germany, and to have given a Biblical basis once more to theology. It also made religion once more an affair of the heart and the life, and not merely of the intellect, to which theologians had reduced it. It likewise vindicated afresh the rights of the Christian laity in regard to their own beliefs and the work of the church, against the assumptions and despotism of an arrogant clergy. It thus revived eternal elements of Christianity that had been long neglected, and was a distinct agent in preparing the way for modern advance in religion and theology. But it sprang from a temporary necessity, and, like similar phases of Christian life, lacked the philosophical and scholarly depth, the human and secular breadth, and the progressive impetus of a per- manent and world-subduing religious movement.

Spener’s Pietism in Westphalia, on the Rhine, in Wiirtemberg, and at Halle and Berlin, and whieh at the commencement worked to

Amongst older works on Pictism are Walch’s [Historische und theologische Ein- lettung ™m die Religionstreitigkeiten der Evangelisch-Lutherischen

Kirche, 17380 ; Tholuck ‘8 Geschichte des Pietismus und des ersten Stadiums der Aufkldrung, 1865; TRE Schmid, Die Geschichte des Pietismus, 1863; Goebel’s Geschichte des christlichen

(J. FS.)

PIETRO. See Prero.

PIG. See Switz.

PIGALLE, Jean Bapriste (1714-1785), French sculp- tor, was born at Paris on 26th January 1714. Although he failed to obtain the Great Prize, after a severe struggle he entered the Academy and became one of the most popular sculptors of his day. His earlier work, such ag Child with Cage (model at Sévres) and Mercury Fastening his Sandals (Berlin, and lead cast in Louvre), is less com- monplace in character than that of his maturer years, but his statue of Voltaire (Institut) and his tombs of Comte d’Harcourt (Notre Dame) and of Marshal Saxe (Lutheran church, Strasburg) are good specimens of French sculpture in the 18th century. He died on 21st August 1785.

See Tarbé, Vie et cuv. de Pigalle; Suard, Eloge de Pigalle; Mélanges de littérature ; Dussieux, Les artistes francais a létranger; Barbet de Jouy, Sculptures mod. Louvre.

PIGAULT-LEBRUN, Cuartes ANTOINE GUILLAUME, sometimes called PicauLT DE 1’Eprnoy (1753-1835), the chief fiction writer of the first empire, and the most popular light novelist of France before Paul de Kock, was born at Calais (he is said to have traced his pedigree on the mother’s side to Eustache de St Pierre) on April 8, 1753. His youth was decidedly stormy. He twice carried off young ladies of some position, and was in con- sequence twice imprisoned by lettre de cachet. His first love, a Miss Crawford, the daughter of an English merchant whose office Pigault had entered, died almost immediately after her elopement ; the second, Mademoiselle de Salens, he married. Besides his commercial and criminal experiences, he was a soldier in the queen’s guards. an actor, and a teacher of French. At the breaking out of the great war he re-enlisted and fought at

Valmy. It should be said, however, that the romantic incidents of his life are differ-

ently related by different authorities, and are open to not

a little suspicion, Although he had tried dramatic writing, he does not seem to have attempted prose fiction till he was forty, but from that time he was a fertile writer of novels for nearly thirty years. In his old age he took to graver work, and executed an abridgment of French history in eight volumes, besides some other work. His Guores Completes were published in twenty volumes between 1822 and 1824. He died on July 24, 1835. Pigault's numer- ous novels, though still occasionally reprinted, are not much read; and none of them is much better or worse than any other. Their style is insignificant, and their morality very far from severe. But Pigault deserves the credit, such as it is, of being almost the first writer of numerous light novels calculated to hit, and which suc- ceeded in hitting, the taste of his day. Nor was he by any means without wit. As almost the father of a kind of literature which has since developed itself enormously, and which, whatever may be its intrinsic merits, has main- tained and increased its popularity for a century, Pigault- Lebrun deserves a certain place in literary history. PIGEON,} French Pigeon, Italian Piccione and Pipione, Latin Pipio, literally a nestling-bird that pipes or cries out, a "Piper"—the very name now in use among Pigeon-fanciers, The word Pigeon, doubtless of Norman introduction as a polite term, seems to bear much the same relation to Dove, the word of Anglo-Saxon origin, that mutton has to sheep, beef to ox, veal to calf, and pork to bacon ; but, as before stated (Dove, vol. vii. p. 379), no sharp distinction can be drawn between the two, and the collective members of the group Columbe are by ornitho- logists ordinarily called Pigeons. Perhaps the best known species to which the latter name is exclusively given in common speech? is the Wild Pigeon or Passenger-Pigeon

' See furthcr under the heading Pourrtry. * It may be observed that the " Rock-Pigeons " of Anglo-Indians are SAND-GROUSE (¢.v.), and the "Cape Pigeon" of sailors isa PETREL (9.2).

ST — em tts Et Th eats

of North America, Mctopistes migratortus, which is still |

plentiful in many parts of Canada and the United States, though no longer appearing in the countless numbers that it did of old, when a flock seen by Wilson was estimated to consist of more than 2230 millions. The often-quoted descriptions given by him and Audubon of Pigeon-haunts in the then “ back woods ” of Kentucky, Ohio, and Indiana need not here be reproduced. That of the latter was declared by Waterton to be a gross exaggeration if not an entire fabrication; but the critic would certainly have changed his tone had he known that, some hundred and fifty years earlier, Passenger-Pigeons so swarmed and ravaged the colonists’ crops near Montreal that a bishop of his own church was constrained to exorcise them with holy water, as if they had been demons. The rapid and sustained flight of these Pigeons is also as well-established as their former overwhelming abundance—birds having been killed in the State of New York whose crops con- tained undigested grains of rice that must have been not long before plucked and swallowed in South Carolina or Georgia. The Passenger-Pigeon is about the size of a common Turtle-Dove, but with a long, wedge-shaped tail. The male is of a dark slate-colour above, and purplish-bay beneath, the sides of the neck being enlivened by gleaming violet, green, and gold. The female is drab-coloured above and dull white beneath, with only a slight trace of the brilliant neck-markings.?

Among the multitudinous forms of Pigeons very few can here be noticed. A species which seems worthy of attention as being one that might possibly repay the trouble of domestication, if any enterprising person would give it the chance, is the Wonga-wonga or White-fleshed Pigeon of Australia, Leucosarcia picata, a bird larger than the Ring-Dove, of a slaty-blue colour above and white beneath, streaked on the flanks with black. It is known to breed, though not very freely, in captivity, and is said to be excellent for the table. As regards flavour, however, those who have been so fortunate as to eat them declare that the Fruit-Pigeons of the genus Z’reron (or Vinago of some authors) and its allies surpass all birds. These inhabit tropical Africa, India, and especially the Malay Archipelago; but the probability of domesticating any of them is very remote. Hardly less esteemed are the

Pigeons of the genus Ptilopus and its kindred forms, which have their headquarters in the Pacific Islands, though some occur far to the westward, and also in Australia. Among them are found the most exquisitely-coloured of the whole Family. There may be mentioned the strange Nicobar Pigeon, Calenas, an inhabitant of the Indian Archipelago, not less remarkable for the long lustrous hackles with which its neck is clothed than for the structure of its gizzard, which has been described by Prof. Flower (Proc. Zool. Society, 1860, p. 330), though this peculiarity is matched or even surpassed by that of the same organ in the Phenorrhina goliath of New Caledonia (Rev. de Zoologie, 1862, p. 138) andin the Carpophaga latrans of Fiji. In this last the surface of the epithelial lining is beset by horny conical processes, adapted, it is believed, for crushing the very hard fruits of Onocarpus vitiensis on which the bird feeds (Proc. Zool. Society, 1878, p. 102), The modern giants of the group, consisting of about half a dozen species of the genus Goura and known as

1 Voyages du Baron de la Hontan dans l Amerique septentrionale, ed. 2, Amsterdam, 1705, vol. i. pp. 93, 94. In the first edition, pub- lished at The Hague in 1703, the passage, less explicit in details but to the same effect, is at p. 80. Theauthor’s letter, describing the cir- eumstance, is dated May 1687.

% There are several records of the occurrence in Britain of this Pigeon, but in most cases the birds noticed cannot be supposed to have found their own way hither. One, which was shot in Fife in 1825, may, however, have crossed the Atlantic unassisted by man.

Crowned-Pigeons, belong to New Guinea and the neighbour- ing islands, but want of space forbids further notice of their characteristics, of which the most conspicuous are their large size and the reticulated instead of scutellated cover- ing of their “ tarsi.”

A very distinct type of Pigeon is that represented by Didunculus strigirostris, the “ Manu-mea” of Samoa, still believed by some to be the next of kin to the Dopo (vol. vii. p. 321), but really presenting only a superficial resemblance in the shape of its bill to that effete form, from

which it differs osteologically quite as much as do other Pigeons (Phil. Transactions, 1869, p. 349). It re- mains to be seen whether the Papuan genus Otediphaps, of which several species are now known, may not belong rather to the Didunculide than to the true Columbidx (see OrniTHoLoey, vol. xviii. p. 46).

At least 500 species of Pigeons have been described, and many methods of arranging them suggested. That by Garrod (Proc. Zool. Society, 1874, pp. 249-259) is one of the most recent ; but, for reasons before assigned (vol. xviii. p. 40), it is not satisfactory. Temminck's great work on the group with its continuation by M. Florent-Provost, already mentioned (vol. xviii. p. 11), is of course wholly out of date, as also Selby's more modest Natural History of the Columbide (forming vol. ix. of Jardine's Vaturalist's Library). Schlegel's catalogue of the specimens contained in the museum at Leyden (Muséum des Pays-Bas, livr. 10, 1873) contains much useful information, but a new monograph of the Pigeons, containing all the recent discoveries, is much wanted. A. N.)

PIGMENTS are coloured powders which, when mixed with oil, water, or other fluids, in which they are in- soluble, form paints. They are distinguished from dyes and washes by their entire insolubility in the media in which they are mixed, whereas dye-stuffs are tinctorial sub- stances applied in solution. Insoluble colours, when used in printing textile fabrics, are distinguished as pigment colours. The sources of materials available as pigments are numerous; many are native coloured earths, others are separated from native metallic compounds and other mineral substances; a large number are artificially pre- pared from inorganic—principally metallic—sources ; an important class consist of animal and vegetable colouring principles, forming with earthy bodies insoluble powders called lakes; and the dye-stuffs artificially obtained from organic sources are also similarly utilized. In fact all substances coloured or neutral, capable of being presented in the form of impalpable powder, which at the same time are insoluble and unalterable under ordinary atmospheric influences, may be regarded as possible pigments. But there are many qualities practically essential in a pigment which limit the range of available substances. A con- sideration of the first importance is the "body" or cover- ing power of a pigment,—that is, the property of fully covering and concealing with an

opaque coating the surface over which it is spread. It is also important that the material should work well in, and be unaffected in appear- ance and constitution by the medium with which it is made into a paint, and that it should spread in an even uniform coat, which should dry well and quickly in the air and adhere firmly to the surface to which it is applied. When dry it should possess durability and resist change under the action of weather and other influences to which paint is exposed, These are the principal qualities re- quisite in paints in their important function of preserva- tive coatings for the surfaces to which they are applied. On their artistic side, as decorative and pictorial materials, pigments should possess purity and brightness of colour with intensity of tinting power, capacity for mixing or coming into contact with other colours without injuriously

affecting these or being themselves deteriorated, and per- manence and unalterability of tone after long exposure. Pigments being so numerous and so diverse in their origin, the industries connected with their production and preparation are of necessity varied in character. Many of the substances employed being used in large quantities in other important industrial relations, as well as for paints, are manufactured on a large scale and constitute the basis of considerable chemical industries, as, for example, the manufacture of white lead, Prussian blue, ultramarine, the chrome materials, &c. In other cases the materials require no preparation other than that given to them by the paint-grinder or the artists' colourman, according to the purpose for which the substances are to be prepared.

The colour trade embraces two distinct departments :—

that of the paint-grinder, who manufactures and com- pounds the pigments used by artisans, house-painters, and

paper-stainers ; and that of the artists' colourman, who |

prepares and supplies the finer, more brilliant, and exten- sive assortment of pigments used for artistic purposes.

The pigments employed for pottery painting and glass and |

enamel work are a special class of preparations to suit the requirements of these trades. Leaving out of account the chemical reactions involved in preparing raw materials, the ordinary manufacturing operations connected with the preparation of painters' colours are simple, and consist essentially of a careful system of grinding. Formerly, when painters ground their own colours, a stone slab and muller formed the entire apparatus ; but now, when paint- grinding has become a separate industry, efficient machinery has been devised for grinding and its collateral operations, Bulky and rough colours such as whiting and common ochres are dry-ground under heavy edge stones which revolve in a strong iron bed. Ordinary dry colours requiring to be pulverized with more care are mixed to a thin cream with water, which is fed into and ground principally between a pair of millstones dressed and mounted like the ordinary horizontal stones of a flour mill, but smaller in diameter. For fine colours the pig- ment so ground is levigated, or floated into a vat in which the heavier particles sink, and the lighter, more finely divided portion is run into another vessel at a lower level, where it is deposited as a fine sediment. The sediment is dried in a uniformly heated stove, and when thoroughly dry is again pulverized under a pair of edge stones, and sifted or winnowed ; so- treated it is ready for use as dry colour. The greater proportion of the white lead and the other common oil paints are ground in oil. For this purpose the raw material is mixed in a machine with ojl (sometimes boiled) to the consistence of a stiffish paste, and in this state it is ground in horizontal paint millstones, after which it requires no further preparation than the necessary thinning with oil when to be used for painting. There are many varieties of apparatus used for grinding both dry and oil colours.

The artists' colourman grinds his pigments with much greater labour, and selects his materials in a more care- ful manner, than is necessary in the case of the ordinary paint-grinder. Pigments for artistic painting in oil are ground in that medium to a definite consistency, and are put up for use in convenient compressible tubes of tin. For water colours the pigments are prepared principally in the form of small indurated cakes or as " moist colours " contained in small porcelain dishes. Water colours may also be obtained thin in tin tubes like oil colours, or as "pastilles," which are thin round cakes intermediate in condition between cake and moist colours,

In enumerating the principal commercial pigments it is usual and convenient to classify them according to their

tints. They are not, as a rule, definite chemical com- |

Pic Westy ts

pounds: many indeed are mixed substances prepared by processes and according to recipes known only to theip inakers; and, while the same commercial name is fre. quently given to substances quite dissimilar in character, the confusion is further increased by applying many different titles to substances which are practically identi, cal. Thus white lead is known by at least a dozen names,

and distinct and even conflicting qualities are by autho.

rities attributed to this one substance under its various aliases.

It would be impossible to catalogue all the paints met with in commercial lists, and it would serve no good purpose to enumerate the whole of the pigments which might be and are occasionally used. Premising that details regarding many of the substances will be found under the heading of the metals, &c., whence they are derived, we shall here simply classify, according to their colour, the principal well-recognized pigments of commerce, adding brief remarks regarding each class.

WHITE PicmMENTs.—The whites are the most important pigments used by painters, forming as they do the basis or body of nearly all paints, excepting only certain dark hues. Good available whites are limited in number, and all of real importance are included in the following list :—white lead, a carbonate of lead (chiefly); zine white, oxide of zinc, called also Chinese white; antimony white, oxide of antimony; fixed white, sulphate of baryta; “ silicate” white, sulphate of baryta, or strontia and sulphide of zinc; mineral white, powdered gypsum (with alumina it forms satin white); chalk or whiting carbonate of lime: and china clay, silicate of alumina.

White Lead (see Lean, vol. xiv. p. 878) is the most important of all pigments, and forms the basis of nearly all ordinary oil paints, which, when coloured, consist of white lead tinted with the necessary coloured pigments, It possesses the greatest amount of body or covering power, and works beautifully in oil, with which it partially combines, drying as a hard homogeneous adherent plaster. On the other hand it is a most poisonous body, very injurious to the persons connected with many of the processes by which it is prepared. As an oil colour it darkens gradually in an atmosphere containing traces of sulphur; it cannot be used at all as a water or distemper colour; and it acts injuriously on the colour of several important pigments. Notwithstanding these drawbacks no white has yet been made that can compete with white lead, although paint manufacturers go far to provide a substitute by adulterating it to such an extent that the white lead frequently bears only a small ratio to the adulterant. Baryta white is the ordinary adulterant, and among respectable manufacturcrs the intermixture is a well-understood fact, and the relative proportions of white lead and baryta are regulated by a series of grades passing from “genuine ” to No. 5 or No. 6 white lead. Many efforts have been made to substitute for ordinary white lead lead carbonates made by other processes, and other lead salts such as the oxychloride (Pattinson’s), sulphate, tungstate, antimoniate, &c.; but none of these has proved permanently successful.

Zinc White.—Next in importance to white lead, is an oxide of zinc prepared by the sublimation and combustion of metallic zine. The pigment is deficient in covering power and it dries but slowly when mixed with oil. On the other hand it is not injurious to health, its purity of tone is not affected by sulphurous air, it does

| not affect tints added to it or with which it comes in contact, and

it can be used in water as well asin oil. Like white lead it is very much adulterated, and generally with the same ageut—baryta white.

Baryta White plays an important independent part as well as acting so extensively as a sophisticator of other pigments. It is prepared by grinding to a fine powder the pure white native sulphate of baryta (heavy spar), and the same substance artificially prepared is known as permanent white or blanc fizé. The artificial preparation is much superior, as a pigment, to the

powdered spar ; but both are deficient in body, notwithstanding which they are of great value to paper-stainers and for distemper painting.

Under the uame of Charlton White or silicate paints, Mr J. B. Orr prepares a range of white paints which have come into exten- sive use. The pigment as originally prepared under Mr Orr's patent of 1874 consisted of an intimate mixture of artificial sul- phate of baryta and sulphide of zinc in certain proportions, made by the double decomposition of solutions of barium sulphide and sulphate of zinc. In 1881 a patent was secured by Mr Orr fora combination in which strontia takes the place of baryta. It 1s claimed for these pigments that they possess body greater than white lead, that they are non-poisonous, and that with certain modifications in the manufacture they can be made quite as valuable for distemper painting as for oil colours.

ra'G M

The oxides of autimony, tin, bismuth, &c., form white pigments ; but these possess no peculiarities which render them valuable for painters' use. The carbonate of lime, more or less pure and in various degrces of pulverulence under sevcval names, such as Chalk White, Paris White, Whiting, &c., is very extensively used in distemper work for walls, roofs, &c., and in paper-staining, occupy- ing in these relations the important place held by white lead in oil painting. Mineral white or satin white consists of powdcred

psum and alumina, a preparation very largely used by paper- stainers for their glossy satin bodies. There are several other white earths of relatively little importance as pigments.

Buiuze Prements.—The list of blue colours of real iinportance is not extensive, comprising, as principal items, ultramarine, Prussian blue, the cobalt blues, andindigo. The following list embraces the names and varieties ordinarily recognized in commerce :—ultra- marine (native), powdered lapis lazuli; ultramarine (artificial), silicates of alumina and soda with sulphide of sodium ; Prussian blue, cyanide of iron; Paris blue, modified Prussian blue; Antwerp blue, fine Prussian blue; smalts, a cobalt glass; azure blue, a preparation of smalts ; cobalt or Thenard's blue, sub-phosphate of cobalt; cxruleum, stannate of cobalt and sulphate of lime ; mountain blue, native carbonate of copper; lime blue, earbonate of copper

and lime; Verditer or Bremen blue, hydrated oxide of copper; indigo from species of Indigofera ; indigo carmine, prepara- tion of indigo.

Apart from the important colours ULTRAMARINE, Prussian Buvz, and Inp1eo, separately noticed, these blues, which are not of much value for painters, owe their colour principally to cobalt and copper. ‘The principal cobalt colour is Smaits, called also strewing smalts, cobalt glass, zaffre, Saxony blue, &c. It is prepared by smelting together the mineral arsenide of cobalt, pure sand, and carbonate of potash into a glass. The molten glass is cast into cold water, then ground fine and levigated. Shalis is chiefly available for distemper and fresco painting, and is not much used as anoil colour. Azure Blue is generally recognized as a preparation of smalts, but the name is given to several compounds. Cxrulewm is a light blue colour of durable quality with a greenish tinge, consisting of a combination of cobalt oxide with stannic acid; and Cobalt Blue, the subphosphate of cobalt, a colour discovered by Thenard, possesses a purple tinge. Carbonate of copper, either in the form of the mincral azuritc or artificially prepared, is a principal source of the copper blues, which, however, possess little value as pigments owing to their tendency to blacken under exposure. Blue Verditer, a greenish blue which passes into green verditcr, is a hydrated oxide of copper.

Yettow PicmuntTs.—The following list includes the ordinary yellow colours of commerce :—ochres and sienna earth, native earths tinted with iron; Mars yellow, hydrated ferric oxide ; chromes, chromates of lead and other metals; massicot, protoxide of lead; Naples yellow, antimoniate of lead; mineral yellow, basic chloride of lead; aureolin, nitrate of potassium and cobalt ; cadmium yellow, sulphide of cadmium ; orpimcnt, trisulphide of arsenic ; Indian yellow, urio-phosphate of calcium; gamboge, resin of Garcinia ; Dutch pink, a vegetable lake ; yellow lakes.

Of these colours the more important are the ochres and the various combinations containing chromium. The Yellow Ochres are native earths coloured with hydrated ferric oxide, the brownish ycllow substance that colours, and is deposited from, highly ferruginous water. These ochres are of two kinds—one having an argillaceous basis, while the other is a calcareous earth, the argillaccous variety being in general the richer and

more pure in colour of thetwo. Both kinds are widely distributed, fine qualitics being found in Oxford- shirc, the Isle of Wight, near Jena and Nuremberg in Germany, and in France in the departments of Yonne, Cher, and Nievre. The original colour of these ochres can be modified and varied into browns and reds of more or less intensity by calcination. The high heat expels the water of hydration from the iron oxide, changing it into red ferric oxide. The nature of the associated earth also influences the colour assumed by an ochre under calcina- tion, aluminous ochres developing red and violet tints, while the calcarcous varieties take brownish red and dark brown hues. The well-known ochre Terra da Sienna which in its raw state is a dull-coloured ochre, becomes when burnt a fine warm mahogany brown hue highly valued for artistic purposes. Yellow ochres are also artificially prepared—Mars Yellow being either pure hydrated ferric oxide or an intimate mixture of that substance with an argillaceous or caleareous earth, and such compounds by careful calcination can be transformed into Mars Orange, Violet, or Red, all highly important, stable, and reliable tints. The metal chromium owes its name to the intense coloration produced by the combination of its oxide, chromic acid, with various metals and alkaline earths. Several of thesc salts are soluble, but those which form pigments are insoluble compounds. The principal chrome pigments—the various shades of lemon and yellow chrome deepen- Ing to orange tints—are composed of the ncutral chromate of lead, the difference of hue depending on the greater or smaller proportion of Icad used in the preparation. The basic chromate of lead has a

dcep orange colour passing into the minium-red-like hue of chrome red. Strontia Chrome, the chromate of strontium, is a pale lemon pigment of fine quality and permanence. With zinc, chromic acid forms two combinations, neutral and basic, both possessed of an intense yellow colour; and chromate of barium also furnishes a useful yellow colour. Lead itself, without chromium, is the basis of several valuable yellows. Massicot, the protoxide of lead, isa clear yellow pigment deficient in body. Naples Yellow, a colour highly esteemed by early artists, is an antinioniate of lead which in early times was obtained from native sources; and Mineral Yellow is an oxychloride of lead. The sulphide of cadmium forms the fine durable

Cadmium Ycllow, a eolour now much appreciated for artistic use. The arsenical yellow, Orpiment, is now little used as a pigment, although formerly, under such names as King's Yellow, Imperial Yellow, and Chinese Yellow, it was held in high esteem by artists. Aureolin, a nitrate of potassium and cobalt, is a eolour of recent origin which has come into high favour among artists. Indian Yellow is a colour of animal origin of no perma- nencc, and Gamboge is a gum resin yiclded by trees of the genus Garcinia, principally employed as a water colour. The yellow lakes are comparatively unimportant, but some, known, rather absurdly,as Dutch, English, or Italian Pink, are largely used in paper-staining.

RED PIGMENTs embrace two distinct series of substances—the reds of inorganic origin, and red lakes obtained from animal and vegetable colours. The principal commercial vavictics are as follows :—rouge, Turkey red, and Indian red, red ferric oxide ; Venetian red, ochreous ferric oxide; ochres, earths coloured by ferric oxide; vermilion and cinnabar, sulphide of mercury ; antimony vermilion, red sulphide of antimony; Derby red, a form of chrome red ; red lead or minium, red oxide of lead ; chrome red, basic chromate of lead ; realgar, bisulphide of arsenic ; madder lake, alizarin and alumina; madder carmine, preparation of aliza- rim; carmine lake, cochineal red and aluinina; carmine, prepara- tion of cochineal ; wood lakes, from various red dyewoods.

The principal mincral reds owe their colour to oxides of iron and to compounds of mercury. The reds due to iron are closely allied to the yellow ochres and other ferruginous pigments. As already explained in connexion with these yellows, tints passing through orange to deep purple reds are obtained by calcination of yellow hydrated ferric oxide, and in this way a great variety of ruddy and red tints are prepared. The proportion of ferric oxide in these compounds ranges from pure oxide to combinations in natural ochres eontaining not more than 2 or 3 per cent. of iron. touge or Mars Red, Crocus, Indian Red, and Turkey Red are all pure ferric oxide, varying in depth of tint from having undergone different degrees of calcination, or from being made from different artificial or natural sources. The other iron reds are all of the nature of ochres—some of them, such as Venetian Ted, being artificial compounds. These reds form exceedingly useful durable colours which do not injuri- ously affect the tints with which

they are associated. Of red colours from mercury, Cinnabar and Vermilion are the most import- ant, the former being the native and the latter an artificial sul- phide of mercury (see MERcuRY, vol. xvi. p. 34). Vermilion is one of the most pure, brilliant, solid, and durable of all colours. Its beauty is largely affected by the smoothness of the powder to which it is reduced, and in this respect that obtained from China is of the highest excellence. Being a costly pigment, vermilion is freely adulterated with other reds, a fraud easily detected by the perfect volatility of the genuine substance. From mercury com- bined with iodine is prepared a pigment of unequalled vivacity and brilliance, Jodine Scarlet, but unfortunatcly as fugitive as it is bright, and consequently not available for work requiring perma- nence. The principal red colour from lead is Miniwm or Led Lead, a pigment of great antiquity obtained as a product of the oxidation of massicot, or by the calcination and oxidation of white lead. It is orange red in colour, of good opacity and body, but it has the fault of white lead and lead colours generally, blackening in con- taminated air and injuring colours with which it comes in contact. By itself it is a valuable paint for first coating exposed iron surfaces to prevent their oxidation, and it is an excellent dryer, on which account it is much used in preparing boiled oil for painters. Chrome Red, a basic chromate of lead known also as Persian or Derby Red, is a brilliant pigment ranging in tone from orange to a deep vermilion hue. It is obtaincd by precipitating a solution of acetate of lead with bichromate of potash, with the addition of morc or less of caustic potash or soda,—the proportion of the latter addition determining the depth of resultant toue. Antimony Vermilion is the red variety of the sulphide of antimony which, as found in nature (stibnite), is a dark grey body with metallic lustre. This, when fused and kept some time at a high heat and suddenly cooled, by allotropic modification becomes a fine vermilion red. The colour is artificially prepared by acting on solutions of the butter of antimony (antimony chloride) with hyposulphite of soda or lime. lt is a colour of excellent purity and body as a water colour, but unfortunately it becomes brown by exposure. The lakes form a numerous and important class of red pigments. A lake is a com- bination of a colour of organic origin with a metallic oxide or salt,

commonly with alumina. Originally all lakes were red colours, the name being derived from the lac insect Coceus laeca, the colouring matter of which forms the lake now known as Lae Lake. But lakes of any colour or tint are now made. The most important – lake pigment is Dfadder Lake, a compound of alumina and the tinetorial principle of madder root, Rubia officinalis, but now made with artificial alizarin. Scarlet or Carmine Lake has cochineal for its colour basis, and there are corresponding lakes from lac, kermes, &c. Wood Lakes coloured-with several of the red dyewoods have little durability, but they are nevertheless largely used by paper-stainers. Cuwrmine, a colouring matter from coehineal, and Madder Carmine or Field's Carmine, from madder, are exceedingly brilliant colours ; but the first of them is of a fugitive character.

GREEN PIGMENTS form an extensive group embracing two sections :— (1).simple greens, in which green is a primary inherent or natural colour ; and (2) compound greens, made up of intimate mixtures of blue and yellow pigments, The latter class it is obvious are capable of indefinite modification by simply varying the proportions of the compound ingredients. The following list embraces the principal commercial greens : —Brunswick green, oxychloride of copper ; malachite green or mountain green, hydrated carbonate of copper; verdigris, sub-acetate of copper ; verditer or Bremen grecn, hydrated oxide of copper; Scheele's green, arsenite of copper ; Schweinfurt green, mixed acetate and arsenite of copper; emerald green, a variety of Schweinfurt green; mineral green, nixed copper oxide and arsenite ; chrome green, oxide of chromium ; Guignet green or veridian, hydrated oxide of chromium; Cassel green, manganate of baryta; cobalt green, oxides of cobalt and zinc ; ultramarine grecn, modified artificial ultramarine ; Veronese earth or terra verde, a form of ochre ; green lakes.

The greater proportion of these greens are copper compounds— the most brilliant of them containing also arsenic. They are all poisonous colours, the latter especially being dangerous poison; and there can be no doubt that their free use in wall papers, the colour- ing of toys, artificial flowers, &c., is frequently the source of dangerous disease and even death. Brunswick Green, the most important non-arsenical green, is an oxychloride of copper, but factitious Brunswick greens are not uncommon. Scheele's Green, the

arsenite of copper, and Schweinfurt Green, mixed arsenite and acetate of copper, are very powerful and brilliant colours. These copper greens all blacken in foul gases and when mixed with oil, and thus, although they possess great body, they are much mire useful to the paper-stainer than the painter. The sesquioxide of chromium both water-free and hydrated, prepared in various ways, forms important stable green colours which resist atmospheric influences ; and chromium is further the basis of several other green colours, which, however, are not of importance. Cobalt Green, a mixed oxide of cobalt and zinc, discovered by the Swedish chemist Rinman, isa valuable and durable but expensive colour. Cassel Green, called also Rosenstiehl's Green, isa fine innocuous pigment made by melting together sulphate of baryta and oxide of manganese, and carefully washing the resulting mass in water. Verona Green or Terra Verde, a natural celadon green highly valued by artists for permanence, is a mixed earthy body coloured by ferrous oxide, and Ultramarine Green, also a stable body, is an intermediate pro- duct of the manufacture of ultramarine blue.'

Brown PicMents.—Many of the painters' browns are simply tints obtained by mixture. In the case of simple pigments the shades pass by fine gradations into yellows and reds, so that the limits of classification are not well defined. The following are generally classed as pure browns :—umber, silicate of iron and man- ganese ; brown ochres, called Mars brown, iron brown, &c., native and artificial earths ; Vandyke brown and Cologne or Cassel brown, peaty ochres ; purple brown, ferric oxide ; Spanish brown or tiver, a brown iron ochre; bistre, washed beechwood soot ; sepia, secre- beg cuttle-fish ; brown lake; asphaltum, natural and artificial pitch.

Iron and manganese, separately or combined, earthy or pure, are the sources of the principal brown pigments. Some of them are intermediate products between yellow ochres and red ochres by calcination of the yellow, and, as they are ochreous in their nature, their colours may be heightened or otherwise modified by calcining. Thus Umber, which properly is a hydrated silicate of manganese and iron, is brightened in colour by calcination into Burnt Umber. The finest umber comes from the island of Cyprus, and is known as Turkey umber. Large quantities also of "'English" umber are inined in Devonshire and Cornwall. Real Vandyke Brown, a very celebrated pigment, ought to be a kind of bituminous peaty earth of a fine rich semi-

transparent colour, allied to which are Cologne and Cassel Karth. But under the name Vandyke brown pure ferric oxide and ferruginous earths of a clear brown hue are also sold. Cappagh Brown is a peaty earth coloured by manganese, found at Cappagh near Cork, Ireland, and is a valuable artists' colour, as is also Bisire, a brown washed from the soot of beechwood. Sepia, a much valued warm brown, is a substanee seereted by the cuttle-fish, Sepia officinalis, which emits it to cloud the water for conceal- ing its whereabouts when alarmed. ;

PIK—PIK

Buiack PieMENtTs form a numerous class of bodies, though those in common use are easily enumerated. They appear in commerce principally under these names :—vegetable black, carbonized vegetable matter ; lamp black, soot of oils and fats ; Indian ink, preparation of lamp blaek ; ivory black, carbonized ivory and bone ; bone black, carbonized bone; blue black, washed wood chareoal ; charcoal black, carbonized wood ; black wad, a native oxide of manganese ; black lead, a form of carbon ; tar, from distillation of organic substances.

Most of these blacks owe their colour to carbon. From the charring of vegetable substances are prepared Charcoal Black, Blue Black, and Vegetable Black, but these take many names aceording as they are prepared from carbonized wood, twigs of the grape vine, peach and other fruit stones, cork, the lecs of wine, &c. Bone and Lvory Blacks again are carbonized animal substanees, principally bones, which when skilfully burned yield dense durable blacks, Lamp Black of the best quality is the soot deposited from the imperfect combustion of oils and fats, and the soots of resin and tar are also collected and used under this name. Indian Ink (see vol. xiii. p. 80) is a form under which lamp black of the finest quality occupies an important position among pigments. Of the other blacks Zar is the most important owing to its extensive use as a preservative and antiseptic coating.

Several pigments are prepared on account of special properties apart from the protective and decorative purposes for which ordinary paints are applied. Among such may be mentioned: Balmain's luminous paint, a preparation in oil or water of certain of the phosphorescent sulphides.

Objects coated with this material have the property of continuing to emit light in dark situation$ for some time after they have been exposed in daylight or to high artificial light. The luminous paint has been proposed for eoating buoys, signals, public notice boards, clock and watch dials, playing balls, match boxes, &c., but it has not come into extensive use. Powdered asbestos has been introduced as a fire-proof paint for wood ; but all common paints applied as distemper colour are equally fire-proof in the scuse that they themselves are incombus- tible, and when they coat wood thickly they offer great resistance to an incipient fire, and even retard combustion under very high heat. Numerous anti-fouling compositions for the painting of ships' sides and bottoms and anti-corrosive, inoxidizable, damp-proof, and water-proof paints have been patented, some of whieh are in extensive use, (J. PA.)

PIKE, freshwater fishes generally distributed over the rivers and lakes of Europe, northern Asia, and North America, and forming a small family (Zsocide) of Soft-rayed Fishes. They are readily recognized by their elongate compressed body covered with small scales, a long head, long and spatulate snout, and very large mouth armed with strong and long teeth in the jaws and broad bands of smaller teeth on the palate and tongue. The teeth point backwards or can be depressed so as to offer no obstruction to any object entering the gape, but prevent its withdrawal in the opposite direc- tion. The dorsal and anal fins are placed far back on the

European Pike (soz luetus).

tail, thus greatly increasing the propelling power of the fish, and, although pike are bad swimmers and lead rather a sedentary than a roving life, they are excelled by no other freshwater fish in rapidity of motion when, by a single stroke of the tail, they dash upon their prey or dart out of reach of danger. In the Old World one species only is known (Zsow lucius), which prefers lakes and sluggish reaches of rivers to strong currents or agitated waters. Its eastward range in northern Asia is not known; it extends into Lapland in the north and into central Italy

and the vicinity of Constantinople in the south, but is absent in the Iberian Peninsula. The European species occurs also in North America, and is common in the eastern United States southwards to northern Ohio. But North America is tenanted by other species of pike besides, of which the largest is the Muskelunge or Maskinonge of the Great Lakes (Esow nobilior) ; it commonly attains to the large size which is exceptionally recorded of sox lucius. The other American pike are of smaller size, and generally named “Pickerel”; but opinions as to the distinction of the species differ widely among American ichthyologists. The European pike, like its brethren, is the most voracious of freshwater fishes; it probably exceeds the shark, to which it has been compared by many writers, in the rela- tive quantity of food it consumes. Ponds would soon be depopulated but for its cannibal propensities, no pike being safe from another of its own kind large enough to swallow it. To the young of water-fowl pike are most destructive, and large specimens will seize rats or rabbits when they take to the water, and are said to attack even foxes and small dogs. Individuals of from forty to fifty pounds are not scarce, but captures of much larger ones are on record. Pike are wholesome food, and much esteemed in inland countries,—the smaller (of 20 to 24 inches in length) being preferred to the larger individuals. They are prolific, and not easily exterminated in a water in which they have been once allowed to spawn. Accord- ing to season and climate they spawn in April or May, and sometimes as early as February.

PIKE-PERCH (Lucioperca), freshwater fishes closely allied to the perch, but with strong canine teeth standing between the smaller teeth of the jaws and palate. As indicated by the name, these fishés show some slight resemblance to the pike in their elongate body and head, and like that fish they are most dangerous enemies to other freshwater fishes. Their acclimatization therefore in waters intended for the culture of valuable food fishes is not advisable, though they compensate in some measure for their destructiveness by the excellent flavour of their flesh. In Europe two species occur, the more celebrated being the “Zander” of North Germany or “ Schiel” of the Danube (Lucioperca sandra); strange to say, it is absent in the system of the Rhine. It prefers the quiet waters of large rivers and clear deep lakes, in which it reaches a weight of twenty-five or thirty pounds; it does not thrive in small and confined waters. The second European species (Lucioperca wolgensis) is limited to rivers in southern Russia and Hungary.

In North America several pike-perches have been described, but in the most recent works only two are distinguished, viz., Lucwoperca americana, which grows to a weight of twenty pounds, and the much smaller Lucioperca canadensis ; both are abund- ant in the Canadian lakes and upper Mississippi, and the latter also in the Ohio.

. PILATE,: Pontius, the fifth Roman procurator or

governor" (émizporos, wyenav) of Judea, Samaria, and Idumza, succeeded Valerius Gratus in 26 a.v. By rank he was a Roman eques, possibly of Samnite extraction ; his official appointment he owed to the influence of Sejanus. His ordinary residence as procurator was at Ceesarea, the capital, but from time to time he visited Jerusalem, especially at the greater feasts, and on these occasions he had his Bema in the magnificent palace of Herod the Great, hence called the pratorium. Apart from the supreme (to him, likely enough, most trivial) incident in

a T.e., Pilatus, either derived from pilum, and thus analogous with the surname Torquatus, or a contraction of pileatus. The pileus was the badge of manumitted slaves, and if this etymology be accepted, the naine probably indicates that Pilate was a libertus, or the descendant of a libertus, of a member of the Sammnite gens of the Pontii.

Oo

his life ("suffered under Pontius Pilate") the few facts that are known of him' indicate a somewhat exceptional recklessness about awakening Jewish fanaticism, and unscrupulousness as to the' means used in quelling its manifestations. Not long after his appointment he allowed his soldiers to carry their eagles and other insignia to Jerusalem, and did not give way until an excited mob had stormed for five whole days and_ nights around his palace at Cesarea. At a later date, in order to provide for the completion of his aqueduct for bringing water to the city from the " Pools of Solomon," he appropriated funds from the Corban or sacred treasury; but, profiting by his former experience, when this conduct was resented by the popu- lace he caused some of his soldiers, disguised as Jewish citizens but armed with staves and daggers, to mingle in the crowd, when many casual spectators as well as rioters were trampled to death. For having hung up in Herod's

palace certain gilt shields dedicated to Tiberius he was in vain remonstrated with by the Jews, but Tiberius, on being appealed to, ordered their transference to the temple of Augustus at Czsarea. Of the circumstances under which he " mingled the blood " of certain Galilseans "with their sacrifices" nothing is known; but his cruelty in causing a number of Samaritans to be attacked and massacred when assembled on Mount Gerizim led to a complaint being lodged with Vitellius the legate of Syria, and ultimately to his being deprived of his office early in 36 A.p. According to Eusebius (H. Z., ii. 7) he was banished to Vienne in Gaul, where various misfortunes caused him at last to commit suicide ; the Chronicle of Malalas alleges, with less probability, that he was beheaded under Nero. Later legend (see, for example, the apocryphal Mors Pilati mentioned below) has a good deal more to say : his suicide was anticipatory of Caligula's sentence ; the body was thrown into the Tiber and there caused disastrous tempests and floods; it afterwards produced similar effects in the Rhine at Vienne, and finally had to be consigned to a deep pool among the Alps. Local tradition points to a little tarn on Mount Pilatus near Lucerne ; if anything is thrown into it the water is forthwith strangely agitated. The devil takes the body from the water on Good Fridays and sets it on a throne where it goes through the gesture of washing its hands. The fact that Pilate allowed Jesus to be crucified is by no means out of keeping with what we know of his indifference to the claims alike of justice and of mercy; that he obviously wished to spare hin if this could be done without too much inconvenience to himself has, however, gained him in sone quarters very generous recognition ; thus Tertullian speaks of him as "jam pro sua conscientia Christianum," the Copts regard him as a martyr, and the Abyssinian Church has given him a place in its calendar (June 25). This view is reflected in the spurious Paradosis Pilate. Pilate's wife, known to tradition as Procla or Claudia Procula, is repre- sented as having been a proselyte of the gate and a secret disciple of Jesus. She is commemorated as a saint in the Greek Church (Oct. 27).

There is a considerable body of apoE, literature connected with the name of Pilate. The Acta Pr ati, which forms part of the Evangelium Nicodemi, gives a copious account of the trial of Jesus, intermingled with legendary details of uncertain and very unequal value. It exists in a variety of texts, but in substance 1s supposed with most probability to date from about the

middle of the 2nd century, and to be the work of a Jewish Christian, written for Jews. The Epistola Pilati, of which there are two differing forms,

contains what purports to be Pilate's account to Tiberius of the resurrection of Jesus. The Paradosis Pilati relates his trial, con- demnation, and execution at the emperor's command; Pilate appeals in prayer to Jesus, and, along with Procla his wife, is received as a true penitent into the number of the faithful. The Mors Pilati relates the circumstances of his suicide, the casting of his body into the Tiber, its removal to Vienne (explained as '' Via Gehennz "), and the final disposal of it at 'Losania." For all

these apocryphal writings see Tischendorf's Evangelia Apocrypha

(1863).

PILCHARD (Clupea pilchardus), a fish of the herring family (Clupecde), abundant in the Mediterranean and on the Atlantic coasts of Europe, northwards to the British Channel. Sardine is another name for the same fish, which on the coast of Britanny and Normandy is also called Célan or Céléren.. It is readily distinguished from the other European species of Clupea or herrings. The oper- culum is sculptured with ridges radiating and descending towards the suboperculum ; the scales are large, about thirty along the lateral line, deciduous ; the ventral fins are inserted below, or nearly below, the middle of the base of the dorsal fin; the dorsal fin has seventeen or eighteen, the anal from nineteen to twenty-one rays. A small blackish spot in the scapulary region is very constant, and sometimes succeeded by other similar marks. There are no teeth on the palate; pyloric appendages exist in great numbers; the vertebree number fifty-three. The pilchard is one of the most important fishes of the English Channel (see article FisHEeRixs, vol. ix. p. 253 sq.). It spawns at a distance from the shore, and, ac- cording to Couch, the spawn has been seen to extend several miles in length, and a mile or more in breadth floating on the surface of the sea, of the thickness of brown paper, and so tough as not to be readily torn in pieces. 'The spawning takes place at two periods of the year, viz., in

April or May, and again in the early part of autumn ; but it is not probable that the same individuals or shoals spawn twice in the same year. When commenc- ing their migrations towards the land, the shoals consist of countless numbers, but they break up into smaller com- panies in close vicinity to the shore. Pilchards feed on minute crustaceans and other animalcules, and require two or three years before they attain their full size, which is about 10 inches in length. On the Pacific coasts of America, in New Zealand, and in Japan a pilchard occurs (Clupea sagax) which in its characters and habits is so similar to the European pilchard that its general utiliza- tion is deserving of attention, and there is every reason to believe that New Zealand could produce its own sardines and fumadoes. Immense shoals are reported to visit the east coast of Otago every year in February and March.

PILES. See Hamorruorps.

PILGRIMAGE. The word Pilgrimage (derived from the Latin pereger, i.e, per-ager, “one who traverses a region,” through the intermediate forms peregrinus, pellegrino, pelegrin) denotes the act of journeying to some place esteemed sacred, for the purpose of discharging a religious obligation, or to obtain some supernatural assist- ance or benefit. The practice is common to many re- ligions, and mounts back to prehistoric ages. It is ulti- mately traceable to the nature of tribal religion, in its early form of worship of a deity regarded as purely local in the sphere of his special influence. As community in religious acts was one of the principal ties between members of the same tribe, to the exclusion of outsiders, it would naturally become the rule, and then the duty, of the tribesmen to pre- sent themselves at recurrent intervals at the sanctuary of their tribal god. As they scattered away from their own settlement, and became travellers or sojourners amongst aliens, the belief that they were in some sense cut off from the protection of their tribal deity, and subjected to the influence of others in whose worship they had no share, would induce visits from a distance to the seat of their own religion, not merely for the purpose of keeping up their tribal relations, but to propitiate a power which perhaps could not hear supplications addressed from a distance, and would in any case be more ready to hear and answer prayers made in his own special shrine, attended with the appro-

priate rites performed by his own body of ministers. This

latter consideration would operate even in the case of eultg directed to the Sun-God, the Moon-Goddess, and the planet- ary bodies, which could hardly be regarded as localized within earthly boundaries, but might well be supposed more placable in shrines of exceptional splendour and sanctity, officered by a trained and numerous priesthood. And wherever it was believed that the deity not merely responded to prayer, but gave direct answers by omen or by oracle to inquirers, the frequentation of the prophetic seat would naturally increase. Further, as the political strength of any tribe grew, that would be attributed in a multitude of cases to the superior power of its tutelary god, or, where they worshipped the same deity as their neighbours, to some more acceptable mode of paying that worship, whence the custom would grow of making the principal temple of the most powerful tribe the meeting-place of the confederacy, as well for political deliberation as for the more directly religious purpose of reaffirming the common pact with sacrificial ceremonies. And if the strongest tribe passed from the stage of hegemony to that of sovereignty, whether by cession or by conquest, so becoming the nucleus of a nation or kingdom, the same feelings would operate yet more powerfully,—the subject tribes being either compelled to accept the gods of their conquerors, or voluntarily adopting them from a conviction of their superior might. Certain temples would in this wise become national from having been tribal, and in large empires, such as Egypt

and Assyria, would collect worshippers from all the various

peoples ruled under a common sceptre. The second stage in the genesis of special sanctuaries is peculiar to religions with a real or supposed historical basis, and takes the form of devotion towards localities which have been the scenes of important events in the lives of personages reverenced in the creeds of those religions. And the third stage, be- longing to a much later period than either of the former, when self-consciousness had become more developed, is that where the aim of the pilgrims is primarily subjective, to stir up certain emotions in their own minds, through the means of the associations connected with special localities. But in each and all of these the fundamental underlying thought is the same, the localization of deity,

the almost insuperable difficulty which the ideas of omniscience and omnipresence offer to undeveloped intellects.

It will be convenient, in tracing the history of pilgrim- ages, to begin with those which belong to the various forms of heathenism, ancient and modern, as pertaining, whatever be their actual date, to an earlier stage of mental evolution than the Jewish, Christian, and Mohammedan ones.

The first pilgrimages, then, of which we have any trust- Beyplitm

worthy knowledge, are those of ancient Egypt. The mythology of the Egyptians is even yet but imperfectly understood, but it is at any rate clear that, just as the votaries of Vishnu and of Siva keep apart in modern Hindustan, so the chief deities of the Egyptian pantheon had cults which were as often rival as complementary, and that the emulation of the competing temples took the form of bidding against each other for popular favour by the splendour of their chief yearly festivals. We are obliged to have recourse to Herodotus and Plutarch for informa- tion as to the general cycle of feasts nationally observed; for, although local calendars and rubrics of festivals have been discovered in several places, nothing cognate with Ovid's Wasti has yet been found inEgypt. Herodotus notices that, instead of having but one yearly national festival (waviyvpis), the Egyptians had six, the principal of which was that of Artemis (i.e. Bast or Sekhet) at Bubastis, to which the pilgrims went in boats crowded with both sexes, playing on castanets and flutes, and singing to this accompaniment. They landed at every town along the

@

an.

PYEGRIMAG E

river to perform orgic dances, and at Bubastis itself offered

great sacrifices, besides feasting copiously, in particular consuming vast quantities of grape-wine. He states the numbers assembling on this occasion, exclusive of children, to average 700,000. Next to this ranked the

festival of Isis at Busiris, attended with ceremonies of mourning, most probably in memory of the sufferings of Osiris. Third in order was the feast of Athene (Neith) at Sais, celebrated at night, with illuminations. Fourth was the festival of the Sun (Ra) at On or Heliopolis; fifth that at Buto in honour of Latona (Buto or Uat). These two were attended with. simply sacrificial rites, and there were no symbolical ceremonies in addition. Last came the festival of Ares (Har-tash, the Hertosi of Cedrenus) at Papremis, at which there was a rough tussle, symbolizing war, between the temple-attendants and the pilgrims, in which lives were sometimes lost. There was another high festival, that of Apis at Memphis, not included by Herodotus in his list, perhaps because not of yearly recur- rence, besides the much frequented oracle of Ammon at Thebes, whither it had been transferred from Meroe, its first seat in Egypt. And it is noticeable that there was no pilgrimage at all to the most sacred spot in Egypt, the island of Philz, the burial-place of Osiris, because its very sanctity made it “tabu” to lay folk. The mysteries, in like manner, being rigidly confined toa few, did not form an occasion of pilgrimage. .

As regards the great Mesopotamian empires, our know- ledge does not yet enable us to say that pilgrimages entered into their religious system, though we may not unreasonably infer so from the size and wealth of several temples, notably those of Ishtar, from the Assyrian custom of imposing their own deities upon conquered nations, and from the example of one great religious assembly from all the provinces of the Babylonian empire, recorded in Daniel iii. There may, perhaps, be indirect proof of Babylonian pilgrimages in what Cyrus states in his cylinder-inscription, namely, that Nabonidus had offended the gods by trans- porting their images to Babylon, and thus, as it were, making them perform pilgrimage.

The ancient Zend creed of the Medes and Persians, having no temples for worship, had no pilgrimages ; but in its later Mithraic form, the initiation of neophytes by the Magians into the mysteries, through a painful course of purgation (curiously resembling one prevalent in Ireland far within the present century), in a cavern or grotto at Babylon, necessitated a pilgrimage thither on the part of those who desired to become experts ; and Lucian has left some account of its rules in his Afenippus.}

Amongst the Phcenicians there are clear traces of at least two great pilgrimages in honour of Ashtoreth, one to Aphaca (probably the Aphek of Scripture), celebrated for a yearly iniracle of a ball of fire appearing on the mountain summit, and thence falling into the sea. The obscene rites for which this temple was infamous led to its destruc- tion by Constantine the Great (Euseb., Vit. Const., iii. 56). The other great Ashtoreth pilgrimage was to Hierapolis in Syria, frequented by votaries from all the Semitic races except the Jews. Antioch was also a great centre of this cult, as also of that of Thammuz, but, strictly speaking, there is no proof of a Thammuz pilgrimage, nor of one in honour of Melkarth, though his worship was carried from Tyre, its chief seat, into all the Phoenician colonies, and the famous oracle of his temple at Gades drew crowds of Inquirers annually. In Palestine proper, though the cults of Baal, Ashtoreth, Moloch, Dagon, and Beelzebub were widespread and persistent, and though the name Jericho

‘ This is probably the source of the Moslem legend of Hartt and Marfit, the fallen angels chained in a cavern at Babylon, who will teach magic to such as consult them in a prescribed manner.

probably, and Ashtaroth-Karnaim certainly, point to a seat of moon-worship, as Bethshemesh does to one of sun- worship, there is no direct evidence of organized pilgrim- ages to these places.

In ancient Hellas there were four classes of religious Greek.

observance more or less cognate with pilgrimage, though not in any case identical therewith. First may be placed the consultation of oracles,—those of Apollo at Delphi, of Zeus at Dodona, of Trophonius at Lebadeia, and of Asclepius at Epidaurus (the last of which was resorted to also for the cure of disease) being the most famous and most frequented, while, outside Greece and its colonies, the oracle of the Libyan Ammon in the desert south of Cyrene was also in much esteem. Next come the four great national festivals and games, the Olympic, Pythian, Nemean, and Isthmian, attended by crowds from all Greek states, not only as attractive shows, but as religious ceremonies.? Thirdly may be named the more local or tribal festivals, such as the Panathenza, the feast of the Charites at Orchomenus,

that of Hera at Samos, of Aphrodite at Paphos, and of Artemis at Ephesus, which drew together many worshippers besides those who were specially bound to visit the shrines in question. But the closest parallel to the Christian theory of pilgrimage is found in the celebration of the Eleusinian mysteries (see Mysrtertzs), the special likeness of which to pilgrimages of a later day lies in the notion of merit and spiritual benefit attached to initiation, to the belief that happiness in a future state of existence would be promoted, nay, insured, by admission to the ranks of the myste.

The Latin customs bear a certain superficial likeness to the Greek, in that local oracles, such as those of Faunus, of Albunea, of Fortuna, and of the Sibyls, were much frequented ; there are traces of great tribal sanctuaries and gatherings, such as the worship of Jupiter Latiaris on the Alban Mount, of more narrowly restricted tribal cults, such as the Julian worship of Vejovis at Boville and the Fabian sacrifice to Hercules on the Quirinal, and of at least two temples to which regular pilgrimages seem to have been made—those of Juno Sospita at Lanuvium, and of Vesta (perhaps of all the Penates also) at Lavinium. But, apart from racial and theosophic differences of belief, there was one factor at work in Italy which tended to bring about a wholly different character of popular religion from that which was evolved in Hellas—the overmastering centralization of Rome, and the practical identification of all solemn worship (apart from the rustic ceremonies in honour of niinor and little-known deities) with the apothe- osis of the Republic. Hence, after the chief seat of Roman worship was transferred from the Regia to the Capitol, pilgrimage proper disappeared, for the local gods of each newly absorbed city or state were added to the original triad of Roman gods, and to the other Sabine triad, moved from the Quirinal to the new sanctuary, and it becomes impossible to distinguish clearly between the purely poli- tical ceremonies performed in honour of gods viewed primarily as the tutelars of Rome and voluntary resort to the great temple for the personal cult of any particular deity enshrined there. One relic of the older custom seems to have survived till later times, namely, the pilgrimage of Roman women barefoot to the temple of Vesta in the Forum on June 9 every year.

No pilgrimages seem to have been usual in the Teutonic and Slavonic religions, though both had special temples regarded as more sacred than the

remainder, and in the case of the latter we know with tolerable accuracy that Kieff, Novgorod, Rethra in Mecklenburg, Karenz, Winneta

2 ‘he Panhellenic festival at Augina is omitted, as a mere factitious device of the emperor Hadrian, when classical paganism was dying, and not a real Greek custom.

Roman.

Teutonic and Slavonic.

Mexican.

Peruvian.

Indian.

and Julin (isle of Wollin), Stettin, and lastly Arkona in the isle of Riigen, succeeded one another as the chief seat of the worship of Perun, Lada, Bielbog, and other principal Slavic deities, and were necessarily attended by much larger bodies of worshippers than temples of less account, more thinly officered, and inferior in repute for the learning and prophetic powers of their priests. ;

Directing our attention to an entirely different region of the world, we learn that in 1519, when Cortes entered Cholula in Mexico, he found it a great resort of pilgrims to the huge temple of Quetzalcoatl, then of unknown antiquity, as founded by a race earlier than the Aztecs, and built upon a colossal mound, vying in dimensions with the largest pyramids of Egypt. And what is yet more curious, besides this principal shrine, there were subsidiary tribal temples in the city, restricted to the uses of the several allied or kindred nations, who desired to have their own sanctuary in the holy city, precisely as churches of different nationalities are found in Jerusalem and in Rome to-day. And similarly in Peru, the great Temple of the Sun at Cuzco, with its encircling girdle of chapels dedicated to minor

deities, was visited by pilgrims from all parts of the empire; nay, it was even regarded as a misfortune to fail in accomplishing the journey.

India, however, is above all others the land of pilgrim- ages, for it has observed them during a longer unbroken period than any other country of which we possess sufficient records, and for frequency and multitude it would be difficult to find any parallel. The most celebrated of them are those to the temple of Jagan-nath at Puri in Orissa, Benares, Hurdwar, Ganga-Sagara, Gangotri, Jumnotri, Prayaga (Allahabad), RAméswara, Gaya in Behar, and Ayodhya or Oudh. Apart from the motives, common to all pilgrims, of acquiring religious merit or expiating sins, these Indian shrines are frequented for the performance of sraddha ceremonies in honour of deceased ancestors or as votive acts for the recovery of the Sick, or, again, to carry the ashes of deceased kindred to be scattered in the waters of some sacred or purifying river. Every great river in India, with some lakes, tanks, and springs, is regarded as permeated with the divine essence, and as capable of cleansing from all sin. Hence the favourite resorts are river sources and confluences, while Benares, as situated on the Ganges itself, is the holiest spot in Hindustan. The other most frequented shrines are usually associated with the cults of Krishna, Siva, and Rama. All these are exclusively connected with Brahman rites, for the entire extirpation of Buddhism from the Hindu peninsula has prevented any special sacredness from continuing to attach to the scenes of Gautama Buddha's life (though the Buddhists allege that the sanctity of Benares is due to its having been the residence of Buddha himself and the scene of his earliest preachings); and it is in Ceylon only that two Indo-Buddhist pilgrimages survive,—that of

'Adam's Peak, and the yet more popular one to the temple

of Kandy, where the Dalada Malagawa, or tooth of Buddha, is an object of special veneration. For northern Buddhism the chief shrines are Lhassa in Tibet, the seat of the Dalai Lama, and Urga in northern Mongolia, the seat of the Tesho-Lama or Bogdo-Lama. Before the Brahman revolution, which drove Buddhism out of India, pilgrimages to the chief scenes of Gautama Buddha's life were common; and notably Kapilavastu, his birthplace, Benares, where he began his mission, and Kasinagara, where he died, were

much frequented, especially by Chinese converts. The narratives of some of these, Fa Hian, Hwai-Seng, and Sung-yun, and Hwen-T'sang, the most noteworthy of them all (see vol. xii. p. 418), who came to visit the holy places and to collect the sacred books, are still extant.

PILGRIMAGE

In China pilgrimages are made to several of the MOTE Chinese

sacred spots both by Buddhists and Confucianists, Wutai- shan in Shan-si is the chief resort of Buddhist pilgrims, and Tai-shan, the mountain sacred to Confucius, that of Confucianists (Williamson, Journeys in North China). In

Japan both the older Shinté nature-worship and the newer Japanes

Buddhist creed have their several sanctuaries and pilgrim- ages. The principal Shinté pilgrimages are those to Isé in the department of Watarai, and to the sacred mountain Fuji. There are two temples at Isé, ranking in sanctity first of all Shinté shrines, and the special seat of the worship of Ten-shéké-daigin, the Sun-Goddess, from whom the Mikado is held to descend. Two great festivals are held yearly at Isé, in the sixth and twelfth months, and are known as O-barai no matsuri, " great purification feast," being held to effect the purifying of the whole nation from the sins of the previous half year. Tickets inscribed with the names of the gods of Isé, and especially that of the Sun-Goddess, are issued at the temples and their agencies (being formerly sold by hawkers correspond- ing to the pardoners of medieval Europe), and are care- fully preserved in the domestic shrine of J apanese houses, being supposed to avert all peril for six months, but requiring renewal at the end of that period. The pilgrims to Isé number many thousands yearly, and are known as they return by bundles of charms wrapped in oiled paper, and hanging from the neck by a string. The pilgrimage to Fuji takes place in summer, and the pilgrims go clad in white, and carrying bells. They ascend the mountain so as to reach the summit before sunrise, when they turn to the east, clap their hands, and chant a hymn to the Sun-Goddess. There are also many local Shinté pilgrimages of less note. Buddhism in J apan is broken up into several sects, having each of them their own pil- grimages ; but the most frequented are those of the god Fudo at Narita and the sacred mountain of Oyama, each some 30 miles

distant from Tokio. These both belong to the Shingou sect, the earliest introduced into J apan. The Hokke or Nichiren sect make pilgrimages to the monastery of Ikegami near Tokio, and to that at Mount Minobu, about 100 miles to the west, between which two shrines the relics of the founder are divided. Ninety miles north of Tokio are the shrines of Mount Nikko, also a great Buddhist pil- grimage, where the shoguns are buried, and where the founder of the Tokugawa dynasty is worshipped under the name of Gongen.

So much will suffice to have said concerning the various heathen pilgrimages, and we may now consider those of the Hebrew religion and its two derivatives, Islam and Christianity.

The legislation of the Pentateuch is precise in making Jewish ;

resort to one central shrine a positive and fundamental pre- cept, binding on the whole nation, obviously with the double object of cementing national unity and of guarding against the erection of local sanctuaries, which were liable to be diverted to idolatrous cults (see Punrareucn). Under the judges and the kings we find many traces of pilgrim- age, not only to the sanctuary of the ark at Shiloh, and afterwards to Jerusalem, but to local high places, such as Ophrah, Mizpeh, Dan, Bethel, and Beersheba. In truth, it is not till the post-exilic period that the supremacy of one national sanctuary is assured (though a pilgrimage even after the destruction of the temple is recorded in Jeremiah xli. 5, showing that the mere site was held sacred), for the local devotion of the high places resisted all the efforts of the reforming party under Hezekiah and Josiah even in the kingdom of Judah itself. Since the final overthrow of the Jewish polity by Titus and Hadrian, no effort has been made either to establish a centre of sacrificial worship anywhere outside Palestine (as in thie

curious episode of the temple of Heliopolis in Egypt), or to revive it in Jerusalem itself, where, even now, the syna- gogues and colleges of the Sephardim and Ashkenazim are entirely separate and independent organizations, and show no tendency to coalesce into the nucleus of a national system. Hence, as the political and religious motives for the pilgrimage to Jerusalem have both dropped into abey- ance, the custom

itself is no longer regarded as binding, and, though it is not obsolete, inasmuch as a visit to the Holy City is considered a meritorious act, yet it has now, like the pilgrimage to Hebron, more of an emotional and historical character than a ceremonial one, so that it is not in the strict sense a pilgrimage any longer.

Although the Mohammedan pilgrimages are much later . in chronological order than the Christian ones, it will be more convenient to consider them briefly first. They con- sist, then, of two main classes, which may be distinguished conveniently by Latin theological terms, as those of "obligation" and those of "devotion." There is properly only one Moslem pilgrimage of obligation, that to Mecca, which still often draws an annual contingent of from 70,000 to 80,000 pilgrims (see Mecca). It is in truth a pagan survival which proved too powerful for extirpation by Mohammed. The Kaaba had been constituted the national sanctuary of Arabia about 100 B.c., and contained, besides the famous Black Stone, some three hundred and

sixty idols of various Bedouin tribes, united in one pan- |

theon, exactly as with the Capitol of Rome ; and, though it was possible to sweep the idols out of the Kaaba, it was not so easy to deconsecrate the spot, but far more convenient to give it a new sanction.

The Mohammedan pilgrimages of devotion are very numerous, and are chiefly connected with the saint-worship which has overlaid and obscured the original strict mono- theism of Islam. Chief amongst the sacred shrines of this second class stands the tomb of Mohammed at Meprina (q. v.), but, holy as it is considered, and meri- torious as a visit to it is accounted, it is in no sense bind- ing on a Moslem's conscience, and only about one-third of the Meccan pilgrims proceed thither. Other sanctuaries abound in all Mohammedan countries, of which a few, like Abraham's tomb at Hebron, are honoured by all Mohammedan sects, while others are peculiar to the Sun- nites and Shiites respectively, and others again, such as Kairwan in Tunis, and Wazan in Morocco, and still more the tombs and oratories of merely local saints or welts, found in almost every Moslem town or village, are restricted to a comparatively small body of votaries. The most famous, after the Pan-Islamic pilgrimages, are the great Shiite sanctuaries, of which

there are three :—Meshed in Khorasan, with the tomb and mosque of Imam Riza, said to attract almost as many yearly pilgrims as Mecca itself; Khoum in Irak Ajemi, where Fatima, wife of Imam Riza, is buried ; and, yet more sacred than either, Kerbela in Mesopotamia, in the Turkish dominions, about 28 miles north-west of the ruins of Babylon, where is the tomb and mosque of Imam Hosein, grandson of Mohammed (see KerseLA and MoHAMMEDANISM). ‘There is a passion-play performed there at the yearly commemoration, which draws enormous crowds from all parts of Persia and other Shiite regions, and the title hAjj attaches to all who make the journey. Some idea of the multiplicity of minor pilgrimages amongst Moslems may be gathered from the fact that in the city of Damascus alone there are one hundred and ninety-four places of resort by pilgrims, and fourteen more in the environs. A great reaction against the whole system, inclusive of the invocation of saints, took place under the Wahhabis in the last century, in the course of which countless welis or tombs of Moslem saints were destroyed, including even those of Hosein and

Mohammed himself ; but, on the overthrow of the fanatics by Mohammed Ali, the customary practices were restored, and have continued in full vigour ever since.

Christian pilgrimages were at first limited to Jerusalem Christian.

and its immediate neighbourhood, including Bethlehem. It is probable enough that the local church of Jerusalem regarded the various scenes of the gospel history, and notably of the Passion and Resurrection, with special reverence, and would guide the steps of visitors to the most sacred localities while the city yet stood, and point out the sites, as nearly as possible, after the work of Titus had been completed by Hadrian, and a vast mound of earth, on whose summit rose a temple of Venus, had been raised over the Holy Sepulchre. But this is matter of conjecture rather than of knowledge. There is no actual proof of very early Christian pilgrimage to the holy places, though the belief was already current at the close of the 4th century that the custom had prevailed unbroken from apostolic times, as is distinctly asserted by Paula and Eustochium in their letter to Marcella (Epist. Hieronym., xvii.), written in 386, wherein they state also that of which they

are more trustworthy witnesses, that pilgrims then flocked from Armenia, Persia, India, Ethiopia, and even Gaul and Britain, to visit the cradle of Christianity. But in point of fact the earliest pilgrim of whose visit as a religious act we have definite proof is Alexander, a Cappadocian bishop, who came to Jerusalem in consequence of a dream (212), and was elected coadjutor to Narcissus, then bishop of the diocese (Euseb., #. H., vi. 11). Origen, who was a friend of Alexander, is another early example, but his own words (Comm. in Evang. Joann., vi. § 24) imply that he came rather in the modern spirit of devout scholarly inquiry than as a pilgrim in the strict sense. He paid a short visit in 216, and returned in 231, to settle down for a time at Czesarea, where he opened a school of theology in 238. It is not till after the pilgrimage of the empress Helena (the first quite unquestionable event of the kind) about 326 or 328, that the fashion set in, accompanied with the desire to bring back some relic, either inherently sacred or at least hallowed by contact with certain venerated spots. That the temper of the time was not a very critical one is sufficiently proved by the casual mention by St Chrysostom of a pilgrimage as commonly practised to Arabia in order to see the dunghill on which Job sat, and that by visitors from the very ends of the earth (Hom. v. de Status).

But another kind of pilgrimage, destined to be more powerful than that to Jerusalem, began to be popular nearly at the same time, that to the tombs of distinguished martyrs or confessors. In the present day, the passionate admiration of the Christians of the 3d, 4th, and 5th centuries for the martyrs as a class seems somewhat dis- proportioned to the part they actually played in the history of Christianity, which was more effectually propagated and maintained by the eminent teachers and divines of the ancient church. But the truth is that they supplied just the element of enthusiasm which was needed to sus- tain the courage and endurance of the humbler Christian laity under the stress of recurrent persecutions ; and, when peace was finally secured under Constantine the Great, there were so many families which counted one or more martyrs amongst their kindred, and viewed such kinship as a patent of nobility, that everything favoured the rapid development of pilgrimages to places in which so many had a direct personal, as well as a corporate religious, interest. So much did the notion begin to prevail that pilgrimage was almost a necessity of religion, and that

prayer could be heard more assuredly in particular places, that warnings against error of the kind were uttered by

teachers whose own acts had helped to propagate the opinion in question. Thus, only a few years after the letter above cited, urging Marcella to migrate to Bethlehem, St Jerome writes to Paulinus (393) pointing out that many of the most celebrated saints and ascetics had never visited the holy places, that heaven is just as open from Britain as from Jerusalem, and that the circumstances of life in Jerusalem itself were far from helpful to devotion. But his own abode at Bethlehem, the celebrity of the religious houses he founded and directed there, and the unlike tenor of other letters he wrote, entirely counteracted this advice. St Chrysostom at one time speaks of the need- lessness of pilgrimage (/Zom. i. in Philem. ; Lom. iii. and iv. ad pop. Antioch.), and at another expresses his own wish to see the relics of St Paul at Rome (Hom. xxxii. in Rom. il, ul; Lom. viii. in Hph. ii.). So, too, St Augustine con- tributed powerfully to promote pilgrimages to the shrines of saints, by sending in 404 two clerical disputants to the shrine of St Felix of Nola, in the hope that some miracle would be worked there to decide the matter, though no such signs had been granted at the grave of any African saint (Zp. Ixxviii.). And in another place he attests the working of many miracles by the relics of the protomartyr St Stephen in various African towns where portions of them had been shrined (De Civ. Det, xxii. 8). Nevertheless, in yet a third place he appears to con- demn this very temper as mere superstition, stating that, while he knows many professing Christians who are worshippers of tombs and pictures, “the church condemns them, and daily strives to correct them as evil children” (De Mor. Eccl. Cath., xxxiv. 75, 76).

Here, too, example proved stronger than precept, and the only unqualified opposition to the popular tendency which issued from any quite unimpeachable source (for Vigilantius and Jovinian cannot be fairly cited) is the remarkable letter of St Gregory of Nyssa to a friend, on the subject of pilgrimages to Jerusalem, the heads of which are as under:—there is no divine precept for the usage ; the moral dangers of the journey, from bad companions and from the quality of the inns, are great, especially to

women, and above all to nuns; the immorality and irreligion of Jerusalem itself are gross and notorious. True, he had gone thither himself, but it was on public ecclesiastical business, connected with the Arabian Church, and he had travelled in a public vehicle with a company of monks. He did not find his faith stimulated or improved in any way by a sight of the scenes of the gospel history, and he recommends others to stay at home, assuring them that no spiritual benefit is lost by so doing, and no spiritual gain acquired by visiting the most sacred places without inward amendment (Epist. ii.). The authenticity of this epistle has been challenged, but on no sufficient grounds.

What makes the devotion to the tombs of saints such a powerful factor in ecclesiastical history is that, after the Holy Sepulchre itself, no grave had such a hold on Christian imagination as that where the bodies of the two chief apostles, St Peter and St Paul, were held to rest in Rome. And consequently, as the division of the empire lessened the intercourse between East and West, as the decay of the old lines of communication made travelling more difficult, and as the advance of Mohammedanism in Syria and Palestine made it more dangerous also in that direction, Rome gradually supplanted Jerusalem toa great degree in the West as the goal of pilgrimage, and the enthusiasm of the visitors did much to consolidate the papal monarchy over Latin Christendom. So markedly did this new influence prevail that it has left its trace in more than one European language. The Low Latin romeruus, romapeta for a pilgrim anywhither, romerta, romi-

petagium for the actual pilgrimage, the obsolete French

| licence of transit from the king of France.

romieu, romipete, romvage, the still current Spanish romero, romeria, and Portuguese romeiro, romaria, the Italian forename Homeo, and the English romare (Piers Plowman) attest the celebrity and popularity of this pilgrimage, into which soon entered such further ideas as the desirability of confessing sins to the pope personally and obtaining absolution from him, the reference of private cases to papal arbitration on the part of bishops and

other ecclesiastical judges, and the injunction of the journey as in itself a penance, a notion prevalent in the Gallic churches as early as the close of the 5th century (Cesar. Arelat., Hom. ili.). Nowhere was the pilgrimage to Rome more popular than in Saxon England, and amongst the crowds of penitents who made the journey were four kings, Ceadwalla, Ine, Coinred, and Offa, all of whom died in Rome, two of them as monks (Beda, H.L,, v. 7, 19). There were not wanting efforts to check the movement. Apart from the theological objections raised by Claudius of Turin, there is a letter extant from Boniface of Mainz, an Englishman born, to Cuthbert, archbishop of Canterbury, written about 743, begging him to get a canon enacted to forbid the pilgrimage to Rome, especially to nuns, on the ground of the moral perils of the road, stating that no city of France, Lombardy, or Italy was without Englishwomen leading depraved lives, whose virtue had fallen during pilgrimage. And the council of Chalons, in 813, enacted a canon to check pilgrimages both to Rome and to the shrine of St Martin at Tours (then the most famous sanctuary in France), on the ground of serious abuses on the part of both clergy and laity; and the council of Seligenstadt made a like effort in 1022. But even the robber barons who looked on pilgrims as their natural prey could not arrest the movement (which was specially stimulated, as we learn from Radulphus Glaber, in 999 and 1000 by the belief that the end of the world was at hand), and the Roman pilgrimage reached its height in the Middle Ages through the institution of the Jubilee, or plenary indulgence to pilgrims, by Boniface VIII. in 1300, when 200,000 are said to have availed themselves of it, and smaller but still considerable numbers on its various repetitions at irregular intervals since. The pilgrimage to Jerusalem received fresh stimulus in the 9th century by the first occurrence of the alleged miracle of the heavenly fire on Easter Eve at the Holy Sepulchre, and continued to be frequented till checked by the fanaticism of the caliph Hakem-Biamrillah about 1018, and more severely and permanently by the Seljukian Turks on their conquest of Syria, which occasioned those armed pilgrimages, the crusades, to whose history this branch of the subject thenceforward belongs. Meanwhile, a third class of sanctu- aries had been steadily coming into notice and popularity, consisting neither of the seats of great historical events nor of the ascertained resting-places of eminent saints. These were the purely legendary shrines, the sites of some alleged vision, of the supernatural discovery of hidden relics, or of the presence of a wonder-working image or picture. Oneof the earliest and

most famous of these was that of Compostella, where the relics of St James the Great were said to be discovered in 816, and, after being again hidden for many centuries, to have been discovered afresh in 1884. This was one of those most frequented by Eng- lish pilgrims, no fewer than 2460 licences being granted for the journey in the one year 1434 (Rymer, Med., xi.).!

1 This concourse of English pilgrims was soon looked on in France as politically dangerous, so that in the 14th century, when Pedro the Cruel was dethroned by Henry of Trastamara, the latter was compelled by his allies to refuse entrance into Spain to all pilgrims who had not This kind of jealousy

7

e.

.

rf’

PI L—

Another, which became the Bethlehem of the West, as_

Rome had become its Jerusalem, was Loreto, where, ever since 1295, the Santa Casa, declared to be the home of the Holy Family, miraculously transported from Nazareth, has been frequented by pilgrims till very recent times, when its popularity has waned. Other famous shrines, some few of which even still attract yearly crowds of pilgrims, are Einsiedeln in Switzerland; Assisi, Oropa, Varese and Vicovaro in Italy; Monserrat and Guadalupe in Spain; Mariazell in Austria; Oetting and Eberhards- clausen in Germany; Walsingham; Becket’s shrine at Canterbury, Peterborough, St Davids, and Holywell in England and Wales; St Andrews in Scotland ; Chartres, ‘Notre Dame de Liesse, Notre Dame de Rocamadour, and Notre Dame des Victoires, with Ste Anne d’Auray in Britanny, in France; and Hal in Belgium. Devotion to these shrines was encouraged and developed by copious in- dulgences annexed to them; but this system in the long run became adverse to pilgrimages, because exactly the same privileges were annexed at a later time to acts much more easy of performance. Thus, the

wearers of the cord of St Francis, every time of reciting certain brief prayers, acquire all the indulgences attached to the holy places of Palestine, Rome, Assisi, and so forth, and have naturally little induce- ment to perform toilsome and costly journeys thither.

There is a further small class of pilgrimages, differing from all others in being neither permanent nor yearly, but periodical at various long intervals. They are usually connected with the exposition of the principal relic or relics in some important church, an event which rarely occurs. Such are the pilgrimages of Cologne, to the shrine of the Three Kings, and: that of Treves, where the alleged seam- less coat of Christ has been displayed for popular devotion, and has been visited by vast crowds of pilgrims.

Pilgrims in the Middle Ages were known by a peculiar garb and various badges, the hood and cape, the staff and scrip and water-bottle, and the low-crowned hat, turned up in front, and fastened with strings, being common to all, while the palm specially marked a pilgrim from the Holy Land ; a shell, one from Compostella; a bottle or bell, one from Canterbury, and so forth. They had many privileges and advantages. They were exempt from toll, their persons were inviolable, and any injury done to them incurred the penalty of excommunication ; they were entitled to shelter, fire, and water in all convents on their road, and the needier ones to food in addition ; and there were resting-stations erected for them on all the great lines of travel, sustained cometimes by voluntary offerings, and sometimes by public mmposts ; while in Rome, above all, institutions for their reception and relief were established early, and are still in active operation.! Nevertheless they declined in repute, not only by reason of the feigned devotees who joined them for purposes of vagrancy and mendicancy, and even from worse motives, but because many notorious criminals were customarily sent on pilgrimage as a punishment, with no care to isolate them from their innocent companions. The general charge of moral deterioration as a result of pil- grimage, which recurs from the fourth century onwards, eciaally brought by Langland in respect of truthful-

SS :—

“Pilgrims and palmeres plighten hem togidere, For to seken seint Jame and seintes at Rome. They wenten forth in hire wey, with many wise tales, And

hadden leve to lyen all hire lif after.”

—(Vision of Piers Plowman, pass. i. line 82). po very long, for there are edicts of Louis XIV. and XV. forbid- Ss pilgrimage to French subjects without the written per- — of their bishop, and the counter-signature of a state official,

der pain of the galleys for life.. They bear date 1671, 1686, and 1738. co for more details see Mr Scudamore’s articles, “ Holy Places” and Pilgrimages,” in Smith’s Dictionary of Christian Antiquities.

PEL 95

Hence pilgrimages were attacked with the weapons of ridicule, and the most celebrated satires upon them are the chapter in Reineke Fuchs, describing Reynard’s adventures as a pilgrim, and the yet wittier squib of Erasmus, Pere- grinatio religionis ergo, in which he gives a sarcastic account of the pilgrimage to Walsingham, which had much to do with destroying the prestige of not only that particular one, but most others also. The French Revolution all but completed the work of the Reformation in causing pil- grimages to decline seriously, where they were not entirely: abolished, in the West, though they were still able to main- tain their ground in retired and unchanging places such as Britanny, various places in central Italy, and in Ireland, where the severely penitential pilgrimages of Lough Finn, Lough Dearg, and Croagh Patrick are not yet obsolete. There was a remarkable recrudescence of the spirit of pil- grimage under the pontificate of Pius IX., notably to the new sanctuaries of La Salette and Lourdes in France, which reached its height about 1872-73, but has shown signs of subsiding again since.

In the Eastern Church, pilgrimages have not for many centuries formed so important a part of popular religion as in Latin Christendom, and the number of frequented shrines is very small. In the Greek Church properly so called, Mount Athos, with its numerous monasteries, where the great yearly gathering is on the feast of the Trans- figuration, ranks next to the visit to the Jordan (Tozer, Highlands of Turkey, i. 103). After Mount Athos comes a shrine in the island of Tenos, where, in the cathedral church of the Panagia Evangelistria, is preserved an icon of the Madonna, alleged to be

wonder-working, and said to have been discovered by means of a dream in 1824; the annual concourse of pilgrims twice a year, on the feasts of the Annunciation and the Assumption, is very great. Three alleged pictures of the Blessed Virgin by St Luke—at Megas- pelion, at Sumelas in the mountains behind Trebizond, and

‘at Stiri in Mount Helicon—are also much visited. Etch-

miadzin is the chief Armenian pilgrimage, besides which are those of Kaisariyeh and Mush (Tozer, 7’urkish Armenia, pp. 161, 271). And finally, the chief Russian pilgrimages are to the Petcherskoilavra at Kieff (said to be visited by 200,000 pilgrims yearly), the Solovetsk monastery near Archangel, and the Troitsa, close to Moscow, besides many more locally popular shrines. (R. F. L.)

PILLORY. This was a mode of punishment by public exposure of the offender on a platform or scaffold long used in most countries of Europe, originating prob- ably with the Anglo-Saxons, one of whose methods of punishment as described by Strutt is nearly identical with the instrument which eventually became known as the pillory. The etymology is not quite clearly made out. It is most probably connected with pillar, Fr. pilier, M. H. German Pfilaere, but there are forms with an initial s (Prov. espitlori, Low Lat. spiloriwm) which this derivation does not explain. The more usual French term is not pilori but le carcan. The Germans have Preller. Leals-fang or halsfang (Anglo-Saxon for a catching of the neck) was the old English name. The word was also sometimes applied to the pecuniary mulct paid in commutation of the punishment. No punishment has been inflicted in so many different ways as that of the pillory. Sometimes the machine was constructed so that several criminals might be pilloried at the same time, but it was commonly capable of holding only one. Douce (Zilustrations of Shakespeare) gives six representations of distinct varieties of this instrument. In Griffiths (Chron. of Newgate) and in a learned and exhaustive account of the pillory by Jewitt (Reliquary, April 1861), examples will also be found, and notably of the pillory for women, which differed in form from that in use for male offenders. It would

appear that it had not always been customary to sub- ject women to this form of punishment; for them the thew or the tumbrel, which latter was

probably the same as the ducking or cucking stool often spoken of in the early English laws in conjunction with the pillory, was reserved. ‘These varieties are all reducible, however, to the simplest form of the pillory as ordinarily known, which consisted of a wooden post and frame fixed on a platform raised several feet from the ground, behind which the culprit stood, his head and his hands being thrust through holes in the frame so as to be exposed in front of it. This frame in the more complicated forms of the instrument consisted of a perforated iron circle or carcan (hence the French name), which secured the heads and hands of several persons at the same time.

In the statutes of Edward I. it is enacted that every pillory or stretch-neck should be made of convenient strength so that execution might be done on offenders without peril of their bodies. It was customary to shave the heads wholly or partially and the beards of men, and to cut off the hair and even in extreme cases to shave the heads of female culprits. Some of the offences punished in England by the pillory will be found enumerated in the statute 51 Hen. III. c. 6 (1266), comprehending chiefly indictable offences not amounting to felony (commonly called misdemeanours), such as forestalling and regrating, using deceitful weights and measures, perjury or suborna- tion of perjury, libel, seditious writings, &c. ‘Later on, the punishment of the pillory was ordained for courtesans, common scolds, and brawlers and other like delinquents both male and female, and in the later years of its exist- ence, notably during the 17th and 18th centuries, it was much resorted to as a punishment for political offenders, who on some occasions experienced the roughest treatment at the hands of the mob, ill-usage resulting in some instances on record even in death. The intention of setting a criminal in the pillory was that he should become infamous and known as such afterwards by the spectators. Examples have not been wanting, however, in which much sympathy has been both felt and expressed by the populace for the individual subjected to this punishment. The duration of the punishment was usually assigned at the discretion of the judge who passed the sentence, though sometimes it was fixed by law. The form of the judgment was that the defendant should “be set zm and upon the pillory”; he was consequently said to stand in the pillory, not at it.

The pillory was abolished in Britain, so far as related to all offences save perjury and subornation, in 1816 (56 Geo. ITI. c. 138), and finally altogether by statute 7 Will. IV. and 1 Vict. c. 23 in 1837. In the former Act power had been reserved to the court to pass sentence of fine or imprisonment or both in lieu of the pillory. The punish- ment was done away with in France in 1832 upon the revision of the penal code, and has now indeed been with- drawn from most of the modern systems of penal law.

PILOT. The English Merchant Shipping Act of 1854 (17 & 18 Vict. c. 104) defines a pilot as being a person duly licensed by any pilotage authority to conduct ships to which he does not belong as one of the crew. Pilots are in fact taken on board to superintend the steering of the vessel, where the navigation is difficult and dangerous, in consequence of their special knowledge of particular waters; and it is to this class alone that the term now applies, whereas in early times the pilot was the steersman, or the individual who conducted the navigation of a ship across the ocean and out of sight of land. The word seems to be of Dutch origin, and to mean primarily a person who conducts a ship by the sounding line (perllood). Cowell (Law Dict.), describing lodemanage, speaks of it as

the hire of a pilot for conducting a vessel from one place to another,—a lodesman (Ang. Sax. ldéd-man, a leader being a pilot for ~~harbour and river duty. During the period of his charge the whole responsibility of the safe conduct of the vessel devolves upon the pilot. Most systems of maritime law have made the employment of pilots compulsory, though this does not usually apply to ships of war. One effect of neglect or refusal on the part of the master of a ship to take a pilot is to discharge the insurers from their liability.1 Excepting under extraordin~~ ary circumstances (such as where it is evident that he is acting rashly or is intoxicated, or is palpably incompetent) a master would not be justified in interfering with the pilot in his proper vocation. In England, societies or corporations have long been established for the appoint ment and control of pilots in particular localities ; and of these the Trinity House, London, owing to the number of the pilots under its control, and the large extent of its jurisdiction, may be deemed the

principal. The laws re lating to pilotage were consolidated by 48 Geo. III. «. 104 (1808), which was amended by 6 Geo. IV. c. 125 (1825) ; further regulations were made by 16 & 17 Vict. c. 129 (1853), which incorporated the Cinque Ports with the Trinity House pilots; and all existing regulations on the subject were embodied in the Merchant Shipping Act

17 & 18 Vict. c. 104 (1854), already referred to, from ~

which pilotage authorities within the United Kingdom derive their jurisdiction, and which regulates their powers, the licensing of pilots and their rights, privileges, liabili- ties, and remuneration (Maude and Pollock, Law of Mer. chant Shipping, 1861).

The laws of pilotage in the United States are regulated by the individual States according to the Acts of Congress.

PILOT-FISH (Naucrates ductor), a pelagic fish of the family of Horse-Mackerels, well known to sailors from its peculiar habit of keeping company with ships and large fishes, especially sharks. It occurs in all tropical and sub-tropical seas, and is common in the Mediterranean, but becomes scarcer in higher latitudes. In summer pilots will follow ships as far north as the south coast of Eng land into port, where they are generally speedily caught. This habit was known to the ancients, who describe the

Pilot fish,

Pompilus as a fish which points out the way to dubious or embarrassed sailors, and by its sudden disappearance indi- cates to them the vicinity of land; the ancient seamen of the Mediterranean regarded it therefore as a sacred fish. That the pilot follows sharks is an observation of much later date, which first appears in works of travel of the 17th century, the writers asserting that the shark never seizes the pilot-fish, and that the latter is of great use to its big companion in conducting it and showing it the way to its food. It is, however, extremely doubtful whether the pilot’s connexion with a shark serves a more special purpose than its temporary attachment to a ship. It accompanies both on account of the supply of food which it derives from them, picking up the crustaceans, cirripeds,

? In a measure before parliament in 1884, but not passed, it was contemplated to wholly abolish compulsory pilotage, releasing owners

or masters of ships not employing pilots from all pilotage dues or rates and from any penalty for not employing a pilot.

PItIL—

or other marine animals swarming about the ship's bottom | or parasitic on the shark, offal thrown overboard, or smaller pieces of flesh which are left unnoticed by the shark when it tears its prey. The pilot, therefore, stands _ to both in the relation of a so-called "commensal," like the Echeneis or sucking-fish, whose habits are in some respects identical with those of the pilot, and which is frequently found associated with it. All observers, however, agree that neither the pilot nor the sucker is ever attacked by the shark. The pilot attains to a length of about 12 inches. In the shape of its body it resembles a mackerel, but is rather shorter, especially in the head, and covered with small scales. A sharp keel runs along the middle of each side of the tail. The first dorsal fin consists of a few short spines not connected by a membrane; the second | dorsal and the anal are composed of numerous rays. The — teeth, which occupy the jaws, vomer, and palatine bones, | are all small, in villiform bands. The coloration of the pilot renders it conspicuous at a distance; on a bluish ground- | colour from five to seven dark-blue or violet cross-bands traverse the body from the back to the belly. The pilot-fish spawns in the open sea, and its fry is constantly caught in the tow-net. But young pilot-fish differ con- siderably from the adult, having the spines of the first dorsal connected by a membrane, and some bones of the head armed with projecting spines. These little fishes were therefore long considered to be a distinct genus, Nauclerus.

PILPAY. See Brprat, vol. iii. p. 666.

PILSEN, the second town of Bohemia, lies at the con- fluence of the Radbusa and the Mies, 50 miles to the south-west of Prague. It consists of the town proper, which is regularly built and surrounded with promeuades on the site of the old ramparts, and of three suburbs. The most prominent buildings are the Gothic church of St Bartholomew, said to date from 1292; the Renaissance town-house, containing au interesting armoury; the new

real school; and the German and Bohemian theatres. The staple article of manufacture and commerce is beer, of which about 6,000,000 gallons are brewed here annu- ally. Other industrial products are machinery, enamelled tinware, leather, alum, paper, earthenware, stoves, and spirits, while a tolerably brisk trade is carried on in wool, feathers, cattle, and horses. In the neighbourhood are several coal-pits, iron-works, and glass-works, as well as large deposits of kaolin. The four annual fairs have lost much of their former importance. The population in 1280 was 38,883, consisting of Germans and Czechs in nearly equal proportions.

Pilsen first appears in history in 976, as the scene of a battle between Otho I. and Henry V., duke of Bavaria, and it became a. | town in 1272. During the Hussite wars it resisted several sieges, | but it was taken by Mansfeld in 1618, Wallenstein fixed his headquarters at Pilsen in 1633-34; and it was the principal scene of the alleged conspiracy which cost him his life. The first printing press in Bohemia was sct up at Pilsen in 1468,

PIMENTO, also called ALLsPice (from a supposed com- bination of various flavours) and Jamaica Prppsr, is the dried immature fruit of Hugenia Pimenta or Pimenta offi- cmalis, an evergreen tree about 30 feet high belonging to the natural order Myrtacex. It is indigenous in the West — India Islands, growing on limestone hills near the sea. | The spice derives its name from prmeenta, the Spanish word for pepper, which was given to it by the early explorers of the New World from its resemblance to Peppercorns. The allspice of commerce is furnished wholly i — of Jamaica ; and all attempts to cultivate hae ie . it is not found growing spontaneously . “ i failed. The so-called Pimento walks or | . ees ations from which the pimento is collected

y cutting down other growth upon land where

the tree grows naturally, and thus allowing it to multiply freely. The berries are gathered in July and August,

when of full size, but still unripe,—the small branches

bearing fruit being broken off and dried in the sun and

air for some days, when the stalks arc removed and the

berrics are ready for packing. These owe their aromatic properties to an essential oil, of which they yield on dis- tillation from 3 to 43 per cent. This oil has a specific gravity of 1:037, deflects the ray of polarized light 2° to the left when examined in a column of 50 millimetres, and has substantially the same composition as oil of cloves, although differing in flavour. The berries also contain a tannin (giving a black colour with ferric salts), starch, and a minute quantity of an alkaloid which, according to Dragendorff, has somewhat the odour of conia. The chief use of pimento is as a spice. The oil and distilled water are used to a limited extent in medicine

to disguise the taste of nauseous drugs, and the oil is

also used in perfuming soaps. The yield of some trees is said to reach as much as 150 tb of fresh or 112 lb of dried berries. The highest export reached of late years was 6,857,830 Ib in 1870-71, valued at £28,574: In 1877-78 it was 6,195,109 tb. About two-thirds of the produce goes to England, and one-third to the United States. The value in the London market is about 4d. to 6d. per ib.

The fruit of an allied specics, Pimenta acris, Wight, distinguished by the calyx being crowned with tecth, is sometimes met with in commerce. The bay rum so much used asa toilet article in the United States is a tincture flavoured with the oil of the fruit and leaves of P. acris, which is commonly known as the bayberry tree.

PIN. A pin isa small spike, usually of metal, with a bulbed head, or some other arrangement for preventing the spike passing entirely through the cloth or other material it is used for fastening together. In one form or another pins are of the highest antiquity, and it may be assumed that their use is coeval with human dress of any kind, the earliest form doubtless being a natural thorn, such as is still often seen fastening the dresses of peasant women in upper Egypt. Pins of bronze, and bronze brooches in which the pin is the essential feature, are of common occurrence among the remains of the bronze age. Brooches and pins on which considerable artistic

ingenuity was lavished were universally used among the civilized nations of antiquity (see Broocn, vol. iv. p. 369). The ordinary domestic pin had become in the 15th century an

article of sufficient importance in England to warrant | legislative noticc, as in 1483 the importation of pins was

prohibited by statute. In 1540 Queen Catherine received pins from France, and again in 1543 an Act was passed providing that “no person shall put to sale any pinnes but only such as shall be double headed, and have the heads soldered fast to the shank of the pinnes, well smoothed, the shank well shapen, the points well and round filed, canted, and sharpened.” At that time pins of good quality were made of brass; but a large proportion of those against which the legislative enactment was directed were made of iron wire blanched and passed as brass pins. To a large extent the supply of pins in England was received from France till about 1626, in which year the manufacture was introduced into Glou- eestershire by John Tilsby. His business flourished so well that he soon gave employment to 1500 persons, and Stroud pins attained a high reputation. In 1636 the

_pinmakers of London formed a corporation, and the

manufacture was subsequently established at Bristol and

Birmingham, the latter town ultimately becoming tlre

principal centre of the industry. So early as 1775 the

attention of the enterprising colonists in Carolina was

drawn to the manufacture by the offer of prizes for the

first native-made pins and needles. At a later date several XIX. — 13

98

pin-makinug machines were invented in the United States. During the war of 1812, when the price of pins rose enormously, the manufacture was actually started, but the industry was not fairly successful till about the year

1836. Previous to this an American, Mr Lemuel W. Wright of Massachusetts, had in 1824 secured in England a patent for a pin-making machine, which established the industry

on its present basis.

The old form of pin, which has become obsolete only within the memory of middle-aged persons, consisted of a shank with a separate head of fine wire twisted round and secured to it. The formation and attachment of this head were the principal points to which inven- tive ingenuity was dirccted. The old method of heading involved numerous operations, which had to be expeditiously accomplished, and, notwithstanding the cxpertness of the workers, the result was frequently unsatisfactory. ine wire for heads was first wound on a lathe round a spit the exact circumference of the pin shanks to be headed. 1u this way a long elastic spiral was produced which had next to be cut into heads, each consisting of two complete turns of the spiral. These heads were softened by annealing and made into a heap for the heading boy, whose duty was to thrust a number of shanks into the heap and Ict as many as might be fit themselves with heads, Such shanks as came out thus headed were passed to the header, who with a falling block and die arrangement compressed together shank and head of such a number as his die-block was fitted for. All the other operations of straightening the wire, cutting, pointing, &c., were separately performed, and these numer- ous details connected with the production of a common pin were seized on by Adam Smith as one of the most remarkable illustrations of the advantages of the division of labour.

The beautiful automatic machinery by which pins are now made of single pieces of wire is au inveution of the present century. In 1817 a communication was made at the Patent Office by Seth Hunt, describing a machine for making pins with “head, shaft, and point in one entire piece.” By this machine a suitable length of wire was cut off and held in a die till a globular head was formed on one end by compression, and the other end was pointed by the re- volution around it of a roughened steel wheel. This machine does not appear to have come into use; but in 1824 Wright patented the pin-making apparatus above referred to as the parent form of the machinery now employed. An extension for five years, from 1888, of

Wright’s patent, with certain additions and improvements, was secured by Henry Shuttleworth and Daniel Foote Tayler, and in the hands of Tayler’s firm in Birmingham the development of the inachine has principally take place. In a pin-making machine as now used wire of suitable gauge running off a reel is drawn in and straightened by passing between straightening pins or studs set in a table. When a pin length has entcred it is caught by lateral jaws, beyond which enough of the end projects to form a pin-head. ‘Against this end a steel punch advances and compresses the metal by a die arrangement into the form of ahead. The pin length is immediately cut off and the headed piece drops into a slit sulfi- ciently wide to pass the wire through but retain the head. The pins are consequently suspended by the head while their projecting points are held against a revolving file-cut steel roller, along the face of which they are carried by gravitation till they fall out at the extremity well-pointed pins. The pins are next purified by boiling in weak beer ; and, so cleaned, they are arranged in a copper pan in layers alternating with layers of grained tin, The contents of the pan are covered with water over which a quantity of argol ‘bitartrate of potash) is sprinkled, and after boiling for several hours the brass pins are coated with a thin deposit of tin, which gives them their silvery appearance. They are then washed in clean water and dried by revolving in a barrel, mixed with dry bran or fine sawdust, from which they are winnowed finished pins.

A large proportion of the pins sold are stuck into paper by an automatic machine uot less ingenious than the pin-making machine itself, Mourning pins are made of iron wire, finished by immers- ing in black japan and drying in a stove. A considerable variety of pins, including the ingeniously coiled, bent, and twisted nursery safety pin, ladies’ hair pins, &c., are also made by automatic machin- ery. The sizes of ordinary pins range from the 34-inch stout blanket pin down to the finest slender gilt pins used by entomolo- gists, 4500 of which weigh about an ounce. A few years ago it was estimated that in the United Kingdom there were made daily 50,000,000 pins, of which 37,000,000 were produced in Birmingham, and the weight of brass and iron wire then annually consumed was stated at 12754 tons, of which one-eighth part was iron wire. The annual value of the whole British trade was stated at £222,000. At the same time the consumption of wire in pin-making in the United States was estimated to be

from 350 to 500 tons per annum the value of the trade being £112,000. (J. PA.) :

PINDAR, the greatest lyric poet of ancient Greece whose work is represented by large remains, was born

about 522 B.c., being thus some thirty-four years younger than Simonides of Ceos. phantus ; his birthplace the village of Cynoscephale near Thebes in Bocotia. The traditions of his family, which claimed a proud descent, have left their impress on his poetry, and are not without importance for a correct estimate of: his relation to his contemporaries. The clan of the Aigeidee—tracing their line from the hero Aigeus —hbelonged to the “ Cadmean ” element of Thebes, 7.¢., to the elder nobility whose supposed date went back to the days of the founder Cadmus. A branch of the Theban Aaigeide had been settled in Achzean times at Amycle in the valley of the Eurotas (Pind. Isthm. vi. 14), and after

the Dorian conquest of the Peloponnesus had apparently

been adopted by the Spartans into one of the three Dorian tribes. The Spartan Aigeidee helped to colonize the island of Thera (Pyth. v. 68). Another branch of the race was settled at Cyrene in Africa; and Pindar tells how his /Egid clansmen at Thebes “ showed honour” to Cyrene as often as they kept the festival of the Carneia (Pyth. v. 75). Pindar is to be conceived, then, as standing within the circle of those families for whom the heroic myths were domestic records. He had a personal link with the memories which everywhere were most cherished by Dorians, no less than with those which appealed to men of “Cadmean” or of Achean stock. And the wide ramifications of the Aigeide throughout Hellas rendered it peculiarly fitting that a member of that illustrious clan should celebrate the glories of many cities in verse which was truly Panhellenic.

His father’s name was Dai-p

Pindar is said to have received his first lessons in flute- Life

playing from one Scopelinus at Thebes, and afterwards to have studied at Athens under the musicians Apollodorus (or Agathocles) and Lasus of Hermione. In his youth, as the story went, he was defeated in a poetical contest by the Theban Corinna—who, in reference to lis use of Theban mythology, is said to have advised him " to sow with the hand, not with the sack." There is an extant fragment in which Corinna reproves another Theban poetess, Myrto, "for that she, a woman, contended with Pindar" (drt Bava dodo" éBa Iuwddéporo mor @pw)—a senti- ment, it may be remarked, which does not well accord with the story of Corinna's own victory. The facts that stand out from these meagre traditions are that Pindar was precocious and laborious. Preparatory labour of a somewhat severe aud complex kind was, indeed, indispens able for the Greek lyric poet of that age. Lyric compost- tion demanded studies not only in metre but in musi¢, and in the adaptation of both to the intricate movenients of the choral dance (dpxnori«y). Several passages inl Pindar's extant odes glance at the long technical develop-

ment of Greek lyric poetry before his time, and at the –

various elements of art which the lyrist was required to temper into a harmonious whole (see, ¢.g., Ol. iii. 8, vi 91, ix. 1, xiv. 15, xiii. 18; Pyth. xii. 28, &c.). The earliest ode which can be dated (Pyth. x.) belongs to the twentieth year of Pindar's age (502 B.c.); the latest (Olymp. v.) to the seventieth (452 8.c.). He visited the court of Hiero at Syracuse ; Theron, the despot of Acragas, also entertained him ; and his travels perhaps included Cyrene. Tradition

notices the special closeness of his relations with Delphi: °

"He was greatly honoured by all the Greeks, because he was so beloved of Apollo that he even received a share of the offerings ; and at the sacrifices the priest would cry aloud that Pindar come in to the feast of the god."! He is said to have died at Argos, at the age of seventy-nine, in 443 B.C.

1 Thvddpou yévos, in ed, Ald.: ériphOn d€ opddpa bwd ardyrov TOV 'EAAhvwr 814 Td brdT0d'ArdédAAwvos obrw pirctoOat ws kad peptoa

Tv mpoodepopévov TE OG AauBdverv, kal Tov lepéa Boty ey Tals Ovotas Mivdapoy emt 1d Setmvov Tod Oeod.

RFINDAR

Among the Greeks of his own and later times, Pindar was pre-eminently distinguished for his piety towards the gods (cbaeBéoraros, auct. vit.). He tells us that, “near to the vestibule” of his honse (rap éudv rpdbupov, Pyth. iii. 77), choruses of maidens used to dance and sing by night in praise of the Mother of the Gods (Cybele) and Pan—deities peculiarly associated with the Phrygian music of the flute, in which other members of Pindar’s family besides the poet himself are said to have excelled. A statue and shrine of Cybele, which he dedicated at Thebes, were the work of the Theban artists, Aristomedes aud Socrates. He also dedicated at Thebes a statue to Hermes Agoraios, aud another, by Calamis, to Zeus Ammon. The latter god claimed his especial veneration because Cyrene, one of the homes of his Aigid ancestry, stood “where Zeus Ammon hath his seat,” 7.e., near the oasis and temple (Aids év “Appwvos GepebAois, Pyth. iv. 16). The author of one of the Greek lives of Pindar says that, “when Pausanias the king of the Lacedemonians was burning Thebes, some one wrote on Pindar’s house, ‘ Burn not the house of Pindar the poet; and thus it alone escaped destruction.” This incident, of which the occasion is not further defined, has been regarded as a later inven- tion! Better attested, at least, is the similar clemency of Alexander the Great, when he sacked Thebes one hundred

and eight years after the traditional date of Pindar’s death

(335 B.c.). He spared only (1) the Cadmeia, or citadel, of Thebes (thenceforth to be occupied by a Macedonian garrison); (2) the temples and holy places; and (3) Pindar’s house. While the inhabitants were sold into slavery, exception was made only of (1) priests and priestesses ; (2) persons who had been connected by private gevia with Philip or Alexander, or by public &evia with the Macedonians ; (3) Pindar’s descendants. It is probable enough, as Dio Chrysostom suggests (ii. 33, 25), that Alexander was partly moved by personal gratitude to a poet who had celebrated his ancestor Alexander I. of Macedon. But he must have been also, or chiefly, influ- enced by the sacredness which in the eyes of all Hellenes surrounded Pindar’s memory, not only as that of a great national poet, but also as that of

a man who had stood in a specially close relation to the gods, and, above all, to the Delphian Apollo.2 Upwards of six hundred years after Pindar's death, the traveller Pausanias saw an iron chair which was preserved among the most precious treasures of the temple in the sanctuary at Delphi. It was the chair, he was told, "in which Pindar used to sit, whenever he came to Delphi, and to chant those of his songs which pertain to Apollo."

_ During the second half of Pindar's life, Athens was rising to that supremacy in literature and art which was ' to prove more lasting than her political primacy. Pindar did not live to see the Parthenon, or to witness the mature triumphs of Sophocles; but he knew the sculpture of Calamis, and he may have known the masterpieces of Aschylus. It is interesting to note the feeling of this great Theban poet, who stands midway between Homeric epos and Athenian drama, towards the Athens of which Thebes was so often the bitterest foe, but with which he himself had so large a measure of spiritual kinship. A few words remain from a dithyramb in which he paid a glowing tribute to those "sons of Athens" who "laid the shining foundations of freedom" (mratdes "APavaiwv €Badovro

' Schaefer, Demosthenes und seine Zeit, iii. 119. It will be remarked that history requires us to modify the state- ment in Milton's famous lines:—

"The great Emathian conqueror bade spare The house of Pindarus, when temple and tower Went to the ground,"

Indeed, the point of the incident

depends much on the fact that the temples and Pindar's house were e :

lassed together for exemption.

gaevvav xpn7id édevbepias, fr. 77, Bergk, 4th ed.), while Athens itself is thus invoked :—@ rat Aurapat cat toorédavor Kat Gotdyuor, "EAAddos eperopa, KAewat "APGva, Sandviov mrodebpov. Isocrates, writing in 353 B.c., statcs that the phrase 'EdAados gpeccpa, "stay of Hellas," so greatly gratified the Athenians that they conferred on Pindar the high distinction of

zpogevia (t.e., appointed him honorary consul, as it were, for Athens at Thebes), besides present- ing him with a large sum of money (Antid. § 166). One of the letters of the pseudo-Aischines (Zp. iv.) gives an improbable turn to the story by saying that the Thebans had fined Pindar for his praise of Athens, and that the Athenians repaid him twice the sum,? The notice pre- served by Isocrates—less than one hundred years after Pindar's death—is good warrant for the belief that Pindar had received some exceptional honours from Athens. Pausanias saw a statue of Pindar at Athens, near the. temple of Ares (i. 8, 4). Besides the fragment just mentioned, several passages in Pindar's extant odes bespeak his love for Athens. Its name is almost always joined by him with some epithet of praise or reverence. In alluding to the great battles of the Persian wars, while he gives the glory of Plata to the Spartans, he assigns that of Salamis to the Athenians (Pyth. i. 75). In cele- brating the Pythian victory of the Athenian Megacles, he begins thus :—" Fairest of preludes is the renown of Athens for the mighty race of the Alemzonide. What home, or what house, could I call mine by a name that should sound more glorious for Hellas to hear?" Refer- ring to the fact that an A'ginetan victor in the games had been trained by an Athenian, he says— xpy 0 am 'Adavav réxtov' aOAntatcw eupev (Vem. v. 49); "meet it is that a shaper of athletes should come from Athens "—where, recollecting how often Pindar compares the poet's efforts to the athlete's, we may well believe that he was thinking of his own early training at Athens under Lasus of Hermione.

Pindar's versatility as a lyric poet is one of the characteristics remarked by Horace (Carm. iv. 2), and is proved by the fragments, though the poems which have come down entire represent only one class of compositions — the Lpinicia, or odes of victory, commemorating suc- cesses in the great games. The lyric types to which the fragments belong, though it cannot be assumed that the list is complete, are at least numerous and varied.

1. "Yuvo1, Hymns to deities—as to Zeus Ammon, to Persephone, to Fortune. The fragmentary tuvos entitled yBalors seems to have eclebrated the deities of Thebes. 2. Madéves, Pxans, expres- sing prayer or praise for the help of a protecting god, especially Apollo, Artemis, or Zeus. 8. A:ddpauBo:, Dithyrambs, odes of a latty and impassioned strain, sung by choruses in

honour of Dionysus (ep. Pind., Ol. xiii. 18, tal Aiwvicov wdbev etépavev atv Bonddta Xdpires 5:OvpduBw,—where Pindar alludes to the choral form given to the dithyramb, circ. 600 B.c., by Arion,— Bonddrns, “ox-driving,” perhaps meaning “winning an ox as prize”). 4. Wpocdd:a, Processional Songs, choral ehants for worshippers approaching a shrine. One was written by Pindar for the Delians, another for the Mginctans. 5. Map0éva, Choral Songs for Maidens. The referenee in Pind. Pyth, i. 77 to maidens worshipping Cybele and Pan near the poet’s house is illustrated by the faet that one of these Mapéma invoked “ Pan, lord of Areadia, attendant of the Great Mother, watcher of her awful shrine” (fr. 95, Bergk). 6. ‘Yropxjpara, Choral Dance- Songs, adapted to a lively movement, used from an early date in the eult of Apollo, and afterwards in that of other gods, especially Dionysus. ‘To this elass belongs one of the finest fragments (107), written for the Thebans in connexion with propitiatory rites after

_an eclipse of the sun, probably that of April 30, 463 B.c. 7.

Eyxduia, Songs of Praise (for men, while Suvo: were for gods), to be sung by a xa@uos, or festal eompany. In strictness éyedmuiov was the genus of whieh émvtxioy was a speeies ; but the latter is more conveniently treated as a distinet kind. Pindar wrote eneomia for Theron, despot of Acragas, and for Alexander J. (son

of Amyntas), king of Maeedon. 8. ZxddAra, Festal Songs. The

3 Compare Jebb, Attic Orators, vol. ii. p. 148.

Works.

Frag- ments.

100 1 le

usual sense of oxddcoy is a drinking-song, taken up by one guest after another at a’ banquet. But Pindar’s oxéAca were choral and antistrophic. One was to be sung at Corinth by a chorus of the fepdSovAor attached to

the temple of Aphrodite Ourania, when a certain Xenophon offered sacrifice before going to compete at Olympia. Another brilliant fragment, for Theoxenus of j Tenedos, has an erotic character. 9. pfjvos, Dirges, to be sung with choral dance and the music of the flute, either at the burial of the dead or in commemorative rituals. Some of the most beautiful fragments belong to this class (129-133). One of the smaller fragments (187) —in memory of an Athenian who had been initiated into the Eleusinian mysteries (i3» xetva)—has been conjecturally referred to the pfvos which Pindar is said to have written (schol. Pyth. vii. 18) for Hippocrates, the grandfather of Pericles. A number of small fragments, which cannot be certainly classified, are usually given as éf ad#awy eidav, “of uncertain class.” On comparing the above list with Horace, Carm.iv. 2, it will be seen that he alludes to No. 3 (dithyrambos) ; to Nos. 1, 2, and 7 (sew deos regesve canit);

|

DAR

mixing wine in a bowl, and many morc. (¢) Homely images, from common life, are not rare; as from account keeping, usury, sending merchandise over sea, the oKutahy or secret despatch, &c. And we have such homely pro- verbs as, “he hath his foot in this shoe,” @e., stands in this case (Ol. vi. 8). (jf) The natural order of words ina sentence is often boldly deranged, while, on the other hand, the syntax is seldom difficult. (g) Words not found except in Pindar are numerous, many of these being com- pounds which (like évapiuPporos, xarapvAdopoeww, ke.) suited the dactylic metres in their Pindaric combina- tions. Horace was right in speaking of Pindar’s “ nova verba,” though they were not confined to the “bold dithyrambs.”

2. The actual victory which gave occasion for the ode Treat.

. Lt pUv aptum Plorat),—as well as | . : : ; 3 he ae Ta eieies oe “Title ae aie ie Palma | 18 seldom treated at length or in detail,—which, indeed, meutot ceolestes). only exceptional incidents could justify. Pindar’s method”

The The Epinicia.—The émuixia (sc. pédy), or émwvixcot (sc. | is to take some heroic myth, or group of myths, i extaut Juvor), “Odes of Victory,”

form a collection of forty- connected with the victor’s city or family, and, after | odes. four odes, traditionally divided into four books, answering | a brief prelude, to enter on this, returning at the } to the four great festivals:— (1) “OAvpmuovixat (sc. tuvor): | close, as a rule, to the subject of the victor’s merit or good , fourteen odes for winners of the wild olive-wreath in the | fortune, and interspersing the whole with moral comment. , Olympian games, held at Olympia in honour of Zeus | Thus the fourth Pythian is for Arcesilas, king of Cyrene, , once in four years; (2) v@sovicar: twelve odes for win- | which was said to have been founded by men of Thera, | ners of the laurel-wreath in the Pythian games held at | descendants of one of Jason’s comrades. Using this link, ; Delphi in honour of Apollo, once in four years, the third | Pindar introduces his splendid narrative of the Argonauts. of each Olympiad; (3) Neweovixac: seven odes for winners | Many odes, again, contain shorter mythical episodes,—(as : of the pine-wreath in the Nemean games, held at Nemea, | the birth of Jamus (OV. vi), or the vision of Bellerophon , in honour of Zeus, once in two years, the second and | (Ol. xiii),—which form small pictures of masterly finish | fourth of each Olympiad; and (4) “IcOpuovixar: eleven | and beauty. Particular notice is due to the skill with | odes for winners of the parsley wreath in the Isthmian | which Pindar often manages the return from a mythical } games, held at the Isthmus of Corinth, in honour of | digression to his immediate theme. It is bold and swift, yet | Poseidon, once in two years, the first and third of each | is not felt as harshly abrupt—justifying his own phrase at i Olympiad. The Greck way of citing an ode is by the | one such turn, kai twa olpov toape Bpaxdv (Pyth. iv. 247). nomin. plur. followed by the numeral, eg., “the ninth | It has been thought that, in the parenthesis about the Olympian” is ’Odvpriovica 6’. The chronological range | Amazons’ shields (quibus Mos wnde deductus . . . quarere | of the collection (so far as ascertainable) is from 502 z.c. | déstulé, Carm. iv. 4, 17), Horace was imitating a Pindaric | (Pyth. x.) to 452 B.c. (Ol. v.). With respect to the native | transition ; if so, he has illustrated his own observation as places of the victors, the geographical distribution is as | to the peril of imitating the Theban poet. follows :—for the mainland of Greece proper, 13 odes ; for 3. (a) The religious feeling of Pindar is strongly marked Senti- Aigina, 11; for Sicily, 15; for the Epizephyrian Locrians | in the odes. “From the gods are all means of human a (southern Italy), 2; for Cyrene (Africa), 3. excellence.” He will not believe that the gods, when

they om The gencral characteristics of the odes may be briefly | dined with Tantalus, ate his son Pelops ; rather Poseidon tigious; considered under the following heads :—(1) language ; (2) | carried off the youth to Olympus. That is, his reason for f treatment of theme ; (3) sentiment—religious, moral, and | rejecting a scandalous story about the gods is purely political ; (4) relation to contemporary art. religious, as distinct from moral; it shocks his conception aoe 1. The diction of Pindar is distinct in character from | of the divine dignity. With regard to oracles, he guase that of every other Greek poet, being almost everywhere | inculcates precisely such a view as would have been most marked by the greatest imaginative boldness. ‘hus (a) | acceptable to the Delphic priesthood, viz. that the gods metaphor is used even for the expression of common ideas, | do illumine their prophets, but that human wit can or the translation of familiar phrases, as when a cloak is | foresee nothing which the gods do not choose to reveal. called eidcavov pap paKov aipav (Ol. ix. 104), “a warm | A mystical doctrine of the soul’s destiny after death ‘ remedy for winds.” (6) Images for the highest excellence | appears in some passages (as Ol. i. 66 sg.). Pindar ! are drawn from the furthest limits of travel or navigation, | was familiar with the idea of metempsychosis (cp. . or from the fairest of natural objects; as when the | #. 83), but the attempt to trace Pythagoreanism in superlative hospitality of a man who kept open house | some phrases (Pyth. ii. 34, iii. 74) appears unsafe. | 5 the a ae is described by saying, * far as to The belief in a fully conscious existence for the soul | a a = ins in summer days, and in winter | in a future state, determined by the character of the ae eres 4 ile” (Isthm. ii. 42) ; or when Olympia, | earthly life, entered into the teaching of the Elcusimian the “crown” (xopudd) or flower (dwros) of festivals, is

said to be excclent as water, bright as gold, brilliant as the noonday sun (O/. i. ad init.). This trait might be called the Pindarie imagery of the superlative. (e) Poetical inversion of ordinary phrase is frequent; as instead of, “he struck fear into the beasts,” “lhe gave the beasts to fear” (Pyth. v. 56). (d) The efforts of the poet’s genius are represented under an extraordinary number eee borrowed from javelin-throwing, chariot riving, leaping, rowing, sailin loughing, buildin shooting with the bow, slieapeatite a Sait ou ee an

and othcr mysteries. Comparing the fragment of the @pfvos (no. 137, Bergk), we may probably regard the mystic or esoteric element in Pindar's theology as due to such a source.

(6) The moral sentiment pervading Pindar's odes rest on a constant recognition of the limits imposed by the divine will on human effort, combined with strenuots exhortation that each man should strive to reach the limit allowed in his own casc. Native temperament ($vy) is the grand source of all human excellence (aper#), while such excellences as can be acquired by

g moral ;

a, 7

M Re! ion

art.

;

O° he was an exquisite artist.

| ber 1 ar

PIN DAR

study (SSaxrat dperai, Ol. ix. 100) are of relatively small scope—the sentiment, we may remark, of one whose thoughts were habitually conversant with the native quali- ' ties of a poet on the one hand and of an athlete on the other. The elements of ty/es dABo0s—" sane happiness," such as has least reason to dread the jealousy of the gods,

are substance sufficing for daily wants and good repute

(edroyia). He who has these should not "seek to be a god." " Wealth set with virtues" (aAotdros dperats

SeSaSadpévos), as gold with precious gems, is the most fortunate lot, because it affords the amplest opportunities for honourable activity. Pindar does not rise above the ethical standard of an age which said, “ love thy friend and hate thy foe” (cp. Pyth. ii, 83; Isthm, iii, 65). But in one sense he has a moral elevation which is distinctively his own; he is the glowing prophet of generous emulation and of reverent self-control. |. (c) The political sentiments of the Theban poet are suggested by Pyth. xi. 53; “In polities I find the middle state crowned with more enduring good; there-fore praise I not the despot’s portion; those virtues move my zeal which serve the folk.” If in Pyth. ii. 86 a democracy is described as 6 AdBpos orpards, “ the raging crowd,” it is to be noted that the ode is for Hicro of Syracuse, and that the phrase clearly refers to the violence of those democratic revolutions which, in the early part of the 5th century B.c., more than once convulsed Sicilian cities. At Thebes, after the Persian wars, a “ constitu- tional oligarchy” (dAtyapxia icdvopos, Thue. iii. 62) had replaced the narrower and less temperate oligarchy of former days (Svwvacreia ov pera vouwv); and in this we may probably recognize the phase of Greek political life most congenial to Pindar. He speaks of a king’s lot as unique in its opportunities (Ol, i. 113); he sketches the character of an ideal king (Pyth. iii. 71) ; but nothing in his poetry implies liking for the ruparvis as a form of government. Towards the Greek princes of Sicily and Cyrene his tone is ever one of manly independence ; he speaks as a Greek citizen whose lineage places him on a level with the proudest of the Dorian race; and whose office invests him with an almost sacred dignity. In regard to the politics of Hellas at large, Pindar makes us feel the new sense of leisure for quiet pursuits and civilizing arts which came after the Persian wars. He honours “Tranquillity, the friend of cities” (“Acvxia pirdrohis, Ol. iv. 16). The epic poet sang of wars ; Pindar celebrates the “ rivalries of peace.” 4, Pindar’s genius was boldly original ; at the same time \ “Mine be it to invent new strains, mine the skill to hold my course in the chariot of the Muses; and may courage go with me, and power of ample grasp” (réApa dé Kat éupradis Svvapus €oroito, Ol. ix. 80). Here we see the exulting sense of inborn strength ; in many other places we perceive the feeling of conscious art—as in the phrase duddAdeuv, so apt for his method of in- laying an ode with mythical subjects, or when he compares the opening of a song to the front of a stately building (Ol. vi. 3). Pindar’s sympathy with external nature was deeper and keener than is often discernible in the poetry of his

age. It appears, for example, in his welcome of the season when “the chamber of the Hours is opened, and delicate plants perceive the fragrant spring” (fr. 75); in the passage where Jason invokes “ the rushing strength of waves and winds, and the nights, and the paths of the deep” (Pyth. iv. 194); in the lines on the eclipse of the sun (fr. 107); and in the picture of the eruption, when Etna, “ pillar of the sky, nurse of keen snow all the year,” sends forth “pure springs of fire unapproachable ” (Pyth. 1, 20). The poet’s feeling for colour is often noticeable,

~—as in the beautiful story of the birth of Jamus—when

101

Evadne lays aside her silver pitcher and her girdle of scarlet web; the babe is found, “ its delicate body steeped in the golden and deep purple rays of pansies ” (Ol. vi. 55).

The spirit of art, in every form, is represented for Pindar by xdprs—“ the source of all delights to mortals” (Ol. i. 30)—or by the personified Charites (Graces). The Charites were often represented as young maidens, decking themselves with early flowers—the rose, in particular, being sacred to them as well as to Aphrodite. In Pindar’s mind, as in the old Greek conception from which the worship of the Charites sprang, the instinct of beautiful art was inseparable from the sense of natural beauty. The Sculp- period from 500 to 460 B.c., to which most of Pindar’s ture. extant odes belong, marked a stage in the development of Greek sculpture. The schools of Argos, Sicyon, and Aigina were effecting a transition from archaic types to the art which was afterwards matured in the age of Phidias. Olympia forms the central link between Pindar’s poetry and Greek sculpture. From about 560 B.c. onwards, sculpture had been applied to the commemoration of athletes, chiefly at Olympia. In a striking passage (Vem. v. ad init.) Pindar recognizes sculpture and poctry as sister arts employed in the commemoration of the athlete, and contrasts the merely local effect of the statue with the wide diffusion of the poem. “No sculptor I, to fashion images that shall stand idly on one pedestal for aye ; no, go thou forth from /Zgina, sweet song of mine, on every freighted ship, on each light bark.” Many particular subjects were common to Pindar and contemporary sculp- ture. Thus (1) the sculptures on the east pediment of the temple at Aigina

represented Heracles coming to seek the aid of Telamon against Troy—a theme brilliantly treated by Pindar in the fifth Isthmian ; (2) Hiero's victory in the chariot-race was commemorated at Olympia by the joint work of the sculptors Onatas and Calamis ; (3) the Gigan- tomachia, (4) the wedding of Heracles and Hebe, (5) the war of the Centaurs with the Lapithz, and (6) a contest between Heracles and Apollo are instances of mythical material treated alike by the poet and by sculptors of his day. The contemporary improvements in town architecture, introducing spacious and well-paved streets, such as the oxupwry dds at Cyrene (Pyth. v. 87), suggest his frequent comparison of the paths of song to broad and stately causeways (7Aaretat mpoa0dor— Exar o7redou xéerevdor, Vem. vi. 47, v. 22). A song is likened to cunning work which blends gold, ivory, and coral (Vem. vii. 78). Pindar's feel- ing that poetry, though essentially a divine gift, has a technical side (codéa), and that on this side it has had an historical development like that of other arts, is forcibly illustrated by his reference to the inventions (codiopara.) for which Corinth had early been famous. He instances (1) the development of the dithyramb, (2) certain im- provements in the harnessing and driving of horses, and (3) the addition of the pediment to temples (Ol. xiil.).

In the development of Greek lyric poetry two periods are Pindar' broadly distinguished. During the first, from about 600 place in to 500 B.c., lyric poetry is local or tribal—as Alcaus and ties Sappho write for Lesbians, Aleman and Stesichorus for ture, Dorians. During the second period, which takes its rise in the sense of Hellenic unity created by the Persian wars, the lyric poet addresses all Greece. Pindar and Simonides are the great representatives of this second period, to which Bacchylides, the nephew of Simonides, also belongs. These, with a few minor poets, are classed by German writers as die universalen Meliker. The Greeks usually spoke, not of "lyric," but of "melic" poetry (1.¢., meant to be sung, and not, like the epic, recited) ; and " uni- versal melic" is lyric poetry addressed to all Greece. But Pindar is more than the chief extant lyrist. Epic, lyric, and dramatic poetry succeeded each other in Greek litera-

Manu- scripts and editions,

ture by a natural development. Each of them was the spontaneous utterance of the age which brought it forth. In Pindar we can see that phase of the Greek mind which produced Homeric epos passing over into the phase which produced Athenian drama. His spirit is often thoroughly dramatic—witness such scenes as the interview between Jason and Pelias (Pyth. iv.), the meeting of Apollo and Chiron (Pyth. ix.), the episode of Castor and Polydeuces (Nem. x.), the entertainment of Heracles by Telamon (Isthm. v.). Epic narrative alone was no longer enough for the men who had known that great trilogy of national life, the Persian invasions ; they longed to see the heroes moving and to hear them speaking. The poet of Olympia, accustomed to see beautiful forms in vivid action or vivid art, was well fitted to be the lyric interpreter of the new dramatic impulse. Pindar has more of the Homeric spirit than any Greek lyric poet known tous. On the other side, he has a genuine, if less evident, kinship with Eschylus and Sophocles. Pindar's work, like Olympia itself, illustrates the spiritual unity of Greek art.

The fact that eertain glosses and lacunz are common to all our MSS. of Pindar make it probable that these MSS. are derived from a common

archetype. ‘Now the older scholia on Pindar, which appear to have been compiled mainly from the commentaries of Didymus (cire. 15 B.c.), sometimes presuppose a purer text than ours. But the compiler of these older scholia lived after Herodian (160 A.p.). The arehetype of our MSS., then, cannot have been older than the end of the 2d century. Our MSS. fall into two general classes :—(1) the older, representing a text which, though often corrupt, is comparatively free from interpolations; (2) the later, which exhibit the traces of a Byzantine recension, in other words, of lawless conjecture, down to the i4th or 15th century. To the first class belong Parisinus 7, breaking off in Pyth. v.; Ambrosianus 1, which has only Ol. i. —xii.; Mediceus 2; and Vati- canus 2,—the two last-named being of the highest value. The editio princeps is the Aldine, Venice, 1518. A modern study of Pindar may be almost said to have begun with Heyne’s edition (1773). Hermann did much to advance Pindaric criticism. But Augustus Boeckh (1811-22), who was assisted in the commentary by L. Dissen, is justly regarded as the founder of a seientific treat- ment of the poet. The edition of Theodor Bergk (Poet. Lyr.) is marked by considerable boldness of conjecture, as that of Tycho Mommisen (1864) by a sometimes excessive adherence to MSS. A recension by W. Christ has been published in Teubner’s series (1879). The edition of J. W. Donaldson (Cambridge, 1841) has many merits; but that of C. A. M. Fennell (Cambridge, 1879-83) is better adapted to the needs of English students. The transla- tion into English prose by Ernest Myers (2d ed., 1883) is excellent. Pindar’s metres have been analysed by J. H. Schmidt in Die Kunstformen der Griechischen Poesie (Leipsie, 1868-72). For esti- mates of Pindar see the histories of Greek literature by G. Bern- hardy, K. O. Miiller, Nicolai, and E. Burnout. (R. C. J.)

PINE (Pinus, Gr. mirvs), a name given by the ancients to some of the resinous cone-bearing trees to which it is now applied, and, as limited by modern botanists, the designation of a large genus of true conifers (Abietinz), differing from the firs in their hard woody cone-scales being thickened at the apex, and in their slender needle-shaped leaves growing from a membranous sheath, either in pairs or from three to five together, — each tuft representing an abortive branch, springing from the axil of a partially deciduous scale-leaf, the base of which remains closely adherent to the stem. The numer. ous male catkins are generally arranged in dense

whorls around the bases of the young shoots; the anther-scales, surmounted by a crest-like appendage, shed their abund- ant pollen by longitudinal slits; the two ovules at the base of the inner side of each fertile cone-scale develop into a pair of winged seeds, which drop from the opening scales when mature—as in the allied genera.

The pines are widely distributed over the north temperate zone, in the southern portions chiefly confined to the mountains, along which, in Central America, a few are found within the tropic ;, In more northern regions they frequently form extensive forests, sometimes hardly mingled with other trees. Their soft, straight-grained,

resinous, and often durable wood gives to many kinds q

high economic value, and some are among the most esteemed of timber trees. | Of the two-leaved species, P. sylvestris, the pine of northern Europe, may~be taken as a type. in perfection it is one of the finest of the group, and perhaps the most picturesque of forest trees ; attaining a height of from 70 to 120 feet, it is of conical growth

when young, but in maturity acquires a spreading’ cedar _

or mushroom-like top, with a straight trunk of from 2 to 4 feet in diameter at the base, and gnarled twisted boughs, densely clothed at the extremities with glaucous green foliage, which contrasts strongly with the fiery red-brown bark. The leaves are rather short, curved, and often

wl

Fic. 1.—Seotch Fir (Pinus sylvestris). a, male flower and young eones ; 0, male eatkin ; ¢, d, outer and inner side of anther-seale.

twisted ; the male catkins, in dense cylindrical whorls, fill the air of the forest with their sulphur-like pollen in May or June, and fecundate the purple female flowers, which, at first sessile and erect, then become recurved on a lengthening stalk ; the ovate cones, about the length of the

leaves, do not reach maturity until the autumn of the following year, and the seeds are seldom scattered until the third spring; the cone scales terminate in a pyramidal recurved point, well-marked in the green state and im some varieties in the mature cone, but in others scarcely projecting. P. sylvestris is found, in greater or less abund- ance, from the hills of Finmark and the plains of Bothnia to the mountains of Spain and even the higher forest-slopes of Etna, while in longitude its range extends from the shores of the North Sea to Kamchatka. Nowhere more abundant than in the Scandinavian peninsula, this tree 18 the true fir (fur, fura) of the old Norsemen, and still re-

When growing’

| |

7 Pri Wie

tains the name among their descendants in Britain, though botanically now classed as a pine. It grows vigorously in Lapland on the lower ground, and is found even at an elevation of 700 feet, while in south Norway it occurs up to 3000 feet, though the great forests from which “Norway pine ” timber is chiefly derived are on the com- paratively lower slopes of the south-eastern dales ; in the highest situations it dwindles to a mere bush. In Germany, both on the mountains and the sandy plains, woods of “Kiefer” are frequent and widely spread, while vast forests in Russia and Poland are chiefly composed of this species; in many northern habitats it is associated with the spruce and birch.. In Asia it abounds in Siberia and on the mountains of Dahuria ; on the European Alps it occurs at a height of 5600 feet, and on the Pyrenees it is found at still higher elevations ; on the northern side of Etna it is

a ads

Fic. 2.—Scotch Fir (Pinus sylvestris). a, fertile flower of mature cone; b, winged seed; c, fertile catkin (or cone); d, scale and bract ; ¢, inner side of scale.

said to grow at above 7000 feet. In Britain natural

forests of Scotch fir of any extent are only now found in

the Highlands, chiefly on the declivities of the Grampians, and most of the great woods have been much curtailed

m recent times, while the larger trees are generally felled

as soon as they attain a timber size. In former ages the

tree covered a large portion of the more northern part of the island, as well as of Ireland; the numerous trunks found everywhere in the mosses and peat-bogs of the northern counties of England attest its abundance there ™m prehistoric times; and in the remoter post-Glacial epoch its range was probably vastly more extended. The tree is not at present indigenous in southern Britain, but when planted in suitable ground multiplies rapidly by the wind-sown seeds ; on many of the sandy moors and

Peni natural pine woods of large extent have been thus

ormed during the last fifty years. The Scotch fir is a very

variable tree, and certain varieties have acquired a higher reputation for the qualities of their timber than others ; among those most prized by foresters is the one called the Braemar pine, the remaining fragments of the great. wood in the Braemar district being chiefly composed of this kind; it is mainly distinguished by its shorter and more glaucous leaves and ovoid cones with blunt recurved spines, and especially by the early horizontal growth of its ultimately drooping boughs ; of all varieties this is the most pictur- esque. On the Continent the Hagenau pine of Westphalia is esteemed for the straightness and good quality of its timber. The heart-wood of the finer kinds of Scotch fir is of a deep brownish-red colour, abounding in the resin to which its durability is probably due. For all indoor and most outdoor purposes it is as lasting as oak, and for ship planking is perhaps little inferior; from its lightness and elasticity it is well adapted for the construction of yachts and other small fast-sailing craft, and is said to be the best of all wood for masts and large spars; its weight varies from 30 to 40 tb

the cubic foot. The sap-wood is more perishable, but is useful for fences, easks, and a variety of other purposes; soaking in lime-water renders it more lasting; great numbers of young pines are annually cut for railway sleepers, mining timber, and numerous agricultural applications; large quantities are consumed in forming the wood-pavement which in the great towns is rapidly superseding stone. The quality of the timber depends greatly on the soil and position in which the trees are grown: the dry slopes of granitic or gneissic mountains, or the deep well-drained sandy gravels of the lower country seem to answer equally well; but on clay or wet peat the tree rarely flourishes, and the timber is always indifferent; it is usually said that the wood is best in the cold climate of its more northern habitats, but the writer has seen a trunk (4 feet in diameter) grown on the sands of Surrey with heart-wood quite equal to any produced in Glenmore or Rothiemurchus. The rapidity of growth is still more variable: in Britain full maturity is attained in from seventy to one hundred and twenty years, but in Norway the trunk Increases much more slowly ; Schiibeler states that a tree felled in the Alten district (about 70° lat.), measuring 2 feet 10 inches in diameter without the bark, showed four hundred circles of annual growth. In Norway the tree, growing in dense forests, is generally of but moderate girth, and prob- ably this pine nowhere reaches a greater size than in the Scottish woods ; a plank from Glenmore forest measured nearly 54 feet across, and from 3 to 44 feet is not an unusual diameter for a British pine tree.

Vast numbers of Scotch firs are raised in nurseries for artificial planting ; the seed is sown in the spring, being just covered with earth, and the seedlings transplanted in the second year into rows for further culture, or taken direct from the seed-bed for final planting ; sometimes the seed is sown where the trees are intended to grow. A plantation of Scotch fir requires frequent and careful thinning as the young trees increase in size; but pruning should be avoided as much as possible, excepting for the removal of dead wood. Plantations in England are generally ready for final cutting in from sixty to seventy years, and many are cleared at a much earlier stage of growth. P. sylvestris in Britain is liable to many insect depredations: the pine-chafer, Hy/urgus piniperda, is de- structive in some places, the larva of this beetle feeding on the young succulent shoots, especially in young planta- tions ; Hylobius abietis, the fir-weevil, eats

away the bark, and numerous lepidopterous larva devour the leaves ; the pine-sawfly is also injurious in some seasons; the removal of all dead branches from the trees and from the ground beneath them is recommended as most of these

insects lay their eggs among the decaying bark and dead leaves. “nurse” for oak trees, its conical growth when young admirably adapting it for this purpose ; its dense foliage renders it valuable as a shelter tree for protecting land from the wind; it stands the sea gales better than most conifers, but will not flourish on the shore like some other species. As fuel the wood of the Scotch fir is of value, but it makes too much black smoke to form an agreeable open fire; the small trunks and cuttings of plantations are employed by the lime-burner.

The pine is an important tree in the economy of the northern nations of Europe. In Scandinavia and Russia houses are chiefly constructed of its timber; and log-huts are made of the smaller trunks, and lined and roofed with the bark. ‘The inner bark is twisted into ropes, and, like that of the spruce, is kiln dried, ground up, and mixed with meal in times of scarcity; in Kamchatka it is macerated in water, then pounded, and made into a kind of substitute for bread without any admixture of flour. In recent days the fibre of the leaves has been extracted in some quantity and applied to textile purposes under the name of waldwolle, both in Germany and Sweden. It is prepared by boiling the ueedles in a solution of soda to remove tle resin, which process loosens the fibre and renders its separation easy; it has some resemblance to coarse wool, and is spun and woven into blankets and garments that are said to be warm and durable ; it is also used for stuffing cushions; an essential oil, obtained by a previous distillation of the leaves, has medicinal virtues attributed to it by some German practitioners.

Large quantities of turpentine are extracted from this pine in Sweden and Russia by removing a strip of bark, terminating below in a deep notch cut in the wood, into which the turpentine runs, and from which it is scooped as it accumulates ; but the product is not equal to that of the silver fir and other species. Tar is prepared largely from P. sylvestris; it is chiefly obtained from the roots, which, mingled with a few logs, are arranged in a conical or

funnel-shaped hollow made on the steep side of a hill or bank; after filling up, the whole is covered with turf and fired at the top, when the tar exudes slowly and runs into an iron vessel placed below, from the spout of which it is conveyed into barrels. Most of the so-called Stockholin tar is thus prepared, chiefly in the province of Bothnia.

Closely allied to the Scotch pine, and perhaps to be regarded as a mere alpine form of that species, is the dwarf P. Pumilio, the “krummholz” or “knicholz” of the Germans,—a recumbent bush, generally only a few feet high, but with long zigzag stems, that root occasionally at the knce-like bends where they rest upon the ground. The foliage much resembles that of the Scotch fir, but is shorter, denser, and more rigid; the cones are smaller but similar in form. Abounding on the higher slopes of the Bavarian aul] Tyrolese Alps, it is a favourite shelter for the chamois; the hunters call it the “latschen,” from its recumbent straggling habit. Krummbolz oil, valued in Germany as an outward applica- tion in rlicumatism and for bruises and sprains, is distilled from the young branches, and a fragrant white resin that exudes in some quantity from the buds is used for similar purposes and as a perfume ; under the name of Hungarian balsam it is sold in the towns of Germany, being probably obtained from the Carpathians.

The Red Pine of Canada and New England (so called from the colour of its bark), P. resinosa, is a tree of considerable size, some- times attaining the dimensions of P. sylvestris. The somewhat glaucous leaves form dense tufts at the ends of the branches, and are 4 or 5 inches long; the ovate blunt cones are about half that vlength. The tree is of quick growth and the wood strong and resinous, but it is less durable than Scotch fir, though much employed in shipbuilding ; according to Emerson, trunks exist in Maine 4 fect in diameter. A sandy soil seems to suit it best, and the quality of the wood probably much depends on its place of growth, Red pines abound in Nova Scotia and Newfoundland and the tree is rather widely distributed over the northern parts of the continent ; it rarely forms extensive woods, but grows chiefly in clumps among other trees, at least in its more southern habitats. Nearly allied is P. Banksiana, the Grey or Labrador Pine, some-

In England the pine is largely employed as a |

Pt he

times called the Scrub Pine from its dwarfish habit; it is the most northerly representative of the genus in America, and is chief remarkable for its much recurved and twisted cones, about 2 inches long. ‘he trunks are too small to be of great economic value, but the light wood is used by the natives for their canoes.

P. Larieio, the Corsican Pine, is one of the noblest trees of this group, growiug to a height of 100 or even 150 feet, with a straight trunk and branches in regular whorls, forming in large trees pyramidal head ; the slender leaves, of a dark green tint, are from 4 to 7 inches long; the cones, either in pairs or several together, project horizontally, and are of a light brown colour. This pine abounds in Corsica, and is found in more or less abundance ip Spain, southern France, Greece, and many Mediterranean countries; it occurs on the higher mountains of Cyprus. The trec is of very rapid growth, but produces good timber, much used in southern dockyards and very durable, though less strong than that of P. sylvestris ; the heart-wood is of a brownish tint. In southern France it has been planted with success on the drift-sands of the Bay of Biscay, though it does not bear the full force of the sea. blast as well as the pinaster. In England it grows well in sheltered sitnations and well-drained soils.

The Black Pine, P. austriaea, derives its name from the extreme

| depth of its foliage tints,—the sharp, rigid, rather long leaves lp

dark green hue giving a sombre aspect to the tree. The ligl

coloured, glossy, horizontal cones are generally in pairs, but some- times three or four together. The tree is conical when young, but when old forms a spreading head ; it often attains a large size,

| Southern Austria and the adjacent countries are the natural

habitats of this pine; it seems to flourish best on rocky mountain sides, but in England grows well on sandy soils. ‘The timber is valued in its native country, and is said to be durable and to stand exposure to the weather well; various resinous products are extracted fromit. P. pyrenaica isa handsome species of pyramidal form, attaining a large size on the mountains of

northern Spain. The lcaves are long and of a light bright green ; the cones are soli- tary, oblong, conical, and ofa yellow tint. The timber is used in Spanish dockyards, but opinions vary as to its quality. In planta- tions its bright foliage, with the orange cones and young shoots, render it an oraamental tree, hardy in southern Britain. Near to

| the above are P. Pallasiana or maritima, and P, halepensis, Medi-

terranean forms chiefly valued for their resinous products; the former, planted on the loose sands of France, supplies much turpentine and resin.

P. Pinaster, the Cluster Pine or Pinastcr, is an important species from its vigorous growth in the sand-drifts of the coast, for the purpose of binding which it has been grown more extensively and successfully than any other tree, especially on the dunes of the Bay of Biscay. Growing to a height of from 40 to 70 feet, the deeply-furrowed trunk occasionally reaches a diameter of 3 feet or more at the base, where, like most sand trees, it usually curves upward gradually, a form that enables the long tap-roots to with- stand better the strain of the sea gale; when once established, the tree is rarely overthrown even on the loosest sand. The branches

| curve upwards like the stem, with their thick covering of long dark | green leaves, giving a massive rounded outline to the tree; the

ovate cones are from 4 to 6 inches long, of a light shining brown hue, with thick scales terminating in a pyramidal apex; they are arranged around the branches in the radiating clusters that give name to the tree. The pinaster grows naturally on sandy soils around the Mediterranean from Spain to the Levant. On the drift-sands of France, especially in the Gironde, forests have been formed mainly of this pine; the seeds, sown at first under proper shelter and protected by a thick growth of broom sown simultaneously, vegetate rapidly in the sca-sand, and tho trees thus raised have, by their wind-drifted seed, covered much of the former desert of the Landes with an evergreen wood. These forests of pinaster, apart from the production of timber in a once treeless district, have a great economic value as a source of turpen- tine, which is largely obtained from the trees by a process analogous to that employed in its collection from P. sylvestris; the resm 1s yielded from May to the end of September, the cuts being renewed as the supply

fails, until the tree is exhausted; the trunks are then felled and used in the manufacture of charcoal and lamp black; much tar and pitch is also obtained from these pinaster forests. In England the cluster-pine has been largely planted on sandy districts near the sea, and has become naturalized in Purbeek and other wild tracts in the southern countics, but the summer heat 1s too small to permit of its resinous products acquiring any value; the soft coarse wood, though perishable in the natural state, has been used for railway sleepers after saturation with creosote oF preservative solutions. P. bruttia, the Calabrian Pine, a kindred form, is remarkable for its numerous densely clustered radiating cones; its wood is considered good in southern Italy.

P. Pinea is the Stone-Pine of Italy; its spreading rounded canopy of light green foliage, supported on a tall and often braneh- less trunk, forms a striking feature of the landscape in that country, as well as in some other Mediterrancan lands. The beautiful

food or dessert. 1 ; y ‘kept in the cone until required, as their abundant oil soon turns

we

.

PINE

reddish-brown shining-cones, roundly ovate in shape, with pyrami- dal scale apices, have been prized from the ancient days of Rome for their edible nut-like seeds, which are still used as an article of They do not ripen until the fourth year, and are

rancid. The tree has been naturalized in many warm countries, even in China; in England it seldom attains any large size, as the deficient summer heat preveuts the wood from maturing; but trees occur occasionally in plantations 20 or 30 feet in height ; the wood, though soft and deficient in the resin that gives durability to the timber of some species, is valued by the southern carpenter and cabinetmaker for its lightness, its fineness of grain, and the ease with which it is worked. ‘

P. mitis, the Yellow Pine ofthe northern and middle States of America, is rather allied to the three-leaved section, but the leaves are mostly in pairs. It is a tree of large size, often attaining a height of 70 feet and upwards, though rarely more than 2 feet in diameter at the root; the lower branches spread horizontally, the upper, converging towards the trunk, give the tree somewhat the aspect of a spruce, hence it is called in some districts the " spruce- pine." The leaves are long, slender, and of a bluish-green hue ; the pendant cones are about 14 inches long, with a slender point to each scale. The yellow pine is one of the most important timber trees of the genus; the heart-wood being very durable is largely employed in shipbuilding and for house timber, being nearly equal to that of P. sylvestris; large quantities are exported to Britain under the name of "New York yellow pine"; the sapwood is perishable.

The three-leaved group includes several of the most valuable trees of America; among them is P. rigida, the Pitch-Pine of the northern States, a tree of from 40 to 50 feet in height with rugged trunk, occasionally 3 feet in diameter; the short dark-green leaves are in thick tufts, contrasting with the pale yellowish, usually clustered cones, the scales of which are furnished with small curved spines. The wood is very hard and abounds with resin, but on swampy land is of inferior quality and of little value except for fuel, for which the pitch-pine is highly prized; on drier ground the grain is fine from the numerous knots. Large quantities of tar and pitch are obtained from this species. The tree is one of the few that will flourish in salt-marshes,

P. australis is the "Georgia Pitch-Pine," or Yellow Pine of the southern States; it abounds on the sandy soils that cover so much of Georgia, the Carolinas, and Florida, and on those dry lands attains its highest perfection, though occasionally abundant on moist ground, whence it is sometimes called P. palustris. The most marked feature of the tree is its long tufted foliage,—the leaves, of a bright green tint, springing from long white sheaths, being often a foot in length. The tall columnar trunk furnishes the most valued pine timber of the States; close-grained and resinous, it is very durable and polishes well ; it is largely employed in American shipyards, and immense quantities are exported, especially to Britain and the West India Islands. This tree yields an abundant supply of tar and turpentine of

good quality, which products are collected and manufactured in the “ pine-barrens” on a large scale.

P. Tzda, the “ Loblolly Pine” of the backwoodsman, a tall tree with straight trunk and spreading top, covers great tracts of the

pine-barrens ” of the aehesn States, but also frequently spreads over deserted arable lands that have been impoverished by long and

ad farming ; hence the woodsmen call it the “old-field ” pine, while, — the fragrance of its abundant resin, it is also known as the rankincense pine. It is a fine species 80 or 90 feet high, having Sometimes a girth of 6 or 8 feet, with a broad spreading head ; the leaves are rather long and of a light green tint, the cones generally ‘a patrs, the scales terminating in a sharp incurved prickle. The imber of this pine is indifferent, but the forests of it are of import- Pre from the quantity of turpentine they yield ; the trees also urnish much firewood of good quality. e 3 , ad a pine of western America belonging to this section, of ge “4 er tree deserving of notice from the extreme density : Wood, which barely floats in water ; it abounds in some parts ; the western range of the Rocky Mountains. The leaves are very eee twisted, the small oval cones armed with recurved aloes the tree is said to be of rapid growth. In Oregon and oa la several large pines of this group are found. P. Coultert, by oe is remarkable for its enormous cones (sometimes ry ie 6 inches in diameter, and weighing more than 4 Ib); “a = es end in long hooked points curving upwards; the leaves Ps 8, Tigid, and glaucous in hue. Nearly related to this is

j abiniana, the Nut-Pine of California, the cones of which are of pre eon size, also with hooked scales ; the large nut-like seeds occas en by the Indians; the tree is one of the largest of the hi % Sometimes attaining a height of 120 feet and upwards > pa on have been found, it is said, 10 or 12 fect in diameter. of its = Ake Species, is remarkable for the great length points of ‘ong + leaves, of a grass-green tint; the cones have the

Cates recurved, It is known in India as the “ Cheer-

Pine”; the wood is good, resinous, and moderately durable ; the tree iscommon on the foot-hills of the Himalayas. P. Gerardiana, another Nepal species, is a large tree with a conical head, growing on the more elevated parts of the mountain range ; it furnishes edible seeds. The leaves, short and glaucous, like those of the Scotch fir, have deciduous sheaths; the cones have recurved scale-points like those of the cheer-pine. P. eanariensis, which forms forests on the mountains of Grand Canary and Teneriffe, growing at an elevation of 6000 feet, also belongs to this group. ‘The leaves are long, lax, and of a bright green tint; the cone-scales are without spines; the trunk attains a large size, and yields good and durable timber. The beautiful Monterey-Pine, P. insignis, dis- tinguished by the brilliant colour of its foliage, has the leaves in tufts of three or four ; the lower cone-scales have recurved points. This fine pine has been planted in the south-western parts of England, but is scarcely hardy.

The pines with five leaves in each tuft have generally deciduous sheaths. The most important economic species is the well-known White Pinc, P. Strobus, from its large growth and abundance, as well as the soft even grain of its white wood, one of the most valuable of American trees. The tree abounds from Canada to Georgia, and is also found in British Columbia, but in the eastern States has been so long sought for by the lumberer that most of the old trees have long disappeared, and large white pine timber is now only found in quantity in the Canadian Dominion. Formerly Maine and Vermont were celebrated for the size of their pines, but few of these great trees now exist in New England; one that stood near the banks of the Merrimack in New Hampshire is said to have had a trunk nearly 8 feet in diameter, and Michaux measured a stump 6 feet across. On a deep rich soil P. Strobus attains a height of 150 or even 200 feet, and trunks without a branch are sometimes found 80 or 90 feet long; in the earlier stages of growth it has a pyramidal form, in open glades the lower boughs often touching the ground, but in old age it acquires a wide almost cedar-like top. The light bluish-green foliage is somewhat lax, very dense in young trees ; the cones are long and rather curved, with thin smooth scales a little thickened at the apex, and gener- ally more or less covered with exuding white resin ; they are about 5 or 6 inches in length and 14 to 2 inches broad; the male catkins are of a bluish tint ; the cones ripen in the autumn of the second year. The wood of the white pine is durable for indoor use,

especially when protected by paint, but when exposed to moist air it rapidly decays, and it is very liable to dry rot; it is said to be best when grown on sandy soils. Immense quantities are still exported, especially from Canada, its smooth casily-worked grain rendering it a favourite wood for the house-carpenter and joiner; it weighs about 28 fb per cubic foot. In England, where it is generally known as the “ Weymouth Pine,” it succeeds well on deep light soils when well-drained ; trees have attained occasionally a height of 100 feet and upwards in British plantations; but it is apt to be infested with American blight (Zriosoma). In northern Germany it also grows well ; a tree at Berlin measured upwards of 3 metres in circumference, the age being one hundred and fifty years. The climate of Scotland appears less suitable for it, probably from the want of summer heat, and it can hardly be recommended for British planting otherwise than for ornamental purposes.

Nearly approaching this is P. exeelsa, the Bhotan Pine, which differs chiefly in its longer cones and drooping glaucous foliage. It is found in Kumaon and Bhotan and on some of the Nepal ranges, but does not grow in the moist climate of the Sikkim Himalayas; it is found at a height of 6000 to 7000 feet, and attains large dimen- sions; the wood is highly resinous, and is said to be durable; great quantities of a white clear turpentine exude from the brauches when injured. The Bhotan pine is quite hardy in southern England, and has been largely planted of late as an ornamental tree.

P. Lambertiana, the Giant Pine or Sugar- Pine of California, is the largest of the genus, rising to the height of 200 feet, with a trunk 20 to 30 feet in girth, and, it is said, occasionally attaining much larger dimensions. The head is of a pyramidal form, the lower branches drooping like those of a Norway spruce; its foliage is of a light bright green colour. The pendent cones are very large, sometimes 18 inches long and 4 inches in diameter, with large nut- like seeds, which, pounded and baked, are eaten by the Indians. The tree abounds in some sandy districts, but more generally oceurs singly or in small groups dispersed through the woods, attaining its greatest dimensions in light soils. The wood is soft and nearly white, but contains much resin, which when fire has run through the forest exudes, and, having in this half-burnt condition a sweetish taste, has given the common name to the tree; the wood seems to be formed slowly; from its smooth grain it is valued for

indoor carpentry; the saccharine burnt resin is used as a laxative in California.

P. Cembra is the Stone-Pine of Siberia and central Europe. It abounds on the Alps, the Carpathians, and the Siberian ranges, in Switzerland being found at an altitude of 6800 feet in some localities. It is a straight-growing tree, with grey bark and whorls of horizontal branches, growing often from the ground, giving a

cylindro-conical outline ; the leaves are short, rigid, and glaucous; the cones, oblong and rather pointing upwards, grow only near the top of the tree, and ripen in the second autumn; the seeds are oily like those of P. Pinea, and are eaten both on the Alps and by the

inhabitants of Siberia ; a fine oil is expressed from them which is used both for food and in lamps, but, like that of the Italian pine, ‘¢ soon turns rancid. The growth of P. Cembra is slow, but the wood is of remarkably cven grain, and is employed by the Swiss wood-carvers in preference to any other. The Cembra is the “zirbel” or “zirbel-kiefer” of the Germans, and is known locally in Switzer- land as the “aroile,” “aloies,” and “ arve.”

P. occidentalis, a five-leaved pine with pale green foliage and small ovate cones, is found on the high mountains of St Domingo. Many members of the group occur on the Mexican isthmus, one of which, P. cembroides, produces edible seeds. P. Ayacahuite, a large tree growing on the mountains of Guatemala, with glaucous foliage like P. Strobus, yields a valuable resin. P. filifolia and P. macrophylla, likewisc natives of Central America, are remark- able for the extreme length of their leaves ; the former is said to attain a large size. ae)

PINE-APPLE. The pine-apple so-called consists in reality of the inflorescence of the plant, the originally separate flowers of which, together with the bracts sup- porting them, become fleshy and consolidated into one mass. The swelling and fusion of the tissues take place after the process of

fertilization, and it may be that the richly perfumed succulent mass is an aid in the distribu- tion of seed by affording food to certain animals. In the highly developed cultivated pines, however, it frequently happens that the seeds do not ripen properly. The pine, Ananassa sativa, is a member of the Bromeliad family, supposed to be of tropical American origin, and has been found wild in Mexico, Central America, Guiana, and Brazil, but is now widely dispersed in all tropical and semitropical countries.

Evelyn in his Diary mentions tasting a pine-apple from Barbados at the table of Charles II., and this is we believe the first mention of the fruit in English literature. A picture, of which a copy may be seen at the rooms ‘of the Royal Horticultural Society of London, represents the royal gardener, Mr Rose, presenting on bended knee the first pineapple grown in Britain, and it is surmised that this may have been grown from the “suckers” of the fruit above alluded to by Evelyn, though it is generally considered that the pine was not cultivated in England till 1712. In spite of the great improvements in the quality of pines, and the great progress that has been brought about in the rapidity and facility of production, pine- crowing is still attended with considerable expense, and much expenditure of time and labour. At the same time great attention has been given to pine culture in the West India Islands, the Azores, &c., and very large quantities of fruit of fine quality are imported into Britain at relatively low prices. But for pines of the highest flavour in the winter and spring seasons Englishmen must still look to their own gardens. See HorTicuLTURE.

PINEL, PutupreE (1745-1826), a distinguished French physician, was born at the chateau of Rascas, Saint-André in the department of Tarn, France, on April 20, 17 4D. He studied at Lavaur and afterwards at the university of Toulouse, where he took his doctor’s degree in 1773. From Montpellier, where he taught mathematics and at the same time carried on his medical studies, he removed in 1778 to Paris, engaging there chiefly in literary work connected with his profession. His first publication was a French translation of Cullen’s Wosology (1785) ; it was ae os an ae of the works of Baglivi (1788), and aeaneianh a ms ed a Praité medico-philosophique de _—ae i tat seh In 1792 he became head physician i eek a an two years afterwards he received fe peti ie ee rt aan at the Salpétritre, where ae ae oo of clinical lectures ; these 6th ed. 1818), whicl is Nosographie phalosophique CLAS

: , Which was further developed in La Médecine

| clinique (1802). Pinel was made a member of the Insti. tute in 1803, and soon afterwards was appointed professor of pathology in the Ecole de Médecine. Neither as a lecturer nor as an author, however, did he achieve great success, and his enduring fame rests entirely upon the fact that by his courageous action he was among the first to introduce the humane treatment of the insane, removing with his own hands the bonds of patients who had been chained to the wall for years. See vol. xiii. p. 110. He died at Paris on October 26, 1826.

PINEROLO, a city of Italy, in the province of Turin (Piedmont), is built in a straggling manner on a hill-side just above the junction of the valleys of the Chisone and the Lemina, at a height of 1237 feet above the sea, 234 miles by rail south-west of Turin. It is the terminus of the branch railway from Turin by Sangone or Nichellino, and has steam tramways running up to Perosa (12 miles) and south to Saluzzo. ‘Till 1696 it was strongly fortified with a citadel on Santa Brigida, a castle on St Maunizio, and city walls constructed by Thomas I. of Savoy. It has a cathedral (St Donatus), a bishop’s palace, a large semi- nary, a theatre (1842), a hospital (1546), a public hbrary, a cavalry college, a school of music, and a Waldensian chapel and schools. Cotton, silk, wool, and hemp are among the local manufactures. The population of the city was 11,362 in 1871 and 12,003 in 1881 (commune 16,730 and 17,492).

Pinerolo was bestowed on the bishops of Turin by Otho III. in 996; but in 1078 the countess Adelaide made it over to the Bene- dictine abbey of Santa Maria, in whose possession it remained till 1159. Thomas J. of Savoy captured the castle in 1188, and in 1246-the commune formally recognized the supremacy of Savoy. Passing in 1295 into the hands of Philip, son of Thomas III., Pinerolo became his residence and capital, a distinction which it retained under Amadeus VIII. of Savoy, even after the extinction of the separate house of Piedmont in 1418. Francis I. of France obtained possession of the town in his descent into Italy, and tried to secure the allegiance of the people by relieving the woollen trade from taxation; but Emmanuel Philibert received it back from Henry III. in 1574. A second occupation by the French occurred under Cardinal Richelien: the French

language Was imposed on the people, great fortifications were constructed, and the fortress was used as a state prison for such men as Fouquet, De Caumont, and the Man with the Iron Mask. Victor Amadeus bombarded the place in 1693, and ultimately compelled Louis XIV. to relinquish his hold on it; but before the withdrawal of the French troops the defences were demolished and the military importance of Pinerolo brought to a close. In 1748 the town was made a bishop's see. Michele Buniva, pensioned by Victor Emmanuel J. as the introducer of vaccination into Piedmont, was a native of Pinerolo and has a statue in the Piazza del Palazzo. De Grossi and Massi are among the local historians.

PINK. As usually applied this word corresponds 10 a genus of Caryophyllacee, the Dianthus of botanists. It 1s characterized by the presence of opposite simple leaves proceeding from thickened nodes, a cymose inflorescence, a tubular calyx surrounded by a number of overlappmg bracts, a showy corolla of five free long-stalked petals, ten stamens proceeding, together with the petals, from a short stalk supporting the ovary, which latter has two styles and ripens into an oblong pod which splits by two valves. The species are herbaceous or perennial, of low stature, often with very showy flowers. They are natives chiefly of southern Europe and the Mediterranean region, @ few being found in temperate Asia and South Africa. One species only is native to America, and that only in thenorth- west. Four species are wild in Britain, with two others which are more or less naturalized. These two are more interesting as being the originals of the pinks an of the carnations and picotees of English gardens. Garaen Pinks are derivatives from Dianthus plumarius, a native of

central Europe, with leaves rough at the edges, and "a rose-coloured or purplish flowers. The use 0 "pink" to denote a colour is derived from the name of the plant.

PIN—

The Carnation and Picotee are modifications of Dianthus Caryophyllus, the Clove Pink, a species with smooth edges to the leaf. This is a native of Europe, growing on rocks

in the south, but in the north usually found on old walls.

Its occurrence in England on some of the old Norman castles, as at Rochester, is supposed by Canon Ellacombe to indicate its introduction by the Normans; in any case

the plant grows in similar situations in Normandy. The

original species has “ self ”-coloured flowers, that is, flowers of one hue, generally some shade of pink, but the varia- tions in gardens are infinite. The carnation includes those flowers which are streaked or striped lengthwise—the picotees are those in which the petals have a narrow band of colour along the edge, the remainder of the petal being free from stripes or blotches. These by the old writers were called “ gillyflowers” (see vol. x. p. 601). The Sweet William of gardens is a product from Dianthus barbatus ; the Indian Pink comes from D. sinensis, of which D. Heddewigii is a variety; the Alpine Pink, D. alpinus, isa very lovely plant for the rockery; and there are many hybrid and other varieties met with in gardens, for an account of which reference must be made to treatises on horticulture.

PINKERTON, Joun (1758-1826), archeologist, numis- matist, historian, geographer, and miscellaneous writer in prose and verse, was born at Edinburgh, February 17, 1758. After a brief education at Lanark he was articled as a law clerk in Edinburgh, his earliest work, printed during his clerkship, being an Slegy on Craigmillar Castle (1776). In 1780 he removed to London to devote himself to literary work, publishing in 1781 a volume of Fumes of no great merit, and a professed collection of Scottish T’ragic Ballads. These were followed in 1782 by Two Dithyrambic Odes on Enthusiasm and Laughter, and by a series of Zales in Verse. Under the title of Select Scottish Ballads he reissued in 1783 his tragic ballads, with a supplement comprising Ballads of the Comic Kind,— a collection which obtained for him the not wholly appro- priate title of “the second Chatterton.” An Essay on Medals in 1784 won him a considerable reputation, which was in some respects unpleasantly maintained by his bold but eccentric Letters on Literature published in 1785 under the pseudonym of Robert Heron—a temporary adoption of his mother’s surname. In the following year he edited the Ancient Scottish Poems from the MS. Collec- tons of Sir Richard Maitland of Lethington,—a genuine reproduction, though his confession in the preface of forgery in the previous collections

published by him brought groundless suspicion upon it. It was succeeded in 1787 by a compilation, under the new pseudonym of Bennet, entitled the Treasury of Wit, and by his first important historical work, the Dissertation on the Origin and Progress of the Scythians or Goths, to which Gibbon professed himself indebted. Turning his attention to hagiology, Pinkerton next collected and printed in 1789 certain Vite Sanctorum Scotiz, and, a little later, published his Enquiry imto the History of Scotland preceding the Reign of Malcolm III., in which he hoped to settle the ancient history of his country on the solid footing of facts and authorities and “leave nothing in the ink horn.” In Many quarters his attitude towards the Highlanders excited “violent disgust,” but the Enquiry was twice — in 1794 and 1814, and is still of value for the — embodied in it. His edition of Barbour’s

ruce and a Medallic History of England to the Revolution appeared in 1790 3 2 collection of Scottish Poems reprinted J ore ated Editions in 1792 ; and a series of biographical a ee Lconographia Scotica, in the years 1795-97. Scotl es -mentioned year he published a History of

and from the Accession of the [Louse of Stuart to that

rr 107

of Mary, containing valuable material, but almost entirely devoid of literary finish, A new biographical collection, the Gallery of Eminent Persons of Scotland (1799), was succeeded after a short interval by a Modern Geography digested on a New Plan (1802; enlarged, 1807). About this time he left London for Paris, where he chiefly resided until his death on May 10, 1826. His remaining publica- tions were the Recollections of Paris in the years 1802—3- 4-5 (1806); a very useful General Collection of Voyages and Travels (1808-1813); a New Modern Atlas (1809-15); and his Petralogy (1811). An unsuccessful tragedy by him was performed at Edinburgh in 1813.

Pinkerton possessed an exceedingly vigorous and acute mind, but very lacking in high constructive power; and, as he was less patient in the formation of opinion than in research, his best work is marred by imperfect judgments crudely and obstinately asserted. At the same time his writings take no mean rank in the advance towards a scientific treatment of history.

Walpole, notes of whose conversations were published at his death by Pinkerton under the title of Walpoliana, regarded his understanding as “one of the strongest, most manly, and clearest he ever knew;” and Gibbon not only praised his faculty of persistent application as herculean and heroic, but wished to secure his co-operation in a scheme for organizing the materials of early English history. The final verdict upon his work must be that of the Earl of Buchan, who endorsed Pinkerton’s statement that he was “a homo umbratilis, of a hypochondriac unsocial disposition,” with the comment “ se ipse dixtt: it is his best apology; yet undoubtedly he has been a benefactor to literature.”

PINSK, a district town of the government of Minsk, Russia, is situated in a marshy region at the confluence of the Strumefi and Pina rivers, 172 miles to the south-west of Minsk. It has a lyceum, several primary schools, and a great number of Jewish schools. The town is almost entirely built of wood, and has a poor appearance. The population (13,000 in 1865) was in 1884 22,950, more than four-fifths of whom are Jews, who live almost exclusively on trade. This development of trade in a town situated at a distance from all railways (the nearest, that from Moscow to Warsaw, being 60 miles off) is due to the navigable river Pina, which connects it with the fertile regions on the Dnieper, and, by means of the Dnieper-and- Bug Canal, with Poland and Prussia, while the canal of Oginsky connects it with the basin of the Niemen. The merchandise brought from the Dnieper is unshipped at Pinsk, and sent west or north-west on smaller vessels.

Pinsk (Pinesk) is first mentioned in Russian annals in 1097 as a town belonging to Sviatopolk, prince of Kieff. In 1132 it formed part of the Minsk principality, and it often changed its rulers subsequently. After the Mongol invasion it became the chief town of a separate principality, and continued to be so until the end of the 13th century. In 1320 it was annexed to Lithuania ; and in 1569, after the union of Lithuania with Poland, it was recognized as chief town of the province of Brest, During the rebellion of Bogdan Khmelnitzky (1640), as it had fallen into the hands of the Cossacks, the Poles took it by assault, destroying 14,000 persons and burning 5000 houses. Eight years later the town was burned again by the Russians. Charles XII, took it in 1706, and when compelled to quit, burned the palace

of Prince Wisznewecki, and the town with its suburbs. Pinsk was annexed to Russia in 1795.

PINTO, Fernio MeEnpEs (1509(?)-1583), a noted Portuguese adventurer, was born in 1509 or 1510 at Montemor-o-Velho, near Coimbra, and died near Lisbon, July 18, 1583. After spending some years in Lisbon and Setubal, and experiencing various adventures, he left his native country in 1537, in a fleet of five ships, committing himself to a career of adventure at sea, which lasted twenty-one years, in the course of which he was five times shipwrecked, thirteen times taken captive, and seventeen times sold asa slave. If Pinto's own nar- rative is coloured in many passages by a wandering and fervid imagination, its substantial honesty is now generally admitted, in spite of Congreve's opprobrium in Love for Love,—" F. M. Pinto was but a type of thee, thou liar of the first magnitude." The fleet with which Pinto left

Portugal anchored, after various adventures, at Socotra, and he himself was taken captive near the Straits of Babelmandeb, carried to Mocha, sold as a slave, and ran- somed by the Portuguese governor of Ormuz. Returning to the Indies, he was again engaged in several expedi- tions, again enslaved, again ransomed, and again captured by pirates. In 1542 he was engaged in an expedition to Calempin, near Peking, to rifle the tombs of seventeen Chinese kings. Shipwrecked and captured on the Chinese coast, he was set to work in repairing the Great Wall, whence an inroad of Tartars transported him to the siege of Peking and next to Tartary. Hence we follow him to Cochin-China, Macao, and Japan. At Ningpo his report of Japan and its wealth caused the equipment of nine ships, eight of which foundered, Pinto's ship being driven to the Lew-chew Islands. After a variety of other adven- tures, Pinto returned a third time to Japan with Francis Xavier in 1548. In 1553, while at Goa on his return to Portugal with his rich fortune, he was induced to devote nearly all his wealth to the foundation of a seminary for propagating the faith in Japan. Returning to Lisbon in 1558, he spent a few years at court, but found the life very stale after his stirring adventures in the Hast.

The first extant account of his adventures is to be found ina collection of Jesuits' letters published in Italian at Venice in 1565. The full narrative, however, of his life is his own Peregrinagdo, which was first published in quarto at Lisbon in 1614 by Francisco de Herrera. In 1620 appeared a Spanish translation, and in 1628 at Paris a French translation by L. Figuier, followed by two other editions (1645 and 1830). There is also an English translation by H. Cogan (London, 1663 and 1692). See also Barbosa Machado, Bibl. Lusitana ; Fr. da Sylva, Dicionario bibliographico Portugucz ; Castclho, Litcraria Classica Portugueza.

PINTURICCHIO (1454-1513), whose full name was BERNARDINO DI Betti, the son of a citizen of Perugia, Benedetto or Betto di Biagio, was one of a very important group of painters who inherited the artistic traditions and developed the style of the older Perugian painters such as Bonfigli and Fiorenzo di Lorenzo. According to Vasari he was a pupil of Perugino ; and so in one sense no doubt he was, but rather as a paid assistant than as an apprentice. The strong similarity both in design and methods of execution which runs through the works of this later Perugian school, of which Perugino was the oldest member, is very striking ; paintings by Perugino, Pinturicchio, Lo Spagna, and Raphael (in his first manner) may often be mistaken one for the other. In most cases, especially in the execution of large frescos, pupils and assistants had a large share in the work, either in enlarging the master's sketch to the full-sized cartoon, in transferring the cartoon to the wall, or in painting backgrounds, drapery, and other accessories. In this way the spirit and individuality of one man could impress itself indelibly on a numerous school of younger artists.

_ After assisting Perugino in the execution of his frescos in the Sistine Chapel, Pinturicchio was employed by various members of the Della Rovere family and others to decorate a whole series of chapels in the church of S. Maria del Popolo in Rome, where he appears to have worked from 1484, or earlier, to 1492 with little interrup- tion. The earliest of these is an altarpiece of the Adora- tion of the Shepherds, in the first chapel (from the west) on the south, built by Cardinal Domenico della Rovere ; a portrait of the cardinal is introduced as the foremost of the kneeling shepherds. In the lunettes under the vault Pinturicchio painted small scenes from the life of St Jerome. The frescos which he painted in the next chapel, that built by Card.

Innocenzo Cibo, were destroyed in 1700, when the chapel was rebuilt by Card. Alderano Cibo. The third chapel on the south is that of Giov. della Rovere, duke of Sora, nephew of Sixtus IV., and brother of Giuliano, who was afterwards Pope Julius IT.

PI N—

ree

| This contains a fine altarpiece of the Madonna enthroned between Four Saints, and on the east side a very nobly composed fresco of the Assumption of the Virgin. The vault and its lunettes are richly decorated with small pictures of the life of the Virgin, surrounded by graceful arabesques ; and the dado is covered with monochrome paintings of scenes from the lives of saints, medallions with prophets, and very graceful and powerfully drawn female figures in full length, in which the influence of Signorelli may be traced. In the fourth chapel Pinturic- chio painted the Four Latin Doctors in the lunettes of the vault. Most of these frescos are considerably injured by damp, but happily have suffered little from restoration ; the heads are painted with much minuteness of finish, and the whole of the pictures depend very largely for their effect on the final touchings a secco. The last paint- ings completed by Pinturicchio in this church were the frescos on the vault over the retro-choir, a very rich and well-designed piece of decorative work, with main lines arranged to suit their surroundings in a very skilful way. In the centre is an octagonal panel of the Coronation of the Virgin, and round it medallions of the Four Evangelists —the spaces between them being filled up by reclining figures of the Four Sibyls. On each pendentive is a figure of one of the Four Doctors enthroned under a niched canopy. The bands which separate these pictures have elaborate arabesques on a gold ground, and the whole is painted with broad and effective touches, very telling when seen (as is necessarily the case) from a considerable distance below. No finer specimen of the decoration of a simple quadripartite vault can anywhere be seen.

In 1492 Pinturicchio was sumnioned to Orvieto, where he painted two Prophets and two of the Doctors in the duomo. In the following year he returned to Rome, and was employed by Pope Alexander VI. (Borgia) to decorate a suite of six rooms in the Vatican, which Alexander had just built.

These rooms, called after their founder the Appartamenti Borgia, now form part of the Vatican library, and five of them still retain the fine series of frescos with which they were so skilfully decorated by Pin- turicchio. The upper part of the walls and vaults, not only covered with painting, but further enriched with delicate stucco work in relief, are a masterpiece of decorative design applied according to the truest principles of mural ornament,—a much better model for imitation in that respect than the more celebrated Stanze of Raphael immediately over the Borgia rooms. The main subjects are—(1) the Annunciation, the Nativity, the Magi, and the: Resurrection ; (2) Scenes from the lives of St Catherine, St Antony, and other saints; (3) allegorical figures of Music, Arithmetic, and the like ; (4) four figures in half length, with rich arabesques ; (5) figures of the planets, the occupations of the various months, and other subjects. The sixth room was repainted by Perino del Vaga.' _

Though not without interruption, Pinturicchio, assisted by his pupils, worked in these rooms from 1492 till 1498, when they were completed. His other chief frescos m Rome, still existing in a very genuine state, are those m the Cappella Bufalini at the south-west of St Maria in Ara Ceeli, probably executed from 1497 to 1500. These are well-designed compositions, noble in conception, and finished with much care and refinement. On the altar wall 1s@ grand painting of St Bernardino of Siena between two other saints, crowned by angels; in the upper part 18? figure of Christ in a vesica-glory, surrounded by angel musicians ; on the left wall is a large fresco of the miracles done by the corpse of St Bernardino, very rich in colour, and full of very carefully painted heads, some being

1 See Guattani, Quadri nell' Appart. Borgia, Rome, 1820.

portraits of members of the Bufalini family, for whom these frescos were executed. One group of three females, the central figure with a child at her breast, is of especial beauty, recalling the grace of Raphael's second manner. The composition of the main group round the saint's corpse appears to have been suggested by Giotto's painting of St Francis on his

bier in §. Croce at Florence. On the vault are four noble figures of the Evangelists, usually attributed to Luca Signorelli, but certainly, like the rest of the frescos in this chapel, by the hand of Pinturicchio. On the vault of the sacristy of S. Cecilia in Trastevere, Pinturicchio painted the Almighty surrounded by the Evangelists, a work which still exists in a fair state of preservation and unrestored. During a visit to Orvieto in 1496 Pinturicchio painted two more figures of the Latin Doctors in the choir of the duomo—now, like the rest of his work at Orvieto, almost destroyed. For these he received fifty gold ducats.

Among his panel pictures the following are the most important. An altarpiece for St Maria de' Fossi at Perugia, painted in 1496-98, now moved to the picture gallery, is a Madonna enthroned among Saints, graceful and sweet in expression, and very minutely painted ; the wings of the retable have standing figures of St Augustine and St Jerome ; and the predelia has paintings in miniature of the Annunciation and the Evangelists. Another fine altar- piece, similar in delicacy of detail, and probably painted about the same time, is that in the cathedral of San Severino—the Madonna enthroned looks down towards the kneeling donor. The angels at the sides in beauty of face and expression recall the.manner of Lorenzo di Credi or Da Vinci. The Vatican picture gallery has the largest of Pinturicchio's panels—the Coronation of the Virgin, with the apostles and other saints below. Several well- executed portraits occur among the kneeling saints. The Virgin, who kneels at Christ's feet to receive her crown, is a figure of great tenderness and beauty, and the lower group is composed with great skill and grace in arrange- ment. Other important panel paintings by Pinturicchio exist in the cathedral of Spello, in the Siena gallery, at Florence, at Perugia, and in other collections.

In 1501 Pinturicchio painted several fine frescos in S. Maria Maggiore at Spello,—all very decorative, and full of elaborate architectural accessories. One of them, the Annunciation, is signed "Bernardinvs Pintvrichivs Pervsinvs." They are much injured by damp and clumsy restoration. The most striking of all Pinturicchio's frescos, both for brilliance of colour and their wonderful State of preservation, are those in the cathedral library at Siena, a large room built in 1495 by Cardinal Francesco Piccolomini, afterwards Pius III. In 1502 the cardinal contracted with Pinturicchio to

decorate the whole room with arabesques on the vault, and on the walls ten scenes from the life of Alneas Sylvius Piccolomini, Pius II., the uncle of Cardinal Francesco.

The contract, given in full by Milanesi (Vasari, iii. p. 519), is a very interesting one; it specially provides that the cartoons, their transference on to the walls, and all the heads, were to be by Pinturieehio's own hand, thus contradieting Vasari's assertion that the cartoons were the work of Raphael. In fact when closely ex- amined the evidenee which would give Raphael an important share 7 the execution of these fine paintings amounts to very little. The

oeument provides for the price of these frescos, namely one thousand ie dueats, to be paid in various instalments. The work was

ae early in 1503, but was interrupted for a while by the death

ee a His will, however, provided for the completion of the The s th 1s executors, and the whole series were finished in 1507. Fe ne jects are (1) the journey of the young Sylvius Piceolomini a poe of Basel, in the suite of Cardinal Capraniea ; (2) his Basi ae y James I. of Seotland as envoy from the council of Tire m) his being crowned with the poet's laurel by Frederick -; (4) his reeeption by Pope Eugenius IV. as ambassador from

Vrederick 111; (5) outside the wall of Siena he presents to

Frederiek III. his bride Leonora, infanta of Portugal; (6) he receives the eardinal's hat from Pope Calixtus IIl.; (7) he is borne in procession after his election as Pope Pius Il.; (8) he presides at a council at Mantua ; (9) he eanonizes St Catherine of Siena ; (10) he arrives in Ancona to promote the crusade against the Turks. In addition to these there is, outside the library, over the door, the Coronation of Pius ITI.

Though this splendid series of paintings are laid in with true fresco-eolours, there is but little fresco buono visible ; almost the whole is painted over a secco with eolours much more brilliant in tone than could be used on the

wet stueeo, This retouching, which was employed by all freseo painters, was used by Pinturiechio more than by most artists. In the lower part of the seene of St Cather- ine's eanonization hc has introduced his own portrait, and standing by him is a youth who bears some resemblance to Raphacl. The paintings are all finished with much care, but Pinturicchio has not kept to the flat and simply decorative treatment of his earlier man- ner; there is much more of aerial perspective and distance destroy- ing the apparent solidity of the wall surface.

In 1508 Pinturicchio painted another panel of the Madonna enthroned among Saints for the church of the Minori Conventuali at Spello. It is now over the altar in the sacristy. On his return to Siena he painted a whole series of frescos on the walls of the Palazzo Petrucci, now all destroyed except one scene of the return of Ulysses to Penelope (or possibly Collatinus and Lucretia), which is now in the National Gallery of London, trans- ferred to canvas. One of his last works, painted in 1513, the year of his death, is a very beautiful and highly finished panel with Christ bearing His Cross, now in the Palazzo Borromeo in Milan. Pinturicchio married Grania di Niccold, and had by her two sons and four daughters ; there is probably no truth in the story of his being starved by his wife during his last illness.

The freseos in the Cappella Bufalini were engraved in ten plates by Fran. Giangiacomo, and published by the Calcografia Camerale of Rome. The Siena library series were engraved by Faucci in the the last century, and more recently by Lasinio. Neither set is remarkable for fidelity or spirit. The Siena frescos and those at Spello have been published in ehromo-lithograph by the Arundel Soeiety of London.

Pinturicchio's worth as a painter has been for the most part undervalued, partly owing to the very strong prejudice and dislike which tinges Vasari's biography of him. Even reeent writers, such as Crowe and Cavalcaselle, have hardly done him justice.

PINZON, a family of wealthy Spanish navigators, of Palos de Moguer, in Andalusia, three members of which —aAlonzo, Francesco, and Vicente, brothers—were associ- ated with Columbus in his great discovery.

Martin ALoNzo Pinzon, born about the middle of the 15th century, gave material assistance to Columbus in carrying out his project. In the expedition of 1492 Alonzo commanded the “Pinta,” on board of which his brother Francesco was pilot; another brother, Vicente Yaiiez, had command of the “Nina.” It was at Alonzo’s pursuasion that on October 7th the course of the expedi- tion was changed to the south-west; the island of Guana- hani or San Salvador, four days after, was sighted. On November 21, off the coast of Cuba, Alonzo separated himself from the expedition, and crowded sail to the west- ward, hoping to be the first to arrive at the land of gold of which they had heard the natives speak. After an absence of six weeks he rejoined Columbus, who accepted the excuses he gave for his absence. On the return journey Alonzo again separated from his leader, probably by design, and when Columbus arrived at Palos on March 15, 1493, he learned that Alonzo had already landed at Bayona in Galicia. If his object was to forestall Columbus and obtain the credit of being the discoverer of the New World, his intentions were foiled; he was refused the

audience which he craved of the sovereigns, and very shortly after died, it is supposed of chagrin. Even although it could be proved that Alonzo’s intentions were dishonourable, we should remember that it was largely through his liberality that Columbus was enabled to carry out his immortal voyage.

Vicente YANgEZ Pinzon, who commanded the “ Nina,” also gave Columbus material help, and remained loyal to his leader throughout. In after years he made important discoveries on his own account. In 1499 he sailed with four caravels across the Atlantic to the south-west, and on January 20, 1500, he struck the South-American continent at Cape 8. Agostinho, its most easterly projection, three months before the Portuguese navigator Cabral reached Brazil, the discovery of which is generally attributed to him. Proceeding southwards a short distance, he then turned north, followed the coast to the north-west, and went as far at least as what is now Costa Rica. After touching at Hayti, and losing two of his vessels among the Bahamas, Vicente returned to Palos in the end of Septem- ber 1500. Although concessions were made to him, and he was created

governor of the newly discovered lands by Ferdinand and Isabella, he does not seem to have ever taken possession. In 1508 we find Vicente sailing with Juan Diaz de Salis along the east coast of South America, in their attempt to find an opening towards the west that would conduct them to the Spice Islands. He did not get beyond the 40th degree of S. lat., about the mouth of the Rio Negro, having passed the mouth of the La Plata without recognizing it. After 1523 all traces of Vicente are lost.

Navarrete, Coleccion de Viajes; Humboldt, Geography of the New World ; Washington Irving's Columbus and Companions of Columbus ; bibliography in Joaquin Caetano da Silva's L' Oyapoc et V Amazone ; Peschel, Geschichte des Zeitalters der Entdeckungen.

PIOMBO, SEBASTIANO DEL. See SEBASTIANO.

PIOTRKOW, the chief town of a government of the same name in Russian Poland, and formerly the seat of the high court of Poland, is situated on the railway from Warsaw to Vienna, 90 miles by rail to the south-west of the capital, 5 miles to the west of the river Pilica. Ten years ago it was a poor town of 17,000 inhabitants, but it has grown during the last few years, partly as the seat of the provincial administration, and partly in consequence of the development of trade. In April 1882 it had 23,050 inhabitants, including 3000 military. Its manufactures are still insignificant; it has a few flour- mills, saw-mills, soap-works, and breweries.

PIOZZI, Hester Lynow (1741-1821), the daughter of John Salisbury of Bodville, Carnarvonshire, was born there, as it would appear from a protracted dispute between Croker and Macaulay, 27th January 1741. After an education which extended considerably beyond that given to most ladies of her period—for she was acquainted with the learned languages as well as with French, Italian, and Spanish—she was married in 1763 to Henry Thrale, a brewer of Southwark, whose house was at Streatham on the south-east corner of Tooting Beck Common. In this retreat she drew around her many of the most distin- guished men of letters of the age. She was introduced to Johnson by Arthur Murphy in the year after her marriage, and for nearly twenty years the sage remained on the closest intimacy with her. He travelled with them in Wales in 1774, and visited France in their company in 1775. Boswell's first visit to Streatham took place in October

1769. Madame D'Arblay was first received there in August 17 78. In spite of this intercourse with the princi- pal writers of the day troubles grew upon her in her married life. Her talents were not appreciated by her husband ; he was always ill and frequently in pecuniary

PI O—

dm lil

anxiety ; and when children were born to her they often succumbed to sickness. After some years' illness Mr Thrale died on April 4, 1781, and, as the brewery in the borough sold for £135,000, the widow found herself amply provided for. At the time of Mr Thrale's death Dr Johnson was in declining health, and he soon began to think himself slighted, nor was his indignation abated at the announcement in the spring of 1783 of her engage- ment to Piozzi, an Italian musician. For a time the engagement was broken off, but it was quickly resumed, and on the 25th of July 1784 they were married. The union provoked the resentment of her children, and the undying denunciations of Dr Johnson; but, when her husband was found to be a man of quiet and inoffensive manners and a careful guardian of his wife's resources, her children acquiesced in the marriage and most of her friends returned to her. Baretti, always her enemy, abused her, and Boswell ridiculed her, but her character has survived the insinuations of the one and the open malevolence of the other, as well as the satiric attacks of Peter Pindar. Piozzi died of gout at Brynbella, March 1809, and from that time his widow's life was chiefly spent in the social circles of Bath and Clifton or in the retire- ment of Penzance. When long past seventy she took a fancy to William Augustus Conway the actor, and the "love letters" which she. wrote to him have been published with a catchpenny title. She died at Clifton, 2d May

1821.

Mrs Piozzi was bright and witty, and possessed of manners which, if not refined, never failed to attract. Several of her literary publications have long since perished from want of vitality, but her little poem of "The Three Warnings" forms a part of most selections of English poetry. Her Anecdotes of Dr Johnson, now 4 scarce book, are contained, "as she herself gave them

to the world," in the concluding volume of Napier's Johnson (1884), and her notes to Wraxall's Historical Memoirs are reprinted in the 1884 edition of that work. The Anecdotes and the Letters to and from Dr Johnson are inferior in interest only to the work of Boswell. Two editions of the Autobiography of Mrs Piozzi, under the editorship of Abraham Hayward, have been issued, and the Rev. Edward Mangin published in 1883, under the disguise of "by a friend," a thin volume of Piozziana. Her features are reproduced in the lady's countenance in Hogarth's picture of the Lady's Last Stake.

PIPE (see Music, vol. xvii. p. 77; and Orcan, 2, P- 829), Strutt, in his Sports and Pastimes of the People of England, gives representations of the pipe and tabor as used in England in the 14th century to accompany @ dancing-dog, a cock on stilts, a horse rearing, &c. From the drawings we cannot ascertain the nature of the pipe represented. We may, however, suppose it to have been similar to the galoubet used in France, along with the tabor, from a very remote period. This galoubet is a small instrument of the flageolet kind. Its use for more than the last two centuries has been confined to Provence. It has only three finger-holes, and is played with the left hand, whilst the right beats the tabor, which is attached to the performer. The compass of the galoubet is two octaves and a tone from D on the third line of the treble clef up to E in altissimo. Great skill is required to bring out all the sounds of its compass. Some of the players on this small and imperfect instrument are said to be 0 dexterous as to be able to perform upon it very difficult pieces of music composed for other instruments, such as the violin, &. It is always accompanied by the tabor, which is a small drum of a cylindrical form, and rather longer and narrower in its relative proportions than the common drum. In the last century several books of instruction were published at Paris by distinguished per formers on the galoubet. ;

PIPE, Topacco. The smoking of tobacco in pipes 8 a custom which prevailed in America for a period of unknown duration previous to the discovery of that con-

erry

tinent by Columbus. The most ancient pipes of which remains exist have been found in mounds or tumuli called pipe mounds, principally in the

States of Ohio, Indiana, Tllinois, and Iowa. These mound pipes, which are carved in porphyry and other hard stones, are very uniform in type. ‘The pipe, cut out of a single piece of stone, consists of a slightly convex platform or base, generally from 3 to 4 inches in length, and about an inch broad, with the bowl on the centre. A fine hole is pierced from one end of the platform to the bottom of the bowl, the opposite end being obviously for holding in the hand while the pipe is being smoked. Inthe ~ commonest forms the bowl is a simple cylinder or urn (fig. 1), but in many cases remarkable artistic skill has been g displayed in carving the ~ bowls into miniature figures of birds, mammals, reptiles, and human heads, often grotesque and fantastic, but always vigorously expressed (fig. 2). These mound

or platform pipes with carved human and ani- mal forms are objects of the highest ethno- graphic interest and im- portance, being among the most characteristic remains of the ancient inhabitants of the Mis- ; sissippi valley. The wide area over which they, as well as remains of baked clay pipes, are found throughout the American continent testifies to the universal prevalence of smoking in the pre-Columbian era. Many of the ancient clay pipes found in Mexico, &c., are elaborately moulded and ornamented, while others show considerable similarity to the early clay pipes of Europe. Among the North-American Indian tribes the tobacco pipe occupies a position of peculiar symbolic significance in connexion with the superstitious rites and usages of the race. The

Fia. 1.—“Monitor”’ Pipe.

Fig. 2.—Heron Pipe.

calumet, peace pipe, or medicine pipe is an object of the:

most profound veneration, entrusted to the care of a highly honoured official, and produced and smoked with much ceremony only on occasions of great importance and solemnity. It is remarkable that, whilst the most ancient American pipes had no separate stem, it is the stem only of the medicine pipe which is the object of veneration among the Indians, the bowl used being a matter of indifference. The favourite material for Indian pipe bowls is the famous red pipe stone (catlinite), a fine- grained easily-

worked stone of a rich red colour of the Coteau des Prairies, west of the Big Stone Lake in Dakota. The quarries were formerly neutral ground among the warring Indian tribes, many sacred traditions being associated with the locality and its product (see Longfellow's Hiawatha, i.). The Babeen Indians of the British-Columbian coast carve from a soft blue clay slate very elaborate and massive pipes with intricate pierced Work and fantastic animal forms, the pipe tube being pierced from some protruding part of the sculpture.

There is considerable dispute as to whether pipes for smoking were at all known in Europe previous to the dis- covery of America. That tobacco-smoking was unknown 18 certain ; but pipes of iron, bronze, and clay have been so frequently found associated with Roman remains and other antiquities as to lead many authorities to maintain that such pipes must have been anciently used for burning incense or for smoking aromatic herbs orhemp. Through- out Great Britain and Ireland small clay pipes are fre-

quently dug up, in some instances associated with Roman relics. These are known amongst the people as elfin, fairy, or Celtic' pipes, and in some districts supernatural agencies have been called in to account for their existence. The elfin pipes have commonly flat broad heels in place of the sharp spur now found on clay pipes, and on that flat space the mark or initials of the maker is occasionally found. 'There is no reason to believe that these pipes are older than the 17th century, The introduction of the tobacco pipe into Europe is generally ascribed to Ralph Lane, first governor of Virginia, who in 1586 brought an Indian pipe to Sir Walter Raleigh, and taught that courtier how to use the implement. The pipe makers of London became an incorporated body in 1619, and from England the other nations of Europe learned the art of making clay pipes. Baillard, in his Discowrs du Tabac (1668) says of the English—'"Ces derniers ont inventé les pipes de terre cuite, qui ont cours aujourd'huy par tout le monde."

The habit of smoking with pipes spread with incredible rapidity ; and among the various peoples the pipe assumed special characteristics, and its modifications became the medium of conveying social, political, and personal allu- sions, in many cases with no little artistic skill and humour.

The pipe also became the object of much inven- tive ingenuity, and it varied as greatly in material as in form—wood, horn, bone, ivory, stone, precious and other metals, amber, glass, porcelain, and above all clay being the materials employed in various forms. By degrees pipes of special form and material came to be associated with particular people, so that now we have the elongated painted porcelain bowls and pendulous stem of the German peasantry, the red clay bowl and long cherry wood stem of the Turk, and the very small metallic bowl and cane stem of the Japanese, &c. The most luxurious and elabo- rate form of pipe is the Persian kalydén, hookah, or water tobacco pipe. This consists of three pieces, the head or bowl, the water bottle or base, and the snake or long flexible tube ending in the mouthpiece. The tobacco, which must be previously prepared by steeping in water, is placed in the head and lighted with live charcoal, a wooden stem passes from its bottom down into the water which fills the base, and the tube is fitted to a stem which ends in the bottle above the water. Thus the smoke is cooled and washed before it reaches the smoker by passing through the water in the bottle, and by being drawn through the coil of tube frequently some yards in length. The bottles are in many cases made of carved and other- wise ornamented cocoa-nut shells, whence the apparatus is called nérgila, from nérgil, a cocoa-nut. Silver, gold, damascened steel, and precious stones are freely used in the making and decoration of these pipes for wealthy smokers.

Pipe Manufacture.—The regular pipe-making industrics divide into many branches, of which the more important are the clay pipe, meerschaum (real and artificial), and wooden bowl trades. Clay pipes are made in prodigious numbers by hand labour with an iron mould and a steel wire for forming the tube of the stem. Pipe moulding is a very simple operation iu pottery, and the work is performed with astonishing celerity. A number of machines have been devised for automatic pipe-moulding ; but the manual opera- tions are so rapid and inexpensive that there is little margin for saving by the substitution of machinery. The pipes are very lightly fired so as to keep them soft and porous; and so cheaply made are they that the commoner kinds can be retailed at a profit for a farthing each. The principal centre of the clay pipe industry is at Broseley in Staffordshire, where the trade has been established since the early part of the 17th century. Meerschaum pipes

(see MEERscHAUM, vol. xv. p. 825) are the expensive luxury of the European smoker, and large sums of money are occasionally

expended on the artistic treatment of the meerschaum bow! or ou the adornment of its adjuncts. The common meerschaum is gene-

rally provided with a mouth-piece of amber, but modern ingenuity

has succeeded in providing a femarkably clever imitation of both substances, so that a large proportion of the so-called meerschaum pipes are factitious, The headquarters of the meerschaum pipe

industry is at Ruhla in Thuringia, and in connexion with an official inquiry into the German tobacco trade in 1879 the average production of pipes and pipe adjuncts in that district for several years was ascertained. Of pipe bowls there were made yearly 540,000 genuine meerschaums; 5,400,000 artificial meerschaums; 4,800,000 wooden heads ; 9,600,000 common porcelain bowls (the favourite of the German peasant); and 2,700,000 fine clay or lava bowls. Further the trade included 15,000,000 pipe stems or tubes of various materials; 19,200,000 adjuncts, such as flexible tubes, chains, tops, &c.; 144,000 pipe cases ; 9,600,000 mouth-pieces and cigar-holders of amber, horn, meerschaum, wood, &c.; and finally 15,000,000 complete pipes of various materials. The whole annual value of the industry is estimated at £1,000,000 sterling. The favourite wooden pipe generally known as a briar-wood or briar-root pipe is really made from the roots of the tree heath, Erica arborea (French, bruyére), principally obtained on the hills of the Maremma and taken thence to Leghorn. There the roots are shaped into blocks each suitable for a pipe, the cutting of the wood so as to avoid waste requiring considerable skill. These blocks are simmered in a vat for twelve hours, which gives them the much appreciated yellowish-brown hue of a good “briar-root.” So pre- pared the blocks are exported for boring and finishing to St Claude (Jura) in France and to Nuremberg, the two rival centres of the wooden pipe trade. (J. PA.)

PIPE-FISHES, small marine fishes, which with the Sea- horses form a distinct family, Syngnathidx, of the order of Lophobranchiate Fishes (see

IcurHyoLoey, vol. xii. p. 694). The name is derived from the peculiar form of their

Fie. 1.—Syngnathus acus, male, with sub-caudal pouch.

snout, which is produced into a more or less long tube, ending in a narrow and small mouth which opens upwards and is toothless, The body and tail are long and thin, snake-like, encased in hard integuments which are divided into regu- larly arranged segments. This dermal skeleton shows several longitudinal ridges, so that a vertical section through the body | represents an angular figure, not round or j/Z oval as in the majority of other fishes. A dorsal fin is always present, and the |jj principal (in some species, the only) organ [| of locomotion. The ventral fins are as JAR constantly absent, and the other fins may UR J): or may not be developed. The gill-open- [4a ings are extremely small, and placed near |i the upper posterior angle of the gill-cover. |) ‘s Pipe-fishes are abundant on such coasts of te Su the tropical and temperate zones as offer [\ by their vegetation shelter to these de- || fenceless creatures. They are very bad }!) swimmers, slowly moving through the |) water by means of the rapid undulatory i movement of the dorsal fin. Their tail, | even when provided with a caudal fin, ig |” i!.:\ Ay of no use in swimming, and not prehensile aS in sea-horses. Specimens, therefore, Fic. 2.—Sub-candal sda pba at a great distance PONY A 6 oe

, g been resistlessly carried ready to leave the by currents into the open OCeAN 5 lth «Ins hooumrene of inn species, Syngnathus pelagicus, has an extra-

the membrane of the c é z . aside to admit of a ordinarily wide range over the tropical view of its interior. habiting the vegetation of the Sargasso Sea. In pipe- fishes the male is provided with a pouch—in some species

pouch is pushed seas, and is one of the common fishes in- (N#turalsize.) on the abdomen, in others on the lower side of the tail—

PIP—PIP

=

in which the ova are lodged during their development,

This marsupial pouch is formed by a fold of the skin —

developed from each side of the trunk or tail, the free margins of the fold being firmly united in the median line throughout the period during which the eggs are being hatched. When the young are hatched the folds separate, leaving a wide slit, by which the young gradually escape when quite able to take care of themselves. Nearly a hundred different species of pipe-fishes are known, of which Siphonostoma typhle, Syngnathus acus (the Great Pipe-fish, up to 18 inches in length), WVerophis xquoreus (Ocean Pipe-fish), Verophis ophidion (Straightnosed Pipe fish), and Merophis lumbriciformis (Little Pipe-fish) are British species. The last three are destitute of a caudal fin. ‘

PIPIT, French Pipit, cognate with the Latin Pipio (see PIGEON, supra p. 84), the name applied by ornithologists to a group of birds having a great resemblance both in habits and appearance to the Larxs (vol. xiv. p. 317), with which they were formerly confounded by systematists as they are at the present day in popular speech, but differing from them in several important characters, and, having been first separated to form the genus Anthus, which has since been much broken up, are now generally associated with the WaeTalLs (q.v.) in the Family Mota- cillide.| Pipits, of which over fifty species have been de- scribed, occur in almost all parts of the world, but in North America are represented by only two species— Jeocorys spraguti, the Prairie-Lark of the north-western plains, and Anthus ludovicianus, the American Titlark, which last is

every nearly allied to the so-called Water-Pipit of Europe,

A. spipoletta. To most English readers the best known species of Pipit is the Titlark or Meadow-Pipit, A. pratensis, a bird too common to need description, and abundant on pastures, moors, and uncultivated districts generally ; but in some localities the Tree-Pipit, A. trivialis, or A. arboreus of some authors, takes its place, and where it does so it usually attracts attention by its loud song, which is not unlike that of a Canary-bird, but delivered (as appears to be the habit of all the Pipits) on the wing and duringa short circuitous flight. Another species, the Rock-Lark, A.

obscurus, scarcely ever leaves the sea-coast and is found almost all round the British Islands. The South-African genus Macronyz, remarkable for the extreme length of its hind claw, is generally placed among the Pipits, but differs from all the rest in its brighter coloration, which has a curious resemblance to the American genus Stwrnella (see Icrerus, vol. xii. p. 697), though the bird is certainly not allied thereto. (A. N.)

PIPPI, Grutto (c. 1492-1546), the head of the Roman school of painting in succession to Raphael. This prolific painter, modeller, architect, and engineer is currently named GiuLi0 (or Jutio) Romano, from the place of his birth—Rome, in the Macello de' Corbi. His name in full was Giulio di Pietro di Filippo de' Giannuzzi,—Guiannuzal being the true family name, and Pippi (which has prac- tically superseded Giannuzzi) being an abbreviation from the name of his grandfather Filippo.

The date of Giulio's birth is a little uncertain. Vasarl (who knew him personally) speaks of him as fifty-four years old at the date of his death, 1st November 1546; thus he would have been born in 1492. Other accounts assign 1498 as the date of birth. This would make Giulio young indeed in the early and in such case most precocious stages of his artistic career, and would show him as dying, after an infinity of hard work, at the comparatively early age of forty-eight.

Giulio must at all events have been quite youthful

1 Pipits can always be distinguished from Larks by having the hind part of the " tarsus" undivided, while the Larks have it scutellated.

j

PIF?!

when he first became the pupil of Raphael, and at

} Raphael's death in 1520 he was at the utmost twenty-

eight years of age. Raphael had loved him as a son, and had employed him in some leading works, especially in the Loggie of the Vatican ; the series

there popularly termed “Raphael’s Bible” is done in large measure by Giulio,— as for instance the subjects of the Creation of Adam and Eve, Noah’s Ark, and Moses in the Bulrushes. In the saloon of the “Incendio del Borgo,” also, the figures of Benefactors of the Church (Charlemagne, &c.) are Giulio’s handiwork. It would appear that in subjects of this kind Raphael simply furnished the design, and committed the execution of it to some assistant, such as Giulio,—taking heed, however, to bring it up, by final retonching, to his own standard of style and type. Giulio at a later date followed out exactly the same plan; so that in both instances inferiorities of method, in the general blocking- out and even in the details of the work, are not to be pre- cisely charged upon the caposcuola. Amid the multitude of Raphael’s pupils, Giulio was eminent in pursuing his style, and showed universal aptitude ; he did, among other things, a large amount of architectural planning for his chief. Raphael bequeathed to Giulio, and to his fellow- pupil Gianfrancesco Penni (“Il Fattore ”), his implements and works of art; and upon them it devolved to bring to completion the vast fresco-work of the “ Hall of Constan- tine” in the Vatican—consisting, along with much minor matter, of the four large subjects, the Battle of Constan- tine, the Apparition of the Cross, the Baptism of Constan- tine, and the Donation of Rome to the Pope. The two former compositions were executed by Pippi, the two latter by Penni. The whole of this onerous undertaking was completed within a period of only three years,—which is the more remarkable as, during some part of the in- terval since Raphael’s decease, the Fleming, Adrian VL., had been pope, and his anti-esthetic pontificate had left art and artists almost in a state of inanition. Clement VI. had now, however, succeeded to the popedom. By this time Giulio was regarded as the first painter in Rome ; but his Roman career was fated to have no further sequel. Towards the end of 1524 his friend the celebrated writer Baldassar Castiglione seconded with success the urgent request of the duke of Mantua, Federigo Gonzaga, that Giulio should migrate to that city, and enter the duke’s service for the purpose of carrying out his projects In architecture and pictorial decoration. These projects were already considerable, and under Giulio’s management they became far more extensive still. The duke treated his painter munificently as to house, table, horses, and whatever was in request; and soon a very cordial attachment sprang up between them. In Pippi’s multi- farious work in Mantua three principal undertakings should be noted. (1) In the Castello he painted the

History of Troy, along with other subjects. (2) In the suburban ducal residence named the Palazzo del T (this designation being apparently derived from the form of the roads which led towards the edifice) he rapidly carried out a rebuilding on a vastly enlarged scale,—the materials being brick and terra-cotta, as there is no local stone,— and decorated the rooms with his most celebrated works a . fresco painting—the story of Psyche, Icarus, i all of the Titans, and the portraits of the ducal a, a papndss The foreground figures of Titans se 4 4 to 14 feet high; the room, even in its ‘tructural details, is made to subserve the general artistic pe and many of its architectural features are dis- ae Greatly admired though these pre- ae a 8 have always been, and at most times even ea Aan now be fully ratified, they have suffered y at the hands of restorers, and modern eyes see

them only through a dull and deadening fog of renovation. The whole of the work on the Palazzo del T, which is of the Doric order of architecture, occupied about five years. (3) Pippi recast and almost rebuilt the cathedral of Mantua ; erected his own mansion, replete with numerous antiques and other articles of vertu; reconstructed the street architecture to a very large extent, and made the city, sapped as it is by the shallows of the Mincio, com- paratively healthy ; and at Marmiruolo, some five miles distant from Mantua, he worked out other important buildings and paintings. He was in fact, for nearly a quarter of a century, a sort of Demiurgus of the arts of design in the Mantuan territory.

Giulio’s activity was interrupted but not terminated by the death of Duke Federigo. The duke’s brother, a cardinal who became regent, retained him in full employ- ment. For a while he went to Bologna, and constructed the fagade of the church of S. Petronio in that city. He was afterwards invited to succeed Antonio Sangallo as architect of St Peter’s in Rome,—a splendid appointment, which, notwithstanding the strenuous opposition of his wife and of the cardinal regent, he had almost resolved to accept, when a fever overtook him, and, acting upon a constitution somewhat cnfeebled by worry and _ labour, carried him off on lst November 1546. He lies buried in the church of S. Barnaba in Mantua. At the time of his death Giulio enjoyed an annual income of more than 1000 ducats, accruing from the liberalities of

his patrons. He left a widow, and a son and daughter. The son, named Raffaello, studied painting, but died before he could pro- duce any work of importance; the daughter, Virginia, married Ercole Malatesta.

Wide and solid knowledge of design, combined with a prompti- tude of composition that was never at fault, formed the chief motive power aud merit of Giulio Romano's art. Whatever was wanted, he 'produced it at once, throwing off, as Vasari says, a large design in an hour ; and he may in that sense, though not equally so when an imaginative or ideal test is applied, be called a great inventor. It would be difficult to name any other artist who, working as an architect, and as the plastic and pictorial embellisher of his architecture, produced a total of work so fully and homo- geneously his own; hence he has been named "the prince of decorators." He had great knowledge of the human frame, and represented it with force and truth, though sometimes with an excess of movement; he was also learned in other matters, especially in medals, and in the plans of ancient buildings. In design he was more strong and emphatic than graceful, and worked a great deal from his accumulated stores of knowledge, without consulting nature direct. As a general rule, his designs are finer and freer than his paintings, whether in fresco or in oil—his easel pictures being comparatively few, and some of them the reverse of decent; his colouring is marked by an excess of blackish and heavy tints.

Giulio Romano introduced the style of Raphael into Mantua, and established there a considerable school of art, which surpassed in development that of his predecessor Mantegna, and almost rivalled that of Rome. Very many engravings—morce than three hundred are mentioned—were made contemporaneously from his works ; and this not only in Italy, but in France and Flanders as well. His plan of entrusting principally to assistants the pictorial execution of his cartoons has already been referred to ; Primaticcio was one of the leading coadjutors. Rinaldo Mantovano, a man of great ability who died young, was the chief executant of the Fall of the Giants ; he also co-operated with Benedetto Pagni da Pescia in painting the remarkable series of horses and hounds, and the story of Psyche. Another pupil was Fermo Guisoni, who remained settled in-Mantua. The oil pictures of Giulio Romano are not generally of high importance; two leading ones are the Martyrdom of Stephen, in the church of that saint in Genoa, and a

Holy Family in the Dresden Gallery. Among his architectural works not already mentioned is the Villa Madama in Rome, with a fresco of Polyphemus, and boys and satyrs; the Ionic facade of this building may have been sketched out by Raphael.

Vasari gives a pleasing impression of the character of Giulio. He was very loving to his friends, genial, affable, well-bred, temperate in the pleasures of the table, but liking fine apparel and a handsome scale of living. He was good-looking, of middle height, with black curly hair and dark eyes, and an ample beard ; his portrait, painted by himsclf, isin the Louvre. (W. M. R.)

ix. =i

114

PIPPIN, or Perry, a name borne by several members of the Carlovingian family. (1) Pippin of Landen, or Pippin the Old, mayor of the palace, died 639. (2) His grand- son, Pippin of Heristal, the father of Charles Martel, died 714. (3) Martel's son, Pippin the Short, king of the Franks, died 768. See, for these three, FRANCE, vol. ix. p.

530 sq. (4) Pippin, son of Charles the Great (776-810),.

was his father's deputy in Italy, and as such was anointed "king for Italy" by Pope Adrian I. in 781. (5) Pippin, second son of Louis the Pious, appointed king of Aquitaine by his father in 817, died in 838 after a reign spent in the family conflicts of the period. (6) The son of the last- named Pippin was called to the throne by the Aquitanians on his father's death, and maintained himself with varying fortunes against Charles the Bald, to whom Louis had given the vacant throne, till in 864 he was taken by treachery and soon died in confinement.

PIQUA, a city of Miami county, Ohio, U.S., is situated in a rich agricultural district on the Miami river, on the Miami and Erie Canal, and on the Pittsburgh, Cincinnati, and St Louis and the Cincinnati and Michigan railways, about 90 miles N. by E. of Cincinnati. Besides a large agricultural trade the city has woollen manufactures, iron foundries, and agricultural

machine works. The popula- tion, 3277 in 1850, was 5967 in 1870 and 6131 in 1880.

PIQUET, a game at cards. The name, of uncertain etymology, is probably from pique (the spade suit). The Germans had formerly a Schwerter game, the packs used being like piquet packs. The pquwe of French cards corre- sponds to the spade (sword) of Italian and to the espadas of Spanish cards. Hence piquet may be the sword game.

It seems likely that piquet is a development of ronfa, a game mentioned by Berni in 1526 ; la ronjfle (included in Rabelais's list, circa 1530) may be regarded as the same game. The point at piquet was anciently called ronjle.

The Spanish name of the game was cientos (centum, a hundred). Piquet was played in England under the name of cent, or sant, probably as early as 1550 (contemporane- ously with the marriage of Mary to Philip of Spain). About the middle of the 17th century (shortly after the marriage of Charles I. to Maria Henrietta of France) the name cent was dropped in England, and the French equt- valent, piquet, adopted.

Piquet is played by two persons, with a pack of thirty- two cards, —the sixes, fives, fours, threes, and twos being thrown out from a complete pack. Until recently the partie was the best of five games of a hundred up (a player not obtaining fifty losing a double game). But now the partie is generally determined in six hands, the player making the largest aggregate score being the winner. The number of points won is the difference between the two scores, with a hundred added for the game. If, how- ever, the loser fails to make a hundred in six hands, the number of points won is the two scores added together, with a hundred for the game. Piquet played in this way is called Rubicon Piquet.

The dealer (see ‘‘ Laws”) deals twelve cards to his adversary and twelve to himself, by two at a time or by three at a time to each alternately. He then places the undealt cards, called the stock, face downwards on the table.

The players now look at their hands and discard, ¢.e., put out, such cards as they deem advisable, and take in an equivalent number from the stoek. The elder hand (non-dealer) may exehange five or any less number. He

separates his diseard from his hand, places it face downwards on the table, and takes from the top of the stock the number discarded. If he discards less than five he must state how many he leaves. He is entitled to look at cards he leaves, replacing them face downwards on the top of the stock.

The younger hand may exchange three eards or any less number. If the elder hand leaves any cards, the younger may exehange as many as remain in the stock, discarding an equal number. He takes his cards from the top of the stock, including any left by the elder hand. Ifthe younger hand leaves any cards, he announces

Paiva? lg

the number left. He has the option of looking at eards he leaves, If he looks at them, he must show them to the elder hand, after the elder has named the suit he will first lead, or has led a ecard, If the younger hand elects not to look at the eards left the elder cannot see them. The younger hand must makc his cleetion before he plays to the card first led, or, if so required, after the dealer hag named the suit he will first lead.

Each player may examine his own discard at any time during the hand ; but he must keep it separate from his other cards,

The elder hand next calls his point, sequences, and quatorzes or trios, and, if good, scores for them.

The point must be called first or the right to call a point is lost. It is scored by the player who announces the suit of greatest strength, valued thus: ace, 11; court cards, 10 caeh ; other eards, the number of pips on each. Thus, if the elder hand’s best suit is ace, king, knave, nine, eight, he calls “five cards.” If the younger hand has uo suit of five cards, he says “good.” The elder hand then says ‘‘in spades,” or whatever the suit may be, or shows his point face upwards. If the younger hand has a suit of more than five eards, he says “not good.” If the younger hand has also five cards, he says “equal” or ‘‘ what do they make?” when the elder calls ‘‘forty eight” (or “making eight,” short for forty-eight), The younger must not inquire what the point makes unless he has an equal nuniber of cards. If the younger hand’s five

cards make less than forty-eight he says “good”; if exactly forty-eight, he says “equal”; if more than forty-eight, he says ‘‘ not good.”

The player whose point is good reekons one for each card of it; if the points are equal neither player scores for point.

Sequences are usually called next, the elder hand stating what his best sequence is, and the younger saying, “ good,” ‘‘equal,” or ‘not good,” as in the case of the point. Any three or more con- secutive cards of the same suit held in hand constitute a sequence. The order of the cards is as follows :— ace (highest), king, queen, knave, ten, nine, eight, seven (lowest). A sequence of three eards is called a tierce; of four, a quart; of five, a guint; of six, a siatéme ; of seven, a septiemc; of eight, a huitieme. A tievee of ace, king, queen is called a tierce major ; a tierce of king, queen, knave is called tierce to a king (and so on for other intermediate sequences according to the card which heads them); a tierce of nine, eight, seven is called a ticrec minor. Sequences of four or more cards follow the same nomenclature, ¢.g., ace, king, queen, knave is a quart major ; knave, ten, nine, eight is a quart toa knave ; and so on.

A sequence of a greater number of cards is good against a sequence of a smaller number ; thus, a quart minor is good against a tierce major. As between sequences eontaining the same number of cards, the one headed by the highest eard is good; thus, a quart to a queen is good against a quart to a knave. Only iden- tical sequences can be equal.

The clder hand announces, say, a quint major. If the younger has a sixiéme he says ‘not good”; if he has a quint major he says ‘‘equal” ; if he has a lower sequence, or no sequence, he says ‘‘good.” The player whose sequence is good reckons one for each card of it, and ten in addition for quints or higher sequences. Thus a tierce counts three ; a quart, four; a quint, fifteen (5 +10); a sixieme, sixteen; and so on. If the elder hand’s sequence 8 good, he names the suit, or shows it face upwards.

If the highest sequence (or the sequence first called) is good, all lower sequences can be reckoned, notwithstanding that the ad ver- sary has a sequence of intermediate value. For example, A has a quart to a queen

(good), and a tierce minor. He calls and reckons seven, notwithstanding that B has a quart to a kmave B’s quart counts nothing. h

If the highest sequence is equal, neither player scores anything for sequence, even though one player may hold a second sequence of equal or inferior value.

Quatorzes are composed of four aces, four kings, four queens, four knaves, or four tens; érios of three of any of these. They are called and reckoned as before, except that here there can be no equality. A quatorze, if good, reckons fourteen ; a tro, if guod, reckons three. Any quatorze is good against a trio ; if each player has a quatorze the highest is good; the same if each has @ Wo. As in the case of sequences, anything that is good enables the player to reckon all smaller quatorzes or trios in his hand. 4 quatorze or trio is called thus :—the elder hand says “ four aces, “three queens,” or as the case may be; the younger replies ‘“cood” or ‘‘not good,” as before. When a player calls a trio of a denomination of which he might hold a quatorze, the adversary is entitled to be informed which card is not reckoned. Thus, A, who might hold four kings, calls “three kings”; B Svs “good”; A says ‘‘I do not reckon the king of diamonds, whiehever king it may be that he has put out or suppresses.

When the elder hand has done calling he leads a card. Before playing to this card, the younger hand reekons all that he xd good, stating of what cards his claims are composed, or showing the cards claimed for.

The next step is playing the hands. The elder hand leads and

PH OUERT

| card he pleases ; the younger plays to it. The younger hand must follow suit if able ; otherwise he may play any card he thinks fit.

The two cards thus played constitute a trick. The trick is won _ by the higher card of the suit led. It is not eompulsory to win

the trick if able to follow suit without. The winner of the trick

Jeads to the next, and so on until the twelve cards in hand are

layed out.

‘ Ties the play of the hands the leader counts one for each

eard led, whether it wins the trick or not. If the leader wins the

trick, his adversary reckons nothing that trick ; but if the second layer wins the trick he also counts one; and so on. The winner of the last trick counts two instead of one.

The tricks are left face upwards on the table, in front of the player who wins them. They may be examined by either player at any time.

If ech player wins six tricks the cards are divided, and there is no further score. If one player wins more than six tricks he wins the cards, and adds ten to his score. If one player wins every trick, he wins a capot, and scores forty for the cards, instead of ten.

During the play of the hand, a player is entitled to be informed as to any cards his adversary holds which he has reckoned as good, or has declared to be equal. A player may require his adversary to exhibit any such cards ; but the usual practice is to reply to all necessary questions with regard to them, such as “how many of your point?” meaning how many in hand, ‘‘ how many of your tierce?” and so on.

During the progress of the hand each player repeats aloud the amount of his score for the time being (see example). At the end of the hand the number scored is recorded on a ruled card. Eaeh

_ player has a card and writes down the scores of both himself and hisopponent. At the end of the sixth hand, the totals are recorded, and the neeessary subtraction or addition made. The scores are then compared. If there is any difference in the written scores, a player’s score of his own hand is deemed to be the correct one.

Exampic.—A (elder hand) has dealt him acc, king, knave of spades ; ace, queen, knave, eight of hearts ; knave, eight, seven of clubs ; and nine, eight of diamonds. He discards king of spades ; eight, seven of clubs ; and nine, eight of diamonds. He takes in re ett of spades ; king of hearts ; nine of clubs; and king of

iamonds.

B (younger hand) has ten, seven of spades; ten, nine, seven of hearts ; king, queen, ten of clubs; and ace, queen, knave, ten of diamonds. He discards seven of spades ; and nine, seven of hearts. He takes in queen of spades ; ace of clubs; and seven of diamonds.

The hand then proceeds thus. A (calls his point) “ five cards.” B (says) “equal,” or ‘‘ what do they make?”

A “forty-nine,” or ‘‘ making nine.” B “ good.”

_ A (eounting his point) “ five” and (counting his sequence, which 1s good) ‘fa quart major, nine. Three knaves?” B “not good.”

A (leads ace of hearts and says) ‘“‘ten.” B ‘‘ four tens, fourteen, and three queens, seventeen ” (plays the ten of hearts).

A (leads the remaining hearts and says) ‘‘eleven, twelve, thirteen, fourteen.” B (plays seven, ten, knave, queen of diamonds, and repeating his score, says) ‘ seventeen.”

A has now five tricks, and in order to win the eards should lead any card but ahighspade. He leads king of diamonds, and says “fifteen.” B (wins with ace and says) “ eighteen,” (and then leads the winning clubs, saying) “ nineteen, twenty, twenty-one, twenty-two.”

a. (keeps ace, knave of clubs, and repeating his seore says) fitteen, B (leads queen of “spades and says) ‘‘ twenty-three.”

; A (wins with ace and says) “sixteen” (and leads knave, saying) eighteen ” (and adding ten for the eards) ‘‘ twenty-eight.”

§ A then writes on his scoring card 28 ; 23. B writes on his 23 ;

28. The pack is collected, and the next hand commences.

Three scores (omitted in order to simplify the description of the game) have yet to be mentioned.

: Carte Blanche.—If either player has neither king, queen, nor pee in the hand dealt him, he holds carte blanche, for which he I ten. As soon as a player discovers he has a carte blanche,

¢ must tell his adversary ; this he usually does by saying “ dis- ont for carte blanche.” The adverse discard is then made (as ieee discarding), after which the carte blanche is shown onatmeeec e cards quickly one on top of the other, face upwards

Pique.—If the elder hand scores, in hand and play, thirty or more, before the younger counts anything, he oii i ee for a he adds thirty to his score. “For example, A has a quint

po ie ad ae sequence, and three aces, also good. quiné major (t nts twenty-three in hand. He next leads the

Wenty-eight), one of the aces and another card,

making hi i 2 5 his “aes He then adds thirty for the pique and calls

Repique.—If a

“ player scores, in hand alone, thirty or more pe me hissed versary reckons anything, he gains ios! for which goal Oe insist am ous, point, quint, and quatorze, all > Satay -10Ur, ayer holdi j

tepique, and calls his score – athide s ae these adds sixty for the

115

The order in which the scores accrue is of importance. For the sake of convenience, the elder hand finishes his reckoning before the younger

begins. ‘The scores, however, whether made by the elder or younger hand are recordable in the following order :—(1) carte blanche ; (2) point; (8) sequences ; (4) quatorzes and trios ; (5) points made in play; (6) the cards. This will often affeet a pique or repique. ‘Thus, a pique can only be made by the elder hand, asthe one he reckons in play when he leads his first card counts before points subsequently made in play by the younger hand. The younger, therefore, cannot make thirty in hand and play before the elder scores one. But the one reckoned by the elder hand when he leads his first card does not prevent his being repiqued, because scores made in hand have precedence of points made in play. ‘The elder leads his first card and counts for it before the younger reckons, simply as a convenient way of stating that he has nothing iz hand which is good. Again, say A has a quint (good), a tierce, and a quatorze (good). He scores thirty-two in hand alone; but, if his point is not good, he does not gain a repique, because the younger hand’s point is recordable in order before the sequences and quatorze. And again, say A has a hatieme (good for twenty-six), and a tierce, and leads a card thus reaehing thirty in hand and play. B has three tens. The trio reekoning in order before the point made in play by A saves a pique.

Carte blanche, taking precedence of all other scores, saves piques and repiques. It also counts towards piques and repiques. Thus, a player showing carte blanche, and having point and quint, both good, would repique his adversary.

A capot does not count towards a pique, as the capot is not made in play. It is added after the play of the hand is over.

A player who reckons nothing that hand as a penalty (see ‘*Laws”) is not piqued or repiqued if he holds any cards which, but for the penalty, would have reckoned before his adversary reached thirty.

Equalities do not prevent piqnes or repiques. A player who has an equal point or sequence scores nothing for it. Therefore if, notwithstanding the equality, a player makes thirty, in hand and play, or in hand, by scores which reckon in order before anything. his adversary can count, he gains a pique or a repique.

Hints to Players. —On taking up your hand look for carte blanche.

Before disearding, ascertain what there is against you. Thus: if you have knave or ten of asuit, there is no quint against you in that suit.

When discarding, elder hand, your main object is to plan an attack. Younger hand, on the contrary, should guard his weak places and then see if he has a chance of attacking anywhere. Thus, the elder hand may freely ungnard kings and queens, or discard whole suits of which he has indifferent cards only. The younger should do just the reverse, keeping guards to kings and queens, and should not leave himself blank of a weak suit, as his small eards may guard high ones taken in.

In most hands, and especially younger hand, it is essential to keep the whole of your best suit for point. Gaining the point makes an average difference of at least ten to the score ; and, what is of more eonsequence, it saves piques and repiques-

The cards are next in importance to the point. In discarding you should, when in doubt, take the best chance of dividing or winning the cards. Winning the cards instead of losing them makes a difference of about twenty-three points. Hence, especially elder hand, you should not necessarily keep the longest suit for point, if that suit is composed of low cards, and keeping it involves the discard of high cards from other suits.

Asa rule, it is not advisable to leave any cards. The younger hand is at less disadvantage in leaving a card than the elder ; for a card left by the elder can be taken by the younger ; but a card left by the younger is only excluded from his hand. A card may generally be left when there is a chance of a great score if the cards in hand are not parted with, there being at the sanie time no pique or repique against you.

It is generally right to keep unbroken suits. Having made up your mind to discard from a given suit, you should throw the whole of it, except (a) winning cards ; (0) guards to kings or queens, especially younger hand ; or © cards which make up a quatorze or trio. It is better to keep ecards in sequence than cards not in sequence. Trios should be kept if they can be retained without injury to the hand in other respects; but it is seldom advisable to put out a high card for the sake of keeping a trio of knaves or tens, especially if there is a quatorze against you.

The discard is further affected in the last hand of a partie by the state of the score. Thus, if you area long way behind, and your only chance is a desperate discard, in order to kecp cards which may possibly give you a pique or a repique, you may run consider- able risk with that object. On the other hand, if you are well ahead, make a safe discard, 7.¢., one which is likely to win the eards or to keep your adversary back.

When taking in after discarding, count that you leave the full number of eards for the younger hand, the penalty for taking in one of your adversary's cards being that you can reckon nothing

that deal. The younger hand should also count that the proper number of cards are in the stock, before he takes in, as, if he mixes one of the elder's cards with his hand, he can reckon nothing that deal. '

After taking in and before calling your hand, look through it and your discard to ascertain what remains against you. If there is anything against you which is not called, you will probably be able to judge from this some portion of the discard, and will so be assisted in playing the cards. But implicit reliance must not be placed on this. For experienced players not unfrequently omit to call some small score, such as a tierce, in order intentionally to mislead you. This manceuvre (called sinking a score) is especially resorted to when a player has a high card unguarded. In order to induce you to believe that it is guarded, he will put up with the loss of several points in calling, on the chance of recouping himself by afterwards saving or winning the cards in consequence of your misconceiving his discard.

If your adversary calls a point which is not good, you should at once note in which suit it is (or may be), in order to count the hand. If the younger hand admits a point to be good (as regards the number of cards that compose it), the elder should observe whether the younger could possibly have had equal or better in any suit. If so he has probably put out that suit. But it may be that the younger hand, if a good judge of the game, will admit the number of cards of a point to be good when he has an equal number. Thus:—A calls five cards, and B knows, from examining his hand and discard, that there is

only one suit in which A can have five cards, and that they make fifty. B has five cards making forty-nine. B should promptly reply “good,” although he has five cards himself; because he ought to know that A’s five cards are better than his. By saying “equal,” he unnecessarily exposes his hand.

In playing the cards, you must be guided a good deal by what your adversary has called, and, to some extent, by what he has not called. You will generally know several cards in the adverse hand, or will be able to mark some that have been put out. Sometimes you will know all the cards. ‘hus, if the younger hand fails to follow suit to your first lead in which you could only have five cards, it is evident he has put out three cards of that suit, and you know every card in his hand.

Failing direct indications, lead the point, unless you have a small point and there is a tenace in that suit against you.

When playing to the opponent’s lead, keep guards to kings and queens. Having the choice between throwing a card you have declared and one you have not, prefer the former.

If you can make a pique, lead your winning cards one after the other, without considering how many of the reinaining tricks you will lose. There is one exception to this :—in the sixth hand, if your losing the cards will enable the younger hand to save his rubicon, and your score is such that you can win the partie without the pique, you should fcrego the pique, when by not leading out your winning cards immediately you can divide or win the cards.

_When you have five or six tricks and a winning card, lead the winning card, unless certain that your opponent has cards of that suit. By playing otherwise, you risk eleven points for the chance of gaining one for the last trick. This, of course, is liable toa similar exception as the previous case, viz., in the sixth hand with five tricks up, if you must win the cards or the last trick to win the partie or to save the rubicon.

In the sixth hand, if a player has scored less than a hundred, he should consider, before calling or playing, whether he can make his aggregate score up to a hundred or more. If he cannot, his object should be to reckon

as little as he can, and to prevent his adversary from scoring, by making his point or sequence equal (if possible), and by endeavouring to divide the cards. If he is satis- fied he cannot divide the cards, and there is no capot against him he is at liberty to score two (one for a trick he wins, and one for a card he plays), and to throw his cards down, allowing the adversary to reckon thirteen in play.

On the other hand, a player who is ahead, and who sees his adversary cannot reach a hundred, should endeavour to prevent the declaration of equalities, and, if he cannot win the cards himself. should play to lose them. :

During the calling and play of the hand, always keep in mind your adversary's score and satisfy yourself that he does not reckon too many. Mistakes occur, even among the most honourable

players. If your adversary reckons too few, you are not bound to correct him.

Laws of Piquet.—1. A player may shuffle either pack, above the table The dealer has the right to shuffle last. 2. A cut rane, consist of at least two cards. 3. Highest has choice of deal and cards. (Ace highest, seven lowest.) 4. If a card is exposed in cutting or before dealing, there must be a fresh rai The mode of distributing the cards (by twos or by threes) must not oo nee during the partie. 6. The stock must be placed, in one packet

ace downwards, between the players. 7. If the cards are dealt wrongly. the error may be rectified before either player has taken up his hand ~ or the adversary may demand a fresh deal. 8. If a card belonging to the elder hand or the stock is exposcd when dealing, the adversary has the option of a fresh deal. If there is a faced card in the pack, there must be a fresh deal.

-

PIR—PIR

9. If, after the deal is completed, more than one card is found to have been dealt wrongly, or nine cards are found in the stock, there must be a fresh

deal. The same if the wrong pack is dealt with, and the error is discovered before either player has taken up his cards; otherwise the packs remain changed. 10. If only one card has been dealt wrongly, the elder hand, after looking at his cards and before taking in a card, has the option of a fresh deal, and if there are only seven cards in the stock, he may alter his discard (see Laws 12 sq.). 11. The players deal alternately. If a player deals out of tum, and the error is discovered by either player before he takes up his cards, the deal is void, and the right dealer deals. If the error is discovered later, the elder hand must deal twice running with his own pack, unless that or the next deal is the last of the partie, 12. Each player is bound to discard at least one card (but see Laws 21, 22, and 23). 18, When taking in, the cards must be taken in order from the top of the stock. 14. After taking a card, a player cannot alter his discard ; and if he then takes back any of his discard, he must play with more than twelve cards (see Law 80); if after taking a card he mixes any of his hand with his discard, he must play with less than twelve cards (see Law 29). 15. If either player, when taking in, exposes a card of the stock belonging to his adversary, he can reckon nothing that deal. 16. If either player mixes with his hand a card of the stock which belongs to his adversary, he can reckon nothing that deal; or the adversary may have a fresh deal. If he stands the deal he can only take in such of his cards as have not been mixed. 17. Ifaplayer discards more cards than he takes in, he must play with less than twelve cards (see Law 29). 18. If a player discards fewer cards than he takes in, he can reckon nothing that deal. 19. The adversary has the option of not enforcing the penalty of reckoning nothing that deal. 20. If the younger hand leaves any cardsand mixes them with his discard, without showing them to the elder hand, the elder, after leading a card, is eutitled to see the younger’s discard. 21, If the elder hand elects to stand the deal when one card has been dealt wrongly, and he has thirteen cards, he must discard one card more than he takes in, and must discard at least two cards. If there are eight cards in the stock, the younger hand discards one less than he takes in, and if he only takes one card he need not discard any; if there are seven cards in the stock, and the elder hand discards six cards and takes five, the younger hand can only take two cards. 22. If the elder hand elects to stand the deal when he has eleven cards, and there are eight in the stock, he must discard one less than he takes in; if he only takes one card he need not discard any. The younger hand must discard one more than he takes in, and must discard at least two

cards. 23. If the elder hand elects to stand the deal when he has twelve cards, and there are seve in the stock, he discards the same number as he takes in; the younger discards one more than he takes in, and must discard at least two cards. 24. When the elder hand's call is good against the cards, it is sufli- cient if he states the number of cards that compose it; if not he must say what it makes or to what card it is, or the value of the cards of which it con- sists. 25. The elder hand calling too little may correct his miscall before it has been replied to by the younger hand ; and the younger hand, allowing a correct call to be good or equal, when he holds better, may correct his reply before the elder hand has made another call, or, if there is no further call, before the elder hand hasledacard. 26. If a player calls what he does not hold, he may correct his call before the younger hand has played to the first trick; and, if the younger hand has miscalled, the elder hand may take up his card and play differently. In the absence of correction, the offender can reckon nothing that deal, and the adversary, on discovery of the error, can reckon anything he has good, which is not barred by a correct call made in addition to the miscall. But there is no penalty for calling anything which a player could not possibly hold in his hand and discard taken together, nor for misnaming a suit, nor for misnaming the rank of a sequence, when one of the counting value named is held, provided the claim could not have been held in the hand and discard taken together; and, if a player voluntaril shows what he claims for, he is liable to no penalty for miscalling it. 27. player who calls anything which is allowed to be good or equal must show the cards called at any time they are asked for during the play of the hand. 28. When the younger hand has played to the first trick, neither player can reckon anything omitted (but see Law 26). 29. A player is liable to no penalty for playing with less than twelve cards. His adversary counts as tricks all cards that cannot be played to. 30. If a player plays with more than twelve cards, he can reckon nothing that deal; but his cards, though not good to score, are good to bar his adversary. 31. A card led or played cannot be taken up (but see Law 26), but cards accidentally dropped may be retaken. Also, if the leader leads several cards consecutively without waiting for them to be played to, and the adversary plays too many cards, he may retake the extra ones; and cards subsequently played in error must be taken up and played over again. Or, if a player leads out of turn, he may take up his card unless it has been played to. Or, if a player does not follow suit when able, the card played in error and all cards

subsequently played must be taken up and played over again. Or, if a player misinforms his adversary when asked what cards he holds that have been allowed to be good or equal, the adversary may retake all the cards he has subsequently played, and may play differently. 32. Errors in counting the hand, if proved, may be rectified before the player in error has seen his next hand. 383. If both players score the same number in six dcals, each deals once more, when the partie is concluded, even if there should be a second tie. 34. If the loser fails to score a hundred, he is rubi- coned, whether the winner's score reaches a hundred or not. 38. The deal in which the discovery of an incorrect pack is made is void. All preceding deals stand good, 34. A bystander calling attention to any error or oversight, and thereby affecting the score, may be called upon to pay all stakes and bets of the player whose interest he has prejudicially affected.

See Edmond Hoyle, A Short Treatise on the Game of Piquet (1744); **Cavendish," The Laws of Piquet and of Rubicon Piquet, adopted by the Portland Club, with a Treatise on the Game (1882). (H. J.)

PIRACY. Sir Edward Coke (Jnstit. ili. 113) describes a pirate (Latin pirata, from Greek zeiparys) as hosts humani generis, and as a rover and robber upon the sea. Piracy may be defined in law as an offence which consists in the commission of those acts of pillage and violence upon the high seas which on land would amount to felony. By the ancient common law of England piracy, if com- mitted by a subject, was deemed to be a species of treason, being contrary to his natural allegiance, and by an alien to be felony; but since the Statute of Treasons, 25 Edw. III. c. 2 (1851-52), piracy has been held to be felony only. Formerly this offence was only cognizable by the Admiralty courts, whose proceedings were based upon the

ome

---

civil law, but by the statute 28 Hen. VIIE. ¢. 15 (1536) | a new jurisdiction proceeding according to the common law was set up which, modified and regulated by subse- quent enactments, such as 39 Geo. III. c. 37 (1798-99),

4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 36 (1834), and 7 & 8 Vict. c. 2 (1844), | continues to be the tribunal by which offenders of this description are tried.

Piracy, being a crime not against any particular state put against all mankind, may be punished in the compet- ent court of any country where the offender may be found or into which he may be carried. But, whilst, the law of nations gives to every one the right to pursue and exter- minate pirates without any previous declaration of war (pirates holding no commission or delegated authority from any sovereign or state), it is not allowed to kill them without trial except in battle. Those who surrender or are taken prisoners must be brought before the proper tribunal and dealt with according to law.

The earliest of all sea-rovers were perhaps the Phceni- cians. During the heroic age of Greece piracy was univer- sally practised. In the Homeric poems frequent mention is made of piracy, which indeed was held in honourable estimation,—the vocation of a pirate being recognized, so that a host, when he asked his guest what was the purpose of his voyage, would enumerate enrichment by indis- criminate maritime plunder as among those projects which night naturally enter into his contemplation. So late as the time of Solon the Phoceans, on account of the sterility of their soil, were forced to roam the seas as pirates. That legislator tolerated whilst he regulated the association of sea-rovers which he found established by inveterate usage. The prevalence of the piratical spirit in Greece in the early ages may perhaps be explained by the number of small independent states into which the country was divided, and the violent animosity subsisting among them. In this way predatory habits were diffused and kept alive. Asa more regular system of government grew up, and a few states such as Athens and Corinth had become naval powers, piracy was made a capital offence. It was, how- ever, never entirely put down. Cilicia was at all times the great stronghold of the pirates of antiquity, and in consequence of the decline of the maritime forces which had kept them in check they increased so much in numbers and audacity as to insult the majesty of Rome itself, so that it became necessary to send Pompey against them with a large fleet and army and more extensive powers than had ever previously been conferred on any Roman general. The Etruscans were notorious sea-rovers who infested the Mediterranean ; and Polybius relates that the Romans imposed

upon the Carthaginians as a condition of peace the stipulation that they should not sail beyond Cape Faro, either for the purposes of trade or piracy.

Hallam (Middle Ages, iii. 336) says that in the 13th and 14th centuries a rich vessel was never secure from attack, and neither restitution nor punishment of the criminals was to be obtained from Governments. Hugh Despenser seized a Genoese vessel valued at 14,300 marks, for which no restitution was ever made. The famous Hanseatic League was formed in the middle of the 13th century in northern Germany chiefly for the purpose of protecting the ships of the confederated cities from the attacks of the pirates by which the Baltic was then infested.

A graphic account of piracy as it existed at the end of the 16th century in European waters, especially on the English, French, and Dutch coasts, will be found in Motley, Hist. United Netherlands (vols. iii. and iv.). The oe was not abated in Europe until the feudal system

ad been subverted and the ascendency of the law finally a In more modern times some of the smaller West

ndia Islands became a great resort of pirates, from which,

however, they have for many years been driven ; for con- tinued acts of piracy the city of Algiers was successfully bombarded by the British fleet under Lord Exmouth as lately as August 1816; and pirates are still not unfre- quently met with in the Indian and Chinese seas, but piracy in its original form is no longer in vogue. The BUCCANEERS (q.v.) were cruel piratical adventurers of a later date who commenced their depredations on the Spaniards soon after they had taken possession of the American continent and the West Indies, although there was a time when the spirit of buccaneering approached in

some degree to the spirit of chivalry in point of adventure.

Scaliger observes in a strain of doubtful compliment, ‘“Nulli melius piraticam exercent quam Angli.” The first levy of ship money in England in

1635 was to defray the expense of chastising these pirates. The buccaneering confederacy was broken up through the peace of Ryswick ine! GO.

At a very early period of English history the law pro- vided for the restitution of property taken by pirates, if found within the realm, whether belonging to strangers or Englishmen; but any foreigner suing for the recovery of his goods was required to prove that at the time of the capture his own sovereign and the sovereign of the captor were in mutual amity, for it was held that piracy could not be committed by the subjects of states at war with each other, In England the crown is, generally speaking, entitled to all bona piratorum; but if any person can estab- lish a title to the goods the claim of the crown thereto ceases. By 13 & 14 Vict. c. 26 (1850), ships and effects captured from pirates are to be restored on the payment of one-eighth of their value (by way of salvage), which is to be distributed among the recaptors.

Cowel (Law Dict., 1727) states that in former times the word pirate was used in a better sense than that of a sea-robber, being attributed to persons to whose care the mole or pier of a haven was entrusted, and, quoting the learned Spelman, he adds, sometimes to a sea soldier: “Robertus vero Comes (Normaniz) attemptavit venire in Angliam cum magno exercitu, sed a piratis Regis qui curam maris a Rege (Willielmo) susceperant repulsus est” (Glos- sariwm, 1687, p. 460). (J. C. W.)

PIRANUS. See ATHENS.

PIRANESI, Giovanni Battista, an eminent Italian engraver of ancient architectural subjects, was born in the former half of the 18th century, and studied his art at Rome. The great remains of that city kindled his enthusiasm and demanded portrayal. His hand faith- fully imitated the actual remains of a fabric ; his inven- tion, catching the design of the original architect, supplied the parts that were wanting ; his skill introduced groups of vases, altars, tombs ; and his broad and scientific dis- tribution of light and shade completed the picture, and threw a striking effect over the whole. One engraving after another was executed with much brilliancy ; and, as the work went on, the zeal of the artist only waxed stronger. In course of time it was found necessary to call in the aid of all his children

and of several pupils. He did not, in fact, slacken in his exertions till his death in 1778. The plates of Piranesi, in which the severity of burin work is largely supplemented by the freer lines of the etching-needle, were collected and preserved by his son and coadjutor Francesco. They were published, to the number of about 2000, in 29 vols. fol., Paris, 1835-37.

PIRMASENS, a small manufacturing town of the Bava- rian palatinate, lies in a hilly district, nearly 40 miles west by south of Spires. The staple industry is the production of boots and shoes, which are exported to Austria, Russia, and even America; but musical instruments, stoneware, and other articles are also manufactured. The only noteworthy buildings are the town-house and the principal church, the latter containing a fine monument to Louis IX., landgrave

of Hesse-Darmstadt. In 1880 the town contained 12,039 inhabitants, three-fourths of whom were Protestants.

Pirmasens owes its name to a St Pirmin, who is said to have preached Christianity here in the 8th century. It originally belonged to the count of Hanau-Lichtenberg, but passed to Hesse- Darmstadt in 1736. In 1793 the Prussians gained a victory here over a body of French troops.

PIRNA, an ancient town of Saxony, lies on the left bank of the Elbe, on the margin of the “Saxon Switzer- land,” 11 miles above Dresden. It is on the whole a regularly built town, with promenades on the site of the former ramparts, but contains no notable edifices except the fine Gothic Hauptkirche (1502-46) and the town- house. The chief source of its prosperity is formed by the excellent sandstone found on both banks of the Elbe above the town; but manufactures of cigars, chemicals, enamelled tinware, pottery, and leather are also carried on. Besides the export of the sandstone, it transacts a trade in grain, fruit, and timber, mainly by river. The population in 1880 was 11,680, almost all Protestants.

Pirna, originally a Slavonic settlement, long oscillated between Bohemia and Meissen (Saxony), but became permanently united with the latter in 1404. Having at a very early period received the privilege of holding fairs,

it was at one time among the most flourishing of Saxon towns, but afterwards lost its import- anee through pestilence and the disasters of the Thirty Years' and Seven Years' Wars. On a rock above the town rises the fortress of Sonnenstein, now a lunatic asylum, erected in the 16th century on the site of an older castle, and once considered the most important fortress on the Elbe. It successfully withstood the Swedes in the Thirty Years' War, though the town was stormed, but was cap- tured and dismantled by the Prussians in 1758. In 18138 it was oceupied by the French, and held for several months.

PIRON, Atexis (1689-1773), the foremost epigramma- tist of France, was born at Dijon on the 9th July 1689. His father, Aimé Piron, was an apothecary, but was also a frequent writer of verse in Burgundian patois. Alexis began life as clerk and secretary to a banker, and then studied law without any success or much seriousness. As a young man he made himself notorious by the composi- tion of a piece of licentious verse which might have brought him into serious difficulties but for the good nature of a high legal official, the president Bouhier. His sarcastic tongue made him unpopular in his neighbour- hood, and at last in 1719, when nearly thirty years old, he went to seek his fortune at Paris. His first experiences were not very encouraging, and he had to put up with tho unpleasant and not very honourable position of literary adviser and corrector to the Chevalier de Belle Isle. An accident, however, brought him money and notoriety. Tho jealousy of the regular actors produced an edict restricting the Thédtre de la Foire, or licensed booths at fair times, to a single character on the stage. None of the ordinary writers for this theatre, not even Lesage, would attempt a monologue-drama for the purpose, and Piron obtained a footing as a dramatic author, much applause, and three hundred crowns, with a piece called Arlequin Deucalion. Thenceforward he was constantly employed for this theatre, and not seldom for the more dignified Comédie Frangaise, but with the exception of the excellent verse comedy of La Métromanie no one of his comedies and none of his tragedies at all deserve mention. His real vocation was that of an epigram maker, and this, though it made him not a few enemies, recommended him to not a few patrons who supplied his necessities, His most intimate associates, however, during the middle period of his life were two ladies of talent though not of position Mademoiselle Quinault, the actress, and her friend Made- moiselle

Quenaudon or De Bar, companion to a lady of rank. She was slightly older than Piron and not beauti- ful, but after twenty years acquaintance he married her in 1741, lived happily enough with her for four years, and nursed her tenderly during an attack of madness which

in other two years proved fatal. He long outlived her, dying on the 21st January 1773 in his eighty-fourth year, The discredit of his early literary misdeed, and perhaps his indiscriminate habits of lampooning, prevented his clection to the Academy, certain persons having induced the king to interpose his veto. But Piron was pensioned, and during the last half century of his life was never in any want. He was a complete literary free-lance, and lam- pooned Fréron and Desfontaines as sharply as he lam- pooned Voltaire and the philosophe coterie. Socially he was a rather loose liver, though probably, except on paper, not worse than most of his contemporaries. He was a member of the somewhat famous convivial society of the Caveau. But his true title to remembrance lies in his epigrams, one of which, the burlesque epitaph on himself but reflecting on the Academy (see vol. viii. p. 496), is known to almost everybody, while many others equal or surpass it in brilliancy. Grimm called him a “ machine & saillies,” and probably no man who ever lived possessed

more of the peculiarly French faculty of sharply pointed

verbal wit than he. It is noteworthy too that he was as ready with conversational retort as with his pen.

Piron published his own theatrical works in 1758, and after his death his friend and literary executor Rigollot de Juvigny pub- lished his @uvres Completes. During the last thirty years a good deal of unpublished work has been added by MM. Bonhomme, Lalanne, and others. But the epigrams, which take up but little

room and have been frequently reissued in various selections, are

alone of great importance.

PISA, which has always been one of the most import-

ant cities of central Italy, is situated on the banks of the Arno at a short distance from the sea, in the midst of a

Sa

. orentin

,

‘ \a ANS S SENG x ST f \

AY

MA. \

\

YY Seale of % Vile

1. Cavalieri di S. Stefano,

2. Academy of Fine Arts,

3. Royal Theatre.

4. University. fertile plain backed by marble mountains wooded with pines and other forest trees. In the days of Strabo it was only two geographical miles from the sea-shore, but the continual increase of the delta at the mouth of the river has now trebled that distance. In the Middle Ages the Arno was still navigable for all ships of war then in use, and formed the safest of harbours.

The origin of Pisa is very ancient, and is involved in obscurity. The Romans believed it to date from the days of Troy, and also gave a legendary account of its foundation by colonists from Greece. Strabo mentions it as one of the bravest of the Etruscan cities. From Polybius we learn that in 225 B.c. it was already the friend of the Romans;

5. Palazzo Lanfreducci or Alla Giornata, 6. Post Office,

‘ga!

and later it became their ally and was defended by them | from the ferocious onslaughts of the Ligurian and Apuan tribes. Thus the Romans acquired great power over the city, and finally subjected it to their rule. In Caesar’s time according to some writers, in that of Augustus according to others, they established a military colony there. Nevertheless, excepting some inscriptions, sarco- phagi, statues, and columns, very few remains of Roman buildings have been discovered in Pisa. Little is known of the history of Pisa during the barbarian invasions, but it is an ascertained fact that it was one of the first towns to regain its independence. Under the Byzantine dominion Pisa, like many other of the maritime cities of Italy, pro- fited by the weakness of the Government at Constan- tinople to reassert its strength. And even during the first years of the harsh Lombard rule the need recognized by these oppressors of defending the Italian coast from the attacks of the Greeks was favourable to the development of the Pisan navy. Few particulars are extant concerning the real condition of the town; but we occasionally find Pisa mentioned, almost as though it were an independent city, at moments when Italy was overwhelmed by the greatest calamities. According to Amari’s happy expression, “it was already independent by sea, while still enslaved on land.” Its prosperity notably declined after the re-estab- lishment of the Lombard rule and under the Franks. It again began to flourish under the marquises of Tuscany, who governed it in the naine of the emperor.

In 1003 we find records of a war between Pisa and Lucca, which, according to Muratori, was the first waged between Italian cities in the Middle Ages. But the military development and real importance of Pisa in the 11th century must be attributed to the continuous and desperate struggle it maintained against the tide of Saracenic invasion from Sicily. And, although the numer- ous legends and fables of the old chroniclers disguise the true history of this struggle, they serve to attest the importance of Pisa in those days. In 1004 the Saracens forced the gates and sacked a quarter of the town ; and in 1011 they renewed the attack. But the Pisans repulsed them and assumed the offensive in Calabria, Sicily, and even in Africa. Still

more memorable was the expedition afterwards undertaken by the united forces of Pisa and Genoa against Mogdhid, better known in the Italian chronicles as Mugeto. This Moslem chief had made him- self master of Sardinia, and was driven thence by the allied fleets in 1015. Again invading the island, he was again attacked and defeated by the same adversaries, leaving a brother and son, or, as some authorities aver, a wife and son, prisoners in their hands. Sardinia con- tinued to be governed by native magistrates, who were like petty sovereigns, but were now subject to the sway of Pisa. This was the' primary cause of the jealousy of the Genoese, and of the wars afterwards made by them upon Pisa and carried on until its power was crushed. Mean- while the Pisans flourished more and more, and continued hostilities against the Saracens. In 1062 their ships returned from Palermo laden with spoil. Thus it is not surprising that Pisa should already have had its own code of laws (Consuetudint di Mare), which in 1075 were approved by Gregory VIL, and in 1081 confirmed by a pent from the emperor Henry IV., that supplies the

rst authentic notice of the existence of consuls in medieval Italy.1 The oldest of Pisan statutes still extant Is the Breve dei Consoli di Mare of 1162.

1

a remembered that the Pisans and Florentines dated the

the nee e year ab incarnatione, t.e., from the 25th March. But

iu, a dated it from the 25th following and the Pisans from the

Rn. ch preceding the commencement of the common year. The r common style was adopted throughout Tuscany in the year 1750.

| and Sardinia.

SA 119

In 1099 the Pisans joined in the second crusade, proved their valour at the capture of Jerusalem, and derived many commercial advantages from it ; for within a short time they had banks, consuls, warehouses, and privileges

of all kinds in every Eastern port. Thus, while the com- mune of Pisa was still under the rule of the marquises of Tuscany, all negotiations with it were carried on as with an independent state officially represented by the archbishop and consuls. The aristocrats were the domin- ant party, and filled the highest offices of the republic, which, in the 12th century, rose to great power, both on sea and land, by its wars with the Lucchese, Genoese, and Moslems. In 1110 Pisa made peace with Lucca after six years of continuous hostilities. And between 1114 and 1116 it achieved a still greater en- terprise. The Pisan fleet of three hundred sail, com- manded by the archbishop Pietro Moriconi, attacked the Balearic Isles, where as many as 20,000 Christians were said to be held captive by the Moslems, and returned loaded with spoil and with a multitude of Christian and Moslem prisoners. The former were set at liberty or ransomed, and among the latter was the last descendant of the reigning dynasty. The chief eunuch who had governed Majorca perished in the siege. Immediately afterwards the fourteen years' war with Genoa broke out. The two republics contested the dominion of the sea, and both claimed supreme power over the islands of Corsica A papal edict awarding the supremacy of Corsica to the Pisan church proved sufficient cause for the war, which went on from 1118 to 1182. Then Innocent II. transferred the supremacy over part of Corsica to the Genoese church, and compensated Pisa by grants in Sardinia and elsewhere. Accordingly, to gratify the pope and the emperor Lothair II., the Pisans entered the Neapolitan territory to combat the Normans. They aided in the vigorous defence of the city of Naples, and twice attacked and pillaged Amalfi, in 1135 and 1137, with such effect that the town never regained its pro- sperity. It has been said that the copy of the Pandects then taken by the Pisans from Amalfi was the first known to them, but in fact they were already acquainted with those laws. 'The war with Genoa never came to a real end. Even after the retaking of Jerusalem by the Moslems (1187) the Pisans and Genoese again met in conflict in the East, and performed many deeds of valour. They were always ready to come to blows, and gave still more signal proofs of their enmity during the Sicilian war in behalf of the emperor Henry VI. From that moment it was plain that there could be no lasting peace between these rival powers until the one or the other should be crushed. The greatness and wealth of the Pisans at this period of their history is proved by the erection of the noble buildings by which their city is adorned, The foundations of the cathedral were laid in

1063, and its consecration took place in 1118; the bap- tistery was begun in 1152, and the campanile (the famous leaning tower) in 1174. And all three magnificent struc- tures were mainly the work of Pisan artists, who gave new life to Italian architecture, as they afterwards renewed the art of sculpture.

It is asserted by some writers, especially by Tronci, that in the 12th century Pisa adopted a more democratic form of government. But in fact the chief authority was still vested in the nobles, who, both in Pisa and in Sardinia, exercised almost sovereign power. They formed the real strength of the republic, and kept it faithful to the em- pire and the Ghibelline party. The Guelf and popular element which constituted the force and prosperity of Florence was hostile to Pisa, and led to its downfall. The independence of the former city was of much later origin,

only dating from the death of Countess Matilda (1115), but it rapidly rose to an ever-increasing power, and to inevitable rivalry with Pisa. Owing to the political and commercial interests binding Florence to the Roman court, the Guelf element naturally prevailed there, while the growth of its trade and commerce necessarily compelled that state to encroach on waters subject to Pisan rule. And, although Pisa had hitherto been able to oppose a glorious resistance to Genoa and Lucca, it was not so easy to continue the struggle when its enemies were backed by the arms and political wisdom of the Florentines, who were skilled in obtaining powerful allies. The chroniclers ascribe the first war with Florence, which broke out in 1222, to a most ridiculous motive. The ambassadors of the rival states in Rome are said to have quarrelled about a lapdog. This merely shows that there

were already so many general and permanent reasons |

for war that no special cause was needed to provoke it.

In 1228 the Pisans met and defeated the united forces of |

Florence and Lucca near Barga in the Garfagnana, and at the same time they despatched fifty-two galleys to assist Frederick II. in his expedition to

the East. Shortly after this they renewed hostilities with the Genoese on account of Sardinia. The judges who governed the island were always at strife, and, as some of them applied to Pisa and some to Genoa for assistance against one another, the Italian seas were once more stained with blood, and the war burst out again and again, down to 1259, when it ter- minated in the decisive victory of the Pisans and the con- solidation of their supremacy in Sardinia. But meanwhile Florence had made alliance with Genoa, Lucca, and all the Guelf cities of Tuscany against its Ghibelline rival. pope had excommunicated Frederick II. and all his adher- ents. And, asa crowning disaster, the death of Frederick in 1250 proved a mortal blow to the Italian Ghibelline cause.

Nevertheless the Pisans were undaunted. Summoning | Siena, Pistoia, and the Florentine exiles to their aid, they |

boldly faced their foe, but were defeated in 1254. Soon

after this date we find the old aristocratic government of |

Pisa replaced by a more popular form. Instead of the consuls there were now twelve elders (anziani); besides the

podesta, there was a captain of the people; and there was |

a general council as well asa senate of forty members. The rout of the Tuscan Guelfs on the field of Montaperto (1260) restored the fortunes of Pisa. (1266), where Manfred fell, and the rout of Tagliacozzo (1268), sealing the ruin of the house of Hohenstauffen in Italy and the triumph of that of Anjou, were fatal to Pisa.

For the republic had always sided with the empire and |

favoured Conradin, whose cruel end struck terror into the Ghibelline faction. The pope hurled an edict against the Pisans and tried to deprive them of Sardinia, while their merchants were driven from Sicily by the Angevins. The internal condition of the city was affected by these events. Owing to the increasing influence of the Guelf and popular side, to which the more anibitious nobles began to adhere

for the furtherance of personal aims, the aristocratic |

Ghibelline party was rapidly losing ground. The first man

to step to the front at this moment was Count Ugolino |

della Gherardesca of the powerful house of that name. He had become the virtual head of the republic, and, in order to preserve its independence and his own sway, inclined to the Guelfs and the popular party, in spite of the Ghibelline traditions of his race. He was supported by his kinsman Giovanni Visconti, judge of Gallura; but almost all the other great families against him, and proclaimed him a traitor to his party. his country, and his kin. were driven into exile. Both then joined the Florentines took part in the war against their native city, and laid

The |

But the battle of Benevento |

vowed eternal hatred |

So in 1274 he and Visconti |

Pais A

| waste its surrounding territories. In 1276 the Pisans were compelled to agree to very grievous terms,—to exempt Florentine merchandise from all harbour dues, to yield certain strongholds to Lucca, and to permit the return of Count Ugolino, whose houses they had burnt, and whose lands they had confiscated. Thus the count again became a powerful leader in Pisa. Visconti, however, was dead,

This was the moment chosen by Genoa fora desperate and decisive struggle with her perpetual rival. For some years the hostile fleets continued to harass each other and engage in petty skirmishes, as if to measure their strength and prepare for a final effort. On the 6th August 1284 the great battle of Meloria took place. Here seventy-two Pisan galleys engaged eighty-eight Genoese, and half the Pisan fleet was destroyed. The

chroniclers speak of 5000 killed and 11,000 prisoners ; and, although these figures must be exaggerated, so great was the number of captives | taken by the Genoese as to give rise to the saying-—“To see Pisa, you must now go to Genoa.” This defeat crushed the power of Pisa. She had lost her dominion over the sea, and the Tuscan Guelfs again joined in attacking her by land. Count Ugolino had taken part in the battle of Meloria and was accused of treachery. At the height of his country’s disasters, he sought to confirm his own power by making terms with the Florentines, by yielding certain castles to Lucca, and by neglecting to conclude negotiations with the Genoese for the release of the prisoners, lest these should all prove more or less hostile to himself. This excited a storm of opposition against him, The archbishop Ruggieri, having put himself at the head of the nobles, was elected podesti by the Lanfranchi, Sismondi, and Gualandi, and a section of the popular party. The city was plunged into civil war. The great bell of the commune called together the adherents of the archbishop; the bell of the people summoned the partisans of the count. Aftera day’s fighting (1st July 1288) the count, his two sons, and his two nephews were captured in the Palazzo | del Popolo (or town hall), and cast into a tower belonging to the Gualandi and known as the “Tower of the Seven Streets.” Here they were all left to die of hunger. Their tragic end was afterwards immortalized in the Divina Commedia. The sympathies of Dante Alighieri, the Florentine patriot and foe of Rome, were naturally in favour of the victims of an aristocratic prelate, opposed to all reconciliation with Florence.

The Florentines were now allied with Lucca and Genoa, and a few of their vessels succeeded in forcing an entry into the Pisan port, blocked it with sunken boats, and seized its towers. Their own internal dissensions of 1293 | put a stop to the campaign, but not before they had con- cluded an advantageous peace. They and all the members of the Guelf league were freed from all imposts in Pisa and its port. In addition to these privileges the Genoese also held Corsica and part of Sardinia ; and throughout the island of Elba they were exempted from every tax. They likewise received a ransom of 160,000 lire for their Pisan prisoners. These were no longer numerous, many having succumbed to the hardships and sufferings of all kinds to which they had been exposed.

In 1312 the arrival of the emperor Henry VII. gladdened the hearts of the Pisans, but his sudden death in 1313 again overthrew their hopes. He was interred at Pisa, and Uguccione della Faggiuola remained as imperial lieutenant, was elected podesta and captain of the people, and thus became virtual lord of the city. As a Ghibelline chief of valour and renown, he was able to restore the | military prestige of the Pisans, who under his command captured Lucca and defeated the Florentines at Monteca- tini on the 29th August 1315. So tyrannical, however, was his rule that in 1316 he was expelled by the popular

.

| j

)

Ri

fury. But Pisa's freedom was for ever lost. He was succeeded by other lords or tyrants, of whom the most renowned was Castruccio Castracane, a political and mili- tary adventurer of much the same stamp as Uguccione himself. With the help of Louis the Bavarian, Cas- truccio became lord of Lucca and Pisa, and was victorious over the Florentines; but his premature death in 1328 again left the city a prey to the conflicts of opposing factions. New lords, or petty tyrants, rose to power in turn during this period of civil discord, but the military yalour of the Pisans was not yet extinguished.- By sea they were almost impotent—Corsica and Sardinia were lost to them for ever ; but they were still formidable by land. In 1341 they besieged Lucca in order to prevent the entry of the Florentines, to whom the city had been sold for 250,000 florins by the powerful Mastino della Scala. Aided by their Milanese, Mantuan, and Paduan allies, they gave battle to their rivals, put them to rout at Altopascio (2nd October), and then again excluded them from their port. Thereupon the Florentines obtained Porto Talamone from Siena and established a navy of their own. By this means they were enabled to capture the island of Giglio, and, attacking the Pisan harbour, carried off its chains, bore them in triumph to Florence, and suspended them in front of the baptistery, where they remained until 1848. Then, in pledge of the

brotherhood of all Italian cities, they were given back to Pisa, and placed in the Campo Santo.

The war was now carried on by the free companies with varying fortune, but always more or less to the hurt of the Pisans. In 1369 Lucca was taken from them by the emperor Charles IV.; and afterwards Giovan Galeazzo Visconti, known as the count of Virtt, determined to forward his ambitious designs upon the whole of Italy by wresting Pisa from the Gambacorti. For at this time the conflicts of the Raspanti faction, headed by the Gherar-desea, with the Bergolini led by the Gambacorti, had left the latter family masters of the city. At Visconti's instigation Piero Gambacorti, the ruler of the moment, was treacherously assassinated by Jacopo d'Appiano, who succeeded him as tyrant of Pisa, and bequeathed the state to his son Gherardo. The latter, a man of inferior ability and daring, sold Pisa to the count of Virtt, receiving in exchange 200,000 florins, Piombino, and the islands of Elba, Pianosa, and Monte Cristo. Thus in 1399 Visconti took possession of Pisa, and left it to his natural son Gabriele Maria Visconti, who was afterwards expelled from its gates. But even during this century of disaster the Pisans continued to cherish the fine arts. In the year 1278 they had entrusted the erection of their fine Campo Santo to Niccola and Giovanni Pisano, by whom the architectural part of it was completed towards the end of the century. In the following year the first artists of Italy were engaged in its decoration, and Orcagna painted his celebrated frescos on its walls. Others were after- wards supplied by Benozzo Gozzoli and men of lesser note, oe — labour of ornamentation was only discontinued in

Meanwhile, in 1406, the Florentines made another attack upon Pisa, besieging it simultaneously by sea and land. Owing to the starving condition of its defenders, and aided by the treachery of Giovanni Gambacorti, they entered the city in triumph on the 9th October, and sought to "crush every germ of rebellion and drive out its a by measures of the utmost harshness and cruelty." : hid the orders sent by the Ten of War to the repre- ata 'ann a the Florentine Government in Pisa, and such essa feed policy of every Ttalian state. of _ : ntly for a long time there was a continual stream

gration from Pisa, The Medici pursued a humaner

course. In 1472 Lorenzo the Magnificent tried to restore the ancient renown of the Pisan university. To that end he filled it with celebrated scholars, and, leaving only a few chairs of letters and philosophy in Florence, compelled the Florentines to resort to Pisa for the prosecution of their studies. But nothing could now allay the inextinguish- able hatred of the conquered people. When Charles VIII. made his descent into Italy in 1494, and came to Sarzana on his way to Tuscany, he was welcomed by the Pisans with the greatest demonstrations of joy. And, although that monarch was ostensibly the friend of Florence, they did not hesitate, even in his presence, to assert their own independence, and, casting the Florentine ensign, the Marzocco, into the Arno, made instant preparations for war. Between 1499 and 1505 they heroically withstood three sieges and repulsed three attacking armies. But their adversaries always returned to the assault, and, what was worse, yearly laid waste their territories and destroyed all their crops. Soderini, who was perpetual gonfalonier of Florence, and Machiavelli, the secretary of the Ten, urged on the war. In 1509 the latter encamped his forces on three sides of the distressed city, which at last, reduced to extremity by famine, was forced to surrender on the 8th June 1509. Thenceforth the Florentines remained lords of Pisa. But now, mainly owing to the efforts of Soderini and Machiavelli, the conquerors showed great mnagnanimity. They brought with them large stores of provisions, which were freely distributed to all; they tried to succour the suffering populace in every way, and gave other assistance to the wealthier classes. Nevertheless, emigration continued even on a larger scale than in 1406, and the real history of Pisa may be said to have ended. In Naples, in Palermo, in all parts of Italy, Switzerland, and the south of France, we still find the names of Pisan fainilies who quitted their beloved home at that time. The Florentines immediately built a new citadel, and this was a great bitterness to the Pisans. The Medici, how- ever, remained well-disposed towards the city. Leo X. was an active patron of the university, but it again declined after his death. The grand-duke Cosmo I., a genuine statesman, not only restored the university, but instituted the “Uffizio dei Fossi,” or drainage office for the reclania- tion of marsh lands, and founded the knighthood of St Stephen. This order played a noble part in the protection of Tuscan commerce, by fighting the Barbary pirates and establishing the prestige of the grand-ducal navy (see Mepic1). Under the

succeeding Medici, Pisa's fortunes steadily declined. Ferdinand I. initiated a few public works there, and above all restored the cathedral, which had been partly destroyed by fire in 1595. These dreary times, however, are brightened by one glorious name— that of Galileo Galilei. A native of Pisa, he taught in its university ; he made his first experiments in gravity from its bell tower, discovered, by observing the swing of the cathedral lamp, the law of the oscillation of the pendulum, and began there his stupendous reform of natural philosophy. But the sufferings inflicted on him by the Inquisition prove the depth of ignorance to which Tuscany and all Italy had then sunk.

As to Pisa, it is enough to mention that its population within the walls had been reduced in 1551 to 8574 souls, and that by 1745 it had only risen to the number of 12,406. Under the house of Lorraine, or more correctly during the reign of that enlightened reformer Pietro Leopoldo (1765-1790), Pisa shared in the general pro- sperity of Tuscany, and its population constantly increased. By 1840 it contained 21,670 souls, exclusive of the suburbs and outlying districts. At the present day Pisa is again one of the most flourishing cities of Tuscany. It counts 26,863 inhabitants within the walls, and in-

cluding the suburbs a total of 44,518. Its university is one of the best in Italy; it isan important railway centre; its commerce and manufactures are continually on the increase; its agriculture is rich and flourishing ; and it is the chief city of a province numbering 283,563 inhabitants.

Sce P. Tronci, Annali Pisani, 2 vols., Pisa, 1868-1871 ; Roncioni, "Istorie Pisane," in the Archivio Storico- Italiano, vol. vi. pt. 1; "Cronache Pisane," in the same Archivio, vol. vi. pt. 2; Repetti, Dizionario Geografico Storico della Toscana, sv. "Pisa." (Eo V2)

A few details regarding the principal buildings may be given by way of supplement to the foregoing article. The architects of the cathedral were Boschetto and Rinaldo, both Italians, probably Pisans. It is in plan a Latiu

cross, with an internal length of 3114 feet and a breadth of 252 feet. The nave, 109 feet high, has double vaulted aisles and the transepts single aisles; and at the inter- section of nave and transepts there is a cupola. The basilica is still the predominant type, but the influence of the domed churches of Constantinople and the mosques of Palermo is also apparent. The pillars which support the nave are of marble from Elba and Giglio ; those of the side aisles are the spoils of ancient Greek and Roman buildings brought by the Pisan galleys. Externally the finest part of the building is the west front, in which the note struck by the range of arches running round the base is repeated by four open arcades. Of the four doors three are by John of Bologna, who was greatly helped by Francavilla, Tacca, aud others ; that of the south side, of much older date, is generally supposed to be the work of Bonanno. Of the interior decorations it is enough to mention the altars of the nave, said to be after designs by Michelangelo, and the mosaics in the dome and the apse, which were among the latest designs of CIMABUE (q.v.). The baptistery was completed only in 1278, and marred in the 14th century by the introduction of Gothic details. The building is a circle 100 feet in diameter, and is covered with a cone-surmounted dome 190 feet high, ou which stands a statue of St Raniero. The lowest range of semicircular arches consists of twenty columns and the second of sixty ; and above this is a row of eighteen windows in the same style separated by as many pilasters. In the interior, which is supported by four pilasters and eight columns, the most striking features are the octagonal font and the hexagonal pulpit, erected in 1260 by Niccola PIsANO (g.v.). The campanile or “leaning tower of Pisa” is a round tower, the noblest, according to Freeman, of the southern Romanesque. Though the walls at the base are 13 feet thick, and at the top about half as inuch, they are constructed throughout of marble. The basement is surrounded by a range of semicircular arches supported by fifteen columns, and above this rise six arcades with thirty columns each. The cighth story, which contains the bells, is of much smaller diameter than the rest of the tower, and has only twelve columns. It is less to the beauty of its archi- tecture, great though that is, than to the fact that, being 11 feet 2 inches (or if the cornice be included 18 feet 8 inches) out of the perpendicular, it strikes the imagination in a way peculiarly its own. The eutire height is 183 feet, but the ascent is easy by a stair in the wall, and the visitor hardly perceives the inclination till he reaches the top and from the lower edge of the gallery looks “down”

along the shaft receding to its base. There is no reason to suppose that the architects, Bonanno and William of Innsbriick, intended that the campanile should be built in this oblique position ; it would appear to have assumed it while the work was still in pro- gress. The Campo Santo, lying to the north of the cathedral, owes its origin to Archbishop Ubalde (1188-1200), who made the spot peculiarly sacred by bringing fifty-three shiploads of earth from Mount Calvary. The building, erected in the Italian Gothic style between 1273 and 1283, by Giovanni Pisano, is of special interest

chiefly for its famous frescos noticed above (see also ORCAGNA, vol. xvii. p. 815).

PISA, LEonarpo oF. See PIsanus.

PISANELLO. See Pisano, Virrors.

PISANO, Anprea. Andrea da Pontadera (c. 1270- 1348), generally known as Andrea Pisano, the chief pupil of Giovanni Pisano (¢.v.), was born about 1270, and first learned the trade of a goldsmith, as did many other after- wards celebrated artists. This early training was of the greatest value to him in his works in bronze, to which the manipulation of the precious metals gave precision of design and refinement of execution. He becamea pupil of Giovanni Pisano about 1300, and worked with him on the sculpture for S. Maria della Spina at Pisa and elsewhere. But it is at Florence that his chief works were executed, and the formation of his mature style was due rather to Giotto

?

than to his-earlier master. Of the three world-famed bronze doors of the Florentine baptistery, the earliest one —that on the south side—was the work of Andrea; he spent many years on it; and it was finally set up in 1336.1 This marvellous piece of bronze work, in many respects perhaps the finest the world has ever seen, has all

the breadth of a sculptor’s modelling, with the finish of a

piece of gold jewellery. It consists of a number of small quatrefoil panels—the lower eight containing single figures of the Virtues (see the figure), and the rest scenes from the

Part of the first bronze door of the Baptistery at Flerence, by Andrea Pisano,

life of the Baptist. In design the panels owe much to Giotto: the composition of each is simple and harmonious, kept strictly within the due limits of the plastic art, no attemptat pictorial effects and varied planes being made,— in this very unlike the perhaps more magnificent but less truly artistic reliefs on the third door, that last executed by Ghiberti. Andrea Pisano, while living in Florence, also produced many important works of marble sculpture, all of which show strongly Giotto's influence. In some cases probably they were actually designed by that artist, as, for instance, the double band of beautiful panel-reliefs which Andrea executed for the great campanile. The sub- jects of these are the-Four Great Prophets, the Seven Virtues, the Seven Sacraments, the Seven Works of Mercy, and the Seven Planets) The duomo contains the chief of Andrea's other Florentine works in marble. In 1347 he was appointed architect to the duomo of Orvieto, which had already been designed and begun by Lorenzo Maitani. The exact date of his death is not known, but it must have been shortly before the year 1349.

Andrea Pisano had two sons, Nino aud Tommaso,—both, especi- ally the former, sculptors of considerable ability. Nino was very successful in his statues of the Madonna and Child, which are full of human feeling and soft loveliness, —a perfect embodiment of the Catholic ideal of the Divine Mother. Andrea's chief pupil was Andrea di Cione, better known as OrncAGNA (q.v.). Balduccio di Pisa, another, and in one branch (that of sculpture) equally gifted pupil, executed the wonderful shrine of S. Eustorgio at Milan—a most magnificent mass of sculptured figures and reliefs.

PISANO, Giovanni (c. 1250-1330), son of NiccoLa

PIsan 0 (see below), born about 1250, was but little inferior to his father either as an architect or a sculptor. Together

1 The date on the door, 1330, refers to the completion of the wax model, not of the casting, which was at first unsuccessful, and had to be done over again by Andrea himself.

PFs

with Arnolfo del Cambio and other pupils, he developed and extended into other parts of [taly the renaissance of sculpture which in the main was due to the extraordinary talent of that distinguished artist. After he had spent the first part of his life at home as a pupil and fellow-worker of Niccola, the younger Pisano was summoned between 1270 and 1274 to Naples, where he worked for Charles of Anjou on the Castel Nuovo. One of his earliest independent performances was the Campo Santo at Pisa, finished about 1283 ; along with this he executed various pieces of sculp- ture over the main door and inside the cloister. The richest in design of all his works (finished about 1286) is in the, cathedral of Arezzo,—a magnificent marble high altar and reredos, adorned both in front and at the back with countless figures and reliefs—mostly illustrative of the lives of St Gregory and St Donato, whose bones are enshrined there. The actual execution of this was pro- pably wholly the work of his pupils. In 1290 Giovanni was appointed architect or “capo maestro” of the new cathedral at Siena, in which office he succeeded Lorenzo Maitani, who went to Orvieto to build the less ambitious but equally magnificent duomo which had just been founded there. The design of the gorgeous facade of that duomo has been attributed to him, but it is more probable that he only carried out Maitani’s design. According to Vasari, Giovanni and other pupils of Niccola also executed the bas-reliefs on the west front of Orvieto, but this assertion is unsupported by any documentary evidence. At Perugia, Giovanni built the church of S. Domenico in 1304, but little of the original structure remains. The

north transept, however, still contains his beautiful tomb of Benedict XI., with a sleeping figure of the pope, guarded by angels who draw aside the curtain (see woodcut).

“t

il y

Part of the tomb of Benedict XI., by Giovanni Pisano.

Above is a sculptured plinth supporting canopied figures of the Madonna and other saints. The whole composition 18 framed by a high cusped and gabled arch, on twisted columns, enriched with glass mosaic in the style of

the Cosmati. The general design is like the earlier tomb of Cardinal de Braye at Orvieto, the work of Giovanni's fellow-pupil, Arnolfo del Cambio. Z Ang of Giovanni's most beautiful architectural works is ~ _ chapel of S. Maria della Spina, on the banks of i mo in Pisa; the actual execution of this gem-like chapel, and the sculpture with which it is adorned, was – Inostly the work of his pupils! This exquisite little build- ing has recently been pulled down and rebuilt, under the pretext of "restoration."

The influence of his father N iccola is seen strongly in all

1

. Schultz, Denkmaler der Kunst in Unter-Italien. vol. vii.

Giovanni's works, but especially in the pulpit of S. Andrea at Pistoia, executed about 1300. In design it resembles that in the Pisan baptistery; but the reliefs are less severely classical, and more full of vivid dramatic power and complicated motives. Another pulpit, designed on the same lines, was made by him for the nave of Pisa cathedral between 1310 and 1311. Only fragments of this now exist, but it is in course of restoration. The last part

of Giovanni's life was spent at Prato, near Florence, where with many pupils he worked at the cathedral till his death about 1330.

PISANO, Niccona (c. 1206-1278), one of the chief sculptors and architects of medizval Italy, was born about 1206. Though he called himself Pisanus, from Pisa, where most of his life was spent, he was not a Pisan by birth. There are two distinct accounts of his parentage, both derived mainly from existing documents. According to one of these he is said to have been the son of " Petrus, a notary of Siena;" but this statement is very doubtful, especially as the word "Siena" or 'de Senis" appears to be a conjectural addition. Another document among the archives of the Sienese cathedral calls him son of " Petrus de Apulia." Crowe and Cavalcaselle, as well as the majority of modern writers, accept the latter statement, and believe that he not only was a native of the province of Apulia in southern Italy, but also that he gained there his early instruction in the arts of sculpture and

architec- ture. Those on the other hand who, with most of the older writers, prefer to accept the theory of Niccola's origin being Tuscan suppose that he was a native of a small town called Apulia near Lucca, As is the case with the biographies of so many of those artists who lived long before Vasari's own time, that author's account of Niccola is quite untrustworthy. There is no doubt that in the century preceding Niccola Pisano's birth Apulia, and the southern provinces generally, were more advanced in the plastic art than any part of northern Italy—witness especially the magnificent architecture and sculpture in the cathedrals of Salerno, Bari, Amalfi, Ravello, and many others, in which still exist bronze doors, marble pulpits, and other works of art of great merit, dating from the

| 11th and 12th centuries,—-a period when northern Italy

produced very little art-work of any real beauty. That the young Niccola Pisano saw and was influenced by: these things cannot be denied, but Crowe and Cavalcaselle, in their eagerness to contradict the old traditions, go very | much too far when they deny the story, told by Vasari, of Niccola's admiration for and keen study of the remains of

In Niccola Pisano's works it

| ancient Roman sculpture which were then beginning to be

sought for and appreciated.

| is somewhat difficult to trace the direct influence of Apulian

art, while in many of them, especially the panel-reliefs of his Pisan pulpit (see figure), classical feeling is apparent in every fold of the drapery, in the modelling of the nude, and in the dignified reserve of the main lines of the com- position.

For all that, Niccola was no dull copyist ; though he emancipated himself from the stiffness and unreality of earlier sculpture, yet his admiration and knowledge of the physical beauty of the human form in no way detracted from the purity and religious spirit of his subjects. Though pagan in their beauty of modelling and grace of attitude, his Madonnas are as worshipful,

and his saints as saintly, as those of any sculptor the world has ever seen. With true genius he opened out to the church a new field in which all the gifts of God, even purely physical ones,

| were made use of and adopted as types and symbols of

inward purity and love—not repudiated and suppressed as ‘snares of the evil one. Except through his works, but

little is known of the history of Niccola’s life. As early

as 1221 he is said to have been summoned to Naples by Frederick IL, to do work in the new Castel dell’ Uovo. This fact supports the theory of his southern origin, though not perhaps very strongly, as, some years before, the Pisan Bonannus had been chosen by the Norman king as the sculptor to cast one of the bronze doors for Monreale cathedral, where it still exists. The carliest existing plece of sculpture which can be attributed to Niccola is a beautiful relief of the Deposition from the Cross in the tympanum of the arch of a side door at San Martino at Lucca ; it is remarkable for its graceful composition and delicate finish of execution. The date is about 1237.

In 1260, as an incised inscription records, he finished the marble pulpit for the Pisan baptistery ; this is on the whole the finest of his works.

The of the panels in the pulpit af the Pisan Baptistery, by Niccola Pisano.

seated on a throne, recalls the Roman Juno ; the head of Joseph behind her might be that of Vulcan ; while the youthful beauty of an Apollo and the mature dignity of a Jupiter are suggested by the standing and kneeling figures of the Magi. Certain figures in others of the panels are no less deeply imbued with classical feeling.

_The next important work of Niccola in date is the Arca di San Domenico, in the church at Bologna consecrated to that saint, who died in 1221. Only the main part, the actual sarcophagus covered with sculptured reliefs of St Dominic’s life, is the work of Niccola and his pupils. The sculptured base

and curved roof with its fanciful orna- ments are later additions. This “Arca” was made when St Dominic was canonized, and his bones translated ; it was finished in 1267, not by Niccola himself, but by his pupils. The most magnificent, though not the most beautiful, of Niccola’s works is the great pulpit in Siena cathedral (1268). ‘It is much larger than that at Pisa, though somewhat similar in general design, being an octa-

gon on cusped arches and columns. Its stairs, and a large landing at the top, with carved balusters and panels, rich with semi-classical foliage, are an addition of about 1500. The pulpit itself is much overloaded with sculp- ture, and each relief is far too crowded with figures. An attempt to gain magnificence of effect has destroyed the dignified simplicity for which the earlier pulpit is 80 re- markable.

Niccola’s last great work of sculpture was the fountain in the piazza opposite the west end of the cathedral at Perugia. This is a series of basins rising one above another, each with sculptured bas-reliefs; it was begun in 1274, and completed, except the topmost basin, which is of bronze, by. Niccola’s son and pupil Giovanni.

Niccola Pisano was not only pre-eminent as a sculptor, but was also the greatest Italian architect of his cen- tury; he designed a number of very important buildings, though not all which are attributed to him by Vasari. Among those now existing, the chief are the main part of the cathedral at Pistoia, the church and convent of Sta Margherita at Cortona, and Sta Trinita at Florence. The church of Sant’ Antonio at Padua has also been attributed to him, but without reason. Unfortunately his architec- tural works have in most cases been much altered and modernized. Niccola was also a skilled engineer, and was conipelled by the Florentines to destroy the great tower, called the Gwarda-morto, which overshadowed the baptistery at Florence, and had for long been the scene of violent conflicts between the Guelfs and Ghibellines, He managed skilfully so that it should fall without injuring the baptistery. Niccola Pisano died at Pisa in the year 1278, leaving his son, Giovanni a worthy successor to his great talents both as an architect and sculptor.

Though his importance as a reviver of the old traditions of beauty in art has been to some extent exaggerated by Vasari, yet it is probable that he, more than any other one man, was the

| means of starting that “new birth” of the plastic arts which, in the years following his death, was so fertile in countless works of

the most unrivalled beauty. Both Niccola and his son had many | pupils of great artistic power, and these earried the influence of the

| Pisani throughout Tuscany and northern Italy, so that the whole

art of the succeeding generations may be said to have owed the

| greater part of its rapid development to this one family.

| On the three preceding Pisani see Perkins, Tuscan Sculptors, vol, 1., 1864; | Cicognara, Storia della Scultura, 1823-24; Gaye, Kunstblatt, 1839; Riimohr, Italienische Forschungen, 1827-31; Milanesi, Documenti dell Arte and Vita di Niccola Pisano; Vasari, Milanesi’s ed., i p. 293 and 481, 1882; Crowe and Cavale iselle, Painting in Italy, 1864-66; Gruner, Marmor-Bildwerke der Schule der Pisaner, 1858; Leader Scott, Early Jtalian Sculptors, 1882; Symonds, Renaissance tn Italy: Fine Arts, p. 100 sg., 1877; Dohme, Kunst und Kunstler Jtaliens, Leipsic, 1878 ; Le tre porte del Battistero di Firenze, 1821. (J. 1M.)

PISANO, Virrore (c. 1380-1456), commonly called PIsANELLO, the greatest of Italian medallists, was a native of San Vigilio sul Lago in the territory of Verona. Speci- mens of his work as a painter are still extant in Rome, Venice, Verona, and Pistoia, and entitle him to a place of some distinction in the history of that art. The National Gallery in London possesses a very fine specimen of Pisa- nello’s work—a panel painted with miniature-like delicacy. For his pre-eminent position as a medallist, see NUMIS- MATICS, vol, xvii. p. 657. During the latter portion of his life he lived in Rome, where he enjoyed great repute.

PISANUS, Leonarpus-(Leonardo of Pisa), an Italian mathematician of the 13th century who has left the stamp of his name on a whole period in the

history of the science. Of Leonardo's personal history few particulars are known. His father was called Bonaccio, most probably a nickname with the ironical meaning of "a good stupid fellow," while to Leonardo himself another nickname Bigollone (dunce, blockhead) seems to have been given. The father was secretary in one of the numerous factories erected on the southern and eastern coasts of the Mediterranean by the warlike and enterprising merchants of Pisa. Where Euro- pean and Arab merchants met was at that time the right

rFrSsaNnuwUs

place for learning arithmetic, and it was certainly with a view to this that the father had Leonardo sent to Bugia to continue his education. But Leonardo aimed at some- thing higher than to make himself an accomplished clerk, and during his travels round the Mediterranean he obtained such erudition as would have gained him the name of a great scholar in much later times. In 1202 Leonardo Fibonacci (7c, son of Bonaccio) was again in Italy and published his great work Laber Abaci, which probably pro- cured him access to the learned and refined court of the emperor Frederick II. Leonardo certainly was in relation with some persons belonging to that circle, when he published in 1220 another more extensive work De Prac- tiea Geometrixe, which he dedicated to the imperial astro- nomer Dominicus Hispanus. Some years afterwards (perhaps in 1228, as is related by an author on the authority of a manuscript only once seen by him) Leonardo dedicated to another courtier, the well known astrologer Michael Scott, the second edition of his Liber Abact, which has come down to our times, and has been printed as well as Leonardo's other works by Prince Bald. Boncompagni (Rome, 1857-62, 2 vols.). The other works consist of the Practica Geometrix and some most striking papers of the greatest scientific importance, amongst which the Inber Quadratorum may be specially signalized. It bears the notice that the author wrote it in 1225, and in the intro- duction Leonardo himself tells us the occasion of its being written. Dominicus had presented Leonardo to Frederick I! The presentation was accompanied by a kind of mathematical performance, in which Leonardo solved several hard problems proposed to him by John of Palermo, an imperial notary, whose name is met with in several documents dated between 1221 and 1240. The methods which Leonardo made use of in

solving those problems fill the Liber Quadratorum, the I’los, and a Letter to Magister Theodore. All these treatises seem to have been written nearly at the same period, and certainly before the publication of the second edition of the Zuber Abaci, in which the Liber Quadratorum is expressly mentioned. We know nothing of Leonardo’s fate after he issued that second edition, and we might compare him to a meteor flashing up suddenly on the black back- ground of the midnight sky, and vanishing as suddenly, were it not that his influence was too deep and lasting to allow of his being likened to a phenomenon passing quickly by.

To explain this influence and the whole importance of Leonardo’s scientific work, we must rapidly sketch the state of mathcmatics about the year 1200. The Greeks, the most geometrical nation on the earth, had attained a high degree of scientific perfection, when they were obliged to yield to the political supremacy of Rome. From this time mathematics in Europe sunk lower and lower, till only some sorry fragments of the science were still preserved in the eell of the studious monk and behind the counting-board of the eager merchant. Geometry was nearly forgotten ; arithmetic made use of the abacus with counters, or with the nine characters the ongin of which is still a matter of controversy (see NUMERALS); the zero was still unknown. Among the Arabs it was quite other- Wise. Greek mathematics found amongst them a second home, ee the science was not only preserved but came to new i ee from India, whence in particular came

i its use, which alone renders possible numerical calculation in the modern sense of the word. Ancient aa as well as ancient mathematics reappeared in Europe,

e beginning of the 12th century onwards, in an Arabian

A, Two men especially recognized the worth of these sciences made it the task of their life to propagate them amongst their

1

Ps oe pote “eum Magister Dominieus pedibus eelsitudinis vestre i. . ueeret presentandum” have always been taken to mean es eee was presented to the emperor at Pisa, but the date of aa sae this interpretation, as Frederick II.

eertainly never was « os a ore July 1226. The translation, therefore, ought to be— = agister Dominicns brought me from Pisa, &e.,” the plaee

ere Leonardo met the emperor remaining unknown.

eontemporaries,—the German monk Jordanus Nemorarius and the Italian merchant Leonardus Pisanus. Leonardo, as we have said, travelled all round the Mediterranean gathering knowledge of every kind. He studied the geometry of Euclid, the algebra of Moham- med ibn Musa Alcharizmi; he made himself acquainted with Indian methods; he found out by himself new theories. So runs his own account ; and an exact comparison of Leonardo’s works with older sources not only confirms the truth of his narrative, but shows also that he must have studied some other authors, —for instance, Alkarchi. In his Practica Geomctriz plain traces of the use of the Roman “agrimensores” are met with; in his Liber Abaci old Egyptian problems occur revealing their origin by the reappearance of the very numbers in which the problem is given, though one cannot guess through what channel they came to Leonardo’s knowledge. Leonardo cannot now be regarded (as Cossali regarded him about 1800) as the inventor of that very great variety of truths for which he mentions no earlier source. But even were the pre- decessors to whom he is indebted more numerous than we are inclined to beheve, were he the Columbus only of a territory the existence of which was unknown to his century, the historical importance of the mau would be nearly the same. We must remember the general ignorance of his age, and then fancy the sudden appearance of a work like the Liber Abaci, which fills 459 printed pages. These pages set forth the most perfect methods of calculating with whole numbers and with fractions, practice, extraction of the square and cube roots, proportion, chain rule, finding of proportional parts, averages, progressions, even compound interest, just as in the completest mercantile anthmetics of our days. They teach further the solution of problems leading to equations of the first and second degree, to determinate and inde- terminate equations, not by single and double position only, but by real algebra, proved by means of geometric constructions, and including the use of letters as symbols for known numbers, the unknown quantity being called res and its square census. We

may well wonder, not that the impression caused by a work of such overwhelming character was so deep, but that it made any impres- sion at all, and that the unprepared soil could receive the seed. The second work of Leonardo, his Practica Gcomctriz (1220), is still more remarkable, since it requires readers already acquainted with Euclid's planimetry, who are able to follow rigorous demon- strations and feel the necessity for them. Among the contents of this book we simply mention a trigonometrical chapter, in which the words sinus versus arcus occur, the approximate extraction of cube roots shown more at large than in the Liber Abaci, and a very curious problem; which nobody would search for in a geome- trical work, viz., to find a square number which remains a square number when 5 is added to it. This problem evidently suggested the first question put to our mathematician in presence of the emperor by John of Palermo, who, perhaps, was quite enough Leonardo's friend to set him such problems only as he had himself asked for. The problem was :—To find a square number remain- ing so after the addition as well as the subtraction of 5. Leonardo gave as solution the numbers 117%, 16;°f, and 6;2,,,—the squares of 345, 47s, and 27%; and the Liber Quadratorum gives the inethod of finding them, which we cannot discuss here. We observe, how- ever, that the kind of problem was not new. Arabian authors already had found three square numbers of equal difference, but the difference itself had not been assigned in proposing the qnestion. Leonardo's method, therefore, when the difference was a fixed condition of the problem, was necessarily very different from the Arabian, and, in all probability, was his own discovery. The Flos of Leonardo turns on the second question set by Jolin of Palermo, which required the solution of the cubic equation a + Qa? + 10x =20. Leonardo, making use of fractions of the sexagesimal scale, gives a=1° 22! 71i gait g3iv 4v 40vl, after having demonstrated, by a discussion founded on the 10th book of Euclid, that a solution by square roots is impossible. It is much to be deplored that Leonardo does not give the least intimation how he found his approximative value, outrunning by this result more than three centuries. Genocchi believes Leonardo to have been in _posses- sion of a certain method called regula awrea by Cardan in the 16th century, but this is a mere hypothesis without solid foundation. In the Flos equations with negative values of the unknown quantity are also to be met with, and Leonardo perfectly under- stands the meaning of these negative solutions. In the Letter to Magister Theodore indeterminate problems are chiefly

worked, and Leonardo hints at his being able to solve by a general method any problem of this kind not exceeding the first degree. We have enumerated the main substance of what appear to be Leonardo's own discoveries, and the experienced reader will not hesitate to conclude that they prove him to have been one of the greatest algebraists of any time. As for the influence he exercised on posterity, it is enough to say that Luca Pacioli, about 1500, in his celebrated Summa, leans so exclusively to Leonardo's works (at that time known in manuscript only) that he frankly acknowledges his dependence on them, and states that wherever no other author is quoted all belongs to Leonardus Pisanus. (M. CA.)

PISCICULTURE. This art as at present pursued is not limited to those animals which are grouped by zoologists in the class of Pisces. " Fishery" is now under- stood to signify the exploitation of all products of the sea, lake, and river, the capture of whales, turtles, pearls, corals, and sponges, as well as of fish proper. The pur- pose of fish-culture (or aqutculture, as it is in France more appropriately named) is to counteract by reparative and also by preventive measures the destructive effects of fishery. : : a.

The possibility of exterminating aquatic animals within the restricted limits of a lake or a river cannot be doubted ; authorities are decidedly at variance, however, as to the extent of the influence of man upon the abundance of life in the open seas. Distinction must be made between the extermination of a species, even in a restricted locality, and the destruction of a fishery; the former is very unusual, and is seemingly impossible in the case of oceanic species, but the latter, especially for limited regions, is of almost yearly occurrence. Aquatic mammals, such as seals, may be en- tirely exterminated, especially when, like the fur seal, they forsake the water for a season and resort to the land for breeding purposes. The fur seals of the Pacific and Ant- arctic are now nearly gone, except in two groups of islands, the Pribylovs in Alaska and the Commander Islands in Siberia, where they enjoy Government protection, the islands being leased to the Alaska Commercial Company by whom only a stated number, all non-breeding males, may be killed each year, the permanence of the fishery being thus perfectly secured. Aquatic mammals also which never leave the

water, like whales and sirenians, being conspicuous by reason of their size, and incapable of rapid multiplication, may, especially when they breed near the shore, suffer extermination. As examples may be cited the Arctic sea cow (Rhytina steller') and the Pacific grey whale (Rhachianectes glaucus), the former extinct, the latter having practically become so within the present century. The sperm whale is also rapidly dis- appearing. In the case of fixed animals like the oyster, the corals, and the sponges, again, the colonies or beds may be swept out of existence exactly as forests are hewn down. The native oyster beds of Europe are for the most

part gone, and still more rapid has been the recent destruc-

tion of the oyster reefs in Pocomoke Sound, Maryland, a large estuary, formerly very productive—the result being due more directly to the choking up of the beds by the rubbish dragged over them by dredges, and the demolition of ledges suitable for the reception of young spat, than to the removal of all the adult oysters, which could, of course, never have been effected. The preservation of oyster-beds is a matter of vital importance to the United States, for oyster-fishing, unsupported by oyster-culture, will soon destroy the employment of tens of thousands and a cheap and favourite food of tens of millions of the people. Some- thing may undoubtedly be effected by laws which shall allow each bed to rest for a period of years after each season of fishing upon it. It is, however, the general belief that shell-fish beds must be cultivated as carefully as are garden beds, and that this can be done only by giving to indivi- duals rights in submerged lands, similar to those which may be acquired upon shore. It is probable that the present unregulated methods will prevail until the dredging of the natural beds shall cease to be remunerative, and that the oyster industry will then pass froin the improvi- dent fishermen to the painstaking oyster-grower, with a corresponding increase in price and decrease in consump- tion. Such a change has already taken place in France and Holland, and to a large extent in England, but there appear to be almost unsurmountable difficulties in the way of protecting the property of oyster-culturists from depre-

PIS€wcwmowruRey

dations—difficulties apparently as formidable in England as in America.

Fishes in ponds, lakes, or streams are quickly exter- minated unless the young be protected, the spawning season undisturbed, and wholesale methods of capture prohibited. Salmon and trout streams are preserved in all countries of northern Europe; and in Canada also a large service of fishery wardens is maintained. In the United States there are in many of the older common- wealths excellent codes of laws for the preservation of fish and game, which are enforced by anglers' clubs, A river may quickly be emptied of its anadromous visitors, salmon, shad, and alewives, by over-fishing in the spawning season, aS well as by dams which cut off the fish from their spawning-grounds. Numerous rivers in Europe and America might be named in which this has occurred. In the same way, sea fishes approaching the coasts to spawn in the bays or upon the shoals may be embarrassed, and the numbers of each school decimated,—particularly if, as in the case of the herring, the eggs are adhesive and become entangled in nets. Sea fishes spawning in estuaries are affected much in the same manner as the salmon in rivers, though in a less degree, by wholesale capture in stationary nets The shad and alewife fisheries of the United States are protected by an extensive code of laws, varying in the several States and in the different rivers of each State. The most satisfactory laws appear to be those which regulate the dates when fishery must commence and end, and prescribe at least one day in each week, usually Sunday, during which the ascent of the fish may not be interrupted. Migratory, semi-migratory, or wandering fishes, ranging singly or in schools over broad stretches of ocean, the mackerels, the tunnies, the sardines or pilchards, the menhaden, the bluefish, the bonitoes, and the sque- teague, stand apparently beyond the influence of human agency, especially since, so far as is known, they spawn at a distance from the coast, or since the adults, when about to spawn, cannot be reached by any kind of fishery apparatus. Their fecundity is almost beyond comprehension, and in many instances their eggs float free near the surface, and are quickly disseminated over broad areas. The conclu- sions gained by Prof. Baird, U.S. commissioner of fisheries, agree exactly with those of Prof. Huxley, that the number of any given kind of oceanic fish killed by man is perfectly insignificant when compared with the destruction effected by their natural enemies. Almost any body of water, be it a bay or sound, or be it the covering of a ledge or shoal

at sea, may be over-fished to such a degree that fishing

becomes unprofitable, especially if fishing be carried on in the spawning season. In this manner, no doubt, have the coasts of England been robbed of the formerly abundant supplies of turbot and sole.

The character of the various destructive influences which man brings to bear upon the inhabitants of the water and their effects having thus been briefly noticed, the student of fish culture is confronted by the question, What can be done to neutralize these destructive tendencies? There are evidently three things to do:—(1) to preserve fish waters, especially those inland, as nearly as it may be possible in their normal condition ; (2) to prohibit waste- ful or immoderate fishing; and (3) to put into practice the art of fish breeding—(a) to aid in maintaining a natural supply, (6) to repair the effects of past improvi- dences, and © to increase the supply beyond its natural limits rapidly enough to meet the necessities of a con stantly increasing population.

; The preservation of normal conditions in inland waters 1s comparatively simple. A reasonable system of forestry and water-purification is all that is required; and this is needed not only by the fish in the streams but by the

———

SS SRI ti neta ms

SSS

Pree ir t £ f OW EF

people living on the banks. It has been shown that a river which is too foul for fish to live in is not fit to flow near the habitations of man. Obstructions, such as dams, may, in most instances, be overcome by fish ladders. The salmon has profited much by those devices in Europe, and the immense dams in American rivers will doubtless be passable even for shad and alewives if the new system of fishway construction devised by Col. M‘Donald, and now being applied on the Savannah, James, and Potomac, and other large rivers, fulfils its present promises of success.! . ;

The protection of fish by law is what legislators have been trying to effect for many centuries, aud the success of their efforts must be admitted to have been very slight indeed. Great Britain has at present two schools of fishery-economists,—the one headed by Prof. Huxley, opposed to legislation, save for the preservation of fish in inland waters; the other, of which Dr Francis Day is the chief leader, advocating a strenuous legal regulation of sea fisheries also. Continental Europe is by tradition and belief committed to the last-named policy. In the United States, on the contrary, public opinion is generally anta- gonistic to fishery legislation ; and Prof. Baird, the com-missioner of fisheries, after carrying on for fourteen years, with the aid of a large staff of scientific specialists, inves- tigations upon this very question, has not yet become satisfied that laws are necessary for the perpetuation of the sea fisheries, nor has he ever recommended to Congress the enactment of any kind of fishery laws.

Just here we meet the test problem in fish culture. Many of the most important commercial fisheries of the world, the cod fishery, the herring fishery, the sardine fishery, the shad and alewife fishery, the mullet fishery, the salmon fishery, the whitefish fishery, the smelt fishery, and many others, owe their existence to the fact that once a year these fishes gather together in closely swimming schools, to spawn in shallow water, on shoals, or in estua- ries and rivers. There is a large school of guas¢ econo- mists who clamour for the complete prohibition of fishing during spawning time. Their demand demonstrates their ignorance. Deer, game, birds, and other land animals may easily be protected in the breeding season, and so may trout and other fishes of strictly local habits. Not so the anadromous and pelagic fishes. If they are not caught i the spawning season, they cannot be caught at all.

The writer recently heard a prominent fish-culturist advocating before a committee of the United States Senate the view that shad should not be caught in the rivers because they come into the rivers to spawn. When asked what would become of the immense shad-fisheries if this Were done, he ventured the remark that doubtless some Ingenious person would, invent a means of catching them at sea. The fallacy in the argument of these economists lies, in part, in supposing that it is more destructive to the progeny of a given fish to kill it when its eggs are nearly ripe than to kill the

same fish eight or ten months earlier. We must not, however, ignore the counter-argu- ment. Such is the mortality among fish that only an infinitesimal percentage attains to maturity. Professor Mobius has shown that for every grown oyster upon the beds of Schleswig-Holstein 1,045,000 have died. Only a very small percentage, perhaps not greater than this, of the shad or the smelt ever comes upon the breeding grounds. Some consideration, then, ought to be shown to those individuals which have escaped from their enemies and have come up to deposit the precious burden of eggs. ad much must they be protected? Here the fish-cul-

1st comes in with the proposition that “it is cheaper to le lean oaths

1 Report of United States Fish Commission for 1883.

make fish so plentiful by artificial means that every fisher- man may take all he can catch than to enforce a code of protection laws.”

The salmon rivers of the Pacific slope of the United States, the shad rivers of the east, and the whitefish fisheries of the lakes are now so thoroughly under control by the fish-culturist that it is doubtful if any one will venture to contradict his assertion. The question is whether he can extend his domain to other species.

Fish-culture in a restricted sense must sooner or later be resorted to in all densely populated countries, for, with the utmost protection, nature unaided can do but little to meet the natural demand for fish to eat. Pond-culture (Teichwirthschaft), has been practised for many centuries, and the carp and the gold-fish have become domesticated like poultry and cattle. The culture of carp is an import- ant industry in China and in Germany, though perhaps not more so than it was in England three and four

| centuries ago; the remains of ancient fish-stews may be

scen upon almost every large estate in England, and particularly in the vicinity of old monasteries. Strangely enough, not a single well-conducted carp-pond exists in England to-day to perpetuate the memory of the tens of

thousands which were fornierly sustained, and the carp, escaping from cultivation, have reverted to a feral state and are of little value. Until inrproved varieties of carp are introduced from Germany, carp-culture can never be made to succeed in England. Carp-culture is rapidly coming into favour in the United States ; a number of young scale carp and leather carp were imported in 1877 for breeding purposes, and the fish commission has since distributed them to at least 30,000 ponds. Two railway cars especi- ally built for the purpose are employed during the autuinn months delivering cargoes of carp, often making journeys of over three thousand miles, and special ship- ments have been made to Mexico and Brazil. The carp is not recommended as a substitute for the salmon, but is especially suited to regions remote from the sea where better-flavoured fish cannot be had in a fresh condition.

A kind of pond-culture appears to have been practised by the ancient Egyptians, though in that country as in ancient Greece and Rome, the practice seems to have been similar to that now employed in the lagoons of the Adriatic and of Greece, and to have consisted in driving the young fish of the sea into artificial enclosures or vivaria, when they were kept until they were large enough to be used.

The discovery of the art of artificially fecundating the ova of fish must apparently be accredited to Stephen Ludwig Jacobi of Hohenhausen in Westphalia, who, as early as 1748, carried on successful experinients in breed- ing salmon and trout. The importance of this discovery was thoroughly appreciated at the time, and from 1763 to 1800 was a fruitful subject of discussion in England, France, and Germany. George III. of England in 1771 granted to Jacobi a life pension. It has been claimed by many French writers that the process of artificial fecunda- tion was discovered as early as 1420 by Dom Pinchon, a monk in the abbey of Reome, but this claim is but a feeble one, not having been advanced until 1854, and it is believed by many that the practice of the French monk was simply to collect and transplant the eggs which he had already found naturally fertilized. However interest- ing to the antiquarian, the proceedings of Dom Pinchon had no influence upon the progress of fish-culture. To Germany, beyond question, belongs the honour of discover- ing and carrying into practical usefulness the art of fish- culture. Upon the

estate of Jacobi, by the discoverer and his sons, it was carried on as a branch of agriculture for fully eighty years—from 1741 to 1825—though it was nearly a hundred years before public opinion was |

ripe for a general acceptance of its usefulness, a period during which its practice was never abandoned by the Germans.

Fish-culture in Britain was inaugurated in 1837 by Mr John Shaw, gamekeeper to the duke of Buccleuch at Drumlanrig, who, in the course of ichthyological investiga- tions, had occasion to fecundate the eggs of salmon and rear the young; and, as regards France, an illiterate fisher- man, Joseph Remy, living in the mountains of the Vosges, rediscovered, as it is claimed, or at any rate successfully practised, in association with Antoine Gehin, the culture of trout in 1842. The originality and practical influence of Remy and Gehin's work appear to have been exaggerated by French writers. On the other hand the establishment in 1850 at Huningue (Hiininger) in Alsace by the French Government of the first fish-breeding station, or " pisci- factory," as it was named by Professor Coste, is of great significance, since it marks the beginning of public fish- culture. The art discovered in Germany was practised in Italy as early as 1791 by Baufalini, in France in 1820, in Bohemia in 1824, in Great Britain in 1837, in Switzerland in 1842, in Norway under Government patronage in 1850, in Finland in 1852, in the United States in 1853, in Belgium, Holland, and Russia in 1854, in Canada about 1863, in Austria in 1865, in Australasia, by the intro- duction of English salmon, in 1862, and in Japan in ISG.

Artificial Propayation.—Sponges have been successfully multi- plicd by cuttings, like plants, in Austria and in Florida. Oysters have long been raised in artificial enclosures from spat naturally deposited upon artificial stools. The eggs of the American and Portuguese oysters have been artificially fecundated and the young hatched, and in July 1883 Mr John A. Ryder, embryologist of the U.S. Fish Commission, solved the most difficult problem in American oyster-culture by completing a mechanical device for pre- veuting the escape of the newly hatched oysters while swimming about prior to fixation.1 The English oyster, being hermaphrodite, or moneecious,

cannot be artificially propagated from the egg like the dicecious Amcrican species.

The fertilization of the fish egg is the simplest of processes, con- sisting, as every one knows, in simply pressing the ripe ova from the female fish into a shallow receptacle and then squeezing out the milt of the male upon them. Formerly a great deal of water was placed in the pan; now the ‘‘ dry method,” with only a little, discovered by the Russian Vrasski in 1854, is preferred. The eggs having been fertilized, the most difficult part of the task remains, namely, the care of the eggs until they are hatched, and the care of the young until they are able to care for themselves.

The apparatus employed is various in principle, to correspond to the physical peculiarities of the eggs. Fish-culturists divide eggs into four classes, viz. :—(1) heavy eggs, non-adhesive, whose specitic gravity is so great that they will not float, such as the eggs of the salmon and trout ; (2) heavy adhesive eggs, such as those of the herring, smelt, and perch ; (3) semi-buoyant eggs, like those of the shad and whitefish (Coregonus) ; and (4) buoyant eggs, like those of the cod and mackerel. (1) Heavy non-adhesive eggs are placed in thin layers either upon gravel, grilles of glass, or sheets of wire cloth, in receptacles through which a current of water is constantly passing. There are numerous forms of apparatus for eggs of this class, but the most effective are those in which a number of trays of wire cloth, sufficiently deep to carry single layers of eggs, are placed one upon the other in a box or jar into which the water enters from below, passing out at the top. (2) Heavy adhesive eggs are received upon bunches of twigs or frames of glass plates to which they adhere, and which are placed in receptacles through which water is passing. (3) Semi-buoyant eggs, or those whose specifie gravity is but slightly greater than that of the water, require altogether different treatment. Thcy are necessarily placed together in large numbers, and to prevent their settling upon the bottom of the receptacle it is necessary to introduce a gentle current from below, For many years these eggs could be hatched only in ane receptacles with wire-cloth bottoms, placed at an angle to the current of the stream in which they were fixed, the motion of which was utilized to kcep the eggs in suspension. Later an arrangement of plunging-buckets was invented, cylindrical recep- tacles

with tops and bottoms of wire cloth, which were suspended in rows from beams worked up and down at the surface of the

1 Bulletin, United States Fish Commission, 1883.

al PIS eCreCew ELT UNE

constantly in motion. Finally the device uow most in favour was perfected ; thisis a receptacle, conical, or at least witha constricted termination, placed with its apex downward, through which passes from below a strong current, keeping the eggs constantly suspended and in motion. This form of apparatus, of which the M‘Donald and Clark hatching-jars are the most perfect development, may he worked in connexion with any common hydrant.* (4) Floating eggs have been hatched only by means of rude contrivances for sustaining a lateral circular eddy of water in the receptacle.

The use of refrigerators, to retard the development of the egas until such time as it is most convenient to take care of the fry, has been extensively introduced in the United States, and has been experimented upon in Germany.

The distinction between private and public fish-culture must be carefully observed. The maintenance of ponds for carp, trout, and other domesticated species is an industry to be classed with poultry- raising and bee-keeping, and its interest to the political economist is but slight. The proper function of public fish-culture is the stocking of the public waters with fish in which no individual can claim the right of property. This is being donc in the rivers of the United States, with salmon, shad, and alewives, and in the lakes with whitefish. The use of steamships and steam machinery, the construction of refrigerating transportation cars, two of which, with a corps of traincd experts, are constantly employed by the United States Fish Commission, moving fish and eggs from Maine to Texas, and from Maryland to California, and the maintenance of permanent hatching stations, seventeen in number, in different parts of the continent, are forms of activity only attainable by Government aid. Equally unattainable by private effort would be the enormous experimeuts in transplanting and acclimatizing fish in new waters,—such as the planting of Californian salinon in the rivers of the east, land-locked salmon and smelt in the lakes

and rivers of the interior, and shad in California and the Mississippi valley, and the extensive acclimatization of German carp ; the two last-named experiments carricd out within a period of three years have met with successes beyond doubt, and are of the greatest importance to the country; the others have been more or less successful, though their results are not yet fully realized. It has been demonstrated, however, that the great river fisheries of the United States, which produced in 1880 48,000,000 tb of alewives, 18,000,000 tb of shad, 52,000,000 fb of salmon, besides bass, stur-

eon, and smelt, and worth ‘‘at first hand” between 4,000,000 and 6,000,000 dollars, are entirely under the control of the fish-culturist to sustain or to destroy, and are capable of immense extension.

Having now attcmpted to define the field of modern fish-culture, and to show what it has already accomplished, it remains to be stated what appear to be its legitimate aims and limitations.

The aims of modern fish-culture, as understood by the present writer, are—(1) to arrive at a thorough knowledge of the life history from beginning to end of every species of economic value, the histories of the animals and plants upon which they feed or upon which their food is nourished, the histories of their enemies and friends, and the friends and foes of their cnemies and friends, as well as the currents, temperatures, and other physical phenomena of the waters in relation to migration, reproduction, and growth; and (2) to apply this knowledge in such a practical manner that every form of fish shall be at least as thoroughly under control as are now the salmon, the shad, the alewife, the carp, and the whitefish. Its limitations are precisely those of scientific agriculture and animal rearing, since, although certain physical conditions may constantly intervene to thwart man’s efforts in any given direction, it is quite within the bounds of reasonable expecta- tion to be able to understand what these are, and how their effects are produced. An important consideration concerning the limita- tions of fish-cultnre must always be kept in mind in weighing the arguments for and against its success, viz., that effort towards the acclimatization of fishes in new waters is not fish-culture, but 1s simply one of the necessary experiments upon which fish-culture may be based. The

introduction of carp from Germany to the United States was not fish-culture; it was an experiment ; the experiment has succeeded, and fish-culture is now one of its results. The intro- duction of California salmon to the Atlantic slope was an experl- ment; it has not succeeded; its failure has nothing to do with the success of fish-culture. 1f any one wants to see successful fish- culture in connexion with this fish let him go to the Sacramento river. The introduction of shad to the Pacific coast was an experiment ; it succeeded ; shad culture can now be carried on without fear of failure by the Fish Commission of the Pacific States. An equally established success is whitefish culture in the Great Lakes. The experiments with cod and Spanish mackcrel were not fish-culture, though it is hoped that they may yet lead up to it. And there is every reason to believe, from experiments in part completed, that the dominion of fish-culture may be extended m like manner to certain of the great sea fisheries, such as the cod, haddock, herring, mackerel, and Spanish mackerel fisheries.

2 Transactions, American Fish Cultural Association, 1883.

Public fish-culture exists only in the United States and Canada. European fish-culturists have always operated | with only small numbers of eggs. The hatchery of Sir James Maitland at Howicton near Stirling, Scotland, may be specially mentioned in this con- nexion, since it is undoubtedly the finest private fish-cultural establishinent in the world. It is described in one of the Confcr- ence papers of the International Fishery Exhibition.

The recent organization of the Scottish Fishery Board, and the establishment of a society for the biological investigation of the coasts of Great Britain, are indications that England, having at last recoonized the importance of protecting its extensive fishery

industries, will at no distant time become a leader in matters of

fishery economy.

Holland, Germany, and Norway have hitherto been the only European nations manifesting intelligent enterprise in the con- sideration of fishery

questions in general, although fair work has been done by Sweden and other countries in the treatment of limited special branches of this industry. In Germany the functions of the German Fishery Union (Deutscher Fischerct-Verein) and of the commission for the investigation of the German seas (Ministerial-Kommission zur wisscnschaftlichen Untersuchung der deutschen Mecrc zw Kiel), taken together, represent practically the two divisions of the work of the United States Fish Commission,

a commission of scientific men, whose head is appointed by the

Government; it is carried on with Government funds, but is not in | any way subjected to Government control, the central headquarters _

being at Kiel instead of Berlin. The Fischerei-Vercin is also a private body, under the patronage of the emperor, and with funds partly furnished by the Governinent and having also the general direction of the National Fish Cultural Society at Hiiningen. This, also, is not a bureau of any Government department, but managed entirely by its own officers. It is the ouly European fish- eries institution that has so far constituted a thoroughly successful experiment. The Netherlands Commission of Sea Fisheries (Collegie voor de Lecvisscherijen) is a body of fifteen men, chiefly workers in science, occupying a responsible position in the national economy, their function being ‘‘to advise Government in all subjects con- nected with the interest of the fisheries.” During the twenty-five years of its existence, says its historian, ‘‘the commission has con- stantly been consulted by Government on the different measures that might be beneficial, or on the abolition of others that were detrimental, to the fisheries.” The Society for the Development of Norwegian Fisheries (Selskabet for de Norske Fiskericrs Fremme) is an organization independent of the Government, and electing its own officers, but receiving large grants from Government to carry on work precisely similar to that of the United States Commission. In 1882-83 these grants amounted to 49,000 kroner.

Asan illustration of the interest manifested in fish-culture in the United States, it may be stated that from 1871 to 1883 $1,190,955 has been appropriated by Congress for the nse of the United States Fish Commission, and that thirty-five of the State Governments have made special grants for fish-culture, in the aggregate equal to $1,101,000. To show the wholesale

methods employed in this, a letter by Mr Livingston Stone, superintendent of one of the seventeen hatcheries supported by the United States Fish Commis- sion, that on the M‘Cloud river in California, may be quoted : —

“Tn the eleven years since the salmon-breeding station has been in operation 67,000,000 eggs have been taken, most of which have been distributed in the various States of the Union. Several millions, however, have been sent to foreign countries, including Germany, France, Great Britain, Denmark, Russia, Belgium, Molland, Canada, New Zealand, Australia, and the Sandwich Islands. About 15,000,000 have been hatched at the station, and the young fish placed in the M‘Cloud and other tributaries of the Sacramento river. So great have been the benefits of this restocking of the Sacramento that the statistics of the salmon

fisheries show that the annual galmon catch of the river has increased 5,000,000 pounds cach year during the last few years.”

_ Fifteen canneries now are fully supplied, whereas in 1872 the Single establishment then on the river was obliged to close for lack of fish, In the two Government hatcheries at Alpena and North- ville, Michigan, there have been produced in the winter of 1883-84 over 100,000,000 eggs of the whitefish, Coregonus clupeiformis, and bs total number of young fish to be placed in the Great Lakes ae year by these and the various State hatcheries will exceed ‘ ,000,000. The fishermen of the Great Lakes admit that but fees fish-culture half of them would be obliged to abandon eir calling. Instances of great improvement might be cited in ee with nearly every shad river in the United States. In e Potomac alone the annual yield has been brought up by the Operations of fish-culture from 668,000 ib in 1877 to an average of te than 1,600,000 tb in recent years. In 1882 carp bred in the one eee ponds in Washington were distributed in lots a. ty a apphcants throughout every State and Territory, at ae oe istance of more than 900 miles, the total inileage of the ee about 9,000,000 miles, and the actual distance ae SC a y the transportation car 34,000 miles. There still . ; — “a urope some scepticism as to the beneficial results of fish- re. Such doubts do not cxist on the other side of the Atlantie,

if the continuance from year to year of liberal grants of public money may be considered to be a test of public confidence.

Perhaps the best gencral treatises upon the methods of artificial propagation practised by pisciculturists are Herr Max Von Dem Borne's Fischzuchi, Berlin, 1880, and from the philosophical standpoint, Dr Francis Day's Fish Culture, one of the handbooks of the International Fisheries Exhibition of 1883. The reports and bulletins of the Unitcd States Fish Commission, in twelve volumes, from 1873 to 1884, contain full descriptions of Amcrican methods, and discussions of all foreign discoveries and movements. Two prominent London journals, the Field and Land and Water, contain authoritative articles upon the subject, and the museum of fisheries and fish-culture at South Kensington, enriched as it has been by the contributions of exhibitors at the Fisheries Exhibition of 1883, is an excellent exponent of the methods and implements in use in the past and at present. For a history of the subject see ''Epochs in the History of Fish Culture," by G. Brown Goode, in Transactions of the Amcrican Fish Cultural Association (10th meeting, 1881, pp. 34-58), and '' The Status of the United States

| Fish Commission in 1884," by the same author, in part xii. of the Report of

that commission; and for a discussion of modern methods and apparatus, as shown at the late Fisherics Exhibition, the essays by Mr R. Edward Earll in the report of the United States commissioner to the exhibition and in Vature (Oct. 4, 1883), (G. B. G.)

PISEK, a small town of Bohemia, 55 miles to the south of Prague, lies on the right bank of the Wottawa, which is here crossed by an interesting stone bridge of great antiquity. The town generally has a medizval air,

t sh Ce | heightened by the preservation of part of the old walls — propagation and investigation. The latter body is composed of |

and bastions, The most prominent buildings are the church of the Nativity, the town-house, and the venerable chateau. The name of Pisek, which is the Czech for sand, is said to be derived from the gold-washing formerly carried on in the bed of the Wottawa. This source of profit, however, has

been long extinct, and the inhabitants now support themselves by iron and brass founding, brewing, and the manufacture of shoes and Turkish fezes. The population in 1880 was 10,545,

Pisek was one of the chicf centres of the Hussites, and it suffered very. severely in the Thirty Years' War, when Maximilian of Bavaria put almost all the inhabitants to the sword. It was also occupied by the French in 1741. In spite of these reverses Pisek is now a very wealthy community, possessing large aud valuable tracts of woodland.

PISIDIA, in ancient geography, was the name given to a country in the south of Asia Minor, immediately north of Pamphylia, by which it was separated from the Mediterranean, while it was bounded on the north by Phrygia, on the east by Isauria, Lycaonia, and Cilicia, and on the west and south-west by Lycia and a part of Phrygia (see vol. xv. Pl. II). It was a rugged and mountainous district, comprising some of the loftiest portions of the great range of Mount Taurus, together with the offshoots of the same chain towards the central tableland of Phrygia. Such a region was naturally occupied from a very early period by wild and lawless races of mountaineers, who were very imperfectly reduced to subjection by the powers that successively established their dominion in Asia Minor. The Pisidians are not mentioned by Herodotus, either among the nations that were subdued by Croesus, or among those that furnished contingents to the army of Xerxes, and the first mention of them in history occurs in the Ana- basis of Xenophon, when they furnished a pretext to the younger Cyrus for levying the army with which he designed to subvert his brother's throne, while he pretended only to put down the Pisidians who were continually harassing the neighbouring nations by their lawless forays (Azad. i. 1, 115 ii. 1, 4, &c.). They are afterwards mentioned by Ephorus among the inland nations of Asia Minor, and assume a more prominent part in the history of Alexander the Great, to whose march through their country they opposed a deter- mined resistance. In Strabo's time they had passed tran- quilly under the Roman dominion, though still governed by their own petty chiefs and retaining to a considerable extent their predatory habits.

The boundaries of Pisidia, like those of most of the inland provinces or regions of Asia Minor, were not clearly defined, and appear to have

fluctuated at different times. This was especially the case on the side of Lycia, where the upland district of Milyas was sometimes included in Pisidia, at other times assigned to Lycia. Some

writers, indeed, considered the Pisidians as the same people with the Milyans, while others regarded them as descendants of the Solymi, but Strabo speaks of the language of the Pisidians as distinct from that of the Solymi, as well as from that of the Lydians. The whole of Pisidia is an elevated region of tablelands or upland valleys in the midst of the ranges of Mount Taurus which descends abruptly on the side of Pamphylia. It contains several small lakes, but the only one of any importance 1s that now called the Egerdin Gol, of which the ancient name has not been preserved. It is a fresh-water lake of about 30 miles in length, situated in the north of Pisidia on the frontier of Phrygia, at an elevation of 2800 feet above the sea. The only rivers of any importance are the Cestrus and the Eurymedon, both of which take their rise in the highest ranges of Mount Taurus, and flow down through deep and narrow valleys to the plain of Pamphylia, which they traverse on their way to the sea.

Notwithstanding its rugged and mountainous character, Pisidia contained in ancient times several considerable towns, the ruins of which have been brought to light by the researches of recent travellers (Arundell, Hamilton, Daniell), and show them to have attained under the Roman empire to a degree of opulence and prosperity far beyond what we should have looked for in a country of predatory mountaineers. The most important of them are Termessus, near the frontier of Lycia, a strong fortress in a position of great natural strength and commanding one of the principal passes into Pamphylia; Cremna, another mountain fortress, north of the preceding, impending over the valley of the Cestrus; Sagalassus, a little farther north, a large town in a strong position, the ruins of which are among the most remarkable in Asia Minor; Selge, on the right bank of the Eurymedon, surrounded by rugged mountains, notwithstanding which it was in Strabo’s time a large and opulent city; and Antioch, known for dis- tinction’s sake as Antioch in Pisidia, and celebrated for the visit of St Paul. This was situated

in the extreme north-east of the district immediately on the frontier of Phrygia, between Lake Egerdin and the range of the Sultan Dagh.” Besides these there were situated in the rugged mountain tract west of the Cestrus Cretopolis, Olba or Olbasa, Pogla, Isinda, Etenna, and Conana. Pednelissus was in the upper valley of the Eurymedon above Selge. The only place in the district at the present day deserving to be called a town is Isbarta, the residence of a pasha; it stands at the northern foot of Mount Taurus, looking over the great plain which extends from thence into Phrygia. North of this and immediately on the borders of Phrygia stood Apollonia, called also Mor- dizum. Several other towns are assigned to Pisidia by Strabo, Pliny, and Ptolemy, of which the sites have not yet been determined.

We have no clue to the ethnic character and relations of the Pisidians, except that we learn from Strabo that they were distinct from the neighbouring Solymi, who were probably a Semitic race, but we find mention at an early period in these mountain districts of various other tribes, as the Cabali, Milyans, &c., of all which, as well as the neighbouring Isaurians and Lycaonians, the origin is wholly unknown, and in the absence of monuments of their language must, in all probability, ever remain so.

PISISTRATUS, citizen and afterwards tyrant of Athens, was the son of Hippocrates, through whom he traced his pedigree to Neleus and Nestor, princes of Messene in the Heroic Age. A branch of the family had reigned at Athens in the persons of Codrus and his aa ean was second cousin to Solon, 7 ee een cousins, and the early friendship

men was not entirely broken off even by

,

the wide political differences which separated them in later life. Pisistratus, who was much junior to Solon, was born about 605 B.c. In his youth there was a keen rivalry between Athens and Megara, and Pisistratus as general of Athens contrived by stratagem to defeat the Megarians and capture their port Nisea (perhaps 570 or a little later).1_ But Pisistratus was ambitious of more than military triumphs, and in the internal condition of Attica he

discerned the road to power. The constitution which Solon had given to Athens a few years before (594 B.C.) was too moderate to satisfy either of the extreme parties. The wealthy nobles chafed at the political rights granted to the lower classes, while the poor were dissatis- fied with what they regarded as merely a half measure of relief. The nobles themselves were divided into the parties known as the Plain (Pedieis) and the Coast (Paralot), the former inhabiting the western lowlands of Attica, the latter the level districts on the southern and eastern coasts.2 The former were led by the noble Lycurgus, the latter by Megacles, of the proud house of the Alemonide. Pisistratus took advantage of their dissensions to form a third political party out of the men of the Mountain (Diacreis or Diacriot), the poor cottars and shepherds of the eastern and northern hills, among whom his own estates lay. He easily won the affection of these simple highlanders. His manners were captivat- ing, his good humour imperturbable ; his purse was ever at the service of the needy ; his fields and gardens stood open for their enjoyment. Equality and fraternity, together with the maintenance of the constitution, were the watch-

‘words of this eloquent and handsome aristocrat, the

people’s friend. But his easy and affable deportment hid a boundless ambition. Solon detected his schemes, and warned the people against him, but in vain. One day, not long after a violent dispute with Megacles in the public assembly, Pisistratus drove into the market-place, himself and his mules bleeding from wounds which he had inflicted with his own hand, but which he pretended to have received from his political enemies. The indignant people decreed a guard for the protection of their cham- pion. Of this guard the champion soon availed himself in order to seize the Acropolis and make himself master of Athens (560). Megacles and the Alemzonide fled, but Solon remained and continued to lift his voice against the usurper, who, however, treated the old man with the utmost deference, as a valued friend and counsellor. Solon did not long survive his country’s freedom ; he died in the next year (559). The government of Pisistratus was marked by great moderation; he maintained the existing laws, to which he exacted obedience from all, and set the example of it himself. Being once accused of

1 Herod., i. 59; Justin, ii. 8; Frontinus, iv. 7, 44. Other writers (Polyznus, i. 20; Allian, Var, Hist., vii. 19) erroneonsly attribute the stratagem to Solon, and refer it to the expedition in which Solon recovered Salamis. Plutarch (Solon, 8) falls into this mistake, and adds to it the blunder of representing Pisistratus as having taken part in the expedition, which happened about 600 B.c. The two events (Solon's conquest of Salamis and Pisistratus's capture of Salamis) ate distinguished by Justin (ii, 7, 8), and after him by Dunckcr (@esch. des Alterthums, vi. pp. 145, 244) and others, but they are confused by Thirlwall and Grote. From Plutarch (Solon, 8, 9) we may infer that the confusion arose in popular tradition. The account of the stratagem itself in the Greek writers Plutarch and Polyenus differs somewhat from that in the Latin writers Justin and Frontinus. fflian follows (with some variations) the latter account.

2 The difference between the Pedieis and the Paraloi seems to have been of the nature of a local feud between two ancient districts of Attica (Schol. on Aristoph., Lys., 58 ; Strabo, ix. p. 392; Steph. Byz., s.vv. Atdkpia, Tidpados, wedloy ; Suidas, s.v. Tdpador) rather than 2 disagreement between two political parties. It is true that Plutarch (Solon, 18) represents the Paraloi as a moderate political party, inter- mediate between the Pedieis (oligarchs) and the Diacrioi (democrats), but this has the appearance of being a mere conjecture of his own. His view is, however, accepted by Curtius and Duncker.

PIS—

murder, he appeared in court like a private citizen to answer the charge, which, however, the accuser did not venture to press. But before he had time to establish himself firmly on the throne, he was expelled by a coalition of the Plain and Coast parties (perhaps in 555). His property was confiscated and sold by auction. But after five or six years Megacles, unable to make head against the party of the Plain, proposed to Pisistratus to secure his recall on condition that Pisistratus should marry his daughter Ccesyra. Pisistratus agreed, and his return was effected by a stratagem. A tall and beautiful woman,. Phya by name, was dressed as the goddess Athene, and drove into Athens on a chariot with Pisistratus at her side, while heralds proclaimed that Athene herself was bringing back Pisistratus.

Thus restored, Pisistratus fulfilled his part of the bargain by marrying Coesyra; but by his former marriage he had already sons approaching manhood (Hippias and Hipparchus), and he treated his young wife so slightingly that Megacles, feeling himself affronted, made peace with his adversaries, and the united parties once more compelled Pisistratus to quit Athens (perhaps in 549). But he did not renounce his designs on the tyranny. The contributions which he received from various cities, especially Thebes, enabled him to hire a body of Argive mercenaries, with which he landed at Marathon in the eleventh year after his expulsion (perhaps in 538). His partisans flocked to him, and he defeated the Athenians at Pallene, and repossessed himself of the tyranny, which he thenceforward held till his death. He now placed his power on a securer basis by keeping a body of mercenaries in his pay, and levying a tax of a tenth or a twentieth on the produce of the soil. A further revenue accrued to him from the Thracian mines, and probably from the silver mines of Laurium, and the harbour and market dues. He now developed his plans for the exten- sion of the naval empire of Athens in the Augean. The island of Naxos was conquered by him, and handed over to Lygdamis, a native of the island, who had zealously supported the restoration of Pisistratus with men and money. In Naxos Pisistratus deposited the hostages he exacted from those of his enemies who chose to re- main at Athens. In Sigeum on the Hellespont, which he conquered from the Mytilenians, he established as tyrant Hegesistratus, his son by an Argive wife, whom he had married in his second exile. The European side of the Hellespont was already in Athenian hands, Miltiades having established an Athenian colony on the Thracian Chersonese during the first tyranny, and with the consent of Pisistratus. Athens thus commanded the straits through which passed the corn trade of the Black Sea. Pisistratus further raised the reputation of Athens by purifying the sacred island of Delos; all the graves within sight of the temple of Apollo were opened and the dead removed to another part of the island. His rule was as Wise and beneficent at home as it was glorious abroad. He encouraged agriculture by lending the poorer peasants cattle and seed, and he paid special attention to the culti- vation of the olive. He enacted or enforced a law against idleness, and he required that the state should maintain its disabled soldiers. Under his rule and that of his sons Attica, was intersected by high roads, which, converging to the capital, helped to unite the country and thus to abolish

eS a ee

‘ Out of the thirty-three years which elapsed between Pisistratus’s oa usurpation and his death in 527 B.c., we know (from Aristotle,

ov.) V. p. 1315 b) that he reigned during seventeen. He was twice de- Peed and banished, and his second exile lasted between ten and eleven — iepa. pime2)) hence his first must have lasted between five and ae ut we cannot fix with certainty the dates of these two exiles. e ee La whom Clinton, Yasti Hellenici, ii. p. 254, and Stein oe ec i. 64, uearly agree) places the first in 555-550, and the

Ont in 549-538 (see his Gesch. d. Alterthums, vi. p. 454 sq.).

Pik Teoh

local feuds and factions. To the tyrants Athens further owed those subterranean channels in the rock which still supply it with drinking water from the hills _ Pisistratus also adorned Athens with splendid public buildings. The temple of the Pythian Apollo was his work; and he began, but did not finish, the great temple of Zeus, the remaining columns of which still astonish the beholder. Modern authorities? further ascribe to him the old Parthenon on the Acropolis, which was afterwards burned by the Persians and replaced by the Parthenon of Pericles. The Lyceum was attributed to him by Theopompus, but to Pericles by the better authority of Philochorus. He caused the Panathenaic festival to be celebrated every fourth year with unusual magnificence.

The well-known story that Pisistratus was the first to collect and publish the poems of Homer in their present form rests on the authority of late writers (Cicero being the earliest), and seems to be sufficiently disproved by the silence of all earlier authorities (see Homer). The state- ment of Aulus Gellius that Pisistratus was the first to establish a public library at Athens is perhaps equally void of foundation. The tyrant seems to have been merciful and amiable to the last. It is not recorded of him that he ever put an enemy to death, and the easy good humour with which he submitted to affronts offered to himself and his family reminds us of Czesar. Solon’s description of him appears to have been justified—that apart from his ambi- tion there

was not a better-disposed man at Athens than Pisistratus. He died at an advanced age in 527, and was succeeded by his sons Hippias and Hipparchus (the Pisistratide), who continued to rule Athens in the same moderate and beneficent spirit. (3. G. FR.)

PISTACHIO NUT, see Not, vol. xvii. p. 665. The pistachio nut is the species named in Gen, xlii. 11 (Heb. Dba, Ar. bofm) as forming part of the present which Joseph's brethren took with them from Canaan, and in Egypt it is still often placed along with sweetmeats and the like in presents of courtesy. The nut is used in various ways ; but the simplest plan is to boil it with salt.

PISTOIA, or Pistosa, a well-walled ancient city, 21 miles north-west of Florence, on a slight eminence near the Ombrone, one of the tributaries of the Arno; it now contains about 12,500 inhabitants. The chief manufac- ture of the place is iron-working, especially fire-arms.® It is on the site of the Roman Pistorza, of which little trace remains. During the Middle Ages Pistoia was at times a dangerous enemy to Florence, and the scene of constant conflicts between the Guelfs and the Ghibellines : it was there that, in the year 1300, the great party struggle took place which resulted in the creation of the Bianchi and Neri factions (see Dante, Infer., xxiv., 1. 121 to end). In the early development of architec- ture and sculpture Pistoia played a very important part ; these arts, as they existed in Tuscany before the time of Niccola Pisano, can perhaps be better studied in Pistoia than anywhere else; nor is the city less rich in the later works produced by the school of sculptors founded by Niccola. In the 14th century Pistoia possessed a number of the most skilful artists in silver work, a wonderful specimen of whose powers exists now in the cathedral,— the great silver altar and frontal of St James, originally made for the high altar, but now placed in a chapel on the south side (see Mera Work, vol. xvi. p. 65, fig. 4). The cathedral is partly of the 12th century, but rebuilt by one of the Pisani, and inside sadly modernized in the worst

2 Curtius and Duncker in their histories of Grecce; see also Wachsmuth, Die Stadt Athen im Alterthum, vol. i. p. 502.

3 The word "pistol" is derived (apparently through pistolese, a dagger, — dagger and pistol being both small arms) from Pistoia, where that weapon

was largely manufactured in the Middle Ages.

132

all

Pal Pa

taste. Besides the silver altar it contains many fine works | blood, and grateful for the services rendered them from time

of sculpture; the chief are the monument of Cino da Pistoia, lawyer and poet, Dante's contemporary (1337), and Verrocchio's finest work in marble, the monument to Cardinal Forteguerra (1474), with a large figure of Christ, surrounded by angels, in high relief. Unhappily two of the principal figures were destroyed not many years ago, and replaced by worthless modern ones.1_ Among the very early churches the principal is Sant' Andrea, enriched with sculpture, and probably designed, by Gruamons and his brother Adeodatus, in 1186; in the nave is Giovanni Pisano's magnificent pulpit, imitated from his father's pulpit at Pisa. Other churches of almost equal interest are S. Giovanni Evangelista, also with sculpture by Gruamons, about 1160, and S. Bartolomeo in Pantano by the architect Rudolfinus, 1167. S. Piero Maggiore and San Paolo are also churches begun in the 12th century. San Francesco al Prato is a fine church of the school of Niccola Pisano, end of the 13th century. San Domenico, a noble church built about 1380, contains the beautiful tomb of Filippo Lazari by Bernardo di Matteo, 1464. In addition to its fine churches, of which the above is a very incomplete list, Pistoia contains many noble palaces and public buildings. The Palazzo del Commune and the Palazzo Pretorio, once the residence of the podesta, are both fine specimens of 14th-century domestic architecture, in very good preservation. The Ospedale del Ceppo, built originally in the 13th century, but remodelled in the 15th, is very remarkable for the reliefs in enamelled and coloured terra-cotta with which its exterior is richly decorated, Besides various medallions, there is a frieze of figures in high relief extending along the whole front, over its open arcade. The reliefs consist of a series of groups representing the Seven Works of Mercy and other figures; these were executed by the younger members of the Della Robbia family between 1525 and 1535, and, though

not equal to the best work of Luca and Andrea, are yet very fine in conception and modelling, and extremely rich in their general decorative effect.

PITCAIRN, or Pircarrn's IsLanp, an island of the eastern Pacific, in 25°4' N. lat. and 130° 8' W. long., may be considered as a member or appendage of the Paumotu, Tuamotu, Low, or Dangerous Archipelago, but is nearly 100 miles south of Oeno. It is not more than 3 miles long from east to west and about 2 miles broad. the other islands of this region it has no coral reef, but rises abruptly from the depths with steep and rugged cliffs of dark basaltic lava. There is no anchorage except on a bank at the west end; and even the best of its three landing places—Bounty Bay on the north coast—is danger- ous from the violence of the surf and the existence of a strong undertow. The longer axis of the island is formed by a range of steep hills, attaining in Outlook Ridge a maximum height of 1008 feet. On a plateau about 400 feet above the sea lies the village of Adamstown, with its fields and gardens. The climate is variable and rainy, and snow sometimes falls on the mountains ; but, as there are no springs or streamlets, drinking water is apt to grow scarce in a dry season. Vegetation is luxuriant. Neither the bread fruit nor the cocoa nut, introduced by the settlers, are fully successful ; but the sweet potato, which forms their staple food, banana, yam, taro, pine-apple, &c., produce abundantly. Cor cannot be grown because of rats. The Pitcairn Islanders (not more than ninety in 1878), descended mainly from the mutineers of the " Bounty " and their Tahitian wives, are a healthy, virtu- ous, cheerful, and hospitable people, proud of their English

1 One of the chief treasures of the 9, Kensington Museum is the

original sketch in clay for this monument, about 18 inches high, rt ; —low the only record of the original design of the two chief Piiten

Unlike |

to time by the English Government and private liberality,

Stone axes, remains of sculptured stone pillars similar to those of Rapanui (Easter Island), and skeletons with a pearl-mussel beneath their head, have been found in the island, and show that, though it was uninhabited when

discovered by Carteret in 1767, it had previously been occupied. Pitcairn was the name of the midshipman who first descried it from the mast-head. On 28th April 1789 a mutiny broke out on board the “ Bounty,” then employed by the English Government in conveying young bread- fruit trees from Tahiti to the West Indies. The commander, Lieutenant BuLicH (qg.v.), was set adrift in the launch with a number of his officers and crew, but managed to make his way to Kupang in Timor (Dutch Indies). The mutineers, twenty-five in number, at first all returned to Tahiti. Of those who chose to be landed on that island, six were condemned to death by court-martial in England, and three of these were ultimately executed (1792). Two years earlier (1790) the other party (consisting of Fletcher Christian, the leader of the mutiny, eight other Englishmen, six Polynesian men, and twelve Polynesian women) had taken pos- session of Pitcairn and burned the “ Bounty.” The beautiful island, which might have been a paradise, was soon turned into a little hell. Treachery, drunkenness, madness, and murder fill the first years of its annals. By 1800 all the men were dead except Alexander Smith (afterwards known as John Adams), whose endeavours to train up the youthful generation thus left in his sole charge were crowned with success. An American vessel, the “ Topaze,” under Mayhew Folger, discovered the strange colony in 1808, and again, by accident, it was visited by the “ Briton,” Captain Sir F. Staines, and the “Tagus,” Captain Pipon, in 1817. On the death of John Adams, 29th March 1829, George Hunn Nobbs, who, after an adventurous life had settled at Pitcairn in 1828, was appointed pastor and chief magistrate of the settlement. Through fear of drought the islanders, now numbering 87 persons, removed in 1830 to Tahiti, but neither the climate nor the morals of the place were such as they approved, and in 1831 they returned to their lonely island. Hardly had they settled into their old ways when Joshua Hill, a strange adventurer, rather crazy than criminal, appeared among them; claiming to be under Government authority, he tyrannized over them till his removal by an English man-of-war in 1838. th 1856 the whole population of Pitcairn—60 married per- sons and 134 young men, women, and children —were landed on NorFo.k IsLanp (¢.v.); and the little island was again left to the occupancy of goats and cattle. In 1858, however, two men, William and Moses Young, chose to return with their families to their old homes, and their example was afterwards followed by a few others.

See Shillibeer, The “ Briton’s” Voyage to Pitcairn’s Island, 1818; Beechey, Voyage to the Pacific, 1831; Sir John Barrow, History of the Mutiny of the “ Bounty,” 1831; W. Brodie, Pitcairn’s Island, 1850; T, B. Murray, Piteatrn, 1854; Meinicke, Die Insel Pitcairn, 1858, and Die Inseln des Stillen Oceans, vol. ii., 1876 ; and Lady Belcher, The Mutineers of the “* Bounty,” 1870.

PITCAIRNE, ArcurBatp (1652-1713), a distinguished Scottish physician, born at Edinburgh in 1652, and de- scended of an ancient Fifeshire family which barely escaped extinction at the battle of Flodden,—the proprietor of the estate and his seven sons having fallen in the battle, and the succession being only preserved by the birth of a posthumous child. After obtaining some classical education at the school of Dalkeith, Pitcairne entered Edinburgh university in 1668, and took his degree of M.A. in 1671. Like some men of great general ability, he seems to have remained long undetermined as to his future profession, and before taking to medicine he had made some progress first in divinity and then in law. But, having been sent to France for the benefit of his health, he was induced at Paris to begin the study of medicine. On his return to Scotland he applied himself for a time and with great success to the study of mathematics. Having at last taken vigorously to medicine, first at Edinburgh and after- wards for the second time at Paris, he obtained in 1680 his degree of M.D. from the faculty at Rheims. On returning to Scotland he at once began practice at Edin- burgh, and in a short time acquired a great and wide reputation—so much so that in 1692 he was invited to fill a professor’s chair at Leyden, and is said to have lectured there with great applause. Among his pupils were at least two men who afterwards rose to great eminence in their profession, Mcad and Boerhaave, and both of them are understood to have attributed much of their skill to what they had learned from Pitcairne. In the followimg year

Pitcairne returned to Scotland to fulfil a matrimonial engagement with a daughter of Sir Archibald Stevenson, an eminent physician in Edinburgh ; and, the family of the young lady having objected to their daughter going abroad, Pitcairne did not return to Leyden, but settled once more in Edinburgh, speedily acquired a most extensive practice, rose indeed to be

the first physician of his time in Scotland, and was frequently called in as consulting physician not only in England but even in Holland.

Soon after his return to Edinburgh, feeling the great want of the means of anatomical study, he importuned the town council to permit himself and certain of his medical friends to dissect the bodies of paupers in " Paul's Work" unclaimed by their relations, and who therefore had hitherto been buried at the town's expense. They offered to attend them gratis when ill, and after dissection to bury them at their own charges. Strangely enough this pro- posal was strongly opposed by the chief surgeons of the place, but ultimately the town council had the good sense to comply with Pitcairne's request, and in this way he may be said to have the credit of laying the foundation of the great Edinburgh school of medicine.

Though, according to Boerhaave, Pitcairne had not com- pletely emancipated himself from some of the fanciful theories prevalent in his age in the science of medicine, yet the main characteristic of his superiority appears to have been that, like Sydenham and the higher class of physicians in England at that time, he insisted on strict adherence to the Baconian method of attending chiefly to facts of experience and observation. " Nothing," he remarks, "more hinders physic from being improved than the curiosity of searching into the natural causes of the effects of medicines. 'The business of men is to know the virtues of medicines, but to inquire whence they have that power is a superfluous amusement, since nature lies concealed. A physician ought therefore to apply himself to discover by experience the effects of medicines and diseases, and reduce his observations into maxims, and not needlessly fatigue himself by inquiring into their causes, which are neither possible nor necessary to be known. If all physicians would act thus we should not see physic divided into so many sects."

Pitcairne's medical opinions are chiefly contained in a volume of Dissertations which he published in 1701 (second and improved edition, 1713). In these he dis- cusses the application of geometry to physic, the circula- tion of the blood in the smaller vessels, the difference in the quantity of the blood contained in the lungs of animals in the womb and of the same animals after birth, the motions by which food becomes fit to

supply the blood, the question as to inventors in medicine (in which he repels the idea of certain medical discoveries of modern umes having been known to the ancients, especially vindicating for Harvey the discovery of the circulation of the blood, and refuting the opinion of Dacier and others that it was known to Hippocrates), the cure of fevers by evacuating medicines, and the effects of acids and alkalis m medicine,

In addition to his great knowledge and skill as a physician, Pitcairne is understood to have been also an accomplished mathematician. He was intimate with the two Gregorys, and is said to have made some improvement on the method of infinite series invented by David Gregory. ee addiction to mathematics seems to have misled ae. 4 ong with some other eminent men of his time, into ; idea of applying its methods of reasoning to subjects

or which they are quite unfitted: in Pitcairne's case the

attempt is made in one of his papers to adapt them to medicine.

133

Latin verses, occasionally with something more than mere imitative cleverness and skill. Some verses of his on the death of Lord Dundee were translated by Dryden, and, as one of the latest editors of Dryden's poetry with perfect justice remarks, "the translation will not be thought so happy as the original."

According to the representations which are left by his contemporaries of his personal bearing and character, he seems to have carried his great faculties very lightly. A strong man all round, with great animal spirits and jovial habits, somewhat contemptuous of the gravities and feeblosities around him, a loudly avowed Jacobite and Episcopalian, rather reckless in his jests and sarcasms, and spending a good deal of his time in clubs, public houses, and drinking jollities, he was evidently regarded with little favour and some suspicion by the sober and decent Presbyterian circles of Edinburgh. " Drunk twice a day," according to the worthy, credulous, gossiping Wodrow (in one of his note books) ; "an unbeliever," 'much given to profane jests," an "atheist," according to otliers. These reports may be taken for what they

are worth, which perhaps is not very much. What is certain is that he was repeatedly involved in violent quarrels with his medical brethren and others, and once or twice got into scrapes with the Government on account of his indiscreet political utterances. Among his friends, however, he was evidently well liked, and he is known to have acted with great kindness and generosity to deserving men who needed his help. Ruddiman, the great Scottish scholar, for example, was rescued from a life of obscurity by his encouragement and assistance, and by no one was his memory more gratefully cherished.

"__Vale, lux Scotigenum, princepsque Mcdentum, Musarum columen delicieeque, vale!"

are the concluding lines of a Latin epitaph by him on his venerated patron and friend, which still remains on Pitcairne's monument in the Greyfriars churchyard. Mead too, appears never to have forgotten what he owed to his old teacher at Leyden. A son of Pitcairne's had gone out in the rebellion of 1715, and, having been con- demned to death was saved by the earnest interposition of Mead with Sir Robert Walpole. He pleaded, very art- fully, that if Walpole's health had been bettered by his skill, or if members of the royal family were preserved by his care, it was owing to the instruction he had received from Dr Pitcairne. Pitcairne died in October 1713. Among his other scholarly tastes he had been a great collector of books, and his library, which is under- stood to have been of considerable value, was, through the influence of Ruddiman, disposed of to Peter the Great of Russia.

PITCH. See Tar.

PITCHER PLANTS. vol. xiii. pp. 138, 139.

PITHOM, a city of Egypt, mentioned in Exod. i. 11, along with RAMESES (q.v.).

PITHOU, Pierre (1539-1596), lawyer and scholar, was born at Troyes on November 1, 1539. His taste for litera- ture was early seen, and his father, an advocate, cultivated it tothe utmost. He first studied at Troyes, and afterwards went to Paris, where he completed his classical studies under Adrien Turnébe and Pierre Galand. He next attended the lectures in law of

Cujas at Bourges and Valence, and was called to the Paris bar in 1560. Here he achieved but little success as a pleader, but soon acquired a considerable practice as a consulting lawyer. On the out- break of the second war of religion in 1567, Pithou, who was a Calvinist, withdrew to Sedan and afterwards to Basel, whence he returned to France on the publication of the

See Insectrvorous~ PLants,

He was also a very thorough classical scholar, and wrote | edict of pacification. Soon afterwards he accompanied the

Duc de Montmorency on his embassy to England, return- ing shortly before the massacre of St Bartholomew, in which he narrowly escaped with his life. Next year he followed the example of Henry of Navarre, to whose cause he was ardently attached, by abjuring the Protestant faith. Henry, shortly after his own accession to the throne of France, recognized Pithou's talents and services by bestow- ing upon him various legal appointments. It was con- siderably after this date that Pithou achieved what was probably the most important work of his life, whether political or literary, by co-operating in the production of the powerful Satere Menippée (1593), which did so much to damage the cause of the League ; the harangue of Daubray is usually attributed to his pen. He died at Nogent-sur- Seine on November 1, 1596. His valuable library, specially rich in MSS., was for the most part transferred to what is now the Bibliothéque Nationale in Paris.

Pithou wrote a great number of legal and historical books, besides preparing editions of several ancient authors. His earliest publication was Adversariorum Subsecivorum Lib, II, (1565), which was highly praised by Turnébe, Lipsius, and others. Perhaps his edition of the Leges Visigothorum (1579) was his most valuable contribution to historical science; in the same line he edited the Capitula of Charlemagne, Louis the Pious, and Charles the Bald in 1588, and he also assisted his brother Frangois in preparing an edition of the Corpus Juris Canonici (1687). His essay On the Gal- lican Liberties (1594) is reprinted in his Opera sacra juridica historica miscellanea collecta (1609). In classical literature he was the first who

made the world acquainted with the Fables of Phedrus (1596) ; he also edited the Pervigilium Veneris (1587), aud Juvenal and Persius (1585).

PITT, Witit1am, First Eart or Cuaruam. See CHATHAM.

PITT, Wriuxram (1759-1806), the second son of William Pitt, earl of Chatham, and of Lady Hester Grenville, daughter of Hester, Countess Temple, was born on the 28th of May 1759. The child inherited a name which, at the time of his birth, was the most illustrious in the civilized world, and was pronounced by every Englishman with pride, and by every enemy of England with mingled admiration and terror. During the first year of his life every month had its illumina- tions and bonfires, and every wind brought some mes- senger charged with joyful tidings and hostile standards. In Westphalia the English infantry won a great battle which arrested the armies of Louis XV. in the midst of a career of conquest ; Boscawen defeated one French fleet on the coast of Portugal; Hawke put to flight another in the Bay of Biscay; Johnson took Niagara; Amherst took Ticonderoga ; Wolfe died by the most enviable of deaths under the walls of Quebec ; Clive destroyed a Dutch arma- ment in the Hooghly, and established the English supre- macy in Bengal ; Coote routed Lally at Wandewash, and established the English supremacy in the Carnatic. The nation, while loudly applauding the successful warriors, considered them all, on sea and on land, in Europe, in America, and in Asia, merely as instruments which received their direction from one superior mind. It was the great William Pitt, the great commoner, who had vanquished the French marshals in Germany and French admirals on the Atlantic,—who had conquered for his country one great empire on the frozen shores of Ontario and another under the tropical sun near the mouths of the Ganges. It was not in the nature of things that popularity such as he at this time enjoyed should be permanent. That popularity had lost its gloss before his children were old enough to understand that their father was a great man. He was at length placed in situations in which neither his talents for administration nor his talents for debate appeared to the best advantage. The energy and decision which had eminently fitted him for the direction of war were not needed in time of peace. The lofty and spirit-stirring

eloquence which had made him supreme in the House

of Commons often fell dead on the House of Lords. A cruel malady racked his joints, and left his joints only to

fall on his nerves and on his brain. During the closing years of his life he was odious to the court, and yet was not on cordial terms with the great body of the Opposition. Chatham was only the ruin of Pitt, but an awful and majestic ruin, not to be contemplated by any man of sense and feeling without emotions resembling those which are excited by the remains of the Parthenon and of the Colos- seum. In one respect the old statesman was eminently | happy. Whatever might be the vicissitudes of his public life, he never failed to find peace and love by his own hearth. He loved all his children, and was loved by them; and of all his children the one of whom he was fondest and proudest was his second son.

The child's genius and ambition displayed themselves yj. with a rare and almost unnatural precocity. At seven the hood interest which he took in grave subjects, the ardour with which he pursued his studies, and the sense and vivacity of his remarks on books and on events amazed his parents and instructors. One of his sayings of this date was reported to his mother by his tutor. In August 1766, when the world was agitated by the news that Mr Pitt had become earl of Chatham, little William exclaimed, "I am glad that I am not the eldest son. I want to speak in the House of Commons like papa." A letter is extant in which Lady Chatham, a woman of considerable abilities, remarked to her lord that their younger son at twelve had left far behind him his elder brother, who was fifteen. 'The fine- ness," she wrote, "of William's mind makes him enjoy with the greatest pleasure what would be above the reach of any other creature of his small age." At fourteen the lad was in intellect a man. Hayley, who met him at Lyme in the summer of 1773, was astonished, delighted, and somewhat overawed, by hearing wit and wisdom from so younga mouth. The poet, indeed, was afterwards sorry that his shyness had prevented him from submitting the plan ofan extensive literary work, which he was then meditating, fo the judgment of this extraordinary boy. The boy, indeed, had already written a tragedy, bad, of course, but not worse than the tragedies of his friend. This piece is still pre- served at Chevening, and is in some respects highly curi- ous. There is no love. The whole plot is political ; and it is remarkable that the interest, such as it is, turns on a contest about a regency. On one side is a faithful servant

of the crown, on the other an ambitious and unprincipled conspirator. At length the king, who had been missing, reappears, resumes his power, and rewards the faithful defender of his rights. A reader who should judge only by internal evidence would have no hesitation in pronoun- cing that the play was written by some Pittite poetaster at the time of the rejoicings for the recovery of George IIL in 1789. |

The pleasure with which William’s parents observed the Edu rapid development of his intellectual powers was alloyed by 4″ apprehensions about his health. He shot up alarmingly fast ; he was often ill, and always weak ; and it was feared that it would be impossible to rear a stripling so tall, so slender, and so feeble. Port wine was prescribed by his medical advisers ; and it is said that he was, at fourteen, accustomed to take this agreeable physic in quantities which would, in our abstemious age, be thought much more than sufficient for any full-grown man. This regimen, though it would probably have killed ninety-nine boys out of a hundred, seems to have been well suited to the peculi- arities of William’s constitution ; for at fifteen he ceased to be molested by disease, and, though never a strong man, continued, during many years of labour and anxiety, of nights passed in debate and of summers passed in London,

|

¥ :red o ell ie

Eh

oo

Ce oo ~ 5 og co

A,, ‘ing of

76,

bs quent idies

- Can- idge,

.

fo Pe

to be a tolerably healthy one. It was probably on account of the delicacy of his frame that he was not educated like other boys of the same rank. Almost all the eminent English statesmen and orators to whom he was afterwards opposed or allied—North, Fox, Shelburne, Windham, Grey, Wellesley, Grenville, Sheridan, Canning—went through the training of great public schools. Lord Chatham had him- self been a distinguished Etonian ; and it is seldom that a distinguished Etonian forgets his obligations to Eton. But William's infirmities required a vigilance and tenderness such as could be found only at home. He was therefore bred under the paternal roof. His studies were superin- tended by a clergyman named Wilson ; and those studies, though often interrupted by illness, were prosecuted with extraordinary success. Before the lad had completed his fifteenth year his knowledge both of the ancient languages and of mathematics was such as very few men of eighteen then carried up to college. He was therefore sent, towards the close of the year 1773, to Pembroke Hall, in the uni- versity of Cambridge. So younga student required much more than the ordinary care which a college tutor bestows on undergraduates. The governor to whom the direction of William's academical life was confided was a bachelor of arts named Pretyman,! who had been senior wrangler in the preceding year, and who, though not a man of prepos- sessing appearance or brilliant parts, was eminently acute and laborious, a sound scholar, and an excellent geometri- cian. At Cambridge Pretyman was, during more than two years, the inseparable companion, and indeed almost the only companion, of his pupil. A close and lasting friendship sprang up between the pair. The disciple was able, before he completed his twenty-eighth year, to make his preceptor bishop of Lincoln and dean of St Paul's; and the preceptor showed his gratitude by writing a life of the disciple, which enjoys the distinction of being the worst biographical work of its size in the world.

Pitt, till he graduated, had scarcely one acquaintance, attended chapel regularly morning and evening, dined every day in hall, and never went to a single evening party. At seventeen he was admitted, after the bad fashion of those times, by right of birth, without any examination, to the degree of

master of arts. But he continued during some years to reside at college, and to apply himself vigorously, under Pretyman’s direction, to the studies of the place, while mixing freely in the best academic society.

The stock of learning which Pitt laid in during this part of his life was certainly very extraordinary. In fact, it was all that he ever possessed ; for he very early became too busy to have any spare time for books. The work in which he took the greatest delight was Newton’s Principia. His liking for mathematics, indeed, amounted to a passion, which, in the opinion of his instructors, themselves distin- guished mathematicians, required to be checked rather than encouraged, The acuteness and readiness with which he solved problems was pronounced by one of the ablest of the moderators, who in those days presided over the dis- putations in the schools and conducted the examinations of the senate-house, to be unrivalled in the university. Nor was the youth’s proficiency in classical learning less remark- able. In one respect, indeed, he appeared to disadvantage when compared with even second-rate and third-rate men from public schools. He had never, while under Wilson’s care, been in the habit of composing in the ancient lan- guages ; and he therefore never acquired that knack of

r—“C—SSCSC‘C (‘CR

1

ion pe Pretyman (1750-1827) was senior wrangler in 1772.

‘Porat on falling heir ‘to a large estate, he assumed the name of

7 oa From Lincoln, to which see he had been elevated in 1787,

a translated to Winchester in 1820. Tomline, to whom Pitt

Life hae had bequeathed his papers, published his Memoirs of the of William Pitt (down to the close of 1792) in 1821 (8 vols. 8vo).]

In

versification which is sometimes possessed by clever boys whose knowledge of the language and literature of Greece and Rome is very superficial. It would have been utterly out of his power to produce such charming elegiac lines as those in which Wellesley bade farewell to Eton, or such Virgilian hexameters as those in which Canning described the pilgrimage to Mecca. But it may be doubted whether any scholar has ever, at twenty, had a more solid and pro- found knowledge of the two great tongues of the old civilized world. The facility with which he penetrated the meaning of the most intricate sentences in the Attic writers astonished veteran critics. He had set his heart on being intimately acquainted with all the extant poetry of Greece, and was not satisfied till he had mastered Lycophron's Cassandra, the most obscure work in the whole range of ancient literature. This strange rhapsody, the difficulties of which have perplexed and repelled many excellent scholars, "he read," says his preceptor, '"' with an ease at first sight which, if I had not witnessed it, I should have thought beyond the compass of human intellect."

To modern literature Pitt paid comparatively little atten- tion. He knew no living language except French; and French he knew very imperfectly. With a few of the best English writers he was intimate, particularly with Shakspeare and Milton, The debate in Pandemonium was, as it well deserved to be, one of his favourite passages ; and his early friends used to talk, long after his death, of the just emphasis and the melodious cadence with which they had heard him recite the incomparable speech of Belial. He had indeed been carefully trained from infancy in the art of managing his voice, a voice naturally clear and deep- toned. His father, whose oratory owed no small part of its effect to that art, had been a most skilful and judicious instructor. At a later period the wits of Brookes's, irri- tated by observing, night after night, how powerfully Pitt's sonorous elocution fascinated the rows of country gentle- men, reproached him with having been " taught by his dad on a stool."

His education, indeed, was well adapted to form a great parliamentary speaker. One argument often urged against those classical studies which occupy so large a part of the early life of every gentleman bred in the south of our island is, that they prevent him from acquiring a command of his mother tongue, and that it is not unusual to meet with a youth of excellent

parts, who writes Ciceronian Latin prose and Horatian Latin alcaics, but who would find it impos- sible to express his thoughts in pure, perspicuous, and forcible English. There may perhaps be some truth in this observation. But the classical studies of Pitt were carried on in a peculiar manner, and had the effect of enriching his English vocabulary, and of making him wonderfully expert in the art of constructing correct Eng- lish sentences. His practice was to look over a page or two of a Greek or Latin author, to make himself master of the meaning, and then to read the passage straight forward into hisown language. This practice, begun under his first teacher Wilson, was continued under Pretyman. It is not strange that a young man of great abilities, who had been exercised daily in this way during ten years, should have acquired an almost unrivalled power of putting his thoughts, without premeditation, into words well selected and well arranged.

Of all the remains of antiquity, the orations were those on which he bestowed the most minute examination. His favourite employment was to compare harangues on opposite sides of the same question, to analyse them, and to observe which of the arguments of the first speaker were refuted by the second, which were evaded, and which were left untouched. Nor was it only in books that he at this time studied the art of parliamentary fencing. When he

Called to the bar,

1780.

M.P. for Appleby,

1780;

takes his

seat, Jan,

23,1781.

was at home, he had frequent opportunities of hearing important debates at Westminster ; and he heard them, not only with interest and enjoyment, but with a close scien- tific attention resembling that with which a diligent pupil at Guy's Hospital watches every turn of the hand of a great surgeon through a difficult operation. On one of these occa- sions Pitt, a youth whose abilities were as yet known only to his own family and to a small knot of college friends, was introduced on the steps of the throne in the House of Lords to Fox, who was his senior by eleven years, and who was already the greatest debater, and one of the greatest orators, that had appeared in England. Fox used afterwards to relate that, as the discussion proceeded, Pitt repeatedly turned to him, and said, ‘‘ But surely, Mr Fox, that might be met thus ;” or “ Yes; but he lays himself open to this retort.” What the particular criticisms were Fox had for- gotten ; but he said that he was much struck at the time by the precocity of a lad who, through the whole sitting, seemed to be thinking only how all the speeches on both sides could be answered.

One of the young man's visits to the House of Lords was a sad and memorable era in his life. He had not quite completed his nineteenth year when, on the 7th of April 1778, he attended his father to Westminster. A great debate was expected. It was known that France had recognized the independence of the United States. The duke of Richmond was about to declare his opinion that all thought of subjugating those states ought to be relin- quished. Chatham had always maintained that the resistance of the colonies to the mother country was justifiable. But he conceived, very erroneously, that on the day on which their independence should be acknow- ledged the greatness of England would be at an end. Though sinking under the weight of years and infirmities, he determined, in spite of the entreaties of his family, to be in his place, His son supported him toa seat. The excitement and exertion were too much for the old man. In the very act of addressing the peers, he fell back in convulsions. A few weeks later his corpse was borne, with gloomy pomp, from the Painted Chamber to the Abbey. The favourite child and namesake of the deceased statesman followed the coffin as chief mourner, and saw it eae in the transept where his own was destined to lie.

_ His elder brother, now earl of Chatham, had means sufficient, and barely sufficient, to support the dignity of the peerage. The other members of the family were poorly provided for. William had little more than three hundred a year. It was necessary for him to follow a profession, He had already begun to eat his terms. In the spring of 1780 he came of age. He then quitted Cambridge, was called to the bar, took chambers in Lincoln's Inn, and joined the western circuit. In the autumn of that year a general election took place; and he offered himself as a candidate for the university ; but he was at the bottom of the poll. It is said that the grave doctors who then sat, robed in scarlet, on the benches of Golgotha thought it great presumption in so young a man to solicit so high a distinction, He was, however, at the request of a hereditary friend, the duke of Rutland, brought into parliament by Sir James Lowther for the borough of Appleby.

'The dangers of the country were at that time such as might well have disturbed even a constant mind. Arm after army had been sent in vain against the rebellious le of North America. On pitched fields of battle i ae eee with the disciplined troops of the ee ee a wi not on pitched fields of battle

;) ontest could be decided. An armed nation, with hunger and the Atlantic for auxiliaries,

oT

was not to be subjugated. Meanwhile the house of Bour- bon, humbled to the dust a few years before by the genius and vigour of Chatham, had seized the opportunity of revenge. France and Spain had united against us, and had recently been joined by Holland. The command of the Mediterranean had been for a time lost. The British flag had been scarcely able to maintain itself in the British Channel. The northern powers professed neutrality ; but their neutrality had a menacing aspect. In the East, Hyder had descended on the Carnatic, had destroyed the little arniy of Baillie, and had spread terror even to the ramparts of Fort St George. The discontents of Ireland threatened nothing less than civil war. In England the authority of the Government had sunk to the lowest point. The king and the House of Commons were alike unpopular. The cry for parliamentary reform was scarcely less loud and vehement than in the autumn of 1830. Formidable

associations, headed, not by ordi- nary demagogues, but by men of high rank, stainless character, and distinguished ability, demanded a revision of the representative system. The populace, emboldened by the impotence and irresolution of the Government, had recently broken loose from all restraint, besieged the chambers of the legislature, hustled peers, hunted bishops, attacked the residences of ambassadors, opened prisons, burned and pulled down houses. London had presented during some days the aspect of a city taken by storm; and it had been necessary to form a camp among the trees of St James's Park.

In spite of dangers and difficulties abroad and at home, George III, with a firmness which had little affinity with virtue or with wisdom, persisted in his determination to put down the American rebels by force of arms; and his ministers submitted their judgment to his. Some of them were probably actuated merely by selfish cupidity ; but their chief, Lord North, a man of high honour, amiable temper, winning manners, lively wit, and excellent talents both for business and for debate, must be acquitted of all sordid motives. He remained at a post from which he had long wished and had repeatedly tried to escape, only because he had not sufficient fortitude to resist the entreaties and reproaches of the king, who silenced all arguments by passionately asking whether any gentleman, any man of spirit, could have the heart to desert a kind master in the hour of extremity.

The Opposition consisted of two parties which had once been hostile to each other, and which had been very slowly and, as it soon appeared, very imperfectly reconciled, but which at this conjuncture seemed to act together with cordiality. The larger of these parties consisted of the great body of the Whig aristocracy. Its head was Charles, marquis of Rockingham, a man of sense and virtue, and in wealth and parliamentary interest equalled by very few of the English nobles, but afflicted with a nervous timidity which prevented him from taking a prominent part In debate. In the House of Commons the adherents of Rockingham were led by Fox, whose dissipated habits and ruined fortunes were the talk of the whole town, but whose commanding genius, and whose sweet, generous, and affectionate disposition, extorted the admiration and love of those who most lamented the errors of his private life. Burke, superior to Fox in largeness of comprehen- sion, in extent of knowledge, and in splendour of imagina- tion,

but less skilled in that kind of logic and in that kind of rhetoric which convince and persuade great assemblies, was willing to be the lieutenant of a young chief who might have been his son.

A smaller section of the Opposition was composed of the old followers of Chatham. At their head was William, | earl of Shelburne, distinguished both as a statesman and

‘ ‘

ei? T

as a lover of science and letters. With him were leagued Lord Camden, who had formerly held the great seal, and whose integrity, ability, and constitutional knowledge commanded the public respect; Barré, an eloquent and acrimonious declaimer ; and Dunning, who had long held the first place at the English bar. It was to this party that Pitt was naturally attracted.

On the 26th of February 1781 he made his first speech

. in favour of Burke’s plan of economicalreform. Fox stood

up at the same monient, but instantly gave way. The lofty yet animated deportment of the young member, his perfect self-possession, the readiness with which he replied to the orators who had preceded him, the silver tones of his voice, the perfect structure of his unpremeditated sentences, astonished and delighted his hearers. Burke, moved even to tears, exclaimed, “It is not a chip of the old block ; it is the old block itself.” ‘‘ Pitt will be one of the first men in parliament,” said a member of the opposition to Fox. ‘He is so already,” answered Fox, in whose nature envy had no place. It is a curious fact, well remembered by some who were very recently living,! that soon after this debate Pitt’s name was put up by Fox at Brookes’s.

On two subsequent occasions during that session Pitt addressed the House, and on both fully sustained the reputation which he had acquired on his first appearance. In the summer, after the prorogation, he again went the western circuit, held several briefs, and acquitted himself insuch a manner that he

was highly complimented by Buller from the bench, and by Dunning at the bar.

On the 27th of November the parliament reassembled. Only forty-eight hours before had arrived tidings of the surrender of Cornwallis and his army; and it had conse- quently been necessary to rewrite the royal speech. Every man in the kingdom, except the king, was now convinced that it was mere madness to think of conquering the United States. In the debate on the report of the address, Pitt spoke with even more energy and brilliancy than on any former occasion. He was warmly applauded by his allies; but it was remarked that no person on his own side of the

ingham as first minister. Fox and Shelburne became secretaries of state. Lord John Cavendish, one of the most upright and honourable of men, was made chancellor of the exchequer. Thurlow, whose abilities and force of character had made him the dictator of the House of Lords, continued to hold the great seal.

To Pitt was offered, through Shelburne, the vice- Declines treasurership of Ireland, one of the easiest and most office in highly paid places in the gift of the crown; but the offer Rock-

was without hesitation declined. The young statesman had resolved to accept no post which did not entitle him to

a seat in the cabinet ; and a few days later he announced 1782. _that resolution in the House of Commons.

It must be remembered that the cabinet was then a much smaller and more select body than at present. We have seen cabinets of sixteen. In the time of our grandfathers a cabinet of ten or eleven was thought inconveniently large. Seven was a usual number. Even Burke, who had taken the lucrative office of paymaster, was not in the cabinet. Many therefore thought Pitt’s declaration indecent. He himself was sorry that he had made it. The words, he said in private, had escaped him in the heat of speaking ; and he had no sooner uttered them than he would have given the world to recall them.

They, however, did him no harm with the public. The second William Pitt, it was said, had shown that he had inherited the spirit as well as the genius of the first. In the son, as in the father, there might perhaps be too much pride; but there was nothing low or sordid. It might be called arrogance in a young barrister, living in chambers on three hundred a year, to refuse a salary of five thousand a year, merely because he did not choose to bind himself to speak or vote for plans which he had no share in framing; but surely such arrogance was not very far removed from virtue. Pitt gave a general support to the administration of Rockingham, but omitted, in the meantime, no opportunity of courting that ultra-Whig party which the persecution of Wilkes and the Middlesex election had called into existence, and which the disastrous events of the war, and the triumph of republican principles in America, had made

house was so loud in eulogy as Henry Dundas, the lord advocate of Scotland, who spoke from the ministerial ranks, That able and versatile politician distinctly fore- saw the approaching downfall of the Government with which he was connected, and was preparing to make his own escape from the ruin. From that night dates his connexion with Pitt, a connexion which soon became a

ee and which lasted till it was dissolved by eath.

formidable both in numbers and in temper. He supported

a motion for shortening the duration of parliaments. He

made a motion for a committee to examine into the state Intro-

of the representation, and, in the speech by which that duces notion was introduced, avowed himself the enemy of the Be alte: close boroughs, the strongholds of that corruption to which mentary he attributed all the calamities of the nation, and which, as reform, he phrased it in one of those exact and sonorous sentences May 7, of which he had a boundless command, had grown with the ee

About a fortnight later Pitt spoke in the committee of supply on the army estimates. Symptoms of dissen- sion had begun to appear on the treasury

bench. Lord George Germaine, the secretary of state who was especi- ally charged with the direction of the war in America, had held language not easily to be reconciled with declarations made by the first lord of the treasury. Pitt noticed the discrepancy with much force and keenness. Lord George and Lord North began to whisper together ; and Welbore Ellis, an ancient placeman who had been drawing salary almost every quarter since the days of Henry Pelliam, bent down between them to put ina word. Such interruptions Sometimes discompose veteran speakers. Pitt stopped, and, looking at the group, said, with admirable readiness,

I shall wait till Nestor has composed tlie dispute between

gamemnon and Achilles.”

Aiter several defeats, or victories hardly to be distin- guished from defeats, the ministry resigned. The king, reluctantly and ungraciously, consented to accept Rock-

1 .

; it 1s to be noted that this and some other allusions in the pre- ent article refer to the date of its original appearance, 1859.]

growth of England and strengthened with her strength, but had not diminished with her diminution or decayed with her decay. On this occasion he was supported by Fox. The motion was lost by only twenty votes in a house of more than three hundred members. The reformers never again had so good a division till the year

1831.

The new administration was strong in abilities, and was more popular than any administration_which had held office since the first year of George IIL, but was hated by the king, hesitatingly supported by the Parlia- ment, and torn by internal dissensions. The chancellor was disliked and distrusted by almost all his colleagues. The two secretaries of state regarded each other with no friendly feeling. The line between their departments had not been traced with precision; and there were conse- quently jealousies,

encroachments, and complaints. It was all that Rockingham could do to keep the peace in his cabinet; and before the cabinet had existed three months Rockingham died.

In an instant all was confusion. The adherents of the

XIX. — 18

Shel- burne ministry.

Pitt chan- cellor of the ex- chequer, July

1782,

deceased statesman looked on the duke of Portland as their chief. The king placed Shelburne at the head of the treasury. Fox, Lord John Cavendish, and Burke immediatcly resigned their offices ; and the new prime minister was left to constitute a Government out of very defective materials. His own parliamentary talents were great ; but he could not be in the place where parliamen- tary talents were most needed. It was necessary to find some member of the House of Commons who could confront the great orators of the Opposition ; and Pitt alone had the eloquence and the courage which were required. He was offered the great place of chancellor of the exchequer, and he accepted it. He had scarcely completed his twenty-third year. ;

The parliament was speedily prorogued. During the recess a negotiation for peace which had been commenced under Rockingham was brought toa successful termination. England acknowledged the independence of her revolted colonies; and she ceded to her European enemies some places in the Mediterranean and in the Gulf of Mexico. But the terms which she obtained were quite as advanta- geous and honourable as the events of the war entitled her to expect, or as she was likely to obtain by persevering in a contest against immense odds. All her vital parts, all the real sources of her power, remained uninjured. She preserved even her dignity ; for she ceded to the house of Bourbon only part of what she had won from that house in

previous wars. She retained her Indian empire un- diminished ; and, in spite of the mightiest efforts of two great monarchies, her flag still waved on the rock of Gibraltar. There is not the slightest reason to believe that Fox, if he had remained in office, would have hesitated one moment about concluding a treaty on such conditions. Unhappily that great and most amiable man was, at this crisis, hurried by his passions into an error which made his genius and his virtues, during a long course of years, almost useless to his country.

He saw that the great body of the House of Commons was divided into three parties—his own, that of North, and that of Shelburne; that none of those three parties was large enough to stand alone ; that, therefore, unless two of them united there must be a miserably feeble administra- tion, or, more probably, a rapid succession of miserably feeble administrations, and this at a time when a strong Government was essential to the prosperity and respecta- bility of the nation. It was then necessary and right that there should be a coalition. To every possible coalition there were objections. But of all possible coalitions that to which there were the fewest objections was undoubt- edly a coalition between Shelburne and Fox. It would have been generally applauded by the followers of both. It might have been made without any sacrifice of public principle on the part of either. Unhappily, recent bicker- ings had left in the mind of Fox a profound dislike and distrust of Shelburne. Pitt attempted to mediate, and was authorized to invite Fox to return to the service of the crown. “Ts Lord Shelburne,” said Fox, “ to remain prime minister?” Pitt answered in the affirmative. “It is im- possible that I can act under him,” said Fox. “Then negotiation is at an end,” said Pitt; “for I cannot betray him.” Thus the two statesmen parted. They were never again in a private room together.

As Fox and his friends would not treat with Shelburne, nothing remained to them but to treat with North. That fatal coalition which is emphatically called “The Coali- — was formed. Not three quarters of a year had elapsed since }I’ox and Burke had threatened North with impeachment, and had described him night after night as the most arbitrary, the most corrupt, and the most incap- able of ministers. They now allied themselves with him

Par Ty

for the purpose of driving from office 4 statesman with whom they cannot he said to have differed as to any important question. Nor had they even the prudence and the patience to wait for some occasion on which they might, without inconsistency, have combined with their old enemies in opposition to the Government. That nothing might be wanting to the scandal the great orators who had, during seven years, thundered against the war determined to join with the authors of that war in passing a vote of censure on the peace.

The parliament met before Christmas 1782. But it | was not till January 1783 that the preliminary treaties 1733 were signed. On the 17th of February they were taken into consideration by the House of Commons. There had been, during some days, floating rumours that Fox and — North had coalesced ; and the debate indicated but too | clearly that those rumours were not unfounded. Pitt was suffering from indisposition; he did not rise till hisown | strength and that of his hearers were exhausted ; and he was consequently less successful than on any former occa- sion. His admirers owned that his speech was feeble and petulant. He so far forgot himself as to advise Sheridan to confine himself to amusing theatrical audiences. This ignoble sarcasm gave Sheridan an opportunity of retorting with great felicity. “After what I have seen and heard to-night,” he said, “I really feel strongly tempted to venture on a competition with so great an artist as Ben — Jonson, and to bring on the stage a second Angry Boy.” | On a division, the address proposed by the supporters of the Government was rejected by a majority of sixteen.

But Pitt was not a man to be disheartened by a single failure, or to be put down by the most lively repartee. When, a few days later, the Opposition proposed a resolu- tion directly censuring the treaties, he spoke with an eloquence, energy, and dignity which raised his fame and — popularity higher than ever. To the coalition of Fox and North he alluded in language which drew forth tumultu- ous applause from his followers. ‘“‘If,” he said, “ this ill- omened and unnatural marriage be not yet consummated,

I know of a just and lawful impediment; and, in the name of the public weal, I forbid the banns.”

The ministers were again left in a minority, Shelburne consequently tendered his resignation. It was ae accepted ; but the king struggled long and hard before he ide submitted to the terms dictated by Fox, whose faults he yj 3! detested, and whose high spirit and powerful intellect he 17! detested still more. The first place at the board of treasury was repeatedly offered to Pitt; but the offer, though tempting, was steadfastly declined. The young man, whose judgment was as precocious as his eloquence, — saw that his time was coming, but was not come, and was — deaf to royal importunities and reproaches. His Majesty, bitterly complaining of Pitt's faintheartedness, tried to — break the coalition. Every art of seduction was practised — on North, but in vain. During several weeks the county — remained without a Government. It was not till all devices had failed, and till the aspect of the House of Commons became threatening, that the king gave way. | The duke of Portland was declared first lord of the Pa treasury. Thurlow was

:

and Re! 1a ye

dismissed. Fox and North nt became secretaries of state, with power ostensibly equal. — But Fox was the real prime minister. The year was far advanced before the new arrangements PP | were completed; and nothing very important was done at during the remainder of the session. Pitt, now seated OD ¢, ari the Opposition bench, brought the question of parliament mY ary reform a second time under the consideration of the re" Commons. He proposed to add to the House at once ri hundred county members and several members for metro- politan districts, and to enact that every borough of which

rice?

an election committee should report that the majority of yoters appeared to be corrupt should lose the franchise. The motion was rejected by 293 votes to 149.

After the prorogation, Pitt visited the Continent for the first and last time. His travelling companion was one of his most intimate friends, a young

man of his own age who had already distinguished himself in parliament by an engaging natural eloquence, set off by the sweetest and most exquisitely modulated of human voices, and whose affectionate heart, caressing manners, and brilliant wit made him the most delightful of companions, William Wilberforce. That was the time of Anglomania in France; and at Paris the son of the great Chatham was absolutely hunted by men of letters and women of fashion, and forced, much against his will, into political disputa- tion. One remarkable saying which dropped from him during this tour has been preserved. A French gentleman expressed some surprise at the immense influence which Fox, a man of pleasure, ruined by the dice-box and the turf, exercised over the English nation, “ You have not,” said Pitt, “ been under the wand of the magician.”

In November 1783 the parliament met again. The Government had irresistible strength in the House of Commons, and seemed to be scarcely less strong in the House of Lords, but was, in truth, surrounded on every side by dangers. The king was impatiently waiting for the moment at which he could emancipate himself from a yoke which galled him so severely that he had more than once seriously thought of retiring to Hanover; and the king was scarcely more eager for a change than the nation. Vox and North had committed a fatal error. They ought to have known that coalitions between parties which have long been hostile can succeed only when the wish for coalition pervades the lower ranks of both. If the leaders unite before there is any disposition to union among the followers, the probability is that there will be a mutiny in both camps, and that the two revolted armies will make a truce with each other in order to be revenged on those by whom they think that they have been betrayed. Thus it was in 1783. At the beginning of that eventful year North had been the recognized head of the old Tory party, which, though for a moment prostrated by the disastrous issue of the American war, was still a great power in the state. To him the clergy, the universities, and that large body of country gentlemen whose rallying cry was “ Church and King” had long looked up with respect and confid- ence, Fox had, on the other hand, been the idol of the Whigs, and of the whole body of Protestant dissenters. The coalition at once alienated the most zealous Tories from North and the most zealous Whigs from Fox. The university of Oxford, which had marked its approbation of North’s orthodoxy by electing him chancellor, the city of London, which had been

during two and twenty years at war with the court, were equally disgusted. Squires and rectors who had inherited the principles of the cava- liers of the preceding century could not forgive their old leader for combining with disloyal subjects in order to put a force on the sovereign. The members of the Bill of Rights Society and of the reform associations were enraged by learning that their favourite orator now called the great champion of tyranny and corruption his noble friend. Two great multitudes were at once left without any head, and both at once turned their eyes on Pitt. One party Saw in him the only man who could rescue the king ; the other saw in him the only man who could purify the parliament. He was supported on one side by Archbishop Markham, the preacher of divine right, and by Jenkinson, the captain of the pretorian band of the king's friends ; on the other side by Jebb and Priestley, Sawbridge and Cartwright, Jack Wilkes and Horne Tooke. On the

benches of the House of Commons, however, the ranks of the ministerial majority were unbroken; and that any statesman would venture to brave such a majority was thought impossible. No prince of the Hanoverian line had ever, under any provocation, ventured to appeal from the representative body to the constituent body. The ministers, therefore, notwithstanding the sullen looks and muttered words of displeasure with which their sugges- tions were received in the closet, notwithstanding the roar of obloquy which was rising louder and louder every day from every corner of the island, thought themselves secure.

Such was their confidence in their strength that, as Fox's

soon as the parliament had met, they brought forward a!

singularly bold and original plan for the government of B

the British territories in India. What was proposed was that the whole authority which till that time had been exercised over those territories by the East India Com- pany should be transferred to seven commissioners, who were to be named by parliament, and were not to be removable at the pleasure of the crown. Earl Fitzwilliam, the most intimate personal friend of

Fox, was to be chair- man of this board, and the eldest son of North was to be one of the members.

As soon as the outlines of the scheme were known all the hatred which the coalition had excited burst forth with an astounding explosion. The question which ought undoubtedly to have been considered as paramount to every other was whether the proposed change was likely to be beneficial or injurious to the thirty millions of people who were subject to the company. But that question cannot be said to have been even seriously discussed. Burke, who, whether right or wrong in the conclusions to which he came, had at least the merit of looking at the subject in the right point of view, vainly reminded his hearers of that mighty population whose daily rice might depend on a vote of the British parliament. He spoke with even more than his wonted power of thought and language, about the desolation of Rohilcund, about the spoliation of Benares, about the evil policy which had suffered the tanks of the Carnatic to go to ruin; but he could scarcely obtain a hearing. The contending parties, to their shame it must be said, would listen to none but English topics. Out of doors the cry against the ministry was almost universal. Town and country were united. Corporations exclaimed against the violation of the charter of the greatest corporation in the realm. Tories and democrats joined in pronouncing the proposed board an unconstitutional body. It was to consist of Fox's nomi- nees. The effect of his bill was to give, not to the crown, but to him personally, whether in office or in opposition, an enormous power, a patronage sufficient to counter- balance the patronage of the treasury and of the admiralty, and to decide the elections for fifty boroughs. He knew, it was said, that he was hateful alike to king and people ; and he had devised a plan which would make him inde- pendent of both. Some nicknamed him Cromwell, and some Carlo Khan. Wilberforce, with his usual felicity of expression, and with very unusual bitterness of feeling, described the scheme as the genuine offspring of the coali- tion, as marked with the features of both its parents, the corruption of one and the violence of the other. In spite of all opposition, however, the bill was supported in every stage by great majorities, was rapidly passed, and was sent up to the Lords. To the general astonishment, when the second reading was moved in the Upper House, the Opposition proposed an adjournment, and carried it by eighty-seven votes

to seventy-nine. The cause of this strange turn of fortune was soon known. Pitt’s cousin, Earl Temple, had been in the royal closet, and had there

ndia

ill.

Pitt first Jord

of the treasury and chan- cellor of the ex- chequer, Dec.

1788.

been authorized to let it be known that His Majesty would consider all who voted for the bill as his enemies. The ignominious commission was performed, and instantly a troop of lords of the bedchamber, of bishops who wished to be translated, and of Scotch peers who wished to be re- elected made haste to change sides. On a later day the Lords rejected the bill. Fox and North were immediately directed to send their seals to the palace by their under secretaries; and Pitt was appointed first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer. ;

The general opinion was that there would be an 1m- mediate dissolution. But Pitt wisely determined to give the public feeling time to gather strength. On this point he differed from his kinsman Temple. The consequence was that Temple, who had been appointed one of thie secre- taries of state, resigned his office forty-eight hours after he had accepted it, and thus relieved the new Government from a great load of unpopularity ; for all men of sense and honour, however strong might be their dislike of the India Bill, disapproved of the manner in which that bill had been thrown out. Temple carried away with him the scandal which the best friends of the new Government could not but lament. The fame of the young prime minister pre- served its whiteness. He could declare with perfect truth that, if unconstitutional machinations had been employed, he had been no party to them.

He was, however, surrounded by difficulties and dangers. In the House of Lords, indeed, he had a majority ; nor could any orator of the opposition in that assembly be con- sidered as a match for Thurlow, who was now again chan- ecllor, or for Camden, who cordially supported the son of his old friend Chatham. But in the other House there was not a single eminent speaker among the official men who sat round Pitt. His most useful assistant was Dundas, who, though he had not eloquence, lad sense, knowledge, readiness, and boldness. On the opposite benches was a powerful majority, led by Fox, who was supported by Burke, North, and Sheridan, The heart of the young minister, stout as it was, almost died within him. He could not once close his eyes on the night which followed Temple's resignation. But, whatever his internal emotions might be, his language and deportment indicated nothing but unconquerable firmness and haughty confidence in his own powers. His contest against the House of Commons lasted from the 17th of December 1783 to the 8th of March 1784. In sixteen divisions the Opposition tri- umphed, Again and again the king was requested to dismiss his ministers; but he was determined to go to Germany rather than yield. Pitt's resolution never wavered. The cry of the nation in his favour became veliement and almost furious. Addresses assuring him of public support came up daily from every part of the king- dom. 'The freedom of the city of London was presented to him in a gold box. He went in state to receive this mark of distinction, He was sumptuously feasted in Grocers' Hall; and the shopkeepers of the Strand and Fleet Street illuminated their houses in his honour. These things could not but produce an effect within the walls of parliament. The ranks of the majority began to waver ; a few passed over fo the enemy; some skulked away ; many were for capitulating while it was still possible to capitulate with the honours of war. Negotiations were opened with the view of forming an administration on a wide basis, but they had scarcely been opened when they were closed. The Opposition demanded, as a preliminary article of the treaty, that Pitt should resign the treasury ; and with this demand Pitt steadfastly refused to comply. ss eg 3 ve raging, the clerkship of the Pells, a ae Ag A – ile, worth three thousand a year, and

eat in the House of Commons, became

Piet

vacant. The appointment was with the chancellor of the exchequer ; nobody doubted that he would appoint him- self, and nobody could have blamed him if he had done so; for such sinecure offices had always been defended on the ground that they enabled a few men of eminent abili- ties and small incomes to live without any profession, and to devote themselves to the service of the state. Pitt, in spite of the remonstrances of his friends, gave the Pells to his father's old adherent, Colonel Barré, a man distin. guished by talent and eloquence, but poor and afilicted with blindness. By this arrangement a pension which the Rockingham administration had granted to Barré was saved to the public. Never was there a happier stroke of policy. About treaties, wars, expeditions, tariffs, budgets, there will always be room for dispute. The policy which is applauded by half the nation may be condemned by the other half. But pecuniary disinterestedness everybody comprehends, It is a great thing for a man who has only three hundred a year to be able to show that he considers three thousand a year as mere dirt beneath his feet, when compared with the public interest and the public esteem. Pitt had his reward. No minister was ever more rancorously libelled ; but even when he was known to be overwhelmed with debt, when millions were passing through his hands, when the wealthiest magnates of the realm were soliciting him for marquisates and garters, his bitterest enemies did not dare to accuse him of touching unlawful gain.

At length the hard-fought fight ended. A final remon- Dissol strance, drawn up by Burke with admirable skill, was pati carried on the 8th of March by a single vote in a full i house. Had the experiment been repeated, the sup- 794 porters of the coalition would probably have been in a minority. But the supplies had been voted ; the Mutiny Bill had been passed ; and the parliament was dissolved.

The popular constituent bodies all over the country were in general enthusiastic on the side of the new Government. A hundred and sixty of the supporters of the coalition lost their seats. The first lord of the treasury Retu himself came in at the head of the poll for the university Di of Cambridge. His young friend, Wilberforce, was elected a | knight of the great shire of York, in opposition to the versit) whole influence of the Fitzwilliams, Cavendishes, Dun- qa dases, and Saviles. In the midst of such triumphs Pitt completed his twenty-fifth year. He was now the greatest | subject that

England had seen during many generations. | He domineered absolutely over the cabinet, and was the favourite at once of the sovereign, of the parliament, and of the nation. His father had never been so powerful, nor Walpole, nor Marlborough.

This narrative has now reached a point beyond which a full history of the life of Pitt would be a history of England, or rather of the whole civilized world; and for such a history this is not the proper place. Here a very slight sketch must suffice; and in that sketch prominence will be given to such points as may enable a reader who is already acquainted with the general course of events to form a just notion of the character of the man on whom so much depended.

If we wish to arrive at a correct judgment of Pitt's merits and defects, we must never forgct that he belonged to a peculiar class of statesmen, and that he must be tried by a peculiar standard. It is not easy to compare him fairly with such men as Ximenes an Sully, Richelieu and Oxenstiern, John de Witt and Warretl Hastings. The means by which those politicians governed great communities were of quite a different kind from those which Pitt was under the necessity of employing. Some talents, which they never had any opportunity of showing that they possessed, were developed in him to an extraordinary degree. In some qualities, on the other hand, to which they owe a large part of their fame, he was decidedly their inferior. They transacted business in their closets, or at boards where a few confidential councillors sat. It

was his lot to be born in an age and ina country in which parlia- mentary government was completely established ; his whole training from infancy was such as fitted him to bear a part in parliamentary government; and, froin the prime of his manhood to his death, al

the powers of his vigorous mind were almost constantly exerted !

ll en

~__*

: nd the work of parliamentary government.

re’

He accordingly became | the greatest master of the whole art of parliamentary government

ery that has ever existed, a greater than Montague or Walpole, a

greater than his father Chatham or his rival Fox, a greater than either of his illustrious suecessors Canning and Peel.

Parliamentary government, like every other contrivance of man, has its advantages and its disadvantages. On the advantages there ig no need to dilate. The history of England during the hundred and seventy years which have elapsed since the House of Commons beeame the most powerful body in the state, her immense and still growing prosperity, her freedom, her tranquillity, her greatness in arts, in sciences, and in arms, her maritime ascendency, the marvels of her public credit, her American, her African, her ‘Australian, her Asiatic empires, sufficiently prove the excellence of her institutions. But those institutions, though excellent, are assuredly not perfect. Parliamentary government is government by speaking. In such a government, the power of speaking is the most highly prized of all the qualities which a politician can possess; and that power may exist, in the highest degree, without judgment, without fortitude, without skill in reading the eharacters of nen or the signs of the times, without any knowledge of the prineiples of legislation or of political economy, and without any skill in diplomacy or in the administration of war. Nay, it may well happen that those very intellectual qualities which give a peculiar charm to the specches of a public man may be incompatible with the qualities which would fit him to meet a pressing emer- geney with promptitude and firmness. It was thus with Charles Townshend. It was thus with Windham. It was a privilege to listen to those accomplished and ingenious orators. But in a perilous erisis they would have been found far inferior in all the qualities of rulers to such a man as Oliver Cromwell, who talked nonsense, or as William the Silent, who did not talk at all. When parliamentary government is established, a Charles Townshend or a Windham will almost always exercise much greatcr influence than such men as the great Protector of Eugland, or as the founder of the Batavian commonwealth. In such a government, parliamentary talent, though quite distinct from the talents of a good executive or

judicial officer, will be a chief qualification for executive and judicial office. From the Book of Dignities a curious list night be made out of chancellors ignorant of the principles of equity, and first lords of the admiralty ignorant of the principles of navigation, of colonial ministers who could not repeat the names of the colonies, of lords of the treasury who did not know the differ- enee between funded and unfunded debt, and of secretaries of the India board who did not know whether the Mahrattas were Moham- medans or Hindus. On these grounds, some persons, incapable of seeing more than one side of a question, have pronouneed parlia- mentary government a positive evil, and have maintained that the administration would be greatly improved if the power, now exer- eised by a large asseinbly, were transferred to a single person. Men of sense will probably think the remedy very much worse than the disease, and will be of opinion that there would be small gain in exchanging Charles Townshend and Windham for the Prince of the Peace, or the poor slave and dog Steenie.

Pitt was emphatically the man of parliamentary government, the type of his elass, the minion, the child, the spoiled child, of the House of Commons. For the House of Commons he had a heredi- tary, an infantine love. Through his whole boyhood the House of Commons was never out of his thoughts, or out of the thoughts of his instruetors. Reciting at his father's knee, reading Thucydides and Cieero into English, analysing the great Attic speeches on the Embassy and on the Crown, he was constantly in training for the eonfliets of the House of Commons. He was a distinguished member of the House of Commons at twenty-one. The ability which he had displayed in the House of Commons made him the most powerful subject in Europe before he was twenty-five. It would have been happy for himself and for his country if his elevation had been deferred. Eight or ten years, during whiel: he Would have had leisure and opportunity for reading and reflexion, for foreign travel, for social intercourse and free exchange of thought on equal terms with a great variety of companions, would have supplied what, without any fault on his part, was wanting to his Powerful intellect. He had all the knowledge that he could be expeeted to have—that is to say, all the knowledge that a man acquire while he is a student at Cambridge, and all the know- rs e ee a man can acquire when he is first lord of the treasury te a of the exchequer. But the stock of general informa- At . leh he brought from college, extraordinary for a boy, was a gl to what Fox

possessed, and beggarly when compared tor e massy, the splendid, the various treasures laid up in the | el mind of Burke. After Pitt became minister, he had no ae to learn more than was necessary for the purposes of the ar a ih passing over him. What was necessary for those | oats – sueh a man could learn with little difficulty. He was a ounded by experienced and able public servants. He could at | a a command their best assistance. From the stores

eh they produced his vigorous mind rapidly collected the |

materials for a good parliamentary case; and that was enongh. Legislation and administration were with him secondary matters. To the work of framing statutes, of negotiating treaties, of organiz- ing fleets and armies, of sending forth expeditions, he gave only the leavings of his time and the dregs of his fine intellect. The strength and sap of his mind were all drawn in a different direction. It was when the House of Commons was to be convinced and per- suaded that he put forth all his powers.

Of those powers we must form our estimate chiefly from tradition ; His for, of all the eminent speakers of the last age, Pitt has suffered oratory.

most from the reporters. Even while he was still living, critics remarked that his eloquence could not be preserved, that he must be heard to be appreciated. They more than once applied to him the sentence in which Tacitus describes the fate of a senator whose rhetoric was admired in the Augustan age: “ Haterii canorum illud et profluens cum ipso simul exstinctum est.” There is, however, abundant evidence that nature had bestowed on Pitt the talents or a great orator; and those talents had been developed in a very peculiar manner, first by his education, and secondly by the high official position to which he rose early, and in which he passed the greater part of his public life.

At his first appearance in parliament he showed himself sliperior to all his contemporaries in command of language. He conld pour forth a long succession of round and stately periods, without pre- meditation, without ever pausing for a word, without ever repeating a word, ina voice of silver

clearness, and with a pronunciation so articulate that not a letter was slurred over. He had less amplitude of nind and less richness of imagination than Burke, less ingenuity than Windham, less wit than Sheridan, less perfect mastery of dialectical fence and less of that highest sort of eloquence which consists of reason-and passion fused together than Fox. Yet the almost unanimous judgment of those who were in the habit of listening to that remarkable race of men placed Pitt, as a speaker, above Burke, above Windham, above Sheridan, and not below Fox. His declamation was copious, polished, and splendid. In power of sarcasm he was probably uot surpassed by any speaker, ancient or modern; and of this formidable weapon he made merciless use. In two parts of the oratorical art which are of the highest value to a minister of state he was singularly expert. No man knew better how to be luminous or how to be obscure. When he wished to be understood, he never failed to make himself understood. He eould with ease present to his audience, not perhaps an exact or profound, but a clear, popular, and plausible view of the most extensive and complicated subject. Nothing was out of place; nothing was forgotten ; minute details, dates, sums of money, were all faithfully preserved in his memory. Even intricate questions of finance, when explained by him, secmed clear to the plainest man among his hearers. On the other hand, when he did not wish to be explicit, — and no man who is at the head of affairs always wishes to be explicit, —he had a marvellous power of saying nothing in language which left on his audience the impression that he had said a great deal. He was at once the only man who could open a budget with- out notes, and the only man who, as Windham said, could speak that most elaborately evasive and unmeaning of human eomposi- tions, a king’s speech, without premeditation.

The effect of oratory will always to a great extent depend on the Personal There perhaps never were two speakers charaec- whose eloquence had more of what may be called the race, more of ter.

character of the orator.

the flavour imparted by moral qualities, than Fox and Pitt. The speeches of Fox owe a great part of their charm to that warmth and softness of heart, that sympathy with human suffering, that admira- tion for everything great

and beautiful, and that hatred of cruelty and injustice, which interest and delight us even in the most defec- tive reports. No person, on the other hand, could hear Pitt without perceiving him to be a man of high, intrepid, and commanding spirit, proudly conscious of his own rectitude and of his own intellectual superiority, incapable of the low vices of fear and envy, but too prone to feel and to show disdain. Pride, indeed, pervaded the whole man, was written in the harsh, rigid lines of his face, was marked by the way in which he walked, in which he sat, in which he stood, and, above all, in which he bowed. Sueh pride, of course, inflicted many wounds. It may confidently be affirmed that there cannot be found, in all the ten thousand inveetives written against Fox, a word indicating that his demeanour had ever made a single personal enemy. On the other hand, several men of note who had been partial to Pitt, and who to the last continued to approve his public conduct and to support his admini- stration—Cumberland, for example, Boswell, and Matthias—were so much irritated by the contempt with which he treated them, that they complained in print of their wrongs. But his pride, though it made him bitterly disliked by individuals, inspired the great body of his followers in parliament and throughout the country with respect and confidenec. They took him at his own valuation. They saw that his self-esteem was not that of an upstart who was drunk with good luck and with applause, and who, if fortune turned, would sink from arroganec into abject humility. It was that of the magnanimous man so fincly described by Aristotle in

Private life,

Patron- age of letters and art.

the Ethics, of the man who thinks himself worthy of great things, being in truth worthy. It sprang from a consciousness of great powers and great virtucs, and was never so conspicuously displayed as in the midst of difficulties and dangers which would have unnerved and bowed down any ordinary mind. It was closely connected, too, with an ainbition which had no mixture of low cupidity. There was something noble in the cynical disdain with which the mighty minister scattered riches and titles to right and left among those who valued them, while he spurned them out of his

way. Poor himself, he was surrounded by friends on whom he had bestowed three thousand, six thousand, ten thousand a year. Plain Mister himself, he had made more lords than any three ministers that had preceded him. The garter, for which the first dukes in the kingdom were contending, was repeatedly offered to him, and offered in vain. a

The correctness of his private life added much to the dignity of his public character. In the relations of son, brother, uncle, master, friend, his conduct was exemplary. In the small circle of his intimate associates he was amiable, affectionate, even playful. They loved him sincerely; they regretted him long ; and they would hardly admit that he who was so kind and gentle with them could be stern and haughty with others. He indulged, indeed, somewhat too freely in wine, which he had early been directed to take as a medicine, and which use had made a necessary of life to him. But it was very seldom that any indication of undue excess could be detected in his tones or gestures; and, in truth, two bottles of port were little more to him than two dishes of tea. He had, when he was first introduced into the clubs of St James's Street, shown a strong taste for play; but he had the prudence and the resolution to stop before this taste had acquired the strength of habit. From the passion which generally exercises the most tyrannical dominion over the young he possessed an immunity, which is probably to be ascribed partly to his temperament and partly to his situation. His constitution was feeble; he was very shy ; and he was very busy. The strictness of his morals furnished such buffoons as Peter Pindar and Captain Morris with an inexhaust- ible theme for merriment of no very delicate kind. But the great body of the middle class of Englishmen could not see the joke. They warmly praised the young statesman for commanding his passions, and for covering his frailties, if he had frailties, with decorous obscurity, and would have been very far indeed from thinking better of him if he had vindicated himself from the taunts of his enemies by taking under his protection a Nancy Parsons or a Marianne Clark.

No part of the immense popularity which Pitt long enjoyed is to be attributed to the eulogies of wits and poets. It might have been naturally expected that a man of genius, of learning, of taste, an orator whose diction was often compared to that of Tully, the repre- sentative, too, of a great university, would have taken a peculiar pleasure in befriending eminent

writers to whatever political party they might have belongec. The love of literature had induced Augustus to heap benefits on Pompeians, Somers to be the pro- tector of nonjurors, Harley to make the fortunes of Whigs. But it could not move Pitt to show any favour even to Pittites. He was doubtless right in thinking that, in general, poetry, history, and philosophy ought to be suffered, like calico and cutlery, to find their proper price in the market, and that to teach men of letters to look habitually to the state for their recompense is bad for the state and bad for letters. Assuredly nothing can be more absurd or mischievous than to waste the public money in bounties for the purpose of inducing people who ought to be weighing out grocery or measuring out drapery to write bad or middling books. But, though the sound rule is that authors should be left to be remuner- ated by their readers, there will, in every generation, be a few ex- ceptions to this rule. To distinguish these special cases from the inass is an employment well worthy of the faculties of a great and accomplished ruler; and Pitt would assuredly have had little difficulty in finding such cases. While he was in power, the greatest philologist of the age, his own contemporary at Cambridge, was reduced to earn a livelihood by the lowest literary drudgery, and to spend in writing squibs for the Morning Chroniele years to which we might have owed an all but perfect text of the whole tragic and comic draina of Athens. The greatest historian of the age, forced by poverty to leave his country, completed his immortal work on the shores of Lake Leman. The political heterodoxy of Porson and the religious heterodoxy of Gibbon may perhaps be pleaded in defence of the minister by whom those eminent men were neglected. But there were other cases in which no such excuse could be sct up. Scarcely had Pitt obtained posses- sion of unbounded power when an aged writer of the highest eminence, who had made very little by his writings, and who was sinking into the grave under a load of infirmities and SOrToWsS, wanted five or six hundred pounds to enable him, during the winter or two which might still remain to him, to draw his breath more easily in the soft climate of Italy. Nota farthing was to be obtaincd; and before Christmas the author of the English Dietionary and of the Lives of the Poets had gasped his last in the

—

river fog and coal smoke of Fleet Strect. A few months after the death of Johnson appeared the Z'ask, incomparably the best poem that any Englishman then living had produced—a poem, too, which could hardly fail to excite in a well-constituted mind a feeling of esteem and compassion for the poet, a man of genius and virtue, whose means were scanty, and whom the most cruel of all the calamities incident to huinanity had made incapable of support- ing himself by vigorous and sustained exertion. Nowhere had Chatham been praised with more enthusiasm, or in verse more worthy of the subject, than in the Task. The son of Chatham, however, contented himself with reading and admiring the book, and left the author to starve. The pension which long after enabled poor Cowper to close his melancholy life unmolested by duns and bailiffs was obtained for him by the strenuous kindness of Lord Spencer. What a contrast between the way in which Pitt acted towards Johnson and the way in which Lord Grey acted towards his political enemy Scott, when Scott, worn out by misfortune and disease, was advised to try the effect of the Italian air! What a centrast between the way in which Pitt acted towards Cowper and the way in which Burke, a poor man and out of place, acted towards Crabbe! Even Dundas, who made no pretensious to literary taste, and was content to be considered as a hard-headed and somewhat coarse man of business, was, when compared with his eloquent and classically educated friend, a Meecenas or a Leo. Dundas made Burns an exciseman, with seventy pounds a year; and this was more than Pitt, during his long tenure of power, did for the encouragement of letters. Even those who may think that it is, in general, no part of the duty of a Government to reward literary merit, will hardly deny that a Government which has much Incrative church preferment in its gift is bound, in distributing that preferment, not to overlook divines whose writings have rendered great service to the cause of religion. But it seems never to have occurred to Pitt that he lay under any such obligation. All the theological works of all the numerous bishops whom he made and translated are not, when put together, worth fifty pages of the Horw Pauling, of the Natural Theology, or of the View of the Evidenees of Christianity. But on Paley the all-powerful minister never bestowed the smallest benefice. Artists Pitt treated as contemptuously as writcrs. For painting he did simply nothing. Sculptors who had been selected to cxecute monuments voted by parliament had to haunt the ante-chambers of the treasury during many years before they could obtain a farthing from him. One of them, after

vainly soliciting the minister for payment during fourteen years, had the courage to present a memorial to the king, and thus obtained tardy and ungracious justice. Architects it was ; absolutely necessary to employ ; and the worst that could be found |

q

”

seem to have been employed. Nota single fine public building of any kind or in any style was erected during his long administra- tion. It may be confidently affirmed that no ruler whose abilities and attainments would bear any comparison with his has ever shown such cold disdain for what is excellent in arts and letters, His first administration lasted seventeen years. That long First period is divided by a strongly marked line into two almost exactly minist equal parts. The first part ended and the second began in the tion, autumn of 1792. Throughout both parts Pitt displayed in the 178t- | highest degree the talents of a parliamentary leader. During the 1801. | first part he was a fortunate and in many respects a skilful administrator. With the difficulties which he had to encounter during the second part he was altogether incapable of contending; but his eloquence and his perfect mastery of the tactics of the House — of Commons concealed his incapacity from the multitude. ; The eight years which followed the general election of 1784 were First as tranquil and prosperous as any eight years in the whole history period, of England. Neighbouring nations which had lately been in arms 1/84 against her, and which had flattered themsclves that, in losing her 1792. American colonies, she had lost a chief source of her wealth and of her power, saw, with wonder and vexation, that she was more wealthy and more powerful than ever. Her trade increased. Her manufactures flourished. Her exchequer was full to overflowing. Very idle apprehensions were generally entertained that the public debt, though much less than a third of the debt which we now bear with ease, would be found too heavy for the strength of the nation. Those apprehensions might not perhaps have been easily quieted by reason. But Pitt quieted them by a juggle. He suc ceeded in pursuading first himself and then the whole nation, his opponents included, that a new sinking fund, which, so far as It differed from former sinking funds, differed for the worse, would, by virtue of some

mysterious power of propagation belonging to money, put into the pocket of the public creditor great suns not taken out of the pocket of the tax-payer. The country, terrified by a danger which was no danger, hailed with delight and bound- less confidence a remedy which was no remedy. The minister was almost universally extolled as the greatest of financiers. Mean- while both the branches of the house of Bourbon found that England was as formidable an antagonist as she had ever been. France had formed a plan for reducing Holland to vassalage. But England interposed, aud France receded. Spain interrupted by

ee

1e “geney,

88.

| ga Bs lig

violence the trade of our merchauts with the regions near the Oregon. But England armed, and Spain receded. Within the island there was profound tranquillity. The king was, for the first time, popular. During the twenty-three years which had followed his accession he had not been loved by his subjects. His domestic virtues were acknowledged. But it was gencrally thought that the good qualities by which he was distinguished in private life were wanting to his political character. As a sovereign he was resentful, unforgiving, stubborn, cunning. Under his rule the country had snstained crnel disgraces and disasters ; and every one of those disgraces and disasters was imputed to his strong anti- pathies, and to his perverse obstinacy in the wrong. One states- man after another complained that he had been induced by royal caresses, entreaties, and promiscs to undertake the direction of affairs at a difficult conjuncture, and that as soon as he had, not without sullying his fame and alienating his best friends, served the turn for which he was wanted, his ungrateful master began to intrigue against him and to canvass against him. Grenville, Rockingham, Chatham—men of widely different characters, but all three upright and high-spirited—agreed in thinking that the prince under whom they had successively held the highest place in the Government was one of the most insincere of mankind. His con- fidence was reposed, they said, not in those known and responsible

counsellors to whom he had delivered the seals of office, but in secret advisers who stole up the back stairs into his closet. In parliament his ministers, while defending themselves against the attacks of the opposition in front, were perpetually, at his instiga- tion, assailed on the flank or in the rear by a vile band of mercen- aries who called themselves his friends. These men constantly, while in possession of lucrative places in his service, spoke and voted against bills which he had authorized the first lord of the treasury or the secretary of state to bringin. But from the day on which Pitt was placed at the head of affairs there was an end of secret influence. His haughty and aspiring spirit was not to be satisfied with the mere show of power. Any attempt to undcrmine him at court, any mutinous movement among his followers in the House of Commons, was certain to be at once put down. He had only to tender his resignation and he could dictate his own terms. For he, and he alone, stood between the king and the coalition. He was therefore little less than mayor of the palace. The nation loudly applauded the king for having the wisdom to repose entire confidence in so excellent a minister. His Majesty's private virtues now began to produce their full cffect. He was generally regarded as the model of a respectable country gentleman, honest, good- natured, sober, religious. Hc rose early, he dined tempcrately, he was strictly faithful to his wife, he never missed church, and at church he never missed a response. His people heartily prayed that he might long reign over them; and they prayed the more heartily because his virtues were set off to the best advantage by the vices and follies of the prince of Wales, who lived in close intimacy with the chiefs of the Opposition.

How strong this feeling was in the public mind appeared signally on one great occasion. In the autumn of 1788 the king became Insane. The Opposition, eager for office, committed the great indiscretion of asserting that the heir apparent had, by the funda- mental laws of England, a right to be regent with the full powers of royalty. Pitt, on the other hand, maintained it to be the con- stitutional doctrine that when a sovereign is, by reason of infancy, disease, or absence, incapable of exercising the regal functions, it belongs to the estates of the realm to determine who shall be the vicegerent, and with what portion of the executive authority such vicegerent shall be entrusted. A long and violent contest followed, in which Pitt was supported by the great body of the people with as much enthusiasm as during the first

months of his administra- tion. Tories with one voice applauded him for defending the sick- bed of a virtuous and unhappy sovereign against a disloyal faction and an undutiful son. Not a few Whigs applauded him for assert- Ing the authority of parliaments, and the principles of the Revolu- tion, In opposition to a doctrine which seemed to have too much affinity with the servile theory of indefeasible hereditary right. The middle class, always zealons on the side of decency and the domestic virtues, looked forward with dismay to a reign resem- bling that of Charles IT. The palace, which had now been, during thirty years, the pattern of an English home, would be a public nulsance, a school of profligacy. To the good king's repast of mutton and lemonade, despatched at three o'clock, would succeed midnight banquets, from which the guests would be carried home speechless. To the backgammon board at which the good king played fora little silver with his equerries wonld succeed faro tables trom which young patricians who had sat down rich would rise up beggars.

he drawing-room, from which the frown of the queen had repelled ake generation of frail beauties, would now be again what it ad been in the days of Barbara Palmer and Louisa de Querouaille. i severely as the public reprobated the prince's many illicit % tachments, his one virtuons attachmeut was reprobatcd more Severely still, Even in grave and pious circles his Protestant iuistresscs gave less scandal than his Popish wife. That he must

be regent nobody ventured to deny. But he and his friends were so unpopular that Pitt could, with gencral approbation, proposc to limit the powers of the regent by restrictions to which it would have been impossible to subject a prince beloved and trusted by the country. Some interested men, fully expecting a change of administration, went over to the Opposition. But the majority, purified by these desertions, closed its ranks, and presented a more firm array than ever to the enemy. In every division Pitt was victorious. When at length, after a stormy interregnum of threc months, it was announced, on the very eve of the inauguration of the regeut, that the king was himself again, the nation was wild with delight. On the evening of the day on which His Majesty resumed his functions a spontaneous

illumination, the most general that had ever been seen in England, brightened the whole vast space from Highgate to Tooting, and from Hammersmith to Greenwich. On tlie day on which he returned thanks in the cathedral of his capital all the horses and carriages within a hundred miles of London were too few for the multitudes which flocked to see him pass through the streets. A second illumination followed, which was cven superior to the first in magnificence. Pitt with difficulty escaped from the tumultuous kindness of an innumerable multitude which insisted on drawing his coach from St Paul's Churchyard to Downing Street. This was the moment at which his fame and fortune may be said to have reached tlic zenith. His influence in the closet was as great as that of Carr or Villiers had been. His dominion over the parliament was morc absolute than that of Walpole or Pelham had been. He was at the same time as high in the favour of the populace as ever Wilkes or Sacheverell had been. Nothing did more to raise his charactcr than his noble poverty. It was well known that, if he had been dismissed from office after more than five years of boundless power, he would hardly have carried out with him a sum sufficient to furnish the set of chambers in which, as he cheerfully declared, he meant to resume the practice of the law. His admirers, how- ever, were by no means disposed to suffer him to depend on daily toil for his daily bread. The voluntary contributions which were awaiting his acceptance in the city of London alone would have sufficed to make him arich man. But it may be doubted whether his haughty spirit would have stooped to accept a provision so honourably earned and so honourably bestowed.

To such a height of power and glory had this extraordinary man risen at twenty-nine years of age. And now the tide was on the turn. Only ten days after the triumphant procession to St Paul's, the states-general of France, after an interval of a hundred and seventy-four years, met at Versailles.

The nature of the great Revolution which followed was long very French imperfectly understood in this conntry. Burke saw much further Revoln- than any of his contemporaries ; but whatever his sagacity descried tion,

was refracted and discoloured by his passions and his imagination. More than three years elapsed before the principles of the English administration underwent any material change. Nothing could as yet be milder or more

strictly constitutional than the minister’s domestic policy. Not a single act indicating an arbitrary temper or a jealousy of the people could be imputed to him. He had never applied to parliament for any extraordinary powers. He had never used with harshness the ordinary powers cntrusted by the constitution to the executive Government. Nota single state prosecution whicli would cven now be called oppressive had been instituted by him. Indced, the only oppressive state prosecution instituted during the first eight years of his administration was that of Stockdale, whicli is to be attributed, not to the Government, but to the chiefs of the Opposition. In office, Pitt had redeemed the pledges which he had, at his entrance into public life, given to tlic supporters of parliamentary reform. He had, in 1785, bronght forward a judicious plan for the improvement of the representative system, and had prevailed on the king, not only to refrain from talking against that plan, but to recommend it to the Houses in a speech from the throne.!_ This attempt failed; but there can be little doubt that, if the French Revolution had not produced a violent reaction of public feeling, Pitt would have performed, with little difficulty and no danger, that great work which, at a later period, Lord Grey could accomplish only by means which for a time loosened the very foundations of the commonwealth. When the atrocitics of the slave trade were first brought under the con- sideration of parliament, no abolitionist was more zealous than Pitt. When sickness prevented Wilberforce from appearing in public, his place was most efficiently supplied by his friend the minister. A humane bill, which mitigated the horrors of the middle passage, was, in 1788, carried by the eloquence and determined spirit of Pitt, in spite of the opposition of some of his own colleagues ; and it ought always to be remembcred to his honour that, in order to carry that bill, he kept the Houses sitting, in spite of many murmurs, long after the business of the Government had becn done

1 The speech with which the king opened the session of 1785 concluded with an assurance that His Majesty would heartily concur in every measure which could tend to sccure the truce principles ef the constitution. These words were at the time understood to refer to Pitt’s Reform Bill.

Its in- fluence in Eng- lish poli- tics.

and the Appropriation Act passed. In 1791 he cordially con- eurred with Fox in maintaining the sound constitutional doctrine that an impeachment is not terminated by a dissolution. In the course of the same year the two grcat rivals contended side by side in a far more important cause. Thcy are fairly entitled to divide the high honour of haviug added to our statute-book the inestimable law which places the liberty of the press under the protection of juries. On one occasion, and one alone, Pitt, during the first half of his long administration, acted in a manner unworthy of an en- lightened Whig. In the debate on the Test Act, he stooped to gratify the master whom he served, the university which he repre- sented, and the great body of clergymen and country gentlemen on whose support he rested, by talking, with little heartiness indeed, and with no asperity, the language of a Tory. With this single exception, his eonduct from the end of 1783 to the middle of 1792 was that of an honest friend of civil and religious liberty.

Nor did anything, during that period, indicate that he loved war, or harboured any malevolent feeling against any neighbouring nation. Those French writers who have represented him as a Hannibal sworn in childhood by his father to bear eternal hatred to France, as having, by mysterious intrigues and lavish bribes, instigated the leading Jacobins to commit those excesses which dishonoured the Revolution, as having been the rcal author of the first eoalition, know nothing of his character or of his history. So far was he from being a deadly enemy to France that his laudable attempts to bring about a closer connexion with that country by means of a wise and liberal treaty of commerce brought on him the severe censure of the Opposition. He was told in the House of Commons that he was a degenerate son, and that his partiality for the hereditary foes of our island was enough to make his great father’s bones stir under the pavement of the Abbey.

And this man, whose name, if he had been so fortunate as to die in 1792, would now have been associated with peace, with freedom, with philanthropy, with temperate reform, with mild and constitu- tional administration, lived to associate his name with arbitrary government, with harsh laws harshly executed, with alien bills, with gagging bills, with suspensions of the Habeas Corpus Act, with cruel punishments inflicted on some political agitators, with un- justifiable prosecutions instituted against others, and with the most costly and most sanguinary wars of modern times.

He lived to be held up to obloquy as the stern oppressor of England, and the indefatigable disturber of Europe. Pocts, contrasting his earlier with his later years, likened him sometimes to the apostle who kissed in order to betray, and sometiines to the evil angels who kept not their first estate. A satirist of great genius introduced the fiends of famine, slaughter, and fire, proclaiming that they had received their commission from one whose name was formed of four letters, and promising to give their employer ample proofs of grati- tude. Famine would gnaw the multitude till they should rise up against him in maduess. The demon of slaughter would impel them to tear him from limb tolimb. But fire boasted that she alone

could reward him as he deserved, and that she would cling round'

lim to all eternity. By the French press and the French tribune every crime that disgraced and every calamity that afflicted France was ascribed to the monstcr Pitt and his guineas. While the Jacobins were dominant it was he who had corrupted the Gironde, who had raised Lyons and Bordeaux against the Convention, who had suborned Paris to assassinate Lepelletier, and Cecilia Regnault to assassinate Robespierre. When the Thermidorian reaction came, all the atrocities of the Reign of Terror were imputed to him. Collot D'Herbois and Fouquier Tinville had been his pensiouers. It was he who had hired the murderers of September, who had dictated the pamphlets of Marat and the carmagnoles of Barére, who had paid Lebon to deluge Arras with blood aud Carrier to ehoke the Loire with corpses.

The truth is that he liked neither war uor arbitrary government. He was a lover of peace and freedom, driven, by a stress against which it was hardly possible for any will or any intellect to struggle, out of the course to which his inclinations pointed, and for which his abilities and acquirements fitted him, and forced into a policy repugnant to his feelings and unsuitcd to his talents.

The charge of 'apostasy is grossly unjust. A man ought no more to be called an apostate because his opinions alter with the opinions of the great body of his contemporaries than he ought to be called an Oriental traveller because he is always going round from west to east with the globe and everything that is upon it. Between the spring of 1789 and the close of 1792 the public mind of England underwent a great change. If the change of Pitt's

sentiments attracted peculiar notice, it was not because he changed more than his neighbours, for in fact he changed less than most of them, but poeatise his position was far more conspicuous than theirs, because

e was, till Bonaparte appeared, the individual who filled the greatest space in the eyes of the inhabitants of the eivilized world. During a short time the nation, and Pitt as one of the nation looked with interest and approbation on the French Revolution. But soon vast coufiscations, the violent sweeping away of ancient institutions, the domination of clubs, the barbarities of mobs

maddened by famine and hatred, produced a reaction here. The court, the nobility, the gentry, the clergy, the manufacturers, the merchants, in short nineteen-twentieths of those who had good roofs over their heads aud good coats on their backs, became eager intolerant Autijacobins. This feeling was at least as strong among the minister's adversaries as amoug his supporters. Fox in vain attempted to restrain his followers. All his genins, all his vast personal influence, could not prevent them froin rising up against him in general mutiny. Burke set the example of revolt; and Burke was in no long time joined by Portland, Spencer, Fitzwilliam, Loughborough, Carlisle, Malmesbury, W indham, Elliot. In the House of Commons the followers of the great Whig statesman and orator diniinished from about a hundred and sixty to fifty. In the House of Lords he had but ten or twelve adherents Icft. There can be uo doubt that there would have been a similar mutiny on the ministerial benches, if Pitt had obstinately resisted the general wish. Pressed at once by his master and by his colleagues, by old friends and by old opponents, he abandoned, slowly and reluctantly, the policy which was dear to his heart. He laboured hard to avert the European war. When the European war broke out, he still flattered himself that it would not be necessary for this country to take either side. In the spring of 1792 he congratu- lated the parliament on the prospect of long and profound peace, and proved his sincerity by proposing large remissions of taxation. Down to the end of that year he continued to cherish the hope that England might be able to preserve neutrality. But the passions which raged on both sides of the Channel were not to be restrained. The republicans who ruled France were inflamed by a fanaticism resembling that of the Mussulmans, who, with the Koran in one hand and the sword in the other, went forth

conquering and converting, eastward to the Bay of Bengal, and westward to the Pillars of Hercules. The higher and middle elasses of England were animated by zeal not less fiery than that of the crusaders who raised the ery of Deus vult at Clermont. The impulse which drove the two nations toa collision was not to be arrested by the abilities or by the authority of any single man. As Pitt was in frout of his fellows, and towered high above them, he seemed to lead them. But in fact he was violently pushed on by them, and, had he held back but a little more than he did, would have been thrust out of their way or trampled under their feet.

He yielded to the current; aud from that day his misfortunes Secon began. The truth is that there were only two consistent courses period before him. Since he did not choose to oppose himself, side by of first} side with Fox, to the public feeling, he should have taken the admini. advice of Burke, and should have availed himself of that feeling to tration the full extent. If it was impossible to preserve peace, he should 1792- have adopted the only policy which conld lead to victory. He 1801. should have proclaimed a holy war for religion, morality, property, order, public law, and should have thus opposed to the Jacobins an energy equal to their own. Unhappily he tried to find a middle path ; and he found one which united all that was worst in both : extremes. He went to war; but he would not understand the War peculiar character of that war. He was obstinately blind to the policy. plain fact that he was contending against a state which was also a | sect, and that the new quarrel between England and France was of | quite a different kind from the old quarrels about colonies i America and fortresses in the Netherlands. He had to combat frantic enthusiasm, boundless ambition, restless activity, the wildest and most audacious spirit of innovation ; and he acted as if he had had to deal with the harlots and fops of the old court of Versailles, with Madame de Pompadour and the Abbé de Bernis.

It was pitiable to hear him, year after year, proving to an ad- miring audience that the wicked republic was cxhausted, that she could not hold out, that her credit was gone, that her assignats

were not worth mote than the paper of which they were made,—as

if eredit was necessary to a government of which the principle was : rapine, as if Alboin could not turn Italy into a desert till he had i negotiated a loan

at five per cent., as if the exchequer bills of Attila

had been at par. It was impossible that a man who so completely mistook the nature of a contest could carry on that contest suc cessfully. Great as Pitt's abilities were, his military administra: tion was that of a driveller. He was at the head of a nation Milit engaged in a struggle for life and death, of a nation eminently dis- adyil tinguished by all the physical and all the moral qualities which tratio make excellent soldiers. The resources at his command were unlimited. The parliament was even more ready to graut hun

men and money than he was to ask for them. In such am } emergency, and with such means, such a statesman as Richelieu, |

=

as Louvois, as Chatham, as Wellesley, would have created in a few months one of the finest armies in the world, and would soon have H discovered and brought forward generals worthy to command such anarmy. Germany might have been saved by another Blenheim ; Flanders recovered by another Ramillics ; another Poitiers might have delivered the Royalist and Catholic provinces of France from a yoke which they abhorred, and might have spread terror even to the barriers of Paris. But the fact is that, after eight years of war, after a vast destruction of lifc, after an expenditure of wealth

eria?t

far exceeding the expenditure of the American War, of the Seven Years' War, of the War of the Austrian Succession, and of the War of the Spanish Succession united, the English army under Pitt was the laughing-stock of all Europe. It could not boast of one single brilliant exploit. It had never shown itself on the Continent but to be beaten, chased, forced to re-embark, or forced to capitu- late. To take some sugar island in the West Indies, to scatter sone mob of half-naked Irish peasants—such were the most splendid yictories won by the British troops under Pitt's auspices. : The English navy no mismanagement could ruin. But during nw s- a long period whatever mismanagement could do was done. The . earl of Chatham, without a single

qualification for high publie trust, was made, by fraternal partiality, first lord of the admiralty, and was kept in that great post during two years of a war in which the very existence of the state depended on the efficiency of the fleet. He continued to doze away and trifle away the time which ought to have been devoted to the public service, till the whole mercantile body, though generally disposed to support the Government, com- plained bitterly that our flag gave no protection to our trade. Fortunately he was succeeded by George, Earl Spencer, one of those chiefs of the Whig party who, in the great schism caused by the French Revolution, had followed Burke. Lord Spencer, though inferior to many of his colleagues as an orator, was decidedly the best administrator among them. To him it was owing that a long and gloomy succession of days of fasting, and most emphatically of humiliation, was interrupted, twice in the short space of eleven months, by days of thanksgiving for great victories. It may seem paradoxical to say that the incapacity which Pitt | showed in all that related to the conduct of the war is, in some sense, the most decisive proof that he was a man of very extra- _ ordinary abilities. Yet this is the simple truth. For assuredly one-tenth part of his errors and disasters would have been fatal to the power and influence of any minister who had not possessed, in the highest degree, the talents of a parliamentary leader. While his schemes were eonfounded, while his predictions were falsified, while the coalitions which he had laboured to form were falling to pieces, while the expeditions which he had sent forth at enormous vost were ending in rout and disgrace, while the enemy against whom he was feebly contending was subjugating Flanders and Brabant, the electorate of Mainz and the electorate of Treves, Tfolland, Piedmont, Liguria, Lombardy, his authority over the House of Commons was constantly becoming more and more absolute. There was his empire. There were his victories—his Lodi and his Arcola, his Rivoli and his Marengo. If some great misfortune, a pitched battle lost by the allies, the annexation of a new department to the French republic, a sanguinary insurrection in Ireland, a mutiny in the fleet, a panic in the city, a run on the bank, had spread dismay through the ranks of his majority, that dismay lasted only till he rose from the treasury bench, drew up his haughty head, stretched his arm with commanding gesture, and poured forth, in deep and sonorous tones, the lofty language of inextinguishable hope and inflexible resolution. Thus, through

government by physical force, were indicted for high treason, and were saved from the gallows only by the righteous verdicts of juries. This severity was at the time loudly applauded by alarmists whom fear had made cruel, but will be seen in a very different light by posterity. The truth is that the Englishmen who wished for a revolution were, even in numbcr, not formidable, and in every- thing but number a faction utterly contemptible, without arins, or funds, or plans, or organization, or leader. ‘There can be no doubt that Pitt, strong as he was in the support of the great body of the nation, might easily have repressed the turbulence of the discon- tented minority by firmly yet temperately enforcing the ordinary law. Whatever vigour he showed during this unfortunate part of his life was vigour out of place and season. He was all feebleness and languor in his conflict with the foreign enemy who was really to be dreaded, and reserved all his energy and resolution for the domestic enemy who might safely have been despised.

One part only of Pitt’s conduct during the last eight years of Irish He was the first English policy,

the 18th eentury deserves high praise. minister who formed great designs for the beuefit of Ireland. The manner in which the Roman Catholic population of that unfortunate country had been kept down during many generations seemed to him unjust and crucl; and it was scarcely possible for a man of his abilities not to perceive that, in a contest against the Jacobins, the Roman Catholies were his natural allies. Had he been able to do all that he wished, it is probable that a wise and liberal policy would have averted the rebellion of 1798. But the difficulties which he encountered were great, perhaps insurmountable ; and the Roman Catholics were, rather by his misfortune than by his fault, thrown into the hands of Jacobins. There was a third great rising of the lrishry against the Englishry, a rising not less formid- able than the risings of 1641 and 1689. The Euglishry remained victorious ; and it was necessary for Pitt, as it had been necessary for Oliver Cromwell and William of Orange before him, to consider how the victory should be used. It is only just to his memory to say that he formed a scheme of policy so grand and so simple, so righteous and so humane, that it would

alone entitle him to a high place among statesmen. He determined to make Irelaud one kingdom with England, and, at the same time, to relieve the Roman Catholic laity from civil disabilities, and to grant a public maintenance to the Roman Catholie clergy. Had he been able to carry these noble designs into effect, the Union would have been a union indeed. It would have been inseparably associated in the minds of the great majority of Irishmen with civil and religious freedom ; and the old parliament in College Green would have been regretted only by a sniall knot of discarded jobbers and oppressors, and would have been remembered by the body of the nation with the loathing aud contempt due to the most tyrannical and the most corrupt assembly that had ever sat in Europe. But Pitt could execute only onc half of what he had projected. He succeeded in obtaining the conseut of the parliaments of both kingdoms to the Uniou ; but that reconciliation of races and sects without which the Union could exist only in name was not accom- plished. He was well aware that he was likely to find difficulties in the closet. But he flattered himself that, by cautious and dex- terous management, those difficulties might be overcome. Un- happily, there were traitors and sycophants in high place who did not suffer him to take his own time and his own way, but pre- maturely disclosed his scheme to the king, and disclosed it in the manner most likely to irritate and alarm a weak and diseased mind. His Majesty absurdly imagined that his coronation oath bound him to refuse his assent to any bill ~~for relieving Roman Catholics from civil disabilities. To argue with him was impossible. Dundas tried to explain the matter, but was told to keep his Scotch meta~~

physics to himself. Pitt and Pitt’s ablest colleagues resigned their Resigns offices. It was necessary that the king should make a new ar- office, rangement. But by this time his anger and distress had brought March 14, back the malady which had, many years before, incapacitated him 1801

a long and calamitous period, every disaster that happened with- out the walls of parliament was regularly followed by a triumph within then, At length he had no longer an Opposition to en- . counter. Of the great party which had contended against him dur- ing the first eight years of his administration more than one-half now marched under his standard, with his old competitor the duke | of Portland at their head; and the rest had, after many vain | struggles, quitted the field in despair. Fox had retired to the

shades of St Anne’s Hill, and had there found, in the society of friends whom no vicissitude could estrange from him, of a woman whom he tenderly loved, and of the illustrious dead of Athens, of Rome, and of Florence, ample compensation for all the misfortunes . of his public life. Session followed session with scarcely a single division. In the eventful year 1799 the largest iminority that

0 atte “3 be mustered against the Government was twenty-five. – n Pitt’s domestic policy there was at this time assuredly no _¥ ~want of vigour. While he offered to French Jacobinism a resist- anee so feeble that it only encouraged the evil which he wished to Suppress, he put down English Jacobinism with a strong hand. The Habeas Corpus Act was repeatedly suspended. Public meet- f Ings were placed under severe restraints. The Government obtained from parliament power to send out of the country aliens who were as of evil designs ; and that power was not suffered to be 4 1 Ne. Writers who propounded doetrines adverse to monarchy and : rey were proscribed and punished without mercy. It was aM safe for a republican to avow his political creed over his an steak and his bottle of port at a chop-house. The old laws of Seotland against sedition, laws which were eonsidercd by English- men as barbarous, and which a succession of Governments had aes to rust, were now furbished up and sharpened anew. Men ee ted minds and polished manners were, for offences ee at Westminster would have been treated as mere misde- a Sent to herd with felons at Botany Bay. Some a mers, whose opinions were extravagant, and whose language S Intemperate, but who had never dreamed of subverting the

ee

for the discharge of his functions. He actually assembled his family, read the coronation oath to them, and told thein that, if he broke it, the crown would immediately pass to the house of Savoy. It was not until after an interregnum of several weeks that he re- gained the full use of his small faculties, and that a ministry after his own heart was at length formed.

The materials out of which he had to construct a Government were neither solid nor splendid. To that party, weak in numbers, but strong in every kind of talent, which was hostile to the domestic and foreign policy of his late

advisers, he could not have recourse. For that party, while it differed from his late advisers on every point on which they had been honoured with his approbation, eordially agreed with them as to the single matter which had brought on them his displeasure. All that was left to hiin was to call up the rear ranks of the old ministry to form the front rank of anew ministry. In an age pre-eminently fruitful of parliamentary talents, a cabinet was formed containing hardly a single man who' in parliamentary talents eould be considered as even of the second rate. The most important offices in the state were bestowed on dcecorous and laborious mediocrity. Henry Addington was at the

Bi ai.

Adiding- ton min- istry.

Relations between

Pitt and

Adding-

ton.

head of the treasury. He had been an early, 2 \ friend of Pitt, and had by Pitt's influence been placed, while still a young man, in the chair of the House of Commons. He was universally admitted to have been the best Speaker that had sat in that chair since the retirement of Onslow. But nature had not be- stowed on him very vigorous faculties; and the highly respectable situation which he long oceupied with honour had rather unfitted than fitted him for the discharge of his new duties. His business had been to bear himself evenly between eontending factions. He had taken no part in the war of words; and he had always been addressed with marked deference by the great orators who thundered against each other from his right and from his left. It was not strange that when, for the first time, he had to encounter keen and vigorous antagonists, who dealt hard blows without the

smallest ceremony, he should have been awkward and unready, or.

that the air of dignity and authority which he had acquired in his former post, and of which he had not divested himself, should have made his helplessness laughable and pitiable. Nevertheless, during many months, lis power seemed to stand firm. He was a favourite with the king, whom he resembled in narrowness of mind, and to whom he was more obsequious than Pitt had ever beeu. The nation was put into high good humour by a peace with France. The enthusiasm with which the upper and middle elasses had rushed into the war had spent itself. Jacobinism was no longer formidable. Everywhere there was a strong reaction against what was called the atheistical and anarehical philosophy of the 18th eentury. Bonaparte, now first consul, was busied in constructing out of the ruins of old institutions a new eeclesiastical establish- ment and a new order of knighthood. That nothing less than the dominion of the whole eivilized world would satisfy his selfish ambition was not yet suspected ; nor did even wise men see any reason to doubt that he might be as safe a neighbour as any prince of the house of Bourbon had been. ‘The treaty of Amiens was therefore hailed by the great body of the English people with ex- travagant joy. The popularity of the minister was for the moment immense, His want of parliamentary ability was, as yet, of little consequence ; for he had seareely any adversary to encounter. The old Opposition, delighted by the peace, regarded him with favour. A new Opposition had indeed been formed by some of the late ministers, and was led by Grenville in the House of Lords and by Windham in the House of Commons. But the new Opposition could scarcely muster ten votes, and was regarded with no favour by the country. On Pitt the ministers relied as on their firmest support. He had not, like some of his colleagues, retired in anger. Iie had expressed the greatest respect for the conscientious scruple whieh had taken possession of the royal mind ; and he had promised his suecessors all the help in his power. In private his advice was at their service. In parliament he took his seat on the bench be- hind them, and in more than one debate defended them with powers far superior to theirown. The king perfeetly understood the value of such assistance. On one oceasion, at the palace, he took the old minister and the new minister aside. “If we three,” he said, “keep together, all will go well.”

But it was hardly possible, human nature being what it is, and more especially Pitt and Addington being what they were, that this union should be durable. Pitt, conscious of superior powers, imagined that the place which he had quitted was now occupied by a mere puppet which he liad set up, which he was to govern while he suffered it to remain, and which he was to fling aside as soon as he wished to resume his old position. Nor was it long before he began to pine for the power which he had relinquished. He had been so early raised to supreme authority in the state, and had enjoyed that authority so long, that it had beeome necessary to him. In retirement his days passed heavily. He could not, like Fox, forget the pleasures and cares of ambition in the company of Euripides or Herodotus. Pride restrained him from intimating, even to his dearest friends, that he wished to be again minister. But he thonght it strange, almost ungrateful, that his wish had not been divined, that it had not been anticipated by one whom he regarded as his deputy.

Addington, on the other hand, was by no means inclined to descend from his high position. He was, indeed, under a delusion mueh resembling that of Abou Hassan in the Arabian tale. His brain was turned by his short and unreal caliphate. He took his elevation quite seriously, attributed it to his own merit, and con- sidered himself as one of the great triumvirate of English statesmen as worthy to make a third with Pitt and Fox. ,

Such being the feelings of the late minister and of the present minister, a rupture was inevitable; and there was no want of persons bent on making that rupture speedy and violent. Some of these persons wounded Addington’s pride by representing him as a poaiey, ace to keep a place on the treasury beneh till his master s ae l fin Ae convenient to come. Others took every opportunity of praising him at Pitt’s expense. Pitt had waged a long, a bloody, a costly, an unsuceessful war. Addington had made peace. Pitt had suspended the constitutional liberties of Englishmen. Under Addington those liberties were again enjoyed. Pitt had wasted

PLT?

indeed a hereditary, –

the public resources. Addington was earefully nursing them, It was sometimes but too evident that these compliments were not unpleasing to Addington. Pitt became cold and reserved. During many months he remained at a distanee from London. Meanwhile his most intimate friends, in spite of his declarations that he made no complaint, and that he had no wish for office, exerted themselves to effect a change of ministry. His favourite disciple, George Canning, young, ardent, ambitious, with great powers and great virtues, but with a temper too restless and a wit too satirical for his own happiness, was indefatigable. He spoke; he wrote; he intrigued ; he tried to induce a large number of the supporters of the Government to sign a round robin desiring a change ; he made game of Addington and of Addington's relations in a suecession of lively pasquinades. The minister's partisans retorted with equal aerimony, if not with equal vivacity. Pitt could keep out of the aflray only by keeping out of politics altogether; and this it soon became impossible for him to do. Had Napoleon, content with the first place among the sovereigns of the Continent, and with a inilitary reputation surpassing that of Marlborough or of Turenne, devoted himself to the noble task of making France happy by mild administration and wise legislation, our eountry might have long continued to tolerate a Government of fair intentions and feeble abilities. Unhappily, the treaty of Amiens had scarcely been signed when the restless ambition and the insupportable insolenee of the first eonsul convineed the great body of the English people that the peace so eagerly welcomed was only a precarious armi- stice. As it beeame elearcr and eleaier that a war for the dignity, the independence, the very existence of the nation was at hand, men looked with increasing uneasiness on the weak and languid eabinet which would have to contend against an encmy who united more than the power of Louis the Great to more than the genius of Frederick the Great. It is true that Addington might easily have made a better war minister than Pitt, and could not possibly have been a worse. But Pitt had cast a spell on the public mind. The eloquence, the judgment, the calm and disdainful firmness which he had during many years displayed in parliament deluded the world into the belief that he must be eminently qualified to superin- tend every department of politics; and they imagined, even after the miserable failures of Dunkirk, of Quiberon, and of the Helder, that he was the only statesman who eould cope with Bonaparte, This feeling was nowhere stronger than among Addington's own eolleagues. The pressure put on him

was so strong that he could not help yielding to it; yet, even in yielding, he showed how far he was from knowing his own place.

such a scheme, and talked of it with bitter mirth. “Whieh secretaryship was offered to you?” his friend Wilberforce asked. “ Really,” said Pitt, “I had not the euriosity to inquire.” Adding- ton was frightened into bidding higher. He offered to resign the treasury to Pitt, on condition that there should be no extensive change in the Government. But Pitt would listen to no sueh terms. Then came a dispute such as often arises after negotiations orally conducted, even when the negotiators are men of strict honour. Pitt gave one aecount of what had passed; Addington gave another; and, though the discrepancies were not such a3 necessarily implied any intentional violation of truth on either side, both were greatly exasperated.

Meanwhile the quarrel with the first eonsul had eome to @ crisis. On the 16th of May 1808 the king sent a message calling ou the House of Commons to support him in withstanding the ambitious and encroaching policy of France; and on the 22d the House took the message into consideration.

Pitt had now been living many months in retirement. There had been a gencral election since he had spoken in parliament, and there were two hundred members who had never heard him. It was known that on this occasion he would be in his place, and euriosity was wound up to the highest point. Unfortunately, the shorthand writers were, in eonsequence of some mistake, shut out on that day from the gallery, so that the newspapers contained only a very meagre report of the proccedings. But several accounts of what passed are extant ; and of those accounts the most inter-esting is contained in an unpublished letter written by a very young meniber, John William Ward, afterwards carl of Dudley. When Pitt rose, he was received with loud eheering. At every pause in his speech there was a burst of applause. The peroration is said to have been one of the most animated and magnificent ever heard in parliament. “Pitt’s speech,” Fox wrote a few days later, “was admired very much, and very justly. I think it was the best he ever made in that style.” The debate was adjourned ; and on the second night Fox replied to it in an oration which, as the most zealous Pittites were forced to acknowledge, left the palm of eloquence doubtful.

Addington made a pitiable appearance between the two great rivals; and it was observed that Pitt, while exhort- ing the Commons to stand resolutely by the executive Government

His first proposition was that Pitt some insignificant nobleman should be first lord of the treasury and clines nominal head of the administration, and that the real power should stbo be divided between Pitt and himself, who were to be secretaries of nate state. Pitt, as might have been expected, refused even to diseuss oflice.

rd)

a

| | |

i |

Pm age ey

i a

. against France, said not a word indicating esteem or friendship for +he prime minister.

War was speedily declared. The first consul threatened to in- yade England at the head of the conquerors of Belgium and Italy, and formed a great camp near the Straits of Dover. On the other side of those straits the whole population of our island was ready to rise up as one man in defence of the soil. At this conjunc- ture, as at some other great conjunctures in our history —the con-

147

tional principle was at stake, and that they would not take office while a man eminently qualified to render service to the conimon- wealth was placed under a ban merely because he was disliked at court. All that was left to Pitt was to construct a Government out of the wreck of Addingtou's feeble administration. The small eircle of his personal retainers furnished him with a very few useful assistants, particularly Dundas (who had been created Viscount Melville), Lord Harrowby, and Canning.

juncture of 1660, for cxample, and the conjuucture of 1688—there was a general disposition among honest and patriotic men to forget old quarrels, and to regard as a friend every person who was ready, in the existing emergency, to do his part towards the saving of the state. A coalition ofall the first men in the country would, at that

Such was the inauspicious manner in which Pitt entered on his Second second adininistration. The whole history of that administration Pitt was of a piece with the commencement. Almost every month adminis- brought some new disaster or disgrace. To the war with France tration, was soon added a war with Spain. The opponents of the ministry May 12

——e —

moment, have been as popular as the coalition of 1783 had been un- popular. Alone in the kingdom the king looked with perfect com- placency ona cabinet in which no man superior to himself in genius was to be found,

and was so far from being willing to admit all his blest subjects to office that he was bent on excluding them all.

A few months passed before the different parties which agreed in regarding the Government with dislike and contempt came to an understanding with each other. But in the spring of 1804 it be- eame evident that the weakest of ministries would have to defend itself against the strongest of Oppositions, an Opposition made up of three Oppositions, each of which wonld, separately, have beeu formidable from ability, and which, when united, were also for- midable from number. The party whieh had opposed the peace, headed by Grenville and Windham, and the party which had op- posed the renewal of the war, headed by Fox, eoneurred in thinking that the men now in power were incapable of either aking a good peace or waging a vigorous war. Pitt had in 1802 spoken for peace against the party of Grenville, and had in 1803 spoken for war against the party of Fox. But of the capacity of the cabinet, and especially of its chief, for the couduct of great affairs, he thought as meanly as either Fox or Grenville. Questions were easily found on which all the cnemies of the Government could act cordially together. The unfortunate first lord of the treasury, who had, during the earlier months of his administration, been supported by Pitt on oue side and by Fox on the other, now had to answer Pitt and to be answered i Fox. Two sharp debates,

:

:

| followed by close divisions, made him weary of his post. It was known, too, that the Upper House was ever more hostile to him than the Lower, that the Scoteh representative peers wavered, that there were signs of mutiny among the bishops. In the cabinet itself there was discord, and, worse than diseord, treachery. It

ding- was necessary to give way; the ministry was dissolved, and the

i task of forming a Government was entrusted to Pitt.

istry Pitt was of opinion that there was now an opportunity, such as

igns. had never before offercd itself, and such as might never offer itself again, of uniting in the public service, on honourable terms, all the eminent talents of the kingdom, The passions to which the French Revolution had given birth were extinct. The madness of the innovator and the maduess of the alarmist had alike had their day. Jacobinism and Antijacobinism had gone out of fashion together. The most liberal statesman did not think that*season propitious for schemes of parliamentary reform; and the most

conservative statesman could not pretend that there was any

i occasion for gagging bills and suspensions of the Habeas Corpus

| Act. The great struggle for independence and national honour occupied all minds ; and those who were agreed as to the duty of maintaining that struggle with vigour might well postpone to a more convenient time all disputes about matters eomparatively unimportant. Strongly impressed by these considerations, Pitt wished to form a ministry including all the first men in the country.

The treasury he reserved for himself; and to Fox he proposed to

assign a share of power little inferior to his own.

The plan was excellent; but the king would not hear of it. Dull, obstinate, unforgiving, and at that time half mad, he positively refused to admit Fox into his service. Anybody else, even men who had gone as far as Fox, or further than Fox, in what His Majesty considered as Jacobinism—Sheridan, Grey, Erskine— should be graciously received, but Fox never. During several hours Pitt laboured in vain to reason down this senseless antipathy. That he was perfectly sincere there can be no doubt; but it was not enough to be sincere—he shonld have been resolute. Had he declared imself determined not to take office without Fox, the toyal obstinacy would have given way, as it gave way, a few ; months later, when opposed to the immutable resolution of Lord

Grenville. In an evil hour Pitt yielded. He flattered himself

with the hope that, though he consented to forego the aid of his pions rival, there would still remain ample materials for the 7 oo of an efficient ministry. That hope was cruelly

sappointed. Fox entreated his friends to leave personal considera- tions out of the question, aud declared that he would support, With the utmost cordiality, an efficient and patriotie ministry from which he should be himself excluded. Not only his friends, how- ao but Grenville and Grenville's adherents answered with one Voice that the question was not personal, that a great constitu-

ee

were nunierous, able, and active. His most useful eoadjutors he 1804. soon lost. Sickness deprived him of the help of Lord Harrowby. It was discovered that Lord Melville had been guilty of highly culpable laxity in transactions relating to public money. He was eensured by the House of Commons, driven from office, ejected from the Privy Council, and impeached of high erimes and mis- demeanours. The blow fell heavy on Pitt. It gave him, he said in parliament, a deep pang; and, as he uttered the word pang his lip quivered, his voice shook, he paused, and his hearers thought that he was about to burst into tears. Such tears shed by Eldon would have moved nothing but laughter. Shed by the warm- hearted and open-hearted Fox, they would have moved sympathy, but would have caused no surprise. But a tear from Pitt would have been something portentous. He suppressed his emotion, how- ever, and proceeded with his usual majestic self-possession.

His difficulties eompelled him to resort to various expedients. At one time Addington was persnaded to accept office with a peerage ; but he brought uo additional strength to the Goveru- ment. Though he went through the form of reconciliation, it was impossible for him to forget the past. While he remained in place he was jealous and punctilious; and he soon retired again. At another time Pitt renewed his efforts to overeome his master's aversion to Fox; and it was rumoured that the king's obstinacy was gradually giving way. But, meauwhile, it was impossible for the minister to conceal from the public eye the decay of his health and the constant anxicty which gnawed at his heart. His sleep was broken. His food eeased to

nourish him. All who passed him in the park, all who had interviews with him in Downing Street, saw misery written in his face. The peculiar look which he wore during the last months of his life was often pathetically described by Wilberforce, who used to call it the Austerlitz look.

Still the vigour of Pitt's intellectual faculties and the intrepid haughitiness of his spirit remained unaltered. He had staked everything on a great venture. He had succeeded in forming another mighty coa'ition against the French ascendency. The united forces of Austria, Russia, and England might, he hoped, oppose an insurmountable barrier to the ambition of the eommon enemy. But the genius and energy of Napoleou prevailed. While the English troops were preparing to embark for Germany, while the Russian troops were slowly coming up from Poland, he, with rapidity unprecedented in modern war, moved a hundred thousand men from the shores of the ocean to the Black Forest, and compelled a great Austrian army to surrender at Ulm. To the first faint rumours of this calamity Pitt would give no credit. He was irritated by the alarms of those around him. "Do not believe a word of it," he said ; "it is alla fiction." The next day lic received a Dutch newspaper containing the capitulation. He knewno Dutch. It was Sunday, and the public offiees were shut. He carried the paper to Lord Malmesbury, who had been minister in Holland; and Lord Malmesbury translated it. Pitt tried to bear up, but the shock was too great; and he went away with death in his face.

The news of the battle of Trafalgar arrived four days later, and seemed for a moment to revive him, Forty-eight hours after that most glorious and most mournful of victories had been announeed to the country came the Lord Mayor's Day; and Pitt dined at Guildhall. His popularity had declined. But on this occasion the multitude, greatly excited by the recent tidings, welcomed him enthusiastically, took off his horses in Cheapside, and drew his carriage up King Street. When his health was drunk, he returned thanks in two or three of those stately sentenees of which he had a boundless command. Several of those who heard him laid up his words in their hearts; for they were the last words that he ever uttered in public: 'Let us hope that England, having saved herself by her energy, may save Europe by her example."

This was but a momentary rally. Austerlitz soon completed what Ulm had begun. Early in December Pitt had retired to Bath, in the hope that he might there gather strength for the approaching session. While he was languishing there on his sofa arrived the news that a decisive battle had been fought and lost in Moravia, that the coalition was dissolved, that the Continent was at the feet of France. He sank down under the blow. Ten days later he was so emaciated that his most intimate friends hardly knew him. He came up from Bath by slow journeys, and on the 11th of January 1806 reached his villa at Putney. Pavlia-

Death, January 23, 18U6.

Public funeral.

ment was to meet on the 21st. On the 20th was to be the parlia- mentary dinner at the house of the first lord of the treasury in Downing Street; and the cards were already issued. But the days of the great minister were numbered. he only chance for his life, and that a very slight chance, was that he should resign his office, and pass some months in profound repose. His colleagues paid him very short visits, and carefully avoided political conver- sation. But his spirit, long accustomed to dominion, conld not, even in that extremity, relinquish hopes which everybody but him- self perceived to be vain. On the day on which he was carried into his bedroom at Putney the Marquis Wellesley, whom he had long loved, whom he had sent to govern India, and whose adminis- tration had been eminently able, energetic, and successful, arrived in London after an absence of eight years. The friends saw each other once more. There was an affectionate meeting and a last part- ing. That it was a last parting Pitt did not seem to beaware. He fancied himself to be recovering, talked on various subjects cheer- fully and with an unclouded mind, and pronounced a warm and discerning eulogium on the marquis’s brother Arthur. ‘‘ I never,’ he said, ‘‘met with any military man with whom it was so satisfac- tory to converse.” The excitement and exertion of this interview were too much for the sick man. He fainted away; and Lord Wel- lesley left the house convinced that the close was fast approaching.

And now members of parliament were fast coming up to London. The chiefs of the Opposition met for the purpose of considering the course to be taken on the first day of the session. It was easy to guess what would be the language of the king's speech, and of the address which would be moved in answer to that speech. An amendment condemning the policy of the Government had been prepared, and was to have been proposed in the House of Commons by Lord Henry Petty, a young nobleman who had already won for himself that place in the esteem of his country which, after the lapse of more than half a century, he still retains.! He was unwill- ing, however, to come forward as the accuscr of one who was incap- able of defending himself. Lord Grenville, who had been informed of Pitt's state by Lord Wellesley, and had been deeply affected by it, earnestly recommended forbearance ; and Fox, with charactcristic gencrosity and good nature, gave his voice against attacking his now helpless rival. 'Sunt lacryme rerum," he said, "et mentem nortalia tangunt.'" On the first day, therefore, there was no debate. It was rumoured that evening that Pitt was better. But on the following morning his physicians pronounced that there were no hopes. The commanding faculties of which he had been too proud were beginning to fail. His old tutor and friend, the bishop of Lincoln, informed him of his danger, and gave such religious advice and consolation as a confused and obscured mind could receive. Stories were told of devout sentiments fervently uttered by the dying man. But these stories found no eredit with anybody who knew him. Wilberforce pronounced it impossible that they could be true; '' Pitt," he added, 'was a man who always said less than he thought on such topics." It was asserted in many after-diuner speeches, Grub Strect elegies, and academic prize poems and prize declamations that the great minister died exclaiming, ''Oh my country!" This is a fable, but it is true that the last words which he uttered, while he knew what he said, were broken exclamations about the alarming state of public affairs. He ceased to breathe on the morning of the 28rd of January 1806, the twenty-fifth anniversary of the day on which he first took his seat in parliament. He was in his forty-seventh year, and had been during near nineteen years first lord of the treasury, and un- disputed chief of the administration. Since parliamentary govern- ment was established in England, no English statesman has held Supreme power so long. Walpole, it is true, was first lord of the treasury during more than twenty years, but it was not till

Walpole had been some time first lord of the treasury that he could be properly called prime minister.

It was moved in the House of Commons that Pitt should be honoured with a public funeral and a monument. The motion was opposed by Fox in a speech which deserves to be studied as a model of good taste and good feeling. The task was the most invidious that ever an orator undertook; but it was performed with a humanity and delicacy which were warmly acknowledged by the mourning friends of him who was gone. The motion was carried by 288 votes to 89.

The 22d of February was fixed for the funeral. The corpse having lain in state during two days in the Painted Chamber, was borne with great pomp to the northern transept of the Abbey. A splendid train of princes, nobles, bishops, and privy councillors followed. The grave of Pitt had been made near to the spot where his great father lay, near also to the spot where his great rival was soon to he. The sadness of the assistants was beyond that of ordinary mourners. For he whom they were committing to the

1 (Henry Petty Fitzmauri in ‘quis of | Suny 2 Vr an id a ged aa aS 1801, and succeeded to the peerage in 1809.” Seeretary of state for the home department, a

foreign affairs. From 1831 to 1841, and from of the council,]

sdowne, was born in London, . He entered parliament in For a brief period in 1828 he was nd again, in 1828-29, seeretary for 1846 to 1852, he was lord president

=

dust had died of sorrows and anxieties of which none of the survivors could be altogether without a share. Wilberforce, who carried the banner before the hearse, described the awful ceremony with deep feeling. As the coffin descended into the earth, he sald, the eagle face of Chatham from above

seemed to look down with consternation into the dark house which was receiving all that remained of so much power and glory.

All parties in the House of Commons readily concurred in voting forty thousand pounds to satisfy the demands of Pitt's creditors, Some of his admirers scemed to consider the magnitude of his embarrassments as a circumstance highly honourable to him ; but men of sense will probably be of a different opinion. It is far better, no doubt, that a great minister should carry his contempt of money to excess than that he should contaminate his hands with unlawful gain. But it is neitherright nor becoming in a man to whom the public has given an ineome morc than sufficient for his comfort and dignity to bequeath to that public a great debt, the effect of mere negligence and profusion. As first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer Pitt never had less than six thousand a year, besides an excellent house. In 1792 he was forced by his royal master's friendly importunity to accept for life the office of warden of the Cinque Ports, with near four thousand a year more. He had neither wife nor child ; he had no needy relations; he had no expensive tastes; he had no long election bills. Had he given but a quarter of an hour a week to the regulation of his household, he would have kept his expendi- ture within bounds. Or, if he could not spare even a quarter of an hour a week for that purpose, he had numerous friends, excellent men of business, who would have becn proud to act as his stewards. One of those friends, the chief of a great commer- cial house in the city, made an attempt to put the establishment in Downing Street to rights, but in vain. He found that the waste of the servants' hall was almost fabulous. The quantity of butcher's meat charged in the bills was nine hundredweight a week, The consumption of poultry, of fish, of tea, was in propor- tion. The character of Pitt wonld have stood higher if with the disinterestedness of Pericles and of De Witt he had united their dignified frugality.

The memory of Pitt has been assailed, times innumerable, often Estim: justly, often unjustly ; but it has suffered much less from his of Pitt

assailants than from his eulogists. For, during inany years, his name was the rallying cry of a class of men with whom, at one of those terrible conjunctures which confound all ordinary distine- tions, he was accidentally

and temporarily connected, but to whom, on almost all great questions of principle, he was diametrically opposed. The haters of parliamentary reform called themselves Pittites, not choosing to remember that Pitt made three motions for parliamentary reform, and that, thongh he thought that such a reform could not safely be made while the passions excited by the French. Revolution were raging, he never uttered a word indicating that he should not be prepared at a more convenient season to bring the question forward a fourth time. The toast of Protestant ascendency was drunk on Pitt's birthday by a set of Pittites who could not but be aware that Pitt had resigned his office because he could not carry Catholic emancipation. The defenders of the Test Act called themselves Pittites, though they could not be ignorant that Pitt had laid before George ILI. un- answerable reasons for abolishing the Test Act. The enemies of free trade called themselves Pittites, though Pitt was far more deeply imbued with the doctrines of Adam Smith than either Fox or Grey. The very negro-drivers invoked the name of Pitt, whose eloquence was never more conspicuously displayed than when he spoke of the wrongs of the negro. This mythical Pitt, who resembles the genuine Pitt as little as the Charlemagne of Ariosto resembles the Charlemagne of Eginhard, has had his day. History will vindicate the real man from calumny disguised under the semblance of adulation, and will exhibit him as what he was—a minister of great talents, honest intentions, and liberal opinions, pre-eminently qualified, intellectually and morally, for the part of a parliamentary leader, and capable of administering with prudence and moderation the government of a prosperous and tranquil country, but unequal to surprising and terrible emergencies, and liable in snch emergencies to err grievously, both on the side of weakness and on the side of violence. (M.)

PITTA, in Ornithology, from the Telegu Pitta, meaning a small Bird, Latinized by Vieillot in 1816 (Analyse, p. 42) asthe name of a genus, and since adopted by English ornithologists as the general name for a group of Birds, called by the French Bréves, and remarkable for their great beauty.? Fora long while the Pittas were commonly supposed to be allied to the 7'urdidzx, and some English

2 In Ornithology the word is first found as part of the native name, * Pon-nunky pitta," of a Bird, given in 1713 by Petiver, in the ''Mantissa " to

Ray’s Synopsis (p, 195), on the authority of Buekley (see ORNITHOLOGY, Vol. xviii. p. 4, note 1). This bird is the Pitta bengalensis of modern ornithologists, and is said by Jerdon (Birds of India, i. p. 503) now to bear the Telegu name of Pona-inki.

;

J

writers applied to them the name of “ Water-Thrushes ” and “Ant-Thrushes,” though there was no evidence of their having aquatic habits or predilections, or of their preying especially upon ants; but the fact that they formed a separate Family was gradually admitted. Their position

was at last determined by Garrod, who, having obtained |

examples for dissection, in a communication to the Zoo- logical Society of London, printed in its Proceedings for 1876, proved (pp. 512, 513) that the Putedx belonged to that section of Passerine Birds which he named Mesomyodi (OrnirHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 41), since their syrinx, like that of the Tyrannide (KiNG-BIRD, vol. xiv. p. 80), has its muscles attached to the middle of its half-rings, instead of to their extremities as in the higher Passerines or Acromyodi. This in itself was an unexpected determina- tion, for such a structure had been thought to be confined

to Birds of the New World, to which none of the Pittas |

belong. But it is borne out by, and may even serve to explain, the sporadic distribution of the latter, which seems to point them out as survivors of a somewhat ancient and lower type of Passeres. Indeed except on some theory of this kind the distribution of the Pittas is almost unaccountable. They form a very homogeneous

Pitta elegans, male and female.

Family, not to say genus, which it is not easy to split-up justifiably, for all its members bear an unmistakable and close resemblance to each other—though the species inhabit countries so far apart as Angola and China, India and Australia; and, to judge from the little that has been recorded, they are all of terrestrial habit, while their power of flight, owing to their short wings, is feeble. Nearly fifty species have now been described, most of them found mn the Malay Archipelago, between the eastern and western divisions of which they are pretty equally divided ; and, in Mr Wallace's opinion,! they attain their maximum of beauty and variety in Borneo and Sumatra, from the latter of which islands comes the species, Petta elegans, represented in the accompanying woodcut. Few Birds can vie with the Pittas in brightly-contrasted coloration.

eep velvety black, pure white, and intensely vivid Scarlet, turquoise-blue and beryl-green—mostly occupying a considerable extent of surface —are found in a great many of the species,—to say nothing of other composite or inter- mediate hues ; and, though in some a modification of these tints is observable, there is scarcely a trace of any blend- Ing of shade, each patch of colour standing out distinctly.

ae Owing to recent discoveries in Papuasia it is possible that this Pinion may require some modification.

149

This is perhaps the more remarkable as the feathers have hardly any lustre to heighten the effect produced, and in some species the brightest colours are exhibited by the plumage of the lower parts of the body. Pittas vary in size from that of a Jay to that of a Lark, and generally have a strong bill, a thickset form, which is mounted on rather high legs with scutellated "tarsi," and a very short tail. In many of the forms there is little or no external difference between the sexes. All the species then known were figured in Mr Elliot's Monograph of the Pittide, com- pleted in 1863; but so many have since been described that this work but imperfectly represents the existing know- ledge of the Family, and even Schlegel's revised catalogue of the specimens contained in the Leyden Museum (Mus. des Pays Bas, livr. 11), published in 1874, is now out of date, so that a new synopsis is very

desirable. Many of the lately-discovered species have been figured in Gould's Birds of Asia and Birds of New Guinea.

Placed by some authorities among the Pittide is the genus Philepitta, consisting of two species peculiar to Madagascar, while other systematists would consider it to form a distinct Family. This last is the conclusion arrived at by W. A. Forbes (Proc. Zool Society, 1880, pp. 387- 391) from its syringeal characters, which, though shewing it to be allied to the Pittas, are yet sufficiently different to justify its separation as the type of a Family Philepittide, The two species which compose it have little outward resemblance to the Pittas, not having the same style of coloration and being apparently of more arboreal habits. The sexes differ greatly in plumage, and the males have the skin round the eyes bare of feathers and carunculated.

It may be advisable to remark that nomenclatorial purists, objecting to the names Pitta and Philepitta as "barbarous," call the former Coloburis and the latter Paictes. Brachyurus also has frequently been used for Pitta, but, having been previously applied in another sense, it is inadmissible. (A. N.)

PITTACUS of Mytilene in Lesbos, one of the seven sages of Greece, was born in 651 B.c. His father Hyrradius (or Caicus) was a Thracian, his mother was a Lesbian. About 611 B.c. Pittacus, along with the brothers of the poet Alczeus, overthrew Melanchrus, tyrant of Lesbos. In a war between the Mytilenians and Athenians for the possession of the town of Sigeum on the- Helle- spont, Pittacus, as general of the Mytilenians, slew the Athenian commander Phrynon in single combat, having entangled him in a net (606 B.c.). In 589 his fellow- citizens entrusted Pittacus with despotic power for the purpose of protecting them against the exiled nobles, at the head of whom were Alczeus and Antimenides. Pittacus effected this object, and, without introducing a new con- stitution, contrived by legislation to restore the existing constitution to regular working order. One of his laws enacted that offences committed during intoxication should be punished with double severity. For the historian of the law of inheritance some interest attaches to the enact- ment of Pittacus that father and mother should succeed, in equal shares, to the property of a deceased child. He resigned the government after holding it for ten years, and died ten years later (569 B.c.).

The stories which bring Pittacus and Creesus into connexion are probably mere legend, since Croesus was only twenty-five years of age at the date of Pittacus's death. Pittacus was regarded as a pattern of all the virtues, and this high character is borne out by what we know of him. When Alceus, who had bitterly assailed him in his poems, fell into his hands, he let him go, saying that forgiveness was better than revenge. Of the lands which his grateful countrymen would have bestowed on him he aecepted only a small part. Amongst the sayings attributed to him are these :— it is hard to be good ; rule reveals the man; the best rule is that of law; speak ill neither of friend nor foe. Pittacus was also a poet ; Diogenes Lacrtius states that he eomposed six hundred elegiae verses.

150

PITTSBURGH, the second largest city of Pennsylvania, and the leading iron, steel, and glass manufacturing centre of the United States, lies at the confluence of the Alle- gheny and the Monongahela, which unite here to form the Ohio, 250 miles west by north of Philadelphia. The business quarter of the city is built on a nearly level

triangular plain, between the two rivers, measuring about | tur | their fires by night, are of a unique and picturesque char-

three quarters of a mile on each side back to the hills which rise to the east.

The manufacturing establishments stretch for a distance of 7 miles up the Allegheny, 7 up the Monongahela, and 2 down the Ohio, and occupy the strip of low ground usually a few hundred feet broad between the river banks

and the hills which generally face them. The slope of | of engineering in iron.

the hills to the east of the business quarter is closely built with residences and retail stores for the distance of a mile and a half, but the summits, 400 or 500 feet high, are partially unoccupied. Beyond the hills extends a rolling country which, for a space of about 5 miles long by 2 wide is occupied by the villas of the citizens. The hills facing the rivers are generally

precipitous, and vary in height from 300 to 600 feet, but at different points they recede from the river banks and afford sites for the

fe egies THN

<

i) \

f eat ; Thy eke ae

pe 1a Les

LOR EEK oN A Il se I, Sok \ = 5 i A (nny j NY S \ WS AN ’ j cE USOT 4 2 S Sk SEY WL al & A\ S oD SG LA. < ‘ie ~ = =

— = ——

suburbs of Lawrenceville (on the Allegheny), Hazlewood, and Birmingham (on the north and south banks respec- tively of the Monongahela), which are within the muni- cipality of Pittsburgh, and (on the north bank of the Allegheny and Ohio) for the city of Allegheny, which, with its separate municipal government and population of 78,000 inhabitants, is commercially and socially a part of Pittsburgh. The two cities together cover an irregular space of 9 miles between the extreme eastern and western points, with a breadth varying from 2 to 4 miles.

From the character of its site Pittsburgh would natur- ally be very attractive, but the free use of the bituminous coal which has been the principal agent in its development has so spoiled its beauty as to give it the name of the Smoky City. Not only do the manufacturing quarters show long lines of smoke-stained buildings, but the busi- ness quarter, which is composed of rather narrow streets laid out early in the century, is mainly constructed of brick and iron, and in spite of the presence of some fine public buildings in granite and brown stone—the municipal hall, the petroleum exchange, the new United States post office and court-house (1884), the new county court-house (1884), &.—has a generally grimy and unattractive appearance.

PITTSBURGH

the city is obtained from a view of the suburban quarters of the East End and the parks and residence quarters of Allegheny. And, all disfigurement and dirtiness notwith- standing, it is full of interesting and striking sights. The interiors of its rolling-mills and glass-houses, and the views of the city from the surrounding hills, with the manufac- turing quarters marked out by their smoke by day and

acter. Along the rivers are fleets of steamers towing barges laden with coal for consumption at this point and for shipment to the cities lower down. Joining the various quarters of the city are ten bridges for ordinary traffic and four railway viaducts, among which the Point Bridge and the Smithfield Street Bridge are fine examples Six inclined-plane railways afford access to the summits of the high hills.

Pittsburgh is of historical interest from the struggle (1755-1758) for its possession between England and France in the Seven Years' War, and the fact that the public and military career of George Washington was commenced with those campaigns (see WASHING- Ton). With the termination of that struggle in the capture of the ruins of Fort Duquesne by the British, the history of the place

, becomes that of an ordinary frontier town, A new fort was erected

and named Fort Pitt in honour of the prime minister whose energy had urged the war forward to its capture, WSFA] and wrested the Ohio valley and Canada from \{ French control. After one or two Indian 7 wars, in which the post was threatened, and <4 on one occasion nearly taken, Fort Pitt lost yx) its military character and became a trading "aq town. 'The first streets were laid out near 4 the fort in 1764, and in 1769 the first survey of the unsettled lands in the vicinity was made for the proprietors, the heirs of William 4 Penn, under the name of the manor of Pitts- burgh. After the termination of the revolu- { | tion, the legislature of Pennsylvania ineor- Q porated Pittsburgh as a village on April 22, 4] 1794, and on March 18, 1816, its charter asa A city was granted. During the colonial period Z| a dispute arose between Virginia and Penn- sylvania as to the possession of the territory surrounding the town, and in the first few years of its history

under the United States it attracted attention from its proximity to the famous “ Whisky Insurrection ” of Western Pennsylvania. After it had attained a popu- lation of 30,000 it was visited on the 10th of _| April 1845 by a disastrous conflagration im which the buildings in the business centre, covering a space of 56 acres, and valued at $5,000,000 dollars, were consumed.

In the Pittsburgh of to-day there is little besides names of streets, hills, and suburbs to recall the struggle which decided the Anglo-Saxon character of the country. The locality known as the Point, where Fort Duquesne stood, is covered with thickly built factories and dingy tenements. Ina squalid and obscure court a portion of the wall of a blockhouse ereeted in 1763 by Colonel Boquet, one of the British commandants of Fort Pitt, still forms a part of a building, and on the wall of the staircase of Municipal Hall is a stone bearing the inscription with which that officer commemorated its erection. Immediately across the Monon- gahelaa range of precipitous hills some 500 feet high bears the names of Mount Washington and Duquesne Heights. On the first hill rising to the east of the level part of the city, a red granite court- house, to cost $2,000,000, is in process of construction near to the spot where Major Grant was defeated and slain, and the new build- ing will replace the brown stone structure which for many years fronted on the street bearing that unfortunate officer’s name. Twelve miles away, the suburb long known as Braddock’s Field and now as Braddock’s, attracts attention chiefly by the roar and glare of its great steel manufacturing establishment. ,

Deriving its early importance in commerce from its position at the head of the Ohio, which was until 1855 the principal route between the middle States and the west and south-west, Pittsburgh has since obtained its greatest growth from the coal which under- lies nearly all Western Pennsylvania. This has made the city and its immediate suburbs the most important manufacturing distriet in America, in both pig and bar iron, steel, glass, and copper. | 4 1883 Allegheny county produced 114 per cent. of the pig 1roD produced in the United States, and 21 per cent. of the rolled iron and steel. The iron industry consists of 16 blast furnaces, pro- ducing, in 1883, 592,475 tons; 32 rolling mills, producing 472,351

—_—— =

tons of finished iron ; and 91 other establishments, turning outa large variety of other manufactures of iron, from boilers to safes and steam pumps. The stcel industry comprises 20 large mills with an output for 1883 of 405,530 tons.

rolling-mills

The blast furnaces and | of Pittsburgh employ a capital of $23,910,000 and |

21,190 workmen, the steel industry $10,170,000 and 7060 work- |

men, Next in importance is the glass manufacture, in which 75 establishments are engaged, 24 making table ware, 24 window glass, 10 green glass bottles, and 9 lamp ehimneys. The capital ‘nvested in them is $5,985,000. They employ 6442 hands, and the value of their last reported annual production is $6,832,683. The coal and coke industry of the district, which is controlled mainly by Pittsburgh, comprises a capital of $26,406,500, employs 23,621 miners and other labourers, and makes an annual output of 7,720,090 tons of eoal and 2,760,000 tons of coke, valued at $16,600,000. The total of all the manufacturing industries of the city is 1380 establishments, with $105,401,481 of capital, employing 85,936 workmen of all kinds, and producing to the value of $149,721,619. trade]

important than its manufacturing industries, exceptions is confined to the immediate vicinity. firms with an aggregate capital of $11,206,000 and total sales of $125,390,472. Within the last year a new and unique industry has been developed. By drilling in the earth to a depth of 1200 to 2000 feet, what is practically the fire-damp of the coal mine is tapped in such quantity that it comes to the surface in great foree. It has been found to be useful as a fuel for all the purposes of coal except the smelting of ores in blast furnaces; and, as it is cheaper both for making steam and for the heating of the iron and glass furnaces, its adoption has been general among the manufacturers.

As the railway system has developed, the important boating interest of Pittsburgh has become confined to the transportation of coal from the Monongahela river mines to the down-river cities. The coal is only taken out when freshets have raised the river, and at that time fleets of steamers, each towing from eight to fifteen barges, covering acres in extent and carrying thousands of tons of coal, start down stream. The total steam tonnage of Pittsburgh is 36,845 tons with 163 vessels, but the addition of the barges brings the tonnage up to 1,359,972 and the number of vessels to 3208.

Pittsburgh is stated to be the origin of more railway freight than any other poiut in the country. There are a large number of lines, under the control of three great companies. The most important is the Pennsylvania Railroad, whose trunk lines pass through the eity, and number amoung their feeders the West Pennsylvania ; the Allegheny Valley ; the Pittsburgh, Virginia, and Charleston ; the Pittsburgh, Cincinnati, and St Louis; the Pittsburgh, Fort Wayne, and Chicago ; and the Cleveland and Pittsburgh Railroads. The Pittsburgh division of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad gives a connexion with that trunk line, and by the Pittsburgh and Western, and the Pittsburgh, Cleveland, and Toledo, reaches the Chieago branch of the same system to the west. The Pittsburgh and Lake Erie affords the New-York Central and the New York, Pennsylvania, and Ohio lines an access to Pittsburgh, while its extension under the name of the Pittsburgh, MacKeesport, and gee iegheny penctrates the coal and coke district to the south- east.

and with a few

In 1796, by the first accurate census on record, the population of Pittsburgh was 1395. By 1810 it had increased to 4968; by 1820 to 7248 ; by 1830 to 12,452; by 1840 to 21,115 ; by 1850 to 36,601; by 1860 to 49,221 ; by 1870 to 86,076. In 1874 the con- solidation of outlying boroughs made the population, according to the ceusus of 1870, 121,799 ; and in 1880 this had increased to 156,389. These figures do not comprise the population of Allegheny, which was 28,702 in 1860, 58,180 in 1870, and 78,682 in 1880. Including the manufacturing and residential suburbs, the total population by the census of 1880 was 274,160 ; and, with the arge extension of

manufacturing and building that has gone on since then, it was estimated in 1884 at 325,000.

The municipal governments of Pittsburgh and Allegheny are each composed of a mayor, controller, and treasurer, with city councils in two branches styled respectively select and cominon. These are elected by the people, and appoint other administrative officials to take charge of the police and fire departments, assessments, and ae works. The total assessed valuation of the city of Pitts- purgh for purposcs of taxation is $101,508,603, on which a revenue 8 collected tor all purposes of $2,777,405. Allegheny has an -— valuation of $40,707,858, and spends $650,000 annually.

ne total indebtedness of Pittsburgh is $14,497,800, of which nearly $10,000,000 was expended for water-works and _ street on. The debt of Allegheny is but $1,400,000.

a he school system of each city is governed by a central board of ae and ward boards, both elected by popular vote. The the sburgh system comprises a fine stone high sehool overlooking 93 ae and 52 ward schools, in which are 469 teachers and $550.0 Scholars, the approximate annual expenditure being

000. In the Allegheny system there are the high school

The wholesale trade of the city is much less |

It includes 90 |

| from 158 to 167 a.D.

Low

and 18 ward seliools, with 207 teachers, 9392 scholars, and an annual expenditure of about $200,000. The principal institutions established by public taxation are the Riverside State Peniten- tiary, completed in 1884 in the lower part of Allegheny; the Morganza Reform Sehool; the workhouse

at Claremont, on the Allegheny river; and the Pittsburgh, Allegheny, and County poorhouses.

The churches and chapels in Pittsburgh and Allegheny number 237: 57 are Roman Catholic, including 18 monastic and conventual establishments ; 58 represent the various branches of Presbyterian- ism; 89 are Methodist Episcopal, and 16 Protestant Episcopal. Among the leading examples of church architecture are St Paul's

| Cathedral (Roman Catholic), Trinity and St Peter's (Protestant

Episcopal), the First and Third Presbyterian and the German Lutheran churches in 'Pittsburgh, and the North Presbyterian in Allegheny. Private charity has established the West Penn. Hospital with a large branch for the treatment of the insane at Dixmont, the Homeopathic Hospital, the Mercy Hospital, the Pittsburgh Infirmary, the Free Dispensary, the North Side Hospi- tal, and St Francis Hospital ; and 18 asylums for orphans and the aged and infirm are maintained throughout the two cities. The collegiate institutions comprise the Western University, the Western Theological Seminary (Presbyterian), the United Presby- terian Seminary, the Catholic College, the Pennsylvania Female College, and the Pittsburgh Female College. (J. Hp)

PITTSFIELD, a borough and township of the United States, the shire town of Berkshire county, Massachusetts, lies at a height of from 1000 to 1200 feet above the sea on a plain between the Hoosacs on the east and the Taconics on the west. It is traversed by the headwaters of the Housatonic and Hoosac rivers, and derives its supply of drinking water from Lake Ashley, a romantic loch on the top of the Washington Hills, 7 miles to the south-east. As the northern terminus of the Housatonic Railroad, and a junction on the Boston and Albany and the Pittsfield and North Adams Railroads, it is an important centre of traffic. Most of the dwelling houses are built of wood. Among the public edifices are a court-house, in white marble ; the Berkshire Athenzeum, with a free library and reading-room ; the Roman Catholic church of St Joseph, in marble ; the Methodist church, a spacious edifice of brick ; the First Congregational church (rebuilt in 1853), for thirty years under the charge of Rev. John Todd, author of the Student's Manual ; and the Maplewood Institute for young ladies. The

Berkshire Medical Institute (1822 ceased to exist in 1869. There isa small park with a fine soldiers' monument (1872) in the heart of the town, as well as a larger park with a race-course in the eastern suburb. Cotton and woollen goods, silk, knit goods, shoes, and tacks are among the local manufactures. The population in 1860 was 8045; in 1870, 11,132; in 1880, 13,364. Pittsfield, which once formed part of the Indian domain of Pontoosuc, and for a time was known as Boston Plantation, was incorporated in 1761, and received its present name in honour of the earl of Chatham. Oliver W. Holmes long resided on a small farm two miles south of Pittsfield.

PITTSTON, a borough of the United States, in Luzerne county, Pennsylvania, on the east bank of the

| Susquehanna, just below the confluence of the Lackawanna,

105 miles north by west of Philadelphia. It is the centre of the Wyoming anthracite region and the seat of the Pennsylvania Coal Company's operations, contains knit- ting mills, planing mills, terra cotta works, a stove factory, lumber yards, &c., and commands four distinct railway lines. The population was 6760 in 1870 and 7472 in 1880. If West Pittston (a borough on the other side of the Susquehanna, with which Pittston communi- cates by two bridges) were included, the total would be

10,016.

PIUS I. Hardly anything is known with certainty respecting Pius IL, except that he was bishop of Rome He is said to have been born at Aquileia and to have been thie son of a certain Rufinus ; it is added that he suffered martyrdom, but, although

he is celebrated as a martyr in the breviary, there seems no other evidence for this assertion. PIUS II. (Enea Silvio Piccolomini, commonly known in literature as Adneas Sylvius), pope from 1458 to 1464, " whose character reflects almost every tendency of the age in which he lived," was born at Corsignano in the Sienese territory, October 18, 1405, of a noble but

decayed family. After studying at the universities of Siena and Florence, he settled in the former city asa teacher, but in 1431 accepted the post of secretary to Domenico Capranica, bishop of Fermo, then on his way to Basel to protest against the in- justice of the new pope Eugenius IV. in refusing him the cardinalate for which he had bcen designated by Martin V. Arriving at Basel after numerous adventures, he successively served Capranica and several other masters. In 1435 lie was sent by Cardinal Albergata, Eugenius's legate at the council, on a secret mission to Scotland, the object of which is variously related, even by himself. He visited England as well as Scotland, underwent many perils and vicissitudes in both countries, and has left a valuable account of each. Upon his return he sided actively with the council in its conflict with the pope, and, although still a layman, obtained a leading share in the direction of its affairs. But when in 1442 the council elected Amadeus, duke of Savoy, as an antipope under the name of Felix V., /Eneas, perceiving that the step was generally disapproved, found a pretext for withdrawing to the emperor Frederick III.'s court at Vienna. He was there crowned imperial poet laureate, and obtained the patronage of the emperor's chancellor, Kaspar Schlick, a love adventure of whose at Siena he celebrated in his romance, Lurialus and Lucretia. His character had hitherto been that of an easy man of the world, with no pretence to strictness in morals or consistency in politics. He now began to be more regular in the former respect, and in the latter adopted a decided line by making his peace with Rome. Being sent ona mission to Rome in 1445, with the ostensible object of inducing Eugenius to convoke a new council, he was absolved from ecclesiastical censures, and returned to Germany under an engagement to assist the pope. This he did most effectually by the diplomatic dexterity with which he smoothed away differences between the court of Rome and the German electors; and he had a leading part in the compromise by which, in 1447, the dying Eugenius accepted the reconciliation tendered by the German princes, and the council and the antipope were left without support. He had already taken orders, and one of the first acts of Eugenius's successor Nicholas V. was to make him bishop of Trieste. In 1450 he was sent ambassador by the emperor Frederick to negotiate his marriage with the Princess Leonora of Naples, which object he successfully achieved ; in 1451 he undertook a mission to Bohemia, and concluded a satisfactory arrange- ment with the Hussite chief George Podiebrad; in 1452 he accompanied Frederick to Rome, where the

emperor wedded Leonora and was crowned king of the Romans. In August 1455 Aineas again arrived in Rome on an embassy to proffer the obedience of Germany to the new pope, Calixtus III. He brought strong recommendations from the emperor and King Ladislaus of Hungary for his nomination to the cardinalate, but delays arose from the pope's resolution to promote his own nephews first, and he did not attain the object of his ambition until December in the following year. ere ae hee on August 6, 1458. On August 10 Hig ie ere into conclave. The wealthy cardinal » though a Frenchman and of exceptionable character, seemed certain to be elected. Auneas has told us In a passage of his own history of his times, long

*¥

retrenched from that work but printed clandcstinely in the Conclavi dé Pontifici Romani, by what art, energy, and eloquence he frustrated this false step. It seemed but meet that the election should fall upon himself: no other candidate appears to have been seriously thought of ; nor, although the sacred college probably included a few men of higher moral standard, had it any on the whole g0 worthy of the tiara. It was the peculiar faculty of Atneas to accommodate limself perfectly to whatever position he might be called upon to occupy; it was his peculiar good fortune that every step in life had placed him in circum. stances appealing more and more to the better part of his nature, an appeal to which he had never failed to respond, The party pamphleteer had been more respectable than the private secretary, the diplomatist than the pamphleteer, the cardinal than the diplomatist ; now the unscrupulous adventurer and licentious novelist of a few short years ago seated himself quite naturally in the chair of St Peter, and from the resources of his versatile character produced without apparent effort all the virtues and endowments becoming his exalted station. After allying himself with Ferdinand, the Aragonese claimant of the throne of Naples, his next important act was to convene a congress of the representatives of Christian princes at Mantua for joint action against the Turks. His long progress to the place of assembly resembled a triumphal procession; and the congress, a complete failure as regarded its ostensible object, at least showed that the impotence of Christendom was not owing to the pope. On his return from the con- gress Pius spent a considerable time in his native district of Siena,

and has described his delight and the charms of a country life in very pleasing language. He was recalled to Rome by the disturbances occasioned by Tiburzio de Maso, who was ultimately seized and executed. The papal states were at this time greatly troubled by rebellious barons and marauding condottieri, but these evils gradu- ally abated. The Neapolitan war was also terminated by the success of the pope's ally Ferdinand. In July 1461 Pius canonized St Catherine of Siena, and in October of the same year he gained what at first appeared to bea most brilliant success by inducing the new king of France, Louis XI., to abolish the pragmatic sanction, by which the pope's authority in France had been grievously impaired. But Louis had expected that Pius would in return espouse the French cause in Naples, and when he found himself disappointed he virtually re-established the pragmatic sane- tion by royal ordinances. Pius was also engaged in a serics of disputes with the Bohemian king and the count of Tyrol, and the crusade for which the congress of Mantua had been convoked made no progress. The pope did his best : he addressed an eloquent letter to the sultan urging him to become a Christian; he succeeded in reconciling the emperor and the king of Hungary, and derived great encouragement as well as pecuniary advantage from the discovery of mines of alum in the papal territory. But France was estranged ; the duke of Burgundy broke his positive promise ; Milan was engrossed with the attempt to seize Genoa ; Florence cynically advised the pope to let the Turks and the Venetians wear each other out. Pius was unawares nearing his end, and his malady probably prompted the feverish impatience with which on June 15, 1464, he assumed the cross and departed for Ancona to conduct the crusade in person. It secmed certain that the issue of such an enterprise could only be ridiculous ot disastrous. Pius II.'s good genius again stepped in, and rendered it pathetic. He was suffering from fever when he left Rome. The crusading army meltcd away at Ancona for want of transport, and when at last the Venetian fleet arrived the dying pope could only view it from a window. He expired two days afterwards, August

i? Pots

7

Pies

14, 1464, in his death as in his life a figure picturesque and significant far beyond the wont of Roman pontiffs. He was succeeded by Paul II.

Pius, indeed, regarded as a man and not merely as an historical personage, is the most interesting of all the successors of St Peter. It is easy to take his character to pieces, but the aroma of something exquisite lingers around every fragment. He had a healthy, sincere, loving nature, frank and naive even in his aberrations and defects, which seem after all sufficiently venial. The failings of other popes have most frequently been those of the priest, and therefore in the true sense of the term inhuman. It is a refreshing transition to the faults of the adventurer, the diplomatist, the man of letters and pleasure. The leading trait of Pius's character was his extreme impressionable- ness. Chameleon-like he took colour from surrounding cir- cumstances, and could always depend on being what these circumstances required him to be. As, therefore, his prospects widened and his responsibilities deepened, his character widened and deepened too; and he who had entered upon life a shifty adventurer quitted it a model chief shepherd. His virtues were not only great, but the most conspicuous were those especially characteristic of the finer natures. While he vied with any man in indus- try, prudence, wisdom, and courage, he excelled most men in simplicity of tastes, constancy of attachments, kindly playfulness, magnanimity, and mercy. As chief of the church he was able and sagacious, and showed that he comprehended the conditions on which its monopoly of spiritual power could for a season be maintained; his views were far-seeing and liberal ; and he was but slightly swayed by personal ends. He is especially interesting as the type of the scholar and publicist who wins his way by intellectual strength, foreshadowing the age to come when the pen should be mightier than the sword ; and no less as the figure in whom the medizval and the modern spirit are most distinctly seen to meetand blend, ere the latter definitively gains the mastery.

Pius was a versatile and voluminous author, one of the best and most industrious of his period. His most important work is his Commentaries of his own Times, published in 1584 under the name of Gobelinus, to whom it has been ascribed, but who was in fact only the copyist. It appears to have been altered to some slight extent by his secretary Campanus. Numerous passages suppressed at the time of publication have been recently published

in the 7rans- actions of the Accademia de’ Lincei by Signor Cugnone, together with other inedited works. Pius’s Commentarics are delightful reading, and their historical value is very great. “ Pius II.,” says Creighton, “ is the first writer who attempted to represent the present as it would look to posterity, who consciously applicd a Scientific conception of history to the explanation and arrange- ment of passing events.” His Zpistles, which were collected by himself, are also an important source of historical information. The most valuable of his minor historical writings are his histories of Bohemia and of the emperor Frederick III., the latter partly autobiographical. He sketched: geographical treatises on Europe and Asia, and in early and middle life produced numerous tracts

on the political and theological controversies of his day, as well as |

on ethical subjects. Pius was greatly admired as a poet by his eontemporaries, but his reputation in belles lettres rests princi- pally upon his Zurialus and Lucretia, which continues to be read to this day, partly from its truth to nature, and partly from the Singularity of an erotic novel being written by a pope. He also composed some comedies, one of which alone is extant, and as yet only in MS. All these works are in Latin. Pius was not an eminent scholar: his Latin is frequently incorrect, and he knew little Greek ; but his writings have high literary qualities, and will always be prized as vivid and accurate reproductions of the

_ Spirit of a very remarkable age.

Pe ea chief authorities for Pius’s life are sifted and condensed in the admir- ea by Voigt (3 vols., Berlin, 1856-63). Professor Creighton, in his We ry History of the Papacy during the Reformation (vol. ii., London, 1882), i ao the English reader the substance of Voigt’s narrative, while preserving lindependence of judgment. (R. G.

PIUS III. (Francesco Todeschini), pope from September

- to October 18, 1503, was born at Siena, May 9, 1439. $ the nephew of Pius IT. by his sister Laodamia, he was

received into favour by that pontiff, who permitted him to assume the name and arms of the Piccolomini, and raised him, when only twenty-two years of age, to the see of Siena and the cardinalate. He was employed by subsequent popes in several important legations, as by Paul IT. at the diet of Ratisbon, and by Sixtus IV. to secure the restoration of ecclesiastical authority in Umbria. Amid the disturbances consequent upon the death of Alexander VI. he was, by the not wholly disinterested influence of Cardinal Rovera, elected pope on September 22, 1503, his installation taking place on the 8th October following.

| He at once took in hand the reform of the papal court and

arrested Cesar Borgia; but after a brief pontificate of twenty-six days he died (October 18, 1503) of an ulcer in the leg, or, as some have alleged, of poison administered at the instigation of Pandolfo Petrucci, governor of Siena. He was succeeded by Julius II.

PIUS IV. (Giovanni Angelo Medici), pope from 1559 to 1565, was born of humble parentage at Milan, March 31, 1499. His early career connects itself in some

| measure with the romantic rise of his elder brother from

the position of bravo to that of Marchese di Marignano. After studying at Bologna and acquiring reputation as a

| jurist, he went in 1527 to Rome, and as the favourite of

Paul III. was rapidly promoted to the governorship of several towns, the archbishopric of Ragusa, the vice- legateship of Bologna, and in April 1549 to the cardinal- ate. On the death of Paul IV. he was elected pope on December 28, 1559, and installed on the 6th January 1560. His first public acts of importance were to grant a general pardon to the participators in the riot which had closed the previous pontificate, and to bring to trial the nephews of his predecessor, of whom Cardinal Carlo Caraffa was strangled, and the duke Paliano, with his nearest connexions, beheaded. On the 18th January 1562 the council of Trent, which had been suspended by Julius III., was opened for the third time. Great skill and caution were necessary to

effect a settlement of the ques- tions before it, inasmuch as the three principal nations taking part in it, though at issue with regard to their own special demands, were prepared to unite their forces against the demands of Rome. Pius, however, aided by Morone and Borromeo, proved himself equal to the emer- gency, and by judicious management and concession brought the council to a termination satisfactory to the disputants and favourable to the pontifical authority. Its definitions and decrees were confirmed by a bull dated January 26, 1564; and, though they were received with certain limitations by France and Spain, the famous Creed of Pius IV., or Tridentine Creed, remained the authorita- tive expression of the Catholic faith. The more marked manifestations of stringency during his pontificate appear to have been prompted rather than spontaneous, his personal character inclining him to moderation and ease. Thus a monitory, issued in 1564, summoning the queen of Navarre before the Inquisition on a charge of Calvinism, was withdrawn by him in deference to the indignant pro- test of Charles IX. ; and in the same year he published a bull granting the use of the cup to the laity of Austria and Bohemia. One of his strongest passions appears to have been that of building, which somewhat strained his resources in contributing to the adornment of Rome, and in carrying on the work of restoration, erection, and forti- fication in various parts of the ecclesiastical states. A conspiracy against him, headed by the Catholic fanatic Benedetto Accolti, was discovered and crushed in 1565. He died shortly afterwards, on December 9th of that year, and was succeeded by Pius V.

PIUS V. (Michele Ghislieri), pope from 1566. to 1572,

| was born at Bosco in the duchy of Milan, January 17,

XIX, —

20

154

1504. At the age of fourteen he entered the Dominican order, passing from the monastery of Voghera to that of Vigevano, and thence to Bologna. Having been ordained priest at Genoa in 1528, he settled at Pavia, where he

lectured for sixteen years. He soon gave evidence of the opinions which found a more practical expression in his pontificate, by advancing at Parma thirty propositions In support of the papal chair and against the heresies of the time. As president of more than one Dominican monast- ery he proved himself a rigid disciplinarian, and, in accordance with his own wish to discharge the office of inquisitor, received an appointment to that post at Como. His zeal provoking resentment, he was compelled in 1550 to return to Rome, where, after having been employed in several inquisitorial missions, he was elected to the com- missariat of the Holy Office. Paul IV., who while still Cardinal Caraffa had shown him special favour, conferred upon him the bishopric of Sutri and Nepi, the cardinalate with the title of Alessandrino, and the honour—unique in one not of pontifical rank—of the supreme inquisitorship. Under Pius IV. he became bishop of Mondovi in Pied- mont, but his opposition to that pontiff procured his dismissal from the palace and the abridgment of his authority as inquisitor.

Before Ghislieri could return to his episcopate, Pius IV. died, and on January 7, 1566, he was elected to the papal chair with duly attendant prodigies, his coronation taking place on his birthday, ten days later. Fully alive to the necessity of restoring discipline and morality at Rome to ensure success without, he at once proceeded to reduce the cost of the papal court, compel residence, regulate inns, expel prostitutes, and assert the importance of ceremonial. In his wider policy, which was characterized throughout by a stringency which tended to defeat its own ends, the maintenance and increase of the efficacy of the Inquisition and the enforcement of the canons and decrees of the Tridentine council had precedence over all other considera- tions. The prudence of Commendone alone saved him at the commencement of his pontificate from trouble with Germany, as in the general diet of the empire at Augsburg (March 26, 1566) Pius saw a threatened invasion of his own supremacy and was desirous of limiting its discussions. In France, where his influence was stronger, he directed the dismissal of Cardinal Odet ~de Coligny and seven bishops, nullified the royal edict tolerating the extra-mtral services of the Reformers, introduced the Roman catechism, restored papal discipline, and strenuously opposed all com- promise with the heretics—his exertions leading up in no small degree to the massacre of St Bartholomew. In the list of more important bulls issued by him the famous bull “In Coena Domini” (1568) takes a leading

place; but amongst others throwing light on his character and policy there may be mentioned his prohibition of questuary (February 1567 and January 1570); the condemnation of Michael Baius, the heretical professor of Louvain (1567); the reform of the breviary (July 1568) ; the denunciation of the dirwm nefas (August 1568) ; the banishment of the Jews from the ecclesiastical dominions except Rome and Ancona (1569) ; the injunction of the use of the reformed missal (July 1570); the confirmation of the privileges of the Society of Crusaders for the protection of the Inquisi- tion (October 1570); the prohibition of discussions con- cerning the miraculous conception (November 1570) ; the suppression of the Fratres Humiliati for alleged profligacy (February l 57 1); the approbation of the new office of the Blessed Virgin (March 1571); the enforcement of the daily recitation of the canonical hours (September 1571) ; and the purchase of assistance against the Turks by offers ee pardon (March 1572). His antagonism to

eth was shown, not only in the countenance lent by

PIUS

him to Mary Stuart and those who sought in her name to

deliver England “ex turpissima muliebris libidinis seryi-

tute,” but in the publication of a bull, dated April 27, 1570, excommunicating Elizabeth and releasing her sub- jects from their allegiance. His energy was in no respect more favourably exhibited than in his persistent and suc- cessful endeavours to form a general league against the Turks, as the result of which the battle of Lepanto (Oct. 7, 1571) was won by the combined fleet under Colonna, Three national synods were held during his pontificate— at Naples under Cardinal Alfonso Caraffa (whose family had, after inquiry, been reinstated by Pius V.), at Milan under Carlo Borromeo, and at Mechlin. His death took place on May 1, 1572, and he was canonized by Clement XI. on May 24th 1712. He was succeeded by Gregory XEIL

PIUS VI. (Giovanni Angelo Braschi), pope from 1775 to 1799, was born at Cesena, December 27, 1717. After taking the degree of doctor of laws in 1735, he went to Ferrara and became the private secretary of Cardinal

Ruffo, in whose bishopric of Ostia and Velletri he held the post of udetore until 1753. His skill in the conduct ofa mission to the court of Naples won him the esteem of Benedict XIV. who appointed him one of his secretaries and canon of St Peter's. In 1758 he was raised to the prelature and then to the treasurership of the apostolic chamber by Clement XIII., whose successor, Clement XIV. created him cardinal on the 26th April 1773. On the death of Clement XIV. and after protracted debate, Braschi was elected to the vacant see on the 15th February 1775. His assumption of the title Pius VI. even then recalled to the populace the verse current in the pontificate of Alexander VI. "Semper sub Sextis perdita Roma fuit," though his earlier acts gave fair promise of liberal rule and reform in the defective administration of the papal states. He showed discrimination in his benevolences, reprimanded Potenziani, the governor of Rome, for unsuppressed dis- orders, appointed a council of cardinals to remedy the state of the finances and relieve the pressure of imposts, called to account Nicolo Bischi for the expenditure of moneys intended for the purchase of grain, reduced the annual disbursements by the suppression of several pen- sions, and adopted a system of bounties for the encourage- ment of agriculture. The circumstances of his election, however, involved him in difficulties from the outset of his pontificate. He had received the support of the ministers of the crowns and the anti-Jesuit party upon a

tacit understanding that he would continue the action of

Clement, by whose brief Dominus ac Redemptor (1773) the dissolution of the Society of Jesus had been pronounced. On the other hand the zelanti, who believed him secretly inclined towards Jesuitism, expected from him some reparation for the alleged wrongs of the previous reign. As the result of these complications, Pius was betrayed into a series of half measures which gave little satisfaction to either party. The case of Ricci and the other Jesuits imprisoned in the castle of St Angelo had scarcely been settled, by formal discountenance but informal relaxations and final release, before the question became an inter- national one. Driven from devout Catholic countries, the members of the condemned society found an asylum under the rule of the heretic Frederick II. and the schismatic Catherine IL, who welcomed them upon educational grounds. A long correspondence ensued in which both monarchs maintained their right, Catherine carrying the

matter still further and wresting from Pius a series of important concessions. Even in countries acknowledging the papal authority practical protests arose which tended to its limitation. In Austria the social and ecclesiast cal reforms undertaken by Joseph II. and his minister

| } j

ree >

Kaunitz touched the supremacy of Rome so nearly that in the hope of staying them Pius adopted the exceptional course of visiting Vienna in person. He left Rome on the 27th February 1782, and was magnificently received by the emperor, but his mission was unattended by any marked success. In Naples difficulties necessitating cer- tain concessions in respect of feudal homage were raised by the minister Tannucci, and more serious disagreements arose with Leopold I. and Ricci, bishop of Pistoia and Prato, upon questions of reform in Tuscany. The outbreak of the French Revolution followed, and Pius in vain endeavoured to preserve the ecclesiastical discipline and property. The old Gallican Church was suppressed ; the pontifical and ecclesiastical possessions in France were confiscated ; and an effigy of himself was burnt by the populace at the Palais Royal. ‘The murder of the Re- publican agent, Hugo Basseville, in the streets of Rome (January 1793) gave new ground of offence ; the papal court was charged with complicity by the French Conven- tion; and Pius threw in his lot with the league against France. In 1796 Napoleon invaded Italy, defeated the papal troops, and occupied Ancona and Loreto. Pius sued for peace, which was granted at Tolentino on the 19th February 1797 ; but on the 28th December of that year, in ariot created by some Italian and French revolution- ists, General Duphot of the French embassy was killed and anew pretext furnished for invasion. General Berthier marched to Rome, entered it unopposed on February 10, 1798, and, proclaiming it a republic, demanded of the pope the renunciation of his temporal authority. Upon his refusal he was taken prisoner, and on February 20th was escorted from the Vatican to Siena, and thence from place to place—in succession to Florence, Parma, Piacenza, Turin, Grenoble, and Valence, where he died six weeks later, on the night of the 28th August 1799. Pius VIL. succeeded him,

The name of Pius VI. is associated with many and often un- popular attempts to revive the splendour of Leo X. in the promo- tion of art and public works,—the words “Munificentia Pii VI. P.M.,” graven in all parts of the city, giving rise amongst his impoverished subjects to such satire as the insertion of a minute loaf in the hands of Pasquin with that inscription beneath it. He is best remembered in connexion with the establishment of the museum of the Vatican, commenced at his suggestion by his predecessor, and with the attempt to drain the Pontine Marshes. In the latter undertaking large sums were expended to such small purpose that the phrase “Sono andate alle paludi Pontine ” passed into a proverb applied to funds employed in extravagant projects. The chief result was the restoration of the Appian Way by the removal of the additions of Trajan and Theodoric with later

PIUS VII. (Gregorio Luigi Barnaba Chiaramonti), pope from 1800 to 1823, was born at Cesena on August 14, 1742. After studying at Ravenna, he entered the Benedictine Inonastery of St Mary in his native town, but was almost immediately sent by his superiors to Padua and to Rome for a further course of studies in theology. He then held various teaching appointments in the colleges of his order at Parma and at Rome. He was created an abbot of his order by Pius VI., who appointed him bishop of Tivoli on the 16th December 1782, and on February 14, 1785, raised him to the cardinalate and the see of Imola. At the death of Pius VI. the conclave met at Venice on the Ist December 1799, with the result that Chiaramonti was declared his successor on March 14, 1800, and crowned on the 21st of that month. In the following July he entered Rome, appointed Cardinal Consalvi secretary of State, and busied himself with administrative reforms. His attention was at once directed to the ecclesiastical anarchy of France, where, apart from the broad schism on the question of submission to the republican constitu- hon, discipline had been so far neglected that a large pro-

portion of the churches were closed, dioceses existed with- out bishops or with more than one, Jansenism and marriage had crept into the ranks of the clergy, and indifference or hostility widely prevailed amongst the people. Encouraged by the intimation through Cardinal Martiniana of Napoleon’s

desire for the re-establishment of the Catholic religion in France, Pius appointed Caselli and Archbishop Spina to arrange a concordat with three nomi- nees of Napoleon—Joseph Bonaparte, Cretet, and the Vendean priest Bernier. Difficulties having arisen, the aid of Consalvi was called in, and the concordat, signed at Paris on July 15th, was ratified by Pius on the 14th August 1801. Its value, however, from the pontifical point of view was considerably lessened by the “Articles Organiques” appended to it by the French Government on the 8th April 1802. In 1804 Napoleon opened negotiations to secure at the pope’s hands his formal con- secration as emperor. After some hesitation Pius was induced to perform the ceremony at Notre Dame and to extend his visit to Paris for four months. He returned to Rome on the 16th May 1805 with many expressions of good will; butin the October following the French troops, in evacuating the kingdom of Naples, suddenly occupied Ancona upon the alleged necessity of protecting the Holy See. Resistance by force was out of the question, but to a requisition from the emperor that all Sardinians, English, Russians, and Swedes should be expelled from the ponti- fical states, and that vessels of all nations at war with France should be excluded from his ports, Pius replied by asserting the independence and neutrality of his realm. After negotiations had dragged on for two years, in the course of which the French occupied the chief Adriatic ports, Civita) Vecchia was seized and the papal troops placed under French officers. On the 2d February 1808 Rome itself was occupied by General Miollis; a month later the provinces of Ancona, Macerata, Fermo, and Urbino were united to the kingdom of Italy, and diploma- tic relations between Napoleon and Rome were broken off ; finally, by a decree issued from Vienna on May 17, 1809, the emperor declared the papal states reunited to France by resumption of the grant of Charlemagne. Pius retali- ated by a bull, drawn up by Fontana and dated June 10, 1809, excommunicating the invaders; and, to prevent insurrection, Miollis—ejther on his own responsibility, as Napoleon afterwards asserted, or by order of the latter— employed General Radet to take possession of the pope’s person, The palace on the Quirinal was broken open during the night of July 5th, and, on the persistent refusal of Pius to renounce his temporal authority, he was carried off, first to Grenoble, thence after an interval to Savona, and in June 1812 to Fontainebleau. There he was induced, on the 25th January 1813, to sign a new concordat, which was published as an imperial decree on the 13th February. On conference with the cardinals,

however, Pius withdrew his concessions and proposed a concordat upon a new basis. At first no attention was paid to this, and, when after the French armies were driven from Germany Napoleon endeavoured to purchase a new concordat by offering to restore the papal possessions south of the Apennines, Pius refused to treat with him from any place other than Rome. The order for his departure thither reached him on the 22d January 1814, and after a brief delay at Cesena he entered Rome on the 24th May 1814. With his states restored to him by the congress of Vienna and freed from the Napoleonic terror, he devoted the remainder of his life to social and ecclesiastic reform in accordance with the modern spirit, suppressing many of the feudal survivals, abolishing torture, reconstituting civil and judicial procedure, and giving effect to many beneficial changes introduced by the French. His long and in many

respects admirable pontificate of more than twenty-three |

years' duration was brought to a close by an accident. His thigh having been broken by a fall in July 1823, acute inflammation supervened, and he died on the 20th August in that year. His successor was Leo XII.

PIUS VILL (Francesco Xaviero Castiglioni), pope, was born at Cingoli near Ancona on November 20, TAGE. After having been appointed bishop of Montalto in 1800, cardinal and bishop of Cesena in 1816, and bishop of Frascati in 1821, he was in 1829 declared successor of Leo XII. His unimportant pontificate was of little more than sufficient duration to enable him to give expression to convictions largely characterized by narrowness and intolerance in his choice of Cardinal Albani as head of affairs, and in his encyclical letter against the liberty of the press, civil marriage, and similar impious institutions. His death took place at Rome on the 30th November 1830. He was succeeded by Gregory XVI.

PIUS IX. (Giovanni Maria Mastai Ferretti), pope from 1846 to 1878, was born 13th May 1792 at Sinigaglia, near Ancona, the fourth son of Count Jerome and the Countess Catherine Vollazi of the same place. The family of Mastai is of ancient descent, and its representatives have frequently filled the office of mayor in Sinigaglia. The title of count was first given to its

head by Prince Farnese, duke of Parma, towards the close of the 17th century. Somewhat later the elder branch, having become allied by marriage with the last representative of the family of Ferretti, assumed its second name. From the age of eleven to sixteen Giovanni received his education at the college of Piarists at Volterra, in Tuscany ; a liability to epileptic fits precluded, however, much application to study. On one occasion, when thus attacked, he fell into a lake and was only saved from drowning by the intervention of a herdsman who observed the occurrence. A handsome lad, with a certain charm of expression and demeanour which characterized him throughout his life, he frequently attracted the attention of visitors to the college. On leaving Volterra, he conceived an attachment for a lady (afterwards a duchess), and the non-requital of his passion is said to have been a main cause of his resolu- tion toenter the church. In 1818 he was invited to accom- pany Monsignor Odescalchi, a prelate attached to the ponti- fical court, ona visitation tour in his native province. On returning to Rome, he was encouraged by Pius VII. to persevere in his design of entering the church, was admit- ted (18th December 1818) to deacon's orders, and cele- brated his first mass at the church of S. Maria del Falignani on Easter Sunday 1819. His benevolent dis- position had led him about this time to interest himself in an orphanage, familiarly known by the name of " Tata Giovanni," and he was now appointed by Pius to preside over the establishment, and continued to fill the post for five years. In 1823 he accompanied the apostolic delegate, Monsignor Muzi, to the republic of Chili, and remained at Santiago for two years, actively engaged in missionary labours. In 1825 he returned to Rome, was made a canon of 8. Maria in the Via Lata, and appointed to preside over the hospice of San Michele,—a vast charitable insti- tution for destitute children. Here he remained somewhat less than two years, being promoted 21st May 1827, by Leo XIL, to the archbishopric of Spoleto. His residence in that city was marked by many acts of benevolence, and especially by the foundation of a large orphanage where poor children were maintained and educated and also taught some mechanical art. Here, as at Rome, his genuine kindliness and conciliatory disposition made him deservedly popular, but his defects were also not less apparent. He had allowed the hospice to become financi- ally embarrassed, and after succeeding to the episcopal

reUus

office showed himself incapable of duly regulating his own expenditure.

During the insurrectionary movements which followed upon the election of Gregory XVI. to the papal chair, headed by Menotti and the two Napoleons —Charles Louis (afterwards emperor of the French) and his brother— Archbishop Mastai did his best to protect the insurgents, He disapproved of the reactionary policy of the new pope, and strongly resented the oppressive rule of the Austrians, When Napoleon (against whom sentence of death had been pronounced) fled to Spoleto, the archbishop, to whom he applied for help, obtained for him the services of an officer who conducted him beyond the frontier to a place of safety. In the following year (1832) he was translated to the bishopric of Imola, and a few years later was elected a cardinal, being reserved im petto in the consistory of 23d December 1839, and proclaimed cardinal 14th December 1840. It was not until overcome by the persuasion of others that Gregory XVI. consented to bestow this dignity on his future successor. He is said to have expressed his conviction that Mastai's liberal tendencies and impulsive disposition unfitted him for power, and that if he should ever become pope he would be the ruin of the church, During the tenure of his bishopric at Imola, Mastai gained additional reputation by the foundation of various philan- thropic institutions and marked simplicity of life.

On the death of Gregory XVI., he repaired to Rome, and on the evening of 16th June 1846 was elected to the papal chair as Pius IX., having chosen this name out of respect for his predecessor in the see of Imola, Pius VIL His election, at the final scrutiny, proved to be unanimous, the cardinals Patrizzi and De Angelis throwing all their influence in his favour. On the following morning, when it was too late, the Austrian ambassador received instruc- tions from his Government to veto the new pope's elec- tion.

Pius's first act in his new capacity was to proclaim a general amnesty for political offences, whereby thousands of unhappy beings who had dragged out weary years in prison or in exile, ignorant, many of them, even of the offences with which they were charged, were restored to society. With genuine catholicity of feeling he visited and relieved even the poor Jewish population in the city. He authorized the construction of railways, organized a civil guard, and considerably modified the restrictions on the press. In

order to develop further reforms he instituted a commission largely composed of laymen; and in 1847 he brought forward his scheme of a Consulta, or council of state, designed to assist him in the general temporal government. But, notwithstanding these concessions, the supreme power remained in the hands of ecclesiastics, and no measure passed by the council could acquire validity until it had been examined and approved in a conclave of cardinals) Hence, although both Mazzinr (g.v.) and Garibaldi were among his avowed supporters, the liberal party were still far from satisfied. His policy was regarded, on the one hand, with extreme dissatisfaction by Austria, and on the 17th July 1847 that power sent a force of 1500 men into Ferrara, where she was entitled by the treaty of 1815 to maintain a garrison. To this direct nienace Pius replied by counter demonstrations and an indignant protest, but hostilities were ultimately averted. His policy was viewed with not less dislike at the court of Naples, but by the rest of Italy and throughout Europe he was at this time regarded as the champion of the national rights of his countrymen. Such was the posture of affairs when the revolution in Paris (February 1848) fanned into flames the already smouldering elements of insurrection throughout Europe. The Austrians were driven out of Milan; a republic was proclaimed in Venice

EUUsS

(see Irany, vol. xili. pp. 488-89); and a “free Italy” became the general cry. At first Pius, who felt but little sympathy with the views represented by the son of Philippe Egalité, seemed disposed to head the movement. He dismissed his state-secretary, Gizzi, an irresolute and timorous politician, and appointed Cardinal Ferretti in his place. On 14th March 1848 appeared the Statuto Londa- mentale, 2 more complete scheme for the reorganization of the temporal government of the papal states. By this two deliberative assemblies were created,—the first, the high council, the members of which were to be nominated by the pope himself for life ; the second, the council of depu- ties, to be elected by the people, and to be entrusted with the chief voice in all questions relating to taxation. Over both these bodies, hovrever, the college of cardinals retained the supreme authority ; without its consent no measure could acquire legal validity. Liberty of the press was promised, but the ecclesiastical censorship was to be retained. A new ministry was

formed, which, with two exceptions (Antonelli and Morichini), was composed of laymen. But at this juncture Pius began to waver. Although he had hitherto shown no sympathy with the Jesuits, he endeavoured to protect them against the measures now brought forward with a view to their expul- sion, and when his general, Durando, crossed the Po with- out his orders, and denounced the Austrians as " the enemies of the cross of Christ," he disowned, in an allocu- tion (29th April), all intention of participating in an offen- sive war for the purpose of rectifying the boundaries of Italy, and at the same time disavowed all complicity in the schemes then in agitation for creating an Italian federal republic, with himself as the nominal head. This apparent desertion of the national cause, at a time when the public mind had been roused to the highest pitch of excitement by the course of events at other centres, created an irreparable breach between Pius and the people. His new chief minister, Mamiani, who wished to see him a constitutional monarch, advocated further concessions— the handing over of the political government to the new assemblies and a responsible ministry. But after the Austrian successes in the north and Radetsky's entry into Milan (5th August), Mamiani was dismissed, and his place was filled by Count Rossi, the French ambassador, a states- man of signal ability and intrepid character, but of conser- vative views. On the 15th November 1848, as Rossi was alighting at the steps of the house of assembly, he was assassinated in broad daylight. It was an ominous symptom of the prevailing temper of the capital that this atrocious act elicited no expression of disapproval in the assembly, and drew forth no marks of sympathy with the victim's family. Two days later a numerous mob, largely composed of disbanded soldiers, assembled in the square of the Quirinal, and' proffered fresh demands, at the same time intimating their intention, if these were not conceded, of commencing a general massacre of the inmates, excepting only the pope himself. After his secretary, Palma, had been shot by a bullet, Pius, in order to avert further bloodshed, made the requisite concessions, and assented to the formation of a new ministry, while he him- self was made a virtual prisoner. On the 24th November he effected his escape, with the connivance of the French Government, to Gaeta, disguised as a dependant of Count Spaur, the Bavarian minister. Thus terminated what has been described as "the first and only attempt of a pope to govern in a liberal spirit."

_ From Gaeta he published a formal protest against the to which he had been subjected, and whereby his atest enactments had been extorted from him, at the a time declaring all measures decreed in Rome during

S$ absence null and void. Gioberti, the Sardinian

IX 157

minister, endeavoured without success to gain his concur- rence in a new scheme for the formation of an Italian federation of princes. In the following February it was resolved in a consistory of cardinals to appeal to the chief Catholic powers (France, Austria, Spain, and Naples) for their aid in bringing about the re-establishment of the temporal sovereignty. About the same time (3d February 1849), as if to mark his undisturbed sense of his spiritual supremacy, Pius himself addressed an encyclic to the superior Catholic clergy throughout the world, enjoining that on appointed days of the year the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception B: V.M. should be preached through- out their dioceses. The decisive defeat of the Sardinian forces at Novara by Radetsky (23d March 1849) encouraged the papal party now to demand that Pius should be rein- stated at Rome without any conditions being attached to his restoration. This demand created a divergence of opinion among the above-named powers; eventually General Oudinot landed at Civita Vecchia with 10,000 French soldiers, and De Tocqueville, the French minister for foreign affairs, sought to induce Pius to resume his sovereignty on the basis of the Statuto Fondamentale. This he resolutely refused to do, and after the occupation of Rome by Oudinot’s forces he was permitted to return (12th April 1850) unfettered by any condition whatever. Pius returned an altered man in relation to his state policy, in which, in fact, he was from this time guided almost entirely by Antonelli. A certain profession of a design to reform abuses was indeed made, but the former ecclesiastical ascendency in the government was re-estab- lished, while the pope entered into the closest relations with the Jesuit party. Notwithstanding his specious dis- claimers of any desire to take revenge for the past, the Documenti Oficiali, published in 1860, prove that little mercy was shown to those who were suspected of disaffec- tion. As, however, the continuance of the French occupa- tion relieved him from any anxiety with respect to the maintenance of order, Pius was enabled to

devote his attention chiefly to the objects which undoubtedly lay nearest to his heart,—the more complete definition of Roman dogma and the enhancement of the prerogatives of his office. In this direction his views had never been characterized by any liberality, as is sufficiently shown by his encyclic of 9th November 1846, his letter to the arch- bishop of Cologne (3d July 1847), and his allocution of 17th December 1847, in which all the modern tendencies to a more philosophic interpretation of doctrine are visited with unqualified condemnation. He now proceeded skilfully to avail himself of the reaction that began to set in, especially in Germany and in England, after the repression of the revolutionary movements, by taking, as the burden of his allocutions, the essential connexion between political innovation and freedom of scientific or religious thought. The activity of the Jesuits was studiously encouraged ; the " beatification " of several eminent deceased members of their order was proclaimed ; and lives of the saints, full of marvellous and legendary incidents, were widely circulated among the poorer laity. A combination of circumstances, at this period, largely contributed to the success of these efforts both in Europe and in America. By the bull "Tneffabilis Deus" (8th December 1854) the doctrine of the immaculate conception was formally "defined," as a dogma binding on the acceptance of all the faithful, and in pamphlets favourable to the assumptions of the curia it was pointed out that the supreme pontiff had . thus defined the doctrine without recourse to any council. In 1862 the canonization of six hundred and twenty mission- aries, who had met with martyrdom in Japan some two centuries and a half before, was made the occasion of an imposing ceremonial. Ina letter (11th December 1862) to

the archbishop of Munich, the teaching of Frohschammer, a distinguished professor of philosophy in the university in that city, was singled out for severe reprobation. — The famous encylic Quanta cura, and the Syllabus, or list of prevalent errors calling for especial reprobation, appeared in December 1864.

The war between France and Austria and the treaty of Villafranca (8th July 1859; see Iraty, vol. xii. p. 490) seemed at one time likely to result in placing the temporal power on a basis somewhat resembling that indicated

in Gioberti's pamphlet of 1843, and the ultramontane party waited with lively expectation the assembling of the congress. Among the inhabitants of the Romagna them- selves, however, discontent with the political administra- tion was intense. The papal rule had become almost as oppressive as that at Naples; and the prisons of Rome were filled with inmates against whom no more definite charge could be brought than that of suspected disaffection towards the Government. The manner in which the currency had been tampered with was alone sufficient to produce the gravest discontent, and the lira papalina was eventually accepted at the money-changers' only at a heavy loss to the holder. When, in the spring of 1857, Pius visited central Italy, it was observed that, while in other provinces he was greeted with enthusiasm as the pope, in his own dominions he was received with sullen coldness. A pamphlet published at Paris in December 1859 (ascribed to imperial inspiration), after describing the condition of the Romagna, openly raised the question of the continuance of the temporal power, and suggested that it would at least be desirable that it should be restricted to the capital itself. Pius replied in an encylic issued on the 19th of the ensuing January—a document since widely known as his Von Possumus. His obstinacy proved of no avail. The Romagna was occupied by Sardinia, and the Central-Italian states shortly afterwards formed themselves into a league to prevent its reoccupa- tion by the pontifical forces. Antonelli rejoined by raising a motley force, composed of French, Belgians, Bavarians, and Irish, who were placed under the command of Lamori- ciére, an able French odficer who had seen active service in Algiers. There can be no doubt that, in making this apparently hopeless effort, the curia was deluded by the belief that, if matters proceeded to extremities, France would intervene in its behalf. After a stubborn resistance at Ancona, the superior forces of Sardinia prevailed, and in September 1860 the whole of the States of the Church, with the exception of the patrimonium Petri(see PopEDoM), were annexed to the kingdom of Victor Emmanuel.

From the reduction of Ancona to the year 1870 Pius was maintained in Rome only by a French garrison. The emperor of the French was reluctant to appear altogether to desert the papal cause, while Cavour was unwilling, in like manner, to proceed to extremities. After the capture of Garibaldi at Aspromonte, however, Victor Emmanuel felt himself strong enough to put

in a formal claim for Rome; and it was eventually arranged, by the convention of 15th September 1864, that the French should withdraw from the city before the end of 1866. This stipulation was duly observed, and on the 11th December 1866 the last of the French forces quitted the capital. The engagement was, however, virtually violated by the entry, in the following year, of the Antibes legion, and for some time longer the French soldiery continued to ward off both the daring assaults of Garibaldi and the more insidious approaches of Ratazzi, In this manner, at the outbreak of the war of 1870, France had come again to be looked upon as the ally of the papacy; and the overweening claims put forward by Pius in convening a general council to proclaim the dogma of Papal Infallibility were generally

interpreted as in a certain sense correlative with the aggressive designs of France on Protestant Germany. The dogma was decreed in the Vatican on the 18th July, but not without strenuous opposition on the part of some of the most distinguished members of the Catholic episcopal order, who, at the same time, were staunch supporters of the temporal power (see OLD CaTuotics). At nearly the same time the occupation by the French came definitively to an end. ‘Their forces were withdrawn from Civita Vecchia at the outbreak of the war, when the Duc de Gramont announced that his Government relied on the convention of 1864, whereby Italy was bound not to attack the papal territory. That territory being now, however, again exposed to the dangers of revolution, Victor Emmanuel, on receiving the tidings of the battle of Gravelotte, notified to Pius that “the responsibility of maintaining order in the peninsula and the security of the Holy See” had devolved upon himself, and that his army must enter the pontifical dominions. This intimation was received by Pius with demonstrations of the liveliest indignation, but the appearance of the Sardinian troops was hailed by his own subjects with enthusiasm. On arriving outside Rome, General Cadorna summoned the garrison to sur render, and after a short bombardment the white flag was hoisted. On the following day (21st September 1870) the Zouaves, some nine thousand in number, after

receiving, as they stood massed in the square of St Peter's, the pontifical blessing, marched out of Rome, and the temporal power of the pope had ceased to exist.

For the rest of his days Pius IX. remained unmolested at the Vatican, while the king resided at the Quirinal. The pontiff was virtually a prisoner; and his position, although viewed with comparative indifference in Rome, was regarded with nota little sympathy by the Catholic world at large. The tribute of Peter's Pence was revived in order to supply, in some measure, the loss of his alien- ated revenues ; and numerous pilgrimages, in which dis- tinguished and wealthy individuals took part, were made to St Peter's from all parts of Catholic Christendom, and especially from England. His advanced years, fine pre- sence, dignified demeanour, and elasticity of spirits (unbroken by his adverse fortunes) combined to invest both the person and the office of the pope with a kind of fascination for devout minds, which those about him well understood how to turn to the best advantage. Occasion- ally, however, his naturally impetuous temper still mani- fested itself. The complicity of the Roman Catholic

clergy with the Polish insurrection of 1863 had been.

punished by Russia with excessive rigour, and, on receiving the Russian deputies who came to offer the customary felicitations on New Year's Day 1866, Pius so far forgot the proprieties of the occasion as to himself address them in terms of reproach. A suspension of diplomatic relations ensued; and Russia now eagerly availed herself of the pretext afforded by the promulgation of the new dogmas to aim a severe blow at Roman Catholic influence within her dominions, by annexing to the Russian Church the bishopric of Chelm, with a population of over 300,000 souls. Pius showed his resentment by espousing the side of Turkey in the struggle of that country with the Russian power. On the 3d June 1877 he celebrated the fiftieth anniversary of his consecration to the archbishopric of Spoleto, and the event was made singularly memorable by the spectacle of numerous deputations, bearing costly offerings, from all parts of the world. Pius died on the Sth of the following February, and was succeeded by Cardinal Pecchi as Leo XIII.

The life of Pius has been written by the late J. F. Maguire

(2d ed., 1878), and by Leopold Wappmannsperger, Leben wnd Wirken des Papstes Pius des Newnten (Ratisbon, 1878). Both

SS

oe a

A 8

PIZ—PLA

authors write from the ultramontane point of view, but the latter much more in detail, giving original documents and information respecting events subsequent to 1870 not to be found in English sources. Nippold's Handbuch der newesten Kirchengeschichte, vol. ii., supplies an outline of the papal policy in connexion with other contemporaneous religious movements ; and a concise but more impartial skctch will be found in Ranke, Die rémischen Pépste (7th ed.), ii. 162-208. The literature connected with the Vatican Council is given under OLD CATHOLICS. (J. B. M.)

PIZARRO, Francisco (c. 1471-1541), discoverer of Peru, and the principal hero of its conquest, born at Truxillo in Estremadura, Spain, about the year 1471, was an illegitimate son of Gonzalo Pizarro, who as colonél of infantry afterwards served in Italy under Gonsalvo de Cor- dova, and in Navarre, with some distinction. Of Pizarro's early years hardly anything is known ; but he appears to have been only poorly cared for, and his education was cer- tainly neglected. Shortly after the news of the discovery of the New World had reached Spain he was in Seville, and thence found his way across the Atlantic ; there he is first heard of in 1510 as having taken part in an expedi- tion from Hispaniola to Urabé under Alonzo de Ojeda, by whom, in his absence, he was entrusted with the charge of the unfortunate settlement at San Sebastian. Afterwards he accompanied Balboa to Darien; and under Balboa's suc- cessor, Pedrarias, he received a "'repartimento," and be- came a cattle farmer at Panama, where in 1522 he entered into a partnership with a priest named Hernando de Luque and a soldier named Diego de Almagro for purposes of ex- ploration and conquest towards the south. An expedition along the coast of New Granada (November 1524) was unfortunate, but supplied various confirmations of

rumours previously heard as to the existence of a great and opulent empire farther to the south. On March 10, 1526, Pizarro, Almagro, and Luque renewed their compact, but in a much more solemn and explicit manner, to conquer and divide equally among themselves this empire still undis- covered, and Pizarro and Almagro, with a force of about one hundred and sixty men, again sailed from Panama. The force was too small to effect much at the time, and was at length recalled by the governor, but Pizarro was not to be shaken, and, though he was left for months with but thirteen followers on a small island without ship or Stores, persisted in his enterprise till at length he had coasted as far as to about 9° S. lat., and obtained distinct accounts of the Peruvian empire. The governor still show- ing little disposition to encourage the adventurers, Pizarro resolved to apply to the sovereign in person for help, and with this object sailed from Panama for Spain in the spring of 1528, reaching Seville in early summer. After long and tedious delays, the queen, in Charles's absence, executed at Toledo on 26th July 1529 the famous capitu- lacion by which Pizarro was upon certain conditions made governor and captain-general of the province of " New Castile" for the distance of 200 leagues along the newly discovered coast, and invested with all the authority and prerogatives of a viceroy. One of the conditions of the grant was that within six months he should raise a sufii- ciently equipped force of two hundred and fifty men, of Whom one hundred might be drawn from the colonies ; but this he had some difficulty in fulfilling. Sailing from San Lucar clandestinely (for his due complement was not yet made up) in January 1530, Pizarro was afterwards Jomed by his brother Hernando with the remaining vessels, and When the expedition left Panama in January of the following year it numbered three ships, one hundred and eighty men, and twenty-seven horses. A footing was established on the mainland at Tumbez, whence Pizarro Set out for the interior in May 1532. San Miguel de Piura was founded a few wecks afterwards, and Caxamarca entered on November 15th. The subsequent movements

of Pizarro belong to the history of Prrv (see vol. xviii. p. 677; and, for authorities, comp. p. 679).

PLAGUE (Aounds, Pestes, Pestilentia). This name has been given to any epidemic disease causing a great mortality, and in this sense was used by Galen and the ancient medical writers, but is now confined to a special disease, otherwise called Oriental, Levantine, or Bubonic Plague, which may be shortly defined as a specific febrile disease, transmissible from the sick to healthy persons, accompanied usually by buboes and sometimes by car- buncles. This definition excludes many of the celebrated pestilences recorded in history,—such as the plague of Athens, described by Thucydides ; that not less celebrated one which occurred in the reign of Marcus Aurelius and spread over nearly the whole of the Roman world (164— 180 a.p.),! which is referred to, though not fully described, by the contemporary pen of Galen; and that of the 3d century (about 253), the symptoms of which are known from the allusions of St Cyprian (Sermo de Mortalitate). There is a certain resemblance between all these, but they were very different from Oriental plague.

Symptoms.—There are two chief forms :—(1) mild plague, pestis minor, larval plague (Radcliffe), peste fruste, in which the special symptoms are accompanied by little fever or general disturbance ; and (2) ordinary epidemic or severe plague, pestis major, in which the general disturb- ance is very severe. Cases which are rapidly fatal from the general disturbance without marked local symp- toms have been distinguished as fulniinant plague (pestis siderans, peste foudroyante).

1. In the minor form of the disease spontaneous swellings of the glands occur, chiefly in groins and arm- pits, but also in neck or other parts, which either undergo resolution or suppurate. There is a certain amount of fever ; the temperature is rarely high, but has been known to be 104° Fahr. The duration of the disease is ten to twenty days usually, but may be eight weeks, for most of which time the general health is little impaired and the patient able to go about as usual. It rarely, if ever, causes death, the only fatal case at Astrakhan in 1877 having been so through a complication. The disease is not obviously contagious; whether it is propagated by infection or not is unknown. It is possibly rather of a miasmatic character. This form of disease has sometimes preceded or followed severe epidemics, as in Mesopotamia (Irak) on several occasions, 1873-78, and in Astrakhan, 1877;

its importance in relation to the origin of plague has only lately been appreciated.”

It might be expected that gradations would be found connecting this form with the severe epidemic form ; but this appears to be not usually the case, the latter form appearing somewhat suddenly and abruptly. Hence the minor form has probably often been regarded as a distinct disease, even when observed in plague countries.

2. As regards pestis major, or severe plague, the symp- toms appear to have been nearly the same in all great epidemics for several centuries, if not for two thousand years, but will be best given from modern observations, such as those of Surgeon-Major Colvill, Dr Cabiadis, and others in Irak, and recent observers in India. The early symptoms are sometimes like those of ague (shivers, often long continued, and pains in the limbs), but combined with nervous symptoms. The patient becomes distracted, tosses about in constant fear of something he cannot describe,

1 Amm. Marcell., xxiii. 7; see Hecker, De Peste Antoniana, Berlin, 1835.

2 Payne, Trans. Epidem. Soc. of Lond., iv. 862; Tholozan, La Peste en Turquie, Paris, 1880; J. N. Radcliffe, Report of Local Government Board, 1879-80 (Supplement, pp. 24, 49), and article “Plague,” in Quain’s Dictionary of Medicine, London, 1882.

has a difficulty in understanding the questions put to him, |

and is slow in answering. He is often described as staggering like a drunken man. There is severe head- ache, intense thirst, and severe pain in the epigastrium. The eyes are red and turbid; the tongue swollen, dry, and fissured, sometimes black, sometimes remarkably white (Colvill). This condition may pass into coma even before fever sets in. In other cases bilious vomiting is the earliest symptom. The fever which sets in may last twenty-four to thirty hours, or more. The temperature may be 100° to 107° Fahr., or even higher; but in the most rapidly fatal cases there may be little or no fever. Generally there is obstinate constipation, but sometimes

diarrhoea. Besides these symptoms there are certain special ones especially characteristic of plague.

(a) Buboes or glandular swellings are observed in all except very rapidly fatal cases. They occur in 45 or 50 per cent. of the cases in the groin, in 35 per cent. in the axilla, also less frequently in the neck or other parts. These swellings may occur before the fever, simultaneously with it, or some hours after it has set in. A sudden pain like that of a stab is felt in some region of the body, which has given rise to the superstition that the unfor- tunate victim was wounded by the arrow of an invisible demon,—a belief recorded in Constantinople in the 6th century, and said still to survive in Mohammedan coun- tries. ‘The buboes may suppurate, and free discharge of matter from them has in all times been held to be a favourable sign and conducive to recovery.

(6) Carbuncles were observed in about 24 or 3 per cent. of the cases in recent epidemics in Irak. They are always an unfavourable sign.

(c) Petechiee or hemorrhagic spots on the skin have always been regarded as signs of the worst omen. Under the name of “tokens” they were considered in the English epidemics of the 16th century as the infallible signs of approaching death. “They appear generally only a few hours before death” (Colvill). Hodges (1665) noticed hard- ness which showed the existence of hemorrhage under the skin. The skin is sometimes so covered with petechiz as to become of a dark livid hue after death, recalling the name Black Death (Cabiadis).

The occurrence of the above symptoms, especially the first, in an idiopathic fever attacking many persons at one time is sufficient to make the diagnosis of plague.

A very notable and fatal form of the disease is that in which hemorrhages from the lungs, stomach, bowels, nose, &., occur. These are of the worst omen, and are seen in some cases where there are no buboes, and which are rapidly fatal. This was observed in Irak in recent epidemics, in the outbreak on the Volga in 1878-79, and in the plague of India. It was a noticeable symptom in the black death, and was observed even in the plague of the 6th century. The bleeding is mostly from the lungs, and is sometimes associated

with other symptoms of -lung affection. This form of the disease appears, however, to have no distinct historical or geographical limit. A similar hemorrhagic form has been observed in small-pox and scarlet fever, and is always extremely fatal.

In all plague epidemics cases occur in which death takes place very rapidly, even within twenty-four hours, without the development of the special symptoms of the disease. Such cases are reported by Diemerbroek, Hodges, and others in the 17th century, and have been observed in recent epidemics in Irak, as well as in the recent plague on the Volga. Some are more like cases of poisoning than ea or eee which are met with f fi eae” oe poisoning) ae ¢ rom time to time. It is these which

given rise to the expression fulminant plague.

bal

Po eee

Duration.— The duration of an attack of plague may be from some hours to a month. Three-fifths of the cases observed by Mr Colvill were fatal on the third day, and the majority of cases in India had the same termination (Francis). Five-sixths of fatal cases end by the fifth day, Most of those who survive the fifth day get well; after the seventh day a patient in Baghdad was considered by his friends safe; and in Mr Colvill’s cases only 4 per cent. of fatal cases died after the tenth day. In non-fatal cases with suppurating buboes the disease may be protracted to two or three weeks or a month.)

Mortality.—Plague is the most fatal of all known diseases which affect large numbers of people. The mortality, according to official registers in Baghdad, was 55-7 per cent. of those attacked. Dr Cabiadis thinks this too high, owing to many cases of recovery not being re- ported. But in some epidemics the proportion of fatal cases is much higher. In Vetlanka it was about 90 per cent., and in some other villages on the Volga every person who took the disease died. The older accounts do not give the proportion of deaths and attacks.

Morbid Anatomy.—Examinations after death have not done much to elucidate the nature of plague, except nega- tively. The appearances are those of death from an acute infective disease, and resemble those of typhus, except for the special affection of the lymphatic glands. The brain and the lungs are found to contain excess of blood; the right side of the heart distended, the blood dark- coloured and undergoing rapid decomposition! The spleen is found enlarged, and in a less degree the liver. The stomach and intestinal canal often show signs of inflam- mation and hemorrhage, sometimes ulceration, The characteristic swelling of the lymphatic glands, both ex- ternal and internal, is often accompanied by inflammation of the cellular tissue around. Petechial patches are some- times found on the internal organs.?

Pathology of Plague.—All that is known of plague goes to show that it isa specific febrile disease depending on the reception into the body of a specific organic contagion, which becomes multiplied in the body of the patient. Analogy makes it very probable that this contagion isa living organism of the class Bacteria, but the suspected organism has not yet been discovered. The nearest ally of plague is typhus fever, so that some authorities have spoken of it as the typhus of hot climates, modified by temperature, &c., but this opinion does not appear to have ever been held by any competent physician who has examined the disease at first hand. It appears to be as distinct from typhus as this is from enteric fever, or other so-called typhoid diseases. It has also been thought that plague is related to intermittent or remittent malarious fevers ; but the most recent observations show that there is no real connexion between these diseases. In India, says Dr Francis, neither intermission nor remission has ever been observed in plague. It is quite distinct from and in no way modified by the types of fever that are caused by malaria. Dr Cabiadis speaks to the same effect of: plague in Irak, and insists that the physical conditions which favour the production of marsh poison are not necessarily favourable to plague.

External Conditions of Plague.—The nature of the soil OI EBS = LL

1 This post-mortem decomposition of the blood is doubtless the cause of some appearances described with great particularity in the older accounts.

2 Onr knowledge of the morbid anatomy of plague is derived almost entirely from the observation of the French physicians in Egypt dumng the epidemic in 1835-36. Earlier observations are of no value, and in later epidemics of Irak and Russia none have been made. In India Drs Pearson and Francis made a few autopsies. Clot-Bey, De la Peste en Egypte, Paris, 1840; Bulard, De la Peste Orientale, Paris, 1889; Francis, Indian Annals of Medical Science, vol. i., 1854.

PRAGUE

has little influence on plague. It may flourish in alluvial deltas, on calcareous ridges or granitic mountains. Moisture in the soil has generally been thought to be an important factor in its production, but, though often found in marsh situations, such as the banks of the Nile, the Euphrates, or even the Volga, it also occurs in India at elevations approaching 7000 feet, and in Kurdistan at 5000 to 6000 feet above the sea.

The temperature most favourable to plague is a moder- ately high one. ‘The disease is unknown in the tropics. When prevalent in Egypt it was said never to penetrate farther south than Assouan. It has not crossed the plains of India within historic times. Where the disease does occur, a temperature of 80° to 85° or more, combined with absence of moisture, usually stops the epidemic. In Egypt it was observed to cease as an epidemic almost suddenly about the 22d to 24th of June, and not to begin again till September. In Irak it dies out suddenly during the summer. When the temperature rises above 86° it begins to diminish; and it ceases abruptly at a temperature of 113°. In India it has been observed by Dr Francis when the temperature of his tent was 83° to 95°, or ina grass hut to 105°, while the air was moist ; but he thinks a lower temperature with dryness renders the poison inert.

On the other hand, in northern countries, the disease is usually checked by the cold of winter, starts up in the spring, and is most active in August and September. To this rule there have been some remarkable exceptions, such as the epidemic on the Volga in 1878-79, which raged during severe winter weather, and the great plague of Moscow in 1770.

Samtary Conditions.—Of all the co-operating causes of the plague, wncleanliness is the most powerful,—meaning by this the accumulation of

decaying animal matter around human bodies or dwellings. The saturation of the soil with filth is perhaps the most important point. A plague seat in Mesopotamia is thus described by Colvill :—“ The ground is so saturated with moisture that the refuse of the village is neither absorbed nor evaporated, but acquires the form of a bluish-black oily fluid, which sur- rounds the huts and covers the paths, and stains the walls 2 feet from the ground ; and in fact the village is in such a state of filth that it requires to be seen to be believed.” Of the people among whom the Pali plague of India taged it is said “they were filthy beyond conception ” (Francis), There can be little doubt that European cities in the Middle Ages, and down to the 17th century, presented very similar conditions. These conditions may be con- sidered to act by supplying a suitable environment for the life and growth of the organized poison (or bacterium) outside the human body. Where these are wanting one of the main factors in the spread and permanence of the disease will be absent, a fact which makes it probable that Increased cleanliness is the chief cause of the disappearance of plague from Europe.

_ Overcrowded dwellings, especially with deficient ventila- tion, greatly favour the spread of the disease ; but this is not necessarily correlative with density of population, and plague may flourish in thinly-peopled countries.

Of social conditions poverty has by far the most power- y influence on the spread and development of plague. Many plague epidemics have followed on years of famine, 7 been connected with destruction of crops and cattle. = among which the disease is endemic are almost an a exception under- nourished, if not destitute. In 1879 aa oa the Volga there appeared to the writer, in ane 0 be little destitution, though the diet of the people i. a In all city epidemics the poor are the Ba – almost the only sufferers. This is as true of

ghdad in the 19th century as it was of London in the

| 17th. Those of the upper classes who have been attacked have been chiefly doctors, clergy, officials, and others whose occupations take them among the sick.

Origin and Spread of Plague.—Although the above- mentioned conditions are those in which plague originates, and may be considered in a general way essential to its continued existence, it is plain that they do not account for its origin. Poverty, overcrowding, filth, and marsh soil, with a temperature suited to plague, occur in many parts of the world where this disease has never been heard of or has ceased to exist. The geographical distribution of diseases cannot, any more than the distribution of plants or animals, be explained by climatic causes alone. With regard to plague it is quite clear that there are some parts of the world where it is at home, or, as the phrase is, “endemic.” In other parts it is probable (or, as some think, certain) that its existence, and even its periodical recur- rence, depend on importation from an endemic centre. Although it is not always easy to distinguish between these cases, they must be considered separately.

In the case of an endemic disease we suppose that the poison is either kept in existence by continued transmission from one case to another, or that it can subsist outside the human body in soil, water, or otherwise. The first mode of existence is that of a pure contagious disease, such as small-pox; and it is plain that this mode of continued existence obtains in the case of plague also. It is not,

however, clear that the second may not also be one of the modes of existence of plague, which would then be a so- called “miasmatic” disease like ague, as well as a conta- gious one. In India, for instance, the disease appears as if it depended on a poison in the soil, since it returns years after to the same spot, appearing in many villages simul- taneously ; and some morbid influence causes the death of animals (rats) which live under ground. Similar facts have been observed in China; and, if further inquiry should confirm the hypothesis, it would show that plague is (like anthrax or the “steppe murrain” of cattle) both miasmatic and contagious. If so, there is no difficulty in supposing the disease to be carried by contagion to a distant part, and there to be established in the soil, for a longer or shorter period, as the conditions are more or less favourable. The adoption of this hypothesis would remove many of the difficulties attending the explanation of plague epidemics, and to some extent reconcile the contro- versies of the last three centuries between the “ contagi- onist” and “non-contagionist” schools. It has been maintained by the former that European epidemics have

always been caused by the importation of the disease from its home in the East, by the latter that it arose on European soil in the sanie way as in Egypt or Syria.

In the case of an imported non-endemic disease, the only question which arises is how the importation is effected,—whether the disease may be brought by the air alone, whether by infected persons only, or whether also by objects which have been in close relation to infected persons, Transmission of the disease by the air cannot be pronounced impossible ; and there are facts to show that it is even probable with distances measured by yards, or possibly even hundreds of yards; but there is no evidence whatever that the disease has ever been carried by the air over distances measured by miles. Transmission of the disease by infected persons over longer or shorter distances, and from one country to another, is an established fact. Transmission by infected objects over great distances and from one country to another seems less clearly established. The last two cases must be separately considered.

1. It is clear that the first necessary condition to such transmission is contagion, or transference of the disease from the sick to the healthy. The existence of contagion

is shown by such facts as these -—when a case of plague breaks out in a house the other inmates are extremely likely to take the disease ; and even in severe forms the plague does not cease till it has affected all or nearly all the household. This is indisputably an almost universal law. In the plague of London in 1603 it was said the disease entered hardly any house but it seized all that lived in it. And in 1879, on the Volga, in one village, as was ascertained by Mr Oolvill and the present writer, the plague attacked five houses containing thirty-three persons, all of whom except two took the disease and died. In this respect plague resembles typhus. In the next place the disease will spread from an infected house to persons who have close relations with it. Thus in the villages on the Volga it was noticed that after one family was affected cousins and relations by marriage were the next to

be attacked. Doctors and those visiting the house are also exposed to the risk, though in a less degree. | In Vetlanka on the Volga three physicians and six surgical assistants died. On the other hand, doctors in some instances have singularly escaped from being attacked by the disease. In Egypt, in 1835, out of ten French physicians engaged one only died, nor was this immunity secured by any precautions. These experiences do not prove that the disease is not contagious, but they modify the ex- aggerated notions which have been held on the subject. The facts appear to be expressed by saying that it may undoubtedly be communicated from one person to another, but chiefly by breathing the air of the sick room, and this generally from prolonged not from momentary exposure,— so that the possibility of communication by chance meet- ings and similar contingencies may be disregarded. This view is that of Dr Cabiadis and others who have studied plague in Irak where no doctor or assistant, with one exception, suffered from the disease. It is not inconsist- ent with the experience recorded in Egypt. But it is clear that the intensity of contagion varies greatly in different epidemics. Modern experience contradicts the belief formerly entertained that contact with plague patients was the only or even the chief means of acquiring the disease. Everything tends to show that the atmo- sphere immediately surrounding the patient is the most effectual conveyer of contagion, and more effectual in pro- portion as the poison is concentrated. Precisely the same relations are observed with regard to typhus.

It has been disputed whether dead bodies convey infec- tion of plague. Formerly the contagion from this source was greatly dreaded, and the task of burying thought to be specially dangerous. But the French in Egypt made more than a hundred post-mortem examinations without precautions and without harm. In Mesopotamia and in Russia no autopsies were made, but in the latter country some striking instances were noted of those engaged in burying the dead themselves dying of the plague. On the whole both facts and analogy lead to the belief that the disease may be derived from touching or being near a dead body, but not that there is any special danger of infection from this source.

2. It is a very momentous question whether the con- tagion is capable of being conveyed by clothes and other objects which have been in contact

with the sick. The very general belief that this is so has been controverted only by the French physicians in Egypt, one of whom, Bulard, himself wore a shirt, taken direct from the body of a plague patient, for two days. They also state that in Egypt it was customary, when a plague epidemic was over, to sell the clothes and effects of those who had died of plague, without, as is affirmed, communicating the dis- ease. In Constantinople they were customarily sold at once ; and it is alleged that the dealers in old clothes did

ae PiaaAG UE

not specially suffer. In 1835 the hospital at Cairo, where 3000 plague patients had been treated, was used, without even changing the bed coverings, immediately after the epidemic for other patients, without harm. Negative instances of this kind might be multiplied, but their im- portance is diminished by the consideration that the communicability of plague, by whatever means, is always found to become spontaneously weak at the decline of the epidemic, till it is extinct altogether. While the epidemic influence lasts there is abundant evidence that infected clothes, &c., are among the means by which the disease spreads. In Egypt, in 1835, two criminals con- demned to death were for the sake of experiment placed in the clothes and beds of those who had died of plague, and both took the disease, one dying. Instances are given by White (Zreatise on the Plague, p. 161, London, 1847) of the disease spreading "'like wildfire" through the dis- tribution of infected garments, and of those engaged in disinfecting clothes and other objects being suddenly seized with the complaint, ¢.g., on opening a box containing infected garments. While the reality of this mode of com- munication cannot reasonably be doubted, it admits of some question whether the plague has ever been thus con- veyed over great distances, or from one country to another. The best known instance in England is the alleged trans- mission of plague from London to the village of Eyam in Derbyshire in 1665 by an infected parcel of clothes,—a story which cannot be criticized at this distance of time, but which presents some weak points.!_ Dr Cabiadis states that he has seen plague thus conveyed in Irak to places outside the existing focus of infection, but gives no details. On the whole we must consider the exportation of plague by clothes over great distances, and into countries not subject to the same epidemic conditions as the infected country, '" not proven."

The communication of plague by merchandise or objects not personal, coming from an infected country, rests upon still more defective evidence, though at one time generally believed. In virtue of this belief all goods, especially those regarded as susceptible (as wool, furs, raw cotton, &e.), were, when coming from an infected or suspected country, subjected to disinfection under special regula- tions. But there is really no evidence that plague was ever thus transmitted or that these regulations kept it out. On the contrary there are numberless instances of this supposed cause having failed to operate when it might have been most expected to do so.

During the plague at Alexandria in 1835, which destroyed 9000 persons in that city, the exportation of cotton from the Government warehouses was never inter- rupted, though the plague was most destructive in those very buildings. It was loaded on English and other ships without any precautions whatever. Twenty-five ships, eight of which were infected with plague, conveyed cotton amounting to 31,000 bales to England. Nevertheless n0 case of plague is known to have occurred among the quarantine officers or others engaged in unloading these ships or disinfecting their cargoes in quarantine. Equally large quantities were exported to Marseilles and Trieste, and smaller quantities to other ports, with the same result. Further, no case of infection has occurred among quaran- tine officers or persons employed to disinfect goods, from this cause alone, either at Marseilles since 1720, or at any European lazaretto.2 The conclusion is that the fear 0 importation of plague by merchandise coming from an infected country rests on no solid foundation. :

By whatever means, there is no doubt that plague 6 en —

1 See W. Wood, History of Eyam, London, 1848. 2 Laidlaw, quoted in Prus, Rapport, p. 479.

diffused or “spreads” from one place to another, and that its spread is connected mediately or immediately, in most cases at least, with human intercourse. But this diffusion appears to take place as a rule slowly, and to

be effected by the formation of new foci of contaminated atmosphere. Such foci on land will be inhabited houses, and the disease will creep in a gradual though irregular manner from house to house and street to street. It was so in London in 1665; and in Russia in 1878, as has been said, the disease was confined to one village for two months, though for great part of the time communication was perfectly open. In 1834 plague existed eight months at Alexandria before passing to Damietta and Mansoorah, though traffic was quite uninterrupted. These new foci of disease are doubt-

less mostly produced by persons infected with the disease, | actually or in incubation, who form a contaminated atmo- |

sphere around them in a place previously healthy. Transmission of the disease by sea may take place in the same manner,—a ship forming a focus of disease as easily as a house, and being obviously specially liable to concen- trate the poison. It is by a floating atmosphere of plague,

and not by casual contaminated objects, that the disease | has been conveyed, when it has been, from one port to The reality of the mode of

another of the Mediterranean. transmission is shown by the fact that between 1720 and 1846 twenty-five ships arrived at French and Italian ports with the plague among their crews; and in the case of those arriving at Marseilles (ten in number), which: were carefully observed, there were several instances of plague being communicated in the lazaretto to surgeons and others, or to those placed in charge of the ships. Of these persons several died,—without, however, any exten: sion of the disease to the town. From this it is clear that plague may be transmitted by ships, and may spread at the point to which it is conveyed, if the surrounding cir- cumstances are favourable. In all these cases the ships had left the infected ports at a time when an epidemic of plague, and not merely sporadic cases, prevailed there. No similar facts are on record as to the importation of plague by ships to England,—the probable cause of this difference being the greater length of the voyage from the Levantine ports, and the precautions taken at those ports

to prevent the shipment of infected persons or goods. Plague —

has never been brought to an English quarantine station.1

In such cases it must remain undetermined whether the disease would have spread, had it not been interrupted by the quarantine. As we have seen, plague will often die

out in the cases which convey it without spreading ; and | hence some have supposed (with Sydenham) that an |

“epidemic constitution” is necessary at any particular time and place in order that the disease should become general, but the practical value of this law is diminished by the fact that there is nd means of recognizing the epidemic constitution except by the actual production of an epidemic.

Plague, like all similar diseases, and in a specially high degree, is subject to the law of periodicity. Even when it

is most strictly endemic it seldoms prevails continuously, |

but appears in definite outbreaks, or epidemics, with inter- vals in which there are either no cases of plague or only so-called sporadic cases. This may be partly due to the general law that the susceptibility of the population to a special disease is exhausted by an epidemic, partly to the immensely increased transmissibility of the disease caused by the increased number of cages, so that when once a

certain stage of severity has been reached the disease pro- |

a in a far more rapid ratio. In most epidemics of plague there is at one time a sudden and alarming increase

- Prus, Rapport sur la Peste, Pari ‘ p L , Paris, 1846, p. 183; Report of Com- mittee of House of Commons, 1819, p. 101. z :

ScuUtxL 163

in mortality; but, by a law not yet understood, each epidemic is liable to a spontaneous decline, which is some- times sudden. This may be connected with rise or fall in the temperature of the air, but is not always so. The

disease may be dormant during the cold or hot weather (as the case may be) and reappear when the temperature is favourable again, but not necessarily. It is generally agreed that plague is transmissible to another country only when it is epidemic, and not from sporadic cases.

Incubation.—It is a very important question what time may elapse between a person receiving the poison and showing symptoms of the disease. The usual time of incubation appears to be from three to five days. In certain very malignant epidemics this period may be shortened, and, it is thought, reduced to even less than a day. In rare cases incubation may be prolonged to eight days. There are doubtful accounts of ten days' incubation. Generally a week's observation? would show whether a suspected person was really affected or no. It has been thought that articles contaminated by contact with plague patients may retain the power of communicating the disease for weeks, months, or even years; but of this there is no adequate proof.

Treatment.—No special line of treatment has proved efficacious in checking the disease once established. Special symptoms are treated in accordance with the ordinary rules of practice, and need not here be considered. Free ventilation appears to be of the greatest service in preventing the spread of the disease, and pro- bably in promoting recovery.

Prevention.—There can be no doubt whatever of the efficacy of hygienic measures in rendering a locality unsuitable for the spread of plague. Such measures include, not only personal cleanliness, but especially the removal of all foul organic matters, good drainage, and prevention of overcrowding ; all such measures might be looked upon by our readers generally as matters of course, but are quite unknown in most of the homes of plague. Since there is no doubt that plague may be carried from places where it prevails epidemically, measures to prevent such importation cannot be neglected. The best known of such measures is the system of quarantine first produced about 1480. See QuARANTINE. The efficiency of quaran- tine has been much discussed, and very strong opinions have been expressed for and against it. The subject is too large for discussion here ; but it would appear that, while the system as originally applied in the Mediterranean, when traffic was comparatively slow and infrequent, and when European cities

presented an extremely favourable soil for plague if introduced, was a real protection, the regulations have long ceased to correspond to the actual state of medical knowledge; and, in addition, it would be impossible to apply them to our crowded traffic. The alternative is a system of medical inspection of all arrivals in our ports, and strict isolation of ships in which plague has occurred or is suspected. Such a ship should then be treated as an infected house.

Prevention of the Spread of Plagwe.—When cases of plague have once occurred in a town or on board a ship in port, the house or ship should be emptied of its inhabit- ants, the sick removed to a hospital, the sound placed in an isolated building and subjected to observation for at least a week, or, better, ten days. The clothes of sick persons had better be burnt, their bedding and furniture completely disinfected. The house should in the mean- time be rigidly closed until it has been disinfected. If these measures are taken in time, there can be no objection to allowing free emigration of the population. Isolation of the place by a “sanitary cordon” would only be possible

2 Prus, Itapport, p. 196.

in very exceptional positions, and as a rule would aggravate, by overcrowding, the intensity of the disease within.

History of the Plaguc.—The first historical notice of the plague is eontained in a fragment of the physieian Rufus of Ephesus, who lived in the time of Trajan, preserved in the Collections of Oribasius.1 Rufus speaks of the buboes called pestilential as being specially fatal, and as being found chiefly in Libya, Egypt, and Syria. “He refers to the testimony of a physician Dionysius, who lived probably in the 3d century B.c. or earlier, and to Dioscorides and Posidonius, who fully described these buboes in a work on the plague which prevailed in Libya in their time. Whatever the preeise date of these physicians may have been, this passage shows the antiqnity of the plague in northern Africa, which for centuries was considered as its home. The great plague referred to by Livy (1x., Epitome) an dmore fully by Orosius:(Histor., iv. 11) was pro- bably the samc, though

the symptoms arc not recorded. It is reported to have destroyed a million of persons in Africa, but is not stated to have passed into Europe. : =

It is not till the 6th century of our era, in the reign of Justinian, that we find bubonic plague in Europe, as a part of the great cycle of pestilence, accompanied by extraordinary natural phenomena, which lasted fifty years, and is described with a singular misunder- standing of medical terms by Gibbon in his forty-third chapter. The descriptions of the contemporary writers Procopius, Evagrius,

‘and Gregory of Tours are quite unmistakable? The plague of Justinian began at Pelusium in Egypt in 542 a.p.; it spread over Egypt, and in the same or the next year passed to Constantinople, where it carried off 10,000 persons in one day, with all the symptoms of bubonic plague. It appeared in Gaul in 546, where it is described by Gregory of Tours with the same symptoms as lwes inguinaria (from the frequent seat of buboes in the groin). In Italy there was a great mortality in 543, but the most notable epidemic was in 565, whieh so depopulated the country as to lcave it an easy prey to the Lombards. In 571 it is again recorded in Liguria, and in 590 a great epidemic at Rome is conneeted with the pontificate of Gregory the Great. But it spread in faet over the whole Roman world, beginning in maritime towns and radiating in- land. In another direction itextended from Egypt along the north coast of Africa. Whether the numerous pestilences recorded in the 7th century were the plague cannot now be said; but it is possible the pestilenees in England chronicled by Bede in the years 664, 672, 679, and 683 may have been of this disease, especially as in 690 pestis inguinaria is again recorded in Rome. For the epidemics of the succeeding centuries we must refer to more detailed works.

It is impossible, however, to pass over the great eycle of epi- demies in the 14th century known as the Black Death. Whcther in all the pestilences known by this name the disease was really the same may admit of doubt, but it is clear that in some at least it was the bubonic plague. Contemporary observers agree that the disease was introduced from the East; and one eye-witness, Gabriel de Mussis, an Italian lawyer, traced, or indeed accom- panied, the march of the plague from the Crimea (whither it was said to have been introduced from Tartary) to Genoa, where with ‘a handful of

survivors of a Genoese expedition he landed pyro- bably at the end of the year 1347. He narrates how the few that had themselves escaped the pest transmitted the contagion to all they met.4 Other accounts, especially old Russian chronicles, place the origin of the disease still further to the east in Cathay (or China), where, as is eonfirmed to some extent by Chinese records, pestilenee and destructive inundations are said to have destroyed the enormous number of thirteen millions. It appears to have passed by way of Armenia into Asia Minor and thenee to Egypt and northern Africa. Nearly the whole of Europe was gradually overrun by the pestilence. It reached Sicily in 1346, Constantinople, Greece, and parts of Italy early in 1347, and towards the end of that year Marseilles. “ In 1348 it attacked Spain, northern Italy and Rome, eastern Germany, many parts of France including Paris, and England; from England it is said to have been conveyed to the Scandinavian countries. In England the western counties were first invaded early in the year, and London in November. In 1349 we hear of it in the midlands 5 and in subsequent years, at least till 1357, it prevailed in parts of the eountry, or generally, especially in the towns. In 1352 Oxford

1 Lib, xliv. cap. 17,—Guvres de Oribase, ed. Buss k E i 186i, va ne , ed. Bussemaker and Daremberg, Paris, ; Evagrius, Hist. Eccles., iv. 29; Procopius, De Bello Persico, ii. 22, 23. See Noah Webster’s History of Epidemic Diseases, 8vo, 2 vols., London, 1800 & work which makes no pretension to medical learning, but exhibits the history g i? im connexion with physical disasters, as carthquakes, famines, &c.); ab: 5 Kleine Pest-Chronik, 8vo, 1880 (a convenient short compendium, but not q wee accurate); ‘* Athanasii Kircheri Chronologia Pestium ” (to 1656 a.D.), in 4 tie see (Rome, 1658), Leipsic, 1671, 4to; Bascome, History of Epidemic es “ eS ne ae + wis bs — complete medical history of epidemics is S epidemischen Krankheiien (3d editi = ing on ae volume of his History of edits. eMail cick ox ee the original account reprinted with other documents in Haeser, Op. cit.; olag Hecker, Epidemics of the Middle Ages, trans. by Babington, Syaeriben, ‘Soe., i on, 1844; Volkskrankheiten des Mittelalters, ed. Hirseh., Berlin, 1865; R. oeniger, Der Schwarze Tod in Deutschland, Berlin, 1882, : ,

BEAG U ®

lost two-thirds of her academical population. The outbreaks of 1361 and 1368, known as the second and third plagues of the reign of Edward III., were doubtless of the same disease, though by some historians not called the black death. Scotland and Treland, though later affected, did not escape.

The nature of this pestilence has been a matter of much contro- versy, and some have doubted its being truly the plague. But when the symptoms are fully described they seem to justify this conclusion, one character only being thought to make a distinction between this and Oriental plague, viz., the special implication of the lungs as shown by spitting of blood and other symptoms. Guy de Chauliac notes this feature in the earlier epidemic at Avignon, not in the later. Moreover, as this complication was a marked feature in certain epidemics of plague in India, the hypothesis has been framed by Hirsch that a special variety of plague, pestis Indiea, still found in India, is that which overran the world in the 14th century. But the same symptoms (hemoptysis) have been scen, though less notably, in many plague epidemics, even in the latest, that in Russia in 1878-79, and, moreover, according to the latest accounts, are not a special feature of Indian plague. Accord- ing to Surgeon-General Francis (7’rans. Epidem. Soc., vol. v. p. 898) “hemorrhage is not an ordinary accompaniment” of Indian plague, though when seen it is in the form of hemoptysis. It seems, therefore, impossible to make a special variety of Indian plague, or to refer the black death to any such special form, Gabriel de Mussis describes it even in the East, before its arrival in Europe, as a bubonic disease.

The mortality of the black death was, as is well known, enor- mous. It is estimated in various parts of Europe at two-thirds or three-fourths of the population in the first pestilence, in England even higher, but some countries were much less severely affected, Hecker calculates that one-fourth of the population of Europe, or 25 millions of persons, died in the whole of the epidemics. Itis hardly neccessary to dwell upon the social results of this terrible mortality. In England great part of the country remained untilled, and the deficiency of labourers was such as to cause a sudden rise of wages, which, in spite of attempts to check it by legislation, is thought to have effected the final emancipation of the labouring elass. On the other hand a great transfer of property to the ehurch took place, with what results is well known.

In the 15th century the plague recurred frequently in nearly all parts of Europe. In the first quarter it was very destructive in Italy, in Spain (especially Barcelona and Seville) , in Germany, and in England, where London was severely visited in 1400 and 1406, and again in 1428. In 1427 80,000 persons died in Dantzic and the neighbourhood. In 1438-89 the plague was in Germany, and its occurrence at Basel was described by Aineas Sylvius, afterwards Pope Pius II. In 1448-50 Italy (Kircher), Germany (Lersch, from old chronicles), France, and Spain were ravaged by a plague supposed to have arisen in Asia, scarcely less destructive than the black death. England was probably seldom quite free from plague, but the next great outbreak is recorded in 1472 and following years. In 1466 40,000 persons died of plague in Paris; in 1477-85 the cities of northern Italy were devastated, and in 1485 Brussels. In the fifteenth year of Henry VII. (1499-1500) a severe plague In London caused the king to retire to Calais.

The 16th century was not more free from plague than the 15th. Simultaneously with a terrible pestilence which is reported to have nearly depopulated China, plague prevailed over Germany, Holland,

Italy, and Spain in the first decade of the eentury, and revived at:

various times in the first half. In 1529 there was plague in Edin- burgh; in London in 1537-89, and again 1547-48 ; and also in the north of England, though probably not absent before. Some of the epidemics of this period in Italy and Germany are known by the accounts of eminent physicians, as Vochs, Fracastor, Mercurt- alis, Borgarucci, Ingrassia, Massaria, Amici, &v.,> whose writings are important because the question of contagion first began to be raised, and also plague had to be distinguished from typhus fever, which began in this century to appear in Europe.

The epidemic of 1563-64 in London and England was very severe, a thousand dying weekly in London. In Paris about this time plague was an everyday occurrence, of which some were less afraid than of a headache (Borgarucci). In 1570 200,000 persons died in Moscow and the neighbourhood, in 1572 50,000 at Lyons; m 1568 and 1574 plague was at Edinburgh, and in 1570 at Newcastle. When, however, in 1575 a new wave of plague passed over Europe, its origin was referred to Constantinople, whence it was said to have spread by sea to Malta, Sicily, and Italy, and by

land through the Austrian territories to Germany. Others contended that the ee eee NS ae se

a ”

5 Vochs, Opusculum de Pestilentia, 1537; Fracastorius, ‘‘De Contagione, — Opera, Ven., 1555; Hieron. Mercurialis, De Peste, presertim de Veneta et Pata- vina, Basel, 1577; Prosper Borgarntius, De Peste, Ven., 1565, 8vo; in Ingrassia, Informatione del pestifero morbo … Palermo e . . . Regno ¥ Sicilia, 1575-76, 4to, Palermo, 1576-77; A. Massaria, De Peste, Ven., 1597; Diomedes Amicus, Tres tractatus, Ven., 1599, 4to; Victor de Bonagentibus, Decem Problemata de Peste, Ven., 1556, 8vo; Georgius Agricola, De Pesté hed tres, Basel, 1554, 8vo. The works of English physicians of this period are of little medical value; but Lodge’s Treatise of the Plague (London, 1608) deserves mention.

| {

:

—

a ee

reac UT

disease originated locally; and, indeed, considering previous history, no importation of plague would seem neeessary to explain its pres- enee in Europe. Italy suffered severely (Venice, in1576, lost 70,000); the north of Europe not less, though later ; London in 1580-82. In 1585 Breslau witnessed the most destructive plague known in its history. The great plague of 1592 in London seems to have been a part of the same epidemic, which was hardly extinguished by the end of the century, and is noted in London again in 1599. On the whole, this eentury shows a decrease of plague in Europe.

In the first half of the 17th century plague was still prevalent in Europe, though considerably less so than in the Middle Ages. In the second half a

still greater decline is observable, and by the third quarter the disease had disappeared or was disappearing from a great part of western Europe. The epidemics in England will be most conveniently considered in one series. From this time onwards we have the guidanee of the “Bills of Mortality” issued in London, which, though drawn up on the evidence of ignorant persons, are doubtless roughly true. The accession of James I. in 1603 was marked by a very destructive plague which killed 38,000 in Loudon. In this and subsequent years the disease was widely diffused in England—for instance, Oxford, Derbyshire, Newcastle. It prevailed at the same time in Holland, and had done so some years previously in northern Germany. In the same year (1603) one million persons are said to have died of plague in Egypt. This plague is said to have lasted eight years in London. At all events in 1609 we have the seeond great plague year, with a mortality of 11,785. After this there is a remission till about 1620, when plague again began to spread in northern Europe, especially Germany and Holland, which was at that time ravaged by war. In 1625 (the year of the siege of Breda in Holland) is the third great London plague with 35,417 deaths,—though the year 1624 was remarkably exempt, and 1626 nearly so. In 1630 was the great plague of Milan, deseribed by Ripamonti.’ In 1632 severe epidemic, apparently plague, was in Derbyshire. 1636 is the fourth great plague year in London with a mortality of 10,400, and even in the next year 3082 persons died of the same disease. The same year 7000 out of 20,000 inhabitants of Newcastle died of plague; in 1635 it was at Hull. About the same time, 1635-37, plague was patent in Holland, aud the epidemic of Nimeguen is eelebrated as having been described by Diemerbroeck, whose work (Tractatus de Peste, 4to, 1641-65) is one of the most important on the subject. The English epidemic was widely spread and lasted till 1647, in which year, the mortality amount- ing to 3597, we have the fifth epidemic in London. The army diseases of the Civil Wars were chiefly typhus and malarial fevers, but plague was not unknown among them, as at Wallingford Castle (Willis, “ Of Feavers,” Works, ed. 1681, p. 181) and Dunstar Castle. From this time till 1664 little was heard of plague in England, though it did not cease on the Continent. In Ireland it is said to have been seen for the last time in 1650.?

_ In 1656 one of the most destructive of all recorded epidemics in Europe raged in Naples ; it is said to have earried off 300,000 persons in the space

of five months. It passed to Rome, but there was much less fatal, making 14,000 victims only—a result attri- buted by some to the preeautions and sanitary measures introduced by Cardinal Gastaldi, whose work, a splendid folio, written on this oceasion (Tractatus de avertenda et profliganda peste politico- legalis, Bologna, 1684) is historically one of the most important on the subjeet of quarantine, &c. Genoa lost 60,000 inhabitants from the same disease, but Tuscany remained untouched. The comparatively limited spread of this frightful epidemic in Italy at this time is a most noteworthy fact. Minorca is said to have been depopulated. Nevertheless the epidemic spread in the next few years over Spain and Germany, and a little later to Holland, where Amsterdam in 1663-64 was again ravaged with a mortality given as 50,000, also Rotterdam and Haarlem: Hamburg suffered in 1664.

The Great Plague of London.—The preceding enumeration will have prepared the reader to view the great plague of 1664-65 in its true relation to others, and not as an isolated phenomenon. The Preeeding years had been unusually free from plague, and it was hot mentioned in the bills of mortality till in the autumn of 1664 ember 2d) a few isolated cases were observed in the parishes ‘ St Giles and St Martin’s, Westminster, and a few occurred in th e following winter, which was very severe. About May 1665 the a again beeame noticeable, and spread, but somewhat slowly. cal a contemporary doctor, notices that it crept down Hol- an and took six months to travel from the western suburbs (St a a to the eastern (Stepney) through the city. The mortality ee ie from 43 in May to 590 in June, 6137 in July, 17,036 in F ae , 31,159 in September, after which it began to decline. The bill humber of deaths from plague in that year, according to the

lls of mortality was 68,596, in a population estimated at 460,000,

1 : .

. A oom Ripamontius, De Peste anni 1630, Milan, 1641, 4to. 1579-166 ee see Index to Remembrancia in Archives of City of London, Miinacti2 oe? 1878; Richardson, Plague and Pestilence in North of England

3

Graunt, Observations on the Bills of Mortality, 34 ed., London, 1665.

out of whom two-thirds are supposed to have fled to escape the contagion. This number is likely to be rather too low than too high, since of the 6432 deaths from spotted fever many were pro- bably really from plague, though not declared so to avoid painful restrictions. In December there wasa sudden fall in tle mortality which continued through the winter; but in 1666 nearly 2000 deaths from plague are recorded.

According to some authorities, especially Hodges, the plague was imported into London by bales of merehandise from Holland, which came originally from the Levant ; aecording to others it was intro- duced by Dutch prisoners of war; but Boghurst regarded it as of local origin. It is in favour of the theory that it spread by some means from Holland that plague had been all but extinct in London for some seventeen years, and prevailed in Holland in 1663-64. But from its past history and local conditions, London might well be deemed capable of produeing such an epidemic. In the bills of mortality since 1603 there are only three years when no deaths from plague are recorded. The uncleanliness of the eity was comparable to that of Oriental cities at the present day, and, aeeording to contemporary testimony (Garenciéres, Angliw Flagel- lum, London 1647, p. 85), little improved since Erasmus wrote his well-known description. The spread of the disease only partially supported the doctrine of contagion, as Boghurst says :— ‘‘The disease spread not altogether by contagion at first, nor began only at one place and spread further and further as an eating sore doth all over the body, but fell upon several places of eity and suburbs like rain.” In fact dissemination seems to have taken place, as usual, by the conversion of onc house after another into a focus of disease, a process favoured by the fatal custom of shutting up infected houses with all their inmates, which was not only almost equivalent to a sentence of death on all therein, but caused a dangcrous con- centration of the poison. The well-known custom of marking sueh houses with a red cross and the legend ‘‘ God have mercy upon us !” was no new thing: it is found in a proclamation in the possession of the present writer dated 1641; and it was probably older still. Hodges testifies to the futility and injurious effects of these regu- lations. The lord mayor and magistrates not only carried out the appointed administrative measures, but looked to the cleanliness of the eity and the relief of the poor,

so that there was little or no actual want ; and the burial arrangements appear to have been well attended to. The college of physicians, by royal command, put forth such advice and prescriptions as were thought best for the emergency. But it is clear that neither these measures nor medical treatment had any effect in checking the disease. Early in November with colder weather it began to deeline; and in December there was so little fear of contagion that those who had left the city ‘crowded baek as thick as they fled.” As has often been observed in other plague epidemics, sound people could enter infected houses and even sleep in the beds of those who had died of the plague ‘before they were even cold or cleansed from the steneh of the diseased ” (Hodges). The symptoms of the disease being sueh as have been generally observed need not be here considered. The discase was, as always, niost destructive in squalid, dirty neighbour- hoods and among the poor, so as to be called the ‘‘ poor’s plague.” Those who lived in the town in barges or ships did not take the disease ; and the houses on London Bridge were but little affeeted. Of those doctors who remained in the city some eight or nine died, nota large proportion. Some had the rare courage to investi- gate the mysterious disease by dissecting the bodies of the dead. Hodges implies that he did so, though he left no full account of his observations. Dr George Thomson, a chemist anda disciple of Van Helmont, followed the example, and nearly lost his life by an attack whieh immediately followed.

The plague of 1665 was widely spread over England, and was generally regarded as having been transmitted from London, as it appeared mostly later than in the metropolis, and in many cases the importation by a particular person could be traced. Places near London were earliest affected, as Brentford, Greenwich, Deptford ; but in July or August 1665 it was already in Southampton, Sunder- land, Newcastle, &c. A wider distribution oecurred in the next year. Oxford entirely escaped, though the residence of the court and in constant communication with London. The exemption was attributed to cleanliness and good drainage.

After 1666 there was no epidemic of plague in London or any part of England, though sporadic cases appear in bills of mortality up to 1679; and a column filled up with “0” was left till 1703, SE GS ele eae ea EA ARPT

4 On the plague of 1665 sce Nath. Hodges, Loimologia sive Pestis nupere apud

pulum Londinensem narratio, London, 1672, 8vo,—in English by Quiney, London, 1720 (the chief authority); Aotmoypadia, or an Experimental Relation of the last Plague in the City of London, by William Boghurst, apothecary in St Giles's-in- the-Fields, London, 1666,—a MS. in British Museum (Sloane 349), containing important details; George Thomson, AOIMOTOMIA, or the Pest Anatomized, 8vo, London, 1666; Sydenham, '¢ Fepris pestilentialis et pestis annorum 1665-66," Opera, ed. Greenhill, p. 96, London, 1844; Collection of Scarce Pieces on the Plague in 1665, London, 1721, 8vo; Defoe's fascinating Journal of a Citizen, which should be read and admired as a fiction, but accepted with caution as history; T. Vincent (minister of the gospel), God's Terrible Voice in the City, 8vo, London, 1667; Calendar of State Papers, 1665-6 (Domestic Series), by M. E. Grecn,

when it finally disappeared. The disappearance of plague in London was attributed to the Great Fire, but no such cause existed in other cities. It has also been ascribed to quarantine, but no effective quarantine was established till 1720, so that the cessation of plague in England must be regarded as spontaneous. :

But this was no isolated fact. A similar cessation of plague was noted soon after in the greater part of western Europe. In 1666 a severe plague raged in Cologne and on the Rhine, which was pro- longed till 1670 in the district. In the Netherlands there was plague in 1667-69, but there are no definite notices of it after 1672. France saw the last plague epidemic in 1668, till it reappeared in 1720. In the years 1675-84 a new plague epidemic appeared in North Africa, Turkey, Poland, Hungary, Austria, and Germany, pro- gressing generally northward. Malta lost 11,000 persons in 1675. 'The plague of Vienna in 1679 was very severe, causing 76,000 or probably more deaths. Praguc in 1681 lost 83,000 by plague. Dresden was affected in 1680, Magdeburg and Halle in 1682,—in the latter town with a mortality of 4897 out of a population of about 10,000. Many North German cities suffered about the same time; but in 1683 the plague disappeared from

Germany till the epidemic of 1707. In Spain it ceased about 1681; in Italy cer- tain cities were attacked till the end of the century, but not later (Hirsch). 5 , ,

Plague in the 18th Century.—At the beginning of this period plague was very prevalent in Constantinople and along the Danube. In 1703 it caused great destruction in the Ukraine. In 1704 it began to spread through Poland, and later to Silesia, Lithuania, Prussia, and a great part of Germany and Scandinavia. In Prus- sia and Lithuania 283,000 persons perished ; Dantzic, Hamburg, and other northern cities suffered severely. rae was attacked in 1710. In Stockholm there was a mortality of 40,000. Certain places near Brunswick (10° E. long.) marked the western limit of the epidemic ; and cholera was arrested at the same spot in later years (Haeser).

At the same time the plague spread westward from the Danube to Transylvania and Styria, and (1718) appeared in Austria and Bohemia, causing great mortality in Vienna. Thence it passed to Prague and Ratisbon —to the former, possibly to the latter, almost certainly conveyed by human intercourse. This city (12° E. long.) was the western limit reached in this year. Haeser states that the plague disappeared everywhere in Europe after the great hurricane of February 27, 1714.

In 1717 plague raged severely in Constantinople ; and in 1719 it made a fresh progress westwards into Transylvania, Hungary, Galicia, and Poland, but not farther (about 20° E. long.). It thus appears that each successive invasion had a more eastcrly western limit, and that the gradual narrowing of the range of plague, which began in the 17th century, was still going on.

This process suffered a temporary interruption by the outbreak of plague of southern France in 1720-22. In 1720 Marseilles became affected with an cpidemic plague, the origin of which was attributed by some to contagion through the ship of a Captain Chataud which arrived, May 20, 1720, from Syria, where plague at that time pre- vailed, though not epidemically when he sailed. Six of the crew had diced on the voyage to Leghorn, but the discase was declared not to be plague. Cases of plaguc occurred, however, on the ship, and on June 22 among porters unloading the cargo. Hence, according to believers in contagion, the discase passed to familics in the ‘‘old town,” the poorest and unhcalthiest quarter. In the meantime other

ships had arrived from Syria, which were put in quarantine. According to others the plague arose in Marseilles from local causes; and recently discovered data show that suspicious cascs of contagious disease occurred in the town before the arrival of Chataud's ship. Opinions were divided, and the evidence appears even now nearly balanced, though the believers in contagion and importation gained the victory in public opinion. The pestilence was fearfully severe. Thousands of unburied corpses filled the streets, and in all 40,000 to 60,000 persons were carried off. In December 1721 the plague passed away, though isolated cases oceurred in 1722. It passed to, or at least broke out in, Arles and Aix in 1720, causing great mortality, but in Toulon not till 1721, when it destroyed two-thirds of the population. The epidemic spread generally over Provence, but not to other parts of France, notwithstanding that, as confessed by D'Antrechaus, consul of Toulon, a believer in the exclusive power of contagion, there were abundant opportunities. The disease was in fact, as in other cases, self-limited. In all 87,659 persons are said to have died out of a population of nearly 250,000.2 _ This great epidemic caused a panic in England, which led to the introduction (under Mead's advicc) of quarantine regulations, never previously enforced, and also led to the publication of many

ee ee ee

1 Relation historique de la Peste de Marseille, Cologn i

: e, 1721, Paris, 1722, &e.; Se eee We ee et Reflexions é " 3 dé la 'Peste, Marscilles,

al; (ll, Lratte de la Peste, Paris, 1744; ti Ie cai Dictionnaire de Medicine, vol. xxiv., Paris, 1841, ee ee

2 D'Antrechaus, Relation de la Peste de Toulon en 1721, Paris, 1756; G. Lam-

bert, Wistotre de la Peste de Toul E pe eae eitiom, Krankh. on en 1721, Toulon, 1861, quoted by Haeser,

al

pamphlets, &c., beside Mead's well-known Discourse on Pestilential Contagion (London, 1720).

Plague in Sicily in 1748.—An outbreak of plague at Messina in 1743 is important, not only for its fatality, but as one of the strongest cases in favour of the theory of imported contagion, Messina had been free from plague since 1624, and the Sicilians prided themselves on the rigour of the quarantine laws which were thought to have preserved them. In May 1743 a vessel arrived from Corfu, on board of which had occurred some suspicious deaths, The ship and cargo were burnt, but soon after cases of a suspicious form of disease were observed in the hospital and in the poorest parts of the town ; and in the summer a fearful epidemic of plague developed itself which destroyed 40,000 or 50,000 persons, and then became extinct without spreading to other parts of Sicily.

Spread of Plague from the Hast.—Independent of the episodes of Marscilles and Messina, the spread of plague from the Hast coutinued to exhibit the above-mentioned law of limitation. In 1738-44 the discase was in the Ukraine, Hungary, the borders of Carniola, Moravia, and Austria, extending along the Carpathians as far as Poland (20° E. long.), and also in Bukowina (25° E. long.) It lasted till 1745, and then disappeared from those parts for fifteen years. In 1755-57 plague prevailed in parts of European Turkey, whence it on one occasion extended into Transylvania, in the nei bourhood of Cronstadt, where it was checked (25°'5 E. long,).?

In 1770 a destructive plague arose in Moldavia during the Russo- Turkish War, and shortly afterwards in Wallachia, apparently endemic in the former country at least. It affected also Transyl- vania and part of Hungary, and still more severely Poland, but was confined to Podolia, Volhynia, the Ukraine, and the eastern part of Galicia (25° E. long.), not even penetrating as far as Warsaw. After destroying, it is said, 300,000 persons, and without being checked by any quarantine regulations, the plague died out finally in March 1771, being remarkable for its short duration and spontaneous limitation (Haeser).

In another direction the plague spread over Little Russia in 1770, |

and desolated Kieff, while in the next year it broke out in Moscow aud produced one of the most destructive epidemics of modern times. More than 50,000 persons, nearly one-fourth of the popula- tion, were carried off.*

The remaining European plague-epidemics of the 18th century were inconsiderable, but on that very account noteworthy, Tran- sylvania was again affected in 1785, Slavonia and Livonia (a dis- trict of eastern Galicia) in 1795-96 (25° E. long.), Volhynia in 1798. The disease, while reappearing in the seats of the terrible earlier epidemics, was more limited in its range and of shorter duration.' An epidemic in Dalmatia in 1783-84 is noteworthy in connexion with es outbreaks in the same region. In the last years of the century (1799-1800) there was a new epidemic in Syria and Egypt, where it affected the French and afterwards the English army.

Plague in the 19th Centwry.—This history divides itself naturally into two periods—1800-1845, and 1858 to the present time.

1800-1845.—Plague appeared at Constantinople in 1802-3, about the same time in Armenia (Kars), and in 1801 in Baghdad. Ithad prevailed since 1798 in Georgia and the Caucasus, and in 1803-6 began to spread from the north of the Caucasus into Russia, till in 1806 it was established at or near Astrakhan, and in 1807 reached Zareff, 200 miles higher np the Volga. These localities are inter- esting as being near those where plague appeared in 1877-78. tis also said to have entered the government of Saratoff, but probably no great distance. The plague remained in the Caucasus and Georgia till 1819 at least. In 1828-31 it was in Armenia, and again il 1840-43, since which time it has not been heard of in that country.

In 1808 plague was at Constantinople, in 1809 at Smyrna. In 1812 was a more general epidemic affecting these places and also Egypt. An outbreak at Odessa is supposed to have been brought from Constantinople and thence to have passed to Transylvania. In 1818 a severe plague at Bucharest is supposed to have been brought from Constantinople. About the same time plague prevailed m Bosnia, and is supposed to have passed thence to Dalmatia in 1816. In 1814-15 it again appeared in Egypt, and once more invaded the continent of Europe in Albania and Bosnia. Two insular outbreaks, Malta in 1813 and Corfu in 1815, attracted much attention as

being both thought to be cases of importation by sea-traffic,” and there seems good reason for this opinion.

A panic spread through Europe in 1815 in consequence of an outbreak in Noja on the eastern coast of Italy, its last appearance ieee Abc icine caine Sa

3 Adam Chenot, Abhandlung von der Pest, Dresden, 1776; De Pesté, Vicnna,

766

4 Samoilowitz, Afémoire sur la Peste en Russie, 1771, Paris, 1783; Mertens, De la Peste en 1771, Paris, 1784. F .

5 Lorinser, Pest des” Orients, Berlin, 1837, p. 103; Schraud, Pest in Syrmten, 1795, 2 vols., Pesth, 1801.

6 From the annals of the Moravian community of Sarepta on the Volga, Geschichte der Brtider-Gemeinde Sarepta, by A. Glitsch, Sarepta and Berlin, 18695 also Tholozan, Epidémies de Peste du Caucase, Paris, 1879. 4

7 Faulkner, On the Plague in Malta, London, 1820, 8vo; J. D. Tully, History of the Plague in Malta, Gozo, Corfu, and Cephalonia, London, 1821, 8vo; White, Treatise on the Plague (at Corfu), London, 1847; Calvert, ‘‘On the Plague ™ Malta, 1813,” dfed.-Chi. Transactions, vi. 1.

capa: ermpremerme | ee

Pe ao U

in that country. According to one view it was imported from the opposite coast of Dalmatia, though no definite history of contagion was established ; according to others, it originated endemically in that place. It remained, however, strictly confincd to a small district, perhaps in consequence of the extraordinarily rigorous measures of isolation adopted by the Italian Government. In 1828 an isolated epidemic appeared in Greece in the Morea, supposed to have been brought by troops from Egypt.! In 1824-25

an outbreak took place at Tutehkoffin Bessarabia; the town was strictly isolated by a military cordon and the disease did not spread. Cronstadt in Transylvania was the scene of a small outbreak in 1828, which was said to be isolated by similar measures (Lorinser). A far more serious epidemic was connected with the eampaign of the Russian army against Turkey in 1828-29. Moldavia, Wallachia, and Bes- sarabia were widely affected ; the disease broke out also in Odessa and the Crimea, and isolated cases occurred in Transylvania. The most northerly points reached by the plague were near Ozernowitz on the frontier of Bessarabia, and Bukowina, and its limitation was as before attributed to the Russian and Austrian military cordons.

In 1831 another epidemic occurred in Constantinople and Roumelia ; in 1837 again in Roumelia, and in Odessa,—its last appearance in those regions, and the last on the European continent except an isolated outbreak in Dalmatia in 1840, and one in Con- stantinople in 1841.8 |

The plague-epidcmics in Egypt between 1833 and 1845, when it was last observed in that country, are very important in the history of plague, since the disease was alinost for the first time scientifically studied in its home by skilled European physicians, chiefly French. The disease was found to be less contagious than reported to be by popular tradition, and most of the French school went so far as to deny the contagiousness of the disease altogether. The epidemic of 1834-35 was not less destructive than inany of those notorious in history ; but in 1844-45 the disease disappeared, and it has never been seen since in the country which was for centuries regarded as its native home. This result can hardly be attributed to quaran- tine, though it is probable that increased attention to sanitary measures under the influence of educated medical officials may have had much to do with it. But on the large scale it is a part of the great eastward recession of the plague, which is an undoubted fact, however it is to be cxplained. In 1840 Dalmatia (17° E. long.), in 1841 Constantinople (29° E. long.), in 1848-44 the eastern parts of Kgypt (81° E. long.), were the western boundaries of plague. The same law has, with one notable cxception, been observed since.

1853-84.—Since the apparent extinction of plague in Egypt in 1845, it has appeared in several points of Asia and Africa, and once in Europe.

In 1853 plague appeared in a district of western Arabia, the Asir country in North Yemen, and it is known to have occurred in the same district in 1815, as it did afterwards in 1874 and 1879. In 1874 the disease extended within four days' march of Mecca. From the scantiness of population the mortality has not been great, but it is clear that this is one of the endemic seats of plague.*

In June 1858 intelligence was received in Constantinople of an outbreak of disease at the small town Benghazi, in the district of Barca, province of Tripoli, North Africa, which though at first misunderstood was clearly bubonic plague. From later researches there is reason to believe that it commenced in 1856 or in 1855. The disease did not spread, and ceased in the autumn, to return with less violence in 1859, when it died out. In the autumn of 1873 it returned, but apparently came again to a spontaneous termi- nation. At all events it has not been heard of since.®

After the epidemic of Benghazi in 1856-59, plague was next heard of in the district of Maku, in the extreme north-west of Persia in November 1863. It occurred in a scattered population, and the inortality was not absolutely large.®

In 1867 an outbreak of plague was reported in Mesopotamia (Irak), among the marshes of Hindieh bordering on the lower Euphrates ; and, as it has prevailed at intervals up to the present time in the same country, great importance attaches to its history. The epi- demic began in December 1866 (or probably earlier) and ceased in June 1867. But numerous cases of non-fatal mild bubonic disease (mild plague or pestis minor) occurred both before and after the epidemic, and accordin g to Tholozan similar cases had been observed nearly every year from 1856 to 1865.7

he next severe epidemic of plague in Irak began in December 1878. _ But facts collected by Tholozan show that pestis minor, or Sporadic cases of true plague, had appeared in 1868 and subsequent years. 'The outbreak of 1873-74 began about 60 miles from the origin of that of 1867. It caused a much greater mortality and extended over a much wider area than that of 1867, including the

; L A. Gosse, Relation de la Peste en Gréce, 1827-28, Paris, 1838. 3 poinser, Pest des Ortents, p. 319, : For the authorities, see Haeser, Op. cit. = Le Radcliffe, Report of Local Government Board 1879-80, suppl., p. 42. + a ozan, La Peste en Turquie dans les Temps Modernes, Paris, 1880. – Netten Radcliffe, Report of the Medical Officer of the Privy Council, &e.,

1875; also in Papers on Levantine Plague, presented to parliament, 1879, p. 7.

7 Tholozan, La Peste en Turquie, p. 86.

towns of Kerbela and Hilleh. After a short interval it reappeared at Divanieh in December 1874, and spread over a much wider area than in the previous epidemics. This epidemic was carcfully studied by Surgeon-Major Colvill.8 He estimated the mortality at 4000. The epidemic ceased in July, but broke ont again early in 1876, and in this year extended northwards to Baghdad and beyond. The whole area now affected extended 250 miles from north-west to south-east, and the total number of deaths was believed to be 20,000. In 1877 plague also occurred at Shuster in south-west Persia, probably eonveyed by pilgrims returning from Irak, and caused great mortality.

After its customary cessation in the autumn (a pause attributed as before to the efficiency of quarantine regulations), the epidemic began again in October 1876, though sporadic cases occurred all the stunmer. The disease appeared in 1877 in other parts of Mesopo- tamia also with less severity than in 1876, but over a wider area, being now announced at Samara, a town 70 miles above Baghdad on the Tigris. Since then the existence of plague in Baghdad or Mesopotamia has not bcen announced till the year 1884, when ac- counts again appeared in the newspapers, and in July the usnal official statement occurs that the plague has been stamped out. ‘The above account of plague in Irak is the most complete history of a succession of epidemics in one country which we have had of late years.

To complete the history of plague in Persia it should be stated that in 1870-71 it appeared in a district of Mukri in Persian Kurdistan to the south of

Lake Urumiah (far removed from the out- break of 1863). The epidemic appears, however, to have died out in 1871, and no further accounts of plague there have been received. The district had suffered in the great epidemic of plague in Persia in 1829-35. In the winter 1876-77 a disease which appears to have been plague appeared in two villages in the extreme north of the province of Khorasan, about 25 leagues from the south-east angle of the Caspian Sea. In March 1877 plague broke out in Resht, a town of 20,000 inhabitants, in the provinee of Ghilan, near the Caspian Sea at its south-west angle, from which there is a certain amount of trade with Astrakhan. In 1832 a very destruc- tive plague had carried off half the inhabitants. In 1877 the plague was very fatal. From March to September 4000 persons were calculated to havedied. The disease continued till the spring of 1878. In 1877 there was a doubtful report of the same disease at Astrabad, and also in some parts near the Perso-Afghan frontier. In 1878 plague again occurred in Kurdistan in the district of So-nj- Bulak, said by Dr Tholozan to be the same as in the district of Mukri where it occurred in 1870-71. These scattered outbreaks of plague in Persian territory are the more remarkable because that country has been generally noted for its freedom from plague (as compared with Asiatic Turkey and the Levant).

It has since been known that a few cases of plague occurred in January 1877 at Baku on the west shore of the Caspian, in Russian territory.®

The last outbreak of plague on European soil was that of 1878-79 on the banks of the Volga, which caused a panic throughout Europe.!° It is now known that in the summer of 1877 a disease prevailed in several villages in the neighbourhood of Astrakhan and in the city itself, which was clearly a mild form of plague (pestis minor). It caused no deaths (or only one due to a complica- tion) and died out apparently spontaneously. An official physician, Dr Kastorsky, who investigated the matter for the Government, declared the disease to be identical with that prevailing in the same year at Resht in Persia ; another physician, br Janizky, even gave it the name of pestis nostras. In October 1878 some cases appeared in the stanitza or Cossack military settlement of Vetlanka, 130 miles from Astrakhan on the right bank of the Volga, which seem to have puzzled the physicians who first observed them, but on Nov- ember 30th were recognized as being but the same mild plague as had been observed the year before near Astrakhan

by Dr Doppner, chief medical officer of the Cossacks of Astrakhan. His report on the epidemic is the only original one we have. At the end of November! the disease became suddenly more severe, and most of those attacked died; and from the 21st December it became still more malignant, death occurring in some cases in a few hours, and without any buboes being formed. No case of recovery was known in this period. At the end of the year it rapidly declined, and in the first weeks of January still more so. The last dcath was on January 24. In the second half of December, when the disease had already lasted two months, cases of plague occurred in several neighbouring villages, all of an extremely malignant type, so that in some places all who were attacked died. In most of these cases the disease began with persons who had been at Vetlanka, though this was not nniversally established. The inhabitants of these

8 See his report cited by Radcliffe, Papers on Levantine Plague, 1879.

9 J. Netten Radcliffe, Reports; Tholozan Histoire de la Peste Bubontque en Perse. Paris, 1874.

10 See Radcliffe, Reports, 1879-80 ; Hirsch and Sommerbrodt, Pest-Hpidemie, 1878-9, in Astrachan, Berlin, 1880; Zuber, La Peste d'Astrakhan en 1878 9,

| Paris, 1880; Colvill and Payne, Report to the Lord President of the Council, 1879.

11 The dates are all reduced to new style.

villages, terrified at the accounts from Vetlanka, strictly isolated the |

sick, and thus probably checked the spread of the discase. But it evidently suffered a spontancous decline. By the end of January there were no cases left in the district except at one village (Selitren- noye), where the last occurred ou the 9th February. The total number of cases in Vetlanka, out of a population of about 1700, was 417, of whom 362 died. In the other villages there were about 62 deaths from plague, and not more than two or

three cases of recovery. In consequence of the alarm excited by this last appearance of plague upon European soil, most European Govern- ments sent special commissions to the spot. The British commis- sioners were Surgeon-Major Colvill and the present writer, who, like all the foreign commissioners, reached the spot when the epidemic was over. With respect to the origin of this epidemic, the possi- bility of its having originated on the spot, as in Resht and on the Euphrates in very similar situations, is not to be denied. An attempt was made to show that the contagion was brought home by Cossacks returning from the Turkish War, but on absolutely no evidence. In the opinion of the writer the real beginning of the disease was in the year 1877, in the vicinity of Astrakhan, and the sudden develop- ment of the malignant out of a mild form of the disease is no more than has been observed in other places. ° The Astrakhan disease may have been imported from Resht or Baku, or may have becn caused concurrently with the epidemics of these places by some cause affecting the basin of the Caspian geuerally. But the condi- tions under which these mild or miasmatic forms of plague are spread are as yet unknown. ;

Plague in India.—It used to be held as a maxim that plague never appeared east of the Indus; nevertheless it has been observed during this century in more than one distinct centre in India. So long ago as 1815 the disease appeared in Guzerat, Kattywar, and Cutch, “after three years of severe famine.” It reappeared early next year, in the same locality, when it extended to Sind as far as Hyderabad, and in another direction south-east as far as Ahmeda- bad and Dhollerah. But it disappeared from these parts in 1820 or early in 1821, and was not heard of again till July 1836, when a disease broke out into violence at the town of Pali in Marwar in Rajputaua. It spread from Pali to the province of Meywar, but died out spontaneously in the hot season of 1837, and has never been heard of again in that part of India. The origin of these two epidemics was obscure. No importation from other countries could be traced.

In 1823 (though not officially known till later) an epidemic broke out at Kedarnath in Gurwhal, a sub-district of Kumaon on the south-west of the Himalayas, on a high situation. In 1834 and 1836 other epidemics occurred, which at last attracted the attention of Government. In 1849-50, and again in 1852, the disease raged very severely and spread southward. In 1853 Dr

Francis and Dr Pearson were appointed a commission to inquire ‘into the malady. In 1876-77 another outbreak occurred, since which time no accounts of the epidemic have been received. The symptoms of this disease, called maha murree by the natives, are precisely those of Oriental plague. The feature of blood-spitting, to which much importance has been attached, appears to be nota common one. A very remark- able circumstance is the death of animals (rats, and more rarely snakes), which occurs at the outbreak of an epidemic. The rats bring up blood, and the body of one examined after death by Dr Francis showed an affection of the lungs. Maha murree is intensely communicable, but does not show much tendency to spread, since pilgrims who visit the mountain shrines are not affected and do not convey the disease. It is doubtless connected with uncleanliness and poverty, but Dr Francis believes that the poison cxists in the soil, which becomes more and more coutaminated with it. The disease is pretty clearly endemic, not imported.}

It is remarkable that of late years reports have come of the occurrence of Oriental plague in China. It has been observed in the province of Yunnan since 1871, and also at Pakhoi, a port in the Tong-king Gulf, as lately as 1882,—but said to have prevailed there at least fifteen years. In Yunnan it appears to be endemic, though there are rumours of its having been brought from Burmah, and become more noticeable after the suppression of a rebellion in that province. The climate is temperate and the country partly mountainous. Some regard the disease as being conveyed from Pakhoi to Yunnan. In both places the symptoms were the same, of undoubted bubonic plague. It has always been noticed, as in India, that rats leave their holes and die at the beginning of an epidemic ; and the same mortality has been observed among cats, dogs, cattle, ponies, deer, &. At Pakhoi it recurs nearly every

year. Uncleanly habits have much to do with fostering the disease.

1 On Indian plague, see Francis, Trans. Epidi i 3 Dl: i . Epidem. Soc, Lond., vol. iv. pp. 407-8

i aie tbid,, vol. iv. part 2; J. N. Radcliffe, Reports of Local ae eee

oard, 1875, 1876, 1877, and for 1879-80 ; Parliamentary Papers, 1879; Frederick Forbes, On Plague in North-West Provinces of India, Edinburgh, 1840 (Disserta- tion); Hirsch, Handbuch der historischen-geogr. Pathologie, vol. i. p. 209, 1860 ens. trans, by Creighton, London, 1883); Hecker's Volkskrankhetiten des Mittel- alters, Berlin, 1865, p. 101; Webb, Pathologia Indica, 24 ed., Calcutta, 1848,

2 See J. N. Radcliffe's Report for 1879-80, p. 45; Manson in Reports of Imperial

It thus appears that at the present time plague exists, or hag existed within ten years, in the following parts of the world :—(1) Benghazi, Africa ; (2) Persian Kurdistan ; (3) Irak, on the Tigris and Euphrates; (4) the Asir country, western Arabia; (5) on the lower Volga, Russia; (6) northern Persia and the shores of the Caspian ; (7) Kumaon and Gurhwal, India; (8) Yunnan and Pak- hoi, China, Except Benghazi all these places show an eastward recession as compared with the old seats of plague known to us,

Literature.—See the following works, besides those already quoted 3 :—Kamin- tus, Regim en contra epidimiam sive pestem, 4to, circa 1494 (many editions); Jacobus Soldus, Opus insigne de Peste, 4to, Bologna, 1478; Alex. Benedictus, De Observatione in Pestilentia, 4to, Ven., 1493; Nicolaus Massa, De Febre Pestilentia, 4to, Ven., 1556, &c.; [Fioravanti, Regimento della Peste, 8yo, Ven., 1565]; John Woodall, The Surgeon's Mate, folio, London, 1639; Van Helmont, Tumulus Pestis, 8vo, Cologne, 1644, &c.; [Muratori, Trattato del Governo della Peste, Modena, 1714]; John Howard, An Account of Lazaretioes in Europe, &ei, 4to, London, 1789; Patrick Russell, A Treatise of the Plague, 4to, London, 1791 i' Thomas Hancock, Researches into the Laws of Pestilence, 8vo, London, 1821; [Foderé, Legons sur les Epidémies, &c., 4 vols. 8v0, Paris, 1822-24]; [Ségur Dupcyron, Recherches Historiques, &c., sur la Peste, 1837]; Bulard, La Peste Orientale, 8vo, Paris, 1839; Griesinger, Die Infectionskrankheiten, 2d ed., Byo, Erlangen, 1864, (I. FPS

PLAICE (Pleuronectes platessa), a species of Flat-fish, common on the coasts of northern Europe from Iceland to the Bay of Biscay. It is readily

recognized by the yellow or orange-coloured spots which are placed in a row along the dorsal and anal fins, and scattered over the body, The eyes are on the right side, and the teeth in the jaws compressed and truncate. The scales are minute and smooth. In the dorsal fin from sixty-seven to seventy-seven rays may be counted, in the anal from fifty’to fifty- seven. Plaice, like other flat-fishes, prefer a. sandy flat bottom to a rocky ground, and occur in suitable localities in great abundance; and, as they belong to the better class of fishes for the table, immense quantities are brought to the market. They spawn early in spring, and are in finest condition in the month of May. Individuals of seven or eight pounds weight are considered fish of large size, but specimens of double that weight have been caught. Plaice grow quickly and are tenacious of life; and, as they thrive in brackish water, their culture in littoral back-waters would seem to be deserving of every attention.

PLAINFIELD, a city of the United States, in Union county, New Jersey, lies at the foot of Mount Orange, and on the left side of the Green Brook, a tributary of the Raritan. It may to some extent be regarded as a residen- tial suburb of New York, from which it is distant 24 miles by the Central Railroad. The local manufactures—hats and clothing—are comparatively trifling. Laid out in 1735 and made a city in 1869, Plainfield had 5095 inhabitants in 1870 and 8125 in 1880. A railroad consisting of narrow iron bands nailed down to wooden logs was con- structed between Plainfield and Elizabeth as early as 1838. Two miles to the south-west is Washington’s Rock, a

coign of vantage from which the general used to watch:

the British movements.

PLAIN SONG, or Puain Cuant (Gregorian Music; Lat. Cantus planus ; Ital. Canto Gregoriano; Fr. Plain Chant), a style of music, easily recognizable by certain strongly-marked characteristics, some very ancient frag- ments of which are believed to have been in use under the Jewish dispensation from a remote period, and to have been thence transferred to the ritual of the Christian church.

The theories advanced as to the origin of this solemn form of ecclesiastical music are innumerable. The most widely-spread opinion is that the older portion of it originated with the Psalms themselves, or at least sprang from the later synagogue music. Another theory traces the origin of plain song to the early Greeks; and the supporters of this view lay much stress on the fact that the scales in which its melodies are composed are named after the old Greek “modes.” But, beyond the name,

Chinese Customs, special series No. 2, for half-year ended 31st March 1878, 15th

issue, Shanghai; Lowry, “Notes on Epidemic Disease at Pakhoi,” 1882, ¢#d., 24th issue, p. 31.

3 Those in square brackets [ ] have not been seen by the writcr.

no connexion whatever exists between the two tonalities, which bear not the reniotest resemblance to each other. Less reasonable hypotheses attribute the origin of plain song to the Pheenicians, to the Egyptians, to the early Christian converts, and to the musicians of the Middle Ages. These divergent views, however, though entirely

hypothetical, are defended by arguments so voluminous |

that for the elucidation of the subject we must con- tent ourselves with referring the rcader to the works of Gerbert, P. Martini, P. Kircher, Mersennus, P, Lambil- lotte, the Abbé Raillard, Coussemaker, Kiesewetter, Jakob, Ambros, and other authors, who have treated it at great length.

The earlicst important fact upon which we can rest with absolute confidence is that towards the close of the 4th century Ambrose of Milan, fearing the loss or corruption of the venerable melodies which up to that time had been preserved to the church by means of oral tradition only, endeavoured to restore them as nearly as possible to their primitive purity, and at the same

time to teach the clergy to sing them with greater precision than had previously been attempted. A still more extensive work of the same nature was undertaken, two centuries later, by Pope Gregory the Great. And thus arose two schools of ecclesiastical music, still known as the “ Ambrosian” and the “ Gregorian chant,”—the first of which is now practised only in the diocese of Milan, while the latter is universally accepted as the authorized “Roman use.” In order to explain the essential differences existing between these two schools, we must here describe in detail some of the peculiar characteristics of plain song to which allusion has been made.

The melodies which collectively form the repertoire of plain chant are not written in modern major and minor scales, but in certain tonalities bearing names analogous to those of the early Greek “‘ modes,” though constructed on very different principles. Of these “modes,” fourteen exist in theory, though twelve only are in practical use. The intervals of each ‘“‘mode” are derived from a funda- mental sound, called its “final.” The compass of each

mode comprises eight sounds,—that of the first, third, | fifth, seventh, ninth, eleventh, and thirteenth ‘‘ modes,” |

extending to the octave above the “final,” and that of the second, fourth, sixth, eighth, tenth, twelfth, and fourteenth, extending from the fourth note below the final to the fifth note above it. Consequently, the “finals” of the first series, called the “authentic modes,” occupy the lowest place in each system of sounds, and those of the second series, called the ‘“‘plagal modes,” the middle place,—the same “final” being common to one “authentic” and one “Pplagal mode.” The following table exhibits the entire system, expressed in the alphabetical notation peculiar to modern English music,—the “final” being indicated in each case by an asterisk, and the position of the semitones, from which each mode derives its distinctive character, by brackets,

Authentic Modes.

”

1. Dorian,*D, E, F, G, A, B, G, D.

. tay 3, Phrygian, *E, F, G, A, B, 6, D, E.

J

Plagal Modes. oa -_— 2. Hypodorian, A, B, C, *D, E, F, G, A. sen, -_— 4. Hypophrygian, B,C, D, *£, F,G, A, B.

ja i me = Be 5. Lydian, *F, G, A, B, G, D, £, F. 6. Hypolydian, C, D, E,*F, G, A, B, C. —_— “a <<

— Wiens, <> a 8. Hypomixolydian,D,E, A eu lb ia – Holian, “A, B,C, D, E, F, G, A. 10. Hypoeolian, E, F, G, *A, B, C, D, E. lL. Lorian, *B, 6, D, BE ; “KODE » 8,0,), &, FSG, ALB. 12. Hypolocrian, F, G, A, *B, C, D, E, F. : —., em, 13. Tonian, *C, D, E, F, G, A, B,C. 14. Hypoionian, G, A, B,*C, D, E, F, G. i c a . oa _ and 12 in this series are rejected, for technical reasons into which we not space to enter; they are practically useless 2

hay Of these modes Ambrose used four only—the first four

7. Mixolydian, *G, A, B, C, D, E, F, G.

1

: pe ots to the tonic or key-note of the modern scale.

a es fuller information on the subject see the article “ Modes, ¢ Ecclesiastical,” in Sir G. Grove’s Dictionary of Music.

“authentic modes,” now numbered 1, 3, 5, and 7. Gregory acknowledged, and is said by some historians of credit to have invented, the first four “plagal modes,”—Nos 2, 4, 6, and 8. The use of the remaining “modes,” except per- haps the ninth, was not formally authorized until the reign of Charlemagne, who published an official decision upon the subject. In one or

other of the twelve “modes” recognized by this decision, every plain-chant melody is composed. ‘The number of such melodies preserved to us the genuineness of which is undoubted is immensely large ; and the collection is divided into several distinct classes, the most important of which are the melodies proper to the Psalm-Tones and Antiphons ; the Ordinarium Missex ; the Introits, Graduals, and Offertoria; the Prefationes, Versiculi, and Responsoria; the Hymns and Sequences ; and the Lamentationes, Exultet, and other music used in Holy Week.

Of these classes the most interesting by far is that which includes the psalm-tones, or psalm-tunes, called by niodern English historians, the ‘Gregorian tones.” The oldest of these are tones 1, 3, 5, and 7, as sung by Ambrose. The antiquity of tones 2, 4, 6, and 8 is less firmly established, though there is no doubt that Gregory the Great sanctioned their use on strong traditional evidence. In addition to these, a peculiarly beauti- ful melody in mode 9, known as the Yonus peregrinus, has been sung from time immemorial only to the psalm In exitu Israel. The oldest version of this melody now extant is undoubtedly to a certain extent impure; but tradition imputes to it a very high antiquity, and cven our doubts as to the authenticity of the now generally accepted reading extend only’to one single note. A widely-accepted tradition points out this melody as the tune sung to Jn exttu Israel, as part of the Great Hallel (see Psaums), which is genetally (but hardly rightly) identified with the hymn sung by our Lord and His apostles immediately after the institution of the Last Supper.

One very powerful argument in favour of the Jewish origin of the psalm-tones lies in the peculiarity of their construction. We are not aware that this argument has ever been previously brought forward; but it is im- possible to subject the venerable melodies to minute examination without observing their perfect adaptation to the laws of Hebrew poetry, as opposed to those which governed Greek and Latin verse. The division of the tune in every case, without exception, into two distinct strains, exactly balancing each other, points assuredly to the intention of singing it to the two contrasted phrases which, inseparable from the constitution of a Hebrew verse, find no place in any later form of poetry. And it is very remarkable that this constructional peculiarity was never imitated, eithe: in the earliest hymns or antiphons we possess or in those of the Middle Ages,—evidently

| because it was found impossible to adapt it to any medi-

eeval form of verse—even to the Z’e Deum, which, though a manifest reproduction of the Hebrew psalm, was adapted by Ambrose to a melody of very different formation, and naturally so since so many of its phrases consist of a single clause only, balanced in the following verse. ‘ This peculi- arity now passes for the most part unnoticed ; and the Ze Deum is constantly sung to a psalm-tone, very much to the detriment of both. But in the Middle Ages this abuse was unknown; and so it came to pass that, until the “School of the Restoration” gave birth, in England, to the single chant, avowedly built upon the lines of its Gregorian predecessor, and a somewhat later period to the double one, so constructed as to weld two verses of the psalm into one, often with utter disregard to the sense of the words, the venerable psalm-tones stood quite alone— the only melodies in existence to which the psalms could ax. -= 22

be chanted. And so intimate is the adaptation of these plain-chant melodies to the rhythm as well as to the sense of the sacred text, even after its translation into more modern languages, so strongly do they swing with the one and emphasize the other, that it is difficult to believe that the composition of the music was not coeval with that of the poetry. . f

Next in antiquity to the psalm-tones are the melodies adapted to the antiphons, the offertoria, the graduals, and the introits, sung at high mass. Those proper to the Ordinarium Misse are probably of later date. Those belonging to hymns and sequences are of allages. Among the latest we possess—perhaps the very latest of any great importance—is that of Lauda Ston,—a very fine one, in modes 7 and 8, adapted to the celebrated sequence written by Thomas Aquinas about 1261. ,

To the melodies adapted to the Lamentationes and the Fxulte, as sung in the Church of Rome during Holy Week, it is absolutely impossible to assign any date at all. All we know is that they are of extreme antiquity, and beautiful beyond all description. The melody of Hxultet is, indeed, very frequently cited as the finest example of plain song in existence.

To assert that melodies so old as these have been handed down to us in their original purity would be absurd. But the presence of corruption rarely passes undetected by the initiated; and vigorous efforts have been made from time to time to purify the received text by reference to the oldest and most trustworthy MSS. attainable. Such an effort was made on a very extensive scale by the ‘Congregation of Rites,” at the instigation of Pope Pius IX., in the year 1868; and the labours of that learned body, still in active progress, are doing all that can now be done towards the restoration of plain chant to the highest state of purity possible in the present stage of its existence. (Ww. S. RB.)

PLANARIANS. The name Planaria was first applied by O. F. Miiller in his Prodromus Zoologize Danicx (1776) to a group of worms, inhabitants of fresh and salt water, characterized, so far as was then known, by a flattened ,eaf-like forn. Ehrenberg in 1831 changed this name to Turbellaria on account of the cilia with which the body is furnished, by means of which the worms create a whirl- pool in the surrounding water. The extent of this group was subsequently more restricted, and at present the name Turbellaria is applied to all those (mainly free-swimming) Platyhelminths whose body is clothed externally with a ciliated epidermis (fig. 9), and which possess a mouth and (with the exception of one division) an alimentary canal, but are without ananus. The Turbellarians, exclud- ing the NEMERTINES (¢.v.), which until recently were classed with them, form an order of the class Platyhelminthes, and the old name Planaria is now confined to a group of the fresh-water representatives of this order.

Size and External Characters. — Many forms of the Turbellarians are so minute as to be hardly visible with the naked eye, while others attain to a length of several inches, and a land Planarian of no less than 9 inches in length has been described by Moseley. The freshwater forms are generally small, the largest representatives of the order being marine or terrestrial. The smaller Species are mostly cylindrical, or convex dorsally and flat ventrally ; the anterior extremity is commonly trun- cated and the posterior extremity pointed (fig. 1, a, 6). The larger aquatic forms are thinner in proportion to the increasing surface of the body, so that they come to resemble thin leaf-like lamelle (d), while the large land Planarians instead

of increasing in superficies grow in length (¢ and J), so that they may be best compared to leeches. The larger aquatic forms are frequently provided

with tentacles in the shape of paired finger-like processes or ear-like folds of the anterior part of the body (d and g); sometimes the tentacles are papillary outgrowths of the dorsal surface; the land Planarians are often to be distinguished by a crescent-shaped area at the fore end of the body, which is separated off from the rest (f). In many cases the whole dor sal surface is beset with papillae (d). The aper- ture of the mouth varies greatly in its position ; sometimes it is situated at the anterior extremity, sometimes in the middle of the ventral surface of the body, occasionally quite close to the posterior ex- tremity; the single com- mon or distinct male and female generative aper- tures are also situated upon the ventral surface of the body, and the former in rare cases open in com- mon with the mouth ; the genital apertures always lie behind the mouth. Many Turbellarians have a sucker which serves to attach the animal to sur- rounding objects, or to another individual during copulation.

Integument.—The integument is composed of a single layer of ciliated epithelium ; between the cilia there are often long flagella and stiff tactile hairs and even (ina single instance) chitinous spines; these latter must be regarded as local thickenings of the firm cuticle which covers the epidermic cells. The epidermic cells are flat or columnar, and are united to each other by smooth opposed margins or by denticulate processes which fit into similar processes in the adjacent cells (fig. 2). Sometimes the epidermic cells are separated by an interstitial nucleated tissue. The structure and functions of the cells of the epidermis differ, and four varieties are to be found :—(a) indifferent ciliated cells; (b) cells containing certain definite structures (rhabdites, nematocysts); (c) gland cells; and (d) glutinous cells (Klebzellen). The rhabdites are refracting homogeneous rod-like bodies, of a firm consistency, which are met with in most Turbellaria, and often fill all the cells of the epidermis ; they are not always found entirely within the cells, but the extremity often projects freely on to the exterior of the body. They are readily extruded from the cells by pressure, and are often found in great abundance in the mucus secreted by the glandular cells (many

Turbellarians, like snails, deposit threads of mucus along their track); in this case the epidermic cells become perforated like asieve. In many Turbellarians the rhabdites are chiefly massed in the anterior part of the body ; fre- quently there are several varieties of rhabdites in one and the same species,—some' being pointed at both ends, others cylindrical with truncated extremities. These structures are either formed directly in the ordinary epidermis cells as a kind of secreted product of the cell, or in special formative cells which lie beneath the integument and are connected with the epidermis cells by protoplasmic fila- ments, by means of which the rhabdites reach the surface

Fig. 1.—a, Convoluta paradoxa, Oe.; b, Vor- tex viridis, M. Seh.; ¢, Monotus fuseus, Gff.; d@, Thysanozoon brochit, Gr., with elevated anterior extremity (after Joh. Schmidt); e, Rhynchodemus terrestris, 0. F, Miiller (after Kennel); 7, Bipaltum ceres, Mos, (after Moseley); g, Polycelis cornuta, O. Seh., attached by the pharynx (ph) to a dead worm (after Johnson), All the figures of natural size, and viewed from the dorsal surface,

of the body. These cells must be regarded as epidermic

cells which have become disconnected with the epidermis itself, and wandered into the subjacent parenchyma, 'The function of the rhabdites seems to be to support the tactile sense. In rare instances nematocysts are present which in structure and development entirely resemble those of the Celentera (see vol. xii. p. 550). Very com- monly structures known as pseudo-rhabdites are present ; these have a rod-like form, but instead of being homo- geneous are finely granular; they are an intermediate step between the rhabdites proper and a granulated secretion occasionally thrown off by the gland cells. The unicellu- lar glands are either situated among the epidermic cells or in the parenchyma, in which case they are connected with the exterior only by the excretory duct. A peculiar modi- fication of the epidermic cells are the so-called " glutinous cells," which occur on the ventral surface or at the hinder end of the body of many Turbellarians, and compensate for the suckers; the surface of these cells is furnished with numerous minute processes by means of which and a sticky

secretion the animals can attach themselves to sur- rounding objects. Sometimes the epidermic cells contain caleareous concretions, and very commonly pigment is found either in the cells themselves or within the inter- stitial tissue. The colours of Turbellarians are, however, not always due to the pigment of the epidermis but to pigment contained in the parenchyma. Beneath the epidermis is a basement membrane (fig. 2, bm) which is in

oll.

ESE “4 TAA pam

iy

Fic. 2.—Integument of Mesostoma lingua, O. Sch. On the right hand is the epidermis (z) with perforations (7) through which the rhabdites (s¢) projeet. Beneath this the basement membrane (6m), and beneath this again the muscular layers consisting of cireular (rm), diagonal (sm), and longitudinal (7m) fibres,

some cases very delicate and structureless, and in other

cases much thicker and enclosing branched cells; this membrane is attached more firmly to the subjacent tissue than to theepidermis. Since this tissue is the strongest in the body, and serves as a surface of attachment for the

Inuscles, it has been termed by Langa skeletal membrane.

The third section of the integument is formed by the muscular layers. These form a continuous covering to the rest of the body, but their arrangement and thickness are very different in different forms. In the smaller species

(Rhabdoceelidi) there are two layers, an outer circular and

an inner longitudinal, only in a few cases the circular layer

is external to the longitudinal ; sometimes there are three distinct layers, as in fig 2, where a diagonal layer is inter- posed. The larger forms (Dendrocelida) have a much more complicated muscular system: in the

most differen- uated forms there are six separate layers (two circular, two diagonal, and two longitudinal), which are, however, always less developed upon the dorsal than upon the ventral surface in that the thickest layer of the ventral

Surface (the innermost longitudinal) is absent or very

feebly developed upon the dorsal side. Besides the

integumentary muscular system, there are also found dorso- ventral muscular bands which ‘traverse the whole body from the dorsal to the ventral basement membrane, being branched at both extremities, and the special muscles of the pharynx, genital organs, and suckers.

The perivisceral cavity, bounded by the integument and traversed by the dorso-ventral muscles, contains the organs’ of the body—alimentary canal, excretory system, nervous system, and genital glands. The space left between these organs is filled with parenchyma; the latter varies much in appearance and is very difficult to study. Generally it consists of a network.of fibres and trabeculae, which contain nuclei, and between which is a system of cavities filled during life with the perivisceral fluid. These cavities are generally but few in number and vary with the stronger or feebler development of the reticulum ; they occasionally contain free cells.

Alimentary Canal.—All Turbellarians are furnished with a mouth, which, as there is no anus, serves both to take in nutriment and expel the undigested remains of food. The alimentary canal consists of a muscular pharynx andan intestine. The pharynx (figs 3, 5 to 8, ph) is cylindrical in form, rather complicated in structure, and surrounded by a muscular sheath, which opens on to the exterior by the mouth (m). Often the pharynx consists merely of a circular fold lying within the pharyngeal pouch (fig. 8); it can be protruded through the mouth and acts like a sucker, so that the animal can fasten itself upon its prey and draw it into the intestine by suction. At the junction of the pharynx with the intestine open the salivary glands, which are frequently large and well- developed (fig. 5, 8). The intestine (7) has a very characteristic form in the different sections, and has long served to divide the Zwurbellaria into two groups :—(1) Rhabdocelida, with a straight unbranched intestine (figs. 5, 6), and (2) Dendroceelida, with

a branched intestine (figs. 7, 8). In the latter group Lang has recently called attention to further differences that exist in the form of the intestine : in the Z'ricladida (fig. 7) there is no central "stomach," but three equally-sized intestinal branches (which have secondary ramifications) unite together to open into the pharynx ; in the second group, the Polycladida (fig. 8), there is a median stomach (st), from which numerous intestinal branches arise; this stomach communicates directly with the pharynx; the branches of the intestine are much ramified and often form an anastomosing net- work. The epithclium of the intestine is a single layer of cells generally not ciliated, capable of protruding amceboid processes by which the food is absorbed ; the digestion of these animals is intracellular. Sometimes a muscular coat surrounds the intestine, the lumen of which is thus capable of being totally or partially contracted. To the above-mentioned divisions of the group, distinguished from each other by the varying form of the alimentary tract, another has been added, viz., the Acala (Ulianin), which are characterized by the entire absence of any intestine. In these forms (fig. 4) the mouth leads directly into the parenchyma of the body by a short tube which is merely an invagination of the integument; the paren- chyma is a syncytium, consisting of a soft protoplasmic mass with scattered nuclei, which represents the elements of the intestine and the body parenchyma (ento- and mesoderm) completely fused and without any traces of differentiation. This fact, as well as the disappearance of a nervous and excretory system, reduces the Acela to the lowest position not only among the 7'urbellaria, but among the whole group of the Vermes.

Excretory System.—The excretory system of the Turbel- larians is quite similar to that of the Trematodes and Cestoids; it consists of (1) the main trunks with their

external aperture, (2) the secondary branches of these, and (3) the excretory cells with the fine tubules leading from them. Rarely is there but a single main excretory trunk present opening at the hinder end of the body (Steno- stoma); generally there are a pair of such trunks which open in common at the hinder end of the body, or separately (most Rhabdocela), or by the mouth (fig. 3). In the Tricladida there are two or four lateral trunks present

which open by a number of pores arranged in pairs upon the dorsal surface of the body ; the same appears to be the case in the Polycladida. The main trunks of the excretory sys- tem are generally much twisted in their course, and anastomose with each other; they receive the fine tubules either directly or, as in the Rhabdocela, there is a network of secondary tubules interposed. The excretory cells are pear-shaped ; they are branched and furnished with a nucleus and a large vacuole which is directly continuous with the lumen of the tubule; from the boundary wall of the vacuole springs a single flagellum, which depends into the lumen of the tubule and is capable of active movement. Lang discovered in a marine form of the Tricladida (Gunda) similar vacuo- F's. 3.—Main trunks Of the ox: lated cells with a single flagellum chrenberga, O. Sch. – Open among the epithelial cells of the {f, ea 'intestine, and came to the conclu- sion that the excretory cells were on that account derived from the epithelium of the intestine. The movements of the excretory fluid towards the external pore are directed by this flagellum as well as by cilia developed upon the walls of the fine tubules; the motion of all these cilia is such as to drive the contents of the tubules towards the excretory pore. The main trunks of the excretory system are either sparsely (Z'ricladida according to Jijima) or com- pletely (Polycladida according to Lang) lined with cilia. Nervous System.—The central organ of the nervous system, the brain (cn), is a double ganglion at the anterior end of the body, and has been noticed in all the known forms with the exception of the Acela. It is situated in front of or above the pharynx ; in those species in which a process of the intestine extends beyond the region of the brain (cf. figs. 7 and 8 viewed from the ventral surface) it is placed below this. In such cases there is sometimes.a com- missure encircling the prolongations of the intestine. Each of the two ganglia gives off a strong longitudinal nerve cord (figs. 5-8, 7m) from which arise branches going to the various organs of the body. The structure of the nervous system is somewhat different in the Lhabdocela, Tricla- dida, and Polycladida. In the first group (figs. 5, 6) the two longitudinal cords and their branches are the most feebly developed, and there is but rarely (Mesostoma, Monotus) a transverse commissure uniting the longitudinal _ cords. These cords are very large in the Z'ricladida,

where the brain is to be regarded as a simple thickening of them ; in this group there are numerous transverse com- missures between the longitudinal nerve cords (fig. 7), and the nerves arising from them and passing to the periphery form a subcutaneous nerve plexus within the muscular coat. Lang has observed a similar nerve plexus in the Polycladida, the central nervous system of which differs from that of the Tricladida in that a number of stout nerve cords radiate outwards from the brain as well as the

a |

PLANAR YANS

two longitudinal cords; they are all united together by m

508

5

Cow

oS soa Zo

yy sa)

Bee gas

CY)

Cy aoe oc

TA) ORR

•

Ox o OER

Pez

fox Bae Ue

Fig. 5. e, eye; m, mouth; of, otolith; ov, ovary ; p, digesting parenchyma; ¢, testicular follicles ; vs, vesicula seminalis %, male organ of copulation; ¢ 9, common sexual aperture.

Fig. 4. Fic. 4.—Plan of an Aecelous Turbellarian,

Fic. 5.—Plan of a Rhabdoceelous Turbellarian. bc, bursa copulatrix ; cn, brain; e, eye; g, germarium; ¢, intestine ; In, longitudinal nerve trunk ; m, mouth; ph, pharynx ; rs, reeeptaculum seminis; s, salivary gland; ¢, testis; u, uterus (containing an egg); v, yelk gland; vs, yesicula scminalis; , chitinous copulatory organ; Q, common sexual aperture; bc, bursa copulatrix.

numerous commissures, and a network is thus formed which extends throughout the body.

ei i

iD

i\

Ares z WA

Fig. 7. Fig. 6.—Plan of an Alloioecelous Turbellarian. Lettering as in fig. 5.

Fig. 6.

4,, auterior, and Zt, 43, paired posterior branches of

Fie. 7.—Plan of a Tricladid. d Q, female

intestine; od, oviduct; te, tentacle; vd, vas deferens; 3, male, an copulatory organ. Other letters as in fig. 5.

- Sense Organs.—These are represented by tactile organs,

auditory organs (otoliths), andeyes. The whole surface of the body is very sensitive and (¢.g., in the Polycladida). con- tains cells which end in tufts of fine hairs, so that certain regions thus become specially sensitive and serve as tactile organs. The anterior pointed extremity of the body in the Rhabdocela is characterized by an abundant develop- ment of rhabdites and tactile hairs, and thus becomes a special tactile organ ; in other cases this region of the body is transformed into a conical tactile proboscis which can be retracted into a sheath (Proboscida). In the freshwater Tricladida the anterior margin of the head is richly inner- vated, and is beset with a special row of tactile cells which contain no rhabdites ; in the terrestrial forms of the same family (Bipaliwm) Moseley has described a row of papille along the crescent-shaped anterior extremity which can be

Fig, 8.—Plan of a Polycladid. cn, brain; @, intestinal branches; 4), anterior Unpaired intestinal branch; Im, longitudinal nerve cord; m, mouth; od, oviduct ; ov, ovarian follicle ; ph, pharynx ; p2;, pharyngeal pouch ; st, stomach; t, testicular follicle; u, uterus; vd, vas deferens; ¢, male copulatory organ, with the male aperture behind; Q, female copulatory organ, with the female aperture before it, The cyes are omitted.

extended and form tactile organs ; between the papill are peculiar ciliated grooves connected with nerves. Polycladida there are tactile cells with stiff hair-like pro-

cesses on the summit of the dorsal papillz and the various | tentacular structures; the tentacles in this family also |

Serve to support the eyes.

The majority of the Turbellarians possess eyes; the Khabdocelida commonly have two or four, as also have the Pricladida ; the latter, however, are in some instances furnished with a greater number arranged in a continuous row round the anterior end of the body ; in the Poly- cladida there are from fourteen to several hundred eyes arranged in two symmetrical groups round the brain or

In the ;

scattered over the whole of the anterior margin of the body and upon the tentacles. The eyes are always situ- ated beneath the integument within the parenchyma, sometimes directly upon the brain or connected with it by special optic nerves. In its simplest form the eye is a pigmented spot with or without a refractory lens-like body ; the more complicated eyes consist of a pigmented sheath containing a number of refracting rods which are connected at their outer extremity with a series of retinal cells, one to each rod; the retinal cells are prolonged into a nerve thread running to the brain; the arrangement of the visual elements is therefore precisely the same as in the vertebrate eye. Of great interest is the fact that in the Polycladida the number of eyes increases with the growth of the animal, and Lang has shown that the eyes increase in number by actual division. On the other hand Carriére has discovered by experimenting with certain freshwater Tricladida that the compound eyes (those containing a number of rods) are formed by the coalescence of several simple eyes. Only a single eye is found in the Monotida, which has the form of a simple pigment spot in front of the otolith.

Auditory organs are found in the shape of vesicles filled with fluid and containing circular lenticular or spindle: shaped otoliths formed ‘of carbonate of lime. Otolithic vesicles of this kind are found in many Lhabdoceelida (Acela, Monotida, fig. 4, ot) embedded in a depression ou the anterior surface of the brain. In the Dendrocelida these organs are but rarely present.

As a sensory organ of unknown function must be men- tioned the paired lateral ciliated grooves which are met with on either side of the brain in many Rhabdoceela (fig.

| 9, ¢); they are also found commonly in NEMERTINES (¢. v.),

but are here more complicated in structure.

Reproductive Organs.—With a few exceptions all the Turbellarians are hermaphrodite, and reproduce themselves sexually. Only among the Microstomida is there an asexual as well as a sexual reproduction. The male and female organs open to the exterior, either through a common cloaca (atriwim genitale) on the ventral sur- face (most Rhabdocelida and all Tricladida, figs. 4-7), or there are separate male and female apertures. In this case the male aperture is generally placed in front of the female aperture (some Lhabdo- celida and all Polycladida, fig. 8), but occasionally the positions are reversed (certain Rhabdocelida). The genital glands display a primitive condition in being paired, though frequently the ger- marium (fig. 5, g) of the Rhubdocela, and occasionally also the testis, is developed only upon one side of the body.

The structure of the female organs varies. In some cases there are simple ovaries (ov in figs. 4, 8) in which the ova originate and become fully mature without being furnished with the secretion of a second gland; in other cases there is a division into ger- marium (fig. 5-7, g) and yelk gland (v); the primordial ova or germs originate in the former, and absorb the products of the yelk gland in the atrium, where they become ready for fertilization. An intermediate condition is seen in those forms where there is but a simple gland present which produces germs in its upper portion and yelk in the lower portion. The ovarics are generally compact round or tubular glands (fig. 4); sometimes they are formed of a number of pear-shaped follicles (fig. 8); there is usually a simple or paired uterus (w) which retains the ova for some time before they are deposited ; sometimes, however, the ova undergo their develop- ment within the utcrus and are completely developed before expul- sion; in some cases the egg-shell is detached within the uterus so that the young are produced alive.

In Turbellarians without a yelk gland the uterus is a simple widening of the oviduct (fig. 8); in those forms which possess addi- tional yelk glands the uterus is a simple or paired diverticulum of the atrium genitale (figs. 5, 7). ‘The ova are either surrounded by a more or less hard chitinous shell, or one shell contains a number of ova (“cocoon” of Tricladida and many Polycladida). The Polycladida deposit an egg-string which like that of the Gastropoda consists of a number of eggs bound together by a transparent albumen-like mass. Many Rhabdoccel Turbellarians (¢.g., Afesostoma

ehrenbergii) produce two sorts of ova, thin-shelled summer ova and thick-shelled winter ova; the latter are capable of withstanding a considerable amount of desiccation, and are deposited in the autumn. The accessory female organs of reproduction are represented by burs seminales, which receive the semen during copulation and retain it

until fertilization is accomplished. A further division of labour is brought about by the presence of two diverticula of the atrium genitale, one of which serves as a bursa copulatrix (fig. 5, bc) and the other as a receptaculum seminis (7s) in the same sense as the equivalent organs of insects. In the place of a special receptaculum seminis the efferent duct of the ovary is often (Mesostomida) metamorphosed into a chamber to contain the semen. In the Tricladida and Polycladida the female efferent duct is often differentiated into a muscular vagina which closely resembles the penis (figs. 7, 8, 2). } ‘ f

Finally, the female generative apparatus is furnished with a number of glands which have been termed cement glands, albumini- parous glands, and shell glands. hn gt

The male sexual glands (figs. 4-8, ¢) resemble the ovaries in being either compact tubular (fig. 5) or follicular (figs. 4, 6, 7, 8) strnc- tures. ‘The vasa deferentia (vd) are often widened out into vesicule semninales (figs. 4, 6, vs) ; or there are special vesicule seminales present, formed by a portion of the penis (fig. 5, vs). In the male organ of copulation there is frequently found in addition to the sperinatozoa an accessory granulated secretion produced by special glands, but of unknown function.

The muscular penis, especially in the Rhabdocela, has a number of cliitinous spines and hooks which serve to assist the animal in maintaining a firm hold during copulation, but also in capturing and retaining its prey. In Jacrorhynchus helgolandicus, Giff, there is a peculiar poison dart counected with the male copulatory organ which only serves the latter purpose. Very remarkable is the opening of the penis into the mouth cavity in Stylostomum (Polycladida) and Prorhynehus (Rhabdocela), and also the

existence of several (2-15) pairs of male copulatory organs and genital apertures in certain Polycladida.

The spermatozoa vary much in form, especially in the Rhabdo- –

celida, where frequently the species of one and the same genus are distinguished by the different form of the spermatozoa. Copulation in the Turbellarians is generally reciprocal; only in those cases where both summer and winter ova (see above) arc formed do the former arise from self-fertilization; the latter are the result of the copulation of two individuals. The fertilization of the ova always takes place in the atrium genitale. Many Turbellarians, especially the

Asexual generation is met with only in the Microstomida ; it takes the form of transverse division accompanied by budding. The posterior third of the body becomes separated off by a septum ruuning from the gut to the integument and an external furrow corresponding to this; this part of the body grows in length until it equals the anterior portion. By further repetition of this double procedure of separation and equalization there, chains of 4, then 8, 16, and 32 buds are formed, which remain attached (fig. 9), and, although fresh mouth apertures (m’, am”, m’”) have been formed, are still in communication by the intestinal lumen ; this becomes closed before or after the several buds break off from their connexion with each other. Throughout the whole summer chains of zooids are met with ; in antumn this asexual division probably ceases to occur; the several individuals become sexually mature, separate from each other, and lay eggs which remain quiescent during the winter and in the spring develop into fresh individuals reproducing asexually.

Development.—The study of the development of the Turbellarians is unfortunately not very far advanced, particularly among the small Rhabdoewlida, whieh are extremely difficult to investigate, and about whieh hardly any developmental facts are known. The larger freshwater T’ricladida and the Polycladida on the contrary have been recently very fully investigated. The Rhabdocela and the Yricladida appear to develop directly without any metamor- phosis, while a great part of the Polycladida undergo a metamor- phosis and pass through a larval condition, during which thicy are furnished with provisional ciliated processes (fig. 10); the

Acela have also a free larval form; pelagic larvee with a coat of long cilia apparently belonging to this group have becn observed by Ulianin. The segmentation of the ovum is total, but unequal; an epibolic gastrula is formed and the aperture of invagination becomes the permanent mouth of the adult.

Systematic Arrangement and Mode of Life.—Order Turbellaria.—Platyhelminths with a ciliated integument, a mouth and pharynx, but no anus ; with paired cerebral ganglia and two lateral nerve cords ; sexual organs hermaphrodite ; chiefly free-swimming.

Sub-order A. Khabdocelida.—Of small size; body cylindrical or depressed ; without an intestine, or with a simple unbranched intestine; the female genital glands always compact, not follicular ; genital apertures single or distinct.

Tribe I. Aecla (fig. 1, a).— With a digestive parenchyma not differentiated into intestine and parenchyma proper; with no nervous system or excretory organs ; sexual organs hermaphrodite, with follicular testes and paired ovaries : generally without a

RIANS

pharynx, but having otoliths ; all the forms marine. Many quite flat, with the lateral margins bent down towards the ventral surface (Convoluta), frequently with brown or green parasitic alge in the parenchyma.

Tribe II. Rhabdocela (fig. 1, 6).—Intestinal tract and paren. chyma separate; nervous system and excretory organs present; with compact testes and female generative glands (ovaries or separated germarium and yelk glands); with a complicated pharynx, but generally without otoliths. Numerous forms, freshwater and marine; the genus Prorhynchus (two species) also in damp earth. The Microstomida (he. 9) propagate asexually,

Fig. 10,

Fic. 9.—Microstoma lineare, Oc., undergoing division. There are 16 individuals, 8 with mouth apertures, showlng the buds of the first (m),

second (mm/), third (m”), and fourth (m’”) generation. The fifth generation has not yet acquired

Fig, 9.

a mouth aperture. , ciliated grooves; e, eye spots; 7, intestine. z Fic, 10.—Larva of Yungia aurantica, L. (Polycladida), with provisional ciliated processes (after A. Lang).

Freshwater forms mostly belong to the families Mesostomida and Vorticida, some of which contain green parasitic alge. Marine forms include representatives of these two families and of the Proboscida (with a tactile proboscis). Of the family Vorticida, the genera Grafilla and Anoplodiwm are parasitic, the former in Gastropods the latter in Echinoderms (Holothurians).

Tribe III. Alloiocela (fig. 1, c).—Intestinal tract and parenchyma separate ; nervous system and excretory organs present ; with folli- cular testes and compact female glands (as in the Rhabdocela) ; pharynx similarly developed as a shorter or longer sac. One family (Monotida), with otoliths. Al the species marine, with one excep- tion, Plagiostoma lemani, which lives in the deep water of the Alpine lakes.

Sub-order B. Dendrocelida,—Large forms, with a flattened body, branched intestine, follicular testes and follicular yelk glands or ovaries ; without otoliths. .

Tribe I. Tricladida.— Body elongate; intestine with three mam branches uniting to open into a cylindrical retractile pharynx 3 with follicular testes, two round germariums, and numerous yelk follicles, with a single sexual aperture. Planaria, Dendrocelum, Polycelis (fig. 1, g) are inhabitants of fresh water (with great power of reproduction). Terrestrial forms (fig. 1, ¢, /) of leech-like shape, especially met with in the tropics (only two European species Rhyn- ehodenvus terrestris and Geodesmus bilincatus) ; marine forms Gunda (characterized by a metameric structure), Bdcllowra (external para- site of Limulus).

Tribe II. Polycladida (fig. 1, d).—Body leaf-like, thin, and broad, with numerous branched or retiform intestinal cceca which unite to form a central tube (stomach) ; with follicular testes and follicular ovaries, with two separated genital apertures, the male in front of the female ; without (Acotylea) or with (Cotylea) a sucker situated behind the female generative opening. All marine.

Literature,—The most recent works, which also contain a full account of what has gone before, are the following :—Rhabdocela.—L. v. Graff, Monographte der Turbellarien: 1. Rhabdocelida, Leipsic, 1882, with 20 plates. Marine and Freshwater Tricladida.—A. Lang, " Der Bau von Gunda segmentata und die Verwandtschaft der Platyhelminthen mit Ccelenteraten und Hirudineen, 1 Mitth. Zool. Stat. Neapel, vol. iii., 1881; El. Metschnikoff, '* Dic Embryologie von Planaria polychroa," in Zeitschr. f, wiss. Zool., vol. xxxviii., 1883 ; Isao Jijima, 'Untersuchungen itber den Bau und die Entwickelungsgeschichte der Stiss- wasser-Dendrocoelen," in Zetischr f.wiss.Zool., vol. x1., 1884, Land Planartans.—

PLA]—PLA

fi. N. Moseley, "On the Anatomy and Histology of the Land Planarians of Ceylon, with some Account of their Habits, and with a Description of Two New Specics, and with Notes on the Anatomy of some European Aquatic Species," in Phil. Trans. (London, 1874), and "Notes on the Structure of several Forms of Land Planarians, with a Description of Two New Genera and Scyeral New Spccics, and a List of all Species at present known," in Quart. Jour, Micr. Sci., vol. xlvii., 1877; J.v. Kennel, " Dic in Deutschland gefundenen Landplanarien Rhynchode- mus terrestris und Geodesmus bilineatus." in Arbeit, Zool.~~Zootom. Instit. Wiirz~~ burg, v., 1879. Polycladida,—A. Lang, '' Die Polycladen," in Fauna und Flora des Golfes von Neapel, No. 11, 39 plates, Leipsic, 18S4-85. (L. v. G.)

PLANCK, Gorruirs Jaxop (1751-1833), theologian and church historian, was born at Niirtingen in Wiirtem- berg, where his father was a notary, on November 15, 1751. He was educated for the Protestant ministry at Blaubeuren, Bebenhausen, and Tiibingen, and from 1774 to 1784 held successive appointments as repetent, preacher, and professor in Tiibingen and Stuttgart. In 1781 he published anonymously the first volume of his

Geschechte des Protestantischen Lehrbegrif's; the second, also anonymous, appeared in 1783; and in 1784 he was chosen to succeed Walch at Gottingen. Here in the course of a long and useful professional career he enjoyed a large number of academical and ecclesiastical honours. His death took place on August 31, 1833.

The Geschichte des Protestantischen Lehrbegriffs was completed in 6 vols. in 1800. It was followed by an extensive Geschichte der Kirchenverfassung, in 5 vols. (1803-1809). Both are works of considerable importance, and are characterized by abundant learn- ing and acuteness, the most conspicuous fault in the eyes of his least favourable critics being a tendency, which cannot be wholly denied, to ‘‘subjective pragmatisin.”

PLANTAGENET. This surname, distinctive of a line of kings who ruled in England for more than three hundred years, was first adopted by Geoffrey, count of Anjou, in reference to a sprig of broom (planta genistx) which he is said to have worn in his bonnet. He is described by early writers as a very handsome man, but there was certainly nothing very striking in his character. He was the son of Fulk, count of Anjou, king of Jerusalem, who, before his departure for the Holy Land, placed him in possession of the counties of Anjou and Maine. This made him in the eyes of Henry J. of England, who was anxious to protect Normandy, an eligible husband for his widowed daughter, the empress Maud, whom he proposed to make his heiress, both in England and beyond sea. It was a purely political marriage, and the couple immediately afterwards had violent quarrels. Nor was either of them popular in England, where a female sovereign would at that time have been an innovation, and Geoffrey was dis- liked as a foreigner—although the same objection might have Seemed to apply to Stephen of Blois, whose superior activity gained possession of the throne before Maud could make good her pretensions. In a long war with the usurper, though recognized as “lady of England” and virtual sovereign by one part of the country, she was only able in the end to secure the succession for her son. Stephen ended his days in peace, and the house of Plantagenet succeeded to the throne in the person of Henry II. by virtue of a compact.

Henry, the son of Geoffrey of Anjou and the empress Maud, was born at Le Mans in the year 1133, and was Just twenty-one years of age when he

attained the crown. But his youth had been well spent in preparation for it. When eight years old he was brought to England to be trained in arms. At sixteen he was knighted by his great-uncle David of Scotland. In 1151 his father put him in possession of N ormandy, and, dying soon after, left him also the succession to Anjou. These advantages he improved next year by his marriage with Eleanor of Aquitaine, which, by adding Poitou and Guienne to his : tions, gave him the lordship over the whole western

© of France from north to south, with the exception of

Eas which also some time afterwards came under his er,

Having thus, even before he was twenty, become master of so many fair provinces, he then sailed to England, and, though he did not dethrone Stephen, compelled him to acknowledge him as his successor. Next year he was king. It is a new era in the history of England as well as in the fortunes of his house. The country, which was lately so impatient of the rule of a foreigner—fearing, doubtless, that English interests would be sacrificed to those of Anjou —now yields an easy submission to the ruler of all western France from Picardy to the Pyrenees. And, though Henry is in fact one of the greatest of Continental potentates, greater really than his feudal superior. the king of France, there is no great cause for anxiety. Henry devotes him- self to the interests of his island kingdom, takes steps to secure the succession there to his issue, causing his eldest son even to be crowned king during his own lifetime, and is much more intent on the subjugation of Wales and Ireland and the recognition of his feudal superiority over Scotland than upon any extension of his responsibilities abroad. Personally a man of fiery temperament and strong passions, his patience as a politician is remarkable. Bit by bit he is building up a strong empire, and even keeping the pretensions of the church within definite and reasonable bounds. But a single angry word undoes the work of years. He is responsible for Becket’s murder. He must do penance and make his peace with the church. He must humiliate himself before Becket’s grave.

His dynastic policy seemed almost an equal failure, but was productive of wide and far-reaching conseqnences. His ungrateful sons rebelled against

him, and when he heard that even John had joined the confederacy he felt that he had nothing more to live for. The eldest, Henry, whom he had been so anxious to make a king during his own life, sickened and died in France after flagrant acts of ingratitude and impiety. Geoffrey, to whom he had secured the duchy of Britanny, soon followed his brother ; and there remained but Richard and John, besides three daughters, who were all disposed of in marriage to Continental princes. As Richard, though he came to the crown, also died without legitimate issue, the male line was continued in the two sons of John, Henry III. and Richard, king of the Romans, and the issue of the latter became extinct in the next generation.

It is remarkable how the prosperity of England seemed to keep pace with the stability of the succession. The short reigns of Richard I. and John were times of peculiar misery, which was only brought to a climax by the war of the Great Charter and by the dauphin being called in to enforce it. Matters improved under Henry III, even during the minority ; but he, too, had a war with his barons in the latter part of his reign. He, too, like his father, had but two sons who grew up to manhood ; and, while the elder, Edward I., succeeded him on the throne and was the ancestor of all the following kings, the younger, Edmund Crouchback, became progenitor of the house of Lancaster by the niarriage of his great granddaughter Blanche to John of Gaunt, fourth son of Edward III. Edward I. had three sons who came to man’s estate; Edward II. only two, or more properly only one, for the second, John of Eltham, died in Scotland at the age of nineteen. Finally the time of Edward III. with his great family was the climax in the fortunes of the house of Plantagenet. Nor need we pursue the family history further, as the story of its descent after the days of Edward III. will be found sufficiently treated elsewhere (see LancasTeR, Hovsk or, and York, House oF).

Of the alliances of this great dynasty the most import- ant after the days of Henry II. were those of the house of Lancaster. Henry III. married his daughter Margaret to Alexander III. of Scotland, and another daughter to the

duke of Britanny. Edward I. had for his sons-in-law Gilbert de Clare, earl of Gloucester, the duke of Brabant, and the earl of Holland. A daughter of Edward II. married a duke of Gueldres. But “the aspiring blood of Lancaster” spread itself over Europe by alliances with Castile and Portugal, Navarre and Denmark, Bavaria and other foreign states. It has reigned in Portugal to the present day, and it continued to reign in Spain till the end of the 17th century. (3. GA.) PLANTAIN (Lat. plantago), a name given to plants with broad palm-like leaves. This is the case with certain species of Plantago, Alisma, and Musa, to all of which the term is popularly applied. Of the Plantago little need be said here, the species being for the most part mere weeds, though one species, P. lanceolata, is eaten by cattle, and the seeds of another, P. major, are collected for the food of birds. Of far greater general importance is the genus Musa, to which belong the Plantain, and the BANANA (q.v.). These are gigantic herbs, now diffused by cultiva- tion throughout the tropics of both hemispheres, and sending up from a short . thick underground stem WV shoots with a number of very large leaves whose long, thick leaf-stalks are wrapped one round another. The blades are usually oblong-obtuse, like the blade of an oar, with a very thick midrib from which diverge on each side numerous pa- rallel densely arranged secondary ribs. The flowers are borne in huge pendulous spikes _pro- vided with large boat- shaped, often coloured, bracts, in whose axils the whorls of flowers are pro- duced; the lower ones are usually female or hermaphrodite, those at the apex of the spike are male only. These flowers consist of a perianth of six divisions partly united below, slightly two-lipped above, and enclosing five perfect and one imperfect stamen. The ovary is inferior and three-celled—ripening into a long ob- long fruit filled with spongy pulp, in which the numerous seeds are embedded. The accumulation of starch and sugar in this pulp renders the fruit of vast importance as an article of diet in the tropics. Corenwinder, cited by Pavy, says that, while starchy matter forms more than 19 per cent. of the ripe fruit—there is also nearly 5 per cent. of nitrogen- ous matter, about double that of the potato. The plant requires but little attention, and the produce from a rela- tively small area is enormous ; hence it is one of the most valuable of all food-plants. After fruiting, the stem dies down, but provision for new growth is made by the pro- duction from the underground stock of numerous offsets. The number of varieties is very great, a circumstance which in itself testifies to the long period during which the plant has been cultivated. It is also the -more

remarkable in that perfect seeds are comparatively rarely produced, the inference being that the different forms have arisen from bud-variations or “sports.” In spite of the vast number of varieties grown in the tropics of both hemispheres—varieties mostly dependent on diversities in the size, form, and flavour of the fruit—the general opinion among botanists is that they have all sprung from one species, the Musa saprentum of Brown. Were it otherwise, it is presumed that the varieties found in

AMM Silly

Musa sapientum.

PLA—

PLA

America would be different from the Asiatic ones, and these again from those found in the South Sea Islands, &c.; but, as a matter of fact, there are no geographic limitations, the same varieties being found in different quarters of the globe. The varieties are arranged under two heads by Desvaux according to the size of their fruit —the bananas, with fruit 7-15 inches in length, and the fig bananas, with fruit from 1-6 inches long; but these variations are not constant, and Schomburgk has recorded a case in which a spike of the fig banana bore numerous fruits proper to that variety, and: in addition a large number of fruits like those of the Chinese dwarf-plantain, Musa chinensis, the Cavendish banana of gardens—a cage analogous to, but even more remarkable than, the not infrequent occurrence of peaches and‘ nectarines on the same branch. ‘The plantain and the banana are sometimes spoken of as distinct. The former has a green stem and yellow angular fruit not fit for eating till cooked. The banana (M. sapientum) has the stem marked with purple spots, and a shorter more cylindric fruit which may be eaten without cooking, but the two run one into the other so that no absolute distinction can be drawn between them. The species have been found ina wild state in Chittagong and Khasia, in the Philippine Islands, in Siam, and in Ceylon, but nowhere truly wild on the American continent.

Throughout tropical and subtropical Asia the plant has numerous and diverse native names; and it was mentioned by old Greek and Latin authors. On the other hand, there are no native names for the plant in Mexico, Peru, or Brazil. From such considerations as these Alphonse de Candolle, in his Origine des Plantes Cultivées, sums up the evidence by asserting the Asiatic origin of the plantain and its early introduction into America by the Spaniards or Portuguese. If it should turn out that the banana or the plantain existed in America before the discovery of that continent, then M. de Candolle would attribute that

circumstance to some fortuitous introduction at no very

remote date rather than to the simultaneous existence of the banana as an indigenous plant in both hemispheres.

It is not only for their fruit that these plants are valuable. The leaves are used for thatching, and the abundant fibre they contain forms a good substitute for hemp. Musa textilis is of special value from this point of view. The Abyssinian banana, J. Ensete, has dry capsular fruit, and very handsome foliage.

PLANTAIN-EATER. See Touraxkoo.

PLANTIN, CuristopHe (1514-1589), born in a vil lage near Tours (probably Saint-Avertin) in 1514, learned book-binding and book-selling at Caen, and, having mar- ried in that town, settled in 1549 as bookbinder in Antwerp, then the principal commercial town of the Netherlands, where he was soon known as the first in his profession. A bad wound in the arm, which unfitted him for this occupation, seems to have been the cause that first led him (about 1555) to apply himself to typography. The first known book printed in his office was La Instiw- tione di una fanciulla nata nobilmente, by J. M. Bruto, with a French translation, and this was soon followed by many other works in French and Latin, which in point of execution rivalled the best printing of his time, while the masters in the art of engraving then flourishing in the Netherlands illustrated many of his editions. In 1562, Plantin himself being absent in Paris, his workmen printed an heretical pamphlet, which caused his movables to be seized and sold. It seems, however, that he recovered a great deal of the money, and in 1563 he

associated him- self with some friends to carry on his business on a larger scale. Among them were two grand-nephews of Dan. Bomberg, who furnished him with the fine Hebrew types

He was now in a | pleasantly situated on the right bank of the Xerte or

of that renowned Venetian printer. position to spare no expense in printing his books with all the care he deemed necessary; and his editions of the Bible in Hebrew, Latin, and Dutch, his Corpus Juris, Latin and Greek classics, and many other works produced at this period are renowned for their beautiful execution and accuracy. A much greater enterprise was planned by him in those years-—the publication of a Biblia Polyglotta, which should fix the original text of Old and New Testaments on a scientific basis. In spite of clerical opposition he was supported by Philip II. king of Spain, who sent him the learned Benedictus Arias Montanus to take the leading part in the work of editorship. With his zealous help the work was finished in five years (1569-73, 8 vols. fol.). Plantin earned much renown by it, but little profit, or rather less than none ; but in conzpensation he received the privilege of printing all liturgical books for the states of King Philip, and the office of "‘ prototypo- graphus regius," which carried with it the oversight over all printers in the Netherlands, a cliarge of which Plantin seems to have acquitted himself indifferently. This need not surprise us, when we know that Plantin, though out- wardly a faithful son of the church, was till his death the partisan of a mystical sect of heretics; and it is now proved that many of their books published without the name of a printer came from his presses together with the missals, breviaries, &c., for the Roman Catholic Church.

Besides the polyglott Bible, Plantin published in those years many other works of note, such as editions of St Augustine and St Jerome, the botanical works of Dodonzus, Clusius, and Lobelius, the description of the Netherlands by Guicciardini, &ce. In 1575 his printing- office reckoned more than twenty presses and seventy-three workmen, besides a similar number that worked for the office at home. But soon there came bad times for Antwerp. In November 1576 the town was plundered and in part burnt by the Spaniards, and Plantin had to pay an exorbitant ransom. A great

many inhabitants of the once flourishing city emigrated, and Plantin also thought of settling elsewhere. He established a branch of his office in Paris; and when in 1583 the states of Holland sought a typographer for the newly erected university at Leyden, and invited him to occupy this place, he left his much reduced business in Antwerp to his sons- inlaw John Moerentorf (Moretus) and Francis van Ravel- inghen (Raphelengius), and settled at Leyden. But he could not thrive, it seems, in Holland. When in 1585 Antwerp was taken by the prince of Parma and affairs became there more settled, he left the office in Leyden to Raphelengius and returned to Antwerp, excusing himself for having served the states of the revolted provinces by the difficulties of his situation. Im Antwerp he laboured till his death on the Ist July 1589. His son-in- law, John Moretus, and his descendants continued to print many works of note “in officina Plantiniana,” but from the second half of the 17th century the house began to decline. Jt continued, however, in the possession of the Moretus family, which religiously left all the old things In the office untouched, and when in 1876 the town of Antwerp acquired the old buildings with all their contents, for 1,200,000 francs, the authorities were able with little trouble to create one of the most remarkable museums in existence (Musée Plantin, opened 19th August 1877). be Max Rooses, Christophe Plantin imprimeur Anversois,

ntwerp, 1882; Aug. de Backer and Ch. Ruelens, Annales de

pyprimerie Plantinienne, Brussels, 1865; Degeorge, La maison antin, 2d ed., Brussels, 1878. (P. A. T.)

PLANTING. Sce ARBORICULTURE. a PLASENCIA, a city of Spain and an episcopal see, in € north of the province of Caceres (Estremadura), is

197

Jerte, a sub-tributary of the Tagus, and at the foot of the sierras of Bejar and Vera, continuations of the Guadarrama range. Industrially and commercially insignificant, the place has some interest for the artist and ecclesiologist on account of its fine walls, built in 1197 by Alphonso VIII. of Castile, and of its cathedral, begun in 1498, which is a favourable specimen of the ornate Gothic of its period, and also shows good examples of the workmanship of

Berruguete, Aleman, and other artists. The population of the ayuntamiento was 7090 in 1877. The Hieronymite convent of Yuste, the scene of the last years of the emperor Charles V., lies about 24 miles to the westward, and is most conveniently reached from Plasencia.

PLASTER OF PARIS. See Gypsum.

PLATA, LA. See ARGENTINE REPUBLIC.

PLATA, RIO DE LA. See Prats River, p. 187.

PLATA, or PLatza#, a celebrated city of ancient Greece, lay at the foot of the northern slope of Mount Citheron in Beeotia, about 64 miles by road south of Thebes, or a little over 5 geographical miles in a direct line. Its territory was separated from that of Thebes by the river Asopus. The Thebans claimed to have founded Platzea, but, however this may have been, Platzea was always at feud with its more powerful neighbour. In 519 B.C. the Platzans, being hard pressed by Thebes, applied for help to the Spartan king Cleomenes, who advised them to place themselves under the protection of Athens, They did so, and Athens and Platea were thenceforward fast friends. It was perhaps on this occasion that the Plateeans were granted that restricted citizenship of Athens which we know that they enjoyed at a later time. When Athens faced the Persians alone at Marathon, the Plateeans to a man marched out to their help and shared in the victory (490 B.c.). From that day the names of Athens and Platzea were always associated in solemn prayers at Athens. Though dwellers in an inland town, and therefore ignorant of seamanship, the Platzeans helped to man the Athenian ships at the sea fight with the Persians off Artemisium (480). In revenge the Persians burned Platza. The great battle of Platsea, which finally secured the freedom of Greece against the Persians, was fought on the uneven and broken ground to the east and north of the town (September 479). After the battle the Greeks declared the city and territory of Platzea to be independent and inviolable. The Platzeans undertook to bring annual offerings of food and raiment to the graves of those who had fallen in the battle; and a festival of liberation (Eleutheria) was celebrated every fifth year. These offer- ings continued to be brought, and the festival to be held, as late as the 2d century of ourera. With the spoils of the Persian wars the Platzans raised a temple of Athene the Warlike.! The

Peloponnesian War began with an attempt of the Thebans to seize Plata (431 B.c.). The attempt failed, but in 427, after a siege of about two years, the city was taken by the Peloponnesians and the garrison put to the sword. The bulk of the population had previously taken refuge in Athens. A year afterwards the Thebans razed the city to the ground, and built a large hospice close to the old temple of Hera, to whom they erected a new temple 100 feet long. In 421 the surviving Platzans received from the Athenians the town of Scione in Macedonia as a residence, but they had no doubt to quit it at the end of the war (404). When the peace of Antalcidas was concluded between Greece and Persia (387) Platzea was restored, but a few years afterwards it was surprised and destroyed, except the temples, by the Thebans (about 373). The Platzeans were again received

1 It was built, according to Plutarch (Arist. 20), after the battle of Platea; according to Pausanias (ix. 4, 1), after the battle of Marathon.

at Athens, where they were now admitted to full citizen- ship, except that they were not eligible for the priesthood and the archonship. After the battle of Chzronea (338)

Philip of Macedon brought back the Plataeans as a counter- |

poise to the power of Thebes, but the walls were not fully restored till some years later. Alexander the Great, then monarch of Asia, contributed to rebuild them, in recog- nition, he declared, of the services which the Platzans had rendered against the Persians of old. With the loss of Greek freedom Platea sank into insignificance. The inhabitants lived on the glories of the past, and were regarded as braggarts by the rest of the Beeotians. In the 6th century the walls were once more restored by Justinian.

The fullest deseription of ancient Platea is that of Pausanias, who visited it in the 2d century. The great temple of Hera, he tells us, contained a statue of Rhea by Praxiteles; the temple of Athene the Warlike was adorned with an image of the goddess by Phidias and paintings by Polygnotus. Close to the

city gates were the tombs of the Greeks who had fallen in the battle of Platea, and an altar and image of Zeus the Liberator in white marble. The ruins of the ancient town lie about 500 yards east of the modern village of Kokhla. They oceupy a slightly elevated plateau forming a rude triangle about two and a half miles in eircumferenee, of which the apex to the south almost touches the great rocky slope of Citheron, and the base to the north has a steep though short descent to the plain. The outer walls follow the edge of the plateau, but an inner cross-wall divides it into two uncqual parts. The southern and higher part is probably as old as the Persian wars; the masonry of the northern part is more recent, and probably belongs to the age of Philip and Alexander. It is likely that these two parts were never included at the same time within the city walls, but that the southern was the ancient city, and that at one of the restorations (perhaps that of 387 B.c.) the northern and more spacious part of the plateau was preferred as the ‘site. Within this northern half, and elose to the northern wall, is a terrace on which may have stood the temple of Hera. The north-western corner of the northern town is portioned off by a wall, and is conjectured to have been the acropolis of the newer city.

See Dodwell’s Tour through Greece, i. p, 274 sq.; Leake’s Travels in Northern Ste vol. ii. chap. 16; and Bursian’s Geographie von Griechenland, vol. i. p.

PLATE. The word plate (connected with the Greek wAarvs, flat, the late Latin plata = lamina, and the Spanish plata, silver) is usually employed to denote works in silver or gold which belong to any class other than those of per- sonal ornaments or coins.!

On account of the ease with which it can be worked and the pure state in which it is generally found, it is pro- bable that gold was the first metal used by man; and it is certain that, in some countries at least, he attained to the most marvellous skill in its manipulation at a time when the other arts were in a very elementary condition. As an instance of this we may mention a sword of the bronze age, found in a barrow near Stonehenge, and now in the museum at Devizes? The hilt of this sword is covered with the most microscopically minute gold mosaic. A simple design is formed by fixing tesserae, or rather pins, of red and yellow gold into the wooden core of the

handle. Incredible as it may appear, there are more than two thousand of these gold tesseree to the square inch. The use of silver appears to belong to a rather later period, probably because, though a widely spread metal in almost all parts of the world, it is usually found in a less pure state than gold, and requires some skill to smelt and refine it. Though both these precious metals were largely and skilfully used by prehistoric races, they were generally employed as personal ornaments or decorations for weapons. Except in Scandinavian countries but little that can be called “plate” has been discovered in the early barrows of the prehistoric period in western Europe.

_ + In medieval English the term “a plate” was oeeasionally used in the sense of a silver vessel. A curious survival of this nse of the word still exists at Queen’s College, Oxford, where the servants ma’

yet be heard asking at the buttery for any “ ‘ ie a egg y for so many “ plates of beer,” that

- Hoare, Ancient Wiltshire, 1840.

PLA—

Pi A

It will be convenient to consider the no less prehistoric gold and silver work recently found at Troy, Tiryns, and Mycenz as forming a stage in the history of Greek art.

Ancient Egypt.—An enormous amount of the precious metals was annually brought as tribute to the Egyptian kings ; according to Diodorus, who quotes the authority of Hecatzeus, the yearly produce of the royal gold and silver mines amounted to thirty-two millions of minze—that is, about 133 millions sterling of modern money. Though this estimate is probably an exaggeration, the amount must have been very great. The gold chiefly came from the mines in the Bishari desert, about eighteen days’ journey south-east of Kum Ombos. These mines were constantly worked down to the time of the Arab caliphs, but now appear to be exhausted. It is not known where the silver came from. Gold appears to have been relatively more abundant

than silver, and the difference in value between them was very much less than itisnow. Tribute was paid to the Egyptian kings, not in coined money, which was then unknown, but in rings or ingots. Owing to the Egyptian practice of burying with their dead pérsonal ornaments and jewellery, rather than other possessions less intimately connected with the person of the deceased, but few speci- mens of either gold or silver plate have survived to our times, whereas the amount of gold jewellery that has been discovered is very large, and shows the utmost amount of skill in working the precious metals. We can, however, form some notion of what the larger works, such as plates and vases in gold and silver, were like from the frequent representations of them in mural sculpture and paintings. In many cases they were extremely elaborate and fanciful in shape, formed with the bodies or heads of griffins, horses, and other animals real or imaginary. Others are simple and graceful in outline, enriched with delicate surface ornament of leaves, wave and guilloche patterns, hieroglyphs, or sacred animals, Fig. 1 shows a gold vase of the time of Thothmes III. (Dynasty XVIIL, about 1500 B.C.), taken from a wall-painting in one of the tombs at Thebes. The figure on its side is the hieroglyph for “gold.” Others appear to have been very largeand massive, with human figures in silver or gold supporting a great bowl or crater of the same metal. 5,4 1 Gola Vase, from wall-

In the language of the hiero- paintings at Thebes. glyphs silver is called “ white gold,” and gold is the generic name for money,—unlike most languages, in which silver usually has this special meaning,—a fact which points strongly to the priority of the use of gold. On the walls of one of the tombs at Beni Hassan there is an interesting representation of a gold- and silver-smith’s workshop, show- ing the various processes employed—weighing, melting or soldering with the blow-pipe, refining the metal, and polish- ing the almost finished bowl or vase. In the time of Rameses IIT., about 1300 3.c., a clearly defined Assyrian influence appears in the decoration of some of the gold plate. A gold basket, represented in the tomb of this king at Thebes, has on its side a relief of the sacred tree between two beasts, the oldest of purely Aryan or Indo- European subjects, and quite foreign to Egypt.

The chief existing specimens of Egyptian plate are five silver phiale or bowls, found at the ancient Thumuis 1 the Delta, and now in the Bulak

Museum (Nos. 482 to 486 in the catalogue). These are modelled in the form of & lotus blossom, most graceful in design, but are apparently not earlier than the 5th century B.c. The Louvre possesses a fine gold patera, 6} inches across, with figures of fishes

PLATE 179

within a lotus border in repoussé work ; an inscription on the rim shows it to have belonged to an officer of Thothmes IIL. (Afém. Soc. Ant. de France, xxiv. 1858).

Assyrian and Pheencian Plate-—Among the many treasures of early art found by General Cesnola in the tombs of Cyprus none are of more interest than a large number of Pheenician silver phiale or saucer-like dishes, enriched with delicate repoussé and tooled reliefs, which in their design present many characteristics of Assyrian art mingled with a more or less strong Egyptian influence. A considerable number of bowls and phiale found in Assyria itself are so exactly similar to these Cyprian ones, both in shape and ornamentation, that they cannot but be classed together as the production of the same people and the same age. The British Museum possesses a fine collection of these bowls, mostly found in the palace at Nimrid. Though they are made of bronze, and only occasionally ornamented with a few silver studs, they are evidently the production of artists who were accustomed to work in the precious metals, some of them in fact being almost identical in form and design with the silver phialze found at Curium and elsewhere in Cyprus. They are ornamented in a very delicate and minute manner, partly by incised lines, and partly by the repoussé process, finally completed by chasing. ‘Their designs consist of a central geometrical pattern, with one or more concentric bands round it of figures of gods and men, with various animals and plants. In these bands there is a strange admixture of Assyrian and Egyptian style. The main motives belong to the former class, the principal groups being purely Assyrian—such as the sacred tree between the two attendant beasts, or the king engaged in combat and van- quishing a lion single-handed ; while mingled with these

are figures aud groups purely Egyptian in style, such as

the hawk-headed deity, or a king slaying a whole crowd of captives at one blow. Fig. 2 gives a silver dish from

Fig. 2.—Silver Bow], about 7 inches in diameter, found in a tomb in Cyprus, with repoussé reliefs of Egyptian and Assyrian style Curium containing examples of all the above mentioned subjects. Some of the designs are exceedingly beautiful, and are arranged with great decorative skill: a favourite omposition is that of antelopes walking in a forest of tall Papyrus plants, arranged in radiating lines, so as to suit the circular phiale, and yet treated with perfect grace and freedom. In addition to the numerous silver phiale some were found, with similar decoration, made of pure gold.

The Curium find alone is said to have included more than a thousand objects in gold and silver.

Etruscan Plate.—The Etruscan races of Italy were specially renowned for their skill in working all the metals, and above all in their gold work. Large quanti- ties of the most exquisite gold jewellery have been found in Etruscan tombs, including, in addition to smaller objects, sceptres, wreaths of olive, and massive head-pieces. The Museo Kircheriano in Rome possesses a magnificent speci- men of the last form of ornament; it is covered with nearly a hundred little statuettes of lions arranged in parallel rows.!_ Little, however, that can be classed under the head of plate has yet been found. A number of silver bowls found in Etruscan tombs have ornaments in the Egypto-Assyrian style, and were probably imported into Italy by the Phcenicians; some almost exactly resemble those found in Cyprus.

The British Museum (gold ornament room) possesses a fine specimen of early plate found at Agrigentum in

‘ oR —— © SOT z RNY

Fie. 3.—Archaic Gold Phiale, found at Agrigentum, now in the British Museum. It is shown in section below. It is 5 inches in diameter.

across, with central boss or omphalos (didAn peodudados) which seems once to have contained a large jewel. Round the inside of the bowl are six

figures of oxen, repoussé in relief, and at one side a crescent, formed by punched dots. A delicate twisted moulding surrounds the edge; the workmanship of the whole is very skilful (see fig. 3). Hellenic Plate.—Discoveries made of late years on the plains of Troy, at Mycene, and at Camirus in Rhodes have brought to light a large quantity of gold and silver plate of very remote antiquity. These early specimens of plate are all very similar in character, graceful in shape, hammered, cast, and soldered with great skill, but, with the exception of weapons and ornaments, mostly devoid of surface decoration. The most remarkable find was that which Dr Schliemann calls " Priam's treasure," including a large number of silver vases and bowls, with fine massive double-handled cups in gold, and a very curious spherical gold bottle. Fig. 4 shows a silver cup, with gold mounts, found in a tomb at Camirus in Rhodes, apparently a work of the same early date and class. Homer's poems are full of descriptions of rich works in both the precious metals (Iliad xxiii. 741), showing that the taste for valuable pieces of plate was developed among the Greeks at a very early time—much more so probably than it was during

1 Another, very similar, exists in the Vatican Mus, Gregor.

the most flourishing period of Hellenic art, when the pro- duction of beautifully painted fictile vases seems to some extent to have superseded the more barbaric magnificence

x.

"

Se)

Fra. 4.—Silver Cantharus from Rhodes, with gold mounts. Possibly the form of the Homerie déras audixvmeddov.

of gold and silver. During the 6th century B.c. the demand for works of this class, valuable not only for their material but for their workmanship, seems to have been very great under the last dynasty of Lydian kings, whose

wealth in gold‘and silver has become proverbial. Croesus especially encouraged the art, and paid enormous sums for silver vases and cups to the most renowned artists of his time, such as Glaucus and Theodorus the Samian.

Pliny (V. H., xxxiii.) gives a valuable account of the sources whence the Greeks and Romans derived their precious metals, their methods of refining, and the sculptors who were most celebrated for their skill in making articles of plate. Among the Greeks and Romans the greatest artists of the day did not disdain to practise this branch of art. The same sculptor who produced noble and colossal statues for the temples of the gods would at another time put forth his utmost skill and artistic talent in chasing and embossing some small silver cup or vase. In this way ancient pieces of plate ranked among the most perfect productions of art—very different from the custom of the 19th century, which leaves its plate to be executed by some dull mechanical craftsman, after the pompous designs supplied by a tradesman whose only standard of merit appears to be the pretentiousness of the design and the number of ounces of silver it contains.

In the best times of Greek art, the chief works in gold and silver seem to have been dedicated to religious pur- poses, and to have been seldom used for the ostentatious pomp of private individuals. Vessels for the use of the temples, tripods in gold or silver of the richest work, and statues of the gods were the chief objects on which the precious metals were lavished.!

The gold used by the Greeks probably came from Asia Minor or Egypt, while the mines of Laurium, in the mountains which form the promontory of Sunium in Attica, supplied an abundant amount of silver for many centuries.2 According to Pliny, Phidias was the first sculptor who produced works of great merit in the precious metals ; he mentions a number of other Greek artists who were celebrated for this class of work, but unluckily does not give their dates. The chief of these were Mentor and Mys (both of the 5th century B.c.), Acragas, Boethus, the sculptors Myron and Stratonicus, as well as the well-known Praxiteles and Scopas. In Pliny’s time many works in gold and silver by these artists still existed in Rhodes and elsewhere. Among later workers he specially mentions Zopyrus, who made two silver cups, embossed with the scene of the judgment of Orestes by the

Areopagite court, and Pytheas, who made a bowl with reliefs of Ulysses and Dio- medes carrying off the Palladium. Enormous prices were

given by wealthy Romans for ancient silver plate made by |

distinguished Greek artists; according to Pliny, more than £300 an ounce was paid for the last-mentioned cup.

1 The gold eagles on the sacred omphalos at Delphi were notable examples of this ; see Pindar, Pyth. iv. 4. 2 Boeckh, Silver Mines of Laurium, 1842.

| find of Greek silver plate,

,LAT EE

Though a large quantity of later Greeco-Roman plate still exists in various museums, the specimens of Greek silver-work of the best period are extrentely rare, and mostly unimportant in point of size. In 1812 Dr Lee dis- covered at Ithaca a very beautiful vase or cyathus 33 inches high (see fig. 5) and a phiale or patera, 94 inches

Fie hos ion avin found in shan, 33 inches high. across, both of silver, repoussé and chased, with very rich and graceful patterns of leaves and flowers—suggesting a slight tinge of Assyrian style. These are probably not later than the 5th century B.c. A good many silver

mirror-cases, with repoussé figure-subjects in high relief, places ; as, for instance, one

have been found at various with a beautiful seated figure of Aphrodite found at Taren- tum and now in the British Museum.* The South Ken- \ sington Museum contains a most exquisite little silver vase found in the baths of B Apollo at Vicarello in Italy § (fig. 6), enriched with a band in low relief of storks devour- ing serpents, executed with gem-like minuteness and finish — probably not later than the 3rd century B.C. The British Museum has a little vase of similar form and almost equal beauty, though perhaps later in date ; it is decorated with bands of vine branches in a graceful flowing pattern, and is partly gilt. The most important

0000.2.0200000900000 900.9 000000)

DO ((7 SS =.

<)

| hoe

ie of We Sy AG J IW Godbodecoodeesyoasc000

Fic. 6.—Greek Silver Vase, 5 inches high, c. 4th century B.c, The ornd mental band is shown below in plano.

mingled with pieces of (South Kensington Museum.)

Roman or Greco-Roman work, was that discovered in the crypt of the temple of Mercury Augustus, at Villeret, neat Bernay, in France (the ancient Canetum), in 1830.° It

4 Jb,, xxxiv. 265-72. d:c., de la Bibliotheque

3 See Archxologia, xxxiii, 36-54.

5 See Chabouillet, Catalogue des Cameés, Imperiale, Paris, 1858, pp. 418-57; also Raoul Rochette, ad’ Antiquité, p. 272, and Lenormant, Bull. dell’ Inst. Arch., Rome,

1830.

Monuments –

Roman production of the 2nd or 3rd century A.D. shapes of the vessels composing this treasure are very

PLATS

consists of silver vessels and two silver statuettes, sixty-nine pieces in all, the gift of various donors to the temple. It is in itself a small museum of specimens of ancient plate, containing objects of great variety of date and

workmanship, from fine Greek work of about 300 B.c. down to the coarser The

numerous—ewers, bowls, paterz, large ladle-shaped cups, and drinking cups with and without handles. Those of Greek workmanship are in slight relief, while some of the Roman wine-cups and bowls have heads and figures almost detached from the ground. Some of these latter much resemble some silver canthari found in Pompeii! The dedicatory Roman inscriptions, in some cases, appear to be later additions, made by the various donors who presented these treasures to the temple.? It is interesting to note that two vases among the Bernay treasure have reliefs of the theft of the Palladium, like the celebrated cup by Pytheas mentioned by Pliny; another subject described by him as decorating silver plate by Zopyrus, the judgment of Orestes, is represented on a fine cup found at Antium, apparently of Greek design, which is preserved in the Cor- sini Palace in Rome. These may possibly be copies from originals by those much-renowned artists.

Greco-Roman and Roman Plate——Of what may be called Greco-Roman plate a much larger number of specimens still exist. ven during the Ist century the growing pomp and ostentation of the wealthy Romans led to an enormous demand for large and elaborate pieces of plate, while their good taste induced them to prefer the works of Greek cclatores,—a branch of art which even at that time showed but little signs of decay. It was no doubt the desire for objects which should combine intrinsic value with artistic merit, and also be of a more durable sort, that by slow degrees gave the death-blow to the art of vase painting. It is not always easy to distinguish

the best works in silver of this Roman period from the

more purely Greek works of an earlier time. They are often of the highest merit both in design and execution. The finest collection of these was found in 1869 at Hildes- heim in Hanover, and is now in the Berlin Museum. They consist of a large number of cups, bowls, vases, dishes, and tripods, all of silver, some decorated with gilding and enriched in the most elaborate way with figure and scroll-work reliefs of the greatest beauty and finish ; these, except one or two of very rude work, can hardly be later in date than the first century after Christ. The most remarkable is a cylix, inside which a

geometrical Greek border in slight relief forms a frame for a seated figure of Athene—an “emblema” soldered on, in very high relief. The attitude of this figure, the folds of the drapery, and other details are arranged with extreme grace. Almost the only point which recalls the fact that this exquisite piece does not belong to the best period of Greek art is the very salient relief of the figure, whereas in earlier times the silver-worker was content with a more moderate amount of relief, and thus

decorated the surface of his vessel without injuring its |

main contour.

surface of the vessel, with very slight projection from the |

main surface,—a perfect model in every way for the treat- Ment of silver. Pliny specially mentions the custom of Roman generals and other officers travelling on military

: Quaranta, Quattordici Vasi d’ Argento. . . Pompei, Naples, 1837. ee a valuable paper on this subject in the Journal of Hellenic v€8, Vol. iii. No, 1, by Dr Waldstein, who attributes part of this : asure to the Ephesian school of artists, and traces in some of the

sighs miniature reproductions of large works of Greek sculpture.

{

| silver statues in Rome was very great. | Augustus records that he melted down no less than 80 silver statues

181

expeditions with magnificent services of plate; and it appears probable that this had been the case with the

Fre. 7.—Silver Crater, 154 inches high, from the Hildesheim find. (Berlin Museum.)

Hildesheim treasure; defeat or some other disaster may have forced the Roman owner to hide and relinquish the whole set.®

The museum at Naples contains a very large number of silver cups found in Pompeii, encrusted with figure-subjects or branches of ivy and vine in relief. In cases of this sort the cup is made double, with a smooth inner skin to hide the sinkings produced by the repoussé work in relief on the outside. Silver vessels ornamented in relief were called by the Romans celata or aspera, to distinguish them from plain ones, which were called lewa.*

Among later specimens of Roman plate the most remarkable is the gold patera, nearly 10 inches in dia- meter, found at Rennes in 1777, and now in the Paris Bibliothéque—a work of the most marvellous delicacy and high finish—almost gem-like in its minuteness of detail. Though not earlier than about 210 a.p., a slight clumsi- ness in the proportion of its embossed figures is the only visible sign of decadence. The outer rim is set with sixteen fine gold coins—awrei of various members of the Antonine family from Hadrian to Geta. The central emblema or nedallion represents the drinking contest be- tween Bacchus and Hercules, and round this medallion is a band of repoussé figures showing the triumphal proces- sion of Bacchus after winning the contest. He sits triumphant in his leopard-drawn car, while Hercules is led along, helplessly intoxicated, supported by bacchanals. A long line of nymphs, fauns, and satyrs complete the circular band.

The so-called “shield of Scipio,” also in the Paris Bibliothéque, which was found in the Rhone near Avignon, is the finest example of Roman plate of the 4th century. It is not a shield, but a large silver patera, about 26 inches in diameter, with a repoussé relief representing the restora- tion of Briseis to Achilles. The composition and general design are good, but the execution is feeble and rather coarse.

3 Darcel, Trésor de Hildesheim, 1870. The number of gold and In the inscription of Ancyra,

of himself, and with the money thus obtained presented “ golden gifts” to the temple of Apollo Palatinus. See Mon. Ancyr., ed, Mommsen, 1883.

4 For the various classical methods of working in silver and gold see METAL- WORK.

182

The British Museum possesses good specimens of Roman silver work in its last stage of decline. These are two large caskets or toilet boxes, with silver unguent vases, oblong lances, pateree, ewers, spoons, and other objects, all found in Rome in 1793. ‘The caskets are decorated in low relief with somewhat blunt repoussé figures and orna- ments. The rim of one casket is incised with the follow- ing words—SECUNDE ET PROIECTA VIVATIS IN CHRISTO. One of the silver vases has the words PELEGRINA VTERE reLIx. The legend on the casket, and the # which appears among the ornaments, show that it was made for a Roman lady, named Projecta, who was a Christian ; her portrait, together with that of her husband Secundus, is on the centre of the lid ina medallion supported by two cupids. With the exception of a pair of small silver two- handled vases, undecorated, but of the purest Greek-like form, these various pieces of silver work probably date from the 5th century.!

Plate from the Crimea.—The finest collection of early gold and silver plate is that in the Musée de l’Ermitage at St Petersburg, the result of many years’ excavation in the tombs of the Cimmerian Bosphorus.? Most of these magnificent pieces of plate, both in style of workmanship and the character of their decoration, resemble the work of Greek artists; in some cases nothing but the costume of the figures embossed upon them shows that they were not produced in Athens.

The earliest in style is a massive gold phiale (fiady pecdupados) covered with the richest and most minute surface ornament. The motive of the design is taken from an open lotus flower ; the petals form radiating lobes, and these petals are entirely covered with delicate scroll-work, surrounding Greek-like gorgons’ heads, and other smaller heads, savage-looking and bearded. Though perhaps rather overloaded with ornament, this beautiful phiale, which shows strong traces of Phcenician or Assyrian influence, is a real masterpiece of decorative design. Of later date, probably 4th century B.c., is a small gold bottle, Hellenic in form, but ornamented with a band of non- Hellenic figures in relief—Scythian bowmen, as their dress clearly

shows. The grandest piece of all is a large silver amphora, of about the same date, shaped like the Greek fictile amphore, and ornamented with a beautiful flowing pattern, of pure Hellenic honeysuckle form, mingled with birds and very highly projecting animals' heads. On the shoulder of the vase there is a band of Scythians and horses, executed with great spirit and refinement. It is difficult to believe that this splendid vase, so graceful in outline, and so pure in its decoration, was not produced by some famous Athenian toreutes.

Oriental Plate.—Some very curious pieces of plate both in gold and silver have been found in northern India; these appear to be of native workmanship, but the subjects with which they are embossed, and the modelling of the figures, show that they were produced under late Roman influence, or in some cases possibly even Greek influence in a highly degraded state, handed down from the time of Alexander's Indian conquests, ;

Under the Sasanian kings of Persia (from the 3rd to 6th centuries) very massive and richly decorated gold vases, bowls, and bottles were made (fig. 8). Those which still exist show a curious mingling of ancient Assyrian art with that of Rome in its decline. Reliefs representing winged lions, or the sacred tree between its attendant beasts, alternate with subjects from Roman mythology,

; Visconti, Una Supellettile d' Argento, Rome, 1825. See Stephani, Antiguités du Bosphore Cimmérien, 1854, and

Compte-rendu de la Commission Imperiale, St Petersburg, 1859, and still in progress.

3 Gaz. des B. Arts, xxv. 19-39, 1882,

a | PLATE

such as the rape of Ganymede ; but all are treated alike with much originality, and in a highly decorative manner, The Paris Bibliotheque and the Vienna Museum contain some fine specimens.

The gold and silver work of Russia resembles in style that of Byzantium at an early period. Shrines and other magnificent pieces of plate in the treasury of the cathedral at Moscow (see Weltmann, Le trésor de Moscou, 1861), though executed at the end of the 15th century, are exactly similar in design to Byzantine work of the 11th or 12th century, and even since then but little change or development of style has taken place.

The caliphs of Baghdad, the sultans of Egypt, and other Moslem rulers were once famed for their rich stores of plate, which was probably of extreme beauty both in design and workmanship. Little or nothing of this Moslem plate now remains, and it is only possible to judge of its style and magnificence from the fine works in brass and other less valuable metals which have survived to our time.

Early Medixval Plate-—The Gothic, Gaulish, and other senti-barbarian peoples, who in the 6th century were

S—

Fig. 9. Fie. 8.—Sasanian Gold Bottle, about 10 inches high. Inthe Vienna Museum. Fig. 9.—Gold Ewer, 15 inches high, from the Petrossa treasure.

Fig. 8.

masters of Spain, France, and parts of central Europe, produced great quantities of work in the precious metals, especially gold, often of great magnificence of design and not without some skill in workmanship. In 1837 a large number of pieces of very massive gold plate were found at Petrossa in Roumania; much of this find was unfortun- ately broken up and melted, but a considerable portion was saved, and is now in the museum at Bucharest. These magnificent objects are all of solid gold, and consist of large dishes, vases, ewers, baskets of open work, and personal ornaments (fig. 9). Some of them show a strong Roman influence in their design, others are more purely barbaric in style. very fine phiale or patera, 10 inches in diameter. In the centre is a seated statuette of a goddess, holding a cup, while all round, in high relief, are standing figures of various male and female deities, purely Roman in style. Though the execution is somewhat clumsy, there is much reminiscence of classical grace in the attitudes and

drapery of these figures. A large basket and other pieces, made of square bars of gold arranged so as to form an open pattern of stiff geometrical design, have nothing i common with the vessels in which Roman influence 18

To the first of these classes belongs 4 —

rina Te

apparent, and can hardly be the work of the same school of goldsmiths.1 The date of this Petrossa treasure is supposed to be the 6th century. The celebrated Gourdon gold cup aud tray now preserved in Paris belong to about the same date. ‘They are very rich and magnificent, quite free from any survival of classic influence, and in style resemble the Merovingian gold work which was found in the tomb of Childeric I. The cup is three inches high, shaped like a miniature two-handled chalice ; its com- panion oblong tray or plate has a large cross in high relief in the centre. They are elaborately ornamented with inlaid work of turquoises and garnets, and delicate filigree patterns in gold, soldered on.

In the 6th century Byzantium was the chief centre for the production of large and magnificent works in the precious metals. The religious fervour and the great wealth of Justinian and his successors filled the churches of Byzantium, not only with enormous quantities of gold and silver chalices, shrines, and other smaller pieces of ecclesiastical plate, but even large altars, with tall pillared baldacchini over them, fonts, massive candelabra, statues, and high screens, all made of the precious metals. The wealth and artistic splendour with which St Peter’s in Rome and St Sophia in Constantinople were enriched is now almost inconceivable. ‘To read the mere inventories of these treasures dazzles the imagination,—such as that given in the Liber Pontijicalis of Anastasius Bibliothe- carius, which includes the long list of treasures given by Constantine to St Peter’s before he transferred his seat of empire to Byzantium (330), and the scarcely less wonder- ful list of gold and silver plate presented to the same basilica by Pope Symmachus (498-—514).?

During the 7th century France and other Western countries were but little behind Italy and Byzantium in their production of massive works, both

secular and religious, in the precious metals. St Eloy, the French gold- smith bishop, made a number of most splendid shrines and other sacred furniture in beaten gold—among them large shrines for the relics of St Denis, St Genevieve, and St Martin, as well as gold thrones, plate, and jewellery for the French kings Clothaire II. and Dagobert I. At this time every cathedral or abbey church in Germany, France, and even England began to accumulate rich treasures of every kind in gold and silver, enriched with jewels and enamel ; but few specimens, however, still exist of the work of this early period. The most notable are Charlemagne's regalia * and other treasures at Aix-la-Chapelle, a few preserved at St Peter's in Rome, and the remarkable set of ecclesiastical utensils which 'still exist in the cathedral of Monza near Milan—the gift of Queen Theodelinda in the early part of the 7th century.4

The existing examples of magnificent early work in the precious metals mostly belong to a somewhat later period. The chief are the gold and silver altar in Sant' Ambrogio at Milan, of the 9th century; the "Pala d'Oro," or gold retable, in St Mark's at Venice, begun in the 10th century (see Mrrat-Worxk); and the gold altar frontal given by the emperor Henry II. and his wife Cunigunde, at the beginning of the 11th century, to the cathedral at Basel. The last is about 4 feet high by 6 feet long, repoussé in high relief, with figures of Christ, the three archangels, and St Benedict, standing under an arcade of round arches ; It is now in the Cluny Museum in Paris.® A similar gold frontal, of equal splendour, was that made for the arch- bishop of Sens in 999. This was melted down by Louis

: Soden Smith, Treasure of Petrossa, 1869. : See D'Agincourt, Mistoire de ? Art, 1823. ; Bock, Die Kleinodien des heil. rimischen Reiches, 1864. : Arch, Jour., xiv. 8. Archzologia, xxx. 144-48.

XV. in 1760, but fortunately a drawing of it was preserved, and is published by Du Sommerard (Album, 9th series, pk xiiis). .

A most valuable description of the various methods of work practised by gold- and silver-smiths in the 11th and 12th centuries is given by the monk Theophilus in his Diversarum Artium Schedula (Hendrie's ed., 1847). He

minutely describes every possible process that could be employed in making and ornamenting elaborate pieces of ecclesiastical plate—such as smelting, refining, hammering, chasing and repoussé work, soldering, casting (by the “cire perdue” ae wire-drawing, gilding with mercury amalgam, and the application of niello, enamel, and gems.

The silversmith of those days, as in classical times, was not only a thorough artist with a complete sense of beauty and fitness in his work, but he was also a craftsman of the most varied fertility of resource, and made himself thoroughly responsible for every part of his work and every stage through which it passed,—a most striking contrast to the modern subdivision of labour, and eager- ness to produce a show of neatness without regard to real excellence of work, which is the curse of all 19th-century handicrafts, and one of the main reasons why our modern productions are in the main neither works of true art nor objects of real lasting utility.

Italian Plate-—Before the latter part of the 15th century, large pieces of silver work were made more for ecclesiastical use than for the gratification of private luxury. The great silver shrine in Orvieto cathedral, made to contain thd blood-stained corporal of the famous Bolsena miracle, is one of the chief of these. It is a very large and elaborate work in solid silver, nade to imitate the west front of a cathedral, and decorated in the most sumptuous way with figures cast and chased in relief, and a wonderful series of niiniature-like pictures embossed in low relief and covered with translucent enamels of various brilliant colours. This splendid piece of silver work was executed about 1338 by Ugolino da Siena and his pupils. The other most important pieces of silver work in Italy are the frontal and retable of St James in the cathedral at Pistoia, and the altar of San Giovanni at Florence (see Merat-Work). On these two works were employed a whole series of the chief Tuscan artists of the 14th and 15th centuries, many of whom, though of great reputation in other branches of art, such as painting, sculpture on a large scale, and architecture, did not disdain to devote their utmost skill, and years of labour, to work which we now as a rule consign to craftsmen of the very smallest capacity.

Among the distinguished names of Florentines who during the space of one century only, the 15th, worked in gold and silver, the following may be

given to suggest the high rank which this class of work took among the arts :— Brunelleschi, Ghiberti, Donatello, Luca della Robbia, the two Pollaiuoli, Verrocchio, Michelozzo, Ghirlandaio, Botti- celli, Lorenzo di Credi, Baccio Baldini, and Francia. The cities of Italy which chiefly excelled in this religious and beautiful class of silver-work during the 14th and 15th centuries were Florence, Siena, Arezzo, Pisa, and Pistoia.

Owing to the demoralization and increase of luxury which grew in Italy with such startling rapidity during the early years of the 16th century, the wealth and artistic skill which in the previous centuries had been mainly devoted to religious objects were diverted into a different channel, and became for the most part absorbed in the production of magnificent pieces of plate—vases, ewers, dishes, and the like—of large size, and decorated in the most lavish way with the fanciful and over-luxuriant forms of ornament introduced by the already declining taste of the Renaissance. This demand created a new school of metal-workers, among whom Benvenuto Cellini

(1500-1571) was perhaps the ablest, and certainly the most prominent. His graphic and often shameless auto- biography makes him one of the foremost and most vivid figures of this wonderful 16th century, in which the most bestial self-indulgence was mingled with the keenest enthusiasm for art. Cellini’s work is always perfect in execution, but very unequal in merit of design; some of his silver pieces, such as the large salt-cellar made for Francis I., are much marred by an attempt to produce a massive grandeur of effect, on a scale and in a material quite unsuited to such ambitious and sculpturesque effects. Cellini’s influence on the design of silver plate was very great, not only in Italy and France, where his life was spent, but also on the great silversmiths of Augsburg and Nuremberg, many of whose finest pieces are often attri- buted to Cellini! During the 17th and even the 18th centuries fine pieces of plate were produced in Italy, many of them still retaining some of the grace and refine- ment of the earlier Renaissance.

Germany.—From very early times Germany was speci- ally famed for its works in the precious metals, mostly, as in other countries, for ecclesiastical use. In the 15th century a large quantity of secular plate was pro- duced, of

very beauti- ful design and the most skilful work- manship. Tall cov- ered cups or hanaps on slender stems, modelled with a series of bosses something like a pineapple and surmounted by a cleverly wrought flower, or beakers, cylindrical tankards with lids, enriched with delicate Gothic cresting or applied foliage, are the most beautiful in form and decoration. On the lids of these cups are frequently placed heraldic figures, hold- ing shields with the owner's arms, modelled and cast with great spirit and finish. One celebrated silver beaker, of about 1400, now in the South Kensington Museum (fig. 10), is ornamented with Gothic traceried windows filled in with translucent enamels.* Another,® rather later in date, preserved in the print room of the British Museum, is covered with figures and foliage in minute niello work, a most elaborate and splendid piece of plate.

During the first half of the 16th century Augsburg and Nuremberg, long celebrated for their silver work, developed a school of artists in plate whose productions are of the most unrivalled beauty, at once graceful in general form and decorated in slight relief with arabesques, strap-work, wreaths, and figure subjects arranged with the utmost good taste, and modelled and chased with the most perfect precision of touch. Though influenced by the contempo- rary silver-work of Italy, the works of Paul Flint, Wenzel a Seana ig Re ie | Wenisc inl ap «Sid 2 ip ie

Fria. 10.—Silver Beaker, decorated with open work, filled in with translucent enamels. German or Flemish, of the 15th century. (S. K. M.)

1 See the valuable work by Eugé int } : y Eugene Plon, Ben. Cellini, sa vie, &c. eas, 1883; also Cellini's own work, Dell' 'Oreficeria, 1568. ; : Shaw, Decorative Arts of the Middle A ges, 1851. Shaw, Dresses and Decorations of the Middle Ages, 1858.

FLATT

Jamnitzer (1508-1585), and Theodor de Bry of Liége (1528-98) are free from the extravagance of outline and over-elaboration of detail which often disfigure the grand In Germany

silver pieces of men like Cellini (see fig. 11). the traditions of earlier Gothic art were less rapidly broken with ; and many purely Gothic forms survived there till quite the end of the 16th century. In the first half of the 17th century the technical skill of the German _ silversmiths reached its highest point of perfection, but there was some falling off in their designs, which rapidly lost their purity of outline. Switzerland produced several _ silversmiths whose work is similar to that of this German school, especially their large plateaux and ewers, most richly and gracefully covered with ornament, all finished with almost gem-like minuteness. The prin- cipal among these art- ists was Francois Briot, all of whose productions are of extreme beauty. The majority of his existing works are not in silver, but in pewter,

and thus by their absence of intrinsic value have escaped the melting pot (fig. 12). Gaspar Enderlein was an- other workman of this school, whose productions cannot always be distin- guished from those of Briot. Though born in Switzerland, these artists really belong to the great Augsburg and Nuremberg school.

Many of the famous 15th and 16th century painters, such as Martin Schon, Israel von Mecken, and Holbein, used to supply the silver- workers with elaborate de- signs for plate. Virgil Solis of Nuremberg (1514-1562) was especially fertile in this sort of invention, and exe- cutedalarge series of etchings of designs for vases, cups, ewers, tazze, and all sorts of plate.4

Spain.—Throughout the Middle Ages Spain was : remarkable for its large and magnificent works in the precious metals. The cathedral of Gerona still possesses 4 most massive silver retable, made by a Valencian silver- smith called Peter Bernec. The gold and silver altar-

4 See twenty-one facsimiles of these rare etchings published by J. Rimell, London, 1862.

attributed to Jamnitzer, but more probably by Paul Flint. Made at Nuremberg about the middle of the 16th century. (S. K. M.)

Fic. 12.—Ewer by Frangois Briot, about 10 inches high, middle of 16th ccn- tury.

a

PLATE

frontal, a work of the 11th century, was carried off froin |

this cathedral by the French in the present century. Another very large and beautiful piece of silver work is

the throne, Northern Gothic in style, made for King |

Martin of Aragon, about 1400, and now preserved in Bar- celona cathedral. ‘Tillafter 1500 little that is distinctively Spanish appears in the style of their silver work. At first Moorish influence, and then that of France and Germany, appear to have been paramount. It is not till the 16th century that a really Spanish school of art was developed; and the discovery of America with its rich stores of gold and silver gave an enormous impetus to this class of work.! The “custodia,” or tabernacle for the host, in many of the Spanish cathedrals, is a large and massive object, decorated in a very gorgeous though somewhat debased style. In spite of the plundering of the French, even now no country is so rich in ecclesiastical plate as Spain. England.—The Celtic races of both England and Ireland appear to have possessed great wealth in gold and silver, but especially the former. It seems, however, to have been mostly used in the manufacture of personal orna- ments, such as torques, fibule, and the like. A magni- ficent suit of gold armour, repoussé with simple patterns of lines and dots, was found some years ago at Mold in Flintshire, and is now in the British Museum.2 The amount of gold jewellery found in Ireland during the past century has been enormous ; but, owing to the unfortunate law of “treasure-trove,” by far the greater part was immediately melted down by the finders. Little of this period that can be called plate has been discovered in the British Isles,;—unlike Denmark and other Scandinavian countries, where the excavation of tombs has in many eases yielded rich results in the way of massive cups, bowls, ladles, and horns of solid gold, mostly decorated with simple designs of spirals, concentric circles, or inter- laced grotesques. Others are of silver, parcel-gilt, and some have figure subjects in low relief (fig. 13). In like manner, during the Saxon period, though gold and silver jewellery was com- mon, yet little plate appears to have been made, with the exception of shrines,

altar-frontals, and vessels for ecclesiastical use, of which every important church in England must have possessed a magnifi- cent stock. With regard to English secular plate, though but few early ex- amples still exist, we know from various records, such

owo

Fig. 13,—Silver Cup, 43 inches high, with embossed gold band; found in & grave

as wills and inventories, ‘ . :

that the 14th century was roy Rvp chery oy pita ne one in which every rich lord 1°” A8e-

or burgher prided himself on his fine and massive collection of silver vessels ; on festive occasions this was displayed, not only on the dinner-table, but also on sideboards, arranged with tiers of steps, one above the other, so as to show off to advantage the weighty silver vases, flagons, and dishes with Which it was loaded. The central object on every rich man’s table was the “nef ”—a large silver casket, usually (as the name suggests) in the form of a ship, and arranged to contain the host’s napkin, goblet, spoon, and knife, with an assortment of spices and salt. Great sums were often spent on this large and elaborate piece of plate, eg., one made for the duke of Anjou in the 14th century weighed

1 “ag : L See Riaho, Industrial Arts in Spain, 1879; and Davillier, orfevrerie en Espagne, 1879. 2 Archeol., xxvi. 422.

‘and corporation of King’s Lynn.

185

348 marks of gold. The English silversmiths of this period were highly skilled in their art, and produced objects of great beauty both in design and workmanship. One of the finest specimens of late 14th century plate which still exists is a silver cup belonging to the mayor It is graceful and chalice-

like in form, skilfully chased, and decorated in a very rich and elaborate way with coloured translucent

_ enamels (fig. 14) of ladies and youths, several with hawks

on their wrists.? Silver salt- cellars were among the most ela- borate pieces of plate produced

Fig. 14.

Fic. 14.—Silver Cup, with translucent enamels, 14th eentury.

Fic. 15.—Silver-gilt Salt-eellar, 14} inches high. Given to New College, Oxford, in 1493,

Fig. 15. Probably Freneh work of the

during the 15th century. Several colleges at Oxford and Cambridge still possess fine specimens of these (fig. 15) ; the favourite shape was a kind of hour-glass form richly ornamented with spiral fluting or bosses.

But few existing specimens of English plate are older than the beginning of the 15th century. Among the few that remain the principal are two or three chalices—such as the two large gold ones found in the coffin of an archbishop of York, now used for holy communion in the cathedral, and a fine silver chalice from the church of Berwick St James, Wilts, now in the British Museum. Both this and the York chalices are devoid of ornament, but, judging from their shape, appear to be of the 12th or 13th century.*

It is interesting to note the various changes of form through which the ecclesiastical chalice passed from early Christian tines till the 16th century. It was at first an ordinary secular cup (fig. 16, A), with two handles classical in form, and of large capacity, because the laity as well as the clergy received the wine. The double handles were of practical use in passing the cup round like a modern “loving cup.” The first alteration was the omission of the handles, so that it took the form B, with large hemi- * spherical bowl, a round foot, and a knop for security in holding it. For some centuries it appears to have been the custom for the priest to hold the

chalice, while the eommunicant sucked the wine through a silver tube or “ fistula.” Some of the most magnificent

3 See Carter, Specimens of Ancient Sculpiure, d&c., 1838.

4 Among the most important existing specimens are the solid gold chalice and paten preserved at Corpus Christi College, Oxford, the gift of the founder, Bishop Fox. These have the year-mark K for 1507-8. See Quart. Rev., cxl. p. 353.

early examples of this form of chalice have the bowl mounted in bands, set with jewels, and enriched with minute filigree work,—a design which appears to have been taken from those cups, such as the four magnificent examples in the treasury of St Mark’s at Venice, which have their bowl cut out of crystal, onyx, or some other precious stone.! The finest examples of this elass are the Ardagh chalice, now in the Dublin Museum, and the chalice of St Remigius, in Rheims cathedral; both are most magnificent specimens of the taste and skill of 11th-century goldsmiths. C shows the next form (12th and 18th centuries). The design is simpler; there is a distinct shaft, extending above and below the knop; and on the foot is marked a eross, not found in the earlier ones, to show which side the pricst is to hold towards himself at celebration. The next alteration in the form of chalice,

ee a eS SS – {Tawi a) sinnconann nmr] soso

Fic. 16.—Various shapes of Chalices, showing development from the earliest forin,

‘which occurred in the 14th century, was to make the foot not circular in plan but polygonal or lobed, so that the cup might not roll when laid on its side to drain, after it had been rinsed out. It thus took the shape D, and this form lasted in most countries till about 1500, and in England till the Reformation. In countries which did not adopt the Reformed faith the shape

was altered, by the general growth of the Renaissance, into a form frequently like KE, But in England the change was more complete; the bowl, which in the previous two or three centuries had been slowly reduced in size, owing to the gradually introduced practice of re- fusing the wine to the laity, was suddenly made more capacious, and the form was altered to the shape F, in order that the Pro- testant “communion cup” might bear no resemblance to the old Catholic “ massing chalice.” This was ordered to be done in 1562, (see Areh, Jow’. xxv. 44-53). The last form, G, shows the usual shape of sepulchral chalices, which, before the Reformation, were enclosed in the coffins of all ecclesiastics who had received priest’s orders. These are without the knop, and were frequently made of pewter, tin, or even wax, as they were not meant for use. In some few eases a real chalice was buried with some ecclesiastic of rank, but this was exceptional.

Secular plate during the 15th and 16th centuries was very similar in style to that made in Germany, though the English silversmiths of the latter century never quite equalled the skill or artistic talent of the great Nurem- berg and Augsburg silver-workers. In the 17th century, during the reigns of James I. and Charles I., many fine pieces of plate, especially tall hanaps and tankards, were made of very graceful form and decoration. The greater part of this, and all earlier plate, especially the fine collections belonging to the universities, were melted down during the Civil War. In Charles IT.’s reign returning prosperity and the increase of luxury in England caused the production of many magnificent pieces of plate, often

1 See De Fleury, La Messe, Paris, 1882, in progress,

on a large scale, such as toilet services, wine-coolers, and even fire-dogs and tables. These are very florid in their ornament, and mostly have lost the beautiful forms of the century before (fig. 17). In the early part of the

FiG. 17,—Covered Cup of solid gold, 6 inches high, eirea 1660-70. Given to Exeter College, Oxford, by George Hall, Bishop of Chester,

18th century the designs are mostly poor, and the decora- tion rather coarse, till the time of the classical revival which was brought about mainly by the

discovery of the buried cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum. A quite different style of plate then came into vogue—semi- classical both in form and decoration, and often worked with great delicacy of treatment. A good deal of plate in this style was made under the influence of the brothers Adam (fig. 18), distinguished architects in the second half of the 18th century. Of modern plate from the art point of view there is nothing to say; it is nearly always poor in design and feeble in execution.

The Assay of Gold and Silver Plate.—The primitive method of testing the purity of the metal was by marking a streak with it on the touch-stone, and comparing the colour of the mark with that made by various pieces of gold or silver of known degrees of purity. Assay by cupellation is now employed for silver: a piece of the silver to be tested is melted with some lead in a cupel or bone-ash crucible ; the lead is oxidized, and rapidly sinks into the bone-ash, carrying with it any other im- purities which are present. The residue of pure silver is then weighed, and by its loss Fre, 18.—Silver Vase, 11 shows how much alloy it contained. Gold is inehes high, dated fe = now tested by an elaborate chemical process Dedgoe a a by which the trial bit is dissolved in acid, and ~~ then thrown down in the form of precipitate, which can be ex- amined by a careful quantitative analysis. See Assayinc, GOLD, and SILVER.

The standard of purity required in the time of Edward I. was, for gold, that it should be of the “Paris touch,” ¢.¢., 193 carats out of 24. Before then 22 carats was the standard. Silver was to be “ of the sterling alloy,” viz., 11 oz. 2 dwts. to the pound. Except for a time during the 16th century, this standard of silver has been kept up, and is still required by law. : .

Hall-marks on Silver.—In the 18th century the English Guild of Gold- and Silver-smiths had grown into great importance, and had acquired monopolies and many pipe privileges. In order to keep the standard up to the required purity the system of requit- ing each article to be stamped with certain marks was introduced by royal command. The first of these was the King’s mark-—a leopard’s or lion’s head crowned. This was introduced in 1300 by Edward I. (29 Edw. I. stat. 8, c. 30). The second, the Maker s mark, was added in 1363 (37 Edw. III. c. 7). This might be any badge or initial chosen by the master silversmith himself. The third was the Year letter or

Assayer’s mark ; this was an alphabet, one letter being used for a year, counting from the day of the annual election of the warden of the Goldsmiths’ Company. When one alphabet was exhausted, another with differently shaped letters was begun. The first of these series of year-lettcrs cominences 1n 1438, The earliest existing piece of plate which has the three marks

riagy &

complete is a spoon which was given by Henry VI. to Sir Ralph Pudsey ; this has the year mark for 1445. Other marks, subse-

quently introduced, were the lion passant, first nsed in 1545; the

Hion’s head erased, and a full-length figure of Britannia, used only between 1697 and 1720; and lastly the portrait of the reigning sovereign, Which has been in use since 1784. In addition to these general hall marks, the plate made in various towns had from the vear 1423 certain special provincial marks. The best work on hall-marked plate and the marks themselves, with the history of the Silversmiths’ Company, is Cripps, Old English Plate, 1881. See also Cripps, Old French Plate, 1880.

The South Kensington Museum has a very fine illustrative collection of plate, from early medieval times downwards. It also possesses a very valuable and large assortment of electrotype copies, including the Hildesheim and a part of the Petrossa treasures, as well as a number of the best specimens of college and corporation plate. The museum handbooks on this subject by J. H. Pollen and W. Cripps are extremcly useful to the student.

The same department has also published a most valuable List of

Works on Gold- and Silver-smiths’ Works in the National Art Library, 1882.

Modern Plate in the Hast.—Though little plate of real artistic merit is now made in Europe, in the East, among the Moslem and Hindu races, there still survive some real taste in design and skill in execution. Delhi, Benares,

Lueknow, Cutch, and other places in India and Kashmir still produce a quantity of beautiful silver and gold work,— chiefly ewers, basins, rose-water sprinklers, salvers, coffee- pots, and the like. These are of graceful form, covered with rich repoussé work, or more often with very delicate chased patterns. Their style in the main is Moslem, but some combine an Arab form with native Indian surface decoration. This class of work is not a revival, but has been practised and handed down by unbroken tradition, and with little or no change in style from the 16th century or even earlier! The silversmiths of Persia, Damascus, and other Eastern places are still skilful, and retain sonie good tradition in their designs. They are, however, more occupied in the production of personal ornaments than in making larger works of silver or gold.

Authorities.—Tue PLATE OF CLASSICAL TIMES.—Lee, ‘Silver Plate found in Ithaca,” Archwologia, vol. xxxiii, p. 36 sqg.; Arncth, Die antiken Gold- und Silber-Monumente . . . in Wien, 1850; Overbeck, Geschichte der griechischen Plastik, 3d ed., 1882; Miiller, Handbuch der Archiologie der Kunst, Breslau, 1848; Cesnola, Antiquities of Cyprus (1873), Cyprus (1877), and Salaminia (1882) ; Stephani, Antiquités du Bosphore . . . Musée de VErmitage, St Petersburg, 1854; Salzmann, Mecropole de Camiros, 1875; Schliemann, Troy (1875), Mycenze (1878), and {Ios (1880); MacPherson, Antiquities of Kertch, 1857 , Stephani, Conpte- Rendu de la Commission Archéologique, St Petersburg, 1860 sq.; Barré, Ier- culaneum et Pompet, vol. vii., pl. 94; Quaranta, Quattordici Vasi d’Argento… Pompei, Naples, 1837; Agincourt, Storia del Arte, 1826; Viardot, ‘ Vase Grec en Argent, &e… trouvésdans la Crimée,” Gaz. des B. Arts, 1st series, vol. xxiv., p. 234; Darcel, Trésor de Hildesheim, 1870; Holzer, Der Mildesheimer Silber- Sund, 1870 ; also the Catalogues of the Museums of Paris, Berlin, Vienna, and Bulak (Cairo); Gazette des Beaux-Arts, 2d series, vol. ii. p. 408, vol. xii. p. 450, vol. xix. D, 105, and vol. xxv. p. 19; Daremberg, Dicttonnaire des Antiquités, art.

Celatura” (in progress); Afwseo Etrusco Vat., i. pl. 63-66 (silver bowls from Cere); Gazette Archéologique, 1877, pl. 5: Longperier, Musée Napoléon III., pl. 10-11, 1864 sq.; Kohler, Afitthetlungen d. deutsch, Archdol. Inst. Athens, 1882, p. 241; Koumanoudes, *AOjvatov, 1880, p. 162, and 1881, p. 309 (the last two on the gold treasure of Mycene).

SCANDINAVIAN AND iRIsH PLatr.—Anderson, Mindelblade fra de danske Kon- gers Samling, 1867; Danmarks, Norges, og Sverigs Ltstorie, 1867; Atlas de Pelogte du Nord, 1857; Madsen, Afbildninger af Danske Oldsager, 1868-76 ; B paces Afbildninger fra det Kongelige Museum (1854), Primeval Antiquities of 5 ell (1849), os Industrial Arts of Denmark," S.K.4f. Handbook (1882); Gan rand, Industrial Arts of Scandinavia," S.X.j,, 1882 ; Stralsund, Der Re ed von Hiddensoe, 1881; Montelins, Antigquités Suédotises, 1873-75 ; G eves, Shrine of St Patrick's Bell, 1850; Wilde, Catalogue of Antiquities of

Id, Irish R, Academy Museum, 1862. ;

Chae PLate.—Abel, L'orfévrerie mosellane au 10me Siecle, 1873-74 ; Bock, ee ier Schate » +. 2u Aachen (1860), Das heilige Kéin (1858); Der Kron- ledch " pepe Barbarossa zu Aachen (1864), Die Kleinodien des hetl, rémischen a ah Cahier and Martin, Meélanges d' Archéologie,1847-56; Christyn, Délices Caz co vol. iii., 1769; Clement de Ris, ''Le trésor impérial de Vienne," Siecle D 3. Arts, 2d series, vol. ii. p. 209; Coussemakcr, Orfévrerie du XII ime age." af 1861; Darcel, articles in Gaz. des B. Arts (" L'Orfévrerie dn Moyen- «hes Be Iv. Dp. 224, 1859 ; "La Collection Soltykoff," vol. x. p. 212, 1861; Reims, ors d¢ Cologne," vol. ix. p. 226, 1861; "Le trésor de la Cathédrale de pat ; i – Xx. p. 98, 1881; "Les Autels de Pistoia et de Florence," vol. —. py Sommerard, Les Arts au Moyen-Age, 1838-46; Fabre, Trésor Pri ala de Savoie, 1875; Fleury, Tresor de la Cathedrale de Laon, 1855; Mibnaie ions della chiesa Monzese, 1774-80; Heider, Mittelalterliche Kunst- Tet ol 96-60), Der Altaraufsatz zu Klosterneuburg (1860); Jouy and Jacque- Orvieto AA oo et joyaux de la couronne, 1865-67 : Jouy, " Le Reliquaire a' Ages, 1859. nei ee Arts, vol. XV. p. 682, 1877; King, Metal-work of the Middle 1864; De Tash 2, Der Dom zu Hildesheim, 1840; Linas, Orfévrerie Mérovingienne, ae Reins 184 a Trésor de Guarrazar, Paris, 1860; Tarbé, Trésors des Eglises Crowns from eee Trésor de PAbbaye @A gaune, Paris, 1872; Way, '* Gold "Ancient Ora 0, and St Fillan's Crozier," in Arch, Jour., vol. xvi., 1859; and

ments," 7b¢d., vol. iii; Aus'm Weerth, Kunstdenkmaler des christ-

' See Birdwood, Industrial Arts of India, 1880, p. 144.

lichen Mittelalters in den Rheinlanden, Leipsic, 1857-60; ‘‘ Chalice from Donegal Abbey,” Azikenny Arch. Soc., n.s., vol. v.; Dunraven, The Ardagh Chalice, 1874; Morgan, ‘‘ Leominster and Nettlecombe Chalices,” Archzologia, vol. xxxv. p.488, and vol. xlii.; Specimens of Ancient Church Plate, Oxford, 1845; Hertfelder, Basilica SS. Udalrict et Afr, Augsburg, 1627; Schaepkens, Zrésor de l’ Art Ancien en Belgique, 1846; Shaw, Dresses and Decorations of the Middle Ages (1843), and Decorative Arts of the Aliddle Ages (1851); Milner, ‘‘ Mitre and Crozier of Limerick,” Archxologia, vol. xvii. p. 30, and ‘‘Glastonbury Cup,” vol. ii.; see also “ The Pastoral Staff of Lismore,” 7b¢d., vol. xxxii. p. 360.

RENAISSANCE PLATE.—Fairholt, Lord Londesborough’s Collection of Plate, 1860; Frampton, Gold Plate at Windsor Castle, n.d.; Catalogue of Plate, éc., exhibited in 1861 at lronmongers’ Hall, London, 1863-69; Richardson, Old English Mansions and their Plate (1841-48), Drawings and Sketches of Elizabethan Plate, London, n.d.; Shaw, Ancient Plate from Oxford, 1837; Smith, ‘‘ Specimens of College Plate,” Cam. Ant. Soc., 1845; ‘“ L’Orfévrerie Anglaise,” Gaz. des B. Arts, vol. ix. p. 5, and vol. xvi. p. 297; Keller, “ Three Silver Cups at Zurich,” Arch. Jour., vol. xXvi., p. 158; Autotypes of Italian Designs for Plate, London, 1871; Schotel, La Coupe de van Nispen, 1850; Strada, Entwtirfe fiir Prachtgefasse in Silber und Gold, Vienna, 1869; Zettschrift des Kunst-Gewerbe-Vereins zu Miinchen, 1871; Cerceau, @uvre de Jacgittes Androuet, Paris, and Livre d’Ornements d’ Orfévrerie, Paris, n.d.; Van Loon, Histoire Métallique des Pays-Bas, Hague, 1732-37; Hirth, Lormenschatz der Renaissance, Leipsic, 1877 sg.; Lessing, Die Silber-Arbeiten von Anton Kisenhott, Berlin, 1880; Luthmer, Goldschmuck der R natssance, Berlin, 1880; Masson, Neue Vorrisse von Sachen die auf allerlei Goldsmidts Arbeit, &c., Augsburg, 1710; Sibmacher, Entwiinfe fiir Goldschmtede, Nuremberg, 1879; Arneth, Die Cameen und Arbeiten des Ben. Cellini, Vienna, 1858; Baldus, Recueil d Ornements, Paris, 1866 ; Quarterly Review, vol. cxli. p. 353.

Works ON PLATE OF Various PERIovSs.—Texier, Dictionnaire ad’ Orfévrerie, 1857; De Lasteyrie, Histoire de l’Orfévrerie; Viollet-le-Duc, Dictionnaire du Mobilier, 1858-75; Jacquemart, [Zistoire du Mobilier,

1876; Labarte, Histoire des Arts au Moyen-Age, 1864-66; Lacroix, Arts in the Middle Ages, 1870; Greco and Emanuel, Arts of the Goldsmith and Jeweller, 1883; Wheatley and Delamotte, Art Work in Gold and Silver, 1882; Kulmer, Die Kunst des Gold-Arbeiters, &c., Weimar, 1872; Luthmer, Der Schatz des K. von Rothschild, Frankfort, 1882 sq. ; Schorn, Kunst und Gewerbe, 1874 sq.; Becker and Hefner-Alteneck, Kunstwerke und Gerdthschaften, Frankfort, 1852-57; Catalogue of Exhibition of Works of Art at South Kensington, 1862; Filimoroff, Plate, Jewellery, &c., in the Musée dArmures at St Petersburg, Moscow, 1849; Cripps, Old English Plate, 1881, College and Corporation Plate, 1881, and Old French Plate, 1880; Ferguson, Church Plate of the Diocese of Carlisle, 1882.

Designs FOR PLATE.—Giardini, Promptuarium Artis Argentarizx, Rome, 1750; Holbein, Original Designs for Plate, inthe Print Room, British Museum, and in the Bodleian at Oxford (the South Kensington Museum also has a fine collection of original 16th-century designs in pen and ink); Viane, 2lodels of Silver Vases, é&c., Utrecht, 17th century ; Loie, Brasiers. . . e¢ Autres Ouvrages de Orfévrerie, and Nouveaux dessins de gueridons, &c., Paris, n.d.; Maria, Livre de dessins de Jouaillerie, dc. Paris, n.d.; Portefeutlle dornement, Paris, 1841. (J. H. M.)

PLATE, Tue River, or Rio DE La Prata (“River of Silver”), in South America (see vol. ii, Plate xxv., and vol. iv. Plate xvii.), was at first known as Rio de Solis, after Juan Diaz de Solis, who discovered it in 1515, and lost his life on its banks. The present name, a double misnomer, was bestowed by Sebastian Cabot, who, ignorant that he was on the wrong side of the continent, thouglit he had reached a country of mineral wealth—a mistake (perpetuated also in the designation Argentine Republic) which may be said to have received a kind of poetic justification in the fact that the distant mines of Potosi lie within the drainage area of the La Plata system. Like Rio Grande do Sul and Rio de Janeiro on the Brazilian coast, this Rio is not a river but a vast estuary into which rivers discharge. At its narrowest it is 23 miles across, opposite Buenos Ayres 34 miles, and opposite Montevideo 63 miles. By some writers the conventional limit between estuary and ocean is drawn from Montevideo, where the water is still fresh enough to be drunk; but others go farther out and take the line 150 iniles across from Maldonado to Cabo San Antonio. In the former case the length of the estuary is 125

miles. At one time it must evidently have extended 200 miles farther inland to Diamante, at the bend of the Parana; and nature is steadily and rapidly at work prolonging the rivers proper at the expense of the estuary. At low water the average depth may be taken at 18 feet, and shoals and sandbanks are abundant, especially in the upper end. Nearly the whole expanse between Buenos Ayres and Martin Garcia Island is between 3 and 6 feet deep, and a great portion is even shallower. In the shallower portions the bottom consists of a very fine hard-grained sand, in the deeper portions of a sticky ooze. The tidal movement is so disguised by the more obvious effects of wind that Mr Révy found people who had lived all their lives on the banks ready to deny its existence. But at Buenos Ayres the normal neap-tide is 5 feet 3 inches above ordinary low water, and the spring tides vary from 6 to more than 10 feet. The region being one of “storms and extraordinary electrie disturbance,” with the pampero at one time blow-

ing hard from the land and at another a sea wind driving the ocean before it, the ordinary levels and currents are often violently disturbed. The general slope of the sur- face may even be reversed, and the main current of estuary and river run up stream for a hundred miles or more. It has been estimated that the volume of water poured into the Rio de la Plata exceeds the aggregate discharge of all the rivers of Europe put together. Nor need this be matter of surprise when the enormous extent and the character of the drainage area are taken into account. The headwaters of the Rio Blanco (a feeder of the Pilecomayo sub-system) rise only 125 miles from the coast of the Pacific, in 68° 10’ W. long., and those of the Rio Grande are not more than 70 miles from the coast of the Atlantic, in 44° W. long.; the basin thus extends east and west over twenty-four degrees of longitude, or 1500 miles, and the direct distance from the northmost source to the mouth of the Parana is about as great. A considerable proportion of this vast area lies within the tropics, and receives an abundant rainfall, which, owing to the character of the strata, is largely carried off by the surface drainage. As an instance of the effect of this rainfall on even the secondary tributaries, Mr Bigg-Wither’s experience may be cited: at Jataly on the Tibagy he was detained from the 2d to the 25th of July by the river, after nine days of incessant downpour, rising 33 feet at a place where it was 200 yards wide,

and pouring along a volume of 90,000 cubic feet per second, or twenty-five times its low-water volume (see Journ. Roy. Geogr. Soc., 1876).

The three great rivers of the La Plata system are the Parana, its equal affluent the Paraguay, and the Uruguay—the second being the most important as a water- way, and the first the most interesting from its physical features! As the general course of the Parana and the Paraguay, both of which rise in Brazil, has already been sketched in the article on that country (vol. iv. p. 222), it simply remains to direct attention to afew points of interest. In regard to the great “Seven Falls” of the Parana, we have still no better account than that of Azara in the 18th century; but the Hundred Cataracts or Victoria Falls of the Curityba or Y-guazu have been described in detail by the members of the first Germano- Argentine colonial land-surveying expedition to Misiones in 1883 (see Verhandl. d. Ges. f. Erdkunde zu Berlin, vol. x. pp. 357-364). For combined beauty and grandeur of scenery they claim to rank among the foremost cataracts in the world. About 6 or 7 miles higher up the river is 3 miles broad; it gradually narrows until, after passing through a perfect labyrinth of islands (King Albert Archipelago), it pours, not in a single mass, but in numer- ous streams, over a horse-shoe edge of rock into a gorge 120 to 150 feet deep. Niederlein divides the falls into three groups—a northern or Brazilian, a central or insular, and a southern or Argentine, to which he has attached respectively the names of the Emperor Don Pedro, the Emperor William, and General Roca. The river continues for some distance shut in by overhanging cliffs; and a large number of secondary cataracts (Bosetti Falls, Prince Bismarck Falls, &c.) are formed by tributary streams, and add to the bewildering beauty of the scene.

The watersheds between the north-eastern headwaters of the Paraguay system and the southern affluents of the Amazons are so low and narrow that in some instances canoes have been conveyed overland from the one to the other. Interest has recently been concentrated on the exploration of the Pilcomayo, a right-hand tributary which joins the Paraguay proper in 25° 20’ S. lat.

Though its sources have long been known, all attempts to trace it downward from Bolivia or upward from the Argentine Republic

1 The word Parana, meaning simply river, appears, it is to be re- membered, alone or in composition again and again throughout South America. See Lallemant, in Zeitschr. fiir Erdk., Berlin, 1863, p. 156.

rane TE

.

[RIVER

had been foiled by the hostility of the Indians. At length, on April 27, 1882, Dr Crevaux, the great French explorer of South- American rivers, was slain with all his party by the Tobas at a place called Ipanticapu. General interest was thus aroused ; and the task in which Dr Crevaux perished has since been practi- cally accomplished by Dr Thouar, his fellow-countryman, who, leaving the San Francisco mission-station on 10th September 1883, reached the mouth of the river on 10th November, though he had not been able to keep close to its course in the lower section of the journey. The Pilcomayo rises in Vileapujia (a mountain 13,500 feet high to the E. of Lago Poopo), and passes between the Cordillera of Livichueo and the Cordillera de los Frailes, a few miles to the north of Potosi. It cuts through the last range of the Andes in 21° 16’ 50″ S. lat. and 63° 25’ W. long., and enters the plains of the Gran Chaco at a height of 1456 feet above sea-level (J. B. Minchin?), It is soon after joined by the Pilaga, which brings down the waters of the Rio Blanco and other streams from the mountains. Till in its south-eastern course it reaches 22° S. lat., the river has a very regular course, flowing at the rate of 6500 feet per hour over a sandy bed 600 to 700 feet wide, unimpeded by rocks or trees, and enclosed by steep banks 15 to 20 feet high, above which the country stretches out in pasture-covered plains. Farther down tlre banks increase in height to from 20 to 45 feet, and embrace a channel or valley 5500 feet or more in breadth, though the actual river does not exceed 150 or 200 feet. At the point called Cabello Muerto, 24° 20’ S. lat., commence the marshy plains of the lower course, in which the bauks hardly rise above the level of the water, and a whole series of lagoons lie at a distance of a mile or two on the left hand. So flat is the country, and so tortuous the river that when Mr Robinson, in 1873, ascended for 150 miles, he never lost sight of the white houses of Asuncion.

About 150 miles below the mouth of the Pilcomayo the Paraguay is joined by another Andean river the Rio Vermejo or Y-pyta, whose red waters, pouring into the dark clear water of the main stream, are sufficient to tinge the whole current downwards to the conflu- ence of the Parana. “From the junction of its headstreams down to the Paraguay, the Vermejo does not receive a single afflucnt ; its breadth varies from 70 to 250 yards, its depth from 5 to 16 feet; and the current appears to average 14 miles an hour” (Keith Johnston). Its navigability was shown about 1780 by the Fran- cisean nussionaries Murillo and Lapa descending the whole way im a canoe, but it was not till 1874 that, under Don Natalio Roldan, the regular navigation was undertaken.

At their confluence the Paraguay has a width of half a mile, the Parana of 3 miles. The united river continues for 686 miles, first in a south-south-west, then in a south, and finally in a south-east direction before it reaches the head of the La Plataestuary. Down to Diamante, or for 433 miles, its left bank is at intervals formed by lines of bold bluffs from 100 to 200 feet high, on which several of the more important towns are built; but the channel often breaks up so as to euclose extensive islands. The worst reach in this respect is the 45 milcs below Goya, a little town in 29°7’S. lat. At Diamante begins the enormous delta (some 5000 or 6000 square miles) which is traversed by countless and changing chan- nels, and presents nothing else, even if viewed from the masthead of the steamer, but a boundless labyrinth of islands clothed with exuberant vegetation. The two chief lines of navigation through this deltaic region are the Parana de las Palmas (so ealled by Cabot,

_in 1526, but now showing comparatively few palms among its

ceibos, willows, and poplars) and the Parana Guazu. The former has its mouth about 24 miles north of Buenos Ayres, the latter joining the estuary of the Uruguay 22 miles farther north, in 34° N. lat. and 58° 24’ 30” W. long. :

The third great confluent of the La Plata system, the Uruguay, 18 quite unlike the other two. Instead of having a fairly steady and eontinuous flow, it appears sometimes as an insignificant torrent and at other times as a magnificent river. It has its headwaters in the Serra Geral, and for several

hundred miles continues to flow west through Brazil (forming the northern boundary of Rio Grande do Sul province), as if it meant, like the Curityba, to carry 1ts waters to the Parana; but about 54° W. long. it is turned aside by the mountain range of Misiones, and flows south-west and south almost parallel with the Parana. It has a total length of 950 miles, and a drainage area of 200,000 square milcs.

In the matter of annual rise and fall the three rivers differ con- siderably. The Paraguay is regular, reaching its lowest stage m the end of February, and its highest about the end of June, and showing an average difference of level not exceeding 15 feet. The ordinary flow at Asuncion is between 97,400 and 99,950 cubic feet per second. Above the junction of the Paraguay the Parana appeals to have numerous and rapid risings at irregular intervals, but to reach its maximum in December. Below the junetion it has much the same movement as the Paraguay, having high water in sum- ee eee

2 “astern Bolivia, &c.,” in Proc. Roy. Geo. Soc., 1881. ee See Thouar’s aeeount in L’ Faploration, 1884; and map of the Pileomayo, in Bol. Inst. Geogr. Argentino, 1882.

mer, gradually shrinking through September, October, and Decem- | glycerin, or masses of oil suspended in a mixture of alcohol

ber, flooding in January, and continuing high and steady till June. The Uruguay rises about the middle of Jannary (at Salto sometimes 92 feet above low water); again in April, to continne in flood for two months (30 feet at Salto); and for the third time, and with great regularity, in September or October, to last a whole month, and reach 40 to 50 feet above low water. Occasionally the flood

two years in succession ; and at intervals, asin 1858 and 1868, the water rises so high that the whole delta is snbinerged. The highest

floods on record stood 24 feet above ordinary low-water mark at _

Rosario, or 12 feet above ordinary high water.

As a system of | and more frequently a cheap and inferior body by a super-

waterways the La Plata rivers are but partiallydcveloped. Stcamers, | mainly Brazilian, ascend from Buenos Ayres by the Parana, Para- | guay, and Cuyaba, a total distance of 2146 miles, to the town of | Cuyaba in Brazil; and the Pilcomayo and the Vermejo, the Apa,

the Jejuy, and the Tebiquary are all more or less navigable. The

Parana affords a free passage for 280 miles above the confluence to |

the Seven Falls, except during low water, when the rapids of Apipe

‘interfere; and, according to Bigg-Wither, the upper Parana and

its tributaries the Tibagy, Paranapanéma, Tiete, Ibahy, &c., fur- nish 1290 miles of navigable stream, of which 510 could be at once utilized by steamers of light dranght, while the remainder would require a certain outlay in the way of improvements. Vessels drawing 44 feet of water can always ascend the Uruguay to Salto (200 miles), and during six months they can cross the Salto Chico, or Lesser Fall, a mile higher np; but the Salto Grande, 8 miles farther, stops all progress except during six weeks in October and September. Tlie whole system may be estimated to give upwards of 5000 miles of waterway, of which 3500 are accessible from the sea, without counting the secondary deltaic channels.

See T.S. Page, U.S.N., Za Plata, 1859 (the surveys of the ‘‘ Waterwitch “); Burton, Battle ~fields of Paraguay, 1870; Bigg-Wither, Pioneering in South Brazil, 1878; J. J. Révy, Hydraulics of Great Rivers: the Parana, the Uruguay, and the La Plata Estuary, 1874 (a series of elaborate investigations and measurements of great value) ; and other works mentioned under PARAGUAY. (H. A. W.)

PLATEAU, JosepH ANTOINE FERDINAND, was born at Brussels in 1801, and died in 1883 at Ghent, where he had been professor of physics from 1835. He was a pupil and friend of Quetelet, who had much influence on the early part of his career. The more original investigations of Plateau refer chiefly to portions of one or other of two branches of science—physiological optics and molecular forces. His doctoral thesis (Liége, 1829) had for its subject "Impressions produced by Light on the Organs of Vision"; and it was succeeded by numerous memoirs, some of much value, on the persistence of visual impressions, subjective impressions of colour, irradiation, &c. Among other results

of his studies was the invention of the philosophical toy |

known as the " thauinatrope." We owe to him also some- thing much more important, the process of studying the motion of a vibrating body by looking at it through equidistant radial slits ina revolving disk. In 1829 he Imprudently gazed at the midday sun for 20 seconds, with the view of studying the after effects. The result was blindness for some days, succeeded by a temporary recovery; but for the next fourteen years his sight gradually deteriorated, and in 1843 he became perma- nently blind. This calamity did not interrupt his scientific activity. Aided by his wife and son, and afterwards by his son-in-law Van der Mensbrugghe, he continued to the end of his life his researches on vision,—directing the course of the experiments which they made for him, and inter- preting the bearing of the results. He also published a valuable analytical catalogue of all the more important memoirs which had been written, from the earliest times to the end of the 18th century, on his favourite theme of Subjective visual phenomena. But even more extraordi-

hary were this blind man's investigations about molecular |

forees, embracing hundreds of novel experiments whose results he saw only with others' eyes. These form the subject of his great work Statique expérimentale et théorique des Liquides soumis aux seules Forces moleculaires (2 vols.,

1873

of the far as pl

phenomena usually called capillary. To avoid, as possible, complications due to gravity, Plateau em-

ee See | working. level of the Parana is maintained throughout a whole year, or even | g

| 1796, and died at Syracuse on December 5, 1835.

eS 8 | Pinto” (the little silver from the river Pinto).), Which is a valuable contribution to our knowledge |

and water of the same density as the oil. See CAPILLARY ACTION.

PLATED WARE. The plating or coating of one metal or alloy with another is extensively practised in metal In some cases the coating metal is a valuable protector from oxidation, &c., of the underlying metal ; in other cases the properties and advantages of two metals— such as strength and lustre—are combined in one object ;

ficial coating gets the appearance of a more valuable and important metal. The art of plating was originally applied to the production’ of imitation silver plate, whence the term “ plating.” The original method of silver plating consisted in attaching, by a kind of autogenous soldering, thin plates of silver to the opposite surfaces of a prepared ingot of copper alloy or of German silver. The silver plates were firmly wired to the ingot and submitted to a soldering temperature in a plating furnace, in which the surfaces became firmly united. Subsequently the ingot was rolled down to a sheet in which the relative thickness of the metals was maintained, and from such sheets ‘silver

| plated” articles were fashioned. This method of plating

may be regarded as now extinct, being superseded by electro-plating (see ELEcTro-MrTaLLuRGy, vol. vill. p. 114). Recently, however, cooking vessels, c&c., of iron plated in an analogous manner with nickel have come into use (see NicKEL, vol. xvii. p. 488). The plating or casing of iron with

brass is extensively practised in the manufac- ture of stair-rods, curtain and picture rods, and “ cased” tubing for upholstery purposes generally; and in the manufacture of pipes for conveying water the body of lead is frequently lined with a coating of pure tin. The gilding of metals is a process analogous to plating, as are also the galvanizing of iron and the manufacture of tin and terne plates. For these see [Ron, vol. xiii. p. 357.

PLATEN-HALLERMUND, Aveust, GraF von (1796- 1835), German poet, was born at Ansbach on October 24, His principal publications were Lyrische Blatter (1821), Sonette aus Venedig (1825), an historical fragment entitled Greschich- ten des Konigreichs Neapel 1414-43 (1833), and a poem in nine cantos, Die Abbasiden (1835). He wrote also a number of dramas, of which may be mentioned Der gldserne Pantofel and Die Liga von Cambrai. See vol. x. p. 546.

PLATINUM anp tHE PLATINUM METALS. The metals platinum (Pt), palladium (Pd), rhodium (Rh), iridium (Ir), ruthenium (Ru), and osmium (Os) are united into a family by a striking similarity in chemical characters and by their association in natural occurrence. A rather rare ore, called platinum ore or polyxene, is almost the only native material which is available for their extrac- tion; it contains them all in the reguline form. Traces of platinuin are found in almost all native gold.

As early as the first half of the 16th century it appears to have been noticed that the gold ore in the Spanish mines of Darien includes grains of a white metal, endowed with the qualities of a noble metal and yet distinctly different from silver; but the fact remained unknown in Europe because the Spanish Government, having found out that the new metal lent itself most admirably for the adulteration of gold, prohibited its exportation. Only from about the middle of last century did the metal begin to find its way to Europe and to become known there, at first as a curiosity, under its Spanish name of “ platina del Its chemi- cal individuality and qualities were established by the successive labours of Scheffer (1752), Marggraft (1757), Bergmann (1777), and others. An amateur, Count von

oyed either films formed of a solution of soap with | Sickingen, it appears, was the first who succeeded in work-

ing the metal (1772); the first platinum crucible was pro- duced by Achard (1784). Achard's mode of rendering the native metal amenable to mechanical working was founded upon the fact that it forms a readily fusible alloy with arsenic, from which the latter can be driven off again by intense heating. This method was worked industrially for a time, but subsequently superseded by another superior process, which is usually credited to Wollaston, because 1t was he who, after having wrought it asa rich source of revenue for years, published it in 1828. But as early as 1800 Knight of London had published all that is essential in the process; and Messrs Johnson, Matthey, & Co. in- form the writer that Wollaston obtained the secrets of both the refining and the compressing of the spongy into compact metal from a relative of theirs, Thomas Cock, who, they are convinced, is the true inventor. Undisputed merits of Wollaston's are his discoveries of palladium (1803) and rhodium (1804). About the same time iridium and osmium were discovered by Smithson Tennant.

Platinum ore well deserves its cognomen of " polyxene," because it is a most complex mixture of mineralogical species, including (1) a number of heavy reguline species designated as platinum, osmiridium, iron-platinum, platin- iridium, iridium, palladium (also gold), and (2) a number of non-metallic species, notably chrome-iron ore, magnetic oxide of iron, zircone, corundum, and occasionally also diamond. The reguline components always form detached granules, which are generally small, but occasionally assume considerable dimensions. The Dentidoff niuseum contains a native platinum lump weighing 21 pounds troy. The ore, as already stated, was discovered first in South

America ; it is found there chiefly in the provinces of Choco | It occurs |

and Barbacos, New Granada, and also in Brazil. besides in San Domingo, in California, at the Rogue river in Oregon, in Canada, and in the island of Borneo. But the richest deposits are those of the Ural Mountains ; these were discovered about 1823, and have been wrought by the Russian Government since about 1828. Part at least of the Ural ore, as Daubré showed, was embedded origin- ally with chrome-iron in a serpentine derived from olivine. The very variable percentages of the several

components range approximately as follows :—platinum, 60 to 87; other polyxene metals 3 to 7; gold up to 2 and more; iron 4 to 12; copper 0 to 4; non-metallic gangue 1 to 3.

Platinum, though a noble metal chemically, has too modest an appearance to lend itself much to the jeweller's purposes. The Russian Government used, for a while, to strike platinum coins, but soon came to give up the prac- tice on account of the immense fluctuations in the commer- cial value of the metal. Almost all the platinum produced now-a-days is made into chemical utensils. Platinum, in fact, is the metal of the chemist. "Without platinum crucibles, which share the infusibility of porcelain with the chemical inertness of gold ones the composition of most minerals could not have been ascertained" (Liebig), and chemistry generally could not have come up to its present level. In industrial chemistry platinum is used chiefly for the construction of those stills for the concentration of oil of vitriol which, although a single one costs a fortune, are cheaper in the long run than glass retorts.

The technical extraction of platinum from its ore is to the present day effected everywhere by some modification or other of the so-called '* Wollaston" process. Heraeus of Hanau operates as follows. The ore is digested within glass retorts in aqua regia diluted with three times its weight of water, an over-pressure of some 12 inches of water being established within the retorts to aecelerate the proeess, which always takes several days. The Whole of the osmiridium, along with more or less of other polyxene metals, and the 'sand " (corundum, chrome-iron, &c.) remain undissolved, as a heavy black deposit; the platinum palladium, part of the rhodium, and more or less of the other three

Pa el Ne

polyxene metals pass into solution, the platinum, iridium, aud pal- ladium as tetrachlorides. From the clarified solution the whole (almost) of the platinum can_ be precipitated as PtCl,(NH,), by addition of a large excess of sal-ammoniac ; and this simple process used to be adopted formerly. But the precipitate then includes much chloro-iridiate of ammonium IrCl,(NH,), and other impuri- ties. Heraeus, thereforc, first evaporates to dryuess and heats the residue to 125° C. for a sufficient time, to reduce the palladic and

iridie chlorides to the lower stages of PdCl, and It,Cl,, which form soluble double salts with sal-ammoniac. The heated residue is dissolved in water acidulated with hydrochloric acid, the solution filtered, and mixed with hot concentrated solution of sal-ammoniae, when a (relatively) pure chloroplatinate comes down as a yellow precipitate (the iridium compound is dark-red), whieh is washed, first with saturated sal-ammoniac solution, then with dilute hydro- chloric acid. The precipitate needs only be exposed to a dull red heat to be converted into “spongy platinum,” 7.e., metallic platinum in the form of a grey porous mass. As platinum is infusible even at the highest temperature producible in a wind- furnace, the spongy metal cannot be fused together into a regulus like an ordinary metal ; but it shares with wrought irou the rare quality of assuming a high degree of softness and viseosity at a strong red heat ; and consequently the sponge, after a preliminary compression by purely mechanical means, needs only be exposed to a strong heat to “frit” into a coherent mass ; and this mass, by repeated forging at a white heat is readily made into a perfectly homogeneous compact bar, which, as the metal is very ductile, is easily rolled out into sheet or drawn into wire. In the former form more especially it goes into the workshop to be made into utensils.

This process of welding at the time of Achard (who used it first) and of Knight was a necessary make-shift ; but it is singular that it was retained long after the invention of the oxyhydrogen blast (see vol. xviii. p. 105), by means of which platinum can be fused as easily as ise canin an ordinary fire. With the oxyhydrogen-

blowpipe Hare, as early as 1847, fused 970 grammes (upwards of

two pounds) of platinum into ote regulus. Yet platinum manu- facturers did not utilize this obvious protess until Deville and Debray, in 1859, again demonstrated its practicability. Their furnace is of the simplest description. Two flat pieces of quick- lime, scooped out so as to represent two cupels, are placed one upon tle other so that they enclose a flat space similar in form to two superimposed soup-plates. The lower cupel has a notch cut out of its side to servé as a spout for pouring out the liquefied metal, the upper and shallower one is pierced with a central slightly conical round hole through which the (platinum) nozzle of the blowpipe enters, so that the

flame flattens itself out on the intro- hice metal. By means of this simple contrivance Deville and Debray had no difficulty in fusing as much as twelve kilogrammes of platinum into one regulus ; and Messrs Jolinson, Matthey, & Co. of London riow think nothing of fusing up as much as 1000 ounces of metal in one operation. A regulus made under Mr Geo. Matthey's superintendence for the metric Commission in Paris in 1874 weighed one quarter of a ton.

The shaping of compact platinum is effected pretty much in the same way as Tek of gold or silver; only the difficulties are less because platinum, unlike the two ordinary noble metals, is sus- ceptible of "welding"; é.¢., two pieces of the metal, at a white heat, can be united into one by a stroke of the hammer. Soldering is rarely necessary; it used to be effected (and still is occasionally) by means of gold as a connecting medium and an ordinary blow- pipe. But platinum workers, following the lead of Messrs Johnson, Matthey, & Co., have long learned to unite two platinum seams by the ''autogenic" process—the local fusing of the two contiguous parts in the oxyhydrogen flame. . .

For the preparation of chemically pure platinum Schneider's process is the one most easily executed and explained. The commercial metal is dissolved in aqua regia and the excess of nitric acid removed by evaporation to a syrup in a water-bath. The residue is redissolved in water and boiled for a long time with a large excess of potash-free caustic soda. If care be taken to main- tain a strong alkaline reaction, all the foreign polyxene chlorides are reduced to lower forms than that of tetrachloride ; while only the platinum itself retains this state of combination. The hypo- chlorite formed is then reduced (to NaCl) by addition of a little alcohol to the boiling alkaline liquid, which is now allowed to cool and acidified strongly with hydrochloric acid so as to redissolve any hydrated platinic oxide which may have been precipitated by the first instalments of acid. The liquid at last is filtered, and precipitated by sal-ammoniac to obtain a pure chloroplatinate (PtCl,(NH,).), which, on ignition, of course, yields an equally pure spongy metal.

Pure compact platinum is a tin-white metal about as soft as pure copper and nearly (but not quite) equal in plasticity to gold. The specific gravity of the

fused metal is 21:48 to 21°50 at 17°°6 ©. (Deville and Debray). The breaking strain is 34°1 kilos for hard- drawn and 23°5 kilos for annealed wires ; the modulus of elasticity 15,518 (kilogramme and millimetre as units; by Werthum's cx-

| RL = cee

Pha TEN UM

periments on annealed welded wire). Unit length of the (fused) metal expands by 0:000907 from 0° to 100° C. (Fizean). The specific conductivity for heat at 12° C. is 8°4, for electricity at 0° C. 16°4(silver=100). The statement regarding electricity refers to the annealed metal. The fusing point, according to recent determina- tion by Violle, is 1779 C.; the same experimenter finds for the true specific heat 8Q/8¢=0°0317 +0°000012¢ (centigrade scale). When platinum is heated beyond its fusing point, it soon begins to vola- tilize. The fused metal, like silver, absorbs oxygen, and consequently "spits" on freezing. Atared heat the then viscid metal, as Graham has shown, '' occludes" hydrogen gas; 7.¢., it dissolves the gas (just as, for instance, liquid water would), which explains the fact pre- viously discovered by Deville that a platinum tube, although it may be perfectly gas-tight in the cold, at a red heat allows hydrogen (but not, for instance, oxygen, nitrogen, or carbonic acid) to pass through its walls. According to Graham the quantity of gas occluded is independent of the surface of the metal operated on, but proportional to its weight. No gas is taken up in the cold; but the gas occluded at a red heat, though extractable at that temperature by means of an absolute vacuum as producible by a Sprengel pump (see MERcuRTAL Arr Pump, vol. xvi. p. 30), is retained on cooling and cannot be thus liberated at the ordinary temperature. The volume of hydrogen absorbed by unit-volume of metal at a red heat under one atmosphere's pressure was found, in the case of fused metal, to vary from 0°13 to 0°21 volume measured cold ; in the case of merely welded metal, from 2°34 to 88 volumes (compare Palladium below). Oxygen gas, though absorbed by the liquid, is not occluded by the solid metal at any temperature, but when brought in contact with it at moderate tem- peratures suffers considerable condensation at its surface. The thin condensed film of oxygen exhibits a high degree of chemical aetivity : a perfectly clean piece

of platinum foil, when immersed in a mixture of hydrogen or ammonia or other combustible gas and air, begins to glow and starts a process of slow combustion or there may bean explosion. The spongy metal of course exhibits a very high degree of activity: a jet of hydrogen gas when made to strike against a layer of spongy platinum causes it to glow and takes fire. This is the principle of the (now defunct) Débereiner lamp. But the most striking effects are produced by a peculiar kind of very finely divided platinum, which was ieectek by Liebig and called by him platinum black on account of its resemblance to lamp-black. A ely active “black” is produced by dropping platinum chloride solution into a boiling mixture of three volumes of glycerin and two of caustic potash of 1°08 specific gravity. Platinum black, aecording to Liebig, absorbs 800 times its volume of oxygen from the air, and in virtue thereof is a most active oxidizing agent, which, in general, acts “catalytically ” because the black, after having given up its oxygen to the oxidizable substance present, at once takes up a fresh supply from the atinosphere. For examples see FERMENTATION, vol. ix. pp. 94-98.

Platinum Alloys.

Platinum alloys of almost any kind are easily produced syntheti- cally ; and, as a rule, a temperature little if at all above the fusing point of the imore fusible component suffices to start the union. We will begin with the cases in which the metal combines with another member of its own family. Jridiwm.—In the heat of an oxyhydrogen flame the two metals unite permanently in all pro-

ortions. The alloy has pretty much the appearance of platinum,

ut it is less fusible, harder, more elastic, specifically heavier, and less readily attacked by aqua regia, —all these qualities increasing as the percentage of iridium increases. The 19 per cent. alloy was produced for the first time by G. Matthey. It has the hardness and elasticity of soft steel (modulus of elasticity = 22,000 for milli- metre and kilogramme), and is hardly attacked by aqua regia. Alloys richer in iridium are difficult to work. The 10 per cent. alloy on the other hand still retains enough of the virtues referred to to be far superior to platinum itself—perhaps we might say, to any other solid—as a material for standard measures of length or weight. In

1870 Messrs Johnson, Matthey, & Co. exhibited a standard metre made of this alloy, and it gave such unqualified satisfaction that the international metric committee which sat in Paris some years ago adopted it for the construction of their ae kthodium.—An alloy of 30 per cent. of this metal and

0 of platinum is absolutely proof against aqua regia, but is very pemthel Deville and Debray once elaborated an igneous process ane producing, directly from the ore, a triple alloy of platinum, iri- oe and rhodium, which is quite workable and, besides being more Genly infusible than platinum, is almost proof against aqua regia.

tucibles made Of this alloy used to be sold in Paris and elsewhere at moderate prices ; but they are now no longer to be had. Gold. —This metal unites with platinnm in all proportions, forming eryish-yellow or greyish-white alloys. A graduated series of these

i was recommended by Schertel and Ehrhard as a means for

eining certain ranges of high temperatures. According to their

experiments, whil ine-poi a item 17 while the fusing-point for gold was 1075° C., and for

5°, it was 1130° for 10 per cent. of platinum, 1190° | metal.

191

for 20, 1255° for 80, 1320° for 40, 1385° for 50, 1460° for 60, 1535° for 70, 1610° for 80, and 1690° for 90 per cent. Silver and platinum unite readily in any proportion, but the alloys are in general liable to ‘‘liquation” (see METALS, vol. xvi. p. 67). Now platinum is as proof against nitric acid as gold; and yet these alloys cannot, like gold-silver, be parted by means of nitric acid ; because, if the alloy is rich enough in silver to be at all attacked by the acid, part at least of the platinum passes into solution along with the silver. But concentrated oil of vitriol effects a sharp separation; the platinum remains. A considerable variety of alloys of platinum with other noble metals are used in mechanical dentistry. The following examples may be

quoted :—66‘7 per cent. of gold and 38 of platinum; platinum 50, silver 25, palladium 25 ; platinum 41°7, gold 25, palladium 33°3.

Of the great varicty of alloys of platinum with base metals which have been recommended as substitutes for noble metals or other- wise we select the following :—

Platinum.| Silver.

Copper. | Tin. Brass. Nickel. 1 19 0 1 Q 0 0

2 1 0 26 0 0 0

3 2 1 D 0 2 1

4 1 0 0 10 0 100 5 1 2 0 20 0 100

6 0°5 0 0 15 0 100

7 20 0 0 20 0 100

8 5 to 10 0 0 0 120 60

(1) Known to jewellers and dentists as hard platinum ; (2) a rose-coloured fine- grained ductile alloy; (3) introduced by Bolzani in Paris as an imitation gold; (4 to 7) platinum bronzes, recommended—(4) for knife and fork handles, (5) for bells, (6) for articles de luxe, (7) for telescopes ; (8) not subject to oxidation.

Platinum Compounds.

Platinum is not changed by air, water, or steam at any tempera- ture. It is proof against the action of all ordinary single acids, including hydrofluoric, in the heat or cold. Aqua regia (a mixture of hydrochloric and nitric acids) dissolves it slowly as chloro- platinic acid PtCl,H,. The metal is not attacked by even very strong boiling caustic potash or soda ley, nor is it changed by fusion with carbonate of.soda or potash. Carbonate of lithia, and the hydrates of potash, soda, and baryta, however, when fused in platinum vessels, attack them strongly, with formation of com- pounds of

PtO, with the respective bases, According to recent experiments by the writer, none of these reactions go on in the absence of air ; hence, for instance, a fusion with caustic baryta or potash can safely be carried out in a platinum crucible if the latter is protected by an atmosphere of hydrogen or nitrogen. Fused hepar (alkaline sulphide) dissolves platinum at a red heat ; so does fused cyanide of potassium, especially if mixed with caustic potash.

Chloroplatinie Acid.—The solution of the metal in aqua regia is evaporated down repeatedly in a water bath with hydrochloric acid to destroy the excess of nitric acid and the very concentrated solution allowed to stand, when the acid gradually separates out in brown-red deliquescent crystals of the composition PtCl,H,+6H,0, which are abundantly soluble in water and also easily in even strong alcohol. The aqueous solution, if free of iridium and platinous chlorides, is of a rich but clear yellow colour free of any tinge of brown. The ‘‘chloride of platinum”’ solution of the analyst is an aqueous solution of this acid. When the solution is mixed with those of certain chlorides, the 2HCl are displaced by their equivalent of metallic chloride, and metallic ‘‘chloroplatin- ates” are produced. Of these the potassium (rubidium and cesium) and the ammonium salts are most easily prepared,—by addition of the respective chlorides to a moderately strong solution of chloroplatinic acid ; they come down almost completely as pale yellow crystalline precipitates, little soluble in cold water and very nearly insoluble in alcohol. The sodium salt PtCl,Na,+6H,O and the lithium salt PtCl,Li.+6H,O are readily soluble in water and in aqueous alcohol (the Li,~~compound dissolves even in ab~~ solute alcohol); hence ‘‘chloride of platinum” is used for the separation of K, NH,, Rb, Cs from Na and Li. On the other hand chloride of potassium or ammonium may serve as a precipitant for platinum, but in this case a large excess of a concentrated solution of the precipitant must be used to bring the solubility of the chloroplatinate precipitate to its minimum. Gold, copper, iron, and many other metals not belonging to the polyxene group, if present, remain dissolved. Real platinic chloride, PtCl,, can be produced from the acid PtCl,H, only by precipitating from its solution the chlorine of the 2HCl by the exact equivalent of nitrate of silver. The filtrate when evaporated (cold) over vitriol deposits red crystals of the composition PtCl,+5H,O. When chloropla- tinic acid is heated to 300° C. it loses its 2HC] and half the chlorine of its PtCl, and platinous chloride, PtCl,, remains as a dull green

powder, insoluble in water but soluble in aqueous hydrochloric acid. ither chloride when heated to redness leaves spongy The hydrochloric solution of platinous chloride, when

evaporated with one of chloride of potassium to a sufficiently small volume, deposits rose-coloured crystals of a double salt PtCl,+2KCl=PtCl,K,, From a solution of this double salt platinous hydrate, Pt(OH),, is obtained, by boiling it with the calculated quantity of caustic soda, as a black precipitate, which, when gently heated, becomesanhydrous. Platinic hydrate, Pt(OH),, is obtained by boiling chloroplatinic acid solution with excess of caustic soda and then acidifying with acetic acid, as an almost white precipitate, Pt(OH),+2H,0, which loses its 2H,0 at 100° C. and becomes brown; at a certain higher temperature it loses all

its water and assumes the form of the black anhydride PtO.. Both |

oxides are bases in so far as their hydrates combine with a limited number of acids; towards strong bases they behave as feeble acids. Only a few of the salts of the acid PtO, have been investigated. Either oxide when heated to redness breaks up into oxygen and metal. ;

Platin- Ammonium Compounds. —In this very numerous family of bodies a compound radieal containing platinum and some ammonia residue plays the part of a basilous metal. The first member was discovered by Magnus in 1828. By adding ammonia to a hydrochloric solution of platinous chloride, he obtained a green precipitate of the composition PtCl,.NgH,g, which soon became known as ‘‘Magnus’s green salt,” and served asa starting point for subsequent investigations.

Platinoeyanides.—These were discovered by L. Gmelin, who obtained the potassinm salt Pt(NC),K, by fusing the metal with prussiate of potash. Martius’s method is more convenient: chloroplatinate of ammonia is heated in a strong mixed solution of caustic potash and cyanide of potassium as long as ammonia is going off. The solution on cooling deposits crystals contain- ing 8H,O of water, which appear yellow in transmitted and blue in reflected light. From the potash salt numerous other platinocyanides can be made by double decompositions ; anda very interesting series is derived from these by the addition of chlorine or bromine. All these bodies are distinguished by their magnificent fluorescence,

The Polyxene Metals Generally.

The metals all exist in the three forms of “black,” ‘‘sponge,” and compact regulus. The colours of the compact metals are shades of white, except in the case of osmium, which forms blue crystals. Platinum, palladium, and rhodinm are ductile ; the rest break under the hammer.! In regard to specific gravity they arrange themselves into two groups as shown by the following table, which at the same time gives the atomic weights (those of Pt and Ir according to Seubert) and the formule of the most stable chlorides :—

Name. Ateneo pe Chlorides. Plat W <.se1s2—0 Pt =194°8 21°50 PtCl, ; PtCl,. Nasiclivinnweess eee ee Ir =193°0 22°38 Tr,Cl,. (QEMOIET Goa Sooueee: Os =195 22°48 q Lei EXC GUITID organo: Pd =106°6 11:4 PdCl.,. Rhodium……..... Rh=104°3 121 Bh,Cly. Ruthenium…..... Ru =103°8 E26 Ru,Cl, + RCI.

The order of fusibility is as follows :—Pd, Pt, Ir, Rh, Ru, Os. Palladium almost fuses in the strongest heat of a wind furnace, but like the four metals following requires an oxyhydrogen flame for its real fusion ; osmium has never been fused at all; but it volatilizes abundantly at the highest tempcrature producible by the oxyhydrogen blast. 7

Aetion of Air.—Platinuin and palladium do not oxidize at any temperature ; rhodium also does not oxidize by itself, but when cupelled with lead it remains as monoxide RhO. Compact iridium does not oxidize appreciably even in the heat; but the finely-divided metal, at some temperature below 800° C., suffers gradual conversion into Ir,03, which when heated more strongly begins to dissociate at 800°, and is completely reduced at 1000° C. Ruthenium draws a film of oxide in even cold air ; at a red heat it passes into Ru,O3, which retains its oxygen at a white heat. Osmium (the finely-divided metal), when heated in air to about 400°C., takes fire and burns into vapour of tetroxide, OsO, This and the analogous ruthenium compound are the only volatile oxides of the group.

Water.—None of our metals seem to decompose water or steam at any temperature.

Hydrochloric Acid acts slowly on palladium in the presence of air; otherwise there is no action in any case.

Hot Nitric Acid dissolves palladium as nitrate Pd(NOs3)., and converts finely divided osmium into tetroxide vapour. Compact

osmium, and platinum, iridium, and rhodiuin j attacked by the acid. ’ A m in any form, are uot

1 It still remains to be seen how far this latter

; er statement holds for the absolutely pure metals. Mr George Matthey has succeeded i ing iridi ir ; COTE EME To a Téep Withon ween ed in producing iridium wire, whieh

| driving off the ‘‘solvent” in a wind-furnace.

Ww

PiaA Bane M

Aqua Regia, in the heat, dissolves palladium (very readily) and platinum (somewhat more slowly) as MeCl,H, ; only the palladium compound is very unstable, being completely reduced to dichloride, PdCl,, by mere cvaporation over a watcr-bath. Iridium black, or iridium alloyed with much platinum, dissolves slowly as IrCl,H., readily reducible (by, for instance, addition of alcohol, or evaporation to dryness and heating of the residue to about 150° ©.) to lr,Cl,. Compact iridium, like ruthenium or rhodium, is hardly attacked even by the hot acid; rhodium exhibits the highest degree of stability. Native osmiridiumn is not touched by aqua regia. Osmium, in the heat at least, becomes tctroxide.

Free Chlorine combines directly with all polyxene metals at suitable temperatures. As a disintegrator it is useful chiefly for the manipulation of osrairidium and other such platinum-ore components as refuse to dissolve in aqua regia. ‘The action of the gas is greatly facilitated by the presence of fixed alkaline chloride,

Polyxene Oxides and Salts.

Monoxides have been produced from platinum, palladium, ruthenium, and osmium. PtO and PdO are decided, the other two are very feeble bases. .

Sesquioxides, Me,Q3, have been got from rhodium, iridium, ruthe- nium, and osmium. All are basic.

Binoxides, MeOg, exist from all the metals except rhodium. PdQ,, like PtO, (see above), is basic or feebly acid ; IrO, is a feeble base; RuO, and OsO, are neutral.

Tetroxides, MeO, are formed by osmium and ruthenium only. Both OsO, and RuOy, are easily fnsible and very volatile solids. Their vapours have a most powerful smell and are most dangerously poisonous.

Trivatdes and Heptoxides do not exist as snbstances; but the groups RuO;, OsO;, and R,O, unite with alkalies into soluble salts analogous to chromates and permanganates in their constitution respectively, The oxides MeO, Me,O,, MeO, are as a rule pre- parable by evaporating a solution of the respective chloride or potassio- &c. chloride to dryness with excess of carbonate of soda, heating the residue to dull redness, and removing the alkaline chloride and excess of carbonate by lixiviation with water. The oxides remain as very dark-coloured powders insoluble in acids, The corresponding hydrates are precipitated from the solutions of the chlorides or potassio- &c. chlorides, on addition of excess of caustic potash or soda and heating. These hydrates of the oxides are soluble in certain aqueous acids with formation of salts, and in this limited sense only the “ oxides” can be said to be “ bases.”

Salts. —Of these the most characteristic and the best known are compounds of certain of their chlorides with alkaline chlorides.

1. The compounds MeCl,R, (chloroplatinates and analognes), formed by all polyxene metals, except rhodium, are all crystalline salts, more or less soluble in water but asa rule insoluble or nearly so inalcohol. The acids MeCl,Hy, in which Me is not platinum, exist only as unstable solution, which by the action of excess of caustic soda in the heat, if not by the action

of a gentle heat alone, are all reduced to lower chlorides ; only the platinum compound possesses

| a higher degree of stability.

2. Chlorides, MeCl,, and potassio- &c. chlorides, McC1,R,, exist only in the platinum and palladium series.

3. Hexachlorides, Me,Clg, and compounds thereof with other chlorides are formed only by rhodium, iridium, and ruthenium.

Preparation of the Rarer Polyxene Metals.

For this the residues obtained in the industrial extraction of platinum from the ore form the natural raw material. These residues are two in number,—(1) that part of the ore which resisted the action of aqua regia (we will call it the osmiridinm residue), and (2) the filtrate from the chloroplatinate of ammonia.

1. Part of the osmiridium in the first residue consists of scales or grains so hard that they cannot be powdered even in a steel mortar. They must be reduced to a fine powder, which is best done by fusing them up with cight to ten parts of zinc and then The osmiridium remains as a dark friable mass, which is easily powdered and in- corporated with the originally sifted-off part. The disintegration of the residue may then be effected, according to Wohler, by mixing it with its own weight of common salt and exposing the mixture to a current of chlorine at a dull red heat within a com- bustion tube. If the chlorine is moist much of the osmium goes 0 as vapour of tetroxide, which must be collected in solution of caustic potash. After complete chlorination the contents of the tube are treated with water, when asa rule some undisintegrated osmiridium remains which is filtered off. The solution is mixed with nitric acid and distilled as long as any osmic tetroxide vapours are going off, which are readily recognized by their powerful pungent smcll, and of course must be carefully collected in caustic potash ley. The residual liquor (which contains the iridium as TrCl,Na,) 1s supersaturated with carbonate of soda, and evaporated to dryness,

i ieee?

the residue kept at a dull red heat and then lixiviated with water. Alkaliferous oxideof iridium, Ir,O3, remains as a blue-black powder, which needs only be heated in hydrogen to be reduced to metal, from which the alkali is now easily removed by washing with water. Such iridium is always contaminated with more or less osmium, ruthenium, rhodium, and platinum, to remove which the crude metal is fused up with ten parts of lead, and the alloy treated with dilute nitric acid to dissolve the bulk of the lead, when the polyxene metals remain in the shape of a black powder. From this the platinum is extracted by prolonged treatment with dilute aqua regia, and from the residue the rhodium by fusion with bisulphate of potash and subsequent treatment with water, which dissolves away the sulphate of rhodium formed. The residue now left is fused in a gold crucible with ten parts of caustic and three of nitrate of potash, when the ruthenium and osmium assume the form of soluble MeO,K,0 salts, which are extracted with water and thus removed. What remains is an alkaliferous (blue) sesquioxide of iridium, which as a rule still retains some iron, ruthenium, and traces of gold and silica (G. Matthey). For the final purification of the metal and the recovering of the ruthenium and rhodium see G. Matthey's memoir (Chem. Soc. Journ., 1879, Abstr., p. 772) and chemical handbooks.

The osmium, as already stated, is obtained at an early stage of the process in the shape of a solution of its volatile tetroxide in causti¢ potash. This solution is mixed with a little alcohol to bring the osmium into the state of osmite, K,0 aOsO,, which is insoluble in alcohol. This precipitate is digested in sal-ammoniac, to convert it into a yellow compound of the composition 2NH,C1 OsO,(NH3)., which latter needs only be heated in hydro- gen to be converted into finely divided metallic osmium.

2. The second residue consists of a solution of a variety of polyxene chlorides in sal-ammoniac. This liquor is kept in contact with metallic iron, when the dissolved polyxene metals, and any gold or copper present, come down as a black heavy precipitate. This precipitate includes all the palladium and part of the rhodium as principal components. Bunsen has worked out an exhaustive method for the extracting of all its polyxene metals in pure forms; but it is too complicated to be reproduced here.1 The customary method for extracting the palladium is to treat the metallic precipitate with aqua regia, which dissolves the palladium and platinuin along

with some of the iridium and rhodium, to filter, evaporate the residue to a syrup (for bringing the palladium into the form of PdCl,), redissolve and precipitate the palladium by addition of the exact quantity of mercuric cyanide as cyanide Pd(NC),. This cyanide necds only be ignited strongly to leave a residue of metal. But this metal includes at least part of the copper of the original material, To remove it and other impnrities, the crude metal is dissolved in hydrochloric acid with the help of free chlorine, and the solution next evaporated to dryness to reduce the PdCl,H, to PdCl,, The chloride is redissolved, the solution mixed with enough of ammonia to redissolve the precipitate first produced, and hydrochloric acid gas is now passed into the solution. Yellow palladiochloride of ammonium, PdCl, (NH,)o, is precipitated, while copper and iron remain dissolved. After removal of the mother liquor the double salt is ignited and thus converted into palladium- Sponge, which is easily fused up in the oxyhydrogen flame and thus brought into the form of regulus.

Notes on Palladiwm, Osmium, and Osmtridium.

Palladium, a silver-white metal of great ductility, is much used, notwithstanding its high price, in mechanical dentistry and occasionally also for the graduated limbs of theodolites and other imstruments, because, unlike silver, it remains bright in sulphur- etted hydrogen.

Of all the properties of this metal the most remarkable is its extra- ordinary power of “occluding” hydrogen. According to Graham (to whom we owe almost all our knowledge on the subject) the compact metal when immersed in cold hydrogen gas takes up none or at most very little of it; but at higher temperatures very con- siderable occlusions take place. A certain specimen of foil was found to occlude 526 volumes of the gas at 245° C., and 643 at 90° to 97° C., measured at 17°°5 to 18° and one atmosphere’s pressure, per unit-volume of metal. The hydrogen, as in the case of platinum, is retained on cooling, and from the cold compound cannot be extracted by means of an absolute vacuum, which re- extracts the gas at a red heat.

Far more striking results can be obtained by using palladium aS a negative pole in the electrolysis of (acidulated) water. The Coefficient of occlusion then assumes very high values ; in Graham’s = i attained its maximum when the palladium was produced i. Gee from a 1°6 per cent. solution of its

chloride, and ai : Togenized while itself in the nascent state. The galvani- a Y deposited sheet was found to contain 982 volumes of hydrogen

measured cold) per unit-volume of original inetal, corresponding

1 Jahresb. d, Chemie, 1868, p. 280; Ann. d. Chemie, vol. cxlvi. 265.

approximately to the formula Pd,H, for the compound. When palladium unites with (nascent or free) hydrogen it suffers a very appreciable expansion which on the removal of the hydrogen is followed by a contraction beyond the original volume of the plain metal. This can be most beautifully illustrated by electrolysing water in an apparatus in which the negative electrode consists of a long strip of palladium-foil of which one side is covered over with varnish or electrolytically deposited platinum. The hydrogen goes in at the bare side of the electrode ; this side consequently expands more strongly than the other and the originally straight strip of metal becomes curved. When the current is reversed, hydrogen bubbles at once rise from what is now the negative pole, but the oxygen due at the palladium plate is for a time taken up by the hydrogen occluded there; this hydrogen is gradually consumed, and as it diminishes the plate unbends more and more completely and at last gets bent over in the opposite sense. Palladium by being hydrogenized does not lose any of its metallic properties, but (in the case of complete saturation) its density sinks from 12°38 to 11°79, its tenacity to 82 per cent. of its original value, its electric conductivity in the ratio of 8°1 to 5:9.

Graham views hydrogenized palladium as a true alloy, containing its hydrogen in the form of a metal ‘‘hydrogenium.” He found that certain palladium alloys take up hydrogen as readily (though less abundantly) as the pure metal does with corresponding expan- sion, but when dehydrogenized shrink back into exactly their ori- ginal volume. He calculated that the density of hydrogenium lies somewhere about the value 0°733 (water=1),—which of course means only that the weight of the occluded hydrogen, measured by the weight of a volume of water equal to the expansion observed, is =0°733. Dewar arrived at 0°620 as being

probably nearer the truth, and for the specific heat of hydrogenium found values from 3°79 to 5°88.

Osmium.—According to Deville and Debray, powdery osmium is most readily obtained by mixing the vapour of the tetroxide with that gas (CO+CO,) which is prepared by the decomposition of oxalic acid with oil of vitriol, and passing the mixture through a red-hot porcelain tube. The powdery metal readily fuses up with 3 or 4 parts of tin into a homogeneous alloy. When this alloy is treated with hydrochloric acid most of the tin dissolves, and the rest of it can be driven off by heating the residue in HCl gas. There remains ultimately pure osmium in the form of blue crystals endowed with a grey to violet reflex, which are hard enough to scratch glass. Their specific gravity is 22°48, so that osmium, besides being the most infusible of metals, is the heaviest of all known bodies.

Osmiridiwm.—Native osmiridium forms crystalline plate-shaped grains, distinguished by an extraordinary degree of hardness, which certainly exceeds that of hard-tempered steel. Most of the grains are very minute; the larger ones are utilized for making the so-called “diamond points” of gold pens. Osmiridium would lend itself for endless other applications if it were possible to unite the native dust into large compact masses. From a series of articles in the Chemical News (Jan. 2, 9, and 16, 1885), by Nelson W. Perry, it would appear that this problem has been solved, in a sense. John Holland, an American pen-maker, starting from the long- known fact that platinum metals readily unite with phosphorus into relatively easily fusible alloys, succeeded in producing a phos- phorized osmiridium which can be cast (and pressed while liquid) into thin continuous slabs even harder than the native substance, and susceptible of being wrought into drills, knife-edges, &c.

Statistics.

The production of platinum-ore in Russia was 2327 kilogrammies in 1862, 492 in 1863, 397 in 1864, 2273 in 1865, 1768 in 1867, and 2050 in 1871,—a total in those six years of 9307. The average production of platinum metal, from 1828 to 1845, amounted to 2623°8 kilogrammes per annum. In 1870 it was only 2005°8 kilos, of which about 80 per cent. came from the Ural Mountains.”

The manufacture of platinum utensils is in the hands of a very few firms, of which that of Messrs Johnson, Matthcy, & Co. of London is generally understood to be the most important. Even the total amount of inetal which passes through these works in the aggregate is difficult of ascertainment, the more so as some of them at least are discounting large reserves of old metal, including more or less of the obsolete coins. According to an approximate estimate which a very competent authority has kindly furnished, the consumption during the last five years fell little short of 100,000 tb troy,? of which from 75 to 80 per cent. are believed to have passed through the hands of London manufacturers.

The price of the metal during the last ten or twelve years has ranged from four to eight times that of silver. It is very high at present (1885) in consequence of the constantly increasing demand for platinum utensils. (W. D.)

2 From Kamarsch and Heeren's Technisches Wérterbuch. em 3 Equal to 7464 kilogrammes per annum, which is 3°7 times the amount given

above for 1870. XIX. — 25

Antece- dent ten- dencies.

194

PLATO

LATO, the Athenian philosopher and father of ideal- Pp ism, was born 427 B.c., and lived to the age of eighty. His literary activity may be roughly said to have extended over the first half of the 4th century B.c. His father's name was Ariston, and his mother's family, which claimed descent from Solon, included Critias, one of the thirty tyrants, and other Athenian notables. That throughout his early manhood he was the devoted friend of Socrates, that in middle life he taught those who resorted to him in the grove named of Academus, near the Cephisus, and there founded the first great philosophical school, that (with alleged interruptions) he continued to preside over the Academy until his death, are matters of established fact. It is said by Aristotle that he was at one time intimate with Cratylus the

Heraclitean. Beyond this we have no authentic record of his outward life. That his name was at first Aristocles, and was changed to Plato because of the breadth of his shoulders or of his style or of his forehead, that he wrestled well,! that he wrote poetry?

which he burnt on hearing Socrates, that he fought in | three great battles,? that he had a thin voice, that (as is |

told of other Greek philosophers) he travelled to Cyrene and conversed with priests in Egypt, are statements of Diogenes Laertius, which rest on more or less uncertain tradition. The express assertion—which this author attri- butes to Hermodorus—that after the death of Socrates Plato and other Socratics took refuge with Euclides in Megara, has a somewhat stronger claim to authenticity. But the fact cannot be regarded as certain, still less the elaborate inferences which have been drawn from it. The romantic legend of Plato's journeys to Sicily, and of his re- lations there with the younger Dionysius and the princely but unfortunate Dion, had attained some degree of con- sistency before the age of Cicero, and at an unknown but probably early time were worked up into the so-called Epistles of Plato, now all but universally discredited. Nor is there sufficient ground for supposing, as some have done, that an authentic tradition is perceptible behind the myth. For the details of the story the reader is referred to Grote,* who believed in the genuineness of the Kpistles.

It is more important than any further balancing of uncertainties to observe the intellectual tendencies of the preceding generation (c. 430-400 B.c.).

The later years of the Peloponnesian War witnessed much mental disturbance and restlessness at Athens. Thoughtful minds looked forward with apprehension and backwards with regret, while even the most thoughtless were stirred into superficial activity. More than at any time since the age of Clisthenes, the city was divided, and a man's foes were often men of his own tribe or deme. Athenian politics were more factious and less significant than ever. Contention in the law-courts and rivalries in the assembly had for many men a more absorbing interest than questions of peace and war. Hereditary traditions had relaxed their hold, and political principles were not yet formulated. Yet there was not less scope on this account for personal ambition, while the progress of democracy, the

necessity of conciliating the people, and the apportionment of public offices by lot had a distract- ing and, to reflecting persons, often a discouraging effect.

1 See Laws, vii. 814 c. 2 Some epigrams in the Anthology are attributed to him.

3 This is told on the authority of Aristoxenus. But Plato cannot have been at Delium.

‘oe 5 Pe History of Greece, c. \xxxiv. ; Plato, vol. i. ¢. iii.

For those amongst whom Plato was brought up this effect was aggravated by the sequel of the oligarchical revolution, while, on the other hand, for some years after the restora- tion of the democracy, a new stimulus had been imparted, which, though of short duration, was universally felt. The events and circumstances thus briefly summarized appear in two ways to have encouraged the diffusion of ideas. The ambitious seem to have welcomed them as a meéans of influence, while those who turned from public life were the more stimulated to speculative disputation. However this may have been, it is manifest that before the beginning of the 4th century B.c. the intellectual atmo- sphere was already charged with a new force, which although essentially one may be differently described, according to the mode of its development, as (1) rhetorical and (2) theoretical and “sophistical.” This last word indicates the channel through which the current influences were mostly derived. A new want, in the shape both of interested and of disinterested curiosity, had insensibly created a new profession. Men of various fatherlands, some native Athenians, but more from other parts of Hellas, had set themselves to supplement the deficiencies of ordinary education, and to train men for the require- ments of civic life. More or less consciously they based their teachings on the philosophical dogmas of an earlier time, when the speculations of Xenophanes, Heraclitus, or Parmenides had interested only a few “wise men.” Those great thoughts were now to be expounded, so that “even cobblers might understand.” ® The self-appointed teachers found a rich field and abundant harvest among the wealthier youth, to the chagrin of the old-fashioned Athenian, who sighed with Aristophanes for the good old days when men knew less and listened to their elders and obeyed the

customs of their fathers. And such distrust was not wholly unfounded. For, amidst much that was graceful and improving, these novel questionings had an influence that, besides being unsettling, was aimless and unreal. A later criticism may discern in them the two great tendencies of naturalism and humanism. But it may be doubted if the sophist was himself aware of the direction of his own thoughts. For, although Prodicus or Hippias could debate a thesis and moralize with effect,

they do not appear to have been capable of speculative

reasoning. What passed for such was often either verbal quibbling or the pushing to an extreme of some isolated abstract notion. That prudens questio which is dimidium scientie had not yet been put. And yet the hour for putting it concerning human life was fully come. For the sea on which men were drifting was profoundly troubled, and would not sink back into its former calm. Conserva tive reaction was not less hopeless than the dreams of theorists were mischievously wild. In random talk, with gay, irresponsible energy, the youth were debating problems which have exercised great minds in Europe through all after time.

Men’s thoughts had begun to be thus disturbed and Sor

eager when Socrates arose. To understand him is the most necessary preliminary to the study of Plato, In our first authentic knowledge of him he is a man in mature life, attracting the attention of his fellow-citizens no less by his courage as a soldier than by his strange-familiat presence in the Athenian agora. Like the cicada of the trees by the Ilissus, his voice was never silent—except when checked by his divine monitor, or when wrapt, as he some-

ae

5 Theet., 180 D.

ee | ee te

a

NS

eh a Fo

times was for hours, in a catalepsy of reverie (see SocRATES). When he appeared in the market-place about midday, ready to single out his man for questioning, he had already spent some hours in the wrestling-schools, conversing with the youth. This was not, as it appeared to his contemporaries, mere idleness or mental dissipation (édoAecxéa), but the exercise of his self-chosen profession. There is no reason to doubt the general truth of the assertion which Plato attributes to him in the Apologia. He felt a divine vocation to examine himself by questioning other men. Gifted with an iron frame, and having trained himself to have fewer wants than a soldier or a slave, he could devote all his time to this one object, without engaging in remunerative business, or setting hours apart for recrea- tion, since he was indefatigable alike in body and mind. He was really doing for the Athenians, whether they would or no, what the sophist professed to do for his adherents, and what such men as Protagoras and Prodicus had actually done in part. One obvious difference was that he would take no fee. But there was another and more deep-lying difference, which distinguished him not only from the contemporary sophists but from the thinkers of the previous age. This was the Socratic attitude of inquiry.

The sceptical movement had confused men's notions as to the value of ethical ideas! "If 'right' is one thing in Athens and another at Sparta, why strive to follow right rather than expediency? The laws put restraint on Nature, which is prior to them. Then why submit to law?" And the ingenuities of rhetoric had stirred much unmean- ing disputation. Every case seemed capable of being argued in opposite ways. Even on the great question of the ultimate constitution of things, the conflicting theories of absolute immutability and eternal change appeared to be equally irrefragable and equally untenable.

Now Socrates first of all maintained imperturbably the simple habits of an ordinary Athenian citizen, observing scrupulously even minute religious customs, entering also unreservedly into the lightest pastimes of his associates, while the plain and strenuous tenor of his own peculiar life remained unaffected. But intoall he carried the same irre- pressible,

insatiable spirit of search, to which nothing human was alien or uninteresting. Taking men and women as he found them, and conversing casually, as it appeared, on the topic which chanced to interest his hearer, he had not gone far before he had unmasked some vain pretence, cut folly to the quick, or raised some doubt of wide significance. And, though he often ended with negation, his negative achievements had a positive aim. For there underlay the process even when most ironical the conviction, not less profound because implicit, that in spite of false appearances, In spite of error, there are realities not undiscoverable, and whatsoever is real is good. His hearers had been confused by contradictory voices,—one erying “All is motion,” another “ All is rest”; one “ The absolute is unattainable,” another “The relative alone is real”; some upholding a vague sentiment of traditional right, while some declared for arbitrary convention and some for the “law of nature.” Some held that virtue was spontaneous, some that it was due to training, and some paradoxically denied that either vice or falsehood had any meaning. The faith of Socrates, whether instinctive or inspired, remained untroubled by these jarring tones. He did not ask—“Is virtue a reality?” or “Is goodness a delusion?” But, with perfect confidence that there was an answer, he asked himself and others “What is it?” (ri éori); or, more particularly, as Xenophon testifies, “What is a state? What is a statesman? What is just? What is unjust?

1 See Caird, Hegel, p. 168.

What is government? What is it to be a ruler of men?” In this form of question, however simple, the originality of Socrates is typified; and by means of it he laid the first stone, not only of the fabric of ethical philosophy, but of scientific method. The secret of his success lay in the combination of a deep sense of human ignorance with a confidence not less deep in the power of reason.

The first result, and, as the Platonic Socrates declares, the only result he had obtained, was the consciousness of knowing nothing. But he who knows that he knows nothing is disposed to seek, and only those who seek will find. And the seeking mind attains, if not to knowledge, yet to a new standard*of knowing. So long as results are contradictory, so long as

negative instances are success- fully applied, the searcher may make progress but is still to seek. For the aim of inquiry is the universal.

Human life and experience the sphere of search; truth and good, regarded as identical, the end of it ; universality the test of reality, conversation the method, rational thought the means,—these are the chief notes of the dialectic of Socrates. Applying the native strength of his intelligence directly to the facts of life, he revealed their significance in countless ways, by unthought-of generaliza- tions, by strange analogies, combining what men had not combined, distinguishing what they had not distinguished, — but always with the single aim of rousing them to the search after eternal truth and good.

The spirit which led on towards this unseen goal was not less practical than speculative. Socrates desired not only that men might know, but that they might know and do. Utility is the watchword no less of the Socratic than of the Baconian induction. But Socrates never doubted that if men once know they will alsodo. His own conscious conviction of the unity of truth and good he believed to be unconsciously the basis of all men's actions. They erred, he thought, from not seeing the good, and not because they would not follow it if seen. This is expressed in the Socratic dicta, "Vice is ignorance," "Virtue is knowledge." Men therefore must be brought to see the good and true, and that they may see it they must first be made aware that they do not see.

This lifelong work of Socrates, in which the germs of ethics, psychology, and logic were contained,—after it had been sealed by the death in which he characteristically at once obeyed his countrymen and convinced them of error,— was idealized, developed, dramatized—first embodied and then extended beyond its original scope—in the writings of Plato, which may be described as the literary outcome of the profound impression made by Socrates upon his greatest follower.

These writings (in pursuance of the importance given by Socrates to conversation) are all cast in the form of imaginary dialogue. But in those which are presumably the latest in order of composition this imaginative form interferes but little with the direct expression of the philosopher's own

thoughts. The many-coloured veil at first inseparable from the features is gradually worn thinner, and at last becomes almost imperceptible.

Little more will be attempted in the following pages than to give a general outline of these immortal works in the order which is on the whole most probable, omitting those whose claim to authenticity is weakest, and passing lightly over some which, although genuine, are less import- ant than the rest, or have less to do with the main current of Plato's thought.

The Platonic dialogues are not merely the embodiment The of the mind of Socrates and of the reflexions of Plato. dialogues.

They are the portraiture of the highest intellectual life of Hellas in the time of Plato,—a life but distantly related to

military and political events, and scarcely interrupted by them. Athens appears as the centre of the excitable Hellenic mind, profoundly stirred by the arrival of great sophists,! and keenly alive to the questions of Socrates, although in the pages of Plato, even more than in reality, he only "whispers with a few striplings in a corner. For, in the Platonic grouping, the agora, which was the chief scene of action for the real Socrates, retires into the background, and he is principally seen consorting with his chosen companions, who are also friends of Plato, and with the acquaintances whom he makes through them, The scene is narrowed (for the Academy was remote from the bustle of resort, and Plato judged the Hellenic world securely from the vantage-ground of partial retirement) — but the figures are distinct and full of life. In reading the dialogues, we not only breathe the most refined intellectual atmosphere, but are also present witnesses of the urbanity, the freedom, the playfulness, the generous warmth of the "best society" in Athens. For Plato has a numerous repertory of dramatis persone, who stand in various relations to his chief character—the impetuous Cherephon, Apollodorus the inseparable weak brother, old Crito the true-hearted, Phedo the beloved disciple, Simmias and Cebes, who have been with Philolaus, the graceful and ingenuous Pheedrus, the petulant Philebus, Thesetetus of the philosophic nature, who is cut off in his prime, and the incorrigible Alcibiades ; then Plato's own kinsmen—Glaucon the

irrepressible in politics, in quarrel, and in love, Adimantus, solid and grave, Critias in his phase of amateur philosopher, and not as what he after- wards became, Charmides, not in fiery manhood, but in his first bloom of diffident youth; and many others who appear as mere acquaintances, but have an interest of their own-—the accomplished Agathon, the gay Aristophanes, Eryximachus the all-worthy physician, Meno, light of spirit, Callias, entertainer of sophists, Callicles the wilful man of the world, Cephalus the aged father of Lysias, and Nicias the honoured soldier. All these appear, not as some of them do on the page of history, in sanguinary contention or fierce rivalry, but as peaceful Athenians, in momentary contact with Socrates, whose electric touch now benumbs and now exhilarates, and sometimes goads to frenzy of love or anger. Still more distantly related to him, as it were standing in an outer circle, are the imposing forms of Gorgias and Protagoras, surrounded with the lesser lights of Hippias, Prodicus, and Polus. Thrasymachus, Euthydemus, Dionysodorus hang round like comic masks, adding piquancy to the design. The adversaries Anytus and Meletus are allowed to appear for a moment, but soon vanish. The older philosophers, though Socrates turned away from them, also make their entrance on the Platonic stage. Parmenides with his magnificent depth is made to converse with the imaginary Socrates, who is still quite young. A stranger from Elea plays an important part in some later dialogues, and Timzeus the Pythagorean is introduced discoursing of the creation of the world. In these dialogues Socrates is mostly silent; in the Philebus he has lost himself in Plato; and in the twelve books of the Zaws, where an unnamed Athenian is the chief speaker, even the Platonic Socrates finally disappears.

Now, in evolving his philosophy from the Socratic basis, Plato works along three main lines,—the ethical and political, the metaphysical or scientific, and the mystical. All three are often intimately blended, as in the close of Rep., bk. vi., and even where one element is uppermost the others are not wholly suppressed. But this distinction, like that sometimes made in modern philo-

1 Tt had been part of the foreigners to Athens,

policy of Pericles to draw distinguished

rE aT)

sophy between the good, the true, and the beautiful, is one which, if not unduly pressed, may be usefully borne in mind. Having noted this once for all, we pass to the more detailed consideration of the several dialogues,

I. Laches, Charmides, Lysis.—-In this first -group Socrates is dealing tentatively with single ethical notions, The result in each case is a confession of ignorance, but the subject has been so handled as to point the way to more fruitful discussions in the future. And suggestions are casually thrown out which anticipate some of the most far-reaching of Plato's subsequent conteniplations.

The Laches is a vigorous sketch, in which the characters Laches

of the soldier, the aged citizen, and the prudent general are well preserved; and Socrates is seen conversing with his elders, although with reference to the treatment of the young. The question raised is the definition of courage ; and the humour of the piece consists in showing that three men, all of whom are unquestionably brave, are unable to give an account of bravery, or to decide whether courage is an animal instinct or a mental accomplishment.

Similarly, in the dialogue which bears his name, the Char.

temperate Charmides, of whom all testify that (as Aristo mides.

phanes has it?) he "fills up the gracious mould of modesty," is hopelessly embarrassed when challenged by the Socratic method to put in words his conception of the modesty or temperance which he possesses, and which, as Socrates assures him, is a priceless gift. The Charmides contains some hints of Platonic notions, such as that of knowledge as self-consciousness, and of virtue as "doing one's own business."

The graceful little dialogue which bears the name of Lysis.

Lysis ends, like the two former, with a confession of failure. Socrates, Lysis, and Menexenus are all friends, and think highly of friendship, yet

after many efforts they are unable to tell “what friendship is.” Yet some of the suggestions which are here laid aside are afterwards allowed to reappear. The notion that ‘what is neither good nor evil loves the good because of the presence of evil” isexpanded and emphasized in the Symposiwm. And the conception of an ideal object of friendship, an avro fidrov (though rejected as in the criticism of Aristotle by the characteristic reductio ad infinitum), is destined to have a wider scope in the history of Platonism.

Il. Protagoras, Io, Meno.—The previous dialogues have marked the distinction between unconscious and conscious morality, and have also brought out the Socratic tendency to identify virtue with the knowledge of good. Now, the more strongly it is felt that knowledge is inseparable from virtue the more strange and doubtful appears such unconscious excellence as that of Laches, Charmides, or Lysis. Hence arises the further paradox of Socrates,—“Virtue is not taught, and that which is com- monly regarded as virtue springs up spontaneously or 1s received unconsciously by a kind of inspiration.”

Protagoras, in the dialogue named after him, 1s the Fre professor of popular, unscientific, self-complacent excel- °°”

lence ; while Socrates appears in his life-long search after the ideal knowledge of the best. The two men are naturally at cross purposes. Protagoras contends that virtue is taught by himself and others more or less success- fully, and is not one but many. Socrates disputes the possibility of teaching virtue (since all men equally pro fess it, and even statesmen fail to give it to their sons), but affirms that, if it can be taught, virtue is not many, but one. The discussion, as in the former dialogues, ends inconclusively. But in the course of it Plato vividly sets forth the natural opposition between the empiric and scientific points of view, between a conventional and an

2 Nub., 995, rijs aidods wérrers Tayarp’ dvaTAjoat.

rota

ee

fn

. nspira- ion,

;

| |

[eno,

FrAaT®

intellectual standard. He does full justice to the thesis of Protagoras, and it is not to be supposed that he was con- tented to remain in the attitude which he has here attri- buted to Socrates. In his ideal state, where the earlier training of the best citizens is a refinement on the actual Hellenic education, he has to some extent reconciled the conceptions which are here dramatically opposed.

The preparations for the encounter and the description of it include many life-like touches,—such as the eagerness of the young Athenian gentleman to hear the sophist, though he would be ashamed to be thought a sophist himself; the confusion into which the house of Callias has been thrown by the crowd of strangers and by the selfimportance of rival professors; the graceful dignity of the man who has been forty years a teacher, the graphic description of the whole scene, the characteristic speeches of Prodicus and Hippias (from which some critics have elicited a theory of their doctrines), and the continued irony with which Socrates bears them all in hand and soothes the great man after disconcerting him.

In the argument there are two points which chiefly deserve notice. (1) Protagoras, in accordance with his relative view of things (which Plato afterwards criticized in the Theetetus), claims not to give men principles but to improve them in those virtues which Providence has given in some measure to all civilized men. (2) Socrates in postulating a scientific principle, which he expressly reserves for future consideration, would have it tested by the power of calculating the amount of pleasure. Grote dwells with some complacency ou the “utilitarianism ” of Socrates in the

Protagoras. And it is true that a principle of utility is here opposed to conventional sentiment. But this opposition is intended to prepare the way for the wider and deeper contrast between an arbitrary and a scientific standard, or between impres- sions and conceptions or ideas. And when Plato (in the Gorgias and Philebus) endeavours to define the art of measurement, which is here anticipated, it is not wonderful that differences here unthought of should come into view, or that the pleasant should be again contra-distinguished from the good. In all three dialogues he is equally asserting the supremacy of reason.

On the first vision of that transcendental knowledge! which is to be the key at once to truth and good, philosophy Is apt to lose her balance, and to look with scorn upon “the trivial round, the common task,” and the respectable common-places of “ordinary thinking.” Yet, as Socrates is reminded by Protagoras, this unconscious wisdom also has a value. And Plato, who, when most ideal, ever Strives to keep touch with experience, is fully convinced of the reality of this lower truth, of this unphilosophic virtue. But he is long puzzled how to conceive of it. For, if knowledge is all in all, what are we to make of wisdom and goodness in those who do not know? Protagoras had boldly spoken of honour and right as a direct gift from Zeus, and Socrates, in the Zo and Meno, is represented as adopting an hypothesis of inspiration in order to account for these unaccredited graces of the soul.

Socrates has observed that rhapsodists and even poets have no definite knowledge of the things which they so powerfully represent (comp. Apol., 22; Phed., 245 A; Rep., iii. 398 A), He brings the rhapsode Io to admit this, and to conclude that he is the inspired medium of a mag- netic influence. The Muse is the chief magnet, and the poet 1s the first of a series of magnetic rings. Then follow the thapsode and the actor, who are rings of inferior power, and the last ring is the hearer or spectator.

The Meno raises again the more serious question, Can

ce

1 Phed., 82B; Rep., x. 619 C.

virtue be taught? Socrates here states explicitly the paradox with which the Protagoras ended. “ Virtue is knowledge; therefore virtue can be taught. But virtue is not taught. Therefore (in the highest sense) there can be no virtue.” And he repeats several of his former reasons, —that Athenian statesmen failed to teach their sons, and that the education given by sophists is unsatisfying. (The sophists are here denounced by Anytus, who is angered by Socrates’s ironical praise of them.) But the paradox is softened in two ways:—(1) the absence of knowledge does not preclude inquiry, and (2), though virtue cannot be taught, yet there is a sense in which virtue exists.

1. Meno begins in gaiety of heart to define virtue, but is soon “ benumbed ” by the “ torpedo” shock of Socrates, and asks “ How can one inquire about that which he does not know?” Socrates meets this “ eristic ” difficulty with the doctrine of reminiscence (avéprvyors). All knowledge is latent in the mind from birth and through kindred (or association) of ideas much may be recovered, if only a beginning is made. Pindar and other poets have said that the soul is immortal and that she has passed through many previous states.2 And Socrates now gives a practical illustration of the truth that knowledge is evolved from ignorance. He elicits, from a Greek slave of Meno’s, the demonstration of a geometrical theorem.? About the middle of the process he turns to Meno and observes that the slave (who has made a false start) is now becom- ing conscious of ignorance. He then gradually draws from the man, by leading questions, the positive proof.

2. Though virtue is not yet defined, it may be affirmed “hypothetically ” that, if virtue is knowledge, virtue can be taught. And experience leads us to admit two phases of virtue—the one a mode of life based on scientific principle, which hitherto is an ideal only; the other sporadic, springing of itself, yet of divine origin, relying upon true opinion, which it is, however, unable to make fast through demonstration of the cause or reason. But, if there were a virtuous man who could teach virtue, he would stand amongst his fellows like Tiresias amongst the shades:*

This mystical account of ordinary morality is in keeping with the semi-mythical defence of the process of inquiry— that all knowledge is implicit in the mind from birth.

Ill. Euthyphro, Apologia, Crito, Phedo.—There is no ground for supposing that these four dialogues were written consecutively, or that they belong strictly to the same period of Plato's industry. But they are linked together for the reader by their common reference to the trial and death of Socrates; no one of them has been proved to be in the author's earliest or latest manner ; and they may therefore fitly end the series of dialogues in which the personal traits of the historic Socrates are most apparent, and Plato's own peculiar doctrines are as yet but partially disclosed.

The little dialogue known by the name of Huthyphro Euthy- might have been classed with the Laches, Charmides, and phro.

Lysis, as dealing inconclusively with a single notion. But, although slight and tentative in form, it has an under- tone of deeper significance, in keeping with the gravity of the occasion. Plato implies that Socrates had thought more deeply on the nature of piety than his accusers had, and also that his piety was of a higher mood than that of ordinary religious men.

Euthyphro is a soothsayer, well-disposed to Socrates, but not one of his particular friends. They meet at the

2 The origin of this traditional belief is very obscure. The Greeks themselves were apt to associate it with Pythagoras and with the '¢Orphic " mysteries.

3 Eucl., i. 47 (the case where the triangle is isosceles).

4 Hom., Odyss., x. 495, Om memvic@at, ral SE oKial dlacovoew.

Apology.

198

door of the king archon, whither Socrates has been summoned for the " precognition " (dvdxpuors) preliminary to his trial. Both men are interested in cases of alleged impiety. For Euthyphro's business is to impeach his father, who has inadvertently caused the death of a criminal labourer. The prophet feels the duty of purging the stain of blood to be more imperative

the nearer home. Socrates is struck by the strong opinion thus evinced respecting the nature of piety, and detains Euthyphro at the entrance of the court, that he may Icarn from so clear an authority “what piety is,” and so be fortified against Meletus. He leads his respondent from point to point, until the doubt is raised whether God loves holiness because it is holy, or it is holy because loved by God. Does God will what is righteous, or is that righteous which is willed by God? Here they find themselves wandering round and round. Socrates proves himself an involuntary Dedalus who makes opinions move, while he seeks for one which he can “bind fast with reason.”

“The holy is a portion of the just.” But what portion ? “Due service of the gods by prayer and sacrifice.” But how does this affect the gods? “It pleases them.” Again we are found to be reasoning in a circle.

“Thus far has Socrates proceeded in placing religion on a moral foundation. Hc is seeking to realize the harmony of religion and morality, which the great poets Aschylus, Sophocles, and Pindar had unconsciously anticipated, and which is the universal want of all men. To this the soothsayer adds the ceremonial clement, ‘attending upon the gods.’ When further interrogated by Socrates as to the nature of this ‘attention to the gods,’ he replies that piety is an affair of business, a science of giving and asking and the like. Socrates points out the anthropomorphism of these notions. But when we expect him to go on and show that the true service of the gods is the service of the spirit and co-operation with them in all things true and good, he stops short; this was a lesson which the soothsayer could not have been made to under- stand, and which every one must learn for himself.”?

In Plato’s Apology the fate of Socrates is no longer the subject of mere allusions, such as the rage of Anytus at the end of the Afeno, and the scene and occasion of the Euthyphro. He is now seen face to face with his accusers, and with his countrymen who are condemning him to death.

What most aggravated his danger (after life-long impunity) is thus stated by Mr James Riddell, in the intro- duction to his edition of the dialogue :—“ The éme(keta ” (clemency) “of the restored people did not last long, and was naturally succeeded by a sensitive and fanatical zeal for their revived political institutions. Inquiry into the founda- tions of civil society was

obviously rather perilous for the inquirer at such a time. Socrates knew the full extent of his danger. But, according to Xenophon (Mem., iv. c. 8, § 14), he prepared no defence, alleging that his whole life had been a preparation for that hour.”

The tone of the Platonic Apology is in full accordance with that saying; but it is too elaborate a work of art to be taken literally as a report of what was actually said. Professor Jowett well compares it to “ those speeches of Thucydides in which he has embodied his conception of the lofty character and policy of the great Pericles.” Yet “it is significant that Plato is said to have been present at the defence, as he is also said to have been absent at the last scene of the Phedo. Some of the topics may have been actually used by Socrates, and the recollection of his very words may have rung in the ears of his disciple.”

The Platonie Apology is in three parts :—(1) before conviction, (2) after conviction and before sentence, (3) after the sentence.

1. Socrates cares not for acquittal. But he does care to explain his life. And he selects those aspects of it which there is hope of making his audience understand. That he partly

succeeded in this is shown by the large number of those (220 out of 500) who voted for his adil cs oe

1 Jowett.

Pe 2 ©

a. His answer to Meletus, as least important, is reserved for the middle of his speech. He addresses himself first to “other accusers,”—comic poets and the rest, who have prejudiced his reputation by falsely identifying him with the physical philosophers and the sophists. ~ But what then is the strange pursuit which has given to Socrates the name of wise? Itis the practice of cross- examining, to which he was first impelled by the oracle at Delphi, and which he has followed ever since.asa religious niission. The god said “Socrates is wise,” when he was conscious of no wisdom great or small. So he went in search of some one wiser than himself, bunt could find

none, though he found many who had conceit of wisdom. And he inferred that the god must mean “ He is wisest who, like Socrates, is most aware of his own ignorance.” This unceasing quest has left him in great poverty, and has made him enemies, who are represented by Anytus, Meletus, and Lycon, And their enmity is further embittered by the pleasure which young men take in seeing pretence unmasked, and in imitating the process of refutation. Hence has arisen the false charge that Socrates is a corrupter of youth. :

b. Here he turns to Meletus. “IfI corrupt the youth, who does them good?” Mel: “The laws, the judges, the audience, the Athenians generally” (comp. Protagoras and Meno). “Strange, that here only should be one to corrupt and many to improve; or that any one should be so infatuated as to wish to have bad neighbours.” Jfel. “Socrates is an atheist. He believes the sun to be astone.” ‘“ You are accusing Anaxagoras. I have said that I know nothing of such theories. And you accuse ine of introduc- ing novel notions about divine things. How can I believe in divine things (Sajudéyia) and not in divine beings (Safuoves) ? and how in divine beings, if not in gods who are their authors ?”

c. That is a sufficient answer for his present accuser. He returns to the general long-standing defamation, which may well be his death, .as slander has often been and again will be the death of many a man.

Yet if spared he will continue the same course of life, in spite of the danger. As at Potideea and Delinm he faced death where the Athenians posted him, so now he will remain at the post where he is stationed by the god. For to fear death is to assume pretended knowledge.

One thing is certain. A worse man cannot harm a better. But if the Athenians kill Socrates, they will harm themselves. For they will lose the stimulus of his exhortations ;—and his poverty is a sufficient witness that he was sincere. Not that he would engage in politics. If he had done that he would have perished long before,? as he nearly did for his independent vote after the battle of Arginuse, and for disobeying the murderous command of the thirty tyrants.

But have not Socrates's disciples, Alcibiades, Critias, Charmides, proved bad citizens? He has uo disciples. Any one, bad or good, may come and hear him, and the talk which is his life-work is not unamusing. But why are no witnesses brought to substantiate this charge? There are elder friends of his companions, who would be angry if he had used his influence for harm. But these men's confidence in Socrates is unshaken.

He will not appeal ad miscricordiam. That would be a disgrace for one who (rightly or not) has been reputed wisc, and to admit such an appeal in any case is a violation of the juror's oath.

Socrates has told the Athenians the whole truth, so far as a mixed audience of them could receive it. Elaboration and subtlety could have no place in addressing the Heliastic court, nor could that universal truth towards which he was leading men be made intelligible to a new audience while the clepsydra was running. But his tone and attitude must have made a strong appeal to the better nature of his hearers. With Meletus he "played rather than fought," but he has shown clearly that he has no fear of death, that he ehooses to obey God rather than man,

and that for very love of the Athenians he will not be swayed by

their desires. :

2. One convicted on a capital charge had the right of pleading before sentence in mitigation of the penalty proposed by his accuser. Socrates was convicted by fewer votes than he lumself anticipated. The indictment of Meletus was ineffectual, and if it had not been for the speeches of Anytus and Lycon the defendant would have been triumphantly acquitted. Could he but have conversed with his judges more than once, he might have removed their prejudices. In no spirit of bravado, therefore, but in simple justice to himself, he meets the claim of Meletus that he shall be punished with death by the counter claim that he shall be maintained in the prytaneum as a public benefactor. He cannot ask that death, which may be a good, shall be commuted for imprisonment or exile, which are certainly evils. A fine would be no evil: but he has no money ;—he can offer a mina. Here Plato and others interpose, and with their friendly help he offers thirty mine.

3. He is sentenced to death, and the public business of the court

2 Comp. Gorg., 521; Rep., vi. 496.

rEa?To

is ended. But, while the record is being entered and the magis- trates are thus occupied, Socrates is imagined as addressing (a) the majority, and (4) the minority in the court. ; :

qa. To those who have condemned him he speaks in a prophetic tone. “For the sake of depriving an old man of the last dregs of life, they have given Athensa bad name. He would not run away, and so death has overtaken him. But his accusers are overtaken by unrighteousness, and must reap the fruits of it.

“Nor will the Athenians find the desired relief. Other reprovers, whom Socrates has hitherto restrained, will now arise, not in a friendly but in a hostile spirit. The only way for the citizens to escape reproof is to reform their lives.”

b. To the minority, who would have acquitted him, he speaks with gentle solemnity. “Let them know to their comfort that the divine voice has not once checked him throughout that day. This indicates that death is not an evil. And reason shows that death is either a long untroubled sleep, or removal to a better world, where are no unjust judges.

“No evil can happen to a good man either in life or after death. Wherefore Socrates will not be angry with his condemners, who

‘have done him no harm, although they meant him anything but

good. He will only ask of them to do to the sons of Socrates as Socrates has done to them.”

Is the love of truth consistent with civic duties? Is the philosopher a good citizen? are questions which are sure to arise where the truth involves practical improve- ment. In the Apology Socrates appears as an intrepid

reformer ; the Crito gives an impressive picture of him as a loyal and law-abiding Athenian.

Execution had been delayed during the annual mission to Delos (during which no one could be put to death). But the returning vessel had just been reported as descried from Sunium., At early dawn Crito, the oldest friend of Socrates, obtained access to his cell, and found him sleeping peacefully. Presently he awoke, and Crito told him of the approach of the fatal ship. Socrates replies by telling his dream. A fair form stood over him and said,

“The third day hence to Phthia shalt thou come.” And it would seem that the day after to-morrow will really be the day for going home.

Crito then reveals his |e for an escape. the question in the old familiar way. “Crito’s zeal is excellent, and most men would think his object right. But the few who think soundly say that it is wrong to return evil for evil. The laws of Athens (through the fault of men) are doing Socrates harm. But ought he therefore to infringe the law? Might not the laws of his country plead with him and say :—‘ You owe to us your birth and breeding ; and when grown up you voluntarily submitted to us. For you might have gone elsewhere. But you preferred us to all other laws, and have been the most constant resident in Athens. Even at the last you accepted death rather than exile. Ifyou now break your covenant, you will ruin your friends and will be rejected by all well-ordered cities. You might be received in Thessaly, but could only live there by cringing to foreigners for food. Where in that case will be your talk about virtue? You would not take your sons thither. And your friends would be equally kind to them if you were dead.

“Think not of life and children first and of justice afterwards, but think of justice first, that you may be justified in the world below.” Crito admits these arguments to be unanswerable.

The Meno referred to the immortality and pre-existence of the soul as a traditional doctrine, and it was there associated with the possibility of inquiry. In the Phedo Plato undertakes to substantiate this belief and base it anew, by narrating the last hours of Socrates, who is fepresented as calmly discussing the question with his friends when his own death was immediately at hand. The argument turns chiefly on the eternity of

knowledge, and is far from satisfying. For, granting that eternity of knowledge involves eternity of mind, does the eternity of mind assure continued being to the individual?! Yet no unprejudiced reader of the Phxdo can doubt that Plato, at the time of writing it, sincerely believed in a conscious personal existence after death. The words of Socrates, when he declares his hope of going to be with other friends, are absolutely unambiguous, and his reply to Crito's question, " How shall we bury you?" has a convincing

ee ee

And Socrates argues

: : ; a

; In the Timeeus immortality is made to rest on the goodwill of God, ecause "ouly an evil being would wish to dissolve that which is har- monious and happy" (Tim., 41 A).

force beyond all dialectic :—" I cannot persuade Crito that I here am Socrates—I who am now reasoning and order- ing discourse. He imagines Socrates to be that other, whom he will see by and by, a corpse." This and similar touches not only stamp the Phedo as a marvel of art, but are indisputable evidences of the writer's profound belief. They may be inventions, but they have nothing " mythi- cal" about them, any more than the charge of Socrates to his friends, that they would best fulfil his wishes by attending to their own lives.

The narrative, to be appreciated, must be read in full. Buta short abstract of the argument may be given here.

1. Death is merely the separation of soul and body. And this is the very consummation at which philosophy aims. The body hinders thought. The mind attains to truth by retiring into her- self. Through no bodily sense does she perceive justice, beauty, goodness, and other ideas. The philosopher has a life-long quarrel with bodily desires, and he should welcome the release

of luis soul. Thus he alone can have true courage, even as temperance and all the virtues are real in lrim alone.

But does the soul exist after death ?

a. An old tradition tells of many successive births, the soul departing to Hades and returning again, so that the living are born from the dead. And if the dead had no existence, this could not be, since from nothing nothing can arise. Moreover, experi- ence shows that opposite states come from their opposites, and that such a process is always reciprocal. Death certainly succeeds to life. Then life must succeed to death. And that which undergoes these changes must exist through all. If the dead came from the living, and not the living from the dead, the universe would ultimately be consumed in death.

This presumption is confirmed by the doctrine (here attributed to Socrates, comp. Jeno) that knowledge comes through recollection. What is recollected must be previously kuown. Now we have never since birth had intuition of the absolute equality of which (through association) we are reminded by the sight of things approximately equal. And we cannot have seen it at the moment of birth, for at what other moment can we have forgotten it? Therefore, if ideals be not vain, our souls must have existed before birth, and, according to the doctrine of opposites above stated, will have continued existence after death.

b. To charm away the fears of the “child within,” Socrates adds, as further considerations :—

(1) The soul is uncompounded, incorporeal, invisible, and there- fore indissoluble and immutable.

(2) The soul commands, the body serves ; therefore the soul is akin to the divine.

(3) Yet even the body holds together long after death, and tho boues are all but indestructible.

The soul, if pure, departs to the invisible world, but, if tainted by communion with the body, she lingers hovering near the earth, and is afterwards born into the likeness of some lowerform. That which true philosophy has purified alone rises ultimately to the gods. This lesson is impressively applied.

2. A pause ensues ; and Simmias and Cebes are invited to express their doubts. For, as the swan dics singing, Socrates would die discoursing.

a. Simmias desires not to rest short of demonstration, though he is willing to make the highest attainable probability the guide of life.

If the soul is the harmony of the body, what becomes of her ‘¢when the lute is broken ” ?

b. Cebes compares the body to a garnicnt which the soul keeps weaving at. The garment in which the weaver dies outlasts him. So the soul may have woven and worn many bodies in one lifetime, yet may perish and leave a body behind. Or even supposing her to have many lives, does even this hypothesis exempt her from ultimate decay ?

Socrates warns his friends against losing faith in inquiry. Theories, like men, are disappointing ; yet we should be neither misanthropists nor misologists. Then he answers his two friends.

(a) (1) The soul is acknowledged to be prior to the body. But no harmony is prior to the elements which are harmonized.

(2) The soul has virtue and vice, z.c., harmony and discord. Is there harniony of harmony? Comp. Rep., x. 609.

(3) All soul is equally soul, but all harmony is not equally harmonious.

(4) If the soul were the harmony of the body, they would be agreed ; but, as has been already shown, they are perpetually quarrelling.

(5) The soul is not conditioned by the bodily elements, but has the power of controlling them.

(b.) Cebes has raised the wide question whether the soul is inde- pendent of generation and corruption. Socratcs owns that he him-

self (7.¢., Plato?) had once been fascinated by natural philosophy, and had sought. to give a physical account of everything. Then, hearing out of Anaxagoras that mind was the disposer of all, he had hoped to learn not only how things were, but also why. But he found Anaxagoras forsaking his own first principle and jumbling causes with conditions. (‘‘The cause why Socrates sits here is not a certain disposition of joints and sinews, but that he has thought best to undergo his sentence,—else the joints and sinews would have been ere this, by Crito’s advice, on the way to Thessaly.”) Physical science never thinks of a power which orders everything for good, but expects to find another Atlas to sustain the world more strong and lasting than the reason of the best. ;

Socrates had turned from such philosophers and found for him- self a way, not to gaze directly on the universal reason, but to scek an image of it in the world of mind, wherein are reflected the ideas, as, for example, the idea of beauty, through partaking of which beautiful things are beautiful. Assuming the existence of the ideas, he felt his way from hypothesis to hypothesis.

Now the participation of objects in ideas is in some cases essential and inseparable. Snow is essentially cold, fire hot, three odd, two even. And things thus essentially opposite are exclusive of each other’s attributes. (When it was said above that opposites come from opposites, not opposite things were meant, but opposite states or conditions of one thing.) Snow cannot admit heat, nor fire cold; for they are inseparable vehicles of heat and cold respectively. The soul is the inseparable vehicle of life, and therefore, by parity of reasoning, the soul cannot admit of death, but is immortal and imperishable.

3. What follows is in the true sense mythological, and is admitted by Socrates to be uncertain.—‘‘ Howbeit, since the soul is proved to be immortal, men ought to charm their spirits with such tales.””—

The earth, a globe self-balanced in the midst of space, has many mansions for the soul,! some higher and brighter, some lower and darker than our present habitation. We who dwell about the Mediterranean Sea are like frogs at the bottom of a pool. In some higher place, under the true heaven, our souls may dwell hereafter, and see not only colours and forms in their ideal purity but truth and justice as they are.

In the Phedo, more than elsewhere, Plato preaches withdrawal from the world. The Delian solemnity is to Socrates and his friends a period of "retreat," in which their eyes are turned from earthly things to dwell on the eternal. The theory of ideas here assumes its most transcendental aspect, and it is from portions of this dialogue and of the Phedrus and Timeus that the popular conception of Platonism has been principally derived. But to understand Plato rightly it is not enough to study isolated passages which happen to charm the imagina- tion; nor should single expressions be interpreted without regard to the manner in which he presents the truth else- where.

It has already been shown (1) that Socratic inquiry implied a standard of truth and good, undiscovered but end- lessly discoverable, and to be approached inductively; and (2) that in Plato this implicit assumption becomes explicit, in the identification of virtue with knowledge (Lach., Charm.) as an art of measurement (Protag.), and in the vision (towards the end of the Lysis) of an absolute object of desire. The Socratic " self-knowledge" has been de- veloped (Charm.) into a science of mind or consciousness, apart from which no physical studies can be fruitful. (3) Co-ordinate with these theoretical tendencies there has appeared in Plato the determination not to break with experience.—The bearing of these remarks on the further | progress of Plato's thoughts will appear in the sequel. Meanwhile, in the Phedo, a long step is made in the | direction of pure idealism. The ordinary virtue, which in the Protagoras and Meno was questioned but not con- demned, is here rejected as unreal, and the task proposed to the philosopher is less to understand the world than to escape fromit. The universal has assumed the form of the ideal, which is supposed, as elsewhere in Plato, to include

1 Comp. Milton, ZZ Penseroso, 88-92—

: “ To unsphere H The spirit of Plato, to unfold What worlds or what vast regions hold The immortal mind that hath forsook

ller mansion in this fleshly nook.” i

7

ria? ©®

mathematical as wellas moral notions. The only function of perception is to awaken in us some reminiscence of this ideal. By following the clue thus given, and by searching for clearer images of truth in the world of mind, we may hope to be emancipated from sensation, and to lay hold upon the sole object of pure reason.

It is obvious that when he wrote the Phxdo Plato conceived of universals as objective entities rather than as forms of thought. The notien of “ideal colours” (though occurring in the myth) is an indication of his ontological mood.

Yet even here the eidy are not consistently hypostatized. The notion of “what is best” has a distinctly practical side, and the “ knowledge through reminiscence ” is in one aspect a process of reflexion on experience, turning on the laws of association? It is also said that objects “partake” of the ideas, and some concrete natures are regarded as embodiments or vehicles of some of them. Still, if taken as a whole, notwithstanding the scientific attitude of Socrates, the Phexdo is rather a meditation than an inquiry,—a study of the soul as self-existent, and of the mind and truth as co-eternal.

IV. Symposium, Phedrus, Cratylus.—Socrates is again imagined as in the fulness of life. But the real Socrates is becoming more and more inextricably blended with Platonic thought and fancy. In the Apology there is a distinct echo of the voice of Socrates; the Phedo gives many personal traits of him; but the dialogues which are now to follow are replete with original invention, based in part, no doubt, on personal recollections,

The Symposium admits both of comparison and of con- Sympc

trast with the Phedo, are spiritual, but the spirituality in either is of a different order. That is here immanent which was there transcend- ent; the beautiful takes the place of the good. The world is not now to be annihilated, but rather transfigured, until particular objects are lost in universal light. Instead of flying from the region of growth and decay, the mind, through intercourse with beauty, is now the active cause of production. Yet the life of contemplation is still the highest life, and philosophy the truest povorky,

The leading conception of the Symposiwm has been anticipated in the Lysis, where it was said that “the indifferent loves the

good, because of the presence of evil.”

The banqueters (including Socrates), who are met to celcbrate the tragic victory of Agathon, happen not to be disposed for hard drinking. They send away the flute-girl and entertain each other with the praise of Love.

Phedrus tells how Love inspires to honourable deeds, and how Alcestis and Achilles died for Love.

Pausanias rhetorically distinguishes the earthly from the heavenly Love.

The physician Eryximachus, admitting the distinction, yct holds that Love pervades all nature, and that art consists in followm the higher Love in each particular sphere. So Empedocles ha spoken of Love as overcoming previous discord. For opposites cannot, as Heraclitus fancied, coexist.

Aristophanes, in a comic myth, describes the origin of Love as an imperfect creature’s longing for completion. The original double human beings were growing impious, and Zeus split them in twain,

| ever since which act the bereaved halves wander in search of one

another, . Agathon speaks, or rather sings, of Love and his works. He 1s the youngest, not the eldest of gods, living and moving delicately wherever bloom is and in the hearts of men,—the author of all virtue and of all good works, obeyed by gods, fair and causing all things fair, making men to be of

one mind at feasts—pilot, defender, saviour, in whose footsteps all should follow, chanting strains of love. f Socrates will not attempt to rival the poet, and begins by stipt- lating that he may tell the truth. He accepts the distinchon between Love and his works, but points out that, since desire implics want, and the desire of Love is toward beauty, Love, as wanting beauty, is not beautiful. So much being established 1m

2 Comp. Thewt., 184-186.

Both dialogues are mystical, both sium.

as

SRN ERS pe

SS

ad

res * ©

the Socratic manuer, he proceeds to unfold the mystery once revealed to him by Diotima, the Mantinean wise woman.

Love is neither beautiful nor ngly, neither wise nor foolish, neither god nor mortal. Between gods and mortals is the world of mediating spirits (7d daiudviov). And Love isa great spirit, child of Resource (the son of Prudenee) and Poverty the beggar maid, who conceived him at the birthday feast of Aphrodite. living “ delicately,” but is ragged and shoeless, always in difficul- ties, yet always brimming with invention, a mighty hunter after wisdom and all things fair ; sometimes “all full with feasting ” on them, the next moment “ clean starved ” for lack ; never absolutely knowing nor quiteignorant. That is to say, he is a “philosoplier.” For knowledge is the most beautiful thing, and love is of the beautiful.

But what does love desire of the beautiful? The possession is enough. “But there is one kind of love—called “being in love ”— which desires beauty

for a peeuliar end. The lover is seeking, not his “other half,” but possession of the beautiful and birth in beauty.

For there is a scason of puberty both in body and mind, when human nature longs to create, and it cannot save in presence of beauty. This yearning is the earnest of immortality. Even in the bird’s devotion to its mate and to its young there is a craving after continued being. In individual lives there is a flux, not only of the body, but in the mind. Nay, the sciences themselves also come and.go (here the contrast to the Phedo is at its height). But in mortal things the shadow of continuity is succession.

The love of fame is a somewhat brighter image of immortality than the love of offspring. Creative souls would bring into being not children of their body, but good deeds. And such a one is readiest to fall in love with a fair mind in a fair body, and then is filled with euthusiasm and begets noble thoughts. Homer, Hesiod, Lycurgus, Solon, were such genial minds. But they stopped at the threshold (comp. Prot., Mfeno), and saw not the higher mysteries, which are reserved for those who rise from noble actions, institutions, laws, to universal beauty. The true order is to advance from one to all fair forms, then to fair practices, fair thoughts, and lastly to the single thought of absolute beauty. In that com- munion only, beholding beauty with the eye of the mind, one shall bring forth realities and become the friend of God and be immortal, if mortal man may.

Alcibiades here breaks in and is vociferously welcomed. He is crowning Agathon, when, on percciving Socrates, he deelares that he will crown him too. Then he announces himself king of the feast, and insists upon hard drinking (though this will make no difference to Socrates).

Eryximachus demands from the newcomer a speech in praise of love. But Alcibiades will praise no one else when Socrates is near, And with the freedom of one who is deep in wine he proceeds with his strange encomium of “ this Marsyas.”

“Tn face and outward bearing he is like a Satyr or Silenus, and by his voice he charms more powerfully than they do by their Pipings. The eloquence of Pericles has no effect in comparison with lis. His words alone move Alcibiades to shame, and fascinate him until he stops his ears and runs from

him.”—“ | often wish him dead. Yetthat would break my heart. He brings me to my wit’s end.”—“ And, as carved Sileni are made to encasc Images of gods, so this Silenus-mask entreasures things divine. He affects ignorance and susceptibility to beauty. Thus he mocks mankind. But he cares nothing for outward shows, and his tem- perance (ewdpoctyn) is wonderful.”

Toprove this Alcibiades reveals his own heart-secret. (He is not ashamed to speak it amongst others who have felt the pang which Socrates inflicts.) And he makes it abundantly manifest that in their widely-rumoured intercourse (comp. Protag. init.) Socrates had hever cared for anything but whiat was best for his younger friend. Alcibiades then relates as an eyewitness the endurance shown by Socrates at Potidea, his strange persistence in solitary meditation, —standing absorbed in thought for a day and a night together, —and his intrepid conduct in the retreat from Delium (comp. Laches).

The talk of Socrates is of pack-asses and cobblers, and he is ever saying the same things in the same words; but one who lifts the mask and looks within will find that no other words have mean- ing. Alcibiades ends by warning his companions against the wiles of Socrates.

Some raillery follows, and they are invaded by another band of revel ers, who compel them to drink still more deeply. The soberly inclined (led by Eryximachus) slink off, and Aristodemus, the reporter of the seene, only remembers further that when he awoke at cock-crow Socrates was still conversing with Agathon and Aristophanes, and showing them that tragedy and comedy were essentially one. He talked them both asleep, and at daybreak went about his usual business.

The philosopher of the Symposiwm is in the world and yet not of it, apparently yielding but really overcoming. In the Phedo the soul was exhorted to “live upon her

+ . epiece servant’s loss,” as in Shakspeare’s most religious sonnet ;

He is far from .

this dialogue tells of a ‘‘soul within sense ” in the spirit cf some more recent poetry. By force of imagination rather than of reason, the reconciliation of becoming (yéveots) with being (oto/a), of the temporal with the eternal, is anticipated. But through the bright haze of fancy and behind the mask of irony, Socrates still appears the same strong, pure, upright, and beneficent human being as in the Apology, Crito, and Phedo.

The impassioned contemplation of the beautiful is again Phedrus.

imagined as the beginning of philosophy. But the “limitless ocean of beauty” is replaced by a world of supramundane forms, beheld by unembodied souls, and remembered here on earth through enthusiasm, proceeding by dialectic from multiform impressions to one rational con- ception, and distinguishing the “lines and veins” of truth. The Phedrus records Plato’s highest ‘hour of insight,” when he willed the various tasks hereafter to be fulfilled. In it he soars to a pitch of contemplation from whence he takes a comprehensive and keen-eyed survey of the country to be explored, marking off the blind alleys and paths that lead astray, laying down the main lines and chief branches, and taking note of the erroneous wanderings of others. Reversing the vulgar adage, he flies that he may creep.

The transcendent aspiration of the Phxdo and the mystic glow of the Symposium are here combined with the notion of a scientific process. No longer asking, as in the Prota- goras, Is virtue one or many? Plato rises to the conception of a scientific one and many, to be contemplated through dialectic,—no barren abstraction, but a method of classifi- cation according to nature.

This method is to be applied especially to psychology, not merely with a speculative, but also with a practical aim. For the “birth in beauty” of the Symposium is here developed into an art of education, of which the true rhetoric is but the means, and true statesmanship an accidental outcome.

Like all imaginative critics, Plato falls to some extent under the influence of that which he criticizes. The art of rhetoric which he so often travestied had

a lasting effect upon his style. Readers of his latest works are often reminded of the mock grandiloquence of the Phedrus. But in this dialogue the poetical side of his genius is at the height. Not only can he express or imitate anything, and produce any effect at will, but he is standing behind his creation and disposing it with the most perfect mastery, preserving unity amidst profuse variety, and giving har- mony to a wildness bordering on the grotesque.

The person of Socrates is here deliberately modified. He no longer (as in the Symposium) teaches positive wisdom under the pretence of repeating what he has heard, but is himself caught by an exceptional inspiration, which is accounted for by the unusual circumstance of his finding himself in the country and alone with Phdrus. He has been hitherto a stranger to the woods and fields, which would tempt him away from studying himself through intercourse with men. But by the promise of discourse —especially of talk with Phadrus—he may be drawn anywhither.

Pheedrus has been charmed by a discourse of Lysias, which after some coy excuses he consents to read. ;

It is a frigid erotic diatribe, in which one not in love pleads for preference over the lover. Socrates hints at criticism, and is chal- lenged to produce something better on the same theme.

1. Distinguishing desire from true opinion, he defines love as desire prevailing against truth, and then expatiates on the harmful tendencies of love as so defined. But he becomes alarmed at his own unwonted eloquence, and isabout to remove, when the “divine token” warns him that he must first recite a “ palinode” in praise of love. For no divine power can be the canse of evil.

2. Love is madness ; but there is a noble madness, as is shown by soothsayers (called pdvrets from palyouat). And of the higher madness there are four kinds.

To explain this it is necessary to understand psychology. The soul is self-existent and self-moving, and therefore eternal. her form is like a pair-of winged steeds with their charioteer. In divine souls both steeds are good, but in human souls one of them is

“ine the body the soul lost her wings, which in | _ dialogu a areal Ae At ate 4 | ception of classification is somewhat altered through contact

in which they |

her unembodied state were nourished by beauty, wisdom, goodness, and all that is divine. For at the festival of souls, visit the heaven that is above the heavens, the unruly steed caused the charioteer to see imperfectly. So the soul cast her feathers and fell down and passed into the human form. And, according to the comparative clearness or dimness of that first

vision, her earthly lot is varicd from that of a philosopher or

artist down through nine grades (including womail) to that of a |

tyrant. On her conduct in this state of probation depends her condition when again born into the world. And only in ten thousand years ean she return to her pristine state, except through a life of philosophy (comp. Phedo) or of pure and noble love (conip. Symposium). ;

The mind of the philosopher alone has wings. He is ever being initiated into perfect mysteries, and his soul alone becomes complete. But the vulgar deem him mad and rebuke him ; they do not see that he is inspired.

This divine madness (the fourth kind of those above mentioned) is kindled through the renewed vision of beauty. For wisdom is not seen; her loveliness would have been transporting if she had a visible form. The struggle of the higher passion with the lower is then described with extraordinary vividness, under the image of the two steeds. When the higher impulse triumphs, the issue is a philosophic friendship, at once passionate and absolutely pure.

3. From his “palinode” Socrates returns to Lysias, who is advised to leave speech-writing for philosophy.

a. Phedrus remarks that the speech-writer is despised by the politician. Socrates replies that speech-writing and politics are one concern. ‘The real difference is between those who base their teaching on philosophy and those who are content with rules of art. For example, if the first spcech of Socrates is compared with that of Lysias, the one is found to distinguish and define, the other not ; the one observes order in discourse, the other “ begins where he should end,” aud his utterance is like a disordered chain. A speech should be an organic whole, a “ creature having hands and feet.” So in the “palinode ” there was a classification of the kinds of madness, which led the way to “a possibly true though partly erring myth.”

This approximation to truth in the midst of much that was playful was due to the observance of two principles, generalization and division (cuvaywyh, Stalpeccs). Whoever sees the one and many in nature, him Socrates follows and walks in his footsteps, as if he were a god.

In comparison of dialectic, as thus conceived, the frigid rules of Lysias, Thrasymachus, Theodorus, Evenus, Tisias, Gorgias, Polus, and Protagoras are futile and absurd.

b. Another condition of teaching (or true rhetoric) is the scienee of mind. Whether the soul be one or many, complex or multiform, and if multiform what are its parts and kinds, are questions which the teacher must have already solved. And he must likewise have classified all arguments and know them in their various applica- bility to divers souls. An art of speaking that should fulfil this condition is non-existent. Yet how can even verisimilitude be attained without knowledge of truth ?

c. The art of writing is kindred to the art of speech. But Socrates maintains that oral teaching through the living contact of mind with mind has many advantages over written composition, which is, comparatively speaking, a dead thing. Men may write for ainusement or to record the intercourse that has been. But the serious occupation of the true thinkcr and teacher is the com- munication of truth through vital converse with others like- minded,—the creation of “thoughts that breathe” in spirits conscious of their value.

In conclusion, a friendly hint is given to Isocrates that he may do better than Lysiasif he will but turn his attention to philosophy.

The Phedrus anticipates much that Plato afterwards slowly elaborated, and retains some things which he at last eliminated. (1) The presence of movement or impulse in the highest region is an aspect of truth which reappears in the Sophistes and other later dialogues. It has been thought strange that it should be found so early as in the Phedrus, But does not this remark imply an unwarrant- able assumption, viz., that Plato's idealisn took its depar- ture from the being of Parmenides? Is it not rather the fact that his own theory was formulated before the Megarian ascendency led him to examine the Eleatic doctrine, and that it was by a tendency from the first inherent in Platonism that that doctrine was modified

And |

| much light on them.

ail Pics 1 0

in his final teaching? (2) The outlines of method which are thrown out at white heat in the Phadrus area preparation for the more sober treatment of the ideas in the dialectical dialogues. In these, however, the con-

with Eleaticism. (3) The Phedrus aims, not merely at realizing universals, but at grasping them in and through particulars. This is an ideal of knowledge which was 'lost as soon as seen," but one which in some of his latest dialogues, such as the Politicus and Philebus, Plato again endeavours to work out. (4) The Phadrus contains the elements of that true psychology into which the ontologi- cal theory of the ideas is gradually transmuted in Plato's more advanced writings, when the difficulties of his ideal doctrine in its cruder forms have been clearly felt and understood. (5) Plato here appears as a professor of education, preferring oral intercourse to authorship. In this paradox he at once exalts the work of Socrates and avows his own vocation as a teacher. The passage throws an interesting light upon the form of dialogue in which his works are cast. But it is not to be supposed that he remained long unconscious of the influence he was destined to wield by writing. In undertaking a great task like the Republic,

he practically receded from the untenable view asserted here ; and in the Laws he recommends his longest and most prosaic work as a suitable basis for the education of the future. (6) It must always appear strange, even to

| those most familiar with the conditions of Hellenic life, that

in portraying the idealizing power of passionate love Plato should have taken his departure from unnatural feeling. On this subject he has sung his own “ palinode” in the Laws, which he intended as his final legacy to mankind.? Not that he ceased to exalt genius and originality above mere talent, or to demand for philosophy the service of the heart as well as the head, nor yet that friendship was less valued by him in later years. All this remained unchanged. And in the Republic the passion of love is still distantly referred to as the symbol of ideal aspiration. But a time came when he had learned to frown on the aberration of feeling which in the Symposium and Phadrus he appears to regard as the legitimate stimulus of intellectual enthu- siasm. And already in the Thewtetus not love but

| wonder is described as the only beginning of philosophy.

While calling attention to this change of sentiment, it is right to add that Platonic love in the “ erotic ” dialogues of Plato is very different from what has often been so named, and that nothing even in the noble passage of the Laws above referred to casts the slightest shadow of blame on the Socrates of the Symposium.

Such changes are, amongst other things, a ground for caution in comparing the two steeds of the Phedrus with the spirit (Ouzds) and desire (émOupta) of the Republic and Timexus. The Phedrus, in common with these dialogues,

_ asserts the existence of higher and lower impulses in

human nature, but there is no sufficient ground for suppoS ing that when Plato wrote the Phedrus he would have defined them precisely as they are defined in the Republic.

The Cratylus is full of curious interest as marking the Crat

highest point reached by the “science of language ” in antiquity ; but, as this dialogue “ hardly derives any light from Plato’s other writings,”? so neither does it reflect It deals slightly with the contrast between Heracliteanism and Eleaticism, the importance of dialectic, the difficulty about the existence of falsehood, and ends with a brief allusion to the doctrine of ideas,— but these topics are all more fully discussed elsewhere.

1 Laws, viii. 836. ; 2 Professor Jowett, —who has, notwithstanding, thrown much light on the Cratylus in his brilliant introduetion.

l

i

: ,

h

=

| rgias, }

PLATO

Three persons maintain different views respecting the nature and origin of language.

Hermogenes affirms that language is conventional, Cratylus (the Heraclitean) that it is natural. Socrates, mediating between these sophistical extremes, declares that language, like other institutions, is national, and therefore (1) is based on nature, but (2) modified by convention.

In his dialectical treatment of the subject, Socrates displays a tissue of wild etymologies in reliance on the “inspiration” of Euthyphro. Presently a distinction appears between primary and secondary words. Many primary words convey the notion of move- mentand change. It follows that the legislator or word-maker held Heraclitean views. Socrates thus far presses on Hermogenes the view of Cratylus. Then turning to Cratylus he asks if there are no false names. “False language,” Cratylus argues, “is

impossible.” Socrates shows that a true image may be inadequate, so that we have aright to criticize the work of the word-maker. And the facts indicate an element of meaningless convention. Nor was the original word-maker consistently Heraclitean. For some important words point not to motion but to rest.

But the question returns—Are we sure that the theory of nature which the word-maker held was true? This difficulty cannot be touched by verbal arguments. In seeking to resolve it we must consider, not words, but things. If there is a true beauty and a true good, which are immutable, and if these are accessible to knowledge, that world of truth can have nothing to do with flux and change.

V. Gorgias, Republic.—In the Symposium and Phxedrus Plato largely redeems the promise implied in the Phedo, where Socrates tells his friends to look among themselves fora charmer who may soothe away the fear of death. But he was pledged also to a sterner duty by the warning of Socrates to the Athenians, in the Apology, that after he was gone there would arise others for their reproof, more harsh than he had been. To this graver task, which he had but partially fulfilled with the light satire upon Lysias or the gentle message to Isocrates, the philosopher now directs his powers, by holding up the mirror of what ought to be against what is, the principles of truth and right against the practice of men, For the good has more than one aspect. The beautiful or noble when realized in action becomes the just. And to the question, What is just? are closely allied those other questions of Socrates— What isa state? What is it to be a statesman 4

In the Gorgias Plato asserts the absolute supremacy of

justice through the dramatic portraiture of Socrates in his opposition to the world; in the Republic he strives at greater length to define the nature of justice through the imaginary creation of an ideal community. _ In the former dialogue the Platonic Socrates appears in direct antagonism with the Athenian world. The shadow of his fate is hanging over him. Charephon (who is still alive) understands him, but to the other inter- locutors, Gorgias, Polus, Callicles, he appears perversely paradoxical. Yet he effectively dominates them all. And to the reader of the dialogue this image of

“Socrates contra mundum ” is hardly less impressive than that former image of Socrates confronting death.

1. Gorgias asserts that rhetoric is an art concerned with justice, and that persuasion is the secret of power.

a. Socrates, after suggesting some ironical doubts, declares his opinion that rhetoric is no art, but a knack of pleasing, or in other words “the counterfeit of a subsection of statesmanship.”

This oracular definition rouses the interest of Gorgias, and Socrates proceeds with the following “ generalization and division ”:—

Management of I

| Soul.

| Body. | x! | | | eal, Pretended. Real. Pretended. oo al oe} ee ———____ p P a , 7 | | Sophistic. Rhetoric. Gymnastic. Medicine. Cosmetic. Confec- Legis- Juris- =

lation, prudence. — ia

| | Flattery.

| Athenians practises.

203

Flattery influences men through pleasure without knowledge. And the rhetor is a kind of confectioner, who can with difficulty be distinguished from the sophist.

b. Rhetoric, then, is not an art. secret of power. paradoxes ;—

The tyrant does what he chooses but not what he wishes ;

It is less evil to suffer wrong than to do wrong ;

It is better for the wrongdoer to be punished than to escape punishment.

The only use of rhetoric, therefore, is for self-accusation, and (if it is ever permissible to do harm) to prevent the punishment of one's enemy.

2. Callicles here loses patience and breaks in. He propounds his theory, which is based on the opposition of nature and custom.

"There is no natural right, but the right of the stronger. And natural nobility is to have strong passions and power to gratify them. The lawful

is a word that cowards use,

Devised at first to keep the strong in awe."

Socrates entangles him in an argument in which it is proved that pleasure is different from good, and that there are good and bad pleasures.

Now the question is whether the life of philosophy, or the life which Callicles defends, is conducive to good. And it has been shown that rhetoric is one of a class of pursuits which minister to pleasure without discriminating what is good.

Callicles again becomes impatient. Did not Themistocles, Cimon, Pericles labour for their country's good? Socrates then renews his demonstration, proving that if the just man is wronged the evil lies with the wrongdoer, not with him, and that it is worst for the wrongdoer if he escape. And for avoidance of this greatest evil not Hassani avails anything, nor any of the arts which save life (seeing that life may be used well or ill), nor even such an art of politics as Themistocles, Cimon, or Pericles knew, but another science of politics which Socrates alone of the The pursuit of it may well endanger him ;

And persuasion is not the Here Socrates maintains against Polus the three

but his strength lies in having done no wrong. For in the world to come he can present his soul faultless before her judge. Not the show of justice but the reality will avail him there.

This truth is enforced by an impressive myth. And Callicles is invited to leave the life which relies on rhetoric and to follow Socrates in practising the life of philosophic virtue,

The value of justice has been shown. But what is justice? Is the life upheld by Socrates sufficiently defi- nite for practical guidance? The views of Callicles have been overborne ; but have they been thoroughly examined ? Socrates claims to be the only politician. But how can that deserve the name of policy which results in doing nothing? These and cognate questions may well have

haunted Plato when he planned the greatest of his works. republic.

For that which lay deepest in him was not mere specula-

| tive interest or poetic fervour, but the practical enthusiasm

of a reformer, The example of Socrates had fired him

| with an ideal of wisdom, courage, temperance, and

righteousness, which under various guises, both abstract and concrete, has appeared and reappeared in the preceding dialogues. But the more vividly he conceived of this ideal life, the more keenly he felt its isolation in the present world—that of the restored Athenian democracy. For to a Greek mind above all others life was nothing with- out the social environment, and justice, of all virtues, could least be realized apart from a community. Hence it became necessary to imagine a form of society in which the ideal man might find himself at home, a state to which the philosopher might stand in harmonious relationship, no longer as an alien sojourner, but as a native citizen, not standing aloof in lonely contemplation, but acting with the full consent of other men and ruling in the right of wisdom. Plato did not regard his own republic asa barren dream. He believed that sooner or later in the course of time a state essentially resembling his ideal commonwealth would come into being. Still more firmly was he con- vinced that until then mankind would not attain their highest possible development. To ignore this real aspect of his most serious work is to lose much of the author’s

meaning. Yet it is hardly less erroneous to interpret a great imaginative creation au pied de la lettre, as if exam-

204:

ining a piece of actual legislation.

Even in his Laws, a |

far more prosaic writing, Plato himself repeatedly protests

against such criticism. In his most aspiring flights he is well aware of the difference between the imaginary and actual embodiment of an ideal,! although as a literary

artist he gives to his creations, whether in anticipation or | fae

retrospect, an air of sober reality and matter-of-fact. is more in earnest about principles than about details, and if questioned would probably be found more confident with regard to moral than to political truth, He may have been wholly unconscious of the inconsistencies of his

scheme, but it would not have greatly disconcerted him to |

have discovered them, or to have been told that this or that arrangement would not “work.” He would have trusted the correction of his own rough draft to the philo- sopher-kings of the future.

The Republic falls naturally into five portions. (1) Bk. i. is preliminary, raising the main question about justice. (2) Bks. ii., lii., iv. contain the outlines of the perfect state, including the education of the “guardians,” and leading up to the definition of justice (a) in the state, and (4)-in the individual. (8) Bks. v., vi., vii. (which to some critics present the appearance of an after- thought or excrescence on the original design) contain the cardinal provisions (1) of communism (for the guardians only), (2) that philosophers shall be kings, (3) of higher education for the rulers (viz., the philosopher-kings). This third provision occupies bks. vi. and vil. (which have again, as some think, the appearance of an. outgrowth from bk. v.). (4)

Bks. viii. and ix., resuming the general subject from bk. iv., present the “ obverse side,” by showing the declension of the state and individual through four stages, until in the life of tyranny is found the image of ideal injustice, as that of justice was found in the life of the perfect state. (5) Bk. x. forms a concluding chapter, in which several of the foregoing enactments are reviewed, and the work ends, like the Gorgias, with a vision of judgment.

Thus the main outlines of the scheme are containcd in bks. ii., iii, iv., viii, ix. And yet bks. v., vi, vii. form the central portion, a sort of inner kernel, and are of the highest significance.

In speculating about the composition of the Republic (as is the fashion of some interpreters), it is important to bear in mind the general character of Plato’s writings.

““‘The conception of unity,” says Professor Jowett,2 ‘really applics in very different degrees to different kinds of art,—to a statue, for example, far more than to any kind of literary com- position, and to some species of literature far more than to others. Nor does the dialogue appear to be a style of composition in which the requirement of unity is most stringent ; nor should the idea of unity derived from one sort of art be hastily transferred to another. . . . Plato subjects himself to no rule of thissort. Like every great artist he gives nnity of form to the different and apparently distracting topics which he brings together, freely, and is not to be supposed to have arranged every part of the dialogue before he begins to write. He fastens or weaves to- gether the frame of his discourse loosely and imperfectly, and which is the warp and which the woof cannot always be determined.”

It should be added, that as Dialectic was still a “world

. ” . . ° not realized,” and he was continually conscious of using imperfect methods, he was not solicitous to bind himself to any one method, or to watch carefully over the logical coherence wot his work. “Sailing with the wind of his argument,” he often tacks and veers, changing his method with his subject-matter, much as a poet might adopt a change of rhythm. Absorbed as he is in each new phase of his subject, all that precedes is cancelled for the time. And much of what is to come is deliberately kept out

of view, because ideas of high importance are reserved for the place where their introduction will have most effect. Another cause of apparent inconsequence in Plato is what he himself would call the use of hypothesis. He works less deductively and more from masses of generalized experience than Platonists have been ready to admit, zt in the Republic he is as much engaged with the cri a of an sola as with the projection of an ideal condition of society.3 If we knew more of the working of

1 See especially Me Wer p., V. p. 472; Legg., v. p. 746. , Jowett, Introd. to the Phexdrus. eae Krohn, Der Platonische Staat, Halle, 1876.

Ph AEV

Attic institutions as he observed them, we should often understand him better.

These general considerations should be weighed against the inequalities which have led some critics to suppose

_ that the " first sketcli of the state" in bks. ii.—iv. is much

He works |

earlier than the more exalted views of bks. v.~~vii. If in these later books new conditions for choosing the future rulers are allowed to emerge, if in discussing the higher intellectual virtues the simple psychology of bk. iv. is lost sight of (it reappears in the Z%mezus), if the "knowledge of the expedient" at first required falls far short of the conception of knowledge afterwards attained, all this is quite in keeping with Plato's manner elsewhere, and may be sufficiently accounted for by artistic and dialectical reserve. It can hardly be an altogether fortuitous circum~~ stance that the culminating crisis, the third and highest wave of difficulty,—the declaration that philosophers must be kings and kings philosophers,~-comes in precisely at the central point of the whole long work.

The great principle of the political supremacy of mind, though thus held back through half the dialogue, really dominates the whole. It may be read between the lines all through, even in the institution of gymnastic and the

appraisement of the cardinal virtues. It is a genuine development of Socratic thought. And it is this more than any other single feature which gives the Republic a prophetic significance as “an attempt towards anticipating the work of future generations.” ¢.

Other aspects of the great dialogue, the Dorian frame- work, so inevitable in the reaction from Ionian life, the traces of Pythagorean influence, the estimate of oligarchy and democracy, the characters of the interlocutors in their bearing on the exposition, have been fully treated by recent writers, and for brevity’s sake are here passed over.

There are other points, however, which must not be omitted, because they are more intimately related to the general development of Plato’s thoughts.

1. The question debated by Proclus has been raised before and since, whether the proper subject of the Republic is justice or the state. The doubt would be more suggestive if put in a somewhat different form: Is Plato more interested in the state or the individual? That he is in earnest about both, and that in his view of them they are inseparable, is an obvious answer. And it is almost a truism to say that political relations were prior to ethical in the mind of a Greek. Yet if in some passages the political analogy reacts on moral notions (as in the defini- tion of temperance), in others the state is spoken of in language borrowed from individual life. And it remains questionable whether the ethics or the politics of the fepublic are less complete. On the whole Plato himself seems to be conscious that the ideal derived from the life- work of Socrates could be more readily stamped on individual lives than on communities of men (see especi- ally Rep., vii. 528 A, ix. 592).

2. The analogy of the individual is often used to enforce the requirement of political unity and simplicity (see especially v. 462 C). This is also to be referred, however, to Plato’s general tendency to strain after abstractions. He had not yet reached a point of view from which he could look steadily on particulars in the light of universal principles. He recurs often to experience, but is soon carried off again into the abstract region which to him seemed higher and purer.’ “It has been said that Plato flies as well as walks, but this hardly expresses the whole truth, for he flies and walks at

the same time, and is m the air and on firm ground in successive instants ” (Jowett).

4 Grote. # ° See, for example, the admission of luxury and the after-purification through “ music,” bks, ii., iii.

Pi, A TO

Plato’s scheme of communism had been suggested to him partly by Dorian institutions and partly by the Pythagorean rule. But it was further commended by the general con- sideration that the state is a higher and more abstract unity than the family. The lower obligation must give way to the higher; the universal must overrule the particular bond.

3, Similarly it may be argued that, while the subordina- tion of music to state discipline, and the importance attached to rhythm and harmony in education, had like- wise a connexion with Sparta and the Pythagoreans severally, Plato’s deliberate attitude towards poetry and art could hardly be other than it is. Philosophy, while still engaged in generalization, could not assign to the imagination its proper function. “ Aisthetik” could not enter into her purview. For a moment, in the Symposium, the ancient quarrel of poetry and philosophy had seemed to be melted in a dominant tone, but this was only a fond anticipation. Plato, if man ever did so, had felt the siren charm, but he is now embarked on a more severe endeavour, and, until the supreme unity of truth and good is grasped, vagrant fancy must be subdued and silent.

4, In the early education of the guardians a place is found for the unconscious virtue acquired through habit which the Protagoras and Meno stumbled over and the Phedo treated with disdain. In the ideal state, however, this lower excellence is no longer a wild plant, springing of itself through some uncovenanted grace of inspiration, but cultivated through an education which has been purified by philosophy so as to be in harmony with reason. But if Plato were cross-questioned as to the intrinsic value of habits so induced as a preservative for his pupils against temptation, he would have replied, “I do not pretend to have removed all difficulties from their path. Enough of evil still surrounds them to test their moral strength. I have but cleared the well-springs of the noxious weeds that have been fatal

to so many, in order that they may have little to unlearn, and be exposed only to such dangers as are inevitable.”

5. It is a singular fact, and worth the attention of those who look for system in Plato, that the definition of justice here so laboriously wrought out, viz., the right division of labour between the three classes in the state and between the three corresponding faculties in the individual soul, is nowhere else repeated or applied, although the tripartite division of the soul recurs in the Zimexus, and the notion of justice is of great importance to the arguments of the Politicus and the Laws.

6. Before leaving the Republic, it is important to mark the stage which has now been reached by Plato’s doctrine of ideas. The statements of the Republic on this subject are by no means everywhere consistent.

a. Towards the end of bk. v. philosophers are defined as lovers of the whole, who recognize the unity of justice, goodness, beauty, each in itself, as distinguished from the many just or good or beautiful things. The former are said to be objects of knowledge, the latter of opinion, which is intermediate between knowledge and ignorance. Knowledge is of being, ignorance of the non-existent, Opinion of that which is and is not. =~. qn bk. vi. there is a more elaborate statement, implying a more advanced point of view. The “con- templation of all time and all existence” is a riper concep- tion than “the love of each thing as a whole.” Ignorance and nonentity have now disappeared, and the scale is graduated from the most evanescent impression of sense to the highest reach of absolute knowledge. And in the highest region there is again a gradation, rising to the form of good, and descending from it to the true forms of all things. In the application of this scheme to the theory

of education in bk. vii. there are still further refinements, The psychological analysis becomes more subtle, and more stress is laid on the connexion of ideas.

c. The doctrine reverts to a cruder aspect in bk. x, where we are told of an ideal bed, which is one only and the pattern of all the many actual beds.

d, A yet different phase of idealism presents itself in bk. ix. (sub fin.), in the mention of a “pattern” of the perfect state laid up in heaven which the philosopher is to make his rule of life.

What is said above concerning Plato’s mode of composi- tion has some bearing on these inconsistencies of expres- sion. And that bks. vi., vii., as being the most important, were finished last isa not untenable hypothesis. But that Plato, in preparing the way for what he had in contempla- tion, should content himself with provisional expressions which he had himself outgrown, or that in a casual illus- tration (as in bk. x.) he should go back toa crude or even childish form of his own theory, is equally conceivable and in accordance with his manner elsewhere. Socrates in the Parmenides confessedly wavers on this very point. And there are “ ideas” of the four elements in the Zimzxus.

VL. Euthydemus, Parmenides, Theextetus, Sophist, States- man, Philebus (the dialectical dialogues).—Even in the most advanced metaphysics of the Republic there is a hyperbolical, transcendental tendency, from which Plato ultimately to some extent worked himself free. But it was not in conversation with “ dear Glaucon,” or “ between the lines” of an ethico-political writing, that this partial emancipation could be effectually attained. We have now to consider a series of dialogues, probably intended for a narrower circle of readers, in which Plato” grapples directly with the central difficulties of his own theory of knowing. and being. It is not necessary to assume that all of these are later than the Republic. The position of the Euthydemus and Parmenides in the order of com- position is very uncertain. The Theextetus has points of affinity with the Republic. The Sophist, Polrticus, and Philebus are in a later style. But, on account of their cognate subject-matter, these six dialogues may be con- veniently classed together in a group by themselves. And the right place for such a group is intermediate between the Republic and the Laws.

The unity of the object of definition, the identity of virtue and knowledge, the existence of an absolute good, which would be universally followed if universally known, and of a standard of truth which is implied in the confession of ignorance, were postulates underlying the Socratic process, which in so far made no claim to bea “philosophy without assumptions.”

These postulates, when once apprehended, drew Plato on to speculate concerning the nature, the object, and the method of knowledge. Now, so far as we have hitherto followed him, his speculation has either been associated with ethical inquiry, or has been projected in a poetical and senll-mythical form. In the Phedrus, however, the vision of ideas was expressly conjoined with an outline of psychology and a foreshadowing of scientific method. And, while the opposition of ideas to phenomena and of knowledge to opinion has been repeatedly assumed, it has also been implied that there is a way between them,’and that the truth can only be approached by man through interrogation of experience. For it is nowhere supposed that the human inquirer is from the first in a position to deduce facts from ideas. Much rather, the light of the ideas is one which fitfully breaks in upon experience as men struggle towards the universal.

But it is not less true that the metaphysical aspirations from which Socrates had seemed to recall men’s thoughts had been reawakened in consequence of the impulse which

The dia- lectical dialogues.

Pe he TO

Plato appears in the same act to have become aware of Parme. his affinity with Parmenides, and to have been led to recon- nites.

206

Socrates himself had given. From asking, Is virtue one? | Can virtue be taught? Plato passes on to ask, What is

Euthy- The Huthydemus is a treatise “ De Sophisticis Elenchis” | along two lincs, according as either term of the proposition is demus. in the form of a farce, and may serve to introduce the five emphasized, and this not only as regards the hypothesis of unity, i

unity? What are knowledge and being? From criticiz- ing imperfect modes of teaching virtue, he has begun to speculate about the right and wrong uses of the intellect, and from dramatic portraits of the individual Protagoras or

Gorgias goes on to the ideal delineation of the sophist. He has entered upon the “longer way,” and is no longer con- tented with mere “hypotheses.” With this demand for scientific precision his conception of the ideas themselves is modified, and he strives anew to conceive of them in relation to one another, to the mind, and to the world. As the balance of ethical truth was restored by admitting an uncon- scious (or inspired) conformity to reason, so now a fresh attempt is made on the intellectual side to bridge the gulf between sense and knowledge.

This endeavour involves, not only an expansion of the method of Socrates, but an examination of the earlier philosophies from which Socrates had turned away. Their influence on Plato has been traceable in the preceding dialogues, though, except in the case of Pythagoreanism (Phed., Rep.), ithas been mostly indirect and casual. But in these dialectical dialogues he manifests his serious con- viction that the contemporary fallacies which formed the chief hindrance to inquiry were deeply rooted in forms of thought created by earlier thinkers, above all by Heraclitus and Parmenides. To the exclusiveness of their first principles as held by their followers Plato attributed the barrenness and impracticable unreality of many discussions, which put shadow-fighting and controversy in the place of real investigation, and led men to think that truth was unattainable. He therefore enters into conver- sation, as it were, with the great minds of former times, and in the spirit of Socrates compels each of them to yield up his secret, and to acknowledge a supplemental truth. To this effort he may very probably have been stimulated by the dialectical activity of his Socratic friends at Megara, whose logical tastes had drawn them towards Eleaticism. But, unlike them, while strengthening his metaphysical theory, he was also led to give to his political speculations a more practical turn.

other dialogues, as the encounter with Thrasymachus intro- duces the serious part of the Republic. Under the veil of mockery there is more of concentrated thought, and also more of bitterness, in this dialogue than in the Protagoras or the Gorgias.

A sample of educational dialectic—in which Socrates draws out of young Clinias the admissions (1) that a philosophy is needed, (2) that the highest philosophy is a science of king-craft, which remains for the present

undefined,—is contrasted with a series of ridiculous sophisms, propounded by Dionysodorus and his brother Euthydemus, in which absolute and relative notions, whether affirmative or negative, object and subject, universal and particular, substance and attribute, action and modality, are capriciously confused. Crito, to whom Socrates narrates the scene, is moved to contempt. But Socrates warns him not on this account to despair of philosophy. In conclusion, Isocrates, or some one else, who prematurely mixes up philosophy with practical politics, is cautioned against spoiling two good things.

Such puzzles as—How can I learn either what I know or what I do not know?! How can things become what they are not? How is falsehood or denial possible ?— although treated jocularly here, will be found returning afterwards to “ trouble the mind’s eye.”

cere a

1 Comp. Afeno.

sider the foundations of his own doctrine. The one being of Parmenides was a more abstract notion than justice, beauty, or the good. And the Zenonian method had more pretension to exactness than the Socratic. But it remained barren, because contented to repeat its own first essays in the destructive analysis of experience, without rising to the examination of its own first principles. For this higher criticism, of which he himself also stood in need, Plato looks up from the disciples to the master, Parmenides. The appeal to him is put into the mouth of Socrates, as a very young man, who has framed for hini- self a theory of ideas, and would gladly see the Zenonian process applied to the notions of sameness, difference, like- ness, unlikeness, unity, and being.

Parmenides, whom Plato treats with tender reverence not unmixed with irony, proposes to the youth a series of questions which reveal the crudity of the doctrine of «dy. (1) Are there ideas of trivial things?? (2) How do things “partake” of them? (3) Must not idealism proceed am infiuntum’? (4) If ideas are thoughts, do they and their participants think? (5) If they are patterns, and things resemble them, must there not be a pattern of the

resem- blance, and so on in infinitum? (6) If absolute, are they thinkable by man ?

These difficulties are real, and yet to deny ideas is to destroy philosophy. (As the. paradoxical doubts in the Protagoras do not shake the faith of Socrates in the existence of good, so neither does Plato here intend fora moment to derogate from the belief in the existence of the One and the True.)

Parmenides advises Socrates to arm himself for the further pur- suit of truth (1) by the higher application and (2) by the extension or completion of the Zenonian mcthod. (1) The method is to be applied to abstractions. (2) It isnot enough to show the inferences which may be drawn from the admission of an ite but account must also be taken of the inferences which follow from its rejection.

Parmenides exemplifies his suggestion by examining his own first principle in conversation with a youth who, while a contemporary

of Socrates, is a namesake of Plato's pupil Aristotle.? Not content with the affirmative and negative hypotheses, he pursues either

but also as applied to the alternative hypothesis of plurality. The result, as in the Protagoras, is purely destructive, and the dialogue ends abruptly without a word of reply from Socrates.

The second part of the Parmenides may be regarded as an experiment in which Plato "assays to go" in Eleatic armour. Yet the strange web is "shot" with colours of original thought. The mode of conceiving time and becoming, and the vision of nothingness towards the end, may be noted as especially Platonic. These passages may be regarded in the same light as the wise words of Pro- tagoras or the sober truths which occur amidst the wild fancies of the Cratylus. They should not mislead the interpreter into a search for recondite meanings.

The Zenonian method has been carried out to the utmost in application to the highest subject, and has led the mind into a maze of contradiction. It remains to call in question the method itself, and the notion of absolute

identity and difference on which it hinges, and so to lay anew the foundation-stone of thought.

Before this can be attempted, however, another set of difficulties have to be met, and another set of philosophers examined. For the current scepticism had undermined the conception of knowledge as well as that of being, and the fame of Heraclitus was hardly second to that of Parmenides. Protagoras appeared in a former dialogue as

2 Comp. Rep., x, 597. 3 Comp. the younger Socrates of the Politicus. carious to draw any inference from this minute fact,

It would be pre-

‘ te-

rig ©

the champion of ordinary morality ; he is now made the exponent of ordinary thinking. His saying “Man the measure” is shown to rest on the unstable basis of the Heraclitean flux. By an elaborate criticism of both theories knowledge is at last separated from the relativity of sense; but the subsequent attempt to distinguish on abstract grounds between true and false opinion, and to define knowledge as true opinion with a reason (comp. Meno), proves ineffectual. Plato still shows traces of Megarian influence. But the disjunctive method of the Parmenides is not resumed. The indirect proofs are so arranged as to exhibit the skill of Socrates in “ bringing to the birth” the germs of thought in a richly-endowed and “pregnant” young mind. Theztetus is the embodiment of the philosophic nature described in Rep., bk. vi., and has already been trained by Theodorus of Cyrene in geometry and the other preparatory sciences of Rep., bk. vil. It is in conversation with Theodorus that Socrates impressively contrasts the lives of the lawyer and the philosopher. The Theetetus marks a great advance in clearness of meta- physical and psychological expression. See for example the passage (184-186) in which the independent function of the mind is asserted, and ideas are shown to be the truth of experience. There is also a distinct approach towards a critical and historical method in philosophy,

while the per- fection of style continues unimpaired, and the person of Socrates is as vividly represented as in any dialogue.

Notwithstanding the persistence of an indirect and negative method, the spirit of this dialogue also is the reverse of sceptical. “Socrates must assume the reality of knowledge or deny himself” (197 A). Perhaps in no metaphysical writing is the balance more firmly held between experience, imagination, and reflexion. Plato would seem to have made a compact with himself to abstain rigidly from snatching at the golden fruit that had so often eluded his grasp, and to content himself with laboriously “ cutting steps ” towards the summit that was still unsealed. ’

With Plato, as with other inventive writers, a time seems to have arrived when he desired to connect succes- sive works ina series. Thus in planning the Sophistes he linked it to the Theetetus (which had been written with- out any such intention), and projected a whole tetralogy of dialectical dialogues, Theextetus, Sophistes, Poltticus, Philosophus, of which the last piece seems never to have been written.

After an interval, of which our only measure is a change of style, the philosopher returns to the great central question of knowledge and being. The obstacle in his path, on which he has often played with light satire, dramatic portraiture, and indirect allusion, is now to be made the object of a seriously planned attack. He has made his approaches, and the enemy’s fortress is to be forthwith sapped and overthrown. This hostile position 18 not merely the “ Sophistik ” which, as some tell us, is an Invention of the Germans, and as Plato himself declares 1s only the reflexion or embodiment of the average mind! but the fallacy of fallacies, the prime falsehood (mpdrov Wetdos) of all contemporary thought. This is nothing else than the crude absoluteness of affirmation and negation which was ridiculed in the Huthydemus, and has been elsewhere mentioned as the first principle of the art of controversy.? For dramatic purposes this general error is personified. And the word “sophist,” which had somehow become the béte noire of the Platonic school, thus for the first time fixedly acquires the significance which has since clung to the name.—That Plato himself would not adhere pedantically to the connotation here implied is shown by | (iri nS

1 Rep., vi. 493.

2 ayTiAoyiKh.

|

the admission, at the opening of the dialogue, that amongst other disguises under which the philosopher walks the earth, the sophist is one.—In this dialogue, as in the Parmenides, a new method is introduced, and again by an Eleatic teacher. This method is repeated with improvements in the Poltticus, and once more referred to in the Philebus. It bears a strong resemblance to the "'synagoge" and " dieresis" of the Phedrus, but is applied by the "friend from Elea" with a degree of pedantry which Socrates nowhere betrays. And the two methods, although kindred, have probably come through different channels,— the classifications of the Phedrus being Plato's own generalization of the Socratie process, while the dichotomies of the Sophistes and Politicus are a caricature of Socrates cast in the Megarian mould. Plato seems to have regarded this method as an implement which might be used with advantage only when the cardinal principles on which it turned had been fully criticized.

1. After various attempts to "catch the sophist," he is defined as the maker of an unreal likeness of truth. Here the difficulty begins—for the definition implies the existence of the unreal, z.¢., of not-being. In our extremity it is necessary to "lay hands on our father Parmenides."

2. The contradictions attendant on the notion of " being," whether as held by Parmenides or his opponents or by the " less exact" thinkers who came after them, are then examined, and in an extremely subtle and suggestive passage (246-249) an attempt is, made to mediate between idealism and materialism. The result is that while consummate being is exempt from change it cannot be devoid of life and motion. " Like children, 'Give us both,' say we,

3. This leads up to the main question :—(qa) are different notions incommunicable, or (0) are all ideas indiscriminately communicable, or © is there communion of some kinds and not of others? The last view is alone tenable, and is confirmed by experience. And of Le true combination and separation of kinds the philosopher is udge.

; 4. Then it is asked (in order to “bind the sophist”) whether being is predicable of not-being.

Five chief kinds (or categories) are now examined, viz., being, rest, motion, sameness, difference. Rest and motion are mutually incommunicable, but difference is no less universal than being itself. For everything is “other” than the rest, %e, is not. ‘Thus positive and negative not only coexist but are coextensive.

5. And, in spite of Parmenides, we have discovered the existence, and also the nature, of not-being. It follows that the mere pur- suit of contradictions is childish and uscless and wholly incompa- tible with a philosophic spirit.

Negation, falsity, contradiction, are three notions which Plato from his height of abstraction does not hold apart. His position is the converse of the Spinozistic saying, “Omnis determinatio est negatio.” According to him, every negative implies an affirmative. And his main point is that true negation is correlative to true affirmation, much as he has said in the Phedrus that the dialectician separates kinds according to the “lines and veins of nature.” The Sophistes is a standing protest against the error of marring the finely-graduated lineaments of truth, and so destroying the vitality of thought.

The idealists whom the Eleatic stranger treats so gently have been identified with the Megarians. But may not Plato be reflecting on a Megarian influence operating within the Academy ?

Here, as partly already in the Parmenides and Theetetus, the ideas assume the nature of categories, and being is the sum of positive attributes, while negation, as the shadow of affirmation, is likewise finally comprehended in the totality of being.

The remark made incidentally, but with intense em- phasis, that the universe lives and moves “according to God,” is an indication of the religious tone which reappears increasingly in the Politicus, Philebus, Timexus, and Laws.

In passing on to consider the statesman, true and false, the Eleatic stranger does not forget the lesson which has just been learned. While continuing his

method of dicho-

BOW

Politicus (States-

man.)

208

ria Ts

tomies, he is careful to look on both sides of each alterna- | own peculiar function is an art of weaving strength (the warp) with

tive, and he no longer insists on dividing between this and not-this when another mode of classification is more natural. A rule not hitherto applied is now brought forward, the rule of proportion or right measure (76 pézpuov), as distin- guished from arbitrary limitations. Nor is formal logical treatment any longer felt to be adequate to the subject in hand, but an elaborate myth is introduced. On the ethico-political side also a change has come over Plato. As he has stripped his ideas of transcendental imagery, so in reconsidering his philosopher-king he turns away from the smiling optimism of the Republic and looks for a scientific statesmanship that shall lay a strong grasp upon the actual world. He also feels more bitterly towards the demagogues and other rulers of Hellas. The author of the Politecus must have had some great quarrel with mankind. But so far as they will receive it he is still intent on doing them good,

1. The king is first defined as a herdsman of men, who as “slow bipeds” are distinguished from the pig and the ape. But the king is not all in all to his charges, as the herdsinan is. The above definition confuses human with divine rule.

2. Now the universe is like a top, which God first winds in one direction and then leaves to spin the other way. In the former or divine cycle all was spontaneous, and mankind, who had all things in common, were under the immediate care of gods. They were happy, if they used their leisure in

interrogating nature. But in this reign of Zeus it is far otherwise. Men have to order their own ways and try to imitate in some far-off manner the all-but forgotten divine rule.

3. Therefore in our present definition the term “superintendent ” must be substituted for “ herdsman.”

What special kind of superintendence is true statesmanship ?

4, By way of an example, the art of weaving is defined. The example shows that kingcraft has first to be separated from other kindred arts, both causal and co-operative. Nine categories are adduced which exhaust social functions. Eightare eliminated, and the ninth, the class of ministers, remains, Of thesc (a) slaves, (2) hirelings, (c) traders, (d) officials, (¢) priests are again parted off, although the last are only with difficulty ere from the king, when (/) a strange medley of monstrous creatures come into view. Some are fierce like lions, some crafty like the fox, and some have mixed natures like centaurs and satyrs. These are the actual rulers of mankind, more sophistical and juggling than the sophist him- self, And they too must be separated from the true king.

5. The familiar tripartite distinction of monarchy, oligarchy, democracy, is doubled by introducing into each the distinction involved in the presence or absence of wealth, and in the observance or non-observance of law. But no one of the six carries in itself a scientific principle.

The true government is the rule, not of many, but of one or of a few. “And they may govern, whether poor or rich, by freewill or compulsion, and either with or without law, so long as they govern scientifically.”

6. The respondent, a youthful namesake of Socrates, is shocked at the remark that the true ruler may govern without law.

This leads to a discussion of the nature of law, which is com- pared to the prescription left by a physician. If present, he might dispense with his own rule. So the presence of a competent ruler is better than the sovereignty of law, which makes no allowance for nature or circumstance, but tyrannically forces its own way. Imagine medicine, navigation, &c., similarly conducted

by time- honoured prescription, with penalties for innovation ;—what would become of civilization? Yet if law is disregarded by rulers who are unscientific and warped by self-interest, this leads to far worse evils. For the laws are based on some experience and wisdom. Hence, in the continued absence of the truc ruler, the best course, though only second best, is the strict observance of law. And he who so rules in humble imitation of the scientific governor may be truly called a king, although if the divine lawgiver were to appear his living will would supersede the law.

7. As it is, though cities survive many evils, yet many are ship- wrecked because of the ignorance of those at the helm. The order of badness in the actual states is—

1, Constitutional monarchy.

| —2. Constitutional oligarchy,

al

be 3. Law-abiding democracy. |

— 4. Law-breaking democracy. ——5. Law-defying oligarchy. 6. Tyranny.

8. It remains to separate from the true ruler those who co-operate with him as subordinates, the general, the Judge, the orator. His

gentleness (the woof), when education has prepared them, —and this (1) by administration, (2) by marriage.

The four preceding dialogues have shown (1) the gradual transformation of the Platonic ideas (while still objective) into forms of thought, (2) the tendency to group them into series of categories, (3) a corresponding advance in psychological classification, (4) an increasing importance given to method, (5) the inclination to inquire into pro- cesses (yevéoeis) aS well as into the nature of being.

Meanwhile Plato’s approach to the Eleatics, though in the way of criticism, has brought into prominence the notions of unity, being, sameness, difference, and has left some-

all studies ” Plato now returns, equipped with his improved instruments, and ready to forge new ones in the same laboratory, or in some other, should occasion serve. His converse with Parmenides ended in his assertion of an element of difference pervading all things, in other words, of an indeterminate element underlying all determinations, This brings him again into relation with the Pythagoreans, who had similarly asserted the combination of finite and infinite in the universe.

Taking advantage of their help, he gains a more advanced (but still ideal) conception of the concrete har- mony of things, and approaches the definition of that which in the Republic he but shadowed forth.

With this most serious inquiry there is combined (as in the Sophistes and Politicus) an ironical and controversial use of dialectic, by which the juggler and false pretender (who is in this case the goddess of pleasure), after claiming the highest place, is thrust down to the lowest.

It must be admitted that the style of the Philebus is far from brilliant, or even clear. In the effort of connecting abstractions Plato's movement is more laboured than in his first glad realization of them.

Instead of attempting here to follow the windings of the dialogue, it must suffice to state the main result. Neither pleasure nor knowledge is the highest good, and the good eludes definition; but the shrine, or habitation, of the good is a complex life of which the elements are, in order of merit—(1) measure, the cause of all right mixture; (2) (a) beauty, the effect, and (6) reality, the inseparable condition; (3) intellect; (4) science, art, and right opinion; (5) pure pleasure unaccompanied with pain. "Not all the animal kingdom shall induce us to put pleasure first."

The Philebus introduces us to the interior of the Academy in the lifetime of the master. More than any other of the dialogues it recalls Aristotle's description of Plato's teaching. But, while his followers seem early to have fallen under the dominance of the latest phase of his doctrine, Plato himself, even in the Philebus, is still detached from any servitude to the creations of his own mind. He manipulates them as the medium for expressing his fresh thoughts, but they are not yet crystallized into a system.

"T will remind you," Socrates, "of what has been omitted," says Protarchus at the conclusion of this dialogue. The last (presumably) of Plato's metaphysical writings thus fitly ends with a confession of incomplete- ness. But if, as M. Renan says, "the most fatal error is to believe that one serves one's country by calumniating those who founded it," neither is it for the interest of science to ignore these imperfect anticipations. By methods elaborated in the course of centuries, and far more sure than any which Plato had at his command, mankind have gained an extent of knowledge which he dreamt not of! But the Greek metaphysician is none the

| what in abeyance the idea of good. To this "highest of Phitel

1 See, however, Polit., 272 C, D.

¥

| |

= ——

ima- g tive ogues.

a Sa

aa nae

rLA TO

less a pioneer of knowledge,! while the special sciences of ethics and psychology had been carried from infancy to adolescence in a single lifetime.

VIL Timezus, Critias, [Hermocrates].—As the Sophistes and Politicus were written in continuation of the Theextetus, so, at some uncertain time, Plato conceived the design of writing a great trilogy, for which the ideal state depicted in the Republic should be the point of departure. The

rand outline there sketched by Socrates was now to be filled up by Critias and Hermocrates, The form set up by reasoning should be made alive, the “airy burghers” should be seen “ making history.” Asa prelude to this magnificent celebration, Timeus, the Pythagorean philo- sopher, who is present at the Panathenza, is invited to discourse of the origin of all things, and to bring down the glorious theme to the creation of man. What should have followed this, but is only commenced in the fragment of the Critias, would have been the story, not of a fall, but of the triumph of reason in humanity.

In the Philebus (59 A, comp. 62 D) Plato speaks with a touch of contempt of the life-long investigation of nature, as being concerned only with this visible universe, and immersed in the study of phenomena, whether past, present, or to come, which admit of no stability and there- fore of no

certainty. “ These things have no absolute first principle, and can never be the objects of reason and true science.”

Yet even this lower knowledge is there admitted as an element of that life which is the habitation of the good. And there are not wanting signs in his later dialogues that Plato’s imagination had again been strongly drawn towards those physical studies which, as the Phedo shows, had fascinated him in youth. That nature and the world proceed “according to God and not according to chance ” is the belief of the Eleatic stranger, to which he perceives that Thestetus will be irresistibly drawn as he grows older. In the midst of dialectical abstractions, the pro- cesses of actual production (yevéoes) have been increas- ingly borne in mind. And the myth in the Politicus turns on cosmological conceptions which, although differing from those in the Zimxus, and more accordant with Plato’s bitterest mood, yet throw a new light on the deeper current of his thoughts. In the same passage (272 C) there occurs the first clear anticipation of an interrogatio nature.

The impulse in this new direction, if not originated, was manifestly reinforced, through closer intercourse with the Pythagorean school. And the choice of Timeus the Pythagorean as chief speaker is an acknowledgment of this obvious tendency. If in the course of the dialogue there occur ideas apparently borrowed from the Atomists, whom Plato persistently ignored, this fact ought probably to be referred to some early reaction of Atomic on Pytha- gorean doctrine. It is important to observe, however, that not only the Zimzus, but the unfinished whole of which 1t forms the introduction, is professedly an imaginative creation. For the legend of prehistoric Athens and of Atlantis, whereof Critias was to relate what belonged to Internal policy and Hermocrates the conduct of the war, would have been no other than a prose poem, a “ mytho- logical lie,” conceived in the spirit of the Republic, and in the form of a fictitious narrative. And, therefore, when Timezus professes to give only a probable account of shadowy truths, he must be taken at his word, and not criticized in too exacting a spirit. His descriptions have much the same relation to the natural philosophy of Plato’s time that Milton’s cosmology has to the serious investiga- tions of Galileo or Copernicus,—except that all physical

speculation hitherto partook in some measure of this half- mythological character, and that Plato's mind, although working in an unfamiliar region, is still that of a specu- lative philosopher.

As Parmenides, after demonstrating the nonentity of Timaus,

growth and decay, was yet impelled to give some account of this non-existent and unintelligible phenomenal world, so Plato, although warned off by Socrates, must needs attempt to give a probable and comprehensive description of the visible universe and its creation. In doing so he acknowledges an imperfect truth in theories which his dialectic had previously set aside. In examining the earlier philosophers he has already transgressed the limits prescribed by Socrates, and the effort to connect ideas has made him more and more cdnscious of the gap between the ideal and the actual. He cannot rest until he has done his utmost to fill up the chasm—calling in the help of imagination where reason fails him.

His dominant thought is still that of a deduction from the " reason of the best," as in the Phedo, or " the idea of good," as in the Republic. But both his abstract idealism and his absolute optimism were by this time considerably modified, and, although not confounding " causes with con- ditions," as he once accused Anaxagoras of doing, he yet assigns more scope to "second causes " than he would then have been willing to attribute to them. This partly comes of ripening experience and a deepening sense of the per- sistency of evil, and partly from the feeling—which seems to have grown upon him in later life—of the distance between God and man.

Timeus begins by assuming (1) that the universe being corporeal is caused and had a beginning, and (2) that its mysterious author made it after an everlasting pattern. Yet, being bodily and visible, it can only be made the subject, humanly speaking, of probable discourse.

Thus much being premised, he proceeds to unfold—(A) the work of mind in creation, (B) the effects of necessity, including the general and specific attributes of bodies, (C) the principles of physiology, and (D) an outline of pathology and medicine.

To give a full account of such a comprehensive treatise is beyond the scope of this article, and the Timwus, however great and interesting, has been well described as an out-building of the great fabric of original Platonism. A very few scattered observations are all that there is space for here.

(A) 1. In the mythology of the Timzus some of the conceptions which attained logical clearness in the Sophist and Philebus resumé an ontological form. Thus, in compounding the soul-stuff of the universe, the father of all takes of the continuous and discrete and fuses them into an essence (the composite being of the Philebus). Again he takes of the same and other (comp. the Sophist), over- coming their inherent repugnance by his sovereign act.

2. The notion of an economy or reservation in Plato has been often exaggerated and misapphed. But it is difficult to acquit him of intentional obscurity in speaking of the creation of the Earth. It is clear, though Plato does not say so, that she is meant to have been created together with the Heaven and together with Time, and so before the other ‘‘ gods within the heaven,” ¢.¢., the sun and moon and five planets, and it is a plausible supposition that she is the “artificcr of day and night” by interposing her bulk to the sun’s rays. If the word efAAouévy in p. 40 implies motion (as Aristotle thought *), it cannot be, as Grote supposed, a motion consentaneous with that of the outer sphere, but either some far slower motion, perhaps assumed in order to account for the shifting of the seasons, or an equal retrograde motion which is supposed to neutralize in her case the “ motion of the same.” She clings to the centre, as her natural abode. And the diurnal motion of the heavens is due not to any mechanical force but to the soul of the world extending from the centre to the poles and comprehending all.

3. Immortality is in the Timgus dependent on the will of the Eternal. And the sublime idea of eternity is here first formulated.

4. The phenomena of vision and hearing are included among the works of reason, because the final cause of these higher senses is to give men perception of number, through contemplation of the measures of time.

(B) 1. It has been commonly said that the four elements of the Timzxus are geometrical figures, without content. This is not true. For what purpose does Plato introduce, “besides the archetype and

1 See Jowett, Introd. to the Timzus.

2 Aristotle, however, uses efAoupévy, a different word. ALX., — 27

alli,

the created form, a third kind, dim and hard to conceive, a sort of | limbec or matrix of creation,” if not to fill up the triangles which are elements of elements, and to be the vehicle of the forms com- pounded of them? It has been supposed that this “nurse of generation” is identical with “space,” and it cannot be said that they are clearly kept apart by Plato. But he had a distinct nomenclature for either, and, although gravity is explained away (so that his molecules, unlike Clerk Maxwell’s, may be called imponderable), yet extension, or the property of filling space, 1s sufficiently implied. .

2. The diffcrence of size in the triangles and varying sharpness of their outlines are ingenious though inadequate expedients, | adopted in order to account for qualitative difference and physical ehange. ;

3. In criticizing the illusory notion of up and down Plato broaches the conception of antipodes. ; ;

4. More distinctly than in the Philebus, bodily pleasure is explained by “a sudden and sensible return tonature” (comp. Ar., genet, 1. 11, § 13. £., vil. 10),

5. Natural philosophers are warned against experimenting on the mixture of colours, which isa divine process and forbidden to man.

(C) 1. Plato tends more and more in his later writings to account for moral evil by physical conditions, thus arriving at the Socratic principle of the involuntariness of vice by a different road. ‘

Hence in the 7¢mzus not the body only is made by the inferior gods; but they also create the lower and mortal parts of the huinan soul :—the principle of anger which is planted in the breast, within hearing of reason, and that of appetite which is lodged below the diaphragm like an animal tied in a stall, with the stomach fora crib and the liver for a “soothsaying” looking-glass to soothe or terrify it when tempted to break loose.

2. The brain-pan was left bare of protecting flesh “ because the sons of God who framed us deliberately chose for us a precarious life with capability of reason, in preference to a long secure existence with obstruction of thought.”

3. The nails are a rudimentary provision for the lower animals, into which degencrate souls were afterwards to be transformed.

4. Vegetables have sensation but not motion.

5. By way of illustrating the very curious account here given of respiration, it is asserted that what is commonly thought to be

the attraction of the magnet is really due to rotatory motion and displacement.

6. When the original particles wear out, and the bonds of soul and body in the marrow give way, the soul escapes delightedly and flies away. This is the painless death of natural decay.

(D) 1. The dependence of mental disease on bodily conditions is more fully recognized in the Z’imeus than elsewhere in Plato (con- trast the Charmides, for example).

2. He has also changed his mind about the treatment of disease, and shows more respect for regimen and diet than in the Republic. ei are a kind of second nature, and should be treated accord- ingly.

3. It is also a remark in contrast with the Republic, that over- study leads to head complications, which physicians ascribe to chill and find intractable.

Lastly, it is one of the strange irregularities in the composition of the 7imeus that the creation of woman and the relation of the sexes ‘ to each other are subjects reserved to the end, because this is the place given to the lower animals, and woman (compare the Phedrus) is the first transmigration from the form of man. This order is probably not to be attributed to Plato’s own thought, but to some peculiarity of Pythagorcan or Orphic tradition.

VIII. The Laws.—The two series of dialogues, the dialectical and the imaginative,—Sophistes, Politicus, Philosophus,—Timeus, Critias, Hermocrates,—were left incomplete. For Plato had concentrated his declining powers, in the evening of his life? upon a different task. He was resolved to leave behind him, if he could so far overcome the infirmities of age,? a code of laws, conceived In a Spirit of concession, and such as he still hoped that some Hellenic state might sanction. The motive for this great work may be gathered from the Politicus. The physician in departing is to give a written prescription, adapted as far as possible to the condition of those from whom he goes away. This is the second-best course, in the absence of the philosopher-king. And, as the Hellenic world will not listen to Plato’s heroic remedy, he accom-

; u There is an anticipation of microscopic observation in the words adpara ord ouixpdétntos Kal &didwrAacTa (ga = spermatozoa. 5 mets a &y Svopais Tod Blov, Legg., vi. 770 A. bv… yhpws emicpaTduév ye rocodtov, Legg., vi. 752 A.

Pa & TO

modates his counsel to their preconceptions. once more from abstract discussions to study the applica- tion of ideas to life, and though, by the conditions of the problem, his course is “nearer earth and less in light,” this long writing, which is said to have been posthumous,‘ has a peculiar interest. The ripeness of accumulated experience and the mellowness of wise contemplation make up for the loss of prophetic insight and poetic charm.

The form of dialogue is still retained, and an aged Athenian is imagined as discoursing of legislation with the Lacedemonian Megillus and the Cretan

Clinias, who has in view the foundation of a new colony, and is on his way with his two companions from Cnossus to the temple and oracle of Zeus.

Plato now aims at moderating between Dorian and Ionian law, freely criticizing both, and refining on them from a higher point of view. “The praise of obedience, the authority assigned to elders, the prohibition of dowries, the enforcement of marriage, the common meals, the distribution and inalienability of land, the institution of the Crypteia, the freedom of bequest to a favourite son, the dislike of city walls—all reflect the custom of Sparta.” . . + “The use of the lot, the scrutiny of magistrates, the monthly courses of the council, the pardon of the forgiven homicide, most of the regulations about testaments and the guardianship of orphans, the degrees of consanguinity recognized by law, correspond to Athenian laws and customs” (Jowett). _

The philosopher’s own thoughts come out most strongly in the ‘‘preludes” to the laws,> and in the regulations concerning education, marriage, and the punishment of impiety (ze. Ist, atheism, 2d, denial of providence, 3d and worst, immoral superstition), The difficulty which is met in the Politicus by the abandonment of the world for a time, and in the Z’imeus by the lieutenancy of lower gods, here leads to the hypothesis of an evil soul. The priority of mind (often before asserted) and the increased importance attached to numbers are the chief indications of Plato’s latest thoughts about the intelligible world. But it must be remembered that the higher cducation (answering to Fep., vi., vii.) is expressly reserved.6 Had Plato written his own Lpmomis, the proportions of the whole work (not then “acephalous”) might have been vastly changed.

The severity of the penalties attached to the three forms of heresy, especially to the third and worst of them, has led to the remark that Plato, after asserting “ liberty of pro- phesying,” had become intolerant and bigoted in his old age. But the idea of toleration in the modern sense was never distinctly present to the mind of any ancient philo- sopher. And, if in the Laws the lines of thought have in one way hardened, there are other ways in which experience has softened them. Plato’s “second-best” constitution contains a provision, which was not admissible in the “perfect state,” for possible changes and readaptations in the future. The power of

self-reformation is hedged round indeed with extreme precautions ; and no young or middle- aged citizen is ever to hear a word said in depreciation of any jot or tittle of the existing law. But that it should be provided, however guardedly, that select com- missioners, after travelling far and wide, should bring back of the fruit of their observations for the consideration of the nocturnal council, and that a power of constitutionally Me ee ee, eee

- Published by Philippus the Opuntian.

> See especially iv. 716 sg. ; v. 727 sq., 735 sq. 3 vi. 766; vii. 778

sy., 777, 794, 808 sq., 811, 817; viii. 835 SHAR) Ube YhiG 2S BIC! Ses 897 sq., 904 sq. f 6 Legg., xii. 968 E. (Ath.) ‘¢I am willing to share with yon the

danger of stating to you my views about education and nurture, which is the question coming to the surface again.”

He returns Laws.

Doubtful and spu- yious works,

Pi 2 PO

amending the laws should thus be admitted into the state, is sufficiently remarkable, when the would-be finality of ancient legislation is considered. Plato even comes near to the reflexion that “constitutions are not made, but grow” (iv. 709 A).

Plato in the Laws desists finally from impersonating Socrates. But he is in some ways nearer to his master in spirit than when he composed the Phedrus. The sympathy with common life, the acceptance of Greek religion, the deepening humanity, are no less essentially Socratic than the love of truth which breathes in every page. And some particular aspects of Socratism reappear, such as the question about courage} and that concerning the unity of virtue.”

Of the dialogues forming part of the “ Platonic canon,” and not included in the preceding survey, the Lesser Hippias, First Alcibiades, and Menexenus are the most Platonic, though probably not Plato’s. The Greater Hippias and the Clitophon are also admitted to have some plausibility. The Second Alcibiades (on Prayer), the Hipparchus (touching on Pisistratus and Homer), Adinos (“de lege”), Hpinomis, Hrastx, T’heages, are generally con- demned, though most of them are very early forgeries or Academic exercises.2 And the Asiochus (though some- times prized for its subject, “the contempt of death ”), the De Justo, De Virtute, Demodocus, Sisyphus, Eryxvas (a not-uninteresting treatise on the use of money), together with the so-called Definitions, were rejected in ancient times, and are marked as spurious in the MSS.

Two great forces are persistent in Plato, the love of truth and zeal for human improvement. In the period culminating with the Mepublic, these two motives, the speculative and the practical, are fused in one harmonious working. In the «succeeding period, without excluding one another, they operate with alternate intensity. In the varied outcome of his long literary career, the metaphysical “doctrine of ideas” which has been associated with Plato’s name underwent many important changes. But pervading all of these there is the same constant belief in the supremacy of reason and the identity of truth and good. From that abiding root spring forth a multitude of thoughts concerning the mind and human things, —turning chiefly on the principles of psychology, education, and political reform, —thoughts which, although unverified, and often needing correction from experience, still constitute Plato the most fruitful of philosophical writers. While general ideas are powerful for good or ill, while abstractions are necessary to science, while mankind are apt to crave after perfection, and ideals, either in art or life, have an acknowledged value, so long the renown of Plato will continue. “ All philosophic truth is Plato rightly divined ; all philosophic error is Plato misunderstood ”—is the verdict of one of the keenest of modern metaphysicians.*

Plato’s followers, however, have seldom kept the propor- tions of his teaching. The diverse elements of his doctrine have survived the spirit that informed them. The Pythagorizing mysticism of the Z%meus has been more prized than the subtle and clear thinking of the 7’heetetus. Logical

inquiries have been hardened into a barren ontology. Semi-mythical statements have been construed literally, and mystic fancies perpetuated without the genuine thought which underlay them. A part (and not | the essential part) of his philosophy has been treated as_ the whole. But the influence of Plato has extended far _ beyond the limits of the Platonic schools. The debt of |

1 Comp. Laches. 2 Comp. Protagoras. 3 According to Schaarschmidt, only nine dialogues are genuine, — Protag., Phedr., Symp., Apol., Crito, Phedo, Rep., Tim., Leges.

| the dialogues in the order of composition.

- Ferrier, Zustitutes of Metaphysics, p. 169 (sect. i., prop. vi. § 12).

2X0

Aristotle to his master has never yet been fully estimated. Zeno, Chrysippus, Epicurus borrowed from Plato more than they: knew. The moral ideal of Plutarch and that of the Roman Stoics, which have both so deeply affected the modern world, could not have existed without him. Neopythagoreanism was really a crude Neoplatonism. And the Sceptics availed themselves of weapons either forged by Plato or borrowed by him from the Sophists. A wholly distinct line of infiltration is suggested by the mention of Philo and the Alexandrian schools, and of Clement and Origen, while Gnostic heresies and even Talmudic mysticism betray perversions of the same influence. . The effect of Hellenic thought on Christian theology and on the life of Christendom is a subject for a volume, and has been pointed out in part by Professor E. Zeller and others (comp. NEoPLATONISM). Yet when Plotinus in the 3d century (after hearing Ammonius), amidst the revival of religious paganism, founded a new spiritualistic philosophy upon the study of Plato and Aristotle combined, this return to the fountain-head had all the effect of novelty. And for more than two centuries, from Plotinus to Proclus, the great effort to base life anew on the Platonic wisdom was continued. But it was rather the ghost than the spirit of Plato that was so “unsphered.” Instead of striving to reform the world, the Neoplatonist sought after a retired and cloistered virtue. Instead of vitalizing science with fresh thought, he lost hold of all

reality in the contemplation of infinite unity. He had some skill in dealing with abstractions, but laid a feeble hold upon the actual world.

“Hermes Trismegistus ” and “Dionysius Areopagita ” are names that mark the continuation of this influence into the Middle Ages. The pseudo-Dionysius was translated by Erigena in the 9th century.

Two more “ Platonic” revivals have to be recorded,—- at Florence in the 15th and at Cambridge in the 17th century. Both were enthusiastic and both uncritical. The translation of the dialogues into Latin by Marsiglio Ficino was the most lasting effect of the former movement, which was tinged with the unscientific ardour of the Renaissance. The preference still accorded to the 7imzxus is a fair indication of the tendency to bring fumum ex fulgore which probably marred the discussions of the Florentine Academy concerning the “chief good.” The new humanism had also a sentimental cast, which was alien from Plato. Yet the effect of this spirit on art and literature was very great, and may be clearly traced not only in Italian but in English poetry.

“The Cambridge Platonists” have been described by Principal Tulloch in his important work on Jeational Theo- logy in England in the 17th Century. Their views were mainly due to a reaction from the philosophy of Hobbes, and were at first suggested as much by Plotinus as by Plato. It is curious to find that, just as Socrates and Ammonius (the teacher of Plotinus) left no writings, so Whichcote, the founder of this school, worked chiefly through conversation andpreaching. His pupils exercised a considerable influence for good, especially on English theology ; and in aspiration if not in thought they derived something from Plato, but they seem to have been incapable of separating his mean- ing from that of his interpreters, and Cudworth, their most consistent writer, was at once more systematic and less scientific than the Athenian philosopher. The trans- lations of Sydenham and Taylor in the 18th century and the beginning of the 19th are proofs of the continued influence of Platonism in England.

The critical study of Plato begins from Schleiermacher, who did good work as an interpreter, and tried to arrange His attempt, which, like many efforts of constructive criticism, went far

beyond possibility, was vitiated by the ground-fallacy of | supposing that Plato had from the first a complete system | in his mind which he partially and gradually revealed in | “writing. At a considerably later time Karl Friedrich | Hermann, to whom all students of Plato are indebted, renewed the same endeavour on the far more plausible assumption that the dialogues faithfully reflect the growth of Plato’s mind. But he also was too sanguine, and exaggerated the possibility of tracing a connexion between the outward events of Plato’s life and the progress of lis thoughts. This great question of the order of the dialogues, which has been debated by numberless writers, is one which only admits of an approximate solution. Much confusion, however, has been obviated by the hypothesis (first hinted at by Ueberweg, and since supported by the present writer and others) that the Sophistes and Politicus, whose genuineness had been called in question | by Socher, are really intermediate between the Republic and the Laws. The allocation of these dialogues, and consequently of the Philebus, not only on grounds of inetaphysical criticism, but also on philological and other evidence of a more tangible kind, supplies a point of view from which it becomes possible to trace with confidence the general outlines of Plato’s literary and philosophical development. Reflecting at first in various aspects the impressions received from Socrates, he is gradually touched with an inspiration which becomes his own, and which seeks utterance in half-poetical forms. Then first the ethical and by and by the metaphysical interest becomes predominant, And fora while this last is all absorbing, as he confronts the central problems which his own thoughts have raised. But, again, the hard-won acquisitions of this dialectical movement must be fused anew with imagination and applied to life. And in a final effort to use his intellectual wealth for the subvention of human need the great spirit passed away.

Epitrons.—Aldine (fol., Ven., 1513); H. Stephanus (Lausanne, 1587). Separate | Dialogues. —Timeus (Gr. and Lat., Chaleidius, 1579; repr. by Wrobel, Leips., 1876), German and Dutch,—Tiedemann (Zweibriicken, 1781-87); Bekker (with v. 11, Berlin, 1816-17-23; London, 1826); Stallbaum (crit. ed., Leips., [1821] 1825; text, [1850] 1874; ed. major, Gotha, [1827] 1860; ed. major, partly re-edited by Wohlrab, [1877] 1882);

Baiter-Orelli-Winkelmann (Zurieh, [1839] 1881); Engelmann (with Germ, trans. and comm., [1841] 1877); K. F. Hermann (Leips., 1851-53 and 1868-74); Wohlrab (see Stallbaum, 1877); Martin Schanz (1875-81, not yet completed) ; 1, F. Heindorf (Zys,, Charm., Hipp, Maj., Phiedr., Gorg., Thext., Crat,, Parm., Euthyd., Phed., Prot., Soph., 1802-10); F. Ast (Protag., Phedr., Gorg., Phxd., with eomm., 1819-22), Separate Dialogues,—Sympostum, by F. A. Wolf ([1782] 1828) and Otto Jalin ([1864] 1875); Republic, by Ast (1801) and Selineider ([1830] 1833); Phedo, by Wyttenbach (1810); Legg. et Epinomis, by Ast (Leips., 1814); Parmenides, by Stallbaum (1839); Phi/ebus, by Stallbaum (1840); Critias, by Sehneider (Wratislaw, 1855); 7imezus (Chaleidius, 1569; repr. by Wrobel, Leips. 1876); and Gorg., by Krohn. English.—Timzus (Gr. and Lat., Camb., 1670) : De rebus divinis dialogi delecti(Camb., 1673); Euthyd., Gorg. (eum notis), by Routh (Camb., 1784), Protag., by Wayte ([1854] 1871); Philebus, by Badham (Lond., [1855] 1878) and Poste (1860); Thewt., by L. Campbell (Oxford, [1861] 1882) and Kennedy (Camb., 1881); Phxdo, by Geddes (1863) and Archer Hind (Camb., 1883); Luthyd., Symp., by Badham (1866); Soph., Polit., by L. Campbell (1867); Phedvus, by W. H. Thompson (1868); Apol., by W. Wagner (Camb., 1869), and James

PLATON, Luvsuin (1737-1812), a celebrated Russian | archbishop, was born at the village of Tchashnikovo, near Moscow, in 1737, and was educated in the academy of that city. On completing his studies there in 1758 he was appointed teacher of rhetoric in the school connected with the monastery of St Sergius, and about this time entered the priesthood. In 1763 Catherine invited him to instruct her son Paul in theology, and he became one of the court chaplains. Three years afterwards Platon was appointed | archimandrite of the monastery of the Trinity (Troitzkaia Lavra) near Moscow ; in 1770 he was made archbishop of | Tver, and finally in 1787 archbishop of Moscow and metro- politan. He died in 1812. Platon was a brilliant and

| le Timée (Paris, 1841).

ae man, not only in the opinion of his countrymen, | ut in the estimation of all foreigners who made his | acquaintance. We get a graphic and interesting

picture |

| get bua

Riddell (Oxford, 1877); Gorg., by W. 11. Thompson (1871); and Parm., by Maguire (Dublin, 1882). French. —Hirschig and Schneider (in Didot's Aibliotheca Script Greec., Paris, [1856] 1873). Separate Dialogues.—Apologie de Socrates, by Ii. David (Paris, 1866), Phedo, by Belin (Paris, 1878), Jéalian.—Protag., by G Oliva (Florence, 1877).

TRANSLATIONS.—Latin.—Marsilii Ficini cum. vita Platonis (Veniec, 1517; this

| is the basis of Latin.translations aeeompanying later editions, sueh as that | of Bekker, 1816-23, said to have been revised by F. A. Wolf, and that of

Ilirsehig and Sehneider; Didot, Paris, [1853] 1873). Single Dialogues.—Timexus (Chaleidius, 1579, and Cambridge, 1670); Gorgias and Apologia, by Leonardo 'Ayetino. German.—J. F. Kleuker (6 vols., Lemgo, [1778] 1797); Sehleiermacher (with introductions, Berlin, [1804] 1810); Engelmann (with text and eom- mentary, [1841] 1877); J. F. Drescher, Apol., Crit., Phed., Symp., Govrg., Protag. (Giessen, [1848] 1854); Hieron. Miiller (with introd. by Steinhardt, [1850] 1873); Georg. Susemihl, Jul. Deutschle, W. S. Teuffel, and W. Wicgand (Stutt- gart, [1853] 1876); Prantl and others (Stuttgart, [1854] 1875). English.—Floyer Sydenham ([1759] 1776) ; Thomas Taylor (the eomplete edition, including the nine dialogues translated by Sydenham, Lond., 1804); W. Whewell (Plat. Dial. for Eng. Readers, Camb., 1860, contains portions of original translation); B. Jowett (with introduetions, 4 vols., 1871; 5 vols., Oxford, 1875; see also Critical Works); seleetions from Jowett by C. A.H. Bulkey (The Wisdom of Plato, New York, 1876).

| Separate Dialogues.—Republic, by Spens (Glasgow, 1763), by Davies and Vaughan

({1852] 1866), and by Jowett (publ. separately, 1881); Symposium, Jon, Menexenus, by Shelley ([1822] 1840); Philebus, by Poste (1860) and F. A. Paley (1873); Gorgias,

| by Cope (1864); Sophistes, and Meno to 69, by Mackay (1858); Thewtetus, by F. A.

Paley (1875) ; Phzdo, by Cope (1875); ‘‘Euthyphro,” ‘‘ Apology,” ‘‘ Crito,” and “Phado,” by F. J. Chureh (Zhe Trial and Death of Socrates, London, 1880), French.—André Dacicr, Les Guvres de Platon eu Frangots (2 vols., Paris, 1699), and Works abridged with notes, by M. Dacier (2 vols., 3d ed., London, 1878) ; Vietor Cousin, @uvres traduites avec avgumens et notes (13 vols., [1822] 1840); Thurot, Grow, A. Daeier, Zranslations sous la direction de Emile Satsset (1878), transl. of Crito (see above). Jtalian.—Dardi Bembo, Delle opere di Platone tradotto in lingua vulgare (Veniee, 1601) ; Ruggiero Bonghi (vols. i., ii, Milan, 1858); E. Ferrai (Padua, 1873-74). Separate Dialogues.—Euthyphr., Apol., Crit., Phed., Tim., by Seb. Erizzo (Veniee, 1574), Swedish.—Translation begun (Stockholm, 1870-72).

LEexicons.—Timzus, ed. Ruhnken (Leips., [1754] 1833); Wagner, Worterbuch der Platonischen Philosophie (Gottingen, 1799) ; Ast, Lexicon Platonicum (Leips., [1835] 1838).

SpECIAL STUDIES ON THE LANGUAGE OF PLATO.—Braun, De Hyperbato Platonico (Culm, [1846-47] 1847-52); Engelhardt, De pertodorun. Platonicorun Structura ([1853] 1864); M. Sehanz, “ Bifurcation der hypothetischen periode naeh Platon” in Fleekeisen’s Neue Jahrbucher, Leips., 1870); and Riddell, ‘‘Digest of the

latonic 1dioms,” in his edition of the Apology.

On THE MSS.—Cornarius, Ecloge (ed, Fiseher, Leips., 1771); F. J. Bast, Kritischer Versuch tiber den Text des Platon (Leips., 1794); Gaisford, Lecttones Platonice (Oxford, 1820); Bekker, Commentaria to his ed. (1823); M. Sehanz, Nove Commeutationes Platonice (Wiirzburg, 1871), Studien zur Geschichte des Platonischen Textes (Wiirzburg, 1874), and Ueber den Platonischen Codex des Marcus Bibliothek in Venedig (Leips., 1877), &c.

LITERARY OR PHILOSOPHICAL CRITICISM ON PLATO.—German and Dutch.— Morgenstern, Conimentaria de Republica (1794); Sehleiermacher, Jntroduc- tions to his translation ({1804] 1810; sce also

Dobson); Béckh, Aletine Schriften (vols. iii., iv., from 1806); J. A. Grimm, De Epistolis Platonis ([eomp. Karsten,

| 1864] 1815); F. Ast, Plato's Leben und Schriften (1816); Trendelenburg, De

Numeris (1826); Van Heusde, Jnitia Philosophie Platonice (Utrecht, [1827] 1831; 2d ed., Leyden, 1842); K. F. Hermann, Geschichte u. System der Plat. Philosophie (Heidelberg, 1838), and Disputatio de reipublice Platonic tenporibus (Marburg, 1839); Zeller, Philosophie der Griechen (vol. ii., [1839] 1859), Stein- hardt, Introductions to Hieron. Miiller's translation (1850); Suckow, D-e Wissen- schaftliche u. kiinstlerische Form der Platonischen Schriften (Berlin, 1855); Suse- mihl, Die genetische Entwickelung der Plat, Philosophie (Leips., [1855] 1860); E. Alberti, Zur Dialektik des Paton (1856); E, Munk, Die natirliche Ordnung dev Plat Schriften (Berlin, 1857); Déllinger, in Hetdenthum u, Judenthum (Ratisbon, 1857); Michelis, Die Philosophie Platons (1859), Ueberweg, Platons Schriften u, Leben (Vienna, 1861); Stein, Sieben Biicher zur Geschichte des Platonismus (1862); Ribbing, Genetische Darstellung (Leips., 1863-64); L. Spengel, /socrates u. Platon (1863); Karsten, Conumentatio Critica de Platonis que feruntur Epistolis (Utreeht, 1864); Sehaarschmid', Die Samniung der Plat. Schriften (Bonn, 1866); E. Alberti, Zur Dialektik des Socrates (Gottingen, 1869); W. S. Teuffel, Veber- sicht der Plat. Litteratur (Diss. 7-10 [14], 1874); Bonitz, Platonische Sludien (2a ed., 1875); A. Krohn, Der Platonische Staat (Halle, 1875), and Sendschreiben an Zeller—die Plat. Frag. (1878); Teichmiiller, Literarische Fehder 'Breslau, 1881). Znglish.—W. Dob-on, translation of Sehlciermaehier's Entroductions (1836); Grote (1865; 3d cd., 1875); Jowett, Introductions to translation ([1875] 1881), see also introd. to Select Passages from Plato (Camb., 1882) ; 8S. F. Alleyne," Plato and the Older Academy," in translation of Zeller (vol. ii, Lond., 1876); R. L. Nettleship, "The Theory of Education in the Republic of Plato," in Hellenitca (ed. by Evelyn Abbott, 1880); A. Benn, in his Greek Philosophers (1882). French.—Paul Janet, Etudes sur la Dialectique (Paris, 1860); Martin, ae a (bh oh

of him at the beginning of the present century in the travels of Edward Clarke of Cambridge, who was much struck with his wit and wide range of

reading. As a preacher he enjoyed great celebrity, one of the most remarkable specimens of his eloquence being the sermon preached at the coronation of Alexander I. He was also the author of several works which enjoyed considerable reputation in their time, such as A Short Course of Diwinity, compiled for the use of the emperor Paul when grand-

| duke, several Catechisms, A Short History of the Russian

Church, which has been translated into English, and other works. Platon is altogether a striking and important

| figure in a very eventful period of his country's history.

PLATTNER, Cart Frrepricu (1800-1858), a famous scientific metallurgist, was born in Kleinwaltersdorf, near

Freiberg in Saxony, on the 2d January 1800, and died

in the latter town on the 22d January 1858. Plattner's father, though only a poor working miner, found the means for having his son educated first at the " Berg- schule" and then at the "Bergakademie " of Freiberg. After having completed his curriculum there in 1820, he obtained a position in connexion with the royal mines and metal works, and was employed chiefly as an assayer, in which capacity he soon became conspicuous by his rare exactness and circumspection, and his constant striving after scientific advancement.

The mouth-blowpipe, after doing service for centuries to metal-workers as a soldering tool (hence the German name Lithrohr), in the hands of Gahn and subsequently of Berzelius became the most useful of instruments for the qualitative testing of mineral substances. Through the efforts of the latter, in fact, blowpipe analysis had developed into almost an independent branch of analysis. But nobody dreamt of quantitative mouth-blowpipe assaying until Harkort in 1827 (while a student in the Freiberg academy) succeeded in working out a blowpipe-assay for silver. Harkort stopped there; but the idea of blowpipe-assaying was taken up subsequently by Plattner, who, by

bringing his characteristic thoroughness, indefatigability, and unex- ampled dexterity to bear on the subject, succeeded in working out reliable methods for all the ordinary useful metals. His modes of assaying for cobalt and nickel more especially quickly found favour with metallurgists, because they were more exact than the then known corresponding methods of ‘‘ wet-way” analysis, and required a less number of hours than the latter required of days for their execu- tion. Our analytical methods for the determination of cobalt have since become far more perfect but no less troublesome, and to the present day Plattner’s nickel-assay is the most precise method for the estimation of this metal in complex mixtures.

Plattner, while working at this specialty of his own, at the same time overhauled the entire field of qualitative blowpipe assaying, and ultimately summed up the whole of his vast experience in his Probirkunst mit dem Lithrohr, which soon became, and to the present day ranks as, the standard book on the subject. Since its first publication in 1835 the work has gone through four editions, apart from two independent English translations.

With all his high and recognized distinction in his own specialty, Plattner most keenly felt that his scientific education in Freiberg had been somewhat one-sided ; and in 1839 he left his post and family to work for a year in Heinrich Rose’s laboratory in Berlin, and supplement his knowledge of modern methods of chemical analysis. While there as a student he at the same time acted as a teacher in his branch, and won the lasting friendship of a number of distinguished scientific men. On his return home in 1840 he was raised to the rank of assessor at the Government board of mining and metallurgy, and made chief of the royal department of assaying. In 1842 he was deputed to complete a course of lectures on metallurgy in the Bergakademie which had been commenced by Lampadius ; and he subsequently became Lampadius’s suc- cessor as professor of that branch, and for the then newly instituted course of blowpipe-assaying. In addition to these functions he instituted, in 1851, a special course on the metallurgy of iron. He continued lecturing in the academy as long as he was able,—until the session of 1856-57. It was during this period of professorial activity that he made the extensive studies and experi- mental researches which form the basis of his work Die metallurgischen Réstprocesse theoretisch betrachtet (Freiberg, 1856). His well-known Vorlesungen tiber

allgememe Hiittenkunde (vol. i. and ii., Freiberg, 1860) is a posthumous publication edited by Prof. Thomas Richter.

| In addition to these great works (and the Probirkunst) Plattner published (in Zrdmann's Journal and in Schweig- | ger's Journal and elsewhere) numerous memoirs on metal- lurgical or mineralogical subjects, regarding which we must confine ourselves to saying that they mark him as an investigator of rare diligence and power. How he found time for all his original work is difficult to say ; it certainly did not cause him to neglect his students. He attended to them in the most conscientious and effi- cient manner, as hundreds of his pupils all over the world can testify. His marked success as a teacher was no doubt owing greatly to his high personal qualities,—his cheerful, untiring, unselfish devotion to duty, his kind- liness of heart and manner, his freedom from all cant and morbid ambition. The latter years of his life were embittered by intense suffering. After a long period of lingering illness he succumbed to a disease of the brain.
PLATTSBURGH, a village and township of the United States, the shire-town of Clinton county, New York, and the port of entry of Champlain customs district, Jies on the west side of Lake Champlain at the mouth of the Saranac. By rail it is 168 miles north of Albany and 73 south-south-east of Montreal (Canada). A branch line runs 20 miles south-west to Au Sable and forms a favourite route to the Adirondacks, and the Chateaugay Railroad runs 34 miles west by north to Lyon Mountain, where there are extensive iron mines. Plattsburgh contains county build- ings and court-house, a custom-house, a high school, and a small public library. It has nail and waggon factories, flour-mills, saw-mills, an iron furnace, machine shops, and a large sewing-machine manufactory. It is a garrison town of the United States army, with extensive barracks about a mile south of the village. The value of the imports and exports of the district for the year ending June 30th 1884 was $3,169,780 and $1,319,422 ; and 1279 vessels entered from Canada, while 1179 cleared. The aggregate burthen of the vessels belonging to the district was 57,477 tons. In 1870 the township had 8414 inhabitants, the village 5139; in 1880 the figures were 8283 and 5245. Plattsburgh dates from 1785. It has twice been destroyed by fire (1849 and 1867). In 1812 it became the headquarters of the U.S. army on the northern frontier; and in September 1814 it was rendered famous through the capture of the British flotilla under Commodore Downie by the United States

flotilla under Commodore Macdonough, and the consequent retreat across the Saranac of Sir George Prevost, who had been attacking the village with a powerful

army. Downie and fifteen other officers of the contending forces are buried in Plattsburgh cemetery.

PLATYHELMINTHES. See PLANARIANS and TAPE- WORMS.

PLATYPUS. The Duck-billed Platypus (Platypus anatinus) was the name assigned to one of the most remarkable of known animals by Shaw, who had the good fortune to introduce it to the notice of the scientific world in the Waturalist's Miscellany (vol. x., 1799). In the fol- lowing year it was independently described by Blumenbach (Voigts Magazin, ii. p. 205) under the name of Ornitho- rhynchus paradorus. Shaw's generic name, although having priority to that of Blumenbach, could not be retained, as it had been used at a still earlier time (1793) by Herbst for a genus of Coleoptera. Ornithorhynchus is therefore now universally adopted as the scientific designa- tion, although Duck-billed Platypus may be conveniently retained as a vernacular appellation. By the colonists it is called ""'Water-Mole," but its affinities with the true moles are of the slightest and most superficial description.

The anatomical differences by which the platypus, and its only ally the echidna, are separated from all other mammals, so as to form a distinct subclass with relation- ship to the inferior vertebrated classes, have been described in the article MAMMALIA (vol. xv. pp. 371 and 377), where

also will be found the main distinctive characters of the | two on each side of each jaw,—those in the front narrow,

two existing representatives of the group. It is there stated that the early stages of the development of the young are not yet fully known; in fact this was till very recently one of the most interesting problems in zoology to be

solved. It has been repeatedly affirmed, in some cases by persons who have had actual opportunities of observa- tion, that the platypus lays eggs; but these statements have been generally received with scepticism and even denial. This much-vexed question has, however, been settled by the researches of Mr W. H. Caldwell (1884), who has found that these animals, although undoubtedly mammals throughout the greater part of their structure, are ovipar- ous, laying eggs, which in the manner of their development bear a close resemblance to the development of those of the Lteptilia, Two eggs are produced ata time, each measuring about three-fourths of an inch in its long and half an inch in its short axis, and enclosed in a strong, flexible, white shell.

The platypus is pretty generally distributed in situa- tions suitable to its aquatic habits throughout the island of Tasmania and the southern and eastern portions of Australia, Slight variations in the colouring and size of different individuals have given rise to the idea that more

From Gould’s Mammals of Australia.

than one species may exist ; but all naturalists who have had the opportunity of investigating this question by the aid of a good series of specimens have come to the con- clusion that there is but one; and no traces of any extinct allied forms have yet been discovered.

The length of the animal when full grown is from 18 to 20 inches from the extremity of the beak to the end of the tail, the male being slightly larger than the female. The fur is short, dense, and rather soft to the touch, and composed of an extremely fine and close under-fur, and of longer hairs which project beyond this, each of which is very slender at the base, and expanded, flattened, and glossy towards the free end. The general colour is deep brown, but paler on the under parts. The tail is short, broad, and depressed, and covered with coarse hairs, which in old animals generally become worn off from the under surface. _ The eyes are small and brown. There is no pro- jecting pinna or ear-conch. The mouth, as is well known, bears a striking resemblance to the bill of a duck. It is covered with a naked skin, a strong fold of which projects outwards around its base. The nostrils are situated near the extremity of the upper surface. There are no true teeth, but their purposes are served by horny prominences,

longitudinal, sharp-edged ridges, and those behind broad, flattened, and molariform. The upper surface of the lateral edges of the mandible has also a number of parallel fine transverse ridges, like those on the bill of a duck. In the cheeks are tolerably capacious pouches, which appear to be used as receptacles for food.

The limbs are strong and very short, each with five well- developed toes provided with strong claws. In the fore feet the web not only fills the interspaces between the toes, but extends considerably beyond the ends of the long, broad, and somewhat flattened nails, giving great expanse to the foot when used for swimming, though capable of being folded back on the palm when the animal is burrowing or walking on the land. On the hind foot the nails are long, curved, and pointed, and the web extends only to their base. On the heel of the male is a strong, curved, sharply pointed, movable horny spur, directed upwards and backwards, attached by its expanded base to the accessory bone of the tarsus. This spur, which attains the length of nearly an inch, is traversed by a minute canal, terminating in a fine longitudinal slit near the point, and connected at its base with the duct of a large gland situated at the back part of the thigh. The whole apparatus is so exactly analogous in structure to the poison gland and tooth of a venomous snake as to suggest a similar function, but evidence that the platypus ever employs its spur as an offensive weapon has, at all events until lately, been wanting. A case is, however, related by Mr Spicer in the Proceedings of the Royal Society of Tasmania for 1876 (p. 162) of a captured platypus inflicting a severe wound by a powerful lateral and inward movement of the hind legs, which wound was followed by symptoms of active local poisoning. It is not improbable that both the inclination to use the weapon and the activity of the secretion of the gland may be limited to the breeding season, and that their purpose may be, like that of the antlers of deer and many similar organs, for combat among the males. In the young of both sexes the spur is present in a rudimentary condition, but it disappears in the adult females.

The platypus is aquatic in its habits, passing most of its time in the water or close to the margin of lakes and streams, swimming and diving with the

greatest ease, and forming for the purpose of sleeping and breeding deep burrows in the banks, which generally have two orifices, one just above the water level, concealed among long grasses and leaves, and the other below the surface. The passage at first rans obliquely upwards in the bank, sometimes to a distance of as much as 50 feet, and expands at its termination into a cavity, the floor of which is lined with dried grass and leaves, and in which the eggs are laid and the young brought up. Their food consists of aquatic insects, small crustaceans, and worms, which are caught under water, the sand and small stones at the bottom being turned over with their bills to find them. They appear at first to deposit what they have thus collected in their cheek pouches, and when these are filled they rise to the surface and quietly triturate their meal with the horny teeth before swallowing it. Swimming is effected chiefly by the action of the broad forepaws, the hind feet and tail taking little share in locomotion in the water. When asleep they roll themselves into a ball, as shown in the figure. In their native haunts they are extremely timid and wary, and very difficult to approach, being rarely seen out of their burrows in the daytime. Mr A. B. Crowther, who has supplemented the often quoted observations of Dr George Bennett upon the habits of these animals in confinement, says, ‘‘ They soon become very tame in captivity ; ina few days the young

ones appeared to recognize a call, swimming rapidly to the hand paddling the water ; and it is curious to see their attempts to procure a worm enclosed in the hand, which they greedily take when offered to them. I have noticed that they appear to be able to smell whether or not a worm is contained in the closed hand to which they swim, for they desisted from their efforts if an empty fist was offered.” When irritated they utter a soft low growl, resembling that of a puppy. (w. H. F.) PLAUEN, a busy manufacturing town of Saxony, in the

‘government district of Zwickau, is situated on the Elster,

60 miles to the south of Leipsic. It was formerly the

capital of the Voigtland, a territory governed directly by

the imperial voigts or bailiffs, and this name still clings in popular speech to the hilly manufacturing district in which it lies. The most prominent buildings are the fine Gothic church of St John, the town-house (about 1550), the new post-office, and the loftily-situated old castle of Hradschin, now occupied by a law court. Plauen is now the chief place in Germany for the manufacture of em- broidered white goods of all kinds, and for the finishing of woven cotton fabrics. Dyeing, tanning, bleaching, and the making of paper and machinery are also prosecuted ; and an active trade is carried on in these various industrial products. In 1880 the town contained 35,078 inhabitants and in 1884 above 40,000, almost all Protestants.

As indicated by the name of the castle, Plauen was probably founded by the Slavs, after whose expulsion it was governed directly by the imperial bailiffs. In 1327 it became a Bohemian fief, but passed into the possession of Saxony in 1466 and remained per-

manently united to it from 1569 onwards. The manufacture of white goods was introduced by Swabian or Swiss immigrants about

1570, and since then the prosperity of the town has been great,

in spite of the storms of the Thirty Years' and Seven Years' Wars. The advance of Plauen has been especially rapid since its incor- poration in the Zollverein.

PLAUTUS, T. Maccrus, was the greatest comic and dramatic genius of Rome, and still ranks among the great comic dramatists of the world. While the other creators of Roman literature, Nevius, Ennius, Lucilius, &c., are known to us only in fragments, we still possess twenty plays of Plautus. A few of them are incomplete, and in some cases they show traces of later interpolations, but they have reached us in the main as they were written by him in the end of the 3d and the beginning of the 2d cen- tury B.c. Atthe date of his birth Roman literature may be said to have been non-existent. When he died the Latin language had developed its full capacities as an organ of social intercourse and familiar speech, and the litera- ture of the world had been enriched by a large number of adaptations from the New

Comedy of Athens, animated by the new life of ancient Italy and vivified by the genius and robust human nature of their author; and these have been the chief means of transmitting the traditions of the ancient drama to modern times. The maturity which comedy attained in a single generation affords a remarkable contrast to the slow processes by which the higher forms of Roman poetical and prose literature were brought to perfection. It may be explained partly by the existence, for some generations before the formal begin- ning of literature at Rome, of the dramatic and musical medleys (“‘saturee impletee modis”) which in their allu- Sions to current events and their spirit of banter must have had a considerable affinity with the dialogue of Plautus, and partly to the diffusion of the Latin language, as the organ of practical business among the urban com- munities of Italy. But much also was due to the indivi- dual genius and the command over their native idiom possessed by the two oldest of the genuine creators of Roman literature, Nevius and Plautus.

A question might be raised as to whether Plautus or

his younger contemporary Ennius was the most character- istic representative of the national literature of their time. Ennius certainly exercised a much more important influ- ence on its subsequent development. He arrested the tendency imparted to that development by Nevius and Plautus. He made literature the organ of the serious spirit and imperial ambition of the Roman aristocracy, while the genius of Plautus appealed to the taste and temperament of the mass of the people, at a time when they were animated by the spirit of enjoyment and com- paratively indifferent to political questions. The ascend- ency of the aristocracy in public affairs for two generations after the end of the Second Punic War determined the ascendency of Ennius in Roman literature ; and it may be admitted that, if the genius of Plautus and of Ennius could not work harmoniously together, it was best that that of the younger poet, as representative of the truer genius of Rome, should prevail. The popularity of Plautus was greatest in his own time and in the generation succeeding him, but his plays still continued to be acted with applause till the age of Cicero, and he was greatly admired both by Cicero and by the man among

his contemporaries who, both from his learning and taste, retained most of the antique spirit, Varro. The literary taste of the Augustan age and of the first century of the empire was adverse to him ; but the archaic revival in the latter part of the 2d century of our era brought him again into favour, with the result of securing the preservation of his works through medieval times and their revival with great acceptance at the Renaissance. That his original popularity was due to genuine gifts of humour and genuine power in represent- ing human life is clear from their reception by a world so much altered from that in which he himself had played his part. And if his influence was not felt like that of Ennius in determining the form and spirit of the litera- ture of his country, it was not without effect on the two greatest dramatists of modern times, Shakespeare and Moliére.

The few facts known of his life rest on the authority of Cicero, of Aulus Gellius, and of Jerome in his continuation of the Eusebian Chronicle. He was born in the earlier half of the 3d century B.c., and died at an advanced age in the year 184 B.c. Hewas a native of Sarsina in Umbria. His first employment was in some way connected with the stage “in operis artificum scenicorum.” He saved money in this employment, engaged in foreign trade, and return- ing to Rome in absolute poverty was reduced to work as a hired servant in a null; and then for the first time he began to write comedies. The earliest allusion to any contemporary event which we find in any of his plays is that in the Miles Gloriosus (1. 212-3) to the imprisonment of Neevius, which happened about the year 207 B.c. The Cistellaria and Stichus were apparently written immedi- ately after the end of the Second Punic War. The last ten years of his life were the most productive, and the greater number of his extant comedies belong to that period. They do not seem to have been published as literary works during his lifetime, but to have been left in possession of the players, to whom the interpolations and some other unimportant changes are to be ascribed. The prologues to the plays, with three or four exceptions, belong to the generation after his death. In a later age the plays of many contemporary playwrights were attri- buted to him. Twenty-one were accepted by Varro as undoubtedly genuine, and of these we possess twenty nearly complete, and fragments of another, the Vidularia. Other nineteen Varro regarded as probably genuine, and the titles of some of them, ¢.g., Saturio, Addictus, Com- morventes, are also known to us.

We get the impression from his works and from ancient

criticisms on them that he was, in his latter years, a rapid and productive writer, niore concerned with the immediate success of his works than with their literary perfection.1 Yet he shows that he took pride and pleasure in his art (Bacch., 214), and Cicero testifies especially to the gratification which he derived from two works of his old age, the Psewdolus and T'ruculentus (De Senec., 14). We get further the impression of a man of strong animal spirits and of large intercourse with the world, especially with the trading and middle classes. We find no indication of familiarity with the manners, tastes, or ideas of the governing aristocracy. The story told of his unsuccessful mercantile speculations might seem to derive confirmation from the "flavour of the sea" and the spirit of adventure present in many of his plays, from his frequent colloquial use of Greek phrases, and from indications of familiarity with the sights, manners, and pleasures of the Greek cities on the Mediterranean. He has many allusions to works of art, to the stories of Greek mythology, and to the sub- jects of Greek tragedies ; and he tried to enrich the native vocabulary with a considerable number of Greek words which did not maintain their place in the language. The knowledge of these subjects which he betrays, and his copious use of Greek words and phrases, seem to be the result rather of active and varied intercourse with contem- porary Greeks than of the study of books.

Like all the old Roman dramatists, he borrows his plots, incidents, scenes, characters, and probably the outlines of his dialogue from the authors of the new comedy of Athens,—Diphilus, Philemon, Menander, and others. But he treated his borrowed materials with much more freedom and originality than the only other dramatist of whom we possess complete pieces—Terence. A note of this dif- ference appears in the fact that the titles of all the plays of Terence are Greek, while those of Plautus are nearly all Latin. We find a much greater range and variety in the scenes and incidents introduced by Plautus, and inuch greater divergence from a conventional type in his characters. But it is especially on his dialogue and his metrical soliloquies that his originality is stamped. Though all the personages of his plays are supposed to be Greeks, living in Greek towns, they constantly

speak as if they were Romans living in the heart of Rome. Frequent mention is made of towns in Italy, of streets, gates, and markets in Rome itself, of Roman magistrates and of their duties, of the business of the law-courts, the comitia, and the senate, &. We constantly meet with Roman formule, expressions of courtesy, proverbs, and the like. While avoiding all direct reference to politics, he fre- quently alludes to recent events in Roman history, and to laws of recent enactment. Although he maintains and seems to inculcate an attitude of political indifference, he is not altogether indifferent to social conditions, and in more than one of his plays comments on the growing estrangement between the rich and poor, as an element of danger to the state. Still he writes neither as a political nor as a social satirist, but simply with the wish to represent the humours of human life and to amuse the people in their holiday mood.

His independence of his originals, in regard to expres- sion, is further shown by the puns and plays on words, the alliterations, assonances, &c., which do not admit of being reproduced in translation from one language to another; in the metaphors taken from Roman military operations, business transactions, and the trade of various artisans ; and in his profuse use of terms of endearment and vituperation, characteristic of the vivacity of the Italian temperament in modern as in ancient times. But in nothing is his difference from Terence, and presum-

1 “Securus cadat an recto stet fabula talo.”—Hor. Lipeiionloe li6s

P4a> A UW was

ably from the originals which they both followed, more decided than in his large use of lyrical monologue, or “cantica,” alternating with the ordinary dialogue in much the same way as the choral odes do in the old Greek comedy. These one may conjecture to have been a partial survival of passages in the old dramatic satwrx, which were repeated to a musical accompaniment. In the naiveté of the reflexions which they contain, and the pro- lixity with which the thought is worked out, we recognize the earliest effort of the Roman mind applied to reflexion on life, and no reproduction of any phase of the Greek mind to which the expression of such reflexion had been familiar for generations.

In the diction of Plautus accordingly we may consider that we have a thorough reflexton of his own mind, and an important witness of Roman life and thought in his time. The characters in his plays are the stock characters of the New Comedy of Athens, the “ fallax servus,” the “Jeno insidiosus,” the “ meretrix blanda,” the “ parasitus edax,” the “amans ephebus,” the “pater attentus,” &. We may miss the finer insight into human nature and the delicate touch in drawing character which Terence pre- sents to us in his copies from Menander, but there is wonderful life and vigour, and considerable variety in the embodiment of these different types by Plautus. The characters of Ballio and Pseudolus, of Euclio in the Aulularia, of the two Menechmi, and of many others have a real individuality, which shows that in reproducing Greek originals Plautus thoroughly realized them and animated them with the strong human nature of which he himself possessed so large a share. For his plots and incidents he has been much more indebted to his originals. There is a considerable sameness in many of them. A large number turn upon what are called “ frustrationes ” —tricks by which the slave who plays the principal part in the comedy succeeds in extracting either from the father of his young master or from some other victim a sum of money to aid his master in his love affairs. But Plautus, if not more original, is more varied than Terence in his choice of plots. In some of them the passion of’ love plays either no part or a subordinate one. He also varies his scenes much more than Terence. Thus in some of his plays we find ourselves at Epidamnus, at Ephesus, at Cyrene, and not always in Athens.

The following is a list of the comedies according to their usual arrangement, which is nearly, but not strictly alphabetical :— Amphitruo, Asinaria, Aulularia, Captivi, Curculio, Casina, Cistellaria, Epidicus, Bacchides, Mostellaria, Menechmi, Miles Gloriosus, Mercator, Pseudolus, Penulus, Persa, Rudens, Stichus, Trinummus, Truculentus. Of these the most generally read, and on the whole the most interesting, are the Aulularia, Captivi, Menzchmi, Miles Gloriosus, Mostellaria, Pseudolus, Rudens, and Trinummus. Besides these the Amphitruo, Bacchides, and Stichus (although the last two are incomplete) are of special interest. The Amphitruo is altogether exceptional, aud gives, perhaps, as high an idea both of the comic and of the imaginative power of the author as any of the others. The interest attaching to it is enhauced by the fact that it has been imitated both by

Moliére and Dryden, that attaching to the Aulularia by its having suggested the subject of L' Avare of the French dramatist, and to the Menewchmi by the reappearance of its principal motive in the Comedy of Errors of Shakespeare. The Captivi was characterized by Lessing as the best constructed drama in existence. It may be classed with the Rudens as appealing to a higher and purer class of feelings, and as coming nearer to the province of serious poetry, than any other extant specimens of Latin comedy. The Aulularia and Trinum- mus may be mentioned along with these as bringing us into contact with characters more estimable and attractive than those in the great majority of the other pieces.

While there are abundant good sense and good humour in the comedies of Plautus, and occasional touches of pathos and elevated feeling in one or two of them, there is no trace of any serious purpose behind his humorous scenes and represcntations of character, He presents a remarkable exception to the didactic and moralizing spirit which appears in most of the leading repre- sentatives of Roman literature. He is to be judged on the claim

which is put forward in the epitaph which in ancient times was attributed to himself :— " Postquam est mortem aptus Plautus, comeedia luget, Sczena est deserta, dein risus, ludu' jocusque, Et numeri innumeri simul omnes conlacrumarunt." 1 He has not the more subtle and penetrating irony which we recognize in Terence, in Horace, and in Petronius; still less can we attribute to him the " rigidi ccnsura cachinni" which accompanied and inspired the humorous fancies of Lucilius and Juvenal. But among all the ancient humorists, with the exception of Aristo- phanes, he must have had the power of immediately provoking the heartiest and broadest mirth and laughter. He was too careless in the construction of his plots to be a finished dramatic artist. He was apparently more popular among the mass of his countrymen

|

than any Roman author of any age; but to be thoroughly popular | | establishment of a European peace, he made a journey

he had to satisfy the tastes of an audience accustomed to the indigenous farces of Italy. This is the defect, according to the judgment of cducated eritics in the Augustau age, which Horace indicates in the line “ Quantus sit Dossennus edacibus in parasitis.” But he had the most wonderful power of drainatic expression of feeling, fancy, and ‘eharactcr by means of action, rhythm, and language. In the line in which Horace expresses the more favour- able eriticism of his time,— “Plautus ad exemplar Siculi properare Epicharmi,””—

the term properare expresses the vivacity of gesture, dialogue, declamation, and recitative in which the plays of Plautus never fail, and which must have made them admirable velhieles for the art of the actor. The lyrical recitative occupies a much larger place in his comedies than in those of Terence, and in them he

shows the true poetical gift of adapting and varying his metres in |

accordance with the moods and fancies of his characters. But the gift for which he is pre-eminent above almost every other Roman author is the vigour and exuberant flow of his language. No other writer enables us to feel the life and force of the Latin idiom, un- disguised by the mannerisms of a literary style, in the same degree. Among the masters of expression in which the prose and poetical literature of Rome abounds, none was more prodigally gifted than Plautus, and this gift of expression was the accompaniment of the exuberant creativeness of his fancy and of the strong vitality and lively social nature which was the endowment of the race to which he belonged.

In the beginning of the 15th century only the first eight plays(from Amphitruo |

to Epidicus) were in circulation, The other twelve were recovered in the course of that century, and two new manuscripts, one of them containing the whole twenty, were discovered in the following century. The Ambrosian palimpscst,

discovered in 1815, has been recognized as the most trustworthy text for those |

plays which it preserves, and it is on this that the critical labours of Ritschl have been based. His great critical edition is being continued by his pupils G. Loewe, G, Gotz, Fr. Schoell, An edition of the plays with a commentary by Professor Ussing of Copenhagen is now nearly complete. The most useful editions of separate plays are those of Lorenz and Brix. @Yo eis”)

PLAYFAIR, Jonn (1748-1819), mathematician and | physicist, was born at Benvie, Forfarshire, where his father |

was parish minister, on March 10, 1748. He was entered the university of St Andrews. Ability for scien- tific studies must have appeared very early with him, for while yet a student he was selected to teach natural philosophy during the occasional absence of the professor.

In 1766, when only eighteen, he was candidate for the

chair of mathematics in Marischal College, Aberdeen, and, |

although he was unsuccessful, his claims were admitted to be high. Six years later he made application for the chair of natural philosophy in his own university, but again without success, and in 1773 he was offered and accepted the living of the united parishes of Liff and Benvie, vacant by the death of his father. He continued, however, to carry on his mathematical and physical studies, and in 1782 he resigned his charge in order to become the tutor of Ferguson of Raith. By this arrangement he was able to be frequently in Edinburgh, and to cultivate the literary and scientific society for which it was at that time specially distinguished; and through Maskelyne, whose acquaintance he had first made in the course of the cele- brated Schiehallion experiments in 1774, he also gained access to the scientific circles of London. In 1785 when Dugald Stewart succeeded Ferguson in the Edinburgh chair

1 “ After Plautus died, comedy mourns, the stage is deserted, then

laughter, mirth, and jest, and his numberless numbers all wept in concert,

_____

of moral philosophy, Playfair succeeded the former in that of mathematics. In 1802 he published a volume entitled filustrations of the Huttonian Theory of the Earth, and in 1805 he exchanged the chair of mathematics for that of natural philosophy in succession to Robison, whom also he succeeded as general secretary to the Royal Society of Edinburgh. He took a prominent part, on the liberal side, in the ecclesiastical controversy which arose in con- nexion with Leslie's appointment to the post he had vacated, and published a satirical Letter (1806) which was greatly adinired by his friends. His election as a fellow of the Royal Society took place in 1807. In 1815, after the

through France and Switzerland to Italy, and remained abroad for nearly eighteen months, interesting himself chiefly in the geology and mineralogy of the districts he visited. After a few years of gradually failing health he

| died on July 19, 1819.

A collected edition of Playfair's works, with a memoir by James G. Playfair, appeared at Edinburgh in 4 vols. 8vo. His writings include a number of essays contributed to the Edinburgh Review from 1804 onwards, various papers in the Phil. Trans. (including his earliest publication ‘‘ On the Arithmetic of linpossible Quantities,”

| 1779, and an ‘‘ Account of the Lithological Survey of Schehallion ”

1811) and in the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh (‘On the Causes which affect the Accuracy of Barometrical Measurement,” &c.), also the articles ‘‘ Mpinus” and ‘‘ Physical Astronomy,” and a ‘‘ Dissertation on the Progress of Mathematical and Physical Science since the Revival of Learning in Europe,” in the Encyclopedia Britannica (Supplement to fourth, fifth, and sixth editions). His Elements of Geometry first appeared in 1795 and have passed through many editions; his Outlines of Natural Philosophy (2 vols., 1812-16) consist of the propositions and formule which were the basis of his class lectures. Playfair's con- tributions to pure mathematics were not considerable, his paper ‘*On the Arithmetic of Impossible Quantities,” that ‘‘ On the Causes which affect the Accuracy

of Barometrical Mcasurements," and his Elements of Geometry, all already referred to, being the most im- portant. As a mathematician simply he was far inferior to the first two Gregorys, to Colin Maclaurin, and even to Matthew Stewart. He was, however, a man of great general ability and was conspicuous for a calm intellect. His scientific style was a model of clearness, and his Illustrations of the Huttonian Theory of the Earth attained great popularity through its litcrary merits. His lives of Matthew Stewart, Hutton, Robison, many of his reviews, and above all his ''Dissertation" are of the utmost value. The English mathematicians of his day professed unlinited admiration of Newton, but few of them were found able to wield his weapons, and the majority had come simply to rest under the shadow of

i | that t man; to Playfair belongs the ercdit of having been one educated at home until the age of fourteen, when he woe y g g

of the first to diffuse among his conntrymen a knowledge of the substantial progress which the infinitesimal caleulus had been making in the hands of the Continental analysts.

PLEADING, in law, denotes in civil procedure the statement in legal form of the grounds on which a party to an action claims the decision of the court in his favour, in criminal procedure the accusation of the prosecutor or the answer of the accused. The term " pleadings" is used for the collected whole of the statements of both parties, the term " pleading" for each separate part of the plead- ings. A pleading may be the statement of either party; a "plea" is (except in Scots and ecclesiastical law) confined to the defence made by an accused person. To "plead" is to frame a pleading or plea.

All systems of law agree in making it necessary to bring the grounds of a claim or defence before the court ina more or less technical form. In Roman law the action passed through three stages (see Acrion), and the manner of pleading changed with the action. In the earliest historical period, that of the legis actiones, the pleadings were verbal, and made in court by the parties themselves, the proceedings imitating as far as possible the natural conduct of persons who had been disputing, but who suffered their quarrel to be appeased (Maine, Ancient Law, ch. x.). Though pleadings were probably not couched in technical language originally, this soon became a necessity,

and was regarded as so important that, as Gaius tells us, the party who made even the most trifling mistake would lose his suit. This excessive reverence for formality is a universal characteristic of archaic law. Its probable explanation is to be found in the weakness of the execu- tive. In the second period, that of the procedure by formule, the issue which the judex decided was made up by the pretor in writing from the statements of the partics before him. ‘The formula was a short summary of the facts in dispute in technical language, with instructions to the judex. The part of the formula which contained the plaintiff’s claim was called the imtentio. Any equitable defence in the formula was set up by means of an exceptio, which was either peremptory, denying the right of the plaintiff to recover at all, or dilatory, denying only that the action could be brought at the time or by the parti- cular plaintiff. The plaintiff might meet the exceptco with a replicatio, the defendant on his side might set up a duplicatio, and the plaintiff might traverse the duplicatio by a triplicatio. The parties might proceed even further, but beyond this point the pleadings had no special names. Actions bone jfidei implied every exceptio that could be set up; in other actions the exceptio must be specially pleaded. From the formula the judex derived his whole authority, and he was liable to an action for exceeding it. He could not amend the formula; that could only be done by the pretor. In the third period the formula did not exist, the plaintiff’s claim appeared in the summons (libellus conventionis), and the defendant might take any defence that he pleased, all actions being placed on the footing of actions bone fidei. The issue to be tried was determined by the judge from the oral statements of the parties. In criminal procedure the indictment (inscriptio or libellus accusationis) was usually in writing, and con- tained a formal statement of the offence. In some cases oral accusations were allowed. The pleading of the accused seems to have been informal.

The development of the system of pleading in Roman and English law proceeded upon very similar lines. It is possible that the English system was directly based upon the Roman. Bracton (temp. Henry III.) uses many of the Roman technical terms. Pleading was oral as late as the reign of Henry VIII,

but in the reign of Edward III. pleadings began to be drawn up in writing, perhaps at first more for the purpose of entry on the court records than of the instruction of the court (see 2 Reeves, History of Linglish Law, 398). The French language was used up to 36 Edw. IIT. st. 1, ¢ 15, after which English was used for oral pleading, but Latin for enrolinent. Latin was the language of written pleadings at common law until 4 Geo. II. c. 26.1 Such terms as declaration, answer, replication are survivals of the oral period. It is no doubt from the circumstance of pleading having been originally oral that the word in the popular though not in the legal sense is used for the oral conduct of the case by an advocate? The period of the Roman formula has its analogue in the period of the original writ in England.? The writ was at first a formal commission from the crown to a judicial officer to do justice between the parties, the claim being made by means of a count. The issue of the writ was part of the prerogative of the crown, unlimited until the Provisions of Oxford (1258) forbade the issue of fresh writs (except writs de cursu) without the consent of

; * In Chancery the “English Bill,” so called from its being in the English language, had existed long before this time,—-according to Mr Spence, as early as the reign of Henry V. (Lquitable Jurisdiction, vol. i. p. 348).

; In France plaider and plaidoyer still bear this meaning.

: The original writ was so called to distinguish it from the judicial writ, which was a part of the process of the court. The judicial writs still exist, ¢.9., writs of certiorari or Jeri facias,

the council. Gradually the writ came to absorb the count and included the plaintifi’s claim and sometimes the nature of hisevidence. The defendant pleaded to the writ. The writ became the universal form of instituting proceedings in the king’s court, irrespective of the method of trial which followed, and probably grew fixed in form about the reign of Henry II. (see Bigelow, History of Procedure, ch. iv.). Ata later date the writ again tended to approach its earlier form and to split into two parts, the writ of summons and the declaration or plaintiff’s claim. The writ of summons was addressed to the defendant, and not, as the original writ, to a judicial officer. The

pleadings became the act of the party, differing in this from Roman law, in which they were a judicial act. The writs became precedents for the forms of action, which, like the writs, were limited in number. stantial repetition of the writ. Modern legislation, in the case of the specially indorsed writ of summons (see below), practically returns to this ancient stage of law. In the writ, as in the formula, the slightest failure in form was as arule fatal. “The assigning of a writ of a particular frame and scope to each particular cause of action, the appropriating process of one kind to one action and of a different kind to another, these and the like distinctions rendered proceedings very nice and complex, and made the conduct of an action a matter of considerable difficulty” (1 Reeves, Hist. of English Law, 147). Fines were levied for mistakes in pleading, non-liability to which was some- times granted by charter as a special privilege to favoured towns. In both Roman and English law fictions, equity, and legislation came to mitigate the rigour of the law. In England this result was largely attained by the framing of the action of trespass on the case under the powers of the Statute of Westminster the Second (13 Edw. I. stat. 1, c. 24), and by the extension of the action of assumpsit to non-feasance. To a less extent the same difficulties were found in the period of special pleading + which followed the writ period, owing to the particularity with which the claim had to be set out and the narrow powers of amendment possessed by the courts. practical questions at issue were thrown into the shade by questions of the proper way of stating them. Substantive law could only be arrived at through the medium of adjec- tive law. Special pleading became an art of the utmost niccty, depending on numerous rules, some of them highly technical (see Coke upon Littleton, 303). Those who made it their business to frame pleadings were called special pleaders. They were not necessarily members of the bar, but might be licensed to practise under the bar. Pleaders under the bar still exist, but recent legislation has much diminished their numbers and importance. Changes were gradually introduced by a long series of statutes of which the most important have been the Statutes of Jeofails, beginning as early as 14 Edw. IIL, c. 6, the Statutes of Set-off, the Common Law Procedure Acts, and the Judica- ture Acts. The advance has always been, as in Roman law, in the direction of less formality. Up to 1875 the system of pleading varied in the different courts which now compose the High Court of Justice. In the Common Law Courts the action was commenced by a declaration (containing either special or common counts,

or both com- bined), to which the defendant put in a plea or pleas. The plea was either of the general issue, 7.¢., a bare denial (as “Never Indebted” to an action of debt), or special, setting out the facts with greater particularity. Pleas were also peremptory or dilatory, names taken from the Roman law.

4 The ingenuity of the pleader chiefly showing itself in framing special as opposed to general pleas, the term special pleading grew to be used for the whole proceedings of which it was the most important

| part.

The plaintiffs claim was a sub—

Thee –

i

Pit owe b FN GC

By the Common Law Procedure Act, 1854, equitable pleas might be pleaded. To the defendant’s plea the plaintiff pleaded a replication ; the defendant might follow with a rejoinder, the plaintiff with a surrejomder, the defendant with a rebutter, the plaintiff with a surrebutter. Beyond that point, which was scldom reached, the pleadings had no special names. The pleadings concluded with a joinder of issue. A copy of the pleadings constituted the record. Since the Judicature Acts there has been no record, properly so called, in civil cases, though it has not been expressly abolished. Its place is supplied by copies of the pleadings delivered for the use of the judge and of the officer enter- ing the judgment under the Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883 (Ord. xxxvi. r. 30; Ord. xli. r. 1). Either party might demur at any stage of the pleadings (see DemuR- RER). In certain cases the replication of the plaintiff pro- ceeded by way of new assignment; e.g., in an action of trespass to which justification was pleaded, the plaintiff might complain of acts in excess of those covered by the justification. the defendant pleaded to the new assignment. In the Court of Chancery the plaintiff’s claim was contained in a bill (in certain matters of a public nature an information), to which the defendant filed an answer on oath or a

demurrer or, more rarely, pleas, and the plaintiff a replica- tion. Beyond the replication equity pleadings did not

extend, the place of further pleadings being supplied by | Exceptions (note again a Roman law term) |

amendment. inight be taken to the bill or answer on various grounds. Equity pleadings, unlike common law pleadings, were signed by counsel.1 In the High Court of Admiralty the pleadings were called petition, answer, reply, and conclusion. In the Court of Probate they were called declaration, plea, and replication, but the procedure was not the same as that in use in the Common Law Courts. In all the courts a special case without pleadings could by leave of the court be stated for the opinion of the court.

The Judicature Act, 1873, introduced a uniform system of pleading in the High Court of Justice. The practice is now regulated by the Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883. By Ord. xix. r. 4, “every pleading shall contain, and con- tain only, a statement in a summary form of the material facts on which the party pleading relies for his claim or defence, as the case may be, but not the evidence by which they are to be proved, and shall, when necessary, be divided into paragraphs, numbered consecutively. Dates, sums, and numbers shall be expressed in figures and not in words. Signature of counsel shall not be necessary ; but where pleadings have been settled by counsel or a special pleader they shall be signed by him, and if not so settled they shall be signed by the solicitor or by the party if he sues or defends in person.” The term “ pleading” in the Judicature Acts includes a petition or summons, 36 & 37 Vict. c. 66, § 100. From 1875 to 1883 the plaintiff had in almost every case to deliver a statement of claim. But now no statement of claim is delivered where the action iscommenced by a specially indorsed writ, or where the writ is not specially indorsed unless the defendant gives notice in writing that he requires a statement of claim to be delivered.2 The defendant presents his case in a statement of defence, and may also set of or set up by way of cownter-claim any right or claim against the plaintiff whether sounding in damages or not. A counter-claim

1 For the pleading before 1875 see Stephen on Pleading for the Common Law Courts, Story on Equity Pleading for the Court of Chancery, and the articles BILL and DECLARATION.

; 2 A specially indorsed writ may be used in an action for a debt or liquidated demand, The advantage of using it is that the defendant

must obtain leave to defend the action by showing to the satisfaction of a judge that he has reasonable grounds of defence.

In this case he was said to new assign, and |

219

may be made against the plaintiff and a third party. To

,a statement of defence or counter-claim the plaintiff or

third party delivers a reply. No pleading other than a joinder of issue can be pleaded after reply except by leave of the court or a judge. Both the parties and the court or a Judge have large powers of amending the pleadings. Issues are in certain cases settled by the court or a judge. Demurrers are abolished, and a party is now entitled to raise by his pleading any point of law. Forms of plead- ings are given in Appendices C, D, and E to the Rules of 1883. In actions for damages by collision between ships, a document called a preliminary act (before the Judica- ture Act peculiar to the Court of Admiralty) must be filed, containing details as to the time and place of collision, the speed, tide, lights, &c. The case may be tried on the preliminary act without pleadings. In all actions such ground of defence or reply as if not raised would be likely to take the opposite party by surprise, or would raise issues of fact not arising out of the preceding pleadings, must be specially pleaded. Such are compulsory pilotage, fraud, the Statute of Limitations, the Statute of Frauds. The pleadings in replevin and petition of right are governed by special rules. To courts other than the High Court of Justice the Judicature Acts do not apply. In some courts, however, such as the Chancery of the County Pala- tine of Lancaster and the Court of Passage of the City of Liverpool, the rules of pleading used in the High Court have been adopted with the necessary modifications. In the Mayor’s Court of London the common law pleading, as it existed before the Judicature Acts, is still in use. In the ecclesiastical courts the statements of the parties are ealled generally pleas. The statement of the plaintiff in civil suits is called a libel, of the promoter in criminal suits articles. Every subsequent plea is

called an allega- tion. To the responsive allegation of the defendant the promoter may plead a counter-allegation. The cause is concluded when the parties renounce any further allega- tion. In the Divorce Court the pleadings are named petition, answer, replication. In that court and in the ecclesiastical courts there exists in addition a more short and summary mode of pleading called an act on petition. In the county courts proceedings are commenced by a plaint, followed by an ordinary or default summons. No further pleadings are necessary, but the defendant cannot set up certain special defences, such as set-off or infancy, without the consent of the plaintiff, unless after notice in writing of his intention to set up the special defence.

The pleading in English criminal law has been less affected by legislation than the pleading in actions. The pleading is more formal, and oral pleading is still retained. Cases in which the crown was a party early became known as pleas of the crown (placita coronx), as distinguished from common pleas (communia placita), or pleas betwecn subject and subject, that is to say, ordinary civil actions. Pleas of the crown originally included all matters in which the crown was concerned, such as exchequer cases, franchises, and liberties, but gradually became confined to criminal matters, strictly to the greater crimes triable only in the king's courts. In criminal pleading the crown states the case in an indictment or mformation. The answer of the accused is a plea, which must in almost all cases be pleaded by the accused in person. The plea, according to Blackstone, is either to the jurisdiction, a demurrer, in abatement, special in bar, or the general issue. The latter is the only plea that often occurs in practice ; it consists in the oral answer of "Guilty" or "Not Guilty" to the charge. A demurrer is strictly not a plea at all, but an objection on legal grounds. Pleas to the jurisdiction or in abatement do not go to the merits of the case, but allege that the court has no jurisdiction to

try the particular offence, or that there is a misnomer or some other technical ground for stay of proceedings. The power of amendment and the procedure by motion in arrest of judgment have rendered these pleas of little practical importance. The special pleas in bar are autre- fois convict or

autrefors acquit (alleging a previous convic- tion or acquittal for the same crime), autrefors attaint (practically obsolete since the Felony Act, 1870, has abolished attainder for treason or felony), and pardon (see Parpon). There are also special pleas in indictments for libel under the provisions of Lord Campbell's Act, 6 & 7 Vict. c. 96 (see LiBEL), and to indictments for non-repair

of highways and bridges, where the accused may plead |

that the liability to repair falls upon another person. These special pleas are usually, and in some cases must be, in writing. Where there is a special plea in writing, the crown puts in a replication in writing. (For the history of criminal pleading see Stephen, History of the Criminal Law, vol. i. ch. ix.)

In Scotland an action in the Court of Session begins by a swm-

dence, containing the allegations in fact on which the action is founded. The pleas in law, or statement of the legal rule or rules relied upon (introduced by 6 Geo. IV. e. 120, § 9), are subjoined to the condescendence. The term /ivel is also used (as in Roman law) as a general term to express the claim of the pursuer or the accusation of the prosecutor. The statement of the defender, including his pleas in law, is called his defences. y é dilatory or peremptory. There is no formal joinder of issue, as in England, but the same end is attained by adjustment of the plead- ings and the closing of the record. Large powers of amendment and revisal are given by the Court of Session Act, 1868. In the

Sheriff Court pleadings are very similar to those in the Court of |

Session. They are commenced by a petition, which includes a con- descendence and a note of the pursuer's pleas'in law. The defender may upon notice lodge defences. The procedure is now governed by 39 & 40 Vict. c. 70. The term 'pleas of the crown" is confined in Scotland to four offences—murder, rape, robbery, and fire-raising. A prosecntion is commenced either by indictment or criminal letters, the former being the privilege of the lord advocate. In the Supreme Court the indictment or criminal letters ran in the name of the lord advocate ; in the Sheriff Court the criminal letters (indictinents not being used in that court) run in the

name of the judge. The Scotch indictment differs from the English, and is in the form of a syllogism, the major proposition stating the nature of the crime, the minor the actual offence committed and that it constitutes the crime named in the major, the conclusion that on conviction of the panel he onght to snffer punishment. The panel nsually pleads “Guilty” or ‘Not Guilty” as in England, but he may plead in bar want of jurisdiction or res judicata, or make special defences (such as alibi or insanity), which must be lodged with the clerk of the court in writing signed by him or his counsel. The

special defence is read to the jury immediately after they have been |

sworn. (See Macdonald, Criminal Law of Scotland.)

In the United States two systems of pleading in civil procedure exist side by side. Up to 1848 the pleading did not materially differ from that in use in England at the same date. But in 1848 the New York legislature made a radical change in the system, and the example of New York has been followed by more than twenty States. The New York Civil Code of 1848 established a uniforni procedure called the civil action, applicable indifferently to common law and equity. The pleadings are called complaint, answer (which includes counterclaim), and reply. The demurrer also is still used. In some States which follow the new procedure the complaint bears the name of petition. In the inferior courts, such as eourts of justices of the peace, the pleadings are more simple, and in many cases oral. In States which do not adopt the amended procedure, the pleading is much the same as it was in the days of Blackstone, and the old double jurisdiction of com- mon law and eqnity still remains. Criminal pleading differs little from that in use in England. (See Bishop, Law of Criminal Pro- cedure.) (J. WT.)

PLEBEIANS. See Nozrnrry and Rome.

PLEDGE, or Pawn, in law, is “a bailment of personal

property as a security for some debt on engagement” | established by Conybeare in 1821, and including numerous

1 3 : | Species, some of which may have attained a length of as denote the property which constitutes the security. Pledge |

(Story on Bailments, The term is also used to

§ 286). is the pignus of Roman law, from which most of the modern law on the subject is derived. It differs from hypothec and from the more usual kind of mortgage in

eae | him, or a pledge of property with which he was intrusted

PLE—PLE

that the pledge is in the possession of the pledgee ; it also differs fron1 mortgage in being confined to personal pro- perty. A mortgage of personal property in most cases takes the name and form of a bill of sale (see Brit, the giving of bills of ‘sale being now regulated by the Bills of Sale Acts, 1878 and 1882). The chief difference between Roman and English law is that certain things, e.g., wearing apparel, furniture, and instruments of tillage, could not be pledged in Roinan law, while there is no such restriction in English law. In the case of a pledge, a special property passes to the pledgee, sufficient to enable him to maintain

an action against a wrongdoer, but the general property,

that is the property subject to the pledge, remains in the pledgor. As the pledge is for the benefit of both parties,

_ the pledgee is bound to exercise only ordinary care over

delivery, such as money or negotiable securities. mons on the part of the pursuer to which is annexed a condescen- |

the pledge. The pledgee has the right of selling the pledge if the pledgor make default in payment at the stipulated time. No right is acquired by the wrongful sale of a pledge except in the case of property passing by In the case of a wrongful sale by a pledgee, the pledgor cannot recover the value of the pledge without a tender of the amount due. For pledges by factors see

Facror. A pledge by a banker, merchant, broker, attorney, or other agent, in violation of good faith, and contrary to the purpose for which the property pledged was intrusted to

for safe custody, renders the offender guilty of a mis-

demeanor, punishable with a maximum term of seven years' penal servitude, 24 & 25 Vict. c. 96, §§ 75, 76. Pledges with pawnbrokers are regulated by the Pawn- brokers' Act, 1872, 35 & 36 Vict. c. 93 (which applies to Great Britain). By the provisions of the Act (which does not affect loans above £10), a pledge is redeemable within one year and seven days of grace added to the year. Pledges pawned for 10s. or under not redeemed in time become the property of the pawnbroker, pledges above 10s. are redeemable until sale. The sale must be by public auction. The pawnbroker is entitled to charge as interest one halfpenny per month on every two shillings' lent where the loan is under 40s., on every two shillings and sixpence where the loan is above 40s. Special con- tracts may be made where the loan is above 40s. Unlaw-

| ful pawning of goods not the property of the pawner, and

taking in pawn any article from a person apparently

under the age of sixteen or intoxicated, or any linen or

apparel or unfinished goods or materials intrusted to wash, make up, &c., are (inter alia) made offences punishable by summary conviction. An annual licence, costing £7, 10s., must be taken out for every pawnbroker's shop.

The law of Scotland as to pledge generally agrces with that of England, as does also that of the United States. The main differ- ence is that in Scotland and Louisiana a pledge cannot be sold unless with judicial authority. In some of the States the common law as it existed apart from the Factors' Acts is still followed; in others the factor has more or less restricted power to give a title by pledge. In some States pawnbroking is regulated by the local authorities, and not, as in most, by the general law of the State.

PLESIOSAURIANS. The remarkable extinct marine reptiles included in the group of the Plesiosauria (or Sauropterygia, as they are sometimes called) existed during the whole of the Mesozoic period, that is, from Triassic

| into Cretaceous times, when they appear to have died

out. The best known of these reptiles, and that which

| gives its name to the group is the Plesiosaurus, a genus

much as 20 feet. The nearly allied Zlasmosaurus of North America, however, reached a much greater size, its

Temains indicating an animal about 45 fect in length.

i

Several almost perfect skeletons of Plesiosawrus having at

ri E-sri:0-s

different times been found, the general proportions of the body are well known. Although the different species vary in regard to proportions, the small size of the head and extreme length of the neck are always striking points in the skeleton of a Plesiosawrus, while the tail is propor- tionately short. The limbs, both fore and hind, are well developed and modified for swimming, the forms of the various bones making it clear that the digits of each limb were not separate, but enclosed in one covering of integu- ment, as in the flippers of a whale or a turtle. The exterior of the body, there is every reason to believe, was smooth as it is in Cetacea, and not provided with either

LEVY YUN ASU ee aie aye si if Yi \ f fj gprs es) j Lf Ct v4 Cte AG Ase YY Soy $e Le? “7 r oe &é

Fia. 1.—Plesiosawrus (after Owen),

rostrum. On the base of the skull four fossz are to be |

seen; the front pair of these are bounded behind by the

palatine bones, and are regarded as the true posterior |

nares. The teeth are slender, sharp, curved, and striated ; they have single fangs, and are placed loosely in separate alveolar sockets.

The spinal column is composed of a large number of |

vertebrae, some species having ninety or more in the entire series. The centrum of each vertebra has the fore and hind surfaces slightly concave; the neural arch is con- nected with the centrum by a suture, which seems never to have been entirely obliterated. The cervical vertebrze vary in number from twenty-four to upwards of forty in different species. Each is provided with a pair of ribs, closely resembling those found in the cervical region in the crocodile, but with a single articular head only. Towards the hinder part of the neck the ribs become more elongated, and take on the form of dorsal ribs; but, as none of the ribs join the sternum, the usual means of dis- tinguishing the dorsal and cervical regions is wanting. There may be from twenty to thirty dorsal vertebre. True sternal ribs have never been detected ; but abdominal

ost

Fig. 2. Fig. 3.

Fig, 2,-—Pectoral arch of Plestosaurus, seen from below (after Hulke). coracoid; sc, scapula; pe, precoracoid; ost, omosternum. j

Fig. 3.—Pelvic arch of Plestosaurus, from above (after Huxley). is, ischium; pb, pubis ; él, ilium.

bones, or ribs, are well developed. The sacrum consists of two vertebra, with stout broad ribs for attachment to the iliac bones. The caudal vertebra, between thirty and forty in number, have distinct chevron bones, which are attached between the successive vertebrae. The pectoral arch (fig. 2) consists of a large coracoid on each side, in

co,

bony or horny scutes or scales as in the living crocodiles and turtles. The internal skeleton therefore is the only part available for study.

The skull of Plestosawrus has a tapering and depressed snout, and in consequence of the large size of the pre- maxillary bones the nasal apertures are placed far back, just in front of the orbit, as in birds. There is a distinct parietal foramen, as in lizards. The orbit is completely surrounded by bone, and there are supra- and infra- temporal fossz. The single occipital condyle is formed almost entirely by the basi-occipital bone. The basi- sphenoid is well developed, and is produced into a long

a ei:

Ca Ay {] GMa Viv, Penne tf, Whe lewis: AN AAR Ne le

bana al F21

front and outside of which is a peculiarly shaped scapula with a plate extending dor- sally from the glenoid cavity, and a second process directed inwards and downwards. The latter process is now regarded as the precoracoid by Mr J. W. Hulke, who also considers the plate of bone—originally of two pieces—found in the middle and in front of the coracoids to be the homologue _ of the omosternum of Batrachia. If this interpretation be correct, Plesiosaurus has neither clavicles nor interclavicles. .In the fore limb all the characteristic bones are present. The humerus is an elongated bone with the anterior border nearly straight and the hinder border concave ; it is rounded at the upper end, and flat- tened below, where it is articulated to two much shorter bones, the radius and ulna. Next to these is a row of three carpal bones—the radiale (scaphoid), the ulnare (cuneiform), and the intermedium (lunar) ; a second row of four bones succeeds these, three of which are carpals, but the outer one may be a metacarpal; next comes a row of five metacarpals. The digits are five in number, and with the exception of the first are made up of numerous separate ossicles, or phalanges.

The pelvic arch (fig. 3) is large, and ventrally consists of a pair of flattened more or less quadrate pubes, and a pair of somewhat triangular ischia. The iliac bones are elongated, narrower where they form part of the acetabular articula- tion and becoming broader above where they join the sacral ribs. The hind limb very closely resembles the fore limb. The front and back margins of the femur are straighter than they are in the humerus; but the other parts almost exactly repeat the corresponding bones of the fore limb.

With regard to the probable habits of the Plesiosaurus we are not without some indications. The paddle-like form of the limbs leaves no doubt as to its aquatic mode of life, and judging from the fossils with which it is usually asso- ciated it must have been an inhabitant of the sea; it is highly probable, however, that some species at least ascended rivers, for remains of Plesiosauria are found in the Wealden freshwater deposits. The comparatively small tail and large paddles render it probable that the limbs were the chief means of propulsion. The long neck would tend to impede its progress through the water, and it would be better adapted, therefore, for swimming on or near the surface. It is unlikely that the Plestosaurus could move as rapidly through the water as the Ichthyosaurus; but this slower movement would be compensated for by the rapidity with which its long and flexible neck could be darted at its prey. Seeing that the marine turtles and seals of the | present day make their way on shore, it is quite possible _ that the Plesiosawrus may also have occasionally visited the

land. The sharp and slender teetli would be admirably | adapted for catching and holding a slippery prey, and there is no doubt that fishes formed in part, if not altogether, its natural food. Indeed the scales and teeth of fishes have been found, in one case at least, just below the vertebre, in the region which must have been occupied by the creature’s stomach.

It is of interest to note the differences whieh exist between the Plesiosaurus and the IcHTHYOSAURUS (q.v.), the latter being the type of another group, the Ichthyosauria, which is by some palzontolo- gists included with the Plestosauria in a larger group ealled Hnalio- sauria. In outward form the Ichthyosaurus must have resembled some of the reeent Cetacea, inasmueh as the head is proportionately large, and without any appearance of a neck

joins direetly on to the trunk. The hind limbs are smaller than the front ones, and the bones of both limbs are mueh more shortened and flattened than in Plestosawrus ; in addition to this there are supernumerary rows of bones, besides the five typieal digital series. The pectoral areh differs in having distinet elavieles and interelavieles. The vertebre are short from baek to front, deeply bieoncave, and their neural arehes never have a bony connexion with the eentra. There is no saerum. The teeth are placed in a groove, and not in separate sockets. The eye-ball was protected by a series of bony selerotic plates, whieh are not found in Plesiosaurus.

PLE—

The group Plestosauria ineludes several other genera besides the Plesiosaurus ; but most of these are only represented by such imperfeet speeimens that the distinetions between them, as at present known, are far from satisfactory. The characters whieh have been relied upon for their separation are to be found chiefly in the strueture of the peetoral areh, limbs, and vertebre. Plesiosawrus is only certainly known to have existed from the time of the Lower Lias to the Chalk ; and it is especially characteristic of the Lias. More than fifty species, sometimes placed in several subgenera, have been deseribed from different localities in Britain, some of which are represented by remarkably perfect specimens, and others by fragments only. This genus has a wide geographical distribu- tion, species having been named from Seeondary strata, on the con- tinent of Europe, in India, Australia, South Ameriea, and North America, The closely allied and gigantic form Pliosaurus is ehiefly charaeteristie of the English Oolites.

In European Triassie beds, Plesiosauria are represented by such genera as Nothosaurus, Simosaurus, and Pistosaurus, in all of whieh the neural arches seem to have been less elosely united to the vertebral eentra than in Plestosaurus. Neusticosaurus is another Triassie form, remarkable, not only on aeeount of its small size, being less than 12 inches in length, but also beeause its limbs seem to show a transitional eondition ; for, while the structure of the hind limb resembles that of a land reptile, the fore limb seems to have had more the structure of a paddle.

A number of forms closely related to the Plesiosaurus have been described from roeks of Cretaceous age in North America under the following generie names —- Cimoltiasaurus, Elasmosaurus, Oligo- simus, Piratosaurus, and Polycotylus. Of these the Elasmosaurus is better known than any of the others. It was an extremely elon- gated form, as may be gathered from the faet that the snake-like neek alone consisted of more than sixty vertebre,— the entire body, as we have notieed above, being more than 45 feet in length.

Sce Conybeare, Trans. Geol. Soc., ser. 1, vol. v. p, 559, 1821, and ser. 2, vol. i, p. 103, 1824; Owen, Brit. Assoc. Rep.,' 1839, Hi 43: Hawkins, Great Sea Dragons, 1840; Phillips, Valley of the Thames, 1871; Huxley, Anat. of Vert. Anim., 1871, p. 208; Nicholson, Palxontology, vol. fi. p. 218, 1879; Sollas, Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., vol. xxxviii. p. 440, 1881; Hulke, Presidential Address, Geol. Soc., 1883 ; Leidy, ' Fossil Vertebrates," in Report U.S. Geol. Surv. Terri. tories, vol, i., 1873; and Cope, ibid., vol. ii,, 1875.

PLETHO. See Gemisrvs.

PLEURISY, or Prevriris, inflammation of the pleura or serous membrane investing the lungs and lining the interior of the thoracic cavity. It isa common form of chest complaint, and may be either acute or chronic, more frequently the former. _ The morbid changes which the pleura undergoes when inflamed are similar to those which take place in other Serous membranes, such as the peritoneum (see PERITONI- Tis), and consist of three chief conditions or stages of pro- gress. (1) Inflammatory congestion and infiltration of the pleura, which may spread to the tissues of the lung on the one hand, and to those of the chest wall on the other. (2) Exudation of lymph on the pleural surfaces. This lymph is of variable consistence, sometimes composed of thin and easily Separated pellicles, or of extensive thick masses or strata, or again showing itself in the form of a tough membrane. It is of greyish-yellow colour, and

(E. T. N.)

Pa ae

microscopically consists mainly of coagulated fibrinc along

| with epithelial cells and red and white blood corpuscles.

Its presence causes roughening of the two pleural surfaces, which, slightly separated in health, may now be brought into contact by bands of lymph extending between them. These bands may break up or may become organized by the development of new blood-vessels, and adhering permanently may obliterate throughout a greater or less space the pleural sac, and interfere to some extent with the free play of the lungs. (8) Effusion of fluid into the pleural cavity. This fluid may vary in its characters. Most commonly it is clear or slightly turbid, of yellowish-green colour, sero-fibrinous, and containing flocculi of lymph. In bad constitutions or in cases where the pleurisy complicates some severe form of .disease, ¢.g., the acute infectious maladies, it is deeply-coloured, bile-stained, sero-purulent, purulent, or bloody, occasionally containing bubbles of air from decomposition. The amount may vary from an almost inappreciable quantity to a gallon or more. When large‘in quantity it may fill to distension the pleural sac, bulge out the thoracic wall externally, and compress more or less completely the lung, which may in such cases have all its air displaced and be reduced to a mere fraction of its natural bulk lying squeezed up upon its own root. Other organs, such as the heart and liver, may in conse- quence of the presence of the fluid be shifted away from their normal position. In favourable cases the fluid is absorbed more or less completely and the pleural surfaces again may unite by adhesions; or, all traces of inflammatory products having disappeared, the pleura may be restored to its normal condition. When the fluid is not speedily absorbed it may remain,long in the cavity and compress the lung to such a degree as to render it incapable of re-expansion as the effusion passes slowly away. The consequence is that the chest wall falls in, the ribs become approximated, the shoulder is lowered, the spine becomes curved and internal organs permanently displaced, while the affected side scarcely moves in respiration. Some- times the unabsorbed fluid becomes purulent, and an empyzma is the result. In such a case the matter secks vent in some direction, and it may point as an abscess upon the chest or abdominal wall, or on the other hand burst into the lung and be discharged by the mouth. It must be observed that many cases of pleurisy do not reach the stage of

effusion, the inflammation terminating with the exudation of lymph. To this form the term dry pleurisy is applied. Further pleurisy may be limited to a very small area, or, on the contrary, may affect throughout a greater or less extent the pleural surfaces of both lungs.

Pleurisy frequently arises from exposure to cold ; hence it is more common in the colder weather ; but besides this various other causes are connected with its occurrence. Thus it is often associated with other forms of disease within the chest, more particularly pneumonia, bronchitis, and phthisis, and also occasionally accompanies pericarditis. Again it is apt to occur as a secondary disease in certain morbid constitutional states, ¢g., the infectious fevers, rheumatism, gout, Bright's disease, diabetes, &c. Further, wounds or injuries of the thoracic walls are apt to set up pleurisy, and the rupture of a phthisical cavity in the lungs causing the escape of air and matter into the pleura has usually a similar effect.

The symptoms of pleurisy vary, being generally well- marked, but sometimes obscure. In the case of dry pleurisy, which is on the whole the milder form, the chief symptom is a sharp pain in the side, felt especially in breathing. Fever may or may not be present. here is slight dry cough; the breathing is quicker than natural, and is shallow and of catching character. If much pain is present the body leans somewhat to the affected side, to

relax the tension on the intercostal muscles and their covering, which are even tender to touch. On listening to the chest by the stethoscope the physician recognizes sooner or later "friction," a superficial rough rubbing sound, occurring only with the respiratory acts and ceasing when the breath is held. It is due to the coming together during respiration of the two pleural surfaces which are roughened by the exuded lymph. The patient may himself be aware of this rubbing sensation, and its vibration or fremitus may be felt by the hand laid upon the thoracic wall during breathing. This form of pleurisy may be limited or may extend over the greater part of one or both sides. It is a not unfrequent complication of phthisis in all its stages. In general it disappears in a short time, and complete recovery takes place ; or on the other hand extensive adhesions may form between the costal and pulmonary surfaces of the pleura, preventing uniform -expansion of the

lung in respiration, and leading to emphysema. Although not of itself attended with danger, dry pleurisy is sometimes preliminary to more serious lung disease, and is always therefore to be regarded while it lasts with some degree of anxiety.

Pleurisy with effusion is usually more severe than dry pleurisy, and, although it may in some cases develop insidi- ously, it is in general ushered in sharply by rigors and fever, like other acute inflammatory diseases. Pain is felt in the side or breast, of a severe cutting character, referred usually to the neighbourhood of the nipple, but it may be also at some distance from the affected part, such as through the middle of the body or in the abdominal or iliac regions. This transference of the pain occasionally misleads the medical examiner. The pain is greatest at the outset, and tends to abate as the effusion takes place. A dry cough is almost always present, which is particularly distressing owing to the increased pain the effort excites. The breathing is painful and difficult, tending to become shorter and shallower as the disease advances and the lung on the affected side becomes compressed. The patient at first lies most easily on the sound side, but as the effusion increases he finds his most comfortable position on his back or on the affected side. When there is very copious effusion and, as is apt to happen, great congestion of the other lung, or disease affecting it, the patient’s breathing may be so embarrassed that he cannot lie down.

On physical examination of the chest the following are among the chief points observed. (1) On inspection there is more or less bulging of the side affected, obliteration of the intercostal spaces, and sometimes elevation of the shoulder. (2) On palpation with the hand applied to the side there is diminished expansion of one-half of the thorax, and the normal vocal fremitus is abolished. Should the effusion be on the right side and copious, the liver may be felt to have been pushed downwards, and the heart somewhat displaced to the left ; while if the effusion be on the left side the heart is displaced to the right. (3) On percussion there is absolute dulness over the seat of the effusion. If the fluid does not fill the pleural sac the floating Iung may yield a hyper-resonant note. (4) On auscultation the natural breath sound is in- audible over the effusion. Should the latter be only partial the breathing is clear and somewhat harsh, with or without friction, and the voice sound is zegophonic. Posteriorly there may be heard

tubular breathing with wegophony. These various physical signs render it im- possible to mistake the disease for other maladies the Symptoms of which may bear a resemblance to it, such as pleurodynia.

_ The absorption or removal of the fluid is marked by the disappearance or diminution of the above-mentioned physical signs, except that of percussion dulness, which |

me 2S Y¥ 223

may last a long time, and is probably due in part to the thickened pleura. Friction may again be heard as the fluid passes away and the two pleural surfaces come together. The displaced organs are restored to their position, and the compressed lung re-expanded. Fre- quently this expansion is only partial, and consequently, as already indicated, the chest falls in, the respiration on one side is imperfectly performed, and the patient remains permanently short in breathing to a greater or less degree.

In most instances the termination is favourable, the acute symptoms subsiding and the fluid (if not drawn off) gradually or rapidly becoming absorbed, sometimes after re-accumulation. On the other hand it may remain long without undergoing much change, and thus a condition of chronic pleurisy becomes established. Such cases are to be viewed with suspicion, particularly in those who are predis- posed to phthisis, of which it is sometimes the precursor.

Pleurisy may exist in a latent form, the patient going about for weeks with a large accumulation of fluid in his thorax, the ordinary acute symptoms never having been present in any marked degree. Cases of this sort are often protracted, and their results unsatisfactory as regards complete recovery.

The chief dangers in pleurisy are the occurrence of a large and rapid effusion, particularly if both sides be affected, causing much embarrassment to the breathing and tendency to collapse; the formation of an empyxma (often marked by recurring rigors and hectic symptoms) ; severe collateral congestion of the other lung; imperfect recovery ; and the supervention of phthisis. Further the consequences are apt to be more serious where pleurisy exists as a complication of some pre-existing disease.

The treatment of pleurisy need only be alluded to in general terms. It will necessarily depend as regards details upon the form and severity of the attack. One of the first symptoms calling for treatment is the pain. Opiates in the form of morphia or Dover's powder are useful along with the application to the chest of hot poultices or fomentations sprinkled with turpentine. In severe cases much relief to the pain and difficulty of breathing may be afforded by the application of a few leeches to the side. Cases of simple dry pleurisy usually soon yield to such treatment, aided if need be by the application of a fly-blister or of iodine to the chest. The fixing as far as possible of the one side of the thorax by means of cross straps of adhesive plaster according to the plan recom- mended by Dr Roberts seems of use in many instances. In the case of pleurisy with effusion, in addition to these measures, including blistering, the internal use of saline cathartics and diuretics appears to be often of service in diminishing the amount of the fluid in the pleural cavity, as are also powerful diaphoretics such as pilocarpin. When these measures fail to reduce the effusion the question of the artificial removal of the fluid comes to be considered. The operation (thoracentcsis) was practised by the ancient physicians, but was revived in modern times by Trousseau in France and Bowditch in America, by the latter of whom an excellent instrument was devised for emptying the chest, which, however, has been displaced in practice by the still more convenient aspirator. The propriety of this proceeding in pleurisy with eflu- sion has been much discussed, but there now appears to be a gencral consent that in cases of extensive accumulation, when other means such as those briefly referred to fail to reduce or remove the fluid in a short time, the only hope of preventing snch compression of the lung as will impair its function lies in the performance of thoracentesis. All the more will the operation be justifiable if the accumulated fluid is interfering with the function of other organs, such as the heart, or is attended with marked embarrassment of the breathing. The chest is punctured in the lateral or posterior regions, and in most cases the greater portion or all of the fluid may be safely drawn off. In genera] the operation is unattended with danger, although not entirely exempt from such risks as sudden syncope, and therefore not to be undertaken without due vigilance as well asa careful consideration of the individual case and its associa- tions. In many instances not only is the removal of distressing symptoms speedy and complete, but the lung is relieved from pressure in

time to enable it to resume its normal function. When there is any evidence that the fluid is purulent the operation should be performed early. In such cascs it is sometimes necessary to establish for a time a drainage of the pleural cavity by surgical measures.

The convalescence from pleurisy requires careful tending, and the state of the chest should be inquired into from time to time, in view of the risks of more serious forms of lung discase super- vening. (J. O. A.)

PLEURO-PNEUMONIA. See Murratn, ». 60. PLEVNA, or PLeven, the chief town of one of the pro- vinces in the principality of Bulgaria, lies in the midst of a series of hills (whose crests rise above it for 200 to 600 feet) and about 6000 yards to the east of the river Vid (a tributary of the Danube), into which the streamlets by which it is traversed discharge. Its position at the meet- ing place of roads from Widdin, Sofia, Shipka, Biela, Zimnitza, and Nikopoli gives it a certain military import- ance, and in the Russian campaign of 1877 it became one of the great centres of operation. The Russians, who had been defeated in two minor attacks on the 20th and 30th of July, were again repulsed with a loss of 18,000 men in an assault (September 7-13) in which they em- ployed 75,000 infantry and 60,000 cavalry. They formally invested the town on October 24th and obliged Osman Pasha to surrender on December 10th. In 142 days the assailants had lost 40,000 men and the defenders 30,000. Plevna, which contains two old Christian churches as well as a number of mosques, had 11,129 inhabitants in 1881, the province at the same date containing 100,870.

See F. V. Greene, The Russian Army and its Campaigns in Turkey in 1877-78, London, 1879.

PLEYEL, Ienaz JosepH (1757-1831), though now almost forgotten, was once one of the most popular com- posers in Europe. He was born at Ruppersthal, near Vienna, June 1, 1757, studied the pianoforte under Van Hal (known in England as Vanhall), and learned com- position from Haydn, who became his dearest friend. He was appointed maitre de chapelle at Strasburg in 1783 ; and in 1791 he was invited to London, where, though Haydn was also there, he achieved an immense success. On his return to

Strasburg he narrowly escaped the guillo- tine; but, after proving that he was not an aristocrat, he was permitted to remain until 1795, when he migrated to Paris. Here he opened a large music shop, published the first complete edition of Haydn's quartetts, and founded, in 1807, the pianoforte manufactory which still bears his name. He died at Paris, November 14, 1831.

Pleyel's compositions are very numerous, but it is only in the earlier ones that the fire of true genius is discernible. His daughter-in-law, Maria Pleyel, —née Moke (1811-1875), and wife

of his cldest son, Camille,—was one of the most accomplished pianistes of the age.

PLINY, tHe Naruratist (23-79 a.p.). Caius Plinius Secundus, commonly distinguished as the elder Pliny, the author of the Vatural History, is believed to have been born (23 a.p.) at Novum Comum (Como). In the first sentence of his preface he calls Catullus, born at Verona, "'conterraneum meum," meaning, perhaps, a native of Gallia Cisalpina, though it may be that Verona was the actual birthplace of both. At Comum, however, was the family estate which the younger Pliny inherited from his uncle. Like his nephew, the elder Pliny had seen military service, having joined the campaign in Germany under L. Pomponius Secundus ;? like him also, he had been a pleader in the law-courts, and a diligent student of Greek and Roman literature. Much of his literary work was done, he tells us himself, in the hours stolen from sleep. Of his many works the Naturalis Historia in thirty-seven books has alone been preserved, and in a nearly complete state. This voluminous treatise professes to be an encyclo- peedia of Roman knowledge, mainly based on the researches and speculations of the Greeks. What A. von Humboldt

- But, as has been shrewdly remarked by Mr Long, "this some- what barbarous word is much better adapted to intimate that Catullus was oe ae of Pliny than that he was a fellow-townsman."

e Vita Pomponi Secundi duo (libri)" are enumerated among

his uncle's works by the younger Pliny, Zp. iii. 5, § 8, who adds, "a

quo ee amatus hoc memorie amici quasi debitum munus eXsolvit.

vol. xvii.

| idea.

PLE—P LI

accomplished in our own times, in his great work Cosmos, Pliny had essayed to carry out on similar principles,—but, of course, without the scientific knowledge, and also with- out the comprehensive view of the universe which is the inheritance of the present age. Pliny, we must admit, was an industrious compiler, but he was not, like Aristotle, a man of original research.?

In his first book, which contains a summary of the whole work, he names the authors, both Greek and Latin, from which the matter of each book was derived. The list indeed is a surprising one, and of comparatively few have we any remains. Among Roman authors he most frequently cites Cato the censor, M. Varro, Celsus, Cor-

nelius Nepos, Pomponius Mela, Columella; among tlie

Greeks, Aristotle, Theophrastus, Democritus, more than oneApollodorus, Apollonius of Pergamum, and Hippocrates. The Latin writers he calls simply “auctores ;” the Greeks, of whom the list is considerably longer, are ‘‘ externi.”

The preface, written in a rather inflated and by no means clear style, very inferior to the Latinity of the younger Pliny, is a dedication of the work in a strain of extravagant adulation to Titus, who was then, as Cesar, joint emperor with his father Vespasian. Pliny apologizes for dedicating to such a man a work of such commonplace and hackneyed subject-matter, but he pleads the novelty of the undertaking, and boasts of being the first who had attempted so comprehensive a theme.

The work itself commences with a pantheistic definition of the universe, J/undus, 2.e., world and sky, and the sun and stars in space, This, he says, is

reasonably regarded as a divinity—eternal, boundless, uncreated, and indestructible. Nature, he adds, and Nature's work are one, and to suppose there is more than one universe is to believe there can be more than one Nature, —which he calls "furor." His theology is "agnostic," or Epicurean ; if there is any God, he says, it is vain to inquire His form and shape; He is entirely a Being of feeling and sentiment and intelligence, not of tangible existence. He believes in the "religion of humanity," according to a rather recent definition of the idea. God is what Nature is; God cannot do what Nature cannot do ; He cannot kill Himself, nor make mortals immortal, nor raise the dead to life, nor cause one who has lived never to have lived at all, or make twice ten anything else than twenty. The last sentence of his work is remarkable, and is characteristic of a pagan piety which takes Nature alone for its God :— "Salve, parens rerum omnium Natura, teque nobis Quiritium solis celebratum esse numeris omnibus tuis fave" (xxxvii. 205).

But, although he regarded nature as one whole, of the great doctrine of the unity of nature and the tendency of all its operations to one definite end Pliny had no correct He had a great store of ill-digested knowledge, not only imperfect in itself, but put together on no consistent plan. His style too is forced and somewhat pedantic, so that to read through and understand even a single book 1s by no means a light task.

To give an outline sketch of the Natural History, it may be said that book ii. treats of carth, stars, meteorics, and terrestrial phcno-

mena, such as earthquakes, elevation of islands, &c. Books iti. to vi. inclusive are devoted toa geographical account of the known

3 He claims for himself " ingenium perquam mediocre," Pref. § 12. His nephew (iii. 5, § 8) calls it "acre ingenium," which may mean active and energetic.

4 Hence he reckons the number of books at 36, the subject begin- ning with Book ii. The matter of these, he says, comprising 20,000 points worthy of attention, he has collected from the perusal of about 2000 books, and from 100 Roman authors of special note (ex exquisitis auctoribus centum), Pref. §17. The first book the author regards as an appendix to the dedicatory

letter or preface, “ Quia occupationi- bus tuis publico bono parcendum erat, quid singulis contineretur libris huic epistule subjunxi,” Pref. § 33.

~

t int NY

world, in giving which the author makcs no mention of Strabo. Book vii. contains a physical treatise on man, his form, the laws of his birth, age, mental qnalities, &e. Book viii. treats of the larger beasts, as elephants, lions, tigers, camcls, descending to snakes, crocodiles, and the smaller and domesticated animals. Book ix. includes marine animals of all kinds, fishes, shells, crustaceans, sponges, &c. Book x. is on birds, xi. on insects,—thc latter half being devoted to an anatomical description of animals generally. Book xii. is on trees; xiii. on tlfcir products, fruit, gums, perfumes, &c. ; xiv. on the grape and the making of wine; xv. on the olive, fig, apple, and other luscious fruits ; xvi. on forest trees, canes, and reeds, kinds of timber, and different ages of trees. Book xvii. treats chiefly of the culture of trees, their diseases, and the arts of pruning, manuring, training, &c. Book xviii. is on farming and cereal crops ; xix.’on other kinds of produce, including horticulture ; xx. on the medicinal properties of plants ; xxi. on flowers, bees, honey, and on botanical distinctions as to leaves, thorns, and times offlowering. Book xxii. treats of all kinds of herbs used in medicine and in cookery ; xxiii. the medicinal properties of cultivated trees ; xxiv. the same of forest trees, and their useful products generally. (These two books are chiefly derived from Greek anthorities, and include the names and properties of a vast number of species.) Books xxv. to xxvii. inclusive treat of the properties of plants, and these books also are chiefly from Greek sources,—Cornelius Celsus being the principal Roman authority. Books xxviii. to xxx. discuss the medicinal properties residing in animals; xxxi. and xxxii. those in fishes. These books are full of the most extraordinary and nonsensical superstitions, including discnssions on magic in book xxx. Book xxxiii. is on the nature and use of the precious metals ; xxxiv. on the different kinds of bronze, on lead, iron, and the oxides generally. Book xxxv. is on the origin and practice of painting ; xxxvi. on the different kinds of stone and marble, includ- ing lime, sand, and gypsum; xxxvii. on precions stones.

It will be observed tliat, though there is no scientific classifica- tion in this long work, a kind of sequencc, not altogether unphilo- sophical, is observed. The amount of matter and the number of subjects treated of in each book are always recorded at the end of the epitome (book i.), just before the list of authors, in the formula, “Summa: res et histori et observationes MDCVI.” &c.; but in the medical books, in place of res, “subjects,” medicine, “prescriptions,” is used. By historiw# he means “ inquiries,” or “the results of inquiries,” as distinguished from observationes, “remarks, ”

With all its faults, inevitable to the infant state of science, Pliny’s work is an astounding monument of in- dustry. It is believed to have been published about two years before his death. He wrote, besides several other treatises,1 a history of the wars from the first in Germany,” in twenty books, and a continuation of the history of Aufidius Bassus down to his own times, in thirty-one books —all now lost.

He is said to have been a great student, an early riser, abstemious and temperate in his meals.? In his later days he appears to have grown somewhat unwieldy and asth- matic, for Pliny the younger, in describing his uncle’s death by suffocation from the fumes in the eruption of Vesuvius, 79 a.D., says that his breathing “ propter ampli- tudinem corporis gravior et sonantior erat.”4 Pliny’s intimate friendship with Vespasian may be inferred from his custom of attending the morning levée; he seems to have first known him in the German wars in the time of Claudius.

Besides his published works, the elder Pliny left, as his nephew tells us, one hundred and sixty note-books of extracts (electorum commentarios clx.), written in a very small hand on both sides of the page. So valuable were these volumes considered that Pliny assured his nephew he could have sold them in Spain for £3500, even before the full number had been made up. He acted as procu-

‘ Three books, in six volumes, were entitled “ Studiosus,” and eight books bore the title “Dubius Sermo.” To this last he probably refers, Pray. § 28, “audio—Epieureos quoque parturire adversus libellos quos de grammatiea edidi.”

2 Bellorum Germanie viginti (libri), quibus omnia que eum Germanis gessimus bella eollegit (Pliny, Zp. iii. 5,§ 4). A treatise on throwing the lance from horseback, “De jaculatione equestri, ” 1s mentioned here as his first work, written when he was in command of a squadron of eavalry (prefectus ale).

3 Pliny, Ep. iii. 5, § 163 see ibid. §§ 8-10. * Epist. vi. 16, § 18,

rator in Spain in 71, and was recalled to Rome by the death of his brother-in-law Caius Czxcilius, who by will appointed him guardian of the younger Pliny. At the tune of his death, the elder Pliny had the command of the Roman fleet at Misenum. He fell a victim to his imprudent curiosity in advancing within the range of the thickly- falling ashes during the eruption of Vesuvius in 79 A.D.

Pliny’s influence on the nomenclature and the popular ideas about common objects long continued to be very extensive, and survived till the dawn of the age of more exact science. The knowledge he gives us of the writings and opinions of so large a number of lost authors opens a view of the whole cycle of the science of the period.

The best editions of the Natural History are those by Julius Sillig (Leipsic, 1831-36, in 5 vols. 12mo), and by Louis Janus (Teubner, Leipsic, 1854-59, in 6 vols.), which is virtually a revised reprint of it, the whole of the last volume being occupied with copious and accurate indices of authors and subjects. These may be called eritical editions ; two French editions with scientific com- mentaries had preceded,—by Hardouin (1685 and 1723), and by Panckoucke (1829-33), in twenty volumes with a French transla- tion. (Gig ANS 12)

PLINY tHe Youncer (61-c.115 a.p.). Caius Cecilius Secundus, commonly called Pliny the Younger, was the nephew and heir of the elder Pliny, the naturalist. He was born 61 A.D. at Comum (Como) on the southern shore of Lake Larius in northern Italy, near to which, on the east side, stood the spacious and beautiful family villa.5 He took the name of Cvcilius from his father, who had inarried Plinia, the elder Pliny’s sister. Atten years of age he

was left to the care of Virginius Rufus, a distinguished man and thrice consul.®

Pliny was a man of refined taste, highly accomplished, devoted to literature, kind and indulgent to his freedmen and his slaves, gentle and considerate in all his family relations, just in his dealings, munificent in the use of his wealth, humane and forgiving to all who had offended him.' By profession an advocate, and a pupil of the famous Quintilian (ii. 14), he was a frequent and very popular pleader at the courts of the centumviri held in the Julian basilica, as well as occasionally in the senate and in public prosecutions (vi. 29).

His fame in centumviral trials, which were chiefly con- cerned with will cases, is attested by Martial (x. 19, 17), whose epigram he quotes in lamenting the poet's death (ili, 21). But, though himself somewhat. ambitious of praise as a pleader (for he séems to have regarded Cicero as his model in everything), he sternly reproved the arts of bribery and flattery which were commonly adopted by patrons to secure the applause of their clients. " For half-a-crown a head," he complains, "you may fill the benches with any number of shouters and bawlers of your praises." Fond as he was of eloquence, he seems to have given up legal practice from some feeling of disgust at these abuses, and to have devoted himself to the duties of the state-offices. He was appointed augur and prefect of the treasury in the temple of Saturn, and rose in due course through the offices of queestor, praetor, and tribune of the people, finally attaining to the consulship, 100 a.p. His inaugural address to the emperor Trajan, a long and finished but rather pedantic oration in Ciceronian

5 "Quid agit Comum, tue meeque delicie ?" he writes to Caninius Rufus, Hp. i. 38. He had several eountry honses on this estate (plures ville, Hp. ix. 7). Two of these, his espeeial favourites, he playfully ealled "Tragedy and Comedy," eomparing the low and the lofty site to the soccus and the cothurnus of the aetors.

6 Pliny speaks of him with great regard in ii. 1, § 8 :-—" Ile mihi tutor relictus adfeetum parentis exhibuit."

7 His motto was “to pardon others as if one daily needed pardon oneself, and to abstain from sins as if one viewed sin as unpardonable,” viii. 22. In Ep, 2 of the same book he finely says, “ Mihi egregium in primis videtur, ut foris ita domi, ut in magnis ita in parvis ut in alienis ita in suis, agitare justitiam.”

Latinity, entitled Panegyricus, old custom,” he says in his opening sentence, “of com- mencing all public business with prayers to the gods is especially to be observed by a consul, and on an occasion of offering public thanks to the best of princes by the command of the senate and the state.” The piece teaches

is extant.1 “The good

us a good deal about the imperial policy and the military ©

career of Trajan ($§ 13-16).

Between Pliny and Trajan the sincerest regard and even affection seem to have subsisted. In the last book of the Epistles, which contains a hundred and twenty-one letters and replies on matters of business connected with the pro- vince between Pliny and the emperor, the latter is always addressed as “ Domine ” (sire), the former as “ Secunde (or mi Secunde) carissime.” Most of these were written by Pliny as proprator (103-5) of Bithynia and Pontica, and they show the careful interest taken in the welfare and pro- sperity of the cities under his charge. The replies of the emperor are characteristically brief; they are written in good and literary Latin, and show Trajan to have been a man of letters as well as a man of business. Pliny’s celebrated inquiry what should be done with recusant Christians, in which he says? that “not only cities but

country towns and rural districts have been touched by |

the contagion of this superstition," is briefly replied to ; "conquirendi non sunt," writes the emperor, "si defer- antur et arguantur, puniendi sunt, ita tamen ut qui negaverit se Christianum esse, idque re ipsa manifestum fecerit, id est supplicando dis nostris, quamvis suspectus in preteritum, veniam ex pcenitentia impetret." Pliny had said :—" Those who obstinately persisted that they were Christians, after being warned of the consequence, I ordered to be led off to punishment, not doubting that, whatever it was that they professed, their inflexible obstinacy deserved it." Doubts have even been raised as to the genuineness of a passage which appears so inconsist- ent with the established Roman policy of tolerating every superstitio. But it is clear that what Pliny doubted was the fidelity to the emperor of those who refused to make the customary religious offerings to his statue. It was zeal for loyalty that led him into a course which his humane nature condemned.?

Pliny was twice married, but had no children. The emperor bestowed on him the jus trium liberorum, which conferred certain state privileges upon those who brought up that number of legitimate children to become Roman citizens. Three affectionate letters, none of them long, are addressed to his second wife Calpurnia Hispulla.

In health Pliny seems to have been far from robust. He speaks of his slight and thin figure, " gracilitas mea," 4 though in his youth he had seen military service in the East.° He was fond too of hunting, but used to boast that he combined the worship of Diana with that of Minerva.®

Pliny's great wealth was most liberally bestowed, both privately and publicly. He undertakes to rebuild a temple of Ceres on his estate, entirely at his own cost, with a

1 He alludes to it in iii. 18, and in iii. 18 he explains how the address in the senate was afterwards expanded into a book, and recited for three consecutive days to his friends. The title Panegyricus appears then to have been given to it.

2 x. 96, § 9.

3 The context shows that he had some suspicion that the Christians were forming secret and illegal societies (hcterie, § 8). This is his only excuse for having put two deaconesses (ministre) to the torture to find out what they really held.

; ii. 11, § 15. Pip lilem sao:

ix. 10. Ini. 6 he gives a droll account of his hunting wild boars and reading books while the beaters were at work: “ad retia sede- bam ; erat in proximo non venabulum aut lancea, sed stilus et pugil-

lares; meditabar aliquid enotabamqne, ut si manus vacuas plenas tamen ceras reportarem.”

Pe Peery

‘ new statue and the addition of a portico, with walls and floor decorated with marbles.?7 To his friend Romatius Firmus, a fellow-townsman, he writes® that in order to have the pleasure of seeing him an eques he offers £2500 to make up the equestrian census. To Calvina, in addi-. tion to nearly £1000 which he had given her as a marriage portion, he offers to remit the whole of the mortgage debt on an encumbered estate which she had inherited from her father. He founded and endowed with landed property _an almshouse for people of free birth of both sexes.? He presented his nurse with a farm worth nearly £1000 ; }° he gave fifty sestertia 1! as a marriage present to the daughter _ of his tutor Quintilian; he gave up to the township of Comum a sum of about £3500, which, having been illeg- ally left to it by Saturninus, Pliny, as his heir, could have claimed for himself,—and this in addition to over £10,000 which he had already given to the same township. He generously returned a large percentage of the sum he had sold his vintage for, when the produce had been found to disappoint the purchasers.!? In a beautiful letter to Sabinianus !’ he kindly intercedes for a libertus with whom his friend was offended. In a word, the letters are full of acts of Pliny’s goodness and generosity, and these are not boastfully expressed, but rather with the view of inciting others by his example.

There are few, if indeed any, remains of Roman prose literature which are as elegant, as intcresting, and as varied as Pliny’s Letters. They were

evidently written and published! on the model and precedent of Cicero's Letters. They are all carefully composed, and couched in the most graceful and polished Latinity. The first letter is a reply to a friend, Septicius, who had often requested Pliny to collect and publish his more carefully written correspond- ence, —"si quas paullo curatius scripsisset." An admirer of nature, and with the faculty for observation perhaps learnt from his uncle, he sometimes describes, and in the most beautiful language, the scencs or wonders he had visited. Of his spacious and beautiful villas in Tuscany and at Laurentum he has given fulland detailed accounts, which are of especial value as alinost the sole authority on the difficult subject of Roman houses.? ® The Tuscan estate appears to have been his favourite residence. In reply to his friend Fuscus (ix. 36) he gives a pleasing account of the daily life and studies of a refined and temperate man, and a considerate country gentleman, neighbour, and landlord. Of the eruption of Vesuvius in 79 A.p., and the death of his uncle, he gives a minute and evidently faithful account as an eye-witness. This is contained in two long lettcrs " to his friend Tacitus the historian. Two excellent ghost-stories are given,!§ and a letter to Tacitus on the omens of dreams ® shows that both the friends had considerable credulity on this subject.

Like Cicero, but not so frequently, Pliny occasionally ° ' venti- lates" his Greek, and he tells us that at the age of fourteen he wrote a Greek tragedy, adding jocosely, " qualem ? inquis: nescio ; tragcedia vocabatur" (vii. 4, § 2). Like Cicero too, he was fond of art ; he describes with enthusiasm 2! a Corinthian bronze statuctte which he had just purchased out of a legacy received.

As a writer Pliny the younger is as graceful, fluent, and polished as the style of the elder Pliny is crabbed and obscure. Indeed, the Latinity of the epistles cannot fairly be called inferior to that of Cicero himself. There are few indications of the " deterioration "

7 ix. 89. A similar offer is made to Trajan, including the dedica- tion of his statue, Hp. Pl. et Tr., 8.

Sy, ily), a viteeliss Mh GB:

N About £480, vi. 32. Lyi. 2

13 ix. 21. “Tune precipua mansuetudinis laus,” he‘well says, “ cum iree causa justissima est.”

M4 Keil (Pref. to ed. Teubner, 1865, p. 1) quotes Sidonius Apolli- naris, Hpist. ix. 1, to show that nine books of his Letters were edited by Pliny himself.

iS E.g., the sources of the Clitumnus, viii. 8, and the floating islands on a lake at Ameria, viii. 20.

16 See ii. 17 and v. 6. The former describes in glowing terms the Laurentian villa, though he says of it in iv. 6, “nihil ibi possideo preter tectum et hortum, statimque harenas”; but he is comparing the extent of other landed properties.

VW vi. 16 and 20. ea ite

19 i, 18. It is clear from Ann. vi. 28 that Tacitus had some belief in astrology. Pliny the elder wrote his history of the German wars “soninio monitus,” Ep. iii. 5, § 4.

20 #.g. ini. 18 and 20; ii. 8; iv. 7; ix. 26.

*1 iii. 6. He says, however (§ 1), that in bronzes he was not much | of a critic: “in hac re certe perquam exiguum sapio.”

PLO—

(if progress and development in a language ought so to be called) of the “Silver Age.” That he imitated Ciccro both in his style and his eloquence is avowed by himself.1 As a friend of Tacitus, whom he often mentions, he predicts the ‘‘immortality ” of the books of his history, and he even proffered his services in reading .Tacitus’s MSS.**. He writes also to Suctonins and to Cornelius Nepos, the lattcr of whom he spcaks of as “vir gravissimus, doctissimus, disertisstmus;” the former he praises to Trajan,? in asking for him the jus triwm liberorum, as ‘** probissimum honestis- simum eruditissimum virum.”

Pliny's Zpistles were first printed in 1471, but incomplete, as was the Aldine edition of 1508. A full account of the MSS. and editions is given by H. Keil in his preface; among the best editions of later times are that of Cortius, published in 1734; after his death that of G. H. Schaefer (who reprinted with corrections, in 1805, the text of Gesner and Gierig, 1800), and that of Maurice Doering, 1843. The latest and best is the Teubner text of II. Keil (Leipsic, 1865, 12mo), with full indices and brief introductory notice of the most important different readings. (PE. APP)

PLOCK (Puorsk), a government of Russian Poland, on the right bank of the Vistula, having the provinces of Western and Eastern Prussia on the north, and the Polish provinces of Lomza on the east and Warsaw on the south ; its area is 4200 square miles. Its flat surface, 350 to 500 feet above the sea-level, gently rises towards the north, where it merges in the Baltic coast-ridge of the Prussian lake district. Only a few hills reach 600 feet above the sea, while the broad valley of the Vistula has an elevation of but 130 to 150 feet. In the west—district of Lipno— broad terraces covered with forests, small lakes, and ponds, aud very poor in vegetation, descend from the Baltic lake- district towards the plains of Ptock ; and in the central district of Mtawa extensive marshes cover the upper basin of the Wkra. The Vistula borders the province on the south, almost from Warsaw to Thorn, receiving the Skrwa and Wkra, which last rises on the Prussian frontier, and, flowing south-east, joins the Narew close to its confluence with the Vistula, in the south-eastern corner of Ptock. The Drweca, or Drewenz, flows along the north-west boundary of Ptock, while several small tributaries of the Narew water the north-eastern district of Ciechanow. Petty lakes and ponds dot the plains in the west, and the whole country bears traces of a very wide extension of lakes during the post-Glacial period. Peat-bogs, used of late for fuel, and marshes containing bog-iron, fill many depressions in the north, while the more elevated parts of the plains are covered with fertile clays, or a kind of "black-earth." Lacustrine post-Glacial deposits cover all depressions in the thick sheet of boulder clay, with Scandinavian erratic boulders, which extends everywhere over the Tertiary sands and marls,—these last containing masses of silicated wood and lignite. Layers of gypsum are found in the hills on the Vistula. The soil is very fertile in several parts of the province, especially in the district of Lipno and closer to the Vistula, and agriculture is the chief occupation of the inhabitants even in the towns.

The chief crops are, however, rye, oats, and barley ; but wheat gives good crops in some parts of the province ; beet-root is also cultivated for sugar, especi- ally on the great estates of the west, where machinery finds application to agriculture on.a large scale; in the north the property is much divided, and the szlachta- landholders, very numerous in Ciechanow, are far from prosperous. The average crops of late years may be valued at 1,700,000 quarters of corn and 1,575,000 quarters of potatoes. The forests, which formerly covered very extensive tracts, are much destroyed now, but still Ptock is one of the best wooded provinces of Poland.

The population of the province of Ptock, which was but 490,950 in 1873, reached 538,150 in 1881, and must be now about 557,000. It is Polish throughout, but contains a large admixture of Jews

(more than 11 per cent.) and of Germans, the number of whom is yearly increasing. Besides agriculture, the inhabitants find a per-

1 Of, i. 5, $12; iv. 8, 84. pcee wi, 205 viii, 7 5 vil, 93),8 1 wix) 14. 3 Ho. Pl. et Traj. 94,

Fi 22%

manent source of occupation in shipping on the Vistula, some mining, and various domestic trades, such as the fabrication of wooden cars, sledges, and wheels, and textile industry. The whole value of manufactures in 1879 was £211,000 (flour mills £68,900, saw-mills £17,500, sugar works £45,700, and iron works £32,200), and 1750 hands were employed. There is some export trade, especially in the Lipno district ; but its development is limited by the lack of facilities of communication, the best being those offered by the Vistula. The railway from Warsaw to Dantzic, via Ciechanow and Mtawa, will now help the eastern part of the province.

Since the Prussian occupation, and perhaps under the influence of Prussian neighbourhood, the province of Ptock is somewhat better supplied with primary schools, cspecially in its northern districts, than other provinces of Poland ; still there are only 272 primary schools (exclusive of the Jewish heders), with 15,000 scholars. There are two colleges for boys and girls, and one seimi- nary for teachers at Wymysty.

The province is divided into eight districts, the chief towns of which are Ptock (22,140 inhabitants), Ciechanow (5800), Lipno (5650), Mtawa (10,050), Plonsk (6350), Przasnysz (7200), Rypin (3350), and Sierpce (6850). Novogcorgievsk, or Modlin, on the Vistula, 12 miles below its confluence with the Narew, is a fortress of the first rank ; Wyszgorod (4400) has considerable trade in corn.

History.—After the sccond dismemberment of Poland in 1793, what is now the government of Ptock became part of Prussia. It fell under Russian dominion after the treaty of Vienna, and, in the division of that time into five provinces, extended over the western part of the present province of Lomza, which was created in 1864 from the Ostrolenka and Pultusk districts of Ptock together with parts of the province of Augustowo.

PEOCK, capital of the. above province, is situated on the right bank of the Vistula, 60 miles to the west-north- west of Warsaw. It is well built of stone ona high hill facing the river, and has an ancient cathedral. It is now of importance only as the seat of the provincial adminis- tration; and its population, which is partly agricultural, increases very slowly. In May 1883 it had 19,640 inhabit- ants, of whom 7135 were Jews and about 450 Germans. The Russian garrison numbered 2500. Ptock has two colleges for boys and girls, with 864 male and 496 female scholars, and twelve primary schools (exclusive of the Jewish heders), with 890 scholars. Its manufactures are insignificant (not above 100,000 roubles yearly), and there is some trade in agricultural produce.

PLOTINUS. See NEopiatonism, vol. xvii. p. 335 sq.

PLOUGH. See Acricutrurgy, vol. i. p. 311.

PLOVER, French Pluvier, Old French Plower, which doubtless has its origin in the Latin pluwvia, rain (as witness the German equivalent Regenpfeifer, Rain-fifer) ; but the connexion of ideas between the words therein involved, so that the former should have become a bird’s name, is doubtful. Belon (1555) says that the name Plumer is bestowed “pour ce qu’on le prend mieux en temps pluvieux qu’ en nulle autre saison,” which is not in accordance with modern observation, for in rainy weather Plovers are wilder and harder to approach than in fine. Others have thought it is from

the spotted (as though with rain-drops) upper plumage of two of the commonest species of Plovers, to which the name especially belongs—the Charadrius pluvialis of Linneus, or Golden Plover, and the Squatarola helvetica of recent ornithologists, or Grey Plover. Both these birds are very similar in general appearance, but the latter is the larger and has an aborted hind-toe on each foot. Its axillary feathers are also black, while in the Golden Plover they are pure white, and this difference often affords a ready means of distinguishing the two species when on the wing, even at a considerable distance. The Grey Plover is a bird of almost circum- polar range, breeding in the far north of America, Asia, and eastern Europe, frequenting in spring and autumn the coasts of the more temperate parts of each continent, and generally retiring further southward in winter—examples

4 But for this really unimportant distinction both birds could doubtless have been kept by ornithologists in the same genus, for they agree in most other structural characters. As it is they have long been sundered.

not unfrequently reaching the Cape Colony, Ceylon, Australia, and even Tasmania. Charadrius pluvialis has a much narrower distribution, though where it occurs it 1s much more numerous as a species. Its breeding quarters do not extend further than from Iceland to western Siberia,

but include the more elevated tracts in the British Islands,

whence in autumn it spreads itself, often in immense flocks, over the cultivated districts if the fields be sufficiently open. Here some will remain so long as the absence of frost or snow permits, but the majority make for the Mediter- ranean basin, or the countries beyond, in which to winter , and, as with the Grey Plover, stragglers find their way to the southern extremity of Africa. The same may be said, mutatis mutandis, of what are usually deemed to be two other cognate forms, C. virginicus and C. fulvus, which respectively represent C. pluvialis in America and eastern Asia, where they are also known by the same English name. The discrimination of these two birds from one another requires a very acute eye, and room is here wanting in which to specify the minute points in which they differ ;1 but both are

easily distinguished from their European ally by their smaller size, their greyish-brown axillary feathers, and their proportionally longer and more slender legs. All, however,—and the same is the case with the Grey Plover, —undergo precisely the same seasonal change of colour, greatly altering their appearance and equally affecting both sexes. In the course of spring or early summer nearly the whole of the lower plumage from the chin to the vent, which during winter has been nearly pure white, becomes deep black. ‘This is partly due to the growth of new feathers, but partly to some of the old feathers actually changing their colour, though the way in which the alteration is brought about is still uncertain.? A corresponding alteration is at the same season observable in the upper plumage ; but this seems chiefly due (as in many other birds) to the shed- ding of the lighter-coloured margins of the feathers, and does not produce so complete a transformation of appear- ance, though the beauty of the wearer is thereby greatly increased.

Though the birds just spoken of are those most emphati- cally entitled to be called Plovers, the group of Ringed Plovers before mentioned (KiLLDEER, vol. xiv. p. 76) and the Lapwine (vol. xiv. p. 308), with its allies, have, according to usage, hardly less claim to the name, which is also extended to some other more distant forms that cau here have only the briefest notice. Among them one of the most remarkable is the “ Zickzack ” (so called from its cry)—the zpoxtAos of Herodotus (see Hummine-Birp, vol. xi. p. 358, n. 3), the Pluvianus or Hyas xgyptius of ornithologists, celebrated for the services it is said to render to the crocodile—a small bird whose plumage of delicate lavender and cream-colour is relieved by markings of black and white. This probably belongs to the small section generally known as Coursers, Cursorius, of which some eight or ten species inhabit the deserts of Africa and India, while one, C. gallicus, occasionally strays to Europe and even to England. Allied to them are the curious PRATINCOLES (q.v.), also peculiar to the Old World, while

3 Schlegel (Mus. _Pays-Bas, Cursores, p. 58) states that in sortie examples it seems impossible to determine the form to which they

belong; but ordinarily American Speciinens are rather larger and |

ee, and have shorter toes than those from Asia. _ * Itis much to be regretted that ornithologists favourably situated i regard to zoological gardens have not more extensively used oppor-

lee which might thus be accorded to them of conducting useful

would be hardl under the best

unremitting attention. The results of some i i : ! partial observations superintended by Yarrell in the gardens of the Zoological Society of

London are given in its Transactions (i 13- i done there since of this nature, Re le

1}

PLU—PLU

the genera Thinocoris aud Attagis form an outlying group peculiar to South America, that is by some systematists regarded as a separate Family 7’henocorvdx, near which are often placed the singular SHEATHBILLS (q.v.). By most authorities the Stone-Curlews (CURLEW, vol. vi. p. 712), the OYSTER-CATCHERS (vol. xviii. p. 111), and TuRNSTONES (g.v.) are also regarded as belonging to the Family Char- adriidx, and some would add the Avocets (Recurvirostra) and Stivrs (q.v.), among which the Cavalier, Dromas ardeola—a form that has been bandied about from one Family and even Order to another—should possibly find its resting-place. It frequents the sandy shores of the Indian Ocean and Bay of Bengal from Natal to Aden, and thence to Ceylon, the Malabar coast, and the Andaman and Nicobar Islands,—a white and black bird, mounted on long legs, witll webbed feet, and a bill so shaped as to have made some of the best ornithologists lodge it among the TERNS (¢.v.).

Though the various forms here spoken of as Plovers are almost certainly closely allied, they must be regarded as constituting a very indefinite group, for hardly any strong line of demarcation can be drawn between them and the SANDPIPERS aiid SNipEs (q.v.). Uuited, however, with both of the latter, under the name of Limicolex, after the method approved by the most

recent systematists, the whole form an assemblage the compactness of which no observant ornithologist can hesitate to adinit, even if he be not inclined to treat as its nearest relations the Bustards on the one hand and the Gave on the other, as before suggested (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 45). (A. N.)

PLUCKER, Junius (1801-1868), mathematician and physicist, was born at Elberfeld on the 16th June 1801. After being educated at the gymnasium at Diisseldorf and studying at the universities of Bonn, Heidelberg, and Berlin, he went in 1823 for a short time to Paris, where he came under the influénce of the great school of French geometers, whose founder, Monge, was only recently dead ; and there can be no doubt that his intercourse with the mathematicians of that school, more particularly with Poncelet and Gergonne, greatly helped to determine the earlicr part at least of his career. In 1825 he was received as “ privat-docent ” at Bonn, and after three years he was made professor extraordinary. The title of his “habilitationsschrift,” Generalem analyseos applicationem ad ea qux geometrie altioris et mechanice basis et funda- menta sunt e serie Tayloria deducit Julius Pliicker (Bonn, 1824), indicated the course of his future researches. The mathematical influence of Monge had two sides represented respectively by his two great works, the Géométrie Descrup- tive and the Application de l Analyse a la Géométrie. Although fully master of those general ideas of modern geometry whose development began with the publication of the former of these works, Pliicker’s actual labours lay more in the direction of the latter. It was his aim to furnish modern geometry with suitable analytical methods and thus to give it an independent analytical development. In this effort he was as successful as were his great con- teinporaries Poncelet and Steiner in cultivating geometry in its purely synthetical form. From his lectures and researches at Bonn sprang his first great work Analytisch-Geometrische Entwickelungen (vol. i. 1828, vol. ii. 1831).

In the first volume of this treatise Pliicker introduced for the first time? the method of abridged notation which has become one of the characteristic features of modern analytical geometry. The

: : : eculiarity of this method consists in this, that the Ictters uscd in ervations on this subject and others of similar kind. Elsewhere it | ; s :

y possible to carry on such an investigation, and even | circumstances it would not be easy and would require |

the equations of curves and surfaces represent, not coordinates of a point with respect to arbitrary chosen axes, but straight lines, or it may be curves or surfaces, intrinsically related to the figure

3 The independent development of a similar idea by the brilliant

| young French geometer Bobillier (1797-1882) was cut short by his premature death.

Pi, tec Kn R

under discussion. For example, if it be wished to investigate the properties of a conic section with respect to a pair of tangents and their chord of eontact, we write its equation wv+w°?=0, where w=0, v=0, w=0 represent the two tangents and the chord of contact respectively. This procedure has two great advantages. It enables us to greatly abridge the necessary analytical equations, to arrive at them more easily, and thus to lighten or altogether avoid the cumbersome algebraieal ealculations which had broken the back of the old-fashioned Cartesian geometry and arrested its progress altogether; and it greatly facilitates the geometrical interpretation of analytical results whether intermediate or final. In the first volume of the Hniwickelungen, Pliicker applied the method of abridged notation to the straight line, circle, and conic sections, and he subscquently used it with great effect in many of his researches, notably in his theory of eubic eurves.

In the sccond volume of the Entwickelungen, Pliicker clearly established on a firm and independent basis the great principle of duality. This principle had originally been established by Poncelet as a corollary on the theory of the pole and polar of a conic section. Gergonne maintained the independent and fundamental nature of the principle, and henee arose a violent discussion between him and Poncelet into which Pliicker was drawn. He settled the matter in Gergonne’s favour by introducing the notion of the coordinates of a line and of a plane, and showing that in plane geometry, for example, we could with equal readiness represent a point either by means of coordinates or by means of an equation, and that the same was true of a

line. Hence it appeared that the point or the line in plane geometry, and the point or the plane in solid geometry, could with equal readiness and with equal reason be taken as elements. It was thus made evident that any system of equations proving a theorem regarding points and lines or regarding points and planes could at once be read as proving another in which the words point and dine or the words point and plane were everywhere interchanged.

Another subject of importance which Pliicker took up in the Znt-wickelungen was the curious paradox noticed by Euler and Cramer, that, when a certain number of the intersections of two algebraical curves are given, the rest are thereby determined. Gergonne had shown that when a number of the intersections of two curves of the (p+q)th degree lie on a eurve of the pth degree the rest lie on a curve of the gth degree. Pliicker finally (Gergonne Ann., 1828-29) showed how inany points must be taken ou a curve of any degree so that eurves of the same degrec (infinite in number) may be drawn through them, and proved that all the points, beyond the given ones, in which these curves intersect the given one are fixed by the original choice. Later, simultaneously with Jacobi, he extended these results to curves and surfaces of unequal order. Allied to the matter just mentioned was Pliicker's discovery of the six equations counecting the numbers of singularities in algebraical curves. It will be best described in the words of Clebsch :—" Cramer was the first to give a more exact discussion of the singularities of alge- braical eurves. The considcration of singularities in the modern geometrical sense originated with Poncelet. He showed that the elass & of a eurve of the nth order, which Gergonne by an extra- ordinary mistake had considered to be identical with its order, is in general n(7-1); and hence arose a paradox whose explanation became possible only through the theory of the simple singularities, By the principle of duality the order 7 of a curve should be derived in the same way from the class as k is from. But if we derive n in this way from & we return not to n but to a much greater number. Hence there must be causes which effect a reduction during this operation. Poncelet had already recognized that a double point reduces the class by 2, a cusp at least by 3, and a multiple point of the pth order, all of whose tangents are distinct, by 4p(p—1). Here it was that Pliicker took up the question. By first directly determining the number of the points of inflexion, eonsidering the influence of double

points and cusps, and finally applying the principle of duality to the result obtained, he was led to the famous formule for the singularities of curves which bear his name, and which completely resolve the paradox of Poncelet-—formule which already in the year 1854 Steiner could cite as the ‘well known,’ without, however, in any way mentioning Pliicker’s name in con- uexion with them. Pliicker communicated his formule in the first place to Crelle’s Journal, vol xii. (1834), and gave a further exten- sion and complete aecount of his theory in his Theorte der Alge- braischen Curven, 1839.”

In 1833 Pliicker left Bonn for Berlin, where he occupied for a short time a post in the Friedrich Wilhelm’s Gymnasium. He was then called in 1834 as ordinary professor of mathe- matics to Halle. While there he published his System der Analytischen Geometrie, auf neue Betrachtungsweisen gegriin- det, und insbesondere eine Ausfiihrliche Theorie der Curven dritter Ordnung enthaltend, Berlin, 1835. In this work he mtroduced the use of linear functions in place of the ordinary coordinates, and thereby increased the generality

229

| and elegance of his equations; he also made the fullest use of the principles of collineation and reciprocity. In fact he develops and applies to plane curves, mainly of the third degree, the methods which he had indicated in the Entwickelungen and in various memoirs published in the interim. His discussion of curves of the third order turned mainly on the nature of their asymptotes, and depended on the fact that the equation to every such curve can be put into the form pgr+ps =0. He gives a com- plete enumeration of them, including two hundred and nineteen species. In 1836 Pliicker returned to Bonn as ordinary professor of mathematics. Here he published his Theorie der Algebraischen Curven which formed a con- tinuation of the System der Analytischen Geometrie. The work falls into two parts, which treat of the asymptotes and singularities of algebraical curves respectively ; and extensive use is made of the method of counting constants which plays so large a part in modern geometrical researches. Among the results given we may mention the enumeration of curves of the fourth order according to the nature of their asymptotes, and according to the nature of their

singularities, and the determination for the first time of the number of double tangents of a curve of the fourth order devoid of singular points.

Froni this time Pliicker's geometrical researches practi- cally ceased, only to be resumed towards the end of his life. It is true that he published in 1846 his System der Geometrie des Raumes in neuer Analytischer Behandlungs-weise, but this contains merely a more systematic and polished rendering of his earlier results. It has been said that this cessation from pure mathematical work was due to the inappreciative reception accorded by his country- men to his labours, and to their jealousy of his fame in other lands; it seems likely, however, that it was due in some degree to the fact that he was called upon to under- take the work of the physical chair at Bonn in addition to his proper duties. In 1847 he was made actual professor of physics, and from that time his wondrous

scientific activity took a new and astonishing turn.

Pliicker now devoted himself to experimental physics in the strictest sense as exclusively:as he had formerly done to pure mathematics, and with equally brilliant results. His first physical memoir, published in Poggendorff's Annalen, vol. \xxii., 1847, contains his great discovery of magnecrystallic action. Then followed a long series of researches, mostly published in the same journal, on the properties of magnetic and diamagnetic bodies, establishing results which are now part and parcel of our magnetic knowledge. It is unnecessary here to analyse these re-searches, of which an account has been given in the article MAGNETISM (vol. xv. p. 262 sg.); it will be sufficient to say that in this work Pliicker was the worthy collaborateur, and, had it not been that their fast friendship and mutual admiration renders the word inappropriate, we might have said rival, of Faraday.

In 1858 (Pogg. Ann., vol. ciii.) he published the first of his classical researches on the action of the magnet on the electric discharge in rarefied gases (see ELECTRICITY, vol. vill. p. 74). It is needless now to dilate upon the great beauty and importance of these researches, which remain the leading lights in one of the darkest channels of magnetic science. All the best work that has recently been done on this important subject is simply development of what Pliicker did, and in some instances (notably in many

of the researches of Crookes) merely reproduction on a larger scale of his results.

Pliicker, first by himself and afterwards in conjunction with Hittorf, made many important discoveries in the spectroscopy of gases. He was the first to use the vacuum tube with the capillary part now called a Geissler's tube,

by means of which the luminous intensity of feeble electric discharges was raised sufficiently to allow of spectroscopic investigation. He anticipated Bunsen and Kirchhoff in announcing that the lines of the spectrum were character- istic of the chemical substance which emitted them, and in indicating the value of this discovery in chemical analysis. According to Hittorf he was the first who saw the three lincs-of the hydrogen spectrum, which a few months after ~~his death were recognized in the spectrum of the'solar protuberances, and thus solved one of the mysteries of modernastronomy. Fora fuller account of the important discoveries regarding the influence of tempera~~ ture and pressure on the nature of gaseous spectra made in Gonjunction with Hittorf see SpEcrRUM ANALYSIS. Hittorf, who had good means of knowing, tells us that Pliicker never. attained great manual dexterity as an experimenter. He had always, however, very clear con- ceptions as to what was wanted, and possessed in a high degree the power of putting others in possession of his ideas and rendering them enthusiastic in carrying them into practice. Thus he was able to procure from the Sayner Hiitte in 1846 the great electromagnet which he turned to such noble use in his magnetic researches ; thus he attached to his service his former pupil the skilful mechanic Jessel ; and thus he discovered and fully availed himself of the ability of the great glass-blower Geissler, in conjunction with whom he devised many of those physical instruments whose use all over the civilized world has rendered the name of the artificer of Bonn immortal. It was thus also that, when he felt his own want of chemical knowledge and manipulative skill, he sought and obtained the assistance of Hittorf, one of the ablest of German experimenters. Induced by the encouragement of his mathematical friends in England, Pliicker in 1865 returned once more to the field in which he first became known to fame, and adorned it by one more great achievement

—the invention of what is now called Line Geometry. A remark containing the fundamentally new idea of this new geometry had, as Clebsch remarks, already been embodied in the System der Geometrie des Raumes :—“ A straight line depends on four linear constants. The four magnitudes which we consider as variables receive for any given line constant values, which may be easily constructed and are the four coordin- ates of the straight line. A single equation between these four coordinates does not determine a locus for the straight line, but merely a law according to which infinite space is made up of straight lines.” Here we have the new idea of the straight line considered as an element of space, and of the “complex,” as Pliicker afterwards called it, made up of a threefold infinity of straight lines subject to a onefold relation. Space thus becomes as it were four-dimensioned, and we have, instead of the three degrees of freedom of space considered as an aggregate of points, four degrees of freedom according as the linear element is (1) absolutely unconditioned, (2) subject to a onefold, (3) subject to a twofold, or (4) subject to a threefold relation. In the first case we have the complex of straight lines, in the second the congruency of lines, in the third the regulus or ruled surface. The last of these geometrical figures had been considered long before, and even the congruency had been discussed before or independently of Pliicker, notably by Hamilton and Kummer. The general conception of the linear complex seems to be entirely due to Pliicker. At all events he developed the notion to such an extent that he is entitled to be called the founder of Line Geometry, in which the theory of the complex holds a fundamental position. His first memoir on the subject was published in the Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society of London. It attracted much attention,

and almost at once became the source of a large literature in which the new science was developed. Pliicker himself worked out the theory of complexes of the first and second order, introducing in his investigation of the latter the fanious complex surfaces of which he caused those models to be constructed which are now so well known to the student of the higher mathematics. He was engaged in bringing out a large work embodying the results. of his researches in Line Geometry when he died on the 22d May 1868. The work was so far advanced that his pupil and assistant Klein was able to complete and publish it, there- by erecting the worthiest monument to the genius of his master, whose wonderful scientific activity endured to the very last. Of the very numerous honours bestowed on Pliicker by the various scientific societies of Europe it may suffice to mention here the Copley medal, awarded to him by the Royal Society two years before his death.

Most of the facts in the above notice have been taken from Clebsch's obituary notice of Pliicker (4bh. d. Kén. Ges. d. Wiss. z. Gottingen, xvi., 1871), to which is appended an appreciation of Pliicker's physical researches by Hittorf, and a list of Pliicker's works by F. Klein. See also Gerhardt, Geschichte der Mathe- matik in Deutschland, p. 282; and Pliicker's life by Dronke (Bonn, 1871). (G. CH.)

PLUM (Prunus). Our cultivated plums are supposed to have originated from one or other of the species P. domestica or P. insititia. The young shoots of P. domestica are glabrous, and the fruit oblong; in P. ¢nsititia the young shoots are pubescent, and the fruit more or less globose. A third species, the common sloe or blackthorn, P. spinosa, has stout spines; its flowers expand before the leaves ; and its fruit is very rough to the taste, in which particulars it differs from the two preceding. These dis- tinctions, however, are not maintained with much con- stancy. P. domestica is a native of Anatolia and the Caucasus, and is considered to be only naturalized in Europe. J. insititid, on the other hand, is wild in southern Europe, in Armenia, and along the shores of the Caspian. In the Swiss lake-dwellings stones of the P. cnsititia as well as of P. spinosa have been found, but not those of P. domestica. Nevertheless, the Romans cultivated large numbers of plums. The cultivated forms are now ex- tremely numerous, some of the

groups, such as the green gages, the damsons, and the egg plums being very distinct, and even reproducing themselves from seed. This, how- ever, cannot be depended on, and hence the choice varie- ties are propagated by budding or by layers. The colour of the fruit varies from green, pale yellow, red, up to deep purple, the size from that of a small cherry to that of a walnut; the form is oblong acute or obtuse.at both. ends or globular ; the stones or kernels vary in like manner; and the flavour, season of ripening, and duration are-all subject to variation. From its hardihood the plum is one of the most valuable fruit trees for the farmer, as it is not parti- cular as to soil, and the crop is less likely to be destroyed by spring frosts. Prunes and French plums are merely plums dried in the sun. Their preparation is carried on on a large scale in Bosnia and Servia, as well as in Spain, Portugal, and southern France. The cherry plum, Prunus myrobalana, is employed chiefly as a stock for grafting upon, and for the sake of its ornamental flowers. See also HorvTicururg, vol. xii. p. 275.

PLUMBAGO, a name frequently applied to graphite in allusion to its remote resemblance to lead, whence it is popularly called “black lead.” When Scheele, in 1779, examined this mineral he regarded it as a compound of carbon and iron, and consequently termed it a “carburet of iron”; but Vanuxem in 1825 showed that the iron existed in the form of an oxide, and was not essential to the constitution of the mineral—a conclusion also reached about this time by Karsten. It thus became fully estab-

lished that plumbago is simply an impure form of native | a considerable practice in equity; and, after an apprentice-

carbon. Plumbago is principally used in the manufacture of “black-lead” pencils, for which purpose it was at one time very extensively worked at Borrowdale in Cumber- land. It was known locally as “ wad,” and a grant of the manor of Borrowdale, as far back as the reign of James L.,

cawke.” The Cumberland plumbago is found in pipes, strings, and irregular masses known as “sops,” which

occur in a dyke of diorite, associated with a compact blue |

diabase, penetrating some of the altered ash-beds of the volcanic series. Important mines of plunbago, yielding fine pencil lead, were opened some years ago by M. Alibert in the government of Irkutsk in eastern Siberia. A good deal of plumbago is also worked near Passau in Bavaria. The graphite so largely used, when mixed with fire-clay, in the manufacture of “ black-lead ” crucibles, is obtained chiefly from Ceylon; and it is notable that, notwithstand- ing the purity of the Ceylon plumbago, it is not applicable to the manufacture of lead pencils. Large quantities of plumbago occur in the Laurentian limestones of Canada ; while in the United States the mineral is worked at Sturbridge, Mass.; at Ticonderoga and Fishkill, N.Y. ; at Brandon, Vt.; and at Wake, N.C. yielded by the mines of Ashford in Connecticut. Among the minor applications of plumbago may be mentioned its use as a lubricating agent for machinery and for polishing cast iron. In the preamble to an Act for protecting the black-lead mines of Cumberland, 25 Geo. II. ¢. 10, it is stated that plumbago is necessary “for divers useful pur- poses, and more particularly in the casting of bomb-shells, round shot, and cannon balls.” It was formerly held in repute in medicine, and a writer on the Cumberland plumbago in 1709 asserts—“ It’s a present remedy for the cholick ; it easeth the pain of gravel stone and strangury ; and for these and the like uses it’s much bought up by apothecaries and physicians.” It is notable that plumbago is occasionally found in masses of meteoric iron, and that a substance of similar physical and chemical characters is produced in the blast-furnace during the preparation of cast iron, and is known to the workmen as dish. Plum- bago bears a strong resemblance to the mineral termed molybdenite, while it resembles to a less extent certain varieties of micaceous iron-ore ; the molybdenite, however, is easily distinguished by giving a slightly greenish streak, while the iron-ore yields a red streak.

For the mineralogical characteristics of plumbago or graphite, see vol. xvi. p. 381; for its chemical relations, vol. v. p. 86; and for its use in crucible-making, vol. ix. p. 843.

PLUNKET, Witiram Conynenam PLUNKET, Baron (1765-1854), an eminent lawyer, orator, and statesman, was born in the county of Fermanagh in July 1765. He was educated in boyhood by his father, a man of considerable ability and reputation ; and in 1779 he became a student of Trinity College, Dublin. Though well versed in regular

academic studies, he was most conspicuous in his university |

career as the acknowledged leader of the Historical Society, the debating club of Trinity College, then full of young men of remarkable promise.

Having entered Lincoln's Inn in 1784, Plunket was called to the Irish bar in 1787. His intellect was exactly that of a jurist or a great master of equity—not too refin- ing or overprone to speculation, and yet capable of the highest legal generalizations, and of applying them to masses of fact, however tedious and complicated. His power of close and rapid argument was very remarkable, his memory equally capacious and exact, and he had enriched an ample store of professional learning with the fruits of assiduous general study. Although at first his Progress at the bar was not rapid, he gradually obtained

It was formerly |

|

ship of eleven years as a junior, he was raised to the rank of king's counsel in 1798. :

In 1798 he entered the Irish parliament as member for Charlemont. His political faith was already settled, and

_ was only slightly modified in after life, at. least as regards refers to "the wad-holes and wad, commonly called black

its cardinal tenets. He was an anti-Jacobin Whig of the

' school of Burke, not ungracefully filled: with a fervent

Irish patriotism. He disliked the principles’of the French Revolution, and its excesses made such an impression upon him that he always showed the greatest antipathy to merely democratic movements. But he was a sincere admirer of the constitutional government of England as established in 1688 ; he even justified the ascendency it had given to the Established Church, although he thought that the time had arrived for extending toleration to Roman Catholics and dissenters. To transfer it to Ireland as thus modified, and under an independent legislature, was even in his youth the only reform he sought for his country; and, although he opposed the Union with all his power, this was only because he thought it incompatible with this object.

When Plunket became a member of parliament, the Irish Whig party was almost extinct, and Pitt was feeling his way to accomplish the Union. In this he was seconded ably by Lord Castlereagh, by the panic caused by a wild insurrection, and by the secession of Grattan froin politics. When, however, the measure was actually brought forward, it encountered a vehement opposition; and among the ablest and fiercest of its adversaries was Plunket, whose powers as a great orator were now universally recognized. His speeches in these debates show all the force of reagon- ing, the admirable arrangement, and the grasp of facts which. characterize his later efforts; but they are some- what disfigured by personal invective, and here and there betray an indecent acrimony. They raised him, however, immediately to the front rank of his party; and, when Grattan re-entered the moribund senate, he took his seat next to Plunket, thus significantly recognizing the place the latter had attained.

After the union of Great Britain and Ireland Plunket returned to the practice of his profession, and became at once a leader of the equity bar. In 1803, after the out- break of Emmet’s rebellion, he was selected as one of the crown lawyers to prosecute the unfortunate enthusiast, and at the trial, in summing up the evidence, delivered a speech of remarkable power, which shows his characteristic dislike of revolutionary outbursts. For this speech he was exposed to much unmerited obloquy, and more espe- cially to the abuse of Cobbett, against whom he brought a successful action for damages. In 1804, in Pitt’s second administration, he became solicitor-general and then attor- ney-general for Ireland; and he continued in office when Lord Grenville caine into power at the head of the ministry of All the

Talents. Plunket held a seat in the imperial parliament during this period, and there made several able speeches in favour of Catholic emancipation, and of continuing the war with France; but, when the Grenville cabinet was dissolved, he returned once more to professional life, and for some years devoted himself exclusively to it.

In 1812, having amassed a considerable fortune, he re- entered parliament as member for Trinity College, and identified himself thoroughly with the Grenville or anti- Gallican Whigs. He was now in the full maturity of his powers, and very soon was acknowledged one of the first orators, if not the first, of the House of Commons. His reverence for the English constitution in church and state, his strong dislike of l'rench principles, his steady advocacy of the war with Napoleon, and his antipathy to anything like democracy made him popular with the Tory party. On the other hand, he was the zealous and most able sup-

porter of Catholic emancipation; he was not averse to some measure of parliamentary reform; and, as generally he was on the side of constitutional progress, he was reckoned a principal ornament of one of the sections of the Whigs.

In 1822 Plunket was once more attorney-general for Ireland, with Lord Wellesley as lord-lieutenant. One of his first official acts was to prosecute for the " bottle riot," an attempt on his part to put down the Orange faction in Ireland. But, though always the advocate of the Catholic claims, he strenuously opposed the Catholic Association, which about this time, under the guidance of O'Connell, began its extraordinary and successful agitation. He struggled vehemently to extinguish it, and in 1825 made a powerful speech against it; and thus the curious spectacle was seen of the ablest champion of an oppressed sect doing all in his power to check its efforts to emancipate itself.

In 1827 Plunket was made master of the rolls in Eng- land; but, owing to the professional jealousy of the bar, who not unnaturally thought him an intruder, he was obliged to abandon this office. Soon afterwards he became chief justice of the common pleas in Ireland, and was then created a peer of

the United Kingdom. In 1830 he was appointed lord chancellor of Ireland, and held the office, with an interval of a few months only, until 1841, when he finally retired from public life. During this period he made some able speeches in favour of parliamentary reform ; but they were scarcely equal to his earlier efforts ; and his reputation as a judge, though far from low, was not so eminent as might have been expected. He died in 1854, in his ninetieth year. W. 0. M.)

PLUSH (French Peluche), a textile fabric having a cut nap or pile the same as fustian or velvet. Originally the pile of plush consisted of mohair or worsted yarn, but now silk by itself or with a cotton backing is used for plush, the distinction from velvet being found in the longer and less dense pile of plush. The material is largely used for upholstery and furniture purposes, and is also much employed in dress and millinery. The most distinctive form of plush is that which has taken- the place of the napped beaver felt in the dress hats of gentlemen, which are now consequently known as “silk” hats. That plush, a considerable manufacture, is principally made in Lyons.

PLUTARCH (II\ovrapyos Xatpwvevs), a Greek prose writer, born at Cheeronea in Beeotia, and a contemporary of Tacitus and the Plinys. The precise dates of his birth and death are unknown ; but it is certain that he flourished under the Roman emperors from Nero to Trajan inclusive, so that from 50 to 100 a.p. will probably include the best years of his life. ‘here is some probability that he out- lived Trajan,! who died in 117. In the Consolation to his Wrfe on the loss of his young daughter, he tells us (f 2) that they had brought up four sons besides, one of whom was called by the name of Plutarch’s brother, Lamprias. We learn incidentally from this treatise (§ 10) that the writer had been initiated in the secret mysteries of Dionysus, which held that the soul was imperishable, He seems to have been an independent thinker rather than an adherent to any particular school of philosophy. His forte, so to say, was learning, and the application of it to the casualties of human existence. His vast acquaintance with the litera- ture of his time is everywhere apparent ; and with history especially he was thoroughly conversant, and hardly less so with physics.

The celebrity of Plutarch, or at least his popularity, is st founded on his forty-six Parallel Lives. He is

ought to have written this work in his later years after

1 The scanty evidences of date c iti , (ollected from Plutarch's writings are well discussed by Long in Smith's Dict, of Biog., iii. p. 429. '

his return to his native town Cheronea. Huis knowledge of Latin and of Roman history he must have partly derived from some years' residence in Rome and other parts of Italy,? though he says he was too much engaged in lecturing (doubtless in Greek, on philosophy) to turn his attention much to Roman literature during that period. Long observes that "we must expect to find him imperfectly informed on Roman institutions, and we can detect in him some errors. Yet, on the whole, his Roman lives do not often convey erroneous notions; if the detail is incorrect, the general impression is true."

Plutarch's design in writing the Parallel Lives—for this is the title which he gives them in dedicating Theseus and Romulus to Sosius Senecio—appears to have been the publication, in successive books, of authentic biographies in pairs, a Greek and a Roman (generally with some approxiniation to synchronism as well as some well-marked resemblances in political career) being selected as the subject of each. In the introduction to the Theseus he speaks of having already issued his Lycurgus and Numa, viewing them, no doubt, as bearing a resemblance to each other in their legislative character; and so Theseus and Romulus are compared as the legendary founders of states.

In the opening sentence of the life of Alexander he says that ''en thes book he has written the lives of Alexander and Cesar" (Julius), and in his Demosthenes, where he again (§ 1) mentions his friend Sosius, Séecvos, he calls the life of this orator and Cicero the fifth book. It may there- fore fairly be inferred that Plutarch's original idea was simply to set (rapaBddrev, Nic., § 1) a Greek warrior, statesman, orator, or legislator side by side with some noted Roman celebrated for the same qualities. In his age, when Rome held the supremacy, but Greece was still looked up to as

the centre and source of wisdom and art, such a comparison of the greatest men of both nations had a special propriety and significance, and was more than a mere literary exercise. It was a patriotic theme, to show the superiority of this or that race; and Plutarch, in a sense, belonged to both. Now Alexander and C. Ceesar, Demosthenes and Cicero, Solon and Valerius Publicola, have some fairly obvious resemblances, which are not so conspicuous in some other pairs. But the sequel which follows most (not all) of the Leaves, entitled cvyxpucts, viz., a comparison in detail, is by modern critics rejected as spurious. It was manifestly added as an appendix from a misapprehension of Plutarch's real motive; the effort to bring out exact points of resemblances which are either forced or fanciful far exceeded the design contemplated by him. Moreover, the marked difference in style between the Bio. and the cvyxpices is quite decisive of the question.

Nearly all the lives are in pairs; but the series con- cludes with single biographies of Artaxerxes, Aratus (of Sicyon), Galba, and Otho. In the life of Aratus, not Sosius Senecio, but one Polycrates, is addressed.

It is not to be supposed that Plutarch was content to write merely amusing or popular biographies. On the contrary, the Zwes are works of great learning and research, and they must for this very reason, as well as from their considerable length, have taken many years in their compilation. For example, in the life of Theseus the following long list of authorities appears :—the Megarian historians, Hellanicus, Simonides, Philochorus, Pherecydes, Demo, Peon of Amathus, Dicsearchus, Hero-

2 Demosth., § 2. Plutarch's orthography of Roman words and names is important as bearing on the question of pronunciation. A curious example (De Fortun. Rom., § 5) is Virtutis et Honoris, written Otsprotris re nal 'Ovapis. The Volsci are OdorodcKa:, ibid.

3 It is quite evident that the original order of the books has been

altered in the series of Zives as we now have them. * Of Meyapdbey cvyypadeis, referred to in § 10.

PeUa eau Cc

dorus, Bio, Menecrates, Clidemus, Hereas, Ister,! Dio- | part of a good education; (7) philosophy should form the principal

dorus. For the life of Romulus he refers to “one Promathio who composed a history of Italy” (§ 2 fin.), Diocles of Peparethus, Fabius Pictor, Herodorus, Varro, Valerius, Juba (IoBas), Zenodotus of Treezen, Simulus the poet (from whom he quotes eight elegiac verses), Antigonus, “one Butas,”? and Caius Acilius, and (as a viva voce informant) Sextius Sulla of Carthage. In the life of Lycurgus he cites Aristotle, Eratosthenes, Apollodorus, Timzeus, Xenophon, Simonides, Aristocrates the Spartan, Spherus, Critias, Theophrastus, Dioscorides, Hippias the sophist, Philostephanus, Demetrius Phalereus, Hermippus, Sosibius, Thucydides, Apollothemis, Aristox- enus, Aristocrates. In the life of Alexander, which is a long and elaborate essay, mention is made of Onesicritus, Aristobulus, Duris, Chares, Callisthenes, Eratosthenes, Clitarchus, Polyclitus, Antigenes, Ister, Ptolemzeus, Anti- clides, Philo of Thebes, Philippus of Theangele, Philippus of Eretria, Hecatzeus, Hermippus, Sotion.

It is true that many of the lives, especially of Romans, do not show such an extent of research or such a wealth of authorities. But Plutarch must have possessed or had access to a great store of books, and his diligence as an historian cannot be questioned, if his accuracy is in some points impeached.

His sympathy with Doric characters and institutions is very evident; he delights to record the exploits, the maxims, and the virtues of Spartan kings and generals. This feeling is the key to his apparently unfair and virulent attack on Herodotus, who, as an Ionian, seemed to him to have exaggerated the prowess and the foresight of the Athenian leaders.

The voluminous and varied writings of Plutarch exclu- sive of the Lives are known under the common term Opera Moralia. These consist of above sixty essays, some of them long and many of them rather difficult, some too of very doubtful genuineness. Their literary value is greatly enhanced by the large number of citations from lost Greek poems, especially verses of the dramatists, among whom Euripides holds by far the first place. They evince a mind of vast and varied resources, historical as well as philosophical—the

mind of an inquirer and a seeker after knowledge, rather than that of an exponent or an opponent of any particular philosophical system.

But Plutarch's Greek is not, like Lucian's, fluent and easy, nor even clear. He uses many words not in the ordinary Greek vocabulary, and he too often constructs long sentences, the thread of which separately, as well as the connexion, cannot be traced without close attention. Hence he is unattractive as a writer, so far as style is con- cerned, and he is often diffuse and carries his discussions to an unnecessary length.

It is certain that to most persons in Britain, even to those who call themselves scholars, the Opera Moralia of Plutarch are practically almost unknown. No English translation of them, we believe, has been printed since the bulky folio of Philemon Holland, published at the end of the 17th century, with the exception of a single volume in Bohn's Classical Library, lately added to that series by Mr C. W. King, M.A. It is therefore the more desirable to devote the remainder of this article to a brief notice of the principal treatises.

On the Education of Children recommends (1) good birth, and sobriety in the father; (2) good disposition and good training are alike necessary for virtue ; (3) a mother ought to nurse her own off- Spring, on the analogy of all animals; (4) the pedagogus must be honest and trustworthy ; (5) all the advantages of life and fortune must be held secondary to education; (6) mere mob-oratory is no

l'oy a a a : O lorpos év Th Tpicxadexdtn Tov Artixay, § 34. ef na nn Bovras tis airlas uvOmders ev ercyelois wept Tay 'PwpaiKar

dvaypapwy, § 21.

study, but not to the exclusion of the other sciences; (8) gymnas- tics are to be practised; (9) kindness and advice are better than blows; (10) over-pressure in learning is to be avoided, and plenty of relaxation is to be allowed; (11) self-control, and not least over the tongue, is to be learned; (12) the grown-up youth should be under the eye and advice of his father, and all bad company avoided, flatterers included; (18) fathers should not be too harsh and exacting, but remember that they were themselves once

young; (14) marriage is recommended, and without disparity of rank; (15) above all, a father should be an example of virtue to a son.

How a Young Man ought to Hear Poetry is largely made up of quotations from Homer and the tragic poets. The points of the essay are the moral effects of poetry as combining the true with the false, the praises of virtue and heroism with a mythology depraved and unworthy of gods, ei @col 7: Spor PadAov, odk é1olv Geol (§ 21). “So long as the young man,” says Plutarch, “admires what is rightly said and done in the poets, but feels annoyed at the contrary, no harm is done; but if he learns to admire every-thing which is presented to him undcr the name of a hero, he will unconsciously become morally deteriorated ” (§ 26).

On the Right Way of Hearing (wept tod a&xodverv) advocates the listening in silence to what is being said, and not giving a precipi- tate reply to statements which may yct receive some addition or modification from the speaker (§ 4). The hearer is warned not to give too much weight to the style, manner, or tone of the speaker (§ 7), not to be either too apathetic or too prone to praise, not to be impatient if he finds his faults reproved by the lecturer (§ 16). He concludes with the maxim, “to hear rightly is the beginning of living rightly,” and perhaps he has in view throughout his own profession as a lecturer.

How a Flatterer may be Distinguished from a Friend is a rather long and uninteresting treatise. The aucicnt writers are full of warnings against Hatterers, who do not seem to exercise much influence in modern society. The really dangerous flatterer (§ 4) is not the parasite, but the pretender to a disinterested friendship, —one who affects similar tastes, aud so insinnates himself into your confidence. Your accomplished flatterer does not always praise, but flatters by act, as when he occupies a good scat at a public meeting for the express purpose of resigning it to his patron (§ 15). A true friend, on the contrary, speaks freely on proper occasions. A good part of the essay turns on wappyota, the honest expression of opinion. The citations, which are fairly numerous, are mostly from Homer.

How one may be Conscious of Progress i Goodness is addressed to Sosius Senecio, who was consul in the last years of Nerva, and more than once (99, 102, 107) under Trajan. If, says Plutarch, a man could become suddenly

wise instcad of foolish, he could not be ignorant of the change; but it is otherwise with moral or mental processes. Gradual advance in virtue is like steady sailing over a wide sea, and can only be measured by the time taken and the forces applied ($ 3). Zcno tested advance by dreams (§ 12); if no excess or immorality presented itself to the imagination of the sleeper, his mind had been purged by reason and philosophy. When we love the truly good, and adapt our- selves to their looks and manners, and this even with the loss of worldly prosperity, then we are really getting on in goodness ourselves (§ 15). Lastly, the avoidance of little sins is an evidence of a scrupulous conscience (§ 17).

How to get Benefit out of Enemies argues that, as primitive man had savage animals to fight against, but learnt to make use of their skins for clothing and their flesh for food, so we are bound to turn cven our enemics to some good purpose. One service they do to us is to make us live warily against plots; another is, they induce us to live honestly, so as to vex our rivals not by scolding them but by making them secretly jealous of us (§ 4). Again, finding fault leads us to consider if we are ourselves faultless, and to be found fault with by a foe is likely to be plain truth speaking, dxovoréov éot) mapa tTav exOpav Thy ddAfGeav (§ 6). Jealousies and strifes, so natural to man, are diverted from our friends by being legiti- mately expended on our enemies (§ 10).

On Having Many Friends, On Chance, On Virtue and Vice, are three short essays, the first advocating the concentration of one's affections on a few who are worthy (robs d&lous PiAlas Sider, § 4), rather than diluting them, as it were, on the many; the second pleads that intelligence, ¢pévnois, not mere luck, is the ruling principle of all success; the third shows that virtue and vice are but other names for happiness and misery. All these are interspersed with citations from the poets, several of them unknown from other sources.

A longer treatise, well and clearly written, and not less valuable for its many quotations, is the Consolation addressed to Apollonius, on the early death of his "generally beloved and religions and dutiful son." Equality of mind both in prosperity and in adversity is recommended (§ 4), since there are "ups and downs" (8Wos «ab tameivérns) in life, as there are storms and

calms on the sea, and good and bad seasons on the earth. That man is born to reverscs

Mia— 30

234

he illustrates by citing fifteen fine verses from Menander (§ 5). The uselessness of indulging in grief is pointed out, death being a debt to all and not to be regarded as an evil ($§ 10-12). Plato’s doctrine is cited (§ 13) that the body is a burden and an impediment to the soul. Death may be annihilation, and therefore the dead are in the same category as the unborn (§ 15). The lamenting a death because it is untimely or premature has something of selfish- ness in it (§ 19), besides that it only means that one has arrived sooner than another at the end of a common journey. Ifa death is more grievous because it is untimely, a new born infant’s death would be the most grievous of all (§ 28). One who has died early may have been spared many woes rather than have been deprived of many blessings ; and, after all, to die is but to pay a debt due to the gods when they ask for it (§ 28). Examples are given of fortitude and resignation under such affliction ($ 33). _ If, says the author in conclusion, there is a heaven for the good hereafter, be sure that such a son will have a place in it.

Precepts about Health commences as a dialogue, and extends to some length as a lecture. It is technical and difficult throughout, and contains but little that falls in with modern ideas. Milk, he says, should be taken for food rather than for drink, and wine should not be indulged in after hard work or mental effort, for it docs but tend to increase the bodily disturbance ($17). Better than purges or emetics is a temperate dict, which induces the bodily functions to act of themselves (§ 20). Another wise saying is that idleness docs not conduce to health (ob8 aAndés eort Td parroy dytatvew rovs hovxlay &yovTas, § 21), and yet another that a man should learn by experience his bodily capabilities without always consulting a physician (§ 26).

‘Advice to the Married is addressed to his newly wedded friends Pollianus and Eurydice. It is simply and plainly written, and con- sists chiefly of short maxims and anecdotes, with but few citations from the poets.

The Banquet of the Seven Wise Men is a longer treatise, one of the several "Symposia" or imaginary conversations that have come down to us. It is supposed to be given by Pcriander in the public banqueting-room (éor:arépioy) near the harbour of Corinth (Lecheum) on the occasion of a sacrifice to Aphrodite. The whole party consisted of "more than twice seven," the friends of the principal guests being also present. Like Plato's Symposium this treatise takes the form of a narrative of what was said and done, the narrator being one Diocles, a friend of Periander's, who professes to give Nicarchus a correct account as having been present. The dinner was simple, and in contrast with the usual splendour of "tyrants" (§ 4). The conversation turns on various topics; Solon is credited with the remarkable opinion that "a king or tyrant is most likely to become celebrated if he makes a democracy out of a monarchy" (§ 7). There is much playful banter throughout, but neither the wit nor the wisdom seems of a very high standard. Solon delivers a speech on food being a necessity rather than a pleasure of life (§ 16), and one Gorgus, a brother of the host, comes in to relate how he has just shaken hands with Arion brought across the sea on the back of a dolphin (§ 18), which brings on a discussion about the habits of that creature. Among the speakers are sop, Anacharsis, Thales, Chilo, Cleobulus, and one Chersias, a poet.

'A short essay On Superstition contains a good many quotations from the poets. It opens with the wise remark that ignorance about the gods, which makes the obstinate man an atheist, also begets credulity in weak and pliant ninds. The atheist fears nothing because he believes nothing ; the superstitious man believes there are gods, but that they are unfriendly to him (§ 2). A man who fears the gods is never free from fear, whatever he may do or whatever may befall him. He extends his fears beyond his death, and believes in the "gates of hell," and its fires, in the darkness, the ghosts, the infernal judges, and what not (§ 4). The atheist does not believe in the gods; the superstitious man wishes he did not, but fears to disbelieve ($ 11). Onthe whole, this is a most interesting treatise. Mr King has given a translation of it, and of the next five essays. ; _ On Isis and Osiris is a rather long treatise on Egyptian symbolism, interesting chiefly to students of Egyptology. It gives an exposi- tion of the strange myths and superstitions of this ancient solar cult, including a full account of the great antagonist of Osiris, Typhon, or the Egyptian Satan. Plutarch thus lays down the

Zoroastrian theory of good and bad agencies (§ 45): “if nothing can happen without cause, and good cannot furnish cause for evil, it follows that the nature of evil, as of good, must have an origin and principle of its own.”

On the Cessation of Oracles is a dialogue, discussing the reasons why divine inspiration seemed to be withdrawn from the old seats of prophetic lore. The rcal reason of their decline in popularity is probably very simple; when the Greek cities became Roman provinces the fashion of consulting oracles fell off, as unsuited to nat more practical infiuences of Roman thought and Roman politics. The question is discussed whether there are sueh inter- mediate beings as demons, who according to Plato communicate

planets being elements, fire, ether, treatise is metaphysical, but it concludes with remarks on the exhalations at Delphi having different effects on different people and at different tinies. vapour was the breath of some mysterious being sent up from the under-world.

written on or in the Delphic temple. the number five, others that it introduced the ae of oracle-

rio FARCE

the will of the gods to men, and the prayers and vows of men to the gods.

The possibility of a plurality of worlds is entertained, and of the more or less composed of the essence of the five earth, air, and water (§ 37). The whole

The ancient notion doubtless was that the

On the Pythian Responses, why no longer given in Versc, is also a

dialogue, the first part of which is occupied mainly with conver- sation and anecdotes about the statues and other offerings at Delphi. kind of appendix to the last. that verse was the older vehicle of philosophy, history, and religion, but that plain prosc has become the later fashion, and therefore that oracles are now generally delivered “in the same form as laws speak to citizens, kings reply to their subjects, and scholars hear their teachers

speak.” by the facility with which it was employed by impostors (§ 25). Moreover, verse is better suited to ambiguity, and oracles now-a-days have less need to be ambiguous (§ 28).

It is rather an amusing essay, and may be regarded as a The theory propounded (§ 24) is

Discredit too was brought on the verse-oracle

On the E at Delphi is an inquiry why that letter or symbol was Some thought it represented

seekers, Jf so-and-so was to be done ; while one of the speakers, Ammonius, decides that it means EZ, “‘thou art,” an address to Apollo containing the predication of existence ($ 17).

On the Face on the Moon’s Disk is a long and curious if somewhat trifling speculation, yet not without interest from its calculations of the sizes and the distance from earth ofthe sun and moon (§ 10), and from the contrast between ancient lunar theories and modern mathematics. The cause of the moon’s light, its peculiar colour, the possibility of its being inhabited, and many kindred questions are discussed in this dialogue, the beginning and end of which are alike abrupt. Some of the ‘‘ guesses at truth” are very near the mark, as when it is suggested ($$ 21-2) that the moon, like the carth, contains decp recesses into which the sun’s light docs not descend, and the appearance of the ‘‘face” is nothing but the shadows of streams or of deep ravines.

On the Late Vengeance of the Deity is a dialogue consequent on a pal ae lecture by Epicurus. An objection is raised to the ordinary dealings of providence, that long delayed punishment encourages the sinuer and disappoints the injured, the reply to which is (§ 5) that the god sets man an example to avoid hasty and precipitate resentment, and that he is willing to give time for repentance (§ 6). Moreover, he inay wish to await the birth of good progeny from erring parents (§ 7). Another fine reflexion is that sin has its own punishment in causing misery to the sinner, and thus the longer the life the greater is the share of misery (§ 9). The essay concludes with a

long story about one Thespesius, and the treatment which he saw, during a trance, of the souls in the other world.

On Fate discusses the law of chance as against the overruling of providence. This treatise cnds abruptly ; the point of the argument is that both fate and providence have their due influence in mundane affairs (§ 9), and that all things are constituted for the best.

On the Genius of Socrates is a long essay, and, like so many of the rest, in the form of a dialogue. The experiences of one Timarchus, and his supernatural visions in the cave of Trophonius, are related at length in the Platonic style ($ 22), and the true nature of the BSatuoves is revealed to him. They are the souls of the just, who still retain regard for human affairs and assist the good in their efforts after virtue (§ 28). The dialogue ends with an interesting narrative of the concealment of Pelopidas and some of the Theban conspirators against the Spartans in the house of Charon.

On Exile is a fine essay, reudered the morc interesting from its numerous quotations from the poets, including several from the Phoenisse. Man is nota plant that grows only in one soil ; he belongs to heaven rather than to earth, and wherever he goes there are the same sun, the same seasons, the same providence, the same laws of virtue and justice (§ 5). There is no discredit in being driven from one's country ; Apollo himself was banished from heaven and condemned to live for a time on earth (§ 18).

The Consolation to his Wife, on the early death of their only daughter Timoxena (§ 7), is a feeling and sensible exhortation to moderate her gricf.

Nine books of Symposiaea extend to a great length, discussing inquiries (arpoBAhwara) on a vast number of subjects. The general treatment of these, in which great literary knowledge is displayed, is not unlike the style of Atheneus. It is, of course, impossible here to give any summary of the questions propounded.

The Amorous Man is a dialogue of some length, describing conversation on the nature of love held at Helicon, pending quinquennial feast of the Thespians, who specially worshipped

that deity along with the Muses. It is amply illustrated by poetical quotations. In § 24 mention is made of the emperor Vespasian. It is followed by a short treatise entitled Love Stories, giving a few narratives of sensational adventures of lovers.

Short Sayings (arop0éypara), dedicated to Trajan, extend to a great length, and are divided into three parts :—(1) of kings and conimanders (including many Roman); (2) of Spartans; (3) of Spartan women (a short treatise on Spartan institutions being interposed between the last two). The names of the authors are added, and to some of them a large number of maxims are attributed. Many are terse, shrewd, wise, or pointed with strong common-sense; but a good many seein to us now somewhat commonplace.

A rather long treatise On the Virtues of Women contains a series of narratives of noble deeds done by the sex in times of danger and trouble, cspeeially from “tyrants.” Many of the stories are interesting, and the style is easy and good.

Another long and learned work bears the rather obscure title Kedadalwy xaraypaph. It is generally known as Quezstiones Romanz and Grexex, in two parts. In the former, which contains one hundred and thirteen headings, the inquiry (on some matter political, religious, or antiquarian) always commences with 8:4 ri, usually followed by rérepoy, with alternative explanations. In the Greek Questions the form of inquiry is more often rls or tlyes, not followed by rérepoy. This treatise is of great interest and import- anee to classical archeology, though the inquiries seem occasionally trifling, and sometimes the answers are clearly wrong.

Parallels are a series of similar incidents which occurred respec- tively to Greeks and Romans, the Greek standing first and the Roman counterpart following. Many of the characters are mytho- logieal, though Plutarch regards them as historical.

On the Fortune of the Romans discusses whether, on the whole, good luck or valour had more influence in giving the Romans the supremacy. This is followed by two diseourses (Adyo:) on the same question as applicable to

the career of Alexander the Great, Whether the Athenians were more renoumed for War or for Wisdom? The conclusion is (§ 7) that it was not so much by the fame of their poets as by the deeds of their heroes that Athens became renowned.

Gryllus is a most amusing dialogue, in which Circe, Ulysses, and a talking pig take part. Ulysses wishes that all the human beings that have been changed by the sorceress into bestial forms should be restored ; but “piggy” is quite opposed to the return, arguing that in moral virtues, such as true bravery, chastity, temperance, and general simplicity of life and contentment, animals are very far superior to man.

Whether Land Animals or Water Animals are the Cleverer is a rather long dialogue on the intelligence of ants, bees, elephants, spiders, dogs, &c., on the one hand, and the crocodile, the dolphin, the tunny, and many kinds of fish, on the other. This isa good essay, much in the style of Aristotle’s History of Animals.

On Flesh-Eating, in two orations, discusses the origin of the practice, viz., necessity, and makes a touching appeal to man not to destroy life for mere gluttony (§ 4). This is a short but, very sensible and interesting argument. Questions on Plato are ten in number, each heading subdivided into several speculative replics. The subjects are for the most part metaphysical ; the essay is not long, but it concerns Platonists only. Whether Water or Fire ts more Useful is also short; after discussing the uses of both elements it deeides in favour of the latter, since nothing can exceed in importanec the warmth of life and the light of the sun. On Primary Cold is a physical speculation on the true nature and origin of the quality antithetical to heat. Physical Reasons (Quexstiones Naturales) are replies to inquiries as to why certain facts or phenomena occur ; ¢.g., “ Why is salt the only flavour not in fruits?” “Why do fishing-nets rot in winter more than in summer?” “Why does pouring oil on the sea produce a calm?” On the Opinions accepted by the Philosophers, in five books, is a valuable compendium of the views of the Ionic school and the Stoies on the phenomena of the universe and of life. On the IIl- nature of Herodotus is a well-known critique of the historian for his unfairness, not only to the Beeotians and Lacedemoniaus, but to the Corinthians and other Greck states. It is easy to say that this essay

“ neither requires nor merits refutation”; but Plutarch knew history, and he writes like one who thoroughly understands the charges whieh he brings against the historian. The Lives of the Ten Orators, from Antipho to Dinarchus, are biographies of various length, compiled, doubtless, from materials now lost.

_ Two rather long essays, Should a Man engage in Politics when he 1s no longer Yi oung, and Precepts for Governing (modrrinda maparyyér- Mara), are interspersed with valuable quotations. In favour of the former view the administrations of Pericles, of Agesilaus, of Augustus, are eited (§ 2), and the preference of older men for the pleasures of doing good over the pleasures of the senses (§ 5). In the latter, the true use of eloquence is diseusscd, and a con- trast drawn between the brilliant and risky and the slow and safe

poliey (§ 10). The choice of friends, and the caution against enmi- |

ties, the dangers of love, of gain, and of ambition, with many

topics of the like kind, are sensibly advanced and illustrated by

exaniples.

‘Besides the numerous works that have come down to us, Plutarch speaks of a work called Atria, the same title with the lost poem of Callimachus (Romulus, § 15).

The Lives have often been translated; the most popular version into English is that by. John and William Langhorne ; more reeently many of the Roman lives have been translated, with notes, by the late Mr George Long. An exeellent and convenient edition of the Greek text, in 5 vols. 12mo, has been published in the Teubner series by Carl Sintenis. It seems strange that no modern edition of the Opera Moralia exists, and that the student has to fall baek on the old-fashioned volumes of Wyttenbach (6 vols. 4to, Oxford, also printed in 8vo), Reiske (in 12 vols. 8vo), and Hutten (14 vols. 8vo). Whether there is any hope of Rudolph Hereher’s single volume (1872) in

the Teubner series being followed by others, we have no information. (F. A. P.)

PLUTO, the god of the dead in Greek mythology. His oldest name was Hades (‘At8ys, “AuSys, “ASns), “the Unseen”; the name Pluto (II\ovrwv) was given him as the bestower of the riches (zAodros) of the mine, and in ordinary language it ousted the dread name of Hades, which was, however, retained in poetry. He was the son of Cronus and Rhea, and brother of Zeus and Poseidon. Having deposed Cronus, the brothers cast lots for the king- doms of the heaven, the sea, and the infernal regions, and Pluto obtained the infernal regions, which from their ruler were afterwards known as Hades. The “house of Hades” was a dark and dreadful abode deep down in the earth. How literally the god was supposed to dwell underground is shown by the method of invoking him, which was by rapping on the ground to attract his attention. According to another view the realm of Hades was in a land beyond the ocean in the far west, which to the Greek was always the region of darkness and death, as the east of light and life. This is the view of Hades presented in the Odyssey. Ulysses sails all day with a north wind, and at sunsct reaches a land at the limits of ocean. Here, wrapped in mist and cloud, dwell the Cimmerians, who never see the sun. He lands, and moving along the shore he calls the ghosts of the departed to meet him. In the description of the Cimmerians we have perhaps a traveller’s tale of the long dark winters of the north. Besides this gloomy region, we find in another passage of the Odyssey (iv. 561 sq.) a picture of Elysium, a happy land at the ends of the carth, where rain and snow fall not, but the cool west wind blows and men live at ease. After Homer this happy land, the abode of the good after death, was known as the Islands of the Blest, and these in later times were identified with Madeira and the Canary Islands.!_ But in the oldest Greek mythology the “‘house of Hades” was a place neither of reward nor punishment; it was simply the home of the dead, good and bad alike, who led a dim and shadowy reflexion of life onearth. The differentiation of this “home of Hades” into a heaven and a hell was the result of pro- gressive thought and morality. Pluto was himself simply the ruler of the dead; in no sense was he a tempter and seducer of mankind like the devil of Christian theology. Indeed the very conception of a devil, as a principle of evil in continual conflict with God or the principle of good, is

totally foreign to Greek mythology, as it was also to Indian and Teutonic mythology. Pluto was certainly depicted as

1 The conception of the land of the dead, whether in the far west or beneath the earth, might be paralleled from the beliefs of many savage tribes. The Samoan Islanders unite the two conceptions : the entrance to their spirit-land is at the westernmost point of the westernmost island, where the ghosts descend by two holes into the under-world. Long ago the inhabitants of the French eoast of the English Channel believed that the souls of the dead were ferried across to Britain, and there are still traces of this belief in the folk-lore of Brittany (Tylor, Primitive Culture, ii. p. 64; Grimm, Deutsehe Mythologie, ii, p. 694). In classical mythology the underground Hades prevailed over the western. It was an Etrusean custom at the foundation of a city to dig a deep hole in the earth, and close it with a stone; on three days in the year this stone was removed, and the ghosts were then supposed to ascend from the lower world. In Asia Minor caves filled with mephitic vapours or containing hot springs were known as Plutonia or Charonia. The most famous entrances to the under-world were at Tenarum in Laconia, and at the Lake Avernus in Italy.

stern and pitiless, but he was so only in discharge of his | duty as custodian of the dead. But even Pluto once melted at the music of Orpheus when he came to fetch from the dead his wife Eurydice. The cap of Hades, like the Vebelkappe of German mythology, rendered its wearer invisible; as a sort of thick cloud it was the reverse of the nimbus or halo of the heavenly gods. While the victims sacrificed to the latter were white, those offered to Pluto were black. His wife was Proserpine (Persephone), daughter of Demeter (Ceres), whom he carried off as she was gathering flowers at Enna in Sicily. Like the Greeks, the ancient Italians believed that the souls of the dead dwelt underground; in Latin the names for the god of the dead are Orcus and Father Dis, but the Greek name Pluto also frequently occurs. But, while Orcus was rather the actual slayer, the angel of death, Father Dis was the ruler of the dead, and thus corresponded to Pluto. Their names also correspond, Dis being a contraction for Dives, “wealthy.” The Etruscan god of death was represented asa savage old man with wings and a hammer; at

the gladiatorial games of Rome a man masked after this fashion used to remove the corpses from the arena. In Romanesque folklore Orcus has passed into a forest-elf, a black, hairy, man-eating monster, upon whose house children lost in the woods are apt to stumble, and who sometimes shows himself kindly and helpful. He is the Italian orco, the Spanish ogro, the English ogre.

PLUTUS (zAotros, “ wealth”), the Greek god of riches, whom Demeter bore to Iasion “in the fat land of Crete.” He enriched every one whom he fell in with. According to Aristophanes, he was blinded by Zeus in order that he might not enrich the good and wise alone. At Thebes there was a statue of Fortune holding the child Plutus in her arms; at Athens he was similarly represented in the arms of Peace; at Thespize he was represented standing

beside Athene the Worker. Elsewhere he was represented as a boy with a cornucopia. He is the subject of one of the extant comedies of Aristophanes.

PLYMOUTH, a municipal and parliamentary borough and seaport town of Devonshire, England, is picturesquely situated on Plymouth Sound in the south-west corner of the county, at the confluence of the Tamar and Plym, 44 miles south-west of Exeter. With = the borough of Devonport and the township of East [—~ Stonehouse it forms the ag- |”) = gregate town known as the | ‘Three Towns.” There is 4k; railway communication by |: means of the Great Western |: and South-Western lines, and by several branch lines / connected with these sys- tems. The defences of the town, in addition to the citadel, an obsolete fortifica- Environs of Plymouth. tion built by Charles IT., on the site of an older fort, con- sist of a most elaborate chain of forts of great strength mounted with guns of the heaviest calibre, and forming a complete line of defence round the whole circumference both landwards and seawards. The streets are for the most part narrow and crooked, and the houses very irregular both in style of architecture and in height. Great improvements have, however, recently taken place. The more ancient part of the town near the water-side has been much altered; and a number of model dwellings have also lately been erected. In the principal thoroughfares there are numerous hand- some shops and other imposing

business establishments. Among the most important of the public buildings is the Guildhall, completed in 1874 at a cost of £56,000, a fine

Saltashfre ;

group in the Gothic style of the 13th century, with a lofty tower, and containing the town-hall with a fine organ and a series of historical windows, a police court and offices, a sessions and other court rooms, and the council chamber and municipal offices. The new post office in Westwell Street was erected at a cost of £12,000. The market, dating from 1804, and occupying about three acres in the centre of the town, is in course of reconstruction. A fine clock-tower, erected by the corporation, stands at the junction of George Street and Union Street. The parish church of St Andrews, some portions of which date from about 1430, has undergone alterations and improvements at different periods, and in 1874-75 was completely restored under the direction of the late Sir G. G. Scott. The tower, built in 1460, contains a fine peal of bells. The church of Charles the Martyr was begun in 1640, when the parish was divided, but owing to the Civil War was not completed till 1657. Of the other more modern parish churches there are none of special interest. The town is the seat ofa Roman Catholic bishopric, the cathedral of which, a good building in the Early English style, was opened in 1858 at a cost of £10,000. Attached to it is the convent of Notre Dame, and several other religious houses and chapels. The Athenzeum (1812) is the home of the Plymouth Institution and the Devon and Corn- wall Natural History Society. In connexion with it there are a lecture hall, a museum, art gallery, and a small but select scientific library. The Plymouth Proprietary Library (1812) has a good selection of books in general literature, and the building also contains the library of the Plymouth Incorporated Law Society and the Cottonian collection, which includes many relics of Sir Joshua Reynolds and a number of his pictures. The Free Public Library, estab- lished in 1876, at present occupies the old Guildhall. The principal educational establishments are the Western

| College for the training of students for the ministry of the | Independent denomination ; the Plymouth College, a high

school for boys; the High School for Girls ; the Corpora- tion Grammar School, founded in 1572; the Public School,

_ established in 1809 (one of the largest public schools in

England) ; the Grey Coat School; the Blue Coat School ; the Orphan's Aid; Lady Rogers's School; the Orphan Asylum; and the Household of Faith founded by the well known Dr Hawker, The Plymouth school board has nine schools in full operation ; and each of the prin- cipal parishes has also its parochial day school. The charitable institutions embrace the South Devon and East Cornwall Hospital, for which a fine range of buildings has lately been erected; the Devon and Cornwall Female Orphan Asylum (1834); the Penitentiary and Female Home (1833) ; the Royal Eye Infirmary (1821); the South Devon and Cornwall Institution for the Blind (1860, new building erected 1876), and various other philanthropic societies. The only public recreation ground of any extent is the Hoe Park, 18 acres, a fine promenade sloping gradually to the sea, attached to which is a handsome promenade pier. On the Hoe a statue in bronze, by Boehm, of Sir Francis Drake was unveiled in 1884. Smeaton's lighthouse has been removed from the reef on which it stood for one hundred and twenty years, and is now a prominent object on the Hoe. Theview from the Hoe includes Mount Edgcumbe with its beautifully wooded slopes, the Cornwall hills, the Dartmoor hills on the north-eastern horizon, and Eddy- stone lighthouse far away over the waters of the Channel.

Plymouth not only holds a leading position in the country as a naval station, but is the centre of the growing trade of Devonshire and Cornwall, and is also becoming @ holiday centre and health resort. To the south of the town is the Sound, protected by the magnificent break- water, within the limits of which and the harbours con-

—_— 4 Y

-

nected with it the whole British navy might find a safe anchorage. The western harbour, known as the Hamoaze, at the mouth of the river Tamar, is devoted almost exclu- sively to the requirements of the royal navy, as along

its banks are the dockyard, the Keyham factory, the arsenal, and other Government establishments (See Devonport, vol. vii, 138; and Dockyarps, vol. vii, 315). The eastern harbour, Cattewater with Sutton Pool, now pro-

‘tected by a new breakwater at Mount Batten, is the

anchorage ground for merchant shipping. Commodious dock accommodation is provided at the Great Western Docks, Millbay, between Plymouth and Stonehouse, opened in 1857, and comprehending a floating basin over 13 acres in extent with a depth of 22 feet at spring tides, a tidal

harbour of 35 acres, anda graving dock. The port has an

extensive trade with America, the West Indies, Mauritius,

Pi. F 3 OF FA

237

Africa, and the Baltic ports, as well as an extensive coast- ing trade. It is the starting point for many of the emigrant ships for Australia, New Zealand, and British America. The chief exports are minerals, including copper, lead, tin, granite, and marble. There is also some trade in pilchards and other fish. The imports are chiefly agricultural produce and timber. The total number of vessels that entered the port in cargo and in ballast in 1883 was 3852, of 843,227 tons, the number that cleared 3443, of 754,318 tons. Plymouth has few manufactures, the principal being biscuits, black-lead, candles, manures, soap, starch, sugar, lead, and the celebrated Plymouth gin. The principal industries are connected with shipbuilding and the fisheries. According to the Act of 1835, the

borough is divided into six wards, and is governed by a mayor, twelve aldermen, and thirty-six councillors. The

Plan of Plymouth.

water-works are under the control of the corporation, but the gas works are in the hands of acompany. The popula- tion of the municipal borough (area

1468 acres) in 1871 was 68,758, and in 1881 it was 73,794. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 2061 acres) in the same years was 70,091 and 76,080. It returns two members to parliament.

The Hoe at Plymonth is claimed to be the high rock from which, according to Geoffrey of Monmouth, Corineus the Trojan hurled the giant Goemagot into the sea, and at an early period there was cut out in the ground at the Hoe the likeness of two figures with clubs in their hands, which for many years was renewed by the corporation, and was in existence till the erection of the citadel about 1671. Both British and Roman remains have been found in the neighbour- hood, the most important being those of a Romano-British cemetery discovered in 1864 during the construction of Fort Stamford. In Domesday it occurs as Sutone, and afterwards it was divided into the town of Sutton Prior, the hamlet of Sutton Valletort, and the tithing of Sutton Ralph, a part of it having been granted to the Norman family of Valletort, while the greater part belonged to the

priory of Plympton. About 1253 a market was established, and in 1292 the town first returned members to parliament. In the 14th century it was frequently the port of embarkation and of disem- barkation in connexion with expeditions to France. It suffered considerably at the hands of the French in 1338, 13850, 1377, 1400,. and 1402, the Bretons on the last oecasion destroying six hundred houses. In 1412 the inhabitants petitioned for a charter, but for a long time their application was opposed by the prior and convent of Plympton. In 1439 a charter was, however, at last granted by Henry VI., defining the limits of the town, permitting the erection of walls and defences, allowing the levying of dues on shipping for the purpose of such buildings and their maintenance, and directing the institution of a corporate body under the title of the “ mayor and commonalty of the borough of Plymouth.” Leland speaks (1540-47) of Plymouth harbour as being chained across in times of necessity, and of an ‘‘old ‘castel quadrate’ between the town and the sea.” A small fragment of one of the outer works of this castle still stands at the foot of Lambhay Street. During the rebellion of 1548-49 the town suffered severely at the hands of the insurgents, and according to Westcote the ‘“‘evidences” of the borough were burnt. Under Elizabeth it rose to be the foremost port of England, and Camden, who visited the town about 1588,

states that “though not very large its name and reputation is very great among all nations.” In the discovery of the New World it played a part of prime importance. Martin Cockeram, a native of the town, sailed with Sebastian Cabot when he touched_the coast of America in 1497. Sir John Hawkins and his father Wil- liam were natives of the town, and in 1571 Sir John was returned member of parliament for the borough. In 1572 Sir Francis Drake left the port for the West Indies, and in 1577 he set out from it on his voyage ‘about the earth.” He was elected mayor of the town in 1581, and in 1592-93 represented it in parliament. Sir Humphrey Gilbert, who was M.P. for Plymouth in 1571, had in 1578 received from Queen Elizabeth letters patent for a colony in America; but, after setting out in 1579, he was compelled to return with the loss of his principal ship. In 1583 he sailed again from Plymouth (see GiupeRt). In 1585 Drake again sailed from Plymouth for the West Indies, bringing back on his return the remnant of Raleigh’s Virginian colony. The port supplied seven ships against the Spanish Armada, and it was in the Sound that the English fleet of 120 sail awaited the sighting of the Spaniards. In 1590 Drake was successful in the oft attempted task of bringing in a stream of fresh water for the use of the town, from the river Meavy near Sheepstor, Dartmoor. He and Sir John Hawkins sailed from Plymouth on their last voyage in 1595, both dying at sea in the following year. Many other expeditions from Drake’s time to the present have been despatched from this port, which was the last at which the Pilgrim Fathers touched when they set sail for America. Plymouth was throughout nearly the whole Civil War closely invested by the Royalists, and was the only town in the west of England which never fell into their hands. The town was one of the first to declare for William of Orange. It was in 1691, during his reign, that the dockyard was commenced. The “Jocal literature ” of Plymouth is singularly rich and comprehensive. It has also a connexion with many men of great eminence. Sir Joshua Reynolds, born at Plympton, first practised his art in the town, and its native artists are represented by Sir Charles Lock Eastlake, James Northcote, Benjamin Robert Haydou, aud Samuel Prout. Besides Sir John Hawkins and other celebrated seamen, it has also given birth to Sir Willian Snow Harris, Dr James Yonge, Dr John Kitto, Dr S. P. Tregelles, Dr Robert Hawker, N. pee the Dartmoor poet, Mortimer Collins, and Sir R. P. Collier.

See Histories by Worth, 1871, and by Jewitt, 1873; Rowe, Hcclestastical History of Old Plymouth; The Western Antiquary ; Worth, The Three Towns Bibliotheca.

PLYMOUTH, a township and village of the United States, the shire-town of Plymouth county, Massachusetts, and a port of entry on Cape Cod Bay,—the village lying at the terminus of a branch of the Old Colony Railroad, 37 iniles south-south-east of Boston. The main interest of Plymouth is historical, and centres in the fact that it was the first settlement of the Pilgrim Fathers of New England, who landed December 21 (n. 8.), 1620, on the rock now covered by a handsome granite canopy in Walter Street. Leyden Street, so called in memory of the Dutch town where the exiles had stopped for a season, is the oldest street in New England. The houses and general appear- ance of Plymouth are, however, thoroughly modern. Pilgrim Hall (which is built of granite and measures 70 feet long by 40 feet wide) was erected in 1824-25 by the Pilgrim Society constituted in 1820; it contains a public library and many relics of the fathers—including Miles Standish's sword and Governor Carver's chair. The corner stone of a national monument to the Pilgrims was laid August 1, 1859, on a high hill near the railroad station ; 1500 tons of granite were used for the foundation ; and a pedestal 45 feet high is surrounded by statues 20 feet high of Morality, Law, Education, and Freedom, and bears a colossal statue of Faith, 36 feet high, holding a Bible in her right hand (the largest granite statue in the world). Burying Hill was the site of the embattled church erected in 1622, and contains many ancient tombstones and the foundations of the watchtower (1643) now covered with sod. Cole's Hill is the spot where half of the " Mayflower" Pilgrims found their rest during the first winter. Five of their graves were discovered in 1855 while pipes for the town water-works were being laid, and two more (now marked with a granite slab) in 1883. The bones of the first five are deposited in a compartment of the canopy over the

Forefathers' Rock." A town hall (1749), the county

court-house, and the house of correction are the main public buildings of Plymouth. The population of the township was 4758 in 1830, 6024 in 1850,

6238 in 1870, 7093 in 1880, and 7500 in 1884. Manufactures of sail- duck, cotton-cloth, tacks, nails, plate-iron, rolled zinc and copper rivets, hammers, &e., are carried on; the cordage factories are among the largest and most complete works of the kind in the world.

PLYMOUTH, a borough of the United States, in Luzerne county, Pennsylvania, on the Bloomsburg division of the Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western Railroad, 8 miles from Wyoming, is a flourishing coal-mining town, which increased its population from 2648 in 1870 to 6065 in 1880. At Plymouth junction, 2 miles to the north- east, a branch line to Wilkesbarre connects with the Central Railroad.

PLYMOUTH BRETHREN (Breturen, or CuRIsTIAN BRETHREN) are a sect of Christians who received the name in 1830 when the Rev. J. N. Darby induced many of the inhabitants of Plymouth to associate themselves with him for the promulgation of opinions which they held in common. Although small Christian communities existed in Ireland and elsewhere calling themselves Brethren and holding similar views, the accession to the ranks of Mr Darby so increased their numbers and influence that he is usually reckoned the founder of Plymouthism. Darby (born in Nov. 1800, in London ; graduated at Trinity College, Dublin, in 1819; died April 29, 1882 at Bournemouth) was a curate in the Episcopalian Church of Ireland until 1827, when he felt himself constrained to leave the Established Church ; betaking ~~himself to Dublin, he be~~ came associated with several devout people who refused all ecclesiastical fellowship, met statedly for public worship, and called themselves the Brethren. In 1830 Darby at Plymouth won over a large number of people to his way of thinking, among whoin were the Rev. Benjamin Wills Newton, who had been a clergyman of the Established Church of England; the Rev. James L. Harris, a Plymouth clergyman; and the well known Biblical scholar Dr Samuel Prideaux Tregelles. The Brethren started a newspaper, Zhe Christian Witness, continued under the names Zhe Present Testimony (1849) and The Bible Trea- sury (1856), with Harris as editor and Darby as the most important contributor. During the next eight years the progress of the sect was rapid, and communities of the brethren were to be found in many of the principal towns in England.

In 1838 Darby, after a short stay in Paris, went to reside in French Switzerland, and found many disciples. Congregations were formed in Geneva, at Lausanne, where most of the Methodist and other dissenters joined the Brethren, at Vevey, and elsewhere in Vaud. His opinions also found their way into Germany, German Switzerland, Italy, and France; but French Switzerland has always remained the stronghold of Plymouthism on the Continent, and for his followers there Mr Darby wrote two of his most important tracts, Le Ministére considéré dans sa Nature and De la Presence et de VAction du S. Esprit dans UVEglise. The revolution in the canton Vaud, instigated by the Jesuits in 1845, brought persecu- tion to the Brethren in the canton and in other parts of French Switzerland, and Darby felt his own life insecure there.

He returned to England, and his reappearance was accompanied by divisions among the Brethren at home. These divisions began at Plymouth. Mr B. Wills Newton, at the head of the community there, was accused of departing from the testimony of the Brethren against an official ministry, and of reintroducing the spirit of cleri- calism. Unable to detach the congregation from the

preacher, Darby began a rival and separate assembly. The majority of the Brethren out of Plymouth supported Darby, but a minority kept by Newton. The separation became wider in 1847 on the discovery of supposed heretical teaching by Newton. In 1848 another divi- sion took place. The Bethesda congregation at Bristol, where Mr George Miiller was the most influential member, received into communion several of Newton’s followers and justified their action. A large number of communi- ties approved of their conduct; others were strongly opposed to it. Out of this came the separation into Neutral Brethren led by Miiller, and Exclusive Brethren or Darbyites, who refused to hold communion with the followers of Newton or Miiller. The exclusives, who were the more numerous, suffered further divisions. An Irish clergyman named Cluff had adopted the views of Mr Pearsall Smith, and when these were repudiated seceded with his followers. The most important division among the exclusives came to a crisis in 1881, when Mr William Kelly and Mr Darby became the

recognized leaders of two sections who separated on some point of discipline. There are therefore at least five official divisions or sects of Plymouthists :—(1) the followers of Mr B. Wills Newton ; (2) the Neutrals, who incline to the Congregationalist idea that each assembly should judge for itself in matters of discipline, headed by Mr George Miiller ; (3) the Darbyite Exclusives ; (4) the Exclusives who follow Mr Kelly ; and (5) the followers of Mr Cluff. The fundamental principle of the Exclusives, " Separation from evil God's principle of unity," has led to many unimportant excommunications and separations besides those mentioned.

The theological views of the Brethren do not differ greatly from those held by evangelical Protestants (for a list of divergences, see Reid, Plymouth Brethrenism Unveiled and fefuted); they make the baptism of infants an open question and celebrate the Lord's Supper weekly. Their distinctive doctrines are ecclesiastical, They hold that all official ininistry, anything like a clergy, whether on Episcopalian, Presbyterian, or Congregationalist theories, is a denial of the spiritual priesthood of all believers, and a striving against the Holy Spirit. Hence it is a point of conscience to have no communion with any church which possesses a regular ministry. The gradual growth of this opinion, and per- haps the reasons for holding it, may be traced in Mr Darby's earlier writings. While a curate in the Church of Ireland he was indignant with Archbishop Magee for stopping the progress of mission work among Roman Catholics by imposing on all who joined the church the oath of supremacy. This led Darby to the idea that established churches are as foreign to the spirit of Christi- anity as the papacy is (''Considerations addressed to the Archbishop of Dublin, &.," Coll. Works, vol. i. 1). The parochial system, when enforced to the extent of prohibit- ing the preaching of the gospel within a parish where the incumbent was opposed to it, led him to consider the whole system a hindrance to the proper work of the church and therefore anti-Christian ("Thoughts on the present position of the Home Mission," Coll. Works, i. 78). And the waste of power implied in the refusal to sanction lay-preaching seemed to him to lead to the con- clusion that an official ministry was a refusal of the gifts of the Spirit to the church ("On Lay Preaching," Coll. Works, p. 200). These three ideas seem to have led in the end to Plymouthism ; and the movement, if it has had small results in the formation of a sect, has at least set churches to consider how they might

make their machinery more elastic. Perhaps one of the reasons of the comparatively small number of Brethren may be found in their idea that their mission is not to the heathen but to “the awakened in the churches,”

Authorities. —Darby, Collected Works, 82 vols., edited by Kelly ; Reid, Plymouth Brethrenism Unveiled and Refuted, 3a ed., 1880, and History and Literature of the so-called Plymouth Brethren, 2d ed., 1876; Miller, Zhe Brethren, their Rise, Progress, and Testimony, 1879 ; Teulon, History and Doctrines of the Plymouth brethren, 1883. (T. M. L.)

PNEUMATIC DESPATCH. The transport of written despatches through long narrow tubes by the agency of air-pressure was introduced in 1853, by Mr Latimer Clark, between the Central and Stock Exchange stations of the Electric and International Telegraph Company in London. The stations were connected by a tube 14 inches in diameter and 220 yards long. Carriers containing batches of telegrams, and fitting piston-wise in the tube, were sucked through it (in one direction only) by the production of a partial vacuum at one end. In 1858 MrC. F. Varley improved the system by using compressed air to force the carriers in one direction, a partial vacuum being still used to draw them in the other direction. This improvement enables single radiating lines of pipe to be used both for sending and for receiving telegrams between a central station supplied with pumping machinery and outlying stations not so supplied. In the hands of Messrs Culley and Sabine this radial system of pneumatic despatch has been brought to great perfection in connexion with the telegraphic department of the British post office. Another method of working, extensively used in Paris and other Continental cities, is the circuit system, in which stations are grouped on circular or loop lines, round which carriers travel in one directiononly. In one form of circuit system —that of Messrs Siemens—a continuous current of air is kept up in the tube, and rocking switches are provided by which carriers can be quickly introduced or removed at any one of the stations on the line without interfering with the movement of other carriers in other parts of the circuit. More usually, however, the circuit system is worked by despatching carriers, or trains of carriers, at relatively long intervals, the pressure or vacuuin which gives motive power being applied only while such trains are on the line. On long circuits means are provided at several

stations for putting on pressure or vacuum, so that the action may be limited to that section of the line on which the carriers are travelling at any time.

The following partieulars refer to the radial system of pneumatic despatch as used in the British post office. In London most of the lines connect the central office with district offices for the purpose of collecting and distributing telegrams. Iron tubes were used in some of the earliest lines, but now the tubes are always made of lead, with soldered joints, and are enclosed in outcr pipes of iron for the sake of mechanical protection. Thc bore, which is very smooth and uniform, is normally 2} inches, though in a few cases it is as much as 8 inches, and in somconly Ildinches. The greatest single length of any of the existing London lines is 3873 yards, but a more usual length is from 1000 to 2000 yards. In most cases a single tube serves both to send and to receive, but where the traffic is heavy a pair of tubes arc used, one to send by pressure and the other to receive by vacuum. The pumps, which supply pressure and vacuum to two mains, are situated in the ccntral office. At the outlying stations the tubcs terminate in a glass box, open to the atmosphere. At the central station the end of each tube is a short vertical length, facing downwards, and pro- vided with a double valve, consisting of two sluices, one at the end and the other a little way above the end, the distance between the sluices being somewhat longer than the length of a carricr. The sluices are geared together in such a manner that a single movement of a handle closes one and opens the other, or vice versa. To send a earrier from the central station, the carricr is introduced into the tube, the lower sluice being open; a single movement of the handle then successively (1) closes the lower sluice, (2) opens the upper sluice, and (3) opens a valve which admits air behind the carrier from the compressed-air main. As soon as the arrival of the carrier is signalled (electrically) from the out-station, the handle is pushed back, thus (1) cutting off the compressed air, (2) closing the upper sluice, and (8) opening the lower sluice. The tube is then ready for the sending of another carrier. When an electric signal arrives from an out-station that a carrier is inserted there for transmission to the central station the handle is pulled for-

ward far enough to close the lower and open the upper sluice, but not far enough to put on the air-pressure. ‘The vacuum main is then put in connexion with the tube by a separate stop-cock. When the carrier arrives the vacuum is shut off and the lower sluice opened to allow it to drop out. This arrangement of double sluices admits of the insertion or removal of a carrier while other carriers are travelling in the same tube, and without sensible dis- turbance of their motion. But great caution requires to be exercised in allowing two or more carriers to follow one another on a single section of line, especially on lines worked by pressure, since no two carriers travel at precisely the same speed. When the same tube is used alternately for sending and receiving the upper sluice is dispensed with. On some lines there are intermediate stations, and the sections are then worked by a block system like that used on railways. The earriers are cylindrical cases of gutta-percha covered with felt, which is allowed to project loosely at the back, so that the pressure makes it expand and fit the pipe closely. In front the carrier is closed by a buffer or piston composed of disks of felt of the diameter of the pipe. The despatches are held in by an elastic baud at the back. An ordinary carrier weighs 2% 0z., and holds about a dozen despatches. During business hours earriers are passing through the London tubes almost incessantly. With a pressure of 10 tb per square inch, ora vacuum of 7 tb, the time of transit, if through a 2} inch tube, is 1 minute for a length of nearly 1000 yards, and 54 minutes for a length of 3000 yards. —

The following statistics show the growth of the pncumatic despatch in the post office during ten years (the figures for 1875 are taken from a paper by Messrs Culley and Sabine, cited below, and those for 1885 have been furnished by Mr W. H. Preece) :—

January 1875. January 1885. No. of Tubes. | Total Length. | No. of Tubes. | Total Length. er Miles. Yards, Miles. vas 4 ondonie.. c+. 25 1160 gee 383 685 Liverpool…... 4 1 1237 5 2 389 | Glasgow …..... il 242 5 1 1142 | JD UDI oaconcor 3 940 5 1 954 Manchester … 5 1 266 6 1 294 Birmingham.. 3 Oy 4 1235 | Neweastle….. 0 0 1 460 Total …... 41 21 1242 | 108 40 1239 |

1 Including 29 short “house” tubes.

In Paris large areas of the city have been covered by pneumatic circuits made up of iron pipes round which omnibus trains of earriers are sent at

intervals of fifteen minutes. The trains consist of several carriers much heavier than the English type, linked to one another and to a leading piston. The trains are stopped at the suc- cessive stations to take up and deposit despatches. ‘The pneumatic despatch took root in Paris in 1866, and has been developed there in a way which differs greatly in mechanical details from the English system. An arrangement like that used in Paris has been followed in Vienna and in Berlin, where the Siemens system has also been used. In New York the English system is adopted, but with brass instead of lead tubes.

Interruptions occurring in the pipes can be localized by firing a pistol at one end and registering by a chronograph the interval of time between the explosion and the arrival of the air-wave reflected from tle obstacle.

In addition to its use for postal and telegraphic purposes the pneumatic despatch is occasionally employed for internal com- munication in offices, hotels, &c., and also in shops for the transport of money and bills between the cashier’s desk aud the counters.

_ References.—The system as now used in the United Kingdom is fully deseribed in a paper by Messrs Culley and Sabine (Min. Proc. Inst. Civ. £ng., vol. xiiii.) The same volume eontains a description of the pneumatie telegraphs of Paris and of experiments on them by M. Bontemps, and also a discussion of the theory of pneumatie transmission by Prof. W. C. Unwin. Reference should also be made to a paper by C. Siemens (Min. Proc. Inst. Civ. Eng., vol. Xxxiii.) de-

scribing the Siemens eireuit system ; and to Les Télégraphes, b l (Paris 4881) H graphes, by M. A. os pe

PNEUMATICS is that department of hydrodynamics which treats of the properties of gases as distinct from liquids. Under Hypromecuanics will be found a general discussion of the subject as a branch of mathematical physics ; here we shall limit our attention mainly to the experimental aspect.

The gaseous fluid with which we have chiefly to do is our atmosphere. Though practically invisible, it appeals in its properties to other of our senses, so that the evidences of its presence are manifold. Thus we feel it in

its motion as wind, and observe the dynamical effects of this motion in the quiver of the leaf or the momentum of

|

PNE—PNE

the frigate under weigh. It offers resistance to the passage of bodies through it, destroying their motion and trans- forming their energy—as is betrayed to our hearing in the whiz of the rifle bullet, to our sight in the flash of the meteor. In its general physical properties air has much in common with other gases. It is advisable therefore first to establish these general properties, and then consider the

| characteristic features of the several gases.

| of a fluid is of the nature of a pressure.

Matter is conveniently studied under the two great divisions of solids and fluids. The practically obvious distinction between these may be stated in dynamical language thus :—solids can sustain a longitudinal pressure without being supported by a lateral pressure; fluids can- not. Hence any region of space enclosed by a rigid boundary can be easily filled with a fluid, which then takes the form of the bounding surface at every point of it. But here we distinguish between fluids according as they are gases or liquids. The gas will always completely fill the region, however small the quantity put in. Remove any portion and the remainder will expand so as to fill the whole space again. On the other hand it requires a de- finite quantity of liquid to fill the region. Remove any portion and a part of the space will be left unoccupied by liquid. Part of the liquid surface is then otherwise conditioned than by the form of the wall or bounding surface of the region ; and if the portion of the wall not in contact with the liquid is removed the form and quantity of the liquid are in no way affected. Hence a liquid can be kept in an open yessel ; a gas cannot so be.

The mutual action between any two portions of matter is called the stress between them. This stress has two aspects, according as its effect or tendency is considered with reference to the one or the other body. Thus

between the earth and moon there is a stress which is an attraction, The one aspect is the force which attracts the

moon to the earth; the other is the foree which attracts

the earth to the moon. According to Newton’s third law of motion these are equal and opposite. Similarly the repulsive stress between the like poles of two magnets has its two aspects, which are equal but oppositely directed forces. In the case of a mass hanging by a cord, the stress is a tension at every point of the cord. At any given point this tension has two equal and opposite aspects, one of which is the weight of the mass and the portion of the cord below the given point. Finally, the stress between any body and the horizontal table on which it rests is a two-faced pressure, being downwards as regards the table, upwards as regards the body. The total pressure upon the table over the whole surface of contact is clearly the weight of the body. If the total pressure is supposed to be uniformly distributed, the measure of the pressure on unit surface is the quotient of this weight by the area of the surface. When we speak of pressure at a point, it is this pressure on unit surface that is meant. When the pressure varies from point to point over a surface, the pressure at any point is defined to be the limit of the ratio of the total pressure over any small element of surface around that point to the area of the element as the element is diminished indefinitely.

The stress which exists between the contiguous portions The ideal or perfect fluid is a substance in which this stress between contiguous portions is always perpendicular to the common interface. In other words there is no stress tangential to the interface at any point. Hence if the contiguous portions are at relative rest, or have a relative motion parallel to the interface, neither state can be affected by the mutual stress. This condition is perfectly fulfilled in the case of any known fluid in equilibrium ; but for a fluid in motion it is not even approximately fulfilled. For, any

Solid and fluid distin- guished,

Stress.

| Ideal per fect fluid

defined. —

|

Level surfaces.

Equipo- tential surfaces,

Broa PT iCs

visible relative motion set up among the parts of a fluid rapidly decays in virtue of viscosity, which even for the subtlest gases is quite appreciable in its effects.

In a fluid at rest, then, the pressure over any surface which we may imagine to be drawn is perpendicular (or normal) to the surface at every point of it; and from this it follows at once, as has been proved in HYDROMECHANICS, vol. xii. p. 439, that the pressure at any point of a fluid at rest has the same value in all possible directions.

The pressures at two contiguous points in a fluid may either differ or not. If they differ, the change of pressure must be balanced by some extraneous force acting on the fluid in the direction in which the pressure increases. Any direction in which no such force acts must be a direction in which there is no change of pressure; otherwise, equi- librium will be destroyed. Suppose now the resultant force at every point in a fluid at rest to be given. In directions at right angles to the force at any given point the pressure will not vary. Hence we can pass to an infinite number of contiguous points at which the pressure is the same as at the given point. By making each of these in turn the starting-point, we can pass on to another set of points, and so gradually trace out within the fluid a surface at every point of which the pressure is the same. Such a surfaceis called a surface of equal pressure, or briefly a level surface ; and we see from the mode of its construc- tion that it is at every point of it perpendicular to the resultant force at that point.

Imagine any two contiguous level surfaces to be drawn, at every point of the one of which the pressure is », at every point of the other p+ 6p. Consider the equilibrium of a small column of average density p, bounded

at its ends by these surfaces. Let A be the area of each end, and 8r the length of the column or perpendicular distance between the level surfaces. If R is the average resultant force per unit mass acting on the column, then we have, for equilibrium of the column,

Adp=Abr. pR,

or dp—=Rpdr.

or the rate of increase of the pressure at any point per umt of length at right angles to the level surface is equal to the resultant force per unit of volume at that point.

If the applied forces belong to a conservative system, for which V is the potential (see MECHANICS), we may write the equation in the form

dp= — pdV.

Hence over any equipotential surface, for which 8V =0, p is constant, and is therefore a function of V. Consequently p also is a function of V. For a fluid in equilibrium, therefore, and under the influence of a conservative system of forces, the pressure and density are constant over every equipotential surface, that is, over every surface cutting the lines of force at right angles.

Now in the case of gases, to which our attention is at present confined, the density (temperature remaining con- stant) varies with every change of pressure; in mathemat- ical language p is a function of p. Thus, before we can solve the equation of equilibrium for a gas, we must be able to express this function mathematically ; in other words, we must know the exact relation between the

potential surfaces and consequently the surfaces of equal pressure and of equal density will be approximately spheres concentric with the earth. At any point there will. be a definite atmospheric pressure, which is equal numerically to the weight of the superincumbent vertical column of air of unit cross-section. The effect of this pressure, as exemplified in the action

of the common suction-pump, seems to have been first truly recognized by Galileo, who showed that the maximum depth from which water can be pumped is equal to the height of the water column which would exert at its base a pressure equal to the atmospheric pressure. As an experimental verification, he suggested filling with water a long pipe closed at the upper end, and immersing it with its lower and open end in a reservoir of the same liquid. The liquid surface in the pipe would, if the pipe wére long enough, stand at a definite height, which would be the same for all longer lengths of pipe. The practical difficulty of constructing a long enough tube (33 feet at least) prevented the experi- ment being really made till many years later.

Torricelli, however, in 1642, by substituting mercury for Torri- water, produced the experiment ona manageable scale. As elli's ex-

mercury is denser than water in the ratio of about 13.6:1, the mercury column necessary to balance by its weight the atmospheric pressure will be less than the water columu in the inverse ratio, or a little under 30 inches. Torricelli's experiment is exhibited in every mercurial barometer (see BAROMETER and Mergorotocy). By this experiment he not only gave the complete experimental verification of Galileo's views relating to atmospheric pressure, but pro- vided a ready means of measuring that pressure.

The most obvious applications of the barometer are these :—(1) to measure the variation in time of atmo- spheric pressure at any one locality on the earth's sur- face (the existence of this variation was discovered soon after the date of Torricelli's experiment by Pascal, Descartes, Boyle, and others); (2) to measure the varia- tion of atmospheric pressure with change of height above the earth's surface (Descartes mentions this application in the Principia Philosophiz, 1644; but to Pascal is the honour due of having first carried the experiment into execution, 1647) ; and (3) to compare pressures at different localities which are on the same level (if the pressures are equal, the air is in equilibrium ; if they are not, there must be flow of air from the place of higher pressure to that of lower—in other words, there must be wind, whose direction of motion depends on the relative position of the places, and whose intensity depends on the distance between the places and the difference of pressures). The first and last of these measurements are of

the greatest importance in meteorology. The second is a valuable method for measur- ing attainable heights, and is intimately connected with the problem as to the relation between the pressure and density of the air. Thus it would be possible, by barometric observations at a series of points in the same vertical line, to obtain a knowledge of this relation—more and more truly approximate the closer and more numerous the points of observation taken. At best, however, such a method could give the law connecting density with pressure for those pressures only which are less than the normal atmo- spheric pressure. The problem is better solved otherwise.

density of a gas and the pressure to which it is subject. Assuming Boyle's law that the density of air is directly as the Relation

This problem, which can only be settled by experiment, | pressure, we can now integrate the equation of equilibrium between was solved for the case of air within a certain range of ap= – pov, aa pressures by Robert Boyle (1662). Before discussing sa paiinan tron > presstire his results and the later results of other investigators, we p=me-VK, in our at- shall first consider the general properties of our atmo- mosphere,

where y, is the pressure at zero potential and K is the constant ratio of the pressure to the density.

For all attainable heights in our atmosphere we may assume the force of gravity to be the same. Hence we may write V=gh,

MIK. — 91

| sphere as recognized before Boyle's day. _ It is evident that, for a fluid situated as our atmosphere is, the pressure must diminish as we ascend. The equl-

Boyle's experl- ment.

Mariotte's experi- ments,

where g is the force acting on unit mass at height 4. K=gH, the equation becomes pape, ‘i

where H is obviously the height of a fluid of uniform density pol K which would give at its base the pressure py—in other words, the height of the homogeneous atmosphere, as it 1s called. Its value is readily found, since it bears to the height of the mercurial baro- metric column the same ratio which the density of mercury bears to the density of the atmosphere at the sea-level. For dry air at 0° C. and with g taken as equal to 981 dynes (=32°2 poundals nearly), the value of H is 79887 × 10° centimetres, or 26,210 feet. Hence the formula giving the hcight above the sea-level in terms of the pressure may be written

h=7°9887 × 10° x Nap. log. (p/p). In practice this formula must be modified to suit regions where g is other than 981, and where the temperature is other than 0°. The effect of the water-vapour present must also be taken into account, and the constants involved earefully tested by observation. The subject is treated in detail under BAROMETER.

In an appendix to the Mew Experiments, Physico- Mechanical, dc., touching the Spring of Air (1660), Robert Boyle states that the density of air is directly as the pressure. His apparatus and method of experiment are as follows. A U-shaped tube is taken, one of whose limbs is considerably longer than the other. The shorter limb is closed at the end; and the whole apparatus is set vertically with the open end pointing upwards. A small quantity of mercury fills the bend, so that at the beginning of the experiment the two mercury surfaces are at the same level. Hence the air confined in the shorter limb is subjected to a pressure along its lower surface equal to the atmospheric pressure, or one atmosphere as it 1s com- monly called. As the height of the air column in the closed tube is small, the pressure and density are practic- ally the same throughout. Now let mercury be poured into the longer limb. The free mercury surface will be observed to rise in the shorter limb, so that the air con- fined there becomes compressed into smaller bulk. Since the mass of air has not altered, the density is obviously inversely as the bulk, and can therefore be easily measured. Again, the pressure to which the confined air is now sub- jected is equal to the pressure over that surface in the mercury in the open limb

which is at the same level as the free mercury surface in the closed limb. But this pres- sure is clearly the sum of the atmospheric pressure and the pressure due to the superincumbent column of mercury, which latter can be readily expressed in atmospheres if the height of the barometer is known. In other words, divide the vertical distance between the two mercury sur- faces by the height of the barometer column. The quotient added to unity gives the required pressure in atmospheres.

Fourteen years after the date of the publication of Boyle's results, Mariotte,! working independently, dis- covered the same law, which is still widely known on the Continent as Mariotte's law. He supplemented Boyle's experiments by investigating the effect of pressures less than that of the atmosphere, and proved that the same law held at these diminished pressures. His method was essentially as follows. A barometer tube is filled in the ordinary way with mercury and fixed up as in the Tor- ricellian experiment. A little air is then introduced at the lower end of the tube which is dipping in the reservoir of mercury. This air travels up the tube and fills the Torricellian vacuum at the top, thereby depressing to a slight extent the barometer column. The amount of depression divided by the true height of the barometer gives the pressure in atmospheres which acts upon the air in the tube. The tube, always kept truly vertical, dips in @ reservoir of mercury sufficiently deep to admit of its complete immersion. For a certain position of the tube the free surfaces of mercury in the tube and reservoir are

1 Traité de la Nature de U Air, 1676.

If we put ‘ at the same level.

For that position the confined air is at the atmospheric pressure ; and for any higher position of the tube the pressure in the confined mass of air is less than the atmospheric pressure by the pressure due to the column of mercury between the free surfaces. Recent experiments by Kraevitch and Petersen (Journal of the Russian Chemical Society, vol. xvi.) seem to show that very rarefied air is very far from obeying Boyle's law. At such low

pressure, the condensation of the gas upon solid surfaces is an important factor.

For most ordinary purposes Boyle's law—that, at con- stant temperature, the density of a gas varies directly as the pressure—may be assumed to be true, at least for moderate ranges of pressure ; but the careful investigations of later experimenters, such as Oersted, Despretz, Dulong, Regnault, Andrews, Cailletet, and Amagat, have proved that the law is only approximate for every known gas, and that the deviation from correspondence with the law is different for each gas. The most recent investigations are those of Cailletet and Amagat, who have carried the results to much higher pressures than former experimenters employed. Both adopted in the first place a form of apparatus essentially the same as Boyle's, only inuch longer. The gas was subjected to the pressure of a mercury column enclosed in a strong narrow steel tube ; and, as oxygen acts vigorously upon inercury at high pressures, nitrogen was used. In this way Cailletet? attained to a pressure of 182 metres of mercury, and Amagat* to a pressure of nearly 330. |

Boyle's law only approxi- mate,

Having thus determined accurately the corresponding Amagat'i

pressures and densities of nitrogen, Amagat proceeded to determine the relation for other gases by Pouillet's differential method. That is, the pressure to which the new gas was subjected was. made to act simultaneously upon a given mass of nitrogen, whose volume could be readily measured and pressure estimated. Oxygen, hydro- gen, carbonic oxide, dry air, olefiant gas, and marsh gas were investigated in this way. The general results obtained by Amagat are exhibited in the subjoined chart taken from his paper. For all gases except hydrogen the product py (pressure into volume), instead of being con- stant, as Boyle's law would require, diminishes at first as the pressure is increased. At a certain pressure, however, different for each gas, the diminution ceases, and if the pressure is still further increased the product pv begins to increase also, and continues so to do to the greatest pressure used. In the case of hydrogen the product increases from the very beginning.

On the diagram, abscisse represent pressures in metres of mercury, and the ordinates represent the deviations from the Boylean law. It will be observed that all the curves pass through the point on the pressure axis which represents a pressure of 24 metres of mercury. If represents the product pv for any gas at this pressure, and 7’ the corresponding product for any other pres- sure, then we may write

ar/n’ =1+5, where 6 represents the deviation from Boyle’s law. All the curves exeept that for hydrogen show a well-marked minimuni, at and near the pressure corresponding to which the particular gas obeys

Boyle’s law. For the several gases these positions occur at the pressures as given in the following table :—

NGO MON Ts… .2c2c seca o0’m, | Catbonielacid’.....0. 50 in ORG EN oo. sacs eoscenees TOOsmn, | Marslitpasy….....00 120 m NG ie ov dus iene aneeencsent 65 th. | Ole@anit Gas. .....0..5 65 m

For olefiant gas 5 is so great, and varics so rapidly, that only portions of the curve are represented. The value of 8 for its miniinum point is —1°3, while the corresponding value for oxygen is —0°05. In these experiments the temperature of the gases varied between 18° and 22° C,

Amagat * has extended his researches to higher temperatures up

2 Journal de Physique, vol. viii., 1879. 3 Annales de Chimie et de Physique, vol. xix., 1880. 4 Annales de Chimie et de Physique, vol. xxii., 1881.

ments.

experi- |

_ Charles’s

law,

PNEUM

to 100° ©. The gencral characters of the curves obtained for hydrogen, nitrogen, olefiant gas, and marsh gas remain the same as at the ordinary temperature ; that is, with the exception of hydrogen, the product pu decreases to a minimum and then increases indefinitely.

The position of the minimum changes with the temperature. Thus for olefiant gas and carbonic acid gas (whose properties were also studied at these higher temperatures), the pressure at which the minimum occurs increases with the temperature, while in the case of nitrogen and marsh gas this critical pressure decreases as the temperature rises. Probably at some temperature higher than 100° olefiant gas and carbonic acid gas would begin to behave like nitrogen, and all would appear to tend more and more, as the tem- perature rises, to the condition of which hydrogen is the type. That is, the deviation from the Boylean law up to the minimum point would steadily decrease until finally the curve would cease to

fe x oR © s

LNVISS10

sv9

have a marked minimum. For any one gas, the higher the tem- perature the less the curvature at the minimum point; and the comparison of different gases seems to indicate that the curvature 1s greater for the more easily liquefiable gas. At sufficiently high temperatures the law of compressibility for all gases approximates to the relation

P(V – a) =constant,

where P is the pressure, V the volume, and aaconstant. Hydrogen follows this law very closely at the ordinary temperature of the air, as the straightness of its representative curve shows at a glance.

Amagat has further discussed by means of his results the law of dilatation of gases. This law is named Charles’s law, after the discoverer of it. Stated simply, it is that at constant pressure every gas expands by the same fraction of itself for a given rise from a given temperature. Charles did not publish

his results; and it was not till fifteen years later, when Dalton and Gay-Lussac, working independently, rediscovered it, that the law became generally known.

a TEC Ss 243

Their results were published in 18011 and 18022 respec- tively; and it is upon the authority of the latter, who accidentally became acquainted with the fact, that the law is now named after Charles. The careful measurements of Magnus,'? Regnault,* Jolly, and others have established that there is an appreciable difference in the coefficients of expansion for the different gases. The difference is slight for the so-called permanent gases—air, nitrogen, oxygen, hydrogen, and marsh gas; but for the more easily lique- fiable gases it is quite marked. The mean coefficient of expansion for air between 0° C. and 100° C. and at the ordinary atmospheric pressure is '(003665 per degree, and the value for any one of the gases just mentioned does not certainly differ from this by one-half per cent.5 This may be expressed by the formula v=KT,

where K is a constant and T the tempera- ture measured from absolute zero, which is 274° C. below the freezing point of water (see Heat). When T is constant, we have by Boyle's law the product pv also constant. Hence we may combine the two laws in the form

pu=RT,

where R is a constant. We thus see that, Boyle's law being assumed to be true at all temperatures, Charles's law, if true for any given pressure, is true for every other pressure. Further, if v is kept constant the rate of increase of log p with temperature will be expressed by © the same number as the rate of increase of log v when p is kept constant. Ex- periment has fully verified this conclusion to as close an approximation as Boyle's and Charles's laws themselves are fulfilled. The rate of increase of log v with tempera- ture, or, what is the same thing, the ratio of the rate of increase of the volume to the original volume, is given by the formula

PIA

Sti aains. eee

ae Ss a

SSeS”. 841 A

a

vat T’ and this is the measure of the coefficient of expansion at temperature T. Hence the coefficient of expansion diminishes as the temperature rises, a conclusion also in accordance with experiment so long as we are dealing with gases which nearly obey Boyle’s and Charles’s laws.

We have seen, however, that even in the case of Amagat’s hydrogen the departure from Boyle’s law is very marked results.

at the higher pressures ; and therefore we cannot expect a closely numerical agreement between the results of experi- ment and the results of calculation from the above formula. Thus, it is not surprising that practically the coefficient of expansion should be affected by the pressure, as Amagat’s experiments clearly show,—although in the equation deduced above the pressure does not enter. In the following table given by Amagat, the second column contains the mean coefficients of expansion of hydrogen between 17° and 60° C. at the pressures given in the first

1 Memoirs of the Philosophical Society of Manchester, vol. v.

2 Annales de Chimie, xliii., An X.

3 Pogg. Ann., lv., 1841. 4 Mém. del Acad., xxi.

5 The first who really gave accurate values of these quantities was

‘ Rudberg.

Iso- therms.

244 PN i

column ; and the third column contains the corresponding mean coeflicients between 60° and 100° C.

Pressure in Metres of Mercury.

60°-100°.

40 0033 0029 100 0033 0028 180 0031 0027 260 0030 0025 820 0028 0024

The temperature effect upon the coefficient of expan- sion, as shown by these numbers, is approximately that indicated above, viz., that at constant pressure the co- efficient of expansion is inversely as the absolute tempera- ture. A glance down each column shows at once the marked effect of pressure. In this steady decrease of the coefficient of expansion .with increase of pressure, hydrogen stands alone amongst the substances discussed by Amagat. His conclusions are given in these words :—

1. The coefficient of expansion of gases increases with the pres- sure to a maximum, after which it decreases indefinitely.

2. This maximum occurs at the pressure for which at constant temperature the product pv is a minimum, that is, the pressure at which the gas follows for the instant Boyle's law.

8. With increasing temperature this maximum becomes less and less sensible, finally disappearing with the minimum characteristic of the compressibility curve.

Thus, as hydrogen does not show this minimum characteristic, its coefficient of expansion has no maximum value. Possibly at lower temperatures hydrogen may, however, possess these characteristics.

It thus appears that the simple gaseous laws established by Boyle and Charles are most nearly fulfilled by those gases which are difficult to liquefy, and are better fulfilled by all the higher the temperature is. When a gas is near its point of liquefaction the density increases more rapidly than the pressure, or in other words the volume diminishes more quickly than Boyle's law requires. When the point of liquefaction is actually reached, the

slightest increase of pressure condenses the whole of the gas into a liquid; and in this state the alteration of volume is very small even for a large increase of pressure.

The transition from the gaseous to the liquid state is conveniently studied by the help of isothermal lines, which may be generally defined as curves showing the relation between two mutually dependent variables for given con- stant temperatures. Such variables are the pressure and volume of a mass of gas. Let the numbers representing the volumes be measured from a chosen origin along a horizontal axis, and the numbers representing the pressures similarly along a vertical axis passing through the same origin. If we consider a mass of gas at a given tempera- ture, for any volume that can be named there will be a definite pressure corresponding, and vice versa. Hence the point whose coordinates are the corresponding volume and pressure is completely determined if either coordinate is given, The temperature always being kept constant, let now the volume change continuously. The pressure will also alter according to a definite law; and the point whose coordinates are at any instant the corresponding volume and pressure will trace out a curve. This curve is an isothermal curve, or simply an isotherm. If Boyle's law were fulfilled, the equation to the isotherm for any given temperature would be of the form

pv=constant. The isotherm would be a rectangular hyperbola, whose asymptotes are the coordinate axes, For any gas not

near its point of liquefaction the isotherm will not deviate greatly from the hyperbolic form.

Let now the pressure be kept constant, and the gas raised

PPOs

somewhat in temperature. The volume of course increases, and the corresponding point on the diagram moves off the original isotherm. Through this point in its new position

we can draw a second isotherm corresponding to the new

temperature. And thus the whole field may be mapped out by a series of isotherms, each one of which corresponds to a definite temperature. The higher the temperature the farther does the isotherm lie from the origin. Such a mapped out diagram or chart shows at a glance the rela- tions between the volume, pressure, and temperature of a given mass of gas, so that if any two of these are given the third can be found at once.

So long as the substance is in the gaseous form, the Iso-

isotherm remains approximately hyperbolic; but at the therms for water

pressure at which liquefaction takes place a marked change occurs in the form of the curve. consider the case of a gramme of steam at 100° C. and at a pressure somewhat below one atmosphere. As the pres- sure is increased, the volume diminishes appreciably faster than Boyle's law requires, but still in such a way as to give an approximately hyperbolic form to the isotherm. When the pressure reaches one atmosphere, however, any further increase is accompanied by the liquefaction of the whole; that is, the volume suddenly diminishes from 1647°5 cubic centimetres to 1 cubic centimetre. Between these extremes of volume, the isotherm is a straight line parallel to the horizontal axis. The pressure remains constant until the whole of the gas is liquefied. In other words, the pressure of a gas in presence of its liquid does not alter provided the temperature is kept constant. This isa partial statement of the more general law that the tempera- ture of the liquid surface alone determines the maximum pressure which its vapour or gas in contact therewith can exert (see Heat). After the whole has been liquefied, any increase of pressure is accompanied by a very minute diminution of volume. Hence the isotherm rises abruptly from the point whose coordinates are 1 cubic centimetre and 1 atmosphere, becoming nearly but not quite vertical. Thus, the isotherm for water-substance at 100° consists of three parts:—an approximately hyperbolic portion for pressures less than one atmosphere, the substance being then wholly gaseous ; a horizontal portion, corresponding to the state in which the substance is partly liquid partly gaseous ; and a nearly vertical portion for pressures higher than one atmosphere, the substance being then wholly liquid. If we trace out the isotherm for some higher temperature, say 150° C., we obtain the same general characteristics. The straight line portion, however, is not so long, for

two reasons :—the steam must be reduced to a smaller volume before liquefaction begins ; and the volume of the liquid when condensed is greater. The pressure corresponding to the transition state is in this case 4:7 atmospheres, and the range of volumes is from 384°4 cubic centimetres in the gaseous state to 1-038 cubic centimetres in the liquid state. It thus appears that the positions of the two points of abrupt change on an isotherm draw nearer the higher the temperature, coming together finally when the temperature has reached a certain critical value. In other words, at and above a certain temperature a liquid and its vapour cannot co-exist. This temperature for water-substance is very high, somewhere about the point of fusion of zinc, and is therefore difficult to measure.

For greater definiteness stance,

|

. . . th || Dr Andrews, however, in his classical researches on car- Andrew”

bonic acid gas,! to which we owe most of what is said he : above, has discussed the whole subject in a very complete y onic aci! This substance, at a temperature of 13°11 C., gas.

manner. begins to liquefy at a pressure of 47 atmospheres. | During the process of liquefaction there is a perfectly visible

1 Phil. Trans., 1869.

Cagniard- Latour’s

| experi- – ments,

The lique-

PRED WMATICS

liquid surface separating the two coexisting states of the substance ; and the isotherm has a corresponding straight line portion. At a temperature of 21° °5 C. liquefaction occurs at a pressure of 60 atmospheres. ‘The horizontal portion of the isotherm, which marks the co-existence of the gaseous and

liquid states, is considerably shorter than at the former temperature. The isotherm for 31°11 C, however, has no such rectilinear characteristic ; and at this and higher temperatures the substance is never during the whole compression in two distinct conditions at once. It is impossible to say when the dense gaseous condition passes into the light liquid condition. The two states are absolutely continuous. The critical temperature—that is, the temperature below which there is a distinct separation between the liquid and the gas—is fixed by Dr Andrews at 30°92 C. for carbonic acid gas. Above this tempera- ture it is impossible to obtain a free liquid surface in a closed vessel. ‘This conclusion had already been arrived at by Faraday in 1826, when he considered himself entitled to state that above a certain temperature no amount of pressure will produce the phenomenon known as condensa- tion.

Andrews’s results also give the true explanation of the observations made by Cagniard-Latour! in 1822 upon the effect of high temperature on liquids enclosed in glass tubes which they nearly filled. He found that at a certain temperature the free liquid surface disappeared, and the tube became filled with a substance of perfectly uniform appearance throughout. He concluded that the whole had become gaseous. In reality he had reached the critical temperature at which the liquid and gaseous con- ditions pass continuously the one into the other. The following are Cagniard-Latour’s estimated values for the temperature and pressure of various substances at the eritical point

| Temperature. Pressure.

Gy y6scevc.cerne cons sneee 17p° C. 38 atmospheres. PM COON ERG sicsecacascss esa esease PHN 119 . Bisulphide of carbon.. ..... Oot i a

Avenarius? and Drion® have studied the critical tem- peratures of other substances, such as sulphuric acid, ace- ton, and carbon tetrachloride. The substances, however, which can be so studied are comparatively few, since the greater number of those which are liquid under ordinary conditions have their critical temperatures very high, while A majority of those which are gaseous have theirs very ow.

The necessity for a very low temperature long prevented

faction of the obtaining in a liquid form of the standard gases—

gases,

hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen, &c.—which were accordingly distinguished by the name permanent gases. Faraday 4 proved that these could not be liquefied at a temperature of —110° C., even when subjected to a pressure of 27 atmospheres. Natterer® likewise failed to reduce these gases to the liquid state, even at a pressure of 3000 atmo- spheres. His means for reducing the temperature were not satisfactory. In 1877 Cailletet and Pictet, working inde- pendently, first successfully effected their approximate liquefaction. The former compressed each of the gases oxygen, nitrogen, and carbonic oxide to 300 atmospheres in a glass tube, which was cooled to — 29° C.6 When the gas was allowed to escape, it did so in the form of a cloud,

Annales de Chimie, 2d ser., xxi., xxii.

Poggendorf’’s Annalen, cli., 1874.

Ann. de Chimie et de Physique, 3d series, lvi.

Phil. Trans., 1845.

ele Berichte, 1850, 1851, 1854; and Pogg. Ann., xciv.,

5 Ann. de Chimie et de Physique, 1878 ; Comptes Rendus, 1882.

L Ps

3 4 5

1

245

condensing for the moment to the liquid state under the influence of the extreme cold produced by the rapid expansion of the gas. Pictet in a similar way obtained an issuing stream of liquid oxygen. Von Wroblewski and

Olzewski’ have more recently obtained oxygen, nitrogen, and carbonic oxide in a more evident liquid state. They used Cailletet’s form of apparatus, and cooled the gas by means of the evaporation of liquid ethylene. Under this extreme cold they observed these substances forming a well-defined liquid in the bottom of the tube. The follow- ing table gives the results of five different observations at shightly different temperatures.

Temperature, C… — 134°°8 | — 135°°8

—129°°6 | -131°°6 | —133°°4 8 27°02 25°85 24 °4

Pressure,in atmos. 23°18 222

At slightly higher temperatures, the pressure necessary for the liquefaction increased very rapidly. Nitrogen and carbonic oxide were not so easily reduced, remaining still gaseous at — 136° C., and under a pressure of 150 atmo- spheres. By a sudden diminution of the pressure to 50 atmospheres there was obtained under the influence of the reduced temperature a rapidly evaporating liquid. The critical point of oxygen has been experimentally fixed by Von Wroblewski® at — 113° C. and 50 atmospheres pres- sure. With the data given by Amagat’s researches, Sarrau® has calculated from a formula of Clausius’s the following values of the critical temperature and pressure for oxygen, nitrogen, hydrogen.

Critical Temperature. | Critical Pressure.

ERR OI 65.50. cin noses ses —105°°4 C, 48°7 atmospheres. INGERO SEN)... cscs. o-0e0e — 123°°8 42:1 Ae iy dmOSenl:. 2. s-csc-<.e —174°°2 98°9 ms

It will be observed that Von Wroblewski’s observed values for oxygen are in remarkably close agreement with the calculated values given here. Apparently oxygen is just at the limit fixed by Faraday.

The behaviour of a gas under varying pressure is a Mano- phenomenon of great practical importance, and gives a valu- meter.

able method for measuring pressures (see MANOMETER).

A modification of the ordinary mercury manometer is used for measuring volumes, and is especially valuable in estimating the densities of substances which cannot be put into water, such for example as liquids or powders. The closed end of the manometer tube, which by means of a stop-cock may be opened to the air at will, is fitted to a flask with which it may be put into connexion when required. ‘Two fiducial marks are then made upon it— one at the position where the mercury surfaces in the two limbs of the tube are co-level, and the other somewhat higher at a convenient spot. Between the two marks the tube expands into a bulb, thereby increasing the interven- ing volume and minimizing the effect of any slight error in bringing the mercury surface to the higher mark. Let the volume of the flask and tube down to the higher mark be v, and the volume of the rest of the tube down to the lower mark V. At first the volume of air in the flask and tube is V + v, at the atmospheric pressure P. Now pour mercury into the open end till the liquid surface in the closed end reaches the higher mark. The air has been compressed to volume v; and the corresponding pressure, as measured by the balanced mercury column, is p+ P. Hence

(p+P)v=P(V +0). Let now a volume z be placed in the flask, and let the

7 Comptes Rendus, 1882-83; Wiedemann’s Annalen, 1883 ; and Annales de Chimie et de Physique, 1884. ; 8 Comptes Rendus, 1884. 9 Comptes Rendus, 1882.

same succession of operations be made. ‘Then, if p’ be the

increase of pressure necessary to bring the mercury surface

from the lower to the higher fiducial mark, we have (p’+P)\(v-x)=P(V+0-2).

As V can be readily determined by gauging the tube,

and as P, p, p’ are all known, the quantities v and x can

be at once found from these equations. —

In many experiments on the properties of gases it is necessary to have an efficient and rapid means for altering the density. – Instruments for this purpose are called air- pumps, and their function may be either to rarefy or con- dense the air—usually the former.

Otto Von Guericke of Magdeburg constructed the first air-pump about the year 1652. It was simply a spherical glass vessel opening below by means of a stop-cock and narrow nozzle into the cylinder of an “ exhausting syringe,” which inclined upwards from the extremity of the nozzle. The cylinder, in which a well-fitting piston worked, was provided at its lower end with two valves. One of these opened from the nozzle into the cylinder, the other from the cylinder into the outside air. During the down-stroke of the piston the former was pressed home, so that no air entered the nozzle and vessel, while the latter was forced open by the air which so escaped from the cylinder. During the return-stroke the latter was kept closed in virtue of the partial vacuum formed within the cylinder, while at the same time the former was forced open by the pressure of the denser air in the vessel and nozzle. Thus, at every complete stroke of the piston, the air in the vessel or receiver was diminished by that fraction of itself which is expressed by the ratio of the volume of the available cylindrical space above the outward ‘opening valve to the whole volume of receiver, nozzle, and cylinder.

Boyle, on hearing of Von Guericke’s success in applying the expansive properties of air as a means to its rarefaction, Hooke, Constructed a machine essentially the same as Von Papin, Guericke’s, of which no description had then been pub- &e. lished, Boyle, however, made the exhausting cylinder a

continuation of the nozzle, which was thus considerably reduced in size, and worked the piston by means of a wheel and racket work. He also employed a transparent glass receiver with removable cover, so that the operator could observe what was going on inside, and more easily alter the contents. Other modifications and improvements followed rapidly ; and in the carrying out of these Boyle was greatly aided by Hooke, who conceived the happy idea of using two syringes opening into the same duct from the receiver. This improvement has recently been credited to Papin.! In this

form the pistons are worked by the same toothed wheel, and are so adjusted that the one rises as the other falls. This arrangement not only doubles the rate of exhaustion per stroke, but vastly increases the ease of working. In the single-barrelled form the piston is drawn back against a pressure of air which is greater the more complete the exhaustion is within ; but in the double-barrelled form the downward pressures upon the two pistons to a certain extent counteract each other, producing opposite rotational effects on the toothed wheel and driving handle. Boyle also early adopted the flat plate, on which could be set receivers of various shapes and sizes. The junction of the plate and receiver he made tolerably air-tight by covering the plate with wet leather and having the receiver rim ground flat. According to Gerland, the invention of the plate is due to Huygens, who constructed the first alr-pump so provided in 1661, shortly after a visit to London, where his interest in the subject was awakened by Boyle. To Huygens, prob- ably in conjunction with Papin, is also due the applica-

Air- pumps.

Invented by Von Guericke.

Improve- ments by Boyle,

? See Gerland, in Wiedemann’s Annalen, 1877, 1883.

PEW RAT LCS

tion of the mercury manometer to measure the pressure in the receiver—an indispensable equipment in all serviceable airpumps. The form of the piston plugs and valves received the special attention of Papin, who by his refined and detailed improvements did much to increase the efficiency of the apparatus.

The important characteristics of an efficient air-pump are as follows. The piston must work smoothly and easily. The valves must act precisely, and be when closed absolutely air-tight. The plate on which the receivers rest must be smooth and plane, so that the ground edges of the receivers may be in close contact all round. This perfect fitting is beyond the powers of the best workmanship, so that it is necessary to press between the receiver and plate

a thin layer of lard, which renders the junction air-tight. Some- where in the duct leading from the receiver to the piston cylinders, a stop-cock must be fixed, so that it may be possible to shut off the receiver completely from these. Then a second stop-cock is required as a ready means for admitting air to the receiver, whenever the need should arise. A combination three-way stop-cock is a very usual form. And, finally, the apparatus should be provided with a pressure gauge—a mercury manometer communicating by means of a duct with the main duct and receiver.

The double-barrelled form of reciprocating air-pump, as Bianchi') finally employed by Boyle, is still much in use; but it is ait-pum gradually being superseded by Bianchi's, which has but | one cylinder and piston. The piston is, however, double- acting, as the cylinder communicates both above and below by suitable valves with the main duct which leads to the receiver. Hence, during both the up and down strokes of the piston, exhaustion is being effected, the gas which is in the diminishing chamber being driven out through a suitable valve to the open air. The chief merit of Bianchi's machine, however, as compared with the older form, lies in the mechanism by which the piston is driven. The end of the piston rod is attached by a crank to a rotating horizontal axle, which is in gearing with the axle of a fly- wheel. The piston cylinder is capable of a reciprocating oscillatory motion about its lower end, which pivots on a horizontal axis. Thus, as the crank rotates, the piston rises and falls in the cylinder, and oscillates along with it from side to side. The driving power is applied to a handle fixed to the fly-wheel. This substitution of a con- tinuous rotatory motion for a reciprocating motion greatly facilitates rapid exhaustion.

At every complete stroke of the piston the pressure of Complet) air in the receiver is reduced by a definite fraction of itself, exhavs- which depends upon the relative volumes of the receiver os. and piston cylinder. Hence the absolute change of pres- 3 sure per stroke is smaller as the pressure is smaller; and the rate of exhaustion at very low pressures becomes prac- tically inappreciable. There is, in fact, a practical limit to exhaustion, the particular value of which depends upon the special characteristics of the instrument. The best air-pumps of the type described above cannot reduce the pressure to less than what would balance one or two millimetres of mercury—that is, to what is technically called a pressure of one or two

millimetres. To obtain a lower pressure or a higher vacuum, as it is commonly termed, requires the use of a different principle. a

In a well-constructed barometer the region above the Mercuri) mercury contains no air. It is not an absolute vacuum, ~_ | but is filled with vapour of mercury ata very low pressure —according to Regnault, ‘0372 mm. at 20° C., and ‘02 mm, at 0° C. The way in which the Torricellian vacuum has been applied to give a practical air-pump has been described in MercurraL Arr-Pump. So long as mercury vapour is permitted to pass freely through the exhausting tubes, it is impossible to obtain by the mercurial air-pump

pressures lower than the fortieth of a millimetre. If, however, there is placed somewhere in the duct leading from the mercury pump to the receiver a non-volatile sub- stance which absorbs mercury vapour, the mercury vapour will be arrested. With similar precautions for the absorp- tion of water vapour or other vapour which may be present, it is possible to obtain very low pressures indeed. Thus Crookes! in his radiometer experiments obtained pressures as low as ‘00015 mm. or the ‘2 millionth of an atmosphere. The form of pump used was of Geissler’s type. The water vapour was absorbed by phosphoric anhydride. Sulphur was used to absorb the mercury vapour; and on the further side metallic copper was placed to absorb any sulphur vapour which might tend to pass.

Test ofa The best test of a good vacuum is the electrical test. Disruptive gool discharge through a long tube filled with gas is possible only when vacuum, the gas is very rare, but there is a point in the rarefaction of a gas at which the discharge passes most easily. In other words, the dielectric strength of a gas reaches a minimum as its pressure is diminished, and it is possible to obtain such a high vacuum that

electric discharge will not take place through any considerable length of the exhausted space (see ELEcTRICITY). In this con- nexion we may notice a simple but instructive experiment of Dewar’s. He carefully exhausted a vacuum tube, in which he had previously inserted a piece ot carbon. In the last stages of the exhaustion the carbon was strongly heated so as to drive off most of the gas which is always condensed ou its surface. After the

completion of the exhaustion, the tube was sealed up and the earbon allowed to cool. As it cooled, it condensed over its surface , the greater portion of the small quantity of gas left in the vacuuin tube. The vacuum was thus vastly improved, so that it was im- possible to pass an electric spark between two platinum electrodes which had been previously fused into the glass. A gentle heat applied to the carbon, however, was sufficient to drive off from its surface enough of the occluded gas to raise the pressure to the point necessary for the passage of the electricity. As the carbon cooled again, the high vacuum was restored and the discharge ceased. Condens- It is hardly necessary to do more than mention the other mg “= class of air-pumps. Let the essential valves in an exhaust- per: ing pump have their actions reversed, and the apparatus will become a condensing pump. The condensing syringe is the usual form of such a pump; but, compared to the exhausting instrument, it has very limited applications. For the mere obtaining of high pressures hydraulic means are preferable, being at once more manageable and less dangerous. Besides, even moderately slow compression of a gas is accompanied by considerable rise of tempera- ture, just as rarefaction of a gas is accompanied by appreciable lowering of temperature. In the former case work is done in compressing the gas against its own pres-

sure, and this energy appears as heat which raises the temperature of the gas. In the latter case the gas in expanding draws upon its own energy and so cools. | Thermal ‘The thermal properties of gases are treated as a branch of mathematical physics under Heat and TuERmo- DYNAMICS, where also will be found discussed such experi- mental details as bear intimately upon the theory. The C, article ATom contains a concise statement of the modern kinetic theory of gases; and in Constrrution or Bop1Es and Dirruston certain more special aspects of the same theory are regarded. For the mathematical theory see

Mouecute. The principles embodied in these articles have been assumed throughout the present article.

The cooling of a gas by its own expansion may be observed in one of its effects during exhaustion in an ordinary receiver. Frequently a cloud of minute drops of water—a veritable fog—forms in the exhausted air. The

reason simply is that the air has become cooled below its dew-point, or the temperature corresponding to the pres- sure of water vapour present. If the receiver is first filled With dry air and then exhausted, no cloud forms. Also if |

‘ Aitken’s experi- ments,

the air is carefully filtered through cotton wool, no cloud — ree altered through cotton wool, no cloud

‘ See his Bakerian Leeture, Phil. Trans., 1878, clxix. 300.

=m FaUS 247

forms, even though the air be thoroughly saturated with water vapour. This latter fact was established by Mr Aitken in his beautiful series of experiments on dust, fogs, and clouds? It thus appears that the formation of fog and cloud depends not only upon the humidity of the air but also upon the amount of dust in the air. The little

| particles of dust are necessary as nuclei upon which the

vapour can begin to condense. The more numerous the dust particles the finer are the drops which form on them. As these coalesce into larger drops and fall, they bring down the dust nuclei with them ; and hence the tendency of rain is to clear the atmosphere, and make conditions less favourable for the formation of more cloud and rain. Thus rain, fog, and dew all require for their formation a free solid surface, colder than the temperature of saturation, on which to condense. In a dustless atmosphere no cloud can ever form.

It has been already pointed out that when a fluid is in motion it Finid cau no longer be regardcd as even approximately possessing the pro- friction. perties of the ideal perfect fluid. ‘The postulate that the stress he- tween contiguous portions is perpendicular to the common interface cannot be fora moment admitted. A few examples will inake this clear. Thus, if a vessel filled with a liquid be set in rotation, the liquid will soon be found to be rotating with the vessel; and if the motion of the vessel be stopped, the

motion of the liquid inside will gradually subside. These phenoniena show the existence of a stress tangential to the fluid elements, whereby the relative motion of the different parts of the system is gradually destroyed, until the vessel and its contents behave as one solid body. Again, a fluid stream flowing along a tube or canal moves fastest in the middle, slowest at the bounding walls, and with all possible intermediate speeds at intermediate places. ‘his retardation, due in the first instance to the action of the walls upon the fluid in direct contact therewith, aud then to the friction between the successive contiguous sheets of fluid, plainly implies the existence of tangential stress. The action of the wind in causing waves on thie smooth surface of a sheet of water is a further illustration.

In the discussion of fluid motion, however, it is customary to consider first the properties of the ideal fluid in this respect.

Under Hypromecuanics, and especially under Atom, will be found the mathematical theory treated in full so far as the motion of a non-viscous fluid is concerned.

The possibility of setting up vortex-motion in a fluid depends General upon its imperfection, upon the property of viscosity or fluid effects of friction which is possessed by all known fluids. Some of the more viscosity. obvious effects of this property have been already noticed. Its effects indeed are conspicuous wherever there is relative motion of the contiguous parts of a fluid. A current of air moving through a mass of air at rest soon loses its momentum; a solid body moving through still air likewise has its motion retarded. The loss of energy which a meteoric stone so suffers as it speeds through the atmosphere appears in the form of heat, which is sufli- cient to make the stone glow to incandescence or to the temperature of rapid combustion. The waves of rarefaction and condensation, which constitute sound physically, gradually decay in virtue of viscosity. It appears that the rate of this decay is quickest for the shortest waves ; so that a sound after travelling through a long distance may lose its shriller constituents and so be niodified and mellowed. It is viscosity also which supports the minute dust particles and cloud-forming drops of water in our atmo- sphere. These are bulk for bulk heavier than the atmosphere, and in tranquil air are slowly

sinking. The slowness of their down- ward motion is directly due to the effect of fluid-friction.

The term fluid-friction is applied because of the similarity of Fluid its effects to the effects of friction between solid masses, Other- friction wise there necd be uo further resemblance. The true nature of depends friction between solid surfaces is not known; possibly, as suggested on diffu- by Sir W. Thomson, it may be in great measure electrical. In the sion. case of gases, however, the origin of friction is more apparent. Its laws cau be deduced froin the kinetic theory, and depend directly upon the principle of diffusion. According to the kinetic theory of gases, the molecules of a gas are in constant motion amongst themselves. Compared to their own dimensions, they are by no means closely packed, so that any individual molecule travels a comparatively large space between its encounters with other molecules. Any two contiguous regions are continually inter-changing molecules. This diffusion of a gas into itself we have no means of measuring experimentally, as we cannot deal with the individual molecules. Suppose, however, that we have two con- tiguous layers of a gas flowing in pavallel directions with diferent speeds. The general drift of molecules in the one layer is faster

2 Trans. Roy. Soc. Edin., 1880-81.

than in the other. But this difference will vot prevent the individual molecules diffusing across the interface between the layers. Diffusion will go on freely. The result will be that the slower moving layer will on the whole gain momentum in the direction of its motion and the faster moving layer lose moineutum. Thus, diffusion tends to the equalization of momentum between

two contiguous regions, and the rate at which this takes place |

across unit area is the measure of the viscosity. Maxwell has proved! that the viscosity so measured is independent of the

density of the gas when the temperature is constant ; whereas the |

relation between the viscosity and temperature depends upon the particular mode of action between the molecules when they approach each other. ;

The above definition of viscosity is not one which can be used in experimental determinations, since we cannot take account of the individual molecules of a gas. The coefficient of viscosity must be defined in terms of directly measurable quantities.

Viscosity Maxwell has defined viscosity in these words :—the viscosity of

defined physi- cally.

Experi- ments on viscosity.

a substance is measured by the tangential force on unit of area of either of two horizontal planes at the unit of distance apart, one of which is fixed, while the other moves with unit of velocity, the space between being filled with the viscous substance. This is the dynamical definition. When the effects of viscosity on the internal motions of a fluid itself are being considered it is often more convenient to use the kinematical definition. It is given in terins of pw, the coefficient of viscosity, by the equation R= pv,

where p is the density of the substance, and y the kinematic viscosity.

The viscosity of fluids has been determined experimentally i three distinct ways—by flow of the fluid through tubes, by motion in the fluid of pendulums or vibrating disks, and by the oscilla- tions of spheres filled with the fluid. The last was employed by Helmholtz and Von Piotrowski in their investigation of liquids," but it is not applicable to the case of gases. Experiments on the flow through capillary tubes have been carried out by Poiseuille * for liquids, and by Graham, 4 Meyer,® Springmiih],® andPuluj ® for gases. This, the transpiration method, is the most effective for comparing viscosities, which are directly proportional to the times of trans- piration of the respective gases. There is, however, a little uncertainty as to the effect of the capillary tube,—so that, for measuring absolutely the viscosity for any one gas, the method is not so trustworthy as the second method. Here we may use cither pendulums swinging through small ares or disks oscillating in their own plane under the action of torsion. In both the

measurement depends upon the rate at which the amplitude of oscillation diminishes.

Stokes, who first satisfactorily discussed the true nature of viscosity, tested the theory by a discussion' of the pendulum experiments of Dubuat (1786), Bessel (1826), and Baily (1832). From Baily's results he calculated '000104 (in metric units) as the coefficient of viscosity of air. Meyer® similarly deduced from Bessel's and Girault's® experiments the values '000275 and 000384. It is not in the least surprising that these are all pretty

wide of the true value, seeing that the experimenters had not the |

special problem of finding the viscosity hefore them.

Meyer, to whom we owe a very complete serics of valuable memoirs on the subject, has more recently experimented !° with three different-sized pendulums. The values deduced for the viscosity were '000232, '000233, and 000184. The last number, given by the shortest pendulum, Meyer considers to be the best.

Maxwell," Meyer,'? and Kundt and Warburg'? have experimented with oscillating disks. The methods of Maxwell and Meyer were so far similar that each used an arrangement of three horizontal circular disks, fixed centrally to the same vertical axis, and sus- pended by a torsion wire inside a receiver. The pressure and tem- perature of the air or gas inside could be adjusted to any desired values within certain limits. In Maxwell's apparatus, which Meyer adopted in his later researches, the moving disks vibrated between parallel fixed disks, which were perforated in the centre so as to allow the vertical suspended axis to pass freely through them. Each disk thus oscillated in its own plane between two parallel fixed surfaces. After the disks were set in position, and the air in the receiver brought to the desired temperature and pressure, the suspended disks were set in oscillation. This was effected magneti- cally, a small magnet fixed to the end of the suspended axis being acted upon by an external magnet suitably adjusted. Each disk, in its oscillations, dragged after it the layer of air in immediate con- tact with it; and in virtue of viscosity this oscillation was trans-

1 Phil, Mag., 1860, and Phil. Trans., 1867.

2 Sitzungsber. der Wiener Akad., 1860.

3 Afém. des Savants Etrangers, 1846.

5 Poggendorf’s adnn., cxlviii., 1873.

6 Sitzungsber. d. Wiener Akad., 1xix.

7 Cam. Phil. Trans., ix., 1850, ;

t. ike Care etc., de Caen, 1860. oggendorff’s Ann., cxlii., 1871. N Phil, i

12 Poggendorf’s Ann., exciii., 1871, and cxlviii. 1873, ia

13 Poggendor ffs Ann., cly. clyi., 1875, ,

4 Phil. Trans., 1846, 1849.

1878.

8 Poggendorf’’s Ann., cxxv., 1865.

iF

| nearly the same as in millionths of an atmosphere.

PN Uw 2 Pees

mitted with diminishing amplitude from layer to layer until the fixed disks were reached. In thus setting and sustaining in motion a mass of gas, the disk was doing work ; and, if left to itself and to the action of the torsion suspension, it oscillated with gradually diminishing range until it came to rest. The viscosity of the air was not the only retarding influence. The torsion wire had also a coeflicient of viscosity ; and then there was a possible resistance due to the slipping of the fluid at the surfaces of the disks. These vari- ous effects were discriminated by suitable modifications.

Thus by placing the oscillating disks in contact with each other, and setting two of the fixed disks at measured distances above and below,

| Maxwell reduced the number of surfaces in contact with the fiuid,

and so increased the relative importance of the cffect due to the wire's viscosity. Again, by diminishing the distances between the fixed and oscillating disks, he made the conditions more favourable to the effect (if any) due to the slipping. This latter effect was found to be so small as to be almost within the errors of observation ; consequently Maxwell felt himself warranted in calculating the coefficient of viscosity on the assumption that there was no slipping.

Maxwell's final result in metric (C. G. 8.) units for the coefficient

of viscosity of dry air is w= 0001878(1 + 003658) , where @ is the temperature in degrees Centigrade. Meyer's result is

= 000190(1 + * 00258).

Maxwell found the effect of pressure to be inappreciable down toa pressure of 12 mm., and thus verified the deduction from theory.

Kundt and Warburg, in their experiments, used only one disk, which oscillated under the influence of a bifilar suspension between two fixed disks, They carried the pressure down to as low as 0°6 mm. At 20 mm. pressure the viscosity was the same as at the atmospheric pressure; but at lower pressures a sliglit diminution began to show itself. According to Crookes's later researches, this diminution becomes more and more marked at the higher exhaustions. The manner in which the viscosity then diminishes coincides remarkably with the manner in which the free path increases. It could not be expected that in such modified circumstances Maxwell's law would continue to apply. When the gas becomes so far rarefied that the mean frec path of a mole- cule is not small compared to the space in which the gas is confined, the motion of the molecules cannot be treated statistically. Hence the deductions from a theory based upon the statistic method will no longer hold good.

Maxwell, Kundt and Warburg, and Crookes investigated by the disk method the viscosities of other gases, the values for which are compared below with the transpiration times of the same gases through capillary tubes. Maxwell also found that damp air, at 100 mm. pressure, and over water at about 20° C., was one-sixtieth less viscous than dry air at the same temperature. Kundt and Warburg found for water vapour, at 21° C. and 16 mm, pressure, the value

p= 0000975,

a little more than half that of air.

The results obtained by Meyer and Springmiihl and by Pulyj from their transpiration experiments agree well with those already given. In such experiments, however, the slipping of the gas over the solid surface has in certain circumstances a measurable effect. This slipping is measured by a certain coefficient, called the Gleitungs-Coefficient by Hehnholtz and Von Piotrowski. When this coefficient becomes appreciable, the gas in contact with the solid surface, instead of being at rest relatively to that surface, will be gliding over it with a finite velocity v. The circumstances of the notion will be very nearly the same if we remove a layer of the solid surface and replace it by fluid, the new surface of fluid in contact with the new solid surface being at rest. The thickness which must be so removed is the measure of the cocfficient of slipping. Kundt and Warburg,‘ in their experiments with glass tubes, found this cocfficient for dry air at about 20° C. to be

8/p centimetres, where p is the pressure in dynes per square centimetre, which is The value for hydrogen on glass is 15/p. Hence at ordinary pressures and moderate exhaustions this coefficient is very small, becoming appreciable only at low pressures.

The relation between viscosity and temperature is indicated at once by Maxwell’s and Meyer’s formule given above. According to Maxwell, the viscosity is proportional to the absolute tempera- ture. Ifin the kinetic theory the forces between the molecules are disregarded, that is, if the molecules are assumed to rebound after collision like elastic spheres, the relation deduced is that the vis- cosity varies as the square root of the

absolute temperature. Hence the mutual molecular forces must be taken into account. Maxwell’s experimental iaw would require any two molecules to repel each other with a force varying inversely as the fifth power of the distance. According to Meyer, however, the viscosity varies

14 Poggendorff’s Ann., 1876.

Srookes.s ~adio- neter,

PNE—PNE

aceording to a power of the absolute temperature less than unity, but greater than one-half. His results in this respeet are corro- borated by those of Kundt and Warburg, Puluj, and other later experimenters. The ‘77 power is probably not far from the truth. Henee we may give as the final value for the viscosity of dry air the expression

p= 000185(1 + °00288) .

The following table gives the values for the different gases, as determined by the different investigators, the viseosity of air being taken as unity.

Graham.| Maxwell.) Meyer. ae Crookes. JE. 000 RHERR eee 1:000 | 1:000 | 1:000} 1°:000 | 1°000 (SST op naueoeenaepagobeee 1112 1:095 1119 PNTUTO GEM 2.2… 112005 eens ‘971 972 Carbonie oxide 968 ee aa at ‘972 Carbonie aeid …..... 840 “859 851 806 920 BV ULOGEN.. .....00..00000 488 516 | *601} +488 “444

We do not here enter into the question of the thermodynamies of gases; enough to say that the relations between viscosity, diffusion, and thermal eonduetivity deduced by Maxwell from the kimetie theory have reeeived remarkable eorroboration from the experiments of Losehmieht, Stefan, Kundt and Warburg, and others. A discussion of the dynamieal properties of gases would not, however, appear complete without mention of Crookes’s so- called radiometer, even though these phenomena of high vaeua are ultimately thermodynamic.

The typieal form of the radiometer is a glass bulb, in which is hung a delieately poised arrangement of vanes. These, usually four in number, are fixed at the extremities of two light horizontal cross-rods, which are supported so as to be capable of easy rotation about a central vertical axis. The vanes or disks are set in vertical planes passing through the axis ; and eaeh has its one side bright, and the other blackened. For any rotation the motion of each vane is exaetly alike; that is, either the bright faces all move first, or the dark faees do so. If the pressure of the gas inside the bulb is redueed to a very low exhaustion, the vanes under the action of light or heat will begin to rotate. The mere bringing the radio- meter out of a dark region into daylight is enough to set up this rotation. In ordinary eircumstanees the dark faces are apparently repelled, and the vanes move round with their bright faeces in advanee.

The phenomenon is really a thermal one, as was demonstrated experimentally by Tait and Dewar.! Further, although it is most evident in high vacua (provided they are not too high), it ean be produeed in very moderate exhaustions by a suitable arrangement, as was long ago pointed out by Fresnel. Thus, if under the receiver of an ordinary air-pumip a light disk be delieately poised near a parallel fixed surfaee, it will be apparently strongly repelled by this surface if the opposing surfaces are brought to different ten1- peratures. This may be effeetively done by means of a ray of sunlight. In this experiment, the essential eondition is (as shown by Tait and Dewar) that the surfaces be at a distanee comparable to the mean free path of the gaseous moleeules. In Crookes’s radiometer the free path is very long, and hence there is apparent repulsion between the blaekened surfaces and the walls of the bulb. The reason simply is that, under the action of the radiant energy direeted in upon the vanes, the dark faees, absorbing more energy, become warmer than the bright faces. _Henee an inequality of temperature is produeed in. the highly rarefied gas, and this brings into existence a stress whieh displaces the vanes.

Liquid in the spheroidal state illustrates the same principle. That a drop of water may be supported over a hot surfaee without touching it requires an upward pressure. In other words, the vertieal stress in the vapour and gas which separate the drop from the surface must be greater than the ordinary gaseous pressure all round the drop. This stress exists because of the

difference of temperature between the drop and the surface, so that the pressure m the thin layer of vapour and gas is slightly greater in the vertieal than in any horizontal direetion.

A general notion of the manner in whieh this stress is sustained may be obtained from the following eonsideration. According to the kinetie theory of gases, the mean speed of the moleeules is a function of the temperature —the higher the temperature the greater the speed. Henee molecules, impinging upon a surface at a higher temperature, and in a direetion more nearly perpen- dieular to it, will rebound from that surfaee with ‘increased momentum. The simultaneous motion of the surface, as if repelled, is then somewhat analogous to the reeoil of a eannon When fired. The whole investigation of the question is, however, by no means simple. Maxwell has diseussed it with charaeteristic lucidity in his latest eontribution? to the dynamieal theory of

- Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., and Nature, 1875. ? Phil. Trans., 1879.

+

gases. He finds that, when inequalities of temperature exist at a given point in a gas, the pressure is not the same in all direetions. its value in any given direetion, in so far as it depends upon the temperature inequality, is proportional to the space-rate of change of the space-variation of the temperature in that direetion—that is, to the second differential coefficient of the temperature with respeet to the given direetion. Hence the pressure will be greatest along the line tor which this differential eoeffieient is a maximum. It appears that the pressure so called into existence by a possible temperature inequality is very minute at ordinary hydrostatic pressures, but beeomes considerable when the pressure of the gas is inade very small. If the inequality of temperature throughout the gas is due to the presenee of small bodies, whose temperatures differ from the temperatnre of the gas at a distanee from them, then the small bodies will be aeted upon by the stresses set up, provided they are of the same order of smallness as the mean free path of the molecules. In the case of two sueh small bodies, there will be apparent repulsion between them if the bodies are warmer than the air at a

distanee from them, and attraction if they are colder. Ifone is warmer and the other eolder, the action may be either attraetive or repulsive, aecording to the relative sizes of the bodies and their exaet temperatures. These results are obtained by eonsidering only the stresses normal to the solid surfaees. When the tangential stresses are taken into aecount, then it appears that inequality of temperature, when the flow of heat becoines steady, cannot produce other than equilibrium in the material system immersed in the gas. Henee Maxwell believes that the explana- tion of Crookes's phenomenon must depend ultimately upon the slipping of the gas over tlie solid surface. If such slipping be permitted, its effeet will be to diminish the tangential stresses acting on the solid surfaee without affecting the normal stresses ; and henee the equilibrium will be destroyed. Inattempting to express the eonditions to be satisfied by the gas at the solid surface, Maxwell is led to the consideration of the phenomenon discovered by Osborne Reynolds? and named thermal transpiration. This phenomenon consists of a sliding of the gas over the surface of an unequally heated solid from the eolder to the hotter parts. Maxwell eonsiders the partieular ease of the slow steady flow of gas along a eapillary tube of circular section, the temperature of which varies steadily from point to point. The amount of gas whieh passes through any seetion depends both upon the rate of ehange of pressure and the rate of ehange of temperature in passing along the axis of the tube. If the pressure is uniform there will be a flow of gas from the colder to the hotter end. If there is no flow of gas, the pressure will inerease from the colder to the hotter end. The case of uniform temperature is the ordinary case of transpiration through capillary tubes, as discussed experimentally by Graham, Meyer, Puluj, and Kundt and Warburg. The experi- mental investigation of the first two cases seems at present hopeless, on aeeount of the minuteness of the quantities to be measured. Reynolds experimented, not on eapillary tubes, but on the passage of the gas throngh a porous plate, the temperatures being diflerent on the two sides. e (Ch (Ch IS,)

PNEUMONIA, or inflammation of the substance of the lungs, manifests itself in several forms which differ from each other in their nature, causes, and results,—viz., (1) Acute Croupous or Lobar Pneumonia, the most common form of the disease, in which the inflammation affects a limited area, usually a lobe or lobes of the lung, and runs a rapid course; (2) Catarrhal Pneumonia, Broncho-Pneu- monia, or Lobular Pneumonia, which

occurs as a result of antecedent bronchitis, and is more diffuse in its distribu- tion than the former; (3) Interstitial Pneumonia or Cir- rhosis of the lung, a more chronic form of inflammation, which affects chiefly the framework or fibrous stroma of the lung and is closely allied to phthisis.

Acute Croupous or Lobar Pneumonia.—This is the disease commonly known as inflammation of the lungs. It derives its name from its pathological characters, which are well marked. The changes which take place in the lung are chiefly three. (1) Congestion, or engorgement, the blood-vessels being distended and the lung more voluminous and heavier than normal, and of dark red colour. Its air cells still contain air. (2) Red Hepatiza- tion, so called from its resemblance to liver tissue. In this stage there is poured into the air cells of the affected part an exudation consisting of amorphous fibrin together with epithelial cells and red and white blood corpuscles, the whole forming a viscid mass which occupies not only

the cells but also the finer bronchi, and which speedily coagulates, causing the lung to become firmly consolidated. In this condition the cells are entirely emptied of air, their blood-vessels are pressed upon by the exudation, and the lung substance, rendered brittle, sinks in water. The appear- ance of a section of the lung in this stage has been likened to that of red granite. It is to the character of the exudation, consisting largely of coagulable fibrin, that the term croupous is due. (3) Grey Hepatization. In this stage the lung still retains its liver-like consistence, but its colour is now grey, not unlike the appearance of grey granite. This is due to the change taking place in the exudation, which undergoes resolution by a process of fatty degeneration, pus formation, liquefaction, and ultimately absorption, —so that in a comparatively short period the air vesicles get rid of their morbid contents and resume their normal function. This is happily the termination of the majority of cases of croupous pneumonia, yet it occa- sionally happens that this favourable result is not attained, and that further changes of a retrograde kind take place in the inflamed lung in the form of suppuration and abscess or of gangrene. exists some serious constitutional cause which contributes to give this unfavourable direction to the course of

the disease. Further, pneumonia become chronic, the lung never entirely clearing up, and it may terminate in phthisis. Pneumonia may be confined to a portion or the whole of one lung, or it may be double, affecting both lungs, which is a serious and often fatal form. The bases or middle of the lungs are the parts most commonly inflamed, but the apex is sometimes the only part affected. The right lung is considerably more fre- quently the seat of pneumonia than the left lung.

Many points in the pathology of this form of pneumonia remain still to be cleared up. Thus there is a growing opinion that it is not a simple lung inflammation, as was formerly supposed, but that, as regards its origin, progress, aud termination, it possesses many of the characters of a fever or of a constitutional affection. An interesting and important fact in this connexion is the recent discovery by Friedlander and others of a micro-organism or bacillus in the blood, lungs, and other tissues in cases of pneumonia, which, when inoculated into eertain lower animals, is followed by the symptoms and appearances characteristic of that disease. While it must be confessed that such inoculation experiments carried on in rabbits, guinea pigs, or mice are scarcely sufficient by themselves to settle the question of the specific and infectious nature of pneumonia as it affects the human subject, yet they are of distinct value as evidence pointing in that direction. Further, there are numerous iInstaces on record in which this disease has appeared to spread as an epideinic in localities or in families in such a way as strongly to suggest the idea of infectiveness. Cases of this kind, however, are open to the question as to whether there may not coexist some other disease, such as a fever, of which the pneumonia present is but acomplication. The whole subject of the pathology of pneumonia is still under investigation, and all that can in the meantime be affirmed is that it presents many features which render its phenomena unlike those of an ordinary inflammation, while on the other hand it has strong analogies to some of the specific fevers. As regards known causes, in the vast majority of instances an attack of pneumonia comes on as the result of exposure to cold as the exciting agent, while such conditions as fatigue and physical or mental depression are often traceable as powerful predisposing influences,

The symptoms of acute pneumonia are generally well marked from the beginning. The attack is usually ushered in by a rigor (or in ehildren a

convulsion), together with vomiting and the speedy development of the febrile condition, the temperature rising to a considerable degree—101° to 104° or more. The pulse is quickened, and there isa marked disturbance in the respiration, which is rapid, shallow, and difficult, the rate being usually accelerated to some ee or three times its normal amount. The lips are livid, and the

ace has a dusky flush. Pain in the side is felt, especially should any amount of pleurisy be present, as is often the case. Cough is an early symptom. It is at first frequent and hacking, and is accompanied with a little tough colourless expectoration, which em however, becomes more copious and of a rusty brown colour, either tenacious or frothy and liquid. Microscopically this con- sists mainly of epithelium, casts of the air eclls, and fine bronchi together with granular matter and blood and pus corpuscles. ,

In such instances there usually |

may in some instances |

PNEOCMONTA

The following are the chief physical signs in the various stages of the disease. In the stage of congestion fine crackling or crepi- tation is heard over the affected area; sometimes there is very little change from the natural breathing. In the stage of red hepatization the affected side of the chest is seeu to expand less freely than the opposite side ; there is dulncss on percussion, and increase of the vocal fremitus ; while on auscultation the breath sounds are tubular or bronchial in character, with, it may be, some amount of fine crepitation in certain parts. In the stage of grey hepatization the percussion note is still dull and the breathing tubular, but crepitations of coarser quality than before are also audible. These various physical signs disappear more or less rapidly during convalescence. With the progress of tle inflammation the febrile symptoms aud rapid breathing continue. The patient during the greater part of the disease lies on the back or on the affected side. The pulse, which at first was full, becomes small and soft owing to the interruption to the pulmonary circulation. Occasionally slight jaundice is present, due probably to’ a similar cause. The urine is scanty, sometimes albuminous, and its chlorides are diminished. In favourable

cases, however severe, there generally occurs after six or eight days a distinct crisis, marked by a rapid fall of the temperature accompanied with perspiration and with a copious discharge of lithates in the urine. Although no material change is as yet noticed in the physical signs, the patient breathes more easily, sleep returns, and conval- escence advances rapidly in the majority of instances. In unfavour- able cases death may take place either from the extent of the inflammatory action, especially if the pneumonia is. double, from excessive fever, from failure of the heart's action or general strength at about the period of the crisis, or again from the disease assuming from the first a low adynamic form with delirium and with scanty expectoration of greenish or '"'prune juice" appearance. Such cases are seen in persons worn out in strength, in the aged, and especially in the intemperate. Death may also take place later from abscess or gangrene of the lung; or again recovery may be imperfect and the disease pass into a chronic pneumonia.

The treatment of acute pneumonia, which at one time was con- ducted on the autiphlogistic or lowering principle, has of late years undergone a marked change ; and it is now generally held that in ordinary cases very little active intcrference is called for, the disease tending to run its course very much as a specific fever. The employment of blood-letting once so general is now only in rare instances resorted to; but, just as in pleurisy, pain and difficulty of breathing may sometimes be relieved by the applica- tion of a few leeches to the affected side. In severe cases the cautious employment of aconite or antimony at the outset appears useful in diminishing the force of the inflammatory action. Warm applications ip the form of poultices to the chest give com- fort in many cases. Cough is relieved by expectorants, of which those containing carbonate of ammonia are specially useful. Any tendency to excessive fever may. often be held in eheck by quinine. The patient should be fed with milk, soups, and other light forms of nourishment. In the later period of the disease stimulants may be called for, but most reliance is to be placed on nutritious aliment. After the acute symptoms disappear counter-irritation by iodine or a blister will often prove of service in promoting the absorption ef the inflammatory products. After recovery is complete the health

| should for some time be watched with care.

When pneumonia is complicated with any other ailment or itself complicates some pre-existing malady, it must be dealt with

‘ on priuciples applicable to these conditions as they may affect the

individual case.

Catarrhal or Lobular Pneumonia (Broncho-Pneumonia) differs from the last in several important pathological and clinical points. Here the inflammation is more diffuse and tends to affect lobules of lung tissue here and there, rather than one or more lobes as in croupous pneumonia. At first the affected patches are dense, non-crepitant, with a bluish red appearance tending to become grey or yellow. Under the microscope the air vesicles and finer bronchi are crowded with cells, the result of the inflammatory process, but there is no fibrinous exudation such as is present in croupous pneumona. In favourable cases resolution takes place by fatty degeneration, liquefaction, and absorp- tion of the cells, but on the other hand they may undergo caseous degenerative changes, abscesses may form, or a condition of chronic interstitial pneumonia be developed in both of which eases the condition passes into one of phthisis, Evidence of previous bronchitis is usually present in the lungs affected with catarrhal pneumonia. In the great majority of instances catarrhal pneumonia

occurs as an accompaniment or sequel of bronchitis either | from the inflammation passing from the finer bronchi to the pulmonary air vesicles, or from its affecting portions of lung which have undergone collapse. It occurs most frequently in children, and is often connected with some pre-existing acute ailment in which the bronchi are implicated, such as measles or hooping cough. It likewise affects adults and aged people in a more chronic form as the result of bronchitis. Sometimes a condition of catarrhal pneumonia may be set up by the plugging of one or more branches of the pulmonary artery, as may occur in heart disease, pyzemia, cc.

The symptoms characterizing the onset of catarrhal pneumonia in its more acute form are tlie occurrence during an attack of bronchitis of a sudden and marked elevation of temperature, to- gether with a quickened pulse and

increased difficulty in breathing. The cough becomes short and painful, and there is little or no ex- peetoration. The physical signs are not distinct, being mixed up with those of the antecedent bronchitis; but, should the pneumonia be extensive, there may be an impaired percussion note with tubular breathing and some bronchophony.

Acute catarrhal pneumonia must he regarded as a condition of serious import. It is apt torun rapidly to a fatal termination, but on the other hand a favourable result is not unfrequent if it is re- cognized in time to admit of efficient treatment. In the more chronic form it tends to assume the characters of chronic phthisis (see PHTHIsIs). The treatment is essentially that for the more severe forms of bronchitis (see BRONCHITIS), where, in addition to expectorants, together with ammoniacal, cthereal, and alcoholic stimulants, the maintenance of the strength by good nourishment and tonics is clearly indicated. The breathing may often be re- lieved by light warm applications to the chest and back. Con- valescence is often prolonged, and special care willalways he required in view of tle tendency of the disease to develop into phthisis.

Chronic Interstitial Pneumonia or Cirrhosis of the Lung is a slow inflammatory change affecting chiefly one portion of the lung texture, viz., its fibrous stroma.

The changes produced in the lung by this disease are marked chiefly by the growth of nucleated fibroid tissue around the walls of the bronchi and vessels, and in the intervesicular septa, which proceeds to such an extent as to invade and obliterate the air cells. The lung, which is at first enlarged, becomes shrunken, dense in texture, and solid, any unaffected portions being emphysematous; the bronchi are dilated, the pleura thickened, and the lung substance often deeply pigmented, especially in the case of miners, who are apt to suffer from this disease. In its later stages the lung breaks down, and cavities form in its substance as in ordinary phthisis.

This condition is usually present to a greater or less degree in almost all chronic diseases of the lungs and bronchi, but it is specially apt to arise in an extensive form from pre-existing catarrhal pneumonia, and not unfrequently occurs in connexion with occupations which necessitate the habitual inhalation of particles of dust, such as those of colliers, flax-dressers, stonemasons, millers, é&c.

The symptoms are very similar to those of chronic phthisis (see PurHisis), especially increasing difficulty of breathing, particularly on exertion, cough either dry or with expectoration, sometimes Copious and fetid. In the case of coal-miners the sputum is black from containing carbonaceous matter.

The physical signs are deficient expansion of the affected side— the disease being mostly confined to one lung—increasing dulness ol percussion, tubular breathing, and moist sounds. As the disease PTogresses retraction of the side becomes manifest, and the heart and liver may be displaced. Ultimately the condition both as regards physical signs and symptoms takes the characters of the later stages of phthisis with colliquative symptoms, increasing emaciation, and death. Occasionally dropsy is present from the heart becoming affected in the course of the disease. The malady

1s usually of long duration, many cases remaining for years in a Stationary condition and even undergoing temporary improvement in mild weather,

but the tendency is on the whole downward.

The treatment is conducted on similar principles to those applicable in the case of plithisis. Should the malady be con- nected with a particular occupation, the disease might be averted or at least greatly modificd by early withdrawal from such source of irritation, (Jo1Ope:.)

251

PNOM-PENH, the capital of Campopta (see vol. iv. p. 725).

PO, the largest river of Italy, traverses the whole length of the great plain between the Alps and the Apennines, which was in the Miocene period an arm of the sea con- necting the Adriatic with the Mediterranean by what is now the Col d'Altare or Col di Cadibona and has gradually been filled by detritus from the surrounding highlands, That its course lies much nearer the Apennines than the Alps is evidently due to the fact that the tributaries from the loftier range on the north, whether in the form of glacier or stream, have all along been much more powerful than the tributaries from the south. The total length of the river from its conventional source to the mouth of the principal channel is 4174 miles, and the area of its basin, which includes portions of Switzerland and Austria, is estimated at 26,798 square miles. The general course of the river has been already described in Iraty (vol. xiii. p. 435).

The Po forms a very extensive delta, and is probably one of the most active of all rivers in the work of denuda- tion. Prony has calculated that between 1200 and 1600 the delta advanced at the rate of 80 feet per annum; and between 1600 and 1804 the rate is said to have been as much as 230 feet. This. advance has naturally been attended by great changes in the course and size of the several channels. Ravenna, for example, once a great port, now stands on dry land 4 miles from the sea. The modern lagoons of Comacchio, which stretch southwards from the delta, are being artificially reclaimed by the help of the alluvial deposits.

In its ordinary condition the Po has a depth between Pancalieri and the mouth of the Ticino of from 6 to 10 feet, and between the mouth of the Lambro and that of the Adda of about 14 or 15 feet. Lower down the depth

occasionally exceeds 40 feet. Permanent fords exist only in the upper Po, and between the mouths of the Ticino and the Lambro. In times of great drought the bed is quite dry at Rovello, and fords appear below Casalmaggiore and at Borgoforte, where the Freneh and Germans crossed in 1796, 1807, 1813, and 1814; but in general the river forms a complete barrier both to foot and horse. The principal points where crossing is effected by ferries or bridges are *Moncalieri, Turin, *Casale Monferrato, Frassinato, *Valenza, *Mezzana Corti, *DPiacenza, Cremona, Casalmaggiore, Brescello, *Borgoforte, San Benedetto, Ostiglia, *Occhiobello, Pontelagoscuro, Francolino. Railway bridges exist at the places distinguished by an asterisk.

The river in general is at its fullest in May and June, and at its lowest in January (see details in Lombardini's elaborate study on the lower Po in Memorie del Reale Istituto Lombardo, Milan, 1870). The ordinary floods on the Po are attended with little danger; but at intervals sometimes of a few sometimes of many years they become events of the gravest national concern. Those of 1651 and 1705 are among the most destructive recorded in history, and in the present century the more memorable are those of 1839, 1846, 1855, 1857, 1868, 1872, and 1879. In 1872 1150 square miles of country between the Reno and the Adige were submerged, the district about Modena was turned into a lake, the people of Revere saved the rest of their town only by sacri- ficing the front row of houses to form a temporary embankment, and it was only by the wisely conducted energy of its inhabit- ants that Ostiglia was kept from destruction. During April and May 1879 the rainfall was exceptionally heavy, the quan- tity for May alone being equal to more than a third of the an- uual total. The result was a rise in all the tributaries of the Po, and on May 80 the flood in the main river was 21 feet above low water at Mezzana Corta. A breach 720 feet long in the embank- ment between Bonizzo and Borgofranco caused the submergence of 155 square miles in the provinces of Mantua, Modena, and Ferrara, and involved in its repair a national expenditure of £53,460.

Of the £5,902,981 devoted by the Government to the regulation of the rivers of Italy in the twenty years 1861-1880, £2,257,872 had to be appropriated to the Po and its tributaries. Nowhere in Europe except in Holland has the system of embankment been carried to such perfection on

so extensive a scale. A wide bed for the river at its height is enclosed for long distances by a massive master-dyke or froldo, and in the space between this and the ordi- nary channels suitable areas are often enclosed by secondary dykes or golene. The following figures show the extent of the system in

1880 :—

252

| | ey | es aL ed Froldo. | Golena. | Miles. Miles. Miles. | B09°97 71-93 | 438-03 Adige ……cceereresee reeererceeeeeees | 156712 109°81 46°30 Tartaro and Po di Levaute…... | 148-30 35°62 | 112°68 Me Sl crumnoacsesseterseeners | 146*72 33°68 | 113°04 Re cc asoinasoeotroeaeeee ee 48:26 52°07 Soren Ai eeiciceie satciers See hea aera 89°75 28°21 61°54 Bia RT el

Recent researches (see Helbig, Dic Jtaliker in der Po-Kbence, Leipsic, 1879) show that the lower valley of the Po was at an early period occupied by people of the Paleolithic and Neolithic stages of civilization, who built houses on piles along the swampy borders of the streams. It is possible that even they may have begun by crude dykes the great system by which the waters are now con- trolled; at least it is certain that these works date their origin from pre-Roman antiquity. Pliny refers them to the Etruscans, who occupied the country before the arrival of the Gauls. The reclaim- ing and protecting of the riparian lands went on rapidly under the Romans, and in several places the rectangular divisions of the ground, still remarkably distinct, show the imilitary character of some of the agricultural colonies. During the time of the bar’ba- rian invasions much of the protective system was allowed to fall into decay ; but the later part of the Middle Ages saw the works resumed and carried out with great energy, so that the main features of the present arrangement were in existence by the close of the 15th century.

The usual name for the Po among Greek and Latin authors was Padus (Id80s); but the Greek writers of the empire began to apply to it the poetic naine of Eridanus, familiar in the Phaethon myth.

POCHARD, Pockarp, or Poxer,! names properly belonging to the male of a species of Duck (the female of which is known as the Dunbird), the Anas feria of Linneus, and Fuligula or dithyia ferina of later ornitho- logists—but names very often applied by writers in a general way to most of the group or Subfamily Puliguline, commonly called Diving or Sea-Ducks (of. Duck, vii. p. 505). The Pochard in full plumage is a very handsome bird, with a coppery-red head, on the sides of which sparkle the ruby irides of his eyes, relieved by the greyish- blue of the basal half of his broad bill, and the deep black of his gorget, while his back and flanks appear of a light grey, being really of a dull white closely barred by fine undulating black lines. The tail-coverts both above and below are black, the quill feathers brownish-black, and the lower surface of a dull white. The Dunbird has the head and neck reddish-brown, with ill-defined whitish patches on the cheeks and chin, the back and upper tail-coverts dull brown, and the rest of the plumage, except the lower tail-coverts, which are brownish-grey, much as in the Pochard. This species is very abundant in many parts of Europe, northern Asia, and North America, generally fre- quenting in winter the larger open waters, and extending its migrations to Barbary and Egypt, but in summer retiring northward and inland to breed, and is one that certainly seems to have profited by the legislative protec- tion lately afforded to it in Britain, for, whereas during many years it had but a single habitual breeding-place left in England, it is now known to have several, to some of which it resorts in no inconsiderable numbers. American examples seem to be slightly larger and somewhat darker in colour, and hence by some writers have been regarded as specifically distinct under the name of Puligula americana ; but America has a perfectly distinct though allied species in the celebrated Canvas-back Duck, 1’. vallisneriana, a much larger bird, with a longer, higher,

1 The derivation of these words, in the first of which the ch is pro- nounced hard, and the o in all of them generally long, is very uncer- tain. Cotgrave has Pocheculier, which he renders “ Shoueler,” now- a-days the name of a kind of Duck, but in his time meaning the bird we commonly call SPooNBILL (q¢.v.). Littré gives Pochard as a popular French word signifying drunkard. That this word would in the ordinary way become the English Pochard or Poker may be re-

garded as certain ; but then it is not known to be used in French as a bird's name.

POC—POC

and narrower Dill, which has no blue at the base, and, though the plumage of both, especially in the females, is very similar, the male Canvas-back has a darker head, and the black lines on the back and flanks are much broken up and further asunder, so that the effect is to give these parts a much lighter colour, and from this has arisen the bird's common though fanciful name. Its scientific epithet is derived from the freshwater plant, a species of Vadles- neria, usually known as "wild celery," from feeding on which its flesh is believed to acquire the delicate flavour that is held in so great a repute. The Pochard and Dunbird, however, in Europe are in much request for the table (as the German name of the species, T'afelente, testi- fies), though their quality in this respect depends almost wholly on the food they have been eating, for birds killed on the sea-coast are so rank as to be almost worthless, while those that have been frequenting fresh water are generally well-tasted.?

Among other species nearly allied to the Pochard that frequent the northern hemisphere may be mentioned the Scaup-Duck, F. marila, with its Amcrican representative F. affinis, in both of which the male has the head black, glossed with blue or green ; but these are nearly always uneatable from the nature of their food, which is mostly gathered at low tide on the "scaups * or "scalps; = —as the banks on which mussels and other marine molluscs grow are in many places termed. Then there are the Tufted Duck, F. cristata—black with a crest and white flanks—and its Amcrican equivalent /. collaris, and the White-eyed or Castaneous Duck, / nyroca, and the Red-crested Duck, F. rufina—both peculiar to the Old World, and the last, conspicuous for its red bill and legs, well known in India. In the southern hemisphere the genus is represented by three species, F. capensis, F. australis, and F. nove-zealandice, whose respective names indicate the country each inhabits, and in South America exists a somewhat divergent form which has been placed in a distinct genus as Metopiana pcposaca.

Generally classed with the Fuliguline is the small group known as the Eiders,* which differ from them in several respects: the bulb at the base of

the trachea in the male, so largely developed in the members of the genus Puligula, and of conformation so similar in all of them, is here much smaller and wholly of bone; the males take a much longer time, two or even three years, to attain their full plumage, and some of the feathers on the head, when that plumage is completed, are always stiff, glistening, and of a peculiar pale-green colour. – This little group of hardly more than half-a dozen species may be fairly considered to form a separate genus under the name of Somateria. Many authors indeed have—un- justifiably, as it seems to the present writer—broken it up into three or four genera. The well-known Eider, S. mollissima, is the largest of this group, and, beautiful as it is, is excelled in beauty by the King-Duck, 8. spectabilis, and the little S. stedleri. Space fails here to treat of the rest, but the sad fate which has overtaken one of them, S. labradoria, has been before mentioned (Birps, vol. iii. p. 735); and only the briefest notice can be taken of a most interesting form generally, but obviously in error, placed among them. This is the Logger-head, Racehorse, or Steamer-Duck, Microptcrus (or more properly Tachycres) cinereus of the Falkland Islands and Straits of Magellan—nearly as large as a tame Goose, and subject to the, so far as known, unique peculiarity of losing its power of flight after reaching maturity. _ Its habits have been well described by Darwin in his Jowrnal of Rescarches, and its anatomy is the subject of an excellent paper in the Zoological Society's Transactions (vii., pp. 4938-501, pls. lviii.—lxii.) by Prof. R. O. Cunningham. (ACIS

POCOCK, Epwarp (1604-1691), one of the most eminent of English Oriental and Biblical scholars, was born in 1604, the son of a Berkshire clergyman, and re- ceived his education up to his fourteenth year at the free school of Tame in Oxfordshire and then at Oxford, where he became scholar of Corpus Christi College in 1620 and fellow in 1628. The foundation of his Eastern learning was laid at Oxford under Matthias Pasor, son of the better

eee

2 The plant known in some parts of England as " willow-weed tel not to be confounded, as is done by some writers, with the willow- wort (Epilobiwm) —one of the many species of Polygonum, is especially a favourite food

with most kinds of Ducks, and to its effects is attri- buted much of the fine flavour which distinguishes the birds that have had access to it.

3 Cognate with scallop, and the Dutch schelp, a shell.

1. Icelandic, dur.

known George Pasor, who had been driven to England by the troubles in the Palatinate, and he subsequently received instruction from the learned W. Bedwell. The first fruit of his studies was an edition from a Bodleian MS. of the four New Testament epistles which were not in the old Syriac canon, and were not contained in European editions of the Peshito. This was published at Leyden at the instigation of G. Vossius in 1630, and in the same year Pocock sailed for Aleppo as chaplain to the English factory. At Aleppo he made himself a profound Arabic scholar and collected many valuable MSS. At this time Laud was busy with the learned collections with which he afterwards enriched his university, and Pocock became known to him as one who could help his schemes. A correspondence ensued, and ultimately Laud resolved to set up an Arabic chair at Oxford and to invite Pocock home to fill it. The invita- tion was accepted, and the lecturer entered on his duties on August 10, 1636, but next summer sailed again for Constantinople with the archbishop’s consent to prosecute further studies and collect more books, and remained there for about three years. When he returned to England Laud was in the Tower; and, though he had taken the precaution to place the Arabic chair on a permanent foot- ing, a time soon followed in which to have been a protegé of the archbishop was a dangerous distinction. Pocock does not seem to have been an extreme churchman or to have meddled actively in politics, but his views were decided enough to make him objectionable to the Parlia- mentary party, and to bring on him many troubles not only at Oxford but in his parish of Childrey, where he accepted a college living in 1643. On the other hand his rare scholarship and personal qualities raised him up influential friends even among men of the opposite party in church and state, foremost among these being Selden. Through the offices of these friends he was even advanced in 1648 to the chair of Hebrew, though as he could not take the engagement of 1649 he lost the emoluments of the place very soon after,

and did not recover them till the Restoration. All these cares seriously hampered Pocock in his studies, as he complains in the preface to his Lutychius ; he seems to have felt most deeply the attempts to remove him from Childrey, where he attended to his parochial work with the same modest and diligent zeal that marks him asa scholar. But he continued to work hard ; in 1649 he published the Specimen Historix Arabum, that is, a short account of the origin and manners of the Arabs, taken from Barlebreeus (Abulfaraj), with a mass of learned notes from a vast number of MS. sources which are still highly valuable to the student of Oriental history. This was followed in 1655 by the Porta Mosis, extracts from the Arabic commentary of Maimonides on the Mishna, with translation and very learned notes ;} and in 1656 by the annals of Hutychius in Arabic and Latin, a work of great value which has not found an editor since. He also gave active assistance to Walton's polyglott, and the preface to the various readings of the Arabic Penta- teuch is from his hand. After the Restoration Pocock's political and pecuniary troubles were removed, but the reception of his complete edition of the Arabic history of Barhebreus (Greg. Abulfaragii Historia Dynastiarum), which he dedicated to the king in 1663, showed that the new order of things was not very favourable to profound Scholarship. After this his most important works were his English commentaries on Micah (1677), Malachi (1677), Hosea (1685), Joel (1691), —admirable in every way, and still thoroughly worth reading. An Arabic translation of Grotius De Veritate which appeared in 1660 may also be mentioned as a proof of Pocock's interest in

: Pocock was justly impressed with the fact that the best parts of Rabbinic literature belong to the Jews who wrote in Arabic.

the propagation of Christianity in the East. This was an old plan which he had talked over with Grotius at Paris on his way back from Constantinople.

Pocock married in 1646 and died in 1691. One of his sons, Edward, published several contributions to Arabic literature—a fragment of Abdullatif's description of Egypt and the Philosophus Autodidactus of Ibn Tofail.

_ The theological works of Pocock were collected in 2 vols. folio, in 1740, with a tedious but curious account of his life and writings by L. Twells. ;

POCOCKE, Ricuarp (1704-1765), distantly related to the preceding, was the son of Richard Pococke, head master of the free school at Southampton, where he was born in the year 1704. He received his school learn- ing under his father, and his academical education at Corpus Christi College, Oxford, where he took his various degrees. He commenced his travels in the East in 1737, and returned in 1742. In 1743 he published his Odserva- tions on Egypt, under the general title of A Description of the East and some other Countries. In 1744 he was made precentor of Waterford; and in 1745 he printed the second volume of his travels, under the title of Observa- tions on Palestine, or the Holy Land, Syria, Mesopotamia, Cyprus, and Candia. In 1756 Pococke was promoted to the bishopric of Ossory; in July 1765 he was translated to the see of Meath, and in September following he died suddenly of apoplexy, whilst engaged in visiting his diocese.

PODIEBRAD, Gerorce or (1420-1471), king of Bohemia, was the son of Herant of Podiebrad, a Bohemian nobleman, and was born 6th April 1420. After the death of the emperor Sigismund he took up arms against Albert of Austria, who was finally compelled to raise the siege of Tabor and retreat to Prague. On the death of Patzek in 1444 George of Podiebrad became the recognized head of the Calixtines or Utraquists, and was chosen to represent them as one of the two governors of Bohemia during thie minority of Ladislaus the son of Albert. After some years of conflict with the Catholic party he was in 1451 recog- nized as sole governor. Following a policy of conciliation, he made no opposition to the accession of Ladislaus in 1453, who repeated to the Bohemians the promises made by Sigismund. The Catholic predilections of Ladislaus rendered him ina great measure blind to the obligations into which he had entered, but the result was silently to strengthen the influence of George of Podiebrad, who on the death of Ladislaus in 1457 was chosen king of Bohemia (March 1458), and on May 7, 1459, was crowned by Catholic bishops, promising on his part due obedience to the church. This effort at a reconciliation was, however, soon seen to be futile. In 1462 Pope Pius II. refused the ratification of the compactata, agreed upon in 1433, and still no basis of a settlement had been found when Pius died in November 1464. The new pope, Paul II, at once

brought matters to a crisis by issuing against George of Bohemia the ban of excommunication, and a summons for a crusade to crush his authority. To this George replied by a letter of grievances to kings and princes, and an appeal to a general council. The summons of Paul IL. did not awaken any general response, and, although Matthias of Hungary was proclaimed king of Bohemia, George successfully resisted all attempts to wrest from him his dominion, and in July 1470 Matthias agreed to an armistice. George died March 22, 1471, and was suc- ceeded by Ladislaus, eldest son of Casimir IV.

See Markeraf, Ueberd as Verhiiltniss des Konigs Georg von Béhmen zu Papst Pius I1., 1867; Richter, Georg von Podiebrad's Bestrebungen, 1863; Jordan, Das Kénigthum Georgs von Podiebrad, 1867; Bachmann, Lin Jahr bohmischer Gesehiehte, 1876.

PODOLIA, a government of south-western Russia, having Volhynia on the N., Kieff and Kherson on the E,

the W., from which last it is separated by the Zbrutch, or Rodvotcha, a tributary of the Dniester. It has an area of 16,223 square miles, extending for 200 miles from north- west to south-east on the left bank of the Dniester. In the same direction two ranges of hills, nearly parallel, and separated by the Bug, traverse the government; they are ramifications of the so-called " Avratynsk heights." One of these ranges runs parallel to the Dniester at a distance of some 40 miles, and reaches a maximum elevation of 1185 feet in the northern districts, sending a lateral branch to the Dniester at Kamenets. The other range, entering also fron the north-west, follows the boundaries of the government of Kieff on the left bank of the Bug; its highest eminences do not exceed 1050 feet. The geological structure of Podolia is in accordance with the above-mentioned orographical features ; a strip of land to the east of the Bug belongs to the Huronian granitic region of the Dnieper, granites and aplites (granulites) appearing also in the bed of the Bug, and being covered with Quaternary deposits only, while the remainder of the province, towards the west, is covered with Tertiary (Miocene). In the deep valleys of tlie rivers, older formations—the Cretaceous and Silurian, as also sometimes the granites—appear from

beneath the Tertiary. The whole is covered with a boulder-clay, mostly contain- ing débris of the local rocks, and with loess, the origin of both still being a subject of controversy among Russian geologists. Two large rivers, with numerous tributaries, water the government,—the Dniester, which forms its boundary with Bessarabia and is navigable throughout its length, and the Bug, which flows almost parallel to the former in a higher, sometimes swampy valley, and is broken at several places by strong rapids. The Dniester is an important channel for trade, no less than 30,000 tons of corn, spirits, and timber being exported every year from its eighteen ports, the chief of which are Moghileff, Kalus, Zhvanets, and Porog. The rapid smaller tributaries of the Dniester supply numerous flour-mills with motive power. The soil is almost throughout “ black-earth,” and Podolia is one of the most fertile provinces of Russia. Forests cover about 245,000 acres. Marshes occur only on the Bug. The climate is moderate, the average temperature of the year at Kamenets being 48°°3 (24°°5 in January, 69° in July).

The population, which was 2,242,650 in 1881, and is now estimated at 2,335,000, consists chiefly of Little Russians, Poles (about 12 per cent.), and Jews (about 13 per cent.), of whom some 9000 are agriculturists. There are besides about 300 Armenians, some 2500 Germans, and nearly 45,000 Moldavians. There are many Nonconformists among the Russians, Tultchin being the seat of their bishops and a centre of propaganda. The chief occupation is agriculture, 56 per cent. of the surface being under crops, and the average harvests of recent years reaching 3,382,000 qrs. of corn and 453,000 qrs. of potatoes. The chief crops are wheat, Indian corn, oats, rye, potatoes, and beetroot. No less than 2,500,000 qrs. of corn are exported every year to Austria or to Odessa. Gardening is in a flourishing condition, and fruit is largely exported to the interior; the vine is cultivated mostly for grapes, but partly also for wine; the culture of tobacco is a considerable source of income. Cattle-breeding is less de- veloped, owing to a want of grazing grounds and meadows. Horned cattle—a mixture of the Hungarian and Bessarabian breeds—are however, exported to Moscow and to Austria. Finer breeds of sheep are raised in the proportion of two-fifths of the whole number. In 1881 Podolia had 169,000 horses, 432,000 horned cattle, 513,000 sheep, and 307,000 swine. Bees are kept throughout the territory, and honey is exported. Sericulture has developed considerably of late years,

and will probably take an important position, owing to the climate. Agriculture and cattle-breeding are on the whole oe. Lately manufactures have grown rapidly. In 1865 a a af eae ene hands, but produced only to the value Shae ano fas ange any teste empased nor 29,411,000 roubles. The first place ig taken by beetroot suger

place is taken by beetroot sugar works (15,800 hands; £1,038,000), after which come distillertes (£1,372,000), sugar refineries (£287,100), flour-mills (£134,500),

PO D—

and §., Bessarabia on the 8.W., and Galicia (Austria) on |

PO.

tobacco manufacture (£32,200), the woollen cloth industry, and several smaller manufactures (spirits, leather, soap, candles, ma- chinery, and agricultural implements), An active trade is carricd on with Austria, especially through the Isakovets and Gusyatin custom-houses,—corn, cattle, horses, skins, wool, linseed, and hemp seed being exported, in exchange for wooden wares, linen, woollen stuffs, cotton, glass, and agricultural implements. The trade with the intcrior is also carried on very briskly, especially at the twenty-six fairs, the aggregate returns of which exceed 3,000,000 roubles; the chicf are at Balta and Yarmolintsy. Podolia is traverscd by a railway which runs parallel to the Dniester, from Lemberg to Odessa, and has two branch lines to Kieff (from Zhmerinka) and to Poltava (from Balta). Primary schools are better than in many central provinces of Russia, and Kamenets-Podolsk has of late years begun to show some develop- ment of intellectual life. The publications of the provincial assembly and the memoirs of the historical and statistical com- mittee of the government are especially worthy of notice. Podolia is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which arc— Kamenets-Podolsk, capital of the government (22,650), Balta (22,450), Bratslaff (5550), Gaysin (9450), Letitcheff (4800), Litin (7100), Moghileff-on-Dniester (18,150), Novaya Ushitsa (4500), Olgopol (6950), Proskuroff (11,750), Vinnitsa (18,800), and Yampol (4800). The following towns have municipal institutions:—Bar (7800), Khmelnik (7800), Nemiroff (5450, has a lyceum), Salnitsa (3300),

Staraya Ushitsa (3700), Verbovets (2150), and Tultchin (11,220), besides many myestetchki, having Polish municipal insti- tutions.

History.—The country has been inhabited since the beginning of the Neolithic period. In the 5th century B.c. it was already known to geographers, and Herodotus mentions it as the seat of the Alazoncs and Neuri, who were followed by.the Dacians and Get. The Romans left traces of their rule in the Wall of Trajan, which stretches through the modern districts of Kamenets, Ushitsa, and Proskuroff. Many nationalities passed through this territory, or settled within it for some time, during the great migrations, leaving traces in numerous archeological remains. The annals of Nestor mention that the Slavonians, Bnjanes, and Dulebes occu- pied the Bug, while the Tivertsi and Uglitches were settled on the Dniester. They were conquered by the Avars in the 7th cen- tury. Oleg extended his rule over this territory—the Ponizie, or lowland, which became later a part of the principalities of Volhynia, Kieff, and Galicia. In the 13th century the Ponizie was plundered by the Mongols; a hundred years afterwards Olgerd freed it from this rule, aunexing it to Lithuania under the name of Podolia, a word which has the same meaning as Ponizie. After the death of Witowt Podolia was annexed to Poland, with the exception of its eastern part—the province of. Bratslaff—which remained under Lithuania until its union with Poland. The Poles retained Podolia until the third division of Poland in 1793, when it was taken by Russia, which instituted the present government of Podolia in 1796.

PODOLSK, a district-town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Moscow, is situated 23 miles to the south of the capital, at the junction of the two main roads going from Moscow to the Crimea and to Warsaw, and within a mile from the Podolsk railway station. It is picturesquely built on the hilly banks of the Pakhra, here crossed by an elegant suspension bridge for carriages as well as by the railway bridge. Down to 1781, when it became a district town, the wealthy village of Podol was a dependency of the Daniloff monastery of Moscow, and it still maintains many of the features of a suburb of that city. The numberless caravans of cars and sledges which before the opening of the southern railway carried on the entire transport of merchandise to and from Moscow (as they still to some extent continue to do) had their chief halting place at Podolsk before setting out on a long

journey, or before entering the capital; the principal occupation of the inhabitants was accordingly to keep inns and taverns, and to supply the caravans with provisions and other neces- saries of travel. The merchants of Podolsk prefer to carry on their trade at Moscow, and in itself the town has no commercial importance. Still, notwithstanding the recent modifications in traffic produced by the railway system, the population of Podolsk (11,000 in 1881) is increasing. The limestone quarries in the neighbourhood, at the con-

| fluence of the Desna and Pakhra, supply the capital with

a good building material, while a steam factory of cement,

lime, and bricks employs 900 hands and has an annual

production of about £20,000. A paper-mill close to Podolsk has an annual production of about £15,000. PODOPHYLLIN, a popular remedy which is much used by those who are averse to the employment of calomel and other mercurial preparations, and hence has been called vegetable mercury. The drug, as used in medicine, is obtained from the rhizome of the American mandrake or May apple, Podophyllum peltatum, L., an herbaceous perennial belonging to the natural order Ber- beridacex, indigenous in woods in Canada and the United States. The plant is about a foot high, bearing two pel- tate, deeply-divided leaves, which are about 5 inches in diameter, and bear in the axil a solitary, stalked, white flower about the size and shape of the garden anemone, with six or more petals and twice as many hypogynous stamens. The fruit is ripe in May, and is an oval, yellow- ish, fleshy berry containing twelve or more arillate seeds. The rhizome, as met with in commerce, occurs’ in cylin- drical pieces two or three inches long and about } inch in diameter, of a chocolate or purplish brown colour, smooth and slightly enlarged where the juncture of the leafy stem is indicated by a circular scar on the upper and a few broken rootlets on the under side. The odour is heavy and disagreeable, and the taste acrid and bitter.

Podophyllin is a resinous powder obtained by precipitating an alcoholic tincture of the rhizome by meaus of water acidulated with hydrochloric acid, It varies in colour from greyish to briglit yel- low or grcenish brown, the first-named being the purest, The drug has been the subject of numerous chemical investigations, the most recent of which (Podwyssotzki, in Zischr. f. Russland, xx. 777 indicates that its activity is due to a definite resinous compound which has been named by its discoverer podophyllotoxin ; another constituent uamed podophylloquercetin has neither emetic nor purgative properties, but appears to be the cause of the griping pains which sometimes accompany the action of podophyllin; a third substance, podophyllic acid, has no medicinal action. Podophyl- lotoxin is a bitter amorphous principle soluble in weak alcohol and in hot water, ether, and chloroform, but insoluble in petroleum spirit. It is split up by the action of alkalies into a resin-acid named picropodophyllic acid, which is inert, and a very active substance, picropodophyllin, which crystallizes in delicate silky needles. Picropodophyllin is insoluble in water, and almost in- soluble in spirit of less than 80 per cent., but is rendered soluble when united to the picropodophyllic acid. _Podophylloquercetin crys- tallizes in short needles of a yellow colour and metallic lustre. It is soluble in ether and alcohol, and forms a compound with acetate of lead which is soluble in acetie acid and can be sublimed in shining yellow crystals, and which on exposure to the air gradu- ally becomes green. Podophyllic acid is insoluble in water and in ether, but soluble in alcohol. In medicine podophyllin is employed for torpor of the liver and obstinate constipation, arising from sedentary employment, imprudence in dict, and irregularity of habits. In small doses it acts as a slow and gentle laxative, especially if combined with henbane and belladonna, but in large doses it is an irritant hydragogue cathartic, the action of which persists for some time. The usual dose as a laxative and mild hepatic stimulant is about 4 of a grain, but the samples met with In commerce vary considerably in strength, and act with varying effect upon different individuals. Specimens having a greenish tint should be avoided, since they probably coutain podophyllo- quercctin and tend to cause severe griping. In large doses it appears to lose its stimulant action on the liver. Podophyllin is official in the pharmacopmias of Great Britain, India, France, Russia, and the United States.

POE, Epcar ALLAN (1809-1849), is the most interest-

ing figure in American literature, and his life furnishes | _in Richmond, New York, and Philadelphia, and there is | unanimous testimony that, so far from being an irregular greater part of his short working life was passed in intense —

the most extraordinary instance on record of systematic misrepresentation on the part of a biographer. The

and unremitting literary toil, and no poems or romances were ever produced at greater expense of brain and spirit than his. Yet, till lately, when Mr J. H. Ingram, the careful editor of Poe's works, undertook to collect the plain facts of the poet's life, the current statement and belief were that his strange tales and poems were flung off from a distempered imagination in the intervals of degraded debauchery. This myth was studiously floated by his first

‘ ness, and took a pride in these homely virtues. _ connexion was not in any one case "severed by his irregu-

biographer, Griswold, and found readier acceptance- with the public owing to the weird and horrible character of much of his imaginative work. Griswold's story of a life wayward and irregular from hapless beginning to disgrace- ful close was just what people were prepared to believe about a genius so eccentric and with such a turn for dark mysteries, horrible crimes, inhuman doings and sufferings. That the author of such works should have been expelled from the university and from the army, and from situation after situation when he tried to make a living by litera- ture, all owing to the gross irregularity of his habits, and should finally have died in a hospital in a fit of intoxi- cation, seemed credible enough when affirmed by a self-constituted biographer. Many of Griswold's allegations were denied at the time, but the denials were local and isolated, and the truth had no chance against the system- atic libel, repeated as it was in many editions, till Mr Ingram prepared a regular and authoritative memoir.}

There was a sufficient mixture of truth with falsehood to make Griswold's story plausible. It. was not quite correct to describe Poe as the son of

strolling players, but his father, a man of good family, had married an actress and taken to the stage as a profession. Their son was born in Baltimore, February 19, 1809; and father and mother died in 1811 when he was a child. The orphan was adopted by his godfather, Mr Allan, a wealthy mer- chant, and from his eighth till his thirteenth year (1816- 1821) was placed at school in England. Thence he was transferred to an academy at Richmond, Virginia, and thence at the age of seventeen to the university of Virginia at Charlottesville. Mr Allan was childless, and apparently treated his adopted son as his own child. Why Poe left the university after one session is not clearly explained, but it has been ascertained that he was not expelled, but on the contrary was honourably distinguished as a student, although it is admitted that he had contracted debts and had “an ungovernable passion for card-playing.” These debts may have been sufficient cause for a quarrel with Mr Allan. Poe disappeared for two years, setting out for Europe to join the Greeks in their fight for independence. Reappearing at Richmond in 1829, he stayed at home for a year, and then was entered as a military cadet at West Point. But all his ambitions by this time were towards literature ; he neglected his duties, disobeyed orders, and was dismissed from the service of the United States. What he did for two years after is not ascertained, but in 1833 he reappeared as the successful competitor for a prize offered by a Baltimore newspaper for a prose story. From that time he subsisted by literature. Mr Allan had married again, and died soon afterwards, leaving an heir by his second wife, and “not a mill,” as Griswold puts it. to Poe.

It is chiefly in his account of Poe’s literary career that Griswold has been guilty of slandering the subject of his biography, representing him as rendered incapable of permanent employment by his intemperate habits. There would seem to be not the slightest foundation for this coarse slander. During the fifteen years of his literary life Poe was connected with various newspapers and magazines

contributor, he was a model of punctuality and thorough-

His

larities.” He wrote first for the Southern Literary Mes- senger in Richmond, and edited it for some time; then, in 1837, he removed to New York, and

wrote criticisms and did editorial work for the Wew York Quarterly Review ;

1 See his Works of Edgar Allan Pce, 4 vols., 1874-75.

then, after a year, with a prospect of more lucrative |

employment, he removed to Philadelphia, and for four years was the mainstay of Graham's Magazine. His literary work was poorly paid for, though some of his most powerful tales—Hans Pfaal, Arthur Gordon Pym, Ingetia, The House of Usher, The Murders in the Rue Morgue, Marie Roget, The Descent into the Maelstrom —were among Poe's contributions to these periodicals. Not unnaturally he conceived the idea of starting a magazine of his own as the most hopeful way of living by his work, but he had no capital, and was obliged to abandon the project, and return to New York and miscellaneous journalism. To add to his troubles his wife, a cousin of his own, whom he had married in 1836, and to whom he was passionately attached, was in very delicate health, and during a linger- ing illness of eight years gave him constant anxiety. We have only to look at the character of Poe's work, and the condition of such literature commercially, to see why it was that the most popular writer of his generation in America had to struggle so hard for a bare subsistence. His short stories were an easy prey for the newspaper pirate, and when thousands were reading them the author received nothing but the few dollars paid him by the pub- lication in which they first appeared, The Aaven was published first in 1845, and in a few months was being read and recited and parodied wherever the English language was spoken; but the half-starved poet, who had to live by his genius, received only two pounds for the production. And, fertile and active as his imagination was, these short works of his, which served for the pass- ing sensation of the newspaper reader, were far from being extempore effusions. His Philosophy of Composition is sometimes, indeed generally, regarded as half-serious half a jest in the author's peculiar way of

mystification. But to any one who examines Poe’s work closely by the light of this essay it is obvious that the disclosure of his method is only too seriously true. It would have been well for his own powers of endurance if he had composed on a less exacting and exhausting system. The most fantastic of Poe’s creations are not the product of the imagina- tion abandoned to the impulses of a dominant mood; the effects are deliberately calculated, as he says they were, step by step and point by point to a prearranged culmina- tion. A man writing on such a system, with the wolf at the door and affections daily on the rack, could hardly have endured the strain if he had had a constitution of iron, It was no wonder that Poe’s health became dis- tempered, or that, during the last years of his wife’s illness and the two remaining years through which he survived her, he had recourse to the dangerous help of stimulants. Not only did he subject his imagination to exhausting con- ditions, but he wasted his force in doing with superfluous thoroughness what a ready journalist would have dismissed with a few easy sentences of commonplace. When we read his criticisms, which are full of insight and sugges- tion, we see that in reviewing a book or a poem he was never satisfied till he had thought out what could be done

PX &

‘fe modern criticism the word poetry is used sometimes to _ denote any expression (artistic or other) of imaginative feeling, sometimes to designate one of the fine arts.

As an expression of imaginative feeling, as the move- ment of an energy, as one of those great primal human forces which go to the development of the race, poetry in the wide sense has played as important a part as science. In some literatures (such as that of England) poetic energy and in others (such as that of Rome) poetic art is

POE—POE

with the subject. His famous feat in anticipating the plot of Barnaby Rudge from the opening chapters was only a sample of the thoroughness with which he threw himself into whatever he undertook. Poe failed to make a living by literature, not because he was an irregular profligate in the vulgar sense, but because he did ten times as much work as he was paid to do—a

species of profligacy, perhaps, but not quite the same in kind as that with which he was charged by his malignant biographer.

The current story about his breaking off his engagement with Mrs Whitman by presenting himself at her house in a state of violent drunkenness has been proved to bea fabrication, and many other stories about him have been. exploded by Mr Ingram. His wife died in 1847, and he followed her in 1849, dying under painful circumstances at Baltimore. For a critical estimate of Poe's writings the reader may be referred to Professor Nichol's American Literature. There are few English writers of this century whose fame is likely to be more enduring. The feelings to which he appeals are simple but universal, and he appeals to them with a force that has never been sur- passed. (w. M.)

POERIO, Carto (1803-1867), Italian statesman, born in 1803, was descended from an old Calabrian family and was the son of Giuseppe Poerio, a distinguished lawyer of Naples. In 1815 he accompanied his father into political exile, but, a pardon having been obtained in 1818, he returned to Naples where he afterwards adopted the pro- fession of advocate. From 1837 to 1848 he was frequently arrested and imprisoned, but, when Ferdinand, moved by the demonstration of 27th January of the latter year, promulgated a constitution, he was at once raised to honour, being made prefect of police and shortly after- wards minister of public instruction. Discovering, how- ever, that the king was only temporizing, he resigned office in April of the same year and was returned for Naples to parliament, where he led the constitutional opposition. On 19th July 1849 he was arrested, and after trial on the charge of belonging to the sect deno- minated the "Italian Unity," was condemned to irons. Chained in pairs, he and other fifteen political prisoners were confined in one small room in the bagno of Nisida near the lazaretto. The eloquent exposure of the horrors of the Neapolitan dungeons by Mr Gladstone in 1851, who emphasized especially the case of Poerio, awakened the universal indignation of Europe, but he did not obtain his liberty till 1858. He and other exiles were then placed on board a ship bound for the United States, but they compelled the crew to land them at Cork, whence Poerio made his way to London. In the following year he returned to Italy, and in 1860 he was elected deputy to the

parliament of Turin, of which he was chosen vice-pre- sident in 1861. He died at Florence, 28th April 1867.

See Baldachinni, Della Vita e de Tempi di Carlo Poerio, 1867; W. E. Gladstone, Zwo Letters to the Harl of Aberdeen, 1851; Carlo Poerio and the Neapolitan Police, London, 1858; Colletta. History of Naples.

Th

the dominant quality. It is the same with individual writers. In classical literature Pindar may perhaps be taken as a type of the poets of energy ; Virgil of the poets of art. With all his wealth of poetic art Pindar's mastery over symmetrical methods never taught him to " sow with the hand," as Corinna declared, while his poetic energy always impelled him to "sow with the whole sack." In English poetical literature Elizabeth Barrett Browning

| typifies, perhaps, the poets of energy; while Keats (not-

PO Ew he Y 257

withstanding all his unquestionable inspiration) is mostly | must be here attempted ; and, using the phrase "absolute taken as a type of the poets of art. In French literature | poetry" as the musical critics use the phrase "absolute Hugo, notwithstanding all his mastery over poetic methods, | music," we may, perhaps, without too great presumption represents the poets of energy. submit the following :—

In some writers, and these the very greatest-_in Homer, Absolute poetry is the concrete and artistic expression of Absolute /éschylus, Sophocles, Dante, Shakespeare, Milton, and | the human mind in emotional and rhythmical language. poetry perhaps Goethe—poetic energy and poetic art are seen in This at least will be granted, that no literary expression 'fined. something like equipoise. Itis of poetry as an art, how- | can properly speaking be called poetry that is not in a ever, that we have mainly to speak here ; and all we have | certain deep sense emotional, whatever may be its subject to say upon poetry as an energy is that the critic who, like | matter, concrete in its method and its diction, rhythmical Aristotle, takes this wide

view of poetry—the critic who, | in movement, and artistic in form. like him, recognizes the importance of poetry in its rela- That the expression of all real poetry must be concrete It is con- tions to man's other expressions of spiritual force, claims | in method and diction is obvious, and yet this dictum crete in a place in point of true critical sagacity above that of a | would exclude from the definition much of what is called ™°t24-

ee

Divisions of the , subject.

What is

poetry ?

critic who, like Plato, fails to recognize that importance. And assuredly no philosophy of history can be other than inadequate should it ignore the fact that poetry has had as uch effect upon human destiny as that other great human energy by aid of which, from the discovery of the use of fire to that of the electric light, the useful arts have been developed.

With regard to poetry as an art, in the present work most of the great poems of the world have been or will be examined either in connexion with the names of the writers or with the various literatures to which thcy belong ; consequently these remarks must be confined to general principles. To treat historically so vast a subject as poetry would be obviously impossible here.

All that can be attempted is to inquire briefly—(1) What is poetry? (2) What is the position it takes up in relation to the other arts? (3) What is its value and degree of expressional power in relation to these? and, finally, (4) What varieties of poetic art are the outcome of the two great kinds of poetic impulse, dramatic imagination and lyric or egoistic imagination ?

1. What is Poetry?—Definitions are for the most part alike unsatisfactory and treacherous; but definitions of poetry are proverbially so. Is it possible to lay down invariable principles of poetry, such as those famous "invariable principles" of the Rev. Mr Bowles, which in the earlier part of the century awoke the admiration of Southey and the wrath of Byron? Is it

possible for a critic to say of any metrical phrase, stanza, or verse, “This is poetry,” or “This is not poetry”? Can he, with anything like the authority with which the man of science pronounces upon the natural objects brought before him, pronounce upon the qualities of a poem? These are questions that have engaged the attention of critics ever since the time of Aristotle.

_ Byron, in his rough and ready way, has answered them in one of those letters to the late John Murray, which, rich as they are in nonsense, are almost as rich in sense.

So far are principles of poetry from being invariable,” says he, “that they never were nor ever will be settled. These principles mean nothing more than the predilec- tions of a particular age, and every age has its own and a different from its predecessor. It is now Homer and now Virgil; once Dryden and since Sir Walter Scott; now Corneille and now Racine; now Crébillon and now Voltaire.” This is putting the case very strongly—perhaps too strongly. But if we remember that Sophocles lost the first prize for the Gdipus T’yrannus ; if we remember what m Dante’s time (owing partly, no doubt, to the universal ignorance of Greek) were the relative positions of Homer and Virgil, what in the time of Milton were the relative positions of Milton himself, of Shakespeare, and of Beau- mont and Fletcher; again, if we remember Jeffrey’s famous classification of the poets of his day, we shall be driven to pause over Byron’s words before dismissing them. Yet some definition, for the purpose of this essay,

didactic poetry. With abstractions the poct has nothing to do, save to take them and turn them into concretions ; for, as artist, he is simply the man who by instinct embodies in concrete forms that “universal idea” which Gravina speaks of —that which is essential and elemental in nature and in man; as poetic artist he is simply the man who by instinct chooses for his concrete forms metrical language. And the questions to be asked con- cerning any work of art are simply these—

Is that which is here embodied really permanent, uni- versal, and elemental? and Is the concrete form em- bodying it really beautiful—acknowledgcd as beautiful by the soul of man in its highest moods? Any other qucs- tion is an impertinence.

Examples are always useful in discussions such as this.

As an example of the absence of concrete form in verse take the following lines from George Eliot's Spanish Gypsy -—

"Speech is but broken light upon the depth

Of the unspoken ; even your loved words

Float in the larger meaning of your voice

As something dimmer." Without discussing the question of blank verse cadence and the weakness of a line where the main accent falls upon a positive hiatus, "of the unspoken," we would point out that this powerful passage shows the spirit of poetry without its concrete form. The abstract method is substituted for the concrete. Such an abstract phrase as "the un-spoken " belongs entirely to prose.

As to what is called ratiocinative poetry, it might per- haps be shown that it does not exist at all. Not by syllogism, but per saltum, must the poet reach in every case his conclusions. We listen to the poet—we allow him to address us in rhythm or in rhyme—we allow him to sing to us while other men are only allowed to talk, not because he argues more logically than they, but because he feels more deeply and perhaps more truly. It is for his listeners to be knowing and ratiocinative ; it is for him to be gnoniic and divinely wise.

That poetry must be metrical or even rhythmical in movement, however, is what some have denied. Here we touch at once the very root of the subject. The difference between all literature and mere " word-knead- ing" is that, while literature is alive, word-kneading is without life. This literary life, while it is only bipartite in prose, seems to be tripartite in poetry; that is to say, while prose requires intellectual life and emotional life, poetry seems to require not only intellectual life and emotional life but rhythmic life, this last being the most important of all according to many critics, though Aristotle is not among these. Here indeed is the "fork" between the old critics and the new. Unless the rhythm of any metrical passage is so vigorous, so natural, and so free that it seems as though it could live, if need

were, by its rhythm alone, has that passage any right to exist? and should it not, if the substance is good, be forthwith

XIX, — 33

It is

rhythmic in move-

ment.

Import- ance of metrical ques- tions. –

258

demetricized and turned into prose? Thoreau has affirmed

that prose, at its best, has high qualities of its own beyond |

the ken of poetry; to compensate for the sacrifice of thesc, should not the metrical gains of any passage

all cavil ?

But this argument might be pressed further still, ~ Tt |

might seem bold to assert that, in many cases, the mental value of poetry may actually depend upon form and colour, but would it not be true? The mental value of

poetry must be judged by a standard not applicable to | | fect fusion of all poetic elements of which he was such a

prose; but, even with regard to the different kinds of poetry, we must not compare poetry whose mental value consists in a distinct and logical enunciation of ideas, such as that of Lucretius and Wordsworth, and poetry whose mental value consists partly in the suggestive richness of passion or synrbol latent in rhythm (such as that of Sappho sometimes, Pindar often, Shelley always), or latent in colour, such as that of some of the Persian

poets. To discuss the question, Which of these two kinds of poetry is the more precious? would be idle, but are we not driven to admit that certain poems whose strength is rhythm, and certain other poems whose strength is colour, while

devoid of any logical statement of thought, may be as |

fruitful of thoughts and emotions too deep for words as a shaken prism is fruitful of tinted lights? The mental forces at work in the production of a poem like the Excursion are of a very different kind from the mental

forces at work in the production of a poem like Shelley's —

"Ode to the West Wind." In the one case the poet's artistic methods, like those of the Greek architect, show, and are intended to show, the solid strength of the struc- ture. In the other, the poet's artistic methods, like those of the Arabian architect, contradict the idea of solid strength—make the structure appear to hang over our heads like the cloud pageantry of heaven. But, in both cases, the solid strength is, and must be, there, at the base. Before the poet begins to write he should ask himself which of these artistic methods is natural to him; he should ask himself whether his natural impulse is towards the weighty iambic movement whose primary function is to state, or towards those lighter movements which we still call, for want of more convenient words, anapeestic and dactylic, whose primary function is to suggest. Whenever Wordsworth and Keats pass from the former to the latter they pass at once into doggerel. Nor is it difficult to see why English anapzestic and dactylic verse must suggest and not state, as even so comparatively successful a tour de force as Shelley's ''Sensitive Plant" shows. Concise- ness is a primary virtue of all statement. The moment the English poet tries to " pack" his anapzestic or dactylic line, as he can pack his iambic line, his versification becomes rugged, harsh, pebbly—becomes so of necessity. Nor is this all: anapzestic and dactylic verse must in English be obtrusively alliterative, or the same pebbly effect begins to be felt. The anapzestic line is so full of syllables that in a language where the consonants dominate the vowels (as in English), these syllables grate against each other, unless their corners are artfully bevelled by one of the only two smoothing processes at the command of an English versifier—obtrusive alliteration, or an ob- trusive use of liquids. Now these demands

of form may be turned by the perfect artist to good account if his appeal to the listener's soul is primarily that of suggestion by sound or symbol, but if his appeal is that of direct

and logical statement the diffuseness inseparable from

good anapestic and dactylic verse is a source of weakness such as the true artist should find intolerable.

But enough has been said to show that in discussing poetry questions of versification touch, as we have said, the very root of the subject.

be beyond | ; _ vised by an Italian peasant girl, whether it be an ode by

{ }

POrTRY

Using the word "form" in a wider sense still, a sense that includes " composition," it can be shown that poetry to be entitled to the name must be artistic in form. Whether a poem be a Welsh triban or a stornello impro-

Keats or a tragedy by Sophocles, it is equally a work of art. The artist's command over form may be shown in the peasant girl's power of spontaneously rendering in simple verse, in her stornello or rispetto, her emotions through nature's symbols ; it may be shown by Keats in that per-

master, in the manipulation of language so beautiful both for form and colour that thought and words seem but one blended loveliness ; or it may be shown by Sophocles in a mastery over what in painting is called composition, in the exercise of that wise vision of the artist which, looking before and after, sees the thing of beauty as a whole, and enables him to grasp the eternal laws of cause and effect in art and bend them to his own wizard will. In every case, indeed, form is an essential part of poetry ; and, although

George Sand's saying that " L'art est une forme" applies

perhaps more strictly to the plastic arts (where the soul is reached partly through mechanical means), its application to poetry can hardly be exaggerated.

Owing, however, to the fact that the word rouris (first used to designate the poetic artist by Herodotus) means maker, Aristotle seems to have assumed that the indis- pensable basis of poetry is invention. He appears to have thought that a poet is a poet more on account of the com- position of the action than on account of the composition of his verses. Indeed he said as much as this. Of epic poetry he declared emphatically that it produces its imita- tions either by mere articulate words or by metre super- added. ‘This is to widen the definition of poetry so as to include all imaginative literature, and Plato seems to have given an equally wide meaning to the word wouyous. Only, while Aristotle considered zrotjovs to be an imitation of the facts of nature, Plato considered it to be an imitation of the dreams of man. Aristotle ignored, and Plato slighted, the importance of versification (though Plato on one occasion admitted that he who did not know rhythm could be called neither musician nor poet). It is impossible to discuss here the question whether an imaginative work in which the method is entirely concrete and the expression entirely emotional, while the form is unmetrical, is or is not entitled to be called a poem. That there may bea kind of un- metrical narrative so poetic in motive, so concrete in dic- tion, so emotional in treatment, as to escape altogether from those critical canons usually applied to prose, we shall see when, in discussing the epic, we come to touch upon the Northern sagas.

Perhaps the first critic who tacitly revolted against the dictum that substance, and not form, is the indispensable basis of poetry was Dionysius of Halicarnassus, whose treatise upon the arrangement of words is really a very fine piece of literary criticism. In his acute remarks upon the arrangement of the words in the sixteenth book of the Odyssey, as compared with that in the story of Gyges by Herodotus, was perhaps first enunciated clearly the doctrine that poetry is fundamentally a matter of style. The Aristo- telian theory as to invention, however, dominated all criti- cism after as well as before Dionysius. When Bacon came to discuss the subject (and afterwards) the only division between the poetical critics was perhaps between the fol- lowers of Aristotle and those of Plato as to what

poetry should, and what it should not, imitate. It is curious to speculate as to what would have been the result had the poets followed the critics in this matter. instinct of the poet been too strong for the schools, would poetry as an art have been lost and merged in such imagina-

Had not the —

It is artistic in form

poetic atmo- sphere,

FUERTE Y

tive prose as Plato's? Or is not the instinct for form too strong to be stifled? By the poets themselves metre was always considered to be the one indispensable requisite of a poem, though, as regards criticism, so recently as the time of the appearance of the Waverley Novels, the Quarterly Review would sometimes speak of them as " poems"; and perhaps even now there are critics of a very high rank who would do the same with regard to romances so concrete in method and diction, and so full of poetic energy, as Wuthering Heights and Jane Eyre, where we get absolutely all that Aristotle requires for a poem. On the whole, however, the theory that versification is not an indispens- able requisite of a poem seems to have become nearly obsolete in our time. Perhaps, indeed, many critics would now go so far in the contrary direction as to say with Hegel (Aesthetih, ili. p. 289) that "metre is the first and only condition absolutely demanded by poetry, yea even more necessary than a figurative picturesque diction." At all events this at least may be said that in our own time the division between poetical critics is not between Aristo- telians and Baconians ; it is now of a different kind alto- gether. While one group of critics may still perhaps say with Dryden that "a poet is a maker, as the name signi- fies," and that "he who cannot make, that is, invent, has his name for nothing," another group contends that it is not the invention but the artistic treatment, the form, which determines whether an imaginative writer is a poet or a writer of prose,—contends, in short, that emotion is the basis of all true poetic expression, whatever be the subject matter, that thoughts must be expressed in an emotional manner before they can be brought into poetry, and that this emotive expression demands even yet some- thing else, viz., style and form.

But, although many critics are now agreed that ‘ L’art est une forme,” that without metre and without form there can be no poetry, there are few who would contend that poetry can exist by virtue of any one of these alone, or even by virtue of all these combined. Quite inde- pendent of verbal melody, though mostly accompanying it, and quite independent of “composition,” there is an atmosphere floating around the poet through which he sees everything, an atmosphere which stamps his utterances as poetry ; for instance, among all the versifiers contem- porary with Donne there was none so rugged as he occa- sionally was, and yet such songs as “Sweetest love, I do not go for weariness of thee” prove how true a poet he was whenever he could master those technicalities which far inferior poets find comparatively easy. While rhythm

and perhaps the greatest soul, that in our time has ex- pressed itself in English verse is Elizabeth Barrett Brown- ing ; at least it is certain that, with the single exception of Hood in the ‘Song of the Shirt,” no writer of the century has really touched our hearts with a hand so powerful as hers,—and this notwithstanding violations of poetic form, notwithstanding defective rhymes, such as would appal some of the contemporary versifiers of England and France “ who lisp in numbers for the numbers {and nothing else] come.” ‘he truth is that in order to produce poetry the soul must for the time being have reached that state of exaltation, that state of freedom from self-consciousness, depicted in the lines— “T started once, or seemed to start, in pain, Resolved on noble things, and strove to speak, As when a great thought strikes along the brain,

And flushes all the cheek.”

Whatsoever may be the poet’s “knowledge of his art,” into this mood he must always pass before he can write a truly poetic line. For, notwithstanding all that we have said and are going to say upon poetry as a fine art, it is in the deepest sense of the word an “inspiration” indeed. No man can write a line of genuine poetry without having been ‘‘born again” (or, as the true rendering of the text says, “born from above”); and then the mastery over those highest reaches of form which are beyond the ken of the mere versifier comes to him as a result of the change. Hence, with all Mrs

Browning’s metrical blemishes, the splendour of her metrical triumphs at her best.

For what is the deep distinction between poet and prose- man? A writer may be many things besides a poet; he may be a warrior like Ai%schylus, a man of business like Shakespeare, a courtier like Chaucer, or a cosmopolitan philosopher like Goethe; but the moment the poetic inood is upon him all the trappings of the world with which for years he may perhaps have been clothing his soul—the world’s knowingness, its cynicism, its self-seek- ing, its ambition—fall away, and the man becomes an inspired child again, with ears attuned to nothing but the whispers of those spirits from the Golden Age, who, according to Hesiod, haunt and bless the degenerate earth. What such a man produces may greatly delight and astonish his readers, yet not so greatly as it delights and astonishes himself. His passages of pathos draw no tears so deep or so sweet as those that fall from his own eyes while he writes ; his sublime passages overawe no soul so imperi- ously as his own; his humour draws no laughter so rich or so deep as that stirred within his own breast.

It might almost be said, indeed, that Sincerity and Con- Sincerity science, the two angels that bring to the poet the wonders 2”4 6on- of the poetic dream, bring him also the deepest, truest °°” delight of form. It might almost be said that by aid of

may to a very considerable degree be acquired (though, of course, the highest rhythmical effects never can), the power of looking at the world through the atmosphere

that floats before the poet’s eyes is not to be learned and not to be taught. This atmosphere is what we call poetic wmagination, a subject which will have to be fully discussed further on. But first it seems necessary to say a word or two upon that high temper of the soul which in truly great poetry gives birth to this poetic imagination.

sincerity and conscience the poet is enabled to see more clearly than other men the eternal limits of his own art— to see with Sophocles that nothing, not even poetry itself, is of any worth to man, invested as he is by the whole army of evil, unless it is in the deepest and highest sense

hee The “message” of poetry must be more unequivocal, | good, unless it comes linking us all together by closer ee more thoroughly accentuated, than that of any of the | bonds of sympathy and pity, strengthening us to fight the

other fine arts. With regard to modern poetry, indeed, it may almost be said that if any writer’s verse embodies a message, true, direct, and pathetic, we in modern Europe cannot stay to inquire too curiously about the degree of artistic perfection with which it is delivered, for Words- worth’s saying “That which comes from the heart goes to the heart” applies very closely indeed to modern poetry. The most truly passionate poet in Greece was no doubt in a deep sense the most artistic poet ; but in her case art and passion were one, and that is why she has becn so cruelly misunderstood. The most truly passionate nature,

foes with whom fate and even nature, the mother who bore us, sometimes seem in league—to see with Milton that the high quality of man’s soul which in English is expressed by the word virtue is greater than even the great poem he prized, greater than all the rhythms of all the tongues that have been spoken since Babel—and to see with Shakespeare and with Shelley that the high passion which in English is called love is lovelier than all art, lovelier than all the marble Mercuries that “await the chisel of the sculptor” in all the marble hills. So much for our first inquiry—‘‘ What is poetry ?”

The posi- tion of poetry in relation to the other arts.

Relation of poetry to music.

260

9. What Position does Poetry take up in Relation to the other Arts ?—Notwithstanding the labours of Lessing and his followers, the position accorded by criticism to poetry in relation to the other arts was never so uncertain and anomalous as at the present moment. On the one hand there is a class of critics who, judging from their perpetual comparison of poems to pictures, claim her as a sort of handmaid of painting and sculpture. On the other hand the disciples of Wagner, while professing to do homage to

poetry, claim her as the handmaid of music. To find her proper place is therefore the most important task the critic can undertake at this time, though it is one far beyond the scope of a paper so brief as this. With regard to the relations of poetry to painting and sculpture, however, it seems necessary to glance for a moment at the saying of Simonides, as recorded by Plutarch, that poetry is a speaking picture and that painting is a mute poetry. It appears to have had upon modern criticism as much in- fluence since the publication of Lessing's Laocoon as it had before. Perhaps it is in some measure answerable for the modern vice of excessive word-painting. Beyond 'this one saying, there is little or nothing in Greek literature to show that the Greeks recognized between poetry and the plastic and pictorial arts an affinity closer than that which exists between poetry and music and dancing. . Understanding artistic methods more profoundly than the moderns, and far too profoundly to suppose that there is any special and peculiar affinity between an art whose medium of expres- sion is marble and an art whose medium of expression is a growth of oral symbols, the Greeks seem to have studied poetry not so much in its relation to painting and sculp- ture as in its relation to music and dancing. It is matter of familiar knowledge, for instance, that at the Dionysian festival it was to the poet as "teacher of the chorus" (xopodiSdéoKaAos) that the prize was awarded, even though the "teacher of the chorus" were Aéschylus himself or Sophocles. And this recognition of the relation of poetry to music is perhaps one of the many causes of the superi- ority of Greek to all other poetry in adapting artistic means to artistic ends. In Greek poetry, even in Homer's description of the shield of Achilles, even in the famous description by Sophocles of his native woods in the Zdipus Coloneus, such word-painting as occurs seems, if not inevit- able and unconscious, so alive with imaginative feeling as to become part and parcel of the dramatic or lyric move- ment itself. And whenever description is so introduced the reader of Greek poetry need not be told that the scenery itself rises before the listener's imagination with a clearness of outline and a vigour of colour such as no amount of detailed word-painting in the modern fashion can achieve. 'The picture even in the glorious verses at the end of the eighth book of the Ziad rises before our eyes—seems actually to act upon our bodily senses— simply because the poet's eagerness to use the picture for merely illustrating the solemnity and importance of his story lends to the

picture that very authenticity which the work of the modern word-painter lacks.

That the true place of poetry lies between music on the one hand and prose, or loosened speech, on the other, was, we say, taken for granted by the one people in whom the artistic instinct was fully developed.

No doubt they used the word music in a very wide sense, In a sense that might include several arts. But it Is a suggestive fact that, in the Greek language, long peor poctic art was called “making” it was called

singing.” The poet was not zoyrijs but dodds. And as regards the Romans it is curious to see how every now and then the old idea that poetry is singing rather than making will disclose itself. It will be remembered for instance how Terence, in the prologue of Phormio, alludes

Por rr yY

to poets as musicians. That the ancients were right in this we should be able to show did our scheme permit an historical treatment of poetry: we should be able to show that music and the lyrical function of the poet began together, but that here, as in other things, the progress of art from the implicit to the explicit has separated the two. Every art has its special function, has a certain work which it can do better than any one of its sister arts. Hence its right of existence. For instance, before the “sea of emotion” within the soul has become “curdled into thoughts,” it can be expressed in inarticulate tone. Hence, among the fine arts, music is specially adapted for rendering it. It was perhaps a perception of this fact which made the Syrian Gnosties define life to be “moving music.” When this sea of emotion has “curdled into thoughts,” articulate language rhythmically arranged— words steeped in music and colour, but at the same time embodying ideas—can do what no mere wordless music is able to achieve in giving it expression, just as unrhyth- mical language, language mortised in a foundation of logic, that is to say prose, can best express these ideas as soon as they have cooled and settled and cleared themselves of emotion altogether. Yet every art can in some degree invade the domain of her sisters, and the nearer these sisters stand to each other the more easily and completely can this invasion be accomplished. Prose, for instance, can sometimes, as in the case of Plato, do

some of the work of poetry (however imperfectly, and however tram- melled by heavy conditions) ; and sometimes poetry, as in Pindar's odes and the waves of the Greek chorus, can do, though in the same imperfect way, the work of music. The poems of Sappho, however, are perhaps the best case in point. Here the poet's passion is expressed so com- pletely by the mere sound of her verses that a good recita- tion of them to a person ignorant of Greek would convey something of that passion to the listener; and similar examples almost as felicitous might be culled from Homer, from /Eschylus, and from Sophocles. Nor is this power confined to the Greek poets. The students of Virgil have often and with justice commented on such lines as in. v. 481 (where the sudden sinking of a stricken ox is rendered by means of rhythm), and such lines as Georg. il. 441, where, by means of verbal sounds, the gusts of wind about a tree are rendered as conipletely as though the voice were that of the wind itself. In the case of Sappho the effect is produced by the intensity of her passion, in the case of Homer by the intensity of the dramatic vision, in the case of Virgil by a supreme poetic art. But it can also be pro- duced by the mere ingenuity of the artist, as in Edgar Poe's " Ulalume." The poet's object in that remarkable tour de force was to express dull and hopeless gloom in the same way that the mere musician would have expressed it,—that is to say, by monotonous reiterations, by hollow and dreadful reverberations of gloomy sounds—though as an artist whose vehicle was articulate speech he was obliged to add gloomy ideas, in order to give to his work the intellectual coherence necessary for its existence as a poem. He evidently set out to do this, and he did it, and "Ulalume " properly intoned would produce something

like the same effect upon a listener knowing no word of

English that it produces upon us,

On the other hand, music can trench very far upon the domain of articulate speech, as we perceive in the wonder- ful instrumentation of Wagner. Yet, while it can be shown that the place of poetry is scarcely so close to sculpture and painting as to music on the one side and loosened speech on the other, the affinity of poetry to music must not be exaggerated. We must

be cautious how we follow the canons of Wagner and the more enthust- astic of his disciples, who almost seem to think that

|

| Relation _ of poetry _ to prose,

POE

inarticulate tone can not only suggest ideas but express them—can give voice to the Verstand, in short, as well as to the Vernunft of man. Even the Greeks drew a funda- mental distinction between melic poetry (poetry written to be sung) and poetry that was written to be recited. It isa pity that, while modern critics of poetry have understood or at least have given attention to painting and sculpture, so few have possessed any knowledge of music—a fact which makes Dante's treatise De Vulgari Eloquio so important. Dante was a musician, and seems to have had a con- siderable knowledge of the relations between musical and metrical laws. But he did not, we think, assume that these laws are identical.

If it is indeed possible to establish the identity of musical and metrical laws, it can only be done by a purely scientific investigation; it can only be done by a most searching inquiry into the subtle relations that we know must exist throughout the universe between all the laws of undulation. And it is curious to remember that some of the greatest masters of verbal melody have had no knowledge of music, while some have not even shown any love of it. All Greek boys were taught music, but whether Pindar's unusual musical skill was born of natural instinct and inevitable passion, or came from the accidental circumstance that his father was, as has been alleged, a musician, and that he was as a boy elaborately taught musical science by Lasus of Hermione, we have no means of knowing. Nor can we now learn how much of Milton's musical knowledge resulted from a like exceptional ' en- vironment," or from the fact that his father was a musician. But when we find that Shelley seems to have been with- out the real passion for music, that Rossetti disliked it, and that Coleridge's apprehension of musical effects was of the ordinary nebulous kind, we must hesitate before accepting the theory of Wagner.

The question cannot be pursued here; but if it should

on inquiry be found that, although poetry is more closely

related to music than to any of the other arts, yet the power over verbal melody at its very highest is so all- sufficing to its possessor as in the case of Shelley and Coleridge that absolute music becomes a superfluity, this would only be another illustration of that intense egoism and concentration of force—the impulse of all high artistic energy—which is required in order to achieve the rarest miracles of art. ;

With regard to the relation of poetry to prose, Coleridge once asserted in conversation that the real antithesis of poetry was not prose but science. And if he was right the difference in kind lies, not between the poet and the prose writer, but between the literary artist (the man whose instinct is to manipulate language) and the man of facts and of action whose instinct impels him to act, or, if not to act, to inquire.

One thing is at least certain, that prose, however fervid and emotional it may become, must always be directed, or seem to be directed, by the reins of logic. Or, to vary the netaphor, like a captive balloon it can never really leave the earth.

Indeed, with the literature of knowledge as opposed to the literature of power poetry has nothing todo. Facts have no place in poetry until they are brought into relation with the human soul. But a mere catalogue of ships may become poetical if it tends to show the strength and pride and glory of the warriors who invested Troy ; a detailed description of the designs upon a shield, however beautiful and poetical in itself, becomes still more so if it tends to show the skill of the divine artificer and the invincible splendour of a hero like Achilles. But mere dry exacti- tude of imitation is not for poetry but for loosened speech. Hence, most of the so-called poetry of Hesiod is not poetry

at all. The Muses who spoke to him about “truth” on Mount Helicon made the common mistake of confounding fact with truth. And here we touch

upon a very import- ant matter. The reason why in prose speech is loosened is that, untrammelled by the laws of metre, language is able with more exactitude to imitate nature, though of course speech, even when “ loosened,” cannot, when actual sensible objects are to be depicted, compete in any real degree with the plastic arts in accuracy of imitation, for the simple reason that its media are not colours nor solids but symbols—arbitrary symbols which can be made to indicate, but never to reproduce, colours and _ solids. Accuracy of imitation is the first requisite of prose. But the moment language has to be governed by the laws of metre—the moment the conflict begins between the claims of verbal music and the claims of colour and form—then prosaic accuracy has to yield; sharpness of outline, mere fidelity of imitation, such as is within the compass of prose, have in some degree to be sacrificed. But, just as with regard to the relations between poetry and music the greatest master is he who borrows the most that can be borrowed from music, and loses the least that can be lost from metre, so with regard to the relations between poetry and prose the greatest master is he who borrows the most that.can be borrowed from prose and loses the least that can be lost from verse. No doubt this is what every poet tries to do by instinct ; but some sacrifice on cither side there must be, and, with regard to poetry and prose, modern poets at least might be divided into those who make picturesqueness yield to verbal melody, and those who make verbal melody yield to picturesqueness.

With one class of poets, fine as is perhaps the melody, it is made subservient to outline or to colour; with the other class colour and outline both yield to metre. The chief aim of the first class is to paint a picture ; the chief aim of the second is to sing a song. Weber, in driving through a beautiful country, could only enjoy its beauty by translating it into music. The same may be said of some poets with regard to verbal melody. The supreme artist, however, is he whose pictorial and musical power are so interfused that each seems born of the other, as is the case with Sappho, Homer, Auschylus, Sophocles, and indeed most of the great Greek poets. Among our own poets (leaving the two supreme masters undiscussed) Keats and Coleridge have certainly done this. The colour seems born of the music and the music born of the colour. In French poetry the same triumph has been achieved in Victor Hugo’s magnificent poem “ En Marchant la Nuit dans un Bois,” which, as a rendering through verbal music of the

witchery of nature, stands alone in the poetry of France. For there the poet conquers that crowning diffi- culty we have been alluding to, the difficulty of stealing from prose as much distinctness of colour and clearness of outline as can be imported into verse with as little sacrifice as possible of melody.

But to return to the general relations of poetry to prose. If poetry can in some degree invade the domain of prose, so on the other hand prose can at times invade the domain of poetry, and no doubt the prose of Plato— what is called poetical prose—is a legitimate form of art. Poetry, the earliest form of literature, is also the final and ideal form of all pure literature ; and, when Landor insists that poetry and poetical prose are antagonistic, we must remember that Landor's judgments are mostly based on feeling, and that his hatred of Plato would be quite sufficient basis with him for an entire system of criticism upon poetical prose. As with Carlyle, there was a time in his life when Plato (who of course is the great figure standing between the two arts of metre and loosened speech) had serious thoughts of becoming a poet. And

perhaps, like Carlyle, having the good sense to see his true

function, he himself desisted from writing, and strictly

Import- ance of poetry in rela- tion to other arts.

Where poetry is inferior and. where superior to music;

to prose;

forbade other men to write, in verse. If we consider this, and if we consider that certain of the great English masters of poetic prose in the 17th century were as incapable of writing in metre as their followers Richter and Carlyle, we shall hardly escape the conclusion on the one hand that the faculty of writing poetry is quite another faculty than that of producing work in the arts most closely allied to it, music and prose, but that on the other hand

there 1s nothing antagonistic between these faculties. So much for poetry's mere place among the other arts.

Importance of Poetry in Relation to other Arts.—As to the comparative importance and value of poetry among the other arts, this isa sabject upon which much discussion, of a more or less idle kind, has been wasted. We do not feel called to dwell at any length upon it here. Yet a word or two upon the question is necessary in order that we may understand what is the scope and what are the iimits of poetry with regard to the other arts, especially with regard to music and to prose. ;

There is one great point of superiority that musical art exhibits over metrical art. This consists, not in the

capacity for melody, but in the capacity for harmony in

the musician's sense. The finest music of A%schylus, of Pindar, of Shakespeare, of Milton, is after all only a succes- sion of melodious notes, and, in endeavouring to catch the harmonic intent of strophe, antistrophe, and epode in the Greek chorus and in the true ode (that of Pindar), we can only succeed by pressing memory into our service. We have to recall by memory the waves that have gone before, and then to imagine their harmonic power in relation to the waves at present occupying the ear. Counterpoint, therefore, is not to be achieved by the metricist, even though he be Pindar himself; but in music this perfect ideal harmony was foreshadowed perhaps in the earliest writing. We know at least that as early as the 12th century counterpoint began to show a vigorous life, and the study of it is now a familiar branch of musical science. Now, inasmuch as " Nature's own hymn" is and must be the harmonic blending of apparently independent and apparently discordant notes, among the arts whose appeal is through the ear that which can achieve counter- point must perhaps rank as a pure art above one which cannot achieve it. We are of course speaking here of metre only. We have not time to inquire whether the counterpoint of absolute poetry is the harmony underlying apparently discordant emotions —the emotion produced by a word being more persistent than the emotion produced by an inarticulate sound.

But if poetry falls behind music in rhythmic scope, it is capable of rendering emotion after emotion has become disintegrated into thoughts, and here, as we have seen, it enters into direct competition with the art of prose. It can use the emphasis of sound, not for its own sake merely, but to strengthen the emphasis of sense, and can thus give a fuller and more adequate expression to the soul of man than music at its highest can give. With regard to prose, no doubt such writing as Plato's descrip- tion of the chariot of the soul, his description of the island of Atlantis, or of Er's visit to the place of departed souls, comes but a short way behind poetry in imaginative and even in rhythmic appeal. It is impossible, however, here to do more than touch upon the subject of the rhythm of prose In its relation to the rhythm of poetry ;.for in this matter the genius of each individual language has to be taken into account. _

Perhaps it may be said that deeper than all the rhythms of art is that rhythm which art would fain catch, the rhythm of nature ; for the rhythm of nature is the rhythm

of life itself. This rhythm can be caught by prose as well as by poetry, such prose, for instance, as that of the English Bible. Certainly the rhythm of verse at its highest, such, for instance, as that of Shakespeare's greatest writings, is nothing more and nothing less than the metre of that energy of the spirit which surges within the bosom of him who speaks, whether he speak in verse or in impassioned prose. Being rhythm, it is of course governed by law, but it is a law which transcends in subtlety the conscious art of the metricist, and is only caught by the poet in his most inspired moods, a law which, being part of nature's own sanctions, can of course never be formulated but only expressed, as it is expressed in the melody of the bird, in the inscrutable harmony of the entire bird-chorus of a thicket, in the whisper of the leaves of the tree, and in the song or wail of wind and sea. Now is not this rhythm of nature represented by that "sense rhythm" which prose can catch as well as poetry, that sense rhythm whose finest expressions are to be found

in the Bible, Hebrew and English, and in the Biblical

movements of the English Prayer Book, and in the dramatic prose of Shakespeare at its best? Whether it is caught by prose or by verse, one of the virtues of the rhythm of nature is that it is translatable. Hamlet's peroration about man and Raleigh's apostrophe to death are as translatable into other languages as are the Hebrew psalms, or as is Manu's magnificent passage about the singleness of man (we quote from memory) :—

"Single is each man born into the world.; single he dies ; single he receives the reward of his good deeds, and single the punishment of his evil deeds. When he dies his body lies like a fallen tree upon the earth, but his virtue accompanies his soul. Wherefore let man harvest and garner virtue, so that he may have an inseparable com-

panion in traversing that gloom which is so hard to be traversed." ©

Here the rhythm, being the inevitable movement of emotion and "sense," can be caught and translated by every literature under the sun. While, however, the great goal before the poet is to compel the listener to expect his ceesuric effects, the great goal before the writer of poetic prose is in the very opposite direction ; it is to make use of the concrete figures and impassioned diction of the poet, but at the same time to avoid the recognized and expected metrical bars upon which the poet depends. The moment the prose poet passes from the rhythm of prose to the rhythm of metre the apparent sincerity of his writing is destroyed.

And now how stands poetry with regard to the plastic to plastic | This is in truth a vast subject, and has given birth art.

arts ? to an infinitude of eloquent criticism in the present century. It cannot be expected that we should be able to discuss it adequately here. Yet this, too, must be glanced at. On the one side poetry is inferior to the plastic arts; on another side it is superior to them.

As compared with sculpture and painting the great infirmity of poetry, as an "imitation " of nature, is of course that the medium is always and of necessity words—even when no words could, in the dramatic situation,

have been spoken. It is not only Homer who is obliged sometimes to forget that passion when at white heat is never voluble, is scarcely even articulate; the dramatists also are obliged to forget that in love and in hate, at their tensest, words seem weak and foolish when compared with the silent and satisfying triumph and glory of deeds, such as the plastic arts can render. This becomes manifest enough when we compare the Niobe group or the Laocoon group, or the great dramatic paintings of the modern world, with even the finest efforts of dramatic poetry, such as the speech of Andromache to Hector, or the speech of Priam to Achilles, nay such as even the cries of Cassandra in the Agamemnon, or the wailings of Lear over the dead Cordelia. Even when writing the words uttered by Gidipns, as the terrible truth

|

5

irtistic nviron- lent.

re? 7 i ¥

breaks in upon his soul, Sophocles must have felt that, in the holiest chambers of sorrow and in the highest agonies of suffering reigns that awful silence which not poetry, but painting sometimes, and sculpture always, can render. What human sounds could render the agony of Niobe, or the agony of Laocoon, as we see them in the sculptor's rendering? Not articulate speech at all; not words but wails. It is the same with hate ; it is the same with love. We are not speaking merely of the unpacking of the heart in which the angry warriors of the Ziad indulge. Even such subtle writing as that of Aischylus and Sophocles falls below the work of the painter. Hate, though voluble perhaps, as Clytzemnestra's when hate is at that red-heat glow which the poet can render, changes in a moment

whenever that redness has been fanned to hatred's own |

last complexion—whiteness as of iron at the melting- point,—when the heart has grown far too big to be "unpacked " at all, and even the bitter epigrams of hate's own rhetoric, though brief as the terrier's snap before he

fleshes his teeth, or as the short snarl of the tigress as she springs before her cubs in danger, are all too slow and sluggish for a soul to which language at its tensest has become idle play. But this is just what cannot be ren- dered by an art whose medium consists solely of words.

It is in giving voice, not to emotion at its tensest, but to the variations of emotion, it is in expressing the count- less shifting movements of the soul from passion to passion, that poetry shows in spite of all her infirmities her superiority to the plastic arts.

adequate to the entire breadth and depth of man's soul.

Poetic Imagination.—We have now reached our last |

general inquiry—What varieties of poetic art are the outcome of the two kinds of poetic impulse, dramatic

imagination and lyric or egoistic imagination? It would | of course be impossible within the space at our command to |

examine fully the subject of poetic imagination. For in order to do so we should have to enter upon the vast question of the effect of artistic environment upon the development of man's poetic imagination; we should have to inquire how the instinctive methods of each poet and of each group of poets have been modified. and often governed by the methods characteristic of their own time and country. We should have to inquire, for instance, how far such landscape as that of Sophocles in the @dipus Coloneus and such landscape as that of Wordsworth depends upon difference of individual tenrperament, and how far upon difference of artistic environment. That, in any thorough and exhaustive discussion of poetic imagina-

Hamlet and the | Agamemnon, the Iliad and the @dipus Tyrannus, are |

however, is, as we say, quite beyond the scope of any essay like this, and we can only point to the familiar instance of the troubadours and the trouvéres

and then pass on.

With the trouvére (the poet of the langue oil), the story or situation is always the end of which the musical language is the means; with the troubadour (the poet of the langue doc), the form is so beloved, the musical language so enthralling, that, however beautiful may be the story or situation, it is felt to be no more than the means to a more beloved and beautiful end. But then nature makes her own troubadours and her own trouvéres irrespective of fashion and of time—irrespective of langue doc and langue d'oil. And, in comparing the trouba- dours with the trouvéres, this is what strikes us at once— there are certain troubadours who by temperament, by original endowment of nature, ought to have been trou- véres, and there are certain trouvéres who by temperament ought to have been troubadours. Surrounding conditions alone have made them what they are. There are those whose impulse (though writing in obedience to contem- porary fashions lyrics in the langue d'oc) is manifestly to narrate, and there are those whose impulse (though writing in obedience to contemporary fashions fabliaux in the langue oil) is simply to sing. In other words, there are those who, though writing after the fashion of their brother-troubadours, are more impressed with the romance and wonderfulness of the human life outside them than with the romance and wonderfulness of their own passions, and who delight in depicting the external world in any form that may be the popular form of their time; and there are those who, though writing after the fashion of their brother-trouveéres, are far more occupied with the life within them than with that outer life which the taste of their time and country calls upon them to paint—born rhythmists who inust sing, who translate everything external as well as internal into verbal melody. Of the former class Pierre Vidal, of the latter class the author of " Le Lay de l'Oiselet,"» may be taken as the respective types.

That the same forces are seen at work in all literatures few students of poetry will deny,—though in some poetical groups these forces are no doubt more potent than in others, as, for instance, with the great parable poets of Persia, in some of whom there is perpetually apparent a conflict

between the dominance of the Oriental taste for allegory and subtle suggestion, as expressed in the Zoro- astrian definition of poetry,—“ apparent pictures of un- apparent realities,” —and the opposite yearning to represent human life with the freshness and natural freedom charac- teristic of Western poetry.

Allowing, however, for all the potency of external Ani poetry influences, we shall not be wrong in saying that of poetic the out- imagination there are two distinct kinds—(1) the kind of 0°™¢ of

3g ae. ° : : absolute poetic imagination seen at its highest in Aschylus, vision or Sophocles, Shakespeare, and Homer, and (2) the kind of of relative

poetic imagination seen at its highest in Pindar, Dante, vision.

tion, the question of artistic environment must be taken into account, the case of the Jliad is alone sufficient to show—a case that will at once occur to the reader. Ages before Phrynichus, ages before an acted drama was dreamed of, a dramatic poet of the first order arose, and, though he was obliged to express his splendid dramatic

imagination through epic forms, he expressed it almost as fully as if he had inherited the method and the stage of Sophocles. And if Homer never lived at all, then an entire group of dramatic poets arose in remote times Whose method was epic instead of dramatic simply be- cause there was then no stage.

This, contrasted with the fact that in a single half- century the tragic art of Greece arose with Zuschylus, culminated with Sophocles, and decayed with Euripides, and contrasted also with the fact that in England at one time, and in Spain at one time, almost the entire poetic ™magination of the country found expression in the acted drama alone, is sufficient to show that a poet’s artistic methods are very largely influenced by the artistic environ- ments of his country and time.

and Milton, or else in Sappho, Heine, and Shelley. The former, being in its highest dramatic exercise uncondi- tioned by the personal or lyrical impulse

of the poet, might perhaps be called absolute dramatic vision; the latter, being more or less conditioned by the personal or lyrical impulse of the poet, might be called relative dramatic vision. It seems impossible to classify poets, or to classify the different varieties of poetry, without drawing some such distinction as this, whatever words of definition we may choose to adopt.

For the achievement of all pure lyric poetry, such as the ode, the song, the elegy, the idyl, the sonnet, the stornello, it is evident that the imaginative force we have called relative vision will suffice. And if we consider the matter

So vast a subject as this, | thoroughly, in many other forms of poetic art—forms

which at first sight might seem to require absolute vision _—we shall find nothing but relative vision at work.

Even in Dante, and even in Milton and Virgil, it might be difficult to trace the working of any other than relative vision. Andas to the entire body of Asiatic poets it might perhaps be found (even in view of the Indian drama) that relative vision suffices to do all their work. Indeed the temper which produces true drama is, it might almost be said, a growth of the Western mind. For, unless it be Semitic as seen in the dramatic narratives of the Bible, or Chinese as seen in that remarkable prose story, Lhe Two Fair Cousins, translated by Rémusat, absolute vision seems to have but small place in the literatures of Asia. ‘The wonderfulness of the world and the romantic possibilities of fate, or circumstance, or chance—not the wonderfulness of the character to whom these possibilities befall—are ever present to the mind of the Asiatic poet. Even in so late a writer as the poet of the Shah Namek, the hero Irij, the hero Zal, and the hero Zobreb are in character the same person, the virtuous young man who combines the courage of youth with the wisdom and forbearance of age. And, as regards the earlier poets of Asia, it was not till the shadowy demigods and heroes of the Asiatic races crossed the Caucasus, and breathed a more bracing air, that they became really indi- vidual characters. But among the many qualities of

man’s mind that were invigorated and rejuvenated by that great exodus from the dreamy plains of Asia is to be counted, above all others, his poetic imagination. The mere sense of wonder, which had formerly becn an all-sufficing source of pleasure to him, was all-sufficing no longer. The wonderful adventure must now be connected with a real and interesting individual character. It was left for the poets of Europe to show that, given the interesting character, given the Achilles, the Odysseus, the Helen, the Priam, any adventure happening to such a character becomes interesting.

What then is this absolute vision, this true dramatic imagination which can hardly be found in Asia—which even in Europe cannot be found except in rare cases? Between relative and absolute vision the difference seems to be this, that the former only enables the poct, even in its very highest exercise, to make his own individuality, or else humanity as represented by his own individuality, live in the imagined situation; the latter enables him in its highest exercise to make special individual characters other than the poet’s own live in the imagined situation.

“That which exists in nature,” says Hegel, ‘‘is a some- thing purely individual and particular. Art on the contrary is essentially destined to manifest the general.” And no doubt this is true as regards the plastic arts, and true also as regards literary art, save in the very highest reaches of pure drama and pure lyric, when it seems to become art no longer—when it seems to become the very voice of Nature herself. The cry of Priam when he puts to his lips the hand that slew his son is not merely the cry of a bereaved and aged parent; it is the cry of the individual king of Troy, and expresses above everything else that most naif, pathetic, and winsome character. Put the words into the mouth of the irascible and passionate Lear and they would be entirely out of keeping.

_It may be said then that, while the poet of relative vision, even in its very highest exercise, can only, when depicting the external world, deal with the general, the poet of absolute vision can compete with Nature herself and deal with both general and particular. Now if thisis really so we may perhaps find a basis for a classification of poetry and of poets. That all poets must be singers has already been maintained. But singers seem to be divisible into three classes:—first the pure lyrists, each

of whom can with his one voice sing only one tune; secondly the epic poets, save Homer, the bulk of the narrative poets, and the quasi-dramatists, each of whom can with his one voice sing several tunes; and thirdly the true dramatists, who, having, like the nightingale of Gongora, many tongues, can sing all tunes.

It is to the first-named of these classes that most poets belong. With regard to the second class, there are not of course many poets left for it: the first absorbs so many. But, when we come to consider that among those who, with each his one voice, can sing many tunes, are Pindar, Firdausi, Jami, Virgil, Dante, Milton, Spenser, Goethe, Byron, Coleridge, Shelley, Keats, Schiller, Victor Hugo, the second class is so various that no generalization save such a broad one as ours could embrace its members. And now we come to class three, and must pause. The third class is necessarily very small. In it can ouly be placed such names as Shakespeare, Aischylus, Sophocles, Homer, and (hardly) Chaucer.

These three kinds of poets represent three totally different kinds of poetic activity.

With regard to the first, the pure lyrists, the iunpulse is pure egoism. Many of them have less of even relative vision at its highest than the mass of mankind. They are often too much engaged with the emotions within to have any deep sympathy with the life around them. Of every poet of this class it may be said that his mind to him “a kingdom is,” and that the smaller the poet the bigger to him is that kingdom. To make use of a homely image—like the chaffinch whose eyes have been pricked by the bird-fancier, the pure lyrist is sometimes a warbler because he is blind. Still he feels that the Muse loves him exceedingly. She takes away his eyesight, but she gives him sweet song. And his song is very sweet, very sad, and very beautiful; but it is all about the world within his own soul—its sorrows, joys, fears, and aspirations.

With regard to the second class the impulse here is no doubt a kind of egoisi too ; yet the poets of this class are all of a different temper from the pure lyrists. They have a wide imagination ; but it is still relative, still egoistic.

They have splendid eyes, but eyes that never get beyond seeing general, universal humanity (typified by them- selves) in the imagined situation. Not even to these is it given to break through that law of centrality by which every “me” feels itself to be the central “me ”—the only “me” of the universe, round which all other spurious “mes” revolve. This “me” of theirs they can transmute into many shapes, but they cannot create other “mes,”—nay, for egoism, some of them scarcely would perhaps if they could.

The third class, the true dramatists, whose impulse is the simple yearning to create akin to that which made “the great Vishnu yearn to create a world,” are ‘Col imagination all compact,”—so much so that when at work “the divinity” which Iamblichus speaks of “seizes for the time the soul and guides it as he will.”

The distinction between the pure lyrists and the other two classes of poets is obvious enough. But the distinc tion between the quasi-dramatists and the pure dramatists requires a word of explanation before we proceed to touch upon the various kinds of poetry that spring from the exer- cise of relative and absolute vision. Sometimes, to be sure, the vision of the true dramatists —the greatest dramatists —will suddenly become narrowed and obscured, as in that part of the CZdipus Tyrannus where Sophocles makes Qidipus ignorant of what every one in Thebes must have known, the murder of Laius. And again, finely as So- phocles has conceived the character of Electra, he makes her, in her dispute with Chrysothemis, give expression to sentiments that, in another play of his own, come far more

a

4

imples give but two or three.

ir ©

appropriately from the lofty character of Antigone in a parallel dispute with Ismene. And, on the other hand, examples of relative vision, in its furthest reaches, can be found in abundance everywhere, especially in Virgil, Dante,

Calderon, and Milton; but in our limited space we can Some of the most remarkable

‘elative examples of that high kind of relative vision which may

ton,

easily be mistaken for absolute vision may be found in those great prose epics of the North which Aristotle would have called poems. Here is one from the Voélsunga Saga. While the brothers of Gudrun are about their treacherous business of murdering Sigurd, her husband, as he lies asleep in her arms, Brynhild, Sigurd’s former love, who in the frenzy of ‘“‘love turned to hate” has instigated the mur- derers to the deed, hovers outside the chamber with Gunnar, her husband, and listens to the wail of her rival who is weltering in Sigurd’s blood. At the sound of that wail Brynhild laughs

“Then said Gunnar to her, Thou laughest not because thy heart roots are gladded, or else why doth thy visage wax so wan?”

This is of course very fine; but, as any two characters in that dramatic situation might have done that dramatic business, fine as it is,—as the sagaman gives us the general and not the particular,—the vision at work is not absolute but relative at its very highest exercise. But our examples will be more interesting if taken from English poets. In Coleridge’s “‘ Ancient Mariner” we find an immense amount of relative vision of so high a kind that at first it seems absolute vision. When the ancient mariner, in his narra- tive to the wedding guest, reaches the slaying of the albatross, he stops, he can proceed no further, and the wedding guest exclaims — “God save thee, Ancient Mariner, From the fiends that plague thee thus ! Why look’st thou so?” “ With my cross-bow

I shot the albatross,”

But there are instances of relative vision—especially in the great master of absolute vision, Shakespeare—which are higher still,—so high indeed that not to relegate them to absolute vision seems at first sight pedantic. Such an example is the famous speech of Lady Macbeth in the second act, where she says—

“ Had he not resembled My father as lie slept, I had done ’t.”

Marvellously subtle as is this speech, it will be found, if analysed, that it expresses the general human soul rather than any one special human soul. Indeed Leigh Hunt records the case of a bargeman who, charged with robbing a sleeping traveller in his barge, used in his confession almost identical words—“Had he not looked like my father as he slept, I should have killed as well as robbed him.” Again, the thousand and one cases (to be found in every literature) where a character, overwhelmed by some sudden surprise or terror, asks whether the action going on is that of a dream or of real life, must all, on severe analysis, be classed under relative rather than under absolute vision, —even such a fine speech, for instance, as that where Pericles, on discovering Marina, exclaims—

“ This is the rarest dream that e’er dull sleep

Did mock sad fools withal ;”

or as that in the third act of Z%tus Andronicus, where — beholding his mutilated and ruined daughter, asks—

“When will this fearful slumber have an end?” even here, we say, the humanity rendered is general and not particular, the vision at work is relative and not absolute. The poet, as representing the whole human

race, throwing himself into the imagined situation, gives |

us what general humanity would have thought, felt, said,

1 Translation of Morris and Magnusson.

re ¥ 265

or done in that situation, not what one particular indi- vidual and he alone would have thought, felt, said, or done.

Now what we have called absolute vision operates in a very different way. So vividly is the poet’s mere creative instinct at work that the ego sinks into

passivity—becomes insensitive to all impressions other than those dictated by the vision—by the “divinity” which has “seized the soul,’

We have left ourselves little room for examples; but Shakespeare is full of them.

Take the scene in the first act of /Jamlet where Hamlet hears for the first time, from Horatio, that his father’s ghost haunts the castle. Having by short sharp questions elicited the salient facts attending the apparition, Hamlet says, “I would I had been there.” To this Horatio makes the very commonplace reply, ‘It would have much amazed you.” Note the marvellously dramatic reply of Hamlet—“ Very like, very like! Stayed it long?” Sup- pose that this dialogue had been attempted by any other poet than a true dramatist, or by a true dramatist in any other mood than his very highest, Hamlet, on hearing Horatio’s commonplace remarks upon phenomena which to Hamlet were more subversive of the very order of the universe than if a dozen stars had fallen from their courses, would have burst out with—“ Amazed me!” and then would have followed an eloquent declamation about the “amazing ” nature of the phenomena and their effect upon him. But so entirely has the poet become Hamlet, so completely has ‘“‘the divinity seized his soul,” that all language seems equally weak for expressing the turbulence within the soul of the character, and Hamlet exclaims in a sort of meditative irony, ‘‘ Very like, very lke!” It is exactly this one man Hamlet, and no other man, who in this situation would have so expressed himself. Charles Knight has some pertinent remarks upon this speech of Hamlet; yet he misses its true value, and treats it from the general rather than from the particular side. Instances of absolute vision in Shakspeare crowd upon us; but we can find room for only one other. In the pathetic speech of Othello, just before he kills hiinself, he declares himself to be—

“One not easily jealous, but, being wrought, Perplexed in the extreme.”

Consider the marvellous timbre of the word “ wrought,” as coming from a character like Othello. When writing this passage, especially when writing this word, the poet had become entirely the simple English soldier-hero, as the Moor really is—he had become Othello, looking upon himself “as not

easily jealous," whereas he was " wrought" and ""'perplexed in the extreme" by tricks which Hamlet would have seen through in a moment.

in which absolute vision is demanded, viz., the drama, and in a lesser degree the Greek epic, especially the //iad. This will be seen more plainly perhaps if we now vary our definitions and call relative vision egoistic imagina- tion, absolute vision dramatic imagination.

Drama has been already fully treated in the present work (see Drama). But it follows from what has been here said that very much of the dramatist's work can be,. and in fact is, effected by egoistic imagination, while true dramatic imagination is only called into play on compara- tively rare occasions. Not only fine but sublime dramatic poems have been written, however, where the vitalizing power. has been entirely that of lyrical imagination. We need only instance the Prometheus Bound of Aisclhylus, the most sublime poem in the world. The dramas of Shelley too, like those of Victor Hugo and Calderon, are | informed entirely by egoistic imagination. In all these XIX. — 34

While all other forms of poetic art can be vitalized by Where relative vision, there are two forms (and these the greatest) absolute

Epic and

drama com- pared.

266 roe

splendid poems the dramatist places himself in the imagined situation, or at most he places there some typical concep- tion of universal humanity. There is not in all Calderon any such display of dramatic imagination as we get in that wonderful speech of Priam's in the last book of the Iliad. to which we have before alluded. There is not in the Cenci such a display of dramatic imagination as we get in the sudden burst of anger from the spoilt child of gods and men, Achilles (anger which alarnis the hero him- self ag much as it alarms Priam), when the prattle of the old man has carried him too far. It may seem bold to say that the drama of Goethe is informed by egoistic imagination only,—assuredly the prison-scene in [aust 1s unsurpassed in

the literatures of the world. Yet, perhaps, it could be shown of the passion and the pathos of Gretchen throughout the entire play that it betrays a {female character general and typical rather than individual and particular.

The nature of this absolute vision or true dramatic imagination is easily seen if we compare the dramatic work of writers without absolute vision, such as Cal- deron, Goethe, Ben Jonson, Fletcher, and others, with the dramatic work of Aischylus and of Shakespeare. While of the former group it may be said that each poet skilfully works his imagination, of @schylus and Shake- speare it must be said that each in his highest dramatic mood does not work, but is worked by his imagination. Note, for instance, how the character of Clytzmnestra grows and glows under the hand of fischylus. The poet of the Odyssey had distinctly said that /igisthus, her paramour, had struck the blow, but the dramatist, having imagined the greatest tragic female in all poetry, finds it impossible to let a man like Aigisthus assist such a woman in a homicide so daring and so momentous. And when in that terrible speech of hers she justifies her crime (ostensibly to the outer world, but really to her own conscience), the way in which, by the sheer magnetism of irresistible personality, she draws our sympathy to her- self and her crime is unrivalled out of Shakespeare and not surpassed even there. In the Great Drama, in the Agamemnon, in Othello, in Hamlet, in Macbeth, there is an imagination at work whose laws are inexorable, are inevitable, as the laws by the operation of which the planets move around the sun. But in this essay our business with drama is confined entirely to its relations to epic.

Considering how large and on the whole how good is the body of modern criticism upon drama, it is surprising how poor is the modern criticism upon epic. Aristotle, comparing tragedy with epic, gives the palm to tragedy as being the more perfect art, and nothing can be more ingenious than the way in which he has marshalled his reasons. He tells us that tragedy as well as epic is capable of producing its effect even without action ; we can judge of it perfectly, says he, by reading. He goes so far as to say that, even in reading as well as in representation, tragedy has an advantage over the epic, the advantage of greater clearness and distinctness of impression. And in some measure this was perhaps true of Greek tragedy, for as Miiller in his Déssertations on the Eumenides has well said, the ancients always remained

and wished to remain conscious that the whole was a Dionysian entertainment ; the quest of a common-place érdry came afterwards. And even of Romantic Drama it may be said that in the time of Shakespeare, and indeed down through the 18th century, it never lost entirely its character of a recitation as well asadrama. It was not till melodrama began to be recognized asa legitimate form of drainatic art that the dialogue had to be struck from the dramatic action “at full speed” —struck like sparks from the roadster’s shoes. The

| by abandoning the chorus.

7

truth is, however, that it was idle for Aristotle to inquire which is the more important branch of poetry, epic or tragedy.

Equally idle would it be for the modern critic to inquire how much romantic drama gained and how much it lost Much has been said as to the scope and the limits of epic and dramatic poetry. If in epic the poet has the power to take the imagination of his audience away from the dramatic centre and show what is going on at the other end of the great web of the world, he can do the same thing in drama by the chorus, and also by the introduction into the dramatic circle of messengers and others from the outside world.

But, as regards epic poetry, is it right that we should hear, as we sometimes do hear, the voice of the poet him- self as chorus bidding us contrast the present picture with other pictures afar off, in order to enforce its teaching and illustrate its pathos? This is a favourite method with modern poets and a still more favourite one with prose

narrators. Does it not give an air of self-consciousness to poetry? Does it not disturb the intensity of the poetic vision? Yet it has the sanction of Homer; and who shall

dare to challenge the methods of the great father of epic? An instance occurs in Iliad v. 158, where, in the midst of all the stress of fight, the poet leaves the dramatic action to tell us what became of the inheritance of Phzenops, after his two sons had been slain by Diomedes. Another instance

occurs in ili, 243-4, where the poet, after Helen's pathetic mention of her brothers, comments on the causes of their absence, "criticizes life" in the approved modern way, generalizes upon the impotence of human intelligence— the impotence even of human love—to pierce the darkness in which the web of human fate is woven. Thus she spoke (the poet tells us); but the life-giving earth already possessed them, there in Lacedeemon, in their dear native land :— bs pdro robs 8 Hdn xdtexev puoiCoos ala ey Aakedaluonr ad01, olan ev marpid: yaly.

This of course is "beautiful exceedingly," but, inasmuch as the imagination at work is egoistic or lyrical, not dra- matic, inasmuch as the vision is relative not absolute, it does not represent that epic strength at its very highest which we call specially "Homeric," unless indeed we remember that with Homer the Muses are omniscient: this certainly may give the passage a deep dramatic value it otherwise seems to lack.

The deepest of all the distinctions between dramatic and epic methods has relation, however, to the nature of the dialogue. Aristotle failed to point it out, and this is remarkable until we remember that his work is but a frag- ment of a great system of-criticism. In epic poetry, and in all poetry that narrates, whether the poet be Homer, Chaucer, Thomas the Rhymer, Gottfried von Strasburg, or Turoldus, the action, of course, moves by aid partly of narrative and partly by aid of dialogue, but in drama the dialogue has a quality of suggestiveness and subtle inference which we do not expect to find in any other poetic form save perhaps that of the purely dramatic ballad. In ancient drama this quality of suggestiveness and subtle inference is seen not only in the dialogue, but in the choral odes. The third ode of the Agamemnon is an extreme case in point, where, by a kind of double entendre, the relations of Clytemnestra and Aigisthus are darkly alluded to under cover of allusions to Paris and Helen. Of this dramatic subtlety Sophocles is perhaps the greatest master ; and certain critics have been led to speak as though irony were heart-thought of Sophoclean drama. But the suggestive- ness of Sophocles is pathetic (as Prof. Lewis Campbell has well pointed out) not ironical. This is one reason why drama more than epic seems to satisfy the mere intel-

ace of e liad epic etry,

lect of the reader, though this may be counterbalanced by the hardness of mechanical structure which sometimes dis- turbs the reader's imagination in tragedy.

When, for instance, a dramatist pays so much attention to the evolution of the plot as Sophocles does, it is inevit- able that his characters should be more or less plot-ridden ; they have to say and do now and then certain things which they would not say and do but for the exigencies of the plot. Indeed one of the advantages which epic certainly has over drama is that the story can be made to move as rapidly as the poet may desire without these mechanical modifications of character.

The only kind of epic for Aristotle to consider was Greek epic, between which and all other epic the difference is one of kind, if the /éad alone is taken to represent Greek epic. In speaking of the effect that surrounding conditions seem to have upon the form in which the poetic energy of any time or country should express itself, we

But where in this classification are we to find a place for the Ziad? The heart-thought of the greatest epic in all literature is simply that Achilles was vexed and that the fortunes of the world depended upon the whim of a sulky hero. Yet, notwithstanding all the acute criticisms of Wolff, it remains difficult for us to find a place for the Iliad among the epics of growth. And wliy? Because throughout the Ziad the dramatic imagination shown is of the first order ; and, if we are to suppose a multiplicity of authors for the poem, we must also suppose that ages before the time of Pericles there existed a group of dramatists more nearly akin to the masters of the great drama, Aischylus, Sophocles, and Shakespeare than any group that has ever existed since. Yet it is equally difficult to find a place for it amongst the epics of art. In the matter of artistic motive the Odyssey stands alone among the epics of art of the world, as we are going to see,

instanced the //iad as a typical case. The imagination vivifying it is mainly dramatic. The characters represent much more than the mere variety of

mood of the delineator. Notwithstanding all the splendid works of Calderon, Mar- lowe, Webster, and Goethe, it is doubtful whether as a born dramatist the poet of the /éiad does not come nearer : to Aischylus and Shakespeare than does any other poet. His passion for making the heroes speak for themselves is

It is manifest that, as the pleasure derived from the epic A con. of art is that of recognizing a conscious scheme, if the epic scious of art fails through confusion of scheme it fails altogether, Scheme What is demanded of the epic of art (as some kind of com- ees abe pensation for that natural freedom of evolution which it quired for can never achieve, that sweet abandon which belongs to the true nature and to the epic of growth alike) is unity of im- epic of pression, harmonious and symmetrical development of a”

almost a fault in the //cad considered as pure epic, and the unconscious way in which each actor is made to depict his own character is in the highest spirit of drama. It is owing to this speciality of the Z/iad that it stands apart from all other epic save that of the Odyssey, where, how- ever, the dramatic vision is less vivid. It is owing to the dramatic imagination displayed in the Jiad that it is impossible to say, from internal evidence, whether the poem is to be classified with the epics of growth or with the epics of art. All epics are clearly divisible into two classes, first those which are a mere accretion of poems or traditionary ballads, and second, those which, though based indeed on tradition or history, have become so fused in the mind of one great poet, so stained, therefore, with the colour and temper of that mind, as to become new crystallizations —inventions, in short, as we understand that word. Each kind of epic has excellencies peculiar to itself, accompanied by peculiar and indeed necessary defects. In the one we get the freedom— apparently schemeless and motiveless— of nature, but, as a consequence, miss that “ hard acorn of thought” (to use the picturesque definition in the Vélsunga Saga of the heart of a man) which the mind asks for as the core of every work of art. In the other this great requisite of an adequate central thought is found, but accompanied by a constriction, a lack of freedom, a cold artificiality, the obtrusion of a pedantic scheme, which would be intolerable to the natural mind unsophisticated by literary study. The flow of the one isas that of a river, the flow of the other as that of a canal. Yet, as has been already hinted, though the great charm of Nature herself 18 that

she never teases us with any obtrusive exhibitions of scheme, she doubtless has a scheme somewhere, she does somewhere hide a “hard acorn of thought ” of which the poem of the universe is the expanded expression. And, this being so, art should have a scheme too; but in such a dilemma is she placed in this matter that the epic poet, unless he is evidently telling the story for its own sake, scornful of purposes ethic or esthetic, must sacrifice illusion.

Among the former class of epics are to be placed the great epics of growth, such as the Mahdbhirata, the Niblung story, &e.; among the latter the Odyssey, the

Aineid, Paradise Lost, the Gerusalemme Liberata, the Lusiadus,

conscious heart-thought, or motive. This being so, where are we to place the #neid, and where are we to place the Shih Nameh? Starting with the intention, as it seems, of fusing into one harmonious whole the myths and legends upon which the Roman story is based, Virgil, by the time he reaches the middle of his epic, forgets all about this primary intent, and gives us his own thoughts and re- flexions on things in general. Tine as is the speech of Anchises to Aineas in Elysium (dn. vi. 724-755), its incongruity with the general scheme of the poem as developed in the previous books shows how entirely Virgil lacked that artistic power shown in the Odyssey of making a story become the natural and inevitable outcome of an artistic idea.

In the Shah Nadmeh there is the artistic redaction of Virgil, but with even less attention to a central thought than Virgil exhibits. Firdausi relies for his effects upon the very qualities which characterize not the epic of art but the epic of growth—a natural and not an artificial flow of the story; so much so indeed that, if the Shih Ndmeh were studied in connexion with the //iad on the one hand and with the Kalevala on the other, it might throw a light upon the way in which an epic may be at one and the same time an aggregation of the national ballad poems and the work of a single artificer. That Firdausi was capable of working from a centre not only artistic but philosophic his Yaésuf and Zuleikha shows; and if we consider what was the artistic temper of the Persians in Firdausi’s time, what indeed has been that temper during the whole of the Mohammedan period, the subtle temper of the parable

poet,—the Skah Ndameh, with its direct appeal to popular sympathies, is a standing wonder in poetic literature. ‘

With regard, however, to Virgil’s defective power of working from an artistic motive, as compared with the poet of the Odyssey, this is an infirmity he shares with all the poets of the Western world. Certainly he shares it with the writer of Puradise Lost, who, setting out to “justify the ways of God to man,” forgets occasionally the original worker of the evil, as where, for instance, he substitutes chance as soon as he comes (at the end of the second book) to the point upon which the entire epic movement turns, the escape of Satan from hell and his | journey to earth for the ruin of man :—

“ At last his sail-broad vans

He spreads for flight, and, in the surging smoke

Uplifted, spurns the ground; thence many a league,

As in a cloudy chair, aseending rides

Audacious; but, that seat soon failing, meets

A vast vacuity ; all unawares,

Fluttering his pinions vain, plumb down he drops

Ten thousand fathoms deep, and to this hour

Down had been falling, had not, by ILL CHANCE,

The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud,

Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried hin

As many miles aloft.” | Tn Milton’s case, however, the truth is that he made the mistake of trying to disturb the motive of a story for artistic purposes,—

a fatal mistake as we shall see when we come to speak of the Nibelungenlied in relation to the old Norse epic cycle.

Though Vondel's mystery play of Lucifer is, in its execution, rhetorical more than poetical, it did, beyond all question, influence Milton when he came to write Paradise Zost. The famous line which is generally quoted as the key-note of Satan's character— " Better to reign in hell than serve in heaven io

seems to have been taken bodily from Vondel's play, and Milton's entire epic shows a study of it. While Marlowe's majestic movements alone are traceable in Satan's speech (written some years before the rest of Paradise Lost, when the dramatic and not the epic form had been selected), Milton's Satan became afterwards a splendid amalgam not of the Mephistopheles but of the /austus of Marlowe and the Lucifer of Vondel. Vondel's play must have possessed a peculiar attraction for a poet of Milton's views of human progress. Defective as the play is in execution, it is far otherwise in motive. This motive, if we consider it aright, is nothing less than an explanation of man's anomalous con- dition on the earth—spirit incarnate in matter, created by God, a little lower than the angels—in order that he may advance by means of these very manacles which imprison him, in order that le may ascend by the staircase

rPOuTkh *Y

faculty of developing a poetical narrative from a philosophic thought is Oriental, and on the whole foreign to the genius of the Western mind. Neither in Western drama nor in western epic do we find, save in such rare cases as that of Vondel, anything like that power of developing a story from an idea which not only Jami but all the parable poets of Persia show.

In recent English poetry, the motive of Shelley's dramatic poem Prometheus Unbound is a notable illustra- tion of what is here contended. Starting with the full intent of developing a drama from a motive—starting with a universalism, a belief that good shall be the final goal of ill—Shelley cannot finish his first three hundred lines without shifting (in the curse of Prometheus) into a Manichzism as pure as that of Manes himself :—

“ Heap on thy soul, by virtue of this eurse, Ill deeds, then be thou damned, beholding good ; Both infinite as is the universe.”

According to the central thought of the poem human nature, through the heroic protest and struggle of the human mind typified by Prometheus, can at last dethrone that supernatural terror and tyranny (J upiter) which the human mind had itself installed. But, after its dethrone- ment (when human nature becomes infinitely perfectible), how can the supernatural tyranny exist apart from the human mind that imagined it? How can it be as “ infinite as the universe” #

The motive of Paradise Lost is assailed with much vigour by Victor Hugo in his poem: Religions et Religion. But when M. Hugo, in the after parts of the poem, having destroyed Milton’s “God,” sets up an entirely French “Dieu” of his own and tries “to justify” him, we perceive how pardonable was Milton’s failure after all, Compare such defect of mental grip and such nebulosity of thought as is displayed by Milton, Shelley, and M. Hugo with the strength of hand shown in the “Sal4man” and ‘ Absal ”

of Jami, and indeed by the Sufi poets generally. There is, however, one exception to this rule that The Gres! | Western poetry is nebulous as to motive. There is, besides Northern

of the world, the ladder of fleshly conditions, above those cherubim and seraphim who, lacking the education of

sense, have not the knowledge wide and deep which brings man close to God.

Here Milton found his own favourite doctrine of human development and self-education in a concrete and vividly artistic form. Much, however, as such a motive must have struck a man of Milton’s instincts, his intellect was too much chained by Calvinism to permit of his treating the subject with Vondel’s philosophic breadth. The cause of Lucifer’s wrath had to be changed from jealousy of human progress to jealousy of the Son’s proclaimed superiority. And the history of poetry shows that once begin to tamper with the central thought around which any group of incidents has crystallized and the entire story becomes thereby re-written, as we have

seen in the case of the Agamemnon of Aischylus. Of the motive of his own epic, after he had abandoned the motive of Vondel, Milton had as little permanent grasp as Virgil had of his. As regards the Odyssey, however, we need scarcely say that its motive is merely artistic, not philosophic. And now we come to philosophic motive.

The artist' power of thought is properly shown not in the direct enuviation of ideas but in mastery over motive. Here ASschylus is by far the greatest figure in Western poetry,—a proof perhaps among many proofs of the Oriental strain of his genius. (As regards pure drama, however, important as is motive, freedom, organic vitality in every part, is of more importance than even motive, and in this freedom and easy abandonment the concluding part of the Oresteia is deficient as compared with such a play as Othello or Lear.) Notwithstanding the splendid exception of Alschylus, the truth seems to be that the

the Iliad, one epic that refuses to be classified, though °P™

for entirely different reasons. This is the Niblung story, where we find unity of purpose and also entire freedom of movement. We find combined here beauties which are nowhere else combined—which are, in fact, at war with each other everywhere else. We find a scheme, a real "acorn of thought," in an epic which is not the self- conscious work of a single poetic artificer, but is as much the slow growth of various times and various minds as is the Mahdbhdrata, in which the heart-thought is merely that the Kauravas defeated their relatives at dice and refused to disgorge their winnings.

This Northern epic-tree, as we find it in the Tcelandic sagas, the Norns themselves must have watered ; for it combines the virtues of the epic of growth with those of the epic of art.. Though not written in metre, it may usefully be compared with the epics of Greece and of India and Persia. Free in movement as the wind, which "bloweth where it listeth," it listeth to move by law. Its action is that of free-will, but free-will at play within a ring of necessity. Within this ring there throbs all the warm and passionate life of the world outside, and all the freedom apparently. Yet from that world it is enisled by a cordon of curses—by a zone of defiant flames more impregnable than that which girdled the beautiful Brynhild at Hindfell. Natural laws, familiar emotions, are at work everywhere in the story; yet

the “Ring of Andvari,” whose circumference is but that of a woman’s finger, encircles the whole mimic world of the sagaman as the Midgard snake encircles the earth. For this artistic perfection in an epic of growth there are,

Testern vie,

ror? k Y

of course, many causes, some of them traceable and some of them beyond all discovery,—causes no doubt akin to those which gave birth to many of the beauties of other epics of growth. Originally Sinfiotli and Sigurd were the same person, and note how vast has been the artistic effect of the separation of the two! Again, there were several different versions of the story of Brynhild. The sagamen, finding all these versions too interesting and too much beloved to be discarded, adopted them all—worked them up into one legend, so that, in the Vélsunga Saga we have a heroine possessing all the charms of goddess, demi- goddess, earthly princess, and amazon—a heroine surpass- ing perhaps in fascination all other heroines that have ever figured in poetry.

It is when we come to consider such imaginative work as this that we are compelled to pause before challenging the Aristotelian doctrine that metrical structure is but an accidental quality of epic ; and it will now be seen why, in the early part of this essay, this doctrine was examined so carefully.

In speaking of the Niblung story we do not, of course, speak of the German version, the Wibelungenlied, a fine epic still, though a degradation of the elder form. Between the two the differences are fundamental in the artistic sense, and form an excellent illustration of what has just been said upon the disturbance of motive in epic, and indeed in all poetic art. It is not merely that the endings of the three principal characters Sigurd (Siegfried), Gudrun (Kriemhilt), and Brynhild are entirely different ; it is not merely that the Icelandic version, by missing the blood-

bath at Fafnir’s lair, loses the pathetic situation of Gudrun’s |

becoming afterwards an unwilling instrument of her hus- band's death; it is not merely that, on the other hand,

the German version, by omitting the early love passages |

between Brynhild and Sigurd at Hindfell, misses entirely the tragic meaning of her story and the terrible hate that is love resulting from the breaking of the troth; but the conclusion of each version is so exactly the opposite of that of the other that, while the German story is called (and very properly) "Kriemhilt's Revenge" the story of the Volsunga Saga might, with equal propriety, be called Gudrun's Forgiveness.

If it he said that, in both cases, the motive shows the same Titanic temper, that is because the Titanic temper is the special characteristic of the North-Western mind. The temper of revolt against authority seems indeed to belong to that energy which succeeds in the modern development of the great racial struggle for life. Although no epic, astern or Western, can exist without a struggle between

good and evil—and a struggle upon apparently equal terms |

—it must not be supposed that the warring of conflicting forces which is the motive of Eastern epic has much real relation to the warring of conflicting forces which is the motive of Western epic.

And, as regards the machinery of epic, there is, we Suspect, a deeper significance than is commonly appre- hended in the fact that the Satan or Shaitan of the Eastern world becomes in Vondel and Milton a sublime Titan who attracts to himself the admiration which in Eastern poetry belongs entirely to the authority of heaven. In Asia, save perhaps among the pure Arabs of the desert, underlying all religious forms, there is apparent a temper

,

'

he became their equal and struggled alongside them, shoulder to shoulder, in the defence of heaven against the assaults of hell. Therefore, as we say, the student of epic poetry must not suppose that there is any real parallel between the attitude of Vishnu (as Rama) towards Ravana and the attitude of Prometheus towards Zeus, or the attitude of the human heroes towards Odin in Scandi- navian poetry. Had Ravana been clothed with a properly constituted authority, had he been a legitimate god instead of a demon, the Eastern doctrine of recognition of authority would most likely have come in and the world would have been spared one at least of its enormous epics. Indeed, the Ravana of the Rdmdyana answers somewhat to the Fafnir of the Volsunga Saga ; and to plot against demons is not to rebel against authority. The vast field of Indian epic, however, is quite beyond us here.

Nor can we do more than glance at the Kalevala. From one point of view that group of ballads might be taken, no doubt, as a simple record of how the men of Kalevala were skilful in capturing the sisters of the Pojohla men. But from another point of view the universal struggle of the male for the female seems typified in this so-called epic of the Finns by the picture of the “Lady of the Rainbow” sitting upon her glowing arc and weaving her golden threads, while the hero is doing battle with the malevolent forces of nature.

But it is in the Niblung story that the temper of Western epic is at its best—the temper of the simple fighter whose business it is to fight. The ideal Western fighter was not known in Greece till ages after Homer, when in the pass of Thermopyle the companions of Leonidas combed their long hair in the sun. The business of the fighter in Scandinavian epic is to yield to no power whatsoever, whether of earth or heaven or hell—to take a buffet from the Allfather himself, and to return it ; to look Destiny herself in the face, crying out for quarter neither. to gods nor demons nor Norns. This is the true temper of pure “heroic poetry” as it has hitherto flourished on this side the Caucasus—the temper of the fighter who is invincible because he feels that Fate herself falters when the hero of the true strain defies—the fighter who feels that the very Norns themselves must cringe at last before the simple courage of man standing naked and bare of hope against all assaults whether of heaven or hell or doom. The proud heroes of the Volsunga Saga utter no moans and shed no Homeric tears, knowing as they know that the

day prophesied is sure when, shoulder to shoulder, gods and men shall stand up to fight the entire brood of night and evil, storming the very gates of Asgard.

That this temper is not the highest from the ethical point of view is no doubt true. Against the beautiful resignation of Buddhism it may seem barbaric, and if moral suasion could supplant physical force in epic—if Siddartha could take the place of Achilles or Sigurd—it might be better for the human race.

But it would be difficult even to glance at the countless points of interest that suggest themselves in connexion with epic poetry. Returning now to the general subject of egoistic or lyrical and dramatic imagination,—as might

| be expected, we occasionally meet imagination of a purely

dramatic kind in narrative poetry, such for instance as

| that of Gottfried von Strasburg, of Chaucer, and of the

author of the Chanson de Roland.

of resignation to the irresistible authority of heaven. And as regards the Aryans it is probable that the Titanic temper—the temper of revolt against authority—did not begin to show itself till they had moved across the Caucasus. But what concerns us here is the fact that the farther they moved to the north-west the more vigorously this temper asserted itself, the prouder grew man in his attitude towards the gods, till at last in the Scandinavian cycle

But we must now give undivided attention to pure ie of

egoistic or lyric imagination. This, as has been said, is poetic art sufficient to vitalize all forms of poetic art save drama and are the the Greek epic. Many of these forms have been or will] natural be treated in this work under separate heads. sae It would be impossible to discuss adequately here the jmagina- Hebrew poets, who have produced a lyric so different in tion.

The great

lyric of the He- brews stands alone.

kind from all other lyrics as to stand in a class by itself. As it is equal in importance to the Great Drama of Shake- speare, /Eschylus, and Sophocles, we may perhaps be allowed to call it the “Great Lyric.” The Great Lyric must be religious—it must, it would seem, be an out- pouring of the soul, not towards man but towards God, like that of the God-intoxicated prophets and psalmists of Scripture. Even the lyric fire of Pindar owes much to the fact that he had a child-like belief in the myths to which so many of his contemporaries had begun to give a languid assent. But there is nothing in Pindar, or indeed else- where in Greek poetry, like the rapturous song, combining unconscious power with unconscious grace, which we have called the Great Lyric. It might perhaps be said indeed that the Great Lyric is purely Hebrew.

But, although we could hardly expect to find it among those whose language, complex of syntax and alive with self-conscious inflexions, bespeaks the scientific knowing- ness of the Western inind, to call the temper of the Great Lyric broadly “ Asiatic” would be rash. Itseems to belong as a birthright to those descendants of Shem who, yearning always to look straight into the face of God and live, could (when the Great Lyric was sung) see not much else.

~ Though two of the artistic elements of the Great Lyric,

unconsciousness and power, are no doubt plentiful enough in India, the element of grace is lacking for the most part. The Vedic hymns are both nebulous and unemo- tional, as compared with Semitic hymns. And as to the Persians, they, it would seem, have the grace always, the power often, but’ the unconsciousness almost never. This is inevitable if we consider fora moment the chief charac- teristic of the Persian imagination—an imagination whose wings are not so much “bright with beauty” as heavy with it—heavy as the wings of a golden pheasant—steeped in beauty like

the “tiger-moth’s deep damasked wings.” Now beauty of this kind does not go to the making of the Great Lyric.

Then there comes that poetry which, being ethnologic- ally Semitic, might be supposed to exhibit something at least of the Hebrew temper—the Arabian. But, whatever may be said of the oldest Arabic poetry, with its deep sense of fate and pain, it would seem that nothing can be more unlike than the Hebrew temper and the Arabian temper as seen in later poets. It is not with Hebrew but with Persian poetry that Arabian poetry can be usefully compared. If the wings of the Persian imagination are heavy with beauty, those of the later Arabian imagination are bright with beauty—brilliant as an Eastern butterfly, quick and agile as a dragon-fly or a humming-bird. To the eye of the Persian poet the hues of earth are (as Firdausi says of the garden of Afrasiab) ‘like the tapestry of the kings of Ormuz, the air is perfumed with musk, and the waters of the brooks are the essence of roses.” And to the later Arabian no less than to the Persian the earth is beautiful; but it is the clear and sparkling beauty of the earth as she “wakes up to life, greeting the Sabean morning”: we feel the light more than the colour.

But it is neither the Persian’s instinct for beauty nor the Arabian’s quenchless wit and exhaustless animal spirits that go to the making of the Great Lyric; far from it. In a word, the Great Lyric, as we have said, cannot be assigned to the Asiatic temper generally any more than it can be assigned to the European temper.

In the poetry of Europe, if we cannot say of Pindar, devout as he is, that he produced the Great Lyric, what can we say of any other European poet? The truth is that, like the Great Drama, so straight and so warm does it seem to come from the heart of man in its highest moods that we scarcely feel it to be literature at all.

| that all odes should be written on the same model.

is

however, from this supreme expression of lyrical | imagination, we come to the artistic ode, upon which The arti subject the present writer can only

reiterate here what tie ode ot he has more fully said upon a former occasion, What- “™™ ever may have been said to the contrary, enthusiasm is, in the nature of things, the very basis of the ode; for the ode is a mono-drama, the actor in which is the poct himself ; and, as Marmontel has well pointed out, if the actor in the mono-drama is not affected by the sentiments he expresses, the ode must be cold and lifeless. But, although the ode is a natural poetic method of the poet considered as prophet—although it is the voice of poetry as a fine frenzy—it must not be supposed that there is anything lawless in its structure. “Pindar,” says the Ttalian critic Gravina, “launches his verses upon the bosom

of the sea; he spreads out all his sails; he confronts the tempest and the rocks; the waves arise and are ready to engulf him; already he has disappeared from the spec- tator’s view ; when suddenly he springs up in the midst of the waters, and reaches happily the shore.” Now it is this Pindaric discursiveness, this Pindaric unrestraint as to the matter, which has led poets to attempt to imitate him by adopting an unrestraint as to form. Although no two odes of Pindar exhibit the same metrical structure (the olian and Lydian rhythms being mingled with the Doric

in different proportions), yet each ode is in itself obedient, severely obedient, to structural law. This we feel ; but what the law is no metricist has perhaps ever yet been able to explain.

It was a strange misconception that led people for centuries to use the word “Pindaric” and irregular as synonymous terms; whereas the very essence of the odes of Pindar (of the few, alas! which survive to us) is their regularity. There is no more difficult form of poetry than this, and for this reason: when in any poetical composi- tion the metres are varied, there must, as the present writer has before pointed out, be a reason for such free- dom, and that reason is properly subjective—the varying form must embody and express the varying emotions of the singer. But when these metrical variations are governed by no subjective law at all, but by arbitrary rules sup- posed to be evolved from the practice of Pindar, then that very variety which should aid the poet in expressing his emotion crystallizes it and makes the ode the most frigid of all compositions. Great as Pindar undoubtedly is, it is deeply to be regretted that no other poet survives to

repre- sent the triumphal ode of Greece,—the digressions of his subject-matter are so wide, and his volubility is so great.

In modern literature the ode has been ruined by theories The and experiments. A poet like La Mothe, for instance, modern writes execrable odes, and then writes a treatise to prove 0%

Passing,

There is much confusion of mind prevalent among poets as to what is and what is not an ode.- All odes are, no doubt, divisible into two great classes :—those which, following an arrangement in stanzas, are commonly called regular, and those which, following no such arrangement, are commonly called irregular. |

We do not agree with those who assert that irregular The irr: | metres are of necessity inimical to poetic art. On the gular o” | contrary, we believe that in modern prosody the arrange ae ment of the rhymes and the length of the lines in any oqo, rhymed metrical passage may be determined either by a fixed stanzaic law or by a law infinitely deeper—by the law which impels the soul, in a state of poetic exaltation, to seize hold of every kind of metrical aid, such as rhyme, cesura, &c., for the purpose of accentuating and marking off each shade of emotion as it arises, regardless of any demands of stanza. But between the irregularity of make shift, such as we find it in Cowley and his imitators, and

anzaic wand

10-

nal W.

1e true ndaric ; ndaric jg

ie 1s ° < af ; “gular, Which are really Pindaric in so far as they consist of

•

POE the irregularity of the “fine frenzy” of such a poem, for instance, as Coleridge’s Kubla Khan, there is a difference in kind. Strange that it is not in an ode at all but in this unique lyric Aubla Khan, descriptive of imaginative landscape, that an English poet has at last conquered the crowning difficulty of writing in irregular metres. Having broken away from all restraints of couplet and stanza,—having caused his rhymes and pauses to fall just where and just when the emotion demands that they should fall, scorning the exigencies of makeshift no less than the exigencies of stanza, —he has found what every writer of irregular English odes has sought in vain, a music as entrancing, as natural, and at the same time as inscrutable, as the music of the winds or of the sea.

The prearranged effects of sharp contrasts and anti- phonal movements, such as some poets have been able to compass, do not of course come under the present defi- nition of irregular metres at all. If a metrical passage does not gain immensely by being written independently of stanzaic law, it loses immensely ; and for this reason, perhaps, that the great charm of the music of all verse, as distinguished from the music of prose, is inevitableness of cadence. In regular metres we enjoy the pleasure of feel- ing that the rhymes will inevitably fall under a recognized law of couplet or stanza. But if the passage flows independently of these, it must still flow inevitably—it must, in short, show that it is governed by another and a yet deeper force, the inevitableness of emotional expres- sion. The lines must be long or short, the rhymes must be arranged after this or after that interval, not because it is convenient so to arrange them, but because the emotion of the poet inexorably demands these and no other arrangements. When, however, Coleridge came to try his hand at irregular odes, such as the odes “To the Departing Year” and “To the Duchess of Devonshire,” he certainly did not succeed.

As to Wordsworth’s magnificent “Ode on Intimations of Immortality,” the sole impeachment of it, but it is a grave one, is that the length of the lines and the arrange- ment of the rhymes are not always inevitable; they are, except on rare occasions, governed neither by stanzaic nor by emotional law. For instance, what emotional necessity was there for the following rhyme-arrangement ?

“My heart is at your festival, My head hath its coronal, The fulness of your bliss I feel—I feel it all.

Oh, evil day! if I were sullen

While earth herself is adorning,

This sweet May morning ;

And the children are culling,

On every side,

In a thousand valleys far and wide, Fresh flowers.” –

Beautiful as is the substance of this entire passage, so far from gaining, it loses by rhyme—loses, not in perspicuity, for Wordsworth like all his contemporaries (except Shelley) is mostly perspicuous, but in that metrical emphasis the quest of which is one of the unpulses that leads a poet to write in rhyme. In spite, however, of its metrical defects, this famous ode of Wordsworth’s is the finest irregular ode in the language ; for, although Coleridge’s “Ode to the Departing Year” excels it in Pindaric fire, it is below Wordsworth’s masterpiece in almost every other quality save rhythm. Among the Writers of English irregular odes, next to Wordsworth, stands Dryden. The second stanza of the “Ode for St Cecilia’s Day” is a great triumph.

Leaving the irregular and turning to the regular ode, it natural to divide these into two classes :—-(1) those

strophes, antistrophes, and epodes, variously arranged and

eh ¥ ori

contrasted ; and (2) those which consist of a regular succession of regular stanzas. Perhaps all Pindaric odes tend to show that this form of art is in English a mistake. It is easy enough to write one stanza and call it a strophe, another in a different movement and call it an antistrophe, a third in a different movement still and call it an epode. But in modern prosody,

disconnected as it is from musical and from terpsichorean science, what are these? No poet and no critic can say.

What is requisite is that the ear of the reader should catch a great metrical scheme, of which these three varieties of movement are necessary parts,—should catch, in short, that inevitableness of structure upon which we have already touched. In order to justify a poet in writ- ing a poem in three different kinds of movement, governed by no musical and no terpsichorean necessity, a necessity of another kind should make itself apparent ; that is, the metrical wave moving in the strophe should be metrically answered by the counter-wave moving in the antistrophe, while the epode—which, as originally conceived by Stesi- chorus, was merely a standing still after the balanced movements of the strophe and antistrophe—should clearly, in a language like ours, be a blended echo of these two. A mere metrical contrast such as some poets labour to effect is not a metrical answer. And if the reply to this criticism be that in Pindar himself no such metrical scheme is apparent, that is the strongest possible argument in support of our position. If indeed the metrical scheme of Pindar is not apparent, that is because, having been written for chanting, it was subordinate to the lost musical scheme of the musician. It has been contended, and is likely enough, that this musical scheme was simple—as simple, perhaps, as the scheme of a cathedral chant; but to it, whatever it was, the metrical scheme of the poet was subordinated. It need scarcely be said that the phrase “metrical scheme” is used here not in the narrow sense as indicating the position and movement of strophe and antistrophe by way of simple contrast, but in the deep metrical sense as indicating the value of each of these component parts of the ode, as a counter-wave balancing and explaining the other waves in the harmony of the entire composition. We touch upon this matter in order to show that the moment odes ceased to be chanted, the words strophe, antistrophe, and epode lost the musical value they had among the Greeks, and pretended to a complex metrical value which their actual metrical struc- ture does not appear to justify. It does not follow from this that odes should not be so arranged, but it does follow that the poet’s arrangement should justify itself by dis- closing an entire metrical scheme in place of the musical scheme to which the Greek choral lyric was evidently sub- ordinated. But even if the poet were a sufficiently skilled metricist to compass a scheme embracing a wave, an answering wave, and

an echo gathering up the tones of each, 2.e., the strophe, the antistrophe, and the epode, the ear of the reader, unaided by the musical emphasis which supported the rhythms of the old choral lyric, is, it should seem, incapable of gathering up and remembering the sounds further than the strophe and the antistrophe, after which it demands not an epode but a return to the strophe. That is to say, an epode, as alternating in the body of the modern ode, is a mistake; a single epode at the end of a group of strophes and antistrophes (as in some of the Greek odes) has, of course, a different function altogether.

The great difficulty of the English ode is that of pre- venting the apparent spontaneity of the impulse from being marred by the apparent artifice of the form; for, assuredly, no writer subsequent to Coleridge and to Keats would dream of writing an ode on the cold Horatian principles

Ts it

suited to modern — poetry ?

The simple ode of regular stanzas.

The French ode,

ag. ie eae

adopted by Warton, and even by Collins, in his beautiful “Ode to Evening.” –

Of the second kind of regular odes, those consisting of a regular succession of regular stanzas, the so-called odes of Sappho are, of course, so transcendent that no other amatory lyrics can be compared with them. Never before these songs were sung and never since did the human soul, in the grip of a fiery passion, utter a cry like hers ; and, from the executive point of view, in directness, 1n lucidity, in that high imperious verbal economy which only Nature herself can teach the artist, she has no equal, and none worthy to take the place of second—not even in Heine, not even in Burns. Turning, however, to modern poetry, there are some magnificent examples of this simple form of ode in English poetry—Spenser’s immortal

‘ Epithal- amion” leading the way in point of time, and probably also in point of excellence.

Fervour being absolutely essential, we think, to a great English ode, fluidity of metrical movement can never be dispensed with. ‘The more billowy the metrical waves the better suited are they to render the emotions expressed by the ode, as the reader will see by referring to Coleridge’s “Ode to France” (the finest ode in the English language, according to Shelley), and giving special atten- tion to the first stanza—to the way in which the first metrical wave, after it had gently fallen at the end of the first quatrain, leaps up again on the double rhymes (which are expressly introduced for this effect), and goes bound- ing on, billow after billow, to the end of the stanza. Not that this fine ode is quite free from the great vice of the English ode, rhetoric. If we except Spenser and, in one instance, Collins, it can hardly be said that any English writer before Shelley and Keats produced odes independent of rhetoric and supported by pure poetry alone. But fervid as are Shelley’s ““Ode to the West Wind,” and Keats’s Odes “To a Nightingale” and “Ona Grecian Urn,” they are entirely free from rhetorical flavour. Notwithstanding that in the “Ode on a Grecian Urn” the first stanza does not match in rhyme arrangement with the others, while the second stanza of the “Ode to a Nightingale” varies from the rest by running on four rhyme-sounds instead of five, vexing the ear at first by disappointed expectation, these two odes are, after Coleridge’s “ France,” the finest regular odes perhaps in the English language.

With regard to the French ode, Malherbe was the first writer who brought it to perfection. Malherbe showed also more variety of mood than it is the fashion just now to credit him with. This may be especially noted in his ‘Ode to Louis XIII.” His disciple Racan is not of much account. There is certainly much vigour in the odes of Rousseau, but it is not till we reach Victor Hugo that we realize what French poetry can achieve in this line; and contemporary poetry can hardly be examined here. We may say, however, that some of Hugo’s odes are truly magnificent. Asa pure lyrist his place among the greatest poets of the world is very high. Here, though writing in an inferior language, he ranks with the greatest masters of Greece, of England, andof Germany. Had he attempted no other kind of poetry than lyrical, his would still have been the first name in French poetry. Whatever

is defective in his work arises, as in the case of Euripides, from the importation of lyrical force where dramatic force is mainly needed.

As most of the other varieties of lyrical poetry, such as the idyl, the satire, the ballad, the sonnet, &c., have been or will be treated under different heads, or under the names of the various masters of poetic art, it would be superfluous to discuss them here.

A word or two, however, must be said about the song aud the elegy. To write a good song requires that simpli-

v iY

city of grammatical structure which is foreign to many natures—that mastery over direct and simple speech which only true passion and feeling can give, and which “coming from the heart goes to the heart.” Without going so far as to say that no man is a poet who cannot write a good song, it may certainly be said that no man can write a good song who is not a good poet. |

In modern times we have, of course, nothing in any The way representing those choral dance-songs of the Greeks, Italian — which, originating in the primitive Cretan war-dances, inpeaat became, in Pindar’s time, a splendid blending of song ae | and ballet. Nor have we anything exactly representing poetry, 1 the Greek scolia, those short drinking songs of which Ter- pander is said to have been the inventor. That these scolia were written, not only by poets like Alczeus, Anacreon, Praxilla, Simonides, but also by Sappho and by Pindar, shows in what high esteem they were held by the Greeks. These songs seem to have been as brief as the stornelli of the Italian peasant. They were accompanied by the lyre, which was handed from singer to singer as the time for each scolion came round.

With regard to the stornello, many critics seem to con- found it with the rispetto, a very different kind of song. The Italian rispetio consists of a stanza of inter-rhyming lines ranging from six to ten in number, but often not exceeding eight. The Tuscan and Umbrian stornello is much shorter, consisting, indeed, of a hemistich naming some natural object which suggests the motive of the little poem.

The nearest approach to the Italian stornello appears to be, not the rispetto, but the Welsh triban.

Perhaps the mere difficulty of rhyming in English and the facility of rhyming in Italian must be taken into account when we inquire why there is nothing in Scot- land—of course there could be nothing in England—answering to the nature-poetry of the Italian peasant. Most of the Italian rispetti and stornelli seem to be impro- visations ; and to improvise in English is as difficult as to improvise is easy in Italian. Nothing indeed is more interesting than the improvisatorial poetry of the Italian peasants, such as the canzone. If the peasantry discover who is the composer of a canzone, they will not sing it. The speciality of Italian peasant poetry is that the symbol which is mostly erotic is of the purest and most tender kind. A peasant girl will improvise a song as impassioned as “Come into the Garden, Maud,” and as free from un- wholesome taint. :

With regard to English songs, the critic cannot but English ask—Wherein lies the lost ring and charm of the Eliza- 86 bethan song-writers? Since the Jacobean period at least, few have succeeded in the art of writing real songs as distinguished from mere book lyrics. Between songs to be sung and songs to be read there is in our time a differ- ence as wide as that which exists between plays for the closet and plays for the boards.

Heartiness and melody—the two requisites of a song which can never be dispensed with—can rarely be com- passed, it seems, by one and the same individual. In both these qualities the Elizabethan poets stand pre- eminent, though even with them the melody is not so singable as it might be made. Since their time heartiness has, perhaps, been a Scottish rather than an English endow- ment of the song-writer. It is difficult to imagine an Englishman writing a song like “Tullochgorum ” or a song like “Maggie Lauder,” where the heartiness and impulse of the poet’s mood conquer all impediments of close vowels and rugged consonantal combinations. Of Scottish song: writers Burns is, of course, the head ; for the songs of John Skinner, the heartiest song-writer that has appeared in Great Britain (not excluding Herrick), are too few im

ft

number to entitle him to be placed beside a poet so prolific | “writers as Tyrtzous, Theognis, Catullus, Tibullus, and our in heartiness and melody as Burns. With regard to| own Gray. It may almost be said that perfection of forin Campbell’s heartiness, this is quite a different quality from | is more necessary here and in the sonnet than in the song,

the heartiness of Burns and Skinner, and is in quality English rather than Scottish, though, no doubt, it is of a fine and rare strain, especially in ‘The Battle of the

inasmuch as the artistic pretensions are more pronounced. Hence even such apparent minutize as those we have hinted at above must not be neglected here.

Baltic.” His songs illustrate an infirmity which even the Scottish song-writers share with the English—a defective sense of that true song-warble which we get in the stornelli and rispetti of the Italian peasants. A poet may have heartiness in plenty, but if he has that love of conso- nantal effects which Donne displays he will never write a first-rate song. Here, indeed, is the crowning difficulty

We have quoted Dionysius of Halicarnassus in relation Perfection to the arrangement of words in poetry. His remarks on of detail sibilants are equally deserving of attention. He goes so ea ae far as to say that o is entirely disagreeable, and, when it a often recurs, insupportable. more appropriate to the beast than to man.

The hiss seems to him to be sential Hence certain forms of writers, he says, often avoid it, and employ it with regret, PoCttY-

ert

elegy,

a «

of song-writing. An extreme simplicity of structure and of diction must be accompanied by an instinctive appre- hension of the melodic capabilities of verbal sounds, and of what Samuel Lover, the Irish song-writer, called “ sing- ing” words, which is rare in this country, and seems to belong to the Celtic rather than to the Saxon ear. “The song-writer,” says Lover, “must frame his song of open vowels with as few guttural or hissing sounds as possible, and he must be content sometimes to sacrifice grandeur and vigour to the necessity of selecting singing words and not reading words.” And he exemplifies the distinction between singing words and reading words by a line from one of Shelley’s songs—

“¢The fresh earth in new leaves drest,’

“where nearly every word shuts up the mouth instead of opening it.” But closeness of vowel sounds is by no means the only thing to be avoided in song-writing. A phrase may be absolutely unsingable, though the vowels be open cnough, if it is loaded with consonants. The truth is that in song-writing it is quite as important, in a consonantal language like ours, to attend to the consonants as to the vowels; and perhaps the first thing to avoid in writing English songs is the frequent recurrence of the sibilant. But this applies to all the brief and quintessential forms of poetry, such as the sonnet, the elegy, dc.

As to the elegy—a form of poetic art which has more relation to the objects of the external world than the song, but less relation to these than the stornello—its scope Seems to be wide indeed, as practised by such various

POGGENDORFF, Joann Curistian (1796-1877), physicist, and editor for more than half a century of the well-known scientific journal called after him Poggendorf’’s Annalen, was born in Hamburg on the 29th December 1796, His father, a wealthy manufacturer of that town, was all but ruined by the French siege. His son Christian, after receiving his education at Hamburg and Schiffbeck, had therefore, when only sixteen, to apprentice himself to an apothecary in Hamburg, and when twenty-two began to earn his living as an apothecary’s assistant at Itzehoe. Ambition and a strong inclination towards a scientific career led him to throw up his business and remove to Berlin, where he entered the university in 1820. Here his abilities were speedily recognized, and in 1823 he was appointed meteorological

observer to the Academy of Sciences with a small salary, which was important to him, mmasmuch as the expenses of his university career had nearly exhausted his slender patrimony. Even at this early period he had conceived the idea of founding a physical and chemical scientific journal. The realization of this plan was hastened by the sudden death of Gilbert, the editor of Gilbert's Annalen der Physik, in 1824. Poggendorff immediately put himself in communication

Some, he tells us, have composed entire odes without it. But if sibilation is a defect in Greek odes, where the softening effect of the vowel sounds is so poteut, it is much more so in English poetry, where the consonants dominate, though it will be only specially noticeable in the brief and quintessential forms such as the song, the sonnet, the elegy. Many poets only attend to their sibilants when these clog the rhythm. To write even the briefest song without a sibilant would be a tour de force; to write a good one would no doubt be next to impossible. It is singular that the only metricist who ever attempted it was John Thelwall, the famous "Citizen John," friend of Lamb and Coleridge, and editor of the famous Champion news- paper where many of Lamb's epigrams appeared. Thelwall gave much attention to metrical questions, and tried his hand at various metres. Though "Citizen John's" sap- phics might certainly have been better, he had a very remarkable critical insight into the rationale of metrical effects, and his "Song without a Sibilant" is extremely neat and ingenious. Of course, however, it would be mere pedantry to exaggerate this objection to sibilants even in these brief forms of poetry.

As a fine art English poetry is receiving much attention in our time. Defective rhymes once allowable, and make- shift work in general, are no longer tolerated. And we believe the time is not far distant when even such a sub- ject as vowel composition (the arrangement of one vowel sound with regard to another) will have to be studied with the care which the Greeks evidently bestowed upon it. (T. Ww.)

he was installed as editor of a scientific journal which was to be a continuation of Gilbert's Annalen on a somewhat extended plan, indicated by its title Annalen der Physik und Chemie. Poggendorff was admirably qualified for the post which he thus attained. He had an extraordinary

memory, well-stored with scientific knowledge, both modern and historical, which served him in good stead in the critical part of his editorial duty. He had a cool and impartial judgment, with a strong preference for facts as against theory of the speculative kind at least, and was able to throw himself into the spirit of modern experi- mental science, represented in the early part of his edi- torial career by such great names as Berzelius, Faraday, Brewster, Fresnel, Regnault. He also possessed in more than German measure the German virtue of orderliness in the arrangement of knowledge and in the conduct of busi- ness. To this he added an engaging geniality of manner and much tact in dealing with men; so marked in fact

|was this part of his character that, notwithstanding his | somewhat trying position, he never during his long life

was involved in anything that could be fairly called a literary quarrel. These qualities of its editor soon made Poggendorf's Annalen the foremost scientific journal in

with the publisher, Barth of Leipsic, with the result that | Europe. He collected around him all the eminent scien-

tific men of his own country, and he managed, either through original contributions or by translations of memoirs of approved value already printed,. to secure for many years an adequate representation of the scientific work of other lands. So true is this that, for years after the beginning of Poggendorff's editorship, the tables of con- tents of his annual volumes read like an index of the history of physical science.

In the course of his fifty-two years' editorship of the Annalen Poggendorff could not fail to acquire an unusual acquaintance with the labours of modern men of science. This knowledge, joined to what he had gathered by historical reading of equally unusual extent, he carefully digested and gave to the world in his Biographisch- literarisches Handbuch zur Geschichte der

Exacten Wissen- schaften, containing notices of the lives and labours of mathematicians, astronomers, physicists, chemists, minera-

logists, geologists, &c., of all peoples and all ages. ‘Thes two volumes of this work contain an astounding collection |

of facts invaluable to the scientific biographer and _his- torian; they form in fact the basis of the yet unwritten history of physical science. of such a history in the form of lectures delivered by Poggendorff himself at Berlin ; and probably he had con- templated at one time writing a continuous narrative ; but

even his long life was too short for the double task of |

collecting and using the material.

Poggendorff was a physicist of high although not of the very highest rank. He was wanting in mathematical ability, and never displayed in any remarkable degree the still more important power of scientific generalization, which, whether accompanied by mathematical skill or not, never fails to mark the highest genius in physical science. He was, however, an able amd conscientious experimenter. He was very fertile and ingenious in devising physical apparatus, and contributed greatly in the earlier part of his life to enrich the resources of experimental science. Contemporaneously with Schweigger, he succeeded in greatly increasing the sensitiveness of the galvanometer by introducing the multiplying coil, and he made important improvements on that particular type of this instru- ment which is usually called the sine galvanometer. To him (according to Wiedemann) we owe the use of binding screws in most of their various forms. He invented the “Inversor” for rapidly alternating the direction of a voltaic current, and the “ Wippe” for throwing a number of voltaic or electrolytic cells suddenly into “ series” or into “ multiple arc”; and to him is due the suggestion of the telescope and mirror method for reading galvanometers and other physical instruments, a device which has proved very valuable in all branches of physical science.

Poggendorff’s contributions to physics were published for the most part in his own journal. They form an important part of the scientific work of the 19th century ; but it would be difficult in a few words to characterize them inasmuch as they do not constitute a single coherent group or even a few

cohcrent groups of connected researches. By far the greater and more important part of his work related to electricity and magnetism. As specimens we may mention his investigations into the working of Holtz's machines, and his variations on their construction ; his researches on the resistance and electro- motive force of electrolytic cells, along with which ought to be noticed his admirable method of comparing electro- motive forces by "compensation"; and finally his researches on magnetism and diamagnetism.

Poggendorfi's literary and scientific reputation speedily brought him h iti :

g onourable recognition. In 1830 he was made royal professor and in 1834 Hon. Ph.D. and extra- ordinary professor in the university of Berlin, and in

We possess a small fragment |

POG—P OG

| Nothing marks the secular attitude of the Italians at an

| to the resuscitation of classical studies amid conflicts of

1839 member of the Berlin Academy of Sciences. He ultimately became a member of many foreign societies, and received more than the usual share of the orders bestowed by Continental nations for scientific merit. Dur- ing his lifetime many offers of ordinary professorships were made to him, but he declined them all, devoting himself to his duties as editor of the Anialen, and to the pursuit of his scientific researches. He died at Berlin on January 24, 1877.

POGGIO (1380-1459). Gian Francesco Poggio Brac- ciolini, eminent in the annals of the revival of learning, was born in 1380 at Terranova, a village in the territory of Florence. He studied Latin under John of Ravenna, and Greek under Manuel Chrysoloras. His distinguished abilities and his dexterity as a copyist of MSS. brought him into early notice with the chief scholars of Florence. Coluccio Salutati and Niccolo de' Niccoli befriended him, and in the year 1402 or 1403 he was received into the service of the Roman curia. His functions were those of a secretary ; and, though he

profited by benefices conferred on him in lieu of salary, he remained a layman to the end of his life. It is noticeable that, while he held his office in the curia through that momentous period of fifty years which witnessed the councils of Constance and of Basel, and the final restoration of the papacy under Nicholas V., his sympathies were never attracted to ecclesiastical affairs.

epoch which decided the future course of both Renaissance and Reformation more strongly than the mundane pro- clivities of this apostolic secretary, heart and soul devoted

popes and antipopes, cardinals and councils, in all of which he bore an official part. Thus, when his duties called him to Constance in 1414, he employed his leisure in exploring the libraries of Swiss and Swabian convents. The treasures he brought to light at Reichenau, Wein- garten, and above all at St Gall, restored many lost master- pieces of Latin literature, and supplied students with the texts of authors whose works had hitherto been accessible only in mutilated copies. In one of his epistles he describes how he recovered Quintilian, part of Valerius Flaccus, and the commentaries of Asconius Pedianus at St Gall. MSS. of Lucretius, Columella, Silius Italicus, Manilius, and Vitruvius were unearthed, copied by his hand, and communicated to the learned. Wherever Poggio went he carried on the same industry of research. At Langres he discovered Cicero's Oration for Cacina, at Monte Cassino a MS. of Frontinus. He also could boast of having recovered Ammianus Marcellinus, Nonius Mar- cellus, Probus, Flavius Caper, and Eutyches. If a codex could not be obtained by fair means, he was ready to use fraud, as when he bribed a monk to abstract a Livy and an Ammianus from the convent library of Hersfeld. Resolute in recognizing erudition as the chief concern of man, he sighed over the folly of popes and princes, who spent their time in wars and ecclesiastical disputes when they might have been more profitably employed in reviving the lost learning of antiquity. This point of view is eminently characteristic of the earlier Italian Renaissance. The men of that nation and of that epoch were bent on creating a new intellectual atmosphere for Europe by means of vital contact with antiquity. Poggio, like a still more eminent humanist of his age, Aineas Sylvius Piccolomini, was a great traveller, and wherever he went he brought, like Aneas Sylvius, enlightened powers of observation

trained in liberal studies to bear upon the manners of the countries he visited. We owe to his pei curious remarks on English and Swiss customs, valuable notes on the remains of antique art in Rome, and @ singularly striking portrait of Jerome of Prague as he

POG—P OI

appeared before the judges who condemned him to the |

stake. It is necessary to dwell at length upon Poggio's

devotion to the task of recovering the classics, and upon |

his disengagement from all but humanistic interests, |

because these were the most marked feature of his character and career. In literature he embraced the whole sphere of contemporary studies, and distinguished – himself as an orator, a writer of rhetorical treatises, a panegyrist of the dead, a violent impugner of the living, a transiator from the Greek, an epistolographer and grave historian, and a facetious compiler of fabliaux in Latin. Of his moral essays it may suffice to notice the disserta-

Misery of Human Lrfe, On the Infelicity of Princes, and On Marriage in Old Age. These compositions belonged to a species which, since Petrarch set the fashion, were very popular among Italian scholars. They have lost their value, except for the few matters of fact em- bedded in a mass of commonplace meditation, and for some occasionally brilliant illustrations. Poggio's History of Florence, written in avowed imitation of Livy's manner, requires separate mention, since it exemplifies by its defects the weakness of that merely stylistic treatment which deprived so much of Bruni's, Carlo Aretino's, and Bembo's work of historical weight. A somewhat different criticism must be passed on the Jacetix, a collection of humorous and indecent tales expressed in such Latinity as Poggio could command. This book is chiefly remarkable

for its unsparing satires on the monastic orders and the >

secular clergy. It is also noticeable as illustrating the Latinizing tendency of an age which gave classic form to the lightest essays of the fancy. Poggio, it may be observed, was a fluent and copious writer in the Latin tongue, but not an elegant scholar. His knowledge of the ancient authors was wide, but his taste was not select, and his erudition was superficial. His translation of Xenophon's Cyropedia into Latin cannot be praised for accuracy. Among contemporaries he passed for one of the most formidable polemical or gladiatorial rhetoricians; and a considerable section of his extant works are invectives. One of these, the Dialogue against Hypocrites, was aimed

another, written at the request of Nicholas V., covered the anti-pope Felix with scurrilous abuse. But his most famous compositions in this kind are the personal invec-

tives which he discharged against Filelfo and Valla. All |

the resources of a copious and unclean Latin vocabulary were employed to degrade the objects of his satire; and every crime of which humanity is capable was ascribed to them without discrimination. In Filelfo and Valla Poggio found his match ; and Italy was amused for years with the spectacle of their indecent combats. To dwell upon such literary infamies would be below the dignity of the historian, were it not that these habits of the early Italian humanists imposed a fashion upon Europe which extended to the later age of Scaliger's contentions with Scioppius and Milton's with Salmasius. The greater part of Poggio's long life was spent in attendance to his duties in the papal curia at Rome and elsewhere. But about the year 1452 he finally retired to Florence, where he was admitted to the burghership, and on the death of Carlo Aretino in 1453 was appointed chancellor and historiographer to the republic. He had already built himself a villa in Valdarno, which he adorned with a collection of antique sculpture, coins, and inscriptions. In 1435 he had married a girl of eighteen named Vaggia, of the famous Buondel- monte blood. His declining days were spent in the dis- charge of his honourable Florentine office and in the com-

in the church of Santa Croce. A statue by Donatello and

; | born at Paris January 3, 1777. tions On Nobility, On Vicissitudes of Fortune, On the |

| of public instruction.

275

a picture by Antonio del Pollajuolo remained to com-

_memorate a citizen who chiefly for his services to human-

istic literature deserved the notice of posterity.

Poggio's works were printed at Basel in 1538, "ex exdibus Henrici Petri." Dr Shepherd's Life of Poggio Braceiolini is a good authority on his biography. For his position in the history of the revival, students may consult Voigt's Wiederbelebung des classichen Alterthums, and Symonds's Renaissance in Italy. (J. A. 8.)

POGY, a popular name for the fish Clupea menhaden, almost universally in use in the States of Maine and Massachusetts (see MENHADEN, vol. xvi. p. 10).

POINSOT, Louis (1777-1859), mathematician, was In 1794 he became a scholar at the Polytechnic School, which he left in 1796 to act asa civil engineer. In 1804 he was appointed pro- fessor of mathematics at the Lyceum, in 1809 professor

of applied mathematics and in 1816 examiner at the

Polytechnic School. On the death of Lagrange in 1813, Poinsot was elected to his place in the French Academy ;

_and in 1840 he became a member of the superior council

In 1846 he was made an officer of

_ the legion of honour ; and on the formation of the senate _in 1852 he was chosen a member of that body. He died

at Paris, December 5, 1859. Poinsot's earliest work was

his Llémens de Statique, in which he introduces the idea of

statical couples and investigates their properties. In the Théorie Nouvelle de la Rotation des Corps he treats the motion of a rigid body geometrically, and shows that the most general motion of such a body can be represented at any instant by a rotation about an axis combined with a translation parallel to this axis, and that any motion of a body of which one point is fixed may be produced by the rolling of a cone fixed in the body on a cone fixed in space. The previous treatment of the motion of a rigid

_ body had in every case been purely analytical, and so gave | no aid to the formation of a mental picture of the body's

motion ; and the great value of this work lies in the fact that, as Poinsot himself says in the introduction, it enables us to represent to ourselves the motion of a rigid body as clearly as that of a moving point. Poinsot also con- tributed a number of papers on pure and applied mathe-

"Inatics to Liowville's Journal and to the Journal of the In a spirit of vindictive hatred at the vices of ecclesiastics ; |

Polytechnic School. POINT DE GALLE. See Gatte, vol. x. p. 40. POINTE A PITRE, the principal port of the island of GUADELOUPE (¢.v.). POISONS. An exact definition of the word "poison"

| is by no means easy. There is no legal definition of what

constitutes a poison, and the definitions usually proposed are apt to include either too much or too little. Gene- rally, a poison may be defined to be a substance having an inherent deleterious property, rendering it capable of destroying life by whatever avenue it is taken into the system; or it isa substance which when introduced into the system, or applied externally, injures health or destroys life

_ irrespective of mechanical means or direct thermal changes.

In popular language, a poison is a substance capable of

| destroying life when taken in small quantity; but a sub-

_ branches of MepicaL JURISPRUDENCE (¢.v.).

2 on _ remote. position of his history. He died in 1459, and was buried |

| stance which destroys life by mechanical means as, ¢..,

powdered glass, is not, strictly speaking, a poison.

The subject of toxicology forms one of the most important The medical jurist should be familiar with the nature and actions of poisons, the symptoms which they produce, the circum-

| stances which modify their working, the pathological results of their action, and the methods of combating these.

Action of Poisons.—Poisons may exert a twofold action. This may be either local, or remote, or both local and The local action of a poison is usually one of corrosion, inflammation, or a direct effect upon the sensory or motor nerves. The remote actious of poisons are

usually of a specific character, though some writers group the remote effects of poisons under two heads, and speak of the common and the specific remote effects of a poison. The local action of a poison of the corrosive class is usually so well marked and obvious that the fact of the adminis- tration of a poison of this class is generally unmistakable. The same may be said, in a less degree, of the irritant poisons, especially the mineral irritants; but here the symptoms sometimes so closely simulate those of natural disease as to render the recognition of the administration of poison a matter of difficulty. Hence an accurate acquaint- ance with the remote specific effects of the various poisons is indispensable to the medical jurist. The class of poisons which has been administered or taken will thus be sug- gested to his mind by the observation of the symptoms ; and not unfrequently the specific poison taken will be suspected. It is almost universally admitted that absorp- tion of a poison is necessary for

the production of its specific remote effects, and the old notion that a poison may kill, by its action through the nervous system, without absorption, is abandoned.

— Modifying Circumstances.—The ordinary action of a poison may be greatly modified by the largeness of the dose, by the state of aggregation, admixture, or of chemi- cal combination of the poison, by the part or membrane to which it is applied, and by the condition of the patient. Thus, for example, opium may be a medicine or a poison according to the dose in which it is given; and a dose of the drug which may be beneficial to an adult in certain states of the system may be fatal to a child, or to an adult when suffering from some forms of disease. All barium salts, again, are poisonous, except the quite in- soluble sulphate. The simple cyanides, and many double cyanides, are highly poisonous; but yellow prussiate of potash, which is a double cyanide of iron and potassium, is almost without action upon the system. The part or tissue to which a poison is applied greatly affects the activity of a poison, owing to the varying rapidity with . which absorption takes place through the cutaneous, mucous, and serous surfaces, and by the other tissues of the body. Curare, an arrow poison, may be swallowed in considerable quantity without appreciable result, whilst a minute quantity of the same substance introduced into a wound is speedily fatal. Idiosyncracy has an important bearing in toxicology. Pork, mutton, certain kinds of fish, more especially shell fish so-called, and mushrooms have each produced all the symptoms of violent irritant poisoning, whilst other persons who have partaken of the same food at the same time have experienced no ill effects. Some persons are stated, on good authority, to be capable of taking with impunity such poisons as opium, corrosive sublimate, or arsenic, in enormous doses,—and this irrespective of habit, which is known to have such an influence in modifying the effects of some poisons, notably the narcotics. A tolerance of poisons is sometimes en- gendered by disease, so that a poison may fail to pro- duce its customary effect. Thus, opium is tolerated in large quantities in tetanus, and in delirium tremens; and mercurial compounds may in some febrile affections fail to produce the usual constitutional effects of the metal. On the other hand, diseases which impede the elimination of a poison may intensify its effects.

The evidence that a poison has been administered is based. upon the symptoms produced, on the appearances met with in the body after death, on the analysis of articles of food and drink, of excreta and ejecta, and of the organs of the body after death, and on physiological experiments made with substances extracted from the same articles. These physiological experiments are usually made upon animals, but in some cases, as for instance when aconite

has to be searched for, the physiological experiments must be made also upon the human subject. The evidence obtained from one or more of these sources, as compared with the properties or effects of various known poisons, will enable the medical jurist to form an opinion as to the administration or non-administration of a poison.

The symptoms exhibited by the patient during life rarely fail to afford some clue to the poison taken. Persons may, however, be found dead of whose history nothing can be learned. Here post-mortem appearances, chemical analysis, and, it may be, physiological expert- ments are all-important for the elucidation of the nature of the case.

Poisoning may be acute or chronic. The general condi- tions which should arouse a suspicion of acute poisoning are the sudden onset of serious and increasingly alarming symptoms in a person previously in good health, especially if there be pain in the region of the stomach, or, where there is complete prostration of the vital powers, a cada- veric aspect, and speedy death. In all such cases the aid of the analytical chemist must be called in either to con- firm well-founded or to rebut ill-founded suspicions.

The mode of treatment to be adopted in the case of poisoned persons varies greatly according to the nature of the poison. The first indication, when the poison has been swallowed, is to evacuate the stomach ; and this may usually be done by means of the stomach-pump when the poison is not of the corrosive class; or the stomach may be gently washed out by means of a funnel and flexible siphon-tube. In many cases.emetics are valuable. Anti- dotes and counter-poisons may then be given. ‘The former are such substances as chalk to neutralize the mineral acids and oxalic acid; the latter

have a physiological counter- action, and are such as atropine, which is a counter-poison to morphia. These may usually be administered most effectively by hypodermic injection. The stomach may to a certain degree be protected from the injurious effects of irritants by the administration of mucilaginous drinks; alkaloids may be rendered sparingly soluble by means of astringent substances containing tannin ; and pain may be relieved by means of opium, unless contra-indicated by the nature of the poison. The effects of the convulsant poisons, such as strychnine, may be combated by means of the inhalation of chloroform.

The classification of poisons is a matter of difficulty. Various attempts have been made to classify them scienti- fically, but with no signal success ; and perhaps the best system is that which groups the various poisons according to the more obvious symptoms which they produce. Our knowledge of the more intimate action of poisons is still too imperfect to admit of any useful classification according to the manner in which they specifically affect the vital organs. Poisons may in the manner indicated be classified as (1) Corrosives, (2) Irritants, (3) Neurotics, and (4) Gaseous Poisons. The subject of poisonous food has already been treated under the heading Meprcau JuRIS- PRUDENCE (vol. xv. pp. 781-2).

1. Corrosives.

The typical member of this class is corrosive sublimate, the soluble chloride of mercury. In it are included also the concentrated mineral acids (sulphuric, nitric, and hydrochloric) ; oxalic acid ; the alkalies (potash, soda, and ammonia) and their carbonates; acid, alkaline, and cor rosive salts of the metals (such as bisulphate of potash, alum, butter of antimony, and nitrate of silver); also carbolic acid.

The symptoms produced by the mineral acids and the alkalies are almost altogether referrible to local action; but some corrosive poisons, such as carbolic acid, produce,

Pee ts ONS att

besides a local action, remote and specific constitutional effects. The symptoms of corrosive poisoning are marked and unmistakable, except in

infants. Immediately on swallowing the corrosive substance, an acid, caustic, or metallic burning sensation is experienced in the mouth, fauces, gullet, and region of the stomach, and this speedily extends over the whole belly ; asa rule vomiting speedily follows. In the case of the mineral acids, and in oxalic acid poisoning, the vomit is so acid that if it falls upon a marble or concrete floor effervescence ensues. No relief follows the evacuation of thestomach. The ejected matters contain blood, and even fragments of the corroded walls of the alimentary canal. The belly becomes distended with gas, and horribly tender. High fever prevails. The mouth is found to be corroded. Death usually ensues within a few hours ; or, if the patient survives, he or she may perish miserably, months after the poison was taken, through starvation consequent upon the gradual contraction of the gullet, brought about by its corrosion and subsequent healing.

The treatment of corrosive poisoning consists in very gently emptying and washing out the stomach by means of a soft siphon-tube. The stomach-pump cannot be used with safety in consequence of the weakening of the walls of the stomach by corrosion. Demulcents and opiates may be subsequently administered. After death from corrosive poisoning the walls of the stomach are found corroded, and even perforated.

1. Corrosive Sublimate.—Here all the signs and symptoms of corrosive poisoning are produced in their severest form. A grain or two of this poison may prove fatal. Fortunately there is an efficient antidote in whitc of egg, the albumen of which, if administered at once, renders the salt insoluble. The eggs should be divested of their yolks, beaten up with water, and given promptly, repeatedly, and abundantly, followed by emetics. Poisoning by corrosive sublimate may be followed by the specific toxic effects of mercury, such as salivation and tremor.

Workers in mercury, such as water-gilders, looking-glass makers, and the makers of barometers and thermometers, are apt to suffer from a peenliar form of shaking palsy, known as ‘‘the trembles,” or mercurial tremor. This disease affects most frequently those who are exposed to mercurial fumes. The victim is affected with tremors when an endeavour is made to exert the muscles, so that he is unable, for instance, to convey a glass of water to the lips steadily, and when he walks he breaks into a dancing trot. The

treatment consists in removal from the mercurial atmosphere, baths, fresh air, and the administration of iron and other tonics.

2. Mineral Acids.—These are oil of vitriol or sulphuric acid, aqua fortis or nitric acid, and spirit of salt or hydrochloric (muri- atic) acid. These when taken in a concentrated form produce well- marked symptoms of corrosion. When they are diluted, the symp- toms are those of an irritant poison. Nitric acid stains the mouth and skin of a yellowcolour. The treatment consists in the admin- istration of alkalies or their carbonates, chalk, whiting, or even uncoloured plaster scraped off the walls or ceiling, with the view of neutralizing the acid.

3. Oxalic acid is a vegetable acid. When taken in the state of concentrated solution it acts as a corrosive, but when diluted as an uritant. But it also exerts a specific effect, killing the patient by cardiac syncope not unfrequently within a few minutes. When a person after taking a crystalline substance, tasting strongly acid, dies within 15 or 30 minutes, after the manifestation of great weak- ness, small pulse, and failure of the heart's power, poisoning by oxalic acid is almost certain. The treatment consists in promptly administering an emctic, followed by chalk, whiting, or any sub- stance containing carbonate of calcium. The alkaline carbonates are valucless, for the alkaline oxalates are almost as poisonous as oxalic acid itself.

4. The Alkalies.—Potash, soda, and their carbonates and sul- phides produce symptoms resembling those of the mincral acids, execpt that purging is a usnal accompaniment.

5. Carbolic acid when taken in the form of a concentrated liquid acts as a corrosive, causing whitening and shrinking of all the animal membranes with which it comes in contact. Thc patient, however, becomes speedily comatose, the poison acting profoundly upon the great nervous centres. A curious phenomenon—black or dark green urine—is commonly observed after the administration of this poison. Saccharated lime-water, diluted and drunk freely,

and a solution of sulphate of soda are perhaps the most useful remedics,

2. Irritant Poisons.

Irritant poisons are of two classes—metallic irritants, and vegetable and animal irritants, these latter being for convenience grouped together. Perhaps none of the irritants act purely as such, the irritant symptoms being usually accompanied by well-marked effects upon the nervous system. An irritant is a substance which causes inflammation of the part to which it is applied,—usually the alimentary canal. Arsenic is by far the most im- portant of the metallic irritants. Other irritants are the inoderately diluted acids, many metallic salts, such as those of antimony, lead, copper, zinc, and chromium. Elaterium, gamboge, aloes, colocynth, and croton oil are good examples of vegetable irritants; and cantharides of animal irritants. Animal and vegetable food when decom- posed, or infested with certain organisms known as bacteria, may produce violent irritant symptoms. The symptoms produced by irritant poisons are usually more slow in their development than where a corrosive has been administered. Usually, after an interval, greater or less according to tlie specific nature of the irritant swallowed, a burning pain is felt in the mouth, throat, and gullet, with a sense of con- striction of the parts, and followed by burning pain in the region of the stomach. This is increased, and not allevi- ated, by pressure, a mark which serves to distinguish the attack from one of ordinary colic. Nausea, vomiting, and thirst ensue, speedily followed by distension of the whole. abdomen, which is exceedingly tender to the touch. Ordinarily the vomiting is followed by profuse diarrhcea.

Should the poison not be speedily eliminated in the

vomited and feecal matters, inflammatory fever sets in, followed by collapse; and death may ensue in a few hours.

There is danger of confounding irritant poisoning with some forms of natural disease, such as gastritis and gastric ulcer, colic, peritonitis, cholera, and rupture of the intes- tines,

1. Arsenicisaspecificirritant poison. Almostall the compounds of this metal are poisonous. The term ‘“‘arsenic’”’ is, however, most commonly applied, not to the metal itself, but to its lower oxide, arsenious oxide, which is also known as white arsenic. By whatever channel arscnic is introduced into the

system, it invari- ably affects specifically the stomach and intestines, cansing conges- tion or inflammation. The.common sources of arsenical poisoning are the taking of white arsenic, which causes acute poisoning, and the inhalation of dust from arsenical wall-papers and textile fabrics, whereby a chronic form of poisoning is induced.

The symptoms of acute arsenical poisoning do not come on, as in the case of corrosive poisoning, immediately after the poison is swallowed. There is usually an interval of half an honr or so before prominent symptoms supervene. Generally, after a feeling of faint- ness and depression, an intense burning pain is felt in the region of the stomach, with tenderness on pressure. Nausea and vomit- ing generally follow, increased by every act of swallowing. Unlike what occurs in ordinary vomiting, the pain and sickness are not relieved by the evacuation of the stomach. Vomiting is followed by purging, blood being frequently distinguishable in the evacua- tions. There is thirst, a feeble irregular pulse, and a perspiring clammy skin. The victim usually succumbs within cighteen to seventy-two hours ; if he survives the latter period, good hopes may be entertained of his recovery. The treatment consists in the use of the stomach-pump, emetics, such as mustard and warm water, demulcents, and the free administration of magnesia emulsion and either freshly precipitated ferric hydrate or dialysed iron. Ferric hydrate, and the solution known as dialysed iron, have the property of rendering arscnious anhydride insoluble. ;

Chronic arsenical poisoning is usually accidental. The inhala- tion of arscnical vapours in factories, or of arsenical dust from green wall-papers and in the manufacture of artificial flowers, are common sources of this form of poisoning. Arsenic when thus slowly absorbed into the system produces congestion and inflammation of the mucous membranes, redness and irritation of the conjunctive, sore throat, a peculiar eruption of the skin, and diarrhea. The treatment consists in removal from the poisoned atmosphere, and the administration of tonics.

Arsenic-eating, or the ability of some persons to take relatively large doses of arsenic habitually, is a well-established fact. The

cause of this singular immunity from the ordinary results of arsenic is quite unknown. ;

2. Lead.—The salts of lead, more especially the acetate (sugar of lead), are irritant poisons of no very great activity ; and, though ovcasionally death ensues, recovery is the rule. Chrome yellow, or lead chromate, is a powerful irritant poison. All chromates are, indeed, irritant poisons. ;

Chronic lead poisoning is a much more common affection than acute irritant poisoning by lead. When lead. in any form is slowly absorbed into the system, a peculiar affection results, known as satur- nine poisoning, and characterized by two prominent symptoms— colic and paralysis. Workers in lead and its compounds, such as plumbers and painters, are frequently affected by this form of disease. Water, especially soft water or such as is contaminated with sewage, on being passed throngh leaden pipes or stored in leaden cisterns may become contaminated with lead to a dangerous extent. Acid liquids, such as cider, vinegar, &c., may also contain lead as an impurity. Potmen, who drink beer which has rested for some time in pewter vessels, are also the occasional victims of saturnine poisoning. Water which contains lcad in asoluble form to the extent of more than one-tenth of a grain per gallon should not be used for drinking purposes. If more than this quantity be present, the water when placed in a white porcelain dish will become more or less dark in colour on the addition of a few drops of a solution of sulphuretted hydrogen.

The commonest manifestation of chronic lead poisoning is lead colic,—a peculiar twisting and agonizing sensation around the navel, attended with obstinate constipation. This, like all forms of chronic lead poisoning, is almost invariably attended with a peculiar blue line on the margin of the gums, and when this is present the nature of the affection can scarcely be doubtful. The treatment consists in the free usc of purgatives, opiates, and the internal use of potassium iodide, which favours the elimination of the metal through the urine. ‘‘Wrist-drop” or lead paralysis is also a common result of the ingestion of lead. It consists in a paralysis of the extensor muscles of the forearm, accompanied by a wasting of that structure. A dropping of the wrist is the result of this degeneration. Baths, the use of galvanism, and the administration of potassium iodide and tonics usually

afford relief. Should, how- ever, the patient in any form of lead poisoning be exposed for a lengthened period to the effects of the metal, degenerations of the liver, kidneys, and brain supervene, with fatal results.

In all cases of lead poisoning removal of the exciting cause is indispensable ; the worker in Icad must suspend his occupation for a time; the use of contaminated articles of food or drink must cease. ;

3. Copper.—The soluble salts of copper, such as blue vitriol (the sulphate) and verdigris (subcarbonate and subacetate), are emetic and irritant salts. Their emetic effects usually, but not invariably, secure their prompt rejection by the stomach. Occasionally fatal effects have resulted from their administration. Copper becomes accidentally mixed with articles of dietary in a variety of modes. It is also used for improving the colour of preserved fruits and vegetables. Its deleterious properties when thus used in minute quantities have been both asserted and denied. There is, however, a large body of evidence in favour of the at all events occasional poisonous effects of minute quantities of copper.

4, Zinc salts and barium salts, except the quite insoluble barium sulphate, are irritant poisons; and barium compounds act also upon the central nervous system.

5. Chromates, ¢.g., bichromate of potash, are violent irritants. Chrome yellow, or lead chromate, has already been mentioned.

6. Phosphorus.—Of the two chief forms of the clements—the yellow or ordinary and the red or amorphous—the former only is poisonous. Rarely there is met with a chronic form of poison- ing among workers in the material, arising from the inhalation of phosphorus vapours. Its special characteristic is a peculiar necrosis or death of the bony structure of the lower jaw. Acute phosphorus poisoning is more common. Thosphorus is used for tipping matches, and is also the basis of several vermin destroyers. When swallowed, phosphorus produces a variable amount of irri- tation and disturbance of the alimentary canal. There may be a burning sensation felt in the mouth, throat, and stomach, followed by vomiting. The vomited matters, and also the excreta, may be observed to be luminous in the dark. These symptoms usually subside, and for three or four days the person

appears to have recovered his or her usual health. ‘The liver then enlarges, and this and other structures undergo fatty degeneration ; jaundice supervenes; and the patient dies in a few days in a semi-typhoid condition. Rarely there is recovery. Oil of turpentine is thought to be the best remedy. Most of the organs undergo fatty degeneration. . 7. Vegetable Trritants.—These produce drastic purgative effects.

requently the nature of the illness may be ascertained by the dis- covery of portions of the vegetable substance—recognizable by the microscope—in the matters ejected by the patient. ‘

8. Cantharides.—The administration of CANTHARIDES (¢.v.) is

evo ls Orns

followed by vomiting, purgiug, strangury, or even entire inability to pass the urine. wing-cases of the fly may often be recognized. There is often great excitement of the scxual proclivities. fly, cantharidin, may be extracted from suspected matters by means of chloroform, and the residue left after the evaporation of this blisters the lip or any tender mucous surface to which it is applied.

Jn the ejecta portions of the shining elytra or

The active principle of the

Demulcent remedies, with opiate enemata and injections, afford the best relief by way of treatment.

3. Neurotics.

It is premature, for the present, to attempt a systematic division of this most important class, which embraces poisons so widely different in their actions as opium and strychnine, We at once proceed to details.

1. Prussic or Hydrocyanic Acid.—Hydrocyanic acid is one of the best-known poisons, and a very deadly one. In the pure state it is said to kill with lightning-like rapidity. It ismet with in commerce only in a dilute state. In

Great Britain two kinds of acid are com- monly sold—the pharmacopeeial acid, containing 2 per cent. of anhydrous prussic acid, and Scheele's acid, containing 4 or 5 per cent. Less than a teaspoonful of the 2 per cent. acid has caused death. Given in fatal doses, the symptoms of prussic-acid poisoning set in with great rapidity ; and, in consequence of the readiness with which the poison is absorbed from the stomach and diffused through the circulation,the onset of symptonis is reckoued by seconds rather than by minutes. Occasionally the victim may be able to perform a few voluntary actions before alarming symptoms are developed. There is first a very brief stage of difficult breathing, and slow action of the heart, with a tendency for the organ to stop in the state of dilatation. With widely-dilated pupils of the cye, the patient is then seized with violent irregular convulsive movements. The rhythm of the respiratory movements is disturbed, and the coun- tenance becomes of a bluish cast. The patient now sinks to the ground with complete loss of muscular power; and. the third or asphyxial stage is reached, in which there are slow gasping respira- tions, loss of pulse, and paralysis of motion. Death is frequently pre- ceded by muscular spasms. The fowdroyant character af tine illness, and the speedy death of the patient, coupled with the peculiar odour: of the acid in the breath and atmosphere around the body, seldom leave any doubt as to the nature of the case. The treatment con- sists in inhalation of the fumes of strong ammonia, drinks of warm and cold water alternatcly, friction of the limbs, and artificial respiration. The subcutancous injection of atropine, which acts as a cardiac stimulant, may prove serviceable.

Other soluble cyanides, mare especially cyanide of potassium, a salt largely used in photography and_in the arts, are cqually poisonous with hydrocyanic acid. See Prussic AcrD.

2. Opiwm.—In consequence of the extent to which OrtuM (q.1.), its preparations, and its active alkaloid morphia are used for the relief of pain, poisoning by opium is of frequent occurrence. It is largely used by suicides; and children, being very susceptible to its influ- ence, frequently die from misadventure after administration of anu overdose of the drug. The ordinary preparations of opium are the drug itself, which is the inspissated juice of the Oriental poppy, and the tincture, commonly known as landanum. Opium contaims a variety of more or less active principles, the chief of which is the

alkaloid morphia, which is present in good opium to the extent of about 10 per cent. in combination with meconic acid, which is phy- siologically inactive. Opium is largely used by Eastern nations for smoking, and there is great discrepancy of opinion as to the extent to which opium smoking is deleterious. The preponderance of opinion is in favour of the view that opium smoking is a demoralizing, degrading, and pernicious habit, and that its victims are sufferers both in body and mind from its use.

The first symptom of the administration of a poisonous dose of opium is a state of exaltation—which may not, however, be well- marked—soon passing into a second stage, in which the symp- toms are those of congestion of the brain. The countenance Is suffused and of a bluish cast, known as cyanosis, due to imperfect aeration of the blood; the pupils of the eyes are minutely con- traeted, the skin dry and warm, and the breathing slow, laboured, and becoming stertorous. The patient is apparently unconscious, but may be roused by shaking, or by shouting into the ear. When this has taken place, the breathing becomes more natural, and the skin less cyanosed. If he be left alone there is a specdy relapse into a state of insensibility. If effective treatment be not adopted, a third stage of prostration supervencs, in which there is profound coma, and it may be impossible to aronse the patient. The pupils of the eyes are now contracted to the size of pin-points. Breathimg is slow, shallow, and intermittent. The countenance is at once pallid and cyanosed, the skin bathed in perspiration. The pulse becomes more rapid with increased feebleness, and at length all signs of it are lost, until death supervenes.

The treatment consists in the use of the stomach-pump. Emeties

are nsually inoperative. After this the patient must be kept awake by walking him about, applying cold and warm douches alternately to the chest, shouting into the cars, flicking the hands and feet with damp towels, and the application of the galvanic current. Circulation should be promoted by friction of the limbs and trunk. Strong infusion of coffee, ammonia, and alcoholic stimulants may be freely administered. As a last resort when the

breathing inter- mits, artificial respiration may be performed. The hypodermic injection of full doses of atropine has proved of marked benefit,— atropine and morphia being to a certain extent counter-poisons.

Opium is a drug to which its victims may become habituated by the use of gradually increasing doses; and the practice of opium- cating, as it is termed, is a pernicious one. An atrophied condition of the body usually results. The only remedy is abstinence from the drug.

3. Strychnine and Strychnine-yielding Plants.—The alkaloids strychnine and brucine, as well as all the plants in which they arc found, all act in the same manner, being highly poisonous, and causing death after spasms of a severe character. Strychnine was first extracted from the secds of Strychnos Nua-Vomica in 1819, by Pelletier and Caventou. It exists in larger quantity in other species of the genus Strychnos, and notably in Strychnos Jgnatii. From the bark of Strychnos Nux-Vomica, known as false Angostura bark, another alkaloid, brweine, is also extracted. This bark was at onc time wrongly supposed to be the bark of Brucea anti- dysenterica ; hence the name brucia or brucine. Its effects are similar to those of strychnine, but its physiological activity is uot so great. Many vermin-killers contain strychnine as their active ingredient.

Strychnine, and all] substances containing that alkaloid, produce their effects within a very few minutes—usually within ten or fifteen minutes. ‘The patient complains of stiffuess about the neck, and his aspect exhibits terror. There is an impression of impending calamity or death. Very speedily the head is jerked back, the limbs ex- tended, the back arched (opisthotonos), so that the body may rest on the head and heels only. The mouth is drawn; and the condition

is one known as tetanus. Ina few moments these symptoms pass off, and there is complete relaxation of the spasm. The spasmodic condition speedily returns, and is brought about by the slightest touch or moveinent of the patient. Acccssions and remissions of the tetanic state ensue rapidly till the patient succumbs, usually within half an hour of the administration of the poison. The best treatment is to put, and keep, the patient under the influence of chloroform till time is given for the excretion of the alkaloid, having pre- viously given a full dose of chloral hydrate.

4, Aconite Poisoning.—The ordinary blue rocket, wolfsbane, or monkshood, Aconitum Napellus, and an alkaloid extracted from rh, aconitine, are perhaps the most deadly of known poisons. One- sixteenth of a grain of aconitine has proved fatal toa man. All the preparations of aconite produce a peculiar burning, tingling, and numbness of the parts to which they are applied. When given in large doses they produce violent vomiting, as a rule, more or less paralysis of motion and sensation, and great depression of the heart, usually ending in death from syncope. Intelligence remains unaffected till almost the last. The treatment consists in the hypodermic injection of tincture of foxglove (Digitalis) or its active principle digitalin, which is a counter-poison in its action upon the heart. The root of aconite has been eaten in mistake for that of horse-radish.

5, Belladonna.—The belladonna or deadly nightshade, Atropa Belladonna, contains an alkaloid, atropine, which is largely used by oculists to procure dilatation of the pupils of the eye. The bright scarlet berries of the plant have been eaten by children, who are attracted by their tempting appearance. elladonna produces dilatation of the pupils, rapid pulse, hot dry flushed skin, with an eruption not unlike that of scarlatina, soreness of the throat, with difficulty of swallowing, intense thirst, and gay mirthful delirium. The treatment consists in cvacuation of the poison by means of the

stomach-pump, and the hypodermic injection of morphia as a counter-poison.

4. Gaseous Poisons.

_ The effects of these are varied,—some of them acting as uritants, while others have a specific effect, apparently in consequence of their forming chemical compounds with the | red pigment of the blood, and thus destroying its capa- | bility of acting as a carrier of oxygen.

1. Chlorine and bromine act as powerful irritants. They provoke oon of the glottis when inhaled, and subsequently induce in- |

f ammation of the respiratory mucous membrane, which may prove pily fatal. Inhalation of diluted ammonia vapour is the best remecy,

2. Hydrochloric or muriatic acid gas and hydrofluoric or fluoric acid gas are irritating and destructive to life. The former is more | destructive to vegetable life than even chlorine. They are emitted |

in many processes of manufacture, and especially in the manufac- ture of carbonate of soda from common salt by Le Blane's process, in the salt-glazing of earthenware, and in the manufacture of arti- ficial manures.

3. Sulphurous Acid Gas.—The gas given off by burning sulphur is most suffocating and irritating. Its inhalation, even in a highly oe state, may cause speedy death from spasmodic closure of tlic glottis.

4. Nitrous vapours,.or gaseous oxides of nitrogen (except nitrous oxide), are given off from galvanic batteries excited by nitric acid ; also in the process of etching on copper. They produce, when diluted, little immediate irritation, but are exceedingly dangerous, setting up extensive and fatal inflammation of the lungs.

' a Ammonia gas is highly irritant, but does not often prove atal.

6. Carbonic acid gas is heavier than atmospheric air, is totally irrespirable when pure, and is fatal when present in large quantities in respired air. It is given off from burning fuel, accumulates in pits and wells as choke-damp, and constitutes the deadly after- damp of coal-mines. It is also formed during alcoholic fermen- tation, and hence accumulates in partially filled vats in which fer- mented liquors are stored. When it is breathed in a concentrated state, death isalmost instantaneous. Persons descending into wells foul with this gas sink down powerless, and are usually dead before they can be removed from the vitiated atmosphere. In these cases there is true asphyxia ; but carbonic acid is also a narcotic gas. Persons exposed to an atmosphere partially composed of this gas, but not long enough to produce fatal results, are affected with ster- torous breathings, oppression, flushed face, prominent eyes, swollen tongue, and feeble pulse. The proper treatment is removal from the fon] atmosphere, alternate cold and tepid douches to the chest, friction of the limbs and trunk, and artificial

respiration. When animation is restored the patient should be put to bed and kept quiet, but should be carefully watched in case of relapse.

7. Carbonte oxide gas is given off by burning charcoal and other forms of fuel, mixed with carbonic acid. The poisonous effects of charcoal fumes are perhaps due rather to the more poisonous car- bonic oxide than to the less poisonous carbonic acid. An atmo- sphere containing less than 1 per cent. of carbonic oxide would doubtless be fatal if breathed for many minutes. Carbonic oxide forms with hemoglobin, the red pigment of the blood, a bright scarlet compound. The compound is very stable, and the oxide cannot be displaced by atmospheric oxygen. Hencethe blood after death from the inhalation of carbonic oxide is of a bright arterial hue, which it retains on exposure to air.

8. Coal-gas acts as an asphyxiant and narcotic. The appear- ances met with after death—more especially the fluid state of the blood—are similar to those observed after death from carbonic oxide gas, which is a constituent of coal-gas, and to which the chicf effect of coal-gas may be due.

9. Sulphuretted hydrogen gas is highly poisonous by whatever channel it gains access to the body. In a concentrated form it produces almost instant death from asphyxia. Even in a diluted state it produces colic, nausea, vomiting, and drowsiness. This may pass into insensibility with lividity and feeble respiration. The skin is cold and clammy, or bathed in perspiration. ‘The red blood corpuscles are disintegrated. The treatment consists in re- moval from the contaminated atmosphere, friction to the surface of the body, warmth, and the administration of stimulants. The inha- lation of chlorine gas has been recommended on chemical grounds ; but it must be remembered that chlorine is itself poisonous.

10. Anzsthetics.—Nitrous oxide, or laughing gas, and the gases or vapours of other anzesthctie substances, such as chloroform, pro- duce death by asphyxia, and perhaps otherwise. Obviously, as a rule, medical assistance is at hand. The treatment consists in artificial respiration, and the use of galvanic current.

ll. Vapours of Hydrocarbons.—The volatile vapours of the natural hydrocarbons known as benzoline, petroleum, &c., are poisonous when

inhaled for lengthened periods. (is;*)

POISSON, Srmton Denis (1781-1840) a celebrated French mathematician, was born at Pithiviers in the department of Loiret, on the 21st June 1781. His father, Siméon Poisson, served as a common soldier in the Hanoverian wars; but, disgusted by the ill treatment he received from his patrician officers, he deserted. About the time of the birth of his son Siméon Denis he occupied a small administrative post at Pithiviers, and seems to have been at the head of the local government of the place during the revolutionary period. The infant Poisson was put out to nurse, and concerning his nursing Arago relates the following story, which he had from its hero himself. One day the anxious father went to visit his son, but found that the nurse had gone to the fields. Impatient,

he broke into the cottage, and there saw, with painful astonishment, the object of all his hopes suspended by a small cord to a nail fixed in the wall. This was a precau- tion on the part of the peasant nurse to prevent her charge from perishing under the teeth of the carnivorous and unclean animals that circulated in the house. Poisson, 1n telling the story, added—“ A gymnastic effort carried me incessantly from one side of the vertical to the other; and it was thus, in my tenderest infancy, that I made my pre- lude to those studies on the pendulum that were to occupy so much of my maturer age.” ;

Having survived the perils of infancy, and received the elements of his education (reading and writing) from his father, the question arose what calling he was to follow. It was at first suggested that he should be made a notary ; but the family council, with amusing irony, decided that this profession made too great demands upon the intellect, and surgery was preferred. He was sent to an uncle who exercised this art at Fontainebleau, and forthwith began to take lessons in bleeding and blistering, then the leading branches of a surgeon’s practice. To train him in the former, he was set to prick the veins of cabbage leaves with a lancet, but made little progress; how he sped in the latter he himself relates as follows :—“ Once my uncle sent me, with one of my comrades, M. Vanneau, now established in the colonies, to put a blister on the arm of a child; the next day, when I

presented myself to remove the apparatus, I found the child dead; this event, very common they say, made the most profound impression upon me; and I declared at once that I would never be either physician or surgeon. Nothing could shake my reso- lution, and they sent me back to Pithiviers.” Here accident and the bent of nature solved the problem that had passed the wisdom of the family council. The elder Poisson, being a Government official, received a copy of the Journal de Ul’ Hcole Polytechnique; the son read it, and soon began unaided to solve the problems propounded there from time to time ; and thus his mathematical talent was discovered. He was sent to the Ecole Centrale of Fontainebleau, and was fortunate in having a kind and sympathetic teacher, M. Billy, who, when he speedily found that his pupil was becoming his master, devoted himself to the study of higher mathematics in order to follow and appreciate him, and predicted his future fame by the punning quotation from Lafontaine !—

- Petit Poisson deviendra grand Pourvu que Dieu lui préte vie.”

At the age of seventeen the young provincial, less remarkable for the elegance of his attire than for the pro- fundity of his scientific knowledge, came up to Paris to undergo the entrance examination for the Polytechnic School. He passed first in his year, and immediately began to attract the notice of the professors of the school, who, seeing his obvious genius, excused him from the ordinary drudgery of the curriculum, and left him free to fallow the studies of his predilection. The wisdom of this course was soon proved; for, in 1800, less than two years after his entry, he published two memoirs, one on Bezout’s method of elimination, the other on the number of integrals of an equation of finite differences. The latter of these memoirs was examined by Lacroix and Legendre, who recommended that it should be published in the Recueil des Savants Etrangers, an unparalleled honour for a youth of eighteen. This success at once pro- cured for Poisson an entry into the Parisian scientific society of the day, the like of which for brilliancy has never elsewhere been seen. Its two kings both patronized him. Lagrange, whose lectures on the theory of functions

1 This prediction is sometimes attributed to Laplace.

he attended at the Polytechnic School, early recognized his talent, and became his friend; while Laplace, in whose footsteps Poisson followed, regarded him almost as his son. The rest of his career, till his death on the 25th of April 1840, was almost entirely occupied in the composition and publication of his many works, and in discharging the duties of the numerous educational offices to which he was successively appointed. Immediately after finishing his course at the Polytechnic School he was appointed

‘repetiteur there, an office which he had discharged as au

amateur while still a pupil in the school; for it had been — the custom of his comrades often to resort to his room after an unusually difficult lecture to hear him repeat and explain it. He was made professeur suppléant in 1802, and full professor in succession to Fourier in 1806. In 1808 he became astronomer to the Bureau des Longitudes ; and, when the Faculté des Sciences was instituted in 1809, he was appointed Professeur de la Mécanique Rationelle. He further became member of the Institute in 1812, exa- miner at the military school at St Cyr in 1815, leaving examiner at the Polytechnic in 1816, councillor of the university in 1820, and geometer to the Board of Longitude in succession to Laplace in 1827.

In 1817 he married Mademoiselle Nancy de Bardi, daughter of a French family which had emigrated to Eng- land, and by her he had two sons and two daughters.

Poisson was a simple-minded affectionate man. This is seen in the close relations which he kept up with his old teacher M. Billy, who ardently loved and admired his former pupil, and whose presence at the Institute was a well-known sign that Poisson was to read a paper there. Although he never returned to Pithiviers after his entry into the Polytechnic School, he corresponded constantly with his parents, more especially with his mother ; and he regularly sent copies of his memoirs to his father, who read and re-read with unwearied patience the parts of them within his comprehension. His tastes seem to have been of the simplest description ; he took little exercise, and he had more than a Frenchman’s horror of travelling. Arago

-says that he only travelled once, and that by medical

prescription, disguised under the form of some mission connected with the Polytechnic School, and that, after devoting his savings to the purchase of a beautiful farm im the department of Seine-et-Marne, he never so much as visited it.

It is probable that his simplicity of character had much to do with his passing apparently quite undisturbed through the stormy time in which he lived, a period in which many men of mark lost their heads, and few such escaped without loss of office and fortune. His father, whose early experiences led him to hate aristocrats, bred him in the stern creed of the first republic. Throughout the empire Poisson faithfully adhered to the family prin- ciples, and refused to worship Napoleon. Napoleon, how- ever, never interfered with Poisson's promotion. He said once himself that he never did anything uselessly, cer- tainly never committed a-useless crime; and he was wise enough to see that nothing was to be gained by persecut- ing the harmless academician, whose fame he doubtless regarded like that of the other savants of France as all apanage of his own glory. When the Bourbons were restored, his hatred against Napoleon led him to become 4 Legitimist—a conclusion which says more for the simplicity of his character than for the strength or logic of his political creed.

He was faithful to the Bourbons during the Hundred Days, in fact was with difficulty dissuaded from volunteer- ing to fight in their cause. After the second restoration his fidelity was recognized by his elevation to the dignity

| of baron in 1825; but he never either took out his

diploma or used the title. The revolution of July 1830 threatened him with the loss of all his honours; but this disgrace to the Government of Louis Philippe was adroitly averted by Arago, who, while his " revocation " was being plotted by the council of ministers, procured him an invita- tion to dine at the Palais Royale, where he was openly and effusively received by the citizen king, who " remembered " him. After this, of course, his degradation was impossible; he was left in undisturbed possession of all his well-earned appointments ; and seven years later he was made a peer of France, not for political reasons, but as a representative of French science.

As a teacher of mathematics Poisson is said to have been more than ordinarily successful, as might have been expected from his early promise as a repetiteur at the Polytechnic School. As a scientific worker his activity has rarely if ever been equalled. Notwithstanding his many official duties, he found time to publish more than three hundred works, several of them extensive treatises, and many of them memoirs dealing with the most abstruse branches of pure and applied mathematics. There are.two remarks of his, or perhaps two versious of the same remark, that explain how he accomplished so much: one, “ La vie mest bonne qu’ a deux choses—a faire des mathématiques et a les professer ;” the other, “ La vie c’est le travail.”

A list of Poisson’s works, drawn up by himself, is given at the end of Arago’s biography. A lengthened analysis of them would he out of place here, and all that is possible is a brief mention of the more important. There are few branches of mathematics to which he did not contribute something, but it was in the applica- tion of mathematics to physical subjects that his greatest services to science were performed. Perhaps the most original, and certainly the most permanent in their influence, were his memoirs on the theory of electricity and magnetism, which virtually created a new branch of mathematical physics. They have been already repeatedly referred to in the articles ELecTriciry and MAGNETISM (g.v.). Next (perhaps in the opinion of some first) in importance stand the memoirs on celestial mechanics, in which he proved him- self a worthy successor to Laplace. The most important of these are his memoirs ‘‘ Sur les in¢égalités séculaires des moyens mouve- ments des planetes,’’ “Sur la variation des constantes arbitraircs dans les questions de mécanique,” both published in the Jowrnal of the Polytechnic School, 1809; ‘Sur la libration de la lune,” in Connaiss. d. Temps, 1821, &c.; and ‘‘Sur la mouvement de la terre autour de son centre de gravitd,” in Ifém. d. V Acad., 1827, &e. In the first of these memoirs Poisson discusses the famous question of the stability of the planctary orbits, which had already been settled by Lagrange to the first degree of approximation for the disturbing forces. Poisson showed that the result could be extended to a second approximation, and thus made an important advance in the planetary theory. The memoir is remarkable inasmuch as it roused Lagrange, after an interval of inactivity, to compose in his old age one of the greatest of his memoirs, viz., that ‘‘Sur la théorie

des variations des éléments des planétes, et en particulier des variations des grands axes de leurs orbites.” So highly did he think of Poisson’s memoir that he made a copy of it with his own hand, which was found among his papers after his death. Poisson made important contributions to the theory of attraction. His well-known correction of Laplace’s partial differential equation

or the potential was first published in the Bulletin de la Société Philomatique, 1818. His two most important memoirs on the subject are ‘“Sur l’attraction des sphéroides ” (Connaiss. d. Temps, 1829), and ‘Sur V’attraction d’un cllipsoide homogene (A/ém. d. D Acad., 1835). In coneluding our selection from his physical memou’s we may mention his memoir on the theory of waves (Mém. d. [Acad. , 1825).

In pure mathematics, his most important works were his series of memoirs on definite integrals, and his discussion of Fourier’s Series, which paved the way for the classical researches of Dirichlet and Riemann on the same subject; these are to be found in the Journal of the Polytechnic School from 1813 to 1828, and in the Memoirs of the Academy for 1828. In addition we may also mention his essay on the calculus of variations (Afem. d. I’ Acad., 1833), and his memoirs on the probability of the mcan results of observations (Connaiss. d. Temps, 1827, &c.).

esides his many memoirs Poisson pnblished a number of treatises, most of which were intended to form part of a great work a mathematica] physics, which he did not live to complete. ‘ Bone these may be mentioned his Traité de Mécanique, 2 vols. ee 1811 and 1838, which was long a standard work; Théorie

ouvelle del’ Action Capillaire, 4to, 1881; Théorie Mathématique de

la Chaleur, 4to, 1835; Supplément to the same, 40, 1887; Recherches sur la probabilité des jugements en matiercs criminelles, &c. 4to, 1837, all published at Paris.

Enough has been said to establish Poisson's fertility as a writer on mathematical subjects, and the question naturally suggests itself, What is his rank among the mathematicians of allages? Since his own age was more productive of great mathematicians than any other the world has yet seen, it is natural to compare him with his contemporaries, chief among whom were Lagrange and Laplace. In so doing we see at once that, although we cannot seat him alongside of these mighty sovereigns, yet it is impossible to deny him the nearest rank to them in the temple of mathematical fame. In confirmation of this judgment, we cannot do better than quote one of them —"TI am old," said Lagrange to Poisson one day ; "during my long intervals of sleeplessness I divert myself by making numerical approximations. Keep this one; it may interest you. Huygens was thirteen years older than Newton, I am thirteen years older than Laplace ; D'Alembert was thirty-two years older than Laplace, Laplace is thirty-two years older than you." Arago, who gives this story, justly remarks that no more delicate way could be conceived of intimating to Poisson his admission into the inner circle of the fraternity of mathematical

enlus. (G. cH.)

POITIERS, a town of France, formerly the capital of Poitou, and now the chief town of the department of Vienne, lies 206 miles south-west of Paris on the railway to Bordeaux, at the junction of the Boivre with the Clain (a tributary of the Loire by the Vienne), and occupies the slopes and summit of a plateau which rises 130 feet above the level of the streams by which it is surrounded on three sides. The town is picturesque ; and its narrow, ill-paved, irregular, and deserted streets with their ill- built houses are interesting for certain remains of ancient architecture and the memories of great historical events. Blossac park, named after the intendant of the " gene- rality" of Poitiers (1751-1786), and situated on the south side of the town, and the botanic garden on the north-east, are the two principal promenades. Besides being the see of a bishopric, which comprises the depart- ments of Vienne and Deux-Sevres, Poitiers possesses a court of appeal, national faculties of law, literature, and science, a free faculty of Catholic theology, a school of artiliery, and numerous learned societies, of which the most celebrated is that of the " Antiquaires de l'Ouest" dating from 1834. Though not strictly a commercial or industrial town, it is the

centre from which railways branch out to Tours, Angers, Niort, Angouléme, Limoges, and prospectively to Chateauroux and Nantes. Up till 1857 it contained the ruins of a Roman amphitheatre more extensive than that of Nimes; remains of Roman baths, constructed in the Ist and demolished in the 3d century, were laid bare in 1877 ; and in 1879 a pagan burial place and the tombs of a number of Christian martyrs were discovered on the heights to the south-east—the names of some of the Christians being preserved in paintings and inscriptions. Not far from these tombs is a huge dolmen (the 'Pierre Levée"), 22 feet long, 16 feet broad, and 6 or 7 feet high, around which used to be held the great fair of St Luke.

The cathedral of St Peter, begun in 1162 by Eleanor of Guienne on the ruins of a Roman basilica, and well advanced at the time of her death in 1204, is a building after the Plantagenet or Angevin style. Its length is 308 feet, its width 128, and the keystone of the central vaulted roof is 89 feet above the pavement. There is no apse, and the exterior generally has a heavy appearance. The principal front has unfinished side-towers 105 and 110

feet in height, begun in the 13th century. windows of the choir and the transepts preserve their stained glass of the 12th and 13th centuries; the end window, which is certainly the first in the order of time, contains the figures of Henry II. of England and Eleanor. The choir stalls, carved between 1235 and 1257, are the oldest in France. The church of St Jean (originally a baptistery) near the cathedral is the most ancient Christian monument in the country. The church of St Hilaire was erected at the close of the 4th century over the tomb of the celebrated bishop. At first an unpretending oratory, it was rebuilt on a larger scale by Clovis, and afterwards became, in the 10th, 11th, and 12th centuries, a sumptuous collegiate church, of which the nave was flanked by triple aisles and surmounted by six cupolas. Great damage was done to it in the wars of religion and the French Revolu- tion. The confessional or oratory under the choir contains the relics of St Hilary and a Christian sarcophagus of the 4th century. The church of St Radegonde, a great resort of pilgrims, commemorates the consort of Hlothar I. (¢ 550), and preserves in its crypt, not only the tomb of Radegonde, who founded at

Poitiers the abbey of the Holy Cross, but those of St Agnes and St Disciola. The church is in the Angevin style; the choir is of the 11th, and the nave of the 13th century. Notre Dame la Grande, which dates from the close of the 11th century, and re- presents a collegiate church one or two hundred years older, has a richly sculptured Romanesque facade. The first stone of the church of Moutierneuf (Monasteriwn Novum) was laid in 1077 by William, duke of Aquitaine and count of Poitiers, who is buried within its walls ; and the choir (afterwards in the 13th century modified by the erection of a "lantern") was solemnly consecrated by Urban II. in 1096. Mutilated about 1640 and during the Revolution, the building was partly restored between

1850 and 1860. The tower of St Porchaire, a precious

remnant of 1lth-century architecture, has been restored in the present generation under the auspices of the Anti- quaires de Ouest and the French archeological society. Other churches of interest are the Chapel of the Lycée, that of the Sisters of the St Croix, and the old church of the Jesuits.

Among the secular buildings the first place belongs to the law courts, formerly the palace of the dukes of Aquitaine and counts of Poitiers, and rebuilt between the 12th and the 15th century. The Salle des Pas Perdus forms a fine nave 160 feet long by 56 feet wide, with a vaulted wooden roof. The southern wall is the work of Duke Jean de Berri, brother of Charles V.; above its three vast fireplaces are mullioned windows filled with stained glass. The Maubergeon tower attached to the palace represented the feudal centre of all the lordships of the countship of Poitiers. The prévété or provost's mansion, now occupied by a communal school, has a fine facade of the 15th century. In the new hétel de ville, erected between 1869 and 1876, are museums of archeology, natural history, and painting. The museum of the Anti- quaires de POQuest occupies the chapel and the great hall of the old university, now located in the old hétel de ville; It 1s a valuable collection comprising Roman antiquities, Merovingian sculptures, medals, a fine Renaissance fire. place, &e, The building devoted to the faculties of law, science, and literature (of which the first dates from 1431) also contains the library (35,000 printed volumes and 300 MSS.). The municipal records are very rich in charters of Eleanor of Aquitaine, Philip Augustus, Alphonse of Poitiers, &e. Convents and religious educational

estab- lishments are numerous in the town. The population of Poitiers in 1881 was 34,355.

Poitiers, ealled Limonum at the time of the Roman eonquest,

Most of the | then took the name of its Gallic founders the Pictones or Pictavi.

Christianity was introduced in the 3d century, and the first bishop of Poitiers, from 350 to 367, was St Hinarius (g.v.). Fifty years later the eity had fallen into the hands of the Arian Visigoths, and become one of the principal residenees of their kings. Alarie, one of their number, was defeated by Clovis at Vouillé not far from Poitiers in 507. This was the first oeeasion on whieh the peoples of northern and southern Gaul met in eonflict in the neighbour- hood of the town which was destined to see them so frequently join battle. By his victory in 732 over the Mohammedans at Moussais-la-Bataille in this region, Charles Martel proved the saviour of Christendom. Under the Carlovingians, Poitiers was dependent on the erown and afterwards on the duchy of Aquitaine. Eleanor of Guicune, after her divoree from Louis VII., earried it to her new husband Henry Plantagenet. She frequently re- sided in the city, which she embellished and fortified, and in 1199 entrusted with eommunal rights. Philip Augustus, having counfis- cated the Continental territories of John of England, united Poitou to the Freneh crown ; Louis VIII. made it an apanage for his son Alphonse of Poitiers, who afterwards beeame count of Toulouse. At a plenary court held in 1241 in the great hall of the palais de justicc, Alphonse received the homage of his numerous vassals. After his death in 1271 Poitou reverted to the erown. But, King John having been defcated and made prisoner in the disastrous – battle of Poitiers (fought 4 miles E. of the town on the hillside of Nouaille, 19th September 1356), Poitou was reeognized as an English possession by the treaty of Brétigny (1360). Nine years later it was recovered by Duguesclin ; and it beeame in succession the apanage of Jean de Berri, brother of king Charles VI., and of the dauphin, afterwards Charles VII. It was at Poitiers that the latter was proclaimed king (1428); and he removed thither the parlement and university of Paris, which remained in exile till the English with- drew from the eapital in 1436.

During this interval (1429) Joan of Are was subjected to a forma] inquest by the doctors of the uni- versity. Calvin had numerous converts at Poitiers. Of the violent proceedings which attended the wars of religion the city had its share. In 1569 it was defended by Count du Lude against Coligny, who after an unsuccessful bombardment retired from the siege at the end of seven weeks.

POITOU, one of the old provinces of France, which also formed one of the great military governments of the kingdom, was bounded N. by Brittany, Anjou, and Touraine ; 8. by Angoumois and Aunis; E. by Touraine, Berri, and Marche; and W. by the ocean. It was divided into Lower Poitou, which corresponded to the modern department of La Vendée, and Upper Poitou, now split into the departments of Deux-Sevres and Vienne. The principal towns in Upper Poitou were Poitiers the capital, Mirebeau, ChAtellerault, Richelieu, Loudun, Thouars, Mauléon, Parthenay, Niort, &c.; and in Lower Poitou Fontenai-le-Comté, Maillezais, Lugon, and Roche-sur-Yon. fle d'Yeu or fle-Dieu and Noirmoutier belonged to the province. LEcclesiastically Poitou was distributed among the dioceses of Poitiers, Lugon, and La Rochelle; for the administration of justice, it was attached to the parlement of Paris.

Poitou (Poictou, Pictavia) takes its name from the Pictones or Pictavi, a Gallic nation mentioned by Cesar, Strabo, and Ptolemy, and deseribed by Strabo as separated from the Namnetes on the

north by the Loire. It formed part of the territory known as AQUITANIA (g.v.). For the history see PorTiERs.

POKER, a game at cards,—probably a development of a frusso (played in Italy in the 15th century) A similar but less simple game, called primiera, was also played in Italy in the 16th century, whence under the name of primero it travelled to Spain. La prime is mentioned by Rabelais (16th century); and later the game of prime elaborated was played in France under the name of Vambigu or le meslé. Prime was also played in Eng- land in the 16th century; and later a bastard kind of prime, called post and pair, was much played in the west of England. Gleek had some points of resemblance to these games. The more modern game of brag is only post and pair with variations. Poker (originally played in America) may be

described as developed brag, though in some respects it “throws back” to the parent games post and pair, ’ambigu, and primero.

———

FOK®#R

Any number of persons may play. If a pack of fifty-two cards is played with, from five to seven players makes the best game. Sometimes an écarté pack of thirty-two cards is used, when three or four makes the best game. There are numerous varieties of poker. Draw poker, with fifty- two cards, is the most common.

The dealer being determined (see Laws), he puts up a sum, previously agreed on (called the ante), gene- rally one chip or counter, and deals five cards to each player. Then each in rotation from the dealer’s left looks at his cards, and either throws up his hand (called going out of the game), when he stakes nothing, or chips, 7.e., puts up twice the amount of the ante (say two counters), The dealer finally looks at his hand and either goes out of the game or makes good his ante by putting up another counter.

The dealer then asks those in rotation who have chipped whether they will jill their hands (z.e., whether they will exchange any cards for an equivalent number from the top of the pack) or play the hand dealt.

When the hands are filled, the players to the left of the dealer have the say in rotation. Each player says whether he will (1) go owt of the game (forfeiting what he has already staked); or (2) raise, ve, put up a sum in addition to that already staked. As soon as any one raises, the next in rotation to say must either (1) go out of the game; or (2) see the raise, 2.e., put up an equal amount; or (3) go better, v.e., increase the raise. This continues round and round, each succeeding player being obliged either to see the stake made by the previous one, or to go better, or go out of the game.

Eventually the raising comes to an end, because either every player but one goes out of the game (when all the stakes are taken by the player who remains in, without showing his cards), or the players left in all see the last

raise, no one going better. When all the stakes are thus equal, it becomes a call. The last to stake, who makes his raise equal to that of each of the others, sees them, 7.e., the player to his left has to show his hand, or rather such part of it as he claims to compete with. The next to the left, then similarly shows his hand, if it can beat the one first shown ; if not, he throws up ; and so on all round ; the holder of the best hand takes the pool, and the next dealer deals.

Hands thrown up, either on a refusal to chip to fill, or ou being beaten, and cards discarded when filling, are placed face down in the middle of the table, and no one is allowed to look at them.

It is usual to limit the raise to prevent very high chip- ping. The modern usage is to play table stakes; 7.¢., each player puts up such an amount as he pleases at the com- mencement of each deal, and he cannot be raised more than he has on the table ; but he has the option of making good from his pocket a previous raise which exceeds his table stake.

Value of the Hands.—1, A straight flush (sequence of five cards of the same suit). 2. Fours (four cards of the Same rank, with one other ecard). 3. A full (three cards of the same rank, with a pair). 4. A flush (five cards of the same suit, not in sequence). 5. A straight (sequence of five cards, not all of the same suit). 6. Triplets (three cards of the same rank, with two other cards not a pair). (. Two pairs (with one other card not of the same rank with either pair). 8. One pair (with three other cards of different ranks). 9. Highest card.

_An ace may either begin or end a straight, e.g., ace, king, queen, knave, ten; or, five, four, three, two, ace. By agreement an ace may be made not to rank in se- quence with the two. In no case can ace occupy an inter- mediate position in a straight, and when an écarté pack is

used, ace is not in a straight with the seven. A higher straight flush, or straight, wins of a lower one; the cards rank as at whist, except that ace may be highest or lowest. In combinations other than straights ace is highest. High fours win of low ones; of two fulls the one that contains the highest

triplet wins; of two flushes the one that contains the highest card wins, if equal the next highest, and so on; a straight beats triplets (this is sometimes disputed, but calculation shows a straight is the less frequent hand); of two triplets, the highest wins ; of two two-pair hands, the highest pair wins, if both pairs are equal, the highest card ; of two hands each containing a pair the highest pair wins, if equal the highest remain- ing card wins ; of hands containing none of the above the highest card wins, if equal the next highest, and so on. In case of an absolute tie between the best hands they divide the pool.

Variations in the Mode of Playing.—Sometimes the ante may be raised by any one who chips to fill his hand, when succeeding players must make good the raise, or go better, or go out of the game. This isa mere excuse for higher play.

The player to the dealer's left (the age) is generally allowed to pass the first round after the hands are filled, and to come in again. If he passes he says "my age." Also, sometimes the age puts up the ante instead of the dealer. These useless complications, which only have the effect of making the first player the last player, are better omitted.

The age is sometimes allowed to go blind, 2.¢., to raise the ante before he sees his cards. The next player may double the blind, 2.¢., raise to double what the age staked ; the next may straddle the blind, 2.e., double again ; the next may double the straddle, and so on. Only the age can start a blind, and any one who refuses to double or straddle prevents a further raise ; but he must make good the pre- vious stake or go out. The player to the left of the last straddler has the first say; 2.¢, on looking at his hand and before filling, he declares whether he will make good or go out. Going blind, like raising the ante, is a mere pretext for higher play.

Some players do not consider straights in the game, and omit them. This makes four aces, or four kings and an ace, invincible; and it is open to the objection that if those cards are held the player is backing a certainty.

Hints to Players.—1. The dealer should generally go in, as half his stake is already up. 2. When drawing to fill a hand, it should be done off-hand and without hesita- tion. If in doubt, it is better to go out of the game at once. A

player may loose by going in, but can never loose by going out. 3. In filling to a pair it is generally right to draw three cards, unless drawing to a low pair, with a king or ace in hand. 4. In filling to two pairs, to a four, or to a straight or flush which wants one card, exchange one. It is not advisable to chip to fill to a straight or flush wanting more than one card; a draw to a straight or flush is usually a dear purchase. With a four the hand cannot be improved by drawing; but one card should be taken that the value of the hand may be concealed. 5. In filling to triplets one card only should be drawn, or triplets are at once declared; but, 6. Players should vary their mode of discarding to mystify the opponents, and should be sometimes cautious, some- times bold. 7. A good poker face is essential ; the coun- tenance should not betray the nature of the hand. Talk- ing without regard to facts (poker talk) is allowed, and is considered fair; but the best players put their cards face downwards on the table and leave them there, and neither move nor speak until it is their turn to say. 8. Blufjing (i.e. raising high on poor cards), in hopes of inducing the

other players to go out of the game, may be resorted to occasionally with success; but, as a rule, the player who goes in best will come out best. When about to bluff draw only one card or no cards. 9. A straight or higher hand may be backed freely, but the other players are more likely to go on staking if the raise is by small sums at atime. ‘The only general rule that can be given 1s to change the raising tactics pretty frequently.

Laws of Poker.—These vary considerably. The following are based on “the American Hoyle.” Determination of Deal.—1. One card is given to each player. Lowest has the deal. Ace is lowest. Ties of lowest card have one card each given again. The deal goes in rotation to the left of the last dealer. Shuffling, Cutting, and Dealing.—2. Any one may shufile, the dealer last. 3. The player to the dealer’s right cuts at least four cards. The dealer reunites the packets. If before the deal a card is exposed, there must be a fresh cut. A blank card is usually placed under the pack to prevent exposure of the bottom card. 4. The dealer must deal from the top of the pack, one card to each player in rotation, beginning to his left. 5. If the dealer deals without having the pack cut, or shuffles after it is cut, or misses a hand, or gives too

many or too few cards to any player (but see Law 6), or exposes a card in dealing, he forfeits an ante to the pool and deals again. The forfeit does not raise the other players, and the dealer must still make his first ante good when it comes to his turn, or go out of the game. (Some players merely require a fresh deal without any forfeit, and some require a player to take the card dealt him if only one card is exposed.) Filling the Hands.—6. If a player, after lifting any of his cards, is found to have too many or too few cards, he must go out of the game. (Some players give a hand with only four cards the option of going in.) 7. If, when drawing to fill, the dealer gives a player too many or too few cards, and the player lifts any of them, he must go out of the game. If the error is discovered before lifting, it can be rectified, —in the case of too many cards by withdrawing the superfluous ones, in the case of too few cards by filling from the top of the pack. 8. If, when drawing to fill, a card is exposed, it must be placed at the bottom of the pack, and the top card given instead (sometimes the top card after all the other players are served). 9. Cards thrown out must be placed face downwards in the middle of the table before any are drawn; otherwise the player is liable to the penalty for holding too many cards (Law 6). 10. Any player before taking up his filled hand may ask how many cards the dealer drew. Chipping.— 11. Ifall the players pass without chipping to fill, the dealer takes back his ante, and the deal passes. If, after filling, no one before the dealer raises, the dealer takes the pool. 12. If a player chips with more or less than five cards (but see note to Law 6), he must go out of the game. But, if all the other players have gone out of the game before the discovery is made, there is no penalty. 13. A player who passes or throws up cannot come in again. 14. Players are bound to put up distinctly the amount they chip, separate from their other chips. Aftercomers.—15. The place of an after- comer is determined by dealing a card between every two players. The aftercomer sits where the lowest card was dealt. Incorrect Packs.—16. The deal in which an imperfection of the pack is dis- covered is void. All preceding deals stand good. (H. J.)

POKROVSKAYA SLOBODA, or Poxkrovsk, also KASAKSTADT, a village of the district of Novo-uzen, in the government of Samara, Russia, on the left bank of the Volga, almost opposite Saratoff. In the 18th century it was a small cluster of clay huts occupied by a number of runaway serfs who had gathered round the storehouses erected by the crown for salt brought

from Lake Elton ; but, a body of free settlers having been enticed to the spot in 1747 by large grants of grazing ground, the village rapidly increased, its inhabitants, who numbered 12,776 in 1859, now exceeding 20,000. They support themselves by cattle breeding and agriculture ; and the Pokrovskaya landing place is one of the most important on the Volga, Taaee exports, mostly of wheat, reaching 99,850 ewts. in

POLA, the principal naval harbour and arsenal of the Austrian-Hungarian monarchy, is picturesquely situated at the south extremity of the peninsula of Istria, 55 miles to the south of Trieste. Its safe and commodious harbour is almost completely landlocked, and there is also a good roadstead between its mouth and the Brionian Islands. The harbour is divided into two basins by a chain of three small islands, and the inner basin is subdivided into the

naval and the commercial harbour by the Scoglio Olivi, a larger island connected with the mainland by an aqueduct. The hills enclosing the harbour are defended by forts and batteries. The town proper lies opposite the Scoglio Olivi, round the base of a hill formerly crowned by the Roman capitol and now by a castle of the 17th century. Besides the castle the chief medieval and modern buildings are the cathedral (15th century), the Franciscan convent (13th century), the Government and municipal offices, the huge infantry barracks, and the theatre. To the south- west, along the coast, extends the marine arsenal, a vast and well-planned establishment employing about 2000 workmen and possessing all the requisites for the equip- ment of a large fleet. It contains an interesting naval museum, and is supplemented by the docks and wharfs of the Scoglio Olivi. The artillery laboratory and the powder magazine are on the north bank of the harbour. Behind the arsenal lies the suburb of San Policarpo, almost exclu- sively occupied by the naval population and containing large naval barracks and hospitals. In the middle of it is a pleasant park, with a handsome monument to the emperor Maximilian of Mexico, who had been a rear-

‘ admiral in the Austrian navy. To the north, between

San Policarpo and the town proper, rises the Monte Zarro, surmounted by an observatory and a statue of Admiral Tegetthoff. Pola has no

manufactures outside of its naval stores, but its shipping trade is now considerable, the exports consisting of fish, timber, and quartz sand used in making Venetian glass, and the imports of manufactured and colonial wares. The population has increased from 600 at the close of last century and 5000 in 1857 to 25,175 in 1880, including a garrison of 5000 men. To many people, however, the chief interest of Pola centres in its fine Roman remains. The most extensive of these is the amphitheatre, which is 400 feet long and 320 feet wide, and could accommodate 20,000 spectators. It is remarkable as the only Roman amphitheatre of which the outer walls have been preserved intact; the inte- rior, however, is now completely bare, — though the arrangements for the naumachie, or naval contests, can still be traced. The oldest Roman relic is the fine triumphal arch of the Sergii, erected soon after the battle of Actium ; and of not much later date is the elegant and well-preserved temple of Augustus and Roma. Among the other antiquities are three of the old town-gates and a fragment of a temple of Diana.

The foundation of Pola is usually carried back to the mythic period, and ascribed to the Colchian pursuers of Jason and the Argonauts. In all probability it was a Thracian colony, but its verifiable history begins with its capture by the Romans in 178 B.c. It was destroyed by Augustus on account of its espousal of the cause of Pom- pey, but was rebuilt on the intercession of his daughter Julia, aud received (according to Pliny) the name of Pietas Julia. It seems to have attained its greatest prosperity about the time of the emperor Septimius Severus (193- 211 a.p.), when it was an important war harbour and con- tained 35,000 to 50,000 inhabitants. At a later period Pola became the capital of the margraves of Istria, and was more than once captured and plundered by the Vene- tians, who finally made themselves masters of the penin- sula. In 1379 the Genoese, after defeating the Venetians in a great naval battle off the coast, took and destroyed Pola, which disappears from history for the next four hundred and fifty years. It remained under Venetian supremacy down to 1797, and has been permanently united with Austria since 1815. In 1848 a new era began for Pola in its being selected as the principal naval harbour of Austria, and since then its progress has been constant.

te I.

POLAND

OLAND (the Polish Polska, German Polen, French Pologne) was till towards the end of the 18th century a large and powerful kingdom, extending, with Lithuania, which was incorporated with it, over the basins of the Warta, Vistula, Dwina, Dnieper, and upper Dniester, and having under its dominion, besides the Poles proper and the Baltic Slavs, the Lithuanians, the White Russians, and the Little Russians or Ruthenians.

If Schafarik is correct in seeing the name of the Poles in the Lulanes of the geographer Ptolemy, we should have this Slavonic people mentioned as early as the 2d century after Christ.1 There can be no doubt about the derivation of the name ; the country is one vast plain, and thus the Poles come to mean dwellers of the plain or field (polé). Jordanes has no distinct name for them, although he speaks of Slavs inhabiting the banks of the Vistula. About the 6th or 7th century we find a people called Lekhs settled near that river, and this appears to be the oldest name which we can positively assign to the Poles. These Lekhs are considered by Szajnocha and some of the modern school of historians to have been a Norse tribe who in the 6th cen- tury ruled over the Slavonic peoples from the Baltic to the Carpathians. And, if this were the case, the origin of the Polish kingdom would be traced to the same source as the Russian empire. No satisfactory etymology has been given as yet of the word Lekh or Lech ; we cannot accept Schafarik's attempt to connect it with szlachta, nobility,

as that word is in all probability derived from the German °

geschlecht. Irom the form of the word Lech, Russian Inakh, we can see that the vowel represents a suppressed nasal, and this is further proved by the change which it undergoes in the neighbouring languages ; thus in Lithu- anian we get Lenkas and in Magyar Lengyel. The chronicle of Thomas, archdeacon of Spalato, calls them Lnngones (Bielowski, Mon. Hist. Pol.), the Polish chronicles of Mierzwa and of Vincent Kadlubek Lenchitx, Linchite. The loss of the nasal in the modern Polish form is curious, and contrary to the analogy of the language ; it is Supposed to have disappeared under the influence of Russian pronunciation. In the 13th century Kadlubek

invented the imaginary heros eponymus Lekh, supposed to have been the father of the Poles, and two brothers were found for him, Czech and Rus.? A great similarity has been noticed between these early heroes and others among the Czechs. Thus we may compare Cracus and Krok, Piast and Piemysl. Many of the legendary tales greatly resemble Scandinavian sagas, as indeed much of the early Russian history does which is contained in the chronicle of Nestor. Gradually the name Lekh was superseded by Poliani or Polaki. N estor, the old Russian chronicler, or at least the work which goes under his name, knows both appellations and distinguishes between Poliane Liakhove On the Vistula and Poliane Rousove on the Dnieper. When we first become acquainted with the Poles we find them like the other Slavonic peoples living in a kind of democratic communism, to which we need not assign the patriarchal simplicity and happiness in which some of their chroniclers, ¢.g., Dlugosz, would make us believe. All the early period of Polish history is mixed up with fables. Their first writers Gallus, Kadlubek, Dlugosz, Kromer, and others, who were ecclesiastics and used the Latin 1 There is another reading, Suéanes or Sulones; but the former is Preferred by the best editors. , For a further discussion of this subject, see the indexes to M. egers Nestor (p. 828), and especially the Archiv fiir Slawische

oe (vol. iii. Ueber die Namen fiir Polen und Lechen, by Prof. ehring, and vol. iv, » Polen, Ljachen, Wenden, by Prof. Perwolf).

language as their literary medium and handled it with considerable dexterity, have treated these stories ag genuine history,—just as Holinshed, Milton, Sir Richard Baker, and others did the Arthurian legends. The careful criticism, however, of modern times has relegated them to their proper place, and Lelewel has classified all the period of Polish history from the earliest times to the reign of Mieczystaw I. as belonging to the era of myths. We are hardly likely to believe in the existence of a Duke Lech or a beautiful Princess Wanda, who flourished in the 8th cen- tury, or in Cracus, said to have been the founder of Cracow. All these are obviously only generic and national names individualized. Many of the quaint and striking stories of these princes have done duty in all the legendary history of Europe. It cannot be doubted that poems corresponding to the Russian biéni are imbedded in the writings of these early chroniclers. The good peasant Piast, from whom was derived the celebrated line of kings, reminds

us of the Mikoula Selianinovich of the Russians and the Premysl of the Czechs. Kromer has tricked out the legend of his call to the throne in all the graces of his elegant Latinity. Bielowski, the editor

("Critical Introduction to Polish History") endeavoured to prove that the original Poles dwelt on the banks of the Danube, from which they were driven by the Romans. He also attempts to trace them in the 2d and 3d centuries after Christ. According to the whimsical theory of this author—a man to whom Slavonic history in other respects owes so much—the original habitation of the Poles was by the Lake of Ochrida. The Lechites (Lyncestwz) in the 3d century before Christ were driven by the Celts beyond the Danube, and there the kingdom of Dacia was founded. King Boirebista is Leszek II., Decebalus is Semowit, cc. Lelewel and Bielowski seem to have identified all the Thracian peoples with the Slavs.

All that we are told of the early Slavs shows them to The early We find them at Slavs.

have been a quiet agricultural people. first living in village communities with a tribal govern- ment. Nestor says, "The Poliani lived in separate groups, and each governed his family." Gradually a class of serfs sprung up, whose origin cannot be clearly traced. Répell in his history supposes that they were the descendants of rival tribes who had been conquered. At all events we soon find the following divisions of society among the Poles :—(1) the nobility, selachta, who throughout Polish history constitute the nation properly so-called ; (2) a superior class of peasants who were per- sonally free, but bound to perform certain services (these are always called in the old Polish documents cmetones, or kmetones, Polish kmiecz); and (3) the peasants strictly so called, who were the property of their masters and had no rights. We shall see how there was gradually formed in Poland a proud military aristocracy, which circumscribed the power of the king by the pacta conventa, so that he became a mere puppet in their hands. The nobles had ab- solute power over their serfs, as each separate palatinate had its tribunals. In course of time the kmiect became mere bondsmen. 'The miserable condition of the latter is seen in such books as Connor's Letters on Poland, published at the conclusion of the 17th century. Connor, who was physician to John Sobieski, had good opportunities for

3 The following directions for pronunciation may be useful :— c=ts; cz=ch; sz=sh; z=zh (the French j, as in jour); # has a thick sound which can only be acquired by ear, In nearly every word the accent is on the penult.

of the Monumenta Polonie Views of Historica, in his Wstep Krytyceny do Dziejéw Polski ® Bielowski.

Mieczys- Taw

Bolestaw theGreat.

forming an opinion. Thus the trade of the country fell wholly into the hands of foreigners and Jews. With the reign of Mieczystaw I. (962-992) we begin to have something firmer in our grasp. He became a suitor for the hand of Dabréwka, the daughter of the king of Bohemia. Being a Christian she refused to give her hand to a pagan, and Mieczystaw consented to be baptized in

965. He had been previously conquered by the Germans, who seem to have enforced conversion from all whom they brought into subjection. After this he proceeded to extirpate the worship of idols in as autocratic a manner as Vladimir had employed, when at Kieff Peroun, the god of war, was thrown from his pedestal and ignominiously cast into the Dnieper. In 980 an edict was issued that every Pole who had not already submitted to baptism should immediately undergo it. No opposition was offered to this strange decree, which from its easy adoption would seem to have left but little impression upon the neo- phytes, and probably the chroniclers have some reason for their assertion that Mieczystaw himself subsequently relapsed into gross sins. This complete conversion of the nation appears to have been aided by the labours of St Adalbert, bishop of Prague. Such traces as remained of the early Orthodox creed which had been introduced from Moravia were effaced, although they remained for some time in the sister kingdom of Bohemia, and we find a monastery established by the emperor Charles IV. for Greek monks at Prague. Mieczystaw acknowledged himself to be the feudatory of Otho of Germany ; he also resisted the encroachments of Vladimir of Russia, for already the feud between the two nations was

commencing. He died in 992 universally regretted, as we are told, and was succeeded by his son Bolestaw, surnamed the Great. During his reign Otho III. of Germany paid him a visit, and the Polish prince received him with such magnificence that the emperor elevated his duchy into a kingdom, probably intending that it should always remain a fief of the empire. Dlugosz and Kromer vie with each other in describing the splendour of this meeting; they are, how- ever, far outdone by their predecessor Gallus, who speaks of magnificent military manceuvres prepared by Bolestaw to delight his guest, and of the gorgeous array of the lords and court ladies; “for gold,” he adds, “was at this time held as common as silver and silver as cheap as straw.” Finally, Otho hailed Bolestaw as king, and him- self put the diadem upon his head. At his departure he presented the Polish king with the lance of St Maurice, still to be seen, as Kromer tells us, in the cathedral of Cracow ; and Bolestaw in turn offered as a gift the arm of St Adalbert, the patron saint of Poland. Lelewel treats the whole story of this coronation as a myth, because, as he observes, at that time kings were always crowned by bishops. Bolestaw afterwards defeated the Russian prince, and spent the latter part of his reign in administering justice throughout his kingdom. By the commencement of the 11th century he had absorbed nearly all the western Slavonic states, including Bohemia. He enjoyed among his subjects the epithet of Chrobry, or brave. The Germans, however, in derision of his corpulence, which he endea- voured to lessen by hunting, called him 7rinkbier. To him is due the foundation of the archbishopric of Gniezno (Gnesen), the chief see in Poland.

_Towards the end of his life he sought to aggrandize himself at the expense of Russia. He had previously, in 1013 according to Thietmar, given his daughter in marriage to Sviatopolk, the nephéw of Vladimir. His expedition against Kieff is alluded to by Nestor, but narrated more in detail by Thietmar and Martin Gallus. According to the latter he entered Kieff with the Polovtzi as his auxiliaries, and struck the golden gate with his

AN D

sword. He was succeeded by Mieczystaw his son, who abandoned himself to pleasure and left the kingdom in a disordered state. He is said to have first divided Poland into palatinates, a term which will be explained shortly.

On his death an interregnum ensued and his queen Ryxa, niece of Otho of Germany, held the regency. Owing, however, to the continual feuds between the Slavs and Germans, she was driven out of the kingdom and betook herself to Saxony, whither her son soon followed her, During their absence Poland presented a spectacle of anarchy, the commencement of the long series of miseries

[uisToRy.

of this unhappy country. The serfs are said to have risen —

everywhere and massacred their lords, and even the priests were not spared. Moreover, two foreign wars, with Bohemia on the one hand and Russia on the other, increased their miseries. The pious Kromer chiefly laments- the sacred relics carried off by the ferocious Bohemians which were never restored. ‘To heal the universal wounds it was resolved to send for Kazimiérz (Casimir), the son of Mieczystaw and Ryxa. But it required some time to find him, for he was hidden in Germany, although the story of his having become a monk in the abbey of Cluny in Burgundy has been shown by Répell to be groundless. We shall see afterwards that a Polish king did actually seek in a cloister rest from the turbulence of his subjects. Kazimiérz married Maria the sister of Yaroslav, the prince of Kieff, who was willing to abjure the Greek faith, and embrac- ing the Iatin took the name of Dobrogniewa. By this marriage he became the brother-in-law of Henry I. of France, who had married another sister. This king induced several monks to come from Cluny, and founded two monasteries for them, one near Cracow and the other in Silesia, at this time forming part of the kingdom of Poland. From the earliest period we find the country inundated with foreign ecclesiastics ; and to this cause we may probably trace the long use among the Poles of the Latin language.

told. In an expedition against Iziaslav, the prince of Kieff, he took that city and remained in it some time with his troops. The stay of Bolestaw and his soldiers at Kieff is said to have been attended with the same deleterious effects as befell Hannibal and the Carthaginians at Capua; and the conduct of the Polish ladies during the absence of their lords, unless the chroniclers belie them, cannot be held up as an example to wives. The whole story, how- ever, has a very mythical air.

The most remarkable event, however, of the reign of Bolestaw was the murder of St Stanistaw. In this respect he emulated Henry II. of England; he dared to come into collision with the ecclesiastical power, but he did not sug- gest the assassination of so prominent a person to others; he accomplished the deed with his own hand. His excesses had long drawn upon him the censure of Stanis- taw, who concluded by putting all the churches of Cracow under an interdict. Upon this the king vowed vengeance on his denunciator. The Polish chroniclers tell us that, on hearing that the saint was to celebrate mass in a chapel, he took with him a few determined followers and hurried to the place. He, however, forbore to break in upon the scene till the service was concluded. This being over, he ordered some of his attendants to enter and slay the pre- late. They were restrained, however, by a miracle, for, endeavouring to strike Stanistaw to the earth, they all suddenly fell backward. Again and again Bolestaw urged them on, and the miracle was repeated a third time, until the king rushed in and with one blow clove the skull of the ecclesiastic. Kromer tells us that immediately after the murder the king and his impious satellites slashed the body, separated it into many pieces, and cast

Kazimiérz was succeeded by a second Boles Bolestaw (1058-1101), of whom many curious stories are Hl.

it to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. It was, however, guarded by eagles who kept off the assailants ; and, some monks collecting the remains, they all became mysteriously reunited and were afterwards honourably interred at Cracow. Such a crime was not likely to go unpunished in those days. Gregory VII. (Hildebrand) placed the whole kingdom under an interdict. regarded with hatred by all his subjects, fled into Hungary, but of his end we have no certain inforniation. After the disappearance of Bolestaw, who had taken his son with him, the state remained nearly a year without a sovereign. Finally, being afraid of a Russian or Hungarian invasion, the Poles called to the throne Wtadystaw (Ladislaus), the brother of Bolestaw. Anxious to remove the interdict, he at once despatched ambassadors to the pope ; but, although the-churches were allowed to be reopened, so great was the authority of the occupant of the chair of St Peter,

who refused again to ratify the title of king, that for two hundred yearsfrom this time no Polish ruler could legitimately assume such a dignity, but was obliged to consent to the humbler appellation of duke. Wtadystaw, who was engaged in constant wars with the Russians and the heathen inhabitants of Prussia, died in 1202 at Piock,—as was suspected, of poison. The power of Poland was diminished in his reign, as many provinces were occupied by the Russians. He was succeeded by his son, Bolestaw III., to whom the Poles have affixed the surname of Krzywousty, or the Wry-mouthed. Kromer tells us, “uit autem Boleslaus hic, habitudine corporis satis firma, vegeta, et laborum patiente, colore fusco, statura mediocri, os ei carbunculus morbus ab ineunte adolescentia distorserat, atque inde Criuousti cognomentum habuit.” He married Sbislava, the daughter of Sviatopolk, the prince of Kieff, and was successful in many wars, till, hav- ing eventually been defeated by the Hungarians on the banks of the Dniester, he is said to have died of grief. He seems to have been a redoubtable warrior, and to have distinguished himself in some very hard fighting. His expeditions against the Pomeranians were characterized by much cruelty, for we are told that Gniewomir, one of their chiefs, was beaten to death in the presence of the Polish army. Besides his attack upon the ~~Pomeranians we learn from Gallus that he also marched against the Prussians, whom he utterly defeated, returning with a large spoil of cattle and other booty. His most import~~ ant war, however, was with the German emperor Henry V., the husband of Matilda, the daughter of our Henry I. He had probably become jealous of the rising power of Bolestaw, for the Germans at that time affected to regard Poland as a fief of the empire. The only event of much interest in this war is the gallant defence of Glogau, where the imperialists were driven off, in spite of their furious Onslaught, and were ultimately routed near Breslau. The emperor fied precipitately, and the Poles gave little or no quarter. The field, says Kromer, where the battle took place was full of corpses, and exhibited a sorry and lament- able spectacle. The bodies of the Poles were carefully sought out and interred, but the Germans were unburied and lay as food for dogs and birds. In consequence of this the number of dogs who frequented the spot was so great that the road was rendered difficult to travellers. The place was called the Field of the Dog both by the Poles and Germans, a name which has obtained till the present day. Kromer, however, tells us that some of the German historians claimed the victory for their nation. Whatever the result

may have been, peace was soon after- wards made between the emperor and the duke, a peace which was further consolidated by the marriage of Bolestaw and his son Wtadystaw to members of the imperial family. Before his death the Polish duke, following the same fatal

ro. AN D

Bolestaw,

287

course which in Russia paved the way for its subjugation by the Mongols, parcelled out his territories to his sons Wiadystaw, Bolestaw, Mieczystaw, and Henry. There remained a fifth and youngest son, at that time of tender age, Kazimierz. The duke being asked why he had left him portionless is said to have declared that the four- wheeled chariot must have a driver, thus, as it were, prophesying the future pre-eminence of this child. The prediction, which looks very much like a prophecy after the event, reminds us of William the Conqueror distribut- ing his kingdom to his sons. The quarrels of these princes are very tedious. Wtadystaw was ultimately driven out and Bolestaw became supreme. His subjects gave him the nickname of Kedzierzawy, or the curly. He was drawn into a contest with the German emperor Frederick Barbarossa, who invaded Poland in the year 1158. It would have been impossible for Bolestaw to meet so formidable a foe in the field; he, however, succeeded in forcing him to make peace by continually harassing his army, and laying waste the territory before it. Frederick again attempted to convert Poland into a fief of the German empire, but failed. Bolestaw signed a peace by which he consented to give Silesia to his brother Wladystaw, and the Poles were to furnish three hundred spearmen to assist the emperor Frederick against Milan. An expedition which he undertook against the Prussians in 1167 was unsuccessful ; in consequence, as Kromer assures us, of treachery, the Poles became entangled in the marshes of the country and were cut to pieces.

unpopular that he was expelled from the country in 1177. The crown, therefore, according to the prophecy, devolved upon Kazimierz, the youngest son of Bolestaw Krzywousty. During his reign many judicious laws were passed in Poland ; among other improvements he abolished the

evil custom of purveyance. His reign was tranquil, and by summoning a council of the bishops and nobles at Leczyca he may be said to have instituted the Polish senate, at all events to have laid the foundations of it. At this time the third crusade was preached in Poland, and the order of the Cistercians was introduced into the country. We shall pass rapidly over the reigns of Leszek V. (the White), Wiadystaw III, and another Bolestaw. Conrad, duke of Masovia and brother of Leszek, introduced the order of Teutonic knights into the Polish territories on the Baltic, from whom the Prussian monarchy, one of the great enemies of the republic, was afterwards to develop itself.

In the reign of Bolestaw V. (1227-1279) the Mongols Bolestaw made an incursion into Poland, but were subsequently V.

diverted into Hungary, having gained a victory at Lig- nica (Liegnitz) in Silesia in 1241. They carried off great quantities of booty. It is said that on this occasion nine sacks were filled with the ears of the slain. During their stay Bolestaw, like Ivan the Terrible at a later period, remained cloistered in a monastery Lelewel dwells pathetically upon the many evils suffered by Poland during the long reign of this prince, and says he was an unjust judge, a soldier who had aversion to fighting, and a sovereign who neglected the government. At this time also commenced the introduction of Germans into the country in such numbers as to threaten to denationalize it. The trade was almost entirely in their hands, and instead of being governed by Polish laws they enjoyed the benefit of the Jus Magdeburgicum. The wide influence of these foreigners is shown by the many words of German origin to be found in the Polish language.

An unfortunate and uninteresting prince, Leszek the Black, succeeded, but the dignity of the house of Piast was fully restored when Przemystaw, without condescending to solicit the title of sovereign from the hands of the pope,

On his death Bolestaw Mieczystaw was succeeded by his brother Mieczystaw, who was so III.

Casimir III.

received the crown from his nobles and clergy at Gniezno |

(Gnesen). Thus did Poland again become a kingdom. This unfortunate prince, however, was afterwards murdered by the margrave of Brandenburg at Rogozno (1295). The reign of Wactaw (Wenceslaus) (1 300-5) was not of great importance. He united the crowns of Poland and Bohemia, but soon became unpopular on account of his preference of his Bohemian subjects. Shortly after his election he left the country, and, confiding the control of Poland to the Bohemian garrisons, retreated with his wife to Prague, having been invited to take the crown of Hungary, which he soon abandoned to his son. His death in the year 1305 was accompanied by suspicious circumstances which rendered it probable that it had been brought about by poison. With him expired the race of the holy peasant Pfemysl, which had ruled Bohemia accord- ing to the ancient chronicles for nearly six hundred years. The relations of the latter country to the German empire were now to become much closer. Wtadystaw Loketiek, who succeeded Wactaw, was constantly engaged in wars with the Teutonic knights. In three expeditions against them he allowed his troops to commit great excesses. A full account of them may be found in Kromer, who has given us a florid speech said to have been uttered by Wtadystaw before one of the battles. Several heretics at this time made their appearance in Poland, advocating among other things communistic doctrines. They were severely repressed, and from this time dates the establish- ment of the Inquisition in the country which lasted till the days of Sigismund I. About 1312 Cracow appears to have been made the capital of the kingdom, and continued so till the reign of Sigismund ITI.

Wtadystaw was succeeded by his son Kazimiérz (Casimir) IIL, justly surnamed the Great, whose reign was a golden period for Poland. The material prosperity of the country increased very much at this time. Commerce was active ; the Russians supplied the inhabitants with furs ; the south- ern parts of Europe sent wines, carpets, silks, cotton, ce. The principal towns of Poland, Dantzic and Cracow, to assist the development of their commerce, joined the Hanseatic league. The towns on the Vistula now began to increase in number and importance, and we first hear of Warsaw, which, however, was not made the capital of the kingdom till the

reign of Sigismund III. In 1364 Kazimiérz laid the foundation of the university of Cracow, but it was reserved for Queen Jadwiga to carry out his plans. One of the most important events of his reign was the pass- ing of the statute of Wislica (1347). In this legal docu- ment the palatines and castellans are mentioned, and the authority possessed by them is carefully defined. It may be well to enumerate here some of the chief functionaries of the republic. The duty of a palatine was to lead the troops of his palatinate on any military expedition, and to preside in the little diets or assemblies of the nobility of his province. Immediately after the palatines came the castellans, who, like the former, were all senators. They were lieutenants of the palatines in time of war, leading the nobility of their jurisdiction into the field, under the command of the palatines. Both the palatines and castellans held judicial tribunals in their respective provinces. The nuntii (posty) were the deputies returned by the various districts of the palatinates. There were sixteen ecclesiastical senators, including the primate (the archbishop of Gniezno) and the archbishop of Lemberg. They all sat in one house. The starostas, employed in collecting the revenue and other functions, had no seat in the house. There are many things in the statute of Wislica favourable to the peasant ; thus the power of life and death over him, which his master had previously enjoyed, was abolished. The peasant was not glebe ascriptus, and if ill-

treated by one lord could move to the estate of another. The inhabitants of the towns, foreign and chiefly German artisans were governed by the Jus Magdeburgicum ;, but appeals to Magdeburg itself were prohibited ; for this purpose a Teutonic tribunal was established at Cracow, consisting of a judge properly acquainted with foreign law, and of seven citizens nominated by the starosta, Kromer, in his Polonia, says, “ Legum scriptarum nullus fuit usus apud Polonos vetustioribus temporibus; nec ulle extant antiquiores iis quas Cazimirus magnus rex condidit.” A national dict was now being formed. It consisted of the upper clergy and the nobles, but the in- ferior clergy and the citizens-seem sometimes to have been admitted. Gradually questions of peace and war were introduced and even the election of kings,

the principle of departing from the hereditary line being admitted—a con- cession afterwards attended with great evils to Poland. The improvements of Kazimiérz were not confined to law- making ; he fortified the chief towns of his kingdom, and built many of their most handsome edifices. He also intro- duced many artisans from Germany. By his marriage with his first wife Anna Aldona of Lithuania, he had only a daughter. He therefore convoked a diet at Cracow on the 8th May 1339, in which he proposed as his successor his nephew Louis of Hungary, the son of his sister. This was to concede to the diet a very important privilege, as the throne became virtually elective. The nobles were not slow in availing themselves of the concession which had been made to them. Before they allowed Louis to succeed they exacted some very important terms from him which became the foundation of the celebrated pacta conventa. The year after the appointment of a successor his wife dicd. Accord- ing to Kromer she was passionately fond of music, and took musicians with her wherever she travelled. The wars of Kazimiérz against the hereditary cnemies of the country, the Russians, Lithuanians, and Mongols, were successful. His private life was stained with licentious- ness, but his reign marks a distinct epoch in the political and. legislative development of the country. With him the glory of Poland begins, and he is well worthy of the glowing eulogy of the national historian Dlugosz. We cannot wonder also that the Poles dwell with pleasure upon the splendour of the court of Kazimiérz, but he certainly squandered the royal treasures too freely. We are told that at one time he entertained at Cracow the emperor of Ger- many and the kings of Denmark, Hungary, and Cyprus. His death was occasioned by a fall from his horse while hunting near Cracow on the 5th November 1370, and with

him expired the line of the Piasts. Casimir was succceded, Louis.

as had been arranged, by Louis of Hungary, who held the crown for twelve years only, and of that period spent but a short time in the country. Louis showed too great a fondness for his own subjects ; he had also the misfortune to be unacquainted with the Polish language. After his

death his second daughter Jadwiga was elected queen, but Jadwigt

she was to accept as husband any prince whom the diet might propose to her. Her election is declared by Kromer to have been due to the eloquence

of one Jan Tenczyn (a member of a celebrated Polish family), whose speech, or an imaginary reproduction of it, is given at great length in very classical Latinity. Jadwiga is said to have been a woman of great beauty and worth. As a matter of state policy she was induced to marry Jagielto, the prince of Lithuania, a man of savage manners; but Lithuania was thus annexed to Poland, with which it remained joined ever afterwards,—a more complete federation having taken place at Lublin in the year 1569. Jagielto was a pagan, but he offered to renounce his creed and to introduce the Christian faith into his dominions ; although not educated in that religion he was born of a Christian mother, and its

doctrines were not entirely strange to him. The prin- eipality of Lithuania at that time stretched from the Baltic to the Black Sea, and eastwards to within a short distance of Moscow. Its religion was Greek Church, and – its official language White Russian. The Lithuanian tongue, so interesting to the philologist, seems never to have been anything more than a peasants' language, and no official documents whatever have come down to us in it. This was not the first marriage between the sovereigns of the two countries, as the first wife of Casimir the Great, Anna Aldona, had been a daughter of Gedymin, a Lithu- anian prince. Originally Jadwiga felt a repugnance to the marriage with Jagielto on account of the coarse and repul- sive manners of the barbarian, and also because she had previously plighted herself to the archduke William of Austria. The matter was referred to her mother Elizabeth of Hungary, who expressed herself favourable to the marriage. The archduke, however, did not abandon his hopes without a struggle ; he made his appearance with a splendid retinue at Cracow, but eventually retired on finding that the prosecution of his suit would lead to no favourable result, The new candidate arrived at the metropolis after him, and Jadwiga accepted his proposals. In 1386 they were married, and from that year we may date the com- mencement of the dynasty of the Jagieltos in Poland, which lasted for nearly two centuries, terminating in 1572,—indeed, we may say nearly a century longer, omit- ting the short and brilliant period of Batory (1576-1586), for Sigismund ITI. was the son of Catherine daughter of Sigismund IT., and Wtadystaw IV. and John Casimir were his sons; after the death of the latter the throne became entirely

elective. The new sovereign. was baptized by the name of Wtadystaw. Having been converted himself, he forced his subjects to be converted by the simple process which seems to have prevailed over all Slavonic countries. Wiadystaw is said to have assisted in these pious labours with persuasion as well as command, and by these means Lithuania, which had remained heathen longer than any other part of Europe, was finally Christianized. We are told, however, by travellers of heathen customs remaining long afterwards. Although owing so much to his consort, the king seems to have treated her with jealousy and suspicion. On his impugning her chastity, she insisted on being confronted with her calumniators. The investigation resulted in Jadwiga's triumphant acquittal ; and we are told by Dlugosz that her accuser was compelled in the singular fashion of the country to prostrate himself under a table and declare that he had lied like a dog, and at the same time to imitate the barking of that animal. We are further informed that this punishment for defamation continued in force in Poland until the close of the 18th century. 'The nobles wrested several important privileges from Wtadystaw ; and from this time we can trace step by step the rise of that fierce oligarchy which brought So much trouble upon the unfortunate kingdom. They secured for themselves exemption from all contributions when called to serve beyond the frontiers, and an allow- ance of five marks for every horseman ; they also procured the exclusion of members of the royal family from all the higher offices of the state, reserving these for themselves. In the reign of Wtadystaw many expeditions were under- taken against those inhabitants of Lithuania who preferred to remain pagans. In 1410 also occurred the great battle of Griinwald near Tanneberg in Prussia, in which the Teutonic knights were completely defeated and Ulrich von Jungingen, the grand master, killed. Wiadystaw died in 1434, and was succeeded by his son of the same name. His queen Jadwiga had died in 1399; she appears to lave been greatly beloved by the Poles, and was canonized

after death,—miracles, it is said, being wrought at her |

PO 4A N D

_ senate.

intercession. The consolidation of Lithuania with Poland was destined to be a much more tedious and protracted matter than its somewhat violent union. Great as may have been the grief of Wtadystaw at the death of Jad- wiga, it did not prevent him from contracting three subse- quent marriages,—the third wife being Sophia, a princess of Kieff.

The younger Wtadystaw was able soon after his acces- sion to add (by election) both Bohemia and Hungary to his dominions. He then conimenced an expedition against the Turks, who under their sultan Amurath IT. were pressing the siege of Belgrade, having already annihilated the ill- starred Lazar and his army at the battle of Kossovo in 1389. At first Wtadystaw was everywhere successful, and had instilled such terror into the Turks that Amurath proposed a truce for ten years and offered to cede all his conquests except Bulgaria. The conditions, having been accepted, were ratified by mutual pledges; unfortunately Wtadystaw was induced by Cardinal Cesarini to recommence the war and violate his oaths. The sultan on' hearing of this perjury at once prepared for battle at. the head of a for-

midable army. The encounter took place at Varna, in Battle of After performing Varna. prodigies of valour, Wtadystaw was defeated and slain, 1444.

the present principality of Bulgaria.

Hardly a fifth part of the Polish army escaped from the battle, and of these many perished in the swamps of the Dobrudja. This melancholy engagement, which formed, as the Polish chroniclers tell us, the subject of so many lays—whereof it is a great pity that none have come down to us—is fully described by Kromer (p. 327-8), who adds many omens and pious reflexions. He dwells with delight upon the conspiracy of twelve noble captives, who would have murdered Amurath if their plot had not been re- vealed by a Bulgarian, whereupon they committed suicide: "Tn necem ejus conjurarunt, peregissentque facinus prie- clarum et omnibus seculis memorabile nisi in ipso articulo a Bulgaro, quem unum consilii socium adhibuerant, proditi essent." There is also another curious account in the Memoirs of a Janissary, an early Polish work which will be further described in the section devoted to literature. The memory of the unhappy young prince, who was only in his twenty-first year, was long cherished

amongst his countrymen, although, as Kromer tells us, during his short reign he almost drained the treasury and was so busied with the Turkish war that he had but little time to attend to the wants of his Polish subjects. The votaries of Mohammed were now beginning to make themselves a great name in Europe, and were already marching trium- phant over the ruins of the effete Eastern empire. The imperial city itself was soon to fall, and the crescent to be placed upon the domes of Saint Sophia.

After a brief interregnum Kazimiérz, brother of the deceased king, was chosen to succeed him; he had previously been grand-duke of Lithuania. In this reign the Poles carried on successful wars with the Teutonic knights, which resulted in a peace, by which western Prussia, including Pomerania and the cities Dantzic, Thorn, and others, were to belong to Kazimiérz, while eastern Prussia was left to the knights, who were, however, to hold it as a fief of the crown, and each subsequent grand master was to be the vassal (hotdowmk) of the Polish king and Permanent encroachments were made, however, upon the dominions of the “ Republic” (Jzeczpospolita) by Ivan ‘IIT., who reannexed to the Russian crown Novy- gorod, which had been incorporated by the Lithuanians ; he also appropriated a considerable portion of White Russia. The great Muscovite empire was now just becom- ing welded into a compact whole ; with Ivan III. was to commence the era of consolidation, with Ivan IV. that of absolutism. In this reign the nobles first elected nuntii

or deputies (posty) to attend at the diet, when they them- selves were unable to be present in person. They also passed some mischievous laws, aggravating the bondage of the miserable serfs. Previously it was possible for a peasant who had been ill-treated to fly from his lord; now it was enacted that he must be surrendered upon demand, and whoever harboured him incurred severe penalties. The researches of recent Polish historiogra-

phers have shown the importance of the reign of this monarch, who may be said to have consolidated the Polish kingdom ; from his time the influence of the diet began. The statute of Nieszawa in 1454 has been called as important in Polish law as Magna Charta in English ; it is the great charter of the rights and privileges of the Polish nobility.

Kazimiérz was succeeded by his son John I., surnamed Albert (in Polish, Jan Olbracht), a feeble prince, most of whose wars were unsuccessful. He led an expedition against Stephen the hospodar of Wallachia, which resulted in acomplete defeat. In this reign, at one of the diets (at Piotrkow in 1496,—for, as was the case with the parlia- ments anciently in England, they were held at various places), the nobles decreed that henceforth no burgher or

peasant should aspire to any of the higher offices in the

church ; all such appointments they reserved to themselves. Thus they constituted their clergy a mere aristocratic caste, and imitated the prince-bishops and other spiritual potentates of the Germans. The peasantry were now ob- liged to bring all their cases before tribunals presided over by their own masters, where they were likely at best to get but a scant measure of justice. Finally, this memorable diet still further limited the power of the king by enacting that none of their sovereigns should in future declare war without their permission. Short as was the reign of John Albert, it saw him involved in many disputes with his nobility. An Italian refugee, Buonacorsi, who had been his tutor, gave him many suggestions with a view to limit the power of the nobility. About the same time, in 1497, some nobles were killed in an unfortunate expedition in Bukowina, and a report was spread that this disaster had been caused by the king himself through the bad counsels of Buonacorsi. In this reign also laws were passed in the diets further limiting the power of the burghers and the peasantry, who were now forbidden to possess any landed property. John Albert was succeeded by his brother Alexander, an utterly insignificant king; in his reign, however, we trace the first germ of the detestable liberum veto, which ruined Poland. In a diet held at Radom it was settled that the decision of the deputies was not to depend upon the majority, but must imply unanimity of suffrages. Ata diet in 1652, as we shall afterwards see, it occurred for the first time that a single nuntius annulled by his /eberwm veto the decisions of the whole

body present and broke up the assembly. By this absurd custom an element of confusion and disintegration was introduced into all the meetings ; it was possible to hire a venal nuntius, for the majority of the Polish nobles seem to have had their price ; and as soon as such a man appeared, however important the subjects to be debated might be, he could put an end to all further discussion. The lord high treasurer had the complete control of public finance; he was appointed by the king, but could not be removed. According to the strict letter of the constitution, he must give in his accounts to the diet, but he might easily evade doing so. As the diets only lasted six weeks he might bring them in too late, or if the scrutiny became somewhat tiresome he would probably be able to find a convenient nuntius who would veto the whole proceedings! The story told by Connor of a certain Count Morsztyn, whom we shall find afterwards

AN D

mentioned among Polish authors, is certainly a very pain- ful one. He says —‘I may here give an account of a passage that happened when Count Morsztyn was great treasurer of Poland, who, having more regard to his own private interest than the public benefit, sent all the riches of the treasury into France, when, fearing that the diet would soon think fit to call him to account, he retired privately with all his effects out of the kingdom and went to settle in France, where he purchased the whole county of Chateau-Villain, which is worth above one hundred thousand livres a year.” Such was the corrupt character of the Polish parliament. Other details are given of an equally painful description? We are told that these meetings rarely happened without bloodshed. A serious fracas occurred among the turbulent nobles—who them- selves, while dictating laws, embodied every principle ‘of anarchy—when Sigismund III. was elected. Blood flowed in torrents, and the booths erected for the accommodation of the senators were burnt. At the election of King Michael balls from pistols flew about the tents of the senators, and nuntii were actually killed. Even worse scenes occurred at the election of Augustus II, as will be shown subsequently. In the reign of Alexander we find an instance where a few deputies from the towns were admitted, but their presence was only invited on rare occasions, reminding us how Ivan IV. now and then summoned the Russian citizens to his despotic dowma. “He was of a middle stature,” says Connor, “ had a

long visage and black hair, was very strong built but exceeding dull-witted, and consequently but a little talker. He exceeded all his brothers in generosity, and was wont to delight much in musicians and such trifling artists. Nevertheless, this his liberality was generally esteemed but prodigality, insomuch that some were so bold as to say that he died in time, or else both Poland and Lithuania might have been lavished away. To prevent the like pernicious generosity for the future, the diet made a law, calling it Statutwm Alecandrinum, by which they revoked all this king's profuse gifts." In the reign of this sovereign the former statutes of Wislica, Warta, Nieszawa, and many others were confirmed and published in a single

volume under the superintendence of the chancellor Sigis

Laski. The feeble Alexander was succeeded by his 2

prother Sigismund (in Polish, Zygmunt), another son of Kazimierz. Sigismund was engaged in constant wars with Basil, the czar of Russia; his court was also filled with factions fomented by his wife Bona Sforza, the daughter of the duke of Milan, a woman thoroughly hated in her adopted country, on whom the Poles made the following epigram—

Si parcunt Parce, si luci lumine lucent,

Si bellum bellum, tum bona Bona fuit. When she left the country in the reign of her son Sigismund II., she carried large sums of money with her to Italy.

In this reign the order of Teutonic Knights embraced the doctrines of Luther; their dominions were already a fief of the Polish kingdom. Gradually this small prin- cipality was to absorb the Slavonic elements which sur- rounded it, and to rise triumphant over the ruins of Poland. The doctrines of the Reformation were now becoming widely spread over Europe, and the element of religious animosity was largely infused into this land of perpetual anarchy and tumults. Sigismund, however, was a man of remarkable ability, and under his rule the country flourished. He survived to

the age of eighty-two, and his memory is still cherished with affection by the Poles. His broad heavy physiognomy may be seen accurately represented in the old editions of Kromer, who dwells

1 See Letters concerning the Present State of Poland, 1778, p. 87.

2 Ibid., p. 27.

much upon his merits. In 1538 occurred the first rokosz, as it is termed in Polish, or rebellion of the nobility against the king. The affairs of Wallachia caused Sigis- mund to undertake a military expedition. Accordingly he

Polish republic was called. One hundred and fifty thousand nobles assembled at Lemberg, but instead of marching to the war they laid their complaints before the king and refused to serve, and the old man was obliged to put them off with promises. The Lithuanians had not yet become reconciled to their union with Poland, even

taking advantage of this feeling, attempted to restore its former independence to the country. Sigismund, however, succeeded in defeating Glinski, who fled to Russia. He then persuaded the grand-duke to invade Lithuania, and assisted him in getting possession of Smolensk-in 1514. Sigismund made a treaty with the grand-duke, but he did not succeed in getting back Smolensk. In 1526, by the

height of their power. This peace guaranteed to Poland

the free navigation of the Black Sea, with the sovereignty of | Moldavia, and prevented the irruption of the Mongols into | Podolia, where they were in the habit of committing great | excesses, as the Little-Russian national ballads pathetically |

tell us. The reign of Sigismund was a period of great this time culminated. It seems a rule that the great men of a country are produced at periods of national pro- Sperity, so we now find Copernicus flourishing, the one man of genius produced by Poland whose glory has re- sounded throughout the

world. In 1529 Sigismund pub- lished his code of laws for Lithuania, which was issued in the White-Russian language, and forms one of the most important monuments of Polish law.

He was succeeded by his son Sigismund II. (1548-72), otherwise called Sigismund Augustus, but this prince was not elected till a very stormy debate had ensued as to whether he should repudiate his wife or not. He had married, as a widower (his first wife having been Elizabeth, daughter of Ferdinand of Austria), a fair widow of the house of Radziwitt one of the most illustrious of the families of Lithuania. The nobles, however, who already treated their sovereign as a chief magistrate and nothing more, and had begun to control all his movements, required at the diet of Piotrkow that the marriage should be annulled, merely on the grounds that the country would gain more by his alliance with the daughter of a foreign potentate. But Sigismund, by sowing discord in the tanks of his opponents —proposing among other things to destroy pluralities in church and state— contrived to carry his point. His wife was crowned in 1550, but died

within Six months after, not without suspicions of having | been poisoned by her mother-in-law. She is said to have |

made herself universally beloved during the short period in which the Poles had beheld her as queen. In three years' time Sigismund married a third wife, the sister of the first, and widow of Francis Gonzaga, duke of Mantua. During this reign the quarrels between Protestants and Romanists raged fiercely in Poland, and the latter were very severe in their persecutions. A priest was burnt to death for administering the sacrament in both kinds, and a lady suffered the same terrible fate for denying the real presence. Many of the nobles were infected with the new teaching, but Sigismund was disingenuous and _ inconsist- ent in his conduct. He is himself supposed to have been inclined to the doctrines of the Reformation ; he certainly permitted Calvin to dedicate to him a commentary on

POLAND

| then used there was to be universal toleration. after so long a tiie, and one of their chief men, Glinski, |

| one of the epistles of Paul, and Luther an edition of his

German Bible. Finally, realizing that the majority of his subjects were Catholics, he abandoned a faith to which

he had perhaps given but a half-hearted adherence, and appealed to the rzeczpospolita, or commonwealth, as the |

allowed the bishops to suppress with severity all promulga- tion of the new doctrines.

The religious question was keenly debated in a diet held at Wola near Warsaw the year after the death of Sigis- mund. It was resolved not to allow the sword to settle any religious differences. According to the language We shall soon see how little this was carried out. We find from it that the Polish peers were supposed to be masters of the spiritual as well as the material condition of their serfs, for it was expressly stated that their power over them was to be unlimited, “tam in szcularibus quam in spiritualibus.”

In his wars with Ivan the Terrible, in which the subject of quarrel was the Baltic provinces, Sigismund was not very

fortunate ; he was not able to prevent the Russians from death of the last of the dukes of Masowsze (Masovia), this —

duchy was reunited to the crown of Poland. In 1533. Sigismund concluded a treaty with the Turks, then at the |

acquiring the palatinate of Polotsk, nor could he sub- sequently hinder the Swedes from making themselves masters of Livonia. He died in 1572, leaving no issue by his three wives ; and with him became extinct the race of the Jagieltos, the second great family which had ruled over Poland. His reign was very favourable to the develop- ment of Polish literature. Then, too, the laws were first authoritatively promulgated in the native language, which

_ was spoken at court, although Latin continued to be ex- peace for Poland, and we may truly say that its glory at.

tensively employed. During the reign of Sigismund Augustus, Poland reached the height of outward prosperity. It included Lithuania and western Prussia, and by the ad- dition of Masovia and Livonia extended its limits from the Baltic to the Black Sea, and almost from the Oder to the Don. The seeds of disintegration, however, had long been sown; since the marriage of Jadwiga with Wtadystaw Jagielto the crown of Poland had been more or less elective, although it continued in the same family. One important

event which marked this reign must not be forgotten ; in Diet of By this a Lublin.

1569 took place the celebrated diet of Lublin. close union was effected between Poland and Lithuania, which up to this time had been ill united, and indeed there were continual jealousies breaking out during the exist- ence of Poland as a nation—two great points being the difference of religion and language. Even the union of Lublin was not effected without considerable resistance. The following were its conditions :—Lithuania gives Pod-

_lasie to Poland ; Livonia, under the title of duchy, belongs

equally to the two states; Volhynia and the duchy of Kieff—that is to say, the Ukraine—are incorporated with Poland ; the kingdom of Poland and the grand-duchy of Lithuania are to form a single indivisible republic, and are to have a single head, elected by their common votes; the senate is to be composed of nobles of both nationali- ties. Warsaw was fixed upon as the seat of the diet, since, being part of Masovia (Masowsze), it was, strictly speaking, neither Polish nor Lithuanian. It afterwards became the regular capital of the country in the reign of Sigismund III. ; as we have seen, the first two capitals of Poland were Gniezno (Gnesen) and Cracow. Warsaw is of comparatively late origin. It is said to have been founded by Conrad, the duke of Masovia, in 1269. The old dukes of Masovia resided at Czersk near Warsaw, of which some of the ruins might be seen one hundred and fifty years ago (C. H. Erndtel, Warsavia physice illustrata, Dresden, 1730). The city is most advantageously situated, and with a better railway system and

fewer fiscal restric- tions would be one of the greatest emporiums in Europe. An interregnum now occurred on the failure of the line of the Jagieltos, and the throne was publicly offered for competition. Four candidates appeared :—Ernest, arch-

Henry.

Pacta conventa,

duke of Austria; Henry of Valois, duke of Anjou, brother of the French king ; a Swedish prince ; and finally Ivan the Terrible of Russia. ; between the first two; the Swedish alliance was despised as likely to bring with it no solid advantage ; the czar was hated both as coming from a race which had ever been hostile to Poland, and also on account of his detestable cruelties, which were well known throughout Europe. The political importance of France and the astute diplomacy of Montluc, the ambassador from that country, caused the decision to be given in favour of the French candidate. But, just as his name was brought forward as their prob- able king, the Poles, many of whom, we must remember, had embraced the Reformed doctrines, were startled by the news of the massacre of St Bartholomew (August 24, 1572). From the awkward dilemma in which he was placed by his complicity in this act, Henry endeavoured to escape by a falschood,—impudently denying at first that anything of the sort had happened. Finding, however, but little credence given to his assertions, he attempted to explain away the affair and to lower the number of its victims, which he reduced to fifty, alleging that they liad been really executed for a conspiracy. The Polish ambassadors duly made their appearance in Paris, show- ing their gay equipages, quaint and semi-Asiatic ; their bows and arrows and shaven crowns with a single tuft of hair greatly amused the inquisitive French. Loose flowing robes, high boots, and a sword resembling a scimitar completed the tout ensemble of a Polish noble- man.

Readers of French history must be well acquainted with the character of this duke of Anjou, one of the most de- testable of the house of Valois, who afterwards became king of France onder the title of Henry II. The articles, some of which the Polish nobles required Henry to sign, called the pacta

conventa so well illustrate the extraordi- nary influence of the aristocracy, and the shadow to which they had reduced the regal authority, that they are worth quoting im extenso. From this time every Polish king was compelled to accept them, together with the additions sub- sequently made.

(1) The king was to have no voice in the election of his suc- cessor ; the appointment was to depend entirely upon the nobles.” (2) He was to keep rigidly the terms of the treaty made with the Dissidents, as the Polish Protestants were called. (3) No war was to be declared nor military expedition undertaken without the consent of the diet. (4) No taxes were to be imposed without the consent of the diet. (5) The king was not to appoint ambassadors to foreign courts. members of the dict, the king was to adopt only such as were in accordance with the laws or advantageous to the nation. (7) The sovereign inust have a permanent council, consisting of five bishops, four palatines, and eight castellans, who were to be changed every year and elected by the diet. (8) A general diet was to be convoked every two years, or oftener, if there were any need. The assembling of these diets secms to have depended upon the will of the king. (9) The duration of each diet was not to exceed six weeks. (10) None but a native could hold any dignity or benefice. (11) The

king must neither marry nor divorce a wife without the consent of the diet.

Thus the regal shadow who was to sit upon the throne of Poland was able to interfere but little in questions either

’ The Poles regarded the national dress with peculiar fondness, and Coxe tells us that they were somewhat indignant with their last king Stanislaus (Stanistaw August Poniatowski, 1764-95), because he always appeared with flowing hair and adopted a French style of dress. They even meditated introducing a new clause into the pacta conventa, requiring that every king of Poland must wear the Polish dress.

2 We shall find, however, this rule sometimes infringed, and instances occur in which the opinion of a sovereign affected the next nominee. Thus the malicious wife of Sobieski was able to exclude her son James in the succession, to which the national voice had almost called him.

“ We shall afterwards see that this mischievous law was fruitful of evil consequences to the country, as frequently debates upon the most iniportant questions would ke brought to an end by the interference of one of the nuntii declaring that the legitimate six weeks had elapsed.

re Lyn ©

The contest, however, really lay |

(6) If different opinions prevailed among the |

of peace or war. The latter, we have seen, he could not declare; and, as each of the palatines held nearly supreme power in his own territories, the king could interfere in little relating to the former. A vexatious control was ex- ercised even over his private relations; his wife could not be of his own choosing, and, however odious she might become to him, she must remain attached as a state ap- pendage till his nobles consented to release him. Not that Henry was likely to trouble himself with any scruples on the score of marriage. He arranged all those matters very easily. What was left for the Polish king was chiefly to eat and drink at the expense of his subjects, and to form a glittering addition to their costly and semi-barbar- ous pageants. Still his revenue was ample, and when he comnianded the army in the field his power was unchecked ; he had also the nomination to the highest ecclesiastical and inilitary appointments.

Even before the severe terms of the pacta conventa had been presented to Henry, Montluc had agreed to all, but probably felt convinced that his sovereign would carry out no more of them than he could possibly help. He even promised that France should send a fleet into the Baltic, so that its dominion might be secured to the Poles, and that in the event of a war with Russia she should supply four thousand of her best troops, and herself pay their expenses ; in all cases of war she was to aid Poland with money. Henry was to spend a large portion of the rents which he drew from his estates in France for the benefit of his adopted country; he was also to pay the crown debts, and to educate one hundred young Polish nobles either at Paris or Cracow. Probably no sovereign in the world ever signed such

galling stipulations. Henry, how- ever, had no intention of observing them, and had so little relish for his new kingdom that he did not set out- till he had almost been driven from France by his brother, and the Polish nobles already talked of a new election. He proceeded on his way slowly, with all the dignity of a royal progress, but did not escape the gibes of the German princes through whose dominions he passed, for his con- nexion with the massacre of St Bartholomew. He was feasted at Heidelberg opposite a large picture which delineated the tragedy in all its horrors, and attendants were allotted him selected from French Huguenot refugees. He was crowned at Cracow in February 1574, but soon began to repent of his choice. The effeminate king re- lished but little the throne he had chosen among a war-like and turbulent people, where he seemed to enjoy but the shadow of sovereignty—a people also in every way inferior in civilization to the agreeable Parisians he had left behind. He felt himself a mere- puppet in their hands, and, burying himself in the recesses of his palace, led a life of dissipation. But release was at hand in an unexpected way ; he was destined to be king of Poland for five months

only. By the death of his brother Charles IX. he became

heir to the French crown. ‘This delightful piece of news he attempted at first to conceal, and to escape before it could get noised abroad in Poland, principally to avoid the ambitious designs of his brother, the duke of Alengon ; but unfortunately the report oozed out. He refused to follow the counsel of his advisers that he should convoke general diet to see what measures should be taken. On the evening of the 18th July he gave a grand entertain- ment in honour of the sister of the late king Sigismund. The conviviality was great; and never had Henry assumed a more pleasing manner or seemed more genially to identify himself with his new subjects. At the usual hour, to all appearance, he retired to his apartment and the lights were extinguished ; but already the king had flown. He was led by an attendant through secret passages to chapel in the suburbs of the city, as some say—but accord-

1573-1586.]

ing to a more probable account to the royal stables, where a rendezvous had been appointed. Here horses had been prepared ; and with a few chosen attendants he rode pre- cipitately from his kingdom, reaching the frontiers of Silesia early on the following day. Great was the consternation in Cracow when it was known that he had fled, and hot the pursuit of the authorities. The probability of the king's flight, gathered perhaps from his ill-concealed uneasiness, had caused it to be suspected before it was known as an actual fact. The grand chamberlain, anxious to calm the universal excitement, returned to the palace to which by virtue of his office he had general access. At first he knocked at the king's door, 'but no answer was forthcom- ing; he then tried the chambers of the gentlemen-in- waiting; there equally he found a dead silence. Again, he returned to the king's bedroom, and, not being able to force the door, entered by the window—for even in matters of etiquette they seem in Poland to have treated their kings somewhat roughly. The candles were burning as usual in the room ; the two pages were near the bed; the

curtains of the bed were drawn, but there was no Henry.

to be found. The grand chamberlain, amazed, rushed in pursuit, attended by five hundred cavaliers. Probably such a ludicrous sight had never been seen before as a monarch flying from his kingdom and subjects without being driven out by them. Owing to his ignorance of the route the horsemen were soon on his track, and many of his com- panions, to save themselves, deserted him. One of them named Pibrac hid himself in a bog, and was even obliged to make several dives to escape the infuriated peasants, who pelted him with stones, unconscious of what he had done, but satisfied, from his efforts at concealment, that he inust be flying from justice. In vain did Henry cause the bridges to be broken down behind him; the Slavs on his track forded the rivers on horseback, and the king was at last overtaken on the very boundaries of the German em- pire. There Tenczyn, the grand chamberlain, and five horsemen came up with the fugitives and shouted after the king, "Serenissima Majestas, cur fugis?" Finding that he was quite safe, Henry admitted Tenczyn to an audience, who remonstrated with him on account of the manner in which he was leaving the kingdom, and recommended him to return and convoke a diet so that with the consent of his subjects he might take possession of his new kingdom. But he refused to

be influenced by their entreaties, and merely promised in a vague manner that he would return as soon as he had placed France in a state of tranquillity— & promise which, it need hardly be said, he had no inten- tion whatever of carrying out. Nor did the king show any special alacrity in repairing to France, for before reaching that country he lingered a considerable time at Vienna and Venice, trifling with the highest interests of his country, and devoted only to frivolous amusement. The Poles, how- _ €ver, were well rid of one of the most corrupt sovereigns of acorrupt house. In 1589 the knife of the Dominican friar terminated his life, and with it the line of the Valois.

The Poles, piqued at the contempt with which their crown had been treated, assembled at Stezyca and resolved to declare the throne vacant if the king did not return by the 12th May 1575. During the interregnum the Mon- gols made incursions into Podolia and Volhynia, and griev- ously devastated those countries. The appointed period having elapsed, Stephen Batory, prince of Transylvania, was elected, having previously stipulated to marry the princess Anne, sister of Sigismund Augustus. There were some difficulties, however, before he succeeded in obtaining the royal authority. The primate Ucharski nominated the emperor Maximilian king. This caused considerable Opposition, and the city of Dantzic did not recognize the hew sovereign till compelled. To conciliate the nobility

Batory was obliged to consent to some serious diminutions of the royal prerogative. This king was a great soldier, successful against both Prussians and Russians, the latter of whom he compelled, in 1582, to evacuate Livonia, which was thus again annexed to Poland. He also did much to encourage letters, having founded the university of Vilna, which has, however, been suppressed in more recent times. His great fondness for the Latin language is said by Schafarik to have had a bad effect upon Polish ; for from this time may be dated the classical words and idioms which have been thrust upon the language, and have disfigured Polish more than her Slavonic sisters. It was Stephen Batory who first organized the regiments of Cossacks who play such an important part in Polish history. Before his

death, foreseeing the constant anarchy which the system of elective sovereignty would cause, he in vain urged the nobility to make the crown hereditary. Sarnicki, the Polish historian, says of him— “Fuit vir tam in pace quam in bello excelso et forti animo, judicii magni, presertim ubi ab affectibus liber erat; in victu et amictu parcus, et omni jactantia et ostentatione alienus, eruditione insigniter tinctus, sermonis Latini valde studiosus et prorsus Terentianus.” It would naturally be concluded that before the election of Batory the royal power had been sufficiently curtailed, but it was to undergo further mutilations. Sixteen senators were now chosen at each diet to attend the king and give their opinion in important matters, and no decree could be issued without their consent. Besides this, in 1578 the right of final appeal to the king, which had always been a royal prerogative, was taken away. The king could now only give the ultimate decision in a small district within a certain radius of his residence. The courts exercising judgments within these narrow limits were called Assessoria Regni, and even these judicial powers, slight as they were, were gradually abandoned after the time of Augustus II., and were exercised by the high chancellor of the realm. The king was supposed to have some control of the courts which were governed by the Jus Magdeburgicum ; but, Batory being busy with foreign wars, these were generally managed by the chancellor also. The palatines had the right of electing their own judges in their dietines or petty diets, who formed supreme courts of justice called Tribunalia Regni; here the causes of the nobles, for the peasants had no voice in the matter, were decided finally and without option of any appeal.

On the death of Batory in 1586, after many quarrels among the leading families, the throne was again brought into the market. The candidates were, among others, the archduke Maximilian of Austria; Feodore Ivanovich, the feeble Russian czar; and Sigismund, a Swedish prince, son of Catherine, sister of Sigismund Augustus. The last of the three was finally elected, although not without con- siderable opposition from Maximilian, who was only driven from his candidature by main force. The Zborowskis, a very powerful family always in opposition to Zamoiski, thé chancellor of the kingdom, invited him. But Zamoiski defeated him at Byczyna in Silesia, and he was there made prisoner, and was only released on the promise of desisting from being a candidate. The Austrians, how- ever, were always interfering in the affairs of Poland, and, if they could not procure the

admission of any of their family to the headship of the republic, we shall observe that during four generations the house of Hapsburg furnished queens to Poland. A very serious riot occurred at the election on this occasion, as Lengnich tells us in his Jus Publicum Regni Poloni; the booths erected for the senators were burnt to the ground. Such proceedings were only to be expected in a country where each noble might keep as many armed retainers as he pleased.

Sigis- mund WOE

(1587- 1632).

The new king signed the pacta conventa, and an alliance | offensive and defensive between Poland and Sweden ; the navigation of the Baltic was secured, and the debts of the nation were to be discharged. Sigismund, however, soon became unpopular among his new subjects, and among other causes of offence he violated the pacta conventa by marrying an Austrian princess, Anne, daughter of the archduke Charles, without their consent. In 1595, at Brzeéé in Lithuania, took place the so-called union of the Greek and Latin Churches, but this union was not brought about without considerable violence. The disputes between the king and the diet were destined to be renewed when (his wife being dead) he married her sister Constantia in 1603. This union was also entered into without the con- sent of his subjects, and caused the cup of their wrath, already full, to overflow. On this occasion Jan Zamoiski, the chancellor already mentioned, addressed a vehement oration to the king, which is quoted at full length by Lelewel, in which he brought his marriage against him among many other charges. When Zamoiski had finished, Sigismund rose from his throne in a moment of anger and seized his sword. At this gesture a murmur of indignation ran through the diet, and Zamoiski cried in the midst of the crowd, “ Rex, ne move gladium; ne te Caium Cesarem, nos Brutos sera posteritas loquatur. Sumus electores regum, destructores tyrannorum ; regna, sed ne impera.” A great rokosz or secession, as the phrase was in Polish, was the result of this. But the rebels wanted able leaders, and the king defeated them at Guzow, near Radom, on the 6th July 1607, and thus his throne, already tottering, seemed to become a little stronger. He pardoned the insurgents ; and the

country, on the verge of civil war, seemed pacified ; but the rebellion was a fatal precedent.

The most important events in this reign were the transac- tions which took place between Poland and Russia. The renegade monk Otrepieff personated the young Dmitri of Russia, who had been assassinated, probably by the orders of Boris Godounoff, and aspired to seat himself upon the throne of the czars. This wonderful plot was concocted at Cracow, and seems to have been a plan of the Jesuits to bring over the Russians to the Latin Church! In 1606 the pretender was killed in a tumult, and many of the Poles who had accompanied him to Moscow were murdered. In 1617 Sigismund sent his son Wtadystaw to Moscow, which had been taken by the Polish general Zolkiewski. Wtadystaw was elected czar by a certain faction ; but the Russians, disliking to have a heretic for their emperor, rose against the newly appointed sovereign; and the patriotism which was lacking to the boyars was found in the unselfish devotion of a provincial butcher. Russia was freed, and a new dynasty was established in the person of Michael Romanoff. Sigismund had many wars with the Turks, which led to no very important results ; the great victory, however, of Chodkiewicz at Khotin (September 28, 1622) has become ever memorable in Polish annals, and has formed the subject of several poems. Lengnich, in his Jus Publicum Regn Polona, tells us that in 1632 the Cossacks petitioned to be allowed to take part in the diets. Their request was refused in an insulting manner ; and the Poles had soon to pay dear for their insolence. Sigismund died in 1632; his statue still ornaments the city of Warsaw, which he made the capital in the place of Cracow. He was unceasing in his efforts to extirpate Protestantism from his dominions.

The luxury of the nobles at this period has been’ described at great length by Lelewel. He has also much to tell us about the small armies of retainers kept up by

the Polcs, which it is a pity there was no statute of

1 See, however, Rome et Demetrius, by A ierli : al te 5 s 1878), for the contrary view. va ge ae

AND

maintenance, as in England, to check. These private troops, however much bravery they may have occasionally shown, prevented all unity of action. The reign of Sigismund III. was on many grounds a disastrous one for Poland, and it was a very long one. There were constant military revolts and religions tumults. The king and his Austrian wife were so foolish as to be partly drawn into the Thirty Years' War. They thought that, supported by the emperor and the king of Spain, they might be able to regain the crown of Sweden. They therefore permitted the emperor to enrol troops in Poland, and even sent him some regiments of Cossacks ; they also got ready a fleet in the Baltic—strange as it may seem to hear of Poland as a naval power. All these plans, however, ended miserably. By the treaty of Malborg (Marienburg), in 1623, Sweden gained Livonia, Elbing, and part of Prussia.

He was succeeded by his son Wtadystaw IV., who was elected by the diet. During his reign the usual wars took place with the ancient enemies of the republic,— the Swedes, Russians, and Turks. Before its close the revolt of Bogdan Chmielnicki had broken out, which cost Poland her Cossack subjects, who had been so happily gained over by the more vigorous policy of Batory. The Zapor- ogians, or Cossacks of the Dnieper, now transferred their allegiance to Alexis of Russia. They had long felt uncomfortable under the Polish government owing to the proselytizing tendencies of the bigoted Sigismund III. Fresh alarms were caused by the erection of the fortress of Kudak on the Dnieper, and they broke out into open rebellion. In 1638 they were deprived of the right of having a hetman ; and Pawluk, their chief, was decapitated in spite of an express promise that his life should be spared. Wtadystaw was in constant collision with his nobles. He fretted under the restrictions placed upon his power, and attempted to carry on wars without the con- sent of the diet. But the nobles compelled him to break all his engagements. He died at Merecz in Lithuania, between Grodno and Vilna, May 20, 1648, and was suc- ceeded by his brother John Casimir (Jan Kaziniiérz), the other candidates being the czar Alexis, father of Peter the Great, and Ragotzi, prince of Transylvania, One of the first acts of the new king was to endeavour to negotiate with Bogdan, but the negotiations were brought to an abrupt termination by the treachery of Wisniowiecki, the Polish general, who fell upon the unsuspecting Cossacks while they were deliberating about the terms of the con- vention. After this massacre Bogdan raised another army, but was completely defeated by John Casimir

at Beresteczko in 1651. The kingdom, however, was thrown into the greatest confusion by the disputes of the nobles, and all vigorous action was paralysed. The blood-stained annals of these wars are full of horrors: the population in many districts was entirely extirpated ; every where murder and plunder were rampant; and tortures too hor- rible to mention were inflicted upon the unhappy prisoners.

Ata diet held in 1652 a single nuntius for the first time annulled by his iberum veto the united resolutions of the whole assembly,—Sicinski, from Upita in Lithuania, stop- ping the diet with the simple word “niepozwalam” (I forbid). As soon as he had uttered this ominous protest he quitted the assembly. Those who were present were puzzled as to what construction they ought to put upon such a proceeding, but Siciriski had not acted without con- federates on whom he could rely. An angry debate ensued, but the principle was finally carried by a majority and firmly established. Ruptures of this kind became more frequent, as Lelewel tells us, and the queen Louise Marie, who had great influence over the king, frequently made use of them. Lengnich, in his Jus Publicum Regni Polont (1742), enu- merates thirteen occasions on which this baleful practice

[MISTORY.

Wtadlys- taw IV,

(1682- 48),

John

Casimir

(1648- 68).

Liberum |

velo.

raty of Podolia.

drus- vO.

had broken up the diet. It was not finally abolished till. 1791. The reasons why it was popular have already been spoken of. Among other causes may be mentioned the anxiety of the great officers of the realm—the commander- in-chief, treasurer, marshal, and others—to be free from the control of the diet. These important functionaries held their appointments for life, and were under no super- vision during the intervals between the sessions of the diet. Again, it was only before the diet that a noble accused of capital crimes could be brought to trial, for the nobility exercised, as has already been said, supreme judicial powers in their own palatinates. If, therefore, as was frequently the case, a criminal of this rank happened to be brought forward, it was very convenient for him to be able to pro- cure a dissolution of the only tribunal by which he could be convicted. Again, it was an admirable way to oppose the levying of taxes, which could only be raised, by the consent of the diet ; and taxes, owing to the constant wars in which she. was engaged, were very heavy in Poland. There were emissaries of foreign powers, too, who fomented these internal discords and profited by fomenting them.

The ill effects of the literum veto soon began to be felt.

In 1670 the members of the diet bound themselves by an oath not to make use of the privilege. In spite, however, of this resolution that very diet was brought to an end by the appeal of Zabokrzycki, the nuntius from Braclaw in In 1667, by the treaty of Andruszowo, Poland lost to Russia Smolensk, Vitebsk, Polotsk, and other towns, the Dnieper now becoming the boundary ; Kieff, the inter- esting old historical city, was to go two years later. In the midst of all these misfortunes the exhausted country was attacked by a new enemy, Sweden, in consequence of the Polish monarch asserting a right to the Swedish crown, as the heir of the house of Vasa—a claim which he had no possibility of enforcing. Hampered as he was by a war with Russia, John could effect nothing against his new enemies, who took both Warsaw and Cracow, and ended by entirely subjugating the country, while the wretched king fled to Silesia. Although these new enemies were afterwards expelled, yet the war was pro- tracted for some years, and ended disastrously for Poland. Charles Gustavus, the Swedish king, is said to have pro- posed the

partition of the country; he offered Great Poland to the elector of Brandenburg, Little Poland to the duke of Transylvania, and a part of Lithuania to a Polish nobleman named Radziwitt. But Poland's hour had not yet come. The elector of Brandenburg procured the release of East Prussia from all seignorial rights in 1657. Livonia was also another loss, having been ceded to Sweden in 1660. An army of Cossacks and Mongols, which had invaded Podolia, was defeated by the celebrated John Sobieski, who now first appears in history and was made commander-in-chief of the Polish troops. Worn out with age, and disgusted with his repeated failures, the king abdicated in 1668. Ata previous diet he had warned his turbulent subjects that the partition of the kingdom must be the inevitable consequence of their dissensions. John Casimir had already been an ecclesiastic ; he had been absolved from his vows by the pope when he became a candidate for the throne. He now resolved to betaké him- self again to the cloister,—his wife, Louise Marie, daughter of the duke of N evers, a woman of beauty and spirit, being dead. _ He took his leave of the Poles in an affectionate and dignified address, which is still preserved, and has been pronounced by Coxe to be "the finest piece of pathetic eloquence that history has ever recorded." There was something very touching in the fact that Jan Kazimiérz nebresented the last of the Jagieltos and Vasas, the former of whom had so long ruled over Poland. He was son, as Previously mentioned, of Sigismund IIT., and great-grand-

son of Sigismund I., whose daughter Catherine had married John, king of Sweden. Connor says, "'While 1 was at Warsaw I spoke with several old gentlemen, who told me

that Casimir, the day after his resignation, observing the ~

people hardly paid him the respect due to a gentleman, much less to a king, seemed to have repented heartily of the folly he had committed " (i. 135). He now returned to France, a country in which some years previously he had suffered a strange captivity, having been detained in the reign of Louis XIII. while passing its coasts; but the story is too long to be narrated in these pages. Here he became abbé of St Germain and St Martin, and drew his means of subsistence from these ecclesiastical foundations : for the

Poles, although to all appearance abundantly moved by his melancholy rhetoric, refused to continue his pension. Nor does he appear to have spent the short remainder of his life entirely in the cloister, as we are told that he contracted a secret marriage with an amiable widow who had formerly been a laundregs. He, however, sur- vived only four years, dying in 1672, forgotten by the world but not forgetting it,—his disease, according to some accounts, being greatly aggravated by his receiving the intelligence that Kamenets in Podolia had been ceded to the Turks. His body was afterwards brought to Cracow and buried in the cathedral. The diet, which met on his abdication, passed a decree that for the future no Polish king should be allowed to abdicate. During this reign, in the year 1658, the Socinians were banished from Poland, in consequence of which Pope Alexander II. gave to the king and his successors on the Polish throne the title Lex Orthodoxus. In due time three candidates for the vacant throne made their appearance—the prince of Condé, the prince of Neuburg, supported by Louis Deliv… and 'Charles of Lorraine, who was put forward by Austria. The first of these could rely upon the cooperation of tlie great Sobieski, but eventually none of the three was chosen. The election fell upon a native Pole—Prince

Michael Korybut Wisniowiecki, of a noble family indeed, Michael but so impoverished that he may be said to have had regal Wisnio-

honours thrust upén him against his will, and we are even told that he was offered the crown half in derision. A graphic picture of this extraordinary scene is given in Pasek's contemporary memoirs. Michael soon became a mere puppet in the hands of his turbulent subjects. His reign, however, was rendered illustrious by the great suc- cesses of Sobieski against the Turks, although the Poles suffered the loss of the important town of Kamenets, and Michael, powerless to make head against them, concluded the treaty of Buczacz, by which he even stipulated to pay them tribute. By the great victory of Khotiu in 167 3, Sobieski did much to repair these losses, and was about to follow up his glorious campaign when he heard of the death of Wisniowiecki at Lemberg in Galicia ; so sudden was the end of Michael that some have even supposed that he was poisoned,—" by a Frenchman," says Connor. The dict met at Warsaw; there were several candidates; and among others Charles of Lorraine and Philip of Neuburg again put forward their claims. While the nobles were still in session, Sobieski, fresh from his

glorious victory, entered and proposed the prince of Condé. A stormy discussion ensued, and in the midst of it one of the nobles, Jablonowski, was heard to say, “Let a Pole rule over Poland.” The cry found a magic echo among those who were present, and the gallant Sobieski, the greatest of Polish generals, and one of the first soldiers of his time, was appointed king

under the title of John JIL, although not without con- John III. siderable opposition from Michael Pac, the general-in-chief (1674- of Lithuania, who was, however, ultimately induced to 2)

withdraw his protest. This king signed the same pacta conventa as the preceding monarchs; there was, however,

Siege of Vienna

(1688).

a trifling addition made to them, but that a very absurd one. To the article declaring that offices should only be conferred on native nobles it was added, “and on such only as have had their honours during three generations.” The leading idea of Sobieski was to drive the Turks out of Europe, and if possible to resuscitate the Byzantine empire. He was soon roused to action by a new Invasion of the Turks and Mongols, whose united armies are said to have amounted to 210,000 men,! commanded by the Seraskier Ibrahim, whose ferocious character was suffi- ciently indicated by his soubriquet, Shaitan or Devil. We are told that Sobieski had only 10,000 men to oppose to this vast host; he, however, set out from Lemberg, and was soon hemmed in by his adversaries at Zurawno, in Galicia, but by consummate bravery and adroitness suc- ceeded in rescuing himself and his soldiers, even conclud- ing a treaty with the Porte on favourable terms, by which Poland received back a part of the Ukraine and Podolia. Some years of peace followed, during which the king in vain endeavoured to raise supplies for an army to recon- quer the provinces which Russia had appropriated. All his plans were neutralized by the absurd practice of the liberum veto. In 1683 the Turks made their grand inva- sion which they had

long been preparing. After scouring the plains of Hungary, they advanced to the very walls of Vienna. The emperor Leopold at once fled with his court, but had great difficulty to avoid falling into the hands of the Mongols. The imperial party made no stay till it reached the Bavarian fortress of Passau. Quick in its track followed also the wealthier portion of the inhabitants ; their selfish desertion aroused murmurs of disapprobation, and also considerably thinned the number of the popula- tion capable of bearing arms; many of these fugitives fell into the hands of the invaders, who were capable of any cruelty. The command of the city was taken by Count Stahremberg ; he had already approved himself a brave soldier, and had been nominated to the post by the emperor. All classes at once—including even priests and women—laboured diligently at the fortifications, the bur- gomaster Von Liebenberg himself setting an excellent example. The imperial archives had already been removed ; nothing now remained for the devoted city but to await the approach of the enemy. The inhabitants could see the desolated villages, and the fire and smoke of the burn- ing cottages were conspicuous for miles around. At sun- rise on July 14 the vast hordes of the invaders, a pro- miscuous crowd of soldiers, camp-followers, camels, and baggage-waggons made their appearance. The camp was arranged in the form of a crescent; splendid above all other things was the tent of the vizier, Kara Mustapha, made of green silk, worked with gold and silver, set with precious stones, and containing inside the holy standard of the prophet. Marvellous stories are told of the foun- tains, baths, gardens, and all the appliances of Oriental luxury which it contained. Many painful incidents char- acterized the siege before the arrival of Sobieski ; a fire at one time broke out in the city, which was only suppressed with difficulty. Diseases raged among the townspeople owing to their being compelled to spend their days in such close quarters and to live chiefly upon salt meat. Relief, however, was rapidly approaching. The elector of Saxony, John George, marched out of Dresden on the 22d July with twelve thousand men and eighteen guns, and reached Krems on the 28th August. The Polish king, who had been solicited by the emperor himself, and to whom all Europe looked now as its saviour, left Cracow accompanied by, his son, and succeeded in reaching the quarters of Prince Charles of Lorraine. He was to act in concert

_’ 89,000 Turks and 130,000 Mongols, as we are told by the Polish historians, .

AND

with a man who had been competitor with him for the Polish crown; their meeting passed off amicably, and no subsequent jealousies seem to have marred their opera- tions. The Polish and German troops effected their junction at Krems on the Danube, near Vienna; there were about seventy-seven thousand men ready for active operations in the field. On the 12th September, after mass, Sobieski descended from the city to encounter the dense masses of the Moslems in the plains below. He appeared with his hair partly shaven in the Polish fashion, and, although plainly attired himself, was accompanied by a brilliant retinue. In front went an attendant bearing the king’s arms emblazoned, and with him another who carried a plume on the point of his lance. On his left rode his son James, unfortunate in afterwards incurring the hatred

[nIsTory.

of his mother, who perhaps prevented him from being °

elected to the throne of Poland; on his right was his old rival, Charles of Lorraine. Before the battle the king knighted his son and made a patriotic address to his troops, in which he told them that on that occasion they did not defend Vienna alone, but rather all Christendom, and that they were not fighting for an earthly sovereign but for the King of kings. The shouts of the soldiers bore to the enemy the dreaded name of Sobieski, familiar to them on many a well-fought field. He is said to have been provoked to give the order for battle by seeing Kara Mustapha, the Turkish commander, tranquilly taking coffee with his two sons in his splendid tent.

The assault was made simultaneously on the wings and centre of the enemy. The king himself dashed forward to the pasha’s tent, bearing down all opposition and repeating with a loud voice, “Non nobis, non nobis, Domine exercituum, sed nomini Tuo da gloriam.” “Allah!” said the Mongol khan, “ the king is surely among them.” Tn spite of the bravery of the Turks they were overpowered by the éan of the Poles. Six pashas were slain, and the

vizier fled with the remnant of hisarmy. The booty taken was immense. The details of the battle may be gathered from the interesting letters which Sobieski wrote to his wife in the Polish language. She was a Frenchwoman, daughter of Henri de la Grange, captain of the guard to Philip, duke of Orleans, and had been originally maid of honour to Louisa, queen of Wtadysiaw IV., was then married to Count Zamoiski, and after his death became the wife of Sobieski. It is said that chiefly on her account the Polish king was induced to assist Austria. The selfish policy of Louis XIV. would have allowed this outpost of Christian Europe to be taken by the Turks, and he used all the secret springs of his diplomacy to divert Sobieski from his purpose. to this ambitious woman in refusing the title of duke to her father. After the complete rout of the Moslem, Sobieski and his troops entered Vienna, and divine service was performed in the cathedral; a priest read aloud the text, “ There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.” In spite of his success, the brave Pole was doomed to meet with ingratitude at the hands of the emperor Leopold, and through the selfishness of his own troops and the Lithuanian contingent, who seem to have been always at cross purposes with the Poles, he was not able to follow up his victory to its legitimate end.

The king, after this brilliant achievement, showed some inclination to be reconciled to Louis XIV., but the emperor succeeded in diverting him by holding out hopes of securing the government of Moldavia and Wallachia for his son. By the treaty of Moscow, which Sobieski con- cluded in 1686 with Sophia, the regent of Russia, Smolensk, Severia, Tchernigoff, and Kieff were definitely annexed to the latter country. The private life of Sobieski was embittered by family dissensions ; he was very much

He had, however, given mortal offence

under the influence of his wife, a woman of great beauty, but avaricious, fond of power, and revengeful. Thus the illustrious soldier had not peace in his own house, nor was he likely to meet with it in the stormy debates of the

diet, several of which were broken off by the exercise of the dcberum veto ; and so wearisome had his position become

Pow 2a ND

207

to pleasure. One of his favourite amusements was shooting dogs from the windows of his palace at Warsaw, in conse- quence of which dogs became very scarce in the city. He was too idle to learn a word of Polish, and left everything to the management of his minister Briihl. Frederick died on October 3, 1763, at Dresden, where he was buried.

that he several times thought of abdicating, and the Austrian party (such was the gratitude he met with) sought to effect this. He finally sank under an accumula- tion of disorders, and expired on the 17th June 1696, at

In 1764 Stanistaw August Poniatowski was elected king, Stanis- chiefly through the machinations of the Russian empress Jus Catherine. The new monarch was a man of refined ae manners and elegant mind, but weak, and a mere puppet 95).

his favourite castle of Willanow. Many incidents of his death-bed have been recorded by Zatuski, the bishop of Ptock, which show that the king died ‘ill at ease, being filled with the gravest apprehensions concerning the future of his country. The family is now extinct. With him sank the glory of Poland, which was rapidly hastening to its fall. ;

After a time the diet met as usual to elect the new sovereign. The three chief candidates were James Sobi- eski, the son of the late king; the prince of Condé, a nephew of Louis XIV.; and the elector of Saxony. The elector was appointed, and, in order to qualify for the throne, abjured Protestantism. In 1699, by the peace of Carlowitz, the Turks renounced all claim over the Ukraine and Podolia, but the king was foolish enough to allow himself to be drawn into a war with the Swedes, in conse- quence of which Cracow was taken in 1702. Charles XII. of Sweden became master of the country, and de-

in Muscovite hands. He caused the liberum veto to be abolished, but it was soon restored (in 1766), in conse- quence, it is said, of Russian influence, as the ruin of Poland had been resolved upon. In 1768 a few patriots met at the little town of Bar in Podolia, and formed what was called the Confederation of Bar, their object being to free the country from foreign influence. Among the members of this confederation were the Pulawskis (Casi- mir and Joseph), Joachim Potocki, and Adam Krasiziski, bishop of Kamenets. Their military operations extended over all Poland and Lithuania, but the Russian troops stationed round the capital prevented the junction of the confederates with the national army. Moreover the con- federates, whose number amounted to about eight thousand fighting men, were badly organized. In spite of a few trifling successes they saw their efforts gradually growing weaker. Nor did a bold attempt to carry off the king result in success. Their party speedily broke up, and

Augus- posed the newly elected Frederick Augustus, in whose | Casimir Pulawski, one of the leading spirits, left the tus II. place was chosen Stanistaw Leszezytiski, palatine of Posen, | country and joined the Americans in their War of In- os a man of benevolence and learning. All the courts of | dependence, in which he soon afterwards perished. In

Europe recognized this new king except the czar Peter, and when the latter defeated Charles at the battle of Poltava in 1709 Leszezyriski was compelled to leave the country, and Augustus II., as he was styled, was restored. Stanistaw at the approach of the Russian troops retired to Lorraine, which he governed till his death at an advanced age. In this reign Poland lost Courland, which had long been one of its fiefs, but was now seized by the Russians and given by the empress Anne to her favourite Biren. The Dissi- dents, as the Protestants were called, were slowly decreas- ing in number, and in an émeute which occurred at Thorn in 1724 many were cruelly put to death. A little later, in 1733, a law was passed by which they were declared incapable of holding any office or enjoying any dignity. Augustus II. died at Warsaw in the last-mentioned year. He was a contemptible king, notorious for his private vices. At the instigation of many of the Poles, Stanistaw Leszezyriski, who was now residing in Lorraine, and had become the father-in-law of Louis XV., was induced to return to Poland, and was elected king at Warsaw by a large majority. This

election, however, was displeasing to Austria and Russia, who resolved to resist his preten-

accordingly swore to the pacta conventa, and was crowned king at Cracow in 1734. Meanwhile the unfortunate Stanistaw fled to Dantzic, where he hoped to hold out till assistance should arrive from France. ‘The city, however, was obliged to capitulate after a siege of five months ; and Stanistaw, after many adventures and narrow escapes, reached the Prussian dominions. In 1736 a diet of pacifi- cation was held at Warsaw, which was followed by a general amnesty. The condition of the country during this reign was deplorable, although Poland was engaged in no wars. Factions rent the government, and the peasantry, crushed

and suffering, betook themselves to robbery and pillage. |

The king was a man of low tastes, and abandoned himself

consequence of the efforts of these patriots the pernicious liberum veto was put a stop to, though afterwards for a short time restored ; but the partition of the country had already been secretly agreed upon by Russia, Prussia, and Austria. The idea appears to have been first suggested by Frederick the Great. M., Rambaud, in his /istoire de la Russie, gives the following as the chief causes which led to the destruction of Poland, which, in addition, had always suffered from the want of natural frontiers :—

1. The national movement in Russia, which fostered the idea of recovering the provinces in the west which had formerly been Russian territory, and spoke a language but little differing froin Russian. To this was to be added the fact that the majority of the inhabitants were members of the Greek Church. This feeling had already led to the conquest of some of the western provinces in the time of Alexis Mikhailovich as previously mentioned. Moreover, the members of the Greek Church were being constantly persecuted by the Jesuits, who had done so much mischief to the country.

2. The great desire of Prussia to become possessed of the lower part of the Vistula, with the towns of Thorn and Dantzic. A reason for Prussian interference was afforded by the Polish persecution of the ‘‘ Dissidents,” as a sample of which the cruelties committed at Thorn may be cited. ;

3. The general political condition of Poland—an anaehronism among the nations of Europe. They had become strong by centralized

_ Frede- sions and to secure the election of Frederick Augustus, | power and by harmonizing their governments with the spirit of the tick Au- the son of the late king. A Russian army arrived in the | age. In Poland there was no middle class ; for the trade in the ; a neighbourhood of Warsaw, and a party of the nobles towns was in the hands of foreigners, and especially Jews. 34 — : ; : “78 a opposed to the French influence proclaimed the Saxon. He There were to be seen a proud nobility, the members

of which were engaged in constant feuds among them- selves, and far below them miserable serfs deprived of all political rights. There was no national spirit in the country, no sympathy between the nobility and peasantry. It was the Jews who chiefly busied themselves with com- merce ; they distributed the products, selling at the same time to the serfs and their masters, and preventing the two classes of the natives of the country to a great extent from coming into contact with each other. By their efforts the economic functions of every-day life were carried on, and yet they could not be considered a real part of the nation. In the moment of danger they were not at hand to bring together distinct classes and to establish a common bond XIX. — 38

Partition of the country.

298

of interest; the nation, thus consisting of men who did not understand each other, remained perplexed and divided. The peasants, who had at one time communal possession of the land, according to the old Slavonic custom, had long ago lost all their rights. Those Poles who struggled for liberty themselves were not willing to extend it to their unhappy serfs. Kosciuszko desired to see serfdom abolished; but the peasants who followed him only enjoyed their liberty daring the war, and his decree of emancipation was so vaguely expressed that it was ineffec- tual. It is strange to think that the real liberators of the peasant were the Russians, who in the revolt of 1863 gave him a portion of the land which he cultivated.

In 1772 Prussia took the palatinates of Malborg, Pomeria, and Warmia, Culm, except Dantzic and Thorn, and a part of Great Poland; Austria took Red Russia or Galicia, with a part of Podolia, Sandomir, and Cracow ; and Russia took White Russia, with all the part beyond the Dnieper. The Poles were obliged to sanction this plundering of their country in a diet held in L773: The only real benefit conferred on the nation by this diet was the introduction of a better system of education; the

Jesuits were also suppressed, and their immense estates |

became national property. Although the country had

that he cried out on that occasion, “ Finis Polonie”; this he always denied till the day of his death. After storming the suburb Praga, Suwaroff took Warsaw, and the city was sacked with great cruelty. The kingdom of Poland was now at an end, and the third division took place. Austria had Cracow, with the country between the Pilica, the Vistula, and the Bug; Prussia had the capital, with the territory as far as the Niemen; and the rest went to Russia. Stanislaus resigned the crown at Grodno on April 25, 1795; he was summoned to St Petersburg, where he is said to have endured many indignities from the emperor Paul, who never allowed him to remain seated in his presence. There he died in 1798.

Many of the Poles now entered foreign services, as, for instance, the legion which followed the fortunes of France ; but the fate of these exiled patriots was often a sad one. Many perished on the burning sands of St Domingo. Many were killed in the famous expedition to Moscow. The Poles looked anxiously to the success of Napoleon. But all that the conqueror did for them was to form the duchy of Warsaw, consisting of six departments—Posen,

| Kalisz, Ptock, Warsaw, Lomza, and Bydgoszez—with a

population of more than two millions, which he united with Saxony.

A resettlement of Poland took place by the treaty of Resettle- Vienna (1814). (1) Austria was to have Galicia and the ment by | salt-mines of Wieliczka. treaty

heen mutilated in this fashion, it yet enjoyed tranquillity for a short time, and even made some material progress. Thus some useful manufactures were introduced. In

1788 a remarkable diet was opened which lasted four years,—the longest on record, for the others had only endured a few days or a few weeks at most. At this many important changes were .introduced, such as the amelioration of the condition of the burghers and peasants ; but it was now too late. On this occasion the liberum veto was decisively suppressed and the throne declared hereditary. The elector of Saxony, grandson of the wretched and incapable Augustus III., was declared the successor of Stanislaus. The Roman Catholic was to be the dominant religion, but the Dissidents were to be toler- ated. The burghers were to send deputies to the diet on the same footing as the nobles. The peasants were not yet emancipated, but their condition was improved. The new constitution was finally promulgated on the 3d May 1791. The king and the two chambers took the oaths to preserve it. The country now seemed to breathe afresh, and to be established upon a new basis. But the selfish- ness of the Polish nobles, who had always been the evil genius of the country, overturned all the arrangements. Among the most prominent non-contents was Felix Potocki, who was anxious to restore to the nobility the privileges they had lost by the new constitution. In concert with him were Francis Xavier Branicki and Severin Rzewuski, who sought the assistance of foreign powers, and especially Russia. These enemies of their country formed, in 1792, the Confederation of Targovica, and soon afterwards at their instigation Russian troops invaded Poland and Lithuania. The feeble king, Stanis- laus Augustus, made no resistance ; he signed the conven- tion of Targovica, and the Russians occupied Warsaw. In 1793 another treaty of partition was signed, by which Prussia acquired the remainder of Great and a portion of Little Poland, and the Russian boundary was advanced to the centre of Lithuania and Volhynia. An insurrection now broke out under the leadership of Thaddeus Kosci- uszko, which at first made head against the Prussians and Russians, who had invaded the country from all quarters ; but

the successes of the insurgents were stained by the murders committed by the popular party at Warsaw. Suwaroff now entered the country, and Kosciuszko was finally defeated and made prisoner at the battle of Macie-Jowice in 1794; there is no truth, however, in the assertion

(2) Posen was to belong to Prussia. This power was also confirmed in what it had gained at the first partition. (3) The city and district of Cracow were to form an independent republic under the guarantee of the three powers. This historical town was annexed by Austria in 1846 in defiance of all international law. (4) The remainder of ancient Poland, comprising the chief parts of the recent grand-duchy of Warsaw (embracing a tract bounded by a line drawn from Thorn to near Cracow on the west, to the Bug and Niemen in the east), reverted to Russia, and was to form a constitutional kingdom subject to the czar. This constitution, consider- ing the circumstances, was a very liberal one. Poland was to be governed by responsible ministers, a senate, and a legislative chamber. There were to be a national army under the national flag and a separate budget. Polish was to be the official language; personal liberty and the freedom of the press were also guaranteed. It was obvious from the first that it would be difficult to unite a country with such a liberal constitution to another still governed by a patriarchal despotism. Zajacek was named viceroy, and the grand-duke Constantine, brother of the emperor Alexander, took the command of the army.

The rebellions of the Poles in 1830 and 1863 more properly belong to Russian history ; perhaps, however, a few facts connected with them may be appropriately intro- duced here.

Considering the delicate position of affairs in Russian Poland, things had worked fairly well. The impulse to the Polish revolution was undoubtedly given by the French. It was begun by some students, who hoped to seize the grand-duke Constantine at his residence, Belvedere, in the vicinity of Warsaw. In the evening of November 29, 1830, they accordingly proceeded to the palace, but did not succeed in capturing the grand-duke. The city, however, rose, the troops fraternized with the people, and the chief command was entrusted to General Chlopicki, a veteran of the wars of Napoleon. Early in 1831 a large Russian army, commanded by Diebitsch,

advanced to reduce them to submission. Chlopicki laid down his dictatorship, but the Poles pursued the insurrection with vigour under the command of Prince Adam Czartoryski. They were disappointed in their hopes of assistance from foreign powers. On the 8th September Warsaw surrendered to

Vienna.

Rebellio of 1830.

LITERATURE. |

Pe AN D

299

Paskewitch, who had taken the command, Diebitsch having | the closest affinities with the Czech or Bohemian and

died of cholera (June 10th), and a few weeks afterwards the grand-duke Constantine died at Vitebsk. On February 26, 1832, Poland was declared a Russian province,

Rebellion – No other outbreak occurred till 1863, but for some of 1363. time previously the country had been disturbed. On the

29th November 1860, on the occasion of the thirtieth anniversary of the revolution of 1830, many political manifestations took place both in the churches and streets, and portraits of Kosciuszko and Kilinski, a patriot of the time of the last partition, were distributed. Some riots took place, and unfortunately several persons were killed. These proceedings were followed’ by concessions from the emperor Alexander, who established municipal

institutions in Warsaw and the chief cities of the king-

dom. The Russian czar was acting under the advice of Wielopolski, a Pole, who was appointed director of public instruction and worship. Riots, however, still continued, and in 1862 the – grand-duke Constantine was

named viceroy. On the night of January 15, 1863, a secret conscription was held, and the persons sus- pected of being most hostile to the Government were dragged from their beds and enlisted as soldiers. Immedi- ately after this the insurrection broke out, which was directed by a secret committee (Rzad), the proceedings of which were as mysterious as those of the Fehmgerichte. Soon after bands of rebels began to make their appearance in the Polish forests. There were, however, no regular battles between the Russian troops and the Poles,—only guerilla fighting, in which the Poles, under the greatest disadvantages, showed splendid heroism. The secret emissaries of the revolutionary Government, armed with daggers, succeeded in putting to death many Russian spies—not the least memorable case being that of the Jew Hermani, stabbed while on the staircase of the Hotel de l'Europe at Warsaw. On the other hand the chiefs of the insurgents captured were shot or hanged. Langiewicz held out for some time, but was defeated by the Russians, and succeeded in making his escape into Galicia. A reign of terror was inaugurated by General

Lusatian Wendish (see Stavonic Laneuacss). Unlike the people of other Slavonic countries, the Poles are com- paratively poor in popular and legendary poetry, but such compositions undoubtedly existed in early times, as may be seen by the writings of their chroniclers ; thus Gallus translated into Latin a poem written on Bolestaw the Brave, and a few old Polish songs are included in Wojcicki's Inbrary of Ancient Writers. A great deal of the early literature written in Poland is in Latin. The earliest specimen of the Polish language is the so-called Psalter of Queen Margaret, discovered in 1826 at the convent of St Florian. The date of the MS. appears to be the middle of the 14th century, and probably in its present form it is only a copy of a much older text; there is also a trans- lation of the fiftieth psalm belonging to thé 13th cen- tury.!_ The ancient Polish hymn or war song, '"'Piesn Boga Rodzica," was an address to the Virgin, sung by the Poles when about to fight. The oldest manuscript of this pro- duction is dated 1408, and is preserved at Cracow. By a legend which subsequently grew up the composition of it was assigned to St Adalbert. John Lodzia, bishop of Posen from 1335 to 1346, composed several religious songs in Latin.

The next monument of Polish literature to which we come is the Bible of Queen Sophia or Bible of Szarosz- patak. It is imperfect, and only contains

the early books, viz., the Pentateuch, Joshua, Ruth, and Kings; there are, however, fragments of three others. It is said to have been written for Sophia, the fourth wife of Jagielto, about the year 1455. It has been edited with great care by Matecki. Five religious songs in Polish dating from the 15th century have been preserved; they are ascribed to Andrew Slopuchowski, prior of the monastery of the Holy Cross on Lysa Gora. There is also the fragment of a hymn in praise of Wickliffe. To these fragments may be added the prayer book of a certain Wactaw, a sermon on marriage, and some Polish glosses. These are all the exist- ing memorials of the Polish language before the 16th century. ———

Perhaps a few words should be said concerning the The writers in Latin. Martin Gallus lived in Poland between Latin 1110 and 1135. From his name he has been supposed by 270″

Mouravieff, and all attempts at reconciliation made by the great powers of Europe were useless. By May 1864 the

rebellion was quite suppressed, and it will be seen by the ome

results that it cost Poland dear. The kingdom of Poland now ceased to exist; it has been parcelled out into six governments. The Russian language was ordered to be used in all public documents instead of Polish, and the university of Warsaw has been Russified, all lectures now being delivered in that language.

We have not dwelt upon the terrible massacres of the Polish nobles by the peasants in Galicia in 1846, said to have been instigated by the Austrian Government. This province has been tolerably quiet since, but the Poles have to struggle with the large Ruthenian or Red-Russian popu- lation, speaking a different language, and adherents of the Greek Church or Uniates.

In Prussian Poland, though it is but fair to add that we hear no stories of massacres, the Germanization of the pro- vince has been more complete. Posen will soon be lost as a Polish town, and many historical places have had their uames obliterated for such substitutes as Bismarcksdorf and Sedan.

PowuisH LITERATURE.

The Polish Language, according to the latest statistics, is still spoken by nearly ten millions of people, distributed, according to the Revue Slave (Warsaw, 1878, vol. i. p. 78), as follows :—in Russia, 4,640,000; in Austria, 2,444,200; in Prussia, 2,405,800; in Turkey, 10,000. It belongs to the western branch of the Slavonic tongues, and exhibits

some to have been a Frenchman, and we must remember that Poland swarmed at that time with foreign ecclesias- tics. Lelewel, the Polish historian, considers that it is merely a translation into Latin of some such name as Kura, signifying “a fowl.” Others suppose him to have been an Italian, or a monk from the convent of St Gall in Switzerland. He has plenty of legends to tell us, and writes altogether in a poetical style, so that his prose seems to fall into rhythm unconsciously. His quotations from the classics, Sallust, Lucan, and others, show the extent of his reading. Gallus was followed by Matthew Cholewa and Vincent Kadlubek, two bishops of Cracow, and Bogufal or Boguchwal (Gottlob), bishop of Posen, who all used Latin. The work of Kadlubek is more ornate in dictton than that of Bogufal and for a long time enjoyed great popularity. He was born in 1160, educated at the university of Paris, and died in Poland in 1223,as aCistercian monk. His Latin, like that of Gallus, is far from classical, but he writes with spirit and throws a good deal of light upon the events of his time.

| The education of the country was wholly in the hands of

the ecclesiastics, many of whom were foreigners. In this way we must explain the great prevalence of the Latin language. Such a system would be sure to stifle all national outgrowth, and accordingly we have among the

1 The Psalter is called after Margaret, the first wife of King Louis, who died in 1349, bya mere conjecture. Caro thinks it more probable that the book belonged to Mary, his daughter.

Dlugosz.

re tkaAwn®

[LITERATURE..

Poles none of those early monuments of the language which | Poles who have made themselves known beyond the limits

other countries boast. For instance, there are no béliné or legendary poems, such as are found among the Russians, although many passages in the ancient chroniclers from

their poetical colouring seem to be borrowed from old | songs or legends, and the first verses of some of these |

compositions have been preserved. Mention may here be made of other chroniclers such as Martin the Pole (Polonus), who died in 1279 or 1280, and Jan of Czarnkow, who died in 1389; the latter was the historian and panegyrist of Kazimiérz the Great. With the reign of Kazimiérz III. (1333-1370) must be associated the statutes of Wislhica. Jadwiga, the wife of Jagielto, was mainly instrumental in creating the university of Cracow, which was not founded, however, till 1400. In this institution for many years all the great men of Poland were trained—among others Gregory of Sanok, Dlugosz, and Copernicus. Kazimiérz the Great may be said to have laid the foundation of this

university. Having obtained the consent of Pope Urban |

V., he established at Cracow a studiwm generale on the model of the university of Bologna. It consisted of three faculties—Roman law, medicine, and philosophy. But the aristocratic youth still preferred frequenting the universities of Prague, Padua, and Paris, and accordingly the newly- founded studium languished. Jadwiga, however, obtained from Boniface IX. permission to create a new chair, that of theology ; and the university of Cracow was remodelled, having been reorganized on the same basis as that of Paris. Another university was founded later at Vilna by Batory, and one at Zamosé by the chancellor Zamoiski. were also good schools in various places, such as the Collegium Lubrafiskiego of Posen and the school of St Mary at Cracow.

The first press from which books in the Polish language

appeared was that of Hieronymus Wietor, a Silesian, who | A few fragments printed |

commenced publishing in 1515. in Polish had appeared before this, as the Lord's Prayer in

the statutes of the bishops of Breslau in 1475, the story of |

Pope Urban in Latin, German, and Polish in 1505, &c.;

but the first complete work in the Polish language appeared | from the press of this printer at Cracow in 1521, under the |

title Speeches of the Wise King Solomon. The translation was executed by Jan Koszycki, as the printer informs us in the preface, and the work is dedicated to Anna Wojnicka, the wife of a castellan. In 1522, a Polish translation of Ecclesiastes appeared from that press, and before the conclusion of that year Zhe Life of Christ, with woodcuts, translated into Polish by Balthasar Opec. presses were soon established. Printers of repute at Cracow, during the 16th and beginning of the 17th century, were Sybeneicher and Piotrkowezyk.

Little as yet had been produced in Polish, as the chroniclers still adhered to Latin; and here mention must be made of Jan Dlugosz, who called himself Longinus. He was bishop of Lemberg, the capital of Galicia, and has left usa very valuable history which has merits of style and shows considerable research. So anxious was Dlugosz to make his work as perfect as he could that he learned Russian so as to be able to read the Chronicle of Nestor. The best part of his book is that which treats of the period between 1386 and 1480. About 1500 was written an interesting little work entitled " Memoirs of a Polish Janissary" (Pamietniki Ianczara Polaka). written in the Polish language, it was probably the pro- duction of a Serb, Michael Konstantinovich of Ostro- vitza. He was taken prisoner by the Turks in 1455 and served ten years among the Janissaries, after which he

escaped into Hungary. About this time also flourished

Nicholas Copernicus, a native of Thorn, one of the few

There |

In the year 1474 a press was set up in | the latter city, where Giinther Zainer printed the first book. |

Many other |

Although |

i

of their country.

The Poles call the period between 1548 and 1606 their’ golden age. Poland was the great land of eastern Europe, and owing to the universal toleration encouraged by the Government Protestantism was widely spread. Many of the chief nobility were Calvinists, and the Socini came to reside in the country. All this, however, was to pass away under the great Jesuit reaction. At Rakow in Poland was published the catechism of the Socinian doctrines in 1605. The Jesuits made their appearance in Poland in 1564, and soon succeeded in getting the schools of the country into their hands. Besides extirpating the various sects of Pro- testants, they also busied themselves with destroying the Greek Church in Lithuania. Latin poetry was cultivated with great success by Clement Janicki (1516-1543), but the earliest poet of repute who wrote in Polish is Rej of Nagtowice (1505-69). After a somewhat idle youth he betook himself to poetry. He was a Protestant, and among other religious works translated the Psalms. His best work was Zwierciadto albo zywot Poczciwego Caowieka (“The Mirror or Life of an Honourable Man”),—a some- what tedious didactic piece. He was also the author of a kind of play—a mystery we may term it, and productions of this sort seem to have been common in Poland from a very early time—entitled Life of Joseph in Egypt. This piece is interesting merely from an anti- quarian point of view; there is but little poetry in it. It teems with anachronisms; thus we have mention of the mass and organs, and also of a German servant.

Jan Kochanowski (1530-1584), called the prince of Polish poets, came of a poetical family, having a brother, a cousin, and a nephew who all enriched the literature of their country with some productions. Kochanowski studied for some time at the university of Padua, and also resided in Paris, where he

made the acquaintance of Ronsard, then one of the most celebrated poets. He exercised his talents in various ways; thus he has left Zhe Game of Chess, an imitation of Vida, and Proporzec albo Hold Pruski ("The Standard or Investiture of Prussia"), where he describes the fealty done by Albert of Brandenburg to Sigismund Augustus. He also wrote the first regular play, and executed a translation of the Psalms. The title of his play —a piece of one act, with twelve scenes—is The Despatch of the Greek Ambassadors. It is written in rhymeless five-foot iambics, and is altogether a product of the Renaissance, reminding us of some of the productions of George Buchanan. Rhyme is employed in the choruses only. It was acted on the marriage of the chancellor Jan Zamoiski with Christine Radziwitt, in the presence of King

| Stephen and his wife, at Ujazdowo near Warsaw, in 1578.

The poet's most popular work, however, is his Treny or " Lamentations," written on the death of his daughter Ursula. These beautiful elegies have been justly praised by Mickiewicz ; they are enough to raise Kochanowski far above the level of a merely artificial poet. Besides poems in Polish, he also wrote some in Latin. It will be observed that we get this double-sided authorship in many Polish writers. They composed for an exclusive and learned circle, certainly not for the Jew, the German trader of the town, or the utterly illiterate peasant. It may be said with truth of Kochanowski that, although the form of his poetry is classical and imitated from classical writers, the matter is Polish, and there is much national feeling in what he has left us. Mention must also be made of his epigrams, which he styled " Trifles " (Fraszkz) ; they are full of spirit and geniality. Stanislaus Grochowski (1554-1612) was a priest ; but his poetry is of little merit, although he was celebrated in his time as a writer of panegyrics. His satire Babie Kolo ("The Women's Circle "') gave offence on account

Kochan-

Szymono- wicz.

LITERATURE. |

of its personalities. A great partisan of the Catholics in the time of Sigismund III. was Caspar Miaskowski, whose Waleta Wtoszczonowska (“Farewell to his Native Country”) deserves mention. Szarzytiski, who died young in 1581, deserves notice as having introduced the sonnet to the Poles. This species of poetry was afterward to be carried to great perfection by Mickiewicz and Gaszynski. Szymonowicz (1554-1624) was a writer of good pas- torals. Although they are imitated from classical writers, he has introduced many scenes of national life, which he describes with much vigour. Among the best are “The Lovers,” “The Reapers,” and “The Cake” (Kotacz). Mickiewicz is very loud in his praise, and considers him one of the best followers of Theocritus. The condition, however, of the Polish peasants was too miserable to admit of their being easily made subjects for bucolic

re On AND

Sigismund ITI. Besides the Latin histories of Wapowski and Gwagnin (Guagnini, of Italian origin), we have the first historical work in Polish by Martin Bielski, a Pro- testant, viz., Kronika Polska, which was afterwards con- tinued by his son. The author was born in 1495 on his father’s estate, Biata, and was educated, like so many other

| of his illustrious contemporaries, at the university of Cra-

cow. He lived to the age of eighty; but, however great were the merits of his Chronicle, it was long considered a suspicious book on account of the leanings of the author to Calvinism. After his death his work was continued by his son Joachim (1540-1599). There is also a Chronicle by Bartholomew Paprocki. In 1582 was also published the Chronicle of Stryjkowski, full of curious learning, and still of great use to the student of history. Five years later appeared the Annales Polonie of Sarnicki. The

poetry. There is an artificial air about the, idyls of | last three works are in Latin.

Szymonowicz which makes one feel too keenly that they A few words may be said here about the spread of Spread are productions of the Renaissance; one of their best | Protestantism in Poland, which is so intimately mixed up of Pro- features is the humane spirit towards the miserable | with the development of the national language. The eal

peasantry which they everywhere display. Another ex- cellent writer of pastorals was Zimorowicz, a native of Lemberg, who died at the early age of twenty-five. Some of his short lyrics are very elegant, and remind us of Herrick and Carew,—e.g., that beginning " Ukochana Lancelloto ! Ciebie nie prosze o ztoto." Another writer of pastorals, but not of equal merit, was Jan Gawinski, a native of Cracow. Some good Latin poetry was written by Casimir Sarbiewski, better known in the west of Europe as Sarbievius (d. 1640). He was considered to have approached Horace more nearly than any other modern poet, and a gold medal was given him by Pope Urban VIII. Martin Kromer (1512-1589) wrote a history of Poland in thirty books, and another volume, giving a description of the country and its institutions,—both in Latin. The history is written in an easy style and is a work of great merit. A poet of some importance was Klonowicz (1545-1602), who Latinized his name into Acernus, Alon being the Polish for maple, and wrote in both Latin and Polish. Sometimes he is descriptive, as in his Polish poem entitled (lis ("The Boatman"), in which he gives a detailed account of the scenery on the banks of the Vistula. There is some poetry in this composition, but it alternates with very prosaic details. In another piece, Rhoxolania, in Latin, he describes the beauties of Galicia. Occasionally he is didactic, as in Worek Judaszow ("The Bag of Judas") and Victoria Deorum, where, under the allegory of the gods of Olympus, he represents the struggles of parties in Poland, not without severely satirizing the nobility and ecclesiastics. A curious work called Quincunz, written by Orzechowski, is concerned with religious pol- emics. Andrew Modrzewski, a Protestant, in his work De Republica Emendanda (1551), recommended the establishment of a national church which -should be independent of Rome, something upon the model of the Anglican.

A florid Jesuitical style of oratory became very popular in the time of Sigismund IIL, not without rhetorical power, but frequently becoming tawdry. _The chief repre- sentative of this school was Peter Skarga, one of

the main agents in extirpating Calvinism in Poland and the Greek Church in Lithuania. Among his numerous writings may be mentioned Lives of the Saints, Discourses on the Seven Sacraments, and especially his sermons preached before the diet, in which he lashed the Poles for their want of patriotism and prophesied the downfall of the country. Mecherzynski, in his “History of Eloquence in Poland” (Historya Wymowy w Polsce), especially praises his two funeral sermons on the burial of Anna Jagieltonka, widow of Stephen Batory, and Anna of Austria, first wife of

doctrines of Huss had entered the country in very early times, and we find Polish recensions of Bohemian hymns ; even the hymn to the Virgin previously mentioned is sup- posed to have a Czech basis. The bishops were soon active against those who refused to conform to the doctrines of the Roman Church. Thus we find that Bishop Andrew of Bnin seized five Hussite priests and caused them to be burnt in the market of Posen in 1439. A hundred years afterwards a certain Katharina Malcher, on account of her Utraquist opinions, was condemned by Gamrat, the bishop of Cracow, to be burnt, which sentence was accordingly carried out in the ragmarket at Cracow. As early as 1530 Lutheran hymns were sung in the Polish language at Thorn. In Konigsberg John Seklucyan, a personal friend of Luther, published a collection of Christian Songs. He was born in Great Poland, and was at first a Roman Catholic priest in Posen, but afterwards embraced the Protestant faith and was invited by Duke Albert as a preacher to Konigsberg, where he died in 1578. He exe- cuted the first translation of the New Testament in 1551. Four years afterwards appeared a complete Polish Bible published by Scharffenberg at Cracow. In 1553 appeared at Brzes¢é the Protestant translation of the whole Bible made by a committee of learned men and divines, and published at the expense of Nicholas Radziwilt, a very rich Polish magnate who had embraced the Protestant doctrines. This book is now of great rarity because his son Christopher, having been induced to become a Roman Catholic by the Jesuit Skarga, caused all copies of his father’s Bible which he could find to be burnt. One, how- ever, is to be seen in the Bodleian Library, and another in the library of Christ Church, at Oxford. A Socinian Bible was issued by Simon Budny in 1570 at Nieswiez, as he professed to find many faults in the version issued under the patronage of Radziwill; in 1597 ap- peared the Roman Catholic version of the Jesuit Wujek ; and in 1632 the so-called Dantzic

Bible, which is in use among Protestants and is still the most frequently reprinted.

Up to this time Polish literature, although frequently Macaronic rhetorical and too much tinctured with classical influences, period.

had still exhibited signs of genius. But now, owing to the frivolous studies introduced by the Jesuits, the so-called macaronic period supervened, which lasted from 1606 to 1764, and was a time of great degradation for the language and literature. The former was now mixed with Latin and classical expressions; much of the literature consists of fulsome panegyric, verses written on the marriages and funerals of nobles, with conceits and fantastic ideas, devoid of all taste, drawn from their

coats of arms. The poets of this period are, as may | nobleman underwent is furnished by the instructions

be imagined, in most cases mere rhymsters; there are, however, a few whose names are worth recapitulating, such as Wactaw Potocki (c. 1622-c. 1696), now known to have been the author of the Wojna Chocimska, or “ War of Khotin,” the same campaign which afterwards formed the subject of the epic of Krasicki. At first the author was supposed to have been Andrew Lipski, but the real poet was traced by the historian Szajnocha. The epic, which remained in manuscript till 1850, is a genuine representation of Polish life; no picture so faithful ap- peared till the Pan V’adeusz of Mickiewicz. Moreover Potocki had the good taste to avoid the macaronic style so much in vogue; his language is pure and vigorous. He does not hesitate to introduce occasionally satirical remarks on the luxury of the times, which he compares, to its disadvantage, with the simplicity of the old Polish life. There is also another poem attributed to Potocki called the Vew Mercury. In one passage he censures King Michael for ceding Podolia to the Turks. Samuel Twar- dowski (1600-1660) was the most prolific poet of

the period of the Vasas. His most important poem is Wtadystaw EV., King of Poland, in which he sings in a very bombastic strain the various expeditions of the Polish monarch. III. and Wtadystaw IV., and Rudawski, who describes events from the acces- sion of John Casimir to the peace of Oliwa (1648-1660) ; and as valuable materials for history may be mentioned the five huge volumes of Andrew Chrysostom Zatuski (1711), bishop of Warmia. This work is entitled Hpistole Historico-Familiares. It would be impossible to recapitu- late here the great quantity of material in the shape of memoirs which has come down, but mention must be made of those of John Chrysostom Pasek, a nobleman of Masovia, who has left us very graphic accounts of life and society in Poland; after a variety of adventures and many a well-fought battle, he returned to the neighbour- hood of Cracow, where he died between 1699 and 1701. Some of the most characteristic stories illustrating Polish history are drawn from this book. A later period, that of the miserable epoch of Augustus IIL. is described very graphically in the memoirs of Matuszewicz, first edited by Pawinski at Warsaw in 1876. Relating to the same period are also the memoirs of Bartholomew Michalowski (Pamietniki Lartlomigja Michalowskiego). A curious in- sight into the course of education which a young Polish

which James Sobieski, the father of the celebrated John, gave to Orchowski the tutor of his sons. This has been twice printed in comparatively recent times (Jnstrukcya Jakoba Sobieskiego kasztelana Krakowskiego dana panu Orchowskiemu ze strony synéw, Vilna, 1840). The old gentleman in his aristocratic imperiousness frequently reminds us of the amusing directions given by Sir John Wynne to his chaplain, quoted in Pennant’s Jour in Wales.

A History of the Inthuanians in Latin was published by the Jesuit Koiatowicz; the first volume appeared at Dantzic in 1650.

A notable man was Joseph Andrew Zatuski, bishop of Zatuski.

Kieff, a Pole who had become thoroughly Frenchified,—so much so that he preached in French to the fashionable congregations of Warsaw. He collected a splendid library of about 300,000 volumes and 15,000 manuscripts, which he bequeathed to the Polish nation ; but it was afterwards carried off to St Petersburg, where it formed the founda- tion of the imperial public library. According to Nitsch- mann in his Geschichte der

Polnischen Litteratur—a work which has been of service in the preparation of this article—the books were transported to Russia very care- lessly, and many of them injured by the way. It was especially rich in works relating to Polish history. Kon- arski edited in six volumes a valuable work entitled Volumina Legum, containing a complete collection of Polish laws from the time of the statute of Wislica. He did much good also in founding throughout the country schools for the education of the sons of the upper classes, but as yet nothing had been done for popular education properly so-called. About the close of this period we have some valuable writers on Polish history, which now began to be studied critically, such as Hartknoch in his Alt- und Neues Preussen (1684), a work in which are pre- served interesting specimens of the old Prussian language, and Lengnich (1689-1774), author of the valuable Jus Publicum Regni Polonizx, which appeared in 1742.

We now come to the reign of the last Polish king, Stan- istaw Poniatowski, and the few quiet years before the final division of the country, during which the French taste was all-powerful. This is the second great period of the development of Polish literature, which has known nothing of medieval romanticism. The literature of the first or Renaissance period gives us some good poets, who although occasionally imitators are not without national feeling, and a goodly array of chroniclers, most of whom made use of Latin. In the second or French period we get verse- makers rather than poets, who long to be Frenchmen, and sigh over the barbarism of their country ; but the study of history in a critical spirit is beginning under the influence of Naruszewicz, Albertrandi, and others. In the third period, that of modern romanticism, we get true national- ism, but it is too often the literature of exile and despair. Here may be mentioned, although living a little time before the reign of Stanistaw, a Polish poetess, Elizabeth Druzbacka (1695-1760), whose writings show a feeling for nature at a time when verse-making of the most artificial type was prevalent throughout the country. The portrait prefixed to the Leipsic edition of her works is a striking one, representing a handsome, intel- lectual-looking woman, dressed in the garb of some religious order. Her Life of David in verse appears tedious, but many of the descriptions in the Seasons

_Krasicki.

of the Dalmatian Gundulié.

POL

are elegant. Unfortunately she introduces Latinisms, so that her Polish is by no means pure. A national theatre was founded at Warsaw in 1765 under the influence of the court, but it was not till long after- wards that anything really national connected with the drama appeared in Poland. Thomas Kajetan Wegierski, who was chamberlain to the king, enjoyed a considerable reputation among his countrymen for his satirical writing. He was a kind of Polish Churchill, and like his English parallel died young (1755-1787). His life also appears to have been as irregular as Churchill's. In consequence of an attack on the empress of Russia, he was compelled to leave Poland, and accordingly made a tour in Italy, France, America, and England, dying at Marseilles at the early age of thirty-three. His poetry shows the influence of the French taste, then prevalent throughout Europe. In times of great national disasters he deserves to be remem- bered as a true patriot; but the spirit of his poetry is altogether unwholesome. It is the wailing cry of a mori- bund nation. was Trembecki (1722-1812), whose sympathies were too much with the Russian invaders of his country. He was little more than a fluent poetaster, and is now almost for- gotten. One of his most celebrated pieces was Zofjowka, written on the country seat of Felix Potocki, a Polish magnate, for this was the age of descriptive as well as didactic poetry. Perhaps the English gave the hint in such productions as ‘“‘Cooper's Hill.” The old age of Trembecki appears to have been ignoble and neglected ; he had indeed “fallen upon evil days and evil tongues”; and when he died at an advanced age all the gay courtiers of whom he had been the parasite were either dead or had submitted to the Muscovite yoke. He comes before us as a belated epicurean, whose airy trifles cannot be warbled in an atmosphere surcharged with tempests and gunpowder. The end of the 18th century was not the period for a court poet in Poland.

The most conspicuous poet, however, of the time was Igfiatius Krasicki, bishop of Warmia (1735-1801). He was the friend of Frederick the Great and a prominent member of the king's literary club at Sans Souci. Krasicki wrote an epic on the war of Khotin,—the same as had furnished the subject of the poem of Potocki, of which Krasicki in all probability had never

heard, and also that Krasicki's poem is at best but a dull affair, in fact a pale copy of a poor original, the Henriade of Voltaire. His mock heroics are, to say the least, amusing, and among these may be mentioned Myszeis, where he describes how King Popiel, according to the legend, was eaten up by rats. His Jlonachomachia is in six cantos, and is a satire upon the monks. The bishop was also the writer of some pretty good comedies. In fact most styles of composition were attempted by him,—of course satires and fables among the number. He presents himself to us much more like a transplanted French abbé than a Pole. In the year 1801 he travelled to Berlin, and died there after a short illness. Among his other works the bishop published in 1781-82 in two volumes a kind of encyclopedia of belles lettres entitled Zbibr Wradomoscr. His estimates of various great poets are not very accurate. Of course he finds Shakespeare a very "incorrect" author, although he is willing to allow him considerable praise for his vigour. Another bishop-poet was Adam Naruszewicz. The existence of so many ecclesi- astical writers was a natural feature in Polish literature; they formed the only really cultured class in the community, which consisted besides of a haughty ignorant nobility living among their serfs, and (at a vast distance) those serfs themselves, in a brutalized condition, Burghers there were, properly speaking, none, for most of the citizens in

the large towns were foreigners governed by the Jus Magdeburgicum. Naruszewicz has not the happy vivacity of Krasicki; he attempts all kinds of poetry, especially satire and fable. He is at best but a mediocre poet ; but he has succeeded better as a historian, and especially to be praised is his " History of the Polish Nation" (Historya Narodu Polskiego), which, however, he was not able to carry further than the year 1386. He also wrote an account of the Polish general Chodkiewicz and translated Tacitus and Horace. Interesting memoirs have been pub- lished by Kilinski, a Warsaw shoemaker, and Kosmian, state referendary, who lived about this time and saw much of the War of Independence and other political affairs. Among the smaller poets of this period may be mentioned Karpitski (1741-1828), a

writer of sentimental elegies in the style then so very much in fashion, and Kniaznin, who nourished his muse on classical themes and wrote some odes ; but his poetry is not of a high order. He was the court poet of Prince Adam Czartoryski at Pulawy, and furnished odes in commemoration of all the important events which occurred in the household. He lost his reason on the downfall of Poland, and died after eleven years' insanity in 1807. Julian Ursin Niemcewicz (1757— 1841) was one of the most popular of Polish poets at the commencement of the present century (see NIEMCEWICZ). His most popular work is the "Collection of Historical Songs" (Spiewy Listorycene), where he treats of the chief heroes of Polish history. Besides these he wrote one or two good plays, and a novel in letters, on the story of two Jewish lovers. John Paul Woronicz (1757-1829) born in Volhynia, and at the close of his life bishop of Warsaw and primate of Poland, was a very eloquent divine, and has been called the modern Skarga. A valuable worker in the field of Slavonic philology was Linde, the author of an excellent Polish dictionary in six volumes. For a long time the cultivation of Polish philology was in a low state, owing to the prevalence of Latin in the 17th century and French in the 18th. No Polish grammar worthy of the name appeared till that of Kopczynski at the close of the 18th century, but the reproach has been taken away in modern times by the excellent works of Matecki and Malinowski. Rakowiecki, who edited the Rousskaia Pravda, and Macieiowski (who died in 1883, aged ninety), author of a valuable work on Slavonic law, may here be mentioned. Here we have a complete survey of all the leading codes of Slavonic jurisprudence. At a later period (in 1856) appeared the work of Helcel, Starodawne prawa polskiégo pomniki (" Ancient Memorials of Polish Law"). Aloysius Feliriski (1771-1820) produced an historical tragedy, Barbara Radzwitt?, and some good comedies were written by Count Alexander Fredro (1793-

1876).

He introduced genuine comedy among his countrymen. The influence of Moliére can be very clearly seen in his pieces ; his youth was spent chiefly in France, where he formed one of the soldiers of the Polish legion of Napoleon and joined in the expedition to Russia. His first produc- tion was Pan Geldhab, written in 1819 and produced at Warsaw in 1821. From 1819 to 1835 he wrote about seventeen pieces and then abandoned publishing,

having taken offence at some severe criticisms. At his death he left several comedies, which were issued in a posthumous edition. There is a good deal of local colouring in the pieces of Fredro; although the style is French, the characters are taken from Polish life. From him may be said to date the formation of anything like a national Polish theatre, so that his name marks an epoch. The Poles, like many of the other nations of Europe, had religious plays at an early period. They were originally

In fact Fredro may be considered the most enter- Polish taining writer for the stage which Poland has produced, drama.

Roman- ticism,

o04

performed in churches; but, Pope Innocent III. finding |

fault with this arrangement, the acting was transferred to churchyards. Mention has already been made of plays written by Rej and Kochanowski; they are mere fruits of the Renaissance, and cannot in any way be considered national. The wife of John Casimir, a Frenchwoman, Marie Louise, hired a troop of French actors and first familiarized the Poles with something which resembled the modern stage. The Princess Franciszka Radziwitt com- posed plays which were acted at her private residence, but they are spoken of as inartistic and long and tedious. The national theatre was really founded in the reign of Stanislaus Augustus; and good plays were produced by Bohomolec, Kamizski, Kropiriski, Boguslawski, Zablocki, and others. Perhaps, however, with the exception of the works of Fredro, the Poles have not produced anything of much merit in this line. A great statesman and writer of the later days of Polish nationality was Koltataj, born at Sandomir in 1750. He was a man of liberal sentiments, and, had his plans been carried out, Poland might have been saved. He wished to abolish serfdom and throw open state employments to all. The nobility, liowever, were too infatuated to be willing to adopt these wise measures. Like the French aristocrats with the reforms of Necker, they would not listen till ruin had overtaken them. During the last war of Poland as an independent country Koltataj betook himself to the camp of Kosciuszko, but when he saw that there was no longer hope he went to

Galicia, but was captured by the Austrians and imprisoned at Olmiitz till 1803. He died in 1812. An active co-operator with Koltataj was Salesius Jezierski, who founded clubs for the discussion of political questions, and Stanislaus Staszic, who did much for education and improved the condition of the university of Warsaw.

The reputation of all preceding poets in Poland was now destined to be thrown into the shade by the appear- ance of Mickiewicz (1798-1855), the great introducer of romanticism into the country (see Mickiewicz). Poland, as has been said before, is not rich in national songs and legendary poetry, in which respect it cannot compare with its sister Slavonic countries Russia and Servia. Collec- tions have appeared, however, by Wactaw Zaleski, who writes under the pseudonyms of Wactaw z Oleska, Wojcicki, Roger, Zegota Pauli, and especially Oskar Kolberg. Poland and Lithuania, however, abounded with supersti- tions and legends which only awaited the coming poet to put them into verse. In the year 1851 Romuald Ziefkie- wicz published Songs of the People of Pinsk, and collections have even appeared of those of the Kashoubes, a remnant of the Poles living near Dantzic. Mickiewicz had had a predecessor, but of far less talent, Casimir Brodzinski (1791-1835). He served under Napoleon in the Polish legion, and has left a sinall collection of poems, the most important being the idyl Wiestaw, in which the manners of the peasants of the district of Cracow are faithfully portrayed. The second great poet of the romantic school who appeared in Poland after Mickiewicz was Julius Stowacki (1809-1849), born at Krzemieniec. In 1831 he left his native country and chose Paris as his residence, where he died. His writings are full of the fire of youth, and show great beauty and elegance of expression. We can trace in them the influence of Byron and Victor Hugo. He is justly considered one of the greatest of the modern poets of Poland. His most celebrated pieces are Hugo ; Mnich (“The Monk”); Lambro, a Greek corsair, quite in the style of Byron; Anhelli, a very Dantesque poem express- ing under the form of an allegory the sufferings of Poland; Krol Duch (“The Spirit King”), another mysterious and allegorical poem; Wactaw, on the same subject as the Marya of Malezewski, to be afterwards noticed ; Beniowski, a long

poem in ottava rima on this strange adventurer, something in the style of Byron's humorous poems; Aordyan, of the same school as the English poet's Manfred; Lilla Weneda, a poem dealing with the early period of Slavonic history. The life of Stowacki has been published by Professor Anton Matecki in two volumes.

Mickiewicz and Stowacki were both more or less mystics, but even more we may assign this characteristic to Sigis- mund Krasiriski, who was born in 1812 at Paris, and died there in 1859. It would be impossible to analyse here his extraordinary poem WVieboska Komedja ("The Undivine Comedy"), Jrydion, and others. In them Poland, veiled under different allegories, is always the central figure. They are powerful poems written with great vigour of language, but enveloped in clouds of mysticism. 'The life of Krasisiski was embittered by the fact that he was the son of General Vincent Krasitiski who had become unpopular among the Poles by his ad- herence to the Russian Government ; the son wrote anony- mously in consequence, and was therefore called 'The Unknown Poet." Among his latest productions are his "Psalms of the Future" (Psalmy Przysztosci), which were attacked by the democratic party as a defence of aristo-

cratic views which had already ruined Poland. His friend.

Slowacki answered them in some taunting verses, and this led to a quarrel between the poets. One of the most striking pieces of Krasiriski has the title " Resurrecturis." The sorrows of his country and his own physical sufferings have communicated a melancholy tone to the writings of Krasitiski, which read like a dirge, or as if the poet stood always by an open grave—and the grave is that of Poland. He must be considered as, next to Mickiewicz, the greatest poet of the country. Other poets of the romantic school of considerable merit were Gorecki, Witwicki, Odyniec, and Gaszynski; the last-named wrote many exquisite sonnets, which ought alone to embalm his name. Wit- wicki (1800-1847) was son of a professor at Krzemieniec. He was a writer of ballads and poems dealing with rural life, which enjoyed great popularity among his country- men and had the good fortune to be set to music by Chopin. The historical works of Lelewel have already had separate mention (see LELEWEL); but here may be

specified the labours of Narbutt, Daeje Starozytne Narodu Litewskiego (“Early History of the Lithuanian People”), published at Vilna in nine volumes, and the valuable Monumenta Poloniex Historica, edited at Lemberg by Bielowski, of which four volumes have appeared, con- taining reprints of most of the early chroniclers. Bie- lowski died in 1876.

A further development of romanticism was the so-called Ukraine school of poets, such as Malezewski, Goszcezynski, and Zaleski. Anton Malezewski (1793-1826), who died at the early age of thirty-three, wrote one poem, Marya, which passed unnoticed at the time of its publication, but after its author’s death became very popular. Malczewski led a wandering life and became intimate with Byron at Venice ; he is said to have suggested to the latter the story of Mazeppa. Marya is a narrative in verse, written with much feeling and elegance, and ina most harmonious metre. The chief poem of Goszczynski is Zamek Kaniowski (“The Tower of Kanioff”). The most interesting poem of Bogdan Zaleski is his “Spirit of the Steppe” (Duch od Stepu). Other poets of the so-called Ukraine school, which has been so well inspired by the romantic legends of that part of Russia, are Thomas or Timko Padoura (who also wrote in the Malo-Russian, or Little-Russian, language), Alexander Groza, and Thomas Olizarowski. For many of the original songs and legends we must turn to the work of Messrs Antonovich and Dragomanoff. Bogdan Joseph Zaleski was born in 1802 in the Ukraine village, Boha-

Ukraine school.

Recent authors.

terka. in 1820 he was sent to the university of Warsaw, where he had Goszczynski as a fellow-student. Since 1830 he has resided in Paris. Besides the longer poem previously mentioned, he is the author of many charming lyrics in the style of the Little-Russian poems, such as Shevchenko has written in that language. Michael Grabowski (1805- 1863) belongs also to this school by his fine Melodies of the Ukraine. A poet of great vigour was Stephen Garezynski (1806-1833), the friend of

Mickiewicz, celebrated for his War Sonnets and his poem entitled The Deeds of Wactaw.

Among later authors, some of whom still survive, may be men- tioned Wincenty Pol, born in 1807 at Lublin. He wrote a fine descriptive work, Obrazy z Zycia t Podrézy (‘‘ Pictures of Life and Travel”), and also a poem, Piesn 0 Ziemi Naszej (‘Song of our Land”). For about three ycars from 1849 he was professor of geography in the university of Cracow. In 1855 he published Mohort, a poem relating to the times of Stanistaus Poniatowski. Ludwik Wtadystaw Kondratowicz (who wrote chiefly under the name of Syrokomila) was born in 1823 in the government of Minsk. His parents were poor, and he received a meagre education, but made up for it by careful self-culture. One of his most remarkable poems is his Jan Deborog, in which, like Mickiewicz, he has well described the scenery of his native Lithuania. He everywhere appears as the advocate of the sufiering peasants, and has consc- crated to them many beautiful lyrics. In Kaczkowski the Poles have a novelist who has treated many periods of their history with great success. His sympathics, however, are mostly aristocratic, though modified by the desire of progress. An important writer of history is Karl Szajnocha, born in Galicia of Czech parents in 1818. He began his labours with The Age of Casimir the Great (1848), and Bolestaw the Brave (1849), following these with Jadwiga and Jagielto, in three volumes (1855-1856),—a work which Spasovich, in his Russian History of Slavonic Literature, compares in vigour of style and fulness of colour with Macaulay’s History of England and Thierry’s Norman Conquest. Our author was still further to resemble tlie latter writer in a great misfortune ; from overwork he lost his sight in 1857. Szajnocha, however, like Thierry and the American Prescott, did not abandon his studies. His excellent memory helped him in his affliction. In 1858 he

ublished a work in which he traced the origin of Poland from the

arangians (Lechickt poczatek Polski), thus making them identical iu origin with, the Russians. He began to write the history of John Sobieski, but did not live to finish it, dying in 1868, soon after completing a history of the Cossack wars, Dwa lata dziejéw naszych (‘Two Years of Our History”). A writer of romauces of considerable power was Joseph Korzeniowski, tutor

in early youth to the poet Krasinski, and afterwards director of a school at Kharkoff. Besides some plays now forgotten, he was author of some popular novels, such as Wedréwki oryginata (‘‘ Tours of an Original”), 1848; Garbaty (‘The Hunchback”), 1852, &c. He died at Dresden in 1863. But the most fertile of Polish authors beyond all question is Kraszewski (born in 1812). His works con- stitute a library in themselves; they are chiefly historical novels, some of which treat of early times in Poland and some of its condi- tion under the Saxon kings. Up to 1879, when he cclebrated the fiftieth anniversary of his commencing authorship, he had written two hundred and fifty separate works in four hundred and forty volumes. One of the most popular of his novels is Jermota the Potter, a pathetic and noble story, which much resembles George Eliot’s Silas Marner, but appeared in 1857, some time before the publication of that work. A charge of trcason was recently brought against Kraszewski by the German Government, and he is now (1885) undergoing a sentence of imprisonment at Madgeburg. Among the various works of Kraszewski may be mentioned an interesting one on Lithuania (Zitwa), which contains many valuable accounts of Lithuanian customs ; perhaps, however, the historical and philo- logical parts of the work are not always very critically treated. * He is the author of two volumes of poetry. As lyrical poets may also be mentioned Jachowicz, JaSkowski, author of a fine poem The Beginning of Winter, Wasilewski, and Holowinski, archbishop of Moghileff (1807-1855), author of religious poems. The style of poetry in vogue in the Polish parts of Europe at the present time is chiefly lyrical. Other writers deserving mention are Cornelius Ujejski (born in 1828), the poet of the last revolt of 1863; Theophilus Lenartowicz (born 1822), who has written some very graceful poetry ; Sigismund Milkowski (born in 1820), author of romances drawn from Polish history, for the novel of the school of Sir Walter Scott still flourishes vigorously among the Poles. Among the very numerous writers of romanees may be mentioned Henry Rzewuski (1791-1866); Joseph Dzierzkowski wrote novels on aristocratic life, and Michael Czajkowski tales of adventure ; Valerius Wielogtowski (1865) gave pictures of country life. Of course at the head of all writers in this department must be con- sidered the unfortunate Kraszewski.

POLAND

In 1882 the Poles lost, in the prime of life, a very promising historian Szujski (born in 1835), and also Schmitt, who died in his sixty-sixth year. Szujski commenced his literary career in 1859 with poems and dramas; in 1860 appeared his first historical production, Rzat oka na Historye Polski (‘‘A Glance at Polish History”), which attracted universal attention; and in 1862 he commenced the publication in parts of his work Dzieje Polski (‘The History of Poland’’) the printing of which ceased in 1866. The value of this book is great both on account of the research it dis- plays and its philosophical and uuprejudiced style. One of the last works of Szujski, written in German, Die Polen und Ruthenen in Galizien, attracted a great deal of attention at the time of its appearance. Schmitt got mixed up with some of the political questions of the day—he was a native of Galicia and therefore a subject of the Austrian emperor—and was sentenced to death in 1846, but the penalty was commuted into imprisonment in Spielberg, whence he was released by the revolution of 1848. In 1863 he took part in the Polish rebellion, and was compelled to fly to Paris, whence he only returned in 1871. His chief works are fistory of the Polish People from the Earliest Times to the year 1763 (1854), History of Poland in the 18th and 19th Centuries (1866), and History of Poland from the time of the Partition (1868), which he carried down to the year 1832. In opposition to the opinion of many historians, his contemporaries, that Poland fell through the nobility and the diets, Schmitt held (as did Lelewel) that the country was brought to ruin by the kings, who always preferred dynastic interests to those of the country, and by the pernicious influence to the Jesuits. Adalbert Ketrzynski, who succeeded Bielowski in 1877 in his post of director of the Ossolinski Institute at Lemberg, is the author of some valuable monographs on the history of Poland. He was born in 1838. Kasimir Stadnicki has treated of the period of the Jagieltons ; and Szaraniewicz, professor at the university of Lemberg, has written on the carly history of Galicia. Thaddeus Wojciechowski has published a clever work on Slavonic antiquities. Xavier Liske, born in 1838, and now pro- fessor of universal history at Lemberg, has published many historical essays of considerable value, and must be a linguist of great attainments, as separate works by him have appeared in the German, Polish, Swedish, Danish, and Spanish languages. The ‘Sketch of the History of Poland” (Dzteje Polskie w Zarysie) by Michael Bobrzynski,

born in 1849 in Cracow (where he is professor of Polish and German law), is a very spirited work, and has given rise to a great deal of controversy on account of the opposition of inany of its views to those of the school of Lelewel. Vincent Zakrzewski, now professor of history at Cracow, has written some works which have attracted considerable attention, such as On the Origin and Growth of the Reformation in Poland, and After the Flight of King Henry, in which he describes the condition of the country during the period between that king's departure from Poland and the election of Stephen Batory. Smotka has published a history entitled Mieszko the Elder and his Age. Wtadystaw Wistocki has prepared a catalogue of manuscripts in the Jagielfon library at Cracow. Dr Joseph Casimir Plebafiski is now editor of the Biblioteka Warszawska, a very valuable literary journal which stands at the head of all works of the kindin Poland. He has also written a dissertation (in Latin) on the liberwim veto, which puts that institution in anew light. Felix Jezierski, the previous editor of the above-mentioned journal, published in it translations of parts of Homer, and is also the author of an excellent version of Faust.

The history of Polish literature has not been neglected. We first have the early history of Felix Bentkowski (1781-1852), followed by that of Michael Wiszniewski (1794-1865), which, how- ever, only extends to the 17th century, and is at best but a quarry of materials for subsequent writers, the style being very hcavy. A " History of Eloquence" (Historya Wymov:y w Polsce) was pub- lished by Karl Mecherzyiski. An elaborate history of Polish literature is now in course of preparation by Anton Matecki, who is the author of the best Polish grammar (Gramatyka Historyczno-Poréwnaweza Jezyka Polskiego, 2 vols., Lemberg, 1879). The Polish bibliography of Karl Estreicher, now director of the Jagielton library at Cracow, is a work of the highest importance. One of the most active writers on Polish philology and literature is Wladystaw Nehring, whose numerous contributions to the Archiv fiir Slavische Philologie of Professor Jagic entitle him to the gratitude of all who have devoted themselves to Slavonic studies. Wtadimir Spasowicz, a lawyer of St Petersburg, has assisted Pipin in his valuable work on Slavonic literature. The lectures of Professor Cybulski (0b. 1867) on Polish literature in the first half of the 19th century are written with much spirit and appreciation. The larger poetical works which appear during that time are carefully analysed.

In recent times many interesting geological and anthropo- logical investigations have been carried on in Poland. In 1868 Count Constantine Tyszkiewicz published a valuable monograph on the Tombs of Lithuania and Western Ruthenia. A diligent searcher for antiquitics is Prof. Joseph Lepkowski of Cracow, who has greatly enriched the archeological museum of his native

city. er

Surface,

306 FO

In philosophy the Poles (as the Slavs generally) have produced .

but few remarkable names. Goluchowski, the brothers Andrew and John Sniadecki, the latter of whom has gained a reputation almost European, Bronistaw Trentowski, Karol Liebelt, and Joseph Kremer deserve mention. August Cieszkowski has written on philosophical and economic subjects. i present professor of philosophy at the university of Cracow, has also published some remarkable works. . :

Mention has already been made of the poetess Elizabeth Druzbacka. Female writers are not very common among Slavo- nic nations. Perhaps the most celebrated Polish authoress was Klementina Hoffmann, whose maiden name was Tanska, born at Warsaw in 1798. She married Karl Boroméus Hoffmann, and accompanied her husband, in 1831, to Passy near Paris, where she died in 1845. Her novels still enjoy great popularity in Poland. Of the poetesses of later times Gabriele Narzyssa Zmichowska (1825-1878), Maria Ilnicka, translator of Scott’s Lord of the Isles, and Jadwiga Luszczewska may be mentioned. ,

A poet of considerable merit is Adam Asnyk, born in 1838. In his poetry we seem to trace the steps between romanticism and the mniodern realistic school, such as we sce in the Russian poet Nekrasoff. In some of the flights of his Muse he reminds us of Stowacki, in the melody of his verse of Zaleski. Besides showing talent as a poet, he has also written some good plays, as ‘‘ The Jew” (Zid), Cola di Rienzi, aud Kiejstut. Other living poets

worthy of mention are Zagorski, Czerwienski, and Maria Konop- nicka, who has published two volumes of poems that have been very favourably noticed, Mention must also be made of Batucki,

Moritz Straszewski, the | WW, : ; : | years ago a cheap edition of the leading Polish classics, well

| Warszawska. (Ww.

a

born at Cracow in 1887, and Narzymski (1839-1872), who was educated in France, but spent part of his short life in Cracow, author of some very popular tales.

The four centres of Polish literature, which, in spite of the attempts which have been made to denationalize the country, is fairly active, are Cracow, Posen, Lemberg, and Warsaw.

[RUSSIAN.

adapted for dissemination among the people, was published, under the title of Biblioteka Polska, at Cracow, which shows a great deal of vitality and is an interesting city. Not only are the pro- fessors of its university some of the most eminent living Poles, but it has been chosen as a place of residence by many Polish literary men. The academy of sciences, founded in 1872, celebrated the bicentenary of the raising of the siege of Vienna by Sobieski by publishing the valuable Acta Joannis III. Regis Poloniz. Some good Polish works have been issued at Posen, but it is becoming extremely Germanized, and no part of the original kingdom of Poland has undergone so much change as this. At Lemberg, the capital of Austrian Galicia, there is an active Polish press, Here appeared the Monumenta Polonizx Historica of Bielowski, previously mentioned ; but Polish in this province has to struggle with the Red-Russian or Ruthenian, a language or dialect which for all practical purposes is the same as the Southern or Little Russian. At Warsaw, since the last insurrection, the university has become entirely Russianized, and its Transactions are published in Russian ; but Polish

works of merit still issue from the press, —among others the leading Polish literary journal, ach he R. M.

POLAND, Russian. After the three dismemberments of the old kingdom, the name of Poland was chiefly re- tained by the part of the divided territory annexed to Russia. Since the insurrection of 1863, however, the name "'kingdom of Poland" has disappeared. Thencefor- ward this portion of the Russian empire is referred to in official documents only as the "territory of the Vistula," and later on as the '' Vistula governments." Nevertheless the geographical position of Russian Poland, its ethno- graphical features, its religion, and its traditions differ- entiate it so widely from the remainder of the Russian empire that the name of Poland still survives in current use. The area of this territory is 49,157 square miles, and the population exceeds 7,300,000. See Russra, and map accompanying that article.

Projecting to the west of Russia in a wide semicircle between Prussia and Austria, it is bounded on the N. by the provinces of western and eastern Prussia, on the W. by Posen and Prussian Silesia, on the S. by Galicia, and on the E. by the Russian governments of Volhynia, Vilna, Grodno, and Kovno. It consists for the most part of an undulating plain, 300 to 450 feet above the sea, which joins the lowlands of Brandenburg in the west, and the great plain of central Russia in the east. A low swelling separates it from the Baltic Sea; while in the south it gradually rises to a range of plateaus which imperceptibly blend with the spurs of the Carpathians. These plateaus, with an average height of from 800 to 1000 feet, occupy all the southern part of Poland. They are mostly covered with beautiful forests of oak, beech, and lime, and are deeply cut by the valleys of rivers and numerous streams, some being narrow and craggy, and others broad, with gentle slopes and marshy bottoms. Narrow ravines inter- sect them in all directions, and their surface often takes, especially in the east, the puszcza character,—in other words, that of wild, unpassable, woody, and marshy tracts. In these tracts, which occupy the south-eastern corner of Poland, and are called Podlasie, the neighbourhood of the Polyesie of the Pripet is felt. The Vistula, which borders these plateaus on the south-west, at a height of 700 to 750 feet, has to penetrate them before finding its way to the great plain of Poland, and thence to the Baltic. Its valley divides the hilly tracts of Poland into two parts,—the Lublin heights in the east, and the Sedomierz

(Sandomir), or central, heights in the west. These last are diversified by several ridges which run east-south-east, parallel to the Beskides, the highest of them being those of the “ Bald” or “ Holy Cross Mountains” (ysogérski, or Swietokrzyski), two summits of which respectively reach 1813 and 1961 feet above the sea. Another short ridge, the Checinski hills, follows the same direction along the Nida river, reaching 1135 feet at Zamkowa Gora. South of the Nida, the Olkusz Hills, already blended with spurs of the Beskides, fill up the south-west corner of Poland, reaching 1473 feet at Podzaincze, and containing the chief mineral wealth of the country ; while a fourth range, from 1000 to 1300 feet high, runs north-west past Czestochowo, separating the Oder from the Warta. In the north, the plain of Poland is bordered by a flat and broad swelling, 600 to 700 feet above the sea, dotted with lakes, and recalling the lake regions of north-western Russia. Its gentle southern slopes occupy the northern parts of Poland, while the province of Suwatki, projecting as a spur

| towards the north-east, extends over the flat surface of

this swelling. Wide tracts covered with sands, marshes, peat-bogs, ponds, and small lakes, among which the streams lazily flow from one marsh to another, the whole being covered with poor pine-forests and a scanty vegeta- tion, with occasional patches of fertile soil—such are the general characters of the northern border-region of the great plains of central Poland.

These plains extend in a broad belt, 150 miles wide, from the Oder to the upper Niemen and the marshes of Pinsk, gently sloping towards the west, and slowly rising towards “the woods” of Volhynia and Grodno. Few hills raise their flat tops above the surface, the irregularities of which for the most part escape the eye, and can be detected only by levellings. As far as the eye can see, it perceives a plain ; and each hill, though but a few hundred feet above its surface, is called a “gdéra” (mountain). The rivers flow in broad, level valleys, only a few hundred or even only a few dozen feet lower than the watersheds; they separate into many branches, enclosing islands, forming creeks, and covering wide tracts of land during inunda- tions. Their basins, especially in the west, are mixed up with one another in the most intricate way, the whole bearing unmistakable traces of having

been in recent gco- logical and partly in historical times the bottom of exten-

Rivers.

RUSSIAN. |

sive lakes, whose alluvial deposits now yield rich crops. The fertility of the soil and the facility of communication by land and by water have made this plain the very cradle of the Polish nationality, and every furlong of it to the Pole is rich in historical memories. The very name of Poland is derived from it,—Wielkopolska and Wielkopolane being the Slavonian for the great plain and its inhabitants.

Russian Poland belongs mostly, though not entirely, to the basin of the Vistula,—its western parts extending into the upper basin of the Warta, a tributary of the Oder, and its north-east spur (Snwatki) penetrating into the basin of the Niemen, of whieh it oecupies the left bank. For many centuries, however, the Poles have been driven back from the mouths of their rivers by the German race, maintaining only the middle parts of their basins.

The chief river of Poland, and the very cradle of the Polish nationality, is the Vistula (Pol., Wista), the Vandalus, Visula, and Istula of antiquity. It has a length of 620 miles, and a drainage area of 72,000 square miles. It rises in Galicia, in the Beskides, 3675 feet above the sea, where the Blaek and White Vistulas unite. Flowing first north-east, in an elevated valley between the Beskides and the Sandomir heights, it separates Russian Poland from Galicia, and already at Cracow has a breadth of 90 yards. It enters Russian Poland at Zawichwost, 473 feet above the sea. After having re- ceived the San, it turns north, traversing for some 35 miles a broad valley deeply cut through the plateaus of southern Poland. This valley reaches at several places a width of 10 miles between the

limestone crags which border it on both sides, the space between’

being oceupied by two alluvial terraces, where the river winds freely, divides into several branches, and frequently changes its bed. Here it has a speed of 8 feet per second, with a gradient of 1°3 to 1°5 feet per inile, and a

depth ranging from 4 to 20 feet. About Jusefow (51° N. lat.) it enters the great central plain, where it flows north and west-north-west between low banks, with a breadth of 1000 yards. Its inundations, dangerous even at Cracow, beeome still more so in the plain, where the accumulations of ice in its lower course obstruct the outflow, or the heavy rains in the Carpathians raise its level. Dams, 20 to 24 feet high, are maintained at great expense by the inhabitants for 60 miles, but they do not always prevent the river from inundating the plains of Opolic and Kozienic, the waters sometimes spreading as far as 150 niles to the east. Below Warsaw (267 feet) it frequently ehanges its bed, so that, for example, Ptock (180 feet), which formerly was on its left bank, is now on the right. About Thorn it enters Prussia, and a few miles below this town it finds its way through the Baltic ridge, flowing in a north-east direction and entering the Baltic Sea in the Frische- Haff at Dantzic. On the whole, it is what the physical geographer would call a "'voung" river, which is still excavating its bed, and probably on this account few towns of importance are situated on the Vistula in Russian Poland, the principal being Sedomierz, Warsaw, and Ptock, and the fortresses of Ivangorod and Novogeorgievsk (Modlin), while very many small towns have sprung up within short distances fromits eourse. It is navigable almost from Cracow for small boats and rafts, whieh deseend it at high water. Real navigation begins, however, only below its confluenee with the Wieprz, the middle and lower Vistula being the chief artery for the traffic of Poland. Thousands of rafts and boats of all deseriptions descend every year, with cargoes of corn, wool, timber, and wooden wares, giving occupa- tion toa large number of men. Steamers ply as far as to Sedomierz. The Vistula receives many tributaries, the most important being the San, the Wieprz, and the Bug on the right, and the Nida and the Pilica on the left. The San (220 miles) rises in Galicia, in the same part of the Carpathians as the Dneister, and flows north-west, close to the southern frontier of Poland; it is navi- gable downwards from Dynow, and is aseended by boats as far as Yarostaw in Galicia. The Wieprz (180 miles) is the chief' artery of the Lublin government; it flows north-west past Lublin and Lubartow, joining the Vistula at Ivangorod. It is navigable for small boats and rafts for 105 miles from Krasnostaw. The Bug, which deseribes a wide eurve eoncentric with those of the middle Vistula and Narew, rises to the east of Lwow (Lemberg) and flows north and west, past Hrubieszow, Chetm, and Brest-Litowski, separating the Polish provinces of

Lublin and Siedlce from Volhynia and Grodno, It joins the Vistula a few miles below its confluence with the Narew, some 20 miles below Warsaw, after a course of more than 675 miles. Only light boats (galary) are floated down this broad bunt shallow stream, whose flat and open valle is often inundated. Its great tributary, the Narew (150 mile, brings the forest-lands of Byelowezha into communication with Poland, timber being floated down from Surazh and light boats from Tykocin. The mountain-stream Nida waters the hilly tracts of Kielee, and, rapidly deseending south-east, joins the Vistula close by the Opatowiee custom-house. The Pilica rises in the south- western corner of Poland, and flows for 135 miles north and east in a broad, flat, sandy, or marshy vallcy, of evil repute for its unhealthi- ness ; it joins the Vistula at Mniszew, 30 miles above Warsaw.

rOLA WN WD)

307

The Warta (450 miles) rises in the Chestochowo hills, 900 feet above the sea, and flows north and west past Sieradz (448 feet) and Koto. Below Czestochowo it waters a flat lowland, whose surface rises only from 2 to 5 feet above the level of the river, and the inhabitants have a constant struggle to keep it to its bed; the country is, however, so low that every spring an immense lake is formed by the river at the mouth of the Ner ; as regards its right hand tributaries, it is almost impossible to define them from those of the Bzura, tributary of the Vistula, amidst the marshy grounds where both take their origin. The Warta turns west at Koto and leaves Poland at Pyzdry in the government of Kalisz; it serves to eonvey timber to Prussia.

The Niemen, whieh has a total length of 500 miles and a basin of 40,000 square miles, flows along the north-east frontier of Poland, from Grodno to Yurburg, separating it from Lithuania. Already 70 yards wide at Grodno, it advanees northwards in great windings, between limestone hills covered with sand, or amidst forests, past numerous ruins of castles, or koorgans, which witness thc battles that have been fought for its possession. The yellowish sandy plains on its left allow only the cultivation of oats, buekwheat, and some rye. The river flows so slowly below Kovno as toseem almost stationary ; it often changes its bed, and, notwithstanding repeated attempts to regulate it, offers great diffieulties to navigation. Still,

large amounts of corn, wool, and timber are floated down, especially after its junction with the Black Hancza, giving occupation to about 90,000 men. A little above Kovno the Niemen turns west, and after having received the Wilja from the right, it attains a width of nearly 500 yards, At Yurburg it enters eastern Prussia, and reaches the Baltic Sea at the Kurisehe-Haff. Of its tributaries in Poland, only the Hancza Czarna and the Szeszupa, whieh winds through the province of Suwatki, are worthy of inention.

Lakes are numerous in the provinee of Suwatki, amounting Lakes.

there to over five hundred ; but the largest of them, Wigry, tra- versed by the Haneza, covers only. 11,000 aeres. They are mostly concealed amid thiek coniferous or birch forests, and their waters stretch with undefined banks amidst marshes, sands, or layers of boulders thickly covered with moss. Another group of some one hundred and twenty small lakes is situated in the basin of the Warta (north part of Kalisz), the largest being Gopto, 18 miles long and 100 feet deep, surrounded by many smaller lakes, and receiving the Noted river. It was mueh larger even within historical times, and was well known from being situated on the highway ace ‘ay Adriatic, via Koto on the Oder, to the basin of the Vistula,

Though navigable for a few months only, the rivers of Poland Canals.

have always been of considerable importance for the traffic of the country, and this importance is further increased by several canals connecting them with Russian and German rivers. The Niemen is connected with the Dnieper by the Oginski Canal, situated in the Russian government of Minsk. The Dnieper-and- Bug (Horodecki, Brzeski, also Krélewski) Canal in Grodno eonnects the Mukhavets, tributary of the Bug, with the Pina of the basin of the Pripet, that is, the Dnieper with the Vistula. The Vistnla is connected also with the Oder by the Bydgoski or Bromberg Canal in Prussia, which conneets the Brda, of the basin of the Vistula, with the Noted, or Netze, tributary of the Warta. All these eanals are, however, beyond Russian Poland. In Poland proper, the Augustowski Canal connects the Vistula with the Niemen, by means of the Hancza, Netta, Biebrz, and Narew. Another canal, to the west of Leczyca, connects the Bzura, a tributary of the Vistula, with the Ner and Warta ; and the bed of the former

has recently been altered so as to obtain regular irrigation of the rich meadows extending along its banks.

With the exception of its southern parts, Poland is built up Geology.

almost exclusively of Secondary and Tertiary formations, covered with a thick sheet of Quaternary deposits. The non-schistous rocks are represented only by a small patch of porphyries near Checin, and another of basalts at the castle of Teezyrski. Small deposits of quartzites in the Dyminski Hills, characterized by the Orthis kieleensis, Rom., which formerly were eonsidered as Devonian, belong to the Silurian as also a few dolomites appearing from beneath the Devon.an Old Red Sandstone and limestones. The last two cover wide traets in the province of Kielee, and in the district of Bedzin, on the Silesian frontier. The Devonian lime- stones of Kielee, which contain the Orthis striatula, Spirifer inflatus, Atrypa reticularis, A. desquamata, Leptwna interstrialis, Bronteus flabellifer, Spirifer verneuili, and Rhynchonella cuboides, thus exhibit a fauna closely akin to that of the Devonian of Germany aud Belgium, or the lowest part of the Upper Devonian—the so- called “ Cuboides-Schichten.” The hard sandstone of Dombrowa, Brzezina, &c., with Chonetes sarcinulata, Spirifer paradoxus, S. eultrijugatus, and Pterinea pailletei, is eertainly Lower Devonian. This formation eontains the ehief mineral resources of Poland.

The Carboniferous formation appears in the Olkusz and Bedzin districts. It consists of sandstones and clays, with layers of coal 30 feet thick. The Permian is represented by porphyric tnffs in the Olkusz district, “ Zeehstein” characterized by Produectus hor-

Minerals.

Climate.

ridus, Sow., at Kiclee, and a breccia consisting of Devonian boulders. The Trias is widely spread. It consists of variegated sandstones, characterized by Ayophoria eostata, occurring exten- sively in the governments of Kielce and Radom, yielding a fine building stone. The red sandstones north and west of

Kielce, con- sidered as Permian on Pusch's map, probably belong to the same formation, like the red sandstones in the most northern parts of the Kielce mountains. The " Muschelkalk " appears in the districts of Olkusz and Bedzin, as also in the Kielce mountains, and has great importance, containing as it does zinc, tin, and iron ores. The "Keuper" in the governments of Kielce, Piotrkow, and 2adom consists of sandstones, dolomites, and limestones, and con- tains brown coal and iron ores.

The Jurassic formation is widely spread; in south-west Poland it occupies the space from Olkusz to Wielun, and consists of brown and white "Jura," the whitish crags of which give pleasing land- scapes at Ojcowo and on the Pilica. The Oolite crags of Ojcowo contain numerous caverns, renowned for their bone deposits, worked out for manure, and for their numerous and remarkable Quaternary fossils. That of Jerzmanowice, close by Ojcowo, the largest of the series, has a length of 750 feet. The Cretaceous formation, which covers very large tracts throughout Poland, con- sists of lower series of sandstones, and of an upper series containing chalk and limestone, and yielding very fertile marls. They are covered with Tertiary limestones and gypsums, which, together with Cretaceous deposits, cover nearly the whole of the central plain and the northern provinces. The layers of sulphur at Kielce, 7 to 70 feet thick, belong to the Tertiary.

The whole is covered with Quaternary deposits, reaching at several places a very great thickness. They are chiefly made up of boulder clay containing Scandinavian erratics of all sizes up to 5 and 7 feet in diameter. The Baltic ridge is quite covered with them, their southern limit extending to 51° N. lat., or perhaps even to 50°, as the longitudinal valleys of the Kielce hills also con- tain layers of Scandinavian boulders. Diluvial and alluvial sands and clays cover the glacial deposits ; and everywhere in Poland one meets with remains of extensive lakes that filled up all depressions of the country during the post-Glacial period. Thick peat-bogs are being formed in the moister depressions, and cover an aggregate surface of no less than 2,800,000 acres.

In these lacustrine deposits numerous traces of prehistoric man have been found, but the old lake beds still await a more thorough exploration. The bone-caves at Ojcowo have yielded rich finds of extinct mammals, thirty-

two species of which are familiar to explorers of British caverns; the cave-bear alone has yielded fully four thousand canine teeth, while the mammoth, the woolly rhinoceros, the cave hyzena, and especially the reindeer, are repre- sented by numervus remains. The bones of extinct mammals have been found in assoviation with very numerous relics of man, some of which are most probably Paleolithic, while the great number belong to the Neolithic period,—those cave-inhabitants being in some instances dolichocephalic, like those of the shores of post- Glacial lakes, and in others mesocephalic.

Southern Poland is rich in minerals, especially in the Kielee moun- tains and the region adjacent to Prussian Silesia. The Devonian sandstones contain malachite ores at Medziana Géra, near Kielce, and copper has been worked there since the 15th century. In the years 1816-1826 65,000 cwts. of copper ore were extracted, but the mines are now neglected. The brown iron ores, also Devonian, of Kielce, and especially those of Daleszyc, contain no less than 40 per cent. of iron. The Triassic zinc ores of the Olkusz district, more than 50 feet thick at Bolestaw, contain 8 to 14 per cent., sometimes 25 per cent., of zinc ; and in 1879 2,866,000 ewts. of ore were extracted from nine pits, yielding about 100,000 ewts. of zine. The tin ores of Olkusz, also Triassic, are still more import- ant, and were extensively wrought as early as the 16th century, notwithstanding the difficulties arising from the presence of water ; they are reported to have then yielded more than 35,000 ewts. per annum. In 1878 the very fluctuating yield reached only 8960 ewts. Brown iron ores appearing in the neighbourhood of Bedzin as lenses 55 feet thick, and containing 25 to 33 per cent. of iron, accompany the Triassic zine ores. Spherosiderites and brown iron ores are also widely spread in the “ Keuper.” Sulphur is wrought at Czarkowa, in the district of Piriczow ; the deposits, which con- tain 25 per cent. of sulphur, reach a thickness of 7 to 70 feet, and the amount of sulphur is estimated at 1,300,000 ewts.

Carboniferous coal is spread in south-west Poland over a surface of about 200 square miles in the districts of Bedzin and Olkusz, which are estimated to contain 732,000,000 eubic yards of coal. The Triassic brown coal,»which appears in the Olkusz district in layers 3 to 7 feet thick, has lately been worked out, the single pit of St John yielding in 1879 204,200 cwts. of coal. Of other mineral produce, chalk exported from Lublin, a few quarries of

marble, and many of building stones are worthy of notice. Mineral waters are used medicinally at Cieclhocin and Natechow.

With the exception of the Lysa Géra hilly tracts (Kielce and South

Poe L & WWD

Radom), which lic within the isotherms of 41° aud 42°, Poland is |

[RUSSIAN.

situated between the isotherms of 42° and 46°. The isotheres and isocheims (7.¢., lines of equal mean summer and winter temperature) crossing one another at right angles, and the former running east-north-east, Poland is included between the isothercs of 64° and 61° and the isocheims of 35°°7 and 39°°2. The prevailing winds are westerly, with north-north-east and south winds in autumn and winter, and east winds in spring. The number of rainy and snowy days varies from 152 to 158, increasing towards the Baltic, with an average of 21°7 to 23°6 inches of rainfall in central Poland, which figures slowly increase also towards the south on account of the proximity of the Carpathians, where they reach 80°3 inches. Of the above amounts, about 17 per cent. fell in spring, 29 per cent. in summer, 21 per cent. in autumn, and 33 per cent. in winter. Owing to this distribution the snow-covcr- ing in Poland is not very thick, and the spring sets in early. Still, frosts lowering the thermometer to ~ 4° and — 22° Fahr. are not uncommon, and the rivers are covered with ice for two and a half to three months,—the Warta being under ice for 70 to 80 days, the Vistula at Warsaw for 80 days and (exceptionally) even tor 116, and the Niemen for 100 (exceptionally for 140).

The following averages may help to give a more adequate idea of the climate of Poland :—

| Warsaw. | Vilna, Ham llestatrOsitiaed meccncuesessceereneccoser | Oct. 18 Oct. 17 WateStearOstta..cce- sec see tetraaccetens | Mar. 15 Mar. 25 Average maximum temperature…... | 85°°7 85°°1 Average minimum Wer wis.ces:| ag. ~9°°6 Absolute maximum do. ..... 95°5 89°‘3 Absolute minimum io}, a sacnone 37°°6 — 39°°0 PSIG UME iisica ys

~~cies’cedipegeeeckeware es 40 23 CLOT 10 2) 154 Le Annual rainfall (total) .....6~~ 22°8 in. 7°6 in, Rainfall—_ November to March…..... | 6°7 in. 4°7 in. Prevailing winds in January …..... | 8. E. S. Bs jy MUMIA oc Ase chan W. W. 9 », during the year… | S.E. W.

The flora of Poland is more akin to that of Germany than to that of Russia, several middle European species finding their north-east limits in the basin of the Niemen or in the marshes of Lithuania. Coniferous forests, consisting mostly of pine (Pinus sylvestris) and ~~birch, cover large tracts in Mazovia, extending over the Baltic lake~~ ridge, reaching southwards as far as the junction of the Bug with the Narew, and joining in the south-east the ‘‘Polyesie” of the Pripet. The pine covers also the Lysa Géra hills and those on the San. The larch (Larix ewropea), which three centuries ago covered large tracts, has almost entirely disappeared ; it is now met with only in the Samsonowski forests of Sandomeria. The Pinus Cembra is only remembered, as also the Zaxus baeeata, which has but a few representatives in Sandomerian forests, on the Pilica, on the puszezas of Ostroteka, and in the Preny forests on the Niemen. The Picea obovata is cultivated.

Of leaf-bearing trees, the common beech (Fagus sylvatica) is the most typical of the Polish flora ; it extends from the Carpathians to 52° N. lat., and three degrees farther north in small groups or isolated specimens ; the confluence of the Bug and Narew may still be regarded as its eastern limit. The white beech (Carpinws Betulas), the aspen (Populus tremula), and two elms (Ulmus campestris, U. effusa) are found nearly everywhere, mingled with other trees in forests. The same is true with regard to the lime-tree (Tilia parvi- folia), which appears in groves only in the cast (Niemen, Pripet, Lublin). It is the most popular tree with the Poles, as the birch with the Russians; judgment of old was pronounced under its shade, and all the folk-lore songs repeat its name. The oak—a highly venerated tree in Poland, though not so much as in Lithuania—grows in forests only on the most fertile patches of land, but it is of common occurrence in conjunction with the beech, elm, &c. The maples (Acer platanoides and A. pseudopla- tanus) are somewhat rare; the black alder (Alnus glutinosa) covers the banks of the rivers and canals, and the Alnus ineana is common. The willow, and the orchard trces—apple, pear, plum, and cherry—are cultivated everywhiere.

The flora of Poland contains 12 per cent. of Compositx, 6 per cent. of Leguminosx, 2 per cent. of Labiatz, 4 per cent. of Umbellt- Jerez, 5 per cent. of Crucifere, and 2 per cent. of Conifere.

The wheat frontier coincides very nearly with that of the leaf- bearing forests. It yields good crops on the fertile tracts of Sando- meria and Lublin, and on the plains of the Vistula and Wartha, but does not thrive very well beyond 52° N. lat. Rye, oats, barley, buckwheat, and hemp are cultivated everywhere, and flax in the east ; hops are very common, and tobacco-culture has been begun in the south. Some attempts in sericulture have been made with success.

Flora.

The fauna of Poland belongs to the middle European zoological Fauna.

group; within the historical period it has lost such species as formerly gave it a subarctic character. The reindeer now occurs

Popula- tion.

RUSSIAN. |

eastwards; the wild horse, also, described by the annals as intermediate between the horse and the ass—probably like the recently discovered Equus przewalskii—is said to have becn met with in the 13th century in the basin of the Warta, and two cen- turies later in the forests of Lithuania. The wild goat, bison, and elk have migrated to the Lithuanian forests. The lynx and beaver have also disappeared. The brown bear continues to haunt the forests of the south, but is becoming rarer in Poland ; the wolf, the wild boar, and the fox are most common throughout the great plain, as also the hare and several species of Arvicola. The mammals in Poland, however, do not exceed fifty species. The avi-fauna, which does not differ from that of central Europe, is repre- sented by some one hundred and twenty species, among which the singing birds (Dentirostre and Conirostre) are the most numerous. On the whole, Poland lies to the westward of the great line of passage of the migratory birds, and is less frequented by them than the

steppes of south-west Russia. Still, numerous aquatic birds breed on the waters of the Baltic lake-region.

The population of Poland, 6,193,710 in 1871, reached 7,319,980 in 1881, showing an increase of 1°8 per cent. per annum during the ten years, and an average of 15 persons per square mile. Of these 17 per cent. lived in towns. They were distributed as follows :—

. f 1 la- rba e GaneenaaeNee Square hites, ee 1881. eae Le, am KialS2nc cease 4,391 765,408 96,848 17°4 Kielce……..... 3,897 622,842 38,493 16:0 TiOQUIZA, .sor.sens 4,667 538,588 51,554 15 Jui ha)linoWaapanopne 6,499 860,382 78,867 13°2 Piotrkéw …... 4,730 837,928 144,246 Wee TtOCK evecse se 4,200 538,141 78,797 12°8 PRaAMOM:, «0.002: 4,769 638,715 69,058 13°3 | Siedlce……. c 5,585 616,649 lily, {onal LP Suwatki…..... 4,846 603,174 61,827 12°4 Warsaw: ..»-.. 5,623 1,303,158 485,852 23 °2

The bulk of the population are Poles. During prehistoric times the basin of the Vistula seems to have been inhabited by a dolicho- cephalic race, different from the brachycephalic Poles of the present day; but from the dawn of history the Slavonians (Poles), mixed to some extent with Lithuanians, are found on the plains of the Vistula and Warta. The purest Polish type is found in the basin of the middle Vistula and in Posen; in the north-east there is a Lithuanian admixture, and in the south-east a Little Russian. The geographical domain of the Poles corresponds approximately with the limits of Russian Poland. Some 250,000 Lithuanians (277,000 or 284,000, according to other enumerations) occupy the north part of Suwatki, their southern limit being the Hancza river and the towns Seino and Snwatki; while the Ruthenians (about 506,000 in 1878) appear in compact masses in the east and south- east, occupying the whole space between the Bug and the Wieprz as far as Siedlce, as also the region between the upper Wieprz and the San. The White Russians numbered 27,000 in the north-east and east, and the Great Russians 12,000. The Poles extend but little beyond the limits of Russian Poland. In east Prussia they occupy the southern slope of the Baltic ridge (the Mazurs) ; and on the left bank of the lower Vistula they spread to its mouth (the Kaszubes). Westward they occupy a strip of land of an average breadth of 50 miles in

Brandenburg, Posen, and Silesia, stretching down the Warta as far as to Birnbaum (100 miles east of Berlin) ; and in the south they extend along the right bank of the Vistula in western Galicia to the San. In Russia they constitute, with Jews, Lithuanians, Ruthenians, and White Russians, the town popu- lation, as also the landed nobility and sz/achéa, in several provinces west of the Dwina and the Dnieper. Their numbers in these pro- vinces may be seen from the following figures :—

T 1 v) .

Governments. | Peery” | poles,” (of Poles. | of Poles in 1881. AVAUITTE ese ee: 973,570 143,290 | 14°7 175,000 Kodolia…..... 1,946,760 233,650 12°0 269,000 Volhynia….. 1,648,270 1725405 | 10°5 215,000 MINSK ..... 1,135, 590 117,750 10°4 160,500 (Grodno,..... 958,850 89,850 9°3 112,700 Vitebsk. ..... 838,050 40,725 4°9 54,950 iS) ee 2,144,280 71,640 3°3 87,650 Moghileff….. 908,860 26,115 2.9 32,700 Kovno…....| 1, 131250 30,875 eet 38,950 Courland….. 597,290 13,155 2°2 14,000 Smolensk ….) 1,168,590 1,450 071 1,600 Total… 18,441,360 940,905 7:00 1,162,050

ee

rent AWN D

only as a fossil; the sable, mentioned in the annals, has migrated |

309

According to the localities which they inhabit, the Poles take different names. They are called Wielkopolanie on the plains of middle Poland, while the name of Matopolanie is reserved for those on the Warta. The name of Leczycanie is given to the inhabitants of the marshes of the Ner, that of Kurpic to those of the Podlasie; Kujawiacy, Szlacy in Silesia, and Gérale in the Carpathians.

The Kaszubes, and especially the Mazurs, may be considered as separate stocks of the Polish family. The Mazurs (whose northern limits may be thus described—Przerosl in Suwatki, Goldap, Rastenburg, and Bischofsburg in

Prussia, and Mtawa in Ptock) are distinguished from the Poles by their lower stature, broad shoulders, and massive structure, and still more by their national dress, which has nothing of the smartness of that of the southern Poles, and by their ancient customs ; they have also a dialect of their own, containing many words now obsolete in Poland, and several grammatical forms bearing witness to the Lithuanian influ- ence. They submit without difficulty to German influence, and already are Lutherans in Prussia. The language of the Kaszubes can also be considered as a separate dialect. ‘The Poles proper are on the whole of medium stature (5 feet 4°6 inches), finely built, dark in the south and fair in the north, richly endowed by nature, inclined to deeds of heroism, but perhaps deticient in that energy which characterizes the northern races of Europe, and in eet sense of unity which has been the strength of their present rulers.

The German element is annually increasing both in number and in influence, especially during the last twenty years. The Lodz manufacturing district, the Polish Birmingham, is becoming more German than Polish ; and throughout the provinces west of the Vistula German immigration is going on at a steadily increas- ing rate, especially in the governments of Ptock, Kalisz, Piotrkow, and Warsaw. It is estimated that a strip of land 35 iniles wide along the Prussian frontier is already in the hands of Germans, whose advance is further favoured by the rapid transference of landed property into German hands in Posen. In Russian Poland associations of four to six men, supported by German banks, purchase large numbers of properties belonging to members of the Polish nobility who have been ruined since the last insurrection. No fewer than 30,786 German landholders, owning 5433 estates, were enumerated last year in the provinces west of the Vistula; while 13,714 foreign proprietors, farmers, and labourers (11,497 Prussians and 1914 Austrians) were at the same time owners of 1,857,900 acres, valued at 135,000,000 roubles. According to other statistics, the foreigners in Poland, mostly Germans, who remained foreign subjects, numbered 170,000 in 1881 (5°15 per ccnt. of the population). Of these, 91,440 (families included) hold landed property to the amount of 2,605,500 acres, or 8°3 per cent. of the area of the kingdom. The aggregate number of Germans in Russian Poland, estimated at 370,000 in 1878, must now exceed 450,000, thus constituting about one-fifteenth of the population.

The Jews, who are found everywhere throughout Poland, are still more numerous, and must now exceed a million. They are nowhere agricultural ; in the larger towns many of them are artisans, but in the villages they are almost exclusively engaged as shopkeepers, second-hand traders, dealers on commission, innkeepers, and usurers. In the country, both commerce and agriculture are in the hands of their intimately connected trading associations. Their relations with Poles and Ruthenians are anything but cordial, and “Jew-baiting” is of frequent occurrence. They are increasing much more rapidly than the Slavs.

The relative numbers of the various inhabitants of Poland may be seen from the following figures :—

According to According to Per

Galkin (1868). | Rittich (1873). | cent.

Les Pevevaescarecaaucls senckes ee ae 3,900, 580 4,375,840 68°4

MEMS aden sete css asatrinneciene 764,950 860,330 13°4 Heithle USSIANS op ccs csseciesiiees 428,380 505,960

Wihites Russians, ...+0>-. 33,520 26,865 8°5

11,065 12,155

(Clown, copra caoemqgnsnpsonsocds 234,150 370,360 5°8

AIUD TMA Ss ccc-escscr sae sen- 277,050 241,150 3°8

The prevalent religion is the Roman Catholic, to which, in 1870, Religion.

4,596,956 out of a population of 6,034,430 belonged; at the same date 246,485 were adherents of the United Church, 327,845 were Lutherans, 34,135 were of the Greek Church, and 4926 Noncon- formists. The Jews at the same date were reckoned (certainly an under-estimate) at 815,448, and the Mohammedans at 426. The number of followers of the United Church has much diminished since 1873, when they were compelled to join the Greek Church. Since the last insurrection a series of measures have been

taken to reduce the numbers of the Roman Catholic clergy in Poland; in 1883 there remained 1318 churches ont of 1401, 1544 priests out of 2322, 10 monasteries out of 29, and 8 convents out of 30. One diocese (Podlasie) having been abolished, and a new one established

Agri- culture.

-nobility do not pass into the hands of

at Kielce, while several bishops had been sent out of the country, the whole situation remained unsettled until 1888, when the pope recognized the new diocesan subdivisions introduced by the Russian Government. Poland is now divided into four dioceses (Warsaw, Sedomierz, Lublin, and Ptock).

From remote antiquity Poland has been celebrated for the produc- tion and export of grain. Both, however, greatly declined in the 18th century ; and towards the beginning of this century the peasants, ruined by their proprietors, or abandoned to the Jews, were in a more wretched state than even their Russian neighbours. Serfdom was abolished in 1807 ; but the liberated peasants received no allotments of land, and a subsequent law (1808) rendered even their transference from one landlord to another almost impossible ; the old patrimonial jurisdictions were also retained. Compelled to aecept the conditions imposed by the landlords, they had to pay rack-rents and to give compulsory labour in various forms for the use of land. Only a limited number were considered as permanent farmers, while ncarly one-half of the peasants became mere prolétatres ; in 1864 1,338,830 former peasants had ceased to have Jand rights at all. Pursuing a policy intended to reconcile the peasantry to Russian rule and to break the power of the Polish nobility, the Russian Government promulgated, during the outbreak in 1864, a law by which those peasants who were holders of land on estates belonging to private persons, institutions (such as monasterics and the like), or the crown were recognized as proprietors of the soil,—the state paying compensation to the landlords in bonds, and the peasants having to pay a yearly annuity to the state until the debt thus contracted had been cleared. The valuation of these allotments was made at a rate much morc advantageous than in Russia, and the average size of holding reached

15 acres per family. Of those who held no land a number received it out of the confiscated estates of the nobility and monas- teries, At the same time the self-government of the peasant was organized on democratic principles. The so-called *servi- tudes," however, that is, the right to pasture on and take wood from the landlord's estates, were maintained for political reasons, becoming a source of great inconvenience both to landlords and peasants.

Whatever be the opinion held as to the intention of these reforms, there can be no doubt that they resulted in a temporary increase of prosperity, or at any rate an alleviation of the previous misery of the peasants. In 1864 there were 342,500 peasant families, holding an aggregate of 8,300,000 acres of land; but only 22,000

peasants, that is, less than one-half per cent. of the agricultural.

population, were proprietors, the remainder (218,500) being nobles, while 2,000,000 peasants were czinszewikt, that is, tenants at will, and 1,388,000 had no land at all. In 1872 there were already 572,100 free peasant estates, occupying 18,000,000 acres. In ten years (1864-73) the area of cultivated soil had increased by 1,350,000 acres, while during the fourteen years 1845-59 its increase was only 540,000 acres. The crops, which stood in 1846-60 at an average of 9,360,000 quarters of corn and 6,500,000 quarters of potatoes, reached respectively 15,120,000 and 14,400,000 quarters. The yearly increase, which was only 2:2 per cent. for corn and 1°3 per cent. for potatoes during the years 1846-60, became respectively 4°7 and 8°3 per cent. during the years 1864-75, and the average crop per head rose from 1°93 quarters in 1850 to 2°52 in 1872. The annual increase of horses, which formerly was 1 per cent., reached 2°7 per cent. in 1864-70, while the yearly increase of cattle remained almost stationary (1'2 per cent., against 11 per cent.). In fact, Poland had' in 1870 only 37 head of cattle for each 100 persons, against 41 head in 1860. Another consequence of these measures was a notable decrease of crime, and a rapid increase of village primary schools, maintained by the peasants themselves.

It must be acknowledged, however, that the maintenance of the "servitudes " has become a serious evil. Morcover, the want of pasture-land, the want of money for improvements, quite insuffi- ciently supplied by the joint-stock

banks in the villages, and the very rapid increase in the price of land, from 50 roubles per morgen (1°3835 acre) to 120 and 250 roubles, have all helped to lessen the benefits of the agrarian measures of 1864. The peasants arc unable to purchase land proportionately with the increase of population ; and, while a few of them buy, many others are compelled to sell to the Jews (notwithstanding the law which prohibits the purchase of land by Jews) or to German immigrants. The estates of the the Polish peasants as they

are sold, and still less to Russians, but largely into those of German

immigrants.

Agriculture in Poland is carried on with more perfect methods on the whole than in Russia. The extensive cultivation of beet- Toot, of potatoes for distilleries, and of grasses has led to the

introduction of a rotation of several years instead of the former

“ three-fields ” system; and agricultural machinery is in more gencral ‘use, especially

l on the larger estates of the west. Winter wheat is extensively cultivated, especially in the south, the Sando- mir wheat having a wide repute, In 1873 50 per cent. (15,728,000

POL AW»

[RUSSIAN,

acres) of the surface of Poland was under crops, 9 per cent. (2,929,000 acres) under meadows, and 26 per cent. (8,242,000 acres) under forests. The first of these figures exceeds now 54 per cent. In 1881 the crops reached 19,050,000 quarters of corn, 21,151,000 quarters of potatoes, and 14,368,900 ewts. of beetroot (14,365,950 ewts. in 1882). The corn crops were distributed as follows :—wheat, 11 per cent.; rye, 38; oats, 29; barley, 12 ; buck- wheat, 4; various, 6 per cent.,—3 per cent. being used for manu-factures, 22 per cent. for secd, 60 per cent. for home consumption, and 15 per cent. for export. The potatoes were used almost entirely for distilleries.

The culture of tobacco is successfully carried on (about 3500 acres), especially in Warsaw, Ptock, and Lublin.

Cattle rearing is an important source of income. In 1881 there were approximatcly 3,300,000 cattle, 4,500,000 sheep (including 2,500,000 of the finer breeds), and 1,000,000 horses. J ine breeds of horses and cattle occur ou the larger estates of the nobility, and cattle are exported to Austria. Bee-keeping is widely spread, especially in the south-east. Fishing is carried on remuneratively, especially on the Vistula and its tributaries.

Manufactures have shown a rapid increase during the last twenty years. While in 1864 the annual production was only 50,000,000 roubles, it now exceeds 150,000,000,—the manufactures of Poland yielding one-eighth of the total production of the Russian empire.

Mining has shown a still more rapid development within the same period. While in 1862 only 154,100 cwts. of pig-iron and 100,900 cwts. of iron and steel were made, these figures respectively reached 947,800 and 1,742,500 cwts. in 1881; and, whereas the highest figure in the annual returns of the coal-mining industry from 1867 to 1878 was only 2,494,000 ewts., the average for 1876-80 was 17,157,000, and the amount reached 27,659,000 cwts. in 1881. The zine mines yiclded in 1881 89,640 cwts., and the extraction of tin reached 7580 cwts. in 1878. Sulphur was obtained to the amount of 6450 ewts. in 1879.

The development of the leading manufactures may be scen from the following figures :—

1866. 1879.

Prod i Prod i Roubles, | Ha”és | “Roubies. | Hands. Woollen stuffs……..... 7,134,483 | 7,579 | 26,838,000 | 12,716 Linen and hemp stuffs 1,151,882} 6,669 2,294,000 | 6,900 COTLOTISE...ssceractun | 6,099,474 | 9,578 | 22,492,000 | 16,949 Silks . vee eeeeeeeees Peer 61,785 100 538,000 850 Cs dealeaiiay dyeing, 606,656} 165] 4,818,000] 906 Paper Wares…..... 587,552 | 1,083} 1,348,000] 1,289 Produce from wood….| 311,126 379 | 2,665,000 | 2,497 Animal produce…..... | 4,150,756 | 5,579| 8,572,000] 3,182 Mineral produce…..... 1,591,833 | 5,583] 4,469,000] 7,096 Metallic

wares……... 5,654,496 | 7,149 | 9,426,000} 7,899 Chemical produce…... 443,980 368 900,000 443 MOT ers cesses 27,798,523 44,232 | 83,845,000 60,227 Average production | ” fer Wands……... sail en

Thus, while the number of hands occupied in these industries has increased by 40 per cent., the production has nearly trebled, showing a corresponding improvement in the machinery employed. The chief manufacturing centres are the Lddz region in the govern- ment of Piotrkdéw (woollen stuffs, cottons, sugar, corn-flour, wine- spirit, coal-mines) and Warsaw (linen stuffs, leather, machinery, sugar, wine-spirit, tobacco, and all kinds of grocery and mercery wares). Mining is chiefly concentrated in the south-west. The anual production for. separate governments (exclusive of mining, flour-mills, and breweries, and the number of hands employed by distilleries remaining unknown) was given in 1879 as follows :—

Roubles. Hands. EAOGRKOW.S …:....08 eee ee 60,900,000 36,550 NYRR is60s0c.cssnanvecn 2 42,110, 000 37,605 IESUIT SMA sis dss ose chess Sore eee 14,670,000 9,159″ Lo, | ne enn > 10, 495,000 DROW, MENON sce seasccen Mecsas epee 4,543,000 581 SVE CC wages Sssc sous eee eee 2,919,000 DL 3if OMOWE lin eisscccccurs cee 2,121,000 1,708 LETS © Tage ct oer Re 2,109,000 1,747 Bae fansieccnscisaneaensusoeene 1,862,000 1,815 SU i ena 0) 684,000 403 ee ee 142, 413,000 97,482 Russia in Europe ……..... 1,102, 949,000 711,097

ee |

Communi- cation,

Com- merce.

Adminis- » tration,

RUSSIAN. |

These figures, however, have already increased considerably, especially with regard to distilleries, which yielded, in 1882-83, 6,269,500 gallons of pure alcohol; while the sugar-works, which occupied in 1882-83 9774 men, 2636 women, and 2408 children, produced 315,460 cwts. of rough sugar

and 425,800 cwts. of refined sugar. In 1882 the production reached 66,291,700 roubles in Piotrkow, 3,948,200 in SiedIce, and 1,240,230 in Suwatki.

The railways of Poland have an aggregate length of 888 miles. A line of great importance, connecting Vienna with St Petersburg, crosses the country from south-west to north-east, passing through the mining district and Warsaw, and sending a short branch to £ddz. Another important line, connecting Dantzic with Odessa, crosses Poland from north-west to south-east. A branch line, parallel to this last, connects Skiernewice with Thorn and Lromberg ; while a military railway connects the fortresses of Warsaw and Ivangorod with Brest-Litowsky, via-Siedlce and hukow, and a side line will soon connect Siedlce with Matkin on the lower Bug. The great line from Berlin to St Petersburg crosses North Suwatki for 54 miles, between Eydtkunen and Kovno. The aggregate length of the macadamized roads, increased by 2110 miles since 1864, is now about 6700 miles.

The traffic on the Polish railways is very brisk. In 1880 the agere- gate amount of merchandise brought toand sent from Warsaw reached respectively 36,055,000 and 18,248,000 ewts.; and the whole amount of merchandise conveyed on Polish railways within Poland (exclusive of the Eydtkunen aud Kovno line) amounted to 81,469,000 ewts.

The chief custom-houses of the Russian empire—Wierzbotowo, ‘

Sosnowice, Granica, Warsaw—and many minor ones are situated on the frontiers of Poland. Their aggregate imports and exports reached respectively 127,414,054 and 146,320,921 roubles in 1882. The “ primary cell” of the administrative organization of Poland is the gmina,—formerly a village commune for the common posses sion and partly also for the common cultivation of land, which lost its characters with the introduction of serfdom, but has been taken by the law of 1864 as the basis of the organization of the peasantry in Poland. Each district is subdivided into twelve to

~~twenty gminas, including several villages and all farms on its terri~~

tory, and having a population of from 2000 to 10,000 inhabitants. All landholders of the gmina who are in possession of at least 4 acres constitute the communal assembly of the gymina. Only the clergy- men aud the police officials are excluded from it. Each member has but one vote, however extensive his property. The gmina differs thus from the Russian volost in its including, not only pea- sants, but also all landed proprietors of the territory. The assembly elects the wott, or elder (the executive of the gmina), a clerk, a sottys in each village, and a tribunal consisting of Zawniki, who judge all matters of minor importance, according to local customs. It also allocates the taxation among the members of the gmina, administers the common property (pasturage, grazing lands, forests), has charge of the poor, and generally deals with all questions educa- tional, hygienic, and economic which concern the gmina. The cost of administration of each gmina varies from 1000 to 3000 roubles, In reality, the powers of the gymina are, however, very much limited in all but purely economical questions by a numerous bureaucracy, and especially by the “chief of the district” nominated by the crown; there is also a general tendency towards transforming it into a mere auxiliary to the Russian administration, the clerk or secretary becoming its chief organ.

The provincial administration is regulated by the law of December 31, 1866. Each government being subdivided into ten to twelve districts, the district administration consists of an ouyezdnyi natchalnik, or “chief of the district,” with a numbcr of secretaries ani “chancelleries” (military, for recruiting; philanthropic ; for mutual assurance against fire ; for finance; and for gendarmerie). The provincial administration, under a military governor, consists in each of the ten governments of the following institutions :—(1) “chancellery”” of the governor; (2) a provincial “college,” with councillors corresponding to the following departments—admini- stration, military and police, finance, state domains, law, medicine, and insurance ; (3) a philanthropic committee ; (4) a postal depart- ment; (5) a “college” for finance ; (6-10) departments of excise, customs, forests, control, and education. There is also in each government a special institution for the affairs of peasants.

The entire administration of Poland is under the governor-general, residing at Warsaw, whose power is limited only by “collegiate” institutions

corresponding to the different branches of administra- tion. Heisat the same time the commander of the entire military force of the “ Warsaw military district.” Justice is represented by the gmina tribunals; the justices of the peace (nominated by government) ; the syezd, or “court” of the justices of the peace ; the district tribunals (assizes) in each government ; and the Warsaw courts of appeal and cassation. The prisons of Poland, with exception of a reformatory for boys at Studzieniec, are in a very bad state. With an aggregate capacity for only 4050 prisoners, they had in 1883 7210 ininates. Poland constitutes also a separate educational district, a district of roads and communications, an administration of justice district, and two mining districts.

ro 2.N D

oll

Poland has had no separate budget since 1867; its income and expenditure are included in those of the empire, and since 1881 they have ceased to appear under scparate heads. The peasants’ arrears, which reached 663,685 in 1878, have notably increased since then, ranging from 200,000 to 600,000 roubles in each government.

Perhaps no other country in Europe had so many towns (453), for the most part enjoying municipal rights according to the Magdeburg and Lithuanian law, as Poland. A large number of them (228) remained, however, private property, or property of the crown. In some of them the proprietors only levied rents on the holders of land that had been built upon; while in others the dominium supremum was maintained, and the proprietor exacted, not only rents, but also taxes from the inhabitants and visitors, claiming also the monopoly of selling spirits, &c.

After the last insurrection, all towns with less than 2000 inhab- itants were deprived of their municipal rights, and were included, under the designation of posads, in the gminas. The seignorial rights were abolished or redeemed, and those inhabitants who lived on agriculture received allotments of land redcemed by the state. But the spirit-selling monopoly was maintained, as also the “servitudes.” Viewed with suspicion by the Russian Government, the Polish towns received no self-government like the villages. Instead of

the former elective municipal councils (which enjoyed de jure very large rights, including that of keeping their own police, while in reality they were under the rule of the nobility), Russian officials were nominated and entrusted with all the rights of the former municipal councils. These last were, however, maintained to carry out the orders of tlic military chiefs. The new municipal law of 1870, first introduced at Warsaw and then applied to other towns, reduced the functions of the municipal council almost to nothing, depriving it even of the right of discussing the general budget, which is established by a special administrative committee aided by three to four citizens nominated by the governor. ‘The burgomaster, chosen by Government out of three candidates, and the members of the municipality (tawnik7) elected by one section of the citizens, mostly from the poorest classes, have no authority. The burgomaster, who often is a retired private soldier, very badly paid (£18 to £45 per ycar), is entirely dependent upon the police and the chief of the district, and has to discharge all sorts of functions (bailiff, policeman, &c.) which have nothing to do with municipal affairs.

Poland naturally contains the first line of the fortifications of the Russian empire on its western frontier. These fortifications, however, are intended only to protect the conntry to the east of the Vistula, the region to the west of it, which contains the chief mining and manufacturing districts of Poland, remaining quite open to invasion. The marshy lowlands, covered with forests on the western bank of the Vistula, arc a natural defence against an army advancing from the west, and they are supported by the fortresses on the Vistula connected by the Vistula railway. Thcir centre is at Warsaw, with Novogeorgievsk, formerly Modlin, in the north, at the mouth of the Bug, and Ivangorod, formerly Demblin, in the south, at the mouth of the Wieprz. Novogeorgievsk is a strongly fortified camp, which requires a garrison of 12,000 men, and may shelter an army of 50,000 men. The town Sierock, at the junc- tion of the Bug and Narew, is now fortified to protect the rear of Novogeorgievsk. ;

The citadel of Warsaw protects the railway bridge over the Vistula, and six forts—rather out of date, however—protcct the capital. The fortress of Ivangorod, on the right bank of the Vistula, is now supported by six forts, four of which arc situated on the right bank and two on the left. The Vistula

line of fortresses has, however, the great disadvantage of being easily taken from the rear by armies advancing from East Prussia or Galicia. Brest-Litowsky, at the western issue from the marshes of the Pripet, the towns. of Dubno and Lutsk, now about to be fortified, and Bobruisk constitute the second line of defence.

Finances,

Municipal institu- tions,

For- tresses.

The educational institutions of Poland are represented by a Educa- university with 1000 students in 1881 ; 18 gymnasiums and 8 pro- tion.

gymnasiums for boys, with 8269 scholars in 1878 ; 3 “ real-schulen,” with 914 scholars ; and 3279 primary schools, with 113,084 boys and 57,260 girls. There are also excellent technical schools, an insti- tute of agriculture and forestry at Nowa-Alexandrya, and several seminaries for teachers. In 1881 the number of scholars was 1 to 35 of the aggregate population, only 19 per cent. of the children of school age receiving instruction in school. The Jewish children mostly are taught in the heders, where they receive almost no in- struction at all.

The school is the great means used by the Russian Government ‘

- Russi-

for the so-called ‘‘ Russification” of Poland. The teaching in the fication.”

former Szkota Giéwna, now the university of Warsaw (even that of Polish literature), has been carried on in Russian since 1873, botli by a few Polish professors and by the new Russian ones. Polish is taught in primary and secondary schools only twice a week, in the lower classes ; and the scholars are prohibited from speaking Polish within the walls of the lyceums. In all official communications Russian is obligatory, and a gradual elimination of Poles from the

limited in number (to a fourth, for instance, for the examining magistrates), or else totally excluded from certain administrations (such as that of certain railways). ‘The vexatious measures of Russian rule keep up a continuous feeling of discontent ; and, though it was allowed in 1864 that the agrarian measures would conciliate the mass of the peasantry with the Russian Government, it now appears that the peasants, while gaining in those feelings of self-respect and independence which were formerly impossible to them, are not accommodating themselves to Russian rule ; the national feeling is rising into activity with them as formerly with the szlachta, and it grows every day. ; :

There are 27 towus the population of which exceeded 10,000 in- habitants in 1880-82, and 66 towns having a population of more than 5000. The list of the former is as follows :—Warsaw (1882), 406,260 ; Augustow, 11,100 ; Biata, 19,450 ; Czestochowa, 15,520 ; Garwolin, 14,620; Kalisz, 16,400; Kalwarya, 10,610; Kielce, 10,050 ; Konska Wola, 14,300; Kutno, 18,210; ask, 10,810; £404, 49,590 ; Lomza, 15,000; Lublin, 34,980 ; Eukow, 11,030 ; Mtawa, 10,010; Piotrkéw, 23,050; Ptock (1883), 19,640 ; Radom (1883), 19,870; Sedomierz, 14,080; Siedlee, 12,820; Sieradz, 15,040; Suwatki, 18,640; Turek, 11,500; Wtoctawek, 20,660 ; Wtodawa, 17,980 ; Zgerz, 13,360. (BEAK)

POLARITY anp ENANTIOMORPHISM. Any figure, such as a solid of revolution, which has one line in it in reference to which the figure is symmetrical may be said to have an axis, and the points at which the axis cuts the surface of the figure are poles. But the term polarity when applied to material figures or substances is usually confined to cases where there are not only a definite axis and poles, but where the two poles have distinct characters which enable us to recognize them and say which is which. It is in this sense that the word is used here.

Two figures or two portions of matter are said to be enantiomorph to each other when these forms are not superposable, z.¢., the one will not fit into a

mould which fits the other, but the one is identical in form with the mirror image of the other.

Polarity. —As examples of polarity we may take an awn of barley or a cat's tail, in which we recognize the distitic- tion between the two poles or ends, which we may call A and B by finding that it is easy to stroke from say A to B but not in the opposite direction. As an example of enantiomorphism we may take our two hands, which will not fit the same mould or glove, but the one of which resembles in figure the mirror image of the other.

It will be seen by and by that there is a close relation between polarity and enantiomorphism.

In the examples of polarity just given the condition occurs because the parts of the body are arranged in the direction of the axis in a particular order which is different when read backwards. The simplest expression for such a state of matters will be found in the case of a substance composed of equal numbers of three different kinds of particles, these particles being arranged along the axis in the order

A abcabe abe | B,

where A and B are poles and a, 8, ¢ particles of three different kinds. Of course the same may occur with a more complicated constitution, the condition being that the cyclical order read from A to B is different from that read from B to A. Even with particles all of the same kind we can imagine this sort of polarity produced by such an arrangement as

Oe ee ee es ee ee, ee OO 8

Alaaa a a aaa a data a ane

where the density varies periodically as we pass along the axis, but so that the order of variation is different in passing from A to B and from Bto A. There is another sort of polarity produced also by an arrangement such as that described above, but here not along the axis but about it. As we took a cat's tailas an example of the one, so we may take a sable muff as an

example of the other. As we stroke the tail in one direction along the axis, so

administration is steadily going on, Polish employés being either | we stroke the muff in one sense about the axis.

This arrangement also produces polarity, for there is a real difference between the two ends of the muff. The one is that into which we put our right hand, the other that into which we put our left hand if the fur is to lie downwards in front. If we reverse the ends we find the fur sticking up in front, and we have thus as little difficulty in distin- guishing the two poles from one another in this as in the former sort of polarity.

We can easily imagine the particles of a compound sub- stance to be arranged so as to produce this polarity. To take a simple case,—the molecules of the substance may

be formed of three atoms a, 6, and ¢, arranged a ? with

the planes of the molecules all at right angles to the axis, so that on turning the substance about the axis in one sense the atoms in every molecule follow each other in the order abc, and of course in the opposite order when the rotation is reversed.

In these examples the polarity is due to an arrangement of the matter at rest, but both kinds of polarity may be produced by motion. Thus a rotating body has polarity of the second kind; the axis is the axis of rotation, and the two poles differ from each other as the two ends of a muff do. A wire along which a current of electricity is passing has polarity of the first kind; and a magnet, in which currents of electricity may be supposed to circulate about the axis, has polarity of the second kind.

There is an important difference between these two kinds of polarity. We have seen that they depend on two different. conditions—the one on an arrangement of matter or motion along the axis, the other on a similar

arrange- ment about the axis. This gives rise to a difference in their relation to their mirror image.

If we hang up a cat's tail by one end, say the A end, in front of a mirror, we see in the mirror the image of a cat's tail hanging by its Aend. But if we hang up a muff by one end, say the right-hand end, before a mirror, we see in the mirror the image of a muff hanging by its left-hand end, If we put our hands into the muff in the usual way and stand before the mirror we see a person with his hands in a muff in the usual way. But his right and left hands correspond to our left and right hands respectively, and the right and left ends of the muff in the mirror are the images of the left and right ends respectively of the real muff. Thus the mirror image of a body having polarity of the second kind has its polarity reversed.

But the muff and its image are not truly enantiomorph. They differ in position but in nothing else. 'T'urn the one round and it will fit the other.

Magnetic and electric polarity having been already dis- cussed under Execrriciry and MaGNetisM, we shall here consider soine cases of crystalline polarity.

Both kinds of polarity occur in crystals.

We have no direct means of ascertaining how the ultimate particles of a crystal are arranged, but it seems reasonable to suppose that there is a relation between the form of the crystal and the structure of its smallest parts ; and, when we find the crystals of particular substances always showing polarity of the one or the other kind, we naturally suspect that this is the external indication of such an arrangement of the particles as has been shown above to be capable of producing structural polarity. Of crystalline polarity of the first kind the most striking instances are tourmaline and electric calamine (hydrated silicate of zinc), forms of which are shown in figs. 1 and 2, in which it will be seen that the crystals are not similarly terminated at the two ends. It is this kind of crystalline polarity (often called "hemimorphism") which (as was first observed by Haiiy and more fully investigated by

Gustav Rose and by Hankel) is associated with pyroelec- | Marbach observed that different tricity (see MINERALOGY, vol. xvi. p. 376). It is worthy of pyrites

Fic. 2.—Electrice Calamine,

Fie. 1.—Tourmaline.

note that the crystalline polarity and the physical (electric) polarity occurring in the same substances are both of the kind not inverted by reflexion in a mirror.

As an instance of the same kind of crystalline polarity of a somewhat more complicated character, also associated with pyroelectricity, we may take boracite. The crystals of this mineral exhibit combinations of the cube, the rhombic dodecahedron, and the tetrahedron, as shown in fig. 3. If four lines are drawn corresponding to the four dia- gonals of the cube, it will be observed that at the two ends of each of these axes the crystal is differently developed. (In the figure one of these axes is in- (WO dicated by the dotted line.) These \W axes, therefore, resemble the single —¥16. 8.—Boractte. axis in tourmaline and electric calamine, and are also axes of pyroelectricity, the end at which the tetrahedral face is situated being the antilogous pole.!

Scheelite, apatite, ilmenite, and fergusonite are examples

Cae

Fria. 4.—IImenite.,

Fic. 5.—Apatite.

of crystalline polarity of the second kind. Figs. 4, 5, and 6 are representations of forms of ilmenite, apatite, and fergusonite.

Crystalline polarity of both kinds no doubt depends on the arrangement of the molecules and on their structure; it manifests itself by the occurrence of hemihedral or hemimorphic forms. A crystal may have a polar structure

although these external marks of pol- arity are absent, just as the faces parallel to planes of cleavage do not appear on every crystal.

Another kind of contrast between the two complementary hemihedral forms of the same substance may be mentioned here.

Fie, 6,—Fergusonite.

- Upon some crystals of boracite the faces of both tetrahedra oceur. They ean, however, be easily distinguished from one another. The faces of the tetrahedron represented in the figure are smooth and shin- ing, while those of the opposite tetrahedron are rough and usually much smaller. It has been suggested that boracite is only apparently regular, and that each crystal is really a group of eight pyramids with their apices in the centre of the group. For a full discussion of the relation between pyroelectrieity and crystalline form the reader is referred to a series of papers by Professor Hankel in Trans. R. Saxon Soc. of Sciences, 1857-79.

specimens of iron (and also of cobalt glance) have very different thermoelectric characters, differing indeed from one another more than bismuth and antimony. Gustav Rose showed that these thermoelectrically opposite kinds are also crystallographically opposite. There is indeed no geometrical difference between two opposite hemihedral forms in the regular system, but Rose detected a differ- ence in the lustre and striation of the faces of the two kinds, and by examining the rare cases in which the two opposite pentagonal dodecahedra or tetragonal icositetrahedra occur on the same crystal proved that the one surface character belongs to the one, the other surface character to the other of the two complementary hemihedra.

Enantiomorphism.—A figure having polarity of the first kind gives a mirror image resembling itself in form and in position; a figure having polarity of the second kind gives a mirror image resembling itself in form but not in position—the poles being inverted. A figure the axis of which has both kinds of polarity will therefore give a mirror image not superposable to the figure itself, because the polarity of the second kind is reversed while that

of the first kind remains unchanged. The figure and its mirror image are enantiomorph, as well as polar. We can construct a figure which is enantiomorph ‘to its mirror image but not polar. Imagine a. muff so made that in one half the fur lies the one way, and the opposite way in the other half (fig. 7, where the arrow-heads indicate the lie of the fur). In which-ever way we put our hands into this muff one end will be wrong; the muff in the figure has, in fact, two right- hand ends. It has therefore no polarity; the two ends are exactly alike. But there are two ways in which such a non-polar muff could be made—with two right-hand ends as in the figure, or with two left-hand ends, and these two forms are enantiomorph. A helix or screw has similar properties (compare fig. 8 with fig. 7); if uniform it is non-polar, but is either right- or left-handed. Hence the property which each of two enantiomorph bodies pos- sesses has been called by Sir William Thomson “helicoidal asymmetry.”

As we have crystals exhibiting polarity of both kinds, so we have also enantiomorph crystals, indeed the word enantiomorph was first used by Naumann to express the relation between such crystals. The crystallographic theory of enantiomorph crystals has been very fully worked out. We may divide them into two groups— (1) those in which the helicoidal asymmetry depends on the presence of tetartohedral forms of the regular or of the hexagonal system, and (2) those in which it depends on the presence of hemihedral forms of the rhombic system or hemimorphic forms of the monoclinic systen1.

In the first group the asymmetry seems to be produced by the manner in which the molecules, themselves sym- metrical, are arranged in the crystal. In the second group the molecules themselves appear to have helicoidal asym- metry. This is shown by the action of these substances on polarized light. We shall take examples from each group. If we allow a solution of sodium chlorate to crystallize we find that the crystals, which belong to the regular system, are of two kinds enantiomorph to each other. These are represented in fig. 9. The enantio: morphism depends on the combination of the tetrahedron XIX. — 4o

Fig. 8.

and the pentagonal dodecahedron.! Now when a ray of plane polarized light is passed through one of these crystals the plane of polarization is rotated, the amount of rotation being proportional to the length of the path in

oes

Fre. 9.—Sodium Chlorate.

a, right-handed ; 8, left-handed.

the crystal. The crystals having the form a rotate to the right, those having the form 6 to the left. They are therefore optically as well as crystallographically enantio- morph. But a solution of sodium chlorate is without action on the plane of polarization, even if the solution be made by dissolving only right-handed or only left-handed crystals, and if a crystal be fused the fused mass is optically inactive, so that it would seem that the optical activity depends on the arrangement of the molecules in the crystal and not on any enantiomorphism in the mole- cules. The enantiomorphism of quartz crystals is indi- cated by the presence of faces of a tetartohedral form (vol. xvi. p. 389). The two kinds of crystals rotate the plane of polarization equally, but in opposite senses, when a plane polarized ray is passed through a section cut at right angles to the axis of the crystal. Here also the optical activity ceases when crystalline structure is de- stroyed by fusion or solution.

Right-handed and left-handed tartaric acids crystallize in enantiomorph forms (fig. 10). Their solutions are optic-

a, right-handed; 6, left-handed.

Fic. 10.—Tartaric Acid.

ally active, the amount of the rotation for the same strength of solution and the same length of path in it being the same in both acids, but the sense of the rotation is right-handed in the one and left-handed in the other. It is clear that here we have to do with enantiomorph molecules. In ordinary physical properties such as den- sity, solubility, refracting power—in short, in everything not involving right- or left-handedness—the acids are iden- tical.

When mixed in equal proportions they unite and form racemic acid which is optically inactive, and from racemic acid we can by various means recover unchanged the right and left-handed tartaric acids) We now know a considerable number of cases where, as in that of the two tartaric acids, both enantiomorphs have been discovered, and many where only one has as yet been found.

It is natural that we should ask what peculiarity of constitution can give a molecule this helicoidal asymmetry? A very ingenious answer to this question was given simul- taneously and independently by the French chemist Le Bel and the Dutch chemist Van’t Hoff. We shall

1 This combination is regarded as tetartohedral because the tetra-

hedron and the pentagonal dodecah iffer fo g ecahedron belong to two different classes

POLAT

give a short statement of the essential points of this in- teresting theory.

All the known substances which are optically active. in solution are compounds of carbon, and may be regarded as derived from marsh gas, a compound of one atom of carbon and four of hydrogen, by the replacement of hydro- gen by other elements or compound radicals. Now we do not know how the atoms of hydrogen are actually arranged relatively to each other and to the atom of carbon in the molecule of marsh gas, but, if we may make a sup- position on the subject, the most simple is to imagine the four hydrogen atoms at the apices of a regular tetrahedron in the centre of which is the carbon atom as in the diagrams (fig. 11), where C 3 B represents the posi- , ae tion of the carbon * atom and a, B, y, 6 that of the four atoms of hydrogen.

If these hydrogen atoms are replaced by atoms of other elements or by compound radicals we should expect a change of form of the tetrahedron. If two or more of the atoms or radicals united to the carbon atom are similar there is only one way of arranging them, but if they are all different there are two ways in which they may be arranged, as indicated in the figures. It

will be seen that these two arrangements are enantiomorph. In the figures the tetrahedron is represented as regular, but if the dis- tance from C depends on the nature of the atom, the tetrahedron, when a, B, y, and 6 are all different, will not be symmetrical, but its two forms will be enantiomorph. A carbon atom combined with four different atoms or com- pound radicals may therefore be called an asymmetric carbon atom.

Now all substances of ascertained constitution, the solutions of which are optically active, contain an asym- metric carbon atom, and their molecules should therefore, on the above hypothesis, have helicoidal asymmetry.

The converse is not generally true. Many substances contain an asymmetric carbon atom but are optically inactive. It is easy to reconcile this with the theory; indeed, a little consideration will show that it is a necessary consequence of it.

Let us suppose that we have the symmetrical combina- tion of C with a, a, 8, y and that we treat the substance in such a way that one a is replaced by 6. The new arrangement is asymmetrical, and will be right or left as the one or the other a is replaced. But the chances for the two are equal, and therefore, as the number of mole- cules in any quantity we can deal with is very great, the ratio of the number of right-handed molecules in the new substance to the number of left-handed ones will be sensibly that of unity. It is therefore evident that by ordinary chemical processes we cannot expect to produce optically active from optically inactive substances ; all that we can get is an inactive mixture of equal quantities of the two oppositely active substances.

As these two substances have identical properties in every respect where right- or left-handedness is not in- volved, the problem of separating them is a difficult one. We may note three distinct ways in which the separation can be effected.

(1) By crystallization. For example, the right and left double tartrates of soda and ammonia crystallize in enan- tiomorph forms (fig. 12) and are less soluble in water than the double racemate formed by their union. If therefore racemic acid (the optically inactive compound of equal quantities of right and left tartaric acids) is half neutral-

§

Fig. 11.

Plate II.

Extent.

Ap- proaches.

POL—

ized with soda and half with ammonia, we obtain an optically inactive solution containing a mixture of the two double salts. If this solution is allowed to crystallize each salt crystallizes independently, and the crystals can be separated by picking them out. Further, a super- saturated solution of the one double salt is not made to crystallize by contact with a crystal of the other, so that

Fic. 12.—Double Tartrate of Soda and Ammonia. 6, left-handed.

if we make a supersaturated solution of the inactive mix- ture and drop into the vessel, at different places, two crystals one of the right the other of the left salt, crystal- lization occurs at each place, at the one of the one kind and at the other of the other. |

(2) By the action of another optically active substance. While the salts of the two opposite tartaric acids with an inactive base are precisely alike in solubility, density, and other physical characters, and, if they crystallize, crystal- lize in the same form (or in enantiomorph forms), it is not at all so when the base is optically active; thus right tartaric acid forms a crystalline salt with left asparagine, while with the same base left tartaric acid gives an

a, right-handed ;

-uncrystallizable compound.

(3) By the action of living ferments. which act as ferments do not show any right- or left-hand- edness as far as their obvious anatomical structure is

con- cerned, but Pasteur has shown that some of them are, if we may use the expression, physiologically asymmetrical. As an example we may give the very interesting case of mandelic acid. This acid, which stands to benzoic alde- hyde (bitter almond oil) in the same relation as lactic acid does to common aldehyde, contains one asymmetric carbon atom in its molecule. It is optically inactive, and there- fore, if Le Bel and Van ’t Hoff’s theory is true, it must be a mixture of two oppositely active acids. Now Lewko- witsch found that when Peniciliwm glaucum is cultivated in

The minute fungi |

Em) 4, 315

| a solution of mandelic acid fermentation takes place. This goes on until exactly half of the acid is decomposed, and what remains has all the properties of mandelic acid, but is optically active ; it is the right-handed component of the mixture, the growing fungus having consumed the other.

There is an interesting peculiarity of tartaric acid dis- covered by Pasteur (to whom we owe nearly all our know- ledge of the relations between optical activity and crystalline form in tartaric acid) which is of importance in connexion with the theory we have just been explaining.

We have not only right and left tartaric acid and racemic acid, the inactive compound of the two, but also a kind of tartaric acid which is inactive but incapable of being separated into the two oppositely active acids.

Now the chemical formula of tartaric acid is

OE. HH © Lh dt bh | ae a:

Tt will be observed that the carbon atoms marked * are asymmetric, and that they occupy precisely similar posi- | tions in the molecule. Each of them is combined with |H, OH, COOH and CH(OH)COOH. If in both of them these four things are arranged in the same order there is helicoidal asymmetry—the one order giving the one, the other the other enantiomorph form. But if the one has one order and the other the opposite, then there is in the whole molecule no helicoidal asymmetry, as the | two halves exactly

balance one another. There is not, as | in racemic acid, a compound of one molecule of each of the _ two opposite active acids, but rather a compound of half _a molecule of each; and we should not expect such a com- | pound to be easily separable. Jungfleisch has shown that if any one of the four tartaric acids (right, left, racemic, _and inactive) is mixed with a little water and kept for some _ time at a temperature of about 200° C., it is converted into _a mixture of racemic and inactive tartaric acids, so that, as racemic acid can be divided into right and left tartaric | acids, it is possible to prepare any one of the four from any other. (A. ©. B.)

POLARIZATION OF LIGHT. See Licut and Wave

| THEORY.

POLAR REGIONS

T and Antarctic Circles, in 66° 32’ N. and S., to the north and south poles, the circles being 1408 geographical miles from the poles. The intense cold and the difficulties of ice navigation have made the discovery and examination of these regions a slow and hazardous task. Millions of square miles are still entirely unknown. In the present article the history of the progress of discovery within the

north polar region will be traced, and some account of its |

physical geography will follow. A similar review of work in the south polar region will conclude the article.

Nortu Potar REGion.

The Arctic Circle is a ring running a little south of the northern shores of America, Asia, and Europe, so that those shores form a fringe within the polar region, and are its boundary to the south, except at three openings,—those of the North Atlantic, of Davis Strait, and of Behring’s (more properly Bering’s) Strait.

The width of the approach to this region by the Atlantic

Ocean, in its narrowest part, is 660 miles, from the |

Norwegian Islands of Lofoten to Cape Hodgson on the

HE polar regions extend respectively from the Arctic |

east coast of Greenland. The width of the approach by Davis Strait in the narrowest part, which is nearly on the Arctic Circle, is 165 miles; and the width of Behring Strait is 45 miles. Thus out of the whole ring of 8640 miles along which the Arctic Circle passes about 900 miles is over water. This great environment of land is an important feature in the physical condition of the north polar region. It influences the currents and the movements of ice, which are still further affected by the archipelagos lying to the northward of the fringing coast-lines. The larger opening into the north polar region by way of the Atlantic is divided from Davis Strait by the vast mass of Greenland, which, extending for an unknown distance to the north, crosses the Arctic Circle and ends in a point at Cape Farewell in 59° 48’ N. lat. It was inevitable that the routes across the Arctic Circle by the Atlantic and Davis Strait should first become known, because these openings to the polar regions are nearest to the temperate regions inhabited by the exploring nations of Europe.

| Circle, first brought by PyTueas (q.v.), and afterwards | doubted, was the extent of the knowledge of the north

A rumour respecting Thule, an island on the Arctic Thule.

Other.

Norse- men.

Wil- loughby.

Chan- cellor.

Burrough.,

polar regions with which the ancients can be credited. But in the 9th century some Irish monks really appear to have visited Iceland. The monk Dicuil, writing about 825, says that he had information from brethren who had been at Thule during several months, and they reported that there was no darkness at the summer solstice.

King Alfred told the story of the first polar voyages undertaken for discovery and the acquisition of knowledge, in his very free translation of Orosius. In the first book he inserted the narrative of the voyages of Other and Wulfstan, related to him by the former explorer himself. The localities mentioned in the story cannot now be identified, but it seems probable that Other rounded the North Cape, and visited the coast of Lapland.

The Norsemen of the Scandinavian peninsula, after colonizing Iceland, were the first to make permanent settle- ments on the shores of Greenland, and to extend their voyages beyond the Arctic circle along the western coast of that vast glacier-covered land. See GREENLAND. The Norse colonies in Greenland at Brattelid and Einarsfjord did not extend farther north than 65°, but in the summer time the settlers carried on their seal hunting far beyond the Arctic circle. One of their runic stones was found in a cairn in latitude 73° N., the inscription showing that the date of its being left there was 1235. Another expe- dition is believed, on good grounds, to have reached a latitude of 75° 46’ N. in Barrow Strait, about the year 1266. Their ordinary hunting grounds were in 73° N., to the north of the modern Danish settlement of Upernivik. For the visits of the Greenlanders to the American coasts see AMERICA, vol. i. p. 706.

The last trace of communication between Greenland and Norway was in 1347. The black death broke out in Norway and the far off colony was forgotten; while the settlers were attacked by Skrellings or Eskimo, who over- ran the West Bygd in 1349. Ivar Bardsen, the steward to the bishopric of Gardar in the East Bygd, and a native of Greenland, was sent to convey help to the sister colony.: A document, of which Ivar Bardsen was the author, has been preserved. It consists of sailing directions for reach- ing the colony from Iceland, and a chorography of the colony itself. It is the oldest work on arctic geography, and is still valuable in the study of all questions relating to the early settlements in Greenland. From 1400 to 1448 there was

some communication, at long intervals, with the Greenland settlers, but during the latter half of that century it entirely ceased. Here then the ancient portion of polar history comes to anend. The next period, comprised in the 16th and 17th centuries, was that in which expeditions were despatched across the Arctic Circle to discover a shorter route to India.

Sebastian Cabot, whose own northern voyages have been spoken of in the article Casot, was the chief pro- moter of the expedition which sailed under Sir Hugh Willoughby and Richard Chancellor on the 20th May 1553, “for the search and discovery of the northern parts of the world, to open a way and passage to our men, for travel to new and unknown kingdoms.” Willoughby, after dis- covering Nova Zembla (Novaya Zemlya) by sighting the cqast of Goose Land, resolved to winter in a harbour of Lapland, where he and all his men perished of starvation and cold. Chancellor reached the Bay of St Nicholas, and landed near Archangel, which was then only a castle. He undertook a journey to Moscow, made arrangements for commercial intercourse with Russia, and returned safely. His success proved the practical utility of polar voyages. It led to a charter being granted to the Associa- tion of Merchant Adventurers, of which Cabot was named governor for life, and gave fresh impulse to arctic discovery.

In the spring of 1556 Stephen Burrough, who had

Wt Gro Ns

served with Chancellor, sailed in a small pinnace called the “Searchthrift,” and kept a careful journal of his voyage. He went to Archangel, and discovered the strait leading into the Kara Sea, between Nova Zembla and the island of Waigat. In May 1580 the company fitted out two vessels under Arthur Pet and Charles Jackman, with orders to pass through the strait discovered by Burrough, and thence to sail eastward beyond the mouth of the river Obi. Pet discovered the strait into the Kara Sea, between Waigat and the mainland, and made a persevering effort to push eastward, returning to England in safety. Jack-

Pet

man, after wintering in a Norwegian port, sailed home- –

ward but was never heard of again.

In 1558 a narrative and map were published at Venice The Zeni.

which profoundly affected the system of polar cartography for many years afterwards. The publication was the handiwork of a Venetian nobleman named Niccold Zeno. Towards the close of the 14th century his ancestor, also named Niccold, made a voyage into the northern seas, and entered the service of a chief named Zichnmi as pilot. He was eventually joined by his brother Antonio, and four years afterwards died in the country he called Frislanda. Antonio remained ten years longer in the service of Zichnmi, and then returned to Venice. The younger Niccolé found the mutilated letters of these brothers in the Zeni palace, with a map; and out of these materials he prepared the narrative and map which he published, adding what he considered improvements to the map. It was accepted at the time as a work of high authority, and the names on it continued to appear on subsequent maps for at least a century, puzzling both geographers at home and explorers in the field. After a very exhaustive study of the subject, Mr Major has identified the names on the Zeni map, as follows :—Engronelant, Greenland ; Islanda, Iceland; Estland, Shetlands ; Frisland, Faroe Isles ;1 Mark- land, Nova Scotia; Estotiland, Newfoundland ; Drogeo, coast of North America ; Icaria, coast of Kerry in Ireland.

We now come to the voyages of Frobisher, undertaken Frobisher,

to obtain the means for equipping an expedition for the discovery of a shorter route to India by the north-west. Aided by Michael Lok, an influential merchant and diligent student of geography, Frobisher sailed, in the spring of 1576, with two small vessels of 20 to 25 tons, called the “Gabriel” and “ Michael.” But the “ Michael” parted company in the Atlantic, the voyage being continued in the “Gabriel” alone. On 20th July Frobisher sighted high land, which he called Queen Elizabeth’s Foreland ; and the next day he entered the strait to which he gave his own name, calling the land “ Meta Incognita.” On his return in the autumn, with various specimens of plants and stones, the “ goldfinders ” in London took it into their heads that a glittering piece of mica-schist contained gold ore. This caused great excitement, and much larger ex- peditions were fitted out, in the two following years, to collect these precious ores. As many as

fifteen vessels formed the third expedition of 1578, and one of them, a busse (small ship) of Bridgwater, called the “ Emma,” reported that on her voyage home she had sighted land in the Atlantic and sailed along it for three days. It was never seen again, and may have been only a large ice-field ; but it soon found its place on maps and charts under the name of Busse Island, and afterwards as “sunken land of Busse.” For a long time Frobisher Strait was supposed to pass through Greenland, and, the map of the Zeni adding to the confusion, the land to the south was called Frislanda. It is now clear that Frobisher never saw Greenland, and that his strait and ‘Meta Incognita ” are on the American side of Davis Strait. What Frobisher

1 Admiral Irminger of Copenhagen holds the opinion that Frisland is not the Faroe Isles, but Iceland.

Davis.

Barents,

POLAR “REGIONS

really did was to establish the fact that there were two or :

more wide openings leading to the westward, between latitudes 60° and 63°, on the American coast.

John Davis, who made the next attempt to discover a north-west passage, was one of the most scientific seamen of that age. He made three voyages in three successive years, aided and fitted out by William Sanderson and other merchants. Sailing from Dartmouth on the 7th June 1585, he was the first to visit the west coast of Greenland subsequent to the abandonment of the Norse colonies. He called it “The Land of Desolation.” He discovered Gilbert’s Sound in 64° 10’ (where now stands the Danish settlement of Godthaab) and then, crossing the strait which bears his name, he traced a portion of its western shore. In the second voyage Davis noted what

he calls ‘‘a furious overfall,” which was the tide flowing |

into Hudson Strait ; and in his third voyage, in 1587, he advanced far up his own strait, and reached a lofty granite island in 72° 41’ N. which he named Sanderson’s Hope. He considered that there was good hope of advancing farther, and reported “no ice towards the north, but a great sea, free, large, very salt and blue, and of an unsearchable depth.” The results of his discoveries are shown on the Molyneux globe which is now in the library of the Middle Temple; but he found it impossible to reconcile his work with that of Frobisher, and with the Zeni map. In 1595 Davis published a tract entitled The World’s Hydvrographical Description, in which he ably states the arguments in favour of the discovery of a north- west passage.

The Dutch also saw the importance of a northern route to China and India, especially as the routes by the Cape of Good Hope and Magellan’s Strait were jealously guarded by Spaniards and Portuguese. Their plan was to proceed by the north-east along the coast of Asia. As early as 1578 Dutch merchants had opened a trade with Kola and Archangel, but it was Peter Plancius, the learned cosmo- grapher of Amsterdam, who conceived the idea of dis- covering a north-east passage. In 1594 the Amsterdam merchants fitted out a vessel of 100 tons, under the com- mand of Willem Barents. The coast of Nova Zembla was sighted on the 4th July, and from that date until the 3rd of August Barents continued perseveringly to seek a way through the ice-floes, and discovered the whole western coast as far as Cape Nassau and the Orange Islands at the north-west extremity. The second voyage in which Barents was engaged merely made an unsuccessful attempt to enter the Kara Sea. The third was more important. Two vessels sailed from Amsterdam on May 13, 1596, under the command of Jacob van Heemskerck and Corneliszoon Rijp. Barents accompanied Heemskerck as pilot, and Gerrit de Veer, the historian of the voyage, was on board as mate. ‘The masses of ice in the straits leading to the Sea of Kara, and the impenetrable nature of the pack ‘near Nova Zembla, had suggested the advisability of avoiding the land and, by keeping a northerly course, of seeking a passage in the open sea. They sailed northwards and on 9th June discovered Bear Island. Continuing on the same course they sighted the north-western extreme of Spitz- bergen, soon afterwards being stopped by the polar pack ice. This important discovery was named “ Nieue Land,” and was believed to be a part of Greenland. Arriving at Bear Island again on 1st July, Rijp parted company, while Heemskerck and Barents proceeded

eastward, intending to pass round the northern extreme of Nova Zembla. On the 26th August they reached Ice Haven, after rounding the northern extremity of the land. Here they wintered in a house built out of driftwood and planks from the wrecked vessel. In the spring they made their way in

ol7

voyage. This was the first time that an arctic winter was successfully faced. The voyages of Barents stand in the first rank among the polar enterprises of the 16th century. They led directly to the flourishing whale and seal fisheries which long enriched the Netherlands.

The English enterprises were continued by the Muscovy Company, and by associations of patriotic merchants of London; and even the East India Company sent an

expedition under Captain Waymouth in 1602 to seek for a Way. passage by the opening seen by Davis, but it had no success, mouth.

The best servant of the Muscovy Company in the work of polar discovery was Henry Hudson. was undertaken in 1607, when he discovered the most northern known point of the east coast of Greenland in 73° N. named “ Hold with Hope,” and examined the edge of the ice between Greenland and Spitzbergen, reaching a latitude of 80° 23’ N. On his way home he discovered the island now called Jan Mayen, which he named “ Hudson’s Tutches.” In his second expedition, during the season of 1608, Hudson examined the edge of the ice be- tween Spitzbergen and Nova Zembla. In his third voyage he was employed by the Dutch East India Company, and he explored the coasts of North America, discovering the Hudson river. In 1610 he discovered Hudson’s Strait, and the great bay which bears and immortalizes his name (see Hupson, vol. xii. p. 332).

His first voyage Hudson.

The voyages of Hudson led immediately to the Spitz- Spitz- bergen whale fishery. From 1609 to 1612 Jonas Poole bergen

made four voyages for the prosecution of this lucrative business, and he was followed by Fotherby, Baffin, Joseph, and Edge. These bold seamen, while in the pursuit of whales, added considerably to the knowledge of the archi- pelago of islands known under the name of Spitzbergen, and in 1617 Captain Edge discovered a large island to the eastward, which he named Wyche's Land.

whale fishery.

At about the same period the kings of Denmark began Danish

to send expeditions for the rediscovery of the lost Green- land colony. In 1605 Christian IV. sent out three ships, under the Englishmen Cunningham and Hall, and a Dane named Lindenoy, which reached the western coast of Greenland and had much intercourse with the Eskimo. Other expeditions followed in 1606-7.

Meanwhile the merchant adventurers of London con- tinued to push forward the western discovery. Sir Thomas Button, in command of two ships, the " Resolution" and "Discovery," sailed from England in May 1612. He entered Hudson's Bay, crossed to its western shore, and wintered at the mouth of a river in 57° 10' N. which was named Nelson's river after the master of the ship, who died and was buried there. Next year Button explored the shore of Southampton Island as far as 65° N., and returned home in the autumn of 1613. An expedition under Captain Gibbons, despatched in 1614, was a miser- able failure; but in 1615 Robert Bylot as master and William Baffin as pilot and navigator in the ' Discovery" examined the coasts of Hudson's Strait, and Baffin, who was the equal of Davis as a scientific seaman, made many valuable observations. In 1616 Bylot and Baffin again set out in the "Discovery." Sailing up Davis Strait they passed that navigator's farthest point at Sanderson's Hope, and sailed round the great channel with smaller channels leading from it which has been known ever since as Baffin's Bay. Baffin nanied the most northern opening Smith Sound, after the first governor of the East India Company, and the munificent promoter of the voyage, Sir Thomas Smith. Wolstenholme Sound, Cape Dudley Digges, Hakluyt Island, Lancaster Sound, Jones Sound, and the Cary Islands were named after other promoters and friends of the voyage. The fame of Baffin mainly

boats to the Lapland coast; but Barents died during the | rests upon the discovery of the great channel extending

voyages.

Button.

Baffin.

Luke the London ship “‘ Charles” Luke Fox explored the western Rep went far to the eastward along the northern shores of Fox. _ gide of Hudson’s Bay as far as the place called ‘Sir Thomas | Greenland, and saw very high land in 80° N, which has James. Roe’s Welcome.” In August he encountered Captain James | since been known as Gilies Land. The Dutch geographi- and the Bristol ship “Maria” in the middle of Hudson’s | cal knowledge of Spitzbergen was embodied in the famous Bay, and went north until he reached “North-west Fox | chart of the Van Keulens (father and son), 1700-1728. his furthest,” in 66° 47’ N. He then returned home and | The Dutch whale fishery continued to flourish until the wrote the most entertaining of all the polar narratives. | French Revolution, and formed a splendid nursery for Captain James was obliged to winter off Charlton Island, training the seamen of the Netherlands. From 1700 to in the southern extreme of Baffin’s Bay, and did not return | 1775 the fleet numbered 100 ships and upwards. In until October 1632. Another English voyager, Captain | 1719 the Dutch opened a whale fishery in Davis Strait, Wood, attempted, without success, to discover a north-east | and continued to frequent the west coast of Greenland for passage in 1676. upwards of sixty years from that time. In the course of The 16th and 17th centuries were periods of discovery | 6372 Dutch whaling voyages to Davis Strait between 1719 and daring enterprise, and the results gained by the gallant | and 1775 only 38 ships were wrecked. seamen of those times are marvellous when we consider The most flourishing period of the English fishery in English their insignificant resources and the small size of their | the Spitzbergen seas was from 1752 to 1820. Bounties whale vessels. Hudson’s Strait and Bay, Davis Strait, and | of 40s. per ton were granted by Act of Parliament; and fishery Baffin’s Bay, the icy seas from Greenland to Spitzbergen | in 1778 as many as 255 sail of whalers were employed.

‘and from Spitzbergen to Nova Zembla, had all been dis- | In order to encourage discovery £5000 were offered in covered, The following century was rather a period of | 1776 to the first ship that should sail beyond the 89th reaping the results of former efforts than of discovery. It | parallel (16 Geo. III. c. 6). Among the numerous daring saw the settlement of the Hudson’s Bay Territory and of | and able whaling captains, Captain Scoresby takes the Scoreshy. Greenland, and the development of the whale and seal | first rank, alike as a successful fisher and a scientific fisheries. observer. His admirable Account of the Arctic Regions is

The Hudson’s Bay Company was incorporated in 1670, | still a text book for all students of the subject. In 1806 and Prince Rupert sent out Zachariah Gillan, who wintered | he succeeded in advancing his ship “ Resolution” as far at Rupert’s river. At first very slow progress was made. | north as 81° 12’ 42”. In 1822 he forced his way through A voyage undertaken by Mr Knight, who had been | the ice which encumbers the approach to land on the east appointed governor of the factory at Nelson river, was | coast of Greenland, and surveyed that coast from 75° down unfortunate, as his two ships were lost and the crews | to 69° N., a distance of 400 miles. Scoresby combined Scroggs. perished. ‘This was in 1719. In 1722 John Scroggs was | the closest attention to his business with much valuable sent from Churchill river in search of the missing ships, | scientific work and no insignificant amount of exploration. but merely entered Sir Thomas Roe’s Welcome and The Russians, after the acquisition of Siberia, succeeded Russians. returned. His reports were believed to offer decisive | in gradually exploring the whole of the northern shores of proofs of the existence of a passage into the Pacific; and | that vast region. As long ago as 1648 a Cossack named a naval expedition was despatched under the command of | Simon Deshneff equipped a boat expedition in the river Middle- Captain Christopher Middleton, consisting of the ‘“ Dis- | Kolyma, passed through the strait afterwards named after ton. covery” pink and the “Furnace” bomb. Wintering in | Bering, and reached the Gulf of Anadyr. In 1738 a Churchill river, Middleton started in July 1742 and dis- | voyage was made by two Russian officers from Archangel covered Wager river and Repulse Bay. In 1746 Captain | to the mouths of the Obi and the Yenisei. Efforts were Moor. W. Moor made another voyage in the same direction, and | then made to effect a passage from the Yenisei to the Coats. explored the Wager Inlet.

Captain Coats, who was in the | Lena. In 1735 Lieutenant T. Tchelyuskin got as far as Tchel- service of the company 1727-51, wrote a useful account | 77° 25’ N. near the cape which bears his name; and in yuskin. of the geography of Hudson’s Bay. Later in the century | 1743 he reached that most northern point of Siberia in the Hudson’s Bay Company’s servants made some important | sledges, in 77° 41’ N. Captain Vitus Bering, a Dane, Bering. land journeys to discover the shores of the American polar | was appointed by Peter the Great to command an expedi- Hearne. ocean. From 1769 to 1772 Samuel Hearne descended | tion in 1725. ‘Two vessels were built at Okhotsk, and in the Coppermine river to the polar sea; and in 1789 | July 1728 Bering ascertained the existence of a strait ne Alexander Mackenzie discovered the mouth of the Mac- | between Asia and America. In 1740 Bering was again enziekenzie river. employed. He sailed from Okhotsk in a vessel called the The establishment of the modern Danish settlements in | “St Paul,” with G. W. Steller on board as naturalist. Greenland has already been spoken of under the heading | Their object was to discover the American side of the GREENLAND (q.v.). strait, and they sighted that magnificent peak named by Dutch The countrymen of Barents vied with the countrymen | Bering Mount St Elias. The Aleutian Islands were also ae, of Hudson in the perilous calling which annually brought | explored, but the ship was wrecked on an island named

‘ fleets of ships to the Spitzbergen seas during the 18th | after the ill-fated discoverer, and scurvy broke out amongst

ee The Dutch had their large summer station for hiscrew. Bering himself died there on December 8, 1741. q ouimg down blubber at Smeerenberg, near the northern Thirty years after the death of Bering a Russian Liakhof. extreme of the west coast of Spitzbergen. Captain | merchant named Liakhoff discovered the New Siberia or Vlamingh, in 1664, advanced as far round the northern | Liakhoff Islands, and in 1771 he obtained the exclusive

north from Davis Strait; but it was unjustly dimmed for many years, owing to the omission of Purchas to publish the skilful navigator’s tabulated journal and map in his great collection of voyages. It may be mentioned, as an illustration of the value of these early voyages to modern science, that

Professor Hansteen of Christiania made use of Baffin's magnetic observations in the compilation of his series of magnetic maps.

In 1631 two expeditions were despatched, one by the merchants of London, the others by those of Bristol. In

POLAG wPoi0 Ns

end of Nova Zembla as the winter quarters of Barents. In 1700 Captain Cornelis Roule is said by Witsen to have sailed north in the longitude of Nova Zembla, and to have seen an extent of 40 miles of broken land. But Theunis Ys, one of the most experienced Dutch navigators, was of opinion that no vessel had ever been north of the 82d parallel. bergen group, and wrote the best account of its physical features and natural history that existed previous to the time of Scoresby. In 1707 Captains Gilies and Outsger

In 1671 Frederick Martens visited the Spitz- Martens.

Heden- strom.

Phipps.

Cook.

Barrow.

Pay LAR

right from the empress Catherine to dig there for fossil ivory. These islands were more fully explored by an officer named Hedenstrém in 1809, and seekers for fossil ivory annually resorted to them. A Russian expedi- tion under Captain Tchitschakoff, sent to Spitzbergen in 1764, was only able to attain a latitude of 80° 30' N.

Since the year 1773 the objects of polar exploration, at least so far as England is concerned, have been mainly the acquisition of knowledge in various branches of science. It was on these grounds that the Honourable Daines Bar- rington and the Royal Society induced the Government to

undertake arctic exploration once more. The result was that two vessels, the "' Racehorse" and ' Carcass" bombs, were commissioned, under the command of Captain Phipps. The expedition sailed from the Nore on the 2d June 1773, and was stopped by the ice to the north of Hakluyt Head- land, the north-western point of Spitzbergen. They reached the Seven Islands and discovered Walden Island ; but beyond this point progress was impossible. When they attained their highest latitude in 80° 48' N., north of the central part of the Spitzbergen group, the ice at the edge of the pack was 24 feet thick. Captain Phipps returned to England in September 1773. Five years afterwards Captain Cook received instructions to proceed northward from Kamchatka and search for a north-east or north-west passage from the Pacific to the Atlantic. In accordance with these orders Captain Cook, during his third voyage, reached Cape Prince of Wales, the western extremity of America, on August 9,1778. His ships, the ' Resolution " aud "Discovery," arrived at the edge of the ice, after passing Behring Strait, in 70° 41'N. On August 17th the farthest point seen on the American side was named Icy Cape. On the Asiatic side Cook's survey extended to Cape North. In the following year Captain Clerke, who had succeeded to the command, made another attempt, but his ship was beset in the ice, and so much damaged that further attempts were abandoned.

The wars following the French Revolution put an end to voyages of discovery till, after the peace of 1815, north polar research found a powerful and indefatigable advocate in Sir John Barrow (q.v.). Through his influence a measure for promoting polar discovery became law in 1818 (58 Geo. III. c. 20), by which a reward of £20,000 was offered for making the north-west passage, and of £5000 for reaching 89° N., while the commissioners of longitude were empowered to award proportionate sums to those who might achieve certain portions of svch discoveries. In 1817 the icy seas were reported by Captain Scoresby and others to be remarkably open, and this circumstance enabled Barrow to obtain sanction for the despatch of two expe- ditions, each consisting of two whalers—one to attempt discoveries by way of Spitzbergen and the other by Baffin's Bay. The vessels for the Spitzbergen route, the '' Doro- thea" and "Trent," were commanded by Captain David Buchan and Lieutenant John Franklin, and sailed in April 1818. Driven into the pack by a heavy swell from the south, both vessels were severely nipped, and had to return to England. 'The other

expedition, consisting of the ‘ Isa- bella” and ‘ Alexander,” commanded by Captain John Ross and Lieutenant Edward Parry, followed in the wake of Baffin’s voyage of 1616. Ross sailed from England in April 1818. The chief merit of his voyage was that it vindicated Baflin’s accuracy as a discoverer. Its practical result was that the way was shown to a very lucrative fishery in the ‘‘North Water” of Baffin’s Bay, which continued to be frequented by a fleet of whalers every year. Captain Ross thought that the inlets reported by Baffin were merely bays, while the opinion of his second in command was that a wide opening to the westward existed through Lancaster Sound of Baffin.

im eo | ONS

o19

Parry was consequently selected to command a new Parry’s expedition in the following year. His two vessels, the fitst and “Hecla” and “Griper,” passed through Lancaster Sound, °°°°“4 the continuation of which he named Barrow Strait, and TORE advanced westward, with an archipelago on his starboard hand, since known as the Parry Islands. He observed a wide opening to the north, which he named Wellington Channel, and sailed onwards for 300 miles to Melville Island. He was stopped by that impenetrable polar pack of vast thickness which appears to surround the archipelago to the north of the American continent, and was obliged to winter in a harbour on the south coast of Melville Island. Parry’s sanitary arrangements during the winter were very judicious, and the scientific results of his expedition were most valuable. The vessels returned in October 1820; and a fresh expedition in the “Fury” and “Hecla,” again under the command of Captain Parry, sailed from the Nore on May 8, 1821, and passed their first winter on the coast of the newly discovered Melville Peninsula in 66° 11’ N.

Still persevering, Parry passed his second winter among

the Eskimo at Igloolik in 69° 20’ N., and discovered a channel leading westward from the head of Hudson’s Bay, which he named Fury and Hecla Strait. The expedition returned in the autumn of 1823. Meantime Parry’s friend Frank- Franklin had been employed in attempts to reach by land lin’s

first the northern shores of America, hitherto only touched at JOU™*Y-two points by Hearne and Mackenzie. Franklin went out

in 1819, accompanied by Dr Richardson, George Back, and Hood. They landed at York factory, and proceeded to

the Great Slave Lake. In August of the following year

they started for the Coppermine river, and, embarking on

it, reached its mouth on July 18, 1821. From that point

550 miles of coast-line were explored, the extreme point being called Cape Turnagain. Most frightful sufferings,

from starvation and cold, had to be endured during the return journey ; but eventually Franklin, Richardson, and

Back arrived safely at Fort Chippewyan. It was now thought desirable that an attempt should be made to con-

nect the Cape Turnagain of Franklin with the discoveries made by Parry during his second voyage; but the first effort, under Captain Lyon in the ‘‘Griper,” was unsuc- cessful.

In 1824 three combined attempts were organized. Parry’s While Parry again entered by Lancaster Sound and pushed third down a great opening he had seen to the south named Y°Y*8° Prince Regent’s Inlet, Captain Beechey was to enter Behring’s Strait, and Franklin was to make a second journey to the shores of Arctic America. Parry was unfortunate, but Beechey entered Behring Strait in the “ Blossom ” in Beechey. August 1826, and extended our knowledge as far as Point Barrow in 71° 23’ 30” H. lat. Franklin, in 1825-26, Frank- descended the Mackenzie river to its mouth, and ex-lin’s plored the coast for 374 miles to the westward; while Se Dr Richardson discovered the shore between the mouths ; of the Mackenzie and Coppermine, and sighted land to the northward, named by him Wollaston Land, the dividing channel being called Union and Dolphin Strait. They returned in the autumn of 1826.

Work was also being done in the Spitzbergen and Barents Seas. From 1821 to 1824 the Russian Captain Lutke. Lutke was surveying the west coast of Nova Zembla as far as Cape Nassau, and examining the ice of the adjacent sea. In May 1823 the “Griper” sailed, under the com- mand of Captain Clavering, to convey Captain Sabine to Claver- the polar regions in order to make pendulum observations. “8: Clavering pushed through the ice in 75° 30’ N., and succeeded in reaching the east coast of Greenland, where observations were taken on Pendulum Island. He laid down the land from 76° to 72° N.

Parry’s attempt in 1827 to reach the pole from the

Parry’s

attempt to reach the pole.

Graah.

The Rosses.

a land named by him Boothia Felix.

Back.

Simpson and Dease.

Rae.

320

northern coast of Spitzbergen, by means has been described under the heading Parry. The highest latitude reached was 82° 45’ N.; and the attempt showed that it is useless to leave the land and trust to the drifting pack in polar exploration. ; ;

In 1829 the Danes undertook an interesting piece of exploration on the east coast of Greenland. Captain Graah of the Danish navy rounded Cape Farewell in boats, with four Europeans and twelve Eskimo. He advanced as far as 65° 18’ N. on the east coast, where he was stopped by an

insurmountable barrier of ice. He wintered at Nugarlik in 63° 22’ N., and returned to the settlements on the west side of Greenland in 1830.

In the year 1829 Captain John Ross, with his nephew James, having been furnished with sufficient funds by a wealthy distiller named Felix Booth, undertook a private expedition of discovery in a small vessel called the “Victory.” Ross proceeded down Prince Regent’s Inlet to the Gulf of Boothia, and wintered on the eastern side of In the course of exploring excursions during the summer months James Ross crossed the land and discovered the position of the north magnetic pole on the western side of it, on June 1, 1831. He also discovered a land to the westward of Boothia which he named King William Land, and the northern shore of which he examined. The most northern point, opposite the magnetic pole, was called Cape Felix, and thence the coast trended south-west to Victory Point. James Ross was at Cape Felix on May 29, 1830. The tosses never could get their little vessel out of its winter quarters. They passed three winters there, and then fell back on the stores at Fury Beach, where they passed their fourth winter of 1832-33. Jventually they were picked up by a whaler in Barrow Strait, and brought home. Great anxiety was naturally felt at their prolonged absence, and in 1833 Sir George Back, with Dr Richard King as a companion, set out by land in search of the missing explorers. Wintering at the Great Slave Lake, he left Fort Reliance on June 7, 1834, and descended the Great Fish River, which is obstructed by many falls in the course of a rapid and tortuous course of 530 miles. The mouth was reached in 67° 11’ N., when the want of supplies obliged them to return. In 1836 Sir George Back was sent, at the suggestion of the Royal Geographical Society, to proceed to Repulse Bay in his ship, the “Terror,” and then to cross an assumed isthmus and examine the coast-line thence to the mouth of the Great Fish River; but the ship was obliged to winter in the drifting pack, and was brought back across the Atlantic in a sinking condition.

The tracing of the polar shores of America was completed by the Hudson’s Bay Company’s servants. In June 1837 Messrs Simpson and Dease left Chippewyan, reached the mouth of the Mackenzie, and connected that position with Point Barrow, which had been discovered by the “‘Blossom” in 1826. In 1839 Simpson passed Cape Turnagain of Franklin, tracing the coast eastward so as to connect with Back’s work at the mouth of the Great

Fish River. He landed at Montreal Island in the mouth of that river, and then advanced eastward as far as Castor and Pollux river, his farthest eastern point. On his return he travelled along the north side of the channel, which is in fact the south shore of the King William Island discovered by James Ross. The south-western point of this island was named Cape Herschel, and there Simpson built a cairn on August 26, 1839. Very little more remained to be done in order to complete the delineation of the northern shores of the American continent. This was entrusted to Dr John Rae, a Hudson's Bay factor, in 1846. He went in

POLAR' FbSO10 NS

of sledge-boats, | nearly on the Arctic Circle ; and he and his six Orkney

men maintained themselves on the deer they shot. During the spring of 1847 Dr Rae explored on foot the shores of a great gulf having 700 miles of coast-line. He thus con- nected the work of Parry, at the mouth of Fury and Hecla Strait, with the work of Ross on the coast of Boothia, proving that Boothia was part of the American continent.

While the English were thus working hard to solve some of the geographical problems relating to Arctic America, the Russians were similarly engaged in Siberia.

In 1821 Lieutenant Anjou made a complete survey of the Anjou.

New Siberia Islands, and came to the conclusion that it was not possible to advance far from them in a northerly direction, owing to the thinness of the ice and to open water within 20 or 30 miles. similar investigations from the mouth of the Kolyma between 1820 and 1823. He made four journeys with dog sledges, exploring the coast between Cape Tchelagskoi and the Kolyma, and making attempts to extend his journeys to some distance from the land. He was always stopped by thin ice, and he received tidings from a native chief of the existence of land at a distance of several leagues to the northward. to explore the region which terminates in Cape Tchel- yuskin. He reached the cape in the height of the short sumnier, whence he saw open water and no ice blink in any direction. The whole arctic shore of Siberia had now been explored and delineated, but no vessel had yet rounded the

extreme northern point, by sailing from the mouth of the Yenisei to that of the Lena. When that feat was achieved the problem of the north-east passage would be solved. .

The success of Sir James Ross’s Antarctic expedition Franklin

Baron Wrangell prosecuted Wrangell. –

In 1843 Middendorf was sent — One

and the completion of the northern coast-line of America ¢xpedi-

by the Hudson's Bay Company's servants gave rise in 1845 to a fresh attempt to make the passage from Lancas- ter Sound to Behring Strait. The story of this unhappy expedition of Sir John Franklin, in the "Erebus" and "Terror," has already been told under FRANKLIN (q.v.); but some geographical details may be given here.

To understand clearly the nature of the obstacle which finally stopped Sir John Franklin, and which also stopped Sir Edward Parry in his first voyage, it is necessary to refer to the map. Westward of Melville and Baring Islands, northward of the western part of the American coast, and nortliward of the channel leading from Smith Sound, there is a vast unknown space, the ice which encumbers it never having been traversed by any ship. All navigators who have skirted along its edge describe the stupendous thickness and massive proportions of the vast floes with which it is packed. This accumulation of ice of enormous thickness, to which Sir George Nares has given the name of a " Paleocrystic Sea," arises from the absence of direct communication between this portion of the north polar region and the warm waters of the Atlantic and Pacific. Behring Strait is the only vent in a south-westerly direction, and that channel is so shallow that the heavy ice grounds outside it. In other directions the channels leading to Baffin's Bay are narrow and tortuous. In-one place only is there a wide and straight lead. The heavy polar ice flows south-east between Melville and Baring Islands, down what is now called M'Clintock Channel, and impinges on the north-west coast of the King William Land discovered by James Ross. It was this branch from the paleocrystic sea which finally stopped the progress of Franklin's expedition. On leaving the winter-quarters at Beechey Island in 1846, Franklin found a channel leading south, along the western shore of the land of North Somerset discovered by Parry in 1819. If he could reach the channel

boats to Repulse Bay, where he wintered in a stone hut | on the American coast, he knew that he would be able

tion.

_ Search expedi- tions. Ross.

Austin.

Kennedy.

Bellot.

ruUlTs7 it” REGIONS

to make his way along it to Beliring Strait. This channel leading south, now called Peel Sound, pointed directly to thesouth. He sailed down it towards King William Island, with land on both sides. But directly they passed the southern point of the western land, and were no longer shielded by it, the great paleeocrystic stream from Melville Island was fallen in with, pressing on King William Island. It was impassable. The only possibility of progress would have been by rounding the eastern side of King William Island, but its insularity was then unknown.

It was not until 1848 that anxiety began to be felt about the Franklin expedition. In the spring of that year Sir James Ross was sent with two ships, the “Enter- prise” and “Investigator,” by way of Lancaster Sound.

point of North Devon. In the spring he made a long sledge journey with Lieutenant M‘Clintock along the northern and western coasts of North Somerset.

On the return of the Ross expedition without any tidings, the country became thoroughly alarmed. An extensive plan of search was organized,—the “ Enterprise ” and “Investigator” under Collinson and MClure proceeding by Behring Strait, while the “ Assistance” and “Resolute” with two steam tenders, the “Pioneer” and “Intrepid,” sailed May 3, 1850, to renew the search by Barrow Strait, under Captain Austin. Two brigs, the “Lady Franklin” and “Sophia,” under Captain Penny, a very energetic and able whaling captain, were sent b the same route. He had with him Dr Sutherland, a naturalist, who did much valuable scientific work. Austin aud

Penny entered Barrow Strait, and Franklin's winter- quarters of 1845-46 were discovered at Beechey Island ; but there was no record of any kind indicating the direc- tion taken by the ships. Stopped by the ice, Austin's expedition wintered (1850-51) in the pack off Griffith Island, and Penny found refuge in a harbour on the south coast of Cornwallis Island. Austin, who had been with Parry during his third voyage, was an admirable organizer, His arrangements for passing the winter were carefully thought out and answered perfectly. In concert with Penny he planned a thorough and extensive system of search by means of sledge travelling in the spring ; and Lieutenant

M'Clintock superintended every minute detail of this part |

of the work with unfailing forethought and consummate skill. Penny undertook the search by Wellington Channel. M'Clintock advanced to Melville Island, marching over 770 miles in eighty-one days; Captain Ommanney and Sherard Osborn pressed southward and discovered Prince

of Wales Island. Lieutenant Brown examined the western |

shore of Peel Sound. The search was exhaustive; but, except the winter-quarters at Beechey Island, no record, no sign was discovered. The absence of any record made Captain Austin doubt whether Franklin had ever

gone beyond Beechey Island. So he also examined the |

entrance of Jones Sound, the next inlet from Baffin's Bay north of Lancaster Sound, on his way home, and returned to England in the autumn of 1851. This was a thoroughly

well-conducted expedition, —especially as regards the sledge |

travelling, which M'Clintock brought to great perfection, So far as the search for Franklin was concerned, nothing remained to be done west or north of Barrow Strait.

In 1851 the "Prince Albert" schooner was sent out by

| Move again,

Lady Franklin, under Captain Kennedy, with Lieutenant | Bellot of the French navy as second. They wintered on | the east coast of North Somerset, and in the spring of 1852 |

the gallant Frenchman, in the course of a long sledging journey, discovered Bellot Strait separating North Somerset from Boothia,—this proving that the Boothia coast facing the strait was the northern extremity of the continent of America.

| reaching Melville Island. He wintered at Leopold Harbour, near the north-east |

321

The “Enterprise” and “Investigator” sailed from Collinson.

England in January 1850, but accidentally parted com- pany before they reached Behring Strait. On May 6, 1851, the “Enterprise” passed the strait, and rounded Point Barrow on the 25th. Collinson then made his way up the narrow Prince of Wales Strait, between Baring and Prince Albert Island, and reached Princess Royal Islands, where M‘Clure had been the previous year. Returning south- wards, the “Enterprise” wintered in a sound in Prince Albert Island in 71° 35’ N and 117° 35’ W. Three travelling parties were despatched in the spring of 1852,— one to trace Prince Albert Land in a southerly direction, while the others explored Prince of Wales Strait, one of them In September 1852 the ship was free, and Collinson pressed eastward along the coast of North

| America, reaching Cambridge Bay (September 26), where

the second winter was passed. In the spring he examined the shores of Victoria Land as far as 70° 26’ N. and 100° 45’ W. He was within a few miles of Point Victory, where the fate of Franklin would have been ascertained. The “Enterprise” again put to sea on August 5, 1853, and returned westward along the American coast, until she was stopped by ice and obliged to pass a third winter

| at Camden Bay, in 70° 8’ N. and 145° 29’ W. In 1854

this most remarkable voyage was completed, and Captain Collinson brought the ‘ Enterprise” back to England.

Meanwhile M‘Clure in the “Investigator” had passed M‘Clure,

the winter-of 1850-51 at the Princess Royal Islands, only 30 miles from Barrow Strait. In October M‘Clure ascended a hill whence he could see the frozen surface of Barrow Strait which was navigated by Parry in 1819-20.

| Thus, like the survivors of Franklin’s crews when they

reached Cape Herschel, M‘Clnre discovered a north-west passage. It was impossible to reach it, for the branch of the palzocrystic ice which stopped Franklin off King William Land was athwart their northward course. So, as soon as he was free in 1851, M‘Clure turned south- wards, round the sonthern extreme of Baring Island, and commenced to force a passage to the northward between the western shore of that land and the enormous fields of ice which pressed upon it. The cliffs rose up like walls on one side, while on the other the stupendous ice of the palzeocrystic sea rose from the water to a level with the ““Investigator’s” lower yards. After many hair-breadth

| escapes M‘Clure took refuge in a bay on the northern

shore of Bank’s Land, which he named “The Bay of God’s Mercy.” Here the “Investigator” remained, never to After the winter of 1851-52 M‘Clure made a journey across the ice to Melville Island, and left a record at Parry’s winter harbour. Abundant supplies of

/ musk ox were fortunately obtained, but a third winter | had to be faced. In the spring of 1853 M‘Clure was pre-

paring to abandon the ship with all hands, and attempt, like Franklin’s crews, to reach the American coast. But succour providentially arrived in time.

The Hudson’s Bay Company assisted in the search for Rae’s In 1848 Sir John Richardson and Dr Rae journeys.

Franklin. examined the American coast from the mouth of the Mackenzie to that of the Coppermine. In 1849 and 1850 Rae continued the search; and by a long sledge journey in the spring of 1851, and a boat voyage in the summer, he examined the shores of Wollaston and Victoria Lands, which were afterwards explored by Captain Collinson in the ‘‘ Enterprise.”

In 1852 the British Government resolved to despatch

| another expedition by Lancaster Sound. Austin’s four : vessels were recommissioned, and the “North Star” was

sent out asa depét ship at Beechey Island. Sir Edward

Belcher commanded the “ Assistance,” with the “ Pioneer” Belcher.

under Sherard Osborn as steam tender. He went up Welling- XIX — 41

322 POLAR’TR FG 108% ton Channel to Northumberland Bay, where he wintered, | Land. He went up Chesterfield Inlet and the river ru passing a second winter lower down in Wellington Channel, Quoich for a considerable distance, wintering with eight a and then abandoning his ships and coming home in 1854, | men at Repulse Bay in a snow house. Venison and fish expel But Sherard Osborn and Commander Richards did good | were abundant. In 1854 he set out on a journey which tion. work. They made sledge journeys to Melville Island, and | occupied fifty-six days in April and May. He succeeded thus discovered the northern side of the Parry group. | in connecting the discoveries of Simpson with those of Kellett. Captain Kellett received command of the “Resolute,” | James Ross, and thus established the fact that King with M‘Clintock in the steam tender “Intrepid.” Among | William Land was an island. Rae also brought home Kellett’s officers were the best of Austin’s sledge travellers, | tidings and relics of Franklin’s expedition gathered from M‘Clintock, Mecham, and Vesey Hamilton, so that good | the Eskimo; and this led to the expedition of M‘Clintock work was sure to be done. George Nares, the future | in the “ Fox,” already described in the article FRANKLIN leader of the expedition

of 1874~75, was also on board the (vol. ix. p. 721-22). While M‘Clintock was prosecuting “Resolute.” Kellett passed onwards to the westward and | his exhaustive search over part of the west coast of passed the winter of 1852-53 at Melville Island. During | Boothia, the whole of the shores of King William Island, the autumn Mecham discovered M‘Clure’s record, and the | the mouth of the Great Fish River, and Montreal Island, position of the “ Investigator” was thus ascertained. The | Allen Young completed the discovery of the southern side safety of her crew was consequently assured, for it was | of Prince of Wales Island. The “Fox” returned to only necessary to send a message across the strait between England in the autumn of 1859. two fixed positions. This service was performed by The catastrophe of Sir John Franklin’s expedition led Work of Lieutenant Pim early in the following spring. The | to 7000 miles of coast-line being discovered, and to a vast officers and crew of the “Investigator,” led by M‘Clure, | extent of unknown country being explored, securing very tions, arrived safely on board the “Resolute” on June 17, 1853, | considerable additions to geographical knowledge. Much and they reached England in the following year. They attention was also given to the collection of information, not only discovered but traversed a north-west passage, | and the scientific results of the various search expeditions though not in the same ship, and partly by travelling over | were considerable. The catastrophe also afforded a warn- ice. For this great feat M‘Clure received the honour of | ing which would render any similar disaster quite inexcus- knighthood,—a reward of £10,000 being granted to him- | able. If arrangements are always carefully made for a self, the other officers, and the crew, by a vote of the | retreat beforehand, if a depot ship is always left within House of Conimons. | reach of the advancing expedition as well as of the outer Sledge The travelling parties of Kellett’s expedition, led by | world, and if there is annual communication, with positive travelling. M‘Clintock, Mecham, and Vesey Hamilton, completed the | rules for depositing records, no such catastrophe can ever discovery of the northern and western sides of Melville | happen again. Island, and the whole outline of the large Island of Prince The American nation was first led to take an interest in Grinnell Patrick, still further to the westward. M‘Clintock was | polar research through a very noble and generous feeling away from the ship with his sledge party for one hundred | of sympathy for Franklin and his brave companions. Mr and five days and travelled over 1328 miles. Mecham | Grinnell of New York gave

practical expression to this was away ninety-four days and travelled over 1163 miles. | feeling. In 1850 he equipped two vessels, the ‘ Advance” Sherard Osborn, in 1853, was away ninety-seven days and | and “Rescue,” to aid in the search, commanded by travelled over 935 miles. The “Resolute” was obliged | Lieutenants De Haven and Griffith, and accompanied by to winter in the pack in 1853-54, and in the spring of | Dr Kane. They reached Beechey Island on August 27, 1854 Mecham made a most remarkable journey in the | 1850, and assisted in the examination of Franklin’s winter- hope of obtaining news of Captain Collinson at the Princess | quarters, but returned without wintering. In 1853 Dr Royal Islands. Leaving the ship on 3d April he was | Kane, in the little brig “ Advance” of 120 tons, undertook Kane. absent seventy days, out of which there were sixty-one and | to lead an American expedition up Smith Sound, the most a half days of travelling. The distance gone over was | northern outlet from Baffin’s Bay. The “ Advance ” 1336 statute miles. The average rate of the homeward reached Smith Sound on the 7th August 1853, but was journey was 234 miles a day, the average time of travelling stopped by ice in 78° 45’ N. only 17 miles from the each day nine hours twenty-five minutes. This journey is entrance. He described the coast as consisting of pre- without a parallel in arctic records. cipitous cliffs 800 to 1200 feet high, and at their base Fearing detention for another winter, Sir Edward | there was a belt of ice about 18 feet thick, resting on the Belcher ordered all the ships to be abandoned in the ice, | beach. Dr Kane adopted the Danish name of “ice-foot ” the officers and crews being taken home in the “North | (zs fod) for this permanent frozen ridge. He named the Star,” and in the “Phoenix” and “Talbot” which had | place of his winter-quarters Van Rensselaer Harbour. In come out from England to communicate. They reached | the spring some interesting work was done. A great Inglefield. home in October 1854. In 1852 Captain Inglefield, R.N., | glacier was discovered and named the Humboldt glacier, had made a voyage up Baffin’s Bay in the “Isabel” as far | witha sea face 45 miles long. Dr Kane’s steward, Morton, as the entrance of Smith Sound. In 1853 and 1854 he | crossed the foot of this glacier with a team of dogs, and A Te out in the “Phoenix” to communicate with the | reached a point of land beyond named Cape Constitution. ae, A orth Star at Beechey Island. The drift of the | But sickness and want of means prevented much from being “Reco Hesolute” was a remarkable proof of the direction of the | done by travelling parties.

Scurvy attacked the whole party lute.” Current out of Barrow Strait. She was abandoned in 74° | during the second winter, although the Eskimo supplied 41’ N. and 101° 11″ W. on May 14,1854. OnSeptember | them with fresh meat and were true friends in need. On a 1855, an American whaler sighted the “ Resolute” in May 17 , 1855, Dr Kane abandoned the brig, and reached : N. lat. about twenty miles from Cape Mercy, in Davis the Danish settlement of Upernivik on 6th August. Lieu- i Serle Hee into an American port, and | tenant Hartstene, who was sent out to search for Kane, drifted y presented to the British Government. She had | reached Van Rensselaer Harbour after he had gone, but ae oe a thousand miles. took the retreating crew on board on his return voyage. ae ee mee was employed to connect a few points On July 10, 1860, Dr Hayes, who had served with Hayes. Fs quite complete the examination of the coast | Kane, sailed from Boston for Smith Sound, in the schooner oi America, and establish the insularity of King William

“United States” of 130 tons and a-crew of fifteen men.

Po” A®

His object was to follow up the line of research opened by Dr Kane. He wintered at Port Foulke, in 78° 17’ N., and about ten miles fron. Cape Alexander, which forms the eastern portal of Smith Sound. Dr Hayes crossed Smith Sound in the spring with dog-sledges, but his observations are not to be depended on, and it is very uncertain how far he advanced northwards on the other side. He returned to Boston on October 23, 1861.

The story of Charles Hall of Cincinnati, who was led to become an arctic explorer through his deep interest in the search for Franklin, has been told in the article devoted to him (vol. xi. p. 388). In his first journey (1860-62) he discovered the interesting remains Of a stone house which Sir Martin Frobisher built on the Countess of Warwick Island in 1578. In his second expedition (1864-69) Hall by dint of the most unwearied persever- ance at length reached the line of the retreat of the Franklin survivors, at Todd’s Island and Peffer river, on the south coast of King William Island. He heard the story of the retreat and of the wreck of one of the ships from the Eskimo; he was told that seven bodies were buried at Todd Island ; and he brought home some bones which are believed to be those of Lieutenant Le

Vescomte of the ‘“‘ Erebus.” Finally, in 1871, he took the “ Polaris” for 250 miles up the channel which leads northwards from Smith Sound. The various parts of this long channel are called Smith Sound, Kane Basin, Kennedy Channel, and Robeson Channel. The ‘ Polaris” was beset in 82° 16’ N. on 30th August; and her winter-quarters were in 81° 38’ N., called Thank God Bay. The death of Hall and the subse- quent fortunes of the expedition have been described in the article above cited.

The Spitzbergen seas have been explored, in recent years, by Norwegian fishermen as well as by Swedish and German expeditions and by English yachtsmen. The Norwegian Spitzbergen fishery dates from 1820, but it is only in recent years that Professor Mohn of Christiania has watched over the voyages and carefully collected information from the captains. In 1863 Captain Carlsen circumnavigated the Spitzbergen group for the first time in a brig called the “Jan Mayen.” In 1864 Captain Tobiesen sailed round North-East Land. In 1872 Captains Altmann and Nils Johnsen visited Wiche’s Land, which was discovered by Captain Edge in 1617. In that year there were twenty-three sailing vessels from Tromso, twenty-four from Hammerfest, and one from Vardo engaged in the arctic sealing trade. They average from 35 to 40 tons, and carry a dozen men. ‘There were also eight vessels from Tromsé shark-fishing for cod-liver oil, and fifty from Hammerfest and Vardé. Since 1869 the Norwegians have extended their voyages to Nova Zembla. In that year Carlsen crossed the Sea of Kara and reached the mouth of the Obi. In 1870 there were about sixty Norwegian vessels in the Barents Sea, and Captain Johannesen circumnavigated Nova Zembla. In 1873 Captain Tobiesen was unfortunately obliged to winter on the Nova Zembla coast, owing to the loss of his schooner, and both he and his young son died of scurvy in the spring. Two years previously Captain Carlsen had suc- ceeded in reaching the winter-quarters of Barents, the first visitor since 1597, an interval of two hundred and seventy-four years. He landed on September 9, 1871, and found the house still standing and full of interesting relics, which are now in the naval museum at the Hague.

Between 1858 and 1872 the Swedes sent seven expeditions to Spitzbergen and two to Greenland. All returned with valuable scientific results. That of 1864 under Norden- skiéld and Duner made observations at eighty different

places on the Spitzbergen shores, and fixed the heights of numerous mountains. In 1868, in an iron steamer, the

“Sophia,” the Swedes attained a latitude of 81° 42’ N. on the meridian of 18° E., during the month of September. In 1872 an expedition consisting of the ‘‘ Polhem ” steamer and brig ‘‘ Gladen,” commanded by Professor N ordenskiéld and Lieutenant Palander, wintered in Mussel Bay, on the northern shore of Spitzbergen. In the spring an import- ant sledging journey of sixty days’ duration was made over North-East Land. The expedition was in some distress as regards provisions owing to two vessels, which were to have returned, having been forced to winter. But in the summer of 1873 they were visited by Mr Leigh Smith, in his yacht ‘“‘Diana,” who supplied them with fresh provisions.

Dr Petermann of Gotha urged his countrymen to take Koldewey,

their share in the noble work of polar discovery, and at his own risk he fitted out a small vessel called the “Germania,” which sailed from Bergen in May 1868, under the command of Captain Koldewey. His cruise extended to Hinlopen Strait in Spitzbergen, but was merely tentative ; and in 1870 Baron von Heuglin with Count Zeil explored the Stor Fjord in a Norwegian schooner, and also examined Walter Thymen’s Strait. After the return of the ‘‘Germania” in 1868 a regular expedition was organized under the command of Captain Koldewey, pro- visioned for two years. It consisted of the ‘‘ Germania,” a screw steamer of 140 tons, and the brig ‘‘ Hansa” com- manded by Captain Hegemann. Lieutenant Payer, the future discoverer of Franz Josef Land, gained his first arctic experience on board the “Germania.” The expedi- tion sailed from Bremen on the 15th June 1869, its destination being the east coast of Greenland. But in latitude 70° 46’ N. the “Hansa” got separated from her consort and crushed in the ice. The crew built a house of patent fuel on the floe, and in this strange abode they passed their Christmas. In two montlis the current had carried them south for 400 miles By May they had drifted 1100 miles on their ice-raft, and finally, on June 14, 1870, they arrived safely at the Moravian mission

station of Friedriksthal, to the west of Cape Farewell. Fairer fortune attended the “Germania.” She sailed up the east coast of Greenland as high as 75° 30’ N., and eventually wintered at the Pendulum Islands of Clavering in 74° 30’ N. In March 1870 a travelling party set out, under Koldewey and Payer, and reached a distance of 100 miles from the ship to the northward, when want of provisions compelled them to return. A grim cape, named after Prince Bismarck, marked the northern limit of their discoveries. As soon as the vessel was free, a deep branching fjord was dis- covered in 73° 15’ N. stretching for a long distance into the interior of Greenland. Along its shore are peaks 7000 and 14,000 feet high. The expedition returned to Bremen on September 11, 1870.

Lieutenant Payer was resolved to continue in the path Payer and of polar discovery. He and a naval officer named Wye

Weyprecht freighted a Norwegian schooner called the “Tsbjérn,” and examined the edge of the ice between Spitzbergen and Nova Zembla, in the summer of 1871. Their observations led them to select the route by the north end of Nova Zembla with a view to making the north-east passage. It was to be an Austria-Hungarian expedition, and the idea was seized with enthusiasm by the whole empire. Weyprecht was to command the ship, while Julius Payer conducted the sledge parties. The steamer “Tegethoff,” of 300 tons, was fitted out in the Elbe, and left Tromsé on July 14, 1872. The season was exceptionally severe, and the vessel was closely beset near Cape Nassau, at the northern end of Nova Zembla, in the end of August. The summer of 1873 found her still a close prisoner drifting, not with a current, but in the direction of the prevailing wind. At length, on the 31st August, a

POLAR REGIONS

The gallant enterprises of other countries rekindled the English zeal of England for arctic discovery; and in October 1874 expedi-”

mountainous country was sighted about 14 miles to the

north. In October the vessel was drifted within 3 miles of an island lying off the main mass of land. Payer landed on it, and found the latitude to be 79° 54’ N. It was named after Count Wilczek, one of the warmest friends of the expedition. Here the second winter was passed. Bears were very numerous and as inany as sixty- seven were killed, their meat proving to be a most efficient remedy against scurvy. In March 1874 Payer made a preliminary sledge journey in intense cold (thermometer at — 58° F.). On 24th March he started for a more pro- longed journey of thirty days. Payer found that the newly discovered country equalled Spitzbergen in extent, and consisted of two or more large masses—Wilezek Land to the east, Zichy Land to the west, intersected by numer- ous fjords and skirted by a, large number of island. A wide channel, named Austria Sound, separates the two iain masses of land, and extends to 82° N., where Rawlin- son Sound forks off to the north-east. The mountains attain a height of 2000 to 3000 feet, the depressions between them being covered with glaciers; and all the islands even are covered with a glacial cap. The whole country was named Franz-Josef Land. Payer returned to the “Tegethoff” on 24th April; and a third journey was undertaken to explore a large island named after M‘Clin- tock. It then became necessary to abandon the ship and attempt a retreat in boats. This perilous voyage was com- menced on 20th May. Three boats stored with provisions were placed on sledges. It was not until 14th August that they reached the edge of the pack in 77° 40’ N.,and launched the boats. Eventually they were picked up by a Russian schooner and arrived at Vardé on September 3, 1874. This great achievement is one of the most important con- nected with the north polar region that has been made in the present century, and will probably lead in due time to still further discoveries in the same direction.

One of the most interesting problems connected with the physical geography of the polar regions is the history and actual condition of the vast interior of Greenland, which is generally believed to be one enormous glacier. In 1867 Mr Edward Whymper carefully planned an expedition to solve the question, and went to Greenland,

the prime minister announced that an expedition would be despatched in the following year. The route by Smith Sound was selected because it gave the certainty of ex- ploring a previously unknown area of considerable extent,

because it yielded the best prospect of valuable scientific results, and because it offered, with proper precautions, reasonable security for a safe retreat in case of disaster. Two powerful screw steamers, the “Alert” and “ Dis- covery,” were selected for the service, and Captain Nares was selected as leader. Commander Markham, who had made a cruise up Baftin’s Bay and Barrow Strait in a whaler during the previous year, Lieutenant Aldrich, an accomplished surveyor, and Captain Feilden, R.A., as naturalist, were also in the “ Alert.” The “ Discovery ” was commanded by Captain Stephenson, with Lieutenant Beaumont as first lieutenant. The expedition left Ports- mouth on the 29th May 1875, and entered Smith Sound in the last days of July. After much difficulty with the drifting ice Lady Franklin Bay was reached in 81° 44’ N., where the “ Discovery ” was established in winter-quarters. The “Alert” pressed onwards, and reached the edge of the palzocrystic sea, the ice-floes being from 80 to 100 feet in thickness. Leaving Robeson Channel, the vessel made progress between the land and the grounded floe pieces, and passed the winter off the open coast and facing the great polar pack, in 82° 27’ N. Autumn travelling parties were despatched in September and October to lay

| out depots; and during the winter a complete scheme

was matured for the examination of as much of the unknown area as possible, by the combined efforts of sledging parties from the two ships, in the ensuing spring. The parties started on April 3, 1876. Captain Markham with Lieutenant Parr advanced, in the face of almost insurmountable difficulties, over the polar pack to the high latitude of 83° 20’ 26” N. Lieutenant Aldrich ex- plored the coast-line to the westward, facing the frozen polar ocean, for a distance of 220 miles. Lieutenant Beaumont made discoveries of great interest along the northern coast of Greenland. The parties were attacked by scurvy, which, while increasing the difficulty and

Robert accompanied by Dr Robert Brown; but the season was | hardships of the work a hundredfold, also enhanced the Brown. too late, and progress was stopped, after going a short | devoted heroism of these gallant explorers. Captain distance, by the breaking down of the dog-sledges. But | Feilden was indefatigable in making collections, and was Dr Brown made most valuable geological and natural | zealously assisted by all the officers.

The expedition history collections, chiefly in the neighbourhood of Disco, | returned to England in October 1876. The ‘Alert 3 and still more valuable observations, the publication of | reached the highest northern latitude ever attained by which has added considerably to our knowledge. Dr | any ship, and wintered further north than any ship had Rink, for many years royal inspector of South Greenland | ever wintered before. The results of the expedition and the most distinguished authority on all Greenlandic | were the discovery of 300 miles of new coast-line, the questions, has also visited the inland ice, and has given | examination of this part of the frozen polar ocean, a his stores of information to the world. The most import- | series of meteorological, magnetic, and tidal observations Norden- ant inland journey was undertaken by Professor Norden- | at two points farther north than any such observations ie in skidld in 1870, accompanied by Dr Berggren, the professor | had ever been taken before, and large geological and land, OL botany at Lund. The difficulty of traversing the | natural history collections.

inland ice of Greenland is caused by the vast glacier being in constant motion, advancing slowly towards the sea. This moveinent gives rise to huge chasms and clefts, which

In the same year 1875 Sir Allen Young undertook a Voyages

voyage in his steam yacht the “Pandora” to attempt to of the force his way down Peel Sound to the magnetic pole, and qo.»

from their almost bottomless depth close the traveller’s way. The chasms occur chiefly where the movement of the glacier is most rapid, near the ice streams which reach the sea and discharge glaciers. Nordenskiold, therefore, chose for a starting point the northern arm of a deep inlet called Auleitsivikfjord, which is 60 miles south of the discharging glacier at Jakobshavn and 240 north of that at Godthaab. He commenced his inland journey on 19th July. The party consisted of himself, Dr Berggren, and two Green- landers ; and they advanced 30 miles over the glaciers to a height of 2200 feet above the sea.

if possible to make the north-west passage by rounding the eastern shore of King William Island. The “Pandora” entered Peel Sound on August 29,

1875, and proceeded down it much farther than any vessel had gone before since it was passed by Franklin's two ships in 1846. Sir Allen reached a latitude of 72° 14' N., and sighted Cape Bird, at the northern side of the western entrance of Bellot Strait. But here an ice-barrier right across the channel barred his progress, and he was obliged to retrace his steps, returning to England on October 16, 1875. In the following year Sir Allen Young made

Dutch expedl- tions.

Gore- Booth and Mark- ham.

Leigh Smith,

Norden- skiold and the N.E. Passage,

POLAT REGIONS

another voyage in the " Pandora" to the entrance of Smith Sound.

Lieutenant Koolemans Beynen, a young Dutch officer, who had shared Young's two polar voyages, on his return successfully endeavoured to interest his countrymen in polar discovery. It was wisely determined that the first expeditions of Holland should be summer reconnaissances on a small scale. A sailing schooner of 79 tons was built at Amsterdam, and named the "Willem Barents." In her first cruise she was commanded by Lieutenant A. de Bruyne, with Koolemans Beynen as second, and she sailed from Holland on the 6th May 1878. Her instructions were to examine the ice in the Barents and Spitzbergen Seas, take deep-sea soundings, and make natural history collections. She was also to erect memorials to early Dutch polar worthies at certain designated points. These instructions were ably and zealously carried out. Beyner died in the following year, but the work he initiated has been continued. Every year from 1878 to 1884 the 'Willem Barents" has made a polar voyage, and has brought back useful scientific results. In 1879 the Dutch succeeded in sighting the coast of Franz-Josef Land.

In 1879 Sir Henry Gore-Booth, Bart., and Captain A. H. Markham, R.N., undertook a polar cruise in the Norwegian schooner “Isbjérn.” They sailed along the west coast of Nova Zembla to its most northern point, passed through the Matotchkin Shar to the east coast, and examined the ice in the direction of Franz-Josef Land as far as 78° 24’ N. Captain Markham brought home collections in various branches of natural history, and made useful observations on the drift and nature of the ice in the Barents and Kara Seas.

In 1880 Mr Leigh Smith, who had previously made three voyages to Spitzbergen, reached Franz-Josef Land in the screw steamer “Kira.” It was observed that, while the Greenland icebergs are generally angular and peaked, those of Franz-Josef Land are vast masses quite flat on the top, like the Antarctic bergs, and from 150 to 200 feet high. The “ Kira” sailed along the land to the westward, and discovered 110 miles of new coast line as far as the western extreme of the south side of Franz-Josef Land, whence the land trended north-west. A landing was

effected at several points, and valuable collections were |

made in natural history. In the following year the same explorer left Peterhead on July 14; Franz-Joseph Land was once more sighted on the 23d July, and the “Eira” reached a point farther west than had been possible in her previous voyage. But in August the ship was caught in the ice, was nipped, and sank. A hut was built on shore in which Mr Leigh Smith and his crew passed the winter of 1881-82; and on June 21, 1882, they started in four boats, to reach some vessels on the Nova Zembla coast. It was a most laborious and perilous voyage. They were first seen and welcomed by the “ Willem Barents” on 2d August, and soon afterwards were taken on board the “Hope,” a whaler which had come out for their rescue under the command of Sir Allen Young.

Professor Nordenskidld, when he projected the achieve- ment of the north-east passage, was a veterau polar explorer, for he had been in six previous expeditions to Greenland and Spitzbergen. In 1875 he turned his atten- tion to the possibility of. navigating the seas along the northern coast of Siberia. Captain Wiggins of Sunderland was a pioneer of this route, and his voyages in 1874, 1875, and 1876 led the way toa trade between the ports of Europe

and the mouth of the Yenisei river. In June 1875 Professor Nordenskiéld sailed from Tromsé in the “Proven,” reached the Yenisei by way of the Kara Sea, and discovered:an excellent harbour on the eastern side of its mouth, which was named Port Dickson, in honour of

Mr Oscar Dickson of Gothenburg, the munificent supporter of the Swedish expeditions. It having been suggested that the success of this voyage was due to the unusual state of the ice in 1875, Nordenskidld undertook a voyage in the following year in the “Ymer” which was equally successful. By a minute study of the history of former attempts, and a careful consideration of all the circum- stances, Professor Nordenskidld convinced himself that the achievement of the north-east passage was feasible. The king of Sweden, Mr Oscar Dickson, and M. Sibiriakoff, a wealthy Siberian proprietor, supplied the funds, and the steamer “ Vega” was purchased. Nordenskiéld was leader of the expedition, Lieutenant Palander was appointed commander of the ship, and there was an efficient staff of officers and naturalists, including Lieutenant Hovgaard of the Dutch and Lieutenant Bove of the Italian navy. A small steamer called the “Lena” was to keep company with the “Vega” as far as the mouth of the Lena, and they sailed from Gothenburg on the 4th July 1878. On the morning of 10th August they left Port Dickson, and on the 19th they reached the most northern point of Siberia and of the Old World, Cape Severo or Tchelyuskin, in 77° 41’ N. On leaving the extreme northern point of Asia a south-easterly course was steered, the sea being free from ice and very shallow. This absence of ice is due to the mass of warm water discharged by the great Siberian rivers during the summer. On 27th August the mouth of the river Lena was passed, and the “Vega” parted company with the little “Lena,” continuing her course eastward. Professor Nordenskiéld very nearly made the north-east passage in one season. Towards the end of September the ‘‘ Vega” was frozen-in off the shore of a low plain in 67° 7’ N. and 173° 20’ W. near the settlements of the Tchuktches. During the voyage very large and important natural history collections were made, and the interesting aboriginal tribe among whom the Winter was passed was studied with great care. The interior was also explored for some distance. On July 18, 1879, after having been imprisoned by the ice for two hundred and ninety-four days, the

“Vega” again pro- ceeded on her voyage and passed Behring Strait on the 20th. Sir Hugh Willoughby made the first attempt in 1553. After a lapse of three hundred and twenty-six years, the north-east passage had at length been accom- plished without the loss of a single life and without damage to the vessel. The “Vega” arrived at Yokohama on September 2, 1879.

In 1879 an enterprise was undertaken in the United Schwatka.

States, with the object of throwing further light on the sad history of the retreat of the officers and men of Sir John Franklin’s expedition, by examining the west coast of King William Island in the summer, when the snow is off the ground. The party consisted of Lieutenant Schwatka of the United States army and three others. Wintering near the entrance of Chesterfield Inlet in Hudson’s Bay, they set out overland for the estuary of the Great Fish River, assisted by Eskimo and dogs, on April 1, 1879. They only took one month’s provisions, their main reliance being upon the game afforded by the region to be traversed. The party obtained, during the journeys out and home, no less than five hundred and twenty-two reindeer. After collecting various stories from the Eskimo at Montreal Island and at an inlet west of Cape Richardson, Schwatka crossed over to Cape Herschel on King William Island in June. He examined the western shore of the island with the greatest care for relics of Sir John Franklin’s parties, as far as Cape Felix, the northern extremity. The return journey was com- menced in November by ascending the Great Fish River for some distance and then marching over the intervening

De Long.

Work of Danes in Green- land.

region to Hudson’s Bay. The cold of the winter months in this country is intense, the thermometer falling as low as — 70°,—so that the return journey was most remarkable, and reflects the highest credit on Lieutenant Schwatka and his companions. As regards the search little was left to be done after M‘Clintock, but some graves were found, as well as a medal

belonging to Lieutenant Irving of ELMS. “Terror,” and some bones believed to be his, which were brought home and interred at Edinburgh.

Mr Gordon Bennett, the proprietor of the Mew York Herald, having resolved to despatch an expedition of dis- covery at his own expense by way of Behring Strait, the “Pandora” was purchased from Sir Allen Young, and re- christened the “Jeannette.” Lieutenant De Long of the United States navy was appointed to command, and it was made a national undertaking by special Act of Con- gress, the vessel being placed under martial law and officered from the navy. The “Jeannette” sailed from San Francisco on July 8, 1879, and was last seen steaming towards Wrangell Land on the 3d September. This land had been seen by Captain Kellett, in H.M.S. “ Herald” on August 17, 1879, but no one had landed on it, and it was shown on the charts by a long dotted line. The “Jeannette” was provisioned for three years, but as no tidings had been received of her up to 1881, two steamers were sent up Behring Strait in search. One of these, the “Rodgers,” under Lieutenant Berry, anchored in a good harbour on the south coast of Wrangell Land, in 70° 57’ N. on the 26th August 1881. The land was explored by the officers of the “Rodgers” and found to be an island about 70 miles long by 28, with a ridge of hills traversing it east and west, the 71st parallel running along its southern shore. Lieutenant Berry then proceeded to examine the ice to the northward, and attained a higher latitude by 21 miles than had ever been reached before on the Behring Strait meridian, namely 73° 44’N. Sir R. Collinson, in 1850, had reached 73° 23’ N. No news was obtained of the “Jeannette,” but soon afterwards melancholy tidings arrived from Siberia. After having been beset in heavy pack ice for twenty-two months, the ‘‘Jeannette” was crushed and sunk on the 12th June 1881, in 77° 15’ N. lat. and 155° E. long. The officers and men dragged their boats over the ice to an island which was named Bennett Island, where they landed on the 29th July. They reached one of the New Siberia Islands on the 10th September, and on the 12th they set out for the mouth of the Lena. But in the same evening the three boats were separated in a gale of wind. A boat’s crew with Mr Melville, the engineer, reached Irkutsk, and Mr Melville set out in search of Lieutenant De Long and his party, who had also landed. The other boat was lost. Eventually Melville discovered the dead bodies of De Long and two of his crew on March 23, 1883. They had perished from ex- haustion and want of food. The

“Rodgers” was burnt in its winter quarters, and one of the officers, Mr Gilder, made a hazardous journey homewards through north-east Siberia.

The Danes have been very active in prosecuting dis- coveries and scientific investigations in Greenland, since the journey of Nordenskidld in 1870. Lieutenant Jensen made a gallant attempt to penetrate the inland ice in 1878, and Professor Steenstrup, with Lieutenant Hammer, closely investigated the formation of ice masses at Omenak and Jacobshavn. In 1883 an expedition under Lieu- tenants Holm and Garde began to explore the east coast of Greenland, the discovery of the outline of which was completed in 1879. In the summer of that year Captain Mourier, of the Danish man of war “ Ingulf,” sighted the coast from the 6th to the 10th of July, and was enabled to observe and delineate it from 68° 10’ N. to 65° 55’ N., being exactly the gap left between the discoveries of

Co

POLAR’ RHETT ONS

Scoresby in 1822 and those of Graah in 1829. Lieu- tenant Hovgaard of the Danish navy, who accompanied Nordenskiéld in his discovery of the north-east passage, planned an expedition to ascertain if land existed to the north of Cape Tchelyuskin. He fitted out a small steamer called the “Dymphna” and sailed from Copenhagen in July 1882, but was unfortunately beset and obliged to winter in the Kara Sea. In 1883 Baron Nordenskiéld undertook another journey over the inland ice of Green- land. Starting from

On September 18, 1875, Lieutenant Weyprecht, one of the discovers of Franz-Josef Land, read a thoughtful and carefully prepared paper before a large meeting of German naturalists at Gratz on the scientific results to be obtained from polar research and the best means of securing them. He urged the importance of establishing a number of stations within or near the Arctic Circle, in order to record complete series of synchronous meteorological and magnetic observations. Lieutenant Weyprecht did not live to see his suggestions carried into execution, but they bore fruit in due time. The various nations of Europe were repre- sented at an international polar conference at Hamburg in 1879, and at another at St Petersburg in 1882; and it was decided that each nation should establish one or more

stations where synchronous observations should be taken from August 1882. This useful project was matured and executed. The stations were at the following localities round the Arctic Circle :—

Norwegians…... Bosekop, Alten Fjord, Norway, M. Aksel S. Steen. Swedes …....0+00- Ice Fjord, Spitzbergen, Mr Ekholm. ; ADOT Greeosnencost Dickson Harbour, mouth of Yenisei, Siberia,Dr Smaller.

Lieut. Jiirgers. Lieut. Andreief. Lieut. Ray, U.S.A. Lieut. Greely, U.S.A.

Americans….. { Lieut. Dawson.

Gelnanss.c..+.see Cumberland Bay, west side of Davis Strait, Dr Giese. AMES oes.

The whole scheme was successfully accomplished with the exception of the part assigned to the Dutch at Dickson Harbour. They started in the “Varna” but were beset in the Kara Sea and obliged to winter there. The “Varna” was lost, and the crew took refuge on board Lieutenant Hovgaard’s vessel, which was also forced to winter in the pack during 1882-83.

The American stations commenced work in 1882. Lieutenant Greely’s party consisted of. two other lieu- tenants, of twenty sergeants and privates of the United States army, and of Dr Pavy, an enthusiastic explorer who had been educated in France, and had passed the previous winter among the Eskimo of Greenland. On August 11, 1881, the steamer “Proteus ” conveyed Lieutenant Greely and his party to Lady Franklin Bay during an exception- ally favourable season; a house was built at the “ Dis- covery’s” winter-quarters, and they were left with two years’ provisions. he regular series of observations was at once commenced, and two winters were passed without accident. ‘T’ravelling parties were also sent out in the summer, dogs having been obtained at Disco. Lieutenant Lockwood made a journey along the north coast of Green- land, and reached a small island in 83° 24’ N. and 44° 5’ W. Dr Pavy and another went a short distance beyond the winter-quarters of the “Alert,” and a trip was made into the interior of Grinnell Land. But all this region had already been explored and exhaustively examined by the English expedition in 1875-76. The real value of

Wey-

precht’s

plan,

Greely.

Tem- perature.

rOUrosiy REGIONS

the work of Lieutenant Greely’s party will consist in the synchronous observations taken during 1882. Asnosuccour arrived in the summer of 1883—though relieving vessels were despatched both in 1882 and in 1883—Lieutenant Greely started from Lady Franklin Bay with his men on the 9th August, expecting to find a vessel in Smith Sound. On the 21st October they were obliged to encamp at Cape Sabine, on the western shore of Smith Sound, and build a hut for wintering. A few depdts were found, which had been left by Sir George Nares and Lieutenant Beebe, but all was exhausted before the spring. Then came a time of indescribable misery and acute suffering. The poor fellows began to die of actual starvation ; and, when the relieving steamers “Thetis” and “Bear” reached Cape Sabine, Lieutenant Greely and six suffering companions were found just alive. If the simple and necessary precaution had been taken of stationing a depét ship

in a good harbour at the entrance of Smith ‘Sound, in’

annual communication with Greely on one side and with America on the other, there would have been no disaster. If precautions proved to be necessary by experience are taken, there is no undue risk or danger in polar enterprise.

There is now no question as to the value and importance of polar discovery, and as to the principles on which expeditions should be sent out. Their objects are explora- tion for scientific purposes and the encouragement of maritime enterprise. The main principles have been briefly and clearly stated by Lieutenant Weyprecht :—(1) arctic research is of the highest

importance for a know- ledge of nature's laws; (2) geographical research is valu- able in proportion as it opens the field to scientific research generally ; (3) the north pole has, for science, no greater significance than any other point in the higher latitudes, Lieutenant Weyprecht thus contends, as the council of the Royal Geographical Society has contended for years, that the attainment of the highest possible latitude or of the pole itself is not the object to be sought, but the explora- tion of the unknown area with a view to scientific results.

In planning a new polar expedition on an adequate scale it will be necessary to profit by the lessons of experi- ence. This experience may be summed up in a few words. Any advanced ship or party must have a depdt ship to fall back upon which is within reach, and also in com- munication with the outer world. This makes disaster on a large scale, humanly speaking, impossible. Every precaution that medical science can suggest must be taken against scurvy. An advancing expedition must always follow a coast line, because an entry into the drift- ing pack entails failure and probably loss of the ship. The coast-line should trend north with a westerly aspect, because a general motion of the sea towards the west causes the ice to set in that direction, unless deflected from purely local causes. Hence there are usually open lanes of water along the west sides of polar lands at some time of the navigable season, while the eastern sides are usually closed with ice. These well-established canons point to the western side of Franz-Josef Land as the next region to be explored. –

Physical Geography of the North Polar Region.—Onr ignorance of about 3,000,000 square miles within the north polar circle, out of a total area of of 8,201,883, debars us from the possibility of considering the physical geography of the polar region as a whole. We can merely take stock of the isolated facts which our limited knowledge enables us to register.

As the physical condition of the whole area is mainly affected by the movements and positions of the ice masses, the temperature, and the circumstances which affect it, become the first and most fundamental elements for consideration. An examination of Dove's isothermal charts shows that the isotherms about the pole form ellipses tending to arrange themselves between two poles of cold, one in North America and the other

in eastern Siberia. The mildest winters appear to be in the meridians of Behring Strait

O27

influenced by the extent of frozen land or fixed ice on the one hand and the neighbourhood of open water and moving ice on the other. The following table shows the mean temperatures for the summer months, winter months, and whoie year, at various stations in the archipelago north of the American continent :—

Three | Three Summer] Winter | Year.

Latitude and

Expedition. Loeality. : . Longitude. Months.|Months M‘Clure…... Banks Island …..... .....| 74 ON, 118 W. +35 — 57) +41°8 PeaneVecnecesss Melville Island….....) 74 25N. 111 W. | +37 —10°6 | 41-4 | Sutherland..| Cornwallis Island…..... 7445N. 94W.| +36 — 86} 49°5 Belcher…... Northumberland Sound| 77 ON. 97W.! +39°8 | —11°8] —11 Parry… Port Boweh…...ssse-+0.| 7325N. 89 W. 436-9 | — 67] +43

At the Great Slave Lake in North America, Sir John Richardson found the mean of the three summer months to be +49°, of the three winter months — 0°°8, and of the year +9°. On the west coast of Greenland the climate of the southernmost part resembles that of Iceland or the northern shores of Norway. It exhibits

| a gradually decreasing temperature throughout the whole of its

extent to the north. The annual mean temperature at the south- ernmost station of Julianshaab is + 38°, and at the northernmost of Upernivik +13°. The mean temperature of the three summer months for Julianshaab is + 48° and for Upernivik + 48°; for the three winter months respectively +20° and -7°. The lowest temperature ever known at the Danish Greenland stations occurred at Upernivik and was – 47°. Farther north on the west coast the “North Star,” in 1851-52, observed the temperature for the year in Wolstenholme Sound (lat. 76° 30’ N.). os the three summer months the

mean was +387°:8, for the winter months —6°°8, and for the year +4°°5. The most northern observations ever taken for a complete year were those of H.M.S. “ Alert,” at Floeberg Beach in 82° 27’ N. Synchronous observations were taken by H.M.S. “ Discovery,” in Lady Franklin Bay, lat. 81° 44’ N. The results were as follows :—

Summer.

Ship. Latitude, Winter. | Year. MBE et O ss caeSanidct 82 27 N. +34 — 36 ~~3 |S aIBeOVERY ”....2vsc.5~~: 81 44.N. +33 -37 | -4

The minimum temperatures were — 78°, registered at Floeberg Beach in March, and ~~70°, at Lady Franklin Bay in the same mouth. These temperatures can be compared with the observations taken at Mossel Bay, on the north coast of Spitzbergen, by Nor~~ denskiold (lat. 79° 54’ N.), and on the south coast of Franz-Josef Land by Weyprecht and Leigh Smith. At these stations the winters are less severe on account of the closer proximity of open water. In Franz-Josef Land the minimum in the winter months was — 43°, and the mean was —- 26°; in May the mean was + 22°. The climate on the coast of Siberia was registered at the winter quarters of the “ Vega” in 67° 7’ N., the mean tempcrature of the three winter months being — 10°, miuimnm —51°, and the mean of the three summer months +36°; bunt the Siberian cold is far more intense inlaud.

The direction of the winds affects the temperatures and the movements of ice, but no general remarks upon them can be usefully made until onr knowledge of the polar area is more complete. One of the most interesting features in polar winds is the instability of the temperature caused by them over certain areas during the winter months. At Jacobshavn, in Greenland, the mean temperature in February was +16° in one ycar (1872), and — 25° in another (1863), a difference of 41°. It was remarked that great rises in the winter temperatures occurred at a time when the wind was blowing from the interior glacier. This wind often turns into a sudden gale. Greenland is surrounded by regions which have extremely different winter temperatures. While on one side there is the intense cold of Arctic America and the Parry Islands, on the other, to the east-south-east, there is the warm temperature caused by the Gulf Stream; so that the Greenland climate is at all times dependent on the direction of the winds. All winds from south through west

to north-west bring cold weather, but the east and south-east winds raise the temperature. The hot south-east winds of Greenland are caused in the same way as the “fohn” of the Alps. The interior glacier of Greenland rises toa height of at least 7000 feet. A warm wind from the Atlantic saturated with moisture could afford to lose considerably by cooling on its journey of 400 miles over the lofty ice deserts of Greenland, and yet arrive on the west coast with a comparatively high temperature. The influence of the Greenland fohns extends over a wide area. In 1875 there was a great rise of temperature at the Danish stations of Greenland; and Sir George Nares observed the same phenomenon, at nearly the same time, at his winter quarters in 82°17’ N. In Franz-Josef Land there are also great rises of

and the Spitzbergen seas. These temperatures appear to be mainly | temperature during the winter, with southerly winds accompanied

Winds,

Ice.

Icebergs.

Currents.

Paleo- erystic sea,

328

by heavy falls of snow, as these winds come direct from cxpanses of open water caused by the current from the Atlantic. 4

Sea water, in the process of congelation, expels the salt, and its freezing point is about 28°. The ice first forms in thin, irregular flakes called “sludge,” and.when this is compact enough to hold snow it is known as “brash.” Gathered into rounded masses it becomes “ naneake ice,” and soon it becomes thicker. The first thin covering is called by the whalers “bay ice.” A “floe” isa sheet of ice the limits of whieh are visible. An “ice-field” differs from a floe in being so extensive that its limits cannot be seen. “ Pack ice” consists of broken floes foreed together by the wind or cnrrents.

When the paek is loosened and scattered by a wind from an opposite direction the pieees are called “sailing iee.” The greatest thickness attainable by iee in one season is about 7 feet. The results of observations made by Sir George Nares in 82° 17’ N. on the west side of Green- land and by Captain Koldewey on the east side in 74° 30 N. were identical, namely 6 feet 7 inches. Old ice is believed to become thicker in a second winter, and even to attain a thickness of 10 fect. In the palwocrystic sea there are floes from 80 to 100 feet thick, but these must be considered rather as sea-glaciers, formed by accumulations of snow on the ice year after year; and the smaller pieccs broken from them have been very appropriately named floebergs. These mighty floes are sea-borne glaciers, perpetually wasted beneath and restored from above. ; ;

Ieebergs are only met with where there are great discharging glaciers on the land, or in currents leading from them. Greenland is the principal mother of ieebergs. This immense mass covers an area of about 512,000 square miles, and has 3400 miles of coast- line. It is indented by deep channels or fjords, often extending moré than 60 miles, with many islands and rocks along the coast. The whole of the interior is believed to be capped by an enormous glacier always moving towards the coast, and at certain points reaching the sea where masses break off in the shape of icebergs. These icebergs rise to a height of from 60 to 800 fect above the sea, with a circumference from several hundred to several thousand yards; and from seven to eight times the bulk seen above water is submerged, so that the weight of a large berg is millions of ‘tons. When pieces break off from a parent iceberg the process is called “calving,” and the pieces are “calf ice.” Recent observation of one of the principal discharging glaciers of Grecnland shows it to be 920 feet thick, and 18,400 feet wide, and that it advances at a rate of 47 feet a day during the summer season. In Spitzbergen and Nova Zembla there are much sinaller glaciers discharging smaller berg pieces. The Franz-Josef Land glaciers produce large flat-topped icebergs, which do not, however, float southwards.

The movements of the polar seas are influenced by the currents of seas and rivers which are constantly flowing northwards, and by ice-laden counter-currents which press through every strait and channel in the opposite direction. On the fringe of land forming the northern shores of Asia and

America are the mouths of several great rivers, Of the Siberian rivers the Obi, with its affluent the Irtish, has a basin covering 60,000 square miles, the Yenisei 50,000, and the Lena 40,000; but these areas are almost entirely within the temperate zone. In America the rivers Mackenzie, Coppermine, and Great Fish (or Back) also pour their waters into the polar sea. The enormous volume of warm water which these rivers send into the ocean drives the heavy ice from the coast and, owing to the influence which the rotatory motion of the earth exercises, reccives an easterly direction along the coast. Behring Strait is too narrow and too shallow to admit of any large flow from the Pacific, still there is a warm current which keeps the heavy ice at some distance and also flows easterly, its influence being felt beyond Point Barrow. The Norwegian current, usually considered to be a continuation of the Gulf Stream, conveys a large volume of water northwards along the coasts of Norway and Lapland, and keeps the ice at a distance from that shore throughout the winter. The polar currents fow southwards in the direction of the two great openings by Davis Strait and the sea on the east coast of Greenland, but the whole body appears eventually to find its way southwards by the former outlet. The current flowing south along the east coast of Greenland brings with it immense quantities of heavy ice, and when it reaches the south point of the land it turns westward and northward round Cape Farewell, until about 64° N., when it unites with the current coming from Baffin's Bay, aud the united current, with its enormons quantity of ice and icebergs, flows south along the Labrador eoast to Newfoundland. The other polar current flows southwards through all the channels and straits among the Parry Archipelago, and through Fury and Hecla Strait, down Baffin's Bay and Davis Strait.

The observations of various explorers lead to the conclusion that these outlets are insufficient to carry off the great harvests of ice, and that, in one part of the polar region, it continues to accumulate and form sea-borne glaciers. Collinson observed this formation off the coast of North America. M'Clure found it along the west coast of Banks Island, while M'Clintock and Mecham traced it along the western side of Prince Patrick Island. " The surface of the floes resembles rolling hills, some of them a hundred feet from

|

at Fort Foulke.

POLAR REG O MS

base to summit, —aged sea ice which may be centuries old, and from want of an outlet likcly to increase yet in thickness to an unlimited degree. The accumulated aetion of repeated thaws and falls of svow on the upper surface gives it a peeuliar hill and dale appear- anee.” The same ice was found by Nares’s expedition along the northern coast of Grant Land and Greenland 80 to 100 feet thick. A branch from it flows down M‘Clure Strait and M‘Clintock Channel until it impinges upon the north-west coast of King William Island. This is what Professor Haughton calls “ the ice barrier placed in this position by the still waters caused by the meeting of the Atlantic and Pacific tides.”

The physical aspects of polar lands are much influenced by their Geology.

geological formation. The Greenland coast: consists mainly of gneiss, mica schist, hornblende schist, and syenite pierced by granite veins. In this forination are found the steatite used by the natives to make lamps, the cryolite of Ivigtut in the south, and the plumbago at Upernivik. North of 69° N. a flow of basalt extends across the Noursoak peninsula and Disco Island, covering an area of about 7000 square miles, and rising to a height of 6000 feet. With these trap rocks are associated the Miocene and Cretaceous beds. The Cretaceous rocks have only been found in the Omenak-fjord in 70° N.; while the Miocene formation is confined to the shores of the Waigat Strait, between Disco and the main- land, underlying the trap. Coal beds appear in several places along the shore, and very interesting remains of fossil plants have been discovered. At the termination of Igalliko-fjord in 61° N. a compact red sandstone is found. Pendulum Islands on the east coast are Oolitic. But with these exceptions the whole mass of Greenland is granitic or gueissose. The opposite side of Baftin’s Bay is of the same character, as well as both sides of Peel Sound. The Parry Islands are partly Silurian and partly of the Carboniferous period. The eastern part, including North Somerset and Prince of Wales Land (except the shores of Peel Sound) and Cornwallis Island are of Silurian formation, with fossils, equivalents to the

Wenlock and Dudley groups. This formation extends westward from Boothia Felix and King William Island over Prince Albert Land and the southern half of Banks Island. The southern halves of Bathurst, Melville, and Prince Patrick Islands, and the northern half of Banks Island consist of Lower Carboniferous sand- stones with beds of coal, while Grinnell Land and the northern halves of Bathurst, Melville, and Prince Patriek Islands are Carboniferous limestone. lLias fossils (ammonites) were found at one place on the east side of Prince Patrick Island in 76° 20’ N. Sherard Osborn also found the vertebre of a hnge saurian (Teleo- sawrus) at the north-west extreme of Bathurst Island, probably of the Lower and Middle Oolitic period.

Ellesmere Land, on the western side of Smith Sound, consists of gneiss rising to heights of 2000 feet which underlie Miocene rocks Farther north the gneiss continues with stratified black slates having a very high and often vertical dip. In 82° 33’ N. these slates give place to a series of quartzites and grits rising to elevations of 2000 and 3000 feet. Silurian limestones are found on the shores of Kennedy Channel up to Cape Tyron on the Green- land side. Carboniferous limestone occurs on the north coast of Grant Land, as far west as Clements Markham Inlet, rising to a height of 2000 feet. Near Lady Franklin Bay in 81° 45’ N. a deposit of coal of the Miocene period was discovered, with a fossil flora including thirty species of plants—pines, birch, poplar, elm, and hazel. The whole of this land to the north of Baffin’s Bay is slowly rising.

Spitzbergen and Nova Zembla are also composed mainly of primitive rocks. In northeru Spitzbergen there are also Miocene beds with a fossil flora closely allied to that of Lady Franklin Bay, and some fossils of the Lias period. ‘The geological characters of Franz-Josef Land and Spitzbergen are closely allied. . The predomi- nant rock is dolerite, a kind of greenstone.

The ‘‘tundra” of Siberia is a wide belt of Jand intervening between the line of forest and the polar shores, and intersected by the great rivers. It is frozen for immense deptlis below the surface, and here tle remains of mammoths, generally in great landslips along the river banks, have been found. But their fossil ivory occurs in greatest quantity in the New Siberia group. On

these islands also occur the “ wood-hills ” consisting of horizontal sand-stone beds alternating with strata of bituminous trce stems, heaped

on each other to the top of the hill. Ammonites of the Lias period are also found there.

In the polar regions the line of forest seldom reaches to the Flora,

Arctic Circle; low birches and willows and shrubs bearing berries oecur in the south of Greenland, but farther uorth the creeping willow alone forms wood. There are 762 flowering plants, and 925 cryptogams within the Arctic Circle, making a total of 1687 plants. Lapland coultains by far the richest arctic flora, amounting to three- fourths of the whole, while three-fifths of the species found in Arctic Asia and America also belong to Lapland. In the European arctic distriet 616 flowering plants have been collected, in Arctic Asia 233, in Arctic America eastward of the Mackenzie 379, and westward of that river 364, and in Greenland 207. The most arctic plants of

Fauna.

Inhabit- ants.

POL RE GION 8

029

general distribution, which are found far north in all the aretic | was one of a fleet which sailed from Rotterdam under the

areas, are three species of Ranunculus, a poppy (Papaver nudicaule), the Draba alpina aud five other speeies, the Braya alpina, lady’s- smoek (Cardamine pratensis), eight species of saxifrage, two of

‘command of Jacob Mahu as admiral in June 1598. was called the “Good News,” a yacht of 150 tons, with

Potentilla, two of Arenaria, the moss eampion (Silene acaulis), the |

dandelion, a Stellaria, the Dryas octopetala, Cerastiwm alpinum, Epilobium latifolium, erowberry, dwarf willow, and rushes and

grasses of the genera Juncus, Carex, and Poa. The most ubiquitous |

of all is the Saxifraga oppositifolia, whieh is considered the eom- monest and most aretie of the flowering plants. All the aretie seas team with the lower forms of animal life.

in full detail by the naturalists to whom the eolleetions of the various expeditions have been entrusted. The fishes, birds, and mammals of the north polar region have also been studied and earefully deseribed within the diseovered areas, though the subjeet is far from having been exhausted. :

The human raee is found to exist along the whole fringe of

and to have spread up the shores of Boothia, and up both sides of Davis Strait and Baffin's Bay. Living mainly on sea animals, the inhabitants of the polar regions rarely wander from the eoast. Spitzbergen, Franz-Josef Land, and Nova Zembla are uninhabited, except that oecasional summer visits are made to the sonthern shores of the latter group of islands. The Laps are the denizens of

the European polar regions, and the Samoyeds sueeeed them along |

the shores of the Kara Sea and on the Yalmal peninsula. These Laps aud Samoyeds possess herds of reindeer, and during the winter they withdraw from the coast. In Siberia there was onee a coast population, but it has retired into the interior or died out, and

inhabitants are not met with until the encampments of the |

Tchuktehes are reached, from the Kolyma to Behring Strait. A very complete account of this interesting people has been given by Baron Nordenskidld in his narrative of the voyage of the " Vega." The Eskimo race extends over the whole of Aretic Ameriea and along the Greenland eoasts, the warlike Indian tribes preventing them from retreating inland, and foreing them to find a precarious living or starve on the shores of the polar

sea. Differing in size and physical development, the individuals of the different tribes all have flat broad faees, black coarse hair, high eheek bones, low foreheads, short flat noses, and narrow eyes sloping upwards from the nose. Their hands and feet are small. Vast tracts of country, including the archipelago to the north of America, are not inhabited, yet there are traces of Eskimo eneampments along the whole line of eoast from Banks Island to Baffin's Bay. This may have been the route by which Greenland was first peopled, and it suggests a continuation of land along the same parallel, from Banks Island to the Siberian eoast. Yet it may be that the wanderers found their way northwards from Ameriea by Prinee of Wales Strait. The most remarkable tribe is that named Aretic Highlanders by Sir John Ross in 1818, and they are the most northern people in the world. 'heir stations range along the Greenland eoast from 76° to 79° N., a deeply indented eoast-line of gigantic cliffs broken by deep bays, with numerous rocks and islands. They have no canoes, but dogs and good sledges, and they attack the walrus at the edge of the ice with spears. They are separated from the Eskimo of Greenland farther south by the glaciers of Melville Bay. In Danish Greenland the original Eskimo were probably intermixed in blood with the old Norse settlers, and since the time of Hans Egede the number of half-breeds has inereased. In 1855 the half-breeds were caleulated at 30 per eent. of the inhabitants of Greenland, and the two elasses have sinee blended almost imperceptibly, so that there are now no full-blooded Eskimo. The population of Danish Greenland in 1870 was 9588, distributed among 176 winter stations. There are a few scattered families on the east coast of Greenland.

SoutH PoLaR ReEcIon.

The south polar region, unlike the northern region, is almost covered by the,ocean, the only extensive land being far to the south. It was of course entirely unknown to the ancients and to the early navigators of modern Europe, although a theory prevailed among geographers that a great continent existed round the south pole, the 'Terra Australis Incognita." Lope Garcia de Castro, the governor of Peru, sent his nephew Alvaro Mendajia in search of it, who sailed from Callao in 1567. Another expedition under Pedro Fernandez de Quiros left Callao in 1605, and discovered land in April 1606, which he called Australia del Espiritu Santo, now known to be one of

the New Hebrides group. These were the first regular expedi- tions in search of the supposed southern continent.

The first ship that ever approached the Antarctic Circle

i

European, Asiatie, and American coast-line within the Aretie Cirele, ee oken of as south polar.

| Island in 48° 41’§., as it is at least a good base whence

She

Dirk Gerritz as her captain. She was separated from the rest of the fleet in Magellan’s Strait in 1599, and was carried by tempestuous weather far to the south, discover- ing high land in 64° S. This appears to have been the land afterwards named the South Shetlands. Glerritz and

| his crew were eventually captured by the Spaniards at The invertebrate animals have been enumerated and reported upon | oot :

Valparaiso. In 1671 La Roche discovered South Georgia, a solitary island in the South Atlantic, but north even of the latitude of Cape Horn. Where so little is known, and where there is so little land, the discoveries within a few hundred miles of the Antarctic Circle come to be In this category is Kerguelen

south polar discovery may start, though its latitude in the southern is almost the same as England in the northern

_ hemisphere, on a meridian nearly half way between the

Cape and Australia. Its discovery is due to the gallant but unfortunate Frenchman whose name it bears, Yves J. Kerguelen. He sighted it on January 17, 1772, on the same day that his countryman Marion discovered the island named after himself, on a meridian nearer the Cape. Captain Cook, in his third voyege, visited Kerguelen Island, and Robert Rhodes in

1799 mapped a considerable portion of its coast. The Sandwich group, south-east of South Georgia, was discovered in 1762.

Captain Cook in January 1773 sailed southwards from the Cape of Good Hope in the “Resolution” with the “ Adventure” in company, and, after passing much ice, crossed the Antarctic Circle on the 17th, in longitude 39° 35′ E. In the same afternoon they sighted thirty-eight icebergs to the southward besides much loose ice; and in 67° 15’ their progress was stopped. Cook did not think it prudent to persevere in getting farther south, and bore up for New Zealand. In December 1773 another attempt was made to discover the supposed southern continent, by steering southwards from New Zealand. On the 20th Cook again crossed the Antarctic Circle in 147° 46 W., and came amongst a cluster of very large icebergs with loose ice in 67° 5’ 8. He got clear of them and after standing farther east he reached a latitude of 69° 45’S. in 108° 5’ W., and still shaping a southerly course he reached 70° 23’S. on January 29, 1774. Next day he came to icebergs forming an impenetrable barrier. He counted ninety-seven, which looked like a range of moun- tains, with closely packed ice round them. Cook’s farthest point was in 71° 15’ 8. on the meridian of 106° 54’ W. Captain Cook discovered islands in 53° to 54° 30’ S. in January 1775, which he named Sandwich, Willis, Pickersgill, and Georgia Isles, in about 32° W. In 27° 45’ W. he reached land which he named the Southern Thule, because it was the most southern land that had ever yet been discovered. It is in 59° 13’ 8. In the South Atlantic ice was met with as far north as 51°. In this second voyage Captain Cook made the circuit of the southern ocean in a high latitude, twice crossing the Antarctic Circle. He established the fact that, if there was any extensive south polar land, it must be south of the parallels along which he sailed. The Russian expedi-

| tion under Bellingshausen in 1820 also sailed over a great

many degrees of longitude in a high latitude, but only discovered two islets, Petra and Alexander. These islands were farther south than any land then known.

Auckland Island was discovered by Captain Bristow in 1806, and Campbell Island by Hazleburgh in 1810, both south of New Zealand, but far to the north of the Antarc- tic Circle. In 1818 Mr William Smith of Blyth redis-

‘ covered the land known as South Shetland. His work

was confirmed by Mr Bransfield, the master of H.M.S. “Andromache,” flag-ship on the west coast of South America, who further discovered another portion named Bransfield Land. Further coast-line was sighted by the

French expedition under Dumont d’Urville in 1838, who |

named it Prince de Joinville and Louis Philippe Land.

The South Orkneys were discovered by Captain George |

Powell, in the sloop “‘ Dove,” on October 6, 1821. Mr

Weddell, R.N., with the sailing vessels “Jane” and |

“‘‘Beaufoy,” penetrated as far south as 74° 15’ S. on the 20th February 1823.

In the early part of this century Messrs Enderby began to send vessels to the Antarctic regions for the whale fishery, which made several discoveries. The brig “Tula” of 148 tons and cutter “Lively” left London in July 1830 under the conunand of Mr John Biscoe, R.N., on a sealing voyage, but with special instruc- tions to endeavour to make discoveries in high southern latitudes. In February 1831 land was discovered in longitude 47° 20’ E. and latitude 65° 57’ S., which Biseoe named Enderby Land, in honour of his employers. He did not, however, get nearer to it than 20 or 30 miles. In February 1831 Biscoe again discovered land in 67° 1’ S. lat. and 71° W. long., to whicli he gave the name of Adelaide Island. It proved to be the westernmost of a chain of islands fronting a high continuous coast, since called Graham’s Land. A few days afterwards Captain Biscoe succeeded in landing on Adelaide Island. In 1833 Captain Kemp, in the sealing schooner

“ Magpie,” discovered another point of the land to the eastward, which doubtless forms part of Enderby Land.

Messrs Enderby sent out another expedition of discovery in 1838, consisting of the “ Eliza Scott” of 154 tons, commanded by Mr John Balleny, and the “Sabrina” cutter of 54 tons, under Mr Freeman. In February 1839, when on about the 163d E. meridian, they sighted high land in 66° 30’S. On the 12th, Captain Free- man managed to get on shore, but the cliffs were perpendicular, and the valleys were filled with ice. The discovery proved to be a group of volcanic islands, one of them rising to a beautiful peak estimated at 12,000 feet above the sea, named Freeman Peak. Sabrina Island was discovered in March 1839. The other group reccived the name of the Balleny Islands. The Auckland Islands were ceded to Messrs Enderby in 1849, and a whaling establish- ment was formed there under good auspices. a

In 1839 the French expedition under Dumont d’Urville pro- ceeded south from Tasmania and discovered two small islands on the Antarctic Circle named “Terre Adélie” and “ Céte Clarice.” At the same time Commander Wilkes of the United States expedi- tion made a cruise to the southward and mapped a large tract of land in the latitude of the Antarctic Circle for which he claimed the discovery. But as a portion of it had already been seen by Balleny, and the rest has since been proved not to exist, the claim has not been admitted.

The English Antarctic Expedition of 1839-48 was undertaken mainly with a view to magnetic observations, and the determination of the position of the south magnetic pole. Two old bomb vessels, the “ Krebus ” and “Terror,” were fitted out under the command of Captain (afterwards Sir James) Ross, with Captain Crozier in the “Terror.” Dr Joseph D. Hooker accompanied the expedition as naturalist. Leaving Chatham in September 1839, the two vessels first_ proceeded to the Cape, and went thence southwards to Kerguelen Island, which was reached in May 1840, and carefully surveyed. In August Sir James Ross established a magnetic observatory at Hobart Town. The cruise for the second season was comienced from Tasmania in November 1840. The Auckland Islands and Campbell Island were first visited and surveyed, and on New Year’s Day 1841 the Antarctic Circle was

crossed in about 172° KE. A few days afterwards the two vesscls were beset in the pack and began perscveringly boring through it. By January 10th they succeeded and were clear of ice in 70° 23’ S., and next day land was sighted, rising in lofty peaks and covered with perennial snow. ‘That day Ross passed the highest latitude reached by Cook (71° 15’S.). On a nearer approach to the land, there was a clear view of the chain of mountains with peaks rising to 10,000 feet, and glaciers filling the intervening valleys and projecting into the sea. The south magnetic pole was calculated to be in 76° S. and 145° 20’ E., or about 500 miles south-west from the ship’s position. The land interposed an insuperable obstacle to any nearer approach

POL—

PO L

to it. Captain Ross landed with great difficulty, owing to the strong tide and drifting ice, on a small island near the shore, named Possession Island, in 71° 56’ S. and 171° 7’ E. Inconceivable myriads of penguins covered the surface, but no vegetation was seen. Next morning there was a southerly gale which moderated, and on 18th January they were again sailing south in an unexplored sea, On the 23d they were in 74° 20’S., and thus passed the most southern latitude previously reached (by Captain Weddell in 1828). Sailing along the newly discovered coast, Captain Ross landed alter much difficulty on an island named after Sir John Franklin in 76° 8’ 8. On the 27th they came in sight of a mountain 12,400 feet above the sea, which proved to be an active volcano emitting flame and smoke in great profusion. It was named Mount Erebus, and an extinct volcano to the eastward 10,900 feet high was named Mount Terror. Along the coast as far as the eye could reach to the eastward there was a perpendicular cliff of ice from 150 to 200 feet high, perfectly level at the top, and without any fissures or promontories on its smooth seaward face. Nothing could be seen above it except the summits of a lofty range of mountains extend- ing to the southward as far as 79° S. To this range the name of Parry was given. The most conspicuous headlands under Mount Erebus were named Capes Crozier and Bird. Captain Ross then sailed eastward along the marvellous wall of ice, in 77° 47’S. to 78° S. This ice barrier was calculated to be 1000

feet thick, and it was followed for a distance of 450 miles without a break. The winter was now approaching, young ice was beginning to form, but luckily a strong breeze enabled them to force their way through it. The whole of the great southeru land discovered by Sir James Ross was named Victoria Land.

In returning to Hobart Towu the expedition visited the Balleny Islands, and searched in vain for the land which Captain Wilkes had laid down on his chart.

In November 1841 the “ Erebus ” and “Terror” again shaped a southerly course, entered the pack ice on December 18th, and once more crossed the Antarctic Circle on New Year’s Day. The naviga- tion through a belt of ice 800 miles broad was extremely perilous. At length on Ist February 1842 a clear sea was in sight, and they proceeded to the southward in 174° 31’W. On the 22d they were surrounded by numerous lofty icebergs aground, and at midnight the Great Icy Barrier was sighted and its examination recommenced in 77° 49’S. Next day the expedition attained a latitude of 78°11’S., by far the highest ever reached before or since. After escaping imminent dangers in navigating through chains of huge icebergs, Captain Ross took his ships northward, and wintered at the Falk- land Islands.

In December 1842 the expedition sailed from Port Louis on the third visit to the south polar region, seeing the first iceberg in 61°S. On the 28th the ships sighted the land nanied after the Prince de Joinville by Dumont d’Urville, and the southern side of the South Shetlands was discovercd and surveyed. During February about 160 miles of the edge of the pack were examined, on March llth the Antarctic Circle was recrossed for the last time, and the expedition returned to England in September 1843. Thus after four years of most diligent work, this ably conducted and quite unparalleled voyage to the south polar regions came to an end.

In 1845 a merchant barque, the “Pagoda,” was hired at the Cape, in order that magnetic observations might be completed south of the 60th parallel, between the meridians of the Cape and Australia. The ship’s progress was stopped by an impenetrable. pack in 68°S. The magnetic work was, however, completed.

H.M.S. “ Challenger,” the exploring ship commanded by Captain Nares, arrived at Kerguelen Island on the 6th January 1874, where surveys were made, and the island was thoroughly examined by the naturalists of the expedition. Two islands, named Heard and M‘Donald, were also visited, which had been discovered in November 1853 by Captain Heard of the American ship “Oriental,” owing to the practical application of the problem of great circle sailing. There is in fact a group of islands about 240 miles from Kerguelen. In February the “ Challenger” ran south before a gale of wind and the first iceberg was sighted on the 11th in 60° 52’S. It was 200 feet high and about 700 long. On the 19th the ship was at the edge of a dense pack in 65° 42’ S.; and on the 4th March they bore up for Australia. Several deep-sea soundings were taken, the greatest depth being 1975 fathoms. The route of the “Challenger” was much the same as that of the “Pagoda” in 1845, but more to the north. With it ends the somewhat meagre record of voyages across aud towards the Antarctic Circle. (C. R. M.)

POLE, Recrnatp (1500-1558), generally known as Cardinal Pole, was born at Stourton Castle, Staffordshire, March 3, 1500. He was the son of Sir Richard Pole and Margaret, countess of Salisbury. Designed from early

youth for the church, he was educated in the Carthusian monastery at Sheen, and at Magdalen College, Oxford. He was admitted to deacon’s orders at the age of sixteen, and at once received high preferment, holding, among other

POL—

benefices, the deanery of Exeter. He continued his studies at the university of Padua, where he made acquaintance with Erasmus and other prominent men, and, after a visit to Rome in 1525, returned to England. Henry VIII. was eager to keep him at court, but Pole appears to have held aloof from politics until the question of the king’s divorce drew him from his retirement. He was probably from the first opposed to Henry’s policy, but we find him, nevertheless, in 1530, at Paris, charged with the duty of obtaining the decision of the Sorbonne on the question at issue. That decision given, he returned to England, but refused to approve the king’s divorce, or the other.measures connected with it. The king, anxious to gain his adhesion, offered him the archbishopric of York, vacant by the death of

Wolsey in 1531. After some hesitation, he refused the offer and left the country.

This was the turning-point in his career, and concludes the first of the three periods into which his life may be divided. During the second period, for upwards of twenty years, he lived abroad, the declared and active enemy of the Protestant movement in his own country. After passing a year at Avignon, he took up his residence a second time at Padua. As he had not yet declared him- self publicly against Henry, the latter continued favour- ably disposed towards him, allowing him the revenues of his deanery, and exempting him from the oath of allegi- ance to ‘Queen Anne’s children. In 1535, however, there came a change. The king sent to ask his formal opinion on the divorce and the ecclesiastical supremacy. Pole’s answer, afterwards published, with considerable additions, under the title Pro Umitate Ecclesix, was sent to England early in the next year. It contained a vigorous attack upon Henry’s policy and menaced the king with condign punishment at the hands of the emperor and the king of France if he did not return to his allegiance to Rome. Summoned to England to explain himself, he refused to come. Late in 1536 he was made cardinal, and early next year he was sent as papal legate with the object of uniting Charles V. and Francis I. in an attack upon Eng- land, which was to coincide with a rising of the Romanists in that country. The terms of peace between England and France making it impossible for him to remain in the latte: country (for he was now attainted of high treason), he passed into Flanders, and soon afterwards (August 1537) returned to Rome. A year later (November 1538) he published his book, together with an apology for his own conduct, addressed to Charles V. In 1539, after the bull of excommunication had been issued against Henry VIIL, Pole went to Spain in order to urge Charles to attack England. An invasion was threatened but given up, and Pole retired to Carpentras. From 1539 to 1542 he acted as papal legate at Viterbo. In 1543 he was con- templating an expedition to Scotland with an armed force to aid the anti-English party, and in 1545 he was corre- sponding with the same party and with Charles V. for a joint attack on England. In the same he went to Trent in disguise, to avoid the danger of seizure on the way, and presided at some of the preliminary meetings of the council. On the death of Henry VIII. he made an attempt to reconcile himself with the English Govern- ment, but in vain. In 1549 he was a

candidate for the papacy on the death of Paul III., and at one moment was on the point of being elected, but in the end was unsuc- cessful, and retired to Maguzzano, on the Lake of Garda. When Edward VI. died Polo was engaged in editing his book Pro Umitate Ecclesiz, with an intended dedication to that king.

The accession of Mary opens the third period of his life. The pope at once appointed him legate, and entered into negotiations with the queen. A marriage between her

and Pole was at one moment contemplated, but the state of public feeling in England rendered his return impossible, and he was kept waiting for a year in Flanders and Germany. The reaction at length produced a parliament favourable to Rome, and enabled him to return (November 1554). As legate he received the national submission, and pronounced the absolution, accepting at the same time, on behalf of the pope, the demands of parliament with respect to ecclesiastical lands, &c. Next year he was on two occasions a candidate for the papacy, but was twice disappointed. After Philip's departure, and the death of Gardiner (October 1555), Pole became Mary's chief adviser, and, with her, must bear the blame of the perse- cution which followed on the reunion with Rome. On Cranmer's death (March 1556) he became archbishop of Canterbury, but soon afterwards (May 1557) fell into dis- grace with the pope, Paul IV., who was his personal enemy, On the outbreak of war with France, Paul, the political ally of that country, cancelled Pole's legatine powers and even charged him with heresy. No remon- strances on the part of Mary and Pole himself could induce the pope to retract this sentence, and Pole died (November 18, 1558) at enmity with the power in whose support he had spent his life.

His chief works are Pro Unitate Ecclesiw, ad Henricum VIIT. (ed. princ., Rome, n. d.); Reformatio Angliw (Rome, 1556); De Concilio (Rome, 1562); De summi Pontificis officio et putestate (Louvain, 1569); De Justificatione (Louvain, 1569); Letters, &c. (ed. Quirini, Brescia, 1744). ;

See Beccadelli, Vita Poli Cardinalis, Venice, 1553, London, 1690; Quirini, "Vita Ricardi Poli," prefixed to the Letters; Phillipps, History of the Life of

R. Pole, Oxford, 1764; also Strype’s Memorials; Froude’s History of England; Hook’s Archbishops of Canterbury; &c. (Ga, W. P.)

POLECAT. This name is applied to one of the English members of the large Family Mustelidx, which contains be- sides the Martens, Weasels, Otters, and Badgers (see Mam- MALIA, vol, xv. p. 439, and the separate articles under these names). :

In this family the Polecats, while belonging, with the stoats, weasels, and many others, to the nearly cosmo- politan genus Pwtorius, form by themselves a small group

Common Polecat.

confined to the northern hemisphere, and consisting of four species, of which the best known and most widely distributed is the common polecat of Europe (Putorius fetidus). This animal, at least so far as its disposition, size, and proportions are concerned, is well known in its domesticated condition as the ferret, which is but a tamed albino variety of the true polecat. The colour of the latter, however, instead of the familiar yellowish white of the ferret is of a dark brown tint above, and black below, the face being variegated with dark brown and white

Ood2

markings. gether of a far more powerful type than those of the stoats, weasels, or martens ; the skull of the female is very much smaller and lighter than that of the male. Its fur is long, coarse, and of comparatively small value, and changes its colour very little, if at all, at the different seasons of the year.

The distribution and habits of the common polecat have been well described by Blasius in his Stéugethiere Deutsch- lands, and the following is an abstract of his account. The polecat ranges over the greater part of Europe, reach- ing northwards into southern Sweden, and in Russia to the region of the White Sea. It does not occur in the extreme south, but is common everywhere throughout central Europe. In the Alps it ranges far above the tree- line during the summer, but retreats in winter to lower ground. In fine

weather it lives either in the open air, in holes, fox-earths, rabbit-warrens, under rocks, or in wood- stacks ; while in winter it seeks the protection of deserted buildings, barns, or stables. During the day it sleeps in its hiding place, sallying forth at night to plunder dovecots and hen-houses. It climbs but little, and shows far less activity than the marten. It feeds ordinarily on small mammals, such as rabbits, hamsters, rats, and mice, on such birds as it can catch, especially poultry and pigeons, and algo on snakes, lizards, frogs, fish, and eggs. Its prey is devoured only in its lair, but, even though it can carry away but a single victim, it commonly kills everything that comes in its way, often destroying all the inhabitants of a hen-house in order to gratify its passion for slaughter. The pairing time is towards the end of the winter, and the young, from three to eight in number, are born in April or May, after a period of gestation of about two months. The young, if taken early, may be easily trained, like ferrets, for rabbit-catching. The polecat is very tena- cious of life and will bear many severe wounds before succumbing ; it is also said to receive with impunity the bite of the adder. Its fetid smell has become pro- verbial. To this it is indebted for its generic name Puto- rius (derived, as are also the low Latin putacius, the French putois, and the Italian puzzola, from puteo), as well as the designation foumaré (2.c. foul marten), and its other Eng- lish names /fitchet, fitchew. Attempts to account for the first syllable of the word polecat rest entirely on conjec- ture.

_ The other species of the polecat group are the follow- VU aS é

The Siberian Polecat (Putorius eversmanni), very like the Kuropean in size, colour, and proportions, but with head and back both nearly or quite white, and skull more heavily built and sharply constricted behind the orbits, at least in fully adult indi- viduals. It inhabits the greater part of south-westcru Siberia,

aaons from Tibet into the steppes of south-eastern European Nussia.

The Black-footed or American Polecat (Putorius nigripes), a native of the central plateau of the United States, and extending southwards into Texas. It is very closely allied to the last spccies, but has nevertheless been made the type of a special sub-genus namel Cynomyonax, or ‘‘ King of the Prairie Marmots,”’ a name which expresses its habit of living in the burrows of,

and feeding upon, the curious prairie marmots (Cynomys) of the United States. An excellent account of this species may be found in Dr Elliott Coues's Fur-bearing Animals of North America.

Lastly, the Mottled Polecat (Putorius sarmaticus), a rare and peculiar species occurring in southern Russia and south-western Asia, extending from eastern Poland to Afghanistan. It differs from the other polecats both by its smaller size and its remarkable coloration, the whole of its upper parts being marbled with large irregular reddish spots on a white ground, and its underside, limbs, and tail being deep shining black. Its habits, which scem to be very much those of the common polecat, have been studied in Kandahar by Captain Thomas Hutton, who has given a vivid po ae of them in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal

) ;

POLEVOY. See Russtan LrreRaTURE.

Its skull is rough, strongly ridged, and alto- |

POL—POL

POLICE. The branch of criminal justice which com- prises a methodical system for the prevention and detection of crime is commonly known by the name of "Police." With the system having these objects is combined the execution of many duties not strictly involved in the popular defini- tion of crime, but materially affecting the security and convenience of the public. Bentham, more comprehen- sively, says that police is in general a system of precaution either for the prevention of crime or of calamities. It is destined to prevent evils and provide benefits. The system for the attainment of these objects and the introduction and establishment of that system in the United Kingdom form the main subject of this article ; some account will afterwards be given of the police in other states.

In this view the definition and use of the word ' police," as meaning the regulation and government of the city and country in relation to the inhabitants, are not sufficiently close. When Blackstone says that by the public police and economy he means ''the due regulation and domes- tic

order of the kingdom, whereby the individuals of the state, like members of a well governed family, are bound to conform their general behaviour to the rules of pro- priety, good neighbourhood, and good manners, and to be decent, industrious, and inoffensive in their respective stations," the definition is capable of an interpretation at once too wide and too narrow for the present purpose. It is vain to look for an accurate.description of police, as a system, in writers of a period when the thing sought for had no existence. The system is of recent growth, and it is necessarily more associated with personal instruments for the attainment of objects than with the objects to be attained. An observation of Gibbon, referring to the eediles and queestors of the Roman empire, that officers of the police or revenue easily adapt themselves to any form of government, correctly presents the idea of distinctive personal elements. A system of police administration includes neither the making of the law nor the law itself. Officers of police are neither legislators nor (in the usual sense) magistrates. They are the instruments by which conformity to the rules of the commonwealth is attained..

Apart from the repression of crime as generally under- stood, it is plain that, at least in crowded cities, a power ought to exist for the suppression of noise and disorder, the regulation of locomotion and traffic, the correction of indecency, and the prevention of a numerous class of annoyances and impositions which can only be restrained by cognizance being taken of them at the instant. To these may be added a number of petty disputes the immediate settlement of which tends materially to the public peace. Over such subjects as these it is obviously for the general advantage the police should have a summary control. Any apprehension of danger to liberty can only be founded on its abuse and not upon its proper exercise.

The employment of persons in these various duties, as well as in the prevention and detection of graver matters of crime, constitutes a division of state labour. 'Therefore, while it is perfectly correct to speak of the various legisla- tive and other measures for good order as "matters of police," the organization and management of the police forces constitute a distinct subject.

The essential features of the established police system, alike in Great Britain and in foreign states, in cities and towns as in countries and village communities, comprise the following matters :—

I. A body of persons in relation to the state enforcing obedience to the criminal law, the prevention and detec- tion of crime, and the preservation of order, over a defined area, generally divided and subdivided for the purpose of distribution and immediate government of the force, but having one jurisdiction throughout.

Porro ®

Il. The division of that force into classes of various rank, comprising, in general, in ascending order, constables, sergeants, inspectors, alld superintendents (or their equi- valents),—the constables being the most numerous and themselves divided into classes.

III. General control of the entire body by heads, whether styled commissioners or chiefs, having power to make regulations for the government of the force, subject in turn to the control of state authorities.

333

of the expression ; and, on the English statesman explain-

ing that he intended to refer to what every Government exercised in virtue of its sovereignty or under treaties with

other powers, Talleyrand would not admit the existence

of any maritime police, except that of each power over its

own vessels.

The supervision of the police by the Government stands Govern-

thus. The commissioner of police of the metropolis of ™ent

London is appointed by and acts under the immediate (il”’

Relation to the state.

IV. Patrol day and night of the streets, roads, and public places,—the “ beats” and “tours of duty” of con- stables being prescribed by regulations, and actual per- formance and compliance being secured by the sergeants and inspectors. ,

V. The payment of the force, including establishment charges, out of public funds provided for the purpose.

In dealing with these subjects as nearly as may be in.

the order indicated, the relationship of the police force to the state is of primary importance. A general control by the executive Government of a state of the police forces, for the legitimate objects for which they are established, seems essential. In Great Britain every member of the force, from an ordinary constable upwards, stands in the direct position of a servant of the crown. On admission he makes a promissory declaration (recently substituted for an oath) that he will serve the sovereign ; and it is upon the fact that a police constable has the powers, duties, and privileges of a peace officer of and for the crown that many of the incidents of his service depend, although the im- mediate power of dismissal is vested in heads of a force, whose orders he is bound to obey.

The state employs the police forces for the public wel- fare only. ‘There is not in England,” remarked the late Chief-Justice Cockburn, “any more than in America, any system of espionage or secret police to pry into men’s secret actions or to obtain information for the Government by underhand and unworthy means.” The truth of this is exemplified in the present position of police administra- tion in the metropolitan police district of England acting under the immediate control of the secretary of state. The fear expressed, and no doubt felt, on the first establish- ment of a regularly organized system of police, that the freedom of holding meetings and the utterance of opinion at them would be suppressed, has been dispelled. The police are expressly enjoined not to interfere with persons attending political meetings unless specially ordered, and such orders are not given unless disorder or a breach of the peace is imminent. Public addresses, even in some of the royal parks, are permitted, provided they do not cause any

obstruction, and are not of an unlawful character. There are no Government police to watch the delivery of mere political opinion or the tenor of its reception by the auditory. The press is also free from Government interference, through the police, in matters short of crime or not directly incentive to crime.

The sphere of action of the police force in relation to the state has been extended' by legislative enactments pro- viding that criminals who have escaped to or from colonies may be followed and removed by process of law, and tried where the crime originated. The practical execution of the law as to these fugitive offenders rests with the police. The same observation applies to the province of police under extradition treaties. But the general action of the police force of a country is bounded by its shores. As the open seais not the territory of any one nation, it is not

direction of the secretary of state for the home department. The commissioner of police of the city of London is in communication with the corporation, who appoint him. There is, however, a power of approval of regulations in the secretary of state. In the counties of England the appointment of the chief constable is by the county magistrates subject to the approval of the secretary of state. In municipal corporations the police, including the chief or head constable, are appointed by the watch committee. In all these cases except in the metropolis the secretary of state leaves the immediate control to local authorities and disclaims responsibility. In Scotland the secretary of state has a voice in the rules for the govern- ment, pay, and necessaries of the force. The appointment of the chief constable is subject to his approval, but practically there is no interference called for in this respect. In Ireland great authority is vested in the lord lieutenant both with respect to the police of Dublin and the royal Trish constabulary. The immediate government is vested in the heads of the forces, and the parliamentary responsi- bility isin the chief secretary for Ireland. Reports and returns as to the police forces of Great Britain and Ireland are laid before parliament. The immediate control and responsibility of a cabinet minister for the police of the metropolis of London makes a very important distinction between the position of that force and of the other police forces of the empire. There is, however, a general relation- ship of the police forces of the country to the state, arising from the contribution

(not now limited to a particular pro- portion) made by parliament to the expenditure for a pelice force. Under an Act of 1856 the crown appoints three persons as paid inspectors to visit and inquire into the state and efficiency of the police appointed for every county and borough in England and Wales, and to see whether the provisions of the Acts under which they are appointed are duly observed and carried into effect; and upon the secretary of state's certificate of efficiency, laid before parliament, the contribution is made. In the same way an inspector for Scotland reports annually.

It is to be observed that the contribution cannot be made toa borough police not consolidated with the county police where the population is less than 5000. In Eng- land the state, except in the city of London, contributes about half the pay of forces which submit to certain regu- lations, to inspection, and to a definite amount of imperial control. In Scotland the state also contributes. About two-thirds of the cost of the Dublin metropolitan police is met by the treasury. The balance in all the above cases comes from the locality. The royal Insh consta- bulary is the only force whose ordinary strength is entirely supported by imperial taxation, subject, however, to pay- ment by districts where special services are necessary.

'To prevent political influence being brought to bear upon the police, they cannot vote at elections of members of parliament within their district ; and the chief officers are disqualified from sitting in parliament.

competent to any one nation to preserve order or remove The relationship of the police forces of the country to Con-

all delinquents on its surface, as it is in the ports, rivers, | the army as a state force is satisfactory. The police isa an and lakes of a state. When Lord Castlereagh at the con- | civil force. Although constables constantly speak of the Bi

public as "civilians," the police are in turn styled civilians

gress of Vienna spoke of the " police" to be exercised over by soldiers. It is now only on rare occasions that soldiers

_ ships carrying slaves, Talleyrand asked the precise meaning

General duties.

Relation to crime.

3084

are required to intervene in the case of riot or tumult, as fortunately the police force is generally sufficient for the preservation of the peace of the country. If disturbance is apprehended in any district, special constables are called upon to aid. It is no less due to the improved temper and habits of the people than to the existence of the police force that military display is rarely needed to suppress riots. In state processions and on some other occasions the police and household troops together maintain the line of route, and where troops assemble for inspection the police sometimes aid in keeping the ground. The police, as constables, are required to carry out the law as to billet- ing and the impressment of carriages,—at one time a very heavy incident of duty, but considerably lightened by the practice of conveying troops by railway. The police appre- liend deserters on reasonable suspicion. Police in charge of a station niust receive prisoners, including deserters and absentees subject to military law, if duly sent there by military authority; and, as a person subject to military law is usually left to be dealt with by the ordinary civil tribunal for offences, he is taken by the police before a inagistrate. On the other hand no person subject to mili- tary law, whether an officer or a private, can neglect or refuse to deliver over to the civil magistrate any officer or soldier accused of au offence punishable in the ordinary mode, or to assist the police in his lawful apprehension; an adjustment of military and civil law is therefore effected.

The duties devolving on a police force require a fuller notice than the general remarks already made.

A constable on ordinary patrol duty has to attend to every circumstance that a keen eye and ready ear bring under his notice. In a carefully drawn statute, although not now in general use, the general sphere of observation and duty by constables is thus summarized :—

‘During the time they shall be on duty, use their utmost en- deavours to prevent any mischief by fire, and also to prevent all robberies, burglaries, and other felonies and misdemeanors, and other outrages, disorders, and breaches of the peace 5 and to appre- hend and secure all felons, rogues, vagabonds, and disorderly persons who shall disturb the public peace, or any party or persons wander- ing, secreting, or misbehaving himself, herself, or themselves, or whom they shall have reasonable cause to suspect of any evil designs ; and to secure and keep in safe custody any such person, in order that he or she may be conveyed as soon as conveniently may be before a justice of the peace, to be examined and dealt with according to law ; and it shall and may be lawful to and for the said watchmen, serjeants of the watch, patrols, and other person or persons to call and require any person or persons to aid and assist them in taking such felons, rogues, vagabonds, and all disorderly or sus- pected persons as aforesaid” (3 & 4 Will. IV. ¢. 90, § 41).

Police action in relation to the serious matters constitut- ing crime is familiar knowledge. It is essential to bear in mind that the powers of the police in arresting and other- wise dealing with criminals in a variety of ways is derived from and depends on police constables having been ex- pressly invested with the powers and duties of the old parish constables. Every police force has been given these powers and duties of constables, and the possession of them is so essential that, however they may be supplemented by modern legislation, without them no police force could exist for a day.

A statistical or other inquiry into crime is necessarily beyond the limits of this article. A few facts, however, bear on the efficiency of the police forces.

The returns indicate that the apprehensions in 1881-82 were (omitting fractions) in the proportion of 41 per cent. to the number of crimes committed in England and Wales, against a like propor- tion in 1880-81, 42 per cent. in 1879-80, 45 in 1878-79, 44 in 1877-78, 46 for 1876-77, and 47 per cent. for 1875-76.

The director of criminal investigations reported for the year 1882 that a comparison of the statistics—which are prepared by an independent service

with a scrupulous regard to accuracy—with those of foreign cities shows that the metropolis of London (metro- politan police district), with a territory nearly 700 square miles in extent, covered by more than 700,000 separate houses, and inhabited

Pecivcrz

by a population barely less than 5,000,000, is the safest capital for life and property in the world. a

Although criminal procedure does not admit of being fully treated here as part of the police system, yet as the police by duty as well as practice are in fact prosecutors – in the majority of criminal cases, the important part taken by the police force requires notice.

The efficiency of the police, as well as the exigencies of cases, has led to the arrest of offenders or suspected persons in the great majority of fclonies and other crimes, where the powcrexists, with- out applying to magistrates for warrants in the first instance. Although there are some advantages attendant upon a practice under which magistrates do not hear of the matter until the accused is actually before them, it is undoubtedly better, as recently declared by the commissioners reporting on the criminal code, for the police officer to obtain a warrant where circumstances adinit of his doing so. When he arrests, whether with or without a warrant, it is his duty to take the prisoner before a magistrate.

Without attempting to enter fully into the rights and duties of the police in relation to arrest, it may be mentioned that, while the important action of the police is derived from and wholly depend- . cut (except in some cases where recent legislation has found a place) on the older powers, scicnce has been made subservient in facilitating the application of those powers to police duties. As in old times the reasonable suspicion giving the right to arrest may still be founded on ecaal” observation and information in the ordinary mode ; but the electric telegraph and the photograph now lend their aid as recognized agents in favour of justice and truth far more than in aid of fraud and deception.

If an arrest is without a warrant, it is the officer's duty to show that he acted rightly by establishing at least that he proceeded on reasonable information. His task is generally much more. He or some police officer, whether acting under a warrant or not, has to adduce all the evidence to justify a conmittal for trial, or, if the case is one in which the court of summary jurisdiction has the power, for a conviction. In carrying ont this duty even in simple cases a multitude of matters have to be attended to in which a number of police officers take a part. Whether the arrest is made by a constable on his beat or under other circumstances, the ordinary duty involves taking the prisoner to the police station, where the charge is entered. He is then taken before the magistrate, or, in some cases, bailed. If the charge be one of felony it generally involves a remand, not only for the attendance of witnesses, but to ascertain the prisoner's antecedents ; and these remands are often multiplied in complicated cases. Every remand involves the.con- veyance of the prisoner to and from the prison or 'lock-up,'-— generally the former. Detective police attend at the prison to ascertain whether the accused has been previously convicted or charged. Witnesses must be seen and their attendance secured. If the prisoner is eventually committed for trial it is the duty of the inspector or other officer having charge of the case to aid the magistrate's clerk in making out the certificate of costs, so that the proper aniounts for the allowance of witnesses are inserted. Although in ordinary cases there is a nominal '' prosecutor" (the person who has been wounded or lost his property), if he enters . into a recognizance before the magistrate, he leaves everything to the police, who have to inform him even when and where he must

-attend for the trial, and the police are required in many cases to

give the necessary instructions for the indictment; and, when the proper time arrives for the trial at the sessions or assizes (of which public notice is given), the police must inforin the witnesses and arrange for their conveyance and prompt attendance in the precincts of the court, first before the grand jury, afterwards on the trial. A police officer must attend the taxing officer, give the necessary particulars as to the witnesses, and see that they receive their allowauccs.

The responsibilities and duties of the police may be varied, but on the whole are scarcely diminished, if there is a solicitor for a private or for the public prosecutor; the Act of 1884 relating to the public prosecutor regards the police as essential parties, and it is certain that no general system of prosccution can be carried on with diminished police intervention.

The duties of police to accused persons are too important to be passed over in complete silence. ‘To say that they involve perfect fairness ought to be a sufficient guide, but it is right to add that the indirect as well as the direct extortion of statements, either by threat or promise, is forbidden. On the other hand to caution accused persons is not the province of the police; as on the one hand a police officer onght not in gencral to put questions, so on the other hand he ought not to prevent voluntary statements. – His general duty is to listen, and to remember accurately what the accused says. It is often the duty of an officer to give informa- tion to the accused, as for instance of the nature of the charge on which he is arrested or to read the warrant; but information of this kind should not be given interrogatively. It sometimes happens,

Relation to refor- matories.

Execution of process.

. POLIC EH

however, that in the course of inquiries a person makes a criminatory statement to a police officer, in consequence of which it is the duty of the officer to arrest him. ‘This is distinct from questioning a person whom the officer has not merely suspected but predetermined to arrest. :

Some other duties, the growth of modcrn times and unknown until recently, devolve on the police in relation to criminals. They arise from the release of offenders sentenced to penal servitude before the expiration of the period, on certain conditions, or of offenders sentenced, after the expiration of their scntence of imprisonment, to’ be under police supervision for a given period. Both classes of convicts involve the performance by the- police of very responsible duties in reference to reporting and giving notice of changes of residence, so as to make the watch and supervision a real thing,

and at the same time to give the convicts the oppor- tunity, as intended, of gaining an honest livelihood at some labour or calling. It is a frequent source of complaint by. the convicts that they are so watched that they cannot obtain employment, and are driven into the repetition of crime,—the police retorting that the allegations are untrue, and that the fresh offencc is the result of the habitual offender's incurable love for crime. Any constable in

any police district may, if authorized so to do (in writing) by the'

chief officer of police of that district, without warrant take into custody any:convict who is the holder of a licence if it appears to such constable that such convict is getting his livelihood by dis- honest means, and may bring him before a court of summary juris- dictions The systein of ''reporting" is itself a branch of police administration of great importance, and requiring considerable knowledge. Its headquarters may be said to be in the metropolis and under the supcrintendence of the police of that district, but it involves constant communication with otlier districts and observa- tion throughout the kingdom.

The extent of police duty in respect of such offenders is shown by the fact that, according to the last published return, there were in England and Wales 1268 convicts on licence and persons under sentence of supervision.

The police are in general the instruments for carrying out thie statutory provisions respecting certified industrial schools and reformatories. Not only is the process for the most part directed to the police, but magistrates and others interested look to the force for suggestions and assistauce. In some respects it would be desir- able if industrial schools, as distinguished from reformatories, could he worked without the intervention of police agency, but that seems impracticable.

An important police function relates to the execution of process, aud is not confined to subjects or cases in which the force is collec- tively or individually concerned in the performance of their duty. Whether the process is a warrant or a summons, its execution or service is in the hands of the police. Magisterial warrauts of appre- hension and search are by law, in other than exccptional cases, necessarily directed to the police as peace

officers, whether their purport be to bring the person before the tribunal or to convey him from it or from one place to another ; and in other warrauts of exccution, although parochial officers are often joined, police are also included to prevent abuses of the law to which the poor are so much exposed. Police officers are now expressly required to have the direction of warrants of distress. The service of a magisterial summons, although not in general prescribed to be effected by a police officer, in practice properly devolves on the force. In the inctropolitan police district all police service must be by its officers. In a great variety of matters whicre notice has to be given to per- sons, the duty of communicating it either verbally or in writing or in print is thrown on the police. So convenient a medium for the orderly administration of purely civil matters are the police found that, at the request of the local government board, the police are allowed to deliver and collect voting papers in the election of parochial officers. 5

The increased area over which a police constable as compared with the old parish constable has jurisdiction facilitates both arrests and service of process. Although stationed within a defined area of limited jurisdiction, the duties of the force often involve the opera- tion of functions without geographical limits, requiring the actual presence of its members outside as well as the performance within the district of much that relates to the exterior.

The service of proccss calls for constant communication between different police forces. The law provides for the backing of warrants, by which a constable can act beyond his ordinary jurisdiction or by which the warrants can be transmitted. A magisterial summons for appearance does not require formal transmission. It is addressed not to the police but to the defendant, and can be served by an officer of any district ; but, as until recently the proof of service could only be given by the personal attendance of the serving officer at the magistrate’s court, great expense was incurred in travelling to effect service, and inconvenience in attend- ing to prove it. This has been remedied in most cases by allowing service to be proved by a declaration before a magistrate.

The transmission of process, declarations of service, payment of

30D fecs, and many other incidents arising in apparently the most simple cases now involve constant communication between police forces by whatever distance they may be separated.

A few lines must suffice on the general duties of the police force in relation to a variety of other matters. Some of these are closcly

Miscel- laneous

connected witli crime, others with municipal regulations only. The duties.

police, as having all the duties of constables, act as coroner’s officers; they niake minute inquiries as to suicides, accidents of every kind, insane persons and their apprehension, and deal with destitute persons and persons seized with sudden illness in the streets, and with vagrants.

In populous districts the adjustment of street traffic, of securing Street

the comfort as well as safety of persons in passing to. and fro, whether on foot or otherwise, forms a very important.brancli of the constable’s duty. This may be and often is effected by the mere presence of the constable passing on his round without greater exercise of his authority than a request to persons to move or to wait at crossings. Unless in crowded parts, this highway branch of duty may consist in preventing riding and driving furiously, or cn footpaths. The general or local laws of each district give ample scope for the exercise of the police constable’s authority and the performance of his duties in such matters, including obstructions of all kinds.

In the metropolitan police district the commissioner has large powers, including the power to prescribe special limits in the metropolis within which some acts affecting the general easc and freedom of the public are forbidden which are innocent elsewhere.

traffic.

On the police almost invariably devolve the licensing of public Public carriages and the enforcement of the great variety of regulations carriages.

respecting them. Inthe metropolitan police district the licensing of public carriages is vested in the secrctary of state, who makes numerous regulations respecting the carriages and their drivers and proprictors, and gives (under power vested in him by the legislature for that purpose) the administration of this important branch of the law to the commissioner of police. Elsewhere in England and Wales the administration of the law in relation to hackney carriages is in the hands of local authorities. The police have charge of the maintenance of good order in houses and places licensed for the sale of intoxicating liquors, including inquiries and notice as to all kinds of licences, renewals, aud transfers, and of course in- volving the conduct of numerous persons, not only of the licensed persons and those in their service, but of persons frequenting their houses, not excepting the members of the police force.

Licensed preinises.

The laws and regulations for common lodging-houses in the Regulated

metropolis are under the police. : constant vigilance, including pawnbrokers, marine-store dealers, pedlars, and chimney-sweepers. :

Among almost an infinity of offences may be enumerated those involving cruelty to animals, prize tights so called, and all descrip- tions of unlawful brawls (including brawling in places of public worship), gaming, gambling, and betting, lotteries, disorderly houses, dangerous performances, the infraction of fence months and seasons for Hine and fish, the fraudulent removal of goods, violations of cattle plague orders (which the police are expressly required to observe and enforce, involving of late years most arduous duties), and the sale of unwholesome food and of poisons. The police have also to deal with the care and keeping of explosive substances, animals straying, and dogs reasonably suspected to be mad or not under proper care. ;

Some public offences, such as the use of inaccurate weiglits, adul- teration of articles of food, &c., are generally dealt with by in- spectors aud other spccial officers, although it is undoubtedly the duty of the police to aid in enforcing the law, and to report to the proper quarter offences coming to

their knowledge. In the inetro- polis, smoke nuisances are dealt with as police offences.

The police aid the inland revenue in a variety of ways, and, although it is generally undesirable for the police to take part in the collection or enforcement of taxation, they are required in the metropolitan district, by order of the secretary of state, to enforce as far as lies in their power the payment of the dog tax, their other duties giving them greater knowledge on the subject. :

In visiting places of amusement the police are often performing duties of a multifarious character. In general the one object is the maintenance of good order, but sometimes the observation extends to the character of the amusement and the infringement of licences.

Apart from the special duties as to the restoration of property left or lost in public carriages, or with reference to prisoners pro- perty, for which there are special provisions, the police exercise a reasonable rather than a specially assigned duty in facilitating the recovery of lost and stray property by the rightful owners. —

A very few words niust suffice for notice of a subject which has been a vexed question before as well as since the establishment of a police force in the country, and down to the present moment— the action of police powers as to street prostitutes. Practically this action has nearly the same limits throughout England and Wales. In the metropolitan police district and in the City of London it is an offence for a common prostitute or night-walker to

Other traders exercise their trades.

Offences.

Dog-tax.

Places of amuse- ment.

Lost pro- perty.

Prosti- tutes,

Area of action,

Strength of police foree.

loiter or to be in a public place for the purpose of prostitution or solicitation to the annoyance of the inhabitants or passengers. Elsewhere the offence is in much the same terms included in the Police of Towns' Clauses' Act, 1847, and is so applied to all urban authorities under the Public Health Act, 1875. In the practical application of the law it is generally considered that there must be some evidence of a personal annoyance by and to one or more persous to justify a conviction.

The preceding survey of some of the multifarious func- tions of a police force affords an illustration of Bentham's classification of the business of police into distinct branches :—police for the prevention of offences; police for the prevention of calamities ; police for the prevention of endemic diseases; police of charity; police of interior communications ; police of public amusements ; police for recent intelligence and information. No attempt, how- ever, is made in the present article to follow such classifica- tion. It would lead the reader astray, where the object is to treat principally of the police force.

As to the defined area of police action, for general purposes the legal rights and powers of a police force (subject to the observations already made) are coextensive with the police district. In the metropolitan police dis- trict the members of the force have the powers of con- stables in the adjoining counties (10 Geo. IV. c. 44, § 4; 2 & 3 Vict. c. 47, § 5).

The determination of the geographical area of a police district is necessarily governed by a variety of circum- stances. Physical features have sometimes to be taken into account as affecting the demarcations of intercourse, nore frequently the occupations of the people and the amount of the population. A district may be too confined or too large for police purposes. The limited ideas of simple-minded rustics of a former generation whose views of

complete independence consisted in inhabiting two adjacent rooms in different parishes, so as to effectually baffle the visits of parochial officers, is probably a notion of the past; but obstructions of a like kind may arise from too narrow boundaries. On the other hand dense popula- tions or long-accustomed limits may outweigh convenience arising from a wide area.

In any case the making of altogether new boundaries merely for police purposes is very undesirable. The county, or divisions of a county or city, or the combination of parishes, ought to be and are sufficient for determining the boundaries of a police district. A boundary, more- over, that does not admit of ready application for rating is impracticable.

In England, Wales, and Scotland, with the exception of the metropolitan police district and the area of the City of London (geographically included within but distinct from it in police government), the police districts are for the most part identical in area with the counties. Large towns have police forces distinct from the county force surrounding them. There are 290 police forces in the island,—a number liable to frequent variation, as separate forces are created or existing forces are combined, for which powers exist.

By far the largest and most important force, as regards the char- acter of both area and numbers, is that of the metropolitan police district, comprising 20 divisions. The total number of the police (including of course the county constabulary) for England and Wales for the year ending 29th September 1883 was 34,488, an Increasc on the previous year of 1315. During the last decade the increase in the total number of the police, allowing for the aug- mented population, is trifling.

The following are the numbers composing the different forces in

“1882-83 :—

In boroughs under the Municipal Corporation Act and under local Acts

BCU B calves a digs v «om eae elaus a Teale Eva home nee eee ae 9,685 In COUUMIIOS “ss ccaysnc a cgegtaeeera dn Rk anaes ite IIL Asya)

Metropolitan police constables, including royal dockyards.. 12,663 Ory Ol Longo . 2….0..000 oe 885

i: 2: CBO OPRPR ret coy 34,488

The total gives one constable for every 774 of the population, according to the census of 1881. In boroughs, &c., there is 1 for

POLICE

every 758; in counties 1 for 1231; in the metropolitan police district (deducting 807, the number employed in royal dockyards, and 446 paid for by public companies and private individuals) 1 for every 413; and in the City of London 1 for every 57 of the City population, as enumerated on the night of the census of 1881. The total number, exclusive of the commissioner and assistant commissioners, belonging to the metropolitan police force on the lst January 1884 was 12,404,—comprising 10,741 constables, 1028 sergeants, 608 inspectors, 24 divisional superintendents, 1 chief superintendent (of the criminal investigation department), and 2 district superintendents.

The strength of the police force in proportion to population varies cousiderably in each county of Scotland, ranging for the year ended 15th March 1884 from 1 in 731 in Selkirk to 1 in 2438 in Bantf. In burghs it varies from 1 in 582 in Edinburgh and 1 in 535 in Glasgow to only 1 in upwards of 1500 of the population in the smallest burghs.

The strength of the royal Irish constabulary on the 1st July 1882, the geographical area of which comprises all Ireland, con- sisted of 258 officers and 13,750 men, and it was subsequently increased to 14,601 of all ranks.

The equal distribution of the force throughout a district— not a uniform distribution either as to area or population, but equal in accordance with wants—is one of the greatest difficulties in the administration of a police force. It is not merely that recruits must be sought for to keep pace with increase or variations of population, but daily and hourly events necessitate daily and hourly changes of dis- tribution. The duty is not merely to draw off men from adjacent divisions to the spot for a few hours, where they can

be best spared, but to fill places where required. It must be remembered that extra work by day incapacitates men for the night watch, and it takes days to restore the equilibrium. It is needless to say that, although the services of the police force may not be required to aid in the extinction of a fire, their presence is required in great numbers to preserve order; and thus men are necessarily kept on duty beyond their prescribed hours. Nor, in many of these cases, whether foreseen or unforeseen, is the distribution of the force self-adjusting. Let all do what they may in aid through all ranks of the force, in- equalities must occur ; and before the gaps are made up a fresh displacement occurs. Much may be done and is done by a system of reserves, and by averaging the yearly extra calls on the time of a force; but after all there is no perfect equality. The peacefully slumbering citizen may be startled by the announcement that, although the force of the metropolitan police district has been under anxious management for upwards of half a century, on no two nights since its formation have the beats been patrolled to precisely the same extent.

The police system of necessity involves the existence in a district of police stations or lock-ups, for the temporary detention of prisoncrs; and magistrates have generally the power to remand prisoners to these for short periods. Power to make police stations occasional courts of sum- mary jurisdiction has been recently conferred on county magistrates. A police power of admitting arrested persons to bail in petty cases, with a corresponding duty to exercise the power, is vested in the police in authority at stations. This power has existed throughout the metropolitan police district from the first establishment of the police on its present footing, and also in the City of London and in many populous places under local Acts; and the principle has been recently extended to the country.

The selection of persons for the force is a matter subject to general as well as special regulations, varying in each district according to circumstances of place and time. Testimonials as to character and antecedents should be and are in practice always required. For health a medical examination is enforced; as to general education, reading and writing are usually required; special education for police duties is necessarily unattainable before entry, but in the metropolitan police force of England approved

Distribu- | tion.

Stations.

Quali-

fications for ser-

vice.

Disci- pline.

Detec- tives.

roe hy CF

candidates are admitted on probation, and drilled. When finally approved of, on admission to the force they make a declaration, as already stated, to duly serve.

Discipline is enforced by dismissal, reprimand, fines, removal to another division, or degradation in rank. Violation or neglect of duty may be punished by summary conviction.

For the detection of crime and offences it is obviously necessary that some members of the force should perform their duties out of uniform. Some are constantly employed as detectives, others doff their official dress on emergencies. In the English metropolis the detective officers form a distinct branch of the police service, called the criminal investigation department. One of the assistant commis- sioners of the metropolitan police attends specially to this

- department, to which a chief superintendent and a separate

Chief Officers,

) Orders.

Main- | tenance,

staff of inspectors and sergeants are attached, having an office in Scotland Yard, with officers of the department placed in the divisions of the district. The qualifications of the principal officers are special, and they are selected for their aptitude, knowledge of foreign languages, and a variety of circumstances rendering the application of the ordinary routine of training undesirable and imprac- ticable. Constables and sergeants of the department are selected from the general body of the force. Officers of the detective department of the metropolis in the per- formance of their various duties travel all over the globe, to foreign states as well as to the colonies. The number of detective officers in England and Wales for 1882-83 was 551.

The chiefs of the metropolitan police force are the com- missioner and three assistant commissioners, one acting in place of a director of criminal investigations, who has recently retired. A legal adviser to the commissioners is appointed by the secretary of state. Besides the divisional superintendents, there are now two district superintendents, who visit the whole of the divisions. All promotions in the service up to the rank of superintend- ent are made from the next rank below. When vacancies occur the rule is to recommend to the commissioner those best qualified in all respects, seniority of service being duly considered ; but an educational examination by the civil service commissioners is requisite. A different standard and subject of examination is provided for each rank :— (1) constables for sergeants ; (2) sergeants for inspectors ; (3) inspectors for superintendents.

Orders having the approval of the secretary of state tor the government of the police of the metropolis in a variety of matters are printed and issued daily throughout the district. The majority of these orders relate to incidents and contingencies of the passing hour, and affect particular divisions ; others are of a permanent character and require attention throughout the district. Such orders form the practice of the police in almost all matters of detail either not specifically regulated by Act of Parliament or requiring explanation and elucidation ; and, if they are carefully considered and prepared, their issue must produce a uniform code of police procedure for the force.

The cost of a police system is defrayed from a fund formed by local rates or by imperial funds, or both, and in part by the appropriation of fines and the fees payable by law in respect of the performance of individual duties, but not permitted to be retained by the performer. This fund is collected and expended through the medium of a receiver, treasurer, or other officer, and a staff of clerks, with the aid of the superintendents, inspectors, and police officers. The regulation and amount of the salaries (which are generally paid weekly or monthly according to the class), depend of course on local and other circumstances, but do not vary frequently. Where agriculture is the

oo7 general occupation the pay of members of the force is low. Where mining and manufactures compete with agri- culture it is higher; where they are the principal business they create a demand for labour which raises the salary of the constable as well as those of other workers. The pay of the constables of the metropolitan district varies from £62, 11s. 6d. to £83, 8s. 7d. per annum, that of the sergeants from £88, 12s. 11d. to £146, of the inspectors from £88, 12s. 11d. to £351, 19s. 4d. The metropolitan police constable is subject to deductions for pension, and

he contributes on the average about 2d. a week to gratul-

ties for the widows or orphans of comrades who have recently died, and is under a rent of about 3s. 6d. if single and living out of the section house, and about 6s. 6d. a week if married. Analogous conditions exist in all the great city forces. The Liverpool constable begins with 26s. 8d. a week ; 8d. a week is deducted at first, and 10d. after a short period, towards pension fund ; an average of 4s. a week is spent on the lodgings of a single, and from 5s. 6d. to 7s. 6d. on those of a married man. Model scales of pay which were suggested by the secretary of state in 1879 have been adopted by several county forces in Scotland, but not in burghs.

In addition to fixed salaries, the police system generally Rewards.

provides for rewards for extraordinary diligence and gratuities out of the police fund. Gifts or payments to individual officers by private persons ought to be con- trolled in a well-regulated system, where good conduct and vigilance ought to be closely watched to ensure pro- motion in due time.

Specially meritorious acts, however, are sometimes admitted for pecuniary recognition by magistrates, or representative bodies. In England the police are not now permitted to participate in Government or other rewards for the discovery of crime. Provision is almost invariably made for pensions by a fund formed by a scale of deductions from pay, as already stated, and to some extent by fines. The general subject of super- annuation is, however, too large to be entered upon here. For the ordinary services of the police within their local jurisdiction no charge should fall on particular persons who happen to derive special advantage from such police duty. It is a general benefit for which in one form or

_ another the inhabitants are taxed. Other incidental expenditure in the performance of Incidental The heavy cost connected expenses.

duties is met in various ways. with the conveyance of prisoners to and from prison on committal and remand is in England, except in Middlesex, borne by the state, being paid by the prison commissioners. The preliminary cost attending the arrest in the first instance is generally borne by the police fund. In some exceptional cases where the police perform special duties beyond their district, the cost is thrown on individuals putting the lawin motion. ‘Thus the costs incurred under extradition treaties and under the Fugitive Offenders’ Act in following criminals and bringing them back within the jurisdiction for trial where the offence was committed or arose are not expressly provided for by statute ; but the regulations laid down by the secretary of state require all costs to be paid by applicants in the case of fugitive offenders.

The police have special powers in furtherance of their Special duties ; even the exemption from toll (not now of general powers.

value) has that aspect. ‘They are not only exempted but disqualified from various local offices as interfering with the time and attention required for the full performance of their duties. Rules of the service generally forbid con- stables following any trade or occupation of profit even when not on actual duty, and in the metropolitan police district of London this disqualification extends in practice to their wives. The police are protected in the discharge of XIX — 43

Uniform.

Arms.

Yearly cost.

338

their duties in a variety of ways. Assaulting, resisting, or wilfully obstructing a peace officer in the due execu- tion of his duty or any person acting in aid of such officer, and assaults with intent to resist or prevent lawful apprehension or detainer, are punishable summarily as well as upon indictment. Refusing to assist a constable in the execution of his duty in order to preserve the peace is an indictable misdemeanour at common law. The law specially provides for offences by the police in stealing or embezzling property entrusted to them in virtue of their employment (24 & 25 Vict. c. 96, §§ 69,

70).

Nearing a distinctive dress or uniform in the general performance of duty isa matter of the highest import- ance. Itcommands and has a very great effect in produc- ing obedience and conformity to law and order, and in preventing violence, without the use of even a word or threat ; and it has a scarcely less important effect in pro- tecting the public from the illegal or irregular action of the police when on duty, when the dress involves, as it ordinarily does, the exhibition on its exterior of a letter and number.

The extent to which the individual members of a police force are allowed or required to be armed when on duty for the enforcement of the law or for their own protection from violence is a matter of important discretion ; for, although the principles of law, entailing or withholding the right of peace officers or private persons to employ weapons of offence, are comparatively well-defined, the emergency depends on a variety of circumstances on which it is extremely difficult for heads of forces to make regula- tions for the guidance of the men. In general the only weapon carried about the person of a police constable is the familiar wooden staff of office of the

peace officer, and that not in the hands openly, but in a sheath at his side and only drawn when required.

The cost of the police in England and Wales for the year ending 29th September 1883, including salaries and pay, allowances, clothing and accoutrements, horses, harness, forage, buildings, station-house charges, printing, station- ery, and other miscellaneous charges was £3,367,678, a net increase of £107,598 as compared with the previous year. The cost of the separate forces for the year and amounts contributed from the public revenue stand thus :—

Total Changes: | ‘Diptic evento: POU INMOHCO occ ssesrescowenevcees £857,863 £379,210 wun ae ee eee eee eee 1,101,621 435,133 Metropolitan police (including naval dockyards and military 1,317,303 508,183 SBATIGMS) Os ss ieres ccs eneeeeee ssn ss City Gt LORAOM Ee 5.0.0.0 nansesecieeses 90,891 Melsbalsiaaioeietnseeeencles £3,367,678 £1, 322,526

Deducting the City of London police, towards which no contribution is paid from the public revenue, the propor- tion of the amount so contributed was 39°5. But if the total charge for the metropolitan police is reduced by £131,560 received from public departments for special services rendered by the police, the proportion contributed from the public revenue, computed upon £1,185,743, was 42°8 percent. All moneys received for the service of the metropolitan police between 1st April 1883 and the 31st

total the sum of £639,751, 7s. 4d. was derived from the from moneys voted by parliament of 4d. per £1 upon

£30,663,903, the assessed rental of property in the metro- politan police district. The pay, clothing, and equip-

PO Lt oO”!

ments of the force from constables to superintendents was £1,024,587, 13s. 9d.

In concluding this general account of the existing police system, it is well to mention that the old system of parish constables no longer exists as a general institution. As an auxiliary force, although not forming part of the establishment of a police system, special constables form an important resource in the preservation of the peace (see CONSTABLE).

History of the Introduction of the British Police System. History of British.

—It is a self-evident proposition that the duties of watch and ward, whether under the Statute of Winchester or otherwise (see CoNsTABLE), demanded greater attention in populous places than in scattered hamlets. Nevertheless the inefficiency of the arrangements was notorious from an early period, and is well illustrated by the “charge” of a Dogberry and the graver complaints of Lord Burleigh of the dulness of constables. In relation to London alone its state down to 1828 forms a subject not without general interest (see Lonpon). Here it must suffice to say that committees of the House of Commons in 1772, 1793, 1812, 1817, 1818, and 1822 produced facts tending to the formation, but with hesitation, of a police establishment. To Dr Colquhoun, a magistrate, the chief merit is due of having, before the close of the 18th century, in a treatise On the Police of the Metropolis, drawn attention to the subject. He pointed out that police in England may be considered as a new science, the properties of

police

syste

which consist, not in the judicial powers which lead to-

punishment, and which belong to magistrates alone, but in the prevention and detection of crimes, and in those other functions which relate to internal regulations for the well-ordering and comfort of civil society. His work went through several editions in a very brief period. It was not, however, until 1828 that a committee of the House of Commons, appointed at the instance of Mr (afterwards Sir Robert) Peel, the home secretary, to inquire into the cause of the increase in the number of commitments and convictions in London and Middlesex, and into the state of the police of the metropolis and of the districts adjoining, re- ported that a decisivechange

should be made, and an efficient system of police instituted for the adequate protection of property, and for the prevention and detection of crime in the metropolis. In the following year the famous Act for improving the police in and near the metropolis was passed (10 Geo. IV. c. 44).

The Act constituted a police district, excluding the City of London, with a radius of 12 miles. Two persons were constituted justices of the peace (afterwards called com- missioners of police) to administer the Act under the immediate direction of a secretary of state, and having a police office in Westminster. This office, established in a room with a table and two chairs, in an outlet from Whitehall, is the origin (as regards police associations) of the far-famed “ Scotland Yard,” with its now enlarged staff, but still inadequate structural arrangements.

‘and sections, and ranks established on the same general

March 1884 amounted to £1,469,930, 4s. 5d. Of this system as at present exists.

: _pally by rates on the district for the maintenance of the metropolitan police rate, and £510,933 as the contribution —

A fund was created princi-

force, with rewards for extraordinary diligence and com- pensation for injuries.

As might have been anticipated, the introduction of the new system of police attracted great public attention. At

mM.

mover Fe ws 339

this distance of time, with the experience of an intervening half century, it is difficult to believe that the change by which the police system became in a few years as much a necessity of towns as their public lighting (and lighting and watching were of much the same age and character, and were

frequently coupled in legislation) was regarded otherwise than with the approval of well-regulated minds. It substituted the vigorous action of a really responsible and well-regulated body, acting in an enlarged area, and independently of parochial authorities, for the partial and lax action of a variety of ill-governed and inadequate bodies. Legitimate but passing regrets might be natural as the introduction of vicarious action superseded the necessity for self help and responsibility. No poet could thereafter compose, as a sally of fancy, the adventures of a London citizen between Cheapside and Edmonton mounted on a runaway horse with associated gentlemen galloping after a presumed horsestealer. To arrest the horse, whether a runaway or stolen, only a blue-coated policeman would thenceforward be seen on the track. The objections raised to the new police were of a more serious although scarcely of a more substantial kind. The assumption that a good police could only be attained at the expense of liberty, and that it necessarily involved some arbitrary principle opposed to the free constitution of the country, had been countenanced even by the report of the committee of 1822, in which it was remarked that it was difficult to reconcile an effective system of police with that perfect freedom of action and exemption from interference which are the great privileges and blessings of society in the country. With such sedate misgivings, it is not to be wondered at, when the system was actually introduced a few years later, that cries arose in the streets of “down with the new police,” and that the constables were fre- quently followed by hooting crowds calling them obnoxious names. By associating them with the statesman who introduced the measure, and calling them “ Peelers” and ‘“‘Bobbies,” names perpetuated to the present day and apparently likely to last, a compliment was really paid to the minister and to the force. But at that time Peel was attacked in parliament and suspicion thrown on the Act because the same minister had introduced Roman Catholic emancipation.

Within four years of the establishment of the police force the hostility seems to have culminated. It was evinced by the result of a collision between the police and a meeting of Chartists in Coldbath Fields in May 1853, in which three police officers were stabbed and one killed with a dagger. At the inquest the coroner’s jury returned a verdict of “justifiable homicide,” in the teeth of the evidence. ‘The crown thereupon adopted the strong but justifiable course of applying to the Court of King’s Bench, and

the inquisition was quashed. Committees were appointed by the House of Commons to inquire into the circumstances of the meeting, and also regarding an allegation of inhabitants of the Surrey side that policemen were employed as spies, and a third conmmittee was appointed to inquire into the state of the police and crime in the district. The police system and the force as a whole came out with credit, notwithstanding individual instances of undue exercise of power calling for greater control.

There was no hesitation as to the duty of maintaining the principle of the new system, and the popular hostility gradually died away. After intermediate parliamentary reports and legislation by way of extension, an important Act was passed in 1839, reciting that the system of police established had been found very efficient and might be yet further improved (2 & 3 Vict. c. 47). The metropolitan police district was extended to 15 miles from Charing Cross. The whole of the River Thames (which had been

in its course through London, so far as related to police matters, managed under distinct Acts) was brought within it, and the collateral but not exclusive powers of the metropolitan police were extended to the royal palaces and 10 miles around, and to the counties adjacent to the dis- trict. Various summary powers for dealing with street and other offences were conferred.

At the same time that the police were put on a more complete footing and the area enlarged, provision was made for the more effectual administration of justice by the magistrates of the metropolis (2 & 3 Vict. c.71). The changes that occurred in magisterial functions are scarcely less remarkable than the transition from the parish con- stable to the organized police. The misdirected activity of the civil magistrate in the 17th century is illustrated by the familiar literature of Butler, Bunyan, and others. The zeal of that age was succeeded by apathetic reaction, and it became necessary in the metropolis to secure the services of paid justices. The malpractices of the so-called “ trad- ing justices” of the 18th century are described and exposed for all time by Fielding, who honourably per- formed the duties of justice of the peace for Middlesex and Westminster. At the beginning of the 19th century outside of the City of London (where magisterial duties were, as now, performed by the lord mayor and aldermen) there were various public

offices besides the Bow Street and the Thames police offices, where magistrates attended. To the Bow Street office was subsequently attached the “horse patrol,” and each of the police offices had a fixed number of constables attached to it, and the Thames police had an establishment of constables and surveyors. The horse patrol was in 1836, as previously intended, placed under the new police. It became desirable that the horse patrol and constables allotted to the several police offices not interfered with by the Act of 1828 should be incor- porated with the metropolitan police force. This was effected, and thus magisterial functions were completely separated from the duties of the executive police; for, although the jurisdiction of the two justices, afterwards called commissioners, as magistrates extended to ordinary duties (except at courts of general or quarter sessions), from the first they did not take any part in the examination or committal for trial of persons charged with offences. No persons were brought before them. Their functions were in practice confined to the discipline of the force and the prevention and detection of offences, by having persons arrested or summoned to be dealt with by the ordinary magistrates whose courts were not interfered with.

Important alterations have been made since 1839 in the arrangements affecting the metropolitan police. In 1856 one commissioner and two assistant commissioners were sub- stituted for two commissioners, and a third assistant com- missioner has now (1884) been added. In 1866 jurisdic- tion was given to the metropolitan police in the royal naval dock yards and principal military stations of the war department in England and Wales, and within 15 miles, with the restriction that the powers and privileges of the constables of the metropolitan police when without the yards, naval and marine hospitals and infirmaries, and marine barracks or stations, and not on board or in any ship, vessel, or boat belonging to the queen or in her service, shall only be used in respect of the property of the crown or of persons subject to naval or marine or military discipline (23 & 24 Vict. c. 135).

Under this Act the metropolitan police exercise jurisdic- tion and perform duties extending from Chatham on the east and Dover and Portsmouth on the south to Devonport, Portsmouth, and Pembroke on the west, and of

course including Aldershot. The expenses incurred are defrayed by parliament.

Connected with the last-mentioned Act, and in conse- quence of it, has been the exercise for eighteen years by the metropolitan police of the powers of the Contagious Diseases Act, 1866, and the medical examination of women under it,—a much debated and warmly contested power. The réfusal in 1883 by the House of Commons to provide money for the expenses of the Act led to the discontinu- ance of action by the metropolitan police under it.

The Metropolitan Streets Act, 1867, for regulating the traffic in the metropolis, and for making provision for the greater security of persons passing through the streets and for other purposes, gives great discretionary power to the commissioner of police whether of the metropolis or of the City of London, in relation to prescribing special limits, with the approval of a secretary of state, within which regulations to prevent obstructions in the streets (without interfering with other powers) may be made and enforced. Apart from the special limits, general regulations are pre- scribed as to hackney carriages, stray dogs, and various other matters.

As already observed, the Acts noticed as to the metro- politan police district did not apply to the City of London, which was and is left as an island surrounded by the metropolis. The nightly watch and “ bedels” within the City were regulated, and rates imposed for the purpose, in the reign of George II. In 1839, on the same day that the Act of Parliament passed with respect to the metro- politan police, a corresponding Act was passed for the City of London and a salaried commissioner of the police for the City and its liberties appointed by the common council. The power to make regulations relative to the general government of the police is vested in the commissioner, subject to the approbation of the mayor and aldermen and a secretary of state. In case of emergency the secretary of state may, at the request of the lord mayor, authorize the metropolitan police to act within the City of London under the command of their own officers, and on the other hand the lord mayor inay, at the request of the secretary of state, in the like emergency, authorize the City police to act under their own officers within the metropolitan police district. The Act gives various special powers as to

offences cor- responding with the Metropolitan Police Act of 1839. It provides for a police rate, and the corporation is required to pay out of its revenues a fourth part of the expenses of the police force. No rated person is liable to any watch or ward by virtue of the Statute of Winchester (13 Edw. L.), and the ancient custom of electing ward constables is sus- pended.

In the article Lonpon (vol. xiii. p. 834) some statistics are given as to the police courts of the metropolis, and the state of crime and the proportion of police to the popula- tion under the last census.

In considering the introduction of the police system into the rest of England, it is to be borne in mind that in many towns and places an organized system of watching by paid officers, whether constables, watchmen, or police, was established by local Acts of Parliament, at various dates, but especially in the early part of the present century.

An attempt at a paid county force was made in 1829 (in the same year with the Metropolitan Police Act), but not on corresponding lines, by a local Act to enable the magistrates of the county palatine of Chester to appoint special high constables and assistant petty constables (10 Geo. IV. ¢. 97). In 1830, and again three years later, provision was made to facilitate voluntary lighting and watching parishes throughout England and Wales. In 1835 the regulation of municipal corporations included power (since renewed) to appoint, by a watch committee, constables called “ watchmen” paid by a watch rate. |

ICE

Great facilities having been given by the legislature for the appointment of special constables (an auxiliary else- where noticed), provision was made in 1839 for the appointment of county paid constables where the ordinary officers for preserving the peace were insufficient for that purpose and for the protection of the inhabitants and for the security of property within the county. The number recommended (not exceeding one man for every thousand of the inhabitants, after deducting corporate boroughs already provided for, a restriction in after years removed from the statute book) and the rates of payment were required to be reported to the secretary of state, who made and laid before parliament rules for the government, pay,

clothing, accoutrements, aud necessaries of such constables ; and thereupon the justices appointed, subject to the approval of the secretary of state, a chief constable, who had the appointment, control, and disposition (subject to the approval of the justices) of the other constables, and a deputy and superintendent to be at the head of the con- stakles in each division of the county. On these constables were conferred all the powers and duties of constables by the common law or statute.

At first the salaries and allowances and expenses of the Act were paid out of the county rate (2 & 3 Vict. c. 93), but in the following year (1840) the Act was amended and extended, and a separate policé rate levied in the county. Provision was at the same time made for a superannuation fund and for “station houses and strong rooms,” and for consolidating the police of a borough with the county ; and on the other hand, as the number of con- stables needed may be different in different parts of the same county, it might be divided into police districts, each district paying for its own constables. Power is given to the- chief constable to appoint (with the approval of the justices) additional constables at the cost of individuals, but subject to the orders of the chief constable.

In 1842 an important statute was passed enacting that for the future no appointment of a petty constable, head- borough, borsholder, tithing man, or peace officer of the like description should be made for any parish at any court leet, except for purposes unconnected with the pre- servation of the peace, and providing, as a means of increasing the security of persons and property, for the appoiutment by justices of the peace in divisional petty sessions of fit persons or their substitutes to act as con- stables in the several parishes of England, and giving vestries an optional power of providing paid constables. The justices in quarter sessions were empowered to provide lock-up houses for the confinement of persons .taken into custody by any constable and not yet committed for trial, or in execution of any sentence, or instead to appropriate for that purpose existing lock-up houses, strong rooms, or cages belonging to any parish (5 & 6 Vict. c. 109). Con- stables appointed under this Act were made subject to the authority of the chief constable or superintendent, if any, appointed under the Act of 1839.

Under the Acts of 1839 and 1840 the establishment of a paid county police force was optional with the justices. After a further interval of fifteen years it was found expedient, for the more effectual prevention and detection of crime, suppression of vagrancy, and maintenance of good order, that further provision should be made for securing an efficient police force throughout England and Wales, and the previous optional power became compulsory (the Police Act, 1856). In every county in which a con- stabulary had not been already established under the previous Acts for the whole of the county, the justices in quarter sessions were required to proceed to establish a sufficient police force for the whole of the county and to consolidate divisions so as to form one general county

Scotland.

Treland.

Peo ©

police establishment,—subject, however, to the power by the queen in council to require the justices to form separate police districts, as provided for in the earlier Acts, The privy council might arrange terms of consolidation of a borough police with the county,

In 1869 provision was made for the abolition of the old office of high constable (the High Constables Act, 1869); and, the establishment of an efficient police having also rendered the general appointment of parish constables unnecessary, the appointment ceased, subject to the appointment by vestries of paid constables who are subject to the chief constable of the county (the Parish Constables Act, 1872). Thus under combined provisions the police system was established and has since continued through- out England.

In Scotland legislation for a system of police began early in the century by local Acts for Edinburgh and Glasgow, some con-, taining provisions of great importance. The police of towns and populous places is now regulated chiefly by the General Police and Improvement (Scotland) Act, 1862, and the county police by an Act of 1857 (20 & 21 Vict. c. 72), under which

counties are formed into police districts. Some details of the government, numbers, and cost have been already given.

The police in Ireland comprises two forces, —the Dublin metro- politan police and the royal Irish constabulary. Dublin was in 1808 formed into a district called “the police district of Dublin metropolis ” (48 Geo, ITI. c. 140). After intermediate amendments in 1836, concurrently with the consolidation of police law for Ireland generally, the Dublin system was placed on the lines of Sir Robert Peel’s Act of 1829 for the metropolis of London,—the

chief secretary of the lord lieutenant standing in the place of the | secretary of state for the home department (6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 29); |

and six years later the systems were further assimilated (5 & 6 Vict. c. 22), Several alterations were made subsequently, and police courts regulated. The Dublin police is under the imme- diate direction of one commissioner and an assistant commis- sioner and the offices of receiver and secretary are consolidated. The royal lrish constabulary dates from 1836, when the laws re- lating to the constabulary force in Ireland were consolidated and a number of older Acts repealed (6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 13). This Act, although often amended, is the foundation of the existing police system in counties, towns, and baronies throughout Ireland except

Cc 341

sanction for doing what by practice they do in England: they take evidence for their own information and guidance in the investigation of cases, and are clothed with the power to compel the attendance of

| witnesses and question them. The smallness of the number of the

European magistrates and other circumstances make the police more important and relatively far more powerful in India than in England (Stephen). The difficulties in the way of ascertaihing the truth, and investigating false statements and suppressed cases, are very great,

As regards the rural police of India cvery village headman, and the village watchman as well as the village police officer, are required by the code to communicate to the nearest magistrate or the officer in charge of the nearest police station, whichever is nearest, any information respecting offenders.

Reports indicating an increase in the number of dacoities and crimes of violence since 1880, especially in Rajputana, Central India, and Hyderabad, are cited as proving the necessity for a system of detective police embracing the whole of India. A scheme for that purpose has been matured and will probably be carried out.

Taking Lower Bengal as an illustration of the existing system throughout India, the superior ranks of the police comprise an inspector general, deputies, district superintendents of different grades, assistant superintendents, and probationers. The subor- dinate officers consist of inspectors of four grades, sub-inspectors (who are in charge of police stations), head constables, and con- stables. The total budget grant for the year 1881-82 (the last examined) for the police department was 3,695,572 rupees, on a sanctioned strength of 78 superior officers, 3081 subordinate officers, and 14,588 constables, excluding the municipal police but including the civil police and frontier police of the Chittagong hill tracts and the railway police. The strength of the municipal police was 371 officers and 5702 constables. The cost of the force employed on purely police work was 2,154,600 rupees,—the cost per head of the total population being 6°2 pice. The proportion of police to popu- lation was in Bengal proper 1 to 3933. The number of offences reported during the year was 104,153. The percentage of reported cases not inquired into is under four.

In India generally, including Assam and British Burmah, the total regular police of all kinds in 1881 was 147,200. The cost was £2,324,786, of which £2,075,525 was payable from imperial or provincial revenues, and the remainder from other sources. The rural police are not paid by the state, but by village cesses.

In Bengal and the Punjab there are 14 policemen to cvery 100 square miles, and in the North-Western Provinces and Oudh 27. The ratio of these figures is explained partly by the greater density of population and partly by the frequency of crime.

The police force of the British empire, metropolitan, municipal, Total and rural together, is about 210,000. Of this total, 51,000 are in force of the United Kingdom and 147,000 in India, the remainder being British

in the Dublin metropolitan district. An inspector general, resident in Dublin and having an office there, and appointed by the lord lieutenant, has the general direction of the coustabulary, and with

the approbation of the lord lieutenant frames rules for their general government, classification, and distribution. In this way a uniform administration of police law prevails throughout Ireland without interfering with the Dublin metropolitan police. Under the inspector general there are a deputy inspector general and assistant inspectors general. The Irish constabulary is regarded asa semi-military force. Every man lives in barracks. It does not interfere with the Dublin metropolitan police, but a reserve force is established at a depét in Dublin. The strength and pay

in the colonies and dependencies. : number of village police in India who are legally recognized, whose number is not less than 350,000, the grand total of the police for the empire is 560,000. Thus we have for the whole empire an average of one policeman to every 571 of the people and to every 16 square miles (Sir Richard Temple).

The United States of America have a system of police closely United reseinbling that of England, and founded similarly on Acts of the States.

legislature combined with the common law applicable to peace

of the force have been already noticed. officers. Congress as well as the Statcs separately may establish British Police forces have been formed in all the British colonies, includ- | police regulations, and it is to be observed that the criminal law colonies. ing the Dominion of Canada, mainly on the lines

established in the | of England has been reproduced in various shapes in nearly all the mother country, having for their basis of action the common law | States. The source of revenue for the maintenance of the police is existing there. taxation of real and personal property. Every State and every city The early legislation for Sydney followed very closely the | in a State has its separate special administration. For the pur- metropolitan police Acts, and some of the existing Acts of the | poses of this article New York must suffice. The regulations of Australian colonies exhibit great skill, Colonial forces generally | the police of Brooklyn, Philadelphia, and other cities present the are swor to serve the qucen, and an Act of the colonial legis- | same general features. ; ; lature of New South Wales in 1853 made provision for the engage- The police department of the city of New York consists of a ment in Great Britain of persons to serve in the police force | ‘‘board of police” composed of four “comunissioncrs ” (appointed of New South Wales. The general features of the Australian | by the mayor with the consent of the board of aldermen) and the police comprisc a chief commissioner or other head for each colony | ‘‘ police force” and officers appointed by the board. The board, or district, appointed by the governor in council, with various grades | consisting of the commissioners, is the head of the police ed of officers as at home, some appointed by the governor and the rest | meut, and governs and controls its business; it 1s invested wit by the head of the police. The expense of the police establish- | and exercises all the powers conferred by law upon the police ments is borne by the colonial revenue (5 & 6 Vict. c. 76, § 46; | department, makes appointments, and by rules and regulations 13 & 14 Vict. c. 59, § 28). through a superintendent prescribes the general discipline of the British Nearly the whole of British India is divided into police districts, department. The orders cannot, however, conflict with the consti- India. the general arrangeinents of the system of the regular police re- | tution of the United States nor with the constitution or laws of the

sembling in most respects those of the English police, but differing in details in the different presidencies. All are in uniform, trained to the use of firearms, and drilled, and may be called upon to perform military duties. The superior officers are nearly all Europeans, and many of them are military officers. The rest are natives, in Bombay chiefly Mohammedans. The organization of the police was not dealt with by the criminal code

whicl: came into force in 1883, but the code is full of provisions tending to make the force efficient. By that code as well as by the former code the police have a legal

State of New York. ;

The police force of the city compriscs officers ranking as follows :— superintendent of the whole force, four inspectors (the whole area of the city being divided into four inspection districts, subdivided into precincts, with an inspector to each), sergeants, and roundsmen, who are visiting officers, —the body of the force being termed ‘‘patrol men,” with ‘‘overmen” at stations and prisons,

The force (clothed in uniform) is divided into as many companies as there are precincts, and such other companies and ‘‘squads” as

If to this total be added the empire.

o42

the board may order. The superintendent is the chief executive officer of the force, subject to the orders, rules, and regulations of the board, and it is his duty to enforce in the city all the laws of the State and ordinances of the city, and the rules and regulations of the police board. ‘The superintendent promulgates written or printed orders to the officers and members of the police force not inconsistent with law or the rules and regulations of the board. It is the duty of the police force at all times of the day and night within the city and county of New York, and they are accordingly empowered, to especially preserve the public peace ; prevent crime; detect and arrest offenders ; snppress riots and insurrections ; protect the rights of persons and of property ; guard the public health; preserve order at every primary and pub- lic election ; remove nuisances existing in public streets, roads, places, and highways ; repress and restrain disorderly houses and houses of ill-fame ; arrest all street beggars and mendicants ; pro- vide a proper police attendance at every fire in order that the fire- men, fire-engines, and property exposed may be suitably assisted or protected ; assist, advise, and protect immigrants, strangers, and travellers in public streets, or at steamboat and ship landings or railroad stations; enforce any law relating

to the suppression and punishment of crime, or to the observance of Sunday, or regarding pawnbrokers, or mock auctions, or emigration, or elections, or gambling, or intemperance, or lotteries, or lottery policies, or vagrants, or disorderly persons, or the public health, or auy ordi- nance or resolution of common councils, within the said district, applicable to police, health, or criminal procedure.

Special regulations are made on these and other kindred subjects, such as the regulation of traffic, preventing obstructions, the visita- tion of places of amusement, public houses and drinking places, observation of servants in charge of houses, and of suspicious persons, lost children, ‘ree balls and partics, elections, &c., and the attendance of an adequate number of police at every assembly of citizens.

The arrest of persons with or without process does not call for special notice as distinguished from the common law and statute law in England, and the practice as to the entry of charges and taking bail by the police is akin to the practice in the English metropolis, but the rules are somewhat stricter. A squad is organized for the sole purpose and duty of serving criminal process. Persons making complaint of a felony or misdemeanour may be required to make affirmation or oath which the police officers have power to administcr. Charges against police, whether by members of the force or citizens, are made and dealt with under strict rules, and are tried upon written charges by one or more of the commis- sioners in power, a committee dismissing charges or directing their trial. Evidence is taken upon oath, and if the case is heard by less than three commissioners no judgment can be acted on uutil the wit- ness is brought before and examined by all the commissioners. The board draws, by its president, on the treasurer of the city for the cost of arrest and conviction of criminals and others endangering the safety of the community and procuring information the use of which may prevent crime and enable the department to perform its import- ant duties more successfully and with greater satisfaction to the public. The sum so drawn is charged as a ‘‘secret service fund.” A place is provided in accordance with statute law for the detention of such witnesses as are unable to furnish security for their appear- ance in criminal proceedings.

The detective force, called the ‘‘ detective squad,” consists of a captain and other members assigned by the board to detective duty. This portion of the force has an office, as other portions of the police force, and is under the direct orders of the superintendent, to whom reports are made, and who in turn reports to the board. There is also a ‘‘special service squad” under the officer command- ing the detective force,

There is a sanitary code, and a ‘‘sanitary police company” is set apart from the police force by the board of police, performing duties assigned by the board. The captain of the sanitary company assigns policemen to act as school officers. There are harbour police, a police steamboat and steam-boiler inspection squad to enforce the statute law on the subject, an ‘‘ordinance police squad” to enforce ordinances of the corporation, and a “ property office.”

Members of the force are subject to rules; at the discretion of the board, on written application, they are permitted to receive rewards or presents for services rendered by them in the discharge of duties which are both ‘‘ meritorious and extraordinary,” but for such only.

_Admission to the force, examination, instruction, drill, and dis- cipline are provided for by special regulations. The right of every member of the police force to entertain political or partisan opinions, and to express the same freely when such expression shall not concern the immediate discharge of luis official duties, as well as the right of the elective franchise, is deemed sacred and inviol- able ; but no member of the force is permitted to be a delegate or representative to, or member of, or to take part in any political or partisan convention, whose purpose is the nomination of a candidate or candidates to any political office. Upon the days of election for public offices held under the laws of the State, he must do all

POLLOE

within his power to eit 3: the peace, protect the integrity of the ballot box, enforce the rights of lawful voters, and prevent illegal and fraudulent voting.

The estiniated salaries for the police of New York for 1884, com- prising upwards of 2816 members of the force of all ranks, amounted to $3,328,333, besides the salaries of the clerical force. The ap- propriations for the maintenance of the city government (including the police) are made by the board of estimate and apportionment, composed of the mayor, comptroller, president of the board of aldermen, and president of the departinent of taxes and assessments. Some police statistics are given in the article New York (q.v.).

Looked at from a general point of view, the police in France France.

may be regarded as divided into two great branches—administrative police (la police administrative) and judicial police (la police judi- ciaire),—the former having for its object the maintenance of order, and the latter charged with tracing out offenders, collecting the proofs, and delivering the presumed offenders to the tribunals charged by law with their trial and punishment.

Police duties are exercised under the minister of the interior, in the departinents and municipalities by the prefects and sub-prefects, appointed by the president of the republic, and mayors, having as auxiliarics the commissaries of police and other officers (appointed by the president, but under the orders of the prefects). One of the chief prerogatives of the administrative police is to make rules to ensure public order. Of these rules some embrace general interests of the statc, these being regulations of high or grand police ; others have no other object than the ruling of the particular district and its inhabitants, and are simply ternied police regulations. Accord- ing as it deals with the general interests of the state or only with those of a municipality, the administrative police is said to be general or municipal ; and each of these branches admits of other divisions according to the subject. The police généralc, besides more obvious matters, includes all matters relating to public health, the regulation of prostitution, the inspection of food, the carrying on of trades and manufactures; and in relation to thé welfare of the state it embraces public ineetings, banquets, societies and clubs, cafés aud public places, and the enforcement of laws relating to the pub- lication and distribution of printed or written matter, the sale of journals, the surveillance of strangers or fugitives, the system of

passports, the sale of gunpowder and firearms, designs against the state, aud a variety of such matters. In this way the police who look after the safety of the state is closely allied with political matters (la police politique). Under a government really represent- ing the popular will the duties of the police politique are trifling, or at least innocuous, but under a despotic government they become of the highest importance. It is matter of history which cannot be treated of here that under Louis XIV. and in succeeding times the most unpopular and unjustifiable use was made of police as a secret instrument for thepurposces of despoticgovernment. Napoleon availed himself largely of police instruments, especially through his minister Fouché. On the restoration of constitutional government under Louis Philippe police action was less dangerous, but the danger revived under the second empire.

The ministry of police created by the act of the Directory in 1796 was in 1818 suppressed as an independeut office, and in 1852it was united with the ministry of the interior.

The detection and punishment of crime is theoretically as well as practically regarded by the French as essentially a matter of public concern, and to be provided for by public officials appointed for that purpose, and on the other hand in every French criminal proceeding, from the most trifling to the most important, every person injured by the offence may make himself partie civile. It follows that in many features the French police is organized in a different manner from the British, and has some very different duties (Stephen). An observation has been already cited, that neither in England nor in America is there a system of espionage by which private matters can be made the subject of police investigation or interference. On the other hand the English system is open to the observation that the police, in practice at least, are powerless to pro- tect from annoyance in many matters essential to perfect rule. Short of absolute indecency or obscenity, printed matter of a scurri- lous and offensive kind is openly sold in the streets withont police interference ; and, owing apparently to the much-abused maxim that an Englishman’s house is his castle, the quiet and freedom from annoyance in the performance and fulfilling of the daily duties and engagements of life are not sceured. The annoyance to which Carlyle was subject is only an illustration of the almost daily com- plaints that arise in the English metropolis. Although the noise of a bell may be the subject of

indictment or injunction, the officers of police do not complain of or even remonstrate with an inconsiderate or selfish neighbour in such a matter, or even in still greater annoy- ances, stich as those arising from animals kept in a state of confine- ment (not affecting public health), because the source of annoyance is within private territory, or because there is no summary mode of dealing with it. It is nnreasonable that complainants should be told, as they are every day, and correctly, by magistrates, that the annoyances which render the enjoyment of life impracticable

Peos tC

may be subject of indictment or injunction, but not of summary police intervention. The fear of drawing down ridicule akin to Verges's dircction to the watch, ''If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse to bid her still it," probably stands unduly in the way of police interference with real nuisances.

It is not, however, in the minute details of regulation and inspection of the incidents of every-day life that the distinctions between the police systems of the two countries chiefly consist. Such distinctions have of late years greatly diminished ; the inter- vention in all matters of health, for example, places the English system more akin to the French, and on the other hand all travellers of mature years can testify to the mitigation and even total cessation in France, and on the Continent generally, of the minute investigation of a stranger who is nota "suspect." "To the word espionage a stigma is attached," says Bentham. "Let us sub- stitute the word inspection, which is unconnected with the same pre- judices. Ifthis inspection consists in the maintenance of an oppres- sive system of police, which subjects innocent actions to punishment, which condemns secretly and arbitrarily, it is natural that such a system and its agents should become odious. But if the inspection consists in the maintenance of a system of police for the preserva- tion of the public tranquillity and the execution of good laws, all its inspectors and all its guardians act a useful and salutary part; it is only the vicious who will have reason to complain, and it will be formidable to them alone." It is with reference to criminal matters and the police judiciaire that important distinctions exist between the French and English systems. In every arrondissement there is a juge W@instruction who makes

the first formal inquiry in criminal cases ; and in every tribunal of first instance, or tribunal correctionnel, there is a procureur de la république who with deputies forms the ministére public of that court. In the court of the juges de paix (who may be compared to police magis- trates) the commissary of the police is the ministére public. The juges de paix, the maire, the commissaries of police, the gendar- merie, and in rural districts the gardes champétres aud the gardes Sorestiers, are officers of the judicial police; and by the Code ad' Instruction Oriminelle all these officers, even the juges d'instruc- tion, are under the orders of the procureur-général. The vocations of these officers as well as the courts are briefly explained in the article FRANCE (vol. ix. p. 511).

Sergents de ville, in Paris now called gardiens de la paix (the name having been changed thus in September 1870), are the nearest equivalents of English police constables and are not officers of the police judiciatre. Their powers in preserving the public peace closely resemble the common law powers and duties and protection of the English constable. Their reports of cases have not the authority of a procés verbal.

In Paris, as elsewhere, the préfet de police is at the head of the force, with commissaires de policc, appointed by the president of the republic on the nomination of the minister of the interior, but acting under the orders of the prefect, and having both administra- tive and judicial duties. The commissaries see that the laws relating to good order and public safety are observed, and that the

police orders are executed, and take special action in serious.

matters. As officers of the judicial police they are the auxiliaries of the procureur of the republic in correctional and criminal police action, and in the ordinary police tribunal (Je tribunal de simple police) they exercise the functions of magistrates.

The organization of the central administration (administration centrale) comprises three classes or functions which together consti- tute /a police. First there is the office or cabinet of the prefect for the general police (Ja police générale), with three bureaus having for their special object the safety of the president of the republic, matters con- nected with the use of

arms, various societies, the regulation and order of public ceremonies, theatres, amusements and entertain- nents, movements of troops, the military police (Ja police militaire), and various other inatters ; secondly, the judicial police (Ja police Jjudiciaire) already spoken of, with five bureaus, in constant com- munication with the courts of judicature, and including the service of the prisons of the Seine, matters relating to aliens, and the pro- tection of children ; thirdly, the administrative police (la police administrative), with four bureaus, including everything relating to supplies, navigation, public carriages, animals, firemen, public health, and the enforcement of the law respecting the employment of young persons. Some minor matters are under the supervision of the prefect of the Seine. Concurrently with these divisions there is the municipal police, which comprises all the agents in enforcing police regulations in the streets or public thoroughfares, acting under the orders of a chief (chef de la police municipale) with a central burean. The municipal police is divided into two principal branches—the service in uniform of the gardiens de la paix, and the service out of uniform of inspectewrs de police, the latter a compara- tively small number.

For purposes of municipal police, Paris is divided into twenty a1tondissements (corresponding in a great measure with the divisions of the metropolitan police of England), which the uniform police patrol.

343

The total police strength of the Paris arrondissements, according to the latest return, showed 5932 gardiens de la: paix, each arrondissement officered by an officier de paix (an office peculiar to Paris), with 3 or 4 brigadiers and from 24 to 27 sous-brigadiers under his command. ‘There are two divisional inspectors.

Besides these divisional gardicns de la paix police, there is a cen- tral administration consisting of 6 central brigades of 100 each, 4 of the brigades carrying out the orders of the prefecture at theatres, assemblies, races, and in the Bois de Boulogne, and elsewhere in the capital where their presence is required, while the 5th brigade regulates traffic generally, and the 6th prevents obstructions in the markets.

The service de sireté, or detective department (out of uniform), with which is now amalgamated the brigade des meurs (which deals with public morals, houses of ill fame, prostitutes, and so forth), comprises a commissary, principal inspectors, brigadiers, aud 211 inspectors, There are a number of other branches of service including a fire brigade.

The proportion of police to inhabitants as last estimated is 1 in

2

The pay of the gardiens de la paix is from 1400 to 1700 francs ; brigadiers, 2000 francs ; sous-brigadiers, 1800 francs ; officiers de paix, 3000 to 6000 frances. The estimate of expenditure of the

| whole Paris police for 1884 was 28,952,631 francs,—of which the state contributed 7,693,825 francs.

Whether the police of Paris are more effective than those of the English metropolis is doubted. Persons who are best entitled to express an opinion, having practical experience, think that, while a multitude of offices and officers for a multitude of subjects and stages of investigation—a system, in short, of bureaucracy—exists, which creates an impression, the actual detection of grave offences is not commensurate with the display of attention.

It is impossible in the narrow limits of this article to go through Germany.

all the police forecs of Europe. It must suffice to allude to a few principal states, noting the police forces of their capitals as illustrat- ing the systems. Taking the Berlin force as ‘linetiaries of the police system in the German empire, police duties are as various as in France; the system includes a political police controlling all matters relating to the press, societies, clubs, and public and social amusements. Police duties are carried out under the direction of the royal police presidency, the executive police force comprising a police colonel, with, besides commissaries of criminal investiga- tions, captains, lieutenants, acting lieutenants, sergeant-inajors, and a large body of constables (Schutemdnner). The total in 1883-84 amounted to 3441 executive officers, including criminal investigation

officers, the political police, and the department for the supervision of prostitution. Taking the population of Berlin from the statistical bureau of 27th July 1884 at 1,242,820, this gives 361 to each officer. The pay of the police is principally pro- vided from fiscal sources, and varies in an ascending scale from 1125 marks and lodging allowance for the lowest class of constable.

Taking Vienna in the same way as illustrative of the Austrian Austria.

police, it is to be observed that there are three branches, —(1) admini- stration ; (2) public safety and judicial police; and (8) the Govern- ment police. At the head of the policc service in Vienna there is a president of police, and at the head of each of the three branches there is an Oberpolizcirath or chief commissary. The head of the Government branch sometimes fills the office of president. Each of the branches is subdivided into departments at the head of which are Polizetrdthe. Passing over the subdivisions of the administrative branch, the public safety and judicial branch includes the following departments :—the office for public safety, the central inquiry office, and the record office or Hvidenzburcau. The Government police branch comprises three departments :—the Government police office, the press office, and the Vcreinsbwreau or office for the registra- tion of societies.

The Sicherheitswache or executive police of Vienna consists of a central inspector and chief, district, divisional, and other inspectors, with about 2500 constables, Sicherheitswachmdénner. The detective department comprises a chief and other inspectors, and 130 agents. In July 1884 the proportion of police constables to the inhabitants was 1 to 486. In the latest return, the entire police service com- prises 2816 persons, at a cost of 2,355,710 florins,—of which the state contributes 1,730,740 florins, and the communes the greater part of the remainder. The pay of the constable ascends from 360 florins with allowances of 90 florins.

It is obvious that there is a general resemblance between the organization and scope of the police forces of Germany and Austria and of France.

In Belgian municipalities the burgomasters are the heads of the Belgium.

force, which is under their control. The administrator of public safety is, however, specially instructed by the minister of justice to see that the laws and regulations affecting the police are properly earried out, and he can call on all public functionaries to act in furtherance of that object. The administrator of public safety is specially charged with the administration of the law in regard to aliens, and this law is applied, as in the case of Victor Hugo, to

Switzer- land.

Italy.

Nether- lands.

Russia.

o44

persons stirring up sedition. The duty of the gendarmerie, who constitute the horse and foot police, is generally to maintain internal order and peace. In Brussels as elsewhere the burgo- master is the head, but for executive purposes there is a chief commissary (subject, however, to the orders of the burgomaster), with assistant commissaries and commissaries of divisions and other officers, and central and other bureaus, with a body of agents (police constables) mm each. ‘

There are two main classes of police functions recognized by law, the administrative and the judicial police, the former engaged in the daily maintenance of peace and order and so preventing offences, the latter in the investigation of crime and tracing offenders ; but the duties are necessarily performed to a great extent by the same agents. The two other functions of the judicial police are, however, limited to the same classes of officers, and they perform the same duties as in Paris,—the law in practice there being expressly adopted in Brussels.

In Brussels the police force numbers, according to the latest re- port, 485 of all ranks. For the population (162,489), this gives 1 to every 335 persons. Strictly speaking therc is no detective branch so called, but the special and

judicial officers are employed in de- tection as the necessity arises. The pay and establishment charges are defrayed by local taxation. The annual pay of a constable is 1500 francs.

While this article is going through the press the idea is put for- ward, in consequence of political disturbances, to place the police of the larger Belgian towns under the control of Government instead of that of the respective municipalities as at present, and establish a sort of prefecture of police in Brussels. The attempt, if made, will probably meet with opposition from local authorities.

In Switzerland, which is sometiines classed with Belgium as among the least policed states of Europe, the laws of the cantons vary. In some respects they are stricter than in Belgium or even in France. Thus a permis de séjour is sometimes required where none is in practice necessary in Paris or Brussels.

In Italy there is in every province a prefect at the head of the police. See ITALY.

The police in the Netherlands, as regards the sources from which its powers are derived, is divided into the state police and the com- munal police, the former forming part of the general executive government, and the latter, althongh regulated by the executive, enforcing general and local police legislation. Regulatious for the state police are framed by the minister of justice. For the purposes of the state police the country is divided into five districts, with a director of police at the head of each district responsible for the control and government of the state police within it, and to see that the laws and ordinances for the safety and quietness of the state, the security of persons and property, and the equality of all before the law are carried out. The duty specially includes the supervision of strangers and their admission into and departure from the country, and extends even to the enforcement of shooting and fishing licences. In each district there.is an officer of justice who directs the prosecu- tion of criminal offences.

At the head of the communal police stand the burgomasters, and under them police commissaries entrusted with the observance of police regulations, whose appointment and removal rest with the crown, but they are paid by

the commune. The whole of the com- munal police are bound to assist the state police ; and, on the other hand, the latter assist the police, especially in the country districts. The duties of the officer of justice may be carried out by the com- missary of police, who for the time being is an assistant officer of justice. In large communes the police force is divided into several grades. Besides commissaries, of whom one is chief, there are a chief Sag classes of inspectors, and brigadiers ; but the arrangements differ in almost every municipality.

The total strength of the police is 6000; at The Hague there is supposed to be one constable to 1000 inhabitants. Only in Amsterdam, Rotterdam, and The Hague are there special depart- ments of detective police. Police salaries vary in different com- munes. The highest are at The Hague, and range from 600 florins for a third-class constable to 1800 florins for a chief inspector. The cost of the state police and the expenses incurred in prosecu- tions for crime are defrayed by the state. The expenses of the communal police are paid out of local rates on houses and land.

An official Russian document specially obtained for this article affords the following scanty particulars regarding the police in European Russia.

At the head of a police district there is a police master, who has subordinate officers on his staff. A number of constables are appointed, depending on the-population. Large towns are sub- divided into districts with inspectors and assistants, smaller towns with an assistant inspector. In villages police duties are executed by the inhabitants elected for that purpose, constituting “hundreds” or “ tenths” according to the number of inhabitants. There is a control over the villages by the police of the district, and the governor general has a controlling power over all, including the police master. Besides the ordinary police there are police brigades

in large towns with duties of a special kind, as attending parades and fétes. Each member of the brigade has five hundred inhabit- ants to look after or control. In the capitals there is a secret police having a staff in St Petersburg of a chief and his assistant, four clerks, and twenty inspectors, and in Moscow of a chief, two clerks, and twelve inspectors.

The principal active duties of the Russian police comprise the enforcement of police laws and the suppression of nuisances, disturbances, and crime. The details of these duties are laid down in a special Act, which is subdivided into different,statutes, taken from the criminal code. The provincial towns are- governed by a special law, passed in 1876, as supplementary to the already existing law. The towns provide the funds for the maintenance of the police. Laws of 1853 regulated the lodgings and necessaries for the whole police staff according to their rank; but a change has been introduced since 1873, and many officers receive payment in the place of lodg- ings. Police pay varies from 200 roubles upwards.

In closing this article, it is well to observe that the dis- tinction between the exercise of judicial power and police functions should be always borne in mind. “The func- tions of justice and those of the police must be apt in many points to run into one another, especially as the business would be very badly managed if the same persons whose more particular duty it is to act as officers of the police were not upon occasion to act in the capacity of officers of justice. The idea, however, of the two func- tions may still be kept distinct ” (Bentham). The employ- ment of police powers in the ante-judiciary part of criminal process, which previously to the establishment of a police force in England was thought to require an apology as founded on convenience and utility rather than on prin- ciple, has become a necessity.

The necessity for a police force as part of any system of orderly government is exemplified by its recent introduc- tion into Egypt. Amid differences of opinion on every subject, and even on the administration of the force and its duties, the abstract propriety of a police force is apparently beyond dispute.

In every country the difficult question, apart from any as to the extent of interference with the freedom of individual action, arises in actual police administration— Quts custodiet ipsos custodes ?

By whatever name the head of a police force is known, whether as commissioner, chief constable, superintendent, or otherwise, the efficient performance of his duty involves inquiry, and judgment upon that inquiry. The character and efficiency of his force must largely depend upon the insight as well as vigour brought to bear upon the indi- vidual members of that force.

In relation to the public generally a perfect police code must be full of restraints, with coextensive powers of inquiry, even in matters that do not involve punishment. The extent to which these restraints and powers are applied greatly depends on time and place, Precautions which

‘are necessary, Bentham observes, at certain periods of

danger and trouble, ought not to be continued in a period of quietness, and care should be taken not to shock the national spirit. One nation would not endure what is borne by another. (J. E. D.) POLIGNAG, an ancient French family, which had its seat in the Cevennes near Puy-en-Velay (Haute-Loire). Cardinal Mxtcutor DE Poricnac (1661-1742) was a younger son of Armand XVL., marquis de Polignac, and at an early age achieved distinction as a diplomatist. In 1695 he was sent as ambassador to Poland, where he con- trived to bring about the election of the prince of Conti as successorto John Sobieski(1697). The subsequent failure of this intrigue led to his temporary disgrace, but in 1702 he was restored to favour, and in 1712 he was sent as the plenipotentiary of Louis XIV. to the congress of Utrecht. During the regency he became involved in the Cellamare plot, and was relegated to Flanders for three years. From 1725 to 1732 he acted for France at the Vatican. In

1726 he received the archbishopric of Auch, and he died at Paris in 1742. He left unfinished a metrical refutation of Lucretius which was published after his death by the Abbé de Rothelin (Anti-Lucretius, 1745), and had consider- able vogue in its day. Count JuLes DE PotiaNnac (ob. 1817), grand-nephew of the preceding, was created duke by Louis XVI. in 1780, and in 1782 was made postmaster- general. His position and influence at court were largely due to his wife, the bosom friend of Marie Antoinette ; the duke and duchess alike shared the unpopularity of the court, and were among the first who were compelled to “emigrate” in‘ 1789. The duchess died shortly after the queen, but her husband, who had received an estate from Catherine II. in the Ukraine, survived till 1817. Of their three sons the second, Prince JULES DE Potianac (1780- 1847), held various offices after the restoration of the Bourbons, received from the pope his title of “ prince” in 1820, and in 1823 was made ambassador to the court of St James’s. In

August 8, 1829, he was called by Charles X. to the ministry of foreign affairs, and in the following November he becaine president of the council. On the revolution of July 1830 he fied for his life, but after wandering for some time among the wilds of Normandy was arrested at Granville. His trial before the chamber of peers resulted in his condemnation to perpetual imprisonment (at Ham), but he benefited by the amnesty of 1836, when the sentence was com- muted to one of exile. During his captivity he wrote Considérations politiques (1832). He afterwards spent some years in England, but finally was permitted to re- enter France on condition that he did not take up his abode in Paris. He died at St Germain on March 29,

1847,

POLILLO. See Purtippine IsLanps.

POLITIAN (1454-1494). Angelo Ambrogini, known in literary annals as ANGELO PoLIzIANo or PoLITIANUS from his birth-place, was born at Montepulciano in Tuscany in the year 1454. His father, Benedetto, a jurist of good family and distinguished ability, was murdered by political antagonists for adopting the cause of Piero de' Medici in Montepulciano ; and this circumstance gave his eldest son, Angelo, a claim on the family of Medici. At

the age of ten the boy came to prosecute his studies at

Florence, where he learned Latin under Cristoforo Landino, and Greek under Argyropulos and Andronicos Kallistos. From Marsilio Ficino he imbibed the rudiments of philo- sophy. The precocity of his genius for scholarship and poetry was early manifested. At thirteen years of age he began to circulate Latin letters ; at seventeen he sent forth essays in Greek versification ; at eighteen he published an edition of Catullus. In 1470 he won for himself the title of Homericus juvenis by translating four books of the Lliad into Latin hexameters. Lorenzo de' Medici, who was then the autocrat of Florence and the chief patron of learning in Italy, took Poliziano into his household, made him the tutor of his children, and secured him a distin- guished post in the university of Florence. Before he reached the age of thirty, Poliziano expounded the humani- ties with almost unexampled lustre even for that epoch of brilliant professors. Among his pupils could be

numbered the chief students of Europe, the men who were destined to carry to their homes the spolia opima of Italian culture. Not to mention Italians, it will suffice to record the names of the German Reuchlin, the English Grocyn and Linacre, and the Portuguese Tessiras. Poliziano had few advantages of person to recommend him. He was ungainly in form, with eyes that squinted, and a nose of disproportionate length. Yet his voice was rich and capable of fine modu- lation ; his eloquence, ease of utterance, and copious stream of erudition were incomparable. It was the method of

professors at that period to read the Greek and Latin authors with their class, dictating philological and critical notes, emending corrupt passages in the received texts, offer- ing elucidations of the matter, and pouring forth stores of acquired knowledge regarding the laws, manners, reli- gious and philosophical opinions of the ancients. Poliziano covered nearly the whole ground of classical literature during the years of his professorship, and published the notes of his courses upon Ovid, Suetonius, Statius, the younger Pliny, Quintilian, and the writers of Augustan histories. He also undertook a recension of the text of the Pandects of Justinian, which formed the subject of one of his courses; and this recension, though it does not rank high in the scale of juristic erudition, gave an impulse to the scholarly criti- cism of the Roman code. At the same time he was busy as a translator from the Greek. His versions of Epictetus,

.Herodian, Hippocrates, Galen, Plutarch’s Lroticus, and

Plato’s Charmides delighted contemporaries by a certain limpid fluency of Latin style and grace of manner which dis- tinguished him also as an original writer. Of these learned labours the most universally acceptable to the public of that time were a series of discursive essays on philology and criti- cism, first published in 1489 under the title of Afiscellanea. They had an immediate, a lasting, and a wide renown, encouraging the scholars of the next century and a half to throw their occasional discoveries in the field of scholarship into a form at once so attractive and so instructive. Poli- ziano was not, however, contented with these simply pro- fessorial and scholastic compositions. Nature had endowed him with literary and poetic gifts of the highest order. These he devoted to the composition of Latin and Greek

verses, which count among the best of those produced by men of modern times in rivalry with ancient authors. The Manto, in which he pronounced a panegyric of Virgil ; the Ambra, which contains a beautiful idyllic sketch of Tuscan landscape, and a studied eulogy of Homer; the Rusticus, which celebrated the pleasures of country life in no frigid or scholastic spirit ; and the Vutricoa, which was intended to serve asa general introduction to the study of ancient and modern poetry,—these are the masterpieces of Poliziano in Latin verse, displaying an authenticity of inspiration, a sincerity of feeling, and a command of metrical resources which mark them out as original productions of poetic genius rather than as merely professorial lucubrations. Exception may be taken to their style, when compared with the best work of the Augustan or even of the Silver age. But what renders them always noteworthy to the student of modern humanistic literature is that they are in no sense imitative or conventional, but that they convey the. genuine thoughts and emotions of a born poet in Latin diction and in metre moulded to suit the character- istics of the singer's temperament.

Poliziano was great as a scholar, as a professor, as a critic, and as a Latin poet at an age when the classics were still studied with the passion of assimilative curiosity, and not with the scientific industry of a later period. He was the representative hero of that age of scholarship in which students drew their ideal of life from antiquity and fondly dreamed that they might so restore the past as to compete with the classics in production and bequeath a golden age of resuscitated paganism to the modern world. Yet he was even greater as an Italian poet. Between Boccaccio and Ariosto, no single poet in the mother tongue of Italy deserves so high a place as Poliziano. What he might have achieved in this department of literature had he lived at a period less preoccupied with humanistic studies, and had he found a congenial sphere for his activity, can only be guessed. As it is, we must reckon him as decidedly the foremost and indubitably the most highly gifted among the Italian poets who obeyed Lorenzo

de’ Medici’s demand for a resuscitation of the vulgar | literature. Lorenzo led the way himself, and Poliziano was more a follower in his path than an initiator. Yet what Poliziano produced, impelled by a courtly wish to satisfy his patron’s whim, proves his own immeasurable superiority as an artist. His principal Italian works are the stanzas called La Giostra, written upon Giuliano de’ Medici’s victory in a tournament; the Orfeo, a lyrical drama performed at Mantua with musical accompaniment ; and a collection of fugitive pieces, reproducing various forms of Tuscan popular poetry. La Giostra had no plan, and remained imperfect ; but it demonstrated the capaci- ties of the octave stanza for rich, harmonious, and sonorous metrical effect. The Orfeo is a slight piece of work, thrown off at a heat, yet abounding in unpremeditated lyrical beauties, and containing in itself the germ both of the pastoral play and of the opera. The Tuscan songs are distinguished by a “‘roseate fluency,” an exquisite charm of half romantic half humorous abandonment to fancy, which mark them out as improvisations of genius. It may be added that in all these departments of Italian composi- tion Poliziano showed how the taste and learning of a classical scholar could be engrafted on the stock of the vernacular, and how the highest perfection of artistic form might be attained in Italian without a sacrifice of native spontaneity and natural flow of language.

It is difficult to combine in one view the several aspects presented to us by this many-sided man of literary genius. At a period when humanism took the lead in forming Italian character and giving tone to European culture, he climbed with facility to the height of achievement in all the branches of scholarship which were then most seriously prized—in varied knowledge of ancient authors, in critical capacity, in rhetorical and poetical exuberance. This was enough at that epoch to direct the attention of all the learned men of Europe on Poliziano. At the same time, almost against his own inclination, certainly with very little enthusiasm on his part, he lent himself so success- fully to Lorenzo de’ Medici’s scheme for resuscitating the

PO L—

| future.

decayed literature of Tuscany that his slightest Italian

POLITECAL

Sige present condition of the study of political economy

seenis to prescribe, as most suitable for these pages, a | treatment of the subject different from that adopted in relation to other departments of knowledge. There pre-. vails wide-spread dissatisfaction with the existing state of | economic science, and much difference of opinion both as to its method and as to its doctrines. There is, in fact, reason to believe that it has now entered on a transition | stage, and is destined ere long to undergo a considerable transformation. Hence it has appeared to be unseasonable, — and therefore inexpedient, to attempt in this place a new dogmatic treatise on political economy. What is known as the “orthodox ” or “classical” system, though in our time

very generally called in question, is to be found set out in numerous text-books accessible to every one. Again, some of the most important special branches of economics are so fully explained and discussed in other parts of the present work (see BANKING, Excuancr, Frnancr, Money, &ke.) as to dispense with any further treatment of them here. It | has been thought that the mode of handling the subject most appropriate to the circumstances of the case, and likely to be most profitable, would be that of tracing historically from a general point of view the course of speculation regarding economic phenomena, and contemplating the suc- cessive forms of opinion concerning them as products of the periods at which they were respectively evolved.

_ tion,

| to study now.

POL

effusions exercised a potent influence on the immediate He appears before us as the dictator of Italian culture in a double capacity—as the man who most per- fectly expressed the Italian conception of humanism, and brought erudition into accord with the pursuit of noble and harmonious form, and also as the man whose verna- cular compositions were more significant than

any others of the great revolution in favour of Italian poetry which culminated in Ariosto. Beyond the sphere of pure scholar- ship and pure literature Poliziano did not venture. He was present, indeed, at the attack made by the Pazzi conspirators on the persons of Lorenzo and Giuliano de' Medici, and wrote an interesting account of its partial success. He also contributed a curious document on tle death of Lorenzo de' Medici to the students of Florentine ° history. But he was not, like many other humanists of his age, concerned in public affairs of state or diplomacy, and he held no office except that of professor at Florence. His private life was also uneventful. He passed it as a house-friend and dependant of the Medici, as the idol of the learned world, and as a simple man of letters for whom (with truly Tuscan devotion to the Saturnian country) rural pleasures were always acceptable. He was never married ; and his morals incurred suspicion, to which his own Greek verses lend a certain amount of plausible colouring. In character Poliziano was decidedly inferior to the intellectual and literary eminence which he dis- played. He died half broken-hearted by the loss of his friend and patron Lorenzo de' Medici, in 1494, at the age of forty, just before the wave of foreign invasion which was gathering in France swept over Italy.

For the life and works of Politian, consult F. O. Mencken (Leipsic, 1736), a vast repertory of accumulated erudition ; Jac. Mahly, Angelus Politianus (Leipsic, 1864); Carducci's edition of the Italian poems (Florence, Barbera, 1863); Del Lungo's edition of the Italian prose works and Latin and Greek poenis (Florence, Barbera, 1867); the Opera Omnia (Basel, 1554); Greswell's English

| Life of Politian ; Roscoe's Lorenzo de' Medici ; Von Reumont's Life

of Lorenzo de' Medici ; Symonds's Renaissance in Italy, and transla- tions from Poliziano's Italian poems in his Sketches and Studies in Italy, which include the Orfeo. (J. A. S.)

ECONOMY

Such a study is in harmony with the best intellectual tendencies of our age, which is, more than anything else,

characterized by the universal supremacy of the historical

spirit. To such a degree has this spirit permeated all our modes of thinking that with respect to every branch of

‘ knowledge, no less than with respect to every institution ‘and every form of human activity, we almost instinctively

ask, not merely what is its existing condition, but what were its earliest discoverable germs, and what has been the course of its development? The assertion of J. B. Say that the history of political economy is of little value, being for the most part a record of absurd and justly exploded opinions, belongs to a system of ideas already obsolete, and requires at the present time no formal refuta- It deserves notice only as reminding us that we must discriminate between history and antiquarianism : what from the first had no significance it is mere pedantry We need concern ourselves only with those modes of thinking which have prevailed largely and seriously influenced practice in the past, or in which we can discover the roots of the present and the future. When we thus place ourselves at the point of view of history, it becomes unnecessary to discuss the definition of political economy, or to enlarge on its method, at the out- set. It will suffice to conceive it as the theory of social wealth, or to accept provisionally Say’s definition which

PoOisiYrGga kb hl @®N OM Y

makes it the science of the production, distribution, and consumption of wealth. Any supplementary ideas which require to be taken into account will be suggested in the progress of our survey, and the determination of the proper method of economic research will be treated as one of the principal results of the historical evolution of the science.

The history of political economy must of course be dis- tinguished from the economic history of mankind, or of any separate portion of our race. The study of the suc- cession of economic facts themselves is one thing; the study of the succession of theoretic ideas concerning the facts is another. And it is with the latter alone that we _are here directly concerned. But these two branches of

research, though distinct, yet stand in the closest relation

to each other. The rise and the form of economic doctrines have been largely conditioned by the practical situation, needs, and tendencies of the corresponding epochs. With each important social change new economic questions have presented themselves; and the theories prevailing in each period have owed much of their influ- ence to the fact that they seemed to offer solutions of the urgent problems of the age. Again, every thinker, however in some respects he may stand above or before lis contemporaries, is yet a child of his time, and cannot be isolated from the social medium in which he lives and moves. He will necessarily be affected by the circum- stances which surround him, and in particular by the practical exigencies of which his fellows feel the strain. This connexion of theory with practice has its advantages and its dangers. It tends to give a real and positive character to theoretic inquiry; but it may also be expected to produce exaggerations in doctrine, to lend undue pro- minence to particular sides of the truth, and to make transitory situations or temporary expedients be regarded as universally normal conditions.

There are other relations which we must not overlook in tracing the progress of economic opinion. The several branches of the science of society are so closely connected that the history of no one of them can with perfect rationality be treated apart, though such a treatment is recommended —indeed necessitated—by practical utility.

The movenient of economic thought is constantly and.

powerfully affected by the prevalent mode of thinking, and even the habitual tone of sentiment, on social subjects generally. All the intellectual manifestations of a period in relation to human questions have a kindred character, and bear a certain stamp of homogeneity, which is vaguely present to our minds when we speak of the spirit of the age. Social speculation again, and economic research as one branch of it, is both through its philosophic method and through its doctrine under the influence of those simpler sciences which in the order of development precede the social, especially of the science of organic nature.

It is of the highest importance to bear in mind these several relations of economic research both to external cir- cumstance and to other spheres of contemporary thought, because by keeping them in view we shall be led to form less absolute and therefore juster estimates of the succes- sive phases of opinion. Instead of merely praising or blaming these according to the degrees of their accordance with a predetermined standard of doctrine, we shall view them as elements in an ordered series, to be studied mainly with respect to their filiation, their opportuneness, and their influences. We shall not regard each new step in this theoretic development as implying an unconditional negation of earlier views, which often had a relative justi- fication, resting, as they did, on a real, though narrower, basis of experience, or assuming the existence of a different social order. Nor shall we consider all the theoretic posi-

| undergo it.

O47 tions now occupied as definitive ; for the practical system of life which they tacitly assume is itself susceptible of change, and destined, without doubt, more or less to Within the limits of a sketch like the present these considerations cannot be fully worked out; but an effort will be made to keep them in view, and to mark the relations here indicated, wherever their influence is speci- ally important or interesting.

The particular situation and tendencies of the several thinkers whose names are associated with economic doctrines have, of course, modified in a greater or less degree the spirit or form of those doctrines. Their rela- tion to special predecessors, their native temperament, their early training, their religious prepossessions and political partialities, have all had their effects. To these we shall in some remarkable instances direct attention ; } but, in the main, they are, for our present purpose, secondary and subordinate. The ensemble must prepon- derate over the individual; and the constructors of theories must be regarded as organs of a common intel- lectual and social movement.

The history of economic inquiry is most naturally divided into the three great periods of (1) the ancient, (2) the medizval, and (3) the modern worlds. In the two former, this branch of study could exist only in a rudi- mentary state. It-is evident that for any considerable development of social

theory two conditions must be ful- filled. First, the phenomena must have exhibited them- selves on a sufficiently extended scale to supply adequate matter for observation, and afford a satisfactory basis for scientific generalizations; and secondly, whilst the spectacle is thus provided, the spectator must have been trained for his task, and armed with the appropriate aids and instru- ments of research, that is to say, there must have been such a previous cultivation of the less complex sciences as will have both furnished the necessary data of doctrine and prepared the proper methods of investigation. Socio- logy requires to use for its purposes theorems which belong to the domains of physics and biology, and which it must borrow from their professors ; and, on the logical side, the methods which it has to employ—deductive, observational, comparative—must have been previously shaped in the cultivation of mathematics and the study of the inorganic world or of organisms less complex than the social. Hence it is plain that, though some laws or tendencies of society must have been forced on men's attention in every age by practical exigencies which could not be postponed, and though the questions thus raised inust have received some empirical solution, a really scien- tific sociology must be the product of a very advanced stage of intellectual development. And this is true of the economic, as of other branches of social theory. We shall therefore content ourselves with a general outline of the character of economic thought in antiquity and the Middle Ages, and of the conditions which determined that character.

ANCIENT TIMES,

The Oriental Theocracies.—The earliest surviving expres- sions of thought on economic subjects have come down to us from the Oriental theocracies. The general spirit of the corresponding type of social life consisted in taking imitation for the fundamental principle of education, and consolidating nascent civilization by heredity of the differ- ent functions and professions, or even by a system of castes, hierarchically subordinated to each other according to the nature of their respective offices, under the common supreme direction of the sacerdotal caste. This last was charged with the traditional stock of conceptions, and their applica- tion for purposes of discipline. It sought to realize a com-

plete regulation of human life in all its departments on the basis of this transmitted body of practical ideas. Conserva- tion is the principal task of this social order, and its most remarkable quality is stability, which tends to degenerate into stagnation. But there can be no doubt that the useful arts were long, though slowly, progressive under this regime, from which they were inherited by the later civilizations,— the system of classes or castes maintaining the degree of division of labour which had been reached in those early periods. The eminent members of the corporations which presided over the theocracies without doubt gave much earnest thought to the conduct of industry, which, unlike war, did not imperil their political pre-eminence by deve- loping a rival class, But, conceiving life as a whole, and making its regulation their primary aim, they naturally considered most the social reactions which industry is fitted to exercise. The moral side of economics is the one they habitually contemplate, or (what is not the same) the economic side of morals. They abound in those warnings against greed and the haste to be rich which religion and philosophy have in all ages seen to be necessary. They insist on honesty in mutual dealings, on just weights and measures, on the faithful observance of contracts. They admonish against the pride and arrogance apt to be gene- rated by riches, against undue prodigality and self-indulg- ence, and enforce the duties of justice and beneficence towards servants and inferiors. Whilst, in accordance with the theological spirit, the personal acquisition of wealth is in general thesis represented as determined by divine wills, its dependence on individual diligence and thrift is emphatically taught. There is indeed in the fully developed theocratic systems a tendency to carry precept, which there differs little from command, to an excessive degree of minuteness,—to prescribe in detail the time, the mode, and the accompaniments of almost every act of every member of the community. This system of exaggerated surveillance is connected with the union, or rather confusion, of the spiritual and temporal powers, whence it results that many parts of the government of society are conducted by direct injunction or restraint, which at a later stage are intrusted to general intellectual and moral influences.

Greck and Roman Antiquity.—The practical economic

enterprises of Greek and Roman antiquity could not, even |

independently of any special adverse influences, have com- peted in magnitude of scale or variety of resource with those of modern times. The unadvanced condition of physical science prevented a large application of the less obvious natural powers to production, or the extensive use of machinery, which has acquired such an immense development as a factor in modern industry. The imper-

fection of geographical knowledge and of the means of

communication and transport were impediments to the growth of foreign commerce. These obstacles arose neces- sarily out of the mere immaturity of the industrial life of the periods in question. But more deeply rooted impedi- ments to a vigorous and expansive economic practical system existed in the characteristic principles of. the civi- lization of antiquity. Some writers have attempted to set aside the distinction between the ancient and modern worlds as imaginary or unimportant, and, whilst admitting the broad separation between ourselves and the theocratic peoples of the East, to represent the Greeks and Romans as standing on a substantially similar ground of thought, feeling, and action with the Western populations of our own time. But this is a serious error, arising from the same too exclusive preoccupation with the cultivated classes and with the mere speculative intellect which has often led to an undue disparagement of the Middle Ages. There is this essential difference between the spirit and

}

FPOLIEVTICAs SB Ccoro ry,

life of ancient and of modern communities, that the former were organized for war, the latter during their whole history have increasingly tended to be organized for industry, as their practical end and aim. The profound' influence of these differing conditions on every form of human activity must never be overlooked or forgotten. With the military constitution of ancient societies the institution of slavery was essentially connected. Far from being an excrescence on the contemporary system of life, as it was in the modern West Indies or the United States of America, it was so entirely

in harmony with that life that the most eminent thinkers regarded it as no less indispensable than inevitable. It does, indeed, seem to have been a temporary necessity, and on the whole, regard being had to what might have taken its place, a relative good. But it was attended with manifold evils. It led to the prevalence amongst the citizen class of a contempt for industrial occupations ; every form of production, with a partial exception in favour of agriculture, was branded as unworthy of a free man,—the only noble forms of activity being those directly connected with public life, whether military or administrative. Labour was degraded by the relegation of most departments of it to the servile class, above whom the free artisans were but little elevated in general esteem. The agents of production, being for the most part destitute of intellectual cultivation and excluded from any share in civic idcas, interests, or efforts, were unfitted in character as well as by position for the habits of skilful combination and vigorous initiation which the progress of industry demands. To this must be added that the comparative insecurity of life and pro- perty arising out of military habits, and the consequent risks which attended accumulation, were grave obstructions to the formation of large capitals, and to the establishment of an effective system of credit. These causes conspired with the undeveloped state of knowledge and of social relations in giving to the economic life of the ancients the limitation and monotony which contrast so strongly with the inexhaustible resource, the ceaseless expansion, and the thousandfold variety of the same activities in the inodern world. It is, of course, absurd to expect incom- patible qualities in any social system; each system must be estimated according to the work it has to do. Now the historical vocation of the ancient civilization was to be

_accomplished, not through industry, but through war,

which was in the end to create a condition of things admitting of its own elimination and of the foundation of a regime based on pacific activity.

The Greeks.—This office was, however, reserved for Rome, as the final result of her system of conquest; the military activity of Greece, though continuous, was inco- herent and sterile, except in the defence against Persia, and did not issue in the accomplishment of any such social mission. It was, doubtless, the inadequacy of the warrior life, under these conditions,

to absorb the faculties of the race, that threw the energies of its most eminent members into the channel of intellectual activity, and produced a singularly rapid evolution of the esthetic, philosophic, and scientific germs transmitted by the theocratic societies.

In the Works and Days of Hesiod, we find an order of thinking in the economic sphere very similar to that of the theocracies. With a recognition of the divine disposing power, and traditional rules of sacerdotal origin, is com- bined practical sagacity embodied in precept or proverbial saying. But the development of abstract thought, begin- ning from the time of Thales, soon gives to Greek culture its characteristic form, and marks a new epoch in the intel- lectual history of mankind.

The movement was now begun, destined to mould the whole future of humanity, which, gradually sapping the

old hereditary structure of theological convictions, tended | to the substitution of rational theories in every department

of speculation. ‘The eminent Greek thinkers, while taking | a deep interest in the rise of positive science, and most of

them studying the only science—that of geometry—then | assuming its definitive character, were led by the social

exigencies which always powerfully affect great minds to | study with special care the nature of man and the con-

ditions of his existence in society. These studies were

indeed essentially premature ; a long development of the

inorganic and vital sciences was necessary before sociology

or morals could attain their normal constitution. But by

their prosecution amongst the Greeks a noble intellectual

activity was kept alive, and many of those partial lights

obtained for which mankind cannot afford to wait.

Economic inquiries, along with others, tended towards | rationality; Plutus was dethroned, and terrestrial sub-

stituted for supernatural agencies. But such inquiries,

resting on no sufficiently large basis of practical life, could | not attain any considerable results. The military consti-

tution of society, and the existence of slavery, which was

related to it, leading, as has been shown, to a low estimate | of productive industry, turned away the habitual attention

of thinkers from that domain. On the other hand, the

absorption of citizens in the life of the state, and their

preoccupation with party struggles, brought questions

relating to politics, properly so called, into special promin-

ence. The principal writers on social subjects are there-

fore almost exclusively occupied with the examination and

comparison of political constitutions, and with the search

after the education best adapted to train the citizen for | public functions. And we find, accordingly, in them no systematic or adequate handling of economic questions,— only some happy ideas and striking partial anticipations of later research.

In their thinking on such questions, as on all sociological | subjects, the following general features are observable.

1. The individual is conceived as subordinated to the state, through which alone his nature can be developed and completed, and to the maintenance and service of which all lis efforts must be directed. The great aim of all poli- tical thought is the formation of good citizens ; every social | question is studied primarily from the ethical and educa- tional point of view. The citizen is not regarded as a producer, but only as a possessor, of material wealth; and this wealth is not esteemed for its own sake or for the enjoyments it procures, but for the higher moral and public aims to which it may be made subservient.

2. The state, therefore, claims and exercises a control- ling and regulating authority over every sphere of social life, including the economic, in order to bring individual action into harmony with the good of the whole.

3. With these fundamental notions is combined a tend- ency to attribute to institutions and to legislation an | unlimited efficacy, as if society had no spontaneous tenden- cies, but would obey any external impulse, if impressed upon it with sufficient force and continuity.

Every eminent social speculator had his ideal state, which approximated to or diverged from the actual or possible, according to the degree in which a sense of reality and a positive habit of thinking characterized the author.

The most celebrated of these ideal systems is that of Plato. In it the Greek idea of the subordination of the individual to the state appears in its mostextreme form. In that class of the citizens of his republie who represent the highest type of life, community | of property and of wives is established, as the most effective means of suppressing the sense of private interest, and consecrating the | individual entirely to the publie service. It cannot perhaps be truly said that his scheme was incapable of realization in an ancient community favourably situated for the purpose. But it would

soon be broken to pieces by the forces which would be developed | in an industrial society. It has however, been the fruitful parent |

sorganization or to deteriorate the national character.

thropy and tender piety which breathes through it.

of modern Utopias, specially attractive as it is to minds in which the literary instinct is stronger than the scientific judgment, in consequence of the freshness and brilliancy of Plato's exposition and the unrivalled charm of his style. Mixed with what we should eall the chimerical ideas in his work, there are many striking and elevated moral conceptions, and, what is more to our present' purpose, some just economic analyses. In particular, he gives a correct account of the division and combination of employments, as they naturally arise in society. The foundation of the social organization he traces, perlaps, too exclusively to economie grounds, not giving sufficient weight to the disinterested social impulses in men which tend to draw and bind them together. But he explains clearly how the different wants and capacities of individuals demand and give rise to mutual services, aud how, by the restriction of each to the sort of oceupation to which, by his position, abilities, and training, he is best adapted, everything needful for the whole is more easily and better produced or effected. In the spirit of all the ancient legislators he desires a sclf-sufficing state, protected from unnecessary contacts with foreign populations, which might tend to break down its internal Hence he discountenances foreign trade, and with this view removes his ideal eity to some distance from the sea. The limits of its territory are rigidly fixed, and the population is restricted by the prolibition of early marriages, by the exposure of infants, and by the maintenance of a determinate number of individual lots of land in the hands of the citizens who cultivate the soil. These precautions are inspired more by political and moral motives than by the Malthusian fear of failure of subsistence. Plato aims, as far as possible, at equality of property amongst the families of the com- munity which are engaged in the immediate prosecution of industry. This last class, as distinguished from the governing and military classes, he holds, according to the spirit of his age, in but little esteem ; he regards their habitual occupations as tending to the degradation of the mind and the enfeeblement of the body, and rendering those who follow them unfit for the higher duties of men and citizens. The lowest forms of labour he would commit to foreigners and slaves. Again in the spirit of ancient theory, he wishes (Legg., v. 12) to banish the precious metals, as far as practi- cable, from use in internal commerce, and forbids the lending of mouey on interest, leaving indeed to the free will of the

debtor even the repayment of the capital of the loan. All cconomie dealings he subjects to active control on the part of the Govern- ment, not merely to prevent violence and fraud, but to check the growth of luxurious habits, and secure to the population of the state a due supply of the necessaries and comforts of life. Contrasted with the exaggerated idealism of Plato is the some- what limited but eminently practical genius of Xenophon. In him the man of action predominates, but he has also a large element of the speculative tendency and talent of the Greek. His treatise entitled Geonomicus is well worth reading for the interesting and animated picture it presents of some aspects of eontemporary life, and is justly praised by Sismondi for the spirit of mild ee ok WE 1 scareely passes beyond the bounds of domestic economy, though within that limit its author exhibits much sound sense and sagacity. His precepts for the judicious conduct of private pro- perty do not concern us here, nor his wise suggestions for the government of the family and its dependants. Yet it is in this narrower sphere and in general in the concrete domain that his chief excellence lies ; to economics in their wider aspects he docs not contribute much. He shares the ordinary preference of his fellow countrymen for agriculture over other employments, and is, indeed, enthusiastic in his praises of it as developing patriotic and religious feeling and a respect for property, as the best preparation for military life, and as leaving sufficient time and thought dis- posable to admit of considerable intellectual and political activity. Yet lis practical sense leads him to attribute greater importanco than most other Greek writcrs to manufactures, and still more to trade, to enter more largely on questions relating to their eon- ditions and development, and to bespeak for them the countenance and protection of the state. Though his vicws on the nature of money are vague and in some respects erroneous, he sees that its export in exchange for commodities will not impoverish the com- munity. He also insists on the necessity, with a view to a flourishing commerce with other countrics, of peace, of a courteous and respectful treatment of foreign traders, and of a prompt and equitable decision of their legal suits. The institution of slavery he of course recognizes aud does not disapprove ; he even recom- mends, for the increase of the Attic revenues, the hiring out of slaves by the state for labour in the mines, after branding them to prevent their escape, the number of slaves being constantly increased by fresh purchases out of the gains of the enterprise. Almost the whole system of Greek idcas up to the time of Aristotle is represented in his

encyclopedic eonstruction. Mathe- matical and astronomical science was largely developed at a later stage, but in the field of social studies no higher point was ever

attained by the Greeks than is reached in the writings of this great ‘thinker. “Both his gifts and his situation eminently favoured him in the treatment of these subjects. He combined in rare measure a eapacity for keen observation with generalizing power, and sobriety of judgment with ardour for the public good. Al} that was original or significant in the political life of Hellas had run its course before his time or under his own eyes, and he had thus a large basis of varied experience on which to ground his conclu- sions. Standing outside the actual movement of contemporary publie life, he occupied the position of thonghtful spectator and impartial judge. He could not indeed, for reasons already stated, any more than other Greek speculators, attain a fully normal attitude in these researches. Nor could he pass beyond the sphere of what is now called statical sociology ; the idea of laws of the historical development of social phenomena he scarcely apprehended, except in some sinall degree in relation to the succession of political forms. But there is to be found in his writings a remarkable body of sound and valuable thoughts on the constitution and working of the social organism. The special notices of economic subjects are neither so nnmerons nor so detailed as we should desire. Like all the Greek thinkers, he recognizes but one doctrine of the state, under which ethics, politics proper, and economies take their place as departments, bearing to each other a very close relation, and having indecd their lines of demarcation from each other not very distinctly marked. When wealth comes under consideration, it is studied not as an end in itself, but with a view to the higher elements and ultimate aims of the collective life.

The origin of society he traces, not to economic necessities, but to natural social impulses in the human constitution. ‘The nature of the social union, when thus established, being determined by the partly spontaneous partly systematic combination of diverse activities, he respects the independence of the latter whilst seeking to effect their convergence. He therefore opposes himself to the suppression of personal freedom and initiative, and the

excessive sub- ordination of the individual to the state, and rejects the community of property and wives proposed by Plato for his governing class. The principle of private property he regards as deeply rooted in man, and the evils which are alleged to result from the correspond- ing social ordinance he thinks ought really to be attributed either to the imperfections of our nature or to the vices of other public insti- tutions. Community of goods must, in his view, tend to neglect of the common interest and to the disturbance of social harmony.

Of the several classes which provide for the different wants of the society, those who are occupied directly with its material needs —the immediate cultivators of the soil, the mechanics and artificers —are excluded from any share in the government of the state, as being without the necessary leisure and cultivation, and apt to be debased by the nature of their occupations.. Ina celebrated passage he propounds a theory of slavery, in which it is based on the uni- versality of the relation between command and obedience, and on the natural division by which the ruling is marked off from the subject race. He regards the slave as having no independent will, but as an ‘‘animated tool” in the hands of his master; and in his subjection to such control, if only it be intelligent, Aristotle holds that the true wellbeing of the inferior as well as of the superior is to be fonnd. This view, so shocking to our modern sentiment, is of course not personal to Aristotle; it is simply the theoretic pre- sentation of the facts of Greek life, in which the maintenance of a hody of citizens pursuing the higher culture and devoted to the tasks of war and government was founded on the systematic degra- dation of a wronged and despised class, excluded from all the higher offices of human beings and sacrificed to the maintenance of a special type of society.

The methods of economic acquisition are divided by Aristotle into two, one of which has for its aim the appropriation of natural products and their application to the material uses of the household ; under this head come hunting, fishing, cattle-rearing, and agricul- ture. With this ‘‘natural economy,” as it may be called, is, in some sense, coutrasted the other method to which Aristotle gives the name of ‘‘chrematistic,” in which an active exchange of pro- ducts goes on, and money comes into operation as its medium and regulator. A certain measure of this “ money econoiny,” as it may be termed in opposition to the preceding and simpler form of

industrial life, is accepted by Aristotle as a necessary extension of the latter, arising out of increased activity of intercourse, and satisfying real wants. But its development on the great scale, founded on the thirst for enjoyment and the unlimited desire of gain, he condemns as unworthy and corrupting. Though his views on this subject appear to be principally based on moral grounds, there are some indications of his having entertained the erroneous opinion held by the physiocrats of the 18th century, that agricul- ture alone (with the other branches of natural economy) is truly produetive, whilst the other kinds of industry, which either modify the products of nature or distribute them by way of exchange, however convenient and useful they may be, make no addition to the wealth of the community.

He rightly regards money as altogether different from wealth,

illustrating the difference by the story of Midas. And he seems to have seen that money, though its use rests on a social conven- tion, must be composed of a material possessing an independent value of its own. ‘That his views on capital were indistinct appears from his fanions argument against interest on loans, which is based on the idea that money is barren and cannot prodnce money.

Like the other Greek social philosophers, Aristotle recommends to the care of Governments the preservation of a due proportion between the extent of the civic territory and its population, and relies on pre-nuptial continence, late marriages, and the preven- tion or destruction of births for the due limitation of the number of citizens, the insufficiency of the latter being dangerous to the independence and its superabundance to the tranquillity and good order of the state.

The Romans.—Notwithstanding the eminently practical, realistic, and utilitarian character of the Romans, there was no energetic exercise of their powers in the economic field ; they developed no large and many-sided system of pro- duction and exchange. Their historic mission was military and political, and the national energies were mainly devoted to the public service dt home and in the field. To agriculture, indeed, much attention was given from the earliest times, and on it was founded the existence of the

hardy population which won the first steps in the march to universal dominion. But in the course of their history the cultivation of the soil by a native yeomanry gave place to the introduction on a great scale of slave labourers, acquired by their' foreign conquests; and for the small properties of the earlier period were substituted the vast estates—the lat¢fundia—which, in the judgment of Pliny, were the ruin of Italy. The industrial arts and commerce (the latter, at least when not conducted on a great scale) they regarded as ignoble pursuits, unworthy of free citi- zens ; and this feeling of contempt was not merely a pre- judice of narrow or uninstructed minds, but was shared by Cicero (De Of. i. 42) and others among the most liberal spirits of the nation. As might be expected from the want of speculative originality among the Romans, there is little evidence of serious theoretic inquiry on economic subjects. Their ideas on theseas on other social questions were for the most part borrowed from the Greek thinkers. Such traces of economic thought as do occur are to be found in (1) the philosophers, (2) the writers de re rustica, and (3) the jurists. It must, however, be admitted that many of the passages in these authors referred to by those who assert the claim of the Romans to a more pro- minent place in the history of the science often contain only obvious truths or vague generalities.

In the philosophers, whom Cicero, Seneca, and the elder Pliny sufficiently represent (the last indeed being rather a learned encyclopedist or polyhistor than a philosopher), we find a general conscionsness of the decay of industry, the relaxation of morals, and the growing spirit of self-indulgence amongst their contempo- raries, who are represented as deeply tainted with the imported vices of the conquered nations. This sentiment, both in these writers and in the poetry and miscellaneous literature of their times, is accompanied by a half-factitious enthusiasm for agricul- ture and an exaggerated estimate of country life and of early Roman habits, which are principally, no doubt, to be regarded as a form of protest against the evils of the present, and, from this point of view, reinind us of the declamations of Rousseau in a not dissimilar age. But there is little of large or just thinking on the economic evils of the time and their proper remedies. Pliny, still further in the spirit of Rousseau, is of opinion that the introduction of gold as a inedium of exchange was a thing to be deplored, and that the age of barter was preferable to that of money. He expresses views on the necessity

of preventing the efflux of money similar to those of the modern mercantile school—views which Cicero also, though not so clearly, appears to have entertained. Cato, Varro, and Columella concern themselves more with the teclinical precepts of husbandry than with the general conditions of industrial suc- cess and social wellbeing. But the two last namcd have the great merit of having seen and proclaimed the superior value of free to slave labour, and Columella is convinced tliat to the use of the latter the decline of the agricultural economy of the Romans was In a great measnre to be attributed. These three writers agree in the belief that it was chiefly by the revival and reform of agricnl- ture that the threatening inroads of moral corruption could be

stayed, the old Roman virtues fostered, and the foundations of the commonwealth strengthened. ‘Their attitude is thus similar to that of the French physiocrats invoking the improvement and zealous pursuit of agriculture alike against the material evils and the social degeneracy of their time. The question of the comparative merits of the large and small systems of cultivation appears to have bcen much discussed in the old Roman, as in the modern European world ; Columella is a decided advocate of the petite culture. The jurists were led by the coincidence which sometimes takes place between their point of view and that of economic science to make certain classifications and establish some more or less refined dis- tinctions which the modern economists have either adopted from them or used independently. They appear also (though this has been disputed, Neri and Carli maintaining the affirmative, Pagnini the negative) to-have had correct notions of the nature of money as having necessarily a value of its own, determined by economic conditions, and therefore incapable of being impressed upon it by convention or arbitrarily altered by public authority. But in general we find in these writers, as might be expected, not so much the results of independent thought as documents illustrating the facts of Roman economic life, and the historical policy of the nation with respect to economic subjects. From the latter point of view they are of much interest ; and by the information they supply as to the course of legislation relating to property generally, to sump- tuary control, to the restrictions imposed on spendthrifts, to slavery, to the encouragement of population, and the like,

they give us much clearer insight than we should otherwise possess into influences long potent in the history of Rome and of the Western world at large. But, as it is with the more limited field of system- atic thought on political economy that we are here occupied, we can- not enter into these subjects. One matter, however, ought to be adverted to, because it was not only repeatedly dealt with by legisla- tion, but is treated more or less fully by all Roman writers of note, namely, the interest on money loans. The rate was fixed by the laws of the Twelve Tables ; but lending on interest was afterwards (B.c. 341) entirely prohibited by the Genucian Law. In the legis- lation of Justinian, rates were sanctioned varying from four to eight per cent. according to the nature of the case, the latter being fixed as the ordinary mercantile rate, whilst compound interest was forbidden. The Roman theorists almost without exception dis- approve of lending on interest altogether. Cato, as Cicero tells us, thought it as bad as murder ("Quid fenerari? Quid hominem occidere ?" De Off. ii. 15); and Cicéro, Seneca, Pliny, Columella all join in condemning it. It is not difficult to see how in early states of society the trade of money-lending becomes, and not unjustly, the object of popular odium; but that these writers, at a period when commercial enterprise had made such considerable progress, should continue to reprobate it argues very imperfect or confused ideas on the nature and functions of capital. It is probable that oa took little heed cither of these speculative ideas or of egislation on the subject, which experience shows can always be easily evaded. The traffic in money seems to have gone on all through Roman history, and the rate to have fluctuated according to the condition of the market.

Looking back on the history of ancient economic specu- lation, we see that, as might be anticipated a priori, the results attained in that field by the Greek and Roman writers were very scanty. As Diihring has well remarked, the questions with which the science has to do were regarded by the ancient thinkers rather from their political than their properly economic side. This we have already pointed out with respect to their treatment of the subject of population, and the same may be seen in the case of the doctrine of the division of labour, with which Plato and Aristotle are in some degree occupied. They regard that principle as a basis of social classification, or use it in showing that society is founded on a spontaneous co-opera- tion of diverse activities. From the strictly economic point of view, there are three

important propositions which can be enunciated respecting that division :— (1) that its extension within any branch of production makes the products cheaper ; (2) that it is limited by the extent of the market ; and (3) that it can be carried farther in manufactures than in agriculture. But we shall look in vain for these propositions in the ancient writers; the first alone might be inferred from their discussions of the subject. It has been the tendency especially of German scholars to magnify unduly the extent and value of the contributions of antiquity to economic knowledge. The Greek and Roman authors ought certainly not to be omitted

| in any account of the evolution of this branch of study. But it must be kept steadily in view that we find in them only first hints or rudiments of general economic truths, and that the science is essentially a modern one. We shall indeed see hereafter that it could not have attained its definitive constitution before our own time.

MIDDLE AGEs.

The Middle Ages (400-1300 a.p.) form a period of great significance in the economic, as in the general, his- tory of Europe. They represent a vast transition, in which the germs of a new world were deposited, but in which little was fully elaborated. There is scarcely any- thing in the later movement of European society which we do not find there, though as yet, for the most part, crude and undeveloped. The mediaeval period was the object of contemptuous depreciation on the part of the liberal schools of the last century, principally because it contributed so little to literature. But there are things more important to mankind than literature ; and the great men of the Middle Ages had enough to do in other fields to occupy their utmost energies. The development of the Catholic institutions and the gradual establishment and maintenance of a settled order after the dissolution of the Western empire absorbed the powers of the thinkers and practical men of several centuries. The first medizeval phase, from the commencement of the 5th century to the end of the 7th, was occupied with the painful and stormy struggle towards the foundation of the new ecclesiastical and civil system; three more centuries were filled with the work of its consolidation and defence against the assaults of nomad

populations; only in the final phase, during the 11th, 12th, and 13th centuries, when the unity of the West was founded by the collective action against impending Moslem invasion, did it enjoy a sufficiently secure and stable existence to exhibit its essential character, and produce its noblest personal types. The elaboration of feudalism was, indeed, in progress during the whole period, showing itself in the decomposition of power and the hierarchical subordination of its several grades, the movement being only temporarily suspended during the second phase by the necessary defensive concentration under Charlemagne. But not before the first century of the last phase was the feudal system fully constituted. In like manner, only in the final phase could the effort of Catholicism after a universal discipline be carried out on the great scale—an effort for ever admirable, though necessarily on the whole unsuccessful.

No large or varied economic activity was possible under the ascendency of feudalism. That organization, as has been abundantly shown by philosophical historians, was indispensable for the preservation of order and for public defence, and contributed important elements to general civilization. But, whilst recognizing it as opportune and relatively beneficent, we must not expect from it advan- tages Inconsistent with its essential nature and historical office. The class which predominated in it was not sympathetic with industry, and held the handicrafts in contempt, except those subservient to war or rural sports. The whole practical life of the society was founded on territorial property ; the wealth of the lord consisted in the produce of his lands and the dues paid to him in kind ; this wealth was spent in supporting a body of retainers whose services were repaid by their maintenance There could be little room for manufactures, and less for commerce ; and agriculture was carried on with a view to the wants of the family, or at most of the immediate neighbourhood, not .to those of a wider market. The economy of the period was therefore simple, and, in the absence of special motors from without, unprogressive.

B02

In the latter portion of the Middle Ages several circum- stances came into action which greatly modified these con- ditions. The crusades undoubtedly produced a powerful economic effect by transferring in many cases the

posses- sions of the feudal chiefs to the industrious classes, whilst by bringing different nations and races into contact, by enlarging the horizon and widening the conceptions of the populations, as well as by affording a special stimulus to navigation, they tended to give a new activity to interna- tional trade. ‘The independence of the towns and the rising importance of the burgher class supplied a counter- poise to the power of the land aristocracy ; and the strength of these new social elements was increased by the corporate constitution given to the urban industries, the police of the towns being also founded on the trade guilds, as that of the country districts was on the feudal relations. The increasing demand of the towns for the products of agriculture gave to the prosecution of that art a more extended and speculative character ; and this again led to improved methods of transport and communication. But the range of commercial enterprise continued everywhere narrow, except in some favoured centres, such as the Italian republics, in which, however, the growth of the normal habits of industrial life was impeded or perverted by military ambition, which was not, in the case of those communities, checked as it was elsewhere by the pressure of an aristocratic class.

Every great change of opinion on the destinies of man and the guiding principles of conduct must react on the sphere of material interests ; and the Catholic religion had a powerful influence on the economic life of the Middle Ages. Christianity inculcates, perhaps, no more effectively than the older religions the special economic virtues of industry, thrift, fidelity to engagements, obedience to law- ful authority; but it brought out more forcibly and presented more persistently the higher aims of life, and so produced a more elevated way of viewing the difierent social relations. It purified domestic life, a reform which has the most important economic results. It taught the doctrine of fundamental human equality, heightened the dignity of labour, and preached with quite a new emphasis the obligations of love, compassion, and forgiveness, and the claims of the poor. The constant presentation to the general mind and conscience of these ideas, the dogmatic bases of which were scarcely as yet assailed by scepticism, must have had a powerful effect in moralizing life. But to the influence of Christianity as a moral doctrine was added that of the church as an organization, charged with the application of that doctrine to men’s daily transactions. Besides the teachings of the sacred books, there was a niass of

ecclesiastical legislation providing specific prescriptions for the conduct of the faithful. And this legislation dealt with the economic as with other provinces of social activity. In the Corpus Juris Canonici, which condenses the result of centuries of study and effort, along with much else is set out what we may call the Catholic economic theory, if we understand by theory, not a reasoned explanation of phenomena, but a body of ideas leading to prescriptions for the guidance of conduct. Life is here looked at from the point of view of spiritual interests; the aim is to establish and maintain amongst men a true kingdom of God.

The canonists are friendly to the notion of a community of goods from the side of sentiment ("Dulcissima rerum possessio communis est"), though they regard the distinc- tion of meum and tuum as an institution necessitated by the fallen state of man. In cases of need the public authority is justified in re-establishing pro hac vice the primitive community. The care of the poor is not a matter of free choice; the relief of their necessities is

PO La Tike 2."

CO NOR

debitum legale. Avaritia is idolatry; cupiditas, even when it does not grasp at what is another's, is the root of all evil, and ought to be not merely regulated but eradicated. Agriculture and handiwork are viewed as legitimate modes of earning food and clothing; but trade is regarded with disfavour, because it»was held almost certainly to lead to fraud : of agriculture it was said, ' Deo non displicet"; but of the merchant, '' Deo placere non potest." The seller was bound to fix the price of his wares, not according to the market rate, as determined by supply and demand, but according to their intrinsic value (justwm pretium). He must not conceal the faults of his merchandise, nor take advantage of the need or ignorance of the buyer to obtain from him more' than the fair price. Interest on money is forbidden ; the prohibition of usury is, indeed, as Roscher says, the centre of the whole canonistic system of economy, as well as the foundation of a great part of the ecclesias- tical jurisdiction. The question whether a transaction was or was not usurious turning mainly on the intentions of the parties ; the innocence or blameworthiness of deal- ings in which money

was lent became rightfully a subject of determination for the church, either by her casuists or in her courts.

The foregoing principles point towards a noble ideal, but by their ascetic exaggeration they worked in some directions as an impediment to industrial progress. Thus, whilst, with the increase of production, a greater division of labour and a larger employment of borrowed capital naturally followed, the laws on usury tended to hinder this expansion. Hence they were undermined by various exceptions, or evaded by fictitious transactions. These laws were in fact dictated by, and adapted to, early condi- tions—to a state of society in which money loans were commonly sought either with a view to wasteful pleasures or for the relief of such urgent distress as ought rather to have been the object of Christian beneficence. But they were quite unsuited to a period in which capital was borrowed for ends useful to the public, for the extension of enter- prise and the employment of labour. The absolute theo- logical spirit in this, as in other instances, could not admit the modification in rules of conduct demanded by a new social situation ; aud vulgar good sense better understood what were the fundamental conditions of industrial life.

When the intellectual activity previously repressed by the more urgent claims of social preoccupations tended to revive towards the close of the medizval period, the want of a rational appreciation of the whole of human affairs was felt, and was temporarily met by the adoption of the results of the best Greek speculation. Hence we find in the writings of St Thomas Aquinas the political and economic doctrines of Aristotle reproduced with a partial infusion of Christian elements. His adherence to his master’s point of view is strikingly shown by the fact that he accepts (at least if he is the author of the De Regimine Principum) his theory of slavery, though by the action of the forces of his own time the last relics of that institution were being eliminated from European society.

This great change—the enfranchisement of the working classes—was the most important practical outcome of the Middle Ages. The first step in this movement was the transformation of slavery, properly so called, into serfdom. The latter is, by its nature, a transitory condition. The serf was bound to the soil, had fixed domestic relations, and participated in the

religious life of the society; and the tendency of all his circumstances, as well as of the opinions and sentiments of the time, was in the direction of liberation. This issue was, indeed, not so speedily reached by the rural as by the urban workman. Already in the second phase serfdom is abolished in the cities and towns, whilst agricultural serfdom does not disappear

ro Pirro A y AeCON OK

before the third. The latter revolution is attributed by Adam Smith to the operation of selfish interests, that of the proprietor on the one hand, who discovered the superior productiveness of cultivation by free tenants, and that of the sovereign on the other, who, jealous of the great lords, encouraged the encroachments of*the villeins on their authority. But that the church deserves a share of the merit seems beyond doubt—moral impulses, as often happens, conspiring with political and economic motives. The serfs were treated best on the ecclesiastical estates, and the members of the priesthood, both by their doctrine and by their situation since the Northern conquests, were constituted patrons and guardians of the oppressed or subject classes. –

Out of the liberation of the serfs rose the first linea- ments of the hierarchical constitution of modern industry in the separation between the entrepreneurs and the workers. The personal enfranchisement of the latter, stimulating activity and developing initiative, led to accumulations, which were further promoted by the estab- lishment of order and good government by the civic cor- porations which grew out of the enfranchisement. Thus an active capitalist class came into existence. It appeared first in commerce, the inhabitants of the trading cities importing expensive luxuries from foreign countries, or the improved manufactures of richer communities, for which the great proprietors gladly exchanged the raw produce of their lands. In performing the office of carriers, too, between different countries, these cities had an increasing field for commercial enterprise. At a later period, as Adam Smith has shown, commerce promoted the growth of manufactures, which were either produced for foreign sale, or made from foreign materials, or imitated from the work of foreign artificers. But the first import- ant development of handicrafts in modern Europe belongs to the 14th and 15th centuries, and the rise of manufac- turing entrepreneurs is

not conspicuous within the Middle Ages properly so called. Agriculture, of course, lags behind ; though the feudal lords tend to transform them- selves into directors of agricultural enterprise, their habits and prejudices retard such a movement, and the advance of rural industry proceeds slowly. It does, however, pro- ceed, partly by the stimulation arising from the desire to procure the finer objects of manufacture imported from abroad or produced by increased skill at home, partly by the expenditure on the land of capital amassed in the pro- secution of urban industries.

Some of the trade corporations in the cities appear to have been of great antiquity ; but it was in the 13th century that they rose to importance by being legally recognized and regulated. These corporations have been much too absolutely condemned by most of the economists, who insist on applying to the Middle Ages the ideas of the 18th and 19th centuries. They were, it is true, unfitted for modern times, and it was necessary that they should disappear ; their existence indeed was quite unduly prolonged. But they were at first in several respects highly beneficial. They were a valuable rallying point for the new industrial forces, which were strengthened by the rise of the esprit de corps which they fostered. They improved technical skill by the precautions which were taken for the solidity and finished execution of the wares produced in each locality, and it was with a view to the advancement of the industrial arts that St Louis undertook the better organization of the trades of Paris. The cor- porations also encouraged good moral habits through the sort of spontaneous surveillance which they exercised, and they tended to develop the social sentiment within the limits of each profession, in times when a larger public spirit could scarcely yet be looked for.

D00

MopErn TIMEs.

The close of the Middle Ages, as Comte has shown, must be placed at the end, not of the 15th, but of the 13th cen- tury. The modern period, which then began, is filled by a development exhibiting three successive phases, and issuing in the state of things which characterizes our own epoch. During the 14th and 15th centuries the Catholico-feudal system was breaking down by the mutual conflicts of its own official members, whilst

the constituent elements of a new order were rising beneath it. On the practical side the ant- agonists matched against each other were the crown and the feudal chiefs ; and these rival powers sought to strengthen themselves by forming alliances with the towns and the industrial forces they represented. The movements of this phase can scarcely be said to find an echo in any contem- porary economic literature. In the second phase of the modern period, which opens with the beginning of the 16th century, the spontaneous collapse of the medieval structure is followed by a series of systematic assaults which still further disorganize it. During this phase the central temporal power, which has made a great advance in stabi- lity and resources, lays hold of the rising elements of manufactures and commerce, and seeks, whilst satisfying the popular enthusiasm for their promotion, to use them for political ends, and make them subserve its own strength and splendour by furnishing the treasure necessary for military success. With this practical effort and the social tendencies on which it rests the mercantile school of poli- tical.economy, which then obtains a spontaneous ascend- ency, is in close relation. Whilst partially succeeding in the policy we have indicated, the European Governments yet on the whole necessarily fail, their origin and nature disqualifying them for the task of guiding the industrial movement ; and the discredit of the spiritual power, with which most of them are confederate, further weakens and undermines them. In the last phase, which coincides approximately with the 18th century, the tendency to a completely new system, both temporal and _ spiritual, becomes decisively pronounced, first in the philosophy and general literature of the period, and then in the great French explosion. The universal critical doctrine, which had been announced by the Protestantism of the previous phase, and systematized in England towards the close of that phase, is propagated and popularized, especially by French writers. The spirit of individualism inherent in the doctrine was eminently adapted to the wants of the time, and the general favour with which the dogmas of the social contract and laissez faire were received indicated a just sentiment of the conditions proper to the contempor- ary situation of European societies. So long as a new coherent system of thought and life could not be intro- duced, what was to be desired was a large and active development of personal energy under no further control of the old social powers than would suffice to prevent anarchy. Governments were therefore rightly called on to abandon any effective direction of the social movement, and, as

far as possible, to restrict their intervention to the maintenance of material order. This policy was, from its nature, of temporary application only; but the negative school, according to its ordinary spirit, erected what was merely a transitory and exceptional necessity into a per- manent and normal law. The unanimous European move- ment towards the liberation of effort, which sometimes rose to the height of a public passion, had various sides, corresponding to the different aspects of thought and hfe; and of the economic side the French physiocrats were the first theoretic representatives on the large scale, though the office they undertook was, both in its destructive and organic provinces, more thoroughly and effectively done

do4

by Adam Smith, who must be regarded as continuing and completing their work. .

It must be admitted that with the whole modern move- ment serious moral evils were almost necessarily con- nected. he general discipline which the Middle Ages had sought to institute and had partially succeeded in establishing, though on precarious bases, having broken down, the sentiment of duty was weakened along with the spirit of ensemble which is its natural ally, and individual- ism in doctrine tended to encourage egoism in action, In the economic field this result is specially conspicuous. National selfishness and private cupidity increasingly dominate; and the higher and lower industrial classes tend to separation and even to mutual hostility. The new elements—science and industry—which were gradually acquiring ascendency bore indeed in their bosom an ulti- mate discipline more efficacious and stable than that which had been dissolved ; but the final synthesis was long too remote, and too indeterminate in its nature, to be seen through the dispersive and seemingly incoherent growth of those elements. Now, however, that synthesis is becoming appreciable ; and it is the effort towards it, and towards the practical system to be founded on it, that gives its peculiar character to the period in which we live. And to this spontaneous nisus of society corresponds, as we shall see, a new form of

economic doctrine, in which it tends to be absorbed into general sociology and subordinated to morals.

It will be the object of the following pages to verify and illustrate in detail the scheme here broadly indicated, and to point out the manner in which the respective features of the several successive modern phases find their counterpart and reflexion in the historical development of economic speculation.

FIRST MODERN PHASE.

The first phase was marked, on the one hand, by the spontaneous decomposition of the medizval system, and, on the other, by the rise of several important elements of the new order. The spiritual power became less apt as well as less able to fulfil its moral office, and the social movement was more and more left to the irregular impulses of individual energy, often enlisted in the service of am- bition and cupidity. Strong Governments were formed, which served to maintain material order amidst the growing intellectual and moral disorder. The universal admission of the commons as an element in the political system showed the growing strength of the industrial forces, as did also in another way the insurrections of the working classes. The decisive prevalence of peaceful activity was indicated by the rise of the institution of paid armies—at first temporary, afterwards permanent—which prevented the interruption or distraction of labour by devoting a determinate minority of the population to martial opera- tions and exercises. Manufactures became increasingly important ; and in this branch of industry the distinction between the entrepreneur and the workers was first firmly established, whilst fixed relations between these were made possible by the restriction of military training and service to a special profession. Navigation was facilitated by the use of the mariner’s compass. The art of printing showed how the intellectual movement and the industrial develop- ment were destined to be brought into relation with each other and to work towards common ends. Public credit rose in Florence, Venice, and Genoa long before Holland and England attained any great financial importance. Just at the close of the phase, the discovery of America and of the new route to the East, whilst revolutionizing the course of trade,

prepared the way for the establishment of colonies, Which contributed powerfully to the growing preponderance

PeELITICcandk CO wow?

of industrial life, and pointed to its ultimate universality, It is doubtless due to the equivocal nature of the stage, standing between the medizval and the fully characterized modern period, that on the theoretic side we find nothing corresponding to this marvellous practical ferment and ex- pansion. The general political doctrine of Aquinas was retained, with merely subordinate modifications. The only special economic question which seems to have received particular attention was that of the nature and functions of money, the importance of which began to be felt as payments in service or in kind were discontinued, and regular systems of taxation began to be introduced. Roscher, and after him Wolowski, have called attcntion to Nicole Orcsine, who died bishop of Lisienx in 1882. Roscher pronounces him a great economist. His 7'ractatus de Origine, Natura, Jure, et Mutationibus Monetarwm (reprinted by Wolowski, 1864) contains a theory of money which is almost entirely correct according to the views of the 19th century, and is stated with such brevity, clear-

ness, and simplicity of language as, more than anything else, show the work to be from the hand of a master.

SECOND MODERN PHASE: MERCANTILE SYSTEM.

Throughout the first modern phase the rise of the new social forces had been essentially spontaneous ; in the second they became the object of systematic encouragement on the part of Governments, which, now that the financial methods of the Middle Ages no longer sufficed, could not further their military and political ends by any other means than increased taxation, implying augmented wealth of the com- munity. Industry thus became a permanent interest of European Governments, and even tended to become the principal object of their policy. In natural harmony with this state of facts, the mercantile system arose and grew, attaining its highest development about the middle of the 17th century.

The mercantile doctrine, stated in its most extreme form, makes wealth and money identical, and regards it therefore as the great object of a community so to conduct

‘its dealings with other nations as to attract to itself the

largest possible share of the precious metals. Each country must seek to export the utmost possible quantity of its own manufactures, and to import as little as possible of those of other countries, receiving the difference of the two values in gold and silver. This difference is called the balance of trade, and the balance is favourable when more money is received than is paid. Governments must resort to all available expedients—prohibition of, or high duties on, the importation of foreign wares, bounties on the export of home manufactures, restrictions on the export of the precious metals—for the purpose of securing such a balance.

But this statement of the doctrine, though current in the text books, does not represent correctly the views of all who must be classed as belonging to the mercantile school. Many of the members of that school were much too clear-sighted to entertain the belief, which the modern student feels difficulty in supposing any class of thinkers to have professed, that wealth consists exclusively of gold and silver. The mercantilists may be best described, as Roscher has remarked, not by any definite economic theorem which they held in common, but by a set of theoretic tendencies, commonly found in combination, though severally prevailing in different degrees in different minds. These tendencies may be enumerated as follows : —(1) towards overestimating the importance of possessing a large amount of the precious metals; (2) towards an undue exaltation (a) of foreign trade over domestic, and (6) of the industry which works up materials over that which provides them; (3) towards attaching too high a value to adense population as an element of national strength ; and (4) towards invoking the action of the state

Peon tere zA ht HeON O MY

in furthering artificially the attainment of the several ends thus proposed as desirable.

If we consider the contemporary position of affairs in western Europe, we shall have no difficulty in understand- ing how these tendencies would inevitably arise. The discoveries in the New World had led to a large de- velopment of the European currencies. The old feudal economy, founded principally on dealings in kind, had given way before the new “money economy,” and the dimensions of the latter were everywhere expanding. Circulation was becoming more rapid, distant communica- tions more frequent, city life and movable property more important. The mercantilists were impressed by the fact that money is wealth swe generis, that it is at all- times in universal demand, and that it puts into the hands of its possessor the power of acquiring all other commodities. The period, again, was marked by the formation of great states, with powerful Governments at their head. These Governments required men and money for the maintenance of permanent armies, which, especially for the religious and Italian wars, were kept up on a great scale. Court expenses, too, were more lavish than ever before, and a larger number of civil officials was employed. The royal domains and dues were insufficient to meet these require- ments, and taxation grew with the demands of the monarchies. Statesmen saw that for their own political ends industry must flourish. But manufactures make possible a denser population and a higher total value of exports than agriculture; they open a less limited and more promptly extensible field to enterprise. Hence they became the object of special Governmental favour and patronage, whilst agriculture fell comparatively into the background. The growth of manufactures reacted on commerce, to which a new and mighty arena had been opened by the establishment of colonies. These were viewed simply as estates to be worked for the advantage of the mother countries, and the aim of statesmen was to make the colonial trade a new source of public revenue. Each nation, as a whole, working for its own power, and the greater ones for predominance, they entered into a com- petitive struggle in the economic no less than in the politi- cal field, success in the former being indeed, by the rulers, regarded as instrumental to pre- eminence in the latter. A national economic interest came to exist, of which the Government made itself the representative head. States became a sort of artificial hothouses for the rearing of urban industries. Production was subjected to systematic regulation with the object of securing the goodness and cheapness of the exported articles, and so maintaining the place of the nation in foreign markets. The industrial control was exercised, in part

directly by the state, but largely also through privileged corporations and trading companies. High duties on imports were resorted to, at first perhaps mainly for revenue, but afterwards in the interest of national production. Commercial treaties were a principal object of diplomacy, the end in view being to exclude the competition of other nations in foreign markets, whilst in the home market as little room as pos- sible was given for the introduction of anything but raw materials from abroad. The colonies were prohibited from trading with other European nations than the parent country, to which they supplied either the precious metals or raw produce purchased with home manufactures. It is evident that what is known as the mercantile doctrine was essentially the theoretic counterpart of the practical activities of the time, and that nations and Governments were led to it, not by any form of scientific thought, but by the force of outward circumstance, and the observation of facts which lay on the surface.

And yet, if we regard the question from the highest

point of view of philosophic history, we must pronounce the universal enthusiasm of this second modern phase for manufactures and commerce to have been essentially just, as leading the nations into the main avenues of general social development. If the thought of the period, instead of being impelled by contemporary circumstances, could have been guided by sociological prevision, it must have entered with zeal upon the same path which it empirically selected. The organization of agricultural industry could not at that period make any marked progress, for the direction of its operations was still in the hands of the feudal class, which could not in general really learn the habits of industrial life, or place itself in sufficient har- mony with the workers on its domains. The industry of the towns had to precede that of the country, and the latter had to be developed mainly through the indirect action of the former. And it is plain that it was in the life of the manufacturing proletariat, whose labours are necessarily the most continuous and the most social, that a systematic discipline could at a later period be first applied, to be afterwards extended to the rural populations.

That the efforts of Governments for the furtherance of manufactures and commerce were really effective towards that end is admitted by Adam

Smith, and cannot reason- ably be doubted, though free trade doctrinaires have often denied it. Technical skill must have been promoted by their encouragements ; whilst new forms of national pro- duction were fostered by attracting workmen from other countries, and by lightening the burden of taxation on struggling industries. Communication and transport by land and sea were more rapidly improved with a view to facilitate traffic; and, not the least important effect, the social dignity of the industrial professions was enhanced relatively to that of the classes before exclusively dominant.

It has often been asked to whom the foundation of the mercantile system, in the region whether of thought or of practice, is to be attributed. But the question admits of no absolute answer. That mode of conceiving economic facts arises spontaneously in unscientific minds, and ideas suggested by it are to be found in the Greek and Latin writers. The policy which it dictates was, as we have shown, inspired by the situation of the European nations at the opening of the modern period. Such a policy had

‘been already in some degree practised in the 14th and

15th centuries, thus preceding any formal exposition or defence of its speculative basis. At the commencement of the 16th century it began to exercise a widely ex- tended influence. Charles V. adopted it, and his example contributed much to its predominance. Henry VIII. and Elizabeth conformed their measures to it. The lead- ing states soon entered on a universal competition, in which each power brought into play all its political and financial resources for the purpose of securing to itself manufacturing and commercial preponderance. Through almost the whole of the 17th century the prize, so far as commerce was concerned, remained in the possession of Holland, Italy having lost her former ascendency by the opening of the new maritime routes, and Spain and Germany being depressed by protracted wars and internal dissensions. The admiring envy of Holland felt by English politicians and economists appears in such writers as Raleigh, Mun, Child, and Temple ; and how strongly the same spectacle acted on French policy is shown by a well-known letter of Colbert to M. de Pomponne, ambas- sador to the Dutch States. Cromwell, by his Navigation Act, which destroyed the carrying trade of Holland and founded the English empire of the sea, and Colbert, by his whole economic policy,

domestic and international, were the chief practical representatives of the mercantile system. From the latter great statesman the Italian

Scaruffi.

publicist Mengotti gave to that system the name of | Colbertismo; but it would be an error to consider the French minister as having absolutely accepted its dogmas. He regarded his measures as temporary only, and spoke of protective duties as crutches by the help of which manu- facturers might learn to walk and then throw them away. The policy of exclusions had been previously pursued by Sully, partly with a view to the accumulation of a royal treasure, but chiefly from his special enthusiasm for agriculture, and his dislike of the introduction of foreign luxuries as detrimental to the national character. Colbert's | tariff of 1664 not merely simplified but considerably | reduced the existing duties; the tariff of 1667 indeed increased them, but that was really a political measure | directed against the Dutch. It seems certain that France | owed in a large measure to his policy the vast development of trade and manufactures which so much impressed the imagination of coutemporary Europe, and of which we hear so much from English writers of the time of Petty. But this policy had also undeniably its dark side. Industry was forced by such systematic regulation to | follow invariable courses, instead of adapting itself to changing tastes and popular demand. Nor was it free to simplify the processes of production, or to introduce increased division of labour and improved appliances. Spontaneity, initiation, and invention were repressed or discouraged, and thus ulterior sacrificed in a great measure to immediate results. The more enlightened statesmen, and Colbert in particular, endeavoured, it is true, to mini- mize these disadvantages by procuring, often at great expense, and communicating to the trades through inspec- tors nominated by the Government, information respecting improved processes employed elsewhere in the several arts ; but this, though in some degree a real, was certainly on the whole, and in the long run, an insufficient com- pensation.

We nust not expect from the writers of this stage any exposition of political economy as a whole; the publica- tions which appeared were for the most

part evoked by special exigencies, and related to particular questions, usually of a practical kind, which arose out of the great movements of the time. They were in fact of the nature of counsels to the Governments of states, pointing out how best they might develop the productive powers at their disposal and increase the resources of their respective countries. They are conceived (as List claims for them) strictly in the spirit of national economy, and cosmopoli- tanism is essentially foreign to them. On these mono- graphs the mercantile theory sometimes had little influ- ence, the problems discussed not involving its tenets. But it must in most cases be taken to be the scheme of funda- mental doctrine (so far as it was ever entitled to such a |

description) which in the last resort underlies the writer's | conclusions.

The rise of prices following on the discovery of the American mines was one of the subjects which first attracted the attention of theorists. This rise brought about a great and gradually increasing disturbance of existing economic relations, and so produced mnch perplexity and anxiety, which were all the more felt because the cause of the change was not understood. To this was added the loss and inconvenience arising from the debasement of the currency often resorted to by sovereigns as well as by republican states. Italy suffered most from this latter abuse, which was multiplied by | her political divisions. It was this evil which called forth the | work of Count Gasparo Scaruffi (Discorso sopra le monete e della vera proporzione fra l'oro e largento, 1582). In this he put forward the bold idea of a universal money, everywhere identical in size, shape, composition, and designation. The project was, of course, premature, and was not adopted even by the Italian princes to whom the author specially appealed ; but the reform is one which, doubtless, the future will sce realized. Gian Donato Turbolo, master of the Neapolitan mint, in his Diseorsi e Relazioni, 1629, protested against any tampering with the currency. Another treatise relating to the subject of moncy was that of the Florentine

| stability of states.

POLITIC k# L UO N Ors

Bernardo Davanzati, otherwise known as the able translator of Tacitus, Leztont delle Monete, 1588. It is a slight and somewhat superficial production, only remarkable as written with conciseness and elegance of style.

A French writer who dealt with the question of money, but from Bodin.

a different point of view, was Jean Bodin. In his Képonse aux paradoxes de M. Malestroit touehant Venehérissement de toutes les ehoses et des monnates, 1568, and in his Diseours sur le rehaussement et diminution des monnaies, 1578, he showed a more rational appreciation than many of his contemporaries of the causes of the revolution in prices, and the relation of the variations in money to the market values of -wares in general as well as to the wages of labour. He saw that the amount of money in circulation did not

| constitute the wealth of the community, and that the prohibition

of the export of the precious metals was useless, because rendered inoperative by the necessities of trade. Bodin is no inconsiderable figure in the literary history of the epoch, and did not confine his attention to economic problems ; in his Six livres de la République, about 1576, he studies the general conditions of the prosperity and In harmony with the conditions of his age, he approves of absolute Governments as the most competent to cnsnre the security and wellbeing of their subjects. He enters into an elaborate defence of individual property against Plato and More,

_ rather perhaps because the scheme of his work required the treat-

ment of that theme than because it was practically urgent in his day, when the excesses of the Anabaptists had produced a strong feeling against communistic doctrines. He is under the general influence of the mercantilist views, and approves of energetic Governmental interference in industrial matters, of high taxes ou foreign manufactures and low duties on raw matcrials and articles of food, and attaches great importance to a dense population. But he is not a blind follower of the system ; he wishes for un-limited freedom of trade in many cases ; and he isin advance of his more eminent contemporary Montaigne in perceiving that the gain of one nation

is not necessarily the loss of another. To the public finances, which he calls the sinews of the state, he devotes much attention, and insists on the duties of the Government in respect to the right adjustment of taxation. In gencral he deserves the praise of stcadily kceping in view the higher aims and interests of society in connexion with the regulation and development of its material life.

Correct views as to the cause of the general rise of prices are also put forward by the English writer, W. S. (William Stafford), in his Briefe Conceipte of English Poliey, published in 1581, and dedicated to Queen Elizabeth. It is in the form of a dialogue, and is written with liveliness and spirit. The author seems to have been acquainted with the writings of Bodin. He has just ideas as

Stafford.

to the nature of money, and fully understands the evils arising –

from a debased coinage. He describes in detail the way in which the several interests in the country had been affected by such dcbase- ment in previous reigns, as well as by the change in the value of the precious metals. The great popular grievance of his day, the conversion of arable land into pasture, he attribntes chiefly to the restrictions on the export of corn, which he desires to see abolished. But in regard to manufactures he is at the same point of view with the later mercantilists, and proposes the exclusion of all foreign wares which might as well be provided at home, and the prohibition of the export of raw materials intended to be worked up abroad.

Out of the question of money, too, arose the first remarkable Albertine German production on political economy which had an origina] pamph- national character and addressed the public in the native tongue. Jets.

Duke George of the Ernestine Saxon line was inclined (15380) to introduce a debasement of the currency. A pamphlet, Gemetne

| Stymmen von der Mintze, was published in opposition to this pro-

ceeding, under the auspices of the Albertine branch, whose policy was sounder in the economic sphere no less than in that of ecclesiastical affairs. A reply appeared justifying the Ernestine project. This was followed by a rejoinder from the Albertine side. The Ernestine pamphlet is described by Roscher as ill-written, obscure, inflated, and, as might be expected from the thesis it maintained, sophistical. But it is interesting as containing a statement of the fundamental principles of the mercantile system more than one hundred years before the publication of Mun's book, and forty-six before that of Bodin's Siz livres de la République. The Albertine tracts, accord- ing to Roscher, exhibit such sound views of the conditions and evidences of national wealth, of the nature of money and trade, and of the rights and duties of Governments in relation to economic action, that he regards the unknown author as entitled to a place beside Raleigh and the other English ''colonial-theorists" of the end of the 16th and beginning of the 17th century.

In connexion with the same subject of money we meet the great Coper-

name of Copernicus. His treatise De monetxw eudendzx ratione, 1526 (first printed in 1816), was written by order of King Sigis- mund I., and is an exposition of the principles on which it was pro- posed to reform the currency of the Prussian provinces of Poland. It advocates unity of the monctary system throughout the cntire

nicus.

Serra.

Watte- ville.

Mun.

Child.

Por rrea Tt F-CO NOM Y

state, with strict integrity in the quality of the coin, and the charge of a seigniorage sufficient to cover the expenses of mintage.

Autonio Serra is regarded by some as the creator of modern political economy. He was a native of Cosenza in Calabria. Breve Trattato delle cause ehe possono fare abbondare li reqni doro e @Margento dove non sono miniere, 1613, was written during his imprisonment, which is believed to have been due to his having taken part in the conspiracy of Campanella for the liberation of Naples from the Spanish yoke and the establishment of a republican government. This work, long overlooked, was brought into notice in the following century by Galiani and others. Its title alone would sufficiently indicate that the author had adopted the principles of the nercantile system, and in fact in this treatise the essential doctrines of that system are expounded in a tolerably formal and consecutive manner. He strongly insists on the superiority of manufactures over agriculture as a source of national wealth, and uses in support of this view the prosperity of Genoa, Florence, and Venice, as contrasted with the depressed condition of Naples. With larger insight than many of the mercantilists exhibit, he points out the importance, towards the acquisition of wealth, not alone of favourable external conditions, but of energetic character and industrious habits in a population, as well as of a stable government and a good administration of the laws,

The first systematic treatise on our science which proceeded from a French author was the Traité de Economie Politique, published by Montchretien de Watteville in 1615. The use of the title, says Roscher, now for the first time given to the science, was in itself an important service, since even Bacon understood by “Economia” only the theory of domestic management. The general tendencies and aims of the period are seen in tle fact that this treatise, notwithstanding the comprehensive name it bears, does not deal with agriculture at all, but only with the mechanical arts, navigation, comnierce, and public finance. The author is filled with the then dominant enthusiasm for foreign trade and colonies. He advocates the control by princes of the industry of their subjects, and eondemns the too great freedom, which, in his opinion to their own detriment, the Governments of Spain, Portugal, and Holland had given to trade. His book may be regarded as a formal exposition of the principles of the mercantile system for the use of Frenchmen.

A similar office was performed in England by Thomas Mun. In his two works 4 Discourse of Trade from England unto the East Indies, 2d ed., 1621, and especially in Lngland's T'reasure by Foreign Trade,:1664 (posthumous), we have for the first time a clear and systematic statement of the theory of the balance of trade, as well as of the means by which, according to tle author's view, a favour- able balance could be secured for England. The great object of the economic policy of a state, according to him, should be so to manage its export of manufactures, its direct and carrying trade, and its customs duties as to attract to itself money from abroad. He was, however, opposed to the prohibition of the export of the precious metals in exchange for foreign wares, but on the ground, fully according with his general principles, that those wares might afterwards be re-exported and might then bring back more treasure than liad been originally expended in their purchase; the first export of money might be, as he said, the seed-time, of which the ultimate receipt of a larger amount would be the harvest. He saw, too, that it is inexpedient to have too much money circulating in a country, as this enhances the prices of commodities, and so makes them less saleable to foreigners, but he is favourable to the forma- tion and maintenance of a state treasure.

One of the most remarkable of the moderate mercantilists was Sir Josiah Child (Brief Observations eoncerning Trade and the Interest of Money, 1668, and A New Discourse of Trade, 1668 and 1690). He was one of those who held up Holland as a model for the imitation of his fellow-countrymen. He is strongly impressed with the importance for national wealth and wellbeing of a low rate of interest, which he says is to commerce and agriculture what the soul is to the body, and which he held to be the " cawsa causans of all the other causes of the riches of the Dutch people." Instead of regarding such low rate as dependent on detérminate eonditions, which should be allowed to evolve themselves spontaneously, he thinks it should be created and maintained by public authority. Child, whilst adhering to the doctrine of the balance of trade, observes that a people cannot always sell to foreigners without ever buying from them, and denies that the export of the precious metals is necessarily detrimental. He has the ordinary mercantilist partiality for a numerous population. He advocates the reservation by the mother country of the sole right of trade with her colonies, and, under

certain limitations, the formation of privileged trading companies. As to the Navigation Act, he takes up a position not

1 Writers of less importance who followed the same direetion were Sir Thomas Culpeper (4 Tract against the High Rate of Usury, 1623, and Useful Remark on Iligh Interest, 1641); Sir Dudley Digges (Defence of Trade, 1615); G. Malynes (Consuetudo vel Lex Mercatoria, 1622); E. Misselden (Cirele of Commerce, 1623); Samuel Fortrey (England's Interest and Improvement, 1663 and 1673); and John Pollexfen (England and India inconsistent in their Manufactures, 1697).

His |

unlike that afterwards occupied by Adam Smith, regarding that measure much more favourably from the political than from the economic point of view. It will be seen that he is somewhat eclectic in his opinions ; but he cannot properly be regarded, though some have attributed to him that character, as a precursor of the free- trade school of the 18th century.

Two other eclectics may be here mentioned, in whom just

{

Temple and Charles Davenant. upon the United Provinces of the Netherlands, 1672, and his Essay on the Trade of Ireland, 1673, has many excellent remarks on fundamental econoinic principles, as ou the functions of labour and of saving in the production of national wealth; but he is infected with the errors of the theory of the balance of trade. He follows the lead of Raleigh and Child in urging his fellow-countrynien to imitate the example of the Dutch in their economic policy—advice which in his case was founded on his observations during a lengthened residence in Holland as ambassador to the States.

,of Trade, 1699, &c., also takes up an eclectic position, combining some correct views on wealth and money with mercantilist notions on trade, and recommending Governmental restrictions on colonial

commerce as strongly as he advocates freedom of exchange at home.

Whilst the mercantile system represented the prevalent form of economic thought in the 17th century, and was alone dominant in the region of practical statesmanship, there was growing up, side by side with it, a body of opinion, different and indeed hostile in character, which was destined ultimately to drive it from the field. The new ideas were first developed in England, though it was in France that in the following century they took hold of the public mind, and became a power in politics. That they-should first show themselves here, and afterwards be extended, applied, and propagated throughout Europe by French writers, belongs to the order of things according to which the general negative doctrine in morals and politics, undoubtedly of English origin, found its chief home in France, and was thence diffused in widening circles through the civilized world. In England this movement of economic thought took the shape mainly of individual criticism of the prevalent doctrines, founded on a truer analysis of facts and conceptions; in France it was pene- trated with a powerful social sentiment, furnished the creed of a party, and inspired a protest against institutions and an urgent demand for practical reform.

Regarded from the theoretic side, the characteristic features of the new direction were the following. The view of at least the extreme mercantilists that national wealth depends on the accumulation of the precious metals is proved to be false, and the gifts of nature and the labour of man are shown to be its real sources. The exaggerated estimate of the importance of foreign com- merce is reduced, and attention is once more turned to agriculture and the conditions of its successful prosecu- tion. On the side of practical policy, a so-called favour- able balance of trade is seen not to be the true object of a nation’s or a statesman’s efforts, but the procuring for the whole population in the fullest measure the enjoyment of the necessaries and conveniences of life. And—what more than anything else contrasts the new system with the old —the elaborate apparatus of prohibitions, protective duties, bounties, monopolies, and privileged corporations, which the European Governments had created in the sup- posed interests of manufactures and trade, is denounced or deprecated as more an impediment than a furtherance, and the freedom of industry is insisted on as the one thing needful. This circle of ideas, of course, emerges only gradually, and

its earliest representatives in economic literature in general apprehend it imperfectly and advocate it with reserve ; but it rises steadily in importance, being more and more favoured by the highest minds, and finding _an increasing body of supporters amongst the intelligent | public.

views are mingled with mercantilist prejudices—Sir William Sir w. The former in his Observations ‘Temple.

Davenant, in his Essay on the East-India Trade, 1696-97, Essay Daven- on the Probable Ways of making the People Gainers in the Balance ant.

Hobbes.

Sir William Petty.

Sir Dudley North,

Locke,

308

Some occasional traits of an economic scheme in harmony with these new tendencies are to be found in the De Cive and Leviathan of Hobbes. But the efficacy of that great thinker lay rather in the general philosophic field; and by systematizing, for the first time, the whole negative doctrine, he gave a powerful impulse towards the demolition of the existing social order, which was destined, as we shall see, to have momentous consequences in the economic no less than in the strietly political department of things. .

A writer of no such extended range, but of much sagacity and good sense, was Sir WitL1AM Perry (qg.v.), author of a number of pieces containing germs of a sound economic doctrine. A leading thought in his writings is that “labour is the father and active prineiple of wealth, lands are the mother.” He divides a population into two classes, the productive and the unproductive, according as they are or are not occupied in producing useful material things. The value of any commodity depends, he says, anticipating Ricardo, on the amount of labour necessary for its produetion. He is desirous of obtaining a universal measure of value, and ehooses as his unit

the average food of the cheapest kind required for a man's daily sustenance. He understands the uature of the rent of land as the excess of price over the cost of production. He disapproves of the attempt to fix by authority a inaximum rate of interest, and is generally opposed to Governmental interference with the course of industry. He sees that a country requires for its exchanges a definite quautity of money and may have too much of it, and eondemns the prohibition of its exporta- tion. He holds that one only of the precious metals must be the foundation of the currency, the other circulating as an ordinary article of merehandise. Petty's name is specially associated with the progress of statistics, with which he was much occupied, and which he called by the name of political arithmetic. Relying on the results of such inquiries, he set himself strongly against the opinion which had been advanced by the author of Britannia Lan- guens (1680), Fortrey, Roger Coke, and other writers, that the prosperity of England was on the decline.

The inost thorough-going and emphatic assertion of the free- trade doctrine against the system of prohibitions which had gained strength by the Revolution was contained in Sir Dudley North's Discourses upon Trade, 1691. He shows that wealth may exist independently of gold or silver, its source being human industry, applied either to the cultivation of the soil or to manu- factures. 'The precious metals, however, are one element of national wealth, and perform highly important offices. Money may exist in excess, as well asin defect, in a eountry; and the quantity of it required for the purposes of trade will vary with cireum- stances ; its ebb and flow will regulatc themselves spontaneously. It is a mistake to suppose that stagnation of trade arises from want of money ; it must arise either from a glut of the home market, or from a disturbance of foreign eommerce, or from diminished con- sumption caused by poverty. The export of money in the eourse of traffic, instead of diminishing, increases the national wealth, trade being only an exchange of superfluities. Nations are related to the world just in the same way as cities to the state or as families to the city. North emphasizes more than his predecessors the value of the home trade. With respect to the interest of capital, he maintains that it depends, like the price of any commodity, on the proportion of demand and supply, and that a low rate is a result of the relative increase of capital, aud cannot be bronght about by arbitrary regulations, as had been proposed by Child and others. In

arguing the question of free trade, he urges that individuals often take their private interest as the measure of good and evil, and would for its sake debar others from their equal right of buy- ing and selling, but that every advantage given to one interest or branch of trade over another is injurious to the public. No trade is unprofitable to the public; if it were, it would be given up; when trades thrive, so does the public, of which they form a part. Prices must detcrmine themselves, and cannot be fixed by law; and all forcible interference with them docs harm instead of good. No people can become rich by state regulations,—only by peace, industry, freedom, and unimpeded economic activity. It will be seen how closely North's view of things approaches to that embodied some eighty years later in Adam Smith's great work.

Locke is represented by Roscher as, along with Petty and North, | making up the "triumvirate" of eminent British economists of |

this period who laid the foundations of a new and more rational doctrme than that of the mercantilists. But this view of his claims seems eapable of being accepted only with considerable de- ductions. His specially economic writings are Considerations of the lowering of Interest and raising the value of Money, 1691, and Further Considerations, 1698. Though Leibnitz declared with respect to these treatises that nothing more solid or intelligent eould be said on their subject, it is diffieult absolutely to adopt that verdict. Locke's spirit of sober observation and patient analysis led him indeed to some just conclusions ; and he is entitled

to the eredit of having energetically resisted the debasement of the currency,

held to be eminent practical authorities. But he falls into errors

whieh was then recommended by some who were |

PO LPT TULL "EE COwns Oe

which show that he had not by any means completely emancipated himself from the ideas of the mercantile system. He attaches far too much importance to money as such. He says expressly that riches consist in a plenty of gold and silver, that is, as he explains, in having nore in

proportion of those metals than the rest of the world or than our neighbours. ‘In a country not furnished with nines, there are but two ways of growing rieh, either conquest or eommerce.” Hence he accepts the doctrine of the balance of trade. He shows that the rate of interest can no more be fixed by law than the rent of houses or the hire of ships, and opposes Child’s demand for legislative intcrference with it: But he erroneously attributed the fall of the rate which had taken place generally in Europe to the increase of the quantity of gold and silver by the discovery of the American mines. He sets too absolute a value on a numerous population, in this point agreeing with Petty. On wages he observes that the rate must be such as to cover the indispensable wants of the labourer; when the price of subsistence rises, wages must rise in a like ratio, or the working population must come on the poor-rates. The fall of the rent of land he regards as a snre sign of the decline of national wealth. ‘‘Taxes, however contrived, and out of whose hands soever immediately taken, do, in a country where their great fund is in land, for the most part terminate upon land.” In this last proposition we see a foreshadowing of the impét unique of the physiocrats. Whatever may have been Locke’s direct economic services, his principal importance, like that of Hobbes, lies in his general philosophic and political principles, which power- fully affected French and indeed European thought, exciting a spirit of opposition to arbitrary power, and laying the foundation of the doctrine developed in the Contrat Social.}

THIRD MODERN PHASE: SYSTEM OF NATURAL LIBERTY.

Both in England and France the ruling powers had already begun to be alarmed by the subversive tendencies which a)jpeared inherent in the modern movement, and took up in consequence an attitude of resistance. Reaction became triumphant in France during the latter half of the reign of Louis XIV. under the disastrous influence of Madame de Maintenon. In England, after the transaction of 1688, by which the government was consolidated on the double basis of aristocratic power and official orthodoxy, the state policy became not so much retrograde as stationary, industrial conquest being put forward to satisfy the middle class and wean it from tlie pursuit of a social renovation. In both countries there was for some time a noticeable check in the intellectual development, and Roscher and others have observed that, in economic studies particularly, the first three

decades of the 18th century were a period of general stagnation, eclecticism for the most part taking the place of originality. The movement was, however, soon to be resumed, but with an altered and more formid- able character. The negative doctrine, which had risen and taken a definite form in England, was diffused and popularized in France, where it became evident, even before the decisive explosion, that the only possible issue lay in a radical social transformation. The partial schools of Voltaire and Rousseau in different ways led up to a violent crisis, whilst taking little thought of the conditions of a system which could replace the old; but the more complete and organic school, of which Diderot is the best representative, looked through freedom to reorganization. Its constructive aim is shown by the design of the Hncy- clopédie,—a project, however, which could have only a temporary success, because no real synthesis was forth- coming, and this joint production of minds often divergent could possess no more than an external unity. It was with this great school that the physiocrats were specially connected; and, in common with its other members, whilst

1 Minor English writers who followed the new economic direction wcre Lewis Roberts, Treasure of Trafick, 1641; Rice Vaughan, Discourse of Coin and Coinage, 1675; Nicholas Barbon, Discourse concerning Coining the new money lighier, 1696, inwhichsome of Locke’s crrors were pointed out; and the author of an anonymous | book entitled Considerations on the East India Trade, 1701. Practical questions much debated at this period were those connected with banking, on which a | lengthened controversy took place, S. Lamb, W. Potter, F. Cradocke, M. Lewis, | M. Godfrey, R. Murray, H. Chamberlen, and W. Paterson, founder of the Bank of England (1694), producing many pamplicts on the subject; and the manage- , Ment of the poor, which was treated by Locke, Sir Matthew Hale, R, Haines, ; 2. Firmin, and others..

Bois- guille- bert.

Per taro Lk CON O MY

| and furtherance ; that the often despised and wronged lower class

pushing towards an entire change of the existing system, they yet would gladly have avoided political demolition through the exercise of a royal dictatorship, or contemplated it only as the necessary condition of a new and better order of things. But, though marked off by such tendencies from the purely revolutionary sects, their method and funda- mental ideas were negative, resting, as they did, essenti- ally on the basis of the jus nature. We shall follow in detail these French developments in their special relation to economic science, and afterwards notice the correspond- ing movements in other European countries which showed themselves before the appearance of Adam Smith, or were at least unaffected by his influence.

1. Before Adam Smith.

france.—The more liberal, as well as more rational, principles put forward by the English thinkers of the new type began, early in the 18th century, to find an echo in France, where the clearer and more vigorous intellects were prepared for their reception by a sense of the great evils which exaggerated mercantilism, serving as instru- ment of political ambition, had produced in that country. The impoverished condition of the agricultural population, the oppressive weight and unequal imposition of taxation, and the unsound state of the public finances had produced a general feeling of disquiet, and led several distinguished writers to protest strongly against the policy of Colbert and to demand a complete reform.

The most important amongst them was Pierre Boisguillebert, whose whole life was devoted to these controversies. In his statistical writings (Détail de la France sous le régne présent, 1697 ; Faetum de la Franee, 1707) he brings out in gloomy colours the dark side of the age of Louis XIV., and in his theoretic works (Traité de la nature et du ecommerce des grains ; Dissertations sur la nature des richesses de Vargent et des tributs ; and Essai sur la rareté de V’argent) he appears as an earnest, even passionate, antagonist of the mercantile school. He insists again and again on the fact that national wealth does not consist in gold and silver, but in useful things, foremost among which are the products of agriculture. He

even goes so far as to speak of “argent criminel,” which from’ >

being the slave of trade, as it ought to be, had become its tyrant. He sets the " genuinely French Sully" far above the " Italianizing Colbert," and condemns all arbitrary regulations affecting either foreign or internal commerce, especially as regards the corn trade. National wealth does not depend on Governments, whose inter- ference does more harni than good; the natural laws of the economic order of things eannot be violated or neglected with impunity ; the interests of the several classes of society in a system of freedom are identical, and those of individuals coincide with that of the state. A similar solidarity exists between different nations; in their eco- nomic dealings they are related to the world as individual towns to a nation, and not merely plenty, but peace and harmony, will result from their unfettered intercourse. Men he divides into two classes —those who do nothing and enjoy everything, and those who labour from morning to night often without earning a bare subsistence;

- the latter he would favour in every way. Here wecatch the breath

Vauban.

of popular sympathy which fills the social atmosphere of the 18th century. He dwells with special emphasis on the claims of agriculture, which had in France fallen into unmerited neglect, and with a view to its improvement calls for a reform in taxation. He would replace indirect taxes by taxes on income, and would restore the payment of taxes in kind, with the object of securing equality of burden and eliminating every element of the arbitrary. He has some interesting views of a general character: thus he approximates to a correct conception of agricultural rent; and he points to the order in which human wants follow each other, —those of necessity, convenience, comfort, superfluity, and ostentation suc- ceeding in the order named,-and ceasing in the inverse order to be felt as wealth decreases. The depreciating tone in which Voltaire speaks of Boisguillebert (Siecle de Lowis XIV., chap. 30) is certainly not justified; he had a great economic talent, and his writings contain important germs of truth. But he appears to have exerted little influence, theoretical or practical, in his own time.

The same general line of thought was followed by the illustrious Vauban in his economic tracts, especially that bearing the title of Projet d'une dixme Royale, 1707. He is deeply impressed with the deplorable condition of the

working classes of France in his day. He urges that the aim of the Government should be the welfare of all orders of the community; that all are entitled to like favour

O09

is the basis of the social organization ; that labour is the foundation of all wealth, and agriculture the most important species of labour; that the most essential condition of successful industry is freedom ; and that all unnecessary or excessive restrictions on manufactures and commerce should be swept away. He protests in particular against the inequalities of taxation, and the exemptions and privileges enjoyed by the higher ranks. With the exception of some duties on consumption he would abolish all the existing taxes, and substitute for them a single tax on income and land, imparti- ally applied to all classes, which he describes under the name of " Dixme Royale," that is to say, a tenth in kind of all agricultural produce, and a tenth of money income chargeable on manufacturers and traders.

The liberal and humane spirit of Fénelon led hin: to aspire after freedom of commerce with foreign nations, and to preach the doc- trine that the true superiority of one state over another lies in the number indeed, but also in the morality, intelligence, and indus- trious habits of its population. The Z'élémaque, in which these views were presented in an attractive form, was welcomed and read amougst all ranks and classes, and was thus an effective organ for the propagation of opinion.

After these writers there is a marked blank in the field of French economic thought, broken only by the Réflexions Politiques sur les Finanees et le Commerce (1738) of Dutot, a pupil of Law, and the semi-mercantilist Essais Politiques sur le Commeree (1781) of Mélon, till we come to the great name of Montesquieu. The Esprit des Lois, so far as it deals with economic subjects, is written upon the whole from a point of view adverse to the mercantile system, especially in his treatment of money, though in his observations on colonies and elsewhere he falls in witli the ideas of that system. His immortal service, howéver, was not rendered by any special research, but by his enforcement of the doctrine of natural laws regulating social no less than physical phenomena. There is no other thinker of

importance on economic subjects in France till the appearance of the physiocrats, which marks an epoch in the history of the science.

The heads of the physiocratic school were Francois Quesnay (1694-1774) and Jean Claude Marie Vincent, sieur de Gournay (1712-1759). The principles of the school had been put forward in 1755 by Cantillon, a French merchant of Irish extraction (Hssai sur la nature du Commerce en général), whose biography Jevons has elucidated, and whom he regards as the true founder of political economy; but it was in the hands of Quesnay and Gournay that they acquired a systematic form, and became the creed of a united group of thinkers and practical men, bent on carrying them into action. The members of the group called themselves “les économistes,” but it is more convenient, because unambiguous, to designate them by the name “ physiocrates,” invented by Dupont de Nemours, who was one of their number. In this name, intended to express the fundamental idea of the school, much more is implied than the subjection of the phenomena of the social, and in particular the economic, world to fixed rela- tions of co-existence and succession. This is the positive doctrine which lies at the bottom of all true science. But the law of nature referred to in the title of the sect was something quite different. The theological dogma which represented all the movements of the universe as directed by divine wisdom and benevolence to the production of the greatest possible sum of happiness had been trans- formed in the hands of the metaphysicians into the con- ception of a jus nature, a harmonious and beneficial code established by the favourite entity of these thinkers, Nature, antecedent to human institutions, and furnishing the model to which they should be made to conform. This idea, which Buckle apparently supposes to have been an invention of Hutcheson’s, had come down through Roman juridical theory from the speculations of Greece. It was taken in hand by the modern negative school from Hobbes to Rousseau, and used as a powerful weapon of assault upon the existing order of society, with which the “natural ” order was perpetually contrasted as offering the perfect type from which fact had deplorably diverged. The theory received different applications according to the diversity of minds or circumstances. By some it was

Fénelon.

Montes- quien.

Physio- crats.

360

directed against the artificial manners of the times," by others against contemporary political institutions ; it was specially employed by the physiocrats in criticizing the economic practice of European Governments. >

The general political doctrine is as follows. Society is composed of a number of individuals all having the same natural rights. If all do not possess (as some members of the negative school maintained) equal capacities, each can at least best understand his own interest, and is led by nature to follow it. The social union is really a contract between these individuals, the object of which is the limitation of the natural freedom of each, just so far as it is inconsistent with the rights of the others. Government, though necessary, is a necessary evil; and the governing power appointed by consent should be limited to the amount of interference absolutely required to secure the fulfilment of the contract. In the economic sphere, this implies the right of the individual to such natural enjoyments as he can acquire by his labour. That labour, therefore, should be undisturbed aud unfettered; and its fruits should be guaranteed to the possessor; in other words, property should be sacred. Each citizen must be allowed to make the most of his labour; and therefore freedom of exchange should be ensured, and competition in the market should be unrestricted, no monopolies or privileges being permitted to exist.

The physiocrats then proceed with the econoniic analysis | Only those labours are truly '" productive"

as follows. which add to the quantity of raw materials available for the purposes of man; and the real annual addition to the wealth of the community consists of the excess of the inass of agricultural products (including, of course, metals) over their cost of production. On the amount of this "produit net" depends the wellbeing of the community, and the possibility of its advance in civilization. The manufacturer merely gives a

new form to the materials extracted from the earth; the higher value of the object, after it has passed through his hands, only represents the quantity of provisions and other materials used and con- sumed in its elaboration. Commerce does nothing more than transfer the wealth already existing from one hand to another; what the trading classes gain thereby is acquired at the cost of the nation, and it is desirable that its amount should be as small as possible. The occupa- tions of the manufacturer and merchant, as well as the

"useful" indeed, but they are "sterile," drawing their income, not from any fund which they themselves create, but from the superfluous earnings of the agriculturist. Perfect freedom of trade not only rests, as we have already seen, on the foundation of natural right, but is also recom- mended by the consideration that it makes the " produit net," on which all wealth and general progress depend, as large as possible. " Laissez faire, laissez passer" should therefore be the motto of Governments. The revenue of the state, which must be derived altogether from this net product, ought to be raised in the most direct and simplest way,—namely, by a single impost of the nature of a land tax.

The special doctrine relating to the exclusive produc- tiveness of agriculture arose out of a confusion between "value" on the one hand and " matter and energy " on the other. Smith and others have shown that the attempt to fix the character of "sterility" on manufactures and commerce was founded in error. And the proposal of a single ¢mpét territorial falls to the ground with the doctrine on which it was based. But such influence as the school exerted depended little, if at all, on these peculiar tenets, which indeed some of its members did not hold, The effective result of its teaching was mainly destructive. It

FO LTRDPCAL Lor og

continued in a more systematic form the efforts in favour of the freedom of industry already begun in England and France. The essential historical office of the physiocrats was to discredit radically the methods followed by the European Governments in their dealings with industry. For such criticism as theirs there was, indeed, ample room: the policy of Colbert, which could be only tempor- arily useful, had been abusively extended and

intensified ; Governmental action had intruded itself into the minutest details of business, and every process of manufacture and transaction of trade was hampered by legislative restric- tions. It was to be expected that the reformers should, in the spirit of the negative philosophy, exaggerate the vices of established systems; and there can be no doubt that they condenined too absolutely the economic action of the state, both in principle and in its historic manifesta- tions, and pushed the “laissez faire” doctrine beyond its just mits. But this was a necessary incident of their connexion with the revolutionary movement, of which they really formed one wing. In the course of that movement, the primitive social contract, the sovereignty of the people, and other dogmas now seen to be untenable were habitually invoked in the region of politics proper, and had a transitory utility as ready and effective instru- ments of warfare. And so also in the economic sphere the doctrines of natural rights of buying and selling, of the sufficiency of enlightened selfishness as a guide in mutual dealings, of the certainty that each member of the society will understand and follow his true interests, and of the coincidence of those interests with the public welfare, though they will not bear a dispassionate examination, were temporarily useful as convenient and serviceable weapons for the overthrow of the established order. The tendency of the school was undoubtedly to consecrate the spirit of individualism, and the state of non-government. But this tendency, which may with justice be severely condemned in economists of the present time, was then excusable because inevitable. And, whilst it now impedes the work of reconstruction which is for us the order of the day, it then aided the process of social demolition, which was the necessary, though deplorable, condition of a new organization.

These conclusions as to the revolutionary tendencies of the school are not at all affected by the fact that the form

| of government preferred by Quesnay and some of his chief liberal professions, and every kind of personal service, are |

followers was what they called a legal despotism, which should embrace within itself both the legislative and the executive function. The reason for this preference was that an enlightened central power could more promptly and efficaciously introduce the policy they advocated than an assembly

representing divergent opinions, and fettered by constitutional checks and limitations. Turgot, as we know, used the absolute power of the crown to carry into effect some of his measures for the liberation of industry, though he ultimately failed because unsustained by the requisite force of character in Louis XVI. But what the physiocratic idea with respect to the normal method of government was appears from Quesnay's advice to the dauphin, that when he became king he should "do nothing, but let the laws rule," the laws having been of course first brought into conformity with the jus nature. The partiality of the school for agriculture was in harmony with the sentiment in favour of "nature" and primitive simplicity which then showed itself in so many forms in France, especially in combination with the revolutionary spirit, and of which Rousseau was the most eloquent exponent. It was also associated in these writers with a just indignation at the wretched state in which the rural labourers of France had been left by the scandalous neglect of the superior orders of society—a state of which the

Quesnay.

Gournay.

V. Mira- beau.

Dupont de

Nemours.

rower frre: HeC oO N Ow Y

terrible picture drawn by La Bruyére is an indestructible record. The members of the physiocratic group were undoubtedly men of thorough uprightness, and inspired with a sincere desire for the public good, especially for the material and moral elevation of the working classes. Quesnay was physician to Louis XV., and resided in the palace at Versailles; but in the midst of that corrupt court he maintained his integrity, and spoke with manly frankness what he believed to be the truth. And never did any statesman devote himself with greater singleness of purpose or more earnest

endeavour to the service of his country than Turgot, who was the principal practical representative of the school.

The publications in which Quesnay expounded his system were the following :—two articles, on “ Fermiers” and on “Grains,” in the Encyclopédie of Diderot and D’Alembert (1756, 1757) ; a discourse on the law of nature in the Physiocratie of Dupont de Nemours (1768); Afaximes générales de gouvernement économique dun royaume agricole (1758), and the simultaneously published Tableau Economique avec son explication, ow Extrait des Economies Royales de Sully (with the celebrated motto “pauvres paysans, pauvre royaume; pauvreroyaume, pauvreroi”); Dialogue sur le commerce et les travaux des artisans ; and other minor pieces. The Tableau Economique, though on account of its dryucss and abstract form it met with little general favour, may be considered the principal manifesto of the school. It was regarded by the followers of Quesnay as entitled to a place amongst the foremost products of human wisdom, and is nained by the elder Mirabeau, in a passage quoted by Adam Smith, as one of the three great inventions which have contributed most to the stability of political societies, the other two being those of writing and of money. Its object was to exhibit by means of certain formulas the way in which the products of agriculture, which is the only source of wealth, wonld in a state of perfect liberty be distributed among the several classes of the community (namely, the productive classes of the proprietors and cultivators of land, and the unproductive class composed of manu- facturers and merchants), and to represeut by other formulas the modes of distribution which take place under systems of Govern- mental restraint and regulation, with the evil results arising to the whole society from different degrees of such violations of the natural order. It follows from Quesnay’s theoretic views that the one thing deserving the solicitude of the practical economist and the statesman is the increase of the net product; and he infers also what Smith afterwards affirmed ou not quite the same ground, that the interest of the landowner is “‘strictly and indissolubly connected with the general interest of the society.”

Jean V. Gournay, as we have seen, was regarded as one of the founders of the school, and appears to have exercised some influence even upon the formation of Quesnay’s own opinions. With the exception of a translation of

Sir Josiah Child, Gournay wrote nothing but memoirs addressed to ministers, which have not seen the light; but we have a full statement of his views in the Lloge dedicated to his memory by his illustrious friend Turgot. Whilst Quesnay had spent his youth amidst rural scenes, and had been carly familiar with the labours of the field, Gournay had been bred as a merchant, and had passed from the counting- house to the office of intendant of commerce. They thus approached the study of political economy from different sides, and this diversity of their antecedents may in part explain the amount of divergence which cxisted between their views. Gournay softened the rigour of Quesnay's system, and brought it nearer to the truth, by rejecting what Smith calls its "capital crror" —the doctrine, namely, of the unproductiveness of manufactures and commerce. He directed his efforts to the assertion and vindication of the principle of industrial liberty, and it was by him that this principle was formulated in the phrase, since so often heard for good and for evil, "Laissez faire, laissez passer." One of the earliest and most com- plete adherents of the physiocratic school, as well as an ardent and unwearied propagator of its doctrines, was Victor Mirabeau, whose sincere and independent, though somewhat perverse and whimsical, character is familiar to English readers through Carlyle's essay on his more celebrated son. He had expressed some physiocratic views earlier than Quesnay, but owned the latter for his spiritual father, and adopted most of his opinions, the principal difference being that he was favourable to the petite as opposed to the grande culture, which latter was preferred by his chief as giving, not indeed the largest gross, but the largest net product. Mirabeau's principal writing's were Ami des Hommes, ow traité sur la population (1756, 1760), Théorie de Vimpét (1760), Les Economiques (1769), and Philosophie rurale, ou Economie générale et politique de? Agriculture (1763). The last of these was the earliest complete exposition of the physiocratic system. Another earnest and persevering apostle of the system was Dupont de Nemours (1739-1817), known by his

O61

treatises "De Pexportation et de UVimportation des grains (1764), De Vorigine et des progres d'une science nouvelle (1767), Du eommerce de la Compagnie des Indes (1767), and especially by his nore com- prehensive work Phystocratie, ou Constitution naturelle du gouverne- ment le plus

avantageux au genre humain (1768). The title of this work gave, as has been already mentioned, a name to the school.

Another formal exposition of the system, to which Adam Smith Lariviére.

refers as ‘‘the most distinct and best connected account” of it, was produced by Mercier-Lariviére, under the title L’Ordre naturel et essentiel des sociétés politiques (1767), a title which is interesting as embodying the idea of the gus nature. Both he and Dupont de Nemours professed to study human communities, not only in rela- tion to their economic, but also to their political and general social aspects ; but, notwithstanding these larger pretensions, their views were commonly restricted in the main to the economic sphere ; at least material considcrations decidedly preponderated in their inquiries, as was naively indicated by Lariviére when he said, “Property, security, liberty—these comprise the whole social order ; the right of property is a tree of which all the institutions of society arc branches.”

» The most eminent member of the group was without doubt Anne Turgot.

Robert Jacques Turgot (1727-1781). This is not the place to speak of his noble practical activity, first as intendant of Limoges, and afterwards for a bricf period as finance minister, or of the circum- stances which led to his removal from office, and the consequent failure of his efforts for the salvation of France. His economic views are explained in the introductions to his edicts and ordi- nances, in letters and occasional papers, but especially in his Réflexions sur la formation et la distribution des richesses (1766). This is a condensed but eminently clear and attractive exposition of the fundamental principles of political economy, as they were conceived by the physiocrats. It embodies, indeed, the erroneous no Jess than the sound doctrines of that school ; but several sub- jects, especially the various forms of land-economy, the different cinployments of capital, and the legitimacy of interest, are handled in a generally just as well as striking manner ; and the mode of presentation of the ideas, and the luminous arrangement of the whole, are Turgot’s own. The treatise, which contains a surprising amouut of matter in proportion to its length, must always retain a place among the classics of the science.

The physiocratic school never obtained much direct popular influence, even in its native country, though it strongly attracted many of the more gifted and earnest minds. Its members, writing on dry subjects in an austere and often heavy style, did not find acceptance with a public which demanded before all things charm of manner in those who addressed it. When Morellet, one of their number, entered the lists with Galiani, it was seen how esprit and eloquence could triumph over science, solid indeed, but clumsy in its movements. The physio- cratic tenets, which were in fact partially erroneous, were regarded by many as chimerical, and were ridiculed in the contemporary literature, as, for example, the apédt unique by Voltaire in his L'homme aux quarante écus, which was directed in particular against Mercier-Larivicre. It was justly objected to the group that they were too absolute in their view of things; they supposed, as Smith remarks in speaking of Quesnay, that the body politic could thrive only under one precise régime,—that, namely, which they recommended,—and thought their doctrines universally and immediately applicable in practice. They did not, as theorists, sufficiently take into account national diversities, or different stages in social development ; nor did they, as politicians, adequately estimate the impedi- ments which ignorance, prejudice, and interested opposi- tion present to enlightened statesmanship. It is possible that Turgot himself, as Grimm suggests, owed his failure in part to the too unbending rigour of his policy and the absence of any attempt at conciliation. Be this as it may, his defeat helped to impair the credit of his principles, which were represented as having been tried and found wanting. wee.

The physiocratic system, after guiding in some degree the policy of the Constituent Assembly, and awakening a few echoes here and there in foreign countries, soon ceased to exist as a living power; but the good elements it com- prised were not lost to mankind, being incorporated into

Bandini.

Genovesi.

Galiani,

the sounder and more complete construction of Adam Smith.

Italy.—In Italy, as in the other European nations, there was little activity in the economic field during the first half of the 18th century. It was then, however, that a really remarkable man appeared, the archdeacon Salustio Antonio Bandini (1677-1760), author of the Discorso sulla Maremma Sienese, written in 1737, but not published till 1775. The object of the work was to raise the Maremma from the wretched condition into which it had fallen through the decay of agriculture. This decay he showed to be, at least in part, the result of the wretched fiscal system which was in force ; and his book led to important reforms in Tuscany, where his name is held in high honour. Not only by Pecchio and other Italian writers, but by Roscher also, he is alleged to have anticipated some leading doc-

trines of the physiocrats, but this claim is disputed. There |

was a remarkable renascence of economic studies in Italy during the latter half of the century, partly due to French influence, and partly, it would appear, to improved govern- ment in the northern states.

The movement at first followed the lines of the mercantile school. Thus, in Antonio Broggia's Z'rattati dei tributi e delle monete c del governo politico della societa (1743), and Girolamo Belloni's Dis- sertazione sopra il commercto (1750), which seems to have had a success and reputation much above its merits, mercantilist tendencies decidedly preponderatc. But the most distinguished writer who re- presented that economic doctrine in Italy in the last century was Antonio Genovesi, a Neapolitan (1712-1769). He felt deeply the depressed intellectual and moral state of his fellow-countrymen, and aspired after a revival of philosophy and reform of education as the first condition of progress and wellbeing. With the object of protect- ing him from the theological persecutions which threatened him on account of his advanced opinions, Bartolomeo Intieri, of whom we shall hear again in relation to Galiani, founded in 1755, ex- pressly for Genovesi, a chair of commerce and mechanics, one of the conditions of foundation

being that it should never be filled by a monk. This was the first professorship of economics established in Europe ; the second was founded at Stoekholm in 1758, and the third in Lombardy ten years later, for Beccaria. he fruit of the labours of Genovesi in this chair was his Leztoni di commercio, ossia di cconomia civile (1769), which contained the first systematic treatment of the whole subject which had appeared in Italy. As the model for Italian imitation he held up England, a country for which, says Pecchio, he had a predilection almost amounting to fanaticism. He docs not rise above the false economic system which England then pursued ; but he rejects some of the grosser errors of the school to which he belonged ; he advocates the freedom of the corn trade, and deprecates regulation of the interest on loans. In the spirit of his age, he denounces the relics of medieval lustitutions, such as entails and tenures in mortmain, as impedi-

ments to the national prosperity. Ferdinando Galiani was another |

distinguished disciple of the mercantile school. Before he had comn- pleted his twenty-first year he published a work on moncy (Della moncta libri cinque, 1750), the principles of which are supposed to have been dictated by two experienced practical men, the marquis Rinuccini and Bartolomco Iutieri, whose name we have already met, But his reputation was made by a book written in French and published in Paris, where he was secretary of embassy, in 1770, namely, his Dialogues sur le commerce des blés. This work, by its light and pleasing style, and the vivacious wit with which it abounded, delighted Voltaire, who spoke of it as a book in the pro- duction of which Plato and Molitre might have been combined ! The author, says Pecchio, treated his arid subject as Fontenelle did the vortices of Descartes, or Algarotti the Newtonian systcm of the world. The question at issue was that of the freedom of the corn trade, then much agitated, and, in particular, the policy of the royal edict of 1764, which permitted the exportation of grain so long as the price had not arrived at a certain height. The general principle he maintains is that the best system in regard to this trade is to have no system, —countries differently circumstanced requiring, ac- cording to him, different modes of treatment. This seems a lame and impotent conelusion from the side of science; yet doubtless the physiocrats, with whom his controversy lay, prescribed on this, as on other snbjects,

rules too rigid for the safe guidance of statesmen, and Galiani may have rendered a real service by protesting against their absolute solutions of practical problems. He fell, however, into some of the most serious errors of the mercantilists, —holding, as indeed did also Voltaire and even Verri, that one country cannot gain without another losing, and in his earlier treatise going so far as to defend the action of Governments in debasing the currency.

Amongst the Italian cconoinists who were most under the influ-

ence of the modern spirit, and in closest harmony with the general movement which was impelling the Western nations towards a new social order, Cesare Beccaria (1738-1794) holds a foremost place. He is best known by his celcbrated treatise Dei dclitti e delle pene, by which Voltaire said he had made himsclf a benefactor of all Europe, and which, we are told, has been translated into twenty-two languages. The empress Catherine having invited him to fix his residence at St Petersburg, the Austrian Govcrument of Lombardy, in order to keep him at home, established expressly for him a chair of political economy; and in his Lilementi di economia pubblica (1769-1771 ; not published, however, till 1804) are embodied his teachings as professor. The work is unfinished: he had divided the whole subject under the heads of agriculture, manufactures, commerce, taxation, government; but he has treated adequately only the first two heads, and the last two not at all, having been called to take part in the councils of the state. He was in some degree uuder the influence of physiocratic ideas, and holds that agriculture is the only strictly productive form of industry, whilst manufacturers and artisans arc a sterile class. He was strongly opposed to monopolics and privileges, and to corporations in arts and trades ; in general he warmly advocated interna] industrial frecdom, though in regard to foreign commerce a protectionist. In the special case of the corn trade he was not, any more than Galiani, a partisan of absolute liberty. His exposition of economic principles is concise and sententious, and he often states correctly the most important considerations relating to his subject without adding the devclopments which would be desirable to assist comprehension and strengthen conviction. Thus on

“production capital” (capitali fondatori), as distinct from ‘‘revenue capital,” in its application to agriculture, he presents in a condeused form essentially the same explanations as Turgot about the same time gave; and on the division of labour and the circumstances which cause different rates of wages iu different employments, he in substance comes near to Smith, but without the flee of illustration which is so attrac- tive a feature of the Wealth of Nations. Pictro Verri (1728-1797), an intimate and life-long friend of Beccaria, was for twenty-five years one of the principal directors of the administration of Lom- bardy, in which capacity he originated many economic and other reforms. In his Riflessioni sulle leggi vincolanti, principalmente nel commercio de’ grant (written in 1769, printed in 1796), he con- siders the question of the regulation of the corn trade both histori- cally and in the light of theoretic principles, and arrives at the conclusion that liberty is the best remedy against famine and against excessive fluctuations of price. He is generally opposed to Governmental interference with internal cominerce, as well as to trade corporations, and the attempts to limit prices or fix the rate of intcrest, but is in favour of the protection of national industry by a judiciously framed tariff. These views are explained in his Meditazioni sul? economia politica (1771), an elementary treatise on the-science, which was received with favour, and translated into several forcign languages. A primary principle with him is what he calls the augmentation of reproduction—that is, in Smith’s language, of “ the annual produce of the land and labour” of a nation ; and by its tendency to promote or to restrict this augmentation he tests every enactment and institution. Accordingly, unlike Beccaria, he prefers the petite to the grande cultwre, as giving a larger total pro- duce. In dealing with taxation, he rejects the physiocratic pro-

| posal of a single impét territorial. Giovanni R. Carli (1720-1795),

also an official promoter of the reforms in the government of Austrian Lombardy, besides learned and sound treatises on money, was author of Ragionamenti sopra % bilanci economic delle naziont, in which he shows the falsity of the notion that a state gains or loses in foreign commerce according to the so-called balance of trade. Iu his letter to Pompeo Neri Sul libero commercio de’ grani (1771), he takes up a position similar to that of Galiani, regarding the question of the freedom of the corn trade as not so

much a scientific as an administrative one, to be dealt with differently under different local or other conditions. Rejecting the physiocratic doctrine of the exclusive productiveness of agriculture, he illustrates in an interest- ing way the necessity of various economic classes in a society, and the reflex agency of manufactures in stimulating the cultivation of the soil. several questions proposed by academies and sovereigns. In these he condemns trade corporations and the attempts by Governments to fix the price of bread and to limit the interest on loans. In advocating the system of a peasant proprietary, he suggests that the law should determine the minimum and maximum portions of land which a citizen should be permitted to possess. He also, with a view to prevent the undue accumulation of property, proposes the abolition of the right of bequest, and the equal division of the inheritance amongst the children of the deccased. Filangieri (1752-1788), one of the Italian writers of the last century whose names are most widely known throughout Europe, devoted to economic questions the second book of his Scienza della Icgis- lazione (5 vols., 1780-1785). Filled with reforming ardour and a passionate patriotism, he employed his vehement eloquence in denouncing all the abuses of his time. Apparently without any

Verri.

Carli.

Giambattista Vasco (1733-1796) wrote discourses on Vasco.

Gaetano Filan-

gieri.

Ricci. of national and universal progress. Ludovico Ricci (1742-1799) | that the real sources of the wealth and power of his country must was author of an able report Sulla riforma degli istituti pii della | be sought, not in America, but im her own industry. citta di Modena (1787). He treated the subject of poor relief and ; ; charitable institutions in so general a way that the work possesses In both Italy and Spain, as is well observed by Comte,

a universal and permanent interest. He dwells on the evils of | the impulse towards social change took principally the

indiscriminate relief as tending to increase the misery it seeks to | direction of economic reform, because the pressure exercised

remove, and as lowering the moral character of a population. He eer ” d 1

exposes especially the abuses connected with lying-in and foundling | PY “Overnments prevented so large a measure of free

hospitals. There is much in him which is akin to the views | Speculation in the fields of philosophy and general politics

of Malthus; like him he is opposed to any state provision for the | as was possible in France. In Italy, it may be added, the _ destitute, who ought, he thinks, to be left to voluntary private | traditions of the great industrial past of the northern

Paoletti. beneficence. Ferdinando Paoletti (1717-1801) was an excclllent oe f dhat ‘ 4eRaed 6 : hiefl and public-spirited priest, who did much for the diffusion of | CUES Ot that country also tended to fix attention chiefly intelligence amougst the agricultural population of Tuscany, and | On the economic side of public policy and legislation. for the lightening of the taxes which pressed upon them. He corre- Germany.—We have seen that in Italy and England abeopted the physiocratic doctrines, at least in theik’general sub, | POlitical economy had its beginnings in the study of Deuce. He Laeger of Pensieri sopra Pagricoltura (1769), and practical questions relating chiefly to money or to foreign of I veri mezzi di render felice le socicta (1772); in the latter he | commerce. In Germany it arose (as Roscher has shown)

, advocates the freedom of the corn trade. The tract Z/ Colbertismo | out of the so-called cameralistic sciences. From the end prengotti. hea Coun F a ee, a pee poe sect of the Middle Ages there existed in most German countries e extreme policy of prohibition and protection, which may sti . ? be read walt eee. Mengotti also ot (1791) a oct pai | © council, known as the Kammer (Lat. camera), which wer commercio de’ Romant, directed mainly against the exaggerations | Occupied with the management of the public domain and of Huet in his Histoire du commerce ct de la navigation des anciens | the guardianship of regal rights. The emperor Maximilian (1716),

wee ech as es the broad difference between the | found this institution existing in Burgundy, and estab- ancient and modern civilizations. g ae Seer Ls : * :

Ortes. Here lastly. may be mentioned another Italian thinker who, lished, ne tat a it, aulic councils 7 Innsbruck and eminently oviginal and even eccentric, cannot easily be classed | Vienna in 1498 and 1501. N ot only finance and taxation, among his contemporaries, though some Continental writers of our | but questions also of economic police, came to be intrusted own century have exhibited similar modes of thought. This was | to these bodies. A special preparation became necessary Cuapiname (Orie (le), Home opneved to theslibemiet | iritier members and chairs of camoralistic science were tendencies of his time, but does not espouse the doctrines of the ¢ é aa fie ait hi ¢ th ; mercantile system, rejecting the theory of the balance of trade and | founded in universities lor the teaching of the appropriate demanding commercial freedom. 1t is in the Middle Ages that he | body of doctrine. One side of the instruction thus given gees eee) and economic Bie. He adnoceiee ie maintenance | borrowed its materials from the sciences of external nature, of church property, is averse to the ascendency of the money power, : ae : eee and has re medioeel dislike for interest on lod, He puatidine aeons in. a ae ba ee ee cine = be ae the singular idea that the wealth of communities is always and | 42d the like; the other related to the conditions of nationa everywhere in a fixed ratio to their population, the latter being | prosperity as depending on human relations and institu- determined by the former. Poverty, therefore, necessarily waits | tions; and out of the latter German political economy was on wealth, and the rich, in beconzing so, only gain what the poor | at first developed. lose. Those who are interested in the improvement of the condi- ; tion of the people labour in vain, so long as they direct their efforts In no country had mercantilist views a stronger hold than in to the increase of the sum of the national wealth, which it is | Germany, though in none, in the period we are now considering, beyond their power to alter, instead of to the distribution of that | did the system of the balance of trade receive a less extensive pare- wealth, which it is possible to modify. The true remedy for | tical application. All the leading German economists of the 17th poverty lies in mitigating the gain-pursuing propensities in the | century—Bovnitz, Besold, Klock, Becher, Horneck, Seckendorf, and rich and in men of business.

Ortes studied in a separate work the | Schréder—stand on the common basis of the mercantile doctrine. subject of population ; he formulates its increase as ‘‘ geometrical,” | And the same may be said of the writers of the first half of the 18th but recognizes that, as a limit is set to such increase amongst the | century in general, and notably of Justi(d. 1771), who was the Justi. lower animals by mutual destruction, so is it in the human species | author of the first systematic German treatise on political economy, by ‘‘reason ’—the “‘ prudential restraint” of which Malthus after- | a work which, from its currency as a text book, had much effect on wards made so much. He regards the institution of celibacy as | the formation of opinion. Only in Zincke (1692-1769) do we find Zincke. no less necessary and advantageous than that of marriage. He | occasional expressions of a circle of ideas at variance with the enunciates what has since been known as the ‘‘ law of diminishing | dominant system, and pointing in the direction of industrial returns to agricultural industry.” He was carcless as to the diffu- | freedom. But these writers, except from the national point of sion of his writings ; and hence they remained*almost unknown | view, are unimportant, not having exercised any influence on the till they were included in the Custodi collection of Italian eco- | general: movement of European thought. : nnciaitant nomists, when they attracted much attention by the combined The principles of the physiocratic system met with i — San ~ sagacity and waywardness which marked their author’s intellectual | amount of favour inGermany. Karl Friedrich, margrave of Baden, Friedric character. wrote for the use of his sons an Abrégé des principes d’Economie of Baden.

; : * Politique, 1772, which is in harmony with the doctrines of that Sp aim. —The same breath of a new era which eee in the system. It possesses, however, little scientific value. Schlettwein air elsewhere in Europe made itself felt also in Spain. (1731-1802) and Mauvillon (1743-1794) were followers of the same

Ustariz. In the earlier part of the 18th century Geronimo Ustariz had | school. Theodor Schmalz (1764-1831), who is commonly named Schmalz. written his Teorica y Practica del Comercio y Marina (1724; pub- | as ‘‘the last of the physiocrats, may be here mentioned, though lished, 1740; Eng. transl. by John Kippax, 1751; French by | somewhat out of the historic order. He compares Colbertism with Forbonnais, 1753), in which he carries

mercantile principles to | the Ptolemaic system, physiocratism with the Copernican. Adam their utmost extreme. Smith he represents as the Tycho Brahe of political economy ,—a

Campo- The reforming spirit of the latter half of the century was best | man of eminent powers, who could not resist the force of truth in

manes. represented in that country by Pedro Rodriguez, count of Cam- | the physiocrats, but partly could not divest himself of rooted pre-

Fert TriczaL FCO N OMY

kuowledge of Adam Smith, he insists on unlimited freedom of trade, calls for the abolition of the medieval institutions which impeded production and national wellbeing, and condemns the colonial system then followed by England, Spain, and Holland. He pro- phesies, as Raynal and Genovesi had done before him, that all America would one day be independent, a prediction which probably helped to elicit Benjamin Franklin's tribute of admiration for his work. Rather a propagator than a discoverer, he sometimes adopted from others erroneous opinions, as, for example, when he approves the impét unique of the physiocrats. ever, he represents the most advanced political and social tenden- cies of his age ; whilst strongly contrasted with Beccaria in tem- perament and style, he was a worthy labourer in the same cause

pomanes (1723-1802). He pursued with ardour the same studies and in some degree the same policy as his illustrious contemporary

On the whole, how- |

363

Turgot, without, however, having arrived at so advanced a point of view. He was author of Respuesta fiscal sobre abolir la tasa y establecer el comereio de granos (1764), Discurso sobre el jomento de industria popolar (1774), and Discurso sobre la educacion de los artesanos y su fomento (1775). By means of these writings, justly eulogized by Robertson, as well as by his

personal efforts as minister, he sought to establish the freedom of the corn trade, to

‘remove the hindrances to industry arising from medieval survivals,

to give a large development to manufactures, and to liberate agri- culture from the odious burdens to which it was subject. He saw that, notwithstanding the enlightened administration of Charles III., Spain still suffered from the evil results of the blind confidence reposed by her people in her gold nines, and enforced the lesson

judices, and partly was ambitious of the fame of a discoverer and a reconciler of divergent systems. Though Smith was now ‘‘the

Sonnen- fels.

Moser.

Hume.

fashion,” Schmalz could not doubt that Quesnay’s doctrine was alone true, and would ere long be triumphant everywhere.

Just before the appearance of Smith, as in England Steuart, and in Italy Genovesi, so in Austria Sonnenfels (1733-1817), the first distinguished economist of that country, sought to present the mercantile system in a modified and more enlightened form ; and his work (Grundsdtze der Polizei, Handlung, und Finanz, 1765; 8th ed., 1822) exercised even during a considerable part of the present century much influence on opinion and on policy in Austria. ;

But the greatest German economist of the 18th century was, In Roscher’s opinion, Justus Méser (1720-1794), the author of Patrio- tische Phantasteen (1774), a series of fragments, which, Goethe nevertheless declares, form ‘‘ein wahrhaftes Ganzes.” The poet was much influenced by Méser in his youth, and has eulogized in

Whilst others occupied themselves with larger and more prominent public affairs and transactions, Méser observed and reproduced the common daily life of his nation, and the thousand “little things ” which compose the texture of popular existence. He has been com- pared to Franklin for the homeliness, verve, and freshness of his writings. In opinions he is akin to the Italian Ortes. He is opposed to the whole spirit of the ‘‘Aufklarung,” and to the liberal and rationalistic direction of which Smith’s work became after- wards the expression. He is not merely conservative but reaction- ary, manifesting a preference for medieval institutions sueh as the trade guilds, and, like Carlyle in our own time, seeing advantages even in serfdom, when compared with the sort of freedom enjoyed by the modern drudge. He has a marked antipathy for the growth of the money power and of manufactures on the large scale, and for the highly developed division of labour. He is opposed to absolute private property in land, and would gladly see revived such a system of restrictions as in the interest of the state, the commune, and the family were imposed on medieval ownership. In his wayward and caustic style, he often criticizes effectively the doctrinaire narrowness of his contemporaries, throws out many striking ideas, and in particular sheds real light on the economic phenomena and geueral social conditions of the Middle Ages.

2. Adam Smith, with his Immediate Predecessors and his Followers.

England.—The stagnation in economic inquiry which showed itself in England in the early part of the 18th century was not broken by any notable manifestation before 1735, when Bishop Berkeley put forward in his Querist, with much force and point, views opposed to those of the mercantile school on the nature of national wealth and the functions of money, though not without an admixture of grave error. But soon a more decisive advance was made. Whilst in France the physiocrats were working after their own fashion towards the con- struction of a definitive system of political economy, a Scottish thinker of the first order was elucidating, in a series of short but pregnant essays, some of the funda- mental conceptions of the science. What had been written on these questions in the English language before his time had remained almost altogether within the limits of the directly practical sphere. With Locke, indeed, the general system of the modern critical philosophy had come into relation with economic

inquiry, but only in a partial and indeterminate way. But in Hume the most advanced form of this philosophy was represented, and his appear- ance in the field of economics decisively marks the tendency of the latter order of speculation to place itself in con- nexion with the largest and deepest thought on human nature and general human history. Most of the essays here referred to first appeared in 1752, in a volume entitled Political Discourses, and the number was completed in the collection of Hssays and Treatises on Several Subjects, pub- lished in the following year. The most important of them are those on Commerce, on Money, on Interest, and on the Balance of Trade. Yet these should not be separated from the rest, for, notwithstanding the unconnected form of these little treatises, there runs through them a pro- found unity of thought, so that they indeed compose in a certain sense an economic system. They exhibit in full measure Hume's wonderful acuteness and subtlety, which

POLATICAL OO omy

| indeed sometimes dispose him to paradox, in combination

| with the breadth, the absence of prejudice, and the social

sympathies which so eminently distinguish him ; and they offer, besides, the charm of his easy and natural style and his rare power of lucid exposition.

In the essay on money he refutes the mercantilist error, which tended to confound it with wealth. ‘‘ Men and commodities,” he says, ‘‘are the real strength of any community.” ‘‘In the national stock of labour consists all real power and riches.” Money is only the oil which makes the movements of the mechanism of commerce more smooth and easy. He shows that, from the domestic as distinguished from the international point of view, the absolute

; ree | quantity of money, supposed as of fixed amount, in a country is of the Dichtung und Wahrheit his spirit, intellect, and character, and | his thorough insight into all that goes on in the social world. |

no consequence, whilst an excessive quantity, larger, that is, than is required for the interchange of commodities, may be injurious as raising prices and

driving foreigners from the home inarkets. He goes so far, in one or two places, as to assert that the value of nioney is chiefly fictitious or conventional, a position which cannot be defended ; but it must not be pressed against him, as he builds nothing on it. He has some very ingenious observations (since, however, questioned by J. S. Mill) on the effects of the increase of money in a country in stimulating industry during the interval which takes place before the additional amount is sufficiently diffused to alter the whole scale of prices. He shows that the fear of the money of an industrious community being lost to it by passing into foreign countries is groundless, and that, under a system of freedom, the distribution of the precious metals which is adapted to the requirements of trade will spontaneously establish itself. “In short, a Government has great reason to preserve with care its people and its manufactures ; its money it may safely trust to the course of human affairs without fear or jealousy.”

A very important service was rendered by his treatment of the rate of interest. He exposes the erroneous idea often entertained that it depends on the quantity of money in a country, and shows that the reduction of it must in general be the result of ‘‘the increase of industry and frugality, of arts and commerce,” so that it may serve as a barometer, its lowness being an almost infallible sign of the flourishing condition of a people. It may be observed in pass- ing that in the essay devoted to this subjeet he brings out a prin- ciple of human nature which economists too often overlook, ‘‘ the constant and insatiable desire of the mind for exercise and employ- ment,” and the consequent action of ennui in prompting to exer- tion.

With respect to commerce, he points to its natural foundation in what has since been called ‘‘ the territorial division of labour,” and proves that the prosperity of one nation, instead of being a hin- drance, is a help to that of its neighbours. ‘‘ Not only as a man, but as a British subject,” he says, ‘‘1 pray for the flourishing com- merce of Germany, Spain, Italy, and even France itself.” He con- demns the ‘‘ numberless bars, obstruetions, and imposts whieh all nations of Europe, and none more than England, have put upon trade.” Yet on the question of protection to national industry he is not quite at the free-trade point of view, for he approves of a tax on German linen as encouraging home manufactures, and of a tax on brandy as increasing the sale of rum and supporting our southern colonies. Indeed it

has been justly observed that there are in him several traces of a refined mercantilism, and that he represents a state of opinion in which the transition from the old to the new views is not yet completely effected.

We cannot do more than refer to the essay on taxes, in which, amongst other things, he repudiates the ¢mpét wnique of the physio- crats, and to that on public credit, in which he criticizes the “new paradox that public incumbrances are of themselves advan- tageous, independent of the necessity of contracting them,” and objects, perhaps too absolutely, to the modern expedient of raising the money required for national enterprises by way of loan, and so shifting our burdens upon the shoulders of posterity.

The characteristics of Hume which are most important in the history of economic investigation are (1) his practice of bringing economic facts into connexion with all the weighty interests of social and political life, and (2) his tendency to introduce the historical spirit into the study of those facts. He admirably illustrates the mutual action of the several branches of industry, and the influ- ences of progress in the arts of production and in com- merce on general civilization, exhibits the striking con- trasts of the ancient and modern system of life (see espe- cially the essay On the Populousness of Ancient Nations), and considers almost every phenomenon which comes under discussion in its relations to the contemporary stage of social development. It cannot be doubted that Hume

exercised a most important influence on Adam Smith, who

Tucker.

Steuart.

Adam Smith.

SOrrVre’. G&G WC-orn OC MH Y

in the Wealth of Nations calls him “ by far the most illus- trious philosopher and historian of the present age,” and who esteemed his character so highly that, after a friend- ship of many years had been terminated by Hume’s decease, he declared him to have “approached as nearly to the idea of a

perfectly wise and virtuous man as perhaps the nature of human frailty will permit.”

Josiah Tucker, dean of Gloucester (d. 1799), holds a distinguished place among the immediate predecessors of Smith. Most of lis numerous productions had direct reference to contemporary ques- tions, and, though marked by much sagacity and penetration are deficient in permanent interest. In some of these he urged the impolicy of restrictions on the trade of lreland, advocated a union of that country with England, and recommended the recognition of the independence of the United States of America. ‘he most important of his general economic views are those relating to in- ternational commerce. He is an ardent supporter of free-trade doctrines, which he bases on the principles that there is betwcen nations no necessary antagonism, but rather a harmony, of interests, and that their several natural advantages and different aptitudes naturally prompt them to exchange. He had not, however, got quite clear of mercantilism, and favoured bounties on exported manufactures and the encouragement of population by a tax on celibacy. Dupont, and after him Blanqui, represent Tucker as a follower of the physiocrats, but there seems to be no ground for this opinion except his agreement with them on the subject of the freedom of trade. Turgot translated into French his Important Questions on Commerce (1755).

In 1767 was published Sir James Steuart’s Inquiry into the Prin- ciples of Political Economy. This was onc of the most unfortunate of books. It was the most complete and systematic survey of the science from the point of view of moderate mercantilism which had appeared in England. Stenart was a man of uo ordinary abilities, and had prepared himself for his task by long and serious study. But the time for the mercantile doctrines was past, and the system of natural liberty was in possession of an intellectual ascendency which foreshadowed its political triumph. Nine years later the Wealth of Nations was given to the world, a work as superior to Steuart’s in attractiveness of style as in scientific sound- ness. Thus the latter was predestined to fail, and in fact never exercised any considerable theoretic or practical influence. Smith never quotes or mentions it ; being acquainted with Steuart, whose conversation he said was better than his book, he probably wished to keep clear of controversy with him. The German

economists have examined Steuart's treatise more carcfully than English writers have commonly done ; and they recognize its high merits, especially in relation to the thcory of value and the subject of population, They have also pointed out that, in the spirit of the best recent research, he has dwelt on the special characters which distinguish the economies proper to different nations and different grades in social progress.

Coming now to the great name of Adam Smith (1723- 1790), it is of the highest importance that we should rightly understand his position and justly estimate his claims. It is plainly contrary to fact to represent him, as some have done, as the creator of political economy. The subject of social wealth had always in some degree, and increasingly in recent times, engaged the attention of philosophic minds. The study had even indisputably assuined a systematic character, and, from being an assem- blage of fragmentary disquisitions on particular questions of national interest, had taken the form, notably in Turgot's Aéflextons, of an organized body of doctrine. The truth is that Smith took up the science when it was already considerably advanced ; and it was this very cir- cumstance which enabled him, by the production of a classical treatise, to render most of his predecessors obso- lete. But, whilst all the economic labours of the preceding centuries prepared the way for him, they did not anticipate his work. His appearance at an earlier stage, or without those previous labours, would be inconceivable; but he built, on the foundation which had been laid by others, much of his own that was precious and enduring.

Even those who do not fall into the error of making Smith the creator of the science, often separate him too broadly from Quesnay and his followers, and represent the history of modern economics as consisting of the successive

the same grounds.

physiocratic, and the Smithian. The last two are, it is true, at variance in some even important respects. But it is evident, and Smith himself felt, that their agreements were much more fundamental than their differences 5 and, if we regard them as historical forces, they must be con- sidered as working

towards identical ends. They both urged society towards the abolition of the previously pre- vailing industrial policy of European Governments; and their arguments against that policy rested essentially on Whilst Smith's criticism was more searching and complete, he also analysed more correctly than the physiocrats some classes of economic phenomena,— in particular dispelling the illusions into which they had fallen with respect to the unproductive nature of manu- factures and commerce. 'Their school disappeared from the scientific field, not merely because it met with a political check in the person of Turgot, but because, as we have already said, the Wealth of Nations absorbed into itself all that was valuable in their teaching, whilst it continued more effectually the impulse they had given to the necessary work of demolition.

The history of economic opinion in modern times, down to the third decade of our own century, is, in fact, strictly bipartite. The first stage is filled with the mercantile system, which, as we have shown, was rather a practical policy than a speculative doctrine, and which came into existence as the spontaneous growth of social conditions acting on minds not trained to scientific habits. The second stage is occupied with the gradual rise and ultimate ascendency of another system founded on the idea of the right of the individual to an unimpeded sphere for the exercise of his economic activity. With the latter, which is best designated as the "system of natural liberty," we ought to associate the memory of the physiocrats as well as that of Smith, without, however, maintaining their services to have been equal to his. .

The teaching of political economy was in the Scottish universities associated with that of moral philosophy. Smith, as we are told, conceived the entire subject he had to treat in his public lectures as divisible into four heads, the first of which was natural theology, the second ethics, the third jurisprudence ; whilst in the fourth "he examined those political regulations which are founded upon expediency, and which are calculated to increase the riches, the power, and the prosperity of a state." The last two branches of inquiry are regarded as forming but a single body of doctrine in the well-known passage of the Theory of Moral Sentiments in which the author promises to give in another discourse "an account of the general principles of law and government, and of the different revolutions they have

undergone in the different ages and periods of society, not only in what concerns justice, but in what concerns police, revenue, and arms, and whatever else is the subject of law." This shows how little it was Smith's habit to separate (except provisionally), in his conceptions or his researches, the economic phenomena of society from all the rest. The words above quoted have, indeed, been not unjustly described as containing "an anticipation, wonderful for his period, of general sociology, both statical and dynamical, an anticipation which becomes still more remarkable when we learn from his literary executors that he had formed the plan of a con- nected history of the liberal sciences and elegant arts, which must have added to the branches of social study already enumerated a view of the intellectual progress of society." Though these large designs were never carried out in their integrity, as indeed at that period they could not have been adequately realized, it has resulted from them that, though economic phenomena form the special

rise and reign of three doctrines—the mercantile, the | subject of the Wealth of Nations, Smith yet incorporated

into that work much that relates to the other social aspects, incurring thereby the censure of some of his fol- lowers, who insist with pedantic narrowness on the strict isolation of the economic domain.

There has been much discussion on the question— What is the scientific method followed by Smith in his great work? By some it is considered to have been purely deductive, a view which Buckle has perhaps carried to the greatest extreme. He asserts that in Scotland the induc- tive method was unknown, that the inductive philosophy exercised no influence on Scottish thinkers; and, though Smith spent some of the most important years of his youth in England, where the inductive method was supreme, and though he was widely read in general philo- sophical literature, he yet thinks he adopted the deductive method because it was habitually followed in Scotland,— and this though Buckle maintains that it is the only appropriate, or even possible, method in political economy, which surely would have been a sufficient reason for choos- ing it. That the inductive spirit exercised no influence on Scottish philosophers is certainly not true; as will be

presently shown, Montesquieu, whose method is essentially inductive, was in Smith's time studied with quite peculiar care and regarded with special veneration by Smith's fellow- countrymen. As to Smith himself, what may justly be said of him is that the deductive bent was certainly not the predominant character of his mind, nor did his great excellence lie in the " dialectic skill" which Buckle ascribes to him, What strikes us most in his book is his wide and keen observation of social facts, and his perpetual tendency to dwell on these and elicit their significance, instead of drawing conclusions from abstract principles by elaborate chains of reasoning. It is this habit of his mind which gives us, in reading him, so strong and abiding a sense of being in contact with the realities of life.

That Smith does, however, largely employ the deductive method is certain; and that method is quite legitimate when the premises from which the deduction sets out are known universal facts of human nature and properties of external objects. Whether this mode of proceeding will carry us far may indeed well be doubted; but its soundness cannot be disputed. But there is another vicious species of deduction which, as Cliffe Leslie has shown, seriously tainted the philosophy of Smith,—in which the premises are not facts ascertained by observa- tion, but the same a priori assumptions, half theological half metaphysical, respecting a supposed harmonious and beneficent natural order of things which we found in the physiocrats, and which, as we saw, were embodied in the name of that sect. In his view, Nature has made provi- sion for social wellbeing by the principle of the human constitution which prompts every man to better his condi- tion: the individual aims only at his private gain, but in doing so is "led by an invisible hand" to promote the public good, which was no part of his intention; human institutions, by interfering with the action of this principle in the name of the public interest, defeat their own end; but, when all systems of preference or restraint are taken away, "the obvious and simple system of natural liberty establishes itself of its own accord." This theory is, of course, not explicitly presented by Smith as a foundation of his economic doctrines, but it is really the secret sub- stratum on which they rest. Yet, whilst such latent postulates warped his view of things, they did not entirely determine his method. His native bent towards the study of things as they are preserved him from extrava- gances into which many of his followers have fallen. But besides this, as Leslie has pointed out, the influence of

Montesquieu tended to counterbalance the theoretic pre- possessions produced by the doctrine of the jus nature.

rPewlrrTric2at DeuUNCme

That great thinker, though he could not, at his period, understand the historical method which is truly appropri ate to sociological inquiry, yet founded his conclusions on induction. It is true, as Comte has remarked, that his accumulation of facts, borrowed from the most different states of civilization, and not subjected to philosophic criticism, necessarily remained on the whole sterile, or at least could not essentially advance the study of society much beyond the point at which he found it. His merit, as we have before mentioned, lay in the recognition of the subjection of all social phenomena to natural laws, not in the discovery of those laws. But this limitation was over- looked by the philosophers of the time of Smith, who were much attracted by the system he followed of tracing social facts to the special circumstances, physical or moral, of the communities in which they were observed. Leslie has shown that Lord Kaimes, Dalrymple, and Millar —contemporaries of Smith, and the last his pupil—were influenced by Montesquieu ; and he might have added the more eminent name of Ferguson, whose respect and admiration for the great Frenchman are expressed in striking terms in his History of Civil Society. We are even informed that Smith himself in his later years was occupied in preparing a commentary on the sprit des Lois, He was thus affected by two different and incon- gruous systems of thought,—one setting out from an imaginary code of nature intended for the benefit of man, and leading to an optimistic view of the economic consti- tution founded on enlightened self-interest; the other following inductive processes, and seeking to explain the several states in which human societies are found existing, as results of circumstances or institutions which have been in actual operation. And we find accordingly in his great work a combination of these two modes of treatment— inductive inquiry on the one hand, and, on the other, a priori speculation founded on the “ Nature” hypothesis. The latter vicious proceeding has in some of his followers been greatly aggravated, while the countervailing spirit of inductive investigation has fallen into the background, and indeed the necessity or utility of any such investigation in the economic field has been sometimes altogether denied.

Some have represented Smith’s work as of so loose a texture and so defective in arrangement that it may be justly described as consisting of a series of monograplis. But this is certainly an exaggeration. The book, it is true, is not framed on a rigid mould, nor is there any parade of systematic divisions and subdivisions ; and this doubtless recommended it to men of the world and of business, for whose instruction it was, at least primarily, intended. But, as a body of exposition, it has the real and pervading unity which results from a mode of thinking homogeneous throughout and the general absence of such contradictions as would arise from an imperfect digestion of the subject.

Smith sets out from the thought that the annual labourof a nation is the souree from whieh it derives its supply of the neeessarics and eonveniences of life. He does not of eourse eontemplate labour as the only faetor in production; but it has been supposed that by empha- sizilig it at the outset he at once strikes the note of difference between himself on the one hand and both the mereantilists and the physioerats on the other. The improvement in the productiveness of labour depends largely on its division ; and he proceeds aecord- ingly to give his unrivalled exposition of that principle, of the grounds on whieh it rests, and of its greater applicability to manufaetures than to agriculture, in consequence of which the latter relatively lags beliind in the eourse of economic development. The origin of the division of labour he finds in the propensity of human nature “to truck, barter, or exehange one thing for another.” He shows that a certain accumulation of capital is a condition preeedeut of this division, and that the degree to which it can be earried is dependent on the extent of the market. When the division of labour has been established, each member of the society must have reeourse to the others for the supply of most of

his wants ; a medium of exchange is thus found to be necessary, and money comes into use. The exchange of goods against each other or against money gives rise to the notion of value. This word has two meanings—that of utility, and that of purchasing power ; the one may be called value in use, the other value in exchange. Merely mentioning the former, Smith goes on to study the latter. What, he asks, is the measure of value? what regu- lates

the amount of one thing which will be given for another ? “Labour,” Smith answers, ‘‘is the real measure of the exchange- able value of all commodities.” ‘‘ Equal quantities of labour, at all times and places, are of equal value to the labourer.” ‘Labour alone, therefore, never varying in its own value, is alone the ultimate and real standard by which the value of all commodities can at all times and places be estimated and compared. It is their real price; money is their nominal price only.” Money, however, is in men’s actual transactions the measure of value, as well as the vehicle of exchange ; and the precious metals are best suited for this function, as varying little in their own value for periods of moderate length ; for distant times, corn is a better standard of comparison. In relation to the earliest social stage, we need consider nothing but the amount of labour employed in the production of an article as determining its exchange value; but in more advanced periods price is complex, and consists in the most general case of three elements—wages, profit, and rent. Wages are the reward of labour. Profit arises as soon as stock, heing accumulated in the hands of one person, is employed by him in setting others to work, and supplying them with materials and subsistence, in order to make a gain by what they produce. Rent arises as soon as the land of a country has all become private property ; ‘‘the landlords, like all other men, love to reap where they never sowed, and demand a rent even for its natural produce.” In every improved society, then, these three elements enter more or less into the price of the far greater part of commodities. There is in every society or neigh- bourhood an ordinary or average rate of wages and profit in every different employment of labour and stock, regulated by principles to be explained hereafter, as also an ordinary or average rate of rent. These may be called the natural rates at the time when and the place where they prevail; and the natural price of a commodity is what is sufficient to pay for the rent of the land, the wages of the labour, and the profit of the stock necessary for bringing the commodity to market. The market price may rise above or fall below the amount so fixed, being determined by the proportion between the quantity brought to market and the demand of those who are willing to pay the natural price. Towards the natural price as a centre the market-price, regulated by competition, constautly gravitates. Some commodities, however, are subject to a monopoly of production, whether from the peculiarities of a locality or from legal privilege: their price is always the highest that can be got; the natural price of other commodities is the

lowest which can be taken for any length of time together. The .

three component parts or factors of price vary with the circum- stances of the society. The rate of wages is determined by a ‘‘dispute” or struggle of opposite interests between the employer and the workman. A minimum rate is fixed by the condition that they must be at least sufficient to enable a man and his wife to maintain themselves and, in general, bring up a family. The excess above this will depend on the circumstances of the country, and the consequent demand for labour,—wages being high when national wealth is increasing, low when it is declining. The same circumstances determine the variation of profits, but in an opposite direction ; the increase of stock, which raises wages, tending to lower profit through the mutual competition of capitalists. ‘The whole of the advantages and disadvantages of the different em- ployments of labour and stock must, in the same ncighbourhood, be either perfectly equal or continually tending to equality ;” if one had greatly the advantage over the others, people would crowd into it, and the level would soon be restored. Yet pecuniary wages and profits are very different in different employments, — either from certain circumstances affecting the employments, which recommend or disparage them in men’s notions, or from national policy, “‘ which nowhere leaves things at perfect’ liberty.” Here follows Smith’s adinirable exposition of the causes which produce the inequalities in wages and profits just referred to, a passage affording ample evidence of his habits of nice observation of the less obvious traits in human nature, and also of the operation both of these and of social institutions on economie facts. The rent of land comes next to be considered, as the last of the three elements of price. Rent is a monopoly price, equal, not to what the landlord could afford to take, but to what the farmer can afford to give. ‘Such parts only of the produce of land can commonly be brought to market, of which the ordinary price is sufficient to replace the stock which must be employed in bringing them thither, together with the ordinary profits. If the ordinary price is more than this, the surplus part will naturally go to the rent of the land. If it is not more, though the commodity may be brought to market, it can afford no rent to the landlord. Whether the price is or is not more depends on the demand.” ‘Rent,

therefore, enters into the price of commodities in a different way from wages and profits. High or low wages and profit are the causes of high or low price ; high or low reut is the effect of ry

Rent, wages, and profits, as they are the elements of price, are also the constituents of income; and the three great orders of every civilized society, from whose revenues that of every other order is ultimately derived, are the landlords, the labourers, and the capitalists. The relation of the interests of these three classes to those of society at large is different. The interest of the landlord always coincides with the general interest: whatever promotes or obstructs the one has the same effect on the other. So also does that of the labourer: when the wealth of the nation is progressive, his wages are high ; they are low when it is stationary or retrogressive. ‘The interest of the third order has not the same connexion with the general interest of the society as that of the other two; .. . it is always in some respects different from and opposite to that of the public.”

The subject of the second book is “the nature, accumulation, and improvement of stock.” A man’s whole stock consists of two portions—that which is reserved for his immediate consumption, and that which is employed so as to yield a revenue to its owner.

his latter, which is his “ capital,” is divisible into the two classes of ‘‘fixed” and “ circulating.” ‘The first is such as yields a profit without passing into other hands. The second consists of such goods, raised, manufactured, or purchased, as are scld for a profit and replaced by other goods ; this sort of capital is therefore cou- stantly going from and returning to the hands of its owner, The whole capital of a society falls under the same two heads. Its fixed capital consists chiefly of (1) machines, (2) buildings which are the means of procuring a revenue, (8) agricultural improve- ments, and (4) the acquired and useful abilities of all members of the society (since sometimes known as “ personal capital”), Its circulating capital is also composed of four parts—(1) money, (2) provisions in the hands of the dealers, (8) materials, and (4) com- pleted work in the hands of the manufacturer or merchant. |Next coines the distinction of the gross national revenue from the net,— the first being the whole produce of the land and labour of a country, the second what remains after deducting the expense of

maintaining the fixed capital of the country and that part of its circulating capital which consists of money. Money, “the great wheel of circulation,” is altogether different from the goods which are circulated by means of it; it is a costly instrument by means of which all that each individual receives is distributed to him ; and the expenditure required, first to provide it, and afterwards to maintain it, is a deduction from the net revenue of the society. In development of this consideration, Smith goes on to explain the gain to the community arising from the substitution of paper money for that composed of the precious metals; and ‘here occurs the remarkable illustration in which the use of gold and silver money is compared to a highway on the ground, that of paper money to a waggon way through the air. In proceeding to consider the accumulation of capital, he is led to the distinction between productive and unproductive labour,—the former being that which is fixed or realized in a particular object or vendible article, the latter that which is not so realized. The former is exemplified in the labour of the manufacturing workman, the latter in that of the menial servant. A broad line of demarcation is thus drawn between the labour which results in commodities or increased value of com- modities, and that which does no more than render services: the former is productive, the latter unproductive. ‘‘ Productive” is by ho means equivalent to ‘““useful”: the labours of the magistrate, the soldier, the churchman, lawyer, and physician, are, in Smith’s sense, unproductive. Productive labourers alone are employed out of capital ; unproductive labourers, as well as those who do not labour at all, are all maintained by revenue. In advancing industrial communities, the portion of annual produce set apart as capital, bears an increasing proportion to that which is immediately destined to constitute are venue, either as rent or as profit. Par- simony is the source of the increase of capital ; by augmenting the fund devoted to the maintenance of productive hands, it puts in motion an additional quantity of industry, which adds to the value of the annual produce. What is annually saved is as regularly consumed as what is spent, but by a different set of persons, by productive labourers instead of idlers or unproductive labourers ; and the former reproduce with a profit the value of their consump- tion. The prodigal, encroaching on his capital, diminishes, as far as in him lies, the amount of productive labour, and so the wealth of the country ; nor is this result affected by his expenditure being on home-made, as distinct from foreign, commodities. Every prodigal, therefore, isa public enemy ; every frugal man a public

benefactor. The only mode of increasing the annual produce of the land and labour is to increase either the number of productive labourers or the productive powers of those labourers, Either process will in general require additional capital, the former to maintain the new labourers, the latter to provide improved machinery or to enable the employer to introduce a more complete division of labour. In what are commouly called loans of money,

it is not really the money, but the money's worth, that the borrower wants ; and the lender really assigns to him the right to a certain portion of the annual produce of the land and labour of the country. As the general capital of a country inereascs, so also does the par- ticular portion of it from which the possessors wish to derive a revenue without being at the trouble of employing it themselves ; and, as the quantity of stock thus available for loans is augmented, the interest diminishes, not merely ''from the general causes which make the market price of things commonly diminish as_their quantity increases," but because, with the increase of capital, 'it becomes gradually more and more difficult to find within the country a profitable method of employing any new capital," —whence arises 2 competition between different capitals, and a lowering of profits, which must diminish the price which can be paid for the use of capital, or in other words the rate of interest. It was formerly wrongly supposed, and even Locke and Montesquieu did not eseape this error, that the fall in the value of the precious metals consequent on the discovery of the Aimerican mines was the real cause of the general lowering of the rate of interest in Europe. But this view, already refuted by Hume, is easily seen to be erroneous. ''In some countries the interest of money has becn prohibited by law. But, as something can everywhere be made by the use of money, something ought everywhere to be paid for the use of it," and will in faet be paid for it; and the prohibition will only heighten the evil of usury by inereasing the risk to the lender. The legal rate should be a very little above the lowest market rate ; sober people will then be preferred as borrowers to prodigals and projectors, who at a higher legal rate would have an advantage over them, being alone willing to offer that higher rate.

As to the different employments of capital, the quantity of pro- ductive labour put in motion by an equal amount varies extremely according as that amount is employed—(1) in the improvement of lands, mines or fisheries, (2) in manufactures, (3) in wholesale or (4) retail trade. In agriculture ‘‘ Nature labours along with man,” and not only the capital of the farmer is reproduced with his pro- fits, but also the rent of the landlord. It is therefore the employ- ment of a given capital which is most advantageous to society. Next in order come manufactures ; then wholesale trade—first the home trade, secondly the foreign trade of consumption, last the carrying trade. All these employments of capital, however, are not only advantageous, but neeessary, and will introduce them- selves in the due degree, if they are left to the spontaneous action of individual enterprise.

These first two books contain Smith’s general economic scheme ; and we have stated it as fully as was consistent with the brevity here necessary, because from this formu- lation of doctrine the English classical school set out, aud round it the discussions of more recent times in different countries have in a great measure revolved. Some of the criticisms of his successors and their modifications of his doctrines will come under our notice as we proceed.

The critical philosophers of the 18th century were often destitute of the historical spirit, which was no part of the endowment needed for their principal social office. But some of the most eminent of them, especially in Scotland, showed a marked capacity and predilection for historical studies. Smith was amongst the latter; Knies and others justly remark on the masterly sketches of this kind which occur in the Wealth of Nations. The longest and most elaborate of these occupies the third book ; it isan account of the course followed by the nations of modern Europe in the successive development of the several forms of industry. It affords a curious exainple of the effect of doctrinal prepossessions in obscuring the results of histori- cal inquiry. Whilst he correctly describes the European movement of industry, and explains it as arising out of adequate social causes, he yet, in accordance with the absolute principles which tainted his philosophy, protests against it as involving an entire inversion of the “natural order of things.” First agriculture, then manufactures, lastly foreign commerce; any other order than this he considers ‘unnatural and retrograde.” Hume, a more

purely positive thinker, simply sees the facts, accepts them, and classes them under a general law. “It is a violent method,” he says, ‘“‘and in most cases impractic- able, to oblige the labourer to toil in order to raise from the land more than what subsists himself and family. Furnish him with manufactures and commodities, and he

will do it of himself.” ‘If we consult history, we shall find that, in most nations, foreign trade has preceded any refinement in home manufactures, and given birth to domestic luxury.”

The fourth book is principally devoted to the elaborate and exhaustive polemic against the mercantile system which finally drove it from the field of science, and has exercised a powerful influence on economic legislation. When protection is now advocated, it is commonly on different grounds from those which were in current use before the time of Smith. He believed that to look for the restoration of freedom of foreign trade in Great Britain would have been “as absurd as to expect that an Oceana or Utopia should be established in it ;” yet, mainly in consequence of his labours, that object has been com- pletely attained; and it has lately been said with justice that free trade might have been nore generally accepted by other nations if the patient reasoning of Smith had not been replaced by dogmatism. His teaching on the subject is not altogether unqualified ; but, on the whole, with respect to exchanges of every kind, where economic motives alone enter, his voice is in favour of freedom. He has regard, however, to political as well as economic inter- ests, and on the ground that “defence is of much more importance than opulence” pronounces the Navigation Act to have been “perhaps the wisest of all the commercial regulations of England.” Whilst objecting to the preven- tion of the export of wool, he proposes a tax on that export as somewhat less injurious to the interest of growers than the prohibition, whilst it would “afford a sufficient advantage” to the domestic over the foreign manufacturer. This is, perhaps, his most marked devia- tion from the rigour of principle ; it was doubtless a con- cession to popular opinion with a view to an attainable practical improvement. The wisdom of retaliation in order to procure the repeal of high duties or prohibitions imposed by foreign Governments depends, he says, alto- gether on the

likelihood of its success in effecting the object aimed at, but he does not conceal his contempt for the practice of such expedients. The restoration of freedom in any manufacture, when it has grown to considerable dimensions by means of high duties, should, he thinks, from motives of humanity, be brought about only by degrees and with circumspection,—though the amount of evil which would be caused by the immediate abolition of the duties is, in his opinion, commonly exaggerated. The case in which J. 8. Mill justified protection—that, namely, in which an industry well-adapted to a country is kept down by the acquired ascendency of foreign producers —is referred to by Smith; but he is opposed to the admission of this exception for reasons which do not appear to be conclusive. He is perhaps scarcely consistent in approving the concession of temporary monopolies to joint-stock com- panies undertaking risky enterprises "of which the public is afterwards to reap the benefit." 1

He is less absolute in his doctrine of Governmental non- interference when he comes to consider in his fifth book the "expenses of the sovereign or the commonwealth." He recognizes as coming within the functions of the state the erection and maintenance of those public institutions and public works which, though advantageous to the society, could not repay, and therefore must not be thrown upon, individuals or small groups of individuals. He remarks in a just historical spirit that the performance of these functions requires very different degrees of ex- pense in the different periods of society. Besides the

1 Professor Bastable calls our attention to the interesting fact that the proposal of an export duty on wool and the justification of a tem- porary monopoly to joint-stock companies both appear for the first time in the edition of 1784.

reurrr Ton © econo wy

institutions and works intended for public defence and the administration of justice, and those required for facilitating the commerce of the society, he considers those necessary for promoting the instruction of the people. He thinks the public at large may with propriety – not only facilitate and encourage, but even impose upon almost the whole body of the people, the acquisition in youth of the most essential elements of education. He

suggests as the mode of enforcing this obligation the requirement of submission to a test examination “ before any one could obtain the freedom in any corporation, or be allowed to set up a trade in any village or town corpor- ate.” Similarly, he is of opinion that some probation, even in the higher and more difficult sciences, might be enforced as a condition of exercising any liberal profession, or becoming a candidate for any honourable office. The expense of the institutions for religious instruction as well as for general education, he holds, may without injustice be defrayed out of the funds of the whole society, though he would apparently prefer that it should be met by the voluntary contributions of those who think they have occasion for such education or instruction. There is much that is sound, as well as interesting and suggestive, in this fifth book, in which he shows a political instinct and a breadth of view by which he is favourably contrasted with the Manchester school. But, if we may say so without disrespect to so great a man, there are traces in it of what is now called Philistinism—a low view of the ends of art and poetry—which arose perhaps in part from personal defect, though it was common enough in even the higher minds in his century. There are also indications of a certain deadness to the lofty aims and perennial im- portance of religion, which was no doubt chiefly due to the influences of an age when the critical spirit was doing an indispensable work, in the performance of which the transitory was apt to be confounded with the permanent. For the sake of considering as a whole Smith’s view of the functions of government, we have postponed noticing his treatment of the physiocratic system, which occupies a part of his fourth book. He had formed the acquaintance of Quesnay, Turgot, and other members of their group during his sojourn in France in 1765, and would, as he told Dugald Stewart, had the patriarch of the school lived long enough, have dedicated to him the Wealth of Nations. He declares that, with all its imperfections, the system of Quesnay is ‘perhaps the nearest approximation to the truth that had yet appeared on the subject of political economy.” Yet he seems not to be adequately conscious of the degree of coincidence between his own doctrines and those of the physiocrats. Dupont de Nemours complained that he did not do Quesnay the justice of recognizing him as his spiritual father. It is, however, alleged, on the other side, that already in 1753 Smith had been teaching as professor a body of economic doctrine the same in its broad features with that contained in his great work. This is indeed said by Stewart ; and, though he

gives no evidence of it, it is possibly quite true ; if so, Smith's doc- trinal descent must be traced rather from Hume than from the French school. The principal error of this school, that, namely, of representing agricultural labour as alone produc- tive, he refutes in the fourth book, though in a manner which has not always been considered effective. Traces of the influence of their mistaken view appear to remain in his own work, as, for example, his assertion that in agriculture nature labours along with man, whilst in manufactures nature does nothing, man does all; and his distinction between productive and unproductive labour, which was doubtless suggested by their use of those epithets, and which seems to be inconsistent with his recognition of what is now called "personal capital."

To | out his principles to their extreme consequences.

the same source M'Culloch and others refer the origin of Smith's view, which they represent as an obvious error, that "individual advantage is not always a true test of the public advantageousness of different employments." But that view is really quite correct, as Prof. Nicholson has recently made plain. That the form taken by the use of capital, profits being given, is not indifferent to the working class as a whole even Ricardo admitted; and Cairnes, as we shall see, built on this consideration some of the most far-reaching conclusions in his Leading Prin- ciples.

On Smith's theory of taxation in his fifth book it is not necessary for us to dwell (see Taxation). The well-known canons which he lays down as prescribing the essentials of a good system have been generally accepted. They have lately been severely criticized by Prof. Walker—of whose objec- tions, however, there is only one which appears to be well- founded. Smith seems to favour the view that the con- tribution of the individual to public expenses may be regarded as payment for the services rendered to him by the state, and ought to be proportional to the extent of those services. If he held this opinion, which some of his expressions imply, he was certainly so far wrong in principle.

We shall not be held to anticipate unduly if we remark here on the way in which opinion, revolted by the aberra- tions of some of Smith's successors,

has tended to turn from the disciples to the master. A strong sense of his comparative freedom from the vicious tendencies of Ricardo and his followers has recently prompted the suggestion that we ought now to recur to Smith, and take up once more from him the line of the economical succession. But notwithstanding his indisputable superiority, and. whilst fully recognizing the great services rendered by his immortal work, we must not forget that, as has been already said, that work was, on the whole, a product, though an exceptionally eminent one, of the negative philosophy of the last century, resting largely in its ulti- mate foundation on metaphysical bases. The mind of Smith was mainly occupied with the work of criticism so urgent in his time ; his principal task was to discredit and overthrow the economic systeni then prevalent, and to demonstrate the radical unfitness of the existing European Governments to direct the industrial movement. ‘This office of his fell in with, and formed a part of, the general work of demolition carried on by the thinkers who gave to the 18th century its characteristic tone. It is to his honour that, besides this destructive operation, he contri- buted valuable elements to the preparation of an organic system of thought and of life. In his special domain he has not merely extinguished many errors and prejudices, and cleared the ground for truth, but has left us a per- manent possession in the judicious analyses of economic facts and ideas, the wise practical suggestions, and the luminous indications of all kinds, with which his work abounds. Belonging to the best philosophical school of his period, that with which the names of Hume and Diderot are associated, he tended strongly towards the positive point of view. But it was not possible for him to attain it; and the final and fully normal treatment of the economic life of societies must be constituted on other and more lasting foundations than those which underlie his imposing construction.

It has been well said that of philosophic doctrines the saying “by their fruit ye shall know them” is eminently true. And it cannot be doubted that the germs of the vicious methods and false or exaggerated theories of Smith’s successors are to be found in his own work, though his good sense and practical bent prevented his following The XIX. — 47

objections of Hildebrand and others to the entire historical development of doctrine which the Germans designate as "'Smithianismus" are regarded by those critics as applic- able, not merely to his school as a whole, but, though in a less degree, to himself. The following are the most important of these objections. It is said—(1) Smith's con- ception of the social economy is essentially individualistic. In this he falls in with the general character of the nega- tive philosophy of his age. That philosophy, in its most typical forms, even denied the natural existence of the disinterested affections, and explained the altruistic feel- ings as secondary results of self-love. Smith, however, like Hume, rejected these extreme views; and hence it has been held that in the Wealth of Nations he consciously, though tacitly, abstracted from the benevolent principles in human nature, and as a logical artifice supposed an "gconomic man" actuated by purely selfish motives. However this may be, he certainly places himself habitu- ally at the point of view of the individual, whom he treats as a purely egoistic force, working uniformly in the direc- tion of private gain, without regard to the good of others or of the community at large. (2) He justifies this per- sonal attitude by its consequences, presenting the optimis- tic view that the good of the community is best attained through the free play of individual cupidities, provided only the law prevents the interference of one member of the society with the self-seeking action of another. He assumes with the negative school generally—though he has passages which are not in harmony with these proposi- tions—that every one knows his true interest and will pursue it, and that the economic advantage of the indi-

vidual coincides with that of the society. To this last |

conclusion he is secretly led, as we have seen, by a priori theological ideas, and also by metaphysical conceptions of a supposed system of nature, natural right, and natural liberty. (3) By this reduction of every question to one of individual gain, he is led to a too exclusive consideration of exchange value as distinct from wealth in the proper sense. 'This, whilst lending a mechanical facility in arriv- ing at conclusions, gives a superficial character to economic investigation, divorcing it from the physical and biological sciences, excluding the question of real social utility, leaving no room for a criticism of production, and leading to a denial, like J. §. Mill's, of any economic doctrine dealing with consumption—in other words, with

the use of wealth. (4) In condemning the existing industrial policy, he tends too much towards a glorification of non-govern- ment, and a repudiation of all social intervention for the regulation of economic life. (5) He does not keep in view the moral destination of our race, nor regard wealth as a means to the higher ends of life, and thns incurs, not altogether unjustly, the charge of materialism, in the wider sense of that word. Lastly, (6) his whole system is too absolute in its character ; it does not sufficiently recognize the fact that, in the language of Hildebrand, man, as a member of society, is a child of civilization and a product of history, and that account ought to be taken of the

different stages of social development as implying altered |

economic conditions and calling for altered economic action, or even involving a modification of the actor.

Perhaps in all the respects here enumerated, certainly in |

some of them and notably in the last, Smith is less open to criticism than most of the later English economists ; but it must, we think, be admitted that to the general principles which lie at the basis of his scheme the ultimate growth of these several vicious tendencies is traceable.

Great expectations had been entertained respecting Smith's work by competent judges before its publication, as.is shown by the language of Ferguson on the subject in his History of Civil Society. That its merits received

POLrT TOW le DeOWNWve

prompt recognition is proved by the fact of six editions having been called for within the fifteen years after its appearance.! From the year 1783 it was more and more quoted in parliament. Pitt was greatly impressed by its reasonings ; Smith is reported to have said that that minister understood the book as well as himself. Pulteney said in 1797 that Smith would convince the then living generation and would rule the next.

Smith’s earliest critics were Bentham and Lauderdale, who, though in general agreement with him, differed on special points. Jeremy Bentham was author of a short treatise entitled A Manual of Political Economy (1843), and various economic monographs, the most celebrated of which was his Defence of Usury (1787). This contained (Letter xiii.) an elaborate criticism of a passage in the Wealth of Nations, already cited, in which Smith had approved of a legal maximum rate of interest fixed but a very little above the lowest market rate, as tending to throw the capital of the country into the hands of sober persons, as opposed to “ prodigals and projectors.” Smith is said to have admitted that Bentham had made out his case. He certainly argues it with great ability; and the true doctrine no doubt is that, in a developed industrial society, it is expedient to let the rate be fixed by contract between the lender and the borrower, the law interfering only in case of fraud.

Bentham’s main significance does not belong to the economic field. But, on the one hand, what is known as Benthamism was undoubtedly, as Comte has said, a derivative from political economy, and in particular from the system of natural liberty; and, on the other, it pro- moted the temporary ascendency of that system by extend- ing to the whole of social and moral theory the use of the

| principle of individual interest and the method of deduc-

tion from that interest. This alliance between political economy and the scheme of Bentham is seen in the personal group of thinkers which formed itself round him, -—thinkers most inaptly characterized by J. S. Mill as “»rofound,” but certainly possessed of much acuteness and logical power, and tending, though vaguely, towards a positive sociology, which, froni their want of genuinely scientific culture and their absolute and unhistorical modes of thought, they were incapable of founding.

Lord Lauderdale, in his Inquiry into the Nature and Origin of Public Wealth (1804), a book still worth read- ing, pointed out certain real weaknesses in Smith’s account of value and the measure of value, and of the productivity of labour, and threw additional light on several subjects, such as the true mode of estimating the national income, and the reaction of the distribution of wealth on its pro- duction,

Smith stood just at the beginning of a great industrial revolution. The world of production and commerce in which he lived was still, as Cliffe Leslie has said, a ‘‘ very

1 Five editions of the Wealth of Nations appeared during the life of the author:—the second in 1779, the third in 1784, the fourth in 1786, and the fifth in 1789. After the third edition Smith made no change in the text of his work. The principal editions containing matter added by other economists are those by David Buchanan, with notes and an additional volume, 1814; by J. R. M‘Culloch, with life of the author, introductory discourse, notes, and supplemental disser- tations, 1828 (also, with numerous additions, 1839; since reprinted several times with further additions); by the anthor of England and America Edward Gibbon Wakefield), with a commentary, which, how- ever, is not continued beyond the second book, 1835-9 ; by James E. Thorold Rogers, now professor of political economy at Oxford, with biographical preface and a careful verification of all Smith’s quota- tions and references, 1869 (2d ed., 1880); and by J. 8. Nicholson, professor at Edinburgh, with notes referring to sources of further information on the various topics handled in the text, 1884. There is a careful Abridgment by W. P. Emerton (2d ed., 1881), founded on the earlier Analysis of Jeremiah Joyce (3d ed., 1821).

Malthus.

rer PrryoAaAgT ECON 0 VY

early” and comparatively narrow one; “the only steam- engine he refers to is Newcomen’s,” and the cotton trade is mentioned by him only once, and that incidentally. “Between the years 1760 and 1770,” says Mr Marshall, “Roebuck began to smelt iron by coal, Brindley connected the rising seats of manufactures with the sea by canals, Wedgwood discovered the art of making earthenware cheaply and well, Hargreaves invented the spinning jenny, Arkwright utilized Wyatt’s and High’s inventions for spinning by rollers and applied water power to move them, and Watt invented the condensing steam-engine.

after.” Out of this rapid evolution followed a vast expansion of industry, but also many deplorable results, which, had Smith been able to foresee them,

might have made him a less enthusiastic believer in the benefits to be wrought by the mere liberation of effort, and a less vehement denouncer of old institutions which in their day had given a partial protection to labour. these evils of the new industrial system, socialism appeared as the alike inevitable and indispensable expression of the protest of the working classes and the aspiration after a better order of things; and what we now call “the social question,” that inexorable problem of modern life, rose into the place which it has ever since maintained. This question was first effectually brought before the English mind by Thomas Robert Malthus (1766-1834), not, how- ever, under the impulse of revolutionary sympathies, but in the interests of a conservative policy.

The first edition of the work which achieved this result appeared anonymously in 1798 under the title—An Essay on the Principle of Population, as tt affects the future improvement of Society, with remarks on the speculations of Mr Godwin, M. Condorcet, and other writers. This book arose out of certain private controversies of its author with his father Daniel Malthus, who had been a friend of Rousseau, and was an ardent believer in the doctrine of human progress as preached by Condorcet and other French thinkers and by their English disciples. The most distinguished of the latter was William Godwin, whose Enquiry concerning Political Justice had been pub- lished in 1793. The views put forward in that work had been restated by its author in the Hnquirer (1797), and it was on the essay in this volume entitled “ Avarice and Profusion ” that the discussion between the father and the son arose, “the general question of the future improve- inent of society” being thus raised between them—the elder Malthus defending the doctrines of Godwin, and the younger assailing them. The latter “sat down with an

intention of merely stating his thoughts on paper in a | oe | was such a change in the nature and composition of the

clearer manner than he thought he could do in conversa- tion,” and the Hssay on population was the result.

The social scheme of Godwin was founded on the idea that the evils of society arise from the vices of human institutions. There is more than enough of wealth avail- able for all, but it is not equally shared: one has too much, another has little or nothing. Let *this wealth, as well as the labour of

producing it, be equally divided ; then everyone will by moderate exertion obtain sufficient for plain living; there will be abundant leisure, which will be spent in intellectual and moral self-improvement; reason will determine human actions; government and every kind of force will be unnecessary ; and, in time, by the peaceful influence of truth, perfection and happiness will be established on earth. To these glowing anticipa- tions Malthus opposes the facts of the necessity of food, and the tendency of mankind to increase up to the limit of the available supply of it. In a state of universal physical wellbeing, this tendency, which in real life is held in check by the difficulty of procuring a subsistence, would

Cromp- | ton's mule and Cartwright's powerloom came shortly |

Alongside of |

ov

operate without restraint. Scarcity would follow the increase of numbers; the leisure would soon cease to exist; the old struggle for life would recommence ; and inequality would reign once more. If Godwin's ideal system, therefore, could be established, the single force of the principle of population, Malthus maintained, would suffice to break it down.

It will be seen that the essay was written with a pole- mical object; it was an occasional pamphlet directed against the utopias of the day, not at all a systematic treatise on population suggested by a purely scientific interest. As a polemic, it was decidedly successful ; it was no difficult task to dispose of the scheme of equality propounded by Godwin. Already, in 1761, Dr Robert Wallace had published a work (which was used by Malthus in the composition of his essay) entitled Various Prospects of Mankind, Nature, and Providence, in which, after speak- ing of a community of goods as a remedy for the ills of society, he confessed that he saw one fatal objection to such a social organization, namely, "the excessive popula- tion that would ensue." With Condorcet's extravagances, too, Malthus easily dealt. That eminent man, amidst the tempest of the French Revolution, had written, whilst in hiding from his enemies, his Hsquisse d'un tableau histort- que de Vesprit humain. The general conception of this book makes its appearance an epoch in the history of the rise of sociology. In it, if we

except some partial sketches by Turgot, is for the first time explained the idea of a theory of social dynamics founded on history; and its author is on this ground recognized by Comte as his prin- cipal immediate predecessor. But in the execution of his great project Condorcet failed. His negative metaphysics prevent his justly appreciating the past, and he indulgcs, at the close of his work, in vague hypotheses respecting the perfectibility of our race, and in irrational expectations of an indefinite extension of the duration of human life. Malthus seems to have little sense of tle nobleness of Condorcet's attitude, and no appreciation of the grandeur of his leading idea. But of his chimerical hopes he is able to make short work; his good sense, if somewhat limited and prosaic, is at least effectual in detecting and exposing utopias.

_ The project of a formal and detailed treatise on popula- tion was an afterthought of Malthus. The essay in which he had studied a hypothetic future led him to examine the effects of the principle he had put forward on the past and present state of society; and he undertook an historical examination of these effects, and sought to draw such inferences in relation to the actual state of things as experience seemed to warrant. The consequence of this

essay as made it, in his own language, "a new work." The book, so altered, appeared in 1803 under the title— An Essay on the Principle of Population, or a wew of us Past and Present Effects on Human Happiness ; with an Enquiry into our prospects respecting the future removal or mitigation of the evils which wt occasrons.

In the original form of the essay he had spoken of no checks to population but those which came under the head either of vice or of misery. He now introduces the new element of the preventive check supplied by what he calls "moral restraint," and is thus enabled to "soften some of the harshest conclusions" at which he had before arrived. The treatise passed through six editions in his lifetime, and in all of them he introduced various additions and corrections. That of 1816 is the last he revised, and supplies the final text from which it has since been reprinted.

'Notwithstanding the great development which he gave to his work and the almost unprecedented amount of

discussion to which it gave rise, it remains a matter of some difficulty to discover what solid contribution he has made to our knowledge, nor is it easy to ascertain precisely what practical precepts, not already familiar, he founded on his theoretic principles. This twofold vagueness 1s well brought out in his celebrated correspondence with Senior, in the course of which it seems to be made appar- ent that his doctrine is new not so much in its essence as

in the phraseology in which it is couched. He himself tells us that when, after the publication of the original essay, the main argument of which he had deduced from Hume, Wallace, Smith, and Price, he began to inquire more closely into the subject, he found that " much more had been done" upon it "than he had been aware of." It had "been treated in such a manner by some of the French economists, occasionally by Montesquieu, and, among our own writers, by Dr Franklin, Sir James Steuart, Mr Arthur Young, and Mr Townsend, as to create a natural surprise that it had not excited more of the public attention." " Much, however," he thought, " re- mained yet to be done. The comparison between the increase of population and food had not, perhaps, been stated with sufficient force and precision," and "few inquiries had been made into the various modes by which the level" between population and the means of subsist- ence "is effected." The first desideratum here mentioned —the want, namely, of an accurate statement of the rela- tion between the increase of population and food— Malthus doubtless supposed to have been supplied by the celebrated proposition that "population increases in a geometrical, food in an arithmetical ratio." This proposition, however, has been conclusively shown to be erroneous, there being no such difference of law between the increase of man and that of the organic beings which form his food. J.S. Mill is indignant with those who criticize Malthus's formula, which he groundlessly describes as a mere "passing remark," because, as he thinks, though erroneous, it sufficiently suggests what is true; but it is surely important to detect unreal science, and to test strictly the foundations of beliefs. When the formula which we have cited is not used, other somewhat nebulous expressions are sometimes employed, as, for example, that " population has a tend- ency to increase faster than food," a sentence in

which both are treated as if they were spontaneous growths, and which, on account of the ambiguity of the word “ tend- ency,” is admittedly consistent with the fact asserted by Senior, that food tends to increase faster than population. It must always have been perfectly well known that population will probably (though not necessarily) increase with every augmentation of the supply of subsistence, and may, In some instances, inconveniently press upon, or even for a certain time exceed, the number properly. corre- sponding to that supply. Nor could it ever have been doubted that war, disease, poverty—the last two often the consequences of vice—are causes which keep popula- tion down. In fact, the way in which abundance, increase of numbers, want, increase of deaths, succeed each other in the natural economy, when reason does not intervene, had been fully explained by the Rev. Joseph Townsend in his Dissertation on the Poor Laws (1786), which was known to Malthus. Again, it is surely plain enough that the apprehension by individuals of the evils of poverty, or a sense of duty to their possible offspring, may retard the increase of population, and has in all civilized com- munities operated to a certain extent in that way. It is only when such obvious truths are clothed in the techni- cal terminology of “ positive” and “ preventive checks ” that they appear novel and profound; and yet they appear to contain the whole message of Malthus to mankind.

The laborious apparatus of historical and statistical facts |

reLntrTrica L BOs

respecting the several countries of the globe, adduced in the altered form of the essay, though it contains a good deal that is curious and interesting, establishes no general result which was not previously well known, and is accord- ingly ignored by James Mill and others, who rest the theory on facts patent to universal observation. Indeed, as we have seen, the entire historical inquiry was an after- thought of Malthus, who, before entering on it, had already announced his fundamental principle.

It would seem, then, that what has been ambitiously called Malthus’s theory of population, instead of being a

great discovery, as some have represented it, or a poisonous ©

novelty, as others have considered it, is no more than a formal enunciation of obvious, though sometimes neglected, facts. The pretentious language often applied to it by economists is objectionable, as being apt to make us forget that the whole subject with which it deals is as yet very imperfectly understood—the causes which modify the force of the sexual instinct, and those which lead to variations in fecundity, still awaiting a complete investiga- tion.

It is the law of diminishing returns from land (of which we shall hear more hereafter), involving as it does—though only hypothetically—the prospect of a continuously in- creasing difficulty in obtaining the necessary sustenance for all the members of a society, that gives the principal importance to population as an economic factor. It is, in fact, the confluence of the Malthusian ideas with the theories of Ricardo, especially with the corollaries which the latter, as we shall see, deduced from the doctrine of rent (though these were not accepted by Malthus), that has led to the introduction of population as an element in the discussion of so many economic questions in recent times.

Malthus had undoubtedly the great merit of having called public attention in a striking and impressive way to a subject which had neither theoretically nor practically been sufficiently considered. But he and his followers appear to have greatly exaggerated both the magnitude and the urgency of the dangers to which they pointed.!_ In their conceptions a single social imperfection assumed such portentous dimensions that it seemed to overcloud the whole heaven and threaten the world with ruin. This doubtless arose from his having at first omitted altogether from his view of the question the great counteracting agency of moral restraint. Because a force exists, capable, if unchecked, of producing certain results, it does not follow that those results are imminent or even possible in the sphere of experience. A body thrown from the hand would, under the single impulse of projection, move for ever in a straight line; but it would not be reasonable to take special action for the prevention of this result, ignor- ing the fact that it will be sufficiently counteracted by the other forces which will come into play. And such other forces exist in the case we are considering. If the inherent energy of the principle of population (supposed everywhere the same) is measured by the rate at which numbers increase

under the most favourable circumstances, surely the force of less favourable circumstances, acting through prudential or altruistic motives, is measured by the great difference between this maximum rate and those whicli are observed to prevail in most European countries. Under a rational system of institutions, the adaptation of numbers to the means available for their support is effected by the felt or anticipated pressure of circumstances and the fear of social degradation, within a tolerable degree of approximation to what is desirable. To bring the result nearer to the just standard, a higher measure of

1 Malthus himself said, ‘‘It is probable that, having found the bow

| bent too much one way, I was induced to bend it too much the other | 4n order to make it straight.”

popular enlightenment and more serious habits of moral | themselves to blame, and not either the negligence of their reflexion ought indeed to be encouraged. But it is the | superiors or the institutions of the country. The applica- duty of the individual to his possible offspring, and not | tion of his doctrines, too, made by some of his successors

any vague notions as to the pressure of the national popu- lation on subsistence, that will be adequate to influence conduct.

The only obligation on which Malthus insists is that of abstinence from marriage so long as the necessary provision for a family has not been acquired or cannot be reasonably anticipated. The idea of post-nuptial continence, which has since been put forward by J. S. Mill and others, is foreign to his view. He even suggests that an allowance might be made from the public funds for every child in a family beyond the number of six, on the ground that, when a man marries, he cannot tell how many children he shall have, and that the relief from an unlooked-for distress afforded by such a grant would not operate as an encouragement to marriage. The duty of economic prudence in entering on the married state is plain; but in the

case of working men the idea of a secured pro- vision must not be unduly pressed, and it must also be remembered that the proper age for marriage in any class depends on the dura- tion of life in that class. Too early marriages, however, are certainly not unfrequent, and they are attended with other than material evils, so that possibly even legal measures might with advantage be resorted to for preventing them in all ranks by some- what postponing the age of full civil competence. On the other hand, however, the Malthusians often speak too lightly of involun- tary celibacy, not recognizing sufficiently that it is a deplorable necessity. They do not adequately estimate the value of domestic life as a school of the civic virtues, and the social importance (even apart from personal happiness) of the mutual affective education arising from the relations of the sexes in a well-constituted union.

Malthus further infers from his principles that states should not artificially stimulate population, and in particular that poor-laws should not be established, and, where they exist, should be abolished. The first part of this proposition cannot be accepted as applying to every social phase, for it isevident that in a case like that of ancient Rome, where continuous conquest was the chief occupation of the national activity, or in other periods when protracted wars threatened the independence or security of nations, statesmen might wisely take special action of the kind deprecated by Malthus. In relation to modern industrial communities he is doubtless in general right, though the promotion of immigration in new states is similar in principle to the encouragement of population. The question of poor-laws involves other considerations. ‘The English system of his day was certainly a vicious one, though acting in some degree as a corrective of other evils in our social institutions; and efforts for its amendment tended to the public good. But the pro- posal of abolition is one from which statesmen have recoiled, and which general opinion has never adopted. It is difficult to believe that the present system will be permanent; it is too mechanical and undiscriminating; on some sides too lax, it is often unduly rigorous in the treatment of the worthy poor who are the victims of misfortune; and, in its ordinary modes of dealing with the young, it is open to graveobjection. But it would certainly be rash to abolish it; it is one of several institutions which will more wisely be retained until the whole subject of the life of the working classes has been more thoroughly, and also more sympathetically,

studied. The position of Malthus with respect to the relief of destitution is subject to this general eriticism that, first proving too much, he then shrinks from the consequences of his own logic. It follows from his arguments, and is indeed explicitly stated in a celebrated passage of his original essay, that he who has brought children into the world without adequate provision for them should be left to the punishment of Nature, that “it is a miserable ambition to wish to snatch the rod from her hand,” and to defeat the action of her laws, which are the laws of God, and which “ have doomed him and his family to suffer.” Though his theory leads him to this conclusion, he could not, as a Christian clergyman, maintain the doctrine that, seeing our brother in need, we ought to shut.up our bowels of compassion from him; and thus he is involved in the radical incon- sequence of admitting the lawfulness, if not the duty, of relieving distress, whilst he yet must regard the act as doing mischief to society. Buckle, who was imposed on by more than one of the exaggerations of the economists, accepts the logical inference which Malthus evaded. He alleges that the only ground on which we are justified in relieving destitution is the essentially self-regarding one, that by remaining deaf to the appeal of the sufferer we should probably blunt the edge of our own finer sensibilities. ;

It can scarcely be doubted that the favour which was at once accorded to the views of Malthus in certain circles was due in part to an impression, very welcome to the higher ranks of society, that they tended to relieve the

rich and powerful of responsibility for the condition of the

had the effect of discouraging all active effort for social improvement. Thus Chalmers “reviews seriatim and gravely sets aside all the schemes usually proposed for the amelioration of the economic condition of the people” on the ground that an increase of comfort will lead to an increase of numbers, and so the last state of things will be worse than the first.

Malthus has in more recent times derived a certain degree of reflected lustre from the rise and wide acceptance of the Darwinian hypothesis. Its author himself, in tracing its filiation, points to the phrase “ struggle for existence ” used by Malthus in relation to the social com- petition. Darwin believes that man has advanced to his present high condition through such a struggle, consequent on his rapid multiplication. He regards, it is true, the agency of

this cause for the improvement of our race as largely superseded by moral influences in the more advanced social stages. Yet he considers it, even in these stages, of so much importance towards that end that, not-withstanding the individual suffering arising from the struggle for life, he deprecates any great reduction in the natural, by which he seems to mean the ordinary, rate of increase.

There has been of late exhibited in some quarters a tendency to apply the doctrine of the “survival of the fittest ” to humau society in such a way as to intensify the harsher features of Malthus’s exposition by encouraging the idea that whatever cannot sustain itself is fated, and must be allowed, to disappear. But what is repellent in this conception is removed by a wider view of the influence of Humanity, as the presiding race, alike on vital and on social conditions. As in the general animal domain the supremacy of man introduces a new force consciously con- trolling and ultimately determining the destinies of the subordinate species, so human providence in the social sphere can intervene for the protection of the weak, modi-fying by its deliberate action what would otherwise be a mere contest of comparative strengths inspired by selfisl instincts.

David Ricardo (1772-1823) is essentially of the school Ricardo.

of Smith, whose doctrines he in the main accepts, whilst he seeks to develop them, and to correct them in certain particulars. But his mode of treatment is very different from Smith’s. The latter aims at keeping close to the realities of life as he finds them,—at representing the con- ditions and relations of men and things as they are ; and, as Hume remarked on first reading his great work, his principles are everywhere exemplified and illustrated with curious facts. Quite unlike this is the way in which Ricardo proceeds. He moves in a world of abstractions. He sets out from more or less arbitrary assumptions, reasons deductively from these, and announces his conclu- sions as true, without allowing for the partial unreality of the conditions assumed or confronting his results with experience. When he seeks to illustrate his doctrines, it is from hypothetical cases,—his favourite device being that of imagining two contracting savages, and considering how they would be likely to act. He does not explain—prob- ably he had not systematically examined, perhaps was not competent to examine—the

appropriate method of political economy; and the theoretic defence of his mode of proceeding was left to be elaborated by J. S. Mill and Cairnes. But his example had a great effect in determin- ing the practice of his successors. There was something highly attractive to the ambitious theorist in the sweeping march of logic which seemed in Ricardo's hands to emulate

working classes, by showing that the latter had chiefly | the certainty and comprehensiveness of mathematical

oth FOrBrrIivca LL Boon OM?

proof, and in the portable and pregnant formule which were so convenient in argument, and gave a prompt, if often a more apparent than real, solution of difficult problems. Whatever there was of false or narrow in the fundamental positions of Smith had been in a great degree corrected by his practical sense and strong instinct for reality, but was brought out in its full dimensions and even exaggerated in the abstract theorems of Ricardo and his followers.

The dangers inherent in his method were aggravated by the extreme looseness of his phraseology. Senior pro- nounces him " the most incorrect writer who ever attained philosophical eminence." His most ardent admirers find him fluctuating and uncertain in the use of words, and generally trace his errors to a confusion between the ordinary employment of a term and some special applica- tion of it which he has himself devised.

The most complete exposition of his system is to be found in his Principles of Political Economy and Taxation (1817). This work is not a complete treatise on the science, but a rather loosely connected series of disquisi- tions on value and price, rent, wages and profits, taxes, trade, money and banking. Yet, though the connexion of the parts-is loose, the same fundamental ideas recur con- tinually, and determine the character of the entire scheme.

The principal problem to which he addresses himself in this work is that of distribution,—that is to say, the pro- portions of the whole produce of the country which will be allotted to the proprietor of land, to the capitalist, and to the labourer. And it is important to observe that it is especially the

variations in their respective portions which take place in the progress of society that he professes to study,—one of the most unhistorical of writers thus in- dicating a sense of the necessity of a doctrine of econoinic dynamics—a doctrine which, from his point of view, it was impossible to supply.

The principle which he puts first in order, and which is indeed the key to the whole, is this—that the exchange value of any commodity the supply of which can be increased at will is regulated, under a régime of free competition, by the labour necessary for its production. Similar propositions are to be found in the Wealth of Nations, not to speak of earlier English writings. Smith had said that, “in the early and rude state of society which precedes both the accumula- tion of stock and the appropriation of land, the proportion between the quantities of labour necessary for acquiring different objects seems to be the only circumstance which can afford any rule for exchanging them with one another.” But he wavers in his con- ception, and presents as the mcasure of value sometimes the quantity of labour necessary for the production of the object, some- times the quantity of labour which the object would command in the market, which are identical only for a given time and place. The theorem requires correction for a developed social system by the introduction of the consideration of capital, and takes the form in which it is elsewhere quoted from Malthus by Ricardo, that the real price of a commodity ‘‘depends on the greater or less quantity of capital and labour which must be employed to produce it.” (The expression ‘quantity of capital” is lax, the element of time being omitted, but the meaning is obvious). Ricardo, however, constantly takes no notice of capital, mentioning labour alone in his statement of this principle, and seeks to justify his practice by treating capitalas “‘accumulated labour”; but this artificial way of viewing the facts obscures the nature of the co- operation of capital in produc- tion, and by keeping the necessity of this co- operation out of sight has encouraged some socialistic errors. Ricardo does not sufficiently distinguish between the cause or determinant and the measure of value; nor does he carry back the principle of cost of production as regulator of value to its foundation in the effect of that cost on the limitation of supply. It is the ‘‘ natural price” of a commodity that is fixed by the theorem we have stated ; the market price will be subject to accidental and temporary variations from this standard, depending on

changes in demand and supply; but the price will, permanently and in the long run, depend on cost of production de- fined as above. On this basis Ricardo goes on to explain the laws according to which the produce of the land and the labour of the country is distributed amongst the several classes which take part in production.

The theory of rent, with which be begins, though commonly associated with his name, and though it certainly forms the most

vital part of his gencral economic scheme, was not really his, nor did he lay claim to it. He distinctly states in the preface to the Principles, that ‘‘in 1815 Mr Malthus, in his Znquiry into the Nature and Progress of Rent, and a fellow of University College, Oxford, in his Lssay on the Application of Capital toLand, presented to the world, nearly at the same moment, the true doctrine of rent.” The second writer here referred to was Sir Edward West, afterwards a judge of the supreme court of Bombay. Still earlier than the time of Malthus and West, as M‘Culloch has pointed out, this doctrine had been clearly conceived and fully stated by Dr James Anderson in his Enquiry into the Nature of Corn-Laws,

| published at Edinburgh in 1777. That this tract was unknown to

Malthus and West we have every reason to believe; but the theory

‘is certainly as distinctly enunciated and as satisfactorily supported

in it asin their treatises; and the whole way in which it is put forward by Anderson strikingly resembles the form in which it is presented by Ricardo.

The essence of the theory is that rent, being the price paid by the cultivator to the owner of land for the use of its productive powers, is equal to the excess of the price of the produce of the land over the cost of production on that land. With the increase of popula- tion, and therefore of demand for food, infcrior soils will be taken into cultivation ; and the price of the entire supply necessary for the community will be regulated by the cost of production of that portion of the supply which is produced at the greatest expense. But for the land which will barely repay the cost of cultivation no rent will be paid. Hence the rent of any quality of land will be equal to the

dificrence between the cost of production on that land and the cost of production of that produce which is raised at the greatest expense.

The doctrine is perhaps most easily apprehended by means of the supposition here made of the coexistence in a country of a series of soils of different degrees of fertility which are successively taken into cultivation as population increases. But it would be an error to believe, though Ricardo sometimes seems to imply it, that such difference is a necessary condition of the existence of rent. If all the land of a country were of equal fertility, still if it were appro- priated, and if the price of the produce were more than an equiva- lent for the labour and capital applicd to its production, rent would be paid. This imaginary case, however, after using it to clear our conceptions, we may for the future leave out of account.

The price of. produce being, as we have said, regulated by the cost of production of that which pays no rent, it is evident that ‘‘eorn is not high because a rent is paid, but a rent is paid because corn is high,” and that ‘‘no reduction would take place in the price of corn although landlords should forego the whole of their rent.” Rent is, in fact, no determining element of pricc ; it is paid, indeed, out of the price, but the price would be the same if no rent were paid, and the whole price were retained by the cultivator.

It has often been doubted whether or not Adam Smith held this theory of rent. Sometimes he uses language which secms to imply it, and states propositions which, if developed, would infallibly lead to it. Thus he says, in a passage already quoted, ‘‘ such parts only of the produce of land can commonly be brought to market of which the ordinary price is sufficient to replace the stock which must be employed in bringing them thither, together with its ordinary profits. If the ordinary price is more than this, the surplus part of it will naturally go to the rent of land. If it, is not more, though the commodity can be brought to market, it can afford no rent to the landlord. Whether the price is or is not more depeuds on the demand.” Again, in Smith’s application of these considerations to mines, ‘‘ the whole principle of rent,” Ricardo tells us, ‘‘is admirably and perspicuously explained.” But he had formed the opinion that there is in fact no land which does not afford a rent to the landlord ; and, strangely, he seems not to have seen that this appearance might arise from the aggregation into an economic whole of

parcels of land which can and others which cannot pay rent. The truth, indeed, is that the fact, if it were a fact, that all the land in a country pays rent would be irrelevant as an argument against the Andersonian theory, for it is the same thing in substance if there be any capital employed on land already cultivated which yields a return no more than equal to ordinary profits. Such last-employed capital cannot afford rent at the exist- ing rate of profit, unless the price of produce should rise.

The belief which some have entertained that Smith, notwith- standing some vague or inaccurate expressions, really held the Andersonian doctrine, can scarcely be maintaincd when we remember that Hume, writing to him after having read for the first time the Wealth of Nations, whilst expressing general agreement with his opinions, said (apparently with reference to bk. I. chap. vii.), “TI cannot think that the rent of farms makes any part of the price of the produce, but that the price is determined altogether by the quantity and the demand.” It is further noteworthy that a state- inent of the theory of rent is given in the same volume, published in 1777, which contains Anderson’s polemic against Smith’s objec- tions to a bounty on the exportation of corn; this volume can hardly have escaped Smith’s notice, yet neither by its contents nor

by Hume’s letter was he led to modify what he had said in his first edition on the subject of rent.

It must be remembered that not merely the unequal fertilities of different soils will determine differences of rent ; the more or less advantageous situation of a farm in relation to markets, and there- fore to roads and railways, will have a similar effect. Every diminution of the cost of transit will enable the produce to be brought to market at a smaller expense, and will thus incrcase the surplus which constitutes rent. This considcration is indicated by Ricardo, though he docs not give it prominence, but dwells mainly on the comparative productiveness of soils.

Rent is defined by Ricardo as the price paid for thic use of “ the original and indestructible powers of the soil.” Hethus differentiates rent, as he uses the term, from what is popularly designated by the word ; and, when it is to

be taken in his sense, it is often qualificd as the “truce” or “economic” rent. Part of what is paid to the land- lord is often really profit on his expenditure in preparing the farm for cultivation by the tenant. But it is to be borne in mind that wherever such improvements are “ amalgamated with the land,” and “add permanently to its productive powers,” the return for them follows the laws, not of profit, but of rent. Hence it becomes difficult, if not impossible, in practice to discrinrinate with any degree of accuracy the amount received by the landlord “for the use of the original powers of the soil” from the amount received by him as remuneration for his improvements or those made by his predecessors. These have raised the farm, as an instrument for producing food, from one class of productiveness to a higher, and the case is the same as if nature had originally placed the land in question in that higher class.

Smith had treated it as the peculiar privilege of agriculture, as comparcd with other forms of production, that in it ‘‘ nature labours along with man,” and therefore, whilst the workmen in manu- factures occasion the reproduction merely of the capital which employs them with its owner’s profits, the agricultural labourer occasions the reproduction, not only of the employer’s capital with profits, but also of the rent of the landlord. This last he viewed as the free gift of nature which remained ‘‘after deducting or com- pensating everything which can be regarded as the work of map.” Ricardo justly observes in reply that ‘‘there is not a manufacture which can be mentioned in which nature does not give her assist- ance to man.” He then goes on to quote from Buchanan the re- mark that ‘‘ the notion of agriculture yielding a produce and a rent in consequence, because nature concurs with industry in the process of cultivation, is a mere fancy. It is not from the produce, but from the price at which the produce is sold, that the rent is derived ; and this price is got, not because nature assists in the production, but because it is the price which suits the consumption to the supply.”! There is no gain to the society at large from the rise of rent ; it is advantageous to the landlords alone, and their interests are thus permanently in opposition to those of all other classes. The rise of rent may be retarded, or prevented, or even temporarily changed to a fall, by agricultural improvements, such as the intro- duction of new manures or of machines or of a better organization of labour (though there is not so much room for this last as in other branches of production), or the opening of new

sources of supply in forcign countries ; but the tendency to a rise is constant so long as the population increases.

The great importance of the theory of rent in Ricardo's system arises from the fact that he makes the general cconomie condition of the society to depend altogether on the position in which agri- cultural exploitation stands. This will be seen from the following statement of his theory of wages and profits. The produce of every expenditure of labour and capital being divided between the labourer and the capitalist, in proportion as one obtains morc the other will necessarily obtain less. The productiveness of labour being given, nothing can diminish profit but a rise of wages, or increase it but a fall of wages. Now the price of labour, being the same as its cost of production, is determined by the price of the commodities necessary for the support of the labourer. The price of such manufactured articles as he requires has a constant tendeney to fall, principally by reason of the progressive application of the division of labour to their production. But the cost of his main- tenance essentially depends, not on the price of those articles, but on that of his food; and, as the production of food will in the progress of society and of population require the sacrifice of more and more labour, its price will rise; moncy wages will consequently rise, and with the rise of wages profits will fall. Thus it is to the necessary gradual descent to infcrior soils, or less productive expenditure on the same soil, that the decrease in the rate of profit which has historically taken place is to be attributed (Smith ascribed this decrease to the competition of capitalists, though in

1 Senior, however, has pointed out that Smith is partly right; whilst it is true that rent is demanded because the productive powers of nature are limited, and increased population requires a less remunerative expenditure in order to obtain the necessary supply, on the other hand, it is the power whieh most land possesses of producing the subsistenee of more persons than are required for its cultivation that supplies the fund out of which rent ean be paid.

_—

oue place, book I. chap. ix., he had a glimpse of the Ricardian view). This gravitation of profits towards a minimum is happily checked at times by improvements of the machinery employed in the produc- tion of necessaries, and especially by such discoveries in agriculture and other causes as reduce the cost of the prime necessary of the labourer ; but, here again, the tendency is constant. Whilst the capitalist thus loses, the labourer does not gain; his increased money wages only enable him to pay the increased price of his necessaries, of which he will have no greater and probably a less share than he had before. In fact, the labourer can never for any considerable time earn morc than what is required to enable the class to subsist in such a degree of comfort as custom has made in- dispensable to them, and to perpetuate their race without either increase or diminution. That is the ‘‘natural” price of labour; and if the market rate temporarily rises above it population will be stimulated, and the rate of wages will again fall. Thus, whilst rent has a constant tendency to rise and profit to fall, the rise or fall of wages will depend on the rate of increase of the working classes. For the improvement of their condition Ricardo thus has to fall back on the Malthusian remedy, of the effective application of which he does not, however, seem to have much expectation. The securities against a superabundant population to which he points are the gradual abolition of the poor laws—for their amend- ment would not content him—and the development aniongst the working classes of a taste for greater comforts and enjoyments.

1t will be seen that the socialists have somewhat exaggerated in announcing, as Ricardo’s “‘ iron law” of wages, their absolute iden- tity with the amount necessary to sustain the existence of the labourer and enable him to continue the race. He recognizes the influence of a “standard of living” as limiting the increase of the numbers of the working classes, and so kceping thcir wages above the lowest point. But he also holds that, in long-settled countries, in the ordinary course of human affairs, and in the absence of special efforts restricting the growth of population, the condition of the labourer will decline as surely, and from the same causes, as that . of the landlord will be improved.

If we are asked whether this doctrine of rent, and the conse- quences which Ricardo deduced from it, are true, we must answer that they are

hypothetically true in the most advanced industrial communities, and there only (though they have been rashly applied to the cases of India and Ireland), but that even in those communitics neither safe inference nor sound action can be built upon them. As we shall see hereafter, the value of most of the theorems of the classical economics is a good deal attenuated by the habitual as- suniptions that we are dealing with ‘‘ economic men,” actuated by one principle only; that custom, as against competition, has no existence ; that there is no such thing as combination ; that there is equality of contract between the parties to each transaction, and that there is a definite universal rate of profit and wages in a com- munity, which implies that the capital embarked in any undertak- ing will pass at once toanother in which larger profits are for the time to be made ; that a labourer, whatever his local ties of feeling, family, habit, or other engagements, will transfer himself imme- diately to any place where, or employment in which, for the time, larger wages are to be earned than those he had previously obtained ; and that both capitalists and labourers havea perfect knowledge of the condition and prospects of industry throughout the country, both in their own and other occupations. But in Ricardo’s specu- lations on rent and its conscquences there is still more of abstrac- tion. The influence of emigration, which has assumed vast dimen- sions since his time, is left out of account, and the amount of land at the disposal of a community is supposed limited to its own ter- ritory, whilst contemporary Europe is in fact largely fed by the western States of America. He did not adequately appreciate the degree in which the augmented productiveness of labour, whether from increased intelligence, improved organization, introduction of machinery, or more rapid and cheaper communication, steadily kecps down the cost of production. To these influences must be added those of legal reforms in tenure, and fairer conditions in con- tracts, which operate in the same direction. As a result of all tlese causes, the pressure anticipated by Ricardo is not felt, and the cry is rather of the landlords over falling rents than of the consumer over rising prices. The entire conditions are in fact so altered that Prof. Nicholson, no enemy to the ‘‘orthodox” econo- mics, when recently conducting an inquiry into the present state of the agricultural question, pronounced the so-called Ricardian theory of rent ‘‘ too abstract to be of practical utility.”

A particular economic subject on which Ricardo has thrown a useful light is the nature of the advantages derived from foreign commerce, and the conditions under which such commerce can go on. Whilst preceding writers had represented those benefits as consisting in affording a vent for surplus produce, or enabling a portion of the national capital to replace itself with a profit, he pointed out that they consist ‘‘simply and solely in this, that it enables each nation to obtain, with a given amount of labour and capital, a greater quantity of all commodities taken together.” This is no doubt the point of view at which we should habitually

place ourselves ; but the other forms of expression employed by his predecessors are sometimes useful as representing real considerations affecting national production, and nced not be absolutely disused. Ricardo proceeds to show that what determines the purchase of any commodity fromm a foreign country is not the circumstance that it can be produced there with less labour and capital than at homie. If we have a greater positive advantage in the production of some other article than in that of the commodity in question, even though we have an advantage in producing the latter, it may be our interest to devote ourselves to the production of that in which we have the greatest advantage, and to import that iu producing which we should have a less, though a real, advantage. It is, in short, not absolute cost of production, but comparative cost, which determines the interchange. This remark is just and interesting, though an undue importance seems to be attributed to it by J. S. Mill and Cairnes, the latter of whom magniloquently describes it as ‘sounding the depths” of the problem of international dealings, — though, as we shall see hereafter, he modifies it by the introduction of certain eonsiderations respecting the conditions of domestic pro- duction.

For the nation as a whole, according to Ricardo, it is not the gross produce of the land and labour, as Smith seems to assert, that is of importance, but the net income—the excess, that is, of this produce over the cost of production, or, in other words, the amount of its rent and its profits ; for the wages of labour, not essen- tially exceeding the maintenance of the labourers, are by him con- sidered only as a part of the “necessary expenses

of production.” Hence it follows, as he himself in a characteristic and often quoted passage says, that, ‘‘ provided the net real income of the nation be the same, it is of no importance whether it consists of ten or twelve millions of inhabitants. If five millions of men could produce as much food and clothing as was necessary for ten millions, food and clothing for five millions would be the net revenue. Would it be of any advantage to the country that to produce this same uet revenue seven millions of men should be required,—that is to say, that seven millions should be employed to produce food and clothing sufficient for twelve millions? The food and clothing of five millions would be still the net revenue. The employing a greater number of men would enable us neither to add a man to our army and navy nor to contribute one guinea more in taxes.” Industry is here viewed, just as by the mercautilists, in relation to the military and political power of the state, not to the maintenance and improvement of human beings, as its end and aim. The labourer, as Held has remarked, is regarded not as a member of society, but as a means to the ends of society, on whose sustenance a part of the gross incoine must be expended, as another part must be spent on the sustenance of horses. We may well ask, as Sismondi did in a personal interview with Ricardo, ‘“ What! is wealth then everything ? are men absolutely nothing?”

On the whole what seems to us true of Ricardo is this, that, whilst he had remarkable powers, they were not the powers best fitted for sociological research. Nature intended him rather for a mathematician of the second order than for a social philosopher. Nor had he the due previous preparation for social studies; for we must decline to accept Bagehot’s idea that, though “in no high sense an educated man,” he had a specially apt training for such studies in his practice as an eminently successful stockjobber. The same writer justly notices the “anxious penetration with which he follows out rarefied minutiz.” But he wanted breadth of survey, a comprehensive view of human nature and human life, and the strong social sympathies which, as the greatest.minds have recognized, are a most valuable aid in this department of study. On a subject like that of money, where a few elementary pro- positions—into which no moral ingredient enters—have alone to be kept in view, he was well adapted to succeed ; but in the larger social field he is at fault. He had great deductive readiness and skill (though his logical accuracy, as Mr Sidgwick remarks, has been greatly

exaggerated). But in human affairs phenomena are so complex, and prin- ciples so constantly limit or even compensate one another, that rapidity and daring in deduction may be the greatest of dangers, if they are divorced from a wide and balanced appreciation of facts. Dialectic ability is, no doubt, a valuable gift, but the first condition for success in social investigation is to see things as they are.

A sort of Ricardo-mythus for some time existed in econo- mic circles. It cannot be doubted that the exaggerated

estimate of his merits arose in part from a sense of the support his system gave to the manufacturers and other capitalists in their growing antagonism to the old aristo- cracy of landowners. The same tendency, as well as his affinity to their too abstract and unhistorical modes of thought, and their eudzmonistic doctrines, recommended him to the Benthamite group, and to the so-called Philo- sophical Radicals generally. Brougham said he seemed to have dropped from heaven—a singular avatar, it must be owned. His real services in connexion with questions of currency and banking naturally created a prepossession in favour of his more general views. But, apart from those special subjects, it does not appear that, either in the form of solid theoretic teaching or of valuable practical guidance, he has really done much for the world, whilst. he admittedly misled opinion on several important questions. De Quincey's presentation of him as a great revealer of truth is now seen to be an ex- travagance. J.S. Mill and others speak of his " superior lights" as compared with those of Adam Smith; but his work, as a contribution to our knowledge of human society, will not bear a moment's comparison with the Wealth of Nations.

It is interesting to observe that Malthus, though the combination of his doctrine of population with the prin- ciples of Ricardo composed the creed for some time pro- fessed by all the " orthodox" economists, did not himself accept the Ricardian scheme. He prophesied that "the main part of the structure would not stand." "The theory," he says, " takes a partial view of the subject, like the system of the French economists; and, like that system, after having drawn into its vortex a great number of very clever men, it will be unable to support itself against the testimony of obvious facts, and the

weight of those theories which, though less simple and captivating, are more just, on account of their embracing more of the causes which are in actual operation in all economical results. ”

We saw that the foundations of Smith’s doctrine in general philosophy were unsound, and the ethical character of his scheme in consequence injuriously affected; but his method, consisting in a judicious combination of induction and deduction, we found (so far as the statical study of eco- nomic laws is concerned) little open to objection. Mainly through the influence of Ricardo, economic method was perverted. The science was led into the mistaken course of turning its back on observation, and seeking to evolve the laws of phenomena out of a few hasty generalizations by a play of logic. The principal vices which have been in recent times not unjustly attributed to the members of the “orthodox” school were all encouraged by his example, namely,—(1) the viciously abstract character of the conceptions with which they deal, (2) the abusive preponderance of deduction in their processes of research, and (3) the too absolute way in which their conclusions are conceived and enunciated.

The two works of Malthus already named are by far the most important in the history of the science. He was also author of Principles of Political Economy (1820), Definitions in Political Economy, and some minor pieces. The works of Ricardo have been collected in one volume, with a biographical notice, by J. R. M‘Culloch (1846).

After Malthus and Ricardo, the first of whom had fixed The

public attention irresistibly on certain aspects of society, and the second had led economic research into new, if questionable, paths, came a number of minor writers who were mainly their expositors and commentators, and whom, accordingly, the Germans, with allusion to Greek mythical history, designate as the Epigoni. By them the doctrines of Smith and his earliest successors were thrown into more systematic shape, limited and guarded so as to

James Mill.

M’‘Cul- loch.

Senior.

Torrens.

Harriet Mar- tineau.

Perrricant PCONOM Y

be less opeu to criticism, couched in a more accurate ter- minology, modified in subordinate particulars, or applied to the solution of the practical questions of their day. James Mill's Elements (1821) deserves special notice, as exhibiting the system of Ricardo with a thorough-going rigour, a compactness of presentation, and a skill in the disposition of materials, which give toit in some degree the character of a work of art. Thea priori political economy is here reduced to its simplest expression. J. R. M'Culloch (1779-1864), author of a number of laborious statis- tical and other compilations, criticized current econoniic legislation in the Edinburgh Review from the point of view of the Ricardian doctrine, taking up substantially the same theoretic position as was occupied at a somewhat later period by the Manchester school. He is altogether without originality, and never exhibits any philo- sophic elevation or breadth. His confident dogmatism is oftcn repellent; he admitted in his later years that he had been too fond of novel opinions, and defended them with more heat and perti- nacity than they deserved. It is noticeable that, though often spoken of in his own time both by those who agreed with his views, and those, like Sismondi, who differed from them, as one of the lights of the reigning school, his name is now tacitly dropped in the writings of the members of that school. Whatever may have been his partial usefulness in vindicating the policy of free trade, it is at least plain that for the needs of our social future he has nothing to offer. Nassau William Senior (1790-1864), who was professor of political economy in the university of Oxford, published, besides a number of separate lectures, a treatise on the science, which first appeared as an article in the Encyclopedia Metropolitana. He is a writer of a high order of merit. He made considerable contributions to the elucidation of economic principles, specially studying exactness in nomeuclature and strict accuracy in deduction. His explanations on cost of production and the way in which it affects price, on rent, on the difference between rate of wages and price of labour, on the relation between profit and wages (with

special reference to Ricardo’s theorem on this subject, which he corrects by the substi- tution of proportional for absolute amount), aud on the dis- tribution of the precious metals between different countries are particularly valuable. His new term ‘‘abstinence,” invented to express the conduct for which interest is the reniuneration, was useful, though not quite appropriate, because. negative in meaning. It is on the question of wages that Senior is least satisfactory. He makes the average rate in a country (which, we must maintain, is not areal quantity, though the rate in a given employment and neighbourhood is) to be expressed by the fraction of which the numcrator is the amount of the wages fund (an unascertainable and indeed, except as actual total of wages paid, imaginary sum) aud the denominator the number of the working population ; and from this le proceeds to draw the most important and far-reaching consequences, though the equation on which he founds his inferences conveys at most only an arithmetical fact, which would be true of evcry case of a division amongst individuals, and contains no economic element whatever. The phrase “‘ wages fund” originated

in some expressions of Adam Smith used only for the purpose of |

illustration, and never intended to be rigorously interpreted ; and we shall see that the doctrine has been repudiated by several members of what is regarded as the orthodox school of political economy. As regards method, Senior makes the science a purely deductive one, in which there is no room for any other “‘faets” than the four fundamental propositions from which he undertakes to deduce all economic truth. And he does not regard himself as arriving at hypothetic conclusions; his postulates and his inferences are alike conceived as corresponding to actual phenomena. Colouel Robert Torrens (1780-1864) was a prolific writer, partly on economic theory, but principally on its applications to financial and com- mercial policy. Almost the whole of the programme which was carried out in legislation by Sir Robert Peel had been laid down in principle in the writings of Torrens. He gave substantially the samc theory of foreign trade whieh was afterwards stated by J. 8. Mill in one of his Essays on Unscttled Questions. He was an early and carnest advocate of the repeal of the corn laws, but was not in favour of a general system of absolute free trade, maintain- ing that it is expedient to impose retaliatory duties to countervail similar duties imposed by foreign countries, and that a lowering of import duties on the

productions of countries retaining their hostile tarifis would occasion an abstraetion of the precious metals, and a decline in prices, profits, and wages. His principal writings of a general eharacter were—Zhe Economist [i.e., Physiocrat] refuted, 1808; Essay on the Production of Wealth, 1821; Essay on the External Corn-trade (eulogized by Ricardo), 1827; The Budget, a Series of Letters on Financial, Commercial, and Colonial Policy, 1841-3. Harriet Martineau (1802-1876) popularized the doctrines of Malthus and Ricardo in her Illustrations of Political Economy (1882-84), a series of tales, in which there is much excellent description, but the effect of the narrative is often marred by the somewhat ponderous disquisitions here and there thrown in, usually in the form of dialogue.

€ ot7 Other writers who ought to be named in any history of the science are Charles Babbage, On the Economy of Machincs and Manufactures (1832), chiefly descriptive, but also in part theoretic; William Thomas Thornton, Overpopulation and its Remedy (1846), A Plea for Peasant Proprietors (1848), On Labour (1869; 2d ed., 1870); Herman Merivale, Lectures on Colonization and Colonies, (1841-2; new ed., 1861); T. C. Banfield, Zhe Organization of Industry cuplained (1844; 2d ed., 1848); and Edward Gibbon Wakefield, A View of the Art of Colonization, 1849. Thomas Chalmers, well known in other fields of thought, was author of The Christian and Civic Economy of Large Towns (1821-86), and On Political Economy in Connexion with the Moral State and Moral Prospects of Socicty (1832); he strongly opposed any system of legal charity, and, whilst justly insisting on the primary importance of morality, industry, and thrift as conditions of popular wellbeing, carried the Malthusian doctrines to excess. Nor was Ireland without a share in the economic movement of the period. Whately, having been second Drummond professor of political economy at Oxford (in succession to Senior), founded (1832), when he went to Ireland as archbishop of Dublin, a similar professorship in Trinity College, Dublin. Itwas first held by Monntifort Longfield, after-

. wards judge of the Landed Estates Court, Ireland (d. 1884). He pub-

lished lectures on the science generally (1834), on Poor Laws (1834), and on Commerce and Absenteeism (1835), which were marked by independence of thought and sagacious observation. He was laudably free

from many of the exaggerations of his contemporaries ; he said, in 1835, "' in political economy we must not abstract too much," and protested against the assumption too often made that ''men are guided in all their conduct by a prudent regard to their own interest." James A. Lawson (now Mr Justice Lawson) also published some lectures (1844) delivered from the same chair, which may still be read with interest and profit ; his discussion of the question of population is especially good ; he also asserted against Senior that the science is avide de faits, and that it must reason about the world and mankind as they really are.

The most systematic and thorough-going contemporary Richard critic of the Ricardian system was Richard Jones (1790- Jones.

1855), professor at Haileybury. Jones has received scant justice at the hands of his successors. J. S. Mill, whilst using his work, gave his merits but faint recognition. Even Roscher says that he did not thoroughly understand Ricardo, without giving any proof of that assertion, whilst he is silent as to the fact that much of what has been preached by the German historical school is found dis- tinctly indicated in Jones's writings. He has been some- times represented as having rejected the Andersonian doctrine of rent; but such a statement is incorrect. Attributing the doctrine to Malthus, he says that that economist " showed satisfactorily that, when land is culti- vated by capitalists living on the profits of their stock, and able to move it at pleasure to other employments, the expense of tilling the worst quality of land cultivated determines the average price of raw produce, while the difference of quality on the superior lands measures the rents yielded by them." What he really denied was the application of the doctrine to all cases where rent is paid ; he pointed out in his Zssay on the Distribution of Wealth and on the Sources of Taxation, 1831, that, besides "farmers' rents," which, under the supposed conditions, conform to the above law, there are " peasant rents," paid everywhere through the most extended periods of history, and still paid over by far the largest part of the earth's surface, which are not so regulated. Peasant rents he divided under the heads of (1) serf, (2) métayer, (3) ryot, and (4) cottier rents, a classification afterwards adopted in substance by J. S. Mill; and he showed that the contracts fixing their amount were, at least in the first three classes, determined rather by custom than by competition. Passing to the superstructure of theory erected by Ricardo on the doctrine of

rent which he had so unduly extended, Jones denied most of the conclusions he had deduced, especially the following:—that the increase of farmers' rents is always contemporary with a decrease in the productive powers of agriculture, and comes with loss and distress in its train ; that the interests of landlords are always and necessarily opposed to the interests of the state and of every other XIX. — 48

class of society ; that the diminution of the rate of profits is exclusively dependent on the returns to the capital last employed on the land; and that wages can rise only at

the expense of profits.

The method followed by Jones is inductive ; his conclusions are founded on a wide observation of contemporary facts, aided by the study of history. "If," he said, "we wish to make ourselves acquainted with the economy and arrangements by which the different nations of the earth produee and distribute their revenues, I really know but of one way to attain our object, aud that is, to look and sce. We must get. comprehensive views of facts, that we may arrive at principles that are truly comprehensive. If we take a different method, if we snatch at general principles, and content ourselves with confined observations, two things will happen to us. First, what we call general principles will often be found to have no generality—we shall set out with declaring propositions to be nniversally true which, at every step of our further progress, we shall be obliged to confess are frequently false ; and, secondly, we

shall miss a great mass of useful knowledge which those who |

advance to principles by a comprehensive cxamination of facts necessarily meet with on their road." The world he professed to study was not an imaginary world, inhabited by abstract " economic men," but the real world with the different forms which the owner-

ship and cultivation of land, and, in general, the conditions of |

production and distribution, assume at different times and places. His recognition of such different systems of life in communities occupying different stages in the progress of civilization led to his proposal of what he called a ‘‘political economy of nations.” This was a protest against the practice of taking the exceptional state of facts which exists, and is indeed only partially realized, in a small corner of our planet as representing the uniform type of human societies, and ignoring the effects of the early history and special devclopment of each community as influencing its economic rio nteats

It is sometimes attempted to elude the necessity for a wider range of study by alleging a universal tendency in the social world to assume this now exceptional shape as its normal and ultimate constitution. Even if this tendency were real (which is only partially true, for the existing order amongst ourselves cannot be regarded as entirely definitive), it could not be admitted that the facts witnessed in our civilization and those exhibited in lIcss advanced communities are so approximate as to be capable of being represented by the same formule. As Whewell, in editing Jones’s Remains, 1859, well observed, it is true in the physical world that ‘all things tend to assume a form determined by the force of gravity ; the hills tend to become plains, the waterfalls to eat away their beds and disappear, the rivers to form lakes in the valleys, the glaciers to pour down in cataracts.” But are we to treat these results as achieved, because forces are in operation which may ultimately bring them about? As Comte has said, all human questions are largely questious of time ; and the economic pheno- inena which really belong to the several stages of the human movement must be studicd as they are, unless we are content to fall into grievous error both in our theoretic treatment of them and in the solution of the practical problems they present.

Jones is remarkable for his freedom from exaggeration and one- sided statement ; thus, whilst holding Malthus in, perhaps, undue esteem, he declines to accept the proposition that an increase of the means of subsistence is necessarily followed by an increase of population ; and he maintains what is undoubtedly true, that with the growth of population, in all well-governed and prosperous states, the command over food, instead of diminishing, increases.

Much of what he has left us—a large part of which is unfortu- nately fragmentary—is akin to the later labours of Cliffe Leslie. The latter, however, had the advantage of acquaintance with the sociology of Comte, which gave him a firmer grasp.of method, as well as a wider view of the general movement of society ; and, whilst the voice of Jones was but little heard amidst the general applause accorded to Ricardo in the economic world of his time, Leslie wrote when disillusion had set in, and the current was beginning to turn in England against the a priori economics.

Comte somewhere speaks of the " transient predilec- tion" for political economy which had shown itself gene- rally in western Europe. This phase of feeling was speci- ally noticeable in England from the third to the fifth decade of the present century. "Up to the year 1818," said a writer in the Westminster Review, "the science was scarcely known or talked of beyond a small circle of philo- sophers ; and legislation, so far from being in conformity with its principles, was daily receding from them more and more." Mill has told us what a change took place within a few years. " Political economy," he says, " had asserted itself with great vigour in public affairs by the

petition of the merchants of London for free trade, drawn up in 1820 by Mr Tooke and presented by Mr Alexander Baring, and by the noble exertions of Ricardo during the few years of his parliamentary life. His writings, follow- ing up the impulse given by the bullion controversy, and followed up in their turn by the expositions and com- ments of my father and M'Culloch (whose writings in the Edinburgh Review during those years were most valuable), had drawn general attention to the subject, making at least partial converts in the cabinet itself; and Huskisson, supported by Canning, had commenced that gradual demolition of the protective system which one of their colleagues virtually completed in 1846, though the last vestiges were only swept away by Mr Gladstone in 1860." Whilst the science was thus attracting and fixing the attention of active minds, its unsettled condition was freely admitted. The differences of opinion among its professors were a frequent subject of complaint. But it

was confidently expected that these discrepancies would

soon disappear, and Colonel Torrens predicted that in twenty years there would scarcely “exist a doubt respect- ing any of its more fundamental principles.” “The pro- sperity,” says Mr Sidgwick, “that followed on the aboli- tion of the corn laws gave practical men a most impressive and satisfying proof of the soundness of the abstract reasoning by which the expediency of free trade had been

inferred,” and when, in 1848, “a masterly expositor of J. 5. Mill

thought had published a skilful statement of the chief results of the controversies of the preceding generation,” with the due “explanations and qualifications” of the reigning doctrines, it was for some years generally believed that political economy had “emerged from the state of polemical discussion,” at least on its leading doctrines,

and that at length a sound construction had been erected

on permanent bases.

This expositor was John Stuart Mill (1806-73). He exercised, without doubt, a greater influence in the field of English economics than any other writer since Ricardo. His systematic treatise has been, either directly or through manuals founded on it, especially that of Fawcett, the source from which most of our contemporaries in these countries have derived their knowledge of the science. But there are other and deeper reasons, as we shall see, which make him, in this as in other departinents of know- ledge, a specially interesting and significant figure.

In 1844 he published five Lssays on some Unsettled Questions of Political Economy, which had been written as early as 1829 and 1830, but had, with the exception of the fifth, remained in manuscript. In these essays is contained any dogmatic contribution which he can be regarded as having made to the science. The subject of the first is the laws of interchange between nations. He shows that, when two countries trade together in two commodities, the prices of the commodities exchanged on both sides (which, as Ricardo had proved, are not deter- mined by cost of production) will adjust themselves in such a way that the quantities required by each country of the article which it imports from its neighbour shall be exactly

sufficient to pay for one another. This is the law which appears, with some added developments, in his systematic treatise under the name of the “equation of international demand.” The most important practical conclusion (not, however, by any means an undisputed one) at which he arrives in this essay is, that the relaxation of duties on foreign commodities, not operating as protection but maintained solely for revenue, should be made contingent on the adoption of some corresponding degree of freedom of trade with England by the nation from which the commodities are imported. In the second essy, on the influence of con-

sumption on production, the most interesting results | arrived at are the propositions—(1) that absenteeism is a local, not a national, evil, and (2) that, whilst there cannot be permanent excess of production, there may be a temporary excess, not only of any one article, but of commodities gencrally, —this last, however, not arising from over-production, but from a want of commercial con- fidence. ‘The third essay relates to the use of the words “ productive” and “ unproductive” as applied to labour, to consumption, and to expenditure. The fourth deals with profits and interest, especially explaining and so justifying Ricardo’s theorem that “profits depend on wages, rising as wages fall and falling as wages rise.” What Ricardo meant was that profits depend on the cost of wages estimated in labour. Hence improvements in the production of articles habitually consumed by the labourer may increase profits without diminishing the real remuneration of the labourer. The last essay is on the definition and method of political economy, a subject afterwards more maturely treated in the author’s System of Logie.

In 1848 Mill published his Principles of Political Economy, with some of their Applications to Social Philo- sophy. ‘This title, though, as we shall see, open to criti- cism, indicated on the part of the author a less narrow and formal conception of the field of the science than had been common amongst his predecessors. He aimed, in fact, at producing a work which might replace in ordinary use the Wealth of Nations, which in his opinion was “ in many parts obsolete and in all imperfect.” Adam Smith had invariably associated the general principles of the subject with their

applications, and in treating those applications had perpetually appealed to other and often far larger considerations than pure political economy affords. And in the same spirit Mill desired, whilst incor- porating all the results arrived at in the special science by Smith's successors, to exhibit purely economic phenomena in relation to the most advanced conceptions of his own time in the general philosophy of society, as Smith had done in reference to the philosophy of his century.

This design he certainly failed to realize. His book is very far indeed from being a "modern Adam Smith." It is an admirably lucid and even elegant exposition of the Ricardian economics, the Malthusian theory being of course incorporated with these, but, notwithstanding the introduction of many minor novelties, it is, in_ its scientific substance, little or nothing more. When Cliffe Leslie says that Mill so qualified and amended the doctrines of Ricardo that the latter could scarcely have recognized them, he certainly goes a great deal too far; Senior really did more in that direction. Mill's effort is usually to vindicate his master where others have censured him, and to palliate his admitted laxities of expression. Already his profound esteem for Ricardo's services to economics had been manifest in his Essays, where he says of | him, with some injustice to Smith, that, " having a science to create," he could not "occupy himself with more than the leading principles," and adds that "no one who has thoroughly entered into his discoveries" will find any difficulty in working out "even the minutiz of the science." James Mill, too, had been essentially an ex- pounder of Ricardo ; and the son, whilst greatly superior to his father in the attractiveness of his expository style, is, in regard to his economic doctrine, substantially at the same point of view. It is in their general philosophical conceptions and their views of social aims and ideals that | the elder and younger Mill occupy quite different positions in the line of progress. The latter could not, for example, |

"ein historischer Kopf war er nicht."

in his adult period have put forward as a theory of | government tlic shallow sophistries which the plain good |

sense of Macaulay sufficed to expose in the writings of the former; and he had a nobleness of feeling which, in – relation to the higher social

questions, raised him far above the ordinary coarse utilitarianism of the Benthamites.

The larger and more philosophic spirit in which Mill dealt with social subjects was undoubtedly in great measure due to the influence of Comte, to whom, as Mr Bain justly says, he was under greater obligations than he himself was disposed to admit. Had he more completely undergone that influence, we are sometimes tempted to think he might have wrought the reform in economics whicli still remains to be achieved, emancipating the science from the a priori system, and founding a genuine theory of industrial life on observation in the broadest sense. But probably the time was not ripe for such a construction, and it is possible that Mill's native intellectual defects might have made him unfit for the task, for, as Roscher has said, However this might have been, the effects of his early training, in which positive were largely alloyed with metaphysical elements, sufficed in fact to prevent his attaining a perfectly normal mental attitude. He never altogether overcame the vicious direction which he had received from the teaching of his father, and the influence of the Benthamite group in which he was brought up. Hence it was that, according to the striking expression of Roscher, his whole view of life was "zu wenig aus Einem Gusse." The incongruous mixture of the narrow dogmas of his youthful period with the larger ideas of a later stage gave a waver- ing and indeterminate character to his entire philosophy. He is, on every side, eminently "un-final"; he represents tendencies to new forms of opinion, and opens new vistas in various directions, but founds scarcely anything, and remains indeed, so far as his own position is concerned, not merely incomplete but incoherent. It is, however, precisely this dubious position which seems to us to give a special interest to his career, by fitting him in a peculiar degree to prepare and facilitate transitions.

What he himself thought to be "the chief merit of his treatise" was the marked distinction drawn between the theory of production and that of distribution, the laws of the former being based on unalterable natural facts, whilst the course of distribution is modified from time to time by the changing ordinances of socicty. This distinction, we may remark, must not be too absolutely stated, for the organization of production changes with social growth, and, as Lauderdale long ago showed, the nature of the

| distribution in a community reacts on production. But

there is a substantial truth in the distinction, and the recognition of it tends to concentrate attention on the question—How can we improve the existing distribution of wealth? he study of this problem led Mill, as he advanced in years, further and further in the direction of socialism ; and, whilst to the end of his life his book con- tinued to deduce the Ricardian doctrines from the principle of enlightened selfishness, he was looking forward to an order of things in which synergy should be founded on

| sympathy.

The gradual modification of his views in relation to the economic constitution of society is set forth in his Awto- biography. In his earlier days, he tells us, he “had seen little further than the old school” (note this significant title) “of political economy into the possibilities of funda- mental improvement in social arrangements. Private pro- perty, as now understood, and inheritance appeared the dernier mot of legislation.” The notion of proceeding to any radical redress of the injustice “involved in the fact that some are born to riches and the vast majority to poverty ” he had then reckoned chimerical. But now his views were such as would “class him decidedly under the

general designation of socialist”; he had come to believe that the whole contemporary framework of economic hfe was merely temporary and provisional, and that a time would come when “the division of the produce of labour, instead of depending, as in so great a degree it now does, on the accident of birth, would be made by concert on an acknowledged principle of justice.” “The social problem of the future” he considered to be ‘‘how to unite the greatest individual liberty of action,” which was often compromised in socialistic schemes, “with a common ownership in the raw material of the globe, and an equal participation in all the benefits of combined labour.” ‘These ideas were scarcely indicated in the first edition of | the Political Economy, rather more clearly and fully in | the second, and quite unequivocally in the third,—the | French Revolution of 1848 having,

as he says, made the | public more open to the reception of novelties in opinion.

Whilst thus looking forward to a new economic order, he | yet thinks its advent very remote, and believes that the inducements of private interest will in the meantime be indispensable. On the spiritual side he maintains a similar attitude of expectancy. He anticipates the ulti- mate disappearance of theism, and the substitution of a_ purely human religion, but believes that the existing doctrine will long be necessary as a stimulus and a control. He thus saps existing foundations without providing any- thing to take their place, and maintains the necessity of conserving for indefinite periods what he has radically discredited. Nay, even whilst sowing the seeds of change in the direction of a socialistic organization of society, he favours present or proximate arrangements which would» urge the industrial world towards other issues. The system of peasant proprietorship of land is distinctly indi- vidualistic in its whole tendency; yet he extravagantly praises it in the earlier part of his book, only receding from that laudation when he comes to the chapter on the future of the labouring classes. And the system of so- called cooperation in production which he so warmly com- mended in the later editions of his work, and led some of | his followers to preach as the one thing needful, would inevitably strengthen the principle of personal property, and, whilst professing at most to substitute the competition of associations for that of individuals, would by no means exclude the latter.

The elevation of the working classes he bound up too exclusively with the Malthusian ethics, on which he laid quite an extravagant stress, though, as Mr Bain has observed, it is not easy to make out his exact views, any more than his father's, on this subject. We have no reason to think that he ever changed his opinion as to the necessity of a restriction on population ; yet that element seems foreign to the socialistic idea to which he increas- ingly leaned. It is at least difficult to see how, apart from individual responsibility for the support of a family, what Malthus called moral restraint could be enforced. This difficulty is indeed the fatal flaw which, in Malthus's own opinion, vitiated the scheme of Godwin.

Mill's openness to new ideas and his enthusiasm for improvement cannot be too much admired. But there | appears to have been combined with these

fine traits in» his mental constitution a certain want of practical sense, a failure to recognize and acquiesce in the necessary con- ditions of human life, and a craving for “better bread

than can be made of wheat.” He entertained strangely exaggerated, or rather perverted, notions of the “sub- jection,” the capacities, and the rights of women. He encourages a spirit of revolt on the part of working men against their perpetual condemnation, as a class, to the lot of living by wages, without giving satisfactory proof that this state of things is capable of change, and without ,

| mentary evidence.”

P@OLOGTIC AL Cwm

showing that such a lot, duly regulated by law and morality, is inconsistent with their real happiness. He also insists on the “‘independence” of the working class— which according to him fara da se—in such a way as to

| obscure, if not to controvert, the truths that superior rank

and wealth are naturally invested with social power, and are bound in duty to exercise it for the benefit of the community at large, and especially of its less favoured members. And he attaches a quite undue importance to mechanical and, indeed, illusory expedients, such as the limitation of the power of bequest and the confiscation of: the “unearned increment” of rent.

With respect to economic method also, he shifted his position ; yet to the end occupied uncertain ground. In the fifth of his early essays he asserted that the method a priort is the only mode of investigation in the social

| sciences, and that the method a posterion “is altogether

inefficacious in those sciences, as a means of arriving at any considerable body of valuable truth.” When he wrote his Logic, he had learned from Comte that the a posterior method—in the form which he chose to call “inverse deduction ”—was the only mode of arriving at truth in general sociology; and his admission of this at once renders the essay obsolete. But,

unwilling to relinquish the a priort method of his youth, he tries to establish a distinction of two sorts of economic inquiry, one of which, though not the other, can be handled by that method. Sometimes he speaks of political economy as a department ‘carved out of the general body of the science of society ”; whilst on the other hand the title of his systematic work implies a doubt whether political economy is a part of “social philosophy” at all, and not rather a study pre- paratory and auxiliary to it. Thus, on the logical as well as the dogmatic side, he halts between two opinions. Notwithstanding his misgivings and even disclaimers, he yet remained, as to method, a member of the old school, and never passed into the new or “historical” school, to which the future belongs.

The question of cconomic method was also taken up by Cairnes.

the ablest of his disciples, John Elliott Cairnes (1824— 75), who devoted a volume to the subject (Logical Method of Political Economy, 1857 ; 2d ed., 1875). Prof. Walker has lately spoken of the method advocated by Cairnes as different from that put forward by Mill, and has even represented the former as similar to, if not identical with, that of the German historical school. But this is certainly an error. Cairnes, notwithstanding some apparent vacillation of view and certain conces- sions more formal than real, maintains the utmost rigour of the deductive method; he distinctly affirms that in political economy there is no room for induction at all, “the economist starting with a knowledge of ultimate causes,” and being thus, “at the outset of his enterprise, at the position which the physicist only attains after ages of laborious research.” He does not, indeed, seem to be advanced beyond the point of view of Senior, who professed to deduce all economic truth from four elementary pro- positions. Whilst Mill in his Logic represents verification as an essential part of the process of demonstration of economic laws, Cairnes holds that, as they “ are not asser- tions respecting the character or sequence of phenomena ” (though what else can a scientific law be’), “they can neither be established nor refuted by statistical or docu- A proposition which affirms nothing respecting phenomena cannot be controlled by being con- fronted with phenomena, Notwithstanding the unques-

_tionable ability of his book, it appears to mark, in some

respects, a retrogression in methodology, and can for the future possess only an historical interest.

Regarded in that light, the labours of Mill and

Cairnes on the method of the science, though intrinsically | and mutually dependent phenomena—identical, indeed, under a

unsound, had an important negative effect. They let down the old political economy from its traditional posi- tion, and reduced its extravagant pretensions by two modifications of commonly accepted views. First, whilst Ricardo had never doubted that in all his reasonings he was dealing with human beings as they actually exist, they showed that the science must be regarded as a purely hypothetic one. Its deductions are based on unreal, or at least one-sided, assumptions, the most essential of which is that of the existence of the so-called ‘economic man,” a being who is influenced by two motives only, that of acquiring wealth and that of avoiding exertion ; and only so far as the premises framed on this conception correspond with fact can the conclusions be depended on in practice. Senior in vain protested against such a view of the science, which, as he saw, compromised its social efficacy ;

whilst Torrens, who had previously combated the doctrines’

of Ricardo, hailed Mill’s new presentation of political economy as enabling him, whilst in one sense rejecting those doctrines, in another sense to accept them. Secondly, beside economic science, it had often been said, stands an economic art,—the former ascertaining truths respecting

the laws of economic phenomena, the latter prescribing |

the right kind of economic action ; and many had assumed that, the former being given, the latter is also in our possession—that; in fact, we have only to convert theorems into precepts, and the work is done. But Mill and Cairnes made it plain that this statement could not be accepted, that action can no more in the economic world than in any other province of life be

regulated by considerations borrowed from that department of things ouly, that economics can suggest ideas which are to be kept in view, but that, standing alone, it cannot direct conduct—an office for which a wider prospect of human affairs is required. This matter is best elucidated by a reference to Comte's classification, or rather hierarchical arrangement, of the sciences. Beginning with the least complex, mathematics, we rise successively to astronomy, physics, chemistry, thence to biology, and from it again to socio- logy. In the course of this ascent we come upon all the great laws which regulate the phenomena of the inorganic world, of organized beings, and of society. A further step, however, remains to be taken—namely, to morals ; and at this point theory and practice tend to coincide, because every element of conduct has to be considered in relation to the general good. In the final synthesis all the previous analyses have to be used as instrumental, in order to determine how every real quality of things or men may be made to converge to the welfare of humanity.

Cairnes's most important economic publication was his last, entitled Some Leading Principles of Political Economy newly Expownded, 1874. In this work, which does not pro- fess to be a complete treatise on the science, he criticizes and emends the statements which preceding writers had given of some of its principal doctrines, and treats elaborately of the limitations with which they are to be understood, and the exceptions to them which may be produced by special circumstances. Whilst marked by great ability, it affords evidence of what has been justly observed as a weakness in Cairnes's mental constitution—his "deficiency in in- tellectual sympathy," and consequent frequent inability to see mare than one side of a truth.

The three divisions of the book relate respectively to (1) value, (2) labour and eapital, aud (3) international trade. In the first he begins by elucidating the meaning of the word "value," and under this head controverts the view of Jevons that the exchange value of anything depends entirely on its utility, without, perhaps, distinctly apprehending what Jevons meant by this proposition, On supply and demand he shows, as Say had done before, that these, regarded as aggregates, are not independent, but strictly connected

system of barter, but, under a money system, conceivable as distinct. Supply and demand with respect to partieular commo- cities must be

understood to mean supply and demand ata given

| price ; and thus we are introduced to the ideas of market price and | normal price (as, following Cherbuliez, he terms what Smith less

happily called natural price). Normal price again leads to the consideration of cost of produetion, and here, against Mill and others, he denies that profit and wages enter into cost of produc- tion ; in otherwords, he asserts what Senior (whom he does not name) had said before him, though he had not consistently carried out the nomenclature, that cost of produetion is the snin of labour and abstinence necessary to production, wages and profits being the remuneration of sacrifice and not elements of it. But, it may well be asked, How can au amouut of labour be added to an ainount of abstinence? Mnst not wages and profits be taken as ‘‘ measures of cost?” By adhering to the conception of ‘‘saerifiee,” he exposes the emptiness of the assertion that ‘‘dear labour is the great obstacle to the extension of British trade”—a sentence in which ‘British trade” means capitalists’ profits. At this point we are introduced to a doctrine now first elaborated, though there are indications of it in Mill, of whose theory of inter- national values it is in fact an extension. In foreign trade cost of production, in Cairnes’s sense, does not regulate values, because it cannot perform that function except under a régime of effective competition, and between different countries effec- tive competition does not exist. But, Cairnes asks, to what ex- tent does it exist in domestic industries? So far as capital is concerned, he thinks the condition is sufficiently fulfilled over the whole field—a position, let it be said in passing, which he does not scem to make out, if we consider the practical iminobility of most invested, as distinct from disposable, eapital. But in the ease of labour the requisite competition takes place only within certain social, or rather industrial, strata. The world of industry may be divided into a series of superposed groups, and these gronps are practically ‘‘non-competing,” the disposable labour in any one of them being rarely eapable of choosing its field ina higher. The law that cost of production determines price cannot, therefore, be absolutely stated respecting domestic any more than respecting international exchange ; as it fails for the lattcr universally, so it fails for the former as between non-competing groups. The law that holds between these is similar to that governing international values, which may be called the equation of reeiprocal demand. Such a state

of relative prices will establish itself amongst the products of these groups as shall enable that portion of the products of each group which is applied to the purchase of the products of all other groups to discharge its liabilities towards those other groups. The reciprocal demand of the groups determines the “average relative level” of prices within each group; whilst cost of produetion regulates the distribution of price among the indivi- dual products of each group. This theorem is perhaps of no great practical value; but the tendency of the whole investigation is to attenuate the importance of cost of production as a regulator of normal price, and so to show that yet another of the accepted doctrines of the science had been propounded in too rigid and absolute a form. As to market price, the formula by which Mill had defined it as the price which equalizes demand and supply Cairncs shows to be an identical proposition, aud he defines it as the price which most advantageously adjusts the existing supply: to the existing demand pending the coming forward of fresh supplies from the sources of production.

His second part is chiefly remarkable for his defence of what is known as the wages fund doctrine, to which we adverted when speaking of Senior. Mill had given up this doctrine, having been convinced by Thornton that it was erroneous ; but Cairnes refused to follow his leader, who, as he believes, ought not to have been convinced. After having given what is eertainly a fallacious reply to Longe’s critieism of the expression “average rate of wages,” he proceeds to vindieate the doctrine in question by the consideration that the amount of a nation’s wealth devoted at any time to the payment of wages—if the character of the national industries and the methods of prodnetion cmployed remain the same—is in a definite relation to the amount of its general capital ; the latter being given, the former is also given. In illustrating his view of the subject, he insists on the principle (trne in the main, but too absolutely formulated by Mill) that “ demand for commodities is not demand for labour.” It is not necessary here to follow his in- vestigation, for his reasoning has not satisfied his successors, with the exception of Fawcett, and the question of wages is now commonly treated without reference to a supposed determinate wages fund. Cairnes next studies trades-unionism in relation to wages, and arrives in substance at the conclusion that the only way in which it can affect their rate is by accelerating an advance which must ultimately have taken place

independently of its action. He also takes occasion to refute Mr (now Sir Thomas) Brassey's supposed law of a uniform cost of labour in every part of the world. Turning

| to consider the material prospects of the working classes, he examines

382

the question of the changes which may be expected in the amount and partition of the fund out of which abstinence and labour are remunerated. He here enunciates the principle (which had been, however, stated before him by Ricardo and Senior) that the increased

productiveness of industry will not affect cither profit or wages , . = He ef es. | other hand,—if we omit the socialists, who do not here come

unless it cheapen the commodities which the labourer consumes. These latter being mostly commodities of which raw produce is the only or principal element, their cost of production, notwithstanding

numbers of the labouring class be steadily kept in check ; and hence the possibility of elevating the condition of the labourer 1s confined within very narrow limits, if he continues to be a labourer only. The condition of any substantial and permanent improvement in his lot is that he should cease to be a mere labourer—that profits should be brought to reinforce the wages fund, which has a tendency to decline relatively to the general capital of a country. And hence Cairnes—abandoning the purely theoretic attitude which he else-

where represents as the only proper one for the cconomist—recoin- | who have contributed important truths, introduced improve-

mends the system of so-called co-operation (that is, in fact, the aboli- tion of the large capitalist) as offering to the working classes ‘‘ the sole means of escape from a harsh and hopeless destiny,” and puts aside rather contemptuously the opposition of the positivists to this solution, which yet many besides the positivists, as, for example, Leslie and F. A. Walker, regard as chimerical.

The third part is devoted mainly to an exposition of Ricardo's doctrine of the conditions of international trade and Mill's theory of international values. The former Cairnes modifies by introducing his idea of the paftial influence of reciprocal demand, as distinguished

from cost of production, on the regulation of domestic prices, and | founds on this rectification an interesting account of the connexion |

between the wages prevailing in a country and the cliaracter and course of its external trade. He emends Mill's statement, which represented the produce of a country as exchanging for that of other countries at such values ''as are required in order that the whole of her exports may exactly pay for the whole of her imports" by sub- stituting for the latter phrase the condition that each country should by means of her exports discharge all her foreign liabilities—in other words, by introducing tlie consideration of the balance of debts. This idea was not new; it lad been indicated by J. L. Foster as early as 1804, and was touched on by Mill himself; but he expounds it well; and it is important as clearing away common misconceptions, and sometimes removing groundless alarms. Pass- ing to the question of free trade, he disposes of some often-repeated protectionist arguments, and in particular refutes the American allegation of the inability of the highly-paid labour of that country to compete with the '' pauper labour" of Europe. He is not so successful in meeting the "political argument," founded on the admitted importance for civilization of developing diversified na- tional industries ; aid he meets only by one of the highly ques- tionable commonplaces of the doctrinaire economists Mill's pro- position that protection may foster nascent industries really adapted to a country till they have struck root and are able to endure the stress of foreign competition.

We have dwelt at some length on this work of Cairnes, not only of Quesnay and nephew of Turgot, he replied that he had

becanse it presents the latest forms of several accepted economic | : aye : : me | learned to read in the writings of the mercantile school,

doctrines, but also because it is, and, we believe, will remain, the last important product of the old English school. The author at the outset

expresses the hope that it will strengthen, and add consistence to, the scientific fabric “bnilt up by the labours of Adam Smith, Malthus, Ricardo, and Mill.” Whilst recognizing with him the gveat merits of Smith, and the real abilities and services of his three successors here uamed, we cannot entertain the same opinion as Cairnes respecting the permanence of the fabric they constructed. We hold that a new edifice is required, incorporating indeed many of the materials of the old, but planned on different ideas and in some respects with a view to different ends—above all, resting on different philosophic foundations, and having relation in its whole design to the more comprehensive structure of which it will form but one department, namely, the general science of society.

We have already had occasion to refer to Cairnes’s Essays in Polt- tical Economy, 1878. His Slave Powcr (1862) was the most valuable work which appeared on the subject of the great American conflict.

Lrance,—All the later European schools presuppose—in

part adopting, in part criticizing—the work of the English economists from Smith! to Ricardo and the Epigoni. ‘The

? The first French translation of the Wealth of Nations, by Blavet, appeared in the Journal de T Agriculture, du Commerce, des Finances, et des Arts, 1779-80 ; new editions of it were published in 1781, 1788, and 1800 ; it was also printed at Amsterdam in1784. Smith himself recommended it in his third edition of the original as excellent. ine (90 appeared the translation by Roucher, with notes by Condorcet, and in 1802 that by Count Gerinain Garnier, executed during his ne in ee ie ci now considered the standard version, and 1s been reproduced, with notes b is i i, &c., 1 the Collection des Principaux Pe alas or

POLTYriTCtsa Ll Y OCONnw err

German school has had in a greater degree than any other a movement of its own,—following, at least in its more recent period, an original method, and tending to special and characteristic conclusions. The French school, on the

under consideration,—has in the main reproduced the

: A q Rede Salathease Tautoes He | doctrines of the leading English thinkers,—stopping short, Be ee re ee | however, in general of the extremes of Ricardo and his dis-

ciples. In the field of exposition the French are unrivalled ; and in political economy they have produced a series of more

_ or less remarkable systematic treatises, text books, and com-

pendiums, at the head of which stands the celebrated work of J. B. Say. But the number of seminal minds which have appeared in French economic literature-—of writers

ments of method, or presented the phenomena under new lights—has not been large. Sismondi, Dunoyer, and Bastiat will deserve our attention, as being the most important of those who occupy independent positions (whether permanently tenable or not), if we pass over for the present the great philosophical renovation of Auguste Comte, which comprehended actually or potentially all the branches of sociological inquiry. Before estimating the labours of Bastiat, we shall find it desirable to examine the views of Carey, the most renowned of American economists, with which the latest teachings of the ingeni- ous and eloquent Frenchman are, up to a certain point, in remarkable agreement. Cournot, too, must find a place among the French writers of this period, as the chief

| representative of the conception of a mathematical method

in political economy.

Of Jean Baptiste Say (1767-1832) Ricardo says—“ He Say.

was the first, or among the first, of Continental writers who justly appreciated and applied the principles of Smith, and has done more than all other Continental writers taken together to recommend that enlightened and_ beneficial system to the nations of Europe.” The Wealth of Nations in the original language was placed in Say’s hands by Claviére, afterwards minister, then director of the assurance society of which Say was a clerk; and the book made a powerful impression on him. Long after, when Dupont de Nemours complained of his injustice to the physiocrats, and claimed him as, through Smith, a spiritual grandson

had learned to think in those of Quesnay and his followers, but that it was in Smith that he had learned to seek the causes and the effects of social phenomena in the nature of things, and to arrive at this last by a scrupulous analysis. His Traité d’Economie Politique (1803) was essentially founded on Smith’s work, but he aimed at arranging the materials in a more logical and instructive order. He has the French art of easy and lucid exposition, though his facility sometimes degenerates into superficiality ; and hence his book became popular, both directly and through translations obtained a wide circulation, and diffused rapidly through the civilized world the doctrines of the master. Say’s knowledge of common life, says Roscher, was equal to Smith’s ; but he falls far below him in living

_ insight into larger political phenomena, and he carefully

eschews historical and philosophical explanations. He is sometimes strangely shallow, as when he says that ‘the best tax is that smallest in amount.” He appears not to have much claim to the position of an original thinker in political economy. Ricardo, indeed, speaks of him as having “enriched the science by several discussions, original, accurate, and profound.” What he had specially in view in using these words was what is, perhaps rather pretentiously, called Say’s théorie des débouchés, with his connected disproof of the possibility of a universal glut.

The theory amounts simply to this, that buying is also

selling, and that it is by producing that we are enabled to |

purchase the products of others. Several distinguished economists, especially Malthus and Sismondi, in conse- quence chiefly of a misinterpretation of the phenomena of commercial crises, maintained that there might be general over-supply or excess of all commodities above the demand.

tion may, it must indeed be admitted, exceed the existing capabilities of the market; but, if we remember that supply is demand, that commodities are purchasing power, we cannot accept the doctrine of the possibility of a uni- versal glut without holding that we can have too much of everything—that ‘all men can be so fully provided with the precise articles they desire as to afford no market for each other’s superfluities.” But, whatever services he may have rendered by original ideas on those or other subjects, his great merit is certainly that of a propagandist and popularizer.

The imperial police would not permit a second edition of his work to be issued without the introduction of changes which, with noble independence, he refused to make ; and that edition did not therefore appear till 1814.

Three other editions were published during the life of the

Sismondi.

author—in 1817, 1819, and 1826. In 1828 Say published a second treatise, Cours complet d’Economie Politique Pratique, which contained the substance of his lectures at the Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers and at the Collége de France. Whilst in his earlier treatise he had kept within the narrow limits of strict economics, in his later work he enlarged the sphere of discussion, introducing in particular many considerations respecting the economic influence of social institutions. oy a

Jean Charles L. Simonde de Sismondi (1773-1842), author of the Histoire des Républiques Italiennes du moyen dge, represents in the economic field a protest, founded mainly on humanitarian sentiment, against the dominant doctrines. He wrote first a treatise De la Richesse Com- merciale (1803), in which he followed strictly the principles of Adam Smith. But he afterwards came to regard these principles as insufficient and requiring modification. He contributed an article on political economy to the Hdin- burgh

Encyclopedia, in which his new views were partially indicated. They were fully developed in his principal economic work, Vouveaux Principes d' Economie Politique, ou de la Richesse dans ses rapports avec la Population (1819; 2d ed., 1827). This work, as he tells us, was not received with favour by economists, a fact which he explains by the consideration that he had "attacked an orthodoxy—an enterprise dangerous in philosophy as in religion." According to his view, the science, as commonly understood, was too much of a mere chrematistic: it studied too exclusively the means of increasing wealth, and not sufficiently the use of this wealth for producing general happiness. The practical system founded on it tended, as he believed, not only to make the rich richer, but to make the poor poorer and more dependent ; and he desired to fix attention on the question of distribution as by far the most important, especially in the social circum- stances of recent times.

The personal union in Sismondi of three nationalities, the Italian, the French, and the Swiss, and his comprehen- sive historical studies, gave him a special largeness of view ; and he was filled with a noble sympathy for the suffering members of society. He stands nearer to social- ism than any other French economist proper, but it is only in sentiment, not in opinion, that he approximates to it; he does not recommend any socialistic scheme. On the contrary, he declares in a memorable passage that,

whilst he sees where justice lies, he must confess himself |

_de Vobservation et de Vexpérience."

unable to suggest the means of realizing it in practice ; the division of the fruits of industry between those who are united in their production appears to him vicious; but it is, in his judgment, almost beyond human power to conceive any system of property absolutely different from that which is known to us by experience. He goes no

: further than protesting, in view of the great evils which This Say rightly denied. A particular branch of produc- |

he saw around him, against the doctrine of laissez faire, and invoking, somewhat vaguely, the intervention of Governments to "regulate the

progress of wealth” and to protect the weaker members of the community.

His frank confession of impotence, far wiser and more honour- able than the suggestion of precipitate and dangerous remedies, or of a recurrence to outworn medieval institutions, has not affected the reputation of the work. A prejudice was indeed early created against it in consequence of its partial harmony of tone, thougli, as we have seen, not of policy, with socialism, which was then beginning to show its strength, as well as by the rude way in

*which his descriptions of the modem industrial system, especially

as it existed in England, disturbed the complacent optimism of some members of the so-called orthodox school. ‘These treated the book with ill-disguised contempt, and Bastiat spoke of it as preaching au éconoimde politique a rebours. But it has held its place in the literature of the science, and is now even more inter- esting than when it first appearcd, because in our tine there is a more general disposition, instead of denying or glossing over the serious evils of industrial society, to face and remove or at least mitigate them. The Jaissez faire doctrine, too, has been dis- credited in theory and abandoned in practice ; and we are ready to admit Sismondi’s view of the state as a power not merely intrusted with the maintenance of peace, but charged also with the mission of extending the benefits of the social union and of modern progress as widely as possible through all classes of the community. Yet the impression which his treatise leaves beliind it is a dis- couraging one ; and this because he regards as essentially evil many things which seem to be the necessary results of the development of industry. The growth of a wealthy capitalist class and of manufacture on the great scale, the rise of a vast body of workers who live by their labour alone, the extended application of machines, large landed properties cultivated with the aid of thie most advanced appliances—all these he dislikes and deprecates; but they appear to be inevitable. The problem is, how to regulate and moralize the system they imply ; but we must surely accept it in principle, unless we aim at a thorough social revolution. Sismondi may be regarded as the precursor of the Gcrman economists known under the inexact designation of ‘‘ Socialists of the Chair”; but thcir writings are much more hopeful and inspiring.

To the subject of population he devotes special care, as of great importance for the welfare of the working classes. So far as agriculturists are concerned, he thinks the system of what he calls patriarchal exploitation, where the cultivator is also proprietor, and is aided by his family in tilling the land—a law of equal division among the natural heirs being apparently presupposed— the one which is most efficacious in preventing au undue increase of the population. The father is, in such a case, able distinctly to estimate the resources available for his children, and to determine the stage of subdivision which would necessitate the descent of the family from the material and social position it had previously occupied. When children beyond tlis limit are born, they do uot marry, or they choose amongst their number one to continue the race. This is the view which, adopted by J. S. Mill, makes so great a figure in the too favourable presentation by that writer of the system of peasant proprietors.

In no French economic writer is greater force or general Dunoyer.

solidity of thought to be found than in Charles Dunoyer (1786-1862), author of La Liberté du Travail (1845; the substance of the first volume had appeared under a differ- ent title in 1825), honourably known for his integrity and independence under the régime of the Restoration. What makes him of special importance in the history of the science is his view of its philosophical constitution and wnethod. With respect to method, he strikes the keynote at the very outset in the words “rechercher expéri- mentalement,” and in professing to build on “les données He shows a marked tendency to widen economics into a general science of society, expressly describing political economy as having for its province the whole order of things which results from the exercise and development of the social forces.

This larger study is indeed better named sociology ; and economic studies are better regarded as forming one department of it. But the essential circumstance is that, in Dunoyer’s treatment of his great subject, the widest intellectual, moral, and political considerations are insepar- ably combined with purely economic ideas. It must not be supposed that by liberty, in the title of his work, is meant merely freedom from legal restraint or

administra- tive interference ; he uses it to express all that tends to give increased efficiency to labour. He is thus led to discuss all the causes of human progress, and to exhibit them in their historical working.

Treating, in the first part, of the influence of external conditions, of race, and of culture on liberty in this wider sense, he proceeds to divide all productive effort into two great classes, according as the action is exercised on things or on men, and eensures the economists for having restrieted their attention to the former. He studies in his second aud third parts respectively the conditions of the elficieney of these two forms of humanexertion. In treating of economic life, strictly so called, he introduees his fourfold division of material industry, in part adopted by J. S. Mill, as "(1) extractive, (2) voituriére, (8) manufacturiére, (4) agricole," a division which is useful for physical economics, but will always, when the larger soeial aspect of things is considered, be inferior to the more commonly accepted one into agrieultural, manufactur- ing, and commereial industry, banking being supposed as common president and regulator. Dunoyer, having in view only action on material objects, relegates banking, as well as commerce proper, to the separate head of exchange, which, along with association and gratuitous transmission (whether inter vivos or mortis causa),

he classes apart as being, not industries, in the same sense with | 5 A l Be é he seeks to show that there exists, independently of

the occupations named, but yet functions essential to the social economy. The industries which act on man he divides according as they occupy themselves with (1) the amelioration of our physical nature, (2) the eulture of our imagination and sentiments, (3) the education of our intelligence, and (4) the improvement of our moral habits; and he proceeds accordingly to study the social offices of the physician, the artist, the educator, and the priest. We meet in Dunoyer the ideas afterwards emphasized by Bastiat that the real subjects of human exehange are services; that all value is due to human activity ; that the powers of nature always render a gratuitous assistance to the labour of man; and that the rent of land is really a form of interest on invested eapital. Though he had disclaimed the task of a practical adviser in the often-quoted sentence—"Je n'impose rien; je ne

propose méme rien ; j’expose,” he finds himself, like all economists, unable to abstain from offering counsel. And his policy is opposed to any state interference with industry. Indeed he preaches in its extreme rigour the laissez faire doctrine, which he maintains principally on the ground that the spontaneous efforts of the individual for the improvement of his condition, by developing foresight, energy, and perseverance, are the most efficient means of social culture. But he certainly goes too far when he represents the action of Governments as normally always repressive and never directive. He was doubtless led into this exaggeration by his opposition to the artificial organizations of labour proposed by so many of his eontemporaries, against which he had to vindicate the principle of competition ; but his eriticism of these schemes took, as Cointe remarks, too absolute a character, tending to the per- petual interdietion of a true systematization of industry.

Digres- At this point it will be convenient to turn aside and ey on notice the doctrines of the American economist Carey. mene Not much had been done before him in the sci b ” m in the science by mists. Citizens of the United States. Benjamin Franklin, other- Franklin, Wise of world-wide renown, was author of a number of tracts, in most of which he merely enforces practical lessons of industry and thrift, but in some throws out interesting theoretic ideas. Thus, fifty years before Smith,

he suggested (as Petty, however, had already done) human

labour as the true measure of value (Modest Inquiry into

the Nature and Necessity of a Paper Currency, 1721), and

in his Observations concerning the Increase of Mankind

(1751) he expresses views akin to those of Malthus. petal Alexander Hamilton, secretary of the treasury, in 1791 = presented in his official capacity to the House of Represen- tatives of the United States a report on the measures by

which home manufactures could be promoted. In this document he gives a critical account of the theory of the subject, represents Sinith’s system of

free trade as possible

in practice only if adopted by all nations simultaneously, ascribes to manufactures a greater productiveness than to agriculture, and seeks to refute the objections against the development of the former in America founded on the want of capital, the high rate of wages, and the low price of land. The conclusion at which he arrives is that for the creation of American manufactures a system of moderate protective duties was necessary, and he proceeds to describe the particular features of such a system. There is some reason to believe that the German economist List, of whom we shall speak hereafter, was influenced by Hamilton's work, having, during his exile from his native country. resided in the same State, Pennsylvania, of which Hamilton was a citizen.

Henry Charles Carey (1793-1879), son of an American Carey. citizen who had emigrated from Ireland, represents a reaction against the dispiriting character which the Smithian doctrines had assumed in the hands of Malthus and Ricardo. His aim was, whilst adhering to the in- dividualistic economy, to place it on a higher and surer basis, and fortify it against the assaults of socialism, to which some of the Ricardian tenets had exposed it. The most comprehensive as well as mature exposition of his views is contained in his Principles of Social Scrence (1859). Inspired with the optimistic sentiment natural to a young and rising nation with abundant undeveloped resources and an unbounded outlook towards the future,

human wills, a natural system of economic laws, which is essentially beneficent, and of which the increasing pro- sperity of the whole community, and especially of the working classes, is the spontaneous result, —capable of being defeated only by the ignorance or perversity of man resisting or impeding its action. He rejects the Malthusian doctrine of population, maintaining that numbers regulate themselves sufficiently in every well governed society, and that their pressure on subsistence characterizes the lower, not the more advanced, stages of civilization. He rightly denies the universal truth, for all stages of cultivation, of the law of diminishing returns from land. His fundamental theoretic position relates to the antithesis of wealth and value.

Wealth had bcen by most economists confounded with the sum of exchange values; even Smith, though at first distinguishing them, afterwards allowed himself to fall into this error. Ricardo had, indeed, pointed out the differenee, but only near the end of his treatise, in the body of which value alone is considered. ‘The later English economists had tended to regard their studies as conversant only with exchange; so far had this proeeeded that Whately had proposed for the science the name of Catallaetics. When wealth is considered as what it really is, the sum of useful products, we see that it has its origin in external nature as supplying both materials and physical forces, and in human labour as appropriating and adapting those natural materials and forees. Nature gives her assistanee gratuitously ; labour is the sole foundation of value. The less we ean appropriate and employ natural forces in any pro- duction the higher the value of the product, but the less the addition to our wealth in proportion to the labour expended. Wealth, in its true sense of the sum of useful things, is the measure of the power we have acquired over nature, whilst the value of an object expresses the resistance of nature whieh labour has to overcome in order to produce the object. Wealth steadily increases in the course of soeial progress ; the exchange value of objects, on the other hand, decreases. Human intellect and faeulty of social combination seeure increased command over natural powers, and use them more largely in production, whilst less labour is spent in achieving each result, and the value of the pro- duct accordingly falls. The value of the article is not fixed by its cost of production in the past; what really determines it is the cost whieh is necessary for its reproduction nnder the present eon- ditions of knowledge and skill. The dependence of value on cost, so interpreted, Carey holds to be universally true ; whilst Ricardo maintained it only with respect to objeets capable of indefinite multiplication, and in particular did not regard it as applicable to the case of land. Ricardo saw in the productive powers of land a free gift of nature which had been monopolized by a certain number

Yeni Priya Lo ON O MY

of persons, and which became, with the increased demand for food, a larger and larger value in the hands of its possessors. To this value, however, as

not being the result of labour, the owncr had no rightful claim ; he could not justly demand a payment for what was done by the ‘original and indestructible powers of the soil.” But Carey held that land, as we are concerned with it in industrial life, is really an instrument of production which has been formed as such by man, and that its value is due to the labour expended on it in the past, though measured, not by the sum of that labour, but by the labour necessary under existing conditions to bring new land to the same stage of productiveness. He studies the occupa- tion and reclamation of land with peculiar advantage as an American, for whom the traditions of first settlement are living and fresh, and before whose eyes the process is indeed still going on. The difficulties of adapting a primitive soil to the work of yielding organic products for man’s use can be lightly estimated only by an inhabitant of a country long under cultivation. It is, in Carey’s view, the overcoming of these difficultics by arduous and continued effort that entitles the first occupier of land to his property in the soil. Its present value forms a very small propor- tion of the cost expended on it, because it represents only what would be required, with the science and appliances of our time, to bring the land from its primitive into its present state. Property in land is therefore only a form of invested capital—a quantity of labour or the fruits of labour permanently incorporated with the soil; for which, like any other capitalist, the owner is compensated hy a share of the produce. He is not rewarded for what is done Ly the powers of nature, and society is in no sense defrauded by his sole possession. ‘he so-called Ricardian theory of rent is a speculative fancy, contradicted by all experience. Cultivation does not in fact, as that theory supposes, begin with the best, and move downwards to the poorer soils in the order of their inferiority.} The light and dry higher lands are first cultivated ; and only when population has become dense and capital has accumulated, are the low-lying lands, with their greater fertility, but also with their morasses, inundations, and miasmas, attacked and brought into occupation. Rent, regarded as a proportion of the produce, sinks, like all interest on capital, in process of time, but, as an absolute amount, increases. ‘he share of the labourer incrcases, both as a proportion and an absolute amount. And thus the interests of these different social classes are in harmony.

But, Carey proceeds to say, in order that this harmonious progress may be realized, what is taken from the land must be given back to it. All the

articles derived from it are really separ- ited parts of it, which must be restored ou pain of its exhaustion. Hence the producer and the consumer must be close to each other; the products must not be exported to a foreign country in exchange for its manufactures, and thus go to enrich as manure a foreign soil. In immediate exchange value the landowner may gain by such exportation, but the productive powers of the land will suffer. And thus Carey, who had set out as an earnest advocate of free trade, arrives at the doctrine of protection: the ‘‘ co-ordinating power” in society must intervene to prevent private advantage from working public mischief. He attributcs his conversion on this question to his observation of the effects of liberal and protec- tive tariffs respectively on American prosperity. This observation, he says, threw him back on theory, and led him to see that the intervention referred to might be necessary to remove (as he phrases it) the obstacles to the progress of younger communities created by the action of older and wealthicr nations. But it seems probable that the influence of List’s writings, added to his own deep-rooted and hereditary jealousy and dislike of English predominance, had something to do with his change of attitude.

The practical conclusion at which he thus arrived, though it is by no meaus in contradiction to the doctrine of the existence of natural econoinic laws, accords but ill with his optimistic scheme; and another economist, accepting his fundamental ideas, applied himself to remove the foreign accretion, as he regarded it, and to preach the theory of spontaneous social harmonies in relation with the practice of free trade as its legitimate outcome.

Frédéric Bastiat (1801-1850), though not a profound thinker, was a brilliant and popular writer on economic questions. Though he always had an inclination for such studies, he was first impelled to the active propagation of his views by his earnest sympathy with the English

1 It is, however, a mistake to suppose that the assumption of this historical order of descent is essential to the theory in question.

? This argument seems scarcely met by Prof. F. A. Walker, Political Economy, 50-52. But perhaps he is right in thinking that Carey exag- gerates the importance of the considerations on which it is founded. Mill and Leslie remark that the transportation of agricultural pro- ducts from the

western to the Atlantic States has the same effect as their export to Europe, so far as this so-called ‘‘ land-butchery ” is concerned ; besides, some manures are obtainable from abroad.

anti-corn-law agitation. Naturally of an ardent tempera- ment, he threw himself with zeal into the free-trade con- troversy, through which he hoped to influence French economic policy, and published in 1845 a history of the struggle under the title of Cobden et la Ligue. In 1845-48 appeared his Sophismes Economiques (Eng. trans. by P. J. Stirling, 1873), in which he exhibited his best qualities of mind. Though Cairnes goes too far in compar- ing this work with the Lettres Provinciales, it is certainly marked by much liveliness, point, and vigour. But to expose the absurdities of the ordinary protectionism was no difficult task ; it is only in such a form as the doctrine assumed in the hands of List, as a purely provisional and preparatory scheme, that it deserves and demands con- sideration. After the revolution of 1848, which for a time put an end to the free-trade movement in France, the efforts of Bastiat were directed against the socialists. Besides several minor pieces possessing the same sort of merit as the Sophismes, he produced, with a view to this con- troversy, his most ambitious as well as characteristic work, the Harmonies Economiques (Eng. trans. by P. J. Stirling, 1860). Only the first volume was published ; it appeared in 1850, and its author died in the same year. Since then the notes and sketches which he had prepared as materials towards the production of the second volume have been given to the public in the collected edition of his writings (by Paillottet, with Life by Fontenay, 7 vols.), and we can thus gather what would have been the spirit and substance of the later portions of the book.

It will always be historically interesting as the last incarnation of thorough- going economic optimism. This optimism, recurring to its first origin, sets out from theo- logical considerations, and Bastiat is commended by his English translator for treating political economy “in con- nexion with final causes.” The spirit of the work is to represent “all principles, all motives, all springs of action, all interests, as co-operating towards a grand final result which humanity will never reach, but to which it will always increasingly tend, namely, the indefinite approxima- tion of all classes towards a level,

which steadily rises, —in other words, the equalization of individuals in the general amelioration.”

What claimed to be novel and peculiar in his scheme was principally his theory of value. Insisting on the idea that value does not denote anything inherent in the objects to which it is attributed, he endeavoured to show that it never signifies anything but the ratio of two “services.” This view he develops with great variety and felicity of illustration. Only the mutual services of human beings, according to him, possess value and can claim a retribution ; the assistance given by nature to the work of production is always purely gratuitous, and never en- ters into price. Economic progress, as, for example, the improvement and larger use of machinery, tends perpetu- ally to transfer more and more of the elements of utility from the domain of property, and therefore of value, into that of community, or of universal and unpurchased enjoyment. It will be observed that this theory is sub- stantially identical with Carey’s, which had been earlier propounded ; and the latter author in so many words alleges it to have been taken from him without acknow- ledgment. It has not perhaps been sufficiently attended to that very similar views are found in Dunoyer, of whose work Bastiat spoke as exercising a powerful influence on “the restoration of the science,” and whom Fontenay, the biographer of Bastiat, tells us he recognized as one of his masters, Charles Comte being the other.

_ The mode which has just been explained of conceiving industrial action and industrial progress is interesting and instructive so far as it is really applicable, but it was unduly generalized. Cairnes has

aie 2

386

well pointed out that Bastiat’s theoretic soundness was injuriously affected by his habit of studying doctrines with a direct view to contemporary social and political eontro versies. He was thus predis- posed to accept views which appeared to lend a sanction to legitimate and valuable institutions, and to reject those which seemed to him to lead to dangerous consequences. His constant aim is, as he him- self expressed it, to ‘‘ break the weapons” of antisocial reasoners ‘in their hands,” and this preoccupation interferes with

the singlc- minded effort towards the attainment of seientific truth. The creation or adoption of his theory of value was inspired by the wish to meet the socialistic criticism of property in land ; for the exigencies of this controversy it was desirable to be able to show that nothing is ever paid for exeept personal effort. His view of rent was, therefore, so to speak, foreordained, though it may have been suggested, as indeed the editor of his posthumous fragments admits, by the writings of Carey. He held, with the American writer, that rent is purely the reward of the pains and expenditure of the landlord or his predecessors in the process of converting the natural soil into a farm by clearing, draining, fencing, and the other species of permanent improvements. 1 He thus gets rid of the (so- called) Ricardian doctrine, which was accepted by the socialists, and by them used for the purpose of assailing the institution of landed property, or, at least, of supporting a claim of compensation to the community for the appropriation of the land by the concession of the ‘right to labour.” As Cairnes has said, ‘‘what Bastiat did was this: having been at infinite pains to exclude gratuitous gifts of nature from the possible elements of value, and pointedly identified [rather, associated] the phenomenon with ‘ human effort’ as its exclusive source, he designates human effort by the term ‘service,’ and then employs this term to admit as sources of value those very gratuitous natural gifts the exclusion of which in this capacity constituted the essence of his doctrine.” The justice of this criticism will be apparent to any one who considers the way in which Bastiat treats the question of the value of adiamond. That what is paid for in most cases of human dealings is effort no one can dispute. But it is surely a reductio ad absurdum of his theory of value, regarded as a doctrine of universal application, to repre- sent the price of a diamond which has been accidentally found as remuneration for the effort of the finder in appropriating and transmitting it. And, with respect to land, whilst a large part of rent, in the popular sense, must be explained as interest on capital, it is plain that the native powers of the soil are capable of appro- priation, and that then a price can be demanded and will be paid for their use.

Bastiat is weak on the philosophical side; he is filled with the ideas of theological teleology, and is led by these ideas to form a priori opinions of what existing facts and laws must necessarily be. And the jus nature, which, like metaphysical ideas generally, has its root in theology, is as much a

postulate with him as with the physiocrats. Thus, in his essay on J'ree T'rade, he says :—" Exchange isa natural right like property. Every citizen who has created or acquired a product ought to have the option of either applying it immediately to his own use or ceding it to whosoever on the surface of the globe consents to give him in exchange the object of his desires." Something of the same sort had been said by Turgot ; and in his time this way of regarding things was excusable, and even pro- visionally useful ; but in the middle of the 19th century it was time that it should be seen through and abandoned.

Bastiat had a real enthusiasm for a science which he thought destined to render great services to mankind, and

gave a special colour to his teaching. If his optimistic

exaggerations favoured the propertied classes, they certainly |

were not prompted by self-interest or servility. But they are exaggerations; and, amidst the modern conflicts of capital and labour, his perpetual assertion of social har- monies is the cry of peace, peace, where there is no peace. The freedom of industry, which he treated as a sort of panacea, has undoubtedly brought with it great benefits ; but a sufficient experience has shown that it is inadequate to solve the social problem. How can the advocates of economic revolution be met by assuring them that every-

; Satie Leroy-Beaulieu has reeently maintained (Hssai sur la Réparti- tion des Richesses, 2d ed., 1882) that this, though not strietly, is

ey true, —that economie forms a very sinall part of aetual rent,

POHOLTrTICu' L Gots

thing in the natural economy is harmonious—that, in fact, all they seek for already exists? A certain degree of spontaneous harmony does indeed exist, for society could not continue without it, but it isimperfect and precarious ; the question is, How can we give to it the maximum of completeness and stability

Augustin Cournot (1801-1877) appears to have been Cournot.

the first (the German, H. H. Gossen, praised by Jevons, wrote in 1854) who, with a competent knowledge of both subjects, endeavoured to apply mathematics to the treat- ment of economic questions. His treatise entitled Recherches sur les Principes Mathématiques de la Théorie des Richesses was published in 1838. He mentions in it only one previous enterprise of the same kind (though there had in fact been others)—that, namely, of Nicolas F rangols Canard, whose book, published in 1802, was crowned by the Institute, though “its principles were radically false as well as erroneously applied.” Notwithstanding Cournot’s just reputation as a writer on mathematics, the Recherches made little impression. The truth seems to be that his results are in some cases of little importance, in others of questionable correctness, and that, in the abstractions to which he has recourse in order to facilitate his calculations, an essential part of the real conditions of the problem is sometimes omitted. His pages abound in symbols repre- senting unknown functions, the form of the function being left to be ascertained by observation of facts, which he does not regard as a part of his task, or only some known properties of the undetermined function being used as bases for deduction. Jevons includes in his list of works in which a mathematical treatment of economics is adopted a second treatise which Cournot published in 1863, with the title Principes de la Théorie des Richesses. But in reality, in the work so named, which is written with great ability, and contains much forcible reasoning in opposition to the exaggerations of economic optimists, the mathe- matical method is abandoned, and there is not an algebrai- cal formula in the book. The author admits that the public has always shown a repugnance to the use of mathematical symbols in economic discussion, and, though he thinks they might be of service in facilitating exposi- tion, fixing the ideas, and suggesting further developments, he acknowledges that a grave danger attends their use. The danger, according to him, consists in the probability that an undue value may be attached to the abstract hypotheses from which the investigator sets out, and. which enable him to construct his formule. And his practical conclusion is that mathematical processes should be employed only with great precaution, or even not employed at all if the public judgment is against them, for

| “this judgment,” he says, “has its secret reasons, almost

always more sure than those which determine the opinions of individuals.” It is an obvious consideration that the

: L nd acceptance of unsound or one-sided abstract principles as he seems to have believed intensely the doctrines which |

the premises of argument does not depend on the use of mathematical forms, though it is possible that the employ- ment of the latter may by association produce an illusion in favour of the certainty of those premises. But the great objection to the use of mathematics in economic reasoning is that it is necessarily sterile. If we examine the attempts which have been made to employ it, we shall find that the fundamental conceptions on which the deduc- tions are made to rest are vague, indeed metaphysical, in their character. Units of animal or moral satisfaction, of utility, and the like are as foreign to positive science as a unit of dormitive faculty would be; and a unit of value, unless we understand by value the quantity of one com- modity exchangeable under given conditions for another, is an equally indefinite idea. Mathematics can indeed formulate ratios of exchange when they have once been

Gioja.

Poti, eat a7 CON OM Y

observed ; but it cannot by any process of its own de- termine those ratios, for quantitative conclusions imply quantitative premises, and these are wanting. There is then no future for this kind of study, and it is only waste of intellectual power to pursue it. But the importance of mathematics as an educational introduction to all the higher orders of research is not affected by this conclusion. The study of the physical medium, or environment, in which economic phenomena take place, and by which they are affected, requires mathematics as an instrument; and nothing can ever dispense with the didactic efficacy of that science, as supplying the primordial type of rational investigation, giving the lively sentiment of decisive proof, and disinclining the mind to illusory conceptions and sophistical combinations. And a knowledge of at least the fundamental principles of mathematics is

necessary to econo- nists to keep them right in their statements of doctrine, and prevent their enunciating propositions which have no definite meaning. Even distinguished writers some- times betray a serious deficiency in this respect ; thus they assert that one quantity “varies inversely as” another, when what is meant is that the sum (not the product) of the two is constant ; and they treat as capable of numerical estimation the amount of an aggregate of elements which, differing in kind, cannot be reduced to a common standard. As an example of the latter error, it may be mentioned that “ quantity of labour,” so often spoken of by Ricardo, and in fact made the basis of his system, includes such various species of exertion as will not admit of summa- tion or comparison.

Italy.—The first Italian translation of the Wealth of Nations appeared in 1780. The most distinguished Italian economist of the period here dealt with was, however, no disciple of Smith. This was Melchiorre Gioja, author, besides statistical and other writings, of a voluminous work entitled Nuovo Prospetto delle Scienze Economiche (6 vols., 1815-17; the work was never completed), intended to be an encyclopedia of all that had been taught by theorists, enacted by Governments, or effected by popula- tions in the field of public and private economy. It isa learned and able treatise, but so overladen with quotations and tables as to repel rather than attract readers. Gioja admired the practical economic system of England, and enlarges on the advantages of territorial properties, manu- factures, and mercantile enterprises on the large as opposed to the small scale. He defends a restrictive policy, and insists on the necessity of the action of the state as a guiding, supervising, and regulating power in the indus- trial world. But he is in full sympathy with the sentiment of his age against ecclesiastical domination and other medi- zeval survivals. We can but very briefly notice Romagnosi (d. 1835), who, by his contributions to periodical literature, and by his personal teaching, greatly influenced the course of economic thought in Italy; Antonio Scialoja (Principti d’Economia Sociale, 1840; and Carestia ¢ Governo, 1853), an able advocate of free trade (d. 1877) ; Luigi Cibrario, well known as the author of Zconomia Politica del medio evo (1839 ; 5th ed. 1861; French trans. by Barneaud, 1859), which is in fact a view of the whole social system of that period ; Girolamo Boccardo (b. 1829; T’rattato Teorico-pratico di Economia politica, 18538) ; the brilliant controversialist Francesco Ferrara, professor at Turin from 1849 to 1858 (in whose school

most of the present Italian teachers of the science were, directly or indirectly, educated), a partisan of the lazssez faire doc- trine in its most extreme form, and an advocate of the peculiar opinions of Carey and Bastiat on the subject of rent ; and, lastly, the Neapolitan minister Ludovico Bian- chini (Principii della Scienza del Ben Vivere Sociale, 1845

and 1855), who is remarkable as having followed in some | 1810).

‘derived its knowledge of the science.

387

degree an historical direction, and asserted the principle of relativity, and who also dwelt on the relations of economics with morals, by a due attention to which the

Italian economists have, indeed, in general been honourably distinguished.

Spain.—The Wealth of Nations was translated into Jovel- It may perhaps have influenced lanos.

Spanish by Ortiz in 1794. Gaspar de Jovellanos, who in 1795 presented to the council of Castile and printed in the same year his celebrated Informe de la Sociedad Economica de Madrid en expediente de Ley Agraria, which was a powerful plea for reform, especially in taxation and the laws affecting agriculture, including those relating to the systems of entail and mort- main. An English version of this memoir is given in the translation (1809) of Laborde’s Spain, vol. iv. Germany.—Roscher observes that Smith did not at first produce much impression in Germany.1 He does not appear

‘to have been known to Frederick the Great ; he certainly

exercised no influence on him. Nor did Joseph IT. take notice of his work. And of the minor German princes, Karl Friedrich of Baden, as a physiocrat, would not be accessible to his doctrines. It was otherwise in the generation whose principal activity belongs to the first decade of the 19th century. The Prussian statesmen who were grouped round Stein had been formed as

economists by Smith, as had also Gentz, intellectually the most important man of the Metternich régime in Austria.

The first German expositors of Smith who did more than mercly reproduce his opinions were Christian Jacob Kraus (1753-1807), Georg Sartorius (1766-1828), and August Ferdinand Liider (1760- 1819). They contributed independent views from different stand- points,—the first from that of the effect of Smith's doctrine on practical government, the second from that of its bearing on history, the third from that of its relation to statistics. Some-what latter came Gottlieb Hufeland (1760-1817), Johann Fricdrich Euscbius Lotz (1771-1838), and Ludwig Heinrich von Jakob (1759-1827), who, whilst essentially of the school of Smith, apply themselvcs to a revision of the fundamental conceptions of the science. These authors did not cxert anything like the wide influence of Say, partly on account of the less attractive form of their writings, but chictly because Germany had not then, like France, a European audience. Julius von Soden (1754-1831) is largely founded on Smith, whom, however, he criticizes with undue severity, cspecially in regard to his form and arrangement ; the Wealth of Nations he describes asa series of precious fragments, and censnres Smith for the absence of a comprehensive view of his whole subject, and also as one-sidedly English in his tendencies.

The highest form of the Smithian doctrine in Germany is represented by four distinguished names :—Karl Heinrich Rau (1792-1870), Friedrich Nebenius (1784-1857),

| Friedrich Benedict Wilhelm Hermann (1795-1868), and

Johann Heinrich von Thiinen (1783-18 50).

Rau's characteristic is ''erudite thoroughness." (1826-82) is an encyclopedia of all that up to his time had appeared in Gcrmany under the several heads of Volkswirthschaftslchre, Volkswirthschaftspolitik, and Finanzwissenschaft. His book is rich in statistical observations, and is particularly instructive on the cconomic effects of different geographical conditions. It is well adapted for the teaching of publie servants whose duties are con- nected with economics, and it has in fact been the souree from which the Gcrman official world down to the present time has

In his earlier period Rau had insisted on the necessity of a rcform of economic doctrine (Ansichten der Volkswirthschaft, 1821), and had tended towards relativity and the historical method ; but he afterwards conceived the mistakcn notion that that method “only looked into the past without studying the means of improving the present,” and became himself purely practical in the narrower sense of that word. He has the merit of having given a separate treatment of Unternehmer- gewinn, or wages of management. — I nius, who was largely instrumental in the foundation of the Zoll- verein, was author of a highly esteemed monograph on public credit (1820). The Staatswirthschaftliche Untersuchungen (1832;

ee eS EEE

1 ‘The first German version of the Wealth of Nations was that by Johann Friedrich Schiller, published 1776-78. The second, which is the first good one, was by Christian Garve (1794, and again 1799 and A recent one by C. W. Asher (1861) is highly commended,

His Lehrbuch Ran.

The Prussian minister Nebe- Nebenius.

Hermann.

Von Thiinen.

Storch.

2d ed., 1870) of Hermann do not form a regular system, but treat a series of important special subjects. His rare technological know- ledge gave him a great advantage in dealing with some economic questions. He reviewed the principal fundamental ideas of the science with greatthoronghness and acuteness. “ His strength,

says Roscher, ‘‘lies in his clear, sharp, exhaustive distinction be- tween the several elements of a complex conception, or the several steps

comprehended in a complex act.” For keen analytical power his German brethren compare him with Ricardo. But he avoids several one-sided views of the English economist. Thus he places public spirit beside egoism as an economic motor, regards price as not measured by labour only but as a product of several factors, and habitually contemplates the consumption of the labourer, not as a part of the cost of production to the capitalist, but as the main practical end of economics. Von Thiinen is known principally by his remarkable work entitled Der Isolirte Staat in Bezichung auf Landwirthschaft und Nationalikonomie (1826 ; 2d ed., 1842). In this treatise, which is a classic in the political economy of agricul- ture, there is a rare union of exact observation with creative imagination. With a view to exhibit the natural development of agriculture, he imagines a state, isolated from the rest of the world, circular in form and of uniform fertility, without navigable rivers or canals, with a single large city at its centre, which supplies it with manufactures and receives in exchange for them its food-products, and proceeds to study the effect of distance from this central market on the agricultural economy of the several concentric spaces which compose the territory. The method, it will be seen, is highly abstract, but, though it may not be fruitful, it is quite legitimate. The author is under no illusion blinding him to the unreality of the hypothetic case. The supposition is necessary, in his view, in order to separate and consider apart one essential condition—that, namely, of situation with respect to the market. It was his intention (imperfectly realized, however) to institute afterwards several different hypotheses in relation to his isolated state, for the purpose of similarly studying other conditions which in real life are found in combination or conflict. The objection to this method lies in the difficulty of the return froin the abstract study to the actual facts ; and this is probably an insuperable one in regard to most of its applications. The investigation, however, leads to trustworthy conclusions as to the conditions of the succes- sion of different systems of land economy. The book abounds in calculations relating to agricultural expenditure and income, which diminish its interest to the general reader, thongli they are con- sidered valuable to the specialist. They embody the results of the practical experience of the author on his estate of Tellow in Mecklenburg-Sechwerin. Von Thiinen was strongly impressed with the danger of a violent conflict between the middle class and the proletariate, and studied earnestly the question of wages, which he was onc of the first to regard, not merely as the

price of the commodity labour, but as the means of subsistence of the mass of thecommunity. He arrived by mathematical reasonings of some complexity at a formula which expresses the amount of ‘‘ natural

wages” as=/ap, where a is the necessary expenditure of the labourer for subsistence, and p is the product of his labour. To this formula he attributed so much importance that he directed it to be engraved on his tomb. It implies that wages ought to rise with the amount of the product; and this conclusion led him to establish on his estate a system of participation by the labourers in the profits of farming, of which some account will be fonnd in Mr Sedley Taylor’s Profit-sharing between Capital and Labour (1884). Von Thiinen deserves more attention than he has reccived in England ; both as a man and as a writer he was eminently interesting and original; and there is much in Der Isolirte Staat and his other works that is awakening and suggestive.

Roscher recognizes what he calls a Germano-Russian (deutsch-russische) school of political economy, represented principally by Heinrich Storch (1766-1825). Mercantilist principles had been preached by a native (“‘autochthonen ”) economist, Ivan Possoschkoff, in the time of Peter the Great. The new ideas of the Smithian system were intro- duced into Russia by Christian von Schlozer (1774-1831) in his professorial lectures and in his Anfangsgriinde der Staatswirthschaft, oder die Lehre von National-reichthume (1805-1807). Storch was instructor in economic science of the future emperor Nicholas and his brother the grand- duke Michael, and the substance of his lessons to them is contained in his Cours d’ Economie Politique (1815). The translation of this treatise into Russian was prevented by the censorship ; Rau published a German version of it, with annotations, in 1819. It is a work of a very high order of merit. The epithet ‘“deutsch-russisch” seems little applicable to Storch; as Roscher himself says, he

PUwPVITICAL He One wr

follows mainly English and French writers—Say, Sismondi, Turgot, Bentham, Steuart, and Hume, but, above all, Adam Smith. His personal position (and the same is true of Schlézer) led him to consider economic doctrines in con- nexion with a stage of culture different from that of the Western populations amongst which they had been formu- lated ; this

change of the point of view opened the door to relativity, and helped to prepare the historical method. Storch's study of the economic and moral effects of serfdom is regarded as especially valuable. The general subjects with which he has particularly connected his name are (1) the doctrine of immaterial commodities (or elements of national prosperity), such as health, talent, morality, and the like; (2) the question of " productive" and "unproductive," as characters of labour and of consumption, on which he disagreed with Smith and may have furnished indications to Dunoyer; and (3) the differences between the revenue of nations and that of individuals, on which he follows Lauderdale and is opposed to Say. The latter economist having published at Paris (1823) a new edition of Storch's Cours, with criticisms sometimes offensive in tone, he published by way of reply to some of Say's strictures what is considered his ripest and scientifically most important work, Considérations sur la nature du Revenu National (1824; translated into German by the author himself, 1825).

A distinct note of opposition to the Smithian economics was sounded in Germany by two writers, who, setting out from somewhat different points of view, animated by different sentiments, and favouring different practical sys- tems, yet, so far as their criticisms are concerned, arrive at similar conclusions ; we mean Adam Miiller and Friedrich List.

Adam Miiller (1779-1829) was undoubtedly a man of Miiller.

real genius. In his principal work Hlemente der Staatskunst (1809), and his other writings, he represents a movement of economic thought which was in relation with the (so-called) Romantic literature of the period. The reaction against Smithianism of which he was the coryphseus was founded on an attachment to the principles and social system of the Middle Ages. It is possible that the political and historical ideas which inspire him, his repugnance to contemporary liberalism, and his notions of regular organic development, especially in relation to England, were in some degree imbibed from Edmund Burke, whose Reflections on the Revolution in France had been translated into German by Friedrich Gentz, the friend and teacher of Miiller. The association of his criticisms with medieval prepossessions ought not to prevent our recognizing the elements of truth which they contain.

He protests against the doctrine of Smith and against modern political economy in general on the ground that it presents a mechanical, atomistic, and purely material conception of socicty, that it reduces to nullity all moral forecs and ignores the necessity of a moral order, that it is at bottom no more than a theory of private property and private interests, and takes no account of the life of the people as a whole in its national solidarity and historical continuity. Exclusive attention, he complains, is devoted to the immediate production of objects possessing exchange valuc and to the transitory existence of individuals ; whilst to the maintenance of the collective production for future generations, to intellectual pro- ducts, powers, possessions, and enjoyments, and to the state with its higher tasks and aims, scarcely a thought is given. The truth is that nations are specialized organisms with distinct principles of life, having definite individnalities which determine the course of their historical development. Each is through all time one whole, and, as the present is the heir of the past, it onght to keep before it constantly the permancnt good of the community in the future. The economic existence of a people is only one side or province of its entire activity, requiring to be kept in harmony with the higher ends of society; and the proper organ to effect this reconciliation is the state, which, instead of being merely an apparatus for the administration of justice, represents the totality of the national life. The division of labour, Miiller holds, is imperfectly developed

by Smith, who makes it to arise out of a native bent for truck or barter; whilst its dependence on capital—on the labours and accumulations of past generations—is not duly emphasized, nor is the nccessary counterpoise and completion of the division of labour, in the principle of the national combination of labour, properly brought out. Smith recognizes only material, not spiritual, capital ; yet the latter, represented in every nation by language, as the former by money, is a real national store of experience, wisdom, good sense, and moral feeling, transmitted with increase by each generation to its successor, and enables each generation to produce immensely more than by its own unaided powers it could possibly do.

Again, the system of Smith is one-sidedly British ; if it is innocuous on the soil of England, it is because in her society. the old foundations on which the spiritual and material life of the people can securely rest are preserved in the surviving spirit of feudalism and the inner connexion of the whole social system—the national capital of laws, manners, reputa- tion, and credit, which has been handed down in its integrity in consequence of the insular position of the country. For the continent of Enrope a quite different system is necessary, in which, in place of the sum of the private wealth of individuals being viewed as the primary object, the rcal wealth of the nation and the production of national power shall be made to predominate, and along with the division of labour its national union and concentra- tion—along with the physical, no less the intellectual and moral, capital shall be embraced. In these leading traits of Miiller's thought there is much which foreshadows the more recent furms of German economic and sociological speculation, especially those characteristic of the " Historical " school.

Another element of opposition was represented by Friedrich List (1798-1846), a man of great intellectual vigour as well as practical energy, and notable as having powerfully contributed by his writings to the formation of the German Zollverein. His principal work is entitled Das Nationale System der Politischen Oekonomie. (1841; 6th ed., 1877). Though his practical conclusions were different from Miiller's, he was largely influenced by the general mode of thinking of that writer, and by his stric- tures on the doctrine of Smith. It was particularly against the cosmopolitan principle in the modern eco- nomical system that he protested, and against the absolute doctrine of free trade, which was in harmony with that principle. He gave prominence to the national idea, and insisted on the special requirements of each nation accord- ing to its circumstances and especially to the degree of its development.

He refuses to Smith's system the title of the industrial, which he thinks more appropriate to the mercantile system, and desig: nates the former as ''the exchange-value system.'' He denies the parallelism asserted by Smith between the economic conduct proper to an individual and to a nation, and holds that the immediate private interest of the separate members of the com- munity will not lead to the highest good of the whole. The nation is an existence, standing between the individual and humanity, and formed into a

unity by its language, manners, historical development, culture, and constitution. This unity is the first condition of the security, wellbeing, progress, and civiliza- tion of the individual; and private economic interests, like all others, must be subordinated to the maintenance, completion, and strengthening of the nationality. The nation having a continuous life, its true wealth consists—and this is List's fundamental doctrine—not in the quantity of exchange-values which it possesses, but in the full and many-sided development of its productive powers. kts econonlic education, if we may so speak, is more important than the immediate production of values, and it may be right that the present generation should sacrifice its gain and enjoyment to secure the strength and skill of the future. In the sound and normal condition of a nation which has attained economic maturity, the three productive powers of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce should be alike developed. But the two latter factors are superior in importauce, as exercising a more effective and fruitful influence on the whole culture of the nation, as well as on its independence. Navigation, railways, all higher technical arts, connect themselves specially with these factors ; whilst in a purely agricultural state there is a tendency to stag- nation, absence of enterprise, and the maintenance of antiquated prejudices. But for the growth of the higher forms of industry all countries are not adapted—only those of the temperate zones, whilst the torrid resions have a natural monopoly in the pro- duction of certain raw materials; and thus between these two groups of countries a division of labour and confederation of powers spontaneously takes place. List then goes on to explain his theory

| of the stages of economic development through which the nations of the temperate zone, which are furnished with all the necessary conditions, naturally pass, in advancing to their normal economic state. These are (1) pastoral life, (2) agriculture, (3) agriculture united with manufactures; whilst in the final stage agriculture, manufactures, and commerce are combined. The economic task of the state is to bring into existence through legislative and admini- strative action the conditions required for the progress of the nation through these stages. Out of this view arises List's scheme of industrial politics. Every nation, according to him, should begin with free trade, stimulating and improving its agri- culture by intercourse

with richer and more cultivated nations, importing foreign manufactures and exporting raw products. When it is economically so far advanced that it can manufacture for itself, then a system of protection should be employed to allow the home industries to develop themselves fully, and save them from being overpowered in their earlier efforts by the competition of more matured foreign industries in the home market. When the national industries have grown strong enough no longer to dread this competition, then the highest stage of progress has heen reached ; free trade should again become the rule, and the nation be thus thoroughly incorporated with the universal indus- trial union. In List's time, according to his view, Spain, Portugal, and Naples were purely agricultural countries; Germany and the United States of North America had arrived at the second stage, their manufactures being in process of development ; France was near the boundary of the third or highest stage, which England alone had reached. For England, therefore, as well as for the agricultural countries first-named, free trade was the right economic policy, but not for Germany or America. What a nation loses for a time in exchange values during the protective period she much more than gains in the long run in productive power,—the tempor- ary expenditure being strictly analogous, when we place ourselves at the point of view of the life of the nation, to the cost of the industrial education of the individual. The practical conclusion which List drew for his own country was that she needed for her economic progress an extended and conveniently bounded territory reaching to the sea-coast both on north and south, and a vigorous expansion of manufactures and commerce, and that the way to the latter lay through judicious protective legislation with a customs union comprising all German lands, and a German marine with a Navigation Act. The national German spirit, striving after in- dependence and power through union, and the national industry, awaking from its lethargy aud eager to recover lost ground, were favourable to the success of List's book, and it produced a great sensation. He ably represented the tendencies' and demands of his time in his own country ; his work had the effect of fixing the attention, not merely of the speculative and official classes, but of practical men generally, on questions of political economy; and he had without doubt an important influence on German industrial policy. So far as science is concerned, the emphasis he laid on

the relative historical study of stages of civilization as affecting economic questions, and his protest against absolute formulas, had a certain valuc; and the preponderance given to the national development over the immediate gains of individuals was sound in principle ; though his doctrine was, both on its public and private sides, too much of a mere chrematistic, and tended in fact to set up a new form of mercantilism, rather than to aid the contem- porary effort towards social reform.

Most of the writers at home or abroad hitherto mentioned continued the traditions of the school of Smith, only developing his doctrine in particular directions, sometimes not without one-sidedness or exaggeration, or correcting minor errors into which he had fallen, or seeking to give to the exposition of his principles more of order and lucidity. Some assailed the abuse of abstraction by Smith's successors, objected to the conclusions of Ricardo and his followers their non-accordance with the actual facts of human life, or protested against the anti-social con- sequences which seemed to result from the application of the (so-called) orthodox formulas. A few challenged Smith's fundamental ideas, and insisted on the necessity of altering the basis of general philosophy on which his economics ultimately rest. But, notwithstanding various premonitory indications, nothing substantial, at least nothing effective, was done, within the field we have as yet surveyed, towards the establishment of a really new order of thinking, or new mode of proceeding, in this branch of inquiry. Now, however, we have to describe a great and growing movement, which has already considerably changed the whole character of the study in the conceptions of

Comte.

many, and which promises to exercise a still more potent influence in the future. We mean the rise of the His- torical School, which we regard as marking the third epoch in the modern developmient of economic science.

THE HISTORICAL SCHOOL.

The negative movement which filled the 18th century had for its watchword on the economic side the liberation of industrial effort from both feudal survivals and Govern- inental fetters. But in all the aspects of that movement, the economic as well as the rest, the process of demolition was historically only the necessary preliminary condition of a total renovation, towards which western Europe was energetically tending, though with but an indistinct con- ception of its precise nature. The disorganization of the body of opinion which underlay the old system outran the progress towards the establishment of new principles ade-

quate to forn a guidance in the future. The critical phi- |

losophy which had wrought the disorganization could only repeat its formulas of absolute liberty, but was powerless for reconstruction. And heuce there was seen throughout the West, after the French explosion, the remarkable spec- tacle of a continuous oscillation between the tendency to recur to outworn ideas and a vague impulse towards a new order in social thought and life, this impulse often taking an anarchical character.

From this state of oscillation, which has given to our century its equivocal and transitional aspect, the only possible issue was in the foundation of a scientific social doctrine which should supply a basis for the gradual con- vergence of opinion on human questions. The foundation of such a doctrine is the immortal service for which the world is indebted to Auguste Comte.

The leading features of sociology, as he conceived it, are the following :— (1) it is essentially one science, in which all the elements of a social state are studied in their relations and mutual actions ; (2) it includes a dynamical as well as a statical theory of society; (3) it thus elimin- ates the absolute, substituting for an imagined fixity the conception of ordered change ; (4) its principal method, though others are not excluded, is that of historical com- parison ; (5) it is pervaded by moral ideas, by notions of social duty, as opposed to the individual rights which were derived as corollaries from the jus nature ; and (6) in its spirit and practical consequences it tends to the realiza- tion of all the great ends which compose “the popular cause”; yet (7) it aims at this through peaceful means, replacing revolution by evolution. The several character- istics we have enumerated are not independent ; they may be shown to be vitally connected with each other.

Several of these features must now be more fully described ; the others will meet us before the close of the present survey.

In the masterly exposition of sociological method which is contained in the fourth volume of the Philosophie Positive (1839),1 Comte marks out the broad division between social statics and social dynamics—the former studying the laws of social coexistence, the latter those of social development. The fundamental principle of the former is the general consensus between the several social organs and functions, which, without unduly pressing a useful analogy, we may regard as resembling that which exists between the several organs and functions of an animal body. The study of dynamical is different from, and necessarily subordinated to, that of statical sociology, progress being in fact the development of order, just as the study of evolution in biology is different from, and subordinated to, that of the structures and functions

1 He had already in 1822 stated his fundamental principles in an opuscule which is reproduced in the Appendix to his Politique Positive.

| which are exhibited by evolution as they exist at the

several points of an ascending scale. The laws of social co-existence and movement are as much subjects for observation as the corresponding phenomena in the life of an individual organism. For the study of development in particular, a modification of the comparative method familiar to biologists will be the appropriate mode of research, The several successive stages of society will have to be systematically compared, in order to discover their laws of sequence, and to determine the filiation of their characteristic features.

Though we must take care that both in our statical and dynamical studies we do not ignore or contradict the fundamental properties of human nature, the project of deducing either species of laws from those properties independently of direct observation is one which cannot be realized. Neither the general structure of human society nor the march of its development could be so pre- dicted. This is especially evident with respect to dynami-

| cal laws, because, in the passage of society from one phase

to another, the preponderating agency is the accumulated influence of past generations, which is much too complex to be investigated deductively—a conclusion which it is important to keep steadily before us now that some of the (so-called) anthropologists are seeking to make the science of society a mere annex and derivative of biology. The principles of biology unquestionably lie at the foundation of the social science, but the latter has, and must always have, a field of research and a method of inquiry peculiar to itself, The field is history in the largest sense, includ- ing contemporary fact; and the principal, though not exclusive, method is, as we have said, that process of socio- logical comparison which is most conveniently called the historical method.

These general principles affect the economic no less than other branches of social speculation ; and with respect to that department of inquiry they lead to important results. They show that the idea of forming a true theory of the economic frame and working of society apart from its other sides is illusory. Such study is indeed provisionally indispensable, but no rational theory of the economic organs and functions of society can be constructed if they are considered as isolated from the rest. In other words, a separate economic science is, strictly speaking, an im- possibility, as representing only one portion of a complex organism, all whose parts and their actions are in a con- stant relation of correspondence and reciprocal moditica- tion. Hence, too, it will follow that, whatever useful indications may be derived from our general knowledge of individual human nature, the economic structure of society and its mode of development cannot be deductively-fore- seen, but must be ascertained by direct historical inves- tigation. We have said “its mode of development ””; f0E it is obvious that, as of every social clement, so of the economic factor in human affairs, there must be a dyna- mical doctrine, a theory of the successive phases of the economic condition of society ; yet in the accepted systems this was a desideratum, nothing but some partial and fragmentary notions on this whole side of the subject being yet extant. And, further, the economic structure and working of one historic stage being different from those of another, we must abandon the idea of an absolute system possessing universal validity, and substitute that

of a series of such systems, in which, however, the succes- sion is not at all arbitrary, but is itself regulated by law.

Though Comte's enterprise was a constructive one, his aim being the foundation of a scientific theory of society, he could not avoid criticizing the labours of those who before him had treated several branches of social inquiry. Amongst them the economists were necessarily considered ;

Roscher.

EetrrricAak ECONO MY

and he urged or implied, in various places of his above- named work, as well as of his Politique Positive, objections to their general ideas and methods of procedure essentially the same with those which we stated in speaking of Ricardo and his followers. J.S. Mill shows himself much irritated by these comments, and remarks on them as showing " how extremely superficial M. Comte" (whom he yet regards as a thinker quite comparable with Descartes and Leibnitz) "could sometimes be," —-an unfortunate observation, which he would scarcely have made if he could have foreseen the subsequent march of European thought, and the large degree in which the main points of Comte's criticism have been accepted or independently reproduced.

Germany.—The second manifestation of this new move- ment in economic science was the appearance of the German historical school. The views of this school do not appear to have arisen, like Comte's theory of sociologi- cal method, out of general philosophic ideas; they seem rather to have been suggested by an extension to the economic field of the conceptions of the historical school of jurisprudence of which Savigny was the most eminent representative. The juristic system is not a fixed social phenomenon, but is variable from one stage in the progress of society to another—it is in vital relation with the other coexistent social factors ; and what is, in the jural sphere, adapted to one period of development is often unfit for another. These ideas were seen to be applicable to the economic system also; the relative point of view was thus reached, and the absolute attitude was found to be un- tenable. Cosmopolitanism in theory, or the assumption of a system equally true of every country, and what has been called perpetualism, or the

assumption of a system appli- cable to every social stage, were alike discredited. And so the German historical school appears to have taken its rise.

Omitting preparatory indications and undeveloped germs of doctrine, we must trace the origin of the school to Wilhelm Roscher. Its fundamental principles are stated, though with some hesitation, and with an unfortunate con- trast of the historical with the “ philosophical” method,1 in his Grundriss zw Vorlesungen tiber die Staatswirthschaft nach geschichtlicher Methode (1843). The following are the leading heads insisted on in the preface to that work.

“The historical method exhibits itself not merely in the external form of a treatment of phenomena according to their chronological succession, but in the following funda- mental ideas. (1) The aim is to represent what nations have thought, willed, and discovered in the economic field, what they have striven after and attained, and why they have attained it. (2) A people is not merely the mass of individuals now living; it will not suffice to observe con- temporary facts. (3) All the peoples of whom we can learn anything must be studied and compared fron: the economic point of view, especially the ancient peoples, whose development lies before us in its totality. (4) We must not simply praise or blame economic institutions; but few of them have been salutary or detrimental to all peoples and at all stages of culture ; rather it is a principal task of science to show how and why, out of what was once reasonable and beneficent, the unwise and inexpedient has often gradually arisen.” Of the principles enunciated in this paraphrase of Roscher’s words a portion of the third alone seems open to objection; the economy of ancient peoples is not a more important subject of study than that of the moderns; indeed the question of the relative importance of the two is one that ought not to be raised. For the essential condition of all sound sociologi-

1 This phraseology was probably borrowed from the controversy on the method of jurisprudence between Thibaut on the one hand and Savigny and Hugo on the other.

ool

cal inquiry is the comparative consideration of the entire series of the most complete evolution known to history — that, namely, of the group of nations forming what is known as the Occidental Commonwealth, or, more briefly, “the West.” The reasons for choosing this social series, and for provisionally restricting our studies almost alto- gether to it, have been stated with unanswerable force by Comte in the Philosophie Positive. Greece and Rome are, indeed, elements in the series ; but it is the development as a whole, not any special portions of it, that sociology must keep in view in order to determine the laws of the move- ment,—just as, in the study of biological evolution, no one stage of an organism can be considered as of preponder- ating importance, the entire succession of changes being the object of research. Of Roscher’s further eminent services we shall speak hereafter; he is now mentioned only in relation to the origin of the new school.

“ In 1848 Bruno Hildebrand published the first volume of a work, which, though he lived for many years after (d. 1878), he never continued, entitled Die Natvonaloko- nomie der Gegenwart und Zukunft. Uildebrand was a thinker of a really high order; it may be doubted whether amongst German economists there has been any endowed with a more’ profound and searching intellect. He is quite free from the wordiness and obscurity which too often characterize German writers, and traces broad out- lines with a sure and powerful hand. His book contains a masterly criticism of the economic systems which pre- ceded, or belonged to, his time, including those of Smith, Miiller, List, and the socialists. But it is interesting to us at present mainly from the general position he takes up, and his conception of the real nature of political economy. ‘The object of his work, he tells us, is to open a way in the economic domain to a thorough historical direction and method, and to transform the science into a doctrine of the laws of the economic development of nations. It is interesting to observe that the type which he sets before him in his proposed reform of political economy is not that of historical jurisprudence, but of the science of language as it has been reconstructed in the present century, a selection which indicates the compara- tive method as the one which he considered appropriate. In both sciences we have the presence of an ordered varia- tion in time, and the consequent substitution of the relative for the absolute.

In 1853 appeared the work of Karl Knies, entitled Dve Knies.

Politische Ockonomie vom Standpunkte der geschachtlichen Methode. This is an elaborate exposition and defence of the historical method in its application to economic science, and is the most systematic and complete manifesto of the new school, at least on the logical side. The fundamental propositions are that the economic constitu- tion of society at any epoch on the one hand, and on the other the contemporary theoretic conception of economic science, are results of a definite historical development ; that they are both in vital connexion with the whole social organism of the period, having grown up along with it and under the same conditions of time, place, and nationality ; that the economic system must therefore be regarded as passing through a series of phases correlative with the successive stages of civilization, and can at no point of this movement be considered to have attained an entirely definitive form; that no more the present than any previous economic organization of society is to be regarded as absolutely good and right, but only as a phase in a continuous historical evolution ; and that in like manner the now prevalent economic doctrine is not to be viewed as complete and final, but only as representing a certain stage in the unfolding or progressive manifestation of the truth.

BS

The theme of the book is handled with, perhaps, an undue degree of expansion and detail. The author ex- hibits much sagacity as well as learning, and criticizes effectively the errors, inconsistencies, and exaggerations of his predecessors. But in characterizing and vindicating the historical method he has added nothing to Comte. A second edition of his treatise was published in 1883, and in this he makes the singular confession that, when he wrote in 1852, the Philosophie Positive, the six volumes of which had appeared from 1830 to 1842, was entirely unknown to him and, he adds, probably to all German economists. This is not to the credit of their open- mindedness or literary vigilance, if we remember that Mill was already in correspondence with Comte in 1841, and that his eulogistic notice of him in the Logic appeared in 1843. When, however, Knies at a later period examined Comte’s work, he was, he tells us, surprised at finding in it so many anticipations of, or “ parallelisms” with, his own

conclusions. And well he might; for all that is really valuable in his methodology is to be found in Comte, applied on a larger scale, and designed with the broad and commanding power which marks the diz majores of philosophy.

There are two points which seem to be open to criticism in the position taken by some German economists of the historical school.

1. Knies and some other writers, in maintaining the principle of relativity in economic theory, appear not to preserve the due balance in one particular. The two forms of absolutism in doctrine, cosmopolitanism and what Knies calls perpetualism, he seems to place on exactly the same footing; in other words, he considers the error of overlooking varieties of local circumstances and nationality to be quite as serious as that of neglecting differenccs in the stage of historical development. But this is certainly not so. In every branch of sociology the latter is much the graver error, vitiating radically, wherever it is found, the whole of our investigations. If we ignore the fact, or mistake the direction, of the social movement, we are wrong in the most fundamental point of all—a point, too, which is involved in every question. But the variations depending on difference of race, as affecting bodily and mental endowment, or on diversity of external situation, are secondary ge aaa only; they must be postponed in studying the general theory of social development, and taken into account afterwards when we come to examine the modifications in the character of the development arising out of peculiar conditions. And, though the physical nature of a territory is a condition which is likely to operate with special force on economic phenomena, it is rather on the technical forms and comparative extension of the several branches of industry that it will act than on the social conduct of each branch, or the co-ordination and relative action of all, which latter are the proper subjects of the inquiries of the economist.

2. Some members of the school appear, in their anxiety to assert the relativity of the science, to fall into the error of denying economic laws altogether; they are at least unwilling to speak of ‘‘natural laws” in relation to the economic world. From a too exclusive consideration of law in the inorganic sphere, they regard this phraseology as binding them to the notion of fixity and of an invariable system of practical economy. But, if we turn

our attention rather to the organic sciences, which are more kindred to the social, we shall see that the term ‘‘natural law” carries with it no such implication. As we have more than once indicated, an essential part of the idea of life is that of development, in other words, of ‘‘ ordered change.” And that such a development takes place in the constitution and working of society in all its elements is a fact which cannot be doubted, and which these writers themselves emphatically assert. That there exist between the several social clements such relations as make the change of one element involve or determine the change of another is equally plain; and why the name of natural laws should be denied to such constant relations of coexistence and succession it is not easy to see. These laws, being universal, admit of the construction of an abstract theory of economic development ; whilst a part of the German historical school tends to substitute for such a theory a mere description of different national economies, introducing prematurely —as we have pointed ont—the action of special territorial or ethno- logical conditions, instead of reserving this as the ground of later modifications, in concrete cases, of the primary general laws dedueed from a study of the common human evolution.

To the three writers above named, Roscher, Hildebrand, and Knies, the foundation of the German historical school of political economy belongs. It does not appear that Roscher in his own subsequent labours has been much under the influence of the

method which he has in so inany places admirably characterized. In his System der Volkswirthschaft (vol. i., Grundlagen der Nationalékonomie, 1854, 15th ed. 1880; vol. ii, WM. O. des Ackerbaues, 1860, 10th ed. 1882; vol. iii. NW. O. des Handels und Gewerbfleisses, 3d ed., 1882) the dogmatic and the historical matter are rather juxtaposed than vitally combined. It is true that he has most usefully applied his vast learning to special historical studics, in relation especially to the progress of the science itself. His treatise Ueber das Verhiiliniss der Nationalikonomie zum classt-sehen Alterthume, his Zur Geschichte der Englischen Volkswirth-schaftslehre (Leipsic, 1851-2), and, above all, that marvellous monument of erudition and industry, his Geschichte der National- Ockonomik in

Deutschland (1874), to which he is said to lave devoted fifteen years of study, are among the most valuable extant works of this kind, though the last by its accumulation of detail is unfitted for general study outside of Germany itself. Several interesting and useful monographs are collected in his Ansichten der Volkswirthschaft vom geschichtlichen Standpunkte (3d ed., 1878). His systematic treatise, too, above referred to, abounds in historical notices of the rise and development of the several doc- trines of the science, But it cannot be alleged that he has done much towards the transformation of political economy which his earliest labours seemed to announce ; and Cossa appears to be right in saying that his dogmatic work has not effected any substantial modification of the principles of Hermann and Rau.

The historical method has exhibited its essential features more fully in the hands of the younger generation of scientific economists in Germany, amongst whom may be reckoned Lujo Brentano, Adolf Held, Erwin Nasse, Gustav Schmoller, H. Résler, Albert Schiffle, Hans von Scheel, Gustav Schénberg, and Adolf Wagner. Besides the general principle of an historical treatment of the science, the leading ideas which have been most strongly insisted on by this school are the following. I. The necessity of accentuating the moral element in economic study. This consideration has been urged with special emphasis by Schmoller in his Grundfragen (1875) and by Schiffle in his Das gesellschaftliche System der menschlichen Wirthschaft (3d ed., 1873). G. Kries (d, 1858) appears also to have handled the subject well in areview of J. S. Mill. Accord- ing to the most advanced organs of the school, three principles of organization are at work in practical economy ;. and, corresponding with these, there are three different systems or spheres of activity. The latter are (1) private economy; (2) the compulsory public economy; (3) the "'caritative" sphere. In the first alone personal interest predominates; in the second the general interest of the society ; in the third the benevolent impulses. Even in the first, however, the action of private interest cannot be unlimited ; not to speak here of the intervention of the public power, the excesses and abuses of the fundamental principle in this department must be checked and controlled by an economic morality, which can never be left out of account in theory any more than in practical applications In the third region above-named, moral influences are of course supreme. II. The close relation which necessarily exists between

economics and jurisprudence. This has been brought out by L. von Stein and H. Résler, but is most systematically established by Wagner—who is, without doubt, one of the most eminent of living German economists—especially in his Grundlegung, now forming part of the Lehrbuch der politischen Oekonomie in course of publication by him and Professor Nasse jointly. The doctrine of the jus nature, on which the physiocrats, as we have seen, reared their economic structure, has lost its hold on belief, and the old a priorz and absolute concep- tions of personal freedom and property have given way along with it. It is seen that the economic position of the individual, instead of depending merely on so-called natural rights or even on his natural powers, is conditioned by the contemporary juristic system, which is itself an historical product. The above-named conceptions, therefore, half economic half juristic, of freedom and property require a fresh examination. lt is principally from this point of

view that Wagner approaches economic studies. The point, as he says, on which all turns is the old question of the relation of the individual to the community. Whoever with the older juristic and political philosophy and national economy places the individual in the centre comes neces- sarily to the untenable results which, in the economic field, the physiocratic and Smithian school of free com- petition has set up. Wagner on the contrary investigates, before anything else, the conditions of the economic life of the community, and, in subordination to this, deter. mines the sphere of the economic freedom of the individual. Iil. A different conception of the functions of the state from that entertained by the school of Smith. The latter school has in general followed the view of Rousseau and Kant that the sole office of the state is the protection of the members of the community from violence and fraud. This doctrine, which was in harmony with those of the jus naturex and the social contract, was temporarily useful for the demo- lition of the old economic system with its complicated appa- ratus of fetters and restrictions. But it could not stand against a rational historical criticism, and still less against the growing practical demands of modern civilization. In fact, the abolition of the impolitic and discredited system of European Governments, by bringing to the surface the evils arising from unlimited competition, irresistibly demon- strated the necessity of public action

according to new and more enlightened methods. The German historical school recognizes the state as not merely an institution for the maintenance of order, but as the organ of the nation for all ends which cannot be adequately effected by voluntary individual effort. Whenever social aims can be attained only or most advantageously through its action, that action is justified. The cases in which it can properly interfere must be determined separately on their own merits and in relation to the stage of national development. It ought certainly to promote intellectual and esthetic culture. It ought to enforce provisions for public health and regula~ tions for the proper conduct of production and transport. It ought to protect the weaker members of society, espe- cially women, children, the aged, and the destitute, at least in the absence of family maintenance and guardianship. It ought to secure the labourer against the worst conse- quences of personal injury not due to his own negligence, to assist through legal recognition and supervision the efforts of the working classes for joint no less than individual self-help, and to guarantee the safety of their earnings, when entrusted to its care.

A special influence which has worked on this more recent group is that of theoretic socialism ; we shall see hereafter

that socialism as a party organization has also affected |

their practical politics. With such writers as St. Simon, Fourier, and Proudhon, Lassalle, Marx, Engels, Marlo, and Rodbertus (who, notwithstanding a recent denial, seems rightly described as a socialist) we do not deal in the present sketch (see SoctaLism) ; but we must recognize them as having powerfully stimulated the younger German economists (in the strict sense of this last‘word). They have even modified the scientific conclusions of the latter, especially through criticism of the so-called orthodox system. Schafle and Wagner may be especially named as having given a large space and a respectful attention to their arguments. In particular, the important consideration, to which we have already referred, that the economic position of the individual depends on the existing legal system, and notably on the existing organization of property, was first insisted on by the socialists. They had also pointed out that the present institutions of society in relation to property, inheritance, contract, and the

like are (to use Lassalle's phrase) "historical categories which have changed, and are subject to further change," whilst in the

orthodox economy -they are generally assumed as a fixed order of things on the basis of which the individual creates his own position. J.S. Mill called attention to the fact of the distribution of wealth depending, unlike its production, not on natural laws alone, but on the ordinances of society,

-but it is some of the German economists of the younger

historical school who have most strongly emphasized this view. To rectify and complete the conception, however, we must bear in mind that those ordinances themselves are not arbitrarily changeable, but are conditioned by the stage of general social development.

In economic politics these writers have taken up a posi- tion between the German free-trade (or, as it is sometimes with questionable propriety called, the Manchester) party and the democratic socialists. The latter invoke the omni- potence of the state to transform radically and immediately the whole economic organization of society in the interest of the proletariate. The free-traders seek to minimize stato action for any end except that of maintaining public order, and securing the safety and freedom of the individual. The members of the school of which we are now 'speaking, when intervening in the discussion of practical questions, have occupied an intermediate standpoint. They are op- posed alike to social revolution and to rigid laissez faire. Whilst rejecting the socialistic programme, they call for the intervention of the state, in accordance with the theoretic principles already mentioned, for the purpose of mitigating the pressure of the modern industrial system on its weaker members, and extending in greater measure to the working classes the benefits of advancing civilization. Schiiffie in his Capitalismus und Socialismus (1870; now absorbed into a larger work), Wagner in his Rede tiber die sociale Frage (1871), and Schonberg in his Arbettsdmter: eine Aufgabe des deutschen Reichs (1871) advocated this policy in relation to the question of the labourer. These expres- sions of opinion, with which most of the German professors of political economy sympathized, were violently assailed by the organs of the free-trade party,

who found in them “a new form of socialism.” Out of this arose a lively controversy ; and, the necessity of a closer union and a practical political organization being felt amongst the partisans of the new direction, a congress was held at Eisenach in October 1872, for the consideration of ‘the social question.” It was attended by almost all the professors of economic science in the German universities, by representatives of the several political parties, by leaders of the working men, and by some of the large capitalists. At this meeting the principles above explained were formulated. Those who adopted them obtained from their opponents the appellation of ‘‘ Katheder-Socialisten,” or “socialists of the (professorial) chair,” a nickname in- vented by H. B. Oppenheim, and which those to whom it was applied were not unwilling to accept. Since 1873 this group has been united in the “ Verein fiir Socialpolitik,” in which, as the controversy became mitigated, free-traders also have taken part. Within the Verein a division has shown itself. The left wing has favoured a systematic gradual modification of the law of property in such a direction as would tend to the fulfilment of the socialistic aspirations, so far as these are legitimate, whilst the majority advocate reform through state action on the basis of existing jural institutions. Schiffle goes so far as to maintain that the present “capitalistic” régime will be replaced by a socialistic organization ; but, like J. S. Mill, he adjourns this change to a more or less remote future, and expects it as the result of a natural development, or process of “social selection ;”! he repudiates any immediate

1 This should be remembered by readers of M. Leroy-Beaulieu’s recent work on Collectivism (1884), in which he treats Schiffle as the principal theoretic representative of that form of socialism.

or violent revolution, and rejects any system of life which | would set up “abstract equality” against the claims of individual service and merit.

The further the investigations of the German historical school have been carried, in the several lines of inquiry it has opened, the more clearly it has come to light that the one thing needful is not merely a reform of political

economy, but its fusion in a complete science of society. This is the view long since insisted on by Auguste Comte ; and its justness is daily becoming more apparent. The best economists of Germany now tend strongly in this direction. Schiffle, who is largely under the influence of Comte and Herbert Spencer, has actually attempted the enterprise of widening economic into social studies. In his most important work, which had been prepared by previous publications, Baz und Leben des socialen Korpers (1875-78 ; new ed., 1881), he proposes to give a compre- hensive plan of an anatomy, physiology, and psychology of human society. He considers social processes as analogous to those of organic bodies; and, sound and suggestive as the idea of this analogy, already used by Comte, undoubtedly is, he carries it, perhaps, to an undue degree of detail and elaboration. The same conception is adopted by P. von Lilienfeld in his Gedanken tiber die Socialwissenschaft der Zukunft (1873-79). A tendency to the fusion of economic science in sociology is also found in Adolph Samter's Sozial-lehre (though the economic aspect of society is there specially studied) and in Schmoller's treatise Ueber einige Grundfragen des Rechts und der Volkswirthschaftslehre ; and the necessity of such a trans- formation is energetically asserted by H. von Scheel in the preface to his German version (1879) of an English tract On the present Position and Prospects of Political Economy.

The name "Realistic," which has sometimes been given to the historical school, especially in its more recent form, appears to be injudiciously chosen. It is intended to mark the contrast with the "abstract" complexion of | the orthodox economics. But the error of these economics | lies, not in the use, but in the abuse of abstraction. All science implies abstraction, seeking, as it does, for unity in variety ; the question in every branch is as to the right constitution of the abstract theory in relation to the con- crete facts. Nor is the new school quite correctly dis- tinguished as "inductive." Deduction doubtless unduly' preponderates in the investigations of the older econo- mists ; but it must be remembered that it is a legitimate process, when it sets out, not from a priori assumptions, but from proved generalizations. And the appropriate method of economics, as of all sociology, is not so much induction as the specialized form of induction known as comparison, especially the comparative study of "social series" (to use Mill's phrase), which is properly designated as the "historical" method. If the

denominations here criticized were allowed to prevail, there would be a danger of the school assuming an unscientific character. It might occupy itself too exclusively with statistical inquiry, and forget in the detailed examination of particular provinces of economic life the necessity of large philosophic ideas and of a systematic co-ordination of principles. So long as economics remain a separate branch of study, and until they are absorbed into sociology, the thinkers who follow the new direction will do wisely in retaining their original designation of the historical school.

The members of the historical school have produced many valu- able works besides those which there has been occasion to mention above. Ample notices of their contributions to the several branches of the science (including its applications) will be found dispersed through Wagner and Nasse's Lehrbuch and_ the comprehensive Handbuch edited by Schonberg. The following list, which does

not pretend to approach to completeness, is given for the purpose of directing the student to a certain number of books which ought

rotlrTicAtl He onomeey

not to be overlooked in the study of the subjects to which they respectively refer :—-

Knies, Die Eisenbahnen und thre Wirkungen (1853), Der Telegraph (1857), Geld and Credit (1878-76-79); Rosler, Zur Kritik der Lehre vom Arbettslohn, 18613 Schmoller, Zur Geschichte der deutschen Kleingewerbe im 19 Jahrh., 1870; Schaffie, Theorie der ausschliessenden Absatzverhalinisse (1867), Quintessenz des Socialis- mus (6th ed., 1878), Grundsdtze der Steuerpolitik (1880); Nasse, Mittelalterliche Feldgemeinschaft in England, 1869; Brentano, On the History and Development of Gilds, prefixed to Toulmin Smith's English Gilds (1870), Die Arbeitergilden der Gegenwart (1871-72), Das Arbeitsverhdliniss gemédss dem heutigen Recht (1877), Die Arbeitsversicherung gemdss der heutigen Wirthschaftsordnung (1879), Der Arbettsversicherungszwang (1881); lleld (born 1844, aecidentally drowned in the Lake of Thun 1880), Die Linkommensteuer (1872), Die deutsche Arbetterpresse der Gegenwart (1873), Soztalismus, Sozialdemokratie, und Sozialpolitik (1878), Grundriss

fiir Vorlesungen tiber National-okonomie (24 ed., 1878); Zwei Ltcher zur socialen Geschichte Englands (posthumously published, 1881); Von Scheel (born 1839), Die Theorie der socialen Frage (1871), Unsere soctal-politischen Parteien (1878). To these may be added L. von Stein, Die Verwaltungslehre (1876-79), Lehrbuch der Finanzwissenschajgt (4th ed., 1878). E. Diihring is the ablest of the few German followers of Carey; we shall mention his history hcre- after. To the Russian-German school belongs the work of T. von Bernhardi, which is written from the historical point of view, Versuch einer Kritik der Griinde welche fiir grosses und kleines Grundeigenthum angefihrt werden, 1848, The free-trade school of Germany is recognized as having rendered great practical services in that eountry, especially by its systematic warfare against antiquated privileges and restrictions. Cobden has furnished the model of its politieal action, wlilst, on the side of theory, it is founded chiefly on Say and Bastiat. The members of this sehool whose names have been most frequently heard by the English publie are those of J. Prinec Smith, who may be regarded as its head; H. von Treitsehke, author of Der Socialismus und seine Gonner, 1875 (direeted against the Katheder-Socialisten); V. Bolmert, who has advoeated the participation of workmen in profits (Die Gewinnbetheiligung, 1878); and J. H. Sehultzc-Delitzsch, well known as the founder of the German popular banks, and a strenuous supporter of the systein of ‘co-operation. The socialist writers, as lias been already mentioned, are not included in the present historical survey, nor do we in general notice writings of the economists (properly so called) having relation to the history of socialism or the controversy with it.

The movement which created this school in Germany, with the developments which have grown out of it, have without doubt given to that country at the present time the primacy in economic studies. German influence has been felt in the modification of opinion in other countries — most strongly, perhaps, in Italy, and least so in France. In England it has been steadily making way, though retarded by the insular indifference to the currents of foreign thought which has eminently marked our dominant school. Alongside of the influence thus exerted, a general distaste for the “ orthodox ” system has been spontaneously growing, partly from a suspicion that its method was unsound, and partly from a profound dissatisfaction with the practice it inspired, and the detected hollowness of the

“Manchester” policy of mere laissez faire. Hence every- where a mode of thinking and a species of research have shown themselves, and come into favour, which are in harmony with the systematic conceptions of the historical economists. ‘Thus a dualism has established itself in the

‘economic world, a younger school advancing towards pre-

dominance, whilst the old school still defends its position, though its adherents tend more and more to modify their attitude and to admit the value of the new lights. Italy.—It is to be regretted that very little is known in England of the writings of the recent Italian eco- nomists. Luigi Cossa’s Guida, which was translated at the suggestion of Jevons, has given us some notion of the character and importance of their labours. The urgency of questions of finance in Italy since its political renas- cence has turned their researches for the most part into practical channels, and they have produced numerous monographs on statistical and administrative questions. But they have also dealt ably with the general doctrines of the science. Cossa pronounces Angelo Messedaglia (b. 1820), professor at Padua, to be the foremost of contem- porary Italian economists ; he has written on public loans (1850) and on population (1858), and is regarded as a master of the subjects of money and credit. His pupil Fedele Lampertico (b. 1833) is author of many writings, among which the most systematic and complete is his Economia dei popoli e degli stati (1874-1880). Marco Minghetti, distinguished as a minister, is author, besides other writings, of Heonomia pubblica e le sue attinenze colla morale e col diritto (1859). Luigi Luzzati, also known as an able administrator, has by several publications sought to prepare the way for reforms. The Sicilians Vito Cusu-

mano and Giuseppe Ricca Salerno have produced excellent works :—the former on the history of political economy in the Middle Ages (1876), and the economic schools of Ger- many in their relation to the social question (1875) ; the latter on the theories of capital, wages, and public loans (1877-8-9). Cossa, to whom we are indebted for most of these particulars, is himself author of several works which have established for him a high reputation, as his Scienza delle Finanze (1875 ; 3d ed., 1882), and his Primi

Ele- menti di Economia Politica (1875 ; 4th ed., 1878), which latter has been translated into several European languages.

Of greater interest than such an imperfect catalogue of writers is the fact of the appearance in Italy of the economic dualism to which we have referred as character- izing our time. There also the two schools—the old or so-called orthodox and the new or historical—with their respective modified forms, are found face to face. Cossa tells us that the instructors of the younger economists in northern Italy were publicly denounced in 1874 as Germanists, socialists, and corrupters of the Italian youth. In reply to this charge Luzzati, Lampertico, and Scialoja convoked in Milan the first congress of economists (1875) with the object of proclaiming their resistance to the idea which was sought to be imposed on them " that the science was born and died with Adam Smith and his com- mentators." M. de Laveleye's interesting Lettres d' Italie (1878-79) throw light on the state of economic studies in that country in still more recent years. Minghetti, pre- siding at the banquet at which M. de Laveleye was entertained by his Italian brethren, spoke of the "two tendencies " which had manifested themselves, and implied his own inclination to the new views. Carlo Ferraris, a pupil of Wagner, follows the same direction. Formal expositions and defences of the historical method have been produced by Schiattarella (Del metodo in Economia Sociale, 1875) and Cognetti de Martiis (Della attinenze tra L Economia Sociale e la Storia, 1865). A large measure of acceptance has also been given to the historical method in learned and judicious monographs by Ricca Salerno (see especially his essay Del metodo in Econ. Pol., 1878). Luzzati and Forti for some time edited a periodical, the Grornale degli Economisti, which was the organ of the new school, but which, we gather from Cossa, has ceased to appear. Cossa himself, whilst refusing his adhesion to this school on the ground that it reduces political economy toa mere narrative of facts,—an observation which, we must be permitted to say, betrays an entire misconception of its true principles,—admits that it has been most useful in several ways, and especially as having given the signal for a salutary, though, as he thinks, an excessive, reaction against the doctrinaire exaggerations of the older theorists.

france.—In France the historical school has not made so strong an impression,—partly, no doubt, because the extreme doctrines of the Ricardian system never obtained much hold there. It was by his recognition of its freedom from those exaggerations that Jevons was led to declare that “the truth is with the French school,” whilst he pro- nounced our English economists to have been “living in a fool’s paradise.” National prejudice may also have con- tributed to the result referred to, the ordinary Frenchman being at present disposed to ask whether any good thing can come out of Germany. But, as we have shown, the philosophic doctrines on which the whole proceeding of the historical school is founded were first enunciated by a great French thinker, to whose splendid services most of his fellow-countrymen are singularly dead. Perhaps another determining cause is to be looked for in official influences, which in France, by their action on the higher education, impede the free movement of independent con-

gave on the wider philosophic stage to the shallow eclecti- cism of Cousin. The tendency to the historical point of view has appeared in France, as elsewhere; but it has shown itself not so much in modifying general doctrine as in leading to amore careful study of the cconomic opinions and institutions of the past.

Much useful work has been done by Frenchmen (with whom Belgians may here be associated) in the history of political economy, regarded either as a body of theory or as a system—or series of systems—of policy. Blanqui’s history (1837-38) is not, indeed, entitled to a very high rank, but it was serviceable asa first general draught. That of Villeneuve-Bargemont (1839) was also interest- ing and useful, as presenting the Catholic view of the development and tendencies of the science. C. Perin’s Les doctrines économiques depuis un siéele (1880) is written from the same point of view. A number of valuable monographs on particular statesmen or thinkers has also been produced by Frenchmen,—as, for example, that of A. Batbie, on Turgot (Turgot Philosophe, Economiste, ct Administrateur, 1861); of Pierre Clément on Colbert (Histoire de Colbert et de son

Administration, 2d. cd., 1875); of H. Baudrillart on Bodin (J. Bodin

et son Temps; Tableau des Théories politiques et des Idées économiques au 16° siécle, 1853); of L. de Lavergne on the physiocrats (Les Economistes Frangais du 18° siéele, 1870). Works, too, of real im- portance have been produced on particular aspects of the industrial development, as those of Leonce de Lavergne on the rural economy of France (1857), and of England, Scotland, and Ireland (1854).

The treatise of Emile de Laveleye, De la Propriété et de ses formes Lave- primitives (1874; Eng. trans. by G. R. Marriott, 1878), is specially leye.

worthy of notice, not merely for its array of facts respecting the early forms of property, but because it co-operates strongly with the tendency of the new school to regard each stage of economic life from the relative point of view, as resulting from an historic past, harmonizing with the entire body of contemporary social conditions, and bearing in its bosom the germs of a future, predctermined in its essential character, though modifiable in its secondary dispositions. M. de Laveleye has done much to call attention to the general principles of the historical school, acting in this way most usefully as an interpreter between Germany and France. But he appcars in his most recent manifesto (Les Lois naturelles et lobjet de ? Economie Politique, 1883) to separate himself from the best members of that school, and to fall into positive error, when he refuses to economics the character of a true science (or department of a science) as distinguished from an art, and denies the existence of economic laws or tendencies independent of individual wills. Such a denial seems to involve that of social laws generally, which is a singularly retrograde attitude for a thinker of our time to take up, and one which cannot be excused since the appearance of the Philosophie Positive. The use of the metaphysical phrase “ neces- sary laws” obscures the question; it suffices to speak of laws which do in fact prevail. M. de Laveleye relies on morals as supplying a parallel case, where we deal, not with natural laws, but with ‘“‘imperative prescriptions,” as if these prescriptions did not imply, as their basis, observed coexistenccs and scquences, and as if there were no such thing as moral evolution. He seems to be as far from the right point of view in one direction as his opponents of the old school in another. All that his arguments have really any tendency to prove is the proposition, undoubtedly a true one, that economic facts cannot be explained by a theory which leaves out of account the other social

aspects, and therefore that our studies and expositions of economic phenomena must be kept in close relation with the conclusions of the larger science of society. We cannot do more than notice in a general way some of the expository treatises of which there has been an almost continuous series from the time of Say downwards, or indeed from the date of Germain Garnier's Abrégé des Principes de Eeonomie Politique (1796). That of Destutt de Tracy forms a portion of his Eléments Idéologie (1823). Droz brought out especially the relations of economics to morals and of wealth to human happiness (Lconomie Politique, 1829). Pellegrino Rossi,—an Italian, formed, however, as an economist by studies in Switzerland, professing the science in Paris, and writing in French (Cours a' Economie Politique, 1838-54),—gave in classic form an exposition of the doctrines of Say, Malthus, and Ricardo. Michel Chevalier (1806-1879), specially known in England by his tract, translated by Cobden, on the fall in the value of gold (La Baisse d'Or, 1858), gives in his Cowrs d' Eeo- none Politique (1845-50) particularly valuable matter on the most recent industrial phenomena, and on money and the production of the precious metals. Henri Baudrillart, author of Les Rapports de la Morale et de V Economie Politique (1860, 2d ed., 1883), and of Histoire du Luxe (1878), published in 1857 a Manuel d' Beonomie Politique (3d ed., 1872), which Cossa calls an '"'admirable compen- dium." Joseph Garnier (Traitédcl' Economic Politique, 1860, 8th ed., 1880) in some respects follows Dunoyer. J. G. Courcelle-Seneuil, the translator of J. S. Mill, whom Prof. F. A. Walker calls " perhaps

viction, as was seen notably in the temporary éclat they | the ablest economist writing in the French language since J. B.

Say," besides a T'raité théorique et pratique des opérations de Banque and Théorie des Enterprises Industrielles (1856), wrote a Traité de U Economie Politique (1858-59), whieh is held in much esteem. Finally, the Genevese, Antoine Elise Cherbuliez (d. 1869) was author of what Cossa pronounees to be the best treatise on the seience in the Freneh language (Précis de la Seience Economique, 1862). L. Walras, in Lléments d' Economie Politique pure(1874-77), and Théorie Mathématique de la Richesse Sociale (1883),

has followed the ex- ample of Cournot in attempting a mathematieal treatment of the subject.

England.—Sacrificing the strict chronological order of

the history of economics to deeper considerations, we have already spoken of Cairnes, describing him as the last original English writer who was an adherent of the old school pure and simple. Both in method and doctrine he was essentially Ricardian ; though professing and really feeling profound respect for Mill, he was disposed to go behind him and attach himself rather to their common master. Mr Sidgwick is doubtless right in believing that his Leading Principles did much to shake “the unique prestige which Mill’s exposition had enjoyed for nearly half a generation,” and in this, as in some other ways, Cairnes may have been a dissolving force, and tended towards radical change ; but, if he exercised this influence, he did so unconsciously and involuntarily. Many influ- ences had, however, for some time been silently sapping the foundations of the old system. The students of Comte had seen that its method was an erroneous one. The elevated moral teaching of Carlyle had disgusted the best minds with the low maxims of the Manchester school. Ruskin had not merely protested against the egoistic spirit of the prevalent doctrine, but had pointed to some of its real weaknesses as a scientific theory.1 It began to be felt, and even its warmest partisans sometimes admitted, that it had done all the work, mainly a destructive one, of which it was capable. Cairnes himself declared that, whilst most educated people believed it doomed to sterility for the future, some energetic minds thought it likely to be a positive obstruction in the way of useful reform. Miss Martineau, who had in earlier life been a thorough Ricardian, came to think that political economy, as it had been elaborated by her contemporaries, was, strictly speak- ing, no science at all, and must undergo such essential change that future generations would owe little to it beyond the establishment of the existence of general laws in one department of human affairs. The instinctive repugnance of the working classes had continued, in spite of the efforts of their superiors to recommend its lessons to them—efforts which were perhaps not unfrequently dictated rather by class interest than by public spirit. All the symptoms boded impending change, but they were visible rather in general literature and in the atmo- sphere of social opinion than within the

economic circle. But when it became known that a great movement had taken place, especially in Germany, on new and more hopeful lines, the English economists themselves began to recognize the necessity of a reform and even to further its advent. The principal agencies of this kind, in marshal- ling the way to a renovation of the science, have been those of Bagehot, Leslie, and Jevons,—the first limiting the sphere of the dominant system, while seeking to con- serve it within narrower bounds; the second directly assailing it and setting up the new method as the rival and destined successor of the old; and the third acknow- ledging the collapse of the hitherto reigning dynasty, proclaiming the necessity of an altered régime, and admit- ting the younger claimant as joint possessor in the future. Thus, in England too, the dualism which exists on the Continent has been established; and there is reason to

4 The remarkable book Money and Morals, by John Lalor, 1852, was written partly under the influence of Carlyle. There is a good monograph entitled John Ruskin, Economist, by P. Geddes, 1884.

expect that here more speedily and decisively than in France or Italy the historical school will displace its antagonist. that the preaching of the new views has been most

It is certainly in England next after Germany

vigorously and effectively begun.

Walter Bagehot (1826-1877) was author of an excellent Bagehot. work on the English money market and the circumstances

which have determined its peculiar character (Lombard Street, 1873; 7th ed., 1878), and of several monographs on particular monetary questions, which his practical ex- perience, combined with his scientific habits of thought, eminently fitted him to handle. On the general prin- ciples of economics he wrote some highly important essays collected in Economic Studies (edited by R. H. Hutton, 1880), the object of which was to show that the tradi- tional system of political economy—the system of Ricardo

and J. S. Mill—rested on certain fundamental assump- tions, which, instead of being universally true in fact, were only realized within very narrow limits of time and space. Instead of being applicable to all states of society, it holds only in relation to those “in which com- merce has largely developed, and where it has taken the form of development, or something like the form, which it has taken in England.” It is “the science of business such as business is in large and trading communities—an analysis of the great commerce by which England has. become rich.” But more than this it is not; it will not explain the economic life of earlier times, nor even of other communities in our own time; and for the latter reason it has remained insular; it has never been fully accepted in other countries as it has been at home. It is, in fact, a sort of ready reckoner, enabling us to calculate roughly what will happen under given conditions in Lombard Street, on the Stock Exchange, and in the great markets of the world. It is a “convenient series of deductions from assumed axioms which are never quite true, which in many times and countries would be utterly untrue, but which are sufficiently near to the principal conditions of the modern” English “ world to make it use- ful to consider them by themselves.”

Mill and Cairnes had already shown that the science they taught was a hypothetic one, in the sense that it dealt not with real but with imaginary men—“ economic men” who were conceived as simply “money-making animals.” But Bagehot went further: he showed what those writers, though they may have indicated, had not clearly brought out,? that the world in which these men were supposed to act is also “a very limited and peculiar world.” What marks off this special world, he tells us, is the promptness of transfer of capital and labour from one employment to another, as determined by differences in the remuneration of those several employments—a prompt- ness, about the actual existence of which in the contempor- ary English world he fluctuates a good deal, but which on the whole he recognizes as substantially realized.

Bagehot described himself as “ the last man of the ante- Mill period,” having learned his economics from Ricardo ; and the latter writer he appears to have to the end greatly over-estimated. But he lived long enough to gain some knowledge of the historical method, and with it he had “no quarrel, but rather much sympathy.” “Rightly conceived,” he said, “it is no

rival to the abstract method rightly conceived.” We will not stop to criticize a second time the term “abstract method” here applied to that of the old school, or to insist on the truth that all science is necessarily abstract, the only question that can arise being as to the just degree of abstraction, or, in general, as to the right constitution of the relation between the abstract and

2 Jones, whose writings were apparently unknown to Bagehot, had, as we have seen, in some degree anticipated him in this exposition.

the concrete. It is more apposite to remark that Bagehot’s view of the reconciliation of the two methods is quite different from that of most “orthodox ” economists. They commonly treat the historical method with a sort of patronizing toleration as affording useful exemplifications or illustrations of their theorems. But, according to him, the two methods are applicable in quite different fields. For what he calls the “abstract” method he reserves the narrow, but most immediately interesting, province of modern advanced industrial life, and hands over to the historical the economic phenomena of all the human past and all the rest of the human present. He hiniself exhibits much capacity for such historical research, and in particular has thrown real light on the less-noticed econo- mic and social effects of the institution of money, and on the creation of capital in the earlier stages of society. But his principal efficacy has been in reducing, by the considerations we have mentioned, still further than his predecessors had done, our conceptions of the work which the a prior method can do. He in fact dispelled the idea that it can ever supply the branch of general sociology which deals with wealth. As to the relations of economics to the other sides of sociology, he holds that the “abstract” science rightly ignores them. It does not consider the differences of human wants, or the social results of their several gratifications, except so far as these affect the production of wealth. In its view “a pot of beer and a picture—a book of religion and a pack of cards—are equally worthy of regard.” It therefore leaves the ground open for a science which will, on the one hand, study wealth as a social fact in all its successive forms and phases, and, on the other, will regard it in its true light as an instrument for the conservation and evolution —moral as well as material—of human societies.

Though it will involve a slight digression, it is desirable here to notice a further attenuation of the functions of the deductive method, which is well pointed out in Mr Sidgwick's recent remark- able work on political economy. He observes that, whilst J. S. Mill declares that the method a priori is the true method of the science, and that "it has been so understood and taught by all its most distinguished teachers," he yet himself in the treatment of production followed an inductive method (or at least one essentially different from the deductive), obtaining his results by '' merely analysing and systematizing our common empirical knowledge of the facts of industry." To explain this charactcristic inconsistency, Mr Sidgwick suggests that Mill, in making his general statement as to method, had in contemplation only the statics of distribution and exchange. And in this latter field Mr Sidgwick holds that the priort method, if it be pursucd with caution, if the simpli- fied premises be well devised and the conclusions '' modified by a rough conjectural allowance" for the elements omitted in the pre- mises, is not, for the case of a developed industrial society, ''essentially false or misleading." Its conclusions are hypotheti- eally valid, though "its utility as a means of interpreting and explaining concrete facts depends on its being used with as full a knowledge as possible of the results of observation and induction." We do not think this statement need be objected to, though we should prefer to regard deduction from hypothesis as a useful occasional logical artifice, and, as such, perfectly legitimate in this as in other fields of inquiry, rather than as the main form of method in any department of economics. Mr Sidgwick, by his limitation of deduction in 'distributional questions to "a state of things taken as the type to which civilized socicty generally approximates," scems to agree with Bagehot that for times and places which do not correspond to this type the historical method must be used—a inethod which, be it observed, does not exclude, but positively implies, " reflective analysis" of the facts, and their interpretation from "the motives of human agents " as well as from other determining conditions. In the dynamical study of wealth—of the changes in its distribution no less than its production—Mr Sidgwick admits that the method priori ''can occupy but a very subordinate place." We

should say that here also, though to a less extent, as a logical artifice it may somctimes be useful, though the hypotheses assuined ought not to be the same that are adapted to a mature industrial stage. But the essential organ must be the historical method, studying comparatively the different phases of social evolution.

Connected with the theory of modern industry is one

subject which Bagehot treated, though only in an incidental way, much more satisfactorily than his predecessors,— namely, the function of the entrepreneur, who in Mill and Cairnes is scarcely recognized except as the owner of capital. It is quite singular how little, in the Leading Principles of the latter, his active co-operation is taken into account. Bagehot objects to the phrase “wages of superintendence,” commonly used to express his “ reward,” as suggesting altogether erroneous ideas of the nature of his work, and well describes the large and varied range of his activity and usefulness, and the rare combination of gifts and acquirements which go to make up the per- fection of his equipment. It can scarcely be doubted that a foregone conclusion in favour of the system of (so-called) co-operation has sometimes led economists to keep these important considerations in the background. They have been brought into due prominence of late in the treatises of Profs. Marshall and F. A. Walker, who, however, have scarcely made clear, and certainly have not justified, the principle on which the amount of the remuneration of the entrepreneur is determined.

We have seen that Jones had in his dogmatic teaching anticipated in some degree the attitude of the new school ; important works had also been produced, notably by Thomas Tooke and William Newmarch (History of Prices, 1838-1857), and by James E. Thorold Rogers (History of Agriculture and Prices in England, 1866-82), on the course

of English economic history. But the first systematic Leslie,

statement by an English writer of the philosophic founda- tion of the historical method, as the appropriate organ of economic research, is to be found in an essay by T. E. Cliffe Leslie (printed in the Dublin University periodical, Hermathena, 1876; since included in his Essays Moral and Political, 1879). This essay was the most important publication on the logical aspect of economic science which had appeared since Mill's essay in his Unsettled Questions. Though Cairnes had expanded and illustrated the views of Mill, he had really added little to their substance. Leslie takes up a position directly opposed to theirs. He criticizes with much force and verve the principles and practice of the "orthodox" school. Those who are acquainted with what has been written on this subject by Knies and other Germans will appreciate the freshness and originality of Leslie's treatment. He points out the loose and vague character of the principle to which the classical economists profess to trace back all the pheno- mena with which they deal—namely, the "desire of wealth." This phrase really stands for a variety of wants, desires, and sentiments, widely different in their nature and economic effects, and undergoing important changes (as, indeed, the component elements of wealth itself also do) in the several successive stages of the social move- ment. The truth is that there are many different economic motors, altruistic as well as egoistic; and they cannot all be lumped together by such a coarse generalization. The a priort and purely deductive method cannot yield an explanation of the causes which regulate either the nature or the amount of wealth, nor of the varieties of distribu- tion in different social systems, as, for example, in those of France and England. "The whole economy of every nation is the result of a long evolution in which there has been both continuity and change, and of which the economical side is only a particular aspect. And the laws of which it is the result must be sought in history and the general laws of society and social evolution." The intel- lectual, moral, legal, political, and economic sides of social progress are indissolubly connected. Thus, juridical facts relating to property, occupation, and trade, thrown up by the social movement, are also economic facts. And, more generally, "the economic condition of English" or any

other “society at this day is the outcome of the entire movement which has evolved the political constitution, the structure of the family, the forms of religion, the learned professions, the arts and sciences, the state of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce.” To understand existing economic relations we must trace their historical evolution ; and “the philosophical method of political economy must be one which expounds that evolution.” This essay was the most distinct challenge ever addressed to the ideas of the old school on method, and, though its conclusions have been protested against, the arguments on which they are founded have never been answered.

With respect to the dogmatic generalizations of the “ orthodox” economics, Leslie thought some of them were false, and all of them required careful limitation. Early in his career he had shown the hollowness of the wage-fund theory, though he was not the first to repudiate it. The doctrine of an average rate of wages and an average rate of profits he rejected except under the restrictions stated by Adam Smith, which imply a “small and stationary world of trade.” He thought the glib assump- tion of an average rate of wages, as well as of a wage- fund, had done much harm “ by hiding the real rates of wages, the real causes which govern them, and the real sources from which wages proceed.” The facts, which he laboriously collected, he found to be everywhere against the theory. In every country there is really “a great number of rates; and the real problem is, What are the causes which produce these different rates?” As to profits, he denies that there are any means of knowing the gains and prospects of all the investments of capital, and declares it to be a mere fiction that any capitalist surveys the whole field. Bagehot, as we saw, gave up the doctrine of a national level of wages and profits except in the peculiar case of an industrial society of the contemporary English type; Leslie denies it even for such a society. With this doctrine, that of cost of production as determin-ing price collapses, and the principle emerges that it is not cost of production, but demand and supply, on which domestic, no less than international, values depend,— though this formula will require much interpretation before it can be used safely and with advantage. Thus Leslie extends to the whole of the national industry the partial negation of the older dogma introduced by Cairnes through the idea of non-competing groups. He does not, of course, dispute the real operation of cost of

production on price in the limited area within which rates of profit and wages are determinate and known; but he maintains that its action on the large scale is too remote and uncertain to justify our treating it as regulator of price. Now, if this be so, the entire edifice which Ricardo reared on the basis of the identity of cost of production and price, with its apparent but unreal simplicity, symmetry, and completeness, disappears; and the ground is cleared for the new structure which must take its place. Leslie pre- dicts that, if political economy, under that name, does not bend itself to the task of rearing such a structure, the office will speedily be taken out of its hands by sociology.

Leslie was a successful student of several special economic subjects—of agricultural economy, of taxation, of the distribution of the precious metals and the history of prices, and, as has been indicated, of the movements of wages. But it is in relation to the method and funda- mental doctrines of the science that he did the most

1 That service was due to F. D. Lon J DD! ge (Refutation of the Wage-Fund Theory of Modern Political Economy, 1866). lLeslie's treat- ment of the subject was contained in an article of Fraser's Magazine for July 1868, reprinted as an appendix to his Land-Systems and

i" Economy of Ireland, England, and Continental Countries,

POLTUTICAL tu Noms

important, because the most opportune and needful work. And, though his course was closed too early for the interests of knowledge, and much of what he produced was merely occasional and fragmentary, his services will be found to have been greater than those of many who have left behind them more systematic, elaborate, and pretentious writings.

One of the most original of recent English writers on Jevons.

political economy was W. Stanley Jevons (1835-1882). The combination which he presented of a predilection and aptitude for exact statistical inquiry with sagacity and ingenuity in the interpretation of the results was such as might remind us of Petty. He tended strongly to bring economics

into close relation with physical science. He made a marked impression on the public mind by his attempt to take stock of our resources in the article of coal. His idea of a relation between the recurrences of commercial crises and the period of the sun-spots ~~gave evidence of a fertile and bold scientific imagination, though he cannot be said to have succeeded in establishing such a relation. He was author of an excellent treatise on Money and the Mechanism of Exchange (1875), and of various essays on currency and finance, which have been collected since his death, and contain vigorous discussions on subjects of this nature, as on bimetallism (with a de~~ cided tendency in favour of the single gold standard), and several valuable suggestions, as with respect to the most perfect system of currency, domestic and international, and in particular the extension of the paper currency in England to smaller amounts. He proposed in other writings (collected in Methods of Social Reform, 1883) a variety of measures, only partly economic in their character, directed especially to the elevation of the working classes, one of the most important being in relation to the conditions of the labour of married women in factories. This was one of several instances in which he repudiated the lazssez faire principle, which indeed, in his book on The State in Relation to Labour (1882), he refuted in the clearest and most con- vincing way, without changing the position he had always maintained as an advocate of free trade. Towards the end of his career, which was prematurely terminated, he was more and more throwing off “the incubus of metaphysical ideas and expressions” which still impeded the recognition or confused the appreciation of social facts. He was, in his own words, ever more distinctly coming to the conclusion “that the only hope of attaining a true system of economics is to fling aside, once and for ever, the mazy and prepos- terous assumptions of the Ricardian school.” With respect to method, though he declares it to be his aim to “investi- gate inductively the intricate phenomena of trade and industry,” his views had not perhaps assumed a definitive shape. The editor of some of his remains declines to under- take the determination of his exact position with respect to the historical school, The fullest indications we possess on that subject are to be found in a lecture of 1876, On the Future of Political Economy. He saw the importance and necessity in economics of historical investigation, a line of study which he himself was led by native bent to prose- cute in some directions. But he scarcely apprehended the full meaning of what is called the historical method, which he ‘erroneously contrasted with the

“theoretical,” and apparently supposed to be concerned with verifying and illustrating certain abstract doctrines resting on in- dependent bases. Hence, whilst he declared himself in favour of “thorough reform and reconstruction,” he sought to preserve the a priori mode of proceeding alongside of, and concurrently with, the historical. Political economy, in fact, he thought was breaking up and falling into several, probably into many, different branches of inquiry, prominent amongst which would be the “theory” as it

Toyn- bee.

‘that it succeeded in Jevons’s hands.

Peerraic“’w i ECONOMY

had descended from his best predecessors, especially those of the French school, whilst another would be the “ historical study,” as it was followed in England by Jones, Rogers, and others, and as it had been proclaimed in general principle by his contemporary Cliffe Leslie. This was one of those eclectic views which have no permanent validity, but are useful in facilitating a transition. The two methods will doubtless for a time coexist, but the historical will inevitably supplant its rival. What Jevons meant as the “theory” he wished to treat by mathematical methods (see his Theory of Political Economy, 1871; 2nd ed., 1879). This project had, as we have seen, been entertained and partially carried into effect by others before him, though he unduly multiplies the number of such earlier essays when, for example, he mentions Ricardo and J. 8. Mill as writing mathematically because they sometimes illustrated the meaning of their propositions by dealing with definite arithmetical quantities. Such illustrations, of which a specimen is supplied by Mill’s treatment of the subject of international trade, have really nothing to do with the use of mathematics as an instrument for economic research, or even for the co-ordination of economic truths. We have already, in speaking of Cournot, explained why, as it seems to us, the application of mathematics in the higher sense to economics must necessarily fail, and we do not think His conception of ‘final utility” is ingenious, but we cannot regard it as either “positive” or fruitful. He offers as a valuable result of mathematical investigation the theorem that in every case of exchange the quantity of each of the articles

concerned multiplied by its utility is the same. But what is the unit of utility? If we cannot look for some- thing more tangible—not to say more serviceable—than this, there is not much encouragement to pursue such re- searches, which will in fact never be anything more than academic playthings, and which involve the very real evil of restoring the metaphysical entities previously discarded. The reputation of Jevons as an acute and vigorous thinker, inspired with noble popular sympathies, is sufficiently established. But the attempt to represent him, in spite of himself, as a follower and continuator of Ricardo, and as one of the principal authors of the development of economic theory (meaning by "theory" the old a priori doctrine) can only lower him in estimation by placing his services on grounds which will not bear criticism. His name will survive in connexion, not with new theoretical con- structions, but with his treatment of practical problems, his fresh and lively expositions, and, as we have shown, his energetic tendency to a renovation of economic method. Arnold Toynbee (1852-1883), who left behind him a beautiful memory, filled as he was with the love of truth and an ardent and active zeal for the public good, was author of some fragmentary or unfinished pieces, which yet well deserve attention both for their intrinsic merit and as indicating the present drift of all the highest natures, especially amongst our younger men, in the treatment of economic questions. He had a belief in the organizing power of democracy which it is not easy to share, and some strange ideas due to youthful enthusiasm, such as, for ex- ample, that Mazzini is "the true teacher of our age ;" and he fluctuates considerably in his opinion of the Ricardian political economy, in one place declaring it to be a detected "intellectual imposture," whilst elsewhere, apparently under the influence of Bagehot, he speaks of it as having been in recent times "only corrected, re-stated, and put into the proper relation to the science of life," meaning apparently, by this last, general sociology. He saw, however, that our great help in the future must come, as much had already come, from the historical method, to which in his own researches he gave preponderant weight. Its true

character, too, he understood better than many even of those who have commended it; for he perceived that it not only explains the action of

special local or temporary con- ditions on economic phenomena, but seeks by comparing the stages of social development in different countries and times to “discover laws of universal application.” Tf, as we are told, there exists at Oxford a rising group of men who occupy a position in regard to economic thought sub- stantially identical with that of Toynbee, the fact is one of good omen for the future of the science.

It is no part of our plan to pass judgment on the works of contemporary English authors,—a judgment which could not in general be final, and which would be subject to the imputa- tion of bias in a greater degree than estimates of living writers in foreign countries. But, for the information of the student, some opinions may be expressed which scarcely any competent person would dispute. The best brief exposition of political economy, substantially in accordance with Mill’s treatise, is to be found in Faweett’s Manual (6th ed., 1884). But those who admit in part the claiins of the new school will prefer Mr and Mrs Marshall’s Economics of Industry (2d ed., 1881). Better, in some respects, than either is the Political Economy of the American professor, Francis A. Walker (1883), whose special treatises on Money and on the Wages Question may also be recommended. Other meritorious works are J. E. T. Rogers’s Manwal of Political Economy, 1870; John Macdonnell’s Survey of Political Economy, 1871; and John L. Shadwell’s System of Political Economy, 1877. Prof. W. E. Hearn’s Plutology (1864) contains one of the ablest extant treatments of the subject of pro- duction. Mr Goschen’s is the best work on the foreign exchanges (10th ed., 1879). Mr Macleod, though his general economic scheme has met with no acceptance, is recognized as supplying much that is useful on the subject of banking. Prof. Rogers’s Six Centuries of Work and Wages (1884) is the most trustworthy book on the economic history of England during the period with which he deals. W. Cunningham’s Growth of English Industry and Com- merce, 1882, is instructive on the mercantile system. Dr W. Neilson Hancock has shown in a multitude of papers a most exten- sive and accurate knowledge of the social economy of Ireland.

On American political economy the reader will consult with advantage an article in the Fortnightly Review for September, 1880, by Cliffe Leslie, which was written after the publication of his collected essays. We can only mention some of the best-known works (besides those of F. A. Walker)

produced in the United States. Amongst them are E. Peshine Smith's Manwal of Political Economy, 1858; Francis Bowen's American Political Economy, 1870; Amasa Walker's Science of Wealth, 1867; A. L. Perry's Elements of Political Economy, 1866 (the two former writers are protectionist, the two latter free-traders; Perry is a disciple of Bastiat). The principal works on American economic history are those of A. S. Bolles, entitled Industrial History of the United States, and Financial History of the United States, 1774-1789,

1879.

We cannot here overlook a work like that of Mr Sidgwick (1883), to which we have already referred on a special point. It is impossible not to respect and admire the conscientious and penetrating criticism which he applies to the a priori system, of economics in its most mature form. But it is open to question whether the task was wisely undertaken. Itcannot be permanently our business to go on amending and limiting the Ricardian doctrines, and asking by what special interpretations of phrases or additional qualifications they may still be admitted as having a certain value. The time for a new construction has arrived ; and it is to this, or at least to the study of its conditions, that competent thinkers with the due scientific preparation should now devote themselves. It is to be feared that Mr Sidgwick's treatise, instead of, as he hopes, "eliminating unnecessary controversy," will tend to revive the stériles contestations and oiseuses disputes de mots, which Comte censured in the earlier economists. It is interesting to observe that the part of the work which is, and has been recognized as, the most valuable is that in which, shaking off the fictions of the old school, he examines independently by the light of observation and analysis the question of the industrial action of Governments.

Let us briefly consider in conclusion, by the light of the preceding historical survey, what appear to be the steps in the direction of a renovation of economic science which are now at once practicable and urgent.

I. Economic investigation has hitherto fallen for the most part into the hands of lawyers and men of letters, not into those of a genuinely scientific class. Nor have its cultivators in general had that sound preparation in the

sciences of inorganic and vital nature which is necessary whether as supplying bases of doctrine or as furnishing lessons of method. Their education has usually been of a metaphysical kind. Hence political economy has retained much of the form and spirit which belonged to it in the 17th and 18th centuries, instead of advancing with the times, and assuming a truly positive character. It is homogene- ous with the school logic, with the abstract unhistorical jurisprudence, with the a priort ethics and politics, and other similar antiquated systems of thought ; and it will be found that those who insist most strongly on the mainten- ance of its traditional character have derived their habitual mental pabulum from those regions of obsolete speculation. Wecan thus understand the attitude of true men of science towards this branch of study, which they regard with ill-disguised contempt, and to whose professors they either re- fuse or very reluctantly concede a place in their brotherhood.

The radical vice of this unscientific character of political economy seems to lie in the too individual and subjective aspect under which it has been treated. Wealth having been conceived as what satisfies desires, the definitely determinable qualities possessed by some objects of supply- ing physical energy, and improving the physiological con- stitution, are left out of account. Everything is gauged by the standard of subjective notions and desires. All desires are viewed as equally legitimate, and all that satisfies our desires as equally wealth. Value being regarded as the result of a purely mental appreciation, the social value of things in the sense of their objective utility, which is often scientifically measurable, is passed over, and ratio of exchange is exclusively considered. The truth is, that at the bottom of all economic investigation must lie the idea of the destination of wealth for the maintenance and evolution of a society. And, if we overlook this, our economics will become a play of logic or a manual for the market, rather than a contribution to social science ; whilst wearing an air of completeness, it will be in truth one-sided and superficial. Economic science is something far larger than the catallactics to which some have wished to reduce it. A special merit of the physiocrats seems to have lain in their vague perception of the close relation of their study to that of external nature; and, so far, we must recur to their point of view, basing our economics on physics and

biology as developed inourown time. Further, the science must be cleared of all the theologico-metaphysical elements or tendencies which still encumber and deformit. Teleology and optimism on the one hand, and the jargon of ‘natural liberty ” and “ indefeasible rights” on the other, must be finally abandoned.

Nor can we assume as universal premises, from which economic truths can be deductively derived, the con- venient formulas which have been habitually employed, such as that all men desire wealth and dislike exertion. These vague propositions, which profess to anticipate and supersede social experience, and which necessarily intro- duce the absolute where relativity should reign, must be laid aside. The laws of wealth (to reverse a phrase of Buckle’s) must be inferred from the facts of wealth, not from the postulate of human selfishness. We must bend ourselves to a serious direct study of the way in which society has actually addressed itself and now addresses itself to its own conservation and evolution through the supply of its material wants. What organs it has developed for this purpose, how they operate, how they are affected by the medium in which they act and by the co- existent organs directed to other ends, how in their turn they react on those latter, how they and their functions are progressively modified in process of time—these problems, whether statical or dynamical, are all questions of fact, as capable of being studied through observation

and history as the nature and progress of human language or religion, or any other group of social phenomena, Such study will of course require a continued ‘‘reflective analysis” of the results of observation; and, whilst eliminat- ing all premature assumptions, we shall use ascertained truths respecting human nature as guides in the inquiry and aids towards the interpretation of facts. And the employment of deliberately instituted hypotheses will be legitimate, but only as an occasional logical artifice.

IL. Economics must be constantly regarded as forming only one department of the larger science of sociology, in vital connexion with its other departments, and with the moral synthesis which is the crown of the whole

intellectual system. We have already sufficiently explained the philosophical grounds for the conclusion that the economic phenomena of society cannot be isolated, except provision- ally, from the rest,—that, in fact, all the primary social elements should be habitually regarded with respect to their mutual dependence and reciprocal actions. Especially must we keep in view the high moral issues to which the eco- nomic movement is subservient, and in the absence of which it could never in any great degree attract the interest or fix the attention either of eminent thinkers or of right-minded men. The individual point of view will have to be sub- ordinated to the social; each agent will have to be regarded as an organ of the society to which he belongs and. of the larger society of the race. The consideration of interests, as George Eliot has well said, must give place to that of functions. The old doctrine of right, which lay at the basis of the system of "natural liberty," has done its temporary work ; a doctrine of duty will have to be substituted, fixing on positive grounds the nature of the social co-operation of each class and each member of the community, and the rules which must regulate its just and beneficial exercise.

Turning now from the question of the theoretic constitu- tion of economics, and viewing the science with respect to its influence on public policy, we need not at the present day waste words in repudiating the idea that " non- govern- ment" in the economic sphere is the normal order of things. The laissez faire doctrine, coming down to us from the system of natural liberty, was long the great watchword of economic orthodoxy, and it had a special acceptance and persistence in England, in consequence of the political struggle for the repeal of the corn laws, which made economic discussion in this country turn almost altogether on free trade—a state of things which was continued by the effort to procure a modification of the protective policy of foreign nations. But it has now for some time lost the sacrosanct character with which it was formerly invested. This is a result not so much of scientific thought as of the pressure of practical needs—a cause which has modified the successive forms of economic opinion more than theorists are willing to acknowledge. Social exigencies will force the hands of statesmen, whatever their. attachment to abstract formulas ; and politicians have practically turned their backs on laissez faire. The state has with excellent effect proceeded a considerable way in the direction of controlling, for ends of social equity or public utility, the operations of

individual interest. The economists them- selves have for the most part been converted on the question ; amongst theorists Mr Herbert Spencer finds himself almost a vox clamantis in deserto in protesting against what he calls the ‘‘new slavery” of Governmental interference. He will protest in vain, so far as he seeks to rehabilitate the old absolute doctrine of the economic passivity of the state. But it is certainly possible that even by virtue of the force of the reaction against that doctrine there may be an excessive or precipitate tendency in the opposite direction. With the course of production or exchange considered in itself there will probably be in England little disposition

to meddle. But the dangers and inconveniences which arise from the unsettled condition of the world of labour will doubtless from time to time here, as elsewhere, prompt to premature attempts at regulation. Apart, however, from the removal of evils which threaten the public peace, and from temporary palliations to ease off social pressure, the right policy of the state in this sphere will for the present be one of abstention. It is indeed certain that industrial society will not permanently remain without a systematic organization. The mere conflict of private interests will never produce a well-ordered commonwealth of labour. Fretheit ist keine Lésung. Freedom is for society, as for the individual, the necessary condition precedent of the solution of practical problems, both as allowing natural forces to develop themselves and as exhibiting their spontaneous tendencies ; but it is not in itself the solution, Whilst, however, an organization of the industrial world may with certainty be expected to arise in process of time, it would be a great error to attempt to improvise one. We are now in a period of transition. Our ruling powers have still an equivocal character; they are not in real harmony with industrial life, and are in all respects imperfectly imbued with the modern spirit. Besides, the conditions of the new order are not yet sufficiently urider- stood. ‘The institutions of the future must be founded on sentiments and habits, and these must be the slow growth of thought and experience. The solution, indeed, must be at all times largely a moral one ; it is the spiritual rather than the temporal power that is the natural agency for redressing or mitigating most of the evils associated with industrial life.! In fact, if there is a tendency—and we may

admit that such a tendency is real or imminent—to push the state towards an extension of the normal limits of its action for the maintenance of social equity, this is doubtless in some measure due to the fact that the growing dissidence on religious questions in the most advanced communities has weakened the authority of the churches, and deprived their influence of social universality. What is now most urgent is not legislative interference on any large scale with the industrial relations, but the formation, in both the higher and lower regions of the industrial world, of profound convictions as to social duties, and some more effective mode than at present exists of diffusing, maintaining, and applying those convictions. This is a subject into which we cannot enter here. But it may at least be said that the only parties in contemporary public life which seem rightly to conceive or adequately to appreciate the necessities of the situation are those that aim, on the one hand, at the restoration of the old spiritual power, or, on the other, at the formation of a new one. And this leads to the con- clusion that there is one sort of Governmental interference which the advocates of laissez faire have not always dis- countenanced, and which yet, more than any other, tends to prevent the gradual and peaceful development of a new industrial and social system,—namely, the interference with spiritual liberty by setting up official types of philosophical doctrine, and imposing restrictions on the expression and discussion of opinions.

It will be seen that our principal conclusion respecting economic action harmonizes with that relating to the theoretic study of economic phenomena. For, as we held

that the latter could not be successfully pursued except as a duly subordinated branch of the wider science of sociology, so in practical human affairs we believe that no partial synthesis is possible, but that an economic re- organization of society implies a universal renovation, intellectual and moral no less than material. The indus- trial reformation for which western Europe groans and travails, and the advent of which is indicated by so many symptoms (though it will come only as the fruit of faith- ful and sustained effort), will be no isolated fact, but will form one

part of an applied art of life, modifying our whole environment, affecting our whole culture, and re- gulating our whole conduct—in a word, consciously directing all our resources to the conservation and evolu- tion of humanity.

The reader is referred for fuller information to the following works on the history of political economy, all of which have been more or less, and some very largely, used in the preparation of the foregoing outline.

GENERAL Historres.—Histotre de l’ Econonvie Politique en Europe demuis Ics anciens jusqw & nos jours, by Jeréme Adolphe Blanqui (1837-88) ; of which there is an English translation by Emily J. Leonard (1880). Histoire de Economie Politique, by Alban de Villeneuve-Bargemont (Brussels, 1839 ; Paris, 1841); written from the Catholic point of view. View of the Progress of Political Economy in Europe since the 16th Century, by Travers Twiss, D.C.L. (1847). Die geschichtliche Entwickelung der National- Oekonomik und threr Literatur, by Julius Kautz (2d ed. 1860); a valuable work marked by philosophical breadth, and exhibiting the results of extensive research, but too declamatory in style. Kritische Geschichte der Nationalikonomic und der Soctalismus, by Emile Diihring (1871 ; 3d ed. 1879); characterized by its author’s usual sagacity, but also by his usual perverseness and depreciation of meritorious writers in his own field. Guida allo studio dell’ Economia Politica, by Luigi Cossa (1876 and 1878; Eng. trans. 1880). Geschichte der Nationalikonomik, by H. Eisenhart (1881); a vigorous and original sketch. And, lastly, a brief but excellent history by H. von Scheel in the Handbuch der politischen Ockonomie (really a great encyclopedia of economic knowledge in all its extent and applications), edited by Gustav Schonberg (1882). To these histories proper must be added The Literature of Political Economy, by J. R. M‘Culloch (1845), a book which might with advantage be re-edited, supplemented where imperfeet, and con- tinued to our own time. Some of the biographical and critical notices by Eugéne Daire and others in the Collection des principauc Economistes will also be found useful, as well as the: articles in the Dictionnaire de ? Economie Politique of Coquelin and Guillaumin (1852-53), which is justly described by Jevons as ‘‘on the whole the best work of reference in the literature of the science.”

‘ SprcraL Histories.—Haly.—Storia della Economia Pubblica in Ttalia, ossia Epilogo critico degli Economisti Italiani, by Count Giuseppe Pecchio (1829), intended as an appendix to Baron Custodi’s collection of the Scrittori classtct Haliani di Economia Politica, 50 vols., comprising the writings of Italian economists from 1582 to 1804. There is a French translation of Pecclhio’s work by Leonard Gallois (1830). The book is not without value, though often superficial and rhetorical.

Spain.—Storia della Economia Politica in Espata (1863), by M. Colmeiro ; rather a history of economy than of economics—of policies and institutions rather than of theories and literary works.

Germany.—Geschichte der National-skonomik tm Deutschland (1874), by Wilhelm Roscher ; a vast repertory of learning on its subject, with oceasional side-glances at other economic literatures. Die neucre National-skonomie in ihren Hauptrichtungen, by Moritz Meyer (3d ed., 1882) ; a useful handbook dealing almost exclusively with recent German speculation and policy.

England.—Zur Geschichte der Englischen Volkswirthschaftslehre, by W. Roscher (1851-52).

The reader is also advised to consult the articles of the present work which relate directly to the several principal writers on political economy. (lo US, ils)

POLK, James Knox (1795-1849), eleventh president of the United States of America, was of Scoto-Irish

1 The neglect of this consideration, and the consequent undue exaltation of state action, which, though quite legitimate, is altogether insufficient, appears to us the principal danger to which the con- temporary German school of economists is exposed.

descent, his ancestors, whose name was Pollok, having

emigrated from Ireland in the 18th century. He was the

eldest of ten children, and was born 2d November 1795 in

Mecklenburg county, North Carolina, from which his

father, who was a farmer, removed in 1806 to the valley

of the Duck river, Tennessee. At an early age he was XIX. — 51

402

placed in a merchant's office, but as he showed a disin- |

clination for business his father at last permitted him to begin preparatory studies for the university. In 1815 he entered the university of North Carolina, where in 1815 he graduated with the highest honours. in 1820, he speedily made for himself a high reputation, and in 1823 he entered the State legislature. 1825 he was chosen to represent his district in Congress, to which he was re-elected every succeeding two years until 1839. Asastrong supporter of Democratic opinions he identified himself with every important discussion, and, though he was not a brilliant speaker, his solid abilities, extraordinary energy, and indomitable will soon gave him a place in the front rank of politicians. In 1835 he was chosen speaker of the House of Representatives, to which he was re-elected in 1837, and in 1839 he was elected governor of Tennessee. In 1844 he was the Democrat candidate for the presidentship, and was chosen over Clay by a majority of sixty-five electoral votes. The election in 'great measure turned on the annexation of Texas, which was effected before his inauguration. One of the earliest questions with which his administration had to deal was the boundary of Oregon, which, although he had previously declared the title of the United States to Oregon to be 'clear and undisputed," was finally fixed at the parallel of 49° instead of 54° 40.' Following the annexation of Texas came the Mexican war, resulting in the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, 2d February 1848, by which New Mexico and California were ceded to the United States. Other im- portant measures of his administration were the admission of Iowa and Wisconsin to the Union, the adoption of a low tariff in 1846, the organization of the department of the interior, and the adoption of the method of collecting Government revenues by specie without the aid

of the banks. Polk retired from office 4th March 1849, and died in Nashville, 15th June of the same year.

Life of the Hon. James Knox Polk, with a Compendium of his Speeches, 1844; Chase, History of the Polk Administration, 1850.

POLLACK (Gadus pollachius), a species of cod-fish, abundant on rocky coasts of northern Europe, and extend- ing as far south as the western parts of the Mediterranean, where, however, it is much scarcer and does not attain to the same size as in its real northern home. In Scotland and some parts of Ireland it is called Lythe. It is dis- tinguished from other species of the genus Gadus by its long pointed snout, which is twice as long as the eye, with projecting lower jaw, and without a barbel at the chin. The three dorsal fins are composed of respectively 12, 18 or 20, and from 17 to 19 rays, and the two anal fins of 31 and 19 or 20. A black spot above the base of the pectoral fin is another distinguishing mark. Although pollack are well-flavoured fish, and. smaller individuals (from 12 to 16 inches) excellent eating, they do not form any considerable article of trade, and are not preserved, the majority being consumed by the captors. Specimens of twelve pounds are common, but the species is said to attain 24 pounds in weight.

POLLAN (Coregonus pollan), a species of the Salmonoid genus Coregonus which has been found in the large and deep loughs of Ireland only. A full account of the fish by its first describer, W. Thompson, may be found in his Natural History of Ireland, vol. iv. p. 168.

POLLIO, Carus Astnius (76 B.c.-4 4.D.), a Roman orator, poet, and historian, who played a conspicuous part in the troubled history of his time, was born in 76 B.c. In his twenty-second year (54 B.c.) he impeached unsuccess- fully C. Cato, who in his tribunate (56) had acted as the tool of the triumvirs. In the civil war between Cesar and Pompey, Pollio sided with Czesar, and after the successful campaigns against the remnants of the Pompeian party

| 15, 44) Pollio was in Spain. Called to the bar |

In August |

in Africa and Spain he was raised tothe pratorship, and received the command of the war in Spain against Sextus Pompeius. At the time of Czsar's assassination (March He was defeated by Sextus Pompeius and fled for his life. But by Lepidus's influence a peace was patched up and Sextus left Spain, while Pollio remained with three legions under him. During the war between Mark Antony and the senate, Pollio, in a letter to Cicero, declared himself on the side of the senate, but found pretexts for waiting to cast in his lot with the victor. In fact no sooner had Octavian become reconciled to Antony and Lepidus, and compelled the senate to rescind the decrees against them, than Pollio joined Lepidus with two legions. Antony, Lepidus, and Octavian now formed the triumvirate (43), and Pollio was nominated consul for the year 40 B.c. Meantime he was entrusted by Antony with the administration of Gallia Trans- padana, and in superintending the distribution of the Mantuan territory amongst the veterans he used his influence to save from confiscation the property of the poet Virgil. When L. Antonius, brother of Mark Antony, revolted against Octavian and was besieged in Perusia (41-40), he entreated Pollio to hasten to his relief. Pollio advanced hesitatingly, but was fain to take refuge in Ravenna when Octavian marched to meet him. After the fall of Perusia Octavian and Antony were reconciled for a time by the peace of Brundisium, which Pollio helped to negotiate. He was now consul (40); Virgil's famous fourth eclogue is addressed to him in his consulship. Next year Pollio was sent by Antony against the Parthini, an Illyrian people who adhered to Brutus. He was success- ful, took the town of Salone, and celebrated a triumph in the same year. The eighth eclogue of Virgil is addressed to Pollio while engaged in this campaign. From the spoils of the war he constructed the first public library at Rome.! Thenceforward Pollio withdrew from active life and devoted hiniself to literature. When Octavian invited him to join in the war against Antony which ended in the battle of Actium, Pollio declined on the score of his former friend- ship with Antony. He seems to have maintained to a certain degree an attitude of independence if not of opposi- tion towards Augustus. He lived to a green old age, and died in his villa at Tusculum in 4 a.D.

Pollio was a distinguished orator; his specches showed ingenuity and care, but were marred by an affected archaism which rendered them somewhat crabbed and harsh. He wrote tragedies also, which Virgil declared to be worthy of Sophocles, and a prose history of the civil wars of his time from the first triumvirate (60 B.c.) down

1 The library was in the Atrium Libertatis, which was also erected by Pollio (Isidor., Orig., vi. 5; Suetou., Aug., 29; Ovid, Trisé., ili. 1, 71). The situation of this Atrium is uncertain. There was an older Atrium Libcrtatis near the Forum (Cic. Ad Att., iv. 16, 8), but we are precluded from identifying it with that°of Pollio by the lan- guage of Isidore and Suetonius, who imply that Pollio built a new Atrium. Perhaps Pollio's Atrium was connected with the temple of Liberty on the Aventine (Livy, xxiv. 16); this would be strongly confirmed by Martial (xii. 8, 6), if we could be sure that his "donius alta Remi" referred to the Aventine. Mr A. W. Verrall (Studies i Horace, p. 118) has made it probable that Dion Cassius (xlix. 43) confused the Pollian with the Octavian library, and that accordingly 33 B.c. is the date of the dedication of the former library and not of the latter, which we know from Plutarch (Afarc., 30) to have been dedicated not earlier than 23 B.C., the date of Marcellus'sdeath. But Mr Verrall's conjecture that "in the great reconstructions of Augustus " the Pollian library was absorbed in the Octavian seems negatived by Ovid, Trist., iii. 1, 69-72, where "atria" certainly refers to the Pollian library, and "templa—vicino juncta theatro," probably refers to the Octavian library, which was in the Porticus Octavie, adjoining the twin temples of Jupiter and Juno, and close to the theatre of Marcellus (see Burn, Rome and the Campagna, p. 306 sq.). Pliny (NV. H., xxxvi. 24) also refers to " Pollionis Asini monumenta" as being distinct from the Porticus Octavie. Moreover, there is no evidence that the two libraries were even near each other; if the Pollian was on the Aventine, they were separated by nearly the whole breadth of the city.

to the death of Cicero (43 B.c.) or perhaps to the battle of Philippi (42 B.c.) or even later. This history, in the composition of which Pollio received assistance from the grammarian Ateius, was used as an authority by Plutarch and Appian. As a literary critic Pollio was very severe. He

censured Sallust and Cicero and professed to detect in Livy’s style certain provincialisms of his native Padua ; he attacked the Commentaries of Julius Cesar, accusing their author of carelessness and credulity if not of deliberate falsification. Horace addressed one of his odes (ii. 1) to Pollio on the subject of his history. Pollio was the first Roman author who recited his writings to an audience of his friends, a practice which afterwards grew vcry common at Rome. At! his writings are lost excepta few fragments of his speeches (collected by Meyer, Orat. Rom. Frag.), aud three letters addressed to Cicero (Cic., 4d Fam., x. 31-33).

POLLNITZ, Kart Lupwic, Fremerr von (1692- 1775), known as a writer of memoirs, was born on the 25th February 1692. His father, G. Bernhard von Polnitz, was a major-general and minister of state in the electorate of Brandenburg. P6llnitz was a man of restless and adventurous disposition, and after squandering his fortune travelled from court to court, his pleasant manners generally securing for him a kind reception. He was made reader to Frederick the Great, and afterwards the director of a theatre; but before accepting these appoint- ments he had served as a soldier in Austria, the States of the Church, and Spain. He was repeatedly converted to Catholicism and re-converted to the Reformed faith ; but he died a Catholic on the 23rd June 1775.

The most famous work attributed to him is Za Saxe galante, which contains an account of the private life of Augustus of Saxony ; but it has been doubted whether he was the author of this book. His contemporaries expressed much admiration for the lively style of his Lettres et mémoires, avec nouveaux mémoires de sa vie et la relation de-ses premiers voyages, and gencral interest was excited by his Etat abrégé de la cour de Saxe sous le réegne @ Auguste III., roi de Pologne. He was probably the author of the Histoire seerée de la duchesse d’Hanovre, épouse de George I., roi de la Grande- Bretagne. After his death Brunn issued Alémotres de Péllnitz pour servir a Vhistoire des quatre derniers souverains de la maison de Brandebourg, royale de Prusse.

POLLOK, Rosert (1798-1827), was the author of The Course of Time, a poem that has passed through many editions, and is still a favourite in serious households in Scotland. The son of a small farmer, he was born in

1798 at Moorhouse, in the parish of Eaglesham in Renfrewshire, was originally destined for the plough, but trained himself for the university, took his degree at Glasgow, and studied for the ministry of the United Secession Church. Along with the very general ambition to wag his head in a pulpit he had a specific literary ambition ; he published Tales of the Covenanters while he was a divinity student, and planned and completed a poem on the spiritual life and destiny of man. This was the Course of Time. The unfortunate poet died within six months of its publica- tion, at the age of twenty-nine. Excessive study had quickened a tendency to consumption. The poem was published in March 1827, and at once became popular. It is written in blank verse, in ten books, in the poetic diction of the 18th century, but with abundance of enthusiasm, impassioned elevation of feeling, and copious force of words and images. The poet's view of life was strongly Calvinistic. :

POLLOKSHAWS, a burgh of barony in Renfrewshire, Scotland, situated near the White Cart, on the Glasgow and Kilmarnock Railway, 24 miles south by west of Glas- gow, of which it is now reckoned a suburb, connected by tramway. The streets are irregular, but contain many good houses and shops. The principal buildings are the town-hall, the mechanics' institute, and the public hbrary and reading-room. The staple industries are cotton-spin- ning, hand and power-loom weaving of silk and cotton fabrics, dyeing, bleaching, and calico-printing. There are also paper works, potteries, and large engineering works. The town was created a burgh of barony by royal charter in 1813, and is governed by a provost, a baillie,

|

and six councillors. Population in 1871, 8921; in 1881,

9363.

POLLUX. See Castor anp PoLivx.

POLLUX, Juuius, of Naucratis in Egypt, a Greek sophist of the 2d century. His education was begun by his father, a man of literary culture, and was

continued by one Hadrian, but he is said neither to have attained to the excellencies nor fallen into the defects of his master. He taught at Athens, where, according to Philostratus, he was appointed to the professorship by the emperor Commodus on account of his melodious voice. He died at the age of fifty-eight, leaving ason behind him. Suidas gives a list of his rhetorical works, none of which have survived. Philostratus (Vit. Soph., ii. 12) recognizes his natural abilities, but speaks of his rhetoric in very moderate terms. He was ridiculed by Athenodorus, a contemporary teacher at Athens. It is a disputed point whether or not he is the butt of Lucian's scathing satire in the Lexiphanes and Teacher of Rhetoric. In the Teacher of Rhetoric Lucian lashes a vile and ignorant person who gains a reputation as an orator by sheer effrontery; the application of this—probably grossly exaggerated—portrait to Pollux derives some colour from the remark of Philostratus that the speeches of Pollux were more remarkable for boldness than art. The Lexiphanes, a satire upon the use of obscure and obsolete words, may conceivably have been directed against Pollux as the author of the Onomasticon. This work, which we still possess, is a Greek dictionary in ten books dedicated to Commodus, and arranged not alphabetically but according to subject-matter. Though mainly a dictionary of synonyms and phrases, it supplies much rare and valuable information on many points of classical antiquity. It also contains numerous fragments of writers now lost.

The first book treats of the gods and their worship, kings, speed and slowness, dyeing, traders and artisans, fertility and barren- ness, times and seasons, houses, ships, war, horses, agriculture, the parts of the plough and the waggon, bees. Book ii. treats of the ages and names of man, the parts of his body, his mind and soul, &c.; book iii. of kinship, marriage, citizenship, friend- ship, love, the relation of master and slave, mines, journeying, rivers, health, sickness, wealth, poverty, &c.; book iv. of the sciences and arts ; book v. of the chase, animals, compound words, love and hate, blame, fair grectings, inscriptions, &c.; book vi. of feasts, wine, food, the talkative man, the flattcrer, the passionate man, crimes, words compounded with éyo, ovy, &c., gifts, laughter and weeping, &c.; book vii. of trades ; book viii. of law and justice, magistrates, popular assemblies, &c.; book ix. of cities, coins, games, synonyms of likeness and unlikeness, &c., compounds in ev; book x. of vessels, instruments, and tools. The chief editions of Pollux's Onomasticon are those of Aldus (Venice, 1502); J. H. Lederlin and Tib.

Hemsterhuis (Amsterdam, 1706) ; W. Dindorf (Leipsic, 1824), containing the notes of previous commentators ; Im. Bekker (Berlin, 1846), containing the Greek text only.

POLO. This game, which is a species of " hockey on horseback," is of Eastern origin, and seems to have been a favourite pastime in Persia, Tartary, and the frontiers of India from prehistoric times. Every district has a differ- ent name for the game, and the rules under which it is played, although substantially identical, vary considerably on minor points. Thus in Little Tibet, Ladakh, and the adjacent districts the ground used is in the form of a parallelogram some hundred yards long with a goal at each end about 50 feet wide. Amongst the Manipuris, a semi-independent tribe on the north-east frontier of India, by whom the game is known as " kunjai," the ground is about 120 yards by 50 yards and the whole of each end forms a goal. In other places the goals are about 400 yards apart, and the ground is 120 yards wide at each end, increasing in width towards the centre. :

In some of the early matches in the United Kingdom the ground was about 400 yards long and 200 yards wide, the width of the goal being from 30 to 35 yards. Under the present rules of the Hurlingham Club, which is now

the principal authority on the game, it is provided that the goals shall be "not less than 250 yards apart and that each goal shall be 8 yards wide." The English name of the game is perhaps derived from '"'pulu," which is the Tibetan for a ball, and the pastime itself reached India from Persia through Afghanistan. It speedily gained favour with the officers of British cavalry regiments quartered in India, and was introduced into the United Kingdom in 1871 by the 10th Hussars. As far as can be ascertained the first match played on English soil took place at Aldershot in the spring of that year. This, how- ever, is not absolutely certain, as no records seem to have been preserved of the early contests. Under the rules of the game as now played the opposing parties may consist of from three to six players a side, the number in all matches for cups or prizes being limited to four. Each of the players is mounted on a pony which must not exceed fourteen hands and which must be free from any vice. As the description of the game as "hockey on horseback" would imply, the object of the pastime is to force a

ball by means of a stick, with which each player is furnished, through the goal of the opposing side. The size of the ball is 3 inches in diameter, and the sticks are 4 feet long with a cross piece at one end for the purpose of striking the ball. At the commencement of a game each side takes up its position behind the goal posts. A player on each side is appointed as goal-keeper. On a flag being dropped to notify the commencement of the game, the other players gallop towards the centre of the ground at full speed, their object being to reach the ball first and drive it in the direction of the opposite goal. When a ball is hit out of bounds it is thrown into play again by one of the umpires, of whom there is one ap- pointed for each side before the commencement of a match. When a ball is hit beyond the goal without passing through it the side defending goal is entitled to a “ hit off,” which must be made from the goal line. It is allowable in the course of play to impede an adversary and hinder his stroke by hooking his stick, but this must not be done either under or over his pony. Whilst it is permissible for a player to interpose his pony before his antagonist so as to prevent the latter reaching the ball, it is expressly forbidden to cross another player in possession of the ball except at such a distance as to avoid all possibility of collision. Should a player break his stick or have it broken he must ride to the appointed place where the sticks are kept and take one, and on no account is one to be brought to him, If he drops his stick he must dis- mount and pick it up, and is not allowed to hit the ball whilst dismounted. If a player is in front of a player of his own side who hits the ball, and has not two—or in case of matches of four a side, one—of the opposing side between him and the hostile goal, and has not come through the “bully,” he is “off side.” He does not then come ‘“‘on his side” until the ball has been hit or hit at by the Opposing side, or until the player on his own side who made the hit passes him. As long as he is “‘off side” he may not in any way impede a player of the opposite side. In all matches the duration of play is 1 hour 10 minutes, “eee an interval of 5 minutes after each 20 minutes ee Owing to the expense of maintaining a specially trained stud of ponies and a prepared ground for the pastime, the pursuit of the game of polo has always been confined to the wealthier classes in England. Its chief supporters are the younger members of the aristocracy and the officers of British cavalry regiments. POLO, Marco (c, 1254-1324), the Venetian, the most famous perhaps of all travellers. His history needs to be introduced by some account of the preceding generation of

his family, and of the state of the world which rendered their and his extensive travels possible.

Under Curna, in the introductory portion (vol. v. 627 sq.) we have briefly indicated the circumstances which in the last half of the 13th century and first half of the 14th threw Asia open to Western travellers to a degree unknown before and since. We first hear of the Polo family in the year 1260. The vast wave of Tartar con- quest, set in motion by Jenghiz Khan, and continuing to advance for some years after his death, had swept away all political barriers from the China Sea to the western frontier of Russia. This huge extent of empire continued for a time to own a supreme chief in the Great Khan, the head of the house of Jenghiz, whose headquarters were in the Mongolian steppe. Practically indeed the empire soon began to split up into several great monarchies under the descendants of his four sons, in order of age Juji, Jagatai, Oghotai, and Tuli. At the date we have named the supreme khanate had recently devolved upon Kublai, son of Tuli, and, after the founder, the ablest of his house. In the beginning of his reign Kublai carried out the transfer of the seat of rule from Karakorum on the northern verge of the Mongolian plains to the populous and civilized regions that had been conquered in the further East, a transfer which eventually converted the Tartar khan into a Chinese emperor.

Barka, the son of Juji, and the first of the house of Jenghiz to turn Moslem, reigned on the steppes of the Volga, where a standing camp, which eventually became a great city under the name of Sarai, had been established by his brother and predecessor Batu.

Hulagu, a younger brother of Kublai, after taking Baghdad, and putting the caliph Mosta‘sim to death, had become practically independent ruler of Persia, Babylonia, Mesopotamia, and Armenia,—though he and his sons and his sons’ sons continued to the end of the century to stamp the name of the Great Khan upon their coins, and to use the Chinese seal of state which he conferred.

The house of Jagatai had settled upon the pastures of the Ili and in the valley of the Jaxartes, and ruled also the populous cities of Samarkand and

Bokhara.

Kaidu, grandson of Oghotai, who had been the immedi- ate successor of Jenghiz, refused to recognize the transfer of supreme authority to his cousins, and through the long life of Kublai was a thorn in the side of the latter. His immediate authority was exercised in what we should now call Chinese Turkestan and Southern Central Siberia.

Northern China lad been conquered by Jenghiz and his successors from the Tartar dynasty called Kin or “Golden,” who had held it about a century. But southern China still remained in the hands of the native dynasty, whose capital was the great city now known as Hang-chow-foo. Their dominion was still substantially intact, but its subjugation was a task to which Kublai soon turned his attention, and it became the most pro- minent transaction of his reign.

In India the most powerful sovereign was the Turk sultan of Delhi; but, though both Sind and Bengal owned his supremacy, no part of peninsular India had yet been invaded. The Dravidian kingdoms of the south were still untouched by foreign conquest, and the accumulated gold of ages lay in their temples and treasuries an easy prey for the coming Moslem.

In the Indo-Chinese peninsula and the Eastern Islands a variety of kingdoms and dynasties were expanding and contracting, of which we have but dim and shifting glimpses. Their advance in wealth and art, far beyond what the present state of those regions would suggest, is attested by the vast and magnificent medizeval remains of architecture which are found at intervals over both the

oO fo

Indo-Chinese continental countries and the islands, as at Pagdn in Burmiah, at Ayuthia in Siam, at Ongkor and many other places in Camboja, at Borobodor and Bram- banan in Java. All these remains are deeply marked by Hindu influence.

Venetian genealogies and traditions of uncertain value trace the Polo family to Sebennico in Dalmatia, and before the eud of the 11th century names of

its members are found in the Great Council of the republic. But the ascertained line of the traveller begins only with his grandfather. Andrea Polo of S. Felice was the father of three sons, Marco, Nicolo, and Maffeo, of whom the second was the father of the subject of this article. They were presumably “noble,” 7.¢., belonging to the families who had seats in the Great Council, and were enrolled in the Libro d’Oro; for we know that Marco the traveller is officially so styled (nobilis vir). The three brothers were engaged in commerce; the elder Marco, resident apparently in Constantinople and in the Crimea, does not enter into the history.

In 1260 we find Nicolo and Maffeo at Constantinople. How long they had been absent from Venice we do not know. Nicolo was a married man, and had left his wife there. In the year named the two brothers went on a speculation to the Crimea, whence a succession of chances and openings carried them to the court of Barka Khan at Sarai, and further north, and eventually across the steppes to Bokhara. Here they fell in with certain envoys who had been on a mission from the Great Khan Kublai to his brother Hulagu in Persia, and by them were persuaded to make the journey to Cathay in their company. And thus thie first European travellers of whom we have any knowledge reached China. Kublai, when they reached his court, was either at CAMBALUC (q.v.), t.¢., Peking, which he had just rebuilt on a vast scale, or at his beautiful summer seat at Shangtu in the country north of the great wall (“In Xanadu did Cubla Khan,” &c.). It was the first time that the khan, a man full of energy and intelligence, had fallen in with European gentlemen. He was delighted with the Venetian brothers, listened eagerly to all that they had to tell of the Latin world, and decided to send them back as his envoys to the pope, with letters request- ing the despatch of a large body of educated men to instruct his people in Christianity and in the liberal arts. The motive of the khan’s request was doubtless much the same that some years back influenced the black king of Uganda on Lake Nyanza to make a similar request through the traveller Stanley. With Kublai, as with his predecessors, religion was chiefly a political engine. The khan must be obeyed ; how man should worship God was no matter to him. But Kublai was the first of his house to rise above the essential barbarism of the Mongols, and he had been able enough to discern that the Christian church could afford the aid he desired in taming his countrymen. It was only when Rome had failed lament- ably to meet his

advances that he fell back upon thie lamas and their trumpery as, after a fashion, civilizing instruments.

The brothers arrived at Acre in April 1269. They learned that Clement IV. had died the year before, and no new pope had yet been chosen. So they went home to Venice, where they found that Nicolo's wife was dead, but had left a son Marco, now a fine lad of fifteen.

The papal interregnum was the longest that had been known, at least since the dark ages. After the Polos had spent two years at home there was still no pope; and the brothers resolved on starting again for the East, taking young Mark with them. At Acre they took counsel with an eminent churchman, Tedaldo, archdeacon of Liége, and took from him letters to authenticate the causes that had

hindered their mission. They had not yet left Ayas on the Cilician coast (then one of the chief points for the arrival and departure of the land-trade of Asia), when news overtook them that a pope had been elected in the person of their friend Archdeacon Tedaldo. They hastened back to Acre, and at last were able to execute Kublai's commission and to obtain a papal reply. But, instead of the hundred teachers asked for by the Great Khan, the new pope (styled Gregory X.) could supply but two Domini- cans; and these lost heart and turned back, when they had barely taken the first step of their journey.

The second start from Acre must have taken place about November 1271; and from a careful consideration of the indications and succession of chapters in Marco Polo's book, it would seem that the party proceeded from Ayas to Sivas, and then by Mardin, Mosul, and Baghdad to Hormuz at the mouth of the Persian Gulf (see ORMUs), with the purpose of going on to China by sea; but that, some obstacle having interfered which compelled them to abandon this plan, they returned northward through Persia. Traversing Kerman and Khorasan they went on to Balkh and Badakhshan, in which last country—an Oriental Switzerland, as it has been called—they were long detained by the illness of young Marco. In a passage touching on the charming climate of the hills of Badakh- shan, Marco breaks into an

enthusiasm which he rarely betrays, but which is easily understood by those who have known what it is, with fever in the blood, to escape to the exhilarating air and fragrant pine-groves of the Himalaya. They then ascended tle upper Oxus through Wakhan to the plateau of Pamir (a name first heard in Marco's book). Those regions, so attractive to geo- graphers, were never described again by any European traveller till the spirited expedition in 1838 of that excellent officer the late Lieutenant John Wood of the Indian navy, whose narrative abounds in the happiest incidental illustration of Marco Polo's chapters. Crossing the Pamir highlands, the travellers descended upon Kash- gar, whence they proceeded by Yarkand to Khotan. These are regions which remained almost absolutely closed to our knowledge till within the last twenty years, when the temporary overthrow of the Chinese power, and the enterprise of travellers like the late Mr Johnson and Mr Robert Shaw, followed by the missions of Sir Douglas Forsyth and his companions, and of Mr Ney Elias, again made them known.

From Khotan they passed on to the vicinity of Lake Lop (or Lob), reached still more recently, for the first time since Marco Polo's journey, by the indefatigable Russian officer Prejevalsky, in 1871. Thence the great desert of Gobi was crossed to Tangut, as the region at the extreme north-west of China, both within and without the Wall, was then called.

In his account of the passage of the Gobi, or desert of Lop, as he calls it, Polo gives some description of the terrors with which the suggestions of solitude and desolation have peopled such tracts in most parts of the world, a descrip- tion which reproduces with singular identity that of the Chinese pilgrim Hwen T'sane (g.v.), in passing the same desert in the contrary direction six hundred years before.

The Venetians, in their further journey, were met and welcomed by the Great Khan's people, and at last reached his presence at Shangtu, in the spring of 1275. Kublai received them with great cordiality, and took kindly to young Mark, by this time about one and twenty years of age. The 'young bachelor," as the book calls him, applied himself diligently to the acquisition of the divers languages and written characters chiefly in use among the multifarious nationalities included in the khan's court and administration; and Kublai, seeing that he was both

clever and discreet, soon began to employ him in the public service. M. Pauthier, his most recent French editor, has found in the Chinese annals a record that in the year 1277 a certain Polo was nominated as a second- class commissioner or agent attached to the imperial council, a passage which we may without scruple apply to the young Venetian. ; .

His first public mission was one which carried him through the provinces of Shansi, Shensi, and Szechuen, and the wild country on the coast of Tibet, to the remote province of Yunnan, called by the Mongols Kardjang, and into northern Burmah (Mien). Marco, during his stay at court, had observed the khan's delight in hearing of strange countries, of their manners, marvels, and oddities, and had heard his frank expressions of disgust at the stupidity of envoys and commissioners who could tell of nothing but their official business. And he took care to store his memory or his note-book with all curious facts that were likely to interest Kublai, and these, on his return to court, he related with vivacity. This first journey led him through a country which twenty years ago was an almost absolute terra incognita,—though within that time we have learned much regarding it through the journeys of Cooper, Garnier, Richthofen, Gill, Baber, and others. In this region there existed, and there still exists, in the deep valleys of the great rivers, and in the alpine regions which border them, a vast ethnological garden, as it were, of tribes of very various origin, and in every stage of semi-civilization or barbarism ; and these afforded many strange products and eccentric traits of manners to entertain the emperor.

Marco rose rapidly in favour, and was often again employed on distant missions, as well as in domestic administration ; but we are able to gather but few details of his employment. At one time we know that he held for three years the government of the great city of Yang- chow ; on another occasion we find him visiting Kara- korunm on the north of the Gobi, the former residence of the Great Khans ; again in Champa, or southern Cochin- China; and, once more, on a mission to the southern states of India. We are not informed whether his father and uncle shared in such employments, though they are specially mentioned as having rendered material service to the khan, in forwarding the capture of the city of Siang-

yang-foo (on the Han river) during the war against southern China, by the construction of powerful artillery engines— a story, however, perplexed by chronological difficulties, which here we must pass over.

In any case the elder Polos were gathering wealth, which they longed to carry back to their home in the lagoons, and after their long exile they began to dread what might follow old Kublai's death. The khan, how- ever, was deaf to all suggestions of departure; and but for a happy chance we should have lost our medieval Herodotus.

Arghun, khan of Persia, the grandson of Kublai's brother Hulagu, lost in 1286 his favourite wife, Bolgana (Bulughén or "Sable") by name. Her dying injunction was that her place should be filled only by a lady of her own Mongol tribe. Ambassadors were despatched to the court of Khanbaligh to obtain such a bride. The message was courteously received, and the choice fell on the lady Cocachin (Kukachim), a maiden of seventeen, "moult bele dame et avenant." The overland road from Peking to Tabriz was not only of portentous length for so delicate a charge, but was then imperilled by war; so the envoys of Arghun proposed to return by sea. Having made acquaintance with the Venetians, and eager to profit by their experience, especially by that of Marco, who had just returned from his mission to India, they begged the khan

as a favour to send the Franks in their company. He con- sented with reluctance, but fitted out the party nobly for the voyage, charging them with friendly messages to the potentates of Christendom, including the king of England. They appear to have sailed from the port of Chwan-chow (or CHINCHEW, g.v.) in Fuhkien, which was then the great haven of foreign trade, and was known to Western strangers as Zaitun, in the beginning of 1292. The voyage was an ill-starred one, involving long detention on the coast of Sumatra, and in the south of India; and two years or more passed before they arrived at their destination in Persia. Two out of the three envoys, and a vast propor- tion of their suite perished by the way; but the three hardier Venetians survived all perils, and so did the young lady, who had come to look on them with filial regard. It proved that Arghun Khan had been dead even before they quitted China ; his brother reigned in his

stead ; and his son Ghazan succeeded to the lady's hand. She took leave of the kindly Venetians, not without tears; they went on to Tabriz, and after a long delay there departed for Venice, which they seem to have reached about the end of 1295.

The first biographer of Marco Polo was the famous geographical collector John Baptist Ramusio, who wrote more than two centuries after the traveller's death. Facts and dates sometimes contradict his statements, but his story is told with great life and picturesqueness, and we need not hesitate to accept, at least asa genuine tradition, a romantic story, too long for repetition here, of the arrival of the Polos at their family mansion in the parish of St John Chrysostom, of their appearance at its door in worn and outlandish garb, of the scornful denial of their identity, and of the shrewd stratagem by which they secured acknowledgment from the society of Venice.

Some years pass ere we hear more of Marco Polo ; and it is then in a militant capacity.

Jealousies, always too characteristic of Italian communi- ties, were in the case of Venice and Genoa sharpened by direct commercial rivalry, and had been growing in bitter- ness throughout the 13th century. In 1298 the Genoese made preparations on a great scale to strike a blow at their rivals on their own ground, and a powerful fleet of galleys, under Lamba Doria as admiral, made straight fer the Adriatic. Venice, on hearing of the Genoese arma- ment, hastily equipped a fleet still more numerous, and placed it under the command of Andrea Dandolo. The crew of a Venetian galley at this time amounted, all told, to 250 men, under a comito or master, but besides this

- officer each galley carried a sopracomito or gentleman com-

mander, who was usually a noble. On one of the galleys of Dandolo's fleet went Marco Polo in this last capacity.

The hostile fleets met before the island of Curzola on the 6th September, and engaged next morning. The battle ended in a complete victory to Genoa, the details of which may still be read, inscribed on the facade of the

church of St Matthew in that city. Sixty-six Venetian galleys were burnt in the Bay of Curzola, and eighteen were carried to Genoa, with 7000 prisoners, one of whom was Marco Polo. The captivity was of less than a year's duration ; for by the mediation of Milan peace was made, on honourable terms for both republics, by July 1299; and Marco Polo was probably restored to his family during that or the following month.

But his captivity was memorable as being the means of bringing about the record of his remarkable experiences in the East. Up to this time he had doubtless often related his stories of Cathay among his friends ; and from these stories indeed, and the frequent employment in them (as it would seem) of a numerical expression unfamiliar in those days, he had acquired the nickname of J/arco

Petree —

Million. Yet it would seem that he had committed nothing to writing.

The narratives not only of Marco Polo but of several other famous medizeval travellers (e.g., Ibn Batuta, Friar Odoric, Nieolo Conti) seem to have been extorted from them by a kind of pressure, and committed to paper by other hands. This indicates indeed how little the literary ambition which besets so many modern travellers weighed with the class in those days. It is also perhaps an example of that intense dislike to the use of pen and ink which still prevails among ordinary respectable folk on the shores of the Mediterranean.

But, in the prison of Genoa, Marco Polo fell in with a certain person of writing propensities, Rusticiano or Rustichello of Pisa, who also was a captive of the Genoese. His name is known otherwise to literary antiquaries as that of a respectable kind of literary hack, who abridged and recast several of the French romances of the Arthurian cycle which were then in fashion. He it was, apparently, who persuaded Marco Polo to defer no longer the com- mittal to paper of his wonderful experiences. In any case it was he who wrote down these experiences at Marco's dictation ; and he is

the man therefore to whom we owe the existence of this record, and possibly the preservation even of the traveller's name and memory.

We learn but little of Marco Polo's personal or family history after this captivity ; but we know that at his death he left a wife, Donata by name (perhaps of the family of Loredano, but this is uncertain), and three daughters, Fantina and Bellela married, the former to Marco Braga- dino, and Moreta then a spinster, but married at a later date to Ranuzzo Dolfino. One last glimpse of the traveller is gathered from his will, which is treasured in the library of St Mark's. On the 9th January 1324 the traveller, now in his seventieth year, and sinking day by day under bodily infirmity, sent for a neighbouring priest and notary to make his testament. We do not know the exact time of his death, but it fell almost certainly within the year 1324, for we know from a scanty series of documents, commencing in June 1325, that he had at the latter date been some time dead. He was buried in accordance with his will, in the church of St Lorenzo, where the family burying-place was marked by a sarcophagus, erected by his filial care for his father Nicolo, which existed till near the end of the 16th century. On the renewal of the church in 1592 this seems to have been cast aside and lost.

The copious archives of Venice have yielded up a few traces of our traveller. Besides his own will just alluded to, there are in the library the wills of his uncle Marco and of his younger brother Maffeo; a few legal documents connected with the house property in St John Chrysostom, and other papers of similar character ; and two or three entries in the record of the Maggior Consiglio. We have mentioned the sobriquet of Marco Millioni which he got from his young townsmen. Ramusio tells us that he had himself noted the use of this name in the public books of the commonwealth, and this statement has been verified of late years in one of those entries in the books of the Great Council (dated 10th April 1305), which records as one of the securities in a certain case the "Nobilis vir MJarchus Paulo Minox." It is alleged that long after the traveller's death there was always in the Venetian masques one individual who assumed the character of Marco Millioni, and told Munchausen-like stories to divert the vulgar. Such, if this be true, was the honour of our great man in his own country. One curious parchment among those preserved is the record of the

judgment of the court of requests (Curia Petitionum) upon a suit brought by the

been an agent of his, to recover the value of a certain quantity of musk for which Girardo had not accounted. Another curious document brought to light within the last few years is a catalogue of certain curiosities and valuables which were collected in the house of the unhappy Marino Faliero, and this catalogue comprises several objects that Marco Polo had given to one of the Faliero family. Among these are two which would have been of matchless interest had they survived, viz—‘“Unum anulum con inscriptione que dicit Cuibile Can Marco Polo, et unum torques cum multis animalibus Tartarorum sculptis que res donum dedit predictus Marcus quidam (cuidam) Fale- trorum.”

The most tangible record of Polo’s memory in Venice is a portion of the Ca’ Polo—the mansion (there is every reason to believe) where the three travellers, after their absence of a quarter century, were denied entrance. The court in which it stands was known in Ramusio’s time as the Corte del Millioni, and now is called Corte Sabbionera. That which remains of the ancient edifice is a passage with a decorated archway of Italo-Byzantine character per- taining to the 13th century. With this exception, what was probably the actual site of the mansion is now occupied by the Malibran theatre.

No genuine portrait of Marco Polo exists. There is a medallion portrait on the wall of the Sala dello Scudo in the ducal palace, which has become a kind of type; but it is a work of imagination no older than 1761. The oldest professed portrait is one in the gallery of Monsignor Badia at Rome, which is inscribed Afarcus Polus Venetus Totius Orbis et Indie Peregrator Primus. It is a good picture, but evidently of the 16th century at earliest, and the figure is of the character of that time. The Europeans at Canton have attached the name of Marco Polo toa figure in a Buddhist temple there containing a gallery of “Arhans” or Buddhist saints, and popularly known as the “temple of the five hundred gods.” There is a copy of this at Venice, which the Venetian municipality obtained on the occasion of the Geographical Congress there in 1881. But the whole notion was a groundless fancy.

The book indited by Rusticiano the Pisan, which has preserved Marco Polo's fame, consists essentially of two parts. The first, or pro- logue, as it is termed, is the only part unfortunately which consists of aetual personal narrative. It relates in a most interesting, though too brief, fashion the circumstances which led the two elder Polos to the khan's court, with those of their second journey accompanied by Marco, and of the return to the West by the Indian seas and Persia. The second and staple part of the book consists of a long series of chapters of very unequal length and unsystematic structure, descriptive of the different states and provinces of Asia, with occasional notices of their sights and products, of curious manners and remarkable events, and especially regarding the emperor Kublai, his court, wars, and administration. A series of chapters near the close treats in a wordy and monotonous manner of sundry wars that took place between various branches of the house of Jenghiz in the latter half of the 13th century. This last series is either omitted or greatly curtailed in all the MS. copies and versions except one.

It was long a doubtful question in what language the work was originally written. That this had been some dialect of Italian was a natural presumption, and a contemporary statement could be alleged in its favour. But there is now no doubt that the original was French. This was first indicated by Count Baldelli-Boni, who published an elaborate edition of two of the Italian texts at Florence in 1827, and who found in the oldest of these indisputable signs that it was a translation fromthe French. The arguinent has since becn followed up by others ; and a manuscript in rude and peculiar French, belonging to the National Library of Paris, which was printed by the Société de Géographie in 1824, has been demon- strated (as we need not hesitate to say) to be either the original or a very close transcript of the original dictation. A variety of its characteristics are strikingly indicative of the unrevised product of dictation,'and are such as would necessarily have disappeared either in a translation or in a revised copy. Many illustrations could be adduced of the fact that the use of French was not a eircumstance of a surprising or unusual nature ; for the language had at that

" Nobilis Vir Marcus Polo" against Paulo Girardo, who had | time, in some points of view, even a wider diffusion than at pre-

sent, and examples of its literary employment by writers who were not Frenchmen are very numerous. It is superfluous to allege instances here, when we observe that Rusticiano himself, tlic scribe of the narrative, was a compiler of French romances. ane

Some eighty MSS. of the book are known, and their texts exhibit considerable differences. These fall under four principal types. Of these type i. is found completely only in that old French codex which has been mentioned. ‘Type ii. is shown by several valuable MSS. in purer French, the best of which formed the basis of the edition prepared by the late M. Pauthierin 1865. It exhibits a text pruned and revised froni the rude original, but without any exactness, though perhaps under some general direction by Marco Polo himself, for an inscription prefixed to one of the MSS. records the presentation of a copy by the traveller himself to the Seigneur Thibault de Cepoy, a distinguished Frenchman known to history, at Venice in the year 1306. Type iii. is that of a Latin version prepared in Marco Polo’s lifetime, though without any sign of his cognizance, by Francesco Pipino, a Dominican of Bologna, and translated froman Italian copy. In this, condensation and curtail- ment are earried a good deal further than in type ii. Some of the forms under which this type appears curiously illustrate the effects of absence of effective publication, not only before the invention of the press, but in its early days. Thus the Latin version published by Gryneus at Basel in the Novus Orbis (1532) is different in its language from Pipino’s, and yet is clearly traceable to that as its foundation. In fact it is a retranslation into Latin from some version of Pipino (Marsden thinks the Portuguese printed one of 1502). Itintroduces also changes of its own, and is quite worthless as a text; and it is curious that Andreas Miiller, who in the 17th century took much trouble with editing Polo according to his lights, should have unfortunately chosen as his text this fifth-hand version. It may be added that the French editions published in the middle of the 16th century were translations from Grynzus’s Latin. Hence they complete this curious and vicious circle of translation —French, Italian, Pipino’s Latin, Portuguese, Gryneus’s Latin, French.

The fourth type of text deviates largely from those already men- tioned ; its history and true character are involved in obscurity. It is only represented by the Italian version prepared for the press by G. B. Ramusio, with most intcresting preliniinary dissertations, and published at Venice two years after his death, in the second volume of the Navigationi e Viaggi. Its peculiarities are great. Ramusio seems to imply that he made some use of Pipino's Latin, and various passages confirm this. But many new circumstances, and anecdotes occurring in no other copy, are introduced ; many names assume a new shape ; the whole style is more copious and literary in character than that of any other version. Whilst a few of the changes and interpolations seem to carry us further from the truth, others contain facts of Asiatic nature or history, as well as of Polo's alleged experiences, which it is extremely difficult to ascribe to any hand but the travcller's own.

We recognize to a certain extent tampering with the text, as in cases where the proper names used by Polo have been identified, aud more modern forms substituted. In some other cases the editorial spirit has been more meddlesome and has gone astray. Thus the age of young Marco has been altered to correspond with a date which is itself erroneous. Ormus is described as an island, contrary to the old texts, and to the facts of its position in Polo's time. In speaking of the oil-springs of Caucasus the phrase " camel- loads" has becn substituted for "ship-loads," in ignorance that the site was Baku on the Caspian. :

But on the other hand there are a number of new circumstances certainly genuine, which ean hardly be ascribed to any one but Polo himself. We will quote one only. Thisis the account which Ramusio's version gives of the oppressions exercised by Kublai's Mohammedan ministcr Ahmed, telling how the Cathayans rose agaiust him and murdered him, with the addition that Messer Marco was on the spot when all this happened. Not only is the whole story in substantial accordance with the Chinese annals, even to the name of the chief conspirator (Vanchu in Ramusio, lVang- chew in the Chinese records), but the annals also tell of the courageous frankness of " Polo, assessor of the privy council," in opening Kublai's eyes to the iniquities of his agent.

To sum up, we can hardly doubt that we have, imbedded in the text of this most interesting edition of Ramusio's, the supplemen- tary recollections of the traveller, noted down at a later period of his life, but perplexed by translation and retranslation and editorial mistakes. The most important desideratum still remaining in reference to Polo's book is the recovery of the original from which Ramusio derived the passages peculiar to his edition.

That Marco Polo has been so universally recognized as the prince of medixval travellers is due rather to the width of his experience, the vast compass of his journeys, and the romantic nature of his personal history than to transcendent superiority. of character or capacity. Enthusiastic biographers, beginning with Ramusio, have placed him on the same platform with Columbus. But he has left no trace of the genius and lofty enthusiasm, the ardent and

Prone

justified previsions, which mark the great admiral as one of the lights of the human race. Itis a juster praise that the spur which his book eventually gave to geographical studies, aud the beacons which it hung out at the eastern extremities of the earth, helped to guide the aims, though hardly to kindle the fire of the greater son of the rival republic. His work was at lcast a link in the providential chain whieh at last dragged the New World to light.

But Polo also was the first traveller to trace a route across the whole longitude of Asia, naming and describing kingdom after kingdom, which hc had seen with his own eyes ; the first to speak of the new and brilliant court which had been established at Peking ; the first to reveal China in all its wealth and vastness, and to tell us of the nations on its borders, with all their eccentricities of manners and worship ; the first to tell more of Tibet than its name, to speak of Burmah, of Laos, of Siam, of Cochin-China, of Japan, of Java, of Sumatra, and of other islands of the Great 'Archipelago, that muscum of beauty and marvels, of Nicobar and Andainan Islands with their naked savages, of Ceylon and its sacred peak, of India, not as a dream-land of fables, but as a country seen and partially explored ; the first in medieval times to give any distinct account of the secluded Christian empire of Abyssinia, and of the semi-Christian island of Socotra, and to

speak, however dimly, of Zanzibar, and of the vast and distant Madagascar ; whilst he carries us also to the remotely opposite region of Siberia and the Arctic shores, to speak of dog-sledges, white bears, and reindeer-riding Tunguses. That all this rich catalogue of discoveries (as they may fitly be called) should belong to the revelation of one man and one book is ample ground enough to justify a very high place in the roll of fame.

Indeed it is remarkable in how large a proportion of the Old World modern travellers and explorers have been but developing what Marco Polo indicated in outline,—it might be said, without serious hyperbole, only travelling in his footsteps, most certainly illustrating his geographical notices. At the moment when these lines are written a British mission is starting to survey for political reasons a tract upon the Oxus; Marco Polo traversed this tract. For twenty years Russian and English explorers have been trying to solve the problem of the Pamir watershed ; Marco Polo explored it. Till within the last quarter century the cities of eastern Turkestan, such as Kashgar, Yarkand, and Khotan, were known only from the compilation of Oriental fragments ; Marco had visited them all. Within a shorter period dense darkness hung over the tracts between western China and Upper Burmah ; these also had been traversed by Marco Polo, France is now seattering the brands of war in Tong-king, in Fuhkien, and in Madagascar ; all these were within Marco Polo's knowledge and find mention in his book. And how vast an area has he described from personal knowledge which remains outside of the fields that we have indicated! Readers of the book would welcome a little more of egotistical detail. Imperson- ality is carried to excess ; and we are often driven to discern only by indirect and doubtful induction whether he is speaking of places from personal knowledge or from hearsay. In truth, though there are delightful exceptions, and though nearly every part of the book suggests interesting questions, a desperate meagreness and baldness does affect considerable parts of the narrative. In fact his work reminds us sometimes of his own description of Khorasan— " On chevauche par beaus plains et belles costieres, 14 ou ila moult beaus herbages et bonne pasture et frais assez … et aucune fois y treuve l'en un desert de soixante milles ou de mains, esquel desers ne treuve l'en point d'eauc ; mais la convient porter o lui!"

The diffusion of the book was hardly so rapid as has been some- times alleged. Itis true that we know from Gilles Mallet's catalogue of the books collected in the Louvre by Charles V., dating c. 1370-75, that no less than five copies of Marco Polo's work were then in the collection; but on the other hand the number spread over Europe of MSS. and early printed editions of Mandeville, with his lying wonders, indicates a much greater popularity. Dante, who lived twenty-three years after the book was dictated, and who touches so many things in the seen and unscen worlds, never alludes to Polo, nor, we believe, to anything that can be connected with him ; nor can any tracc of Polo be discovered in the book of his contemporary Marino Sanudo the elder, though this worthy is well acquainted with the work, later by some years, of Hayton the Armenian, and though many of the subjects on which he writes in his own book (De Secretis Fidelium Crueis') challenge a reference to Polo's experiences. Perhaps indeed the most notable circumstance bearing in the same direction is the fact that the author of Mande- ville, whocver he really was, and who plundered right and left, never plunders Polo, a thing only to be accounted for by his being ignorant of Polo's existence. The only literary work we know of belonging to the 14th century which shows a thorough acquaint- ance with Polo's book is the poetical romance of Baudouin de Sebourg, which borrows themes from it largely.

Marco Polo contributed so vast au amount of new facts to the knowledge of the earth's surface, that one might have expected his

1 Printed by Bongars in the collection called Gesta Dei per Francos, 1611.

book to have a sudden effeet upon geography. But no such result occurred for a long time. Doubtless several causes contributed to this, of which the unreal character attributed to the book asa collection of romantic marvels, rather than of geographical and

historical] facts, may have been one,—a view that the diffusion of |

Mandeville's fictions, far outdoing Polo's facts in marvel, perhaps tended to corroborate, whilst supplanting the latter in popularity. But the essential

causes were the imperfect nature of publication ;

the traditional character of the prevailing geography, which |

hampered the propagation of true statements; and the entire absence of scientific principle in what did pass for geography, so that there was no organ competent to the assimilation of so huge a mass of new knowledge.

The late Sir Francis Palgrave wrote a book called The Merehant and the Friar, in which it is feigned that Marco Polo comes to England, and becomes acquainted with Roger Bacon. Had Roger Bacon indeed known either the traveller or his book, we cannot doubt, from the good use he makes, in his Opus Majus, of William of Rubruk, that he would have turned the facts to good account.

centuries dealt was, in its outline, that handed down by traditions of the craft, as sanctioned by some fathers of the church, such as Orosius and Isidore, and sprinkled with a combination of classical and medieval legends. Almost universally the earth's surface fills a circular disk, rounded by the ocean,—a fashion that already was ridiculed by Herodotus (iv. 36), as it was in a later generation by Aristotle (Jfeteorol., ii, 5). This was the most persistent and the most obstructive dogma of the false geography. The central point of the circle is occupied by Jerusalem, because it was found written in Ezekiel :—" Hee dicit Dominus Deus, Ista est Jerusalem, in medio gentinm posui eam, et in circuitn ejus terras,'"—supposed to be corroborated by the Psalmist's expression, regarded as prophetic of our Lord's passion—" Deus autem Rex noster ante seecula operatus est salutein in medio terre" (Ps. Ixxiv. 12). Paradise occupied the extreme east, because it was found in Genesis that the Lord planted a garden eastward in Eden. Gog and Magog were set in the far north or north-east because it was again said in Ezekiel; " Ecce ago super te Gog principem capitis Mosoch et Thubal. . . et

ascendere te faciam de lateribus aquilonis." This last legend of Gog | and Magog, shut up by a mountain-barrier, plays a prominent part | in the romantic history of Alexander, which had such enormous |

currency in those ages, and attracted especial attention in the 13th

century, owing to the general identification of the Tartar hordes |

with those impnre nations whom the hero had shut up. It is not wonderful that the Tartar irruption into the West, heard of at first with as much astonishment as it would produce now, was connected with this old belief.

The loose and scanty nomenclature of the cosmography was mainly borrowed from Pliny and Mela, through such fathers as we have named; whilst vacant spaces were occupied by Amazons, Arimaspians, and the realm of Prester John. A favourite representa- tion of the inhabited earth was a great T within an O (sec MAP).

Such sehemces of the world had no place for the new knowledge. The first genuine attempt at a geographical compilation absolutely free from the traditional idola seems to be that in the Portulano Mediceo at Florence. In this, some slight use seems to be made of Polo. Buta far more important work is one of the next generation, the cclebrated Catalan map of 1375 iu the Paris library. This also is an honest endeavour on a large scale to represent the known world on the basis of collected facts, casting aside all theories, pseudo-scientific and pseudo-theological ; and a very remarkable work it is. In this work Marco Polo’s influence on maps is perhaps seen to the greatest advantage. As regards Central and Further Asia, and partially as regards India, his book is the basis of the map. His names are often much perverted, and it is not always easy to nnderstand the view that the compiler took of his itineraries. Still we have Cathay admirably placed in the true position of China, as a great empire filling the south-east of Asia. The trans-Gangetic

peninsula is absent, but that of India proper is, for the first time | in the history of geography, represented with a fair approximation | We really seem to see in this map |

to correct form and position. something like the idea of Asia that the traveller himself would have presented, had he bequeathed us a map.

In the following age we find more frequent indications that Polo’s book was diffused and read. And now that the spirit of discovery was beginning to stir, the work was regarded in a juster light as a book of facts, and not as a

mcre Romman du Grant Kaan. But the age produced new supplies of information in greater abundance than the knowledge c«f geographers was preparcd to digest or co-ordinate ; and, owing partly to this, and partly to his unhappy reversion to the fancy of a circnlar disk, the map of Fra Mauro (1459), one of the greatest map-making enterprises in history, and the result of immense labour in the collection of facts and the endeavour to combine them, really gives a much less accurate idea of Asia than the Carta Catalana.

When M. Libri, in his Hist. des Seienees Mathématiques, speaks of Columbus as ‘‘ jealous of Polo’s laurels,” he speaks yashly.

Tn fact |

Po tt 409

Columbus knew of Polo’s revelations only at second-hand, from the letters of the Florentine Paolo Toscanelli and the like ; we cannot find that he ever refers to Polo by name. Though, to the day of his death, Columbns was full of imaginations about Zipangu (Japan) and the land of the Great Khan, as being in immediate proximity to his discoveries, these were bnt accidents of his great theory, It was his intimate conviction of the absolute smallness of the earth, of the vast extension of Asia eastward, and of the consequent narrowness of the western ocean on which his life’s project was based.

When, soon after the discovery of the New World, attempts were made to combine the new and old knowledge, the results were unhappy. ‘The earliest of such combinations tried to realize the ideas of Columbus regarding the identity of his discoveries with the Great Khan’s dominions ; but even after America had vindicated its independent existence, and the new knowledge of the Portuguese had introduced China where the Catalan map had presented Cathay, the latter country, with the whole of Polo’s nomenclature, was shunted to the north, forming a separate system. Henceforward

| the inflnence of Polo’s work on maps was simply injurious ; and But the world with which the map makers of the 13th and 14th |

when to his names was added a sprinkling of Ptolemy's, as was usual throughout the 16th century, the result was a hotch-potch conveying no approximation to any representation of facts.

Gradually the contributions of Ptolemy and Polo are used more sparingly, but in Sanson's map (1659) a new clement of confnsion appears in numerous features derived from the "Nubian Geo- grapher," z.e., Edrisi.

It is needless to follow the mattcr further. With the increased knowledge of northern Asia from the Russian side, and of China from the maps of Martini, followed by the later Jesuit surveys, and with the real science brought to bear on Asiatic geography by such men as De VIsle and D'Anville, mere traditional nomenclature gradually disappeared ; and the task which Polo has provided for the geographers of later days has been chiefly that of determining the true localities which his book describes under obsolcte or corrupted names.

Before concluding, a word or two seems necessary on the subject of the alleged introduction of important inventions into Europe by Marco Polo. Assertions or surmises of this kind have been made in regard to the mariner's compass, to gunpowder, and to printing. Though the old assertions as to the first two are still occasionally repeated in books of popular character, no one who has paid any attention to the subject now believes Marco can have had anything to do with their introduction. But there is no doubt that the resemblance of early European block-books to those of China is in some respects so striking that it seems clearly to indicate the derivation of the art from that country. There is, however, not the slightest reason for connecting this introduction with the name of Polo. His fame has so overshadowed later travellers that the fact has been generally overlooked that for some years in the 14th century not only were missions of the Roman church established in the chief cities of eastern China, but a regular overland trade | was carried on between Italy and China, by way of Tana (Azoff), Astrakhan, Otrar, Kamul (Hami), and Kan-chow. Many a traveller other than Marco Polo might have brought home the block-books,

-and some might have witnessed the process of making them. This

is the less to be ascribed to Polo, because he so curiously oiits to speak of the process of printing, when, in describing the block- printed paper-money of China, his subject seems absolutely to challenge a description of the art. (Eee)

POLOTSK, a district town of the government of Vitebsk, at the confluence of the Polota with the Dwina (Diina), 5 miles from the Smolensk and Riga Railway, is one of the oldest towns of Russia. The continuous wars, however,

| of which, owing to its position on the line of communica-

tion between central Russia and the west, it was for many centuries the scene, have allowed almost nothing of its remarkable antiquities to remain. The “upper castle” which stood at the confluence of the rivers and had a stone-wall with seven towers, is now in ruins, as also is the “lower castle,” formerly enclosed with strong walls and connected with the upper bya bridge. The numerous monasteries and convents also have disappeared. The cathedral of St Sophia in the upper castle, built in the 12th century, and successively used as a place of worship by the Greek, the Catholic, and the “ United” Churches, fell to ruins in the 18th century, when the “United” bishop Grebnicki substituted a modern structure. ‘The town is now of trifling importance, and the population (12,200 in 1880, against 13,800 in 1865) is decreasing. Upwards of two-thirds of the inhabitants are Jews ; the remainder have belonged mostly to the Greek Church since XIX. — 52

1839, when they were compelled to abandon the Union. Flax, linseed, corn, and timber are the leading articles of the commerce of the town.

Polotesk or Poltesk is mentioned in 862 as onc of the towns given by Rurik to his men, together with Byelo-ozero and Rostoff. In 980 it had a prince of its own, Rogvolod, whose daughter is the subject of many legends. It remained an independent principality

until the 12th century, resisting the repeated attacks of the princes of Kieff; those of Pskoff, Lithuania, and the Livonian knights, however, proved more

powerful, and it fell under Lithuanian rule in the following ecntury. About 1385 its independence was de- stroyed by the Lithuanian prince Witowt. It was five times besieged by Moscow in 1500-18, and was taken by John the Terrible in 1563. Recaptured by Stephen Batory sixtcen years later, it beeame Polish by the treaty of 1582. It was then a populous city, which, enjoying the privileges of “ Magdeburg law

from 1498, carried on an active commerce, and covered a large area.

destroyed 15,000. The castles, the town, and its walls were burned in 1607 and 1642. The Russians continued their attacks, burning and plundcring the town, and twice taking possession of it for a few years, in 16338 and 1705. It was not definitively annexed, how- ever, to Russia until 1772, after the first dismemberment of Poland. In 1812 its inhabitants resisted the French invasion, and the town was partially destroyed.

POLTAVA, a government of south-western Russia, bounded by Tchernigoff on the N., Kharkoff on the E., Ekaterinoslaff and Kherson on the S., and Kieff on the W., and having an area of 19,265 square miles. Its surface is an undulating plain from 500 to 600 feet above sea-level, with a few elevations reaching 670 feet in the north, and gently sloping to the south-west, where its range is between 300 and 400 feet. Owing to the excavations of the rivers, their banks, especially those on the right, have the aspect of hilly tracts, while low plains stretch to the left. Low-lying districts with some marshes and sandy tracts are met with in the broad valley of the Dnieper, which skirts the province on the south-west. Almost the whole of the surface is covered with Tertiary deposits ; chalk appears in the north-east, at the bottom of deeper ravines. The government touches the granitic region of the Dnieper only in the south, below Krementchug. Lime- stone with dolerite veins occurs in the isolated hill of Isatchek, which rises above the marshes of the Sula. The whole is covered with a layer, 20 to 60 feet thick, of boulder clay, which, again, is often covered with a thick sheet of loess. Sandstone (sometimes suitable for grind- stones) and limestone are quarried, and a few layers of gypsum and peat bog are also known within the govern- ment. The soil is on the whole very fertile, with the exception of some sandy tracts. Poltava is watered by the numerous tributaries of the Dnieper, which flows along its border, navigable throughout. Deep sand

beds inter- sected with numberless ravines and old arms of the river stretch along the left bank, where accordingly the settle- ments are but few. It is joined by the Sula, the Psiol, the Vorskla, the Orel, the Trubezh, and several other tributaries, none of them navigable, although their courses vary from 150 to 270 miles in length. Even those which used to be navigated within the historical period, such as Trubezh and Supoy, are now drying up, while the others are being partially transformed into marshes. Only 5 per cent. of the total area is under wood; timber, wooden wares, and pitch are imported.

_ The population in 1881 reached 2,418,870, of whom 217,800 lived in towns. The great majority are Little Russians, there being only 20,000 Great Russians, less than 1000 White Russians some 2000 Poles, and 1500 Germans. In 1865 the Jews were estimated at 40,000. Agriculture is the chicf pursuit, there being 7,451,000 aeres (60 pcr cent. of the total arca) of arable land, and the average yield of the years 1870-77 being 6,302,000 quarters of corn and 703,200 quarters of potatoes. The erops chiefly grown are wheat, tye, and oats; the sunflower is largely cultivated especially for oil, and the culture of tobacco, always important, has recently made a very grcat advance, uow yielding about

Pestilences and conflagrations were its ruin; the plaguc of | 1566 wrought great havoc among its inhabitants, and that of 1600

200,000 ewts. Kitchen gardening, the culture of the plum, and the preparation of preserved fruits are also important branches of industry. At Lubory, where an apothccarics' garden is maintained by the crown, the collection and cultivation of medicinal plants is also a specialty. The main source of wealth in Poltava always has been, and still is, its cattle-brecding. In 1881 there were 209,000 horses, 882,000 cattle, 1,820,000 sheep (only 520,060 of these, as against 878,000 in 1862, being of finer brecds), 405,000 pigs, and 7000 goats. Black and grey sheepskins arc largely exported, as also is wool. Some of the wealthier landowners and many peasants now rear finer breeds of horses.

The aggregate value of the manufactures in 1879 was £1,112, 100, employing in their production 3755 hands; distilleries hold the leading

place (£717,500), after which come flour mills (£136,600), tobacco works (£79,700), machine-making (£35,700), tanneries (£27,700), saw-mills (£20,000), and sugar-works (£10,900). Wool is exported in a raw state, and the woollen manufactures amounted only to £5750. In the villages and towns several domestic trades are carricd on, such as the preparation of sheepskins, plain woollen cloth, leather, boots, and pottery.

The fair of Poltava is of great importauce for the whole woollen trade of Russia; leather, cattle, horses, coarse woollen cloth, skins, and various domestic wares are also cxchanged for manufactures imported from Great Russia. The value of merchandise brought to the fair reaches and sometimes exceeds 25,000,000 roubles. Several other fairs, the aggregate returns for which reach more than one-half of the above, are held at Romny (tobacco), Krementchug (timber, corn, tallow, and salt), and Kobelyaki (sheepskins). Corn is exported to a considerable extent to the west and to Odessa, as also saltpetre, spirits of wine, wool, tallow, skins, and plain woollen cloth. The navigation on the Dnieper is interfered with by want of water, and becomes active only in the south. The chief traffic is by railway.

The government is divided into fifteen districts, the chief towns of which are—Poltava (41,050 inhabitants), Gadyatch (9250), Khorol (5175), Kobelyaki (13,150), Konstantinograd (4320), Krementchng (46,620 with Krukoff), Lokhvitsa (9320), Lubny (9820), Mirgorod (7750), Pereyaslaff (13,350), Piryatin (5400), Priluki (13,100), Romny (12,310), Zolotonosha (7180), and Zyen- koff (8360). Glinsk (8250) and Gradijsk (7850) have also muni- cipal institutions, while several villages and towns (Sorotchintsy, Borispol, Smyeloye, Grufi, Ryeshetilovka, &c.) have from 6500 to 8000 inhabitants.

History.—At the dawn of Russian history the region now occupied by Poltava was inhabited by the Syeveryanes. As carly as 988 the Russians erccted several towns on the Sula and Trubezh for their protection against the Petchenegs and Polovtsy, who held the south-castern steppes. Population extended, and the towns Pereyaslaff, Lubny, Lukomy, Priluki, Piryatin, Romny, &c., begin to be mentioned in the 11th and 12th centuries. The Mongol invasion destroyed most of them, and for two centuries afterwards they totally disappear from Russian annals. About 1331 Gedimin

annexed the so-called “Syeversk towns” to Lithuania, and on the recognition of the union of Lithuania with Poland they were. included in the united kingdom along with the remainder of Little Russia. In 1476 a separate principality of Kieff under Polish rule and Polish institutions was formed out of Little Russia, and remained so until the rising of Bogdan Khmyelnitzkii in 1654. By the Andrusoff treaty, the left bank of the Dnieper being ceded to Russia, Poltava became part of the dominions of the Zaporogian hetman, and was divided into ‘‘ regiments,” six of which (Poltava, Pereyaslaff, Priluki, Gadyatch, Lubny, and Mirgorod) lay within the limits of the present government. They lost their independence in 1764, and serfdom was introduced in 1783, the Poltava region becoming part of the governments of Kieff and Ekaterinoslaff. The present government was instituted in 1802.

POLTAVA, capital of the above government, stands on the right bank of the Vorskla, 88 miles by rail to the west-south-west of Kharkoff. The town is built on a plateau which descends by steep slopes nearly on all sides; the buildings are separated by large yards and gardens. Several suburbs, inhabited by Cossacks, whose houses are buried amid gardens, and a German colony, surround the town. Water is scarce, and has to be brought a long distance, from the marshy Vorskla. The oldest buildings are the Krestovozdvijenskiy monas- tery, erected in 1650, and a wooden church visited by Peter I. after the battle of Poltava. There are two lyceums for boys and girls, a “realschule,” a military school for cadets, a theological seminary, and two girls’ colleges, besides Russian, German, and Jewish primary schools. The manufactures are insignificant (£58,000 in

1879) ; the principal are tobacco works (£27,500) and a

tannery (£14,400). The trade derives its importance from the four fairs that are held at Poltava. The chief of these, in July (noticed above), is visited by 30,000 to 40,000 people. In 1881 the population was 41,050.

Poltava is mentioned in Russian annals in 1174, under the name of Ltava, but does not again appear in history until 1430, when, together with Glinsk, it was given by Gedymin to the Tartar prince Leksada. Under Bogdan

Khmyelnitzkii it was the chief town of the Poltava “regiment.” Peter I. defcated Charles XII. in the immediate neighbourhood on June 27, 1709.

POLYENUS, a Macedonian, lived at Rome as a rhetorician and pleader in the 2d century. When the Parthian War (162-165 a.p.) broke out, Polyznus, too old to share in the campaign, dedicated to the emperors Marcus Antoninus and Lucius Verus a work, still extant, called Strategica or Strategemata, an historical collection of stratagems and maxims of strategy written in Greek and strung together in the form of anecdotes. It is not strictly confined to warlike stratagems, but includes also examples of wisdom, courage, and cunning drawn from civil and political life. The work is uncritically and negligently written, but is nevertheless important on account of the extracts it has preserved from histories now lost. It is divided into eight books, and originally contained nine hundred anecdotes, of which eight hundred and thirty-three are extant. Polyaenus intended to write a history of the Parthian War, but there is no evidence that he did so. His works on Macedonia, on Thebes, and on tactics (if

indeed this be not identical with the Strateyica) are lost.

His Strategics seems to have been highly esteemed by the Roman emperors and to have been handed down by them as a sort of heir- loom. From Rome it passed to Coustantinople ; at the end of the 9th century it was diligently studied by Leo VI., who himsclf wrote a work on tactics ; and in the middle of the 10th century Constantine Porphyrogenitus mentioned it as onc of the most valuable books in the imperial library. It was used by Stobus, Suidas, and the anonymous author of the work wep) amiotwy (Mythographi Greci, ed. Westermann, p. 823). It is arranged as follows :—bks. i., ii., ii., stratagems occurring in Greek history, from the mythical times of Dionysus and Hercules onward; bk. iv., stratagems of the Macedonian kings and successors of Alexander the Great; bk, v., stratagems occurring in the history of Sicily and the Greek islands and colonies ; bk. vi., stratagems of whole peoples (Carthaginians, Lacedemonians, Argives, &c.), togcther with some of individuals (Philopemen, Pyrrhus, Hannibal, &c.); bk. vii., stratagems of the barbarians (Medes, Persians, Egyptians, Thracians, Scythians, Celts) ; bk. viii., stratagems of Romans and women. This distri- bution is not, however, observed very strictly. Of the negligence or haste

with which the work was written there are many instances : e.g., he confounds Dionysius the elder and Dionysius the younger, Mithradates satrap of Artaxerxes and Mithradates the Great, Scipio the elder and Scipio the younger; he mixes up the stratagems of Cesar and Pompey; he brings into immediate connexion events which were totally distinct ; he narrates some events twice over, with variations according to the different authors from whom he draws. Though he usually abridges, he occasionally amplifies arbitrarily the narratives of his authorities. He never mentions his authorities, but amongst authors still extant he used Herodotus, Thucydides, Xenophon, Polybius, Diodorus, Plutarch, Frontinus, and Suetonius ; amongst authors of whom only fragments now remain he drew upon Ctesias, Ephorus, Timeus, Phylarchus, and perhaps Aristagoras, Dinon, Heraclides, Megasthencs, and Nicolaus Damascenus. His style is clear, but monotonous and inelegant. He heaps up participles and falls alternately into the opposite faults of accumulating and totally omitting conjunctions. A glaring instance of these faults is to be found in bk. iii. 9, 33. In the forms of his words he generally follows Attic usage.

His work was first printed in a Latin translation by Justus Vulteius (Basel, 1549); the Greek text wus first edited by Casaubon (Leyden, 1589), but mainly from a very inferior MS. Korais in his edition (Paris, 1809) eorrected the text in many plaees. The best edition is that of Wélfflin (Teubner, 1860), whose preface may be consulted with advantage.

POLYANTHUS. See Primross.

POLYBIUS, the historian, was a native of Megalo- polis in Arcadia, the youngest of Greek cities (Paus. viii. 9), but one which played an honourable part in the last days of Greek freedom as a staunch member of the Achean league. Polybius’s father Lycortas was the intimate friend of Philopcemen, himself also a citizen of Megalopolis, and on the death of the latter, in 182 B.c.,

ry L 4}1

succeeded him as leader of the league. The date of Polybius’s birth can only be fixed approximately. He tells us himself that in 181 he had not yet reached the age (130 years, Polyb., xxix. 9) at which an Achzan was legally

capable of holding office (xxiv. 6). We learn from Cicero (Ad Fam., v. 12) that he outlived the Nu- mantine war, which ended in 132, and from Lucian (Macrob., 22) that he died at the age of eighty-two. We may therefore follow the majority of authorities in placing his birth between 214 and 204 B.c. Little is known of his early life. As the son of Lycortas he was naturally brought into close contact with the leading men of the Achzean league. With the foremost of them, Philopcemen, he seems to have been on intimate terms, Plutarch (ei mpeo., 12) describes him as sitting at the feet of the great Achzan soldier, of whom Polybius himself always writes in terms of affectionate admiration; and after Philope- men's tragic death in Messenia (182) he was entrusted with the honourable duty of conveying home the urn in which his ashes had been deposited (Plut., Phil., 21). The next year (181) witnessed what seems to have been his first entry into political life. Together with his father Lycortas and the younger Aratus, he was appointed, in spite of his youth, a member of the embassy which was to visit Ptolemy Epiphanes, king of Egypt,—a mission, however, which the sudden death of Ptolemy brought to a premature end (xxv. 7). The next twelve years of his life are a blank, but in 169 he reappears as a trusted adviser of the Achzans at a difficult crisis in the history of the league. In 171 war had broken out between Rome and the Macedonian king Perseus, and the Acheean statesmen were divided as to the policy to be pursued : to side with Macedon would have been suicidal ; Lycortas himself was in favour of neutrality, but there were good reasons for fearing that the Roman senate would regard neutrality as indicating a secret leaning towards Macedon, and indeed both Lycortas and Polybius himself had already incurred suspicion at Rome on this ground. Polybius therefore declared for an open alliance with Rome, and his views were adopted. It was decided to send an Achzan force to cooperate with the Roman general. Polybius was selected to command the cavalry, and was at once despatched to the Roman camp to announce the decision of the league (xxviii. 10 sq.). The Roman consul declined the proffered assistance, but Polybius accompanied him throughout the campaign, and thus gained his first insight into the military system of Rome. On his return home he was able to render an important service to his countrymen by checking the unauthorized attempt of a Roman officer to raise troops in Achaia (xxviii. 13). In the next year (168) both Lycortas and Polybius were ou the point of starting at the head of 1200 Achzans to take service in Egypt against the Syrians, when an intimation

from the Roman com- mander that armed interference was undesirable put a stop to the expedition (xxix. 23). The success of Rome in the war with Perseus was now assured, and it is possible that the readiness of Lycortas and Polybius to serve abroad was partly due to a belief that the fate of Macedon must soon be shared by Achaia. © If this was so, the belief was but too well founded. The final defeat of Perseus was rapidly followed by the arrival in Achaia of Roman commissioners charged with the duty of securely establishing Roman interests there. Asa result of their proceedings 1000 of the principal Achaans were arrested and carried off to Italy. Polybius was among the number, but, while his companions were condemned to a tedious incarceration in the country towns of Italy, he obtained permission to reside in Rome. This privilege he owed to the influence of A‘milius Paullus, and his two sons

Scipio and Fabius (xxxii. 9), wno seem to have made his acquaintance in Macedonia. At any rate Polybius was received into Amilius’s house, and became the instructor of his sons (Appian, Pun., 132). Between Scipio, the future conqueror of Carthage, and himself a friendship soon sprung up which ripened into a lifelong intimacy. To the last Scipio so constantly relied upon the advice and counsel of Polybius that it could be ‘said by the country- men of the latter that Scipio never failed when he followed the advice of his friend (Pausan., viii. 30). To Polybius himself his friendship with Scipio was not merely the chief pleasure of his life but of inestimable service to him throughout his career. It protected him from interfer- ence, opened to him the highest circles of Roman society, and enabled him to acquire a personal influence with the leading men, which stood him in good stead when he after- wards came forward to mediate between his countrymen and Rome. It placed within his reach opportunities for a close study of Rome and the Romans such as had fallen to no historian before him, and secured him the requisite leisure for using them, while Scipio’s liberality more than once supplied him with the means of conducting difficult and costly historical investigations (Pliny, V. H.,v. 9). In 151, after seventeen years of banishment, the few surviv- ing exiles were allowed to return to Greece. But the stay of Polybius in Achaia was brief. The estimation in which he was held at Rome is clearly shown by the anxiety of

the consul Mamilius (149) to take him as his adviser on his expedition against Carthage. Polybius started to join him, but broke off his journey at Corcyra on learning that ‘the Carthaginians were inclined to yield and that war was unlikely (xxxvi. 3). But when, in 147, Scipio himself took the command in Africa, Polybius hastened to join him, and was an eye-witness of the siege and destruction of Carthage (Appian, Pun., 132). During his absence in Africa, the Achzans had made a desperate and ill-advised attempt to assert for the last time their independence of Rome,—a passionate outbreak which Polybius had dreaded, and which his presence might have prevented. As it was he returned in 146 to find Corinth in ruins, the fairest cities of Achaia at the mercy of the Roman soldiery, and the famous Achean league shattered to pieces (Pol. ap. Strabo, p. 381). But there was still work to be done that he alone could do. All the influence he possessed was freely spent in endeavour- ing to shield his countrymen from the worst consequences of their rashness. The excesses of the soldiery were checked, and at his special intercession the statues of Aratus and Philopcemen were preserved (xxxix. 14). An even more difficult task was that entrusted to him by the Roman authorities themselves, of persuading the Achzeans to acquiesce in the new régime imposed upon them by their conquerors, and of setting the new machinery in working order. With this work, which he accomplished so as to earn the heartfelt gratitude of his countrymen (xxxix. 16), his public career seems to have closed. The rest of his life was, so far as we know, devoted to the great history which is the lasting monument of his fame. He died at the age of eighty-two of a fall from his horse (Lucian, Macrob., 22).

Of the forty books which made up the history of Polybius, the first five alone have come down to us ina complete form; of the rest we have only more or less copious fragments. But as to the general plan and scope of the work there is no room for doubt, thanks mainly to the clearness with which they are explained by Polybius himself. The task which he set himself was that of making plain, for the instruction of his own and future generations, how and why it was that ‘‘all the known regions of the civilized world had fallen under the sway of Rome”’ (iii. 1). This empire of Rome, unprecedented in its extent and still more so in the rapidity

with which it had been acquired, was the standing wonder of the age, and ‘‘ who,” he exclaims (i.1), “is so poor-spirited or indolent

PO LY ST Ts

as not to wish to know by what means, and thanks to what sort of constitution, the Romans subdued the world in something less than fifty-three years?” These fifty-three years are those between 220 (the point at which the work of Aratus ended) and 168 B.c., and extend therefore from the outbreak of the Hannibalic war to the defeat of Perseus at Pydna. To this period then the main portion of his history is devoted from the third to the thirtieth book inclusive. But for clearness’ sake he prefixes in books i. and ii. such a preliminary sketch of the earlier history of Rome, of the first Punic War, and of the contemporary events in Greece and Asia, as will enable his readers more fully to understand what follows. This seems to have been his original plan, but at the opening of book iii., written apparently after 146, he explains that he thought it desirable to add some account of the manner in which the Romans exercised the power they had won, of their tempera- ment and policy, and of the final catastrophe which destroyed — Carthage and for ever broke up the Achean league (iii. 4, 5). To this appendix, giving the history from 168-146, the last ten books are devoted. ;

Whatever fault may be found with Polybius, there can be no question that he had formed a high conception of the task before him, and of the manner in which it should be executed. He lays repeated stress on two qualities as distinguishing his history from the ordinary run of historical compositions. The first of these, its synoptic character, was partly necessitated by the nature of the period with which he was dealing. The interests, fortunes, and doings of all the various states fringing the basin of the Mediter- ranean had become so inextricably interwoven that it was no longer possible to deal with each of them in isolation. The his- torian must deal with this eomplex web of affairs as a whole, if he would be able either to understand or to explain it properly. Polybius therefore claims for his history that it will take a compre- hensive view of the whole course of events in the civilized world, within the limits of the period with which it deals (i. 4). Iu doing so he marks a new point of departure in historical writing, “for we have

undertaken” he says ‘‘to record, not the affairs of this or that people, like those who have preceded us, but all the aflairs of the known world at a certain time.” In other words, he aims at placing before his readers at each stage a complete survey of the field of action from Spain in the West to Syria and Egypt in the East. This synoptic method proceeds from a true appreciation of what is now called the unity of history, and to Polybius must be given the credit of having first firmly grasped and clearly enforced a lesson which the events of his own time were especially well cal- culated to teach. Posterity too has every reason to be grateful, for, though, as will be seen later, this synoptic method frequently inter- feres with the symmetry and continuity of his narrative, yet it has given us such a picture of the 2d and 8d centurics before Christ as no series of special narratives could have supplied.

The second quality upon which Polybius insists as distinguishing his history from all others is its ‘‘ pragmatic” character. It deals, that is, with events and with their causes, and aims at an accurate record and explanation of ascertained facts. This ‘‘ pragmatic method” (ix. 2) has a double value. First of all it makes history intelligible by explaining the how and the why; and, secondly, it is only when so written that history can perform its trne function of instructing and guiding those who study it. For the great nse of history according to Polybius is to contribute to the right conduct of human life (i. 35), by supplying a storehouse of experience for the assistance of those who will usc it. But this it can only do if the historian bears in mind the true nature of his task. Above all things he mnst not content himself with merely writing a pleasant tale. He must remember that the historian shonld not write as the dramatist does to charm or excite his audience for the moment but to edify and instruct all serious students in the future (ii. 56). He will therefore aim simply at cxhibiting events in their true light, setting forth ‘‘the why and the how” in each case, not con- fusing causes and occasions, or dragging in old wives’ fables, prodi- gies, and marvels (ii. 16 ; iii. 48). He will omit nothing which can help to explain the events he is dealing with: the genius and tem- perament of particular peoples, their political and military systems, the characters of the leading men, the geographical features of the country, must all be taken into account. To this conception of the aim and methods of history Polybius is on the whole consistently faithful in practice. It is true that his anxicty to instruct leads

often to a rather wearisome iteration of his favourite maxims, and that his digressions, such as that on the military art, are occa- sionally provokingly long and didactic. But his comments and reflexions are for the most part sound and instructive (¢.g., those on the lessons to be learnt from the revolt of the mercenaries in Africa, i. 65; from the Celtic raids in Italy, ii. 85; and on the Romau character), while among his digressions are included such invaluable chapters as those on the Roman constitution (book vi.), the graphie description of Cisalpine Gaul (book ii.), and the account of the rise and constitution of the Achzan league (ii. 38 sq.). To his anxiety again to trace back events to their first causcs we owe, not only the careful inquiry (book iii.) into the origin of the

Pony

Second Punic War, but the sketch of early Roman history in booki., | and of the early treaties between Rome and Carthage in iii. 22 sq. Among the many defects which he censures in previous historians, not the least serious in his eyes are their inattention to the political and geographical surroundings of the history (ii. 16; ili. 36), and their neglect duly to set forth the causes of events (ili. 6).

Polybius is equally explicit as regards the personal qualifications necessary for a good historian, and in this respect too his practice is in close agreement with his theory. Hc has a profound distrust of closet students and a profound belief in the valuc of a personal knowledge of affairs. Without such experience a writer will, he says, be guilty of endless blunders and omissions, and will inevitably distort the true relations and importance of events. History, he asserts, will not be satisfactorily written until either men of affairs undertake to write it, not asa piece of bye-work but as an honourable and necessary task, or until intending historians realize that somo actual experience of affairs is indispensable (xii. 28). Such ex- perience would have saved aceomplished and fluent Greek writers like Timezus from many of their blunders (xii, 25a), but the short- comings of Roman soldiers and senators like Q. Fabius Pictor show that it is not enough by itself, Equally indispensable is careful painstaking research. All available cvidence must be collected, thoroughly sifted, soberly weighed, and, lastly, the historian must be animated by a sincere love of truth and a

calm impartiality. What follows where any or all of these conditions and qualifica- tions are absent Polybius illustrates abundantly in his frequent and scathing criticisms on previous writers, In the case of Timeus, against whom he seems to cherish a peculiar animosity, nearly all that remains of book xii. is devoted to an exposition of his short- comings. Q. Fabius Pictor and Philinus are charged both with ignorance of important facts and with partiality (i. 14; ili. 9), while in the second book Phylarchus's account of the war between the Achan league and Cleomenes of Sparta is mercilessly dissected,

It is not possible here to discuss the question whether Polybius has been just to his vredecessors ; it is more important to consider how far he himself comes up to the standard by which he has tried others. In his personal acquaintance with affairs, in the variety of his experience, and in his opportunities for forming a correct judgment on events he is without a rival among ancient historians.

Of Polybius's anxiety to get at the truth no better proof can be given than his conscientious investigation of original documents and monumeuts, and his careful study of geography and topography —both of them points in which his predecessors, as well as his suc- cessor Livy, conspicuously failed. Polybius is careful constantly to remind us that he writes for those who are @iAouabels, lovers of knowledge, with whom truth is the first consideration. He closely studied the bronze tablets in Rome on which were inscribed the early treaties concluded between Romans and Carthaginians (see for these Rhein. Afws., 32, 614; iii. 22-26). He quotes the actual language of the treaty which ended the First Punic War (i. 62), and of that between Hannibal and Philip of Maeedon (vii. 9). In xvi. 15 he refers to a document which he had person- ally inspected in the archives at Rhodes, and in iii. 33 to the monument on the Lacinian promontory, recording the number of Haunibal's forces. According to Dionysius, i. 17, he got his date for the foundation of Rome from a tablet in the pontifical archives. As instances of his careful attention to geography and topography we have not only the fact of his widely extended travels, from the

African coast and the Pillars of Hercules in the west to the Euxine and the coasts of Asia Minor in the east, but also the geographical and topographical studies scattered throughout his history, such as the description of Sicily (i. 42), of Cisalpine Gaul (ii. 14), and of the Euxine (iv. 10), the discussion of Hannibal's route over the Alps, and the graphic picture of the scene of the battle of Lake Trasimene. Lastly, to judge from its extant fragments, book xxxiv. seems to have been actually a treatise on geography in general.

Next to the duty of original research, Polybius ranks that of impartiality. Some amonnt of bias in favour of one's own country may, he thinks, be pardoned as natural (xvi. 14) ; but it must not be gratified at the expense of truth. It is unpardonable, he says, for the historian to set anything whatever above the truth. And on the whole Polybius must be allowed here again to have practised what he preached. It is trne that his own sympathies and antipathies are not entirely concealed. His affection for and pride in Arcadia appear in more than one passage (iv. 20, 21), as also does his dislike of the olians (ii. 45; iv. 8, 16). His treatment of Aratus and Philopcemen, the heroes of the Achzan league, and of Cleomenes of Sparta, its most eonstant enemy, is perhaps open to severer eriticism—it is at any rate certain that Cleomenes does not receive full justice at his hands. Similarly his views of Rome and the Romans may have been influenced by his firm belief in the nccessity of accepting the Roman supremacy as inevitable, and by his intimacy with Scipio, the head of the great patrician house of the Cornelii. He has evidently a deep admira- tion for the great republic, for her well-balanced constitution, for her military system, and for the character of her citizens. He shares too the dislike of the Roman aristocraey for such men of the people as Flamiuius (ii. 21) and Varro (iii. 116). But, just as his patriotism does not blind him to the faults and follies of his countrymen (xxxviil. 4, 5, 6), so he does not scruple to criticize tome. He notices the incipient degeneracy of Rome after 146 (xviii, 35). He endeavours to hold the balance evenly between Rome and Carthage; he strongly condemns the Roman occupation of Sardinia as a breach of faith (iii. 28, 31); and he does full justice to the splendid generalship of Hannibal. Moreover, whether his liking for -Rome was excessive or not, there can be no doubt that he has sketched the Roman character in a masterly fashion. Their ambition, their invincible confidence in themselves, their dogged eourage which made

them more dangerous the harder they were pressed, and their devotion to the state are all clearly brought out. Nor does he show less appreciation of their practical sagacity, their readiness to learn from other peoples, their quickness in adapting their tactics both in war and diplomacy to changing circumstances, and their mastery of the art of ruling,

His interest in the study of character and his skill in its delinea- tion are everywhere noticeable. He believes, indeed, in an over- ruling Fortune, which guides the course of events. It is Fortune which has fashioned anew the face of the world in his own time (iv. 2), which has brought the whole civilized world into subjection to Rome (i. 4); and the Roman empire itself is the most marvellous of her works (viii. 4). But under Fortune not only political and geographical conditions but the characters and temperainenuts of nations and individuals play their part. Fortune selects the best instruments for her purposes. The Romans had been fitted by their previous struggles for the conquest of the world (i. 68) ; they were chosen to punish the treachery of Philip of Macedon (xv. 4); and the greatest of them, Scipio himself, Polybius regards as the especial favourite of fortune (xxxli. 15; x. 5).

The praise which the matter of Polybius's history deserves cannot be extended to its form, and in this respect he contrasts sharply with Livy, whose consummate skill as a narrator has given him a popularity which has been denied to Polybius. Some of the most serious defects which spoil Polybius's history as a work of art are due to an over-rigid adherence to those views of the nature of the task before him which have been described above. His laudable desire to be comprehensive, and to present a picture of the whole political situation at each important moment, is fatal to the con- tinuity of his narrative. The reader is hurried hither and thither from one part of the field to another in a manner at once wearisome and confusing. Thus the thrilling story of the Second Punic War is broken in upon by digressions on the contemporary affairs in Greece and in Asia. More serious, however, than this excessive love of synchronism is Polybius's almost pedantic anxiety to edify and to instruct. For grace and elegance of composition, and for the artistic presentation of events, he has a hardly concealed con- tempt. Hence a general and almost studied carelessness of effect, which mars his whole work. On the other hand he is never weary of

preaching. His favourite theories of the nature and aims of history, of the distinction between the universal and special histories, of the duties of an historian, sound as most of them arc in themselves, are enforced again and again at undue length and with wearisome iteration. No opportunity is lost of pointing out the lesson to be learnt from the events described, and more than once the reader is irritated, and the effect of a graphic picture is spoilt, by obtrusive moralizing. Nor, lastly, is Polybius's style itself such as to eompen-

sate for these defects. It is, indeed, often impressive from the evident earnestness and sincerity of the writer, and from his sense of the gravity of his subject, and is uuspoilt by rhetoric or conceit. It has about it the ring of reality; the language is sometimes pithy and vigorous ; and now and then we meet with apt metaphors, such as those borrowed from boxing (i. 57), from cock-fighting (i. 58), from draughts (i. 84). But, in spite of these redeeming features, the prevailing baldness of Polybius's style excludes him from the first rank among classical writers ; and it is impossible to quarrel with the verdict pronounced by Dionysius of Halicarnassus, who places him among those authors of later times who neglected the graces of style, and who paid for their neglect by leaving behind them works 'which no one was patient enough to read through to the end (wep) cuvbés. dvoudrwr, 4). ne eee are

It is to the value and variety of his matter, to his critical insight, breadth of view, and wide research, and not least to the surpassing importance and interest of the period with which he deals, that Polybius owes his place among the writers of history. What is known as to the fortunes of his histories, and the reputation they enjoyed, fully bears out this conclusion. The silence respecting him maintained by Quintilian and by Lucian may reasonably be taken to imply their agreement with Dionysius as to his merits as a master of style. On the other hand, Cicero (De Off, iii. 32) describes him as "bonus auctor in primis"; in the De Republica (ii. 14) he praises highly his accuracy in matters of chronology, 'nemo in exquirendis temporibus diligentior"; and Cicero's younger contemporary, Marcus Brutus, was a devoted student of Polybius, and was engaged on the eve of

the battle of Pharsalia in compiling an epitome of his histories (Suidas, s.v.; Plutarch, Brut., 4). Livy, however, notwithstanding the extent to which he used his writings (see Livy), speaks of him in such qualified terms as to suggest the idea that his strong artistic sensibilities had been wounded by Polybius's literary defects. He has nothing better to say of him than that he is '' by no means contemptible" (xxx. 45), and 'not an untrustworthy author" (xxxiii. 10). Posidonius and Strabo, both of them Stoics like Polybius himself, are said to have written continuations of his history (Suidas, s.v.; Strabo, p. 515). Arrian in the early part of the 2d and #lian in the 8d century both speak of him with respect, though with reference mainly to his excellence as an authority on the art of war. In addition to his Histories Polybius was the author of the following smaller works :—a life of Philopeemen (Polyb., x. 24), a history of the Numantine War (Cic., 4d Fam., v. 12), a treatise on tactics (Polyb., ix. 20; Arrian, Zactica; lian, TJact., i.). The geographical treatise, referred to by Geminus, is possibly identical with the thirty-fourth book of the Histories (Schweigh., Prejf., p. 184.

The complete books (i.~~v.) of the Histories were first printed in a Latin transla~~ tion by Nicholas Perotti in 1473, The date of the first Greek edition, that by Obsopus, is 1530. For a full account of these and of later editions, as well as of the extant MSS., see Schweighiiuser's Preface to his edition of Polybius. Our knowledge of the contents of the fragmentary books is derived partly from quotations in ancient writers, but mainly from two collections of excerpts; onc, probably the work of a late Byzantine compiler, was first printed at Basel in 1549 and contains extracts from books vi.—xviii. (wept mpeoBetwv, mepi apeTys Kat xaxtas); the other consists of two fragments from the "select passages" from Greek historians compiled by the directions of Constautine Porphyrogenitus in the 10th century. To these must be added the Vatican excerpts edited by Cardinal Mai in the present century.

The following are the more important modern editions of Polybius :—Ernesti (3 vols., 1763-64); Schweighauser (8 vols., 1793, and Oxford, 1823); Bekker (2 vols., 1844); L. Dindorf (4 vols., 1866-68, 2d cd., Teubner, 1882); Hultsch (4 vols., 1867- 71). For the literature of the subject, see Engelmann, Biblioth. Script. Class.: Script. Grect (pp. 646-650, 8th cd., Leipsic, 1880). (HEPES)

POLYCARP. The importance of Polycarp, bishop of Smyrna, for the earliest period of church history arises from his historical position. He was on the one hand a disciple of John and other apostles and disciples of Jesus ; on the other hand he was the teacher of Irenzeus, the first of the catholic fathers! In his letter to Florinus, Trenzeus (ap. Euseb., H.Z., v. 20) says :—

'* Tsaw you when I was yet, asa boy, in Lower Asia with Polycarp. . . . « Tcould even now point out the place where the blessed Poly- carp sat and spoke, and describe his going out and coming in, his manner of life, his personal appearance, the addresses he delivered to the multitude, how he spoke of his intercourse with John and with the others who had seen the Lord, and how he recalled their words. And everything that he had heard from them about the Lord, about His miracles and His teaching, Polycarp told us, as one who had re- ceived it from those who had seen the Word of Life with their own eyes, and all this in complete harmony with the Scriptures. To this I then listened, through the mercy of God vouchsafed to

me, with all eagerness, and wrote it not on paper but in my heart, and still by the grace of God I ever bring it into fresh remembrance.”

These are priceless words, for they establish a chain of tradition (Jesus, John, Polycarp, Irenzeus) which is without a parallel in history. It is all the more to be regretted that

i lren., 1s, 2.

Irenxus in his great work? has said so little of Polycarp, and that neither Polycrates of Ephesus? nor Tertullian‘ mentions anything of importance.

The sources for the life and activity of Polycarp are as follows :—(1) a few notices of Irenzeus; (2) the epistle of Polycarp to the church at Philippi; (8) the epistle of Ignatius to Polycarp; (4) the epistle of the church at Smyrna to the church at Philomelium, giving an account of the martyrdom of Polycarp. Since these authorities have all been called in question, and some of them entirely rejected, by recent criticism, it is necessary to say a few words about each of them.

1. Of the statements of Irenzeus, those contained in the letter to Victor and in the large work have passed unchallenged. The letter to Florinus, however, which places Polycarp in unequivocal connexion with the apostle John, has been discredited, because, it is alleged, John never was in Asia Minor. But this denial of John’s residence in Asia Minor is itself a piece of critical arbi- trariness, and to assert that the epistle to Florinus is spurious is a desperate resource. The only argument which can be adduced against it with any sort of plausibility is the fact that in his great work Irenzeus does not satisfy the expectations which the letter to Florinus is apt to raise ina modern reader. It is certainly the case that he tells us very little about Polycarp and still less about John, But statements from the mouth of Polycarp of the very kind which the letter to Florinus would lead us to expect are not altogether wanting in the great work of Ireneus (sec iii. 8, 4; il. 22,5; v. 30, 1)®; and that they are so few is accounted for by the plan and object of the treatise. The facts mentioned by Ireneus, therefore, cannot be set aside, although the assertion that Polycarp was appointed bishop of the

church at Smyrna by the apostles (ii. 8, 4) is probably a deduction from the Catholic theory of the origin of the episcopate. If it was once understood that Polycarp had seen apostles, the necessary inference for the time of Irenzus was that he had received his office from the hands of the apostles.

2. Under the name of Polycarp we possess, in a Latin transla- tion, a complete letter to the church at Philippi, which was first published by Faber Stapulensis in 1498, Of the Greek original, which was first edited by Halloix in 1638, unfortunately only three- fourths has been preserved.® Since Iveneus (iii. 3, 4) expressly mentions and commends a letter of Polycarp to the church of Philippi, since Eusebius (H. £., iii. 36) was acquainted with the epistle as we have it and makes extracts from it, and since Jerome (De Vir. Ill., xvii.) testifies that in his time it was publicly read in the Asiatic churches, the external evidence in its favour is as strong as could be desired. But the internal evidence is also very strong. The occasion of the letter was a case of embezzlement, the guilty individual being a presbyter at Philippi. It shows a fine combination of mildness with severity; the language is simple but powerful ; and, while there is undoubtedly a lack of original ideas, the author shows remarkable skill in weaving together pregnant sentences and impressive warnings selected from the apostolic epistles and the first epistle of Clement. There is no trace of any tendency beyond the immediate purpose of maintain- ing the true Christian life in the church, and warning it against covetousness and against an unbrotherly spirit. In these circum- stances it would certainly never have occurred to any one to doubt the genuineness of the epistle, or to suppose that it had been inter- polated, but for the fact that in several passages reference is made to Ignatius and his epistles. In point of fact the historical situation which is presupposed by the epistle is this, that Ignatius, on his last journey to Rome, has just passed through Philippi, and that his letters are circulating in the churches. Hence all those scholars who hold the seven Ignatian epistles to be spurious are compelled to regard the epistle of Polycarp as also a forgery,’ or at least as having been largely interpolated. The interpolation hypothesis, however, breaks down in view of the fact that the first epistle of Clement is quoted even in those passages which are alleged to be interpolated ; and besides it is inconsistent with the very obvious arrangement and unity of the composition. On the other hand the

2 The lost writings of Irenzeus may have contained fuller informa- tion ; see the close of the Martyrium Polycarpt in the Cod. Mosq., and the letter of Irenzus to Victor in Eusebius (Hf. #., v. 24).

3 Euseb., H. H., v. 24, 4. * De Prescr. Her., 32.

5 Cf. “ Presbyterorum reliquize ab Irenxo servate,” in the Patr. App. Opp., ed. Gebhardt, Harnack, Zahn, vol. i. 2, p. 105 sq.

6 All the Greek MSS. are derived from a single archetype, in which the epistle of Barnabas followed that of Polycarp, but a sheet of four leaves had been torn out, so that the end of Polycarp’s epistle and the beginning of that of Barnabas are missing.

? So, for example, Lipsius, Hilgenfeld, and others.

8 So Dalleus, first of all, then Bunsen and Ritschl (Hntstehung der altkathol. Kirche, 2d ed., p. 584 sq.).

Po wy Cr Als P

assumption that the whole work is a forgery is untenable—(1) because in that case we should expect that its tone and language and tendency would be in keeping with the Ignatian epistles, which is very far from being the fact, and (2) because we must assume that Irenzus himself had been deceived by a forged epistle of Polycarp, or else that he had read the genuine epistle, but in the eourse of the 3d century it had been supplanted by a spurious substitute. Either of these suppositions is extremely improbable, and, since internal narks of forgery are altogether absent, we must rather reverse the argument and say that the epistle of Polycarp is a very iinportant piece of evidence for the historical existence of a bishop of Antioch named Ignatius, for his journey to martyrdom at Rome, and for the fact that on this journey he wrote several letters. In these circumstances it is very desirable that we should be able to fix the exact date of Polycarp’s epistle. This unfortu- nately is impossible, owing to the colourless character of the writing. Still it is noteworthy that there is not a single trace of the time of Trajan, that on the contrary an expression in the seventh chapter seems to presuppose the activity of Marcion.! In that case the letter cannot

have been written before 140 a.p. The Ignatian epistles and the history of Ignatius furnish no argument to the eontrary, for the idea that Ignatius was martyred under Trajan eannot be traced higher than the 3d century,? while the ehronological indications in the Ignatian epistles themselves point to a later period. The epistle of Polycarp is of more importance for the Ignatian problem than for Polycarp himself. It conveys no distinct impression of his individuality, beyond the fact that the writer of this letter lived wholly in the ideas of the older generation and of the apostles, and would admit no addition to their teaching. That, however, is a feature which harmonizes admirably so far as it goes with the description which Irenus gives of Polycarp in the letter to Florinus. On account of its dependence on older epistles, the epistle of Polycarp is of great value for the history of the canon. For the constitutional history of the ehurch also it contains valuable materials; but for the history of dogma it is of little use.

3. The epistle of Ignatius to Polycarp is an important docu- ment, whether it is genuine or not. It belongs at any rate to the 2d century, so that even if it were spurious it would at least show what conception of the bishop's character was then prevalent. Polyearp appears in the letter as a man of a passive disposition, with too little energy and decision for the vehement Ignatius. The admonitions which Ignatius thinks fit to bestow on Polycarp (c. 1-6) are surprising, when we remember that they are addressed to an old aud venerable man. But Ignatius was writing under the consciousness of impending martyrdom, and evidently felt, with all his affected modesty, that this gave him a right to censure the churches and bishops of Asia. To pronounce the epistle spurious on aceount of its tone is hazardous, because it is difficult to imagine how it eould have entered the head of a forger to subject the honoured Polycarp to such treatment at the hands of Ignatius,

4, The most valuable source for the history of Polycarp is the letter of the church in Smyrna about his martyrdom. Eusebius has preserved the greater part of this epistle in his Church History (iv. 15); but we possess it entire with various concluding observa- tions in several Greek manuscripts, and also in a Latin transla- tion. The epistle gives a minute description of the persecution in Smyrna, of the last days of Polycarp, and of his trial and martyrdom; and, as it contains many instructive details, and professcs to have been written not long after the events to which it refers, it has always

been regarded as one of the most precious remains of the 2d century. Certain recent critics, however, have questioned the authenticity of the narrative. Lipsius* brings the date of the epistle down to about 260, although he admits many of its statements as trustworthy. Keim® endeayours to show in a long dissertation that it could not possibly have been written shortly after the death of Polycarp, but that, although based on good information, it was not composed till the middle of the 3d century. But Keim's own investigation is sufficient to convince every unprejudiced mind that the genuineness of the epistle will bear the closcst scrutiny, for the arguments he advanges are of no value. The only positions which Keim (following in the wake of others") makes good are that a few slight interpolations ® have been

1 Compare vii. 1 with Iren. iii. 3, 4.

2 See Harnack, Die Zeit des Ignatius, 1878.

3 See Zahn, " Epp. Ignat. et Polye.," in Patr. App. Opp., vol. ii; Von Gebhardt in the Ztschr. f. d. histor. Theol., 1875, p. 356 sq. ; Harnack, Zeit des Ignatius, 1878.

4 Zischr. f. wissensch. Theol., 1874, p. 200 sq.

5 Aus dem Urchristenthum, p. 90 sq.

6 He lays stress especially on the miraculous elements and the ideal of martyrdom held up in the letters,

" See Schiirer, Zéschr. f. d. histor. Theol., 1870, p. 208.

8 Amongst these we ought probably to include the expression, 4

KaBorikh éxxAnota (Inscr., c. xvi. 19), kadoAreds being here used in the sense of " orthodox."

inserted in the epistle, and that it was written, not a few days, but perhaps a year or two after the death of Polycarp. The statement in the epistle that

Polycarp suffered martyrdom under the pro- consulate of Quadratus has quite recently given rise to a voluminous literature. Eusebius in his Chronicle gives 166 A.D. as the year of Polycarp's death, and until the year 1867 this statement was never questioned. In that year appeared Waddington's ‘‘ Mémoire sur la chronologie de la vie du rhéteur Allius Aristide” (Afém. de Institut. imp. de France, 1867, xxvi.), in which it was shown from a niost acute combination of circumstances that Quadratus was proconsul of Asia in 155-6, and that consequently Polycarp was martyred on the 23d of February 155.9 Since the date of Polycarp's death is of great importance for the chronology of many other events, and sinee it is an unusual thing in the history of criticism for the date of any occurrence to be thus put eleven years farther back, Waddington's arguments have been examined by a great number of critics. Renan,!° Aube,” Hilgenfeld,!? Gebhardt, ¥ Lipsius,!4 Harnack,! Zahn,}6 Egli,” and others have declared them- selves satisfied, although some scholars regarded 156 as also a possible date. On the other hand Keim, 8Wieseler, and Uhlhorn,”° join issue with Waddington and adhere to the date of Eusebius. The arguments on which they rely do not appear to the present writér to be convincing, and it may be asserted with great proba- bility that the martyrdom of Polycarp took place on the 23d of February 155.2!__ Besides these we have no other sources for the life of Polycarp. The Vita 8. Polycarpi auctore Pionio (published by Duchesne, Paris, 1881, and Funk, Apost. Patr. Opp., vol. ii. p. 315 sq.) is wortliless,”?

The chief facts to be gathered about the life of Polycarp from the above sources are these. He must have been born before the year 69, for on the day of his death he declared that he had served the Lord for eighty-six years (Martyrium, ix.). He became a Christian in his earliest youth, and was an associate of the apostle John and other disciples of Jesus who had come from Palestine to Asia Minor. What he heard from them he kept in life-long remembrance, and in his manhood and old age he used to gather the young people round him, and repeat to them what he had learned from those who had seen Christ in the flesh. Amongst these youthful hearers was Irenzus, who has recorded much of what he thus learned (for example, an encounter between John and Cerinthus in the bath, a statement about the age of Jesus, &c.). Especially when heresy began to raise its head, the aged Polycarp never ceased to appeal to the pure doctrine of the apostles. He lived to see

the rise of the Marcionite and Valentinian sects, and vigorously opposed them. Irenzus tells us that on one occasion Marcion “endeavoured to establish relations with him” (Iren,, iii. 3, 4), and accosted him with the words érvywookes judas; there is no doubt that Marcion wished to be on friendly terms with so influential a man; but Polycarp displayed the same uncompromising attitude which his master John had shown to Cerinthus, and answered émywdoKxw oe Tov TpwrdtoKov Tod Yarava. These stern words are again applied to Marcion in the epistle to the Philippians ; for it is undoubtedly Marcion who is referred to in the following passage (c. vii.) : —“ He who falsifies the sayings of the Lord after his own pleasure, and affirms that there is no resurrection [of the flesh] and no judgment, is the first-born of Satan.” The

9 He died on a “great Sabbath”—another expression which has given rise to much discussion—by which is meant the Sabbath after Easter. In 155 this fell on the 23d February, and this agrees with what the church of Smyrna says about the day of its bishop’s death: apo émta karevdav Maprlov.

10 Antechrist, 1878, p. 207. 1 Hist. des perséc., 1875, p. 325 sq.

12 Ztschr. f. wiss. Theol., 1874, p. 305 sq.

13 Ztschr. f. d. hist. Theol., 1875, p. 356 sq.

14 Zischr. f. wiss. Theol. 1874, p. 188; Jahrbb. f. prot. Theol., 1883, p. 525 sq. 1 Zischr. f. Kirchengesch., 1876, p. 305.

16 “Epp. Ignat. et Polyc.,” as cited ahove.

7 Zischr. f. wiss. Theol., 1882, p. 227 sq., 1884, p. 216 sq.

18 Aus dem Urchristenthum, p. 90 sq.

19 Die Christenverfolgungen der Caesaren, 1878, p. 34 sq.

20 Realencyk. f. prot. Theol., 2d ed., xii. p. 105.

21 See Salmon in the Academy, 21st July 1883, p. 46 sq.

22 See Harnack in the Theol. Lit. Zeitung, 1882, No. 12; Zahn, in the Gétting. Gel. Anz., 1882, Heft 10.

steady progress of the heretical movement, in spite of all opposition, was a cause of deep sorrow to Polycarp, so that in the last years of his life (Iren. ap. Euseb., v. 20) the words were constantly on his lips, “Oh good God, to what times hast thou spared me, that I must suffer such things.” He never allowed himself to engage in discussion with heretics, but as far as possible avoided their presence. Even in early life he had become the head of the church

of Smyrna, where he was held in the highest respect. The |

congregation looked up to him as an apostolic and pro- phetic teacher (J/a7t., xvi.), and consequently as combin- ing in himself all the spiritual gifts which God had con- ferred on Christendom. In his old age the members of the congregration vied with each other in providing for his support (did., xiii.). How great his reputation was is best shown by the fury of the heathen and the Jews in his martyrdom. He was arrested amidst shouts of “This is the teacher of Asia; this is the father of the Christians ; this is the destroyer of our gods; this is the man who has taught so many no longer to sacrifice and no longer to pray to the gods” (ibid., xii.). When sentence was pronounced against him, every creature of the Jewish and heathen rabble hastened to add something to the pile of wood on which he was to be burned (iid, xiii.) They refused to deliver up his bones to the Christians for burial, for, said the Jews to the mob, “The Christians will now forsake the Crucified, and worship Polycarp” (iid., xvii.). The sacrifice of Polycarp immediately quenched the fury of the multitude, and the persecution ceased. All these facts prove the great influence which the bishop had in the city. But his reputation extended far beyond the limits of his own diocese. His letter to the church at Philippi shows us how fully his apostolic spirit, his wisdom and justice, must have been recognized even in Macedonia ; otherwise he could not have ventured to interfere in the purely internal affairs of the Philippian church. Ignatius, the bishop of Antioch, begins his letter to him with the words (c. 1)—’Azrodexdmevds cov tiv ev bed yvdpnv, 7Spac- pany os ert wérpav dxivytov, trepdogalw, Karagiwbeis

Tov TpoowmTov Gov Tod éuouov, ob dvainyv ev Geq, and, in spite of his patronizing tone, evidently writes with deep respect. But even the church at Rome were to have an opportunity of making the acquaintance of the venerable bishop. It is one of the most interesting and important incidents in the church history of the 2d century that Polycarp, in the year before his death (when he was above ninety years of age) undertook the journey to Rome in order to visit the bishop Anicetus.1 Irenzeus, to whom we are indebted for this information (Her. iii. 3, 4; Lp. ad Victorem, in Eusebius, Z/.#., v. 24, 16-17), gives as the reason for the journey that differences existed between Asia and Rome, or between Polycarp and Anicetus, ‘with regard to certain things,” and especially about the time of the Easter festival, which it was desirable to remove. He might easily have told us what these “certain things” were, and given us fuller details of the negotiations between the two great bishops; for in all probability he was himself in Rome at the time (Mart., Epilog. Mosq.). But unfor- tunately all he says is that, with regard to the “certain things,” the two bishops speedily came to an understand- ing, while, as to the time of Easter, each adhered to his

1 Anicetus was bishop from 154 (156) to 166 (167) (see Lipsius, Chron. d. Rém. Bischdfe, § 263.) Those critics who reject Wad- dington’s view as to the date of Polycarp’s death use this as their principal argument, that according to it there is no room for Polycarp’s Journey to Rome. It is certainly remarkable that the journey can just be brought under Waddington’s calculations and no more; but, since after all it can be brought under them, no conclusive argument can be drawn from this circumstance. A voyage to Rome at a favour-

able season of the,year was not a very formidable affair, and that

Polycarp was still comparatively vigorous is shown by his conduct during the persecution (J@art., v. sq.).

‘ haired bishop conducted himself.

own custom without breaking off communication with the other. We learn further that Anicetus, as a mark of special honour, allowed Polycarp to celebrate the Eucharist in the church (the Eucharist must therefore have still been celebrated at Rome in the Greek tongue), that many Marcionites and Valentinians were converted by Polycarp in Rome (so that his visit must have lasted for a consider- able time), and that Polycarp took leave of Anicetus in peace. On his return to Smyrna he enjoyed only about six

| months of uninterrupted activity. Then, on the occasion of

the festive games, there arose, as in so many other instances, an outburst of popular feeling against the Christians, in which Polycarp was to die a martyr's death. From the letter of the church of Smyrna we see with what magnani- mity and manliness and true Christian spirit the grey- It leaves the most vivid impression of a man of dignity and noble demeanour, and at the same time of humble disposition and compassionate love. Every action he does, every word he speaks, in the prosecution and during the trial is noble and great ; even that quiet irony which we detect in his answer to Marcion does not forsake him (Jart., ix. 2). The proconsul was anxious to save him, and tried to induce him to recant, but he remained steadfast. He was delivered up to the

populace, and his body was burned. The Christians

present believed that they saw a dove soaring aloft from the burning pile, and it was reported that an odour issued from it like that of costly incense (dbid., xvi. 15). Such legends do not require years for their formation, but only a few hours. By his death Polycarp shielded his con- gregation from further persecution. (A. HA.) POLYCLETUS. Two Greek sculptors bore this name. For an account of the works of the elder, a native of Sicyon, see vol. ii. p. 357, and figs. 6,7. With him is some- times confounded his younger kinsman and namesake, pro- perly known as Polycletus the Argive. For the most part this younger Polycletus confined himself to statues of athletes who had won prizes at Olympia. In recent exca- vations there two bases of statues by him have been found, but no remains of his work. From the fact of his having executed a statue of Zeus Philios, 7.¢c., a combination of Zeus and Dionysus, for the town of Megalopolis, which was founded in 371 B.c., we may assign him to about that date. POLYCRATES, a

celebrated Greek tyrant of Samos, was the son of Ataces. After distinguishing himself by his liberality towards his poorer fellow-citizens he took advantage of a festival to Hera in order to make himself master of Samos (537 or 536 B.c.).2 Allied with Amasis, king of Egypt, he prospered greatly, so that his fame went forth through all Greece and Ionia. He had 100 ships and 1000 bowmen. He made war indiscriminately on friend and foe, declaring with grim humour that he gratified his friends more by returning to them their own than by not taking it at all. Many islands fell before him and many cities on the mainland. Amongst the former was Rhenea, which he attached by a chain to the neigh- bouring island of Delos, and dedicated to the Delian Apollo. When the Lesbians would have succoured Miletus, he conquered and captured them in a sea-fight and employed them to dig a moat round the walls of his fortress. According to Herodotus, he was the first within historical times who aimed at the sovereignty of the seas, and his ambitious schemes embraced not only the Greek islands but also Ionia. In magnificence none of the Greek tyrants save those of Syracuse could compare with him.

2 Eusebius gives the date as 1484 (year of Abraham) =Olymp. 61,4 = October 533 to October 532. But codex N of the Armenian ver- sion of Eusebius has Abrah. 1480=Olymp. 60,4= Oct. 537 to Oct. 536. The former date, accepted by Clinton, would leave only ten years for the tyranny of Polycrates, which seems too little.

ee ee a

POL—POL

His great public works were executed, according to Aristotle, for the purpose of employing his subjects and diverting their thoughts from the recovery of their free- dom.! He imported Spartan and Molossian hounds, goats from Naxos and Scyros, sheep from Attica and Miletus. The splendour of his palace is attested by the design which many centuries later the emperor Caligula formed of rebuilding it. Foreign artists worked for him at high

wages: from Athens he brought Demacedes, the greatest | Polycrates |

physician of the age, at a salary of two talents. was also a patron of letters: he collected a library and lived on terms of intimate friendship with the poet Anacreon, whose verses were full of references to his patron. The philosopher Pythagoras, however, quitted Samos in order to escape his tyranny. The good fortune of Polycrates is the subject of a famous story. Amasis, moved with fear at the exceeding great prosperity of his friend, reminded him that God is jealous, and that the man who is uplifted very high must needs fall very low. Therefore he besought him, if he would avert the jealous wrath of heaven, to cast from him that which he valued most. Polycrates hearkened to him and flung into the sea an emerald signet set in gold, the work of the Samian artist Theodorus. But a few days after the signet was found in

the belly of a large fish which a fisherman had presented |

to the king. When Amasis heard of this he knew that Polycrates was doomed, and renounced his alliance.

Amasis died before his forebodings were fulfilled. When | the Persians under King Cambyses were preparing to |

invade Egypt, Polycrates, anxious to conciliate the growing power of Persia, sent forty ships to their help (525 B.c.). But the squadron was largely manned by malcontents whom Polycrates had hoped thus to get rid of ; hardly had it reached the island of Carpathus when the crews mutinied and turned the ships' heads back to Samos. They defeated the tyrant in an action at sea, but were themselves over- thrown in a land battle and compelled to flee the island. Having taken refuge in Sparta, they prevailed on the Spartans to make war on Polycrates. A powerful Spartan armament laid siege to Samos, but was fain to retire after forty days without effecting its object. Not very long afterwards Orcetes, the Persian satrap of Sardes, by work- ing on the avarice and ambition of Polycrates, lured him to Magnesia and put him to a shameful death (522 B.c.).

The name of Polycrates was also borne by an Athenian rhctorician of some repute, who flourished early in the 4th century B.c. He taught at Athens, and afterwards in Cyprus. He composed declama- tions on paradoxical themes—an Hncomium on Clytemnestra, an Accusation of Socrates, an

Encomium on Busiris (a mythical king of Egypt, notorious for his inhuinanity); also declamations on mice, pots, and counters. His Zncomiwm on Busiris was sharply criticized by his younger contemporary Isocrates, in a work still cxtant, and Dionysius of Halicarnassus characterises his style as frigid, vulgar, and inelegant. Nevertheless his works are said to have becn studied by Demosthenes. See Jcbb's Attic Orators, ii. p. 94; Cope on Aristotle's Rhetoric, ii. c. 24.

POLYGLOTT. A polyglott is a book which contains side by side versions of the same text in several different languages ; and the most important polyglotts are editions of the Bible, or its parts, in which the Hebrew and Greek originals are exhibited along with the gréat historical versions, which are of value for the history of the text and its interpretation. The first enterprise of this kind is the famous /exapla of Origen; but here only Hebrew and

1 Herodotus, our chief authority for the life of Polycrates, mentions three great engineering and architectural works for which Samos was

remarkable :—(1) a tunnel, about 1400 yards long, dug through a | mountain, and serving to bring water to the capital ; (2) a great mole |

or breakwater round the harbour; (3) a great temple (the temple of Hera, patron goddess of Samos), said by Herodotus to be the largest he had ever seen. But we cannot say what share Polycrates had in these works ; certainly the temple of Hera seems to have been begun before his time.

ANT

Greek were employed (though the versions of Aquila, Symmachus, and Theodotion were shown as well as the Septuagint), so that the work was rather diglott than polyglott in the usual sense. After the invention of printing and the revival of philological studies, polyglotts became a favourite means of advancing the knowledge of Eastern languages (for which no good helps were available) as well as the study of Scripture. The series began with the Complutensian (Alcala, 1514-17), already spoken of in the article on its promoter Cardinal JmmENeEs or Ximenes ; next came the Antwerp Polyglott (1569-72, in 8 vols. folio) of which the principal editor

was Arias Montanus aided by Guido Fabricius Boderianus, Raphelengius, Masius, Lucas of Bruges, and others. This work was under the patronage of Philip II. of Spain ; it added a new language to those of the Complutensian by including the Syriac New Testament ; and, while the earlier polyglott had only the Targum of Onkelos on the Pentateuch, the Antwerp Bible had also the Targum on the Prophets, and on Esther, Job, Psalms, and the Salomonic writings. Next came Le Jay's Paris Polyglott (1645), which embraces the first prints of the Syriac Old Testament (edited by Gabriel Sionita, a Maronite, but the book of Ruth by Abraham Ecchelensis, also a Maronite) and of the Samaritan Pentateuch and version (by Morinus, g.v.). It has also an Arabic version, or rather a series of various Arabic versions. Le Jay's work is a splendid piece of typography, but its success was marred by the appearance of the cheaper and more comprehensive London Polyglott. Le Jay was ruined, and a great part of the impression went to the trunkmakers. The last great polyglott is Walton's (London, 1657), which is much less beautiful than Le Jay's, but more complete in various ways, including among other things the Syriac of Esther and several apocryphal books for which it is wanting in the Paris Bible, Persian versions of the Pentateuch and Gospels, the Psalms and New Tes- tament in Ethiopic. Walton was aided by able scholars, and used much new manuscript material. His prolego- mena, too, and collections of various readings mark an important advance in Biblical criticism. It was in con- nexion with this polyglott that E. Castle produced his famous Jeptaglott Lexicon (London, 2 vols. folio, 1669), an astounding monument of industry and erudition even when allowance is made for the fact that for the Arabic he had the great MS. lexicon compiled and left to the university of Cambridge by the almost forgotten W. Bedwell. The later polyglotts are of little scientific importance, the best recent texts having been confined to a single language; but every Biblical student still uses Walton and, if he can get it, Le Jay. Of the numerous polyglotts on parts of the Bible it may suffice to mention the Genoa psalter of 1516, edited by Giustiniani, bishop of Nebbio. It is in Hebrew, Latin, Greek, Chaldee, and Arabic, and is interesting from the character of the Chaldee text, from being the first specimen of Western printing in the Arabic character, and from a curious note on Columbus and the discovery of America on the margin of Psalm xix.

POLYGNOTUS, a Greek painter. For a description of his work see vol. ii. p. 358. It may here be added that an approximate date for his paintings at Delphi is obtained from the fact that one of them was inscribed with an epigram written by the poet Simonides, who died 467 s.c. As Simonides appears to have resided in Sicily during the last ten years of his life, the epigram was pro- bably composed previous to 477 B.c. This series of mural paintings at Delphi, embracing about one hundred and forty-six figures, seems to have occupied two opposite walls of an oblong building known as the Lesche. The figures, hardly under life size, were disposed in two or sometimes

three rows, the one higher up than the other, with appa- rently but very slight indications of the fact that the figures of the upper rows were to be understood as standing at a more remote distance. The several rows would run con- tinuously like sculptured friezes, and indeed this manner of composition is best illustrated by the friezes at Vienna recently found at Gjélbaxhi in Lycia, some of which present subjects and motives identical with those treated by Poly- notus.

POLYHISTOR, Cornettus ALEXANDER, a Milesian

and disciple of Crates,! who through the fortune of war became the slave and afterwards the freedman of Cornelius Lentulus (Suidas). He received the Roman citizenship from Sulla (Servius on dn. x. 388), and wrote an enormous number of books on historical and geographical subjects, of which more than a hundred and fifty fragments have been collected (Miiller, Wr. Hist. Gr., iii. 206 sq.). His account of the doctrines of Pythagoras has been largely drawn from by Diogenes Laertius, but the most interesting of the fragments refer to the history of the Jews, for which Alexander drew on historical and poetical works of Jewish and Samaritan Hellenists. What has been pre- served on this subject, mainly by Eusebius in the Pre- paratio Evangelica, is sufficient to throw a good deal of light, not

particularly favourable, on the intellectual activity of the Hellenists of the 2d century B.c.

See J. Freudenthal, Hellenistische Studien, i. ii. (Breslau, 1875), in which the subject of the sources of Polyhistor is fully dis- cussed.

POLYNESIA. In the last edition of the Hncyclopedia Britannica Polynesia was used to denote all the intertropical islands of the Pacific Ocean eastward of the Philippine Islands to the north and the New Hebrides to the south of the equator. The New Hebrides and other islands west of that group were included under the term Australasia. Of late years these islands (sometimes also including Fiji) have been known as Melanesia, while the western islands of the North Pacific have been known as Micronesia. Thus Polynesia has been restricted to the central and eastern islands inhabited by the brown or Sawaiori race, becoming an ethnographic rather than a geographical term. Articles dealing with the western islands north and south of the equator will be found under Micronesia and Metanesia. The present article is intended to give a comprehensive view of all the islands of the Pacific, their physical characteristics, natural productions, and the races of men found upon them. The name Polynesia is therefore here employed in a wide signification and solely as a geographical term. The western boundary of this region runs from the great barrier reef of Australia eastward of New Guinea and the Philippine Islands. All the inter- tropical islands of the Pacific eastward of this imaginary line are included, and also a few others which extend outside the tropic of Capricorn to nearly 30° S. lat. Any other divisions for geographical purposes, except those of groups of islands, appear to be unnatural and uncalled for. For ethnographical purposes special terms are used for the three different classes of people found in this wide area.

If we exclude New CaLeponta (9.v.), which is of older formation than the rest, all the islands of Polynesia are either of volcanic or of coral formation. Some are purely coral, either in the shape of low atolls or of elevated plateaus. In a few atolls there are remnants of earlier volcanic rocks ; and most of the volcanic islands are more or less fringed with coral reefs. But, notwithstanding

1 From the scholiast on Apoll. Rh. Polyhistor was a Milesian only by edueat sonese is named as his birthplace. was not 2 personal disciple of Crates,

i, 925, it would appear that ion, for here the Carian Cher- The dates seem to show that he

PO L—

POL

this mixture, the islands must be divided broadly into those which are volcanic and those which are of coral formation. The coral islands must again be subdivided into (1) atolls, or low islands which usually have a lagoon within them, and (2) elevated table-lands.

The volcanic islands, with the exception of the Hawaiian archipelago, are all south of the equator. In Plate II. the great volcanic ridge is indicated by two lines which, commencing in 150° E., run in a south-easterly direction to about 140° W. long. With the exception of two curves, one in the lower line south of the New Hebrides, and one in the upper line at its eastern extremity, these are parallel, and are 10° apart. Within these two lines he all the volcanic islands of Polynesia, except two isolated groups, viz., the Marquesas and Hawaiian Islands. On this ridge there are no atolls. The upper boundary line sharply divides the volcanic ridge from the atoll valley. This valley is indicated by a third line running for more than 50° of longitude parallel with the other two, at 20° distance from that bounding the northern extremity of the voleanic ridge. Eastward of 155° W. long. this line bends towards the south to exclude the isolated volcanic centre of the Marquesas Islands ; then, curving around the Tuamotu archipelago, it joins the central line. Within the area thus enclosed lie all the atolls or low coral lagoon islands of Polynesia, and there are no volcanic islands within this region except in three or four instances, where are found the remnants of former islands which have sunk, but have not been quite submerged. Thisis the region of subsidence —stretching across fully 100° of longitude, and covering generally about 20° of latitude.

Within the volcanic region there are a few coral islands, but these are all more or less elevated. Since their formation they have participated in the upward movement of the ridge on which they are situated. They are indicated on the map by dotted lines. Two of the groups are within the lines marking the volcanic ridge; and one, the Loyalty group, lies close to the lower line.

The Volcanic Islands.—Most of the volcanic islands of Polynesia are high in proportion to their size. The taper- ing peaks, or truncated cones, which form their backbone present a picturesque appearance to the voyager as he approaches them. In some there are precipitous spurs jutting into the sea, while in others the land slopes gently from the central peak to the shore. Where there are these gentle slopes, and wherever there is any low land near the shore, there also will be found a coral reef fring- ing the coast at a smaller or greater distance, according to the steepness of the land under the water. Where the trend downwards is very gradual, the edge of the reef will sometimes be one, two, or even three miles to sea- ward. It has been thought that the absence of extensive reefs in some islands of the New Hebrides is due to “sub- terranean heat.” But the steepness of the slope of the islands under water is doubtless the reason why the reefs are small, As the reef-building coral polypes do not live and work below a certain depth —about 20 fathoms, or 120 feet—we easily see that the distance of the outer edge of the reef must be according to the slope of the island beneath the water. Opposite to the larger valleys, where there is a stream flowing out to sea, there is usually found a break in the reef. This is doubtless caused either by the fresh water, or by the sediment which it contains, injuring the coral polypes and preventing them from effectively carrying on their work in these spots. The conviction of the present writer is that it is the sediment contained in the water—especially during heavy rains and consequent freshets—which prevents the growth of the coral, rather than the mere action of fresh water upon the polypes. Where there are streams of considerable

size, and especially where they are subject to floods, there | When it reached Samoa it was carefully cultivated by one

are generally wide openings into the reef, and stretches of deep water forming natural harbours sufficient for the accommodation of even large vessels. There are a few land-locked harbours, but most are thus formed by breaks in the reef.

In a few spots active volcanoes are still found. These are in the neighbourhood of New Britain and New Ireland, in the Solomon, New Hebrides, and Tonga archipelagoes. In most of the islands there have been no recent erup- tions ; but now and again the inhabitants of islands where voleanic action has apparently long ceased have been startled by a new outbreak. Over the whole region earth- quakes are of frequent occurrence. Most of the craters in the islands of Samoa have immense trees growing in them, and there is only one crater in the entire group which shows signs of even a comparatively recent erup- tion, or concerning which there is a tradition among the people of one. Yet in 1867, after an almost continuous succession of earthquakes during a whole night, there was a submarine eruption between two of the islands. This lasted only a few days. A few months afterwards the writer was on board H.M.S. “Falcon” when soundings were taken on the spot. A cone was found the summit of which was 90 fathoms deep, while all around the sea was 120 fathoms deep. Thus the outpourings of this sub- marine volcano during only a few days raised a mound in the bed of the ocean 180 feet in height.

The soil in the volcanic islands is generally very fertile. The climate is hot and moist in most of them; conse- quently the vegetation is wonderfully rich. The islands are densely clothed with the most luxuriant verdure from the sea-beach to the summits of the mountains. While in a few islands, especially the comparatively barren ones (barren is only a comparative term as applied to any of the volcanic islands), there is sometimes grand and bold scenery, in most of them the jagged and precipitous rocks are so covered up and rounded off with the rich vegetation that they lose much of their grandeur. The atmosphere is so laden with moisture that ferns, club-mosses, and even small shrubs grow upon the faces of the steepest rocks. Mainly on this account the scenery can rarely be said to be grand; but nearly all these islands are truly beautiful. There isa freshness about the vegetation all the year round which is rarely seen in other portions of the world. The cocoa-nut palm groves, which are usually abundant on the low lands near the sea,

always give a charm to the islands as they are approached. In addition to several species of palms, beautiful ferns, draczenas, crotons, and other elegant foliage plants abound. Pines are found on some of the western islands. For flowers none of them will compare with the hedgerows and meadows of England. There are, it is true, many most beautiful and sweet-scented flowers, but they are not usually found in great profusion.

Fruits are abundant. Some of the indigenous kinds are good, and many of the best productions of other tropi- cal countries have been introduced and flourish. Oranges are very plentiful in many islands; also pine-apples, guavas, custard apples, and bananas. The mango has been introduced into some islands, and flourishes well. Most of these fruits have been introduced by missionaries. One of the fruits most abundantly used, both in a ripe state and cooked when unripe as a vegetable, is the Chinese banana, Afusa Cavendishii. The first plant of this carried to the islands was in a case of plants given by the duke of Devonshire to the missionary John Williams when he returned from England to the Pacific shortly before he was killed on Erromanga. During the long voyage all the plants in the case died except this banana.

of the missionaries and a stock of it was propagated. From the single plant all the Chinese bananas in Poly- nesia have sprung, and, that particular kind being greatly prized both by natives and foreign settlers, it is now grown largely wherever missionaries or traders have gone, and must produce annually hundreds of tons of nutritious food.

The natives live chiefly upon vegetable food. In most of the volcanic islands the taro (Colocasia esculenta) is the most important food-producer. Next to this comes the yam (Dioscorea satwa). Probably next in importance to this are the plantains and bananas, then the bread-fruit (Artocarpus wncisa) and arrowroot (Zacca pinnatifida). The bread-fruit is more or less plentiful in most of the volcanic islands, and during one season of the year the natives very largely subsist upon it. It is not, however, by ay means so nutritious as the taro or the yam. This vegetable is often spoken of in Britain as if it were a rich fruit, but one would as soon eat a raw potato as a raw bread-fruit. It has been over-estimated by many writers who have visited the Pacific. The present writer has noticed that the Samoans suffered in

condition, that sick- ness among children was very common and the rate of mortality high during the bread-fruit season, Although the raw cocoa-nut is not eaten to any considerable extent by the natives of volcanic islands, this must not be omitted in an enumeration of the principal articles of their food supply, for it enters into the composition of most of their made dishes in the form of expressed juice or oil; the soft half-grown kernel is used as a kind of dessert, and the liquid from it, when the kernel is only half developed, is one of their principal beverages. The Ava, or Kava, a narcotic drink largely used, is made from the root of a pepper (Piper methysticum).

In some islands the cocoa-nut is the chief article of commerce, ‘The fully-grown kernel is cut into slices, dried in the sun, and sold as “cobra,” from which much of the palm oil of commerce is expressed. On many islands cotton is largely grown, and on a few, especially in the Hawaiian archipelago, sugar cultivation has made consider- able progress. Many other vegetable products might be utilized if there were a demand for them. The candle-nut (Aleurites triloba) is abundant everywhere near the coast. Coffee has not been grown to any considerable extent. Wild ginger and wild nutmegs are abundant on some of the islands. In some places indigo has been introduced, and has spread so much as to become a nuisance. All the islands have numerous valuable fibre-producing plants be- longing to the Urticee and Malvacex, But the probability is that, on these hot, moist, and fertile islands, cocoa-nuts, cotton, or sugar will always be the most profitable crops to cultivate for exportation.

The indigenous fauna of Polynesia is poor in mammals but rich in birds. Mammals are represented by rats and bats, the latter including the flying foxes (Pteropus). Some say pigs are indigenous, but they were doubtless introduced by early navigators. Horses and cattle have been introduced. They degenerate very rapidly, unless they are continually improved by newly-imported stock. Sheep and goats are introduced into some islands, but sheep do not usually thrive. Dogs are plentiful, being kept by most of the natives, who are naturally fond of domestic animals; but they degenerate greatly. Pigeons and doves, especially the fruit-eating pigeons (Carpophaga) and doves of the genus Pézlonopus, are abundant. The Carpophaga furnish a very important article of food in some of the islands. Some of the species of Péelonopus are exceedingly beautiful. Megapodes

are found in a few of the western islands ; the kagu (Rhinochetus jubatus) has

its home on New Caledonia ; and in Samoa the Didunculus strigtrostris has its habitat.. This bird is remarkable as being the nearest relative of the extinct dodo. — Some time ago it was rarely found, and was becoming extinct. It fed and nested.on the ground, and was destroyed by cats and rats after they were introduced. Of late it has changed

its habits: it now feeds, nests, and roosts upon trees, and’

is, in consequence, increasing in numbers. Certain non- venomous snakes are found in many of the islands. Insect life is abundant, and some of the butterflies are very beautiful. ;

The lagoons formed by the coral reefs around the islands invariably abound in fish, many of them most gor- geous in their colouring,—vying in this respect with the parrots of Australia. Fish form a very important part of the food supply. |

One of the most wonderful creatures in the marine fauna of Polynesia is the palolo (Palola viridis), an annelid which appears upon the surface of the ocean, near the edge of the coral reef, at certain seasons of the year. The palolo are from 9 to 18 inches long, and about {th of an inch thick. They are eaten by the natives, and are esteemed a great delicacy. They live in the inter- stices of the coral reef, and are confined to’a few localities. About 3 o’clock on the morning following the third quartering of the October moon they invariably appear upon the surface of the water ; generally they are in such quantities that they may be taken up by the handful. Soon after the sun rises they begin to break, and by 9 o’clock a.m. they have broken to pieces and disappeared. The morning following the third quarter of the November moon they again appear in the samc manner, but usually in smaller quantities. After that they are not again seen until October of the next year. They appear thus to deposit their ova, which is done by the break- ing to pieces of the female worms; the males also break in the same manner, the ova being fertilized while floating in the water. Thus the parents are

destroyed in propagating their species. The eggs gradually sink down to the reef where they are hatched. The young papolo then live about the reef until the next year, when they repeat the process. Year by year these creatures appear according to lunar time. Yet, in the long run, they keep solar time. This they do by keeping two cycles, one of three years and one of twenty-nine years. In the short cycle there are two inter- vals of twelve lunations each, and one of thirteen lunations. These thirty-seven lunations bring lunar, time somewhat near to solar time. But in the course of twenty-nine years there will be suffi- cient difference to require the addition of another lunation ; the twenty-ninth year is therefore one of thirteen instead of twelve lunations. In this way they do not chauge their season during an entire century. So certain has been their appearance that in Samoa

they have given their name to the spring season, which is vae-—

palolo, or the time of palolo.?

The Atolls.—The atolls differ in almost every respect from the islands of volcanic origin. Little that is said of one class would be true of the other. These coral islands are all low, generally not more than 10 or 12 feet above high-water mark. They are simply sandbanks formed by the accumulation of debris washed on to the reefs during strong winds. Hence they are usually in the shape of a narrow band, varying from a few yards to one-third of a mile across, near the outer edge of the reef, with a lagoon in the centre. In some of the smaller atolls the circle of land is almost or entirely complete, but in most of those of larger dimensions there are breaks to leeward, and the sea washes freely over the reef into the lagoon. Where the circle of land is complete the sea-water gains access to the central lagoon through the reef underneath the islands. In some it bubbles up at the rise of the tide in the midst of the lagoons, forming immense natural fountains. This has been observed producing a specially fine effect at Nui in the Ellice group. Some of these atolls are not more than 3 or 4 miles in their greatest length. Others are many

miles long. They are not all circular, but are of all con- ceivable shapes.?

1 For fuller details, see article by th i i Zool. Soc. of Lond., 1875, p. 496. dilate? 2 On the formation of atolls and Cona.s, vol. vi. 877, and Pactric,

vol. xviii. p. 128.

of coral reefs generally, see | Ellice Islands the people domesticate frigate-birds.

P OLD Bas 14

Two of the atolls known to the present writer are remarkable. The lagoons in them are of fresh water. One of these is Lakena in the Ellice group, the other Olosenga, or Quiros Island, in 11° 2’S. lat. and 171° W. long. Both are small circular islands, and in both the lagoon is shut off from the sea. Olosenga is less than 4 – miles in diameter, the lagoon occupying over 3 miles, leaving a ring of land around it less than half a mile across. In some places the lagoon is at least 6 fathoms deep. This bulk of fresh water cannot, therefore, be the result of drainage. There is much to favour the opinion that both this island and Lakena are situated over the craters of former volcanoes, and that there is submarine connexion between them and some of the larger islands situated on the volcanic ridge from which the body of fresh water must come. Olosenga is about 200 miles distant from Samoa. In that group mountain streams sometimes fall into chasms and totally disappear under- ground. In this way subterranean lakes may be formed in some of the cavities which we may suppose volcanic eruptions to leave. It is not difficult to suppose that there would be subterranean connexion between these lakes and an isolated crater 200 miles distant. If so, as the crater participated in the subsidence of the region on the edge of which it is situated, the water would rise in it until, if the supply were sufficient, it there found an outlet. This appears to be what occurs at Olosenga. The lake has never been properly examined and sounded. It is, however, of considerable depth in the centre, where the water is said sometimes to bubble up as if from a great spring, and at low tide it is seen to percolate through the sand on the outer or sea side of the land.

The vegetation of the atolls is extremely poor, not more than about fifty species of plants being found in the Tokelau, Ellice, and Gilbert groups, in all of which groups collec-. tions have been made. All the species consist of littoral plants found in the volcanic islands. Most of them have their seeds enveloped in thick husks, which specially fit them for being carried by currents. Doubtless it is in this way that the atolls have received their flora.

The cocoa-nut, is abundant on most of these islands. This most useful palm will grow on any sandbank in the tropics, and it is benefited by having its roots in soil saturated with sea water. Unlike the natives of volcanic islands, those dwelling on the atolls eat the raw kernel of the nut in large quantities. Indeed that, with fish and the fruit of

a screw-pine (Pandanus), constitutes the main food supply

on some atolls. The people make the pulp of the pandanus into a kind of cake, in appearance much like a quantity of old dates. In some atolls a somewhat elaborate system of cultivation has*been adopted, by means of which a coarse kind of taro, banana, the bread-fruit, &c., are grown. These low islands suffer much from drought, and the natural soil is nothing but sand. The people, therefore, form wide trenches by removing the sand until they get within about 2 to 3 feet of the sea-level. Into the trenches they put all the vegetable refuse and manure they can obtain, and, as there is more moisture at this level, those excavated gardens are comparatively fertile. Under the influence of a Christian civilization, which is growing, and by the introduction of new food-producing plants, the condition of the natives is improving; but they still suffer much at times from long-continued seasons of drought.

The fauna of the atolls consists mainly of a few birds, some lizards, and insects. Fish abound about the reefs, and most of the natives are deep-sea fishermen. In the Large numbers of these pets may be seen about the villages.

ii | | | | | il a a PY a i

PORWR EST A 421

As the birds are accustomed to visit different islands when the wind is favourable, the people send by them small presents (fish-hooks, &c.) to their friends. Christian mis- sionaries also occasionally use them as letter-carriers for communicating with one another.

Elevated Coral Islands.—There are comparatively few of the elevated coral islands in Polynesia, but they are so distinct from both the atolls and the

volcanic islands that they need a separate description. They all lie within or near the lines marking off the volcanic ridge upon the map. South of the volcanic ridge there are many coral reefs forming shoals. The elevated coral islands doubtless were once such reefs. Lying within the area of volcanic action, they have participated in the upward movement, and have been raised from shoals to become islands. Some have evidently been lifted by successive stages and apparently by sudden movements. This is clearly seen

in the Loyalty Islands. On approaching them one sees |

high coral cliffs, in appearance much like the chalk cliffs of England, except that they are often some distance inland and not close on the shore. The island of Maré may be taken as a good type of the class. Here, between the shore and the coral cliffs, there is a tract of level land varying from a few yards to perhaps one-fourth of a mile or more across. On this level tract the people mainly dwell. At the back of this there rises a perpendicular wall of coral, in some places as much as a hundred feet high. The cliff is water-worn, and has in it large caverns, showing that for a long period it was the coast-line. Still farther inland there are two similar though smaller cliffs, indicating that there were three distinct upheavals. These must have been at very long intervals. At present the island is fringed with a coral reef, and if it were now to be lifted from fifty to one hundred feet the present coast-line would form another cliff, while the present coral reef would form another low plot similar to that upon which the people now dwell.

These islands are old enough to have a considerable depth of vegetable soil upon them. The low land between the coast and the first cliff is well stocked with cocoa-nut and other trees. None of the islands can be compared with the volcanic islands for fertility, all having a less rich

soil and being much drier; still they are fairly fertile.

They suffer sometimes from drought, but are much less seriously affected in this way than the atolls.

The flora of the elevated coral islands is less rich than that of the volcanic islands, but much richer than that of the atolls. The island of Niue may be taken as a fair specimen of this class. Its flora probably contains between

400 and 500 species, nearly all being such as are found on adjacent volcanic islands. The fauna is also much richer than that of the atolls, but poorer than that of the volcanic islands. Birds are numerous. While most of the speciés are identical with those found in neighbouring volcanic islands, there are some interesting local variations well illustrating the modifications which take place from isola- tion under changed surroundings. In some _ instances the differences are so great that local forms have been classed not only as varieties but as distinct species.

Climate.—The climate of the islands varies considerably, as may be naturally expected when the wide area covered is remembered, and the vast difference there is between the islands themselves. Some, especially the elevated coral islands, are very healthy for tropical regions. Speaking generally, the average reading of the thermometer over a large extent of Polynesia is about 80° Fahr. It very seldom sinks lower than 60°, and, owing to the small size of most of the islands, and the prevalence of trade-winds during the greater portion of the year, the heat is always moderated, and rarely becomes intense. Yet, owing to the

| constant heat and to the humidity of the atmosphere,

the climate in the mountainous islands is trying to the European constitution. But in this respect there is a great difference even between groups which, looked at superficially, appear to be similar, and which lie within almost the same parallels of latitude. All the islands eastward from and including Fiji are much more healthy than are those to the west. In the eastern section fever and ague are of rare occurrence; in the western section European missionaries do not find it expedient to remain for long periods on the islands owing to the weakening effects of frequent attacks of these diseases. The most remarkable thing is that natives of the eastern section suffer even more than Europeans when they go to live in the western islands, the mortality among them being very great. Numerous attempts have been made to evangelize the New Hebrides through the agency of natives of the Samoan, Cook, and Society groups; but, owing to the great mortality among the agents, their efforts have failed. Yet these people have lived there under condi- tions very similar to those they were accustomed to at home, the heat being about the same, and the food similar, as well as the

general mode of life. The causes of the difference are as yet unknown. Possibly the explanation will be found in differences of natural drainage. It has often occurred to the present writer, though only as an unverified theory, that the bases of these western islands are, like that of New Caledonia, of older formation, and that the islands are only superficially volcanic. If so, this may account for their unhealthiness as compared with the purely volcanic islands within the same parallels of lati- tude. In comparison with most tropical countries there is little dysentery in Polynesia; but this also is more com- mon in the west than in the east.

The elevated coral islands are always much more healthy

-than are those of volcanic formation in their immediate

neighbourhood. They are drier, being always well drained, have much less dense vegetation, and receive the benefit of the trade-winds which blow right across them. They, however, sometimes suffer from drought such as is unknown on the volcanic islands. The atolls may be called—if the term can be applied to tiny islets scattered over the expanse of ocean—the deserts of the Pacific. The soil being almost entirely sand, and the vegetation afford- ing little shade, the heat and glare, especially of those lying close to the equator, are exceedingly trying to European visitors. Being so low—only a few feet above the ocean—there is nothing to attract the clouds, and the rainfall is small. The islands are therefore subject to frequent droughts, which are sometimes of month's dura- tion ; and at such times even the fronds of the cocoa-nut palm get a shrivelled appearance, and the trees cease to bear fruit. Sometimes the people suffer greatly during these long-continued droughts, many being starved to death. At best their food supply is confined to cocoa- nuts, pandanus, fruit, and fish, but in times of drought they are forced to chew the roots of shrubs. Hurricanes.—A great portion of southern Polynesia is subject to destructive cyclones. The tract over which they pass may be said to be, generally, that of the volcanic chain indicated by the lines on the map, although the northern edge of this region is not so subject to cyclones as the southern portion. A line drawn parallel to the lines of the map, through the middle of the New Hebrides group, and extending south of Fiji, will well represent the centre of the cyclone tract. The hurricane season is from December to April. Some islands are visited

by a more or less destructive cyclone nearly every year; Samoa lies on the upper edge of the tract, and gets one, on an average, about every seven oreight years. Although these cyclones

dre not usnally so severe as those which visit the seas of eastern Asia, they are often exceedingly destructive, sweeping almost everything down in their course. _ They last only a few hours. Heavy seas are raised in the line of progress, and vessels are generally exposed to greater danger when lying at anchor at the ports than when in the open sea. The cyclones are always accom- panied by considerable electric disturbances, especially when they are passing away.

Diseases.—Apart from the fever, ague, and dysentery already alluded to, there is comparatively little disease in any portion of Polynesia. The principal purely native diseases are such as affect the skin. A form of elephan- tiasis prevails more or less on all the damp mountainous islands. Many Europeans are subject to it, especially those who are much exposed to the sun by day and the dews by night. In some of the atolls where the people have little good vegetable food and eat a great quantity of fish, much of it often in a state unfit for food, skin diseases are even more common than in the mountainous islands. ‘There are reputed cases of leprosy in the Gilbert Islands, and that disease is well known to be one of the scourges of the Hawaiian archipelago. Several European diseases have been introduced into the islands,—those which are epidemic usually, at the first visitation, working great havoc among the natives. Many in Europe and America appear to attribute the great mortality which occurs among native races, when an epidemic is introduced among them, to weakness and want of stamina in their constitution ; but a more probable explanation is found in the fact that, on the introduction of measles or smallpox, all the inhabitants of an island are suitable subjects, that the population of entire villages are prostrated at once, that there are no doctors or nurses, none even to feed the sick or to give them drink, and not even the most ordin- ary care is taken by the sufferers themselves to lessen the danger.1 In some islands, especially the Hawaiian group syphilis, first imported by Captain Cook’s expedition, has wrought great havoc. It spread very rapidly, because, at that time, there

was almost promiscuous intercourse between the sexes; and this has been one of the chief causes of the physical deterioration and of the rapid decrease of the natives of Hawaii. The disease has been introduced into other islands in later times through the visits of European and American sailors ; but, owing to the influence of Christian teaching, which has in many cases gone first and has produced a change for the better in the relations of the sexes, it has not generally spread.

Races.—There are three different kinds of people inhabiting the islands of Polynesia. The region occupied by each is indicated by one of the colours on Plate III., and in the subjoined table of Indo-Pacific peoples the affinity of these races is exhibited.2 It will be seen that there are two broad and very distinct divisions, — the dark and the brown races. The dark people occupy Australia, the Andaman Islands, portions of the Indian archipelago, and western Polynesia, and have more or less remote affinity with the natives of South Africa. The brown people are found in Madagascar, the Indian Archipelago, Formosa, north-western and eastern Poly- nesia, together with New Zealand, and are clearly of Asiatic origin.

There are in Polynesia people who belong to both the dark and

the light sections of the Indo-Pacific races. At present the dark are found only in the western islands as far as Fiji. In some islands

1 In these warm islands the people are generally accustomed to bathe often. When measles prevailed in Fiji many of those who were in a high fever crawled to the bathing places to cool them- selves, and many died there. islands of the Ellice group about a fortnight after a trading vessel from Sydney, which had influenza on board. This vessel had taken some of the natives from one island to another as passengers, and at three of the islands the entire population was suffering from the epidemic. been utterly helpless.

2 Compare Mr Whitmee’s

aper on this subject in Journ, , Inst. Lond., 1879. = S subject in Journ. Anthrop

The present writer once visited several |

Had this been a more severe disease the people would have |

| some islands they are lighter than in others. | supposed that their hair grew in smal] tufts.

POUL WEST A

they are considerably mixcd with the lighter race, and in many places within the region occupied by them are colonies of the light people who keep themselves distinct. For this dark race the name Papuan is here used. They have generally been known of late

| years as Melanesians, but Papuan is an older name which has | always been used for part of the race, and which clearly ought to _be extended to the whole.

The region which they inhabit is coloured yellow on the map, and the pink bands across it indicate the presence of some of the light race there.

The whole of eastcrn Polynesia is inhabited by a light brown people to whom the name Sawaidri is here given. They extend out of Polynesia to New Zealand. They have also formed colonies among the Papuans in various places, and in some instances they have become mixed in blood with the blacks among whom they have settled. The pink colour in the map indicates this region.

The third kind of people, here called Tarapon,* inhabit the northern portion of western Polynesia, the islands generally known as Micronesia (coloured green on the map).

The following table shows the relationship of the Indo-Pacific races (Polynesian names in italics):—

Races, Countries where found. (Austral. Australia. | ‘ Andaman Islands, . | ‘ gg | Negrito. Samang, &¢. ; Aru Islands, Polynesians. (Western New Guinea. Papuan. Solomon Islands, &c. New Hebrides, de. Indo- Fiji. Pacific Samoa, &e, Races of Hawati. Men. Sawatori, Cook Islands, cc. Socicty Islands, dc. New Zealand. ES mi: Malagasy. Madagascar. Heino: Formosan.

Formosa. : Malays of Sumatra, &c. \ Polynesians. | Malayan. a g Caroline Islands. Tarapon. Marshal Islands. Gilbert Islands.

I. The Papwans.—This name is that uscd by the Malays of the Indian Archipelago for the black, frizzly-haired people found in the Aru Islands and New Guinea. ‘That the inhabitants of the western portion of Polynesia ought to be classed with these Papuans there can be no doubt. The older name is therefore adopted here to include the whole, rather than the newer and less distinctive name Melanesian which has been applied to only a part of the race. A general description of the people is all that can be given here; for further details the reader is referred to the articles MELANESIA, New Guinea, &c. In speaking of the affinities of the Papuans

ith other peoples much caution is required; but there is some reason for thinking they may be remotely classified, together with all the other black people of the southern hemisphere, with the tribes of South Africa.’ See NEcRo.

The Papuans are mostly black, but are not of a jet black. In It was long popularly

This was, however, a mistake which probably arose from the manner in which many of them are accustomed to dress it, On some islands the men collect their hair into small bunches, and carefully bind each bunch round with fine vegetable fibre from the roots up to within about two inches of the ends. Dr Turner® gives a good description of this process. He once counted the bunches on a young man’s head, and

3 There has hitherto been no one well understood name used for this people. They are generally called “ Polynesians ” simply, some- times “ Malayo-Polynesians,” and recently the name “ Mahori” (a vile corruption of “ Maori”) has been proposed forthem. For evident reasons we need some more distinct name than Polynesian. Malayo- Polynesian cannot be confined to them, but must rather be extended to the whole family of which they are but a branch. Sawaiori is a compound from Sa-moa, Ha-wai-i, and Ma-ort, thus derived from the native names of the three principal peoples.

4 The name “ Micronesians” has been generally adopted. Mr Horatio Hale, in his great work on the Ethnography and Philology of the United States Exploring Expedition, adopted Térawa—the name of one of the Gilbert Islands, there being no native name for the entire group—for the language of that group. The present writer

| takes part of this name, 7ér-a-wa, and part of the name of the prin-

cipal island in the Caroline Islands, viz., Pon-a-pe, to form the com- pound name Jér-a-pon. > The Rev. R. H. Codrington believes the Papuan (Melanesian) lan- guages belong to the same stock as the rest of the Polynesian languages. But, as is pointed out by Prof. Keane, he entirely overlooks the phy- sical aspects of the question. See Journ. Anthrop. Soc. Lond., 1884. § Nineteen Years in Polynesia, pp. 77, 78; Samoa, pp. 308-310.

POULWRESKA

found nearly seven hundred. He calls attention to the resemblance | between the head of a Papuan, with his hair thus dressed, and the |

conventional representation of the hair in Egyptian and Assyrian sculptures, and to what Dr Livingstone says about the Banyai of South Africa, who dress their hair in a similar manner. When allowed to grow naturally, the hair of a Papuan is always frizzly. Some of the people have a considerable beard.

In the features of the Papuans there is considerable difference ; but in a typical specimen the lips are thick, the nose is broad, often arched and high, and the jaws project; as a rule, thie race is prognathous. They are generally small in stature, but in some islands age large. Where, however, they are of large size, we in- variably’ find other evidence of their mixture with another race. Speaking, therefore, of typical Papuans, we may say they are small, with thin limbs, and are physically weak. In their natural condi- tion they are a savage people and are cannibals. They are broken up into hostile tribes, holding no intercourse with one another ex- cept by warfare. The languages or dialects! spoken by them are very numerous, owing, no doubt, to their hostility towards one another, which has produced complete

isolation. In grammatical structure there is considerable resemblance between their languages, but owing to long isolation the verbal differences have become very great. Several different dialects are often found on one island.

Among them women hold a very low position. Nearly all the hard work falls to their share, the men devoting themselves chiefly to warfare. The women cultivate the plantations, carry the burdens, and wait on the men. They take their food from the leavings of the men. Among most of them family life is not greatly elevated above the relationships existing among the lower animals, the relations between the sexes being of the inost degraded character. There is, however, considerable affection often manifested towards their children. The Papuans are impulsive and demonstrative in speech and action. They are generally a wild, noisy, boistcrous people, easily pleased and as easily offended. They differ so much in different islands, however, that it is extremely difficult to generalize concerning some of their characteristics. Many of them are decidedly low intellectually. On some islands they appear to be physically and intellectually a weak and worn-out race. Yet this must not be understood as applying to all. On some islands youths and men may be seen who are among the brightest and niost intelligent-looking people in the Pacific. A vast difference exists between the natives of parts of the New Hebrides and those of the Loyalty Islands, the latter .being much the finer. Mixture of blood may partly account for the difference. Difference of physical surroundings, doubtless, also has something to do with it. The dry, comparatively barren, and cooler islands of the Loyalty group ought to have a finer people upon them than the inalarious, hot, and moist islands of the New Hebrides. In Fiji some of the finest men in Polynesia are found, but many of the Fijians are considerably mixed with Sawaiori blood.

Asarule, the Papuans lack elaborate historical traditions, poems, and songs, such as are invariably found among the Sawaiori race. They do not naturally possess much religious feeling or reverence, and their religious systems are little more than fetichism. In this respeet, too, they present a marked contrast to the lighter race. In arts and manufactures they are comparatively low, although there are marked exceptions. Usually their houses are very poor structures. Onmany islands their canoes are of inferior

construction. As a race they are indifferent navigators. Their arms are, however, somewhat elaborately made; and most of them make a coarse kind of pottery. In some parts of the Solomon Islands the people build much better houses than are usually found among the Papuans, carving some of the woodwork rather elaborately. They also build good canoes or boats. In Fiji the natives build good houses and good boats, but there the people have learned some of their arts from the Sawaioris. It may be so also in the Solomon group. Indeed, throughout the whole of the Papuan region, there is evidence of more or less mixture of the two races. In some places there are pure colonies of Sawaioris, who keep themselves distinct from their darker-coloured neighbours; but in many other places the lighter immigrants have intermarried with the black race.

The following are some broad characteristics of the Papuan languages. Consonants arc freely used, some of the consonantal sounds being difficult to represent by Roman characters. Many of the syllables are closed. There does not appear to be any difference between the definite and the indefinite article, except in Fiji. Nouns are divided into two classes, one of which takes a pro- nominal suffix, while the other never takes such a suffix. The principle of this division appears to be a near or remote connexion between the possessor and the thing possessed. Those things which belong to a person, as the parts of his body, &c., take the pro- hominal suffix; a thing possessed merely for use would not take

a No great care is here taken to distinguish between the terms languages and dialects. While all the languages of Polynesia may be included under three classcs, we cannot speak of them as three languages, each with numcrous dialects, any more than we could speak of those languages which have grown out of the Latin as several dialects of one language.

-verbal particle.

it. Thus, in Fijian the word Juve means either a son or a daughter—one’s own child, and it takes the possessive pronoun suffixed, as lwvena; but the word ngone, a child, but not neces- sarily one’s own child, takes the possessive pronoun before it, as nona ngone, his child, 7.¢., his to look after

or bring up.? Gender is only sexual. Many words are used indiscriminately, as nouns, adjectives, or verbs, without change; but sometimes a noun is indicated by its termination. In most of the languages there are no changes in nouns to form the plural, but an added numeral indicates number. Case is shown by particles, which precede the nouns. Adjectives follow their substantives. Pronouns are numer- ous, and the personal pronoun includes four numbers—singular, dual, trinal, and general plural, also inclusive and exclusive. Almost any word may be made into a verb by using with it a The difference in the verbal particles in the different languages are very great. In the verbs there are causative, intensive or frequentative, and reciprocal forms.

II. The Sawatort Race.—The brown people who occupy the islands of eastern Polynesia are generally regarded as having affinities with the Malays of the Indian Archipelago, and are sometimes spoken of as a branch of the Malay race, or family. They cannot, however, with any accuracy be so described. The Malays, as they now exist, are a comparatively modern people, who have become what they are by the mixture of several elements not found in the more primitive race. The Sawaioris and the Tarapons of Polynesia, the Malagasy (Hovas) of Madagascar, and the Malays are allied races, but uo one of them can be regarded as the parent of the rest. The parent race has disappeared ; but the Sawaiori, as the earliest offshoot froin it, and one which, owing to the conditions under which it has lived, has remained almost free from admixture of blood, may be taken as most nearly representing what the parent was. The relationship which these Malayo-Polynesian 3 races bear to one another is seen from the ‘‘trce” on Plate III.

The absence of Sanskrit (or Prakrit) roots in the languages appears to indicate that the Sawaiori migration was in _pre- Sanskritic times. Whether we can fix anything like a definite date for this may well be questioned. Mr Fornander® has, how- ever, with great probability, traced back the history of the Hawaiians to the 5th century. He has studied the folk-lore of those islands exhaustively, and from this source comes to the con- clusion that the Sawaiori migration from the Indian Archipelago may be approximately assigned to the close of the first or to the second century. Most likely Samoa was the first group per- manently occupied by them. Owing to the admixture of the Sawaioris with the Papuans in Fiji some authorities have

thought – the first settlement was in those islands, and that the settlers were eventually driven thence by the Papuan occupiers. We can, how- ever, account for the presence of Sawaiori blood in Fiji in another way, viz., by the intercourse that has been kept up between the people of Tonga and Fiji. If the first resting-place of the Sawaioris was in that group, there is good reason to believe that Samoa was the first permanent home of the race, and that from Samoa they have spread to the other islands which they now occupy.

It used to be doubted whether these people could have gone from the Indian Archipelago so far eastward, because the prevailing winds and currents are from the east. But it is now well known that at times there are westerly winds in the region over which they would have to' travel, and that there would be no insuperable difficulties in the way of such a voyage. The Sawaioris are invariably navigators. There is ample evidence that in early times they were much better seamen than they are at present. Indeed their skill in navigation has greatly declined since they have becouic known. to Europeans. They used to construct decked vessels capable of carrying one or two hundred persons, with water and stores sufficient for a voyage of some weeks' duration. These vessels were made of planks well fitted and sewn together, the joints being calked and pitched.* It is only in recent times that the construc- tion of such vessels has ceased. The pcople had a knowledge of the stars, of the rising and setting of the constellations at different seasons of the year. By this means they determined the favourable season for making a voyage and directed their course.

The ancestors of the Sawaioris were by no means a savage people when they entered the Pacific. Indeed their elaborate historical legends show that they possessed a considerable amount of civiliza- tion. Those who are familiar with these legends, and who have studied Sawaiori manners and customs, sec many unmistakable proofs that they carried with them, at the time of their migration, knowledge and culture which raised them much above the status of savages, and that during their residence in these islands the

2 Hazlewood's Fijian Grammar, pp. 8 and 9.

3 Baron W. von Humboldt's name, Malayo-Polynesian, is here retained as a convenient term to include all these people, from Madagasear to Polynesia.

4 It is possible to make too much of the absence of Sanskrit (or Prakrit) roots, since, as remarked by Dr Rost, " there may have been no occasion for the intro- duction of ready-made terms into the language." Still the migration may be tentatively put in pre-Sanskritic times.

5 The Polynesian Race, vol. i. p. 168.

6 Cocoa-nut fibre and the gum which exudes from the bread-fruit tree are generally used for " ealking" and "pitehing" canoes,

race has greatly deteriorated. Some indications of their former condition will appear in the following account of the people.

The Sawaioris are, physically, a very fine race. On some islands they average 5 feet 10 inches in height. De Quatrefages, in a table giving the stature of different races of men,! puts the natives of Samoa and Tonga as the largest people in the world. He gives the average height of this race as being 5 feet 9°92 inches. 'They are well developed in proportion to their height. Their colour is a brown, lighter or darker generally according to the amount of their exposure to the sun,—being darker on some of the atolls where the people spend much time in fishing, and ainong fisher- men on the volcanic islands, and lighter among women, chiefs, and others less exposed than the bulk of the people. Their hair is black and straight; but in individual cxaimples it is sometimes wavy, or shows a tendeney to curl. They have very little beard. Their features are generally fairly regular ; eyes invariably black, and in some persons oblique; jaws not projecting, except In a few instances; lips of medium thickness ; noses generally short, but rather wide at the bases. Their foreheadsare fairly high, but rather narrow. When they are young many of the people of both sexes are good-looking. 'The men often have more regular features than the women. In former times more attention was paid to personal appearance and adornment among men than among the women.

As a race the Sawaioris are somewhat apathetic, They differ, however, in different islands, according to their surroundings. Most of them live in an enervating climate where nature is very lavish of her gifts. Hence they lead easy lives. On the more barren islands, and on those more distant from the equator, the natives have much more energy. Under certain eircumstances they become excitable, and manifest a kind of care-for-nothing spirit. This is only occasionally seen, and chiefly in time of war, in a family dispute, or on some other occasion when they are deeply moved. In the time of their heathenism they were strict in their religious observances, and religion came into almost every action of life. They were, in most instances, with comparative case led to accept Christianity, and this characteristic has remained under the new condition of things. They are a shrewd people, with quick intelligence, and they possess naturally a large amount of common sense. Where they have from early years enjoyed the advantages of a good education, Sawaiori youths have proved them- selves to possess intellectual powers of no mean order. They are almost invariably fluent speakers; with many of them oratory seems to be a natural gift; it is also carefully cultivated. A Sawaiori orator will hold the interest of his hearers for hours together at a political gathering, and in his speech he will bring in historical allusions and precedents, and will make apt quota- tions from ancient legends in a manner which would do credit to the best parliamentary orators. Many of thcin are very brave, and think little of self-sacrifice for others where dnty or family honour is concerned.

The terms for family among this race are used in two senses— (1) of a household, and (2) of all blood relations on both the male and the female side, including the wife or the husband, as the case may be, brought in by marriage, —also those who have been adopted by meinbers of the clan. In the following remarks the word family is used with the first meaning, and clan with the second. Each clan has a name which is usually borne by one of the oldest meinbers, who is the chief or head for the time being. This clan system no doubt generally prevailed in early times, and was the origin of the principal chieftainships. But changes have been made in most of the islands. In some the head of one clan has become king over several. In many cases large clans have been divided into sections under secondary heads, and have even been subdivided. The different classes of chieftainships may probably be thus accounted for.

As arule, near relations do not intermarry. In some islands this rule is rigidly adhered to. There have been exceptions, however, especially in the case of high chiefs; but usually great care is taken to prevent the union of those within the prescribed limits of consanguinity. Children generally dwell with their kin on the father's side, but they have equal rights on the mother's side, and sometimes they take up their abode with their mother's family. The only names used to express particular relation- ships are father and mother, son and daughter, brother and sister.

SS Se

1 The Human Species (International Scientific Series), pp. 57-60. :

2 Of various acts by Sawaioris which indicate the possession of bravery and self-possession under trying circumstances the following may serve as a sample. Some lads belonging to two villages in Samoa fell out, and began stone-throwing. One of them, who was the son of a chief, was struck and, it was feared, waskilled. As soon as this was known to the young men of the village they armed them- selves in order to go to the other village to seek reparation, according to a custom of former times, by killing some one belonging to the family of the boy who had thrown the stone. A report preceded thein that they were going, and a young man, @ Cousin of the boy, in order to prevent a fight, quietly walked out of the village to meet the avengers of blood. When he met them he calmly said, ‘‘ You are coming to avenge your brother. I am brother to the boy who killed him. Do not g0 further ; kill me and be avenged, so that our villages may remain at peace. His conduct somewhat disconcerted the party, and by the timely arrival of a Christian teacher matters were settled without bloodshed.

: relative of the deceased, as an additional wife.

Powys Bera

There is usually no distinction between brothers (or sisters) and cousins, all the children of brothers and sisters speak of each other as brothers and sisters, and they call uncles and aunts fathers and mothers. Above the relationship of parents all are simply ancestors, no term being used for grandfather which would not equally apply to any more remote male

ancestor. In the same way there is no distinctive term for grandchild. A man speaks of his grandchild as his son or daughter, or simply as his child.? Polygamy was often practised, especially by chiets, and also con- cubinage. In some places a widow was taken by the brother of her deceased husband, or, failing the brother, by some other Divorce was an easy inatter, and of frequent occurrence ; but, as a rule, a divorced wife would not marry again without the eonsent of her forimer husband. An adulterer was always liable to be killed by the aggrieved husband, or by some member of his clan. If the cnlprit himself could not be reached, any member of the clan was liable to suffer in his stead. In some islands female virtue was highly re- garded. Perhaps of all the groups Samoa stood highest in this respect. There was a special ordcal through which a bride passed to prove her virginity, and a proof of her immorality bronght dis- grace upon all her relatives. But in other islands there was much freedom in the relations of the sexes. Owing to the almost promiscuous intercourse which prevailed among a portion of the race, in some groups titles descended through the mother and not through the fathcr. In Hawaii there was a peculiar system of marriage relationship, ‘‘brothers with their wives, and sisters with their husbands, possessing each other in common.” There also, especially in the case of chiefs and chieftainesses, brothers and sisters sometimes intermarried. But these custonis did not pre- vail in other groups. It is almost certain that they did not prevail in Hawaii in early times, but that they were the result of that deterioration in the race which their traditions and many of their customs indicate.*

Women have always occupied a relatively high position among the Sawaioris. In most groups they have great influence and are treated with much respect. In some eases they take hereditary titles and hold high offices. As among their congeners in Mada- gascar, so also in parts of Polynesia, there may be a quecn or a chieftainess in her own right; and a woman in high position will command as much respeet, and will exercise as great authority, as a man would in the same position. Everywhere infanticide prevailed ; in some of the smaller islands it was regulated by law in order to prevent over-population. It was also a very common practice to destroy the foetus, yet, even before the reception of Christianity, parents were affectionate towards the children who were spared. The practice of adopting children was, and still is, common. Often there is an exchange

made between members of the same clan; but sometimes there is adoption from without. Tattooing generally prevailed among the men, different patterns being followed in different groups of islands, In some a larger portion of the body is tattooed than in others, A youth was con- sidered to be in his minority until he was tattooed, and in former times he would have no chance of marrying until he had, by sub- mitting to this process, proved himself to be a man. Puberty in the other sex was generally marked by feasting, or some other demonstration, among the female friends. Old age is generally honoured. Often an inferior chief will give up his title to a younger man, yet he himself will lose but little by so doing. The neglect of aged persons is extremely rare.

Property belonging to a clan is held in common. Each clan usually possesses land, an.l over this no one member has an exclusive right, but all have an equal right to use it. The chief or recog- nized head of the clan or section alone can properly dispose of it or assign its use for a time to an outsider; and even he is expected to obtain the consent of the heads of families before he alienates the property. Thus land is handed down through successive generations

3 Dr Lewis H. Morgan in Ancient Society, pp. 419-423, makes the Sawaioris to have distinctive terms for grandfather, grandmother, grandson, and grand- daughter. In this he is entirely mistaken. It is evident from his own lists that the Hawaiian kupuna means simply an ancestor. In like manner moopuna simply means a descendent of any generation after the first. :

- Morgan has founded one of his forms of family—the consanguine—on the supposed existence in former times among the Malays and Polynesians of the custom of ‘‘intermarriage of brothers and sisters, own and collateral, in a group.” All the cvidence he finds in support of this is (1) the existence of the custom above mentioned in Hawaii, and (2) the absence of special terms for the relaticn- ship of uncle, aunt, and cousin, this indicating, he thinks, that these were regarded as fathers, mothers, brothers, and sisters. He admits that “the usages with respect to marriage which prevailed when the system was formed may not prevail at the present time.” But he adds, “To sustain the deduction

it is not necessary that they should” (Ancient Society, p. 408). Morgan has given Special terms for grandfather and grandmother, because it would prove too much to show that the people had no grandfathers, &c. But these terms are used for ancestors of any generation, The terms used for grandchildren, in like manner, are used for any generation of descendants. He says (p. 406) the terms of husband and wife are used in common by a group of sisters or brothers, but tle fact is that the words used for husband and wife in Hawaii simply mean male and female. In some islands there are terms used for wife in the most strict

sense. The word wife is not uscd more cxclusively among us than among some Sawaiori people.

Petia NHS 1A

under the nominal control of the recognized head of the clan or section for the time being. Changes have been made in many

the joint ownership of property in clans was common among the entire race in former times.

In early times the head of each clan was supreme among his |

own people, but in all matters he had associated with him the principal men or heads of families in the clan. Their united authority extended over all the members and the possessions of the clan, and they were independent of every other clan. some places vestiges of this primitive state of society still remain-

traced by means of the ancient legends in some islands, and in

others it is a matter of recent history. One clan being more |

numerous and stronger than another, and its chief being ambitious, itis easy to see how by conquering a neighbouring clan he increased the importance of his clan and extended his own power. In some

of the islands this transition process has hardly yet developed into |

an absolute monarchy. We may even sce two or three stages of the progress. In one instance a certain clan has the right to nominate the principal chief over an entire district ; though it is known as the ruling clan, its rule is mainly confined to this nomination, and to decision for or against war. In all other respects the district en- joys the privilege of self-government. In another case the nominal king over a district, or over an entire island, can be elected only from among the members of a certain clan, the monarchy being elective within that alone ; but this king has little authority. In other cases a more despotic monarchy has grown up—the prowess of one man Icading to the subjugation of other clans. Even in this case the chiefs or heads of clans sometimes still hold their property and rule over their own people, only rendering a kind of feudal service and paying tribute to the king.

The Sawaioris are exceedingly fond of rank and of titles. Much deference is paid to chiefs and to persons of rank ; and special terms are generally employed in addressing these. Every part of a chief's body and all his belongings have names different from those employed for common people. 'The grade of rank which a person occupies will often be indicated by the language in which he is addressed. Thus, in Samoa there are four different terms for to come :—sau is for a common man ; maliu mad is a respectful term for a person without a title ; swsw maz for a titled chief ; and ajio mai for a member of the royal family. In addressing chiefs, or others to whom one wishes to be respectful, the singular number of the personal pronoun is rarely used; the dual is employed instead, —the dual of dignity or of respect.

Offices and titles are seldom hereditary in our sense of the term, as descending from father to son. They are rather elective within the limits of the clan, or the division of a clan, A common practice is for the holder of a high title to nominate a successor ; and his nomination is generally confirmed by the chiefs, or heads of households, with whom the right of election rests. In ancient times the authority of a high chief or king did not usually extend to any details of government. But in Hawaii there are traditions of a wise king who interested himself in promoting the social

well- being of the people, and made good laws for their guidance.! Usnally all matters affecting a district or an island were settled by the chiefs of the district, while those of a single village were settled by a council consisting of the chiefs and heads of house- holds in the village. In some islands each clan, or each village, would fcel itself at liberty to make war on another clan or village, without consulting the vicws of any higher authority. Indeed the rule was for each clan or district to settle its own affairs. In the case of offences against individuals, either the person injured, or another member of his clan, would avenge the injnry done. For most offences there was some generally recognized punishment— such as death for murder or adultery ; but often vengeance would fall wpon another person instead of the wrongdoer. In avenging wrong, a member of the village or of the clan to which the offender belonged would serve equally well to satisfy their ideas of justice if the culprit himself could not be easily reached. Sometimes all the members of the fainily, or of a village, to which a culprit belonged would flee from their homes and take refuge in another village, or seek the protection of a powerful chief. In some places, in cases of crime, the members of the family or village would convey the

culprit bound—sometimes even carrying him like a pig that is to be |

killed—and place him with apologies before those against whom he had transgressed. The ignominy of such a proceeding was generally considered sufficient atonement for the gravest offences. There were slaves in many islands, either persons conquered in war, or those who had been condemned to lose their personal liberty on account of evil conduct.

Pottery was not manufactured by the Sawaioris. When any of them possessed it they obtained it from the Papuans. In most of their manufactures they were, however, in advance of the Papuans. They made use of the vegetable fibres abounding in the islands, the

1 See a remarkable example in Fornander’s Polynesian Race, vol. ii. p. 89.

There are in | _ and for making fishing nets. ing; the transition to a limited or to a despotic monarchy may be |

women manufacturing cloth, chiefly from the bark of the paper

| mulberry (Aforus papyrifera), but also in some islands from the islands in this respect ; but there can be little reason to doubt that |

bark of the bread-fruit trec, and the hibiscus. This in former times furnished them with most of their clothing. They also made various kinds of mats, baskets, and fans from the leaves of the pandanus, the bark of the hibiscus, from species of bohmeria or other Urticaceous plants. Some of their mats are very beauti- fully made, and in some islands they are the most valuable property the people possess. The people also use the various fibre-producing plants for the manufacture of ropes, coarse string, and fine cord, The nets are often very large, and are netted with a needle and mesh as in hand-nctting among our- selves. The Sawaioris are rather clever workers in wood. Canoe and honse-building are trades nsually confined to certain familics. The large canoes in which they formerly made long voyages are no longer built, but various kinds of smaller canoes are made, from the commonest, which is simply a hollowed-out tree cut into form, to the finely-shaped one built upon a keel, the joints of the various pieces being nicely fitted, and the whole stitched together with cord made from the husk of cocoa-nuts. Some of the larger canoes arc ornamented with rude carving ; and in some islands thcy are somewhat elaborately decorated with inlaid mother of pearl. The houses are gencrally well and elaborately made, but nearly all the ornamentation is put on the inside of the roof. The Sawaioris manufacture several wooden utensils for household use, sch as dishes or deep bowls, ‘‘pillows” or head-rests, and stools. They also make wooden gongs, or drums, which they beat as. they travel in their boats, in their dances, &c. They used to make wooden fishhooks, clubs, spears, and bows. They still make wooden fish- spears ; also carved and inlaid combs. They employ the bamboo for making drums and flutes. Formerly the knives the people used were made of bamboo, which is still sometimes used for that purpose. In the manufacture of these things they employed adzes made of stone, shell, or hard wood, and a wooden drill pointed with stone, shell, or bone. They made mother-of-pearl fishhooks, and they still use a part of those old hooks—or artificial bait—in combination with steel hooks, the native-made portion being generally shaped like a small fish. For water vessels, &c., ay employ gourds and large cocoa-nut shells, in preparing

whic they put water into them and allow the pulp or the kernel to decay, so that it may be removed without breaking the rind or shell. Their drinking cups are made of half a cocga-nut shell. Sharks' teeth, shells, and bamboo were formerly generally used as cutting instruments; shaving was done with them, as well as surgical operations. They employ vegetable dyes for painting their bark cloth, calabashes, &c. In some islands they also use a red earth for this purpose, Their cloth is generally ornamented with geometrical patterns. Any drawings of animals, &c., which they make are exceedingly inartistic, and no attempt is made at pcr- spective. Their musical instruments are few and rude—consisting of the drums and flutes already mentioned, and shell trumpets.

The Sawaioris were all polytheists. Without doubt many of their gods are deified men; but it is clear that some are the forees of nature personified, while others appear to represent human passions which have become identified with particular persons who have au existence in their historical myths.? But the conception which they had of Tangaloa (Taaroa and Kanaloa in some islands) is of a higher order. Among the Tahitians he was regarded as ‘‘the first and principal god, uncreated, and cxisting from the beginning, or from the time he emerged from po, or the world of darkness.”? ‘‘ He was said to be the father of all the gods, and creator of all things, yet was scarcely reckoned an object of worship.”4 Dr Turner says, ‘‘ the unrestricted, or unconditioned, may fairly be regarded as the name of this Samoan Jupiter.”

The worship of certain of the great gods was common to all the people ina group of islands. Others were gods of villages or of families, while others were gods of individuals. The gods of clans were probably the spirits of the ancestors in their own line. In some islands, when the birth of a child was expected, the aid of the gods of the family was invoked, beginning with the god of the father. The god prayed to at the instant of birth became the god of the child. In other places the name of the child's god was declared when the umbilical cord was severed. The gods were supposed to dwell in various animals, iu trees, or even in inanimate objects, as a stone, a shell, &c. In some islands idols bearing more or less resemblance to the human shape were made. But in all cages the material objects were regarded simply as the abodes of the immaterial spirits of the gods.

Their temples were either national, for a single village, or for the god of a family. They were sometimes large stone enclosures (marae), sometimes a grove, ora house. The principal priests were a particular order, the priesthood being hereditary. In some cases,

2 The following recent books may be consulted on this subjeet :—Rev. W. W. Gill’s Myths and Songs from the South Pacific; Dr Turner’s Samoa; and Mr Shortland’s Maori Religion and Mythology,

3 Polynesian Researches, vol. i. p. 323.

4 Tahitian Dictionary. 5 Samoa, p. 52.

however, the father of a family was priest in his own household and presented offerings and prayers to the family god.

There was, in the Socicty Islands, a privileged class known as the Areot. They were the special devotees of two celibate gods. They were not permitted to have children; any children they possessed when they entered the society, and all children subsequently born to them, were destroyed. The name Areoi beeame the synonym for all kinds of licence; the party wandered about from place to place conducting obscene entertainments, and was feasted with the best of all the people possessed. There were seven regular grades among the Areoi society, besides an irregular class of attendants.

In some islands human sacrifices were of frequent oeeurrence ; 1n others they were offered only on very rare and exceptional oecasions, when the demand was made by the priests for something specially valuable. The usual offerings to the gods were food. The system of tapu or tabu so common among the Sawaioris was connected with their religious rites. There were two ways by which things might become tapu, ~~— (1) by contact with anything belonging to the god, as his visible representation or his priest. Probably it was thought that a portion of the sacred essence of the god, or of a sacred per~~ son, was direetly communicable to objects which they touched. (2) Things were made tapu by being dedicated to the god; and it is this form of ¢apw whieh is still kept up. If, ¢.g., any one wishes to preserve his eoeoa-nuts from being taken, he will put something upon the trees to indicate that they are saered or dedicated. They eannot then be used nntil the tapu is removed from them. Disease and death were often connected with the violation of ¢apw, the offended gods thus punishing the offenders. Disease was generally attributed to the anger of the gods. Hence

offerings, &c., were made to appease their anger. The first-fruits of a crop were usually dedi- cated to the gods to prevent them from being angry; and new canoes, fishing-nets, &e., were dedicated by prayers and offerings, in order that the gods might be propitious to their owners in their use.

The Sawaiori people invariably believe in the existence of the spirit of man after the death of the body. Their traditions on the condition of the dead vary considerably in different groups; yet there is a general agreement upon main points. Death is caused by the departure of the spirit from the body. The region of the dead is subterranean. When the spirit leaves the body it is conveyed by waiting spirits to the abode of spirits. In most islands the plaec of descent is known. It is generally towards the west. In some tra- ditions there is a distinetion between chiefs and common people in the spirit world. In others all are much alike in condition. Some traditions indicate a marked distinction between the spirits of warriors and those of others: the former go to a place where they are happy and are immortal, while the latter are devoured by the gods and are annihilated. In some, however, the spirits are said to live again after being eaten. Some speak of the abode of spirits as being in darkness ; but usually the eondition of things is similar to that which exists upon earth. Amongst all the people it is believed that the spirits of the dead are able to revisit the scenes of their earthly life. The visits are generally made in the night, and are often greatly dreaded, especially when there may be any supposed reason for spite on the part of the dead towards living relatives. Some writers have connected cannibalism, where it existed among the Sawaioris, with religious customs. In the Cook and Society Islands, when a human being was offered as a sacrifice, the priest presented an eye of the victim to the king, who either ate it or pre- tended to do so. Probably the earliest human sacrifices were the bodies of enemies slain in battle. As it was supposed by some that the spirits of the dead were eaten by the gods, the bodies of those slain in battle may have been eaten by their victors in triumph. Mr Shortland appears to think that cannibalism among the Maories of New Zealand may have thus originated. Among the Sawaioris generally it appears to have been the practice at times to eat a por- tion of a slain enemy to make his degradation the greater. In several gronps there is evidence that this was doue. But where cannibalism was practised as a means of subsistence, it probably originated in times of actual want, such as may have occurred during the

long voyages of the people, when it was resorted to as a means of self-preservation. Being once accustomed to the practice, we can easily imagine how they might resort to it again and again in times of scarcity. The testimony of cannibals is that human flesh is the best of food, and among such a people there would not be strong moral reasons to restrain them from the indulgence.

The amusements of these people are very numerous. They are a light-hearted raee, usually living mnder easy conditions of life, and they have a largeamountof enjoyment. Some of their amuse- ments are boisterous and even savage, such as wrestling and boxing. In some islands they have a kind of '*hockey" and foot- ball. They have running races, walking matehes, and canoe- raeing. One of their most exeiting amusements is swimming in the surf. When there is a moderate sea on, great numbers often join in this exercise and find immense pleasure in it. Throw- ing the javelin, throwing at a mark with slings, and archery are

1 Maori Religion and M ythology, p. 26.

also practised. Some resort to cock-fighting. There are fishing matches; and at a particular season large companies used to resort to pigeon-catehing. In their houses they have a number of games. Betting is very often earried on in connexion with these. Much time is spent, especially after the evening meal, in asking riddles, in rhyming, &e. The recital of songs and myths is also a source of great amusement; and on special occasions there is dancing. The night dances were generally accompanied by much indecency and immorality, and for that reason were discountenanced on the introduction of Christianity.

Ill. The Tarapon Race.—These people have many points of resemblance to the Sawaioris, but, as a rule, they are of smaller stature and are less robust. They have straight black hair, which is more lank than that of the Sawaioris. The Tarapons, how- ever, differ considerably from one another, and are evidently a mixed race. The natives of the Caroline Islands are larger than the Gilbert Islanders. They are also much lighter in colour; they are more yellow, whereas the Gilbert Islanders are darker, than the Sawaioris. In

many respects the Tarapons bear a much closer resemblance to the people of some portions of the Indian Archi- pelago than do the Sawaioris. It is the belief of the present writer that the bulk of the Tarapons are the descendants of people who, in comparatively recent times, migrated from the Indian Archi- pelago, and that sinee they have been in Polynesia they have become mixed with people of other races. There appears to be a little Papuan admixture. Those in the Caroline Islands, especially, appear to have become mixed with Chinese and Japanese blood— probably more Japanese than Chinese. There are several well- authenticated instances of Japanese junks, with living people in them, having been found in various parts of the North Pacific. In 1814 the British brig “Forester” met with one off the coast of California (about 30° N. lat.), with three living men and fourteen dead bodies on board. In December 1832 a Japanese junk arrived at the Hawaiian Islands with four of the crew living. lf these junks could cross the Pacific in the latitude of Hawaii it is not at alk unlikely that others running in a south-easterly direction would reach some of the many atolls which stretch over about 35° of longitude, forming the Caroline and Marshall archipelagoes.

The traditions of the Gilbert Islanders tell us that their islands were peopled from the west and also from the east. Those who came from the east are expressly said to be from Samoa. Those from the west were more numerous than those from the east. There are also traditions of the arrival of other strangers at some of these islands. When the present writer was at the island of Peru, in the Gilbert group, in 1869 there was still there the remnants of a large proah which, from the description given, appears to have been like those used in the Indian Archipelago. So faras we have materials for examination, eraniometry confirms other evidence, and indicates that the Tarapon people are more mixed than either of the other Polynesian races,

All the Tarapon people are navigators, but, owing to the fact that upon their atolls they have little good timber, most of their canoes are inferior to those of the Sawaioris. Their houses are also inferior. Their arms are fairly well made. In the Gilbert Islands they manu- facture elaborate armour, to cover the entire body, from thie fibre of the cocoa-nut husk. In the Caroline Islands very fine mats are made; and a hand-loom is used, with which a coarse cloth is made.

Among the Tarapons women occupy a lower position than among the Sawaioris. The differenee is not, however, in the amount of work, or kind of drudgery, that is expected from them, but rather in the social and domestic influence they exert. The gods are chiefly the spirits of the great men of past ages. The chieftainship and priesthood are often eombined in the same persons. They are strict in the observance of their religious rites: The shrines of their gods are very numerous. In every house he visited in the Gilbert Islands, the present writer saw either a small circle or a square formed with pieces of coral or shells ; this was neatly covered with broken coral and shells from the beach, and in the centre stood a block of coral representing the god. These were the household shrines. In various places about the islands there were similar squares or circles, only larger, for the gods of villages or districts. Offerings of food were presented to them, and often the stones were garlanded with wreatns of cocoa-nut leaves. Some embalm their dead—especially the bodies of beloved children. Women often carry the skulls of deceased children, hung by a cord around the neck, as a token of affection.

In the Tarapon languages consonants are more freely used than in the Sawaiori. They have consonantal sounds which are not found in the latter, such as ch, dj,and sh. Closed syllables often occur ; occasionally doubled consonants are used, but ainong some of the people there is a tendency to introduce a slight vowel sound between them. Most words take the accent on the penult. In some languages there appears to be no true article ; but in the Gilbert Island language the Sawaiori ¢e is used for both the definite and the indefinite article. Gender issexualonly. Number in the noun is either gathered from the requirement of the sense, or is marked by pronominal words, ornumerals. Case is known by the

position of the noun in the scntcnce, or by prepositions. In the language of Ebon, one of the islands in the Marshall archipelago, nouns have the peculiarity which is characteristic of the Papuan languages: those which indicate close relationship—as of a son to a father, or of the members of a person’s body—take a pro- nominal suffix which gives them the appearance of inflexions. The present writer is not aware of the existence of this in any

other Tarapon language, but would not make too much of this negative evidence. Many words are used indiscriminately as nouns, adjec- tives, or verbs withont any change of form. In some languages the personal pronouns are singular, dual, and plural. In othcrs there are no special dual forms, but the numeral for two is used to indicate the dual. In the Ebon language there are inclusive and exclusive forms of the personal pronouns which, so far as has been ascertained, do not occurin any of the other Tarapon languages. The verbs usually have no inflexions to express relations of voice, mood, tense, number of person,—such distinctions being indicated by particles. In the Ebon language, however, the tenses are some- times marked ; but in that the simple form of the verb is frequently given. All have verbal directive particles. In Ponape, one of the Caroline Islands, many words of ceremony are used in address- ing chiefs, as they are used in Samoa. The custom of tabooing words is also found there as it is in the Sawaiori languages. For further particulars respecting the Tarapons, sce MICRONESIA.

Missions.—The first mission was commenced in Tahiti by the

agents of the London Missionary Society in 1797. Since then that society has continued and extended its labours until it now occupies the Society, Cook, Austral, Tuamotu, Samoan, Tokelauan, and Ellice groups, and several isolated islands, all peopled by the Sawaiori race, besides other islands in the Papuan and Tarapon areas. With the exception of a portion of the Tuamotu archi- pelago, all the people in the groups mentioned are now nominal Christians. There are only three groups peopled by the Sawaioris where the London Missionary Society’s agents do not labour ; and two of these are efficiently occupied by other societies—Hawaii mainly by the American Board, and Tonga by the Wesleyan Mis- sionary Society. These two groups are also entirely Christian. The Marqucsas Islands have not been Christianized, but are vartly occupied by missionaries from Hawaii. There are, there- ore, only two groups peopled by the Sawaioris where any heathen are found at the present day. An estimate of the number of this people, based upon actual counting in many islands, would be about 179,000, of which number about 161,500 are nominal Christians, leaving about 17,500 still heathen. Of the Papuans a smaller proportion arc Christians. In Fiji and Rotnma the great majority of the population have

become nominal Christians through the labours of Wesleyan missionaries. The Wesleyans have also successfully laboured in Duke of York Island, near New Britain. In. the Loyalty Islands most of the people have embraced Christianity through the labours of the London Missionary Society's agents, —a part, however, being Roman Catholics. Aneityum in the New Hebrides has become wholly Christian through the agency of Presbyterian missions. In a few other islands in the New Hebrides, also in Banks and Santa Cruz groups, small com- panies of converts have been gathered by the Presbyterian and the Episcopal (Melanesian) missions. The rest of the people in the Papuan area in Polynesia are still savages, and most of them are cannibals. The population of this area may be estimated at about 600,000. Of this number about 130,000 are nominal Christians. Excluding the inhabitants of the Ladrone and Pelew Islands, the Tarapon people may be estimated at about 84,000. The agents of the Hawaiian Board of Missions (taking the place of the American Board, under whose auspices the missionaries first laboured in this region) are the most numerous herc, occupying portions of the Gilbert, Marshall, and Caroline Islands. Six atolls south of the equator in the Gilbert group are occupied by native missionaries from Samoa in connexion with the London Missionary Society. The number of nominal Christians in these groups is about 38,000. The aggregate population of Polynesia may thus be estimated at 863,000, of whom 539,500 are heathen and 323,500 are nominal or baptized Christians. From the records of the variou' missionary societies it appears that out of this number 69,605, or very nearly one-fifth, arc communicants.

In addition to the missionary societies already mentioned, which have done the main work in the evangelization of the Polynesians, there are French Protestant missionaries in Tahiti, and Protestant Episcopal clergymen in Hawaii and in Fiji. There are also in many islands French Roman Catholic missionaries ; but these have a comparatively small number of adherents.

Wherever the missions have been planted schools have also been established, and the people have received more or less education. On the Christian islands nearly all the people can now read, most can write, and a large proportion are acquainted with the elements of arithmetic. General education, thus far, is much more common on those islands than it is at present in the British Isles. Advanced schools have been founded in

connexion with some of the missions, and many of the native youths have shown considerable aptitude

for some of the highcr branches of knowledge. In most of the larger groups colleges for the education of native ministcrs have long been conducted. In these colleges, in addition to Biblical exegesis and theology, other subjects, such as history and elemen- tary science, are taught. Many of the European and American missionarics have devoted themselves largely to literary work in the vernacular of the islands where they reside. Next to the translation of the Scriptures and the preparation of lesson books for the common schools, they have either translated works on history, science, &c., or they have written such books as they found the natives to need. In nearly every group occupied by the Sawaiori race there is now a considerable vernacular literature, embracing elementary works on most branches of knowledge. Amongst the other races the literature is of much smaller extent. The entire Bible has been translated into five of the principal Sawaiori languages of Polynesia. The entire New Testament, and a considerable portion of the Old, has been translated into a sixth language, besides smaller portions into others. The American Bible Society has supplied the Bibles for the Hawaiian Islands. Many portions of the Scriptures for other islands have been printed either in the islands or in Australia. Of the number of copies thus circulated no record is easily accessible, but the British and Foreign Bible Society has issued 153,462 entire Bibles or New Testaments in the Samoan, Tahitian, Tongan, Rarotongan, and Niuéan languages. As among this race one translation serves for an entire group, and in some cases for two or three groups, nearly all the people possess the Scriptures. In no part of the world is the Bible more read than it is by these islanders ; and it has not been necessary to give the Scriptures to them without charge in order to induce them to read.

In many islands the pastoral work is now mostly done by native ministers, —the foreign missionaries who remain devoting them. selves to superintendence, higher education, and literature. The native pastors are always supported by the voluntary gifts of the people to whom they minister. The people also build their own churches and schools, and meet

all the expenses connected with public worship and education, upon the voluntary principle. No portion of Christendom is better supplied with religious instruction than the Christianized islands of Polyaitte, aud nowhere is there miore regard paid by the people generally to Sabbath observance, to public worship, and to other outward duties of religion. Faanily worship is almost invariably observed.

With all this, too many of the people are religious only in namc ; and in the neighbourhood of ports, where casual visitors usually see and judge the native character, there are some who have added many of the white man's vices to their own. But in estimating the influence of Christianity upon these people we should remember that only about one-fifth of the nominal Christians are communi- cants. If they be judged fairly, taking into consideration their past history and the short time they have been under Christian infiaence, the present writer is convinced that the verdict will be favourable as compared with any Christian people in the world. Every one will admit that social, moral, and spiritual reformations are not completed in a gencration, but require time to bring thein to maturity.

Population—its alleged Deerease.—There is a general notion abroad that in all the islands of Polynesia the native races are rapidly decreasing ; and this supposed fact is sometimes attributed to the missionaries. The alleged diminution, however, is a gencral conclusion from particular premises, and facts drawn from wider observations do not confirm it. The question of the decrease of population in these islands is a wide one, which cannot be fully discussed within the limits of the present article ; but a few general observations, and a few particular facts, may help to throw some light upon it. (1) The estimates of population made by the first European or American visitors to Polynesia were far too high. In nearly all islands the people live almost entirely upon the coast ; hence it was an error to reckon the inland portions as having a population proportionate to the number of people seen upon the coast. Then, when the visits of foreign ships were a novelty, the people from other districts would crowd to the place where the ships anchored to see them. Thus the population of particular villages was over-estimated. In the last edition of this Encyclo- pedia the population of Samoa is said to be variously cstiinated at from 160,000 to as few as 38,000. It is now known that even the lowest estimate was somewhat over the actual

number.’ Most of the other groups werc also greatly over-estimated. Hence the decrease of population in any of the islands since they have become known is not so great as it is supposed to be. (2) Those who have resided in Polynesia, and who have made observations on the sub- ject, know that previous to the introduction of Christianity there had been a great decrease in the population of most of the islands. There are numerous evidences that they were formerly much more

1 In Nature, for 1876, vol. xiv. pp. 190-91, Mr Whitmee gave the latest census of Samoa, taken by actual counting, as being 34,265 in 1874. Yet, in his Austral- asia, published in 1879, Mr A. R. Wallace says the population of these islands ‘is variously estimated at 35,000 or 60,000.”

thickly peopled. Wars, infanticide, human sacrifices, and canni- palism are doubtless among the causes of depopulation, (3) Where the scourge of syphilis had not spread before Christianity was received, and the love of ardent spirits has not corrupted the people, there the population has generally increased. It 1s found from a record of births and deaths in some parts of Samoa, and from periodical census returns as a result of actual counting from the whole of that group, that, apart from the destruction caused by war, the population there increases at the rate of about 1 per cent. per annum. Although Samoa has suffered more from internecine wars than any other Christian group in Polynesia, there are more natives now living there than when they were first counted in 1843, the number then being 33,901. The increase in Tonga has been 25 per cent. in twenty years.’ On the island of Niué the in- crease is more than 8 per cent. per annum. On several other groups there has been increase, though figures are not available. The rapid decline of population in Hawaii is entirely exceptional. Commerce.—Information on this subject, as far as it is available, is given in the special articles on particular groups. The following is a fair specimen of the kind and extent of the commerce which has grown in Polynesia since Christianity has made the islands safe and profitable places for the residence of traders.2 From Cook Islands, containing a population of about 8000, and three atolls which lie north of that group, viz., Tongareva, Rakaanga, and Manihiki, with a population of about 4000, the exports

during 1883 were 150 tous of cotton free from seeds, 50 tons of coffee, 1000 tons of copra, 84 tons of pearl shell, and about 100,000 gallons of lime juice, besides 5000 crates of oranges, containing about 300 per crate. Mr Gill estimates the market value of this produce at £50,000,—miore than £4 per head for the native population. Part is purchased by merchants in Tahiti, and part goes to Auckland, New Zealand. There are not many islands whence fruit is exported, although, if there were markets within a few days' sail, a large quan- tity of fine oranges, pine-apples, and bananas might be provided. In 1878 the figures collected by the present writer relating to the trade in Samoa, Tonga, and several other islands in that neighbour- hood, showed that the exports averaged annually about £4 each for the entire population, and that the imports were only a little less. Prehistoric Remains. —The most remarkable of these are on Easter Island, which lies at the south-eastern extremity of Poly- nesia, nearly 2500 miles from South America. volcanie formation, and is about 11 miles long by 4 miles wide. The present inhabitants belong to the Sawaiori race. Here are found immense platforms built of large cut stones fitted together without cement. They are generally built upon headlands, and on the slope towards the sea, The walls on the sea-side are, in some of the platforms, nearly 30 feet high and from 200 to 300 feet long, by about 30 feet wide. Some of the squared stones are as much as 6 feet long. On the land side of the platforms there is a broad terrace with large stone pedestals upon which once stood colossal stone images carved somewhat into the shape of the human trunk. On some of the platforms there are upwards of a dozen images now thrown from their pedestals and lying in all directions. Their usual height is from 14 to 16 feet, but the largest are 37 feet, while some are only about 4 feet. They are formed from a grey trachytic lava found at the east end of the island. The top of the heads of the images is cut flat to receive round crowns made of a reddish vesicular tuff found at a crater about 8 miles distant from the quarry where the images were cut.. A number of these crowus still lie at the crater apparently ready for removal, some of the largest being over 10 fect in diameter. In the atlas illustrating the voyage of La Pérouse a plan of the island is given, with the position of several of the platforms. Two of the images are also represented ina plate. One statue, 8 feet in height and weighing 4 tons, was brought to England, and is now in the British Museum. In one part of the island are the remains of stone houses nearly 100 feet long by about 20 feet wide. These are built in courses of large flat

stones fitted together without cement, the walls being about 5 feet thick and over 5 feet high. They are lined on the inside with upright slabs, on which are painted geometrical figures and repre- sentations of animals. The roofs are formed by placing slabs so that each course overlaps the lower one until the opening becomes about 5 feet wide, when it is covered with flat slabs reaching from one side to the other. The lava rocks near the houses are carved into the resemblance of various animals and human faces, forming, probably, a kind of picture writing. Wooden tablets covered with various signs and figures have also been found. The only ancient imple- ment discovered on the island is a kind of stone chisel, but it seems impossible that such large and numerous works could have been executed with such a tool. The present inhabitants of Easter Island know nothing of the construction of these remarkable works ;

and the entire subject of their existence in this small and remote island is a mystery.

= This fact is stated on the authority of the Rev. Mr Moulton, a = residing there, and it is the result of counting. From figures supplied by the Rev. W. W. Gill, B.A.

This island is of |

POL—POL

On the island of Tonga-tabu, Tonga group, there is a remarkable monument. ‘Two large rectangular blocks of stone, about 40 feet in height, stand perpendicularly, with @ large slab lying across from one to the other. On the centre of the horizontal stone is a large stone bowl: The island upon which this monument is found is of coral formation slightly elevated. These immense stones must therefore have been conveyed thither by sea. The present inhabit- ants know nothing of their history, or of the object which they were intended to serve.

In Ponapé, one of the islands of the Caroline group, there are extensive iuins, the principal being a court about 300 feet in length, the walls of which are formed of basaltic prisms and are about 30 feet in height. Inside, on all four sides, next the wall is a terrace 8 feet high and 12 feet wide. The

court is divided into three by low walls, and in the centre of each division there is a covered chamber 14 feet square. The walls above the terrace are 8 feet thick, and some of the stones are 25 feet long by 8 feet in circumference. The basaltic columns of which this structure is built were apparently brought a distance of 10 miles from the central ridge of the island. There are other ruins of smaller extent on Ponapé, and also on the island of Kusaie in the same group. Ponapé and Kusate are rem- nants of larger islands which have been partially submerged. While the smaller islands around which the coral polypes built up the atolls have disappeared, these two remain as monuments of the past.

North-west from Ponapé, in the Mariana or Ladrone Islands, there are other remains in the shape of stone columns about 14 fect high, with a semi-globular stone nearly 6 fect in diameter on the top of eacli, the rounded side being uppermost.

Thus in four different and widely separated parts of Polynesia there are relics of prehistoric people. These together form one of the greatest puzzles the ethnologist has to deal with. (S. J. W.)

POLYPE. In its Greek and Latin forms the word polypus was first used as descriptive of the CUTTLE-FISH (q.v.). In speaking of the Acalephe Aristotle says, “They hold their prey as the polypus does with its feelers,” and there is no doubt that in this and other passages he referred to the octopus. The word was also, though less generally, applied to the woodlouse (Oniscus)—the reason for both usages being equally evident. Though the former meaning persists in the word poulpe, yet by the beginning of the 18th century it seems to have been for- gotten, and the word was by analogy transferred to a group of animals then beginning to attract much attention. Réaumur and Bernard de Jussieu were the first to fix the usage of the word polype as applicable to hydroids, corals, and Polyzoa. In following up the discoveries of Marsigli and Peysonelle in regard to the little coral organisms, Jussieu used the name polype definitely to describe those Sertularians, Alcyonians, sea-mats, &c., which were then (1742) known as animals. Trembley had previously rediscovered Leeuwenhoek’s /ydra, and described it as a freshwater polype in a work which appeared in 1744. A polyzoon too, discovered both by Trembley and Baker in 1741,

was called by the former Polype a Panache. We find the word used with the same content as Jussieu had assigned to it by Ellis in 1755, by Cavolini in 1783, and by others. In 1816 Lamouroux published his Histoure des Polypiers Coralligénes, in the preface of which he speaks of the varied character of this group of animals “nommés Hydres par Linné et Polypes par Réaumur.” In his own use of the term he applied it to sponges, hydroids, corals, and Ilustre. Lamarck too used the word very widely, and spoke of Polypei as (1) ciliati, including some Infusorians and Rotifers ; (2) denudati, including Hydra, Coryne, &c. ; (3) vaginati, including Difilugia, Spongilla, Tubularra, Millepores and Madrepores, Alcyonia, Cristatella, Flustra, &c.; and (4) natantes, including Pennatula, Virgularia, Encrinus, &c. Sometimes, however, he used the word in a more restricted sense. Cuvier (1819-1830) distinguished three classes of polypes:—(1) fleshy—Actinix and Lucer- nariz ; (2) gelatinous—Hydra, Cristatella, Coryne, Vorte- cella, &c.; and (3) Corallifere—Sponges, Madrepores, Millepores, Tubularia, Sertularia, Alcyonide, Flustrex, &e. Subsequently he improved on this and recognized (1) an Actinia group, (2) a group like Hydra and Sertularia, and (3) Polypes & Polypiers, which he again divided into

Anthozoa and Bryozoa. From 1830 onwards there was a distinct tendency to separate the Polyzoa from the polypes —they are spoken of as higher Poly, compound polypes, &c. In 1831 Ehrenberg described the Polyps or Curtalra as a class of the Phytozoa, and distinguished the true polypes or Anthozoa from the Bryozoa. Milne-Edwards expressly excludes the Bryozoa, and restricts the term polype to the Zoantharia and Alcyonaria inclusive of Hydra and Lucer- naria. In 1847 Frey and Leuckart placed the Polyzoa by themselves, and united the remaining Polype of Cuvier along with the Acalephe under the class name Coelenterata, which the latter afterwards (1853) divided into (1) Cteno- phora, (2) Medusx, and (3) Polypes. Modern anatomists generally agree in confining the term to the individuals (zooids or persone) of hydriform JL. ydromeduse and Actinozoa, and frequently restrict it to the former (see Hyprozoa, Corals).

POLYPTERUS, a genus of Ganoid fishes common in many rivers of tropical Africa, and known on the Nile by the name of aba bishtr. Their

body is cylindrical in shape, elongate, and covered with hard, polished, ganoid scales, which are arranged in oblique series. The head, with flattened snout and wide mouth, is protected by bony plates with ganoid external surface, of which a series of ‘‘supra-temporal” and “spiracular” ossicles are especially characteristic. Spiracles, or external openings of a canal leading into the pharynx are persistent throughout life, situated on each side of the parietal bone, and closed by an osseous valve. The lips are fleshy, but the space between the rami of the mandible is covered by a large “gular” plate. The vent is placed far backwards, in front of the anal fin, the tail being short, with a diphy- cercal termination of the vertebral column. The mouth is well provided with rasp-like teeth, forming broad bands in the jaws, on the vomer and palatine bones. The paired fins are supported by an axial skeleton. The structure of the dorsal fin is unique: its anterior portion is composed of isolated finlets, from eight to eighteen in number, each of which consists of a flattened spine with a bifurcate termination ; to the posterior aspect of the top of each spine several soft rays are attached, which result from the dichotomous division of a single ray, the basal portion of which is the spine. Posteriorly these finlets pass into the ordinary rays composing the caudal fin, which surrounds the tail. The ventral fins are well- developed, and inserted behind the middle of the length of the trunk. The respiratory apparatus consists of three and a half gills, and is protected by an osseous gill-cover.

429

An external gill of considerable size in the form of a tapering band fringed with respiratory laminz exists in young examples, and is attached to the end of the gill- cover. ‘The air-bladder is double, and communicates with the ventral wall of the pharynx.

Such are some of the principal characteristics of one of the most interesting representatives of a type which in Polyptcrus has survived from the Devonian and Carboniferous formations to our period ; for further details of its internal organization see IcHTHYO- Locy. The centre of distribution of Polyptcrus is the lake region of tropical Africa, from which the Nile and the great rivers of West Africa take their origin. A very remarkable fact is its total absence in the East-African river systems which belong to the Indian

Ocean. Specimens of the bishir have been found in the Nile as low as Cairo, but it is very scarce throughont the middle and lower parts of that river; such individuals have evidently been carried by the current down from southern latitudes, and do not propagate the species in the northern parts. As mentioned above, the number of the rays which are modified into finlets varies considerably, and consequently several species have been distinguished by some naturalists, whilst others hold that there is one species of Polypterus only. The largest specimens observed had a length of 4 feet. Nothing is known of its habits and propagation, and observations thereon are very desirable. Some years ago an extremely interesting dwatf form of Polypterus was discovered in Old Calabar, and described under the name of Calamoichthys calabaricus. It much resembles the bishir but is smaller, and considerably more elongate.

POLYPUS, a term in surgery, signifying a tumour which is attached by a narrow neck to the walls of a cavity lined with mucous membrane. A polypus or polypoid tumour may belong to any variety of tumour, either simple or malignant. ‘The most common variety is a polypus of the nose of simple character and easily removed. Polypi are also met with in the ear, larynx, uterus, Vagina, and rectum. See SURGERY.

POLYSPERCHON, one of Alexander’s generals, and the successor of Antipater as regent in Macedonia in 318 B.c. He was driven from the kingdom by Cassander in 316. For the leading incidents of his brief term of office see Puocton (vol. xviii. p. 800) ; compare also Macrponta.

POLYXENA, in Greek legend, a daughter of Priam, last king of Troy, and Hecuba. She had been betrothed to Achilles, and after his death and the destruction of Troy the ghost of Achilles appeared to the returning Greeks as they were encamped on the Thracian Chersonese and demanded of them the sacrifice of Polyxena. The Greeks consented and Neoptolemus, son of Achilles, sacri- ficed Polyxena on his father’s grave. This tragic story is the subject of the Hecuba of Euripides and the Z’roades of Seneca. Of Sophocles’s tragedy Polywena a few fragments only remain.

POLYAOA

OLYZOA is the name applied by J. Vaughan Thompson

in 1830 (1)! to a group of minute polyp-like organisms which were subsequently (1834) termed “Btyozoa” by Ehrenberg (2). The forms included in this group were

stated by Thompson to be “in a general way the whole’

of the Flustraceze, in many of which I have clearly ascer- tained the animals to be Polyzoz,” they having been pre- viously considered by zoologists to be allied to the Hydra- like polyps. These organisms had previously been known by the hard corneous “cells” or chambers which are formed by the animals on the surface of their bodies, and build up, in consequence of the formation of dense colonies by bud- ding, complex aggregates known as “sea mats” and “sea mosses.” Thompson expressly stated the opinion that the organization of the animals detected by him led to the conclusion that “ they must be considered as a new type of the Mollusca Acephala.” I These numbers refer to the bibliography at the end of the article.

Subsequently (1844) Henri Milne-Edwards (3) pointed out the relationship of Thompson’s Polyzoa to the Brachio- poda, and, adopting the latter’s view as to their Molluscan affinities, proposed to unite these two classes with the Tunicata in a group to be called “Molluscoidea.” Re- cent researches have entirely separated the Tunicata from this association, and have demonstrated that they belong to the great phylum of Vertebrata. On the other hand the association of the Polyzoa with the Brachiopoda ap- pears at present to be confirmed, though the relationship of these two classes to the Mollusca has been shown to rest on mistaken identification of parts; see, however, Harmer (18).

The Polyzoa appear to be related to the Sipunculoid Gephyreean worms (Gephyrzea inermia) more nearly than to any other class of the animal kingdom. The study and interpretation of the facts of their ontogeny (growth from the egg) presents such extreme difficulty that in the pre- sent state of our knowledge it is necessary to regard them

ad interim as forming with the Brachiopoda and Sipuncu- loids an isolated group, to which the name “ Podaxonia

may be applied, pending the decision of their affinities by the increase of our knowledge of the embryology of import- ant members of the group.! ;

The forms included at the present day in Thompson's class of " Polyzoa" may then be thus classified :—

Puytum PODAXONIA: Ciass I.—STPUNCULOIDEA. Crass Il.—BRACHIOPODA. Cnass I1].—POLYZOA. Section 1.—VERMIFORMIA. Sole genus: Phoronis (figs. 4 and 5). Section 2, -PTEROBRANCHIA. Genus 1: Rhabdopleura (fig. 7). Genus 2: Cephalodiseus (figs: 8, 9, 10). Section 3.—EUPOLYZOA. Sub-class 1.—EHctoprocta. Order 1.—PHYLACTOLEMA. Examples: Lophopus, Plumatella (fig. 2, B), Cristatella (fig. 3), Hredericella. Order 2.—GYMNOLAMA. Sub-order 1.—Cyclostoma. Examples: Crisia (fig. 18, A), Ho-nera, Tubulipora, Discoporella. Sub-order 2.—Ctenostoma. Examples: Alcyonidiwm, Vesicularia, Serialaria, Bower- bankia (fig. 1, A), Paludieella (fig. 1, E and fig. 2, A). Sub-order 3.—Chilostoma. Examples: Cellularia, Serupocellaria, Kinetoskias (fig. 14), Bugula, Bicellaria, Flustra (fig. 1, G), Muero- nella (fig. 1, C, D, F), Membranipora, Lepralia, Eschara, Cellepora, Retepora. – Sub-class 2,—Entoprocta, Genera: Pedicellina (fig. 15), Loxosoma (fig. 16), Urna- tella, Ascopodaria.

We shall most readily arrive at a conception of the essential structure of a Polyzoon, and of the variations to which that essential structure is subject within the class, by first examining one member of the group in detail and subsequently reviewing the characters presented by the divergent sub-classes, orders, &c., above indicated.

The most convenient form for our purpose is Paludicella Ehrenbergu (fig. 2, A), belonging to the typical section of the class (the Eupolyzoa) and to the order Gymnolema, The organism occurs as minute tree-like growths (figs. 2, A and 1, E) attached to stones in freshwater streams and canals. The branches of the little tree are rarely more than an inch in length, and are regularly swollen and jointed at intervals. Each of the very numerous joints is about one- fifth of an inch long, and is in reality a tubular horny box attached above and below to the preceding and succeeding joints, and having on one side of it a spout-like aperture from which a crown of tentacles can be protruded. Each joint is thus inhabited by a distinct animal

which is more or less completely shut off from the one in front of it and the one behind it, although it originated from the hinder and has given rise to the fore-lying individual by a process of budding, and retains a continuity of substance with both.

A single cell or joint with its contained animal is repre- |

sented in fig. 2, A.

Paludicella produces an arboriform colony, the main trunk or stolon being adherent to some stone or piece of wood. The substance of the wall of the cells is formed by a chemical body allied to chitin. Other Polyzoa may form mat-like expansions—the cells being placed in one plane, side by side (fig. 1, C, D, F, G), as well as in linear series ; others again form solid masses, whilst many agree with Paludicella in the simple linear arrangement of their units. Phoronis and Loxosoma, on the other hand, do not form colonies at all—the former because it does not

1 The research of Harmer (18) on Loxosoma is published too late for due notice in this article. It tends to the conclusion that the Eupolyzoa are after all degraded Mollusca, and have no connexion

with the Vermiformia, Pterobranchia, Brachiopoda, and Sipunculoidea, The reader is referred to Mr Harmer’s memoir.

POUYAZOA

bud, the latter because the buds become detached from their parent as soon as formed, as do the buds of the Hydrozoon Hydra. :

On the whole Paludicella presents us with a very simple form of Polyzoon-colony (technically termed a “zoarium ”), in which the aggregate of budded persons, each of which

Tg J

: ae ||| | 1)

R he

Fig. 1.—Various forms of zoaria of Eupolyzoa.

. Bowerbankia pustulosa, one of the Ctenostoma ; natural size.

. A cluster of polypides of Bowerbankia pustulosa, some with expanded tentacles ; more highly magnified.

. Zocecia of Mucronella pavonella (Chilostoma); highly magnified.

. Zoarium of Mucronelia pavonelia, forming a disk-like encrustation on a picce of stone; natural size.

. Zoarium of Paludicella Ehrenbergti (Ctenostoma), natural size.

. Zowcia of Mucronella Peachii ; highly magnified. Compare with C in order to note specific characters.

G. Zoarium of Flustra securifrons; natural size.

is called a “ polypide,” does not exhibit any marked indi- viduation, but is irregular and tree-like. But, just as in the Hydrozoa we find the Siphonophora presenting us with a very definite shape and individuality of the aggregate or colony, so in the Polyzoa we find instances of high indi-

viduation of the zoarium of a similar kind. The most remarkable example is afforded by the locomotive zoarium or colony of Cristatella (fig. 3); and another very striking instance is that of the stalked zoaria of Kinetoskias (fig. 14) and Adeona.

The horny consistence of the cells which are produced by Paludicella is very usual in other Polyzoa; but we find frequently that the substance which forms the cells is gelatinous and soft instead of being horny, or again may be strongly calcareous. The term cenocium is applied to the mass of cells belonging to a colony or zoarium when considered apart from the living polypides which form it, Often such ccencecia are found retaining form and

structure when the soft living polypides have decomposed and dis- appeared. A single cell of the ccencecium, corresponding toa single polypide, is called by. the special students of the Polyzoa a zowciwm.

If we examine a single cell or zocecium of Paludicella more carefully whilst its polypide is alive, we discover that the horny cell is: nothing more than the cuticle of the polypide itself, to which it is absol- utely adherent. At the so-called “ mouth” or spout of the cell the cuticle suddenly changes its character and becomes a very delicate and soft pel- licle instead of being thickandhorny. There is no real discontinuity of the cuticle at this region, but merely a change in its qualities. This gives to that por- tion of the body of the polypide which lies beyond the spout a mobility and capacity for folding and pleat- ing which is entirely denied to that part where the cuticle is more dense (fig. 2, A). Accordingly we find that the anterior por- tion of the body of the polypide can be pulled into the hinder part as the finger of a glove may be tucked into the hand. It is, in fact, an “introvert” (for the use of this term see Motiusea, vol. xvi. p.652). This arrange- ment is universal in the Ectoproctous Eupolyzoa, but does

Fic. 2.—A, Polypide of Paludicella Ehrenbergit, seen as a transparent objeet in optical section and highly magnified (from Gegenbaur, after Allman), For natural size see fig. 1, E. a, anus; 67’, peristomial cirelet of ciliated ten- tacles; 7, thickened euticle of the body-wall, forming the horny eell or zoccium; m, median retractor muscle of the introversible part of the body; 7’, anterior retractor of the same; my, great retractor muscle of the same; o, ovary, passing from which to the stomach is the anterior mesentery or funiculus; ¢, testis ; e@, esophagus; v, stomach; 2, posterior mes- entery or funiculus; 2’, anterior mesentery or funiculus. Observe at the 1ight upper eorner of the figure the base of a second polypide and the ‘‘ rosette-plate” of separation.

B. Diagram of a polypide of Plumatella. Letters as above.

not obtain either in the Entoprocta, the Pterobranchia, or |

the Vermiformia. In Phoronis, Rhabdopleura, and Cepha- lodiscus the anterior part of the body can not be tucked or telescoped into the hinder part as it can in typical Eu- polyzoa. On the other hand it is very important to

note that the Sipunculoid Gephyreans are all pre-eminently characterized by possessing identically this arrangement. The introversion is effected in Paludicella (as in other Eu- polyzoa) by a series of long detached retractor muscles of

considerable power (fig. 2, A, mr, r’, m); the same is true of Sipunculus.

The view has been advanced by Allman (4) that the re- tractile part of the polypide is to be considered as a distinct individual budded from the basal portion, which is regarded as an equivalent individual. It does not appear to the present writer that such a theoretical conception tends to facilitate the understanding of the structure and relations of these animals.

An “ectocyst” and “‘endocyst” have also been distin- guished in former treatises, and these terms form part of a special “ polyzoarial” nomenclature, but do not appear to be any longer needful. Equally undesirable is the misap- plied term “endosare” lately introduced by Jolliet (5) to denote a certain portion of the Polyzoon structure which will not be referred to here by that name.

The retractile or introversible portion of the body of the polypide of Paludicella is terminated by a crown of sixteen stiff non-contractile tentacles (fig. 2, A, 47) which form a circle around a central aperture—the animal’s mouth. These tentacles are hollow and beset with vibratile’ cilia. The beating of the cilia causes a powerful current in the water by which food is brought to the animal’s mouth. Fach tentacle is also muscular, and can be bent and straightened at will. The tentacles not only serve to bring food into the mouth, but they are efficient as gill- filaments, being possibly homologous with (as well as func- tionally similar to) the gill-filaments of Lamellibranch Molluscs, They also serve as delicate tactile organs, and are the only sense organs possessed by the Eupolyzoa.

In Paludicella the platform around the mouth from which the tentacles arise, or lophophore, as it is termed, is circular. This is the case in all members of the large group of Gymnolema and in the Entoprocta. But in the Phylactolema the lophophore is drawn out on each side, right and left, so as

to present a horse-shoe shape (fig. 2, B), and in some forms, notably Lophopus and Aleyonella, the two arms or diverging rami of the horse-shoe are very strongly developed.

In the Pterobranchia the tentacles are confined in one genus (Rhabdopleura) to the two arm-like outgrowths of the lophophore, and are not simply hollow but contain a well-developed cartilaginoid skeleton (fig. 7). In the allied genus Cephalodiscus there are not merely a single pair of such arm-like processes, each bearing two rows of tentacles, but the lophophore is developed into twelve arm-like pro- cesses (fig. 9), which form a dense tuft of filaments around the anterior extremity of the animal.

In the Vermiformia (Phoronis) we again meet with a very perfect horse-shoe-shaped lophophore (fig. 4), The tentacles upon the crescentic or otherwise lobed circumoral region of the Sipunculoids are the representatives of the tentacles of the Polyzoa; whilst the tentaculiferous “arms” of the Brachiopoda appear to be the equivalents of the Polyzoon’s lophophore much drawn out and in most cases spirally rolled.

Just below the circular crown of tentacles in Paludicella we find an aperture which the study of internal anatomy proves to be the anus. In all Polyzoa the anus has this position near the mouth; and in this respect we again note an agreement with Sipunculus and the other so-called Gephyreea inermia. In one division of the Polyzoa alone is there any noteworthy variation in the position of the anus, namely, in the Entoprocta (sub-class of the section Eupolyzoa). In these forms the anus, instead of lying just below the lophophore or platform from which the

| tentacles spring, is included like the mouth within its

area (fig. 15, C). Passing now to the deeper structure of Paludicella, we find that it is a Coelomate animal; that is to say, there

exists between the body-wall and the wall of the aliment- ary tract a distinct space termed “ perigastric space,” “body-cavity,” or “ccelom.” This is true of all Polyzoa, though it has been erroneously stated by G. O. Sars that

Rhabdopleura does not possess such a cceelom. In Eu- polyzoa (excepting the Entoprocta) the ccelom Is very capacious ; it is occupied by a coagulable hemolymph in which float cellular corpuscles, and also the generative products, detached, as is usual in Coelomata, from definite “gonads” developed on its lining membrane (fig. 2, A, 9, ¢). This lining membrane or “ ccelomic epithelium ” is ciliated in the Phylactoleema, but its characters appear not to have been definitely determined in other Eupolyzoa. The ccelomic space and the tissues bounding it are continuous throughout the colony or zoarium of a Polyzoon—either directly without any constriction marking off one polypide from another, or through perforate septum-like structures as in Paludicella (see right-hand upper process of fig. 2, A), which form incomplete barriers between juxtaposed zocecia, and are termed “rosette-plates” or “communication-plates. ” The coelomic cavity is continued in Paludicella and probably in all Polyzoa into the tentacles, so that these organs expose the hemolymph fluid to a respiratory action, and hence may be called branchial.

The body-wall of Paludicella consists, alike in the anterior introversible region and in the posterior region, of an outer cuticle which has already been spoken of as thickened around the base of the polypide so as to become there the hard tube-like zocecium. Beneath this is the delicate layer of living epidermic cells which are the mother-cells or matrix of that cuticle. Beneath this again are a few scattered annuli of muscular fibre-cells arranged ring – wise around the cylindrical body; more deeply placed than these are five large bundles of longitudinally placed muscular fibre-cells which are attached at three different levels to the soft introversible portion of the body, and by their retraction pull it in three folds or tele- scopic joints into the capacious hinder part of the body. In some Polyzoa the muscular fibre-cells present trans- verse striations. These folds are shown in fig. 2, A;

SSN

Soe he KS

ACD ; aio

Fig, 3.—The locomotive zoarium of the freshwater Phylaetolemous Polyzoon Cristatella mucedo; magnified six times linear (after Allman). a,

individual polypides with their horse-shoe-shaped crown of tentacles exserted: 5 stato- blasts seen through the transparent tissues ; c, the muscular foot or base of the colony by means of which it crawls; d, portion of water-weed upon which the Cristatella is erawling,

but when the longitudinal muscles are completely con- tracted the tentacular crown would be pulled down far out of sight into the midst of the body by the great longitu- dinal muscle mr. Deeper than the longitudinal muscles, and clothing them and everything else which projects into the ccelom, is the ccelomic epithelium, not easily observed, and sufficiently known only in the Phylactolema. Part of it gives rise to the generative products (fig. 2 A, 0, ~~2). Other Eupolyzoa have a similar but not identical arrange~~ ment of the longitudinal muscles—acting essentially as retractors of the “introvert” or soft anterior region of the body—and asimilar structure of the body-wall which is in

P OW ¥o4i0-4

essential features identical with that of the Sipunculoid worms, the Cheetopod worms, and other typical Coelomate animals.

The alimentary canal of Paludicella forms a closely com- pressed U-shaped loop depending from the closely approxi- mated mouth and anus into the capacious ccelom. It is clothed on its ccelomic surface (in Phylactolema at any rate) with ccelomic epithelium, and beneath this are extremely delicate muscular layers. Within it is lined, except in the immediate region of the mouth (which is lined by the in-pushed outer cell-layer), by the enteric cell-layer—-the digestive cells derived from the archenteron of the embryo. We can distinguish in Paludicella a contrac- tile pharyngo-cesophagus (fig. 2, A, «), a digestive stomach y (the lining cells of which have a yellow colour), and an intestine which forms that arm of the loop connected with the anus. This simple form of alimentary canal is uni- formly present in Polyzoa. In Bowerbankia and its allies a muscular gizzard with horny teeth is interposed between cesophagus and digestive stomach.

The alimentary canal of Paludicella does not hang quite freely in the ccelomic cavity, but, as is usually the case in other classes where the ccelom is large, mesenteries are present in the form of fibrous (muscular?) bands

clothed with coelomic epithelium and suspending the gut to the body-wall. In Paludicella there are two of these mesen- teries, an anterior (x’) and a posterior (x). The presence of two mesenteric bands is exceptional. Usually in the Eupolyzoa we find one such mesentery only, corresponding to the hinder of the two in Paludicella. The special name Junrculus (Huxley) is applied to this mesenteric band, and it is noteworthy that the cells of the cceelomic epithelium, either upon its surface or at its point of insertion into the body-wall, are modified as reproductive elements, forming either the testis or ovary; in the Phylactolema they form here also special asexual reproductive bodies, the stato- blasts. The nervous tissue and organs of Paludicella have not been specially investigated, but in many Eupolyzoa an oval mass of nerve-ganglion cells is found lying between the mouth and anus, and there is no doubt that it is present in this case. In Plumatella nerve-fibres have been traced from this ganglion to the tentacles and other parts around the mouth (fig. 11, w, 2, y). A “colonial nervous system” was described some years ago by Fr. Miller in Serialaria; but modern histologists do not admit that the tissue so named by Miiller is nerve-tissue. The ganglion above mentioned is the only nervous tissue

_ at present known in Polyzoa (but see fig. 17, x).

No heart or blood-vessels of any kind exist in Paludi- cella nor in any of the Eupolyzoa or Pterobranchia. On the other hand the isolated vermiform genus Phoronis presents a closed contractile system of longitudinal vessels (dorsal and ventral) which contain nucleated corpuscles coloured red by hemoglobin (figs. 4, 5).

No excretory organs (nephridia) or genital ducts have been observed in Paludicella, nor have such organs been detected in the majority of the Polyzoa which have been studied. In the Entoprocta, however, a pair of minute ciliated canals are found in the nearly obliterated body- cavity opening to the exterior near the tentacular crown in both Pedicellina and Loxosoma, which represent the cephalic nephridia of worms. A definite pair of nephridia occur in Phoronis. A similar significance is perhaps to be attributed to the “intertentacular organ” of Farre—a ciliated pas- sage opening between two tentacles of the lophophore in Membranipora, Alcyonidium, and other forms—through which Hincks has observed the

spermatozoa to escape in large numbers. This organ occurs equally in female speci- mens of Membranipora, and is not therefore simply a spermatic duct.

POm YZOA

Paludicella, as we have seen, develops both ova and | spermatozoa in one and the same polypide. The details of impregnation and development have not been followed in this instance, but in some of the marine Eupolyzoa (Gymnolema) remarkable bud-like structures termed owcta are developed for the special reception of the ova, and in these organs fertilization takes place. In the Entoprocta there is a peculiar brood-pouch. The spermatozoa of one polypide probably in all cases fertilize the ova of another, but we have not yet in many cases a knowledge of how the spermatozoa get to the eggs, or how the eggs escape from the body-cavity of the parent. In the hippocrepian freshwater Polyzoa (Phylactolema) the ova appear to be fertilized and undergo the early stages of development within the body-cavity of the parent or in a hernia-like protrusion of it. Probably in such cases the embryos escape by the death of the parent and rupture of the parental tissues, as do also the peculiar asexual internal buds or statoblasts of these forms.

The embryo Polyzoon or “larva” swims freely in its early condition by means of cilia, and is in this condition a single polypide or “person.” The forms assumed by these ciliated larve in different Polyzoa are very various and exceedingly difficult of interpretation. We shall have more to say with regard to them below (see figs. 19, 20, 21). The ciliated larva then fixes itself and commences to produce polypides by a process of budding, the buds remaining not merely in contact but in organic continuity, and increasing continually in number so as to form a large colony or zoarium. In Paludicella we have seen that this colony has a simple tree-like form. The new buds form as wart-like growths, usually one, sometimes two in number, at the free end of a cell or zoccium near the spout-like process from which the tentacular crown is everted. In Paludicella all the polypides of a colony are alike; there is no differentiation of form or distribution of function amongst the members of the colony. In many Eupolyzoa this simplicity is by no means maintained, but a great variety of form and

function is assumed by various members of the aggregate. The only approach to a differentiation of the polypides in Paludicella is in the arrest of growth of some of the buds of a colony in autumn, which, instead of advancing to maturity, become conical and invested with a dark-coloured cuticle. They are termed hybernacula. Should the rest of the poly- pides die down in winter, these arrested buds survive and go on to complete development on the return of spring.

In Paludicella we have thus seen a fairly simple and central example of Polyzoon structure and life-history. The variations upon this theme presented in different groups of Polyzoa have been to some small extent noted in the preceding account, but we shall now be able to indicate them more precisely by considering the various groups of Polyzoa in succession. The limit assigned to this article necessitates very large omissions. The reader who wishes to have the fullest information on the many difficult and uncertain matters connected with this subject is referred to Allman, Freshwater Polyzoa (Ray Society, 1856); Hincks, British Marine Polyzoa (Van Voorst, 1880) ; Haddon, “ Budding in Polyzoa,” Quart. Journ. Mier. Sct., 1883; Balfour, Hmbryology, vol. i. p. 242 ; and the original memoirs cited by these writers.

THE VERMIFORMIA.

The first section of the Polyzoa comprises but a single genus, Phoronis. It differs from all other Polyzoa first

| the Ectoproctous Eu-

in its greater size (species 2 inches long are known) and elaboration of organization, and correlatively with that in the fact that it does not produce buds. Further,

45.

it does not produce a closely adherent cuticular zocecium as do Paludicella and the Eupolyzoa generally, but a leathery tube in which the animal freely moves, resem- bling that of some Chetopods (Sabel- la). Like some Sabelle, Phoronis forms closely packed aggregates of indi- viduals not brought

together by any process of budding, but each separately developed from an egg. Phoronis has an elongate, worm- like, unsegmented body, with a conical posterior termina- tion (like Sipuncu- lus), and anteriorly provided with a horse – shoe – shaped crown of tentacles surrounding the mouth (figs. 4, 5). There is an inter- tentacular “ web” between the bases of the tentacles as in the Phylactole- ma. Caldwell (6) has recently shown that the tentacles are supported by a

mesoblastic skele- Fra. 4.—Phoronis hippocrepia, Wright; magnified

: six times linear (from Allman), @, horse-shoe- ton, as is also the shaped 1 phophore with tentaeles; c, ep’stome case in Rhabdo- (pre-oral lobe or prostomium); d¢, cesophagus; /,

ventral vessel; g, g, two anterior vessels whieh unite to form f; 7, longitudinal museular eoat

leura, but appar- F 5 PP of the body-wall; &, intertentaeular membrane.

ently not the case in any other Polyzoa. Close to the mouth, as in all Polyzoa, is placed the anus, outside the horse-shoe-shaped lophophore or tenta-

cular platform (fig. 11, «). The tenta- cular crown is not

introversible ; in this point Phoronis differs from Paludicella and

polyzoa, and agrees with the Entoprocta and the Pterobranchia. Overhanging the mouth is a small pre- oral lobe or “epi- stome ” (figs. 4, 5, c). This organ is aborted in Paludicella, and in- deed in all the Gym- nolema, but is present in the other Polyzoa, and is especially large and well developed in Rhabdopleura and Ce- phalodiscus. It has been compared to the Molluscan foot, but undoubtedly in Phoronis it is the persistent representative of the pre-oral XIX. — 55

Fic. 5.—Lateral view of the anterior region of Phoronis. The tentaeles of the right arm of the lophophore are cut short in order to expose elearly the

mouth 6 and the overhanging ‘ epistome” or pre-oral lobe c. @, intestine ; 2, dorsal vessel. Other letters as in fig. 4.

434-

lobe of the larva (fig. 6), and therefore cannot be compared to the Molluscan foot. If we are right in associating Phoronis with the Polyzoa, this fact is sufficient to show that the epistome of the Phylactolema (fig. 11, ¢) and the buccal shield of Rhabdopleura (fig. 7, d@) and of Cephalodis- cus (fig. 9, 6) are also cephalic in nature, and cannot rightly be identified with the post-oral and ventral muscular lobe known as the foot in Mollusca. A circum-oral nerve ring occurs at the base of the tentacles and sends off a cord which runs along the left side of the body. The alimen- tary canal presents the same general form and regions as in Paludicella. It hangs in the body-cavity, to the walls of which it is suspended by definite mesenteries.

Phoronis presents a closed contractile vascular system containing red-coloured blood-corpuscles (figs. 4, 5, f, g, h). A pair of ciliated canals acting as genital pores is found near the anus; these have been shown by Caldwell to be typical nephridia.

The development of Phoronis is remarkable. The egg gives rise (after the usual phases of cleavage and gastrula- tion) to the larval form known as Actinotrocha (fig. 6). This larva possesses a hood-like region overhanging

a |!

Fra. 6.—Development of Phoronis and typical ciliate larve. (1), (2), (8), (8), (9), (10), stages in the development of Phoronis—(1), earliest larva; (2), lateral view of the Actinotrocha; (3), ventral view of the same; (8), the ventral in- vagination dv is formed; (9), the ventral invagination is everted, carrying with it a loop of intestine ; (10), the permanent relations of mouth, anus, and body (Podaxonia) are attained, (4), (5), Echinoderm larva with architroch, as in Actinotrocha, but band-like, not digitate. (6), Echinoderm larva, with the architroch divided into a pree-oral cephalotroch (Molluscan and Rotifer’s velum), and a post-oral branchiotroch. (7), Cheetopod trochosphere larva with cephalo- troch only, and elongation and segmentation of the oro-anal axis. a. anus; 0, mouth ; pr, prostomium ; tv,

ventral invagination of Phoronis larva. A B, oro- analaxis; V D, dorso-ventral axis. ;

the mouth and a number of ciliated post-oral processes or tentacles. The anus is placed at the extremity of the elongate body opposite to that bearing the mouth and

pree-oral hood. The prz-oral hood becomes the epistome, and the tentacles, by further development (new tentacles replacing the larval ones), become the horse-shoe-shaped group of tentacles of the adult. A very curious process of growth changes the long axis of the body and results in the anus assuming its permanent position near the mouth. An invagination appears on the ventral face of the larva between the anus and mouth, and attains con- siderable size. At a definite moment in the course of growth this invagination is suddenly everted, carrying with it in its cavity the intestine in the form of a loop. Thus a new long axis is suddenly established at right angles to the original oro-anal axis, and continues to de- velop as the main portion of the body. The short area extending from the pre-oral hood to the anus is thus the true dorsal surface of Phoronis, whilst the elongated body is an outgrowth of the ventral surface perpendicular to the primary oro-anal axis, as conversely in many Mollusca we find a short ventral area (the foot) between mouth and anus, and an outgrowth of the dorsal surface (the visceral hump) perpendicular to the primary oro-anal axis, forming the chief body of the animal. In these relations Phoronis (and with it the other Polyzoa) agrees with Sipunculus. On the other hand Echiurus, the Chetopods, Nemertine worms, and some other groups which start from a simple larval form not unlike that of Phoronis, present a continual elongation of the original oro-anal axis, and no transference of the long axis by the perpendicular or angular growth of either the ventral or the dorsal surface of the larva.

Phoronis was discovered originally in the Firth of Forth by Dr Strethill Wright. It occurs in the Mediterranean and in Australian seas (Port Jackson).

THE PTEROBRANCHIA.

This section of the Polyzoa also comprises forms which differ very widely from Paludicella. Inasmuch as their development from the egg is at present quite unknown, it may possibly prove that they have other affinities. Only two genera are known, Rhabdopleura (Allman) and Cephalodiscus (M‘Intosh), the former dredged by Dr

| Norman in deep water off the Shetlands (and subse-

quently in Norway), the latter taken by the “ Challenger” expedition in 250 fathoms off the coast of Patagonia.

The Pterobranchia have the mouth and anus closely approximated, and immediately below the mouth are given off a series of ciliated tentacles, but these do not form a complete circle as in Paludicella, nor is the lophophore (the

_ platform of their origin) horse-shoe-shaped as in Phoronis. _ The lophophore is drawn out into a right and a left arm in

Rhabdopleura (fig. 7), upon each of which are two rows of ciliated tentacles ; no tentacles are developed centrally in the region between the two arms, so that the mouth is not completely surrounded by these processes. The horse- shoe-shaped lophophore of Phoronis could be modified so as to represent the tentaculiferous arms of Rhabdopleura by suppressing both rows of tentacles at the curve of the horse-shoe, and leaving only those which occur on the arms or rami of the horse shoe (see fig. 4). The lopho-phore of Cephalodiscus presents us with twelve processes, each carrying two rows of ciliated tentacles; in fact we have six pairs of tantaculiferous arms instead of a single pair, and each of these arms is precisely similar to one of the arms. of Rhabdopleura (fig. 9), excepting that it terminates in a knob instead of tapering. There is no arrangement for introverting the anterior portion of the body into the hinder portion in the Pterobranchia.

The little epistome or pree-oral lobe of Phoronis is repre- sented in the Pterobranchia by a large muscular shield or disk-like structure (fig. 7, d and fig. 9, 6) which over- hangs the mouth and has an actively secreting glandular

surface by which the tube or case (tubarium) in which the | is a gelatinous, irregularly branched, and fimbriated mass

polypide is enclosed is secreted.

Both Rhabdopleura and Cephalodiscus produce colonies by budding ; but the colonies of the former are large, definite, and arborescent, whilst those of Cephalodiscus are remarkable for the fact that the buds do not remain long in organic continuity with their parent, but become detached and nevertheless continue to be enclosed by the same common envelope or secretion. The bud-formation of Rhabdopleura recalls that of Paludicella in the fact that it leads to the formation of continuous arboriform communities. That of Cephalodiscus resembles the budding of Loxosoma, since no two fully-formed individuals remain

719 Om NOSE ~~ Wag eatae Gh E000 o7NI0

ba < Vers Ke

£9 f i) i iJ lJ

Fic. 7.—Rhabdopleura Normani, Allman (original drawings, Lankester). A. A single polypide removed from its tube and greatly magnified. a@, mouth; }, anus ; c, polypide-stalk or gymnoeaulus, the ‘contractile cord” of Sars; d, the pra-oral lobe (buccal shield or disk of Allman); e¢, intestine; jf, thoracie region of the polypide; g, one of the eiliated tentacles. B. Lateral view to show the form of the buccal shield and its pigment spot. g, ciliated tentacle (in outline); 4, basal ridge of theright arm of the lophophore. C. Lateral view of a polypide. #, ciliated patch (Sars’s organ) at the base of the lophophore-arm. Other letters as above. D. Part of a lophophore-arm, with soft tissues rubbed off to show the cartilaginoid skeleton. a, epithelium and soft tissues still adherent at the tip of a tentacle; 6, skeleton of tentacle; c, skeleton of axis. E. Portion of a colony of Rhabdopleura Normant, showing the branched tube- like cases formed by the polypides. The black line

within the tubes represents the retracted polypides eonnected together by their eommon stalk, the pecto- eaulus. Magnified to three times the size of nature.

in organic continuity. Both Rhabdopleura and Cephalo- discus (like Phoronis) produce cases or investments in which they dwell. These are free secretions of the organ- ism, and are not, like the coencecia of Eupolyzoa, cuticular structures adherent to and part of the polypide's integu- ment. The dwelling of Rhabdopleura is a branched system of annulated tubes of a delicate membranous con- sistency, each tube corresponding to a single polypide, the rings of which it is built being successively produced at the termination of the tube by the secreting activity of the pree-oral disk (fig. 7, E). The polypides freely ascend and descend in these tubes owing to the contractility of their stalks. On the other hand the dwelling of Cephalodiscus

(fig. 8), excavated bynumerous cavities which communicate withtheexterior. In these cavities are found the nu- merous detached small colonies of Cephalodiscus (fig. 9), or we should rather say the isolated budding polypides. The remaining important feature in the organization of the Ptero- branchia, namely, the parts connected with the forma- tion of buds, are best un- derstood by first examining Cephalodiscus. The body of Cephalodiscus is seen (fig. 9) to be an oval sac ; in this is suspended the U-shaped alimentary canal, and from the walls of its cavity (ccelom) the ova and the spermatozoa are de- veloped. Projecting from the ventral face of this oval sac is a muscular cy- lindrical stalk, into which the viscera do not pass, though the ccelom is con- tinued into it (fig. 9, ¢). This stalk is merely the outdrawn termination of oe, ees > es the body. It is about ag F!¢: 8 — Dwelling of gelatinous consistence ie os Gd Was ES Soke eee. rest of the animal, and it {inaly supplied by Prot. Mintosh, F-R.8). is from its extremity that 9,polypide within the jelly ; », cavity once the buds are produced (fig. ia ee aaa z 9, a). Before the buds have attained half the size of their parent they become detached, but continue to occupy some portion of the common gelatinous dwelling. 2

CAN ; Py. aN

AGA AN NA Gp 2 aw 4) Hh y y, Mitac © & eae Woes BS Wen Ore

S

ui

Fic. 9.—A polypide of Cephalodiscus dodeca:ophus removed from the gelatinous “house (from an original drawing by Prof. M‘Intosh). No organic eonnexion has been severed in thus isolating this polypide with its attached buds a, a. The figure represents the furthest point to which eolony-formation attains in

this form. a, buds growing from the base of the polypide-stalk; 6, the pre-oral lobe (buceal shield or disk); c, the poly pide-stalk; d, the ciliated tentacles of the twelve lophophore arms (six pairs, each like the single pair of Rhab- dopleura) inextricably matted and confused; e, anterior margin of the pra- oral lobe; 7, posterior margin of the same. Magnified about fifty times linear. Turning to Rhabdopleura, we find that each polypide has a body of similar shape and character to that described for Cephalodiscus, and a similar ventrally developed

“stalk” (fig. 7, A,c). But, inasmuch as the buds deve-

loped on the stalk of a Rhabdopleura polypide do not | detach themselves, we find that we can trace the stalk of each polypide of a colony into connexion with the stalk of the polypide from which it was originally budded, which may now be considered as a “branch” bearing many- stalked polypides upon its greatly extended length, and such a “ branch-stalk” may be further traced to its junc- tion with the “stem-stalk” of the whole colony. The stem-stalk was at one time the simple terminal stalk of a single polypide, but by lateral budding it gave rise to other polypides, and so became a gemmiferous “branch” ; and further, when some of these in their turn budded and became branches, it became the main “stem” of a copious colony.

A serious error has been made in comparing the contrac- tile stalk of the Pterobranchiate polypide to the “funi- culus” or cord-like mesentery of Eupo- lyzoa. With this it has morphologi- cally nothing in common, since it

is § not an internal organ, but simply the 49 , " . . ~% elongated termination or stalk of the body, comparable to the stalk of Pedi- cellina (fig. 15) and Loxosoma (fig. 16), or to the hydrocaulus of such a Hydro- zoon colony as Cordylophora, The stalk where it bears only very young buds, or none at all, as is always its condition in Cephalodiscus and in many polypides of a Rhabdopleura colony, may be called a ‘‘ gymnocaulus”; when once its buds have devel- oped into full grown poly- pides, and it has elongated proportionally with their growth, it becomes a “ pec- tocaulus”; that is to say, it is to that part of it which bears such polypides that this term may be conveni- ently applied. The pecto- caulus of Rhabdopleura, both in the form of branch and stem, undergoes remarkable change of appearance as com- pared with the gymnocaulus. It loses its contractility, shrinks, and develops on its surface a hard, dark, horny cuticle (whence its name), compgrable precisely in its nature to the hardened cuticle which forms the zotecia of Eupo- lyzoa. It now has the appearance of a black cord or rod-like body lying within and adherent to the inner face of the much wider tubular stem, and branches formed by the gradual building up and arborescent extension of the annulated tubarium secreted by the individual polypides. It has been regarded both by Allman and by Sars as a special structure, and called by the former “the chitinous rod” or “‘blastophore,” by the latter “the axial cord.”

In reality it is the black-coloured pectocaulus of Rhabdopleura which corresponds to the ccencecium of an ordinary Polyzoon; whilst the term “ccencecium” is totally inapplicable morphologically to the annulated branched tube in which the Rhabdopleura colony lives, this having absolutely no parallel in the Eupolyzoa.

A sac-like testis has been discovered in Rhabdopleura opening by the side of the anus (Lankester, 7); but the ova have not yet been seen, nor is anything known of its development. Similarly the eggs of Cephalodiscus are observed within the body of the parent in the “Chal- lenger” specimens, but nothing further is known of its life-history.

A body-cavity is present (Lankester), though its exist- ence has been denied by Sars and by M‘Intosh. Neph- ridia and nerve ganglia are not described. Cephalodiscus |

~

decalophus, from which the lophophore- tentacles and buccal shield have been removed in order to show the remark- able eyes. a, bus; c, stalk; g, eyes; h, post-ora] collar, hidden by the buccal shield ih fig. 9. (Original drawing by Prof. M‘Intosh. F.R.S.)

POLYZOA

has two remarkable eye spots dorsal to the cephalic disk (fig. 10, g). THE EUPOLYZOA.

Whilst it is necessary to include in the group Polyzoa, the forms we have already noticed as Vermiformia and Pterobranchia, there can be no doubt that those organisms to which we assign the name Eupolyzoa are primarily those upon which naturalists have framed their concep- tion of the group, and that they constitute a very con- sistent assemblage, held together by well-defined characters, and yet presenting an immense number of varied forms showing a wide range of modifications.

All the Eupolyzoa have closely approximated mouth and anus, and, like Paludicella, a complete range of hollow

‘ ciliate tentacles, describing either a circle or a horse shoe,

surrounding the mouth. The anus as well as the mouth is included in this area in a few exceptional forms (the Entoprocta); it lies near but outside the lophophore (as the area is termed) in the vast majority (the Ectoprocta). Except in the Entoprocta, where the movement is limited, the whole anterior portion of the body bearing the lophophore can be invaginated into the hinder part (as described above for the typical Eupolyzoon Paludicella). This character distinguishes the Eupolyzoa from both Vermiformia and Pterobranchia. The polypides of all the Eupolyzoa are minute, but all produce buds which remain in organic continuity with their parent (except in Loxo- soma) and build up very considerable and sometimes massive colonies.

In all Eupolyzoa the cuticle of the hinder part of each polypide is thick and dense, thus forming a hard-walled sac, the zocecium, This is peculiar to and universal in the Eupolyzoa (except Loxosoma), and is not to be confounded with the non-adherent tubes of Phoronis and Rhabdopleura or the jelly-house of Cephalodiscus. The connected zocecia of a colony of Eupolyzoa constitute a coencecium. A simple nerve ganglion between mouth and anus, a large body-cavity (except in Entoprocta), simple gonads without accessory glands or ducts, usually testis and ovary inthe same polypide, absence of a blood-vascular system, of any but the most rudimentary nephridia, and of eyes, otocysts, or other special sense-organs, are features characterizing all adult Eupolyzoa.

The section Eupolyzoa, with its vast number of species and genera, requires a somewhat elaborate classification. The forms in which the anus is enclosed within the tentacular circle are very few, and are peculiar in other respects. We follow Nitsche (8) in separating them as the sub-class Entoprocta from the majority of Eupolyzoa forming the sub-class Ectoprocta.

Sub-class 1. Ectoprocta, Nitsche.

Eupolyzoa with the anus not included within the area of the lophophore. Anterior portion of the body of the normal polypide introversible. Tentacles not individually capable of being coiled or flexed.

Order 1. PHytacrotama, Allman.

Ectoproctous Eupolyzoa in which the polypide possesses a pree-oral lobe or epistome, similar to that of Phoronis, and comparable to the more highly developed buccal shield or disk of the Pterobranchia. Lophophore (except in Fredericella, where it is nearly circular) horse-shoe-shaped (hippocrepian). Polypides of a colony equi-formal, that is, not differentiated in structure and function. Neighbouring zocecia are in free and open communication, the bud never becoming shut off by a perforated cuticular plate from its parent. Cuticle of the zocecia either gelatinous or horny, forming massive or else arborescent coencecia, in one genus

FOL YTAOA

(Cristatella) having the form of a plano-convex ellipse and , lophophore is perfectly circular. The polypides of a colony

locomotive (fig. 3).

production of new individuals from fertilized eggs which initiate new colonies, a reproduction by internal buds called “statoblasts,” comparable to the gemmz of Spon- gilla, has been observed in all the genera (fig. 3, 5). The statoblasts are developed from the funiculus (mesentery), and are enclosed in ornate lenticular capsules of chitinous substance, characteristic in form in each species.

The fertilized egg of the Phylactolema does not give rise to a zonociliate larva, but to a uniformly ciliate cyst- like diblastula, which develops directly and produces polypides by budding. The Phylactolzma are all inhabit- ants of fresh water (lacustrine).

LMU HEL ve /q!

oy Che te iti

q lit Vi

Fic. 11.—Semi-ideal view of part of the lophophore of Lophopus and its tentacles, —intended to show the nerve-gunglion, nerves, and parts around the mouth. The tentacles have been cut away all along the right arm of the lophophore and from the inner margin of the left arm. c, foramen placing the cavity of the epistome in communication with the body-cavity ; ¢’, body-wall; d, mouth; e, the epistome or pree-oral lobe; f, wall of the pharynx ; /, wall of the intestine; Zz, anus; &, lophophore; /, aciliated tentacle; , elevator muscle of the epistome; w, the nerve-ganglion; 2, 2’, nerves to lophophore and tentacles: y, nerve to pharynx.

The Phylactolema include the genera Lophopus, Cristatella, Alcyonella, Plumatella, and Fredericella, whic have been beauti- fully figured and described in Allman’s classical Freshwater Polyzoa, Ray Society, 1856. The

colonies of Lophopus are small, consist- ing of half a dozen polypides embedded in a massive glass-like ceencecium. Cristatella (fig. 8) is remarkable amongst all Polyzoa for its locomotive zoarium. Alcyonella forms massive ccencecia of many hundred polypides, as large as a man's fist. Plumatella and Fredericella are delicate arborescent forms commonly encrusting stones and the leaves of water-plants. All the genera known are British.

The Phylactolema furnish a remarkable instance of a well- marked zoological group being confined to fresh water. Their reproduction by statoblasts (not known in the marine Polyzoa) appears to be related to the special conditions of lacustrine life, since it is also observed under the same exceptional conditions in the single freshwater genus of another great group of animals, viz., Spongilla. Also related to their non-marine conditions of life is the development of the fertilized egg, which, as in so many similar cases, does not produce the remarkable banded forms of locomotive larvee which are characteristic of their marine congeners.

Order 2. GymnoLema, Allman.

Ectoproctous Eupolyzoa in which the polypide is devoid of any trace of the pre-oral lobe or epistome, whilst the

the first polypide of a colony is

In addition to the multiplication | are frequently highly differentiated as avicularia, vibracu- of polypides in a colony by budding, and to the annual |

laria, ocecia (egg-receptacles), and even as root and stem segments. The neighbouring polypides of a colony communicate (?) with one another by "rosette-plates" or " communication-plates "—perforated areas in the walls of contiguous zocecia, The greatest variety in the character of the cuticle forming the zocecia (gelatinous, horny, calcareous) and in the grouping of the polypides, as well as in the shape of their zocecia, is observed in different sub-orders and families. In addition to the ordinary sexual reproduction, there are various modifications of the process of budding, the full exposition of which would necessitate more space than is here allotted, and is not yet indeed within the possibilities of present knowledge. The

fertilized egg of the Gymnolema gives rise to remarkable ciliate larve of various forms (figs. 19, 20, 21), from which

developed by an extraordinary and unexplained series of changes. The Gymnolema are, with the single exception of the genus Palu- , dicella, inhabitants of the sea.

The Gymnolema are divided, accord- ing to the system of Busk, into three sub-orders characterized by the shape of their zocecia, and the nature of the mouth-like margin which it presents when the exsertile portion of the poly- pide is withdrawn within it. The

yclostoma have long tubular zocecia, often of large size and often calcified, placed side by side in cylindrical bun- dles, or in other definite grouping ; the mouth of the zoccium is circular and devoid of processes. There is little or no differentiation of the polypides con- stituting a colony. Most of this group are fossil, and the living genera belong mostly to southern seas. The genera Crisia (fig. 18, A), Diastopora, Tubuli- pora, and Hornera are typical. The Ctenostoma have usually a soft zoc- cium ; its orifice is closed by the folds of the retracted polypide or by a circlet of bristles which surround it. Alcyonidium gelatinosum is the com- monest representative of this group on the British coasts. Bowerbankia (fig. 1, A)and Paludicella (fig. 1, E) also belong here. The Chilostoma form the largest and most varied sub- order of Gymnolema. The zocecia are horny or calcified; their orifices can be closed by a projecting lip in the form of an operculum. The operculum is a separable plate developed on the cuticle of the retractile part of the polypide, and has muscles attaclicd to it (fig. 13, B,C, D). The surface of the zocecia is frequently sculptured, and its orifice provided with processes and spines (fig. 1,C, F). Very usually some of the polypides of a colony are modified asavicularia, vibracularia, radi- cal fibres, and owcia. The avicularium isa poly pide reduced to a simple muscu- lar apparatus working upon the modified operculum and zocecium so as to cause these hard parts to act asa snapping apparatus comparable to a bird’s head (fig. 12, 0). They are frequently found regularly distributed among the normal cells of a colony, and probably have a cleansing function similar to that attributed to the Pedicellaric of the Echinoderms. ‘‘ Vibracularia” are even more simplified polypides, being little more than motile filaments, probably

tactile in function. The opercula of zoccia, occia, and avicularia have recently been used by Busk in character- izing genera and species, in a systematic way. Stem-building and root-forming polypides are frequently found, being closed polypides which subserve anchoring or supporting functions for the benefit of the whole colony, The stem of Kinetoskias (fig. 14) is produced

Fic. 12.—Two zocecia of

in this way.

The Chilostoma include a large series of genera arranged in the sections Cellularina, Flustrina, Escharina,

and

Fic, 13.—A. Cancecium of Crisia eburnea, Lin., one of the Cyclostoma ; g, g, tubular zocecia with circular terminal mouths; 2x, ocecium, being a zocecium modified to serve as a brood-chamber.

B. Diagram of a single polypide of one of the Chilostoma in a state of expansion, in order to show the position and action of the operculum. a, operculum, a plate of thickened cuticle hinged or jointed to 6, the main area of dense cuticle of the antitentacular region known as the zocecium ; c, the soft-walled portion of the polypide in expansion.

C. The same zocwcium with the polypide invaginated (telescoped) and the operculum a shut down over the mouth of the zocecium.

D. a dctached, and seen from its inner face, to show the occlusor muscles d d,

Celleporina. For the systematic description of the highly complex and very varied colonial skeletons or ccenecia of the Gymnolema,

Fic. 14,—Kinetoskias (Naresia) cyathus (from Sir Wyville Thomson pides and zocecia are allied to Bugula, but the poll na as a whole ‘4 Fi oe for its

definite shape, consisting of a number of slightly branched gracefully bending filaments Supported like the leaves of a palm on a long transparent stalk, (See Busk, in Quart. Journ. Micr. Sci., 1881, for further details.)

the reader is referred to the works of Busk (9), Hincks (10), Smitt (11), and Heller (12). See also Ehlers (13) on Hypoubordlle _

POLYZOA

Sub-class 2. Entoprocta, Nitsche.

Eupolyzoa in which the anal aperture lies close to the mouth within the tentacular area or lophophore. Lopho- phore sunk within a shallow basin formed by the inversion of the broad truncated extremity of the cup-shaped body. Tentacular crown not further introversible, the individual tentacles (as in the Pterobranchia and unlike the Kcto- procta) capable of being flexed and partially rolled up so as to overhang the mouth (see fig. 15, B and C). Body- cavity (ccelon:) almost completely obliterated. The anti- tentacular region of the polypide's body is drawn out to form a stalk similar to the gymnocaulus of the Pterobran- chia. The extremity of this stalk is provided with a cement gland in the young condition which persists in the adult of some species (Loxosoma neapolitanum, fig. 16, shs). Cuticular investment (zocecium) of the polypides feebly developed. A pair of small nephridia are present.

The Entoprocta consist of the marine genera Pedi- cellina (fig. 15), Loxosoma (fig. 16), and probably the

Fig. 15.—A. Two polypides and buds of Pedicellina belgica, Van B. (after Van Beneden); greatly magnified. a, the polypide-stalk of a fwly developed polypide ; c, that of a less mature individual; 6,a bud. Allare connected by acommon stalk or stolon. B. and C. Two views of the body of the polypide of Pedicellina (after Allman). a, cuticle; 6, body-wall; c, permanently in- troverted anterior region of the body; d, margin of the tentacular cup or calyx thus formed; e, mouth; 7, pharynx; g, stomach; h, intestine; 7, anus; k, epistome or pre-oral lobe; 7, nerve-ganglion; m, gonad; , retractor muscle of the lophophore ; 0, lophophore.

insufficiently known freshwater American genus Urnatella of Leidy. To these must be added Busk's new genus Ascopodaria, as yet undescribed, based on a specimen dredged by the " Challenger," showing a number of Pedi- cellina-like polypides, carried as an umbel on a common stalk of very peculiar structure. Pedicellina is found at- tached to algze, shells, zoophytes, &c., and to the integu- ment of some Gephyrean worms (Sipunculus punctatus) and Annelids (Aphrodite) ; Loxosoma occurs on various worms, &c. Whilst the buds of Pedicellina remain connected so as to constitute a colony, those produced by Loxosoma are continually detached, so that the polypide is solitary. Further, the cup-like body of Pedicellina is deciduous, and frequently falls from the stalk and is replaced by new growth. There is less distinction between body and stalk in Loxosoma, and the former does not become detached. Apparently a very important feature in the structure of the Entoprocta is the absence of a body-cavity. This is, however, more apparent than real. The Entoprocta are true Coelomata, but the ccelom is partially obliterated by the growth of mesoblastic tissue. The nephridia presum- ably lie in a space which, small as it is, represents the ccelom. See Harmer (18) for details.

POLYZOA

Genealogical Relationships of the Groups of Polyzoa.

It is necessary that we should try to form some opinion:

as to which of the various groups of Polyzoa are most like the ancestral form from which they have all sprung, and what are the probable lines of descent within the group. Any attempt of the kind is speculative, but it is absolutely needful since zoology has become a science—that is to say, an investigation of causes and not merely a record of unexplained observations —to enter upon such questions.

Colonial organisms have necessarily descended from soli- |

tary ancestors, and it is probable that the ancestral form of Polyzoa was not only solitary, as are Phoronis and Loxosoma at the present day, but of relatively large size and more elaborately organized than the majority of living Polyzoa. Whilst the polypides have dwindled in size and

Fie. 16.—Diagram of Lorosoma Neapolitanum (after Kowalewsky). polypide devoid of buds. polypide-stalk.

A single m, mouth; st, stomach; shs, basal gland of the

lost some of their internal organs, the modern Polyzoa have developed part passw with this degeneration an elaborate system of bud-production and colony-formation. The new individuality (the tertiary aggregate) attains a high degree of development (Cristatella, Kinetoskias) in proportion as the constituent units merged in this new individuality have suffered a degeneration. The pre-oral lobe (epistome, buccal disk) present in all Polyzoa except the most minute and most elaborately colonial forms—namely, the Gymnolema—is to be regarded as an ancestral structure which has been lost by the Gymnolema. The horse-shoe-shaped lophophore, such as we see it in Phoronis and in Lophopus, is probably the ancestral form, and has given rise to the two other extreme forms of lophophore,— namely, the ‘“pterobranchiate,” associated with a great development of the epistome, and the “circular,” associated with a complete suppression of the epistome. The ento- proctous lophophore is a special modification of the horse- shoe-shaped, as shown in the diagram fig. 15, C. The

formation of zocecia, and so of an elaborate colonial |

skeleton, was not a primary feature of the Polyzoa.

Even

after budding and colony-formation had been established zocecia were not at once produced, but possibly dwellings

of another kind (Pterobranchia).

We are thus led to look

upon the Gymnolema as the extreme modification of the

Polyzoon type.

Starting with an organism similar to

Phoronis, we may suppos? the following branchings in the

pedigree to have occurred.

VERMIFORMIA

| A. The complete hippoerepian lophophore becomes specialized in the form of etenidia or gill- plumes; the epistome enlarged. = PTEROBRANCHIA.

a. The anti-tentacular region of the body elongated asa stalk gives rise to one or two rapidly detached buds (Ce- phalodiscus).

B. The stalk gives rise to buds which do not detach them- selves, but remain in eon- tinuity so as to form a colony of a hundred or more individuals (Rhabdo- pleura).

| B. The complete hippocrepian lophophore retains its form, but acquires a gradually increasing power of being telescoped into the hinder part of the body. =The Pro-Eupolyzoon. ,

A. The anti-tentacular region of the body beeomes stalk-like, and develops buds which either detach themselves as they form (Loxosoma) or remain to form a small colony (Pedicellina). The teleseopie introversibility of the lophophore does not advance be- yond an initial stage. Thearms of the lophophore grow round so as to embrace the anus. =Sub-class 1 (of the Eupoly-

zoa) Entoprocta.

|

B. The complete hippocrepian lophophore remains in its origi- nal form, and also the pre-oral epistome, but the telescopie in- troversibility of the anterior region of the body is greatly de- veloped at the samo time that the cutiele of the hinder part of the body is increased in thiekness and toughness. Bud production, not from a stalk-like pedicle, but from all parts

of the body, now becomes eharaeteristic, the buds, whieh were at first deciduous, now remaining in permanent continuity so as to form colonies.

= The Pro-Ectoprocton.

A. The polypides aequire the property of earrying their young so as to avoid the disastrous influenees of fluviatile currents, and also the property of produc- ing resistent statoblasts, and thus are enabled to become isolated and to persist in the peculiar eonditions of fresh waters. =The Ist order (of Ectoprocta)

Phylactolema.

B. The polypides forming relatively larger colonies, and themselves becoming relatively more minute, lose by atrophy the pre-oral epistome ; and simul- taneously the arms of the hippo- crepian lophophore dwindle, and a simple cireum-oral eirelet of tentacles is the result. The cuticle of the hinder part of the polypide becomes more and more specialized as the cell or zow- cium, and in different polypides in various parts of the eolony aequires special forms—as egg- cases, snappers (avieularia), ten- tacles, stalk and root segments. =The 2d order (of Ectoprocta)

Gymnolema.

Distinctive Characters of the Polyzoa.

From all that has preceded it appears that the really distinctive characters common to all the Polyzoa may be summed up as follows :—

Ccelomata with closely approximated mouth and anus, the bulk of the - body forming a more or less elongate growth at right angles to the original (ancestral) oro-anal axis, and starting from the original ventral (z.e., oral) sur- face. A variously modified group of ciliated tentacles is disposed around the mouth, being essentially the develop- ment by digitiform upgrowth of a post-oral ciliated band.

As negative characters it is important to note the absence of all trace of metameric segmentation, of sete, and of paired lateral (parapodia of Appendiculata) or median ventral (podium of Mollusca) outgrowths of the body-wall.

Larval Forms of Polyzoa.

In the consideration of the probable pedigree and affinities of the Polyzoa, we are not at present able to make use of the facts of development from the egg, on account of the extreme difficulty which the study of the young stages of these organisms presents. In the case of Phoronis we have the only readily intelligible his- tory. The larva, to start with, is of that form known as an archi- troch (see Lankester, ‘‘ Notes on Embryology and Classification, Quart. Journ. Micr. Sci., 1876), having a pre-oral ciliated area (velum or cephalotroch) continuous with a post-oral ciliated band (the branchiotroch), which latter becomes developed into the ten- tacnlar crown of the adult.

The actinotrocha (Phoronis) larva is readily comparable with the trochosphere larve of Echinoderms, Chetopods, Gephyreans, and Molluscs. Its special character consists in the strong develop- ment of the post-oral ciliated band, whereas the pre-oral ciliated band is in most other classes (the Sipunculoids excepted) the predominant one. The Phoronis larva exhibits first of all an oro- anal long axis, and this is suddenly abandoned for a new long axis by the growth of the ventral surface of the larva at right angles to the primary axis (hence the term Podaxonia).

In the other Polyzoa we do not at present know of any larva which retains even in its earliest phases the original oro-anal long axis. They all appear to start at once with the peculiar and secondary long axis of the adult Phoronis, so that Balfour has diagrammatically represented the Polyzoon larva by the sketch given in fig. 19. This diagram applies, however, more especially to the Entoprocta, since the anus is represented as included in the area of thé post-oral ciliated ring. The development of Pedicellina has been very carefully followed by Hatschek, and may be said to be

AK \H\!

Fig. 17, Fig. 18.

Fie. 17,—Larva of Pedicellina (from Balfour, after Hatschek). v, vestibule (the cup-like depression of the tentaculiferous end of the body); m, mouth; 1, digestive gland; av.z, anal invagination ; fg, the ciliated disk (corresponding to the cement gland of Loxosoina (fig. 16, shs); z, so-called ‘‘ dorsal organ,” supposed by Balfour to be a bud, by Haimer (18) regarded as the cephalic ganglion,

Fie. 18.—Later stage of the same larva as fig. 17. Letters as before, with the addition of np, duct of the right nephridium ; a, anus; Ag, hind-gut.

the only instance among the Eupolyzoa in which the growth of

the different organs and the consequent relation of the form of the

larva to the form of the adult is understood (sce figs. 17 and 18). In the other Polyzoa, in spite of the painstaking and minute

studies of Barrois (14), the fact is that we do

not know what face of the larva corresponds to the tentacular area, what to the stalk or anti- tentacular extremity, what to the anterior and what to the posterior surface. The conversion of the larva into the first polypide has not sé. been observed in the case of these free-swim- ming forms, and it is even probable that no such conversion ever takes place, but that the first polypide forms as a bud upon the body- site wall of the larva. ; Fig, 19.—Diagram of an Two of the most remarkable forms of free- 4¢2! Polyzoon larva P ‘ (from Balfour). an, swimming larve of Gymnolema are repre- anus; m, mouth; sé, sented in figs. 20 and 21. In both, in addition stomach; ss, ciliated

to the chief post-oral ciliated band, a smaller ‘isk (7g in figs. 17, 18,

ciliated ring is observed, which is identified

and 21).

by Balfour with that which is found at the anti-tentacular extremity (base of the stalk) in the Pedicellina larva.

| theory, in Polyzoa it is

_ Polyzoa would fix themselves in | later growth by what corresponds _to the head or prostomium of

| genious as this speculation is, we | mustremember that it takes no

POLY2Z04

It does not seem justifiable, in the face of the existing uncertain- ties as to identification of parts, and in view of the high probability that the Gymno- lema are extremely modified and degen- erate forms (a con- sideration which applies in some re- spects even more strongly to the En- toprocta), to assume that the larval form schematized in fig. p.¢ 90.—Larva of Alcyonidium mytili (from Balfoar 19 represents an an— after Barrois). m?, problematic structure; s¢, oral cestral condition of invagination (?) = Harmer's cephalic ganglion; s, cili- the Polyzoa. Pro- ated disk (corresponding to fg in figs, 17, 18, and 21). fessor Balfonr (15) was, however, led to entertain such a view ; and, assuming that the chief ciliated band (drawn as a broad black line) corresponds to the single pre-oral ciliated band of the trochosphere larva of Echinrus, Polygordius, ¢ Chetopods, and Mollus- ca, he pointed out that in both cases the ciliated girdle divides the larva into a hemisphere in which mouth and anus lie and a hemisphere which is the complement of this; in most classes the first hemisphere elongates and forms the bulk of the body, whilst the second hemisphere forms the prostomium or pree-oral lobe. But, ac- cording to Balfour's

Ck

Fig, 21.—Larva of Membranipora (known as Cy- phonautes), m, mouth; a', anus; fy, ciliated vody; 2x, problematical body, supposed by Bal- four to be a bud, similar to the dorsal organ 7

the second hemisphere in figs, 17, 18, and to either s¢ or min fig. 20.

which enlarges and becomes the stalk-like body of the adult, whilst

the first hemisphere remains small and insignificant. Thus the

other animals, as do the Bar- nacles and the Ascidians, In-

account of the facts known as to Phoronis, nor of the Ptero- branchia, and that it is con- fessedly based upon the assump- tion that the larve of extremely degenerate and peculiar members of the group are not adaptive and modified, but retain primary and archaic characters. Further, it is to be distinctly borne in mind that the interpretation of parts upon which this speculation rests is, except in the case of Pedicellina, altogether hypo- thetical.

Relations of the Polyzoa to the Brachiopoda,

The Polyzoa were first asso- ciated with the Brachiopoda by H. Milne-Edwards. The inves- tigation of the development of Terebratulina by Morse (16) led to a further perception of the points of agreement in struc- ture between these two groups. Lastly, Caldwell (6) has shown that the mesenteries of Phoronis have precisely similar relations

to the lophophore, the nephridia, and the termination of the intes- tine as have the gastro-parietal and ilio-parietal bands or mes- enteries of the Terebratulide. The young Terebratulina (fig. 22)

Fie. 22,—Young Terebratulina at a stage when only six tentacles are present, sé, sete at the margin of the calyx; p, stalk comparable to the stalk ot Pedi- cellina, Loxosoma, Cephalodiscus, and Rhabdopleura; pa, cement gland at the apex of the stalk (after Morsc),

may be readily compared with Loxosoma (fig. 16),—the peduncle with its cement glands in the former being identical with the stalk

and basal gland of the latter.

The form of the alimentary canal

POM—

and the disposition of the tentacular arms (fig. 23) is the same in Brachiopoda and Polyzoa. The uephridia (oviducts) of Terebratula have a position and relations similar to those of the nephridia (geni- tal ducts) of Phoronis. The chief difference between Polyzoa aud Brachiopoda cousists in the special development of the margin of the cupped end of the body, into which the lophophore is sunk, as in Pedi- cellina (see fig. 15, B, c). This up-standing margin is enormously

\ iy ‘it! \t i An) ‘ \ G d

St phy Rw Y

Fig. 23. Fig. 24.

Fie. 23.—Lophophore and epistome of young Terebratulina, showing the horse- shoe shape; the arms are turned in the direction the reverse of that taken by the lophophore-arms in Polyzoa (see fig. 4).

h In later growth they will become spirally coiled. (After Morse.)

Fie. 24.—Larva of the Brachiopod Argiope (from Gegenoaur, after Kowalewsky). m, setigerous lobe; 6, sete; d, enteron.

increased in the Brachiopoda, so as to form a voluminous hood or collar, which surrounds the large tentacular arms, and forms a pro- tective chamber for them. It is notched right and left so as to be divided into two lobes, and on its surface is developed a horny or a calcareous shell in two corresponding moieties. Until recently it was held (see Lankester, 17) that both Brachiopoda and Polyzoa were modifications of the Molluscan type, and the Brachiopods’ collar was identified with the pallial fold of Mollusca. The resem- blance of the two structures must now be considered as purely

homoplastic, and not as having any real morphological (homo- genetic) significance.

_The larvae of the Brachiopoda (figs. 24, 25) are as exceptional and difficult of interpretation as those of Polyzoa, but no attempt has been yet made to show that the one can be reduced to a common form with the other.

The three segments presented by some Brachiopod larve (fig. 25) have been compared to the segments of Chetopod worms by some writers ; and these, together with the

POMBAL, Sepastian JosSEPH DE CARVALHO E MELLO, Marquis DE (1699-1782), the greatest statesman Portugal has produced in modern times, was the son of a fairly wealthy country gentleman, Emmanuel de Carvalho, and was born at Soure, near Pombal, on 13th May 1699. He was educated at the university of Coimbra, and was then for a short time in the army, but it was not until he was nearly forty and had been married some years that he received his first public appointment, and was sent as minister to London in 1739. There he studied English administration, but never learnt the English language, and was promoted to the embassy at Vienna by King John V. in 1745, and recalled in 1750 to become minister for foreign affairs. Before he reached Lisbon John was dead, and his successor King Joseph at once placed entire confidence in him. He soon began to show his strength: in 1751 he checked the Inquisition, by allowing no executions without the royal permission; he improved the navy, the police, and the finances, and freed the Indians of the Brazils from slavery. The great earthquake of Lisbon on lst November 1755 showed him in’his true greatness; when the king asked him despairingly what he should do, he answered briefly, “ Bury the dead and feed the living,” and by his calmness at that frightful moment gained an ascendency over the royal mind which lasted till Joseph’s death. His power was at once used to check the Roman Catholic Church, which, with the Jesuits and the Inquisition, had eaten the life out of the country, and in 1757 the Jesuits were ex- pelled from court (see Jusurrs, vol. xiii. p. 654). The

presence of sete, have been regarded as indicative of affinity between the Brachiopoda and Chetopoda (Morse). But it is sufficient, in order to dispose of this suggestion, to point out that the segments of the Chetopoda follow one another along the primary oro-anal axis, whilst those of Brachiopoda are developed along an axis at right angles to this (Caldwell).

The Brachiopoda must be classified together with the Polyzoa

i,

AZ

=

Ll iy

Cos

2

” paren eye Se

Fic. 25.—Surface views of ten stages in the development of Terebratulina, showing the free-swimming larva and its mode of fixation (after Morse). c, lophophoral segment; th, thoracic segment; p, peduncular segment; ds, deciduous set.

RSs

and Sipunculoidea in a phylum (Podaxonia) characterized by the development of this secondary axis.

Bibliography.—(1) J. Vaughan Thompson, Zoological Researches, Memoir v., “Qn Polyzoa, a new animal, an inhabitant of some Zoophytes,” &c., 1830; (2) Ehrenberg, Abhandl. d. k. Akad, d. Naturwiss. zu Berlin, 1834; (3) Wenri Milne- Edwards, Recherches anatomiques, physiologiques, et zoologiques sur les Polypier’s de France, 8vo, 1841-44; (4) Allman, The British Freshwater Polyzoa, Ray Society, 1856; (5) Jolliet, ‘“‘ Bryozoaires des cétes de France,” Arch. d. Zool, expérim., vol. vi., 1877; (6) Caldwell, Proceedings of the Royal Society, 1883; (7) Lankester, ‘“ Rhabdopleura,” Quart. Jour. Mier. Sci., 1884; (8) Nitsche, Zeitschr. fiir wiss. Zoologie, 1869, and supplement volume, 1876; (9) Busk, Catalogue of the Marine Polyzoa in the British Museum (1852), and Voyage of the *‘ Challenger,” “Report.on the Polyzoa,” vol. x.; (10) Hincks, British Marine Polyzoa, London, 1880; (11) Smitt, Aritisk Férteckning dfver Skandi- naviens Hafs Bryozoa, 1864-68; (12) Hleller, Die Bryozoen a, Adriatischen Meeres,

1867; (13) Ehlers, "' Hypophorella expansa," Abhandi. d. konig. Geselisch. Gottingen, xxi., 1876; (14) Barrois, Annales des Sciences Naturelles, vol. ix., 1880; (15) Balfour, Comparative Embryology, London, 1880, vol. i., p. 242 ; (16) Morse, "On the Systematic Position of the Brachiopoda,' Boston Soc, Nat. Hist., vol. xv., 1873; (17) Lankester, '' Remarks on the Affinities of Rhabdoplcura," Quart. Jour. Micr. Sci., vol. xiv., new series, 1874; (18) Harmer, " On Loxo- soma," Quart. Jour. Micr. Sct., April 1885, (E. R. L.)

Count d'Oeyras, as he was now made, then devoted him- self to internal administration; he founded the Oporto Wine Company, encouraged sericulture, rebuilt Lisbon, and improved on the Jesuit system of education, and in 1762 showed his concurrence in the hereditary policy of Portugal in helping England against Spain, when the Family Compact had united the interests of Spain and France. On the 3rd September 1769 an attempt on the king's life was frustrated by the count, who was in 1770 made marquis of Pombal. He remained in power till the death of the king in 1777, but the new sovereign, Queen Maria, at once accepted his resignation, and persecuted him till his death in 1782.

POMEGRANATE. The pomegranate (Punica Grana- tum) is of exceptional interest by reason of its structure, its history, and its utility. It forms a tree of small stature, or a bush with opposite, shining, lance-shaped leaves, from the axils of some of which proceed the brilliant scarlet flowers. These are raised on a short stalk, and consist of a thick fleshy cylindrical or bell-shaped calyx tube, with five to seven short lobes at the top. From the throat of the calyx proceed five to seven roundish, crumpled, scarlet or crimson petals, and below them very numerous slender stamens. The pistil consists of two rows of carpels placed one above another, both rows embedded in, and partially inseparate from, the inner surface of the calyx tube. The styles are confluent into one filiform thread. The fruit, which usually attains the size of a large orange, consists of a hard leathery rind, which is the enlarged calyx tube,

enclosing a quantity of pulp derived from the coats of the numerous seeds. . This pulp, filled as it 1s with refreshing acid juice, constitutes the chief value of the tree. The more highly cultivated forms contain more of it than the wild or half-wild varieties. The great structural peculiar- ity consists in the presence of the two rows of carpels one above another (a state of things which occurs exceptionally er in apples and oranges), and in the fact that, while in the lower series (fig. 1) the seeds are attached to the inner border or lower angle of the cavity, they occupy the outer side in the upper series (fig. 2), as if, during growth, the upper whorl had become completely bent over.

By Bentham and Hooker the genus Punica is included under Lythracex ; others consider it more nearly allied to the myrtles; while its peculiarities are so great as, in the opinion of many botanists, to justify its inclusion in a separate order. Not only is the fruit valuable in hot countries for the sake of its pulp, but the rind and the bark and the outer part of the root are valuable as astringents owing to the large quantity of tannin that they contain. The bark of the root is likewise valued in cases of tape-worm.

The tree is withont doubt wild in Afghanistan, north-western India, and the districts south and south-west of the Caspian, but it has been so long cultivated that it is difficult to say whether it is really native in Palestine and the Mediterranean region. It has been cited as wild in northern Africa, but this appears to be a mistake. Recently, however, Prof. Bayley Balfour met with a wild species, heretofore unknown, in the island of Socotra, the flowers of which have only a single row of carpels, which suggests the inference that it may have been the source of the cultivated varieties. But, on the other hand, in Afghanistan, where Aitchison met with the tree truly wild, a double row of carpels was present as usual. The antiquity of the tree as a cultivated plant is evidenced by the Sanskrit name Dadimba, and by the references to the fruit in the Old Testament, and in the Odyssey, where it is spoken of as cultivated in the gardens of the kings of Pheacia and Phrygia. The fruit is frequently represented on ancient Assyrian and Kgyptian sculptures, and had a religious significance in con- nexion with several Oriental cults, especially the Phrygian cult of Cybele (Arnob., v. 5 sg.; see also Baudissin, Studien, li. 207 sq.). It was well known to the Greeks and Romans, who were acquainted with its medicinal properties and its use as a tanning material. The name given by the Romans, malum punicum,

indicates that they received it from Carthage, as indeed is expressly stated by Pliny ; and this circumstance has given rise to the notion that the tree was indigenous in northern Africa. On a review of the whole evidence, botanical, literary, and linguistic, Alphonse de Candolle (Origine des Plantes Cultivées) pronounces against its African origin, and decides in favour of its source in Persia and the neigh- bouring countries. According to Saporta the pomegranate existed in a fossil state in beds of the Pliocene epoch near Meximieux in Burgundy. The pomegranate is sometimes met with in cultiva- tion against a wall in England, but it is too tender to withstand a severe winter. The double-flowered varieties are specially desirable for the beauty and long duration of their flowers.

POMERANIA (Germ. Pommern) is a maritime pro- vince of Prussia, bounded on the N. by the Baltic, on the W. by Mecklenburg, on the S. by Brandenburg, and on the E. by West Prussia. Its area is 11,620 square miles. The province is officially divided into the three districts of Stralsund, Stettin, and Céslin; but more historical interest attaches to the names of Vorpommern and Hinter- pommern, or Hither and Farther Pomerania, applied to the territory to the west and to the east of the Oder respectively. Asa whole Pomerania is one of the lowest and flattest parts of Germany, but to the east of the Oder it Is traversed by @ range of low hills, and there are also a few isolated eminences to the west. Off the west coast,

which is very irregular, lie the islands of Riigen, Usedom,

Fig iL

Fig. 2.

Transverse sections of the lower and upper parts of the berried fruit of the Pomegranate.

and Wollin; the coast of Farther Pomerania is smooth – in outline and bordered with dunes or sandbanks. Be- sides the Oder and its affluents, there are several small rivers flowing into the Baltic, none of which, however, are navigable except for rafts. Many of these end in small littoral

lakes, separated from the sea by a narrow strip of land, through which the water escapes by one. or more: outlets. The interior of the province is also thickly sprinkled with lakes, the combined area of which is equal to about one-twentieth of its entire surface. The soil of Pomerania is for the most part thin and sandy, especially to the east of the Oder; but patches of good soil occur here and there. About 55 per cent. of the surface is under tillage, while 19 per cent. consists of meadow and pasture and 20 per cent. is covered by forests. The principal crops are potatoes, rye, and oats, but wheat and barley are grown in the more fertile districts ; tobacco and beetroot for sugar are also cultivated. Agriculture is still in many respects carried on in.a somewhat primitive fashion, and the live stock is as a rule of an inferior quality. Large flocks of sheep are kept both for their flesh and wool, and geese and goose-feathers form lucrative articles of export. (A tabular view of the agricultural products of Pomerania will be found under Prussta.) Owing to the long coast-line and the numerous lakes, fishing forms a not unimportant industry, and large quantities of herring, eels, lampreys, &c., are sent from Pomerania to other parts of Germany. With the excep- tions of its inexhaustible layers of peat or soft coal, the mineral wealth of Pomerania is insignificant. Its indus- trial activity is also of no great importance, though there are a few manufactories of machinery, chemicals, tobacco, sugar, and other articles, chiefly in or near the larger towns, and linen-weaving is practised as a domestic industry. Shipbuilding is carried on at Stettin and other places on the coast. Commerce, however, is relatively much more flourishing. Stettin is one of the chief sea- ports of Prussia, and Stralsund, Greifswald, and Colberg also possess a foreign trade, the exports consisting mainly of grain, timber, and fish.

In 1880 Pomerania contained 1,540,084 inhabitants, all of whom were Protestants except 23,877 Roman Catholics and 13,886 Jews. The Slavonic element in the population is now represented only by a few thousand Poles and a handful of the ancient Cassubians on the east border. Pomerania is the most sparsely populated province in Prussia, the ratio being 132 inhabitants per square mile. About 67 per cent. of the population belong to the rural districts, while the remainder live in communities of 2000 and upwards. There are only nine towns with more than 10,000 inhabitants, at the head of which stands Stettin with 91,000. The Pomeranians belong mainly to the old Saxon stock, and are, as a rule, tall, strong, and well-built. They

somewhat resemble the Scots in their cautious and persevering character, their strong theological bias(which perpetuates the existence of numerous sniall Protestant sects), and their turn for dry humour ; but they are by no means so enterprising or so open to new ideas. In 1883 only 0°32 per cent. of the Pomeranian recruits were illiterate, a fact which speaks well for the educational system of the province. There is a university at Greifswald. The province sends 16 members to the reichstag and 26 to the Prussian house of representatives. The heir-presumptive of the Prussian crown bears the title of governor of Pomerania.

History.—In prehistoric times the southern coast of the Baltic seems to have been occupied by Celts, who afterwards made way for tribes of Teutonic stock. These in their turn migrated to other settlements and were replaced, about the beginning of the 6th century of our era, by Slavonians. The name of Pomore or Pommern, meaning “on the sea,” was attached to the district by the last of these immigrant races, and has often changed its political and geographical significance. Originally it seems to have denoted the coast district between the Oder and the Vistula, a territory which was at first more or less dependent on Poland, but which appears towards the end of the 12th century as divided between two native dukes owning the supremacy of the German emperor. Afterwards Pomerania spread much farther to the west, while correspondingly curtailed on the east, and a distinction was made between Slavinia, or modern Pomerania, and Pomerellen. The latter, corresponding substantially to the present province of West

Prussia, remained subject to Poland down to the beginning of the 14th: century, when part of it fell away to the Teutonic knights and part of it was anncxed to the duchy of Pomerania-Wolgast. Christianity was introduced in the 12th century, and its advance went hand in hand with tlie Germanizing of the district. The later medizval history of Pomerania is occupied with an endless succes- sion of subdivisions among different lines of the ducal houses, and with numerous expansions and contractions of territory through constant hostilities with the elector of Brandenburg, who claimed to be the immediate feudal superior of Pomerania, and with other neighbouring powers. The names Vorpommern and Hinterpom- mern were at first

synonymous with Slavinia and Pomerellen, but towards the close of the 14th century they were transferred to the two duchies into which the former (Pomerania proper) was divided. In 1625 the whole of Pomerania became united under the sway of Bogeslaus XIV., and, on his death without issue in 1637, Branden- burg laid claim to the duchy in virtue of a compact of 1571. The Swedes, however, had in the meantime occupied the country, and at the peace of Westphalia (1648) the elector had to content him- self with East Pomerania and see the other half awarded to Sweden. In 1720 Swedish Pomerania was curtailed by extensive concessions to Prussia, but the district to the west of the Peene remained in possession of Sweden down to the dissolution of the German empire. On the downfall of Napoleon, Sweden assigned her German pos- sessions to Denmark in exchange for Norway, whereupon Prussia, partly by purchase and partly by the cession of Lauenburg, finally succeeded in uniting the whole of Pomerania under her sway.

POMEROY, a city of the United States, in Meigs county, Ohio, lies on the right bank of the Ohio about half-way between Pittsburgh and Cincinnati. It is the terminus of the Ohio River division of the Columbus, Hocking Valley, and Toledo Railway, and has extensive coal-mines dating from 1833, salt works (14,000,000 bushels per annum), and bromine factories. Incorporated as a village in 1841 and as a city in 1868, Pomeroy had 5824 inhabitants in 1870 and 5560 in 1880.

POMFRET, Joun (1667-1703), holds a certain place in English letters as the author of a short poem, The Choice, which embodies in easy and happy Drydenic diction the refined Epicureanism of the 18th century, and was consequently widely popular throughout that century. Pomfret was an English clergyman, rector of Maulden in

Bedfordshire, son of the vicar of Luton in the same.

county. The story is preserved by Johnson that the bishop of London stopped him in some church preferment because in his Choice he declared that he would have no wife, although he expressed a wish for the occasional company of a modest and sprightly young lady. The poet was married in real life all the same, and, while wait- ing in London to clear up @ misunderstanding caused by the paganism of his poetry—the bishop

apparently think- ing that he had openly preferred a mistress to a wife—he caught small-pox and died at the age of thirty-five. Of his poetry Johnson happily says, “ He pleases many ; and he who pleases many must have some species of merit.”

POMONA, the old Roman goddess of tree-fruits (poma). Ovid (Met., xiv. 623 sq.) tells how she was loved by the silvan deities, the satyrs, pans, &c., and how Vertumnus, god of the turning year, wooed and won the shy goddess. Corresponding to Pomona there seems to have been a male Italian deity called Puemunus, who was perhaps identical with Vertumnus. At Rome Pomona had a special priest, the flamen Pomonalis, who ranked lowest among the fifteen flamens. About 12 miles from Rome on the way to Ostia there was a Pomonal, or place (perhaps grove) sacred to Pomona. She was also worshipped in the neighbourhood of Amiternum.

POMPADOUR, JEANNE ANTOINETTE Poisson LE Nor- MANT D’ETIOLES, Marquise DE (1721-1764), the most famous of all the mistresses of Louis XV., was born in Paris on 29th December 1721, and was baptized as the legitimate daughter of Francois Poisson, an officer in the household of the duke of Orleans, and his wife Madeleine dela Motte, in the church of St Eustache, but she was

Marigny, to be the child of a very wealthy financier, and farmer-general of the revenues, Le Normant de Tourne- hem. He at any rate took upon himself the charge of her education ; and, as from the beauty and wit she showed from childhood she seemed to be born for some uncommon destiny, he declared her ““‘un morceau de roi,” and specially educated her to be a king’s mistress. This idea was con- firmed in her childish mind by the prophecy of an old woman, whom in after days she pensioned for the correctness of her prediction. In 1741 she was married to a nephew of her protector and guardian, Le Normant d’Etioles, who was passionately in love with her, and soon became a queen of fashion. Yet the world of the financiers at Paris was far apart from the court world, where she wished to reign; she could get no introduction at court, and could only try to catch the king’s eye when he went out hunting. But Louis XV. was then under the influence of Madame de Mailly, who carefully prevented any further

intimacy with “la petite Etioles,” and it was not until after her death that the king met the fair queen of the financial world of Paris at a ball given by the city to the dauphin in 1744, and he was immediately subjugated. She at once gave up her husband, and in 1745 was established at Versailles as “ mattresse en titre.” Louis XV. bought her the estate of Pompadour, from which she took her title of marquise. She was hardly: established firmly in power before she showed that ambition rather than love had guided her, and began to mix in politics. Knowing that the French people of that time were ruled by the literary kings of the time, she paid court to them, and tried to play the part of a Meecenas. Voltaire was her poet in chief, and the founder of the physiocrats, Quesnay, was her physician. In the arts she was even more successful ; she was herself no mean etcher and engraver, and she encouraged and/ protected Vanloo, Boucher, Vien, Greuze, and the engraver Jacques Guay. Yet this policy did not prevent ber from being lampooned, and the famous Poissardes against her contri- buted to the ruin of many wits suspected of being among the authors, and notably of the Comte de Maurepas. The command of the political situation passed entirely into her hands ; she it was who brought Belle-Isle into office with his vigorous policy ; she corresponded regularly with the generals of the armies in the field, as her recently published letters to the Comte de Clermont prove; and she intro- duced the Abbé de Bernis into the ministry in order to effect a very great alteration of French politics in 1756. The continuous policy of France since the days of Richelieu had been to weaken the house of Austria by alliances in Germany ; but Madame de Pompadour changed this here- ditary policy because Frederick the Great wrote scandalous verses on her; and because Maria Theresa wrote her a friendly letter she entered into an alliance with Austria. This alliance brought on the Seven Years’ War with all its disasters, the battle of Rosbach and the loss of Canada ; but Madame de Pompadour persisted in her policy, and when Bernis failed her, brought Choiseul into office, and supported him in all his great plans, the Pacte de Famille, the suppression of the Jesuits, and the peace of Versailles. But it was to internal politics that this remarkable woman paid most attention ; no one obtained office except through her; in imitation of Madame de Maintenon she prepared all business for the king’s eye with the ministers, and con- trived that they should meet in her room; and she daily examined the letters sent through the post office with Janelle, the director of the post office. By this continuous labour she made herself indispensable to Louis.

Yet, when she had lost the heart of her lover after a year or two, she had a difficult task before her; to maintain her influ- ence she had not only to save the king as much trouble as

suspected, as well as her brother, afterwards marquis of | possible, but to find him fresh pleasures. When he first

began to weary of her, she remembered her talent for acting and her private theatricals at Etioles, and estab- lished the “ théAtre des petits cabinets,” in which she acted with the greatest lords about the court for the king’s pleasure in tragedies and comedies, operas and ballets. By this means and the “concerts spirituels” she kept in favour for a time; but at last she found a surer way, by encouraging the king in his debaucheries, and Louis wept over her kindness to his various mistresses. Only once, when the king was wounded by Damiens in 1757, did she receive a serious shock, and momentarily left the court ; but on his recovery she returned more powerful than ever. She even ingratiated herself with the queen, after the example of Madame de Maintenon, and was made a lady- in-waiting ; but the end was soon to come. “Ma vie est un combat,” she said, and so it was, with business and pleasure; she gradually grew weaker and weaker, and when told that death was at hand she dressed herself in full court costume, and met it bravely on 15th April 1764 at the age of forty-two.

See Capcfigue, Madame la Marquise de Pompadour, 1858; E. and J. de Gon- court, Les Mattresses de Louis XV., vol. ii., 1860; and Campardon, Madame de Pompadour et la Cour de Louis XV. au milieu du dix-huitiéme siecle, 1867. Far move valuable are Malassis’s two recently published volumes of correspondcnce, Correspondance de Madame de Pompadour avec son pére M. Poisson, et son frére M. de Vandiéres, &c., 1878, and Bonhomme, Madame de Pompadour, général darmée, 1880, containing her letters to the Comte de Clermont. For her artistic and theatrical tastes see particularly J. F. Letureq, Notice sur Jacques Guay, Graveur sur pierres fines du Rei Louts XV.: Documents inédits enanant de Guay et notes sur les euvres de gravure en taille douce et en pterres durs de la Marquise de Pompadour, 1873; and Adolphe Jullien, //istoire du Thédtre de Madame de Pompadour, dit Thédtre des Petits Cabinets, 1874.

POMPEII, an ancient town of Campania, situated on the shore of the Bay of Naples, almost immediately at the foot of Mount Vesuvius. To its proximity to that volcano it owes its celebrity,—the peculiar circumstances of its destruction by the great volcanic outburst of Vesuvius in

79 a.D., and of its rediscovery in modern times, having'

converted that which would otherwise have been known only as an obscure country town into a place of world-wide fame, as one of the most interesting relics preserved to us from antiquity. Of its previous history comparatively little is recorded, but it appears that, like most other towns in the beautiful region in which it was situated, it had a population of a very mixed character, and it passed succes- sively into the hands of several different nations, each of which probably contributed an additional element to its composition. Though its foundation was ascribed by Greek tradition to Heracles, in common with the neigh- bouring city of Herculaneum, no value can be attached to these mythological or etymological fables; it is certain that it was not a Greek colony, in the proper sense of the term, as we know to have been the case with the more important cities of Cum and Neapolis. Strabo, in whose time it was a populous and flourishing place, tells us that it was first occupied by the Oscans, afterwards by the Tyrrhenians (i.e, Etruscans) and Pelasgians, and lastly, by the Samnites. The conquest of Campania by the last-mentioned people is an undoubted historical fact, and there can be no doubt that Pompeii shared the fate of the neighbouring cities on this occasion, and afterwards passed in common with them under the yoke of Rome. But its name is only once mentioned during the wars of the Romans with the Samnites and Campanians in this region of Italy, and then only incidentally (Liv., ix. 38). At a later period, however, it took a prominent part in the outbreak of the nations of central Italy known as the Social War (91-89 B.c.), when it withstood a long siege by Sulla, and was one of the last cities of Campania that was reduced by the Roman arms. After that event the inhabitants were admitted to the Roman franchise, but 4 military colony was settled in their territory by the dictator Sulla, and there can be no doubt that the whole popula- tion became rapidly Romanized. Before the close of the

republic it became a favourite resort of the leading nobles of Rome, many of whom acquired villas in the neighbour- hood. Among the most prominent of these was Cicero, whose letters abound with allusions to his Pompeian villa, which was one of his favourite places of occasional resid- ence. The same fashion continued under the Roman empire, and there can be no doubt that during the first century after the Christian era, Pompeii, without rising above the rank of an ordinary provincial town, had become a flourishing place with a considerable population, for which it was indebted in part to its position at the mouth of the river Sarnus, which rendered it the port of the neighbouring towns in the interior. But two events only are recorded of its history during this period. In 59 a.p. a tumult took place in the amphitheatre of Pompeii between the citizens of the place and the visitors from the neighbouring colony of Nuceria, which led to a violent affray, in which many persons were killed and wounded on both sides. The Pompeians were punished for this violent outbreak by the prohibition of all gladiatorial and theatrical exhibitions for ten years (Tacitus, Ann. xiv. 17). A characteristic, though rude, painting, found on the walls of one of the houses, gives a representation of this untoward event.

- Only four years afterwards (63 A.D.) a much more serious disaster befell the city. An earthquake, which affected all the neighbouring towns, vented its force especially upon Pompeii, a large part of which, including most of the public buildings, was either destroyed or so seriously damaged as to require to be rebuilt rather than repaired (Tacit., Ann., xv. 21; Seneca, Q. W., vi. 1). The actual amount of the injuries sustained, which is intimated in general terms by Tacitus and Seneca, is more accurately known to us from the existing remains. For the inhabi- tants were still actively engaged in repairing and restoring

| the ruined edifices when the whole city was overwhelmed

by a much more appalling catastrophe. In 79 a.p. the neighbouring mountain of Vesuvius, the volcanic forces of which had been slumbering for unknown ages, suddenly burst into a violent eruption, which, while it carried devastation all around the beautiful gulf, buried the two cities of Herculaneum and Pompeii under dense beds of cinders and ashes. It is singular that, while we possess a detailed description of this famous

eruption in two well- known letters of the younger Pliny (£pust. vi. 16, 20), he does not even notice the destruction of Pompeii or Herculaneum, though his uncle perished in the immediate neighbourhood of the former city. But their unhappy fate is noticed by Dion Cassius, and its circumstances may be gathered with certainty from the condition in which it has been found. These were such as eminently to conduce to its preservation and interest as a relic of antiquity. Pompeii, was not, like Herculaneum, buried in a solid mass of volcanic tuff, but merely covered with a bed of lighter substances, cinders, small stones, and ashes, thrown out by the volcano, and falling from above on the devoted city. It is clearly established that the whole of this superincumbent mass, though attaining to an average thickness of from 18 to 20 feet, was the product of one eruption,—though the materials may be divided generally into two distinct strata, the one consisting principally of cinders and small volcanic stones (called in Italian “lapilli”), and the other and uppermost layer of fine white

ash, often consolidated by the action of water from above,

so as to take the moulds of objects contained in it like clay or plaster of Paris.

So completely was the unfortunate city buried under this overwhelming mass that its very site was forgotten, and even the celebrated topographer Cluverius in the 17th century was unable to fix it with certainty. This difficulty

Om PE aI

445

arose in part from the physical changes consequent on the | yards, but in general much less frequently. They are,

eruption, and it was not till 1748 that an accidental dis- covery drew attention to its remains, and revealed the fact that beneath the vineyards and mulberry grounds which covered the site there lay entombed the ruins of a city, far more accessible, if not more interesting, than those (pre- viously discovered) of the neighbouring Herculaneum. It was not till 1755 that

systematic excavations on the site were begun, and, though they were thenceforth carried on more or less continuously during the whole of that century, it was not till the beginning of the present century that they assumed a regular character ; and the work, which had received a vigorous stimulus during the period of the French government (1806-1814), was prosecuted, though in a less methodical and systematic manner, under the suc- ceeding rule of the Bourbon kings (1815-61). Of late years the process has been carried on, under the enlightened direction of Signior Fiorelli, in a much more careful and scientific manner than before, and the results have been in many respects of the highest interest. At the same time the invention of photography has enabled the directors to preserve a far more satisfactory record of every step in the explorations than could previously be attempted.

It would be impossible for us to present our readers in this place with anything like an idea of the results of these excavations. Interesting as are the numerous works of art that have been brought to light, and important as is their bearing upon the history of some branches of ancient art, they cannot compare in interest with the flood of light which this marvellous discovery has thrown upon ancient life in all its details, enabling us to picture to ourselves the ways and manners and habits of life of a cultivated and flourishing population eighteen centuries ago, in a manner which no amount of study of ancient literature could pos- sibly accomplish. We must confine ourselves in the present article chiefly to those points which bear more immediately on the topography and character of the town of Pompeii, referring our readers for other details to the numerous works in which they have been described and delineated.

The town was situated on a rising ground of small elevation, separated by a distance of less than a mile from the foot of the actual rise of the outer cone of Vesuvius. This eminence is itself undoubtedly due to an outflow of lava from that mountain, during some previous eruption in prehistoric times, for we know from Strabo that Vesuvius, though presenting in his time all the appearances of an extinct volcano, had been quiescent ever since the first records of the Greek settlements in this part of Italy. But the position of Pompeii in ancient times differed materially from that which it occupies at the present day. It was situated close to the sea-shore, from which it is now

more than a mile distant, and adjoining the mouth of the river Sarnus or Sarno, which now enters the sea nearly two miles from its site, but the present course of this stream is due in part to modern alteration of its channel, as well as to the effects of the great eruption. It is certain, however, that in Strabo's time Pompeii -owed much of its prosperity to its serving as the port of the adjoining plain, and the neighbouring towns of Nuceria, Nola, and Acerrz (Strabo, v. c. 4, § 8).

The area occupied by the ancient city was of an irregular oval form, and about two miles in circumference. It was surrounded by a wall, which is still preserved around more than two-thirds of its extent, but no traces of this are found on the side towards the sea, and there is no doubt that on this side it had been already demolished in ancient times, so as to give room for the free extension of houses and other buildings in that direction. These walls are strengthened at intervals by numerous towers, which occur in some parts at a distance of only about 100

however, of a different style of construction from the walls, and appear to have been added at a later period, probably that of the settlement of the Roman colony by Sulla. Similar evidences of the addition of subsequent defences are to be traced also in the case of the gates, of which no less than eight are found in the existing circuit of the walls. Some of these present a very elaborate system of defence, but it is evident from the decayed condition of others, as well as of parts of the walls and towers, that they had ceased to be maintained for the purposes of fortification long before the destruction of the city. The gates are now known by names given them in modern times from the direction in which they led, as, the gate of Herculaneum, of Stabiz, of Nola, &c. No trace has been found of their ancient appellations.

The general plan of the town is very regular, the streets being generally straight, and crossing one another at right angles or nearly so. But an exception is found in the street leading from the gate of Herculaneum to the forum, which, though it must have been one of the principal thoroughfares in the city, was crooked and irregular, as well as very narrow, in some parts not exceeding 12 to 14 feet in width, including the raised ¢rottoirs or footpaths on each side, which occupy a considerable part of the space, so

that the carriage-way could only have admitted of the passage of one vehicle ata time. The other streets are in some cases broader, but rarely exceed 20 feet in width, and the broadest yet found is less than 30, while the back streets running parallel to the main lines are only about 15 feet. They are uniformly paved with large polygonal blocks of hard basaltic lava, fitted very closely together, though now in many cases marked with deep ruts from the passage of vehicles in ancient times. They are also in all cases bordered by raised trottoirs on both sides, paved in a similar manner ; and for the convenience of foot passengers, these are connected from place to place

by stepping-stones raised above the level of the carriage-

way. Such an arrangement must have presented a con- siderable obstacle to the passage of vehicles ; and altogether it is evident that the streets of Pompeii, like those of most Roman towns, were calculated much more for foot passengers than for any extensive traffic of wheeled carriages. Inother respects they must have been far fron presenting the lively aspect of the streets of modern and even medieval towns, and must rather have resembled those of Oriental cities,—the living apartments all opening towards the interior, and showing only blank walls towards the street ; while the windows were generally to be found only in the upper story, and were in all cases small and insignificant, without any attempt at architectural effect. In some instances indeed the monotony of their external appearance was broken by small shops, occupying the front of the principal houses, as it were let in to the main build- ing; these were in some cases numerous enough to form a continuous facade to the street. This is seen especially in the case of the Street of Herculaneum, and that of Stabie, both of which were among the principal and most frequented thoroughfares.

The former of these main lines of street, which, as already described, led from the gate of Herculaneum to the forum, was crossed, a little before it reached that important centre, by a long straight line of street, which led directly to the gate of Nola. Two other parallel lines of street struck off from the forum itself towards the east, and these have been followed as far as the points where they cross nearly at right angles another main line of street, which leads direct from the gate of Vesuvius to that of Stabiz, near the

theatres, thus traversing the city in its whole width from north to south. Almost the

whole portion of the city which lies to the west of this last | public buildings or edifices of a commanding character.

line, towards the forum and the sea, has been more or less

completely excavated ; but the greater part of that on the | other side of it remains still unexplored, with the excep- |

tion of the amphitheatre, and a small space in its imme- | diate neighbourhood. Altogether it may be calculated | that about two-fifths of the whole extent has been already | excavated. But there can be little doubt that the portion |

already known is the most important, as it includes the forum, with the temples and public buildings adjacent to it, the thermz, theatres, amphitheatre, é&c.

The forum was unquestionably at Pompeii, as at Rome itself, and in all other Italian cities, the focus and centre of all the life and movement of the city, and was at once the resort of the lounger and the gathering place of men of business. Hence it was surrounded on all sides by

It was not, however, of large size, as compared to the open spaces in modern towns, being only 160 yards in length by 85 in breadth. Nor was it a centre of traffic in the modern sense of the word, being only accessible to any description of wheeled carriages at one angle, and the nature of its pavement, composed of broad flags of traver- tine, excluding the idea of its being intended for their passage. It was surrounded on three sides by a portico, or rather by a series of porticos, some supported on arcades, others in the Grecian manner on columns; and these porticos were originally surmounted by a gallery or upper story, traces of the staircases leading to

which still remain, though the gallery itself has altogether dis- appeared, It is, however, certain from the existing remains that both this portico and the adjacent buildings

Scale of Engiish Feet-

500

Plan of Pompeii.

A. Gate of Herculaneum. B. Gate of Vesuvius.

C. Gate of Capua.

D. Gate of Nola.

E. Gate of Sarno,

F. Gate of Nocera.

G. Gate of Stabiz,

H. Gate of the Seashore. I, Forum.

| J. Temple of Jupiter.

K. Basilica,

M. “ Pantheon.” N. Temple of Hercules. O. Great Theatre.

had suffered severely from the earthquake of 63, and that they were undergoing a process of restoration, involving material changes in the original arrangements, which was still incomplete at the time of their final destruction.

The north end of the forum, where alone the portico is wanting, is occupied in great part by a building, the most imposing in the whole city, which is now generally known, on grounds that may be considered satisfactory, as the temple of Jupiter. It was raised on a podium or base of considerable

elevation, and had a portico with six Corinthian columns in front, which, according to Sir W. Gell, are nearly as large as those in the portico of St Paul's. This magnificent edifice had, however, been evidently overthrown by the earthquake of 63, and is in its present condition a mere ruin. On each side of it were two arches, affording an entrance into the forum, but capable of being closed by iron gates. The principal

L. Building of Eumachia (* Chalcidicum").

P. Smaller Theatre.

Q. Gladiators' Barracks.

R. Amphitheatre.

8, T, U. Public Baths.

V. Temple (Fortuna Augusta).

Temple of Venus.

House of Pansa.

House of Sallust.

House of the Faun.

Villa of Arrius Diomedes.

Xx.

1. 2. 3.

4,

of these, at the north-east angle of the forum, was the approach by which that open space was entered in coming from the gate of Herculaneum; the passage, however, was barred to wheeled carriages by a descent of three small steps. On the east side of the forum were four edifices, all of them

unquestionably of a public character, but of which the names and attribution have been the subject of much controversy. The first (proceeding from the north) is generally known, though without doubt erroneously, as the Pantheon, or temple of the Twelve Gods; but it is very doubtful whether it is a temple at all, and the latest authorities are disposed to regard it as a macellum or meat-market, though the situation would seem to be unhappily chosen for such a purpose. Next to this comes a building generally regarded as the curia or senaculum—the meeting-place of the local senate, or town council. Beyond this comes another temple of small

ro mr & it

dimensions commonly called the temple of Mercury, but supposed also, on very slight grounds, to have been dedicated to Augustus; and beyond this again, bounded on the south by a street known as the Street of the Silver-smiths, is a large and spacious edifice, which, as we learn from an extant inscription, was erected by a priestess named Eumachia. Notwithstanding this, its purpose and character are open to considerable doubt ; but it resembles a basilica in its form and disposition, and was probably designed for similar purposes. The name of Chalcidicum, by which it is commonly known, is an erroneous inference from the inscription just referred to. The south end of the forum is occupied by three small buildings of very similar form and arrangement, which are supposed to have. served as courts of law, though their destination is a matter of much uncertainty; while the greater part of the west side is occupied by two large buildings,—a basilica, which is the largest edifice in Pompeii, and a temple, which presents its side to the forum, and hence fills up a large portion of the surrounding space. The former, as we learn from an inscription on its walls, was anterior in date to the consulship of M. Lepidus and Q. Catulus (78 B.c.), and therefore belongs to the Oscan period of the city, before the introduction of the Roman colony. The temple was an extensive edifice, having a comparatively small cella, raised upon a podium, and standing in the midst of a wide space surrounded by a portico of columns, outside which again is a wall, bounding the sacred enclosure. It is commonly called the temple of Venus, but without any evidence; the most recent authorities regard it, on somewhat better grounds, as dedicated to Apollo. Between this temple and the basilica a street of unusual width leads off direct to the gate which opens

towards the sea, and is still preserved, though the walls on this side of the city have ceased to exist.

Besides the temples which surrounded the forum, the remains of four others have been discovered, three of which are situated in the immediate neighbourhood of the theatres. Of these by far the most interesting, though the least perfect, is one which is commonly known as the temple of Hercules (an appellation wholly without founda- tion), and which is not only by far the most ancient edifice in Pompeii, but presents us with all the characters of a true Greek temple, resembling in its proportions that of Neptune at Pestum, and probably of as remote anti- quity. Unfortunately only the basement and a few capitals and other architectural fragments remain, and, though these suffice to enable us to restore its plan and design, of course its effect as a monument is wholly lost. The period of its destruction is unknown, for it appears certain that it cannot be ascribed wholly to the earthquake of 63. On the other hand the reverence attached to it in the later periods of the city is evidenced by its being left standing in the midst of a triangular space adjoining the great theatre, which is surrounded by a portico, so as to constitute a kind of forum, though scarcely deserving that appellation. In the immediate neighbourhood of, the preceding, and close to the great theatre, Stood a small temple, which, as we learn with certainty from the inscrip- tion still remaining, was dedicated to Isis, and was restored, or rather rebuilt, by a certain Popidius Celsinus, after the original edifice had been reduced to ruin by the great earthquake of 63. Though of small size, and by no means remarkable in point of architecture, it is interesting as the only remaining temple dedicated to the Egyptian goddess, whose worship became so popular under the Roman empire. There is nothing peculiar in the arrange- ments of the building itself, but a small edifice within the sacred enclosure, to which nothing similar was found in any other instance, was doubtless in some way connected |

| leading to the gate of Nola.

with the peculiar rites of the mysterious deity. Close to this temple was another, of very small size, and of little interest, commonly known as the temple of A‘sculapius, but by others supposed to have been dedicated to

Jupiter and Juno. No real foundation exists for either attribu- tion. More considerable and important was a temple which stood at no great distance from the forum, at the point where the street leading thither from the gate of Herculaneum was crossed by the wide line of thoroughfare We learn from an inscription that this was dedicated to the Fortune of Augustus (Fortuna Augusta), and was erected, wholly at his own cost, by a citizen of the name of M. Tullius, unfortunately no connexion of the orator. This temple appears to have suffered very severely from the earthquake, and at present affords little evidence of its original architectural orna- ment; but we learn from existing remains that its walls were covered with slabs of marble, and that the columns of the portico were of the same valuable material.

All the temples above described, except that ascribed to Hercules, agree in being raised on an elevated podiwm or basement,—an arrangement usual with all similar build- ings of Roman date. Neither their materials nor the style of their architecture exceed what might reasonably be expected in a second-rate provincial town; and the same may be said in general of the other public buildings. Among these the most conspicuous are the theatres, of which there were two, placed, as was usual in Greck towns, in close juxtaposition with one another. The largest of these, which was partly excavated in the side of the hill, was a building of considerable magnificence, being in great part cased with marble, and furnished with seats of the same material, which have, however, been almost wholly removed. Its internal construction and {arrange- ments resemble those of the Roman theatres in general, though with some peculiarities that show Greek influence, and we learn from an inscription that it was erected in Roman times by two members of the same family, M. Holconius Rufus and M. Holconius Celer, both of whom held important municipal offices at Pompeii during the reign of Augustus. It appears, however, from a careful examination of the remains that their work was only a reconstruction of a more ancient edifice, the foundations of which, and some other portions, may be distinctly traced. The smaller theatre, which was erected, as we learn from an inscription, by two magistrates specially appointed for the purpose by the decurions of the city, was of older date than the large one, and appears to have been constructed about the same time as the amphi- theatre, soon after the establishment of the Roman colony under Sulla. From the same source we learn that it was permanently covered—a rare

thing with Roman theatres ; but in the case of the larger theatre also the arrangements for the occasional extension of an awning (velarium) over the whole are distinctly found. The smaller theatre is computed to have been capable of containing fifteen hundred spectators, while the larger could accommodate five thousand persons.

Adjoining the theatres is a large rectangular enclosure, surrounded by a portico, the purpose of which has been the subject of considerable controversy, but it is now generally admitted to have been the quarters or barracks of the gladiators, who were permanently maintained in the city with a view to the shows in the amphitheatre. It is singular that it should have been at so considerable a distance from that building, which is situated at the south-eastern angle of the town, above 500 yards from the theatres. The amphitheatre was erected by the same two magistrates who built the smaller theatre, at a period when no permanent edifice of a similar kind had yet been

erected in Rome itself. But apart from its early date it | buildings of Pompeii, and valuable as is the light that they

has no special interest, and is wholly wanting in the ex- ternal architectural decorations that give such grandeur of character to similar edifices in other instances. Being in great part excavated in the surface of the hill, instead of the seats being raised on arches, it is wanting also in the picturesque arched corridors which contribute so much to the effect of those other ruins. Nor are its dimensions (430 feet by 335) such as to place it in the first rank even of provincial structures of this class, though it may still strike a visitor of the present day as surprisingly large for a town of the population of Pompeii. But, as we learn from the case of their squabble with the people of Nuceria, the games celebrated in the amphitheatre on grand occa- sions would be visited by large numbers from the neigh- bouring towns.

Adjoining the amphitheatre was found a large open space, nearly square in form, which has been supposed to be a forum boarium or cattle market, but,

no buildings of interest being discovered around it, the excavation was filled up again, and this part of the city has not been since examined.

Aniong the more important public buildings of Pompeii were the therm, or public baths, an institution that always held a prominent position in every Roman or Greco-Roman town. Three different establishments of this character have been discovered, of which the first, excavated in 1824, was for a long time the only one known. Though the smallest of the three, it is in some respects the most complete and interesting; and it was until of late years the principal source from which we derived our knowledge of this important branch of the economy of Roman life. The vast series of edifices known by the name of thermz at Rome, as well as those in other provincial towns, are in such a state of ruin as to throw little light upon the details of their arrangements. At Pompeii on the contrary the baths are so well preserved as to show at a glance the purpose of all the different parts—while they are among the most richly decorated of all the buildings in the city. We trace without difficulty all the separate apartments that are described to us by Roman authors—the apodyterium, frigidarium, tepidarium, caldarium, &c., together with the apparatus for supplying both water and heat, the places for depositing the bather's clothes, and other minor details which were for the first time revealed to us by the discovery of these interesting buildings. It is obviously impossible for us in this place to enter into a detailed description of these arrangements, for which we must refer our readers to the professed treatises on Roman antiquities, as well as to the larger works on Pompeii (see also Barus, vol. iii. p. 435). The

greater therms, which were not discovered till 1857, nor | fully excavated till 1860, so that they are not described in |

the earlier works on the subject, are on a much more extensive scale than the others, and combine with the special purposes of the building a palestra and other apartments for exercise or recreation. The arrangements of the baths themselves are, however, almost similar to those of the lesser therm. In this case an inscription records the repair and restoration of the edifice after the

earthquake of 63, but the period of its original construc- |

tion is unknown. It appears, however, that these two establishments were found inadequate to supply the wants of the inhabitants, and a third edifice of the same character, but on a still more extensive scale, was in course of construction when the town was overwhelmed. The remains of this, which were first discovered and excavated in 1877, are, however, of comparatively little interest from the incomplete state in which the buildings were left.

have in some instances thrown upon similar edifices in other ruined cities, far more curious and interesting is the insight afforded us by the numerous private houses and shops into the ordinary life and habits of the population of an ancient town. In this respect Pompeii stands alone, among all antiquarian discoveries,—the difficulties of exploration at Herculaneum having greatly checked all further investigations on that equally promising site. But

| here again it is impossible in an article like the present to

do more than briefly advert to the general results of the excavations (compare ARCHITECTURE, vol. il, p. 420-21, and Pl. XVII.). The houses at Pompeii are generally low, rarely exceeding two stories in height, and it appears certain that the upper story was generally of a slight construction, and occupied by small rooms, serving as garrets, or sleeping places for slaves, and perhaps for the females of the family. From the mode of destruction of the city these upper floors were in most cases crushed in and destroyed, and hence it was long believed that the houses for the most part had but one story; but recent researches have in many cases brought to light incontest- able evidence of the existence of an upper floor, and the frequent occurrence of a small staircase is in itself sufficient proof of the fact. The windows, as already mentioned, were generally small and insignificant, and contributed nothing to the external decoration or effect of the houses. In some cases they were undoubtedly closed with glass, but its use appears to have been by no means general. The principal living rooms, as well as those intended for the reception of guests or clients, were all on the ground floor, the centre being formed by the atrium, or hall, which was almost always open above to the air, and in the larger houses was generally surrounded with columns. Into this opened other rooms, the entrances to which seem to have been rarely protected by doors, and could only have been closed by

curtains. All the apartments and arrangements described by Vitruvius and other ancient writers may be readily traced in the houses of Pompeii, and in many instances these have for the first time enabled us to under- stand the technical terms and details transmitted to us by Latin authors. We must not, however, hastily assume that the examples thus preserved to us by a singular accident are to be taken as representing the style of build- ing in all the Roman and Italian towns. We know from Cicero that Capua was remarkable for its broad streets and wide-spread buildings, and it is probable that the Campanian towns in general partook of the same character. At Pompeii indeed the streets were not wide, but they were straight and regular, and the houses of the better class occupied considerable spaces, presenting in this respect no doubt a striking contrast, not only with those of Rome itself, but with those of many other Italian towns, where the buildings would necessarily be huddled together from the circumstances of their position, Even at Pompeii itself, on the west side of the city, where the ground slopes somewhat steeply towards the sea, houses are found which consisted of three stories or more.

The excavations systematically conducted for many years past have presented us with examples of houses of every description, from the humble dwelling-place of the artisan or proletarian, with only three or four small rooms, to the stately mansions of Sallust and Pansa,1—the last of which is the most regular as well as the most extensive of all,

1 It may be observed that the names given in most cases to the houses are either arbitrary, or founded in the first instance upon erroneous inferences. Hence they are frequently changed, and great confusion arises in consequence in comparing the different works on the subject. A few only of the best known may be considered as

Great as is the interest attached to the various public | established by long usage, among which are the two here referred to.

BOM PEA

and may be taken as an almost perfect model of a com- |

plete Roman house of a superior class. But the general similarity in their plan and arrangement is very striking, and in all those that rise above a very humble class the leading divisions of the interior, the atrium, tablinum, peristyle, &c., may be traced with unfailing regularity. Another peculiarity that is found in all the more consider- able houses in Pompeii is that of the front, where it faces one of the principal streets, being occupied with shops, usually of small size, and without any communication with the interior of the mansion. In a few instances indeed such a communication is found, but in these cases it is probable that the shop was used for the sale of articles grown upon the estate of the proprietor, such as wine, fruit, oil, &c., a practice that is still common in Italy. In general the shop had a very small apartinent behind it, and pro- bably in most cases a sleeping chamber above it, though of this the only remaining evidence is usually a portion of the staircase that led to this upper room. The front of the shop was open to the street, but was capable of being closed with wooden shutters, the remains of which have in a few instances been preserved. Of course it is only in a few cases that the particular purpose of the shop or trade of its owner can be determined, though, from the exceptional manner of their preservation, this can be done more frequently than might be expected. Thus not only have the shops of silversmiths been recognized by the precious objects of that metal found in them, but large quantities of fruits of various kinds preserved in glass vessels, various descriptions of corn and pulse, loaves of bread, moulds for pastry, fishing-nets, and many other objects, too numerous to mention, have been found in such a condition as to be identified without difficulty. Cooks' shops appear to have been numerous, as well as thermo-polit, where hot drinks were sold. Bakers' shops are also frequent, though arrangements for grinding and baking appear to have formed part of every large family establish- ment. In other cases, however, these were on a larger scale, provided with numerous querns or hand-mills of the well-known form, evidently intended for public supply. Another establishment on a large scale was a fullonica or fuller's shop, where all the details of the business were illustrated by paintings still visible on the walls. A dyer's shop, a tannery, and a shop where colours were ground and manufactured—an important business where almost all the rooms of every house were painted—are of special interest, as is also the house of a surgeon, where numerous surgical instruments were found, some of them of a very ingenious and elaborate description, but all made of bronze. Another

curious discovery was that of the abode of a sculptor, containing his tools, as well as blocks of marble and half-finished statues. The number of utensils of various kinds found in the houses and shops is almost endless, and, as these are in most cases of bronze, they are generally in perfect preservation.

Of the numerous works of art discovered in the course of the excavations the statues and large works of sculpture, whether in marble or bronze, are inferior to those found at Herculaneum, but some of the bronze statuettes are of exquisite workmanship, while the profusion of orna- mental works and objects in bronze and the elegance of their design, as well as the finished beauty of their execu- tion, are such as to excite the utmost admiration,—more especially when it is considered that these are the casual results of the examination of a second-rate provincial town. The same impression is produced in a still higher degree by the paintings with which the walls of the private houses, as well as those of the temples and other public buildings, are adorned, and which are not merely of a decorative character, but in many instances present us

with elaborate compositions of figures, historical and mythological scenes, as well as representations of the ordinary life and manners of the people, which are full of interest to us, though often of inferior artistic execution. An illustration of the character of the Pompeian wall- paintings is given in the article Murat Decoration, vol. xvii. p. 42, fig. 8. Our knowledge of ancient paint- ing is indeed derived to a much greater extent from Pompeii than from all other sources whatever ; and, when we contemplate the variety and beauty of what we find here entombed, we cannot but ask ourselves what would have been the result had a great and opulent city like Capua or Neapolis been preserved to us in the same manner as the comparatively insignificant Pompeii. The same character of elaborate decoration, guided almost uniformly by good taste and artistic feeling, is displayed in the mosaic pave- ments, which in all but the humbler class of houses fre- quently form the ornament of their floors. One of these, well known as the battle of Alexander, presents us with the most striking specimen of artistic composition that has been preserved to us from

antiquity (see Mosaic, vol. xvi. p, 851, where part of this composition is shown in fig. 2).

The architecture of Pompeii must be regarded as present- ing in general a transitional character from the pure Greek style to that of the Romanempire. The temples (as already observed) have always the Roman peculiarity of being raised on a podium of considerable elevation ; and the same characteristic is found in most of the other public buildings. All the three orders of Greek architecture —the Doric, Ionic, and Corinthian—are found freely employed in the various edifices of the city, but rarely in strict accordance with the rules of art in their proportions and details ; while the private houses naturally exhibit still more deviation and irregularity. In many of these indeed we find varieties in the ornamentation, and even in such leading features as the capitals of the columns, which remind one rather of the vagaries of medizval archi-

tecture than of the strict rules of Vitruvius or the monoton-

ous regularity of Greek edifices. One practice which is especially prevalent, so as to strike every casual visitor, is that of filling up the flutings of the columns for about one-third of their height with a thick coat of stucco, so as to give them the appearance of being smooth columns without fiutings below, and only fluted above. The un- pleasing effect of this anomalous arrangement is greatly aggravated by the lower part of each column being almost always coloured with red or yellow ochre, so as to render the contrast between the two portions still stronger. The architecture of Pompeii suffers also from the inferior quality of the materials generally employed. No good building stone was at hand; and the public as well as private edifices were constructed either of volcanic tuff, or brick, or the irregular masonry known to the Romans as opus incertum. Those which belong to the earlier or Oscan period of the city (before the establishment of the Roman colony) are for the most part of the former material, while those erected under the Roman empire, and especially those subsequent to the great earthquake of 63, are gene- rally of slighter construction, and of a less durable character. In the private houses even the columns are mostly of brick, covered merely with a coat of stucco. In a few instances only do we find them making use of a kind of travertine, found in the valley of the Sarno, which, though inferior to the similar material so largely employed at Rome, was better adapted than the ordinary tuff for purposes where great

solidity was required. The portion of the portico surrounding the forum which was in the process of rebuilding at the time when the city was destroyed was constructed of this material, while the earlier portions, as well as the principal temples that XIX. — 57

adjoined it, were composed in the ordinary manner of voleanic tuff. Marble appears to have been scarce, and was sparingly employed. In some instances where it had been freely introduced, as in the great theatre, it would seem that the slabs must have been removed at a period subsequent to the entombment of the city. ;

Outside the gate leading to Herculaneum is found a house of a different character from all the others, which from its extent and arrangements was undoubtedly a suburban villa, belonging to a person of considerable fortune. It is called—as usual without any authority— the villa of Arrius Diomedes; but its remains are of peculiar interest to us, not only for comparison with the numerous ruins of similar buildings which occur elsewhere, —often of greater extent, but in a mucli less perfect state of preservation,—but as assisting us in understanding the description of ancient authors, such as Vitruvius and Pliny, of the numerous appurtenances frequently annexed to houses of this description. The remains of a still more extensive suburban house which were discovered in 1764, and to which the name was given, without the slightest foundation, of the villa of Cicero, are no longer visible, having been covered up again with earth (as was frequently done in the last century) after the works of art had been removed.

In the vaulted corridors of the first villa were discovered no less than seventeen skeletons of the unfortunate in- habitants, who had evidently fled thither for protection. Almost all the skeletons and remains of bodies found in the city were discovered in similar situations, in cellars or underground apartments,—those who had sought refuge in flight having apparently for the most part escaped from destruction, or having perished under circumstances where their bodies were easily recovered by the survivors. Ac- cording to Dion Cassius, a large number of the inhabitants were assembled in the theatre at the time of the catas- trophe, but no bodies have been found there, and they were probably sought for and removed shortly

afterwards. Hence the whole number of such remains discovered is not so large as might at first be supposed. It cannot indeed be accurately estimated, the records of the excavations in the last century having been very imperfectly kept; but the total number as yet discovered can scarcely exceed three hundred. Of late years it has been found possible in many cases to take casts of the bodies found—a com-

plete mould having been formed around them by the fine |

white ashes, partially consolidated by water.

The road leading from the gate of Herculaneum towards that city is bordered on both sides for a considerable extent by rows of tombs, as was the case with all the great roads leading into Rome, and indeed in all large Roman towns. Without of course approximating to the stately structures that adorned the Via Appia or Latina, these tombs are in many instances monuments of considerable pretension, and of a highly ornamental character, and naturally present in the highest degree the peculiar advantage common to all that remains of Pompeii, in their perfect preservation. Hardly any scene even in this extraordinary city is more striking than the coup d'eil of this long street of tombs, preserving uninjured the records of successive generations eighteen centuries ago. Unfortunately the names are all otherwise unknown ; but we learn from the inscriptions that they are for the most part those of local magistrates and municipal dignitaries of Pompeii.

_ There appears to have been in the same quarter a con- siderable suburb, outside the gate, extending on each side of the road towards Herculaneum, apparently much resembling those which are now found throughout almost the whole distance from thence to Naples. It appears to have been known by the name of Pagus Augustus Felix.

No manuscripts have been discovered in Pompeii. In- scriptions have naturally been found in considerable nuin- bers, and we are indebted to them for much information concerning the municipal arrangements of the town, as well as the construction of various edifices and other public works. The most interesting of these are such as are written in the Oscan dialect,

which appears to have con- tinued in official use down to the time when the Roman colony was introduced by Sulla. From that time the Latin language was certainly the only one officially employed, though Oscan may have still been spoken by a portion at least of the population. Still more curious, and almost peculiar to Pompeii, are the numerous writings scratched or rudely painted upon the walls, which have in some instances a semi-public character, such as recommendations of candi- dates for municipal offices, but more frequently are the mere expression of individual impulse and feeling, not un- cominonly conveyed in rude and imperfect verses. In one house also a whole box was found filled with written tablets —diptychs and triptychs—containing the record of the accounts of a banker named L. Cecilius Jucundus.

The inscriptions of a more formal character have been published by Mommsen, first in his Jnscriptiones Regni Neapolitant Latine (fol., Leipsic, 1852) and again in the tenth volume of the great Corpus Inscriptionum Latinarum, published at Berlin (1883). The fourth volunie of the same work published in 1871 contains all the scratched and written inscriptions discovered up to that date, edited by Zangemeister (under the title Znscriptiones Parietariz Pompevane, Herculanenses, et Stabianx) ; but the number has been since greatly increased, and a supplementary volume is in the press. The Oscan inscriptions, which are not comprised in the above collections, have been published by Fiorelli.

Most of the movable objects from Pompeii are now in the Museo Borbonico at Naples (see vol. xvii. p. 189).

Of the numerous works devoted to the antiquities and description of Pompeii generally it must suffice to mention a few. The earlier works, especially that of Mazois (Les Ruines de Pompeii, with its coutinuation by Gau, 4 vols. fol., Paris, 1812-38), and the two well-known works of Sir W. Gell (Pompeiana, Ist serics, 2 vols. 8vo, London, 1824, 2d series, 1830), are still valuable for reference, though neeessarily very imperfect. The popular treatise published by the Society for Useful Knowledge (Pompeti, 2 vols. 8vo, London, 1831) gives a good account of what had been then discovered, and the light thrown by it on ancient manners and customs. The inore recent works of Breton (Pompeia, 8vo, Paris, 1855) and of Mr Dyer (Pompeii: its

History, Buildings, and Antiquities, 8vo, London, 1867) bring down the reeord to a later period; and the successive editions of Overbeck's Pompeii (first published in 1856) have been kept continually on a par with the progress of discovery and rescarch. The last edition of this valuable treatise (1884) is much the most complete and useful compendium of the whole subject that has yet aypeared, and will supply all the wants of the ordinary reader. More special students will find there detailed references to the official records of the later discoveries that have been made under the direction of Signor Fiorelli, and to the numerous dissertations to which they have given rise. The great illustrated works of Zahn (Berlin, 1827-29) and Presuln (fol., Leipsic, 1882) will furnish more elaborate representations of the decorative works with which almost all the buildings are adorned, while the student of ancient art may have recourse to the less am- bitious collection of the ancient paintings by Helbig (Wandge- mélde der von Vesuv verschiitteten Stidte Campaniens, Leipsic, 1868), with a supplementary volume published by Sogliano at Naples. A complete catalogue of all the works concerning Pompeii and Herculaneum will be found in a little book published at Milan in 1879 under the title of Bibliotheca Pompeiana. Unfortunately all works are rendered imperfect within a few years by the continued progress of the cxplorations and discoveries on the site. (E. H. B.)

POMPEY is the common English form of the Roman name Pompeius.

I. Cyerus Pompzrus Macnvus (106-48 B.c.), the great triumvir, whose name we always associate with Czsar and Crassus, may be said to have led a soldier's life from his boyhood to his death. Born in 106 z.c., he fouglit

by his father's side when a stripling of seventeen in the Social or Italian War on the side of Sulla against the party of Marius and Cinna. Thus early in life he con- nected himself with the cause of the aristocracy, and a decisive victory which he won in 83 over the Marian armies gained for him from Sulla the titie of ''imperator." He followed up his successes in Italy by defeating the Marians in Sicily and Africa, and on his return to Rome in 81, though he was still merely an "'eques" and not legally qualified to celebrate a triumph, he was allowed by general consent to enjoy this great distinction,

while Sulla greeted him with the surname of Magnus, a title he always retained and handed down to his sons. Yet in 79 he used his influence in getting elected to the consul- ship a man politically opposed to Sulla, AZmilius Lepidus, who threatened Rome with another revolution and civil war in the interest of the democratic party. Pompey, however, at this crisis was loyal to his friends, and with the defeat of Lepidus the danger passed away. With some fears and misgivings the senate permitted him to retain the command of his victorious army, and decided on sending him to Spain, where, under a leader of singular ability, Sertorius, the Marian party was still formidable. Pompey was fighting in Spain from 76 to 71, and though at first he met with serious reverses he was ultimately successful, his great opponent, Sertorius, having, it would seem, lost the confidence of some of the native Spanish tribes. In71 he was again in Italy at the head of his army, and won fresh glory by giving a finishing blow to the slave insurrection of Spartacus. That same year, amid great popular enthusiasm, but without the hearty concurrence of the senate, whom he had alarnied by talking of restoring the dreaded power of the tribunes, and though still merely an "eques," he was elected with Crassus to the consulship, and entered Rome in triumph for his Spanish victories. The following year saw the work of Sulla undone: the tribune- ship was restored, and the administration of justice was no longer left exclusively to the senate, but was to be shared by them with the wealthier portion of the middle class, the "knights," as from old time they had been called, and the farmers and collectors of the revenue. The change was really necessary, as the provincials could never get justice from a court composed of senators, and it was carried into effect by Pompey with Cvesar's aid. Pompey as a matter of course rose still higher in popularity, and on the motion of the tribune Gabinius in 67 he was entrusted with an extraordinary command over the greater part of the empire, specially for the extermination of piracy in the Mediterranean, by which the corn supplies of Rome were seriously endangered, while high prices of provisions caused great distress. man had been chosen for the work: the price of corn fell immediately on Pompey's appointment, and in forty days the Mediterranean was swept from end to end and the pirates cleared out of its waters. Next year, on the proposal of the tribune Manilius, he had a yet further extension of his powers, the whole of Rome's empire in the East being put under his control for three years with the view of finally terminating the war with Mithradates, king of Pontus, who had recovered

from the defeats he had sustained from Lucullus and regained his dominions. Both Csesar and Cicero supported the tribune's proposal, which was easily carried in spite of the interested opposi- tion of the senate and the aristocracy, several of whom held provinces which would now be practically under Pompey's command. Pompey was now by far the first man in the Roman world. His operations in the East were thoroughly successful, and, though no doubt he owed something to the victories of Lucullus, he showed himself an able soldier.

| vassals of Rome.

It soon appeared that the right |

Pan Y 451

Roman arins, and the king of Pontus himself fled from Asia across the Black Sea to Panticapeeum, the modern Kertch. In the years 64 and 63 Syria and Palestine were annexed to Rome's empire. After the capture of Jeru- salem Pompey is said to have entered the temple, and even the Holy of Holies. Asia and the East generally were left under the subjection of petty kings who were mere Several cities had been founded which became centres of Greek life and civilization. A really great work had been accomplished, and Pompey, now in his forty-fifth year, returned to Italy in 61 to celebrate the most magnificent triumph which Rome had ever witnessed, and to be hailed as the conqueror of Spain, Africa, and Asia.

The remainder of Pompey's life is inextricably inter- woven with that of Cesar. He was married to Czsar's daughter Julia, and as yet the relations between the two had been friendly. On more than one occasion Czesar had supported Pompey's policy, which of late had been in a decidedly democratic direction. Pompey was now in fact ruler of the greater part of the empire, while Czesar had only the two provinces of Gaul. The control of the capital, the supreme command of the army in Italy and of the Mediterranean fieet, the governorship of the two Spains, the superintendence of the corn supplies, which were mainly drawn from Sicily and Africa, and on which the vast population of Rome was wholly dependent, were entirely in the hands of Pompey. The senate and the aristocracy disliked and distrusted him, but they felt that, should things

come to the worst, they might still find in him a champion of their cause. At the same time the senate itself was far from unanimous: among many of its members there was a feeling that a military imperialism had become a necessity, while to the rich and idle world generally peace and quiet at any price seemed the best of all blessings. Hence the joint rule of Pompey and Cesar was not unwillingly accepted, and anything like a rupture between the two was greatly dreaded as the sure beginning

of anarchy throughout the Roman world. With the death

of Pompey's wife Julia, in 54, came strained relations be- tween him and Cesar, and soon afterwards he drew closer to what we may call the old conservative party in the senate and aristocracy. The end was now near, and Pompey blundered into a false political position and an open quarrel with Cesar. In 50 the senate by a very large majority revoked the extraordinary powers conceded to Pompey and Cesar in Spain and Gaul respectively. Pompey's refusal to submit gave Cesar a good pretext for declaring war and marching at the head of his army into Italy. At the beginning of the contest, the advantages were decidedly on the side of Pompey, but very speedily the superior political tact of his rival, combined with extraordinary promptitude and decision in following up his blows, turned the scale against him. Pompey's cause, with that of the senate and aristocracy, was finally ruined by his defeat in 48 in the neighbourhood of the Thessalian city Pharsalus. That same year he fled with the hope of finding a safe refuge in Egypt, but was treacherously murdered as he was stepping on the shore by one of his old centurions. He had just completed his fifty-eighth year.

Pompey, though he had some great and good qualities, hardly deserved his surname of "the Great." He was certainly a very good soldier, and is said to have excelled in all athletic exercises, but he fell short of being a first-rate general. He won great successes in Spain and more especially in the East, but for these he was no doubt partly indebted to what others had already done. Of the gifts which make a good statesman he had really none. As plainly appeared in the last years of his life, he was too weak and irresolute to choose a side and stand by it. Pitted against such a man as Cesar, he could not but fail. But to his credit be it said that in a corrupt time he never used his opportunities for plunder

and extortion, and his domestic life was pure and simple. A very complete life of Pompey will be found in Smith's Dict. of Greek and

The wild tribes of the Caucasus were cowed by the | Roman Biography. The allusions to him in Cicero's works are very frequent.

II. Sextus Pompgerus Maenus (75-35 B.c.), the younger son of Pompey the Great, born 75 B.c., continued after his father's death to prolong the struggle against the new rulers of the Roman empire. Cvsar's victory at Munda in 45 drove him out of Corduba (Cordova), though for a time he held his ground in the south of Spain, and defeated Asinius Pollio, the governor of the province. In 43, the year of the triumvirate of Octavius, Antony, and Lepidus, he was proscribed along with the murderers of Ceesar, and not daring to show himself in Italy he put himself at the head of a fleet manned chiefly by slaves or proscribed persons, by means of which he made himself master of Sicily, and from thence ravaged the coasts of Italy. Rome was threatened with a famine, as the corn supplies from Egypt and Africa were cut off by his ships, and it was thought prudent to negotiate a peace with him, which was to leave him in possession of Sicily, Sardinia, and Achaia, provided he would allow Italy to be freely sup- plied with corn. But the arrangement could not be carried into effect, as Sextus renewed the war and gained some considerable successes at sea. However, in 36 his fleet was defeated and destroyed by Agrippa off the north coast of Sicily, and in the following year he was murdered at Mitylene by an officer of Antony. He had his father's bravery as a soldier, but seems to have been a rough uncultivated man. (Ww. J. B.)

PONCE DE LEON, Luis. See Lron, Luis Ponce Dr.

PONCELET, Jean Victor (1788-1867), mathemati- cian, was born at Metz, July 1, 1788. From 1808 to 1810 he attended the Polytechnic School, and afterwards, till 1812, the Practical School at Metz. He then became lieutenant of engineers, and took part in the Russian campaign, during which he was taken prisoner and was confined at Saratoff on the Volga. It was during his imprisonment here that, 'privé de toute espéce de livres et de secours, surtout distrait par les malheurs de ma patrie et les miens propres,"

as he himself puts it, he began his researches on projective geometry which led to his great treatise on that subject. This work, the 7’razté des Propriétés Projectives des Figures, which was published in 1822 (2d ed., 1865), is occupied with the investiga- tion of the projective properties of figures, that is, such properties as are not altered by projection. In his inves- tigation he employs the ideas of continuity, of homologous figures, and of reciprocal polars; and by means of these, without any analysis, he was able to establish all the known

properties of lines and surfaces of the second degree, and |

to discover others unknown before. This work entitles Poncelet to rank as one of the greatest of those who took part in the development of the modern geometry of which Monge was the founder. From 1815 to 1825 he was occu- pied with military engineering at Metz; and from 1825 to 1835 he was professor of mechanics at the Practical School there. In 1826, in his Mémoire sur les Rowes Hy- drauliques & Aubes Courbes, he brought forward improve- ments in the construction of water-wheels, which more than doubled their efficiency. In 1834 he became a member of the Academy ; from 1838 to 1848 he was professor to the faculty of sciences at Paris, and from 1848 to 1850 com- mandant of the Polytechnic School, where he effected a reform in the course of study. At the London Interna- tional Exhibition in 1851 he had charge of the department of machinery, and wrote a report on the machinery and tools on view at that exhibition. He died December 22, 1867. Besides those referred to above, he wrote a number of works, and contributed many papers to Crrelle’s J ournal, &c., on different branches of engineering and mathematics.

POND, Joun (c. 1767-1836), astronomer-royal, was born about 1767 in London, where his father made a fortune in trade. He entered Trinity College, Cambridge, at the

age of sixteen, but took no degree, his course being interrupted by severe pulmonary attacks which compelled a prolonged residence abroad. THis travels extended from Lisbon to Constantinople and the Nile, and were turned to account for astronomical observation. In 1800 he settled at

Westbury near Bristol, and began to determine star-places with a fine altitude and azimuth circle of 23 feet diameter by Troughton. His demonstration in 1806 (Phil. Trans., xcvi. 420) of a change of form in the Greenwich mural quadrant led to the introduction of astronomical circles at the Royal Observatory, and to his own appointment as its head. Elected a fellow of the Royal Society, February 26, 1807, he married and went to live in London in the same year, and in 1811 succeeded Maskelyne as astronomer-royal.

During an administration of nearly twenty-five years, Pond effected a reform of practical astronomy in England comparable to that effected by Bessel in Germany. In 1821 he began to employ the method of observation by re- flexion ; and in 1825 he devised means (see Mem. R.A. Soc., ii. 499) of combining two mural circles in the determination of the place of a single object, the one serving for direct and the other for reflected vision. (By an invention of Airy's, the same object is now attained with one instru- ment.) During Pond's term of office the instrumental equipment at Greenwich was completely changed, and the number of assistants increased from one to six. The superior accuracy of his determinations was due in part to his systematic attention to the errors of his instruments, in part to his plan of multiplying observations. During a prolonged controversy (1810-24), he consistently denied the reality of Brinkley's imaginary star-parallaxes (see his papers in Phil. Trans., eviii. 477 ; exiii. 53). Delicacy of health impeded his activity, and compelled his retirement in the autumn of 1835. He died at Blackheath, September 7, 1836, and was buried beside Halley in the churchyard of Lee. The Copley medal was conferred upon him in 1823, and the Lalande prize in 1817 by the Paris Academy, of which he was a corresponding member. He published eight folio volumes of Greenwich Observations, translated Laplace's Systéme du Monde (in 2 vols. 8vo., 1809), and contributed thirty-one papers to scientific collections. His catalogue of 1112 stars (1833) was of great value.

See Mem. R. A. Soc., x. 857; Annual Biography and Obituary, 1837; Grant, Hist. of Phys. Astr., p. 491; Royal Society's Cat. of Sc, Papers.

PONDICHERRI, chief settlement of the French posses- sions in the East Indies, situated on the Coromandel coast, in 11° 56' N. lat. and 79° 53' E.

long. ; it is 86 miles south of Madras, and is connected with the South Indian Railway system. The territory consists of three districts—Pondicherri, Villianur, and Bahur—comprising an area of 112 square miles, with a population in 1881 of 139,210. The town is divided into a European and a native quarter, separated from one another by a canal. The French first settled at Pondicherri in 1674; it was besieged four times by the British, the last time in 1793; but it was finally restored in 1816. On the whole the town is considered very salubrious ; the purity of its water-supply is said to be unrivalled in any other town in southern India.

PONEVYEZH, a district town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Kovno, situated on the upper course of tho Nevyeja river, and connected by rail with Libau on tho north-west and with Diinaburg (80 miles distant) on the east. It isan old town which was almost totally destroyed by the pestilence of 1550, but was rebuilt and repeopled owing to its advantageous situation on the highway to the Baltic. After having suffered severely from wars in the 17th and 18th centuries it was annexed to Russia on the

third dismemberment of Poland, but had neither eine | facturing nor commercial importance until it was brought into railway connection with Libau, with which seaport it now carries on some trade in agricultural produce. Its population (8070 in 1865) had in 1881 reached 15,030, of whom nearly one-half were Jews.

PONIATOWSKI, a family of Poland, the earliest member of which to acquire high distinction was STANIS- LAus CronEK (1677-1762), regarding whose descent there are conflicting accounts,—some tracing it to the Lombard Counts Torelli, one of whom in the seventeenth century

married a daughter of Albert of Poniatow, and added the name of Poniatowski to his own, which he changed to its equivalent in Polish, Ciolek, while others affirm that the name Poniatowski was adopted by one of two brothers from an estate which fell to his share, while it is also asserted that Stanislaus Ciolek was the natural son of Prince Sapieha, and was adopted by a Polish nobleman named Poniatowski (see Szymanowski, Die Poniatowsk, Geneva, 1880). In any case he had sufficient influence and

ability to insure his rapid promotion in the army of Charles XII., and as major-general at the battle of Poltava in 1709 was able by his self-command in facilitating the passage of the Dnieper to save the retreating army. In 1711 he was sent on a special embassy to Constantinople, when he succeeded in obtaining from the sultan a promise to send an army to aid Charles in the war with Russia ; but on account of a change in the office of grand vizier the promise was never carried out. All possibility of undertaking a Russian invasion being therefore at an end, he was appointed by Charles governor of the duchy of Zweibriicken. After the death of Charles, he gave his adhesion to Augustus II., by whom he was in 1724 made grand treasurer of Lithuania, and in 1731 palatine of Mazovia. On the death of Augustus II. he sought to effect the promotion of Stanislaus Leszezynski to the throne, but ultimately he gave in his submission to Augustus III., and after holding under him several high offices was in 1752 appointed castellan of Cracow. He was the author of Remarques dun Seigneur Polonars sur V Histoire de Charles XII. par Voltaire, 1741, which was translated into English in the same year. He died in 1762, leaving by his marriage with Constance Princess Czartoryski four sons, the best known of whom was the second, SranisLaus Avueustus (1732-1798), king of Poland, born 17th January 1732. Sent by Augustus IIT. to the court of Russia, he won the favour of the grand- duchess Catherine, who succeeded to the throne by the assassination of her husband, 9th July 1762. Through her influence he was, 7th September 1764, chosen king of Poland. For an account of his despicable and disastrous rule see PoLanp (pp. 297-8). After signing his abdi- cation, 25th November 1795, he took up his residence at St Petersburg, where he enjoyed a pension of 200,000 ducats paid jointly by Austria, Russia, and Prussia. He died unmarried, 12th February 1798 (see Mémoires Secrets inédits de Stanislas II. Auguste, Leipsic, 1867, and De Mouy, Correspondance inédite de Roi Stanislas-Auguste et de Madame Geof’rin, Paris, 1875). Of the other sons of Stanislaus Poniatowski, Casimir (1721-1800), the eldest, was grand chamberlain of Poland and commander of the royal guard; Andrew (1735-1773) became an Austrian field marshal; and Michael (1736-1794) was ultimately promoted primate of Poland. JosepH ANTON (1762-1813), prince and marshal of France, son of Andrew Poniatowski

was born at Warsaw, 7th May 1762. At the age of sixteen he entered the service of Austria. After the resolution of the diet to reorganize the Polish army he was recalled and obtained the rank of major-general. On the outbreak of hostilities with Russia in 1792 he was made com- |

mander of the army defending central Poland. When tke king his uncle acceded to the confederation of Targovitza he resigned his commission, but on the outbreak of the insurrection in 1794 he enrolled himself as a volunteer under Kosciuszko, although Kosciuszko had previously held inferior military rank to his own. In command of a division he had charge of the defence of the northern side of Warsaw, and after its capitulation he went to Vienna. In 1798 he returned to Warsaw, having obtained from the Prussians a portion of his confiscated estates. On the arrival of Napoleon at Warsaw, 19th December 1806, Poniatowski accepted his invitation to become general of a national Polish army, which, fired by the hope of national independence, gathered to the number of 27,000, to assist Napoleon in his Russian campaign. After the peace of Tilsit, 7th July 1807, the duchy of Warsaw was created, and Poniatowski became minister of war. On the invasion of the duchy in 1809 he fought a desperate battle near the village of Raszyn, and, being permitted afterwards to retreat across the Vistula, invaded Galicia and compelled the Russians to evacuate Cracow. In Napoleon’s cam- paigns he held the command of the Polish army corps, distinguishing himself at Smolensk, Borodino, and Leipsic, where he took 1000 prisoners, and in token of his brilliant exploit was created by Napoleon a marshal of France the same evening. He was employed in covering the retreat from Leipsic, and while charging a column of Prussian infantry was wounded bya ball in the shoulder. When the enemy obtained possession of the suburbs he endeavoured to join the main army by plunging into the Elster, but was fired upon and, enfeebled by wounds, was drowned, 19th October 1813. Josepw (1816-1873), grandson of Casimir mentioned above, was born 4th February 1816, at Rome. Entering the Tuscan service, he went in 1849 as minister of Tuscany to London. In 1850 he took up his residence in Paris, and becoming a naturalized citizen was in 1854 chosen a member of the French senate. In 1870 he removed to

London, where he supported himself by teaching music. He was the composer of several operas. He died 3rd July 1873.

PONS, Jean Louis (1761-1831), French astronomer, born at Peyre (Haut-Dauphiné), 24th December 1761, received a place at the Marseilles observatory in 1789, and in 1819 became the director of the new observatory at Marlia near Lucca, which he left in 1825 for the obser- vatory of the museum at Florence. Here he died October 14, 1831. Pons was famous as a comet-hunter, discover- ing between 1801 and 1827 thirty-seven of these bodies, one of which (discovered 26th November 1818) is the famous comet named after Encke, who determined its orbit.

PONSARD, Francors (1814-1867), French dramatist, was born at Vienne in Dauphiné on the lst June 1814. He was bred a lawyer, and his first performance in litera- ture was a translation of Manfred (1837). But the first important, and indeed the most important, event of his life was the representation of his play Lucréce at the Théatre Frangais on the 1st April 1843. This date is a kind of epoch in literary and dramatic history, because it has been supposed to mark a reaction against the romantic style of Dumas and Hugo. In reality, however, Ponsard was only a romantic of a somewhat tamer genius than those who had gone before him. It so happened that the tastes and capacities of the most popular actress of the day, Rachel, suited his style of drama, and this contributed greatly to his own popularity. He followed up Lucréce with Agnés de Méranie (1846), Charlotte Corday (1850), and others. Ponsard accepted the empire, though with no very great enthusiasm, and received the post of librarian to the senate, which, however, he soon resigned, fighting a blood-

less duel with a journalist on the subject. L’Honneur et

iy

L’ Argent, one of his most successful plays, was acted in —

1853, and he became an Academician in 1855. For some years he did little, but in 1866 he obtained great success with Le Lion Amoureux. He died a

year later at Paris in July 1867, soon after his nomination to the commander- ship of the Legion of Honour. His widow was pensioned. Ponsard is no doubt in some ways a remarkable dramatist. Unlike most men who have achieved considerable success on the stage, he did not overwrite himself,.and most of his plays hold a certain steady level of literary and dramatic ability.. But, as has been said, his popularity is in the main due to the fact that he found an actress ready to hand for his pieces, and that his appearance coincided with a certain public weariness of the grander but also more extravagant and unequal style of 1830.

PONTANUS, Jovianvs (1426-1503), a famous Italian humanist and poet, was born in 1426 at Cerreto in the

duchy of Spoleto, where his father was murdered in one of.

the frequent civil brawls which then disturbed the peace of Italian towns. His mother escaped with the boy' to Perugia, and it was here that Pontano received his first instruction in languages and literature. Failing to recover his patrimony, he abandoned Umbria, and at the aye of twenty-two established himself at Naples, which con-

tinued to be his chief place of residence during a long |

and prosperous career. He here began a close friendship with the distinguished scholar, Antonio Beccadelli, through whose influence he gained admission to the royal chancery of Alphonso the Magnanimous. Alphonso discerned the singular gifts of the young scholar, and made him tutor to his sons. Pontano's connexion with the Aragonese dynasty as political adviser, military secretary, and chancellor was henceforth a close one; and the most doubtful passage in his diplomatic career is when he welcomed Charles VIII. of France upon the entry of that king into Naples in 1495, thus showing that he was too ready to abandon the princes upon whose generosity his fortunes had been raised. Pontano illustrates in a marked manner the posi- tion of power to which men of letters and learning had arrived in Italy. He entered Naples as a penniless scholar. He was almost immediately made the companion and trusted friend of its sovereign, loaded with honours, lodged in a fine house, enrolled among the nobles of the realm, enriched, and placed at the very height of social importance.

Following the example of Pomponio Leto in Rome and of Cosimo de' Medici at F lorence, Pontano founded an academy for the meetings of learned and dis- tinguished men. This became the centre of fashion as well as of erudition in the southern capital, and subsisted long after its founder's death. In 1461 he married his first wife, Adriana Sassone, who bore him one son and three daughters before her death in 1491. Nothing dis- tinguished Pontano more than the strength of his domestic feeling. Iie was passionately attached to his wife and children; and, while his friend Beccadelli signed the licentious verses of Hermaphroditus, his own Muse cele- brated in liberal but loyal strains the pleasures of conjugal affection, the charm of infancy, and the sorrows of a husband and a father in the loss of those he loved. Not long after the death of his first wife Pontano took in second marriage a beautiful girl of Ferrara, who is only known to us under the name of Stella. Although he was

at least sixty-five years of age at this period, his poetic |

faculty displayed itself with more than usual warmth and lustre in the glowing series of elegies, styled Hridanus, which he poured forth to commemorate the rapture of this union, Stella's one child, Lucilio, survived his birth but fifty days; nor did his mother long remain to comfort the scholar's old age. Pontano had already lost his only son

| manners than the sinilar lucubrations of Poggio.

by the first marriage; therefore his declining years were

'solitary. He died in 1503 at Naples, where a remarkable

group of terra-cotta figures, life-sized and painted, still adorns his tomb in the church of Monte Oliveto. He is there represented together with his patron Alphonso and his friend Sannazzaro in adoration before the dead Christ.

As a diplomatist and state official Pontano played a part of some

importance in the affairs of southern Italy and in the Barons' War, the wars with Rome, and the expulsion and restoration of the

| Aragonese dynasty. But his chief elaim upon the attention of pos-

terityis as a scholar. His writings divide themselves into disserta- tions upon such topics as the " Liberality of Princes" or " Feroeity," composed in the rhetorical style of the day, and poems. He was

| distinguished for energy of Latin style, for vigorous intellectual

powers, and for the faculty, rare among lis contemporaries, of expressing the facts of modern life, the actualities of personal emotion, in language sufficiently classical yet always characteristic of the man. His prose treatises are more useful to students of Yet it was prin- cipally as a Latin poct that he exhibited his full strength. An ambitious didaetic composition in hexameters, entitled Urania, embodying the astronomical science of, the age, and adorning this high theme with brilliant mythological episodes, won the admira- tion of Italy. It still remains a monument of fertile invention, exuberant facility, and energetic handling of inaterial. Not less excellent is the didactic poem on orange trees, De Hortis Hes- pertdum. His most original compositions in verse, however, are elegiac and hendecasyllabic pieces on personal topics—the De Con- Jjugali Amore, Eridanus, Tumuli, Nenixv, Baie, &c.—in which he uttered his vehemently passionate emotions with a warmth of southern colouring, an evident sincerity, and a truth of painting

| from reality which make the reader pardon an erotic freedom that

is alien to our present taste.. These lyrical compositions breathe the atmosphere of Naples, reproduce its scenery with wonderful brilhancy, and introduce us to the customs of its pleasure-loving pagan people. Yet, in spite of their excessive voluptuousness, we rise from their perusal convinced that their author was essentially a good man, a loving husband and father, and an attached friend. Pontano's prose and poems were printed by the Aldi at Venice. For his life see Ardito, Giovanni Pontano et suot Tempi, Naples, 1871; for his place in the history of literature, Symonds, L?ezais- sanee in Italy. (J. A. 8.)

PONTECORVO, a city of Italy in the province of Caserta, on the left bank of the Garigliano, with a popu- lation of 5172 in 1881 (commune 10,191), answers to the ancient Fregellz, a Volscian city, colonized in 323 B.c. by

_ the Romans, who thus occasioned the Second Samnite War.

The principality of Pontecorvo (about 40 square miles in extent), which Napoleon bestowed on Bernadotte in 1806, was in 1810 incorporated with the French empire. PONTEFRACT, or Pomrret, a market town and municipal and parliamentary borough in the West Riding of Yorkshire, England, finely situated on an eminence near the junction of the Calder and Aire, and on three railway lines, 13 miles south-east of Leeds, and 14 north-west of Doncaster. The streets are wide and regular, and there are many good houses and shops. A park over 300 acres in extent is used as a public recreation ground. The most important of the antiquarian remains are the ruins of the famous castle situated on a rocky height, originally cover- ing with its precincts an area of over 8 acres, and contain- ing in all eight round towers. The principal feature remaining is the keep. The castle is said to occupy the site of a fortress erected by Ailric, a Saxon thane. It was founded by Ilbert de Lacy shortly after the Conquest, and probably nearly completed by Ibert de Lacy the second, who died about 1141. From that time till its demolition in 1649 it was the great stronghold of South Yorkshire. It was the cradle of the dukes of Lancaster, and in it Richard II. was, after his deposition, “kept secretly” till his death. Many persons of rank and influence have been confined in it as political prisoners. During the wars of York and Lancaster it was a centre of intrigue and con- spiracy. In 1536 it surrendered to Aske, the leader of the “pilgrimage of grace.” At the beginning of the Civil War it was garrisoned for Charles, and it under- went four sieges, three of them by the Parliamentary

forces, and one by the Royalists. After its capitulation to Lambert in March 1649 it was dismantled. Below the castle is All Saints church, which suffered severely during the siege of the castle, but still retains some work of the 12th century. In 1837 the tower and transepts were fitted up for divine service. The church of St Giles, formerly a chapel of ease to All Saints, but made parochial in the 18th century, is of Norman date, but most

of the present structure is modern. The 17th-century spire was removed in 1707, and replaced by a square tower, which was rebuilt in 1797; the chancel was rebuilt in 1869. In Southgate is an ancient hermitage and oratory cut out of the solid rock, which dates from 1396. On St Thomas's Hill, where Thomas, earl of Lancaster, was beheaded in 1322, a chantry was erected in 1373, the site of which is now occupied by a windmill built of its stones. At Monkhill there are the remains of a Tudor building called the Old Hall, probably constructed out of the old priory of St John's. A grammar school of ancient foundation, renewed by Queen Elizabeth and by George III., is now in abeyance. The town-hall was built in 1796 on the site of one erected in 1656, which succeeded the old moot-hall, dating from Saxon times. Among other buildings are the court-house, the market-hall, the assembly rooms (a hand- some building adjoining the town-hall), and the dispensary. The principal alms-house, that of St Nicholas, dates from Saxon times. 'Trinity Hospital, was founded in the 14th century by the celebrated Sir Robert Knolles. There are extensive gardens and nurseries in the neighbourhood, and liquorice is largely grown for the manufacture of the cele- brated Pomfret cakes. The town possesses iron found- ries, sack and inatting manufactories, tanneries, breweries, corn mills, and brick and terra-cotta works. The popula- tion of the municipal borough (extended in 1875) in 1871 was 6432, and in 1881 it was 8798, the population of the parliamentary borough (area 7316 acres) in the same years being 11,563 and 15,322. The increase is mainly due to the fact that Pontefract is now a military centre.

There are indications that the Romans were stationed near the present town, which adjoins the Ermine Street. In Domesday it is ealled Tateshale, and is said previously to have been held by the king (Edward the Confessor). It then possessed a church and priest, one fishery, and three mills. Subsequently it is mentioned as Kirkby. Of the cause of the change of the name to Pontefract various nnsatisfaetory explanations are given. According to one account it was because when William advanced to the conquest of the north his passage was delayed by a broken bridge (but this was at Ferrybridge, 3 miles off); according to a seeond the name was bestowed on it by its Norman possessor from Pontfrete in Nor- mandy (which, however, never existed); and according to a third the name perpetuates the remarkable preservation from drowning of those who fell

into the river when the concourse of people made the bridge give way on the arrival of St William of Canterbury in 1153 (although all contemporary historians call the place Ponte- fraet when Archbishop Thurstan died there in 1140). The town reeeived a charter from Roger de Lacy in 1194, and was incorpor- ated in the time of Richard III. As early as 1297 it returned two members to parliament ; but there was a long discontinuance in the 14th, 15th, and 16th centuries. The practice was revived under James I. The ‘‘redistribution” measnre of 1885 deprives it of one of its members. ‘The municipal borough is divided into three wards, and is governed by six aldermen and eightecn councillors.

PONTEVEDRA, a maritime province of Spain, is bounded on the N. by Corufia, on the E. by Lugo and Orense, on the 8. by Portugal (Entre Douro e Minho), and on the W. by the Atlantic, and has an area of 1739 square miles. The general character of the province is hilly, with a deeply indented coast; its products are those common to all Gaticta (q.v.), of which historical province it formed a part. The population in 1877 was 451,946, the inunicipalities with a population over 10,000 being La Estrada (23,528), Lalin (16,217), Lavadores (13,658), PoNTEVEDRA (noticed below), Puentearéas (14,566), Redon- dela (10,073), Silleda (13,346), Tomiiio (11,150), Tuy

(11,710), and Vigo (13,416). Vigo is connected by rail with Tuy and Orense, and the line from Santiago to Vigo is open as far as to Carril.

PONTEVEDRA, capital of the above province, and an episcopal see, is a picturesque old granite-built town, pleasantly situated at the head of the Ria de Pontevedra, where the Lerez is spanned by the old oman bridge (whence the name—pons vetus). The inhabitants engage in agriculture, sardine fishing, and the manufacture of cloth and hats.. The population of the municipality in 1877 was 19,857.

PONTIANAK. See Borneo.

PONTIFEX. The principal college of priests in ancient Rome consisted of the pontijices, the rex sacrorum, and the jlamines, under the headship of the

pontifer maximus. The rex sacrorum was the functionary who under the republic succeeded to the sacrificial duties which in old time had been performed by the king; the flames were sacrificial priests of. particular gods, the most important

-being the jlamen Dialis, or priest of Jupiter, whose wife,

the jflaminica Dialis, was priestess of Juno. The pontijices on the other hand were not assigned to the service of particular gods, but performed general functions of the state religion ; and their head, the pontifex maximus, was the highest religious authority in the state. For, while the rex sacrorum succeeded to the liturgical functions of the king, it was the pontifex maximus who inherited the substance of power in sacred things; the other members of the college were his counsellors and helpers, but no more. It is probable that there was no supreme pontifex under the kings, but that in accordance with the general rule that sacred officers went in threes, following the number of the old tribes, the king sat as sixth and chief among the five pontifices whom Numa is sald to have instituted. The functions of pontifex maximus were indeed too weighty to be discharged by a subject in a monarchical government, and from Augustus to Gratian (382 a.D.) this supreme priesthood was held by the emperors in person. The original idea of the pontificate is as obscure as the name; it is by no means certain that pontifexr means bridge-maker (as the commonest etymology has it) with reference to the duty of maintenance of the sacred Sublician bridge, for there were pontzfices from of old in other parts of Italy. Marquardt conjectures that the name originally denoted atoning functions, from the same root as appears in purus, pena. In historical times the pontifices had a very extended sphere of duties, and claimed to possess professional ‘‘ knowledge of things human and divine.” The supreme pontiff was in the religion of the state what the father was in the religion of the family. His dwelling was in the regia close to the altar of Vesta, the sacred hearth of the state; and the most sacred objects of national worship, the penates publict and tue mysterious palladia of Roman sovereignty, were his special care. The flamens and vestal virgins were appointed by him and stood under his paternal power, and the stated service of their cults, as well as those exercises of public religion for which no special priests were provided, were under his charge or that of the college in which he pre- sided. The

pontiffs, moreover, supplied technical guidance and help in those religious functions in which the senate or magistrates had the first part ; while the charge of the calendar with its complicated intercalation and system of feast days gave them an important influence on affairs of civil life. The control of the calendar is closely connected with the duties pertaining to the pontifical archives, which, besides a mass of ritual directions and the like, embraced the calendars of past years (including the faste consulares) and the annales maximi or annual chronicle of public events. Further the pontiffs had the weighty function of

declaring and interpreting the laws of religion, which involved such importaut social matters as marriage and testamentary dispositions ; but this function was declara- tory and not magisterial; the state gave no executive power to the pontiffs, save only that the pontifex maximus exercised disciplinary authority over those priestly persons who stood under his paternal power. The pontifis, who held office for life, originally filled up the vacancies in their number by cooptation, but as early as 212 B.C. the head of their college was named by the voice of the people, and in 104 B.c. the choice of the members of the priestly colleges was also transferred to coma of a peculiar constitution. The uumber of pontifices Was gradually enlarged, first to nine and then, under Sulla, to fifteen, and the emperors exercised the right of adding supernumeraries at will.

PONTINE MARSHES. See Latium, vol xiv. p. 343.

PONTOISE, a commercial town of France, at the head of an arrondissement of the department Seine-et-Oise, 18

| bridges, which are for the most part supported on boats

‘ with his army vessels divided into portions, which were

miles by rail north-west of Paris, picturesquely situated on —

the right bank of the Oise where it is joined by the Viosne, and at the intersection of the railway from Paris to Dieppe by Gisors with that of the

valley of the Oise. The traffic on the main river is large, and the tributary drives numerous mills. churches that used to exist in the town two only remain : St Maclou, a church of the 12th century, was altered aud restored in the 15th and 16th centuries by Pierre Lemer- cier, the famous architect of St Eustache at Paris; and Notre Dame, of the close of the 16th century, coutains the tomb of St Gautier (13th century). Grain and flour are the principal staples of the trade of Pontoise ; the popula- tion in 1881 was 6675.

Pontoise existed in the time of the Gauls as Briva Isare (7.¢,, |

Bridge of the Oise). The Romans made it the seat of forges dedi- eated to Vulcan, and thus the district came to be distinguished as Pagus Vulcanius or the Vexin. Pontoise was destroyed by the Normans in the 9th century, united with Normandy in 1082, and aequired by Philip I. in 1064. Lying on the borders of the two states it often passed from one to the other. The English took it in 1419, and again in 1436. storm after a three months' siege. After belonging to the count of Charolais down to the treaty of Conflans, it was given as a dowry to Jeanne of France when she was divoreed by Louis XII. The parlement of Paris several times met in the town; and in

In 1441 Charles VII. took it by |

Of the many convents and.

country ; and to this day many of the great rivers in India are crossed, on the lines of the principal roads, by floating

such as are employed for ordinary traffic on the river.

But light vessels which can be taken out of the water and lifted on to carriages are required for transport with an army in the field. Alexander the Great occasionally carried

put together on reaching the banks of a river, as in crossing the Hydaspes; he is even said to have carried lis army over the Oxus by means of rafts made of the hide tents of the soldiers stuffed with straw, when he found that all the river boats had been burnt. Cyrus crossed the Euphrates on stuffed skins. In the 4th century the emperor Julian crossed the Tigris, Euphrates, and other rivers by bridges of boats made of skins stretched over osier frames. In the 17th century the Germans employed timber frames covered with leather as pontoons, aud the Dutch similar frames covered with tin ; and the practice of carrying about skins to be inflated and employed for the passage of troops across a river, which was adopted by both Greeks and Romans, still exists in the East, and has been introduced into America in a modified form, india-rubber being substituted for skins.

Pontoons have been made of a variety of forms and of

almost every conceivable description of material available

1561 the states-general convoked at Orleans removed thither after |

the death of Franeis II. During the Fronde it offered a refuge to Louis XIV. and Mazarin. Henry III. made it an apanage for his brother the duke of Anjou. duke of Conti. Down to the Revolution it remained a monastic town. Philip the Bold, founder of the house of Burgundy, the arehitects Pierre and Jacques Lemercier, and Tronson-Ducondray, one of the defenders of Marie Antoinette, are among the natives of Pontoise.

PONTOON. Pontoons are vessels employed to sup- port the roadway of floating bridges. They may be either open or closed, heavy and only movable when floated, or light enough to be taken out of the water and transported overland, as when required to form part of the equipment of an army in the field.

From time immemorial floating bridges of vessels bearing a roadway of beams and planks have been employed to facilitate the passage of rivers and arms of the sea. Xerxes crossed the Hellespont on a double bridge, one line supported on three hundred and sixty, the other on three hundred and fourteen vessels, anchored head and stern with their keels in the direction of the current. Darius threw similar bridges across the

At a later period it passed to the |

for the purpose of combining the two essential qualities of transportability over land and power of support in water. As these qualities are not only distinct but conflicting, one of them has been frequently sacrificed to the other. Thus history records many instances of bridges having failed because incapable of supporting all the weight they were called on to bear, or of resisting the force of the current opposed to them; it also records instances of important strategical operations being frustrated because the bridge equipment could not be brought up in time to the spot where it was wanted. Numerous expedients for lightening the equipment have been suggested, in America more particularly; but the proposers have not always re- membered that if a military bridge is intended to be carried with an army it is also intended to carry the army, with its columns of infantry and cavalry, its numerous © waggons, and its ponderous artillery, and it ought to do so with certainty and safety, even though a demoralized rabble should rush upon it in throngs.

Pontoons have been made of two forms, open as an

-undecked boat, or closed as a decked canoe or cylinder.

The advantage claimed for the closed pontoon is that it cannot be submerged by the river, but only by having

_to bear a greater load than its buoyancy admits of; the

disadvantages are that it is difficult to make and keep water-tight, it requires special saddles for the support of the baulks which carry the roadway, and it cannot be conveniently used as a row-boat. During the Peninsular War the English employed open bateaus, as did and still

do all the other European nations; but the experience

Bosphorus and the Danube in his war against the

Scythians, and the Greeks employed a bridge of boats to cross the river Tigris in their retreat from Persia. Float- ing bridges have been repeatedly

constructed over rivers in Europe and Asia, not merely temporarily for the passage

of an army, but permanently for the requirements of the

gained in that war induced the English to abandon the open bateau; for if large it was very difficult to transport across country, and if small it was only suited for tranquil streams, being liable to fill and sink should the river rise suddenly or become disturbed by the wind. Thus closed pontoons came to be introduced into the British army. General Colleton devised the first substitute for the open bateau, a buoy pontoon, cylindrical with conical ends and made of wooden staves like a cask. Then General Pasley introduced demi-pontoons, like decked canoes with pointed bows and square sterns, a pair, attached sternwise, forming a single “pier” of support for the roadway; they were constructed of light timber frames covered with sheet copper and were decked with wood; each demi-pontoon

POW rT OON

was divided internally into separate compartments by partitions which were made as water-tight as possible, and also supplied with the means of pumping out water ; when transported overland with an army, a pair of demi-pontoons and the superstructure of one bay formed the load for a single carriage weighing 3110 ib when loaded. The Pasley was superseded by the Blanshard pontoon, a tin | coated cylinder with hemispherical ends, for which great mobility was claimed, two pontoons and two bays’ super-structure being carried on one waggon, giving a weight of | about 5000 1b, which was intended to be drawn by four horses. The Blanshard pontoon was long adopted for the British army, but it is now being discarded ; experiments made with it in peace time showed that it would probably break down under the strain of actual warfare, and efforts were constantly made to improve on it; when immersed to a greater depth than the semi-diameter it became very unstable and lively under a passing load, a defect which Serjeant-Major Forbes proposed to remedy by giving it a triangular instead of a circular section, thus increasing the stability by presenting a continually increasing area of bearing surface up to the level of total immersion ; but the angles of these pontoons were found so liable to injury as to counterbalance any advantages over the cylinders.

After many years’ experience of the closed pontoon the English engineers came to the conclusion that it was desirable to return to the form of the open bateau to which the engineers of all the Continental armies had meanwhile constantly adhered. Captain Fowke, R.E., invented a folding open bateau, made of water-proof canvas attached to sliding ribs, so that for transport it can be collapsed like the bellows of an accordion and for use it can be extended by a pair of stretchers; it is very mobile, but it is also deficient in power of support, for whereas the buoy- ancy due to the outline form out of the water is 13,600 tb the actual buoyancy in the water is only 8640 tb, because of the cavities in the canvas between the ribs which are formed by the pressure of the water outside ; moreover, the surface irregularities cause the pressure exerted by a current upon a bridge formed of these collapsible pontoons to be about three times as much as upon one of equal power formed with Blanshard’s or Pasley’s pontoons ; there is thus great risk of the bridge being carried away bya strong current.

The following table shows the powers of various pontoons at present or recently in use by different nations. The “working power of support” has been calculated in most instances by deduct-

ing from the “available buoyancy” one-fourth for open and one- tenth for closed vesscls :—

The Powers of Various Pontoon Bridges.

ewe 2 | 2 |4 | on | ee] & | ose

8 eileae) & i? Ve | oo i22\8 | oe

a S. | oes 3 = i ao |ss8] 8 Zoe Pontoon. a s& wag Ee a = 25 |om | & | ges. . od Ro o = of; = ; em + S 2S ees s Zs sa | Bee = SE | @s 3 | 8a) 2 | 8h ®| 48 | BB | se5| 4 | #2 128) 82 | ey] 8 | ees 2 |) 2 ap SS eee) = cs] 12h] 2. lee |e | Bees a | Am “3 | BEA < Ea |Om| ae | oa] & | Sake

Ft. | Cub. Ft. Ib ib Ib tb Ft 1b ib Fi. |% th Gribeauval: open bateau, oak…….....00000sse0 36°3| 598 | 45,044] 8,044 | 37,000 | 27,750 | 22°8 |

1,215 | 840 | 15°6 | ° 35,568 Austrian: open, wooden, 1799. ...<.....sse0ee 27:0 | 354 | 22,123] 3,332 | 18,791 | 14,098 | 16°6 849} 560 |} 11-4) 18,924 Aust.-Birago: open, wooden; two pieces....., 28°0 | 803 | 18,907 | 3,249 | 15,658 11,744 | 21°7| 542} 560 | 9°38) 20,181 2 se ed 39°4| 445 | 27,791| 3,884 | 23,907 | 17,930 |21°7| 827] 560] 9:3] 20,181 5 , iron; two pieces .....644 28-0| 353 | 22,090| 3,698 | 18,392 | 13,794 | 21°7] 636} 560 | 9:3] 20,181 oF - ‘ime, TNE cugseertoeee 39°4| 530 | 83,135| 4,501 | 28,634 | 21,476 | 21:7 991 | 560 |] 9°38] 20,181 French: open, wooden; reserve.....ssoressees 30°9] 325 | 20,286] 3,608 | 16,678 | 12,509 | 19°7 685 | 560 | 10°5 | 20,685 rt ‘ y» advanced guard..... 19°7| 156 | 9,734| 1,506 | 8,228| 6,171|16-4| 376] 560 | 9°3| 15,252 np * rr MIA ieee Ge aneee eves 30°9| 321 | 20,065 | 3,158 | 16,912 | 12,684 | 19°7 644 | 560 | 9°8| 19,306 Prussian: open, wooden; open order..... 23°7| 164 | 10,226] 2,393 | 7,838] 5,875|/15°3) 384] 560) 9°9| 15,147 . - " i a 93°71 164 | 10,226] 2,213 | 8,013] 6,010|11°2| 535] 560 | 9:9] 11,088 5D OF ION OPO UME) ...6..c0n0+00e 24°7| 214 | 18,385] 2,209 | 11,176] 8,882|15°3| 561) 560 | 9°9 15,147 se va yy, CLOBRUOTUE 55 .5-s.0058 24°7| 214 | 13,885] 2,029 | 11,356] 8,517/11:2| 759] 560 | 9:9} 11,088 Italian: open, wooden; one piece.....0..00 19°6| 283 |17,660| 3,582 | 14,078 | 10,559 | 26°3| 402] 560 | 9°8 25,774 ; am 1, two pieces.....<u>...</u>-] 89°2| 565 | 35,320] 4,572 | 80,748 | 28,061 | 26°3| 878] 560 | 98) 25,774 9 miodifiedsseONO POCO . .aus…cdwaewaeasenss 24°6| 325 | 20,290] 3,401 | 16,889 | 12,669 | 23°0 551 | 560 | 9°8| 22,540 % tWO Pieces… sescesesesseeees 49°2| 649 | 40,580! 4,489 | 36,091 | 27,068 | 23-0 | 1,178 | 560 | 9°8| 22,540 oo { open, canvas on] open order….. 21:0} 209 13,042 | 2,355 | 10,687] 8,015 16°6 493 | 560 | 10°4] 17,264 an: wooden framework ; § close order…..|21°0| 209 | 13,042] 2,083 | 10,959] 8,219|11°7) 705) 560 | 10-4} 12,168 Belgian: open, irom; one pieCe…….....00.eeeees 24°8| 297 | 18,584] 3,386 | 15,248 | 11,436 | 19°7 580 | 560 | 9°5|] 18,715 e 5 i TMONPIORBSA:«csarewaaensas« 49°2) 595 | 37,168! 4,548 | 32,620 | 24,465 | 19°7 | 1,244 | 560 9°5| 18,715 ii ‘ ‘ india-rubber, three) open order..| 20°0 1380 8,125 |) 1,980 6,145 | 5,530 18°0 307} 580 | 11:0] 19,800 pee cylinders connected close order..| 20°0| 130 | 8,125] 1,824} 6,301] 5,761/14°7] 393] 560 |11°0| 18,870

English Pontoons.

Peninsular Qpeus tiny; WESENVElsnsse.----- seme 18°9|} 209 |13,092| 2,874 | 10,718] 8,089|16°8| 477] 560 | 10°0 16,800 equipment: » 9, advanced guard….. THA |] ~ 0) 7,520] 1,654 | 5,866| 4,400|14:0] 314] 560 | 9°0/ 12,600 Pasley: closed demi-canoe; copper…….....0s 25:0] 141 8,781 | 2,103 | 6,678| 6,010|}12°5} 481] 560 | 10°0 12,500 Blanshard: cylinder, tin ; open order……..... 2225) lO 6,785 | 1,600 | 5,185} 4,667|12°5| 373| 560 |10°0| 12,500 ” yy gg CLOSE OTe… .....000 22‘5| 109 | 6,785| 1,408 | 5,377| 4,889| 83] 581] 560/100; 8,300 bf a », infantry pattern….| 15°5 26 1,640 340 | 1,300] 1,170] 5:3) 220) 280] 7°0 3,710 Fowke : open, collapsible, canvas; open order.| 22°0| 134 8,460 | 1,246 | 7,214] 5,411 }10°0| 541) 560 | 10°0 10,000 Forbes: closed, spherangular, tin; open order..| 24°2| 128 7,977 | 1,689 | 6,288] 5,659|11°0| 514) 560 |410°0| 11,000 Blood : open, wooden; general…….....ssseseees 21°6| 280 | 17,500) 2,300 | 15,200; 13,350|15°0| 890} 560 | 10°0 15,000

In the English and French equipment the pontoons were originally made of two sizes, the smaller and lighter for the ‘‘advanced guard,” the larger and heavier for the “reserve”; in both equipments the same size pontoon is now adopted for general requirements, the superstructure being strengthened when necessary for very heavy weights. The Austrian and Italian pontoons are made in three pieces, two with bows and a middle piece without; not less than two pieces are ordinarily employed, and the third is introduced when great supporting power is required, but in all cases a constant interval is maintained between the pontoons. On the

other hand in the Prussian, Russian, Dutch, and American and in the English Blaushard equipments greater supporting power is obtained not by increasing the number of supports but by diminish- ing the central interval between the pontoons. Within certain limits it does not matter whether the buoyancy is made up of a large number of small or a small number of large vessels, so long as the water-way is not unduly contracted and the obstruction offered to a swift current dangerously increased ; but it is to be remembered that pontoon bridges have failed as frequently from being washed away as from insufficient buoyancy. Mik oo

On comparing the ‘available buoyancy” with the ** oreatest possible load at 100 tb per foot superticial of roadway ” for each of the bridge equipments in the preceding table, it will be seen that very few of the bridges are really capable of carrying the maximuin load they may be called on to bear. Strictly speaking the roadway superficies should in all instances be proportioned to the buoyancy of the pontoon, or, as the central interval between the pontoons cannot be reduced below certain limits, the width of the roadway should be proportioned to the buoyancy; in other words the ‘¢chesses” or planks which form the roadway should be made of a shorter length for a bridge which is designed for light traffic than for one which is designed for heavy traffic. The employment of chesses of different lengths for the pontoon equipment of an ariny would, however, be very inconvenient and troublesome, and this has led to the adoption of a constant breadth of roadway, on the under- standing that the traffic will always be controlled by the officer in charge of the bridge. rf ‘ :

The latest form of pontoon for the English army is one with which the name of Colonel Blood, R.E., is mainly associated. Its powers are given in the lowest line of the preceding table. It is an open bateau with decked ends and sides partly decked where the rowlock blocks are fixed. It consists of six sets of framed ribs con- nected by a deep kelson, two side streaks, and three bottom streaks. The sides and bottom are of thin yellow pine with canvas secured to both surfaces by india-rubber solution, and coated outside with marine glue. The central interval betwecn the pontoons in forming a bridge is invariably maintained at 15 feet ; for the support of the roadway five baulks are ordinarily employed, but mune for the passage of siege artillery and the heaviest loads; they fit on to saddles resting on central saddle beams. The pontoons are not immersed to within 1 foot of the tops of their “ coamings” when carrying ordinary loads, as of infantry in marching ordcr “in fours ” crowded at a check, or the 16-pounder gun, which weighs 4800 fb ; nor are they immersed to within 6 inches when carrying extraor- dinary loads, such as disorganized infantry, or the 64-pounder gun weighing 11,100 tb. In designing this pontoon the chief points attended to were—(1) improvement in power of support, (2) simpli- fication in bridge construction, (3) reduction of weight in transport, and (4) adaptation for use singly as boats for ferrying purposcs. One pontoon with the superstructure

for a single bay constitutes a load for one waggon, with a total weight belind horses of about 4500 Ib.

For the British army in India the standard pontoon for many years was the Pasley ; it was seldom used, however, for boats could almost always be procured on the spot in sufficient numbers wherever a floating bridge had to be constructed. Of late years an equipment has been prepared for the Indian army of demi-poutoons, similar to the Blood pontoon cut in half, and thercfore more mobile ; each has a bow and a square stern, and they are joined at the sterns when required to form a ‘“‘pier”; they are fitted with movable covers and can therefore be used in much rougher water than pontoons of the home pattern, and their power of support and breadth of roadway are the same.

For the British army there is a light form of the Blanshard pontoon suitable for infantry uncrowded, guns unlimbered, and cavalry insingle file. The Berthon collapsible boat, for infantry in single file, is also employed ; when open it is 9 feet long and 4 feet wide ; it weighs 109 Ib with a pair of oars and a removable thwart or seat (to enable it to be used as a boat), and can be slung on to a bamboo and carried by two men ; the superstructure for one bay weighs 97 Ib, and is also carried by two men ; the width of roadway is 18 inches; twelve boats are required to bridge a stream 100 feet in width.

The india-rubber pontoon does not appear to have been generally employed even in America, where it was invented. The engineer officers with the army of the Potomac, after full experience of the india-rubber pontoon and countless other inventions of American genius, adopted the French equipment, which they found ‘‘ most excellent, useful, and reliable for all military purposes.” The Russians in crossing the Danube in their war with Turkey in 1878 employed the Austrian equipment.

Authorities.—Colonel Lovell, R.E., Prof. Papers, Royal Engineers, vol. xii. 1863 ; Brig.-Gen. Culium, U.S.A. Engineers, System of Military Bridges in use by the United States Army, 1863; Gen. Barnard, U.S.A., Report on Army of

Potomac, 1863 ; Lord Wolseley, Pocket-Book for Field Service, 1882; Military Bridges, Chatham, 1879. (GES ie)

PONTOPPIDAN, Erik (1698-1764), a learned Danish author, was born at Aarhuus on August 24, 1698, and studied divinity at the university of Copenhagen. On finishing his education he was appointed travelling tutor to several young noblemen in succession, and in 1735 he became one of the chaplains of the king. In 1738 he was made professor extraordinarius of theology at Copenhagen,

and in 1747 bishop of Bergen, Norway, where he died on Deceniber 20, 1764.

| principal surviving evidences of his powers.

and in method of painting.

His principal works are —Theatrum Danizw veteris et modernx (4to, 1730), a description of the geography, natural history, antiquities, &c., of Denmark; Gesta et Vestigia Danorum extra Daniam (2 vols. 8vo, 1740), of which laborious work it is enough to remark that it was written before the rise of the niodern historical school; Annales Heelestz Danice (4 vols. 4to); Marmora Danica Seleetiora (2 vols. fol., 1739-41); Glossaritwm Norvegicum (1749); Det forste Forsig paa Norges naturlige Historie (4to, 1752-54; Eng. trans., Natural History of Norway, 1755), contain- ing curious accounts, often referred to, of the Kraaken, sca-serpent, aud the like; Origenes Hafnienses (1760). His Danske Atlas (7 vols. 4to) was mostly posthumous.

PONTORMO, Jacoro pa (1494-1557), whose family name was CARUCCI, a painter of the Florentine school, was born at Pontormo in 1494, son of a painter of ordinary ability, was apprenticed to Leonardo da Vinci, and after- wards took lessons from Pier di Cosimo. At the age of eighteen he became a journeyman to Andrea del Sarto, and was remarked as a young man of exceptional accomplish- ment and promise. Later on, but still in early youth, he executed, in continuation of Andrea’s labours, the Visita- tion, in the cloister of the Servi in Florence—one of the The inost extensive series of works which he ever undertook was a set of frescos in the church of 8. Lorenzo, Florence, from the Creation of Man to the Deluge, closing with

the Last Judgment. By this time, towards 1546, he had fallen under the dangerous spell of Michelangelo's colossal genius and superhuman style; and Pontormo, after working on at the frescos for eleven years, left them incomplete, and the object of general disappointment and disparagement. They were finished by his leading pupil Angelo Bronzino, but have long since vanished under whitewash. Among the best works of Pontormo are his portraits, which include the likenesses of various members of the Medici family; they are vigorous, animated, and highly finished. He was fond of new and odd experiments both in style of art From Da Vinci he caught one of the marked physiognomic traits of his visages, smiles and dimples. At one time he took to direct imitation or reproduction of Albert Diirer, and executed a series of paintings founded on the Passion subjects of the German master, not only in composition, but even in such peculi- arities as the treatment of draperies, &c. Italian critics, both contemporary and of later date, have naturally regarded this as a very perverse aberration. Pontormo died of dropsy on 2d January 1557, mortified at the ill success of his frescos in 8. Lorenzo; he was buried below his work in the Servi. He was a man of solitary self- neglectful habits, a slow worker, receiving comparatively little aid from scholars, indifferent to gain or distin- guished patronage, and haunted by an instinctive horror of death.

PONTUS was the name given in ancient times to an extensive tract of country in the north-east of Asia Minor, bordering on Armenia and Colchis (see vol. xv. Plate IT.). It was not, like most of the divisions of Asia, a national appellation, but a purely territorial one, derived from its proximity to the Euxine, often called simply Pontus by the Greeks. Originally it formed part of the extensive region of Cappadocia, which in early ages extended from the borders of Cilicia to the Euxine; but afterwards it came to be divided into two satrapies or governments, of which the northernmost came to be distinguished as ‘‘ Cappadocia on the Pontus,” and thence simply as “Pontus.” The term is not, however, found either in Herodotus or Xenophon, though the latter traversed a considerable part of the region, and it is probable that it did not come into general use until after the time of Alexander the Great. Under the Persian empire the province continued to be governed by a satrap, nominally subject to the great king, but apparently enjoying virtual independence, as no

mention occurs in Xenophon of the Persian authorities in | this part of Asia. The first of these local satraps who assumed the title of king was Ariobarzanes, about the beginning of the 4th century B.c., who was reckoned the founder of the dynasty ; but its history as an independent monarchy really begins with Mithradates IL, who com- menced his reign in 337 B.c. From this time Pontus con- tinued to be ruled by a succession of kings of the saine dynasty, mostly bearing the name of Mithradates, whose independence was respected by the Macedonian sovereigns of Asia, aud who, were able gradually to extend their power along the shores of the Euxine. The capture of the important city of Sinope by Pharnaces I. (about 183 B.c.) led to the extension of their frontier to that of Bithynia ; while under Mithradates VI., commonly known as the Great, their dominion for a time comprised a large part of Asia Minor. The history of the reign of that monarch and his wars with the Romans will be found uuder the heading Mirnrapates. After his final defeat by Pompey in 65 B.c., Pontus was again confined within its original limits, but was united with Bithynia as a Roman province, and this union generally continued to subsist, though not without interruption, under the Roman empire. A portion of the original dominion of the kings of Pontus was, however, separated from the rest by Antony in 36 B.c., and placed under the government of a Greek rhetorician named Polemon, whose descendants continued to rule it till the reign of Nero, when it was finally annexed to the Roman empire (63 a.p.). Hence this part of the country came to be known as Pontus Polemoniacus, by which epithet it was still distinguished as a Roman province. The interior district in the south-west, ad- joining Galatia, hence came to be known as Pontus Galaticus.

Pontus, in the proper sense of the term, as defined by Strabo, who was himself a native of the country, was bounded by the river Halys on the west, and by Colchis and the Lesser Armenia on the east. Its exact frontier in this direction is not specified, but it may be taken as extending as far as the mouth of the river Acampsis. The region thus limited may be considered as divided into two portions, differing much in their physical characters, The western half presents considerable plains and upland tracts in the interior, stretching away till they join the still more extensive uplands of Cappadocia

and Galatia. Besides the great river Halys that forms its boundary on the west, this region is traversed by tie river Iris, and its tributary the Lycus, both of which have their rise in the highlands on the frontiers of Armenia, and are very con- siderable streams, flowing through fertile valleys. The Thermodon, which enters the Euxine a little to the east of the Iris, is a much less important stream, though cele- brated from its connexion with the fable of the Amazons. On the other hand the eastern portion of Pontus, between Armenia and the Euxine, is throughout a very rugged and mountainous country, furrowed by deep valleys descending from the inland range of mountains, known to the ancients as Paryadres, which has a direction nearly parallel to the sca-coast, and is continued to the frontiers of Colchis under the name of Scydises and various other appellations. These mountains have in all ages been almost inaccessible, and even in the time of Strabo were inhabited by wild tribes who had never been really reduced to subjection by any government. But the coast from Trebizond westward is one of the most beautiful parts of Asia Minor, and is justly extolled by Strabo for its wonderful productiveness in fruits of every description.

The population of the greater part of Pontus was undoubtedly of the same race with that of Cappadocia, of which it originally formed a part, and was therefore clearly

of Semitic origin.! Both nations were frequently comprised by the Greeks under the term Leucosyri or White Syrians. But the rugged mountain districts in the north-east, towards the frontiers of Colchis and Armenia, were occupied by a number of semi-barbarous tribes, of whose etlinical relations we are wholly ignorant. Such were the Chaldzeans or Chalybes (identified by the Greeks with the people of that name mentioned by Homer), the Tibareni, the Mosynceci, and the Macrones. Some light is thrown on the manners and condition of these people by Xenophon, who traversed their country on his march from Trapezus to Cotyora (Anab., v.) but we have otherwise hardly any information concerning them.

The sea-coast of Pontus, like the rest of the south shore of the Euxine, was from an early period studded with Greek colonies, most of them of Milesian origin, though in many cases deriving their settlement directly from Sinope,

itself a colony of Miletus. Next to that city, between the mouth of the Halys and that of the Iris, stood Amisus, originally a colony direct from Miletus, but which subsequently received a body of Athenian settlers. It was one of the most flourishing of the Greek colonies on this coast, and is still a considerable town under the name of Samsun. Proceeding eastward from thence, we find Side, called in later times Polemonium ; Cotyora, a colony of Sinope, where Xenophon embarked with the ten thousand Greeks; Cerasus, afterwards named Pharnacia; and Trapezus, also a colony of Sinope, which was a flourishing and important town in the days of Xenophon, but did not attain till a later period to the paramount position which it occupied under the Roman and Byzantine empire, and which it still retains under the name of TREBIZOND (@.v.).

But, besides these Greek settlements, there were in the interior of Pontus several cities of considerable importance, which were of native origin, though they had gradually received a certain amount of Greek culture. The principal

_of these were Amasia, on the river Iris, the birth-place of

Strabo, which was made the capital of his kingdom by Mithradates the Great, but had previously been the burial-place of the earlier kings, whose tombs are still extant, and have been described by Hamilton and other travellers; Comana, higher up the valley of the same river, which, like the place of the same name in Cappadocia, was consecrated to a native goddess named Ma, identified by Strabo with the Greek Enyo, and derived great cele- brity from its sacred character, having a large fixed popu- lation under the direct government of the priests, besides being the resort of thousands of pilgrims; Zela, nearer the frontier of Galatia, which was in like manner conse- crated to a goddess named Anaitis; and Cabira, in the valley of the Lycus, afterwards called Neocesarea, a name still retained in the abbreviated form of the modern Niksar. Several smaller towns are mentioned by Strabo as giving name to the surrounding districts, of which he has left us the names of not less than fifteen; but these obscure appellations of local divisions are in themselves of little interest, and for the most part not mentioned by any other writer. (z. H. B. PONTUS DE TYARD (c. 1521-1605), one of the famous Pleiade who helped to reform

French literature in the 16th century, was the highest in rank and the most affluent in fortune of the seven. He was indeed in some sort an anticipator of Ronsard and Du Bellay, for lis Erreurs Amoureuses preceded their work. He was seigneur of Bissy in Burgundy, was born at the seignorial house in

1 Such at least was the general opinion of Greek writers. The Semitic or Aramezan origin of the Cappadocians has, whoever, in modern times been questioned by Noéldeke and other authorities on Semitic ethnology.

or about 1521, and died at a great age at Bragny on the Sadne, another seat of his, on September 25, 1605. He was thus the last survivor as well as one of the eldest of the group. His early poems, the Lrreurs Amoureuses, originally published in 1549, were augmented with other works in successive editions till 1573. Pontus de Tyard published Discowrs Philosophiques in 1587, and appears to have been a man of extensive knowledge and just thouglit. He was, moreover, a courtier and official of some standing for many years, and, entering the church, was made count-bishop of Chalon-sur-Saéne. In this high position he bore a character for political and religious moderation. On the whole his poetry is inferior to that of his com- panions, but he was one of the first to write sonnets in French (the actual priority belongs to Mellin de St Gelais) ; and one of these, the beautiful Sonnet to Sleep (it has been noted that the poetical name of his mistress in the Erreurs is, oddly enough, Pasithea, the name of the nymph beloved classically by the god of sleep), is a very notable and famous piece. It is also said that Pontus de Tyard introduced the sestine into France, or rather reintroduced it, for it is originally a Provengal invention.

PONTYPOOL, a town and urban sanitary district of Monmouthshire, England, situated on an acclivity above the river Avon Lwyd, on the Monmouthshire Canal, and on the Great-Western and Monmouthshire Railways, 8 miles north of Newport. The town-hall, in the Doric style, dates from 1856, the market-house from 1846, and the Baptist theological college from 1856. At one period Pontypool was famed for its japanned goods, invented by Thomas Allwood, a native of Northampton, who settled in the town in the reign of Charles IJ., but the manu- facture has long been transferred altogether to other towns. The present prosperity of Pontypool is

due to its situation on the edge of the great Pembrokeshire coal and iron basin. The earliest record of trade in iron is in 1588, but it was developed chiefly in the beginning of the 18th century by the Hanburys, the pro- prietors of Pontypool Park. The town possesses large forges and iron-mills for the manufacture of iron-work and tin-plate. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 800 acres) in 1871 was 4834, and in 1881 it was 5244.

PONTYPRIDD, sometimes also called NEwBRIDGE, a market town of Glamorganshire, Wales, situated on the Taff at its junction with the Rhondda, and on the Glamorganshire Canal, 12 miles north-north-west from Cardiff and 12 south from Merthyr-Tydfil. It receives its name from a remarkable bridge of one arch spanning the Taff, erected by William Edwards, a self-taught mason. The bridge is a perfect segment of a circle, the chord being 140 feet, and the height at low water 36 feet. A three-arched bridge was erected close to it in 1857. The principal buildings are the court-house, St Catherine's church, the masonic hall, and the town-hall. Near the town is a far-famed rocking stone 9} tons in weight, sur- rounded by so-called Druidical remains. In the beginning of the century Pontypridd was an insignificant village, and it owes its progress chiefly to the coal and iron in the neighbourhood. It possesses anchor, chain, and cable works, chemical works, and iron and brass foundries. The population in 1881 was 12,317.

PONZA, the principal island of a small volcanic group, the Pontian, Pontine, or Pontinian Islands (Insule Pontiz, Lsole Ponze), which lie 20 miles off the Circeian pro- montory (Monte Circello), the northern end of the Gulf of Gaeta, on the west coast of Italy. The two smaller islands are Palmarola (ancient Palmaria) and Zannone (Simonia), neither inhabited. Ponza is 5 miles long and very irregular in outline ; its soil is fertile; and in 1881 it had

3828 inhabitants. The old fortress is used as a penal establishment. ;

A Roman colony with Latin rights was settled on Pontia in 318 n.c. Under the empire the island was a place of banishment for political offenders. Nero, the eldest son of Germanicus, here perished by command of Tiberius;

here the sisters of Caligula were confined; and here, or in Palmaria, Pope Sylverius died. A Benedictine monastery was built on Ponza, and in 1572 Cardinal Farnese, as commendatory of the monastery, claimed to exercise lordship over the island. From the duke of Parma, who obtained possession in 1588, the feudal authority passed with Elizabeth to Philip V. of Spain. Ferdinand IV. attracted the inhabitants of Torre del Greco to the island by gifts of land and money. During the first French empire it was occupied and fortified by the English and Sicilian forces.

See Trieoli, Monografia per le isole del gruppo Ponztano, Naples, 1855; Mattel, L' Archipelago Ponziano, Naples, 1857; and Doelter, Vorldufige Mitthetlung tiber den geol. Bau der Pontinischen Insein, Vienna, 1875.

POOLE, a market town, municipal borough, county in itself, and seaport of Dorsetshire, on the south coast of England, is picturesquely situated on a peninsula between Holes Bay and Poole Harbour, 30 miles east from Dorchester and 120 south-west of London. The churches are modern, and possess no features of special interest. Among the principal public buildings are the town-house, 1721; the guild-hall, formerly the market-house, 1761; the old town-hall, built in 1572; the custom-house ; and the mechanics' institute. On Brownsea Island in the middle of Poole Harbour is a small castle erected as a fortress by Elizabeth and strengthened by Charles I. At low water Poole Harbour is entirely emptied except a narrow channel, but at full tide the water covers an area about 7 miles long by about 43 broad. The quays lincd with warehouses are about one mile in length, and can be approached by vessels of very large tonnage. There is a large general trade with the British colonies and the United States, and an important coasting trade, especially in corn to London, and Purbeck clay to the Staffordshire potteries. In 1883 the number of vessels that entered the harbour was 933 of 81,003 tons, the number that cleared 874 of 77,948 tons. Some shipbuilding is carried on, and there are manufactures of cordage, netting, and sail- cloth. The town also possesses large potteries, decorative tile works, iron-foundries, engineering works, agricultural im- plement works, and flour-mills. The area of the borough is 5111 acres, with a population in 1871 of 10,129, and in 1881 of 12,310 (5820 males and 6490 females).

Poole derives its name from being nearly surrounded by a sheet of water. There was a Roman road between it and Wimbourne. It is not mentioned in Domesday, being included in Canford, but it enjoyed ccrtain immunities before 1248, when it received a charter from William Longsword. Iu the reign of Edward III. it supplied four ships and 94 men for the siege of Calais. Much of its succeeding prosperity was due to the presence of Spanish merchants, and after the outbreak of war with Spain in the reign of Elizabethits trade for a time declined. Its charter was extended by Elizabeth, who reincorporated it, and erected it into a county in itself. It has a sheriff clected annually, and a separate court of quarter sessions. It is divided into two wards, and is governed by a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen councillors. It returned two members to parliament as early as the reign of Edward III., but one only from 1868 to 1885.

See Hutchins, History of Poole, 1788; Sydenham, Jlistory of Poole, 1839; Hutchins, [Zistory of Dorset, 3d ed.

POOLE, MartrHew (1624-1679), author of a learned though now almost wholly antiquated Synopsis Criticorum Biblicorum, was born at York in 1624, was educated at Emmanuel College, Cambridge, and from 1648 till the passing of the Act of Uniformity held the rectory of St Mary le Querne, London. Subsequent troubles led to his withdrawal to Holland. He died at Amsterdam in 1679.

Besides the work with which his name is principally associated (Synopsis Criticorum Biblicorum, 5 vols. fol., 1669-76), he wrote Annotations on the Holy Bible, as far as to Isa. lviii.; the work was subsequently completed by several of his Nonconformist brethren,

and published in 2 vols. fol. in 1688. He was also the author of nunierous controversial tracts.

POO—P OO

POOLE, Paut Fatconrr (1806-1879), an eminent English painter, was born at Bristol in 1806. He was self-taught in the strictest sense, and to this deficiency in art training must be ascribed the imperfect drawing of the human figure which is to be observed in most of his work. But, in spite of

this drawback, his fine feeling for colour, his poetic sympathy, and his dramatic power have gained for him a high position among British artists. Gifted with an imagination of a high order, he boldly attempted lofty historical themes, and, if the result is not always equal to the vigour of his conception, we can easily see that the shortcoming was due to his imperfect education in art. His pictures show him to belong to that com- paratively small class of English painters who are keenly sensitive to the influence of beauty and of passion, rising on occasion to ambitious flights of fancy, and dominated by strong dramatic impulse. A keen observer of nature, but generally viewing it in a broad comprehensive aspect, he was truly a poet-painter, using the effects of a summer sky or of angry clouds to harmonize with the subject of his picture and to enforce its story. In his early days Poole worked along with T. Danby, and it is easy to trace the bond of sympathy between the two painters.

Poole's life was the simple uneventful record of the career of the artist. He exhibited his first work in the Royal Academy at the age of twenty-five, the subject being the Well—a scene in Naples. There was an interval of seven years before he again exhibited his Farewell, Farewell, in 1837, which was followed by the Emigrant's Departure, Hermann and Dorothea, and By the Waters of Babylon. This last picture attracted much attention from the fine poetic imagination which it dis- played. In 1843 his position was made secure by his Solomon Eagle, and by his success in the Cartoon Exhibi- tion, in which he received from the Fine Art Commis- sioners a prize of £300 sterling. After his exhibition of the Surrender of Syon House he was elected an Asso- ciate of the Royal Academy in 1846, and was made an Academician in 1861. In 1855 he received a medal of the third class at the Paris Universal Exhibition. His enthusiasm for his art was rewarded by success in life, though like many artists he passed through much hard- ship in his early days. He died in 1879, in his house at Hampstead, in his seventy-third year. In person he was tall and well built, with a lofty forehead, grey eyes, and short beard. The portrait sketch by Frank Holl, R.A., gives a very good idea of him in his last days,— a shy man but genial to his friends, fond of conversation and well read, especially in his favourites Shakespeare, Shelley, Spencer, and Chaucer, who were the sources of inspiration of many of his works.

Poole’s subjects easily divide themselves into two orders—one, without doubt the earlier, idyllic, the other dramatic. Of the former his May Day is a typical example. A rustic beauty crossing a brook, or resting on a hill side under bushes flecked with the light and shade of a bright sun and with cirrus clouds floating in a blue sky, is the frequent motive of these works, which are full of simple enjoyment of a beautiful country life. But in his later style he rises to loftier subjects and treats them powerfully. Of both styles there were excellent examples to be seen in the small collec- tion of his works shown at Burlington House in the Winter Exhibi- tion of 1883-84. These collected pictures recalled the attention of the public to a painter who had suffered neglcet for some years, alike from his own deficiencies as a draughtsman and also from a want of sympathy with the poetical character of his paintings, which never could lave been popular with the ordinary public. His reputation will stand or fall by the criticism of this gathering of his pictures, small though it was. There was to be seen one of his early dramatic pictures, painted in 1848, Solomon Eagle exhorting the People to Repentance during the Plague of 1665, terrible in its ghastly foree. Though exaggerated in the expression of horror and agony, weak in drawing, and defective in colour, it is clearly the

work of a powerful imagination. To this class belong also the Messenger announcing to Job the Irruption of the Sabeans and the

Slanghter of the Servants (exhibited in 1850), and Robert, Duke of Normandy and Arletta (1848). Finer examples of his more mature power in this direction are to be found in his Prodigal Son, painted in 1869 ; the Eseape of Glaucus and Ione with the blind girl Nydia from Pompeii (1860); and Cunstaunce sent adrift by the Constable of Alla, King of Northumberland, painted in 1868. Here Poole rises to a lofty height, and succeeds fully in realizing the impres- sion he aims at. ‘The expression of anguish and of resignation at Cunstaunce clasps her child to her bosom and turns her moon-lit face to heaven is rendered with great power, while the effect is heightened by the stormy sky, the dark rocks, and the angry sea.

More peaceful than these are the Song of Troubadours (painted 1854) and the Goths in Italy (1851), the latter an important his torical work of great

power and beauty. It represents the easy luxurious insolence of the barbarian conquerors, lying stretched on the grass in the gardens of Lucullus and Cicero, while the captive daughters of proud senators wait on them and offer wine in golden goblets. In the background is a circular temple overhanging the sea, while overhead is a beautiful sky—altogether a bold feat to attempt, yet Poole has succeeded in giving a great representation of a striking page in history.

Of a less lofty strain, but still more beautiful in its workmanship, is the Seventh Day of the Decameron, painted in 1857. In this picture Poole rises to his full height as a colorist. “In the fore- ground is Philomena, seated on the shore of a lake surrounded by high mountains, playing on a harp; eleven figures are grouped round her in various positions,” as described in the catalogue. The chief beauty of this work lies in its fine colour and quiet repose. The amphitheatre of rocky mountains reflected in the lake gives us a splendid example of Poole’s power in landscape, which is large and broad instyle. His treatment corresponded with his choice of sub- ject. In his pastorals he is soft and tender, as in the Mountain Path (1853), the Water-Cress Gatherers (1870), the Shepston Maiden (1872). But when he turns to the grander and more sublime views of nature his work is bold and vigorous. Fine examples of this style may be seen in the Vision of Ezekiel of the National Gallery, Solitude (1876), the Entrance to the Cave of Mammon (1875), the Dragon’s Cavern (1877), and perhaps best of all in the Lion in the Path (1873), a great representation of moun- tain and cloud form. This wild rocky landscape had a great fascination for him; every aspect of nature which showed the action of mighty force attracted him; hence his love of motytain sides scarred by ravines, and of trees torn and twisted by hurricanes. Caverns are a frequent thenie; indeed he used to say that he had been haunted all his life by them, and that he would travel far to see 2 new one.

POONA, a district in the Deccan, Bombay, situated

“between 17° 54’ and 19° 23’ N. lat. and 73° 24’ and

75° 13’ E. long. It has an area of 5347 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by the districts of Nasik and Ahmednagar, on the E. by those of Ahmednagar and Sholapur, on the S. by the Nira river, separating it from

Satara and Phaltan, and on the W. by the Bhor state and Sahyadri Hills. ‘Towards the west the country is extremely undulating, and numerous spurs from the hills enter the district. To the east it opens out into plains ; but a considerable area is now being put under forest. Poona is watered by many streams which, rising in the Sahyadri range, flow eastwards until they join the Bhima, a river which intersects the district from north to south. The Great Indian Peninsula Railway runs through it, and affords an outlet for its produce through the Bhor Ghat to Bombay; another railway is about to be com- menced which will put the district into communication with the southern Mahratta country. The Khadakvasla Canal, about 10 miles south-west of Poona, which it supplies with water, is one of its most important works. Although the district is not rich in minerals, trap rock suitable for road-making and stone for building pur- poses are found. Only in the west are wild animals met with, chiefly tigers, leopards, bears, and sambhar deer. The climate is dry and invigorating; the average annual rainfall is about 30 inches.

The population of the district in 1881 was 900,621 (455,101 males and 445,520 females), of whom 834,843 were Hindus, 42,036 Mohammedans, 1574 Parsis, 10,880 Jains, 9500 Christians, and 1788 of other religions. The only towns with a population cxceed- ing 10,000 are Poona (q.v.), Poona eantonment (30,129), and

Juunar (10,373).

Agriculture supports about half the population. Of a total area

of Government culturable land of 1,924,630 acres, 1,775,583 were eultivated during 1882-83. Of these 181,395 acres were fallow land and occupied waste, leaving 1,594,188 acres under actual cultivation, of which 28,035 were twice cropped. The ehief produets are eereals (ehiefly jowari and bajri) and pulse, and the principal manufaetures of the distriet are silk robes, coarse cotton cloth, and blankets; its brass and silver work is mueh admired. ‘The gross revenue in 1882-83 was £180,736, of whieh the land tax yielded £111,740, stamps £18,790, and excise £31,160. ; History.—The district passed from the last Hindu dynasty which reigned at Deogiri to the

Mohammedans between 1294 and 1312, and under the Bahmani kings the Ghat country was thoroughly subdued. On the disruption of the Bahmani kingdom alter the revolt of the governors of the provinees, the district fell to the share of the Ahmednagar kings and from them it passed to the Moguls, when the Nizamshahi dynasty finally eame to an end in 1637. The country north of the Bhima, ineluding Junnar, was annexed to the Mogul territory, and that south of it was made over to Bijapur. The power of the latter was, however, declining, and gave an opportunity to the Mahratta ehiefs to unite and assert themselves, and ended in their establishing a Mahratta kingdom at Satara. Intrigues atthe palaee led to the supremacy of the peshwas and the removal of the capital to Poona, where many stirring seenes in Mahratta history have been enacted. Holkar defeated the peshwa under its walls, and his flight to Bassein led to the treaty by which he put himself under British proteetion ; he was reinstated

in 1802, but, unable to maintain friendly relations, he attacked |

the British at Kirkee in 1817, and his kingdom passed from him.

POONA, the chief town of the above district, is situated in 18° 31’ N. lat. and 73° 55’ E. long., in a treeless plain about 2000 feet above the sea and overlooked by the Ghats, which rise 1000 feet above the plain. Its area is about 4 square miles, with a popylation in 1881 of 99,622 —males 50,814, females 48,808, The town stands on the right bank of the Muta river, and is about 80 miles south-east of Bombay. Until the year 1817, when it was taken by the British, the city was the residence of the peshwas of the Mahrattas.

POOR LAWS. Without embarking onan inquiry as to the causes of pauperism or the primary right of any persons to have their wants, however pressing, met by the state, it is sufficient to say that in Great Britain “there is no man so indigent or wretched but he may demand a supply sufficient for all the necessaries of life from the more opulent part of the community, by means of the several statutes enacted for the relief of the poor” (Blackstone). Moreover, apart from statute, by the common law of England the poor were sustainable “ by parsons, rectors of the church, and the parishioners, so that none of them die for default of sustenance” (Jfirror).

The great importance of the subject of relief of the poor is evinced, apart from other considerations, by the number of persons immediately affected, either as recipients of relief or as ratepayers, and by the sums expended in that relief. The number of paupers of all classes now in receipt of relief in England and Wales approaches 800,000, equi- valent to a thirty-fourth part of the entire population, and relieved at a yearly cost of considerably more than £8,000,000, representing a charge of between six and seven shillings per head of the estimated population.

Of existing legislation a statute of the beginning of the 17th century (43 Eliz. c. 2, 1601) is the earliest, under which, by parochial taxation, parish officers are directed to provide a stock of materials for “setting the poor on work” (that is to say, persons “married or unmarried having no means to maintain them [and that] use no ordinary and daily trade of life to get their living by ”), and further for setting to work their children; “and also competent sums of money for and towards the necessary relief of the lame, impotent, old, blind, and such others among them being poor and not able to work.” The same statute enacts “that the father and grandfather and the mother and grandmother and the children of every poor old, blind, lame, and impotent person, or other poor person not able to work, being of a sufficient

FOO={=P 60

ability, shall at their own charges relieve and maintain every such poor person.”

Although the statute of Elizabeth is spoken of as the Early principal foundation of existing legislation relating to the lesisla-

poor, it is an error to say that the relief of the poor ori-* ginated at that period. The common law of England has been already cited, and traces of poor laws, however far removed from a system, are found in all civilized states. An approximation to the principle may be discerned in the legislation of England at a very early period; and before the Norman Conquest laws of Athelstane, establishing a responsibility over households and landowners, although in- tended for good order and calculated to prevent the growth of vagabondage and violence, had also the effect of estab- lishing reciprocal

relations between the landless man and the landowner, between property and poverty, between the householder and the houseless,—casting upon one the duty of supervising the conduct and providing for the wants of the other, in some respects similar to the poor law of the present day. “The results of this legislation were like- wise, it may be presumed, not very dissimilar, for the improvident and the indolent would endeavour, with the smallest amount of labour, to obtain the largest amount of assistance from the householder who was liable for their support and responsible for their conduct, whilst the householder would as certainly endeavour to obtain the largest amount of labour in return for the cost and re- sponsibility to which he was subject.” Again, so long as serfdom and villenage prevailed, whether to be traced to the Norman Conquest or not, there could be no eall for any special provision for the destitute. “The persons who might, if free agents and in a destitute state, have been properly relieved out of a common stock, would as serfs or villeins have a claim on their masters, to whom they belonged, and who were bound to provide for them ” (Nichalls), As those old ties became more relaxed the change to freedom was accompanied by some evils, and led to a great increase of vagrancy; and from a period commencing before the close of the 14th century there was a stream of legislation on the subject. An Act of 12 Richard II., after providing for labour to pergons able to work (see LaBour and Lazpour Laws, vol. xiv. p. 167), enacts “that beggars impotent to serve shall abide in the cities and towns where they may be dwelling at the time of the proclamation of this statute, and, if the people of the cities and towns will not, or may not, suffice to find them, that these, the said beggars, shall draw them to other towns within the hundred, rape, or wapentake, or to the towns where they were born, within forty days after the proclama- tion made, and there shall continually abide during their lives.” This is the first enactment in which the impotent poor are directly named as a separate class, and on that aecount it has been mistakenly regarded as the origin of the English poor laws; but it makes no provision for their relief, and the chief characteristic of the statute is the fact of its having openly recognized the distinction between “ beggars able to labour” and “ beggars impotent to serve.” Passing over intermediate legislation, by an Act passed in 1530, “ directing how aged, poor, and impotent persons compelled to live by alms, shall be ordered, and how vagabonds and beggars shall be punished,” justices of the peace were re- quired to give licences under their seals to

such poor, aged, and impotent persons to beg within a certain precinct as they should think to have most need ; “and if any do beg out of his precinct he shall be set in the stocks two days and nights ; and if any beg without such licence he shall be whipped, or else be set in the stocks three days and three nights, with bread and water only. And persons being whole and mighty in body, and able to labour, who shall beg, or be vagrants and not able to account how they get

POO

their living, shall be whipped, and sworn to return to the place where they were born, or last dwelt by the space of three years, and there put themselves to labour” (22 Hen. PIE. cxd2):

Six years later an important and very interesting Act

was passed reciting that, although it had been ordained | that aged, poor, and impotent people should repair to the | hundred where they were born or had dwelt for three |

years before, no provision had been made how they should be ordered at their coming thither, nor how the hundred should be charged for their relief. It was therefore enacted that the mayors, sheriffs, constables, householders, and all other head officers of every city, shire, town, and

parish, at the repair and coming thither of such poor. creature should most charitably receive them, and all the | governors and ministers of every such place should succour, |

find, and keep them by way of voluntary and charitable

alms, as should be thought meet in their discretion, in |

such wise as none of the poor persons of very necessity should be compelled to go openly in begging, on pain of every parish making default forfeiting 20s.a month. The head officers and churchwardens, or two others of every parish in the realm, were required to gather and procure such voluntary and charitable alms of the good Christian people, by means of

boxes every Sunday, holiday, and other festival, in such good and discreet ways as the poor, impotent, lame, feeble, sick, and diseased people, being not able to work, may be provided, holpen, and relieved, so that in no wise none of them be suffered to go openly in begging, and such as be lusty may be kept in continual labour. Every preacher, parson, vicar, and curate, as well in their sermons, collections, bidding of the beads, as in time of confessions, and at the making of the wills or testaments of any' persons, at all times of the year shall exhort, move, stir, and provoke people to be liberal. Certain of the poor people were themselves appointed to collect and gather broken meats and fragments and the refuse drink of every householder in the parish, to be distributed equally among the poor at discretion. The overplus of collections in rich and wealthy parishes was distributable towards the sustentation of other poor parishes. The Act provided that, where the voluntary and unconstrained alms and charity, together with any moneys added or given from any monasteries or persons or bodies, _ proved insufficient, the officers and inhabitants should not incur the penalty nor be constrained to any contribution other than at their free will, provided that what was col- lected was justly distributed. Provision was made for duly accounting and for the punishmeut of embezzlement. Con- stables, churchwardens, and collectors of alms had, how- ever, allowance for their loss of time and their travelling expenses (27 Hen. VIII. c. 25).

A number of statutes were passed after the dissolution of the monasteries for further providing for the poor and impotent, who had increased in great numbers. Many of these statutes were specially directed against vagrancy, and have been referred to in the article already mentioned, as closely connected with compulsory labour.

At the commencement of the reign of Edward VI. (1547) a statute also affecting labourers and vagrants and dealing very harshly with them (see vol, xiv. p. 168), re- citing that there are many maimed and otherwise lamed, sore, aged, and impotent persons which, resorting together and making a number, do fill the streets or highways of divers cities, towns, markets, and fairs, who, if they were separated, might easily be nourished in the towns and places wherein they were born, or have been most abiding for

the space of three years, enacted that the mayor, con- stable, or other head officer of any city, town, or hundred

ba Ws 463

otherwise cannot be taken for vagabonds, which were born within the said city, town, or hundred, or have been most conversant there by the space of three years and now de- cayed, bestowed and provided for of tenantries, cottages, or other convenient houses to be lodged in, at the costs of the place, there to be relieved and cured by the devotion of good people, and suffer no others to remain and beg there, but shall convey them on horseback, cart, chariot, or other- wise to the next constable, and so from constable to ccn- stable, till they be brought to the place where they were born, or most, conversant as aforesaid ; provided that, if they were not so lame or impotent but that they might do some manner of work, work was to be provided either in common, or place them with such persons as would find them work for meat and drink. For the furtherance of the relicf of such as were in " unfeigned misery," the curate of every parish was required on every Sunday and holiday, after reading the gospel of the day, to make- (according to such talent as God hath given him) a godly and brief exhortation to his parishioners, moving and exciting them to remember the poor people, and the duty of Christian charity in reliev- ing of them which be their brethren in Christ, born in the . same parish, and needing their help. There was a proviso that all leprous and poor bedridden creatures were at liberty toremain in houses appointed for such persons, and for their better relief such persons were allowed to appoint one or two persons for any one such house to gather the alms of all inhabitants within the compass of four miles (1 Edw. VL c. 3). This statute, however, was of bricf duration.

Subsequently, in the same reign, further legislation took place, having for its main object the restraint of vagrancy, providing that every vagabond and beggar being born in any other nation or country should be conveyed from place to place, or to the place or borders next adjoining to his native country or to the nearest port if there was a sea between, there to be kept of the inhabitants until they could be conveyed over, and then at the cost of the in- habitants of the port, if the vagrants had not themselves wherewith to defray the cost. The same statute made provision for children, reciting that many

men and women going begging, impotent and lame, and some able enough to labour, carried children about with them, which, being once brought up in idleness, would hardly be brought after- wards to any good kind of labour or service, and author- izing any person to take such child between the ages of five and fourteen to be brought up in any honest labour and occupation till such child, if a woman, attained tho age of fifteen or was married, and if a man child until eighteen, if the master so long lived (3 & 4 Edw. VI. c. 16).

Two years later the mayor or head officer of every city, borough, and town corporate, and in every other parish of the country the parson and churchwardens, having in @ book as well the names of inhabitants and householders as of needy persons, were required yearly “one holiday in Whitsunweek openly in the church and quickly after divine service to call the householders and inhabitants together and select two or more able persons to gather charitable alms for the relief of the poor, and directing such gatherers the week after their election, when tho people are at the church, and have heard God’s holy word, to gently ask and demand of every man and woman what they of their charity would be content to give weekly towards the relief of the poor, and write the result in the book, to gather and distribute the alms weekly to the poor and impotent persons without fraud or covin, favour or affection, in such manner as the most impotent had the most kelp, and such as could get part of their living to have the less, and by the discretion of the collectors to

shall see all such idle, impotent, and aged persons, who | be put in such labour as they were fit and able to do, but

Eliza- bethan legisla- tion,

none to go or sit openly a-begging.” It is noteworthy that, except a penalty of 20s. imposed on a person refusing the office of gatherer, duties were enforced by ecclesiastical censure. The gatherers were required to account for the money ; and if they refused the bishop of the diocese or ordinary was to conipel them by censures of the church to account before such persons as he appointed. Further, if any person, being able to further the

charitable work, “ do obstinately and frowardly refuse to give towards the help of the poor or do wilfully discourage others from so charitable a deed,” the parson, vicar, or curate, and churchwardens should “ gently exhort him, and if he will not be so persuaded” then on certificate the bishop should send for him “to induce and persuade him by charitable ways and means, and so according to his discretion to take order for the reformation thereof ”(5 & 6 Edw. VI. c. 2).

This statute was recognized in part after the accession of Mary, by altering the time of choosing collectors to Christmas and doubling the penalty for refusing to fill the office of collector, and moving wealthy parishes in cities and towns to contribute towards the relief of the poor in the less wealthy parishes. At the same time a material modification of the spirit of earlier legislation was effected by enabling justices to license the poor of parishes having more poor than they could relieve, to go begging into specified parishes, wearing a badge “both on the breast and back of their outermost garment” (2 & 3 P. & M. @, 5).

Early in Elizabeth’s reign the spiritual persuasion towards obstinate and froward persons withholding con- tributions was strengthened by the aid of the civil power, by directing the bishop or ordinary to bind all obstinate persons by recognizance to appear at the next sessions ; and then, the charitable and gentle persuasions of the justices failing, the latter could tax the obstinate person in a weekly sum according to good discretion, and in default commit him to jail until payment. A corresponding power was given to deal with collectors refusing to account (d Eliz. c. 3). A few years later (1572) legislation took a more vigorous turn “for the punishment of vagabonds and for relicf of the poor and impotent.” The Act 14 Eliz. c. 5, reciting that “all the parts of this realm of England and Wales be presently with rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars exceedingly pestered, by means whereof daily happeneth in the same realm horrible murders, thefts, and other great outrages, to the high displeasure of Almighty God, and to the great annoy of the common weal, and for avoiding confusion by reason of numbers of Jaws concern- ing the premises standing in force together,” repealed the before-mentioned statutes of 22 Hen. VIII, 3 & 4 Edw. VL, and 5 Eliz. c. 3, and made provision for various matters, “as well for the utter suppressing of the said outrageous enemies to the common weal as for the

charitable relieving of the aged and impotent poor people.” Persons above fourteen and being rogues, vagabonds, or sturdy beggars, and ‘taken begging in every part of this realm, or taken vagrant, wandering and misordering themselves,” were upon their apprehension to be committed to prison to the next sessions or jail delivery without bail, and on conviction “shall be adjudged to be grievously whipped, and burnt through the gristle of the right ear with a hot iron of the com- pass of an inch about, manifesting his or her roguish kind of life and his or her punishment received for the same.” This jadgment was not to be executed if after imprison- ment “some honest person, valued at the last subsidy next before that time to five pounds in goods or twenty shillings in lands, or else some such honest householder as by the justices of the peace of the same county, or two of them, shall be allowed, will of his charity take such offender before the same justices into his service for one whole

year,” under recognizance to keep this poor person for that period and to bring him, if still living, before the justices at the year’s end; on the other hand the pauper departing within the year against the will of his master was to be whipped and burnt as above provided. ‘The offender was absolved from a second punishment for a short time, but if after threescore days, and being of the age of eighteen or more, he “do eftsoons fall again to any kind of roguish or vagabond’s trade of life,” then the said rogue, vagabond, or sturdy beggar, from thenceforth was “to be taken, adjudged, and deemed in all respects as a felon,” and should suffer as a felon,—subject, however, to like redemption as on the first charge, conditioned for two years’ service; but offending a third time he was to ‘“‘be adjudged a felon” and suffer pains of death and loss of lands and goods as a felon, without allowance or bencfit of clergy or sanctuary. Offenders under fourteen were punishable by whipping or stocking as provided by the repealed statutes.

A clause defining persons subject to the above punish- ment throws a light on the manners of the age, and is, as well as its exceptive provisions, of considerable interest ; but, as relating to vagrancy, and only indirectly to the relief of the really poor, it is not given here. It is to be observed, however, that the statute provided that it should be still lawful to masters and

governors of hospitals to lodge or harbour impotent or aged persons by way of charity according to their foundation, and to give money in alms as provided by the terms of their foundation. Harsh as was the treatment of rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, it was not so cruel as the short-lived legislation of the reign of Edward VI. imposing slavery in its worst form on wandering serving men (see vol xiv. p. 168).

Exceptional provision was made for persons provided with passes and safe conducts, as in former Acts. The statute goes on to say that, “ forasmuch as charity would that poor, aged, and impotent persons should as necessarily be provided for as the said rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars repressed,” and that the former should have “convenient habitations and abiding places throughout this realm to settle themselves upon, to the end that they nor any of them should hereafter beg or wander about,” and enacts that justices of the peace in their different divi- sions “make diligent research and inquiry of all aged, poor, impotent, and decayed persons born within their said divisions and limits, or which were there dwelling within three years next before this present parliament, which live, or of necessity be compelled to live by alms of the charity of the people that be or shall be abiding within the limits of their commissions and authorities,” and to register in a book the names of the poor persons, and devise and appoint meet and convenient places at their discretion “to settle the same poor people for their habitations and abidings, if the parish within the which they shall be found shall not or will not provide for them.” The justices were also to number the poor people and “set down what portion the weekly charge towards their relief and sustentation would amount to ;” and, that donc, the justices, mayors, and other officers should “by their good discretions” tax the inhabitants dwelling within these limits to such weekly charge, and appoint collectors and also overseers of the poor for one year. Much as by

a previous statute of 1547, compulsory removal of poor

people from parish to parish (except the leprous and bed- ridden), not born or not having dwelt in the place, was pro- vided for. Poor people refusing to ‘‘ be bestowed in any of the said abiding places, but coveting still to hold on their trade of begging,” or afterwards departing, were for the first offence to

suffer as rogues or vagabonds in the first degree of punishment, and for a second offence to suficr

POG E

the last degree of punishment already mentioned. The provisions as to putting out children of beggars contained in the statute of Edward VI. already noticed were repeated in nearly the same terms, but the age of male children was extended from eighteen to twenty-four for the duration of service.

The Act provided for justices' licences for poor to beg, ask, and receive relief in other parishes under similar cir- cumstances as badges had been granted under an earlier and repealed statute. The Act also contained many pro- visions and exceptions as to places and corporate bodies, and any person "able to further the charitable work" con- templated by the statute, and obstinately refusing to give towards the help and relief of the poor, or wilfully dis- couraging others from so charitable a deed, was to be summoned before justices to abide their order, and on refusal to be committed to jail, and 'there to remain until he be contented with their said order, and do perform the same."

There is extant a letter addressed to Lord Burghley by a, justice of the peace for Somerset, which shows that the great evils arising from habits of idleness amongst the poor began then to be understood, and strengthens the idea that one great object of the legislative provisions for the poor made about that time was to prevent able-bodied men from remaining unemployed. The writer advocated building houses of correction adjoining jails, to which vagrants, after conviction, should be transported "to be kept in work, except some person would take any of them into service," — adding, 'I dare presume to say the tenth felony will not be committed that now is" (Strype, Annals of Church and State).

In 1576 the statute 14 Eliz. c. 5 was explained and materially extended. 'To the intent youth may be accus- tomed and brought up in labour, and then not like to grow to be idle rogues, and to the intent also that such as be already grown up in idleness, and so rogues at this present, may not have any just excuse in saying that they cannot get any service or work, and that

other poor and needy persons being willing to labour may be set on work," it was ordained that within every city and town corporate, by appointment of the mayor and other head officer, and in every other market town or other place where the justices in their general sessions yearly shall think meet,

shall be provided a stock of wool, hemp, flax, iron, or |

other stuff, as that country is most meet for, and being wrought to be delivered to collectors and governors of the poor. Any person refusing to work, or begging, or living idly, or, taking such work, spoiling or embezzling it in such wise that after monition given the minister and church- wardens and the collectors and governors think such person not meet to have any more work delivered to him, was to be taken, ''in convenient apparel meet for such a body to wear," to the 'house of correction" estab- lished by the Act, and under the government of overseers of such houses, called censors and wardens, "there to be straitly kept, as well in diet as in work, and also punished from time to time." To the houses of correction were also taken and set on work not only the persons mentioned but also such "as be inhabitants in no parish or taken as rogues, or who had been once punished as rogues, or by reason of the uncertainty of their birth or of their dwelling by the space of three years, or for any other cause, ought to be abiding and kept in the county." An additional clause of the Act, reciting that by the earlier Act of 14 Eliz. no "pain" was incurred by any impotent person who having a competent allowance provided within his parish wandered abroad without licence "loitering and begging," enacted that he was to be whipped, and for a second offence to "suffer as a rogue and vagabond" (18 Eliz. c. 3), The

"stock" for work and the houses of correction were provided "of all the inhabitants to be taxed ;" but, " because it is to be hoped that many well-disposed persons, understanding the good success which will grow by setting people on work and avoiding of idleness, would from time to time give towards the sustentation and maintenance of that good purpose," persons were empowered during the next twenty years to give lands for the purposes without any licence of mortmain. A later Act, reciting that this power to erect hospitals or other abiding and working houses for the poor

had not its due effect by reason that no person could erect such house without special licence from the crown by letters patent, dispensed with such licence for twenty years (39 Eliz. c. 5).

The numerous charities and endowments and founda- tions of almshouses by will and otherwise of the 16th and 17th centuries, still extant in numerous buildings through- out the country, are illustrations of the spirit of the legis- lation here referred to. It is not improbable that legisla- tion sometimes prompted the donors, but more probable that such legislation was a reflex of the general disposition prevalent for generations after the ordinary channels of voluntary charity were obstructed.

In 1597 considerable progress was made towards estab- lishing a system of poor laws, not so much by introducing novelties as by entering more specifically into details, and especially by defining the legislation of some twenty years earlier (18 Eliz. c. 3) in the same reign. The appointment of overseers first mentioned in the earlier statute was provided for by enacting that the church- wardens of every parish and four subsidy men or other substantial householders nominated yearly in Easter week by justices should be called overseers of the poor of the same parish. The majority of the overseers were required with the consent of justices to set to work the children of persons unable to maintain them, and also all persons married or single and having no means of maintenance and no ordinary and daily trade of life to get their living by. The taxation weekly or otherwise of inhabitants and occupiers for providing a stock of flax, hemp, wool, thread, iron, and other necessary wares and stuff to set the poor on work, and also competent sums for the necessary relief of the lame, impotent, old, blind poor, unable to work, and the cost of erection, by leave of the lords of manors, of places of habitation on waste or common lands, was gathered according to the ability of the parish (or, if the parish was unable, then of other parishes in the hundred and county), and was enforceable by warrant of distress against-every one refusing to contribute, but with a power of appeal against the cess or tax. Parents and children being of sufficient ability were required to maintain their poor children or parents. Any person whatsoever wander- ing abroad and begging in any place, by licence or without, was punishable as a rogue, with a proviso exempting poor persons asking relief in victuals only in the parishes where they dwelt (39 Eliz. c. 3).

Four years after came “the famous statute” of 1601 Statute (43 Eliz. c. 2) already mentioned, out of which Dr Burn of 1601.

observes, “ more litigation and a greater amount of revenue have arisen, with consequences more extensive and more serious in their aspect, than ever were identified with any other Act of Parliament or system of legislation whatever.” It was the permanent establishment of the main provisions of the Act more than their novelty at the time the Act was passed that has fixed it as a kind of epoch in legislation for the maintenance of the poor. The Act re-enacts, verbatim for the most part, the above-mentioned statute of 1597 (39 Eliz. c. 3). The material alterations were defining the rateable property, and extending and defining the family obligation of support, and also the XIX. — 59

James I.

Common- wealth.

466 P Ook

formal apprenticing instead of placing out of children. The Act contains provisions for the rendering of accounts by the overseers. _

The foregoing short review of legislation exhibits the very gradual change by which the maintenance of the poor became much more a temporal than a spiritual concern. So gradual was this change that in some places the law was neglected and in others abused. The material changes in legislation subsequent to the reign of Elizabeth must now be briefly alluded to.

The efforts culminating in the statute of 1601 were not altogether attended with satisfactory results. At the end of eight years the Act 7 James I. c. 4 recited various defects. ‘‘Many wilful people finding that they, having children, have some hope to have relief from the parish wherein they dwell, and being able to labour, and thereby to relieve themselves and their families, do nevertheless run away out of their parishes and leave their families upon the parish.” Again, and more prominently, “ hereto- fore divers good and necessary laws and statutes have been made and provided for the creation of houses of correction, for the suppressing and punishing

of rogues, vagabonds, and other idle, vagrant, and disorderly persons ; which laws have not wrought so good effect as was expected, as well for that the said houses of correction have not been built according as was intended, as also for that the said statutes have not been duly and severely put in execution, as by the said statutes were appointed."

It was also convenient that the masters or governors of the houses of correction should have some fit allowance and maintenance " for their travel and care" to be had in the service, and also "for the relieving of such as shall happen to be weak and sick in their custody, and that the subjects of this realm should in no sort be over-charged, to raise up money for stocks to set such on work as shall be committed to their custody," and that there "shall be the more care taken by all such masters of the houses of correction that, when the country hath been at trouble and charge to bring all disorderly persons to their safe keeping, then they shall perform their duties in that behalf." Another grievance related to bastard children chargeable to the parish, of which more below.

The remedy for these and other grievances was putting in execution "all laws and statutes now in force made for the creating and building of houses of correction, and for punishing of rogues, vagabonds, and other wandering and idle persons," and providing restraints in the same direc- tion, and for the efficient discharge of duties of treasurers, constables, and other officers in rendering accounts.

In 1630 a royal commission was issued to inquire into the neglect of the poor laws, and directions given for their enforcement.

By a Commonwealth statute of 1656, reciting that "the number of wandering, idle, loose, dissolute, and disorderly persons is of late much increased by reason of some defects in the laws, and statutes heretofore made and provided for the punishment of rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars (they being seldom taken begging), by means whereof divers robberies, burglaries, thefts, insurrections, and other misdemeanours have been occasioned, all and every idle, loose, and dissolute persons found and taken within the commonwealth of England, vagrant and wandering from their usual place of living or abode, and [who] shall not have such good and sufficient cause or business for such his or their travelling or wandering" as

justices of the peace or mayors or other chief officers approved, were adjudged rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, within the statute 39 Eliz. c. 4, although not found begging ; at the same time fiddlers and minstrels were also adjudged rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars; and by a statute

LAWS

of the same year persons having no visible estate, profes- sion, or calling answerable to their rate of living expenses were indictable.

Soon after the Restoration attention was directed to the Charles ie

existing state of the law and some of its defects. 1662 the statute 13 & 14 Charles IJ. c. 12 recites that “the necessity, number, and continued increase of the poor, not only within the cities of London and Westminster, with the liberties of each of them, but also through the whole kingdom of England and dominion of Wales, is very great and exceeding burthensome, being occasioned by reason of some defects in the law concerning the settling of the poor, and for want of a due provision for the regulations of relief, and employment in such parishes or places where they are legally settled, which doth enforce many to turn incorrigible rogues, and others to perish for want, together with the neglect of the faithful execution of such laws and statutes as have formerly been made for the apprehending of rogues and vagabonds, and for the good of the poor.” ‘For remedy whereof and for the preventing the perishing of any of the poor, whether young or old, for want of such supplies as may be necessary,” numerous additional provisions were enacted. In the first place, ‘“‘by reason of some defects in the law, poor people are not restrained from going from one parish to another, and therefore do endeavour to settle themselves in those parishes where there is the best stock, the largest commons or wastes to build cottages, and the most woods for them to burn and destroy, and, when they have con- sumed it, then to another parish, and at last become rogues and vagabonds, to the great discouragement of parishes to provide stocks, where it is liable to be devoured by strangers.” Justices of the peace, upon com- plaint by the parish officers, within forty days after any such person’s coming to settle as before mentioned in any tenement under the yearly value of £10, were empowered by warrant to remove such person to the parish where he was last legally settled either as a native, houseliolder, sojourner, apprentice, or

servant for not less than forty days, unless he gave sufficient security for the discharge of the parish.

In this way the law of settlement arose, with its numer- ous complications and modifications engrafted by subse- quent legislation on this its original trunk. The statute of Charles, however, allowed (§ 3) any person ‘‘ to go into any county, parish, or place to work in the time of harvest, or any time to work at any other work,” provided he took with him “a certificate from the minister of the parish and one of the parish officers, that he or they have a dwelling house or place in which he or they inhabit, and have left wife and children, or some of them, there (or otherwise, as the condition of the persons shall require), and is declared an inhabitant or inhabitants there.” In such case, if the person did not return to his parish when his work was finished, or if he fell sick, it was not “counted a settlement,” and he was therefore removable, and, wilfully refusing, was punishable as a vagabond by being sent to the house of correction, or to a public work- house, provision for which and for corporate bodies in relation to the poor in London and Westminster, and places within the so-called bills of mortality, was made at the same time. Funds raised for the relief of the poor in the city of London were, however, previously in the hands of a corporate body for that purpose.

The same statute, reciting that “the inhabitants of the counties of Lancashire, Cheshire, Derbyshire, Yorkshire, Northumberland, the bishopric of Durham, Cumberland, and Westmoreland, and many other counties in England and Wales, by reason of the largeness of the parishes within the same,” could not reap the bencfit of the Act

Restraint

on re- moval of the poor.

POOE

43 Eliz., extended the powers of the Act to townships and villages within these counties.

Power was given to justices at quarter sessions, to trans- port rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, in some cases with the approval of the privy council, or without such approval, if convicted and adjudged to be incorrigible, to any of the English plantations beyond the seas, “there to be disposed in the usual way of servants for a term not exceeding seven years.”

This Act, which, except as to the corporate bodies before mentioned, was limited to three years’ duration, was con- tinued by various Acts, and made perpetual in the reign of Anne. One of the Acts continuing the former provisions, and containing some minute provisions affecting settle- ments, affords strong evidence of want of care of the funds, and even of the frauds practised by parochial officers. Many inconveniences arose “by reason of the unlimited power of the churchwardens and overseers of the poor, who do frequently upon frivolous pretences (but chiefly for their own private ends) give relief to what persons and number they think fit; and such persons, being entered into the collection bill, do become after that a great charge to the parish, notwithstanding the occasion or pretence of their receiving collection oftentimes ceases, by which means the rates for the poor are daily increased.” This grievance was sought to be remedied by means of a register with names and dates, to be examined by the vestry, and those only to be relieved who were allowed by a justice, except in certain urgent cases. The Act mentions more direct frauds. “ Many churchwardens and overseers of the poor, and other persons intrusted to receive collections for the poor and other public moneys relating to the churches and parishes whereunto they do belong, do often misspend the said moneys and take the same to their own use, to the great prejudice of such parishes, and the poor and other inhabitants thereof,” owing to the law by which persons in any way interested in the funds, as parishioners, although the only persons who could prove the facts, could not give evidence on the trial of actions against the parish officers to recover the misspent money; and therefore parishioners, excepting almsmen, were rendered competent witnesses in such actions (3 Will. & Mary c. 11).

The injurious effects of the restraint placed on the free removal of the labouring classes is evinced by a statute towards the close of the 17th century. To make this in- telligible it is necessary to say that by the statute 1 James II. c. 17 (one of the Acts continuing the Act of Charles I1.) it was

enacted that, as poor persons “at their first coming to a parish do commonly conceal themselves,” the forty days continuance in a parish intended by the Act of Charles to make a settlement were to be accounted from the time of the person’s delivering a notice in writing of the house of abode and number of the family to the parish officer. Hence persons coming to work under a certificate, on its production, were removed back again, lest they gained a settlement at the end of forty days. The statute now to be noticed recited that, “forasmuch as many poor persons chargeable to the parish, township, or place where they live, merely for want of work, would, in any other place where sufficient employment is to be had, maintain themselves and families without being burthensome to any parish, township, or place, but not being able to give such security as will or may be ex- pected and required upon their coming to settle themselves in any other place, and the certificates that have been usually given in such cases having been oftentimes con- strued into a notice in handwriting, they are for the most part confined to live in their own parishes, townships, or

their labour is wanted in many other places, where the increase of manufactures would employ more hands.” This mischievous result of previous legislation was sought to be avoided by a certificate of acknowledgment of settle- ment, and then and not before, on becoming chargeable to another parish, the certificated person could be sent back to the parish whence it was brought (8 & 9 Will. III. c. 30). This provision led to additional legislation, com- plicating the law of settlement. It was not until towards

the close of the 18th century that an important inroad on

the law relating to the removal of the poor was made by requiring actual chargeability before removal to their place of settlement (35 Geo. IIT. c. 101); and at the same time justices were empowered to suspend removal in the case of sickness.

By the statute of William IIL. (8 & 9 Will. IIL. c. 30), “to the end that the money raised only for the relief of such as are as well impotent as poor may not be mis- applied and consumed by the idle, sturdy, and disorderly

beggars," persons receiving parochial relief and their wives and children were required (under the punishment for re- fusal of imprisonnient and whipping, or of having the reliefs abridged or withdrawn) to wear a badge on the shoulder of the right sleeve—that is to say, a large "'P" together with the first letter of the name of the parish or place, cut in red or blue cloth ; and a penalty was imposed on church- wardens and overseers relieving poor persons not wearing such badge. The provision (a revival of a much earlier law) continued down to 1810, when it was abolished.

In 1744 provision was made reviving rather than in- troducing a system of magisterial "passes" for passing persons apprehended as rogues and vagabonds to their place of settlement (17 Geo. II. c. 5). Great abuses in conveying persons by passes, attributed to the neglect of this Act, led to its amendment nearly half 'a century later. Although these statutes fell into disuse they were not finally repealed until after the introduction of the present poor-law system. _

In 1722 the system of farming the poor was introduced. By 9 Geo. I. c. 7, "for the greater ease of parishes in the relief of the poor," parish officers with the consent of the parishioners or inhabitants in vestry were authorized to purchase or hire houses, "and to contract with any person or persons for the lodging, keeping, maintaining, and em- ploying any or all such poor in their respective parishes, townships, or places, as shall desire to receive relief or collection from this same parish, and there to keep, main- tain, and employ all such poor persons, and take the benefit of the work, labour, and service of any such poor person or persons who shall be kept or maintained in any such house or houses, for the better maintenance and relief of such poor persons who shall be there kept or maintained." Any poor persons refusing to be so lodged were not to be entitled to relief. Small parishes could unite or contract with another parish for the maintenance of the poor.

A few years sufficed to develop the injurious effects of this mode of dealing with the poor, and the accumulated evils of the working of the poor laws led, in 1783, to the passing of the statute 22 Geo. III. c. 83, known as "Gilbert's Act," the principle of which was extensively adopted in subsequent legislation, The Act significantly recited that, notwithstanding the many laws now in being for the relief and employment of the poor, and

the great sums of money raised for those persons, their sufferings and distresses are nevertheless very grievous, and by the incapacity, negligence, or misconduct of overseers, the money raised for the relief of the poor is frequently misapplied, and sometimes expended in defraying the charges of litigations about settlements indiscreetly and

places, and not permitted to inhabit elsewhere, though | inadvisably carried on, and also recited the provisions of

Passes.

Farming

the poor.

Gilbert’s

Act.

Relief’ in and out of the work- house.

468 PU Th

the 9 Geo. I. c. 7, relating to contracts for the maintenance of the poor, and that such provisions, from the want of proper regulations and management in the poorliouses or workhouses that lave been purchased or hired under the authority of the said Act and for want of due inspection and control over the persons who have engaged in those contracts, have not had the desired effect, “but the poor in many places, instead of finding protection and relief, have been much oppressed thereby.” “For the remedy of these grievances and inconveniences, and in order to make better and more effectual provision for the relief and employment of the poor, and to introduce a prudent economy in the expenditure of the parish money,” much legislative machinery was introduced, which, although not compulsory, was very extensively adopted, and with many amendments remained on the statute book long after the Poor Law Amendment Act of 1834. Although the Act has now disappeared, having been expressly repealed (as it was by implication previously) in 1871, Gilbert’s Act is memorable as having first

introduced the representation of the poor by guardians, although not by the present system of election. The Act repealed 9 Geo. I. ¢. 7, as regarded the farming of the poor where Gilbert's Act was adopted, but agreements for the diet and clothing and work of poor in poorhouses, subsequently termed "houses of industry," were expressly sanctioned. The limits of this article do not admit even of an analysis of this im- portant statute. In many respects a double system of administration sprang up in parishes, single or united, adopting Gilbert's Act, and in parishes not under that Act. In both, the conflict between the administration of relief in and out of the poorhouse arose, and continued from the time of the establishment of places of work whether termed workhouses, poorhouses, or houses of

industry, and whether under special local or under general

Acts.

In 1795 the 36 Geo. III. c. 23, reciting that a pro- vision of the 9 Geo. I: ¢. 7, prohibiting relief to persons refusing to go into poorhouses, "has been found to have been and to be inconvenient and oppressive, inasmuch as

- it often prevents an industrious poor person from receiving

such occasional relief as is best suited to the peculiar case of such poor person, and inasmuch as in certain cases it holds out conditions of relief injurious to the comfort and doniestic situation and happiness of such poor per- sons," gave power to the overseers, with the approbation of the parishioners in vestry or of a justice of the peace, to distribute and pay collection and relief to industrious poor persons at their homes under certain circumstances of temporary illness or distress, and in certain cases respect- ing such poor persons or their families, or respecting the situation, health, or condition of any poorhouse, in any place wherein houses shall have been hired or built and a contract made with any person for lodging, maintaining, and employing the poor, although the poor persons refused to be so lodged and maintained. Justices had besides a "just and proper discretion" for special cause stated in writing to order relief for a time not exceeding a month. This Act, however, did not extend to places where houses of industry or other places were provided under Gilbert's Act or under any special Act.

The evils arising from farming the poor under the 9 Geo. I. c. 7 nevertheless continued in places not adopting Gilbert's Act. Contractors were often non-resident and not of sufficient responsibility to insure performance of their undertaking. In 1805 these special defects were sought to be met by requiring residence, sureties, and the approval of the contract by two justices (45 Geo. IIL «. 54). But these remedies did not touch the whole extent of the evil of neglect of the poor. The laws for regulating

LAWS

workhouses and poorhouses were found deficient and in- effectual, especially when the poor in such houses were "' afflicted with contagious or infectious diseases, in whicli cases particular attention to their lodging, diet, clothing, bedding, and medicine is requisite." A statute passed in 1790 (30 Geo. III. c. 49) enabled justices, or medical men authorized by them or the officiating clergynian of the parish, to visit workhouses, and on finding cause for com- plaint to certify to the quarter sessions, and thereupon the court was authorized to make orders for removing any cause of complaint ; and, moreover, without waiting for this dilatory process, if on the visitation any of the poor were found afflicted with any contagious or infectious disease, or in want of immediate medical or other assistance, or of sufficient food, or requiring separation or removal, justices of the division were empowered to. make an order for im- mediate relief according to the nature of the application. There can be no doubt that the legislation of five years later already noticed (36 Geo. IIL c. 23) had reference to cases of this kind as well as to the hardships inherent in the rigid application of the practice of confining relief to the workhouse.

In 1819 an Act (59 Geo. ITI. c. 12) was passed, the result Select

of the report of a committee appointed two years before, containing a variety of provisions relating to the poor, empowering the establishment of select vestries "for tlie concerns of the poor" and regulating their proceedings. Where these were established overseers were prohibited from giving relief other than that ordered by the vestries, except temporary relief in cases of sudden emergency or urgent necessity. Justices had the power, as under earlier provisions, to order temporary relief in such cases, but they were prohibited from ordering relief in parishes where select vestries were

established or in which the relief of the poor was under the management of guardians, governors, or directors, unless relief had been refused by such bodies.

An amelioration of the harsher features of the law, and Vagrants.

the separation of that branch of it relating to vagrancy, are found in the legislation of the 18th and early part of the 19th century. In early times, as has been pointed out, legislation affecting labour and vagrancy was blended. Very gradually labour was left to run a freer course. Provisions as to vagrancy and mendicity, including strin- gent laws in relation to constructive “sturdy beggars,” “rogues,” and “vagabonds,” still formed a prominent feature of poor-law legislation.

In 1713 an Act was passed for reducing the laws relating to rogues, vagabonds, sturdy beggars, and vagrants into one Act, and for more effectually punishing them and sending them to their homes, the manner of conveying them including whipping in every county through which they passed (12 Anne, st. 2,c. 23). This Act was in turn repealed in 1740 ; and the substituted Consolidation Act (13 Geo. II. c. 24), embracing a variety of provisions, made a distinction between idle and disorderly persons, rogues and vagabonds, and incorrigible rogues. Four years later a statute reciting that “the number of rogues, vagabonds, beggars, and other idle and disorderly persons daily increases, to the great scandal, loss, and annoyance of the kingdom,” deals with a great variety of offences, continuing the rough classification already mentioned, and including among “idle and disorderly persons” punishable with hard labour in the house of correction “all persons who shall run away and leave their wives or children to the parish” and “all persons who shall unlawfully return to the parish or place from whence they have been legally removed by order of justices, without bringing a certifi- cate,” and also “all persons who, not having wherewith to maintain themselves, live idly without employment and refuse to work for the usual and common wages given to

Trregular- ities of poor-law officers.

Evils and suggested remedies.

other labourers on the like work, in the parishes or places where they then are," and also all persons begging alms (17 Geo. IL «. 5).

The laws relating to idle and disorderly persons, rognes and vagabonds, incorrigible rogues, and other vagrants in England were again consolidated and amended in 1822 (3 Geo. IV. c. 40), but the Act being temporary and requiring amendment, was superseded two years later by the present Act, 5 Geo. IV. c. 83, commonly spoken of as the Vagrant Act, which with some additions and amend- ments includes the law relating to mendicity and some provisions concerning persons deserting or neglecting to support their families. Mendicity in the popular sense is now considered as appertaining to police rather than to poor laws. It must suffice here to note the change from former inhuman laws denoted by the fact that corporal punishment is confined by the Vagrant Act to the permis- sive infliction of whipping on male persons imprisoned as incorrigible rogues.

The misdoings of the " vagrant train," so often paraded by statute and so severely treated in former times, seem to have been trifling compared with the iniquities of some of those engaged in the administration of poor-law relief. In 1769 it was found necessary to prevent churchwardens and overseers from wilfully and knowingly making payments to or for the use of the poor in base and counterfeit money (9 Geo. III. « 37). For this heinous offence a penalty limited to twenty shillings was imposed. The curious may compare this mild punishment with that inflicted on a wanderer from his home; for as recently as 1816 it was thought right to declare that it should not be lawful for any governor, guardian, or master of any house of industry or workhouse on any pretence to chain or confine by chains or manacles any poor person of sane mind, a provision significant of what passed within the walls by its prohibition as well as by the limitation.

Such were the most salient features of the legislation respecting the relief of the poor previous to the reform of parliament itself in 1832. ;

It had long been seen that there was something wrong which legislation had failed to set right. Sir Matthew Hale framed a scheme which was written soon after the middle of the 17th century, although not printed until after his

death. he chief feature of his plan was “that the justices of the peace at the quarter sessions do set out and distribute the parishes in their several counties into several divisions, in each of which there may be a workhouse for the common use of the respective divisions wherein they are respectively placed,—to wit, one, two, three, four, five, or six parishes to a workhouse according to the greatness or smallness and accommodation of the several parishes,” and that providing “a stock” for work in and out of the workhouses should be made compulsory. His views are thus stated :—

“ At this day, it seems to me that the English nation is more deficient in their prudent provision for the poor than any other Christian state In some other countries a beggar isa a rare sight. Those that are unable to maintain themselves by age or impotency are relieved. And those that are able to supply their wants by their labour are furnished with employments suitable to their condition. And by this means there is not only a good and orderly education and a decent face of the public, but the more populous the state or country is the richer and the more wealthy it is. But with ns in England, for want of a due regula- tion of things, the more populous we are the poorer we are ; so that wherein the strength and wealth of a kingdom consists renders us the weaker and the poorer; and, which is yet worse poor families which daily multiply in the kingdom, for want of a due order for their employment in an honest course of life, whereby they may gain subsistence for them and their children, do unavoidably bring up their children either in a trade of begging or stealing, or such other idle course, which again they propagate over to their children; and so there is a successive multiplication of hurtful or at least

unprofitable people, neither capable of discipline nor beneficial employment.”

He further remarks that the continuance of the evils he depicted “must in time prodigiously increase and overgrow the whole face of the kingdom, and eat out the heart of it.” In lamenting the want of an industrious education he observes that “a man that has been bred up in the trade of begging will never, unless compelled, fall to industry; and, on the other side, it is a wonderful necessity indeed that shall bring one bred up in

civility or industry to beg.” Almost all subsequent schemes looked up to Hale as their model ; but all either were not accepted or did not succeed, although in some of the legislation of the 18th century imperfect attempts seem to have been made in this direction. Among other schemes Sir Josial Child, in the reign of Charles II, who speaks of the poor in England having always been ‘‘in a most sad and wretched condition,” proposed to abolish all settlements and receive every poor person that applied to incorporated societies or “fathers of the poor.” John Cary, writing about 1700, having for the burden of his tract, and the cure of existing evils, to ‘‘ provide work for those who are willing, and force them to work that are able,” makes some pithy remarks.

“We that walks the streets of London, and observes the fatigues used by the beggars to make themselves seem objects of charity, must conclude that they take more pains than an honest man doth at his trade, and yet seem not to get bread toeat. Beggary is now become an art or mystery, to which children are brought up from their cradles. Anything that may move compassion is madea live- lihood, a sore leg or arm, or for want thereof a pretended one. The tricks and devices I have observed to be used by those people have often made me think that those parts, if better employed, might be made useful to the nation.” “ Licences for alechouses were at first granted for good ends, not to draw men aside from their labour by games and sports, but to support and refresh them under it; whcreas alehouses are now encouraged to promote the income of excise,—not considering withal that the labour of eacli man, if well employed, whilst he sits in an alehouse, would be worth much more to the nation than the excise he pays.” “Our laws to set the poor at work are short and defective, tending rather to maintain then so than to give them to a better way of living. “Tis true, those laws design well; but, consisting only in gencrals, and not reducing things to practicable methods, they fall short of answer- ing their ends, and thereby render the poor more bold when they know the parish officers are bound either to provide them work or to give them maintenance.”

In 1735 Mr Hay, a member of the House of Commons, introduced a bill, which, however, was not passed, appoint- ing guardians of a district, chosen by divers occupiers out of a list of persons qualified by estate in land, with power to purchase land, and build and furnish workhouses, and provide

stock to set the poor to work, to be paid for by rate,—‘‘every person to be deemed to be legally settled where he continued a year without being chargeable, and if he gained no such settlement then at the place of his birth, and if not born in the kingdom then where he should happen to want relief,”—parochial settlement to be abolished, and a county settlement substituted.

In 1753 bills were introduced into parliament by the earl of Hillsborough and Sir Richard Lloyd, but neither was passed. Lord Hillsborough proposed to repeal all existing Acts, re-enacting much, but getting rid of the notion of settlements and removals, and establishing a county board as governors of the poor with officers to carry out their bye-laws, and hospitals for the impotent and the aged and their children, and for no other kind of poor. In the same year Fielding printed A Proposal for making an effectual Provision for the Poor, for amending their Morals, and for rendering them useful Members of the Society. His plan embraced county houses of correction, and places of work, maintenance, and punishment, includ- ing a “fasting room.” It may be regarded as supple- mentary to schemes of thesame period. Although all that fell from this author is worthy of attention, his plan cannot

be examined closely here; but what he says of the state of things at the period, evidently the result of his daily observations as a magistrate and inhabitant of Westminster, is too striking to be passed over.

“That the poor are a very great burden and even a nuisance to the kingdom, that the laws for relieving their distress and restraining their vices have not answered their purposes, and that they are at present very ill provided for and much worse governed are truths which every man will acknowledge. Every person who hath any property must feel the weight of that tax which is levied for the use of the poor; and every person who hath any understanding must see how absurdly it is applied. So very use- less, indeed, is the heavy tax, and so wretched its disposition, that it is a question whether the poor or rich are actually more dis- satisfied ; since the plunder of the one serves so little to the real advantage of the other. For while a million yearly is raised among the rich many of the poor are starved ; many

more languish in want and misery ; of the rest, numbers are found begging or pilfering in the streets to-day, and to-morrow are locked up in jails and bride- wells. If we were to make a progress through the outskirts of the metropolis, and look into the habitations of the poor, we should there behold such pictures of huinan misery as must move the compassion of every heart that deserves the name of human. What indeed must be his composition who could see whole families in want of every necessary of life, oppressed with hunger, cold, nakedness, and filth, and with diseases the certain consequence of all these! The sufferings indeed of the poor are less known than their misdecds ; and therefore we are less apt to pity them. They starve, and freeze, and rot among themselves; but they beg, and steal, and rob among their betters. There is not a parish in the liberty of Westminster which doth not swarm all day with beggars and all night with thieves."

The observations of Dr Burn, a name known to every one who has considered the poor laws, whether as legislator, magistrate, or lawyer, followed in 1764. Although the suggestions and observations in his History of the Poor Laws are worthy of the highest attention to any one enter- ing into an historical retrospect, it must suffice here to say that the result of his experience and knowledge was that the laws then in force should "stand as to the main" but be rectified on two points—begging, and the manage- ment of the poor by overseers. Dr Burn says :—

"But how shall begging be restrained ? which by a kind of pre- scriptive claim hath so long been accustomed to triumph above the laws. All sorts of severities, it appears, have been enacted against vagrants; and yet they wander still. Nevertheless, one would hope the disease is not past all remedy. If it is, let us ccase the unequal contention, and submissively give up our fortunes to the next that comes with a pass, and tells us a justice of the peace hath so ordered it; but let beggars and vagrants be doing. There is one infallible way to put an end to all this, and the easiest in the world, which consists merely in a non-feasance. Give them nothing. If none were to give, none would beg; and the whole mystery and craft would be at an end in a fortnight. Let the laws continue if you please to apprehend and punish the mendicants ; but let something also be done effectually against those who encourage them. If the principal is punished, it is not reasonable

the accessary should go free. In order to which, let all who relieve a common beggar be subject to a penalty.”

As to the other “fundamental defect,” as Dr Burn styles the leaving the management of the poor to overseers, the position of overseers and their action are so admirably painted, and the description so applicable to the mode of administration down to the reform of 1834, that the observations, written in a happy strain of irony, must be inserted.

“ As to overseers of the poor, it is true the law provides that they shall be substantial householders. But many a man may be a sub- stantial householder who is not fit to be an overseer of the poor. And in fact the office goes by rotation from one householder to another,—some perhaps tenants at rack rent, whose lease expires the next year, others ignorant and unexperienced, others not willing to charge themselves to disoblige their neighbours; and all of them wanting to get over the office with as little trouble to themselves as possible ; and if any, wiser than the rest, projects anything for the common good his office expires at the end of the year and his labour is frustrated, and in practice the office of an overseer of the poor seems to be understood to be this:—To keep an extraordinary look-out to prevent persous coming to inhabit with- out certificates, and to fly to the justices to remove them ; and if a man brings a certificate then to caution all the inhabitants not to

LAWS

let him a farm of £10 a year, and to take care to kecp him out of all parish offices ; to warn them, if they will hire servants, to hire them half-yearly or by the month, by the week or by the day, rather than by any way that shall give them a settlement, or if they do hire them for a year then to endeavour to pick a quarrel with them before the year’s end, and so to get rid of them. To maintain their poor as cheap as possibly they can ; at all events not to lay out two-pence in prospect of any future good, but ouly to serve the present necessity; to bargain with some sturdy person to take them by the lump, who yet is not intended to take them, but to hang over them in terroremif they shall complain to the justices for want of maintenance. To send others out into the country a begging (for why cannot they go as well as others they will meution, who are less able in body ?) and the feebler they are the

more profitable will be their peregrination. Tobind out poor children apprentices, no matter to whom or to what trade, but to take especial care that the master live in another parish. To move heaven and earth if any dispute happens about a settlement, and in that particular to invert the general rule, and stick at no expense. To pull down cottages. To drive out as many inhabit- ants and admit as few as possibly they can ; that is, to depopulate the parish in order to lessen the poor rate. To be generous, indeed, sometimes, in giving a portion with the mother of a bastard child to the reputed father, on the condition that he will marry her; or with a poor widow (for why should she be deprived of the comforts of matrimony ?)—always provided that the husband is settled else- where. Orif a poor man with a large family appears to be industri- ous they will charitably assist him in taking a farm in some neighbouring parish, and give him £10 to pay his first year's rent with ; and if any of their poor has a mercantile genius they will purchase for him a box, with pins, needles, laces, buckles, and such like wares, and send him abroad in the quality of a petty chapman, with the profits whereof, and a moderate knack of stealing, he can decently support himself, and educate his children in the same industrious way. But to see that the poor shall resort to church, and bring their children there to be instructed ; to con- tract with a master that he shall procure his apprentice at proper times to be taught to read and write; to provide a stock of materials to set the poor on work, to see the aged and impotent comfortably sustained, the sick healed, and all of them clothed with neatness and decency,—these and such like it is to be feared are not so generally regarded as the laws intended and the neces- sity of the case requires."

Dr Burn's remedy was not to abolish overseers altogether, but that, while they or a permanent overseer should collect the rate, a general superintendent over a certain number of parishes should be appointed by the justices at sessions, and the disposal of the rate directed accordingly.

How far the criticism and suggestions made, from those of Sir Matthew Hale downwards from time to time, in- fluenced the legislation already indicated of the 18th century and the early part of the 19th, it is impracticable to discover. One thing is certain, that evils grew apace: ratepayers on the one hand, the poor on the other, political economists and

philanthropists, magistrates and jurists, and observers of every kind were dissatisfied. For the general state of the poor in the beginning of the 19th century as presented to the accurately observant eye and ear of our English Juvenal, we glean more from his Borough than from a pile of statistics. Of the poor who were chargeable to the parish Crabbe says :—

‘To the most we give A weekly dole, and at their homes they live.”

Of the workhouse or house of industry, “the pauper palace which they hate to see,” he speaks mournfully. In prose he wrote of the poor who “must be considered in every place as a large and interesting portion of its inhabitants,” condemning the workhouse system, alike the pauper palace and the house rented for the poor,—the

‘¢ House that holds the parish poor, Whose walls of mud scarce bear the broken door.”

A closer examination of the system of maintaining the Enumera-

poor than could be obtained by casual visitors, or even constant residents having no special duty to examine or

tion and classifica- tion of

inquire, showed, in full accord with the public criticism ,.i),

already examined, and in spite of it, that the fund which the famious statute of Elizabeth directed to be employed in setting to work children and persons capable of labour, but using no daily trade, and in the necessary relief of

TI) ©) ak

the impotent, was by degrees applied to purposes opposed to the letter and still more to the spirit of that law, and destructive to the morals of the most numerous class and to the welfare of all. The great source of abuse was the relief afforded out of the workhouse to able-bodied persons,—a class never intended by the legislation as fit objects. The description of relief was also

very objection- able. Its most usual form was that of relieving the applicants either wholly or partially from the expense of obtain- ing house room. Partial relief from that expense was given or professed to be given by exempting the occupants of a cottage or apartment from the payment of rates on the ground of poverty, and in a great number of cases by paying the rent out of the parish fund. Relief afforded in money to the able-bodied on their own account or on that of their families was still more prevalent. This was gene- rally effected by one of the five following expedients :— (1) relief without labour, (2) the allowance system, (3) the roundsmen system, (4) parish employment, (5) the labour- rate system. (1) The relief without labour was by the parish giving to those who were or who professed to be without em- ployment a daily or weekly sum, without requiring from the applicant any labour. (2) " Allowance" sometimes com- prehended all parochial relief afforded to those who were employed by individuals at the average rate of wages of the district, and was sometimes confined to the relief which a person so employed obtained on account of his children, in that case any relief obtained on his own account being termed "payment of wages out of rates." In some places allowance was given only occasionally or to meet occasional wants, for instance, to buy clothing or food or to pay the rent of a cottage or apartment. Sometimes the income of the poor was regulated by the name of "scales"—giving in money the price of so many loaves of bread or of a specific measure of flour, according to the number of the family. (3) The roundsman (or, as it was sometimes termed, the billet, or ticket, or item) system was the parish paying the occupiers of property to employ the applicants for relief at a rate of wages fixed by the parish, and depend- ing, not on the services, but on the wants of the applicants, the employer being repaid out of the poor rate all that he advanced in wages beyond a certain sum. According to this plan the parish in general made some agreement with a farmer to sell to him the labour of one or more paupers at a certain price, paying to the pauper out of the parish funds the difference between that price and the allowance which the scale, according to the price of bread and the number of his family, awarded to him. It received the local name of billet or ticket system from the ticket signed by the overseer which the pauper in general carried to the farmer as a warrant for his being employed, and afterwards took back to the overseer, signed by the farmer, asa proof that he had fulfilled the conditions of relief. In other cases the parish contracted with a person to have some work performed for

him by the paupers, at a given price, the parish paying the paupers. In many places the

This was easily accounted for “by many causes, including the trouble and difficulty attendant upon superintendence on the part of parish officers.” (5) An agreement among the ratepayers that each of them should employ and pay out of his own money a certain number of the labourers settled in the parish, in proportion not to his real demand for labour but to his rental or to his contribution to the rates, or to the number of horses that he kept for tillage, or to the number of acres that he occupied, or to some other fixed standard, has been denominated the labour-rate system. This system was generally enforced by an addi- tional voluntary rate on those who did not employ their full proportion.

As illustrating the difficulties attendant upon providing for the poor, a temporary Act passed in 1832, which has disappeared from the statute book (as founded on vicious notions), may be noticed, applying to parishes where the poor rates exceeded 5d. in the pound. It recited that, notwithstanding the many laws in force for the relief and employment of the poor, many able-bodied labourers are frequently entirely destitute of work or unprofitably employed, and in many instances receive insufficient allowance for their support from the poor rates, and “ the mode of providing employment for the poor which may be expedient in some parishes may be inexpedient in others, and it may therefore be desirable to extend the powers of parish vestries in order that such a course may be pursued as may be best adapted to the peculiar circumstances of each parish,” and enabled vestries (without interfering with Gilbert’s Act), with the approval of justices at petty sessions, to make special agreements solely for the pur- pose of employing or relieving the poor of the parish.

The following table exhibits the growth of the poor rate from the middle of the last century to a date immediately preceding the reforms effected in 1834 :—

Per Head of

Years. Estimated Population Expended on the of England and Wales. | Relief of the Poor. | the Population. ge Gh Gh 1750 6,467,000 689,000 ee”

1760 6,736,000 965,000 3 0 1770 7,428,000 1,306,000 3. 6 1780 7,953,000 1,774,000 4 5 1790 8,675,000 2,567,000 5 11 1800 9,140,000 3,861,000 8 5 1810 10,370,000 5,407,000 10 8 1818 11,702,000 7,890,000 13 4 1820 12,046,000 7,329,000 12 2 1830 18,924,000 6, 829,000 9 9 1832 14,372,000 7,036,000 9 9

It will be observed that subsequent to 1818 there was an apparent diminution in the whole sum expended for the relief of the poor, making a difference of between 11 and 12 per cent.; but the decline in the prices of the necessaries of life (wheat alone had fallen considerably,— more than one-half in one of the intermediate years) was more than equivalent to the difference.

The conviction, arising principally from the increase of Commis. the poor rates, that a change was necessary either in the sion of in- poor law as it then existed or in the mode of its administra- quiry.

roundsman system was carried out by means of an auction, all the unemployed men being put up to sale periodically, sometimes monthly or weekly, at prices varying according

to the time of year, the old and infirm selling for less than the able-bodied. (4) As for parish employment, although work is made by the statute of Elizabeth a condition pre- cedent to relief otherwise than in the case of the impotent, and it is a duty of the parish officers to provide it, pay- ment by them for work was the most unusual form in which relief was administered. Scarcely more than one- twentieth part of the sum yearly expended for the relief of the poor at the period immediately preceding the inquiry that led to the amendment of the law in 1834 was paid for work, including work on the roads and in the workhouses.

tion led to the issuing of a commission in 1832 “to make diligent and full inquiry into the practical operation of the laws for the relief of the poor in England and Wales, and into the manner in which those laws were administered, and to report their opinion as to what beneficial altera- tions

could be made." The result of this inquiry was laid before parliament in 1834. The commissioners reported "fully on the great abuse of the legislative provision for the poor as directed to be employed by the statute of Elizabeth," finding "that the great source of abuse was the out-door relief afforded to the able-bodied on their own

Poor-Law Amend- ment Act,

1834.

Poor-Law Commis- sioners.

Forma- tion of districts and poor- law unions,

Cost of adminis- tration,

account or on that of their families, given either in kind or in money." They also reported that "great maladminis- tration existed in the workhouses." To remedy the evils they proposed considerable alterations in the law, and the principal portion of their suggestions was embodied in the Poor-Law Amendment Act, 1834 (4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76).

The Act was based on the principle that no one should be suffered to perish through the want of what is necessary for sustaining life, but at the same time that if supported at the expense of the public he must be content to receive such support on the terms most consistent with the public welfare; and the objects of the Act were first to raise the labouring classes, that is to say, the bulk of the commun- ity, from the idleness, improvidence, and degradation into which the maladministration of the laws for their relief had thrown them, and, secondly, to immediately arrest the progress and ultimately to diminish the amount of the pressure on the owners of lands and houses.

Under the Act three commissioners were appointed (originally for five years, but subsequently continued from time to time) styled "the Poor-Law Commissioners for England and Wales," sitting as a board, and appointing

assistant commissioners and other officers. The adminis- tration of relief according to the existing laws was sub- ject to their direction and control, and to their orders and regulations for the government of workhouses and the guidance and control of guardians and vestries and the keeping and allowing of accounts and contracts, without interfering with ordinary relief in individual cases.

The favourable state of the country at the time present- ing many facilities for the introduction of the law, which it was important to render available with as little delay as possible, the whole of England and Wales was divided into twenty-one districts, to each of which an assistant commissioner was appointed. The commissioners under their powers (gradually put into operation—a circumstance which beneficially affected legislation of the period, as, for example, the commutation of tithes and the introduction of police) formed poor-law unions by uniting parishes for general administration, and building workhouses, guardians elected by the ratepayers (or ex officio) having the general government and administration of relief. The expense was apportioned to each parish on settled principles and rules, with power, however, to treat the united parishes as one for certain purposes. Outdoor relief might be given, on the order of two justices, to poor persons wholly unable to work from old age or infirmity. No rule appears to have been more fully sanctioned by practical results as of an advantageous nature than that under which the country was by degrees parcelled out into unions. In parishes no adequate power existed for carrying into effect the rules and regulations of the amended system. No principle of classification could be adopted within the workhouses, and the law was liable to be thwarted in its most material objects by petty interests of a local and personal character. With the aid of boards of guardians and their subordinate officers these interests were neutralized, and the law was rendered uniform in its operation. The economical advan- tages derived from acting on an enlarged scale are self- evident. Waste unavoidably takes place when the purchase of supplies for a single parish forms a separate transaction.

The second report of the commissioners showed that of one hundred and ten unions which had been in operation more than a year, the saving in forty-three of the largest was 46 per cent.; in twenty-four of the smallest

unions the rate of saving was not more than 29 per cent.; and im twenty-six unions of intermediate size a saving of 42 per cent. was effected. Even in many parishes not then included in a union the wide promulgation of the prin- ciples of the amending Act gave an impulse to improve-

ment in the administration of the poor laws, which was attended by a marked reduction in the expenditure.

The total amount of money expended in the relief of the poor in England and Wales during the twelve years prior to the passing of the Poor-Law Amendment Act (1823 to 1834) amounted to upwards of £76,096,000, and during the twelve subsequent years to less than £57,247,000. As the commissioners early remarked—

**Tt could not be expected that an Act which so materially dis- turbed the distribution of as large a sum of money as £7,000,000 per annum, which of neccssity changed the source from which a large portion of the inhabitants of the country derived their customary means of subsistence, and which in so doing opposed itself not only to the interests, the prejudices, and the fears of a large portion of the population, but pressed hardly on the sincere though mistaken notions of charity which were established in the hearts of others, could possibly be carricd into effect without difficulty and resistance.

The obstacles which the Act had to contend with in the The me- metropolis chiefly arose from the confusion and perplexity tropolis.

of jurisdiction which existed in the one hundred and seventy parishes comprised within the city of London and the metropolitan district, some of these containing govern- ing bodies of their own; in some the parish business was professedly managed by open vestries, in others by select vestries, and in addition to these there were elective vestries, under Sturges Bourne’s Act, Sir John Hobhouse’s Act, and other Acts; and the majority of the large parishes were managed under local Acts by boards of directors, governors, and trustees, These governing bodies executed a great variety of functions besides regulating the management of the poor. The power,

patronage, and the indirect advantages which arose from the administra- tion of the local funds were so great that much opposition took place when it was proposed to interfere by constitut- ing a board to be annually chosen and freely elected by the ratepayérs, on which the duty of regulating the expendi- ture for the relief of the poor wasto depend. The general management of the poor was, however, on a somewhat better footing in London than in the country.

Some opposition was experienced to the introduction of The old

the full benefits of the Act into the unions incorporated under Gilbert's Act, many provisions of which conflicted with the new system. On the early dissolution of seven- teen of those incorporations by the commissioners under their powers, it was found, however, that the rates were sensibly diminished. Much resistance of a general nature was encountered, Not only was the economical working of the new principles of management disputed, but a strong feeling was aroused against what was thought to be the inhumanity of the rigorous rules to which paupers had to submit in workhouses. While many proofs existed of the necessity for the introduction of a new system—such as that, while wheat was rotting in pauperized and as yet unreformed districts of the south of England for want of reapers at 21s. and 24s. an acre, at the very same time able-bodied healthy men were lying under the hedges in another part of the same county with a parish allowance of 3s. a week—on the other hand, it was felt as a grievance that old couples were refused relief at their own houses, and that if they entered the workhouse the sexes were separated. Throughout the country the reproachful name of " Bastille" was attached to the workhouse, and this is in many districts still retained, though no longer as an intended censure. In part of Devonshire prejudice was carried to the extent of a rumour leading poor persons to believe that the bread distributed by the relieving officers was mixed with poisonous ingredients.

Both Houses of Parliament were inundated for years with petitions against the new system; meetings were held at which inflammatory language was used; and in

Medical attend- ance.

soine instances riotous proceedings marked the opposition. It was remarked that the acts of violence were in the most pauperized districts, which had been conspicuous for the maladministration of the poor rates. The work, however, went forward, although three parliamentary committees (one of the Lords and two of the Commons) instituted a searching and severe scrutiny before the organization of the system was completed. Notwithstanding adverse cir- cumstances, including stagnation of trade, cold weather, and an epidemic of great severity, by the end of 1837 nearly the whole of England had bcen formed into unions ; the benefits of the new system were gradually recognized, and a poor law was introduced into Ireland (see IRELAND). As to poor-law administration in Scotland see ScoTLaND. The reform of the poor laws affected a variety of persons besides paupers and ratepayers. No question was morc widcly discussed than that of medical attendance on the sick poor. The outdoor relief of the sick was usually effected by a contract with a surgeon, which, how- ever, in general only included those who were parishioners. When non-parishioners became chargeable from illness, an order for their removal to their place of settlement was obtained, which was suspended until they could perform the journey ; in the meantime they were attended by the local surgeon, but at the expense of the parish to which they belonged. The poor-law commissioners in their report of 1834 stated that on the whole medical attend- ance scemed in general to be adequately supplied and economically, considering only the price and the amount of attendance. Great good was effected by the establish- ment of dispensaries promoted by Mr Smith of Southam to enable the labouring classes to defray, from their own resources, the expense of medical treatment. While stat- ing that the country was much indebted to him for his exertions, the commissioners were not prepared to suggest any legislative measures for their encouragement ; but dis- pensaries have been recently applied to the relief of the poor in the metropolis. The medical and surgical asso- ciation (now the British Medical Association), of which Sir Charles Hastings was president, took up the sub- ject, and a committee, over which Dr Davis (of Presteign) presided, made an inquiry and report,—by no means in hostility to, but in full accord with, the chiefs of the new poor-law administration. The present mode of giving

It is to be observed that the relief of the poor of every union governed by a local Act is administered by a board of guardians elected according to the Poor-Law Acts.

Although containing very important provisions, the Act of 1834 was rather to restore the scope and intention of the statute of Elizabeth by placing its administration in the hands of responsible persons chosen by the ratepayers, and themselves controlled by the orders of a central body, than to create a new system of poor laws.

The agents and instruments by which the administration of relief is afforded are the following.

The guardians of the poor regulate the cases and description of Guar- relief within the union; a certain number of guardians are elected dians.

from time to time by the ratepayers. The number is determined by the central board, by whom full directions as to the mode of election are given. In addition to those elected there are ex officio guardians, principally local magistrates. ‘The guardians hold their meetings frequently, according to the exigencics of the union. Indi- vidual cases are brought to their notice,—imost cascs of resident poor by the relieving officer of the union, the case of casual paupers by him or by the workhouse officers by whom they were admitted in the first instance. The resident poor frequently appear in person before the guardians. The mode of voting which the guardians fol- low in respect to any matter they differ on is minutely regulated, and all their proceedings as well as thosc of their officers are entered in prescribed books and forms. They havea clerk, generally a local solicitor of experience, who has a variety of responsible duties in advising, conducting correspondence and keeping books of accounts, and carrying out the directions of the guardians, who in their turn are subject to the general or special regulations of the central board. The various officers of the union from the medical officer to work- house porters, including masters and matrons of workhouses, are generally appointed by the guardians ; and the duties of all the officers are specifically prescribed by the regulations issued by the central board.

Among a multitude of miscellaneous duties and powers of the guardians, apart from the ordinary duties of ordering or refusing relief in individual cases and superintending the officers of the union, the duties devolve on them of considering the adjustment of contributions to the common fund whether of divided or added parishes, and matters affecting other unions, the building of work- houses and raising of money for that and other purposes, the taking of land on lease, the hiring of buildings, special provisions as to superannuation and allowances to officers, the maintenance and orders as to lunatics apart from individual instances, and the con- sideration of questions of settlement and removal.

: bate t ; 1883). In relation to expenditure the guardians have very con- “yatta ho a Pio pete . siderable but restricted powers. Among other officers they ap- Local After an intermediate transfer in 1847 of the powers of | point a treasurer for the union. Govern- the poor-law commissioners, and, the constitution of a fresh Overseers of the poor are still appointed under the statute of Over- eat board styled “commissioners for administering the laws | Elizabeth, and the guardians cannot interfere with the appoint- seers. Board. ment. As, however, the relief of the poor is now administercd by

for relief of the poor in England,” it was found expedient to concentrate in one department of the Government the supervision of the laws relating to the public health, the relief of the poor, and local government ; and this concen- tration was in 1871 carried out by the establishment (by Act of Parliament 34 & 35 Vict. c. 70) of the Local Govern- ment Board.

In the subsequent part of this article the governing board, whether the original poor-law commissioners or commissioners for administering the laws for relief of the poor, or the present local government board, is spoken of as the central board, as the orders at present in force are of various dates, and chiefly issued before the existence of

boards of guardians, the principal duties of overseers relate to the making and collecting of rates and payments. The guardians, by order of the central board, may appoint assistant overseers and collectors.

ing every workhouse and place wherein any poor person in receipt of relicf is lodged, attending meetings of boards of guardians and every local

mceting at which general questions may be raised or discussed, and taking part in meetings but not votingat them. The inspectors have great powers in calling before them and examining persons and books and proceedings. Besides the usual inspectors, persons may be appointed by the central authority to act im con- ducting special inquirics. ;

Provisions relating to cxpenditure and the audit of accounts are noticed in a subsequent part of this article.

Inspectors appointed by the central authority assist in Inspec- the execution of the poor laws by periodically visiting and inspect- tors.

Some principles connected with the system of poor-law Prin- adniinistration call for concise notice. eS

As the right to relief exists, the law recognizes the oe obligation to afford it to persons unable to maintain them- aqminis- selves. The refusal of the officers whose duty it is to give tration it is an indictable offence; and, although a means of of relief. punishment does not constitute a remedy, it scems a mandamus to guardians of the poor will, in extreme and exceptional cases, be granted. The lability to summary

the prescnt local government board.

By numerous Acts of Parliament passed subsequent to the Amendment Act of 1834 the administration of relief has been affected in various ways. It would be an unpro- fitable task, and inconsistent with the objects and limits of this article, to give a chronological summary of those Acts down to the present time, but they are taken into account in treating of various heads of poor-law adminis- tration.

Obliga- tion to make use of public provision.

Privatere- lief not an offence.

proceedings now, however, operates as a preventive to neglect of duty. If, by reason of the neglect of overseers to collect rates or to pay the guardians of the poor, any

relief directed by the guardians to be given to any poor |

person is delayed or withheld, or if overseers disobey a justice's order to give temporary relief, or if any officer wilfully neglects or disobeys the orders of the central board, penalties are incurred. The control of the central board is, except in very rare cases, found effective to secure the due administration of the law. :

The recognition of the right to relief as a legal claim allows and indeed necessitates the imposition of restraints, apart from provisions connected with the law of settlement and removal, more fully noticed hereafter. Persons, how- ever poor, wandering abroad to beg or gather alms, or placing themselves in any public place for that purpose, become subject to the vagrancy laws.

Private relief, pecuniary or otherwisc, may be asked for and obtained so long as it does not involve any false pretence or dishonest or prohibited means of gaining a livelihood. Any person able by work or other means to maintain himself or his family, who, by wilful refusal or neglect to do so, becomes chargeable for any part of his family, commits an offence. Poverty or idleness short of this, and apart from the case of liability in respect of children under elementary and industrial school Acts, is not an offence against the law.

There are circumstances, however, where relative lia- biliti¢s make it a duty for persons to avail themselves of the public provision for relief. The culpable neglect of a person to provide another under his contro] and in his legal custody, who is actually helpless, as an infant or lunatic, with the means of life constitutes a crime, and by the express provision of a poor-law Act any parent wilfully neglecting to provide adequate food, clothing, medical aid, or lodgings for his child, being in his custody under the age of fourteen, whereby the health of such child is or is likely to be seriously injured, may be summarily convicted (31 & 32 Vict. c. 122), in analogy to the law making it an indictable misdemeanour for a master or mistress who

is legally liable to provide any apprentice or servant with |

necessary food, clothing, or lodging, wilfully and without lawful excuse to refuse or neglect so to provide (24 & 25 Vict. c. 100). Something more than the mere abstention from seeking parochial relief without any intentional neglect is necessary to lay a criminal as distinguished from a moral responsibility on destitute persons.

Although under the vagrancy laws public begging is an

offence, the giver of such unlawful charity is not subject |

to legal restraint. In early times attempts were made to impose such restraints. An Act of 1349 (23 Edw. IIL c. 7) provided that none on pain of imprisonment should under colour of piety or alms give anything to a beggar who was able to labour, and nearly two centuries later an Act (22 Hen. VIII. c. 12) already noticed, relating to poor compelled to live by alms, and the punishment of vagabonds and beggars, provided that any person giving any harbour, money, or lodgings to any strong beggar who violated the statute should make such fine to the king as

the justices in sessions should appoint ; and as late as the |

commencement of the 17th century givers to beggars were subject to a penalty (1 Jas. I. c.7). These Acts, however, eventually disappeared from the statute book.

Dr Burn advocated, as has been seen, the infliction of a penalty for relieving a common beggar; but, although

aiders and abettors in the commission of even petty |

offences are now punishable, it is not attempted to apply the law to bestowers of charity, whether in the streets and highways or elsewhere.

It is in vain to impose the doctrines of political economy —

(11 & 12 Vict. c. 110).

family until they become “ emancipated.” | minority of a child there can be no emancipation, unless

LAWS

in restraint of natural instincts. Such doctrines are scattered as chaff before the wind when opposed by the teachings of the nursery rhymes of “The Beggar’s Petition,” or to the fascinating description where the beggar figures as “a well-remembered guest,” or to the sympathy enlisted by Charles Lamb’s essay “ A Complaint of the decay of Beggars in the Metropolis.”

Although in most cases the relief given to the poor is practically a gift, and does not constitute an available debt, the plan of giving relief by way of advance as a loan was introduced early in the present century, and the Poor-Law Amendment Act (1834) enacted that any relief, or the cost thereof, which shall be given to or on account of any poor person above the age of twenty-one or to his wife or any part of his family under the age of sixteen, and which the said commissioners shall by any rule, order, or regulation declare or direct to be given or considered as given by way of loan, and whether any receipt for such relief, or engagement to pay the same, or the cost price thereof, or any part thereof, shall have been given or not by that person to or on account of whom the same shall have been so given, shall be considered, and the same is hereby declared to be, a loan to such poor person (4 & 5 Will. [V. c. 76, § 58). By the same Act power was given to enforce payment by means of a summons before justices to attach wages. A subsequent statute gives power to the guardians to recover loans to paupers in the county court By order of the central board, guardians may, in the cases within the provision of the Poor-Law Amendment Act above set out, give relief by way of loan, but no relief contrary to the regulations can be given in this way. The restriction was necessary, as formerly some guardians granted outdoor relief by way of loan contrary to the recent principles of administration of relief.

The criminal liability of parents and others in loco parentis to provide sustenance has been considered. The purely civil liability for necessaries under implied con- tracts is of course outside the scope of this article, but there is an express liability created by the poor laws. The liability of the

father and grandfather and the mother and grandmother and the children of poor persons under the statute of Elizabeth has been set out in an earlier part of this article. The statute extends only to natural relations. The liability is enforced by orders of magis- trates after chargeability, who adjudicate as to the amount after hearing the facts and taking into consideration the ability of the relative. The relief of actual destitution should always precede investigation as to the liability of other persons than the parish to contribute to it. Indeed actual chargeability to the union is in general a condition precedent to an order upon the relative.

In treating of the persons entitled to relief it may be mentioned that, in accordance with the general law, a wife is to be treated as one with her husband who is compel- lable to maintain her ; and, as on the one hand the wife is

_ entitled under ordinary circumstances to relief equally

with the husband, the latter is the person to apply for and

| to receive relief.

With respect to children, they form part of the father’s During the

he marries and so becomes himself the head of a family,

_or contracts some other relation so as wholly and _ per-

manently to exclude the parental control. By the amendment of the poor laws in 1834 all relief

| given to or on account of the wife, or children under | sixteen, not being blind or deaf and dumb, is considered

as given to the husband or father as the case may be; and any relief given to children under that age of a

Relief by way of loan.

Liability of rela- tions.

The exigen- cies ne- cessitat- ing re- lief.

Nature

P*O Oo 8%

widow is considered as given to her (4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, § 56); but this provision does not interfere with the liability imposed by the statute of Elizabeth. Further a man marrying a woman having legitimate or illegitimate children is liable to maintain them as part of his family, and is chargeable with all relief on their account until they attain sixteen or until the death of the mother (idid., § 57). A married woman having separate property is

liable for the maintenance of her husband and children |

on their becoming chargeable (45 & 46 Vict. c. 75).

The position of illegitimate children and their parents stands on a distinct foundation. Bya statute of 1576 (18 Eliz. c. 3) justices were einpowered at discretion to charge the mother and reputed father of bastards with their maintenance on the pain of imprison- inent in default. ‘The principle of this statute, renewed and not expressly repealed until recently, is carried out now, after receiving repeated attention, especially on the great reform of the poor laws and administration of relief in 1834, by an order of maintenance on the reputcd father, at the instance of the mother, or where the child is actually chargeable to a union or parish at the instance of the guardians. Such order is in force until the child is thirteen, and in some instances until sixteen. The main features of the Acts are concisely stated in the article BASTARDY.

The conditions of persons entitled to relief are indicated by the terms of the statute of Elizabeth. If they fall within the definitions there given they have right to relief. A fundamental principle with respect to legal relief of the poor is that the condition of the pauper ought to be, on the whole, less eligible than that of the independent labourer. The pauper has no just ground for complaint,

if, while his physical wants are adequately provided for, | his condition is less eligible than that of the poorest class |

of those who contribute to his support.

Although a fund has become a practical necessity, it should be always borne in mind that he who claims it is not honest if his own labour and work can suffice to pro- vide for his wants. It is as immoral and unjust to take unnecessarily from the industrious and saving by force of a law made and a tax raised for other objects as it would be for a labourer of equal means to pillage and take from the pocket of his fellow labourer.

If a state of destitution exists, the failure of third per- sons to perform their duty, as a husband, or relative men-

tioned in the statute of Elizabeth, neglecting those he |

is under a legal obligation to support, is no answer to the application. The relief should be afforded, and is often a condition precedent to the right of parish officers to take proceedings against the relatives or to apply to other poor unions. The duty to give immediate relief must, however, vary with the circumstances. wanderers under circumstances not admitting of delay may be different from that of persons resident on the spot where inquiry as to all the circumstances is practicable. The statute of Elizabeth contemplated that the relief was to be afforded to the poor resident in the parish, but it is contrary to the spirit of the law that any person shall be permitted to perish from starvation or want of medical assistance. Whoever is by sudden emergency or urgent distress deprived of the ordinary means of subsistence has a right to apply for immediate relief where he may happen to be. Persons comprehended within this class are called “casual poor,” although the term “casuals” is generally used in reference to vagrants who take refuge for a short time in the “casual wards” of workhouses.

Various tests are applied to ascertain whether applicants are really destitute. Labour tests are applied to the able- bodied, and workhouse tests are applied to those to whom entering a workhouse is made a condition of reliet.

As to the nature and kind of relief given under the

and kind poor Jaws the great distinction restored rather than intro-

of relief.

duced by the amendment of the poor-law system in 1834 was giving all relief to able-bodied persons or their families

The case of

bh AWS 475

in well-regulated workhouses (that is to say, places where they may be set to work according to the spirit and inten- tion of the statute of Elizabeth), and confining outdoor relief to the impotent—that is, all except the able-bodied and their families. Although workhouses formed a con- spicuous feature in legislation for the poor from an early period, the erection of those buildings for unions through- out the country where not already provided followed imme- diately on the amendment of the system in 1834. Since that time there has been a constant struggle between the

| pauper class and the administrators of the law, the former

naturally wishing to be relieved at their own homes, and in many instances choosing rather ta go without aid than to remove within the walls of the workhouse.

Relief given in a workhouse is termed ‘‘in (or indoor) mainten- ance” relief, and when given at the homes of the paupersis termed ‘¢ outdoor relief.” The regulations, accounts, and returns to parlia- ment, as well as the principles governing relief, are based on these distinctions. It is impossible, however, to apply rigid principles very closely, or rather the exceptions in practice are so numerous that the majority of resident poor are relieved at their own homes by being supplied with necessaries in kind, or by payment either wholly or-in part in coin, as circumstances are held to demand or warrant. The general order is that every able-bodied person, male or female, requiring relief shall be relieved only in the workhouse, together with such of the family as may be resident with such able- bodied person, and not in employment, including his wife residing with him. The exceptions made are where the person requires relief on account of sudden and urgent necessity, or on account of any sickness, accident, or bodily or mental infirmity affecting such person or any of his family ; where relief is required for the pur- pose of defraying the expenses of burial of any of the family ; in the case of widows, relief in the first six months of her widowhood when she has legitimate children dependent upon her incapable of earning a livelihood, and has no illegitimate children born after her widowhood. Further relief in or out of the workhouse may be given by guardians in their discretion to a wife or children of an able-bodied man not resident within the union.

By the Industrial School Act any child found begging or receiving alms (whether actually or under the pretext of selling or offering for sale anything), or being in any street or public place for the purpose of begging or receiving alms, or found wandering and not having any home or settled place of abode or proper guardianship or visible means of subsistence, or found destitute, either being an orphan or having a surviving parent who is undergoing penal ser- vitude or imprisonment, or that frequents the company of reputed thieves (as also in some other cases recently added), may be sent to a certified industrial school, and while a school is being found justices may order detention for a week in the workhouse.

In the metropolis justices have power to cause inmates of dan- gerous structures to be received into a workhouse.

Besides workhouses, district asylums are provided for the desti- tute poor in certain places. Under the Poor-Law Amendment Act, 1844, reciting that it was expedient that more effectual means should be provided for the temporary relief of poor persons found destitute and without lodgings within the district of the metro- politan police or the city of London, and in Liverpool, Manchester, Bristol, Leeds, and Birmingham, district boards were established, by which provision is made for such temporary relief and setting to work therein of any poor person found destitute within any such district, not professing to be settled in any parish included in it and not known to have any place of abode there and not charged with any offence under the Vagrant Act.

In 1867 under the Metropolitan Poor Act of that year unions and parishes in the metropolis were by order of the board formed into asylum districts, in each of which there is one asylum or more for the reception and relief of the sick, insane, or infirm, under a body of managers partly elective and partly nominated by the board, who build or hire asylums and furnish them, and appoint committees. The attendance at the asylum of a special cominissioner of lunacy

| is provided for. Special provision is made as well for outdoor as

indoor medical relief by providing dispensarics and the dispensing of medicines, with regulations for the appointment of medical officers in the district.

The necessarily large expenditure for the asylums is principally defrayed by a fund called the metropolitan common poor fund, by contributions from the several unions, parishes, and places in the metropolis. The amount of the respective assessments is deter- mined by the local government board according to the valuation lists (noted hereafter) or on such other basis as the board direets, the contribution being enforced by a precept of the board ; and the bodies called on to pay levy the amount by a rate on occupiers of ratcable property in the naturc of a poor rate.

Work- house rules.

Admission to a workhouse may be by a written order of the board of guardians, or by the master or matron (or in their absence by the porter) withont an order in any ease of sudden or urgent necessity, or provisionally by a relieving officer, or overseer, or churechwarden. Any person who is brought by a polieeman as having been found wandering in a state of destitution may be admitted. It is to be observed generally, with respect to all per- sons who may apply for admission into the workhouse under circumstances of urgent necessity, that their destitution, eoupled with the fact of being within the union or parish, entitles them to relief, altogether independently of their settlement (sce below), if they have one, which is a matter for subsequent inquiry.

The regulations for the government of workhouses fall under two classes :—(1) those which are necessary for the maintenance of good order in any building in which considerable numbers of persons of both sexes and of different ages reside ; (2) those which are necessary in order that these establishments may not be alms- houses, but workhouses in the proper meaning of the term.

The inmates of a workhonse are necessarily separated into certain elasses. In no well-managed institution of this sort, in any country, are males and females, the old and the young, the healthy and the sick, indiscriminately mixed together. The general classification of paupers in the workhouse so far as the structure admits is as follows :—Class 1, men infirm through age or any other cause; Class 2, able-bodied men, and youths above the age of fifteen ; Class 8, boys above the age of seven and under fifteen ; Class 4, women infirm through age or any other cause ; Class 5, able-bodied women, and girls above fifteen; Class 6, girls above seven and under fifteen ; Class 7, children under seven. ‘To each class is assigned that ward or separate building and yard which may be best fitted for the reception of such class, and each class is without communication with those of any other class. Guardians are re- quired to divide the paupers into the seven elasses, and to subdivide any one or more of these classes in any manner which may be advis- able, and which the internal arrangeients of the workhouse admit; and the guardians are required from time to time, after consulting the medical officer, to make necessary arrangements with regard to persons labouring under any disease of body or mind, and, so far as circumstances

permit, to subdivide any of the enumerated classes with reference to the moral character or behaviour or the previous habits of the inmates, or to such other grounds as may seem ex- pedient.

For example, it is very desirable that females of dissolute and disorderly habits should be separated from those of a good character, for it is the duty of the guardians to take all reasonable eare that the morals of persons admitted into the house be not corrupted by intercourse with inmates of this description ; but this has reference to continued ill-conduct, and is not in any way to be a punishment for offences committed previous to entrance into the workhouse and discontinued before adinission.

The separation of married couples was long a vexed question, the evils on the one hand arising from the former unrestricted practice being very great, while on the other hand the scparation of old couples was felt as a great hardship, and by express statutory pro- vision in 1847 husband and wife, both being above the age of sixty, received into a workhouse cannot be compelled to live separate and apart from each other (10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, § 28). This exemption was carried somewhat further by contemporaneous orders of the board, under which guardians were not compelled to separate infirm couples, provided they had a sleeping apartment separate from that of other paupers ; and in 1876 guardians were empowered, at their discretion, to permit husband and wife where either of them is in- firm, sick, or disabled by any injury, or above sixty years of age, to live together, but every such case must be reported to the local government board (39 & 40 Viet. c. 61, § 10).

Children under seven are placed in such of the wards appropriated to female paupers as may be deemed expedient, and their mothers are permitted to have access to them at all reasonable times; fathers or mothers who may be desirous of seeing any child who is in the same workhouse have a daily interview; and arrangements are made for permitting members of the same family who are in different work- houses of the union to have occasional interviews with each other at such times and in such manner as best suits the discipline of the several workhouses,

Casual and poor wayfarers admitted by the master and matron are kept ina separate ward and dicted and set to work in such manner as the guardians

by resolution direct ; and whenever any vagrants or mendicants are received into a workhouse they ought (as a precaution necessary for preventing the introduction of infec- tious or contagious diseases) to be kept entircly separate from the other inmates, unless their stay exceeds a single night.

The guardians may direct that any pauper inmate of the work- house of any elass, except casual paupers, shall be detained in the workhouse after giving notice to quit it, for limited periods. A casual pauper (that 1s, any destitute wayfarer or wanderer applying a oF receiving relief) is not entitled to discharge himself from a

asual ward before 9 a.m. of the second day following his admission,

LAWS

or of the fourth day if he has been previonsly admitted more than once within a month, nor before he has performed the work prescribed for him (Casual Poor Act, 1882).

Infirmaries are attached to many workhonses, especially in the metropolis, and also in some cases there are infirmaries for the poor

| distinet from the workhouse ; all are governed and regulated under

the orders of a central board.

The outdoor labour test order of the local government board Outdoor directs that every able-bodied male pauper who may receive relief relief

within the union out of the workhouse shall be relieved in the following manner :—half at least of the relief given to such pauper shall be given in food, clothing, and other articles of necessity, and no such pauper shall receive relief from the guardians of the union or any of their officers or any overseer while he is employed for wages or other hire or remuneration by any person ; but every such pauper shall be set to work by the guardians. The kind of work is reported to the board. A departure from the order is, however, per- mitted if approved by the board.

To prevent the practice formerly prevailing in some parts whereby the poor rates were used for the payment of rents directly to the landlords, the guardians and parish officers are prohibited from paying the rent of the house or lodging of any pauper, or applying any relief in such payment directly or indirectly, This does not apply, however, to any shelter or temporary lodging procured in any case of sudden and urgent necessity, or mental imbeeility; nor does it prevent the guardians, in regulating the amount of relief to be afforded to any particular person, from considering the expense to be incurred in providing lodging. This allows of supplying to the pauper the means of paying for a lodging instead of requiring him to come into the workhouse in such exceptional cases.

Modern remedial legislation and public efforts conneeted with improved dwellings for labourers and artisans, as well as for the poor generally, are distinct from the laws for the compulsory relief of the poor, —although, like education, the whole subject of ameliora- tion of classes admits in some of its aspects of being viewed together. The allotment of land to industrious poor has been also of great service (Allotments Extension Act, 1882),

Guardians having greater provision for the reception of poor children in their workhouse than they require may with the eon- sent of the board contract with the guardians of any other union or parish for the reception, maintenance, and instruction of any poor children under sixteen being orphans or deserted by their parents or whose parents consent (14 & 15 Vict. c. 105; 29 & 380 Vict. e. 113),

A consolidated order comprising workhouse regulations Education prescribes that the boys and girls who are inmates of a and

workhouse shall, for three of the working hours at least every day, be instructed in reading, writing, arithmetic, and the principles of the Christian religion, and such other instruction shall be imparted to them as may fit them for service, and train them to habits of usefulness, industry, and virtue.

In relation to education of poor children out of the workhouse there has been much legislation. To go no farther back, the Act of 1855, providing for the education of children in the receipt of outdoor relief (18 & 19 Vict. c. 34, known as Denison’s Act), was superseded in 1873 by the Elementary

Education Act of that year (36 & 37 Vict. c. 86), containing a special clause for the education of children relieved out of the workhouse and the pay- ment of school fees, but this clause was in turn repealed by the Elementary Education Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. ¢. 79), making it the duty of every parent to cause a child to receive efficient elementary instruction in reading, writing, and arithmetic. See Epucarion.

By this Act a provision substituted for that of 1873 enacts that where relief out of the workhouse is given by the guardians or by their order by way of weekly or other continuing allowance to the parent of any child above the age of five years who has not reached the standard in read-

| Ing, writing, and arithmetic prescribed by a certain code,

or who for the time being either is prohibited by the Act from being taken into full time employment, or who by any bye-law under the earlier Elementary Education Act of 1870 is required to attend school, it shall be a condi- tion for the continuance of such relief to the parent or child that elementary education in reading, writing, and aritlmetic shall be provided for such child, and the

Ap- prentice- ships.

P%®) oC k

guardians are required to give such further relicf (if any) as may be necessary for that purpose. Such relief cannot be granted on condition of the child attending any public elementary school other than such as may be selected by the parent, nor refuscd because the child attends or does not attend any particular public elementary school. More- over the guardians have no power under this provision to give any relief to a parent in ordcr to enable such parent to pay more than the ordinary fee payable at the school which he selects, or more than the fee which under the provisions of the Act they can enable a parent to pay in any other case. All relief given by the guardians under this provision is deemed to be relief within the meaning of the poor laws and payable out of their common fund (39 & 40 Vict. c. 79, § 40; sce also § 34). A child can- not, as a condition of the continuance of relief out of the workhouse under the above provision, be required to attend

school further or otherwise than is obligatory by any bye-law of a school board (43 & 44 Vict. c. 23, § 5). Moncy given for the payment of school fees for any child of a parent who is not a pauper and is resident in any parish is charged by the guardians having jurisdiction to that parish with other parochial charges (39 & 40 Vict. § 35).

The education of poor children is closely connected with the system of "boarding out," as it is termed. The guardians of certain unions are empowered to board out pauper children in homes beyond the limits of the union, provided the guardians have entered into approved arrangements which include education (boarding-out order 1870); and by a statute of 1862 (still unrepealed, except so far as by implication provisions are superseded) the guardians of any parish or union may send any poor child to any school certified to the board as fit for their reception and charge the expenses in the same manner as other relief. Unless an orphan or deserted or having the consent of a parent, a child cannot be sent under this statute, and no child can be kept against its will if above fourteen. Such school is open to inspection (25 & 26 Vict. c. 43).

Under the last-mentioned statute, the amount which might be paid by a board of gnardians for the maintenance of a child in an institution certified under that statute was limited to the cost of the maintenance of the child in the workhouse ; but by the Divided Parishes and Poor-Law Amendment Act, 1882, the guardians may pay the reasonable expenses incurred in the maintenance, cloth- ing, and education of the child to an amount sanctioned by the local government board. The board has accordingly sanctioned vates of payment, and in practice, when issuing a certificate, specifics the maximum amount which may be paid by the guardians as a reasonable allowance towards the maintenance of any pauper child sent to the institution.

It is to be observed that the provisions of the Elementary Eduea- tion Acts as to the employment of children by employers in school districts not within the jurisdiction of a school board, consisting of a parish and not a borough, must be enforced by the school com- mittee of guardians of the ution (39 & 40 Vict. c. 79, § iD:

The daily average number of children of both sexes attending the schools of the union workhouses, &c., in England and Wales during the half-year ended at Lady Day 1883 was 26,170. Added to this total there is the average daily attendance at district schools, 7488, and 488 in the metropolitan asylum district, making a total of 34,146. The amount paid to boards of guardians and managers out of the parliamentary grant in respect of the salarics of work- house and district school teachers for the year ending Lady Day 1883 was £38,629, 11s.

Various provisions relating to the apprenticeship of poor children have been noticed in tracing the progress of legisla- tion. Cuardians are not restricted from binding as appren- tices children who are not actually in the receipt of relief or whose parents may not be in the receipt of relief as paupers at the time of the binding. Such children as may ordinarily be considered ‘* poor children” are within the scope of the provisions respecting the apprenticeship of pauper children. But apprenticeship under the poor laws is a species of relief which can only be given subject to the general or special regulations on the subject.

The general orders direct that no child under the age of nine years and no child (other than a deaf and dumb child) who cannot read and write his own name shall be bound apprentice by the guardians, and no child is bound to a person who is under twenty-

|

| from the residence of the child at the time of binding.

| fourteen his own consent is required.

LAWS ATT –

one or who is a marricd woman, or to a person who is not a house- keeper or assessed to the poor rate in his own name, or who is a journeyman or a person not carrying ou trade or business on his own account. And no child can be bound, unless in particular cases, to a master whose place of business is more than 30 miles The term of apprenticeship is discretionary with the guardians, but no apprentice cau be bound for more than eight

years, and if the child is above If under sixteen his father’s consent (or, if his father is dead, his mother’s if living) is necessary. Various preliminaries to the binding are requisite, affecting the health and strength of the child and all attendant circuinstances. When any premium is given it must in part consist of clothes supplied to the apprentice and in part of money to the master. The duties of the master of a pauper apprentice are specially provided for both by statute and by the regulations adopted by the local government board.

In the administration of medical relief to the sick, the Medical are—(1) to provide medical aid for relief.

objects kept in view persons who are really destitute, and (2) to prevent medi- cal relief from generating or encouraging pauperism, and with this view to withdraw from the labouring classes, as well as from the administrators of relief and the medical officers, all motives for applying for or administering medical relief, unless where the circumstances render it

| absolutely necessary.

Unions are formed into medical districts limited in area and population, to which a paid medical officer is appointed, who is furnished with a list of all snch aged and infirm persons and persons permanently sick or disabled as are actually receiving relief and residing within the medical officer’s district. Every person nained in the list receives a ticket, and on cxhibiting it to the medical officer is entitled to advice, attendance, and medicine as his case may require. Medical outdoor relief in connexion with dispen- savics is regulated in asylum districts of the metropolis by the Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 6).

.

A lunatic asylum is required to be provided by a county or borough for the reception of pauper lunatics, with a committee of visitors who, among other duties, fix a weekly sum to be charged for the lodging, maintenance, medicine, and clothing of each pauper lunatic confined in such asylum. Medical officers of unions and_ parishes, having knowledge that any resident pauper is or is deemed to be a lunatic, give written notice to

relieving officers or other officers, and such officers, having knowledge either by such notice or otherwise of the fact, must apply to a justice, who requires the relieving officer to bring the pauper before him, or some other justice, calling to his assistance a duly qualified medical man (physician, surgeon, or apothecary), and upon his certificate, and the justice upon view or examination or other proofs being satisfied that such pauper is a lunatic and a proper person to be taken charge of and detained under care and treatment, a written order is made out directing the pauper to De received into such asylum. That is the ordinary mode, but justices may act on their own knowledge, and police – officers have power to apprehend wandering lunatics and take them before justices.

The Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867, already noticed, contains many provisions applicable to insane poor, including the right of the commissioners of lunacy to visit the asyluins.

In some cascs when duly authorized a lunatic may be received into a registered hospital or house duly licensed for the reception of lunatics. No lunatics can be kept in a workhouse more than fourteen days except under special circumstances ; minute pro- visions are made for the care, visitation, and discharge of the lunatics. The central board has made regulations respecting the detention of harmless idiots and other insane persons.

The cost of removal and maintenance is borne by the con:mon fund of the union, and justices sending the pamper, or the visiting justices of an asylum may draw upon the guardians for the amount of the pauper’s maintenance in favour of the treasurer, officer, or proprietor of the asylum. Any property of the lunatic is applic- able to his maintenance. Special provision is made for inquiry into the settlement and adjudicating it, and for payment of costs of maintenance in accordance with the adjudication (16 & dy Viet. c. 97, and subsequent Acts). There are also special provisions as to pauper criminal lunatics and sending them to an asylum at the cost of the common fund of the union as in other cases, —to which

Settle- nent.

Irremov- ability.

expenses, however, the aes property, if he have any (Criminal Lunatics Act, 1884, and Acts there referred to), is applicable.

An increase has taken place for many years past in the number of lunatic paupers. The total numiber of this class of paupers relieved on 1st January 1883 was larger by 1867 than it was on the corresponding day in 1882.

A settlement is the right acquired in any one of the modes pointed out by the poor laws to become a recipient of the benefit of those laws in that parish or place where the right has been last acquired.

No relief is given from the poor rates of a parish to any person who does not reside within the union, except where such person being casually within a parish becomes destitute by sudden distress, or where such person is entitled to receive relief from any parish where non-resi- dent under justice's order (applicable to persons under orders of removal and to non-resident lunatics), and except to widows and legitimate children where the widow was resident with her husband at the time of his death out of the union in which she was not settled, or where a child under sixteen is maintained in a workhouse or establish- ment for the education of pauper children not situate in the union, and in some other exceptional cases.

The progress of the law of settlement may be gathered from the statutes already referred to; and, without again adverting to legisla- tion already noticed, and much more not enumerated, it must be sufficient to point out that immediately before the passing of the Poor-Law Amendment Act, 1834, settlements were acquired by birth, hiring and service, apprenticeship, renting a tenement, estate, office, or payment of rates. In addition to these an acknowledgment (by certificate, of which mention has been made, by relief or acts of acquiescence) has practically the effect of a settlement, for, if unexplained, such an acknowledgment stops the parish from disputing a settlement in the parish acknowledg- ing. The Poor-Law Amendment Act, 1834, abolished settlement by hiring and service (or by residence under it) and by serving an office, and by apprenticeship in the sea service. Moreover

the guardians of a union might agree (subject to the approval of the commissioners) that all the parishes forming it a for the purposes of settlement be considered as one parish.

It is to be observed that, for the purposes of relief, settlement, and removal and burial, the workhouse of any parish is considered as situated in the parish to which each poor person is chargeable.

There may be a settlement by parentage, for legitimate children take the settlement of their father, or if he has no settlement they are entitled to the settlement of their mother ; and it is only when both these sources fail discovery that their right of settlement by birth accrues ; for until the settlement of the father or mother has been ascertained the settlement of a legitimate child, like that of a bastard, is in the place where the birth took place.

A settlement attaches te those persons who have a settlement of some kind. Foreigners born out of the country and not acquiring any in one of the modes pointed out must be provided for, if requiring relief, where they happen to be.

As the burden of maintaining the poor is thrown on the parish of settlement, when the necessity for immediate relief arises in another parish the important question arises whether the pauper canbe removed; for, although the parish where the pauper happens to be must afford immediate relief without waiting for removal, the parish of settlement cannot in general be charged with the cost unless the pauper is capable of being removed. The question of removability is distinct from settlement. A pauper often acquires a status of irremovability without gaining a settlement.

Irremovability is a principle of great public importance quite irrespective of the incident of cost as between one parish or another. Before the introduction of a status of irremovability removal might take place (subject to powers of suspension in case of sickness and otherwise) after any

interval during which no legal settlement was obtained Eas

mere length of residence without concurrent circumstances involving the acquisition of a settlement on obtaining relief gave no right toa person to remain in the parish where he resided.

In 1846 it was enacted that no person should be removed nor any warrant granted for the removal of any

person from any parish in which such person has resided for five years (9 & 10 Vict. c. 66). In 1861 three years was substituted for five (24 & 25 Vict. ¢. 55); and only four years later one year was substituted for three (28 & 29 Vict. c. 79). Apart from these reductions of time in giving the status of irremovability, actual removals to the parish of settlement were narrowed by provisions giving to residence in any part of a union the same effect as a residence in any parish of that union (24 & 25 Vict. c. 55). On the other hand the time during which parish relief is received, or during which the person is in any poorhouse or hospital or in a prison, is excluded from the computation of time (9 & 10 Vict. c. 66).

The removability as well as the settlement of the family, 7.¢., of the wife and unemancipated children, are practically subject to one and the same general rule. Wherever any person has a wife or children having another settlement, they are removable where he is removable, and are not removable from any parish or place from which he is not removable (11 & 12 Vict. ¢. 211).

It is to be borne in mind that no person exempted from liability to be removed acquires, by reason of such exemption, any settle- ment in any parish; but a residence for three years gives a quali- fied settlement (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61).

The cost of relief of paupers rendered irremovable is borne by the common fund of the union (11 & 12 Vict. c. 110, § 3) as union expenses (§ 6), and any question arising in the union with reference to the charging relief may be referred to and decided by the local government board (§ 4).

The statute of Elizabeth required overseers to account to justices for all moneys received by them under rules or otherwise, and all expenditure for the relief of the poor, and to deliver over balances to their successors (43 Eliz, ce. 2, § 2). By the amendment of the poor laws in 1834 the duty of making payments was thrown chiefly on the guardians, leaving' the overseers to assess and collect the rates out of which such payments are chiefly made. The accounts of expenditure and receipts by all parties, includ- ing officers of union and treasurers, form a very important part of poor-law administration. The duties, including the forms of books of account, are minutely prescribed by orders of the central board, and the accounts are examined and audited half-yearly by auditors appointed by the board in auditory districts, the auditing by justices having ceased. Full powers are given to the auditors to make this examination effectual and to allow and disallow

.

Accounts

and ex pendi- ture.

accounts and items in them (see the Poor-Law Amend-.

ment Act, 1868, and Acts there recited).

It is to be observed that by various provisions in the poor-law Acts power has been given to raise money by borrowing. The Poor-Law Amendment Act 1835 author- izes applications for advances under several earlier Acts for building or enlarging workhouses or for purchasing land, and a subsequent Act authorizes the borrowing of money for payment of debts generally (5 & 6 Vict. c. 15).

The principal items comprised in the total amount expended in the relief of the poor in England and Wales during the years ending at Lady Day 1882 and 1883 are these :—

1882. 1883,

I. Indoor maintenance…….. ~~£1,831,595 | £1,869,505 oy Outdeor meets: eee ee 2,626,375 2,589,937 3. Maintenance of lunatics in asy~~ |

lums or licensed houses……., 1,059,460 1,098,322 4. Workhouse and other loans re- |

paid and interest ….....c.-..

and superannuations…….! 1,087,641 1,117,705 6. Other expenses of, or immediately

connected with, relief……. 1,296,523 1,303,416

Total relief to the poor…….) £8,252,797 | £8,409,070 DSCC MONIS ensuites… sna. ragaucuee 20,325 NAS

Adjusted cost of relief…..... ... £8, 232,472 | £8,353,292

1 To be made in consequence of the payments from the metropolitan common poor fund exceeding the payincnts made to that fund during cach year.

POOR

The comparison between the two years shows that with the exception of the outdoor relief there has been an inerease in eaeh item of expenditure. In this respeet the year 1882-83 forms no exception to its predeeessors, for the out relief is the only item in whieh there has been any deerease of late years.

Bringing the expenditure down to a later period, the compara- tive cost of the half years ended at Lady Day 1883 and 1884 stood thus :—1883, in maintenanee £982,586, out relief £1,269, 700, total £2,252,286 ; 1884, in maintenanee £978, 287, out relief £1,226,730, total £2,205,017. Therefore the eost for the half year 1884 had deereased—the in maintenance by £4299, and the outdoor relief by £42,970. The average priee of wheat per imperial quarter during the same half years was—1883, 40s. 11d. ; 1884, 38s. 11d.

In the article Lonpon tables have been given of the system of poor relief there. It must suffiee here to notiee that the eost of relief in the metropolis, eomprising thirty unions, has inereased sinee 1875. On the other hand the proportion whieh the eost of ontdoor relief bears to the cost of in maintenanee in the metropolis is eontinually decreasing. In 1883 the in maintenance was £586,933 and the outdoor relief £199,013. The expenditure for in and out relief in the metropolis for the Lady Day half years 1883 and 1884 stood thus—1883, £417,614 ; 1884, £425,310, an inerease of £7696. In the paroehial year 1883 the adjusted cost of relief was £2,172,294, being equal to a rate of 1s. 63d. on the rateable value.

It is satisfactory to find that the adnlt able-bodied paupers have been steadily diminishing in numbers during the last four years, both among indoor and outdoor paupers. Comparing 1883 with 1878, it appears that there has been a diminution of 25,775, or no less than 20°6 per eent., in the mean number of adult able-bodied persons receiving relief, and, if we take into aceount the inereased population, we find that the diminution has been 30°0 per eent. In the parochial year 1883 the mean number of adult able-bodied paupers was—indoor 21,558, outdoor 77,592, total 99,150. The above numbers do not inelude vagrants.

Although for many reasons it is considered desirable that as far as practieable out relief should be given in kind rather than in money, it will be seen by the following table for the parochial year 1883 taken from the unaudited half-yearly statements (and exclusive of relief given by the guardians in respect of sehool fees) how mueli more is given in money :—

Out-Door Relief.

Poor-Law Divisions.

In Money. In Kind.

The metropolis …….0+—+seeses £156,272 £38,623 Syaynite) (e126 1112700 ha BRORASRUB ERO RECA aCOS 198,657 52,029 Soup eenellan dereer sree inaeeesstes 193,353 34,606 TREC TeOh opgacnondl ononoasodaanepeenaor 126,155 55,486 SOP -WVESHEEIN. .000c0.0.0c-creeneeee 298,371 29,146 Wiest TCO... crareINOUME WESheLNs

stnescececseseoccesi 202,070 14,366 Vian, Gap ease ncnenerendenséac 234,644 12,967 INODBETODIN «<5. Se OCs 127,113 1,639 WW OIIGE Tr con aneenaeen tage eo ude qoosconc 282,487 10,824 | | ee EP £2,250,310 £294,312

The great differenee which exists in the several divisions in the manner of administering out relief is apparent. In the eastern division (comprising Essex, Suffolk, and Norfolk) nearly one-third of the outdoor relief was given in kind; while in the northern division (comprising Northumberland, Durham, Cumberland, and Westmoreland) nearly the whole was given in money.

The cost per head of relief on the mean number was in 1883 £10, 18s. 6d.; in 1873 it was £8, 14s. 1d.

It may be stated here that, whilst in the metropolis the cost of outdoor relief was in 1883 little more than one-third of that of the in maintenance, the expenditure on out relief in the remainder of England, with the exeeption of the north-western division, was eon- siderably in excess of that on in maintenanee, being in Wales more than four and a half times as great.

The mean number of paupers relieved in 1883 was—indoor 182,932, and out paupers (inclusive of those ehargeable to the poor rates who are in eounty and borough asylums or in licensed houses) 599,490, or a total mean number of 782,422, being a ratio of 29°6 per 1000 of the population. The mean number of paupers relieved in 1883 was smaller in proportion to the population by 101,266 (or 11°5 per eent.) than the mean number relieved in 1873, ten years before—a deerease, however, entirely owing to a reduction in the number of outdoor panpers.

Some remarkable finetuations took place in the number of vagrants relieved during the ten years ending in 1883. In 1873 the mean number of this elass of paupers was 2700. In 1881 it had riscn to 6979, an inerease of 158°5 per eent. In 1883 it had fallen to 4790, After the end of that parochial year it still further

deereased owing to the operation of the Casual Poor Aet, 1882, extending the periods for whieh vagrants may be detained in casual wards.

The increased cost of relief is attributable to some extent to the faet that the proportion whieh the mean number of paupers relieved in the workhouse bears to the mean number of paupers of all elasses is larger than it formerly was ; but it is also attributed partly to expenses ineurred in the ereetion of improved buildings, the substitution of paid officers for pauper help, and other similar items of expenditure ineurred for the purpose of seenring the more efficient administration of relief. ‘The yearly eost per head on the mean number of outdoor paupers has diminished during the last few years, and was smaller during 1883 than in any other year sinee 1873 with the exeeption of the year 1880.

The poor rate is the fund from which the cost of relief Poor is principally derived. The parochial taxation for this tte.

purpose in the statute of Elizabeth has been already noticed. As regards the subject matter of taxation the only subsequent absolute interference is in relation to saleable underwood, and also to rights of fowling, shoot- ing, or taking game or rabbits, and of fishing, where severed from the occupation of lands, and to mines of every kind not mentioned in the Act (see the Rating Act, 1874). The statute of Elizabeth enforced what are called duties of imperfect obligation; for it was, as has been seen, a duty before that statute to relieve the poor and necessitous, and the provisions of that Act were adapted to the enforcing of those duties in the way in which they could be practically carried out by enabling the parish officers to tax the inhabitants, whose representatives those officers are, for the actual performance of the obligations.

The Act gives persons aggrieved by any such tax a right of appeal—a right which has been fully exercised as well as regulated and affected by much subsequent legisla- tion. By the Parochial Assessment Act, 1836 (6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 96), closely following the poor-law amendment of two years before, no rate for the relief of the poor is of any force which is not made upon an estimate of the net annual value of the several hereditaments rated, that is to say, of the rent at which the same might reasonably be expected to let from year to year free of all usual tenant’s rates and taxes, and tithe

commutation rent charge, if any, and deducting therefrom the probable average annual cost of the repairs, insurance, and other expenses, if any, necessary to maintain them in a state to command such rent.

Nothing in the Act, however, altered or affected the principles or different relative liabilities according to which different kinds of hereditaments were previously liable. The statute of Elizabeth (extended in some respects as to places by 13 & 14 Charles IJ. c. 12) embraced two classes of persons subject to taxation— occupiers of real property and inhabitants in respect of personal property, although the rateability under the latter head was reluctantly conceded by the courts of law, and was in practice only partially acted upon. Inhabitants as such, in respect of ability derived fron the profits of stock — in trade or any other property, were, however, expressly relieved in 1840 by a temporary Act (3 & 4 Vict. c. a), since continued from time to time. It is solely by expir- ing laws continuance Acts (the last Act extending to the end of 1885) that the vast amount of personal pro- perty is relieved from the poor rate. This exemption, and the principle on which it is based, of course forms an important element in all questions of local and in many of imperial taxation.

As regards occupiers of land and houses, the correct principles as to the persons liable to be rated were, after many erroneous views and deeisions, established by the House of Lords in 1865 in the case of the Mersey docks. The only oeeupier exempt from the operation of the Aet of Elizabeth is the erown, on the general prin- ciple that such liabilities are not imposed on the sovereign unless expressly mentioned, and that principle applies to the direct and immediate servants of the crown, whose occupation is the oecupa-

tion of the crown itself. If there is a personal private beneficial occupation, so that the occupation is by the subject, that occupa- tion is rateable. Thus for apartments in a royal palace, gratui- tously assigned to a subject, who occupies them by permission of the sovereign but for the subject’s benefit, the latter is rateable ; on the other hand, where a lease of private property is taken in the name of a subject, but the oceupation is by the sovereign or her subjects on her behalf, no rate can be imposed. :

So far the ground of exemption is perfectly intelligible, but it has been carried a good deal further, and applicd to many cases in which it can scarcely be said naturally, but only theoretically, that the sovereign or the servants of the sovereign are in occupation. A long series of cases have established that when property is occu- pied for the purposes of the government of the country, including under that head the police, and the administration of justice, no one is rateable in respect of such occupation. And this applies not only to property occupied for such purposes by the servants of the great departments of state and the post office, the Horse Guards, and the Admiralty, in all which eases the oecupiers might strictly be called the servants of the crown, but to county buildings occupied for the assizes and for the judge's lodgings, to stations for the local constabulary, to jails, and to eounty courts where undertakings are earried out by or for the Government and the Government is in oecupation ; the same principles of exemption have been applied to property held by the office of works. ;

When the property is not de facto occupied by the crown or for the crown, it 1s rateable ; and, although formerly the uses of property for public purposes, even where the crown was not constructively interested in the way above pointed out, was treated as a ground for exeniption, it is now settled that trustees who are in law the tenants and oceupiers of valuable property in trust for public and even charitable purposes, such as hospitals or lunatic asylums, are in principle rateable notwithstanding that the buildings are actually occupied by paupers who are sick or insane, and that the notion that persons in the legal occupation of valuable property are not rateable if they occupy in a merely fiduciary character cannot be sustained.

With respect to the particular person to be rated where there is a rateable occupation, it is to be observed that the tenant, as dis- tinguished from the landlord, is the person to be rated ander the statute of Klizabeth ; but occupiers of tenements let for short terms may deduct the poor-rate paid by them from their rents, or the vestries may order such owners to be rated instead of the occupiers ;

such payments or deductions do not affect qualification and fran-, chises depending on rating (Poor-Rate Assessment and Collection |

Act, 1869, and Amendment Act, 1882).

To be rated the occupation must be such as to be of value, and in this sense the word beneficial occupation has been used in many eases. But it is not necessary that the occupation should be bene- ficial to the occupier ; for, if that were necessary, trustees oceupying for various purposes, having uo beneficial occupation, would not be liable, and their general liability has been established as indicated in the examples just given.

As to the mode and amount of rating it is no exaggeration to say that the application of a landlord-and-tenant valuation in the terms already given in the Parochial Assessment Act, with the deductions there mentioned, has given rise to litigation on which millons of pounds have been spent within the last half eentury, with respect to the rating of railways alone, although the established principle applied to them, after much consideration, is to calculate the value of the land as increased by the line.

The Parochial Assessment Act referred to (6 & 7 Will. IV. e. 96), comprising various provisions as to the mode of assessing the rate so far as it authorized the making of a valuation, was repealed in 1869, in relation to the metropolis, and other provisions made for securing uniformity of the assessment of rateable property there (32 & 33 Vict. ce. 67).

The mode in which a rate is made and recovered may be concisely stated thus. The guardians appoint an assessment committee of their body for the investigation and supervision of valuations, which are made out in the first instance by the overseers aecording to specific regulations and in a form showing among other headings the gross estimated rental of all property and the names of occupiers and owners, and the rateable value after the deductions specified in the Assessment Act already mentioned, and as prescribed by the central board. This valuation list, made and signed by the overseers, is published, and all persons assessed or liable to be assessed, and other interested parties, may, including the officers of other parishes, inspect and take copies of and extracts from that list. A multitude of provisions exist in relation to the valuation and supplemental valuation lists. Objections on the ground of unfairness or incorrect-

ness are dealt with by the committee, who hold meetings to hear and determine such objections.

by the committee, is delivered to the overseers, who proceed to

make _the rate in accordanee with the valuation lists and in a prescribed form of rate book. The parish officers certify to the examination and comparison of the rate book with the assessments,

LAWS

and obtain the eonscnt of justices as required by the statute cf Elizabeth. This consent or allowance of the rate is merely a ministerial act, and if the rate is good on the face of it the justices cannot inquire into its validity.

The rate is then published and open to inspection. Appeals may be made to special or quarter sessions against the rate, subject to the restriction that, if the objection were such that it might have been dealt with on the valuation lists, no appeal to sessions is permitted unless the valuation list had been duly objected to and the objector had failed to obtain such relief in the matter as he deemed to be just (see Union Assessment Acts).

In the metropolis a common basis of value for the purposes of government and local taxation is provided, including the promotion of uniformity in the assessment of rateable property. Provision is made for the appointment of an assessment committee by guardians

| or vestries, and for the preparation of valuation lists, and the

deposit and distribution of valuation lists, and for the periodical revision of valuation lists. Appeals against the valuation list are heard by justices in special sessions, upon whom spccial limited powers are conferred. General assessment sessions, principally for appeals affecting the tutal of the gross or rateable value of any parish as being too high or too low as compared with other parishes, are appointed for hearing and determining appeals, and. the lists are altered in accordance with their decisions, Those decisions may be questioned as in the case of decisions by courts of general or quarter sessions.

The valuation lists as approved by the assessment committee, or as altered on appeal, last for five years, and are conclusive evidence of gross and

rateable value for the purpose of various specified rates, including the poor rate ; and the poor rate is made by the parish officers in accordance with such valuation according to a form provided,—see Valuation (Metropolis) Act, 1869.

It is to be borne in mind that the amount raised by poor rates does not closely represent the amount actually expended on the relief of the poor. ‘The rates are made in reference to the prospec- tive amounts required, and various payments not connected with the maintenance of the poor are charged by various Acts of Parlia- ment on the poor rate.

Payment of poor rates, and of the costs incurred, is enforced on complaints to justices, and by distress warrants and imprisonment in default, Special statutory provision is made for this mode of recovery.

In conclusion, while giving full credit to the admirable way in which the English poor-law system, and the prin- ciples on which it is based, have been and continue to be promulgated and explained by the central authority to the guardians and others concerned in the administration of the laws (an advantage in which poor-law administration stands out distinct from any other), we must add that a consolidation of the statute law relating to poor is much needed. Dr Burn, writing a hundred and twenty years ago, spoke thus: —“If it may be reasonable to advance further still in speculation, perhaps a time may come when it shall be thought convenicnt to reduce all the poor laws into one. The laws concerning the poor may not improperly be compared to their apparcl. When a flaw is observed, a patch is provided for it, upon that another, and so on, till the original coat is lost amidst a variety of patch-work. And more labour and materials are expended (besides the clumsiness and motley figurc) than would have made an entire new suit.” Since that remote day the number of statutes has increased notwithstanding a multitude of re- peals. At the present time the Acts of Parliament affect- ing the poor laws of England alone, exclusive of Scotland and Ireland, number upwards of one hundred and thirty, and by far the greater portion of them have originated since the amendment of the poor laws in 1834.

Consoli- dation of “nglish poor laws desirable.

As to poor laws in other countries, the articles devoted Poor-law

to those countries must be referred to. that legal provision is made for paupers in every part of the United States. The poor-law system which obtains in the Statcs in its general features is similar to that which prevails in England so far as regards the mode of raising

the fund (viz., by way of rate) and the class of people to The valuation list, where approved | ie oF :) -_

whom relief is afforded. Each district (commonly a town, county, or city) provides for its own poor. In some of the States paupers having no legal settlement are re- lieved by the State Government (1834). The prevalence

It is to be observed systems of other

countries.

POP—POP

of slavery in the Southern States until its abolition modi- fied the system of relief.

The searching inquiry into the administration of the poor laws in 1832-34 was not confined to the United King- dom or to the States of America. Returns were obtained through the foreign ministers, and the result as to Europe is thus comprehensively stated by Nassau Senior in 1835: —‘‘A legal claim to relief exists in Norway, Sweden, Rus- sia, Denmark, Mccklenburg, Prussia, Wiirtemberg, Bavaria, and the canton of Bern, but does not exist in the Hanse- atic towns, Holland, Belgium, France, Portugal, the Sar- dinian states, Frankfort, Venice, Greece, or Turkey.” In the north of Europe the great peculiarity of the system is stated to be “the custom of affording relief by quartering the paupers on the landholders in the country and on house- holders in the towns.” Senior arrived at the conclusion that, in those portions of the Continent in which the Eng- lish principle of acknowledging in every person a right to be supported by the public existed, the compulsory relief had not, except perhaps in the canton of Bern, produced evils resembling either in intensity or extent those then experienced in the United Kingdom, and that in the major- ity of the nations that had adopted it the existing system appeared to work well. The poor

laws of Russia, however, if they could be called poor laws, were merely parts of her system of slavery.

The absence of poor laws in France, and the charitable establishments, many of them under state management, are noticed in the article France. Senior arrived at the conclusion that the comprehensive and discriminate system of public relief established in France in relation to these institutions was not so complete asin Belgium. For the poor there see BeLcium, where benevolent and charitable institutions and hospitals, charity workshops and depéts of mendicity or workhouses, and the bureaux de bienfaisance are noticed. The power of expulsion pour vagabondage exercised as a matter of daily routine in France operates as a restraint on vagrancy, although having a wider range than the English vagrancy laws. The majority of the indigent who receive public relief in France are foreigners.

The beneficent, including eleemosynary, institutions of united Italy are treated of under that head in ITaty.

The “pauper colonies” of Holland, established in the first quarter of the present century (the first idea of which seems to have been derived from a colony of Chinese in Java), attracted public attention in England and Europe generally about the time the provision ‘for the poor and the administration of the poor laws were under considera- tion, immediately before their reform in 1834. The object of the institutions in Holland was to remove those persons who were a burden to society to the poorest waste lands, where under judicious regulations they were enabled to the number of many thousands to provide for their own sub- sistence. It is remarkable that various schemes put forth in the 17th and 18th centuries for the reform of the British poor laws already cited teem with comparisons favourable to Holland. Sir Matthew Hale refers to the industry and orderly management prevailing in Holland and Flanders. Sir J. Child and others do the like.

Among various works on poor laws see Burn’s History and the modern work of Sir G. Nicholls; Nassau Senior’s Poor Laws of European States; Const’s aud Davis’s treatises; Glen’s Poor-law Orders ; Reports of Poor-Law Commissioners ; Reports of Poor-Law and Local Government Boards from 1834. (J. E. D.)

POPAYAN, a city of the republic of Colombia, capital of the state of Cauca, is situated in 2° 26’ N. lat. and 76° 49’ W. long., at a height of 5948 feet (EK. André, 1876), on the banks of one of the head streams of the Cauca in the great plain in the heart of the cordilleras. It was founded by Belalcazar in 1538 on the site of an Indian settlement, and in 1558 it received a coat of arms from the

48]

king of Spain and the title of “Muy noble y muy leal.” Pope Paul HI. made it a bishop’s see in 1547. By means of its gold mines and its share in the commerce between Quito and the valley of the Magdalena Popayan became a large and flourishing city ; but political disturbances and earthquakes (1827 and 1834) have reduced it to a place of 7000 to 10,000 inhabitants (8485 in 1870). It has a cathedral built by the Jesuits, several considerable churches, two seminaries founded about 1870 by French Lazarists (who occupy and have restored the old Jesuit convent), a mint, and a bank. The university was at one time celebrated ; and the city is the birthplace of Caldas the astronomer and Mosquera the geographer.

The volcano of Puracc, 20 miles south-east of the town, had according to Caldas a height of 17,000 feet, but André’s measurement gave only 16,102 feet. Froma vent 6 feet across at a height of 14,970 feet (Boussingault, 1831) steam and gas are discharged with violence sufficient to blow a man away like a straw. On the flanks of the mountain are several hot sulphurous springs and those of Coconuco are frequented by the Colombians.

POPE is the name given in England to a small fresh- water perch (Acerina cernua), also called Rurrs, which is generally distributed in the rivers of central Europe and common in most fresh waters of England. It was first made known by Dr Caius, a keen observer who lived in the middle of the 16th century, and is well known by his work De Canibus Britannicis. He found the fish in the river Yar, and figured it under the name of Aspredo, the Latin translation of ruffe, which name refers to the re- markable roughness of the scales with which it is covered. In general structure, shape, and habits the pope resembles much the common perch, but rarely exceeds a length of seven inches, and differs in its coloration, which is olive- brown with irregular darker spots on the body and numerous blackish dots on the

dorsal and caudal fins. It is most destructive to the fry of other fish, but in many parts of the country is esteemed as food. It spawns generally in the month of April.

POPE, ALEXANDER (1688-1744), was the most famous English poet of his century. His own century dwelt most upon his merits; the 19th century is disposed rather to dwell upon his defects, both as a poet and as a man, with a persistency and minuteness that more than counter- balance any exaggeration in the estimate formed when it was the fashion to admire his verse and treat his moral obliquity as a foible. Substantially, the best judgment of the two centuries is at one, only different sides are pro- minent in the bulk of current criticism. All are agrecd that he was not a poet of the first rank, and nobody can deny that he did certain things in literature in a way that has been the despair of all who have since attempted the same kind of thing. The great point of difference lies in the importance to be assigned to such work as Pope's satires. The polemic against his title to the name of poet would be contemptible were it not that beneath the dispute about the name there is a desire to impress on the public a respect for the highest kinds of poetry. The 19th century takes the poet's mission more scriously than the 18th. Similarly with Pope's moral delinquencies. With the exception of some details recently brought to light with an industry worthy of a better subject, his con- temporaries were as well aware of these delinquencies as we are now, only none but his bitter enemies were so earnest in denouncing them. "In this design," Johnson says in his comments on the Dunciad, "there was petulance and malignity enough, but I cannot think it very criminal." And this was the general verdict of his contemporaries about the poct's moral weakness. They knew that he was insinccre, intriguing, touchy, and spiteful, but, as nobody was much harmed by his conduct, they could not think it very criminal, Perhaps his physical weakness made them

more indulgent to his elfish and sprite-like temper. But,

apart from this, intriguing was the way of his world, a | ; tof : ‘ed | education was desultory and irregular.

fact too much kept out of sight when Pope is denounced for his crooked ways in little matters, as if he had lived in our own straightforward and virtuous age.

If we are to judge Pope, whether as a man or as a poet, with human fairness, and not merely by comparison with standards of abstract perfection, there are two features of his times that must be kept steadily in view—the character of political strife in those days, and the political relations of men of letters. As long as the succession to the crown was doubtful, and political failure might mean loss of property, banishment, or death, politicians, playing for higher stakes, played more fiercely and unscrupulously than in modern days, and there was no controlling force of public opinion to keep them within the bounds of common honesty. Hence the age of Queen Anne is pre-eminently an age of intrigue. The government was almost as un-settled as in the early days of personal monarchy, and there was this difference that it was policy rather than force upon which men depended for keeping their position. Secondly, men of letters were admitted to the inner circles of intrigue as they had never been before and as they have never been since. A generation later Walpole defied them, and paid the rougher instruments that he considered sufficient for his purpose in solid coin of the realm; but Queen Anne’s statesmen, whether from difference of tastes or difference of policy, paid their principal literary champions with social privileges and honourable public appointments. Hence men of letters were directly in- fected by the low political morality of the unsettled time. And the character of their poetry also suffered. The most prominent defects of our Augustan age in 19th- century eyes—the lack of high and sustained imagination, the genteel liking for “nature to advantage dressed,” the incessant striving after wit—were fostered if not generated by the social atmosphere. The works of the serious imagination could not thrive in a fashionable society, feverishly interested in the daily chances of intrigue for place‘and power.

Pope was peculiarly fitted by nature to take the im- press of his surroundings—plastic, sensitive, eagerly covetous of approbation. Affection

and admiration were as necessary to his life as the air he breathed. ‘‘ Pope was from his birth,” Johnson says, “of a constitution tender and delicate, but is said to have shown remarkable gentle- ness and sweetness of disposition. The weakness of his body continued through his life; but the mildness of his mind perhaps ended with his childhood.” Perhaps; but certainly to a much less degree with the friends who loved and honoured him. With them he was always more or less sweet and docile; his petulance and malignity were directed as by an instinct of self-preservation against those who baulked him in his craving for admiration, a spiritual food literally and physically essential to the sustenance of his fragile being.

_ If Pope had been a man of more robust and self-suffic- ing constitution, he had one great advantage for resisting the spirit of his age. He was cut off by the religion of his parents from all public employment. His father was a Roman Catholic, a merchant in Lombard Street,} London, who retired from business with a small fortune in the year of the Revolution, and fixed his residence at Binfield in Windsor Forest. Pope was born at Lombard Street on

| According to his own statement to Spence, his ‘‘ Conversations ” with whom are the chief authority for all the incidents of his youth. The value of the authority is much suspected. ‘‘ He was more willing to show what his father was not than what he was,” and Johnson

accepted the statement that he was ‘‘a linen-draper in the Strand.”

Pope’s vanity also renders doubtful in some details what he says about his own precocity.

_ having had a regular education. _ particular) read originally for the sense, whereas we are

| Dryden’s translation of Virgil’s Fclogues.

re Pe

May 22, 1688, but his father’s retirement to Binfield took place soon after his birth. The delicate child’s book His father’s religion excluded him from

the public schools, if there was no other impediment to his being sent there. Before he was twelve he got a smattering of Latin and Greek from various masters, from a priest in Hampshire, from a schoolmaster at Twyford near Winchester, from another in Marylebone, from a third at Hyde Park Corner, and finally from another priest at home. “He thought him- self the better,” Spence says, “‘in some respects for not He (as he observed in

taught for so many,years to read only for words.” This helps to explain his attack on Bentley in the Dunciad. He afterwards learnt French and Italian, probably to a similar extent. As far as the sense was concerned, he

‘ could get a dilution of that at least in translations, for all

poets of note—Greek, Latin, French, and Italian—had been translated into English verse in the course of the previous century: Of these translations the precocious boy availed himself voraciously, and by the age of twelve, when he was finally settled at home and left to himself, he was not only a confirmed reader, but an eager aspirant to the high- est honours in poetry. When at school in London he had crept into Will’s coffee-house to look at Dryden; he had lampooned his schoolmaster, and made a play out of Ogilby’s Ziad for his schoolfellows ; and, thinking him- self the greatest genius that ever was, he retired to the solitude of the forest to write a great epic ona mytho- logical subject, his hero being Alcander, a prince of Rhodes.

Nothing of Pope’s was printed till 1709, when he was twenty-one. The detachment from contemporary life in London which his father’s religion and retirement might have occasioned was prevented by one of the accidents of that position. Fortunately or unfortunately for him, there were among the Papist families near Binfield men capable of giving a direction to his eager ambition, men of literary tastes, and connexions with the literary world. These families held together as persecuted sects always do, and the family priests were mediums of communica- tion.

Through some such medium the retired merchant’s pre- cocious son was brought under the notice of Sir William Trumbull, a retired diplomatist living at Easthampstead, within a few miles of Binfield. At Whiteknights, near Reading, lived another Roman Catholic, Mr Englefield, ‘“‘a great

lover of poets and poetry.” Through him Pope made the acquaintance of Wycherley and Harry Cromwell, and Wycherley introduced him to Walsh, then of great renown as a critic. Thus the aspiring poet, before he was seventeen, was admitted to the society of London “wits” and men of fashion, and he was cordially encouraged as a prodigy. It may be doubted whether the company of these veteran relics of Restoration manners was much for the benefit of the moral tone of the bookish youth, who learnt from them to speak and write of the fair sex with a very knowing air of rakish gaiety. But he discussed poetry also with them, as was then the fashion, and soon under their influence his own vague aspirations received shape and direction.

Walsh’s contribution to his development was the advice to study “correctness,” as the one merit that was still possible for an English poet. But before he was intro- duced to Walsh, which was in 1705, he had already written the first draft of his “‘ Pastorals,” a subject on which Walsh was an authority, having written the preface to Trumbull’s

influence was earlier and more extensive. For him may

P®

fairly be claimed the credit of having been Pope’s school- master in poetry. It was he who turned Pope’s attention to the French critics, out of the study of whom grew the Essay on Criticism ; he suggested the subject of Windsor Forest, and he started the idea of translating Homer. When Trumbull first saw the precocious boy, he was hard at work on his great epic. He had probably chosen his subject on the first impulses of his crude ambition, because it was an established maxim at the time that a great epic is the greatest work of which the human mind is capable. It says something for Pope’s docility at this stage that he recognized so soon that a long course of preparation was needed for such a magnum opus, and began steadily and patiently to discipline himself. The epic was put aside and afterwards burnt; versification was industriously practised in shorter “essays”; and an elaborate study was made of accepted critics and models. When we look at the subjects of Pope’s juvenile attempts, we cannot fail to be struck by a singular clearness of purpose in his poetic ambition, such as might have come from the judgment of the accomplished man of the world who was his

adviser. He not only chose kinds of poetry in which there was an interest at the time, and a consequent like- lihood of gaining attention and winning applause, but he had an eye to subjects that had not already been appro- priated by great English poets, and in which success was still open to all comers. At the beginning of the 18th century Dryden's success had given great vogue to trans- lations and modernizations. The air was full of theories as to the best way of doing such things. What Dryden had touched Pope did not presume to meddle with,—

Dryden was his hero and master; but there was much |

more of the same kind to be done. Dryden had rewritten three of the Canterbury tales; Pope tried his hand at the Merchant's Tale, and the Prologue to the Wife of Bath's Tale, and produced also an imitation of the House of Fame. Dryden had translated Virgil ; Pope experimented on the Zhebars of Statius, Ovid's Heroides and Metamor- phoses, and the Odyssey. He knew little Latin and less Greek, but there were older versions in English whose metre he could improve upon and from which he could get a clue to the sense ; and, when the correspondents to whom he submitted his versions pointed out mistransla- tions, he could answer that he had always agreed with them, but that he had deferred to the older translators against his own judgment. It was oney of Pope's little vanities—very venial in a nature requiring such support —to try to give the impression that his metrical skill was more precocious even than it was, and we cannot accept his published versions of Statius and Chaucer (published

in "miscellanies" at intervals between 1709 and 1714) as | indisputable evidence of his proficiency at the age of |

fifteen or sixteen, the date, according to his own assertion, of their composition. But it is indisputable that at the age of sixteen his skill in verse was such as to astonish a veteran critic like Walsh, and that his verses were handed about in manuscript and admired by men then in the foremost rank in literature.

Chaucer, Spencer, Rochester, and Dorset, though dexterity is their only merit. His metrical letter to Cromwell, which Mr Elwin dates in 1707, when Pope was nineteen, is also a brilliant feat of versification, and has turns of

wit in it as easy and spirited as any to be found in his mature satires. “Ode to Solitude” to Cromwell, and said it was written before he was twelve years old. He may have retouched this; in all probability he did; perhaps every line of it was written when he was twenty-one ; but there is abundance of external evidence of his extraordinary precocity

There is no better proof of | his dexterity than his imitations, or rather parodies, of |

Pope was twenty-one when he sent the —

PE 483

as a metrician. He was vain enough to try to make it appear still more extraordinary than it was; but the attempt was hardly more puerile and comically superfluous than the solemn efforts of criticism to reduce his preten- sions. They are too solidly founded to be shaken either by his own vain superstructure or by the outraged critic’s vindictive undermining.

Precocious Pope was, but he was also industrious; and he spent some eight or nine years in arduous and enthusi- astic discipline, reading, studying, experimenting, taking the advice of some and laughing in his sleeve at the advice of others, “poetry his only business,” he said, “and idleness his only pleasure,” before anything of his appeared in print. In these preliminary studies he seems to have guided himself by the maxim formulated (after a French model) in a letter to Walsh (written at the date he gives, or later) that “it seems not so much the perfection | of sense to say things that have never been said before, as | to express those best that have been said oftenest.” His first publication was his “ Pastorals.” Tonson the bookseller had heard these pastorals highly spoken of, and he sent a polite note to Pope asking that he might have them for one of his miscellanies. They appeared accordingly in May 1709 at the end of a volume containing contributions from Philips, Sheffield, Garth, and Rowe, besides Pope’s version of Chaucer’s Merchant’s Tale. We have not space to show what can be said on both sides about these artificial compositions, avowedly designed to represent the manners of an imaginary golden age, when men of “ wit and refinement ” were shepherds. The worst that can be | said of them was said by implication in the Gwardian in 1713, when a case, which was afterwards

justified by Allan Ramsay, was made out for the representation of real English country life. Johnson, though he did not approve of pastorals in the abstract, said a word of common sense against exaggerated depreciation of Pope's attempt. Few persons are likely nowadays to put them- selves in a position for making a fair historical estimate | of Pope's pastorals. There was a passing fashion for the _kind of thing at the time, and possibly he wrote them under the impression that they offered a new field for poetic ambition in English, not knowing or forgetting what had been done by Giles Fletcher and Milton. Or he may have thought that a great poet should begin as | Virgil began with pastorals. At any rate his pastorals, though Johnson was right in remarking the " closeness of thought" shown in their composition, cannot be ranked high as poetry, however much superior to everything else written in a passing fashion.

Pope's next publication was the Hssay on Criticism. "Tn every work regard the writer's end," is one of its sen- sible precepts, and one that is often neglected by critics | of the essay, who comment upon it as if Pope's end had been to produce an original and profound treatise on first | principles. His aim was much less lofty—being simply to condense, methodize, and give as perfect and novel ex- | pression as he could to floating opinions about the poet's aims and methods, and the critic's duties, to "what oft was thought but ne'er so well expressed." "The town" was interested in belles lettres, and given to conversing on the subject ; Pope's essay was simply a brilliant contribu- tion to the fashionable conversation. The youthful author said with delicious loftiness that he did not expect the sale to be quick because "not one gentleman in sixty, even of liberal education, could understand it." But he misjudged his audience. The town was fairly dazzled by it—such learning, such comprehensiveness of judgment, such felicity of expression, was indeed a marvel in one so | young. Many of its admirers, doubtless, like Lady Mary | Montague, would have thought less of it if they had not

believed all the maxims to be original ; but people of fashion are seldom wide readers, and they gave Pope credit for much that they might have found, where he found it, in Quintilian, Rapin, and Bossu. "' The truth is,"

Mr Elwin says, “that Addison, by his encomiums and authority, brought into vogue the exaggerated esti- mate entertained of the essay.” Nothing could be more preposterously far from “ the truth.”

A better illustration could not be found of the critical vice that Pope censures of “forming short ideas” by attending to parts to the neglect of the whole. If the whole of Addison’s paper is read, it stands out in its true colours as a kindly gentle attempt to throw cold water on the enthusiasm about a work which had been published for some months and was already, as the paper admits, “highly esteemed by the best judges.” It is “a master-piece in its kind”; but people expect too much from the kind—originality, for instance. And again, it is “a masterpiece in its kind,” worthy of a place beside Roscom- mon’s Hssay on Translated Verse and Mulgrave’s Essay on the Art of Poetry! Most exaggerated encomiums these! How kindly, too, the paper opens by giving prominence to trivial incidents in the essay, one or two passing strokes of satire at Blackmore and Dennis. Bad poets are given. to detraction; they try to raise themselves by pulling down the reputation of their brothers in the art. A third of the whole paper is devoted to warning the young poet against a spirit of envy and detraction, all because he had thrown a stone in passing at two of the common butts of their generation. But this was Addison’s kindliness ; he wished to give the promising youth a lesson against a bad habit. Read the whole paper (Spectator, No. 253) and judge.

The Rape of the Lock in its first form appeared in 1712 in Linton’s Miscellany; the “machinery” of sylphs and gnomes was an afterthought, and the poem was repub- lished as we now have it early in 1714. This was his first poem written on an inspiration from real life, from nature and not from books. A gentleman had in a frolic surreptitiously cut off a lock of a young lady’s hair, and the liberty had been resented ; Pope heard the story from his friend Caryll, who suggested that it might be a sub- ject for a mock-heroic poem like Boileau’s Lutrin. Pope caught at the hint; the mock-heroic treatment of the pretty frivolities of fashionable life just suited his freakish sprightliness of wit, and his studies of the grand epic at the time put him in excellent vein. The Rape of the Lock is almost universally admitted to be his masterpiece. English critics from his own time to the present have competed in lauding its airiness, its ingenuity, its ex- quisite finish. But M.

Taine’s criticism shows how much depends upon the spirit in which such humorous trifles are approached. The poem strikes M. Taine as a piece of harsh, scornful, indelicate buffoonery, a mere succession of oddities and contrasts, of expressive figures unexpected and grinning, an example of English insensibility to French sweetness and refinement. Mr Leslie Stephen objects on somewhat different grounds to the poet’s tone towards women. What especially offends the French critic’s delicate sense is the bearishness of Pope’s laughter at an elegant and beautiful woman of fashion. Pope de- scribes with a grin of amusement all the particulars of the elaborate toilet with which Belinda prepared her beauty for conquest, and all the artificial airs and graces with which she sought to bewitch the heart of susceptible man. The Frenchman listens without sympathy, without appreciation, with the contemptuous wonder of a well-bred man at clownish buffoonery. What is there to laugh at ? Is she not preparing a beautiful picture? She cannot do this without powders and washes and paint-pots. What

POre

is there to langh at in this? It is mere matter of fact. The entire surrender of the female heart to little artifices for little ends does not apparently strike the Frenchman as ludicrous. Mr Stephen’s laughter is checked by the serious thought that this is a misrepresentation of women, that women are spoken of in the poem as if they were all like Belinda. But the Frenchman is not moved to laughter at all; it would seem as if his delight in the finished picture, the elegant. graceful captivating woman, hallowed every ingredient used in the making of it. Such are the differences in national humour. With English readers the change of manners since the fashionable party rowed up the river to spend a happy day at Hampton ig more likely to be an obstacle to the enjoyment of Pope’s airy extravagance.

In the interval between the first and the enlarged

edition of the ape of the Lock, Pope gave the finishing

touches to his Windsor Jorest, and published it in March 1713, with a flattering dedication to the secretary at war and an opportune allusion to the peace of Utrecht. This was a nearer approach to taking a political side than

Pope had yet made. His principle had been to keep clear of politics, and not to attach himself to any of the sets into which literary men were divided by party. Although inclined to the Jacobite party by: his religion, he was on friendly terms with the Whig coterie, so friendly indeed as to offend some of his co-religionists. He had contri- buted his poem “The Messiah” to the Spectator; he had written an article or two in the Guardian; and he wrote a prologue for Addison’s Cato. But Pope’s advances had not been received in a way to satisfy a man of his petulant and exacting temper. Mr Elwin is much mistaken in supposing that Addison helped to bring Pope into notice in the Spectator. We have seen how he treated the Hssay on Criticism. When the Rape of the Lock was published, Addison is said to have praised it to Pope himself as merum sal, but he was much more guarded in the Spectator. There he dismissed one of the gems of English literature with two sentences of patronizing faint praise to the young poet whom he rejoiced to see getting on, coupled it with. Tickell’s “ Ode on the Prospect of Peace,” and devoted the rest of the article to an elaborate puff of “the pastorals of Mr Philips.” We have only to look at the shameless pufiery of the members of the little senate, not only in this article but throughout all the periodicals of the coterie, to see how little the young Mr Pope owed to Addison.

When Pope showed a leaning to the Tories in Windsor Forest, the coterie, so far from helping him, made in- sidious war on him—not open war but underhand war. Within a few weeks of the publication of the poem, and when it was the talk of the town, there began to appear in the Guardian a series of articles on “ Pastorals.” Nota word was said about Windsor Forest, but everybody knew to what the general principles referred. Modern pastoral poets were ridiculed for introducing Greek moral deities, Greek flowers and fruits, Greek names of shepherds, Greek sports and customs and religious rites. They ought to make use of English rural mythology—hobthrushes, fairies, goblins, and witches; they should give English names to their shepherds ; they should mention flowers indigenous to English climate and soil; and they should introduce English proverbial sayings, dress, and customs. All ex- cellent principles, and all neglected by Pope in Windsor forest. The poem was fairly open to criticism in these points ; there are many beautiful passages in it, -showing close though somewhat professional observation of nature, but the mixture of heathen deities and

conventional archaic fancies with modern realities is incongruous, and the comparison of Queen Anne to Diana was ludicrously

infelicitous. But the sting of the articles did not lie in the truth of the oblique criticisms. ‘The pastorals of Mr Philips,” published four years before, were again trotted out. Here was a true pastoral poet, the eldest born of Spenser, the worthy successor of Theocritus and Virgil ! Pope’s pastorals have their defects, great defects, but it was an unkind cut to him to prefer such trash, and with such audacious emphasis. It was an-affront, but so contrived that the sufferer could not retaliate without putting himself in the wrong, a mean backbiting provocation, the action of a critic “willing to wound and yet afraid to strike.”

Pope took an amusing revenge, which turned the laugh against his assailants. He sent Steele an anonymous paper in continuation of the articles in the Guardian on pastoral poetry, reviewing the poems of Mr Pope by the light of the principles laid down. Ostensibly Pope was censured for breaking the rules, and Philips praised for conforming to them, quotations being given from both. The quotations were sufficient to dispose of the pretensions of poor Philips, and Pope did not choose his own worst passages, accusing himself of actually deviating sometimes into poetry. Although the Gwardian’s principles were also brought into ridicule by burlesque exemplifications of them after the manner of Gay’s Shepherd’s Week, Steele, misled by the opening sentences, was at first unwilling to print what appeared to be a direct attack on Pope, and asked Pope’s consent to the publication, which was graciously granted.

The relations between Pope and his Whig friends were further strained by one or two little incidents about the same time. The truculent Dennis attacked both Pope’s Rape of the Lock and Addison’s Cato. Pope said nothing in his own defence, but—we were very obliging in those days—defended his friend Addison in a Narrative of the Frenzy of John Dennis. The attack was so coarse that Addison sent Steele to Dennis to disclaim all connexion with it. Then Pope asked his friend Addison’s advice about the enlargement of the Rape of the Lock, and Addison advised him to leave it as it was, which advice the man who had asked it attributed to jealousy.

The estrangement was completed in connexion with Pope's translation of Homer. This enterprise was defini- tively undertaken in 1713. The work was to be published by subscription as Dryden's Virgil had been. Men of all parties subscribed, their unanimity being'a striking proof of the position Pope had attained at the age of twenty- five. It was as if he had received a national commission as by general consent the first poet of his time. But the unanimity was broken by a discordant note. A member of the Addison clique, Tickell, attempted to run a rival version. There was nothing criminal in this, but it was an irritating continuation of the cold grudging treatment that Pope had all along received from the same quarter. Pope suspected Addison's instigation ; Tickell had at least Addison's encouragement. Pope's famous character of Ad- dison, if not true in the main, is at least a strictly fair description, inspired not by malignity but by legitimate resentment, if resentment is ever legitimate, of Addison's treatment of himself as he was rising into fame! Pope afterwards claimed to have been magnanimous, and he is suspected of having supported this claim by petty inven- tions in his account of the quarrel. Magnanimity he could not fairly claim ; but he did not attack without pro- vocation.

The translation of Homer was Pope's chief employment "1A very different view is argued by Mr Elwin (with strange blind- ness, as the present writer thinks, to the cardinal circumstances here set forth), in his introductions to Windsor Forest, the Essay on Criticism, and the Rape of the Lock. See also Mr Leslie Stephen's Pope, and Mr Courthope's Addison.

for twelve years. The new pieces in the miscellanies pub- lished in 1717, his "Elegy on an Unfortunate Lady" and his ''Eloisa to Abelard," were probably written some years before their publication. The Jliad was delivered to the subscribers in instalments in 1715, 1717, 1718, and 1720. For the translation of the Odyssey he took Fenton and Broome as coadjutors, who between them translated twelve out of the twenty-four books.? It was completed in 1725. The profitableness of the work was Pope's chief temptation to undertake it. He cleared more than £8000 by the two translations, after deducting all payments to coadjutors—a much larger sum than had ever been received by an English author before. Pope, with

his economical habits, was rendered independent by it, and enabled to live nearer London. The estate at Binfield was sold, and he removed with his parents to Chiswick in 1716, and in 1718 to Twickenham, to the residence with which his name is associated. Here he held his little court, and was visited by his intimates Arbuthnot, Gay, Bolingbroke (after his return in 1723), and Swift (during his brief visits to England in 1726 and 1727), and by many other friends of political eminence. Martha Blount, after his mother's death in 1733, was occasionally domiciled in his house.

The translation of Homer established Pope's reputation with his contemporaries, and has endangered it ever since it was challenged. It was the Homer chiefly that Words- worth and Coleridge had in their eye when they began the polemic against the "poetic diction" of the 18th century, and struck at Pope as the arch-corruptor. They were historically unjust to Pope, who did not originate this diction, but only furnished the most finished examples of it. Mr Leslie Stephen has asked in what the much abused pseudo-poetic diction consists. A long analysis would be required to answer the question in detail, but in substance it consisted in an ambition to "rise above the vulgar style," to dress nature to advantage—a natural ambition—when the arbiters of literature were people of fashion. If one compares Pope's "Messiah," or "Eloisa to Abelard," or an impassioned passage from the liad, with the originals that he paraphrased, one gets a more vivid idea of the consistence of pseudo-poetic diction than could be furnished by pages of analysis. But Pope merely used the established diction of his time. A passage from the Guardian, in which Philips was commended as against him, shows in a single example the great aim of fashion- able poets in those days. "It is a nice piece of art to raise a proverb above the vulgar style and still keep it easy and unaffected. Thus the old wish, 'God rest his soul,' is very finely turned :—

"Then gentle Sidney liv'd, the shepherd's friend, Eternal blessings on his shade attend."

Pope would have despised so easy a metamorphosis as this, for, just as dress is often valued for what it cost the wearer, so the poetic dress of nature was esteemed in pro- portion to the poet's labour and ingenuity in devising it. The work of his coadjutors and imitators in the Odyssey may be

distinguished by this comparative cheapness of material. Broome's description of the clothes-washing by Nausicaa and her maidens in the sixth book may be com- pared with the original as a luminous specimen.

The year 1725 may be taken as the beginning of the third period of Pope's career, when he made his fame as a moralist and a satirist. In point of sheer literary power the works then composed are his greatest, but the subjects chosen belong essentially to the lower levels of poetry. Why did Pope, when his independence was secured and he was free to choose, "take to the plains,"

21, 4, 19, and 20 are by Fenton; 2, 6, 8, 11, 12, 16, 18, 23 by Broome.

to use Wordsworth's plirase, "when the heights were within his reach"? His choice was determined partly by character and partly by circumstances. whether Pope had the staying power necessary for the composition of a great imaginative work, whether his crazy constitution would have held together through the strain. He toyed with the idea of writing a grand epic. He told Spence that he had it all in his head, and gave him a vague (and it must be admitted not very promising) sketch of the subject and plan of it. But he never put any of it on paper. He shrank as with instinctive repul- sion from the stress and strain of complicated designs. Even his prolonged task of translating weighed heavily on his spirits, and this was a much less formidable effort than creating an epic. He turned rather to designs that could be accomplished in detail, works of which the parts could be separately laboured at and put together with patient care, into which happy thoughts could be fitted that had been struck out at odd moments and in ordinary levels of feeling.

The Dunciad (1728) was the first work of the new period. Circumstances turned him to satire when he was free from the Odyssey, and from his edition of Shake- speare, a bookseller's commission completed in the same year. Young's satire, Zhe Universal Passion, had just appeared and been received with more enthusiasm than anything published since Pope's own early successes. This alone would have been powerful inducement to Pope's emulous temper. Swift was finishing Gulliver's Travels, and came over to

England in 1726. The survivors of the Scriblerus Club—Swift, Pope, Arbuthnot, and Gay— resumed their old amusement of parodying and otherwise ridiculing bad writers, especially bad writers in the Whig interest. A volume of their jeww @esprit was published in 1727. According to Pope's own history of the Dunciad, the idea of it grew out of this. Among the miscelldnies was a "Treatise on the Art of Sinking," in which poets were classified, with illustrations, according to their emin- ence in the various arts of debasing instead of elevating their subject. No names were mentioned, but the speci- mens of bathos were assigned to various letters of the alphabet, most of them taken at random. But no sooner was the treatise published than the infatuated scribblers proceeded to take the letters to themselves, and in revenge to fill the newspapers with the most abusive falsehoods and scurrilities they could possibly devise. "This gave Mr Pope the thought that he had now some opportunity of doing good, by detecting and dragging into light these common enemies of mankind," who for years had been anonymously aspersing almost all the great characters of the age.

The truth probably lies between this account and that adopted by those who take the worst view of Pope's character. This is that he was essentially vindictive and malignant, and that, as soon as his hands were free from Homer, he proceeded to settle old scores with all who had not spoken as favourably as he liked about himself and his works. The most prominent objects of his satire can be shown to have given him personal offence—Theobald, Cibber, Dennis, Lintot, and others. This indeed was avowed by Pope, who claimed that it was their attacks on himself that had given hima right to their names. We may admit that personal spite influenced Pope at least as much as disinterested zeal for the honour of literature, but in the dispute as to the comparative strength of these motives, a third is apt to be overlooked that was probably Stronger than either. This was an unscrupulous elfish love of fun, and delight in the creations of a humorous Imagination. Certainly to represent the Dunciad as the outcome of mere personal spite is to give an exaggerated

It may be doubted | | graceful in his malice, writing more in fun than in anger,

FP OCP

idea of the malignity of Pope’s disposition, and an utterly wroug impression of the character of his satire. He was not a morose, savage, indignant satirist, but airy and

revengeful perhaps and excessively sensitive, but restored to good-humour as he thought over his wrongs by the ludicrous conceptions with which he invested his adver- saries. We do not feel the bitterness of wounded pride in his writings, but the laughter with which that pride was consoled. He loved his own comic fancies more than he hated his enemies. His fun at the expense of his victims was so far cruel that he was quite regardless of their sufferings, probably enjoyed them; but it was an impish and sprite-like cruelty, against which we cannot feel any real indignation because it is substantially harm- less, while its ingenious antics never fail to amuse. Even when he exults in the poverty and material distresses of his victims, the coarseness of the matter is redeemed by the irresponsible gaiety of the manner. Such things should not be taken too seriously, if a Scotsman may say so. Further, even if Pope is regarded as a bitter malignant, it must be with two important qualifications. His plea that he was never the aggressor in a quarrel, in spite of all Mr Elwin’s’ special pleadings to the contrary, was a truthful plea, though his sensitiveness to criticism was such as to make him faucy slights, and the with- holding of praise where praise was due would have been construed. by him as a positive offence. And his literary conscience was so strong that not one of his attacks on literary grounds was unjust. Pope was a most generous critic of real merit. The only doubtful exception is the case of Bentley, whom he satirized in the reconstruction and enlargement of the Dunciad made in the last years of his life at the instigation, it is said, of Warburton. Looked at apart from personal questions, the Dunciad is the greatest feat of the humorous imagination in English poetry.

There was much more of unjust judgment in Pope’s Satires and Epistles of Horace Imitated, published at intervals between 1733 and 1738, because in them he oftener wrote of what he did not personally know, and was the mouthpiece of the animus of his political friends. These friends were all in opposition to Walpole, who was then at the height of his power, and the shafts of Pope’s satire were directed at the adherents of the great minister. Pope’s satires give the concentrated essence of the bitter- ness of the

opposition. We see gathered up in them the worst that was thought and said about the court party when men's minds were heated almost to the point of civil war. To appreciate fully the point of his allusions requires of course an intimate acquaintance with the political and social gossip of the time. But apart from their value as a brilliant strongly-coloured picture of the time Pope's satires have a permanent value as literature. It is justly remarked by Pattison! that "these Jmita- tions are among the most original of his writings." The felicity of the versification and the diction is universally admired.

The Hssay on Man (1732-34) was also intimately con- nected with passing controversies.2 It belongs to the same intellectual movement with Butler's Analogy—the effort of the 18th century to put religion on a rational basis. But Pope was not a thinker like Butler. The subject was suggested to him by Bolingbroke, who is said also—and the statement is supported by the contents of his posthumous works—to have furnished most of the arguments. Pope's contribution to the controversy con- sisted in brilliant epigram and illustration. In this di-

' In his incomparable edition of the Satires and Epistles. 2 See Pattison's edition of the Essay on Man.

dactic work, as in his Hssay on Criticism, he put together on a sufficiently simple plan a series of happy sayings, separately elaborated, picking up the thoughts as he found them in miscellaneous reading and conversation, and try- ing only to fit them with perfect expression. The want of logical coherence in his system was shown by the very different interpretations put upon it. Dealing as it did in incomparably brilliant fashion with a subject of living interest, the Hssay at once attracted attention both at home and abroad, and Pope was attacked by a Swiss professor as an ally of the freethinkers. But a champion of his orthodoxy was found in Warburton. Pope was so delighted with the pugnacious paradoxist's reply to De Crousaz that he made Warburton's acquaintance. The readiness with which Pope allowed Warburton to take possession of himself and his works in his old age was not a symptom of senile weakness. It was an act of that characteristic business-like acuteness which he showed throughout in the

management of his reputation. He saw that as long as Warburton was the authorized com- mentator on his works there was not likely to be any lack of critical debate about him and about them.

The Lssay on Man, which may be said to contain the essence of the thought of men of the world in his genera- tion on its subject—such was the poet's skill and judg- ment in collecting the substance of floating opinion—was announced by Pope as part of a system of "'pieces on human life and manners." Whether Warburton was authorized or not in his sketch of Pope's intentions, the so-called Moral Essays (published at intervals between 1731 and 1735) which Warburton connected with the general plan have each an independent interest. They contain some of the most brilliant of Pope's satirical portraits, and his famous theory of "the ruling passion." If space permitted it might easily be shown that in this theory Pope proved himself a better psychologist than Macaulay, who subjects it to much misunderstanding ridicule.

Pope died on the 30th May 1744, and was buried in the church of Twickenham. His own ruling passion was what a poet of his generation described as the universal passion, the love of fame. Under the influence of this passion he tried to support his reputation by intrigues such as the statesmen of his time used in climbing the ladder and keeping themselves in place. He had no moral scruple where this was concerned—everything gave way before the ruling passion. or some of these intrigues, so incon- gruous with our idea of a poet's character, he has suffered severe retribution. Especially of late years he has been violently denounced as little better than a common swindler for his petty manceuvres in connexion with the publication of his letters—letters designed to exhibit him as a pattern of friendship, magnanimity, and all the virtues. These manceuvres, which were first tracked with great patience and ingenuity by Mr Dilke,! are too intricate to be recorded in short space. This, in effect, is what he seems to have done. He collected his letters from his friends, retouched them, changed dates and passages to suit the picture of himself which he wished to present, deposited the collection thus manipulated in the safe-keeping of the earl of Oxford, then sent a printed book of them to Curll, and intrigued to make it appear that they had been fraudulently pub- lished without his consent. It was a ridiculously petty action, but to characterize it as Mr Elwin

has done will be fair when it is customary to use similar language about the intrigues of statesmen and diplomatists. Pope at present is not to call a spade a spade, but a molehill a mountain. Recent revelations have not affected by one iota Johnson's judgment of his character. The man who

1 See Papers of a Critic.

To apply it to |

"played the politician about cabbages and turnips," and "hardly drank tea without a stratagem," was not likely to be straightforward in a matter in which his ruling passion was concerned. Against Pope's petulance and "general love of secrecy and cunning" have to be set, in any fair judg- ment of his character, his exemplary conduct as a son, the affection with which he was regarded in his own circle of intimates, and many well-authenticated instances of genuine kindliness to persons in distress. (w. M.) POPEDOM.? Both the ecclesiastical and the temporal authority formerly exercised and still claimed by the popes of Rome profess to be of divine appointment, appealing in the first place to the language of the New Testament, and in the next to the tradition of the church, handed down, as it is asserted, in unbroken continuity from apostolic times to the present age. According to the theory thus put forth, Peter the apostle was indicated by Christ Himself as superior to the rest of the twelve in faith and spiritual discernment, and as the one of the number whom it was His design to invest with special pre-eminence.

In like manner, the church itself which Peter was after- st Peter wards to found and to preside over was predestined to a at Rome.

like superiority among other churches, while his personal superiority was to be vested in perpetuity in his successors. In conformity with this divine design Peter, accompanied by Paul, went to Rome after Christ's death, and founded there a church over which he presided as its bishop for twenty-five years,—from the first year of the reign of Claudius, 41 A.D., to 67 a.p.,—eventually suffering martyr- dom in the same year and on the same day as St Paul, in the persecution under Nero. And, if we accept the records

preserved in the Roman Church, we shall believe that St Peter's successors, so long as Christianity was the object of state persecution, continued heroically to encounter the same glorious fate, the distinction of martyrdom being assigned in the Roman calendar to all but two of the bishops of Rome from Linus to Eusebius (see list at con- clusion of article).

In dealing with a subject in which the evidence is frequently ambiguous and conflicting, and sometimes of more than doubtful genuineness, and with a period of much obscurity, no amount of research will often serve to point to more than a conjectural conclusion. But, inas- much as it is on the basis of the assumptions involved in the above theory that the claims of the Church of Rome mainly rest, it will be desirable to state, as concisely as possible, the main facts and arguments on which those who deny these assumptions ground their contrary opinion.

The question whether or no St Peter was designed for Theory of pre-eminence among the apostles resolves itself, it is his pre-

evident, into one of New Testament criticism ; but from the time of Origen, who visited Rome early in the 3d century, when the theory first began to be put forward, there has always been a certain section in the church who have distinctly repudiated the affirmative assumption. "For if," says Origen, " you hold that the whole church was built by God on Peter alone, what will you say con- cerning John, the son of thunder, and each of the other apostles?" (Migne, Patrologia Greca, xiii. 397). Next, as regards the evidence for St Peter's presence in Rome and lengthened labours there, as the head of. a Christian con- gregation, it is maintained by the great majority of Protestant scholars that there is no proof that he was ever in Rome at all; that the "Babylon" referred to in his first epistle (ch. v. 13) is really the distant city of the

2 The design of the present article is simply to give the main outlines of the history of the Papacy as an institution ; the details connected with the personal history of each pontiff will be found under the respective names of the different popes. The dates immediately after the name of each pope denote the period of his pontificate.

The Jews at Rome.

Passage in Suet- onius.

East ; and that, even if his presence in Rome be admitted, his arrival there must have been long subsequent to that of his brother apostle, and his labours altogether subordi- nate in importance,—conclusions supported by the com- plete silence observed in the Acts of the Apostles respecting both him and his work in the capital of the empire. On the other hand, it is urged that, as no known tradition assigns the martyrdom of Peter to any other place than Rome, every allusion to that event is implicitly an argu- ment for his visit to the capital; and, generally speaking, it may be said that the most recent and authoritative research seems to point to the conclusion that he both visited Rome and taught there, but that his labours were carried on in a spirit of rivalry, not to say antagonism, to those of Paul, being bestowed exclusively on a Judaizing church, while those of his fellow-apostle were devoted to the Gentile community. Of the important feature which harmonizes perfectly with these conclusions—namely, that the Church of Rome, attaching itself directly to the church at Jerusalem, became the depositary of a Jewish-Christian rather than of a Pauline tradition—there can be no doubt whatever.

The existence of a considerable poor Jewish element in Rome as early as the latter half of the Ist century is attested by numerous facts and allusions in the classical writers. The Jews were everywhere actively engaged in commercial pursuits, and formed an influential section in all great centres. Josephus tells us that, when on one occasion the Jews of Palestine presented a petition to the emperor Augustus, it was supported by no less than eight thousand of their countrymen resident in the capital. The chief quarters of this Jewish colony were in the Trastevere, about the base of the Janiculum; and its members were distinguished by the fidelity with which they cherished their national customs and beliefs., Both Nome and the Jewish community in its midst must accordingly have appeared a field of primary importance in the work of evangelization ; and it is evident that the questions raised by the claims of Christianity would there be discussed with the greatest ardour, and the most strenuous endeavours be made to bring them to an ultimate issue. That such was really the case is suffi- ciently

proved by a well-known passage in Suetonius, who relates that about the middle of the lst century there were constant riots among the Jewish population, their ringleader being one “Chrestus,” and that Claudius in consequence expelled them from the city. There is no reason for supposing that this section of the community would be estranged to any great degree, by the pursuits and associations of their daily life, from those by whom they were surrounded. The influences that then pervaded alike the Roman literature, culture, and civilization were mainly Greek, and the Jewish element was no less affected by these influences than the Latin. Greek, again, was the ordinary medium of commercial intercourse throughout the Roman world, and the Jew was largely engaged in commerce. Greek therefore had, except in the Syrian provinces, become the language of his daily life, as it had long been that of his sacred books read aloud in the synagogues, and of the annals of his race as recorded by the national writers.

The importance of the passage above referred to in Suctonius, of which the very inaccuracy which it embodies is In itself highly significant, has perhaps hardly been sufficiently recognized, for it not only records an important fact but it sheds light on subsequent history. It enables us to understand that, when the Jewish population was permitted to return to Rome, its members, whether adherents of the national faith or converts to the new, would, in common with the whole Christian community,

PZO” Pa) FO BI

feel the necessity of extreme caution lest their religious observances or their religious differences should aga‘n attract the notice of the Roman magistrate and expose them to fresh persecution. Of this character would appear to be the sentiments indicated in. the epistle of Clemens Romanus (supposed by some to have been the same with the Clemens whose name is inserted as that of the third bishop of Rome) when he refers to the sudden and repeated “calamities and adversities which are befalling us”—a passage generally interpreted as having reference to the persecution under Nero and the impending persecution under Domitian (Lightfoot, Append., p. 267). In such considerations as these we may fairly consider that we have a

reasonable explanation of the fact that during the first two centuries of its existence we hear so little of the Christian church in Rome.

With such considerations before us, it is scarcely necessary to point out that Greek was also the language of the early Christian church in Rome. In whatever propor- tions, therefore, that church was composed of Christianized Jews or of Christianized pagans, its records would naturally be, as we find them to have been, in the Greek language. Hegesippus, “the father of church history,” makes a statement which is generally understood to imply that, being in Rome in the time of Anicetus (bishop 1551— 168 a.p.), he made a list of the bishops of the see. This list is not extant; but in Irenzeus, who wrote his Adversus Hereses a few years later, we have another Greek list of twelve bishops, which shows the succession accepted at Rome in the time of Eleutherius, the contemporary of Trenzeus, and at the head of which stand the names of both Peter and Paul. To these lists are to be added two other Greek lists, the one in the Chronicon of Eusebius, the other in the Zcclestastical History of the same writer. Of these, the former extends from Peter to Gaius (the last bishop before the Diocletian persecution), and gives the periods of office. It is derived from the Armenian translation, but is not contained in the version by Jerome. The first Latin list, the Catalogus Liberranus,—supposed by Mommsen to have been derived from the Chronicon of Hippolytus, bishop of Portus, and to have been in turn

‘the original from which the Catalogus Felicianus (the

oldest existing version of the Liber Pontificalis,—see infra) was taken,—is so called because it was compiled in the episcopate of Liberius, who succeeded 352 a.p. We have also two other Latin lists of some authority, in Augustine (£pist. 53; Migne, Patrol., xxxill. 195) and in Optatus (De Schism. Don., ii. 3).

It is undeniable that in all the foregoing lists there are considerable discrepancies. The Liberian catalogue gives us a certain “Cletus,” as the immediate predecessor of Anacletus; scholars lke Mommsen and Lipsius are divided in opinion as to whether Anicetus was the pre- decessor or the successor of Pius; while, as regards the duration of each episcopate, there are equally important discrepancies. But difficulties like these cannot justly

pre- judice our acceptance of the general tradition with which they are associated ; they are rather to be looked upon as supplying valuable incidental evidence with respect to the status of the Roman episcopate ; and, while the lists themselves prove, on the one hand, that before the termination of the 3d century the office was held to be of such importance that its succession was a matter of interest to ecclesiastics living in distant sees, the variations that the lists present indicate not less clearly that the Roman bishopric at this period could not have held that position in relation to the church—the parallel to that of the

1 For this date see article “ Pope” in Smith’s Dict. of Christian Antiquities, p. 1657.

Earliest lists of the Roman

bishops.

ROPEDO ™M

imperial office in the empire—claimed for it by writers like Bellarmine.

The comparative history of institutions would, in itself, incline us to look for a less precise and exalted conception of the office, as discharged by these early bishops, than when, after a lapse of centuries and a succession of varied experiences, its duties and responsibilities had become defined and developed ; but it is also a fact of considerable significance that those who were elected to the office from the time of Clement were for the most part men whose very names would probably not have survived but for their appearance in these lists, and that, even when, in one or two instances, their individual careers emerge from the general obscurity, they themselves appear as speaking and acting ina manner which seems hardly compatible with those exalted prerogatives which, as some maintain, were inherent in the office from its first commencement. In

Epistle of the recently recovered portion of the epistle of Clemens — Romanus, above cited, it is, for example, highly signi- omanus: ficant to find that the letter purports to emanate, not from

the “bishop of Rome,” but from “the church at Rome,” and to find again that, even so late as the 2d century,

489

was on the occasion of a sentence of excommunication which Vicror I. (c. 190-202 a.p.) had pronounced upon certain bishops in the province of Asia Minor,! on account of their refusal to celebrate Easter at the particular time enjoined by the church in Rome. Victor appears not to have had recourse to this extreme measure until after he had consulted with his episcopal brethren in Palestine, Pontus, Gaul, and Corinth; but Irenzeus, notwithstand- ing, remonstrates boldly with him on the rigour of his proceeding, and on the impolicy of thus cutting himself off from an important section of the church on a mere matter of ceremonial observance. We find again Tertullian, who during his residence in Rome had acquired a certain practical knowledge of the administrative characteristics of its church, implicitly intimating his disapproval in his treatise De Pudicitia (sec. i.) of the assumption by the Roman bishop of the titles of “pontifex maximus” and ‘‘episcopus episcoporum”; in another of his treatises (De Virgin. veland.;? Migne, Patrol., pp. 767-8), he distinctly impugus the claim made by ZerpHyRINUS (202-218) of a certain superiority in the Roman see derived as a tradition from St Peter.

this letter is in like manner referred to as emanating from the community, and not from the individual. This feature, indeed, is not a little suggestive with respect to the de- velopment of the Roman supremacy. While the letter is

The evidence with which we are presented for the rest Evidence of the 3d century is of a similar character. Ca iisTus @forded (218-223), the successor to Zephyrinus, was originally a ale Christian slave in Rome during the bishopric of Victor, Canistus.

wanting inf anything that implies any special pre-eminence on the part of the Roman bishop, it is at the same time characterized by a certain admonitory tone, such as could hardly have been assumed if the community by whom it was sent had not been held to possess a recognized superi- ority over the community to whom it is written, but this superiority is not greater

than would naturally belong (not- withstanding their common founder) to the church in imperial Rome as contrasted with the church at subject Corinth,—to the church of the august capital from whence emanated the laws which governed the empire and the church of the fallen city which, two centuries and a half before, the Roman arms had well nigh effaced from existence.

If again we accept as genuine the evidence afforded in

Letters of those seven letters of Ignatius which most critics are dis-

Ignatins. posed to accept as genuine, the relations of the Roman | admission of candidates to ecclesiastical orders, and also Church to the other churches of the empire appear to be | undue connivance at marriages dishonourable to those pro- of the same character. Ignatius, when, on his way to | fessing the Christian faith ; while Zephyrinus is depicted Rome (probably early in the 2d century) to suffer | asa man of but little intelligence and of ignoble aims. martyrdom, addressed a letter to the Christian community | It is evident that when a suffragan bishop could venture in that city. In this letter there is again an equally | thus to criticize his metropolitan the authority wielded ° direct reference to a certain primacy of the church in | by the latter, even in his own diocese, was very far from Rome, which is addressed as “she who hath the presid- | meeting with unquestioning obedience. ency in the place of the region of the Romans.” But this The foregoing evidence, together with many other expression is immediately followed by a definition of this | similar facts which cannot here be enumerated, points primacy which is altogether incompatible with the theory | clearly to two important conclusions: first, that im the that it is derived from the episcopal succession in the | course of the 2d and 3d centuries the Church of Rome church ; it is spoken of as founded upon sentiments of | began to put forth unprecedented claims to a certain Christian fellowship, with the additional considerations | superiority among other churches; and, secondly, that attaching to the dignity and superior advantages belong- | these claims not unfrequently encountered considerable ing to the church of the capital. opposition as novel and unjustifiable. The conclusion to which the foregoing evidence points The circumstances which contributed to bring about Cireun- is again strongly confirmed by the general fact that, as | their

ultimate establishment were various. The Roman ae each new pretension on the part of the Roman see was | Church itself had, from the first, been associated with that, = ° put forward, it was called in question and repudiated by | severer type of Christian belief which had its chief seat Roman some one or other section of the Christian community. | at Jerusalem; and, after the Holy City and its temple were claims. Passage An obscure and doubtful passage in Irenzeus (Adv. LHeres., – in bk. ul. ¢. 5) testifies, at most, to nothing more than a 1 An expression which, it must be noted, is to be understood with Treneeus. fy]]er recognition of the primacy of the Roman Church, considerable qualification as applied to the Roman province. Denial while in the same writer, who, it will be remembered, was ‘ The evidence afforded in the above two treatises carries the greater of the bik f the church at Lyons, we have a notable instance weight in that they were not written until after Tertullian had become Roman ISHop – i a a F Wage “ a convert to the austere tenets of Montanism, when he must have suprem- Of a distinct repudiation of the claims of the Roman | been all the more inclined to favour the type of Christianity which acy. bishop to dictate to the bishops of other dioceses. This | then prevailed at Rome.

who (if we accept the narrative of Hippolytus) had been sent on account of his turbulence and dishonest practices to the mines in Sardinia. Victor, who was acquainted with the circumstances of his career, deemed him, not-withstanding, so little deserving of commiseration that, when, through the influence of Marcia, the mistress of the emperor Commodus, he had succeeded in bringing about the liberation of a certain number of Callistus’s Christian fellow-sufferers in Sardinia, he did not include in the list the name of Callistus himself. The latter, however, managed to regain his freedom, and ultimately himself became bishop of Rome. During his brief epis-copate his administration, as well as that of his prede- cessor Zephyrinus, was unsparingly criticized by Hip- polytus, the well-known bishop of Portus. Against Callistus Hippolytus alleges the greatest laxity in the

alike razed to the ground by Titus (70 a.p.), much of the reverence which had belonged to Jerusalem was transferred to Rome. In relation to the

episcopal office itself, again, it is to be noted that the general conception of its func- tions underwent, at this period, considerable change. On this point a passage in Jerome (Ad Tit., 1. 7) is of special significance. He here expressly attributes the institution of the episcopal order to the necessity which had arisen of repressing the numerous schisms in the church; and he goes on to observe that bishops would consequently do well to bear in mind that their office, with its involved authority over presbyters, was to be regarded rather as the result of custom and tradition than of divine appointment. As regards any special supremacy attaching to the Roman episcopate, the evidence afforded by another passage in Jerome is not less notable. In one of his most important

letters (Ad Rusticum; Migne, Patrol., xxii. 932) he fully |

recognizes the expediency and value of a central supreme authority, vested in a single individual. In support of his position he adduces examples from the animal kingdom, from the imperial power, from the judicial power, from the inilitary power, and then goes on to say, ‘‘so again each church has its one bishop, its one arch-presbyter, its one archdeacon, every ecclesiastical grade relying on its leader,” but to the clenching example, derivable from the supreme pontiff himself, no reference is made. It seems, accordingly, an inevitable inference that by one of the greatest of the Latin fathers, writing at the close of the 4th century, the Roman theory of the popedom was unrecognized. But the circumstance which perhaps most conduced to the acceptance of the papal pretensions was Creation the creation of a new office in the ecclesiastical organiza-

e the tion, that of the metropolitan. So long as Christianity menity of was the religion only of an obscure sect, or of a persecuted |

politan, Minority in the Roman state, lying also under the suspi- cion of political disaffection, it probably sought td avoid attracting further attention to itself by any elaborate attempt at organization. At the same time the political organization of the empire, from its long established and universally recognized territorial divisions, its system of intercommunication, and its arrangement of the executive power, must have obviously seemed to furnish the most practicable outlines for the administration of a great and growing ecclesiastical community. The chief

cities or metropolets of the several Roman provinces were accord- ingly from the first selected as the seats of the principal Christian churches—Antioch, Corinth, Ephesus, and Thessalonica respectively representing the chief ecclesias- tical centres of Syria, Achaia, Asia, and Macedonia. And when, again, under Constantine and his successors, the distribution of civil authority was further modified by the creation of four patriarchates, subdivided into twelve ‘‘dioceses” or major provinces, these changes were soon followed by corresponding modifications on the part of the church organization. understand how it is that we find the bishop of Rome successively assuming, as in the pontificates of Fabianus and Cornelius, the more extended authority of a metro-

In this manner we are able to |

| the antipopes.

politan,” and, as in the days of Julius I, and Siricius, the |

authority of a patriarch. But no external event exercised a more potent influence on the early history of the Roman Church than the Removal removal of the seat of imperial power to Constantinople

oii (330). For more than a century from that event it was ae ae a little doubtful whether the patriarch of ‘“ Nova Constan- oma” might not succeed in asserting an authority to

tinople. which even the Western pontiff might be compelled to * In the canons of the council of Nica (325) the authority of a

metropolitan is distinctly recogni i i sd gnized, and in those of the council of Antioch (341) it is defined with greater precision.

POPE DOM

defer. It became accordingly an object of primary importance with the latter to dissociate as far as possible

in the mind of Christendom the notion of an ecclesiastical supremacy derived, like that at Constantinople, mainly

from the political importance of the capital from the con-

ception of that supremacy which he himself claimed as the representative of the inalienable authority and privileges conferred on St Peter and his successors. For such a

policy an additional motive was created by the predilection

shown by Constantine for his new capital, and the convic-

tion which he is said to have entertained that the days of

ancient Rome were numbered.?, From henceforth it was

the key-note to the utterances of the Roman primate that

his supremacy, as a tradition from apostolic times, could

never depart from him and his successors, and that, as representing the authority of the two chief apostles, it

had claims upon the obedience and reverence of the

whole Christian church such as no other apostolica sedes

could produce. To the ultimate assertion of these pre- Rome be- tensions the long and fierce struggle carried on between comes a the followers of Arius and the supporters of orthodoxy a ‘ materially contributed. ‘The appeal to the arbitration of doxy. Rome, preferred both by Athanasius and by the Arian party, placed Junius I. (837-352) in the proud position of the recognized protector of the orthodox faith. In the year 339 Athanasius himself visited the Western capital and resided there for three years. His presence and exhortation confirmed the Roman pontiff still further in his policy; and from this time we perceive the see of Rome assuming, more distinctly than before, the right to define doctrine and the function of maintaining the true standard of faith amid the numerous heresies that were

then troubling the whole church. While Constantinople was conspicuous by its attachment to Arianism, Rome appeared as the champion of the orthodox belief. In another direction the Western see would appear to have been also advancing important and exclusive claims. If we accept as genuine the letter of Julius to the Eusebians, written after the acquittal of Athanasius, the pontiff already maintained that, in all proceedings whereby the conduct or orthodoxy of any of the higher ecclesiastical authorities was called in question, the canonical method of procedure required that the Roman see should be con- sulted before any initiative was taken. In other words, the council which had been convened at Tyre to try Athanasius had usurped the functions which belonged to the pontiff of Rome alone.

During the bishopric of Lipertus (352-366) we meet with the first instance of a schism in the Roman Church, and, in the person of Felix, with the first representative of that maintenauce of a rival claim to the see which in later history assumed such importance in connexion with The contested succession of Damasus (366-384), although attended by scenes of brutal violence and outrage, affords further illustration of the main ques- tion then at issue. Damasus, who had been the personal friend of Liberius, represented the cause of orthodoxy, and his triumph over his rival, Ursinus, was hailed with » exultation by the chief contemporary teachers of the church. During his tenure of the see Arianism in the West almost ceased to exist.

At the council of Niceea (325), one of the canons enacted (the sixth) had already assigned to the three gees, or patriarchates, of Rome, Alexandria, and Antioch, their honorary rank in the order of their enumeration. In the

First schism.

- The story of the ‘‘Donation of Constantine” and the long enumeration of the possessions which he bestowed on the church, preserved in the Liber Pontificalis, must be looked upon as accretions of a later period. It is supposed, however, that Constantine built the original Vatican basilica, the church of St Agnes, and the Lateran.

Counter preten- sions of Constan- tinople.

The De- cretals.

Division of the empire.

Popes of

the 5th century.

Tnnocent I,

POPEDOM

year 381 the council of Constantinople was convened ; it was an assembly in which the Western Church took no share, and its notable third canon was accordingly enacted without opposition. By this it was declared that the bishop of Constantinople, or Nova Roma, was entitled, although the representative of a non-apostolic see, to the next place after Rome, and consequently to precedence of the older and apostolic sees of Alexandria and Antioch. This distinguished position was assigned to him as the supreme ecclesiastical authority in the newcentre of political power, and a theory of the basis of ecclesiastical dignity was thus put forward by the church which was in direct conflict with that maintained by Rome.

The pontificate of Srricrus (384-398) is chiefly remark- able as that with which commences the series known as the Decretals—a collection of pastoral letters and of replies to questions submitted for their consideration sent by the popes to the churches of the West. These subsequently formed the basis of a vast and elaborate series of forgeries known as the decretals of the pseudo-Isidorus, of which we shall have occasion again to speak; but the genuineness of the letter of Siricius to Himerius, bishop of Tarragona, does not appear to have ever been called in question, and it takes its stand therefore as the earliest existing de- cretal. In the influence which they exercised upon Western Christianity neither Siricius nor his successor ANASTASIUS I. (398-401) could compare with their illustrious contem- porary, Ambrose, bishop of Milan, whom the emperor Theodosius pronounced to be the only true bishop whom he had known. But Ambrose, although acting in perfect independence of the Roman see, always professed to take it as his model in matters of discipline, and by the respect

which his example inspired in others for the episcopal office in general he indirectly augmented the conception of the papal prerogatives.

With the division of the empire in the year 395 the question of the Roman precedence of Constantinople was left for a time in abeyance; but in the West the authority of the bishop of Rome became more and more firmly established. In the following century the general condi- tions under which he was called upon to act became so materially modified as to constitute a new period in the history of our subject.

The characters of the men who filled the papal chair during this century, most of them of exemplary life, some of commanding genius, would alone suffice'to constitute it a memorable era. 'Upon the mind of Innocent I.," says Milman, "seems first distinctly to have dawned the vast conception of Rome's universal ecclesiastical supremacy." Innocent I. (402-417) seems indeed to have been the first of the popes who ventured to repudiate those political conceptions which threatened to circumscribe the extend- ing influence of his office. Writing in the year 415 to Alexander, bishop of Antioch, he implies that the church in that city, as an "apostolica sedes," is entitled to rank second only to Rome; "but not," he adds, "so much on account of the grandeur of the city itself as because it is shown to be the first apostolic see" (Mansi, Conczlia, vol. iii. p. 1055). In the same letter he distinctly repudiates the notion that the church is bound by political divisions ; the emperor may create two capitals (metropoleis), but it by no means follows that a second metropolitan is to be appointed by the church. In the year 412 he gave practical proof of his determination to assert his own theory of his prerogatives, by appointing the archbishop of Thessalonica his vicar over the extensive province of Illyricuin, of which but a small portion lay in the Western empire; and, when the bishops of the province showed themselves less amenable than he had anticipated to his directions in matters of discipline, he insisted with unpre-

491]

cedented explicitness on the jurisdiction of his see as "head of all the churches." Innocent was succeeded by Zosimus (417-418) and Boniracs (418-422). The former, whose pontificate lasted only twenty-one months, exhibits a, noteworthy exception to the traditions of his see, in the

disposition he at one time showed to temporize with Pela- gianism, and even to set aside in its favour the decrees of his predecessor. The pontificate of Boniface is notable as having been preceded by a contested election which afforded the emperor Honorius an opportunity for the exercise of his intervention, thereby establishing a precedent for imperial interference on like occasions. At the instance of Boniface himself, Honorius enacted an ordinance designed to avert the scandals incident to such contests. By the new pro- visions, all canvassing for the vacant chair was strictly prohibited ; in the event of a disputed election both candidates were to be deemed ineligible ; finally, it was essential to any election that the candidate should have been chosen by the unsolicited suffrages of the qualified clergy, and that their choice should have been ratified by the approval of the entire church community. The suc- cessor of Boniface was Caxestinus, I. (422-432). The evidence afforded by the events of his pontificate is some- what conflicting in character. On the one hand, we find the churches of Africa putting forward their latest recorded protest against the Roman pretensions, adducing the sixth canon of the council of Niczea in support of their protest ; on the other hand, the success with which Ccelestinus inter- vened in Illyricum, and again in connexion with the sees of Narbonne and Vienne, proves that the papal jurisdiction was being accepted with increasing deference in other parts of the empire. The effect with which his solicited decision was given in the controversy raised by Nestorius, the patriarch of Constantinople, and the synod held under his auspices in Rome (430) for the further consideration of the same question, likewise added to the reputation of his office.

Barbaric invasion, although resulting in the overthrow Effects of

of many of the institutions of civilization, aud in wide- spread suffering and social deterioration, served but to enhance the influence and importance of the Roman see. The apparent fulfilment of prophecy, pagan as well as Christian, when the city was taken and sacked by Alaric (410), seemed to complete the effacement of the tem- poral power in Rome. Neither the Western emperors nor the Gothic conquerors held their court in the ancient capital, where the pope was now at once the most import- ant and conspicuous authority. In the African provinces, the demoralization occasioned by the fierce controversies and dissensions concerning

Pelagianism and Donatism compelled the Catholic communities to exchange their former attitude of haughty independence for one of sup- pliant appeal, and to solicit the intervention and counsel which they had before rejected. Such was the aspect of

affairs in the West when Leo THE Great (440-461)— Leo the by some regarded as the true founder of the medizeval Great.

popedom—succeeded to the primacy. A citizen of Rome by birth, he exemplified in his own character many of the antique Roman virtues—a tenacious adherence to tradi- tion in matters of religious belief, an indomitable resolu- tion in the assertion of the prerogatives of his office, and the austere practice of the recognized duties of social life. This rigid maintenance of orthodoxy had been instilled into him (or at least confirmed) by the exhortations of Augustine, with whom he had become personally acquainted when on a mission to the African province; and before his election to the papal office the celebrated Cassian had conceived so high an opinion of his virtues and abilities as to dedicate to him his treatise on the Incarnation. Re- garded, indeed, simply as the able antagonist of the Mani-

cheean and Eutychian heresies, and as the first author of the Collect, Leo would fill no unimportant place in the annals of Latin Christendom ; but his influence on church history in other respects is of a far deeper and more potent kind. In none was it followed by more important results than by the success with which he established the theory that all bishops who, in questions of importance, demurred to the decision of their metropolitan should be entitled to appeal to Rome. He obtained the recognition of this principle not only in Illyricum, as his predecessor Inno- cent had done, but also in Gaul; and the circumstances

under which he did so in the latter province constitute the ‘ whole proceedings a memorable episode in church history. Celidonius, bishop of Besangon, had been removed from his bishopric by his metropolitan, the eminent Hilary of Arles, and determined to proceed to Rome to appeal against his sentence in person. He was followed thither by Hilary, who

courageously protested against any exercise of the pontifical authority which should trench upon his own as metropolitan, and for which, in the present instance, it seems to be generally admitted that the canons of the church down» to the time of Dionysius Exiguus (fl. 525) afforded no sanction.1 Leo, however, not only annulled the sentence of deprivation, but condemned

PO PE yO MM

patriarch of Alexandria, whom he designates as “frater et coepiscopus noster” (Thiel, Hpistole, p. 239). On Acacius refusing to recognize the legality of the letter of citation, he was excommunicated by Felix. The suc- cessor of Felix, Grtastus I. (492-496), refused to notify, as was customary, his election to the patriarch of Con- stantinople, and by his refusal implicitly put forward a fresh assumption, viz., that communion with Rome implied subjection to Rome. Throughout the pontificate of Gela- sius the primacy of the Roman see was the burden of his numerous letters to other churches, and he appears also to have been the first of the pontifis to enunciate the view that the authority which he represented was not con- trollable by the canons of synods, whether past or present. In Italy these assumptions were unhesitatingly accepted. The Palmary Synod, as it was termed, convened in Rome during the pontificate of Symmacuus (498-514) formally disavowed its own right to sit in judgment on his admin- istrative acts. Ennodius, bishop of Pavia (circ. 510), declared that the Roman pontiff was to be judged by God alone, and was not amenable to any earthly potentate or tribunal. It is thus evident that the doctrine of papal infallibility, though not yet formulated, was already virtu- ally recognized.

During the Gothic rule in Italy (493-553), its repre- The

Hilary’s entire conduct. The latter could only remonstrate ‘sentatives manifested the utmost tolerance in relation to Gothic

in terms of energetic but ineffectual protest, and then monarchs,

took his departure from the city to die soon after at Arles. Ilis name, along with that of Irenzeus, stands at the head of that long succession of able churchmen who, sometimes in conjunction with the temporal power and

sometimes in- dependently of it, have gained for the Gallican Church a character for systematic opposition to the encroachments of the Roman see which (if we except the Church of Utrecht) is unique among the communities of Western Catholicism. In a circular letter to the churches of Gaul, Leo subsequently passed a formal and deliberate censure upon Hilary's conduct; and this measure was followed up by an imperial edict, in which, again, we have a remark- able illustration of that compact between the state and the church which assumed such importance at a later period. In this decree of Valentinian III. (445) the primacy of Rome is placed upon a triple basis—the merits of St Peter, the majesty of the city of Rome, and the authority of a council (sacre synodi auctoritas). 'To which of the councils reference is intended is by no means clear; but all bishops are required by this imperial edict to present themselves when summoned at the tribunal of the Roman pontiff (Novellz, ed. Hanel, pp. 172-5). As, prior to this time, the emperors themselves had always claimed, though they had not invariably exercised, the right of representing a supreme court of appeal, this transfer of such a preroga- tive to Rome may fairly be regarded as marking the com- a of a new era in the conception of the papal office.

The chief obstacle to the recognition of the supremacy Influence of the Roman pontiff was now to be found in the revival of Arian- of Arianism, which, professed alike by the Goth and the a Vandal, represented the dominant faith in the chief cities

of northern Italy, as well as in Africa, Spain, and southern Gaul. But the rivalry thus generated only increased the disposition of the Catholic party to exalt the prerogatives of their head, and the attitude of Rome towards other churches continued to be more and more one of unques- tionable superiority. In the year 483 Pope Fetrx II. (or IIL) ventured upon' an unprecedented measure in citing Acacius, the patriarch of Constantinople, to Rome, to

1 That is, unless we admit the genuineness of the canons of the

council of Sardica (343), which probably few who have studied the evidence will be prepared to do.

Rome consti- tuted a court of appeal.

religious questions, and showed little disposition to impose any restraints on the policy of the popes, although each monarch, by virtue of his title of “king of the Romans,” claimed the right to veto any election to the papal chair. In the year 483, when Odoacer sent his first lieutenant, Basilius, from Ravenna to Rome, the latter was invested with the titles “‘eminentissimus” and “sublimis.” The pope accordingly appeared as politically the subject of his Arian overlord. The advantage thus gained by the tem- poral power appears to have been the result of its inter- vention, which Simpuicius (468-483) had himself solicited, in the elections to the papal office, and one of the principal acts of the Palmary Synod (above referred to) was to repudiate the chief measures of Basilius, which had been especially directed against the abuses that prevailed on such occasions, and more particularly against bribery by alienation of the church lands. The assertion of this authority on the part of the civil power was declared by the synod to be irregular and uncanonical, and was accordingly set aside as not binding on the church. The fierce con- tests and shameless bribery which now accompanied almost every election were felt, however, to be so grave a scandal that the synod itself deemed it expedient to adopt the ordinance issued by Basilius, and to issue it as one of its own enactments. In order more effectually to guard against such abuses, Bonirace IL, in the year 530, obtained from a synod specially convened for the purpose the power of appointing his own successor, and nominated one Vigilius—the same who ten years later actually suc- ceeded to the office. Buta second synod, having decided that such a concession was contrary to the traditions of episcopal succession, annulled the grant, and Boniface himself committed the former decree to the flames. At his death, however, the recurrence of the old abuses in a yet more flagrant form induced the senate to obtain from the court of Ravenna a measure of reform of a more com- prehensive character, and designed to check, not only the simoniacal practices within the church itself, but also the extortion of the court officials.

In the year 526 Dionysius Exiguus, a monk in Rome, Dionysius undertook the labour of preparing a new collection of the Exiguus.

canons of the councils, and, finding his production favour- ably received, proceeded also to compile a like collection of the papal letters or decretals, from the earliest extant

Results of sub- jection

to the Greek emperors.

Invasion of the Lom- bards,

POY ££ DOM

down to those of Anastasius IJ. in his own day. The letters of the popes were.thus placed on a level with the rescripts of the emperors, and in conjunction with the canons formed the basis of the canon law, which afterwards assumed such importance in connexion with the history of the church. The negative value of the collection formed by Dionysius may be said, however, almost to equal that of its actual contents; for, from the simple fact that it does not contain those yet earlier decretals subsequently put forth by the pseudo-Isidorus, it affords the most con- vincing disproof of their genuineness.

The substitution of the rule of the Greek emperors for that of the Gothic monarchs was inimical in almost every respect to the independence and reputation of the pope- dom. For a short interval before Justinian landed in Italy, AGAPETUS (535~536), appearing as the emissary of Theodotus to the Eastern court, assumed a bearing which inspired the emperor himself with respect, and his influ-

ence was sufficiently potent to procure the deposition of

one patriarch of the Eastern capital and to decide the election of another. But, after Belisarius entered Rome and the city had been reduced to subjection, the pontiff was seen to be the mere vassal of the emperor, and not only of the emperor but of the courtezan on the imperial throne. .The deposition of SinvEerius (536-540), and his mysterious fate at Pandataria, together with the elevation of Vicrnius (540-555), the nominee of the abandoned Theodora and her pliant slave, completed the degradation of the Roman see. ach successive pope was now little more than a puppet which moved at the pleasure of the Eastern court; and the apocrisiarius or deputy whom he maintained at that court was generally (as in the case of Pelagius I., Gregory I, Sabinian, Boniface III., Martin) his own successor—an

honour purchased, it can hardly be doubted, by systematic compliance with the imperial wishes. In the career and fate of Vigilius the papal office was dis- honoured as it had never been before, at once by the signal unworthiness of its bearer and by the indignities heaped upon him by the savage malice of his foes. So sinister, indeed, had become the relations between the Roman bishop and the Eastern court that Pznacrus I. (555-560) is said to have besought Narses to send him to prison rather than to Constantinople.

In the year 568 the Lombards invaded Italy. Like the Goths they become converts to Arianism; but they were also far less civilized, and looked with little respect on Roman institutions and Roman habits of thought, while their arrogance, faithlessness, and cruelty gained for them the special detestation of the Roman see. Their conquests

‘did not extend over all Italy. Ravenna and the Penta-

polis, Venice, Rome and its duchy (as the surrounding district was then termed), Naples, Calabria, and Sicily remained subject to the empire. In the peninsula the pope was, after the exarch of Ravenna, the niost powerful potentate, and the presence of a common foe caused the relations between himself and the empire to assume a nore amicable character. The emperor, indeed, continued to control the elections and to enforce the payment of tribute for the territory protected by the imperial arms ; but, on the other hand, the pontiff exercised a definite authority within the Roman duchy and claimed to have a voice in the appointment of the civil officers who administered the local government. From the time of Constantine the Great the church had possessed the right of acquiring landed property by bequests from indi- viduals, and the Roman see had thus become greatly enriched. Some of its possessions lay far beyond the con- fines of Italy. It was one of the last acts of Celestine I. to address to the emperor Theodosius JJ. an appeal for the imperial protection of certain estates in Asia, which

a lady named Proba had bequeathed to the Roman see for the maintenance of “the clergy, the poor, and cer- tain monasteries” (Coustant, ed. Schoenemann, p. 879). ‘“‘Ever since the restriction of the Western empire,”

says Mr Bryce, “‘had emancipated the ecclesiastical potentate from secular control, the first and most abiding object of his schemes and prayers had been the acquisition of territorial wealth in the neighbourhood of his capital. He had indeed a sort of justification, for Rome, a city with neither trade nor industry, was crowded with poor, for whom it devolved on the bishop to provide.” The motives for acquiring such wealth did not, accordingly, cease to actuate the pontiff, even when the paralysing influences of the imperial despotism were again very sensibly felt ; but the territory thus gained, known as the ‘ patrimonium Petri,” must not be supposed to have involved that claim to temporal sovereignty put forth at a later period. Ori- ginally bestowed mainly for the relief of the sick and desti- tute, the patrimonial revenues came, in course of time, to be applied to the maintenance of the pope himself and the clergy of his diocese, and to the erection and repair of churches. They were strictly inalienable ; and the pontiff himself was regarded simply as the steward, for the time being, of the estate.

Under Grecory J. (590-604), commonly known as Gregory “the Great,” this territorial wealth became largely aug- the Great.

mented ; and, although, amid the universal demoralization and widespread misery of his age, he professed to discern the unmistakable signs of the approaching end of the world, the efficient administration of the estates of the church was an object of his unceasing solicitude. Of noble descent, great wealth, and considerable learning, he possessed also a capacity for administration not inferior to that of his predecessor Leo, and his best energies were devoted to the interests of his diocese and the alleviation of the want and misery of which it was the constant scene. His Letters, which constitute a remarkable picture both of the man and his age, and attest the minute and unwearied care which he bestowed on everything relating to the affairs of his see, appear to have been taken as the model for the Liber Diurnus, or journal of the Roman curia, which was commenced in the following century. In other respects his genius for administration, his good sense and tact, are equally conspicuous. Through his influence with Theude- linda, the wife of Agilulf, the Lombard monarch, he not only succeeded in averting another siege of Rome, but he also managed to bring about the establishment of amicable relations between the Lombards and the Roman popula- tion. With the Byzantine court he did his best to

maintain a friendly intercourse, although in his zeal on behalf of monasticism he withdrew his apocrisiarius from Constan- tinople, when the emperor Maurice forbade his soldiers to assume the monastic life. It is perhaps the greatest blot on Gregory's memory that, when the emperor and his family were cruelly murdered by Phocas, who seized upon the imperial dignity, Gregory was not above congratulating the usurper on the circumstances of his accession, an act of adulation but insufficiently extenuated by his panegyrists, as taking its rise in feelings of genuine, though mistaken, religious enthusiasm. His efforts on behalf of primary edu- cation, which have caused him to take rank in the Roman calendar as the patron saint of school festivals, are deserv- ing of high praise; but, on the other hand, his illiberal condemnation of the pagan literature (in striking contrast to the Benedictine traditions of a later time) diminishes not a little our impression of his real greatness. He stands, however, among the foremost of the popes, and the impress of his character and teaching must be held to have permanently modified the views and policy of the Roman curia.

49-4

The personal qualities and virtues of Gregory are

cessors of thrown into stronger relief by the comparative insigni- Gregory. ficance of his successors in the 7th century, whose tenure

of office was, for the most part, singularly brief and in- glorious. His immediate successor was SaBINIANUS (604— 606), who after a few months' tenure of office, and an inter- val of a whole year which remains entirely unaccounted for, was succeeded by Boniface III. (607). Boniface was the last apocrisiarius who had represented Gregory at the im- perial court, and he appears to have been successful in completely winning the favour of Phocas, who at his sug- gestion passed a decree declaring "the Apostolic Church of Rome" to be "the head of all the churches." He did this, says Paulus Diaconus, 'because the church of Constan- tinople had styled itself the first of all the churches."1 In this manner the imperial veto was distinctly pronounced on the claim of the Byzantine Church to be regarded as of universal authority—a claim which it now became the policy of the Church of Rome to assert on her own behalf on every possible

occasion. Thenew and intimate relations which Gregory and his emissaries had created between the church and the great Teutonic races especially favoured these assumptions. Frankland and England alike were brought within the range of influences of incalculable after importance, the development of which in the 7th and 8th centuries may fairly be looked upon as constituting a distinct era in the history of the popedom. In Rome itself, on the other hand, the interest of the drama becomes perceptibly lessened. In the long and rapid succession of the pontiffs, most of them pliant Greeks or Syrians, the nominees of the exarch of Ravenna, and intent on winning the favour of both the emperor and his representative, scarcely one appears as actuated by more than the tradi-

different spirit, and the civil power showed no disposition to welcome foreign interference even in connexion with ecclesiastical institutions. It is observed by Guizot that ‘ from the death of Gregory the Great to the time of Gregory ITI. (604-715) not a single document exists which can be cited as proof of intercommunication between the rulers of Frankland and the papacy. The series of events which led to such different relations, enabling the Roman pontiff eventually to shake off both his fear of the Lonibard and his long dependence on the Byzantine emperor, forms one of the most interesting passages in European history.

and Syrians in the papal chair was broken by the election HU. of a man of Roman birth and endowed with much of the strength of purpose that belonged to the ancient Roman. In Grecory IT. (715-731) men recognized no unworthy successor of his great namesake, and by Gibbon he is regarded as the true ‘founder of the papal monarchy.” In no respect were his care and religious sentiments more conspicuously manifested than in connexion with the evangelization of distant lands, and it was under his auspices that the celebrated Winfrid or Boniface first commenced his famous missionary work in Frankland. His rapid success in the work of converting the still heathen populations is a familiar story. From GrREGcorRY IIL. (731-741) Boniface received the appointment of papal legate; he took the oath of perpetual fidelity to the supreme pontiff, and wherever he went he preached the duty of a like submission. He enforced the theory of the Catholic unity

and of the obligation of the whole body of the clergy to render implicit obedience to the representative of that unity,—the successor of St Peter, the spiritual superior of all earthly tribunals.

In the year 715 the long succession of pliant Greeks Gregory

While bonds of union were thus being created in the Rupture West, theological differences were exercising a very differ- with the ent though not less important influence in the East. It ¢™P™

tional views of his office and its functions. One of them, who ventured to thwart the imperial purpose, paid dearly for his conscientiousness. The Byzantine capital, at this

period, was distracted by the interminable controversies carried on between the Monothelites and their opponents. The emperor, the half-insane Constans, arrogated to him- self the function of mediating between the contending parties, and sought to wring from Martin I. (649-653) an authoritative assent to a compromise of doctrine which, to that pontiff, appeared to involve the sacrifice of ortho- doxy. ‘The latter convened a council at the Lateran and

| was in the year 731 that Gregory IIL, the last of the pontiffs who received the confirmation of his privileges from Constantinople, issued a sentence of excommunication against the Iconoclasts. It was the papal rejoinder to the decree of Leo the Isaurian, passed in the preceding year, commanding that all images in the churches of the empire should be forthwith removed. Although he was a Syrian by birth, orthodoxy was dearer to Gregory than political

allegiance, and the sequel justified his policy. The emperor, indeed, retaliated by what could not but be | deemed a disastrous blow. All the dioceses within the /empire where the Roman pontiff had hitherto claimed years and feeble health, banished to a gloomy prison on the | obedience— Calabria, Sicily, and Dlyricum—were forth- Euxine, where he soon after died. with absolved from their ecclesiastical allegiance, and the Advances But, while thus menaced and dishonoured in Italy, the revenues from their rich “ patrimonies,” which had before eo by papal power was making

important advances in the west. | flowed into the papal treasury, were confiscated. But the ie In England the resistance offered by the representatives | tie which had hitherto bound the popedom to the empire the WeéRt. of the British Church was soon overcome, and from the was thus effectually broken. time of the council of Whitby (664) the teachings and | Under these circumstances a compact with the Lom- traditions of Gregory, as enforced by Augustine, Theodorus, | bards, who had by this time become converts from Wilfrid, and others, found ready acceptance. The human- | Arianism to the Catholic faith, would have seemed the izing influences which these representatives of the Roman | obvious policy on the part of Rome, had not the political culture diffused around them exercised a potent spell over | aims of the former stood in the way. The Lombard the minds and wills of the English population. Monas- | coveted the possession of the capital, and this design, the terles were founded ; cathedrals rose, each with its school , cherished design of centuries, marked him out as perforce of instruction for the young, and its charity for the needy; | the foe of the popedom. In his extremity, therefore, the Alliance and a spirit of filial though far from slavish devotion to Roman pontiff turned to the Frank, untainted by the with the Rome was everywhere created. heresy of Arianism, and already, as the result of the teach- C27! In Frankland, however, the Merovingian kings and ing of Boniface, disposed to assent to any claims of the — the populations of Neustria and Austrasia exhibited a papacy which did not involve the diminution of his own _ Vi Dale T onaotee ia: : ___,. | prerogatives or the restoration of alienated revenues. In reproduced by Ge ae ae he ge 565 : | the ‘ial 752 Pepin le Bref assumed the dignity and title a vat Anastasius, De Vitis Rom. Pont., in life of Boniface UI., Of “king of the Franks.” He did so, the annalists arc igne, Patrol. , exxviii. 671. unanimous in assuring us, with the consent and sanction

formally condemned the proposed solution. He was soon after induced to repair to Constantinople, and, having there been arraigned on a false charge of fomenting political in- trigue, was deprived of his see and, although in advanced

Relations to Frank- land.

State of

of Pope Zacharias, and he was anointed and crowned by Boniface—a momentous precedent in relation to European history. In the following year, during the pontificate of STEPHEN III. (753-757) Aistulf, the king of the Lombards, invaded the duchy of Rome with the avowed purpose of adding the capital itself to his dominions. He seized Ravenna and the exarchate ; and Stephen, finding remon- strance and entreaty alike unavailing, fled for protection to the Frankish territory and was received by King Pepin with every mark of sympathy and profound respect. Within a short time after, Pepin invaded the Lombard domain and wrested from its monarch an extensive terri- tory embracing Ravenna and the Pentapolis; and at a council held at Quiercy, in the same year (754), he handed over this territory to Stephen, “to be held and enjoyed by the pontifis of the apostolic see for ever.” Such appears to be the real origin of that ‘“donatio,” or gift of terri- tory (referred back, by the invention of after times, to the age of Constantine the Great), which constituted the pope a temporal ruler over what were subsequently known as the “States of the Church.” The munificence of Pepin was rivalled by that of his son. In the year 774, on the occasion of the visit of Charles (known as the Great) to Rome, the donation of his father was made the ground for soliciting and obtaining a yet larger grant, comprising much of the territory already bestowed, but extending to at least double the area stipulated for in the earlier donation.

It-will thus be seen that, towards the close of the 8th

the papal century, the germs of the chief papal claims were already

claims at

the close of the 8th century.

in existence, and only needed for their full development those favouring conditions which, with the lapse of time, were certain to occur, and for which, from its peculiar character as an institution, the popedom itself was so well able to watch and wait. Already the pontiff claimed the dispensing power, @e., the right to dispense with the observance of the existing canonical law under conditions determinable at his pleasure. Already he

claimed the right to confer privileges—a power subsequently wielded with enormous effect in enabling monastic and episcopal foundations to urge their encroachments on the rights and jurisdiction of the secular power. He assumed again, in Western Christendom at least, the rights of an universal metropolitan —demanding that in all elections to bishop- rics his sanction should be deemed essential; and the arrival of the pallium from Rome was aiready awaited with anxiety by all newly-elected metropolitans. By the encouragement which was systematically given to appeal to Rome, what had before been the exception became the practice, and that "extraordinary" authority, as it was termed, which had been introduced, in the first instance, only under the pretext of providing a fixed court of appeal in cases of dispute which threatened otherwise to prove incapable of adjustment, developed into an immediate and ordinary jurisdiction—into an authority, that is to say, which in all questions of graver import set aside that of the bishop, and even that of the metropolitan, and made reference to Rome the rule rather than the exception. In theory, although the claim was admitted neither by the rulers of Frankland nor by those of England, the Roman pontiff already claimed also to present to all benefices. Although he had not, as yet, assumed the distinctive insignia of his office—the triple crown and the upright pastoral staff surmounted by the cross—he more and more discouraged the application of the name of "papa" (pope) to any but himself. The title of "universal bishop," which both Pelagius II. and Gregory the Great had dis- claimed, seemed his by right after the decree of Phocas, and with the lapse of two centuries from that time was assumed by no other rival. The titles of '"apostolicus,"

"claviger" (the bearer of the keys), and "servus ser- vorum Dei" were claimed in like manner as exclusively his. One temporal potentate had already received his crown as a grant from the pontifical chair; the occupant of that chair was already himself a temporal sovereign.

That the medizeval conception of the papal office was Develop- one of gradual and slow development appears accordingly ment of

to be beyond all reasonable doubt, and this feature belongs tbe

for example, that the conception of the episcopal order and its functions grew with the increasing power and wealth of the church. In like manner if we compare the theory of the equality of bishops one with another, enunciated by Cyprian, with the prerogatives of a metro- politan, as laid down at the council of Antioch (341), and subsequently further magnified, we are conscious of the introduction of what is tantamount to a new theory. And, finally, we become aware of yet another hierarchical order, as we see rising up the patriarchates of Rome, Alexandria, Antioch, Jerusalem, and Constantinople, each invested by the church with an assigned order of preced- ence. Something, however, was yet wanting which should crown the gradations thus successively created, and com- plete the analogy to the Roman political organizations —the institution of the monarchical dignity. It was for this supreme honour that Rome and Constantinople con- tended, at a time when, from various causes and circum- stances, the other patriarchates had sunk into an inferiority too marked to admit of rivalry. In this contest the patriarch of Constantinople rested his claim on what may be termed the traditional political foundation—the honour due to the patriarch of the chief seat of empire ; this plea, although already sanctioned by the church, was met on the part of Rome by a counter appeal to the supreme reverence due to what was not merely an “apostolica sedes,” but a see founded by two apostles, of whom one was the chief of the apostolic order. In this remarkable abandonment of the ancient plea for pre-eminence and the limitation of the argument to that derivable from the claim to be an apostolic see, much of the difficulty and obscurity that belong to the earlier history of the papacy had probably its origin. And it seems but too probable that the endeavour to disguise this change, and to repre- sent the claims advanced by Innocent I., by Leo I., by Gregory the Great, and by Hadrian II., as already wrtu- ally asserted and admitted in the 4th century and in yet earlier times, has given rise to endless wrestings of isolated passages in writers of good authority, to deliberate falsi- fication of genuine documents, and to what are allowed on all hands to be direct and palpable forgeries. Another feature, which has been made subservient to no small amount of misrepresentation, must not be overlooked. From their earliest appearance, the distinctive claims advanced by the Roman see can only be regarded as a series of encroachments on that original conception of the episcopal office maintained by Cyprian. And so long as the other patriarchates—Alexandria, Antioch, and Jerusalem—maintained their ground, these encroachments

wore a comparatively inoffensive guise, being little more than the assertion of the rights of a patriarch or supreme metropolitan within the Roman diocese. But, in addition to and distinct from the patriarchal supremacy, there was the theory of the primacy of the bishop of Rome over all the bishops, patriarchs, and metropolitans—at first little more than an honorary distinction and carrying with it no definite authority or jurisdiction. When the patriarchates of Alexandria, Antioch, and Jerusalem could no longer appear as rivals and Rome was confronted by Constantinople alone, this theory was brought much more prominently forward; while at the same time, in order

9 : 5 R in common to the whole hierarchical system. We find, oe

the better to enforce the papal claims, a confusion was designedly and skilfully introduced of the honorary primacy derived from St Peter with the actual rights of the head of the Roman diocese. The precedents afforded by the former were adduced in support of the universal jurisdiction claimed by the latter, and in an ignorant and uncritical age were with little difficulty represented as affording sufficient warrant for a large proportion of the claims asserted in the 9th century. It is by the light which we derive from these considerations that we are enabled to discern what appears to be the only theory which offers a solution of the tradition respecting St Peter and his successors that is in harmony with the historical evidence. When we consider that in the course of the 5th century papal Rome, partly from the ambition of her pontifis, partly from the concurring influence of external circumstances, had acquired a position of authority in relation to Christendom at large which afforded the pro- spect of yet more complete and general pre-eminence, and that towards the assertion of such pre-eminence her claim to rank as the greatest and most honoured of the “apostolice sedes” seemed to offer effective aid, the appearance of ‘legends and spurious documents tending to support such a claim can excite no surprise in the minds of those familiar with the literature of the period. As in the 2d century the attempt to reconcile two earlier and corrupt traditions respecting St Peter’s presence and work in Rome gave rise to the tradition

of his five-and-twenty years' episcopate, so, we can understand, it was probably sought to substitute for the simple tradition preserved in "'Hegesippus " and Irenzeus, with respect to St Peter's suc- cessors, Official records (purporting to supply details such as no other church had preserved, and such as it is in the highest degree improbable that the church at Rome should have succeeded in preserving) of an early episcopal succes- sion; while the discrepancies of the different lists that profess to record this succession admit, again, of an adequate if not a satisfactory explanation, if we regard them as, for the most part, independent and purely con- jectural efforts to invest the earlier episcopal office with an historical importance to which in the first two centuries it certainly had not attained.

While the Western primate was thus growing in dignity, wealth, and influence, those ecclesiastical potentates who had once claimed an equal or coordinate rank, with the sole exception of the patriarch of Constantinople, alto- gether ceased to exist. The Saracen conquests in Syria and Egypt had involved the loss of Jerusalem to Christen- dom (637), and this had been speedily followed by the extinction of the churches of Antioch and Jerusalem. 'The patriarch of Constantinople represented, accordingly, the only spiritual power which could compare with that of Rome; but, while he continued to be the submissive vassal of the Byzantine court, that court was compelled to see the once no less submissive pontiff of Rome changed into a successful invader of its Italian possessions and into a determined repudiator of its articles of faith. In the year 800 Charles the Great received at the hands of Leo Ifl., in Rome, the imperial crown, and the titles of "emperor" and " Augustus." The authority by virtue of which Leo assumed the right to confer such dignities was probably by no means quite clear even to those who were witnesses of the imposing ceremony. It may perhaps be best described as derived partly from his sacerdotal func- tion, as displayed in the consecrating rites, and partly from the fact that he also acted as the representative of the people in their capacity of electors. To the Byzantine emperor, the whole ceremony and the titles conferred seemed a direct menace to his own prerogative, and com pleted the estrangement between the West and the East.

roriew Og

From that time down to the 15th century Greek institu- tions and Greek culture were the special objects of dis- like and distrust to the papacy. The use of the Greek language had already been discontinued in the records of the Roman Church; and the study of its literature was now systematically discouraged. The assumption by Charles of the imperial dignity and the consequent rise of the ‘“ Holy Roman Empire” were events on the importance of which it is unnecessary here to dwell. By the theory thus established, a temporal supremacy or “ condominium ” was created corresponding to the spiritual supremacy of the popedom, and the Roman emperor claimed from all other rulers in Christendom an allegiance corresponding to that which the Roman pontiff claimed from all other ecclesiastical potentates. The imperial authority and papal authority were thus complementary the one to the other. The emperor claimed to confirm the papal elec- tions ; the pope claimed to confer the imperial crown upon the emperor. But the precise adjustment of these respec- tive claims, and the further assumptions which they sug- gested or favoured, according as the empire or the papacy proved for the time the stronger, gave rise to a series of memorable struggles which sometimes assume proportions that constitute them the pivot on which contemporary history throughout Europe may be said to revolve. The compact originally made between the empire and the pope- dom, however plausible in theory, was indeed attended with no little danger to both. At one time it appeared probable that the state would overwhelm the ecclesiastical organization and convert it into a machine for political

:

The em-

pire and

the pope- m.

purposes ; at another time it seemed no less likely that _

the latter would subjugate the former and reduce all Western Christendom to a vast spiritual tyranny. During the three centuries that followed upon the creation of the Holy Roman Empire—from the year 800, that is to say,

down to the Concordat of Worms (1122)—it was chiefly the former contingency that seemed the more probable. During the pontificate of Nicuoxas I. (858-867), how- ever, the papacy again made a perceptible advance. Nicholas intervened with signal effect in the disputed succession to the Eastern patriarchate, and asserted more distinctly than it had ever been asserted before the theory of the Roman supremacy. He dared, also, to forbid the divorce of Lothair (the powerful monarch of the vast terri- tory which stretched from the German Ocean to the Mediterranean) from his wife Theutberga, thereby estab- lishing an important precedent for papal interference in questions of private morality. And, finally, in his arduous struggle with Hincmar, metropolitan of Rheims, he gained an important victory over the powerful prelates on the Rhine in the question of appeal. It must, however, be admitted that this last advantage was gained only by the use of forged documents—the pseudo-Isidorian decretals, which seem to have first seen the light about the year 850; it was pretended that they had been compiled by Isidore of Seville, an eminent writer and ecclesiastic of the 7th century, and had been brought from Spain to Mainz by Riculfus, the archbishop of that city. This col- lection embodied a complete series of letters purporting to have been written by the popes of Rome from the time of Clemens Romanus down to that with which the collec- tion by Dionysius Exiguus commences, thus filling up the entire blank, and affording among other data ample prece- dent for appeals to Rome of the kind against which Hincmar had protested. When some doubt was raised as to the genuineness of the collection, Nicholas did not scruple to assure Hincmar that the originals had been lying from time immemorial in the Roman archives. Among many other fundamental positions laid down in these decretals was one to the effect that no council of the

Nicholas il,

The false decretals.

Po P eo M1

church had canonical validity unless it had been summoned with the sanction of the holy see. The assertion of this theory rendered it necessary considerably to extend the practice of appointing papal legates (/egati a latere), who now became the ordinary channels of communication between

Rome and the Western churches, and through whom all affairs of importance were transacted. The legate convened the provincial councils and presided over them, taking precedence even of the metropolitan. Such | encroachments enable us at once to understand how it was that Henry I. of England deemed it necessary to demand from Paschal II. a promise that no legate should be sent into the kingdom until the royal assent had been previously obtained. From the pontificate of Nicholas we date a |

was one of the worst of the pontiffs, ill repaid the service rendered to the see; and, foreseeing that the restoration of justice and law was likely to prove fatal to his own misrule, he proceeded to plot the emperor's overthrow. He was summoned to appear before a council presided over by the latter, to meet the accusations brought against him, and, having failed to appear, was formally dcposed.

On the same occasion the imperial right to confirm the

election to the papal office (which had been for some time in abeyance) was formally restored. Of the pontiffs whose names stand in the subsequent succession two were anti- popes, Benepict V. (964) and Bonirace VII. (984-985), set up by the party in rebellion against the imperial power.

With the restoration of law and order the ancient re-

notable diminution in the power of the metropolitans. | gard for the popedom regained its hold on the minds of

The false decretals have been described as the source to , men. Under the guidance of the celebrated Gerbert, the Gerbert which we may trace that great revolution in the relations | youthful enthusiasm of Otto III. aimed at making Rome and Otto of church and state which now gradually supervened. The once more the centre of political dominion and the seat of eae

Hadrian pontificate of Haprian IL. (867-872) is especially notable | the imperial power. Hugh Capet, too, professed himself IL. for the application

which he sought to make of some of the “defender of the church.” A strong sense began also the principles which they laid down. When Lothair, king to find expression of the infamy attaching to the associa- of Lotharingia, died without heirs, Hadrian claimed the | tions of the curia. At the first of the two councils convencd right to bestow the crown on the emperor Louis. Christian | at Rheims in 991 it was formally demanded, by what Europe, however, was not as yet prepared to accept this decree it was that “‘numberless priests of God, famed alike bold extension of the papal prerogatives. The kingdom for learning and virtue, were subjected to the rule of was seized by Charles the Bald, and Hadrian was reminded | monsters of iniquity wanting in all culture, whether sacred in a manifesto drawn up by the bishops of Germany that or profane.” The French monarchs were glad, however, to he could not at once be “universal pope and universal purchase the support of the papacy to aid them in their king.” But the weakness of Charles’s claim was unde- | struggle with the rebellious chieftains by whom the very niable, and we accordingly find him, five years later, con- “existence of their authority was menaced, and, until the senting to receive the imperial crown at the hands of Jonn action of the papal legates again roused the spirit of VIII. (872-882), not as his heritage but as a gift from the | national resistance, the Capetian dynasty was loyal to the pope. During the dark and stormy period that intervened Roman see. That it was so was in no small measure due between the death of Charles the Bald and the coronation | to the virtues and abilities of Grecory V. (996-999), the of Otto the Great at Rome (962), the Carlovingian empire kinsman of Otto ITI., a young man of considerable attain- broke up, and the results that followed were disastrous ments, austere morality, and great energy of purpose, who both for the popedom and the empire. The Saracens occu- | succeeded to the papal chair at the age of twenty-four. He pied southern Italy, and menaced on more than one occasion _ was succeeded by Gerbert, Pope Sitvester IT. (999-1003), the capital itself ; the Normans poured in successive waves | from whom Otto III. derived, as already stated, his ideas over Frankland; the ravages of the Magyars were yet | of Italian and papal regeneration. But in Germany neither wider spread and not less terrible. Alike in the civil and ; the nobility nor the episcopal order could contemplate with the ecclesiastical world the elements of strife and insub- | equanimity the projects of either pontiff or emperor, and ordination were let loose; and, while the feudal lords | Otto’s schemes were met with a stubborn

and paralysing defied the authority of their king, and the power of the , resistance. Then the feudal princes of the Roman states French monarch sank to the lowest ebb, the bishops in | rose in insurrection; and the ardent young reformer was like manner forsook their allegiance to the Roman pontiff. | taken off—it was believed, by poison—at the age of two The. archbishops of Ravenna and Milan appeared indeed | and twenty, to be followed in the next year by his faithful as his rivals, and the political influence which they com- | preceptor on the pontifical throne. manded more than equalled his: the 10th century has With the disappearance of these two eminent men the Ascen- been designated “the noon-day of episcopal independence.” | popedom relapsed into its former degradation. The feudal in bm Degrada- The history of the curia at this period is marked by the | nobility—that very “refuse” which, to use the expression Resi cee tion of — deepest moral degradation and the most revolting scenes. | of a contemporary writer, it had been Otto’s mission “to the curia. The papal jurisdiction was limited almost entirely to the sweep from the capital”— regained their ascendency, and capital itself, and even the succession of the pontiffs them- | the popes became as completely the instruments of their selves is with difficulty to be traced. The office, indeed, was | will as they had once been of that of the Eastern emperor. sometimes disposed of by the influence of immoral women. A leading faction among this nobility was that of the The pontificate of SrrpHen VI. (or VII., 896-897) is | counts of Tusculum, and for nearly half a century the remembered only for the inhuman manner in which he | popedom was a mere apanage in their family. As if to treated the lifeless corpse of his predecessor Formosus; mark their contempt for the office, they carried the election that of Sercius III. (904-911) for the virtual reign of | of Theophylact, the son of Count Alberic, a lad scarcely Theodora and her daughter, the two most notorious courtc- | twelve years of age, to the office. BENEDIcT Ix. (1033- zans of the age; StepHEeNn IX. (939-942) was disfigured 1045), such was the title given him, soon threw off even for life by the brutal treatment which he received at the | the external decencies of his office, and his pontificate was hands of the Roman mob. disgraced by every conceivable excess. As he grew to Ottoand Inthe dismembered empire, the kingdom of Germany | manhood his rule, in conjunction with that of his brother, John first exhibited signs of returning order and cohesion ; and | who was appointed the patrician or prefect of the city, a at the solicitation of Pope Joun XII. (955-963) King |

resembled that of two captains of banditti. The scandal Otto led an army into Italy, rescued the land from its | attaching to his administration culminated when it was cruel oppressor, Berengar, the feudal lord of the realm, | known that, in order to win the hand of a lady for whom and was anointed emperor at Rome. Jolin, however, who | lie had conceived a passion, he had sold the pontifical office

itself to another member of the Tusculan house, John, the arch-presbyter, who took the naine of GREGORY VE (1045- 46). His brief pontificate was chiefly occupied with endea- | vours to protect the pilgrims to Rome on their way to the capital from the lawless freebooters (who plundered them | of their costly votive offerings as well as of their personal | property), and with attempts to recover by main force the alienated possessions of the Roman Church. Prior, how- ever, to his purchase of the pontifical office, the citizens of Rome, weary of the tyranny and extortions of Benedict, had assembled of their own accord and elected another pope, John, bishop of Sabina, who took the name of SILVESTER ITI. (rival pope, 1044-46). In the meantime Benedict had been brought back to Rome by his powerful kinsmen, and now reclaimed the sacred office. For a brief period, there- fore, there were to be seen three rival popes, each denounc- ing the others' pretensions and combating them by armed force. But even in Rome the sense of decency and shame had not become altogether extinguished ; and at length a party in the Roman Church deputed Peter, their arch- deacon, to carry a petition to the emperor, Henry III, soliciting his intervention. The emperor, a man of deep religious feeling and lofty character, responded to the appeal. He had long noted, in common with other thoughtful observers, the widespread degeneracy which, taking example by the curia, was spreading throughout the.church at large, and especially visible in concubinage and simony,—alike regarded as mortal sins in the clergy. He forthwith crossed the Alps and assembled a council at Sutri. The claims of the three rival popes were each in turn examined and pronounced invalid, and a German, Suidger (or Suger), bishop of Bamberg, was elected to the office as CLement IT. (1046-47).

The degeneracy of the church at this period would seem

to have been in some degree compensated by the reform

of the monasteries, and from the great abbey of Cluny in |

The Ger- Burgundy there now proceeded a line of German popes, oe who in a great measure restored the dignity and repu- popes. tation of their office. But, whether from the climate,~

always illadapted to the German constitution, or from

poison, as the contemporary chronicles not unfrequently suggest, it is certain that their tenure of office was singu- larly brief. of his election. Damasus IT., his successor, held the office Leo IX. only twenty-three days. Lo IX., who succeeded, held it for the exceptionally lengthened period of more than five years (1049-54). nominee of the emperor, refused to ascend the throne until

his election had been ratified by the voice of the clergy |

and the people, and his administration of the office pre- sented the greatest possible contrast to that of a Benedict IX. or a Sergius ITI. In more than one respect it con- stitutes a crisis in the history of the popedom. In con- junction with his faithful friend and adviser, the great Hildebrand, he projected schemes of fundamental church reform, in which the suppression of simony and of married life (or concubinage, as it was styled by its denouncers) on the part of the clergy formed the leading features. In the year 1049, at three great synods successively convened at Rome, Rheims, and Mainz, new canons condemnatory of the prevailing abuses were enacted, and the principles

Clement II. died before the close of the year |

This pontiff, although a kinsman and

of monasticism more distinctly asserted in contravention of those traditional among the secular clergy. Leo’s | pontificate closed, however, ingloriously.

In an evil hour | he ventured to oppose the occupation by the Normans, whose encroachments on Italy were just commencing. His ill-disciplined forces were no match for the Norman bands, composed of the best warriors of the age. He was

| was given in favour of Alexander.

himself made prisoner, detained for nearly a twelvemonth in captivity, and eventually released only to die, a few

POPE DO

days after, of grief and humiliation. But, although his own career terminated thus ignominiously, the services rendered by Leo to the cause of Roman Catholicism were

‘ great aud permanent; and of his different measures none

contributed more effectually to the stability of his see than the formation of the College of Cardinals. The title of The Go. “cardinal” was not originally restricted to dignitaries con- lege of

nected with the Church of Rome, but it had hitherto been ©#rdinals.

a canonical requirement that all who attained to this dignity should have passed through the successive lower ecclesiastical grades in connexion with one and the same foundation ; the cardinals attached to the Roman Church had consequently ‘been all Italians, educated for the most part in the capital, having but little experience of the world beyond its walls, and incapable of estimating church questions in the light of the necessities and feelings of Christendom at large. By the change which he intro- duced Leo summoned the leaders of the party of reform within the newly-constituted college of cardinals, and thus attached to his office a body of able advisers with wider views and less narrow sympathies. By their aid the administration of the pontifical duties was rendered at once more easy and more effective. The pontiff himself was liberated from his bondage to the capital, and, even when driven from Rome, could still watch over the inter- ests of both his see and the entire church in all their extended relations ; and the popedom

must now be looked upon as entering upon another stage in its history—that of almost uninterrupted progress to the pinnacle of power. According to Anselm of Lucca, it was during the pontifi- cate of Leo, at the synod of Rheims above referred to, that the title of “apostolic bishop” (Apostolicus) was first declared to belong to the pope of Rome exclusively. The short pontificate of Nicwoxas IT. (1059-61) is memorable Change chiefly for the fundamental change then introduced in the in the method of electing to the papal office. By a decree of the method of second Lateran council (1059), the nomination to the office la was vested solely in the cardinal bishops—the lower clergy, the citizens, and the emperor retaining simply the right of intimating or withholding their assent. It was likewise enacted that the nominee should always be one of the Roman clergy, unless indeed no eligible person could be found among their number. At the same time the direst anathemas were decreed against all who should venture to infringe this enactment either in the letter or the spirit. The preponderance thus secured to the ultramontane party and to Italian interests must be regarded as materially affecting the whole subsequent history of the popedom. The manner in which it struck at the imperial influence was

‘soon made apparent in the choice of Nicholas’s successor, the

line of German popes being broken through by the election of Anselm, bishop of Lucca (the uncle of the historian), who ascended the pontifical throne as ALExaNDeER IT. (1061- 73) without having received the sanction of the emperor. His election was forthwith challenged by the latter, and for the space of two years the Roman state was distracted by a civil war, Honorius IL. being supported as a rival candidate by the imperial arms, while Alexander main- tained his position only with the support of the Norman levies. The respective merits of their claims were con- sidered at a council convened at Mantua, and the decision Cadalous, such was the name of his rival, did not acknowledge the justice of the sentence, but he retired into obscurity; and the remainder of Alexander’s pontificate, though troubled by the disputes respecting a married clergy, was free from actual warfare. In these much vexed questions of church discipline Alexander, who had been mainly indebted for , his election to Hildebrand, the archdeacon of the Roman

Church, was guided entirely by that able churchman's

The crn- sades in relation to the papacy.

The De- cretum, of Gratian.

POREDO M

advice, and in 1073 Hildebrand himself succeeded to the office as Grecory VIT.! (1073-85). From the memorable struggle between this pontiff and the emperor, Henry IV., we date the commencement of that long series of contests between the papal and the imperial power which distracted alike the holy see and the empire. In the two main ob- jects to which his policy was directed—the enforcement of a celibate life among the clergy and the prohibition of investiture (see INVESTITURE) by the laity—Gregory had on his side the sympathy of the best and most discerning minds of his age. Lay investiture was little more than a cloak for the inveterate and growing abuse of simony, for which the distribution of church patronage by secular potentates afforded special facilities, and the burden of which was now increased by those other forms of tribute, the '"regale," "jus spolii," and ''servitium," which the growth of the feudal system had developed. But in the hands of Gregory this scheme of ostensible reforms ex- panded first of all into independence of the temporal power, and finally into a claim to dominate over it. Other schemes (not destined to be realized) engaged his lofty ambition— the conquest of Constantinople, the union of the Eastern and Western Churches, and the expulsion of the Saracens from Christendom. He died in exile; but the theory of his office and its prerogatives which he asserted was brought by his successors to a marvellous realization.

The first crusade, which may be looked upon as gene- rated by Gregory's example and a reflex of the policy which led him to sanction the expedition of William of Normandy against England, materially favoured papal pretensions. It was proclaimed as a religious war, and it was as a mode of penance that the Norman and Latin warriors were enjoined to gratify their ruling passions of plunder and adventure. More especially it brought to the front of the drama of European action the Latin as opposed to the Teutonic elements,—the part taken by Germany in these gigantic expeditions in no

way corresponding to her position among European powers. It was impossible that the excommunicated emperor Henry IV. should place himself at the head of such an enterprise, and it was accordingly by Urpan II. (1088-99) that the direction was assumed, and it was under his auspices that the first crusade was proclaimed at Clermont. As the movement gathered force, the prestige of the popedom was still further enhanced by the fact that the warriors who had before appeared in the field under the banners of the empire now did so as loyal sons of the church. The new orders of chivalry,—the Knights of St John, the Templars, the Teutonic Order,—each bound by religious vows, received their commissions from the pontiff, were invested by him with the sword and the cross, and acknowledged no allegiance to the emperor.

But of all the schemes which Gregory's genius conceived and promoted none was more important in its after-effects than the expansion given to the pseudo-Isidorian decretals —in the first instance by Anselm of Lucca, again by Cardinal Deusdedit, and finally by the celebrated Gratian, a monk of Bologna, who lived about the middle of the llth century. By Gratian these accumulated forgeries were reduced to order and codified ; and his Decretum, as

Growth of it was termed, stands to the canon law (Canon Law) in

the canon law,

much the same relation that the Pandects of Justinian stand to the civil law. Further additions were subse- quently made by Gregory IX., Boniface VIII, and other pontiffs, and in this manner a vast code was gradually elaborated which, serving as the framework of the eccle- ssiastical jurisdiction in every land, was associated with

1 In assuming this name Hildebrand designed to imply that Gregory VL, whose title had been cancelled by Henry III. on account of simony, was a legitimate pontiff.

t

separate courts and professed by a distinct body of jurists. The canonists were naturally ardent defenders of the sys- tem from whence they derived their professional existence, and everywhere represented the faithful adherents of Rome.

Another movement at this period, which gave effective aid in the diffusion of the papal influence and authority, was the rise of the new religious orders,—the Camaldules (c. 1012), the Cluniacs (c. 1048), the Carthusians (c. 1084), and the Cistercians (1098). Although each of these orders

| professed a distinct rule, and a sanctity and austerity of | life which put to shame the degenerate Benedictines, their

presence was far from proving an unmixed benefit to the districts where they settled. They rejected the episcopal jurisdiction, and purchased their local independence by com- plete and immediate subjection to the pope. Wherever, accordingly, their houses rose there was gathered a band of devoted adherents to Rome, ever ready to assert her jurisdiction in opposition to the ecclesiastical jurisdiction claimed by the secular clergy or the civil jurisdiction claimed by the temporal power.

On the death of Urban, Cardinal Rainerius, a native of Tuscany, and a man of considerable learning and capa- city, succeeded as Pascuat II. (1099-1118), During the earlier years of his pontificate he is unfavourably dis- tinguished by the manner in which he sanctioned, if he did not instigate, the cruel and unnatural revolt of the young prince Henry (afterwards the emperor Henry, V.) against his father. The later years of Paschal's rule seem mainly a record of the nemesis which overtook a policy dictated by the most heartless and selfish ambition. ‘‘ Paschal," says Milman, ‘‘is almost the only later pope who was reduced to the degrading necessity of being dis- claimed by the clergy, of being forced to retract his own impeccable decrees, of being taunted in his own day with heresy, and abandoned as a feeble traitor to the rights of the church by the dexterous and unscrupulous apologists of almost every act of the papal see." One of the most memorable phases of this long process of humiliation is marked by the treaty of Sutri (Feb. 1111), when the young emperor compelled Paschal to surrender all the territorial possessions and royalties which the church had received either from the emperor or from the kings of Italy since the days of

Charlemagne, together with numerous other political and fiscal privileges, while he himself renounced the right of investiture. The indignation of the ecclesi-

Rise of new monastic orders.

Paschal II.

astical world compelled Paschal to retire from this treaty,

and ultimately, after long evasions, to become party to a second, whereby the former conditions were completely reversed. The emperor resumed the right of investiture, and that burning question again lit up the flames of war. Paschal being too far pledged by his own solemn oath, a metropolitan council assembled at Vienne assumed to itself the authority of excommunicating the emperor, de- claring that the assertion of the rights of lay investiture in itself constituted a heresy. The great prelates of Germany rose in insurrection against the emperor. He retaliated by seizing on the vast possessions (comprising nearly a quarter of Italy) which Matilda, countess of Tuscany, at her death in 1115, had bequeathed to the Roman see. The pope and the cardinals responded by re- enacting the sentence of excommunication. Henry occu- pied Rome ; and Pope Paschal died in the Castle of St Angelo, exhorting the cardinals with his latest breath to greater firmness than he himself had shown in maintain- ing the rights of the church. Paschal was the first of the pontifis to discontinue the use of the imperial years in dating his acts and encyclicals, substituting instead the ear of his own pontificate. The short rule of Catrxtus II. (1119-24), disgraced although it was by the savage revenge which he perpetrated on his rival the antipope

Calixtus II.

Concordat

000

Gregory VIII., was characterized by wise and resolute administration. A Frenchman by birth, he was the first to establish those intimate relations with France which rendered that state the traditional ally of the Roman see, and culminated in the secession to Avignon. Germany, on the other hand, appears from this time as generally heading the anti-papal party, espousing the cause of the antipope, and siding with Ghibelline faction. But the chief event in the pontificate of Calixtus, and one which may be looked upon as inaugurating a new era in the history of our sub- ject, was the Concordat of Worms of the year 1122.

By this memorable treaty, which, accepted as the law of

of Worms. Christendom, seemed to promise an ultimate conclusion of

Bernard are to be seen in tlie all-commanding influence of BERNARD _ he seized the occasion when it arrived,—such are the features of Clair- Of Crarrvaux (q.v.), the unswerving supporter of the | which combine to render the eighteen years' pontificate of Te papal claims, round whose career indeed the life of the | Innocent III. a period of unrivalled lustre and importance Western Church for half a century may be said mainly to | in the history of the popedom. It was now that the papal revolve. In the struggle, arising out of his disputed elec- | power may be said to have effectually impressed its theory tion, with the antipope, Anacletus II., Innocent succeeded | of sacerdotal government upon Europe; that the canon in gaining the support of Bernard, and through Bernard | law, wherein that theory was elaborated, began to be that of the emperor Lothair; and the narrative of his _ taught in the universities which rose throughout Europe restoration to his see by the imperial forces, after an exile | —Bologna, Padua, Paris, Orleans, Oxford, and Cambridge; of four years, is one of the most dramatic episodes in papal | that ecclesiastical discipline everywhere modelled itself history. Technically, at least, Anacletus had the better | on the practice of Rome; that the mendicant orders, claim to the papacy, having been elected by a majority of | especially those of St Dominic and St Francis of Assisi, the cardinals ; but Innocent secured the support of Lothair | with their irregular enthusiasm, skilfully converted by by making over to him the territory bequeathed by the | Innocent into a widely-diffused, untiring, and devoted countess Matilda. In return for this concession, Lothair | propaganda, roused a new spirit alike in the universities accepted the imperial crown from Innocent in the church of | and among the illiterate laity, and became a powerful the Lateran, and acknowledged himself the pope's vassal, | instrument wherewith to coerce to obedience the episcopal —in the language of the inscription recording the event, | order and the whole body of the secular clergy. "Post homo fit Pape, sumit quo dante coronam." The chief interest attaching to the pontificates of The Renewal 'The change in the imperial dynasty, involving as it did | Honorrus III. (1216-27), Grecory IX. (1227-41), and emperor ee the setting aside of Lothair's son-in-law as emperor, revived | Iynocent IV. (1243-54) arises from their connexion with Frederick Ste he the rivalry between the empire and the papacy ; and the | the policy and career of Frederick II. (emperor

1210-50). 7 empire. Ghibellines, or adherents of the Hohenstaufen (or Swabian) | To the whole traditions of the popedon Frederick was line, now represented a more distinctly defined party in | especially obnoxious, menacing on the one hand its standard opposition to the Guelfs, who sustained the traditional | of doctrine by his reputed scepticism, and its newly policy of the Saxon imperial line, and sided with the popes. | acquired possessions on the other by his schemes for the Frederick Barbarossa, although he consented to receive the | revival of imperial supremacy in Italy. In the sequel his imperial crown at the hands of Haprian IV. (1154-59), | designs were baffled by the ability and resolution of requircd that pontiff altogether to disavow the notion of | Gregory and Innocent; and at the general council of Lyons eb oe ae It as a beneficiwm upon a vassal, main- | (1245) Frederick was deposed both from his imperial and bese that, through the election of the princes, he held | his kingly dignities, and his subjects declared to be absolved us crowns (both kingly and imperial) of God alone. | from their fidelity. In this manner the power claimed by

the long struggle, an understanding was at last arrived at.

The emperor ceded the right of investiture by the ring |

and the pastoral staff,—thereby renouncing that at which the church most demurred, the appearance of assuming to be in any way the transmitter of the spiritual succession, but retaining the right of granting church benefices or

other property by the symbol of temporal power, the | The pope, on the other hand, consented that the | election of bishops and abbots should take place, according |

sceptre.

to canonical procedure in the presence of the emperor, but that neither bribery nor compulsion should be resorted to, and that, ia the case of disputed elections, there should be a right of appeal to the metropolitan and provincial bishops. In Germany the investiture with the regalia by the sceptre was to precede the consecration, the dependence of the higher

clergy being thus secured to the emperor; but in other countries the lay investiture was to take place within six months after consecration. In an appended clause a re- servation was made which afterwards became a fruitful germ of controversy: the elected dignitary bound himself to dis- charge his feudal obligations to the emperor arising out of

his investiture with the temporalities, “except in all things |

which are acknowledged to belong to the Roman Church.” During the pontificate of Innocent IL (1130-43) the importance of the new relations established with France

POPEDOM

During the pontificate of AnexanpEr III. (1159-81) Frederick supported the cause of the antipopes. A dis- puted election, in which the merits of the candidates are even yet more difficult to determine than in the election of Innocent II., gave rise to a series of counter claims, and Alexander, during his long pontificate, had to contend with four successive antipopes each backed by the imperial arms. Only the election of the first, Victor V. (antipope, 1159-64), however, had real canonical validity, the claims of the others having always been regarded by all orthodox Catholics as presumptuous. It was during the latter part of Alexander’s government that Rome achieved a great moral triumph in England in the reaction

| which followed upon the murder of Thomas Becket and

the abrogation of the Constitutions of Clarendon. Eight years later the attention of all Christian Europe was riveted by the memorable occurrence which marked the consum- mation of the truce of Venice (1178), when Frederick Barbarossa prostrated himself before the aged pontiff and held his stirrup as he mounted his palfrey.

Passing by the comparatively unimportant careers of the five popes whose names stand between those of Alexander

and Innocent ITI. (1198-1216), we find ourselves at the Innocent stage which marks the culmination of the papal power. IJ.

The august descent of this pontiff; his learning as a

_canonist and his comnianding genius ; the interdicts which

he could venture to impose on great realms, whether ruled by the astute sagacity of a Philip Augustus or by the

reckless folly of a John; his sentences of excommmunica-

tion, hurled with deadly effect at emperor and at kings ; the vigour with which he wrested whole provinces from the imperial domination—the march of Ancona and the duchy of Spoleto—to weld together into one conipact whole the Patrimonium and the Romagna ; the energy with which he repressed the heresies which threatened the unity

| of the church; the boldness with which he defined the

doctrine of transubstantiation ; his patience in working and waiting for opportunities, and the promptitude with which

Gregory

ashe

The Prag- matic Sanction.

Boniface VII.

rOPED OFM

the Roman pontiff of deposing even kings received the im- plicit sanction of a general council. The empire, worsted in Italy, broke down in Germany. In 1268 Conradin, the grandson of Frederick and the last representative of the Hohenstaufen dynasty, was cruelly put to death by Charles of Anjou, and the long contest of the empire witli the popedom came to an end.

The policy of Gregory X. (1271-76), a man of ability and moderation, deserves the praise of having apparently aimed at the general good of Christendom, so far, at least, as not incompatible with the overweening

pretensions which he continued to uphold. Gregory endeavoured to compose the bitter jealousies and long-continued strife of the Italian states by the establishment of a general pro- tectorate under Charles of Anjou, king of Naples, and to reconcile Guelf and Ghibelline by concessions to the leaders of the latter party. He effected a temporary agreement with the Eastern Church ; and he sought to put an end to the abuses and rivalries which now almost invariably accompanied each election to the pontificate by intro- ducing a new method of proceeding on such occasions. In the meantime, the growing spirit of nationality had already received a striking exemplification in France by the enact- ment of the Pragmatic Sanction (1268). Of this measure, which has been described as the foundation of the Gal- lican liberties, it will here suffice to say that it consists of a series of enactments expressly directed against all those encroachments of the popedom with respect to collations to benefices, elections to bishoprics, simoniacal practices, ecclesiastical promotions, imiposts, and other forms of exaction, such as we have already noted in their gradual growth. Shielded from criticism by the fact that it was sanctioned by the pious Louis IX., the loyal son of the church, the Pragmatic Sanction passed at the time unchal- lenged even by the papacy itself. Of the extent to which the latter was becoming more and more a political institu- tion we have striking evidence in the brief pontificate of CELESTINE V. (1294). A hermit of the Abruzzi, of austere and holy life, he had been elected pope in the hope that his reputation for virtue might in some measure restore the character of his office. Something more, however, than mere sanctity and blamelessness were now necessary for the discharge of the duties of a position which by its associa- tions demanded the exercise of statecraft, political intrigue, and a wide knowledge of affairs. In less than six months Celestine resigned an office for which by lack of experience and ability he was altogether unfitted, but leaving behind him a tradition of self-devoted and holy life which found expression in the institution of a new religious order, that of the Celestinians, afterwards blended with the Fraticelli, or Spiritual Franciscans. Upon Bonrrace VIII. (1294-1303) the signs of the times and the development of a spirit and of institutions incompatible with the pre- tensions of his predecessors were altogether lost. A man of considerable abilities, indomitable will, and imperious nature, he enunciated in yet more uncompromising terms the theory of the papal supremacy. In the memorable bull Unam sanctam Ecclesiam (18th Nov. 1302), he de- clared

that the church could have but one head—a two- headed church would be a monstrosity; and he explained away the traditional interpretation of the symbolic mean- ing of the two swords, by affirming that the temporal sword wielded by the monarch was borne only at the will and by the permission of the pontiff (ad nutwm et patientiam sacerdotis). Dazzled by the apparent success which at- tended his first measures, he was only confirmed in his policy by the resistance he encountered in France and England. In Philip the Fair, however, he was matched with an antagonist as resolute and unscrupulous as him- self and one who better understood the tendencies of the

o01

age. In the struggle that ensued Philip had the whole Frencli nation, including the episcopal order, on his side ; the pontiff was worsted, and his humiliation and sense of defeat hastened his end.

With the death of Boniface fell also the papacy of the Middle Ages, both in theory and in fact:—in theory, through the ascendency of counter views such as those put forth in the De Monarchia of Dante, and in the writings of Aigidius Colonna and John of Paris, which enforced the reasonableness and necessity of the supremacy of the political power; in fact, from the manner in which the French monarch succeeded not only in repelling the papal pretensions but in eventually reducing the Roman see itself to be a mere instrument of his will and a submissive agent in the furtherance of his policy.

The origin, the growth, the characteristics, the assump- tions, and the downfall of the medieval papacy having now been traced out, it remains to note, as concisely as practicable, the chief features in the later history of the institution. In the year 1305 Criement V. (1305-14), an Aquitanian by birth, was elected after long contention to the pontificate. He was invested with the tiara at Lyons, and subsequently (1309) transferred his court from Rome to Avignon. The pressure put upon him by King Philip is generally assigned as the cause of this step, but it is not improbable that he was only too glad to escape from the strife then waging between the two great fac- tions, the Orsinis and the Colonnas, at Rome. At Avignon, for a period of nearly seventy years, derisively styled the “Babylonian captivity,” pope after pope

held his court. Degraded to a state of splendid vassalage to France, their luxury, pride, rapacity, and avarice became a bye-word in Europe, while their complete subservience to the political aims of the French crown effectually alienated from them the good will and sympathy of England and Germany. When Joun XXII. (1316-34) sought to interfere in a double election to the empire, the diet at Frankfort de- nounced his whole policy in terms that startled Europe by their boldness ; and the electoral union at Rense in 1338 passed a resolution declaring that “whoever was chosen by the electors became at once both king and emperor, and did not require that his election should be approved and sanc- tioned by the apostolic see.” Other causes contributed effectually to lower the papacy in the estimation of Europe. Clement V. concurred in the infamous devices by which Philip procured the suppression of the Order of the Templars, and the barbarous cruelties inflicted on the noble victims produced in the popular mind a feeling of deepest aversion for the authors of those proceedings. The traffic in benefices was now again developing into a gigantic scandal and abuse. Annates and Peter’s pence were exacted with an insatiable rapacity. Italy itself, in- deed, torn between contending parties and impoverished by the interruptions to commerce, offered but a barren field for plunder, but in the countries north the Alps the pope’s emissaries were everywhere to be seen, ever intent on their errand of exaction. The wealth thus acquired was partly devoted towards extending the territorial pos- sessions of the see ; and Avignon and the county of Venais- sin, purchased in 1348 from the crown of Provence, remained papal until the French Revolution. It is not a little significant that this increase in wealth and territory should have been concomitant with the sinking of the moral influence of the papacy to its lowest ebb. In Eng- land the civil power endeavoured to check this system of extortion by re-enacting the Statutes of Preemunire and Provisors. In Germany the deep discontent to which it gave rise formed an important contributing element in the causes which brought about the Reforma- tion. In France the luxury and gross immorality of the

Fall of the medieval

papacy.

The popes at Avignon.

Their subser- vience to France.

Growth of abuses in the church.

‘The great schism,

court at Avignon, described in graphic and scathing language by Petrarch, are assigned by other contemporary writers as conducing largely to the corruption of morals throughout the realm. Even among the religious orders themselves there began to be signs of insubordination, and the Fraticelli, or Spiritual Franciscans, who now took their rise, openly avowed that the principles which they professed were designed as a protest against the appalling degeneracy of the curia; while great scholars in the uni- versities, like William of Occam and Marsilio of Padua, brought the dialectics and new philosophical tenets of the schools in the universities to bear with no little effect on the whole system of the popedom.

The outbreak of the great schism struck no less deeply at those sentiments of veneration and deference which had been wont to gather round the pontiff’s chair. The majority in the college of cardinals were Frenchmen, and, on the death of Gregory XI. in 1378, it seemed only too probable that another Frenchman would be elected his successor. The discontent of the citizens of Rome at the withdrawal of the curia from the capital had now, how- ever, reached a culminating point. This feeling, it is to be noted, was by no means one of mere sentiment and attachment to tradition, for the diversion of appeals, pil- grimages, deputations, and embassies, with their attend- ant influx of travellers, and of large streams of wealth and business from Rome to Avignon, had materially affected the prosperity of the former city. On the occasion of the new election the prevailing dissatisfaction found vent in menacing demonstrations on the part of the population, and even in scenes ofactual violence. In order to appease the city the terrified cardinals determined on the unani- mous election of an Italian, Prignani, archbishop of Bari, who assumed the title of Ursan VI. The election was singularly unfortunate. The new pontiff, intoxicated by his sudden and unexpected fortune, assumed stich arrogance of demeanour and showed himself so altogether wanting in moderation and self-control that the

cardinals put forth the plea that they had discharged their function as electors under intimidation, and declared the election invalid. In proceeding to elect another pontiff, their choice fell upon one of their own number, Robert of Geneva, known as Crement VII. (1378-94). For a period of thirty-eight years, Christian Europe was scandalized by the conten- tions of two rival popes, the one holding his court at Rome, the other at Geneva, each hurling anathemas, excommunication, and the foulest accusations at the other, and compared by Wyclif to “two dogs snarling over a bone ”—a simile which in itself affords significant proof

of the manner in which the popedom had fallen in the-

estimation of Christendom. The potentates of Europe, in declaring themselves “in the obedience,” as it was termed, of one or the other pontiff, were swayed almost entirely by political considerations, in which jealousy of France was the predominant sentiment. Italy, Germany, Bohemia, England, Flanders, Hungary, and Poland, all de- clared themselves in the obedience of the pope at Rome; Scotland, Savoy, Lorraine, declared themselves, ‘along with France, in that of the pope at Avignon. The Spanish kingdoms, which at first stood aloof, ultimately also decided, though from somewhat different motives, in favour of the latter pontiff. At last, at the commence- ment of the 15th century, an endeavour was made to prevail on both the reigning popes—Gregory XII. at Rome, Benedict XIII. at Avignon —to renounce their claims, with a view to the restoration of church union. The proposal was met by both popes with persistent and unscrupulous evasion. France, indignant at the subter- fuges of Benedict, withdrew her support, and he accordingly retired to Perpignan. The cardinals attached to either

Porr»rD ©

court met together at Leghorn, and agreed to summon a general council, to meet at Pisa on the 25th March 1409. In the meantime isolated scholars and divines throughout Europe, among the regular and the secular clergy alike, were pondering deeply the lesson taught by the papal history of the last six centuries, and in the place of the traditional theories of appeals to popes, to councils, or to emperors there was growing up another conception, that of the essential falsity of the axioms on which the theory of the papal

supremacy had been built up, and of Scrip- tural authority as the only sure and final source of guid- ance in deciding upon questions of doctrine and morality.

But as yet, before ideas such as these had been suffi- The great ciently developed and events had prepared the popular councils

mind for their reception, the remedy that most commended itself to the leading minds of Christendom was that of a true general council. Such was the idea which influential churchmen of the age—men like Peter D'Ailly, cardinal of Cambrai, and John Gerson, chancellor of the university of Paris, who, while they deplored the discipline, still assented to the doctrines of the church—believed to be the best solution of the difficulties in which that church had become involved. The opinions of the doctors of the canon law and of theology at the universities had been taken, and at Oxford as in Paris it had been decided that a general council might be summoned even against the will of the pope, and that, when thus convened, its authority was superior to his. Such were the circum-

stances under which in 1409 the council of Pisa was Council summoned. The council enunciated the dogma of its own of Pisa.

supremacy; it deposed the rival popes; it constituted the two separate bodies of cardinals a single conclave, and by this conclave a new pope, ALEXANDER V. (1409-10) was elected. Schemes of general ecclesiastical reform were dis- cussed ; and then after a four months' session the assembly adjourned, to resume, at an interval of three years, its yet more memorable deliberations at Constance. In the intervening time, Alexander V. died, not without strong suspicion of his having been removed by poison through the machinations of his successor, the notorious Balthasar Cossa, who assumed the title of Jonn XXIII. (1410-15), and took up his residence in Rome. It is with this pontiff that the gross abuse of indulgences is said to have first arisen. In the year 1416 the council of Constance met, amid the most sanguine expectations on the part of re- ligious Europe, but it achieved practically nothing in the direction of church reform. It deposed John XXIII, but Martin V. (1417-31), by whom he was succeeded, although in some respects an estimable pontiff, skilfully availed himself of the disturbances in Bohemia and the hostile inroads of the Turks to postpone all

questions of reform toa future occasion. On the other hand, the actual results of its deliberations were reactionary in their tend- ency. The council burned John Huss, one of the first to assert the rights of the individual conscience in opposition to the prevailing hierarchical system ; it crushed the party of reform in the university of Paris, and banished their great leader.

general council over the pope, found, when it sought to proceed to the more practical reforms involved in placing restrictions on the abuses practised under the papal sanc- tion, that it had assumed a task beyond its powers. Under the pretext of bringing about a reconciliation with the Eastern Church, and inviting its delegates to the delibera- tions of the council, Evcentus IV. (1431-47) proposed to transfer the place of meeting from Basel to some Italian city. The council, well knowing that such a measure would be fatal to its independence, refused its assent ; Eugenius retaliated by dissolving the council; the council, by

The council of Basel (1431-49), although Council it re-enunciated the principle of the superiority of a of Basel.

POPEHDOM™

suspending the pope. Thereupon Eugenius summoned

Council another council at Ferrara, which was afterwards removed of to Florence. The council of Basel, as a last resource, Florence.

arrogated to itself the papal functions, and then proceeded to elect Amadeus, duke of Savoy, pope, with the title of Fetix V. In this extreme measure it failed, however, Policy of to carry with it the more influential European powers. the chief Germany, after an ineffectual endeavour to mediate be- European : : 2 powers, ween the rival popes, assumed, in the first instance, an attitude of strict neutrality, but was ultimately won over by the crafty /ineas Sylvius (afterwards Pius IT.) to conclude the notable Concordat of Vienna (1448). By this mercenary arrangement the newly-elected emperor, Frederick IIT., altogether renounced whatever advantages had, down to that time, been gained by the labours of the council of Basel, receiving in return from Nicholas V. certain concessions with respect to all

episcopal elections in his own hereditary dominions, together with a hundred of the most valuable benefices, the visitatorial rights in relation to the monasteries, and a tenth of the monastic revenues. The policy adopted by France was of an alto- gether different character. She preferred to adjust her ecclesiastical liberties on the basis defined and sanctioned by the royal authority at the congress of Bourges. The Pragmatic Sanction there enacted was registered by the parliament of Paris, 13th July 1439,—thus becoming part of the statute law of France. In this celebrated mani- festo the spirit of Gerson and the university of Paris spoke again; but, while its twenty-three provisions rendered it peculiarly obnoxious to the Roman see, the manner in which it set aside all royal nominations made it no less distasteful to the monarchy. Louis XI., feigning to yield to the pressure put upon him from Rome, abolished it, but it was re-enacted by Louis XII. Eventually, in the year 1516, amid the full flow of the advantages which he had gained by the victory of Marignano, Francis I. permitted the Pragmatic Sanction to be superseded by Concor- the Concordat of Bologna,—a disastrous compromise of dat of —_ principles, wherein, while some important concessions were Bologna. ade to Leo X., the crown interference with the admin- istration of the church was more effectually established than ever, and the independence of the Gallican clergy reduced to a shadow. The concordat made no mention of the councils of Constance, Basel, and Bourges, or of their fundamental conception of the superiority of a general council over the pope; and it left the opportunity open for the reintroduction of annates. On the other hand, the monarchical authority achieved a signal triumph ; and, although the parliament of Paris loudly protested, and even ventured to set aside some of the royal nominations sub- sequently made, its voice was silenced by a peremptory decree issued in the year 1527.

To return to the council of Basel. Although supported at first by the electors of Germany, it was, in the sequel, completely circumvented by the machinations of the able but unscrupulous Aineas Sylvius; and Pope Eugenius, at his death, seemed almost to have regained the allegiance of Christendom. Under Nicuonas V. (1447-55), the work of reunion was brought to a completion. The council of Basel dissolved itself; and Felix V., laying aside his empty title and dignity, retired into Savoy, and was shortly after promoted to the rank of cardinal by Nicholas himself. The popedom was not destined ever again to witness the phenomenon of a rival pontiff;

and no council since the council of Basel has ever ventured to assert its authority as superior to that of the Roman chair. At the council of Florence that theory had been Bore. definitely contravened (1439) by the enunciation of the fol- macy at lowing canon, in which the counter theory first received a Florence. complete and distinct exposition :—‘ We define the holy

Defini- tion of the papal

503

apostolic see and the Roman pontiff to have primacy over the whole earth, and the Roman pontiff to be himself the successor of the blessed Peter, chief of the apostles, and the true vicar of Christ, and to exist as head of the whole church and father and teacher of all Christians; and that to him, in the blessed Peter, our Lord Jesus Christ has com- mitted full power of feeding, governing, and directing the universal church, even as is [also]! contained both in the acts of the cecumenical councils and in the sacred canons.”

Thus re-established and confirmed in his own theory of The curia his office and its functions, the Roman pontiff regained and the somewhat of his former hold on the estimation of Europe. Popedom

There was also at the same time discernible a marked ain

the

improvement, so far as regarded external decorum, in the century.

associations of the curia; and, until the ascendency of the Borgias, the names of Nicuonas V. (1447-55), Pros IT. (1458-64), and Srxrus IV. (1471-84) redeemed the reputation of the Roman see, if not for sanctity, at least for learning. The last-named pontiff, however, lies under the imputation of having been the first to institute trials for witchcraft, an example which spread, in later times, far wider than the boundaries of Roman Catholicism itself. In the latter half of the 15th century the popedom retires altogether into the background of European history. The pretensions of the pontiff were not, indeed, in any way retracted or modified, but his actual policy was no longer commensurate with these, and the former weapons of the

interdict and the anathema had fallen into disuse. The popes became little more than territorial princes, their politi- cal and ecclesiastical influence being exerted mainly with reference to the material interests of the States of the Church. It was one of the most baneful results of these changed external relations that each more ambitious pontiff —the Farnesi, the Borgias, the Della Roveres, and the Medici—aspired to found an hereditary sovereignty or principality in connexion with his own family, and the most valuable possessions of the church were successively alienated. By the next pontiff the holders of such pro- perty would be not unjustly regarded as usurpers, and it would be the first aim of himself and his party to eject them from the lands and revenues thus acquired. In this manner deadly feuds were generated, which became heredi- tary in the different families, and proved an unfailing source of sanguinary feuds and bitter animosities.

With the tacit surrender of the theory of the supremacy of general councils, the Holy Roman Empire itself came

also virtually to an end; and Germany, broken up into a The

number of independent principalities, internecine strife, presented a striking contrast to the advances which France and Spain were making in the direction of consolidation and order. The papacy found a direct apparent advantage in fomenting this disunion, and in no country were the exactions of its emissaries more shameless or extortionate. Eventually, however, both these phases of its policy proved eminently detrimental to the Roman interests. For, while the unscrupulousness of its agents did much to foster a strong aversion to the tenets which they inculcated, and thus paved the way for the reception of Lutheran doctrines, the isolation to which

1 Kad’ dv tpdmov kal ev Tots mpaxtixois THv oikovpevtK@y cuvddwv Kal év Tots iépors Kdvoot SiadauBdvera. Fora long time these words were correctly rendered in the Latin, ‘‘ quem ad modum et in gestis cecumenicoruin conciliorum et in sacris canonibus continetur,” and the passage is invariably thus quoted by the 15th and early 16th century theologians. In the Roman edition of Abraham Cretensis, however, the obvious meaning of the Greek, viz., that the prerogatives of the pope are to be determined and exercised according to the canons of the ancient councils, is done away with by the change of e¢ to etiam ; and the sense of

the passage (which thus becomes merely a confir- matory reference) is, that the prerogatives enumerated belonged to the pope, and were also recognized in the ancient councils.

often involved in P2pal policy in

Germany.

O04

each German state was reduced proved favourable to its freer action, and enabled it, in no small measure, to pur- sue that independent policy which, in several instances, materially aided the progress of the Reformation. The history of the popedom from this point (¢c. 1517) to the commencement of the council of Trent (1545) will be found in the article on the REFORMATION.

The distinctive features of the doctrinal belief formu- lated by the council of Trent were mainly the outcome of Jesuit influences (see Jusurrs); and, enforced as these tenets were by the terrorism of the Inquisition, the Increased freedom of thought which during the revival of learning

ye oad had passed comparatively unchallenged within the pale ie) e@

Council of Trent.

a must at the same time be admitted that, concurrently thought. with this tendency to greater rigidity of doctrine, Roman

Catholicism became characterized by far greater earnest- ness of religious teaching, displayed a remarkable activity in the cultivation of theological learning, and abolished, or sought to abolish, many glaring abuses. In this amend- ment, however, Rome had at first but small share. The Reformation movement within the church took its rise in Spain; and the purely political feeling which now con- stituted so considerable an element in the papal policy led each pontiff to regard with no little jealousy the overween- ing aggrandizement of the Spanish monarchy. Political considerations, in fact, sometimes prevailed over theologi- cal sympathies. Pavz III. (1534-49), in

endeavouring to trim his sails between the contending influences of France and Spain, more than once took side with the powers who were fighting the battle of Protestantism. While thus involved in antagonism to the chief of the Financial Catholic powers, the Roman see found its difficulties not a Pca little enhanced by the alienation of the revenues formerly earl derived from those countries which now professed the Paces Protestant faith. Prior to the 16th century the States of the Church had enjoyed an almost unrivalled prosperity. That prosperity was mainly owing to their immunity from dircct taxation. Nothing had contributed so much to the unpopularity of Hadrian VI. as his endeavour to levy a small hearth-tax, in order to replenish to some extent the coffers emptied by the prodigality of his predecessor. The loss of the revenues alienated by: successive pontiffs was now aggravated by the failure of the supplies derived from the collection of Peter's pence and annates in Protest- ant countries. Even the sums levied in those kingdoms which continued to profess Catholicism suffered consider- able diminution before they reached the Roman treasury, and the main source of revenue at this period appears to have been that represented by the sale of offices. In the serious financial embarrassment in which the curia now found itself involved, every expedient was had recourse to in order to meet the inevitable expenditure ; and it is to the example of the papal treasury that Von Ranke attri- butes the commencement of national debts. In default of the contributions no longer levied in England, in the United Provinces, and in northern Germany, the pope found himself under the necessity of taxing his own territory; and in this manner the Romagna, once so prosperous, was crushed by a weight of taxation which ultimately embraced every article of merchandise. The farmer and the peasant left the land; and the papal pro- vinces, formerly the most fertile and prosperous in Italy, degenerated into a series of ill-cultivated, unwholesome, and unproductive wastes.

If left to rely solely on the loyalty of its adherents and the prevalent impression of its abstract merits, the position of the popedom at this period, viewed in connexion with its financial difficulties, might well have seemed almost hopeless, had not its interests been so closely interwoven

Relations to the temporal power.

of the church was now effectually extinguished. But it |

POPPED OW

with those of the secular power. The latter indeed was frequently induced to connive at the papal exactions from the mere fact that it shared largely in the proceeds ; and in France the very advantages gained by the crown led it to regard with complacency a system by which the royal influence and the royal revenues were alike so largely augmented. The temporal ruler was thus sometimes found a firm supporter of the popedom, even although involved in hostilities with the reigning pope.

During the pontificate of Junrus ITIL. (1550-55), who dreamed away his closing years in the splendid palace and gardens which he had himself designed near the Porta del Popolo, the curia played a merely passive part in the great European drama; but with the accession of Cardinal Caraffa, who assumed the title of Paun IV. (1555-59), Paul IV. it became animated by another spirit. An energetic supporter of the doctrines already promulgated by the council of Trent, devoted to the cause of the church, but hating the Spaniard with the traditional hatred of a Neapolitan, his support was given entirely to the French interests in European politics. He proclaimed himself at once the liberator of Italy and the reformer of the church. In his plans of reform, although he relied mainly on the Inquisition, he included alike the monastic orders and the secular clergy. His successor, Prus IV. (1559-65), Pius IV. although a man of different character, pursued a similar policy. The council of Trent assembled again under his auspices, but its discussions now concerned only points of Roman doctrine and discipline, and the rupture with the Protestant communions was complcte. With the acces- sion of Prus V. (1566-72), who had filled the office of Pius V. chief inquisitor in Rome, the conditions of the papal policy had become less embarrassing. Spain now stood at the head of the Catholic powers, and England at the head of the Protestant. In France the issue of the dcadly struggle that was being waged between the Huguenots and the League, which scemed likely to decide the religious destinies of Europe, was still doubtful. Philip IT. accord- ingly appeared as the natural ally of the popedom, and Pius, having once accepted the position, remained true to this alliance throughout. The lavish expenditure of Grecory XIII. (1572-85)

brought back the former con- dition of financial embarrassment. He not only made large grants to aid the cause of Catholic education, and especially the newly-founded colleges of the Jesuits, but he systematically subsidized the powers who fought on the side of the church. Although the revenues of the papal states were again on the increase, the rate of exchange during Pope Gregory's pontificate was never once in their favour. At last the pressure became insupportable. The spirit of Guelf and Ghibelline revived. The Romagna rose in insurrection; and, eventually, the aged pontiff died broken-hearted amid the disorganization and lawless- ness which surrounded him on every side. But already the tide of Protestantism was beginning to ebb; and the famous bull In Cana Domini, which Gregory promulgated in 1584, enjoining the extirpation of the different heresies in Germany, indicated the growing weakness of the Lutheran communities.

The five years embraced by the pontificate of SIXTUs Sixtus V. V. (1585-90), the last of the really great pontiffs, mark another great crisis in the history of the popedom. At his accession, the papal authority had dwindled to its narrowest limits, being recognized scarcely anywhere save in Spain and Italy, and in a few islands of the Mediterranean. To his tact, ability, and good sensc, con- joined with the widespread activity of the Jesuits, and aided by the dissensions that prevailed among the Pro- testant sects, Catholicism was mainly indebtcd for the remarkable reaction in its favour which set in with the

Henry IV. of France.

E\lict of Nantes.

Annales of Baro- hius.

Pop ty Pom

closing years of the 16th century—an episode of which the 7th book of Ranke's History of the Popes supplies a comprehensive sketch. Sixtus conciliated the great landed proprietors whom his predecessor had driven into insur- rection by calling in question the validity of their title- deeds and by attempts to reappropriate their lands; he repressed the prevailing brigandage with merciless severity ; notwithstanding his lowly extraction,

he suc- ceeded in winning the favour of the great houses—the Colonnas and Orsinis; he developed the industries and manufactures of the States; no pontiff ever effected so much for the improvement and adornment of the capital; its population, which under Paul IV. had sunk to forty-five thousand, rose to one hundred thousand; “for the third time,” says Ranke, “Rome stood forth to view as the chief city of the world.” Another reform introduced by Sixtus was that by which the college of cardinals, before a fluctuating body, was definitely fixed at seventy. The inconsistencies of his foreign policy are probably to be partly explained by the fact that, although the promo- tion of the interests of the church was his most cherished object, he had conceived a thorough distrust of Philip II. At the same time, while he believed that those interests would be most effectually served by the establishment of peace and order, he necessarily regarded with aversion the revolutionary doctrines of the League, democratic in poli- tics although ultramontane in doctrine. From Henry of Navarre, indeed, he could not withhold his tribute of admiration; and on the death of Henry III. he revoked the sentence of excommunication which he had pronounced against the great Huguenot leader, and by his general policy facilitated his return to the communion of the church. In like manner, although he sanctioned the scheme of the Spanish Armada, and even promised a mag- nificent subvention to the enterprise, as soon as he learned that, if successful, it might result in the annexation of England to the crown of Spain, he withdrew his support, and, when the failure of the expedition was known, could not conceal his satisfaction.

From the time of Sixtus V. the chief importance and interest of papal history are to be found in its relations to France and Spain and to the Jesuit order (see JESUITS, vol. xiii. pp. 652-656) and, somewhat later, to Jesuitism and Jansenism (see JANSENISM, vol. xiii. p. 566) combined. During the rest of the reign of Henry IV. France witnessed a virtual triumph of Gallican principles; and, although he himself became a humble suppliant for readmission within the communion of the Roman Church, it was only to give more effectual expression to the principles of religious toleration. The edict of Nantes (1598) was promulgated, in fact, in defiance of the strongly expressed disapproval of Crement VIII. (1592-1605). The per- mission accorded to the Jesuits to return to France (1603) was a measure resolved upon by Henry in op- position to the advice of both De Thou and Sully. He

appears to have been actuated simply by motives of ex- pediency, but his expectations proved singularly fallacious. The Jesuits turned the opportunity thus afforded them to signal account, and succeeded in establishing a powerful ascendency in France throughout the 17th and the first half of the 18th century. The pontificate of Clement was distinguished by two other events, the one memorable in politics, the other in literature. Of these, the former was the reversion of the duchy of Ferrara, claimed from the house of Este by the apostolic see as an escheated fief ; the other was the publication of the greater part of the Annales Ecclesiastici of Baronius, a work of immense labour and research, which, although it could not stand the test of later criticism, rendered material support to the pretensions of the papacy. Baronius himself always maintained that

the papacy was more indebted to France than to any other European power ; and on the death of Clement his claim to the papal chair was strongly supported by the French party in the conclave, his election being, however, lost through the opposition of the party of Spain.

It was chiefly by skilful manceuvring that, after the few days' pontificate of Leo XL, the election of the Car-

dinal Borghese, as Paun V. (1605-21), was carried, not- Paul V.

withstanding the opposition of the saine party. Paul's election had really been in no small measure owing to the fact that his previous career had not happened to involve him in enmity with any of the cardinals. It is stated that Cardinal Bellarmine would have been chosen in his place, but the conclave dreaded the consequences of raising a Jesuit to the papal chair. Paul affected, how- ever, himself to regard his election as owing to the special intervention of Providence, and assumed the air and de- meanour which he held suitable to one divinely commis- sioned to restore the pontifical office to its former dignity. No pontiff ever insisted with more inflexible rigour on the attributes and exclusive powers of his office. In the measures which he initiated for the purpose of extending the influence and possessions of the church, Paul soon found himself involved in a conflict with the powerful and flourishing republic of Venice. opposing the institution of monastic and

other religious P foundations, of conniving at the alienation of ecclesiastical property and at the suspension of the authority of the ecclesiastical courts. Finding those whom he addressed less amenable to his wishes than he anticipated, he pro- ceeded to lay the whole republic under an interdict. Such a sentence rendered it obligatory on the religious orders throughout the province to discontinue all the customary religious services; the republic, however, en- joined them, under pain of banishment, to continue those services as before. The Jesuits, along with two other newly-founded orders, the Capuchins and the Theatines, alone ventured to disobey, and were banished from the province. A fierce controversy ensued, in which the con- duct of the republic was vindicated by the able pen of

Fra Paolo Sarpi (better known as "' Father Paul"), while Fra Paolo Baronius and Bellarmine defended the cause of Rome. S27Pi.

By Englishmen at that time resident in Italy, such as Sir Henry Wotton and the eminent Bedell (afterwards bishop of Ardagh), and by the English court, the contest was watched with lively interest as affording hopes of an Italian Reformation. The quarrel was skilfully fomented by Spain, and actual hostilities were averted only by the mediation of Henry IV. of France. The later years of Paul's pontificate present him in the more favourable light of a reformer of many abuses which had crept into the law-courts of the States, and the author of numerous im- provements in the capital. He enlarged both the Vatican and the Quirinal ; and the Borghese family from his time ranked as one of the wealthiest in the city.

The protection extended to the Jesuits by Paul was

continued by his successor, Grecory XV. (1621-23), and Gregory

was well repaid by their devotion and energy as pro- XV. pagandists. Gradually, in kingdom after kingdom, in principality after principality,

fession, was in a great measure recovered. In Boheinia in Silesia, and in Moravia the Protestant ministers, if not put to death or imprisoned, were driven out, their churches closed, and their congregations forbidden to assemble. Even in the United Provinces numerous converts were made, and a footing regained for Catholic teaching which has never since been lost,

while in Asia and in America new territories were won which might fairly seem to com- pensate the church for all that had been wrested from XIX. — 64

He accused the Signory of The re-

the ground won by Pro- Services

testantism, whether of the Lutheran or the Reformed econ- aa

» Jesuits.

Urban VILLI.

506

it in the Old World. The cordial co-operation of the curia with the society of Jesus was suspended, however, during the pontificate of Urpan VII (1623-44). A man of resolute and imperious nature, his conception of his own prerogatives is indicated by his memorable retort,

- when, on one occasion, he was confronted with a quota-

Innocent

whe

Rela- tions with France during reign of Louis XIV.

tion from the pontifical constitutions, that the dictum of a living pope was worth more than those of a hundred dead ones. He claimed, indeed, the promptest deference for his decisions ; while the college of cardinals, which he but rarely assembled in consistory, was treated by him with little respect. A Florentine by birth, he had witnessed in his earlier years the bitter struggle between the popedom and Spain; and it had become the cherished design of his life to render the States powerful and independent, and himself, as pontiff, the representative of a formidable political confederation. To this end he deemed it essen- tial to prevent the duchy of Mantua from falling into the hands of a ruler who represented an influence

antagonistic to, or independent of, Spain; and in pursuit of this policy he sought the aid of Richelieu. It was the time when the great cardinal was maturing his designs against the house of Hapsburg; and, somewhat singularly, the pope- dom was thus brought into political alliance with the statesn.cn who was aiming at the overthrow of the very power to which Roman Catholicism had been most indebted for its restoration. In the policy of Richelieu and that of Urban there was indeed a similar inconsist- ency. The former, while he persecuted the Huguenots at home, allied himself with Protestant powers like England, the United Provinces, and the northern German principali- ties ; the latter, while he had recourse to the most rigorous measures for the suppression of Protestantism in Germany, allied himself with the power on which that Protestant- ism mainly relied for support. It is scarcely too much to affirm to say that Protestantism, in the first half of the 17th century, owed its very existence on the Continent to the political exigencies of the popedom. During Urban's pontificate, in the year 1634, the duchy of Urbino was incorporated, like Ferrara, into the papal dominions, which now extended from the Tiber to the Po, uninterrupted save by the little republic of San Marino.

The policy of InNocent X. (1644-55) was a complete reversal of that of his predecessor, whose family he perse- cuted with implacable animosity. So injurious indeed were the effects of the contentions produced by these family feuds on the peace and prosperity of the city that ALEx- ANDER VII. (1655-67) on his election took an oath before the crucifix that he would never receive his kindred in Rome. Not less serious were the dissensions produced by the strife of political parties. We find an English visitor to Rome, during Innocent's pontificate, deeming it prudent to place himself under the protection of two cardinals—the one representing the French, the other the Spanish faction. In Innocent's eyes the treaty of Westphalia assumed the aspect of a twofold disaster: in the humiliation which it inflicted on the house of Hapsburg ; and in the distinctness with which it proclaimed the superiority of the state over the church, by the declaration that all ordinances of the canon or civil law which might be found to be at variance with the provisions of the treaty should be considered null and void. Innocent even went so far as to denounce the treaty and to threaten those who assented to its provisions with excommunication—a menace treated with contemptu- ous indifference even by the Catholic powers.

Throughout the reign of Louis XIV., indeed, there existed a perfect understanding between that monarch and the Jesuits; and with their support he could set the pope himself at defiance with impunity. Louis asserted more unreservedly than any of his predecessors the royal privileges known

PO Pr Ef DO MM

as the droit de regale. By this ancient right the crown claimed, whenever a bishopric was vacant, both the revenues and the distribution of patronage attached to the see as long as the vacancy continued. But in the southern provinces of Guienne, Languedoc, Provence, and Dauphiné this right had hitherto never been enforced. In an edict issued in 1673, however, Louis declared that the drott de regale would in future be enforced throughout the whole extent of the royal dominions. It was in vain that Innocent protested and threatened to excommunicate those who espoused the royal claims. Louis, who was supported by the great mass of the French clergy, remained firm; and nine years later a further blow was aimed at papal predominance by the promulgation of the famous Declaratio Cleri Gallicani. In this notable manifesto, which was drawn up at St Germains in 1682 and revised by Bossuet, a formal denial was given to the theory that the pope had any power over the temporalities of kings ; the superiority of a general council over the pope was once again affirmed; the administration of the affairs of the church by the pontiff, it was declared, ought in all cases to be subject to the canon law, and the papal authority to be exercised exclusively in connexion with questions of dogma, but even in such matters the de- cisions of the pontiff were not infallible and were subject to revision.

resolutions to be null and void, and severely censured the French bishops who had assented to them. His repu- tation for integrity and a genuine desire to reform the church gave additional force to his protest. Among other measures for restoring order in Rome he had deprived the French ambassador of the much-abused right of asylum which, by long tradition, attached to the embassy and its extensive precincts, and afforded shelter to many of the most desperate characters in the city. The ambassador refused to yield up the privilege, and Innocent thereupon excommunicated him. Louis now seized upon Avignon, took the papal nuncio prisoner, and convened a general council. Jt was even believed that he had at one time

con- ceived the design of creating the archbishop of Paris, who seconded and approved his policy, patriarch of France, and thus severing the last ties that bound the Gallican Church to the popedom. The courage and resolution which Inno- cent exhibited under these trying circumstances were by no means inspired solely by the conviction of the justice of his causc. Perhaps at no period are the interests and sym- pathies of religious parties to be found presenting a more complicated study. All Europe at this time was watching with alarm the rapid aggrandizement of the French mon- archy ; and Innocent, in his desire to see some check placed on that aggrandizement, was even far from wishing that the Huguenots should be expelled from France. With William of Orange he openly avowed his sympathy, and it was from secret papers in the cabinet of his minister of state that Louis, through the agency of a spy, first learned the prince's designs upon England. While the Jesuits, again, were co-operating with Louis in his assertion of the Gallican liberties, the Protestant powers were giving in- direct support to the maintenance of the papal pretensions. From the Jesuits Louis also received valuable aid in the question of the Spanish succession; and it is to their machinations that contemporary writers ascribe the fact that the Bourbon, Philip of Anjou, was named by Charles II. as the heir to the Spanish monarchy.

The virtues and milder wisdom of Innocent XII. (1691- 1700) won from Louis what the unconciliatory attitude of his two predecessors, Innocent XI. and ALexanper VIII. (1689-91) had not been able to obtain. In 1693 Louis

| himsclf notified to the pontiff that the " Declaration" would

Innocent XI. (1676-89), who had in the Innocent meantime succeeded to the papal chair, declared these X!.

The buil Uni- genitus.

Expul- sion of the Jausen- ists from France.

Decline of the popedom in politi- cal im- portance.

Tncreas- ing un- popu- larity of the Jesuit order.

no longer be imposed as obligatory on the Gallican clergy. Innocent responded by giving his assent to the above- mentioned disposition of the Spanish crown by Charles II. Other circumstances concurred to bridge over the breach

which for half a century had separated the French monarchy | from the popedom. The revocation of the edict of Nantes |

(1685) had conciliated both the curia and the Jesuits ; and in 1699 the feeling of accord between the French monarch and Innocent was confirmed by the condemnation of Fénelon's Maximes des Saints. While Protestantism was being crushed in France, Catholicism was obtaining in other countries the immunities which it would not grant. In 1697 the elector Frederick Augustus II. consented to declare himself a Catholic in order to gain the crown of Poland, and by this means a certain toleration was secured for Roman doctrine among a population bigotedly attached to Lutheranism. In 1713 the celebrated constitution Uni- gentus Dei Filius promulgated by CLEMENT XI. (1700-21) not only proved a death-blow to Jansenism, but involved in nearly the same fate that party which had hitherto fought the battle of liberalism in the Gallican Church. 'All the extravagancies," says a recent writer, "engendered by Jan- senism in its later and more questionable developments recoiled, however unjustly, upon the system of ecclesiastical policy vindicated by Gerson, De Marca, and Bossuet. Jan- senism became manifestly dangerous to public order and the security of the state; Gallicanism, in the view of a despotic Government, seemed involved in the same odious category ; and it was deemed necessary, in consequence, to visit both with an impartial exhibition of the same perse- cuting rigour" (Jervis, Church of France, ii. 278). Many of the Jansenists, driven from France, retired to Utrecht, a church which, without professing Jansenist principles, long continued to uphold the standard of doctrine fixed by Tridentine canons in opposition to the dangerous advance of Jesuitism. The Jansenists were always distinguished by their resolute opposition to the theory of papal infalli- bility, and with their fall a chief obstacle to the promulga- tion of that dogma was removed.

But, while, with respect to the acceptance of doctrine, the losses of the 16th century were thus materially retrieved, the popedom was sinking rapidly in political importance. Its influence in the Italian peninsula dwind- led to within the limits of the States of the Church ; and the dynastic succession in Naples and Sicily, in Parma and Piacenza, underwent a total change without the curia or the pontifical interests being in any way consulted. The results of the War of the Spanish Succession dis- appointed in every way the hopes of Clement XI.; and his chagrin, when he found himself compelled to recognize the pretensions of the archduke Charles to the Spanish crown, was intense. The manner in which the conclusion of the war demonstrated the growing power of England was again a sinister omen for the permanence of the papal system.

The order to whose efforts, notwithstanding an excep- tional experience in France, the popedom had in other countries been largely indebted was also destined to a signal reverse. The conviction had long been growing up in the chief cities of the Continent that wherever the representatives of Jesuitism obtained a footing the cause of public order and domestic peace was placed in jeopardy. And, while, in distant lands, the vaunted successes of the Jesuit missionaries too often represented the diffusion of a merely nominal Christianity, their activity as traders was a constant source of irritation to the mercantile communi- ties. We find, accordingly, the statesmen of Catholic Europe exhibiting, in the middle of the 18th century, a remarkable unanimity in their estimate of Jesuitism as a inischievous element in society, and also showing an in-

tions more and more under the control of the civil power. Carvalho, the Portuguese minister, who had himself become involved in a deadly struggle with the order at court, called upon BrEnepict XIV. (1740-58) to take measures for enforcing fundamental reforms among the whole body. Benedict, who recognized perhaps more fully than any other

| pontiff of the century the signs of the times, and who intro- | duced not a few salutary reforms in the general relations

of the curia, was far from disinclined for the task, but died before his schemes could be put in operation. His suc- cessor, CLEMENT XIII. (1758-69), on the other hand, pro- fessed to discern in the Jesuit body the surest stay of the church, and in 1765 gave his formal sanction to the peculiar form of devotion which they had introduced, known as the worship of the Sacred Heart. In 1768 he condemned their expulsion from France as “a grievous injury inflicted at once upon the church and the holy see.” The dissensions fomented by their agency at the Bourbon courts continued, however, to increase; and in 1769 the representatives of the chief Catholic powers at the Roman court received instructions to present each a formal demand that the Jesuit order should be secularized and abolished. Clement, who had vainly appealed to the empress Maria Theresa for the exertion of her influence, died suddenly of apoplexy on the day preceding that on which a consistory was to have been held for the purpose of giving effect to the demands of the powers. It was expressly with the view that he should carry out the task which his predecessor had sought to evade that Car-

dinal Ganganelli, Clement XIV. (1769-74), was raised to Clement the pontifical chair, chiefly through the Bourbon interest. XIV.

Originally a Franciscan friar, and a man of retiring un- worldly disposition, the new pontiff was painfully embar-

rassed by the responsibilities attaching to the policy which of the At length, after four years order.

he was expected to carry out. spent in balancing conflicting evidence and overcoming the scruples of his own mind, he issued the brief Dominus et Redemptor Noster, for the suppression of the order, which he declared to have merited its ruin by ‘its rest- lessness of spirit and audacity of action.” The remorse which he was said to have subsequently exhibited, com- bined with his sudden and mysterious end, were not with-

out considerable effect upon his successor, Prus VI, (1775— Pius VI.

99), who observed the utmost caution in carrying out the decree of Clement, and devoted his main efforts during his long pontificate to diverting the mind of Christendom from questions of doctrine to others of a practical and

more pleasing character. The austere simplicity which had dis- tinguished the Roman court in the time of Clement was exchanged for more than regal pomp and magnificence, while the pontiff's own subjects were benefited by the draining of the Pontine marshes, a work of immense labour, whereby a vast district extending along the sea-coast south of Rome was converted from an unhealthy swamp into a plain that subserved in some measure the purposes both of agriculture and commerce. That the suppression of the Jesuit order had been attended with no little danger to the interests of the Roman see was clearly shown by the progress which liberal opinions now began to make in Germany. The valuable researches of Muratori, which appeared in the earlier half of the 18th century had thrown a flood of light on all the circumstances of the develop- ment of the mcdizval papacy, and his labours as an editor had served, at the same time, to render the successive contemporary writers accessible for the first time to the ordinary scholar.

a profound impression. It was entitled On the State of

creasing determination to bring all ecclesiastical institu- ; the Church and the Legitimate Power of the Roman Bishop,

In the year 1763 the famous treatise Treatise of Nicholas von Hontheim, suffragan bishop of Treves, of " Feb- published under the pseudonym of " Febronius," produced TS

908

and was mainly devoted to pointing out how largely |

rFOPE DO

which was before long destined to so sudden an eclipse.

the false decretals, and the application of their doc- | Latin Christendom, observes Bunsen, seems throughout its trines, had been made to subserve the later pretensions | history to have been ever vacillating between two extremes of Rome, and more especially her claims to assert the | —that of the grossest superstition and that of the pro- supremacy of the pontiff over

general councils. On the | foundest scepticism, of bigotry and of atheism. It can Policy accession of Joseph IL, in 1780, to the throne of Austria, | scarcely, indeed, be doubted that the tolerance and indiffer- of the a new era commenced throughout the empire. Half the | ence, the results of contempt with respect to all religious ae monasteries and friaries were suppressed. The bulls Uni- | questions, which followed upon the Revolution largely ae genitus and In Cena Domini were declared null and void favoured the reintroduction of Roman doctrine. By the within the limits of the empire. Toleration was extended | curia itself the experiences of the past were interpreted in to Protestant sects and to members of the Greek Church; | a manner eminently favourable to its own pretensions ; the and the introduction of papal dispensations within the | altar, it was asserted, was ever the surest support of the Austrian dominions was declared unlawful, unless it could | throne, and the spiritual authority claimed by the supreme be shown that they were obtained without payment. Pius | pontiff afforded the best security for the maintenance of Restora- VI. vainly endeavoured to divert the emperor from his | really free institutions. Pius VIL, who as Cardinal Chiara- ne of policy of reform bya personal visit to Vienna in 1782. | monte had at one time affected to approve of democratic dor: Bal He was received with enthusiasm by the populace, but | principles, succeeded in gaining the good will of Bonaparte, gona- with coldness by the emperor, and by prince Kaunitz, the | and his accession was shortly followed by the concordat of parte. emperor’s chief adviser, with absolute rudeness. A few | 1801. The First Consul had already astonished the world The years later the outbreak of the French Revolution seemed | by the startling change of opinion to which he gave ex- French to portend for the popedom a like fate to that which had | pression in the Declaration of Milan, to the effect that Revolu- overtaken the Jesuit order. A movement which abolished | “society without religion is like a ship without a compass” ; ee tithes, rejected Catholicism as the state religion, and con- | and, having now resolved on the restoration of a monarchical fiscated the property of the church and the monastic | form of government, he effected an apparent reconciliation orders in France was not likely, when its representatives | with the Roman pontiff in order to strengthen his own appeared in Italy, to deal leniently with papal institutions. | hands. Catholicism was re-established as the state religion The demeanour of the National Assembly towards Pius | of France; but the confiscated property of the church was himself had not been

disrespectful; but the outrages on | not restored, while the prétended reintroduction of the religious sentiment and decency itself perpetrated by the | papal authority was deprived of all real validity by append- Convention drove the alarmed pontiff into the arms of | ing to the concordat certain ‘articles organiques” which Austria, with whom and the several reigning Italian | effectually debarred the pontiff from the exercise of any princes he hastily concluded an offensive league. In the | real jurisdiction within the realm. Inthe concordat made Italian campaign he met accordingly with no mercy at | with the Italian republic in 1803 the canon law was the hands of the Directory, and of Bonaparte acting as’| revived as the code whereby all questions not provided their representative. In 1797, first of all at Bologna and | for in new articles were to be decided. Notwithstanding subsequently at Tolentino, the most rigorous conditions | that he warmly resented the manner in which he had were imposed. The pontiff was compelled to cede to | been duped, Pius was ultimately prevailed upon by the France not only Avignon and the Venaissin, but also the | consummate address of Talleyrand to crown Napoleon as legations of Bologna, Ferrara, and the Romagna—an | emperor in Paris. The immediate result of this imprudent extent of territory representing fully a third of the papal | act, as regarded the popedom, was the assertion of imperial dominions; while at the same time a heavy pecuniary | rights in Rome itself on the part of the new emperor, and contribution was levied. Shortly after the peace of | a demand that the pontiff should henceforth make common Tolentino (February 1797) Pius was seized with an illness | cause with him against the enemies of France. On his Aboli- which seemed likely, at his advanced time of life, to prove | refusal Pius was made a prisoner, and the temporal sove- tion of fatal; and Napoleon, in anticipation of his death, gave | reignty of the Roman see declared to be at an end. At el . instructions that no successor to the office should be | Fontainebleau, in 1813, a new concordat was wrung from onl Aboli- elected, and that the papal government should be abolished. | the infirm and aged pontiff (whose position and treatment tion of The sequel, however, having disappointed these expecta- | strongly recalled those of his predecessor), and he was ea tions, the French ambassador in Rome proceeded through | compelled to surrender almost the last remnants of his govern. bis agents to foment an insurrection—a design for which | authority in France and to disown all claim to rank as a ment. the demoralized condition of the capital afforded unusual | temporal ruler. Pius VII.

survived, however, not only to facilities. The outbreak that ensued was immediately | witness the overthrow of his oppressor, but to regain with made the pretext for abolishing the existing rule, and | the Restoration both his spiritual and temporal preroga- in its place the Roman republic was proclaimed (15th | tives; and it was a notable feature in the proceedings February 1798). Neither his estimable character nor | that his resumption of the traditional pontifical rights in his advanced years served to shield the dethroned pontiff | connexion with the legations was effected, in opposition to from wanton cruelty and indignities. He was treated as | the wishes of Austria, with the support of England. He virtually a prisoner, his private property confiscated, and | regained his chair, indeed, amid the best wishes of the at last, after having been removed from one place of con- | Protestant powers,—a sympathy which, had he chosen to finement to another, he expired at Valence, in August | throw his influence into the scale that favoured advance- 1799, at the age of eighty-two. ment and reform, he might have retained unimpaired to It was under the protection of a schismatic power,— | the close of his pontificate. His policy, however, was Pd that of the emperor of Russia,—that, after a lapse of eight | thenceforth altogether reactionary. On the one hand he 1us .

months, Prus VIT. (1800-23) was elected pope at Venice. To ordinary observers the condition of the papacy at this time seemed almost hopeless; and the skill with which those who guided its policy converted the very theories and events of the Revolution itself into a ladder whereby to regain the ancient vantage-ground is in its way not less re-

suppressed the circulation of the Scriptures in the verna- cular; on the other, by a bull of 7th August 1814, he recalled the Jesuits, who since their dispersion in Latin Christendom had transferred the scene of their labours to Prussia and Russia.

ae. or In other respects Pius’s adminis- g, aces.

tration of his office was exemplary, and the same may be gors of

markable than that contemporary career of military genius | said of that of his successors, Lzo XII. (1823-29), Prus Pius VIL

VIII. (1829-30), and Grecory XVI. (1831-46). The adversities arising out of the Revolution had proved a salutary discipline. Nepotism ceased to disgrace the papal court. Lcclesiasticism itself assumed another tone: its morality was pure; its zeal in the performance of its duties conspicuous. In France there arose a new school,

The known as the Part: Prétre, the school of Chateaubriand, a Lamennais, and Montalembert, which rejected the ancient *rétTe.

Gallican claims and principles, and everywhere inculcated loyalty and submission to Rome as the first duty of the Reaction Catholic. In Germany neither the enlightened and inGer- strenuous efforts of Wessenberg nor the statesmanlike

a ctee policy of Metternich could produce concerted action among where, the several states, which were accordingly eventually re-

duced to the necessity of each making separate terms with the curia on an independent basis. The result, in nearly all cases, was that, in reconstructing its ecclesiastical or- ganization, and endeavouring at the same time to estab- lish a certain modus vivends in its diplomatic relations with

Rome, each state was compelled to make concessions which largely favoured the re-establishment of ultramontane in- stitutions. The signal failure of Wessenberg, in his ad- ministration of the see of Constance, to reintroduce the principles advocated by ‘‘ Febronius,” may be cited as one of the most notable instances of the defeat of liberal principles. In the Netherlands and in Silesia similar reactionary movements took place. In England, the Catholic Emancipation Act (1829), although conceived in a spirit of conciliation, proved, in the embittered rela- tions then existing with Ireland, of little avail, and in reality only imparted fresh strength to the machina- tions of the ultramontane party. The main facts in the history of the popedom from this period will be found under the head of Prus IX. (1846-77), pp. 156-8, supra, The following list taken from Gams (Series

Episcoporum Romanex Ecclesix) gives the succession of the pontiffs as accepted by the Roman Church and recorded in its registers.

List of the Pontiffs of the Roman Church.

Date of Election

or Consecration. Date of Death.

c.41 3B. Perrus 29 vi, ¢, 65-67 6.67 S. Linus f 23 ix, Cuno c.79 S. Cletus (Anencietus) t 26 iv, ce. 91 c.91 S. Clemens I. T 23 xi, c. 100 c.100 S. Evaristus Te ORXe c. 109 c.109 S. Alexander ne GiAg ce. 119 c.119 S. Sixtus (Xystus) T, Gin; c.126 ?128 S. Telesphorus if ie 137 c.138 S. Hyginus sp Lika 142 c.142 S. Pius ¢ 11 vii, c. 156 c.157 S. Anicetus iP ees VET. 168 S. Soter te22a, ce. LG alrite S. Eleutherus + 26 v, 189 c.190 S. Victor 1. Tt 20 iv. c. 202 c.202 S. Zephyrinus f 26 viii, 217 218 S. Calixtus 1. taliex. 222 222, S. Urbanus I. F225: V5 230 | 230 S- Pontianus res. 28 Ix, 235 235 (21 xi, ord.) | S. Anterus Te is 236 236 S. Fabianus faecoui 250 | 251 (iii, el.) S. Cornelius ¢ 14ix, 253 | 258 el. S. Lucius – oil, 254 | 254 (12 v?, el.) S. Stephanus I. t 2 viii, 257 257 viii S. Sixtus (Xystus) 11. t 6 viii, 258 259 22 vii, el. S. Dionysius + 26 xii, 268 | 269 5 i, cl, S. Felix t 30 xii, 274 | 275 ¢. di S. Eutychianus ip és) eek, 283 | 283 17 xii S. Gaius {22h 296 | 296 30 vi S. Marecllinus iP OPE =), 304 | 307 el. S. Mareellus Todos, 309 | 309 iv, el. S. Eusebius ¢ 17 viii, 309 310 2 vii S. Melchiades (dfilttades) jp 314 | 314 31i S. Sylvester + 31 xii, 335 336 18i S. Marcus ap OT BS 836 | 337 6 ii, el. S. Julius Tazalvs 352 352 22 v S. Liberius + 24 ix, 366 | 366 ix S. Damasus ¢ 10 xii, 384 | 384 xii S. Siricius if eset 398 | 39 3 xi-xii §. Anastasius I. f vert, anno 401-2 402 S. Innocentius I. Tlplit, 417 417 18 iii, cs. S. Zosimus ¢ 26 xii, 418 418 28 xii S. Bonifaclus I. + 4 ix, 422 | 422, ¢.10ix S. Coelestinus 1. Riceeo vii, 432 | 432 31 vii S. Sixtus III. + 18 viil, 440 | 440 viii, el. S. Leo I. + 10 xi, 461 461 12 xi, es. S. Hilarus t 21 ii, 468 468 25 ii, es. S. Simplicius sp} 483 483 S. Felix 111. fc. 25 ii, 492 492 1 lii, es. S. Gelasius SP IB) 385 496 496 c. 24 xi, es. S. Anastasius IT. f et sep, 19 xi, 498 498 22 xi S. Symmaclius t et sepult, 19 vii, 514 | 514 20 vii, es. S. Hlormisdas ¢ sepult, 7 vilti, 523 523 18 viii S. Joannes I. + 18 v, 526 | 526 12 vii, cs. S. Felix IV. ft sepel. 12 x (2) 530 530 17 ix, el. Bonifacius II. t sepel. 17 x, 5382 532 31 xii, cs. Joannes II. tT sepel. 27 v, 535 | 535 8 vi, cs. S. Agapetus I. ip eee iv, 536 536 8 vi, cs. S. Silverius, exul + sepel. 20 vi, c.

538 537 29 iil, cs. Vigilius t+ 7 vi, 555 555 p.7 vi, es. Pelagius I. t 3 iii, 560 560 14 vii, cs. Joannes III. t sepel. 18 vii, 573 574 8 vi, cs, Bencdictus I f 31 vii, 578 578 27 xi, cs. Pelagius II. t sepel. Gii, 590 590 3 ix, cs. S. Gregorius I. t sepel. 12 iii, 604 604 13 ix, es. Sabinianus ft 22 ii, 606 607 19 ii, es. Bonifacius III. + senel. 12 xi, 607 | 608 15 ix, cx. S. Bonifacius 1V. t sepel. 25 V, 615 615 19 x, es. S. Deusdedit } sepel. 8 xi, 618 | 619 28 xii, es. Bonifacius V t sepel. 25 x, 625 625 3 xi, cs. Ironorius F sepel. 12 x, 638 640 28 v, es. Sevcrinus f sepel. 2 viii, 640 640 25 xii, es. Joannes IV. t sepel. 12 x, 642 642 24 xi, cs, Theodorus I. t sepel. liv, 649 649 vi-vii, cx. S. Martinus t exrul 16 ix, 655 654 10 viii,es. | S. Eugenius I. tsepel. 3 vi, ears

Date of Election or Consecration. | Date of Death. 657 30 vii, es. S. Vitalianus f sepel. 27 i, 672 672 11 iv, es, Adeodatus t sepel. 16 vi, 676 676 2 xi, es. Donus f sep. 11 iv, 678 678 vi-vii, cs. S. Agatho ¢ sep. 101, 681 682 17 viii, cs. S. Leo II. ft sep. 8 vii, 683 684 26 vi, es. S. Benedictus II. tsep. 8yv, 685 685 28 vii, es. Joannes V. t 2 viii, 686 686 21x, cs. Conon ¢ sepel. 22 ix, 687 687 x-xii, el. S. Sergius I, f sepel. 8 ix, 701 701 30 x, es. Joannes VI. f sepel. 10-11 i, 705 705 1 iii, cs. Joannes VII. ft sep. 18 x, 707 708 18 i(?) Sisinnius f sep. Tii, 708 708 25 iii, ¢3. Constantinus I. ip ike, 715 715 19 v, es. S. Gregorius IT. fisepel, 11 ii, 731 731 11 ii, e. S. Gregorius II1. f sep. 29 xi, 741 741 8 xii, es. S. Zacharias t sep. 15 iii, 752 752 iii, el. Stephanus II. Gs ae 752 752 ex. iii, el. Stephanus ILI. f sep. 26 iv, 757 757 29 v, es. S. Paulus I. ft 28 vi, 767 767 5 vii, ¢s. Constantinus IT. depos. 6 viii, 768 768 7 viii, cs. Stephanus 1V. aelcil, ities 772 1 ii, el. Hadrianus i. ¢ 25 xii 795 795 26 xii, el. S. Leo 11, f sep. 12 vi, 816 816 vi, el. Stephanus V. 24 i, 817 817 25 i, es. S. Paschalis I. fic, Tay: 824 824 v-vi Engenius I1. t viii, 827 827 Valentinus t ez. ann, 827 827 ex. ann. Gregorius IV. jaeels 844 844i Sergius 11. + 274; 847 847 10 iv, cs. S. Leo IV. ¢ 17 vii, 855 Boo aus, Cs. Benedictus III. ft Tiv, 858 858 24 iv, cs. S. Nicolaus I. ¢ 13 xi, 867 867 14 xii, cs. Hadrianus II. Pe: Tex} 872 872 14 xii Joannes VIII. ¢ 15 xii, 882 882 c. xii Marinus I. 1 % 884 884 ¢. v, el. Hadrianus II. fe. viii-ix, 885 885 c. ix, el. Stephanus V1. Fic: ix, 891 891 ¢. ix Formosus op 2) Vey 896 896 c. 23 v, el. Bonifacius VI. cr Gavi, 896 896a.11vi,intrus,; Stephanus VI. (VIL) amot.¢ vii, 897 897 vii, es. Romanus Tae. xi, 897 897 c. xi. Theodorus II. + post 20 dies 898 c. vi, cs. Joannes 1X. vii, 900 900 6-26 vii Benedictus IV. t viii, 903 908 ¢. viii Leo V. dacs ix, 903 903 ¢. x Christophorus amot. i, 904 904 291, es, Sergius III. tp. 41x, 911 911 ¢. ix,

es. Anastasius fete xl, 913 913 ¢. xi, cs. Lando TA % 914 914 15 Vv, es. Joannes X. f in carcere 929 928 c. vii, cs. Leo VI. fies sil, 929 929 ¢. ii, ¢s. Stephanus VIII. ¢ 15 iii, 931 931 c. ili, es. Joannes XI. 1, i, 936 936 a, 9 i, es. Leo VI. (VII.) Ti vii, 939 939 a.19 vii, cons. | Stephanus IX. anc: xX, 942 942 a,11xi, cons. | Marinus II. fe. iv, 946 946 c. iv Agapetus II. fT Ce moiX: 955 955 ¢. xi, cs. Joannes XII1. (amot. 4 xii, 963) ft 14 v, 964 968 4 xii, el. Leo VIII. fe iit 965 964 v, el. Benedict V. exul 965 965 1 x, es. Joannes XIII. t Giz, 972 973 19 i, es. Benedict VI. f occis. vii, 974 974 x Benedictus VII. ies 983 983 ex. ann. Joannes XIV. f occts, 20 viii, 984 | 984 Bonifacius VLI. qi vii, 985 985 1 ix, es. Joannes XV. t in. iv, 996 996 3 v, ¢s. Gregorius V. ii, 999 999 zn. iv, cs. Sylvester II. (Gerbert) fj leivs 1008 1008 18 vi, es. Joannes X VIL. (Sicco) tT 7 xii, 1003 1008 25 xii, es. Joannes XVIII. yr Mal 1009 1009 p. 20 vi, es. | Sergius IV. t 16-22 vi, 1012 1012 22 vi, es. Benedict VIII. ip ike 1024 1024 24 vi-15 vii,es.| Joannes XIX. ta 1033 1033 i, es. Benedictus 1X, resignat, lv, 1045 1045 1 vy, intr. Gregorius VI. ~ resignat, 20 xii, 1046

510

| Date of Death.

Date of Election or Consecration.

POoOP—POP

Date of Death.

Date of Election or Consecration.

1389 2 xi Bonifacius LX. +. ple 1404 1404 17x Innocentius VIT. 7 Gres 1406 1406 2 xii Gregorius XII. (t 1419) resignat. 4 vii, 1415 1409 26 vi Alexander V. 3, 1410 1410 l7 v Joannes XXIII, (} 22 xi, 1419) amoz, 24 v, 1415 1417 11 xi Martinus V. F 20 ii, 1431 1431 8 iii Eugenius IV. + 23 ii, 1447 1447 6 iii Nicolaus V. + 24 iii, 1455 1455 8 iv Calixtus III. 6 viii, 1458 1458 19 viii Pius II. 15 viii, 1464 1464 31 viii Paulus II. 28 vii, 1471 1471 9 viii Sixtus 1V. 12 viii, 1484 1484 24 viii Innoeentius VIII. 25 vii, 1492 1492 11 viii Alexander VI. 18 viii, 1503 1503 22 ix Pius III. 18 x, 1503 1508 1 xi Julius IT. ASHE 1513 1513 15 iii Leo X. TT siti 1521 USA

CI Hadrianus VI. 14 ix, 1523 1523 19 xi Clemens VII. 25 ix, 1534 1534 13 x Paulus ITI. 10 xi, 1549 1550 8 ii Julius IIT. 28 iii, 1555 1555 9 iv Marcellus II. 30 iv, 1555 1555 23 v Panlus IV. 18 viii, 1559 1559 25 xii Pius IV. Sbxti; 1565 1566 17 i, cs. S. Pius V. ILA 1572 1572 26 v Gregorius XIII. 0 iv, 1585 1585 1 v, cs. Sixtus V. i 1590

1590 15 ix, cl.

1590 5 xii 1591 29 x, el.

Urbanus VII. Gregorius XIV. Innocentius IX,

1590 1591 1591

1346 25 xii, cs. Clemens II. Ties 1047 1048 17 vii, es. Damasus II. t 9 viii, 1048 1049 12 ii, cs. S. Leo IX. ¢ 19 iv, 1054 1055 13 iv, cs. Victor II. tT 28 vii, 1057 1057 2 viii, el. Stephanus X. Teen, 1058 1058 5 iv, el. Benedict X. expuls, ¢. i, 1059 1059 24 i, cs. Nicolaus II. ft 27 vii, 1061 1061 1 x, el. Alexander II. + 21 iv, 1073 1073 22 iv, el. S. Gregorius VII. Tt 25 v, 1085 1086 24 v, cl. Victor III. ft 16 ix, 1087 1088 12 iii, el. Urbauus II. T 29 vil, 1099 1099 18 viii, el. Paschalis II. ft 211, 1118 1118 24 i, cl. Gelasius II. t 291, 1119 1119 2 ii, el. Calixtus IT. t 13-14 xii 1124 1124 15-16 xii, el. | Tonorius II. ¢ Lii, 1130 1130 14 ii, el. Innocentius II. } 24 ix, 1143 1143 26 ix, el. Ceelestinus II. Taal, 1144 1144 12 iii, el. Lucius II. + 16 ii, 1145 1145 15 ii, el. Eugenius III. + 8 vii, als 3 ; 1153 12 vii, es, Anastasius IV. + 3 xii, 1154 | 1154 4 xii, cl. Hadrianus IV. teed Lob: 1159 | 1159 7 ix, el. Alexander III. + 30 viii, 1181 1181 1 ix Lucius ITI. + 25 xi, 1185 1185 25 xi Urbanus ITI. $20 x; abbey / 1187 21 x, el. Gregorius VIII. tel Rais 1187 ITS7 19au, cl: Clemens III. . ba 1191 1191 30 iii, el. Coelestinus ITI. ip tdek 1198 1198 8i Innocentius ITI. + 16 vii, 1216 1216 18 vii llonorius III. + 18 iii, 1227 1227 19 iii Gregorius IX. ¢ 21 viii, 1241 1241 x Ceelestinus LY. ¢ 17-18 xi, 1241 1243 25 vi Innocentius IV ¢ 18 xii, 1254 1254 25 xii Alexander IV. { 25 Vv, 1261 1261 29 viii Urbanus IV. T9205 1264 1265 5ii Clemens IV. ip 2 sab 1268 POWd 1s Gregorius X. Tales 1276 1276 23 ii, cs. Innocentius V. Gp 22 wal, 1276 1276 12 viiyel. Hadrianus V. + 17 viii, 1276 1276 13 ix Joannes XXI. Tt) Love 1277 1277 25 xi Nicolaus IIT. t 22 viii, 1280 1281 22 ii Martinus IV. + 28 iii, 1285 1285 2 iv llonorius IV. + opive 1287 1288 15 ii Nicolaus IV. t+ 4iv, 1292 1294 5 vii S. Celestinus V. (f 19 v, 1296) res.

13 xii, 1294 1294 24 xii Bonifacius VIII. jaliexe 1303 1303 22 x Benedictus XI. + 7 Vil; 1304 1305 5 vi Clemens V. tT 20 iv, 1314 1316 7 viii Joannes XXII. t 4 xii, 3334 1334 20 xii Benedictus XII. + 25 iv, 1342 1342 7 v, el. Clemens V1. Tt 6 xii,. 1352 1352 18 xii Innocentius VI. 712 ix, 1362 1362 28 x Urbanus V. Tl Siexaie 1370 1370 30 xii Gregorius XI. je2tans 1378 1378 8 iv Urbanus VI. sp 1 oe 1389 [13878 20 ix Clemens VII. antipapa Aven. ¢ 16 ix, 1394 1394 28 ix Benedict XIII. (amot. 26 vii) 1417 ¢ 23 v, 1423]

Authorities.—The great series known as the Annales Ecelesiastiet of Baronius, continued by Raynaldus, 42 vols. fol. (1738-56), represents a laborious but uneritical collection of materials from

the earliest times down to the Reformation. A. Theiner, embracing the period 1572-85, is of higher value. In a critical investigation of the original sources, the great work of F. Maassen, Geschichte der Quellen und der Literatur des canonischen Rechts in Abcndlande (1871 sq.) is indispensable. Milman's Jistory of Latin Christianity continues to be the fullest and most impartial source of information in English from the lst to the 15th century; this may be supplemented by Gregorovius, Geschichte der Stadt Rom tm Miticlalter vom 5ten bis 16ten Jahrhundert, 8 vols. (1859-72), which throws considerable light on the political and social relations of the city and the papal States; and also by Thomas Greenwood, Cathedra Petri, a political History of the great Latin Patriarchate, 6 vols. (1856-65). This latter work, although published subse- quently to the first edition of Milman, was written before it, and, according to the author, without reference to its pages ; it deserves the praise of being, at least in the earlier volumes, a piece of learned and laborious research on the part of a layman of considerable ac- quirements and candid disposition. In a comparison of the views and treatment of the two foregoing works, Win. von Giesebrecht's Geschiehte der deutschen Kaiserzeit, 5 vols. (5th ed, now publishing), will be found useful. 4 History of the Papacy during the Period of the Reformation, by Canon Creighton (only partly published), promises to furnish a valuable account of this period, derived from the original sources. From the Reformation, Leopold von Ranke, Die rimischen Pépste in den letzten vicr Jahrhunderten, 8 vols. (7th ed., 1878), is the classic work. A translation of the first edition into English by Sarah Austin appeared in 1840, and has

been fre- quently reprinted. H. Geffcken, Church and State, translated by i. F. Taylor, 2 vols. (1877), supplies additional illustration, more especially of the relations in Germany. Nippold, Handbueh der neuesten Kirehengeschichte, 2 vols. (1880-83), traces the subject from the Reformation to the present time. The difficulties attach- ing to the first commencement, the earlier chronology, and the episcopal succession are elaborately treated by R. A. Lipsius, Die Quellen der rémischen Petrussage (1872), and Chronologie der rémi- schen Bischife bis zur Mitte des vierten Jahrhunderts (1869). For

The continuation by.

1592 30 i, el. Clemens VIII. 5 iii, 1605 1605 1 iv, el. Leo XI. 27 i 1605 1605 16 v, el. Paulus V. 28 i, 1621 1621 9 ii Gregorius XV. 8 vii, 1623 1628 6 viii, el. Urbauus VIII. 29 vii, 1644 1644 15 ix Innocentius X. qi, 1655 1655 7 iv Alexander VII. Bod 1667 1667 20 vi Clemens IX, 9 xii, 1669 1670 29 iv Clemens X. 22 vii, 1676 1676 21 ix Innocentius XI. 12 vii, 1689 1689 6x Alexander VIII. is 1691 1691 12 vii Innocentius XII. 2agixe 1700 1700 23 xi, el. Clemens XI. 19 iii, 1721

7

1

Gi

3

2

2

Bt em ee ite te te ae te at af ge te ate fe fa a a fe ate aa te af te te le ae ee te fo te ae pe te pe te le ty

3

a

4

a

17218 Vv Innocentius XIII. iii, 1724 1724 29 v Benedictus XIII. 21 ii, 1730 1730 12 vii Clemens XII. ii, 1740 1740 17 viii Benedictus XIV. vy, 1758 1758 6 vii Clemens XIII. ii, 1769 1769 19 v Clemens XIV. 22 15, 1774 1775 15 ii Pius VI. 29 viii, 1799 1800 14 iii Pius VII. 20 viii, 1823 1823 28 ix Leo XII. 10 ii, 1829 1829 31 iii Pius VIII. 30 xi, 1830 1831 2 ii Gregorius XVI. 1 vi, 1846 1846 16 vi, cl. Pius IX. 3 vi, 1877 1877 vi, el. Leo XIII.

the abstract treatment of the subject, ‘Thomassin, Vetus ct nova Ecclesie Disciplina (1773), supplies the views of the moderate adherent of the Gallican Church as opposed to the ultramontanists; while the classic though somewhat antiquated discussion by Bingham in his Antiquities of the Christian Church (1st ed., 1708- 22) gives the corresponding view‘of the modzrate Anglican. The treatise of R. Baxmann, Die Politik der Pépste, von Gregor I. bis auf Gregor VII., 2 vols. (1868-69), is of considerable merit. The Regesta Pontifiewm Romanorwm, edited by Jaffe and Potthast, 3 vols., gives a kind of catalogue raisonné of the pontifical briefs, letters, and encyclicals from 67 to 1304 A.p. Of the letters them- selves no complete collection has appeared ; the volume edited by Coustant (1796) comes down only to 437, the more recent collection by Thiel embraces only the period 461-523. The Bulls of Innocent IV. and Benedict XI. have recently been ,edited from the original MSS. in the Vatican, the former by M. Elie Berger, the latter by M. Grandjean. For information on technical points involving the relations of the popedom to the canon law and the church at large, see J. F. von Schultz, Lehrbuch des katholischen Kirehenrechts, 2 vols. (1856-60). The manual by F. Walter, Lehrbueh des Kirehen- rechts aller christlichen Confessionen (14th ed., 1871), of which the first edition appcared in 1822, illustrates the departure from the older ecclesiastical code which took its rise in the anti-Febronian movement. The abuses that arose ont of the papal nepotism are depicted by Gregorio Lcti (a convert from Romanism in the 17th century) in a well-known volume,—‘“ ll Nipotismo di Roma, or the ITistory of the Pope’s Nephews from the time of Sixtus IV. to the death of Alexander VIT., in two parts: written originally in Italian

and Englished by W. A., London, 1669.” The tombs of the pontiffs and the associations they recall are admirably described by Gregoro- vius in a little volume entitled Die Grabdenkméler der Papste (2d ed., 1881). (J. B. M.)

POPLAR (Populus), the name of a small group of arborescent amentaceous plants, belonging to the order Salicacex. The catkins of the poplars differ from those of the nearly allied willows in the presence of a rudimentary perianth, of obliquely cup-shaped form, within the toothed

Por P iia Rh

bracteal scales; the male flowers contain from eight to j

thirty stamens ; the fertile bear a one-celled (nearly divided) ovary, surmounted by the deeply cleft stigmas; the two- valved capsule contains several seeds, each furnished with a long tuft of silky or cotton-like hairs. The leaves are broader than in most willows, and are generally either deltoid or ovate in shape, often cordate at the base, and frequently with slender petioles vertically flattened. Many of ‘the species attain a large size, and all are of very rapid growth. The poplars are almost entirely confined to the north temperate zone, but a few approach or even pass its northern limit, and they are widely distributed within that area; they show, like the willows, a partiality for moist ground, and often line the river-sides in otherwise treeless districts. The number of species cannot be very accurately defined,—several, usually regarded as distinct, being prob- ably merely variable forms of the same type. All yield a soft easily-worked timber, which, though very perishable when exposed to weather, possesses sufficient durability when kept dry to give the trees a certain economic value.

Of the European kinds, one of the most important and best marked forms is the White Poplar or Abele, P. alba, a tree of large size, with rounded spreading head and curved branches, which, like the trunk, are covered with a grey- ish-white bark, becoming much furrowed on old stems. The leaves are ovate or nearly round in general outline, but with deeply waved, more or less lobed and indented margins and cordate base; the upper side is of a dark green tint, but the lower surface is clothed with a dense white down, which likewise covers the young shoots,— giving, with the bark, a hoary

aspect to the whole tree. As in all poplars, the catkins expand in early spring, long before the leaves unfold; the ovaries bear four linear stigma lobes; the capsules ripen in May. A nearly related form, which may be regarded as a sub-species, P. canescens, the Grey Poplar of the nurseryman, is distinguished , from the true abele by its smaller, less deeply cut leaves, which are grey on the upper side, but not so hoary beneath as those of P. alba; the pistil has eight stigma lobes. Both trees occasionally attain a height of 90 feet or more, but rarely continue to form sound timber beyond the first half- century of growth, though the trunk will sometimes endure for a hundred and fifty years. The wood is very white, and, from its soft and even grain, is employed by turners and toy-makers, while, being tough and little liable to split, it is also serviceable for the construction of packing cases, the lining of carts and waggons, and many similar purposes ; when thoroughly seasoned it makes good flooring planks, but shrinks much in drying, weighing about 58 ib per cubic foot when green, but only 33} tb wheu dry. The white poplar is an ornamental tree, from its grace- ful though somewhat irregular growth, aud its dense hoary foliage ; it has, however, the disadvantage of throwing up numerous suckers for some yards around the trunk.

The grey and white poplars are usually multiplied by long cuttings; the growth is so rapid in a moist loamy soil that, according to Loudon, cuttings 9 feet in length, planted beside a stream, formed in twelve years trunks 10 inches in diameter. Both these allied forms occur throughout central and southern Europe, but, though now abundant in England, it is doubtful whether they are there indigenous. /P. alba suffers much from the ravages of wood-eating larve, and also from fungoid growths, especially where the branches have been removed by prun- ing or accident; trunks have occasionally acquired a diameter of 3 feet and upwards.

The aspens form an important section, of which the Common Aspen of Europe, P. tremula, may be taken as the type,—a tall fast-growing tree with rather slender trunk, and grey bark becoming rugged when old; the

oll

orbicular leaves, toothed on the margin, and slightly downy when young, are afterwards smooth, dark-green on the upper and greyish-green on the

lower surface; the long slender petioles, much flattened towards the outer end, allow of free lateral motion by the slightest breeze, giving the foliage its well-known tremulous character.

The aspen is an abundant tree in the northern parts of Britain, even as far as Sutherland, and is occasionally found in the coppices of the southern counties, but in these latter habitats seldom reaches any large size; throughout northern Europe it abounds in the forests,—in Lapland flourishing even in 70° N. lat., while in Siberia its range extends to the Arctic Circle ; in Norway its upper limit is said to coincide with that of the pine; trees exist near the western coast having stems 15 feet in circumference. The wood of the aspen is very light and soft, though tough ; it is employed by coopers, chiefly for pails and herring-casks ; it is also made into butchers' trays, pack-saddles, and various articles for which its lightness recommends it; sabots are also made of it in France, and in medieval days it was valued for arrows, especially for those used in target practice; the bark is used for tanning in northern countries ; cattle and deer browse greedily on the young shoots and abundant suckers. Aspen wood makes but indifferent fuel, but charcoal prepared from it is light and friable, and has been employed in gunpowder manufacture. The powdered bark is sometimes given to horses as a vermifuge; it possesses likewise tonic and febrifugal properties, containing a considerable amount of salicin. The aspen is readily propagated either by cut- tings or suckers, but has been but little planted of late years in Britain. P. trepida, or tremuloides, is closely allied to the European aspen, being chiefly distinguished by its more pointed leaves ; it is a native of most parts of Canada and the United States, extending northwards as far as Great Slave Lake. The American Aspen is a smaller tree than P. tremula, seldom rising to a greater height than 30 feet, and rarely forming timber of any value ; the wood burns better in the green state than that of most trees, and is often used by the hunters of the north-west as fuel; split into thin layers, it was formerly employed in the States for bonnet and hat making; the bark is of some value as a tonic and febrifuge. LP. grandidentata, the Large-leaved American Aspen, is a tree of larger growth, with ovate or roundish leaves deeply and irregularly serrated onthe margin. The wood is strong, and considered durable for indoor use ; it is also employed in some districts for fences ; split into slender strips, it has been applied to the manufacture of hats, like that of the Canadian aspen.

Some of the most valuable trees of the genus belong to a section remarkable for the elongation of the fertile catkins, which become lax towards maturity. P. nigra, the Black Poplar, one of the most important of tliis group, is a tree of large growth, with dark deeply-furrowed bark on the trunk, and ash-coloured branches; the smooth deltoid leaves, serrated regularly on the margin, are of the deep green tint which has given name to the tree; the petioles, slightly compressed, are only about half the length of the leaves. The black poplar is common in central and southern Europe and in some of the adjacent parts of Asia, but, though abundantly planted in Britain, is probably not there indigenous. The wood is of a yellowish tint. In former days this was the prevalent poplar in Britain, and the timber was employed for the purposes to which that of other species is applied, but has been superseded by 2. monilifera and its varieties ; it probably furnished the poplar-wood of the Romans, which, from its lightness and soft tough grain, was in esteem for shield-making ; in continental Europe it is still in some request ; the bark, in Russia, is used for tanning leather,

while in Kamchatka it is sometimes ground up and mixed with meal; the gum secreted by the buds was employed by the old herbalists for various medicinal purposes, but is probably nearly inert ; the cotton-like down of the seed has been converted into a kind of vegetable felt, and has also been used in paper-making. A closely related form is the well-known Lombardy Poplar, P. fastigiata, remark- able for its tall cypress-like shape, caused by the nearly vertical growth of the branches. Probably a mere variety of the black poplar, its native land appears to have been Persia or some neighbouring country ; it was unknown in Italy in the days of Pliny, while from remote times it has been an inhabitant of Kashmir, the Punjab, and Persia, where it is often planted along roadsides for the purpose of shade; it was probably brought from these countries to southern Europe, and derives its popular name from its abundance along the banks of the Po and other rivers of Lombardy, where it is said now to spring up naturally from seed, like the indigenous black poplar. It was introduced into France in 1749, and appears to have been grown in Germany and Britain soon after the middle of the last century, if not earlier. The Lombardy poplar is valuable chiefly as an ornamental tree, its timber being of very inferior quality ; its tall erect

growth renders it use- ful to the landscape-gardener as a relief to the rounded forms of*other trees, or in contrast to the horizontal lines of the lake or river-bank where it delights to grow. In Lombardy and France tall hedges are sometimes formed of this poplar for shelter or shade, while in the suburban parks of Britain it is serviceable as a screen for hiding buildings or other unsightly objects from view ; its growth is extremely rapid, and it often attains a height of 100 feet and upwards, while from 70 to 80 feet is an ordinary size in favourable situations.

P. canadensis, the ‘‘ Cotton-wood”’ of the western prairies, and its varieties are perhaps the most useful trees of the genus, often forming almost the only arborescent vegetation on the great American plains. The P. canadensis of Michaux, which may be regarded as the type of this group, is a tree of rather large growth, with rugged grey trunk, and with the shoots or young branches more or less angular ; the glossy deltoid leaves are sharply pointed, somewhat cordate at the base, and with flattened petioles; the fertile catkins ripen about the middle of June, when their opening capsules discharge the cottony seeds which have given the tree its common western name; in New England it is sometimes called the ‘* River Poplar.” The cotton-wood timber, though soft and perish- able, is of value in its prairie habitats, where it is frequently the only available wood either for carpentry or fuel; it has been planted to a considerable extent in some parts of Europe, but in England a kindred form, P. monilifera, is gencrally preferred from its larger and more rapid growth. In this well-known variety the young shoots are but slightly angled, and the branches in the second year become round; the deltoid short-pointed leaves are usually straight or even rounded at the base, but sometimes are slightly cordate; the capsules ripen in Britain about the middle of May. This tree is of extremely rapid growth, and has been known to attain a height of 70 feet in sixteen years ; the trunk occasionally acquires a dia- meter of from 3 to 5 feet, and, according to Emerson, a tree near New Ashford, Massachusetts, measured 20 feet 5 inclies in circum- ference ; it succeeds best in deep loamy soil, but will flourish in nearly any moist but well-drained situation. The timber is much uscd in some rural districts for flooring, and is durable for indoor pur- poses wlien protected from dry-rot ; it has, like most poplar woods, the property of resisting fire better than other timber. The native country of this sub-species has been much disputed; but, though still known in many British nurseries as the “

Black Italian Pop- lar," it is now well ascertained to be an indigenous tree in many parts of Canada and the States, and is probably a mere variety of P. canadensis ; it seems to have been first brought to England from Canada in 1772. In America it seldom attains the large size it often acquires in England, and it is there of less rapid growth than the prevailing form of the western plains; the name of ''cotton- wood " is locally given to other species. P. macrophylla or candi- cans, eommonly known as the Ontario Poplar, is remarkable for its very large heart-shaped leaves, sometimes 10 inches long; it is found in New England and the milder parts of Canada, and is frequently planted in Britain; its growth is extremely rapid in moist land ; the buds are covered with a balsamic secretion. The

true Balsam Poplar, or Tacamahac, P. balsamifera, abundant in most parts of Canada and the northern States, is a tree of rather large growth, often of somewhat fastigiate habit, with round shoots and oblong-ovate sharp-pointed leaves, the base never cordate, the petioles round, and the disk deep glossy green above but somewhat downy below. This tree, the "liard" of the Canadian voyageur, abounds on many of the river sides of the north-western plains ; it occurs in the neighbourhood of the Great Slave Lake and along the Mackenzie river, and forms much of the drilt-wood of the Arctic coast. In these northern habitats it attains a large size ; the wood is very soft; the buds yicld a gum-like balsam, from which the common name is derived; considered valuable as an antiscorbutic, this is said also to have diuretic properties; it was formerly imported into Europe in small quantities, under the name of "baume focot," being scraped off in the spring and put into shells. This balsam gives the trec a fragrant odour when the leaves areunfolding. The tree grows well in Britain, and acquires occasion- ally a considerable size. A very closely allied variety abounds in Siberia and Dauria, chiefly distinguished by its wider leaves, rounded growth, and the darker tint of its wood ; a kind of wine, esteemed as a diuretic, is prepared in Siberia from the buds. Its fragrant shoots and the fine yellow green of the young leaves recommend it to the ornamental planter. It is said by Aiton to have been intro- duced into Britain about the end of the 17th century. (C. P.J.)

POPLIN, or TABINET, is a mixed textile fabrie consist- ing of a silk warp with a weft of worsted yarn. As the weft is in the form of a stout cord, the fabric has a ridged structure, like rep, which gives depth and softness to the lustre of the silky surface. Poplins are used for dress purposes, and for rich upholstery work. The manufacture is of French origin ; but it was brought to England by the Huguenots, and has long been specially associated with Ireland. The French manufacturers distinguish between popelines unies or plain poplins and popelines & dispositions or Lcossaises, equivalent to Scotch tartans, in both of which a large trade is done with the United States from Lyons.

POPOCATEPETL (Aztec popocani, “smoking,” tepett, “ mountain”), a burning mountain in Mexico, in 18° 59’ 47” N. lat. and 98° 33’ 1” W. long., which along with the neighbouring and somewhat lower summit of Ixtaccihuatl (Aztec “White Womau”) forms the south-eastern limit of the great valley in which the capital is built. As it lies in the province of Puebla, and is the great feature in the view from that city, it is also called the Puebla Volcano. With the single exception of Mount Elias in Alaska, Popocatepetl appears to be the highest peak in North America, rising as it does in a regular snow-covered cone to an altitude of 17,853 feet. The main mass of the mountain consists of andesite, but porphyry, obsidian, trachyte, basalt, and other similar rocks are also repre- sented. Between the pine forest (Pinus occidentalis), which ceases at a height of 12,544 feet, and the snow limit, 14,960 feet, there lies a tract of loose sand, largely composed of grains of sulphur, which renders the asceut tedious and at times dangerous, though the first 1600 feet can be accomplished on horseback. On the summit is an enormous crater measuring 5000 feet across aud with a sheer depth of 2000 feet. The vapours rising from the solfataras, the mixture of sulphur yellow and ash grey in the caldron, the dazzling snow on the edges of the crater walls, and the deep blue of the sky above produce the most indescribable effects of colour. The highest point of the mountain is a softly rounded eminence about 30 feet only from the rim. Sulphur from the crater is regularly worked by a number of Indians who have their huts at the foot of the cone, at a height of 12,000 feet. The material is shot down a slide for a distance of between 2000 and 3000 feet, and the workmen also avail thein- selves of this means of descent. At the foot of the east slope of Popocatepetl stretches a vast lava field—the Malpays of Atlachayacatl,

which gives birth to the Rio Atlaco. According to Humboldt, it rises from 60 to 80 feet above the plain, and extends 18,000 feet from east to west with a breadth of 6000 feet. The date of its formation

must be of great antiquity. There have been only two or three moderate eruptions during the last 300 years, though smoke continually issues from the crater, and from time to time vast showers of cinders and stones are shot up.

In 1519 Cortes sent a party of ten men to climb a smoking mountain which was evidently Popocatepetl ; and in 1522 Francisco Montaiio not only reached the summit but had himself let down into the crater a depth of 400 or 500 feet. Nosecond ascent of the mountain is recorded till April (see Brantz Mayer, Mexico, vol. ii.) and November 1827. Other ascents have been made in 1834, 1848, and subsequent years.

POPPAKA SABINA. See Nero.

POPPY OIL is obtained by pressure from the minute seeds of the garden or opium poppy, Papaver somniferum (see Opium, vol. xvii. p. 787). The white-seeded and black-seeded varieties are both used for oil-pressing ; but, when the production of oil is the principal object of the culture, the black seed is usually preferred. The qualities of the oil yielded by both varieties and the proportion they contain (from 50 to 60 per cent.) are the same. By cold pressure seeds of fine quality yield from 30 to 40 per cent. of virgin or white oil (hudle blanche), a transparent limpid fluid with a slight yellowish tinge, bland and pleasant to taste, and with almost no perceptible smell. On second pressure with the aid of heat an additional 20

to 25 per cent. of inferior oil (huile de fabrique or huile |

russe) is obtained, reddish in colour, possessed of a biting taste, and a linseed-ltke smell. The oil belongs to the linoleic or drying series, having as its principal constituent linolein ; and it possesses greater drying power than raw tinseed oil. Its specific gravity at 15° C. is 6°925; it remains limpid at ~ 15° C., but forms a thick white mass at — 20° C., which does not again

become fluid till the temperature rises to —2° C. Poppy oil is a valuable and much used medium for artistic oil painting. The. fine qualities are largely used in the north of France (huile de eillette) and in Germany as a salad oil, and are less liable than olive oil to rancidity. The absence of taste and characteristic smell in poppy oil also leads to its being much used for adulterating olive oil. The inferior qualities are principally consumed in soap-making and varnish-making, and for burning in lamps. The oil is very extensively used in the valley of the Ganges and other opium regions for food and domestic purposes. By native methods in India about 30 per cent. of oil is extracted, and the remaining oleaginous cake is used as food by the poor. Ordinary poppy-oil cake isa valuable feeding material, rich in nitro-genous constituents, with an ash showing an unusually large proportion of phosphoric acid. The seed of the yellow horned poppy, Glaucium luteum, yields from 30 to

35 per cent. of an oil having the same drying and other |

properties as poppy oil; and from the Mexican poppy,

Argemone mexicana, is obtained a non-drying purgative |

oil useful as a lubricant and for burning.

POPULATION. The phenomena of population are the product of physical forces the nature of which it will be necessary to investigate. It will, however, be con- venient to consider population, in the first place, as a statical phenomenon, that is, to observe and classify the principal features it presents, without attempting to in- vestigate the system of causes of which they are the effects. Thereafter the dynamical aspects of the subject, namely, the general laws governing the forces whose joint action has produced population, will receive attention.

I. Population, statically considered, may be defined as “the totality of human beings existing within a given area at a given moment of time.” This definition is identical with that adopted by Haushofer (p. 87), except that that eminent authority thought it unnecessary to add the clause relating to time. The totality just mentioned is ascertained in modern times and by civilized nations by the statistical

| operation known as the Census (9.v.). It is usual to | obtain by means of a census a good deal of information beyond the bare fact of the number of persons whose existence is, for the purposes of the census, taken cognizance of. Part of this information is obtained for purposes connected with the administration of the state, such as that contained in replies to questions as to the religion, profession, &c., of the individuals numbered. But these facts, though highly important, are not facts of popula- tion strictly speaking. There are two very important characteristics common to all considerable populations— namely, the approximate constancy of the distribution of the population as regards sex and age. A census which did not distinguish between the number of maleand the number of female persons composing the population of which it takes cognizance would be seriously defective, Inquiries as to the height and the girth round the chest of individuals are usually made in countries where military service 1s compulsory, and the degree of prevalence of

_ bodily defects, such as blindness and deafness, is also noted _for similar reasons; but such inquiries are the work of

| specialists, official and other, and in any case are not in-

cluded in the information obtained from a census. The age of each individual is, however, easily obtained in the course of the operations of the census. We shall now briefly set forth the general characteristics of a population, examined at a particular point of time and without refer-

ence to similar phenomena at previous points of time.

Population of the World.—The total population of the world is, to a large extent, an estimate, inasmuch as in some countries a proper census has never been taken, while in many the interval that has elapsed since the last opera- tion is so long as to reduce it to the level of serving as a basis for a calculation in which estimates play a large part.

So great, indeed, is the uncertainty in which all such calculations are involved that an eminent French statis- tician, M. Block, abandons all

attempt to deal with the problem, dismissing the subject in the following note (Traité, &e., p. 401),—“‘Nous abstenons de donner le chiffre de l’ensemble de la population de la terre ; personne ne con- nait ce chiffre.” With this view of the matter we entirely agree, without, however, any disparagement to the valuable work done by Behm and Wagner, who have made the popu- lation of the earth their special study, and are under no illusions as to the accuracy of the results they have to offer. The work of these two eminent men of science has at any rate drawn attention to the /acunx in our present

TABLE I.—E£stimates of the Population of the World.

Author of Estimate Year. Number (in Millions). RaeerOlate. secssscsceteeeseteeers seek 1660 1,000 Sussmillch’ 2. oonseeseeosneeee eee 1742 950-1,000 AVG) EINEM orem eennermenqonoas cscose ois 1753 1,600 AVGIUIGRY2 Bosarnenenneinecoedand coscbcace 1804 437 IBIMKE REO Meroe serene eee eres 1805 700 IRM, 32 – sears wacecane nec reeeee meee 1805 700 ING ies) BYU Th eee seeseeeacaecnnconoodcd 1810 640 INE OHSC ceege center. cus oeeecnach eee 1812 766 | (Graber) vaeLlemsOrcm nesses —eaee 1813 686 [Sallis cc coo see aetsadecaeaeeee scene 1816 704 AVeTEMALC sc cceecs aces soce sees coneeceee 1822 He, NSS CMs sce owen soe accescennconmoeeee 1824 938 SHOU eyes cc cos aces secon ore eee 1833 872 STE TVA Bap cee depen De nnennceecns .anpesico> 1838 950 nV, MOUSE MICMibs, ccs. sceccssesemee 1838 850 @mralns delalllOy canescens sees 1840 750 PPEMMOU es cc .<0s cece aaeee eee eees 1840 764 VSN OOMIE sc qecer ns tens eeton ace eeeee 1840 864 | Berohawst.. cco -.assec oes seseeeee 1842 1,272 | Bailly: . vexsaacstencxckecsessosmeeeeeess 1843 739 |

60) | ee eer ene eeccoere 1868 1,270 | Belmnvan deh Vaene ries. ccncssce. <- 1880 1,456 re AEE escodcesnac 1882 1,434 |

XIX. — 65

514

knowledge, besides arranging and co-ordinating the great multiplicity of well-ascertained facts at our disposal. As civilization advances the area of

the unknown or partially known, which is at present large, will gradually diminish.

Table I. (p. 513 supra), taken from Haushofer’s work (Lehr- u. Handbuch, p. 90, note 1), will show how greatly the estimates of the world’s population have varied since people first began to make them. We venture to say that any person of fair intelligence and ordinary education would, even without any statistical training, come to the conclusion that there was nothing certain to be known on the subject which these figures profess to illustrate. The fact that Behm and Wagner’s latest estimate is less than that published by them two years previously shows how difficult the subject is. We should add that the reasons given by them for this dis- crepancy, for even a tyro would have expected a slight increase, are quite satisfactory, and add to our confidence in that part of the investigation for which they profess to give figures approximating to accuracy.

According to Behm and Wagner (Die Bevélkerung der Erde, vii.) the following (Table II.) may be taken as the population of the sections of the world indicated in June

1 882 SE Areaunisawece Inhabitants. | KSIVONYEETES? ||| amclgg: gine ane anne EEE lita Number. Per Sq. Kilo.|Per Sq. Mile. JD]UONG] NS Rena noe 9,730,576 327,743,400 34°0 88°0 Asia…….....| 44,580,850 795,591,000 18°0 46°6 eodavenes 29,823,283 205,823,200 7:0 18°1 Seesce 38,473,138 100,415,400 2°6 6°7 Australasia.. Seg ae: ae oe Polynesia. vet 8,952,855 4,232,000 0°5 1:3 Polar regions} 4,478,200 82,500 : = Total..| 136,688,872 | 1,433,887,500 10°5 ell

Sex.—The obstacles which make it difficult to attain even an approximate statement of the population of the world prevent us from obtaining any accurate knowledge what- ever as to the sexual constitution of that population. We have, however, tolerably accurate information on this subject for most of the countries of Europe, for the United States, and for Canada. From the figures available it is evident that no general proposition can be laid down on the subject of the normal proportion of females to males, except that in so-called “old” countries there is usually a slight excess of the former.

TABLE V.—Statement of the ‘‘ Age Scale”

Persons in the Population.

POPUL A Pn0’R

TABLE III. —Statement of the Number of Females living in the under-mentioned Countries for every Thousand Males in the Year mentioned (Haushofer, p. 216) :—

Females to each

aia 1000 Males. Gennanelimpibesesrcess essence 1875 1,036 England*and Wales… -...02:-2.<0 1871 1,054 Scotlamd@n.. ...ccaceeeemeee eee a 1,096 i bee) ers UR arpeeeeeonacncanoneanaacaasences 55 1,044 ID) CTMAVATICS oncccuaactccee pene saseeemes 1870 1,026 INIG@IAWEAY caadosasoanpnoncodsdecnqcao nos: 1865 1,036 Siwied etiericeccucss soos coeemecesee nets 1870 1,067 PAVISEDI Aes occu sedse etceaesesececen ores 1869 1,041 IS TUINEETAY nn hb cossnsqsonsgsedocacosgcnrac bs 1,002 NEG nantponepenre nen peraccocicusccance 1870 989 Snmuivacrd ENGL esanaanecossosdesnadoasosc " 1,046 | MRATIUGS a ceenaaasoenoaodoncsGsanaorinsnods 1872 1,008 Belowumie ec... oeeaeae. See 1866 O88 TEID ENG sonenneceeeeeerocennaneeesoaa00 1869 1,029 Winnted@States™, ..cassssssseedsosse see 1870 972 c CHa ee RnR emo ane nocuenadonic 5 939

The census of England and Wales for 1881 gave 1055 females to 1000 males. A slight tendency to an increase in the proportion is perceptible in some countries, and to a decrease in others, as the following table (IV.) given by Wappius and quoted by Haushofer (p. 217) will show. The reader will observe that Wappaus’s figures are the proportions to 100, not to 1000, as in Table III.

Females | Females

Year. | to 100 Year. | to 100

Males. ° Males.

England …..... 1851 | 104°16 j) Sweden. .....- 1850 | 106-40 Dcotlamdumescs:: rf HO sO2)i MWeanicer..c.. 2.0. 1851 | 101-12 Ireland. .- a..5 o>. | LOS S27 ft Belaium…..... 1846 | 100°47 Denmark …..... 1850 | 103°30 | Holland…..... 1849 | 103°96 Norway …....., 1855 | 104-14 || United States..} 1850 95:05

The 1880 census of the United States states the propor- tion of females to males at 96°54 per cent., which is rather smaller than that shown in 1870 (97:2 per cent.); but immigration is still a potent factor in the growth of the population of that country.

With regard to the causes of the excess of females, as in most other social phenomena, our knowledge is very small at present. The reason for the broad distinction between Europe and North America is pretty obvious. New countries are continually receiving many male and fewer female immigrants. Probably also, life being very rough in the more unsettled portions of such countries, the rate of mortality among females is a little higher than in

(Altersaufbau) of the Population in each of the undermentioned Countries; showing by Semi- Decennial Periods up to 30 Years, and Decennial Periods subsequently,

the Number of Persons of cach Age out of every Thousand

0-5 5-10. 10-15. 15-20. | 20-25. | 25-80. | 30-40. | 40-50. | 60-60. 80-90. | Over 90.

German Empire…..... 1875 | 134 ile 102 95 83 76 134 103 84 4 0:2 [PravESNGl Scagmecasennesosee 1871 135 It) 107 96 88 78 128 100 73 5 O°4 Scotland..cceceeceeeeee » | 136 | 120 | 111 | too | ay | Me | Gu 96 | 71 6 0°6 IGRel avavel….crosmasscaacseant s 120 105 103 116 | 106 71 103 99 83 8 ial Bemmark. 202.25 sae seceee 1870| 124 107 102 93 81 75 130 114 85 6 O°4 INGLWayccee-.cssncsee as 1865 135 i) 106 94 81 70 131 107 67 if 07 Sweden ROSRROD COR Cone eaeee 1870} 118 116 106 91 ao 73 131 ILS) 85 5 0°3 ANISEUIR ea. osce ts oemee ere 1869; 1380 108 og 93

85 82 138 1138 84 3 0°2 Hungary …cccecceee. . | tr } aio aug 95 | 82 | 86 | 141 | 106 | 70 9 0°3 Italy. Recerasssie ues ene ene 1870} 115 109 100 90 87 Ti 134 HAs 84 6 0°6 SwltZenlandesees cess eee a 113 106 97 84 81 80 141 ig, 89 4 0°2 France tagunscessscceyses sas 1872 93 91 87 84 88 YB 139 IS 104 he 0°4 eloiume sce sees sec: 1866} 120 105 92 88 84 78 1S 112 89 6 0-4 Jato MyiWdl aoseconnoes BdoERE 1869; 130 109 94 92 We 78 135 113 84 5 0°3

Average for Europe…....} 121 108 100 92 87 78 134 112 85 5 0-4 United States…..... 1871 140 124 123 105 96 80 128 93 59 3 04 C12) rere 1861 174 132 128 ile alii 110 76 49 3 0°5

General average…..... 125 111 104 94 | 166 tas 108 81 5 0-4

1 For more minute information see Petermann's Mittheilungen, " Erginzungsheft" No. 69.

Pr OPP dake T EON

places where women can receive more protection from hard- ship. On the other hand, even in Europe men run many risks to which women are not exposed. The subject is a very interesting one, but cannot be adequately treated except at much greater length than is possible here, and we must refer our readers to special works for further information.

Age.—The characteristics of a population from the point of view of age, which German writers term " Altersaufbau," can only be treated very generally. Table V. on p. 514 is quoted by Haushofer (p. 213) from Von Scheel's Hand- buch der Statistrk.

This "age scale" shows us the proportion in which per- sons of various categories of age are found combined to form populations. The general characteristics of the groups are tolerably obvious. It must be remembered that after thirty years the periods are decennial. The difference between the age scale of Europe and that of North America is con- siderable. In the latter, owing mainly to the fact that emigrants are usually young, a much larger proportion of the population than in Europe are under thirty years of age. On the other hand the age scale of France presents a feature of an

opposite kind, namely, a deficiency of persons under fifteen years of age, and an excess of those over forty, as compared with the average of Europe. This conformation of the age scale may be compared with that of Hungary, where the number of children is larger and the number of persons over forty less than the average. It is probable that the smaller number of children in the one case and the larger in the other directly lead respectively to a smaller infant mortality in France than in Hungary. As M. Block observes (Z'raité, p. 409), " Nous avons moins d'enfants ; mais, grace & une moindre mortalité dans le jeune age, nous avons plus d'adults." It is obvious that ceteris paribus it is easier to pay the requisite attention to the rearing of a small number of children than to do the same for a larger number.

Careful inquiries into age scales are of very recent origin, the data required for evaluating those relating to earlier periods being absent. Moreover, erroneous state- ments as to their age are made by a much larger number of persons than might be supposed, sometimes from careless- ness or ignorance, but also intentionally. The tendency of women over twenty-five to understate their age, combined with overstatements of age by girls and young women under twenty, always tends to make the twenty to twenty-five section of the age scale unduly large (see Census of England and Wales, 1881, vol. iv., "General Report"). We must regard even the age scales now in existence as merely first approximations, for it is evident that observations obtained from several censuses must be reduced and combined before we can feel certain that accidental causes of error have been eliminated. This is all the more necessary as the age scale of any given population cannot be regarded as fixed, any more than the magnitude of the population itself, both being liable to modifications arising out of the varying dynamical conditions existing at different periods. And this brings us to the second portion of our inquiry, in which we shall indicate in the most general way the nature of the proximate causes which underlie the pheno- mena of population considered as a fact existing at a particular moment of time.

IT. Population, dynamically considered, is the result of two pairs of opposing forces, whose combined action may, for convenience, be theoretically conceived of as balancing each other, but which never do so

balance as a matter of fact. A comparison of two successive censuses invariably shows some “movement of population.” In nearly all civilized countries the movement shown is one of growth when the body of population examined is large. ‘The population of a village or a small town may, quite con-

old

ceivably, show a reduction in number for the period between two censuses, but this can hardly be the case with a large town, and still less with a nation, unless as the consequence of some great calamity such as an earth- quake or a pestilence or a change in the climatic or economic conditions of the country inhabited. A great war, of course, produces a certain retardation of the rate of increase. Although some of the uncivilized peoples of the world are rapidly disappearing, the tendency of the population of the whole world is evidently to increase—at what rate it is impossible to say, for reasons already mentioned ; and our inquiry will, therefore, be confined to peoples regarding whose population we have compara- tively accurate information for an adequate number of years.

The causes of the movement of population are internal and external. The internal arise out of the numerical rela- tion between the births and deaths of a given period, there being an increase when there are more births than deaths, a decrease in the contrary case. Haushofer expresses this by a formula which is sometimes convenient :—“ There is an increase where the intervals between successive births are smaller than those between successive deaths” (p. 115). The external are immigration and emigration. The intensity of these two forces operating on population depends on a variety of causes, into which we do not propose to enter. Generally speaking, it may be said that “new” countries, where the density of population is small, attract immigrants from countries in which the density of population is great. The density of population is expressed by the figure denoting the number of inhabit- ants per square mile (or square kilometre) of the territory they occupy. For a discussion of the various political, social, and economic causes which determine density of population, we must refer our readers to the works of Haushofer (p. 173) and Block (p. 456). Before ana- lysing the components of the movement of population it will be useful

to examine briefly that movement itself, and ascertain what is its normal rate in civilized countries. The mode of expressing this rate which is most com- monly adopted in the exposition of statistics of population is to state the number of years in which a given popula- tion “doubles itself.” It is not a very scientific method of expressing the facts, since it assumes that the rate of a few years will continue for a period of many years, but, in deference to custom, we give a table constructed in accordance with it.

TABLE VI.—Statement of the Yearly Rate of Inerease of the Popu- lation of the undermentioned Countries during the following Periods, with the Number of Years in whieh the said Popu-

lations would double themselves, on the supposition that the rates remain unehanged (Wappaus, quoted by Haushofer).

Basis of Caleulation. 5 Approximate Doubling Years. Annual Percentage Years.

of Inerease.

1845-55

Us 61 0°89 71 0°88 79 0°84 83

Sweden Saxony

Prussia

Belgium

Great britain s….-.. Austria

We now proceed to give a table (VIJ.) constructed by Signore Luigi Bodio on the best principles, which shows the annual rates of increase of a number of countries, for two distinct periods, taking account of the important changes

of frontier which have occurred during the whole period covered by the table. If this rectification had not been made it is obvious that the figures resulting from the observations of the two periods would not have been com- parable in the case of Italy and several other states (Block, p. 405; Haushofer, p. 120). We may mention that the actually observed yearly rate of increase in the population of England and Wales between 1871 and 1881 was 1°44 per cent. of the population in 1871.

rs

Period | Yearly | period | Yearly Observed. | Observed. Fete IDR NGEs6 peaneenoocebeuoss ose 1800-60 0°48 | 1860-77 | 0°35 IRGRIKY o.- seononescenbaoeca conoct 1800-61 0°61 | 1861-78 | 0°71 United Kingdom…..... 1801-61 0°98 | 1861-78 | 0°92 | England and Wales …... 1801-61 | 1°37 | 1860-75 | 1°24 | lipelleiaye! . ae eanecpnenecaeecnn 1801-61 0°17 | 1861-78 | 0°461 Wennnnankee sce sss2terctsecess 1801-60 0°93 | 1860-78 | 1:11 SIOCEM ponesaneconeednonods: 1800-60 0°82 | 1860-78 | 1:15 IST@IRWIENY casensdneooe copeanace 1800-60 0-99 | 1860-78 | 0°86 Russia in Europe …..... 1851-63 | 1°20 | 1863-75 | 1°11 Austria (Cisleithan)..... 1830-60 | 0°64 | 1860-78 | 0°86 | PACA es Fe. nore esnese 1830-60 | 0°27 | 1860-77 | 0°55 Switzerland =. -se.ccsssssen 1837-60 | 0°59 | 1860-78 | 0°60 Prussia (without recent

BINNS «HATS cooconosonde 1820-61 1:21 | 1861-75 | 0°98 Prussia (with recent an-

MEXAPHONS)).. 4.6.55. 62 1830-61 1:16 | 1861-75 | 0°83 IBY ERE Oe nabendccsencacoanncec 1818-61 | 0°55 | 1861-78 | 0°54 Sip dOlIN 7, coohermAnnocsnecsCene 1820-61 | 1°41 } 1861-78 | 1°56 IW iUilsbennnbenOurns-c-ca-ctte 1834-61 0°34 | 1861-78 | 0°76 olla deeseces sc ocseeaaetens 1795-1859 | 0°71 1859-77 | 0°95 1BE ETI nes son eesoooebopenane 1831-60 0°48 | 1860-78 | 0°82 LECLEN DA oe 1801-61 | 0°39 | 1861-74 | 1:17 NE 2 ieee oeisnice ss see 1800-60 | 0°66 | 1860-77 | 0°35 Jo rtd eats: cco eeSeeeeaaee eee 1823-58 0°72 | 1858-77 | 1°95 (CBeee …. 5. eee scaesss6 ss. 1821-61 1:22 | 1861-77 | 0°97 IVOIAVIG.. . « xc emesis scion ~ << sin 1834-59 1°92 | 1859-78 | 1°19 Wmited Stateste…....+... 1860-70 | 2:04 | 1870-80 2°61

1 Decrease.

It must be noted that, while the table may be relied on so far as Signior Bodio's treatment of the data goes, the data for the earlier part of the century are very defective, and the results deduced from them must be regarded as less trustworthy than those for the more recent of the two periods.

The above tables of increase of population include the effects of immigration and emigration, regarding which we have nothing further to say in this article, as the causes of these phenomena are too heterogeneous for general treatment. Moreover, except in comparatively unimport- ant cases—unimportant, that is, from our point of view, but by no means so from the standpoint of the statesman— the effects of these two causes are small, the main cause of the growth of population being the internal forces already mentioned, namely, the birth-rate and the death-rate.

During the earlier half of the century the rate of in- crease in the United States ranged from 2? to 3 per cent. per annum in the successive decades from census to census. The increase in the population of the United States has hitherto depended so much on immigration that at present inquiries into the normal birth and death rates of that country are very difficult, except in the eastern States. Of the total population, 50,442,066, as shown in the census of 1880, no less than 6,619,943, or over 13 per cent., were foreigners. The fact already mentioned, that the proportion of women to men is unusually low, serves to remind us that normal phenomena of population must not as yet be looked for in the American Union.

The Birth-Rate.—The birth-rate of a population is the proportion borne by the number of births in a year to the number of the population. It might seem that it is easy to obtain this rate, but as a matter of fact it is practically

ror La Tio ®

impossible to do so. It is not difficult to ascertain, with sufficient accuracy, the number of births; the difficulty is to ascertain what is the number of the population, for that number is never the same for two days together. It is obvious that it would never do to evaluate the birth- rate of the United

Kingdom, say for 1885, by means of the figures obtained in the census taken on April 4, 1881, and the error would be greater next year, and greater still the year after. The growth of the population since the last census must, therefore, be taken into account; but, even when it has been decided to adopt this plan, there is the difficulty of fixing on the date up to which the additions are to be made. The usual practice is to take the popula- tion of a date as near as possible to the middle of the year for which the birth-rate is required as the basis for the calculation. We mention these difficulties as a caution to students of statistics. The following table (VIII) quoted by Haushofer, 123, is taken from Bodio's Movimento dello Stato Civile (Rome, 1880) ; the figures for the minor countries have been omitted, and still-births are excluded :— ;

Average Yearly Number of Births to 100 Inhabitants.

Period Observed.

Peal eres. ee N ce Clee! 1865-78 3°70 TRING cponaanen - conasannenoacacse 1865-77 2°58 England and Wales…... ... 1865-78 3°56 Scotlatidiescs. peueecesses eee ro : Bo Tine Fin Glis..n. 5208 ees Sees ose Ag 2°67 PRTG SIA ete cic. « ce ce se eters Be 3°87 [SES ADIGE) Ane eon SEER ena pene Ap 3°94 SEDROMNY Ae caecess sree eens sen oh 4:17 JSURTONE a8sano copsencncMeneen en anac a 3°88 MUA ATG lets sisaisaieceienesess eee 1865-77 4°18 Sivaiizen) andeerrenee ce cee acer 1870-78 3°08 IBYS) GaitG Yo aaccnensensnesocdenecon: 1865-78 3°21 18 ell earoy Pee teen eereenc eer oe 1865-77 3°56 Simeq@entnc a acepeerae crete cae 1865-78 3°04 pe RMR ccc aca ox aes sev edeaes 1865-70 BD (Greecewene:..eates: acteerenerae 1865-77 2°88 FROWMMATIM Age aelars 2cae eee castes sles 1870-77 3°04 Russia in Europe!..... 1867-75 4°95 Roller eee ow ccteeae ceo 1865-77 423

1 Excluding Poland.

The birth-rate in different countries is influenced by various circumstances into which it is not possible to enter at length. The most important circumstance is the pro- portion borne by the number of women of child-bearing age to the whole population. There are other circum- stances which must be kept in mind in comparing the birth-rates of different countries,

such as the character of the age scale as a whole, and the density of population, besides climatic and other physical characteristics of the environment of the populations examined. The birth-rate is high in new countries, where there is always a larger proportion of young men than in old states, and where the proportion of women of child-bearing age is also large. The latter circumstance is, we may point out, quite con- sistent with the statement already made, that in new countries the proportion of women to men is smaller than in old ones. For an unusually large proportion of the total number of wonien in new countries are young.

Some facts relating to the absolute number of births may here be briefly referred to. The most important of these is its composition as regards sex. We have already seen that in most populations there are more women than men. This is not a consequence of there being more girls born than boys, for the fact is just the contrary. The following table (IX.) shows the number of male births to every 100 female births which took place in the under-mentioned countries during the periods stated (Movimento, &e., p. 126 ; Haushofer, p. 218) :—

Por Uk Pio NN

Os Oipecen: ae Niel Peretti cancanrnin Soe ers 1865-78 104 IMMERSE Oy sie oe ate sec concorde 1866-77 1038 Enelandend Wales:..... 1865-78 104 NSO MIRON es eile lov a aeons nates 1865-75 106 Aigelahin cline see .caco8 wie essecvectvecas 1865-78 106 JPRS. «yale acon e Sree ee eee 1865-78 104]ByS WRITE doece ROSE an Sonne ere 1865-78 103 BAUS [lel MEME e one rics viaisscaceece 1865-78 106 EPI re. 2 ee E ete oss sscsunies vse 1865-77 104 SVMIEACHANTGY, 6.505504 s cases essenesee 1872-78 99 eR Wrist (sc tos ese cvehsay senna ves *IBGE eee eae ace eben Seca ne ere ane 1865-77 102 SAVE CLE TI Mene Uae au ee eee cers sa ee se J 1865-78 106 a ee ee 1865-70 104 (Gixzcc ei Ree cet ee ee 1870-77 g4 JESCUDUTT E011 Wear esis Sera ee 1870-77 105 MEUM aeMG MVOC. ...0…+¢s0*

On the somewhat anomalous figures we must observe that those relating to Greece and Servia are possibly to be explained by the hypothesis of inaccurate returns. We may add that, if a distinction is made between legitimate and illegitimate children, it is usually found that the excess of

male births is greater among the latter. In countries, therefore, where the proportion of illegitimate to legitimate births is high there will usually be a higher proportion of male to female births than in countries where there are not relatively so many illegitimate births (Block, p. 429).

Interesting inquiries lave been made into the facts regarding. the distribution of births during the year, showing that there are, as a rule, more births in some months than in others, and also as to the influence high prices for the primary necessaries of life have on the number of births (Mayr, p. 235). :

The Death-Rate.—The death-rate of a population is the proportion borne by the number of deaths in a year to the number of the population. The population is to be reckoned as has been already described in dealing with the birth-rate. This very important statistical quantity is sometimes confused with another relating to the same phenomenon,—namely, the mean duration of life. The difficulties in obtaining an accurate death-rate are, if any- thing, greater than in the case of the birth-rate.

TABLE X.—Statement of the Average Annual Death-rate in the undermentioned Countries, during the Years stated, excluding Still-births (Movimento, in Haushofer, p. 137).

Average Yearly Countries. Period Observed. Number of Deaths to 100 Inhabitants, lok: eee 1865-78 2-99 JETRO 2 ances cones 5 Honea OBE OHIEne 1865-77 2°40 England and Wales…..... 1865-78 2°20 eet lemidler ct os acauscetesse: 1865-78 OR | ligellainclaptanascos teen ce ee 1865-78 il JEVEOSIS31G a ach irra ne 1865-78 Dale JEyEW iH) AAR 3 BRE eee 1865-78 3°09 ATS nla eee. -o eeGicn ae secets ~~SGV ANOI ye oe geese aces veces eee 1865-78 2°32 PTOMMANTU Mecca coscvs arnvctieeseeadee 1865-77 2°49 CCL GMM sack cores sseenieece nese. 1865-78 1°92 SOME erate elec sso wien caesea« eRe 1885-70 Soe (COREE CONN Neer. insane site we caeis ee 1865-77 2°09 IRVOMIIMATIT etree ae toes ee see | 1870-77 2°65 ussiaiimeliunope:....—..... 1867-75 3°67~~

~~This table is sufficient for our purpose, which is to give a general idea as to the death-rate of these countries. Much more accurate approximations are, however, needed for actuarial purposes, and very elaborate valuations of~~

~~the death-rate will be found in G. F. Knapp's work Ueber die Ermittelung der Sterblichkeit (Leipsic, 1868).~~

~~O17~~

~~Great pains have been taken by most civilized states to~~

~~| obtain accurate figures as to the mortality of the popula- _ tion, and the literature dealing with the subject is of great~~

~~extent.~~

~~We must now show how the death-rate is usually com- posed as regards age. The following table (XI.) shows the uumber of persons out of every hundred deaths who died at the undermeutioned ages in each of the countries named (Haushofer, p. 143; quoted from the Afovimento):—~~

~~. . see : oOo ean , = 5 i=} :~~

~~eles |tsles| a | es is ls Prt~~

~~ma | Es laa | 24 | oh | 4 [Soa] fs | BES~~

~~es |£e|28/28| && | #8 |SES| #8 | BES~~

~~mei |S Se | ey a es || ey || ee~~

~~0-1 26°73 | 18°79 | 24-76 | 32°20 | 40°47 | 31°80 | 96-21 | 22-93 | 36-21 1-5 | 21°04 | 10°51 | 15°73 | 16:19] 9°77 | 16-20 8-11 | 25-20; 21:12 5-10 4°60 | 2°98) 3°84] 4:04] 2:3 4°38 2°62 3°73; 5:00 10-15 2:08) 176) |) Ae97 | e661" 100 ues 1°59 1598:| 2°07 15-20 217 | 2:49 | 2:59) 185) 199) 2-14 2°13 2°39; 2-06 20-30 5°46 | 7°30} 3:14) 483} 4°10 5°37 5°58 5°62 | 4°76 30-40 5'14| 6°40| 6°42] 5°34) 4°65 570 6°54 5°90; 4:97 40-50 5°45 | 6°90] 6°68} 5°62] 5:13 6°44 L(A) 6°89 | 5°63 50-60 6°63 | 8°83} 7:°02| 7:49] 7°31 7°84 9-43 7°24) 6:23 60-70 S82 12-7o)| 8:32") 8-910) 1067 8:84 | 13-22 8°62] 6°38 70-80 8-14 | 14°50} 9°72] 8:07/ 9°55 6°74 | 12°39 6°68 | 4:14 80-90 door) (GE215 weGOy 227i) Se20) 2°35 4-08 2°50; 1:06 90-100 0°37; 0°57} 2°09); 0:27 0:23 { 0°24 0°27 0-31) 0-16 Over 100~~

~~O;01)| +0010) 042”) “0-02; 0°01 «ss 0-01) 0°02 Unknown. | 0°03! ... oe 0°72 | 0-06 0°04 500 0°19~~

~~It will be seen that from nearly one-fifth to nearly one- third of the deaths were those of children less than twelve months old. The very high proportion of deaths at this age in Bavaria was some years ago made the subject of a special inquiry by Dr Mayr, and it was found to be largely due to the bad mode of bringing up infants peculiar to certain localities (Mayr, pp. 91, 319).~~

~~The composition of the death-rate in regard to sex must be touched on briefly. As we have seen, more boys are born than girls. Owing, however, to the greater mortality among the former their uumber is rapidly reduced during the first few years of life, so that at any given moment the population is composed as stated in the age scales. The exact mode in which a given number of persons born in the same year disappears by death is shown in the elaborate tables of mortality used by actuaries. These tables are different for different countries and for males and females. Very elaborate tables of survival were pre- pared for the British Government in 1883-84 for calculating annuities.~~

~~We cannot here deal with what is known as the “population question.” Any adequate discussion of that highly important subject would involve considerations outside the limits of this article. The “population ques- tion” is a question of conduct, while the present article seeks only to point out certain well-ascertained facts regarding the phenomenon of superorganic evolution called population. The facts in question are general, and, though sufficient to indicate the nature of the pheno- meuon, and the broad divisions which are most convenient for its further investigation, are quite insufficient as the basis for the formation of any ethical judgment regarding the actions of the individuals composing the population.~~

~~Among the works that may be consulted to the greatest ad- vantage by the student are the following :—the numerous works of the late Dr William Farr, F.R.S., formerly registrar-general ; various works by Dr W. A. Guy, F.R.S.; those of Adolphe Quetelet ; various monographs by Dr Ernst Engel, and other eminent statists in the official publications of the Prussian Statistical Office ; various publications of the Italian Statistical Bureau; the~~

~~publications of the International Congress of Statistics. Systematic treatment of the whole subject of population will be found in the following works :—Pertillon, Aowvements de la Population dans divers états de l Europe, Paris, 1877; Maurice Block, Traité théorique et pratique de statistique, Paris, 1878; L. Bodio, Movimento dello stato civile, Rome, 1878 (publication of the Italian Statistical Bureau); A. Gabaglio, Storta e teoria della statistica, Milan, 1880; M. Haushofer, Lekr- und Handbuch der Statistik, Vienna, 1882 (W. HO.)~~

~~518~~

~~PORBEAGLE, the name of a shark (Lamna cornubica), mentioned in the works of older British authors as " Beaumaris Shark." The short and stout form of its body contrasts strikingly with its much attenuated tail, which, however, is strengthened by a keel on each side and terminates in a large and powerful caudal fin. The snout is pointed, and the jaws are armed with strong lan- ceolate teeth, each of which bears a small cusp on each side of the base (see fig.). The teeth are not adapted for cut- ting, like the flat triangular teeth of man-eating sharks, but rather for seizing and holding the prey, ? which consists chiefly of various kinds of fishes and cephalopods. In the upper jaw there are from thirteen to sixteen vo, teeth on each side, the third being~~

~~remarkable for its small size; in the Upper and lower tooth lower jaw from twelve to fourteen. The of Lamna. gill-openings are very wide. The porbeagle attains to a length of 10 or 12 feet, and is a pelagic fish, not rare in the North Atlantic and Mediterranean, and frequently wandering in pursuit of its prey to the British and more rarely to the American shores. The same species has been found in Japan and New Zealand, and perhaps also on the coast of California, so that the completion of the evidence as to its cosmopolitan range is merely a matter of time. Other closely-allied species (LZ. spallanzanii, L. glauca) are known to occur in the southern parts of the Atlantic, from the Mediterranean to the Cape of Good Hope. Very little is known of the mode of propagation of the por- beagle, beyond the isolated statement by Pennant that two embryos were found in a female. No opportunity should be lost of making further observations on this point, and of preserving if possible the foetuses in their enveloping tunics.~~

~~*PORCELAIN. See PotrEry.*~~

~~*PORCUPINE. This word, derived from the French porc-épic, or "spiny pig," is applied to the members of the Hystricidz, a family of rodents whose most prominent peculiarity is their covering of long stout spines, which*~~

~~*Porcupine.*~~

~~*form a highly efficient protection against enemies, and which are better developed in this family than in any other mammal. Zoologically the porcupines are allied to the cavies, chinchillas, agoutis, &c., and with them form the great section Hystricomorpha or porcupine-like rodents (see MamMatta, vol. xv. p. 420).*~~

~~*The Hystricide are readily divisible into two sub- families according to their geographical distribution, the Hystricina or True Porcupines being confined to the Old World, and the Synetherina to the New. The Hystricina*~~

~~*POR—POR*~~

~~*are distinguished by their semi-rooted molars, imperfect collar-bones, cleft upper lips, rudimentary pollices, smooth soles, six mammz, and by many important cranial char- acters. They range over the south of Europe, the whole of Africa, India, and the Malay Archipelago as far east- wards as Borneo. They are all stout heavily-built animals, with blunt rounded heads, fleshy mobile snouts, and coats of thick cylindrical or flattened spines, which form the whole covering of their body, and are not intermingled with ordinary hairs. Their habits are strictly terrestrial. Of the three genera in this section, the first and best-known is Hystrix, characterized by its curiously inflated skull, in which the nasal chamber is often considerably larger than the brain-case, and by its short tail, tipped with numerous slender stalked open quills, which make a loud rattling noise whenever the animal moves. Its longest-known member is the Common Porcupine (H. cristata), which occurs throughout the south of Europe'and North and West Africa, but is replaced in South Africa by H. africx- australis, and in India by the Hairy-nosed Porcupine (ZZ. leucura), whose habits are described in the following notice extracted from Jerdon's Mammals of India.*~~

~~“ Hystriz leucwra is found over a great part of India, from the lower ranges of the Himalayas to the extreme south, but does not occur in lower Bengal, where it is replaced by H. bengalensis. It forms extensive burrows, often in societies, in the sides of hills, banks of rivers and nullahs, and very often in the bunds of tanks, and in old mud walls, &c. &c. In some parts of the country they are very destructive to various: crops, potatoes, carrots, and other vegetables. They never issue forth till after dark, but now and then one will be found returning to his lair in daylight. Dogs take up the scent of the porcupine very keenly, and on the Nilghiris I have killed many by the aid of dogs, tracking them to their dens. They charge backwards at their foes, erecting their spines at the same time, and dogs generally get seriously injured by their strong spines, which are sometimes driven deeply into the assailant. The porcupine is not bad eating,—the meat, which is white, tasting something between pork and veal.”~~

~~Besides the three large crested species of Lystrix above- mentioned, there are some four or five smaller species without nuchal crests occurring in north-east India and in the Malay region, from Nepal to Borneo. The second genus of Old-World porcupines is Atherura, the Brush- tailed Porcupines, much smaller animals than the last, with long tails tipped with bundles of peculiar flattened spines. Of the three species two are found in the Malay region and one in West Africa. TZrichys, the last genus, contains but one Bornean species, 7. lipura, externally very like an Atherura, but differing from the members of that genus in many important cranial characteristics.~~

~~The New-World porcupines, the Synetherina, have rooted molars, complete collar-bones, uncleft upper lips, tuberculated soles, no trace of a pollex, and four mammez only. Their spines are toa great extent mixed with long soft hairs; they are less strictly nocturnal in their habits ; and, with one exception, they live entirely in trees, having in correspondence with this long and powerful prehensile tails. They consist of three genera, of which the first is formed by the common Canadian Porcupine (Hrethizon dorsatus), a stout heavily-built animal, with long hairs almost or quite hiding its spines, four anterior and five posterior toes, and a short stumpy tail. It is a native of the greater part of Canada and the United States, where- ever there is any remnant of the original forest left. Syn- etheres, the~~

~~second genus, contains some eight or ten species, known as Tree Porcupines, and found throughout the tropical parts of South America, one of them extending northwards into Mexico. They are of a lighter build than the ground porcupines, are covered with short, close, many- coloured spines often mixed with hairs, and their tails are always prehensile. Their hind feet have only four toes, owing to the suppression of the hallux, but instead they have a peculiar fleshy pad on the inner side of the foot,~~

~~between which and the toes boughs and other objects can be firmly grasped as with a hand. The last genus is Chetomys, distinguished by the shape of its skull and the greater complexity of its teeth. It contains only one species, C. subspinosus, a native of the hottest parts of Brazil.~~

~~PORDENONE, It (1483-1539), whose correct name was GiovaNNI ANTONIO Liernio, or Licrno, was an eminent painter of the Venetian school. He was commonly named Il Pordenone from having been born in 1483 at Corticelli, a village near Pordenone,—a city of Italy, in the province of Udine (Friuli). He himself ultimately dropped the name of Licinio, having quarrelled with his brothers, one of whom had wounded him in the hand ;_ he then called him- self Regillo, or De Regillo. His signature runs " Antonius Portunaensis," or 'De Portunaonis." He was created a cavaliere by Charles V.~~

~~As a painter Licinio was a scholar of Pellegrino da S. Daniele, but the leading influence which governed his style was that of Giorgione; the popular story that he was a fellow-pupil with Titian under Giovanni Bellini is incorrect. The district about Pordenone had been some- what fertile in capable painters; but Licinio excelled them all in invention and design,-and more especially in the powers of a vigorous chiaroscurist and flesh-painter. Indeed, so far as mere flesh-painting is concerned he was barely inferior to Titian in breadth, pulpiness, and tone ; and he was for a while the rival of that great painter in public regard. The two were open enemies, and Licinio would sometimes affect to wear arms while he was painting. He excelled Giorgione in light and shade and in the effect of relief, and was distinguished in perspective and in portraits ; he was equally at home in fresco and in oil- colour. He executed many works in Pordenone and else-~~

where in Friuli, and in Cremona and Venice as well; at one time he settled in Piacenza, where is one of his most celebrated church pictures, St Catherine disputing with the Doctors in Alexandria; the figure of St Paul in con- nexion with this picture is his own portrait. He was formally invited by Duke Hercules II. of Ferrara to that court; here soon afterwards, in 1539, he died, not with- out suspicion of poison. His latest works are compara- tively careless and superficial; and generally he is better in male figures than in female—the latter being somewhat too sturdy—and the composition of his subject-pictures is scarcely on a level with their other merits. Pordenone appears to have been a vehement self-asserting man, to which his style as a painter corresponds, and his morals were not unexceptionable. Three of his principal scholars were Bernardino Licinio, named Il Sacchiense, his son-in- law Pomponio Amalteo, and Giovanni Maria Calderari.

The following may be named among Pordenone's works :—the picture of S. Luigi Giustiniani and other Saints, originally in S. Maria dell' Orto, Venice ; a Madonna and Saints, in the Venice academy ; the Woman taken in Adultery, in the Berlm museum ; the Annunciation, at Udine, regarded by Vasari as the artist's masterpiece, now damaged by restoration. In Hampton Court is a duplicate work, the Painter and his Family ; and in Burghley House are two fine pictures now assigned to Pordenone—the Finding of Moses and the Adoration of the Kings. These used to be attributed to Titian and to Bassano respectively.

PORIFERA. See SPoncEs.

PORISM. The subject of porisms is perplexed by the multitude of different views which have been held by famous geometers as to what a porism really was and is. This article must therefore be limited to a short historical account (1) of the principal works of the Greek mathe- maticians which we know to have been called Porwsms, and (2) of some of the principal contributions to the elucidation of these works, and conjectures as to the true signification of the tern. :

The treatise which has given rise to the controversies on this subject is the Porisms of Euclid, the author of the

~~Elements. For as much as we know of this lost treatise we are indebted to the Collection of Pappus of Alexandria, who mentions it along with other geometrical treatises, and gives a number of lemmas necessary for understanding it. Pappus states that the porisms of Euclid are neither theorems nor problems, but are in some sort intermediate, so that they may be presented either as theorems or as problems; and they were regarded accordingly by many geometers, who looked merely at the form of the enuncia- tion, as being actually theorems or problems, though the definitions given by the older writers showed that they better understood the distinction between the three classes of propositions. The older geometers, namely, defined a theorem as 76 mpotewdpevov cis ardbeiEiv abtod tod mpotervopévov, a problem as 76 mpoBadAdpevov eis Kata- okevyv attod Tov mpotevoyevov, and finally a porism as TO Tr POTELVOJLEVOV €iS Tropic Lov avTOU TOU TPOTELVOMEVOD, Pappus goes on to say that this last definition was changed by certain later geometers, who defined a porism on the ground of an accidental characteristic as 75 Actzov brobéce: ToTUKOV Gewpypuatos.~~

~~Proclus gives a definition of a porism which agrees very well with the fact that Euclid used the same word répiocpa in his Llements for what is now called by the Latin name "corollary." Proclus's definition is To S€ répurpa AéyeTar pev ext mpoBAnpdtwv Tivwy, ofov Ta EvKXeider yeypappéeva mopiopata, Aéyerar 5 iSiws, dtav ék Tv dmodederypevwv GAXo te fowadhavy [evvarodavy (1)] Gedpyps, pi) mpobe- pévov jpav, 6 Kat dia TodTo Toépicpa KeKAHKaoL GoTeEp TL Képoos Ov THS exvoTypoviKys amobetEews Tapepyov (Procl., Comment. Fucl., p. 58; ef. p. 80).~~

~~Pappus gives a complete enunciation of a porism derived from Euclid, and an extension of it to a more general case. This porism, expressed in modern language, asserts that, Given four straight lines of which three turn about the points in which they meet the fourth, uf two of the points of inter- section of these lines lie each on,a fixed straight line, the remaining point of intersection will also le on another straight line ; or, If the sides of a triangle are made to turn each about one of three fixed points in a straight line, and uf two of the vertices are made to move on two fixed straight lines,~~

~~taken arbitrarily, the third vertex describes a third straight line. The general enunciation applies to any number of straight lines, say (n + 1), of which » can turn about as many points fixed on the (n + 1)th. These x~~

~~: é . nn-1)., n(n—1) straight lines cut, two and two, in a points, oe being a triangular number whose side is (n—1). If, then, they are made to turn about the m fixed points so that any (n—1) of their a (n — 1) given fixed straight lines, then each of the remaining~~

~~: n-1)(n—2). ‘ points of intersection, ea in number, describes~~

~~points of intersection lie on~~

~~a straight line. Pappus gives also a complete enuncia- tion of one porism of the first book of Euclid’s treatise. This may be expressed thus: If about two fixed points P, Q we make turn two straight lines meeting on a given straight line L, and if one of them cut off a segment AM from a fixed straight line AX, given in position, we can determine another fixed straight line BY, and a point B fixed on it, such that the segment BM’ made by the second moving line on this second fixed line measured from B has a given ratio A to the first segment AM. The rest of the enunciations given by Pappus are incomplete, and he merely says that he gives thirty-eight lemmas for the three books of porisms ; and these include 171 theorems. The lemmas which Pappus gives in connexion with the porisms are interesting historically, because he gives (1)~~

~~520~~

~~the fundamental theorem that the cross or anharmonic ratio of a pencil of four straight lines meeting in a point is constant for all transversals; (2) the proof of the harmonic properties of a complete quadrilateral ; (3) the theorem that, if the six vertices of a hexagon lie three and three on two straight lines, the three points of con- course of opposite sides lie on a straight line.~~

~~During the last three centuries this subject seems to have had great fascination for mathematicians, and many geometers have attempted to restore the lost porisms. Thus Albert Girard expresses in his 7’ratté de~~

~~*Trigonométrie a hope that he will be able to restore them. About the same time Fermat wrote a short work under the title Porismatum Euclideorum renovata doctrina et sub forma isagoges recentioribus geometris exhibita. He seems to have concerned himself only with the character and object of Euclid's work ; but, though he seems to assert that he has restored the work, the examples of porisms which he gives have no connexion with those propositions indicated by Pappus. Fermat's idea of a porism was that it is nothing more than a locus. We may next mention Halley, who published the Greek text of the preface to Pappus's seventh book with a Latin translation, but with no comments or elucidations, remarking at the end that he has not been able to understand this description of porisms, which (he maintains) is made unintelligible by corruptions and lacunee in the text. Robert Simson was the first to throw real light on the subject. His first great triumph was the explanation of the only three propositions which Pappus indicates with any completeness. This explana- tion was published in the Philosophical Transactions in 1723; but Simson did not stop there. After his first success he set himself to investigate the subject of porisms generally, and the result appears in a work entitled De porismatibus tractatus ; quo doctrinam porismatum satis explicatam, et in posterum ab oblivione tutam fore sperat auctor. This work, however, was not published until after Simson's death; it appeared at Glasgow in 1776 as part of a volume, Roberts Simson, matheseos nuper in academia Glasguenst professoris, opera quedam reliqua. Simson's treatise, De porismatibus, begins with definitions of theorem, problem, datum, porism, and locus. Respect- ing the porism Simson says that Pappus's definition is too general, and therefore he will substitute for it the follow- ing: 'Porisma est propositio in qua proponitur demon- strare rem aliquam vel plures datas esse, cui vel quibus, ut et cuilibet ex rebus innumeris non quidem datis, sed que ad ea que data sunt eandem habent relationem, convenire ostendendum est affectionem quandam com- munem in propositione descriptam. Porisma etiam in forma problematis enuntiari potest, si nimirum ex quibus data demonstranda sunt, invenienda proponantur."*~~

~~*P'O°R 1s 'Fi*~~

~~*tween theorems and problems, and were called " porisms." Playfair accordingly defined a porism thus: "A proposition affirming the possibility*~~

~~*of finding such conditions as will render a certain problem indeterminate or capable of in- numerable solutions." This definition, he maintained, agreed both with Pappus's account and Simson's definition, the obscurity of which he attempts to remedy by the following translation: "A porism is a proposition in which it is proposed to demonstrate that one or more things are given, between which and every one of innumerable other things not given, but assumed according to a given law, a certain relation, described in the proposition, is to be shown to take place." ! This definition of a porism appears to be most generally accepted, at least in England. How- ever, in Lerouville's Journal de mathématiques pures et appliquées (vol. xx., July, 1855) P. Breton published Recherches nouvelles sur les porismes d' Huclide, in which he propounded a different theory, professedly based on the text of Pappus, as to the essential nature of a porism. This was followed in the same journal by a controversy between Breton and A. J. H. Vincent, who disputed the interpretation given by the former of the text of Pappus, and declared himself in favour of the idea of Schooten, put forward in his MJathematicx exercitationes (1657), in which he gives the name of "'porism" to one section. According to Schooten, if we observe the various nunterical relations between straight lines in a figure and write them down in the form of equations or proportions, then the combination of these equations in all possible ways, and of new equations thus derived from them, leads to the discovery of innumerable new properties of the figure, and here we have a porism. It must be admitted that, if we are to judge of the meaning by the etymology of the name, this idea of a porism has a great deal to recommend it. We must, however, be on our guard against applying, on this view, the term "'porism" to the process of discovery. The Greek word zépicpa should no doubt strictly signify the result obtained, but the name is still indicative of the process. The porism is the result as obtained by the pro- cess, which is itself the cause of the name. So great an authority as Chasles wrote in 1860 (Les trois livres de por- ismes d' Euclide) that, in spite of the general assent which Playfair's theory met with, he considered it to be unfounded.*~~

~~*The Porisms of Euclid are not the only representatives of this class of propositions. We know of a treatise of Diophantus which was entitled Portsms. But it is uncer- tain whether these lost Porisms formed part of the Arith- metics or were an independent treatise. Diophantus refers to them in*~~

~~*the Arithmetics in three places, introducing a proposition assumed as known with the words ¢yopev ev tots ropicpaciw. These propositions are not, however, all similar in form, and we cannot by means of them grasp what Diophantus understood to be the nature of a porism. So far as we can judge of his treatise it seems to have been a collection of a number of ordinary propositions in the theory of numbers, some of them being mere algebraical identities. Again, Diophantus should probably be included among the vedrepor who are said to have substituted a new definition for that of the ancients, looking only to accidental not essential characteristics of a true porism. And yet, in so far as Diophantus's Porisms had no connexion with geometry, they do not in the least conform to the second definition of Pappus.*~~

~~*We have by no means exhausted the list of writers who have pro- pounded theories on the subject of porisms. It must, however, suffice merely to mention the chief among the rest of the contribu- tions to the subject. These are, besides the papers of Vincent and*~~

~~*1 This view of porisms is known exclusively by the name of Play- fair, though, as he himself says, Dugald Stewart had several years before defined a porism to be "'a proposition affirming the possibility of finding one or more of the conditions of an indeterminate theorem."*~~

~~*PO R—*~~

~~*Breton, the following books or tracts on the Porisms of Euclid :—Aug. Richter, Porismen nach Simson bearbeitet (Elbing, 1837) ; Ch. Housel, "Les Porismes d'Euclide," in Liowville's Journal de mathé- matiques pures et appliquées (2d ser., vol. i., 1856); M. Cantor, "Ueber die Porismen des Euklid und deren Divinatoren," in Schlémilch's Zeitsch. f. Math. u. Phy., 1857, and Literaturzeitung, 1861, p. 3 sg.; Th. Leidenfrost, Die Porismen des Euklid (Pro- gramm der Realschule zu Weimar, 1863); Fr. Buchbinder, Euclids Porismen und Data (Programm der kgl. Landesschule Pforta, 1866). (T. L. H.)*~~

~~*POROS, or Poro ("The Ford"), an island off the east coast of the Morea, separated at its western extremity by only a narrow channel from the mainland at Troezen, and consisting of a mass of limestone rock and of a*~~

~~*mass of trachyte connected by a slight sandy isthmus. The town, which is at the head of an eparchy with 5414 inhabitants (1879), has its 'houses perched among the volcanic rocks," and looks down on the beautiful harbour between the island and the mainland on the south, which between 1830 and 1877 was the seat of a national arsenal.*~~

~~*The ancient Calauria, with which Poros is identified, was given, according to the myth, by Apollo to Poseidon in exchange for Delos ; and it became in historic times famous for a temple of the sea-god, which formed the centre of an amphictyony of seven maritime states—Hermione, Epidaurus, Agina, Athens, Prasiz, Nauplia, and Orchomenus. It was there that Demosthenes took sanctuary with "' gracious Poseidon," and, when this threatened to fail him, sought the more inviolable asylum of death. The build- ing was of Doric architecture and lay on a plateau near the middle of the limestone part of the island, which now contains a mon- astery. In the neighbourhood of Poros-Calauria are two small islands, the more westerly of which contains the ruins of a small temple, and is probably the ancient Spheria! or Hiera mentioned by Pausanias as the seat of a temple of Athena Apaturia. It was at Poros that the English, French, and Russian plenipotentiaries met in 1828 to discuss the basis of the Greek government.*~~

~~*See Chandler, Travels; Leake, Morea; Le Bas, Voyage archéologique ; Curtius,*~~

~~*Peloponnesos ; Pouillon-Boblaye, Recherches ; Bursian, Geographie von Griechen- land ; and Rangabé, " Ein Ausfiug nach Poros," in Deutsche Revue, 1883.*~~

~~*PORPHYRY, a name originally applied to a reddish or purple rock (zop@vpeos, purple) found in Upper Egypt, principally at Jebel Dokhan, and much used by the ancients asa decorative stone. This porphyry, the por- fido rosso antico of Italian antiquaries, consists of a dark crimson or chocolate-coloured felsitic base, with dissemi- nated crystals of white felspar, probably oligoclase. It was a favourite material with Roman sculptors under the lower empire, and notwithstanding its excessive hardness was worked into large sarcophagi and other objects, ornamented in some cases in elaborate relief. This porphyry was also ingeniously used for the lower part of the busts of Roman emperors, the head being executed*~~

~~*in another material, while the porphyry was used for the drapery, the colour of the stone suggesting that of the imperial purple. The antique red porphyry is often confounded with the rosso antuco, which, being merely a red marble, is a much softer stone.*~~

~~*The term "porphyry" has been gradually extended to a variety of rocks which contain distinct crystals of any mineral sprinkled through a fine-grained ground. Among the best known of the ancient porphyries is the porjido verde antico, or lapis Lacedemonius, a beautiful rock with pale-green crystals of labrador-felspar, found at Mount Taygetusinthe Morea. Themeaning of the word "porphyry" has become so vague, in consequence of its application to many rocks 'widely differing from each other in composi- tion, that there is a tendency among modern petrologists to abandon its use as a substantive, and merely to retain the adjective "porphyritic" as a convenient designation for all rocks which exhibit a structure like that of the ancient porphyry. Any rock, whatever its mineralogical composition, may therefore become porphyritic by contain-ing isolated crystals developed in a compact or micro-crys-*~~

~~*1 Some writers identify Calauria with one half only of Poros, and consider that the other half was in antiquity a separate island, to be identified with Spheria.*~~

~~*POR 521*~~

~~*Britain are the porphyritic granites of Cornwall and of Shap in Westmoreland ; the elvans, or quartz-porphyries (see vol. x. p. 233), which occur as dykes.cutting through the slates and granites of Cornwall; the peculiar rock termed "luxullianite " (see vol. xi. p. 49); and the green and red porphyritic felstones of Cumberland. A beautiful brown porphyritic felstone occurs at Buchan Ness, on the coast of Aberdeenshire ; while a rock closely resembling the antique green porphyry is found on Lambay Island, near*~~

~~*Dublin. For a description of porphyrite, see vol. x. p. 234. PORPHYRY (c. 233-306). See NEOPLATONISM, vol. XVil. p. 336 sq.*~~

~~*PORPOISE (sometimes spelled Porpus and Porpxssz). The word is apparently derived from the French pore and poisson, or the Italian porco and pesce, and thus corresponds with some of the English vernacular appellations, "hog- fish," '"sea-hog," "herring-hog," and the German Meer- schwein, whence the usual modern French name of the animal, marsouin. 'Porpoise" is commonly used by sailors to designate all the smaller cetaceans, especially those numerous species which naturalists call "dolphins"; but in scientific language it is restricted to a particular form constituting the genus Phocena of Cuvier, of which the Common Porpoise of the British seas, Phocena commums, Cuvier (Delphinus phocena, Linnzus), is the type. The essential characters by which the genus is separated from the other members of the order Cetacea are described in the article Mammatia (vol. xv. p. 398).*~~

~~*The common porpoise, when full grown, attains a length*~~

~~*Fig. 1.—Phocena communis.*~~

~~*of 5 feet or a little more. The dimensions of an adult female specimen from the English Channel were as follows: —length in straight line from nose to median notch between the flukes of the tail, 624 inches; from the nose to the anterior edge of the dorsal fin, 29 inches; height of dorsal fin, 44 inches; length of base of dorsal fin, 8 inches; length of pectoral fin, 94 inches; breadth of pectoral fin, 34 inches; breadth of tail flukes, 13 inches. The head is rounded in front, and differs from that of the true dolphins in not having the snout produced into a distinct "beak" separated from the frontal eminence by a groove. The under jaw projects about half an inch beyond the upper one. The aperture of the mouth is tolerably wide, and is bounded by stiff immobile lips, and curves slightly upwards at the hinder end. The eye is small, and the external ear represented by a minute aperture in the skin, scarcely larger than would be made by the puncture of a pin, situ- ated about 2 inches behind the eye. The dorsal fin is placed near themiddle of the back, and is lowand triangular. The pectoral fins are of moderate size, and slightly falcate. XIX. — 66*~~

~~*The horizontally-expanded caudal fin is of the form common to all Cetacea. The external surface, as in the rest of the order, is smooth, shining, and devoid of hair, though in the foetal condition a few bristles are found near the nose. The upper parts are dark grey, or nearly black, according to the light in which they are viewed, and the state of moisture or otherwise of the skin ; the under parts are pure white. The line of demarcation between these colours is not distinct, washes or splashes of grey encroaching upon the white on the sides, and varies somewhat in different individuals. Usually it passes from the throat (the anterior part of which, with the whole of the under jaw, 1s dark) above the origin of the pectoral fin, along the middle of the flank, and descends again to the middle line before reaching the tail. Both sides of the pectoral and caudal fins are black. The anterior edge of the dorsal fin is often furnished with a row of small rounded horny spines or rather tubercles of very variable number, which have been thought to indicate a specific distinction between the animals possessing them (Phocena tuberculifera, Grey) and those without them, :*~~

~~*but this has not been confirmed by other characters. One of the most characteristic ana- tomical distinctions be- tween the porpoise and other members of the Delphinidz is the form of the teeth, which (numbering twenty-three to twenty-six on each'side of each jaw) instead of the usual conical, sharp-pointed, recurved shape, all have expanded, flattened, spade-like crowns, with more or less marked vertical grooves, giving a tendency to a bilobed or often trilobed form (see fig. 2).*~~

~~*The porpoise is sociable and gregarious in its habits, being usually seen in small herds, and frequents coasts, bays, and estuaries rather than the open ocean. It is the commonest cetacean in the seas around the British Isles, and not unfrequently ascends the river Thames, having been seen as high up as Richmond; it has also been observed in the Seine at Neuilly, near Paris. It frequents the Scandinavian coasts, entering the Baltic in the summer; and it is found as far north as Baffin's Bay, and as far west as the coasts of the United States. Southward its range is more limited than that of the common dolphin, as, though very common on the Atlantic coasts of France, it is not known to enter the Mediterranean.*~~

~~*It feeds on fish, such as mackerel, pilchards, and herrings, of which it devours large quantities, and, following the shoals, is often caught by fishermen in the nets along with its prey. In former times it was a common and esteemed article of food in England and in France, but is now rarely if ever eaten, being commercially valuable when caught only for the oil obtained from its blubber. Its skin is some- times used for leather and boot-thongs, but the so-called "porpoise hides" are generally obtained from a different and larger species of cetacean, the Beluga of the northern seas.*~~

~~*A closely similar if not identical species from the American coast of the North Pacific has been described under the name of Phocena vomerina, and another from the mouth of the Rio de la Plata as P. spinipennis. Another nearly allied form is Neomeris phocenoides, a small species from the Indian Ocean and Japan, with teeth of the same form as those of the common porpoise, but fewer in number (eighteen to twenty on each side of each jaw) and of larger size, and more distinctly notched or lobed on the free edge. It is distinguished from the common porpoise externally by its entirely black colour and the complete absence of a dorsal fin.*~~

~~*PORPORA, Niccoza (or Niccoto) ANTONIO (1686- 1767), operatic composer and teacher of singing, was born in Naples on 19th August 1686, and educated at the Con- Servatorio di Santa Maria di Loreto by Gaetano Greco*~~

~~*ADDO AR yyy yp mero By: Las*~~

~~*Twice*~~

~~*Fig, 2.—Teeth of Porpoise. natural size.*~~

~~*POR—POR*~~

~~*and Francesco Mancini. His first opera, Basilio, was pro- duced at Naples, his second, Berenice, at Rome. Both were very successful, and he followed them up by in- numerable compositions of like character; but his fame rests chiefly upon his power of teaching singing—an art in which he has never been surpassed, if even equalled. At the Conservatorio di San Onofrio and the Poveri di Gesu Cristo he trained the finest voices of the age. Farinelli—*~~

~~*the greatest singer who ever lived—Caffarelli, Mingotti, Salimbeni, and other celebrated vocalists owed all they ever knew to his teaching. Still his numerous engagements did not tempt him to forsake composition. In 1725 he visited Vienna, but the emperor Charles VI. disliked his florid style, especially his constant use of the trillo, and refused to patronize him. After this rebuff he settled in Venice, teaching regularly in the schools of La Piet' and the Incurabili. In 1728 he removed to Dresden, where he was received with great cordiality by the electoral princess Maria. In 1729 he was invited to London as a rrval to Handel ; but his visit was an unfor- tunate one. Little less disastrous was his second visit to England in 1734, when even the presence of his pupil, the great Farinelli, failed to save the dramatic company known as the "Opera of the Nobility" from ruin. In order to fulfil his English engagement he procured a release from that previously contracted in Dresden ; but he finally quitted London in 1736, and again settled in Venice. There he remained until 1745, when he returned to Vienna in the suite of the Venetian ambassador, giving lessons in 1754 to the young Joseph Haydn, and returning in 1759 to his birthplace, Naples. From this time Porpora's career was a series of misfortunes. His last opera, Camilla, failed ; and he became so miserably poor that the expenses of his funeral were paid by subscription. Yet at the moment of his death (1767) Farinelli and Caffarelli were living in princely splendour on fortunes for which they were indebted to the excellence of the old maestro's teaching.*~~

~~*Porpora was a learned scholar, an accomplished linguist, and a genial wit. Some excellent stories are told in illustration of this last-named characteristic. His compositions are masterly and brilliant, but less remarkable for depth of feeling than for technical display. The style of his oratorios and cantatas is far more elevated than that of his numerous operas.*~~

~~*See*~~

~~*PORSENA or Porsenna, king of Clusium. Errvria, vol, vii. p. 635, and Rome.*~~

~~*PORSON, RicHarp (1759-1808), in some respects the greatest of modern Greek scholars, was born on Christmas Day 1759 at East Ruston, near North Walsham, in Nor- folk, the eldest son of Mr Huggin Porson, parish*~~

~~*clerk of the place. His mother was the daughter of a shoemaker named Palmer, of the neighbouring village of Bacton. He was sent first to the village school at Bacton, kept by Mr John Woodrow, and afterwards to that of Happisburgh, kept by Mr Summers. Here his extraordinary powers of memory and aptitude for arithmetic were soon discovered ; his skill in penmanship, which attended him through life, was very much due to the care of Mr Summers, who be- came early impressed with his abilities, and long afterwards stated that during fifty years of scholastic life he had never come across boys so clever as Porson and his two brothers. He was well grounded in Latin by Mr Summers, remaining with him three years. His father also took great pains with his education, making him repeat at night the lessons he had learned in the day. He would frequently repeat without making a mistake a lesson which he had learned one or two years before and had never seen in the interval. For books he had only what his father's cottage supplied—a book or two of arithmetic, Greenwood's England, Jewell's Apology, an odd volume of Chambers's Cyclopedia picked up from a wrecked coaster, and eight or ten volumes of the Unwersal Magazine.*~~

~~*PORS ON*~~

~~*The brilliant promise of the parish clerk's son naturally became known to the clergyman; and when he was eleven years old the Rev. T. Hewitt, the curate of East Ruston and two neighbouring villages, took charge of his educa- tion, keeping him and one of his brothers at his house at Bacton during the week, and sending them home for the Sunday. Mr Hewitt taught him with his own boys, taking him through the ordinary Latin authors, Cesar, Terence, Ovid, and Virgil; before this he had made such progress in mathematics as to be able to solve questions out of the Ladies' Diary. In addition to this Mr Hewitt brought him under the notice of Mr Norris of Witton Park, who sent him to Cambridge and had him examined by Professor Lambert, the two tutors of Trinity, Postlethwaite and Collier, and the well-known mathematician Atwood, then assistant tutor; the result was so favourable a report of his knowledge and abilities that Mr Norris determined to provide for his education so as to fit him for the university. This was in 1773. It was found impossible to get him into Charterhouse, and he was entered on the foundation of Eton in August 1774.*~~

~~*Of his Eton life Porson had not very pleasant recollec- tions, but he was a popular boy among his schoolfellows ; and two dramas he wrote for performance in the Long Chamber are still remembered. His marvellous memory was of course noticed ; but at first he seems to have some- what disappointed the expectations of his friends, as his composition was weak, and his ignorance of quantity kept him behind several of his inferiors, He went to Eton too late to have any chance of succeeding to a scholarship at King's College. In 1777 he suffered a great loss from the death of his patron Mr Norris; but contributions from Etonians to aid in the funds for his maintenance at the university were readily supplied, and he found a successor to Mr Norris in Sir George Baker, the well-known phy- sician, who was at that time president of the college of physicians. And chiefly through his means Porson was entered of Trinity College, Cambridge, as a pensioner on*~~

~~*28th March 1778, and commenced his residence there soon — afterwards, matriculating in April of that year. It is said |*~~

~~*that what first biassed his mind towards critical researches was the gift of a copy of Toup's Longinus by Dr Davies, the headmaster of Eton, for a good exercise; but it was Bentley and Dawes to whom he looked as his immediate masters. His critical career was begun systematically while an undergraduate ; and it was doubtless during the period of his residence at Cambridge that his marvellous stores of learning were laid up for future use. He became a scholar of Trinity College in 1780, won the Craven uni- versity scholarship in 1781, and took his degree of B.A. in 1782, as third senior optime, obtaining soon afterwards the first chancellor's medal for classical studies. The same year he was elected Fellow of Trinity College, a very un- usual thing for a junior bachelor of arts, as the junior bachelors were very rarely allowed to be candidates for fellowships, a regulation which lasted from 1667 when Isaac Newton was elected till 1818 when Connop Thirl- wall became a fellow. Porson graduated M.A. in 1785. Having thus early secured his independence, he turned his thoughts to publication. The first occasion of his ap- pearing in print was in ashort notice of Schutz's Zschylus in Maty's Review, written in 1783. This review contains several other essays by his hand ; especially may be men- tioned the reviews of Brunck's Aristophanes (an admirable specimen of clear and*~~

~~vigorous English, and containing a very able summary of the Greek comic poet's chief excel- lences and defects), Weston's Hermesianax, and Hunting- ford's Apology for the Monostrophics. But it was to the tragedians, and especially to Auschylus, that his mind was then chiefly directed. He began a correspondence with~~

~~David Ruhnken, the veteran scholar of Leyden, requesting to be favoured with any fragments of A®schylus that Ruhnken had come across in his collection of inedited lexicons and grammarians, and sending him, as a proof that he was not undertaking a task for which he was un- equal, some specimens of his critical powers, and especially of his restoration of a very corrupt passage in the Supplices (673-677) by the help of a nearly equally corrupt passage of Plutarch's Hroteus. As the syndics of the Cambridge press were proposing to re-edit Stanley's schylus, the editorship was offered to Porson; but he declined to undertake it on the conditions laid down, namely, of re- printing Stanley's corrupt text and incorporating all the variorum notes, however worthless. He was especially anxious that the Medicean MS. at Florence should be col- lated for the new edition, and offered to undertake the collation at an expense not greater than it would have cost if done by a person on the spot; but the syndics re- fused the offer, the vice-chancellor (then Mr Torkington, master of Clare Hall) observing that Mr Porson might collect his MSS. at home.~~

~~In 1786, a new edition of Hutchinson's Anabasis of Xenophon being called for, Porson was requested by the publisher to supply a few notes, which he did in conjunc- tion with the Rev. W. Whiter, editor of the Hlymologicon universale. These give the first specimen of that neat and terse style of Latin notes in which he was afterwards to appear without a rival. They also show already his intimate acquaintance with his two favourite authors, Plato and Athenzus, and a familiarity with Eustathius's commentary on Homer.~~

~~The next year, 1787, the Notx breves ad Toupit Emenda- tiones in Suidam were written, though they did not appear till 1790 in the new edition of Toup's book pub- lished at Oxford. These first made Porson's name known as a scholar of the first rank, and carried his fame beyond England. The letters he received from Heyne and Her- mann, still preserved in the library~~

~~of Trinity College, and written before his Huripides was published, afford a sufficient proof of this. In his notes he does not hesitate to point out the errors of Toup and others; at the same time he speaks of Toup's book as "opus illud aureum,"~~

~~and states that his writing the notes at all is due to the~~

~~admiration he had for it. They contain some very brilliant emendations of various authors; but the necessity of having Toup's own notes with them has prevented their ever being reprinted in a separate form.~~

~~During this year, in the Gentleman's Magazine, he wrote the three letters on Hawkins's Life of Johnson which have been reprinted by Mr Kidd in his 7'racts and Criticisms of Porson, and in the volume of Porson's Correspondence. They are admirable specimens of the dry humour so characteristic of the writer, and afford also proofs of his intimate acquaintance with Shakespeare and the other English dramatists and poets. In the same periodical, in the course of the years 1788 and 1789, appeared the Letters to Archdeacon Travis, on the spurious verse 1 John v. 7 (collected in 1790 into a volume), which must be considered to have settled the question as to the spurious- ness of the verse for ever. Gibbon's verdict on the book, that it was "the most acute and accurate piece of criticism since the days of Bentley," may be considered as some- what partial, as it was in defence of him that Porson had entered the field against Travis. But in the very masterly sketch of Gibbon's work and style in the pre- face Porson does not write in a merely flattering tone. It is to be wished that on such a subject the tone of levity had been modified. But Porson says in his preface that he could treat the subject in no other manner, if he treated it at all: "To peruse such a mass of falsehood and~~

~~sophistry and to write remarks upon it, without sometimes giving way to laughter and sometimes to indignation, was, to me at least, impossible." Travis has no mercy shown him, but he certainly deserved none. One is equally struck with the thorough grasp Porson displays of his subject, the amount of his miscellaneous learning, and the humour that pervades the whole. But it was then the unpopular side: the publisher is said to have lost~~

~~money by the book ; and one of his early friends, Mrs Turner of Norwich, cut down a legacy she had left Porson to £30 on being told that he had written what was described to her as a book against Christianity.~~

~~During the years that followed he continued to contri- bute to the leading reviews, writing in the Monthly Renew the articles on Robertson's Parian Chronicle, Edwards's Plutarch, and Payne Knight's Essay on the Greek Alphabet. He gave assistance to Beloe in one or two articles in the British Critick, and probably wrote also in the Analytical Review and the Critical Review.~~

~~In the year 1792 his fellowship was no longer tenable by a layman ; and, rather than undertake duties for which he felt himself unfit, and which involved subscription to the Articles (though he had no difficulty as to signing a statement as to his conformity with the liturgy of the Church of England when elected Greek professor), he determined not to take holy orders, which would have enabled him to remain a fellow, and thus deprived him- self of his only means of subsistence. He might have been retained in the society by being appointed to a lay~~

~~fellowship, one of the two permanent lay fellowships which~~

~~the statutes then permitted falling vacant just in time. It is said that this had been promised him, and it was certainly the custom in the college always to appoint the senior among the existing laymen, who otherwise would vacate his fellowship. But the master (Dr Postlethwaite), who had the nomination, used his privilege to nominate a younger man (John Heys), a nephew of his own, and thus Porson was turned adrift without any means of support. A subscription was, however, got up among his friends to provide an annuity to keep him from actual want; Mr Cracherode, Mr Cleaver Banks, Dr Burney, and Dr Parr took the lead, and enough was collected to produce about £100 a year. He accepted it only on the condition that he should receive the interest during his lifetime, and that the principal, placed in the hands of trustees, should be returned to the donors at his death. When this occurred they or their survivors refused to receive the money, and the Porson prize at Cambridge was founded with this sum to perpetuate his name.~~

~~*After the loss of his fellowship he continued chiefly to reside in London, having chambers in Essex Court, Teniple, — occasionally visiting his friends, such as Dr Goodall at Eton and Dr Parr at Hatton. It was at Dr Goodall's house that the Letters to Travis were written, and at one period of his life he spent a great deal of time at Hatton. While there he would generally spend his mornings in the library, and for the most part in silence; but in the evenings, especially if Parr were away, he would collect the young men of the house about him, and pour forth from the rich stores of his memory torrents of every kind of literature — pages of Barrow, whole letters of Richard- son, whole scenes of Foote, favourite pieces from the periodical press." The charms of his society are described as being then irresistible. "Nothing," said one of his friends, "could be more gratifying than a tête-A-tête with him ; his recitations from Shakespeare, and his ingenious etymologies and dissertations on the roots of the English language were a high treat." "Nothing," says another, "came amiss to his memory; he would set a child right in his twopenny fable-book, repeat the whole of the moral*~~

~~*POR SOW*~~

~~*tale of the Dean of Badajos, or a page of Athenzeus on cups, or Eustathius on Homer." An anecdote is told of his repeating the Rape of the Lock, making observations as he went on, and noting the various readings ; of which one of the company said, "Had it been taken down from his mouth and published, it would have made the best edition of that poem yet in existence."*~~

~~*In 1792 the Greek professorship at Cambridge became vacant by the resignation of Mr Cooke. To this Porson was elected without opposition, and he continued to hold it till his death. The duties then consisted in taking a part in the examinations for the university scholarships and classical medals. It was said he wished to give lectures ; but lecturing was not in fashion in those days, and he did far more to advance the knowledge and study of the Greek language by his publications than he could have done by any amount of lecturing. It must be re- membered that the emoluments of the professorship were only £40 a year. The authors on which his time was chiefly spent were the tragedians, Aristophanes, Athenzus, and the lexicons*~~

~~*of Suidas, Hesychius, and Photius. This last he twice transcribed (the first transcript having been destroyed by a fire at Perry's house, which deprived the world of much valuable matter that he had written on the margins of his books) from the original among the Gale MSS. in the library of Trinity College. Of the bril- liancy and accuracy of his emendations on Aristophanes, the fragments of the other comic poets, and the lexico- graphers he had a pleasing proof on one occasion when he found how often in Aristophanes he had been anticipated by Bentley, and on another when Schow's collation of the unique MS. of Hesychius appeared and proved him right in 'fan incredible number ' of instances.*~~

~~*In 1795 there appeared from Foulis's press at Glasgow an edition of AXschylus in folio, printed with the same types as the Glasgow Homer, without a word of preface or anything to give a clue to the editor. Many new read- ings were inserted in the text with an asterisk affixed, while an obelus was used to mark many others as corrupt. It was at once recognized as Porson's work ; he had super- intended the printing of a small edition in two vols. 8vo, but this was kept back by the printer and not issued till 1806, still without the editor's name. There are corrections of many more passages in this edition than in the folio ; and, though the text cannot be considered as what would have gone forth if with his name and sanction, yet more is done for the text of Aschylus than had been accomplished by any preceding editor. It has formed the substratum for all subsequent editions. It was printed from a copy of Pauw's edition corrected, which is still preserved in the library of Trinity College.*~~

~~*Soon after this, in 1797, appeared the first instalment of what was intended to be a complete edition of Euripides, —an edition of the Hecuba.*~~

~~*In the preface he pointed out the correct method of writing several words previously incorrectly written, and gave some speci- mens of his powers on the subject of Greek metres. The notes are very short, almost entirely critical ; but so great a range of learn- ing, combined with such felicity of emendation whenever a corrupt passage was encountered, is displayed that there was never any doubt as to the quarter whence the new edition had proceeded. He expressly avoided the office of interpreter in his notes, which may well be wondered at on recollecting how admirably he did translate*~~

~~when he condescended to that branch of an editor's duties: "si quis erat locus Anglice exhibendus," says Dobree, "tum vero omnes in stuporem dabat."~~

~~His work, however, did not escape attack; Gilbert Wakefield had already published a Tragediaruwm Delectus ; and, conceiving himself to be slighted, as there was no mention of his labours in the new Hecuba, he wrote a 'diatribe extemporalis" against it, a tract which for bad taste, bad Latin, and bad criticism it would not~~

~~be easy to match. And Gottfried Hermann of Leipsic, then a very young man, who had also written a work on Greek metres, which~~

~~POR—POR~~

~~Dr Elmsley has styled "a book of which too much il] cannot easily be said," issued an edition of the Hecuba, in which Porson's theories were openly attacked. Porson at first took no notice of either, but went on quietly with his Euripides, publishing the Orestes in 1798, the Phenisse in 1799, and the Medea in 1801, the last printed at the Cambridge press, and with the editor's name on the title-page. But there are many allusions to his antagonists in the notes on such points as the final », the use of accents, &c. ; and on v. 675 of the Medea he holds up Hermann by name to scorn in caustic and taunting language. And it is more than probable that to Hermann's attack we owe the most perfect of his works, the supplement to the preface to the Hecuba, prefixed to the second edition published at Cambridge in 1802. Porson's dislike of composition made him indolent, but he came forward now in his own defence, and probably of all the pieces of minute criticism that have appeared on those subjects the first place must be given to this. The beauty of the style, the steps by which the reader is carried on from one point to another, and the richness of illustration make it one of the most entertaining of diatribes. The metrical laws promulgated are laid down clearly, illustrated with an ample number of examples, and those that militate against them brought together and corrected, so that what had been beyond the reach of the ablest scholars of preceding times is made clear to the merest tyro. It is here that the laws of the iambic metre are fully explained, and the theory of the pause stated and proved, which had been only alluded to in the first edition. A third edition of the Hecwba~~

~~*appeared in 1808, and he left corrected copies of the other plays, of which new editions appeared soon after his death ; but these four plays were all that was acconiplished of the projected edition of the poet. Porson lived six years after the second edition of the Hecuba was published, but his natural indolence and procrastination led him to put off carry- ing on the work till death.put a stop to this and all other literary projects. He found time, however, to execute his collation of the Harleian MS. of the Odyssey, published in the Grenville Homer in 1801, and to present to the Society of Antiquaries his wonderful conjectural restoration of the Rosetta stone.*~~

~~*In 1806, when the London Institution was founded (then in the Old Jewry, since removed to Finsbury Circus), he was appointed principal librarian with a salary of £200 a year and a suite of rooms; and thus his latter years were made easy as far as money was concerned.*~~

~~*Among his most intimate friends was Perry, the editor of the Morning Chronicle; and this friendship was cemented by his marriage with Perry's sister, Mrs Lunan, in Novem- ber 1796. The marriage was a happy one for the short time it lasted, as Porson became more attentive to times and seasons, and would have been weaned from his habits of drinking ; but she sank in a decline a few months after her marriage (12th April 1797), and he returned to his chambers in the Temple and his old habits. Perry's friend- ship was of great value to him in many ways; but it induced him to spend too much of his time in writing for the Morning Chronicle; indeed he was even accused of "giving up to Perry what was meant for mankind," and the existence of some of the papers he wrote there can be*~~

~~*only deplored.*~~

~~*For some months before his death he had appeared to be failing: his great memory was not what it had been, and he had some symptoms of intermittent fever; but on 19th September 1808 he was seized in the street with a fit of apoplexy, and after partially recovering sank on the 25th of that month at the comparatively early age of forty-nine. He was buried in Trinity College, close to the statue of Newton, at the opposite end of the chapel to*~~

~~*where rest the remains of Bentley.*~~

~~His library was divided into two parts, one of which was sold by auction ; the other, containing the transcript of the Gale Photius, his books with MS. notes, and some letters from foreign scholars, was bought by Trinity College for 1000 guineas. His note-books were found to contain, in the words of Bishop Blomfield, "a rich treasure of criticism in every branch of classical hterature—every- thing carefully and correctly written and sometimes rewritten— quite fit to meet the public eye, without any diminution or addi- tion." They have been carefully rearranged of late years, and illustrate among other things his extraordinary penmanship and power of minute and accurate writing. Much still remains un- published, though much has been given to the world. Monk, his successor as Greek professor, and Blomfield (both afterwards bishops) edited the Adversaria, consisting of the notes on Athenzus and the Greek poets, and his prelection on Euripides ; Dobree,~~

~~afterwards Greek professor, the notes on Aristophanes and the lexicon of Photius. Besides these, from other sources, Professor Gaisford edited his notes on Pausanias and Suidas, and Mr Kidd collected his scattered reviews. And, when Bishop Burgess attacked his hterary character on the score of his Letters to Travis, Professor Turton (afterwards Bishop of Ely) came forward with a vindication.~~

~~_In claiming for Porson the very high place he has always occu- pied among Greek scholars, it is with those who went before him that he must be compared, if we would judge fairly of the advances he made in the knowledge of the language. In learning he was superior to Valckenaer, in accuracy to Bentley. It must be remem- bered that in his day the science of comparative philology had scareely any existence ; even the comparative value of MSS. was scarcely considered in editing an ancient author. With many editors MSS. were treated as of pretty much the same value, whether they were really from the hand of a trustworthy scribe, or what Bentley calls "scrub manuscripts" or " scoundrel copies." Thus, if we are to find fault. with Porson's way of editing, it is that he does not make sufficient difference between the MSS. he uses, or point out the relative value of the early copies whether in MS. or print. Thus he collates very minutely Lascaris's edition of~~

~~*the Medea, mentioning even misprints in the text, rather from its rarity and costhness than from its intrinsic value. And his wonderful quickness at emendation has sometimes led him into error, which greater investigation into MSS. would have avoided ; thus, in his note on Eur., Phawn., 1873, an error, perhaps a misprint (xe for pe), in the first edition of the scholiast on Sophocles has led him into an emendation of v. 339 of the Z"rachiniz which clearly will not stand. But his most brilliant emendations, such as some of those on Athenzus, on the Supplices of Aschylus, or, to take one single instance, that on Eur., Helen., 751 (00d "Enevos for ovd€év ye ; see Maltby's Thesaurus, p. 299), are such as convince the reader of their absolute certainty ; and this power was possessed by Porson to a degree no one else has ever attained. No doubt his mathematical training had something to do with this; frequently the process may be seen by which the truth has been reached.*~~

~~*A few words are called for on his general character. No one ever more loved truth for its own sake ; few have sacrificed more rather than violate their consciences, and this at a time when a high standard in this respect was not common. In spite of his failings, few have had warmer friends ; no one more willingly communicated his knowledge and gave help to others; scarcely a book appeared in his time or for some years after his death on the subjects to which he devoted his life without acknowledging assistance from him. And, ifit be remembered that his life was a continued struggle against poverty and slight and ill-health, rather than complain that he did little, we should wonder how he accomplished so much.*~~

~~*The chief sources for Porson's life will be found in the memoirs in the Gentle- man's Magazine for September and October 1868, and other periodicals of the time (mostly reprinted in Barker's Porsonitana, London, 1852); Dr Young's memoir in former editions of the Encyclopedia Britannica (reprinted ibid. and in his works); Weston's (utterly worthless) Short Account of the late Mr Richard Porson, London, 1808, reissued with a new preface and title-page in 1814; Dr Clarke's narrative of his last illness and death, London, 1808 (reprinted in the Classical Journal); Kidd's " Imperfect outline of the life of R. P.," prefixed to his collection of the Tracts and Criticisms; Beloe's Sexagenarian (not trustworthy), vol. i., London, 1817 ; Barker's Parriana, vol. ii., London, 1829 ; Maltby's " Por-*~~

~~*soniana," published by Dyce in the volume of Recollections of the Table-Talk of Samuel Rogers, London, 1856; a life in the Cambridge Essays for 1857 by H. R. Luard ; and a lengthy life by J. 8S. Watson, London, 1861.*~~

~~*The dates of Porson's published works are as follows: Notz# in Xenophontis Anabasin, 1786; Appendix to Toup, 1790; Letters to Travis, 1790; Aischylus, 1795, 1806 ; Euripides, 1797-1802 ; collation of the Harleian MS. of the Odyssey, 1801; Adversaria (Monk and Blomfield), 1812; Tracts and Criticisms (Kidd), 1815 ; Aristophanica (Dobree), 1820 ; Notz in Pausaniam (Gaisford), 1820; Photit*~~

~~*Lexicon (Dobree), 1822 ; Notz in Suidam (Gaisfordy, 1834 ; Correspondence (Luard,*~~

~~*edited for the Cambridge Antiquarian Society), 1867. Dr Turton's vindication (H.*~~

~~*appeared in 1827. L.) PORTA, Baccto DELLA. See Baccto DELLA PorTA. PORTA, GIAMBATTISTA DELLA (c. 1543-1615), natural*~~

~~*philosopher, was born of a noble and ancient family at*~~

~~*Naples about the year 1543. In early youth he travelled*~~

~~*extensively not only in Italy but also in France and Spain,*~~

~~*and he had scarcely emerged from boyhood when he published MJagiz naturalis, sive de miracults rerum natur- alium lib. IV. (1558), the first draft of his Magia naturalis, in twenty books, published in 1569. At an early age he founded in Naples the Academia Secretorum Nature, other- wise known as the Accademia dei Oziosi, of which the history has been briefly sketched elsewhere (see ACADEMY, vol. i, p. 70); and in 1610 he became a member of the*~~

~~*Aceademia dei Lincei at Rome. He died at Naples on*~~

~~*4th February 1615.*~~

~~*The following is a chronological list of the principal writings of this prolific author :—De miraculis rerum naturaliwm, in four books*~~

~~*(1558) ; De furtivis litterarum notis, in five books (1563, and fre-*~~

~~quently afterwards, entitling him to high rank among the early writers on cryptography) ; Alagia naturalis (1569, and often re-~~

~~printed, also translated into English in 1658, into French, Spanish, and other languages) ; Phytognomonica (1583, a bulky treatise on the physiology of plants as then understood) ; De humana phystogno- monia, in six books (1591) ; Villa, in twelve books (1592 ; an inter- esting practical treatise on farming, gardening, and arboriculture, based upon his own observations at his country seat near Naples) ; De refractione, optices parte, in nine books (1593) ; Pnewmatica, in three books (1601) ; De celesti physiognomonia, In Six books (1601) ; Elementa curvilinea (1601) ; De distillatione, in nine books (1604) ; De munitione, in three books (1608) ; and De aeris transmutation- dbus, in four books (1609). Porta also wrote several Italian comedies (Olimpia, 1589 ; La Fantesea, 1592; La Trappolaria, 1597 ; I Due Fratelli Rivali, 1601; La Sorella, 1607 ; La Chiappinaria, 1609 ; La Carbonaria, 1628; La Cintia, 1628). Among all the above- mentioned works the chief interest attaches to the Magia naturalis, in which a strange medley of subjects is discussed, including the reproduction of animals, the transmutation of metals, pyrotechny, domestic economy, statics, hunting, the preparation of perfumes ; in book xvii. he describes a number of optical experiments. They include a description of the camera obscura. If, says he, a small aperture is made in the shutter of a dark room, distinct images of all exterual objects will be depicted on the opposite wall in their true colours ; and he further adds that, if a convex lens be fixed in the opening so that the images are received on a surface at the dis- tance of its focal length, the pictures will be rendered so much more distinct that the features of a person standing on the outside of the window may be readily recognized in his inverted image. He applied this instrument to a sort of magic lantern, the representation of eclipses of the sun, and of hunting and other scenes, battles, and other events produced by movable pictures and drawings. He considered the eye as a camera obscura, the pupil as the hole in the window contracting and dilating with different lights, and the crystalline lens as the principal organ of vision, though he seems to have regarded it not as his convex lens but as the tablet on which~~

~~*the images of external objects were formed, the cornea being, no doubt, in his estimation, the part of the eye which formed the picture. After speaking of spectacles and the like, he professed to know a combination of lenses by which "we may contrive to recog- nize our friends at the distance of several miles, and those of weak sight may read the most minute letters from a distance. It is an invention of great utility, and grounded on optical principles, nor is it at all difficult of execution ; but it must be so divulged as not to be understood by the vulgar, and yet be clear to the sharp-sighted." The obscure description which follows does not, how- ever, make it at all probable that he had really anticipated Galileo.*~~

~~*In his De refractione Porta treats of binocular vision. He repeats the propositions of Euclid on the dissimilar pictures of a sphere when seen with each eye and when seen with both; and he quotes from Galen on the dissimilarity of the three pictures thus seen. But, maintaining as he does that we can see only with one eye at a time, he denies the accuracy of Euclid's theorem ; and, while he admits that the observations of Galen are correct, he endeavours to explain them on other principles. In illustrating Galen's views on the dissimilarity of the three pictures he gives a diagram in which can be recognized not only the principle but the construction of the stereoscope. It contains a view, represented by a circle, of the picture of a solid as seen by the right eye, of the picture of the same solid as seen by the left, and of the combina- tion of these two pictures as seen by both eyes, placed between the first two pictures. These results, as exhibited in three circles, are then explained by copying the passage from Galen, and he requests the observer to repeat the experiments so as to see the three dis-similar pictures when looking at a solid column.*~~

~~*PORT ADELAIDE, South Australia. See vol.i.p. 151.*~~

~~*PORTADOWN, a market-town of Armagh, Ireland, is situated on the river Bann, and on the Great Northern Railway, 25 miles west-south-west of Belfast and 10 north-north-east of Armagh. The Bann, which is connected with the Newry Canal and falls into Lough Neagh about 5 miles north of the town, is navigable for vessels of 90 tons burden. It is crossed at Portadown by a stone bridge of seven arches, originally built in 1764, but since then re-erected. The town consists of a principal street, containing a number of*~~

~~*good shops and houses, and with several streets inhabited by the working-classes branching from it at various points. The only public building of importance is the court-house and news-room. The manufacture of linen and cotton is carried on, and there 1s a considerable trade in pork, grain, and farm produce. The manor in the reign of Charles I. was bestowed on John Obyns, who erected a mansion and a few houses, which were the beginning of the town. A grain-market*~~

~~*Ol.*~~

~~*jaa aa*~~

~~*was established in 1780. The population in 1871 was 6735, and in 1881 it was 7850.*~~

~~*PORTALIS, Juan Etvenne Marts (1745-1807), French jurist and the principal author of the Code Civil, which as the Code Napoléon has been declared the greatest monu- ment of the reign of the emperor, came of a bourgeois family, and was born at Bausset in Provence on Ist April 1745. He was educated by the Oratorians at their schools in Toulon and Marseilles, and then went to the university of Aix; while a student there he published his first two works, Observations sur Emile in 1763 and Des Préjugés in 1764. In 1765 he became an avocat at the parlement of Aix, and soon obtained so great a reputation that he was instructed by Choiseul in 1770 to draw up the decree authorizing the marriage of Protestants. From 1778 to 1781 he was one of the four assessors or administrators of Provence, and in 1783 he brought about the countess of Mirabeau's separation from her husband in spite of the impassioned pleading of the great Mirabeau himself. In 1788 he protested on behalf of the avocats of Aix against Loménie de Brienne's May edicts, but in the following year, probably owing to Mirabeau's influence, he was not elected to the States-General. He entirely disapproved of the great changes brought about by the Constituent Assembly ; and, after refusing to be one of the royal com- mission for splitting up Provence into departments, he retired, first to his country house and then to Lyons, and took no further part in politics. In November 1793, after the republic had been proclaimed, he came to Paris, and was thrown into prison, being the brother-in-law of Siméon, who was the leader of the federalists in Provence. He was soon removed through the*~~

~~influence of Barere to a maison de santé, where he remained undisturbed till the fall of Robespierre. On being released he practised as a lawyer in Paris; and in 1795 he was elected by the capital to the Council of Ancients, at once becoming a leader of the moderate party opposed to the directory. His reports, however, were chiefly on questions of law reform, and he commenced the labours which have made his name famous. As a leader of the moderates he was proscribed at the coup d'étét of Fructidor, but, unlike Pichegru and Barbé-Marbois, he managed to escape to Switzerland, and did not return till Bonaparte became First Consul. Bonaperte knew his value, and made him a conseiller d'état in 1800, and then charged him, with Tronchet, Bigot de Préameneu, and Jacques de Maleville, to draw up the Code Civil. Of this commission he was the most industrious member, and many of the most im- portant titles, notably those on marriage and heirship, are his work. In 1801 he was placed in charge of the depart- ment of cultes, or public worship, and in that capacity had the chief share in drawing up the provisions of the Con- cordat. In 1803 he became a member of the Institute, in 1804 minister of public worship, and in 1805 a knight grand cross of the Legion of Honour. He soon after be- came totally blind; and after undergoing an unsuccessful operation he died at Paris on 23d August 1807.~~

~~The work of Portalis appears in the Code Napoléon, but see also Frederick Portalis's Doewments, rapports, ct travaux inédits sur le Code Civil, 1844, and Sur le Concordat, 1845 ; for his life, see the biography in the edition of his @wwres by F. Portalis, 1823, and René Lavollée, Portalis, sa vie ct ses euvres, Paris, 1869.~~

~~PORT AU PRINCE (originally L'H6rrrat, and for brief periods Port Henri and Port Ripusricarn), the capital of the republic of Hayti (western portion of the island of Haymtt, g.v.), lies in 18° 34' N. lat. and 72° 20' W. long. at the apex of the vast triangular bay which strikes inland for about 100 miles between the two great peninsulas of the west coast, and has its upper recesses protected by the beautiful island of Gonaives (30 miles long by 2 broad). The city (an archbishopric since the~~

~~concordat of 1860) is admirably situated on ground that soon begins to rise rapidly towards the hills; and it was originally laid out by the French on a regular plan with streets of good width running north and south and inter-sected by others at right angles. Everything has been allowed to fall into disorder and disrepair, and to this its public buildings—a state-house, a national bank, a hos- pital, a lyceum, a custom-house, &c.—form no exception. The national palace remains as the flames of revolution left it in 1869, and the president lives in an ordinary house. The principal church is an "overgrown wooden shed." Every few years whole quarters of the town are burned down, but the people go on building the same slight wooden houses, with only here and there a more substantial warehouse in brick. The state of the streets is deplorable in the extreme ; and, in spite of the old French aqueduct, the water-supply is defective ; while the harbour is rapidly being filled by fetid deposits. From June to September the heat is excessive, reaching 95° to 99° in the shade. According to Ad. Ackerman, the average rainfall for the four years 1864-67 was 61°35 inches, distributed over an average of 152 days. The population, mostly Negroes and mulattoes, is estimated at 20,000. Port au Prince was first laid out by M. de la Cuza in 1749. In 1751 and again in 1770 it was destroyed by earthquakes.~~

~~See Edgar La Selve (professor in the Port au Prince lyceum), in Tour du Monde, 1879, and Spenser St John, Hayti, or the Black Liepublic, 1884.~~

~~PORT ELIZABETH, a seaport town of Cape Colony, at the head of an electoral division of the south-eastern pro- vince, lies in 33° 55' §. lat. on Algoa Bay, about 7 miles south of the mouth of the Zwartkop river. Built along the base and up the rocky slopes of the hills that rise for a height of 200 feet above the bay, it has rather.a bare appearance as seen from the water, but on landing the stranger finds himself in the midst of a prosperous Euro- pean town with substantial buildings and fine streets. A small and somewhat muddy stream, Baker's River, divides it into two parts, that to the east being mainly occupied by Malay fishermen. The whole length of the place is about 2 miles, and its breadth varies from a quarter to 1 mile. The main street runs up from the harbour, with its large wool and other warehouses, to the market-place, which is adorned with a handsome granite obelisk. Port Eliza- beth owes its prosperity to the fact that it has become~~

~~*the great emporium for the whole interior of the country to the south of the Zambesi, being the terminus of the Eastern and Midland Railways which run inland to Graaff Reinet, Cradock (182 miles, since 1880), and Grahamstown (since 1879). The two great hindrances to development have been want of drinking-water and want of protection and convenient landing-places in the harbour. The former has been fully met by an aqueduct (28 miles) from Van Staanden's River (1878; see J. G. Gamble's Report to Inst. Civ. Eng., 1883), and the harbour was improved in 1881 by extending the old landing-pier to a total length of 900 feet and constructing a similar pier 800 feet long. The value of the imports has increased from £376,638 in 1855 to £4,001,658 in 1881 and £2,364,891 in 1883; that of the exports from £584,447 in 1855 to £2,583,737 in 1881 and £2,341,123 in 1883. The exports are mainly wool (£1,508,280 in 1881), ostrich feathers (£131,279), and Angora goat's hair (£257,596), as well as ivory, hides,*~~

~~*diamonds. The population, which was not much above 4000 in 1855, reached 13,049 in 1875. The town dates from 1820.*~~

~~*PORTER, Jane (1776-1850), a novelist whose life and reputation are closely linked with those of her sister Anna Marra Porrer (1780-1832) and her brother Sir Ropert Ker Porrer (1775-1842). Their father, an*~~

~~*officer in the English army, having died shortly after the birth in 1776 of the younger sister, the mother removed from Durham, their birthplace, to Edinburgh, where the inherited passion for the romance of war which gave character to the works of each appears to have been stimu- lated by their association with Flora Macdonald and the young Walter Scott. To develop the artistic ability dis- played by the brother, the family moved in 1790 to London, and the sisters subsequently resided at Thames Ditton and at Esher with their mother until her death in 1831. The ability of Anna Maria Porter was the first to manifest itself in the premature publication of her Artless Tales (1793-95), these being followed by a long series of works, of which the more noteworthy are Walsh Colwille (1797), Octama (1798), The Lake of Killarney (1804), A Sailor's L'riendship and a Soldier's Love (1805), The Hungarian Brothers (1807), Don Sebastian (1809), Ballads, Romances, and other Poems (1811), The Recluse of Norway (1814), The Knight of St John*~~

~~*(1817), The Fast of St Magdalen (1818), The Village of Mariendorpt (1821), Roche Blanche (1822), Honor O' Hara (1826), and Barony (1830). Jane Porter, whose intellectual power, though slower in deve- lopment and in expression, was of a stronger nature than that of her sister, had in the meantime gained an immediate and wide popularity by her first work, Thaddeus of Warsaw (1803), which was translated into several languages and procured her election as canoness of the Teutonic order of St Joachim. Seven years later her Scottish Chiefs anti- cipated in some measure the works of Sir Walter Scott in the field of national romance, though it is wanting in the higher qualities of the historic novel. Her chief subse- quent works were The Pastor's Fireside (1815), Duke Christian of Lüneburg (1824), Coming Out (1828), and The ied of Forty Footsteps (1828). In conjunction with her sister she published in 1826 the Zales round a Winter Hearth, and the intervals between her larger works were filled up with frequent contributions to current periodical literature. Str Edward Seaward's Diary (1831)—a work displaying considerable skill in the realistic reproduction of the style and mode of thought of an earlier period — has been persistently, though erroneously, attributed to her. The claim of her eldest brother, Dr William Ogilvie Porter, to its authorship has been fully established, her share in its publication having been solely that of editor. In 1832 Anna Maria died, and for the next ten years Jane became "'a wanderer" amongst her relations and friends. While his sisters had been winning esteem in literature, Robert Ker Porter had in his own way been scarcely less successful. After two years of study at the Royal Academy he had gained reputation as a painter of altar-pieces and battle-scenes of imposing magnitude. He went to Russia as historical painter to the emperor in 1804, accompanied Sir John Moore's expedition in 1808, married the princess Mary de Sherbatoff in 1811, was created knight commander of the order of Hanover in 1832, and became British consul at Venezuela. Accounts of his wanderings are to be found in his Travelling Sketches in Russia and Sweden (1808), Letters from Portugal and Spain (1809), Narrative of the late Campaign in Russia (1813), and Z'ravels in Georgia, Persia, Armenia, Ancient Babylonia, &c., during the years 1817-20 (1821-22). After leaving Venezuela he again visited St Petersburg, but died there suddenly on 4th May 1842. Jane Porter, who had joined him in Russia, then returned to England and took up her residence with her eldest brother at Bristol, where she died, 24th May 1850, PORT GLASGOW, a seaport,*~~

~~*market-town, burgh of barony, and parliamentary burgh of Renfrewshire, Scot- land, is situated on the south side of the Clyde, 24 miles east of Greenock and 20 west of Glasgow. The elevated ridges to the back of the town are clothed with trees,*~~

~~*their lower slopes being occupied with villas. The streets are wide, regular, and well-paved. The principal buildings are the court-house in the Grecian style, the town-hall, and the custom-house. On the adjoining slopes to the east are the picturesque ruins of Newark Castle, the ancient seat of the Maxwells. There are large and commodious harbours, a wet dock, and a graving dock. The port carries on an extensive trade with British North America, the United States, the Indies, and the Levant, the principal exports being iron, steel, machinery, and textile manufactures. The trade, though checked for a time by the rapid progress of Greenock, has been for some years on the increase. The shipbuilding-yards give employment to a large number of persons both in the town and the neighbouring burgh of Greenock. Connected with the shipbuilding industry there are manufactures of sail-cloth, ropes, anchors, and chain cables, also engineering and riveting works, and iron and brass foundries. The population of the police burgh in 1851 was 6986, which in 1871 had increased to 10,823, and in 1881 to 13,224. The population of the parlia- mentary burgh in 1881 was 10,802.*~~

~~*Originally the district formed part of the adjoining parish of Kilmalcolm, the nucleus of the town being the small village of Newark attached to the barony of that name. In 1688 it was purchased from Sir Patrick Maxwell of Newark by the magistrates of Glasgow, to provide a convenient harbour for vessels belonging to the city. In 1695 it was disjoined from Kilmalcolm and erected into a separate parish under the name of New Port Glasgow, after- wards Port Glasgow. In 1710 it was made the chief custom-house port for the Clyde, but is now under the control of the Greenock office; and in 1775 it was created a burgh of barony. Under the Municipal Act of 1883 the town is governed by a provost, two bailies, and six councillors. Since the first Reform Act it has been included in the Kilmarnock parliamentary district of burghs.*~~

~~*PORT HOPE, a town and port of entry of Canada, in Durham county, Ontario, on the north shore of Lake Ontario, lies 63 miles north-east of Toronto by the Grand Trunk Railway (which is there met by the midland branch of the Grand Trunk Railway), and is connected with Charlotte, the port of Rochester, New York, by a daily steamboat service. The town is picturesquely situated on the side and at the foot of hills overlooking the lake ; and Smith's Creek, by which it is traversed, supplies abundant water-power. Flour, plaster, woollen goods, leather, beer, carriages, agricultural implements, and steam-engines and boilers are among the objects of the local industries, and trade is carried on in lumber, grain, and flour. The value of the exports was $1,326,706 in the year ending 30th June 1884, and that of the imports $221,830. The popu- lation in 1881 was 5585.*~~

~~*PORT HURON, a city and port of entry of the United States, county seat of St Clair county, Michigan, lies 58 miles by rail north-east of Detroit, at the southern extremity of Lake Huron and on the west bank of the St Clair river, which is there joined by the Black river. Port Huron is a point of great importance in the railway system, being the terminus of the Chicago and Grand Trunk and the Port Huron and North-Western Railways (lines to East Saginaw, Sand Beach, Almont, and Port Austin), and connected by ferry to Sarnia with the Great Western of Canada and the Grand Trunk Railways. It is also the terminus and a stopping-place of several lines of lake steamers. It has a large lumber trade, ship-yards, dry docks, saw-mills, flour-mills, planing-mills. The population was 5973 in 1870, 8883 in 1880, and 10,396 in 1884. Commenced in 1819, Port Huron was incorporated as a village in 1835, and as a city in 1857.*~~

~~*PORTICT, a town of Italy, 5 miles south of Naples, on the shores of the bay and at the foot of Vesuvius, a little to the north of the site of Herculaneum. It is traversed by the high road and the railway from Naples (only 5 miles distant) to Salerno. The palace, erected in 1737,*~~

~~*PO R=*~~

~~*POR*~~

~~*once contained the Herculanean antiquities, now removed to Naples, and since 1882 it has been a school of agriculture. There is a small harbour. The*~~

~~*population (9963 in the town in 1881, and 12,709 in the commune, which includes Addolorata) is partly engaged in the fisheries, silk-growing, and silk-weaving.*~~

~~*PORT JERVIS, a large village of the United States, in Deerpark township, Orange county, New York, situated at the intersection of the boundaries of New Jersey, New York, and Pennsylvania, at the junction of the Neversink with the Delaware. It is the terminus of the eastern divi- sion of the New York, Lake Erie, and Western Railroad, and of the Port Jervis and Monticello Railroad, and it has extensive repair-shops. The beauty of the surrounding scenery attracts summer visitors. Port Jervis was named after John B. Jervis, engineer of the Delaware and Hudson Canal, which connects the Pennsylvanian coal-fields with the tidal waters of the Hudson. In 1875 the Erie Railway bridge, the Barrett bridge, and many buildings were carried away by an icegorge. The population of the village was*~~

~~*"6377 in 1870, and 8678 in 1880 (township 11,420).*~~

~~*PORTLAND, a city and port of entry of the United States, capital of Cumberland county, Maine, lies on Casco Bay, in 43° 39' N. lat. and 70° 13' W. long. By rail it is 108 miles north-north-east of Boston and 297 south- east of Montreal. The pen- insula on which it is mainly built runs out for about 3 miles, has a breadth of about # mile, and rises in the west to 175 feet in Bramhall's Hill and in the eastto 161 in Mun- joy's Hill, which is crowned by an observatory. As seen from the harbour, the whole city has a pleasant and pic- turesque appearance, and the streets are In many parts so j "__-: ——— umbrageous with trees that Fria. 1.—Environs of Portland. Portland has obtained the sobriquet of the " Forest City." A large number of the houses are built of brick. Congress street, the principal thoroughfare, runs along the whole ridge of the peninsula, from the western promenade, which looks down over the suburbs from Bramhall's Hill to the eastern promenade, which commands the bay; it passes Lincoln Park (24 acres) and the eastern cemetery, which contains the graves of Commodore Preble and Captains Burroughs and Blythe, of Revolutionary fame. On Bram- hall's Hill is the reservoir (12,000,000 gallons) of the water company, which was established in 1867 to supply the city from Lake Sebago, whose beautiful expanse (14 miles long by 11 wide) was the favourite haunt of*~~

~~*Nathaniel Hawthorne's boyhood. The more conspicuous buildings of Portland are the city hall (1859), with a front in olive- coloured freestone, 150 feet long; the post-office (1872), constructed of Vermont white marble in the medieval Italian style; the custom-house (1872), in granite, with rich marble ornamentation in the interior; the marine hospital (1855), a large brick erection ; the Maine general hospital, 1868 ; the Roman Catholic cathedral ; the Roman Catholic episcopal palace ; and several fine churches. The Portland Society of Natural History, established in 1843 and incorporated in 1850, though it has twice lost its property by fire (1854 and 1866), has again acquired very valuable collections. The Portland institute and public library, dating from 1867, had 30,000 volumes in 1884. A medical school was founded in 1858. Portland is in the main a commercial city, with an extensive transit trade, drawing largely from Canada and the Far West. Connected with Boston by rail in 1842, and with Montreal*~~

~~*in 1853, it has now become a terminus of six different railroads ; and, since the gauge of the Grand Trunk Rail- road was altered, it can import direct from San Francisco. As the harbour (which lies along the south side of the city) is seldom closed by ice, it has been long used as the winter port for the great ocean steamers between Great Britain (Liverpool and Glasgow) and Canada, which in summer ascend the St Lawrence to Montreal and Quebec. At low water vessels drawing 22 feet and at high water vessels drawing 30 feet can come up to the wharves with*~~

~~*Fra, 2.—Plan of Portland, Me.—*~~

~~*safety in any season ; and there is secure anchorage within a mile of the shore. The dry dock is one of the deepest in the United States. The following figures show the extent of the foreign trade :—*~~

~~*Imports. Exports. Average 1876-80 $9, 368,044 $11,044,389*~~

~~*1881 11,078,612 12,476,389 1882 11,748,183 950,787 1883 10,235,991 138, 847,574*~~

~~Among the staple imports are wood, coal, potatoes (from Europe), salt, sugar and molasses, fish, earthenware, and textile manufactures; and among the staple exports to foreign countries fresh and preserved provisions of all kinds, grain, hay, cattle, wood, copper ore, tallow, shoes, potash, cotton, lumber (mainly to South America), and ice. In 1870 the total receipts of grain amounted to 1,516,875 bushels, in 1875 to 2,152,829, in 1878 to 4,492,952, and in 1883 to 4,964,158 bushels, or, adding flour, 7,543,873 bushels. The number of entrances from foreign ports in 1883 was 338 (164,711 tons), clearances for foreign ports 501 (226,420 tons); entrances in the coasting trade 479 (403,166 tons), and clearances 389 (394,500 tons). In the same year the Portland-owned vessels numbered 368 (105,642 tons); and 116 were em- ployed in the mackerel and cod fisheries. Fish-curing (cod, mackerel, and sardines), preserving meat, Indian corn, and other kinds of provisions, boot and shoe making, furniture-making, carriage-building, machinery-making, engine-building, and sugar-refining are all prosecuted on a considerable scale for the size of the town; and a large number of minor industries are also represented. In 1884 there were six national banks, with an aggregate capital of $3,250,000, and two savings banks, with deposits of $8,966,879. In 1880 the capital invested in manufactur-~~

~~ing was $4,659,375, the value of the annual production $9,569,523, and the amount of wages paid $1,547,375. Portland is divided into seven wards, and is governed by a mayor, a board of aldermen, and a common council. It is the seat of the sessions of the United States courts for the district of Maine. The assessed value of property was $30,723,936 in 1874, and $33,030,020 in 1883. The population was 3704 in 1800, 20,815 in 1850, 31,413 in 1870, and 33,810 in 1880. If the adjoining villages be included, the total is raised to between 45,000 and 50,000.~~

~~The name of Portland as applied to this city dates only from 1786; the Indians knew the place as Machigonne. The first European settlers (1632) called it Casco Neck, and after it passed to Massachusetts in 1658 it was denominated Falmouth. During the rest of the 17th century and the early years of the 18th hos- tilities on the part of the French and the Indians~~

~~*prevented the growth of the town, which by 1764, however, had increased to about 2000 inhabitants. In 1775 it was bombarded by four British vessels under Captain Mowatt, but it was rebuilt in 1783, and formally incorporated in 1786. A city charter was obtained in 1832. The great fire of 1866 swept over a third of the city and caused a loss of from $6,000,000 to $10,000,000. Portland is the birthplace of Henry W. Longfellow, N. P. Willis, Sara P. Parton ("Fanny Fern"), Erastus and James Brooks, Commodore Preble, John Neal, and Neal Dow.*~~

~~*PORTLAND, the largest city of Oregon, in the United States, the capital of Multnomah county and the seat of the United States courts for Oregon, is situated at the head of ship navigation (river craft ascend 126 miles farther) on the west bank of the Willamette, 12 miles above its junction with the Columbia river and about 120 from the ocean. It is a well-built and rapidly-growing city, laid out on a piece of level ground gradually rising from the river bank, and enclosed on the west by a semi- circle of fir-clad hills. Except in the business parts, the streets, which are remarkably well kept, are planted with maple trees ; and a park about 200 feet broad runs through nearly the whole length of the city from north to south. Besides the schools, several of which are especially note- worthy, the public buildings comprise a county court- house, a United States custom-house and post-office, three public halls, three theatres, and spacious markets. In 1883 no less than $4,039,100 were expended on building enterprises, $2,000,000 of this sum being for business and manufacturing establishments. Portland is the natural centre of the rapidly developing railway system of Oregon and the neighbouring Territories (see OREGON, vol. xvii. p. 824). It is the terminus of the Oregon Railway and Navigation Company's system, which forms the connecting link with tide water of the Northern Pacific and Union Pacific Railroads, thus making Portland virtually the Pacific coast terminus of these two transcontinental lines. Vessels drawing from 19 to 21 feet of water can load at its wharves, and, though it is still dependent on San Francisco for a large proportion of its foreign supplies, it trades directly with Great Britain, China, the Sandwich Islands, the South-American republics, &c. Wheat, flour, tinned salmon, and lumber are the principal articles of export. In 1883 the value of the exports amounted to $10,984,963 and that of the imports to $27,668,787. The manufacturing establishments—foundries, saw-mills, breweries, soap-works, boot and shoe factories, &c.—had in*~~

~~1883 an aggregate production valued at $11,423,000, or an increase on the production in 1880 of $8,521,000. The valuation of property for the purposes of taxation was $9,622,750 in 1877 and $19,397,750 in 1883. The popu- lation, which was only 2874 in 1860 and 8293 in 1870, had increased by 1880 to 17,577, or, including the suburban city of East Portland, 20,511; and it is estimated that the present (1884) total is about 40,000. A separate district is inhabited by the Chinese, who number several hundreds.~~

~~Portland was laid out in 1845, and became a city in 1851. In December 1872 it was visited by a destructive fire, and it had hardly~~

~~2x, == 67~~

~~530~~

~~recovered when, on 2d August 1873, a more disastrous conflagration destroyed about twenty blocks in one of the most crowded parts of the city, and caused a total loss of $1,345,400.~~

~~PORTLAND, Istx oF, a small island or peninsula of England, in the English Channel, 44 miles south of Weymouth, Dorsetshire, connected with the mainland by a long narrow ridge of shingle called the Chesil Bank. There is communication with Weymouth both by rail and steamer. The island is 4} miles long by 1} broad, the area being 2890 acres. The coast-line is wild and precipitous, and Portland is inaccessible from the sea on all sides except the south. The highest elevation is 490 feet. Numerous caverns have been excavated by the action of the waves, and off Portland Bill, the southern extremity of the island, is a bank called the Shambles, between which and the land there flows a dangerous current called the Race of Port- land. The substratum of the island is Kimmeridge clay, above which rest beds of sands and strata of Oolitic lime- stone, widely famed as a building stone. The extensive quarries have supplied the materials for St Paul's Cathedral and many other important public buildings in London and elsewhere, about 70,000 tons of stone being now exported annually. In the "dirt-bed" resting upon the Oolitic strata. numerous specimens of petrified wood are found, some of them of great size. The soil, though shallow, is fertile, and mutton fed on the grass has a peculiarly rich flavour. Agriculture, fishing, and especially quarrying give employment to the~~

~~*inhabitants, who are tall and handsome, and retain some singular customs, among which may be mentioned that of conveying land by "church gift" (see Reau Estate). By the construction of a break- water 24 miles in length, the building of which occupied twenty-three years, from 1849 to 1872, a harbour of refuge 2100 acres in extent has been formed, affording a safe and convenient anchorage for a very large fleet of vessels. It is defended by two forts of great strength, mounted with heavy ordnance. A convict prison, erected on Portland in 1848, has cells for 1500 prisoners.*~~

~~*Portland Castle, built by Henry VIII. in 1520, is generally occu- pied by the commander of the engineers or of the regiment stationed on theisland. On the east side of the island are the remains of a more ancient fortress, ascribed to William Rufus. The Isle of Portland is not mentioned in the time of the Romans. In 837 it was the scene of an action against the Danes, and in 1052 it was plundered by Earl Godwine. In 1643 the Parliamentary party made them- selves masters of the island and castle, but shortly afterwards these were regained by the Royalists through a clever stratagem, and not recovered again by the forces of the Parliament till 1646. The island is under the government of a local board of health. The population in 1871 was 9907, and in 1881 it was 10,061,*~~

~~*including 550 on board vessels, 861 in Verne Citadel barracks, and 1620 in the convict prison.*~~

~~*PORTLAND, Winiiam BENTINCK, FIRST Ear oF (d. 1709), was descended from an ancient and noble family of Guelderland, and became page of honour to William, prince of Orange, from which he was advanced to be gentleman of the bedchamber. In this capacity he accompanied the prince to England in 1670, and along with him was created doctor of civil law by the university of Oxford. Afterwards he became a colonel in a Dutch regiment of guards. When the prince of Orange was attacked with smallpox he, in accordance with a suggestion of the physicians, volunteered to lie in bed with him, that the heat of his body might check and expel the disease. This remarkable act of self-sacrifice secured him throughout life the special friendship of the prince, and by his prudence and ability, no less than by his devotedness, he fully justi- fied the confidence that was placed in him. In 1677 he was sent by the prince to England to solicit the hand of the princess*~~

~~*Mary, eldest daughter of James, then duke of York. At the Revolution he was the chief medium of communication between the prince and the English nobility, and in the delicate negotiations his practical shrewdness*~~

~~*PO R—*~~

~~*POR*~~

~~*greatly facilitated the arrival at a proper understanding. After superintending the arrangements in connexion with the prince's expedition, he accompanied him to England, and was made groom of the stole, privy purse, first gentle- man of the royal bedchamber, and first commissioner on the list of privy councillors. On 9th April 1689 he was created Baron Cirencester, Viscount Woodstock, and earl of Portland. With the rank of lieutenant-general he dis- tinguished himself in command of the Dutch cavalry at the battle of the Boyne in 1690, and he was also present at the battle of Landen in 1693, and at the siege of Namur in 1695. Along with marshal de Bouflers he prepared the terms of the peace of Ryswick in 1697, and shortly afterwards was appointed ambassador-extraordinary to Paris. Notwithstanding his diplomatic skill, his grave and cold manner rendered him unpopular with the English nobility, and his brusque honesty caused him to be sometimes wanting in outward respect to the king. Gradually his influence at the court was supplanted by that of the earl of Albemarle, who was more skilled in the arts of popularity ; and in 1700, notwithstanding the efforts of the king to soothe his wounded vanity, he resigned his offices and retired to his seat at Bulstrode, Bucks, where he occupied his leisure in gardening and in works of charity. For receiving grants of land in Ireland, and for his share in the partition treaty, he was impeached by parliament, but the prosecution did not succeed. He died 23d November 1709, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. PORTLAND, Witi14m Henry CAVENDISH BENTINCK, THIRD DUKE oF (1738-1809), prime minister of England, was the grandson of Henry, second earl and first duke of Portland, who was son of William, first earl. He was born 14th April 1738, and was educated at Oxford university, where he graduated M.A. in 1757. In 1761 he was elected to represent the borough of Weobly (Hereford) in parliament, but in May of the following year he was called to the Upper House on the death of his father. Under the marquis of Rockingham he was, from July 1765 to July*~~

~~*1766, lord chamberlain, and on the return of the marquis of Rockingham to power in 1782 he was made lord-lieutenant of Ireland. After the short ministry of Shelburne, succeeding the death of Rockingham, the duke of Portland was selected by Fox and PORTLAND CEMENT. See Buixprne, vol. iv. p. 459, and CEMENTS, vol. v. p. 328. PORTLAND VASE. See Grass, vol. x. p. 649. PORT LOUIS. See Mauritius, vol. xv. p. 640. PORT LYTTELTON, a municipal borough of New Zealand, formerly called Port Cooper and Port Victoria, lies on the north-west side of Banks Peninsula, on the east coast of South Island. The town, situated in 43° 36'S. lat. and 172° 44' E. long., stands on the north shore of a small bay 4 miles south-west from the heads. A fixed*~~

~~*white light, visible 30 miles in clear weather, is placed on Godley Head on the north-west side of the entrance to the bay. Harbour works, costing over £300,000, have made Port Lyttelton a first-rate commercial port. Protecting breakwaters have created a fine, accessible wet dock of about 110 acres in extent and contiguous to the town; there is ample wharf accommodation for large vessels and every appliance for loading, discharging, and storing cargo. A graving-dock, closed by a caisson, is 450 feet long, 82 feet broad between the copings and 46 feet on the floor, and has a depth of 23 feet of water on the sill. The shipping, excluding coasters, entered inwards at Port Lyttelton during 1883 amounted to 124 vessels of 83,117 tons, and 140 of 120,328 tons cleared outwards. Imports have increased in value from £629,457 during 1872 to £1,400,106 during 1883, and exports from £829,260 to £1,944,035. Port Lyttelton is surrounded by steep hills, and is connected by rail with Christchurch, 7 miles inland. There is steam communication twice a week with the chief ports of New Zealand, and weekly with Melbourne. The population in the census of 1881 was 4127. The town, which is supplied with water and gas, and with electric light lamps on the wharves and the railway bridge, has post and telegraph offices, a time observatory, a jail for long-service prisoners, a state school, a sailors' home, and an orphanage.*~~

~~*PORT MAHON, or Manon, a city and seaport in the Mediterranean, on the east coast of the Spanish island of Minorca (see BaLEaric IsLanps), lies on*~~

~~*a height near the head of an inlet of the sea 34 miles long by from 400 to 1200 yards wide, which, though of less importance than formerly, is still an admirable harbour of refuge. The city presents a fine appearance from the sea, and is solidly built of excellent stone, but contains few features of in- terest. Many of the houses bear the stamp of the English occupation, which has also left curious traces in the life of the people. Shoemaking is the principal trade, and shoes and the building stone already mentioned are the only important exports. The population was 21,976 in 1860, and 15,842 in 1877. At Cala Figuera (a cove to the south- east of the town) is a cotton-factory ; the King's Island (I. del Rey, so called as the landing-place of Alphonso III. of Aragon in 1287) contains a hospital built by the admiral of the English squadron in 1722; farther south- east on the shore lies the village of Villa Carlos or George Town (1746 inhabitants in 1877), with ruins of extensive English barracks; and at the mouth of the port, on the same side, are the remains of Fort San Felipe, which was originally erected by Charles V. and twice became the scene of the capitulation of British troops. Opposite San Felipe is the easily-defended peninsula of La Mola (256 feet high), which is occupied by extensive Spanish fortifi- cations now in course of completion. Mahon is one of the principal quarantine stations of Spain; the hospital, erected between 1798 and 1803, stands on a long tongue of land, separated from La Mola by Cala Taulera..*~~

~~*Mahon is the ancient Portus Magonis, which under the Romans was a municipium (Mun. Flaviwm Magontanwm), probably includ- ing under its authority the whole island. As the name suggests, 1t had previously been a Carthaginian settlement. The Moors had for some time been in possession when they were expelled by Don Jayme of Aragon in 1232. Barbarossa of Algiers besieged and cap- tured the city in 1535; and in 1558 it was sacked by a corsair called Piali. The English, who under James Stanhope, afterwards Earl Stanhope, seized the island in 1708, made Mahon a flourishing city, and in 1718 declared it a free port. In the year 1756 it fell into the hands of the French, through the failure of the unfortunate Admiral Byng to relieve the garrison of St Philip's (San Felipe). Restored to the English in 1762, it was in 1782 heroically but un- successfully defended by General Murray. In 1802 it was finally ceded to Spain by the treaty of Amiens. ;*~~

~~*PORTO ALEGRE, a city and seaport of Brazil, the capital of the province of Rio Grande do Sul, lies in 30° 2*~~

~~*OdL S. lat. and 51° 12' W. long, at the northern extremity of the Lagéa dos Patos (Duck Lagoon), where it receives the waters of the Jacuhi, Sino, Cahi, and Gravatahi, whose confluence opposite the city is sometimes distinguished by the name of Lagéa Viamao. Like the other towns on this lagoon, Rio Grande do Sul and Pelotas, Porto Alegre is the seat of a very considerable trade, but it is impossible to say precisely what share belongs to each of the three. (See Rio GRANDE Do Suz.) Its harbour is accessible to vessels drawing 10 to 12 feet; it is the terminus of a rail- way running by Sao Leopoldo to Neuhamburg; and it serves as a centre for the various German colonies in the province. A cathedral, a seminary, a lyceum, a provincial library, government offices, a theatre, a large hospital, and a market-house are among the public buildings. The population is about 25,000.*~~

~~*Porto Alegre was founded in 1743 by immigrants from the Azores, and was at first known as Porto dos Cazaes. In 1770 it was chosen by José Marcellino de Figuereido as his residence and obtained its present name. 'Three years later it had 5000 inhabitants. The title of "town" with the full name Sio José de Porto Alegre was bestowed in 1808, and in 1812 Sao José became the governor's residence for the comarca, which till 1821 comprised both Rio Grande do Sul and Santa Catharina. In 1822 it was raised to the rank of a city, and in 1841, as a reward for its loyalty, was distinguished with the epithets "eal y valorosa."*~~

~~*PORTO BELLO (Span., Puerto Bello), a town in the republic of Colombia and state of Panama, situated on the coast of the Caribbean Sea, about 23 miles east of Colon in 9° 32'N. lat. and 78° 38' W. long. As the name (bestowed by Columbus in 1502) implies, it possesses a fine natural harbour, the bay between Drake's Point in the north and Buenaventura Island in the south being easy of entrance and having a depth of 8 to 16 fathoms, Founded in 1584, the city rapidly grew in importance, becoming the great depét for the gold and silver from Peru, which were brought across the isthmus from Panama, and here conveyed on board the royal galleons. It is now best remembered through the unexpected success which*~~

~~*attended Admiral Vernon's attack in 1739. 'Within forty-eight hours after his appearance in the harbour," he was in possession of the place, and before he left he utterly destroyed the fortifica- tions. At that time the city contained about 10,000 inhabitants ; it now barely numbers 1000, including the Negroes, who live in the quarter known as Guinea. A few public buildings, such as the principal church and the treasury, remain as indications of former prosperity. The decline is due much less to Admiral Vernon than to the extreme unhealthiness of the situation, and the fact that trade has taken to quite other channels.*~~

~~*PORTOBELLO, a municipal burgh of Scotland, in the county of Midlothian, lies on slightly sloping ground on the south shore of the Firth of Forth, 3 miles by rail east of Edinburgh. At the west end are extensive brickfields, two potteries (working English clay), two bottle-works, and a paper-mill. Southwards and eastwards the houses are those of a residential suburb of Edinburgh and a summer watering-place. Among the more conspicuous edifices are the new municipal buildings (1878), the old town-hall (1863), a United Presbyterian church (1880), the Free church (1876-77), the Episcopal. church (1826), and the School Board schools (1876). Portobello beach is a fine reach of firm clean sands, but these have been to some extent spoiled by the vicinity of manufacturing works and sewage outlets. A marine parade was constructed in 1860 and a promenade pier (1250 feet long) in 1871. The popula- tion was 5481 in 1871 and 6794 in 1881. What used to be the separate village of Joppa is now included in Portobello.*~~

~~*Portobello occupies part of a formerly desolate piece of ground known as the Figgate Whins. The first house was built by a sailor who had served under Admiral Vernon at the capture of Porto Bello*~~

~~*in Central America in 1739; but the real beginning of the town dates from the discovery in 1765 of a bed of clay and the consequent*~~

~~*erection of brick and tile works. Reform Act of 1832-33.*~~

~~*PORT OF SPAIN. See TRinrpap.*~~

~~*PORTO MAURIZIO, a city of Italy, chief town of a province and centre of a maritime district, lies on the coast of the Ligurian Sea, 46 miles by rail east of Nice and 70 miles west of Genoa, and consists of a picturesque old town situated on the heights and a modern town of villas on the lower slopes. The principal church, designed by Gaetano Cantone, is perhaps the most notable building of its class in the whole Riviera; the roof is divided into arches, domes, and semi-domes resting on massive piers. A few remains of the old city walls may still be seen. In 1881 the population of the city was 6309 and of the com- mune 6827. About 2 miles east of Porto Maurizio is the town of Oneglia, with a fine church, S. Giovanni Battista, designed by Gaetano Amoretti, a hospital (1785), and a national penitentiary on the cell-system. Its population in 1881 was 7286, that of the commune 7433. Both Porto Maurizio and Oneglia lie on the same bay, and schemes are under discussion for uniting their harbours into one great port. At Porto Maurizio an extension is. being made (1884) in the western mole. The foreign traffic of the two ports was represented in 1883 by 154 sailing vessels and 27 steamers entering or clearing (the steamers all prefer- ring Porto Maurizio), and the coasting trade by 627 vessels. Both towns are embowered amid olive groves, and the dis- trict is famous for the quality of its oil.*~~

~~*Porto Maurizio appears as Portus Mauricit in the Antonine Itinerary. After being subject to the marquises of Susa (11th century), of Savona (12th century), and of Clavesana, it was sold by Boniface of Clavesana in 1288 to Genoa for a yearly pension ; in 1354 it became the seat of the Genoese vicar of the western Riviera, and remained in the possession of the republic till it was merged in the kingdom of Sardinia. Oneglia, formerly situated inland at the place called Castelvecchio (Old Castle), has occupied its present site from about 935. The bishops of Albenga sold it in 1298 to the Dorias of Genoa, who in their turn disposed of it in 1576 to Emanuel Philibert. In the various wars of the house of Savoy Oneglia often changed hands. In 1614 and 1649 the Spaniards and in 1623 and 1672 the Genoese obtained possession ; in 1692 it had to repulse an attack by a French squadron ; in 1744-45 it was again occupied by the Spaniards, and in 1792 bombarded and burned by*~~

~~the French. Pellegrino Amoretti, assistant secretary to Charles V., and Andrea Doria, the famous admiral, were natives of Oneglia.~~

~~PORTO RICO (Span., Puerto Rico), one of the Spanish West India Islands, lies 70 miles east of Hayti between 17° 50' and 18° 30' N. lat. and 65° 35' and 67° 10' W. long. It forms an irregular parallelogram, 108 miles long and 37 broad, and has an area of 3530 square miles, or rather less than that of Jamaica. From east to west it is traversed by a range of hills so situated that the streams flowing northward are much longer than those flowing~~

~~It was made a burgh by the~~

~~Porto Rico.~~

~~south. The highest district, however, and the highest peak—E]l Yunque (3600 feet)—are situated in the Sierra de Loquillo near the north-east corner. As the hills inter- cept the north-east trade-winds with their rain-clouds there 1s sometimes almost a superabundance of moisture in the northern lowlands, while in the south severe droughts occur and the land demands artificial irrigation, as yet carried~~

~~POR—POR~~

~~out with too little co-operation and system. The island is, however, exceptionally well watered, 1300 streams being enumerated, of which forty-seven are considerable rivers ; and its general appearance is very beautiful. Forests still cover all the higher parts of the hills, and differ from those of the other West Indian Islands mainly in the comparative absence of epiphytes. Among the noteworthy trees Baron Eggers (see Nature, 6th December 1883) mentions the Coccoloba macrophylla, or " ortegon" of the natives, which forms extensive woods in some places, chiefly near the coast, and is conspicuous by its immense yard-long purple spikes ; a beautiful Zalawma, with white odorous flowers, and yielding a timber called "'sabino" ; an unknown tree with purple flowers like those of Sexvola Plumieri; a large Heliconva ; and several tree-ferns (Cyathea Serra and an Alsophila). Besides the two staples—sugar and coffee— tobacco, cotton, rice, maize, Caladium esculentum, yams, and plantains, as well as oranges,~~

~~cocoa-nuts, and other tropical fruits, are commonly cultivated. The rice, which is the principal food of the labourers, is a mountain variety grown without flooding. On the lowland pastures, covered mainly with Hymenachne striatum, large herds of excellent cattle are reared to supply butcher-meat for St Thomas, the French islands, &c. In general Porto Rico may be described as extremely fertile, and its exports more than double in value those of Jamaica. In 1883 the prin- cipal items were—sugar and molasses, 78,482 tons, valued at £1,036,595 ; coffee, 16,801 tons, at £955,948 ; honey, 30,378 tons, at £148,148; and tobacco, 1730 tons, at £114,614. Of the tobacco a large proportion is sent to Havana to be manufactured into cigars. The total value of exports and imports has increased from £2,219,870 in 1850 to £5,118,712 in 1883. The great want of the island is still roads and bridges, though the Government has done good work in this department in recent years; the journey across the hills can only be performed on~~

~~'horseback, and even along the coast-route wheeled traffic~~

~~is at times interrupted. Gold, iron, copper, coal, and salt are all found in Porto Rico, but the last alone is worked.~~

~~The island, which was declared a province of Spain in 1870, is divided into the following seven departments :—Bayamon, near the north-east end of the island (containing the capital, San Juan Bautista, and Toa-Alta, Toa-Baja, NaranjJito, Vega-Alta, &c.), Arecibo (Arecibo, Hatillo, Camuy, Quebradillas, &c.), Aguadilla (Aguadilla, Moca, Aguada Lares or San Sebastian), Mayaguez (Maya- guez, Afiaico, San German), Ponce (Ponce, Guayanilla, Pefiuclas, Coamo), Humacao (Humacao, Naguabo, Luquillo), Guayama (Hato- Grande, Gurabo, &c.). And the island of Viequez (with the town of Isabel Segunda) is attached as an eighth department, and used as a military penal station. The total population of Porto Rico was not more than 319,000 in 1830; by 1860 it reached 583,308 ; and by 1880 754,313. At this last date 429,473 (219,418 males and 210,055 females) were white and 324,840 (162,352 males and 162,488 females) coloured. There is still plenty of room for further expan- sion. Among the'people of European origin are Spaniards, Germans, Swedes, Danes, Russians, Frenchmen, Chuetas or descendants of Moorish Jews from Majorca, and natives of the~~

~~*Canary Islands. There are also a number of Chinese. The Gibaros or small land- holders and day-labourers of the country districts are a'curious old Spanish stock largely modified by Indian blood. Till 1856 it was believed that no trace of the original inhabitants of the island remained ; archeological collections, however, have since been made and are now preserved in the Smithsonian Institution, the Ethno- logical Museum in Berlin, and elsewhere. They comprise stone axes, spear-heads, and knives, stone and clay images, and fragments of earthenware. At Gurabo, on the banks of the Rio Grande de Loiza, there is a curious rude stone monument, on the upper surface of which appear several strange designs (see L. Krug, "Ind. Alterth. in Porto Rico," in Z. fiir Ethn., Berlin, 1876).*~~

~~*Principal Towns.—San Juan Bautista or St John's (24,000 inha- bitants in town and district), the capital, lies in 18° 29' N. and 66° 7' W. on the north coast, on a small island (Morro) connected with the mainland by bridges. It isa place of some strength and con- tains a governor's palace in the old fort of Santa Catalina, a palace erected by Ponce de Leon, a cathedral, a town-house, a theatre, &c. The harbour is one of the best in the West Indies, having a com- paratively unobstructed entrance, and along the wharves a depth*~~

~~*at low water of 10 to 13 feet, and at high water 114 to143. Ponce (38,000 inhabitants in town and district) lies about 3 miles inland from the south coast. Its public buildings are frequently of brick or stone, but the private houses are of wood. It contains a town- hall (situated, like the principal church, in the main square), a public hospital (1875), and an English Episcopal church, and it is lighted with gas by an English company. Mayaguez (27,000 inhabit- ants in town and district), on the west coast, is also situated several miles inland, and is separated from its port by a river. An iron bridge, however, was constructed about 1875-76. The town has military barracks, clubs, and gasworks. The harbour, accessible only to vessels drawing less than 16 feet, is silting up, as indeed is the case with almost all the harbours of Porto Rico. Other towns are Guayama on the south coast, with its harbour at Arroya, and San Carlos de Aguadilla on the*~~

~~*west coast. The seaports are St John's, Ponce, Mayaguez, Naguabo, Fajardo, Aguadilla, and Viequez.*~~

~~*History.—Porto Rico, the Borinquen of the aborigines, was dis- covered by Columbus in November 1493. In 1510 Ponce de Leon founded the town of Caparra, soon after abandoned, and now known as Puerto Viejo, and in 1511, with more success, the city of San Juan Bautista. The native inhabitants—probably not very numer- ous, though, with their usual exaggeration, old chroniclers rate them at 600,000—were soon subdued and swept away. In 1595 the capital was sacked by Drake, and in 1598 by the duke of Cumber- land. In 1615 Baldwin Heinrich, a Dutchman, lost his life in an attack on the Castello del Mono. The attempt of the English in 1678 was equally unsuccessful, and Abercromby in 1797 had to retire after a three days' siege. In 1820 a movement was made towards a declaration of independence on the part of the Porto Ricans, but Spanish supremacy was completely re-established by 1823. The last traces of slavery were abolished in 1873 by the abrogation of the system of forced labour.*~~

~~*See Antonio de Herrera, " Descripcion de la isla de Puerto Rico, 1582," in Boletin de la Soc. Geogr. de Madrid, 1876; Bello y Espinosa, " Geschichtl., geogr., und stat. Bemerk. itiber Puerto Rico," in Zeitschr. fiir Ethnologie, 1872; Inigo Abbad, Historia .. . de la Isla de S. J. B. de Puerto Rico, Madrid, 1788, re- published by José Julian Acosta of Porto Rico.*~~

~~*PORT ROYAL, a town and naval station of Jamaica, occupies the outer end of a narrow strip of land called the * Palisades," which, projecting westward for about 9 miles, forms the natural breakwater of the noble bay on which Kingston, the present capital of the island, is built. Asa town Port Royal (though in the 17th century it was re- puted the finest in the West Indies) is now a wretched place of 1205 inhabitants (1881), with narrow and ex- tremely dirty streets, and contains no buildings of note except a hospital (200 patients) and the spacious admiralty house, which is surrounded by beautiful gardens; but as a naval station it is still of very considerable importance, has well-equipped machine-shops, and is defended by a number of forts and batteries partly of quite modern erection.*~~

~~*The first great blow struck at the prosperity of Port Royal was the earthquake of 1692, which swallowed up whole streets and forts and sunk a*~~

~~*considerable part of the site into the sea, where remains of buildings are still visible under water in clear weather. In 1703 the whole town, except the royal forts and magazines, was reduced to ashes ; on 22d August 1722 most of the houses were swept into the sea by a hurricane; in 1815 another conflagration proved nearly as destructive as the first; and in 1880 another hurricane did grievous damage.*~~

~~*PORT ROYAL, a celebrated Cistercian abbey, occupied a low and marshy site in the thickly-wooded valley of the Yvette, at what is now known as Les Hameaux near Marly, about 8 miles to the south-west of Versailles. It was founded in 1204 by Mathilde de Garlande, wife of Matthieu de Montmorenci-Marli, during his absence on the fourth crusade, and in its early years it received a variety of papal privileges, including (1223) that of affording a retreat to lay persons who desired to withdraw from the world for a season without binding themselves by permanent vows. Apart from the famous reforms begun here in 1608 by Jacqueline Marie ARNAULD (g.v.), the Mére Angélique, the history of Port Royal presents little of general interest until about ten years after the establishment (1626) of the sister house in Paris, when the community fully came under the influence of Duvergier de Hauranne (see vol. vii. p. 567), abbé of St Cyran, the friend of Jansen, and leader NS Ribak ee ee ee*~~

~~*1 A detailed account of their manners, translated from Abbad by Mr Bidwell, will be found in the Consular Reports, 1880.*~~

~~*of the anti-Jesuit movement in France. The religious views of St Cyran spread rapidly in Port Royal de Paris, and among the members and connexions of the Arnauld family; and it was under his influence that in 1637 Antoine Le Maitre (1608-1658), a nephew of the Mére Angélique, resolved to abandon his brilliant prospects as an advocate and seek a life of ascetic retirement. He found a lodging for himself at Port Royal des Champs (as the mother house came to be called for distinction's sake), which since the departure of the nuns in 1626 had been untenanted. In the following year he was joined in his religious retreat by his younger brothers Simon de Séri- court (1611-1658), who had served in the army, and Louis Isaac (1613-1684), better known in the world of letters by his assumed*~~

~~*name of De Sacy. They were at various times joined by others until in 1646 the "solitaries of Port Royal," apart from merely occasional visitors, had risen to the number of twelve. From almost the beginning of his sojourn Le Maitre, carrying out the ideas of his imprisoned master St Cyran, devoted a considerable part of his time to teaching ; the number of pupils and also of teachers gradually increased until in 1646 and following years the "Petites Ecoles," as they were modestly called, around Port Royal les Champs and in Paris, although de- stined to be short-lived, attained a great and widespread success (compare vol. vii. p.675). Of the regular teaching staff probably the most distinguished were Claude Lance- lot (1615-1695)? and Pierre Nicoxz (q.v.); of the pupils it is enough to mention TILLEMONT (q.v.) and RACINE (¢.2.). In 1648 the Mére Angélique with some of the nuns re- turned from Paris to Port Royal des Champs, which in the interval had been considerably enlarged, while the neigh- bourhood had been rendered more salubrious by the labours of the solitaries, who now removed to the farmhouse of Les Granges on the height above. In the same year Antoine ARNAULD (q.v.), the apologist of the Augustinus, came into residence, and thenceforward the "gentlemen of Port Royal" became closely identified in the public mind with the Jansenist cause. The open struggle, which began with the publication in 1653 of the bull of Pope Innocent X. condemning the five propositions (see JANSENISM), came to a disastrous crisis in 1656, when Arnauld was expelled the Sorbonne, and he, as well as Sacy, Fontaine, and Nicole, had to go into hiding. The publication of the Provincial Letters in the course of the same year did not tend to soothe the Jesuits, but the timely " miracle of the Holy Thorn" (24th May 1656; see vol. xviii. p. 335) helped to postpone somewhat the evil days that were coming on the Port Royalists. But only for a time; for in 1661 the young and ardently orthodox Louis XIV. caused the Petites Ecoles to be broken up and the postulants and novices of the two religious houses to be dispersed. For continued contumacy both houses were in 1664 laid under interdict, which was only removed when the " peace of the church" was established by Clement IX. in 1669. In the same year, however, Port Royal de Paris was separated from the parent house with a grant of one-third of the revenues, and placed under Jesuit management. The nuns of the abbey of Port Royal des Champs were allowed to take in children as pupils, but not to receive any accessions to their own number, and the Petites Ecoles were not resumed. The "peace," such as it was, was again destroyed by the*~~

~~bull of Clement XI. in 1705, and in 1708, the nuns proving inflexible, a papal bull was granted for the final suppression of Port Royal des Champs and the transference of the whole property to Port Royal de Paris. The dispersion of the aged sisters took place in the following year; the~~

~~2 Author of Nouvelle Méthode pour apprendre la Langue Grecque (1655), Nouvelle Méthode pour apprendre la Langue Latine (1656), Grammaire générale et raisonnée (1660), and other educational works.~~

~~buildings were levelled with the ground in 1710; and in | 1711 the bodies (to the number, it is said, of nearly 3000) that lay buried within the desecrated precincts were disin- terred and removed to other places. Port Royal de Paris continued to subsist in obscurity until 1790.~~

~~See Sainte-Beuve, Port Royal (3 vols., 1842-48 ; 4th ed., 6 vols., 1878), an exhaustive work, by which all the earlier histories have been superseded.~~

~~PORT SAID, a town and seaport of Lower Egypt, which owes its existence to the Suez Canal (1859-69), and was named after Sa'id Pasha, patron of the enterprise. It lies on the west side of the canal, on the low narrow, treeless, and desolate strip of land which separates the Mediter- ranean from Lake Menzaleh (see plate XXXVI., vol. iv.) ; the supply of fresh water brought from the sweet-water canal at Ismailia by a conduit is barely sufficient for the wants of the town, which is regularly laid out and has some streets of substantial houses. The population rose from 12,332 in 1880 to 16,560 in 1882. Nearly half of this number reside in a miserable native suburb about 500 yards to the west of the town proper. The British subjects (405) are nearly all Maltese. Port Said, having no direct means of communication with the interior, is essentially a coaling station for steamers, and is entirely dependent on the canal trade. The steamers from Alex- andria to the Syrian ports call here, and there is a daily steamboat to Ismailia. The outer harbour is formed by the terminal piers of the canal, and the inner harbour comprises three sheltered basins,—the commercial dock, the arsenal dock, and the Sherif dock. The third is flanked by buildings originally erected by Prince Henry of the Netherlands asa depét for Dutch trade. Besides a Catholic and a Greek church, the town contains~~

~~a hospital and five schools, one of which is maintained by the Capuchin friars, and another by the freemasons.~~

~~PORT ST MARY. See PuErro pE Santa Marta.~~

~~PORTSMOUTH, a municipal and parliamentary bor- ough, seaport, and naval station of Hamp- . shire, England, consists of an aggregate of towns situated in the south-western corner of Portsea Island, opposite the Isle of Wight, 18 miles south by east of South- ampton and 74 south-west of London by the London and South-Western Railway. For the general position of Portsmouth, see y= plate VII. vol. xi. The original town is \~ not now nearly so populous as the suburbs \,. comprised in the general name of Portsea (including Portsea proper) on the north and west, Landport on the north, and Southsea on the east. Portsmouth proper is the barrack and garrison town; at Port- sea is situated the great naval dockyard ;~~

~~Ry \~~

~~\(emme Forton~~

~~4 = Fortan i St Rathea~~

~~Landport is occupied chiefly by the houses ie aa of artisans; and Southsea, as possessing i om facilities for bathing, is resided in by the | 3]) common~~

~~5~~

~~Portsmouth, which is now continuous with | [feria the Commercial Road from the Landport [@”“=——* side, forms a spacious and busy central thoroughfare 2 miles in length, with nu- merous fine buildings, including the new and old post-office, the new offices of the Bie Waterworks Company and Gas Company, |oyicer | “y the Central or Town Railway station, the |e”! “7 new Government House with its pleasure-~~

~~grounds, the quaint old building occu-~~

~~pied by the new free library, and the grammar- school, which was founded in 1732, though the new building was opened in 1879. Since the demolition~~

~~*of the ancient*~~

~~*wealthier classes. The old HIgh Street of (eS*~~

~~*PO R—*~~

~~*! — \ pBarracks a) PA DD Sy 3*~~

~~*EAN*~~

~~=~~

~~*POR*~~

~~*ramparts and unwholesome moats a few years ago there have sprung up a handsome people's park and recreation grounds for the naval and military forces, and improve- ments are still being vigorously carried forward. Much of the Government work has been done by convict labour, notably at the north-east of Landport, where 1300 convicts have been engaged in the formation of a new island (Whale Tsland), on which gunnery experiments are carried out in connexion with the training-ships of the gunnery school. The towns constitute one of the strongest fortresses of the kingdom, being protected by a chain of detached forts, the outer line of which on the land side north of the harbour extends along the Portsdown Ridge, the inner line protect- ing the approach by Stokes Bay and Gosport on the west side, while eastwards are the HIlsea lines, within which are also the Royal Artillery and cavalry barracks of HIlsea and the powder-magazine of Tipner. On the south side the forts are built in the sea, each being provided with an Artesian well sunk into the seabed, from which a plentiful supply of fresh water can at all times be obtained. The coast to the eastward is lined by the forts of "Cumberland" and " Southsea Castle," which complete the circle. There are 8 barracks—5 in Portsmouth, 1 in Southsea, and 2 in Portsea—and at Eastney are the extensive buildings which constitute the headquarters of the Royal Marine Artillery; on the Gosport side of the harbour are those of the Ports- mouth division of the Royal Marines. In the church of St Thomas a Becket (12th cent.) the chancel and transepts form part of the original structure ; the nave and tower were erected in 1698. The garrison chapel near the grand parade, in the Early English style, formed*~~

~~*originally a portion of the hospital of St Nicholas (1212), and was restored in 1866. Among more recent buildings may be mentioned the new jail and county lunatic asylum, both situated on the outskirts. In the centre of the town and adjoining the people's park are the new cathedral and buildings of the Roman Catholic schools, the new Pres-*~~

~~*\ LEZ*~~

~~*Gosport.) 9 \ GOSPORT ®\) Sms*~~

~~*Scale of half a Mile*~~

~~*Plan of Portsmouth, England.*~~

~~*byterian church, the seamen and marines orphan schools, the offices of the board of guardians and the borough overseers. At Portsea a new railway station has been*~~

~~*POR—POR*~~

~~*built on piles driven into the harbour bed. Besides these, amongst other public buildings may be mentioned the town-hall, the county court, and the theatre. At Portsea is Aria College, opened in 1874 for the training of Jewish ministers. In the same town is situated the convict prison, which superseded the hulks in 1852. Landport has a freemasons' hall (1879-80), and a people's park of eight acres opened in 1878. Southsea, which is only of recent origin, possesses assembly-rooms and baths, a pier (1879), and a fine esplanade 2 miles in length. Southsea Castle, built by HIenry VIII., was taken by the Parlia- mentary forces in 1642 and partly dismantled, but it has now been refortified. The creek which formerly separated Portsmouth and Portsea was filled up in 1876.*~~

~~*The port of Portsmouth extends eastwards 9 miles to Emsworth, and westwards 5 miles to HIll HIead at the entrance to Southampton Water. About 3 miles to the south of the harbour is the well-known anchorage of Spit- head, protected by the Isle of Wight. The harbour, one of the best in the kingdom, stretches 4 miles inwards to the north-west of the town, with an entrance 220 yards in breadth, permitting access to vessels of the largest*~~

~~tonnage at low tide. There is an anchorage within the basin at low tide of 380 acres, and a portion of the harbour is per- manently occupied by dismantled vessels and the reserved fleet of the navy. There is a graving-dock built by the cor- poration, with 18 feet of water on the blocks, and a patent slip. Extending along the eastern shore are the ordnance gun wharf between Portsmouth and Portsea and to the north of it the great naval Government dockyard, which has lately been much enlarged (see Dockyarp, vol. vii. 313). At Gosport (¢.v.) are the royal Clarence victualling yard and the Haslar hospital. Portsmouth has a consider- able trade in coal, timber, fruits, and agricultural produce. In 1883 the total number of vessels that entered the port from British and foreign possessions and coastwise was 2094 of 210,210 tons burden, the number that cleared 2079 of 216,926 tons. The borough of Portsmouth is governed by a mayor, fourteen aldermen, and forty-two councillors. The area of the borough is 4320 acres, with a population in 1871 of 113,569, and in 1881 of 127,989. Of the latter number 120,022 were included in Portsea.~~

~~To the north of Portsmouth harbour is Porchester Castle, a ruined Norman fortress occupying the site of the Portus Magnus of the Romans. The Saxon Chronicle mentions the arrival of Port and his two sons on the coast in 501, but the derivation of the name Portsmouth is too evident to require a mythical invention to ex- plain it. Portsmouth, though a small town soon after the Norman invasion, did not possess a church till 1140. It received its first charter from Richard I. In the beginning of the 13th century it had grown to be a naval station of some importance, and for the accommodation of the king's galleys the docks were enclosed by a strong wall. A large portion of the town was burned by the French in 1372. Great additions were made to the fortifications by Edward IV., and the works were continued by later sovereigns, especially Elizabeth and James II. Its importance as a naval dockyard commences about 1544. The English fleet assembled at Portsmouth in 1545 before the naval engagement with the French off Spithead. In 1628 Villiers, duke of Buckingham, wheu on the oint of embarking at Portsmouth with the army for the relief of Dasolle was killed by Felton. The town was taken by the Par- liamentary forces in 1642. In 1662 the nuptials of Charles II. with Catherine of Braganza were celebrated at Portsmouth in the chapel of the garrison. In 1782 the "'~~

~~*Royal George," with Admiral Kem- penfeldt on board, having been careened to stop a leak, wert down in the harbour. About 1792 Portsea began to be built on the common to the north of the town. Among eminent persons con- nected with the town mention may be made of Charles Dickens, Jonas Hanway, Sir Isambard Brunel, Sir F. Malden.*~~

~~*Allen, History of Portsmouth, 1817 ; Saunders, Annals of Portsmouth, 1878.*~~

~~*PORTSMOUTH, a city and port of entry of the United States, one of the two shire-towns of Rockingham county, New Hampshire, and alternately with Concord the seat of the sessions of the United States courts for the district of New Hampshire, lies on a peninsula on the right bank*~~

~~*5395*~~

~~*of the Piscataqua, 3 miles from its mouth, in 43° 4' N. lat. and 70° 45' W. long. By rail it is 57 miles north- north-east of Boston. Quiet and old-fashioned beyond most of the New England cities, with shaded streets and many quaint antique houses, survivals from colonial times, Portsmouth is a favourite summer resort. Not- withstanding the excellence of its harbour—which is from 35 to 75 feet deep, safe, free from ice at all seasons, and capable of containing 2000 vessels—it has very little foreign trade. There are cotton-mills (Kearsarge), brew- eries, boot and shoe factories, and some other industrial establishments in the city; and shipbuilding, which is the principal industry, has long been extensively prose- cuted. The United States navy yard, though situated on Continental or Navy Island, on the north side of the river, in the township of Kittery (Maine), is generally known as Portsmouth yard. It contains a fine balance dry dock, 350 feet by 105. Among the more conspicuous buildings in Portsmouth are the old church of St John, the athen- zum (15,000 volumes), and the custom-house. There is a public library of 8000 volumes. At Little Harbour, 2 miles distant, is Governor Wentworth's mansion, dating from 1750. The entrance to the harbour is defended by earthworks at Jaffrey's Point and Gerrish's Island. The population was 9738 in 1850, 9211 in 1870, and 9690 in*~~

~~*1880.*~~

~~Settled in 1623 under the Laconia Company, Strawberry Bank (as it was first called) was named Portsmouth in 16538, and incor- porated as a city in 1849. It was the capital of the colony and State of New Hampshire till 1807, when that rank was bestowed on Concord. The "Ranger," afterwards commanded by Paul Jones, and the first ship to carry the stars and stripes, was built at Ports- mouth for the American Congress in 1777. The New Hampshire Gazette, started at Portsmouth in 1756, is the oldest of all the existing newspapers of the United States, and the Portsmouth Journal, established in 1793, is also still published. T. B. Aldrich, J. T. Fields, Eliza B. Lee, and B. P. Shillaber ("Mrs Partington"') are natives of the city.~~

~~PORTSMOUTH, a city of the United States, capital of Scioto county, Ohio, lies at the confluence of the Scioto with the Ohio, and is the southern terminus of the Ohio and Erie Canal, and of a branch line of the Cincinnati, Washington, and Baltimore Railroad (Hamden to Ports- mouth, 56 miles), as well as an important station on the Scioto Valley Railway. As the entrepdt for the rich mineral regions of southern Ohio and north-eastern Ken- tucky, and for the productive valley of the Scioto, Ports- mouth has a large and growing trade both by rail and river; and it also contains iron-furnaces, rolling-mills, foundries, saw-mills, planing-mills, breweries, flour- mills, shoe-factories, hub and spoke factories, &c. Among the public buildings are an opera-house and a masonic temple. The charitable institutions include a hospital, a children's home, and a home for destitute aged women. 'The city has also two libraries, water-works, and tramways. The population was 6268 in 1860, 10,592 in 1870, and 11,321 in 1880. Portsmouth was laid out in 1803, and the charter of the city dates from 1814.~~

~~PORTSMOUTH, a city of the United States, capital of Norfolk county, Virginia, lies on the west bank of Elizabeth river, opposite Norfolk. It is the eastern terminus of the Seaboard and Roanoke Railroad (part of a great passenger route between Boston and New Orleans), has one of the best harbours on the Atlantic coast, is the seat of the United States Gosport navy yard (with a dry dock built of granite at a cost of $974,536, and a large naval hospital), and exports cotton, lumber, pig-iron, and early vegetables. The population was 9496 in 1860, 11,390 in 1880, and 14,870 in 1884, Portsmouth was founded in 1752. On 20th April 1861 the navy yard—then~~

~~*employ- ing 1000 men—was destroyed by fire, the loss being esti- mated at several million dollars.*~~

~~*Bound- aries.*~~

~~*Coasts.*~~

~~*Capes.*~~

~~*Islands.*~~

~~*Mount- ains.*~~

~~*Rivers.*~~

~~*536*~~

~~*PO RIT WGe & PART I.—GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS. Plate IV. eae kingdom of Portugal, which is geographically a |*~~

~~*province of the Iberian Peninsula on its west coast, is bounded on the N. by the Spanish province of Galicia, on the E. by the Spanish provinces of Leon, Estremadura, and Andalusia, and on the S. and W. by the Atlantic Ocean. It lies between 36° 56' and 42° 10' N. lat. and 6° 15' and 9° 30' W. long. It is 362 miles in length by 140 in breadth, and contained by the latest (1878) com- putation! 34,4194 square miles. Its coast-line is nearly 500 miles in length, and only one province, Tras-os-Montes, is not washed by the sea. On the extreme north the coast is low, but farther south it becomes rocky and steep for a few miles near Povoa de Varzim. From that town to Cape Carboeiro the coast of Beira is flat, sandy, and marshy,*~~

~~*closely resembling the French Landes; after another stretch of dunes it again becomes steep and rugged from Cape Roca to Cape Espichel, and along the northern side of the Bay of Setubal, and then remains low throughout the rest of the coast-line of Estremadura (Portuguese). In Alemtejo the coast is low and in places rocky and full of shallows ; and, although at Cape St Vincent the cliffs are steep and inaccessible, the general coast-line of Algarves, the southernmost province of Portugal, is*~~

~~*low and sandy. The chief capes, which form the only cliffs on the other- wise flat and sandy coast, are Cape Mondego, Cape Car- boeiro, Cape Roca, Cape Espichel, Cape Sines, Cape St Vincent, and Cape Santa Maria, and the chief bays are those of Figueira, Ericeira, Setubal, and Sines. The only islands off the coast are the dangerous Farilhées and the Berlengas off Cape Carboeiro, which would be uninhabited but for an old castle, now used as a prison, on the largest island of the latter group.*~~

~~*The mountain-systems of Portugal can only be adequately treated under Spain (g.v.), as they are in every instance continuations to the west or south-west of the great Spanish ranges. Thus the mountains of the Cantabrian Pyrenees in Galicia spread themselves over the two northern provinces of Portugal, Entre Minho e Douro and Tras-os- Montes, in various short ranges, of which the most im- portant are the Serra do Gerez (4815 feet) and the Serra de Marao (4665 feet), the latter extending down the left bank of the Tameja and sheltering the wine-districts of Tras-os-Montes from the east winds. In Beira the granite Serra da Estrella (6540 feet), the loftiest range in Por- tugal, forms part of the system of the Guadarramas and a continuation of the Sierra de Gata, and terminates in the Serra de Lousio (3940 feet), while the chalk mountains in the south of the province, such as the Monte Junto near Santarem (2185 feet) and the Serra de Cintra, which runs into the sea at Cape Roca, belong to a different geological period, The chalk mountains of the Serra de Arrabida (1537 feet) to the south of the Tagus correspond with the Serra de Cintra, and form Cape Espichel; but the other low ranges to the south of the river in Alemtejo, such as the Serra de San Mamede (3363 feet) and the Serra de Ossa (2130 feet), belong to the system of the mountains of Toledo. The continuation of the Sierra Morefia, which separates Algarves from the rest of Portugal, forms various small ranges and isolated mountains, such as the Serra do Malhao (1886 feet) and Monte Figo, and then closes with the Serra de Monchique (2963 feet) and runs into the sea in the steep cliffs of Cape St Vincent.*~~

~~*The river-system of Portugal is also merely a portion of that of Spain. Its three most important rivers, the*~~

~~*1 Strelbitsky, Superficie de ? Europe, 1882. aa*~~

~~Douro, the Tagus, and the Guadiana, all rise in Spain and flow through that country; but they all enter the sea in Portugal, and at the mouths of the Douro and the Tagus are situated the two most important cities of the kingdom, Oporto and Lisbon. The chief Portuguese tributaries of the Douro are the Tameja, the Tua, and the Sabor on the north, and the Agueda, the Coa, and the Paiva on the south ; of the Tagus, the Elja, the Ponsul, and the Zezere on the north, and the Niza, the Sorraya, and the Canha on the south ; while into the Guadiana, on its right or Port- uguese bank, flow the Caia, the Oeiras, and the Vascao. The other important rivers are the Minho, which forms the boundary of Portugal and Galicia in the lower part of its course, the Limia, the Cavado, the Vouga, and the Mondego to the north of the Tagus, and the Sado, the Mira, the Odelouca, and the Silves to the south of it. Important as are the rivers of Portugal, it has no inland lakes worthy of mention, though it abounds in hot and other medicinal springs, such as the Caldas de Monchique ; and beautiful little mountain-lakes are numerous on the tops of the Serra da Estrella.~~

~~The climate of Portugal is particularly equable and Climate.~~

~~temperate, and its salubrious qualities were recognized by the English doctors of the 18th century, who used to send many patients to winter there, including Fielding the novelist ; and, though Portugal has been superseded as a _ winter resort by the Riviera and Algiers, there are signs that it may again become a European health-resort of the first importance. To prove the temperate nature of the climate it is not enough to state that the average mean temperatures of Lisbon, Coimbra, and Oporto are 61°-3, 61°°1, and 60°:2 Fahr. respectively ; more instruct- ive is it to mention that the mean average temperature for the month of January is only 50°:2 at both Coimbra and Oporto, and for July only 69°-4 and 70°:3 for the same two cities, showing a difference between summer and winter of about 20°. This equability of temperature is partly caused by the very heavy rainfall which is pre- cipitated on Portugal as one of the most westerly king- doms of Europe and one most exposed to the Atlantic, and which has reached as much as 16 feet in a year; but it is noticeable that this heavy rainfall comes down in gradual showers spread over the whole year, and not in the torrents of the tropics. This great humidity has its drawbacks as well as its advantages, for, though it makes the soil rich, it produces also heavy fogs,~~

~~which render the Portuguese coast exceedingly dangerous to ships. This charming climate and equability of temperature are not, however, universal in Portugal; they are to be enjoyed mainly in the highlands of Beira, Estremadura, and in the northern provinces, especially at Cintra and Coimbra. In the deep valleys, even of those favoured provinces where the mountains keep off the cool winds, it is ex- cessively hot in summer; while on the summits of the mountains snow lies for many months, and it is often extraordinarily cold. Even in Lisbon itself the tempera- ture, though its mean is only the same as that of Coimbra, varies from 38°°1 in January to 90°°6 Fahr. in July, a difference of more than 50°. In Alemtejo the climate is very unfavourable, and, though the heat is not so great as in Algarves, the country presents a far more deserted and African appearance, while in winter, when heavy rains swell the Tagus and make it overflow its banks, damp unhealthy swamps are left, which breed malaria. Not- withstanding that Algarves is hotter than Alemtejo, and~~

~~the climate there very sultry owing to the sea-breezes being intercepted by the Serra de Monchique and other mountains, a profuse vegetation takes away much of the tropical effect, so that it is a far shadier and more agree- able province than Alemtejo. Although such a rainy country, Portugal is very rarely visited by thunderstorms ; but, on the other hand, shocks of earthquake are frequently felt, and recall the great earthquake of Lisbon in 1755.~~

~~The geology, flora, and fauna of Portugal are essentially the same as those of Spain, and will be studied under SPAIN (g.v.).~~

~~Population. — The population of Portugal, according to the census of 1st January 1878, was 4,160,315, and in 1881 it was calculated to be 4,306,554, or 125 persons to the square mile. The following is a table of the popula- tions of the different provinces and districts according to the census of 1878 and the official estimate of 1881 :—~~

~~Population. Population. Districts, Provinces.~~

~~1878. 1881. 1878. 1881.~~

~~Vianna do Castello} 201,390 } 211,539 1D ee 319.464 | 336,248 jHntre Minhoe Douro 982,735 1,014,768 PROTO sce. s oc 6- 461,881 | 466,981 Villa Real…..... 224,628 | 225,090 Braganza |... 168,651 | 171,586 Tras-Os-Montes ….| 393,279 | 396,676 Aveiro fs 257,049 | 270,266 eel Beira | Byala ee — oimbra 292,037 | 307,426 : — Garda va (| 228/494 | 234,368 Bei Ae 1,323,134 {1,377,432 Castello \ a { 173,983 | 178,164 ! Branco vy Leiria 199,645 Samtarem … 2.1… ; 227,943 > Estremadura …....) 911,922| 946,472 (UIsbOn) Wisae ss occ 498,059 | 518,884 Bort Alegre ..—.. 101,126 | 105,247 {DiGiEe eeenccece 06,858 | 112,735 } /Alemtejo…..... 350,103 | 367,169 SC) wie' cain de cee 142,119 | 149,187 THATO! sect swieoes 199,142 | 204,037 |Algarves ……..... 199,142 | 204,037 Onto Aes sass ce eo sivie sere eee 4,160,315 |4,306,554 EROS Wis csi nee eee 259,800} 269,401 Bede aes oe cn eee 130,584 | 132,293 Pio tale ee 4,550,699 /4,708,178~~

~~According to the census of 1878 the following towns had a population of more than 10,000 each :—Lisbon, 246,343; Oporto, 105,838; Braga, 19,755; Setubal, 14,798; Loulé, 14,448; Coimbra, 13,369; Evora, 13,046; Tavira, 11,459; Covilha, 10,809; Elvas, 10,471; Povda de Varzim, 10,365 ; Ovar, 10,022.~~

~~The ethnological composition of the population is most mixed: in the two northern provinces the population is essentially Galician, but farther south the mixture be- comes obvious ; not only did the conquering Portuguese largely intermarry with the Arabs, but in the places where they exterminated them they replaced them by colonies of crusaders of all nations, chiefly French, English, Dutch, and Frisian, who have left their mark on the features and character of the nation, and they also largely intermarried with the Jews. No Jews were so wealthy or so cultivated as those of Portugal, who, though for many centuries keeping strictly apart from the Christians, yet after their forced conversion or expulsion by King Emmanuel largely intermarried, especially with the people of Lisbon. Farther south an African physiognomy appears, derived from the thousands of negro slaves imported to till Alemtejo and Algarves, from the days of Dom Henry till the decline of the Portuguese power.~~

~~*Emigration is thinning the population, or rather keeping it from rapidly increasing; and the following are the results of the statistics published by the Royal Geographical Society of Lisbon for 1872-81. There emigrated in the ten years between 1871 and 1881 from Entre Minho e Douro 51,531 persons, from Tras-os-Montes 7799, from Beira 31,487, from Estremadura 12,769, from Alemtejo 42, from Algarves 225, from the Azores 22,794, from Madeira 6410, making a grand total of 188,007. Of these emigrants 129,549 were bound for America, the whole number in all probability for the Brazils,*~~

~~*1 The Azores and Madeira are regarded as colonies and as an integral part of the country.*~~

~~*POR TU ea tL*~~

~~*Da7*~~

~~*3348 for the Portuguese colonies in Africa, and 95 for Asia. It will be noticed that the majority of these emigrants come from the wealthy northern provinces and the sober population of Entre Minho e Douro, while the number from the fever-stricken Alemtejo is practically nil.*~~

~~*Colonies.—See AZORES, CAPE VERD IsLANDs, GOA, MACAO, Colonies,*~~

~~*Mapetra, MozaMBiQue, and Cotony (vol. vi. p. 161).*~~

~~*Commerce.—The commerce of Portugal has not rapidly, though Com- it has steadily, increased during the last thirty years; the chief merce.*~~

~~*countries with which it trades are, in order of value, England and her colonies, Brazil, the United States, France, and Spain ; but it is hardly fair to mention commerce with Spain, because the large amount of smuggling which takes place makes it impossible to estimate the real amount of trade between the two countries. The following table of exports and imports in nineteen classes, compiled by Mr George Brackenbury, British consul at Lisbon, dated 24th April 1884, is published in the Consular Reports for 1884, and contains the latest information on Portuguese trade and commerce. It will be noticed that the chief imports are bread- stuffs, metals,*~~

~~cottons, and minerals, and the chief exports fer- mented liquors, live stock (which is nearly all sent to England), and timber.~~

~~Imports. Exports. Tariff Classes. 1882, 1883. 182. | 1883, To Mhivevanimnals :<. cs... 60... £228,3292) £221,908 | £605,916 | £640,950 2. Animal products..... 423,204 392,101 138,397 105,798 SeBLISHOLICS isizy.,.<.)200 2 sae ae 345,432 325,304 141,160 152,104 4) Wool and Wait <..5.....- 495,441 514,166 59,058 | 58,544 Jem S UKMe Voretebte trys as cacarsite 202,551 212,818 13,638 6,554 GMECobton ashe) neve, nee 850,363 | 870,001 19,743 15,498 7. Flax and similar materials 169,986 169,944 5,654 5,940 SRPRIGMDEr Aay..-aeteiee « «.c.c-e.ce ee 230,514 236,093 602,116 585,272 9! Bread-stuffs .....2.-..0 1,694,163 | 1,272,540 93,466 74,452 10. Colonial produce (so called)) 752,145 684,921 30,393 20,511 11. Divers vegetable substances} 166,183 171,956 401,222 336,704 WOM Metala Wen. 2, ee a 1,057,334 | 1,359,768 | 616,189 | 148,569 NSS MINeTAIS Soe oe s:5 32.013 493,736 525,770 348,823 | 341,072 14. Fermented liquors 44,031 27,848 | 2,217,511 | 2,479,218 15. Glass and ceramic ware…. 81,016 64,728 4,353 3,854 16. Paper, and manufactures in} 102,120 103,496 16,473 11,551 which it is used 17. Chemical products …..... 76,125 73,658 89,445 98,029 18. Produce and compositions) 133,844 117,699 7,693 7,852 of various kinds 19. Manufactures of various; 537,234 468,459 89,762 70,114 materials | | Total….'|£8,083,751 |£7,813,178 |£5,501,012 |£5, 162,586~~

~~Agriculture.—The state of agriculture in Portugal is still deplor- Agricul- able ; the wealth and energy of the country have been thrown into ture.~~

~~the wine trade, and the production and cultivation of cereals have been so much neglected that, in spite of its being eminently adapted for such cultivation, nearly all its cereals are imported from the United States, to the value in 1883 of over £1,000,000. The wine production, on which Portugal has so long depended, was the work of the Methuen treaty of 17038, for it was not until after that treaty that the barren rocks of the Alto Douro were covered with vines. But now, though the returns show slight alteration, there must soon be a great change. The phylloxera has utterly destroyed thousands of vineyards in Entre Minho e Douro and in Beira. The labours of the phylloxera commission .seem unable to check its ravages ;* the~~

~~commissioners themselves are hindered by the people,—an inspector having been even shot at in the district of Riguengo.* The reason why no great alteration is to be perceived in the returns is that the great Oporto shippers have such vast stocks that it may be years before the want comes to be felt. To remedy the failure, which can be only a matter of time, tobacco-growing has been proposed (see Consul Crawfurd's Report), and will probably be tried in place of vine-culture. Portugal has lately become a great exporter of live stock to England, as also of large quantities of fruits and early vegetables, including oranges (especially from Condeixa), lemons, limes, peaches (from Amarante), and the celebrated Elvas plums. The difference in the character of the inhabitants of dif- ferent provinces is well shown by the fact that in the north the peasant not only tends his vines but in many instances rears silk- worms and even possesses olive trees, while in Alemtejo he is content to live upon chestnuts and to take care of his pigs and goats.~~

~~Manufactures.—Nothing proves more decidedly the agricultural Manu- character of the Portuguese than the repeated failures to establish factures.~~

~~manufactures among them. This has often been ascribed to the provision respecting the importation of English goods in the Methuen treaty ; but not all the efforts of Pombal or of the modern protectionist cabinets have been able to establish any important manufactures. The following table, extracted from Consul Bracken- bury's Report, gives a list of the chief establishments—for manu-~~

~~2 In the Consular Reports 1 milrei is taken to be equivalent to 4s, 54d. 3 See Consul Crawfurd's Report, Oporto, 1884.~~

~~4 Mr Baring's Report. XIX. — 68~~

~~Finance,~~

~~factories they can hardly be called—in Portugal, with the number of workmen and the value of the products.~~

~~*ee Opera- Daily Value of*~~

~~*Fa ae aety tives. Wages. Products.*~~

~~*arpentering\.. - 2.50.50 50656- $3 5,109 £256 £165,006 WaXcWROUUCESH s1.5 05. s1006 = <1 21 39 2 12,584 (ORs WEIS po 9o sogodaoooccc 43 2,045 97 72,079 STI Cig Mc cters cisicvciev selcc sic 51 6,748 459 63,584 MORK WORKSio: «<< oicicle:s s1c)+ o\sleicrc 22 1,612 92 224,672 WinsWIES Wee cagecpcopugl base 93 823 44 323,489 DIS LIMcLICS cic. ccc ccc esses 79 364 Bi 101,924 Food products …….+— Bi 2,367 116 517,392 Mic SULIPAy ga ecccennceupeeen se 171 5,215 325 439,669 Flour, &c., mills ……. 62 3,182 iy 125,467 Paper factories ……- 31 1,364 69 93,293 Firewood-making …….— 18 206 7 6,977 Soap-works ……-----+ce-: 13 83 6 74,204 Tobacco-worksS ……..+++ 22 4,021 252 1,249,236 Cotton, linen, &c., weaving .. 97 39,597 330 Se ie2 Woollen-weaving ……... 161 8,964 736 864,518 Silke weavin@) osc lee eel 24 854 53 51,393 Typographical establishments 66 591 42 82,444 (CHIMIONE Bo cakecadbeoodeecade 134 5,328 150 348,073 Glasssw@rks) =: .—\:.cjcaeis seo. & 903 28 37,417 Various industries ……. 97 1,503 22 117,485 Totals… 1150 90,918 | £3129 £6,073,658*~~

~~*Some of these establishments ought to be more successful, for the glass-works of Leiria, the lace-works of Vianna and Peniche, and the potteries of Aveiro had an immense reputation in the 18th century, which they have now lost, as the table clearly shows. Portugal possesses plenty of mineral wealth, though not so much as Spain, but from want of capital and enterprise such resources as exist are neglected. A very few of the chief mines may be noted—the lead-mines of Coimbra, one of antimony near Oporto, and above all the very important copper-mines of San Domingos near Beja, worked by an English company, which contributed thirteen-sixteenths of the total exports of minerals in the six months between January and June 1883, Of greater importance are the fisheries,—the fishermen both of Beira and Algarves being famous for their courage; and large quantities of sardines and preserved tunny fish are exported to Italy and France, and an even larger quantity of oysters to England.*~~

~~*Finance.—The revenue of Portugal has for many years ceased to balance its expenditure, and the deficit has had to be met by borrowing, but it is only fair to remark that vigorous attempts have been made to reduce the expenditure of recent years. The estimated revenue for 1883-84 and 1884-85 was classified under six heads.*~~

~~*1883-1884. 1884-1885.*~~

~~*Din eet ba xespercce(oesearicteieieisieiele renee £1,387,790 £1,395,753 SATS Gach ae copacaosedcoumccodccoc 763,777 721,778 Tndimeet taxes. 2 cece ccs ie oc. 0sesiners ee 8,643,811 3,587,136 Additional 6 per cent. (since 27th April 240,889 234,889*~~

~~*1882)*~~

~~*Domains and sundries ……- 655,573 801,449 FRO PBYMREMGS secs serelsere 2.6 sie: celetelecceciacsis 238,069 244,788 Total ordinary revenue…. £6,929,909 £6,985,793*~~

~~*A few of the sub-heads which help to swell these various classes of revenue are worth detailing.*~~

~~*1883-1884. 1884-1885.*~~

~~*Direct taxes—*~~

~~*Land tax*~~

~~*Industrial tax*~~

~~*Income tax*~~

~~*Inhabited house tax*~~

~~*Dividends tax*~~

~~*Bank tax*~~

~~*Titles and concessions tax*~~

~~*Servants and carriage tax Indirect taxes—*~~

~~*Import duties*~~

~~*Tobacco duties*~~

~~*Bread-stuffs*~~

~~*Octroi at Lisbon …*~~

~~***Real de agua”*~~

~~*Additional customs*~~

~~*Salt tax*~~

~~*Exports*~~

~~*Special 2 per cent. on export of wine Domains and sundries—*~~

~~*Railways*~~

~~*Post-office and telegraphs*~~

~~*Military exemption tax*~~

~~*Suppressed religious establishments Repayments—*~~

~~*Interest on stock held by the*~~

~~*treasury*~~

~~*£700,444*~~

~~*243,222 88,322 $8,778 66,889 35,489 40,667 23,333*~~

~~*1,637,555 703,555 302,667 297,778 220,000 128,444*~~

~~*60,000 52,844 48,889*~~

~~£700,444~~

~~250,000 89,044 86,556 67,667 36,791 41,222 93,111~~

~~1,647,112 718,467 287,222 311,333 214,222 145,496~~

~~25,778 48,089 46,222~~

~~274,678 151,671 64,444~~

~~SP tuL~~

~~281,756 177,778 60,000 33,333~~

~~197,978 197,978~~

~~POR TU Ga &~~

~~[STATISTICS.~~

~~The last item deserves particular notice, as it proves the confused manner in which Portuguese financiers keep their accounts ; they prefer to pay into their treasury interest on bonds held by it, instead of extinguishing that amount of the national debt.~~

~~Against this revenue must be set the expenditure (which always exceeds it), causing a deficit of £194,141 on the ordinary balance- sheet, and of £1,558,142 when the extraordinary expenditure is taken into account, in 1884-85. The chief items in the estimates for that year compared with the estimates for 1883-84 are—~~

~~1883-1854. | 1884-1885.~~

~~Public debt (of which interest on debt took up| £2,901,850 | £2,909,712 £2,882,769 in 1883-84 and £2,882,784 in 1884-85)~~

~~*THAIS DAY OE shi RR Ao eo onoa soe pocuconoebesmeds 1,329,208 | 1,463,955 Ministryyotgubennbenl Ore.. «1. -¢-1 1.01 se sere eels eine 482,565 491,787 MGI? CLIT SIBSR ARBs so qao5 Coenaennaagauanceaaaa 142,455 149,233 GPITS TNA t We eae co oa eS ONeced © JURE CnDeencton don 1,019,821 | 1,079,683 Ministry of the marine and colonies ……. 379,120 372,528 Ministry of foreign MAIS)... eece es eens ess oe 70,065 73,327 Ministry, Gispublienwoerks) <2: co. - (estes ess: o>. 618,405 639,709*~~

~~*£6,943,489 | £7,179,984*~~

~~*Under the head of the "ministry of finance" there was an esti- mated sum of £600,367 in 1883-84 and of £672,202 in 1884-85 for interest of debt, which in any other system of finance would have been put down to the head of "public debt." The extraordinary expenditure was estimated to amount to £1,364,000 in 1884-85, the chief items of which were for the ministry of public works, chiefly spent on the fortifications of Lisbon, and for the minister of the colonies, for in only two colonies—Cape Verd Islands and Macao—do the colonial revenues meet their expenditure, the mother-country having to afford substantial help to her African colonies*~~

~~*every year. The estimated balance-sheet for 1884-85 was— Ordinary expendi tunescs <./2)1s:ciss eclsis el elelelsleieinedslerersieleiee ioe £7,179,934 ROVE. oy oases ave 6015 ee aieleinis ois ¢ cove nie cians] sievaie chevsoeteierseisieyervierete 6,985,793 Dene Meets coe eee £194,141*~~

~~*It is very difficult to give any exact estimate of the extent of the public debt of Portugal owing to the financial confusions noted above, but on 30th June 1883 it was estimated at £96,175,692,*~~

~~*namely— Intemalidebt, News PCRiGeNtS: 6… ssc cc es siecaes esc £52,369,291 ISvoOME LGB shaqooocsdbonnoussopeucse054 by.ne be DDUd de od 43,372,530 Old debt, to be converted ……..2. afeaeieaisalevs ier otarere (ete 433,871*~~

~~*Ti gedl es baoacgaan spoon ne on poL ees Wie oer but of this amount the treasury holds about £8,000, 000.*~~

~~*Government.—The government of Portugal is an, hereditary and Govern- constitutional monarchy, exercised under the charter of 1826, as ment.*~~

~~*modified in 1852 and 1878, under which the king is charged with the executive and shares the power of making laws with two chambers. His civil list amounts to £144,000 a year, and he is advised in all matters of administration and assisted in nominating peers by a council of state appointed for life, but depends for advice in legislative and executive matters on a cabinet of seven members selected from the chambers by a premier, summoned by the king. The House of Peers consists of 150 members nominated by the king for life, and contains many of the most eminent professors and authors, as well as men of wealth, and additions may be made to its number by the king on the advice of the premier, with the consent of the council of state. All the members of the House of Peers do not possess titles, nor do all titled persons belong to the House of Peers; legislation and the titular and hereditary aristo- cracy are kept quite apart. The House of Deputies consists of 173 members, elected directly by all male citizens of twenty-five years of age, either paying in direct taxes 4s. 6d. a year, or deriving an annual income of 22s. from real estate, while all graduates, priests, officers, and certified teachers have votes without further qualifica- tion. The president of the chamber is selected by the king out of five elected candidates, and the deputies are paid. The Azores and Madeira elect members to the House at Lisbon. For adininis- trative purposes Portugal is divided into seventeen districts, for judicial purposes into twenty-six districts or "comarcas," with appeal courts at Lisbon and Oporto, and a supreme court at Lis- bon, and for military purposes into four divisions. The Roman Catholic is the state religion, but others are tolerated, and the power of the priests has been greatly checked by the wholesale suppression of monasteries in 1834. The church in Portugal is governed by a patriarch at Lisbon, two archbishops at Braga and Evora, and fourteen bishops, of whom the most important is the bishop of Oporto. For purposes of local government the districts are under the rule of civil governors, who have much the same powers as prefects in France, while in the 292 "concelhos," or administrative councils, there arc elected*~~

~~*councillors, and in the 3960 "freguezias" or parishes the villagers elect a magistrate, who has the same powers as an English justice of the peace.*~~

~~*Army and Navy.—Under a decree dated 19th May 1884 the Army Portuguese army has been reorganized. The effective war strength andnavy.*~~

~~*is to be maintained at 120,000 men. The term of service is for 12*~~

~~*Educa- tion.*~~

~~*Early history.*~~

~~*HISTORY.|*~~

~~*years, of which 3 are to be with the colours, 5 in the first reserve, and 4 in the second reserve. The force is divided into 36 regiments of infantry, 10 regiments of cavalry, 4 regiments, 1 brigade, and 4 companies of artillery, and 1 regiment of engineers. -In 1883, under the old regulations, the army contained 41 general officers ; its effective strength in time of peace was 33,231 men with 1643 officers, and on a war footing 75,336 men with 2688 officers. For colonial service there is one regiment of 1148 soldiers and 50 officers divided into 3 battalions, of which one is always stationed at Goa and another at Macao. The officers are trained in the military academy at Lisbon, and there is an asylum for the sons of soldiers. The navy is no longer the power it used to be, but, though small, it is equipped in modern fashion and furnished by the naval arsenal at Lisbon. It consisted in 1884 of 30 steam-ships, of which one was an armoured corvette mounting 7 guns, and 5 others cor- vettes mounting 46 guns, aud of 14 sailing ships, of which one was a frigate mounting 19 guns. Its personnel consisted of 283 officers and 3235 sailors.*~~

~~*Public Instruction.—The public instruction of Portugal is regu- lated by the law of 1844, which enacted that all children should be bound to attend a primary school, if there was one within a mile, from the age of seven to fifteen, under penalty to the pareuts of a fine and deprivation of civil rights. Under this law there were in Portugal, in 1874, 2649 primary schools with 122,004 pupils of both sexes. Secondary education is not neglected, and under the same law of 1844 17 lycées have been established in the seven-*~~

~~*teen continental districts, and from them it is possible for a pupil to enter either the university of Coimbra, which during the present century has recovered some of its ancient lustre, or the special schools. These special schools are very ably conducted, and modern Portuguese policy gives, as we have seen, a higher status to teachers*~~

~~*PORTUG 2 L*~~

~~*539*~~

~~*and professors of all grades than they obtain in most other countries. The most important of these schools are the polytechnic school at Lisbon, the polytechnic academy at Oporto, the medical schools and industrial institutes in both these cities, the institute-general of agriculture, the royal and marine observatories, and the academy of fine arts—all four at Lisbon. The valuable public libraries of Lisbon, Evora, Villa Real, and Braga, supported by the state, and in addition the free library at Oporto, ought also to be mentioned, as well as the archives at the Torre del Tombo, with which a school of paleeography and diplomacy has lately been connected.*~~

~~*Public Works.—On 1st January 1884 there were 1245 miles of Public railway open (944) and in course of construction (301), also 50 miles works, of tramways were open, and 2900 miles of telegraph were in operation; and every recent loan has been raised for the purpose of extending these important public works. The chief lines of rail- way open are those from Lisbon to Valencia de Alcantara, and thence by Talavera to Madrid, and from Lisbon to Oporto, Tua, Nine, and Braga, while the line to Faro, which is to connect Algarves with the capital, has been already extended beyond Beja as far as Casevel. There is also an alternative line to Madrid open through Elvas and Badajoz, which connects Lisbon with the Andalusian system and gives a short route to Seville, Cadiz, and Malaga. As to smaller lines opening up Beira, the line from Figueira da Foz to Villar Formosa through Celorico and Guarda is completed, and one is projected parallel to the Lisbon-Oporto line from Villar Formosa to Alcantara on the south, which is to be connected with Oporto through Tua towards the west. The telegraph system is already very complete, and the last touch has been put to it by laying down a submarine cable from Lisbon to Rio de Janeiro,*~~

~~*binding the mother-country still more closely with what was once her greatest colony. (H. M. 8.)*~~

~~*PART IJ.—HISTORY.*~~

~~*It has been stated that geographically the kingdom of Portugal is an integral part of the Iberian Peninsula; the only reason why it has retained its independence, while the other medizval states of that peninsula have merged into the kingdom of Spain, is to be found in its history. When Philip H. of Spain annexed Portugal it was a century too late for it to coalesce with Spain. It had then produced Vasco de Gama and Affonso de Albuquerque, and its language had been developed from a Romance dialect into a literary language by Camoens and Sa de Miranda. Conscious of its national history, it broke away again from Spain in 1640, and under the close alliance of England maintained its separate and national existence during the 18th century. A union with Spain might have been possible, however, during the first half of the present century had not a generation of historians and poets arisen, who, by recalling the great days of the Portu- guese monarchy, have made it impossible for Portugal ever again to lose the consciousness of her national existence.*~~

~~*The history of Portugal really begins with the gift of the fief of the Terra Portucalensis or the county of Porto Cale to Count Henry of Burgundy in 1094; for any attempt to identify the kingdom of Portugal and the Portuguese people with Lusitania and the Lusitanians is utterly with- out foundation. With the rest of the Iberian Peninsula, Portugal was colonized by the Phcenicians and conquered by the Carthaginians ; and the Roman province of Lusi- tania, whether according to the division of Iberia into three provinces under Augustus or into five under Hadrian, in no way coincided with the historical limits of the kingdom of Portugal. In common with the rest of the Peninsula, it was overrun by the Vandals, Alans, and Visigoths, and eventually conquered by the Arabs in the 8th century. It was not until the 15th century that an attempt was made by Garcia de Menezes to identify Lusitania with Portugal. Under the influence of the Renaissance, Bernardo de Brito insisted on the identity, and claimed Viriathus as a Portu- guese hero. Other writers of the same epoch delighted in calling*~~

~~*Portugal by the classical name of "Lusitania," and Camoens, by the very title of his great epic, Os Lusiadas, has immortalized the appellation.*~~

~~*For two centuries Portugal remained subject to the*~~

~~*Omayyad caliphs, and under their wise rule the old Roman colonize and municipia, such as Lisbon, Lamego, Viseu, and Oporto, maintained their Roman self-govern- ment and increased in wealth and importance. Towards the close of the 10th century, as the Omayyad caliphate grew weaker, the Christian princes of Visigothic descent who dwelt in the mountains of the Asturias began to grow more audacious in their attacks on the declining power, and in 997 Bermudo IJI., king of Galicia, won back the first portion of modern Portugal from the Mohammedans by seizing Oporto and occupying the province now known as Entre Minho e Douro. In the beginning of the 11th century the Omayyad caliphate finally broke up, and inde- pendent emirs established themselves in every large city, against whom the Christian princes waged incessant and successful war. In 1055 Ferdinand the Great, king of Leon, Castile, and Galicia, invaded Beira ; in 1057 he took Lamego and Viseu, and in 1064 Coimbra; and his son Garcia, who succeeded him as king of Galicia in 1065, maintained Nuno Mendes, count of Oporto, and Sesnando, a renegade Arab wazir, count of Coimbra, as feudal vassals of his court. In 1073 Alphonso VI., the second son of Ferdinand the Great, united once more his father's three kingdoms, and for a time rivalled his father's successes, until a fresh outburst of Mohammedan fanaticism ended in the rise of the Almoravide dynasty, and the defeat of the Christian king at Zalaca in 1086 by Yusuf ibn Tesh- ufin. To resist this revival of the Mohammedan power, Alphonso VI. summoned the chivalry of Christendom to his aid, and among the knights who came to his assistance were Counts Raymond and Henry of Burgundy. In the days of his success Alphonso had compelled Motawakkil of Badajoz to cede to him both Lisbon and Santarem, but the fortune of war had changed, and Stir, the general of the Almoravide caliph Yusuf, retook both cities. Al- phonso felt the need of a valiant warrior on his Galician frontier, and in 1094 he combined the fiefs of Coimbra and Oporto into one great county and conferred it upon Henry of Burgundy with the hand of his illegitimate daughter Theresa, while to Raymond he gave Galicia and his legitimate daughter and heiress Urraca.*~~

~~*Count Henry of Burgundy, the first count of Portugal,*~~

~~*540*~~

~~*Henry of was the second son of Henry, third son of Robert, first*~~

~~*Bur- gundy.*~~

~~*Affonso Hen- riques.*~~

~~*duke of Burgundy, and was in every way a typical knight of his century, a brave restless warrior, and a crusader ; but when once firmly established in his county he thought much more about his chances of succeeding his father-in- law as king than of trying to carve a kingdom for him- self out of the dominions of the Mohammedan caliphs. When, therefore, Alphonso VI. died in 1109 and left his thrones to his daughter Urraca, and nothing to Henry, the Burgundian at once invaded Leon. For five years the Christian princes, Henry of Burgundy, Alphonso Raimundes (the son of Count Raymond), Alphonso of Aragon, and Queen Urraca, fought together, while Sir was consolidating the Almoravide power, until Count Henry died suddenly at Astorga in 1112, leaving his wife Theresa to rule the county of Portugal during the minority of his infant son, Affonso Henriques.*~~

~~*Theresa, who ruled at Guimaraens during her son's minority, was a beautiful and accomplished woman, who devoted all her energies to building up Affonso's dominions into an independent state, and under her rule, while the Christian states of Spain were torn by civil wars, the Portuguese nobles were prevented from interfering, and began to recognize Portugal as their country, and to cease from calling themselves Galicians. Her regency was a stormy one in spite of all her efforts to maintain peace: in 1116 she was persuaded by Gelmires, bishop of Santiago, to try and extend her frontier towards the north, and seized Tuy and Orense ; in 1117 she was besieged by the Moham- medans in Coimbra; and in 1121 her sister Urraca took her prisoner, but, through the interposition of Bishop Gelmires and Mauricio Burdino, archbishop of Braga, peace was quickly made between them. For the next few years a curious parallelism appears between the careers of the two sisters: Urraca showered favours on her lover, Pedro de Lara, until her young son Alphonso Raimundes, or*~~

~~*Alphonso VII. of Leon and Castile, with the help of Bishop Gelmires, revolted against her; and with equal blindness Theresa favoured her lover, Fernando Peres de Trava, whom she made governor of the cities of Oporto and Coimbra, until she was detested by the boy Affonso Henriques, and Paio, archbishop of Braga. They did not, however, break out into open revolt until after a successful invasion by Alphonso VII. of Leon and Castile, who forced Theresa to recognize his supremacy in 1127. Her son refused to ratify her submission, and rose in rebellion with Archbishop Paio, Sueiro Mendes, Sancho Nunes, and others ;*~~

~~*and at the battle of San Mamede on 14th June 1128 Theresa*~~

~~*was taken prisoner, and then wandered about in Galicia with her lover until her death in 1130.*~~

~~*Affonso Henriques, who at the age of seventeen assumed the government, was one of the heroes of the Middle Ages ; he succeeded to the rule of the county of Portugal when it was still regarded as a fief of Galicia, and after nearly sixty years' incessant fighting he bequeathed to his son a powerful little kingdom, whose independence was unques- tioned, and whose fame was spread abroad throughout Christendom by the reports of the victories of its first king over the Mohammedans. The four wars of independence which Affonso Henriques waged against Alphonso VII. lasted more than twelve years, and were fought out on the Galician frontier with varying success, until the question of Portuguese independence was peaceably established and confirmed by the valour of the Portuguese knights, who overcame those of Castile in the famous tournament of Valdevez, and Affonso Henriques assumed the title of the king of Portugal. The independence of Portugal from Galicia being thus finally achieved, Affonso Henriques abandoned the idea of extending his dominions towards the north, and devoted the next twenty-five years of his*~~

~~*ror TU<«¢ 22*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*life to one long crusade against the Mohammedans, and to extending his frontier towards the south. The state of the Mohammedan power in Spain*~~

~~*was particularly favour- able to his enterprise. The wave of Moslem fanaticism which had created the Almoravide dynasty had exhausted itself, and independent chiefs had established themselves again in the different provinces, while in Africa 'Abd al- Mumen, the successor of the Almohade mahdi, was de- stroying the power of the Almoravides by means of yet another wave of fanaticism. As early as 1135 Affonso had built the castle of Leiria to protect his capital, Coimbra, but for some years he left the task of attacking the Mohammedans to the Knights Templars and Knights Hospitallers, who made incessant incursions from their headquarters at Soure and Thomar. But the castle of Leiria had soon fallen; and in 1139, after the flower of Mohammedan Spain had crossed over to Africa under Teshufin, the last Almoravide caliph, to fight the Almo hades, and when Alphonso VII. was making his second incursion into the heart of Andalusia, Affonso Henriques collected his whole army and invaded the province of the Kasr ibn Abi Danes. Advancing to the south of Beja, he met the united forces of all the neighbouring cities under a wali named Ismar, and completely routed him at Orik or Ourique on 25th July. This battle has been sur- rounded with a mass of legends: it was solemnly asserted two hundred years afterwards that five kings and 200,000 Mohammedans were utterly defeated, and that after the battle Affonso was proclaimed king by his soldiers. Such legends hardly need contradiction ; the victory was a great one, but it was obtained over provincial emirs; and it was not by victories over Mohammedans but by struggles with his Christian cousin Alphonso VII. that independ- ence was to be won. Of still later invention was the fiction of the cortes of Lamego, and the passing of the fundamental laws of the monarchy, on which Vertot and other writers have expended so much eloquence. Of great significance with regard to the legendary splendour of the victory is the fact that in the very next year Ismar or Omar, the emir who was defeated at Ourique, was able to take the field again, when he once more seized the castle of Leiria, and destroyed it. In 1143 a regular peace was*~~

~~*concluded between Alphonso VII. and Affonso Henriques Portugal*~~

~~*at Zamora through the mediation of the cardinal Guy de 4 Vico, when Affonso Henriques was finally recognized as king, and promised to be a vassal of the pope, and to pay him four ounces of gold annually. For many*~~

~~subsequent years the history of Portugal is merely a narration of wars against the Mohammedans. Abu Zakaria, wazir of San- tarem and Mohammedan leader in the Belatha (a district including the banks of the Tagus and the cities of Lisbon, Santarem, and Cintra), defeated the Templars at Soure in 1144, but in 1147 Santarem itself was surprised and taken on 15th March. Of still more importance was the capture of Lisbon in the same year. A number of German crusaders from the Rhine and Flanders under Count Arnold of Aerschot and Christian Ghistell, and of English crusaders under their constables, Hervey Glanvill, Simon of Dover, Andrew of London, and Saher d'Arcellis, put in at Oporto on their way to Palestine, and were persuaded by the bishop to commence their holy work by assisting in the siege of Lisbon. With their help the ancient city, which claimed to have been founded by Ulysses, and which had three times—in 792, in 851, and in 1093—been taken by the Christians and held for a short time, was finally captured on 24th October by Affonso Henriques, who also persuaded many of the crusaders to settle and form colonies in Portugal. The series of conquests con- tinued: Cintra, Palmella, and Almada quickly surrendered, and at last, after a failure in 1152, the great city of Alcdcer~~

~~king- om.~~

~~Sancho IJ.~~

~~HISTORY. |~~

~~do Sal was taken in 1158. In 1161 Affonso Henriques met with his first important check. The Almohade caliphs, having at last triumphed in Africa, determined to extend their power to Spain, and on the arrival of their troops the Portuguese king was defeated. Then the character of the war changed. A disputed succession weakened the Almohade caliphate, and independent bands of "'salteadors," who were little better than brigands or free-lances, began to establish themselves in the cities of Alemtejo ; such was Giraldo Sempavor, who took Evora in 1166.~~

~~Affonso Henriques became ambitious to win the great city of Badajoz, although by a treaty signed at Cella Nova with Alphonso VII. he had undertaken to confine his con- quests to the right bank of the Guadiana. No doubt it was owing to the death of his cousin and the separation of the~~

~~kingdoms of Castile and Leon that he believed he could effect his purpose. But his son-in-law, Ferdinand of Leon, would not allow such a breach of treaty, and determined to oppose it; and Affonso Henriques made the fatal mistake of again mixing himself up in Spanish affairs by invading Galicia in 1167. At last, in 1169, he formed the siege of Badajoz; Ferdinand at once invested the besieger in his camp, and the Portuguese hero was severely wounded and taken prisoner. To gain his freedom he was compelled to surrender his conquests in Galicia, and Ferdinand nobly inflicted no harsher terms ; nevertheless the old king never recovered from the effect of his wound, and the remaining exploits of his reign were the work of his son Dom Sancho. By 1169 the internal dissensions of the Mohammedans were over, and the new Almohade caliph, Yusuf Abu Ya'kub, crossed over to Spain with a large army. He speedily reconquered all the Portuguese acquisitions in Alemtejo, and in 1171, after a vain attempt to take Santarem, made a truce for seven years with Affonso Henriques, who in the following year admitted his son Sancho as king with himself, and left him all the duties of war. Dom Sancho proved himself the worthy son of his father, and for twelve years Alemtejo was one great battle-ground. The greatest struggle was in 1184, when Yusuf brought over fresh forces from Africa, and again besieged Santarem ; but pestilence defended the city, and on 4th July Sancho utterly defeated the fever-stricken army of the besiegers, Yusuf himself being mortally wounded in the battle. This triumph worthily closed the reign of the great crusader king, Affonso Henriques, who died on 6th December 1185.~~

~~The fame of Dom Sancho I., "the Povoador " or " City- builder," rests more on his internal administration than on his early exploits as a soldier. But before he had time to obey his inclinations he had to continue a war of life and death with the Mohammedans. In 1189 he conquered Algarves and took Silves, the capital of the province, with the help of some English, Dutch, Danish, and Frisian crusaders ; but the conquest was not final, for in 1192 Yusuf Abu Ya'kub reconquered not only Algarves but the whole province of Alemtejo, including Alcdcer do Sal, failing only before Santarem. Finding the Mohammedans under their great Almohade caliph too dangerous to attack again, Dom Sancho made peace with them, and for some years, until 1200, concerned himself with the affairs of Spain, waging continuous war against Alphonso IX. of Leon without any particular result.~~

~~His internal adminis- tration was far more important. During his father's reign there had been nothing but fighting, and, except in Lisbon and Oporto, where a large trade for that period had arisen, and in the northern provinces of Entre Minho e Douro and Tras-os-Montes, where agriculture survived, the scanty population lived chiefly on the spoils taken in their yearly incursions on the Mohammedans. Sancho therefore both~~

~~encouraged the growth of towns and fostered agriculture. The Portuguese towns had almost without exception pre- served their old Roman local self-government, which had been taken advantage of by the Mohammedans; and Sancho wisely followed their example, while he encouraged the increase of population by wise laws, and furthered immigration, especially from the crusaders of England, France, and the north of Europe. The country districts he treated on a different principle. He granted large tracts of land to noblemen and cities and the military orders, on condition that they should be cultivated and occupied. The later years of Sancho's reign were filled with disputes with Pope Innocent III. This struggle bears a curious resemblance to the quarrels of Henry II. with the pope, which had raged a few years earlier in England. Dom Sancho had insisted on priests accom- panying their flocks to battle, and also on making them amenable to the secular courts. This seemed monstrous to Innocent, who sent legate after legate to demand Sancho's submission and the payment of the tribute to the Holy See. But the king had in his chancellor Julido the first Portuguese student who studied the revival of Roman law at Bologna, and who had imbibed broad views there as to the papal power, and he in Sancho's name asserted the king's full right even to dispose of the estates of the church in his kingdom if he liked. This general quarrel was complicated by the behaviour of Martinho Rodrigues, bishop of Oporto, who was hated alike by his chapter, the king, and the people of his city, and who, after being besieged in his palace for five months, escaped to Rome, and claimed the pope's protection in 1209. Sancho was now in weak health and in no mood to con- tinue the struggle, so in 1210 he yielded to all the de- mands of the pope and the bishops; then, after giving large estates to his sons and~~

~~*daughters, he retired to the convent of Alcobaca, where he died in 1211, leaving a reputation as a warrior and a statesman only second to that of his father.*~~

~~*The reign of Affonso II. "the Fat" is chiefly important Affonso in the constitutional history of Portugal, and for one!*~~

~~*memorable feat of arms, the recapture of Alcdcer do Sal. On his father's death, Affonso, probably by the advice of the chancellor Juliaéo, summoned a cortes or parliament, consisting of the bishops, "'fidalgoes," and '"'ricos homens" of the realm, which is the first on record, as that at Lamego in 1143 is apocryphal. The king assented to the final compact which his father had made with the church, and propounded a law of mortmain, probably drawn up. by Juliaéo, by which the church could receive no more legacies of land, because it could not perform military service. Affonso himself proved to be no warrior, but he was very tenacious of the wealth and power of the crown, and refused to hand over to his brothers the large legacies which Dom Sancho had left to them ; and it was not until after a long civil war, in which Alphonso IX. of Leon joined, that he gave his sisters their legacies, at the same time taking care that they all became nuns, while his brothers went into exile, and never obtained their lands at all. Though Affonso himself was no soldier, the Portuguese infantry showed how free men could fight at the battle of Navas de Tolosa in 1212 ; and his ministers, bishops, and captains took advantage of the weakness of the Almohades after this great defeat to reconquer Alemtejo, and in 1217 they retook Alcdcer do Sal, and defeated the walis of Andalusia with the help of a body of crusaders. In this expedition the king took no part; he was more bent upon filling lus treasury, which soon brought him again into conflict with the church. HIs chancellor, Gongalo Mendes, inherited the policy of Julido, and encouraged him to lay hands on the lands of the archbishop of Braga, Estevaéo Soares,*~~

~~*Sancho II.*~~

~~*Affonso Ill.*~~

~~*whereupon Pope Honorius III. excommunicated the king and laid an interdict upon the kingdom until Affonso should make compensation and should expel his chancellor from court. This Affonso refused to do, and he was still under the interdict of the church when he died in 1223.*~~

~~*Sancho II. was only thirteen when he succeeded his father, and, as might have been expected during a minority, the turbulent nobility and intriguing bishops tried to undo the late king's labours to consolidate the royal power. The old statesmen of Affonso II.—Gongalo Mendes, the chan- cellor, Pedro Annes, the "mordomo mor" or lord steward, and Vicente, dean of Lisbon—saw that it was necessary to get the interdict removed if there was to be peace during the king's minority, and so they prudently retired into the background. Estevdo Soares, the archbishop of Braga, then became the most powerful man in the kingdom, and, with Abril Peres, the new mordomo mor, he agreed with Alphonso IX. of Leon that the Portuguese should attack Elvas at the same time that the Spaniards laid siege to Badajoz. The siege of Elvas was completely successful ; the young king greatly distinguished himself, and in the following year, 1227, felt strong enough to reinstate his father's old friends in office, making Vicente chancellor, Pedro Annes once more mordomo mor, and Martim Annes '"Calferes mor" (standard-bearer). This change of power greatly disconcerted the bishops and clergy, who began to intrigue for the overthrow of the young king, but he wisely continued to occupy himself with fighting the Mohammedans, knowing well that the pope would not dare to attack a crusading monarch. He endeavoured to imitate closely his cousin St Louis of France, and his wise policy secured him the protection of the pope, who in 1228 sent John of Abbeville as legate, with full powers to re- buke the Portuguese bishops. The legate made the chan- cellor, Vicente, bishop of Guarda, and highly commended the favour shown by the king to the friars, who had been introduced into Portugal by his aunts, and to the military orders. But in 1237 Dom Sancho II. had another serious quarrel with the church, and an interdict was laid on the kingdom; but prompt submission to Pope Gregory IX. secured immediate pardon. Meantime his old and wise councillors had mostly died, and his court was thronged with gay young knights and troubadours. He again attacked the Mohammedans, and invaded Algarves ; and in 1239 he took Mertola and Ayamonte, in 1240 Cacello, and in 1244 Tavira. Unfortunately in the interval between 1240 and 1244 the king fell in*~~

~~*love with a Castilian lady, Donna Mencia Lopes de Haro, the widow of Alvares Peres de Castro, whom he probably married. This union was most distasteful to the Portuguese people, and furnished the bishops with a pretext for forming a party and over- throwing him, provided they could find a leader and obtain the assistance of the pope. In 1245 the king's brother, Affonso, who had settled at the court of his aunt, Blanche of Castile, queen-dowager of France and mother of Louis IX., and who had there married the heiress of Boulogne, offered himself as a leader to the Portuguese malcontents. The pope at once issued a bull, deposing Sancho, and Jodo Egas, archbishop of Braga, Tiburcio, bishop of Coimbra, and Pedro Salvadores, bishop of Oporto, went to Paris and offered Affonso of Boulogne the crown of Portugal on cer- tain conditions, which he accepted and swore to obey. In 1246 Affonso arrived at Lisbon, and solemnly declared him- self the defender of the kingdom; and for two years a civil war raged, which ended in Dom Sancho's retiring to Toledo, where he died on 8th January 1248.*~~

~~*With such a commencement it might have been expected that the reign of Affonso III. would have been a period of civil war and internal dissension, or at least of complete submission to the church and the feudal nobility, but, on*~~

~~*P@rR TUG & tt*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*the contrary, it was from a constitutional point of view the most important of all the early reigns, and also that in which Portugal concluded its warfare with the Moham- medans and attained to its European limits. In short, Affonso IIT. was essentially a politic king, if not a high- principled man. On his brother's death he exchanged his title of " visitador" or "curador" of the kingdom for that of king, and at once prepared to complete the conquest of Algarves. Aided by his uncle Dom Pedro and the Knights Hospitallers under Gongalo Peres Magro, he speedily re- duced the remainder of the province. This rapid extension of the Portuguese territory was by no means agreeable to Alphonso X. "the Wise," king of Leon and Castile; but, after a short war, Affonso IIT. consented to marry Alphonso's illegitimate daughter, Donna Beatrice de Gusman, and to hold Algarves in*~~

~~usufruct only. He then turned his at- tention to his own position in Portugal, and determined to bridle the power of the bishops, in spite of his oath at Paris. Perceiving that this could only be done with the help of the mass of the people, he summoned a cortes at Leiria in 1254, to which representatives of the cities were elected and sat with the nobles and higher clergy. With the help of this cortes—one of great importance in the constitutional history of Portugal—he dared the interdict laid upon the kingdom for having married again (the daughter of Alphonso the Wise) whilst his first wife (Matilda, countess of Boulogne) was alive. Finally, how- ever, on the petition of the archbishops and bishops of Portugal, Pope Urban IV. legalized the disputed marriage in 1262 and legitiniated his elder son, Dom Diniz, while in 1263 Alphonso X. made over to him the full sovereignty of Algarves. On the other hand, the people made use of their power, and in a full cortes at Coimbra in 1261 the representatives of the cities boldly denounced Affonso's tampering with the coinage, and compelled recognition of the fact that taxes were not levied by the inherent right of the king but by the free consent of the people. Aftera prosperous and successful reign Nemesis came upon Affonso in the rebellion of his eldest son Diniz in 1277, which con- tinued until 1279, in which year the king died.~~

~~The period of war and of territorial extension in the Diniz,~~

~~Peninsula was now over, and the period of civilization was to dawn. Territorially and constitutionally Portugal was now an established kingdom ; it remained for it to become civilized and thoroughly homogeneous before the great heroic period of exploration and Asiatic conquest should begin. No better man for such work than the new king, Dom Diniz, could have been found : he was himself a poet and loved letters; he was a great administrator and loved justice ; above all he saw the need of agriculture and the arts of peace to take the place of incessant wars, and nobly earned the title of the "Ré Lavrador," or '" Denis the Labourer." From all these points of view his reign is of vast importance in the history of Portugal, though, like all reigns of peaceful progress, it is not signalized by many striking events. It began with a civil war between Diniz and his brother Affonso, who disputed his legitimacy, which ended in a compromise; and in 1281 Diniz married Isabel, daughter of Pedro III. of Aragon, who for her~~

~~*pure and unselfish life was canonized in the 16th century. His reign is only marked by one war with Sancho IV. and his successor, Ferdinand IV., of Castile and Leon, which was terminated in 1297 by a treaty of alliance, according to the terms of which Ferdinand IV. matried Constance, daughter of Diniz, while Affonso, the heir to the throne of Portugal, married Beatrice of Castile, sister of Ferdinand. Still more interesting are the king's relations with Edward I. of England, with whom he ex- changed many letters, and with whom he made a com- mercial treaty in 1294. He corresponded also often with*~~

~~*Affonso IV.*~~

~~*Pedro I.*~~

~~*Ferdi- nand.*~~

~~*HISTORY. |*~~

~~*Edward IT. of England, and agreed with him in 1311] that the Knights Templars had been greatly maligned ; and on their suppression by Clement V., recollecting the great services which the military orders had rendered to Portugal and their great power, Dom Diniz founded the Order of Christ, and invested it with the lands of the Templars, thus at once obeying the pope and avoiding a serious dis- turbance at home. The king showed his love of agricul- ture by the foundation of agricultural schools and homes for farmers' orphans, as well as by encouraging improved farming, and by establishing the pine forest of Leiria, his love of justice by wise laws, checking, though not abolish- ing, the feudal courts, and by the appointment of royal corregidors in every town of which the crown possessed the franchise, and his love for commerce by his commercial treaty with England, and by the foundation of a royal navy, of which a Genoese, named Emmanuel Pessanha, was the first admiral. But his real affection was for litera- ture: he encouraged a school of Portuguese poets at his court, and established a university at Lisbon, which, after many changes, found a permanent home at Coimbra. At the end of this reign war broke out between the king and the heir-apparent, and a pitched battle was only prevented in 1323 by St Isabel riding between the armies and making a*~~

~~*peace between her husband and her son, which lasted until the death of the great peace-monarch, the Ré Lavrador, in 1325.*~~

~~*Affonso IV. pursued his father's policy of making family alliances with the kings of Aragon and Castile, and in 1328 married his daughter, Donna Maria, to Alphonso XI. of Castile, who neglected her, and for her sake Affonso IV. declared war against Castile. Peace was made through the intervention of St Isabel in 1340, when Dom Pedro, son of Affonso, married Constance Manuel, daughter of the duke of Penafiel, and Affonso IV. himself promised to bring a strong Portuguese army to the help of Alphonso XI. against the emir of Morocco, Abi Hamem, who had crossed the straits to assist the sultan of Granada. The united Christian armies won a decisive victory at the river Salado, in which Affonso especially distinguished himself, and earned the title of "the Brave"; from that time he re- mained at peace with Castile, and further strengthened his position in Spain in 1347 by marrying his daughter, Donna Leonora, to Pedro IV. of Aragon. The later years of the reign of Affonso IV. were stained by the tragedy of Donna Ines de Castro. (See vol. v. p. 202.)*~~

~~*The first act of Dom Pedro on ascending the throne in 1357 was to punish the murderers of Ines; and further, to show his love for her, he had her dead body disinterred and crowned, and afterwards solemnly buried with the kings and queens of Portugal in the convent of Alcobaga. The spirit of stern, revengeful justice which had marked the commencement of his reign continued to show itself in all matters of administration ; he punished priest and noble with equal severity, and the people gave him the title of "Pedro the Severe." Like his grandfather, he greatly valued the friendship of England, and was on intimate terms with Edward IIL, who in 1352 had ordered his subjects by proclamation never to do any harm to the Portuguese. A curious sequel to the commercial treaty of 1294 was executed in 1353, when Affonso Martins Alho, on behalf of the maritime cities of Portugal, signed a treaty with the merchants of London guaranteeing mutual -good faith in all matters of trade and commerce. This is the most interesting feature of Dom Pedro's short reign.*~~

~~*The accession in 1367 of Ferdinand, the only son of Pedro by Constance, marks a crisis in the history of the Portu- guese monarchy. Asa natural*~~

~~*result of the long peace which had succeeded the final conquest of Algarves, the people of Portugal had grown richer, more cultivated, and*~~

~~*more conscious of their nationality, while the court had grown more and more dissolute and more out of conson- ance with the feelings of the people. If the Portuguese monarchy was to continue to exist, it was obvious that it must become again a truly national monarchy, as it had been in the days of Affonso Henriques, and that the kings must remember their duties and not think only of their pleasures. The life and reign of Dom Ferdinand are marked, like those of his father, by a romantic amour, which, if not so tragic as the story of Ines de Castro, had far greater political importance. Ferdinand was a weak and frivolous but ambitious king, who, after binding him- self to marry Leonora, daughter of the king of Aragon, suddenly claimed the thrones of Castile and Leon in 1369 on the death of Pedro the Cruel, through his grandmother, Beatrice of Castile, and was favourably received at Ciudad Rodrigo and Zamora. But the majority of the Castilian nobles did not wish to see a Portuguese monarch on their throne, and welcomed the illegitimate Henry of Trastamare as Henry II. of Castile. The contest ended in 1371 through the intervention of Pope Gregory XI., Ferdinand agreeing to surrender his claims on Castile and to marry Leonora, daughter of Henry II. However, in spite of the pope, this treaty was never carried out; Ferdinand had seen and fallen passionately in love with Donna Leonora Telles de Menezes, daughter of a nobleman in Tras-os-Montes and wife of Jo&o Lourenco da Cunha, lord of Pombeiro. For love of this lady, whom lhe eventually married, he refused to fulfil his treaty with Castile; but Henry II. strongly resented this insult, and taking up arms invaded Port- ugal and laid siege to Lisbon. Ferdinand entered into negotiations with John of Gaunt, who also claimed Castile through his wife Constance (daughter of Pedro the Cruel), and he signed a treaty of alliance through his ambassador, Joio Fernandes Andeiro, with Edward III. of England, Donna Leonora, however, did not approve of the English alliance, and in 1374 Ferdinand made peace with Castile through the mediation of Cardinal Guy of Boulogne. The queen was now supreme, and terrible in her*~~

~~*tyranny. She had not even the merit of constancy, for she fell in love with Andeiro, the late ambassador to England, and in- duced the king to make him count of Ourem. Ferdinand himself continued to aspire to the throne of Castile; and in 1380, after the death of Henry II. he again sent Andeiro to England to procure assistance for a new war against Henry's successor, John I. Richard II. of England received the ambassador graciously, and in 1381 the earl of Cambridge, brother of John of Gaunt, arrived with a powerful force, and his son Edward was betrothed to Donna Beatrice, Ferdinand's only child, who had been recognized as heiress to the throne by a cortes at Leiria in 1376. But the Portuguese king, as usual, failed to keep faith, and in 1383, under the influence of the queen, he deserted the English, who then ravaged Portugal and made peace with John I. of Castile at Salvaterra. By this treaty John I. engaged to marry Donna Beatrice, and it was arranged that Queen Leonora should be regent of Portugal until Beatrice's eldest son came of age. Six months after- wards, on 22d October, King Ferdinand died, and Donna Leonora assumed the regency.*~~

~~*But she did not hold it long. The whole Portuguese Regency*~~

~~*people detested her, and their feeling of nationality was of outraged by the contemplated union of their crown wit that of Castile. Dom John, grandmaster of the Knights of St Bennett of Aviz, and an illegitimate son of Pedro the Severe, shared both the personal hatred for the queen and the political desire for independence, and on 6th December he headed an insurrection at Lisbon and slew the queen's lover, Andeiro, in the precincts of the palace. Leonora fled to Santarem and summoned John I. of Castile to her*~~

~~*i Leonora.*~~

~~*John I.*~~

~~*544 PO oT*~~

~~*help, while Dom John was proclaimed defender of Portugal, Joio das Regras being appointed chancellor and Nuno Alvares Pereira constable. Dom John sent to England for assistance, which was promised him, and put the capital in a state of defence. In 1384 John of Castile entered Portugal*~~

~~*and formed the siege of Lisbon. The resistance was worthy of the cause; the archbishop of Braga fought like a knight; but a pestilence in the besiegers' camp did them more mischief than even the bravery of the besieged, and John I. had to retire defeated. Before doing so he discovered that Donna Leonora had plotted to poison him, so he seized her and imprisoned her in the convent of Tordesillas, where she died in 1386. But it availed little to have repulsed one Castilian army ; the relative sizes of Portugal and Castile made it obvious that the struggle would be a severe one; the independence of Portugal was at stake, and the Portuguese fought as men fight for their existence as a nation. The heroic constable, who won the surname of the '"'Holy Constable," defeated the Castilians at Atoleiro and Trancoso. On 6th April 1385 a cortes assembled at Coimbra, and declared the crown of Portugal to be elective, choosing, at the instance of the chancellor, Dom John to be king of Portugal. King John then called all his chivalry together, with the freemen of his cities, and, with the help of 500 English archers, utterly defeated a superior Castilian army at Aljubarrota on 14th August, and in the following October the Holy Constable destroyed another army at Valverde. These blows greatly weakened the prestige of Castile and increased that of Portugal, and when John of Gaunt arrived the following year with 2000 lances and 3000 archers the king of Castile sued for peace. King John of Portugal perceived the advantage of the friendship and alliance of England, and on 9th May 1386 was signed the treaty of Windsor, by which the two countries were to be allies for ever in every transaction. He drew the alliance still closer in 1387 by marrying Philippa of Lancaster, a daughter of John of Gaunt by his second marriage ; and a truce was made between Portugal and Castile, and renewed at intervals until a final peace was signed in 1411. The only attempt made to disturb King John I. was an incursion by the eldest son of Ines de Castro, Dom Diniz, in 1398, assisted by Henry III. of Castile, but the legitimate claims of the prince carried no weight against the conqueror of Aljubarrota, and he retired discomfited. The long reign of John I. was, like that of King Diniz, a reign of peaceful development: Diniz had settled and united the country after the Moorish wars ; John did the same after the obstinate war with Castile, and at the end of his reign saw Portugal beginning to ex- pand beyond the sea. The keynotes of his foreign policy were friendship with England and peace with Castile. Henry IV., Henry V., and Henry VI. of England all suc- cessively ratified the treaty of Windsor; Richard II. sent*~~

~~*troops to help King John against Dom Diniz in 1398; Henry IV. made him a knight of the Garter in 1400 ; and Henry V. sent him help in the expedition to Ceuta in 1415. John's internal government was not so happy, for, though personally a clever administrator, he had had, in order to maintain himself when he claimed the crown, to grant vast privileges and estates to the nobles, who became more and more powerful, and, by their exercise of full feudal rights, almost independent. It was at the earnest request of his three elder sons, Dom Duarte or Edward, Dom Pedro, and Dom Henry, that he consented to invade Africa in 1415. The young princes desired to win their knightly spurs; there were no enemies at home; and what could be more proper than to attack the old hereditary foes of Portugal, the Moors, in Morocco itself? The queen from her death- bed sent her blessing; the princes proved themselves worthy sons of their father ; and by the occupation of Ceuta the*~~

~~*VGA Eh*~~

~~*Portuguese made their first conquest beyond the limits of their country. The expedition over, the elder princes each followed his own bent: Dom Edward assisted his father in the labours of government ; Dom Pedro, who was made duke of Coimbra, travelled throughout Europe, and showed himself everywhere a learned and accomplished as well as brave knight; and Dom Henry, who was master of the Order of Christ, governor of Algarves, and duke of Viseu, established himself at Sagres, and devoted his life to the encouragement of maritime exploration, for an account of which see vol. x. pp. 179, 180. Portuguese discoveries thus made illustrious the closing years of the reign of King' John, who died in 1433.*~~

~~*[WISTORY.*~~

~~*Contrary to expectation, the reign of King Edward (so Edward.*~~

~~*called after Edward III. of England) proved, in spite of his own great qualities, but short, and was marked by one signal disaster. On ascending the throne he summoned a full cortes at Evora and secured the passing of the Lei Mental, or the provision which was supposed to be in the mind of King John when he gave his extensive grants to the nobility, namely, that they could only descend in the direct male line and on failure should revert*~~

~~*to the crown. By this means Edward hoped to check the excessive power of the nobles, many of whom fled to Castile. He supported his father's policy, married a princess of Aragon, and, after confirming the treaty of Windsor, was made a knight of the Garter in his father's room. He also encouraged the explorations of Dom Henry; but the king's hfe was shortened and Dom Henry's explorations were checked for a time by the fatal expedition to Tangiers in 1436. At the earnest request of his youngest brother Dom Ferdinand and of Dom Henry himself, and in spite of the remon- strances of the pope and Dom Pedro, the king sent a fleet to attack Tangiers; the army was cut off, and it was only by sacrificing Dom Ferdinand as a hostage that the troops were allowed to retire to their ships. The imprisonment of his brother preyed on King Edward's mind, and he died in 1438, while Dom Ferdinand, after a long and cruel captivity at Fez, borne with such exemplary piety as to win him the title of 'the Constant Prince," died from ill- treatment in 1443.*~~

~~*The new king, Affonso V., was a minor, and his reign Affonso*~~

~~*began with a struggle for the regency between his mother, V- Donna Leonora, and his uncle, Dom Pedro, duke of Coimbra. The people of Lisbon supported the latter, who was re- cognized as regent ; and his conduct justified the choice. He pursued his brother's policy of curbing the pretensions of the nobles, and encouraged Dom Henry's work of dis- covery, which advanced every year. Dom Pedro's power was seemingly at its height in 1447 when Affonso V. was declared of age and at the same time married his cousin Leonora, daughter of Dom Pedro; but the duke of Bra- ganza poisoned the king's mind against his uncle, and schemed his dismissal from court. Then, not satisfied with this, he marched against him with a royal army, largely recruited by the nobility, who hated the duke of Coimbra. The two forces met at Alfarrobeira on 20th May 1449, when the regent was slain, to the great regret of the Portuguese people. The young king fell more and more under the influence of the duke of Braganza and his sons, who humoured his desire for knightly fame and his dream of sitting on the throne of Castile, and who secured to themselves vast grants of royal property. This knightly idea appears in Affonso's three expeditions to Africa, which won him the surname of 'the African": in 1458 he took Aledcer Seguier; in 1461 he failed; and in 1471 he took Arzilla and Tangiers.*~~

~~*Meanwhile maritime exploration went on apace; but in 1460 Dom Henry the Navigator, the heart and soul of these mari- time enterprises, died. The "Ré Cavalleiro" or knightly*~~

~~*John II.*~~

~~*HISTORY. |*~~

~~*king was now bent on the old chimerical scheme of win- ning Castile ; for that purpose he married in 1475 his own niece, the infanta Joanna, only daughter of Henry IV. of Castile, and claimed the kingdom ; but the Castilians pre- ferred the infanta Isabella, who had married Ferdinand, king of Aragon. The rival parties took up arms; and the king of Portugal was utterly defeated at Toro in 1476, which sent him hurriedly to France to beg help from Louis XI. ; but his mission was in vain, and he saw no alterna- tive save signing the treaty of Alcantara (147 8), by which his newly-won wife was sent to a convent. He remained*~~

~~*inconsolable at his loss, and alternately abdicated and*~~

~~*returned until his death in 1481.*~~

~~*His successor, John II., was a monarch of a very different type: though he had proved himself a brave and valiant soldier at the battle of Toro, he pursued the old policy of the house of Aviz, that of peace and family alliances with Castile and of commercial intimacy with England. But he was also a typical king of this period, and followed the example of Louis XI. in France and Henry VII. in England in breaking the power of the nobles, with the hearty acquiescence of the people. Besides political reasons for this policy, he remembered that he was the grandson of the great duke of Coimbra, and bound to revenge his murder at Alfarrobeira. The first act of his reign was to summon a full cortes at Evora, at which it was decreed that the royal corregidors should have full right to admin- ister justice in all the feudal dominions of the nobility. This act brought him of course into direct conflict with the nobility, who were headed by Ferdinand, duke of Braganza, to the king's great delight, for, as he said, the wanton liberality of his father had left him only the high roads of Portugal for his inheritance. Hence the duke of Braganza was naturally the first object of the king's*~~

attack. He was the wealthiest nobleman not only in Por- tugal but in the whole Peninsula; his brothers held the high offices of constable and chancellor of the kingdom, and they too had all assisted in the overthrow of the duke of Coimbra. He believed himself to be safe because he and the king had married sisters, but he was promptly arrested for high treason, and after a very short trial exe- cuted at Evora on 22d June 1483. His own and the king's brother-in-law, Ferdinand, duke of Viseu, a grand- son of King Edward, succeeded to the leadership of the nobles ; but John IL, imitating Louis XI.'s policy of not sparing his own family, stabbed him with his own hand at Setubal on 23d August 1484, and afterwards executed some eighty of the leading nobles, breaking the feudal power of the class for ever. This terrible struggle over, he occupied himself with such success in administration that he won the surname of "the Perfect King." But he did not intend to keep the Portuguese in idleness. He was surrounded by the gallant knights who had been trained by his father, and who, though now frightened out of treason, yet needed some occupation, and at his court were the famous navigators trained by Dom Henry. In 1484 he built a fort at La Mina or Elmina to cover the increasing trade with the Gold Coast, and in 1486 Bartholomeu Dias rounded the Cape of Good Hope and reached Algoa Bay. The king was full of plans for reach- ing India and discovering Prester John ; besides despatch- ing a special expedition for this purpose in 1487, he sent Pedro de Evora and Gongalo Annes to Timbuctoo, and Martim Lopes to Nova Zembla to find a north-east road to Cathay. With all his perspicacity, he made the great mistake of dismissing Columbus in 1493 as a visionary ; but he was occupied to the very last day of his life in getting ready the fleet with which Vasco de Gama was to find out the passage to India by the Cape of Good Hope (see vol. x. p. 181 sg.).. It was in his reign, in 1494, that

the pope issued his famous bull dividing the undiscovered parts of the world between Spaniards and Portuguese. A great sorrow darkened the later years of John II. in the death of his only son Affonso, who in 1490 had

~~*married Isabella, eldest daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella of Spain ; and he himself died in the flower of his age in 1495,*~~

~~*The reign of Emmanuel "the Fortunate," brother of Emman- the murdered duke of Viseu, is the heroic period of Ul*~~

~~*Portuguese history. The great men and brave knights of the reigns of Affonso V. and John II. were still living, and Vasco de Gama, Francisco de Almeida, and Affonso de Albuquerque were to make their king's reign for ever glorious. Yet Emmanuel personally contributed but little to this glory; his one idea was to sit on the throne of Castile. To gain this end he proposed to marry Isabella, eldest daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella and widow of Dom Affonso, and to win her hand he consented to expel the Jews from Portugal, although they were the richest and most useful class of people in the kingdom, and had been faithfully protected ever since the days of Affonso Henriques. He married Isabella in 1497, and was on a progress through Spain in the following year for the pur- pose of being recognized as heir to the throne, when she died suddenly at Toledo, and with her disappeared his great hopes. Even then he did not despair, but in 1500 married his deceased wife's sister, Maria, though her elder sister Joanna was also married, and had a son, who was afterwards the emperor Charles V. While the king was thus occupied great things were being done in Asia by his subjects. In 1497 Vasco de Gama had crossed the Indian Ocean and reached Calicut ; in 1500 Pedro Alvares Cabral discovered Brazil on his way to India; in 1502 Vasco de Gama paid his second visit to the Malabar coast ; in 1503 Duarte Pacheco defended Cochin and with 900 Portuguese defeated an army of 50,000 natives; and in 1505 Francisco de Almeida was appointed first viceroy of India. This is not the place to dilate on the great deeds of ALBUQUERQUE (g.v.) and of the Portuguese in India; it is enough here to mark the dates of afew of the most important dis- coveries and feats of arms which illustrate the reign of Emmanuel. In 1501 Jofo da Nova discovered the island of Ascension and Amerigo Vespucci the Rio Plata and Paraguay ; in 1509 Diogo Lopes de Sequieira occupied Malacca ; in 1510 Affonso de Albuquerque occupied Goa ; in 1512 Francisco Sendo discovered the Moluccas; in 1515 Lopes Soares built a fort at Colombo in the island of Ceylon; in 1517 Fernando Peres Andrada established himself at Canton, and made his way to Peking in 1521 ; and in 1520 Magalhies*~~

~~(Magellan), a Portuguese sailor, though in the Spanish service, passed through the straits which bear his name.~~

~~The reign of John III, who succeeded Emmanuel in John II.~~

~~1521, is one of rapid decline. The destruction of the feudal power of the nobility by John II. had not been an unmixed good: it had fatally weakened the class of leaders of the people ; the nobility lost all sense of patriotism and intrigued for "moradias," or court posts; and, in short, their position was much the same as that of the French nobility before the Revolution of 1789. The overthrow of their power had also made the king absolute; having now no feudal nobility to combat, he had no need of the support of the people, and the newly-created Indian trade brought him an income greater than that of any prince in Europe, so that he had no need of taxes. There was, however, a more serious cause of the declining power of Portugal than the absolutism of the government, and that was the rapid depopulation of the country. Alemtejo and Algarves had never been thoroughly peopled ; the devasta- tion produced by constant war could not be easily repaired; and, though the exertions of Diniz the Labourer had made XIX. — 69~~

~~546 PO nT~~

~~Beira the garden of Europe, the southern part of the king- dom was chiefly in the hands of the military orders, who did not sufficiently encourage immigration. The great dis- coveries of the 15th century quickened the depopulation of Portugal. Not only did the bulk of the young men gladly volunteer as soldiers and sailors to go in search of wealth and honour, but whole families emigrated to Madeira and the Brazils. Also the Portuguese who did continue to live in their native country flocked to Lisbon, which trebled in population in less than eighty years, owing to the large fortunes which could be made there in trade. The king, the nobles, and the military orders were quite unconcerned at this extensive emigration, for their large estates were cultivated much more cheaply by African slaves, who were imported from the time of the first voyages of Dom Henry in such numbers that Algarves was entirely cultivated by them, and even in Lisbon itself they outnumbered the free- men by the middle of the 16th century. In this respect the condition of Portugal resembled that of Italy at the time of the decline of~~

~~*the Roman empire, as the wealth of Lisbon resembled that of imperial Rome, while in another respect the utter corruption of the officials in the factories and Indian settlements too far resembled the peculation and corruption of the Roman proconsuls. While the Portuguese nation was exhibiting these signs of a rapid decline, another factor was added by the religious zeal of John III. This king inherited his father's bigotry and fanaticism, and was anxious to introduce the Jesuits and the Inquisition into Portugal. The Church of Rome was not likely to hinder his pious desire, but for several years the "neo-Christians"—the name given to the half-hearted converts made from the Jews as the condition of their remaining in Portugal—managed to ward off the blow. But the king's earnest wish was gratified at last, and in 1536 the tribunal of the Holy Office was established in Portugal with the bishop of Ceuta as first grand inquisitor, who was soon succeeded by the king's brother, the cardinal Henry. The Inquisition quickly destroyed all that was left of the old Portuguese spirit, and so effectu- ally stamped out the Portuguese revival of literature that, while towards the close of the 16th century all Europe was becoming civilized under the influence of the Renais- sance, Portugal fell back and her literature became dumb. The king had his reward for his piety: he was permitted to unite the masterships of the orders of Christ, Santiago, and Aviz with the crown, and to found new bishoprics at Leiria, Miranda, and Porto Alegre; but it was left to St Francis Xavier to show the real beauty of Christianity in his mission to the Indies.*~~

~~*It was in India that the decline of the Portuguese was most perceptible. Nuno da Cunha, son of the discoverer Tristan da Cunha, governed the Indian settlements worthily till 1536, and then corruption undermined all prosperity until the arrival of Dom Jodo de Castro in 1545. He was a Portuguese hero of the noblest type; and for three years the friend of St Francis Xavier revived the glories of Albu- querque by winning the battle of Diu, and then died in the missionary's arms. Everything went afterwards from bad to worse, till even observers like the Dutchman Cleynaerts saw that, in spite of all its wealth and seeming prosperity, the kingdom of Portugal was rotten at the core and could not last. King John III, satisfied with peace and the establishment of the Inquisition in his kingdom, did nothing to check the decline; and he endeavoured to secure his aims by the marriage of his only surviving son John to his niece Joanna, a daughter of*~~

~~*Charles V., but he had the misfortune to outlive his son, who died in 1554. When he himself died in 1557 he left the crown to his*~~

~~*grandson, a child of three years old, the ill-fated Dom Sebastian.*~~

~~*UGAL*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*Nothing could be more disastrous for Portugal than the Sebas- Under the will of tian.*~~

~~*succession of a minor at this juncture. John III. the regency was assumed by Queen Catherine and the cardinal Henry, his widow and his brother, but all power was exercised by the brothers Luis and Martim Gongalves Camara, of whom the former was the young king's tutor and confessor and the latter prime minister. In 1568 Dom Sebastian was declared of age by the Camaras, who thus excluded the cardinal from even a semblance of power. As the king came to take more interest in affairs, the mixture of imperiousness, fanaticism, and warlike ambi- tion which made up his character began to make its mark upon his reign. He tried to check the luxury of his people by a sumptuary edict that no one might have more than two dishes for dinner; he encouraged the Inquisition ; and he dreamt of a new crusade in Africa for the conquest and conversion of the Moors. His crusading ardour was most objectionable to his people, who had highly approved of John IIT.'s surrender of all ports in Africa except Ceuta, Tangiers, Arzilla, and Mazagan, but the Jesuits and young courtiers about his person encouraged him in his wild ideas. In 1574 he paid a short visit to Ceuta and Tangiers, and in 1576, to his great delight, Mouley Ahmed ibn 'Abdallah, after being disappointed in his application to Philip IZ. for help against Mouley 'Abd al-Melik, sultan of Morocco, applied to Sebastian. The king proceeded to raise money by harsh taxes on the converted Jews and by partial bankruptcy, and set sail for Africa on 24th June 1578 with 15,000 infantry, 2400 cavalry, and 36 guns ; of this army only some 10,000 were Portuguese, the rest consisting of Spanish and German volunteers and mer- cenaries, and 900 Italians, under Sir Thomas Stukeley, whom, when on his way to deliver Ireland from Elizabeth, Sebastian had stopped. On reaching Africa the Portuguese king was joined by Mouley Ahmed with 800*~~

~~*Mohammed- ans. He at first amused himself with hunting, and then, just as Dom Ferdinand had done in 1436, he foolishly left his base of operations, his fleet, and the sea, and began to march over the desert to attack Larash (El-Araish). Mouley 'Abd al-Melik, who had previously endeavoured to dissuade the young king from his purpose, collected an army of 40,000 cavalry, 15,000 infantry, and 40 guns, and, feeling that he was himself on the point of death from a mortal disease, ordered an instant attack upon the Portuguese at Alcdcer Quibir, or Al-kasr al-Kebfr, on 4th August 1578. Dom Sebastian behaved like a brave knight, though he had not been a prudent commander, and when all was lost he was determined to lose his own life also. According to the most trustworthy account, Christovaéo de Tavora, his equerry, had shown a flag of truce, and had offered to surrender with the fifty horsemen who still remained about the king, when Sebastian sud- denly dashed on the Moorish cavalry, who, irritated by this breach of faith, instantly slew him and the brave equerry who had followed his master. The slaughter was terrible ; Mouley "Abd al-Melik died during the action ; Mouley Ahmed was drowned ; Sir Thomas Stukeley was killed, with many of the chief Portuguese nobles and pre- lates, including Don Jayme de Braganza (brother of the sixth duke of Braganza), the duke of Aveiro (who had com- manded the cavalry), and the: bishops of Coimbra and Oporto, while among the prisoners were the duke of Bar- cellos and Duarte de Menezes. The sad news was brought to Lisbon by the admiral of the fleet, Dom Diogo de Sousa,*~~

~~*and the cardinal Henry was proclaimed king of Portugal Henry I.*~~

~~*as King Henry I.*~~

~~*Hardly had the new king been crowned when intrigues began about his successor. He could not live long; but he determined not to examine the question himself, and so summoned a cortes at Lisbon at once to decide it. Of*~~

~~*Philip IT. of Spain.*~~

~~*HISTORY. |*~~

~~the seven candidates only five need be seriously considered, for Pope Gregory XITI.,who claimed as heir-general to a car- dinal, and Catherine de'Medici, who claimed through Affonso~~

~~IIT. and his first wife, the countess of Boulogne, require no further notice ; the relationship of the other five to Em- manuel can be best perceived from the following table :—~~

~~Emmanuel.~~

~~| SS = ee~~

~~John III., Isabel, Beatrice Louis Ferdinand Affonso Henr Bava d. b. 1502, d. 1557, b. 1503, d. 1539, _. 1504, d. 1588, — _b, 1506, d. 1545, b. 1507, d. 1834, B. 1509, d. 1540, b. 1512, ri 1580, b. 1515, d. 1545 m. Catherine of Austria. m. Charles V. m. Charles ITT. of duke of Beja. dukeofGuarda. cardinal and cardinal and duke of Guimariens, Savoy. archbishop of king. m. Isabel of Braganza,. Lisbon. John, Philip II. Philibert Emmanuel Antonio Catherine Maria b. 1537, d. 1554, duke of Savoy. prior of Crato m. duke of Braganza, m, duke of Parma. m. Joanna of Spain. (illegitimate).~~

~~Sebastian, b. 1554, d. 1578.~~

~~It clearly appears that the heiress to the throne was Catherine, duchess of Braganza, and failing her heirs the duke of Parma, and that the claims of Philip II. and of the duke of Savoy were only valid in case of the extinction of the line of Dom Edward. Yet, though the university of Coimbra declared in favour of the duchess of Braganza, Philip II. set to work to win over the majority of the cortes. Money and lavish promises assisted the eloquence of his two chief supporters, Christovao de Moura and Antonio Pinheiro, bishop of Leiria ; and when the cardinal- king died on 31st January 1580 the cortes was quite ready to recognize Philip, although the people, or rather that small portion of the inhabitants who were really Portu- guese, felt their old disinclination towards the union of Spain and Portugal. Philip~~

~~*prevented any movement on the part of the duke of Braganza by promising him Brazil with the title of king, and a marriage between the prince of the Asturias and his daughter, which, as the duke hated war and loved ease, were readily accepted ; but to Philip's | surprise a competitor whom he had taken no account of, Antonio, the prior of Crato, declared himself king at San- tarem, and then entered Lisbon and struck money. Port- ugal, however, enervated by wealth, oppressed by the Inqui- sition, and reduced in free population, felt no inclination to make a powerful stand against Philip, who had all the prestige of being the son of Charles V., while the hot-*~~

~~*Ranuccio, duke of Parma.*~~

~~*were Portuguese of low birth, who were recognized by a few people in the vicinity of their native villages, and easily captured in 1584 and 1585; the third, Gabriel Espinosa, was given out as Dom Sebastian by a Portuguese Jesuit, and introduced as such to Donna Anna, a natural daughter of Don John of Austria, who believed in him, but he was executed in 1594; while the fourth, a poor Calabrian named Marco Tullio, who could not speak a word of Portuguese, asserted his pretensions at Venice as late as 1603, twenty-five years after Dom Sebastian's death, and, after obtaining some success in Italy, was also captured, sent to the galleys, and afterwards executed. Of more importance were the renewed attempts of the prior of Crato to assert his claims with the assistance of foreign allies. In 1582 he proceeded to the Azores with a strong French fleet under Philip Strozzi, but his ill-fortune fol- lowed him: Strozzi was defeated and killed in a battle*~~

~~*_with the Spanish admiral Don Alvaro de Bacam, and Dom*~~

~~*Antonio fled to England. There Elizabeth received him kindly, and in 1589 she sent a strong fleet under Drake and Norris to help him win back his "kingdom"; but Drake and Norris quarrelled, Portugal showed no willingness to receive him, nothing was done, and the English retired. The unfortunate prior, finding that Elizabeth would do nothing more for him, again returned to Paris, where he died in poverty in 1594.*~~

~~*headed but incapable prior of Crato could not be compared to the great John I. ; and the cortes, which had in 1385, under the honeyed words of Joao das Regras, enthusiasti-*~~

~~*"The sixty years' captivity," as the domination of Spain Domina- over Portugal from 1580 to 1640 is called, was a time of tion of disaster for the country: not only did the English sack Spain.*~~

~~*cally fought for Portugal, in 1580 listened to the promises of Christovaéo de Moura and rejected the prior of Crato. The duke of Alva entered Portugal at the head of a Spanish army and easily defeated Dom Antonio at Alcantara, after which Philip was declared king of Portugal.*~~

~~*The other candidates were obliged to acquiesce in Philip's success ; the duke of Braganza, though greatly dis- appointed at receiving only the office of constable and the order of the Golden Fleece instead of the whole of Brazil, was, like the majority of his countrymen, too apathetic to strike a blow. Philip pledged himself to recognize the individuality of Portugal in a cortes held at Thomar in 1581, when he promised that he would maintain the rights and liberties of the people, that the cortes should be as- sembled frequently, that all the offices in the realm should be given to Portuguese alone, that no lands or jurisdiction in Portugal should be given to foreigners, and that there should be a Portuguese council, which should accompany the king everywhere and have entire charge of all Portu- guese affairs. But the lower classes refused to believe | that Dom Sebastian was dead,—a belief encouraged by the stratagem of a wounded noble on the evening of the battle of Al-kasr al-Kebir to gain admission into the city of Tangiers by asserting that he was the king; and four successive impostors arose, who assumed the name of the dead monarch. The first two, who were mockingly called | the "king of Pennamacor" and the "king of Ericeira," |*~~

~~*Faro in 1595, but Dutch, English, and French all preyed upon its great colonial possessions; the Dutch in particular, after beating the Portuguese in India, took from them the greater part of the lucrative Indian trade. This they did with the more ease since, with the true commercial spirit, they not only imported merchandise from the East to Holland but also distributed it through Dutch merchants to every country of Europe, whereas the Portuguese in the days of their commercial monopoly were satisfied with bringing over the commodities to Lisbon, and letting foreign nations come to fetch them. The Dutch incursion into the Indies was directly caused by Philip's closing the port of Lisbon to them in 1594; and in 1595 Cornelius*~~

~~*Houtman, a Dutchman, who had been employed by the Portuguese as an Indian pilot and then imprisoned by the Inquisition, offered to lead a Dutch fleet to the Indies, and in 1597 they erected a factory in Java. They speedily extended their sphere of operations by occupying the Moluccas and Sumatra, and in 1619 they built Batavia as a rival commercial capital in the East to Goa. The English quickly followed their example; in the reign of Elizabeth the English captains had been content to ravage Pernambuco in 1594-95, Fort Arguin in 1595, and the Azores in 1596, and in the reign of James I. the East India Company was established in the Indies at Surat. The French also settled themselves in Brazil and opened a flourishing trade with South America and the*~~

~~*Revolt of*~~

~~*Portu- guese.*~~

~~*John IV.*~~

~~*548*~~

~~*west coast of Africa; and even the Danes struck a blow against the monopoly of the Portuguese by building a factory at Tranquebar. To make up for these losses, what had Portugal received from Spain? The promises made to the cortes at Thomar were all broken; the cortes was only summoned once in 1619 to recognize Philip, the eldest son of King Philip IIL, as the heir to the throne on the occasion of his only visit to Lisbon; Lerma and Olivares, the all-powerful ministers of Philip III. and Philip IV., appropriated to themselves large territories within the realm of Portugal; and, whenever it was pos- sible, Spaniards were installed in Portuguese bishoprics and civil offices.*~~

~~*At last a blow was struck against this supremacy of Spain in the revolution of 1640 and the elevation of the house of Braganza to the throne of Portugal. Things had been tending towards a revolution for a long time, but the final impulse came from the energy of certain noble- men, conjoined with the weakness of Spain and the hope of assistance from France.*~~

~~*The general discontent was shown by risings in Lisbon in 1634 and in Evora in 1637, where for a short time the mob ruled the city; and, when Spain was hampered by the Catalan revolt and the French war, the opportunity seemed favourable for the Portuguese. The difficulty was to find a leader; the eighth duke of Braganza, grand- son of the infanta Catherine, daughter of Dom Edward, was a pleasure-loving, easy-tempered man, fond of music and hunting, quite happy in his palace at Villa Vicosa ; but the energy of his wife, Luiza de Guzman, Castilian though she was, secured his passive co-operation, and his confidential adviser, Jodo Pinto Ribeiro, soon formed a powerful band of conspirators among the Portuguese noblemen, when the news arrived in 1640 that the arriére-ban of Portugal was summoned to fight against the Catalans. Portugal was at that time under the nominal government of Margaret of Savoy, duchess of Mantua, who was surrounded with Spaniards and Italians ; but the real government was in the hands of the tyran- nical secretary of state, Miguel de Vasconcellos de Brito. Ribeiro had no difficulty in collecting together many daring and discontented noblemen, of whom the chief were Miguel de Almeida, Pedro de Mendonga Furtado, Antonio and Luis de Almada, Estevéo and Luis da Cunha, Rodrigo and Emmanuel de Sd, and Jorge de Mello; and the archbishop of Lisbon himself, Rodrigo da Cunha, if not actually a conspirator, certainly must have had a know- ledge of what was going on through his relatives the Almadas and Da Cunhas. The plot was carefully elabo- rated, parts being assigned to the leading conspirators, and the day fixed was the lst of December. The plot was completely successful ; the archbishop of Lisbon was appointed lieutenant-general of the kingdom, with Almeida, Mendonga, and A. de Almada for councillors, and expresses were sent off to the duke of Braganza to inform him of all that had passed and to offer him the crown. IIe was at first unwilling to accept the honour thrust upon him, but the duchess, on whom a prophecy that she should be a queen had had a great effect, persuaded him to go to Lisbon, where he was crowned as King John IV. on 13th Decem- ber 1640. The whole of Portugal at once rose and ex- pelled the Spaniards, and on 19th January a full cortes met at Lisbon, which recognized King John as king of Portugal, and his son Theodosius as heir-apparent.*~~

~~*The Portuguese knew well that, in spite of the Catalan rebellion and the terrible wars in which Spain was engaged, they were not strong enough to*~~

~~*maintain their independ- ence without foreign help, and at once sent ambassadors to France, Holland, and England. Richelieu was charmed with the success of the revolution, hoping to make Portugal*~~

~~*Po hT UG 3 iL*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*a thorn in the side of Spain, such as Scotland had been to England in former days, and he at once sent a fleet under De Brezé to the Tagus ; the Dutch also sent a fleet under Gylfels ; but Charles I. of England was too much occupied with his quarrels with his parliament to do more than merely recognize the new king.*~~

~~*The Portuguese were at first successful, owing to the many wars in which Spain was involved, and, after the defeat which Mathias de Albuquerque inflicted on the baron of Molingen at Montijo on 26th May 1644, felt at their ease in spite of the serious plot of the duke of Caminha and the archbishop of Braga, until it became obvious that Mazarin would desert them without compunction if it suited his purpose. The old Portuguese colonies at once declared for their fatherland, and this brought about a colonial war with Holland, in which indeed the Portuguese generals won many successes, but which deprived them of the assistance of the Dutch in Europe. Mazarin's refusal to insist on their independence at the congress at Miinster, though he protected their envoys against the Spaniards, made them despondent; and a very curious letter of Mazarin's (4th October 1647), offering the crown of Portugal to the duke of Longueville, exhibits at once the feeble character of John IV., the despair of the Portu- guese, and their dependence on France. Mazarin's deser- tion did not at first do great harm, for the war between France and Spain continued, though peace was made with the empire. In the midst of this universal war John IV. died in 1656.*~~

~~*As the prince of Brazil, Dom Theodosio, the eldest son of A the late king, had predeceased him, his second son Affonso, V a boy of thirteen, succeeded to the throne as Affonso VI. under the regency of his mother. The queen-regent, who had always been more energetic than her husband, deter- mined to pursue the war with Spain with more vigour and summoned*~~

~~*Marshal Schomberg to organize her armies. The result of Schomberg's presence soon appeared, and on 14th January 1659 Dom Antonio Luis de Menezes, count of Cantanhede, won a victory over Don Luiz de Haro at Elvas. This victory in one way injured the Portuguese cause, for it so incensed Don Luiz de Haro that, during the famous conferences at the Island of Pheasants with Mazarin which led to the signature of the treaty of the Pyrenees in 1659, he not only would not hear of any intercession for the Portuguese but insisted on the in- sertion of a secret article in the treaty to the effect that France would promise to entirely abandon them. Neither Mazarin nor Louis XIV. intended to keep this secret article and give up the advantage of having such a useful ally in the Peninsula, and they accordingly looked about for some means to evade it. England offered the oppor- tunity ; Charles IT. was seeking a wife and gladly accepted the suggestion that he should marry Catherine of Braganza, sister of the king of Portugal, both because Portugal had sheltered his cousins Prince Rupert and Prince Maurice in 1650, and because the colonial cessions which the queen- regent offered as her daughter's dowry would be very popular in England. The marriage was accordingly agreed upon in 1661, and in 1662 the earl of Sandwich came to bring the bride from Lisbon, while the English occupied Tangiers, Bombay, and Galle as her dowry, and promised to send troops to Portugal, and to make peace between the Dutch and the Portuguese. Before, however, the English soldiers arrived and the final struggle with Spain began, a family revolution had taken place in Portugal. The young king, a feeble vicious youth, was very wroth that his mother had exiled a favourite valet to the Brazils, and by the advice of two noblemen about his person suddenly declared himself of age in 1662 and transferred the government to the able hands of Luis de Sousa e*~~

~~*Pedro II.*~~

~~*HISTORY.] POBT Vasconcellos, count of Castel Melhor. The queen retired to a convent chagrined, but Castel Melhor continued her policy, and formed the English soldiers, who had arrived under the earl of Inchiquin, some French and German volunteers and mercenaries, and the newly-organized Portu- guese levies into a powerful army, of which Schomberg was the real, though not the ostensible, commander. With this army a series of victories were won, which caused Affonso VI. to be surnamed "Affonso the*~~

~~*Victorious," though his own successes, such as they were, were con- fined to the streets of Lisbon. On 8th June 1663 the count of Villa Flor with Schomberg by his side utterly defeated Don John of Austria, and afterwards retook Evora; on 7th July 1664 Pedro Jacques de Magalhies defeated the duke of Ossuna at Ciudad Rodrigo ; on 17th June 1665 the marquis of Marialva destroyed a Spanish army under the marquis of Carracena at the battle of Montes Claros, and Christovéo de Brito Pereira followed up this victory with one at Villa Vicosa. These successes entirely broke the power of Spain, and peace was only a matter of time, when Castel Melhor decided to increase both his own power and that of Portugal by marrying the king to a French princess. Such an alliance was highly approved of by Louis XIV., and the bride selected was Marie Frangoise Elisabeth, Mademoiselle d'Aumale, daughter of the duke of Savoy-Nemours and grand- daughter of Henry IV. of France. The marriage was celebrated in 1666 ; but Castel Melhor found that, instead of increasing his power, it worked his ruin. The young queen detested her husband, and fell in love with his brother Dom Pedro ; and after fourteen months of a hated union she left the palace and applied for a divorce on the ground of non-consummation to the chapter of the cathedral- church of Lisbon, while Dom Pedro shut up King Affonso in a portion of the palace and assumed the regency. He was recognized as regent by the cortes on Ist January 1668, and at once signed a peace with Spain on 13th February, by which the independence of Portugal was re- cognized in return for the cession of Ceuta. This peace, signed at Lisbon, was chiefly negotiated by the earl of Sandwich and Sir Richard Southwell, the English ambas- sadors at Madrid and Lisbon. On 24th March the queen's divorce was pronounced and confirmed by the pope, and on 2d April she married the regent. His rule was gladly submitted to, for the people of Portugal recognized his sterling qualities, which compared favourably with those of the unfortunate Affonso VI. Castel Melhor fled to France, and the king—for Dom Pedro only called himself "regent"—was imprisoned, first in the island of Terceira and then at Cintra, till his death in 1683, the very same year in which the queen also died.*~~

~~*As long as Affonso VI. lived, Dom Pedro's power was not thoroughly established, but in 1683 he was proclaimed king as Pedro II. His reign was marked by good internal administration, the breaking out of the War of the Spanish Succession, and the Methuen treaty. His good adminis- tration kept*~~

~~*him from being short of money, and enabled him to dispense with the cortes, which never met between 1697 and 1828; but the war of the succession almost emptied his treasury. He had in 1687, at the earnest request of the duke of Cadaval, his most intimate friend, consented to marry again in order to have an heir, and had selected Maria Sophia de Neuburg, daughter of the elector palatine, rather to the chagrin of Louis XIV., who, in the prospect of the death of Charles II. of Spain, had counted on the support of Pedro's first wife, a French princess, and who now sought to form a strong party at the court of Lisbon. He was so far successful that on the death of Charles II. King Pedro not only recognized Louis XIV.'s grandson as Philip V. of Spain but in 1701 protected a*~~

~~*UGAL 549*~~

~~*French fleet in the Tagus under the count of Chastenau against Sir George Rooke. The great Whig ministry of England was not likely to submit to this desertion on the part of England's ancient ally, and sent the Right Honourable John Methuen in 1703 to Lisbon with full powers to make a treaty, both political and commercial, with Portugal. On 27th December 1703 he signed the famous Methuen treaty, by which Portuguese wines were to be imported into England at a lower duty than those from France or Germany, in return for a similar concession to English textile fabrics. The immediate result was that Pedro acknowledged the archduke Charles, and the ulterior that Englishmen drank port wine instead of claret or hock throughout the last century, while the Portuguese imported nearly everything they wanted from England and remained without manufactures. On 7th March 1704 Sir George Rooke arrived at Lisbon, convoying 10,000 English troops under Lord Galway and the archduke Charles himself. The English army at once advanced with a Portuguese auxiliary force and took Salvaterra and Valenga. In the following year but little was done on the Portuguese frontier, because the archduke had sailed round to Barcelona, and Dom Pedro, who was slowly dying, handed over the regency to his sister Catherine, queen-dowager of England. Had he been conscious he might have learned of the great successes of the allied army under Jo&o de Sousa, marquis das Minas, and Lord Galway, who in rapid succession took Alcantara, Coria, Truxillo, Placencia, Ciudad Rodrigo, and Avila, and even for a short time occupied Madrid, and of their equally rapid retreat ; he*~~

~~never recovered sufficiently, however, to know of these movements ; he gradually sank, and died at Alcantara on 9th December 1706.~~

~~The long reign of John V., who assumed the royal John V.~~

~~state at once from the regent Catherine, resembles the reign of John III. At its commencement he left the power in the hands of his father's friend, the duke of Cadaval, who continued Dom Pedro's policy and prosecuted the war against Philip V. Cadaval bound the king more surely to the Anglo-Austrian party by marrying him to the archduchess Marianna, daughter of the deceased emperor Leopold I., who was escorted to Lisbon by an English fleet under Admiral Byng in 1708. Yet the war itself did not go favourably for the allies in Spain, for the Spaniards had become enthusiastic partisans of Philip V.; and in 1709 a Portuguese army under the marquis of Fronteira was beaten at Caia, while in 1711 Duguay Trouin took and sacked Rio de Janeiro, afterwards the capital of Brazil. The war languished all over Europe after the accession of the archduke Charles to the empire, and on 6th February 1715, nearly two years after the treaty of Utrecht, peace was signed between Portugal and Spain at Madrid by the secretary of state, Lopes Furtado de Mondonga, count of Cérte-Real. The king, as soon as he began to pay more attention to affairs, exhibited his attach- ment to the papacy, and in 1717 sent a fleet at the pope's bidding on a crusade against the Turks, which won a naval victory off Cape Matapan. The king declined to join the war against Alberoni, and disclosed a tendency to imitate Louis XIV., especially in building. The only indication of policy he showed was his determination to maintain peace by a close alliance with Spain: his daughter Maria Barbara was married to the infant Don Ferdinand, eldest son of Philip V., who succeeded to the throne of Spain as Ferdinand VI., while the Spanish infanta Marianna was married to the Portuguese heir-apparent, Dom Joseph. The enormous sums of money which John V. lent to the pope, to the real impoverishment of his country, brought him rewards which were of no real value, but which were such as he highly esteemed ; namely, the archbishopric of~~

~~Joseph.~~

~~Maria I. and Pedro HiT.~~

~~*Lisbon was erected into a patriarchate, and the title of “ Fidelissimus” or ‘“ Most-Faithful” was conferred upon the kings of Portugal, to correspond with those of “ Most Christian” and ‘Most Catholic” attributed to the kings of France and Spain respectively.*~~

~~*Joseph, who succeeded his father in 1750, had the merit of perceiving the pre-eminent powers of Sebastido de Carvalho, who governed Portugal throughout this reign, and who, under his title of the marquis of Pombal (see Pompat), ranks among the very greatest of 18th-century statesmen. In everything—in his great internal and ad- ministrative reforms, in his financial reforms, in the re- organization of the army, in the abolition of slavery, and in the great struggle with the Jesuits—Joseph supported his minister. Pombal made the king more absolute than ever, and exalted the royal prerogative while using it for purposes of reform; and in return the king maintained Pombal in power in spite of the violent protests of the priests and the opposition of his wife. Circumstances greatly helped the minister to establish an ascendency over the king’s mind: his conduct at the time of the great earthquake on 1st November 1755 secured him his high position over the other two secretaries of state; the Tavora plot gave him the influence which enabled him to overthrow the Jesuits in 1759; and the second attempt on the king’s life in 1769 strengthened his hands in his negotiations with Rome and ensured the suppression of the order in 1773. The only war in which Portugal was engaged during this reign was caused by the close alliance with England, for, when Choiseul made the Family Com- pact and Spain entered upon the Seven Years’ War, a Spanish army under the marquis of Sarria invaded Port- ugal and took Braganza and Almeida in 1762. Pombal immediately applied to England for help, when the count of Lippe-Biickeburg came over with a body of English troops and set to work to organize the Portuguese army ; and, mainly owing to the brilliant services of Brigadier- General Burgoyne, the Spaniards were defeated at Valencia de Alcantara and Villa Velha, and peace was made on 10th February 1763. The close of the reign was disturbed by disputes with Spain as to the possession of Sacramento in South America, which were still unsettled when King Joseph died on 20th February 1777, leaving four*~~

~~*daughters, of whom the eldest, Donna Maria Francisca, had married the king's brother, Dom Pedro.*~~

~~*The accession of Donna Maria was the signal for the overthrow of the great marquis and the reversal of his policy. The new queen was a weak woman, and her husband, Dom Pedro, who was proclaimed king, was a weak man ; coins were struck in the names of Pedro III. and Maria I, but both sovereigns were ruled by the queen- dowager, who hated Pombal, and eventually sentenced him never to come within twenty leagues of the court. The incapacity of his successor soon became manifest, while the queen, who was completely under the sway of her confessor, Dom Ignacio de San Caetano, found her greatest happiness in raising and sending large sums of money to the Latin convent at Jerusalem. Such was the state of Portugal when the great crisis in the world's history caused by the French Revolution was at hand ; and, when in 1792 it became evident that affairs could no longer go on in this haphazard fashion, it was also evident that the queen was no longer fit even for the slight fatigue she had to undergo. Her brain had given way in 1788, after the successive deaths of her husband, of her eldest son Dom Joseph, who had married his aunt, Donna Maria Benedicta, and of her confessor, and Dom John found it necessary to take the management of affairs into his own hands, though he was not actually declared regent until 1799.*~~

~~*POR? G 2 bh*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*About the time that Dom John became regent the wish to check the spread of the principles of the French Revolution, which were as much feared in Portugal as in all other Continental states, led to the great activity of Dom Diogo Ignacio de Pina Manique, the intendant- general of police. He eagerly hunted down all Portuguese gentlemen suspected of encouraging French principles or of being freemasons, expelled all Frenchmen from the kingdom, and kept a jealous eye on the American consul, Edward Church, and a merchant named Jacome Ratton, whom he declared to be at the head of a republican con- spiracy. Moreover, the Portuguese ministers not only combated the dreaded French principles at home, they also believed it a holy duty to join in the general war against France, and therefore a corps*~~

~~*of 5000 men was sent into the eastern Pyrenees to serve under General John Forbes Skelater, and four ships under the marquis of Niza joined the English fleet in the Mediterranean. The Portuguese force under Forbes Skelater served in all the actions in the eastern Pyrenees, shared in the successes of General Ricardos, and in the defeats of the count de la. Union and General Urrutia; but nevertheless the Spanish Government, then under the influence of Godoy, the Prince of the Peace, did not hesitate to desert Portugal and make a separate peace with the French republic at Basel in July 1795. This naturally drove Portugal into a still closer alliance with England ; and, when, after the treaty of San Ildefonso (1796), by which Spain declared war against England, and the secret convention between Pérignon and Godoy to divide Portugal between them, Spanish troops were massed on the Portuguese frontiers, an urgent supplication for help was sent to England. In response the House of Commons voted Portugal a subsidy of £200,000 ; a force of 6000 men was despatched under Major-General Sir Charles Stuart, which deterred the Spaniards from attempting an invasion; and the prince of Waldeck, like the count of Lippe in former days, was sent to reorganize the Portuguese army. Yet the English party was not strong enough to carry the day entirely; Sir Charles Stuart was soon withdrawn, and an effort made to secure peace with France through the mediation of Spain. But the concessions of the French party were of no avail; the First Consul was as violently opposed to Portugal, as being a province of England, as the Convention and Directory had been, and in 1800 Lucien Bonaparte was sent to Madrid with instructions from his brother to insist on the abandonment of the English alliance, on the opening of Portuguese ports to France and the closing of them to England, on the extension of French Guiana to the Amazons, on the cession of a portion of Portugal to Spain, until the recovery from England of Trinidad, Port Mahon, and Malta, and on the payment of a large sum of money, and. he was authorized to offer to Spain a corps of 15,000 Frenchmen if these hard terms were rejected. The Portu- guese ministers did reject them, and immediately Leclerc's corps entered Spain. The campaign lasted but a few days. Olivenza and Campo Mayor fell into the hands of the Spaniards, who also won bloodless victories at Arronches and Flor da Rosa. Peace was made at Badajoz with Spain, by which Portugal ceded Olivenza, and at Paris with France, by which it consented to the extension of French Guiana to the Amazons, and promised a large indemnity. Napoleon Bonaparte was*~~

~~*anything but satisfied with the treaty of Badajoz, and received Lucien on his return with but little favour, for his aim was utterly to destroy Portugal as a nation ; and it was with a full intention to excite her to war that he sent one of the roughest and least educated of his generals, Lannes, as ambassador to Lisbon. Lannes acted fully up to his chief's expectations: he ordered the dismissal of all the ministers who favoured England, and*~~

~~*The Pen- insular War.*~~

~~*HISTORY. |*~~

~~*was obeyed both from fear of France and from a dislike of England owing to her high-handed naval policy. Even this humble submission of the regent did not satisfy Napoleon, and in 1804 he replaced Lannes by Junot, whom he ordered to insist upon Portugal's declaring war against England. Then fora time he desisted from executing his plans against the country owing to his great campaigns in Europe, and made a treaty of neutrality with the Portu- guese Government. At length in 1807, having beaten Austria, Prussia, and Russia, Napoleon again turned his thoughts to his project for the annihilation of Portugal, which had become more than ever a thorn in his side, since it refused to co-operate in his Continental schemes for ruining England. He resolved at first to act with Spain and Godoy, as Pérignon had done in 1797, and on 29th October 1807 signed the treaty of Fontainebleau, by which it was arranged that Portugal should be conquered and divided into three parts: the northern portion should be given to the king of Etruria in the place of his Italian kingdom, which Napoleon desired to annex, while the southern portion was to be formed into an independent kingdom for Godoy, and the central provinces were to be held by France until a general peace. The signature of the treaty was followed by immediate action: Junot moved with an army rapidly across Spain, and, together with a Spanish force under General Caraffa, entered Portugal from the centre, while General Taranco and General Solano with two other Spanish armies occupied the Minho and Alemtejo. With amazing rapidity Junot accomplished the march, and the Portuguese hardly knew that war was imminent until on 27th November Colonel Lecor rushed into Lisbon with the news that the French were in posses- sion of Abrantes. This alarming intelligence unnerved the regent, who listened to the strongly-*~~

~~worded advice of Sir Sidney Smith, commander of the English ships in the Tagus, to abandon his kingdom for the Brazils, and leave the English to defend Portugal; and on 27th November Dom John, after naming a council of regency, went on board the English fleet with his whole family, including the queen Maria I. The English ships had hardly left the Tagus when a small force of wearied French soldiers, who were all that remained from the terrible fatigues of the march, entered Lisbon on 30th November.~~

~~Nothing proves more certainly the widely-spread exist- ence of what were called French principles—that is to say, democratic ideas—in Portugal than the hearty reception which Junot met with from the first. At Santarem a deputation of the freemasons of Portugal, who were there, as in other Continental countries, a secret society for the propagation of democratic principles, welcomed him ; the marquis of Alorna with the army instantly submitted to him ; and the council of regency, knowing the temper of the citizens, made no attempt to hold Lisbon against him. But Junot showed no desire to grant the Portuguese a constitution, and after seizing all the money in the royal treasury he divided the country into military governments under his generals, issuing on 1st February a proclamation that the house of Braganza had ceased to reign. He then began to hope that he himself might succeed the Braganzas, and for this purpose sought to conciliate the Portuguese by reducing the requisition demanded by Napoleon from forty millions of francs to twenty millions, and commenced a negotiation with the radical or French party in Portugal through Luca de Scabra da Silva to induce them to send a petition or deputation to the emperor, asking for Junot to be their king. But his attempts at conciliation were of no avail; and, when the Spanish general Bellesta, who had succeeded Taranco at Oporto, seized the French governor, General Quesnel, declared for the regent, and marched into Galicia, Junot departed from Lisbon, leaving~~

~~the city in the hands of a regency, headed by the bishop of Oporto. The bishop at once sent to England for help, and encouraged fresh revolts all over the kingdom, till nearly every city in Portugal rose against the French~~

~~*and established its own junta of government. Meanwhile the English Government had willingly listened to the request of the bishop of Oporto, and ordered the small army which had been collected at Cork, under the command of Lieu- tenant-General Sir Arthur Wellesley, for an expedition to South America, to proceed to Portugal. Sir Arthur landed at the mouth of the Mondego river, advanced towards Lis- bon, and, after defeating Laborde's division at Rolica on 17th August 1808, routed Junot himself at Vimieiro on 21st August. These victories were followed by the con- vention of Cintra, by which Junot agreed to vacate Portugal and give up all the fortresses in his possession ; this con- vention, however disappointing from a military point of view, was eminently satisfactory to the Portuguese people, who saw themselves as speedily delivered from the French as they had been conquered by them. The regency was again established, and at once despatched Domingos Antonio de Sousa Coutinho, a brother of the count of Lin- hares, to London, to ask that an English minister with full powers should be sent to Lisbon, and that Sir Arthur Wellesley might be appointed to reorganize their army. Their requests were complied with: the Right Honourable J.C. Villiers was sent to Lisbon, and, as Sir Arthur Welles- ley could not be spared, Major-General Beresford, who had learned Portuguese when governor of Madeira, which he had occupied in the preceding year, was sent to command their army. Portugal, however, was not yet safe from the French ; Sir John Moore's advance to Salamanca and his retreat to Corunna had left the country but slightly gar- risoned, and, in spite of the braggadocio of the bishop, Oporto quickly fell into the hands of Marshal Soult. Fortunately Soult, ike Junot, was led away by the idea of becoming king of Portugal, and did not advance on Lisbon, thus giving time for Sir Arthur Wellesley again to arrive in the country with a powerful army. In the interval the Portuguese, in spite of some spirited fights by General Silveira, had shown how little they could do in their disorganized state, and the English Government determined to send out English officers to organize them and to take 10,000 Portuguese into English pay. Mean- while Sir Arthur Wellesley had driven Soult from Oporto, had advanced into Spain, and won the battle of Talavera. From these successes of the English general it is pitiable to turn to the Portuguese regency. With the departure of the king all the able men of the royal party seemed to have left the country; the leaders of the radical party were either in disgrace or had fled to France; and none were left to compose the regency save a set of*~~

intriguers, whose chief idea was to get as much money from England as possible. The best part of the nation had entered the army, hence Marshal Beresford, aided by the adjutant- general Manuel de Brito Mousinho, soon organized a force which at Busaco proved itself worthy to fight beside the English soldiery. The regency got from bad to worse, till neither Beresford nor Wellington could work with it, and the English cabinet had to demand that Sir Charles Stuart (son of General Sir Charles Stuart), their ambas- sador at Lisbon, should receive a place upon it. His great ability and tact soon made him master, and a certain portion of the money sent by England to pay the Portuguese troops did then find its way to its proper destination. Yet the regency, even when thus strengthened, failed to make itself popular ; and that there wasa large radical party in Lisbon is sufficiently proved by the deputation of eighteen journal- ists to the Azores in September 1810. The troubles of Portugal were not yet over; the most formidable invasion

of all was to come. During the time of Masséna's cam- paign in Portugal the Portuguese showed the valour of a truly heroic nation. When Lord Wellington determined to retire to the lines of Torres Vedras, he commanded all the peasants to desert their fields and leave nothing for the French to subsist upon, and they obeyed him with touching fidelity. The Portuguese troops fully proved their value as soldiers when led and trained by such English generals as Pack and Ashworth, Bradford and John Hamil- ton, on every battlefield in the Peninsula and the south of France, and especially at Salamanca and the Nivelle. They well deserved the praise bestowed upon them by Wellington and Beresford, and the enthusiastic reception which they met with when they returned home in 1814.

Shortly after the conclusion of the war, in 1816, the mad queen Maria I. died, and the regent succeeded to the throne as King John VI. The English Government earnestly pressed him to return to Lisbon, where dissensions in the regency and the universal discontent urgently summoned him. But the new king was perpetually hampered by his intriguing and ambitious wife, Carlota Joaquina, who,

~~*in order to raise a party in her favour, had as early as'*~~

~~*1805 promised a constitution to the Portuguese, and in 1812 had plotted to become independent queen of Brazil. The regency had become intensely unpopular, for Sir Charles Stuart and Marshal Beresford ruled despotically ; and the mass of the people, who had been willing to endure the despotism of the English during the terrible war for existence, as well as the army, which had willingly obeyed the English officers on the field of battle, grew weary of foreign rule in time of peace and raised the cry of Portugal for the Portuguese. Directly after the war, in 1817, the first rising took place in Lisbon in the form of a pronun- cilamento of General Gomes Freire de Andrade, who had commanded the Portuguese contingent in the Russian campaign of 1812; but it was instantly and cruelly sup- pressed by Beresford and the regency, and the general and eleven others were executed. Yet the radical party was by no means conquered, and when Beresford went to Rio de Janeiro in 1820 advantage was taken of his absence by the people of Oporto, headed by certain officers in the garrison, to raise the cry for reform; the regency, unable to act without Beresford, gave way before a similar rising at Lisbon; the English officers were everywhere expelled ; a new regency was proclaimed ; Beresford was not allowed to land when he returned from Brazil; and a constituent assembly was summoned. The new assembly, consisting largely of men of the most radical opinions, at once abol- ished the Inquisition and the relics of feudalism, and pro- ceeded to draw up an impracticable constitution, which showed that they had studied the glowing speeches of the men of the French Revolution and had not profited by a knowledge of their mistakes. Prussia, Austria, and Russia withdrew their ambassadors, and England insisted on John's returning to his kingdom. He accordingly left the Brazils to the government of his elder son Pedro, and set out for Portugal, where in 1822, at the earnest request of that son, he solemnly swore to obey the new constitution. He was at once met by the opposition of the queen and his younger son Dom Miguel, who refused to recognize the constitution; in consequence they were expelled from Lisbon. This event, with the invasion of Spain by the French to put down the rebellion of 1823, encouraged Francisco da Silveira, count of Amarante, to raise a pro- nunciamento in Tras-os-Montes; but the king at Lisbon declared, amid loud applause, that the constitution of 1822 was abrogated and his own absolutism restored,*~~

~~*and he appointed the count of Palmella, the head of the English or constitutional party, to be his minister. But the abso- lutist party did not aim at a new form of constitutional*~~

~~*Pon Te G & L*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*government; they were desirous to reinstate the old abso- lutism. The queen and Dom Miguel headed a new plot ; the king's friend, the marquis of Loulé, was assassinated ; Palmella was imprisoned and the king himself shut up in his palace. The united action of the foreign ministers who had remained in Lisbon freed the king; the new in- surrection was suppressed ; Palmella was again appointed minister; and the king, with the two chief conspirators, the queen and Dom Miguel, left Portugal once more for the Brazils. In the following year (1826) John VI. died, leaving by his will his daughter, the infanta Isabel Maria, as regent, to the great disappointment of Dom Miguel, who had returned to Portugal with the expectation of re- ceiving it as his inheritance, while his brother Dom Pedro ruled in Brazil.*~~

~~*The next twenty-five years are the darkest in the whole history of Portugal and the most complicated to analyse, for the establishment of parliamentary government was no easy task ; it is almost impossible to follow the rapid changes which succeeded each other, and quite impossible to understand the varying motives of the different states- men and generals. The keynote to the whole series of the disturbances is to be found in the influence of the army. Beresford's creation was a grand fighting machine; but armies, and more particularly generals, are almost'certain to intrigue in times of peace. On ascending the united*~~

~~*thrones Dom Pedro IV. proceeded to draw up a charter Pedro containing the bases of a moderate parliamentary govern- IV.*~~

~~*ment and sent it over to Portugal by the English minister, Sir Charles Stuart, and then abdicated the crown of Portugal in favour of his daughter, Donna Maria da Gloria, a child only seven years old, on condition that she married his brother Dom Miguel, who was to recognize the new con- stitution. The charter was received with joy by the parlia- mentary party,*~~

~~*and Palmella became prime minister; but in 1827 the king foolishly appointed Dom Miguel to be regent in Portugal. This ambitious prince was exceedingly*~~

~~*popular with the old nobility, the army, and the poor ; and,*~~

~~*having declared himself absolute king, he drove the whole constitutional or chartist party—Palmella, Saldanha, Villa Flor, Sampaio, and their adherents—into exile. They fled to England, where the young queen then was, but, although they found popular opinion strongly in their favour; they found also that the duke of Wellington and his Tory ministry highly approved of Dom Miguel's behaviour, and that they persisted in confounding the moderate and the radical parties, and in believing that Palmella was a democrat. Meanwhile the reign of Dom Miguel had be- come a reign of terror, and a new movement was begun by the conjoined chartist and radical parties, who respectively advocated the charter of 1826 and the constitution of 1822, but who sank their differences to oppose Dom Miguel. The island of Terceira (Azores) had never submitted to this prince, and there in 1829 the marquis of Palmella, the count of Villa Flor, and José Antonio Guerreiro declared them- selves regents for the young queen; and on 11th August 1830 they defeated in Praia Bay the fleet sent against them by Dom Miguel. This victory was the first ray of hope to the chartist party; all who could get away from Portugal hastened to the Azores ; and in 1831 Dom Pedro, having resigned the imperial crown of Brazil to his infant son, came to London to join his daughter and prepare for a vigorous struggle against his brother. He met with acquiescence, if not encouragement, from the Liberal Gov- ernment of Earl Grey, and managed to raise a large loan ; then he betook himself with all the troops he could raise*~~

~~*'to the Azores, where he appointed the count of Villa Flor*~~

~~*general-in-chief and Captain Sartorius of the English navy commander of the fleet. In July 1832 Dom Pedro arrived at Oporto with 7500 men, being enthusiastically welcomed*~~

~~*Maria IT.*~~

~~*HISTORY. |*~~

~~*by the citizens; Dom Miguel instantly laid siege to the city. The siege was a terrible one; want within the walls and cholera among the besiegers decimated the armies, and the only real success gained was the victory of Sartorius over the fleet of Dom Miguel on 11th October. In 1833 more vigorous action began; Major-General Joio Carlos Saldanha de Oliveira e Daun, count of Saldanha, an old officer of Beresford's and a member of the Palmella Govern- ment in 1825, took the command in Oporto and beat off the French general Bourmont, who had been engaged by Dom Miguel to command his forces; the count of Villa Flor sailed from Oporto to Algarves, defeated General Telles Jordio, and after a triumphal march northwards occupied Lisbon ; and Captain Charles Napier, who had succeeded Sartorius, destroyed Dom Miguel's fleet off Cape St Vincent in 1833. In this year Queen Maria came to Lisbon and was received with transports of delight, while Dom Pedro as regent again proclaimed the charter of 1826. The year 1834 was one of unbroken success for the chartists ; England and France recognized the queen, and the Spanish ministry of Queen Isabella, knowing Dom Miguel to be a Carlist, sent two corps under Generals Rodil and Serrano to the help of Dom Pedro. Saldanha defeated the forces of the usurper at Torres Novas and Alamoster ; Napier reduced Beira; Villa Flor, who had been made duke of Terceira, reduced Tras-os-Montes and won a victory at Asseiceira ; 84 de Bandeira reduced Alemtejo ; the com- bined Spanish and Portuguese armies surrounded the rest of Dom Miguel's adherents at Evora Monte; and Dom Miguel himself capitulated on 26th May. By the con- vention of Evora Monte the usurper, on condition of re- ceiving a pension, promised to leave Portugal for ever ; and the cortes at Lisbon not only declared him and his heirs ineligible for the throne but forbade them to return to Portugal under penalty of death. This same cortes attempted to arrange the finances, and abolished the orders of the friars, who had hitherto kept alive the party of rebellion in the villages, and finally, at Dom Pedro's request—for he felt his health failing—declared the queen of age on 18th September 1834. Dom Pedro, who had through- out been the heart and soul of his daughter's party, retired to Queluz (near Lisbon), where he died six days after- wards from the effects of his great labours and fatigues. "The death of Dom Pedro deprived Queen Maria II., who was now only fifteen, of her greatest support, but a very strong ministry was formed, with the duke of Palmella as president and the duke of Terceira at the war office. Such a ministry might have lasted for a long time, but neither the*~~

~~queen, the nobility, nor the people understood the prin- ciples of real constitutional government, and the army was a constant source of danger. Members of different parties, while not conceiving that all alike loved Portugal, believed sincerely in their own opinions: the party in power pro- scribed and exiled its opponents, while the party in opposi- tion invariably appealed to arms instead of seeking to obtain office by legitimate parliamentary means. In addi- tion, the country was ravaged by bands of brigands, who called themselves '"Miguelites," and who perpetually escaped into Spain when attacked in force ; and, as each Government refused to recognize or pay interest upon the loans raised by its predecessors, the financial credit of Portugal soon fell to a very low ebb in the money markets of Europe. It is unprofitable to examine here the prin- ciples of the chief statesmen of the time as new Govern- ments quickly succeeded each other ; it will be sufficient to notice only the chief pronunciamentos and appeals to arms, and to remark the gradual approach to real parlia- mentary government. Queen Maria da Gloria's reign is one of violent party struggles, for they can hardly be called civil wars, so little did they involve, and that of~~

~~reo taf UG 2A di~~

~~553~~

~~King Luis the reign of definite and peaceable parliamentary government. In her earlier years the queen was chiefly under the influence of her stepmother, the second wife of Dom Pedro, Amelia of Bavaria, and in 1835 she married the queen-dowager's brother, Augustus Charles Eugéne Napoleon, duke of Leuchtenberg, second son of Eugéne Beauharnais by the princess Augusta of Bavaria, who died two months after his marriage, in March 1835. In the following January Maria married Prince Ferdinand of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, nephew of Leopold, the first king of the Belgians; and it was his nomination to the post of commander-in-chief that brought about the first appeal to arms. In September 1836 Fernando Soares da Caldeira headed a pronunciamento in Lisbon for the re-establish- ment of the constitution of 1822, which was completely successful, and resulted in the drawing up of a new con- stitution. The constitution of 1838, which was really that of 1822 slightly modified, managed to work till 1842, when one~~

~~of the radical ministers, Antonio Bermudo de Costa Cabral, suddenly declared the charter of 1826 at Oporto. The duke of Terceira headed a successful pro- nunciamento in favour of the charter, and came into office with Costa Cabral as home secretary and virtual prime minister. Costa Cabral, who in 1845 was created count of Thomar, made himself very acceptable to the queen, and, interpreting the charter in the most royalist sense, even attempted to check the freedom of the press. It was now the turn of the radicals or Septembrists to have recourse to arms: after an attempt to place Saldanha in office, the opposition broke out into open insurrection under the viscount of S4 de Bandeira, the count of Bomfim, and the count das Antas. This new insurrection is known as the War of Maria da Fonte or "patuleia," and was not sup- pressed until the conclusion of the convention of Granada on 29th June 1847, when a general amnesty was declared, Saldanha being continued in power. Queen Maria da Gloria died on 15th November 1853, and her husband, the king-consort, Dom Ferdinand II., assumed the regency until his eldest son Dom Pedro V. came of age.~~

~~The era of peaceful parliamentary government which succeeded the stormy reign of Queen Maria II. has been one of prosperity for Portugal, and much of that peace and prosperity is due to the great literary and historical revival which is signalized by the names of Joio Baptista de Almeida Garrett and Antonio Feliciano de Castilho, of Alexandre Herculano de Carvalho e Araujo and Luis Augusto Rebello da Silva. Men were not wanting in the early part of the 19th century to advocate the formation of an Iberian republic or kingdom, comprising the whole of the Peninsula; but the revival of national pride in recall- ing the glorious past of Portuguese history, which has been the work alike of Herculano and Almeida Garrett in dif- erent lines, has breathed afresh the spirit of patriotism into a people who had been almost wearied out by continual pronunciamentos. The only political event of any import-~~

~~ance during the reign of Dom Pedro V., who came of age Pedro V.~~

~~and assumed the government in 1855, and who in 1857 married the princess Stephanie of Hohenzollern, was the affair of the "Charles et Georges." This French ship was engaged in what was undoubtedly the slave-trade, though slightly disguised, off the coast of Africa, when it was~~

~~seized by the authorities of Mozambique, and, in accord- ance with the laws and treaties against the slave-trade, its captain, Roussel, was condemned to two years' imprison- ment. The emperor Napoleon III., glad to have a chance of posing before the French people, and counting on his close alliance with England, instantly sent a large fleet to the Tagus under Admiral Lavaud, and demanded compen- sation, which, as England showed no signs of assistance, Portugal was compelled to pay. The whole country, especi- XIX. —- 70~~

~~Luis.~~

~~504~~

~~ally the city of Lisbon, was ravaged by cholera and yellow fever during this reign, itself evidence of the extreme neglect of all sanitary precautions ; and on 11th November 1861 the king, who refused to quit the pestilence-stricken capital, died of cholera, and was speedily followed to the grave by two of his brothers, Dom Ferdinand and Dom John.~~

~~At the time of Dom Pedro's death his brother and heir, Dom Luis, was travelling on the Continent; and his father, Dom Ferdinand, again assumed the regency until his son's return, soon after which Luis married Maria Pia of Savoy, daughter of Victor Emmanuel, king of Italy. The new king followed his brother's policy and allowed his ministers to fight their battles in the chambers without interference from himself. During his reign the old combatants of the reign of Maria da Gloria died off one by one,—Palmella, Terceira, Thomar, Saldanha, and SA de Bandeira. Their successors in political leadership, the duke of Loulé, Aguiar, the mar- quis of Avila, and Antonio Manuel Fontes Pereira de Mello, though not inferior in administrative ability, always avoided an appeal to arms, and therefore, if they do not contribute striking pages to the history of Portugal, certainly con- tributed more to the prosperity of the country. The last pronunciamento, or rather attempt at a pronunciamento, of the last survivor of Queen Maria's turbulent statesmen, the duke of Saldanha, in 1870, only proved how entirely the day of pronunciamentos had gone by. He conceived the notion that the duke of Loulé, as a freemason and an advanced progressist, was a favourite with the king, after the manner of the duke of Polignac and Charles X. of France ; so, recalling a few such historical~~

~~*examples to the king's mind, he insisted on the duke's dismissal, and threatened an appeal to arms. The king, perceiving that Saldanha was in earnest, and knowing the great influence of the old man, consented to dismiss the duke of Loulé. After keeping Saldanha himself in office for four months, Luis sent him as ambassador to London notwithstanding his eighty years, where he could do no mischief, and where he died in 1876. The steady prosperity of Portugal has been largely due to the present form of government based on the charter of 1826, as modified in 1852, and is borne witness to by the reconstitution of the House of Peers in 1878 from an hereditary assembly to one of life peers. It is a notable fact that the two loans raised by the Portu- guese Government in 1880 and in 1882 were quickly sub- scribed, and mainly within Portugal itself. Of recent years much attention has been drawn to the Portuguese settlements in Africa, since the opening up of the interior has made them of vast importance on both the east and the west coast. The king, ministers, and people of Portu- gal are fully aware of the new vista to their prosperity thus disclosed to them, and the Portuguese travellers Serpa Pinto, Roberto Ivens, and Brito Capello have taken an important share in the explorations which have opened up the interior of Africa and paved the way for its develop- ment. Public works, however, have not been neglected, and Fontes Pereira de Mello, the leader of the "regener- ador" party, who has been prime minister three times—from 1871 to 1877, from 1878 to 1882, and from 1883—has steadily improved and extended the railway and tele- graph systems, and carried out the more difficult labours of sanitary reform. Education also has not been neglected, and a good system of secondary and primary education has been established, mainly owing to the labours of the Portuguese poet, Antonio Feliciano de Castilho. The share taken by the leaders of the great literary and historical revival—which dates from the conclusion of the civil wars of 1846 and the publication of the first volume of Hercu- lano's History of Portugal in 1848—in Portuguese political*~~

~~*and social reform is a marked feature of the modern parlia- |*~~

~~*PO ere) G Asse*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*mentary life of the country ; and not only have the poets Almeida Garrett and Mendes Leal and the historian Rebello da Silva held office, but many of the most promising of the new generation of literary men, such as Latino Coelho and Pinheiro Chagas, have distinguished themselves in politics. Few countries so well realize the advantages of a constitu. tional and parliamentary form of government as Portugal ; socialism possesses there a reforming, not a revolutionary force ; unity of pride in their country inspired by great writers has made the modern Portuguese ambitious to revive the glories of the past, and united men of all shades of opinion in acommon patriotism. The Camoens celebra- tion of 1880 showed that the Brazilians were still proud of their mother-country, and that the Portuguese race all over the world was ready to develop new energy and per- severance, and to prove its true descent from the men who under Affonso Henriques overthrew the Moors, who under John I. and John IV. rejected the rule of the Spaniards, under Affonso de Albuquerque and Jo&o de Castro con- quered the East, and who by the voyage of Vasco de Gama created a new era in the history of the world. Bibliography.—The best continuous history of Portugal is still that of Heinrich Schaefer, in Heeren and Ukert's Europdische Staats-Geschichte, 1840-46, partly translated into Portuguese by J. L. Domingues de Mendonga (Lisbon, 1842-47), which quite eclipsed the very ordinary works of Diogo Lemos (20 vols., 1786-1820), Sousa Monteiro (10 vols., 1838), and J. F. Pereira (3 vols., 1846-48), and the two chief English and Frencl. histories up to that date,—J. Dunham's (along with that of Spain) in Lardner's Cabinet Cyclopedia (1838-43), and Bouchot's, in Duruy's Jistotre Uni- verselle (1846). After the publication of Schaefer's ZZistory, and not uninfluenced by it, Alexandre Herculano commenced his great work, the Historia de Portugal (4 vols., 1848-53), in which he overthrew old legends and treated history scientifically. Owing, however, to the persecution and libellous pamphlets of such men as Francisco Recreio, J. D. Fonseca Pereira, and A. C. Pereira, he closed his work at the year 1279; but from 1854 to 1857 he pub- lished his Da Origem ¢ Estabelecimento da Inquisi¢do em Portugal, which also caused a great outcry. Nevertheless his example was followed, and a series of extremely good histories has been issued during the last twenty years, notably L. A. Rebello da Silva's Historia de Portugal pendente XVI. e XVIT. Seculos (5 vols., 1860-71), which covers the failure of Dom Sebastian and the revolu- tion of 1640; J. M. Latino Coelho's Historia de Portugal desde*~~

~~os Jins do XVIII. Seculo até 1814 (1874); J. F. Fonseca Benevides's Las Rainhas de Portugal (1878); and the extremely interesting and illustrated Historia de Portugal in 37 parts by Antonio Ennes, B. Ribeiro, Edouard Vidal, G. Lobato, L. Cordeiro, and Pinheiro Chagas (1877-83). The new historical school, headed by the vis- count of Santarem, has also spent much time upon the conquests of the Portuguese in India, and Herculano edited the Rotetro de Vasco de Gama; nor must the admirable editions of the old Portuguese navigators and travellers published by the Hakluyt Society be omitted, or the well-known Life of Prince Henry of Portugal, by R. H. Major (London, 1868), which has been trans- lated into Portuguese by J. A. Ferreira Brando (1876). The new school has paid attention to the publication of the early chronicles of Portugal, and since 1856 several volumes of Portugallie Monu- menta Historica have been issued by the Lisbon Academy of Sciences under the direction of Herculano; but this work was not neglected by their predecessors, as appears in the Collecctio dos Livros ineditos de Historia Portugueza, edited by J. F. Corréa da Serra for the academy (11 vols., 1790-1804), and the Collecéo dos principaes Aucores da Historia Portugueza, published in the same manner (1806). Federa, too, were not neglected during the present century ; there exist two good collections: one, commenced by the viscount of Santarem as Quadro elementar das Relacées politicas e diplomaticas de Portugal, and continued by Rebello da Silva for the academy as Corpo diplomatico Portuguez, extends from the early days of the monarchy till 1640 (36 vols., 1856-78); the other, which is practically a continuation of the first, is called a Collecctio dos Actos publieos celebrados entre a Coroa de Portugal eas mais Potencias desde 1640 até ao Presente, commenced by J. Ferreira Borges de Castro, and continued by J. Judice Biker (8 vols., 1856-66). Two works on constitutional history here deserve mention, Memorias para a Historia das Inquiracoes dos primeiros Reinados de Portugal, published (1816) by the Lisbon College of Diplomatics, and Memorias para a Historia e Theoria das Cortes, by the viscount of Santarem (Lisbon, 1828). Before noticing books treating exclusively of the history of the present cen- tury, a few special works and articles ought to be enumerated, such as the chevalier de Jant's Relations de la France avec le Portugal~~

~~Trouba- dours.~~

~~*Proven- gal influ- ence.*~~

~~*LITERATURE. |*~~

~~*rok FUG AL*~~

~~*au temps de Mazarin, by Jules Tessier (Paris, 1877); Vertot's |*~~

~~*Revolutions de Portugal (Paris, 1678); Miguel d'Antas, Les faux D. Sebastien (Paris, 1866); R. Carte's History of the Revolutions of Portugal from the Foundation of that Kingdom to the year 1677, with Letters of Sir R. Southwell during his Embassy there to the Duke of Ormond (London, 1740), which are the best books on their respective subjects, and two articles in vol. ii. of the Annaes das Serencias Moraes e Politicas, "D. Jo&io II. ela Nobreza," by L. A. Rebello da Silva, and " Apontamentos para a Historia da Conquista de Portugal por Filippe IT.," by A. P. Lopes de Mendonca. The literature of the history of the last hundred years requires careful*~~

~~*e do Kstabelecimento do Governo parlementar em Portugal, by Simiao José da Luz Soriano (8 vols., 1866-82); for the Peninsular War*~~

~~*see, besides Napier's history, the Historia gceral da Invasdéo dos ;*~~

~~*| 1870). selection ; the best work is, however, the Historia da Guerra etvil |*~~

~~*5199)*~~

~~*Francezes em Portugal, by Accursio das Neves (Lisbon, 1810-11), and Excerptos historicos relativos a Guerra denominada da Peninsula, c¢ as anteriores de 1801, de Roussillon e Catalufia, by Claudio de Chaby (1863). The period of the war of Dom Miguel is best seen in the Memorias para a Historia do tempo que duron a Usurpacdo de D. Miguel, by J. L. Freire de Carvalho (Lisbon, 1841-43); the Historia da Liberdade em Portugal, by J. G. Barros Cunha (Lisbon, 1869) ; The Civil War in Portugal, and the Siege of Oporto by a British Officer of Hussars [Colonel Badcock] (1835) ; and The Wars of Succession of Spain and Portugal, by William Bollaert (vol. i., For the ensuing period consult the Despachos e Correspond- eneia do*~~

~~*Duque de Palmella (8 vols., 1851-54) ; the Correspondencia oficial de Conde de Carneira com 0 Duque de Palmella (1874) ; and the Memoirs of the Duke of Saldanha, by the count of Carnota (2 vols., 1880). GEE WES)*~~

~~*PART III.—LITERATURE.*~~

~~*Portugal has a distinct literature as well as a distinct history, and one which is intimately bound up with the growth of the nation. The biographies, histories, and travels of the 16th cen- tury are unrivalled of their age in brilliancy and vigour, while the poetry of a land where all men are singers is not only admirable in itself but illustrates a continuous and undecided struggle between native and foreign schools. The period of the growth of national independence and of the victories over the Moors was that of the brilliant poetry of the Portuguese troubadours, which became at last truly characteristic ; but the brilliancy speedily died away with peace and national unity, to be revived in the heroic period of Vasco de Gama and Albuquerque. For in the 16th century, after the classical school of Sa de Miranda had given a polish to the language, the national epics of Camoens and his followers were produced, which might have yielded more lasting results had not the Spanish dominion paralysed all national life. In more modern times the reaction against mere imitations of foreign literature has resulted in the formation of a new native school by which much good work both in poetry and in historical research has already been accomplished.*~~

~~*12th to 14th Century.—The Portuguese, Gallegan, and Bable dialects are subdivisions of that form of the Lingua Romana Rustica which was spoken in Galicia and the western provinces of the Iberian Peninsula, and which until the 15th century was the literary language of Castile itself. The remains of the early poets are necessarily scanty, but they are sufficient to show that the courtly troubadours of Portugal and Castile were certainly not inferior to the more noted singers of Provence. In some respects they were even superior, since, not being tied to the forms of a merely literary language such as the Provencal, they were able to borrow both form and matter from a vigorous national poetry which can be traced through the different races which successively occupied Portugal. The "alalala," which afterwards developed into the "aravia," the earliest form of the epic, is probably a legacy from the original Turanian inhabitants; the "guayado," a*~~

~~*short lyric with the refrain "ay " or "guai," was derived from their Celtic successors ; the "cantos de ledino ' are evidences of the Roman conquest, which in turn gave place to the "chacones" or dance-songs of the Visigoths; while during the Arab dominion the sensuous "serranilhas" and "cantos de amigo" found a place in the family "cancioneiros,"" which were then compiled in imitation of the divans or tribal songs of the ruling race. This national poetry, however, was for long affected in its literary form by foreign influences. From the beginning of the reign of Affonso Henriques (1112) to the death of Dom Sancho II. (1248) the court was under direct Provengal influence; and it isnot improbable that in 1146 thecelebrated trouba- dour Marcabrun was himself attached to the suite of Donna Matilda on her marriage with Affonso Henriques, since he was certainly a*~~

~~*' visitor at the court in 1147. The poets Egas Moniz Coelho and*~~

~~*Goncgalo Herminguez are commonly, though erroneously, referred to the time of Affonso Henriques, who was himself a poet ; but the name (and poem) of only one undoubtedly Portuguese troubadour of this period has survived, Joao Soares de Panha (1145-1204). The history of Galician literature properly belongs to that of Spain, but it is important to remember that Portugal is perhaps even more than Castile the heir of its early efforts. Amongst the Galician poets who frequented the court of Sancho I. (1185-1211) and formed a strong opposition to the Italo-Provencal school were Affonso Gomez, Fernam Goncalves de Senabria, and Joio Soares de Paiva. The most famous of their Provengal rivals, who doubtless were the more readily welcomed owing to the king's marriage with a daughter of Raymond Berenger IV., count of Provence and king of Aragon, were Peire Vidal, Peire Valeira, and Gavaudan o Velho, who in a "sirvente" written about 1210 incited the Christians to a crusade against the Moors. Affonso ITI. (1248-1279) returned from his residence at the court of St Louis of France imbued with northern rather than with southern sentiments, and consequently during his reign French influences prevailed. The nobles who had accompanied him were "trouvéres" rather than " tronbadours*~~

~~*and to one of them, Affonso Lopes de Bayam, belongs the honour of writing the first Portuguese gesta, a Gesta de Maldizer, Other celebrated poets of*~~

~~*this Franco-Provengal school were the "privados," or court poets, Joao de Aboim, the author of several sirventes and tensons, but, like De Bayam, the writer also of cantos de amigo and cantos de ledino, Fernio Garcia Esgaravunha, and Jofio Garcia o Pinto, his brother. The privados were in their turn satirized by Martim Moxa and Lourengo and Diogo Pezelho, who belonged to the less privileged class of " segreis," a term applied to those singers who wandered from court to court. The king's songs have been lost, or at least cannot be identified, but he is reputed to have been no mean poet, and a sirvente against Alphonso X. of Castile, which appears from internal evidence to have been written by him, is still extant. To this period also belonged the privados Fernao Fernandes Cogominho, the writer of cantos de amigo and serran- ilhas, and Estevam Coelho, of whose works two lovely serranilhas remain of the purest Galician form and feeling. The works of these poets show that, notwithstanding foreign influence, the national forms had already obtained some degree of favour at court. Similarity in the literary language led to considerable intercourse between Portugal and Castile, and the Galicians Pero da Ponte and Affonso Eanes de Coton were entertained by Affonso III., while the Portuguese poets Pero Gomes Barroso, Payo Gomes Charrinho, and Gongalo Eanes do Vinhal enjoyed the patronage of Alphonso the Wise. On the accession of Diniz (1279-1325) the court literature showed the decided southern and Provencal tendencies of this king, who from the number, variety, and beauty of his songs was himself the greatest poet of his time. Educated by Aymeric d'Ebrard of Cahors, afterwards bishop of Coimbra, he at first affected the mannerisms of the decaying school of Provence. With the courts of Love which he introduced came the Limousin decasyllabic in place of the national octosyllabic metre, and the ancient forms were lost in the intricacies of the ritournelle. This king's songs are marked by an exaggerated subjectivism, but among them quaint and graceful " pastorellas"' are found, full of poetic life and truth, which show that the king was not blind to the beauty of his people's lyrics. Admiration led to imitation, and the close of his reign is marked by a distinct literary revival of the national poetry, which at his hands received a polish it had somewhat lacked before. The effects of Diniz's influence pervade the whole of Portuguese poetry, for not only was he in his pastorellas the forerunner of the great pastoral school, but by sanctifying to literary use the national storehouse of song he perpetuated among his people, even to the present*~~

~~day, lyric forms of great beauty. Dom Diniz completely overshadows the poets who were his courtiers and contemporaries, but amongst them the most notable were Estevam da Guarda, Ayras Peres Veyturon, Ruy Goncalves, Joao Eanes, and Jofio de Guilharda, though the last-named was rather a musician than a poet. Dom Affonso Sanches, a natural son of Dom Diniz, wrote partly in the Limousin and partly in the Galician style, and another son, Dom Pedro, Conde de Barcellos, who com- piled a "livro das cantigas" anda "nobiliario" or peerage, was the author of several poems, but in an affected strain, which marked the approaching decay of lyric poetry. With the reign of Affonso IV. (1825-1357) began the reaction of the Castilian language against the Portuguese, but the quarrels of Ferdinand (1367-1383) with Henry II. of Castile were the fortunate cause of the formation of a second national school. For amongst its founders were the Galician poets who took refuge at the court of Portugal, and who were followers of Macias and Padron, including Vasco Pires de Camées, ancestor of the great Luis, while to this period must be properly assigned the poems of Egas Moniz Coelho and Gongalo Herminguez.~~

~~Epic poetry was in Portugal as in Provence a later literary Epic The popular aravias must have been poetry.~~

~~development than lyric. numerous, to judge from the remains which arc still found in the Azores and in the provinces of Beira and Algarves; and to the 13th century may be referred the Locnda de Santa Iria and the Cancdéo do Figueiral. In its literary form the Breton "lai" was~~

~~Harly prose.~~

~~556~~

~~known to Dom Pedro, brother of Affonso II. (1211-1223), and a few poems in this style with music attached were written by him. The Roman de Brut is also quoted by Diniz, but it was through the marriage of John I. with Philippa of Lancaster (1387) that a knowledge of the Arthurian cycle spread through the Peninsula and led to the popularity of the Prophecies of Merlin and kindred works down to the 16th century. The patriotic pride of the people, which had before found vent in the aravias or tales of contests with the Arabs, sought a new literary expression for the rising national~~

~~*greatness, and the parent of Camées's great epic is the poem in which Affonso Giraldes celebrates the victory won by the united armies of Portugal and Castile over the Moors at the battle of the Salado (1340). Only a small portion is extant, but it shows considerable vigour and foreshadows the development which national pride was afterwards to take in the Lusiads. –*~~

~~*The revolt against the subjectivism of lyric poetry which appeared in the narrative spirit of the epic showed itself now in another form, and to Affonso LV. belongs the credit of fully appreciating the new tendencies. Acting under his instructions, Vasco de Lobeira (d. 1403) became the author of the first Portuguese novel by turning into prose the romance of Amadis of Gaul, which led the way for a host of imitations bearing a similar title. The historical records of this period are comprised chiefly in the Chronica da Conquista do Algarve, the Livro velho das Linhagens, and the Nobiliario do Collegio dos Nobres. The theological tendencies of the people are aptly illustrated by works which, although in Latin, deserve men- tion. They are the Concordantiz Morales and Interpretatio Mystica by St Anthony of Lisbon (1195-1231), and the writings of Cardinal Alvaro Paes (d. 1353). The most learned scholar, however, of this period was Pedro Hispano, who became Pope John XXI. (d. 1277), and whose universal learning recalled the days of the great schoolmen.*~~

~~*Fifteenth 5th Century.—During this century lyric poetry was under the*~~

~~*century.*~~

~~*National and classical schools.*~~

~~*increasing influence of the Spanish school and of its leader Juan de Mena, whose praises were sung in some couplets by the infante Dom Pedro, son of John I. The chief imitators of this style were Luis de Azevedo, Ayres Telles (d. 1515), and Diogo Brandao (d. 1530). The Arthurian romances of Dom Eurives and Branca-Flor may be referred to this century; and the poems on the death of the infante Dom Pedro by Luis de Azevedo, and on the death of John II. by Diogo Brandao exhibit the literary form of the epic. The coustable, son of Dom Pedro, felt the influence of the Italian Renaissance, and consequently became the founder of the Dantesque or allegorical*~~

~~*school. His Satyra da felice e infelice Vida is an allegorical piece of some merit, but a better specimen of this style is the Viséo by Duarte de Brito, a compound of the Roman de la Rose and the Divina Commedia. The Fingimento de Amorc by Fernao Brandao also possesses many beauties.*~~

~~*The principal prose works of the time are the Book of the Chase written for John I. (1383-1433), the vivid and interesting Chronicles of Fernéo Lopes (1380-1459), the Froissart of Portugal, and the Chronicles of Gomes Eanes de Azurara (d. 1473), Ruy de Pina (1440-1520), and Duarte Galvao (1445-1517). King Edward him- self (1433-1438) was the author of The Faithful Councillor and Instructions in Horsemanship, while a Treatise on Tactics with several other works showed the powers of Affonso V. (1488-1481) as a general mathematician and natural philosopher, the cultivation of which may have been in part due to the lessons learned from the Cyropxdia translated for him by Vasco de Lucena.*~~

~~16th and 17th Centuries. —The golden age of Portuguese literature had now arrived, and to Bernardim Ribeiro (¢. 1500) is due the honour of founding its characteristic school of romantic pastoral poetry. The rivers and mountains of his native land are the natural framework of a poet's fancy, and the revival of classical learning showed him in the Eclogues of Virgil a model which he was not slow to imitate. His Eclogues, written in "redondilhas" (octosyllabic nine or ten-lined stanzas), are accordingly the earliest in modern Europe, and, while replete with the charms and conceits of versification of the troubadours, show a truly poetic love of nature. He was also the writer of the first " sextinas " in redondilhas, and of many beautiful cantigas and elegies. To the same school, which was now the representative of all national feeling, belong Christovio Falcio, whose smaller poems are quite equal to those of Ribeiro, Garcia de Resende (1470-1554), compiler of the Cancionetro Geral, a magnificent collection of poems by almost three hundred writers, beginning with Affonso Henriques, Gil Vicente (1470-1536), J orge Ferreira de Vasconcellos (d. 1585), and Fernio Rodrigues Lobo Soropita (c. 1600). The last-named is chiefly known from three comic satires on the classical school and his Introduction to the poems of Camoens, which formed the basis of Faria e Sousa's Com- mentary. Except for the fact that a master-mind belongs to no school, Camoens himself might be claimed by these writers as a fellow-worker, for he was systematically either ignored or abused by the opposing school of classicists. His works are treated of at length elsewhere (see CAMOENS), but it is not out of place to remark here that his beauties are those of the national school and his defects the result of an imitation of the classicisms affected by his~~

~~opponents. These were the followers of the school founded by Francisco de Sa de Miranda (1495-1558) on his return from Italy, where he acquired a love not only for the Renaissance, whose in- fluence had been already felt by Ribeiro, but for the forms in which the new culture found expression. Much praise is due to him for the polish he gave to his country's literature, but by his classical affectations and the favour he showed to the Spanish~~

~~*language, in which his best works were written, he sowed the seeds of that decay which afterwards overtook Portuguese poetry. The eclogues, epistles, odes, elegies, and sonnets of this school are often perfect in form and contain much real poetry, but the classicisms which at first are graceful in their novelty weary in the end by their unreality, and in the hands of inferior artists degenerate into mere stage properties, used to conceal the want of genius. The shepherds and shepherdesses are no longer the idealized peasants of the troubadours but courtiers in masquerade, and the sense of this lowering of the ideal is sufficient to destroy the pleasure which would otherwise be derived from the polished language and poetic imagination. The imitators of Miranda were very numerous ; the chief among them were Antonio de Ferreira (1528-1569), who was Horatian rather than Virgilian in feeling, and consequently pro- duced but inferior eclogues, while his didactic epistles were the earliest Portuguese examples of that style, Diogo Bernardes (d. 1599), whose sacred songs are particularly good, Pedro de Andrade de Caminha (d. 1589), Fernéio Alvares do Oriente (b. 1540), Don Manuel de Portugal (d. 1606), and Estevdo Rodrigues de Castro (1559-1637). Among the lyric poets of the 17th century the chief of those who by their satirical and comic verses showed an inclination to the national rather than the classical school were Thomas de Noronha (d. 1651) and Jacinto Freire de Andrade (1597-1657), author of the Fabulas de Narciso and of various songs and sonnets published in the Fenix Renascida (1716-1728). Antonio Barbosa Bacellar (1610-1663) was the first writer of "saudades," and was followed in the same style by Simao Torrez&o Coelho (d. 1642). Sonnets were of course written by every man of culture, but they rarely rose above the standard of mediocrity. Those of Manuel de Faria e Sousa (1590-1649), Duarte Ribeiro de Macedo (1618-1680), and André Nunes da Sylva (1630-1705) may, however, be reckoned among the best. The sacred poems of the last-named are also very good, but are surpassed by the Jardim do Ceo by Eloi de Sa Soto- maior, and by the poems of Sister Violante do Céo (1601-1698). The didactic epistles of Antonio Alvares da Cunha (1626-1690) are fair specimens of this class of poem.*~~

~~*The truly heroic life of Portugal during this period naturally Epies of demanded to be sung in a fitting strain, and the 16th and 17th 16th and The earliest of 17th een- these was the Creacéo do Homem by André Falco de Resende (d. turies.*~~

~~*centuries were consequently the era of epic poems.*~~

~~*1598), which from its similarity in style has been often attributed to Camoens (1524-1579), whose Lusiads appeared in 1572. Though the sole masterpiece of the country and the age, this last not unworthily eclipses other epics in.which the brilliant passages are more or less numerous. Such are the Primeiro Cerco de Diu by Francisco de Andrade (1540-1614), the Naufragio de Sepulveda and the Segundo Cerco de Diu by Jeronymo Cérte-Real (1540-1593), both rather above the average, the Elegiada (1588) by Luis Pereira Brandao, the Affonso Africano (1611) by Vasco Mousinho de Quebedo, who shares with Cérte-Real the honour of ranking next after Camoens, the Ulysséa by Gabriel Pereira de Castro (1571-1632), the Viriato Tragico by Braz Garcia Mascarenhas (1596-1656), the Malaca Conquistada by Francisco de Sa de Menezes (d. 1664), the Ulyssipo by Antonio de Souza de Macedo (1606-1682), and the Destruigéo de Hespanha (1671) by André da Silva Mascarenhas.*~~

~~*The drama in Portugal was stifled in its birth. The miracle- Drama.*~~

~~*plays of the people attained a high degree of excellence in the "autos" or sacred Christmas plays of Gil Vicente (1470-1536), but this writer was born half a century too soon for his work. His comedies, of which the best is Znez Pereira, are full of the rough wit which is found in the early Latin writers, but show a want of — polish and dramatic conception which is fatal to their claims to high rank as works of art. The comedies of his contemporaries, Antonio Prestes, Jorge Pinto, and Jeronymo Ribeiro Soares, all show considerable talent, and the Zufrosina of Jorge Ferreira de Vasconcellos (d. 1585) most nearly approaches to a modern standard of excellence. Francisco Manuel de Mello (1611-1666) was the author in Portuguese of the Auto do Fidalgo Aprendiz as well as of several poems, but most of his works are in the Spanish language. Among the classicists Miranda was the author of the comedies Os Lstrangetros and Os Vilhalpandos, but his plays are inferior to those of Ferreira, whose dramatic works are in some respects superior to his poems. The chief of them, which was produced only a few years later than the Sophonisba of Trissino, is the tragedy Inez de Castro, but, though his subject was so fine, his treatment of it was not altogether satisfactory. There are also several plays by Camoens ; but the*~~

~~*influence of the Spanish language was by this time irresistible, and the result was that all serious dramas were written in Castilian, while Portuguese was reserved only for the lighter and more popular pieces, the best of which were collected*~~

~~*Ro- mances, &c.*~~

~~*History.*~~

~~*Religious religious works may*~~

~~*works.*~~

~~*LITERATURE. |*~~

~~*by Coelho Rebello in A Musa entretenida de varios Entremeses (Coimbra, 1658).*~~

~~*In prose the imitations of Amadis of Gaul were followed by the school of the Palmeirims, which originated in the romance of chivalry Palmeirim d' Inglaterra. The first and second parts of this work were probably by the Spaniard Hurtado, and were only trans- lated by Francisco de Moraes (d. 1572) ; the third and fourth parts were written by Diogo Fernandes (c. 1580), and the fifth and sixth by Balthasar Gongalves Lobato (c. 1600). But Moraes, though thus missing the honour of being an originator, was probably the author of the scarcely less celebrated Palmeirim de Oliva. The Livro de Cavallaria by Fernio Lopes da Castanheda (d. 1559), the Chronica do Emperador Clarimundo by Joio de Barros (1496-1570), several works by Francisco Rodrigues Lobo (c. 1600), and the Chronica do famoso Principe D. Clarisol de Bretanha (1602) by B. G. Lobato arc of a similar character. The pastoral novel originated in the Menina e Moga by Bernardim Ribeiro, a composition in prose and verse which gave rise through its imitation in Spanish by Jorge de Monte Mor (d. 1561) to the school of the Dianas. This style was in its turn imitated in Portuguese by Fernéo Alvares do Oriente (b. 1540) in the Lusitania Transformada, and among other examples may be noted the Ribeiras do Mondego (1628) by Eloi de Sa Sotomaior, and the Primavera, O Pastor Peregrino, and O Desenganado (1601) by F. R. Lobo. The last-named was also the author of*~~

~~*the more meritorious Cérte na Aldéa, a sort of Friends in Council, which was afterwards imitated in the Serdo politico by Felix da Costanheira Turacem, the nom-de-plume of Lucas de St Catherina (1660-1740). To the pastoral novel succeeded the allegories, of which Grand Cyprus, Clelia, and Astrea are the best examples. The Inquisition, how- ever, laid its ban upon them when they showed mystical tendencies, as in the Pé de Rosa Fragrante, Cerva Branca, &c.; but an adapta- tion of the Pilgrim's Progress was published by the inquisitor Alexandre de Gusmao (1629-1724), with a view to proving the efficacy of infant baptism, which was certainly not the intention of Bunyan. The Decameronic tales took the form in this period of the Contos e Historias de Proveito e Exemplo (1589) by Gongalo Fernandes Trancoso, the Infortunios tragicos da constante Florinda (1625) by Gaspar Pires de Rebello, and the Alivio de Tristes (1672), Retiro de Cuidados-(1681), and Roda da Fortuna (1692) by Mattheus Ribeiro. The pride in the national greatness which found poetical expression in the epic also caused the rise of a great school of historians. The older royal chroniclers were followed by Garcia de Resende (1470-1554), Christovióo Rodrigues Acenheiro (b. 1474), and Damiao de Goes (1501-1573). Their chronicles are graphic and interesting, though inferior in style to the works of their successor, who was the most brilliant early historian Portugal can boast. This was Joao de Barros (1496-1570), author of the Conquest of the Indies, which was afterwards continued in the Asia Portugueza by Manuel de Faria e Sousa (1590-1649), a learned and facile writer, from whose pen are also the Europa, Africa, and America Portugueza, a Commentary on Camoens, and numerous other works. The style of Barros is both elegant and energetic, and the criticism and accuracy which he displays make him still an authority of the first fank. The next greatest historian after Barros was the monk Bernardo de Brito (1569-1617), author of Afonarchia Lusitana, of which there is a continuation by Antonio Brandao (1584-1637), and of the Chronicles of the Cistercians and of D. Sebastido. The elegant Latinist and best antiquary of the 16th century, André de Resende (1498-1573), whose talénts were recognized by Erasmus, produced the De antiquitatibus Lusitani# and the Life of the Infante D. Duarte ; and the History of the Discovery and Conquest of India by Fernao Lopes de Castanheda (d. 1559), the Chronicles of D. Sebastiao by Bernardo da Cruz (1530-1586) and by Manuel de Menezes (d. 1628), the Life of D.*~~

~~*Jodo de Castro by Jacinto Freire de Andrade (1597- 1657), which is still the type of perfect biography, the Chronicles of*~~

~~*-Scanderbeg and D. John ITI. by Francisco de Andrade (1540-1614),*~~

~~*the Commentaries of Affonso d' Albuquerque (1500-1580), compiled by his son, and the works of Diogo do Couto (1542-1616) and Duarte Nunes do Ledo (d. 1608) supply a mass of interesting historical material. To Antonio Barbosa Bacellar (1610-1663) is due an account of the Siege and Capture of Recife; and the True Account of Prester John (1540) by Francisco Alvares, the Travels in China, Tartary, &c., of Fernio Mendes Pinto (1509-1580), and in Persia (1610) of Pedro Teixeira, the account of the Mission of Aleixo de Menezes to the Christians of S. Thomas by Antonio de Gouvea (d. 1628), and the History of Tangier by Fernando de Menezes (1614-1699) are all classical works and full of interest. Among be mentioned those of Diogo de Paiva de Andrade (1528-1575) and of Diogo de Gouvea (d. 1576), the Com- mentaries of the Hebrew scholar Jeronymo de Azambuja (1520-1565),*~~

~~*the Life of S. Francis Xavier by Joao de Lucena (1550-1600), the'*~~

~~*Commentaries on the Minor Prophets by Bernardo de Brito (1569- 1617), the Lives of S. Dominic and other saints by Luis de Sousa (1555-1632), the Agiologio Lusitano by Jorge Cardoso (1616-1669), the Sermons of the great preachers Gaspar Pires de Rebello (c. 1625) and Antonio Vieira (1608-1697), the Clavis Prophetarum of the last-named, and the works of Bartholomeu do Quental (1626-1698),*~~

~~*Pes tow Wass Li*~~

~~*557*~~

~~*founder of the Portuguese branch of the Oratorians.*~~

~~*the cosmographer Pedro Nunes (1492-1577), one of the greatest ma- thematicians of his time, Estevao Rodrigues de Castro (1559-1637) author of a Commentary on Hippocrates and various other medical works, and the astronomer Manuel Boccarro Francez (1588-1662).*~~

~~*18th Century.—During the preceding century there had been Eight-*~~

~~*\ The scientific Scientific writers of the period are not numerous, being represented chiefly by writers.*~~

~~*founded in imitation of the Italians numerous "arcadias " or literary eenth*~~

~~*clubs under fantastic titles, such as " Ambientes," "Solitarios," &c. century.*~~

~~*Their influence was insignificant, and their existence would call for no remark were they not the forerunners of the academies, which during the 18th century saved Portuguese literature from total extinction. In the year 1714 was founded the Lisbon Royal Academy of Sciences, which was succeeded by the Portuguese Academy, whose first president was the learned historian Francisco Xavier de Menezes, count of Ericeira (1673-1743), author of the epic Henriqucida. His numerous translations of the works of Boileau and other French writers had considerable influence on Portuguese literature, and the founding in 1757 of the " Arcadia de Lisbéa," in which the great minister the marquis of Pombal was supreme, led to a wider spread of the teachings of the Encyclo- pedists. The arcadia ceased to exist in 1774, but was followed in 1779 by the Royal Academy of Sciences, founded by the duke of Lafodes, and by the " Nova Arcadia," which flourished between 1790 and 1806. As regards poetry these academies were little more than manufactories of verse, the only lyric poets of the early part of the century being Thomas Pinto Brando (1664-1743) and Antonio de Lima Barros Pereira (b. 1687) ; but their members, though wanting in poetical originality, showed considerable industry in historical research. The Bibliotheca Lusitana by Diogo Barbosa Machado (1682-1772) is a complete biographical dictionary of the Peninsula, and the Life of the Infante D. Henrique by Francisco José Freire (1719-1773) and the General History of Portugal by Damiaio Antonio de Lemos (1715-1789) are standard works, while the Jfemorias de LIntteratura of the Royal Academy of Sciences contains much infor- mation about the literature of the 16th and 17th centuries. But the real founder of scientific history in Portugal, as opposed to merc collections of legends and traditions, was Joao Pedro Ribeiro (1759- 1839), whose Researches in Portuguese Chronology show an historical scepticism far in advance of hisage. To the*~~

~~same group of workers for the academy in the historical department belong Francisco de St Luis, cardinal-archbishop of Lisbon (1766-1845), Francisco Manuel Trigoso (1777-1838), and José Francisco Corréa da Serra (1750-1823), who edited the Harly Portuguese Chronicles. In the latter half of this century a revival in poetry also took place, and the works of Antonio Diniz da Cruz e Silva (1731-1800), author of Hyssope, acquired for him the title of the Portuguese Boileau. With him were associated Pedro Antonio Corréa Garcfio (1724-1772), author of the comedy Assemblea and the Cantata de Dido, Domingos dos Reis Quita (1728-1770), the best pastoral poet of the period, and the Brazilian Claudio Manuel da Costa (1729-1789). But to Francisco Manuel do Nascimento (1734-1819), who wrote under the nom-de- plume of Filinto Elysio, must be assigned the honour of being the reviver of letters in Portugal, not only by his elegant lyric poems but more especially by his miscellaneous writings and by his opposition to foreign imitations. His school of " Filintists " found rivals in the " Elmanists" led by Manuel Maria de Barbosa du Bocage (1766-1806), who, though less original than Nascimento, had perhaps greater influence. His poetical works are numerous, and he was, besides, the author of three tragedies, Viriatus, Affonso Henriques, and Vasco de Gama, which had some success. The poems of Antonio Ribeiro dos Sanctos (1745-1818), the satires of Nicolau Tolentino de Almeida (1741-1811), and the sonnets of Paulino~~

~~Antonio Cabral de Vasconcellos (b. 1720) are all reckoned among °~~

~~the good work of the 18th century. But the best as well as the last work of this school is the epic Oriente (1814) by José Agostinho de Macedo (1761-1831), whose contemporary, José Anastasio da Cunha, was condemned by the Inquisition for the heresy contained in his Oracgdéo Universal. The tragedies Osmia, by Catharina de Sousa, countess of Vimieiro (1749-1824), and Nova Castro, by Joao Baptista Gomes (d. 1803), call for especial notice, as do the vaude- villes Don Quixote and Hsopaida by Antonio José da Silva (1705- 1739), while the national taste further showed itself in the favourable reception given to the comedies of his successor, Alexandre Antonio de Lima (b. 1699).~~

~~19th Century.—The political troubles of 1820 led to the expatria- Modern tion of Joio Baptista de Almeida Garrett (Jonio Duriense) (1799- verse,~~

~~1854) and Alexandre Herculano (1810-1879), and the retreat to a monastery of Antonio Feliciano de Castilho (Memnide Egynense) (1800-1875). The first two were followers of Nascimento, the last of Bocage; but, while the enforced studies of Castilho only increased his classicist proclivities, the exile of Garrett and Herculano brought them into contact with romanticism. The effects arc seen in Garrett's D. Branca, Joéo Minimo, and Flores sem Fructo, and later on in his most famous work, the Folhas Cahidas. R. A. de Bulhao Pato, F. Gomes de Amorim, and E. Vidal have also written in the same style, but their poems have a less truthful ring than~~

~~a~~

~~Modern prose.~~

~~_ vol, xviii. p. 586.~~

~~558~~

~~those of Garrett, who is also the author of both the earliest and the best examples of the modern Portuguese drama, Gil Vicente, Alfageme, and Luis de Sousa. The principal works of Castilho are A Primavera, Amor e Melaneolia, and Exeavagées Poeticas; and the writers who may chiefly be claimed as his followers are Sarmento, J. M. de Costa e Silva the dramatist, Cabral de Mello, and Fernandes Leitéo. The publication in 1848 of O Trovador, a collection of modern lyrics, marks the foundation of the school of Coimbra. Its leader, Joao de Lemos, the lyric poet, found fellow-workers in José Freire de Serpa, the impressionable author of Soldos, and José da Silva Mendes Leal, author of the dramas 4 Alva Estrella, A Madre Silva, and Os Homens de Marmore, and various lyric poems. The most popular modern poet Luis Augusto Palmeirim, the dramatist A. Pereira da Cunha, Antonio de Serpa, and Jodo de Andrade Corvo, author of the novel Um Anno da Cérte, all belong to this school, the prevailing characteristic of which at ifs foundation was a profound adntiration for Chateaubriand and hisroyalist and religious opinions. The second phase of this school dates~~

~~*from the Novo Trovador, in which the influence of Aimé Martin and Krause on its originator Soares de Passos is plainly visible. The poems of Passos are tinged with a melancholy which presaged his early death, and he philoso- phizes in the Firmamento, the Eseravo, and the Morte de Soerates somewhat in the same strain as the English Lake poets. The third phase of the school of Coimbra is represented by the Flores do Campo and Folhas Soltas of Joao de Deus, the poet of love and revolution. Of the same school the Visdéo dos Tempos by Theophilo Braga is an attempt at a newrevelation, and the Odes Modernas by Anthero do Quental are socialistic, but both writers show more than ordinary power. Other modern poets are Alberto Telles, Sousa Viterbo, Candido de Figueiredo, Gomes Leal, Thomas Ribeiro, A. J. Viale, and Guilherme de Azevedo. The plays of C. C. Branco and Ernesto Biester are above the average, and King Luis has worthily followed the traditions of his race in his translations of the plays of Shake- speare. The historical novels of Herculano are much admired by his countrymen, as well as those of L. A. Rebello da Silva; and the works of J. G. Gomes Coelho (Julio Diniz), A. de Oliveira Marreca, Mendes Leal, Bernardim Ribeiro, Arnal do Gama, Teixeira de Vasconcellos, and Camillo Castello Branco, with his accuracy of description, have some reputation; but the best modern novel, judged by an English standard, is O Crime do Padre Amaro by Eca de Queiroz. As the growth of Portuguese inde- pendence was coeval with the work of the troubadours, and the discoveries and conquests of the heroic age gave birth to the epic of Camoens, so, in like manner,'the political revival of the 19th century has given rise to a school of great historians, the chief of whom was Alexandre Herculano. The exile of Herculano had brought him into contact with both English and French roman- ticism, as appears in his early poems and his historical novels, in which the influence of Lamartine and Scott is plainly visible, but in later life he was attracted to the new German school of historians founded by Ranke, and perceived that his true vocation was scientific history. His chief work has been the disentangle-*~~

~~*PO R—*~~

~~*PO's*~~

~~*ment of the early history of Portugal from the mass of legends which had clustered round it, and his History of Portugal and The Origin of the Inquisition in Portugal are lasting monuments of industry and criticism. But Herculano perceived that, before a true knowledge could be gained of Portuguese history, a critical study must be made of early documents, so, using his official position, he commenced the publication for the academy of a magnificent edition of the Origines of Portuguese history. The viscount of Santarem began a similar work in his collections of Federa, though his fame will rest rather on his researches into the history of the great maritime discoveries of the 15th and 16th centuries. L. A. Rebello da Silva continued the work of Santarem in the publica- tion of the Corpo Diplomatico, and his History of Portugal in the 17th and 18th Centuries is only inferior to the great work of Herculano. These historians inspired many others, among whom may be mentioned Fonseca Benevides, F. F. de la Figaniere, Claudio de Chaby, and Simao José dawLuz Soriano. The strength of this school is no doubt partly due to the extreme vigour of the reaction- aries who were first called into existence by Herculano's attacks on superstitious legends. Their work is brilliant if not convincing, and it would not therefore be right to pass over without mention such names as F. Recreio, Pinheiro Chagas, and Affonso Ennes, In general literature the name of Francisco Alexandre Lobo (17638- 1844) stands out prominently as the foremost man of the century, and the Portuguese equal of De Maistre, whilst Thomas de Car-valho, Rodrigo da Fonseca, Cesar Machado, Lopes de Mendonga, F. Adolpho Coelho, Theophilo Braga, Innocencio Francisco da Silva, and F. D, Vieira have all won a position as critics and essayists. Political liberty has gone hand in hand with the freedom of the press, and here again Herculano appears as the founder of the Panorama, in which he had the assistance of most of the writers above-mentioned. Besides these the most influential journalists are Teixeira de Vasconcellos, Rodrigues de Sampaio, and J. M. Latino Coelho. While the press remains free and can boast of such writers Portuguese literature will certainly increase in strength and vigour, and maintain the feeling of national pride and independence which appears so strongly in the works of*~~

~~*-Garrett and Herculano, and will always prevent a union with*~~

~~*Spain.*~~

~~*Bibliography.—For the general history of Portuguese literature, Bouterwek, Hist. of Span. and Port. Literature (London, 1823); Sismondi, Hist. of the Litera- ture of the South of Europe (London, 1823); and J. F. Denis, Résumé de V'hist. litt. de Portugal (Paris, 1826) may be consulted ; also the " Notice on Literature" by Theo. Braga, in vol. i. of Vieira's Grande Diccionario (Oporto, 1871), ahd the same writer's Introductions to the Antologia Portugueza (Oporto, 1876) and the Parnaso Portuguez Moderno (Lisbon, 1877). For the troubadour period, see the Introductions to Trovas e Cantares, ed. Varnhagen (Madrid, 1849), and the Cancionetro Portuguez, ed. Braga (Lisbon, 1878). The Memorias of the academy and the Introduction to the Parnaso Lusitano (Paris, 1826) may be consulted for the classical period ; and the Memorias de Litt. contemporanea by A. P. Lopes de Mendonga (Lisbon, 1855) and La Littérature Portugaise by J. M. Pereira da Silva (Rio, 1866) give a fair account of contemporaneous literature. The best biographical dictionaries are the Bibliotheca Lusitana by Machado (Lisbon, 1741) and the Diccionario Bibliographico Portuguez by Innocencio F. da Silva (Lisbon, 1858). (H. B. B.)*~~

~~*PORUS, the name of the Indian king who withstood Alexander the Great on the banks of the Hydaspes (Jhelum). He was afterwards confirmed in his kingdom by the conqueror, and still held the position of a Mace- donian satrap when assassinated some time between 321 and 3158.c. See Inpta, vol. xii. pp. 786, 787, and PErsta, His cousin, also named Porus, with whom he was on bad terms, ruled over Gandaris beyond the Hydraotes (Ravi), and was subdued by Hephestion.*~~

~~*POSEIDON, the ancient Greek god of the sea and of water generally, was fabled to be the son of Cronus and Rhea, and brother of Zeus and Pluto. When the three brothers deposed their father Cronus the kingdom of the sea fell by lot to Poseidon. With his wife, Amphitrite, he dwelt in the depths of the sea; at Auge he had a golden house beneath the waves. In his hand he bore a trident (a three-pronged fish-spear), wherewith he lashed the sea into fury. But, while he caused storms and shipwrecks, he could also send favouring winds. He was the god of navigation, adored by all who sailed the sea. His temples stood especially on headlands and isthmuses. As god of the sea he disputed with other deities for the possession of the land—with Athene for Athens and Treezen, with Helios for Corinth, with Hera for*~~

~~*Argos, with Zeus for Aigina, &c. Earthquakes were thought to be produced by Poseidon shaking the earth,—hence his epithet of*~~

~~*‘“‘arth-shaker,” and hence he was worshipped even in inland places, like Apamea in Phrygia, which had suffered from earthquakes. Hence also may have arisen the custom in some places of sacrificing moles to him. The great sea- wave which often accompanies an earthquake was also his work ; the destruction of Helice in Achaia by such a wave (373 B.c.) was attributed to his wrath. Once when an earthquake shook the ground where a Spartan army was encamped, the whole army sang a hymn to Poseidon. The island of Delos was thought to have been raised by him from the bottom of the sea, and in 237 B.c., when a new island appeared between Thera and Therasia, the Rhodians founded a temple of Poseidon on it. Thessaly was said to have been a lake until this god opened a way for the waters through the Vale of Tempe. Poseidon was also the god of springs, which he produced by striking the rock with his trident, as he did on the acropolis of Athens when he was disputing with Athene for the sovereignty of Athens. This dispute was represented on the western pediment of the Parthenon. As he gave, so he could withhold springs of water; thus the waterless neighbour-hood of Argos was supposed to suffer from his anger. Black bulls were sacrificed to him ; in Ionia and Thessaly bull-fights took place in his honour ; at a festival of his at Ephesus the cupbearers were called “bulls,” and the god himself was surnamed “Bull Poseidon.” The horse was*~~

~~*especially associated with his worship ; he was said to have produced the first horse by striking the ground in Thessaly with his trident. At a fountain in Argolis horses bitted and bridled were sacrificed to him by being drowned in the water, and similarly Sextus Pompeius sought to propitiate him by throwing horses into the sea. He bore the surname of “Horse Neptune,” and was regarded as the tamer as well as the creator of the steed. His worship was thought by Herodotus to have been derived from the Libyans. It had special seats in Thessaly, Boeotia, and the Peloponnesus. He had a famous cave-like temple at Teenarum in Laconia. On the island of Tenos he was worshipped as the physician, and crowds gathered from the neighbouring islands to offer sacrifice. At Mycale in Asia Minor the*~~

~~*Panionium, or place of general assembly of the Jonian Greeks, was sacred to him. In the Trojan War Poseidon sided with the Greeks because he had been cheated of his reward by Laomedon, the former king of Troy, for whom he had built the city walls. The offspring of his numerous amours were mostly wild and cruel like the sea; such were the Lestrygones, Polyphemus, Cycnus, Antzus, Busiris, Pro- crustes, Sciron, and Orion. Alcinous, king of the sea- faring Pheacians in the Odyssey, traced his lineage to Poseidon. By far the most famous of the festivals of Poseidon was that celebrated every second year on the Isthmus of Corinth and hence called the "Isthmian festival" (see vol. x. p. 65). Pine trees were sacred to Poseidon ; a row of them stood close to his temple on the isthmus. Amongst the Jonians the stormy month which precedes the winter solstice was called by the name of Poseidon. He was described as dark-haired, broad-breasted, and blue-eyed. In works of art he appeared holding a trident and with a dolphin on his hand or under his feet ; sometimes he was represented riding a bull, a horse, or a sea-horse, or in a chariot, often surrounded by the Tritons, Nereids, and other fabulous creatures of the sea. There were colossal statues of him at Helice in Achaia, on the Isthmus of Corinth (set up by the Greeks after the Persian wars), and at Tenos. The derivation of his name is uncertain ; some refer it to the same root as wdtos, worapds, &c.; others compare wétvia. In modern Greece St Nicholas has taken the place of Poseidon as patron of sailors. But the Zachynthians have a special sea-god, half man, half fish, who dwells under the sea, rides on dolphins or in a car drawn by dolphins, and wields a trident. He seems to combine the attributes of Poseidon and Nereus. For the Roman sea-god, see NEPTUNE.*~~

~~*POSEN, a province in the east of Prussia, with an area (11,180 square miles) nearly equal to that of Belgium, is bounded on the N. by the province of Prussia, on the E. by Russian Poland, on the S. by Silesia, and on the W. by Brandenburg. It belongs physically to the great north German plain, and consists of a low plateau intersected by the beds of the Netze, the Warthe, and the Obra. The three rivers just named drain into the Oder, but part of the province falls within the basin of the Vistula, which forms the frontier for a short distance on the north-east. The surface of the whole district is dotted with small lakes and ponds, and there are many broad fens and marshes. The soil on the whole is light and sandy, but much of the land reclaimed in the boggy districts is very fertile. Up- wards of 61 per cent. of*~~

~~the area is under cultivation, while 13 per cent. is occupied by pasture and meadows and 20 per cent. by forests. The principal crops are wheat, rye, oats, barley, potatoes, and hops (compare PRusstA) ; the vine is cultivated to some extent in the south-west corner, and tobacco is also grown. The marshy tracts often afford excellent pasture and support large numbers of cattle, sheep, and goats. The mineral resources of the province are practically restricted to brown coal and salt,~~

~~about 26,000 tons of the former and 75,000 tons of the latter being raised in 1882. The industry is confined to a few points, and is of comparatively little importance. Besides beer and brandy, the chief products are machinery, cloth, tobacco, and bricks. Trade, carried on briskly in timber and agricultural produce, is facilitated by the net- work of navigable rivers and canals. Both industry and trade are somewhat cramped by the duties imposed at the Russian frontier. The population of the province in 1880 was 1,703,397, including 1,112,962 Roman Catholics, 532,498 Protestants, and 56,609 Jews. The Roman Catholics are mainly Poles, of whom there are about 950,000 in Posen, while the great bulk of the 750,000 Germans are Protestants. About 65 per cent. of the popu- lation is returned as "rural" in spite of the large number of so-called "towns," only seven of which, however, have more than 10,000 inhabitants. The largest are Posen and Bromberg. The province of Posen enjoys the unenvi- able distinction of being the worst educated corner of the German dominions, a fact illustrated by the high ratio of illiterate recruits (9°75 per cent. in 1882-83). It is re- presented in the German reichstag by fifteen and in the Prussian parliament by twenty-nine deputies.~~

~~History.—The history of the district of Posen, comprehending great part of the cradle of the old kingdom of Poland, including its most ancient capital (Gnesen), falls properly within the scope of the article PoLAND (g.v.). Its political connexion with Prussia began in 1772, when the districts to the north of the Netze fell to the share of that power in the first partition of Poland. The rest followed in 1793, and was united with the Netze district to form the province of South Prussia. After the peace of Tilsit Posen was in- corporated with the grand-duchy of Warsaw, but in 1815 it reverted to~~

~~*Prussia under the style of the "grand-duchy of Posen." In 1848 the Polish inhabitants of the province revolted and had to be put down by force; and a thoroughly harmonious union of the two elements of the population is still unattained.*~~

~~*The tide of German immigration into Posen began at an early period and flowed very strongly in the 13th and following centuries. The industrious German settlers were heartily welcomed by the Polish nobles and were the founders of most of the towns, in which they lived after their own customs and were governed by their own laws. They established the few manufactures of which the district can boast, introduced the cultivation of hops, reclaimed the waste soil, and did much to improve agriculture generally. In the 16th century Protestantism was widely diffused by their means. A strong reaction, however, set in in the following century, and persecution of the Protestants went hand in hand with the ravages of war in hastening the political, intellectual, and agricultural decline of the territory. By the 18th century the burghers had sunk to the level of "stadtische Bauern," or peasants with municipal privileges, and poverty and misery were widely spread. The Prussian rule, in spite of many defects, proved so beneficial that even Napoleon was compelled to praise it.*~~

~~*Posen contains a numerous Polish noblesse, many of the members of which are very poor. A double transformation is going on in the ownership of the ground, the large estates passing into the hands of the peasants and Polish proprietors giving place to German. A few years ago between 60 and 70 per cent. of the soil was occupied by "latifundia," whileat present it is pretty equally divided between those and peasant holdings. In the four years 1878-81, inclusive, the land in the possession of Germans increased at the expense of Polish landowners by upwards of 100,000 acres. The peasant-farmers are generally deeply in debt, partly owing to the educational and communal burdens, but mainly owing to the pernicious custom of "Leibgedinge," according to which an able-bodied man in the prime of life will give up his holding in return for an annuity from his successor. In some instances two annuitants of this kind are found living on the same small patch of ground in addition to the actual cultivator. ;*~~

POSEN (Polish, Poznan), capital of the above province, the seat of a Roman Catholic archbishop, and the head- quarters of a corps of the. German army, is situated at the confluence of the Cybina and Warthe, 150 miles to the east of Berlin and 90 miles to the north of Breslau. It is a fortress of the first rank and of great strategic import- ance; the works consist of a citadel and inner line of bastions, and an outer circle of twelve detached forts. The principal part of the town lies on the west bank of the Warthe, and comprises the so-called Altstadt and the

well-built modern quarter that has sprung up under the Prussian régime. On the other bank is the Wallischei, a poor district inhabited by Poles. Among the older build-

ings none calls for remark except the town-house, a quaint specimen of the Slavonic adaptation of Romanesque forms. The chief modern buildings are the various military and public offices, the law courts, the theatre, the real school, and the Raczynski library. The churches are devoid of architectural interest, but the cathedral contains numerous

of the first Christian kings of Poland, by Rauch. The manufactures of Posen are multifarious enough, including machinery, carriages, tobacco, copper boilers and vats, military requisites, chemicals, &c.; but there is nothing that can be called a staple industry. A lively trade is carried on in the agricultural products of Russia and Poland, and several well-attended fairs and markets are held. In 1880 Posen contained 65,713 inhabitants, in- cluding 35,725 Roman Catholics, 22,869 Protestants, and 7063 Jews. The German inhabitants are at present con- siderably more numerous than the Poles, though it would seem that the latter have increased in a greater ratio since 1875. The Jewish element is stronger here (10-7 per cent.)

than in any other town in Germany. The garrison consists of 7000 men.

~~*Posen, one of the oldest towns in Poland and the residence of some of the early Polish princes, became the seat of a Christian bishop towards the end of the 10th century. The original settle- ment was on the east bank of the Warthe, but the new or German town, established on the west bank about the year 1250, soon be- came the more important half of the double city. Posen was a royal free town, and was directly represented in the Polish diet down to 1733. In the Middle Ages it became a great depdt of the trade between Germany and the west of Europe on the one hand and Poland and Russia on the other. Numerous foreign merchants took.up their abode here, including a strong colony of Scotsmen, who exported raw produce to Edinburgh. The town attained the climax of its prosperity in the 16th century, when its population is variously estimated at from 30,000 to 80,000. The intolerance shown to the Protestants, the troubles of the Thirty Years' War, the visitation of the plague, and other causes, however, soon conspired to change the state of affairs, and in the 18th century the town had only 5000 inhabitants. New life was infused into it on its annexation bY Prussia at the second partition of Poland, and since then its progress has been limited only by its position as a fortress. The relations of the German and Polish elements of the population continue to be somewhat strained.*~~

~~*POSIDONIUS, a distinguished Stoic philosopher, the most learned man of his time (c. 130-50 B.C.) and per- haps of all the school; by birth a Syrian from Apamea, a pupil of Panetius, he spent after his teacher's death many years in travel and scientific researches in Spain (particu- larly at Gades), Africa, Italy, Gaul, Liguria, Sicily, and*~~

~~*on the eastern shores of the Adriatic. When he settled as a teacher at Rhodes his fame attracted numerous scholars ; next to Panztius he did most, by writings and personal intercourse, to spread Stoicism in the Roman world; he became well known to many of the leading men, as Marius, Rutilius Rufus, Pompey, and Cicero. The last-named studied under him (78-77 B.c.), and speaks as his warm admirer and personal friend.*~~

~~*Strabo mentions him as a contemporary. The date of his birth has not been fixed ; it may have been 185, 180, or 125 B.c. ; accord- ing to Lucian, he lived to be eighty-four. He visited Rome—e.g., in 86 B.c. on an embassy; but*~~

~~*it is doubtful if he ever resided there asa teacher. HIs works, now lost, were written in an attract- ive style and proved a mine of information to later writers. The titles and subjects of more than twenty of them are known. In common with other Stoics of the middle period, he displays eclectic tendencies. HIs admiration for Plato led him to write a comment- ary on the Tim#us; in another way it is shown by important modifications which he made in psychological doctrine. Unques- tionably more of a polymath than a philosopher, he appears to us uncritical, or credulous even, and superficial. But at the time his spirit of inquiry provoked Strabo's criticism as something alien to the school (76 aizodoyexdv cal 7d dpucrorédfov, 8rep éxxdlvovow oi nuérepor). In natural science he took a genuine interest, as his contributions to geography, natural history, mathematics, and astronomy sufficiently attest. HIe sought to determine the distance and magnitude of the sun, to calculate the diameter of the earth and the influence of the moon on the tides. HIs history of the period from 146 to 88 B.c., in fifty-two books, must have been a valuable storehouse of facts. Cicero, who submitted to his criticism the memoirs which he had written in Greek of his consul- ship, made use of writings of Posidonius in De Natura Deorwm, b. i, and De Divinatione, b. i., and the author of the pseudo-Aristotelian treatise De Mundo also borrowed from him.*~~

~~*Zeller, Philosophie der Griechen, iii. 1, 570-584 (in Eng. trans., Eélecticism, 56- 70); C. Miiller, Fragmenta HIstoricorum Greecorum, iii. 245-296 ; J. Bake, Posidonti Rhodii Reliquiz, Leyden, 1810 (a valuable monograph); R. Scheppig, De Posidonio rerum gentium terrarum scriptore, Berlin, 1869; R. HIrzel, Untersuchungen zu Ciceros philosophischen Schriften, i. 191 sq. ; ii. 257 sq., 325 sg., 477-535, 756-789 ; ili. 342-378 (Leipsic, 1877). See Srorersm.*~~

~~*POSITIVISM, or Posrtrve Pumosopuy. See Comts.*~~

~~*POSSESSION is a legal term derived from Roman law. The Roman conception of possession has been generally adopted, but the Roman deductions from the conception have not been universally followed. The subject of pos- session, in itself a difficult one, has become more difficult owing to the various senses in which the term has been interpreted. Thus it has been said to be either a right or a fact conferring a right, or both*~~

~~*together. The latter is the view of Savigny, the leading authority upon the subject (Recht des Besitzes, translated by Sir Erskine Perry, 1848). Further, there isa want of agreement among legal writers as to the amount of right or rights that it confers. All that can be said with safety is that possession stands in a position intermediate between simple detention and absolute ownership, and that it implies two elements, a physical and a mental one,—physical detention and mental intention to hold the thing possessed as one's own. In the words of the Digest, "' Apiscimur possessionem corpore et animo, neque per se animo aut per se corpore" (xli. 2, 3,1). The difficulties which have been stated being borne in mind, the definition of Professor Hunter may be accepted as being at least as good as any other that has been sug- gested: 'Possession is the occupation of anything with the intention of exercising the rights of ownership in respect of it" (Roman Law, p. 209). Possession is inchoate or incom- plete ownership ; it is on its way to become ownership. In the case of the public domain of Rome (ager publicus) the possession was really the important matter, the dominium being practically of no value. Possession in Roman law was either natural or civil, The former was mere occupa- tion, the latter such occupation as ripened by prescription into ownership. Possession exclusive against the world (including the true owner) was called "adverse possession." A servitude, such as a right of way, could not be held in true possession, but was said to be in ' quasi-possession." The quasi-possessor had, however, possessory remedies.*~~

~~*PO Seah ses 1 O-N*~~

~~*In Roman law a broad distinction was drawn between possession and ownership (dominium).!1 They were pro- tected by different remedies,—possession by interdict, ownership byaction. This difference can only be explained by history. Here again, unfortunately, authorities differ. According to Savigny, a Roman citizen who had become a tenant of part of the ager publicus could not by any length of holding obtain more than a quasi-ownership, but one of which it would have been morally unjust to have deprived him. 'The only legal remedies of which the tenants could avail themselves, if ejected or threatened with disturbance, were the possessory interdicts, summary processes of Roman law which were either expressly devised by the praetor for their protection, or else, according to*~~

~~another theory, had in older times been employed for the provisional maintenance of possessions pending the settlement of questions of legal right" (Maine, Ancient Law, ch. viii.). Savigny regards the protection of possession as an exten- sion of the protection of the person. The same view was taken by the English Court of Exchequer in Rogers ». Spence, 13 Meeson and Welsby's Reports, 581. According to Professor HIunter (Roman Law, pp. 206, 221), Savigny overlooked the needs of aliens. It was the needs of aliens, incapable of the full proprietary rights of Roman citizens, that led to the invention by the pretor of a means of giving them equitable rights in the land, and protecting them in the enjoyment of these rights. Savigny attributes only two rights to possession in Roman law—acquisition of ownership by possession for a given time (usucaguo, longi temporis possessio) and protection of possession from dis- turbance (interdictum). Others have included further rights,—inter alia, the right to use force in defence of pos- session, and the right to have the burden of proof, ina contest as to the title, thrown upon the adversary: "In pari causa possessor potior haberi debet." The position of the possessor in Roman law was a very strong one. If a bona fide possessor, he could bring an action for furtum even against the owner ; if a mala fide possessor of land, he was so far protected that he could not: be ejected by force. A mala fide possessor of movables could, however, acquire no rights.?~~

~~It has been already stated that there is both a physical and a mental element in the conception of possession. This does not necessarily mean that corporal contact is in all cases requisite, or that the intention to hold the thing possessed as one's own may not be abandoned for a time. The control may be potential as well as actual. An estate may be possessed without the possessor going upon the land at all, and the possession of goods may be given by delivering the key of the warehouse in which they are stored. In international law the possession of part as giving the right to the whole has been of great importance. The possession of the coast of a newly-discovered country gives a right to the inland territory within certain limits (see Twiss, International Law, vol. i. p. 170). Where goods are pledged or bailed for a specific purpose the intention of the pledgor or bailor to hold them as his own is suspended during the existence of the limited right of the pledgee or bailee, to whom a fragment of the posses- sion has passed. In Roman law the pledgor had possessto ad usucapionem, the pledgee possessio ad~~

~~*interdicta. The possession of the pledgee or bailee has been called "deriva- tive possession." Possession may be exercised through another ("animo nostro, corpore alieno"), as through a*~~

~~*1 The distinction is very important, as it affects the contract of sale. The contract was not to transfer ownership, as in English law, but*~~

~~*only vacua possessio. ; ; 2 This does not agree with English law, where in certain cases a*~~

~~*thief can give a good title to stolen goods, though he has no title himself.*~~

~~*561*~~

~~*servant, who has not true possession.* Possession so exer- cised has been called "representative possession." As soon as the representative determines to assume control on his own behalf or to submit to the control of another, the possession of the principal is gone. Possession may be transferred or lost. It is lost when either the corpus or the animus (to use the terms of Roman law) ceases to exist. It may be lost by the representative in cases where the principal might have lost it.*~~

~~*In both Roman and English law the possessory tended to supersede the proprietary remedies from their greater convenience,—that is to say, the plaintiff based his claim or the defendant his right upon possession rather than property. The English possessory action may have been directly suggested by the interdict. Bracton (103b) identifies the assise of novel disseisin, the most common form of possessory action, with the interdict unde vw. In England ejectment had practically superseded other real actions before the latter were (with the exception of dower, writ of dower, and guare impedit) expressly abolished by 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 27, s. 36. The action for the recovery of land, introduced by the Judicature Acts, is the modern representative of the action of ejectment. The right of a party to recover possession is enforced by a writ of possession,*~~

~~*Possession gives in English law, speaking generally, much the same rights as in Roman law. Thus it serves to found a title (see LimiraTion, PRESCRIPTION), and to throw the onus of proof upon the claimant. In an*~~

~~*action for the recovery of land the defendant need only allege that he is in possession by himself or his tenant, and (where such an allegation is necessary) that he had no notice to quit. The chief differences between Roman and English law, arising to some extent from the differences in the history of the two systems, are that the former did not give to derivative possessors (except in the case of pledge) the remedies of possessors, as does English law, and that Roman law is stricter than English in requiring that possession to found usucapio should (except in the case of jus aque ducendx) be ex justo titulo, or under colour of right (see Prescription). There is one case of constructive possession which is peculiar to English law, —that is, where possession is said to be given by a deed operating under the Statute of Uses (see 'Orme's Case," Law Reports, 8 Common Pleas, 281).*~~

~~*In English law the doctrine of possession becomes practically important in the following cases. (1) Possession serves as a con- venient means of division of estates (see REAL ESTATE), One of the divisions of estates is into estates in possession and estates in reversion or remainder. It also serves as a division of PERSONAL Estate (q.v.). A chose in action is said to be reduced into pos- session when the right of recovery by legal proceedings has become aright of enjoyment. (2) Possession gives a title against a wrong- doer. In the case of real property it is regarded as prima facie evidence of seisin.* In the case of personal property the mere pos- session of a finder is sufficient to enable him to maintain an action of trover against one who deprives him of the chattel® (see the leading case of Armory v. Delamirie, 1 Strange's Reports, 504). (3) What is called "unity of possession" is one of the means whereby an easement is extinguished. Thus the owner of close A may have had a right of way over close B, while the latter belonged to a different owner. If the two closes come to be owned*~~

~~*3 Much of the law of master and servant is based upon the Roman law of master and slave. The servant, like the slave, has not posses- sion of his master's goods even though they are in his custody, unless, indeed, the circumstances are such that he ceases to be a servant and becomes a bailee.*~~

~~*4 "*Seisin"' and " possession" are used sometimes as synonyms, as generally by Bracton; at other times they are distinguished : thus there can*~~

~~*be possession of a term of years, but no seisin (Noy, Maxims, p. 2). It seems doubtful, however, how far in English law a tenant for years has true possession, for he is in law only a bailiff or servant of the landlord. But he certainly has possessory remedies, like the quasi-possessor in Roman law. ;*~~

~~*5 Compare the Code Napoléon, art. 2279: "En fait de meubles la possession vaut titre."*~~

~~*by the same person, the right of way is extinguished, but may under certain circumstances revive on the separation of the owner- ship. (4) Possession is very important as an element in deter- mining the title to goods under 18 Eliz. c. 5, the Bills of Sale Act, 1878 (41 and 42 Vict. c. 31, ss. 4, 8), and the Bankruptcy Act, 1883 (46 and 47 Vict. c. 52, s. 44). It may be said that as a general rule retention of possession by the transferor on an absolute assignment or a colourable delivery of possession to the transferee is strong prima facie evidence of fraud. 'Apparent possession ' is defined by section 4 of the Bills of Sale Act. (5) Possession of goods or documents of title to goods is generally sufficient to enable agents and others to give a good title under the Factors' Acts (see Facrors). (6) In criminal law the question of possession 1s important in founding the distinction between larceny and embezzle- ment. If the goods are in the possession of the master and he gives them to the custody of his servant for a specific purpose, and the servant steals them, it is larceny ; if they have never come into the master's possession, as if a clerk receives money on his master's behalf, it is embezzlement. Recent possession of stolen goods is always regarded as a presumption that the person in whose pos- session they are stole them or received them knowing them to have been stolen. In the case of a charge of receiving stolen goods evidence may be given that there was found in the possession of the accused other property stolen within the preceding period of twelve months, 34 and 35 Vict. c. 112, s. 19. (For possession in criminal law, see Stephen, Digest of the Criminal Law, note xi.). (7) Actions of possession of ships fall within the jurisdiction of the Admiralty Division. This jurisdiction in the case of British vessels depends upon the Admiralty Court Act, 1861 (24 Vict. ¢. 10, s. 8), in the case of foreign vessels (in which*~~

~~*the jurisdiction is rarely exercised) upon the general powers of the court as a maritime court.*~~

~~*The doctrines of adverse possession (in the old English sense, which was not identical with the Roman law, for the real owner must have actually or by fiction been disseised) and of possessio fratris*~~

~~*POS—POS*~~

~~*are now of only antiquarian interest. The Statutes of Limitation, 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 27 and 387 and 88 Vict. c. 57, have super- seded the first. The only question now is, not whether possession has been adverse or not, but whether twelve years have elapsed since the right accrued (see LimiraTion). The maxim " possessio fratris de feodo simplici sororem facit esse heredem'"' (Coke upon Littleton, 14b) has been altered by the rules of descent introduced by 8 and 4 Will. IV. c. 106, under which descent is traced from the purchase1. At one time possessory suits were occasionally maintained in England, and more frequently in Ireland, for the quieting of possession after proof of three years' possession before the filing of the bill. But such suits are now obsolete (see Neill ». Duke of Devonshire, 8 Appeal Cases, 146). There was one character- istic case in old English law in which possession was maintained by means of what was called " continual claim," made yearly in due form, where the person having the right was prevented by force or fear from exercising it (Coke upon Littleton, 253b). Continual claim was abolished by 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 27, s. 11. Scotland.—In Scotland possessory actions still exist co nomine, Actions of molestation, of removing, and of maills and duties are examples. A possessory Judgment is one which entitles a person who has been in possession under a written title for seven years to con- tinue his possession (Watson, Law Dict.,s.v." Possessory Judgment"'). United States.—Here the law in general agrees with that of England. But in Maryland, New Hampshire, North Carolina, and Vermont the doctrine of possessio fratris apparently still exists (Bouvier, Law Dict., " Possessio Fratris"). Possessory rights are taxed in some of the States. Louisiana follows Roman law closely. Possession of incorporeal rights (to use the unscientific language of the Code) is called quasi-possession, and the division of possession into natural and civil is maintained (Civil Code, §§- 3389-3419).*~~

~~*In addition to the authorities cited may be mentioned Smith, Dict. of Anti-quities, s.v. '*Possessio" ; Markby, Elements of Law, ch. viii.; Holland, Elements of Jurisprudence, ch. xi.; Holmes, The Common Law (lect. vi.). (J. Wt.)*~~

~~*POS T-OF FIC &*~~

~~*HE germ of the modern postal systems of the world is*~~

~~*to be looked for, obviously, in the earliest organized establishment of a staff of Government couriers. When, or under what precise circumstances, such an establishment was first made available by a state for the carriage of the*~~

~~*occur in the wardrobe accounts of the kings of England of payments to royal messengers—variously designated "' cokinus," "nuncius," or "garcio"——for the conveyance of letters to various parts of the country. In the super- vision of these royal messengers lies the germ of the office*~~

~~*letters of private persons there is no satisfactory evidence to show. That there must have been, even in early times, a connexion, more or less authorized, between the trans-*~~

~~*of postmaster-general. The first English postmaster of Six- whom a distinct account can be given is Sir Brian Tuke, teenth who is described (1533) in the records as " Magister Nun-°™""Y-*~~

~~*mission of public and of private correspondence is highly probable. Even financial reasons would soon dictate a formal permission to Government couriers to carry letters for individuals—under regulation and restriction, of course—although at the outset such a practice may well have been rather connived at than allowed. In the postal system of Spain and the German empire there is express*~~

~~*record of such a permission in the month of April 1544 ;-*~~

~~*and within fifteen or sixteen years that permission had grown into a legalized and regulated monopoly, whence the counts of Taxis drew part of their profits as post- masters-general. For the purposes of this article, how-*~~

~~*ever, it is enough to note that in Great Britain existing private letters of the 15th century—some, perhaps, of the 14th—bear endorsements which show that they were con- veyed by relays of men and horses maintained under the control of the Government, and primarily intended for its special service. In several Continental states the univer- sities had inland postal establishments of a rudimentary sort at an early date. The university of Paris, for exam- ple, organized a postal service almost at the beginning of the 13th century, and it lasted in a measure until the year 1719. In various parts of Europe mercantile guilds and brotherhoods were licensed to establish posts for commer- cial purposes. But everywhere—as far as the accessible evidence extends—foreign posts were under state control.*~~

~~*GREAT BRITAIN. Early History (c. 1533-1836). As early as the middle of the 13th century entries*~~

~~*ciorum, Cursorum, sive Postarum," 'both in England and in other parts of the king's dominions beyond the seas." But long subsequent to this appointment of a postmaster- general the details of the service were frequently regulated by proclamations and by orders in council. Thus, in the curious collection of royal proclamations in the library of the Society of Antiquaries there is one of Philip and Mary (undated, but apparently of 1555) which regulates the supply of horses for the conveyance of letters to Dover. Again, in July 1556 the lords of the council ordered "that the postes betweene this and the Northe should eche of them keepe a booke, and make entrye of every lettre that he shall receive, the tyme of the deliverie thereof unto his hands, with the parties names that shall bring it unto him." Much of the business of the foreign postal service to and from England during the earlier years of Queen Elizabeth was managed by the incorporated "merchant strangers," who appointed a special postmaster amongst themselves. When that office chanced to fall vacant in 1568 they quarrelled about a successor; and the quarrel cost them their privilege.?*~~

~~*The accession of James I. to the English throne, by Under necessitating a more frequent communication between James 1.*~~

~~*London and Scotland, led to improvements in the postal*~~

~~*1 In his able account of this remarkable collection the late Mr Robert Lemon has overlooked the proclamation here referred to, prob- ably from its want of a date, his own arrangement being chronological.*~~

~~*2 F. Windebank to Sir W. Cecil : " All the Italians were unwilling to give their voices to Raphael, . . . but inclined to favour Godfrey " (Dom. Cor. Eliz., xlviii. § 65, State Paper Office). Raphael was a German, Godfrey an Englishman.*~~

~~*service. Some years earlier special posts had been estab- lished by the magistrates of certain Scottish towns for the conveyance of their despatches to and from the court. Thus in 1590 a messenger was appointed by the magis- trates of Aberdeen with the title of "council-post."! The new royal orders of 1603 directed (1) that the postmasters at the various stages should enjoy the privilege of letting horses to "those riding in post (that is to say) with horn and guide," by commission or otherwise, and to that end they were charged to keep or have in readiness a sufficient number of post-horses ; (2) that the lawful charge for the hire of each horse should be, for public messengers, at the rate of 24d. a mile, "besides the guides' groats," private travellers being left to make their own agreements. Fin- ally, it was directed that every postmaster should keep at least two horses for the express conveyance of Government letters, and should forward such letters within a quarter of an hour of their receipt, and that the posts should travel at the rate of not less than 7 miles an hour in summer and 5 miles in winter.?*~~

~~*In 1607 the king granted to James Stanhope, first Lord Stanhope of Harrington, and to his son Charles Stanhope, afterwards second Lord Stanhope, jointly and to the sur- vivor of them, the postmastership of England under the title of " Master of the Posts and Messengers," with a fee of 100 marks a year, together with all "avails and profits " belonging to the office. In 1619 a separate office of " post- master-general of England for foreign parts" was created, by new letters patent, in favour of Matthew de Quester ? and Matthew de Quester the younger. The new office was*~~

~~regarded by the existing postmaster-general, Charles, Lord Stanhope, as an infringement of his own patent. A long dispute ensued in the King's Bench and before the Lords of the Council. In 1626 by an order in council liberty was granted to all companies of merchants, includ- ing the Merchants Adventurers, to send their letters and despatches by messengers of their own choosing. A year afterwards this liberty was revoked, except for the Company of Merchants Adventurers. Lord Stanhope, however, continued to carry letters abroad by his agents, and obtained a warrant prohibiting De Quester from interfering. It shows strikingly the confusion of postal affairs at this period to find a statement addressed to the privyccouncil by the postmasters of England to the effect that they had received no payments "ever since the last day of November 1621 till this present time, June 1628,"—the arrears amounting to £22,626.~~

~~The rights of the postmasters were also infringed by private individuals, as by one Samuel Jude in 1629 in the west of England. In 1632 the foreign postmastership was assigned by the De Questers to William Frizell and~~

~~1 Kennedy, Annals of Aberdeen, vol. i. p. 262.~~

~~2 Book of Proclamations, p. 67 (S. P.0.; now in Rolls HOuse) ; Report from the Secret Committee on the Post-Offce, 1844, Appendix,~~

~~. 88-40.~~

~~= Or "De l'Equester," as he is called in Latch's Reports of King's Bench Cases, p. 87.~~

~~4 These disputes were much embittered by the growing jealousies of English against foreign merchants. The proofs of this in the state correspondence of Elizabeth's day are abundant, but there were many statesmen who took larger views. See, ¢.g., John Johnson's " Brief Declaration for the . . . erecting and maintaining of the Staple . . in England" (June 1582), Dom. Corresp. Eliz., cliv., No. 30; and compare the same writer's "Discourse for the repairing the decayed State of the Merchants," &c. (22d July 1577), i., cxiv., No. 39, with Leake's "' Discourse," &c., of the same year (#., cxi. 1 sq.), and with John HIales's "Letter to Sir W. Cecil" (20th March 1559), 10. iii, where he describes the merchant strangers as being ' spies for foreign~~

~~*princes," and with Cecil's "Reasons to move a Forbearing of the Restitution of the Intercourse to Antwerp" (1564), 7b., xxxv., No. 38 (in Rolls House).*~~

~~*° eal Index to the Remembrancia, 418, as quoted by H. B. Wheatley in the Academy of 27th December 1879, p. 464.*~~

~~*POs Preowr Tere' i*~~

~~*563*~~

~~*Thomas Witherings. Letters-patent were granted to them Wither- Witherings took the labour- ings.*~~

~~*jointly, 15th March 1633.° ing oar, and probably ought to rank as the first of the many conspicuous postal reformers in the long history of the British post-office. Under him one Richard Poole obtained a special postmastership for the service of the court. A petition subsequently presented by him to the House of Lords contains curious proof of the jealousies which Witherings's successful administration of his office excited. Among the earliest measures of improvement taken under the new patent was an acceleration of the Continental mail service. For this purpose the patentees made a contract with the count of Thurn and Taxis, here- ditary postmaster of the empire and of Spain. At this time there was still but one mail weekly between London, Antwerp, and Brussels, and the transit occupied from four to five days. By a subsequent contract with Count Thurn two mails weekly were secured and the transit made ordinarily in two days.' In June 1635 Witherings sub- mitted to the king a proposal (still preserved in the State- Paper Office) "for settling of staffets or pacquet-posts betwixt London and all parts of His Majesty's dominions, for the carrying and re-carrying of his subjects' letters," which contains some curious incidental notices of the state of the internal communication of the kingdom at that time. The nett charge to the crown of the existing posts is stated to be £3400 per annum. Letters, it is said, "being now carried by carriers or footposts 16 or 18 miles a day, it is full two months before any answer can be received from Scotland or Ireland to London. If any of His Majesty's subjects shall write to Madrid in Spain, he shall receive answer sooner and surer than he shall out of Scotland or Ireland." By the new plan it was*~~

~~*proposed that all letters for the northern road should be put into one "portmantle," and directed to Edinburgh, with separate bags directed to such postmasters as lived upon the road near to any city or town corporate. The journey from London to Edinburgh was to be performed within three days. The scheme was approved of on 3lst July 1635, the proclamation establishing eight main postal lines,— namely, the great northern road, to Ireland by Holyhead, to Ireland by Bristol, to the marches of Wales by Shrews- bury, to Plymouth, to Dover, to Harwich, and to Yarmouth. The postage of a single letter was fixed at 2d. if under 80 miles, 4d. if between 80 and 140 miles, 6d. if above 140 miles, 8d. if to Scotland. And it was further provided that from the beginning of this service no other messengers or footposts should carry letters to any places so provided, except common known carriers, or a particular messenger "sent on purpose with a letter by any man for his own occasions," or a letter by a friend, on pain of exemplary punishment. In February 1638 another royal proclama- tion ratified an agreement between Witherings and De Noveau, postmaster to the French king, for the convey- ance of the mails into France by Calais, Boulogne, Abbe- ville, and Amiens.?*~~

~~*But in 1640 the active postmaster was accused of divers abuses and misdemeanours, and his office sequestrated into the hands of Philip Burlamachi of London, merchant, who was to execute the same under the inspection of the prin- cipal secretary of state.!0 Witherings then assigned his patent to Robert. Rich, earl of Warwick, and a long contest*~~

~~*6 Minute in " House of Lords' Papers" (1633), Fourth Report of Hist. MSS. Commission, 1874, App. The papers there calendared contain many proofs of Witherings's activity and ability. See also appendix to Fifth Report, 1875, and ""'A proclamation concerning the Postmaster of England for Forraigne Parts" (19th July 1632), in Rymer's Federa, xix. 385.*~~

~~*7 Egerton MS. (Brit. Mus.), No. 2548, f. 5 sq.*~~

~~*8 Rymer, Federa, xix. 649. ® Ibid., xx. 192.*~~

~~*10 Thid., xx. 429.*~~

~~*Under Crom- well.*~~

~~*ensued in both Houses of Parliament. The sequestration was declared by a vote in parliament in 1642 to be illegal. Nevertheless the dispute gave repeated occupation to both Houses during the period from 1641 to 1647, and was diversified by several affrays, in which violent hands were laid upon the mails. In 1643 the post-office yielded only £5000 a year. In 1644 the Lords and Commons by a joint ordinance appointed Edmund Prideaux "'to be master of the posts, messengers, and couriers." In 1646 the opinion of the judges was taken on the validity of Wither- ings's patent (assigned to Lord Warwick), and they pro- nounced that "the clauses of restraint in the said patent are void and not good in law; that, notwithstanding these clauses be void, the patent is good for the rest."1 It is evident, therefore, that any prohibition to carry letters must be by Act of Parliament, to have force of law.*~~

~~*In 1650 an attempt was made by the common council of London to organize a new postal system on the great roads, to run twice a week. This scheme they temporarily carried into effect as respects Scotland. But Mr Attorney-General Prideaux speedily obtained the intervention of the council of state. He urged on the council of state that, if the new enterprise were permitted, besides in- trenching on the rights of the parliament, some other means would have to be devised for payment of the post- masters. Both Houses resolved (1) that the offices of postmasters, inland and foreign, were, and ought to be, in the sole power and disposal of the parliament, and (2) that it should be referred to the council of state to take into consideration all existing claims in relation thereto. Of these there were no less than five under the various patents which had been granted and assigned. There-upon the Protector was advised that the management of the post-office should be entrusted to John Thurloe by patent under the broad seal of the Commonwealth immediately upon the expiration of John Manley's existing contract. Thurloe was to give security for payment of the existing rent of £10,000 a year. Ultimately the posts, both inland and foreign, were farmed to John Manley for £10,000 a year, by an agreement made in 1653. Meanwhile, and pending the decision of the council upon the question so*~~

~~*submitted to it, a remarkable step in postal reform was taken by an attorney at York, named John Hill, who placed relays of post-horses between that city and London, and undertook the conveyance of letters and parcels at half the former rates of charge. He also formed local and limited partnerships in various parts of the kingdom for the extension of his plan, which aimed to establish event- ually a general penny postage for England, a twopenny postage for Scotland, and a fourpenny postage for Ireland. But the post-office was looked upon by the Government of the day as, first, a means of revenue, and secondly, a means of political espionage.2 The new letter-carriers were*~~

~~*1 Journals of the House of Commons, ii. 81, 82, 95, 470, 498, 500, 501, 658 sq. ; Journals of the House of Lords, v. 848, 387, 450, 469- 473, 500 sy.; Report from Secret Committee on the Post-Offce, Appendix, 60-69.*~~

- ~~*Some instructive illustrations of this may be seen (in the state- paper department of the General Record Office) among the correspond- ence between secretary Sir John Coke and Lord Conway, and also in many other state letters, as well after the outbreak of the great rebel- lion as before it. And there is in the Bodleian Library at Oxford (MS. Rawlinson, A. 477) a curiously minute account of the methods alleged to have been pursued in the systematic and periodical examination of letters entrusted to the post-office. The paper is not authenticated by any signature, and is undated. But it is an original document of the time of Charles II., addressed to Mr Bridgman, clerk of the council, and drawn up in order to recommend the adoption of a like practice, but with greater dexterity in the manipulation than was used by Dr Dorislaus and Samuel Morland, who, according to this narrative, formed the Cromwellian board of examiners for post-office*~~

~~*letters, and who read without exception all that were addressed to foreign parts.*~~

~~*POS T-O FEF AUGS*~~

~~*[HISTORY.*~~

~~*(literally) "trampled down" by Cromwell's soldiery. The inventor had a narrow escape from severe punishment. He lived to publish (1659) the details of his plan, at the eve of the Restoration, in a pamphlet entitled A Penny Post: or a Vindication of the Liberty and Birthright of every English-man in carrying Merchants and other Man's letters, against any Restraint of Farmers, &c. It is very probable that this publication * helped to prepare the way for those measures of partial but valuable and far-reaching reform which were effected during the reign of Charles II. The rates of postage and the rights and duties of postmasters were settled under the Protectorate by an Act of Parliament of 1657, c. 30. In 1659 the item, "by postage of letters in farm, £14,000," appears in a report on the public revenue.**~~

~~*The Government of the Restoration continued to farm Under the post-office upon conditions very similar to those im- Charles*~~

~~*posed by the Act of 1657, but for a larger sum. Henry Bishop was the first postmaster-general in the reign of*~~

~~*Charles IT., and he contracted to pay to the king a yearly*~~

~~*rent of £21,500, these new arrangements being embodied in the Act 12 Charles II. c. 35, entitled "An Act for Erecting and Establishing a Post-Office." A clause pro- posing to frank all letters addressed to or sent by members of parliament during the session was, after considerable debate, ultimately rejected by the Lords. But the indent- ure enrolled with the letters-patent contained a proviso for the free carriage of all letters to or from the king, the great officers of state, and also the single inland letters only of the members of that present parliament during the continuance of that session. It also provided that the lessee should permit the secretaries of state for the time being, or either of them, from time to time, to have the survey and inspection of all letters at their discretion. Bishop was succeeded by Daniel O'Neill®> in 1662, on similar terms. In the consequent proclamation, issued on 25th May 1663, it was commanded that "no postmasters or other officers that shall be employed in the conveying of letters, or distributing of the same, or any other person or persons, . . . except by the immediate warrant of our principal secretaries of state, shall presume to open any letters or pacquets not directed unto themselves." In 1677 the general post-office comprised in the chief office, under Henry*~~

~~*Bennet, earl of Arlington, as postmaster- general, seventy-five persons, and its profits were farmed for £43,000 a year. There were then throughout England and Scotland 182 deputy postmasters, and in Ireland 18 officers at the Dublin office and 45 country postmasters. "The number of letters missive," says a writer of the same year, "is now prodigiously great. . . . A letter com- prising one whole sheet of paper is conveyed 80 miles for twopence. Every twenty-four hours the post goes 120 miles, and in five days an answer may be had from a place 300 miles distant."6*~~

~~*By an Act of the 15th Charles IT. ("An Act for Settling the Profits of the Post-Office on H.R.H. the Duke of York, and his Heirs-Male"), and by a subsequent proclamation issued in August 1683, it was directed that the postmaster- general should 'take effectual care for the conveyance of all bye-letters, by establishing correspondences . . . in all considerable market-towns with the next adjacent post- stage," and the rights of the postmasters as to hiring horses were again emphasized.*~~

~~*3 There is a copy in the library of the British Museum, from which Mr H. B. Wheatley has given the abstract quoted above.*~~

~~*4 Journals of the House of Commons, vii. 627.*~~

~~*5 The trusted friend but not always the trusted adviser of the duke of Ormonde. O'Neill's correspondence exists among the duke's papers, in part at Kilkenny Castle, in part (extensively) amongst the Carte MSS. in the Bodleian; and it abounds in incidental illustrations of postal administration in both England and Ireland.*~~

~~*§ Quoted in Gent. Mag. (1815), xxxv. pp. 309, 310.*~~

~~*1533-1836.] PONS Teor fic £ 565 Dock- It was during the possession of the post-office profits by | The Government of New York in 1672 established "a post to goe ie — the duke of York that a London penny post was estab- monthly from New York to Boston," advertising "those that bee ay lished by the joint enterprise of (Wallan Dockwra, a gag to eae — to ae them to the secretary's office, post. searcher at the customs house, and of Robert Murray, a ais eaieamall perabiia iri ae ae a i a eeecaled clerk in the excise office. The working-out of the plan | up."? Thirty years later this monthly*~~

~~*post had pestle a fort. fell to the first-named, and in his hands it gave in April | nightly one, as we see by the following paragraph in the Boston 1680—although but for a short time—far more extensive We "By See of u Se yg es of North oper a. ese are to i postal facilities to the Londoners than even those SO | 6th of December, the Wels Doe Cee, Bic i eevee memorably afforded 160 years later by the plans of Sir | sets, out once a fortnight, the three winter months of December Rowland Hill. The London of that day was small, and January, and February, and to go alternately from Boston to Say- easily manageable. Dockwra carried, registered, and in- uo ong Peed oi eee mayle of letters with the sured, for a penny, both letters and parcels up to a pound York Ryder on anacad night the Sut sae a een in weight and £10 in value. He took what had been the | turn he sets out at Boston on Monday night the 20th currant, to mansion of Sir Robert Abdy in Lime Street as a chief | meet the New York Ryder at Hartford, on Saturday night the 25th office, established seven sorting and district offices (thus oe repel a al pomege ees anticipating one of the most recent improvements of the | notified first to pay the gen Reena: This a oe present time) and between 400 and 500 receiving-houses | master-general for America had been created in 1692. and wall-boxes. He established hourly collections, with a We have now traced the postal communications of dif- Act of maximum of ten deliveries daily for the central part of the | ferent portions of the British empire from their earliest consoli- city, and a minimum of six for the suburbs. Outlying | beginnings until the eve of the passing of the Act of cation: villages, such as Hackney and Islington, had four daily } the 9th of Queen Anne which consolidated them into one deliveries ; and his letter-carriers collected for each despatch | establishment, and which, as to organization, continued to of the general post-office throughout the whole of the city | be the great charter of the post-office until the date of the and suburbs. Suits were laid against him in the court of | important reforms of 1838-50, mainly introduced by the King's Bench for infringing on the duke of York's patent, | energy, skill, and characteristic pertinacity of Sir Rowland and the jealousies of the farmers eventually prevailed. | Hill. The Act of Anne largely increased the powers of the The penny post was made a branch of the general post. | postmaster-general. It reorganized the chief letter-offices Dockwra, after the Revolution of 1688, obtained a pension } of Edinburgh, Dublin, and New York, and settled new of £500 a year (for a limited term) in compensation of | offices in the West Indies and elsewhere.*~~

~~*It established his losses. In 1697 he was made comptroller of the | three rates of single postage, viz., English, 3d. if under London office. Eleven years later his improvements were | 80 miles and 4d. if above, and 6d. to Edinburgh or outvied by Charles Povey, the author of schemes for im- | Dublin. It continued to the postmaster-general the sole proving coinage, and also of a very curious volume, often | privilege "' to provide horses to persons riding post." And wrongly ascribed to Defoe, entitled Zhe Visions of Str | it gave, for the first time, parliamentary sanction to the Heister Ryley. Povey took upon himself to set up a foot- | power, formerly questionable, of the secretaries of state post under the name of the "' halfpenny carriage," appointed | with respect to the opening of letters, by enacting that receiving-houses, and employed several persons to collect | "from and after the first day of June 1711 no person or and deliver letters for hire within the cities of London and | persons shall presume . . . to open, detain, or delay .. . Westminster and borough of Southwark, 'to the great | any letter or letters . . . after the same is or shall be prejudice of the revenue," as was represented by the post- | delivered into the general or other post-office, . . . and master-general to the lords of the treasury. Povey was | before delivery to the persons to whom they are directed, compelled to desist. or for their use, except by an express warrant in writing Early = At this period the postal system of Scotland was distinct from | under the hand of one of the principal secretaries of state,*~~

~~*Scottish that of England. It had been reorganized early in the reign of*~~

~~*postal Charles II., Who in September 1662 had appointed Patrick Grahame*~~

~~*system. of Inchbrakie to be postmaster-general of Scotland for life at a salary of £500 Scots. But it would seem from the proceedings of the Scottish privy council that the rights and duties of the office were ill defined ; for immediately after the appointment of Grahame the council commissioned Robert Mein, merchant and keeper of the letter-office in Edinburgh, to establish posts between Scotland and Ireland, ordained that Linlithgow, Kilsyth, Glasgow, Kilmarnock, Dumboag, Ballantrac, and Portpatrick should be stages on the route, and granted him the sum of £200 sterling to build a packet- boat to carry the mail from Portpatrick to Donaghadee.*~~?

~~*Karly The colonial post-office at this period was naturally more rudi-*~~

~~*colonial mentary still. Perhaps the earliest official notice of it is to be seen*~~

~~*posts. in the following paragraph from the records of the general court of Massachusetts in 1639. 'It is ordered that notice be given that Richard Fairbanks his house in Boston is the place appointed for all letters which are brought from beyond the seas, or are to be sent thither to be left with him; and he is to take care that they are to be delivered or sent according to the directions; and he is allowed for every letter a penny, and must answer all miscarriages through his own neglect in this kind." That court in 1667 was petitioned to make better postal arrangements, the petitioners alleging the frequent "loss of letters whereby merchants, especially with their friends and employers in foreign parts, are greatly dam- nified ; many times the letters are imputed (?) and thrown upon the Exchange, so that those who will may take them up, no person, without some satisfaction, being willing to trouble their houses therewith." In Virginia the postal system was yet more primitive. The colonial law of 1657 required every planter to provide a messen- ger to convey the despatches as they arrived to the next plantation,*~~

~~*1 Lang, Historical Summary of the Post-Office in Scotland, 4, 5.*~~

~~*for every such opening, detaining, or delaying."*~~

~~*Nine years after the passing of the Act of Anne the Cross-*~~

~~*cross-posts were farmed to the well-known "humble" cee 4 Posts.*~~

~~*Ralph Allen,—the lover of peace and of humanity. Allen became the inventor of the cross-roads postal system, having made an agreement that the new profits so created should be his own during his lifetime. His improvements were so successful that he is said to have netted during forty-two years an average profit of nearly £12,000 a year.*~~

~~*The postal revenue of Great Britain, meanwhile, stood thus :—*~~

~~*TABLE I.—Gross and Nett Income, 1724-1774.*~~

~~*Gross Produce. Nett Revenue.*~~

£ 8s. a. £ 8.

1724 178,071 16 9 96,3389 7 5

1734 176,334 3 1 sil 7Ol iil

1744 194,461 8 7 85,114 9 4 1754 214,300 10 6 97,865 5 1 1764 225,326 5 8 116,182 8 5 1774 313,032 14 6 164,077 8 4

2 Miles, " History of the Post- Office," in the American Banker's Magazine, n. s., vii. 358 sq. 3 Buckingham, Specimens of Newspaper [nterature (Boston, 1850), i, 16jeh7. " "4 "Ts there a variance ? enter but his door, Balked are the courts; the contest is no more." Pope's "humble Allen" was also the " Allworthy " of Fielding.

POs TOW 1G

ever, appointed Palmer to be comptroller-general of postal revenues, an office which was soon made too hot for him

[HISTORY.

566

Perman- The system of burdening the post-office revenue with pensions, ent pen- nearly all of which had not the slightest connexion with the postal service, and some of which were unconnected with any sort of service

seas: that fly be alle' public, avis Beeun by Ohials II, auto to hold. He obtained a pension of £3000 a year, and at can ublic, : : ; granted be Betbace aMewemy ot Cleveland, £4700 a year, and to the ultimately, by the Act 3 Geo. HL. . 157, after his oe earl of Rochester £4000 a year, out of that revenue. The example | had received the sanction of five successive majorities was followed until, in 1694, the list of pensions so chargeable stood against Government, an additional sum of £50,000. Every thus :— sort of obstruction was placed in the way of his reward, i al Ga) oe? Sogepaedeoso od £2,000 HTS eS. : 20 LE Ba Gee although nearly a million had been added to the annual Westies 1… 500 public revenue, and during a

~~quarter of a century the lea ee ae TORRES as Iara £21,200 | mails had been conveyed over an aggregate of some en Peet acest saat ee seventy millions of ass without the occurrence of one borough, charged in like manner. In March 1857 the existing serious mail robbery. nensions ceased to be payable by the post-office, and became charge- Scotland shared in the advantages of the mail-coach system from Scottish I : the first. Shortly before its introduction the local penny post was and Irish able to the consolidated fund. : : t penny p ihe Frees tant and enduring impulse to the develop- set on foot in Edinburgh by Peter Williamson, the keeper of a post- € first important and en es ion P- | coffee-room in the hall of Parliament House. He employed four office, ment of the latent powers of the post-office, both as a | jetter-carriers, in uniform, appointed receivers in various parts of 1708- public agency and as a source of revenue, was given by | the city, and established hourly deliveries? The officials of the 1801. the shrewdness and energy of the manager of the Bath ee eae the success of ite tian Hadi becoute pe lan a Palmer's theatre, John Palmer. Palmr's notice wWaseatimacted to | "ee ee : : : : : of which was subsequently confirmed by the Act 34 Geo. III. c. sea — the subject in October 1782. His avocations had made | 17 4 dead-letter office was established in 1784. The entire staff~~

~~him familiar with that great western road which was still in such peculiar favour, alike with people of fashion and with the gentlemen of the highway. So habitual were the robberies of the post that they came to be regarded by its officials as among the necessary conditions of human affairs. They urged on the public the precaution of send- ing all bank-notes and bills of exchange in halves, and pointed the warning with a philosophical remark, that " 'there are no other means of preventing robberies with effect, as it has been proved that the strongest carts that could be made, lined and bound with iron, were soon broken open by a robber."~~

~~At this period, in addition to the recognized perils of the roads, the postal system was characterized by extreme irregularity in the departure of mails and delivery of letters, by an average speed of about 34 miles in the hour, and by a rapidly-increasing diversion of correspond- ence into illicit channels. The nett revenue, which had averaged £167,176 during the ten years ending with 1773, averaged but £159,625 during the ten years ending with~~

~~1783.~~

~~coaches of a construction expressly adapted to run at a good speed, by furnishing a liberal supply of horses, and by attaching an armed guard to each coach the public would be greatly benefited, and the post-office revenue consider- ably increased, the officials pertinaciously opposed the plan and maintained that the existing system was all but perfect. Lord Camden, however, brought the plan under the personal notice of Pitt. No sooner was the minister convinced of its merits than he insisted on its being tried. The experi- ment was made in August 1784, and its success exceeded all anticipation. The following table will show the rapid progress of the postal revenue under the new arrangements.~~

~~TABLE II.—@ross and Nett Income, 1784-1805.~~

~~Yet, when Palmer suggested that by building mail-.~~

~~of the Edinburgh post-office, which consisted in 1708 of seven persons, now comprised twenty-five, the cost of the office being £1406. In1796 the number of functionaries had increased to forty, and the cost to £3278.3 Butin Ireland the old state of things con- tinued until the present century. In 1801 only three public carriages in the whole country conveyed mails. There were, indeed, few roads of any sort, and none on which coaches could travel faster than four miles an hour.* At this period the gross receipts of the Trish post-office were £80,040; the charges of management and collection were £59,216, or at the rate of more than 70 per cent. ; whilst in Scotland the receipts were £100,651, and the charges £16,896, or somewhat less than 17 per cent.5~~

~~In the American colonies postal improvements may be dated from Frank- the administration of Franklin, who was virtually the last colonial lin.~~

~~postmaster- general, as well as unquestionably the best. In one shape or another he had forty years' experience of postal work, hav- ing been appointed postmaster at Philadelphia as early as October 1737. When he became postmaster-general in 1753 he bestirred himself for the improvement of his department in that practical painstaking way with which he was wont to guide any plough he had once put his hand to, whatever the~~

~~ground it had to work in. He visited all the chief post-offices throughout Pennsylvania, New Jersey, New York, and New England, looking at everything with his own eyes. His administration cannot be better summed up than we find it to be in a sentence or two which he wrote soon after his dismissal. Upto the date of his appointment, he says, "the American post-office had never paid anything to that of Britain. We [t.e., himself and his assistant] were to have £600 a year be- tween us, if we could make that sum out of the profits of the office. . . . In the first four years the office became above £900 in debt tous. But it soon after began to repay us; and before I was dis- placed by a freak of the minister's, we had brought it to yield three times as much clear revenue to the crown as the post-office of Ireland. Since that imprudent transaction they have received from it—not one farthing."'~~

~~The interval between the development of Palmer's improved methods (as far as that development was permitted by the authori- ties), which we take to be pretty nearly contemporaneous with the parliamentary settlement of his claims, and the still more import- ant reforms introduced twenty-seven years later by Sir Rowland Hill, is chiefly marked by the growth of the packet system, under the influence of steam navigation, and by the elaborate investiga- tions of the revenne commissioners of 1826 and the following years.~~

~~vo Crossilincome: Rai: Reree. Undoubtedly the inquiries of these comniissioners attracted a larger~~

~~share of public attention to the management of the post-office than~~

~~£ Bb alle £ 8s. da. had theretofore been bestowed on it; but, if anything had been~~

~~Bs IMT Serre 420,101 1 8 196,513 16 7 wanted to throw into bolder relief Hill's intelligent and persevering bys Beir ses beaten ee 463,753 8 4 261,409 18 2 exertions, these reports supply the want in ample measure. In NUN) Senapeood ceoneoososse eG) il 331,179 18 8 some important particulars they mark out practical and most valu- Ho ney eee 745,238 0 0 414,548 11 7 able reforms, but they are so clumsy in arrangement, so resilient NE S(0)0): asc seers San Gea 1,083,950 0 0 720,981 17 1 in the treatment of the various branches of the service, and so TEGO Sime~~

egensenedasceewodor Leu, 844 O © 944,382 8 4 crowded with petty details as to contrast most unfavourably with the Incid order and vigorous reasoning of Rowland Hill's Post-

It had been at first proposed to reward Palmer by a 1 Debates of both Houses of Parliament in 1808 relative to the Agree-

grant for life of two and a half per cent. on a certain proportion of the increased nett revenue, which would eventually have given him some £10,000 a year; but this proposition fell through, in consequence either of technical difficulties created by the Post-Office Act or of the opposition of the post-office authorities. Pitt, how-

ment for the Reform and Improvement of the Post-Offce, passim.

2 Lang, Historical Summary of the Post-Office in Scotland, 15.

3 Appendix to Seventh Report from Select Committee on Finance (1797), reprinted in collective series of reports, xii. 209.

4 Minutes of Evidence before Select Committee on Taxation of In- ternal Communication (1837), evidence of Sir Edward Lees, 397.

5 Report, &c., of Select Committee on Postage.

Packet services.

Govern- mental interfer-

corre- spond- ence.

. &c.

1836-1842.

Office Reform. While the functionaries of the post-office are criticized with a severity so salient as to wear an appearance at times of almost personal hostility, the truth that a very large and liberal inerease of public facilities would be likely to benefit the revenue much more materially than small

~~*economies in salaries and perquisites seems scarcely to have dawned on the minds of the commissioners. Even in dealing with a new accommodation actually provided—that of the money-order office—whilst taking just exception to the unofficial character of its management, they incline rather to its abolition than to its reform.*~~

~~*As early as 1788 the cost of the packets employed by the post- office attracted parliamentary attention. In that year the "com- missioners of fees and gratuities" reported that in the preceding seventeen years the total cost of this branch had amounted to £1,038,133 ; and they naturally laid stress on the circumstance that many officers of the post-office were owners of such packets, even down to the chamber-keeper. At this time part of the packet service was performed by hired vessels, and part by vessels which were the property of the crown. The commissioners recommended that the latter should be sold, and the entire service be provided for by public and competitive tender. The subject was again in-*~~

~~*. quired into by the Finance Committee of 1798, which reported*~~

~~*that the recommendation of 1788 had not been fully acted upon, aud expressed its concurrence in that recommendation. The plan was then to a considerable extent enforced. But the war rapidly increased the expenditure. The average (£61,000) of 1771-87 had increased in 1797 to £78,489, in 1810 to £105,000, in 1814 to £160,603. In the succeeding years of peace the expense fell to an aycrage of about £85,000. As early as 1818 the " Rob Roy" plied regularly between Greenock and Belfast ; but no use was made of steam navigation for the postal service until 1821, when the post- master-general established crown packets. The expenditure under the new system, from that date to 1829 inclusive, was thus reported by the commissioners of revenue inquiry in 1830.*~~

~~*TABLE III.—Cost of Packet Service, 1820-1829.!*~~

~~*144,592*~~

~~*The. general administration of postal affairs at this period was still characterized by repeated advances in the letter rates, and the twenty years previous to Rowland Hill's reforms by a stationary revenue. The following*~~

~~*table (IV.) will show the gross receipts, the charges of collection and management, and the nett revenue (omitting fractions of a pound) of the post-office of Great Britain. We give the figures for the year 1808 for the purpose of comparison.*~~

~~*Charges per cent of Gross | Income.*~~

~~*| Charges of Collection,*~~

~~*Population of United Kingdom.*~~

~~*Nett Revenue.*~~

~~*Gross In-*~~

~~÷~~

~~*| Year, come.*~~

~~*£451,431 29 £1,100,606*~~

~~*594,045 27 719,622 636,290 29 655,914 29 747,018 31 609,220*~~

~~*686,768 29*~~

~~*1808 £1,552,037*~~

~~*1815-16 1818-19 1820-21 1824-25 1826-27 1836-37 1838-39*~~

~~*19,552,000*~~

~~*20,928,000 22,362,000*~~

~~*25,605,000*~~

~~*i) ee ise}*~~

~~*A) bo Sc) on*~~

~~bs bo on a bo ow~~

~~=)~~

~~2,346,278~~

~~Before passing to the reform of 1839 we have to revert to that important feature in postal history,—the interference with corre- spondence for judicial or political purposes. We have already seen~~

~~ence with (1) that this assuinption had no parliamentary sanction until the~~

~~enactment of the 9th of Queen Anne ; (2) that the enactment differed from the royal proclamations in directing a special warrant for each opening or detention of correspondence. It is a significant gloss on the statute to find that for nearly a century (namely, until 1798 inclusive) it was not the practice to record such warrants regularly in any official book.4 Of the use to which the power was applied the state trials afford some remarkable instances. At the trial of Bishop Atterbury, for example, in 1728 certain letters were offered in evidence which a clerk of the post-office deposed on oath "to be true copies from the originals, which were stopped at the post-office and copied, and sent forward as directed."" Hereupon Atter- bury very naturally asked this witness "if he had any express warrant under the hand of one of the principal secretaries of state for opening the said letters." But the Lords shelved his objection and put a stop to his inquiry on the grounds of public inexpediency.~~

~~1 Twenty-second Report of the Commissioners of Revenue Inquiry, 4-6. 2 Last year of exclusive sailing packets.~~

~~3 First year of steam-packets.~~

~~4 Report of Secret Committee on the Post-Offce (1844), p. 9.~~

~~*Twenty-nine peers recorded their protest against this decision.> But the practice thus sanctioned appears to have been pushed to such lengths as to elicit in April 1735 a strong protest and censure from the House of Commons. In the preceding February com- plaints were made by several members that not only were their letters charged at the post-office, but they were often broken open and perused by the clerks, that the practice of breaking open letters was become frequent, and was so publicly known that 'the liberty given to break open letters . . . could now serve no purpose but to enable the idle clerks about that office to pry into the private affairs of every merchant and of every gentleman in the kingdom."® A committee of inquiry was appointed, and after receiving its report the House resolved that it was "an high infringement of the privi- leges of the . . . Commons of Great Britain in Parliament for any postmaster, his deputies, or agents, in Great Britain or Ireland, to open or look into, by any means whatever, any letter directed to or signed by the proper hand of any member, without an express warrant in writing under the hand of one of the principal secretaries of state for every such opening and looking into; or to detain or delay any letter directed to, or signed with the name of any niember, unless there shall be just reason to suspect some counterfeit of it, without an express warrant of a principal secretary of state for every such detaining or delaying."*~~

~~*Sir Rowland Hill's Reforms (1836-1842).*~~

~~*Rowland Hill's pamphlet (Post- Office Reform) of 1837 Rowland*~~

~~*took for its starting-point the fact that, whereas the postal revenue showed for the past twenty years a positive though*~~

~~*slight diminution, it ought to have showed an increase of form.*~~

~~*£507,700 a year in order to have simply kept pace with the growth of population (see Table IV. above), and an increase of nearly four times that amount in order to have kept pace with the growth of the analogous though far less exorbitant duties imposed on stage-coaches. The stage- coach duties had produced in 1815 £217,671; in 1835 they produced £498,497. In 1837 there did not exist any precise account of the number of letters transmitted through the general post-office. Hill, however, was able to*~~

~~*prepare a sufficiently approximate estimate from the data of the London district post, and from the sums collected for postage. He thus calculated the number of chargeable letters at about 88,600,000, that of franked letters at 7,400,000, and that of newspapers at 30,000,000, giving a gross total of about 126,000,000. At this period the total cost of management and distribution was £696,569. In the finance accounts of the year (1837) deductions are made from the gross revenue for letters "refused, missent, redirected," and the like, which amount to about £122,000. An analysis of the component parts of this expenditure assigned £426,517 to cost of primary distribution and £270,052 to cost of secondary distribution and miscellane- ous charges. A further analysis of the primary distribu- tion expenditure gave £282,308 as the probable outgoings for receipt and delivery and £144,209 as the probable outgoings for transit. In other words, the expenditure which hinged upon the distance the letters had to be conveyed was £144,000, and that which had nothing to do with distance was £282,000. Applying to these figures the estimated number of letters and newspapers (126,000,000) passing through the office, there resulted a probable average cost of ;%45 of a penny for each, of which*~~

~~*Too Was cost of transit and 3'y9 cost of receipt, delivery, &c. Taking into account, however, the much greater*~~

~~*weight of newspapers and franked letters as compared with chargeable letters, the apparent average cost of transvt became, by this estimate, but about 85, or less than 515 of a penny.*~~

~~*A detailed estimate of the cost of conveying a letter from London to Edinburgh, founded upon the average weight of the Edinburgh mail, gave a still lower propor- tion, since it reduced the apparent cost of transit, on the average, to the thirty-sixth part of one penny. Hill in-*~~

~~*> Lords' Journals, xxii. 183-186; Howell's State Trials, xvi. 540 sq.*~~

~~*6 Parliamentary History, ix. 842 sq.*~~

~~*Parlia- mentary action.*~~

~~*068 POS T-OP FTCSE*~~

~~ferred that, if the charge for postage were to be made proportionate to the whole expense incurred in the receipt, transit, and delivery of the letter, and in the collection of its postage, it must be made uniformly the same from every post-town to every other post-town in the United Kingdom, unless it could be shown how we are to collect so small a sum as the thirty-sixth part of a penny. And, inasmuch as it would take a ninefold weight to make the expense of transit amount to one farthing, he further in- ferred that, taxation apart, the charge ought to be pre- cisely the same for every packet of moderate weight, with- out reference to the number of its enclosures.~~

~~At this period therate of postage actually imposed (be- yond the limits of the London district office) varied from 4d. to ls. 8d. for a single letter, which was interpreted to mean a single piece of paper not exceeding an ounce in weight ; a second piece of paper or any other enclosure, however small, constituted the packet a double letter. A single sheet of paper, if it at all exceeded an ounce in weight, was charged with fourfold postage. The average charge on inland general post letters was nearly 9d. for each. Apart from the necessary commercial evils of an excessive taxation, the effects upon the postal service itself were injurious,—on the one hand, a complicated system of accounts, involving both great waste of time and great temptation to fraud in their settlement, and, on the other, a constant invitation to the violation of the sacredness of correspondence, by making it part of daily official work to expose letters to a strong light expressly to ascertain their contents. These mischiefs it was proposed to remove by enacting that the charge for primary distribution,—that is to say, the postage on all letters received in a post-town, and delivered in the same or in any other post-town in the British Isles,—should be at the uniform rate of one penny for each half-ounce,—all letters and other papers, whether single or multiple, forming one packet, and not weighing more than half an ounce, being charged one penny, and heavier packets, to any convenient limit, being charged an additional penny for each additional half-ounce. And it was further proposed that stamped covers should be sold to the public at such a price as to include the postage, which would thus be collected in advance. By the public generally, and pre-eminently by the trading public, the plan was received with great favour. By the functionaries of the post-office it was at once denounced as ruinous and ridiculed as visionary. Lord Lichfield, then postmaster- general, said in the House of~~

~~*Lords that, if the anticipated increase of letters should be realized, the mails would have to carry twelve times as much in weight, and therefore the charge for transmission, instead of being £100,000 as then, must increase to twelve times that amount. The walls of the post-office would burst; the whole area in*~~

~~*which the building stood would not be large enough to'*~~

~~*receive the clerks and the letters.2. The latter part of this prediction indeed has been abundantly verified, but not within the period or under the circumstances then referred to. In the course of the following year (1838) petitions were poured into the House of Commons. A select com- mittee was appointed, which reported as follows :—*~~

~~*'*The principal points which appear to your committee to have been established in evidence are the following :—(1) the exceed- ingly slow advance and occasionally retrograde movement of the post-office revenue during the… . last twenty years ; (2) the fact of the charge of postage exceeding the cost in a manifold proportion ; (3) the fact of postage being evaded most extensively by all classes of society, and of correspondence being suppressed, more especially among the middle and working classes of the people, and this in consequence, as all the witnesses, including many of the post-office ——— a Ee ee*~~

~~*1 Post-Ofice Reform, 27 sq. * Mirror of Parliament, debate of 18th December 1837. But Lord*~~

~~*Lichfield was an excellent public servant, and many reforms were made by him.*~~

~~*[HISTORY.,*~~

~~*authorities, think, of the excessively high scale of taxation ; (4) the fact of very injurious effects resulting from this state of things to the commerce and industry of the country, and to the social habits and moral condition of the people ; (5) the fact, as far as conclusions can be drawn from very imperfect data, that whenever on former occasions large reductions in the rates have been made, these reductions have been followed in short periods*~~

~~of time by an extension of correspondence proportionate to the contraction of the rates ; (6) and, as matters of inference from fact and of opinion— (i.) that the only remedies for the evils above stated are a reduc- tion of the rates, and the establishment of additional deliveries, and more frequent despatches of letters; (ii.) that owing to the rapid extension of railroads there is an urgent and daily-increas- ing necessity for making such changes ; (iii.) that any moderate reduction in the rates would occasion loss to the revenue, without in any material degree diminishing the present amount of letters irregularly conveyed, or giving rise to the growth of new corre- spondence ; (iv.) that the principle of a low uniform rate is just in itself, and, when combined with prepayment and collection by means of a stamp, would be exceedingly convenient and highly satisfactory to the public."~~

~~During the session of parliament which followed the presentation of this report about 2000 petitions in favour of uniform penny postage were presented to both Houses, and at length the chancellor of the exchequer brought in a Bill to enable the treasury to carry that reform into effect. The measure was carried in the House of Commons~~

~~by a majority of 100, and became law on 17th August~~

~~1839. A new but only temporary office under the treasury Nature~~

~~was created to enable Rowland Hill to superintend (al- ee ie) orms.~~

~~though, as it proved, under very inadequate arrangements the working out of his plan. The first step taken was to reduce, on 5th December 1839, the London district postage to 1d. and the general inland postage to 4d. the half-ounce (existing lower rates being continued). On 10th January 1840 the uniform penny rate came into operation through- out the United Kingdom,—the scale of weight advancing from 1d. for each of the first two half-ounces, by gradations of 2d. for each additional ounce, or fraction of an ounce, up to 16 ounces. The postage was to be prepaid, and if not to be charged at double rates. Parliamentary franking was abolished. Postage stamps (see below, p. 585 sq.) were intro- duced in May following. The facilities of despatch were soon afterwards increased by the establishment of day mails.~~

~~*But on the important point of simplification in the internal economy of the post-office, with the object of reducing its cost without diminishing its working power, very little was done. In carrying out the new measures the officers were, as the chancellor of the exchequer (Baring) expressed it on one occasion, ‘ unwilling horses.” Nor need a word more be said in proof of the assertion than is contained in a naive passage of Colonel Maberly’s evidence before the postal committee of 1843. ‘My constant language to the heads of the departments was,— ‘This plan, we know, will fail. It is your duty to take care that no obstruction is placed in the way of it by the heads of the department, and by the post-office. The allegation, I have not the least doubt, will be made at a subsequent period, that this plan has failed in consequence of the un- willingness of the Government to carry it into fair execu- tion. Itis our duty, as servants of-the Government, to take care that no blame eventually shall fall on the Government through any unwillingness of ours to carry it into proper effect.’” And again: “After the first week, it was evi- dent, from the number of letters being so much below Mr HIll’s anticipations, that it must fail, inasmuch as it wholly rested upon the number of letters ; for without that you could not possibly collect the revenue anticipated.”*~~

~~*The plan, then, had to work in the face of rooted mis- trust on the part of the workers. Its author was (fora term of two years, afterwards prolonged to three) the officer, not of the post-office, but of the treasury. HIe could only recommend measures the most indispensable through the chancellor of the exchequer ; and, when Goulburn succeeded*~~

~~*Results.*~~

~~*Opening and de- tention of letters.*~~

~~*1842-1885.]*~~

~~*Baring, the chancellor was very much of Colonel Maberly’s way of thinking. It happened, too, that the scheme had to be tried and carried through at a period of severe commercial depression. Nevertheless, the results actually attained in the first two years were briefly these :—(1) the chargeable letters delivered in the United Kingdom, exclusive of that part of the Government correspondence which theretofore passed free, had already*~~

~~increased from the rate of about 75,000,000 a year to that of 196,500,000 ; (2) the London district post letters had increased from about 13,000,000 to 23,000,000, or nearly in the ratio of the reduction of the rates; (3) the illicit conveyance of letters was substan- tially suppressed ; (4) the gross revenue, exclusive of re- payments, yielded about a million and a half per annum, which was about 63 per cent. of the amount of the gross revenue in 1839. These results at so early a stage, and in the face of so many obstructions, amply vindicated the policy of the new system. But by its enemies that system was loudly declared to be a failure, until the progressive and striking evidence of year after year silenced opposition by an exhaustive process.~~

~~Seven years later (1849) the 196,500,000 letters de- livered throughout the United Kingdom in 1842 had increased to nearly 329,000,000. In addition, the follow- ing administrative improvements had been effected :—(1) the time for posting letters at the London receiving-houses extended ; (2) the limitation of weight abolished ; (3) an additional daily despatch to London from the neighbouring (as yet independent) villages ; (4) the postal arrangements of 120 of the largest cities and great towns revised ; (5) unlimited writing on inland newspapers authorized on payment of an additional penny; (6) a summary process established for recovery of postage from the senders of unpaid letters when refused ; (7) a book-post established ; (8) registration reduced from one shilling to sixpence ; (9) a third mail daily put on the railway (without additional charge) from the towns of the north-western district to London, and day-mails extended within a radius of 20 miles round the metropolis; (10) a service of parliamentary re- turns, for private Bills, provided for; (11) measures taken, against many obstacles, for the complete consolidation of the two heretofore distinct corps of letter-carriers,—an improvement (on the whole) of detail, which led to other improvements thereafter.!~~

~~Improvements, more conspicuous still, in the money-order branch of the postal service will be noticed in a subsequent section of this article (page 572).~~

~~Later History (1842-1885).~~

~~When Sir R. Hill initiated his great reform the post- mastership-general was in the hands of the earl of Lich- field, the thirty-first in succession to that~~

~~*office after Sir Brian Tuke. It was under Lord Lichfield that the legis- lation of 1839 was carried out in 1840 and in 1841. In September of the last-named year Lord Lichfield was succeeded by Viscount Lowther.*~~

~~*In the summer of 1844 public attention was aroused in a re- markable manner to a branch of post-office administration which hitherto had been kept almost wholly out of sight. The state- ment that the letters of Mazzini, then a political refugee, who had long been resident in England, had been systematically opened, and their contents communicated to foreign Governments, by Sir James Graham, secretary of state for the home department, aroused much indignation. The arrest of the brothers Bandiera,? largely*~~

~~*1 Hill, History of Penny Postage (1880), Appendix A (Life, &c., ii, 438). Part of the strenuousness of the opposition to this measure arose, it must be owned, from the "high-handedness" which in Sir R. Hill's character somewhat marred very noble faculties. The change worked much harm to some humble but hardworking and meritorious functionaries.*~~

~~*2 Ricordi det frateli Bandiera e dei loro compagni di martirio in Cosenza (Paris, 1844), p. 47.*~~

~~*rest Or ric &*~~

~~*569*~~

~~*in consequence of information derived from their correspondence with Mazzini, and their subsequent execution at Cosenza made a thorough investigation into the circumstances a public necessity. The consequent parliamentary inquiry of August 1844, after retrac- ing the earlier events connected with the exercise of the discretional power of inspection which parliament had vested in the secretaries of state in 1710, elicited the fact that in 1806 Lord Spencer, then secretary for the home department, introduced for the first time the practice of recording in an official book all warrants issued for the detention and opening of letters, and also the additional fact that from the year 1822 onwards the warrants themselves had been pre- served. 'The whole number of such warrants issued from 1806 to the middle of 1844 inclusive was stated to be 323, of which no less*~~

than 53 had been issued in the years 1841-44 inclusive, a number exceeding that of any previous period of like extent. It further appeared that the whole recorded number of warrants from the beginning of the century was 372, which the committee classified under the following heads :—

Subject-Matters in relation to which Warrants were issued for the Opening of Letters, 1799-1844.

Bank ofbmeland |) <2… 0-20 13 | etters netumed:...2.— .---.. — 7 SATU LGY <5. eee iene see DPAGdress copied! <- 0.2.6 oes oe 1 Murder, theft, fraud, &c. ..... VELL Txosreres [Spec Clic | AAn mae ooo coe Gas. 1 Treason, sedition, &c. ..... HMO Gerbalice treeless 89 HSOMers OlMVaAL'.- - e\siiiaeis eel ei 13 —_ NRGVEWING: oc 25s sifieis es siecle ss ate 5 thiol aa eeesenetac ne aOIso8 372 Foreign correspondence …..... 20

The committee of 1844 proceeded to report that "the warrants issued during the present century may be divided into two classes, — 1st, those issued in furtherance of criminal justice, . . . 2d, those issued for the purpose of discovering the designs of persons known or suspected to be engaged in proceedings dangerous to the State, or (as in Mazzini's case) deeply involving British interests, and carried on in the United Kingdom, or in British possessions beyond the seas. . . . Warrants of the second description originate with the home office. The principal secretary of state, of his own discretion, determines when to issue them, and gives instructions accordingly to the under-secretary, whose office is then purely ministerial. The mode of preparing them, and keeping record of them in a private book, is the same as in the case of criminal warrants. There is no record kept of the grounds on which they are issued, except so far as correspondence preserved at the home office may lead to infer them.?. . . The letters which have been detained and opened are, unless retained by special order, as sometimes happens in criminal cases, closed and resealed, without affixing any mark to indicate that they have been so detained and opened, and are forwarded by post according to their respective super- scriptions." 4

Almost forty years later a like question was again raised in the House of Commons (March 1882) by some Irish members, in relation to an alleged examination of correspondence at Dublin for political reasons. Sir William Harcourt on that occasion spoke thus: 'This power is with the secretary of

~~*state in England… . In Ireland it belongs to the Irish Government. . . . Itis a power*~~

~~*which is given for purposes of state, and the very essence of the |*~~

~~*power is that no account [of its exercise] can be rendered. To render an account would be to defeat the very object for which the power was granted. If the minister is not fit to exercise the power so entrusted, upon the responsibility cast upon him, he is not fit to occupy the post of secretary of state."° The HOuse of Commons accepted this explanation ; and in view of many recent and grave incidents, both in Ireland and in America, it would be hard to justify any other conclusion.*~~

~~*The increase in the number of postal deliveries and in that of the receiving-houses and branch-offices, together with the numerous improvements introduced into the working economy of the post-office, when Rowland HIll at length obtained the means of fully carrying out his reforms by his appointment as secretary, speedily gave a more vigorous impulse to the progress of the nett revenue than had theretofore obtained. During the seven years 1845-51 inclusive the average was but £810,951. During the seven years 1852-57 inclusive the average was £1,166,448,—the average of the gross income during the same septennial period having been £2,681,835. The following table (V.) shows the details (omitting fractions of a pound) for the entire period from 1838, the last complete year of the old rates of postage, to 1857 inclusive :—*~~

~~*3 Report from the Secret Committee on the Post-Ofice (1844), p. 11. 4 Tbid., pp. 14-17. 5 Hansard, Debates, vol. cclxvii. cols. 294-296 (session of 1882),*~~

~~*NOD = 72*~~

~~*Tncrease*~~

~~*in postal business*~~

~~*(1839- 57).*~~

~~*Growth and changes*~~

~~(1858- 85).~~

~~570~~

~~Number of Letters ; Gross and Nett Income, 1838-1857.~~

~~imated Postage ; NO. of Gross | fe ee Nett charged Year ending Chargeable Income. me Revenue, jon Govern- Letters. HSL: ment. 5 $7313 1 669. 424 ne 2,339,737 | 687, 652, ; ve Z Wee es 2°346,278 | 686,768 1,659,500 45,156 1840 | 75,908,000 | 2,390,763 | 756,9 633, 2 » a4 | 168,768,344 | 1,359,466 | 858,677 | 500,789 | 90,761 * — yg42 | 1967500,191 | 1,499,418 | 938,168 | 561,249 | 113,255 443 | 2087434,451 | 1,578,145 | 977,504 | 600,641 | 122,161 » — ig4a | 2207450,306 | 1,620,867 | 980,650 | 640,217 | 116,508 1845 | 249091,684 | 1,705,067 | 985,110 | 719,957 | 109,232 > 3846 | 271,410,789 | 1,887,576 | 1,125,594 | 761,982 | 101,190 " 3847 | 2907586,762 | 1,963,857 | 1,138,745 | 825,112 | 100,354 > — tgag | 3227146,243 | 2,181,016 1,196,520 | 984,496 | 121,290 " 849 | 328,830,184 | 2,143,679 | 1,403,250 | 740,429 | 115,602 > 3850 | 337,399,199 | 2,165,349 | 1,824,562 | 840,787 | 106,928 1851 | 347:069,071 | 2,264,684 | 1,460,785 | 803,898 | 109,523 " 1852 | 360,647,187 | 2)422,168 | 1,304,163 | 1,118,004 | 167,120 > 3853 | 379,501,499 | 2,494,326 1,343,907 | 1,090,419 | 124,977 1854 | 410/817,489 | 2,574,407 | 1,400,679 | 1,173,727 | 134,112 Dee? 31,1854 | 443,649,301 | 2,701,862 | 1,506,556 | 1,195,306 | 185,236 1855 456,216,176 | 2,716,420 1,651,364 | 1,065,056 | 173,560 " 1856 | 478,393,808 | 2,867,954 | 1,660,229 | 1,207,725 | 1545229 » 1857 | 504,421,000 | 3,035,713 | 1,720,815 | 1,314,898 | 135,517~~

~~Briefly, within a period of eighteen years under the penny rate the number of letters became more than sixfold what it was under the exorbitant rates of 1838. When the change was first made the increase of letters was in the ratio of 122°25 per cent. during the year. The second year showed an increase on the first of about 16 per cent. During the next fifteen years the average increase was at the rate of about 6 per cent. per annum. Although this enormous increase of business, coupled with the increasing pre- ponderance of railway mail conveyance (invaluable, but costly), carried up the post-office expenditure from £757,000 to £1,720,800, yet the nett revenue of 1857 was within £320,000 of the nett re- venue of 1839. During~~

~~*the year 1857 the number of newspapers delivered in the United Kingdom was about 71,000,000, and that of book-packets (the cheap carriage of which is one of the most serviceable and praiseworthy of modern postal improvements) about*~~

~~*6,000, 000.*~~

~~*During the succeeding quarter of a century, 1858-84, the achieve- ments of the period 1835-57 have been eminently surpassed. The postmasters-general of the new epoch have been assisted and seconded by a series of public servants, not a few of whom added to the conspicuous energies of Sir R. Hill more of those not less estimable qualities—suavity of manner, tact in dealing with large bodies of inferiors, reverence for the good doings of past times— than had fallen to his lot. Salient amongst such stand the names of Sir John Tilley, Mr Frank Ives Scudamore, and Mr Stevenson Blackwood. Among the postmasters-general the Earl of Elgin (1859), Lord Stanley of Alderley (1860), Lord Hartington (Decem- ber 1868), Lord John Manners (February 1874), and the forty-fourth postmaster-general Henry Fawcett! (April 1880 to November 1884) hold eminent place.*~~

~~*This period includes—(1) the establishment of postal savings banks (1861), in which Mr Gladstone, as chancellor of the ex-*~~

~~*1 The Right Hon. Henry Fawcett (1833-1884), under whose excep- tionally vigorous, able, and statesmanlike administration many improve- ments of the postal system were introduced, was born at Salisbury in 1833. He was educated at King's College, London; and Trinity Hall, Cambridge, and after graduating in 1856 as seventh wrangler began his studies for the English bar. A weakness in the eyes had occasionally interrupted his studies before the great calamity which befell him while out shooting in September 1858, when a gun accident totally deprived him of sight. The exceptional interest of his career lies in its com- plete fulfilment of his resolution that he would not allow the calamity "to interfere with his discharge of duty or the enjoyment of life." Even as regards physical exercise his resolution was practically ful- filled, for he continued to engage in riding, fishing, skating, swimming, and rowing with as keen enjoyment as before. As regards the chief interests of his life the result of the accident was probably beneficial rather than otherwise. Returning to Cambridge, he devoted himself to the*~~

~~*systematic study of political economy, and in 1863 he was chosen professor of that subject. In 1867 he was married to Millicent, daughter of Mr Newson Garrett of Aldeburgh, Suffolk, who assisted him in the preparation of several of his works on political economy, and also wrote independently on the same subject. The best known of Mr Faweett's treatises is his Manual of Political Economy (1868). In this science he followed substantially the old lines, but a certain freshness attaches to his views from his deep practical interest in the welfare of the working-classes. After several attempts to enter parlia- ment, he was in 1865 chosen for Brighton, which he represented till 1874. Shortly after losing his seat for that borough he was returned for Hackney. On the accession of Mr Gladstone to office in 1880 he was made postmaster-general, and a member of the privy council. He died from pleurisy, after a few days' illness, 7th November 1884.*~~

~~*rus T-O FYTCOE*~~

~~*(1842-1885,*~~

~~*chequer, had a very large share, and (2) the transfer to the state of the telegraphic service (1870). The origin and growth of each of these pregnant improvements is narrated in a separate section of this article. Scarcely less important than these are (3) the introduction of postal cards (October 1870) and (4) the establish- ment (August 1883) of a parcel post. The last-named measure will probably, in its results, prove to be a public boon of almost unexampled magnitude. At its outset it checks railway abuses, both of overcharge and of excessive delays, which had grown to be enormous evils. Minor but most valuable ameliezations of the postal service begin with the abolition of the half-ounce limit (1877), and include the provision of new and excellent post-office buildings, great improvement of the system of registration, extensive accel- erations of mails in various parts of the empire, increased postal deliveries, and, not least in importance, a most just amelioration (greatly needed) of the position of sub-postmasters, of clerks, of sorters, and of letter-carriers. Certain minor improvements cannot be more briefly or better epitomized than in the words of a writer in the Standard newspaper of 10th January 1879.*~~

~~*"The half-ounce weights chanced to be just above the weight of a letter written on full-sized post paper, and, when that was the maximum weight*~~

allowed, the margin was so fine that a little thicker paper than usual, or slightly larger envelope, sufficed to turn the scale, and all but strictly business correspondents were continually landing those whom they favoured with their com- munications in the annoyance of a surcharge for deficient prepay- ment of postage. By the extension to an ounce all that worry and annoyance has been swept away, and no inconsiderable benefit has been conferred besides on people whose missives are of necessity somewhat more ponderous than ordinary. Quite recently the post- office has introduced another great improvement, which the public, not having yet had time to appreciate, do not utilize to the extent it deserves, —that is, the system of ensuring, which is little less than absolute security for money and articles of value sent through the post by means of registration. The fee for a registered letter, which was at one time as much as half a crown, and has within easy recollection been as high as a shilling, was reduced early in 1878 from 4d. to 2d., with the result that something like 6,500,000 of registered letters were sent in 1878, as compared with 4,316,000 in the previous year, and with 1,300,000 twenty years ago. This number would be largely increased if all the official registered packets were included. Not only has the fee been reduced to what may be considered the lowest possible point, but letters are registered by rural postmen on their rounds, and registration envelopes have been issued by the department to facilitate registration by the public. The envelopes have been devised with care, and seem well suited for the purpose, being strong as well as cheap. They are sold at prices varying from 23d. to 3d. each (which includes the registration fee), and are in five useful sizes, from small note size to a large cover suitable for bankers and merchants. But the re- duction in the charge and the sale of envelopes are not the only iniprovements which have been made in the registration system, for the post-office now undertakes to make good, up to £2, the value of any registered letter which it loses, simply stipulating, in the case of money, that one of its own envelopes shall be used. It is on every account most desirable that money and articles of value should not be loosely committed to the post, and with the facilities for transmitting letters securely which are now offered, people who choose to run the risk of loss deserve very little sympathy if the chance goes against them. As regards international communica- tion it is enough to merely mention the beneficent results of the postal union, under which the postage to most places on the Conti- nent and abroad has been reduced to the uniform rate of 24d. for a

~~*letter not exceeding half an ounce in weight; while to a second category of more distant places under foreign dominion the charge for the letter of half an ounce is 6d."*~~

~~*Table VI. gives the estimate of the number of letters (only) which passed in both directions between the United Kingdom and foreign countries and colonies in 1864.*~~

~~*France West Indies, Pacific, and*~~

~~*Canada, British North STEVENS) sors rsco.csseicicscie tte 1,727,000 America, and United TRG) ARTIC, Seenemeanance do 924,000 RSTRLCES) casi cpeiaeier elersiaue ANTEC) |W WIN? soaadogs oo saadocns 827,000*~~

~~*Prussia, Hamburg, an PODAMAE oie isceislerece ois a are 617,000 IBEMMEN siete eisio, cts, ecevatels 4403;000 | Holland) 2.0. .0..0.5.5- 600,000*~~

~~*East Indies, China, &c. ..3,632,000 ==*~~

~~*UA CINDER pete senescdade cs 2,915,000 Total…... 27,281,000*~~

~~*There were also about 21,500,000 books, papers, and patterns.*~~

~~*Meanwhile the estimated number of chargeable letters delivered Latest*~~

~~*within the United Kingdom during the year had grown from*~~

~~*504,421,000, at which it stood in 1857, to upwards of 700,000,000 (1885).*~~

~~*in 1867, and to 1,057,732,000 in 1877. In the year 1884 the number was reported? as 1,322,086,900 (exclusive of 153,586,100 post-cards). The growth of other departments of the postal service is fully in proportion to that of the letters of inland delivery, as may be seen by the following tables (VII., VIII., 1X.).*~~

~~*2 Thirtieth Report of the Postmaster-General, 1884, p. 1; cp. Statis- tical Abstract of United Kingdom (1884), p. 157.*~~

STATISTICS. | POST-OFFICH 571

TABLE VII.—United Kingdom. Estimated Inland Delivery of Letters, 1889-1884."

EE na a a= clk. tliat = ws VT. 4 Delivered in England and Wales. rl Be # 5 3 # 5 i: E P ‘ ts lk Totalin |. 5| 8% Pal ee 2 2|8# (Ce sz Year ending 31st December Ss. In London Ss |! poland |SElES) Total |S8/28,|| Total S2\265|| Totalin |S2|26 until 1876, and thereafter By > &A| District, |» BS ae a ee | ous in ae aa Be ra United | S| = the Financial Year ending] Country |44;@! including 3.3 2]| way 2& | &S || Scotland. | 3° | &S || Ireland. | 2 =| 8S |) Kingdom. | 2 aS 31st March. Offices. |2 8: Local |28 ae ales. |S 0/55 Sodje SS\/as gs\Es8 3 53s Letters oss Be So BES 6 a SS ies ca ie "1S fel leslee B |4e! A |< ia |< EstimatedNo.of Letters,1839] —-- a s > 60,000,000) .. had 8,090,000) .. ba} | 8,000,000, -. 1 { 76,000,000] .. \s Franks, 1839 x a — 5,172,000] .. 336,000] .. || 1,055,000) .. 6,563,000| .. os Letters,1840} 88,000,000) _.. 44,000,000} .. 132,000,000|120°0} § 19,000,000|143°5| 7 ||18,000,000/119°2) 2 169,000,000)22°2 7 Average of 5 years, 1841-45 122,000,000) 10°7 57,000,000) 9°0 179,000,000) 10-2) il 24,000,000] 9:2) 9 |‘24,000,000, 9-5) 3 227,000,000|10°0 8 op 1846-50 {180,000,000| 5°5 79,000,000) 5°5 259,000,000} 5:2; 15 34,000,000; 4:2, 12 ||34,000,000| 5:0} 4 327,000,000; 5°0 | 12 " 1851-55 |233,000,000| 6°5 97,000,000, 5:0 330,000,000) 6-0) 18 41,000,000| 5:2; 14 ||39,000,000| 3°5| 6 410,000,000} 5°7 | 15 a 1858-60 (302,000,000 4:2 125,000,000| 5:5 || 427,000,000) 4-5) 22 ||.51,000,000) 3-2, 16 45,000,000] 3:0, 7 || 523,000,000) 4-2 | 18 ‘: 1861.85 |373,000,000| 5:7 161,000,000| 5:7 |) 534,000,000| 5-7, 29 |) 61,000,000] 0-5 20 |‘53,000,000/ 3:2, 9 || 648,000,000) 5:5 | 22 nA 1866-70 [472,000,000 4:2 192,000,000) 3:2 664,000,000) 4:0; 31 76,000,000} 4:7, 24 ||60,000,000| 3:2) 11 800,000,000) 4°0 | 26 Were ieyal oeésoceeeceagneee 501,000,000] 0°5 220,000,000; 7°0 721,000,000) 2-5) 32 80,000,000/ 1°2 24 |/66,000,000) 3°0) 13 867,000,000| 2°3 | 27 i ee 580,081,400| 4:8 266,771,000, 6°5 || 846,852,400, 5:3) 35 || 90,976,400, 0°9, 26 ||70,563,800; 0°8| 18 ||1,008,302,100) 46 | 31 j PERS SOhe wens. eee 640,033,900 22 310,077,990| 4-8 |} 950,111,800, 3-0) 38 |}101,948,300| 3-0 28 ||75,937,400| .. | 14 ||1,127,997,500) 28 | 38 fy OSI ee eis 650,952,700, 1°7 330,419,300, 6°6 || 981,372,000 3-3] 88 ||104,995,200) 3:0, 20

~~|/78,799,700| 3°8, 15 _||1,165,166,900/ 3°3 | 34 ay dlislle Vi accoseoncossec 685,169,600] 5°3 352,147,100] 6°6 1,037,316,700; 5:7} 40 {|109,799,900| 4°6, 29 ||82,238,200| 4-4) 16 1,229,354,800| 5°5 | 35 a. ee es 713089,100| 4°1 364,558,100] 3°5 ||1,077,647,200, 3-9] 41 ||116,509,800| 6-1) 31 /'86,479,200| 5-2, 17 _|)1,280,636,200) 4°2 | 36 eo 2 ee 736,962,700| 3°3 375,229,500, 2-9 |171197192'200| 3-2| 41. ||1227204,800| 4-6, 32 87,689,900, 14) 17 ||1,322,086,900, 3-2 | 37 6 } The statistics of post-cards, book- packets, and newspapers Meanwhile the position of many efficient workers in the postal delivered in the United Kingdom in different years from 1872 to | service, who had helped to bring about these satisfactory results, 1884 stand thus (Table VIII.) :— stood greatly in need of improvement. The humbler class of = -»| clerks, most of the sorters, and the entire body of metropolitan Estimated Number of Post-Cards.? letter-carriers were prominent in expressing discontent, and they England & Wales.| Scotland. Ireland. [United Kingdom.| | Were able to show good grounds for it. The telegraphists soon — - —| | followed with like representations, though their hardships were g¢ Ba Sa & 8 | | assuredly less. The result has been a large measure of amelioration Ag forn=; sg 3 . . aii ff A Year AGS ae 2 Bk in pay and in position, effected in part by Lord John Manners, and Number. | 48, |Number.| 3 5 | Number.) § 8, | Number. | § 6, | | more especially by Mr Fawcett, who in 1883 estimated that these 5a 54 54 5 | | improvements would involve an annual cost of about £63,000. ae ag ae aS : ' ae, a = 8 m3 = 3 The systematic employment of women in Her Majesty's postal Employ- = a San and telegraph service was for a long time an experiment and a ment of Be 5 .. | 76,000,000] .. : ve pee 16 ae 67 a ose 55 | 87,116,300) 10°7 problem. It may now be said, most accurately, that, on the whole, women. 1878-79] 94,471,500| 9°8 [11,599,000 4°8 | 5,375,200, 5:0 |111,445,700)_9°0 the experiment is grandly successful, and the problem fully solved. 1881-82)114,251,500| 10°4 |14,651,400| 9°3 oa ae Le Od a In telegraphic labour female counter-clerks and telegraphists were Teese Saat ae aanaad as Ur ane 54 153,586,100! 6-6 actively employed before the transfer to the state. 'The postmaster- eee mare' te Teak | : general of 1870 (Lord Hartington) did but accept what he found Estimated Number of Book-Packets and Circulars. established. Under the new regulation, he employed women as tele- . 1872 | 90,000,000] .. [13,000,000| .. [11,000,000;_ .. Eel ae graphists for eight hours daily, at scales of pay which varied from } ie 79 ee ye bpp ie veer obs 6-7 Tee sen 1 eight shillings~~

~~a week to thirty, according to age, intelligence, and 1861.5‘298,999 400] 12°3 |27°875,000| 15-0 {14,164,300| 16-9 1271,038,700) 12°8 practical experience of the work. At first the women were put into 1882-831244,713,800| 6-9 |28,896,000| 3-7 |14,596,600| 3°1 288,206,400, 6°3 separate galleries, afterwards into the same galleries with men and 1883-84|249,347,000! 1°9 /31,353,700; 7°8 }13,892,900 A 294,594,500, 2°2 boys ; and the change was found to work advantageously for all. ae ae So j As regards the postal service proper, the general introduction there- 2 aioe me “ani aa : oe into of female labour was effected, under the rule of Lord John 1872 87,000,000! .. [12,000,000] .. ; ou | 30 ; a — ; ayy 1875 | 93.345,600| 2:3 |13,819,100| 4-5 |13,884,700| 10-2 121,049,400] 3°4 Manners, by Sir oe Cowl The an cagersy sought i) 1878-791100,424,300| 2-2 |14,477,500[.. |15,993,500| 3:6 180,895,300] 1:8 for. At the close of 1880 there were in the three capital cities of 1881-82‘108,651,700| 5°7 |15,477,300} 2°4 |16,660,100) 4-7 |140,789,100} 52 London, Edinburgh, and Dublin alone very nearly a thousand | .. [15,784,600| 2°0 Pega a ree er oo 15 | | female telegraphists ; and throughout the kingdom a number not 1ees-24 OM OADIRG 125 ee Oia ames much inferior of women of various grades, employed in minor~~

~~postal services, over and above the number of those whose employ-~~

~~| 1882-83 108,613,500 / ment is but an incident of their family position, as the wives and~~

~~Table IX. (compare with Table VI.) gives the estimated number~~

~~} of letters, &c., which passed between the United Ge ae sie daughters of sub-postmasters and the like. The best and the most | 4 countries abroad during the year ending 31st March 1885" Shuts encoosstel experiment of all was that of 1875, which offered 7; * Received from Despatched to postal clerkships expressly to “ gentlewomen,” and conspicuously to i Countries abroad, | Countries abroad. the daughters of officers of the army and navy and of officials in the os <= civil service, admissible only between seventeen and twenty years~~

~~Letters | packets | Letters | packets | Total. of age after six months’ satisfactory probation, and organized. in~~

~~aos and ra and 1876 into two classes, each under a lady superior, who holds the~~

~~Jas, | Nene crda, | News- position of a staff-officer. All promotions are made according to~~

~~asia Jerse merit. Those of class I. have £80 to £100, and the "principal~~

~~female clerks £100 to £150 a year; class II. £40 to £75. The same work which formerly occupied male clerks at £80 to £240 is now equally well done by female clerks at £40 to £75, and so in~~

~~African Colonies (Brit.) | 1,049,000} 885,000 | 1,645,600 | 2,832,600 6,412,200. Argentine Republic…. 96,200 55,300; 168,700; 182,000 502,200 'Australia and New| 1,801,500} 1,949,500 2,229,000 | 4,431,300 | 10,411,300~~

~~7~~

~~Zealand | proportion with the other classes." ¢ Ly = peel pee, aes ae iee Nise en tee | Subjoined are (1) the latest financial statement of postal eapendt- mee ae "t77'300| 50,100 266,400] 343,200| 837,000 | | ture for the year 1883-84, and (2) some comparisons of the nett (ShaGbi.oon eguqucogsner 1,505,000 | 1,120,800 | 1,862,200 | 2,139,200| 6,627,200 | revenue of the post-office at various periods. Denmark …...~~/del>~~-0~~+ + 443,400 ie 453,900 + eee 1,273,700 er 452,400| 184,700] 684,500| 565,200] 1,886,800 , ; ; : Face and Algeria …. 7,555,700 7,127,700 8,247,200 4,079,400 27,500,000 | United Kingdom. —Expenditure for year ending 1st March 1884. Germany …...~~2.—00: 6,880,800 | 2,963 129, 43,500 | 20,116,900 a i ings banks, annuities branch, &c. £4,507,500 ST etree: *193/600| " 4-900| '128,000| °135,000| 487,400) | FOR oniee Sorte, Po anne neice ccessseessstseseenereves—12D 100 HYOMAMG os csetec ne * UPD Ne a NE ket OT ld Ne | Telegraph service ….....sseeeeeeeeeeeeees nooo jooagcgsaussse 1,707,000 India and Ceylon ….. 2,248,000 oe hy Reng epee. eee | Wallyena. <2 essere 1,821,500 | 2,738 ' Cee | « 0C"CO"~C~*«*«s eg... cv eee eee 6,935.6 me a '362,200| 62,000| 457,800| 159,800] 1,041,800 Grand total ..... £6,935,600 Portugal .....~~+ + + + + + + 399,800 | 83,800 351,900) 337,000) 1,172,500 In 1643 the

nett revenue was about £5000 a year. In 1653 it GIN oa oss ane Sate 628,200| 251,600} 718,000| 477,800} 2,075,600 'tee Sica aeegeaseneonoe se 846,400 | 467,400' 909,500] 858,400] 3,081,700 | Was farmed to John Manley for £10,000 a year, and ten years Sweden… 2 /0: ⊢ serie 377,800 | 95,300| 460,700| 239,300) 1,173,100 | afterwards to Daniel O'Neill for £21,500. In 1677 the farm rent Switzerland…... AGES 892,900| 384,100; 985,500} 617,200 2,879,700 was raised to £43,000. In 1685 the nett revenue had grown to Turkey Poa pa none 337,300 89,100} 392,600) 461,800 1,280,800 £65.000, in 1707 to £111,426, in 1790 to £331, 180, in 1800.40 Onilted Seas o….< 7,579,800 | 7,851,400 | 9,088,900 | 8,389,800 | 32,909,900 ,00Y, een 'a oe ee 266,500} 109,200| 355,700] 597,800} 1,328,200 | £720,982. In 8 the nett revenue (for Great Britain) was

West Indies (British) ..

£1,100,606, in 1820-21 £1,495,945, in 1839 £1,659,510, in 1849

1 Thirtieth Report of the Postmaster-General, 1884, p. 14. SS ee 2 Tbid., at ' 3 Ibid., pp. Gr elins 4 Quarterly Review, 1881, vol. cli. p. 187—an article by Lady John Manners.

Money orders.

Postal notes.

572

£740,429, in 1859 £1,349,676, in 1869 £2,198,220,1 in 1881 £2,597,768, in 1882 (inclusive of telegraphs) £3,100,475, in 1883 £3,061,748, and in 1884 £2,897,427.

Money-Order Department.

The money-order branch of the post-office was for forty years the private enterprise of three post-office clerks known as "Stow and Company." It was commenced in 1792, with the special object of facilitating the safe con-veyance of small sums to soldiers and sailors, but was soon extended to all classes of small remitters. The postmaster- general sanctioned the scheme

~~*without ihterposing in the management. Each of the three partners advanced £1000 to carry it on; and each of them seems, during the greater portion of the period, to have derived about £200 a year in profit, In 1830 the amount of remittances from London was only about £10,000. The percentage was eightpence in the pound, out of which threepence were allotted to each of the postmasters receiving and paying, the remaining twopence forming the profit of the partners. On 6th December 1838 the office was converted into an official department under the postmaster-general,—the then partners receiving due compensation. The commission was reduced to a fixed charge of ls. 6d. for sums exceed- ing £2 and under £5, and of 6d. for all sums not exceed- ing £2. In 1840 these rates were reduced to 6d. and 3d. respectively. The number and aggregate amount of the orders issued (inland, colonial, and foreign) in different periods from the reorganization (1839) until 1884 are as follows (Table X.) :—*~~

~~*Years. Number. Amount. 1839 188,921 £313,124 MOA ee canccores padecuasneeeeeee 2,806, 803 5,695,395 SAD ee vattisinve ovcentscessss ene 4,248,891 8,152, 643 DB Aan t ec code Noone eeeen 5,466,244 10, 462,411 1861-65 (average) ..... 8,055, 227 16,624,503 TUCO STAD arenceneeeeepeene scoen: 9,720,030 19,847,258 UGS eac acon sHanner eater caacs06 16,819,874 27,688,255 1876 (first three months 4, 436, 858 7,194,943*~~

~~*only) 1S7S-ie 7.x " SrSeer esenaeosnder 17,740, 622 27,303,093 DP OROESO ie aenceniceeawac eesses 17,307,573 26,371,020 SSO SU. cv esaates cosets aces 16,935,005 26,003, 582 LS STCSQES Laer ea ae 15,383,033 25,393,574 eto ele3) iodagneckoacoboqneractese 15,090,858 27,597,883 TESSEC aie sonens eos sects ome 14,663,635 27,629,879*~~

~~*From 1871 to the end of 1877, the rates having been reduced to 1d. for sums under 10s., and 2d. for sums of 10s. and under 20s., increasing by a graduated scale of 1d. for each additional £1 or fraction thereof, inland orders failed to be remunerative ; and it was only by reckoning as profit the amount of unclaimed and forfeited orders that the cost to the office of inland orders could be covered. But, as the loss was only on orders for very small sums, Mr Chetwynd proposed to meet it by issuing postal notes payable at any post-office without previous notice. When the plan was*~~

~~*submitted to a committee appointed by the treasury, it was objected that the postal note as a remitting medium would be less secure than the money order. The objection was met in part by giving a discretionary power to fill in the name of the post-office and also that of the payee, and no practical inconvenience or cause of complaint seems to have resulted. And in like manner another*~~

~~*1 Average of five years, and exclusive of telegraphs.*~~

~~*2 In the Thirtieth Report of the Postmaster-General (1884) the amount is stated as £2,687,100. The statement in the text is from the Analysed Account of the Public Income and Expenditure, pre- sented to parliament by the treasury in July 1884, and is unquestion- ably the correct one. The comparative deficiency as compared with 1883 is due to the expenditure of £350,000 for plant in the telegraphs and parcel-post departments.*~~

~~*° From 1877 onwards the official accounts are made up to 31st March in each year.*~~

~~*e The figures for this year are those given in the general tabular recapitulation of the appendix to the Twenty-eighth Report of Post- master-General, 1882,.p. 40. In the body of the same report (p. 8) they are stated at 14,880,821 and £23,848,936 respectively. The tabular figures are those also of the Twenty-ninth Report, 1883, and of the Thirtieth Report, 1884.*~~

~~*[MONEY ORDERS.*~~

~~*objection which was urged against the new form of money order in several quarters, and very strongly in the Banker's Magazine—namely, that they would prove to be an issue of Government small notes under another name—has derived no support from experience. "It is found," says the postmaster-general, "that the average time [during] which these orders are in circulation is six days,—a fact which shows that there was no foundation for the idea that they would be used as currency."5 The statistics of notes issued under the provisions of the Postal Orders Act, 43 and 44 Vict. c. 33 (1880), are as follows (Table XI.) :—*~~

~~e+. i eeeeeeeeeeSsSeSsssssSsFMHssesFeFefeFsese~~

~~Number. Value. 1881 (quarter ending 31st March) ..... 646,989 £292,150 HS SUS2 caeeee< eicieyeie eieisie eben eae 4,462,920 2,006,918 TES Se MOE Sinise edeuny ges Boat: 7,980,328 3,451,284 ATS BUSES 07s ck, Senn ened ene 12,286,556 5,028,663 Tiel sos 25,376,793 | £10,779,015~~

~~The postal notes most largely in request are those of 1s., 58., 10s., and 20s. In 1884 plans were under the postmaster-geueral's con- sideration for improving the regulations and for extending the system to the colonies. Meanwhile the money-order business, which for several years past had been constantly declining both in number and in value, was on the increase. In foreign® and in colonial orders the increase was in the number as well as in the amount. The inland orders showed an increase in value of nearly two millions sterling (£1,856,091) in 1882-83 as compared with 1881-82, although their number was smaller by 386,531. In 1883- 84 there was a decrease of 0°84 per cent. in the value as compared with that of 1882-83, whilst the increase in the number of postal orders during the same year was more than four millions, the increase in value being more than £1,500,000.~~

~~The relative amount of the money-order business of the chief towns of the United Kingdom is shown in Table XII." It states the number and amount of the orders paid in each town on one day only (5th May 1876), and for the sake of comparison the cor- responding figures for one day in 1884 (5th May) are appended :—~~

~~Total of Orders Paid through paid. Bankers. 5th May 1876. aoe Amount. Dee Amount. London (general post-office) .....] 8778 | £14,802 8339 | £14,073 LOGI G6 ST ye" NaS eee ene Ae 594 5 380 657 [DE SSIS caren Seer eterna aero mepiees 1181 1,550 ail 983 MGM CHES GET <5 eerrcice/osicieres oes ene ee 1056 2,166 215 506 WIV CL DOO Mare sont tenon 1019 2,466 73 115 GES COW eran ore ee ee ene 882 1,855 526 1,169 ISTASUO Aoccraicstsyoin seers eee e eee Bao 1,140 171 493 MBE US arard a crete cisrcersie tree rele 500 948 95 253 PERT 3 estetevsis: 2c ace aieiseseis serene De 393 935 – 13 20 ———————— ee eee eee ee eee Total of Orders Paid through paid. Ze Postal Orders. 5th May 1884. pies Amount. | Number. | Amount. = Amount London (general) 9117 | £16,278 8,784 £15,608 39 £24 post-office) Edinburgh® ....| 420 760 254 385 307 134~~

Duplin. scaecss sel) (so 1,350 776 1,112 547 198 Manchester…...} 960 1,914 | no record | no record |} 519 210 Liverpool…....| 1074 2,755 Pe 3 371 166 Glasrow …....- 1088 2,174 $5 oF 93 93 IBWSEO). «ecco. 339 752 = 53 271 114 NECEA SY «est ics 420 765 A By 319 148 MEM ee ee ssterenetenee 294 617 a A 158 67

Postal Savings Banks.

The establishment of post-office savings banks was prac- Savings tically suggested in the year 1860 by Mr Charles William banks.

Sykes of Huddersfield, whose suggestion was cordially received by Mr Gladstone, then chancellor of the exchequer, to whose conspicuous exertions in parliament the effectual working-out of the measure and also many and great improvements in its details are substantially and unques- tionably due. Half a century earlier (1807) it had been proposed to utilize the then existing (and very rudimentary) money-order branch of the post- office for the collection and

> Twenty-eighth Report of Postmaster-General, 1882, p. 8.

6 The rate of commission on foreign money orders was reduced on 1st January 1883 by one-third. To all countries within the Postal Union (see infra, p. 583 sq.) it is now 6d. for sums not exceeding £2; 1s. for £5; 1s. 6d. for £7 ; 2s. for £10.

7 Fractions of £1 are omitted.

8 The figures for 7th May are given, as the 5th was a partial holiday in Edinburgh.

BE Osc reo rr IC E BY 2

Any depositor in the post-office savings bank can invest Invest- his deposit in Government stock by making proper appli- ment in cation to the controller of the savings bank department, ¢°ve™ London, provided that the sum be not less than £10, or — than the amount of the current price of £10 stock together with the commission, whichever sum is the smaller ; not

~~more than £100 stock can be credited to an account in any year ending 3lst December, or £300 stock in all.~~

~~Within seven days from the receipt of the application~~

~~SAVINGS BANKS. |~~

~~transmission of savings from all parts of the country to a central savings bank to be established in London, A Bill to that effect was brought into the House of Commons by Mr Whitbread, but it failed to receive adequate sup- port, and was withdrawn. When Mr Sykes revived the proposal of 1807 the number of savings banks managed. by trustees was 638, but of these about 350 were open only for a few hours on a single day of the week. Only~~

~~twenty throughout the kingdom were open daily. Twenty- four towns containing upwards of ten thousand inhabitants each were without any savings bank. Fourteen entire counties were without any. In the existing banks the average amount of a deposit was £4, 6s. 5d.~~

~~Mr Gladstone's Bill—entitled "An Act to grant addi- tional facilities for depositing small savings at interest, with the security of Government for the due repayment thereof "—received the royal assent on the 17th of May 1861, and was brought into operation on the 16th of Sep- tember following. The banks first opened were situated in places theretofore unprovided. In February 1862 the Act was brought into operation both in Scotland and in Ireland. Within two years nearly all the money-order offices of the United Kingdom became savings banks ; about 367,000 new deposit accounts were opened, repre- senting an aggregate payment of £4,702,000, including a sum of more than £500,000 transferred from trustee sav- ings banks the accounts of which were closed. At the end of 1863 the number of accounts in the post-office banks was 319,669, with an aggregate deposit of £3,37 7,480. The average amount of each deposit was £3, 2s. 1lld. In 1867 the number of post-office savings banks in the United Kingdom was 3629, that of depositors in them 854,983, the amount standing to their credit £9,749,929. The average amount of each deposit was about £2, 18s. At the end of 1878 there were in the United Kingdom 5831 post-office savings banks; the number of depositors was 1,892,756; and the amount standing to their credit, inclusive of interest, was £30,411,563. At the end of 1882 the~~

~~*number of banks was 6999, the number of depo- sitors 2,858,976, and the amount standing to their credit £39,037,821. This sum was increased at the end of the ordinary financial year, 31st March 1883 (the savings banks accounts being made up, in conformity with the Act of 1861, to 31st December), to £40,087,000. The average amount of each deposit was about £2, as against £4, 6s. 5d. in the trustee savings banks prior to the passing of the Act of 1861.*~~

~~*On 31st December 1883 the number of depositors was 3,105,642, and the aggregate amount standing to their credit (including interest) was £41,768,808 ; the amount of expenses remaining unpaid was about £11,000. The aggregate value of securities and amount of cash in the hands of the national debt commissioners was £43,294,949. The amount of cash in the hands of Her Majesty's post- master-general was £316,853. The aggregate assets were £43,697,932. The surplus of assets over liabilities was £1,918,116. At the beginning of 1884 the total amount received from depositors, including interest, stood at £173,660,388, the total amount repaid to depositors at £131,891,580. The aggregate number of deposits from the outset of postal savings banks was 62,154,832, that of withdrawals 21,612,727, the number of accounts opened 9,225,575, that of accounts closed 6,119,933, that of accounts remaining open "3,105,642. The total cost of these banks was £2,698,547. The aggregate number of transactions of all kinds was 83,767,559. The average cost of each transaction was 77d. It marks the accuracy of the Government actuaries to note that, prior to the pass- ing of the Savings Banks Act of 1861, the estimated cost of each transaction thereunder was stated at 7d.*~~

~~*the depositor's account is charged with the current price of the stock purchased, with the commission, the de- positor receiving an investment certificate as evidence of the transfer.*~~

~~*As to investments in stock, the postmaster-general re-*~~

~~*ports in 1884 that the total amount of Government stock on 31st December 1883 standing to the credit of depositors was £1,519,983 held by 20,767 persons, against £1, 143,717 held by 16,609 persons in 1882,—an increase of £376,266 in amount and of 4158 in the number of stockholders. The average amount of stock held by each person at the end of the year was*~~

~~£73, 3s. 10d., as compared with £68, 17s. 3d. in 1882. During the seven years 1877 to 1883, inclusive, the average sum annually paid into the exchequer (under § 14 of the Act above named) as the excess of accruing interest was £127,192.~~

~~The apportionment of the outstanding accounts and~~

~~their relation in each part of the United Kingdom to the population, respectively, stood as follows at the close of each of the years 1881, 1882, and 18831:—~~

~~TABLE XIII.—Nwmber and Amount of Open Accounts in Post-Ofice Savings Banks.~~

~~Year 1881. Year 1882. No. Amount.2 No. Amount.2 TBS eh pope quae eneeOoae 2,318,113 |£32,670,307 SEG Slag be Gn aogpqodeanos es 1,016,920 2,643,785 Smallislands ……..- 5,779 84,183 ie 99‘566 | _ 699,688 ||’ 108,701 | ¢#3%037,821 Hrebemidley scotch cae e seh 97,100 | 1,723,395 106,490 Total. 2,607,612 |£36,194,495 2,858,976 | £39,037,821 Year 1883. .,| Proportion | Average No. oe to Popula | of each~~

~~Interest. tion. Deposit.~~

~~England, Wales, and ad- jacent isles ……..-~~

~~2,874,458 1to9 |£13 10 6 116,208 }| £41,768,808 | 4 1 to 33 mene 114,976 1to44 | 171611~~

~~3,105,642~~

~~Scotland… ….-----=-.-s Iga ICL~~

~~During the year 1883 nearly two millions and three quarters sterling (£2, 730,987) of postal savings bank deposits were made in excess of those of the year 1882. Only seven small trustee savings banks were closed during the year 1883. During that year 323 new postal savings banks were opened in England and Wales, 33 in Scotland, and 14 in Ireland. At the close of the year the total number for the United Kingdom was 7369. On 31st March~~

1884 that number was increased to 7475. The year 1874 counts among the flourishing years of trade, 1884 among the depressed years. But since 1874 the aggregate amount of savings deposits in postal banks has very nearly doubled without any noticeable diminution in the business transacted by the trustee savings banks, and the number of depositors has also nearly doubled.

In England the county of Middlesex ranks first with 512,229 depositors (1881) and an aggregate deposit of £7,146,375 ; in Wales, Glamorganshire with 32,573 depositors and £371,419; in Scotland, Lanarkshire with 14,763 depositors and £104,550; in Treland, Dublin county with 26,480 depositors and £367,672. At the close of 1882 the aggregate sum due to depositors in the last- named county had increased to £398,994. 'The increase of late years in the Irish deposits is, it may be added, very conspicuous, (2 (2 2h eee ee eS

1 The figures of 1881 are from a return dated 10th August 1882 (Commons' Session Papers, 1882, No. 347). The figures of 1882 are from Twenty-ninth Report of the Postmaster-General, 1883 ; those of 1883 from the Thirtieth Report, 1884.

2 Including fractions of £1, omitted in the particulars above.

574

and extends to every county of the kingdom. The aggregate sum due to depositors throughout Ireland in 1873 was. £845,550; in 1878 it was £1,325,806, and in 1882 £1,925,460, in addition to £125,000 of Government stock standing to the credit of depositors, or, in the whole, £2,050,460. ; ; ; 7 Of the 638 trustee savings banks which existed in the United Kingdom at the date of the establishment of the post-office system 230 have been closed. Fifteen new trustee banks have been opened ; so that the number now existing is 423, as compared with 7475 post-

office savings banks. Under ihe Act 45 and 46 Vict. c. 51 (1882) the postmaster-

Poe SF Or a aia F

~~| TELEGRAPHS,~~

~~person not under five years of age. The transactions take placc through the medium of the savings bank departments. Husband and wife may each purchase an annuity up to the maximum amount, and each may be insured up to the full amount of £100. Condi- tions of contract in the case of annuities depend upon the age and sex of the purchaser, together with, where the annuity is deferred, the number of years which are to elapse before the commencement of the annuity ; they also vary according as the purchase money is to be returned or not. The premiums charged for insurances vary with the age of the insurer and the mode in which the insur- ance is effected. The insurer, if not under sixteen years of age,~~

~~Annui- : Z : a ee ties and general will insure the lives of persons of either sex between the | enjoys the right of nominating the person to whom the money due life in- ages of fourteen and sixty-five, inclusive, for any sum not less than at his or her death is to be paid. The contracts for annuities and surances. £5 or more than £100; but where the amount docs not exceed £5 life insurances in connexion with the savings bank branch of the the earlier limit of age is eight years. An annuity, immediate or | post-office began on 17th April 1865. The following table (XIV.) deferred, for any sum not less than £1 or not more than £100 will | shows the amount of business done in different periods down to be granted by the postmaster-general, under the same Act, to any the year 1883 :— ANNUITIES. LIFE INSURANCES. Immediate. Deferred. } a | Fees.2 acs Receipts Payments Contracts Re Contracts || . | . 1 entered into. ; 8 diene into. | ceipts. Payments. entered into. |! Receipts. Eauencts, Year. ———— | | — an Sy | seul Sy seg! |eoude ey Sy si) seve ee 22s 1g 2seg 2 gage 5B = ee 25 2cGs No. a B'S # No. ag No. BES $ || No. aS Be g | No. e | 8 No | 38 No. Be | Noe es 2 = é Be EE eS BE Sam | 3 Ba ze £88 ae | gee a4 4335 ae eu | = @ = <£ au 450AG | | eae ss = a 1865 87 | £2,100 || £22,738 32 £423 45 £949 67 £1342 26 2 £139 547 |£40,647 1,076 | £1,165 35 ac 18703) 306 | 6,120 67,738 2,529 26,099 57 1195 514 3529 9 | £346 347 385 | 31,254 9,274 5,877 39 | £1676 1875 | 582 | 7,926 85,781 || 11,129 63,641 34 768 661 | 3543) 0 526 421 370 | 32,022 || 14,549 9,500 i 84 3127 1880 | 892 | 13,249 | 146,562 |} 14,933 | 101,734 41 847 621 | 4406 ; 119 | 1570 695 258 | 20,278 || 15,379 | 10,506 i 125 3886 1881 | 956 | 16,434 || 184,737 |} 15,808 | 121,111 66 1376 686~~

~~5243 | 131 1763 873 300 | 23,900 || 15,883 | 10,967 F 114 3675 1882 | 799 | 13,435 || 155,528 || 16,729 | 122,123 |) 72 1502 772 6449 156 | 2327 727 234 | 18,447 |} 16,039 | 11,069 || 141 5694 1883 | 770 | 14,141 | 159,630 |; 17,302 | 130,053 |) 104 2120 830 | 7240 163 1898 790 256 | 20,600 }} 16,156 | 11,333 | 129 5431 b { ul it endorsed by the other chambers of commerce throughout Postal Telegraphs. the kingdom. When the inquiry of 1865 was instituted Early To the chamber of commerce of Edinburgh belongs the | the total number of places supplied with telegraphic com- ry honour of effectually originating that public demand for | munication by all the companies collectively was about posals.~~

~~the transfer of the telegraphic service of the United King- dom from commercial companies to the state which led to the passing of the Acts of Parliament of 1868 and 1869. There had, indeed, been several like proposals by indi- viduals in preceding years. Mr Thomas Allan proposed such a transfer in 1854. Two years later the scheme was advocated by Mr Baines of the general post-office, and afterwards by Mr Ricardo. But these proposals had no practical effect until after the action taken at Edinburgh, mainly at the instance of Mr (now Sir) George Harrison, convener of the chamber. The committee of inquiry then appointed showed conclusively that the telegraphic service, as managed by the companies, (1) maintained excessive charges, (2) occasioned frequent and vexatious delays in the transmission of messages, and inaccuracies in the rendering of them, (3) left a large number of important towns and districts wholly unprovided for, and (4) placed special difficulties in the way of that newspaper press which had, in the interest of the public, a claim so just and so obvious to special facilities. The committee also proved that, great as were the just causes of public com- plaint at the date of its inquiry, they would have been greater still but for a considerable reduction of charge~~

~~effected by, and in consequence of, the establishment in 1861 of the United Kingdom Company,—a company opposed by a formidable combination of its competitors, which forced it to abandon the uniform shilling rate, irre-~~

~~1000, whereas the number of places having postal com- munication at the same date was 10,685. The telegraph offices were placed most inconveniently for the service of the population generally, and especially for~~

~~that of the suburbs of large towns; and under the then existing telegraphic tariff the charge in Great Britain was a shilling for a twenty-word message over distances not exceeding 100 miles ; 1s. 6d. for a like message over distances from 100 to 200 miles ; 2s. when exceeding 200 miles. Fora message between Great Britain and Ireland the charge ranged from 3s. to 6s.; to Jersey or Guernsey it was 7s. 8d. There were also innumerable extra charges, under con- tingent regulations of great complexity, which commonly added 50 per cent. to the primary charge, and frequently doubled it.~~

~~The Edinburgh committee considered in turn the re- spective merits of three several remedial measures: (1) a regulated amalgamation of the existing companies; (2) the establishment of entire free-trade in public telegraphy ; (3) the transfer of the service to the post-office. It tended towards a preference of the last, but agreed to recom- mend the appointment of a royal commission of inquiry prior to legislation. In the result the needful preliminary inquiries, and also the preparation of the Bills for parlia- ment to which those inquiries led, came to be made by the direct authority of the postmaster-general, and were mainly entrusted to Mr Frank Ives Scudamore, second secretary ©~~

~~spective of distance, with which it started.4 The Edin- burgh chamber was unanimous in supporting the plan of~~

~~of the post-office. The Electric Telegraph Act of 1868 (31 and 32 Vict. Electric~~

~~a uniform sixpenny rate, and that proposal was speedily | c. 110) authorized the postmaster-general, with consent of ae Ta 1 Prior to the year 1875 the payments consisted of purchase money the treasury, to purchase for the purposes of the Act the ly of~~

~~whole, or such parts as he should think fit, of any existing 1g ¢9 69, telegraphic company, " provided always that no such pur- chase be made . . . until the proposed agreement, and a treasury minute thereupon, shall have lain for one month upon the table of both HIouses of Parliament without dis- approval." The Bill in its original form gave to the~~

~~returned only, no annuities being payable till after the lapse of ten years,~~

~~2 On immediate and deferred annuity contracts, the charges on monthly allowances being included in the premium. ; 3 Claims on surrender value of life insurance contracts commenced in this year.~~

- ~~Papers on Electric Telegraphs, 1868, pp. 58, 55, 202 sq.~~

~~orders by telegram.? Finally, it had to amalgamate into one staff bodies of men who had formerly worked as rivals, upon opposite plans and with different instruments, and to combine the amalgamated telegraph staff with that of the postal service.~~

~~When under examination by the Commons' committee of 1868 Mr Scudamore had very modestly disclaimed * the honour of originating anything with respect to the proposed transfer. Every part of the scheme had, he said, been borrowed from somebody else, and tried suc- cessfully elsewhere: the amalgamation of the telegraphic and postal administration in Victoria, New South Wales, Belgium, Switzerland, and to a certain extent in France ; the institution of places of deposit for messages, in addi- tion to the offices of transmission, in Belgium, as well as the gratuitous grant of postal facilities for telegraphic messages; telegraphic stamps in Belgium and France; a telegraphic money-order office in Switzerland and Prussia. But it is quite certain that Mr Scudamore, had he been put under examination at a later date, could have pointed to no precedent for labours like those imposed upon him and his able assistants by the Telegraph Acts of 1868-69.~~

~~So zealously was the work of improvement pursued that within little more than six years of the transfer (viz., in 1876) the aggregate extent of road wires in the United Kingdom was already 63,000 miles, that of railway wires 45,000,—in all 108,000 miles. The number of instruments in the telegraphic offices was 12,000. At that date the superintending and managing staffs of the post-office com- prised 590 persons, the staff of the old companies with the relatively insignificant traffic of 1867—less than 6,000,000 messages as compared with 20,000,000—having been 534~~

~~*persons. For supervision exclusively the number of officers was 88 against 86, and the relative cost £16,900 to the post-office as against £15,000 to the companies.® At this date there were still no less than 1720 miles of the road wires carried over houses and across streets. In 1882 more than 1300 miles of these had been gradually removed and underground wires substituted.*~~

~~*The following table (XV.) shows the gross and nett revenue derived by the post-office from the telegraph service since the date of the actual transfer (Jan. and Feb. 1870).*~~

~~*post-office the exclusive right of public telegraphy. But the committee of the House of Commons to which the Bill was referred made a special report of their opinion "that it is not desirable that the transmission of messages for the public should become a legal monopoly in the post-office." They also recommended that it should be left to the dis- cretion of the postmaster-general, with the consent of the treasury, to make special agreements for the transmission of certain classes of messages at reduced rates ; that security should be taken for ensuring the secrecy of messages, by making its violation punishable as a misdemeanour ; and, finally, that submarine cables acquired by the postmaster- 'general should at first be leased to companies, although ultimately it might become expedient that the post-office should work them.! The Act of 1869 (32 and 33 Vict. c. 78), entitled "An Act to alter and amend the Telegraph Act, 1869," gives to the post-office the exclusive privilege of transmission, —withheld inthe previous Act, —empowers the purchase of telegraphic undertakings other than those included in that Act, and enables certain companies to require the postmaster-general to make such purchase. It also directs the raising by the treasury of a sum of £7,000,000 for the purposes of the Acts. The Act 33 and 34 Vict. c. 88 (1870) extended the post-office tele- graphic system to the Channel Islands and to the Isle of Man ; and that of the 34 and 35 Vict. c. 75 (1 871) author- ized the raising of an additional million. These sums collectively proved to be quite insufficient, and eventually the capital sum so raised exceeded £10,000,000. This large excess led to very blamable irregularities, during two or three years, in the post-office accounts by the temporary application of savings banks' balances, and the like, to telegraph expenditure,—irregularities which attracted the express censure both of the treasury and of the House of Commons. Probably no more arduous task was*~~

~~ever thrown upon a public department than that imposed on the post-office by this transfer of 1868-70. The reforms which it was to bring about were eagerly and impatiently demanded by the public. The utmost ingenuity that some of the old companies could exert, employ, or in- directly incite was used at first to prevent or impede the transfer and then to make it as difficult and as costly as possible."~~

~~c 5 Total Telegraph~~

~~This great operation had to be effected without for Receipts ae Working Ex- ee one hour interrupting the public service. Thereupon the || Year ended 3ist March. tenets oad sre of interest om department had immediately to reduce and to simplify the for Porterage Vote.8 Puce~~

~~deducted).~~

~~charges of transmission throughout the kingdom. It had to exteud the hours of business at all the offices. It had to extend the wires from railway stations lying outside of~~

~~£62,273 | £38,487~~

~~1870 (two months) £100,760 394,477 | 308,457~~

~~ie ete. | 97,9349~~

~~co . 2~~

~~town populations to post-offices in the centre of those vee a aaa gaarea e 1 BL er 1 nee ye~~

~~populations and throughout their suburbs. It had also || ig77 UE) Ysisi107 | 1,128,790 189,317~~

~~to extend the wires from towns into rural districts thereto- || 1879.…....:0:cseeeeereeeees 1,346,892 1,089,392 257,500 holly devoid of telegra hic communication. It had WG Cilbese eeeeee eee ceces ces 1,610,907 1,242,092 368,815~~

~~*asst Herons —. or eee 1,630,443 | 1,365,633 | 264,810*~~

~~*to effect a complete severance of commercial and domestic telegraphy from that of mere railway traffic; and in order to this severance it had to provide the railways with some 6000 miles of wires in substitution of those of which theretofore they had been joint users. It had, further, to provide at low charges, by all sorts of agencies, an effective "free trade" (so to speak) in the collection of news for the newspaper press, of which collection hitherto the old telegraph companies had possessed a virtual mono- poly. It had to facilitate the transmission of money*~~

~~*1,504,204 | 235,859*~~

~~*1,709,506 51,393*~~

~~*ee ee ee*~~

~~*3 Enumerated (Scudamore, Supplementary Report, p. 142) as amongst the objects aimed at by the post-office in accepting the transfer.*~~

~~*4 Minutes of Evidence taken by Commons' Committee on proposed Transfer, &c., passim.*~~

~~*5 Report of the Select Committee on Telegraphs, 1876 (Commons' Session Papers, No. 357), p. ili. sq.*~~

~~*6 Lord John Manners to the treasury ; see Papers relating to Post- Office Telegraphs, 1876 (Session Papers, No. 34), p. 2.*~~

~~*7 Thirtieth Report of Postmaster-General, 1884, p. 58.*~~

~~*8 This return is taken from the Reports of the postmaster-general, and is drawn up according to the appropriation account of each financial year. There are certain additional expenses (for buildings, stationery, manufacture of stamps, and rates) on account of the telegraph service which that account does not include. They raise the total cost of the telegraph service for 1881 to £1,308,454, for 1882 to £1,440, 728.*~~

~~9 Mr Scudamore's original estimate of yearly revenue was put at £608,000 (Supplementary Report to Postmaster-General, 1868, p. 147).~~

~~1 Report of Commons' Committee on Electric Telegraph Bill (Session Papers of 1868, No. 435).~~

~~2 Two instances out of more than twenty may suffice. The North- Eastern Railway Company claimed in compensation for its telegraphic department £540,292, besides a very large sum for interest ; it was awarded, in all, £168,696. The metropolitan railway companies claimed, in all, £433,000, and were awarded £51,907 (Twenty -fifth Report of Postmaster-General, 1879, p. 21).~~

~~Progress The reduction of the unit of charge from a shilling department at the same time itself establishing exchanges in other i ; . + s places. The principle which underlay this arrangement was that nie to anal = et ree " vas zs "A ailhie 5 it only one telephone system should be established in any one town. Cm a Poa (Thar i i sal. y Pe Ultimately he came to the conclusion that it was undesirable . . . was originally proposed, in the Edinburgh chamber of | to create a monopoly in the matter of telephonic communication ; commerce, at the outset of the public movement which | and ee tee a seg! be oe from responsible persons for licences to establish exchanges under con- ~ to the yaraigmdbtten oe Fobis rt ita BR ditions which may be regarded as giving adequate protection to pon successive pos g 7 : w" | the public and to the department." § London Society of Arts. On one of those occasions it According to the Sitwation des Réseaux Téléphoniques for 1883, was admitted by the postmaster-general that even at a | published by the International Telephonic Company at Paris, the sixpenny rate the telegraphs would eventually more than contract between the British post-office and the London and Globe Pp 1 nau ie iy iecties tal Saket Telephone and Maintenance Company is for a term of twenty- pay aL oayeees, See i: & current rate or interest | nine years. The licence granted to the Telephone Company of upon the capital expended.?_ Two years later the urgent | Ireland provides that no exchange to be established thereunder by necessity of this reform was expressly stated by the same | that company shall be within less than 4 miles of any post-office high authority in answer to a question put to him in the | ¢change. But, liberal as they were, the~~

~~*concessions made by Mr H f Commons. Bui be cilulaiad Heok doch & Fawcett in 1883 failed to satisfy the large and constantly-increasing —* 4 claims of the telephonic interest. They claimed (1) entire practical would involve a loss to the revenue for the first three freedom of control for their respective enterprises, (2) the reduc- years, which would probably amount to nearly £420,000 | tion of the subsisting state royalty by one-half, (3) the extension in the aggregate. of the commercial telephonic radius to 15 miles. As an alter- The chief dates in the history of the electric-telegraph service | Dative, they offered to continue the subsisting royalty if every may be stated briefly thus. The first public line to work the sort of restriction and control were removed, Mr Fawcett firmly patent of Wheatstone and Cooke was laid from Paddington to | Mmtained the right of Her Majesty's post-office to continue the Slough on the Great Western line* in 1843, The charge for a existing royalty, to establish at its discretion its own telephone message up to fifty words was Is. Before the end of the year 1845 | °XChanges throughout the realm, and to grant new licences irre- lines exceeding in the aggregate 500 miles were at work in Eng- | SPective of the old ones; he consented to abolish all limitations land on the same patent. In the following year the Electric Tele- of radius or area, to Subject trunk wires and exchange wires to graph Company was established with a tariff of 1s. for 20 words | like conditions, to withdraw the claim heretofore made by the within a radius of 50 miles, 1s. 6d. within 100 miles, 5s. if | Gepartment for an unlimited supply of the patented instruments exceeding 100 miles. Remittance messages or telegraphic money- Fe ve a eS and to ie the establishment by Sage orders were established in 1850. In October of that year the ii a ee. ie: aompany as to. Be first oceanic telegraph was worked for the Submarine Telegraph licensed to receive and deliver written messages at any point. By Company. In June 1854 a writer in the Quarterly Review 4 put the this restriction telegraphic and telephonic messages were practically question: "Is not telegraphie communication as much a function ——- in service, although identical in law. ' hi of Government as the conveyance of letters?" In January 1870 e subjoined table (XVI) shows the total number? of telegraphic Tele- the telegraphs became, in pursuance of the Acts of 1868 and 1869, | ™°SS®ges forwarded in England and Wales, Scotland, and Ireland, grape practically a branch of the post-office. In 1881 telephone exchanges severally, at different years, since the transfer. eatin were established, both by the post-office and by private companies England*~~

~~and Wales Total of under its licence, for terms of years, upon payment of a royalty. Year : Scotland.| Ireland. | United In 1884 (August and September) definitive arrangements were Provinees.| London. | Total. Kingdom. made between the post-office and the telephonic companies, thus arr pean | SAaeees Leeks | Meee | eae eee a long controversy and removing many mercantile | |is/1‘15 | 6’s04°s00 3,612,772 | 10,207,362 | 173887434 | 878/000 | 127473,796 eart-burnings. 1876-77 | 11,232,704 | 6,561,930 | 17,794,634 | 2,402,347 | 1,529,162 | 21,726,143 Tele- When the telegraphs were taken over by the Government tele- | | 1881-8210] 14,204,479 | 12,071,034 | 26,275,513 | 3,207,994 | 1,862,354 Spend phonic phonic communication had not yet come into practical use. But | | 1882-83 | 14,554,015 | 12,374,707 | 26,928,722 | 3,244,202 | 1,919,102 | 32,092, com- the principle and base of both methods are the same ; and the Acts 1883-84 | 14,920,413 | 12,686,433 | 27,606,846 | 3,299,428 | 1,936,846 | 32,843,120 munica- were framed to give the state a right to profit by improvements. . . ——— tion. In the course of the year 1880 several telephone companies estab- The number of telegrams sent in proportion to population is now~~

~~576~~

~~In the year 1882 a large increase in the working expenses became necessary for the further improvement and exten- sion of the service, and for a very just increase in the re- muneration of the telegraphists. In the report of that year the postmaster-general writes as follows :—“ The annual interest on the capital sum of £10,880,571, raised by the Government for the purchase of the telegraphs, has not previously been included in the postmaster-general’s accounts, because the amount is not provided for out of post-office votes; but in estimating the financial position it ought to be borne in mind that the chancellor of the exchequer has to meet a charge of £326,417 for this service out of the consolidated fund.”!~~

~~lished telephone exchanges in various parts of the kingdom. Means were imniediately used by the postmaster-general to vindi- cate the law. Ou the 20th December of that year the question was brought to an issue in the Exchequer Division of the HIgh Court of Justice. It was contended by the companies that ‘the telephone differed essentially from the telegraph,—the~~

~~one trans- mitting electric signals, the other carrying the human voice by means altogether unknown when the post-office monopoly was granted." In the course of his judgment Mr Justice Stephen observed that, 'if the telephone really transmitted the human voice, then communication by it could not be more rapid than the velocity of sound, whereas in fact it was instantaneous. In beth SE EE ea i a gS~~

~~: Twenty-eighth Report of Postmaster-General, 1882, p. 10. Journal of the Society of Arts, 1880, vol. xxviii. p. 739. The preliminary experiments of Wheatstone and Cooke had been successfully made on the North-Western line, between Euston station and Camden Town station, but at that date the North-Western Company~~

~~declined to give facilities for working out the new enterprise. 4 Vol. xev. p. 151.~~

~~POST-OFFICE~~

~~[TELEGRAPHS,~~

~~the communication is by electric signals." The Exchequer decision of December 1880 establishes once for all, not only that the tele- phone companies are quite outside of "the terms of the exceptions in section 5 of the Act of 1869," but also that " the Government monopoly is not limited to the property it acquired. It extends to all improvements in telegraphic communication."> The post- master-general used his victory with generous moderation. As the companies, he wrote, "were apparently under the belief that they had infringed no law, I held myself ready to meet them with liberal terms. The system of telephonic intercommunication is therefore now being extended partly through the agencies of com- panies and partly by the post-office."® In the next annual report (1882) he added: " Licences were granted to the United Telephone Company,' as representing the companies defendants to the suit, and to other private agencies to carry on the business of a tele- phone exchange in London and in various provincial towns, the —~~

~~much greater in England than it is in the countries which were cited in the evidence of 1868 as in that particular outstripping others. The old~~

companies, "by maintaining high charges as long

as they could, by reducing those charges . . . only under pressure, by the confinement of their operations to important towns, and by planting their, offices mainly in the business-centres of those towns, had brought speculative men, and speculative men only, to a free

5 See Law Jowrnal Reports of January 1881.

§ Twenty-seventh Report of Postmaster-General, p. 5.

7 Upon an average this company paid to the post-office, under the arrangement so initiated, a sum of £15,150 a year. Its aggregate payments up to 31st December 1883 were only £35,500 (Postal Gazette, 1884, p. 490). In other countries the telephonic companies pay much more for their privilege. In Italy, for instance, there are fixed annual payments to the state over and above the royalty of 10 per cent., as in Britain.

8 Twenty-eighth Report, 1882, pp. 5, 6.

® Compiled from Reports of postmaster-general.

16 Including certain press messages, which previous to 1878-79 were not included in the returns.

Adminis- trative position.

ADMINISTRATION, ETC. |

use of the telegraph."! The development of the service will be apparent when it is stated that at the date of transfer to the state (1870) the number of telegraph offices did not exceed 3700. The number of messages in a year was 8,606,000. In 1884 they were respectively 5873 and (as above) 32,843,120. The yearly increment has lately averaged nearly 700,000. More striking still is the con- trast of cost. In 1851 twenty words sent from London to Edin- burgh cost 10s.; as late as 1862 they cost 4s.; since 1880 the cost has been reduced to 1s.; in August of the present year (1885) it will be reduced to 6d. Among the latest minor improvements of detail in the

~~*telegraph service is that which was effected in November 1882 by the abolition of the distinctive telegraph stamp, and the adoption of ordinary postage stamps for the payment of messages. Tele- grams thus posted are conveyed, without extra charge, at the next collection of letters to the nearest telegraph office, whence they are transmitted by the wires at the earliest possible moment."*~~

~~*During 1883 and 1884 great improvements were made in the telegraphic service of Scotland and also in the communication between Great Britain and Ireland. An additional cable was established between Fishguard and Blackwater. Four new land- lines were laid in connexion therewith, namely, from London to Fishguard, and from Blackwater to Dublin, Cork, and Limerick. There are now twenty-four wires available for use between Britain and Ireland contained in six cables. A new cable depét has been erected at Woolwich, and a cable-ship constructed (1883) expressly for post-office service. But the marvellous growth of telegraphy and telephony is best seen when we compare their statistics in individual towns. The daily average of messages in London, for example, was 450 in 1870 and nearly 6000 in 1883 ; in Derby 218 in 1870 and 898 in 1883. 'The staff at Derby in the former year was fourteen, in the latter year forty-six, and the instruments employed in the same years were respectively seven aud twenty-seven.*~~

~~*Government, Organization, Staff, and Regulations.*~~

~~*Originally and essentially the post-office is part of the domain of the crown of England. Practically its adminis- tration is controlled and regulated by statute. There were in 1883 no less than twenty-one several Acts of Parliament, or parts of Acts, which affected the postal administration, although at the commencement of the reign of Victoria the existing Post-Office Acts and parts of Acts (some- what more numerous still) were consolidated into a single statute,—a measure which had been previously resolved upon and in part prepared under the administration of the duke of Wellington. The responsibilities of common carriers do not extend to the postmaster-general or to any of his deputies. Buta sub-postmaster is answerable in the ordinary courts of law for individual acts of negligence. And all subordinates of the postal service are, of course,*~~

~~*1 Scudamore, Report on the Reorganization, &c., p. 17.*~~

~~2 Twenty-eighth Report of Postmaster-General, 1882, p. 5.~~

~~3 The details are given at length in the Law Journal Reports for 1884. A good summary may be found in The Postal and Telegraphic Gazette, 1884, pp. 660-662.~~

~~4 Hansard, Parliamentary Debates, series iii., vol. i. pp. 706, 779. We cannot here enumerate the subsisting Acts es than in briefest form. (1) The general administration and working of the department, the rates of postage, and the appropriation of the revenue thence accru- ing are governed by—7 William IV. and 1 Vict. c. 33 (July 1837) ; 3 and 4 Vict. c. 96; 10 and 11 Vict. c. 85 (1847) ; 33 and 34 Vict. c. 79 (1870), and ibid. c. 98, §§ 9-12; 34 and 35 Vict. ¢. 30 (1871); 38 and 39 Vict.c. 22 (June 1875); 44 and 45 Vict. c. 19 (1881), and ibid. c. 12, § 47. (The Act 33 and 34 Vict., amongst other valuable improvements, extends the book-parcel post, and contains an express clause empowering the treasury to regulate by warrant postage rates from time to time. Yet there is a whole series of subsequent Acts regulating such rates. The Act 38 and 39 Vict. arose out of the provisions of the international postal treaty at Bern of 9th October 1874 (see below, p. 584), and empowers the treasury to regulate foreign and international rates of postage in accordance with these provisions.) (2) The money-order branch is regulated by 3 and 4 Vict. c. 96, § 38 (1840), and by 48 and 44 Vict. c. 33. (8) The savings banks branch is regulated by 22 and 23 Vict. c. 53 (1859); 24 and 25 Vict. c. 14 (1861) ; and 37 and 38 Vict. c. 73 (1874). (4) The annuities and life insurance branch is governed by 27 and 28 Vict. c. 43 (1864) ; this statute applies also to savings banks managed by trustees (see Savines BanKs). (5) The telegraphs branch is regulated by 31 and 32 Vict. c. 110 (1867-68) ; 32 and 33 Vict. c. 73 (1868-69) ; 34 and 35 Vict. c. 75 (1871); and 41 and 42 Vict. c. 76 (1878). (6) The acquisition of lands for post-office purposes is facilitated by 44 and 45 Vict. c. 20 (1881). Finally, (7) the parcel-post branch is provided for by 46 and 47 Vict. c. 58 (1883). |~~

~~esr OrrIC E~~

~~O07~~

~~*responsible to the postmaster-general, who may, and upon due cause will, besides other and official punishment, re- quire them to make good to the sufferers losses which have been inflicted by proven breach of duty.®*~~

~~*The staff of the post-office department was composed as follows Staff.*~~

~~*on 31st March 1884 (Table XVII.) :—*~~

~~*Males. | Females.| Total.*~~

~~*1. Chief officers, secrétariat, and surveyors 63 1 64*~~

~~*2. Elead-postimastersr, ...-ceisic0< « sssceise << ° 789 130 919*~~

~~*3. Sub-postmasters and letter-receivers ….] 12,038 2,790 14,828*~~

~~*4. Clerks and superintending officers …... 229) 616 2,909*~~

~~*5. Supervisors, countermen, sorters, tele-| 10,074 Pais) 12,189*~~

~~*graphists, &c.*~~

~~*6. Postmen, porters, Ge… 25… 5-.2-:.2- 15,269 8 15,277*~~

~~*7. Assistants and servanis of various grades| 28,829 16,139 44,968 (unestablished)*~~

~~*8. Colonial postmasters and foreign agents 29 1 30*~~

~~*Grandgbotaleneeeye seis. es 69,384 21,800 91,184*~~

~~*The general post-office, London, is organized in seven principal departments, viz., (1) secretary's, (2) solicitor's, (3) receiver- and accountant-general's, (4) money-order, (5) savings banks, (6) tele- graphs, (7) circulation. The secretary's office has a general control over all the others.*~~

~~*At the beginning of 1858 the total number of post- offices in the United Kingdom was 11,101; at the beginning of 1884 it was 15,951. Of the former*~~

~~*number 810 were head post-offices, of the latter number 921. In 1858 the number of street and road receiving-boxes was 703, im 1884 15,749.*~~

~~*The quarterly Post-Ofice Guide is now so widely known that we Letter Whilst a letter not rates, &c.*~~

~~*need say very little about rates of postage. exceeding 1 oz. passes for 1d., and one not exceeding 2 oz. for 14d., one not exceeding 12 oz. is charged 4d., but for every weight exceed- ing 12 oz. a penny for each ounce, beginning with the first, is charged. There is no express limit to weight, but no letter, unless it be from or to a Government office. must exceed the dimensions of 1i8×9×6 inches. The uniform rate for a registered newspaper is $d., unregistered newspapers pay the book-rate of 3d. for every 2 oz. In weight no book-packet must exceed 5 Tb, nor must it exceed in dimensions those prescribed for letters. The official post-card is impressed with a $d. stamp; cards for reply, bearing two stamps, may be transmitted not only between places within the United Kingdom but between such places and many foreign countries (see Post-Ofice Guide). Petitions and addresses to Her Majesty and to the Houses of Parliament are exempt from charge up toa weight of 2 tb. Parliamentary proceedings are charged at the book rate, but are unlimited as to weight or size, and prepay- ment is optional, without entailing any increased rate of charge. The rates of the parcel post (Ist August 1883) are—for 1 ib or part thereof, 3d. ; not exceeding 3 tb, 6d. ; not exceeding 5 fb, 9d. ; not exceeding 7 Ib, 1s. The limits of size are 3 feet 6 inches in greatest length, and in length and girth combined 6 feet. In all cases par- cels must be prepaid in adhesive stamps. The rule as to registration is held to be inapplicable to postal parcels ; but in January 1885 a useful system of stamped certificates of the postage of parcels was introduced. For foreign rates of postage and for all like details we necessarily refer to the Post-Ofice Guide above-mentioned.*~~

~~*In social importance no branch of postal administration exceeds its savings banks system and the dependencies attached toit. At every post-office forms can be obtained on which twelve penny postage stamps can be fixed, which will be received as a postal savings bank deposit for a shilling, provided a due declaration be made that the depositor has no account with any other savings bank. When the deposit reaches £1, interest at the rate of 6d. a year*~~

~~on each pound is given. The depositor can withdraw his money (which may accrue to the limit of £30 in any one year) from any one of the 7475 post-office banks. At any such office a person who wishes to invest £10 or any larger sum up to £100 in Government stock can do so at the current price of the day.~~

~~In conclusion we add a brief retrospective survey of the more salient~~
~~Résumé.~~

~~incidents, in chronological order, of the British post-office. (1533) First appointment ofa postmaster-general for England; (1591) partial organization of rudimentary English post-office; (1619) appointment of a special postmaster-general for ‘“‘foreign parts” ; (1635) reorganization of English post-office under Thomas Wither- ings; (1665) settlement of post-office revenue on James, duke of York, and his heirs-male ; (1680) establishment of a metropolitan penny post by William Dockwra ; (1711) consolidation of Postal Acts by statute 9 Queen Anne, c. x. ; (1720) organization of cross- road and rural posts under Ralph Allen; (1753) organization of post-office of American colonies under Benjamin Franklin ; (1784)~~

~~5 Compare the judgment given in Lane v. Cotton, in Lord Raymond’s Reports, i. 646, with that in Whitfield v. Lord Le Despencer (post- master-general, 1766-1781), in Cowper’s Reports, 754, and with that in Browning v. Goodchild, in Wilson’s Reports, iii. 443.~~

~~XIX. — 73~~

~~Australia~~

~~578~~

~~establishment of improved mail-coaches and of well-organized mail- routes, under John Palmer of Bath; (1821) first conveyance of mails by steam-packet ; (1830) first mail-coach by railway ; (1834, August) postage stamp invented at Dundee by James Chalmers ; (1835) establishment of the overland route to India, mainly by exertions of Licutenant Waghorn ; (1837) Sir R. Hill’s postal reform initiated ; (1838) establishment of postal money-~~

~~*order office ; (1840, January) general and uniform penny post (per half ounce) established ; (1855, March) first street letter-box put up in London ; (1855, June) book-post organized ; (1856) metropolitan postal dis- tricts established and Postal Guide issued ; (1861) postal savings banks instituted ; (1870) transfer of telegraphs to the state ; (1870) postal cards introduced; (1870) improved postal treaty with Napoleon III. concluded ; (1871) postal unit of charge reduced to one penny per ounce; (1874) International Postal Union estab- lished at Bern; (1875) further consolidation of the post-office statutes; (1881, January) postal orders issued; (1883, August) parcel post established ; (1884, October) entrance of the Australian colonies into the Postal Union.*~~

~~*Bibliography.—John Hill, Penny Post, or a Vindication of the Liberty of every Englishman in carrying Letters, against any Restraint of Farmers of such Employ- ment, 1659; '*The Case of the Officers of His Majesty's Penny Post," in the Ninth Report of the Commissioners on the Post-Ofice Department, 1698 ; " Post- Office," in Reports on the Revenues of the Crown, 1811 sq.; " Post-Office," in Re- ports of the Commissioners of the Revenue Inquiry, 1826-30; Reports of the Com- missioners… on the Management of the Post-Office, 1835-38 ; Rowland Hill, Post- Office Reform: tis Importance and Practicability, 1837 (three editions in 1837 ; reprinted in the Postal Gazette, 1884); Reports of [Commons'] Select Committee on Postage, 1837-38; Papers issued by the Mercantile Commitice on Postage, 1839; Post Circular, ed. by Henry Cole ; Correspondence on Post-Office Reform, ed. by R. Hill, 1843; R. Hill, State and Prospects of Penny Postage; Reports of Postmaster- General, 1855-84 (annually); Post-Ofice Guide (quarterly, by authority), 1856-85 ; Postal Oficial Circular (a revised re-issue of an earlier publication entitled Daily Packet List), 1858-85 ; W. Lewin, Her Majesty's Mails: an Account of the British Post-Office, 1864; R. Hill, History of Penny Postage (appended to G. B. Hill's Life of Sir R. Hill), 1880; P. Chalmers, The Penny Postage Scheme of 1837: was it an Invention or a Copy? 1881, and The Position of Sir R. Hill made plain, 1882 (with many other tracts by the same author during 1882-84); Pearson fy i ae to Mr Chalmers; Henry Fawcett, The Post-Ofice and Aids to*~~

~~*"hrift, 1881.*~~

~~BriTisH COLONIES AND DEPENDENCIES. Australia and New Zealand. — In 1873 there were 2668 post-~~

~~and New offices open ; 38,930,852 letters (including South Australian and~~

~~Zealand.~~

~~Canada.~~

~~New Zealand packets) and 22,018,483 newspapers and packets were transmitted ; 303,741 money orders, amounting to £754,847, were issued ; there were 185,202 depositors in the post-office savings banks, whose deposits amounted to £2,081,288 ; over 20,559 miles of telegraph lines were open ; 2,100,272 messages were transmitted, from which an income of £211,276 was derived, while the expendi- ture (exclusive of South Australia) amounted to £186,681. Western Australia is omitted from these figures owing to the inadequacy of the Government returns. These figures, compared with the population of 1873, show that over 18 letters and over 10 news- papers and packets per head were transmitted ; that money orders were issued to 1 in about every 7 persons, at an average value of nearly £2, 10s. per order ; that deposits in the post-office savings banks averaged a little over 1 in 11 of the entire population, at an average value of £11, 4s. per deposit ; that of telegraph messages there was about one to each person.~~

~~In 1883 there were 4410 post-offices open ; 123,614,387 letters and post-cards, 10,434,461 packets, and 60,889,570 newspapers (in- cluding South Australian packets) were transmitted ; the revenue of the postal department amounted to £1,057,100, and the expendi- ture to £1,287,679 ; 783,701 money orders were issued, amounting to £2,608,915 ; there were 254,510 depositors in the post-office savings banks, and their deposits amounted to £4,537,706 ; there were over 57,174 miles of telegraph, and 7,083,163 messages were transmitted, the value of which was estimated at £476,683; the expenditure of the telegraph departments amounted to £345,590, but it must be explained that the Victorian, South Australian, and West Australian expenditures were included in those of the postal departments. These figures, compared with the population of 1883, show that there were transmitted per head nearly 40 letters and post-cards, and over 23~~

~~*newspapers and packets; to every third person a money order was issued, at an average value of about £3, 6s. 6d. per order; the number of deposits in the post-office savings banks averaged about 1 in every 12 of the population, and their average value was over £17, 6s. per deposit ; the telegraph Inessages were transmitted at the rate of rather more than two messages to each person,*~~

~~*Canada.—During the year which ended on 30th June 1884 the number of letters conveyed by the mails throughout the Dominion of Canada was 66,100,000 as against 62,800,000 in the correspond- ing year 1883; that of post-cards was 13,580,000 as against 12,940,000. The number of letters registered was 3,000,000 against 2,650,000. The number of money-orders issued was 463,502, their aggregate value being £2,068,726. Of this amount £1,638,060 was for inland orders, £430,666 for foreign orders. The number of Canadian post-offices was 6837 against 6395 in 1883; the length of postal routes open was 47,131 miles, showing an increase over the previous year of 2488 miles. The distance traversed thereon*~~

~~*by the mails in 1884 was 20,886,316 miles. Of the 6837 post- offices 866 were also money-order offices. In 1884 international money orders were extended to the principal countries of the Postal Union and to all British possessions abroad. In 1884 the amount of foreign money orders paid in Canada was £252,600. In 1884 the number of post-office savings banks was 348, the number of depositors' accounts 66,682 (an increase of 5623 over 1883), and total amount in deposit £2,650,000.*~~

~~*India.—In order to illustrate the growth of the post-office in India.*~~

~~*India we give the salient statistics for 1873 and 1883. In British India and the native states the total number of post-offices in 1883 was 5310, showing an increase of 2304 since 1878. In 1888 the number of letters of all descriptions that passed through the post- office was 135,709,147, in 1873 it was 83,127,098. Post-cards were not issued until 1880, when they numbered 7,471,984, which number had increased to 29,844,347 in 1883.*~~

~~*In the last-quoted year 18,501,171 newspapers, parcels, and packets passed through the post and 10,030,216 in 1873. In 1883 2,565,904 postal money orders, representing a value of £6,468,418, were issued. Adding the number of money orders to the total of letters, newspapers, &c., for the year 1883 we obtain an aggregate of 186,620,569, equal to 0°73 per head of population. Post-office savings banks were opened in India on 1st April 1882; during the first year the deposits reached a total of £485,356, or including interest (£4902) £440, 258. Deposits amounting to £160,578 were withdrawn during the year, leaving a balance of £279,680 on 31st March 1883. The total length of Government telegraph lines increased from 46,386 miles in 1873 to 84,700 miles in 1883. The expenditure in both years under consideration exceeded the receipts: whilst in 1873 the figures were respectively £704,193 and £677,047, in 1883 they were £983,779 and £971,639. (E. ED.)*~~

~~*UNITED STATES.*~~

~~*The early history! of the post-office in the British Early colonies in North America has been briefly referred to history.*~~

~~*above (pp. 565, 566). Benjamin Franklin was removed by the home department from his office of postmaster- general in America in 1774. On 26th July 1775 the American Congress assumed direction of the post-offices, re-appointing Franklin to his former post. Shortly after- wards, when Franklin was sent as ambassador to France, his son-in-law, Richard Bache, was made postmaster- general in November 1775.*~~

~~*In 1789 the number of post-offices was 75, in 1800 908, in 1825 5677, in 1875 35,734, and in 1884 50,017. In 1789 the gross revenues of the postal service were $30,000, in 1800 $280,804. In 1860 the gross revenues had in-creased to $8,518,067 and in 1875 to $26,671,218. In 1884 they amounted to $43,338,127°08. In 1860 there was a deficit in the postal income of $10,652,542°59, occasioned through lavish expenditure and then existing abuses. Annual deficiencies had occurred for nine years previous to 1860, and continued for twenty-one years thereafter. In 1882 a surplus of $1,394,388-°92 was shown, and in 1883 a profit of $1,001,281°83. The percentage of deficit continued steadily to decrease after 1860, and in 1882, for the first time in thirty-one years, the postal service ceased to be a*~~

~~*burden upon the treasury. It is not to be doubted that adverse natural conditions operated for many years to prevent or to postpone this favourable result, among them the vast extent of territory embraced within the confines of the republic, entailing costly service over long routes, and the extraordinarily rapid development of the western States and Territories, conditions which militate against the United States in a comparison of the statistics of its postal service during that period with those of the service of countries having more limited areas.*~~

~~*Until 1863 the rates of postage were based upon the distances over which the mails were conveyed. In 1846 these rates were—not exceeding 300 miles, three cents ; exceeding 300 miles, ten cents. In 1851 the rates were reduced to three cents for distances not exceeding 3000 miles and ten cents for distances exceeding 3000 miles. The use of adhesive postage stamps was first authorized*~~

~~*1 For early statistics (1790-1856) of the United States post-office, see HIncy. Brit., 8th ed., vol. xviii. pp. 419, 420.*~~

~~*Convey- ance of mails.*~~

~~*UNITED STATES. |*~~

~~*by Act of Congress, approved 3d March 1847, and on Ist June 1856 prepayment by stamps was made compulsory. In 1863 a uniform rate of postage without regard to dis- tance was fixed at three cents, and on lst October 1883, after satisfactory evidence had been given of the surplus income from the operations of tke post-office establishment for the two preceding fiscal years, the rate was further reduced to two cents, the equivalent of the British penny postage. It will be seen that no time was lost in giving to the public the benefit of the change for the better in the condition of the postal finances, and to this liberality is undoubtedly due in great measure the deficit of $5,204,484‘12 for the year 1884, a deficiency which, how- ever, it is reasonable to expect, will decrease from year to year under the stimulus given to correspondence by the cheapened rate. It is hardly remarkable, in view of the great area of the United States, that for a long time dis- tance should have formed a very material element in the calculations for levying postal tribute.*~~

~~*The franking privilege, which had grown to be an in- tolerable abuse, was finally abolished in 1873, and the post-office now carries free under official "penalty" labels or envelopes (#.¢., envelopes containing a notice of the legal penalty for their unauthorized use) nothing but matter which is of a strictly official character, with the single exception of newspapers circulated within the county of publication. As late as 1860 the mails conveyed nothing but written and printed matter. They now admit nearly every known substance which does not exceed four pounds in weight (this restriction does not apply to single books), and which from its nature is not liable to injure the mails or the persons of postal employés.*~~

~~*The railway mail service, including the "fast mail," the character of which is from the necessity of the case peculiar, and which, in its methods and results, has reached a perfection attainable only in a country of great extent, was inaugurated in 1864 after a successful experiment upon a few of the large railroad lines with important termini. In 1865 one thousand and forty one miles of railway post-office service were in operation, employing sixty-four clerks. The service was reorganized in 1874 with eight territorial divisions, each in charge of a superin- tendent subordinate to a general superintendent at the seat of government. This service was one of the earliest exponents of a classified civil service in the more recent acceptation of that term in the United States, appointment of railway postal clerks having always been made for a probationary period, permanent appointment conditioned upon satisfactory conduct and service, and removal based upon good cause only. On Ist July 1884 there were about four thousand clerks in the railway mail service, and the length of the routes was 117,160 miles. The annual transportation (aggregate distance over which the mails were conveyed) was 142,541,392 miles. At the same date the length of the "star service" routes (i.e. mail service other than by railway or steamboat) was 226,779 miles and the annual transportation 81,109,052 miles, while the length of the steamboat routes was 15,591 miles with an annual transportation of 3,882,288 miles, which does not include conveyance of mails by sea to foreign countries.*~~

~~*The penny post existed in a number of cities of the Union in 1862, the carriers remunerating themselves by the collection of a voluntary fee of from one to two cents on each piece of mail delivered. A uniform free*~~

~~delivery system was first authorized by law on 3d March 1863, and was established on the succeeding 1st of July in forty- nine cities. The number of carriers employed the first year was 685. On Ist July 1884 there were 3890 letter- carriers in one hundred and fifty-nine "' free delivery cities."~~

~~F Op T-OF PfIC Ez~~

~~579~~

~~To the European reader this number will doubtless appear to be remarkably small in a country whose population, according to the census of 1880, was over 50,000,000, but it should be observed that, outside of the larger cities and towns, the people as a rule reside on detached farms of greater or less size, at considerable distances from each other, and not, as in many of the European states, congregated in small towns or villages, separated from their farms ; from this circumstance it happens that rural factors or carriers have never been, and could not well be, employed as in European countries.~~

~~The registry system, in which great improvements have been made within the last few years, did not attain any degree of excellence until after 1860; and the money-order system was first established in 1864. The aggregate num- ber of money orders, domestic and foreign, issued during the fiscal year 1883-84 was 8,314,963, of the value of $129,810,038°51. Postal notes for small sums, payable to bearer, and resembling the British postal orders except in that they are not drawn for fixed amounts, were first issued to the public in September 1883, and during the first ten months there were 3,689,237 notes sold of the aggregate value of $7,411,992°48. Money orders are ex- changed, in pursuance of postal conventions for the pur- pose, with most of the important countries of the world which have money-order systems of their own.~~

~~The total staff of the post-office in 1884 numbered Late — 71,671, of whom 50,017 were postmasters. For the same Statistics.~~

~~year the total number of letters delivered in 159 cities was 524,431,327. The number of post-cards delivered in the same cities was 166,652,429, and the number of news- papers 231,645,185. The number of registered letters and parcels sent through the mails was 11,246,545, and the total~~

~~*ascertained losses numbered 516, or in the ratio of 1 to 21,795. During the same year the total number of pieces of mail handled or distributed en route on the cars by railway postal clerks was 4,519,661,900, of which number 2,795,447,000 were letters,—a total increase over the previous year of 134 per cent., the transactions of that year having themselves exceeded those of the year 1882 by nearly 16 per cent. The sales of stamps, &c., for the year amounted to $40,745,853-66, showing that almost the entire revenues of the service are derived from postages. The total estimated number of letters sent to foreign countries was 33,328,014, of post-cards 1,672,458, of packets of newspapers, &c., 20,712,464, and of packages of samples of merchandise 297,048. There were received from foreign countries 28,404,035 letters, 1,288,673 post- cards, 21,747,784 packets of newspapers, &c., and 519,561 packets of samples of merchandise. The total number of articles of undelivered mail received in the dead-letter office was 4,843,099, of which number 4,752,483 were letters, being nearly a million less than the number which reached the British returned-letter office. Useful printed matter which cannot be returned is distributed amongst the inmates of various hospitals, asylums, and charitable and reformatory institutions in the District of Columbia, and in 1884 23,152 magazines, pamphlets, &c., were thus disposed of.*~~

~~*Three years after the passage by the British parliament of the Tele- Electric Telegraph Act (1868-69) the subject of a similar transfer graphs.*~~

~~*of the rights of the telegraph companies to the post-office of the United States was strongly urged by the postmaster-general of that country, Mr Creswell, and he renewed his recommendations the succeeding year ; the subject also recurred at intervals in the annual reports of the post-office department for subsequent years. In 1882 Mr Howe admitted that he had been "forced to the con- clusion that the time has fully come when the telegraph and postal service should be embraced under one management"; a year later, however, Mr Gresham states that he " should hesitate to sanction a measure providing that the United States shall become the proprietor of telegraph lines and operate them by its officers and*~~

~~*Savings banks.*~~

~~*Early history.*~~

~~agents." Mr Hatton in his first report as postmaster-general, that for 1884, is silent upon this subject.~~

~~Mr Creswell took occasion in 1871 to recommend also the estab- lishment of postal savings banks in the United States, and this subject he made of peculiar interest at the time by the sugges- tion that the money needed to purchase existing telegraph lines could be raised through the postal savings banks, certainly a timely suggestion to accompany the two simultaneous recommendations. The establishment of postal savings banks has also been the fre- quent subject of departmental and congressional discussion without decisive action. 'The utility and expediency of the measure have not been doubted, but singularly enough what has seemed to be an insuperable obstacle to the inauguration of the system has been encountered. The policy of the Government, with its vast surplus revenue of late years, has been to gradually and surely reduce the national debt, which, it would seem from the progress already made in that direction, is certain of ultimate extinction in the course of a few years. It is plain, however, although the difficulty does not seem to have occurred to many of the advocates in the United States of a savings banks system, that to be lasting it must be founded upon a permanent Government debt, a condition which does not and is not likely to exist in that country. Interest cannot be paid to depositors for funds which are not needed and which cannot be pro- fitably employed. Until this problem is solved, it is not probable that this feature will be added to the postal system of the United States, where, however, the practice of careful economy has not yet become a cominon habit of the masses of the people, and where the security for small savings afforded by Government institutions would tend to foster habits of thrift. A Bill to establish a postal savings depository as a branch of the post-office department was introduced in the House of Representatives on 8th February 1882, and an elaborate report was made thereon, 21st February 1882, by the committee on the post-office aud post-roads, to whom the Bill had been referred. The measure was never acted upon and has not since been revived. (W. B. C*.)**

~~FRANCE.~~

~~*The French postal system was founded by Louis XI. (19th June 1464), was largely extended by Charles IX. (1565), and received considerable improvements at various periods under the respective Governments of Henry IV. and Louis XIII. (1603, 1622, 1627 sq.).! In the year last-named (1627) France, so often during long ages pre- eminent in "teaching the nations how to live," originated a postal money-transmission system, expressly prefaced by those cautions about transmission of coin in ordinary letters which are now familiar to all eyes in the windows of English post-offices (but which no eyes saw there a dozen years ago), and in the same year it established a system of cheap registration for letters. The postmaster who thus anticipated 19th-century improvements was Pierre d'Alméras, a man of high birth, who gave about £20,000 (of modern money) for the privilege of serving the public. The turmoils of the Fronde wrecked much that he had achieved. 'The first farm of postal income was made in 1672, and by farmers it was administered until June 1790. To increase the income postmasterships for a long time were not only sold but made hereditary. Many adminis- trative improvements of detail were introduced, indeed, by Mazarin (1643), by Louvois (c. 1680 sgq.), and by Cardinal de Fleury (1728); but many formidable abuses also continued to subsist. The revolutionary Government transferred rather than removed them. Characteristically, it put a board of postmasters in room of a farming post-master-general and a controlling one. The keen and far-seeing mind of Napoleon (during the consulate *) abol- ished the board, recommitted the business to a postmaster- general as it had been under Louis XIII, and greatly improved the details of the service: Napoleon's organiza- tion of 1802 is, in substance, that which obtains in 1885, although, of course, large modifications and developments have been made from time to time.®*~~

~~*1 For the details, see HIncy. Brit., 8th ed., vol. xviii. pp. 420-424, and Maxime Du Camp, "L'Administration des Postes," in Revue des Deux Mondes (1865), ser. 2, xvii. 169 sq.*~~

~~*2 28 Pluviose, an XII.=18th February 1804.*~~

~~*3 Le Quien de la Neufville, Usages des Postes, 1730, pp. 59-67, 80, 121-123, 147-149, 286-291; Maxime Du Camp, op. cit., passim; Pierre*~~

~~*POST-OFFICE*~~

~~[FRANCE,~~

~~The university of Paris, as early as the 13th century, possessed a special postal system, for the abolition of which in the 18th it received a large compensation. But it continued to possess certain minor postal privileges until the Revolution.*~~

~~Mazarin's edict of 3d December 1643 shows that France Growth.~~

~~at that date had a parcel post as well as a letter post. That edict creates for each head post-office throughout the kingdom three several officers styled respectively (1) comptroller, (2) weigher, (3) assessor; and, instead of remunerating them by salary, it directs the addition of one-fourth to the existing letter rate and parcel rate, and the division of the surcharge between the three. Fleury's edicts of 1728 make sub-postmasters directly responsible for the loss of letters or parcels ; they also make it necessary that senders should post their letters at an office, and not give them to the carriers, and regulate the book-post by directing that book parcels (whether MS. or printed) shall be open at the ends.2 In 1758, almost eighty years after Dockwra's establishment of a penny post in London, an historian of that city published an account of it, which in Paris came under the eye of a man of similar spirit and enterprise to Dockwra. Claude Piarron de Chamousset ® obtained letters-patent to do the like, and, before setting to work or seeking profit for himself, he issued a tract with the title, Mémoire sur la petite-poste établie & Londres, sur la modéle de laquelle on pourraat en établir de semblables dans les plus grandes villes d@ Europe. The reform so worthily begun was successfully carried out.~~

~~By this time the general post-office of France was pro- ducing a considerable and growing revenue. In 1676 the farmers had paid to the king £48,000 in the money of that day. A century later they paid a fixed rent of £352,000, and covenanted to pay in addition one-fifth of their nett profits. In 1788—the date of the last letting to farm of the postal revenue—the fixed and the variable payments were commuted for one settled sum of £480,000 a year. The result of the devastations of the Revolution and of the wars of the empire together is shown strikingly by the fact that in 1814 the gross income of the post-office was but little more than three-fifths of the nett income in 1788. Six years of the peaceful government of Louis XVIII. raised~~

~~*the gross annual revenue to £928,000. On the eve of the revolution of 1830 it reached £1,348,000. Towards the close of the next reign the post-office yielded £2,100,000 (gross). Under the revolutionary Govern- ment of 1848-49 it declined again (falling in 1850 to £1,744,000) ; under that of Napoleon III. it rose steadily and uniformly with every year. In 1858 the gross re venue was £2,296,000, in 1868 £3,596,000.*~~

~~*The most important postal reforms in France (other than those which we have already noticed) are briefly these :— (1) the extension of postal facilities to all the communes of the country,—effected under Charles X., placing the France of 1829 in certain postal particulars in advance of the United States of 1879 ; (2) the adoption of postage Clément, Appréciation des Conséquences de la Réforme postale, passim; Loret, Gazette rimée, 16th August 1653; Furetiere, Le Roman Bour- geots (in Du Camp, ut supra); "Die ersten Posteinrichtungen, 1L.S.W.," in L'Union Postale, viii. 138; Ordonnances des Rois de France, as cited by A. de Rothschild, Histoire de la Poste-aux-Lettres, i. 171, 216, 269 (3d ed., 1876). We quote M. de Rothschild's clever book with some misgivings. It is eminently sparkling in style, and most read- able ; but its citations are so given that one is constantly in doubt lest they be given at second or even at third hand instead of from the sources. The essay of M. Du Camp is, up to its date, far more trust- worthy. He approaches his subject as a publicist, M. de Rothschild as a stamp-collector.*~~

~~*4 There are several charters confirmatory of this original privilege. The earliest of these is of 1296 (Philip "the Fair'"').*~~

~~*5 Ordonnances, &c., as above.*~~

~~*6 There is an interesting biographical notice of Piarron de Chamousset in Le Journal Officiel of 5th July 1875.*~~

~~*Money orders.*~~

~~*Letter tariff, &c.*~~

~~*Pigeon and balloon posts.*~~

~~stamps,—effected under the presidency of Louis Napoleon (1849) ; (3) the organization of an excellent system of not only transmitting but insuring articles of declared value, whatever their nature,— effected under Napoleon III. (1859) ; (4) the issue of postal notes payable to bearer (1860); (5) the establishment of a post-office library (1878) ; (6) the creation of postal savings banks (1880).~~

~~France, as we have seen, possessed a postal money- transmission service as early as 1627. But for almost two centuries the thing the remitter delivered at the post-office was the thing given to the payee, whether it were coin or paper money. In 1817 the money-transmission service became a money-order service. In that year the aggre- gate value of inland money orders was £364,000, in 1830 £528,000, in 1845 £844,000, in 1864 £4,520,000, in 1868 £6,280,000, in 1877 £9,238,644, in 1878 £11,036,712, in 1881 £18,793,188, in 1882 £19,655,117, in 1883 £20,770,078. The average amount of each order varied very little during the fifty-eight years 1821 to 1878, rang- ing only between 28 francs 62 centimes and 30 francs (twenty-four shillings). The number of orders was in the first-named year only 317,642. In 1868 the number was (in round figures) 5,320,000; in 1878 it had grown to 9,304,840, in 1881 to 14,626,117, in 1882 to 15,791,774, and in 1883 to 16,808,627.1 The average amount of each order has been, since 1878, somewhat upon the increase.? France may also fairly claim to have been in advance of the United Kingdom not only in facilities for the safe transmission of money and other precious commodities but also in the facilities of book post and parcel post. In the tariff for ordinary correspondence, however, it has always contrasted unfavourably. Whilst under the regulations of January 1849 and of July 1854 respectively the letter tariff was double that of Great Britain, it has come to be treble since the adoption by the latter country of the one- ounce unit of charge; 14d. is the French rate under the regulation (M. Cochery's) of 1st May 1878 for a half-ounce letter ; 1d. is the English rate for an ounce letter. Post- cards are charged double the English rate.? The growth of postal correspondence in France prior to the great check inflicted by the calamities of 1870-71 may, very briefly, be shown thus :—~~

TABLE XVIII.—Comparative Numbers of Letters, Newspapers, and Books conveyed.

| Ordinary Letters.4 | Registered Letters.

—

1848 | 126,480,000 176,000 c. 4,500,000 1857 252,921,942 i e

1867 P . c. 15,000,000 |

1868 349,335,000 4,850,000 –

The ingenuity of the French postal authorities was severely tried by the exigencies of the German War of 187 0-71; but they proved themselves singularly successful in maintaining a correspondence, inland and foreign, under difficulties which were probably greater than any postal staff had ever before had to encounter since posts were known. The first contrivance was to organize a pigeon service,° Oe SSG I

1 These figures apply ouly to inland orders issued.

2 Bernard, "Notice sur le Service postal en France," in Journal des Economistes, ser. 3, xv. 866-385; Statistique générale du Service postal, 1881, Vv. sq. : ;

3 Recueil de Renseignements sur le Régime postal, 5; Annuaire des Postes, for various years, to 1883 inclusive, passim. Comp. Reports of Secretaries of Embassy, &c., France (1879), 5. :

4 During the years from 1849 to 1857 ordinary letters in France increased at the annual rate of 124 per cent. (under Napoleon III. as president and as emperor) ; during the rest of his rule the yearly rate of increase is calculated (to 1869 inclusive) at 34 per cent. only.

5 The employment of pigeons as carriers of despatches dates from a very early period, the curious annals of which are given in Die Tauben- post (Berlin). It was not, however, until the commencement of the present century that they were systematically utilized as bearers of messages to the sporting

~~and other papers. Before the organization of the electric telegraph pigeons were regularly employed by the members~~

~~ROS FT-OF-FICE~~

~~581~~

~~carrying microscopic despatches prepared by the aid of photographic appliances.6 The number of postal pigeons employed was 363, of which number fifty-seven returned with despatches. During the height of the siege the English postal authorities received letters for transmission by pigeon post into Paris by way of Tours, subject to the regulations that no information concerning the war was given, that the number of words did not exceed twenty, that the letters were delivered open, and that 5d. a word, with a registration fee of 6d.,' was prepaid as postage. At this rate the postage of the 200 letters on each folio was £40, that on the eighteen pellicles of sixteen folios each, carried by one pigeon, £11,520. Each despatch was repeated until its arrival had been acknowledged by balloon post ; consequently many were sent off twenty and some even more than thirty times. The second step was to establish a regular system of postal balloons, fifty-one being employed for letter service and six for telegraphic service. To M. Durnouf belongs very much of the honour of making the balloon service successful. On the basis of experiments carried out by him a decree of 26th September 1870 regulated the new postal system. Out of sixty-four several ascents, each costing on the average about £200, fifty-seven achieved their purpose, notwithstanding the building by Krupp of twenty guns, supplied with telescopic apparatus, expressly for the destruction of the postal balloons. Only five were captured, and two others were lost at sea. The aggregate weight of the letters and newspapers thus aerially mailed by the French post-office amounted to about eight tons and a half, including upwards of 3,000,000 letters ; aud, besides the aeronauts, ninety-one passengers were conveyed. The heroism displayed by French balloon postmen was equalled by that of many of the ordinary letter-carriers in the conveyauce of letters through the catacombs and quarries of Paris and its suburbs, and, under various disguises, often through the midst of the Prussian army. Several lost their lives in the discharge of their duty, in some cases saving their despatches by the sacrifice. No less than eighty-~~

~~five faced the extremity of danger. During the war the Marseilles route for the Anglo-Indian mails was, of course, aban- doned. They were sent through Belgium and Germany, by the Brenner Pass to Brindisi, and thence by Italian packets to Alexan- dria. The French route was resumed in 1872.9~~

~~Before dealing with the latest statistics of the French postal Latest system, it may be of interest to cite from L'Union Postale of Bern statistics.~~

~~(ii. 87 sq.) a brief comparison of the mail matter within the limits of Paris with that of the state at large in the year 1874 (Table BO EX):~~

~~Paris. France. 1. Ordinary chargeable letters…..... 95,791,000 343,808,000 2. Registered chargeable letters …..... 1,730,000 6,786,000 Gy, iris) eine ee eeeoeeso one eeseaoe 8,935,000 56,534,000 4, Newspapers, books, mercantile patterns..} 242,613,000 368,782,000 Bb. Mine ysOrdeusn yee. «tet os scl steele + leelei 647,400 4,793,680 Grand total of mailed articles…..... 349,716,400 780,703,680 10~~

~~The reader will observe on glancing from this table to Table~~

~~of the stock exchange for conveying early intelligence of the state of the money markets in Paris, &., the entire journey being broken up into short relays, so that transmission of messages inight be secured even during unfavourable weather.~~

~~At the present time all the important fortresses in France and Germany have their staff of voyageur or homing pigeons that are well trained for 50 to 100 miles, so that they could be relied on for holding communication with the fortress in case it should be surrounded by hostile troops. The utility of these birds in conveying messages from the sea in case of war has not yet been recognized in Britain.~~

~~6 The despatches carried by the pigeons were in the first instance photographed on a reduced scale on thin sheets of paper, the original writing being preserved, but after the ascent of the twenty-fifth balloon leaving the city an improved system was organized. The communica- tions, whether public despatches or private letters, were printed in ordinary type, and micro-photographed on to thin films of collodion. Each pellicle~~

~~*measured less than 2 inches by 1, and the reproduction of sixteen folio pages of type contained above 3000 private letters. These pellicles were so light that 50,000 despatches, weighing less than 1 gramme, were regarded as the weight for one pigeon. In order to ensure their safety during transit the films were rolled up tightly and placed in a small quill which was attached longitudinally to one of the tail feathers of the bird. On their arrival in Paris they were flattened out and thrown by means of the electric lantern on to a screen, copied by clerks, and despatched to their destination. This method was after- wards improved upon, sensitive paper being substituted for the screen, so that the letters were printed at once and distributed.*~~

~~*7 Seventeenth Report of the Postmaster-General, p. 7.*~~

~~*8 Boissay, "La Poste et la Télégraphie pendant le Siége de Paris," in Journal des Economistes, ser. 8, xxii. 117-129 and 273-282. Com- pare Postal Gazette, i. 7 (1883).*~~

~~*9 Sixteenth Report of the Postmaster-General, p. 8.*~~

~~*0 Statistique générale du Service postal (Bern, 1882-83), passim.*~~

~~*582*~~

~~*XVII. that in 1874 the ordinary correspondence of France had not recovered its former extent, as it stood in 1868, although a large relative increase is shown in the number of registered letters during 1874 as compared with those of 1868. Taken as a whole, the postal traffic did not fully recover itself until 1878 ; and even then, although the mailed articles exceeded those of the year imme- diately preceding by 124,310,199, the gross revenue accruing from letters, newspapers, and parcels showed a diminution of £788,150 as compared with the gross revenue of 1877. Thenceforward the progress is rapid. 'The chief postal laws now in force are of 6th May 1827, 4th June 1859, 25th January 1873, 3d May 1876, 6th April 1878, 5th February 1879, and 9th April 1881. _*~~

~~*The comparative postal statistics for all France during the years 1881, 1882, and 1883 stand thus :—*~~

~~*TABLE XX.—WNumber of Letters and Post-Cards.*~~

~~*Tunis and*~~

~~*1881. 1882. 1883. Algiers*~~

~~*1883.*~~

~~*Inland letters…….+. 535,541,373 | 544,193,583 | 563,524,119 | 8,550,266*~~
~~*Inland post-cards …... 29,589,094 | 30,710,500 | 31,394,427 69,068 | »*~~
~~*reply post-cards 37,326 | 48,430 50,000 3,492 |*~~

~~*Foreign letters sent …. 84,368,985 35,377,335 36,777,164 331,283*~~

~~*Foreign post-cards sent 1,216,948 1,390,950 1,462,815 10,755*~~

~~*» reply post-cards 30,005 41,184 53,323 808 oseosenone 600,783,731 |*~~
~~*611,761,982 | 633,261,848 | 8,965,172 |*~~

~~*In 1882 the gross revenue of the entire French postal service was £6,170,146, the total expenditure £5,338,273, and the nett revenue £831,873. In 1883! the gross revenue amounted to £6,429,101, the expenditure to £5,678, 851, and the nett revenue to £750,250. In 1881 the number of post-offices throughout France was 6158 plus 53,182 letter-boxes, making the total number of postal receptacles 59,340. In 1884 the number of post-offices proper had increased to 6565.2. The aggregate of the postal and telegraphic staff was 49,121 persons in 1881, 50,268 in 1882, and 52,636 in 1883.2 The relative number of letters (including post-cards) to each inhabitant was 16 in 1881 as compared with 27 to each inhabitant in the United States, and with 38 to each in the United Kingdom. In 1882 the proportion was 167%; as compared with 4034 in Great Britain, in 1883 168; and 41%, respectively. Were it possible to deduct in each case the useless, the merely undesired advertising communi- cations, France would contrast with Britain, and still more with America, far less disadvantageously than, on the mere face of the figures, it seems to do.*~~

~~*The savings banks system of France, so far as it is connected with the postal service, dates only from 1875, and began then (at first) simply by the use of*~~

~~*post-offices as agencies and feeders for the pre-existing banks. Prior to the postal connexion the aggregate of the deposits stood at £22,920,000. In 1877 it reached £32,000,000. Postal savings banks, strictly so called, began only during the year 1881. At the close of 1882 they had 210,712 depositors, with an aggregate deposit of £1,872,938 sterling; and on 31st December 1883 375,838 depositors, with an annual deposit of £3,097,765. A convention lately made between France and Belgium enables depositors in either country to transfer their accounts to the other free of charge.* M. Auguste de Malarce has greatly distinguished himself in the promotion of savings banks of all kinds, and imost especially in urging the formation of penny banks and school banks. These, however, are not directly connected with the postal service.*~~

~~*The union of the telegraph with the post-office dates only from 1878. Prior to the amalgamation the number of telegraph offices was 4561; in 1883 it was already increased to 6448. At the former date (1878) the lineal extent of the telegraphs was 57,090 kilometres (35,453 miles) ; it is now (1885) upwards of 87,000 (54,027 miles). The postal administration having begun its new work by obtaining a credit for further extensions and for plant, amounting to nearly £100,000, the tariff was reduced (21st March 1878) to one half- penny for each word, with a minimum charge of 5d.5 In April 1884 France had 5535 subscribers to postal telephonic exchanges (against about 4000 in all Germany at the same date, according to the Revue des Postes), working under post-office licences of five years' duration, and paying (as in Great Britain) a royalty of 10 per cent. The postal telephonic system began in 1879. Upto the close of 1883 the royalties had produced £17,324. At Rheims, Troyes, Roubaix, Tourcoing, and St Quentin the post-office has its own exchanges. The aggregate number of inland postal money orders issued in France in 1881 was 14,626,117. In 1882 the uuniber of inland orders increased to 15,791,774 (value £19,655,117), m 1883 to 16,808,627 (value £20,770,078). As compared with the population, the figures for 1883 show an average of 454% to every*~~

~~*1 Stat. gén. d. Serv. post., 1883.*~~

~~*2 Archiv fiir Post und Telegraphte, 1884, p. 570.*~~

~~3 Postal Union return for 1883. The figures quoted are exclusive of the boy messengers attached to the telegraphic service.~~

~~" 4 Auguste de Malarce, in Journal des Economistes, various years ; Twenty-ninth he of the Postmaster-General, 1883, App. 46.~~

~~Archiv fiir Post und Tele hi : A i Soma 6 or graphie, 1882, 570, 571; Journal des Economistes,~~

~~POs f-O Pres~~

~~[AUSTRIA-HUNGARY.~~

~~100 inhabitants, the corresponding figure for England being 707,, for the United States 17,5, and for Italy 143%. 'The French parcel post forwarded in 1883 11,494,072 inland parcels, and 944,795 parcels abroad. A word must be added upon a special feature of the French post-office. Many years ago it began to collect books upon postal subjects ; but up to 1878 it had less than 900 volumes, and less than 200 visits to consult them were made ina year. In 1884 there were about 8000 volumes—postal, telegraphic, statistical—and the annual visits for consulting them averaged 2500. These books are madc accessible to the general public as well as to the postal staff, five rooms being set apart for the books, periodicals, and readers.~~

~~On thc whole, it may be said that the recent record of the Frencli postal service is a very honourable record, giving good augury of further improvements to come. Nor is it one of the least honour- able items in that record to observe that, when the minister proposed to the chamber of deputies® in 1877 an increased vote of £18,200 for the better remuneration of the rural letter-carriers, the chamber voted £69,600 instead.~~

~~Bibliography.—P. d'Alméras, Réglement sur le Port des Lettres, 1627 ; Le Quien de la Neufville, Usages des Postes, 17830; Rowland Hill, Report to the Chancellor of the Exchequer on the French Post-Office, 1837; Annuaire des Postes, 1850-84 ; M. Du Camp, "De l Administration . . . et de Hétel des Postes," in Revue des Deux Mondes, ser. 8, 1865; Revue des Postes et Télégraphes, 1870-84; A. de Rothschild, Histotre de la Poste-aua-Lettres,~~

1875; ‘“‘ Entwickelung des Post- u. Telegraphenwesens in Frankreich,” in Archiv f. Post u. Telegraphie, 1882;

‘Die franzésischen Postsparkassen,” and other articles, in L’Union Postale, Bern, vols. viii., ix.

AUSTRIA-HUNGARY, GERMANY, AND ITALY.

1. Austria-Hungary.—The Austrian postal system is amongst Austria- the oldest on record. Vienna, too, possessed a local letter post and Hungary.

a parcel post, on the plan of prepayment, as early as May 1772, at which date no city in Germany possessed the like. Curiously enough, this local post was established by a Frenchman (M. Hardy) and managed by a Dutchman (Schooten).’? Thirteen years after its organization it became merged in the imperial post. The separate postal organizations of the empire (Austria) and of the kingdom (Hungary) date from 1867. In Austria the post-office and the tele- graph-office are placed under the control of the minister of com- merce, in Hungary under that of the minister of public works. In Austria the department has twenty-one travelling post-offices ; in Hungary it has ten such. Within the limits of the whole Austrian empire the lineal extent of the postal telegraph lines was 20,875 English miles in 1877, and in 1883 32,380 miles. The total number of telegraph stations was 3958. The aggregate number of tele- graphic messages in 1877 (Austria-Hungary) was 5,358,544, in 1883 9,974,993. The aggregate of mailed articles in Austria? was 357,352,270 in 1877, and in 1878 358,427,000. Deducting from these figures the number of newspapers, book-packets, and parcels, there remains for letters and cards, jointly, an aggregate of 233,801,870 in 1877, and of 282,867,000 in 1878. In 1880 the letters and cards were 245,660,700, in 1881 255,618,100. In Hungary!? the aggregate of letters and post-cards was 61,064,856 in 1877, in 1878 59,612,000, in 1880 78,080,804, in 1881 82,592,040. The gross revenue from posts and telegraphs stood thus in 1882 (accord- ing to the financial estimates for that year): Austria £2,307,300, Hungary £2,128,065, total £4,435,365, of which sum the postal revenue proper (z.¢., letter and parcel services) supplied about two and a half millions. In 1883 the gross revenue of Austria was £2,002,073 ; that of Hungary was £790,839 ; in the same year the respective expenditures were £1,647,373 and £605,185. In Novem- ber 1881

~~*a collecting service for bills and invoices was organized. In January 1883 the unit of weight for inland letters was increased from half an ounce to two-thirds of an ounce, the rate being 14d.; and in June of the same year the collection service above-named was made international between Austria-Hungary and the German empire, on the basis of the couutry of origin retaining all fees, and the country of payment remitting all sums collected by money orders at the usual rate of commission. In 1882 and 1883 the chief postal statistics of both divisions of the empire were as follows" (Table X XI.) :—*~~

~~*Austria, Hungary.*~~

~~*1882 1883. 1882. 1883.*~~

~~*Inland letters……. 190,737,600 | 203,865,600 | 69,894,598 | 72,522,335*~~
~~*Inland post-cards …... 43,826,800 | 48,613,700) 16,478,170 | 18,037,872*~~
~~*Foreign letters sent ….| 31,084,900 | 33,357,300 | 1,406,574) 1,580,09418*~~
~~*Foreign post-cards sent 4,113,100 4,536,400 153,206 149, 74218 Totalse. soe 269,762,400 | 290,373,000 | 87,982,548 | 92,290,043*~~

~~*6 L' Union Postale, ii. 33 sq.*~~

~~*7 Loeper, " Organisation des Postes de Ville," in L'Union Postale, vii. 1 sq.*~~

~~*8 Priewe, "' Le Service des Bureaux ambulants," in L' Union Postale, vii. 25 sq.*~~

~~*8 With a population of 21,944,336 eae*~~

~~*10 With a population of 15,564,533 (end of 1876).*~~

~~*11 [' Union Postale, vii. 285, viii. 190.*~~

~~*12 Statistique générale du Service postal, 1883, pp. 2-16.*~~

~~*13 Exclusive of 3,406,134 letters and 797,066 post-cards which passed between the two countries of Hungary and Germany.*~~

~~*Ger- many.*~~

~~GERMANY, ITALY. |~~

~~2. German Empire.. —The Prussian postal system—now devel- oped (mainly by the ability and energy of Dr Stephan, to whom the organization of the International Postal Union is so largely indebted) into the admirably organized post and telegraph office of the empire—began with the Great Elector, aud with the establish- ment in 1646 of a Government post from Cleves to Memel. Frederick II. largely extended it, and by his successor the laws relating to it were consolidated. In Strasburg a messenger code existed as early as 1448. A postal service was organized at Nuremberg in 1570. In 1803 the rights in the indemnity-lands (Enfschddigungslinder) of the counts of Taxis as hereditary imperial postmasters were abolished. The first mail steam-packet was built in 1821 ; the first transmission of mails by railway was in 1847; the beginning of the postal administration of the telegraphs was in 1849; and, by the treaty of postal union with Austria, not only was the basis of the existing system of the posts and telegraphs of Germany fully laid but the germ was virtually set of that International Postal Union which is now become so widely fruitful. That pregnant treaty was made for ten years on 6th April 1850, and was immedi- ately accepted by Bavaria. It came into full operation on the 1st July following, and then included Saxony, Mecklenburg-Strelitz, and Holstein. Other German states followed; and the treaty was renewed in August 1860.~~

~~Between 1850 and 1860 the number of post-offiees in Prussia increased by 204 per cent., that of letters conveyed by 115 per cent. The postal staff during that term increased from 9029 to 15,471. In 1860 the aggregate number of letters was 135,377,086, that of ordinary parcels 13,765,336, that of registered parcels, with value declared (£178, 937,360), 10,807,293.2 In 1872 the post-offices of the empire, exclusive of those in Bavaria and Wiirtemberg (each of which countries retains in postal and telegraphic matters its own organization), numbered 5784, in 1883 11,646. Adding the number of letter-boxes, the total of postal receptacles in those years respect- ively was 33,362 and 65,175.3 The aggregate postal staff was 49,945 persons in 1872, in 1883 74,393.4 These figures include large numbers of persons who are connected with the transit of travellers, as well as with that of letters, parcels, and telegraphic messages. In 1872 the aggregate number of letters, cards, book- packets, and newspapers~~

~~conveyed was 718,233,000, in 1883 1,468,315,000, or, with the addition of Bavaria and Wiirtemberg,~~

~~1,649,845, 000.~~

~~For Berlin itself a private letter and parcel post was established by the commercial guild of the grocers and druggists in September 1800, and continued to work under their rule until 1806, when it was abolished. A regular delivery by letter-carriers, attached to the state postal organization, existed in Berlin as early as 1712.° In 1876 the Berlin office employed a special staff of 3705 persons, which in 1883 had increased to 6120. It delivered in 1883 postal articles amounting to 199,500,000 in number. It received an annual income for postage of £796,517 in 1888.~~

~~The nett revenue accruing from the whole of the imperial postal and telegraphic service in 1874 was only £349,301 sterling ;° in 1881 it was £1,060,310 sterling, in 1882 £1,066,860, and in 1883 £1,172,348. The lineal extent of telegraphic lines in the whole of Germany was 74,313 kilometres (46,148 miles) at the close of 1882 as compared with 72,577 kilometres (45,070 miles) in the preceding year. There were 10,803 telegraphic offices (10,308 in preceding year). The aggregate number of messages transmitted in 1883 was 15,300,816 as against 12,721,290 in 1879. Collectively, the total number of money orders issued by the postal service throughout the German empire in 1882 was 52,537,440, showing an annual average a little exceeding one to each inhabitant; in 1883 53,935,556 money orders, worth a total of £1 61,622,221, were issued. In 1883 the aggregate number of ordinary inland parcels forwarded by the German parcel post was 79,245,700, that of registered parcels with declared value was 5,410,800, the aggregate declared value being £201,469,460. The parcels sent abroad were—ordinary 3,231,970, registered with declaration of value 262,620.~~

~~Bibliography.—Von Beust, Versuch einer ausfiihrlichen Erkladrung des Post-.~~

~~regals,... insbesondere in Anschauwng d. h. rom. Reichs Teutscher Nation, 3 vols., Jena, 1747-48; Avis instructif aw Public… pour la petite Poste [de Vienne], 1772; Ueber die kleine Post in Wien, 1780; A. Flegler, Zur Gesch.~~

~~d. Posten, 1858; Stephan, Hein. Gesch. d. preuss. Post, 1859 ; Fischer, Die Verkehrsanstalten des deutschen Reichs, 1873; Von Linde, Haftverbindlichkeit d. Postanstalt ; W. Kompe, Das Handelsgesetzbuch uw. das Postrecht ; Gad, Die Haftpflicht d. d. Postanstalten, 1863; Eug. Hartmann, Entwickelungsgesch. d. Posten, 1868 ; 12, DY,~~

~~2S ee ee SSS~~

~~1 The figures in this section have been kindly revised by the Reichs- postamt in Berlin.~~

~~2 Aemtliches preussisches Handelsarchiv, Nos. 15-17 (1863), as quoted in Hildebrand's Jahrbicher fur Nationalékonomie, i. 396-398 ; K. A. H. Schmid, " Zur Geschichte der Briefporto-Reform in Deutsch- land," in Hildebrand's Jahrbiicher, iii. 1-51 (1866); Journal des Economistes, ser. 4, ii. 68-71.~~

~~3 Statistisches Jahrbuch fir das deutsche Reich, 1884, 97 sq.~~

~~4 These, like the other figures, are exclusive of Bavaria and Wiirtem- berg.~~

~~oo fiir Post und Telegraphie, 1884, p. 97.~~

~~6 Hildebrand, Jahrbiicher, xxvii. 207 sq. (1876).~~

~~POST-OFFICE~~

~~583~~

~~Fischer, Die d. Post- und Telegraphie-Gesetzgebung, 1876; O. Dambach, Das Gesetz tiber das Postwesen des deutschen Reichs, 1881; Archiv f. Post u. Telegraphie, 1873-85 ; F. X. von Neumann-Spallart, Uebersichten tiber Verkehr in d. Weltwirth- schaft, 1885; Deutsche Verkehrszeitung, 1881-85; W. Lenz, Katechismus d. d. Reichspost, 1882.~~

~~3. Italy.—The history of the Italian post-office is in many Italy.~~

~~respects one of special interest. But the limits of this article admit only of a very brief statement of results. Its origin may be traced virtually to Venice~~

~~and to the establishment of the "Corrieri di Venezia" early in the 16th century. As early as 1818 the Sardinian post-office issued stamped letter-paper. The total number of letters, newspapers, and book- packets conveyed in 1862 was but 111,733,319. Ten years later there was au aggregate of 232,242,677, and in 1882 one of 333,242,148. The comparative growth of postal traffic in letters and post-cards may be shown thus: in 1869 the aggregate number was 87,613,348, in 1870 89,430,261, in 1880 189,207,627, in 1881 194,587,021, in 1882 204,644,355," in 1883 216,944,382.~~

~~The growth of postal savings banks in Italy is on the whole care as will be seen by a glance at the following table~~

~~wr~~

~~No. of Accounts | Amount of Deposits~~

~~No. of Banks.~~

~~(31st Dec.). (31st Dec.). 1876 1989 57,354 £97,736~~

~~1879 3259 238,869 1,049,291 1881 3406 471,094 2,679,876 1882 3488 692,018 3,398,049 1883 3584 805, 988 4,485,135~~

~~In the year 1881 the accounts opened were 143,410 and 249,741 in 1883 ; those closed were 12,161 in 1881 and 35,771 in 1883. The average of each deposit increased (omitting fractions) from £1, 4s. 3d. in 1876 to £3, 16s. 1d. in 1881, and decreased to £3, 4s. 8d. in 1888. The average sum standing to the credit of each depositor was £5, 12s. 11d. in 1881 and in 1883 £5, 11s. 3d. The number of accounts opened in 1883 was 249,741 as against 144,485 opened in 1882. This rapid increase, and the corresponding diminution in the average amount of each deposit and of the average sum stand- ing to the credit of each depositor, are due to the regulation of 18th February 1888, which came into operation on 1st May follow- ing, and by which post-office savings banks were authorized to accept as deposits cards bearing sufficient ten-centime postage stamps to make up the sum of one lira (9}d.). Between Ist May and 3lst December 193,763 such cards were deposited. The financial results of the post-office savings banks service for~~

1883 show a nett gain of £29,768 ; the total gain from 1876 to 1883 was £90,345. It is the purpose of the postal administration to make by degrees the number of the postal savings banks identical with that of the post-offices.® That administration is now (1885) a dependency upon the ministry of public works. There were issued in 1883 for Italy itself 4,207,544 money orders, valued at £21,706,968, and for countries abroad 17,087, valued at £164,174.

The Italian parcel post despatched in the first three months of 1882 489,687 articles, in the corresponding period of 1883 869,280 ; it received respectively 486,814 (1882) and 978,559 (1888).9 The number of parcels, both inland and foreign, conveyed in 1882 was 2,877,201. In 1883 3,747,182 inland and 180,828 foreign parcels were despatched by parcel post. The nett postal revenue in 1882 was £197,257 (against £152,676 in 1881), to which sum the parcel post contributed £27,078.1° The nett postal revenue in 1883 was £213,537. The parcel post of Italy dates only from 1881 (October), since which time it has carried more than nine millions of parcels, which it registers, paying for loss or damage during transit. But the service is so excellently organized that the administration has hitherto (1885) had to pay but a very insignificant sum as compen- sation.

PosTaAL CoNGRESSES AND INTERNATIONAL POSTAL UNION AT BERN.

Substantially, the first step towards an effectual postal Confer- union was taken at Paris in June 1863, when delegates fd of

from France, Great Britain, Austria, Prussia, Italy, Spain, Belgium, Holland, Portugal, Switzerland, Denmark, the Hanseatic towns, the United States of America, and Costa Rica met in congress, under the presidency of M. Vandal, the then postmaster-general of France. The conference recommended (1) an optional prepayment of foreign letters, with a reduction of the differential charge between paid and unpaid; (2) a readjustment of the regulations concern- ing the international weighing and taxing of letters; (3) a

7 Statistique générale, 1882. 8 Ann. di Statist. ii. 263. 9 LT Union Postale, viii. 164. 10 "Je Service des Colis postaux en Italie," in L'Union Postale,

~~*November 1884, ix. 229 sq.*~~

~~*Treaty*~~

~~*584*~~

~~*reduction of the transit tariff ;! (4) an improved regulation as to the choice of routes of transit for letters addressed to remote parts of the world; and (5) great improvements in the international money-order system, and in the postal transmission of articles of special value.?_ Thus a basis was practically laid for the treaty of Bern of 1874. What was achieved in 1874 and extended in 1878 had also been largely promoted by the proceedings and example of several local conferences on postal affairs held at various dates in Germany. Certain intermediate international conferences, more or less largely constituted, also helped to prepare the way for the great results of 1874. Though here necessarily limited to brief notices of the treaty of Bern and of the congress at Paris (four years later), a word or two must be afforded to a curious anticipation by an enterprising Swiss of a social reform destined to be realized at a distance of almost two centuries. Amongst the many political schemes which the dread of the advance of France towards a pre- dominating sway in Europe gave rise in the 17th century was that of Beatus Fischer, who strove zealously to seat at Bern a postal union—representing Austria, the empire, the electorate of Brandenburg, Great Britain, the Nether- lands, Italy, Spain, and Switzerland—which should organize and administer a great network of postal routes, independ- ently of France. But France was still too strong, and the incidental difficulties too great. The attempt, however, led to minor postal reforms in various places.~~

~~*At Bern in 1874 postal delegates of twenty-two states*~~

~~*of Bern. assembled, representing an aggregate population of 350*~~

~~*millions. An eminent Frenchman had given a great im- pulse to the initiatory movement in 1863; a Belgian (M. Vinchent) and a Prussian (Dr Stephan) were the principal leaders of its development in 1874.4 Both had already rendered distinguished service to their respective countries. A half-ounce unit of weight for ordinary letters ; a uniform charge, wholly*~~

~~*irrespective of distance, of 24d. for a letter from any one country within the Union to any other; uniform rates for newspapers (ld. for 4 oz.) and for book-parcels, law-papers, mercantile samples (1d. for every 2 oz.); a transit rate greatly reduced ; a regulation (very fruitful in good results) that "each post-office shall retain its own collections, and that payments due for transit shall be estimated only from accounts taken twice in each year," were among the chief improvements effected. M. Vinchent (17th September 1874) suggested the creation of an international board ; and the proposal met with the zealous support of Dr Stephan, of Dr William Ginther (whose death in December 1882 was a great loss to the post-office of Germany), and of other leaders of the conference. The office so established is supported by contributions, graduated roughly—not merely according to extent of postal traffic but in part according to national rank—from the several administrations. There are six classes of such contribu- tories. Each country in the first class contributes 25 parts of the total expense, each of the second class 20 parts, of the third 15, of the fourth 10, of the fifth 5, and of the sixth 3 parts. It is covenanted that the total*~~

~~*1 All the envoys, the Italian envoy excepted, advocated such a tariff as should leave some surplus, by way of reserve fund, for improve- ments in the services. And in 1863 adherence to a distance-scale, albeit a liberal one, obtained favour universally.*~~

~~*2 Various contemporary reports in periodicals; Schmid, 'Der deutsche Briefporto-Tarif," &c., in Jahrbicher, ii. 187-205.*~~

~~*& The details are given in Z' Union Postale (of August 1883), viii.*~~

~~*, 'a Full and able reports of the proceedings will be found in the pre- liminary numbers of L'Union Postale, October to December 1875, and additional particulars in later numbers. A good summary is given by M. Bonnaud, "Le Congrés Postal," &c., in Journal des Econo- mistes, ser. 4, ii, 419 sq.*~~

~~*5 Treaty of Bern, 9th October 1874 (Sessional Papers of House of Commons, " presented by command").*~~

~~*POS T-O Fr Pie*~~

[POSTAL UNION.

expense shall not exceed £3000 a year. No rule was laid down as to the composition of the board. But the persons entrusted wisely determined that "it should be inter- national in composition as in attributions." All its pro- ceedings are reported in its official organ, L' Union Postale, which is trilingual (German, French, English) and appears monthly. Dr Stephan did not err by over-enthusiasm when he said at the close of the proceedings, " You enter upon one of the most important fields of action in the intercourse of nations; . . . you are promoting an eminent work for their peace and their prosperity." The work so successfully begun at Bern was extended at Paris, when from representing twenty-two states the Union came to represent thirty-three, and the 350 millions of (in a certain sense) its "constituents" had grown to 653 millions.

The work before the convention at Paris in June 1878

Conven-

consisted mainly in the application of four years' experi- tion at

ence, in the postal administrations of the constituent states, to the improvement of details. It made improved regula- tions with respect to transit between countries within the Union and those which still remained outside of it. It guaranteed rights of transit throughout the entire Union. It extended stipulations, made at Bern, to postal exchanges between members of the Union and extraneous countries, in cases wherein the postal service of two at least of the contracting countries were employed. It provided that ex- penses of transit should be borne by the country of origin. Tn some cases it slightly enhanced the unit of charge whilst considerably extending the unit of weight. It made valu- able improvements in the regulations concerning compensa- tions for loss during transit. Finally, it made provision for a postal congress to revise and to improve all pending rules and matters at least once in every five years. 'The last congress was held at Lisbon in February 1885. One of the matters which claimed its attention calls impera- tively for some notice here. Whilst the growing action of the Postal Union tends constantly to simplification and identity of postal systems, there still exists great diversity of national practice and of national

~~*law on the important point of the ownership of a letter whilst in transit. In Great Britain it lies, for the time being, in the queen, as represented by her postmaster-general and her secretary of state. Neither sender nor addressee can claim to inter- fere with a letter whilst in the post-office. Only the war- rant of a secretary of state can stay its delivery. In Her Majesty's Indian empire, however, the sender has virtually a property in the letter until delivery, and may (under regulations) recall it. So is it in Belgium, in Austria and Hungary, in Portugal, in Russia, and in the Scandinavian states, whilst in Canada the letter belongs to its addressee as soon as it is posted. In the Netherlands there is no precise law, but the sender may claim return prior to actual postal despatch; the case is virtually similar in France. In Italy, in Spain, and in Greece the addressee (as in Canada) has an absolute property in the letter when once posted.? A very recent decision of the French council of state extends the French provision,® practically, in favour of the sender up to actual delivery, leaving it to the postal administration to regulate the forms.*~~

~~*Subjoined is a tabular view (Table XXTIL) of postal statistics of the principal countries comprised within the Postal Union for the year 1883.*~~

~~*a al*~~

~~*6 Convention of Paris (Commons' Papers of 1879, No. 2309) ; Bon- naud, "Le Congrés Postal," in Journal des Economistes, ser. 4, ii. 418 sq.*~~

~~*7 "Das Eigenthumsrecht an die Postsendungen,' Post und Telegraphie, 1882, p. 239 sq.*~~

~~*8 "Bulletin mensuel des Postes," August 1884, in L' Union Postale, September 1884 (ix. 208).*~~

~~*>in Archiv fir*~~

~~*Paris,*~~

~~*1878.*~~

~~*Congress*~~

~~at Lis- on,~~

~~1885.~~

~~POSTAGE STAMPS. |~~

~~TABLE XXIII.— Comparative Table of the position of the Postal Service in the principal Countries belonging to the Postal Union, Sor the year 1883.1~~

~~ZS. 2 |g : aS = |e sal Po. a & S 43 Pm gas oo lta = Bes ae | ee |e ead so | Mc o Has SS | og Ss) ye 3 Rn ac n SEs ao | S's a Gross | Nett Revenue 623 Ba} mS ° ' ay aa | Sc ed Revenue.| or Deficit. SES (as|8s| & goa ° He 3 Ee? [e8|ye] ay s {1s , qh Ae Argentine Re- 11,995,473 | 2487 | 4 958 {£110,443 £191 [deficit] public Austria ….| 290,373,000! 29] 13 | 15,763 |2,002,073| 354,700 | Hungary ..| 92,290,043; 39] 10 | 6,447] 790,839] 185,654 Belgium ….} 107,662,590| 13] 19 | 4,802] 535,819! 202,271 Canada …... 78,340,000 | 501 | 18 | 7,225 452,876| 84,602 [deficit] Guill sic" "| aeonree | "sa | 1p | gaer| ameis| age enmar' 88 Egypt …... 5,002,000| 1501] 1 | 570} 94,678] 14,932 France …... 633,261,848 | 32 | 17 | 52,636 |6,429,101| 750,250 Germany ….| 843,397,870| 15] 19 | 79,384 [8,897,608 | 1,172,343 pe eee) 2) RE CCCw eisie <1 sis £ Holland 79,398,859| 10| 19 | 4,713| 432,234! 113,571 India3 …... 165,439,644 | 142| 1 | 36,943 [1,003,798 | 15,906 [deficit] Italy …. 0… 216,944,382 | 32] 7 | 18,790 1,418,469 | 213,537 Japan 86,435,182 | 27] 2 | 19,028] .... i Norway ….| 13,977,444| 119| 7 | 1,491| 112,879; 2,505 Portugal ….| 18,2477577| 34 | 4 | 2,457] 126,321| 10,908 [deficit] Roumania 9,491,214 | 261] 2 | 1,410] 163,245] 50,030 Russia 1247555,076 | 1829 | 1 15,808 2,608,323 230,600 [deficit] Spain …... 101,111,070| 74] 6 112! 635,706 | 336,269 Sweden…... 37,500,044 90| 8 | 3,905| 337,352, 39,468 Switzerland..| 71,930,625] 5] 25 | 5,936] 679,476| 49,833 United States]... 83 | .. | 69,020 |9,610,393 | 443,569~~

~~The crowning improvement in postal matters, that of an international transit entirely free, is merely a question of time. It is the logical, the necessary complement of the work initiated at Paris in 1863, organized at Bern in 1874, revised and methodized again at Paris in 1878. One postal territory, one code of postal regulations, one uniform postal tariff, free~~

~~conveyance between nation and nation, will be the outcome of this important movement.~~

~~Comparing the postal traffic of the various quarters of the globe for the year 1882 we find that out of a total of 8,280,000,000 articles mailed European countries claimed nearly two-thirds, while America had considerably more than one-fourth. The total was distributed as follows :—~~

~~Puro Pe s.. .s.2c2eess 5, 624,000,000 | Australia…….. 73,000,000 I NWNETEG! cag qapesoas: 2,366,000,000 | Africa …..... .....42,000, 000 Asia 205,000,000~~

~~Bibliography.—In addition to books already quoted the reader may consult K. Loeper, Stammbuch der neueren Verkehrsmittel, 1881 ; 'Die Post in d. Welt- literatur," in L'Union Postale, ix. 12-161, 1884; and 'Die Disinfection der Postentsendungen als Schiitzmassregel gegen die Hinschleppung der Cholera," in Archiv f, Post, April, 1884. See also J. G. Borel, L''Europe synoptique des Postes et des Télégraphes, 1882; Recueil de Renseignements sur le Régime postale en vigueur dans le Service interne des Pays de VUnion Postale Universetle.~~

~~PostaGE STAMPS.~~

~~For all practical purposes the history of postage stamps begins in the United Kingdom, and with the great reform of its postal system in 1839-40. A post-paid envelope was in common use in Paris in the year 1653. Stamped postal letter-paper (carta postale bollata) was issued to the public by the Government of the Sardinian states in November 1818 (above, p. 583), and stamped postal envelopes were issued by the same Government from 1820 until 1836.4 Stamped wrappers for newspapers were made experimentally in London by Mr Charles Whiting, under the name of " go-frees," in 1830. Four years later (June 1834), and in ignorance of what Mr Whiting had already done, the stamp-office authorities, in a letter addressed to Lord Althorp, then chancellor of the~~

~~1 Statistique générale du Service postal, Bern, 1884.~~

~~2 The number on Ist November 1882.~~

~~*3 Exclusive of French and Portuguese possessions.*~~

~~*4 Stamp-Collector's Magazine, v. 161 sq. 3 J. E. Gray, Illustrated Catalogue of Postage Stamps, 6th ed., 167.*~~

~~*rPOUST-OTrIC E*~~

~~*085*~~

~~*exchequer, by Mr Charles Knight, recommended similar wrappers for adoption. Finally, and in its results most important of all, the adhesive stamp was made experi- mentally by Mr James Chalmers in his printing-office at Dundee in August 1834.5 These experimental stamps were printed from ordinary type, and were made adhesive by a wash of gum. Their inventor had already won local distinction in matters of postal reform by his strenuous and successful efforts, made as early as the year 1822, for the acceleration of the Scottish mails from London. Those efforts resulted in a saving of forty-eight hours on the double mail journey, and were highly appreciated in Scotland. There is evidence that from 1822 onwards his attention was much directed towards postal questions, and that he held correspondence with the postal reformers of his day, both in and out of parliament. It is also plain that he was far more intent upon aiding public improve- ments than upon winning credit for them. He made adhesive stamps in 1834, and showed them to his neigh- bours, but took no step for publicly recommending their adoption by the post-office until long after such a recom- mendation had been published—although very hesitatingly—by the author of the now famous pamphlet, entitled Post-Office Reform.6 Mr Hill brought the adhesive stamp under the notice of the commissioners of post-office inquiry on. 13th February 1837. Mr Chalmers made no public mention of his stamp of 1834 until December 1837.*~~

~~*Only a fortnight before his examination by the above- named commissioners Mr Hill, in his letter to Lord Mont- eagle (then Mr Spring Rice and chancellor of the exchequer), seemed to have no thought of the adhesive stamp. He recommended to the treasury that "stamped covers and sheets of paper be supplied to the public from the stamp- office, or post-office, . . . and sold at such a price as to include the postage. . . . Covers at various prices would be required for packets of various weights. Each*~~

~~should have the weight it is entitled to carry legibly printed with the stamp. . . . Should experience warrant the Govern- ment in making the use of stamped covers universal,' most important advantages would be secured. The post- office would be relieved altogether from the collection of the revenue."® Then, upon suggestion, it would seem, of some possible difficulty that might arise from the occa- sional bringing of unstamped letters to a post-office by persons unable to write, he added : "Perhaps this difficulty might be obviated by using a bit of paper just large enough to bear the stamp, and covered at the back with a glutinous wash." It is a quite fair inference that this alternative had been suggested from without. In reviewing the sub- ject, long afterwards, in his History of Penny Postage, Sir R. Hill says: "The post-office opinions as to the use of stamps for . . . prepayment were, on the whole, favour- able." Ina paper of 1839, entitled On the Collection of Postage by means of Stamps, the author continued to look upon "stamped covers or envelopes as the means which the public would most commonly employ ; still believing that the adhesive stamp would be reserved for exceptional~~

~~5 Patrick Chalmers, Sir Rowland Hill and James Chalmers, Inventor of the Adhesive Stamp (London, 1882), passim. See also the same writer's pamphlet, qntitled The Position of Sir Rowland Ifill made plain (1882), and his The Adhesive Stamp: a Fresh Chapter in the History of Post-Offce Reform (1881). Compare Mr Pearson Hill's tract, A Paper on Postage Stamps, in reply to Mr Chalmers, reprinted from the Philatelic Record of November 1881. Mr Hill has therein shown conclusively the priority of publication by Sir Rowland Hill. He has also given proof of Mr James Chalmers's express acknowledgment of that priority. But he has not weakened the evidence of the priority of ¢nvention by Mr Chalmers.~~

~~6 Ninth Report of Commissioners of Post-Office Inquiry, 1837, pp. 32, 33, reprinted in Sir R. Hill's " History of Penny Postage" (Lie, &c., ii. 270).~~

~~7 T.e., by prohibiting the prepayment of letters in money.~~

~~8 Ninth Report, as above.~~

~~*Inven- tion of adhesive stamp.*~~

~~*Mantu-*~~

~~*586*~~

~~*cases."! Mulready's well-remembered allegorical cover came into use on Ist May 1840, together with the first form of the stamped letter-paper, and the adhesive labels." They all met at first, but only for a few days, with a large sale. That of the first day yielded £2500. Soon after- wards the public rejection of the "Mulready envelope," writes Rowland Hill, "' was so complete as to necessitate the destruction of nearly all the vast number prepared for issue." Whilst, on the other hand, the presses of the stamp-office were producing more than half a million of [adhesive] labels, by working both night and day, they yet failed to meet the demand."* It was only after many*~~

~~*factureof weeks, and after the introduction of a series of mechanical stamps. improvements and new processes, due to the skill and*~~

~~*ingenuity, in part of Mr Edwin Hill of the stamp-office, in part of Mr Perkins, an engraver, that the demand could be effectually answered. To find an obliterating ink which worked effectually, without damaging the letters, was also a special difficulty.*~~

~~*In the production of the stamps both cheapness and security against forgery had to be combined. "The queen's head was first engraved on a single matrix, the effigy being encompassed with lines too fine forany . . . but the most delicate machinery to engrave. The matrix, being subse- quently hardened, was employed to produce impressions on a soft steel roller of sufficient circumference to receive twelve, and this, being hardened in turn, was used under very heavy pressure to produce and repeat its counterpart on a steel plate,"* capable of working off, at each impres- sion, 240 stamps. Engravers, printers, chemists, and arti- ficers of several kinds had to combine their efforts before the desired results could be secured. Long afterwards (June 1856) a question was raised in the House of Com- mons as to an alleged preference of one manufacturing firm over all its virtual competitors without preliminary inquiry or actual competition. The*~~

~~operation, it was replied, was confided to Messrs De La Rue & Co., because they "had the best means of accomplishing it (¢.e., the production of the adhesive stamp) within the time required. No public notice calling for tenders for printing and gumming was given to the trade, nor is there any trade to which such notice could have been given, the operation being the making of the stamps, as well as the printing and gum- ming, and that operation being to a great extent experi- mental."> The total cost of the manufacture of each million of stamps was £30, Os. 11d. (viz., paper, £5, 14s. 5d. ; print- ing and gumming, £22, ls. 9d.; perforating,® £1, 8s. 1d. ; salaries, 16s, 8d). To this is to be added a sum of £45, 2s, 4d. for poundage and commission upon the sale, making in all £75, 3s, 3d., the whole of which forms a deduction from the produce of sale. In the event about three thousand millions of stanrps were produced from the original matrix. At the end of fifteen years a second matrix was obtained, after the deepening of the lines by hand, from the first. From 1st May 1840 up to the end of the year 1884 more than thirty-one thousand three hundred millions of postage stamps had been printed,~~

~~1 "History of Penny Postage" (Life, i. 345, 346).~~

- ~~'Considerable diversion was created in the city to-day [Ist May~~

~~1840] by the appearance of the new penny-post devices for envelopes, half-sheet letters, and bits of sticking-plaster for dabbing on to letters. . . . [The elephants on the Mulready cover] are sym- bolic of the lightness and rapidity with which Mr Rowland Hill's penny-post is to be carried on. . . . Withal the citizens are rude enough to believe that these graphic embellishments will not go down at the price of 1s, 3d. per dozen for the envelopes, . .. and of 1s. 1d. per dozen for the . . . sticking-plaster." This good-humoured banter is from the money article of an eminent daily paper.~~

~~; Hill, ut supra, p. 398. 4 Sir R. Hill, op. ett., p. 407.~~

~~Returns relating to Stamped Postal Envelopes, &c., 24th July~~

~~1856, House of Commons' Papers, No. 392.~~

~~6 This item only after the year 1853.~~

~~POST-OFFICE~~

~~[POSTAGE STAMPS.~~

~~varying in value from £5 to a halfpenny. The details~~

~~are as follows (Table XXIV.) :—~~

~~Adhesiverstampstaticco sss. ceaeece aoe 84,000 iy el . ..cee 285,054 bs Te. ace ee 461, 438 ce oe ee eee 6,413, 686 i ee ae ae 789,884 35 AB cneniss esas eee ssiassie 6,715,820 * ae, eee 225,378,060 Ss 11 eae eae 5,963,476 is Ode) 5c eee es 11,235,080 s 5… eee 4,608,720 as BAe ce ee 217,048, 960 a ae… ae 26,413,680 6) A NY REG 223,381,000 — 5 re 284,475,696 i Be 385,171,080 es ti 105,603,360 9 MCI sciseiiepie Goose ssaes es 26, 651, 930,040 . _ a oe 2,970,705, 120~~

~~Total number…... | 81,301,885,334~~

~~The first contract for the ordinary stamped envelope, with the embossed queen's head, was entered into with Messrs Dickinson & Longman on 22d May 1840. The average cost of each million of this envelope was £376 ; of which sum £359, 6s. was repaid by the produce of its sale, over and above the value of the stamp, leaving a nett deduction from the aggregate value of £16, 14s. upon each million sold.' In November 1850 a second contract was entered into with Messrs De La Rue & Co., the contractors for the adhesive stamp. In the ten years 1847 to 1856 inclusive the aggregate number of envelopes manufactured and sold was 186,124,000. Under both these contracts the outside of the envelope was impressed with a coloured embossed device in the place of a seal.8 And this small device—the cost of which was infinitesimal—vwhilst it obviously improved the appearance of the envelope, added still more to its security. Of late years the device has been omitted, and the security of letters impaired for a very contemptible saving.~~

~~The little canton of Zurich was the first foreign state to adopt postage stamps, in 1843. The stamps reached America in the same year, being introduced by the Govern- ment of Brazil. That of the United States did not adopt them until 1847 ; but a tentative issue was made by the post-office of~~

~~*New York in 1845. An adhesive stamp was also issued at St Louis in the same year, and in Rhode Island in the next. In Europe the Swiss cantons of Geneva (1844) and of Basel (1845) soon followed the ex- ample set by Zurich.? In the Russian empire the use of postage stamps became general in 1848 (after preliminary issues at St Petersburg and in Finland in 1845). France issued them in 1849.1° The same year witnessed their*~~

~~*7 This great difference of the deduction from the postal revenue accruing from the nett produce of stamped envelopes of only £16, 14s. upon each million sold, as against £75, 3s. upon each million of the labels, may well have weighed much with Sir Rowland Hill in his long preference for stamped covers to adhesive labels. If the 23,415 millions of adhesives sold up to 1879 could have been sold in the form of envelopes the gain to the revenue would have been more than £1,358,070. Besides, the security of the cover is greater.*~~

~~*8 Return, &c., as above (Sessional Paper of 1856, No. 392, p. 8).*~~

~~*® On the whole, within the course of seven years the postage stamp was adopted in three Swiss cantons, throughout the United States, in Russia, and in Brazil. So curiously inexact is the statement which appears in Mr Lewin's volume—one in many respects of eminent ability—entitled Her Majesty's Mails, p. 261: " For eight long years the English people may be said to have enjoyed a complete monopoly in postage stamps." It is still more curious to observe in Sir Rowland Hill's own " History of Penny Postage" (Life, &c., ii. 18) this passage: "'It is remarkable . . . that the first countries to adopt the improvement—Spain and Russia—should be two so far from taking a general lead in civilization."*~~

~~*10 The date of the law authorizing the introduction is 30th August 1848. It became operative on 1st January 1849.*~~

~~*Stamped envel- opes.*~~

~~*Intro- duction of post- age stamps.*~~

~~*. Deface- ment marks.*~~

~~*Postage stamps in*~~

~~*France,*~~

~~*In Ger- many,*~~

~~*rors lO Pl if Cr*~~

~~*introduction into Tuscany, Belgium, and Bavaria, and also into New South Wales. Austria, Prussia, Saxony, Spain, Italy, followed in 1850. The use of postage stamps seems to have extended to the Sandwich Islands (1851-4) a year before it reached the Dutch Netherlands (1852). Within twenty-five years of the first issue of a postage stamp in London, the known varieties, issued in all parts of the world, amounted to 1391. Of these 841 were of European origin, 333 were American, 59 Asiatic, 55 African. The varieties of stamp issued in the several countries of Oceania were 103. Of the whole 1391 stamps no less than 811 were already obsolete in 1865, leaving 580 still in currency.*~~

~~*It was not until 1853 that the admirable improvement of perforating the stamp-sheets was introduced by the purchase for £4000 (pursuant to the recommendation of a select committee of the House of Commons of 1852) of a perforating machine invented by Mr Henry Archer. Other improvements of value have also been made in the obliterating process. The defacement mark now serves to show the official consecutive numbers of the town in which each particular letter was posted. For England that num- ber appears within circular lines; for Scotland, between parallel lines ; for Ireland, it appears diamond-wise. The general post-office mark also denotes the hour of posting. The metropolitan district marks indicate the office number within oval lines under the initials of each district. Paper for the embossed stamps of all the recognized values is received by the Board of Inland Revenue from all persons who offer it, under favourable regulations.*~~

~~*The collection and sale of specimen postage stamps as a branch*~~

~~*of commerce has already attained dimensions little anticipated*~~

~~*by those who watched the origin of the new pursuit, as a sort of toy for children, some quarter of a century ago. Before stamp- collection became conspicuous commercially, it came to have a recognized educational value, in its degree, as an amusing aid to the early knowledge of geography, more especially in the political aspect.*~~

~~*When the legislation of August 1848 directed the introduction of postage stamps into France the first endeavour of the postal administration was to make a contract for their manufacture in England. But the terms proposed were thought to be too high. A contract was then made with M. Hulot of the Paris mint, and the die approved of was engraved by M. Barre, also of that establish- ment. M. Hulot became "director of the manufacture of postage stamps," and under the early contracts was allowed, in lieu of salary, one france (10d.) on each thousand stamps for the first two hundred millions, 9d. per thousand for the next two hundred millions, and 8d. per thousand for all above. In 1869 these terms were reduced to 6d. per thousand upon the first five hundred millions, and 5d. upon all above.! The cost of mere manufacture was slightly below that of the stamps of the United Kingdom, each million being estimated to cost about £25, 10s., of which sum paper, printing, and gumming absorbed somewhat more than £20.?*~~

~~*During the war, in November 1870, a contract was entered into between the Provisional Government and a M. Delebecque and others for the manufacture of postage stamps at Bordeaux. The contractor bound himself to deliver, after a day determined, 4000 sheets of stamps daily, each containing 300 stamps, at the price of 3q. for each sheet. The stamps were to be of the several values of 8d., 4d., 3d., 2d., 1d., $d., and of one, two, three, and four centimes respectively, in such proportions as the post-office should direct. The first plate which was sent to the press was made from a matrix drawn with the pen; afterwards lithographic processes were employed. 'The post-office suspended the contract by notice in March 1871, but was immediately obliged by the communal insur- rection to license its continuance, and the manufacture was resumed at Bordeaux until June. On the whole, 125,387,075 postage stamps were produced from the presses at Bordeaux.? ; ;*~~

~~*The first postage stamp used in Germany was issued in the king- dom of Bavaria in 1849. It is of quite inartistic character, though originating in a state so famous for its cultivation of the plastic arts. The earliest type shows with the name of the country only the postal tariff. None of the many subsequent varieties displays the royal effigy ; even the embossed royal arms were not used until*~~

~~*BS*~~

~~*1 Ordinances of the minister of finance, 30th January 1860 and 30th January 1869 respectively, as cited in Rothschild, List. de la Poste- aux-Lettres, ii. 1380-133.*~~

~~*2 Rothschild, ii. 125. 3 Tbid., ii. 202.*~~

~~*587*~~

~~*1866. Stamps made specially for the use of the army bear the figure sometimes of a Bavarian trooper, sometimes of an infantry- man or artilleryman. The earliest Prussian stamp is of November 1850, and bears the effigy—laureated—of King William, in filigree, to which in 1861 succeeded the Prussian eagle. The duchy of Anhalt and several petty principalities placed themselves under its wing by adopting almost from the outset the Prussian stamp. 'Three weeks after its first appearance in Prussia, Hanover (December 1850) issued a stamp bearing the name of the kingdom with the royal arms. 'The first stamp having the royal effigy is an envelope of 1857. The effigy appears first upon adhesive stamps in 1859. The earliest Saxon type (1850) shows merely the postal tariff, but the second, of the same year, bears the king's head. The first Baden stamp resembles that of Saxony. The head of the grand- duke appears upou an envelope of October 1858. From 1860 the adhesives bear the arms of the duchy. Within the Thurn and Taxis district stamps were first used in 1852, and they continued until 1866. The earliest stamp of Schleswig-Holstein is that of an insurrectional Government patronized by Prussia and bears the national arms. 'The insignia of Denmark take their place in 1852 and continue until 1864. In that year separate stamps appear for Schleswig and for Holstein, to be succeeded for a short time by a common one in 1865.*~~

~~*In January 1868 the postage stamps of Prussia, Hanover, Saxony, Oldenburg, of the two Mecklenburgs, of Brunswick, of Schleswig-Holstein, and of the free cities of Bremen, Hamburg, and Liibeck virtually disappear and are replaced by the new stamp of the North German Confederation. For a while the postage envelopes of such of those states as had issned any continued to appear, but with the significant super-addition of the confederation stamp. That, in its turn, after a currency of nearly four years, made room (15th December 1871) for the imperial stamp of the new Germany. The grand-duke of Baden presently adopted it. Only Bavaria and Wiirtemberg retain their special postage stamps and their separate administration. Certain tariff stamps, how- ever, for merely fiscal purposes continue to be used in Saxony, Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, Brunswick, Oldenburg, Hesse, Mecklenburg- Schwerin, Schaumburg-Lippe, Schwarzburg-Sondershausen, and in the city of Bremen.**~~

~~*This brief review of atelic phenomena in Germany alone—the limits of this article make it impossible to give similar details for the rest of Eyrope—may suffice to show that the pretension of stamp-collectors to illustrate, in degree, the course and currents of political geography has its justification in fact.*~~

~~*The earliest postage stamps of Austria-Hungary date from 1850, In Aus-*~~

~~*and display the imperial arms. It is only in 1858 that the emperor's tria-*~~

~~*head takes their place. reappears, followed again and continuously, as regards adhesive stamps, by the imperial effigy. The stamped wrappers for news- papers and books bear sometimes a figure of Mercury, sometimes the double-headed eagle. Stamped envelopes were first issued in 1861; they bear, indifferently, the imperial effigy or the armorial eagle. The imperial stamps are adopted in the principality of Liechtenstein. The special stamps for Hungary bear date from 1868. The postal card is of Austrian origin, and was first issued in August 1869. Taking all kinds of postal stamps together, the aggregate number of types (39) and of varieties (123) issued through- out the empire from 1850 amounted in 1883 to 162.°*~~

~~*In the Russian empire the province of Finland takes the initia- tive. As early as 1845 its lion within a crowned escutcheon appears upon a postal*~~

~~*envelope. Its adhesive stamps (1856) date a few months earlier than the earliest formalized issue for the empire generally (1857). These Finnish stamps are of similar type to the envelopes, but they continue to bear the arms of the province only until 1860. The Russian stamps bear the imperial eagle and the imperial crown ; but none of them bears the head of the emperor. For a short time (1858-1864) unhappy Poland has the appearance—it is little more—of a certain differentiation in the stamps issued at Warsaw from those of the enrpire at large. But early in 1865 these slight peculiarities disappear, along with the local postal administration of Warsaw. All the Polish stamps are now obsolete, and have been superseded by those of the Russian empire. Many other local posts, however, survive in all parts of the empire ; and their stamps have peculiarities which are eminently curious. Some bear the arms, as in the case of Finland, of a province or of a great town. Others, and the greater part, bear symbolic and curious emblems: at Kherson, a wheatsheaf, a scythe, and a rake ; at Elizabethgrad, an open book, sheaves, a scythe, and a plume of feathers interlaced ; at Tamboff, a beehive; at Bogorodsk, Saint George on horseback. The varieties of Russian local stamps are so great, and some of them so scarce, as to cause to the ardent*~~

~~*4 Bulletin de la Société francaise de Timbrologie, 1875, No. 1; Rothschild, op. cit., pp. 251-266.*~~

~~*5 Gray, Illustrated Catalogue of Postage Stamps, 6th ed., pp. 1-9 and 79-82; Rothschild, ut supra.*~~

~~*6 Gray, Illustrated Catalogue, 6th ed., p. 167.*~~

~~*In Rus-*~~

~~***s***~~

~~***I***~~

~~*In 1863 and 1864 the armorial eagle Hungary,*~~

~~***ae***~~

collector many a heartache. M. Koprowski has of late come to his solace by devoting a volume to their history. Stamp — collecting has for some years past possessed a literature large enough to fill a respectable bookcase ; it bids fair ere long to need a large library for its storage. Of Russian stamps, general and local together, the total number of types exceeded 135 up to the year 1875.

The table (XXV.) which follows will give the reader the chrono- logical sequence of postage-stamps in all parts of the world.

Countries. Year. Countries.

Roman States, Parma, Modena, Brunswick, Thurn and Taxis post-district, | Netherlands, Luxemburg, Isle of Réunion.

Portugal, Cape of Good Hope, Tasmania.

1840 | United Kingdoin. Zurich, Brazil. Geneva. ; Basel,St Petersburg (experimen- | tal), Finland (envelopes), New | 1853 York 1 (tentatively), St Louis.

1846 Rhode Island. 1854 | Norway, British India, Philip- 1847 | United States, Mauritius (?).2 pines, West Australia. 1848 , Russia (envelopes).? 1855 | Sweden, Bremen, Cuba, Porto 1849| France, Belgium, Bavaria, Rico, South Australia, New Vaud, Winterthur, Tuscany, + Zealand. ' s New South Wales. 1856 | Mecklenburg Schwerin, Fin 1850 | Austrian empire, Italy, Prussia, | land (adhesives), Uruguay. | Saxony, Schleswig — Holstein, | 1857 Liibeck (?),8 Ionian Isles, Rou-

mania, Russia (adhesive stamps), Mexico, New Bruns- wick, Newfoundland, Ceylon, St Helena, Natal.

Naples, Poland, Moldavia, Nova Scotia, Buenos Ayres, Argentine, Peru.9

Spain, Switzerland, Hanover, Baden (?), British Guiana (®), Victoria (2.5

~~*1851 | Baden, Wiirtemberg, Denmark, Oldenburg, Canada, Trinidad, || 1858 Chili,é Sind (tentatively)," Sandwich Islands (?).*~~

~~*Po T= Por*~~

~~*Countries.*~~

~~*t*~~

~~*1*~~

~~*Year.| Countries. ||Year.*~~

~~*1859 | Sicily, Romagna, Hamburg, St || 1866 | Servia, Honduras, _ Virgin Lucia, Bahainas, New Gran- Islands, Shanghai, Kashinir, ada, Venezuela. Deccan, Sarawak.*~~

~~*1860 | Poland, Malta, Jamaica, Prince | 1867 | Heligoland, St Salvador, Guad- EdwardIsland, Dutch West In- alajara, Bolivia, Malacca, dies, Liberia, New Caledonia. | South African Republic.*~~

~~*1861 | Greece, Bergedorf, British Col- | 1868 | Azores, Madeira, Orange River, umbia, St Vincent, Nevis, Fernando Po.*~~

~~*Sierra Leone, Queensland. 1869 | Gambia, St Thomas, Angola.*~~

~~*1862} Roumania, Livonia, San Do-|| 1870) St Christopher, Paraguay. mingo, Antigua, Nicaragua, || 1871 | Guatemala, Japan.*~~

~~*Costa Rica, United States of || 1872 | Portuguese Indies, Persia, Fiji. Colombia. 1873 | Iceland, Dutch Guiana, Cura-*~~

~~*1863 | Turkey, Turk's Islands. coa, Cabul.*~~

~~*1864 | Mecklenburg -Strelitz, Dutch || 1874| Montenegro, Dominica, Lagos East Indies. (Gold Coast).*~~

~~*1865 | Vancouver, Bermuda, Egypt.10 || 1875 | Punjab.*~~

~~The extent of the commercial traffic which has so rapidly grown Stamp- out of the increasing taste for collecting postage stamps is marked ¢ollect- (sufficiently for our purposes) by a record of three facts: (1) the ing,~~

~~ageregate number of manuals, periodicals, and current catalogues relating thereto, in English, French, and German alone, exceeds seventy ; (2) for a collection of postage stamps, made by Sir Daniel Cooper (of Australia) between 1862 and 1878, £3000 sterling was given in the last-named year by M. Philippe de Ferrari; (3) the Galliera collection at Paris is said, upon credible authority, to have cost, up to 1883, in acquisition and arrangement together no less a sum than £57,600 (1,440,000 francs). Next to these two collections ranks that of M. A. de Rothschild. (EH. ED.)~~

~~POTASSIUM METALS. Under this heading we treat of potassium, rubidium, and cesium ; Soprum and Liruium, being less closely allied to potassium, have special articles devoted to them.~~

~~Potassium.—The three metals under consideration are all very widely diffused throughout nature; but only potassium is at all abundant, and therefore we begin with it. The richest natural store is in the ocean, which, according to Boguslawski's calculation (in his Oceanographie) of its total volume and the present writer's analysis of sea water, contains potassium equal to 1141 times 10" tons of sulphate, K,SO,. This inexhaustible store, however, is not much drawn upon at present; the "'salt-gardens" on the coast of France have lost their industrial importance as potash-pro- ducers, if not otherwise, since the rich deposits at Stassfurt in Germany have come to be so largely worked. These deposits, in addition to common salt, include the following minerals :—sylvine, KCl; carnallite, KCl. MgCl, + 6H,O (transparent deliquescent crystals, often red with diffused oxide of iron); kainite, K,SO,.MgSO,.MgCl, + 6H,O (hard crystalline masses, permanent in the air); kieserite (a hydrated sulphate of magnesia which is only very slowly dissolved by water); besides boracite, anhydrite (CaSO,), and other minor components lying outside the subject of this article. The potassium minerals named are not confined to Stassfurt ; far larger quantities of sylvine and kainite are met with in the salt-mines of Kalusz in the eastern Carpathian Mountains, but they have not yet come to be worked so extensively. The Stassfurt potassiferous minerals owe their industrial~~

~~importance to their solu- bility in water and consequent ready amenability to chemical operations. In point of absolute mass they are insignificant compared with the abundance and variety of potassiferous silicates, which occur everywhere in the earth's crust ; orthoclase (potash felspar) and potash mica may be quoted as prominent examples. Such potassiferous silicates~~

~~1 A provisional issue by the post-office prior to legislation. * According to Gray, 1852; according to Earle (Stamp-Collector's Mag., xi. 168 sq.), 1850. 4 i Embossed arms, crown, and post-horns on a circular dish. According to Gray, 1849 (Cat., 6th ed.); according to both Earle (Stamp-Collector's Mag., xi. 168) and A. de Rothschild (Hist. de la Poste, ii. 208), 1876. : According to De Rothschild (23., 215), 1851. fk Rothschild's date is 1852 (p. 218). 7 By Sir Bartle Frere. Both Gray and Rothschild date 1859. Earle (ut supra) describes a Liibeck stamp of 1847. 9 Rothschild's date is 1857.~~

~~are found in almost all rocks, if not as normal at least as subsidiary components ; and their disintegration furnishes, directly or indirectly, the soluble potassium salts which are found in all fertile soils. These salts are sucked up by the roots of plants, and by taking part in the process of nutrition are partly converted into oxalate, tartrate, and other organic salts, which, when the plants are burned, assume the form of carbonate, K,CO,. It is a remarkable fact that, although in a given soil the soda may pre-dominate largely over the potash salts, the plants growing in the soil take up the latter by preference: in the ashes of most land plants the potash (calculated as K,O) forms upwards of 90 per cent. of the total alkali (K,O or Na,O).¥ The proposition holds, in its general sense, for sea plants likewise. In ocean water the ratio of soda (Na,O) to potash (K,O) is 100 : 3:23 (Dittmar) ; in kelp it is, on the average, 100 : 5-26 (Richardson). Ashes particularly rich in potash are those of burning nettles, wormwood (Artemisia Absin- thium), tansy (Tanacetum vulgare), fumitory (Fumaria officinals), tobacco. In fact the ashes of herbs generally are richer in potash than those of the trunks and branches of trees ; yet, for obvious reasons, the latter are of greater industrial importance as sources of carbonate of potash. Carbonate of Potash (K,CO,) in former times used to be made exclusively from wood-ashes, and even now the industry survives in Canada, Russia, Hungary, and other countries, where wood is used as the~~

~~*general fuel. In some places—for instance, in certain districts of Hungary—wood is burned expressly for the purpose; as a rule, how- ever, the ashes produced in households form the raw material. The ashes are lixiviated with water, which dissolves all the carbonate of potash along with more or less of chloride, sulphate, and a little silicate, while the earthy phosphates and carbonates and other insoluble matters remain as a residue. The clarified solution is evaporated to dryness in iron basins and the residue cal- cined to burn away particles of charcoal and half-burned organic matter. In former times this calcination used to be effected in iron pots, whence the name "potashes" was given to the product ; at present it is generally conducted — in reverberatory furnaces on soles of cast-iron. The cal-*~~

~~*cined product goes into commerce as crude potashes. The*~~

~~*10 Gray (6th ed., p. 258). Both Rothschild and Earle give the date as 1866.*~~
~~*11 See Stamp-Collector's Magazine, 1878.*~~

~~*12 Compare the interesting paper by C. Bischoff in the Journ. f. Pract. Chem., vol. xlvii. p. 198 (1849).*~~

~~*PO mas os FU*~~

~~*composition of this substance is very variable,—the per- centage of real K,CO, varying from 40 to 80 per cent. The following analysis of an American "potashes" is quoted as an example.*~~

~~*Carbonate of potaen " <./0 8 I Vittetge eestor sconce ene 4°5*~~

~~*a Soames 2°3| Insoluble matter …... el) Sulphate of potash …... 14°4 == Chloride of potassium… 3°6 98-9*~~

~~*Crude potashes is used for the manufacture of glass, and after being causticized for the making of soft soap. For many other purposes it is too impure and must be refined, which is done by treating the crude product with the mini- mum of cold water required to dissolve the carbonate, removing the undissolved part (which consists chiefly of sulphate), and evaporating the clear liquor to dryness in an iron pan. The purified*~~

~~carbonate (which still contains most of the chloride of the raw material and other im- purities) is known as “ pearl ashes.”~~

~~Large quantities of carbonate used to be manufactured from the aqueous residue left in the distillation of beetroot spirit, z.¢., indirectly from beetroot molasses. The liquors are evaporated to dryness and the residue is ignited to obtain a very impure carbonate, which is purified by methods founded on the different solubilities of the several components. Such potashes, however, is exceptionally rich in soda: Grandeau found in crude ashes from 16 to 21 per cent. of potash and from 23 to 50 of soda carbonate. This industry would have expired by this time were it not that the beetroot spirit residues are worked for tri- methylamine (see Mrruyz, vol. xvi. p. 196), and the carbonate thus obtained incidentally. Most of the car- bonate of potash which now occurs in commerce is made from Stassfurt chloride by means of an adaptation of the ‘“‘Leblane process” for the conversion of common salt into soda ash (see Soprum).~~

~~Chemically pure carbonate of potash is best prepared by the ignition of pure bicarbonate (see below) in iron or (better) in silver or platinum vessels, or else by the calcina- tion of pure bitartrate (see TarTaric AcipD). The latter operation furnishes an intimate mixture of the carbonate with charcoal, from which the carbonate is extracted by lixiviation with water and filtration. The filtrate is evaporated to dryness (in iron or platinum) and the residue fully dehydrated by gentle ignition. The salt is thus obtained as a white porous mass, fusible at a red heat (838° C., Carnelley) into a colourless liquid, which freezes into a white opaque mass. The dry salt is very hygro- scopic; it deliquesces into an oily solution (“oleum tar- tari”) in ordinary air. 100 parts of water dissolve—~~

~~at 0° C. 20° C. 135° C. (boiling point of saturated solution)~~

~~83 94 205~~

~~parts. Carbonate of potash, being insoluble in strong alco- hol (and many other liquid organic compounds), is much used for the dehydration of the corresponding aqueous pre- parations. From its very concentrated solution in hot water the salt crystallizes on cooling with a certain pro- portion of water; but these crystals are little known even to chemists. Pure carbonate~~

~~of potash is being constantly used in the laboratory, as a basic substance generally, for the disintegration of silicates, and as a precipitant. The industrial preparation serves for the making of flint-glass, of potash soap (soft soap), and of caustic potash. It is also used int medicine, where its old name of "sal tartari" is not yet quite obsolete.~~

~~Bicarbonate of Potash ($K_2OCO_3 + H_2OCO_3 = 2KHCO_3$) is obtained when carbonic acid is passed through a cold solution of the ordinary carbonate as long as it is absorbed. If silicate is present, it likewise is converted into bicar- bonate with elimination of silica, which must be filtered~~

~~off. The filtrate is evaporated at a temperature not exceeding 60° or at most 70° C.; after sufficient concen- tration it deposits on cooling anhydrous crystals of the salt, while the chloride of potassium, which may be present as an impurity, remains mostly in the mother-liquor ; the rest is easily removed by repeated recrystallization. If an absolutely pure preparation is wanted, it is best to follow Wohler and start with the "black flux" produced by the ignition of pure bitartrate. The flux is moistened with water and exposed toa current of carbonic acid, which, on account of the condensing action of the charcoal, is absorbed with great avidity. The rest explains itself. Bicarbonate of potash forms large monoclinic prisms, permanent in the air. 100 parts of water dissolve—~~

~~at 0° 10° 20° — 60° 70°~~

~~19°61 23°23 26°91 41°35 45°24 parts of salt. At higher temperatures than 70° the solu- tion loses carbonic acid quickly. The solution is far less violently alkaline to the taste and test-papers than that of the normal carbonate. Hence it is preferred in medicine as an anti-acid. When the dry salt is treated it breaks up below redness into normal carbonate, carbonic acid, and water.~~

~~Caustic Potash (Hydrate of Potassium), KHO.—It has been known for a long time that a solution of carbonate of potash becomes more intensely alkaline, acts more strongly on the epidermis, and dissolves fats more promptly after it has been treated with slaked lime. It used to be supposed~~

~~that the latent fire in the quick-lime went into the "mild" alkali and made it "caustic," until Black, about the middle of last century, showed that the chemical difference between the two preparations is that the mild is a compound of carbonic acid and the caustic one of water with the same base (potash),—the causticizing action of the lime consisting in this, that it withdraws the carbonic acid from the alkali and substitutes its own water. Add to this that the exchange takes place only in the presence of a sufficient proportion of water, and that it is undone if the mixture is allowed to get concentrated by evaporation beyond a certain (uncertain) point, and you have a full theory of the process. A good concentration is twelve parts of water for one of carbonate of potash; the lime is best employed in the shape of a semi-fluid paste, made by slaking quick-lime with three parts of water poured on at a time. The alkali solution is heated to boiling in a cast-iron vessel (industrially by means of steam-pipes) and the lime paste added in instalments until a sample of the filtered mixture no longer effervesces on addition of an excess of acid. The mixture is then allowed to settle in the iron vessel, access of air being prevented as much as practicable, and the clear liquor is drawn off by means of a syphon. The remaining mud of carbonate and hydrate of lime is washed, by decantation, with small instalments of hot water to recover at least part of the alkali diffused throughout it, but this process must not be continued too long or else some of the lime passes into solution. The united liquors are boiled down in an iron vessel until the desired degree of concentration is reached. In obedience to an old tradition, the concentration is habitually continued until the specific gravity of the cold ley is 1°333, which is a rather inconveniently high degree of strength for most purposes, but in the case of the ordinary commercial article offers this advantage, that any sulphate of potash which may be present as an impurity crystallizes out completely on standing (Liebig). If solid'caustic potash is wanted, the ley (after removal of the deposit of sulphate, é&c.) is trans- ferred toa silver dish, and the evaporation continued until, instead of steam, the heavy vapour of KHO itself is seen to go off. The residual oily liquid is then poured out into~~

~~a polished iron tray, or into an iron mould to produce the customary form of "sticks," and allowed to cool. The solidified preparation must be at once~~

~~bottled up, because it attracts the moisture and carbonic acid of the air with great avidity and deliquesces. According to the present writer's experience (Journ. Soc. Chem. Ind., May 1884), nickel basins are far better adapted than iron basins for the concentration of potash ley. The latter begin to oxidize before the ley has come up to the traditional strength, while nickel is not attacked so long as the percentage of real KHO is short of 60. For the fusion of the dry hydrate nickel vessels cannot be used ; in fact, even silver is perceptibly attacked as soon as all the excess of water is away ; absolutely pure KHO can be produced only in gold vessels. Regarding the action of potash on platinum, see PLATINUM (supra, p. 191). Glass and (to a less extent) porcelain are attacked by caustic potash ley, slowly in the cold, more readily on boiling.~~

~~Frozen caustic potash forms an opaque, white, stone-like mass of dense granular fracture; specific gravity =2°1. Tt fuses considerably below and is perceptibly volatile at a red heat. It is extremely soluble in even cold water, and in any proportion of water on boiling. The solution is intensely "alkaline" to test-papers. It readily dissolves the epidermis of the skin and many other kinds of animal tissue,—hence the well-known application of the "sticks" in surgery. A dilute potash ley readily emulsionizes fats, and on boiling "saponifies" them with formation of a soap and of glycerin. Caustic potash is the very type of an energetic (mono-acid) basic hydrate (see CHEMISTRY, vol. v. pp. 486, 488).~~

~~According to Tiinnermann's and Schifi's determinations, as calculated by Gerlach, the relation in pure potash ley between specific gravity at 15° C. and percentage strength is as follows :—~~

~~Specific Gravity, if | Specific Gravity, if~~

~~on at percentage refers to | HO iO. percentage refers to | KO. | KHO. _ 0. |_KHO. 0 1:000 1:000 25 1°285 1°230 1 1°010 1°009 30 1°355 1°288 10 1:099 | 1°083 | 40 1°504 | 1°411 | 15 1-154 | 1128 50 1-660 | 1°539 20 1°215 WP | 60 1°810 1°667~~

~~All commercial caustic potash is contaminated with ex- cess of water (over and above that in the KHO) and with carbonate and chloride of potassium ; sulphate, as a rule, is absent. Absolutely pure potash has perhaps never~~

been seen ; @ preparation sufficing for most purposes of the analyst 1s obtained by digesting the commercial article in strong (85 per cent. by weight) pure alcohol. The hydrate KHO dissolves in the alcohol of the solvent ; the chloride and the carbonate unite with the water and form a lower layer or magma, from which the alcoholic solution of the KHO is decanted off, to be evaporated to dryness and fused in silver vessels (" potasse & 'alcool ").

The metal (potassium) has been known to exist since Lavoisier, but was first obtained as a substance by Hum- phry Davy in 1807. He prepared it from the hydrate by electrolysis. Gay-Lussac and Thénard subsequently found that this substance can be reduced to the metallic state more easily by passing its vapour over white hot metallic

iron ; but even their method as a mode of preparation was'

soon superseded by Brunner's, who, to the surprise of his contemporaries, produced the metal by simply distilling its carbonate with charcoal—applying an old-established principle of ordinary metallurgy. Brunner's process is used to the present day for the production of the metal.

One of those cylindrical, neckless, wrought-iron bottles which

serve for the storing of quicksilver is made into a reto i rt by takin out the screw-plug at the centre of one of the round calls =

o

4

PxOr Tas ers Usa

substituting for it a short, ground-in, iron outlet pipe. This retort is charged with a black flux made from a mixture of pure and crude bitartrate so adjusted that the flux contains as nearly as possible the proportion of free carbon demanded by the equation K,CO,+2C=2K+3CO. It is then suspended horizontally within a powerful wind-furnace, constructed for coke as fuel. At first a mixture of coke and charcoal is applied, to produce

~~the right tem- perature for chasing away the moisture and enabling one to, so to say, varnish over the retort with borax and thus protect it against the subsequent intense heat. After these preliminaries coke alone is used and the fire urged on to, and maintained at, its maximum pitch, when potassium vapour soon begins to make its appearance. The condensation of this vapour, however, demands special methods, because even the cold metal would quickly oxidize in the air and act most violently on liquid water. Brunner used to condense the vapour by passing it into a small copper vessel charged with rock- oil (see PARAFFIN, Vol. xviii. p. 237), in which liquid the condensed metal sinks to the bottom and thus escapes the air. Donné and Maresca dispense with rock-oil altogether ; they receive the vapour in a dry condenser made of two flat rectangular trays of wrought iron which fit closely upon each other, enclosing a space such as might be used as a mould for casting a thin cake of any ordinary inetal. This condenser has a short neck into which the outlet pipe of the retort fits; and the pipe must be as short as possible, be- cause it is essential (Donné and Maresca) that the hot vapour pass abruptly from its original high to a low temperature, to evade a certain range of medium temperatures at which the metal com- bines with carbonic oxide into a black solid, which may obstruct the outlet pipe. The formation of this bye-product cannot be altogether avoided ; hence a long borer is inserted into the con- denser from the first to enable one to clear the throat of the retort atamoment's notice. The condenser is kept as far as possible cold by the constant application to it of damp cloths. As soon as the distillation is finished the (still hot) condenser is plunged into a bucketful of rock-oil, to cool it down, the mould opened (under the oil), and the now solid metal taken out. The crude metal is always contaminated with some of the black solid and other mechanical impurities. 'To remove these the best method is to redistil it from out of a small iron retort and condense the vapour in rock- oil according to Brunner's original plan. The purified metal is soft enough to be moulded (under rock-oil) into globular pieces, which are preserved in bottles filled to the top with the protecting liquid. But even this does not prevent gradual oxidation ; bright metallic potassium can be maintained in this condition only by preserving it in a sealed-up glass tube within a vacuum or in an atmosphere of hydrogen or some other inert gas. The black solid above referred to is a most dangerous substance. When exposed to the air it turns red and then explodes either spontaneously or on the slightest provocation~~

~~by friction or pressure. Even if kept under rock-oil it gradually becomes explosive. The distillation of potassium, in fact, is a dangerous operation, which had better be left in the hands of specialists.~~

~~Pure potassium is a bluish-white metal ; but on exposure to ordinary air it at once draws a film of oxide, and on prolonged exposure deliquesces into a solution of hydrate and carbonate. At temperatures below 0° C. it is pretty hard and brittle ; at the ordinary temperature it is so soft that it can be kneaded between the fingers and cut with a blunt knife ; specific gravity =0°865. It fuses at 62°°5 C. (Bunsen), and at 720° to 730° C. (Carnelley and Williams), ¢.c., considerably below its boiling point, begins to distil with formation of an intensely green vapour. When heated in air it fuses and then takes fire and burns into a mixture of oxides. Most remarkable, and charac- teristic for the group it represents, is its action on water. A pellet of potassium when thrown on water at once bursts out into a violet flame and the burning metal fizzes about on the surface, its extremely high temperature precluding absolute contact with the liquid, except at the very end, when the last remnant, through loss of temperature, is wetted by the water and bursts with explosive violence. What really goes on chemically is that the metal decom- poses the water thus, K+ H,O=KHO+H, and that the hydrogen catches fire, the violet colour of the flame being due to the potassium vapour diffused throughout it. Similar to that on water is its action on alcohol: the alcohol is converted into ethylate, while hydrogen escapes, K+C,H,.OH=C,H,.OK +H, this time without inflam- mation. So strong is the basilous character of the element that, in opposition to it, even ammonia behaves like an~~

~~acid. When the oxide-free metal is heated gently within the dry gas it is gradually transformed into a blue liquid, which on cooling freezes into a yellowish-brown or flesh- coloured solid. This body is known as “ potassamide,” KNH,. When heated by itself to redness the amide is decomposed into ammonia and nitride of potassium, 3NH,K =NK,+2NH,. The nitride is an almost black solid. Both it and the amide decompose water readily with for- mation of ammonia and caustic potash. Potassium at temperatures from 200° to 400° C. “occludes” hydrogen gas, as palladium~~

~~*does (see " Palladium," under PLatinum, supra, p. 193). The highest degree of saturation corre- sponds approximately to the formula K,H for the "alloy," or to about 126 volumes of gas (measured cold) for one volume of metal. In a vacuum or in sufficiently dilute hydrogen the compound from 200° upwards loses hydro- gen, until the tension of the free gas has arrived at the maximum value characteristic of that temperature (Troost*~~

~~*and Hautefeuille).*~~

~~*Potassium Oxides, singularly, can be produced only from the metal, and another remarkable fact is that 'the one with which all chemical students imagine they are so familiar—namely, "anhydrous potash," K,O—is little more than a fiction. According to Vernon Harcourt, when the metal is heated cautiously, first in dry air and then in dry oxygen, it is transformed into a white mass (K,0, 2), which, however, at once takes up more oxygen with formations ultimately of a yellow powdery tetroxide (K,O,), fusible at a red heat without decomposition. Ata white heat it loses oxygen and leaves a residue of lower oxides (KO ?). When heated in hydrogen it is reduced to ordinary potash, KHO. When dissolved in excess of dilute acid it yields a mixed solution of the respective potash salt and peroxide of hydrogen, with abundant evolution of oxygen gas.*~~

~~*Potassium Salts. —There is only one series of these known,— namely, the salts produced by the union of potash (KHO) with acids.*~~

~~*Chloride, KCl.—This salt (commercial name, "muriate of potash") is at present being produced in immense quantities at Stassfurt from the so-called " Abraumsalze." For the purpose of the manu- facturer of muriate these are assorted into a raw material contain- ing approximately in 100 parts—55-65 of carnallite (representing 16 parts of chloride of potassium); 20-25 of common salt ; 15-20 of kieserite, a peculiar, very slowly soluble sulphate of magnesia, MgSo,.H,O; 2-4 of tachhydrite (CaCl,.2MgCl,+12H,0); and minor components. This mixture is now wrought mainly in two ways. (1) The salt is dissolved in water with the help of steam, and the solution is cooled down to from 60° to 70°, when a quantity of impure common salt crystallizes out, which is re- moved. The decanted ley deposits on cooling and standing a 70 per cent. muriate of potash, which is purified, if desired, by washing it by displacement with*~~

~~cold water. Common salt prin- cipally goes into solution, and the percentage may thus be brought up to from 80 to 95. The mother-liquor from the 70 per cent. muriate is evaporated down further, the common salt which separates out in the heat removed as it appears, and the suffi- ciently concentrated liquor allowed to crystallize, when almost pure carnallite separates out, which is easily decomposed into its components (see infra). (2) Ziervogel and Tuchen's method. The crude salt is ground up and then heated in concentrated solution of chloride of magnesium with mechanical agitation. The carnallite principally dissolves and crystallizes out relatively pure on cooling. The mother-liquor is used for a subsequent extraction of fresh raw salt. The carnallite produced is dissolved in hot water and the solution allowed to cool, when it deposits a coarse granular muriate of potash containing up to 99 per cent. of the pure substance. The undissolved residue produced in either process consists chiefly of kieserite and common salt. It is worked up either for Epsom salt and common salt, or for sulphate of soda and chloride of magnesium. The potassiferous bye- products are utilized for the manufacture of manures.~~

~~Chemically pure chloride of potassium is most conveniently pre- pared from pure perchlorate (see infra) by dioxygenating it in a platinum basin at the lowest temperature and then fusing the residue in a well-covered platinum crucible. The fused product solidifies on cooling into a colourless glass. Chloride of potassium dissolves in water and crystallizes from the solution in anhydrous~~

~~cubes. 100 parts of water dissolve— at 0° 10° 20° 50° 100° C. 29°2 320 34:7 42°8 56°6~~

~~parts of the salt. When a sufficiency of hydrochloric-acid gas is passed into the solution the salt is completely precipitated as a fine powder. If the original solution contained chloride of mag- nesium or calcium or sulphate of potash, all impurities remain in the mother-liquor (the SO; as KHSO,), and can be removed by~~

~~washing the precipitate with strong hydrochloric acid. Chloride of potassium fuses at 738° C. (Carnelley), and at a red heat vola- tilizes rather~~

~~abundantly.~~

~~Chlorate, KClO,.— This industrially important salt was dis- covered in 1786 by Berthollet, who correctly designated it as "»eroxidized muriate." Chlorine gas is largely absorbed by cold caustic-potash ley with formation of chloride and hypochlorite, 2KHO+Cl,=KCl1+KClO+H,0. When the mixed solution is boiled it suffers, strictly speaking, a complicated decomposition, which, however, in the main comes to the same as if the hypo- chlorite broke up into chloride and chlorate, 3KClO=2KC1+ KC10,. Hence chlorate of potash is easily produced by passing chlorine into hot caustic- potash ley so as at once to realize the change, 6KHO +3Cl,=3H,0 +5KC1+KC10;; and this method used to be followed industrially until Liebig pointed out that five-sixths of the potash can be saved by first substituting milk of lime, Ca(OH),=2caOH, for the potash ley and from the mixed solution of lime-salts precipitating, so to say, the chloric acid as potash salt by adding 1KCl for every 1caClO, present, concentrating by evaporation, and allowing the KCl10, to crystallize out. This is the present industrial process. For the technical details we must refer to the handbooks of chemistry. Suffice it to say that in practice about 1°03 times KCl are used for every 1caClO;, and that the salt produced is almost chemically pure after one recrys- tallization. By repeated recrystallization every trace of impurities is easily removed. The crystals are colourless transparent mono- clinic plates, which, nnless formed very slowly, are very thin, so as often to exhibit the Newton's colours. 100 parts of water dissolve—~~

~~at 0° 15° 50° 104° (on boiling) 3°3 6 19 60~~

~~parts of the salt (Gay-Lussac). The salt is almost insoluble in strong alcohol. Itis permanent in theair. It fuses at 359°C. (Carnelley), and at about 18° above the temperature of its formation the liquid gives off oxygen with evolution of heat, and formation ultimately of chloride (and oxygen). The salt accordingly, in opposition to any combustible matter with which it may be mixed, behaves at the same time as a store of highly-condensed loosely-combined oxygen and of potential heat. Hence its manifold applications in artillery and pyrotechnics are easily understood. To give one example of the readiness with which it acts as a burning agent: a mixture of it and sulphur when struck with a hammer explodes loudly, the mechanical~~

blow sufficing to produce locally the temperature neces- sary for starting the reaction. When the salt was still a novelty it was tried as a substitute for the nitre in gunpowder. Such powder, however, proved too good to be safe. More recently a mixture of 49 parts of the chlorate, 23 of sugar, and 28 of prussiate of potash was recommended by Pohl as a preferable substitute for gunpowder, but this powder has never come into actual use any- where. We must not forget to point out that mixtures of chlorate of potash and combustible substances must on no account be made in a mortar; this would be sure to lead to dangerous explosions. The several ingredients must be powdered separately and only then be mixed together on a sheet of paper or on a table, all unnecessary pressure or friction being carefully avoided.

The decomposition of chlorate of potash by heat is greatly facili- tated by adinixture of even small proportions of certain solid oxides, ¢.g., oxide of copper, of iron, or of manganese. The oxygen, in the case of binoxide of manganese, for instanee, comes off below the fusing point of the salt. Hence a salt contaminated with even a small proportion of heavy metallic chlorate cannot (in general) be fused without decomposition. The writer observed this anomaly with a commercial chlorate which happened to contain about one half per cent. of chlorate of zinc. The aqueous solution of the salt is neutral and bears prolonged boiling without decomposition. On acidification with dilute sulphuric aeid it assumes the reactions of a solution of chloric acid, 7.¢., of a powerful but readily controllable oxydant. In this capacity it is used in calico-printing as a "discharge." In the same industry it serves for making the chlorate of soda needed for the production of aniline black. In the chemical laboratory it is in constant requisition as a source of oxygen and as an oxidizing agent. In the hands of Marignac it served for the determination of the important ratio KC]: 30.

Perchlorate, KC1O0,.—The decomposition of chlorate of potash by heat, if catalytic agents like MnO,, &c., are absent, proceeds by two stages. In the first the salt breaks up thus, 2KClO,=KC1+0, + KC10,; in the second the perchlorate at a higher teniperature is decomposed into chloride and oxygen. The termination of the first stage is marked by a slackening in the evolution of the oxygen and by the residual salt (which, at the beginning, is a thin fluid) becoming pasty. From the mixture KC]+KCI1O, the clioride is

~~*extracted by lixiviation with successive instalments of cold water. The residual perchlorate is very easily purified by recrystallization (compare pure chloride of potassium, swpra). Perchlorate of potash dissolves in 88 parts of water of 10°C., and in far less of boiling water. It is absolutely insoluble in absolute alcohol. It begins to give off its oxygen at about 400° C., which is below its fusing point.*~~

~~*592*~~

~~*The salt has been recommended as a substitute for chlorate in pyrotechnic mixtures, because it contains more oxygen, and yet, on account of its greater stability, is a less dangerous ingredient. Bromide, KBr.—This salt is formed when bromine is dissolved in caustic-potash ley. The reaction is quite analogous to that go-*~~

~~*ing on in the case of chlorine ; only the hypobromite (KBrO) first*~~

~~*roduced is far less stable than hypochlorite, and vanishes after short heating. The addition of bromine is continued until the liquid is permanently yellow and retains its colour after short heat- ing. The solution is then evaporated to dryness and the bromate decomposed by cautious heating. A small portion of the bromate breaks up into K,0+ Br, +50; hence the residual bromide is con-*~~

~~*taminated with a little free alkali; but this is easily set right by*~~

~~*neutralizing its solution with hydrobromic acid. The salt crystal-*~~

~~*lizes in colourless transparent cubes, easily soluble in water. It*~~

~~*is used in medicine for quieting the nerves,—to cure sleeplessness, for instance ; also (internally) as a local anesthetic preparatory to operations on the larynx or the eye. The dose of the pure (KI free) salt for adults can safely be raised to 2 grammes (about 30 grains). It is also used in photography. ;*~~

~~*Iodide, K1.—Of the very numerous methods which have been recommended for the preparation of this important salt the simplest (and probably the*~~

~~best) is to dissolve in a caustic-potash ley (which~~

~~is dilute enough to hold the rather difficultly soluble iodate KIO, in solution) enough iodine to produce a permanent yellow colour~~

~~(the iodine passes at once into 5KI+KI0,; the hypo body KIO has no existence practically) and to deoxidize the iodate, which is done most conveniently by adding a sufficiency of powdered char- coal to the solution, evaporating to dryness in an iron vessel, and heating the residue. The oxygen goes off as CO, at a lower tem- perature than that which would be needed for its expulsion as oxygen gas. The residue is dissolved, and the solution filtered and evaporated to crystallization. The salt comes out in colourless transparent cubes, very easily soluble in even cold water. The commercial salt forms opaque milk-white crystals, which, as a matter of habit, are preferred to the clear salt, although they are produced by causing the salt to crystallize from a strougly alkaline solution and by drying the crystals (finally) in a stream of hot air, and although through the former operation they are at least liable to contain carbonate. Iodide of potassium acts far more powerfully ou the human system than bromide, and therefore is administered in smaller doses. It is used against skin-diseases, and also for eliminating the mercury which 'settles in the system after long-continued administration of mercurial medicines. It is also used, far more largely than the bromide, in photography. See PHoTo- GRAPHY, passim.~~

~~Sulphate (K,SO,) used to be extracted from kainite, but the process is now given up because the salt can be produced cheaply enough from the muriate by decomposing it with its exact equi- valent of oil of vitriol and calcining the residue. To purify the erude product it is dissolved in hot water and the solution filtered and allowed to cool, when the bulk of the dissolved salt crystallizes out with characteristic promptitude. The very beautiful (anhydrous) crystals have as a rule the habitus of a double six-sided pyramid, but really belong to the rhombic system. They are transparent, very hard, and absolutely permanent in the air. They have a bitter~~

~~salty taste. 100 parts of water dissolyve— at 0° 128 100° C. 8°36 10 26~~

~~parts of the salt. Sulphate of potash fuses at a strong red heat, and at this temperature volatilizes, for an alkaline salt, rather slowly. The chloride,~~

~~weight for weight, volatilizes at ten times the rate (Bunsen). Sulphate of potash used to be employed in medicine, but is now obsolete. The crude salt is used occasionally in the manufacture of glass.~~

~~Bisulphate (KHSO,) is readily produced by fusing thirteen parts of the powdered normal salt with eight parts of oil of vitriol. It dissolves in three parts of water of 0° C. The solution behaves pretty much as if its two congeners, K,SO, and H,SO,, were present side by side of each other uncombined. An excess of alcohol, in fact, precipitates normal sulphate (with little bisulphate) and free acid remains in solution. Similar is the behaviour of the fused dry salt at a dull red heat; it acts on silicates, titamates, &c., as if it were sulphuric acid raised beyond its natural boiling point. Hence its frequent application in analysis as a disintegrating agent.~~

~~For the following potash salts we refer to the articles named :—~~

~~Chromates, see CHROMIUM; Cyanide and Ferrocyanide, Prussi>~~

~~ACID ; Chloroplatinate, PLATINUM (supra, p. 192); Nitrate, Nrrro- GEN (vol. xvii. p. 518); Phosphates, PHospHorus (vol. xviii. pp. 818-1 9); Oxalates, Oxatic Acip; Sulphides and Sulphites, SULPHUR; Silicates, GLAss (vol. x. p. 655 sq.) and Sinica; Tartrates, TARTARIC Act. For potash salts not named, see the handbooks of chemistry.~~

~~Lubidium and Cxsium.—When Bunsen and Kirchhoff~~

~~in 1860 applied their method of spectrum analysis to the alkali salts which they had extracted analytically from Diirkheim mineral water, they obtained a spectrum which,~~

~~PoTA®S © rus~~

~~in addition to the lines characteristic for sodium, potassium,~~

~~and lithium, exhibited two blue lines which were foreign to any other spectrum they had ever seen. They accord- ingly concluded that these lines must be owing to the presence of a new alkali metal, which they called "cesium." Bunsen at once resumed the preparation of the mixed alka- line~~

~~*salt with 44,000 litres of Diirkheim water, with the view of isolating the caesium in the form of a pure salt ; and he was more than successful—for the new alkali salt, after elimination of all the ordinary alkali metals, proved to be a mixture of the salts of two new alkali metals, which he succeeded in separating from each other. For one he retained the name already chosen ; the other he called "rubidium," on account of the presence in his spectrum of certain characteristic red lines. Since Bunsen's time these two metals have been discovered in a great many native potassiferous materials—minerals, mineral waters, plant ashes, &c.—but in all cases they form only a small fraction of the alkali, the cesium in general amounting to only a fraction of even the rubidium. One solitary exception to both rules is afforded by a rare mineral called "pollux," which is found only on the island of Elba. Plattner analysed this mineral in 1846 and recognized it as a compound silicate of alumina, oxide of iron, soda, potash, and water ; but his quantitative analysis came up to only 92°75 per cent., and he could not account for the 7:25 per cent. of loss. After Bunsen's discovery Pisani analysed the mineral again, and he found that it contained no potash at all, but, instead of it, a large percentage (34°1) of cxsia. Recalculating Plattner's analy- sis on the assumption that the presumed chloroplatinate of potassium was really chloroplatinate of cesium, he found that the corrected numbers did add up to near 100 and agreed with his own. Rubidium, singularly, is absent from this mineral.*~~

~~*That both rubidium and cesium are contained in sea water might well be taken for granted; but it is worth while to state that Schmidt of Dorpat actually proved the presence of rubidium, and even determined it quantita- tively.*~~

~~*For the preparation of rubidium compounds one of the best materials is a mixture of alkaline salts, which falls as a bye-product in the industrial preparation of carbonate of lithia from lepidolite. A supply of this salt mixture which Bunsen worked up contained 20 per cent. of chloride of rubidium, 33 of chloride of potassium, and 36 of common salt, but very little cesium ; his supply came from the Saxon or Bohemian mineral. The lepidolite of Hebron, Maine, United States, on the other hand, is rich in cesium. Another practically available source for cesium is the mother-*~~

~~*liquor salt of Nauheim in Germany. It yielded to Bottcher 1 per cent. of its weight of the chloroplatinate PtCl,Csp.*~~

~~*Bunsen's method for the extraction of the two rare potassium metals from a given mixture of alkaline salts is founded upon the*~~

~~*different solubility of the several alkaline chloroplatinates. Accord- ing to him 100 parts of water dissolve—*~~

~~*Potassium Rubidium Cxsium at Oc 0°74 0°13 0-024 5 20ne 1-12 0°14 0-079 » 100°C 5°18 0°63 0°377*~~

~~*parts of the several salts, The chloroplatinates of sodium and lithium are easily soluble even in cold water, so that chloride of platinum does not precipitate these two metals at all. Hence, supposing we boil a given mixture of chloroplatinatcs of potassium and (say) rubidium with a quantity of water insufficient to dissolve the whole, part of both salts will dissolve ; but the residual chloro- platinate will be richer in rubidium than the dissolved part. And supposing, on the other hand, we add to a mixed solution of the two chlorides a quantity of chloroplatinic-acid solution insufficient to bring down the whole of both metals, the rubidium will accumu- late in the precipitate and the potassium in the solution. It is also easily understood that, if the amount of reagent added falls short even of that which would be needed by the rubidium if present alone, a very nearly pure PtCl,Rb, may be expected to come down. Any dry chloroplatinate is easily reduced to a mixture of metallic platinum and alkaline chloride by the simple operation of heat- ing in hydrogen to about 800°C. The chloride can be dissolved out, and thus again made anienable to fractional precipitation by*~~

~~*POT—POT*~~

~~*platinum solution, and the platinum be reconverted into reagent by means of aqua regia. Hence the process is not so expensive as it might at first sight appear.*~~

~~*Redtenbacher has worked out an analogous process to Bunsen's, founded upon the different solubility of the three alums—A1.R(SO,.)o + 12H,0. At*~~

~~17° C. 100 parts of water dissolve of the alum of~~

~~Potasstum Cesium~~

~~13°5 0°62 parts. Sodium and lithium alum are very easily soluble in water, and remain dissolved in the first mother-liquor when the mixed alum of K, Rb, and Cs crystallizes out. These three alums are parted by repeated crystallization, and the rare alkalis recovered from their respective alums by precipitation with chloride of platinum.~~

~~The separation of rubidium and cesium offers great difficulties. According to Godeffroy an approximate separation may be effected by dissolving the mixed chlorides in strong hydrochloric acid, and adding a solution of terchloride of antimonyin the same menstruum ; the cxsium (chiefly) comes down as SbCl,+6CsCl; the bulk of the rubidium remains dissolved. The two rare alkali metals are so closely similar to potassium that it will suffice to give a tabular statement of the principal points of difference. By way of intro- duction, however, we may state that rubidium metal was prepared by Bunsen from the black flux obtained by igniting the bitartrate, by Brunner's method for potassium. Metallic cesium, it seems, cannot be thus obtained ; but in 1883 Setterberg made it by the electrolysis ofa fused mixture of the cyanides of cesium and barium.~~

~~Rudidiwm Di,~~

~~Potassium. Rubidium. Cesium. Atomie weights O=16 …...K=39°136 Rb=854 Cs=133°0 Free Metals— Specific gravity …..... 0°S65 1752 1°S8 IMSin Gg POlNts…. oceans) Ome 88°°5 26° to 27° C.~~

~~Volatility increases >—> Hydrates, RHO—Very similar to one another ; the basility increases >—>~~

~~f Vide supra. Permanent in air. Deliquescent. Chlorides, RCl…….~4 Almost insoluble More soluble than KCl. {in alcohol. Soluble in alcohol. Sulphates, RoSOj— 100 parts of water dis- { At— 2°C.§ ? 159 OM Cian comeme > oer sme 10:3 42 ? Carbonates, Eee ae very soluble in water. 100 parts of alcohol dis- ° ” : RGIS case eeeeee At 19°C. 0 sia _ Alums~~

~~*ee decreases >—>*~~

~~*Chloroplatinates (vide supra).*~~

~~*Analysis.—In this section we treat of the detection and determin- ation of alkali metals generally. If the given substance is a solid, a good preliminary test is to heat about one centigramme of it at one end of a fine platinum wire in the flame-mantle of a Bunsen lamp, or in a blow-pipe flame just at the end of the inner cone. Most alkali salts are sufficiently volatile to impart to the flame the colour characteristic of the respective metallic vapour. Certain native silicates and certain other compounds do not volatilize, but these can be rendered amenable to the test by mixing them with sulphate of lime and then applying the flame, whereupon alkaline sulphate is formed which volatilizes. The flame-colours are—*~~

~~*Potassium, Rubidium, Cesium. Lithium. Violet. Red.*~~

~~*Sodiwm. Yellow.*~~

~~*These flame-reactions are very delicate but not conclusive, because in the case of mixtures several colours may be radiated out at the same time, and one may eclipse all the rest—this holds, for instance, for things containing sodium, whose flame-colour is more intense than that of any other metal—or a mixed colour may be produced which the eye is incompetent toanalyse. The spectrum apparatus here comes in usefully ; and by means of it it is in general possible to see the lines characteristic of the several metals in presence of, or at least after, one another, because as a rule the several metals are present as compounds of different volatility.*~~

~~*For a thorough analysis it is necessary to begin by bringing the substance into aqueous or acid solution, and next to eliminate all that is not alkali metal by suitable methods. A certain set of heavy metals can be precipitated as sulphides by means of sulphur- etted hydrogen in the presence of acid, all the rest of these by means of sulphide of ammonium from an alkaline solution. From the filtrate, barium, strontium, and calcium are easily precipitated by means of carbonate of ammonia on boiling, so that, if the filtrate from these carbonates is evaporated to dryness and the residue kept at a dull red heat long enough to drive away the ammonia salts, nothing*~~

~~can be left but salts of alkali metals and magnesium. This residue is dissolved in a small quantity of water, and any residual basic salt of magnesium filtered off. The filtrate is then ready to be tested for alkali metals as follows: ¢f magnesia be absent, potassium or rubidium (not cesium) can be detected by addition (to a neutral or feebly acetic solution) of a saturated solution of bitartrate of soda. Potassium and rubidium come down as crys- talline bitartrates. The reaction may take some time to become manifest, but can be accelerated by vigorous stirring. Ina separate quantity of the solution lithium may be searched for by means of carbonate of soda or trisodic phosphate as explained under LirHiuM~~

~~'ordinary circumstances, formed on roots.~~

~~093~~

~~(vol. xiv. p. 697). For soda we have no characteristic precipitant. In any case the spectrum apparatus should be used for controlling aud, if necessary, supplementing the wet-way tests. The case of magnesia being present need not be specially considered, because the qualitative method will easily be deduced from what is said in the following paragraph.~~

~~Quantitative Determinations.—An exhaustive treatment of this subject would be out of place here. We confine ourselves to two cases. (1) A mixture of alkaline chlorides only. In this case the potassium (including Rb and Cs) is best separated out by adding a quantity of chloroplatinic-acid solution sufficient to convert all the metals into chloroplatinates, to evaporate to dryness over a water-bath, and from the residue to extract the lithium and sodium salts by lixiviation with alcohol of 70 per cent. (by weight). The residual chloroplatinate is collected on a filter, dried at 110° C., and, if Rb and Cs are absent, weighed as chloroplatinate of potassium, PtCl],K. (PtCl,K, x 0°3071=2KCl). The chloride of sodiuin is deter- mined by difference—if lithium be absent. The case of its presence cannot be here considered. (2) A mixture of alkalis combined with sulphuric acid, or such volatile acids as can be expelled by sulphuric. In this case it is best to begin by converting the whole into neutral sulphates, and then to apply the method of Finkener, which, amongst other advantages, offers the one that it does not demand the absence of magnesia. The mixed sulphate is dissolved in water and the solution mixed with a little more than the volume of~~

~~chloroplatinic acid ("platinum solution") demanded by the pot- assium (Rb and Cs). The mixture is placed in a water bath and, if necessary, diluted with sufficient water to bring the whole of the precipitated chloroplatinate into hot solution. The solution is then evaporated very nearly to dryness (on the water bath, with continu- ous stirring towards the end to avoid formation of crusts), allowed to cool, and the residue mixed, first with twenty times its volume of absolute alcohol, then with ten volumes of absolute ether. The mixture is allowed to stand in a well-covered vessel for some hours, to enable the precipitate to settle completely. The precipitate con- tains all the potassium as chloroplatinate, and most of the sodium and magnesium, and also part of the lithium in the sulphate form. It is washed with ether-alcohol (to complete filtrate A), and then lixiviated as quickly as possible with cold concentrated solution of sal-ammoniac, which dissolves away the sulphates (filtrate B). The residual chloroplatinate is dried within the filter in a porcelain cru- cible, which is next heated so as to char the paper at the lowest tem- perature. The residue is then ignited gently in hydrogen, and from the resulting residue the chloride of potassium is extracted by water, to be determined as chloroplatinate, as shown in (1), or otherwise. From the undissolved residue the charcoal is burned away and the residual platinum weighed to check the potassium determination. After removal of the ether and alcohol from filtrate A by dis- tillation, the two filtrates A and B are mixed, evaporated to dry- ness, the ammonia salts chased away by heating, and the residue is reduced (at about 300° C.) in hydrogen to bring the platinum into the form of metal, from which the magnesia and alkali salts are easily dissolved away by means of water or dilute acid. The whole of the salts are then made into neutral sulphate, which is weighed and then dissolved in a known weight of water. The lithium and the magnesium are determined in aliquot parts of the solution and calculated as sulphates. The soda is found by difference. A case intermediate between (1) and (2) often presents itself in practice. We refer to the commercial muriate from Stassfurt. In such an impure muriate the potassium can be determined promptly and accurately by adding to the very concentrated solution of the substance a large excess of a very concentrated solution of chloro- platinic acid, —" excess' meaning more platinum than necessary to make all the metals into chloroplatinates. The precipitate is allowed to settle, collected on a small filter, and washed, first with successive instalments of a platinum solution (containing 5 per cent. of~~

~~metal), then with ordinary alcohol; it is next dried, and weighed as above (Tatlock's method slightly modified). In exact analyses the small quantity of potassium which passes into the filtrate is recovered—ultimately by Finkener's method—and allowed for. (W. D.)~~

~~POTATO. The potato (Solanum tuberosum) is too well known to need detailed description. It owes its value to the peculiar habit of developing underground slender leafless shoots or branches which differ in character and office from the true roots, and which gradually swell at the free end and thus produce the tubers with which we are so familiar. The nature of these tubers is further . rendered evident by the presence of "eyes" or leaf-buds, which in due time lengthen into shoots and form the haulm or stems of the plant. Such buds are not, under What the determining cause of the formation of the tubers may be~~

~~is not known ; the object evidently is to secure a method of propagation independently of the seed. Starch and other matters are stored up in the tubers, as in the perisperm of a seed, and in due season are rendered available for the nutrition of the young shoots when they begin to grow. The young shoots, in fact, derive their nourishment from the parent tuber until by the produc- tion of roots and leaves they are enabled to shift for themselves. When grown under natural circumstances (without being earthed up, as is usually done by the cultivator) the tubers are relatively small and close to the surface of the soil, or even lie upon it. In the latter case they become green and have an acrid taste, which would probably render them objectionable to. predatory animals or insects, and which certainly renders them unpalatable to human beings, and, in consideration of the known poisonous qualities of many Solanacex, might probably cause them to be unwholesome. HIence the recommenda- tion to keep the tubers in cellars or pits, not exposed to the light, for the green colouring matter is, in this case, developed in the tubers independently of the direct action of light on the leaves. Among the six hundred species of Solanum less than a dozen have this property of forming tubers, but similar growths are formed at the ends of the shoots of the common bramble, of the Convolvulus sepium, of~~

~~*the Helianthus tuberosus, the so-called Jerusalem arti- choke, of Sagittaria, and other plants. Tubers are also sometimes formed on aerial branches, as in some Aroids, Begonias, &c. The production of small green tubers on the haulm, in the axils of the leaves of the potato, is not very unfrequent, and affords an interesting proof of the true morphological nature of the underground shoots and tubers. The so-called fir-cone potatoes, which are elongated and provided with scales at more or less regular intervals, show also very clearly that the tuber is only a thickened branch with "eyes" set in regular order, as in an ordinary shoot. The potato tuber consists mainly of a mass of cells filled with starch and encircled by a thin corky rind. A few vessels and woody fibres traverse the tubers.*~~

~~*The chief value of the potato as an article of diet consists in the starch it contains, and to a less extent in the potash and other salts. The quantity of nitrogen in its composition is small, and hence it should not be relied on to constitute the staple article of diet, unless in admixture with milk or some other substance containing*~~

~~*nitrogen. Letheby gives the following as the average composition of the potato— Nitrogenous matters 2-1 | Saline matter …..... 0°7 ISRO, Ake, Ganarosanone SE Sia BVWatere Sess ess.cece 215°0 REI aseoste nee oas tence 372 Hae ame ecvanacectesuntes 0°2 100°0*~~

~~*—a result which approximates closely to the average' of nineteen analyses cited in How Crops Grow from Grouven. In some analyses, however, the starch is put as low as 13°30, and the nitrogenous matter as 0°92 (Dehérain, Cours de Chimie Agricole, p. 159). Boussingault gives 25°2 per cent. of starch and 3 per cent. of nitrogenous matter. Warington states that the proportion of nitro- genous to non-nitrogenous matter in the digestible part of potatoes is as 1 to 10°6. The composition of the tubers evidently varies according to season, soils, manur, ing, the variety grown, é&c., but the figures cited will give a sufficiently accurate idea of it. The "ash" contains on the average of thirty-one analyses as much as 59°8 per cent. of potash, and 19-1 per cent. of phosphoric acid, the other ingredients being in very minute proportion. Where, as in some parts of northern Germany, the potato 1s grown for the purpose of manufacturing spirit great attention 1s necessarily paid to the quantitative analysis of*~~

~~the starchy and saccharine matters, which are found to vary much in particular varieties, irrespective of the con- ditions under which they are grown. ;~~

~~The origin and history of the potato are better known than in the case of many long-cultivated plants. It is to the Spaniards that we owe this valuable esculent, "optimum benigni Numinis donum, dapes grata diviti, pauperi panis," as it has been called by an eminent botanist. The Spaniards met with it in the neighbourhood of Quito, where it was cultivated by the natives. In the Cronica de Peru of Pedro Ciega, published at Seville in 1553, as well as in other Spanish books of about the same date, the potato is mentioned under the name " battata" or "papa." Hieronymus Cardan, a monk, is supposed to have been the first to introduce it from Peru into Spain, from which country it passed into Italy and thence into Belgium. Carl Sprengel, cited by Professor Edward Morren in his biographical sketch entitled Charles de V Escluse, sa Vie et ses Huvres, and to which we are indebted for some of the historical details given below, states that the potato was introduced from Santa Fé into England by John Hawkins in 1563 (Garten Zeitung, 1805, p. 346). If this be so, it is a question whether the English and not the Spaniards are not entitled to the credit of the first introduction ; but, according to Sir Joseph Banks, the plant brought by Drake and Hawkins was not our potato but the SwEet Potato (see below).~~

~~In 1587 or 1588 De l'Escluse, better known under the Latinized appellation of "' Clusius," received the plant from Philippe de Sivry, lord of Waldheim and governor of Mons, who in his turn received it from some member of the suite of the papal legate. At the discovery of America, we are told by Humboldt, the plant was cultivated in all the temperate parts of the continent from Chili to New Granada, but not in Mexico. Nearly a hundred years afterwards, in 1585 or 1586, potato tubers were brought from North Carolina and Virginia to Ireland on the return of the colonists sent out by Sir Walter Raleigh, and were first cultivated on Sir Walter's estate near Cork. The tubers introduced under the auspices of Raleigh were thus imported a few years later than those mentioned by Clusius in 1588, which must have been in cultivation in Italy and Spain for some years prior to that~~

~~*time. Be this as it may, the earliest representation of the plant is to be found in Gerard's Herbal, published in 1597. The plant is mentioned under the name Papus orbiculatus in the first edition of the Catalogus of the same author, published in 1596, and again in the second edition, which was dedicated to Sir Walter Raleigh (1599). It is, how- ever, in the Herbal that we find the first description of the potato, accompanied by a woodcut sufficiently correct to leave no doubt whatever as to the identity of the plant. In this work (p. 781) it is called " Battata Virginiana sive Virginianorum, et Pappus, Potatoes of Virginia." Gerard says—*~~

~~*'*The roote is thicke, fat and tuberous ; not much differing either in shape, colour or taste from the common Potatoes, saving that the rootes hereof are not so great nor long; some of them as round as a ball, some ouall or egge-fashion, some longer and others shorter ; which knobbie rootes are fastened unto the stalks with an infinite number of threddie strings. . . . It groweth naturally in America where it was first discovered, as reporteth C. Clusius, since which time I have received rootes hereof from Virginia otherwise*~~

~~*called Norembega which growe and prosper in my garden, as in their owne native countrie."*~~

~~*The 'common Potatoes" of which Gerard speaks are the tubers of Convolvulus batatas, the Sweet Potato, which nowadays would not in Great Britain be spoken of as common. Evidently the author attached great importance to the potato, for in the frontispiece to his volume he is represented with the flower and foliage of the plant in his hand. In his opinion it was, like the common potato,*~~

~~*Por AT 0*~~

~~*"a foode as also a meate for pleasure equall in goodnesse and wholesomenesse unto the same, being either rosted in the embers, or boiled and eaten with oile, vinegar and pepper, or dressed any other way by the hand of some cunning in cookerie." A second edition of the Herbal was published in 1636 by Thomas Johnson, with a different illustration from that given in the first edition, and one which in some respects, as in showing the true nature of the tuber, is superior to the first. The phenomenon of growing out or " super-tuberation " is shown in this cut. Previous to this*~~

~~*(in 1629) Parkinson, the friend and associate of Johnson, had published his Paradisus, in which (p. 517) he gives an indifferent figure of the potato under the name of Papas seu Battatas Virginianorum, and adds details as to the method of cooking the tubers which seem to indicate that they were still luxuries rather than necessaries. Chabreeus, who wrote in 1666, tells us that the Peruvians made bread from the tubers, which they called '"'chunno." He further tells us that by the natives " Virginieer insule" the plant was called "openauk," and that it is now known in European gardens, but he makes no mention of its use as an esculent vegetable, and, in- deed, includes it among "plante maligne et venenate." Heriot (De Bry's Collection of Voyages), in his report on Virginia, describes a plant under the same name "with roots as large as a walnut and others much larger; they grow in damp soil, many hanging together as if fixed on ropes ; they are good food either boiled or roasted." The plant (which is not a native of Virginia) was probably introduced there in consequence of the intercourse of the early settlers with the Spaniards, who derived the plant from Peru or other parts of South America, and perhaps provisioned their ships with its tubers. In any case the cultivation of the potato in England made but little pro- gress, even though it was strongly urged by the Royal Society in 1663; and not much more than a century has elapsed since its cultivation on a large scale became general. The source of the potato being known, it is a matter of interest to determine the particular species from which the cultivated forms have descended and the exact part of the great American continent in which it is indigenous. As to the first point, botanists are agreed that the only species in general cultivation in Great Britain is the one which Bauhin, in his Phytopinax, p. 89 (1596), called Solanum tuberosum esculentum, a name adopted by Linnzus (omit- ting the last epithet), and employed by all botanical writers. This species is native in Chili, but it is very doubtful if it is truly wild farther north. Mr Baker (Journal of the Lirnean Society, vol. xx., 1884, p. 489) has reviewed the tuber-bearing species of Solanum from a systematic point of view as well as from that of geographical distribution. Out of twenty so-called species he considers six to be really distinct, while the others are merely synonymous or trifling variations. The six admitted tuber-bearing species are S. tuberosum, S. Maglia, S. Commersoni, S. cardiophyllum, S. Jamesii, and S. oxycarpum.*~~

~~*S. tuberosum is, according to Mr Baker, a native not only of the Andes of Chili but also of those of Peru, Bolivia, Ecuador, and Colombia, also of the mountains of Costa Rica, Mexico, and the south-western United States. It seems most probable, how- ever, that some at least of the plants mentioned in the northern part of the American continent have no claim to be considered absolutely wild, but are the descendants of cultivated forms. S. Maglia is a native of the Chilian coast as far south as the Chonos Archipelago, and was cultivated in the garden of the Horticultural Society at Chiswick in 1822, being considered by Sabine, in his paper on the native country of the wild potato, to be the true S. tuberosum and the origin of the cultivated forms. This species was also found by Darwin in Chili, and was considered by him, as by Sabine before him, to be the wild potato. It is remarkable, says Darwin, that the same plant should be found in the sterile mountains of central Chili, where a drop of rain does not fall for more than six months, and within the damp forests of these*~~

~~*595*~~

~~*southern (Chonos) islands. The explanation, according to Baker, is that the plant of the dry mountains is S. twberosum, that of the coast is S. Afaglia. It must, however, be stated that, although Mr Baker refers to the plants figured by Sabine (Zrans. Hort. Soc. Lond., vol. v. p. 249) as being without doubt S. Maglia, A. de Candolle (Origine des Plantes eultivées, p. 40) is equally emphatic in the opinion, "ce qui saute aux yeux," that the plant grown. from Chilian tubers and figured in the plate before cited is S. tuberosum. S. Commersont occurs in Uruguay, Buenos Ayres, and the Argentine Republic, in rocky situations at a low level. Under the name of S. Ohrondii it has lately been introduced into western France, where it is not only hardy but produces abundance of tubers, which arc palatable, but have a slightly acid taste. The tubers give promise of improvement under cultivation. S. cardio- phyllum, described by Lindley in the Journal of the Horticultural Society, is a native of the mountains of central Mexico at elevations of 8000 to 9000 feet. S. Jameszi is a well-defined species occurring in the mountains of Colorado, New Mexico, and Arizona, and also in Mexico. In a wild state the tubers are not larger than marbles, but as the plant is now in cultivation in England it may be expected to improve in*~~

~~*this particular. S. oxyearpwm is stated by Mr Baker to be a little known but very distinct tuberous species from central Mexico.*~~ ~~+~~

~~*Mr Baker looks upon the forms enumerated not only with the eye of a systematic botanist but with the tendencies of one whose object is to assign varying forms to one common type from which they have, or may probably have, arisen. But from a practical point of view the forms in question require careful analysis rather than synthesis. Their morphological peculiarities and chemical constitution deserve attentive consideration as to their degree of constancy, and more particularly as to any relation that may be traced between them and the climatic circumstances under which they grow naturally, and their power of resistance to the attacks of disease. A review of the localities in which the presence of S. tuberosum and its tuber-bearing allies has been ascertained shows that, broadly, these varieties may be divided into moun- tainous and littoral. In either case they would not be subjected, at least in their growing season, to the same extremes of heat, cold, and drought as plants growing on inland plains. Again, those forms growing at a high elevation would probably start into growth later in the season than those near the coast. The significance of these facts from a cultural point of view is twofold: for, while a late variety is desirable for culture in Great Britain, as ensuring more or less immunity from spring frost, which would injure the early sorts, it is, on the other hand, undesirable, because late varieties are more liable to be attacked by the potato disease, which as a rule makes its appearance at or about the time when the earliest varieties are ready for lifting, but before the late varieties are matured, and consequently while they are still exposed to the destructive influences of the fungus.*~~

~~*1 Although these six are the only species admitted as such by Mr Baker, it is well to note some of the forms or varieties, because, although they may not be entitled to specific rank, which after all is a matter of opinion, they may yet be of importance in the future. First of all may be mentioned the S. etuberosum of Lindley, differmg from the common S, tuberoswm in not producing tubers. This was found in Chili, and is probably not specifically distinct, although exceptional, for it is by no means very unusual to find even cultivated plants pro- duce no tubers. S. Fernandezianwm is, according to Baker, a form of S. tuberosum, but if so its habitat in the*~~

~~*mountain woods of Juan Fernandez is climatically different from that in the dry mountains of central Chili, where, as we have seen, the true S. tuberosum grows. S. otites was found recently by M. André on the summit of Quindiu in Colombia, at a height of 11,483 feet, in a rigorous climate, only about 3300 feet below the perpetual snows of Tolima. It produces tubers of the size of anut. S. Andreanum, found by M. André at Cauca, at an elevation of 6234 feet, was considered by the traveller to be the true S. tuberosum, but this view is not shared by Mr Baker, who named it after the discoverer. Its tubers, if it produces any, have not been seen. S. cmmite is probably only a slight variety of S. tuberosum, as are also the Venezuelan S. colombianum, S. verrueosum, S. demissum, and S. utile. S. Fendleri, a native of the mountains of New Mexico and Arizona, was considered by Asa Gray to be likewise a form of S. tuberosum.*~~

~~In cultivation! the potato varies very greatly not only as to the season of its growth but also as to productive- ness, the vigour and luxuriance of its foliage, the presence or relative absence of hairs, the form of the leaves, the size and colour of the flowers, &c. It is probable that a more careful investigation of these peculiarities, and especially of those connected with the microscopical ana- tomy of the leaves, would give serviceable indications of the varieties most or least susceptible to the disease,— a point at present hardly if at all attended to. As to the tubers, they vary greatly in size, form, and colour ; gardeners divide them into rounded forms and long forms or "kidneys"; '"lapstones" are more or less flattened ; and "pebble" varieties are long potatoes broader at one end than at the other. The colour of the rind, yellowish, brown, or purple, furnishes distinctions, as does the yellow or white colour of the flesh. The colour of the eyes and their prominence or depression are relatively very constant characteristics. These variations have originated chiefly by cross-breeding, but not invariably so, as some varieties rarely, if ever, produce flowers in Britain, and yet "sports" have been observed in their tubers and have become the parents of new varieties. Various methods have been pro- posed for the prevention or arrest of the ravages of the fungus which causes the " potato disease" (see below). In addition to different modes of cultivation, attempts have been made to secure varieties less liable than others to disease, and, although no great measure of success has been attained, still the matter is not without promise, seeing how the early varieties, as before stated, escape the full virulence of the malady. Other attempts have been made to infuse a hardier constitution by hybridizing the potato with hardy species such as S. Dulcamara and S. ngrum. HHybrids were accordingly raised by Mr Maule, but they all suffered from. the disease as much as the parents, and it is to be feared that the hybrids raised between the common potatoes and some of the six species mentioned by Mr Baker may suffer a like fate. This, however, remains to be proved. Mr Maule, disappointed with his hybridization experiments, then tried the effect of grafting. With this view he grafted S. nigrum on to a shoot of the potato. New tubers were formed, the foliage being wholly that of S. nigrum. In another ex- periment he grafted the potato on to S. Dulcamara. In one case tubers were produced on the graft~~

~~(the potato), but none on the Dulcamara stock, either above or below ground, while in another case tubers were actually pro- duced on the underground portions of S. Dulcamara. Mr Maule's experiments were most ingenious, but the theory he gave in his The Potato, what is it? (Bristol, 1876) will not commend itself to physiologists, and there is no evidence to show whether the grafts he obtained were attacked by the parasite or even whether they had a chance of being so. Mr Maule's experiments, especi- ally the one last mentioned, afford confirmation of the possibility of graft hybridization being effected. Various experimenters, especially Mr Fenn, have asserted that by engrafting an eye of one variety into the tuber of another, not only will adhesion take place but the new tubers will present great variety of character; and this indeed seems to be the case from the numerous specimens shown by Mr Fenn at the Royal Horticultural Society, but it can hardly, be considered as established that the variations in questioui were the result of any commingling of the essences of the two varieties. The wound may simply have set up that variation in the buds the occasional existence of which has been already noted. The last-cited experiment of Mr Maule's, however, is much more conclusive. Mr A, Dean also (Gardeners' Chronicle, 24 September 1876, p. 304)~~

~~' See HorticuLturE, vol. xii. p. 286.~~

~~POW 2. .~~

~~succeeded in grafting the potato on to the tomato, with the result that, although no tubers were found on the root of the tomato, numerous tubers were produced on the sides of the branches of the potato. Another experiment may be here mentioned as throwing light on the formation of tubers, one wherein Mr Burbidge observed the production of tubers at the portion of an ordinary cutting of S. Com- mersont inserted in the soil, In this case no tubers were formed above ground. (M. T. M.)~~

~~Potato DISEASE.~~

~~There are few agricultural subjects of greater importance than the culture of the potato and the losses entailed by potato disease. The number of acres in Great Britain alone under cultivation for potatoes is generally more than half a million (543,455 in 1883, 562,344 in 1884); the average weight of~~

~~*the produce per acre may be taken at five tons, the average price about £5 per ton, so that the commercial value of each year's crop commonly ranges between £13,000,000 and £15,000,000. It is not unusual in bad seasons for a single grower to lose from £1000 to £1500 through disease; for the market grower some- times not only loses the entire produce, or nearly so, but loses also the value of the seed, the guano, the farm-yard manure, the rent, and the labour. Growers sometimes lose £30 per acre in one season, for, exclusive of the dis- eased produce, £10 may be put down to guano and dung, £4, 10s. to rent, tithes, and taxes, £6, 10s. for seed, and £2 for digging; added to this there are ploughing, har- rowing, overlooking, earthing up, sacks, carriage to and fro, and many minor expenses. The losses range in amount according to the virulence and general extent of the dis- ease. In extreme cases every tuber is lost, as the produce will not even pay the cost of lifting. The year of the great potato famine in Britain was 1845, but the Rev. M. J. Berkeley, in his famous essay on the potato murrain published by the Royal Horticultural Society of England in 1846, stated that a very serious disease of the potato named the "curl" had at that time been known in Britain for more than half a century. We now know that the "curl" is a condition of the true potato murrain. Asa rule, although there are a few exceptions, the disease occurs wherever the potato is grown. It is known in South America, in the home of the potato plant.*~~

~~*The disease of potatoes is caused by the growth of a fungus named Peronospora infestans, Mont., within the tissues of the host plant, and this fungus has the peculiar property of piercing and breaking up the cellular tissues, and setting up putrescence in the course of its growth. The parasite, which has a somewhat restricted range of host plants, chiefly invades the potato, Solanum tuberosum,*~~

~~*'L.; the bittersweet, S. Dulcamara, L.; S. demissum, Lind. ;*~~

~~*and S. cardiophyllum, Lind. It is also very destructive to the tomato, Lycopersicum esculentum, Mill., and to all or nearly all the other species of Lycopersicum. At times it attacks petunias and even Scrophulariaceous plants, as Anthocersis and Schizanthus. A second species of Perono- spora is known on Solanaceous plants, viz., P. Hyoscyam, D.By., a parasite of the common henbane.*~~

~~*In England the disease is generally first seen during the last ten days of July ; its extension is greatly favoured by the warm and showery weather peculiar to that period of the year, and according as the warm and humid weather of autumn is late or early the murrain varies a little in its time of appearance. To the unaided eye the disease is seen as purplish brown or blackish blotches of various sizes, at first on the tips and edges of the leaves, and ultimately upon the leaf-stalks and the larger stems. On gathering the foliage for examination, especially in humid weather, these dark blotches are seen to be putrid,*~~

~~*rota TG*~~

~~*and when the disease takes a bad form the dying leaves give out a highly offensive odour. The fungus, which is chiefly within the leaves and stems, seldom emerges through the firm upper surface of the leaf; it commonly appears as a white bloom or mildew on the circumference of the disease-patches on the under surface. It grows within the tissues from central spots towards an ever- extending circumference, carrying putrescence in its course. As the patches extend in size by the growth of the fungus they at length become confluent, and so the leaves are destroyed and an end is put to one of the chief vital functions of the host plant. On the destruction of the leaves the fungus either. descends the stem by the interior or the spores are washed by the rain to the tubers in the ground. In either case the tubers are reached by the fungus or its spores, and so become diseased. The fungus which undoubtedly causes the mischief is very small in size, and under the microscope appears slightly whitish or colourless. The highest powers are required to see all parts of the parasite.*~~

~~*The accompanying illustration, drawn from nature, shows the*~~

~~*habit and structure of the fungus, Peronospora infestans, Mont. The letters A B show a vertical section through a fragment of a*~~

~~*Peronospora infestans, Mont.—Fungus of Potato Disease.*~~

~~*potato leaf, enlarged 100 diameters ; A is the upper surface line, and B the lower ; the lower surface of the leaf is shown at the top, the better to exhibit the nature of the fungus growths. Between A and B the loose cellular tissue*~~

~~*of which the leaf is partly built up is seen in section, and at C the vertical pallisade cells which give firmness to the upper surface of the leaf. Amongst the minute spherical cells within the substance of the leaf numerous transparent threads are shown ; these are the mycelial threads or spawn of the fungus ; wherever they touch the leaf-cells they pierce or break down the tissue, and so set up decomposition, as indicated by the darker shading. The lower surface of the potato leaf is furnished with numerous organs of transpiration or stomata, which are narrow orifices opening into the leaf and from which moisture is transpired in the form of fine vapour. Out of these small openings the fungus threads emerge, as shown at D, D, D. When the threads reach the air they branch in a tree-like manner, and each branch carries one or more ovate reproductive bodies termed "spores" or " conidia," bodies roughly comparable with seeds, as shown at E, E, E, Sometimes other reproductive bodies roughly comparable with the anthers and pistils of flowering plants are borne inside the leaf, stem, or tuber, as at F; the larger body of these is female, and is termed an "oogonium," and the smaller, which at length pierces the oogonium, is male, and is termed an*~~

~~*'fantheridium." When the spores or conidia are magnified 400 diameters they are seen as at F', and the contained protoplasm often breaks up into a definite number of parts, as at G. When a spore like F germinates it protrudes an ameeba-like mass of protoplasm, as shown at H, which is capable of reproducing the potato fungus at once; and when a differentiated conidium as at G germinates it expels about eight minute mobile bodies called **zoospores," each zoospore being furnished with two extremely attenuated vibrating hairs termed "cilia," as shown at J. These zoospores swim about in any film of moisture, and on going to rest take a spherical form, germinate, and produce threads of mycelium as at K ; the mycelium from the germinating conidia or zoospores soon finds its way into the tissues of the potato leaf by the organs of transpiration, and the process of growth already described is re- peated over and over again till the entire potato leaf, or indeed the whole plant, is reduced to putridity.*~~

~~*The oogonium and antheridium as seen at F are further enlarged to 400 diameters at L;it will here be seen that the smaller male organ or*~~

~~*antheridium has projected a fine beak through the walls of the oogonium or female organism ; through this beak some of the protoplasm from the antheridium passes into and mingles with the protoplasm of the oogonium ; this is the act of fertilization, and an oospore or resting spore (M, N), a body roughly comparable with a seed, is the result. After fertilization the oospores quickly drop from their supporting threads and become free like most ripe fruits. As the potato fungus causes the potato to become putrid the mature oospores or resting spores are necessarily confined to the portions of the potato plant which have been destroyed by the fungus, 7.¢., either to the decayed leaves or stems or to the diseased tubers ; they are brown in colour and generally more or less spinulose or warted. They will not germinate till after a rest of nine, ten, or twelve months, or in some instances even two years. They germinate by protruding threads, which speedily bear spores or conidia as at H, or more rarely zoospores as at J. The resting spores were seen by Dr Rayer and Dr Montague in 1845, and named (in ignorance of their true nature) Artotrogus hydnosporus. The Rev. M. J. Berkeley shortly afterwards identified them as the resting spores of the potato fungus; but they were not seen by any one between the years 1845 and 1875, when in the latter year they were discovered in great abundance and artificially produced from the potato fungus by the writer of this article. At first believed to be rare, they are now known to be amongst the commonest of vegetable productions. The potato fungus is easily made to produce resting spores, and their germination after a year's rest is an observation of no special difficulty. At one time these resting spores were confused by some botanists with a little fugitive transparent fungus, bearing oogonia not half the size of the oogonia of Peronospora infestans, and named Pythiwm vexans, D.By.; the latter plant perfects itself in twenty-four hours or at most a day or two, instead of taking a year or more as do the resting spores of the fungus of the potato disease. Pythiwm vexans has no connexion whatever with the fungus or the potato disease.*~~

~~*The germinating conidia of the potato fungns, as at HK, are not only able to pierce the leaves and stems of the potato plant, and so gain an entry to its interior through the epidermis, but they are also able to pierce the bark of the tuber, especially in young examples. It is therefore obvious that, if the tubers are exposed to the air where they are liable to become slightly cracked by the sun, wind, hail, and rain, and injured by small animals and*~~

~~*insects, the spores from the leaves will drop on to the tubers, quickly germinate upon the slightly-injured places, and cause the potatoes to become dis- eased. Earthing up therefore prevents these injuries, but where practised to an immoderate extent it materially reduces the pro- duce of tubers. The labour entailed in repeated earthing up is also considered a serious objection to its general adoption.*~~

~~*All diseased potato material should be gathered together and either deeply buried or burnt, as the hibernating germs of the disease (oospores) rest in the decaying potato refuse, and the my- celium itself sometimes hibernates.*~~

~~*See Berkeley's essay, "On the Potato Disease," in Journal of the Royal Horti- cultural Society, vol. i., 1846; Professor A. de Bary, "On the Nature of the Potato Fungus," in Jowrnal of Royal Agricultural Society, vol. xii., 1876; Earl Catheart, "The Cultivated Potato," in Journal of Roy. Agr. Soc., 1884; J. G. Baker, "The Tuber-bearing Species of Solanum," in Journal of the Linnean*~~

~~*Society, vol. xx., 1884; and Worthington G. Smith, Diseases of Field and Garden Crops (1884). In the latter work a full bibliography is given. (W. G. SM.)*~~

~~*POTATO, Sweet. This plant (the Convolvulus batatas, or Ipomea batatas of some authors) is generally culti- vated in the West Indies and most tropical countries for the sake of its tuberous root, which is an article of diet greatly in request. It is a climbing perennial with cordate, entire, or palmately-lobed leaves borne on slender twining stems. The flowers are borne on long stalks in loose clusters or cymes, and have a white or rosy funnel- shaped corolla like that of the common bindweed of English hedges. The edible portion is the root, which dilates into*~~

~~*large club-shaped masses filled with starch. It is ill suited to the climate of the United Kingdom, but in tropical countries it is as valuable as the potato is in higher latitudes. The plant is not known in a truly wild state, nor has its origin been ascertained. A. de Candolle con- cludes that it is in all probability of American origin, though dispersed in Japan, China, the*~~

~~*South Sea Islands, Australia, &c. Its migrations are only explained by him on geological grounds of an entirely hypothetical character. It is mentioned by Gerard as the "potato," or "notatus," or "potades" in contradistinction to the "potatoes a Virginia (Solanum tuberosum). He grew it in his garden, but the climate was not warm enough to allow it to flower, and in winter it perished and rotted. But as the appella- tion "common" is applied to them the roots must have been introduced commonly. Gerard tells us he bought those that he planted at "the Exchange in London," and he gives an interesting account of the uses to which they were put, the manner in which they were prepared as " sweetmeats," and the invigorating properties assigned to them. The allusions in the Merry Wives of Windsor and other of Shakespeare's plays in all probability refer to this plant, and not to what we now call the " potato." POTATO BEETLE or Cotorapo BEETLE. See CoLzo- pTERA (Doryphora decemlineata), vol. vi. p. 134. POTEMKIN, Grucory ALExanpDrRovicy (1739-1791), Russian soldier and statesman, was born in 1739 in the village of Domnovo, in the government of Smolensk. His father was a poor nobleman of Polish extraction, but the family had been settled for some time in Russia. Owing to the slender means of his parents, Potemkin's first plan seems to have been to devote himself to the church ; but he did not show much inclination for this profession, and eventually embraced the calling of a soldier. His fortunes rose from the time when he assisted the empress Catherine in her conspiracy against her husband on the memorable 10th of July 1762. On this occasion, when Catherine rode through the ranks, Potemkin, perceiving that she had no plume in her hat, offered her his own. Soon afterwards he became one of the leading favourites and his rise was rapid. We first find him serving under Marshal Roumantzoff against the Turks, but, after having spent some time in the camp, he returned to St Petersburg, where he became more influential than ever. From 1778 till his death the foreign policy of Russia was almost entirely in hishands. By his agency the Crimea was annexed in 1783, the khan being induced to put himself under Russian pro- tection. In January 1787 the empress set out with Potem- kin to survey her new conquests. The description of this journey and of the fantastic luxury which accompanied it has been often given, and need not be recapitulated here. At Kherson Catherine was met by the emperor Joseph, who had travelled from Austria for that purpose. She there passed under a triumphal arch, on which was inscribed, in Greek letters, " The way to Byzantium."*~~

~~*The empress went as far south as Bakhchisarai and Stari Krim, at which point she turned back, reaching St Petersburg on the 22d of July. Soon afterwards war was declared against Turkey and the siege of Otchakoff commenced in July 1788. Here Potemkin acted as commander-in-chief, with 150,000 men at his disposal, but it is difficult to say if he had*~~

~~*any talent as a soldier, as many able men, among others:*~~

~~*Souwaroff, served under him, and he was able to appropriate the fruits of their labour and ability. According to some he showed military genius, according to others he was entirely destitute of it. He is said to have introduced Some very useful changes in the dress and discipline of the Russian armies. Otchakoff was taken in December 1788, with terrible slaughter on both sides, and was followed by the victories of Souwaroff at Bender and Ismail,*~~

~~*POT—P OT*~~

~~*the latter of which was taken in 1790, when Souwaroff sent his celebrated couplet to Catherine : 'Slava Bogu ! Slava Vam ! Krepost vsiata i ya tam.”'?*~~

~~*In March 1791 Potemkin made his triumphal entry into St Petersburg. The description of the banquet which he gave in honour of the empress at his Taurian palace rivals any scene of Oriental magnificence. But his constitution was now breaking ; his body at a comparatively early age was worn out by his labours and excesses. Yet he refused to have recourse to medicine, lived upon salt meat and raw turnips, and drank strong wines and spirits. In the latter part of the year 1791 he went to the south of Russia, the scene of his former triumphs, and lay ill for some time at Jassy, whence he attempted to move to Otchakoff, but after travelling a few versts he could no longer endure the motion of the carriage. He accordingly was lifted out and a carpet was spread for him at the foot of a tree, upon which he soon expired in the arms of his niece, Countess Branicka, on the 15th of October 1791. His body was interred at Kherson, but, from inquiries made on the spot by the traveller Edward Clarke at the commencement of the present century, it seems to have been disinterred and thrown into a ditch by order of the emperor Paul, who hated him.*~~

~~During his lifetime Potemkin did not escape the censure of his countrymen, in proof of which may be cited the attacks of Derzhavin and Radistcheff. Strange stories are told of his extravagance aud whimsicality, among others that he had in his library several volumes of bank notes bound together: He seems to have "sickened of a vague disease" in the midst of all his splendour. His wealth was boundless, as, besides his personal property, he had large landed estates and many thousands of serfs. He was arrogant and capri- cious, a thorough despot, and a man of grossly licentious life. That he was possessed of some ability cannot be doubted, but, taking him all in all, we must say that the prominence of a man of such character has left a deep stain upon the annals of Russia.~~

~~POTENZA, a city of Italy, the chief town of Potenza (Basilicata), lies in the heart of the country, on an isolated hill in the valley of the Basento or Busento (Casuentus or Masuentum), 69 miles by rail east of Salerno and 51 west- north-west of Metapontum, where the Basento reaches the Gulf of Taranto and the railway joins the line between Taranto and Reggio. It is much exposed to stormy winds, and has in general a far more northern climate than its astronomical position (40° 40' N. lat.) implies. Along with Marsico Nuovo the city forms an episcopal diocese dependent on Acerenza, and under the Bourbon Govern- ment it was considered a fortified place of the fourth class. The buildings of chief note are the cathedral, the seminary, and the hospital of San Carlo (1869). The population was 18,295 in 1871 and 16,968 in 1881 (com- mune, 20,281).~~

~~The hill on which Potenza now stands was originally occupied only by the citadel of the ancient Potentia, which spread out in the valley below, and must have been, to judge by its numerous inscriptions, a flourishing municipium during the Roman empire. The old town was destroyed by Frederick II., and again by earth- quake in 1278; the erection of the new town on the hill probably dates from this latter event. By the Angevines Potenza was made a domain of the San Severino family ; in the beginning of the 15th century it was held by Francesco Sforza, and in 1485 it passed to the Guevara family ; the Loffredi, who succeeded by marriage, continued in possession till the abolition of the great fiefs. In 1694 there was a severe earthquake ; and the more terrible earthquake which on 16th and 17th~~

~~*December 1857 passed through southern Italy, and in the Basilicata alone killed 32,475 persons, proved parti- cularly disastrous at Potenza, laying the greater part of the city in ruins.*~~

~~*POTI, a seaport town of Trans-Caucasia in the govern- ment of Kutais (Mingrelia), lies at the mouth of the Rhion (Phasis) on the coast of the Black Sea, 193 miles west- north-west of Tiflis, with which it is connected by a railway*~~

~~*Glory to God ! glory to you ! The fortress is taken and I am there.*~~

~~*POT—POT*~~

~~*opened (except the tunnel of Suram) in 1872. The white walls of the fortress may be seen at'a great distance con- trasting with the green trees which surround them, and the lighthouse, 117 feet high, is visible 17 miles. Situated in a low and marshy delta not more than 2} feet above the level of the river, Poti is extremely unhealthy, fever and ague prevailing in summer and autumn. Ever since the Russians obtained possession of the place they have laboured to improve the town and port, but with compara- tively limited success. The houses are built of wood and supported on piles. After Batoum was transferred to Russia in 1878 it was thought that Poti would be aban- doned as a port, but the Commission of Inquiry appointed in 1883 decided in its favour. Works estimated to cost 2,365,000 roubles and to be finished in four years were accordingly undertaken. The population of the town is given as 3112 in the Russian Calendar for 1882.*~~

~~*Poti represents the ancient Phasis, a commercial colony of the people of Miletus. The present fortress was built in 1578 by Amurath III. at the time of the war with Persia. In 1640 it was destroyed by the Imeritians, but it was again restored and enlarged, the ancient ruins in the neighbourhood yielding the necessary material. The town was a great market for the trade in slaves. It was captured by the Russians in 1812, and again in 1829.*~~

~~*POTOMAG, a river of the United States, which joins Chesapeake Bay by a considerable estuary after a course of about 400 miles. The northern branch of the upper river rises in the Alleghanies, West Virginia, the southern in the Shenandoah Mountains. Affluents are received from*~~

~~*Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, and West Virginia,—the most important of all being the Shenandoah, which joins it at Harper's Ferry, below which the united stream breaks through the line of the Blue Ridge. Ships ascend for a short distance above Washington (the capital of the United States), or a total distance from the sea of 125 miles.*~~

~~*POTOSI (not to be confounded with San Luis Potosi, the state and state capital in Mexico) is a town of Bolivia, at the head of the department of Potosi, in 19° 36' S. lat. and 65° 46' W. long. It stands in a bleak and barren country not far from the sources of the Pilcomaya, and thus belongs to the great basin of the La Plata system. Situated at the height of about 13,280 feet above the sea, it is one of the highest inhabited places in the world, and the Cerro de Potosi,! at the foot of which it stands, reaches a height of 16,150 feet. The wealth of silver ore drawn from it up to 1846 is stated at upwards of £300,000,000 sterling ; and, though the works had for a time to be dis- continued as heavier machinery and greater capital were required, the store is far from being exhausted. The city is still the seat of the national mint. It consists of nine streets about 30 feet broad, running north and south and crossed at right angles by others of varying breadth. The houses (two-storied in the heart of the town, but only of one story in the outskirts) are built of adobe and white- washed. Besides the cathedral (restored in 1858) there are a large number of churches, several convents, and other public buildings ; but the city as a whole has that dilapi- dated and melancholy appearance which is the result of a greatly diminished population. In 1611 its inhabitants are said to have numbered 160,000; at present they are probably not more than 11,000, though Hugo Reck about 1867 gave 22,850 and Ondarza in 1882 repeated exactly the same figures.*~~
~~©~~

~~*The foundation of the town dates from 1547, two years after the first discovery of silver ore on Cerro de Potosi. In 1825 a monu- ment to Bolivar was erected in the public square. The history of Potosi from its origin till 1702 will be found in Don Vicente Ballivian y Rojas's Bolivian Archives.*~~

~~*POTSDAM, the seat of government for the Prussian province of Brandenburg, and the summer residence of the emperor of Germany, lies 16 miles to the south-west of*~~

~~1 For a description of this mountain, see Botrvia (vol. iv. p. 18).~~

~~599~~

~~Berlin, on the river Havel, which here expands into a series of small lakes. The town is handsomely built, though with a monotonous regularity that betrays its artificial origin, and is situated amid the prettiest scenery of the Mark of Brandenburg, consisting of an oasis of wood and hill and lake in the centre of a sandy and un- attractive plain. Except during the summer months,~~

~~when its streets are enlivened by endless streams of excur- sionists from Berlin, Potsdam usually presents a somewhat~~

~~Potsdam.~~

~~its extensive garrison. The greater part of the town lies on the right bank of the Havel and is connected with the Teltow suburb. on the opposite bank by a long bridge. At the north end of this bridge rises the royal palace, a large quadrangular building of the 17th century, with a colonnade, chiefly interesting for the numerous relics it contains of Frederick the Great, who made it his favourite residence. It also contains reminiscences of Voltaire, who also resided here for several years. The principal churches are the Nicolaikirche, a handsome edifice with a dome; the garrison church, containing the remains of Frederick the Great and his father; and the Friedens- kirche or church of peace, erected by Frederick William IV. as a "positive and Christian counterpart to the worldly negative of Sans Souci." Among other conspicuous build- ings are the large barracks, orphanages, and other military establishments ; the town-house; the district courts ; the theatre; and the Brandenburg gate, in the style of a Roman triumphal arch. The Lustgarten, Wilhelmsplatz, and Plantage are open spaces laid out as pleasure-grounds and adorned with statues and busts. In spite of its some- what sleepy appearance, Potsdam is the seat of a varied if not very extensive industry, of which sugar, cotton and woollen goods, chocolate, and tobacco are the chief pro- ducts. Market-gardening affords occupation to many of the inhabitants, and the cultivation of winter violets is important enough to be mentioned as a specialty. The Havel is well stocked with fish.~~

~~*In 1880 Potsdam con- tained 48,447 inhabitants, mainly Protestant. The garri- son consists of about 7000 men.*~~

~~*Potsdam is almost entirely surrounded by a fringe of royal palaces, parks, and pleasure-grounds, which fairly substantiate its claim to the title of a "German Versailles." Immediately to the west is the park of Sans Souci, laid out by Frederick the Great, and largely extended by Frederick William IV. It is in the formal French style of the period, and is profusely embellished with primly- cut hedges and alleys, terraces, fountains, statuary, and artificial ruins. Adjacent to the palace is the famous windmill (now royal property) which its owner refused to sell to the king, meeting threatened violence by an appeal to the judges of Berlin; the whole story, however, is now doubted. A little farther on is the so-called Orangery,*~~

~~*Plate V.*~~

~~*600*~~

~~*an extensive edifice in the Italian style, containing numer- ous pictures and other works of art. The park also includes the Charlottenhof, a reproduction of a Pompeian_ villa. At the west end of the park stands the New Palace, a huge brick edifice 375 feet in length, erected by Frederick the Great at enormous expense in 1763-69, and now occu- pied by the crown prince of Germany. It contains other reminiscences of Frederick and Voltaire, a few pictures by ancient masters, a theatre, and a large hall gorgeously decorated with shells and minerals. The spacious build- ings at the back are devoted to the "Lehrbataillon," a battalion of infantry composed of draughts from differ- ent regiments trained here to ensure uniformity of drill throughout the army. To the north of Potsdam lies a small Russian village, established in 1826 to accommodate the Russian singers attached to the Prussian guards. A little to the east of it is the New Garden, containing the Marble Palace. The list of Potsdam palaces may be closed with two situated on the left bank of the Havel—one at Glienicke and the other on the hill of Babelsberg. The latter, a picturesque building in the English Gothic style, in the midst of a park also in the English taste, is the summier residence of the present emperor of Germany.*~~

~~*Potsdam was originally a Slavonic fishing-village named Potsdu- pimi, and is first mentioned in a document of 993. It did not, however, attain any importance until the Great Elector established a park and palace here about 1660; and even at the close of his reign it only contained 3000 inhabitants. Frederick William I, (1688-1740) greatly enlarged Potsdam, and his stiff military tastes — are reflected in the monotonous uniformity of the streets. Frederick the Great willingly continued his father's work, and is the real creator of the modern splendour of the town, of which his memory may be said to form the predominant interest. His successors have each contributed his quota towards the embellishment and extension of the town.*~~

~~*POTTER, Joun (c. 1674-1747), archbishop of Canter- bury, was the son of a linen-draper at Wakefield, York- shire, and was born about 1674. At the age of fourteen he entered University College, Oxford, and in 1693 he published, at the suggestion of the master of his college, various readings and notes on Plutarch's De audiendis poetts and Basil's Oratio ad juvenes. In 1694 he became a fellow of Lincoln College, and in 1697 his edition of Lycophron appeared. It was followed by his Archeologia Greca (2 vols. 8vo, 1697-99), once a very popular work. A reprint of his Lycophron in 1702 was dedicated to*~~

~~*TN eee*~~

~~*| Greevius, and the Antiquities was afterwards published*~~

~~*a: OT*~~

~~*in Latin in the Thesaurus of Gronovius. In 1704 he be- came chaplain to Archbishop Tenison, and shortly after- wards was made chaplain-in-ordinary to Queen Anne. From 1708 he was regius professor of divinity and canon of Christ Church, Oxford; and from 1715 he was bishop of Oxford. In the latter year appeared his edition of Clemens Alexandrinus (frequently reprinted and still valued). In 1707 he published a Discourse on Church Government, and he took a prominent part in the controversy with Hoadly, bishop of Bangor, being complimented by that author as the antagonist of whom he was most afraid. In January 1737 Potter was unexpectedly appointed to succeed Wake in the see of Canterbury. His primacy was in no way re- markable, but had the effect of checking the movement for revision*~~

~~*of the formularies and confessions of the church and of the subscription to them. He died on 10th October 1747. His Theological Works, consisting of sermons, charges, divinity lectures, and the Discourse on Church Government, were published in 3 vols. 8vo, in 1753.*~~

~~*POTTER, Patz (1625-1654), animal painter, was born at Enkhuizen, Holland, in 1625. He was instructed in art by his father, Peter Potter, a landscape and figure painter of some merit, and by the time he had attained his fifteenth year his productions were already much esteemed. At the age of twenty he settled at The Hague, and there married in 1650. He was patronized by Maurice, prince of Orange, for whom he painted the life-size picture of the Young Bull, now one of the most celebrated works in the gallery of The Hague. In 1652 he was induced by Burgomaster Tulk of Amsterdam to remove to that city. The constitution of the painter seems to have been feeble, and his health suffered from the unremitting diligence with which he pursued his art. He died in 1654 at the early age of twenty-nine.*~~

~~*His paintings are generally on a small scale ; his animals are de- signed with a careful accuracy which bears witness to the artist's close and constant study from nature ; while the landscape back- grounds are introduced with spirit and appropriateness. His colour is clear and transparent, his execution firm and finished without being laboured. He executed a series of some twenty etchings, mainly of animals, which are simple and direct in method and handling. Here, as in painting, his precocity was remarkable ; his large plate of the Herdsman, produced when he was only eighteen,*~~

~~*and that of the Shepherd, which dates from the following year, show him at his best as an accomplished master of the point.*~~

~~*POTTERY AND PO@ORCEHIAID*~~

~~*HE word "pottery" (Fr. poterte) in its widest sense | includes all objects made of clay, moulded into form while in a moist plastic state, and then hardened by fire. Clay, the most widely spread and abundant of all mineral substances, consists essentially of a hydrated sili- cate of alumina (see vol. x. p. 237), admixed, however, in almost all cases with various impurities.*~~

~~*Thus it usually contains a considerable proportion of free silica, lime, and oxides of iron, its colour chiefly depending on the last in- gredient. The white kaolin clays (see Kaoxrn) used in the manufacture of porcelain are the purest ; they consist of silicate of alumina, with 5 to 7 per cent. of potash, and only traces of lime, iron, and magnesia.*~~

~~*The making of pottery depends on the chemical change that takes place when clay is heated in the fire; the hydrated silicate of alumina becomes anhydrous, and, though the baked vessel can absorb mechanically a large quantity of water, the chemical state, and with it the hard- ness of the vessel, remains unaltered. A well-baked piece of clay is the most durable of all manufactured substances. In preparing clay for the potter it is above all things necessary that it should be worked and beaten, with suffi-*~~

~~*cient water to make it plastic, into a perfectly homogeneous mass. Any inequalities cause an irregular expansion during the firing, and the pot cracks or flies to pieces. In early times the clay was prepared by being kneaded by the hands or trampled by the feet (see Isa. xli. 25); modern manu- facturers prepare it on a larger scale by grinding it between mill-stones, and mixing it in a fluid state with an addi- tional quantity of silica, lime, and other substances. During the process of firing all clays shrink in volume, partly through the loss of water and partly on account of in- crease of density. What are called "fat" clays—those, that is to say, which are very plastic and unctuous—shrink very much, losing from one-third to one-fourth of their bulk ; they are also very liable to crack or twist during the firing. "Lean" clays—those that have a large percentage of free silica—shrink but little, and keep their form unaltered under the heat of the kiln ; they are not, however, so easy to mould into the required shape, and thus a certain com- promise is frequently required. Lean and fat clays are mixed together, or silica (sand or ground and calcined flints) is added to a fat clay in sufficient quantity to enable*~~

~~*| it to stand the firing. The same result may be attained*~~

~~*vitreous coatings to clay, whether enamel or glaze, is this. The materials are ground fine and mixed with water to the consistency of cream. mixture, or*~~

~~*the fluid is applied with a brush ; it is then set to dry, and finally fired in the kiln, which must be heated sufficiently to fuse the component parts of the glaze or enamel into one smooth vitreous coating, while on the other hand it must not be hot enough to soften or melt the clay body of the vessel. The use of oxide of lead enables*~~

~~*by the addition of broken pots, crushed or ground, an ex-*~~

~~*pedient practised during the earliest stages of the develop-*~~

~~*ment of the art of pottery.*~~

~~*Classification—Many attempts have been made to classify pottery and porcelain according to their mode of manufacture. The classification of M. Brongniart (7rasté des Arts Céramiques, Paris, 1854) has been followed by most later writers. With some modifications it is as follows :—*~~

~~*(a) Bisewit.—Simple baked clay, porous and without gloss. Example, a common modern flower-pot.*~~

~~*(b) Glossy.—Fine clay covered with an almost imperceptible vitreous glaze. Example, most Greek vases.*~~

~~*(c) Glazed.—Clay covered with a perceptible coating of glass. Example, common white earthenware plates.*~~

~~*(d) Enamelled.—Clay covered with a vitreous*~~

~~*1. Soft pottery, easily fusible.*~~

~~*601*~~

~~*The pot is dipped in the*~~

~~*a glaze to be applied to a clay body which would not stand the high temperature necessary to combine and fuse a pure silico-alkaline glaze. In order to prevent the glaze or enamel from blistering or cracking off there must be a certain similarity of substance between the clay body and the vitreous coating. A fine silicious glaze or enamel will not adhere to a soft*~~

~~*fat clay unless the proportion of silica in the latter is increased either by admixture of a harder, more silicious clay, or by the addition of pure silica either*~~

~~*coating made opaque by white oxide of*~~

~~*U tin. Example, Italian majolica. (a) Very silicious clay covered with a lead vitreous glaze. Example, old grey*~~

~~*in the form of sand or of ground flint. The Potter's Wheel.—All pottery, except the rudest and Potter's most primitive sorts, is moulded or "thrown" by the aid wheel.*~~

~~*"Tech- nical terms.*~~

~~*- forming ornaments in relief, as in the case of some Roman*~~

~~*2. Stoneware, very hard and infus- ible.*~~

~~*Flemish ware.*~~

~~*(b) Silicious clay covered with a salt glaze. Example, a modern brown ginger — beer bottle.*~~

~~*(a) Hard Porcelain.—Natural kaolinic clay covered with a felspar glaze. Example, porcelain of China and Japan.*~~

~~*(b) Soft Porcelain.—Artificial paste covered with a lead vitreous glaze. Example, early Sévres porcelain.*~~

~~*This classification is necessarily imperfect, some pottery coming under two heads, as, for instance, much of the Italian majolica, which is both enamelled and glazed. For this reason in the following article pottery will be treated according to its age and country, not according to its method of manufacture. Porcelain differs from pottery in being whiter, harder, less fusible, and (most essential difference) in being slightly translucent. The paste of which it is formed is a purer silicate of alumina than the clay of which pottery is made. It will therefore be de- scribed under separate heads (p. 633 s¢., infra).*~~

~~*For the sake of clearness it will be well to define the sense in which technical words relating to pottery are used in this article. Body or paste is the clay of which the main bulk of a pot is made. Slip is clay finely ground and mixed with water to the consistency of cream. It is usually applied over the whole surface of a vessel in order to give it a finer face or a different colour from that of the body of the pot. It is also sometimes applied partially,*~~

~~*3. Porcelain, white, semi- transpar — ent, and only fused at a high temperature.*~~

~~*ware and the coarse 17th-century pottery of Staffordshire described below. Glaze is a thin coating of glass, evenly fused over the surface of a clay vessel to make it harder, and also to render it impervious to water. Clay simply baked without a vitreous coating is called bescuit; its surface is dull, and it is more or less porous. The sim- plest and oldest form of glaze is a pure silicate of soda ; the addition of oxide of lead makes the glaze more fusible, but less hard and durable. For decorative purposes glazes may be coloured by various metallic oxides without losing their transparency. namel is a glaze with the addition of some substance to render it opaque. Binoxide of tin has the peculiar property that when even a small quantity is added to a transparent glass it renders it opaque and white without otherwise altering its character. Great con- fusion has been caused in various works on pottery by a careless use of the terms "glaze" and "enamel"; they are both of the nature of glass, but the best distinction to make is to apply the word "enamel" to a vitreous coating that is opaque, and the word "glaze" to one that is trans- parent; both may be coloured. The method of applying*~~

~~*of a very simple contrivance, a small round table fixed on a revolving pivot. Fig. 1, from a tomb-painting at Thebes, shows its simplest form. The potter at intervals gives a spin to the table, which continues to re- volve for some time without a fresh impulse. This form of wheel, used by the Egyptians (as is shown by existing fragments of pottery) about 4000 B.c., is still employed without any alteration by the pot- g ters of many parts of India. A later improvement introduced in Egypt under the Ptolemies was to have another larger circular table, fixed lower down on the same axis, which the potter*~~

~~*set in movement with his feet, and thus was able to keep up a regular speed and leave his hands free for the manipulation of the clay (see fig. 2). No process in any handicraft is more beautiful than that of a potter ER moulding a vessel on the wheel. The ease with which the plastic clay answers to the touch of the hand, and rises or falls, taking a whole succession of symme- trical shapes, and seeming, as it were, instinct with the life and thought of the potter, makes this art beautiful and striking beyond all others, in which the desired form can only be at- tained by comparatively slow Frc. 2.—Potter's wheel of the and laborious methods. Ancient time of the Ptolemies, moved poetry is full of allusions to this. a , a warts es ond Homer (1., vile 600) omer 65, the wheel on Se risk pares the rhythm of a dance to the measured spin of a potter's wheel; and the rapid ease with which a clay vessel is made and remade in a new form is described by Jeremiah (xviii. 3-4) in one of his most forcible similes (compare Horace, A. P., 21-22). Among the Egyptians of the Ptolemaic period the potter was used asa type of the Creator. Nouf or Knoum, the divine spirit, and Pthah, the creator of the mundane egg, are symbolized by human figures moulding clay on the potter's wheel.! The wheel and egg are shown above in fig. 2. 1 See Rossellino, Monumenti dell' Egitto, pl. xxi. and xxii, 1844, XIX. —76*~~

~~*Fig. 1.—Potter moulding a vessel on the wheel, from a painting in a tomb at Thebes about 1800 B.c. Compare the wheel on the left in fig. 55.*~~

~~*Kilns.*~~

~~*Pre- historic.*~~

~~*602*~~

~~*Kilns for firing Pottery.—The earliest form of kiln, as represented in Egyptian wall-paintings, is a tall circular chamber of brick, with a perforated floor near the bot- tom. The fuel was introduced from an opening on one side, and raked in under the brick floor. The pottery to be baked was piled up in the upper part of the chamber. Fig. 3, from a potter's votive tablet from Corinth, shows an early Greek form of kiln, with a place for the fuel on one side, and a door in the side of the up- per chamber through*~~

which the pottery could be put in and withdrawn. The Cor- inthian kiln differs from the Egyptian kiln in being domed

Fie. 3.—Early Greek pottery-kiln, about 700-600 3.c., from a painted votive tablet found at Corinth, now in the Louvre. The

over, but it is the section shows the probable construction of

same in principle, the kiln. 7

Even at the present day kilns shaped almost exactly like

this early Greek one are still largely used.

SECTION J.—PREHISTORIC.

The art of making pottery is one of the most extreme antiquity ; with the exception of the cave-dwellers of the Drift or Paleolithic period it was practised by all known prehistoric races from the Neolithic age downwards. The sepulchral barrows of Britain and other European countries have supplied vast stores of this earliest kind of pottery. It is mostly formed of coarse clay, generally brown in colour, though sometimes grey or reddish; some few specimens are fine in texture and have a slightly glossy surface. The clay, while moist, has been kneaded with some care, and is often mixed with a proportion of gravel, coarse sand, quartz crystals, or pounded pottery. The more carefully made specimens, chiefly those of the bronze and iron ages, are frequently covered with a smooth slip, made of the same clay as the body, but finely pounded and thoroughly mixed. All are alike "hand-made," without any assistance from the potter's wheel; some of the smaller ones are scooped out of a solid ball of clay, while in some cases great skill has been shown in the building up, by the unaided hand, of the thin walls of larger vessels, some of which are so round and neatly formed as to appear at first sight to be wheel- made. This, however, is never the case with the pottery of the three great prehistoric periods.

~~*The shapes found in the sepulchral barrows of Britain, France, Scandinavia, and other countries are usually classified thus—(1) cinerary urns, (2) food vessels, (3) drinking-cups, and (4) the so-called "incense cups" (see fig. 4).*~~

~~*(1) Cinerary urns, usually found full of burned bones, are the largest, varying from 12 to 18 inches in height. They are mostly less ornamented and less carefully made than the smaller vessels. Most have their decoration confined to a band round the upper part of the pot, or often only a projecting flange lapped round the whole rim. A few have small handles, formed of pierced knobs of clay, and sometimes projecting rolls of clay looped, as it were, all*~~

~~*round the urn. (2) Food-vessels va i in si) ry considerably in size and form. Some are shaped like a tea-cup, with a handle on one side ; others*~~

~~*»*~~

~~*POTTERY,*~~

~~*[PREHISTORIC.*~~

~~*are like small cinerary urns, either quite plain or with pierced knob-handles and bands of ornaments incised or impressed. (8) Drink-*~~

~~*" Tncense cups."*~~

~~*Drinking-cup. Domestic bowl.*~~

~~*Fig. 4.—Various forms of prehistoric pottery.*~~

~~*ing-cups, mostly from 6 to 8 inches high, vary but little in form, and are usually completely covered with ornament. They are often made with considerable care and skill, and are not ungraceful in shape. The names given to the preceding three classes possibly express their real use, but the name of the fourth class, "incense cups," is purely imaginary. Under this head are comprised a number of small] vessels of very varied shape, some with their sides pierced through with square or lozenge-shaped openings,*~~

~~while others, almost globular in shape, have several pierced knob-handles, as if for suspension. Some are quite plain, and others are covered with ornament. Their use is unknown; one possible suggestion is that they were intended to carry fire from some sacred source to light the funeral pyre. Canon Greenwell, probably the best authority on this subject, believes, contrary to the opinion of many anti- quaries, that none of the above classes of barrow-pottery were intended for domestic use, but that they were made.solely to be buried with the dead. He considers that a fifth class of pottery, chiefly in the form of bowls, which has occasionally been found, not in barrows but in dwellings, is the only kind that was actually used for domestic purposes by prehistoric man (see Greenwell, British Barrows, 1877). ,~~

~~The ornament which is often lavishly applied on prehistoric pottery is of especial interest. It frequently consists of lines of smal] dots impressed from a notched piece of wood or metal, arranged in various patterns—crosses, chevrons, or zigzags. All the patterns were stamped into the body of the pot before it was hardened by fire. The lines were frequently made by pressing a twisted thong of skin against the moist clay, so that a sort of spiral sunk line was produced. Other bands of ornament were made by wooden stamps ; the end of a hollow round stick was used to form a row of small circles, or a round stick was used sideways to produce semicircular depressions. In some cases the incised lines or dots have been filled up with a white slip of pipeclay. Con- siderable taste and invention are shown by many of these combined ornaments, and a certain richness of decorative effect is produced on some of the best drinking-cups ; but one thing is to be noted: all the main lines are straight, no wavy lines or circles appearing, except in very rare instances—a fact which points to the very limited artistic development attained by the prehistoric races.~~

~~Prehistoric pottery has sometimes been described as "sun-baked," but this is not the case; however imperfectly baked, the pieces have all been permanently hardened by fire, otherwise they would certainly not have lasted to our time. This was done in a very rough and imperfect manner, not in a kiln but in an open fire, so that in some cases the pots have received a superficial black colour from the smoke of the fuel. Great quantities of this pottery have been found in the sepulchral barrows of Great Britain and~~

~~*Ireland ; those from the latter country are usually very superior in neatness of execution to the British specimens. The British Museum is specially rich in this class of pottery, chiefly the result of excava- tions made in British barrows by Canon Greenwell.*~~

~~*For prehistoric pottery, see Greenwell, British Barrows, 1877; Lubbock, Prehistoric Times, 1865; Boyd Dawkins, Early Man in Britain, 1880; D. Wilson, Prehistoric Man, 3d ed., 1876, and Prehistoric Annals of Scotland, 1851 ; Keller, Lake-Dwellings in Switzerland (tr., by Lee, 1878); Bonstetten, Recuetl @ Antiquités Suisses, 1855-57; Perrin, Etude Préhistorique, 1870; Troyon, Habitations Lacustres, 1860 ; Borlase, Nenia Cornubie, 1872.*~~

~~*Mate-*~~

~~*| rials.*~~

~~*Ename!l- led clay plaques.*~~

~~*ANCIENT EGYPTIAN. |*~~

~~*Section I].—ANcIENT EGYPTIAN.*~~

~~*But few examples remain which date from the time of the earlier dynasties of Egypt, though from the XVIIIth Dynasty downwards a great quantity of specimens exist. Broken fragments, embedded in the clay bricks of which some of the oldest pyramids are built, supply us with a few imperfect samples whose date can be fixed. The early pottery of Egypt is of many varieties of quality: some is formed of coarse brown clay moulded by hand without the aid of the wheel; other specimens, thin and carefully wheel-made, are of fine red clay, with a slight surface gloss, something like the "'Samian" pottery of the Romans. Some fragments of brown clay have been found, covered with a smooth slip made of a creamy white or yellowish clay. The early uss of fine coloured enamels, afterwards brought to such perfection in Egypt, is shown by the enamelled clay plaques in black, white, and greenish blue which decorated the doorway of the great step-pyramid at Sakkara. Each plaque has a pierced projection at the back, so that it could be firmly fixed by means of a wood or metal dowel.*~~

~~*Egypt is rich in materials for pottery, both glazed and enamelled. The finest of clays is washed down and deposited by the Nile; the sandy deserts supply pure silica ; and a great part of the soil is saturated with the alkali necessary for the composition of vitreous enamels and glazes. In spite, however, of this abundance of materials the Egyptians never learned to apply either their enamels or their glazes, both of great beauty, to their larger works in pottery made of the fine Nile clay. The reason probably was that the clay was too fat, and there- fore a vitreous coating would have flaked off during the firing, while they had not discovered the simple expedient of mixing with the native clay an addition of sand (silica), which would have enabled both glazes and enamels to form a firm coating over the body of the vessel. The colours used for Egyptian enamels and glazes are very varied, and of great beauty and brilliance. The glazes themselves are pure alkaline silicates, free from lead. The enamels are the same, with the addition of oxide of tin. The metallic oxides used to give the colours are these,—various shades of blue and green, protoxide of copper, or more rarely cobalt ; purple and violet, oxide of manganese ; yellow, iron or antimoniate of lead; red, sub-oxide of copper or iron ; black, magnetic oxide of iron or manganese. The white enamel is simply silicate of soda with oxide of tin. The blues and greens, whether used in transparent*~~

~~*'glazes or opaque enamels, are often of extreme magnifi-*~~

~~*cence of colour, in an endless variety of tints,—turquoise, ultramarine, deep indigo, and all shades of blue passing into green. The most remarkable specimens of Egyptian enamel work are some clay plaques or slabs, about 10 inches high, which were used to decorate the walls of Rameses II.'s palace at Tel al-Yahudfya, in the Delta (14th cent. B.c.). These have figures of men and animals executed in many different colours in the most complicated and ingenious manner. They are partly modelled in slight relief, and then covered with coloured enamels ; in other parts a sort of mosaic has been made by mixing fine clay and enamels into soft pastes, the design being fitted together and modelled in these coloured pastes while moist. The slab was then fired, and the enamel pastes were at once vitrified and fixed in their places by the heat. A third process applied to these elaborate slabs was to fit into cavities left for them certain small pieces of coloured glass or brilliant enamels, giving the effect of precious stones,*~~

~~*which were fused into their places by a second firing. The chief figures on the plaques are processions of captives, about 8 inches high ;*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*‘ outline with figures and hieroglyphs, have*~~

~~*603*~~

~~*the enamel flesh is varied according to the nationality of the prisoners: negroes are black, others white, red, or yellow. Some of the dresses are represented with great richness: various embroidered or textile patterns of the most minute scale are shown by enamel inlay of many colours, and even jewel ornaments are shown by the inserted bits of glass; the dress of some Assyrian captives has patterns of great beauty and richness, —the sacred tree between the guardian beasts, and other figures. Besides these elaborate figure-reliefs an enormous number of smaller pieces of clay inlaid with different-coloured pastes were used to form a sort of mosaic wall-decoration in this wonderful palace, the ruins of which have supplied a perfect museum of all kinds and methods of enamelled work as applied to pottery. The British Museum and the Louvre have the finest specimens of these wall-slabs (see Birch, Ancient Pottery, p. 51, 1873).*~~

~~*The term “Egyptian porcelain” has sometimes been given Mummy to the small mummy-figures in brilliant blues and greens. figures.*~~

~~*This is a misnomer. The little figures, about 3 to 6 inches high, of which immense numbers have been found, mostly dating from about the XXth Dynasty downwards, are simply formed of sand (silica) with a little alkali, and only sufficient clay to cement them together, so that they could retain the form given them by the mould into which they were pressed. The result of analysis is silica 92, alumina 4, and a slight but varying proportion of soda, They are covered with a silicious glaze, brilliantly coloured with copper oxide, and are sometimes painted under the glaze with manganese, a deep purple-violet. A few of these figures, and also small statuettes of deities, have had oxide of tin mixed with the paste; the figure has then been exposed to sufficient heat to fuse the whole into one homogeneous vitreous mass, and thus the statuette has become a solid body of fine blue enamel. A*~~

~~few small objects—such as libation cups, bowls, and chalice-like goblets—were also made of the same sandy paste, covered with blue-green glaze. They are thick and clumsy owing to the very unplastic nature of their paste, which necessitated their being pressed in a mould, not | wheel-made. The splendour of their | colour, however, i makes them objects of great beauty ; they usually have a little painting, lightly executed in outline with manganese purple, generally a circle of fishes swimming or designs taken from the lotus-plant (see fig. 5).~~

~~aie Fic, 5.—Egyptian blue-glazed pottery.~~

~~During the XVIIIth and XIXth Dynasties and later Wall- pottery was used in many ways for wall-decoration. tiles.~~

~~Bricks or tiles of coarse brown clay were covered fine white slip and glazed with brilliant colours. Another method was a sort of in- lay, formed by stamping incised patterns _ into slabs of clay and filling up the sinkings # with a semi-fluid clay of some other colour, exactly like the 16th-century Oiron ware. A number of brilliant wall-tiles covered with deep blue glaze, and painted in black~~

~~with a~~

~~y~~

~~Fic. 6.—Egypt- ian Canopic vase.~~

~~been found in many places in Lower Egypt ; the painting is very simple and decorative in effect, drawn with much skill and precision of touch.~~

~~The Canopic vases are an important class and great Canopic~~

~~quantities have been found in Egyptian tombs. generally made of plain brown-red clay, and have a lid in~~

~~604~~

~~the shape of a human head. On them hieroglyphs are coarsely painted in black or colours (see fig. 6). They contained parts of the viscera of the~~

~~*corpse. The mummies themselves are frequently decked out with pectoral plates, necklaces, and other ornaments, made of clay covered with blue and other coloured énamels. Some of the pectoral plates are very elaborate works of the same class as the figure-reliefs from Tel al-Yahudtya, richly decorated with inlay of different-coloured pastes and enamels.*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*[ASSYRIAN*~~,

~~*SECTION Ti].—ASSYRIAN.*~~

~~*But little remains to us of the pottery of the primitive Accadian races of Babylonia and Assyria. It was all extremely simple and undecorated, partly hand-made and partly wheel-made, mostly graceful and natural in form, owing its beauty chiefly to the simple elegance of its shape and the fine material of which it was made,—the close-grained light yellow and brown clays in which the country between the Tigris and the Euphrates is so*~~

~~*: During the Ptolemaic period a quantity of graceful and é has = ae a pottery ae : i rich. The great city of Babylon—"figulis munitam period. made in fine red and brown urbem," as Juvenal (x. 171) calls. it—was essentially a*~~

~~*clay, mostly without any painted decoration. Some of the vases are of good form, owing tothe influence of Greek taste (see fig. 7); others are coarsely decorated with rude painting in blue, green, red, yellow, and brown, either in simple bands or with lotus and other flower-patterns (see fig. 8). Both the body of the vases and the colours are usually quite devoid of any gloss. The duller colours are various*~~

~~"~~

~~*Se ee eee Se eee*~~

~~*Fig. 7.—Egyptian pottery under the Ptolemies, showing Greek*~~

~~*brick city, and depended for its magnificence to a great extent on such decoration as the potter could supply. Herodotus and Ctesias describe its lofty circuits of brick walls, the two inner walls lined with bricks enamelled in various colours, with figure-subjects, scenes of war and hunting (see BaByton). The technical methods and enamel pigments used in Assyria and Babylonia were for the most part the same as those used in Egypt; but the Assyrian potters understood the use of oxide of lead as a flux to mix both with glazes and enamels,—an admixture which, though it to some extent injures the durability of the vitreous surface, enables it to be applied with greater ease, and to less silicious clays, without fear of its cracking off or blistering in the kiln.*~~

~~*indinenes dn the alinpes, The ruined palaces of Babylon and Nineveh have supplied Painted*~~

~~*earths, ochre,and white chalk, ‘ great quantities of bricks painted in various colours, some bricks.*~~

~~*while the bright blues and greens are produced by mixing*~~

~~*powdered enamel of the required colour with light-coloured clay, the depth of the tint de- , aoe A pending on the proportion of } — | the clay or chalk.*~~

~~*Certain very gaudy and |; ugly pots were made to imr ,i tate granite and steatite ves- sels (see fig. 8). They are of brown clay, rudely dabbed | and speckled with brown, red, yellow, and grey colours to represent the markings of the stone ; others are yellow, with grey streaks —imitations of marble ; most have a painted white tablet, on which are hieroglyphs in black. The pigments are very shiny in texture, and appear to be unfired. Among the most deli- cate and carefully made kinds of Egyptian pottery are the round flat flasks shaped rather like the medieval “ pil- grim-bottle” (see fig. 9). They are sometimes made of blue paste, fine clay coloured. with oxide of copper, and are delicately enriched with im- pressed ornaments, stamped from a mould, in low relief or slightly incised. The orna- ment is often designed like a gold necklace hung round the bottle ; others have tablets with inscriptions. The surface is biscuit; and the flasks range in colour from light turquoise to deep ultramarine, the colour not being*~~

~~*superficial but of equal strength all through the paste. Small vases of other forms, made of this same material, also occur, but they are rare.*~~

~~*Fic. 8.—Egyptian pottery with painted ornament aud sham marbling.*~~

—

~~¥~~

~~*Fig. 9.—Egyptian pottery made of fine blue paste.*~~

~~*Literature.—Wilkinson, Ancient Egyptians (ed. Birch, 1878) ; Birch, Ancient Pottery, 1878. A large number of works on ancient Egypt have some account of the pottery, but none are specially ee Pe subject. epee: valuable contribution to the*~~

~~*‘ gical arrangement of Egyptian pottery is contained in an — by Flinders Petrie, published in ibs Livhinae deol Journal ae vol. xl p. 269. See also Pierret, Dictionnaire d’ Archéo-*~~

~~*ogue Egyptienne, 1875; De Rougé, Etudes Egyptologiques, 1880; and Mariette, Monuments du Musée… a Boulagq, 1864.*~~

~~*_as early as the 12th century B.c.*~~

~~*The colours applied are of two distinct classes,—(1) thoroughly wtrified enamels, often coarse and bubbly in texture, and applied in con- siderable body, which are mostly brilliant though harmoni- ous in tint, with a hard vitreous surface ; (2) earth colours, chiefly ochres in various shades of quiet yellows and browns, owing their colours to different iron oxides and a pure white made of lime. The earth colours are very thinly applied, and have no surface gloss. Paintings executed in this manner were neither so hard nor so durable as those in the vitrified enamels, and were prob- ably used mainly for panels of ceilings and the upper parts of walls, which were out of the reach of ordinary wear or injury. In a few paintings both methods are combined, The bricks themselves are of light brown or yellowish clay, with which a considerable quantity of straw was mixed. This was burned out in the firing, and so cavities were left, making the bricks light and*~~

~~*porous. Many of the enamelled bricks are moulded in relief, with simple patterns of leaves, interlacing bands, waves, and the like, and were used to form cornices and running bands above and below the flat friezes or dados painted with human figures. The reliefs are picked out in colours with enamel, white, yellow, deep orange, soft red, brown, green, and blue, the enamel being sometimes nearly one- eighth of an inch thick. A common size for the bricks is 12 to 14 inches long by 6 to 7 wide, and about 4 inches thick. Sometimes two or three courses go to make a single moulded band. The British Museum and the Louvre possess the best specimens of these enamelled architectural features. The finest examples of pictured bricks were found in the great palace at Nimrud; they appear, judging from the imperfect fragments that remain, to illustrate a victorious expedition by the Assyrians against a foreign nation. The paintings represent long lines of captives, and processions of the conquering Assyrians on foot, on horseback, and in chariots. They are executed on grounds of different colours—dull green, yellow, and blue—and show a strong feeling for harmony of colour and great skill in decorative arrangement ; the figures are about 9 inches high. Some complete paint- ings were executed on one slab or panel. A fine one,*~~

~~*_ decora- ‘) tions.*~~

~~*Literary use of pottery.*~~

~~*Vases and vessels.*~~

~~*ASSYRIAN. |*~~

~~*about 9 inches by 12, also found at Nimrud, and now in the -British Museum, has a picture of the Assyrian king under a fringed canopy giving audience to an officer. The king is followed by an attendant eunuch.*~~

~~*In addition to figure-subjects and ornaments, large wall- surfaces were covered with cuneiform inscriptions, having letters about 14 inches high painted in white and yellow on blue or green grounds; these are executed on large slabs of coarse brown clay, to which a smooth surface, fit for painting, has been given by a thin coating or slip of fine- ground yellowish clay. Large slabs with pendants for ceilings, painted in the same way with*~~

very graceful patterns, have been found, all in simple earth colours. Another even more magnificent application of the potter's art to wall-decoration was by the use of coloured enamel pastes, like those described under the pottery of Egypt. These are reliefs modelled by hand, or pressed into clay moulds and then touched up by a modelling tool. The smaller ones, with delicately-executed figures in low relief, are all in paste of one colour—blue—with sufficient enamel added to the clay to give it a brilliant tint, but not sufficient for complete vitrification. Other fragments exist of life-size or even colossal figures, both in the round and in high relief, worked in pastes of many colours in a kind of mosaic fashion, extremely brilliant and striking in effect.

The most remarkable application of pottery in Assyria and Babylonia was its use for literary records. Tablets, cylinders, and polygonal prisms were impressed with cunei- form characters in the moist clay, and then baked, thus forming the most imperishable of all kinds of MSS. (ep. BABYLONIA, vol, iii. p. 191). The large inscribed cylinders and prisms were made hollow, and turned on the potter's wheel. The prisms were first moulded in a circular shape, the sides being afterwards made flat by slicing. All are circular inside, and bear distinct ring-like marks, showing the movement of the wheel as they were scooped out by the potter's thumb.

The vases and domestic vessels of Assyria may be divided into four classes, —(1) plain biscuit clay, undecorated ; (2) biscuit clay with painted decorations ; (3) fine clay stamped with minute reliefs; (4) clay glazed or enamelled.

(1) By far the greater proportion of the pottery belongs to the first class. It is frequently graceful in shape, is well made and

baked, and is of a fine close clay, generally light in colour. Fig. 10

Ww

eo eta een meant ae

POTTERY

patterns in gold leaf, applied after the ware was fired. (3) A very fine sort of Assyrian pottery, of which examples exist dating from the 10th to the 8th century B.c., is made of a close-grained ivory-white clay, or else a hard greyish black clay; the surface is biscuit, and is ornamented with bands of human figures in relief, —soldiers, captives, royal personages, and others, with representa- tions of cities, all most minutely executed, the figures scarcely an inch high. Other bands have cuneiform inscriptions, also in deli- cate relief. The bands appear to have been formed by rolling a cylinder die or mould over the surface of the clay while soft and moist. The few specimens of this pottery that have been found are mostly in the form of cylindrical drinking-cups. This method of decoration is one largely used in the earliest variety of Etruscan

pottery. (4) Glazed and enamelled pottery (see fig. 11) is more

•

†;

8 :

: 21

º

”

†

†

y é = Y

Fig. 11.—Assyrian glazed and enamelled pottery.

abundant ; it consists chiefly of small articles of fine clay, bottles, two-handled jugs, miniature amphore, and pilgrim-flasks, very carefully made,

~~*and apparently articles of luxury. Some are of white clay, covered with a colourless glaze of silicate of soda, rendered more fusible by the addition of oxide of lead. Partly owing to this addition the glaze is generally in a very decom- posed state, often presenting the most brilliant iridescent colours. Other examples are coated in a similar way, except that the trans- parent glaze is tinted a brilliant blue or green with oxides of copper, very like the blue glaze so much used in Egypt, but usually less hard and bright in colour. A few small specimens have been discovered coated with a white tin enamel. Both the glazed and the enamelled pottery is undecorated by any painting.*~~

~~*At Warka (the Chaldean Erech) a large number of Clay very curious clay coffins were found in cave-tombs stacked coffins.*~~

~~*closely one upon another. They are made of coarse clay, and bear outside patterns rudely stamped in blunt relief ; the whole is covered with a plumbo-silicious green glaze. They are about 7 feet long and very peculiar in form; the body was introduced through an oval opening at the head, over which a similarly glazed clay lid fitted closely. These coffins are probably not earlier than the Sasanian period. Clay coffins of much greater antiquity have been found in Babylonia, but they are of plain biscuit clay.*~~

~~*Literature.—Layard, various works on Nineveh and Babylon ; Rich, Babylon and Persepolis ; Loftus, Chaldxa and Susiana, 1857 ; Oppert, Expédition Scientifique en Mésopotamie; Lepsius, Denk- mdler, part ii. p. 168; Botta, Monwment de Ninive, 1847-50; Place, Ninive et ? Assyrie, 1866-69.*~~

~~*Section [V.—PHaNICIAN AND OTHER ARCHAIC CLASSES.*~~

~~*The discoveries of recent years have opened out a new Pheni-*~~

~~*field in the history of the origin and growth of Hellenic art, ea pottery.*~~

~~*<--------~- 9"_---=----.---*~~

~~*Sinetron AR aoa cengiee*~~

~~*Fic. 10.—Assyrian biscuit pottery.*~~

~~*shows some of the commonest forms. Some specimens have cunei- form inscriptions incised with a pointed tool in the same way as the cylinder letters. The coarser clays are usually covered with a fine whitish slip, and a rather rare variety of the pottery is made throughout of a close-grained almost white clay. One sort of pottery, of which very few specimens have been found, has simple patterns incised on the grey body of the vessel; these patterns were then made conspicuous by being filled in with white clay, a method of inlay like that used in Egypt. (2) Very few examples of the second class are known. Some vases of brown clay, covered with white slip, have rude paintings of human figures, bowmen and other soldiers, executed in brown outline, with rapid and skilful touch. Others have cuneiform inscriptions and geometrical floral patterns painted in silica and lime-white with yellow and brown ochres. They appear to belong to the 9th century B.c. Both the clay body and the earth pigments are quite free from any vitreous gloss in all this class of ware. A few fragments have been found of a coarse brown pottery, decorated with simple*~~

~~–~~

~~*especially as relating to pottery. Excavations in Cyprus, Rhodes, Thera (Santorin), the plains of Troy, Mycene, Attica, and the coasts of southern Italy have revealed the existence of an abundant class of pottery of great antiquity, a large part of which, in its forms and decora- tion, appears to have been due, directly or indirectly, to the Phoenicians. The designs are of a curiously complex character. Purely Assyrian motives, such as the sacred tree with its guardian "cherubs," are mingled with figures and ornaments peculiar to Egypt; other characteristics which modify and blend these two styles seem due to the Pheenicians themselves ; while, lastly, various local influ- ences are shown in the representations of such plants and animals as were commonest in the special place where the pottery happened to be made. Possibly some of the designs, such as the sacred tree of Assyria, might be traced farther back still, to the distant Asiatic home of the Indo-European races; but any derivation of this kind would, in our present state of knowledge, be purely conjectural.*~~

~~*Forms and mate- rials.*~~

~~*The islands of Thera, Rhodes, and Cyprus, which were colonized by the Phoenicians at a very early period (see Puantcta, vol. xviii. p. 804 sq.), have supplied large quantities of archaic pottery, ornamented with charac- teristically Phoenician patterns and figures. The equally rich finds of pottery from Mycene and the Troad, though not free from Pheenician influence, have mostly a more native style of decoration. Though in some few cases the finding of Egyptian objects with dated hieroglyphs sug- gests a probable age for the pottery they were found with, yet in the main it is impossible to give even an approx! mate date to this large class of archaic pottery. Its pro- duction evidently extended over many centuries, and little or no help towards a chronological classification is given by any clearly-defined stages of artistic development. Some of the earlier specimens may possibly be as old as the 18th century B.C. (scarabs of Amenhotep III. were found with pottery in Rhodes), while later ones, not very different in style, were probably made as late as the 8th century."*~~

~~*Forms and Materials of Archaie Pottery.—There is a special charm about this early pottery. Graceful as the Greek vases of the best period of art are, there is some- thing rigid and slightly mechanical in their highly-finished beauty, their polished surface, and their shape, accurately produced after some fixed model, from which but little deviation was permitted. Endless varieties of form occur in archaic pottery, changing with the mood and indi- viduality of each potter ; full of spirit and life, in their easy grace and the multiplicity of their flowing lines, these simple clay vessels give one—more perhaps than any other works of art—that keen esthetic pleasure which consists in a retrospective sympathy with the joy that the artist took in his own handiwork. Extreme fertility of inven- tion, as well as the utmost freedom of touch in the manipulation of the revolving mass of clay, are its chief characteristics. Fig. 12 gives some of the many forms.*~~

~~=_=>~~

~~*Fie. 12.—Shapes of archaic pottery. It is usually thin, light, and well baked, formed either of pale buff, whitish, or straw-coloured clay ; or, if a darker clay is used, the surface is generally covered with a fine white slip composed of silica, lime, and a little alumina. This forms a ground for the*~~

~~*painting, which is executed in ochre earths, browns, and reds of different shades, the*~~

~~*colours of which are due to oxides of iron. Most of the*~~

~~*pottery is biscuit, clay ground and painted ornament being * See Schliemann, Mycene (1877), Tro hs , A y (1875), and IZéos (1880) ; Cesnola, Cyprus, 1877 ; Dumont, Les Céramiques as la rh reg Salzmann, Vécropole de Camiros, 1874-75.*~~

~~*PrOT THEY*~~

~~*[PH@NICIAN AND ARCHAIC.*~~

~~*alike free from any gloss; but in some cases silica and an alkali (probably carbonate of soda) have been added to the ochre pigment, which has thus become vitrified in the kiln and acquired a glossy surface. This does not occur among the earlier specimens.*~~

~~*Enameled Pottery—In some of the tombs in A'gina and Rhodes a quantity of small vases, statuettes, and other objects have been found, executed under Egyptian influence, with decoration of various coloured enamels. The colours used and the methods of manipulation re- semble the enamel work of Egypt so closely as to need no special description. Some fine pilgrim-flasks of blue and green have blundered copies of hieroglyphs and repre-sentations of Egyptian deities incised in the moist clay. Less purely Egyptian in style are certain small vases (see fig. 13), coarsely ornamented with bands and chevrons in various enamels—white, blue, green, purple-brown, and yellow. The Louvre and the British Museum have the best specimens of these. Small vases, ex- actly similar in design and execution to those from AXgina and Rhodes, have been found in the tombs of Vulci and other places in Etruria, probably brought there by Pheenician traders, to whose inter- course with Egypt and knowledge of the Egyptian designs and mechanical pro-*~~

~~*'Fria. 13.—Enamelled*~~

~~*cesses the existence of the enamelled pot- pottery from tombs*~~

~~*tery of Rhodes is probably due. Other ™ ,Rhodes, made 3 ; : under Egyptian in-*~~

~~*specimens have been found in the re- fyence.*~~

~~*cently discovered Etruscan necropolis on*~~

~~*the Esquiline in Rome.? One curious variety of early pottery is of a fine glossy red like the later Samian ware. Its smooth surface of rich red is due to the application of a thin finely-ground mixture of silica, soda, and some alu- mina, forming a vitreous enamel to which the opaque red colour was given by a large proportion of oxide of iron*~~

~~*(see fig. 14). Some of this red pottery is of extreme anti- aie A*~~

~~*)*~~

~~*| ! *= (c | y ; V*~~

~~*’¥Fia. 14.—Prehistoric red pottery from the Troad and Mycene.*~~

~~*quity; it is either smooth and undecorated, or has rudely- incised hatchings and zig-zags, scratched down to the clay body of the vessel through the red enamel. Another variety of very early pottery from Mycenz and the Troad is of a hard black clay, with glossy surface (see fig. 15).*~~

~~*Painted Ornament on Archaic Vases.—This may be divided roughly into four classes. (1) Hatchings, concentric circles, chevrons, and other simple com- binations of lines, arranged fre- quently in designs obviously suggested by matting or textile fabrics, and also various ar- rangements of spirals, apparently taken from patterns used in metal-work. Some of the designs of this class seem*~~

~~*2 See Ann. Inst. 1882,p.2*~~

~~*A*~~

~~*wenn n nnn nn nana nme Gl nnnnnnnnn-nnneenonn=*~~

~~*Fig. 15.—Prehistoric black pottery from the Troad and Mycene.*~~

~~*Enamel- led vases, C.*~~

~~*PHENICIAN AND ARCHAIC.* |~~

~~*common to all races of men in an elementary stage of*~~

~~>~~

~~*soe = = SS*~~

”

”

~~*ert*~~

~~*9*~~

”

~~*ney (ol*~~

~~*Fia. 16.—Archaic vessels decorated with simple line ornament.*~~

~~*plants (often seaweeds) and marine animals, such as cuttle- fishes, meduse, and star-fishes, or occasionally aquatic birds. This class of ornament appears to be more native in character—derived, that is, from various objects with*~~

~~——————>~~

”

~~<——————— 7 "————————>~~

~~<———————— 7/4~~

~~*Fic. 17.—Archaic pottery decorated with natural objects—cuttle-fish, aquatic plant, and strips of seaweed.*~~

~~*which the potter was familiar—and not to have been a Pheenician import (see fig. 17). (3) Conventional orna- ment, a decorative arrangement in bands or scrolls of certain plants, such as the lotus or papyrus and the palm- tree. This class of ornament is distinctly Phoeni- cian, and shows a predominance, sometimes of As- syrian, sometimes of Egyptian influ- ence (see fig. 18). (4) Very rude and badly-drawn fig- ures of men and. animals, Theyare mostly purely decorative and meaningless, are often merely drawn in outline, and have little or no help from incised lines, which became so important in the next stage of the development of pottery. Some of the figures are strongly Assyrian in character, while others of the rudest execution seem to be native.*~~

~~*It appears at first sight as if there was a distinct chronological order of development in these four classes of ornament—growing from simple line-patterns to the copying of easily represented natural objects, then to the invention of regular geometrical floral patterns, and lastly arriving at the rude depiction of human figures. Various points, however, combine to contradict such a theory of arrangement, such as the combinations in which these vessels have been found, the manner in which the various classes of ornament are mingled on the same vase, and lastly the fact that some elaborate and highly-finished vases, obviously of later date, are decorated solely with the straight-line and hatched patterns of the first of the four classes of ornament. Again, the ornament of the*~~

~~*Konan anna en anne QM nnn*~~

~~*Fig, 18.—Archaic pottery with flower ornament worked into conventional patterns.*~~

~~*second class, which appears to be native and local, can hardly be so altogether. Pottery found at places so far distant as Rhodes and Mycenz has*~~

~~*in some cases exactly similar painting of this sort, showing that a common artistic influence was at work in both places. The whole subject is a very difficult one, and little that is really definite can be asserted about it with safety—at least as yet.*~~

~~*Fig. 19 gives two vases of great interest. One shows the com- mon decoration with wheel-applied circles, and also the Assyrian*~~

~~*between guardian beasts.*~~

~~*altar-like object between two beasts ; the other, from Cyprus, has the Assyrian sacred tree, with similar guardian animals. One of the most striking characteristics of archaic pottery of all classes, and especially of the earliest, is the great use made of the potter's wheel in applying the painted ornaments. Very many of the vessels are decorated with a number of encircling bands or lines, or on their sides with a number of concentric circles. These were easily applied, and very trué circles were obtained by setting the pot (after it was dried in the sun) for a second time on the wheel, in the required position, either on its side or upright as it was ori- ginally turned. A brush held against the revolving vessel marked out the bands or circles. A very interesting votive tablet from Corinth (now in the Louvre), probably 700-600 B.c., shows a potter at work in his shop, applying painted bands in this way. He sets the wheel in motion with one hand, while with the other he holds the brush against the revolving pot. The wheel here shown (see fig. 20) is one of the earliest form, without the lower foot-*~~

~~*Fig, 20.—Votive tablet from Corinth, full size; a potter applying painted bands while the vessel revolves on the wheel.*~~

~~*turned disk.! The smaller circles were struck out with compasses, the central point of which has usually left a deep mark. The patterns used on the first class of pottery consist mostly of straight lines, hatched and crossed, arranged in squares, chevrons, triangles, and other simple figures, combined with concentric circles or, more rarely, wavy bands, the whole arranged frequently in very com- plicated and effective patterns. The second class has frequently varieties of seaweed and many marine creatures, all treated very simply, but drawn with great skill and appreciation of the character- istics of each object and its decorative*~~

~~capabilities. The third class—that of geometrical floral patterns—has but little variety. Some of the lotus patterns are almost identical with those used in Egypt and Assyria, and continued in use for vase decoration down to the most flourishing period of Greek art, though latterly in a stiff and rather lifeless form. The fourth class—that of figure- paintings—is of great interest; the earlier patterns are merely drawn in outline. Fig. 21 shows an cenochoe from Cyprus, now in the British Museum, of rather coarse red clay with yellow slip, on which is pencilled in outline a one-horse chariot driven at full speed by a slave; behind him stands a bowman shooting an arrow; the whole is strikingly Assyrian in style. Another ceno- choe, found in Attica, of more primitive style, has a central band~~

~~1 The writer of the article in Ann. Inst. (1882) on this painting has missed the chief point of interest, which is that the potter is using his wheel, not to mould the vase, but to apply the bands of colour round it.~~

~~covered with a number of warriors with round shields, all alike, most rudely executed; almost exactly similar figure-paintings occur on some of the Mycenze pottery, and also on a large amphora from Cyprus (now in the British Museum), which has many bands, on which are painted in red ochre lines of men with crested heads (looking like North – American Indians) riding long weasel-shaped horses. Other bands on the same vase have centaurs, foot-soldiers, and various beasts, the latter, especially some stags, rather better drawn. 'They are painted in coarse dabs, and, except for a few of the eyes, have no incised lines. Smaller ornaments, such as the svas- tica FU and simple forms of rosettes, are often used to decorate the ogee eee and fill up spaces, but not to~~

~~so great ai ealoaa asin the FIG. 2 succeeding class of pottery.~~

~~Among the earlier pottery from Mycenz and the Troad are several very strange vases in coarse clay rudely modelled to indicate a human form. Some have the upper part formed like a head, very like the Egyptian Canopic vases.~~

~~nnn { ace SEE EEE~~

~~*1.—(CEnochoe with painted bow- man in a chariot, Assyrian in style.*~~

~~*POUT TLR T*~~

~~*[ARCHAIC METHODS.*~~

~~*extremely early period, was used in ancient Chaldzean art, and was handed on by the Sasanians to the Moslem con- querors of Persia ; it | survived, though al- tered and after its meaning was long forgotten, till even the 15th century in the textile fabrics worked in Italy after Orientaldesigns. The column between the beasts occurs on the Lion Gateof Mycenz, Tn the later art of the Persians a fire-altar takes the place of the column.*~~

~~*Before passing on to consider the vari- ous classes of distinctly Hellenic pottery it will be con- venient to give a list of the technical methods employed in all classes of pottery found in Hellenic sites, and also some account of the inscriptions and various forms of letters which are found on Greek vases.*~~

~~*Technical Methods and Inscriptions—Archaic and Greek Vases.*~~

~~*Fig. 23.—Examples of small ornaments with which the ground of early vases is often studded.*~~

~~*1. Prehistoric Pottery from Mycenzx, the Troad, and other Hellenic From Sites.—Materials: yellow, red, or black clays; composition, sili- Hellenic cate of alumina, with free silica and lime, coloured by different sites.*~~

~~*A great number of "pithi" (7/001), enormous vases shaped something like amphorz, have been discovered in Rhodes,*~~

~~*the Troad, and other places, some as much as 7 feet high. Such vessels are often decorated with patterns in relief, chiefly combinations of spirals and the like, some closely resembling the designs on the sculptured architrave from the "Treasury of Atreus" at Mycenz.*~~

~~*oxides of iron; slip, made of similar clays ground to a smooth paste. Methods of treatment: (a) plain biscuit clay; (0) clay covered with fine slip ;*~~

~~(c) ornament of incised patterns, scratched through the slip upon the body of the pot, and sometimes filled in with whiter slip to make a conspicuous pattern ; (d) pottery of hard fine clay, made glossy by a mechanical polish. Most if not all of this pottery was made without the wheel ; but some was so skilfully~~

~~Vanes Vases aren ees OF hea qf Anumals "seg Grounds modelled as to make it difficult to distinguish between hand-made with ani- sprinkled with Flowers.—This is a very large and important | 314 wheel-made vessels. o— _* class, and very numerous specimens have been found widely 2. Phenician and other Archaic Pottery.—This and all succeeding Pheeni-~~

~~scattered over the shores of the Mediterranean (see fig. 22). The production of vases of this style appears to have lasted for many centuries ; the earlier ones are rudely executed indull ochre colours on biscuit clay, like most~~

~~classes are wheel-made. quite white slip was also used, made of a natural sort of pipeclay, or in some cases of a mixture of lime and silica with a little clay to bind it together. Pigments: earth-colours, made of brown and red ochres, occasionally mixed with an additional quantity of oxide of iron and free silica. Methods: the white or yellow slip was usually applied while the vase was revolving on the wheel, either with a~~

~~Materials: clays and slip as class 1; acian, '&c.~~

~~brush or by the potter dipping his hands into a bowl of fiuid slip~~

~~just. before finishing the final modelling or throwing of the vase ;~~

~~In some cases it has been applied by dipping the pot into the slip.~~

~~The method of applying the painted bands is shown above in fig.~~

~~20. Asarule these vases were not fired at a sufficient heat to give~~

~~them a vitreous gloss, though in some cases the heat has been enough to partly vitrify those of the ochre colours which contained~~

~~a proportion of free silica and alkali.~~

~~*“3. Vases with Black Figures and Ineised Lines.—Materials : (a) With clay, silica 56 per cent., alumina 19, red oxide of iron 16, lime 74, black magnesia 14 per cent.,—the average of many analyses ; (0) slip, the figures same clay finely ground, and sometimes tinged a deeper red with and in- additional red oxide of iron,—the white slip is like that in classcised — 2; (c) glaze, of almost imperceptible thickness, a silicate of soda ; lines.*~~

~~*archaic pottery, while the later ones have paintings in brilliant black enamel on a ground of red clay, thinly covered with a true vitreous glaze. This class of vase- painting, though mostly the work of Greek potters, is dis- tinctly Oriental in character, probably Assyro-Pheenician. It is of extreme decorative*~~

~~*richness: the surfaces of the vases are well covered, and the designs, though simply treated, are very effective, in many ways far more success- ful as works of decorative art than the elaborate and exquisitely drawn figure- pictures on later Greek vases. The ground is thickly covered with small decorative patterns; fig. 23 shows those used on more archaic vases. The animals that occur most fre- quently on the bands are lions, leopards, bulls, goats, deer, with various birds, such as cocks and swans, and also griffins, sphinxes, and sirens. A favourite motive of design is the sacred tree or a sort of column, each with a guardian beast at the sides. This is one of the most interesting of all designs in the history of ornament; it dates from an*~~

~~*Fic. 22.—Vase with bands of ani-*~~

~~*mals, Oriental in style.*~~

~~*(British Museum.)*~~

~~*(d) black pigment,—a true vitreous enamel, which owes its deep black to the magnetic oxide of iron (composition—soda 17, silica 46, alumina 12, black peroxide of iron 17, lime 6 per cent.) ; (¢) chocolate-red pigment, an ochre red sometimes mixed with finely- ground fragments of red pottery ; (/) white pigment, like the white slip of class 2,—various analyses, silica 54 to 62, alumina 34 to 43, lime 4 to 84 per cent. Methods: the vase was first turned on the wheel, and, in order to give the pot a surface of deeper red, the slip was applied by a brush or by the hands of the potter while it was still*~~

~~*revolving. The outline of the design was next roughly sketched, either with a point or in light-red ochre with a brush. After the vase had dried sufficiently in the sun so as to become firm, it was again put on the wheel, and the glaze, finely powdered and mixed with water, was applied to it with a brush as it revolved. The vase then appears, at least in some cases, to have been for the first time fired in the kiln in order to get a smooth almost non-absorbent surface for the use of the painter. In other cases the materials of the red slip and the silicate glaze were mixed, and the two applied together, as was done in the case of the Roman Samian ware. The painter next set to work and put on the black enamel*~~

~~*ing class with the addition of bright red, blue, green, and gold. Poly- The red used on some vases is an oxide of iron; buta very brilliant chro- minium crimson also occurs, which appears to have been added after matic the final firing, and is not therefore, properly speaking, a "ceramic" vases.*~~

~~*figures and ornaments with a brush. Ifa part of the vase round its whole circumference was to be black, such as the foot and neck, the vase was again set on the wheel and the black enamel put on as it revolved. This repeated use of the wheel for the application*~~

~~*of slip, glaze, and black enamel was in order to secure an even coating with uniform grain, far more difficult to get with the un- aided brush. The grain thus produced can usually be distinctly traced in each of the three coatings. The firing of the black enamel must have been done with great care and skill, as a very slight chemical change in the black oxide of iron converts it into the red oxide. Thus the same stroke of a brush is often (in the earlier vases of this class) half black and half vermilion-red, or one side of a vase is red and the other black, according as it has been played upon by oxidizing or deoxidizing products of combustion in the kiln. In the finest vases the black enamel is of great beauty, with wonderful rich softness of texture, which no modern skill has been able to approach. The tombs of Nola, Capua, and other places in Magna Grecia have supplied the most technically perfect vases, both for the fineness of their clay and the*~~

~~*brilliance of ,jtheir black enamel. After the firing of the enamel the details were drawn in by incised lines, cutting through the enamel down to the clay body of the vase. The clear and slightly-chipped edges of the lines show that they were done after firing, when the black enamel was in a hard vitreous state. This must have been done with some very sharp and hard point, probably a natural crystal of diamond or corundum, such as was used for engraving gems; the incised details on some vases are of almost microscopic minuteness.! The "non-vitreous" colours, red and white, were sometimes put on before, sometimes after the incised lines. They were fixed in their place by a slight firing, not enough to vitrify them or to soften the edges of the incised lines in the enamel. Both these changes have been shown to take place under a not very violent heat, by experi- ments made by the present writer on fragments of such vases. The white was used to depict the flesh of females and of some of the gods, such as Eros, or for the bodies of horses and the hair of old men. Chocolate-red was mostly used for ornamental touches on dress, armour, harness, and the like. Both are used in painting the heraldic beasts or ornaments which so often occur on the round shields of Greek warriors. Both the white and red are applied over the black. Thus the female figures are first completely painted in black, and the white afterwards applied over the face, hands, or other nude parts."*~~

~~*pigment. The blue and green are different oxides of copper, fused with silica and soda to make a bright vitreous enamel, which was then finely powdered and mixed with a proportion of white pigment (silica and lime) according to the strength of the tint required. This powdered enamel pigment is the "smalto " of medieval Italian painters. The gold was applied in leaf, not on the flat surface of the vase, but on a ground modelled in slight relief with semi-fluid slip of ordinary fine red clay, thus very much enhancing the effect produced by the gold leaf. Necklaces, bracelets, and other gold ornaments are always modelled in perceptible relief, producing a rich effect which no merely flat application of gold could give. Polychromatic vases may be divided into four main classes. (a) Vases in which the colours are used as additional decoration to the ordi- nary red figures, c.g., the celebrated amphora from Camirus (Rhodes), with the scene of Peleus winning Thetis as his bride (see Plate V.). (6) Vases painted in brown outline, on a fine white slip, with the addition of red and yellow ochre colours, and occasionally a little gold, ¢.g., the cylix in the British Museum with*~~

~~*Aphrodite seated on a flying swan (see Plate V.); this isa rare and usually very beautiful variety, and is more fully described below (p. 613). (c) Attic funeral lecythi, which have the neck and foot in brilliant black (wheel-applied) enamel and the main body of the vase covered with a non-vitreous white slip. The design was sketched in rough outline and the red pigment put on with a small brush over the white gronnd. The drawing is generally careless and rapid, but often shows great skill and beauty of touch. The colours, generally red, blue, or green, were then thickly and often clumsily applied over parts of the red outline drawing, mostly over the draperies. These vases were not meant to be handled, as their colours rub off very easily: they were simply intended for sepulchral purposes, either to hang on the stele or within the tomb. (d) Vases, especially from Magna Grecia, such as rhytons, small cenochoz, and others, moulded skilfully in a variety of fanciful shapes, heads of animals or deities, sphinxes, and other figures, either grotesque or beautiful. They are decorated partly with the usual red figures, and with the most brilliant black enamel, while other parts are painted in white and brilliant crimson with further enrichments in gold leaf. These bright colours seem to have been applied after the last firing, and not to be true ceramic colours. *~~

~~*/ With red 4. Vases with Red Figures.—The materials employed and the figures. first stages in the manufacture of this class are the same as those — of class 3; but, instead of the jigures being painted in black, the ground is covered with black enamel, and the figures left, showing*~~

~~*6. Black Vases of Metal-like Designs.—These vases often have the Metal- finest sort of black enamel, especially the large amphore from Capua like and other places in Magna Grecia, covered all over with fluting or black*~~

~~*the glazed red slip which covers the whole vase. This method pro- duced a great artistic advance in the beauty of the figures, the de- tails and inner lines of which could be executed with freedom and ease by brush-marked lines instead of by the laborious process of cutting incised lines through the very hard black enamel. The outline of the figures was drawn, with wonderful precision and rapidity, with a brush fully charged with fluid enamel, boldly applied so as to make a broad line or band about one-eighth of an inch wide all round each figure, one edge of the band giving the*~~

~~boundary of the required form. Details and inner markings were then added with a fine-pointed brush capable of making the thinnest and most delicate strokes. On many of the finest vases the contour- lines of muscles and other markings intended to be less salient were painted in pale brown instead of black. Last of all, the main part of the ground between the black outline bands was filled in. The greater thickness of the enamel, where it was more concentrated in the bands, is generally visible; the enamel used for filling in was~~

~~gadroons. imitations of gold necklaces modelled in slip, slightly in relief, and afterwards covered with gold leaf. A number of " phiale omphale " (saucer-shaped vessels), of about 200 B.c., were made by being pressed into a mould, and were thus stamped with figures in relief, such as processions of deities driving chariots. Some of these, made in Magna Grecia after its conquest by the Romans, have Latin inscriptions. One made at Cales is inscribed with the potter's name C.CANOLEIOS.L.F. FECIT. CALENOS (see Ann. Jnsi., 1883, p. 66). Small asci were decorated with highly – finished figure-subjects, stamped on emblemata or tablets of clay, which were embedded in the vase while it was soft. Such elaborate and metal-like pieces of pottery are entirely covered with black enamel. They are often of great beauty, both in the composition of the relief figures and in their delicate execution. Vases of this class have ae found entirely covered with gold or silver leaf, copies of metal plate.~~

~~Some have wreaths of vine, olive, and other plants, or vases.~~

~~7. Vases, such as large asci, many from Magna Grecia, made of Vases simple yellowish biscuit clay, and modelled into shapes of female with heads, or covered with a number of statuettes of female figures. statu- They are generally painted simply in distemper in "non-ceramic " ettes.~~

~~thinner because it spread over a larger space as it flowed from the brush. In some cases a face or other part has had a thin black out- line before the wider band was put on; and then ¢éhree distinct thicknesses of enamel can be seen, the thin outline standing out~~

~~perceptibly more than the rest. It is evident that the fluid black enamel was applied in a somewhat thick viscid state, and thus a slight degree of relief~~

~~was often produced, enabling black lines to show over the black ground, as is the case sometimes with the strings of lyres. This slight relief often gives additional effect to the treatment of curly hair, represented by a series of dots or glob- ules, as in the transitional amphora described below (p. 612). This method recalls the free use of the drill in the representation of hair on early engraved gems. Touches of white and red were occasionally used, as in the preceding class of vases, but to a much more limited extent. Some of the finest black and red vases, especially speci- mens from Nola, Vulci, and Capua, have enrichments in gold applied in relief.~~

~~5. Polychromatic Vases.—Materials : the same as in the preced-~~

~~= A eee ee aS ee eee 1 A very remarkable early vase, in the collection of Countess Dzialinska in~~

~~Paris, is decorated with incised lines only, the whole being covered with the black enamel.~~

~~2 Unfortunately many Greek vases have been much injured while in the hands of dealers by the restoration of the white and red pigments. Vases which have been thus treated should be washed carefully with spirits of wine, which removes the modern touches without injury to the ancient pigments.~~

~~colours ; but they fall rather under the head of TERRA-COTTA (q.1.). Some are of very great beauty, and are covered with statuettes very like those found at Tanagra.~~

~~8. Greek Vases of Debased Style, last period.—These have the Debased usual red figures on a black enamel ground, of the same materials, Greek and applied in the same way as on the earlier vases, except that vases.~~

~~the black enamel is much thinner and very inferior in quality, fre- quently having a hard metallic gloss instead of the soft richness of the earlier vases. A great part of the figures and ornaments is executed in white, red, brown, and yellow pigments, with shading and gradations of colour, used to produce an effect of relief, which is unsuited to vase-painting, and, especially in the later examples, is executed with extreme rudeness and~~

~~*clumsiness of drawing. Vase- painting became degraded in style at a period when the other arts of Greece showed but little signs of decadence, and ceased altogether to be practised nearly a century before the Christian era. No painted vases were found in the buried cities of Pompeii, Hercu- laneum, and Stabie ; and Suetonius (Julius Cxsar, c. 81) mentions the eagerness with which certain Greek vases found in tombs near 3 See Otto Jahn, Vasen mit Goldschmuck, Leipsic, 1865.*~~

~~*q XIX, — 77*~~

~~*Inscrip- tions.*~~

~~*610*~~

~~*Capua were sought for. The floral ornaments on these later vases are very elaborate and realistic compared with those of the earlier period. Bands of graceful scroll-work with growing foliage are much used, often, in spite of their attempted relief, very beautiful and much superior to the figure- subjects which accompany them. Some strikingly resemble in style the painted friezes on Pompeian walls, and have lost all purely ceramic character. ame*~~

~~*Two abnormal and comparatively rare methods of vase-painting must be mentioned. One occurs on a number of Corinthian vases mostly now in the Louvre, pseudo-archaic in style, but apparently of the 5th century B.c. Such were first covered with white slip, which was in turn completely covered over with black enamel. The design was then made by the awkward process of cutting away the black in parts so as to leave black figures on a white ground— a kind of "sgraffiato." Another strange method was practised in southern Italy during the extreme decadence of vase- painting. The whole surface was covered with black enamel, and the figures were afterwards painted in red over the black so as to imitate the ordinary Greek vases with red figures and a black enamel painted round them. Most specimens are mere feeble imitations of the works of an earlier period ; but a cylix in the British Museum is painted in this style with a graceful seated figure of Adonis or Meleager,—a very remarkable work, executed in warm browns and yellows, giving the effect of flesh, and shaded and touched with high*~~

~~*lights in a thoroughly pictorial manner, which, though e a miniature scale, recalls the best wall-paintings of Pompeii or*~~

~~*ome.*~~

~~*Inscriptions on Vases.—Inscriptions are very numerous during the middle period of Greek art, while on the most archaic vases and those of the decadence they are mostly absent. They are of great interest in the history of Greek paleography, but are not always a safe guide as to the dates of vases, because archaic forms of letters were often used by vase-painters long after other forms of letters had come into general use. Vase-inscriptions may be divided roughly under two heads—Ionian and Dorian, the latter occurring mostly on the numerous vases from Corinth and her colonies. The accompanying table! shows the usual forms of letters which differ from the New-Attic alphabet ; the latter is still in use, and has been but little changed since about 400 B.c., when the long vowels were introduced. Some of the early letters have no representative in the later Greek alphabet, e.g., the digamma F, the koppa 9, and the aspirate H or H.*~~

~~*DORIAN. IONIAN.*~~

~~*OLD ATTIC. NEW ATTIC.*~~

~~*PO ra ih ¥*~~

~~*[INSCRIPTIONS.*~~

~~*Rhodes and now in the British Museum. Each figure has its name*~~

~~*MEPRAM QoTa4*~~

~~*SV@OPBOM*~~

~~*for MENEAA®, EKTOP (retrograde), and EYPOPBOX. This curious inscription has the Ionian form of E, the Dorian M (san) for &, and a common archaic form of © for ®, a very strange and exceptional combination of characters, The Burgon Panathenaic amphora (see fig. 25) has a very curious Old-Attic inscription, written downwards—*~~

~~*IMJ :YOJO4MOI4IO44OT*~~

~~*for TON AOENEO[EIN AOAON E/[T]MI, 'I am one of the prizes from Athens," the usual inscription on prize vases. Vase- inscriptions are usually painted, if on a red ground in black or brown, if on a black ground in red or white. Some are incised, scratched after the vase was fired ; but such occur less often. They are written both retrograde and from left to right, apparently with- out any fixed rule. Both methods frequently occur in the same inscription. A fine early Corinthian crater, found at Cere and now in the Louvre, with black figures representing Heracles feasting with Eurytius, has the names of the persons represented inscribed in the characteristic early Dorian manner—*~~

~~*BYPYTSOM MOT3O3A ASODA MS1AATAE*~~

~~*for EYPYTIOX, FIPITOX, FIOAA (Viola, a lady present at the feast), and HEPAKAEX. On the handle of the crater is scratched 0, for Corinth, the place where it was made." Another Dorian inscription of great interest occurs on a votive clay tablet dedicated to Poseidon, about 4 by 24 inches, now in the Louvre. Poseidon is represented at full length, holding a trident and a wreath, in black with incised lines ; at each corner is a hole for fixing the tablet to the temple wall. It is inscribed—*~~

~~*VAA34ATON ("oP MANROBKB*~~

~~*for HOTEIAAN .. . ON M'ANEOHKE, "— on dedicated me to Poseidon." This curious tablet was found at Corinth; the letters are very archaic in form, though the painting can hardly be earlier than the 6th century B.c.*~~

~~*The great majority of vases have inscriptions in Old-Attic*~~

~~*characters, such as are shown in the two following examples. The Subjects*~~

~~*subjects of the inscriptions may be divided into five heads, though of in-*~~

~~*other miscellaneous ones also occur. scrip- (1) On early vases rudely scratched trade-marks, or potters' tions.*~~

~~*RB digamma .— 6*~~

~~*One of the earliest vase-inscripti i i*~~

~~*- ptions known is that mentioned yey (see fig. 24, p. 611) as occurring on a "'pinax," or large flat platter, with archaic painting in brown, found at Camirus in*~~

~~*1 :*~~

~~*Those letters which have the same form in all three lists are omitted.*~~

~~*marks, indicating the number of vases in a special batch and their prices. (2) Potters' and artists' names. The majority have only one name, possibly that of the master-potter, ¢.7.,*~~

~~*BYVXSIQBRO$ EPOIESEN*~~

~~*for Evél@eos éroincev. In other cases, mostly on the finest vases, the name of the painter occurs as well as that of the potter, ¢.g.,*~~

~~*MAKPON EAPAPSEN*~~

~~*for Mdxpay éypawev. Some artists, probably distinguished for their skill, painted the vases of several potters; other painters' names chiefly occur on the vase of one special potter. (8) Names of people, animals, and even things represented on the vases, A large proportion of the earlier vases have a name by the side of each figure, or at least by the side of the most important ones. Names of horses and dogs occasionally occur, and in a few instances even inanimate objects are designated by a name, ¢.g., the balance on the cylix of Arcesilans in the Paris Bibliothéque and Zeus's throne on an early amphora in the Louvre. (4) Speeches uttered by the vase figures, ¢.g., in a scene representing a game at ball one of the players says XPHZAN MOI TAN S4[A]IPAN, 'Throw me the ball." Other vases have words of compliment or greeting, such as XAIPE, "Hail!" or words relating to their contents, ¢.g., HAY2 OINO32, " The wine is sweet." (5) Names of owners, often with the adjective KAAOZS or KAAK (if a lady), possibly intended for gifts, like the majolica plates inscribed with a lady's name fol-*~~

~~2 See Mon. Inst., vol. vii.~~

~~HELLENIC. |~~

~~lowed by the epithet "diva" or "bella." An amphora with a very curious inscription has recently been found at Orvieto, in early Attic characters—ZH AION MIA MOVAAOYA (retrograde) —meaning 50' 6Bedw kal we Olyes, " Two obols, and you have me."?~~

~~A quite different species of inscriptions occurs on vases of the latest class. Artists' and potters' names cease to appear with the rapidly- increasing decadence of the art. A black crater in the British Museum has a dedicatory inscription painted in white round the neck, AIOXZ ZATHIPOS, " Zeus the Saviour." A fine black fluted amphora has the owner's name, APICTAPXO APICTONO2, in which the late C form of % occurs. On a small black ascus in the British Museum is scratched rudely ITPOITINE MH KATOHI®>, "Drink, do not set me down." And some plain black measures have their capacity incised on them, e.g., H iMI- KOTVAION, "Half a cotylion," on a cup-shaped vessel from Coreyra. One of the earliest known instances of Greek cursive~~

~~writing occurs on a covered pyxis divided into four compartments (in the British Museum). the ashes of a Roman called Sergius. scratched—~~

~~bi eee evi CEP KALE VE~~

~~It appears to have been used to contain Under the foot is rudely~~

~~'My beloved Sergius, farewell."" The last word is blundered And on the inside of the lid is a similar incised inscription—~~

~~Tagoc €ctiv JeuTegoc~~

~~"It is the second interment." The pyxis is apparently much older than the inscription, a supposition which is confirmed by the note as to its being a later burial.~~

~~One sort of inscription, used more largely by the Romans than~~

~~*the Greeks, was impressed from incuse stamps, a method chiefly |*~~

~~*used for large amphore and other vessels of plain biscuit clay, especially those made in Rhodes and Cnidus. 'These inscriptions, which date from the time of Alexander the Great down to the Ist century after Christ, usually give the name of an eponymous magis- trate or chief priest, and have frequently in addition one of the thirteen months of the Doric calendar. Some of the stamps are circular, copied from current Rhodian coins, and have the legend round a front face of Helios, or the rose-blossom fédov, which was the badge of the island. Other stamps are square or lozenge-shaped ; they are usually impressed on the neck or handle of jars."*~~

~~*Having considered the technical methods employed in the manufacture of Greek vases and the various classes of inscriptions which occur upon them, we will now return to the styles of vase-paintings and the subjects which are*~~

~~*most frequently represented.*~~

~~*Sreerion V.—HELLENIC.*~~

~~*Archaic Class—The manner in which the styles of ornament on early pottery merge almost insensibly one into another makes it difficult to arrange it in distinct classes, and it is not easy to say at what precise stage the term "Hellenic" can be given to the archaic vessels. The presence of Greek inscriptions makes, however, a convenient starting-point.*~~

~~*Probably the earliest known Greek ceramic inscription occurs on the Rhodian pinax mentioned above (see fig. 24). The painting on this, though rudely executed in brown and red ochres on a pale yellow slip-covered clay, the same in method as the earlier non-Hellenic paintings, shows a marked artistic advance by the fact that it represents a definite historical scene taken from the iad. No incised lines are used except for the feathers of the heraldic eagle on Hector's shield. A large number of other pinaces were found at Camirus, of the same date, but without inscrip- tions and with purely decorative paintings, such as geome- trical lotus-patterns, and spirited figures of bulls, sheep, and other animals, or sphinxes and gorgons' heads. Some large clay coffins, also found at Camirus, and others at Clazomene, belong to this class of pottery. One of those*~~

~~1 See Ann. Inst., 1882, p. 58.~~

~~2 See Dumont, Jnscr. Céram. de Gréce, Paris, 1872; and Corp. Inser. Gr.~~

~~3 Journal of Hellenic Studies, 1883.~~

~~from Camirus is in the British Museum. The top is decorated with painting in red and brown ochre colours.~~

~~WN~~

~~sm ys (@ yoo > », —~~

~~Fic, 24.—Early inscribed pinax from Rhodes, with contest of Menelaus and Hector over the body of Euphorbus.~~

~~At the head is a bull between two lions, and below them two curious helmeted heads of warriors drawn in profile, both unfortunately much injured by restoration. Other parts are decorated with figures of beasts on a ground studded with rosettes and other small designs, in which some antiquaries see varieties of solar symbols ; but, what- ever their original meaning may have been, they appear on this pottery to be used merely as decoration. Other vases of a very early period with figure-subjects and inscrip- tions, probably of the 7th and 6th centuries B.c., have been found at Corinth, such as the '"Dodwell pyxis," now at Munich, on the lid of which is painted the scene of the Calydonian boar hunted by various heroes in the presence of Agamemnon ; each figure has an inscribed name. At Corinth also curious votive tablets have recently been found, some inscribed, with painted figures either of the god or of the donor ; one of these is shown in fig. 20. It is very early in date.~~

~~The "Burgon amphora," so called from its finder, now in the British Museum (see fig. 25), is a very interesting specimen of this early class ; it is one of the prize amphoree which, filled with sacred olive oil, were given to~~

the victors at the games held during the Panathenaic festival. It was found at Athens, filled with the ashes of its owner, and is no doubt the work of an Athenian potter. On one side is the usual figure of Athene Promachos in black, except the goddess's flesh, which is white, and the inscription and touches on the dress, which are in crimson. On the reverse side is the winner of the vase driving a biga, apparently in the act of winning the race which gained him the prize. On the neck of the vase is the owl sacred to Athene. The drawing of the figures is very rude, probably dating from the 6th century B.C.

The "Frangois crater," found at Chiusi, now in the Etruscan Museum in Florence, is another important ex- ample of this early class. It is signed as the work of the potter Ergotimus and the painter Clitias, and is painted with a long series of subjects, all relating to the life and death of Achilles. It has no less than 115 explanatory inscriptions. Of about the same date, 6th century B.c.,

4 Bull. Inst., 1845, pp. 118, 120, and Ann. Inst., 1848, p. 382.

Red vases with black figures,

612

is the cylix of Arcesilaus found at Vulci, now in the Paris Bibliothéque. It is painted in black and red on a cream-

di scainins RE SG MGR aoe eee WE cteemami ad mater denbnonnines te

Fig. 25.—The Burgon Panathenaic amphora, with early Greek inscription.

white slip, and represents Arcesilaus, one of the Cyrenian kings of this name, superintending the weighing of a number of bags of the silphium plant. All the figures and even the scales have their names painted by their side. It is executed with great neatness and technical skill, but the drawing is stiff and awkward. The scene, which is repre- sented with great dramatic vigour, appears to be on board a ship, judging from the complicated cordage overhead and the yard-arm from which the large balance is suspended.

~~*It is at present impossible to fix with any certainty the dates of this early Hellenic pottery, as is also the case with the still older pottery of Rhodes and Mycenz, but the increase of our knowledge on the subject tends to give a much more remote period to its production than has been hitherto assigned to it by the majority of writers on the subject. The foregoing class of pottery forms a link, with various stages of development, from the glossless vases painted in dull ochre browns and reds to that large and important class of Greek pottery which has figures painted in glossy black enamel, on a red, slightly glazed, clay ground, or less frequently on a cream-white ground. The vases of this class, found in large quantities over a wide area in Greece, Italy, and Sicily, include paintings of the most different kinds, from the rudest almost shapeless daubs to the most carefully-executed pictures, drawn with great beauty of composition and firm accuracy of form, though always retaining some amount of archaic stiffness and conventionalism. Though the faces are nearly always represented in profile, the eyes are shown front-wise, a method of treatment which continued in use even on the earlier vases of the next period, those with red figures on a black ground. Fig. 26 shows the progressive treatment*~~

~~*> SP DPP*~~

~~*Fic, 26.—Series of human eyes from painted vases, showing the develop-*~~

~~*ment of drawing, and power of representing the eye in profile.*~~

~~*of the human eye by vase-painters, from the earliest intro- duction of figures down to the end of the 4th century B.C.*~~

~~*PoTTrekh''yT*~~

~~*[HELLENIC.*~~

~~*Many of the floral ornaments of this period still retain clear signs of their Oriental origm. The sacred tree of Assyria, in an elaborate and highly conventionalized form, very frequently occurs, or, worked into a running pattern, it forms a continuous band of decoration, out of which the Greek so-called "honeysuckle pattern" seems to have been developed. These vases have far greater variety and richness in their decorative patterns than*~~

~~*those with the black ground, the natural result of the great ease and freedom of hand with which delicate floral designs could be touched in with the brush in black, while in the later manner the red patterns had to be laboriously left out by working the black ground all round them. Hence the stiffness and poverty of invention which are so remarkable in the decorative patterns on the vases of the "best period." Many of the black figures of men and animals are executed with extraordinary minuteness, owing largely to the engraved gem-like treatment with which the incised lines are applied, especially in the representation of the hair of men or animals, and also in the rich textile patterns with which the draperies are often covered. Some of the vases, judging from their general form and thin band-like handles, were evidently copied from metal vessels, as, for ex- ample, a number of small amphoree found in various places, executed in the workshop of Nicosthenes, a rather inartistic potter, who appears to have turned out a large number of vases with little or no variety in shape or ornament.*~~

~~*-The later vases, with black figures, were produced simultaneously with the earlier ones decorated with red figures; and during this transitional period (about the middle of the 5th century B.c.) some vase-painters worked in both styles, both kinds of painting sometimes occurring even on the same vase. The British Museum possesses one of the finest specimens of these, a large amphora with nobly-designed paintings. On one side are two seated figures of Greek warriors, probably Ajax and Achilles, playing at a game like draughts. They are painted in black with chocolate-red touches, and minute details, such as the drapery over their armour and their wavy hair, executed in incised lines of extreme fineness and gem-like treatment. The other side of the vase has red figures on a black ground, a most powerfully drawn group of Heracles strangling the Nemzan lion in the presence of Iolaus, and an archaic statue-like figure of Athene. As in the painting with black figures, some touches of red areused, The treatment of Heracles's hair is peculiar and again recalls gem-engraver's work, in which hair is represented by a series of drilled holes; in this painting the stiff curls are given by a number of round dots of the black enamel, applied in considerable body so as to stand out in relief. This treatment frequently occurs on the fine vases of this and later periods, and the same method is occasionally used in a very effective way to represent bunches of grapes and the like.*~~

~~*Vases with Black Ground and Red Figures.—After about the middle of the 5th century B.c. this method superseded that with the black figures, and to this class belong the finest vases of all. The drawing of the earlier specimens is strongly sculpturesque in style, sometimes recalling the noble though slightly archaic pediment figures from Aigina, while the vase-paintings of a few years later seem to belong to the Phidian school ; the forms are noble and massive, treated with great breadth and simplicity, and kept strictly to one plane; faces are nearly always drawn in profile, and all violent foreshortening of limbs is avoided. Some vase-painters of this period (c. 450-400) retain a slight touch of Oriental feeling in their drawing, as, for in- stance, the beautiful amphora by Euxitheus in the British Museum, which has single figures of Achilles and Briseis, one on each side (see fig. 27).*~~

~~*Transi- tion.*~~

~~*Black vases with red figures.*~~

~~*HELLENIC. |*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*613*~~

~~*It should be remarked that the style of vase-paintings | began to gain in softness and grace, while losing something*~~

~~*is generally rather archaic as compared with other branches*~~

~~*owner cena wenn mene e = BO | rn >*~~

~~*Fic. 27.—Amphora by Euxitheus (c. 450 B.c.), figure of Briseis ; the other side has Achilles. of contemporary art, as was the case with their inscrip- tions, and a certain conventionalism of treatment, such as . would not be found in sculpture, lingers till quite the end of the 5th century B.c. Fig. 28 shows a painting from*~~

~~*Fia. 28.—Peleus leading home his bride Thetis ; painting inside a cylix found in a tomb at Vulci (¢. 440-420 B.c.).*~~

~~*the inside of a cylix, remarkable for the severe beauty and simple grace of its drawing and composition. The scene represents the moment when Peleus has won Thetis for his bride, and is leading her away in triumph, gently overcoming her modest reluctance ; her shrinking and yet yielding attitude is drawn in the most refined and masterly manner possible.!*~~

~~*In the succeeding century both drawing and composition*~~

~~*1 The same design, though with inferior execution, is repeated on a cylix found at Corneto; see Mon. Inst., xi, table xx.*~~

~~*of their old vigour. Vase-paintings become more pictorial, and the compositions more elaborate and crowded; the British Museum has an amphora from Camirus (Rhodes), one of the most beautiful of this later class, elaborately decorated on one side with various coloured pigments and gold applied over the finished black and red figures. As in the earlier cylix of fig. 28 the scene represents the final triumph of Peleus in his pursuit of Thetis; in order to fill up the space some of the figures are placed, as it were, in the air, a method of composition peculiar to the later vase-paintings. Though not highly finished in details, such as the hands and feet, this picture is a perfect marvel of skilful touches rapidly applied, and of extreme beauty of form and general composition (see Plate V.). The funeral lecythi from tombs in the neighbourhood of Athens are a remarkable class of vases, c. 350-300 B.c. (see fig. 29). On these, over a white ground, are painted scenes representing mourners , visiting sepulchral stelze with | offerings in their hands. They are drawn carelessly, but with | great skill, in red outline and | then coarsely filled in with | colours. Some of the seated |! females are designed with | wonderful grace and pathos, the whole pose full of a ten- | der longing for the departed one. Besides the funeral | lecythi a few pieces of pot- . tery have been found, dating from about the same period, which have paintings exe- cuted on a ground of white slip. Some of them are of most extraordinary beauty ; perhaps the finest of all is a cylix from a Rhodian tomb, now in the British Museum, on the inside of which is a drawing, chiefly in outline, representing Aphrodite seated on the back of a*~~

~~*flying swan. from a tomb near Athens. For delicacy of touch and re- (British Museum.)*~~

~~*fined beauty of drawing this painting is quite unrivalled.*~~

~~*Ic. 29.—Sepulchral lecythus*~~

~~*| The exquisite loveliness of Aphrodite's head and the pure*~~

~~*grace of her profile, touched in with simple brush-formed lines, are quite indescribable, and show a combination of mechanical skill united to imaginative power and realiza- tion of the most perfect and ideal beauty such as no people but the Greeks can ever have so completely possessed (see Plate V.).*~~

~~*Vases of the Decadence.—The vases of this class are often Vases of of enormous size, covered with very numerous figures, often the de-*~~

~~*possessing much graceful beauty in form, but very inferior in execution and purity of drawing to the earlier paintings. The figures, especially in the later specimens, are thoroughly pictorial in treatment ; many of them are painted in cream- white, with shaded modelling in yellows and browns. Effects of perspective are introduced in some of the archi- tectural features, particularly in the bands of rich floral scroll-work. In the 2d century, till about 100 B.c., when painted vases ceased to be made, the paintings became extremely coarse and devoid of any merit whatever, though even at this time moulded vases, either decorated with reliefs all over or with small inserted emblemata, con- tinued to be made of great artistic beauty. The extreme degradation to which vase-painting of this period fell seems to be due not so much to the general decay of the*~~

~~*Dates of vases.*~~

~~*Shapes and uses.*~~

~~arts among the Greeks as to the fact that the vases were no longer made by able artists, but were turned out in large quantities from the hands of an uneducated class of artisans. This was probably partly owing to increasing wealth and love of display, which created a demand for gold and silver plate rather than for the cheaper but more~~

~~artistic beauty of painted clay.~~

~~The dates of Greek vases are difficult to fix, partly from a natural tendency to archaism, which varies with the productions of different places, and partly because in some cases there was an artificial reproduction of old styles and methods. The following chronological classification, which is commonly accepted, is only very roughly correct, and is not applicable in all instances : (1) black figures on red ground, about 8th century to 440 B.c. ; (2) red figures on black ground, of the best period, e. 440-300 B.c. ; (3) period of decadence, ¢. 300-100 B.c. Fine moulded black vases, and vases with polychromatic paintings of good style, were made towards the end of the 4th and early part of the 3d century B.c.~~

~~Shapes of Vases and their Use.—From the 5th century and after- wards but little scope was left to the fancy of the individual potter in the forms of his vases. One special pattern was pretty closely adhered to for each sort, though, of course, modifications in shape took place as time went on. Fig. 30 gives the forms of the chief~~

~~tombs, and it is probable that the ornamental vases were selected for sepulchral purposes, while a plainer and less decorated class was employed for actual domestic use.~~

~~Panathenaie Amphorx.—This is a very important class of vases,! extending over a long period, from the 6th to the end of the 4th century B.c. Fig. 25 above gives the earliest known specimen. They all have on one side a figure of Athene Promachos, and on the other a scene from the public athletic games. They are inscribed TON AOENEOEN A@OAON EIMI, and some of~~

~~*the later ones have the name of the eponymous archon as well, ¢.g., HYOOAHAOX APXQN on an amphora from Czere, now in the British Museum. Pythodelus was archon in 336 B.c., and so the date of the vases thus inscribed can be accurately determined. A number found at Benghazi and Teuchira in the Cyrenaica are now in the British Museum and the Louvre. Some of the archons' names on them are these—Nicocrates (333 B.c.), Nicetes (332 B.c.), Euthy- critus (328 B.c.), Cephisodorus (323 B.c.), Archippus (321 B.c.), and Theophrastus (813 B.c.). The figure of Athene on all of them is rudely painted in pseudo-archaic style—the figure in black and white, with incised lines, on a red ground ; the other side is painted in the same way, but is not archaicin drawing. Long vowels occur in the archons' names, but sometimes the same amphora has the obverse inscription written in the old way. They are all poor as works of art. One in the British Museum is of special interest from the design painted in white on Athene's shield. This is the celebrated sculptured group of Harmodius and Aristogiton by Critias and Nesiotes, of which an ancient copy exists in the Naples Museum, though the bronze original is lost.*~~

~~*Subjects of Vase-paintings.—These are of great interest, and are Subjects — almost endless in number ; only the scantiest outline can be given of vase- here, and, with so wide a range, any classification is necessarily paint-*~~

~~*ee ce*~~

~~*Hydria. Lecythus. Cylix. Lebes. Amphora. Cantharus. Crater. Aryballus. Cinochoe.*~~

~~*Fie. 80.—Principal shapes of Greek vases and their names.*~~

~~*sorts of vases; a large number of others exist, each with its special name. Amphore and hydrie are the largest and most im- portant, and have the grandest picture-subjects painted on them. The cylices frequently have paintings of wonderful delicacy and beauty ; the later Athenian lecythi are remarkable for their poly- chromatic decoration. The uses of the painted vases is a very difficult question ; few show any signs of wear, though they are made of soft clay easily scratched, and most of those which are represented in use on vase-pictures are plain black without any paintings. A beautiful little pyxis, or perfume-box, in the British Museum, shows in its*~~

~~*pictured scene of a lady's toilet several painted vases, which are set about the room as ornaments, and have flowers or olive-branches in them (see fig. 31). Many vases*~~

†

~~*Fig. 31.—Painting from a small toilet-box or pyxis, showing painted vases used to decorate a lady's room. On the left is a gilt pyxis with a tall lid, and an cenochoe on a low table; on the right two tall vases (lebes) on a plinth. All except the pyxis are decorated with painted figures, and contain flowers.*~~

~~*are blank on one side, or have on the reverse side a painting of ae execution, apparently because they remained set against a wall or in a niche. Nearly all those now existing came from*~~

~~*imperfect. (1) Stories of the gods, scenes such as the Gigantomachia or the birth of Athene. (2) Scenes from the heroic age, as the achievements of Theseus and Heracles, the wars of Thebes, the battles with the Amazons, the voyage of the Argonauts, the Trojan War, the return of the Greeks from Troy, and the like. (3) Dionysiac subjects, such as orgies of Dionysus and dances of satyrs. (4) Scenes from real life, such as the vintage, olive-gathering, marriages, feasts, dancing, hunting, sacrifices, and theatrical subjects. (5) Funeral subjects, as mourners bewailing the dead or bringing offerings to a tomb. (6) Scenes from the gymnasium and various athletic exercises. (7) Allegorical subjects, with figures of happiness, wealth, youth, and the like. (8) Historical subjects, which, however, are rare : a very fine vase in the Louvre, of the best period, has Creesus on his funeral pyre; the cylix of Arcesilaus has been mentioned above ; Anacreon playing on his lyre, and followed by his pet dog, occurs on several fine vases; the meeting of Sappho and Alceus is also represented ;. other portrait-figures appear, chiefly of poets and philosophers, many with inscribed names which are now unknown. (9) Humorous subjects: these are common on the vases of the latest period and are usually very coarsely painted ; caricatures of mytho-logical subjects frequently occur in which the gods are represented as dwarfs or hunchbacks.?*~~

~~*Places where Greek Vases have been found.—Till within the last Locali-twenty years most were discovered in the tombs of Magna Grecia, ties.*~~

~~*Sicily, and Etruria. Capua, Nola, and Vulci supplied a very large quantity of vases of the finest sort with the most rich and brilliant enamel. Special characteristics of style and technique can be traced in the production of special localities, but these differences are.not very important. Of late years Attica, the isthmus of Coririth, and other places on Hellenic soil have yielded a great many fine vases; the islands of the Agean Sea and the western shores of Asia Minor are rich in sepulchral stores of these and all branches of Greek art. Athens possesses a fine and rapidly- increasing collection chiefly from Attica. The British Museum collection is on the whole the finest for Greek vases of all periods, though it is very poor in Etruscan pottery. The other chief collections of Europe are in the Louvre, at Naples, in the Vatican, at Florence, and Turin; Munich, Vienna, Berlin, and St Peters- burg also have very fine collections ; and there is a small one in the Bibliothéque, Paris.*~~

~~*Section VI.—PREHISTORIC AND ETRUSCAN IN ITALY.*~~

~~*Very many of the numerous vases discovered in the tombs of Erruria (q.v.) are imports either from Greece and its islands or from the neighbouring country of Magna Grecia. Nevertheless there is a large class of pottery which is distinctly native, extending over a very long period, from quite prehistoric ages down to the time when the Roman rule extended throughout the peninsula. This*~~

~~*1 See Ann. Inst., 1830, p. 209, and 1877, p. 294; also Mon. Inst., x., tables xlvii., xlviii. 2 See Heydemann, Humoristische Vasenbilder, Berlin, 1873.*~~

~~*The following list includes the majority of subjects. ings.*~~

~~*Pre- historic.*~~

~~*Etruscan black ware.*~~

~~*smother kiln."*~~

~~*ETRUSCAN.* |~~

~~*pottery may be divided into six classes,—(1) prehistoric; (2) black glossy Etruscan; (3) pottery rudely painted with figures of purely Etruscan design ; (4) plain biscuit clay, unpainted, but decorated with stamped reliefs; (5) later vases, badly-executed imitations of painted Greek vases, but having Etruscan subjects, or Greek subjects treated in a distinctly Etruscan manner ; (6) large clay slabs, with painted figures, used for the wall-decoration of tombs.*~~

~~*1. Prehistoric.—This is the work of the Siculi, Oscans, Umbrians, and other occupiers of Italy before the arrival of the Etruscans. It is mostly small, made without the wheel, of coarse brown or blackish clay, slightly orna-mented with ridges of clay modelled in relief. One curious variety is in the form of a primitive Oscan hut, with a movable door, fixed with pegs.1 The Museo del Collegio Romano has a fine aoiction of the prehistoric*~~

~~*--->*~~

~~*ys i, J*~~

~~*<---- 3*~~

~~*Fie. 32.—Padhsatewh potiary from Italy.*~~

~~*pottery of Italy, Sardinia, and other places. shows some of the commonest forms.*~~

~~*2. Etruscan Black Ware.?—It is remarkable that the Etruscan race, though so extraordinarily skilful in most of the handicrafts, did not excel at any period in their pottery. They were especially famed for their skill in metal-work, and hence perhaps this largest and most numerous class of their*~~

~~*fictile ware is mostly shaped after metal forms and decorated with designs not specially suited to clay. The clay of which this black ware is com- posed consists (taking the average of many analyses) of the following ingredients, —silica 63, alumina 15, peroxide of iron 8, lime 34, magnesia 2, and carbon 2. It is hard and metallic in appearance, generally of a sey black, but sometimes grey. Its black E is partly due to the super- ficial presence of free car- bon, showing that the vases were fired in a close kiln, under the direct contact of the carbonaceous smoke from the fuel, a process called in modern times "the If heated to a bright red in an open fire the ware loses its black colour and becomes greyish white or brown. Its forms and the figures stamped in blunt relief all suggest that \& they were copied from metal ~ originals, a supposition ' strongly borne out by the fact that many of them are completely covered with gold or silver leaf (see fig. 33). The reliefs upon them consist of lions and other animals, sphinxes, chimere, human figures, or geometri- cal patterns, all coarsely executed, and very blunt in their forms, partly from want*~~

~~*1 See Virchow, Die italienischen und deutschen Haus-Urnen, Berlin, 1884.*~~

~~*2 See Lenormant, "Vases Htrusques de terre noire, Archéologique, 1879.*~~

~~*Fig. 32*~~

~~*Fig. 33.—Etruscan cenochoe, of black ware, with figures in relief. (Brit ish Museum.)*~~

~~*" in Gazette*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*615*~~

~~*of sharpness in the moulds they are stamped from, and partly through the shrinkage of the clay in the kiln. Some of the shapes are graceful, especially those undecorated by reliefs (see fig. 34). Others are very fanciful, worked into*~~

~~"~~

~~SS ee NS aialenemaN EE) sie mimimndeaih amine~~

~~<-----2-.. 5 Daerah~~

~~Z y Fic. 34.—Plain Etruscan black pottery. forms most unsuited for clay, such as "situlee" or buckets, with movable ring handles ; incense cups supported on thin bands of clay stamped with reliefs; and jugs shaped like hollow rings. A few have their shapes copied from Greek vases, ¢.g., a number of small amphore of exactly the same form as those made by the Greek potter Nicosthenes. A common form of Etruscan vase has a lid shaped like a human head, copied apparently from Egyptian Canopic vases. Some have human arms rudely modelled in clay and fastened on by pegs. Besides the black vases of this form, there exist many made of red clay covered with yellow slip. 3. Etruscan Painted Vases—A number of very strange large covered jars have been found at Cere (see fig. 35), more than 3 feet high, and rudely A painted in dull colours (black, red, and white) with large figures of animals,—lions, wolves, horses, various birds, and some almost shapeless figures of men. There is considerable spirit in the drawing & of the animals, as is often the case even when there was no power to delineate human beings. The finest of these vases are in the Louvre and at Orvieto. Some have only geo- — metrical patterns,—bands of simple Fic. 35.—Early Etruscan leaf-ornament,platbands, orchequers. Painted jar. (Louvre.) Others are shaped like large round boxes on a foot, with lids, nearly 2 feet high. One of those in the Louvre, of red clay blackened by smoke, has a very curious drawing in white pigment, coarsely executed. It represents a mer- chant-ship under full sail being attacked by a war-ship impelled only by oars; the latter is crowded with soldiers bearing round shields, each with an heraldic device. The other vessel has only one combatant, a bowman, who, mounted on the yard-arm, discharges an arrow at the enemy. 'This appears to be a pirate scene, and, though very rudely painted, it is not without strong dramatic force.® 4, Vases in Biscuit Clay with Bands of Stamped Reliefs. —These are mostly large pithi (see fig. 36) about 3 feet high, or thick pinaces (platters) 1 to 2 feet across. Some are of dull red clay, covered with bright red slip; others are yellow. The clay is coarse, mixed with crushed granite, sand, or pounded pottery, to which the coating of fine clay- slip gives a smooth surface. Their chief peculiarity con- sists in the bands of figures in relief with which they are decorated,~~

~~*and which were impressed on the soft clay by rolling along it wheels about 1 inch thick and 7 or 8 inches in circumference. Incuse figures were cut on the edges 3 A similar vase is illustrated in Mon. Inst., ix., table iv.*~~

~~*ae ee*~~

~~*Etruscan painted vases.*~~

~~*Biscuit vases with stamped reliefs.*~~

~~*Imita- tion vases.*~~

~~*616*~~

~~*of the wheels, which, when rolled over the clay, printed (like seals) rows of figures, and they were of course repeated every 7 or 8 inches, ac- cording to the size of the wheels. These stamped reliefs, mostly about an inch high, represent processions of animals,—lions, leopards, boars, ibexes, deer, horses, or griffins. Some have human figures, horse- men fighting with chimers. One in the Louvre has a curious hunt- ing-scene, a man, with two dogs, throwing short knobbed sticks to drive hares into a net. The bands are arranged, singly or double, round the rims of the pinaces and 2 the shoulders of the pithi; the latter p,. 36—Btruscan_pithus are also ornamented with rude orjar, with wheel-stamped fluting or "reeding" below the band, and fluted body. bands, or have occasionally reliefs, (Louvre.)*~~

~~*2 to 3 inches square, stamped at intervals all round them instead of the continuous lines of figures.*~~

~~*5. Later Vases with Imitations of Greek Paintings.— These are mostly copies of Greek forms, but very inferior, both in drawing and technical execution, to the real Greek vases, the black enamel especially being thin, and hard in texture. In appearance they resemble Greek vases of various periods, but are distinguishable by having paintings that are not Hellenic in subject or treatment, or by their Etruscan inscriptions. An amphora, now in the British Museum (see fig. 37), of early style, with black figures*~~

~~*a ON Sa*~~

~~*aa*~~

~~*Fic. 87.—Etruscan amphora, Greek style, with contest between Hercules and Juno, and bands of birds and animals; black, with incised lines.*~~

~~*and incised lines, has a painting of a scene which belongs specially to Latin mythology, viz., the contest at Pylus between Hercules and Juno Sospita; Minerva stands behind Hercules and Poseidon behind Juno. On each side of Juno is a caldron full of snakes, probably an allusion to the sacred serpent which was kept in the grove of Juno at Lanuvium. Another amphora in the Paris Bibliothéque has a painting of the scene where Admetus takes leave of Alcestis before her descent to Hades (see fig. 38). Two hideous demons are depicted,*~~

~~*POT TEE Y*~~

~~*[ETRUSCAN.*~~

~~*waiting to seize their prey: one, Charun, with winged feet, brandishes a massive hammer; the other, Mantus,*~~

~~*NI N*~~

~~*‘ ily*~~

~~*be, (*~~

~~*Fae Hi Mh | ee Nn W ie | Ms i LN | 4 d me con ms. ” lly will sh *~~

~~*Fic. 38.—Etruscan painting, an amphora of later Greek style; parting scene of Alcestis and Admetus, with Etruscan inscriptions. with great white wings, holds a serpent in each hand; both have a fiendish aspect, with grinning teeth, like the devils in medizval pictures of hell, and thoroughly un- Greek in spirit. This vase is in the style of the decadence*~~

~~*of vase-painting, probably about 200 B.c.*~~

~~*6. Painted Wall-slabs were used to decorate the walls Painted of tombs ; they are from 4 to 5 feet high, about 2 feet wall- wide, and about 1 inch*~~

~~*thick. The upper part some-'!@>*~~

~~*times has a moulded cornice and a painted frieze with geometrical ornament. The lower part is covered with chequered squares or some other simple pattern. On the intermediate space are painted pictures with figures, about 2 feet high, representing sacrificial scenes, religious pro- cessions, and other subjects. The drawing shows Greek influence, but the costumes are Etruscan. The pigments are mostly simple earth-colours, red, brown, and yellow ochres, with black, white, and bluish grey; but bright greens and blues also occur, the latter made from oxides of copper, like the smalto on the Attic lecythi. The colours are all applied quite flatly; the female flesh is white, the male red ; and the whole painting is emphasized by strong black outlines. The costumes are interesting ; many of the garments fit tightly to the body, and the men mostly wear a peculiar sort of high boot turned up at the tip. It is doubtful whether they are executed in true ceramic colours fired in the kiln. They may possibly be only tempera paintings, like those on the tuff-walls of some of the excavated tombs. The great size of the well- baked clay slabs on which they are painted shows that the Etruscans must have constructed pottery-kilns of considerable dimensions.~~*

~~*Inscriptions on Etruscan Vases.—Painted words or phrases are Inscrip- not uncommon on the vases which are imitated from the Greek ; tions.*~~

~~*they are usually illustrative of the subject, as, for example, the vase mentioned above with the parting scene of Alcestis and Ad- metus, which has, in addition to the names of the two principal figures, a sentence in the Etruscan language, spoken by Charun— '*Kica ersce nac aqrum wlerorce" (I bear thee to Acheron). The names of Admetus and Alcestis are written retrograde,? thus—*~~

~~*AWA thovA*~~

~~*Several. Etruscan vases of black ware have been found with the complete Etruscan alphabet rudely scratched upon them. They give early forms of the twenty-two Phceenician letters, and are arranged in the Semitic order.? A cup in the museum at Grosseto has two Greek letters added after the twenty-two which composed the Etruscan alphabet. Some late vases, not earlier than about 200 3.c., are interesting from having inscriptions painted*~~

~~*in white, which give early forms of the Latin language. They are mostly dedicatory, with names of Latin deities, ¢.g., VOLCANI POCVLOM, "the cup of Vulcan"; BELOLAI POCVLOM, **the cup of Bellona," and others.*~~

~~*Dates of Etruscan Potiery.—These can only be roughly estimated. Dates.*~~

~~*1 See Dennis, Cities of Etruria, ed. 1878. 2 See Birch, Ancient Pottery, 1873, p. 460. 5 See Taylor, Alphabet, 1888, vol. ii. p. 78.*~~

~~*Local- ities,*~~

~~*SAMIAN. |*~~

~~*The black moulded ware (class 2) seems to range from about the 8th to the 3d century B.c. The large jars with stamped bands (class 4) appear to be all very early in date, about the 8th century B.c. They are not found in those tombs which contain painted vases. The large vessels with rude native paintings (class 3) are probably of the 6th and 7th centuries. The vases with imitations of Greek paintings extend over a long period, from about the 6th to the 2d century B.c.*~~

~~*The greatest quantities of Etruscan pottery have been discovered in the tombs of Tarquinii, Ceere, Veii, Cervetri, Chiusi, and near Or- bitello, Volterra, Orvieto, and other places in central Italy, but above all at Vulci. The best collections are in the Louvre and the Vati- can, at Florence, Naples, Turin, Bologna, Brescia, and many small towns in Italy in the neighbourhood of the various Etruscan ceme- teries, such as Orvieto, Perugia, Grosseto, Volterra, Arezzo, and at Capua, where a very important ceramic museum is being formed.*~~

~~*Literatwre.—The best articles on the subject of Greek and Etruscan pottery are scattered through the numbers of various archeological publications, espe- cially the Annali, the Monwmenti, and the Bulletino dell' Instituto di Corri- spondenza Archeologica, Rome, 1829, and still in progress. See also the Bulletino Archeologico Napolitano, 1842-59; Stephani, Compte rendu de la Commission Archéologique, St Petersburg, 1859 (in progress); Bull. de Cor. Hellen., in pro- gress; Archdologische Zeitung, Berlin ; Philologus: Zeitschrift fiir das klassische Alterthum ; Rheinisches Musewm fiir*~~

~~*Philologie, Archxologia, Soc. Ant. London ; Berichte der sdchsischen Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften ; Panofka, Antiques du Cabinet Pourtalés, 1834; C. T. Newton, Catalogue of Greek Vases, British Museum, 1851-70; Gerhard, Antike Bildwerke (1828-44), Auserlesene griechische Vasenbilder (1840-58), and Griechische und etruskische Trinkschalen (1840); Benndorf, Griech- aische und sicilienscne Vasenbilder, 1877, in progress (with fine coloured plates, all full size); Helbig, Wandgemdlde Campaniens, 1868; Inghirami, Pittwre di Vasi fittili, 1832-89; Millingen, Unedited Monuments, London, 1822-26: Lenor- mant and De Witte, Monuments Céramographiques, 1844-61 ; Raoul-Rochette, Monuments d' Antiquité Grecque, &c., 1833; Lahn, Gemdlde aus Pompei, &c., 1828-59; Bréndsted, Thirty-two Greek Vases, 1832; Fiorelli, Vast dipinti, &c., 1856; Gargiulo, Vast fittili Italo-Greci, 1831; Heydemann, Griechische Vasen- bilder, 1870, and Die Vasensammlungen des Museo zu Neapel, 1872; Jahn, Ueber Darstellungen griechischer Dichter auf Vasenbildern, 1861, and Vasensammlung zu Miinchen, 1854; Levezoff, Verzeichniss der antiken Denkméiler, 1834; Stephani, Die Vasensammlung der Ermitage, 1869; De Witte, Vases peinis de U Etrurie, 1837, and Vases peints de la Collection Castellani, 1865; Brunn, Probleme im der Geschichte der Vasenmalerei, 1871; Dumont, Peintwres céram. de la Gréce, 1874, and Vases peints de la Grece, 1873; Dumont and Chaplain, Les Céramiques dela Grece, Paris, 1883 (in progress, with excellent illustrations) ; Kekuleé, Griech. Vasengemdlde im Mus. zu Bonn, 1879; Roulez, Vases du Musée de Leide, Ghent, 1854 ; Collignon, Caé. des Vases du Mus. d' Athénes, Paris, 1877 ; Froehner, Ana- tomie des Vases Grees, Paris, 1880; Thiersch, Die hellen. bemalten Vasen, Munich, 1848, The following works deal specially with the vases found in Etruria :— Inghirami, Museo Chiusino, Fiesole, 1833, and Mon. Etruschi, 1845 ; Conestabile, Mon. -di Perugia, 1855-70; Noel Desvergers, L'Btrurie, Paris, 1862-64; Bull. degli Scavi d. Soc. columbaria, Florence, in progress ; Gozzadini, Necropoli a Marzabotto (1865-70), Sepoleri d. Necropoli Felsinea (1868), Necropoli di Villanova (1870), and Sepolcri nell' Arsenale di Bologna (1875); Yannoni, Scavi d. Certosa dt Bologna (1871), Scavi Arnoaldi (1877), and Scavi di via d. Pratello (1878); all these works by Gozzadini and Zannoni are printed at Bologna. See also Pindar, Nemwan Ode, x. 64-67, and Strabo, viii. p. 381. For inscriptions on vases, see Ephemeris Epigraphica, and Bockh, Corp. Iscr. Gr.*~~

Section VII.—Graco-RoMAN AND RoMAN.

Some specimens of very peculiar glazed pottery have been found at Cyrene, Cyme, Pergamum, Smyrna, Tarsus, and other Roman colonies in Asia Minor. _It is very deli- cate and often graceful in shape (see fig. 39), with very thin handles, fashioned more like glass than pottery. Itis remarkable for being coveréd with a thick vitreous glaze, usually coloured either green, orange, or purple-brown, with oxide of copper, an- timoniate of lead, or manganese, quite unlike the thin almost imperceptible glaze of Greek vases. This pottery is | mostly small; some pieces are in the shapes of cenochoz, two-handed cups, or asci, the latter covered with graceful patterns of vines or other plants moulded _ in slight relief. Statuettes and delicate « S y reliefs, parti-coloured with different pg, 39,—Greco-Ro- glazes or enamels, have been found at mancenochoe, highly

——= —yA 2 “<== ——

several of the above places, and also glazed ware, from

larger vessels, craters, and bottle-shaped am Minor. (British é useum.)

vases, decorated with moulded clay em-

blemata, wholly covered with a fine blue glaze. The

Louvre and the British Museum have the best specimens of this rare ware, which probably dates from the 1st cen- tury B.c. downwards.

“Gamian” ware, the characteristics of which are de- scribed below, was made in Italy during the first period of Graeco-Roman art. In 1883 some moulds for cups and bowls were found at Arezzo, all of the most wonderful beauty and gem-like delicacy of execution. The figures

on them are from about 3 to 4 inches high, but are large and sculpturesque in their breadth of treatment. Some of the exquisite reliefs represent dancing

~~*fauns and bacchanals, with flowing drapery, on a background enriched with vine plants in slight relief. Another has a love scene of extra- ordinary grace and refined beauty. The modelling of the nude throughout is most masterly. The treatment of these reliefs recalls the school of Praxiteles, though they are probably not earlier than the Ist or 2d century B.c.*~~

~~*Roman Pottery, Ist Century B.c. to 5th Century A.D.—Throughout Italy, Spain, France, Germany, Britain, and other countries occupied by the Romans great quantities of pottery have been found, varying but little in design or manner of execution. The principal varieties of this large and widely-spread species of ware may be classified thus—(1) Samian ware; (2) plain biscuit clay; (3) pottery decorated with slip in relief; (4) black ware ; (5) glazed ware.*~~

~~*1. The first class is a fine glossy red ware called Samian "Samian" from its resemblance to the red pottery pro- Ware*~~

~~*duced in the Greek island of Samos. The name is a con- venient one, and as it is used by Pliny (HZ. W., xxxv. 46) and other early writers it is well not to discard it, though probably the real Greek Samian pottery bore little resem- blance to that made by the Romans except in colour and glossy surface. It is of a fine red sealing-wax-like colour, of pleasant texture, and is generally decorated with moulded reliefs. Materials: the clay body usually consists of silica 50-64 parts, alumina 18-25, red oxide of iron 7-10, and lime 2-9 parts; these proportions vary in different- speci- mens. 'The red vitreous glaze, or rather enamel, which gives the ware its fine glossy surface consists of silica 64 parts, soda 20, and red oxide of iron 11 (average analysis). Method of manufacture: the bowls, cups, and other vessels, richly decorated outside with reliefs, were made thus. In the case of a bowl, a mould was first prepared, of hard well-burned clay, covered inside with incuse designs ; these sunk patterns were made either by hand-modelling or, more usually, with the aid of stamps modelled in relief. Thus the inside of the bowl-mould corresponded to the outside of the future Samian bowl, which was first turned on the wheel quite plain, but of the right size to fit into the mould. Then, while it was still soft it was pressed into the mould, and afterwards both were put upon the wheel together. As the wheel revolved, the potter could at the same time press the clay into the sunk*~~

~~ornaments of the mould and finish neatly the inside of the vessel. In some cases he raised the walls of the bowl high above the mould by adding clay, and thus with the same mould could pro- duce a variety of forms, though the lower or decorated portion always remained the same. A fine crater in the Louvre was made in this way. The vessel was then re- moved from the mould and the reliefs touched up by hand (in the finer specimens) with bone or wooden modelling- tools. The reliefs thus produced are often very graceful in design, but are mostly wanting in sharpness, many being blunted by the touch of the potter's fingers in handling the pot after it was removed from the mould.! It was next covered with the materials for the red enamel, very finely ground and fired in the usual way. Fig. 40 shows a design of typical character. The outer reliefs consist generally of graceful flowing scroll-work of vines, ivy, or other orna- ments, mixed occasionally with human figures and animals. The finest sorts of Samian ware were made at Arezzo (Aretium) in Italy? and Saguntum in Spain (the modern~~

~~1 In some rare cases the reliefs were moulded separately and then applied to the plain wheel-turned vessel while yet soft, but this was exceptional.~~

~~2 See Fabroni, Vasi jittili Aretini, 1841, and Inghirami, Mon.~~

~~Murviedro). many, and the discovery of a York makes it * appear probable <;~~

~~in Britain, where great quantities of it have been found. This ware is of great beauty, both in colour and in its delicate surface reliefs ; it is the mostartistic sort of pottery that the Romans produced. It appears to have been highly valued, as many Samian bowls have been found carefully mended with bronze or lead rivets. In addition to the moulded ware many vessels of the same class were made plain from the wheel; others have a~~

~~*peculiar scale ornament in relief applied by the potter's thumb, a form of decoration common in other varieties of Roman pottery.*~~

~~*2. Plain Biscwt Pottery is made of simple unglazed clay, without decoration, of a soft body and quite porous. The clay is mostly composed thus: silica 48-69 per cent., alumina 10-22, oxide of iron 8-13, lime 14-18 per cent., but it, of course, varies according to the locality where the pottery was made. Fig. 41 shows some of the forms of*~~

~~*Fic. 40.—Bowl of Samian ware, with moulded patterns in slight relief.*~~

~~*<----------G Nn ——— ==>*~~

~~*Fic. 41.—Typical shapes of common Roman biscuit pottery.*~~

~~*this simple ware. It was specially used for amphore, often nearly 2 feet high, sepulchral urns, and vessels for common domestic use. The forms are mostly graceful and natural. The clay is of many colours, including all shades of red, grey, brown, yellow, and (rarely) almost pure white. Some of this pottery has the grain which had been pro- duced by the wheel carefully smoothed out by a tool or the potter's hand, or in some cases by dipping the piece into a bath of thin fluid slip, but it is more commonly left without any attempt at smoothness or high finish.*~~

~~*3. Pottery with Reliefs applied in Slip.—This is a very remarkable kind of decoration, in which great skill was shown by the Roman potters. The slip, finely- ground clay, was mixed with water to about the consistency of very thick cream, and was allowed to run slowly or drop*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*It was also produced in France and Ger- | off a wooden point or flat spatula upon the outside of Samian bowl-mould at | ordinary wheel-made pottery. Very spirited figures of*~~

~~*[ROMAN.*~~

~~animals (see fig. 42)—hares pur- sued by dogs, lions, goats, horses, deer, or even complicated sub- jects with human figures such as gladiators' combats—and a great variety of graceful scroll-orna- F¢ ments of vine, ivy, or convolvulus were produced in this way with wonderful ingenuity. Both the outline and the modelling were given with curious precision by . = _ a_i the quantity of semi-fluid slip Fic. 42.—Roman cup, with which was allowed to flow off the reliefs of a stag pursued by a tool. The body, eg., of a dog ge executed in semi-fluid would be poured off a sort of >~~

~~small palette-knife, and its thinner legs formed by trailing along a point dipped in the slip. Tools for this purpose have been found near Roman kilns. One of the most elaborate specimens of this kind of pottery is a cup in the Colchester Museum, covered with reliefs of chariot-races and gladiators' combats, done with great vigour and even minuteness of detail considering the difficulties of the process. In some cases, especially when the designs are simple scroll or geometrical ornaments, additional effect is produced by the use of a slip coloured differently from the body of the pot. Frequently the relief-patterns are white, made of pipeclay, applied to a red or dark coloured vessel. The vessels with this class of decoration are mostly small bowls, cups, or bottle-like vases. Some few are made of the Samian ware, but more commonly they are grey or blackish with body and slip both of the same clay. A great deal of coarse Roman pottery is rudely decorated with a thin slip of red, white, or yellow clay, put on with a brush in coarse bands or scroll-patterns. The slip in this case is treated as a pigment of the sim- plest kind, and does not stand out in relief. With this trifling exception, nothing in the form of painted vases was produced by the potters of Roman times.~~

~~4, Black Pottery is usually made from a very silicious or Black sandy clay, composed thus—(average of several analyses) ware.~~

~~silica 76 parts, alumina 10, oxide of iron 9, lime 2. It owes its black colour and rather metallic gloss to the direct contact of smoke in a close or smother kiln. If heated in an open fire it burns out usually to a greyish white. A great deal of this ware belongs also to class 3, as it is frequently decorated with simple patterns in white slip; the presence of the white clay on the black body implies a second firing, free from the contact of smoke,~~

~~*and not high enough in temperature to burn the black out of the body of the pot. This ware was largely made at many places in Germany along the Rhine, in France, and especially at Castor in Northamptonshire, where remains of many Roman kilns have been found. It varies very much in shape and in method of decoration. Some of the numerous specimens from Bonn and Rhein- zabern are treated in a manner different from the British varieties. A few are coated with a black similar to that used by the Greeks, but very thin and poor in quality. Others have a mechanical polish applied after firing, whilst the pot was again set on the wheel, by rubbing it with black lead, occasionally applied in bands of alternately dull and bright black all round the pot. A fine specimen from Coblentz, now in the Sévres Museum, has a curious com- bination of stamped work and reliefs formed in fluid slip. The design represents a lion running through vine-branches. The body of the lion and the grapes are stamped from a mould, the rest being done in slip. Cups and small jars of this ware are frequently modelled into strange shapes by*~~

~~*Glazed ware.*~~

~~*Mortaria.*~~

~~*ROMAN.*~~ |

~~*being pinched in at various places by the potter's fingers while they were fresh from the wheel. Others are deco- rated with groups of dots, made of semi-fluid slip, appa- rently applied through a pierced stencil-plate (see fig. 43). The dots are arranged in close rows, forming rectangular patches, ar- ranged round the body of the vessel,—a very < dull kind of ornament, which may, however, ——— have had a practical use _———*~~

~~*in making the pottery Fria. 48.—Roman black ware decorated*~~

~~*: E with groups of dots in relief, and tt "ede om a blackened in the smother kiln.*~~

~~*5. Glazed Pottery.—This is rare, but has been found in most of the countries once occupied by the Romans. Some of the best specimens resemble that described above as Greco-Roman glazed ware. Most are, however, very*~~

~~*inferior, both in execution and in the quality of the glaze, which isa true glass, usually coloured light green or brown- ish yellow. A cake of semi-fused greenish glass, appa- rently intended for this purpose, was found in the ruins of a kiln in Britain. This glazed pottery is small, and is decorated in various ways, by incised lines, or groups of dots in relief, or by brush-applied stripes of red or white clay.*~~

~~*aia 542" Sosa*~~

~~*In addition to the forms of Roman domestic pottery shown in the above figures one peculiar shape occurs very frequently, namely, the " mortarium," a large shallow dish, made of thick clay, with a spout at one side, used for triturating cooked vegetables or other soft substances. The inside of these mortar-like dishes is often roughened by being sprinkled, while in a soft state, with crushed*~~

~~*. quartz or pottery, apparently to aid the process of pounding.*~~

~~*Clay lamps.*~~

~~*Baked | bricks.*~~

~~*Roman kilns.*~~

~~*They are made of various kinds of ware, especially red Samian and yellow biscuit clay. '*~~

~~*Clay lamps were very largely used by the Romans, mostly made of plain biscuit clay, but the finest specimens are in the red Samian ware. A few have been found with a thick vitreous glaze, coloured like the rest of the Roman glazed wares (see LAmp, vol. xiv. p. 247).*~~

~~*An extensive use of baked clay was made by the Romans in the manufacture of bricks, roofing -tiles, flue-tiles, drain-pipes, baths, and even coffins. The bricks are generally very large and thin, some 15 to 18 inches long, and only 14 inches thick, and walls were entirely built of them. They were also used to form alternating bands in stone walls, the brick bands usually consisting of from three to five courses. In Rome bricks were merely used as*~~

~~a facing to concrete walls. They are always triangular in shape, except such as were set at the angles of walls and used as facing to arches. Those used for the latter purpose are generally two Roman feet square (about 1 foot 114 inches English). See Romz. The system of heating employed by the Romans in their houses and baths was very ingenious and complete. Sometimes the whole walls of a room were lined with clay flue-pipes, square in section, which, being con- nected at the bottom with the hypocaust, carried the hot air over the whole wall-surface as well as under the floor (see BATH), the mosaic and concrete area of which (the " suspensura"') was supported on large clay slabs carried on short brick pillars. Flanged tiles, similar to those used for roofing, were often built up on edge, with others set across the top, to form graves, and to protect the sepul- chral urns and other buried objects from being crushed by the weight of earth upon them.~~

~~Roman Pottery-kilns. Great numbers of Roman kilns have been found in various countries, but none quite perfect. They are small, round, or oval structures of brick, with a place for the fuel at one side, and a floor made of pierced slabs of clay, on which the pots were piled, the fiames and hot air passing through the holes in the clay floor. Most kilns were probably covered by a brick dome with a central opening, exactly the same in principle as the early Corinthian kiln shown in fig. 3. The smother kilns may, how- ever, have been arranged rather differently, so as to fire the pots in*an atmosphere of heated smoke; or this may have been done by partly closing the aperture at the top, in order to half smother the fire, and prevent its burning with a hot clear flame. Fig. 44 shows the remains of one of the Castor kilns, about 7 feet in diameter, with an arched opening for the insertion of the fuel, and a pierced floor, made of large clay slabs radiating to a central point, where they were supported by a brick pillar. Other kilns have been found in the Upchurch marshes (Kent), along the Severn banks in Shrop- shire, at Ashdon (Essex), Colchester, London, York, and many other Romano-British towns. Though varying in shape, yet in general~~

~~*principle Roman kilns, in whatever country they are found, are practically the same.*~~

~~*Inscriptions on Roman Pottery.—Potters' names, impressed from oblong or circular-incuse stamps, occur very frequently on many varieties of Roman pottery, especially on the plain biscuit and*~~

~~*TTS a Ty*~~

~~*ay*~~

~~*Fic. 44.—Roman kiln found at Castor. The low arch is for the inser- tion of the fuel ; the pots rested on the perforated floor, made of clay slabs; the top of the kiln is missing,—it was probably a dome.*~~

~~*Samian wares. Teutonic and Gaulish names sometimes appear, showing that in certain cases native potters worked at the Roman potteries. When the potter's name is in the nominative, it is followed by F. or FECIT; if in the genitive, by MANV or OFFICINA, usually in some contracted form. In addition to the potter's name those of the owner of the workshop and of the estate from which the clay came occasionally occur, as, for example, OP(US) DOLIUTARE) L. IVLI THEOD E(QVITIS) R(OMANI) FIG SAL EX PR(AEDIS) FL(AVII) TITIANT C. V. (clarissimi viri), " Pot-work from the salarian manufactory belonging to L. Julius Theodotus, a Roman knight, (the clay taken) from the estate of Flavius Titianus, a most distinguished person," this last being a title used like the English "esquire." This brick stamp is from a house built against the ancient wall round the Capitoline hill, and dates from the middle of the 2d century A.D. Few brick stamps found in Rome are older than the end of the 1st century A.D. ; but some have been found at Velia in Cisalpine Gaul dated with the names of the consuls for 75 B.c. Others have also the name of therulingemperor. Roman soldiers were often employed to make bricks and tiles; and many such are stamped with the mark or number of a Roman legion, ¢.g., LEG. VI. for " legio sexta." " Amphore were occasionally inscribed, in rudely-painted ochre colours, with words to indicate the quality of wine they contained or their measure of capacity, but such inscrip- tions were probably added when the amphore were in their owner's cellar, and were simply painted in tempera. Numbers of large amphore were frequently embedded in the*~~

~~*concrete of which Roman vaults were made, especially during the 3d and 4th centuries a.D., one object of this being to gain lightness without much loss of strength. The circus of Maxentius and the mausoleum of the empress Helena, both outside the walls of Rome, are examples of this curious use of pottery.*~~

~~*Literature.—Pliny, H. N., xxxv.; Birch, Ancient Pottery, 1873; Jewitt, Ceramic Art of Great Britain, vol. i., 1877; Artis, The Durobrive: of Antoninus, 1828 ; Church, Corinium Museum, 1871; Cochet, Archéologie céramique, 1860 ; Roach-Smith, Roman London, 1859; Wright, The Celt, the Roman, and the Saxon, 1861; Marcilly, L' Art céramique en Gaule, 1874; Fabroni, Vasi fittili Aretini, 1841 (Samian ware); Robert, Les figures des poteries rougedtres antiques,*~~

~~*1865 ; Shortt, Sylvia antiqua Iscana, 1841. See also many articles in Arch#xo- logia, the Archxological Journal, and other societies' Proceedings.*~~

~~*Section VIII.—PrErsian aND MosLEM.*~~

~~*It is convenient to class under this head all the numerous varieties of pottery which were the work of Moslem races. In all this pottery, with the exception of that included under the head "Hispano-Moorish" (see p. 622), there is a great similarity in character of design and in methods of execution, both of which appear to a great extent to have been originated and brought to highest perfection under the Persians, who seem to have inherited, through the Sasanians, much of the skill in manipulating clay and manufacturing enamels and glazes which was possessed by the people of ancient Assyria. The Persians of the 10th to the 17th century, perfect masters of all the de- corative arts to a degree possessed probably by no other*~~

~~*Inscrip- tions.*~~

~~*Mate- rials.*~~

~~*Lustred ware,*~~

Ancient coarse pottery.

620

POTTS &

[PERSIAN.

race or age, excelled in pottery as in other handicrafts. | pation of Egypt down toa very recent period. To this

Their enamels and glazes are made and applied with the greatest skill; their colours are brilliant and yet harmoni- ous; and the patterns painted on their pottery are designed with the most wonderful grace and freedom, together with a perfect sense of the right kind of ornament to use for each special place and material.

Materials used by Persian Potters.—In most cases the clay body of Persian pottery is completely covered either with a white enamel or with slip, and therefore any sort of clay sufficiently plastic for the wheel suited the purpose, whatever its colour. The enamel was much the same as that used by the ancient Assyrians, except that it con- tained a much larger proportion of oxide of lead, of which there were often three parts to one of oxide of tin and five of silicate of soda. The white slip is silicate of alumina with some alkali. The glaze is either a pure silicate of soda, or has in addition a little oxide of lead to increase its fusibility. The pigments are oxides of cobalt and copper for the blues and greens, manganese for the purples, oxides of copper and iron for the reds, magnetic oxide of iron for the black, and antimony for the yellow; a rich warm orange was produced by a mixture of anti- mony and red oxide of iron. It is not always possible without actual analysis to tell whether the white ground of Persian pottery is a tin enamel or a glazed slip, especially as in many cases a glaze is applied over the enamel ; but this is not a point of great importance, as the decorative treatment of the white ground was in either case much the same.

The following are the chief varieties of Persian pottery.

~~*1. Lustred Ware.—The application of lustre colours requires a special process of firing. The following descrip- tion applies equally to the other two classes of pottery in which lustre pigments were largely used, namely, Hispano- Moorish and Italian majolica. The special beauty of the lustre depends on the decomposition of a metallic salt, usually silver or copper; the required design was painted in a pigment composed mainly of this salt over the sur- face of the smooth enamel or glaze after it had been fired. The vessel with the lustre pigments was then fired again in a kiln specially so arranged that the heated gases and smoke should come into contact with the metallic pig- ments ; the minute and heated particles of carbon in the smoke combined with the oxygen of the salt, setting free the metal, which was left, in a finely-divided state, fixed on the surface of the enamel. In this way a beautiful prismatic effect was produced like the colours of mother-of-pearl. The lustre colours when looked at from one point of view are simply various shades of browns and yellows, but when seen at an angle they appear shot with the most brilliant violets, blues, purples, and red. They were used generally, and with best effect, over a white*~~

~~*ground (see fig. 45), but also over deep-blue or green*~~

~~*enamels. Lustre colours were specially used by the Persians for wall-decoration (see TrLxs), but they also used them on both white and blue enamel grounds to ornament hookah- bottles, bowls, plates, ewers, and tall rose-water bottles. The lustre is generally used alone, and not, as in the Italian majolica, combined with other non-lustre pigments. Its use 1s very early in Persia: dated specimens exist of the 10th century; and its manufacture has continued down to the present time, though that now made is of a very inferior quality.*~~

~~*2. Coarse pottery covered with a fine white silicious slip, on which arabesques and other simple patterns are pated in black, the whole then covered by a transparent green glaze. This is a very ancient sort of ware, made in Egypt during the XVIIIth Dynasty and many centuries after by Moslem potters, from the early years of their occu-*~~

~~*class belong the "bacini" or large dishes with which some*~~

~~*Fig. 45.—Persian ewer, white enamelled ground, with pattern in brown copper lustre; the upper part has a blue ground. The mount- ing is gilt bronze, Italian 16th-century work. (British Museum.)*~~

~~*of the 12th-century churches in Pisa and other towns in*~~

~~*Italy were decorated. They were built in on the outside walls of the campanili, or used in rows to form friezes. In design and method of execution they have nothing in common with Italian majolica, and the oft-repeated story of their being the models from which the Italians learned to make their majolica appears to be a baseless fable.*~~

~~*3. Sgraffiato Ware.—These are certain large bowls or Sgratii- jars decorated in a peculiar way, being covered first with ato ware.*~~

~~*a coating of white enamel and then with a complete coat- ing of brown or deep-blue enamel. The pattern, usually graceful branches of plants with pointed leaves, is formed by cutting through the upper coloured layer down to the white enamel underneath before firing in the kiln. Thus the design appears in white with a coloured ground. The white is, of course, slightly sunk below the coloured layer. Bowls thus decorated are mostly white inside, with a little simple painting in blue, the sgraffiato or incised work being only on the outside.*~~

~~*4, The next class is the reverse of the incised ware in White treatment : the whole vessel is covered with brown or blue enamel*~~

~~*enamel, and the design, either arabesques geometrically treated or natural sprays of foliage, is painted over it in white enamel, thickly applied so as to stand out in slight relief. This and the preceding class are usually glazed over the enamels, a common Persian practice, to gain addi- tional richness and brilliance of surface. Somewhat akin to this ware in style is a very beautiful sort of pottery with most graceful and delicate designs touched on with a fine brush over a white enamel ground. The pigments are blue, green, grey, and a very rich orange tending to red, and are all thickly but very delicately put on ; these pieces are of extreme beauty both in colours and in design. Tall jars, bottles, bowls, plates, and hookah-jars are the*~~

vessels usually decorated in this way. Some of the large plates are perfect marvels of decorative beauty of the most refined and graceful kind.

_ 5. Damascus Ware.—Under this head is generally Damas- included a good deal of Persian pottery made at other-cus ware.

places besides Damascus, but of similar style and colour- ing. It is mostly remarkable for the fineness of its white enamel or slip, its rich glaze, and the beauty of the designs and colours. One class is painted wholly in various tints

RHODIAN. |

of blue, the design being often regular and treated with some geometrical stiffness. Other sorts have in addition a soft olive green, and purple-brown made of manganese (see fig. 46). One of the finest specimens of the ware is

Fra. 46.—Plate of Damascus ware, painted in several tints of blue, a quiet green, and manganese purple. (British Museum.)

a lamp taken from the Dome of the Rock at Jerusalem,

_ and now in the possession of Mr Drury Fortnum, F.S.A.

Rhodian.

(see fig. 47). It is inscribed in large blue letters with pious sayings of Mohammed, and in small black charac- ters round the lower rim, 'In the year 956, in the month Jumada 'l-ula. The painter is the poor, the humble Mus- tafa." According to our reckoning this date is June 1549 A.D., the year when the Dome was re- stored by Sultan Suleiman, who was probably the donor of this beautiful lamp. One class of painted decoration used in Damascus ware has flowers treated in a simple way, yet with much natural beauty, such FI asthe rose, hyacinth, tulip, carnation, and others, arranged on large plates and bowls with the most perfect skill and good taste. The plate shown above (fig. 46) is a good example of this sort of design,

~~6. Rhodian ware, so called because it was largely manufactured by Oriental potters in the island of Rhodes, is made of rather coarse clay, covered with a fine white silicious slip, on which the decorations are painted, the whole being then covered with a thick glaze formed of silica, oxide of lead, and soda. Its chief characteristic is the use of a fine red pigment, which owes its colour to~~

~~g. 47.—Lamp from the Dome of the Rock, painted in the same colours as fig. 46. (Collection of Mr Drury Fortnum.)~~

~~the red oxide of iron. This pigment was applied in very thick body, so that it stands out in actual relief like drops of sealing-wax. Plates, tall bottles, jars, mugs, and pitchers with handles are the usual forms. They are all decorated with patterns of great beauty and splendour of colour, brilliant blues, greens, and the peculiar red being the chief (see fig. 48). The designs are mostly flowers, exactly the same in drawing and ar- rangement as those ¢\ on the last-men- 4 tioned sort of Dam- 4 ascus ware. Other © more geometrical patterns are also used, but mostly for wall-decoration. The finest specimens of # Rhodian ware date | from the 16th and first half of the 17th centuries. Other pieces of this pot- tery, which appear to have been made for European buyers, have coats of arms or human figures, the latter very coarsely executed, and prob- ably later in date than the purely Ori- ental designs. The town of Lindus, where ruined kilns yet remain, was one of the chief places in Rhodes for the production of this kind of-pottery. With other Oriental wares it was imported into western Europe during the 16th century. Some specimens exist with English silver mounts of the time of Elizabeth, very elaborately wrought. It was probably included under the title of "' Damas ware," a name which often occurs in medieval inventories, and appears to include many varieties of Oriental pottery, all of which were very highly valued in France, Italy, and England during the long period when the native pottery in those countries was of a very rude description. The South Kensington Museum and the Hétel Cluny in Paris have the finest collections of this magnificent class of Oriental pottery ; some very choice specimens are in the British Museum and the Louvre.~~

~~*Fic. 48.—Rhodian jug.*~~

~~*7. Pottery made in Persia under Chinese Influence.—This Perso- includes several varieties more or less strongly Chinese in Chinese It is recorded that “ ””**~~

~~*method of execution or in design. Shah ‘Abbas I., a great patron of all the arts, about the year 1600, invited a number of Chinese potters to establish themselves at Ispahan for the sake of introducing improve- ments in the manufacture of pottery. Though no hard porcelain like that of China appears to have been made in Persia, several new methods of work were introduced, and a new style of decoration, half-Chinese and half-Persian, was largely used for a long period after the arrival of the Chinese potters*~~

~~*“The main varieties of this Perso-Chinese ware are the following. (1) A sort of semi-porcelain, called by English dealers, quite with- out reason, “Gombroon ware,” which is pure white and semi-trans- parent, but, unlike Chinese porcelain, is soft and friable where not protected by the glaze. It is composed of silicate of alumina, with free silica, and an alkaline flux ; in the heat of an ordinary porcelain furnace it fuses into a transparent glass. It is very fragile, but is of an extremely pleasant texture and slightly creamy tint. It is frequently decorated with simple ges pierced through the sides of the vessel; the holes are filled up by the transparent glaze which covers the whole, thus forming, as it were, ‘little windows of clear glass. It is also often decorated with painted flowers or*~~

~~*Hispano-*~~

~~*arabesques in cobalt blue and manganese purple. The forms of the ware are small and delicate, mostly cups, plates, bowls, and flower-vases with many necks; these were made from the 17th down to the 19th century. (2) Céladon, very like that made in China, but greyer in tint, is common earthenware covered with a green enamel. It was much valued by the Persians and other nations on account of the belief that a cup of this ware betrayed the presence of poison either by breaking or by changing colour. The Persians call it “jachmi” (jade), from its resemblance to that valuable*~~

~~*stone. (3) Pottery of coarse clay, modelled with blunt reliefs, and the whole covered with green enamel. Another variety is covered with a bright blue enamel, chiefly used for ewers, hookah-bottles, and tall jars. The moulded reliefs are either flowers or human figures, poor both in design and execution. This kind of decoration was much used for heavy square bottles or tall jars; it has little or no trace of the usual Persian tastefulness of design, and the colour is harsh. Most of this ware is not older than the 18th and 19th centuries. It is very largely Chinese in style. (4) Pottery painted in cobalt blues on a white ground, with some black, used chiefly for outlines. This is the largest class of Perso-Chinese pottery, and of it were made large dishes, bowls, bottles, ewers, and almost all forms of domestic and ornamental vessels. In some the design is purely Persian, in others almost purely Chinese, while in others the two styles are mingled. The Chinese grotesque dragons and mannered treatment of fir-trees and even human figures frequently occur, but the more graceful designs have flowers and foliage arranged with that great decorative skill and good taste for which the Persians are soremarkable. Fig. 49 shows a dish from the South Kensing-*~~

~~*Fic, 49.—Persian plate painted in blues only. (South Kensington Museum.)*~~

~~*ton Museum in which there is little or no Chinese influence in the design ; it is painted only in blues, and dates from the 17th century. Some few pieces have figures and flowers moulded in low relief, merely indicating the form, and then painted in blues and black lines. On the whole this class of pottery is very decorative in effect ; the glaze is thick, and the blues frequently softened by having run a little in the firing ; the different shades of blue are very varied and harmonious, ranging from indigo to a deep ultramarine.*~~

~~*Hispano-Moorrsh Pottery, and Enamelled Lustre Wares*~~

~~*Moorish. produced under Oriental Influence in Sicily and the Balearic*~~

~~*Isles.—To the earlier or Arab period of Oriental rule in south-west Europe no existing specimens of pottery can be attributed, though there are sufficient records to show that the Arab potters of Spain, as of other parts of the world, were highly distinguished for their skill and the artistic beauty of their wares. The existing specimens of Hispano-Moorish pottery, which are*~~

very numerous, date from the early years of the Moorish occupation, towards the end of the 13th century, and continue down to the 17th century. During this long period three stages were passed through, each with characteristics of its own, but passing imperceptibly one into another,—(1) pottery made by the Moors for their own use ; (2) pottery made by

cess was this. After the pot had been thrown on the wheel, ae

them for the use of their Christian conquerors; (3) pottery made by Spanish potters who imitated the techni- cal methods of the Moors, and to some extent their designs and style of decoration.

Technical Methods, Colours, &c.—The technical methods Tech- remained the same throughout all three periods. The pro- nical

a rather coarse red or yellowish clay being used, it was dipped into a cream-like mixture of the materials for its white enamel coat. This, like the white enamel of Persian pottery, was simply a glass rendered white and opaque by the addition of oxide of tin. When fired, the vessel was covered with a smooth coat of enamel, slightly creamy in colour and very pleasant in texture. Only two colours were used for decoration, and very often only one. The chief of these was a lustre, made with oxides of copper or silver, and varying in tint from a pale lemon yellow to a deep coppery red. The peculiar application of lustre-colour has been described above under the head of "lustred ware" (p. 620). The other colour is a deep indigo blue, varying in tint, and produced sometimes with copper and sometimes with cobalt oxides. The blue was applied before the lustre, which always required a special and final firing under differ- ent conditions from those necessary for the fusion of the white enamel and the blue pigment. The chief towns in which the ware was manufactured were Malaga, Valencia, and Manises (in the province of Valencia); the celebrated amphora-shaped vase found in the Alhambra was probably from the first of these places. Ibn Batuta (14th century) describes the beauty of the "gold-coloured pottery" of Malaga, and says that it was largely exported into distant countries. Marineo (Cosas memorables de Espata, 1517) and Ercolano (Historia de Valencia, 1610) both praise highly the "gilt pottery" made at Valencia and Manises. The term "gilt" refers to the metallic golden colour of the lustre. Pieces of Valencia ware occur with the accompany- ing mark (No. 1). The

usual forms of this pottery chiefly consist of deep dishes and bowls, jars, drug-pots, goblets, and large bucket-shaped vessels. The early ones, such as the Alhambra amphora, dating from the early part of the 14th century, are decor- ated with delicate and graceful arabesque patterns, or branches of a plant like the briony, the leaves of which are often alternately in blue and in yellow Potter's lustre. A few have Arabic inscriptions. The de- ae

: : o. 1. signs are most masterly, drawn with great freedom of touch, and very decorative in effect. The delicacy and minuteness of the painting are often increased by white lines on the yellow lustre, done with a wooden point by wiping out the lines through the lustre pigment before it was fired ; this could be done easily, because the lustre was painted on the hard smooth enamel after it was fired, not on an absorbent biscuit surface.

The pottery of the earlier period has mostly a lustre of pale Classes almost lemon yellow made with oxide of silver, while the later and of ware. coarser varieties have a deep-red lustre made from copper, which is rather harsh and too metallic in appearance. The decorations of the second period are very frequently heraldic in character. A favourite design for large dishes is a lion rampant or a displayed eagle, the latter used as the emblem of St John the Evangelist, the patron saint of Valencia; others have shields with the arms of Castile and Aragon or of royal personages. Many of the grandly- decorated dishes are not only ornamented on the front but also have their backs elaborately covered with rich and graceful ara- besques. Some of this ware is moulded in slight relief; plates have slightly projecting ribs, and goblet-shaped cups have swelling gadroons, a form copied from metal originals. Fig. 50 shows a fine dish, now in the British Museum, painted in copper lustre and blue ; though Moorish in style, it has a Spanish inscription, SENTA CATALINA GVARDA NOS. The pottery of the third class is very inferior in all respects to the work of the Moorish potters. Not only is the lustre harsh in quality but the designs are very coarse and often rudely executed, though still for the most part retaining strong traces of their Oriental origin. The

cinerary urns are very much the same whether they are Cinerary found in Germany, Scandinavia, Britain, or France: they ¥s.

~~*mark appended (No. 2) is attributed to the manufactory of Manises, which was very productive in the 17th century.*~~

~~*TEUTONIC, GAULISH, ETC.*~~ |

~~*Balearic pottery.*~~

~~*In addition to the lustred pottery of this sort made in Spain ware of similar design and execution was produced in the Balearic Islands. Many pieces exist bearing the arms of Inca in Majorca. The beauty of Balearic pot- tery is mentioned by Giovanni da Uzzano, who wrote a treatise on trade and navigation in 1442. It was also alluded to by J. C. Scaliger (Evxercitationes, xcii.) in the 16th century. This pottery was largely imported into Italy, where it no doubt influenced the design of some of the so-called "majolica," though it can hardly Potter's*~~

~~*yy)*~~

~~*Great quantities of sepulchral urns have been found dating from the departure of the Romans from Britain to the 10th century, but almost no specimens exist of the domestic pottery of this period. The shapes, the char- acter of the clay, and the ornamental patterns on the*~~

~~*mostly show traces of Roman influence; some are even coarsely-executed copies of red Samian ware, and are skil- fully wheel-made and well fired. Others are very rude,*~~

~~*hand-made, and scarcely to be distinguished from the*~~

~~*pottery of the early iron age. In the main, however, the urns are much neater, more glossy, and more elaborately ornamented than the prehistoric pottery. They are made of hard well-burned clay, generally grey, brown, or blackish*~~

~~*a ana its manufacture, as has so often been "ani in colour. The decoration is often very elaborate, with Siculo- Another class of pottery has been attributed to the No. 2. incised lines, some arranged in Wary. bands, others in wheel- Moorish. Moslem conquerors of Sicily, though without much distinct evi- made rings. The most characteristic ornaments are simple*~~

~~*dence. It is very similar to the arrose Mea ware, except that | geometrical patterns, stars, crosses, the svastika, and others,*~~

~~*the lustre is painted over a great blue not whiteenamel. Some impressed in the soft clay from wooden stamps (see fig. 51).*~~

~~*: h 5 j*~~

~~*%*~~

~~‘ ‘—_|~~

~~*Fic. 51.—Saxon cinerary urns; the stamped patterns are*~~

~~*shown full size.*~~

~~*Many urns have a ring of bosses pressed out from the inside by the potter's thumb, and some few have bands or ‘ stripes in coarse ochre colours or white. The surface of the urns is frequently glossy, partly from the hard silicious | quality of the clay, but often because it has been mechani- De Se eae é ; cally polished. A black shining surface was sometimes*~~

~~*Fic. 50.—Hispano-Moorish plate, painted in blue and copper lustre. given with graphite (plumbago), as was ,the case with some*~~

~~*other pottery, with paintings in blue with black outlines, on a of the Roman black pottery. A lump of graphite was*~~

~~*white silicious slip, and covered by a thick vitreous glaze, may | found with blackened urns in a tomb at Hogelberg.!*~~

~~*be the work of Siculo-Moorish potters. The designs are very bold | Medieval Pottery of England and France, 11th to 15th English*~~

~~*and effective, often with inscriptions in large Arabic characters, or C*~~
~~*Though 7 baa grotesque horses and other animals, boldly drawn. The*~~
~~*attribu- entury.—Though great quantities of pottery for domestic nk tion of*~~
~~*Moslem pottery to special localities is always difficult and | use were made*~~
~~*during this period it was extremely fragile, | cainval uncertain, owing to the*~~
~~*great similarity in design and in methods and, being of very coarse ware,*~~
~~*without artistic beauty, few ware.*~~

~~*of execution that is always common to Moslem races wherever they*~~
~~*specimens have been preserved to our times. It consisted*~~

~~*may have chanced to settle. tie of tall 3 hakGal "ich hil '*~~

~~*The Kensington Museum and the Hétel Cluny have the best mostly Of tall*~~
~~*Jugs, giobular pitchers, bowls, dishes, and collections of Persian and*~~
~~*Hispano-Moorish wares. The British drinking-cups, all of which were made*~~
~~*for some centuries Museum, the Louvre, and the Archeological Museum of*~~
~~*Madrid with but little variation in shape or quality. Fig. 52 have many very*~~
~~*choice specimens. Others are scattered through | shows a selection the*~~
~~*various museums of Europe. f cori lena*~~

~~*Other In other parts of the world, especially among the Moslem people Of*~~
~~*See eee A Moslem of India, Persia, and northern Africa, very graceful*~~
~~*pottery 1s now usually made of countries, made, especially the plain biscuit*~~
~~*varieties, in accordance with | coarse red or yel- \ ~~" traditional forms*~~
~~*and methods. The common pottery of Egypt is | low clay, often cov- very*~~
~~*beautiful in shape and often pleasant in colour and texture; | . oq with hit*~~
~~*=)*~~

~~*at several places on the banks of the Nile a fine red ware, very like | S82*~~
~~*way a*~~

~~*the Roman "Samian," is still largely manufactured, and the water- slip, and*~~
~~*partly \ jars made of the common brown clay are generally fashioned in |*~~
~~*glazed with a green shapes of almost Hellenic beauty, which seem to have*~~
~~*been con- | or yellow vitreous Ey tinually used since the time of the*~~
~~*Ptolemies.] Jawoll*~~

~~*Literature.—For the subject of the preceding section the reader may consult | 84428, rendere Vy Chardin, Voyages en Perse, c. 1650 (printed in 1811); Rochechouart, Souvenirs | more fusible bythe @un Voyage en Perse, 1867; Henderson, Collection of Pottery, &c., 1868 ;*~~

~~*Fortnum, South Kensington Musewm Catalogue of Pottery, 1873; Davillier, Les | presence of a large Fic. 52.—Common forms of medieval pottery ; + sicese Poe ee 1861; and many works on the general history proportion of oxide the upper part of the slender jug is covered : of lead. Somehave with a green vitreous lead glaze; the other*~~

~~*Srctron IX.—Txutonic, Saxon, AND GAULISH. coarse painted is unglazed with stripes of red ochre.*~~

~~*stripes in coloured ochres ; others have heraldic badges or fanciful ornaments, rudely modelled, and fastened to the body of the pot; and some grotesque jugs are formed in*~~

~~*1 See Du Cleuzion, La poterie Gauloise, 1872, and Cochet, Archéo- logie céramique, 1860.*~~

~~*Sgraffi- ato ware.*~~

~~*Majolica.*~~

~~*624*~~

~~*the shape of animals or knights on horseback. The most graceful in shape were pilgrim-bottles, flattened globes, very like one of the forms common I Egyptian and Assyrian pottery. The common domestic pottery of the Middle Ages was made and used in enormous quantities. Though it was wonderfully cheap, yet the ease with which it was broken made it a serious and often-recurring 1tem in the household expenses of rich or royal personages. The list of expenses of a feast on the anniversary of Queen Eleanor's death (wife of Edward I.) contains this item, "pro M® et D discis, tot platellis, tot salseriis, et CCCC chiphis xliis,"—that is, 42s. for 1500 dishes, 1500 plates, 1500 saucers, and 400 cups. The 42s, are perhaps equal to £25 of modern money, a small sum for 4900 pieces of pottery.*~~

~~*Section X.—MEDILZVAL AND MoDERN ITALIAN,*~~

~~*Sgrafiato Ware was made by covering a vessel of red clay with a coating of white slip made of some natural white earth like pipeclay. This was done by dipping or by pouring the fluid slip over the red vessel. When the white coating was dry the design was formed by cutting it away so as to expose the red body underneath. In this way bowls, dishes, ewers, and other vessels were decorated with human figures, or with graceful scroll-patterns of foliage and flowers. The patterns were then picked out*~~

~~*with bright colours,—yellow, blue, and green ; and finally the whole was glazed with a very fusible lead glaze (see*~~

~~*Fic. 58.—Italian sgraffiato plate, 16th century. (South Kensington Museum.)*~~

~~*decoration of pottery in various parts of Italy ; but only few existing specimens are older than the second half of the 15th century. Some of the earlier specimens have very graceful designs, of almost Gothic style, executed with great spirit, and very decorative in effect. Sgraffiato ware continued to be made during the 16th and 17th centuries, especially in the neighbourhood of Pavia; it was, however, but little esteemed owing to the greater popularity of painted majolica. Rude imitations of it were made in Germany and France.*~~

~~*Ltalian Majolica.1\—The history of this ware in its early stages of development is almost unknown. According to popular tradition, it was first copied from certain plates brought by the Pisans from the island of Majolica (or Majorca) in the 12th century. This is extremely improb- able ; the fabrication and use of a white tin enamel were*~~

~~*_ 1 In this article the word " majolica" is used in its modern sense to include non-lustred pottery,*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*[ITALIAN*~~

~~*known to Italian potters long before they found out the secret of lustre colours, a discovery not made in Italy till the 15th century. We know from various sources that lustred pottery from the Balearic Islands was largely im- ported into Italy during the 15th century (see above), and it is quite possible that the sight of the brilliant lustre on the imported Moorish ware set the potters of Italy to work, and led them to find out, either by experiments or from some traveller who had visited the Balearic kilns, how to compose and fire the metallic salts required to produce the lustre ; but this occurred long after the Pisan victory at Majorca. It was to the lustred ware only that the Italians gave the name of " majolica," though now it is commonly applied to all the Italian enamelled pottery of the 15th and 16th centuries. It was the lustre only that was a fresh discovery in the 15th century; enamelled ware had been made by Italian potters many years before. This is an Important point, and it should be noted that the accounts given by Vasari and several other old Italian writers on the subject are quite misleading. " Mezza- majolica" is a word of rather uncertain meaning which occurs in early writers on Italian pottery. It has been used to mean pottery covered not with a tin enamel but with a white slip, made of a white clay like that found at Vicenza; and in many museums the earlier and ruder sorts of majolica have been arranged under this name. The fact, however, seems to be that even the rudest and earliest specimens of majolica in the various museums of 'Europe are covered with a true tin enamel. Curious specimens of pottery, covered with a rude enamel made of the white kaolinic "terra di Vicenza" mixed with an alkaline silicate, have recently been found in tombs of the 11th and 12th centuries in various parts of Italy. These earliest attempts at what we now call majolica are coarsely decorated in green, yellow, and blue, on a white ground, with patterns of semi-Oriental style. The pigments used appear in some cases to be simply coloured glass reduced to powder,—a kind of smalto. This style of pottery is probably the mezza-majolica of Vasari. It is evidently the first step towards the production of the true majolica, in which the kaolinic clay of Vicenza is replaced by a tin enamel. This discovery is of great importance as regards the early history of Italian pottery. The few pieces yet known are mostly preserved in the office of public instruc- tion in Rome, and are not yet exhibited in any museum. Very few early examples of developed Italian majolica are now known. One of the most important is a small jug, 5 inches high, in the Sévres Museum, which is made of reddish clay covered with a*~~

~~white tin enamel, and painted with a shield and simple ornaments in manganese purple and bright green (oxide of copper). It is supposed to have been made at Rimini, and dates from the 13th or 14th century (see fig. 54). It was not, however, till the second half of the 15th century that Italian , majolica began to be largely produced. | Owing to the great difficulty of determining | the special towns where the earlier varie- ties were made, it will be convenient to ;§ treat this ware according to style and date | rather than under the heads of the different potteries. During the earlier and more im- portant period the production of majolica "pene te pro. was confined to a very small part of Italy. bably the a ia Bologna on the north, Perugia on the south, known specimen Siena on the west, and the Adriatic on the of Italian majol- east roughly indicate the limits within i@ (Gévres Mu- which the chief majolica-producing towns eS were situated ; these were Forli, Faenza, Rimini, Cafag- giolo, Pesaro, Urbino, Castel Durante, Gubbio, Perugia, and Siena. Towards the middle of the 16th century distant~~

~~Tienes~~

~~Fic. 54.—Ewer of~~

~~MAJOLICA. |~~

~~Pert Ee Bz~~

~~cities such as Venice also produced fine majolica, but of the later style.~~

~~625~~

~~potters at work throwing vessels on the wheel. The wheel itself Manu- ("torno"') consists of a vertical axle, with a large lower wooden facture.~~

~~Mate- rials.~~

~~Materials.—Fortunately ample information on this sub- ject has been preserved to us. A potter of Castel Durante occupied himself for some time in writing a full description of the materials, the methods of using them, the ""throwing- wheels," the kilns, and all the varied processes of his craft. His original MS., copiously illustrated with clever pen- sketches, is in the~~

~~*library of the South Kensington Museum, and the work was printed, with facsimiles of the drawings, at Pesaro in 1879. It is called J tre libri dell'*~~

~~*arte del Vasajo by Cipriano Piccolpasso of Castel Durante, and is dated 1548.*~~

~~*Piccolpasso himself did not produce lustred ware, but he describes the process and the special kiln it required ; his descrip- tion of materials and methods, though not written till 1548, applies in all important points to the majolica of the second half of the previous century. Various receipts differing in the proportions of their ingredients are given ; the following examples are selected as typical instances.*~~

~~*1. The clay body, " terra," was to be, if possible, clay deposited by a river. It was carefully prepared for use by being beaten, ground in a mill, and passed through a sieve, so as to bring it into a smooth homogeneous plastic state, fit for being moulded on the wheel. It wasall the better for being dug out a long time before it was used.*~~

~~*2. The white enamel, " bianco," was composed of thirty parts of '**marzacotto" to twelve of oxide of tin. The marzacotto was simple powdered glass, a pure silicate of potash, made from clean sand and the alkaline tartar deposited by wine. According to Piccolpasso the decorations were painted on the enamel ground sometimes before it was fired, and sometimes after. This was an important difference. The enamel before firing formed a slightly granular and very absorbent ground, like clay in the biscuit state; and the paintings on it had to be bold and broadly decorative, not delicate and miniature-like ; the touch of the brush had to be rapid*~~

~~*and certain ; little or no alteration could be made, as the unfired*~~

~~*enamel sucked the pigment out of the brush and absorbed it below the surface. The earlier and more boldly decorative sorts of majolica appear to have been painted in this way on the wnfired enamel, and owe much of their richness of effect to the fact that the different pigments have sunk below the surface of the ground. This process may be compared to that of painting in true fresco, while the painting on the fired enamel resembles the more deliber- ate method of the painter in oil. After passing through the kiln the*~~

~~*whole character of the enamel was completely changed; it formed then a hard, smooth, non-absorbent, vitreous surface, on which the finest lines and the most minute paintings could be executed, and any part of it could easily be altered or wiped out. It was in great part owing to this change of method that the later majolica paintings became more pictorial and more minute in exe- cution, the almost inevitable result of painting on a hard glassy ground. In some instances it is not easy to decide which method of painting has been adopted, though in most cases there is a dis- tinct difference in the quality of the lines. One peculiarity is a sure test: when delicate patterns in white have been formed by covering the enamel ground with some colour, and then wiping out the pattern by using a pointed piece of stick or ivory on the soft pigment, in that case the enamel certainly was fired first. The colour could not be wiped cleanly out from an absorbent biscuit surface. Much of the delicate beauty of the Persian lustre paint- ings, especially those on wall-tiles, is due to this method of getting minute patterns in white. It was also practised, though in a much more limited way, on some of the Italian majolica. The difference of handling between "under-glaze" and "over-glaze" painting cor- responds exactly to that of the unfired and fired enamel; but in the latter case another important difference is introduced: under- glaze pigments require much greater heat than those over the glaze and are consequently very limited in range of colour, while in majolica painting the same pigments were used in either case.*~~

~~*3. The glaze, "coperta," an ordinary glass, made more fusible by the presence of lead, consisted of oxide of lead 17 parts, silica (sand) 20, alkali 12, and common salt 8 parts.*~~

~~*4, Pigments, "colori," all owe their colour to a metallic oxide, yellow being derived from oxides of iron and antimony, green from oxides of copper and antimony, blue from oxide of copper, red from Spanish oxide of iron, Armenian bole, and red ochre, and black from black oxide of copper and manganese. Most of these had a certain proportion of oxide of lead, not to affect the colour but to make them more fusible. Other tints were produced by combinations of these pigments, and different gradations of tone were obtained by adding more or less of the ingredients of the white enamel.*~~

~~*Methods of Manufactwre.—Piccolpasso gives sketches of the*~~

~~*disk for the potter's foot to keep it revolving, and a smaller upper disk on which the clay was moulded by the potter's hands,—an apparatus which differs in no respect from that used in Egypt under the Ptolemies, and is still employed in the great porcelain factory at Sevres. The potter to the right of fig. 55 is working with a wheel like that drawn by Piccolpasso. The earlier kind of majolica is almost wholly wheel-moulded, but during the 16th century a good many plates and vases were formed after shapes copied from silver-work, with sunk bosses or gadroons. These were formed by pressing thin disks of soft clay into moulds made of plaster ("gesso"'), bone-ash, and pounded marble. An elaborate description of the method is given in Piccolpasso's MS. Another practice also had arisen in his time, that of finishing the pottery on a joiner's lathe when it was dry, but before it was enamelled or fired,—a practice unfortunately common at the present day, which makes the form of the vessel more mathematically correct, but greatly injures the freedom and spirit of touch given by the potter's hand. After the pottery was brought to the required shape it was dipped into a bath of the materials for the white enamel, finely ground and mixed with water ; and, after being allowed to dry, it was fired for the first time. The painted decoration was applied on the white enamel with brushes of various sizes, and the vessel was then dipped into a second bath of the glaze materials, finely ground and mixed with water like the enamel. It was afterwards fired a second time. If it had lustre colours, they were put on over the glaze, and a third firing in a different kiln was necessary for the reasons explained above under the head of 'Persian pottery." The application of the transparent glaze over the enamel was not absolutely necessary, and was occasionally omitted, but the finer sorts of majolica usually had it for the sake of the increased brilliance which it gave to the non-lustre colours, The kiln for the ordinary colours and first two firings, as drawn by Piccolpasso, is exactly the same in principle as that used by the potters of ancient Greece and Rome,—that is, an arched chamber in two stories, with a perforated floor between—the lower compartment for the fire, the upper for the pottery. A sketch is also given in Piccolpasso's MS. of the lustre-kiln, in which the pottery is enveloped in flames and heated smoke. Fig. 55, from a Venetian woodcut of the middle of*~~

~~*ULLAL ATE wi*~~

~~*the 16th century, shows majolica potters at work throwing pots on the wheel. Two different wheels are being used; the man on the left keeps his going by giving it a succession of spins with one hand, the other works his wheel by the help of a lower foot- turned disk. 'To the extreme left a small kiln is shown; the lower arched opening is for the insertion of the fuel, the upper for the pottery ; the holes at the top are for the escape of the heated air and smoke.*~~

~~*Styles of Decoration.—In general character the painted Decora- decoration on the majolica of the latter part of the 15th tion.*~~

~~*and beginning of the 16th century is very different from that of a few years later. The first retains much of medieval purity and simplicity of design, while the later sort follows the richer and more florid style brought into fashion by the rapidly-approaching decadence of art. The principal variety of the early class is the ware painted in blues with a yellow lustre, manufactured chiefly in the workshops of Pesaro, Gubbio, and Deruta. With these two simple colours effects of the greatest decorative beauty were produced, far more truly artistic and suited to their special purpose than the elaborate pictures in many colours painted some years later in the workshops of Urbino and Durante. In the firm precision of the drawing and extreme skilfulness of touch in the blue outlines one is reminded of the paintings on Greek vases of the best period. Some of the large plates of this ware have XIX.—79*~~

~~*626*~~

~~*figure-subjects, usually sacred scenes. A very beautiful one in the Louvre has a Madonna and Child enthroned, drawn and composed with the simple grace of Raphael's early manner. Most, however, have portraits of ladies*~~

~~*drawn in profile, the background filled up with simple flowers, and an inscribed scroll, often with the lady's name and the word "bella" or "diva," or with epigram- matic mottoes (see fig. 56).*~~

~~*The design is first drawn in*~~

~~*Fig. 56.—Early majolica plate, in blue and yellow lustre only, made at Pesaro or Gubbio, c. 1500. The motto on the scroll is '* Chi bene guida sua barcha s'entfa in porto" (He who steers well his ship will enter the harbour). (Louvre.)*~~

~~*blue outline, with a little delicate blue shading over the white flesh and a blue edging on the ground round the outline. The dress and the ornaments on the ground and rim of the plate were finally filled in with the yellow lustre, which was sufficiently transparent to let all the blue line details over which it was painted show through. Another rarer sort of early majolica, similar in style, has a deep ruby lustre, employed instead of the golden yellow. Fig. 57 shows a fine example of it, probably*~~

~~*Fic. 57.—Gubbio plate, with portrait in ruby lustre and blue outline. (South Kensington Museum.)*~~

~~*produced at Gubbio, which had almost a monopoly of this special lustre, afterwards used so largely in the workshop*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*[ITALIAN*~~

~~*of Maestro Giorgio. Other early varieties of majolica, painted in a simple and unpictorial way, have no lustre colours, but are remarkable for their brilliant and rather harsh green, with a good deal of manganese purple. Plates of this sort with female portraits, not generally in profile, and heraldic animals, frequently occur, as well as slabs or plaques intended for wall-decoration. Faenza and Forli appear to have been the chief places for their production. The Cluny Museum is very rich in speci- mens. Cafaggiolo and Faenza also produced, during the early period, some very beautiful and highly-decora- tive plates, painted without lustre, but with a variety of colours arranged with a most com- plete harmony of tint. Some have patterns _ingeni- ously devised after a motive suggested by peacocks' feathers (see fig. 58). The chief colours are yellow and orange, various blues, and occasionally a rich deep red. Amatory plates ("amatorii"), with ladies' portraits, are also painted in this way, with more elabora- tion and detail but not greater decorative beauty than the simple blue and yellow*~~

~~*lustre of the early Pesaro and Gubbio ware. Specimens of the later Cafaggiolo ware bear the accompanying mark (see No. 3). Forli was one of the earliest towns to produce a fine class of*~~

~~*majolica ; specimens exist dated 1470, of very*~~

~~*noble design and firm outline. A fine set of*~~

~~*plates and vases was made there (c. 1480-85)*~~

~~*for Matthias Corvinus, king of Hungary. The*~~

~~*flesh of the figures, like that on the early Pesaro*~~

~~*feather design, in blues, yellow, and orange-*~~

~~*red. (South Kensington Museum.)*~~

~~*and Deruta ware, is white, delicately shaded with _Potter's blue ; but the early Forli potters used a greater ae O. Os*~~

~~*variety of colours than were employed at most other towns: in addition to the blues they had yellow,*~~

~~*bright green, and purple-brown, all non-lustre colours.*~~

~~*To Forli or Faenza must be attributed a very curious*~~

~~*and rudely painted plate in the Sevres Museum, decorated*~~

~~*with a youth on horseback in blue outline; it has a*~~

~~*date which appears to read 1448; if so, this is the ear-*~~

~~*liest dated specimen of majolica. The enamel is coarse*~~

~~*and crackled all over, but the method of execution is that*~~

~~*of true majolica.*~~

~~*Majolica of Maestro Giorgio Andreoli of Gubbio.—The Giorgio workshop of this artist, most of whose dated works fall of Gub- between 1517 and 1537, was one of the largest and most aa" important of his time. Its productions, as well as those with the signature "' M? G? da Ugubio," or as in No. 4, are*~~

~~*No. 5. Potters' marks.*~~

~~*very unequal in merit, and even the best of them are very inferior as specimens of true decorative art compared with the majolica of the earlier classes described above.*~~

~~*Urbino pictured wares,*~~

~~*MAJOLICA.* |~~

~~*The mark used most frequently by Giorgio is shown in No. 5. A somewhat similar monogram was used by an earlier potter ; an example dated 1491 is shown in No. 6. Though not the inventor of the ruby lustre, which was then so much admired, Giorgio appears to have been the chief potter of his time who used it. The fact is, the pro- cess was a difficult one and required special skill, not in the preparation of the oxide of copper pigment but in the firing, so as to expose the colour to actual contact with the reducing flame without the pottery itself being shattered to pieces. Even with the best skill of the Gubbio potters a large proportion of the lustred ware perished in the kiln. The majolica potters of many other towns were in the habit of sending their otherwise 'finished wares to Gubbio for the sake of having the additional brilliance derived from lustre colours. In some cases a space for the lustres was left white ; in others rude dabs and splashes of ruby and yellow lustre were applied over completely finished paint- ings of landscapes or figure-subjects, often in a very coarse and tasteless fashion. Some delicately painted plates are quite spoiled and vulgarized by the heavy touches of lustre that have been put over them. The ruby is in fact rather strong and hard in tone, and needed very careful applica- tion to make it harmonize with the quieter non-lustre colours ; it is far more salient and metallic-looking than the fine yellow lustre of the early ware. In addition to the ruby, "gold" and "silver" lustres were used at Gubbio. The latter are a deep and a pale yellow. The pale silver lustre was made from*~~

~~*oxide of silver; the gold was a mix- ture of copper and silver oxides. A great deal of the pro- duce of Giorgio's workshop is very rude and of no artistic merit, while the best and most carefully painted wares*~~

~~*"usually err, in accordance with the rapidly declining taste*~~

~~*of hig time, in being far too pictorial. Copies of pictures crowded with figures, arranged without regard to the shape of the vessel they were meant to decorate, and painted with all the colours of the potter's palette, were most highly esteemed. Many of them are from designs by Raphael and other great painters, but are really quite unsuited for ceramic decoration. Giorgio's earlier works are, on the whole, in better taste, and some later portrait heads are very good. Fig. 59 shows a fine tazza in the Louvre signed at the back "ex 0.) Giorg.," which is both nobly drawn and harmoni- ous in colour ; itsdate isabout 1525. The fav- ourite subjects on the pictured ("istoriata") majolica of Gubbio and elsewhere are scenes from Roman mytho- logy, especially Ovid's Meta- morphoses, and stories from classical _his- tory. Unluckily contemporary history is rare ; the British Museum has a good specimen, a plate painted with the defeat of Francis I. at the battle of Pavia.*~~

~~*Tt was at Urbino and Castel Durante that the produc- tion of elaborate pictured majolica was mostly carried on, SS Oe see p. 619 supra.*~~

~~*Fic. 59.—Gubbio tazza by Maestro Giorgio, with lady's portrait and inscription " Julia bella."*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*627*~~

~~*especially between the years 1530 and 1560, under the patronage of the reigning dukes of the Della Rovere family. Francesco Xanto Avelli, Guido Fontana, and Niccola da Urbino were specially celebrated for this class of work, and often used Marc Antonio Raimondi's engravings from Raphael's designs to decorate their plates and vases.? Many of these are painted with great delicacy and richness of effect in spite of their unsuitability for their special purpose and the comparative poverty of the potter's palette, which*~~

~~*was, of course, limited to colours that would stand the severe heat of the kiln. The pictured wares of Urbino sometimes have the Gubbio lustre colours, but the best are without them. Another class of design was also used at Urbino with much better decorative effect. It con- sisted of fanciful and graceful arabesques or floral scroll- work mingled with grotesque figures or Cupids, all skil- fully arranged to emphasize the main contours of the plate or vase. Branches of the oak tree in flowing and slightly geometrical lines are a frequent motive of de- sign, chosen in compliment to the Della Rovere dukes, who bore an oak on their coat of arms. All | these, but especially the pictured wares, were highly paid for, and sometimes were valued as much as silver plate. They were mostly*~~

~~*Potter's mark. No. 7. "piatti di pompa,'—meant, that is, to hang on walls or*~~

~~*ornament sideboards rather than for actual use. Some of the early productions of one of the Urbino potteries are marked with the graceful monogram No. 7.*~~

~~*In ashort sketch like this it is impossible to give even an outline*~~

~~*of the many varieties of majolica produced in such profusion during the 16th century, but a few others of the more important kinds may*~~

~~*be mentioned. The Faenza potteries produced one of the most Faenza.*~~

~~*beautiful of the later varieties, chiefly plates with wide flat rims and deep centres, called "tondini," the borders decorated with delicate and minute arabesques, painted in several tints of a deep ultramarine blue of wonderful richness and decorative effect. In the centre is usually a coat of arms or a single figure, with a brilliant jewel-like touch of orange or deep red, which sets off to the utmost the blues of the border (see fig. 60). One of the most remarkable specimens of majolica painting, treated with the deli- cate minuteness of an illuminated MS., is on a plate in the British Museum from the Faenza workshops. It is a scene of the death of the Virgin, sur- rounded by the apostles, copied withslightadap- _ tations from an engraving by the German master Martin Schon- gauer. The Italian ceramic inter has slightly but skil- fully altered the composition to fit it to the cir- cular form of the plate, and has*~~

~~*also given a more graceful cast to the mannered German faces of as : the original. The pit execution 1s won- —*~~

~~*derfully delicate Fig. 60.—Faenza plate (tondino), with border in deep and miniature- yltramarine blues, and central coat of arms in rich*~~

~~*like, almost orange and red. (South Kensington Museum.) wholly done in*~~

~~*different tints of blue, with a little yellow to suggest flesh colour, and high lights touched in with pure white enamel, the main enamel ground being white slightly tinged with pink. It is evi- dently the work of a very able artist, and is a little picture of gem-*~~

~~*2 A namesake and relation of Raphael's was a skilful painter of istoriati pieces; and hence has arisen the tradition that the great painter occasionally decorated majolica (see RAPHAEL).*~~

~~*Siena.*~~

~~*Florence.*~~

~~*Venice.*~~

~~*Later majolica.*~~

~~*No. 9.*~~

~~*IR*~~

~~*like beauty, though in no way specially suited to the requirements*~~

~~*Some fine early*~~

~~*a common later ae SS*~~

~~*Scourging of Christ. This highly-laboured and minute style of*~~

~~*rich russet-brown or orange ground. 'Tondini from Siena are often*~~

~~*than an inch and a half in diameter, have a wonderful suggestion*~~

~~*before Porsena, is signed on the back, "fata i Siena da Me Bene-*~~

~~*with a central painting of a hermit and landscape background,*~~

~~*blue enamel is a rare variety, and has OD*~~

~~*Florentia." It has no L R 7 a A*~~

~~*pottery of Persia men-*~~

~~*with flutings and bosses after a metal design ; very few pieces exist.*~~

~~*second half of the 16th century. In the earlier part of that century*~~

~~*is very decorative in effect, and has paintings of graceful and*~~

~~*deeper shades of blue with high lights*~~

~~*and flowers in yellow, green, and blue,*~~

~~*the 16th century there was a rapid*~~

~~*came thin and poor, with very often a*~~

~~*marine blue enamel ground, on which a Nile All through the 17th and 18th centuries majolica in a degraded*~~

~~*and yellows of rather harsh tint, was largely produced at Turin,*~~

~~*Turin ware is No. 13 ; and on Savona majolica one of the two forms*~~

~~*of ceramic art, for which a bolder and less realistic style of treat-*~~

~~*ment is really the*~~

~~*most suitable. A O N S I O RSI O*~~

~~*plates of Faenza*~~

~~*make are signed I4X G*~~

~~*with No. 8 mark ;*~~

~~*mark is the mono- Reels sere , PY*~~

~~*gram FA(enza)—see No. 9. Another plate, also in the British Museum, has a painting copied from a design by Albert Durer, the painting was largely practised in the potteries of Siena, which produced plates of great beauty, with borders of graceful scroll-work and grotesques in white and different tints of blue, with usually a decorated in this way with a central medallion containing a minute landscape, painted with wonderful minuteness and finish. The landscapes are very delicate in colour, and, though often not more of atmosphere and distance which recalls the lovely sunset-lit backgrounds of Perugino's pictures. A very beautiful plate in the British Museum, painted in this minute style with the scene of Scevola detto." Other plates by the same very clever and refined painter are decorated only in blue, with touches of pure white on the creamy enamel ground. The Kensington Museum has a good specimen, surrounded by a delicate border of arabesques. Little is known of the artist. Another signature which occurs on Siena ware is No. 10, in one case conjoined with the date 1542. Majolica with plain*~~

~~*been attributed to Luca or Andrea della*~~

~~*Robbia, some pieces being marked as in*~~

~~*No.11, apparently for " Luca della Robbia,*~~

~~*painting, but was partly*~~

~~*gilt; in colour the enamel ,*~~

~~*resembles the plain blue*~~

~~*tioned above. It consists No. 10. No, 11.*~~

~~*mostly of vases moulded Potters' marks.*~~

~~*The beautiful sculpture in enamelled terra-cotta made by the Della*~~

~~*Robbia family will be treated of under the head of Rosia. Venetian majolica was not largely produced till towards the*~~

~~*the few potters of Venice appear to have chiefly occupied themselves*~~

~~*with attempts to produce true porcelain. The earliest dated speci-*~~

~~*men of Venetian majolica is of the year 1540. Some of this ware*~~

~~*elaborate foliage, scroll-work, and arabesques, designed with great*~~

~~*intricacy. It is in blue and white, the main enamel ground being*~~

~~*a very pale blue, and the design in*~~

~~*in pure white. Others have land- 3X*~~

~~*scapes in blue and white, with grace-*~~

~~*ful, but too realistic borders of fruit*~~

~~*somewhat later in style. Mark No.*~~

~~12 occurs on some of the finest Vene-~~

~~tian majolica. Towards the end of~~

~~falling off in the artistic beauty of~~

~~majolica paintings, and not solely in~~

~~the execution: the pigments also be-~~

~~disagreeable "granular" look. Some~~

~~effective pottery was produced at~~

~~Venice, ¢. 1590-1620, with a deep ultra-~~

~~designs were painted in white, a style of ware which was largely~~

~~manufactured at Nevers in France a few years later (see fig. 62~~

~~below).~~

~~form was produced at many placesin Italy; but most of the old~~

~~kilns, such as those of Deruta, Gubbio, aud Faenza, fell into disuse.~~

~~The latest kind of majolica, decorated with coarse paintings in blues~~

~~Genoa, Venice, Savona, Castello, Naples, Montelupo, and other~~

~~cities. The older potteries at Pesaro and Urbino still continued in~~

~~work, but produced nothing of real merit. A common mark on~~

~~in No. 14 often occurs. In the beginning of the 17th century~~

~~spirited copies were made of the magnificent Rhodian pottery,~~

~~such as that shown in fig. 48 above, but with pigments very inferior~~

~~[ITALIAN MAJOLICA.~~

~~to those of the originals. At Capo di Monte, near Naples, a manu- factory of pottery and porcelain was started under royal patronage in 1736; but it was more celebrated for the production of porcelain than of enamelled wares. Of late years clever imitations of the old majolica have been produced in Italy, especially from the workshop e~~

~~of the marquis Ginori. Even No. 14~~

~~the old lustre colours are hte cua" successfully reproduced ; but .~~

~~most of the modern majolica is marred by a want of spirit and freedom, the natural result of its being a too servile copy of a bygone style.~~

~~No. 18.~~

~~Shapes of Majolica.—The most carefully finished and finest paint- Shapes.~~

~~ings are asa rule on plates, which were of various forms, from almost flat disks to the tondini with wide fiat rims and deep bowl-like centres. Many of the jugs, vases, and ewers are extremely graceful in form, some suggested by the bronze vessels of ancient Rome, others taken from Greek vases. Piccolpasso gives sketches of the principal shapes, and a long list of special names, not now of much importance, as they varied in different manufactories and even workshops in the same town. The character of the non-pictorial decorations combines many different elements of style. In some of the patterns we see a survival of earlier medieval and native Italian taste and invention. Others, especially the large ewers of Cafaggiolo and Faenza, have flowers taken from Persian pottery, but treated in a thoroughly original way. Some plates, painted in the silver lustre only, are almost imitations of Hispano- Moorish ware or actual majolica made in the Balearic Islands. In all the scroll-patterns, mingled with grotesques, it is easy to trace the influence of the ancient wall-decorations from the baths of Titus and other buried buildings, the discovery of which at the beginning of the 16th century did so much to destroy the lingering medizval spirit and~~

~~*substitute a pseudo-classical style, which finally had so fatal an effect on all branches of art in Italy.*~~

~~*Collections.—The chief collections of the majolica of Italy are Collec- those of the South Kensington Museum (perhaps the most com- tions.*~~

~~*pletely representative of all), the Bargello in Florence, the museums of Milan, Venice, Turin, Pesaro; Urbino, and other places in Italy. The Hétel Cluny and the Louvre in Paris, the Ceramic Museum at Sévres, as well as Limoges, Berlin, Vienna, Munich, and St Peters- burg, have good collections. The British Museum collection is not large, but it is one of the most important, from the number of "sioned" pieces that it contains, and from the fact that nearly all its specimens are remarkable for their exceptional beauty or*~~

~~*some point of special interest.!*~~

~~*Literature.—For Italian majolica, see Vasari, Lives of Battista Franco, Buon- talenti, and Luca della Robbia (ed. Milanesi, 1882); Meurer, Italienische Majolica- jliessen, 1881 ; Corona, La Ceramica, 1879; Vanzolini, Istorie delle fabbriche di Majoliche, Pesaro, 1879 (a most valuable reprint of the best old treatises on the subject, including Piccolpasso's illustrated MS.); Darcel and Delange, Fatences Italiennes, 1864; Fortnum, South Kensington Museum Catalogue of Majolica, 1873; Jacquemart, Les Majoliques de la collection Campana, 1862, also article in Gaz. des Beaux-Arts, xiii. p. 289; Drake, Venetian Ceramics, 1868; Lazari, Notizia della raccolta Correr, 1859; Raffaelli, Maioliche lavorate in Castel Durante, 1846; Bonghi, Majoliche di citta di Castello, 1856; Casati, Les Fatences de Diruta, 1874; Campori, Maiolica di Ferrara, 1871; Delsette, Matoliche di Pesaro, 1845; Frati, Maioliche di Pesaro, 1844; Torteroli, La Maiolica Savonese, 1856; Pungileoni, Pitture in Matoliche di Urbino, 1857 ; Brancaleoni, Mastro Giorgio di Gubbio, Pesaro, 1857. For information on the marks on majolica, see Genolini, Maiol. ital., Marche e Monogrammi, Milan, 1881; and De Mély, La Céramique ital., Sigles et Monogrammes, Paris, 1884. Many valuable articles on majolica are scattered through the volumes of the Gaz. des Beaux-Arts.*~~

~~*Section XI.—SpPaNISH AND PORTUGUESE.*~~

~~*Spanish.—Spanish pottery is for the most part a coarse Spanish imitation of Italian majolica, chiefly made at Valencia, pottery.*~~

~~*Triana (Seville), and Talavera. Some of the enamelled ware made at the last-named town is elaborately painted with figure-subjects in blues, yellow, green, and manganese purple, of extremely bad taste and feebleness of drawing.? The simpler pottery made at Valencia a little before and after the year 1700, though rudely painted, is very decora- tive in effect. Large plates often have conventional flowers or profile heads, somewhat after the style of some of the earliest majolica of Italy, and are coarsely painted in blue and yellow. In the 18th century good enamelled pottery*~~

~~*1 The year 1884 will be memorable in the history of majolica for the sale and dispersal of the important collection formed in the 18th century by Sir Andrew Fountaine of Narford. A few specimens were secured for the South Kensington and British Museums, but some of the finest pieces were bought for France, especially a magnificent Faenza plate, dated 1508, which fetched £966. Several of the Pesaro*~~

~~*and Urbino dishes sold for between £200 and £300. 2 See Casati, Les Faiences de Talavera, 1874.*~~

~~*Portu- guese.*~~

~~*Biscuit wares.*~~

~~*SPANISH, ETC. |*~~

~~*was made at Alcora, painted only in blues, often in the Chinese style. Some large vases of Moorish shape have very effective blue and white paintings of animals, flowers, and landscapes.! A quite different style of enamelled pot- tery was made at Puente del Arzobispo in the 16th or 17th century. Specimens are rare ; they consist chiefly of plates decorated in a very skilful and effective way, somewhat after the fashion of Moorish wall-tiles, "azulejos" (see T1Lzs). They are made of coarse red clay covered with white enamel, through which (before firing) the outline of the design was scratched down to the red body. The spaces between the incised lines were filled in with coloured enamels, rich blue, green, and orange, and the whole*~~

~~*glazed with a very fusible lead glaze. The simple and mosaic-like patterns thus formed, either conventional flowers or heraldic animals, are extremely decorative and telling.*~~

~~*Portuguese.—Little or no enamelled pottery of Portu- guese workmanship earlier in date than the 17th century is known to exist. Rato was one of the chief places for the manufacture of enamelled wares, which are coarsely painted, like the latest and poorest kinds of Italian ma- jolica, and are not earlier in date than 1767, when the Rato potteries were first started. Other earlier specimens of unknown make also exist, and are marked with an "R," like the Rato ware, to which they are very superior both in design and execution. The best are in blue and white only ; many are marked with various dates during the 17th century.*~~

~~*Biscuit Pottery of Spain and Portugal.—The earliest kinds now existing of Spanish pottery without either enamel or glaze are chiefly large wine-jars, "'tinajas," about 3 or 4 feet high, of graceful amphora-like shape, stamped with simple patterns in relief. Some of them date from the time of the Moorish occupation. Both Spain and Portugal have always been remarkable for the fineness and beauty of their potter's clays, and consequently have for long excelled in the production of simple biscuit wares, uncovered by either enamel or glaze. Very graceful*~~

~~*pottery of this sort is manufactured even at the present | reignof FrancisI. day, the shapes being traditional, handed down from | There are eleven century to century with but little change, many vessels | piecesof thisware being still modelled after the old Roman forms. Some | in the Louvre ; of this ware is of a white porous clay, like pipeclay, and | the Kensington some is of a fine red, close in texture, with slight sur- | Museum has five;*~~

~~*face gloss, almost like the Roman "Samian." One com- mon kind is decorated in a very fanciful and ingenious fashion by the application of simple but rich surface orna- ments, modelled by hand in relief, or applied in the state of semi-fluid slip. Other curious water-jars are made double, the outer vessel being pierced with patterns of open-work. A third variety has sparkling particles of quartz stuck on its surface while moist, a very old method of decoration, which was even practised by the potters of prehistoric times. On the whole, the modern biscuit wares of Spain and*~~

Portugal are among the most truly artistic and interest- ing of any that are now made in Europe. It is still a living art, with simple beauty both in material and shape, not a laboured revival of a dead style, or dull copy of the artistic productions of a far-off time when fitness linked with grace came naturally to the humblest workman.

Section XIJ.—FRENCH FRoM THE 16TH To THE 18TH CENTURY.

execution. This rare and curious ware, of which only about forty pieces are known, was made by a potter called Fran- cois Cherpentier for his patron, a rich and artistic widow lady, named Héléne de Hangest, who established a work- shop and kiln at her Chateau d'Oiron, in the province of Thouars, between the years 1524 and 1537. The manufac- ture was carried on by Hélene de Hangest's son for some years after her death, but the pieces then produced are inferior in quality, and soon ceased to be made at all. This ware is not enamelled ; it is simply a fine white pipeclay, to which a delicate cream-tint is given by a very slight tinge of yellow in the lead glaze. Its forms are very elabor- ate, sometimes extremely graceful, but occasionally too fanciful, and overloaded with ornament. It consists of plates, tazze, holy-water pots, ewers, salt-cellars, and other varieties of shape, generally forms more suited to metal than to clay, ornamented with very graceful interlaced strap-work and arabesques, such as were much used by the great Augsburg and Nuremberg workers in silver. The method in which many of the ornaments are executed is the chief peculiarity of the ware: they are first incised or stamped into the soft clay of the vessel, and then the sunk patterns are filled up with different clay pastes, tinted with dark brown, soft yellow, or buff. Many of the delicate leaf- ornaments appear to have been formed with a metal stamp ; some are exactly the same as those used by contemporary bookbinders. The ornaments are not all done in this labo- rious manner; some are simply painted under the glaze, especi- ally on the later productions of Oiron. Monograms and em- blems occur frequently, the sala- mander of Francis I.,the "H. D." for Henri deux, the royal inter-

~~*laced crescents, or coats of arms (see No. 15). Fig. 61 shows a beautiful covered tazza in the Louvre, made during the*~~

~~*Potter's mark. No. 15.*~~

~~*but the greater number of known specimens are in the possession of members of the Rothschildfamily. It was at one time thought to be the production of a pottery under the patronage of Henry IL, and hence the name by which it was formerly known ; but its real origin was established from clear documentary evidence published in M. Fillon's valuable monograph on the subject.*~~

~~*32209929 IDPIDIPIIIDD*~~

~~*ee EE*~~

~~*Fic. 61.—Tazza of Oiron pottery. (Louvre.)*~~

~~*The other, Oiron pottery, popularly called oiron "'faience Henri deux," is very different both in design and pottery.*~~

~~*During the 16th century two very different but equally remarkable sorts of pottery, decorated with great elabora- tion, were made in France. One was that invented and*~~

~~*Throughout the period we are now considering enamelled pottery Nevers was produced at a very large number of French towns, often with enamel- the help of potters from Italy ; and the introduction of the tin led enamel soon superseded the earlier sort of ware with a bright green pottery.*~~

~~*manufactured by Bernard Palissy, which was a fine earthen- ware, usually modelled in relief, covered with a white tin enamel, and painted with many bright colours (see 1 See Riafio, Spanish Handbook, South Kensington Museum, 1879.*~~

~~*or blue glaze, which at the end of the 15th and beginning of the 16th century was the chief and most artistic kind of pottery that was made in*~~

~~*France. The change was not wholly a gain, as pieces of the older ware were moulded in relief with designs of great beauty*~~

~~*Rouen.*~~

~~*Mous- tiers, &c.*~~

~~*630*~~

~~*—mostly Gothic in feeling—especially those made at Avignon, Savigny, and Beauvais; the reliefs on the older French ware are very delicate and sharp, and often of great decorative effect. Nevers was one of the chief manufactories of enamelled ware; from about 1570 to the end of the 17th century it produced mostly poor copies of the later sort of Italian majolica. After that a strong Oriental influ- ence set in, and a peculiar ware with a deep-blue enamel ground was made, very like that produced by the Venetian potters. Some of this, painted in white enamel only, with Persian designs, is effective and pleasant in colour (see fig. 62). Other pieces have flowers, treated in a more realistic way, painted in harsh yellow, green, and red, quite out of harmony with the rich blue ground. J. Bourdu, a potter work- ing at Nevers from 1602 to 1620, signed his ware with mark No. 16 ; another, named H. Borne, used No. 17… During the 18th century Nevers chiefly produced pottery of Chinese forms, painted in blue with Chinese figures and flowers, and also a large quantity of pottery painted in many colours with coarse designs, somewhat after the Delft style. The 17th- century enamelled pottery of Rouen is the finest of the later French wares. It is mostly painted in rich red and blue only, with very minute and well- designed arabesques of geometrical form,*~~

~~*adapted, not copied, with great fs B 7 fe) :*~~

~~*skill and taste from Oriental de-*~~

~~*signs (see fig. 63). Very large*~~

~~*plates, wine-coolers, hanging cis-*~~

~~*terns, and ewers are made of it. 8*~~

~~*One very rare variety has the blue 3 6 | De ound, but itis very inferior in No. 16. ‘ No. 17.*~~

~~*artistic effect to that on the Potters’ marks.*~~

~~*white ground. The finest specimens were made before 1700 ; after*~~

~~*that time the painting became coarser. Copies of Chinese wares*~~

~~*Fia.62.—Ewer of Nevers pottery; the design in white on dark- blue enamelled ground ; Per- sian style.*~~

~~*and red pattern on a deep orange*~~

~~*Fie. 63.—Dish of Rouen enamelled pottery, painted in blues and deep red.*~~

~~*were also made at Rouen in the 18th century, all gaudy in colour, and mostly poor in execution. The Rouen Museum has the best collection of its native ware ; there are very fine specimens also in the South Kensington Museum. During the 18th century Moustiers produced some very decorative pottery, painted in various shades of blue, with delicate wreaths, masks, and arabesques, somewhat after the Rouen fashion. Other colours were also used in very minute*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

patterns, but the simple blue and white is the best. Blue and white pottery with fairly good designs was also manufactured at St Cloud, Sceaux, and Saint Amand, as well as many other French towns, during the first half of the 18th century. Most, however, of the French wares of this date are little better than imitations of porce-

lain, and their decoration feeble copies of Chinese or Japanese designs.

Literatwre.—For Oiron ware, see Delange, Recueil de… Faience… dite de Henri II., 1861; Fillon, Les Faiences d'Oiron, 1863 (best work); Tainturier, Les Faiences dite de Henri IT., 1860. For Rouen ware, see Delisle, Faience de Rouen, 1865; Pottier, Histoire de la Faience de Rouen, 1870; Ris-Paquot, Faiences de Rowen; 1870. For other French potteries the reader may consult Clement-de Ris, Faiences Frangaises, Musée du Louvre, 1871; Mareschal, Fatences Anciennes et Modernes, 1867 ; Tainturier, Porcelaine et Fatence (Alsace et Lor- raine), 1868; Houdoy, La Céramique Lilloise, 1869; Davillier, Faience de Moustiers, 1863; De Segange, La Faience de Nevers, 1863; Pouy, Les Faiences ad' Origine Picarde, 1874; Fillon, L'Art de Terre chez les Poitevins, 1864. The various volumes of the Gaz. des Beaux-Arts contain many valuable articles on the whole subject.

Section XIII.—Mepiazvat German, Dutcn, &c.

Though little is known of the early ceramic history of Germany, it is certain that the application of a tin enamel and enamel colours was known to the potters of that country even in the 13th century. Some plaques, with heads in relief, painted in various colours over a white enamel ground, still exist at Leipsic ; they were made for wall-decoration, and are said to be of the year 1207. At Breslau there is a monument of enamelled clay to Henry IV. of Silesia, made about 1300. According to one story, the use of a white tin enamel was perfected at Schele- stadt by an Alsacian potter who died in 1283. Other examples exist, though few in number, at various places in Germany, sufficient to show an early acquaintance with the method of producing enamelled ware, which, however, seems to have fallen into disuse, and during the 15th and 16th centuries to have been superseded by

~~*the fine sorts of stoneware, in the manufacture of which the German potters were so widely celebrated.*~~

~~*Grey stoneware, richly decorated with delicate stamped patterns in relief, and generally, though not always, covered with a lead glaze, was produced in great quan- tities in Germany, Flanders, and Holland from the end of the 14th century till quite modern times, and was very largely imported into England and France. Much of this stoneware (called by the French "grés de Flandres") is decorated with great delicacy and taste ; its tint, grey, brown, or cream-white, is very soft and agreeable. The earlier specimens have reliefs of a Gothic character, always stamped with great crispness and sharpness, not the least blunted by the process of firing; many have elaborate coats of arms, or branches of simple foliage, which spread gracefully over the surface of the vessel; others have bands of figures, very minutely treated in slight relief. Another method of decoration was by incised patterns, impressed from relief-stamps ; sometimes, as was the case with the Oiron ware, bookbinders' dies were used for forming such patterns in the soft clay. cream-white ware is left unglazed, but most kinds have a vitreous lead glaze, either colourless or mixed with oxide of cobalt or manganese. These two colours, indigo- blue and purple-brown, are often used to pick out the relief-patterns, thus making the design more effective. Owing to the use of old stamps and traditional designs much of this pottery has patterns considerably older than the ware itself, the date being frequently introduced among ornaments which look very much earlier than they really are. Fig. 64 shows a common form of jug, called a "greybeard" from the grotesque head modelled on the neck. The body of the jug is covered with very graceful scroll-work of oak branches in low relief.*~~

~~*Another curious variety of German pottery, consisting*~~

~~*Some of the*~~

~~*Use of tin enamel.*~~

~~*Stone- ware.*~~

~~*Tmita-*~~

~~*chiefly of tankards and jugs, made to imitate enamelled tion*~~

~~*metal-work, was manufactured mostly at Kreussen in Bavaria. The body is of hard red clay, covered with a dark-brown enamel, the designs in slight relief being taken from the Augsburg or Briot style of metal-work,*~~

~~*metal- work enamel.*~~

~~*Cologne | stone- | ware.*~~

~~*ware.*~~

~~*Holland.*~~

~~*Sgraffiato ‘“‘ Cologne” stoneware.*~~

~~*DUTCH, SCANDINAVIAN. |*~~

~~*—strap-work, wreaths, grotesques, or human figures. A favourite design has reliefs of the twelve Apostles, little*~~

~~*Fia. 64.—Stoneware jug or “ greybeard” ; Flemish ware, early 17th century. (South Kensington Museum.)*~~

~~*more than an inch high, under flat architectural canopies ;*~~

~~*a strong Gothic feeling in the treatment of such figures occurs on tankards made as late as the end of the 17th century. The coloured decoration of this ware is very brilliant ; the minute figures or ornaments are picked out in bright enamel colours—red, green, blue, and yellow—altogether producing a very striking but thoroughly unceramic effect. A quite plain stoneware, with surface slightly mottled with grey and brown, appears to have been one of the most esteemed varieties during the 16th century, judging from the beauty of the silver rims and lids with which wine-jugs of this kind were usually mounted. The mottling was produced by the brownish glaze running in the kiln into a granular surface, which formed a pleasant texture, something like that on an ostrich’s egg. The best qualities were made at Cologne, and largely imported into England under the name of A rude kind of sgraffiato ware was also made in Germany and Holland during the 17th*~~

~~and 18th centuries. Coarse red-clay vessels were covered with a‘slip of white pipeclay, and rude figures, often of saints or kings, were scratched through the~~

~~white down to the red body. The whole~~

~~was then glazed with a yellowish lead glaze.~~

~~Bottger, the first maker of Meissen porcelain, manufactured curious varieties of pottery at~~

~~the beginning of the 18th century,—especially Potter’s mark. a ware like red jasper, which was so hard that me: 1m~~

~~it was cut and polished by the lapidary’s wheel. usually marked with No. 18.~~

~~Good collections of German pottery are in the museums of Berlin, Dresden, Munich, Lowenberg, Minden, and pri- vate collections at Nuremberg; the Kensington Museum has also a number of fine specimens.~~

~~Holland.—Holland, especially the town of Delft,! pro- duced very large quantities of pottery covered with a fine~~

~~Tt is~~

~~POTTER ¥~~

~~631~~

~~coats of arms surrounded by graceful borders, formed of medallions and wreaths. A clever arrangement of pea- cocks’ feathers is a common and very effective motive, used especially for plates. Other sorts of very inferior artistic merit have paintings of flowers or human figures, coarsely executed in rather harsh colours—yellow, green, and red~~

~~—mingled with the more har- | V K~~

~~monious cobalt blues and man- ganese purple. Many pieces of No.19 No. 20. Delft ware are marked with Epatase, eanks: maker’s initials, as No. 19~~

~~*or No. 20, probably two mem- bers of the Kulick family, of about the middle of the 17th century.*~~

~~*But little pottery of any real artistic value was produced in any Western country during the 18th century, with the exception of the commoner and cheaper sorts of wares, with little or no orna- ment, which were still made after the old traditions. The fact is that the increasing introduction of: Chinese and Japanese wares and the widely-spread manufacture of porcelain in the West gave the death-blow to the production of pottery designed and decorated after simple and natural methods. The enamelled pottery of the 18th century was mostly little better than a bad imitation of porce- lain, a material which has a beauty quite its own, and requires forms and methods of decoration very different from those that are suited even to the most finely-enamelled earthenware.*~~

~~*Literature.—See Menard van Hoorebeke, Recueil des Antiquités, 1867; Weckher-*~~

~~*lin, Vases en Gres des XVI¢ et XVIT® Sivcles, 1860; Jouveaux, Histoire de… Bottger, 1874.*~~

~~*Scandinavian.*~~

~~*The pottery of Denmark, Norway, and Sweden for the Scandi- most part resembles that of Germany. Sweden, especially 24”*~~

~~*during the 18th century, was very active in the production of enamelled pottery, but little of it possesses any origin- ality either in form or design. Perhaps the best variety is a ware made at Stockholm, covered with bluish white enamel, on which simple patterns are painted in white. The potteries of Marieberg and Rérstrand? also turned out large quantities, painted mostly with very weak designs; some are imitations of Oriental wares, while other kinds are decorated in a realistic French style.*~~

~~*Section XIV.—ENGLISH FROM THE 16TH CENTURY.*~~

~~*Little except the commonest sort of domestic pottery was made in England during the 16th century. The grey mottled stoneware described above,*~~

which was largely used for sack-jugs and tankards, appears to have been wholly a foreign import, mostly from Cologne. A common item in 16th-century inventories is—"'a stone jugge or pott, garnished with silver and double gylted." The silver- mounted lids were often added by English silver-workers, and are frequently very elaborately embossed and chased.

It was not till quite the end of the century that certain Stone- Dutch potters started in London the making of stoneware. W@7¢-

This English-made ware is hardly to be distinguished from that of Cologne or Holland, as it was designed and manufactured in the foreign way. Large globular jugs, stamped in relief with a grotesque bearded face and other ornaments, were one of the favourite forms. Such were called " greybeards" or "' bellarmines," from the unpopular cardinal of that name, of whom the bearded face was supposed to be a caricature (see fig. 64 above). Great numbers were made in the Low Countries and copied by the Dutch potters in London. In 1688 two German potters named Elers settled in Staffordshire, and there produced hard stoneware of very fine quality. Their pro-

white enamel. The early specimens date from the end of the 16th century. Much of this ware is very soft and plea- gant in tone, and very decorative in effect, especially that in blue and white only. Designs of great variety occur, some copied from Persian or Chinese originals, others with

1 See Havard, Faience de Delft, 1878.

cess, however, soon became known to other potters.

The common wares of this time were mainly produced Stafford- in the Staffordshire potteries ; some were decorated in a Shire very rude but effective way by dropping fluid white slip Vi" through a quill on to the surface of vessels made of red ;

2 See Céramiques Suédoises du XVIIT Siecle, 1872.*

John Dwight.

~~Lambeth~~

~~clay. The whole was then covered with a coarse lead glaze, made from powdered lead ore (sulphide of lead), sprinkled through a sieve on to the soft clay. The process of firing produced a vitreous glaze, composed of silicate of lead, the silica being taken up from the clay body. Thomas and Ralph Toft made a number of large plates, drinking mugs or "tygs," and candlesticks, decorated in this way with rather elaborate designs (see fig. 65). The potter's name and the date frequently occur among the slip ornaments, which are some- times in red and brown on a white ground, as well as whiteonred. About the year 1680a new \ sort of glaze was in- vented, very useful for the common kindsof hard stone- ware, and = ex-~~

~~tremely durable, Se namely, the "galt Fic. 65.—Coarse earthenware dish, with de-~~

~~" : coration in slip, signed by Thomas Toft, c. — paaulite aots 1670. (Museum of Geology, London.)~~

~~salt (chloride of sodium) into the hot kiln when the pro- cess of firing was nearly complete. The salt was volatilized and decomposed ; the soda combined with the free silica in the clay, and a coating of hard silicate of soda was formed. A very high temperature is required for this process, which is chiefly used for drain-pipes and vessels to hold corrosive acids, the salt glaze being almost indestructible.~~

~~Towards the end of the 17th century a gentleman named John Dwight spent many years in experiments to improve the manufacture of pottery, and also to discover the secret of true transparent porcelain. He appears to have been an artist of great ability, and not only made domestic pottery of Cologne ware but also modelled figures and large busts in pale-grey glazed stoneware ; the British Museum possesses a fine portrait bust of Prince Rupert by him, modelled with great truth and spirit, almost recalling the touch of the old Florentine sculptors in terra-cotta. In 1671 John Dwight took out a patent for his special methods of pottery and porcelain work, and set up kilns at Fulham. Many of his receipts for porcelain exist, and have~~

been published in Jewitt's valuable work on The Ceramic Art of Great Britain (1877), but no specimens of this early English porcelain are now known.

The Lambeth potteries were established at a very early

me

i% wm

Ys <\ ' os

SKA

PRIS XESS

potteries. neriod, but it was not till the 17th century that they

produced ware superior to the common biscuit or lead- glazed varieties. Some pieces of about 1660 are marked with No. 21 mark. Certain Dutch potters settled at Lambeth early in the century, and started the manufacture of a finer sort of pottery, covered C. II ' with a tin enamel. Most of this is in the Potter's mark. style of the Delft wares, painted either in No. 21. cobalt blues alone or with the coarse green, yellow, and manganese purple used in the more gaudy kind of Delft. The Lambeth potters also imitated Palissy ware, with high reliefs of human figures or plants and reptiles,—very poor copies of Palissy's originals, the modelling being extremely blunt. The enamel ground has a pink tinge, and the re- liefs are picked out in various colours. Some specimens of this Lambeth ware are dated on the back in blue with varlous years during the reigns of Charles I. and Charles th Another variety has coarse imitations of late Italian majolica, while other pieces have English designs,—coarse

'| round the jug.!

portraits of Charles IT. and his queen, with arabesque borders, all very rudely executed.

~~*The beginning of the 18th century in England saw a great increase of activity in the production of many kinds of pottery. Numbers of patents were taken out and new kilns set up at a great many different places. Though many improvements were made in the preparation and combination of different clays and considerable advances in technical skill were gained, yet little pottery of any artistic value was made.*~~

~~*Wedgwood Ware.—The Wedgwoods were an old Stafford- Wedg- shire family, and one member at least was a potter in the wood 17th century. This was John Wedgwood (1654-1705), ¥9"* the great-uncle of Josiah, who in the next century founded the great pottery which he called " Etruria." Only one piece signed by John Wedgwood is known to exist; it is in the interesting historical collection of ceramic wares in the Jermyn Street Museum of Geology, London. It isa "puzzle jug" with three spouts and a hollow handle, made of coarse brown clay, covered with the usual green lead glaze. The potter's name and the date 1691 are incised*~~

~~*In the middle of the 18th century, when Josiah Wedg- wood was a young man, a great impulse had been given to the study and appreciation of classical art, partly through the discovery of the buried cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum, and also on. account of the growing enthu- siasm for the beautiful Greek painted vases, which were then being sought for with great avidity in the tombs of*~~

~~*Etruria and Magna Grecia. Josiah Wedgwood devoted ; his life and great talents to an attempt to reproduce the | severe beauties of the Greek and Roman pottery. Unfor*~~

~~*tunately in this not unpraiseworthy aim he neglected ; the special requirements of fictile work. His productions,*~~

~~*delicate and beautiful as they often are, have the charac-*~~

~~*teristics of anything rather than pottery. With great*~~

~~*labour and expense he turned out from his workshops imitations, necessarily unsuccessful, of ancient engraved*~~

~~*gems and camei, of jasper, basalt, or mottled marbles, of gem-like cut glass, such as the Portland vase, and dull copies, feeble in drawing and hard in texture, of beautiful painted Greek vases. Of natural methods of decoration suitable to pottery, or of the life and freedom of the plastic clay rising into graceful forms under the touch of the thrower's hand aided by the rhythmical movement of the wheel, he knew nothing. Nearly all his pottery is dully scholastic and archeological in style, and therefore must, on the whole, be regarded as a failure, though often a very clever and even beautiful failure.*~~

~~*Wedgwood's most characteristic ware, in the production of which he was aided by Flaxman and other able artists, consists of plaques and vessels, vases, cups, plates, and other forms moulded in clay, delicately tinted blue, brown, and various colours, on which minute cameo reliefs in white paste were applied while they were soft, and were then fixed by firing. Many of them have very beautiful figures, some copied from Greek and Roman gems or vases, others being specially designed for him; but all are classical in style. Some of his pieces are quite astonishing for their microscopic delicacy of detail; others have wreaths, foliage, and minute diaper ornaments applied in the same way. Wedgwood also produced very fine and porcelain-like varieties of white enamelled pottery, some even decorated with a metallic lustre, purple in colour, and mottled to imitate marble ; some are cleverly modelled to imitate large sea-shells. Indeed his technical methods were varied with the utmost ingenuity, and would need a treatise to them- selves if even a rough outline were given of all the varieties.*~~

~~*1 For a full account of the Wedgwood family and their ware, see Jewitt, Life of Josiah Wedgwood, 1865 ; and Meteyard, Wedgwood and his Works, 1873.*~~

~~*ANCIENT MEXICAN, ETC. |*~~

~~*Towards the end of the 18th century many imitations were made of the Wedgwood cameo ware by different English manufacturers, and even at Sévres it was copied in porce- lain, though with original French designs. None, how- ever, are equal to Wedgwood's work, either in beauty of design or delicacy of execution.*~~

~~*Until quite recently little or no pottery of any artistic merit has been produced in England during the present century, partly owing to the absurd notion that pottery is a sort of inferior porcelain, and should be made to resemble it as much as possible, and also very largely on account of the invention in the 18th century of a process (described below) for printing patterns under the glaze, so as to avoid the labour of painting them by hand. Other modern so-called improvements of manufacture have done much to destroy all true art in English pottery ; such are the too finely ground and artificial mixtures of different materials, the great use of the mould in preference to the potter's wheel, and, most fatal of all, the fact that, when the pottery és thrown on the wheel, it is afterwards handed over to a workman who turns it on a lathe and rubs it down with glass-paper, as if it were a block of wood, thus remov- ing all the surface put on the vessel by the touch of the thrower's hand. Indeed, the great manufactory of Sévres has now so com- pletely lost all sense of the natural and reasonable treatment of plastic clay that the larger vases are cast whole by being poured in a fluid state into a mould, a method reasonable enough for iron or bronze but ludicrously inappropriate to plastic clay. Some few manufacturers have, however, of late tried to produce pottery shaped and decorated in a more natural way. The Lambeth pot- tery produces a good deal of excellent work, especially ware covered (after the Japanese fashion) with one brilliant enamel colour. Mr William De Morgan of Chelsea and Merton has perhaps made the greatest advances of all, having rediscovered the way to make and use the beautiful thickly-glazed blues and greens of the old Persian ware, and also the fine silver and copper lustres of Gubbio and*~~

~~*Spain. He uses these splendid colours in designs conceived and drawn with the old spirit, but of sufficient originality to make them a real stage in the development of ceramic art, not a mere archeological revival of styles and methods which have long ceased to have a significance and life of their own.*~~

~~*Sad though the confession is, it must be admitted that, to find a class of pottery designed with lines of natural beauty and pro- duced in accordance with the simple requirements of plastic clay, it is, for the most part, necessary to go, not to the centres of our boasted 19th-century civilization with its countless devices for turn- ing out work cheaply and rapidly, but rather to the humble work- shops of more primitive races, among whom the commercial spirit*~~

~~*has not yet destroyed all inborn feeling for true art and beauty. Literature. —For English pottery, see Jewitt, Ceramic Art of Great Britain, 1877: Solon, Old English Potter, 1883; Owen, Ceramic Art in Bristol, 1873; Wallis and Bemrose, Pottery of Derbyshire, 1870; Mayer, Art of Pottery in Potting in Worcester from 1751 to 1851, 1865 ; Church,*~~

~~*Liverpool, 1855 ; Binns, these works deal more with porce-*~~

~~*Catalogue of English Pottery, 1870; some of jain than pottery.*~~

~~*Section XV.—Ancrent Mexican, Peruvian, &c.*~~

~~*The pottery of ancient Mexico and Peru, certainly older than the Spanish conquests in America, and possibly dating from a much more remote age, has many points of interest. Large quantities in good preservation have been discovered in the tombs of chiefs and other important persons of those once powerful and (in a somewhat barbaric way) artistic races. Much of their pottery is grotesque and even hideous in shape, modelled in the forms of semi-human monsters ; it is often made of a hard black 2 clay, well burned, something like the early black wares of Etruria. Another kind is grace- ful and natural in shape, formed with great taste and skill on the potter's wheel. Many of the forms seem to have been sug- gested by vessels madeof gourds. The decoration is very curious ; many of the simple painted patterns with geometrical de- signs and hatched lines call to mind*~~

~~*theearliesttypeof painted Fr. decoration on the archaic pot- tery of Mycene and the Greek islands. The clay is fine in texture and has a slight surface-gloss, apparently the re-*~~

~~*66.—Ancient Peruvian ves-*~~

~~*sel. (British Museum.)*~~

~~*POTTERY*~~

~~*633*~~

~~*sult of mechanical polishing. Fig. 66 shows a typical form.! The British Museum has a good collection of this ware. The natives of Arizona and other uncivilized races of America even now make simple pottery decorated with taste and true decorative feeling.*~~

~~*Section XVI.—Porrery AND PoRCELAIN oF CHINA AND JAPAN.*~~

~~*In the methods of treatment employed in China and Japan the usual distinctions between pottery (earthenware) and porcelain (kaolinic ware) are not always observed. In many cases these two different materials are treated in exactly the same way and decorated after the same fashion. It will therefore be convenient to describe them both together.*~~

~~*History of Chinese Porcelain.—The chronological arrange- ment of Chinese wares isa matter of great difficulty. Man of the professedly historical records of the Chinese them- selves are quite untrustworthy; as with all other arts, they have claimed for the manufacture of porcelain an antiquity far beyond the actual facts of the case. This exaggerated estimate of the antiquity of Chinese porcelain was for a long time supported by the supposed discovery in Egypt of certain small bottles made of real porcelain, and in- scribed with Chinese characters, which were said to have been found in tombs at Thebes dating as early as 1800 B.c. The fact, however, that they are inscribed with quotations from Chinese poets of the 8th century 4.D., and have characters of a comparatively modern form, shows that the whole story of their discovery is a fraud. The only native work which gives trustworthy information on the development of Chinese*~~

~~*porcelain is a History of the Manufactory of King-te-chin, compiled from earlier records in 1815 by a native official, which was translated into French by M. Julien, under the title Histoire de la Fabyi- cation de la Porcelaine Chinoise (Paris, 1856). Accord- ing to this work, the manufacture of pottery is said to have commenced in 2697 3.c., and that of porcelain during the Han dynasty, 206 zc. to 25 ap. The Tsin dynasty (265-419 a.p.) was remarkable for its blue porcelain, and the Suy dynasty (581-618 a.p.) for its fine green ware. One of the most celebrated kinds of porcelain was that made about 954 a.p., deep sky-blue in colour, very glossy in texture, extremely thin, and sounding musically when struck. Even small fragments of it are treasured up by the Chinese, and set like jewels. Most dynasties seem to have been famed for a special variety of porcelain. The earlier sorts appear not to have been decorated with painting, but were all of one rich colour. Decorative painting did not apparently come into general use before the Yuen dynasty of Mongols (1260-1368), and was brought to great perfection under the Mings (1368-1644). The porcelain of the last-named dynasty is classified in periods, four of which (from 1426 to 1567) were greatly esteemed. Probably few specimens of Chinese porcelain known in Europe are earlier in date than the time of Kang-he, the second emperor of the Tsing dynasty (1661-1722). During all periods Chinese potters were constantly in the habit of copying earlier styles and of forging their marks, so that very little reliance can be placed on internal evidence. Indeed, the forgeries often deceive the Chinese collectors of old porcelain.*~~

~~*Manufacture of Porcelain.—It is made from two sub- stances, "pe-tun-tse." and "kao-lin"; the latter is @ white pasty substance derived from the decomposition of felspathic rocks such as granite. It is a hydrated silicate of alumina (Al,0,.2S8i0, + 2H,O), and derives its name from a hill near King-tih-chin, where it was first found (see Kaotty). The precise nature of pe-tun-tse is not*~~

~~*I See Rivero and Von Tschudi, Antiguedades Perwanas, 1851.*~~

~~*Manu- facture.*~~

~~*Decora- tion.*~~

~~*Plain white,*~~

~~*One enamel colour.*~~

~~*exactly known, but it appears to resemble kaolin, with the addition of a considerable proportion of free silica. The result of their mixture is shown in the following analysis by M. Laurent of the body of white Chinese porcelain—silica 70°5 per cent., alumina 20°7, potash 6, lime 0°5, protoxide of iron 0°8 per cent., Magnesia a trace. The white pastes of which the porcelain is made are very carefully washed, finely ground, and mixed in due pro- portion. The paste is "thrown" on the potter's wheel in the usual way and set to dry; its coloured decoration is then applied, and over that the transparent glaze is laid. This is a very hard and beautiful substance, which requires great heat to fuse it; it is made of almost pure felspar with an alkaline flux. It is finely ground with water, and either blown with a pipe on to the vessel or the vessel is dipped into it. The porcelain is next packed in clay boxes or "saggers," piled one above another in the kiln, in order to protect it from discoloration from the smoke. After the kiln has been heated for a considerable time to a very high temperature, the fire is withdrawn ; and the porcelain is allowed to cool slowly in the clay saggers before the kiln is opened and its contents removed. Additional decoration is frequently added over the glaze, generally in enamel colours, applied thickly so as to stand out in perceptible relief; gilding is also added over the glaze. The porcelain is afterwards fired a second time in a more open kiln, and at a lower temperature.*~~

~~*The methods of decoration on Chinese porcelain are ex- tremely varied, and are applied with the most skilful hand and wonderful fertility of design; but they are always: dainty and feebly pretty rather than artistic, except when there is a Persian element present. The Chinaman is a born maker of graceful toys, full of ingenuity and perfect deftness of touch, but hardly worthy to be classed as a producer of serious works of art. The general*~~

forms of the porcelain are mostly feeble, and often of extreme ugliness, while the skill in drawing is mostly confined to representations of flowers, some of which, especially the chrysanthemum and the peony, are painted with great truth and enjoyment. With the beauties of the human form the Chinaman has no acquaintance or sympathy, and he never possessed the wonderful skill of the Japanese in the delineation of animals and birds.

Only a few chief examples among the many methods of decorative treatment can be mentioned here. A useful classification has been adopted by Mr A. W. Franks in his valuable catalogue of his own collection of porcelain, formerly exhibited at Bethnal Green, and now (1885) in the British Museum.

1. Plain white, of a delicate ivory colour and a rich satin-like

glaze. Some of it is crackled, not accidentally, but by a careful process, one of the methods of which is this. Powdered steatite

1s mixed with the materials of the felspathic glaze, and the porce-

lain vessel or statuette, after the glaze is applied, but before firing,

is set in the rays of a hot sun, which causes it to be covered with

a network of fine cracks, going through the skin of glaze down to

the porcelain body. Red pigment or black Chinese ink is then

rubbed into the minute cracks, which are thus made more con- pate ee

spicuous, and prevented from quite closing up in the heat of the kiln. Many speci- mens have two sets of crackle, first the coloured cracks produced before firing, and secondly an intermediate uncoloured set, produced in the glaze by the action of the kiln (see fig. 67). Most of this white ware is decorated with delicate surface-reliefs of flowers or figures very sharply moulded. Old specimens of it are now highly valued in China. It was frequently copied in the early European porcelain manufactories, such as Saint Cloud, Meissen, and Chelsea. ' 2. Porcelain covered with one Enamel FIG. 67.—Chinese ie Colour.—Enamels of many varieties of tint | With

~~*crackle glaze. and great brilliance were used : the finest are blue, from copper or cobalt ; deep red, another oxide of copper ; yellow, antimoniate of*~~

~~*St*~~

~~*PO rTEe Y*~~

~~*[CHINESE PORCELAIN.*~~

~~*lead ; and black, oxides of iron and manganese. One of the most beautiful is that sea-green tint called "céladon," which was early exported into England, and highly valued in medieval times from its supposed property of changing colour at the contact of poison. New College, Oxford, possesses a bowl of this ware, mounted in silver richly worked, of about 1500 a.p., and presented to the college by Archbishop Warham early in the 16th century. A speci- men of this céladon ware is probably referred to among the list of new-year's gifts to Queen Elizabeth as "a cup of grene pursselyne" given by Robert Cecil. The fine old yellow porcelain was only made for the use of the emperor of China, and it is consequently rare ; it is very thin and transparent, almost like a vitreous enamel. Some of the Chinese enamelled wares are made of pottery, not of porce- lain ; earthenware, in many cases, was equally good for the purpose, as the body of the vessel was hidden by the coloured enamel.*~~

~~*3. Porcelain decorated with several Enamels or Glazes of different Several Colowrs.—This ware is = enamels frequently moulded in and relief, with dragons, colours. flowers, or various ani- mals, picked out in dif- ferent colours, often very harsh and gaudy in effect. Fig. 68 showsa pilgriin- bottle painted in enamel colours. The beauty both of form and of decoration for which this piece is very re- markable is mainly due to Persian influence.*~~

~~*4. Porcelain painted in White Enamel over a Grownd of Coloured Enamel. —This isa very decorative sort of ware 2 the designs, such as flowers, birds, and in- sects, are applied thickly in the white pigment, and are sometimes care- fully modelled in low relief. The method was*~~

~~*largely imitated by the ea ied es 620 Fic. 68.—Chinese pilgrim-flask, painted with above). enamel colours; Persian style.*~~

~~*5. Porcelain painted only in Blue.—This is really thé most artistic Blue.*~~

~~*and highly decorative of all the varieties of Chinése painted wares, Some of the large plates and jars have very good designs, treated in a not too realistic manner. 'Much of the finest porcelain of this class both in form and decoration shows a strong Persian influence, the result of the intercourse between China and Persia and the visit of Chinese potters to Ispahan mentioned above in the account of Persian pottery. N anking porcelain, painted with the so-called 'hawthorn pattern," really a kind of Prunus which produces its blossoms before its leaves, was largely imported into England during the last century, and now fetches very exorbitant prices. Unluckily during the 18th century a great deal of the fine blue and white china brought into England was painted over the glaze with harsh gaudy colours in English and French porcelain manufactories, to please the degraded taste of the time, and was thus completely spoiled. Other combinations of Chinese and European work occur. Sets of porcelain were painted in China with French or English designs to suit the European market ; or plain white porcelain was sent from China to be decorated at Chelsea or Bow. Very ludicrous results were produced in some cases by this mixture of style ; engravings were sent from Europe to be copied on porcelain by the Chinese potters, who have in many cases laboriously painted an exact facsimile of the copper-plate lines with all their hatchings and scratchy look. Some of these were done for Jesuit missionaries in China, and Chinese plates with Catholic sacred subjects and figures of saints exist in considerable quantities. Statuettes of the Madonna were also made in China for the missionaries, carefully modelled in white porcelain after European originals ; some appear to be copies from 14th-century French ivory figures, and (even in the hands of the Chinese potter) have preserved a strong resem- blance to their medieval original. The type of the Holy Mother thus introduced appears to have been adopted by the Chinese Buddhists as a fitting representation of their goddess Kwan-lin, many figures of whom were made with but little alteration from the statuettes of the Catholic Madonna.!*~~

~~*6. Porcelain painted in many Colours under the Glaze.—This Poly- very large class includes all varieties of form and decoration. The chrome colours are often harsh and inharmonious, and the more elaborate under figure-subjects are nearly always grotesque and ugly. Additional glaze. ee E —E—E——E———————*~~

~~*1 See Watkins Old, Indo-European Porcelain (Hereford, 1882).*~~

~~——~~

~~*\\ White on coloured*~~

~~*Japanese Hizen about 1513.*~~

~~*pottery.*~~

~~*Satsuma ware.*~~

~~*JAPANESE. |*~~

~~*richness of effect is often given by the over-glaze colours, added by a second firing. Many other varieties might be mentioned, but the student must be referred for further information to the list of works on this subject given below.*~~

~~*Both pottery and porcelain have been used on a large scale for architectural purposes in China. The so-called "porcelain tower" of Nanking was the most prominent example. It was a very ela- borate structure (see NANKING), mostly constructed of pottery covered with enamels of different colours. The usual name is misleading, as only the white portions were of real porcelain. The Jermyn Street and British Museums have specimens of its bricks and elaborate architectural features.*~~

~~*Japanese Pottery and Porcelain.—In the main the technical methods used in Japan and the styles of painted ornament were introduced from China, and also to a less extent from the adjacent peninsula of Corea. Glazed pottery was first made at Seto about 1230 a.p. by a potter who had visited China. Porcelain manufacture was introduced in a similar way into the*~~

province of On the whole the Japanese are more remarkable for their skill and almost endless methods in the production of pottery than of porcelain. No people ever approached them for marvellous fertility of invention and skill in the manipulation of all sorts of clay, pastes, enamels, and pigments. One of the most remarkable characteristics of Japanese pottery is its wonderful success in the imitation of all kinds of materials and texture of

'surface, one great object apparently being to make it re-

semble anything rather than what it really 1s. Wood, with its varying colours and delicate grain, ivory, bronze, lac, marble, basket-work, fruits, and countless other substances are imitated in Japanese pottery with the most perfectly de- ceptive effects. The utmost amount of labour and patience is often spent with this one object, any notions of real artistic beauty being apparently never even considered.

A great deal of Japanese ceramic ware is simply copied from Chinese porcelain, and often has forged Chinese marks. It is very difficult to find out what notions the Japanese themselves really have as to what is admirable in pottery. A purely archeological interest in old sorts of ware appears to affect them strongly, and they often put the highest value on what appears a very ordinary and rudely-made kind of pottery. As Mr A. W. Franks has pointed out in his introduction to a native report on Japanese pottery, published by the Science and Art Depart- ment, 1880, the high value which they put on rude speci- mens of glazed pottery is partly kept up by the existence of certain curious old tea-drinking ceremonies, solemnly performed as if they were religious rites. Everything used and every detail of the performance were strictly prescribed by rule. The bowl or cup out of which the tea was drunk by the guests was to be an archeeological curiosity remark- able for its age, not for any intrinsic merit. Some of these cups which have been brought to Europe are of coarse clay, illformed, thick, highly glazed, and quite without orna- ment. One in the Sévres Museum, said to be Seto ware of the 14th century, is made of mottled yellowish brown clay, with a thick vitreous glaze. It looks quite worthless, but has evidently been highly valued by its Japanese owner, for it has a beautifully made ivory lid, and is protected by three cases,—first, fine white silk with gold cord ; second, a box of polished bamboo ; and, outside of all, a case of

~~figured linen lined with silk. Others of these precious tea- bowls are red, purple, black, or grey, all very thick and coarse, but highly glazed, and carefully fitted into silk cases.~~

~~Some of the Japanese methods for the decoration of pottery are simple and effective, especially a ware made of grey clay with incised patterns—birds, flowers, and the like—filled in with white paste, and the whole glazed,—similar in method to the 16th-century Oiron ware.~~

~~The most magnificent sort of pottery is the Satsuma ware, originally introduced from Corea. It was at first~~

~~POrwrTrE h Y~~

~~635~~

~~manufactured in a private factory belonging to the prince of Satsuma, but afterwards produced for public sale. The most highly-decorated kinds with many colours were not made till the end of the 18th century. In minute richness it is probably the most elaborate ware ever produced. The body is a fine ivory-white clay, covered with a minutely crackled glaze. Over this, miniature-like paintings of human figures or flowers are executed in brilliant enamel colours, some of which stand out like jewelled reliefs. It is further decorated with delicately moulded patterns in gold, and, though very weak in real decorative effect, is a marvel of rich workmanship. Most of the so-called Satsuma now sold is a poor imitation of, the ware, and is made in great quantities at Awata and Ota.~~

~~It should be observed that nearly all the very elaborate Decora- and magnificent methods of ceramic decoration now so tion.~~

~~much employed by the Japanese are of quite modern origin ; before the present century the simpler methods of China were almost exclusively followed in Japan. During the last century great quantities of porcelain, chiefly deco- rated in gold, green, and a rich red, were made expressly for export, and largely brought into Europe, where they were frequently copied, especially in the porcelain works of Dresden and the early china manufactories of England.~~

~~*The Japanese have little or no sense of the best kind of decorative art; their paintings of flowers or birds, beautiful as they are, are mostly, as it were, flung across the vessel they are meant to ornament without any regard to its shape or the space to be occupied. Like the Chinese, they have no feeling for the beauty of the human form, or even of some of the nobler animals, such as the horse. The figures most frequently represented on their ceramic wares—the seven gods of good fortune—are all grotesquely hideous ; and downright ugliness of the most repulsive sort is often selected and treated with wonderful ingenuity. Many of the paintings have a symbolical meaning ; emblems of longevity (considered by the Japanese the chief of all blessings) are perhaps the favourite, such as the sacred tortoise, the crane, or the combination of three trees—the fir, the plum, and the bamboo—all of which have this special meaning.*~~

~~*Within the present century a new and elaborate method of decorating porcelain has been practised in Japan, the chief object of which seems to be to make a porcelain vessel look like a metal one. Brass cloisonné enamel is applied to the outer surface of porcelain vases or bowls; the strips of brass set on edge which form the outline of the design, instead of being soldered to a metal plate, are fixed in some almost incomprehensible fashion to the surface of the porce- lain, and then the compartments are filled in with coloured enamels and fired in the usual way,—a marvel of technical skill and wasted ingenuity.*~~

~~*Collections of Chinese and Japanese Porcelain.—The Dresden Collec- collection is the most important historically, having been formed tions.*~~

~~*chiefly between 1694 and 1705. 'The British Museum is rich through the recent munificence of Mr A. W. Franks, who has presented to it the whole of his fine collection. The South Kensing- ton Museum and the museums at Leyden, 'he Hague, and Sévres are rich in these wares, as are also those at Vienna, Berlin, and St Petersburg.*~~

~~*Literature.—For Chinese and Japanese porcelain, see Jacquemart and Le Blant, Histoire de la Porcelaine, 1861-62 ; Jacquemart, Histoire de la Céramique, 1873; Audsley and Bowes, Keramic Art of Japan, 1275-80 ; Du Sartel, La Porce- laine de Chine, 1881; Graesse, Catalog der k. Porzellan- wnd Gefaiss-Sammlung zu Dresden, 1873 ; Stanilas Julien, Histoire de la*~~

~~Porcelaine de Chine, 1856; Franks, Cat. of Coll. of Oriental Porcelain, 1878, and 'Japanese Pottery," in South Kensington Museum Handbook, 1880.~~

~~Ssction XVII.—PorcELaIn IN EUROPE. Early Development.~~

~~In various places in Europe, especially in Italy and France, attempts to produce translucent porcelain like that produced by the Chinese were almost continually being made from the end of the 15th century down to the~~

~~beginning of the 18th. The word "porcelain" is usually derived from the Italian " porcellana," a white shell, to the smooth polished surface of which the Chinese wares bear some resemblance. Hence it should be observed that in medieval inventories "a cup of porcelain" often means one made of shell or mother-of-pearl. In Italy the finer sorts of majolica were often called "porcellana," and a plate decorated "alla porcellana " meant one with a special style of painting, and did not refer to its material. During medizval times, when real Eastern porcelain is meant, some other word expressing where it came from was frequently added, e.g., in French 15th-century inventories " porcelaine de Sinant" is sometimes mentioned. From the 13th to the 15th century Chinese porcelain was very sparingly brought into Europe, and generally occurs among royal possessions or gifts as an object of great value. The name "china," from the country where porcelain was made, was given to it not later than the 16th century, and perhaps earlier, having been used by the Arabs long before: " china dishes" are mentioned by Shakespeare (Measure for Mea- sure, act li., scene i.) as being things of value.~~

~~The main reason of the very slight success gained for so many years in the attempts to make porcelain in Europe was the fact that it was regarded as a highly arti- ficial substance, something between pottery and glass; the many beds of kaolinic clays which exist in Europe were never thought of as being the true material of which to make it, or, if used at all, were only employed partially and in an accidental way. The earliest attempts at the production of translucent porcelain which had any practical success took place at Venice about 1470.1 An alchemist named Antuonio succeeded in making~~

~~*and firing in a kiln at San Simone, near Venice, " porcelane trasparenti e vaghissime," described, in a document dated 1470, as being as beautiful in glaze and colour as "the porcelain from barbarous countries." Difficulties, however, seem to have arisen, and the manufacture was not proceeded with till 1504, when a few sample specimens were made in Venice, and others again in a spasmodic way in 1518 and 1519. No specimens of the early Venetian porce- lain are now known, nor any pieces of the porcelain made at Ferrara for Duke Alphonso II. about 1565-67 by Giulio da Urbino, and mentioned with high praise*~~

~~*POTTE & F*~~

~~*[PORCELAIN.*~~

~~*II." Some pieces have a rude representation of the great dome of the Florentine cathedral, and the letter "F." for "Florentia" (see No. 22). Scarcely forty specimens of the ware are known, which are mostly in the possession of the Rothschilds and Mr Drury Fortnum, in the royal collec- tion at Lisbon, and the museums of South Kensington and Sevres. They are all of a slightly creamy white, with a beautiful pearly texture, due to the rich glaze and the slight transparency of their paste ; the glaze varies in thickness, and in some instances is slightly Potter's mark. crackled. Nearly allare simply decorated in No 2% cobalt blue, under the glaze; the designs are of various styles, some purely Italian, others Persian or Chinese in character ; a few have one flower painted in the middle of the space in a graceful and almost realistic way. A plate at Lisbon has a figure of St John with his eagle. Their forms are pilgrim-flasks, plates, ewers, and vases of differ- ent shapes, some very graceful and original.*~~

~~*The earliest dated example is among the five specimens in the Sévres Museum; it is a square bottle with the arms of Spain painted in blue and a few touches of man- ganese purple; the date 1581 is introduced among the ornaments at a corner of the bottle; it was probably a gift from Francesco I. to the king of Spain. The com- position of this porcelain has recently been discovered from a contemporary MS. in the Magliabecchian Library at Florence. The paste consisted of 24 parts of white sand, 16 of a crystalline frit (powdered rock-crystal 10, and soda 8), and Faenza white earth 12 parts. To 12 parts of this mixture 3 of the kaolinic clay of Vicenza were to be*~~

~~added. Probably to secure greater whiteness, the vessels were covered, under the glaze, with a white enamel ; but this addition appears needless. They were then glazed with an ordinary silicious lead glaze. Though the final result has the beauty and some of the special qualities of the Chinese natural porcelain, yet it will be observed that this end was gained in a very difficult and elaborate manner, which must have been very costly. This, no doubt, is the reason why so few pieces were made, and why its manu- facture ceased altogether with the death of Francesco de' Medici, in 1587.~~

~~=~~

~~(CALAN~~

~~A Aa~~

~~After the Medici ware ceased to be made there is a blank French — of nearly a century in the history of European porcelain, porce- In 1664 a patent was granted to Claude Reverend, a citizen !#™~~

~~by Vasari.2 The composition of this earliest European porcelain is not known, but it probably was partly made of the white clay of Vicenza—a true kaolinic paste —~~

~~often used by the majolica potters to give whiteness and fine grain to their clay.~~

~~Medici Porcelain.—The earliest manufactory of porcelain of which known specimens exist is that started in Florence, for Francesco I. de' Medici, about the years 1575-80 by Bernardo Buontalenti (see Vasari). Francesco de' Medici took the greatest interest in the manufacture, and, as is recorded by Galluzzi (Istoria di Toscana, 1781), moulded some of the vessels with his own hands, as compliment- ary presents to other princes. According to Galluzzi, Buontalenti did little more than improve on the method invented a few years earlier by the majolica potters Camillo da Urbino and Orazio Fontana, assisted by a Greek who had learned the secret of true porcelain in China. The discovery of the existing specimens of Medici porcelain is due to Alessandro Foresi, who observed its peculiar texture and, in some cases, slight transparency, and found pieces marked at the back in a way that quite~~

~~*confirmed his theory. These marks are the Medici arms, with its "palle" or balls, inscribed with "F. M. M. E. D. IL." for "Franciscus Medici Magnus Etrurize Dux*~~

~~*1 See Davillier, Les Origines dela Porcelaine en Europe, 1882.*~~

~~*2 Lives of Artists, last section. 3 See Foresi, Sulle Porcellane Medicee, 1869.*~~

~~*of Paris, which gave him the privilege of making " imita- tion porcelain, as fine as that from the East Indies." No known specimens can be attributed with certainty to his workshop, though some pieces which bear mark No. 23 may have come from his hands. In 1673*~~

~~*another patent was conceded to Louis Poterat, x who certainly did produce artificial eee" & PE porcelain at Rouen. Some small FR*~~

~~*pieces, salt-cellars and mustard- °*~~

~~*pots, in the museums of Rouen and Sévres, are attributed to him, and are therefore the earliest undoubted examples of French porcelain. They are of a pearly white colour, with rich glaze, not unlike the Medici porcelain in softness of texture. The ornaments, simple and delicate arabesques, are painted under the glaze in cobalt blue only. Some pieces are signed with No. 24.*~~

~~*Saint Cloud was the next place in France where porcelain was produced, the manufactory being carried on by the Chicanneau family, to whom a privilege was granted in 1695. The patent mentions that they had made porcelain since 1693. This early Saint-Cloud porcelain is fine in texture and glaze, and is decorated in many different styles : it is pure white, moulded with slight reliefs copied from the*~~

~~*No. 23. No. 24. Potters' marks,*~~

~~*Royal | manu-° factory.*~~

~~*Soft and | hard | 'porce- lain.*~~

~~*SEVRES.* |~~

~~*Chinese ; or painted in many bright colours and gold with*~~

~~*Chinese designs; or thirdly, with paintings in blues only*~~

~~*of flowery scroll-work and grotesques. It is marked either*~~

~~*with a sun, or with "S. C." combined with "T." (see No.*~~

~~*25), and other makers' initials. Martin Lister, physician*~~

~~*to Queen Anne, in an account of his travels in*~~

~~*France during 1698, mentions a visit which fy*~~

~~*he paid to the Saint-Cloud porcelain works,*~~

~~*and speaks with great adiniration of their*~~

~~*productions. The privilege was frequently ed is*~~

~~*renewed during the first half of the 18th*~~

~~*century, and the Saint-Cloud manufactory Potter's mark.*~~

~~*continued to be the most important in France Be 2*~~

~~*till the establishment of the royal manufactory at Sévres. Other places in France during this period, from 1700*~~

~~*to 1745, produced a certain quantity of artificial porcelain.*~~

~~*These were Lille, from 1711, marked with No. 26; Paris,*~~

~~*1722, a branch of the*~~

~~*Saint-Cloud works ; and*~~

~~*Chantilly, from 1725. ° 4 ' B*~~

~~*The porcelain of Chan-*~~

~~*tilly was specially in- v*~~

~~*tended to imitate old No. 26. , No. 27.*~~

~~*Japanese ware. Like the a*~~

~~*Medici porcelain, it has a white tin enamel over the paste.*~~

~~*It is marked with a hunting-horn (see No. 27) and painter's*~~

~~*initials. Porcelain of every variety of style was also made*~~

~~*at Mennecy-Villeroy from 1735, under the patronage of the*~~

~~*duke of Villeroy, with whose initials, "D.V.," all the pro-*~~

~~*ductions of the manufactory are marked. All these early*~~

~~*varieties of porcelain were of the artificial or soft kind, called*~~

~~*by the French " porcelaine & pate tendre."*~~

~~*Sevres.*~~

~~*The increasing success and popularity of the porcelain produced in Germany and England induced Louis XV. to establish a private royal manufactory of porcelain, which was first started at Vincennes, with a privilege granted to Charles Adam and others in 1745. In 1753 the king himself became a partner in the works, with a third share in the property. The seat of the manufactory was then transferred to Sévres, and the official title was assumed of "manufacture royale de porcelaine de France." Before 1753 the royal porcelain was simply marked with two crossed L's for Louis, but from that year a date-letter was made compulsory,—A for 1753 (see No. 28), B for 1754, and so on till 1777, after which a new doubled alphabet was started AA (see No. 29), BB, &c. ; this lasted down to RR (1793), : and then a less regular Potters' marks. series of marks came into use. Till 1792 the date-letter was put between the crossed L's, but in that year the republic*~~

~~substituted the letter R. Later various royal monograms and marks were used.~~

~~Till about 1770 all French porcelain was artificial or "soft" (pate tendre); the discovery of kaolinic clays in France then brought about the manufacture of natural hard porcelain (pate dure) like that made in China and Japan. This gradually superseded the soft kind, which ceased to be made at the end of the 18th century. Its manufacture has recently been revived at Sévres to some slight extent. M. Brongniart, the director of the Sévres porcelain works from 1800 to 1847, in his most valuable Traits des Arts Céramiques (1854), gives a full account of the materials and methods used at Sevres during all periods. The soft porcelain was composed of white sand 60 per cent., nitre 22, common salt 7-2, alum 3°6, soda 3°6, and~~

~~No. 28. No. 29.~~

~~POTT E.R ¥~~

~~- without breadthof decorative~~

~~637~~

~~gypsum 3°6 per cent. This compound was roasted at a high temperature, then ground to a fine powder, and washed with boiling water. To nine parts of this mixture or frit two parts of white chalk and one of a sort of pipe- clay were added. The whole was again ground, and passed several times through a fine silk sieve. Water was added to make the powder into a paste, and it was then fit for the thrower on the wheel or the moulder. Owing to the very unplastic nature of this elaborate mixture, black soap and size or glue made from parchment were added to bind the paste.together under the moulder's hands. The glaze used for the pate tendre was an ordinary silico-alkaline glass, made fusible by oxide of lead. The coloured decorations and gilding were added after the firing of the glaze. The hard porcelain is made of natural kaolinic clays, and is glazed with almost pure felspar,—both substances very hard and infusible. The superior softness and richness of effect possessed by the pdte tendre are due to the fact that the paintings on the softer and more fusible glaze sink slightly into it under the heat of the kiln, and are, though almost imperceptibly, blended one with another. It is~~

~~*easy to distinguish the two pastes and glazes: pieces of the one kind can be scratched by a knife, while those of the other resist it. Nevertheless the difference in beauty between the two kinds of porcelain has been much exaggerated, and the extravagant prices which are given for the pdte tendre are greatly due to its rarity, and to its having been produced earlier than the other. The whole question, in fact, of the value of Sévres porcelain is a highly artificial and conven- tional one, which can hardly be considered in accordance with the ordinary rules or canons of art. Certain special qualities were aimed at, such as brilliant colours, with abso- lute smoothness of surface, microscopic delicacy of paint- ing, and the most perfect accuracy and neatness of execu- tion throughout ; and it must be admitted that the porce- lain-makers gained their object with the help of ingenuity, technical skill, and unwearied patience, which must com- mand our respect and even admiration, whatever may be our verdict as to the artistic result of their labours. Still, with all possible allowances, there is no doubt that rarity, the necessary result of the slow and laborious processes employed, is the chief reason for the extraordinary value now set on this porcelain. 2 The £10,000 which three flower-vases of pdte tendre fetched at a public auction a few years ago can be ac- counted for on no other hypo- € thesis. The colours of Sévres porcelain are generally harsh, and out of harmony with the pictures they surround ; the forms of the various vessels too are frequently very un- graceful, and utterly unsuited to any plastic substance. The whole of this porce- lain ware, in fact, labours | under the serious artistic dis- advantage of being designed and decorated with no regard to suitability of material or" method ; the elaborate pic- ture-subjects would have*~~

~~*SS*~~

~~*a MM*~~

~~*a |*~~

~~*been far more fit for ivory Fic. 69.—Sevres vase, pdte tendre ;*~~

~~*green body and gilt imitation mounting. (South Kensington Museum.)*~~

~~*miniature-work, and are quite*~~

~~effect, while the shapes of the more elaborate vases are often deliberate imitations of gold and "or moulu," which in no way suggest the special pro-~~

~~Decora- | Sevres porcelain made for actual use, such as tea-sets upon it, thus forming the outside or back of the clate, which. ae | sit : : . r back of the plate, w ; t ais and dessert-services, are usually painted with flowers or | revolves against the edge, has all super'iuous pale cctaped, hem it figure-subjects, often in many tints, and enriched with | and is accurately formed into the required shape. When the plate gilding, but on a plain white ground. It is the purely | or other vessel has been shaped it is allowed to dry, and is finished decorative pieces, such as vases and flower-vessels, that are ee Pai a ee Tubbed smooth with sand-paper. : and all projecting ornaments are moulded, ther ornamented with the greatest splendour. They generally | cast, by pouring the paste in " fluid state into Hisco: senile suse have panels with pictures on a white ground surrounded | of plaster of Paris, which take to pieces and set free the casting by frames of gold scroll-work ; the main body of the piece | which is then fixed on the vessel it belongs to with a little more is covered with one deep or brilliant colour. The chief | Suid slip used asa "lute." The moulded ornaments are afterwards e carefully finished by hand with ordinary modelling tools. E J : ; ; ing : ce are haa ae very dark blue ; blew du cate deep statuettes and groups of figures are eae finished oe this ee ramarine ; a bri 1ant turquoise blue; a bright pink, | The vase with its attached ornaments, after being thoroughly dried the favourite colour of Madame Pompadour, but generally | is ready for the first firing. called "rose Du Barry"; a bright yellow, a violet, and three The kilns are like tall circular towers tapering towards the top, Firing. shades of green were also used. These brilliant colours pi Lode ee He en at ey her ge ae : E : Ps 5 perforated brick vaults between t Se fire, are often further decorated with gold; a ground with cir | fed either with white wood or coke, is in the est sage the cular groups of gold spots scattered over it is called "ceil | chamber next to the fire is of course the hottest, and the top one de perdrix"; other kinds of diaper were also used. The | the least hot of the three. These different degrees of heat are most gorgeous variety ofall isthe jvelled Scores, not made | Hue, ageordie to fhe tmpersare raed or cach Bg : , which on : till about 1780, and generally having a ground of blew dw | a moderate heat to prepare them for being~~

~~glazed, are Piaisaiine rot or ultramarine. It is richly set with imitation jewels, highest chamber, and those that are being glazed in the lowest. chiefly turquoises, pearls, and transparent rubies, made of | 1 order to keep the white paste from being discoloured by the coloured enamel pastes, hardly to be distinguished in effect a are pen Le PE Se Sah j 3 ish "saggers"'), from real stones. They are set in gold, slightly modelled fea ed in hich ee The al ee ee Se ce f 2 | ugh p s chambers of the kilns have in actual relief, like the gilt ornaments on the richest sort | small openings, closed with transparent talc, through which the of Japanese Satsuma ware. | progress of the baking can be watched, and test-bits of porcelain Forms. The forms of Sevres procelain are very varied, and, in an. lo olay = Se couee tint according to the : at 1v 1S subjected to, are withdrawn from time to time to sh ie " in great use of plaster moulds, many reproduc- | what temperature has been reached. Asa rule the fire is apt tip lons of the same design were rarely produced. Clocks, | for about thirty-six hours, and the kiln with its contents is allowed barometers, and various other objects were made of porce- | from four to six days to cool before being opened. on and richly decorated, and also painted panels or ne es ies eee dee . m bis ae oe plaques used for furniture,—always, how: i Bae fq ee ge tea 1s made of felspar and quartz crystals and de- ee pee: oH ae a Sot with most (pure silica) ; it is finely ground with water, and the porcelain is corating. oe : — y modelled statuettes in white | dipped into it, until sufficient of the fluid mixture adheres to the porcelain were made by some of the ablest sculptors absorbent biscuit to form a coat of glaze. When dry it is fired of the 1 8th century ; these usually have pedestals elabo- for the second time, but in the lowest and hottest compartment of rately gilt and painted. Perhaps the worst taste of all is the kiln, this natural rock-glaze being very infusible. About 1600° chown, ener Oh hich h C. is the usual temperature for this process. aes vases Which have scrolls and sham The painted decoration is always applied over the glaze; but metal-wor moulded and gilded to produce the effect of | within recent years a new method of under-glaze ornament has been a porcelain vase set in or moulu mounts,—a method of much used, called. "pate sur pate," similar in method to the "slip so-called decoration which was much imitated at Chelsea Sei tee perc eae "es ee a another sonst oie ' — iscult ground of the vase is first tinted a uniform colour, and ace i s n works. The recent 'Jones bequest " | then the same white paste of which the porcelain is made is nixed fe. ou ensington~~

~~Museum contains a large variety with water and applied in successive layers with a brush, thus pro- of the most costly specimens of the pdte tendre of Sevres. ane ee cameo-like reliefs. Very beautiful designs of figure- oe ee, — ; sudjects or Howers are put on in this way, and additional effect is Fane ee eee se "ale od ee eee gained by the coloured ground shining through the thinner parts this Teese ein We orca ert tae a s ee or | of the semi-transparent white reliefs, _The whole is then glazed in odio ve At oat te € most com- | the usual way. To return to the painted porcelain, when it has Saint Chee Ie ewe building ie pee ie the he of | come from the second firing in a white highly glazed state it is ready Musoun leh coniagethe Mee eT o ee ae eramic | for the painter. Almost endless varieties of coloured pigments are of all pales eet gid rigeacchinsionar eee pace Ug gained by the use of elaborately prepared chemical compounds, all of dhe mete WPEWER. 0! the was ae see oe oe different salts of metals. In the main the blues are from cobalt, (adn ald woe tee Biiloved ithe weer aie e a L an Is the turquoise colour from copper, the rose-pink from gold, the gree 7 and modeliteate soba. avtees af col ae y painters | from chrome and copper, and the violets from manganese. A far Mixing Themaenie oes sity eael ae eee 'a oe. greater variety and brilliance of colour can be gained in over-glaze oe mostly from Limousin, but also imported from Conta llth 41 ae Satenor an Se ean mould- is mixed a proportion of white chalk and fine sand (silica). E ' are very inferior in softness and decorative beauty, and are fre- ing the material is finely ground between mill-stones, and carefi ay ie ee ieee Pete ee ee ee paste. by being agitated with "wach "tlhe Tene? Ga r : y washed | ent temperatures, and three distinct firings are used at Sévres for and the lighter impurities are care off * ae Ane Ge ae i m marge Only: they are called "grand feu," "demi-grand feu," various ingredients are then mixed thorough] i oleae Hie h sian siet se duanar he OM ae an shly tog vith enough | divided state is obtained by chemical solution and precipitation.~~

~~perties of a fictile material (see fig. 69). It is difficult to realize the amount of thought and labour that was spent on the production of Sévres porcelain. The chief chemists of France devoted their energies to the invention of brilliant and varied pigments which would stand the severe test of the kiln. The works of the best painters were used for reproduction among the~~

~~*painted decorations of the porcelain, and many artists of real talent spent their lives in painting these gaudy toys—on the whole a sad waste of labour and skill.*~~

~~*water to bring them to the consistence of cream. When the mixing es ey ee ee the cream-like fluid is run off into absorbent renee poe S, which take up the superfluous water and leave the*~~

~~*om 'po oe pasty state. The paste is next turned over fre- q y on a Hoor so as to expose the whole of it to the air, and it*~~

~~*POTTER Y*~~

~~*[PORCELAIN.*~~

~~*is thoroughly kneaded like baker's dough by men's feet and hands to make it more plastic for the wheel or mould. The wheel turned by the thrower's foot is exactly like that used in Egypt under the Ptolemies, or by the majolica potters, as shown in fig. 55. While moulding his vessel the thrower keeps dipping his hands into a basin of fluid paste ("barbotine" ov slip). He also increases the smoothness of surface on the revolving vessel by holding a sponge soaked in the slip between his fingers. Vessels of which a number are required all exactly alike, such as a set of plates, are partly shaped in a mould and partly formed by a steel "template" or gauge. 'lhe thrower forces a thin disk of paste over a convex mould shaped to give the inside of the plate; he then sets it, mould and all, on the revolving wheel, and a steel knife-like gauge shuts down*~~

~~*The gold requires a special kiln, and firing at a higher temperature than the colour-pigments, and therefore, in the case of pate dure, is applied first. The colours have to be put on and fired in order according to the degree of heat they require, thus very much add- ing to the painter's difficulties, which are also increased by the*~~

~~*GERMAN, ETC. |*~~

~~*fact that all the colours alter in the kiln, the unfired pigments often bearing no resemblance to their fired state. Thus an ela- borately painted and gilt*~~

~~*Sevres vase passes through six separate firings, and often a seventh when it needs final retouching.*~~

~~*The porcelain & pate tendre is now made in small quantities at Savres. Its materials have been described above. In most respects it goes through the same processes as the pdte dure, but the gold is applied after the painting, as it requires a less degree of heat to fix it on the more fusible glaze used for pdte tendre.*~~

~~*Modern Sévres porcelain has two marks—first, the mark of the paste or undecorated vase, painted in green; second, a mark in ted or gold to show that it has been painted at Sévres. Slightly defective pieces in the white glazed state are sometimes sold and decorated elsewhere. In this case the green mark is cancelled by the cut of a lapidary's wheel before it leaves the manufactory. M. Brongniart, in his Aris Céramigques, has given a complete set of plates, showing all the processes, the machinery, and the kilus used at Sévres in his time,—that is, from 1800 to 1847. "Other processes are now practised. One is for making very thin cups and saucers, like Eastern "egg-shell china," which are formed by merely rinsing out a plaster mould with fluid paste, when sufficient of the paste to make the thin walls of the.cup adheres to the absorbent mould ; and thus porcelain is made much thinner than it could be by use of the wheel and lathe. Another recent invention is of great importance in the forming of large vases with bodies thin in proportion to their size. Such would be liable to collapse from their own weight while the paste was soft. To prevent this, the vase is set in an air-tight chamber, its mouth being carefully closed, and the air in the chamber round it is exhausted, so that the soft vase is kept in shape by the expansive pressure of the air within it. The converse method is also used in some cases, by compressed air being forced into the vase. When the paste is sufficiently dry all fear of failure from this cause is over. In this way vases as much as 12 feet in height have been successfully made and fired.*~~

~~*In addition to porcelain shaped and painted after the 18th-*~~

~~*(see pp. 630-31); but in 1710 he seems to have been in some way set on the track of the secret of porcelain manu- facture. HIs first attempts were unsuccessful: the paste is grey and defective, and there is little or no glaze. So far no real progress had been made towards the discovery of true porcelain. But in 1710 a lucky accident, com- bined with the young chemist's ready powers of observa- tion, revealed the true nature of the required paste. HIaving noticed the unusual weight of some new hair-powder with which his wig was dressed, he inquired what it was made of, and, finding that it was a finely-powdered white clay from Aue, near Schneeberg in Saxony, he pro- cured some of the clay. HIe made vessels of it and fired them, and found that he had discovered the material of true hard porcelain, like that from China and Japan. When Augustus IT. learned the importance of the dis- covery he established the porcelain manufactory at Meissen with Béttger as its director. This establishment, 5 miles from Dresden, was more like a prison than a factory, being surrounded by high walls and shut in by port- cullises: none except workmen were ever admitted, and they were sworn to secrecy under pain of penal servitude for life. The kaolin from Aue was dug out, packed in sealed bags, and brought to Meissen with every care pos- sible to avoid betraying the secret of its importance; no possible precaution was omitted, and yet, in one case at least, all attemps to keep the monopoly were in vain (see below, " Vienna porcelain ").*~~

~~*The earliest productions of the Meissen (Dresden) porce- Decora- lain- works are copies from the Chinese and Japanese. tions of Some are plain white, with flowers or fruit in low relief ;*~~

~~*century fashions, and the new pdte sur pate process, the present manufactory produces a great deal of fine porcelain copied exactly from the fanciful and elaborate wares of China and Japan, such as ' the delicate double cups and vases, with outer shells of minute*~~

~~*Bottger.*~~

~~*open work pierced through, and many other varieties requiring great technical skill and patience. Unhappily the old faults and misdirected aims still prevent the laboured products of this great factory from having much real artistic value, or even strong decora- tive effect. The paintings on the*~~

~~*porcelain are still pictures like miniatures on iyory, and the treatment and forms of the most elaborate vases are not such as would arise from a natural and rational treatment of plastic clay. The ingenious resources of modern chemistry have produced pigments of countless variety of tint, but they are mostly over-gaudy and harsh in combination ; and the modern habit, not peculiar to Sévres, of applying paintings over the glaze, wilfully rejects the special soft richness of effect*~~

~~*which a vitreous coating gives to the pigments under it.*~~

~~*Literature.—On French porcelain, consult Jacquemart, Histoire de la Céram- ique, 1873; Davillier, Les Porcelaines de Sevres, 1870, and Les Fatences et Porcelaines de Moustiers, &c., 1863; Jacquemart and Le Blant, 7 istoire de la Porcelaine, 1861-62; Lejeal, Recherches sur la Porcelaine de Valenciennes, 1868; Milet, L'In- wention de la Porcelaine & Rowen, 1867; Guide du Visiteur, Sévres, 1874; Cool, Peinture sur Porcelaine, 1866; Bastenaire-Daudenart, L'Ari de fabriquer la Porcelaine, 1827. See also the general list of works on ceramic art.*~~

~~*German and Austrian.*~~

~~*The porcelain of Germany was, from the first, composed of a hard natural paste, a true kaolinic clay. Its success- ful production was the result of a single, almost accidental, act of discovery, and not, like that of the French, of a long series of experimerits with different materials, ending in the invention of a highly artificial imitation of true porcelain. In the year 1700 a young chemist, or rather alchemist, of great ability, called Frederick Bottger (1682-171 9), a native of Saxony, fled to Dresden under the accusation of prac- tising magical arts and searching for the *¢ philosopher's stone." He was there taken under the protection of Augustus IL. elector of Saxony, who employed him to make experiments, at first connected with medical chemistry and afterwards with the composition of pastes and clays for ceramic ware. From 1701 he worked for his royal patron, partly at Dresden and partly "at the castle of Meissen, carefully guarded, and kept in seclusion almost like a prisoner, in order that his discoveries might remain secret, and also to prevent his leaving the country. For nine years Béttger only produced stoneware, though of a finer and harder quality than had hitherto been made*~~

~~*brated blue and white china of Nanking. The first pieces painted with other colours are imitations of old Japanese china in green and red with enrichments in gold. Bottger died in 1719, and was succeeded in his directorship by George Héroldt, who introduced certain improvements in the processes of the manufacture, and increased the quan- tity of its annual production. In his time Chinese designs were still copied, mostly very ugly figure-subjects on white panels, the rest of the vase being coloured yellow, green, or grey, and decorated with elaborate gilt seroll-work in the worst possible taste.*~~

~~*After about 1725 the Eastern style of design was superseded by ela- borate miniature paint- ings of flowers and in- sects, or copies from Dutch and Flemish painters. All notion of true ceramic decoration was gone, and the porce- lain was only regarded as a ground on which to paint an imitation of an_ oil- painting. Another style of decor- ation soon came into fashion : china was de- corated in relief with ~*~~

~~*the "honeycomb" or —*~~

~~*" may-flower " pattern. Fic. 70.—Dresden vase, pdie dure; may- In the latter kind (flower pattern in relief, coloured blue he eee S€€ andgold. (South Kensington Muscum.) fig. 70) the vessel is*~~

~~*closely studded with blossoms of the may, moulded in a realistic way, with thin crisp edges, and then coloured and gilded, very laborious to execute, and extremely disagree-*~~

~~*AA*~~

~~*Marks.*~~

~~*Vienna porce- lain.*~~

~~*Berlin porce- lain.*~~

~~*able in effect. Perhaps the chief specialty of Dresden porcelain consists in its statuettes and group of figures, the best of which were made between 1731 and 1756 under the superintendence of a sculptor named Kandler. Some of these, especially the Watteau-like shepherds and shep- herdesses, have a sort of feeble prettiness ; but most have only little merit, and some are grotesque and wilfully ugly. They are generally decorated with colours and gilding ; the best, however, are in plain glazed white. Elaborate can- delabra, clocks, and other objects were largely made, into the designs of which figures in the round, flowers realistic- ally modelled, and rococo scroll-work were introduced, generally in a feeble and ungraceful way. For some years after 1774 designs of more classical form, purer in outline and less crowded with clumsy ornament, came into fashion. Since then nothing of any real value has been produced in the Dresden china-works, Of late years, since the increase of prices given for old Dresden, the directors of the manu- factory have begun to reproduce their old designs, and even to use some of the worn-out moulds; the result is that the china thus produced is very blunt and spiritless, quite devoid of merit.*~~

~~*The old Dresden porcelain is of a fine paste, and has a good glaze, but its white is of a rather cold tint, occasion- ally even having a bluish shade. It is, however, both in quality of material and in design, the best porcelain that Germany has produced. During the early period the monogram "AR" interlaced (for Augustus Rex) marks the pieces made either for the king's use or from his design. Between 1712 and 1715 pieces made for sale were marked with a rudely-sketched snake twining round a stick. Since 1721 two crossed swords have been used as a general mark ; the addition of a dot or star marks special periods (see No. 30). The swords were the arms of the elector*~~

~~*of Saxony as arch-marshal of the em- Ae*~~

~~*pire. Some pieces have "MPM" for*~~

~~*"Meissenen Porzellan Manufactur." a oO. .*~~

~~*As at Sevres, china from Dresden, if sold undecorated, has the cross-swords mark cancelled by the cut of a wheel. In 1863 the china-works were moved*~~

~~*from the fortress of Meissen and established in a new and more convenient building.*~~

~~*Vienna Porcelain.—In 1720 one of the workmen escaped from the prison-like manufactory of Meissen and brought the secrets of the porcelain clay to Vienna, where he set up kilns and workshops in partnership with a Frenchman named Du Pasquier. They ob- tained a special patent, but had little practical success; and the Vienna porcelain was not made in large quantities till after 1744, when the manufactory was carried on under the patronage of Maria Theresa and the emperor Joseph. In 1785 there were thirty-five kilns in working order, and 500 work-people were employed. Vienna porcelain is not of a pure white, but is greyish in tint ; its paintings are very poor, and it depends for its effect chiefly on gilt-moulded scroll-work in delicate relief. Its manufacture was suspended in 1864 on account of the heavy expense it entailed on the Austrian Government.*~~

~~*Berlin porcelain was first made in 1751 by a potter named Wegely, who marked his ware with No. 31. It was not, however, a commercial success till Frederick the Great took it in hand. He sent a number of skilled workmen from the Meissen (Dresden) china-works to Berlin, WY and also ordered the manufactory to be supplied with the kaolinic clay from Aue, of which Meissen hitherto had preserved the monopoly. In quality Potter's mark. the Berlin porcelain comes next to that of Dresden ; No. 81. it is often decorated with a bright rose-pink, the favourite colour of Frederick, which was unknown at the Meissen works. Large quantities of porcelain are still made at Berlin.*~~

~~*Other Continental Porcelain of the 18th Century.*~~

~~*A very large number of other places in Germany pro- duced hard natural porcelain during the 18th century, but none of their work is of any special interest or beauty. It became, in fact, the fashion for every king or reigning*~~

~~*prince to be the patron of a porcelain manufactory. Porce- lain was produced at Amsterdam and The Hague; at Brussels, Copenhagen, and Zurich; and in Russia at St Petersburg and Moscow.*~~

~~*In Italy also fine soft porcelain was made,—at Doccia as early as 1735, some of which, ornamented in under-glaze blues only, is very decorative and in good taste. Venice produced clever copies of Japanese porcelain, painted with chrysanthemums and other flowers in enamel. The royal manufactory at Capo di Monte, close to Naples, founded in 1736 by Charles IIL, pro- duced a great deal of porce- Wy oS lain decorated in many styles, mostly in very bad taste. N RE The best are Oriental designs , painted in blues only. The Agta meat, « BG accompanying marks (No. 32) were used, the fleur-de-lis in 1736, the crowned N after 1759, and the RF after 1780. All the Italian porcelain is of the soft artificial sort.*~~

~~*The porcelain-works in the Buen-Retiro gardens at Madrid were also established by Charles III. after he succeeded to the throne of Spain. Much of this (soft) porcelain is classical in form, and is decorated with minia-*~~

~~*ture paintings in colours or monochrome. Charles III. 74 transferred thirty-two work- o VE men and painters from Capo : Potter' ks. No. 33. di Monte when he founded the ve ere ie Buen-Retiro manufactory, and hence the productions of the two factories are very similar in style. One of the marks used, the lis, was common to both ; the usual forms on the Buen-Retiro porcelain were those in No. 33. LIvterature.—See Falke, Geschichte der k. Porzellan-Fabrik in Wien, 1867; Graesse, Geschichte der Gefdssbildneret, Porzellan- Fabrication, &c., 1853; Karner, Die Porzellan-Malerei, &c., 1870; Kolbe, Geschichte der Porcellanmanufactur zw Berlin, 1863 ; Klemm,*~~

~~*Die k. stichsische Porzellan- und Gefiss-Sammlung, 1833 ; Kriinig, Cyclopedia, s.v. ' Porzellan."*~~

~~*English.*~~

~~*The early history of English porcelain is rather obscure. John Dwight (see p. 632 above) was apparently the first English manufacturer who took out a patent for the pro- duction of transparent porcelain ; but no specimens made by him are now known.*~~

~~*Chelsea Porcelain.—According to Jewitt (Ceramic Art Chelsea of Great Britain), John Dwight probably founded the factory. porcelain-works at*~~

~~*Chelsea, which rank first among English manufactories both in date and importance. In 1745 they were in full activity; and the popularity in France of English porcelain was one of the causes which led to the establishment of the royal manufactory at Sévres. The owner of the Chelsea works was a Frenchman called Nicholas Spremont, who continued to manufacture fine porcelain till his retirement from business in 1764.*~~

~~*This porcelain is very varied in style, as was the case with most of the 18th-century makes. Some of it is simply imitated from Eastern china, either in blue and white, or in the old Japanese style, which was then so popular, chiefly painted in rich red and green, with a good deal of gilding. Other pieces, more elaborate and costly, resemble Sévres porcelain, and have miniature paintings on white panels, the rest of the vase being coloured with one uniform tint, such as the French blew du rot or "rose Pompadour." One colour, peculiar to Chelsea, is a deep claret-red. Most of the vases have a great deal of gild- ing, both applied in patterns on the body of the vase, and also used solidly to decorate the elaborate moulded scroll- work which was fixed on the sides of the porcelain. The writhing masses of gold on Chelsea ware are prob- ably the most meaningless and stupid attempts at decora-*~~

~~*ENGLISH.* |~~

~~*tion that have ever been produced. Many of them are designed with apparently not even an attempt at beauty of form or grace- rin fulness of curve, and are quite without the vig- our that is often possessed by the grotesques of China or Japan. f Chelsea vases of this _ elaborate sort are rare, as their production was slow, and they now fetch very high prices: £2000 has been given fora single vase such as that Shown in fig. 71.*~~

~~*It should be*~~

~~*observed _ that, till the discovery _ Ss of the half-de- pyre, 71.—Early Chelsea vase, dark-blue body, with composed kao- gilt scroll-work atthe sides. (South Kensington linie clay of Museum.) Cornwall about 1755 by Cookworthy, all English porcelain was of the soft variety (@ pdte tendre), and was really an artificial compound with an ordinary vitreous lead glaze. The painted decoration, like that of Sevres, was applied over the glaze, with the exception of a fine cobalt blue, which was painted on the china in a*~~

~~*biscuit state. This colour is much the finest and most truly decorative of any of the pigments, very superior in richness of effect to the much brighter over-glaze colours. That used at the Derby porcelain-works is the most beautiful in tint.*~~

~~*The early success of the Chelsea porcelain was partly due to the patronage of George II., who, following the royal fashion of the age, took a great interest in the manufactory, and not only bought large quantities of its productions but also aided it by importing kaolinic clay, models, and even skilled workmen from Saxony. In 1769 the Chelsea porcelain-works were put up to auction, and bought by William Duesbury, the owner of the Derby china-factory. Till 1784 he carried on the manufacture of porcelain at both places, but in that year he pulled down the Chelsea kilns and transferred all the movable plant and the workmen to Derby. The Chelsea mark is usually an anchor, either painted in red or gold, or moulded in relief; the anchor is often double (see No. 34), and in some cases has the ad- dition of one or more daggers.*~~

~~*Some specimens first noted by*~~

~~*Mr. Jewitt! have quite different Potter's marks. No. 34. marks, incised on the paste before glazing, which are of special interest as being the earliest dated specimens of English porcelain. Such marks are a triangle, with the addition " Chelsea 1745."*~~

~~*Bow Porcelain (Stratford-le-Bow).—In 1744 Edward in. Heylyn and Thomas Frye, the latter a painter of some repute, took out a patent for the manufacture of porcelain at Bow. The composition they used was a curious one, being almost a hard porcelain. The clay, which was called '"unaker," was brought from America, and was probably an jmpure kind of kaolin. It was ground and washed to separate the sand and mica; and to it was added pounded glass—a pure alkaline silicate—varying in proportion from*~~

~~*1 See " History of Chelsea China," in Art Journal for 1863.*~~

~~equal parts of clay and glass to one-fifth of glass. The glaze was a similar mixture, with less of the American kaolinic clay. This paste and glaze must have been difficult to manage, since in 1748 the partners took out a fresh patent for a more artificial and softer kind of porcelain, with a more fusible lead glaze. In 1750 the Bow works came into the hands of Messrs Weatherby and Crowther, and were then called "“New Canton.” For some time the manufactory was successful, and employed 300 hands ; but before long one of the partners died, and the survivor, “John Crowther, chinaman,” was gazetted bankrupt in 1763, and the whole stock was sold off. Crowther, however, in spite of his failure, carried on the works till 1775, when they were bought by William Dues- bury, the owner of the Chelsea, Derby, and other china- factories ; he pulled down the Bow kilns and transferred the plant to Derby, as he did afterwards in the case of the Chelsea manufactory. The Bow porcelain is of a fine soft milky white; many of the imitations of Chinese figures are hardly to be distinguished from the originals. Some of the Bow china, decorat-~~

~~ed only in the rich under- glaze blue, with Eastern designs, is very effective. A good many pieces are~~

~~painted in the Dresden~~

~~style, and coloured statu- eee: ettes or groups of figures, also after German models, were largely produced. The Bow marks are very numerous, some not distinguishable from those of Chelsea; No. 35 shows four varieties,~~

~~Potter’s marks,~~

~~Derby porcelain is supposed to have been made as early Derby as 1750, possibly by Andrew Planché, a clever French re- factory.~~

~~fugee, who in 1756 entered into partnership with Heath and Duesbury, the last of whom afterwards became the chief china-manufacturer of England. The purchase by Duesbury of the Bow and Chelsea works has already been mentioned. The Derby porcelain is often very large, ela- borately moulded, and profusely decorated, generally rather in the Dresden style, weak in form and gaudy in colour. The Derby under-glaze blue was remarkably fine, and many of the plain blue and white pieces, with Chinese patterns, are~~

~~highly decorative, as are also, though in a less degree, those porcelain services that were painted in the "old Japanese style." One of the chief specialties of the Derby works was the production of delicate white figures in biscuit china, often modelled with great skill and refinement. Unfortunately the practice of printing the under-glaze patterns, instead of painting them by hand, was introduced at Derby about 1764, and did much to destroy all the artistic value of the work (see below). The marks used were these,—first a '"" "D" combined with an anchor (No. 36), or a crowned anchor (No. 37), used during the earlier part of the time when Duesbury was carrying on both the Chelsea and the Derby factories, 1769-84 ; next the crown was used, either over the "D" only (No. 38), or, more usually, with a saltire or crossed~~

~~D2)~~

~~No. 36. No. 37. Potters' marks.~~

~~aX~~

~~No. 38. No. 39.~~

~~swords immediately under it. Another variety has crossed~~

~~lines under the crown (No. 39). The Derby works con-~~

~~tinued in the possession of the Duesbury family till 1814~~

~~or 1815, when Robert Bloor became the lessee and finally XIX. — 81~~

~~Worces- ter porcelain.~~

~~Bristol porcelain.~~

~~642~~

~~the owner of the place. He soon realized a large fortune, though to some extent at the expense of the credit and high reputation for excellence of work which had been gained and kept up by the various members of the Dues- bury family. He gained a great deal of money by selling off the stock,~~

~~*accumulated during many years, of slightly defective pieces of porcelain, which the Duesbury family would not allow to go into the market."*~~

~~*Worcester Porcelain.—The china-works at Worcester were founded by a very remarkable man—Dr Wall, who appears to have possessed unusual skill as a physician, artist, and chemist. After some years spent In attempts to discover a fine artificial porcelain, he, in conjunction with other practical men and capitalists, started the Worces- ter Porcelain Company in 1751. The early productions of this factory are very artistic; they are chiefly copies of the fine Nanking porcelain, painted under-glaze in blues only, with very boldly decorative designs. Old Japanese ware was also successfully imitated. After that the most ambitious pieces of Worcester porcelain were mostly dull reproductions of the elaborately painted wares of Sevres and Chelsea. Transfer printing was first used at Worcester for designs on china in 1756, though it had been invented and employed some years earlier for the decoration of the Battersea enamelled copper. This process was no less injurious at Worcester than elsewhere to the artistic value of the paintings. Dr Wall died in 1776, and after that the porcelain-works passed through various hands. A great impetus was given to its success by George III., who visited the factory in 1788 and granted it the title of "The Royal Porcelain Works." The earliest marks are a '""W" or a crescent; others used are crossed arrows or varieties of sham Chinese marks (see No. 40).2 The manufacture of china at Worcester is still continued with great ac- tivity ; the fineness of the paste and the skilful processes employed leave nothing to be desired. Un- fortunately the old fault of a too realistically pictorial style of painted decoration still prevails, and an immense amount of artistic skill and patient labour is practically wasted in producing minute but not truly decorative work. Some of the modern Worcester copies of Eastern porcelain and enamels are very delicate and beautiful, and the cameo-like method of pdte sur pate de- coration is practised with great skill and often good effect.*~~

~~*Bristol porcelain is of interest as being the first hard natural porcelain made in England. As early as 1766 attempts were made by Richard Champion to make an artificial paste, with the help of the American "' unaker" or kaolinic clay, which was being used successfully at Bow, but, no results of any importance seem to have followed his experiments. The successful production of Bristol porcelain was due to the discovery in*~~

~~*Cornwall of large beds of kaolinic "' growan" stone or "china" stone, first brought into use by William Cookworthy, a Plymouth potter. This discovery and the succeeding one of similar beds in Devonshire were of great commercial importance to England, and the beds have ever since produced enor- mous quantities of material for the manufacture of fine hard porcelain both in England and abroad.*~~

~~*This china stone (see Cock, Treatise on China Clay, 1880) is not a pure kaolinic clay like that found in China, but is simply a granitic rock, partially decomposed, and soft and friable, but still retaining both quartz and mica in addition to the felspar, which*~~

~~*My the essential base of kaolin. In China the processes of nature save carried the decomposition and sorting of the different com-*~~

~~*: See Haslem, Old Derby China Factory, 1876. For fuller information, see Binns, Potting in Worcester, 1865.*~~

~~*UtH*~~

~~*Potter's marks. No. 40.*~~

~~*' POTTERY*~~

~~*CUR*~~

~~=<~~

~~*ponent parts of granite to a further stage. There the decomposed felspar has, by the action of rain and running streams, been deposited in an almost pure and finely-divided state in beds by itself, almost free from quartz and flakes of mica. In using the Cornish china stone, therefore, various natural processes have to be artificially performed before the paste is sufficiently white and pure for use; but when this is done it is little if any inferior to the Chinese kaolin. The stone when dug out is white with grey specks, and is so friable as to be easily reduced to powder between mill- stones. It is agitated with water, and run through a series of settling troughs ; thus the lighter flakes of mica, which are very*~~

~~*injurious to the paste, are washed away, and the pure felspathic kaolin is deposited free from impurities. Free silica is added in a fixed proportion ; it is usually obtained from flints, first calcined and then finely ground to powder, which are an important ingredient in the composition of both fine pottery and porcelain. The Jermyn*~~

~~*Street Museum has a complete collection of all the materials used*~~

~~*in china manufacture. '*~~

~~*William Cookworthy at once recognized the value of his discovery, and set up china-works both at Plymouth and at Bristol. No. 41 shows the mark of the Plymouth porce- lain, and No. 42 those that were used at Bristol. In 1774 he sold the Bristol fac- tory to Richard Cham- >< pion, still retaining a P large royalty on the ov china stone. Champion signed his ware with " nK No. 43. The produc- . No. 42, No. 48. No. 44. tion of Bristol porcelain Potters' marks. continued till 1781, when the works were sold to a Staffordshire company, and the manufacture of hard porce- lain was no longer carried on there. Though fine in paste and unusually transparent, the Bristol porcelain has no special artistic merits. As with most other English wares, the best in colour and design are copies, with more or less adaptation from Easternchina; some of them are very large and magnificent. The figures and flower-reliefs in biscuit porcelain are also delicate, and often cleverly modelled, with wonderful realism.*~~

~~*Some fine blue and white china was produced towards Other the end of the last century at Lowestoft, and at Liverpool china- as early as 1756 ; and many other china-works were estab- ome lished in various parts of England. In the beginning of the present century Swansea and Nantgarw in South Wales produced porcelain which was highly esteemed; but the delicate shades of difference in the paste, glazes, and styles of decoration of these numerous varieties of British porce- lain are not such as can be described in a few words ; nothing but careful examination of the wares themselves will enable the student to distinguish between the produc- tions of the different manufactories. Swansea ware bears various marks, of which No. 44 is one example.*~~

~~*Modern Methods of Manufacture.—The methods and materials Manu-*~~

~~*now employed at Sévres in the production of porcelain are in all facture. essential points much the same as those practised elsewhere (see above). 'The chief centre in England of the manufacture of pottery or nou-translucent earthenware is in Staffordshire, near the borders of Cheshire, where a large district devoted to this industry goes by the name of "The Potteries." Worcester, Lambeth, and many other places in England also turn out annually large quantities of pottery. The processes employed may be divided under the following heads : —(1) choice and mixture of clays; (2) washing and grinding the materials ; (3) throwing on the wheel and moulding; (4) kilns and methods of firing ; (5) glazes; (6) pigments and methods of decoration.*~~

~~*1. Choice and Mixture of Clays.—The extensive beds of fine Dorset Mixture or Poole clay supply the chief ingredient in the manufacture of of clays. English pottery. This is too fat a clay to be used alone, and is therefore mixed with a certain proportion of free silica to prevent it from twisting or cracking in the kiln. Another ingredient is added to the mixture for the finer wares, namely, the Cornish or Devonian china stone, a kaolinic substance used in the manufacture of porcelain (see above), which makes the paste finer in texture, whiter, harder, and less brittle. These three substances are mixed in various proportions. The following makes a fine cream-coloured ware,—Dorset clay 56 to 66 parts, silica (flint) 14 to 20, china stone 17 to 30 parts.*~~

~~*Prepara- sion of materials.*~~

~~*Glazes.*~~

~~*into shape upon his wheel.*~~

~~*PO T—*~~

~~*2. Washing and Grinding the Materials.—The Dorset or Poole clay is finely ground between mill-stones, mixed with water to the consistency of cream or slip, and then passed through fine silk sieves to strain out all grit or palpable particles. The china stone is treated in the same way, with the additional precaution of wash- ing away all the flakes of mica, which come from the decomposition of the granitic rock from which the china stone is*~~

~~*derived. The silica is obtained from flints, which are easily ground to fine powder after being heated red-hot and thrown into water. These three substances, brought into the state of fluid slip, are repeatedly pumped up from vats and passed through the sieves ; they are then easily mixed in due proportion by being pumped into graduated vats. The water is next evaporated from the fluid mixture in large boilers heated by a complicated arrangement of flues, and the com- pound is left in a soft pasty state, full of air-bubbles, which have to be got rid of by constantly turning over and beating the paste till it is quite smooth and compact, and sufficiently plastic to be thrown on the wheel. Coloured earthenware, such as that Wedg- wood used to make, was prepared by the addition of various sub- stances to the fluid slip. A black colour was given by protoxide of iron and manganese, red by red ochres or red oxide of iron, blue by oxide of cobalt, and green by protoxide of chrome. These coloured pastes are but little used now.*~~

~~*3. Throwing and Moulding.—After sufficient kneading, the clay is made up into balls of a convenient size for the thrower to mould The methods both of throwing and of moulding are the same for porcelain as for pottery (see p. 638 above). Unfortunately in England, as at Sévres, the thrown vessels are usually finished on the lathe; only the commonest kinds of ware escape this process, which takes away all life and spirit from the wheel-formed pottery. Consequently it is the cheapest and com- monest wares that now, as a rule, have most natural beauty of form and really artisticspirit. Handlesand other parts which are shaped in piece-moulds are either cast by pouring fluid slip into the plaster- moulds, or are formed by pressing and dabbing thinly-rolled pieces of soft clay into moulds made in two parts. The moulded halves of the spout or handle are fastened together while still wet, and the edges at the junction pared down and trimmed with a modelling tool. Plates, basins, and the like are formed by the combination of a mould and a shaped gauge as described above (Sévres).*~~

~~*4, Kilns and Firing.—After the vessel with its moulded handles or spout is thoroughly dry it is ready for the first firing. The usual Staffordshire biscuit-kiln is a circular building, about 18 feet in internal diameter at the base, narrowing towards the top. It is about 18 to 20 feet high, and is very carefully built of refractory fire-bricks, strengthened by rings of wrought-iron which clasp the outside. It is surrounded by eight to ten furnace*~~

~~*openings, with flues arranged to distribute the heat equally throughout the kiln. The pottery is fired in drum-shaped "saggers" or boxes, made of fire-clay, which are piled one above the other, asin the case of the Sevres porcelain. The fire is kept up from thirty to fifty hours, and is then allowed to die out. Several days are allowed for cooling before the kiln is opened and the saggers with their contents withdrawn.*~~

~~*5. Glazes.—The composition of glazes for pottery varies very much according to the custom of each manufacturer. For the most part they are transparent silicates of alumina, rendered fusible by oxide of lead; this compound is made by a mixture of Cornish china stone, flint, and white lead. The best quality of glazes have borax and some alkali added as a flux, in which case the proportion of lead is reduced. Those glazes that contain much lead are easily scratched, and can be decomposed by many acids; thus there is always a risk of lead-poisoning if vessels coated in this way are used for cooking purposes. The materials for the glaze are finely ground with water and made into a thin white fluid. The biscuit pottery is rapidly dipped into vats of the milky mixture, and suffi- cient to form the glaze adheres to the absorbent clay in an even coating all over the surface. After being dried the pottery is ready for the second firing in the glazing kiln, which is very similar in construction to the biscuit-kiln, only, as a rule, rather smaller. It is packed in clay saggers, as in the first firing, but a stronger heat is required to fuse the finer kinds of glaze than was necessary for the baking of the raw pottery. Salt-glazing has been described above (p. 632), and is only used for the coarser sorts of ware.*~~

~~*6. Methods of Decoration.—In the case of pottery decoration is usually applied on the biscuit-ware before it is glazed by the trans- fer-printing process. The required design is engraved on copper plates; the pigment is ground fine and mixed with a tenacious compound of oil and gums. An ordinary rolling press is used to print the engraved patterns in the oily pigment upon strips of tissue-paper, which are carefully applied and pressed face down-*~~

~~*Oo 2 643*~~

~~*wards on the biscuit-ware while the oil is yet wet; and so the pattern is transferred to the absorbent clay. This requires great dexterity from the*~~

~~difficulty there is in fitting the printed strips neatly on to curved surfaces. The paper is then washed off, and the printed ware is baked at a moderate temperature in what is called the "hardening" kiln, which is done before the glaze is applied, in order to drive off the oily medium with which the pig- ment was mixed. The transfer process is quite fatal to all artistic beauty in the designs ; itis hard, clumsy, and mechanical, the very opposite of a rational method for the decoration of pottery, which above all things demands freedom of hand and a spirited touch. Painted decoration which is executed by hand is now usually applied over the glaze, both because it is easier to do, not requiring go certain a touch, and also because the soft subdued colours of the under-glaze pigments do not suit the modern taste for what is bright and showy. The pigments used are necessarily oxides and salts of metals which will stand the heat of the kiln. Only those few which can stand the very high temperature of the glazing kiln can be used under the glaze. The over-glaze colours, on the other hand, only need sufficient heat to fix them on the surface of the already fired glaze; and this is often done in a very slight and imperfect way. These colours not only lose in effect from want of the softening vitreous coat through which under-glaze colours are seen, but they are also very inferior through being unprotected, and therefore easily injured by scratches and ordinary wear. In old times the value of a protecting coat of glaze was so strongly felt that even paintings on enamel, like those on Persian pottery and Italian majolica, usually had a thin vitreous glaze added over the smooth enamel, with the double object of protecting the paint- ing and increasing its soft richness of effect.~~

~~The discoveries of modern chemistry have added very greatly to Pig- the number of metallic salts which are available for the decoration ments.~~

~~of pottery. Almost every possible tint can be produced for over- glaze painting. Oxides of cobalt are used for various shades of blue and grey up to black; antimony, usually combined with lead, gives yellow; oxides of copper give deep red or brilliant blues and greens according to the proportion of oxygen that they con- tain ; oxide of chromium gives a good quiet green; manganese gives violet and even black; gold gives a fine ruby red; and uranium a rich orange. The various oxides of iron give a great variety of colours,—reds, yellows, and browns. Oxide of zinc is largely~~

~~*used, not as a pigment in itself, but in combination, to 'modify other colours. The oxides of iron, cobalt, and chromium give very stable colours, capable of bearing a very high temper- ature, and can therefore be used for under-glaze painting ; most of the others can only be employed for over-glaze work. Over-glaze pigments cannot be used alone, but require a flux to make them combine with the glaze. Oxide of lead, borax, nitre, carbonates*~~

~~*of potash or soda, and other substances are used for this purpose.*~~

~~*Literature.—English porcelain: Nightingale, Early English Porcelain, 1881 ; Binns, Potting in Worcester, 2d ed., 1877; Owen, Ceramic Art in Bristol, &c., 1873; Porter, Manufacture of Porcelain, &c., 1832; Tiffin, Chronograph of Bow, Chelsea, and. Derby Porcelain, 1875; Wallis and Bemrose, Pottery and Porce- lain of Derbyshire, 1870; Jewitt, Ceramic Art of Great Britain, 1877,—the most complete and comprehensive work.*~~

~~*In England the Jermyn Street Museum of Geology has a small but very widely-illustrative collection of pottery and the various materials used in its manufacture. The South Kensington Museum is rich in almost all kinds of medieval and modern pottery, but it is unfortunately very badly arranged. The British Museum possesses a very large number of specimens of prehistoric pottery, Greek vases, medieval English, and very choice examples of Persian and majolica wares. The other chief European museums are mostly each rich in some special department of ceramic art.*~~

~~*General Literature on Pottery.—Brongniart, Traité des Arts Céramiques, 1854 ; Jacquemart, Histoire de la Céramique, 1873; Marryat, Pottery and Porcelain, 3d ed., 1868; Birch, Ancient Pottery, 1873; Catalogue of Pottery, Museum of Geo- logy, Jermyn Street, 1876 (a very useful and well-illustrated work) ; Bonneville and Jaunez, Les Arts Céramiques, 1873 ; Brongniart and Riocreux, Musée de Sévres, 1845; Figuier, Les Merveilles de Industrie, 1873-75; Greslou, Recherches sur la Céramique, 1864; Guillery, Les Arts Céramiques, 1854; Jacquemart, Les Mer- weilles de la Céramique, 1866-69; Magnier, Manuel du Porcelainier, Faiencier, &c., 1864; Mareschal, Les Faiences Anciennes et Modernes, 1867 ; Maze, Recherches sur la Céramique, 1870 ; Ris-Paquot, Histoire de la Faience Ancienne, 1873-74 ; Salvetat, Lecons de Céramique, 1857 ; Waring, Ceramic Art in Remote Ages, 1875 ; Ziegler, Etudes Céramiques, 1850;*~~

~~*Jéinnicke, Grundriss der Keramik, Stuttgart, 1879; Champfleury, Bibliographie Céramique, Paris, 1881 (gives a very large and complete list of works on pottery and porcelain, in all languages); Soden Smith, List of Works on Pottery and Porcelain in the Kensington Art Library, 1875.*~~

~~*On Pottery and Porcelain Marks the reader may consult Barth, Porzellan-Marken und Monogramme, 1873 ; Chaffers, Handbook of Marks and Monograms, 1874; Demmin, Guide de l Amateur de Faiences et Porcelaines, 1873; Graesse, Guide dev Amateur de Porcelaine, &c., 1873 ; Palliser, The China Collector's Com- panion, 1874-75 ; Ris-Paquot, Dictionnaire des Marques et Monogrammes, 1874 ; Hooper and Phillips, Manual of Marks, 1876; Bowes, Japanese Marks, 1882. Many other lists of ceramic marks occur also in the various works mentioned under previous heads. (J. H. M.)*~~

~~*POTTSTOWN, a borough of Montgomery county, Pennsylvania, United States, is picturesquely situated on the Schuylkill river, in a plain surrounded by hills. It is 18 miles east-south-east of Reading and 40 miles west-*~~

~~*north-west of Philadelphia, at the junction of the Phil- adelphia and Reading (main line) and the Colebrookdale | Railroads, and has communication also by the Schuylkill*~~

~~*Valley branch of the Pennsylvania Railroad. There are*~~

~~*Museums illustrative of the General History of Pottery—The Musée Céramique Mu- of Sévres is the best and most complete for the student of all kinds of pottery. seyms,*~~

~~*644*~~

~~*in and near Pottstown six rolling-mills, two blast-furnaces, three iron and brass foundries, two nail-factories, and large bridge works, besides minor industries. The population of Pottstown was 4125 in 1870, and 5305 in 1880.*~~

~~*POTTSVILLE, a city of the United States, capital of Schuylkill county, Pennsylvania, lies 35 miles north-west of Reading, on the north side of the Schuylkill river, in the gap by which it breaks through Sharp Mountain. It is the terminus of the main line of the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad, and the great emporium of the Schuyl- kill coal region, which extends north and east and west, and has an annual yield of about 6,000,000 tons. Fur- naces, rolling-mills, machine-shops, planing-mills, a spike- mill, a pottery, &c., are among the industrial establish- ments; and the public institutions include a court-house, a jail, a town-hall, a union hall, an opera-house, a children's home, a lyceum, and a free reading-room. The German and Welsh elements in the population are strong enough to be represented each by several churches. Pottsville as a city dates from 1825. In 1850 it had 7515 inhabitants, 12,384 in 1870, and 13,253 in 1880.*~~

~~*POUGHKEEPSIE, a city of the United States, capital of Duchess county, New York, lies on the east bank of the Hudson river, 73 miles north of New York. It is on the New York Central and Hudson River Railroad, and communicates with the New York, West Shore, and Buffalo Railway by ferry from Highland, and with the Hartford and Connecticut Western Railroad by the Poughkeepsie, Hartford, and Boston Railroad (37 miles). The site con- sists for the most part of a tableland which rises from 150 to 200 feet above the river, and is backed towards the east by College Hill, 300 feet in height. Well laid out with regular and shaded streets and abundantly sup- plied with water (pumped from the river to a reservoir on College Hill), Poughkeepsie is a pleasant place of resid-*~~

~~*ence, and it enjoys a special reputation for its educational*~~

~~*institutions. Vassar College (2 miles east of the city), the earliest and one of the greatest women's colleges in the world, was founded and endowed in 1861 by Matthew Vassar, a wealthy Poughkeepsie brewer; in 1884 it had 300 students, and possessed a library of 14,150 volumes, together with collections of water-colours and of American birds, both of great value, an astronomical observatory, and a chemical laboratory. Two miles north of the city, on an eminence above the Hudson, stands the Hudson River State Hospital for the Insane, an immense building erected between 1867 and 1871, with 300 acres of ground attached. Within the city are an opera-*~~

~~house, a free public library, a large young men's Christian association building with a free reading-room, St Barnabas and Vassar Brothers Hospital, and homes for aged men and women. It also contains iron-furnaces, breweries, and manufactories of shoes, glass, mowing machines, pottery, hardware, and various minor industries, The population was 14,726 in 1860, 20,080 in 1870, and 20,207 in 1880.~~

~~Poughkeepsie (forty-two different spellings of the name are said to be found in old records) was settled by the Dutch about 1698- 1700. Two sessions of the State legislature were held in the place in 1777 and 1778; the former gave assent to the articles of con- federation, and the latter ratified the national constitution. The city charter dates from 1854.~~

~~POULPE, or Octopus. See CurruE-risH, vol. vi. p. 735, and Moruusca, vol. xvi. p. 669 sg.~~

~~POULTRY. The term "poultry" (Fr. oiseaum de basse cour) is usually regarded as including the whole of the domesticated birds reclaimed by man for the sake of their flesh and their eggs.!_ The most important are the Common Fowl, which is remarkable as having no distinctive English~~

~~1 Although pigeons are not generally included among poultry, yet, on account of their close connexion, it has been deemed advisable to add a short section on them to this article.~~

~~POT—POU~~

~~name, the Turkey, and the Guinea-fowl, all members of the family of birds known as Phasiamdez, 'The Pheasants them- selves, belonging to the restricted genus Phasianus, are not capable of being domesticated, and the Peacock is to be regarded rather as an ornamental than as a poultry bird. The aquatic birds which are strictly entitled to be con- sidered domesticated poultry are the Duck and the Goose, two species of the latter having been perfectly reclaimed.~~

~~The common fowl belongs to the restricted genus Gallus, of which four wild species are known,—the Bankiva Jungle fowl (G. ferrugineus), the Sonnerat Jungle fowl (G. sonnerati), the Ceylon Jungle fowl (G. stanleyi), and the~~

~~*Forked-tail Jungle fowl (G@. furcatus). The range of these species is given under Fow. (vol. ix. pp. 491-492). The origin of the domesticated breeds is ascribed by Dar- win, Blyth, and other naturalists to the Bankiva fowl, much stress being laid on the comparative want of fer- tility in the hybrids produced between this species or the domesticated breeds and the other three forms of wild Galli, but it is probable that this want of fertility was due in great part to the unnatural conditions under whicli the parent and offspring were placed, as, if bred under more natural conditions, there is no difficulty in rearing these hybrids or in breeding from them with the domesticated varieties. The number of distinctive breeds of the domesti- cated fowl has very greatly increased of late years, owing to the emulation excited by poultry shows. Darwin, in his Variation of Animals, &c., under Domestication, enumer- ated thirteen principal breeds with numerous sub- varieties, but several very distinctive races have come into notice during the last ten years, varieties having been formed by careful selection that may be relied on for reproducing their own distinctive peculiarities in the descendants, and hence constituting what are regarded by fanciers as pure breeds. The classification of the known varieties is not an easy task; each is capable of interbreeding with every other, and so great an intermixture of local races has taken place that the arrangement of the breeds is as difficult in poultry as in dogs.*~~

~~*Game Fowls.—Game fowls differ less from the wild Bankiva than any other variety; they are, however, con- siderably larger, and carry the tail more erect than the wild birds. In some parts of India sportsmen find it not easy to distinguish between the wild and the domesticated birds. Game fowls in England have been long cultivated not only as useful poultry but on account of their com- bative tendencies, which have become so intensified by care- ful selection that they have extended even to the other sex, and hens have been not unfrequently fought in the cock- pit. The comb in the Game is single, the beak massive, the spurs strong and very sharp. There is a tendency towards the assumption of the female plumage by the males, and distinct breeds of '"henny" Game are known. The peculiarity is not associated with any loss of com- bativeness, the birds being highly valued. for their courage and endurance in the pit. Economically considered, Game are highly esteemed for the table on account of their plump- ness, the amount of the breast-meat, owing to the size of the pectoral muscles, being*~~

very great, from which cause, combined with their hardihood, they are most valuable for crossing with other breeds, as the Dorking. English-bred Game have been reared of many varieties of colour, retain- ing in all cases their distinctive peculiarities of form. Within the last few years Game fowls have been reduced in size by selective breeding, and the exceedingly minute Game bantams have been produced with the distinguishing characters of the larger breed. During the last twenty years Game fowls have been considerably altered in form, owing to the influence of poultry shows,—the legs and necks having been greatly lengthened. This has been

accomplished by careful selection in breeding and not by crossing with any other breed.

Malayan Fowls.—The Malayan type has been long recog- nized as of Eastern origin. The birds are of large size, close and scant in plumage, with very long legs and necks. The Gallus giganteus of Temminck, which he regarded erroneously as a distinct species, belonged to this group, as did the Kulm fowl and the Grey Chittagong of the United States. The Malays are of savage disposition. Several smaller breeds of a somewhat similar type are known as Indian Game; some of these, as the Aseels, are of indomitable courage. Until the arrival of the so-called Cochin breeds from the north of China, Malays were the largest fowls known in Europe and were employed to impart size to other varieties by crossing.

Cochins.—This type, which must be regarded as in- cluding not only the birds generally so called but, also the Brahmas and Langshans, is of very large size, some of the males reaching the great weight of 16 or 17 Ib. They are distinguished by a profusion of downy plumage, with small wings and tails; they are incapable of long flight, and the pectoral muscles are consequently but feebly developed. The Cochins originally imported from Shanghai were of several colours; some of the grey birds in America were crossed with the grey Chittagong, the Brahmas being the result of the cross, and they have been long since estab- lished as a pure breed, faithfully reproducing their own type. The Langshans are a more recent importation ; since their introduction they have been bred by careful selection for eating, and have fuller breasts and less abun- dant plumage than the older-known

~~*Cochins and Brahmas. Recently a sub-variety of Cochin has been raised in America by crossing with a cuckoo-coloured breed long known as Dominiques. These have become fashionable under the name.of Plymouth Rocks. They are cuckoo-coloured, viz., each feather is marked with transverse grey stripes on a lighter ground, and, as in all cuckoo-coloured breeds, the cocks are of the same colour as the hens; their legs are not feathered, and the plumage is not so loose as that of the more typical Cochins. They are admirable layers, but the intense yellow of the skin lessens their value for the table.*~~

~~*Spanish.—The Spanish or Mediterranean type is well marked. 'The birds are of moderate size, with large single erect combs and white ear-lobes. In the black Spanish the whiteness of the ear-lobe extends over the face, and its size has been so greatly developed by cultivation that in some specimens it is 6 or 7 inches in length and several in breadth. Closely related to the Spanish, differing only in colour of plumage and extent of white face and ear- lobe, are the white and brown Leghorns, the slaty-blue Andalusians, the black Minorcas, &c. All are non-incu- bators, the desire to sit having been lost in the tendency to the increased production of eggs, which has been de- veloped by the persistent and long-continued selection of the most fertile layers.*~~

~~*Hamburghs—The Hamburghs, erroneously so called from a name given them in the classification adopted at the early Birmingham shows, are chiefly breeds of English origin. They have double combs and small white ear- lobes. There are various sub-varieties. Those with a dark crescent-like mark on the end of each feather of the hen are termed Spangled Hamburghs. Others are of uniform black plumage. A somewhat similar breed of smaller size, with each feather of the hens marked with trans- verse bands of black on a white or bay ground, is termed Pencilled Hamburghs ; they were formerly known as Dutch everyday Layers. These breeds are all non-sitters and lay a remarkably large number of eggs.*~~

~~*Crested Fowls.—The crested breeds have long been culti-*~~

~~*vated on the Continent and are admirably delineated in the pictures by Hondekoeter and other early Dutch artists. In Great Britain they are erroneously termed Polish. The development of the feathered crest is accompanied by a great diminution in the size of the comb, which is some- times entirely wanting. The wattles also are absent in some breeds, their place being occupied by a large tuft of feathers, forming what is termed the "beard." In all the crested breeds there is a remarkable alteration of the cranium, the anterior part of the skull forming a prominent hollow tuberosity which contains a very large part of the brain. This portion of the brain-case is rarely entirely ossified. There are numerous sub-varieties of crested fowls. The best-known breeds in England are the spangled, with a dark mark at the end of each feather. This mark often assumes a crescent shape, the horns of the crescent sometimes running up each margin of the feather so as to form a black border ; feathers so marked are termed "laced" by poultry-fanciers. There are also white Polish and a buff variety. A very distinct sub-variety is the black breed with a white crest on the head and large pen- dent wattles. A variety with the arrangement of these colours reversed was formerly known, but it has now be- come extinct. Some of the larger breeds of the west of Europe are closely related to the Polish. The Créve-cceur is a crested breed of uniform black colour; it is of large size and of great value for the table and for egg-produc- tion. The Houdan is a black and white breed of very similar character. In some breeds the form of the body and structure of bones of the face closely resemble those of the Polish, but there is an absence of the feathered crest, the crescent-shaped comb becoming more largely deve- loped ; such are those known as Guelders, Bredas, and La Fléche, the latter being the best French fowl for eating. A small white-crested variety, profusely feathered on the legs, was received some twenty years since (1864) from Turkey ; they are now known as Sultans. The crested breeds are all non-incubating.*~~

~~*Dorkings.—The Dorking type includes fowls that have for many generations been bred for the supply of the London markets. They are all fleshy on the breast and of fine quality. The Dorkings have an extra toe, a mon- strosity which leads to disease of the feet. The Surrey and Sussex fowls are four-toed. The coloured Dorkings were greatly increased in size some few years since by crossing with an Indian breed of the Malay type. The birds of the Dorking type are fair layers and good sitters. They are rather*~~

~~delicate in constitution and are chiefly bred in the south of England. Crossed with the Game breed they furnish a hardy fowl, plumper than the Dorking and larger than the Game, which is of unsurpassed excellence for the table. Mating a Dorking cock with large Game hens is found to be the most advantageous.~~

~~Silk Fowls.—These constitute a singular variety, in which the barbs of the feathers are not connected by barbules and the entire plumage has a loose fibrous appearance ; similar variations are found amongst other species of birds, but are soon lost in a wild state. The silk fowl best known is that in which the plumage is perfectly white, whilst the skin, cellular tissue between the muscles, and the periosteum covering the bones are a deep blue-black, the comb and wattles being a dark leaden blue. The birds are admir- able sitters and mothers, and are much valued for rear- ing pheasants, being of somewhat small size. Though of remarkable appearance when cooked, they are of good quality. In crosses with other breeds the silky character of the plumage is generally lost, but the dark skin and intermuscular cellular tissue remain and greatly lessen the value of the birds in the market.~~

~~Frizeled fowls are birds in which each feather curls out-~~

~~wards away from the body. They are common in India, but are not adapted to the climate of Britain, as the plum- age offers an imperfect protection against wet.~~

~~Rumpless fowls are those in which the coccygeal vertebree are absent; there is consequently no tail. By crossing, rumpless breeds of any variety may be produced. They are not desirable to cultivate, as, from the structural peculi- arities, the eggs are very apt to escape being fertilized.~~

~~Dumpies or Creepers are birds in which the bones of the legs are so short that their progression 1s consider- ably interfered with. The best known are the Scotch dumpies.~~

~~Long-tailed fowls, under the various names of Yokohama or Phoenix fowls, or Shinotawaro fowls, are singular varieties recently introduced from~~

~~*Japan, in which the sickle-feathers of the tail are 6 or 7 feet long. In Japan they are said to assume a much greater length. One bird in the museum at Tokio is stated to have sickle-feathers 17 feet long ; but examination is not permitted. In other respects the fowls are not peculiar, resembling the birds of the Game type.*~~

~~*Bantam.—This term is applied to fowls of a diminutive size without any reference to the particular breed. By careful selection and crossing with small specimens any variety can be reduced to the desired size. The Chinese had in the summer palace at Peking small Cochins weigh- ing not more than 1 tb each. Game bantams of less size have been established during the past twenty-five years. The Malays have been reduced to bantam size within a very few years, as have the crested breeds. The Japanese have long possessed a dwarf breed with enormous tail and comb, and with very short legs. One of the most artificial breeds is the Sebright bantam, named after its originator. This bird has the laced or marginal feather of the Polish combined with the absence of male plumage in the cocks, so that it may be described as a hen-feathered breed with laced plumage. When perfect in marking it is of singular beauty, but is not remarkable for fertility.*~~

~~*In breeding the domestic fowl for useful purposes it is desirable to follow toa greater extent than is usual the natural habits and instincts of the bird. The wild fowl is a resident in forests, coming out to feed in the open; in addition to green vegetables and fruit it lives on grain, seeds, worms, grubs, and insects, which it obtains by scratching in the soil; it roosts in the higher branches of trees, and the hen deposits her eggs on the ground, usually in a concealed situation, laying one egg every other day until the number is com- pleted, when she sits for twenty-one days. On the chickens being hatched they do not leave the nest for twenty-four or thirty hours, being nourished by the absorption of the yolk into the intestinal canal. When they are sufficiently strong to run after the hen she takes them in search of food, which she obtains by scratching in the ground or amongst decaying vegetable matter.*~~

~~*A domesticated hen allowed to make her own nest in a hedge or coppice always brings out a much larger, stronger, and healthier brood than one that sits in the dry close atmosphere of a hen-house. Wherever the nest is*~~

~~*placed it should always be made of damp earth so as to supply the requisite moisture and cool the under surface of the eggs as compared with the upper. When hatched the chicken should not be removed for twenty-four hours, feeding not being required. The first food should be egg and milk—equal parts— beaten together and heated until it sets into a soft mass; this may be given with a little canary seed for the first day or two, or millet or wheat ; newly-ground sweet oatmeal is good, but pungent rancid meal very injurious. The chickens do much better if the hen is allowed to scratch for them than when she is shut upinacoop. If a coop must be used it should be so constructed as to include a plot of grass and be moved daily. The perches in a hen-house should be on one level, or the fowls fight for the highest. All should be low, so that in flying down the breast-bone and feet may not be injured by coming violently in contact with the ground.*~~

~~*Keeping poultry without an extended range in which they can obtain a large portion of their own food is not desirable, nor has the establishment of poultry-farms, in which large numbers of birds are kept in one locality, ever under any conditions been attended with success. In all cases in which a large number of fowls are congre- gated together the ground becomes contaminated by the excrement of the birds ; the food is eaten off the soiled surface ; disease breaks*~~

~~*POULTE Y*~~

~~*out amongst the adults ; and rearing chickens successfully is out of the question. There are no poultry-farms in France, the eggs and chickens being produced by the peasant-proprietors. In England many poultry-farms have been started, but none have ever proved successful. Poultry-rearing is an industry adapted to the small holder, to the rearer for home consumption, or as an adjunct to the work of a large farm, but as an industry of its own it is never likely to be worked to advantage. There is no difficulty whatever in hatching any number of chickens, but when the young birds are crowded together and are living on tainted soil they invariably be- come diseased and die with extreme rapidity. The conditions of a crowded poultry-run necessarily reseinble those of an army encamped without due sanitary precautions, which cannot be adopted in the case of the birds. The*~~

~~*inevitable result is that they perish of diseases of a typhoid character which are quite beyond the power of the owners to control or alleviate.*~~

~~*Turkeys.—The origin of the domesticated turkey is probably of a composite character ; by Mr Gould and other naturalists this bird is generally regarded as having been derived from the Mexican species Meleagris mexicana ; but this has recently been crossed with the North-American M. gallo-pavo, with great advantage as to size and hardi- hood. The varieties of the turkey differ chiefly as to colour. The principal English breeds are the bronze or Cambridgeshire, the black or Norfolk, the fawn, and the white. Of these the first, especially when crossed with the American, is the largest and most desirable.*~~

~~*Turkeys are not so extensively raised in Great Britain as in France, from a prevalent opinion that they are very delicate and difficult to rear ; this idea arises in great part from errors in their management and feeding. The chicks, when thatched after twenty-eight days' incubation, should be left undisturbed for twenty-four or thirty hours, during which time they are digesting the yolk that is absorbed into the intestinal canal at birth. No attempt should be made to cram them; their first food should consist of sweet fresh meal, soft custard made with equal parts of egg and milk set by a gentle heat, and, above all, abun- dance of some bitter milky herb, as dandelion, or, much better, lettuce running to seed, on which they can be reared successfully with very little food of any other de- scription. The young turkeys progress much better if the hen has the range of a small enclosure from the first than if she is confined to a coop; thus reared they are much hardier than when cooped and corn-fed, and not so susceptible to injury from slight showers; but a damp locality should be avoided. Turkey-hens are most per- severing sitters, and are employed in France to hatch successions of sittings of hens' eggs. Turkeys can often be most advantageously reared by cottagers, as one or two hens only can be kept, one visit to the male being sufficient to fertilize the entire batch of eggs. The young turkeys find a larger proportion of their own food than fowls, and with a good free range cost but little until they are ready for fattening for the table. In places where the opportunity serves they may be allowed to roost in the trees with great advantage. Some wild flocks treated like*~~

~~*pheasants are to be found in several of the large parks in Scotland as well as in England.*~~

~~*Guinea-fowls.—The Common Guinea-fowl (Vumida meleagris) is a native of eastern Africa, from whence it has been carried to many parts of the world, in some of which, as the West Indian Islands, it has become wild. It has also been reared in a half-wild state in many English preserves ; under these conditions it flourishes exceedingly, but has the disadvantage of driving away the pheasants. In any dry locality guinea-fowls may be successfully reared, provided they have a good range and trees in which they can roost. The hen lays an abundance of eggs, which are generally hidden. The birds are useful as furnishing a supply of poultry for the table in the interval that ensues between the time when game are out of season and that before chickens arrive at maturity. On a dry, sandy,*~~

~~*and chalky soil and in a warm situation they are reared with ease, but are quite unsuited to damp cold localities. The continued vociferation of the hen-birds renders their maintenance near a house very objectionable, as the cry is continued throughout great part of the night. Several variations of colour exist, but they do not require any detailed description.*~~

~~*Ducks.—All the varieties of the domesticated duck are descended from the Common Mallard or Wild Duck, Anas 'boschas, a species which, though timid in its wild state, is easily domesticated, and suffers changes of form and colour in a few generations. The most important breeds are—the Rouen, which, retaining the colour of the original species, grows toa large size; the Aylesbury, a large white breed with an expanded lemon-coloured bill; the Pekin, a white breed with a pale yellowish tint in the plumage, and a very bright orange bill; two breeds which are entirely black. The smaller of these, which has been bred down to a very diminutive size, is remarkable for the extreme lustre of its feathers and the fact that its eggs are covered with a dark black pigment, which becomes less in quantity as each suc-cessive egg is deposited. It is known by the equally absurd names of East Indian, Labrador, or Buenos Ayres duck. The larger black variety, the Cayuga duck, has been recently introduced into England. Decoy or call ducks are small breeds of a very loquacious character, which were*~~

~~*originally bred for the purpose of attracting the wild birds to the decoys. Some are of the natural colour, others are white. Amongst the less known breeds are the Duclair ducks of France, evidently the result of crossing white and coloured varieties. Among the breeds differing in structure may be mentioned the Penguin duck, so called from its erect attitude, the Hook-billed and the Tufted ducks, &c., but these are not of practical importance. For table and mar- ket purposes no breed surpasses the Aylesbury ; its large size, great prolificacy, early maturity, and white skin and plumage cause it to be reared in immense numbers for the London markets. By good feeding the ducks are caused to lay in the winter months, when the eggs are hatched under Cochin or Brahma hens, the young ducklings being reared in artificially-warmed buildings or in the labourers' cottages ; they are fed most liberally on soft food, soaked grits, boiled rice with tallow-melters' greaves, and in ten or twelve weeks are fit for the market; if killed before moulting their quills, which they do when about twelve weeks old, they are heavier than afterwards and much better eating. When ducklings are required for the early spring markets the old birds must be fed most freely to cause the production of eggs in cold weather, corn being given in vessels of water, and the birds must be shut up at night, or the eggs will be laid in the water, where they sink and become putrid. Duck-rearing is a very profitable industry, very high prices being paid for ducklings in the early months of the year. The so-called Muscovy duck is a Brazilian species, Cairina moschata, which is not reared for the market, although the young birds are edible. The drake not unfrequently mates with the common duck, and large but sterile hybrids are the result.*~~

~~*Geese.—The domestic goose of Europe is undoubtedly the descendant of the migratory Grey Lag Goose, Anser cinereus, from which it differs chiefly by its increased size. Although domesticated since the time of the Romans, it has not been subject to much variation. The most im- portant breeds are the large grey variety known as the Toulouse, the white breed known as the Embden, and the common variety frequently marked with dark feathers on the back, and hence termed "saddlebacks." There has al$o been introduced from the Crimea since the Russian war a variety in which the feathers are singularly elongated, and even curled and twisted ; this-breed, which is termed*~~

~~the Sebastopol, is of small size and more important as a fanciers' breed than from a practical point of view. In some countries a second species is domesticated ; it is usually termed the Chinese, knob-fronted, or swan goose, Anser cygnoides. Though perfectly distinct as a species, having a different number of vertebrae in the neck and a loud clanging voice, it breeds freely with the common goose, and the hybrids produced are perfectly fertile, the late Mr Blyth asserting that over a large tract of country in the East no other geese except these cross-breds are ever seen. Geese are much more exclusively vegetable-feeders than ducks, and can only be kept to profit where they can obtain a large proportion of their food by grazing. The old birds should not be killed off, as they continue fertile to a great age. Geese are readily fattened on oats thrown into water, and the young, when brought rapidly forward for the markets, afford a very good profit. The Chinese, if well fed, lay at a much earlier date than the common species, and, if their eggs are hatched under large Cochin hens, giving three or four to each bird, the young are ready for the table at a very early period. The nest, as in all cases of ground-nesting birds, should be made on the earth and not in boxes, which become too dry and over-heated. In breeding for the market or for the sake of profit, the very large exhibition birds should be avoided, as many are barren from over-fatness, and none are so prolific as birds of fair average size.~~

~~In this article the Pea-fowl (see Pracock, vol. xviii. p. 443) has not been included, as, although long since domes- ticated, it is to be regarded rather as an ornamental than as a useful bird, and in congenial localities in which it can avail itself of the shelter of trees it requires no manage- ment whatever beyond feeding, nor should the slightest interference with the sitting hen be practised.~~

~~Pigeons.—All the different breeds of pigeons which are known to the fancier have descended from the wild blue Rock-dove, Columba livia, and return to the coloration and form of the wild original if allowed to interbreed without interference. When reared as articles of food pigeons are generally treated most disadvantageously ; with due care and proper management six or seven couples of young can be raised from each old pair during the year,~~

~~*and a continuous supply of young birds for the table can be depended on. The ordinary pigeons' houses are most objectionable, the birds being exposed to rain and extremes of temperature at all seasons. To be reared successfully pigeons should be housed in a room or loft, with shelves 9 or 10 inches in width running round the walls about 10 inches apart ; each shelf should be divided into com- partments not less than 16 inches long; this arrangement gives room for a nest at each end and enables the old birds to go to nest again before the young are able to fly. If coarse earthen saucers or nest-pans are used the young will be kept out of the dung, which is ejected over the sides and can be easily removed. 'They are first fed with a secretion from the crops of the parents, and afterwards with dis- gorged corn; when required for the table they should be killed before the old birds cease to feed them, as when they begin to feed themselves they lose weight, become thin, and are much less marketable. To obtain a con- tinuous supply of young pigeons the old birds must be well fed with grain and pulse ; clean water and a supply of old mortar rubbish mixed with salt should be always access- ible; the loft and nest should be kept clean and well ventilated, and the birds have free access to the open air. The breed should be of fair size, the blue rocks being too small to be of full market value as dead birds, though in great request for pigeon-shooting, and, unless a consider- able number are kept so as to prevent close interbreeding, some birds from other lofts should be introduced occasion-*~~

~~*ally. The numerous fancy breeds and those employed for conveying messages (see vol. xiii. p. 159 and p. 581 supra) do not fall within the scope of this article. (Ww. B. T.) POUND, an enclosure in which cattle or other animals found straying are retained until they are redeemed by the owners, or when taken in distraint until replevined, such retention being in the nature of a pledge or security to compel the performance of satisfaction for debt or damage done. A pound belongs to the township or village*~~

~~*and should be kept in repair by the parish. The pound-*~~

~~*keeper is obliged to receive everything offered to his custody and is not answerable if the thing offered be ille- gally impounded. By the statute 1 and 2 Phil. and Mary c, 12 (1554), no distress of cattle can be driven out of*~~

~~*the hundred where taken unless to a pound within 3 miles of the place of seizure. Where cattle are impounded the impounder is bound to supply them with sufficient food and water (12 and 13 Vict. c. 92, and 17 and 18 Vict. c. 60); any person, moreover, is authorized to enter a place where animals are impounded without food and water more than twelve hours and supply them without being liable to an action for such entry, and the cost of such food is to be paid by the owner of the animal before itis removed. The statute 2 Will. and Mary, sess. 1 c. 5 (1690), gives treble damages and costs against persons guilty of pound breach ; and by 6 and 7 Vict. c. 30 (1843) persons releasing or attempting to release cattle impounded or damaging any pound are liable to a fine not exceeding £5, awardable to the person on whose behalf the cattle were distrained, with imprisonment with hard labour not exceeding three months in default. In the old law books a distinction is drawn between a common pound, an open pound, and a close pound; these terms have now, however, lost much of, if not all, their significance. By statute 11 Geo. II. c. 19 (1738), which was passed for the benefit of landlords, any person distraining for rent may turn any part of the premises upon which a distress is taken into a pound pro hac vice for securing of such distress.*~~

~~*POUSHKIN, ALEXANDER (1799-1837), the most cele- brated of Russian poets, was born at Moscow, 7th June 1799. He belonged to an ancient family of boyars, and in a clever poem, many of the sallies of which were too trenchant to pass the censorship, he has sketched some of the more important of his progenitors.*~~

~~*In 1811 the poet entered the newly-founded lyceum of Tzarskoe Selo, situated near St Petersburg. To his stay in this college Poushkin has alluded in many of his poems. On quitting the lyceum in 1817 he was attached to the ministry of foreign affairs, and in this year he began the composition of his Ruslan and Lyudmila, a poem which was completed in 1820. The scene is laid at Kieff, in the time of Vladimir, the "bright sun" of the old Russian legends. Meanwhile Poushkin mixed in all the gayest society of the capital, and it seemed as if he would turn out a mere man of fashion instead of a poet. But an event occurred which, however disastrous it might appear to him at first sight, was fraught with the happiest consequences to his muse. A very daring Ode to Liberty written by him had been circulated in*~~

~~*manuscript in St Petersburg. This production having been brought to the notice of the governor, the young author only escaped a journey to Siberia by accepting an official position at Kishineff in Bessarabia, in southern Russia. Here he found himself surrounded by a world of new associations. If we follow the chronological order of his poems, we can trace with what enthusiasm he greeted the ever-changing prospects*~~

~~*POU—POU*~~

~~*of the sea and the regions of the Danube and the Crimea. In some elegant lines he sang the Fountain of Bakhchisaraa, the old palace of the khans near Simpheropol. This foun- tain and the legend connected with it he afterwards made the subject of a longer poem.*~~

~~*At this time Poushkin was, or affected to be, overpowered by the Byronic "Weltschmerz." Having visited the baths of the Caucasus for the re-establishment of his health in 1822, he felt the inspiration of its magnificent scenery, and composed his next production of any considerable length, The Prisoner of the Caucasus, narrating the story of the love of a Circassian girl for a youthful Russian officer who has been taken prisoner. This was followed by the Foun- tain of Bakhchisarat, which tells of the detention of a young Polish captive, a Countess Potocka, in the palace of the khans of the Crimea. About the same time he composed some interesting lines on Ovid, whose place of banishment, Tomi, was not far distant. To this period belongs also the Ode to Napoleon, which is far inferior to the fine poems of Byron and Manzoni, or indeed of Lermontoff, on the same subject. In the Lay concerning the Wise Oleg we see how the influence of Karamzin's History had led the Russians to take a greater interest in the early records of their country. The next long poem was the Gipsves (Tzuigani), an Oriental tale of love and vengeance, in which Poushkin has admir- ably delineated these nomads, whose strange mode of life fascinated him. During his stay in southern Russia he allowed himself to get mixed up with the secret societies then rife throughout the country. He also became em- broiled with his chief, Count Vorontzoff, who sent him to report upon the damages which had been committed by locusts in the southern part of Bessarabia. Poushkin took this as a premeditated insult, and sent in his resignation ; and Count Vorontzoff in his official report requested the*~~

~~*Government to remove the poet, "as he was surrounded by a society of political and literary fanatics, whose praises might turn his head and make him believe that he was a great writer, whereas he was only a feeble imitator of Lord Byron, an original not much to be commended." The poet quitted Odessa in 1824, and on leaving wrote a fine Ode to the Sea. Before the close of the year he had returned to his father's seat at Mikhailovskoe, near Pskoff, where he soon became embroiled with his relatives, but grew more at ease when the veteran, who led the life of reckless expenditure of the old-fashioned Russian boyar, betook himself to the capital. The father survived his celebrated son, and it was to him that Zhukovski addressed a pathetic letter, giving him an account of his death. His mother died a year before her son; and Poushkin, when choosing a burial-place for her, marked out a spot for himself and expressed a presentiment that he had not long to live. He had now involved himself in trouble on all sides ; for so obnoxious had he become to the authorities even during his retreat in the country that he was put under the supervision of the governor, the marshal of the nobility, and the archimandrite of the neighbouring mon- astery of Svyatogorski. In his retirement he devoted a great deal of time to the study of the old Russian popular poetry, the buzlinas, of which he became a great admirer. Recollections of Byron and André Chenier gave the inspira- tion to some fine lines consecrated to the latter, in which Poushkin appeared more conservative than was his wont, and wrote in a spirit antagonistic to the French Revolution. In 1825 he published his tragedy Boris Godunof, a bold effort to imitate the style of Shakespeare. Up to this time the traditions of the Russian stage, such as it was, had been French. Plays of all kinds had appeared,—transla- tions of Moliére, Corneille, and Racine, or adaptations of them, and even glimpses of Shakespeare conveyed through the medium of the paltry versions of Ducis.*~~

~~*POU—*~~

~~*In 1825 the unfortunate conspiracy of the Dekabrists broke out, the ostensible aim of which was to defend the claims of the grand-duke Constantine against his brother Nicholas, but the real purpose was to set up a republican form of government in Russia, for which the country was not by any means prepared. Many of the conspirators were personal friends of Poushkin, especially Kiichelbecker and Pustchin. The poet himself was to a*~~

~~*certain extent compromised, but he succeeded in getting to his house at Mikhailovskoe and burning all the papers which might have been prejudicial to him. He had resolved to go to St Petersburg, possibly to throw in his lot with his friends there, but was stopped by what are considered portents by the Russian people. As soon as he had left the gates of his house he met a priest, and he had not gone a verst*~~

~~*before three hares crossed his path. These were such bad*~~

~~*omens that there was nothing for him to do, as a genuine Russian and at all times a superstitious man, but to return home at once. Through influential friends he succeeded in making his peace with the emperor, to whom he was presented at Moscow soon after his coronation. The story goes that Nicholas said to Count Bludoff on the same evening, "'I have just been conversing with the most witty man in Russia." In 1828 appeared Poltava, a spirited narrative poem, in which the expedition of Charles XII. against Peter and the treachery of the hetman Mazeppa were described. The best part of the poem is the picture of the battle itself, where the colours are laid on very boldly. In 1829 Poushkin again visited the Caucasus, on this occasion accompanying the expedition of Prince Paskewitch. He wrote a pleasing account of the tour ; 'many of the short lyrical pieces suggested by the scenery and associations of his visit are delightful, especially the lines on the Don and the Caucasus. In 1831 Poushkin married Mademoiselle Natalia Goncharoff, and in the fol- — lowing year was again attached to the ministry of foreign affairs, with a salary of 5000 roubles. He now busied himself with an historical work, an account of the revolt of the Cossack Pugacheff, who almost overthrew the empire of Catherine and was executed at Moscow in the latter part of the 18th century. While engaged upon this he wrote The Captain's Daughter, one of the best of his prose works. In 1832 was completed the poem Mugene Onyegin, in which the author attempted a completely new style, moulding his production upon the lighter sketches of Byron in the Italian manner. The poem is, on the whole, very successful. The metre is graceful and sprightlyand well adapted for serio-comic verse. The characters of Lenski, Onyegin, Tatiana, and Olga are drawn with a vigorous hand, and each is a type. No one can accuse Poushkin of want of nationalism in this poem: it is Russian in every fibre. In 1837 the poet, who had been long growing in literary reputation, fell mortally wounded in a*~~

~~*duel with Baron George Heckeren d'Anthés, the adopted son of the Dutch minister then resident at the court of St Petersburg. D'Anthés, a vain and frivolous young man, had married a sister of the poet's wife. Notwithstanding this he aroused Poushkin's jealousy by some attentions which he paid Natalia; but the grounds for the poet's anger, it must be confessed, do not appear very great. Poushkin died, after two days' suffering, on the afternoon of Friday, 10th February. D'Anthés was tried by court-martial and expelled the country. In the year 1880 a statue of the poet was erected at the Tver Barrier at Moscow, and fétes were held in his honour, on which occasion many interest- ing memorials of him were exhibited to his admiring countrymen and a few foreigners who had congregated for the festivities. The poet left four children; his widow was afterwards married to an officer in the army named Lanskoi ; she died in 1863.*~~

~~*POU 649*~~

~~*Poushkin remains as yet the greatest poet whom Russia has produced. The most celebrated names before him were those of Lomonosoff and Derzhavin ; the former was a composer of merely scholastic verses, and the latter, in spite of great merits, was too much wedded to the pedantries of the classical school. Since Poush- kin's death, Lermontoff and Nekrasoff have appeared, both distinctly writers of genius, but they are confessedly inferior to him. His poetical tales are spirited and full of dramatic power. The influence of Byron is undoubtedly seen in them, but they are not imitations, still less is anything in them plagiarized. Boris Godunoff is a fine tragedy ; on the whole HLugene Onyegin must be considered Poushkin's masterpiece. Here we have a great variety of styles— satire, pathos, and humour mixed together. The character-paint- ing is good, and the descriptions of scenery introduced faithful to nature. The poem in many places reminds us of Byron, who him- self in his mixture of tlie pathetic and the huinorous was a disciple of the Italian school. Poushkin also wrote a great many lyrical pieces. Interspersed among the poet's minor works will be found many epigrams, but some of the best composed by him were not so fortunate as to pass the censorship, and must be read in a supple- mentary volume published at Berlin. As a prose writer Poushkin has considerable merits. Besides his History of the Revolt of Pugacheff, which is perhaps too much of a*~~

~~compilation, he pub- lished a small volume of tales under the nom de plume of Ivan Byelkin. These all show considerable dramatic power ; the best are The Captain's Daughter, a tale of the times of Catherine II., The Undertaker, a very ghostly story, which will remind the English reader of some of the tales of Edgar Poe; The Pistol Shot ; and The Queen of Spades. Of the letters of Poushkin, which originally were to be found scattered over many magazines aud literary journals, a fairly complete collection was published in the new edition of his works which appeared at Moscow under the editorship of M. Yefrimoff. (W. RB: OL.)~~

~~POUSSIN, Nicozas (1594-1665), French painter, was born at Les Andelys (Eure) in June 1594. Early sketches, made when he should have been learning Latin, attracted the notice of Quentin Varin, a local painter, whose pupil Poussin became, till he went to Paris, where he entered the studio of Ferdinand Elle, a Fleming, and then of the Lorrainer L'Allemand. He found French art in a stage of transition: the old apprenticeship system was disturbed, and the academical schools destined to supplant it were not yet established ; but, having been brought into rela- tions with Courtois the mathematician, Poussin was fired by the study of his collection of engravings after Italian masters, and resolved to go to Italy. After two abortive attempts to reach Rome, and when he was again on the road, he fell in with the chevalier Marini at Lyons. Marini employed him on illustrations to his poems, took him into his household, and in 1624 enabled Poussin (who had been detained by commissions in Lyons and Paris) to rejoin him at Rome. There, his patron having died, Poussin fell into great distress; but his high qualities had won him friends amongst his brother artists, and on his falling ill he was received into the house of his compatriot Dughet and tenderly nursed by his daughter Anna Maria, to whom in 1629, when his affairs were easier, Poussin was married. Amongst his first patrons were Cardinal Barberini, for whom was painted the Death of Germanicus (Barberini Palace) ; Cardinal Oimodei, for whom he produced, in 1630, the Triumphs of Flora (Louvre); Cardinal de Richelieu, who commissioned a Bacchanal (Louvre) ; Vicenzo Giusti- niani, for whom was executed the Massacre of the Inno- cents, of which there is a first sketch in the British Museum ; Cassiano dal Pozzo, who became the owner of the first series of the Seven Sacraments (Belvoir Castle) ; and Fiéart de Chanteloup, with whom in 1640 Poussin, at the call of Sublet De Noyers,~~

~~*returned to France. He was well received by Louis XIII., who conferred on him the title of "first painter in ordinary," and in two years at Paris he produced not only several pictures for the royal chapels (the Last Supper, painted for Versailles, now in the Louvre) but eight cartoons for the Gobelins, the series of the Labours of Hercules for the Louvre, the Triumph of Truth for Cardinal Richelieu (Louvre), and much minor work; but in 1643, annoyed and disgusted*~~

~~*by the intrigues of Simon Vouét, Feuquiéres, and the architect Lemercier, Poussin withdrew to Rome. There, in 1648, he finished for De Chanteloup the second series of the Seven Sacraments (Bridgewater Gallery), and also his noble landscape with Diogenes throwing away his Scoop (Louvre); in 1649 he painted the Vision of St Paul (Louvre) for the comic poet Scarron, and in 1651 the Holy Family (Louvre) for the duke of Créqui. Year by year he continued to produce an enormous variety of works, many of which are included in the list given by Félibien, in which we find the names of Pointel the banker, Cardinal Manimo, Madame Mauroi, and others. He is said to have settled in a house on the Pincio, but in 1656, the year of the plague, he is entered in the census as living with his wife in the Via Paolina. He died in November 1665 and was buried in the church of St Lawrence in Lucina, his wife having predeceased him.*~~

~~*The finest collection of Poussin's paintings as well as of his drawings is possessed by the Louvre ; but, besides the pictures in the National Gallery and at Dulwich, England possesses several of his most considerable works: the Triumph of Pan is at Basildon (Berkshire), and his great allegorical painting of the Arts at Knowsley. At Rome, in the Colonna and Valentini Palaces, are notable works by him, and one of the private apartments of Prince Doria is decorated by a great series of landscapes in distemper, which are little known. 'Throughout his life he stood aloof from the popular movement of his native school. French art in his day was purely decorative, but in Poussin we find a survival of the impulses of the Renaissance coupled with conscious reference to classic work as the standard of excellence. In general we see his paintings at a great disadvantage, for the colour, even of*~~

~~*the best preserved, has changed in parts, so that the keeping is disturbed ; and the noble construction of his designs can be better seen in engravings than in the original. Amongst the many who have reproduced his works the two Audran, Claudine Stella, Picart, and Pesne are the most successful.*~~

~~*Poussin left no children, but he adopted as his son Gaspar Dughct, his wife's brother, who took the name of Poussin. GAsPAR POUSSIN (1613-1675) devoted himself to landscape painting and rendered admirably the severer beauties of the Roman Campagna ; a note- worthy series of works in tempera representing various sites near Rome is to be seen in the Colonna Palace, but one of his finest easel-pictures, the Sacrifice of Abraham, formerly the property of the Colonna, is now, with other works by the same painter, in the English National Gallery. The frescos executed by Gaspar Poussin in S. Martino di Monti are in a bad state of preservation. The*~~

~~*Louvre does not possess a single work by his hand. Gaspar died at Rome in 1675.*~~

~~*Sandrart, Acad. nob. art. pict. ; Lettres de Nicolas Poussin (Paris, 1824); Feli- bien, Entretiens ; Gault de St Germain, Vie de Nicolas Poussin; D'Argenville, Abrége de la Vie des Peintres; Bouchitté, Poussin et son Giuvre; Emilia F. 8. Pattison, " Documents inédits, Le Poussin," in L' Art (1882).*~~

~~*POUT, also Wurtinc-Povt or Bra (Gadus luscus), a small species of cod-fish locally abundant on the coasts of northern and western Europe, but less so in the Mediterranean. It is distinguished from other species of the genus Gadus by having a deep short body; a short and obtuse snout, not longer than the eye; the upper jaw the longer; and a long barbel at the chin. The three dorsal fins are com- posed of respectively twelve, twenty or twenty-two, and nineteen or twenty rays, the two anal fins of from twenty- nine to thirty-two and nineteen or twenty.*~~

~~*POWAN, or PowEn (Coregonus clupeotdes), a species of the Salmonoid genus Coregonus, which seems to be peculiar to Loch Lomond in Scotland, the great lakes of Cumber- land, where it is called "schelly," and Lake Bala in Wales, the Welsh name of the fish being "gwyniad." It is not found in*~~

~~other European waters; but of the numerous Continental species of this genus the lavaret of the Swiss lakes resembles it most. Powan, or, as they are sometimes called, freshwater herrings, live in the deepest parts of the~~

~~| lakes mentioned and come to the surface only occasionally,~~

~~either in the winter time in order to spawn, or at certain times of the day during summer, approaching, it is said, the shores in search of food. Large numbers may then be taken with nets, and are mostly consumed on the spot. The powan rarely exceeds a length of 14 inches ; it has been fully described and figured by Parnell (Annals of Natural History, 1838, vol. i. p. 162) under the names of Coregonus lacepedet and Coregonus microcephalus ; the specimens to which the latter name was given are, however, not specifically different from the typical powan.~~

~~POWERS, Hrram (1807-1873), American sculptor, was the son of a farmer, and was born at Woodstock, Vermont, on 29th June 1807. In 1819 his father removed to a farm in Ohio, about six miles from Cincinnati, where the son attended school for about a year, staying meanwhile with his brother, a lawyer in Cincinnati. After leaving school he found employment in superintending a reading-room in connexion with the chief hotel of the town, but, being, in his own words, "forced at last to leave that place as his clothes and shoes were fast leaving him," he became a clerk in a general store. His second employer in this line of business having invested his capital in a clock and organ factory, Powers set himself to master the construction of the instruments, displaying an aptitude which in a short time enabled him to become the first mechanic in the fac- tory. In 1826 he began to frequent the studio of Mr Eckstein, and at once conceived a strong passion for the art of sculpture. His proficiency in modelling secured him the situation of general assistant and artist of the Western Museum, kept by a Frenchman, M. Dorfeuille, where his ingenious representation of the infernal regions to illustrate the more striking scenes in the poem of Dante met with extraordinary success, After studying thoroughly the art of modelling and casting, he in the end of 1834 went to Washington, and a friend having secured for him as sitters the president and some of the leading statesmen his remarkable gifts soon awakened general attention. In~~

~~*1837 he settled in Florence, where he remained till his death. While from pecuniary considerations he found it necessary to devote the greater part of his time to busts, his best efforts were bestowed on ideal work. In 1838 his statue of Eve excited the warm admiration of Thor- waldsen, and in 1839 he produced his celebrated Greek Slave, which at once gave him a place among the greatest sculptors of his time. Among the best known of his other ideal statues are the Fisher Boy, Il Penseroso, Proserpine, California, America (modelled for the Crystal Palace, Sydenham), and the Last of his Tribe. Among the eminent men whose busts he modelled are many of the leading con- temporary statesmen of America. HIs genius was strik- ingly realistic and unconventional, a quality doubtless in some degree attributable to the nature of his early training, but it was the close and thorough study of the works of the great masters which finally disciplined his powers to their highest perfection of purity and refinement. He died on 27th June 1873.*~~

~~*Among various obituary notices of Powers one of the most inter- esting is that by his intimate friend T. A. Trollope in Lippincott's Magazine for February 1875.*~~

~~*POZZO DI BORGO, Carto AnpREa (1764-1842), Russian diplomatist, was descended from an old Corsican family, and was born at Alata near Ajaccio on 8th March 1764. After completing his legal studies at Pisa he became advocate at Ajaccio, where in 1790 he joined the party of Paoli, to whom the Buonaparte family was strongly opposed. In his early years he had been on terms of the closest intimacy with Napoleon, but from this time a feel- ing of enmity sprang up between them, which on the part of Pozzo di Borgo increased as the career of Napoleon*~~

~~*PO Z4—*~~

~~*developed, until it became the ruling passion of his life. Ultimately his hatred of Napoleon knew no bounds, and, regarding him as the "scourge of the world," he sought to compass his ruin with a pertinacity which discourage- ments and difficulties served only to whet and kindle into redoubled ardour. In 1794 he was.chosen president of the Board of Council, under the English viceroy, and when the British were expelled from the island in 1797 he went to London, where he carried on a secret mission on*~~

~~*behalf of the Bourbons. At Vienna in 1798 he assisted in effect- ing a coalition between Austria and Russia against France, and in 1803 he entered the Russian service, where he became councillor of state, and was employed by the czar in all his most important diplomatic negotiations. He attempted in vain to form a new coalition after the battle of Jena, and retired, first to Austria, then to England. Recalled to Russia in 1812, he exerted all his influence to urge a continuance of the war with France till the power of Napoleon should be broken. In addition to this he secured the alliance of the Swedish crown prince Berna- dotte, and also went to London to secure the active co- operation of England. He it was who counselled the allies to bring matters to a crisis by marching on Paris, and it was he who penned the famous declaration that they waged war against Napoleon, not against the French people. He gave warning to the congress of Vienna of the possibility of Napoleon returning from Elba, was pre- sent at the battle of Waterloo, where the power of Napoleon was finally crushed, and on 20th November 1815 enjoyed the supreme satisfaction of signing the treaty of Paris as Russian ambassador. In 1826 he was appointed to repre- sent Russia at Paris. He retired from public life in 1835, and died at Paris on 15th February 1842.*~~

~~*Stein et Pozzo di Borgo, 1846, English trans., 1847 ; Vuhrer, Notice biographique sur le Comte Pozzo di Borgo, 1842.*~~

~~*POZZUOLI, the ancient Pureott, a city of Italy, on the northern shore of the Bay of Pozzuoli (Sinus Puteo- lanus or Cumanus),—the western portion of the Gulf of Naples, separated from the larger eastern portion by the promontory of Posillipo and from the open sea on the west by the peninsula which terminates in Cape Miseno. It is a place of 11,967 inhabitants (1881) and the centre of a commune, which, including Bacoli (3130; the ancient Bauli) and Nisida (1202), numbers 17,269. Its small flat-roofed houses cluster picturesquely on a tongue of land projecting south-west into the bay. The cathedral of St Proculus occupies the site of a temple erected to Augustus by L. Calpurnius and contains the tomb of Per- golesi. The harbour is still visited by 500 or 600 sailing vessels in the course of the year. But the true riches of Pozzuoli are its ruins. First in point of interest is the Serapeum or temple of Serapis. This consisted of a rect- angular court enclosed by forty-eight massive columns and having in the centre a round*~~

~~*temple with sixteen Corinthian pillars of African marble. The three great columns of the portico, about 40 feet high, still stand. The perforations of a boring mollusc show that they must for a time have been submerged 13 feet in the sea. The new upheaval of the ground appears to have begun before 1530 and to have been hastened by the great Monte Nuovo eruption of 1538. A gradual subsidence has again been observed since the beginning of the 19th century. The pillars of the round temple are now in Caserta, and the statue of Serapis is in the National Museum at Naples. The amphitheatre (482 feet long by 383 broad), erected in the time of the Flavian dynasty on the hill behind the town, was seated for 30,000 spectators, and had an arena 286 feet. long and 138 feet broad. Among the populace the building is known as the Prison of St Januarius, be- cause, according to the legend, that saint and his com-*~~

~~*panions were here condemned to fight with wild beasts. At an earlier date it had been the scene of the spectacle in which Nero, in presence of King Tiridates of Armenia, displayed his personal prowess. To the west of the Sera- peum lie traces of various minor ruins, a temple of Neptune, &c., and especially the site of Cicero's villa (Puteolanum or Academia), which was afterwards occupied by a temple in honour of the emperor Hadrian. The whole neigh-*~~

~~*bourhood has proved rich in epigraphic remains.*~~

~~*Puteoli first appears under the name of Diczarchia as a port of the people of Cume. The statement made by Stephanus of Byzan- tium and Eusebius, that the city was founded by a colony of Samians, probably refers to some secondary accession of population from that quarter. The Romans in 215 B.c. introduced a garrison of 6000 men to protect the town from Hannibal; and in 194 B.c. a Roman colony was established. In the Civil War the citizens sided first with Pompey and afterwards with Brutus and Cassius. Augustus strengthened the colony with a body of his veterans (hence Colonia Augusta), and Nero admitted the old inhabitants into it. The remains of Hadrian, who died at the neighbouring town of Baiz, were burned at Puteoli, and Antoninus Pius, besides erecting the temple to his memory already mentioned, instituted sacred games to be held in the city*~~

~~every five years. It was mainly, however, as a great commercial port that Puteoli was famous in ancient times. It was one of the two places in Italy (Rome was the other) where the Tyrian merchants had a regular trading station ; it trafficked with Syria (merchants from Berytus are mentioned among its residents), Egypt, Africa, and Spain, and spices from the East, corn from Alexandria, iron from Populonium were stored in its warehouses. Like Ostia, Puteoli was considered a special port of Rome, and, on account of the great safeness and convenience of its harbour, it was preferred to Ostia for the landing of the more costly and delicate wares. Like Ostia, consequently, it was treated as practically part of Rome, and with it enjoyed the peculiar distinction of being enrolled in the Palatine tribe. The artificial mole was probably of earlier date than the reign of Augustus ; and by that time there were docks large enough to contain the vessels employed in bringing the obelisks from Egypt. Remains of the piles of the mole still exist, and are popularly known as Caligula's Bridge, from the mistaken idea that they belong to the temporary structure which that emperor flung across the bay from the mole at Puteoli to the shore at Baie. Alaric (410), Genseric (455), and Totila (545) successively laid Puteoli in ruins. The restoration effected by the Byzantines was partial and short-lived. Sacked by Grimoald of Beneventum in 715, harassed by the Saracens in the 10th century, captured by John duke of Naples in 1014, and again sacked by the Turks in 1550, the city could hardly have continued prosperous even apart from the earth-**

~~quakes of 1198 and 1538.~~

~~Works on Puteoli have been written by Mazzella (1594), Capaccio (1604), Sarnellius (1691), Parrino (1709), Jorio (1817 and 1830). See the bibliography in Corp. Inser. Lat., vol. x. part i. pp. 182, 317.~~

~~PRADIER, James, French sculptor, was born at Geneva in 1790 and died in Paris on 5th June 1852. He wasa member of the Academy and a brilliant and popular sculptor of the pre-Romantic period, representing in France the drawing-room classicism which Canova illustrated at Rome. His chief works are the Son of Niobe, Atalanta, Psyche, Sappho (all in the Louvre), Prometheus (Tuileries Gardens), a bas-relief on the triumphal arch of the~~

~~*Car- rousel, the figures of Fame on the Arc de 'Etoile, and a statue of J. J. Rousseau for Geneva.*~~

~~*See Afagazin pittoresque, iii., vi., and xi.; Barbet de Jouy, Sculptures modernes du Louvre.*~~

~~*PRAED, WintHror Mackwortu (1802-1839), one of the most illustrious English writers of vers de société, was the third and youngest son of William Mackworth Praed, serjeant at law. The name of his father's family had been originally Mackworth, and the circumstances under which the additional title of Praed was adopted are set out in the Parochial HIstory of Cornwall (iii. 101). Winthrop, a cognomen famous across the Atlantic as borne by the governor of Massachusetts, was his mother's maiden name, and the union of these three consonantal names in the person of Winthrop Mackworth Praed formed the combina- tion over which Miss Mitford expressed righteous indig- nation. HIe was born at 35 John Street, Bedford Row, London, 26th July 1802, and almost as soon as he could read was taught by his father to "lisp in numbers." HIs*~~

mother died in 1809, whereupon the child was sent to the preparatory school of Langley Broom near Colnbrook, where he remained until he was removed (28th March 1814) to Eton. Towards the close of his schoolboy days he started a manuscript periodical called Apis Matina. This was succeeded in October 1820 by the Hitonzan, a paper pro- jected and edited by Praed and Walter Blunt, which appeared every month until July 1821, when the chief editor left the "glade" of Eton and the paper died. Henry Nelson Coleridge, William Sidney Walker, and John Moul- trie were the three best known of his coadjutors in this periodical, which was published by Charles Knight, and of which many interesting particulars are set out in Knight's Autobiography and in Maxwell Lyte's Eton College. Before Praed left school he succeeded in establishing over a shop at Eton a "boy's library" for the use of the higher Etonians, the books of which are now amalgamated in the official "boy's library" in the new buildings. His career at Cambridge, where he matriculated at Trinity College, Octo- ber 1821, was marked by exceptional brilliancy. Thrice he gained the Browne medal and twice the chancellor's medal for English verse. He was bracketed third in the classical tripos in 1825, won a fellowship at his college in 1827, and three years later carried off the Seatonian prizes. At the Union his speeches attracted the admiration of his fellow-undergraduates ; he struggled, and not unequally, with Macaulay and Austin. The character of Praed dur- ing his university life is described by Bulwer Lytton in the first volume of his Life (pp. 227-239, 244-246). At Cam- bridge, as at Eton, the poet was drawn by Charles Knight into the pleasures of magazine-writing. Knight's Quarterly Magazine was started in 1822 with Praed as one of the principal contributors, and, after languishing for some time, it expired when three octavo volumes had been issued. For two years (1825-27) he resided at Eton as private tutor to Lord Ernest Bruce, a younger son of the marquis of Ailesbury. During part of this time he was occupied in preparing himself for the profession of the law, and on 29th May 1829 he was called to the bar at the Middle Temple. He travelled on the Norfolk circuit, where his prospects of advancement were bright, but the bias of his feelings in- clined him towards politics, and after a year or two he devoted himself entirely to political life. Whilst at Cain- bridge he leaned to Whiggism, and even to the

~~*autumn of 1829 his feelings were bent towards the same side, but with the dawning of the Reform Bill he passed into the opposite ranks, and when he was returned to parliament for St Germans (17th December 1830) his election was due to the kindness of Mr Herries, a zealous member of the Tory party. He sat for that borough until December 1832, and on its extinction contested thé borough of St Ives, within the limits of which the Cornish estates of the Praeds are situated. The squibs which he wrote on this occasion were collected in a volume printed at Penzance in 1833 and entitled Z'rash, dedicated without respect to James Halse, Esq. M.P., his successful competitor. Praed subsequently sat for Great Yarmouth from 1835 to 1837 and for Aylesbury from the latter year until his death. During the progress of the Reform Bill he advocated the creation of three-cornered constituencies, in which each voter should have the power of giving two votes only, and maintained that freeholds within boroughs should confer votes for the boroughs and not for the county. Neither of these suggestions was then adopted, but the former ulti- mately formed part of the Reform Bill of 1866. Praed was for a few months (December 1834 to April 1835) secretary to the Board of Control, and he was much grati- fied at receiving the appointment of deputy high steward of his beloved university of Cambridge. 'The last years of his life were racked by the pains of phthisis, though*~~

~~*PRA—PR &*~~

~~*all that sympathy and devotion could effect to alleviate his sufferings was accomplished by his wife, Helen, daughter of Mr George Bogle, whom he had married in 1835. He died at Chester Square, London, on 15th July 1839, and was buried at Kensal Green on 23d July.*~~

~~*Praed's lighter poetry, was the perfection of ease. It abounded in allusions to the characters and follies of the day and passed with playful touch from puns to politics. In his humorous effusions he was the chief of a school which in these latter days has found numerous imitators. Many of his poems were marked by much pathetic feeling, for his talents were by no means limited to puns and jests. Several American issues of his works appeared before the comprehensive English edition of his Poems, "with a memoir by*~~

~~Rev. Derwent Coleridge," was published in 1864. Ata later date a selection from his poems by Sir George Young was given to the world.~~

~~PRAFECT (prefectus) was the title of various Roman officials, both civil and military. A prefect was not one of the magistrates proper; he was, strictly speaking, only the deputy or lieutenant of a superior magistrate or com- mander. The following were the most important classes of preefects.~~

~~1. The city prefect (prefectus urbv) acted at Rome as the deputy of the chief magistrate or magistrates during his or their absence from the city. Thus he represented in the earliest times the king and in later times the consul or consuls when he or they were absent on a campaign or on other public duties, such as the celebration of the annual Latin festival on the Alban Mount. The absence of the chief magistrate for more than a single day rendered the appointment of a prefect obligatory ; but the obligation only arose when ald the higher magistrates were absent. HIence so long as the consuls were the only higher magis- trates their frequent absence often rendered the appoint- ment of a prefect necessary, but after the institution of the pretorship (367 B.c.) the necessity only arose excep- tionally, as it rarely happened that both the consuls and the praetor were absent simultaneously. But a prefect continued to be regularly appointed, even under the empire, during the enforced absence of all the higher magistrates at the Latin festival. The right and duty of appointing a prefect belonged to the magistrate (king, dictator, or consul) whose deputy he was, but it seems to have been withdrawn from the consuls by the Licinian law (367 B.c.), except that they still nominated prefects for the time of the festival. No formalities in the appointment and no legal qualifications on the part of the praefect were required. The prefect had all the powers of the magistrate whose deputy he was, except that he could not nominate a deputy to himself. HIs office expired on the return of his superior. There could only be one city prefect at a time, though the dictator Cesar broke the rule by appointing six or eight preefects simultaneously.~~

~~Under the empire there was introduced a city prefecture which differed essentially from the above. Augustus occa- sionally appointed a city prefect to represent him in his absence from Italy, although the preetors or even one of the consuls remained in the capital. In the absence of Tiberius from Rome~~

~~*during the last eleven years of his reign (26-37 a.D.) the city prefecture, hitherto an excep- tional and temporary office, became a regular and pernia- nent magistracy ; in all subsequent reigns the prefect held office even during the presence of the emperorin Rome. He was always chosen by the emperor and usually from men who had held the consulship ; his office was regarded, like the censorship under the republic, as the crowning honour of a long political career. It was not conferred for any definite length of time, but might be held for years or for life. As under the republic, the prefect was not allowed to quit the city for more than a day at atime. His duty was the preservation of peace in the capital; he was, in fact, the chief of the police, being charged with the super-*~~

~~*PR A—*~~

~~*intendence of the streets, markets, and public buildings. He was further entrusted by Augustus with a summary criminal jurisdiction over slaves and rioters, which was,*~~

~~*however, gradually extended till in the time of Severus or*~~

~~*even earlier it embraced all offences by whomsoever com- mitted. Further, he had the power of dealing with civil cases where his interference seemed requisite in the inter- ests of the public safety, but such occasions were naturally few. By the beginning of the 3d century, and perhaps earlier, appeals to the emperor in civil cases were handed over by him to be dealt with by the preefect. Except where special restrictions interfered, an appeal lay from the pre- fect to the emperor. Though not a military officer, the prefect commanded the city cohorts (cohortes urbanz), which formed part of the garrison of Rome and ranked above the line regiments, though below the guards (see PRzTORIANS). The military power thus placed in the hands of the chief of the police was one of the most sorely-felt innovations of the empire. The constitutional changes of Diocletian and Constantine extended still farther the power .of the prefect, in whom, after the disbanding of the guards and the removal from Rome of the highest officials, the whole military, administrative, and judicial powers were centred.*~~

~~*2. Under the republic judicial preefects (prefectt jurt dicundo) were sent annually from Rome as deputies of the pretors to administer justice in*~~

~~*certain towns of the Italian allies. These towns were called "prefectures" (prefecture). After the Social War (90-89 B.c.), when all Italy had re- ceived the Roman franchise, such prefectures ceased to exist in fact, though the narne was sometimes retained.*~~

~~*3. Under the empire the preetorians or imperial guards were commanded by one, two, or even three preefects (pre- fectt pretorio), who were chosen by the emperor from among the knights and held office at his pleasure. From the time of Alexander Severus the post was open to senators also, and if a knight was appointed he was at the same time raised to the senate. The position was one of great influ- ence and importance ; the preetorian prefect stood under the immediate orders of the emperor, of whom he was the natural representative and sometimes the rival. Down to the time of Constantine, who deprived the office of its military character, the prefecture of the guards was regu- larly held by tried soldiers, often by men who had fought their way up from the ranks. In course of time the com- mand seems to have been enlarged so as to include all the troops in Italy except the corps commanded by the city prefect (cohortes urbanx). Further, the preetorian prefect acquired, in addition to his military functions, a criminal jurisdiction, which he exercised not as the delegate but as the representative of the emperor, and hence it was decreed by Constantine (331) that from the sentence of the pre- torian prefect there should be no appeal. A similar juris- diction in civil cases was acquired by him not later than the time of Severus. Hence a knowledge of law became a qualification for the post, which under Marcus Antoninus and Commodus, but especially from the time of Severus, was held by the first jurists of the age (¢.g., Papinian, Ulpian, and Paullus), while the military qualification fell more and more into the background. Under Constantine the institution of the magistri militum deprived the prx- torian prefecture altogether of its military character, but left it the highest civil office of the empire.*~~

~~*The title of "prefect" was borne by various other Roman officials, of whom we may mention the following.*~~

~~*4, Preefectus Socium (soctorwm).—Under the republic the con- tingents furnished to the Roman armies by the Italian allies were commanded by*~~

~~*Roman officers called prafecti sociwm (soctorum), who were nominated by the consuls and corresponded to the*~~

~~*tribunes in the legions. 5. Prefectus Classtum.—Down to near the close of the republic a*~~

~~*| ge ee 653*~~

~~*naval command was never held independently but only in connexion with the command of an army, and, when the general appointed an officer to command the fleet in his room, this lieutenant was styled "preefect of the fleet" (prafectus classium). When in 311 B.C. the people took the appointment of these lieutenants into their own hands the title was changed from "prefects" to duo viri navalcs, or "two naval men"; but uuder the empire the admirals went by their old nanie of preefects.*~~

~~*6. Prefectus Fabrum.—tThe colonel of the engineer and artillery corps (fabri) in a Roman army was called a prefect; he did not belong to the legion, but was directly subordinate to the general in command.*~~

~~*7. Prefectus Annone.—The important duty of provisioning Rome was coninitted by Augustus (between 8 and 14 a.pD.) to a prefect, who was appointed by the emperor from among the knights and held office at the imperial pleasure.*~~

~~*8. Prefectus gypti (afterwards Prefectus Augustalis).—Under the empire the government of Egypt was entrusted to a viceroy with the title of "prefect," who was selected from the knights, and was surrounded by royal pomp instead of the usual insignia of a Roman magistrate. HIe stood under the immediate orders of the emperor. The exceptional position thus accorded to Egypt was due to a regard on the part of the emperors to the peculiar character of the population, the strategic strength of the country, and its political importance as the granary of Rome. (J. G. FS:)*~~

~~*PRAEMONSTRATENSIANS. See Assey, vol. i. p. 20, and MonacuisM, vol. xvi. p. 709.*~~

~~*PRASMUNIRE, the name given to a writ originating in the 14th century in the attempt to put restraint on the action of the papal authority in regard to the disposal of ecclesiastical benefices in England before the same became vacant, and subsequently, to the prejudice of the rightful patron, and also in the encouragement of resort to the Roman curia rather than to the courts of the country, in disregard of the authority of the crown, leading thereby to the creation of an imperium in imperio and the paying that obedience to papal process which constitutionally belonged to the king alone. The word "premunire"! is applied also to the offence for which the writ is granted, and furthermore to the penalty it incurs. The range and description of offences made liable to the penalties of premunire became greatly widened subsequently to the Reformation, so that acts of a very miscellaneous character were from time to time brought within the scope of enactments passed for a very different purpose. The offence is of a nature highly criminal, though not capital, and more immediately affects the crown and Government. The statute 16 Rich. II. c. 5 (1392) is usually designated the Statute of Premunire ; it is, however, but one only of numerous: stringent measures (many of which are still unrepealed) resulting from the enactment of the Statute of Provisors (35 Edw. I. c. 1), passed in a previous reign, which according to Coke (/nstit.) was the foundation of all the subsequent statutes of preemunire. Cowel (Law Dict.) describes a provisor as one who sued to the court of Rome for a provision which was called gratia expectiva.*~~

~~*The penalties of preemunire involved the loss of all civil rights, forfeiture of lands, goods, and chattels, and im- prisonment during the royal pleasure. In the Habeas Corpus Act (31 Car. II. c. 2, 1679) the committing of any man to prison out of the realin was made preemunire unpardonable even by the king. It thus appears that, whilst the crown by its prerogative might at any time remit the whole or any part of the punishment incurred by a premunire, an exception was made in transgressions of the Statute of Habeas Corpus. The Royal Marriage Act (12 Geo. IIL. c. 11) of 1772 is the last statute which sub- jects any one to the penalties of a premunire as ordained by 16 Rich. II.*~~

~~*It cannot be doubted that the legislation exemplified in the Statutes of Premunire and Provisors was felt by the*~~

~~1 Preniunire is a corruption of the Latin praemonere, to pre-admonish or forewarn, and is taken from the words of the writ itself, which runs "Premunire facias" A. B., &c., t.¢e., eause A. B. to be forewarned that he appear to answer the contempt wherewith he stands eharged.~~

~~popes to be a great check on their freedom of action. In the hands of Henry VIII. preemunire became eventually a lever for the overthrow of papal supremacy. The last ancient statute concerning preemunire, until the Reforma- tion, was the 2 Hen. IV. c. 3 (1400), by which all persons who accepted any provision from the pope to be exempt from canonical obedience to their proper ordinary were subjected to the penalties prescribed. Bishop Stubbs,! in summing up his account of the various statutes of pree- munire, succinetly says of them that they were intended to prevent encroachments on and usurpations of jurisdiction on the part of the pope, and he adds that the more 1mport- ant statute was that of 16 Rich. IL. c. 5 (1392), which he describes as one of the strongest defensive measures taken during the Middle Ages against Rome, and which was called for in consequence of the conduct of the pope, who had forbidden the bishops to execute the sentences of the royal courts in suits connected with ecclesiastical patron- age. Tomlins (Law Dict.) states that there is only one instance of a prosecution on a premunire to be found in the state trials, in which case the penalties were inflicted upon some persons for-refusing to take the oath of allegi- ance to Charles II. It may be added that on an indict- ment for preemunire a peer might not be tried by his peers.~~

~~See Coke, Instit.; Collier, Eccl. Hist., 1708; Hallam, Middle Ages, 1868; Stephen, Comm., 1853, and Hist. Crim. Law; and Stubbs, Constit. Hzst., 1880.~~

~~PRASNESTE (now PaEsTRINA), a very ancient city of Latium, lies 22 miles east of Rome on a spur of the Apen- nines facing the Alban Hills. To the natural strength of the piace and its commanding situation Preeneste owed in large measure its historical importance. The local tradition (adopted by Virgil) named Czculus, son of Vulcan, as founder. From the remains of Cyclopean masonry and other indications the foundation of the city has been referred to the 8th century B.c., and objects in metal and ivory~~

~~*discovered in the earliest graves prove that as early as this or the following century Preeneste had reached a considerable degree of civilization and stood in com- mercial relations not only with Etruria but with the East. At this time the city was probably under the hegemony of Alba Longa, then the head of the Latin League. In 499, according to Livy, Preneste withdrew from the Latin League and formed an alliance with Rome, but this state- ment seems irreconcilable with a. passage in Dionysius Halicarnensis (Ant. Rom., v. 61). After Rome had been weakened by the Gallic invasion (390), Praeneste joined its foes in a long struggle with Rome. The struggle cul- minated in the great Latin War (340-338), in which the Romans were victorious, and Preneste was punished for its share in the war by the loss of part of its territory. It was not, however, like the other Latin cities, enibodied in the Roman state, but continued in the position of a city in alliance with Rome down to the Social War, when it, like the rest of Italy, received the Roman franchise (90 or 89). As an allied city it furnished contingents to the Roman army and possessed the right of exile (jus exilit), t.e., persons banished from Rome were allowed to reside at Preeneste. To judge from the works of art and _inscrip- tions of this period (338 to 90 B.c.), it must have been for the place a time of prosperity and even luxury. The nuts of Preoneste were famous and its roses were amongst the finest in Italy. The Latin spoken at Preeneste was some- ae ee oe ee eee*~~

~~*: Constit. Hist. of Eng. (1880), iii. 356 sq.*~~

~~*. Thus the Preenestines shortened some words: they said conia for cicoma, tammodo for tantummodo (Plaut., Truc., iii. 2, 23; Id., = eo Al, ils Se cp. Comment. on Festus, p. 731, ed. Lindemann),*~~

~~*criptions exhibit the forms Acmemeno and Tondrus for Aga- memno and Tyndarus. They said nefrones for nefrendes in the sense*~~

~~*of testiculi, and tongitio for notio (Festus, s.v. “ hr giti .v. “nefrendes” and “tongere”). Cp. Quintilian, Jnstit., i. 5, 56.*~~

~~*PRA—PR & :*~~

~~*Marius was blockaded in the town by the Sullans (82 B.c.); and on its capture Marius slew himself, the male inhabitants were massacred in cold*~~

~~*blood, and a military colony was settled on part of its territory. It was prob- ably about this time that the city was extended from the hill to the plain and that the temple of Fortune was enlarged so as to include much of the space occupied by the ancient city. Under the empire Preneste, from its elevated situation and cool salubrious air, became a favour- ite summer resort of the wealthy Romans, whose villas studded the neighbourhood. Horace ranked it with Tibur and Baie, the Bath and Brighton of Rome. Augustus resorted thither ; here Tiberius recovered from a danger- ous illness, and here Hadrian built himself a villa. Anto- ninus erected a palace to the east of the town. Amongst private persons who owned villas at Praeneste were Pliny the younger and Symmachus.*~~

~~*But Preeneste was chiefly famed for its great temple of Fortune and for its oracle, in connexion with the temple, known as the "Przenestine lots" (sortes Prenestine). As extended by Sulla the sanctuary of Fortune occupied a series of six vast terraces, which, resting on gigantic sub- structions of masonry and connected with each other by grand staircases, rose one above the other on the hill in the form of the side of a pyramid, crowned on the highest terrace by the round temple of Fortune proper. This immense edifice, probably by far the largest sanctuary in Italy, must have presented a most imposing aspect, visible as it was froma great part of Latium, from Rome, and even from the sea. The goddess Fortuna here went by the name of Primigenia (First-Born, but perhaps in an active sense First-Bearer) ; she was represented suckling two babes, said to be Jupiter and Juno, and she was especially worshipped by matrons.? The oracle of the Preenestine lots was very ancient and continued to be con- sulted down to Christian times. Constantine and Theodo- sius forbade the practice and closed the temple. In 1297 the Colonna family who then owned Preeneste (Palestrina) revolted from the pope, but in the following year the town was taken and razed to the ground. In 1437 the city, which had been rebuilt, was captured by the papal general Cardinal Vitelleschi and once more utterly destroyed. It was rebuilt and fortified by Stefano Colonna in 1448. In 1630 it passed by purchase into the Barberini family. Preeneste was the native town of ASlian and in modern*~~

~~*times of the great composer Palestrina.*~~

~~*The modern town of Palestrina, a collection of narrow and filthy alleys, stands on the terraces once occupied by the temple of Fortune. On the summit, of the hill (2546 feet), nearly a mile from the town, stood the ancient citadel, the site of which is now occupied by a few poor houses (Castel San Pietro) and a ruined medieval castle of the Colonnas. The magnificent view embraces Soracte, Rome, the Alban Hills, and the Campagna as far as the sea. Considerable portions of the southern wall of the ancient citadel, built in very massive polygonal (Cyclopean) blocks of limestone, are still to be seen ; and the two walls, also polygonal, which formerly united the citadel with the lower town, can still be traced. The ruins of the villa of Hadrian stand in the plain near the church of S. Maria*~~

~~*3 Hence Fernique (Ktude sur Préneste) ingeniously conjectures that Fortuna was originally a goddess of maternity, and that the view of her functions as a goddess of chance was later, being due to the in- fluence of Greek mythology, in which Chance (T'xy) was a goddess. Fortuna contains the same root as ferre, "to bear." Fernique observes that the worship of Fortuna was often associated with that of Feronia. Statuettes in terra-cotta representing a woman with a child at her breast have been found at Preneste. These are supposed by Fernique to be votive offerings, representing not the goddess but the mothers who offered them at the shrine in fulfilment of vows. Fortuna was some- times represented in the form of two (or possibly more) females, so at Antium (Macrobius, Sat., i. 23, 18 ; Sueton., Cal., 57), and perhaps at Preeneste (Statius, Sylv., i. 3, 80); in one of the Roman temples of Fortuna there was a mysterious veiled figure. Analogous to Fortuna in her double capacity as prophetess and patron of mothers was Car- menta, and she too was sometimes represented in double form (Ovid, Fastt, i. 617 sg. ; Aulus Gellius, xvi. 16).*~~

~~*della Villa, about three-quarters of a mile from the town. Here was discovered the well-known statue of Antinous, now in the Vatican. Not far off was found in 1773 the calendar which, as Suetonius tells us, was set up by the grammarian M. Verrius Flaccus in the forum of Preneste. Excavations made, especially since 1855, in the ancient necropolis, which lay on a plateau sur- rounded by valleys at the foot of the hill and of the*~~

~~town, have yielded important results for the history of the art and manufactures of Preneste. Of the objects found in the oldest graves, and sup- posed to date from about the 7th century B.c., the cups of silver and silver-gilt and most of the gold and amber jewellery are Pheeni- cian (possibly Carthaginian), or at least made on Pheenician models ; but the bronzes and some of the ivory articles seem to be Etruscan. No objects have been discovered belonging to the period inter- mediate between the 7th and 3d centuries B.c. ; but the graves of the 3d and 2d centuries have yielded many precious relics, bronze caskets (cista#), convex metal mirrors, strigils, &. Among these is the famous Ficoroni casket, engraved with pictures of the arrival of the Argonauts in Bithynia and the victory of Pollux over Amycus. It was found in 1774. The inscriptions on the caskets are all Latin ; those on the mirrors are mostly Etruscan ; those on the strigils are Latin, Greek, and Etruscan. The Latin inscriptions seem to belong to the 3d century. On the whole it appears that between the 3d and 2d centuries there existed at Preeneste a native Latin art, which was, however, beginning to be affected by Greek art. Most of the objects discovered in the necropolis are preserved in the Roman collections, especially the Kircher Museum (which possesses the Ficoroni casket) and the Barberini Library. Besides these there is preserved in the Barberini Palace at Palestrina a large mosaic, considered one of the most important in existence. It was found on the site of the temple of Fortune and probably dates from the age of Augustus or Tiberius. It represents scenes from the Nile, with animals and figures in Egyptian and Greek costume. (J. G. FR.) PRATOR (pre-tor, "he who goes before," "a leader "), originally a military title, was in classical times the designa- tion of the highest magistrates in the Latin towns. The Roman consuls were at first called "preetors"; in the early code of the Twelve Tables (450 B.c.) they appear to have had no other title. By the Licinian law of 367 B.c., which abolished the military tribunes with consular power and enacted that the supreme executive should henceforward be in the hands of the two consuls, a new magistrate was at the same time created who was to be a colleague of the consuls, though with lower rank and lesser powers. This new magistrate was entrusted with the exclusive jurisdic- tion in civil cases ; in other respects his powers resembled those of the consuls. HIs distinctive title was the "city pretor" (pretor urbanus), and in after time, when the num- ber of praetors was increased, the city praetor always ranked first. To this new magistrate the title of '" przetor" was thenceforward properly~~

~~*restricted! About 242 B.c. the increase of a foreign population in Rome necessitated the creation of a second pretor for the decision of suits between foreigners (peregrint) or between citizens and foreigners. . This praetor was known at a later time as the "foreign pretor" (pretor peregrinus). About 227 B.c. two more pretors were added to administer the recently acquired provinces of Sicily and Sardinia. The conquest of Spain occasioned the appointment of two more in 197 B.c., of whoin one goverhed Hither and the other Further Spain. The number of pretors, thus augmented to six, remained stationary till Sulla's time, 82 B.c. But in the interval their duties vastly multiplied. On the one hand, five new provinces were added to the Roman dominions—Macedonia and Achaia in 146 B.c., Africa in the same year, Asia in 134, Gallia Narbonensis in 118, Cilicia probably in 102. On the other hand, new and permanent jury courts (ques- tiones perpetux) were instituted at Rome, over which the pretors were called on to preside. To meet this increase of business the tenure of office of the preetors and also of*~~

~~*1 Some writers, following Livy, vi. 42, assert that at first the pretor- ship was open to patricians only, but Mommsen (Adm. Staatsrecht, ii. p. 195) shows that this is probably a mistake. The election of a plebeian to the office for the first time in 337 B.c. was certainly opposed by the consul who presided at the election, but there appears to have been no legal obstacle to it.*~~

~~*the consuls was practically prolonged from one to two years, with the distinction that in their second year of office they bore the titles of "' propreetor " and " proconsul" instead of "preetor" and "consul." The prolongation of office, together with the participation of the proconsuls in duties which properly fell to the preetors, formed the basis of Sulla's arrangements. He increased the number of the pretors from six to eight, and ordained that henceforward all the eight should in their first year administer justice at Rome and in their second should as propreetors undertake the government of provinces. The courts over which the preetors presided, in addition to those of the city preetor and the foreign preetor, dealt with the following offences : —oppression of the provincials (repetundarum), bribery (ambitus), embezzlement (peculatus), treason*~~

~~(majestatis), murder (de sicarits et venefics), and probably forgery (falst). A tenth province (Gallia Cisalpina) was added to the pre- vious nine, and thus the number of judicial and provincial departments corresponded to the annual number of przetors, proprectors, and proconsuls. The proportion, however, was not long maintained: new provinces were added to the empire —Bithynia in 74 B.c., Cyrene about the same time, Crete in 67, Syria in 64 —and one or more new law courts were instituted. To keep pace with the increase of duties Julius Cesar increased the number of preetors successively to ten, fourteen, and sixteen ; after his time the number varied from eight to eighteen.~~

~~The preetors were elected, like the consuls, by the people assembled in the comitia centurvata and with the same formalities. (See Consun.) They regularly held office for a year; only in the transition period between the republic and the empire was their tenure of office some- times limited to a few months. The insignia of the preetor were those common to the higher Roman magis- trates,—the purple-edged robe (toga pretexta) and the ivory chair (sella curulis); in Rome he was attended by two lictors, in the provinces by six. The pretors elect cast lots to determine the department which each of them should administer. A pretor was essentially a civil judge, and as such he was accustomed at or before his entry on office to publish an edict setting forth the rules of law and pro- cedure by which he intended to be guided in his decisions. As these rules were often accepted by his successors the pretor thus acquired an almost legislatorial power, and his edicts thus continued, corrected, and amplified from year to year became, under the title of the 'perpetual edicts," one of the most important factors in moulding Roman law. Their tendency was to smooth away the occasional harsh- ness and anomalies of the civil law by substituting rules of equity for the letter of the law, and in this respect the Roman pretor has been compared to the English chancellor. HIs functions were considerably modified by the introduc- tion of the standing jury courts (quxstiones perpetux). HItherto the preetor had conducted the preliminary inquiry as to whether an action would lie, and had appointed for the actual trial of the case a deputy, whom he instructed in the law applicable to the case and whose decisions he enforced. The proceedings before the praetor were tech- nically known as jus in distinction from judecvwm, which was the actual trial before the deputy judge. But in the standing jury courts (of which the~~

~~first—that for repetundz —was instituted in 149 B.c.), or rather in the most import- ant of them, the pretors themselves presided and tried the cases. These new courts, though formally civil, were substantially criminal courts; and thus a criminal juris- diction was added to the original civil jurisdiction of the pretors. Under the empire various special functions were assigned to certain preetors, such as the two treasury preetors (pretores xrarti), appointed by Augustus in 23 B.c.; the spear pretor (pretor hastarius), who presided over the~~

~~court of the Hundred Men, which dealt especially with cases of inheritance; the two trust preetors (pretores Jideicomissarii), appointed by Claudius to look after cases of trust estates, but reduced by Titus to one; the ward pretor (pretor tutelaris), appointed by Marcus Antoninus to deal with the affairs of minors; and the liberation pretor (pretor de liberalibus causis), who tried cases turn- ing on the liberation of slaves. There is no evidence that the preetors continued to preside over the standing courts after the beginning of the 3d century A.D., and the foreign preetorship disappears about this time.' Even the juris- diction of the city praetor seems not to have survived the reforms of Diocletian, though the office itself continued to exist. But of the preetorships with special jurisdiction (especially the ward preetorship and the liberation preetor- ship) some lasted into the 4th century and were copied in the constitution of Constantinople.~~

~~Besides their judicial functions, the przetors, as colleagues of the consuls, possessed, though in a less degree, all the consular powers, which they regularly exercised in the absence of the consuls; but in the presence of a consul they exercised them only at the special command either of the consul or, more usually, of the senate. Thus the preetor possessed military power (¢mpertum) ; even the city preetor, though attached by his office to Rome, could not only levy troops but also in certain circumstances take the command in person. As provincial governors the preetors had frequent occasion to exercise their military powers, and they were often accorded a triumph. The city preetor presided over popular assemblies for the election of certain inferior magistrates, but all the preetors officiating in Rome had the right to summon assemblies for the pur- pose of legislation. In the~~

~~*absence of the consuls the city pretor, and in default of him the other preetors, were em- powered to call meetings of the senate. Public religious duties, such as the fulfilment of state vows, the celebration of sacrifices and games, and the fixing of the dates of mov- able feasts, probably only fell to the praetors in the absence of the consuls. But since in the early times the consuls as a rule spent only the first months of their year of office in Rome it is probable that a considerable share of religious business devolved on the city preetor ; this was certainly the case with the Festival of the Cross-roads (compitalia), and he directed the games in honour of Apollo from their institution in 212 Bc. Augustus in 22 B.c. placed the direction of all the popular festivals in the hands of the preetors, and it is not without significance that the preetors continued thus to minister to the pleasures of the Roman mob for centuries after they had ceased almost entirely to transact the business of the state. For the preetor as provincial governor, see ProvincE. (J. G. FR.)*~~

~~*PRETORIANS (pretoriant) was the name borne by the body-guards of the Roman emperors. The name was derived from the pretorian cohort, a picked body of troops who in the time of the republic formed the guard of a general in command of an army, the old Latin name for a general being pretor and his quarters in the camp being known as the pretorium. As the emperor was commander- in-chief the headquarters (pretoriwm) were established at Rome, and one of the earliest measures of Augustus was the new organization of the guard. The command of the preetorians rested legally with the emperor, but after 2 B.c. 1t was practically exercised by one or more colonels chosen by the emperor with the title of "pratorian prefects" (preefecti prextorio, see Prarect). The preetorians were divided into cohorts of 1000 men each, horse and foot, and hence they are often referred to as the preetorian cohorts. ee ee eee ee*~~

~~*1 Marquardt conjectures with much probability that when Caracalla*~~

~~*extended the Roman franchise to the whole empi h ; abolished the foreign pretorship. pire he at the same time*~~

~~*Ph A*~~

~~*PR A*~~

~~*Augustus raised nine corps, of which he quartered three in different parts of Rome and the rest in neighbouring cities. One cohort kept guard in the palace. Under Tiberius the crafty and energetic pretorian prefect Sejanus collected the pretorians into a permanent fortified camp outside the Viminalian Gate of Rome. Thus united they acquired and exercised the power of making and unmaking emperors. The number of the cohorts was raised temporarily by Vitel- lius to sixteen ; from 112 a.pD. to the end of the 3d century, and probably to the time of Constantine, the number was ten. At first they were recruited exclusively from Italy, but afterwards from the Romanized provinces also of Spain, Noricum, and Macedonia. Their pay was nominally double, but really more than double, that of the legionaries ;? their period of service was shorter, being sixteen years instead of at least twenty ; and from the time of Claudius it was the custom of the eniperors on their succession to the throne to purchase the favour of their powerful guards by a liberal donative. But the sense of their own power, to which these special privileges bore witness, fostered the pride, while the luxurious life of the capital relaxed the disci- pline, of the pretorians. Their insolence culminated when they murdered the virtuous Pertinax, put the empire up to auction, and knocked it down to the highest bidder (193). In the same year they were disgraced and disbanded by Severus, only, however, to be replaced by a still more numer- ous corps,? which was now recruited indifferently from all parts of the empire. Diocletian reduced their numbers, and they were finally suppressed by Constantine in 312.*~~

~~*PRATORIUS,* Micwarn (1571-1621), German musical historian, theorist, and composer, was born at Kreuzberg in Thuringia on 15th February 1571. HIe acted as kapell- meister at Liineburg early in life, was engaged first as organist and later as kapellmeister and secretary to the duke of Brunswick, and was eventually rewarded for his long services with the priory of Ringelheim, near Goslar. HIe died at Wolfenbiittel on 15th February 1621. Of his very numerous compositions copies are now so scarce that it is doubtful whether a complete set is anywhere to be found. The most important are—Polyhymnia (15 vols.), Muse Stomz (16 vols.), and Afusa Aonia (9 vols.), all written partly to Latin and partly to German words. But more precious than all these is the Syntagma musicum (3 vols. and a cahier of plates, 4to, Wittenberg and Wolfenbiittel, 1615-20). Only two copies of this very rare work are believed to exist in England, one in the library of the*~~

~~*Rev. Sir F. A. Gore-Ouseley and the other in that of Mr Alfred Littleton. In the original prospectus of the work four volumes were promised, but it is certain that no more than three were ever published. The fourth volume mentioned in Forkel's catalogue is clearly nothing but the cahier of plates attached to vol. ii.*~~

~~*? The legionaries received 10 asses daily, or 3600 asses (= 225 denarii) annually ; the pretorians received twenty asses daily, or 7200 asses annually. But, whereas in paying the legionaries the as was reckoned at its current value of 16 to the denarius, in paying the pretorians it was reckoned at its old and higher value of 10 to the denarius, and hence the 7200 asses of a pretorian were equal to 11,520 asses at the current rate, or 720 denarii. This is Mommsen's highly ingenious and probable explanation of the apparent discrepancy between the state- ments of Dio Cassius (liii. 11, 55) and Tacitus (Ann., i.17). See Mar- quardt's Rdmische Staatsverwaltung, ii. p. 480. Pliny (WV. H., xxxiii. 45) states that after the value of the as was lowered it continued to be reckoned at its old value in the payment of soldiers. But by combin- ing the statements of Suetonius (C#s., 26, and Domit., 7) we see that Julius Cesar, while he nominally and really raised the pay of the soldiers, paid it in asses of the current value, and hence after his time it was only the pretorians who retained the privilege of having their pay reckoned in asses of the old value (see Marquardt, op. cit., p. 95).*~~

~~*3 According to Herodian (iii. 18, 4) Severus increased the troops in Rome fourfold.*~~

- ~~*German Schultz or Schultze (Schultheiss), meaning the head-man of a township, Latinized into Pretor or Preetorius. Many other members of the family of Pretorius were eminent as musicians.*~~

~~*PRA—PRA*~~

~~*The chief value of this very remarkable work lies in the informa- tion it gives concerning the condition of instrumental music in the early years of the 17th century. The plates include excellent representations of all the musical instruments in use at the time they were published, together with many forms even then treated only as antique curiosities. Many of these instruments are known to us only through these representations and the*~~

~~*descriptions with which they are accompanied, the instruments themselves having long fallen into disuse, and no real examples having been preserved to us. Among the most important instruments described and figured are the whole family of flutes, oboes, and bassoons; the different kinds of trombone, many of which exactly resemble those now in use; trumpets and horns of all conceivable varieties ; viols, violins, and basses; the entire family of stringed and keyed instruments, including the psaltery, the spinet, the harpsichord, and a curious combination of the harpsichord and viol called the " Nurembergisch Geigenwerck," known only through this description ; and finally the organ, to the historical and technical description of which an entire section is devoted. The work thus throws a light upon the earlier forms of instrumental music which to the historian is invaluable. In fact, without the information bequeathed to us by Pretorius it would be impossible to reconstruct in theory the orchestra of the earlier half of the 17th century, during which the opera and the oratorio both sprang into existence, or even to understand the descriptions left us by other less careful writers.*~~

~~*_ PRAGMATIC SANCTION, the technical name given to some decrees which have been issued as fundamental laws. The term is of Byzantine origin, the edicts of the Eastern emperors having been called "pragmatics." There is a famous document known as the Pragmatic Sanction of St Louis, which contains six articles directed against the assumptions of the papacy; but there are reasons for doubt- ing its genuineness. In 1438 Charles VII. of France issued at Bourges a pragmatic sanction which embodied the most important decisions of the council of Basel. This decree formed the basis of the liberties of the Gallican Church. Louis XI. entered into negotiations with the papacy for its revocation ; but it continued in force until the time of Francis I., who substituted for it a concordat with Pope Leo X. The decisions of the council of Basel were also embodied: in a pragmatic sanction by a diet which met at Mainz in 1439; but by the concordat of Vienna, concluded in 1448 by the emperor Frederick ITI. with Pope Nicholas V., most of the advantages which the diet had hoped to secure for the church in Germany were abandoned. The most famous of all pragmatic sanctions was that of the emperor Charles VI. In 1713 it was issued as a family statute, but, as the emperor proposed that it should become a fundamental law of the state, it was afterwards submitted to the diets of the*~~

~~*lands ruled by the house of Austria by hereditary right. Having been accepted by the estates of Lower Austria and Bohemia in 1720, by the Hungarian diet in 1722, and by the remaining diets between 1720 and 1724, it was pro- claimed as a fundamental law on the 6th of December 1724. By this edict it was decreed that the Austrian lands should always be united ; that they should be ruled by Charles VI.'s male descendants; that, if he had no male descendants, his territories should pass to his female descendants; and that, if his female descendants died without issue, the right of succession should belong to the daughters of his brother Joseph and to their male and female offspring in accordance with the law of primogeniture. In the interest of his daughter Maria Theresa the emperor spared no pains to secure from the empire and from the other powers guarantees for the execution of this law; and, when his nieces, who as the daughters of his elder brother might prove to be dangerous rivals of Maria Theresa, were married, one to the electoral prince of Saxony, the other to the electoral prince of Bavaria, he caused them to declare on oath that they abandoned their claims. Nevertheless after his death the pragmatic sanction led to the War of the Austrian Succession. In 1759 a pragmatic sanction was issued by Charles III. of Spain granting the throne of the Two Sicilies to his third son and his descendants.*~~

~~*657*~~

~~*PRAGUE (German, Prag ; Bohemian, Praha), the capi- tal of Bohemia, the seat of an archbishop, and the third largest town of the Austrian-Hungarian monarchy, lies on both banks of the Moldau in 50° 5' N. lat. and 14° 25' E, long., 150 miles to the north-west of Vienna and 75 miles to the south-south-east of Dresden. Its position, near the centre of the country and at the only point where the valley of the Moldau expands sufficiently to make room for a great city, marks it out as the natural capital of Bohemia, and the picturesque effect of its masses of build- ings and innumerable spires and towers, filling the valley and climbing the hills on either side, is enhanced by their stirring historical background. The heights on the left bank descend somewhat rapidly to the river and are crowned by the venerable Hradschin, or palace of the Bohemian kings, which forms the dominant feature in every view of the town. On the other bank there is a considerable level space between the river and the base of the hills. An additional charm is lent to*~~

~~*the scene by the pleasant green islands in the Moldau, which is here 500 to 1500 feet in width. The general features of the situation recall those of Budapest, and the smaller scale is fully compensated for by the greater variety and interest of the buildings.*~~

~~*The town proper consists of four main divisions, the Altstadt and the Neustadt on the right bank of the Moldau, and the Kleinseite and the Hradschin on the left. Imme- diately beyond the old line of circumvallation are the suburbs of Carolinenthal, Wyscherad, Smichow, and Wein- berg, while these in turn are adjoined by various outer suburban districts. Down to 1866 Prague was surrounded with walls and bastions, which, however, had long lost their military importance, and have since been, to a great*~~

~~*ss*~~

~~*Ie, SS | by. LAS y fn 5 iS*~~

~~*Yj ea*~~

~~*CF*~~

~~*ME AGA*~~

~~*\ if*~~

~~*"Zlddaa*~~

~~*= J*~~

~~*iy sary Lae + » ON 4 NAS § . r N AN < YS 2) \ \ > » \ IpsisssS *~~

~~*Plan of Prague.*~~

~~*1. Imperial Palace. 10. Church of the Knights 17. Nat. Bohem. Museum. 2. St Vitus's Cathedral. of the Cross. 18. Maria Schnee Church. 8. Belvedere Villa. 11. Clementinum. 19. Savings Bank.*~~

~~*4, Palace Waldstein. 12, Count Clam Gallas's 20. Bohemian Theatre.*~~

~~5. St Nicholas Church. Palace. 21. Neustadt Town-house. 6. Capuchin Monastery. 13. Town-house. 22. Technical College.~~

~~7. St Loretto Church. 14. Teyn Church. 23. Emmaus Church.~~

~~8. Strahow Monastery. 15. Carolinum. 24. Carlshof Church.~~

~~9. Rudolfinum. 16. Civil Courts. 25. Jewish Cemetery.~~

~~extent, removed. The two sides of the river are connected by seven bridges, of which the most important are the Kaiser Franz suspension bridge, the new Palacky bridge, and the fine old Carls bridge. This last, erected between 1350 and 1500, is closed at each end by a medieval gate- tower, of which that to the east is particularly interesting. The numerous buttresses are adorned with statues of saints, XIX. — 83~~

~~658~~

~~among them that of St J ohn Nepomuk, who earned his title to be regarded as the patron saint of bridges from the fact that he here allowed himself to be thrown into the Moldau at the order of King Wenceslaus rather than divulge the queen's confidences in the confessional (1393). The statue is regarded with great veneration and is visited by thousands of devotees on the saint's anniversary (16th May).~~

~~The Altstadt, or old town, is the most densely populated part of Prague and the principal seat of traffic. Most of the streets are narrow and irregular, but the centre of the district is occupied by a spacious square called the Grosser Ring, and the side next the Moldau is bordered by wide quays embellished with handsome monuments to Charles IV. and Francis I. On one side of the Ring stands the town-house, to a great extent rebuilt, but still comprising part of the medizval structure that witnessed so many of the stormy scenes of Bohemian history. Opposite is the Teyn church, or old church of the Calixtine Hussites, built in 1407, and containing the tomb of Tycho Brahe, the Danish astronomer. Another interesting structure is the Late Gothic Pulverthurm, a relic of the old wall that once separated the Altstadt from the Neustadt. The Altstadt is also the seat of the university and several other educa- tional establishments. The university, founded by~~

~~Charles IV. in 1348, was the first in the German empire, and was attended by 10,000 to 15,000 students, until invidious distinctions made between Bohemians and Germans led the latter to secede in a body and found academies for themselves in other parts of Germany. The institution, however, still ranks high among European seats of learning and numbers above 2600 students. Lectures are delivered both in Bohemian and in German, and students may graduate in either language. The faculties of medicine and law occupy the Carolinum near the town-hall, while those of theology and philosophy are established in the Clementinum, a huge old Jesuit college, which also com- prises the university library (180,000 vols.), several chapels, a school, and the archiepiscopal seminary. The most con- spicuous modern buildings are the civil courts, the savings bank, and the Rudolfinum, a large Renaissance edifice on the quay, containing an academy of art, a conservatorium for music, and an industrial museum. The church of the Knights of the Cross (Kreuzherrenkirche) is an imposing building modelled on St Peter's at Rome, and the palace of Count Clam Gallas is a tasteful Renaissance structure of 1701. Enclosed within the Altstadt is the Josephstadt, or Jewish quarter, a labyrinth of crowded and dingy streets, to which the Jews were strictly confined down to 1848. The Jewish colony of Prague is one of the most ancient in Europe; the Jewish cemetery, with its thousands of closely-packed tombstones interspersed with shrubs and creeping plants, is one of the most curious sights in Prague.~~

~~The Neustadt, or new town, surrounds the old town in~~

~~the form of a semicircle, reaching the river both to the~~

~~north and to the south of it. The site of the old wall and nioat that formerly separated the two quarters is now occupied by a line of the handsomest and busiest streets in Prague, and the rest of the Neustadt also consists of broad and well-built streets and squares. Conspicuous among the buildings are the numerous hospitals and asylums on the south side, forming a phalanx of charitable institutions that do great credit to the philanthropy of the citizens. 'The town-house, now used as a criminal court, 1s Interesting as the spot where the Bohemian Hussite war was inaugurated by the hurling of several unpopular councillors from the window. Other noteworthy edifices are the Bohemian museum, the Bohemian technical college (1500 students),~~

~~*the magnificent new Bohemian theatre (erected at a cost of £200,000), and the churches of*~~

~~*PRAGUE*~~

~~*Carlshof, Emmaus, and Maria Schnee. To the south the Neustadt is adjoined by the Wyscherad, or citadel, the oldest part of Prague. The original fortress was almost entirely destroyed by the Hussites, and the present fortifi- cations are modern.*~~

~~*The Kleinseite, or Little Prague, on the left bank of the Moldau, occupies the slopes of the Laurenzberg and the Hradschin and is the headquarters of the aristocratic and official classes. Like the Altstadt, its centre is formed by a "ring," containing the large and handsome Jesuit church of St Nicholas and a fine monument to Marshal Radetzky. The most generally interesting of the numer- ous palaces of the Bohentian noblesse is the Palace Wald- stein or Wallenstein, an extensive edifice built by the hero of the Thirty Years' War and still occupied by his descendants. Kleinseite also contains the hall of the Bohemian diet and the residence of the statthalter or governor of Bohemia. To the north it ends in the plea- sant promenades named after the crown-prince Rudolf, which stretch along the bank of the Moldau.*~~

~~*The Hradschin, or castle hill, rises abruptly behind the Kleinseite to a height of about 240 feet. The imperial palace, a vast and irregular group of buildings crowning the height, is remarkable rather for its situation and extent than for architectural importance. It is said to have been founded by Princess Libussa, and was greatly enlarged by Charles IV. and others, but now offers little of a medieval character with the exception of two or three towers. Few of the 440 rooms it is said to contain are of any special interest; in the council chamber is still pointed out the window from which the imperial council- lors Martinitz and Slavata were hurled in 1618. Within the large court of the palace stands the cathedral of St Vitus, begun in 1344, in evident imitation of the cathedral of Cologne, but consisting of little more than the extensive Late Gothic choir (1385). Efforts are now being made to bring it to completion. The tower was originally 500 feet high, but lost two-fifths of its height by a fire. The interior enshrines several works of con- siderable interest and value, such as the mausoleum of the*~~

~~*Bohemian kings, a fine Renaissance work in alabaster and marble by Alex. Colin of Mechlin (1589); the shrine of St John Nepomuk, said to contain 14 tons of solid silver ; and the chapel of St Wenceslaus, the walls of which are encrusted with jasper, chalcedony, and amethyst. In the treasury are the Bohemian regalia. The palace precincts also enclose the church of St George, dating from the 12th century, and one of the few Romanesque edifices of which Prague can boast. To the west of the imperial palace is a wide square with three large palaces, one belonging to the archbishop of Prague. Farther on is another square, surrounded by the extensive palace of Count Czernin (now a barrack), a large Capuchin monastery, and the church of St Loretto, an imitation of the wandering Casa Santa. At the extreme west of this quarter, adjoining the wall, is the imposing monastery of Strahow, possessing a good collection of pictures and a large library. To the north of the imperial palace is a picturesque gorge called the Hirschgraben, beyond which are the palace gardens, con- taining the Belvedere, a villa erected by Ferdinand I. in 1536, and considered one of the most tasteful reproduc- tions of Italian architecture to the north of the Alps.*~~

~~*Prague is unusually well supplied with public parks and gardens, as, in addition to those already mentioned, pleasure-grounds have been laid out on the islands in the Moldau, on the slopes of the Laurenzberg, and on part of the ground occupied by the old fortifications. Among the most popular resorts are the charming grounds of the Baumgarten, a mile to the north of the Kleinseite. Both the industry and the commerce of Bohemia have their*~~

~~*focus in Prague, the chief seats of the former being the large manufacturing suburbs of Smichow (21,000 inhabit- ants) and Carolinenthal (20,000 inhabitants), the one to the south of the Kleinseite and the other to the north- east of the Neustadt. The most prominent items in a very miscellaneous list of industrial products are linen, cotton, calico, and leather goods, gloves, machinery, con- fectionery, beer, and chemicals. Garnet wares also form a specialty. 'Trade is facilitated by an extensive system of roads and railways, but the river navigation is unim- portant owing to the numerous weirs and the insufficient depth. In 1880 Prague*~~

~~*proper contained 162,323 in- habitants, or including the suburban districts about 250,000 ; and at the beginning of 1885 the total popula- tion was officially stated at 272,333. Nearly five-sevenths of these are of Slavonic race, while all are Roman Catholics with the exception of 20,000 Jews and 5000 Protestants. The Germans, however, though diminishing in relative numbers, still claim to represent the bulk of the capital*~~

~~*and culture of the city. The garrison consists of from 8000 to 10,000 men.*~~

~~*The foundation of Prague is ascribed to the princess Libussa, who appears at the beginning of the 8th century of our era as ruling the Bohemians from her stronghold of Wyscherad on the right bank of the Moldau. It is at least certain that the town made rapid progress under the fostering care of the early Bohemian sovereigns, and in the 138th century it was able to bid defiance to the Tatar hordes that then overran the country. Its chief period of prosperity was the reign of Charles IV. (1346-1378), who by found- ing the university, establishing fairs, and investing the town with valuable privileges attracted to it numerous strangers. At this time Prague was perliaps the most important town in Germany, and could even boast of an independent school of art. Afterwards, however, Prague became the centre of the agitation that culmi- nated in the Hussite wars, and thus brought upon itself a long train of misfortunes. The Hussites took possession of the city soon after defeating the emperor Sigismund, aud allowed their re- ligious zeal to carry them so far as to destroy many of the most interesting old churches in the city—a fact that accounts for the want of venerable ecclesiastical edifices in Prague. The town was, however, afterwards rebuilt by the imperialists upon an improved scale. Under Rudolf IJ. (1576-1612) a second season of prosperity was enjoyed ; Copernicus, Tycho Brahe, and other men emineut in science, art, or letters flocked to the court of this enliglitened monarch and contributed to the importance of his capital. Prague suffered its full share of the evils of the Thirty Years' War, which may be said to have begun here with the precipitation of the councillors from the window of the Hradschin (1618), and to have ended here with the occupation of the Kleinseite by the Swedes in 1648. The town was occupied by the imperialists after the defeat of the Protestants at the White Hill in 1620, and its Protestant sympathies caused it to find scant grace in the eyes of tlie victors. It was taken by the Swedes in 1631, by Wallenstein in 1632,*~~

~~by the French and Bavarians in 1741, and by Frederick the Great in 1744. In 1757 it narrowly escaped a second capture by Frederick, who held it closely invested after defeating the Austrians at the battle of Prague, but was compelled to raise the siege by the disaster of Kolin. This was the last time Prague underwent a siege, though it was occupied by the Prussians in 1866. During the present century its material advance has been unbroken, but its harmonious social development has been hampered by the disunion between the Czechish and German elements of its population. The revolutionary ideas of 1848 found a warm response in the nationalist party of Bohemia, and a Pan-Slavonic congress was opened at Prague in May of that year. Unfortunately, however, a collision took place between the military and the populace, and Prince Windiscligritz forcibly dissolved the congress and bombarded the town for two days. Jn 1862 a new impetus was given to the Slavonic agitation by the formation of a Bohemian diet, and since then the fissure between the warring races has grown wider rather than diminished. The Slavs seem to be steadily gaining ground at the expense of the Germans both in numbers and influence. Among the celebrated natives of Prague the most eminent in public interest are John Huss (1369-1415) and Jerome of Prague (c. 1865-1416).~~

~~PRAIHRAN, a city of Victoria, Australia, is situated about 34 miles south-east of Melbourne, with which it is~~

~~connected by the Melbourne and Brighton Railway, and by road over a fine iron girder bridge which crosses the~~

~~Yarra. It is a well-built city, with handsome shops and numerous villas. Among the public buildings are the town-hall, with a lofty tower, containing the rooms of the free library, and the mechanics' institute. There are a number of charitable institutions. Prahran was created a municipality in 1856, a borough in 1863, and a city in 1879. The area of the city is 2320 acres, with a popula- tion in 1881 of 21,169.~~

~~PRAIRIE DOG. See Marmot, vol. xv. p. 560.~~

~~*PRAKRIT (praékrta, "common," as contrasted with samskrta, " perfect") is the term applied to the vernacular languages of India derived from Sanskrit. In the San- skrit drama all except the highest male characters speak Prakrit. Prakrit grammar was written in the Hindu scientific style—on the lines of Panini—by Vararuci, one of the "nine gems" of Vikramaditya's court,! and by Hemacandra ; these grammarians distinguish at least four different kinds of Prakrit, the relations and localization of which are by no means clear. The word Prakrit is some- times used of all the still spoken Aryan vernaculars of India. See SANSKRIT.*~~

~~*PRAM, CuristeN HENRIKSEN (1756-1821), Scandi- navian poet, was born in Gudbrandsdal, Norway, in 1756, and educated in Copenhagen, where in 1781 he received an appointment in the chamber of commerce, which gave him considerable leisure for literature. In 1785 he pub- slished Stxrkodder, a romantic epic based on some of the old Scandinavian legends, in fifteen cantos, and in the same year he began to edit Jfinerva, a journal of some influence in Danish literature. He also wrote two trage- dies (Damon and Pythias and Frode and Fingal), several comedies, and a number of tales characterized by bright- ness and humour. In 1819 he removed to the West-Indian island of St Thomas, where he died on 25th November 1821. His select poetical works were after- wards edited, with a biography, by his friend K. L. Rahbek (6 vols., 1824-29). Compare DENMARK, vol. vil. p. 91.*~~

~~*PRATINCOLE, a word apparently invented by Latham (Synopsis, v. p. 222), being the English rendering of Pratincola, applied in 1756 by Kramer (Zilenchus, p. 381) to a bird which had hitherto received no definite name, though it had long before been described and even re- cognizably figured by Aldrovandus (Ornithologia, xvii. 9) under the vague designation of "hirundo marina." It is the Glareola pratincola of modern ornithologists, forming the type of a genus Glareola, founded by Brisson ? in 1760, and unquestionably belonging (as is now generally ad- mitted) to the group Limicolx, being either placed in the Family Charadrudz or regarded as constituting a separate Family Glareolide. The Pratincoles, of which some eight or nine species have been described, are all small birds, slenderly built and mostly delicately coloured, with a short stout bill, a wide gape, long pointed wings, and a tail more or less forked. In some of their habits they are thoroughly Plover-like, running very swiftly and breeding on the*~~

~~*ground, but on the wing they have much the appearance of Swallows, and like them feed, at least partly, while flying.? The ordinary Pratincole of Europe,*~~

~~*1 The era of Vikramaditya is reckoned from 56 u.c., but many authorities place him 550 a.D.*~~

~~*2 Not by Gmelin as inadvertently misstated (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 19, note 1).*~~

~~*3 This eombination of characters for many years led systematizers astray, though some of them were from the first eorreet in their notions as to the Pratineole's position. Linnzus, even in his latest publication, placed it in the genus Hirundo ; but the interleaved and annotated copies of his Systema Naturz in the Linnean Society's library shew the species marked for separation and insertion in the Order Gralle—Pratincola trachelia being the name by whieli he had meant to designate it in any future edition. He seenis to have been indueed to this change of view mainly through a specimen of the bird sent to him by John the brother of Gilbert White; but the opinion*~~

~~*660*~~

~~*G. pratincola, breeds abundantly in many parts of Spain, Barbary, and Sicily, along the valley of the Danube, and in Southern Russia, while owing to its great powers of flight it frequently wanders far from its home, and more than a score of examples have been recorded as occurring in the British Islands. In the south-east of Europe a second and closely-allied species, G. nordmanni or G. melanoptera, which has black instead of chestnut inner wing-coverts, accompanies or, further to the eastward, replaces it ; and in its turn it is replaced in India, China, and Australia by G. orientalis. Australia also possesses another species, G. grallaria, remarkable for the great length of its wings and much longer legs, while its tail is scarcely forked—peculiarities that have led to its being considered the type of a distinct genus or subgenus Sttia. Two species, G. lactea and G. cinerea, from India and Africa respectively, seem by their pale coloration to be desert forms, and they are the smallest of this curious little group. The species whose mode of nidification is known lay either two or three eggs,*~~

~~*stone-coloured, blotched, spotted, and streaked with black or brownish-grey. The young when hatched are clothed in down and are able to run at once — just as are young Plovers. Pee 7)*~~

~~*PRATO, a city and bishop's see of Italy, in the province of Florence, on the north edge of the alluvial plain which extends between Florence and Pistoia. By rail it is dis- tant from the former city 114 miles and from the latter 93. The cathedral of St Stephen, which stands in a square surrounded by houses of the 16th century, is partly of the 12th and partly of the 14th and 15th centuries. The facade, in alternate bands of white calcareous sand- stone and green serpentine, has a fine doorway and a bas- relief by Luca della Robbia ; but the most striking external feature is the lovely open-air pulpit at an angle of the building, erected (1428) by Donatello and Michelozzo for displaying to the people without risk the Virgin's girdle, brought from the Holy Land by a knight of Prato in 1130. The chapel of the Girdle has frescos by Agnolo Gaddi and a statue of the Virgin by Giovanni Pisano ; and the frescos in the choir are considered the most im- portant work of Fra Filippo Lipri (qg.v.). The municipal palace also possesses a collection of Lippi's paintings. Prato is a busy industrial town, the seat of a great straw- plaiting establishment, paper-mills, brass-foundries, é&c., and outside of the gates which pierce the old city walls several small suburbs have grown up. The city had 13,410 inhabitants in 1881 (inclusive of the suburbs, 15,510) and the commune 16,641.*~~

~~*Prato is said to be first mentioned by name in 1107, but the cathedral appears as early as 1048 as the parish church of Borgo Cornio or Santo Stefano. In 1313 the town acknowledged the authority of Robert, king of Naples, and in 1350 Niccola Acciajoli, seneschal of Joanna, sold it to the Florentines for 17,500 florins of gold. In 1512 it was sacked by the Spaniards under General Car- dona. In 1653 it obtained the rank of city.*~~

~~*PRATT, Cuartzs. See Campen, Eart.*~~

~~*PRAXITELES, a Greek sculptor, son and apparently also pupil of the Athenian Cephisodotus. An account of his works is given in vol. ii. p. 361; but since that was written there has been found at Olympia, where it still remains, a marble statue from his hand, Hermes carrying the infant Dionysus. Though a work of comparatively youthful years, as may be*~~

~~*inferred from his obvious in- debtedness to his father Cephisodotus, particularly in the published in 1769 by Scopoli (Ann. I. hist. naturalis p. 110) had doubtless contributed thereto, though the earlier judgment to the same effect of Brisson, ag mentioned above, had been disregarded. Want of space here forbids a notice of the different erroneous assign- ments of the form, some of them made even by recent authors, who*~~

~~*neglected the clear evidence afforded by the internal structure of the*~~

~~*Pratincole. It must suffice to state that Sundevall in 1878 (Tentamen,*~~

~~*86) placed Glareola amon apri Y iti i g the Caprimulgide osteology shews cannot be maintained or a Haecaness" oe ee*~~

~~*PRA—PRE*~~

~~*figure of Dionysus, it is nevertheless a masterpiece in those qualities for which Praxiteles was famed in antiquity, the representation of what is called sympathetic types of human or divine beings, and the rendering of very subtle phases of emotion. 'The Hermes, while massive in build, is flexible and sensitive in his skin and flesh, indolent in his attitude, his mind sufficiently occupied for the moment in trifling with the infant on his left arm. In recent years it has been sought to prove that certain of the sculptures attri- buted in antiquity to Praxiteles were really the work of a grandfather of his of the same name. But the tendency of investigation has rather been to dispel these views as illusory.*~~

~~*PRECEDENCE. This word in the sense in which it is here employed means priority of place, or superiority of rank, in the conventional system of arrangement under which the more eminent and dignified orders of the com- munity are classified on occasions of public ceremony and in the intercourse of private life. In the United Kingdom there is no complete and comprehensive code whereby the scheme of social gradation has been defined and settled, once and for all, on a sure and lasting foundation. The principles and rules at present controlling it have been formulated at different periods and have been derived from various sources. The crown is the fountain of honour, and it is its undoubted prerogative to confer on any of its sub- jects, in any part of its dominions, such titles and dis- tinctions*~~

~~*and such rank and place as to it may seem meet and convenient. Its discretion in this respect is altogether unbounded at common law, and is limited in those cases only wherein it has been submitted to restraint by Act of parliament. In the old time all questions of precedence came in the ordinary course of things within the juris- diction of the Court of Chivalry, in which the lord high constable and earl marshal presided as judges, and of which the kings of arms, heralds, and pursuivants were the assessors and executive officers. When, however, points of unusual moment and magnitude happened to be brought into controversy, they were occasionally considered and decided by the sovereign in person, or by a special commission, or by the privy council, or even by the parlia- ment itself. But it was not until towards the middle of the 16th century that precedence was made the subject of any legislation in the proper meaning of the term.!*~~

~~*In 1539 an Act "for the placing of the Lords in Parlia- ment" (31 Hen. VIII. c. 10) was passed at the instance of the king, and by it the relative rank of the members of the royal family, of the great officers of state and the household, and of the hierarchy and the peerage was de- finitely and definitively ascertained? In 1563 an Act "for declaring the authority of the Lord Keeper of the Great Seal and the Lord Chancellor to be the same " (5 Eliz. c. 18) also declared their precedence to be the same. In 1689 an*~~

~~*1 Ample materials for the satisfaction of the curiosity of those who are desirous of investigating the history of precedence under its wider and more remote aspects will be found in such writers as Selden or Mackenzie, together with the authorities quoted or referred to by them—Selden, Titles of Honor, part ii. p. 740 sg. (London, 1672); Mackenzie, Observations upon the Laws and Customs of Nations as to Precedency (Edinburgh, 1680, and also reprinted in Guillim, Display of Heraldry, 6th ed., London, 1724).*~~

~~*? Sir Bernard Burke, Ulster king of arms, in his Book of Precedence, cites 1 Edw. VI. c. 7,an Act " for the Continuance of Actions after the death of any king of this Realm," as a statute bearing on precedence, since, he says, "it enumerates the then names of dignity." But, as the late Sir Charles Young, Garter king of arms, has pointed out in one of his privately printed tracts, the object of the Act was simply to prevent the abatement of suits under certain circumstances, and the names of dignity therein enumerated are*~~

~~enumerated in their wrong order. If the statute of Edward VI. had any effect on precedence, dukes would precede the archbishops, barons the bishops, and knights the judges,~~

~~which they have never done, and which parliament could never have intended that they should do.~~

~~2~~

~~PREACH DENCE~~

~~Act "for enabling Lords Commissioners of the Great Seal to execute the office of Lord Chancellor or Lord Keeper " (1 Will. and Mary c. 21) gave to the commissioners not being peers of the realm place next to the speaker of the House of Commons and to the speaker place next to the peers of the realm. In 1707 the Act of Union with Scotland (6 Anne c. 11) provided that all peers of Scotland should~~

~~be peers of Great Britain! and should have rank immedi-.~~

~~ately after the peers of the like degrees in England at the time of the Union and before all peers of Great Britain of the like degrees created after the Union. In 1800 the Act of Union with Ireland (39 and 40 Geo. III. ¢. 67) pro- vided that the lords spiritual of Ireland should have rank immediately after the lords spiritual of the same degree in Great Britain, and that the lords temporal of Ireland should have rank immediately after the lords temporal of the same degree in Great Britain at the time of the Union, and further that "'peerages of Ireland created after the Union should have precedence with peerages of the United Kingdom created after the Union according to the dates of their creation." At different times too during the current century several statutes have been passed for the reform and extension of the judicial organization which have very materially affected the precedence of the judges, more especially the Judicature Act of 1873 (36 and 37 Vict. ce. 66), under which the lords justices of appeal and the justices of the High Court now receive their appointments. But the statute of Henry VIII. "for the placing of the Lords" still remains the only legislative measure in which it has been attempted to deal directly and systematically with any large and important section of the scale of general precedence ;~~

~~*and the law, so far as it relates to the ranking of the sovereign's immediate kindred whether lineal or collateral, the principal ministers of the crown and court, and both the spiritual and temporal members of the House of Lords, is to all practical intents and purposes what it was made by that statute nearly 350 years ago. Where no Act of parliament applies, precedence is determined either by the will and pleasure of the sovereign or by what is accepted as "ancient usage and established custom." Of the sovereign's will and pleasure the appropriate method of announcement is by warrant under the sign-manual, or letters patent under the great seal. But, although the crown has at all periods very frequently conceded special privileges of rank and place to particular persons, its interference with the scale of general precedence has been rare and exceptional. In 1540 it was provided by warrant from Henry VIII. that certain officers of the house-hold therein named should precede the secretaries of state when and if they were under the degree of barons.2, In 1612 James I. directed by letters patent, not without long and elaborate argument in the Star Chamber, that baronets, then newly created, should be ranked after the younger sons of viscounts and barons, and that a number of political and judicial functionaries should be ranked between knights of the Garter and such knights bannerets as should be made by the sovereign in person "'under his Standard displayed in an Army Royal in open war."? Four years later he further directed, also by letters patent, that the sons of baronets and their wives and the daughters of baronets should be placed before the sons of knights and their wives*~~

~~*1 For the parliamentary rights of Scottish peers, see PEERAGE, vol. xviil. p. 466.*~~

~~*2 Quoted by Sir Charles Young from State Papers: published by Authority (4to, 1830) p. 628, in Privy Councillors and their Pre- cedence (1850) p. 15.*~~

~~*3 Patent Rolls, 10th Jac., part x. mem. 8. It is commonly stated that the bannerets here referred to could be made by the prince of Wales as wellas by the king. But the privilege was conferred by James J. on Henry, the then prince of Wales, only (Selden, Titles of Honor, part ii. p. 750).*~~

~~*and the daughters of knights " of what degree or order so- ever." And again in 1620 the same king commanded by warrant ""'after solemn argument before his Majesty" that the younger sons of earls should precede knights of the privy council and knights of the Garter not being "' barons or of a higher degree."® If we add to these ordinances the provisions relating to precedence contained in the statutes of several of the orders of knighthood which since then have been instituted or reconstructed, we shall nearly, if not quite, exhaust the catalogue of the interpositions of the sovereign with regard to the rank and place of classes as dis- tinguished from individuals. Of "ancient usage and estab- lished custom " the records of the College of Arms furnish the fullest and most trustworthy evidence. Among them in particular there is a collection of early tables of preced- ence which were published by authority at intervals from the end of the 14th to the end of the 15th century, and to which peculiar weight has been attached by many success- ive generations of heralds. On them, indeed, as illustra- tive of and supplementary to the action of parliament and the crown, all subsequent tables of precedence have been in great measure founded. 'The oldest is the "' Order of All Estates of Nobles and Gentry," prepared apparently for the coronation of Henry IV. in 1399, under the super- vision of Ralph Nevill, earl of Westmoreland and earl marshal ; and the next is the " Order of All States of Wor- ship and Gentry," prepared, as announced in the heading, for the coronation of Henry VI. in 1429, under the super- vision of the lord protector Humphrey, duke of Gloucester, and the earl marshal, John Mowbray, duke of Norfolk. Two more are of the reign of Edward IV., and were sever- ally issued by John Tiptoft, earl of Worcester and lord high constable, in 1467, and by Anthony Widvile, Earl Rivers and lord high constable, in 1479. The latest is commonly and shortly known as the "' Series Ordinum," and was drawn up by a special commission presided over by Jasper Tudor, duke of Bedford, it is presumed for observance at the marriage of Henry VII. and Elizabeth of York in 1486. 'To these may be added the "' Order for the Placing of Lords and Ladies," taken at a grand enter- tainment given by command of Henry VIII. at the king's manor-house of Richmond in 1520 by Charles Somerset, earl of Worcester, lord chamberlain of the household, to the French ambassador, Olivier de la Vernade, seigneur de la Batie; the "Precedency of All Estates," arranged in 1594 by the commissioners for executing the office of earl marshal ; and the " Roll of the King's Majesty's most Royal Proceeding through London"*~~

~~*from the Tower to Whitehall on the eve of the coronation of James I., also arranged by the commissioners for executing the office of earl marshal. On many isolated points, too, of more or less importance special declaratory decisions have been from time to time propounded by the earls marshal, their substitutes and deputies ; for example, in 1594, when the younger sons of dukes were placed before viscounts ; in 1625, when the rank of knights of the Bath and their wives was fixed ; and in 1615 and 1677, when the eldest sons of the younger sons of peers were placed before the eldest sons of knights and of baronets. It is from these miscellaneous sources that the precedence among others of all peeresses, the eldest sons and their wives and the daughters of all peers, and the younger sons and their wives of all dukes, marquesses, and earls is ascertained and established. And further, for the purpose of proving continuity of practice and disposing of minor questions not otherwise and more conclusively set at rest, the official programmes and accounts preserved*~~

~~*4 Patent Rolls, 14th Jac., part. ii. mem, 24; Selden, Titles of Honor, part ii. p. 752.*~~

~~*5 Cited by Sir Charles Young, Order of Precedence, with Authorities and Remarks, p. 27 (London, 1851).*~~

~~*662*~~

~~*by the heralds of different public solemnities and proces- sions, such as coronations, royal marriages, state funerals, national thanksgivings, and so on, have always been con- sidered to be of great historical and technical value.?*~~

~~*1.—General Precedence of Men.*~~

~~*The sovereign; (1) prince of Wales; (2) younger sons of the sovereign; (3) grandsons of the sovereign ; (4) brothers of the sovereign; (5) uncles of the sovereign ; (6) nephews of the sovereign ;? (7) archbishop of Canter- bury, primate of all England; (8) lord high chancellor of Great Britain or lord keeper of the great seal; (9) archbishop of York, primate of England ;* (10) lord high treasurer of Great Britain ;* (11) lord president of the privy council; (12) lord keeper of the privy seal ;° (13) lord great chamberlain of*~~

~~England; (14) lord high constable of England; (15) earl marshal; (16) lord high admiral ; (17) lord steward of the household ; (18) lord~~

~~1 Selden, Titles of Honor, part ii. p. 753.~~

~~2 The precedence of the members of the royal family depends on their relationship to the reigning sovereign and not on their relation- ship to any of the predecessors of the reigning sovereign. It is pro- vided by 31 Hen. VIII. c. 10 that uo person, "except only the King's children," shall have place "at the side of the Cloth of Estate in the Parliament Chamber," and that "the King's Son, the King's Brother, the King's Nephew, or the King's Brother's or Sister's Sons" shall have place before all prelates, great officers of state, and peers, Lord Chief Justice Coke was of opinion that the king's nephew meant the king's grandson or nepos (Institutes iv., cap. 77). But, as Mr Justice Blackstone says, "under the description of the King's children his grandsons are held to be included without having recourse to Sir Edward Coke's interpretation of nephew" (Commentaries, i. ch. 4). Besides, if grandson is to be understood by nephew, the king's grand- son would be placed after the king's brother. The prince of Wales is not specifically mentioned in the statute "for the placing of the Lords'; but, as he is always, whether the son or the grandson of the sovereign, the heir-apparent to the crown, he is ranked next to the sovereign or the queen-consort. With the exception of the prince of Wales, all the male relations of the sovereign are ranked first in the order of their degrees of consanguinity with him or her, and secondly, in the order of their proximity to the succession to the crown; thus the members of the several groups into which the royal family is divided take precedence according to their own seniority and the seniority of their fathers or mothers, the sons of the sons or brothers of the sovereign being preferred to the sons of the daughters or sisters of the sovereign among the sovereign's grandsons and nephews.~~

~~3 By 31 Hen. VIII. c. 10, the king's vicegerent "for good and due ministration of justice in all causes aud cases touching the ecclesi- astical jurisdiction" is placed immediately before the archbishop of Canterbury. The office of vicegerent or vicar-general was then held by Thomas, Lord Cromwell, afterwards earl of Essex, together with that of lord privy seal, and it was never conferred on any other person. By the Act of Union with~~

~~*Ireland the archbishops of Ireland had place next to the archbishops of England, and if consecrated before and not after the disestablishment of the church in Ireland they retain this position under the Irish Church Act of 1869. At the coronation of William IV. the lord chancellor of Ireland walked next after the lord chancellor of Great Britain and before the lord president of the council and lord privy seal. In Ireland, if he is a peer he has precedence between the archbishops of Armagh aud Dublin, and if he is not a peer after the archbishop of Dublin. But, except in the House of Lords, the precedence of the lord chancellor of Great Britain or the lord keeper of the great seal is the same whether he is a peer or a commoner. The lord keeper has the same precedence as the lord chancellor under 5 Eliz. c. 18. But the last appointment to the lord keepership was that of Sir Robert Henley, afterwards Lord Henley, lord chancellor, and earl of Northington, in 1757, and the office is not likely to be revived.*~~

~~*4 The last lord high treasurer was Charles Talbot, duke of Shrews- bury, in 1714; since then the office has been executed by commission and as a dignity is practically extinct. None of the commissioners— neither the first lord, who is now always the prime minister, nor any of the other or junior lords—of the treasury have any official precedence whatever.*~~

~~*5 The lord president of the council and the lord privy seal, if they are peers, are placed by 31 Hen. VIII. c. 10 before all dukes except dukes related to the sovereign in one or other of the degrees of con- Sanguinity specified in the Act. And, since the holders of these offices have been and are always peers, their proper precedence if they are commoners has never been determined.*~~

~~*PRECEDENCE*~~

~~*chamberlain of the household ;® (19) dukes ;7 (20) mar-*~~

~~*6 It is provided by 31 Hen. VIIL c. 10 that "the Great Chamber- lain, the Constable, the Marshal, the Lord Admiral, the Grand Master or Lord Steward, and the King's Chamberlain shall sit and be placed after the Lord Privy Seal in manner and form following : that is to say, every one of them shall sit and be placed above all other personages being of the same estates or degrees that they shall happen to be of, that is to say the Great*~~

~~*Chamberlain first, the Constable next, the Marshal third, the Lord Admiral the fourth, the Grand Master or Lord Steward the fifth, and the King's Chamberlain the sixth." The lord high steward of England is not mentioned in the Act for the placing of the Lords, " because it was intended," Lord Chief Justice Coke says, "that when the use of him should be necessary he should not endure longer than hac vice" (Inst. iv., 77). But it may be noted that, when his office is called out of abeyance for coronations or trials by the House of Lords, the lord high steward is the greatest of all the great officers of state in England. The office of lord great chamberlain of England is hereditary, and is held jointly during alternate reigns by the heads of the houses of Willoughby de Eresby and Cholmondeley as representing co-heiresses of the Berties, dukes of Ancaster, who de- rived it from an heiress of the De Veres, earls of Oxford, in whose line it had descended from the reign of Henryl By a private Act, 1 Geo. I. c. 8, passed previous to the advancement of Robert Bertie, marquess of Lindsey, to the dukedom of Ancaster in 1715, it was provided that the tenure of the great chamberlainship should not give him and his heirs precedence of all other dukes except when in the immediate dis- charge of the functions of the office; and Sir Bernard Burke still restricts the precedence of the lord great chamberlain to him " when in actual performance of official duty" (Book of Precedence, p. 10). But, as Sir Charles Young justly contends, "the limitations of this statute (1 Geo. I. c. 8) failed on the death of the last Duke of Ancaster in 1809 {he should have said "'the last duke of Ancaster, who held the great chamberlainship in 1779"], when the precedence of the office of Great Chamberlain fell under the operation of the 31st of Henry VIII." (Order of Precedence, p. 20). The office of lord high constable of England is called out of abeyance for and pending coronations only. The office of earl marshal is hereditary in the Howards, dukes of Norfolk, premier dukes and, as earls of Arundel, premier earls of England, under a grant in special tail male from Charles II. in 1672. The office of lord high admiral, like the office of lord high treasurer, is practically extinct as a dignity. Since the reign of Queen Anne there has been only one lord high admiral, namely, William, duke of Clarence, afterwards William IV., for a few mouths in the Canning administration of 1827. The office is executed by commission, the lords of the admiralty being as destitute of any official precedence as the lords of the treasury, although the first lord of the admiralty is invariably a leading cabinet minister. The lord steward aud the lord chamberlain of the*~~

~~household are always peers, and have seldom been under the degree of earls. We may here remark that both the Scottish and Irish Acts of Union make no reference to the precedeuce of the great officers of state of Scotland and Ireland. Not to mention the prince of Wales, who is by birth steward of Scot- land, the earl of Shrewsbury is hereditary great seneschal of Ireland, and the earl of Errol is hereditary lord high constable of Scotland ; but what places they are entitled to in the scale of general precedence is altogether doubtful and uncertain. In Ireland the great seneschal ranks after the lord chancellor if he is 2 commoner, and after the archbishop of Dublin if the lord chancellor is a peer, and in both cases before dukes (" Order of Precedence," Dublin Gazette, 3d June 1848). Again, on George IV.'s visit to Edinburgh in 1821 the lord high constable had place as the first subject in Scotland immediately after the members of the royal family. At every coronation from that of George III. to that of Queen Victoria, the lord high constable of Scotland has been placed next to the earl marshal of England, and, although no rank Has been assigned on these occasions to the hereditary great seneschal of Ireland, the lord high constable of Ireland appointed for the ceremony has been at all or most of them placed next to the lord high constable of Scotland. It is worthy of notice, however, that Sir George Mackenzie, writing when lord advocate of Scotland in the reign of Charles II., says that "the Constable and Marischal take not place as Officers of the Crown but according to their creation as Earls," and he moreover expresses the opinion that "it seems very strange that these who ride upon the King's right and left hand when he returns from his Parliaments and who guard the Parliament itself, and the Honours, should have no precedency by their offices" (Odser- vations, &c., p. 25, in Guillim's Display of Heraldry, p. 461 sg.3 but see also Wood-Douglas, Peerage of Scotland, vol. i. p. 557).~~

~~7 Both Sir Charles Young and Sir Bernard Burke place " Dukes of the Blood Royal" before dukes, their eldest sons before marquesses, and their younger sons before marquesses' eldest sons. In the " Ancient Tables of Precedence," which we have already cited, dukes of the blood royal are always ranked before other dukes, and in most of them their eldest sons and in some of them their younger sons are placed in a corresponding order of precedence. But in this connexion the words of the Act for the placing of the~~

~~*Lords are perfectly plain and unam- biguous: "All Dukes not aforementioned," ¢.e., all except only such*~~

~~*PREECE*~~

~~*quesses ; (21) dukes' eldest sons ;! (22) earls; (23) mar- quesses' eldest sons; (24) dukes' younger sons; (25) vis- counts ; (26) earls' eldest sons ; (27) marquesses' younger sons; (28) bishops; (29) barons ,;? (30) speaker of the House of Commons; (31) commissioners of the great seal ;* (32) treasurer of the household ; (33) comptroller of the household ; (34) master of the horse ; (35) vice-chamber- lain of the household; (36) secretaries of state ;* (37)*~~

~~*as shall happen to be the king's son, the king's brother, the king's uncle, the king's nephew, or the king's brother's or sister's son, '¢Marquesses, Earls, Visconnts, and Barons, not having any of the offices aforesaid, shall sit and be placed after their ancienty as it hath peen accustomed." As Lord Chief Justice Coke and Mr Justice Black- stone observe, the degrees of consanguinity witk the sovereign to which precedence is given by 31 Hen. VIII. c. 10 are the same as those within which it was made high treason by 28 Hen. VIII. c. 18 for any man to contract marriage without the consent of the king. Queen Victoria, by letters patent under the great seal in 1865, ordained that, " besides the children of Sovereigns of these realms, the children of the sons of any of the Sovereigns of Great Britain and Ireland shall have and at all times hold and enjoy the style or attribute of 'Royal Highness' with their titular dignity of Prince or Princess pre- fixed to their respective Christian names, or with their other titles of honour." But, notwithstanding this, their rank and place are still governed by the Act for the placing of the Lords. Thus the duke of Cambridge, although he is, as the son of a son of George III., pro- perly designated " Royal Highness " under the letters patent of 1865, has no precedence as the first cousin of the sovereign under the statute of 1539. In the same way the duke of Cumberland has no precedence as the first cousin once removed of Queen Victoria, and being the grandson only of a son of George III. would not bea " Royal Highness" at all if his father had not been, like his grandfather, king of Hanover. In Garter's Roll of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, the official list of the House of Lords, the duke of Cambridge is entered before*~~

~~*the archbishop of Canterbury, instead of in the precedence of his dukedom after the duke of Leinster, while the duke of Cumberland is entered in the precedence of his dukedom after the duke of Northumberland. By the etiquette of society, however, both of them are regarded and treated as royal dukes, and even in parliament they are always alluded to not as '"'noble"' but as "illustrious." Under the combined opera- tion of the Act for the placing of the Lords and the Acts of Union * with Scotland (art. 23) and with Ireland (art. 4), peers of the same degrees, as dukes, marquesses, earls, viscounts, and barons, severally, have precedence according to priority in the creation of their respective peerages. But peerages of England created before 1707 precede peer- ages of Scotland created before 1707, peerages of Great Britain created between 1707 and 1801 precede peerages of Ireland created before 1801, and peerages of Ireland created before 1801 precede peerages of the United Kingdom and of Ireland created after 1801, which take precedence in common. The relative precedence of the members of the House of Lords, including the representative peers of Scotland and Treland, is officially set forth in Garter's Roll, which is prepared by the Garter king of arms at the commencement of each session of parliament, that of the Scottish peers generally in the Union Roll, and that of the Irish peers generally in Ulster's Roll, a record which is under the charge of and is periodically corrected by the Ulster king of arms. The Union Roll is founded on the " Decreet of Ranking" pronounced and promulgated by a royal commission in 1606, which, in the words of an eniinent authority in such matters, " was adopted at once as the roll of the peers in Parliament, convention, and all public meetings, and continued to be called uninterruptedly with such alterations upon it as judgments of the Court of Session upon appeal in modification of the precedency of certain peers rendered necessary, with the omission of such dignities as became extinct and with the addition from time to time of newly created peerages—down to the last sitting of the Scottish Parliament on the lst May 1707" (The Earldom of Mar, &c., by the earl of Crawford (25th) and Balcarres (8th), vol. ii. p. 16). As the crown was precluded by the Act of Union from creating peerages of Scotland after the Union, all Scottish peers in their several degrees have rank and place before all peers of Great Britain, Ireland, and the United Kingdom.*~~

~~*1 Eldest sons of peers of any given degree are of the same rank as, but are to be placed immediately after, peers of the first degree under that of their fathers; and the younger sons of peers of any given degree are of the same rank, but are to be placed immediately after peers of the second degree and the eldest sons of peers of the first degree under that of their fathers.*~~

~~*2 Secretaries of state, if they are barons, precede all other barons under 31 Hen. VIII. c. 10. But if they are of any higher degree their rank is not influenced by their official position.*~~

~~*3 Under 1 Will. and Mary c. 21, being the only commissioners for the execution of any office who have precedence assigned to them.*~~

~~*4 The officers of the household who, under Henry VIII.'s warrant of 1540, precede the secretaries of state have been for a long time*~~

~~*DENCE 663*~~

~~*viscounts' eldest sons; (38) earls' younger sons; (39) barons' eldest sons; (40) knights of the Garter;> (41) privy councillors ;® (42) chancellor of the exchequer ; (43) chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster ; (44) lord chief justice of England ; (45) master of the rolls; (46) lords justices of appeal ;? (47) judges of the High Court of Justice ;§ (48) knights bannerets made by the sovereign in person ; (49) viscounts' younger sons; (50) barons' younger sons ; (51) baronets ;9 (52) knights bannerets not made by the sovereign in person ; (53) knights of the first class of the Bath, the Star of India, and St Michael and St George ;!° (54) knights of the second class of the Bath, the Star of India, and St Michael and St George ;! (55) knights bachelors ;!? (56) eldest sons of the younger sons of peers; (57) baronets' eldest sons; (58) knights' eldest sons ; (59) baronets' younger sons ; (60) knights' younger*~~

~~*always peers or the sons of peers, with personal rank higher, and usually far higher, than their official rank. The practical result is, seeing also that the great seal is only very rarely indeed in commission, that the secretaries of state, when they are commoners whose personal precedence is below a baron's, have official precedence immediately after the speaker of the House of Commons. The principal secretaries, for so they are all*~~

~~*designated, are officially equal to one another in dignity, and are placed among themselves according to seniority of appointment.*~~

~~*5 During more than two centuries only one commoner has been indebted for his precedence to his election into the order, and that was Sir Robert Walpole, the minister, who at the coronation of George II. in 1727 was placed as a knight of the Garter immediately before privy councillors. The proper precedence of both knights of the Thistle and knights of St Patrick is undecided.*~~

~~*6 Privy councillors of Great Britain and of Ireland take precedence in common according to priority of admission. The chancellors of the exchequer and of the duchy of Lancaster, the lord chief justice of England, the master of the rolls, and the lords justices of appeal are always members of the privy council, and have rank and place as privy councillors, if they are not also peers.*~~

~~*7 The lords justices of appeal have precedence among themselves according to seniority of appointment. Until recently they were pre- ceded by the lord chief justice of the Common Pleas and the lord chief baron of the Exchequer (divisions of the HIgh Court of Justice). But under existing arrangements these offices have fallen into abeyance, although they have not been formally abolished. The vice-chancellors used to follow the lords justices of appeal; but, in spite of the fact that there is still one vice-chancellor remaining, the office of vice- chancellor is practically extinct and will altogether disappear on his decease. In Ireland all these offices are in existence; but they have no precedence allotted to them in England; as the judges holding them are invariably privy councillors, however, they are ranked accordingly. And it is the same with regard to the lord justice-general and the lord justice-clerk in Scotland.*~~

~~*8 The judges of all the divisions of the HIgh Court of Justice are ranked together according to seniority of appointment. Neither the senators of the College of Justice in Scotland nor the judges of the various divisions of the HIgh Court in Ireland have any precedence in England. The precedence of the Scottish judges among themselves is settled by a royal warrant of 1729, which is printed in full by Nisbet in his System of HIeraldry (vol. ii. p. 277). The precedence of the Irish judges among themselves is the same as the*~~

~~*precedence of the English judges among themselves used to be before the offices of chief justice of the Common Pleas and chief baron of the Exchequer were suspended.*~~

~~*9 It is a question whether baronets ought or onght not to have pre- cedence, like peers, according as they are of England, Scotland, Great Britain, Ireland, or the United- Kingdom. Baronets are not referred to in either the Scottish or the Irish Act of Union; and Sir Bernard Burke contends that, since the Acts of Union are silent with regard to them, they are still entitled to whatever precedence was originally conferred on them. He therefore places the.whole body of the baronets together in the order merely of the dates of their several creations, and in this he appears to us to have both law and reason on his side.*~~

~~*10 These knights consist of grand crosses of the first, grand com- manders of the second, and grand crosses of the third order, and have precedence in their respective orders according to seniority of creation. By the statutes of the order of the Bath as revised in 1847 it is ordained that the knights grand crosses are to be placed "next to and immediately after baronets," thus superseding knights bannerets not created by the sovereign in person.*~~

~~*11 Knights commanders of all three orders are placed in each order according to seniority of creation.*~~

~~*22 Knights bachelors are ranked together according to seniority of creation, whether they are made by the sovereign or the lord lieutenant of Ireland.*~~

~~*664*~~

~~*sons ;! (61) companions of the Bath, the Star of India, St Michael and St George, and the Indian Empire ;? (62) esquires ;® (63) gentlemen.**~~

~~*1 The sons of all persons, when any specified rank is assigned to them, are placed in the precedence of their fathers. Eldest sons of the younger sons of peers were ranked before the eldest sons of knights by order of the earl marshal, 18th March 1615, and before the eldest sons of baronets by order of the earl marshal, 6th April 1677. But no precedence has been given to*~~

~~*the younger sons of the younger sons of peers, although precedence is given to the younger as well as the eldest sons of baronets and knights by James I.'s decree of 1616. Moreover, no precedence has been given to either the eldest or the younger sons of the eldest sons of peers. — But in practice this omis- sion is generally disregarded, and the children of the eldest sons of dukes, marquesses, and earls, at all events, are accorded the same rank and titles which they would have if their fathers were actual in- stead of quasi peers of the degree next under that of their grandfathers. Sir Charles Young says that 'by decision (Chap. Coll. Arms of 1680) if the eldest son of an Earl died in his father's lifetime leaving a son and heir, such son and heir during the life of the Earl his grandfather is entitled to the same place and precedence as was due to his father : so had the father been summoned to Parliament as the eldest son of a peer the grandson would succeed to the dignity even during the grandfather's lifetime" (Order of Precedence, p. 27). And, of course, what applies to the grandson and heir of an earl applies equally to the grandsons and heirs of dukes and marquesses. But the grandsons and heirs of viscounts and barons are differently sitnated, and have neither honorary additions to their names nor any ascertained place and precedence even by the etiquette of society.*~~

~~*2 Companions are members of the third class of the first three orders aud the only members of the fourth order, except the sovereign and the grand master. Sir Charles Young and Sir Bernard Burke concur in placing the companions of these orders before the eldest sons of the younger sons of peers, on the ground that under their statutes they are entitled to precede "all Esquires of the Realm." But the sons of peers themselves—the eldest as well as the younger —are merely esquires, and are ranked before, and not among, other esquires because they have a particular precedence of their own assigned to them. Similarly the eldest sons of the younger sons of peers and the eldest sons of baronets and of knights who are also esquires, and likewise the younger sons of baronets and of knights who are not esquires, have a particular precedence of their own assigned to them. All of them are placed before esquires as a specific grade in the scale of general precedence, and it seems clear enough that it is before esquires considered as a specific grade that the companions of the orders ought to be placed and not before any other persons who, whether they are or are not esquires,*~~

~~*have a definite and settled rank which is superior to that specific grade in the scale of general precedence.*~~

~~*5 It appears to be admitted on all hands that the following persons are esquires and ought to be so described in all legal documents and processes: first, the eldest sons of peers in the lifetime of their fathers, and the younger sons of peers both in and after the lifetime of their fathers ; secondly, the eldest sons of the younger sons of peers and their eldest sons in perpetual succession, and the eldest sons of baronets and knights; thirdly, esquires created with or without the grant of armorial bearings by the sovereign; fourthly, justices of the peace, barristers at law, and mayors of corporations ; and fifthly, those who are styled esquires in patents, commissions, or appointments to offices under the crown in the state, the household, the army or navy, and elsewhere. Sir Bernard Burke 'accords precedence to serjeants at law and masters in lunacy, not only before esquires as such but also before the companions of the orders of knighthood. It is, however, enough to observe with regard to the first, since no more of them are to be created, that, in spite of the extravagant pretensions which have been frequently urged by them and on their behalf, 'they have not in the general scale," as Sir Charles Young says, "any precedence, and when under the degree of a Knight rank only. as Esquires," and with regard to the second that the statute 8 and 9 Vict. c. 100, on which the Ulster king of arms bases their claims, simply provides that they "shall take the same rank and precedence as the masters in ordinary of the HIgh Court of Chancery," who are now extinct, "apparently," to recur to Sir Charles Young, "assuming the rank of the masters without defining it." 'The masters, however," he adds, "as such have not a settled place in the order of general precedency emanating from any authority by statute or otherwise" (Order of Precedence, p. 71). Sir William Blackstone says that before esquires "the Heralds rank all Colonels, Serjeants at Law, and Doctors in the three learned professions" (Commentaries, i. c. 12). But the only foundation for this statement seems to be a passage in Guillim, which is obviously without any authority.*~~

~~*i beens and lawyers are agreed that gentlemen are those who, an en . grant from the crown, are entitled to bear coat oke, Inst. iv., c. 77; Blackstone, Comm., i. ch. 123*~~

~~Selden, Ti Blackstone, ¢ ar ee . 06). Honor, pt. ii. ch. 8; Guillim, Display of Heraldry,~~

~~PRECEDENCE~~

~~2.—General Precedence of Women.~~

~~The queen ;® (1) princess of Wales; (2) daughters of the sovereign ; (3) wives of the sovereign's younger sons; (4) granddaughters of the sovereign; (5) wives of the sovereign's grandsons; (6) sisters of the sovereign ; (7) wives of the sovereign's brothers; (8) aunts of the sove- reign; (9) wives of the sovereign's uncles; (10) nieces of the sovereign; (11) wives of the sovereign's nephews ; ® (12) duchesses ;" (13) marchionesses ; (14) wives of the eldest sons of dukes; (15) dukes' daughters ;® (16) countesses ; (17) wives of the eldest sons of marquesses ; (18) marquesses' daughters; (19) wives of the younger sons of dukes ; (20) viscountesses ; (21) wives of the eldest sons of earls; (22) earls' daughters; (23) wives of the younger sons of marquesses ; (24) baronesses ; (25) wives of the eldest sons of viscounts ; (26) viscounts' daughters ; (27) wives of the younger sons of earls; (28) wives of the eldest sons of barons; (29) barons' daughters; (30) maids of honour to the queen ;? (31) wives of knights of the Garter; (32) wives of knights bannerets made by the sovereign in person; (33) wives of the younger sons of viscounts ; (34) wives of the younger sons of barons; (35) baronets' wives ; (36) wives of knights bannerets not made by the sovereign in person ; (37) wives of knights grand crosses of the Bath, grand commanders of the Star of India, and grand crosses of St Michael and St George ; (38) wives of knights commanders of the Bath, the Star of India, and St Michael and St George ; (39) knights bachelors' wives ; (40) wives of the eldest sons of the younger sons of peers ; (41) daughters of the younger sons of peers; (42) wives of the eldest sons of baronets ; (43) baronets' daughters ; (44) wives of the eldest sons of knights; (45) knights' daughters ; (46) wives of the younger sons of baronets ; (47) wives of the younger sons of knights ;1° (48) wives of companions of the Bath, the Star of India, St Michael and St George, and the Indian Empire; (49) wives of esquires ;1! (50) gentlewomen.!?~~

~~5 The queen-consort is the second personage in the realm, and has precedence of the queen-dowager. But the husband of a reigning queen has~~

~~*no rank or place except such as is specially accorded to him by the sovereign.*~~

~~*6 There is no Act of parliament or ordinance of the crown regulating the precedence of the female members of the royal family. But the above is the gradation which appears to have become established among them, and follows the analogy supplied by the Act for the placing of the Lords in the case of their husbands and brothers.*~~

~~*7 Peeresses in their own right and peeresses by marriage are ranked together, the first in their own precedence and the second in the pre-cedence of their husbands.*~~

~~*8 Among the daughters of peers there is no distinction between the eldest and the younger as there is among the sons of peers. Their precedence is immediately after the wives of their eldest brothers, and several degrees above the wives of their younger brothers. They are placed among themselves in the precedence of their fathers. But the daughter of the premier duke or baron ranks after the wife of the eldest son of the junior duke or baron.*~~

~~® *Maids of honour to the queen are the only women who have any official precedence. They have the style or title of honourable, and are placed immediately after barons' daughters by Sir Bernard Burke, the rank which is accorded to them by the etiquette of society. But Sir Charles Young does not assign any precedence to them, and we do not know on what authority the Ulster king of arms does so, although he is by no means singular in the course he has taken.*~~

~~*10 The wives of baronets and knights, the wives of the eldest sons and the daughters of the younger sons of peers, and the wives of the sons and the daughters of baronets and knights are all placed sever- ally in the precedence of their respective husbands, husbands' fathers, and fathers.*~~

~~*ll "squire" and "gentleman" are not names of "dignity" but names of "worship," and esquires and gentlemen do not, in strictness, convey or transmit any precedence to their wives or children (see Coke, Jnst. ii., "Of Additions," p. 667).*~~

~~*12“ And generosus and generosa are good additions: and if a gentle-woman be named Spinster in any original writ, 7.e., appeal or indict- ment, she may abate and quash the same, for she hath as good right to that addition as Baroness, Viscountess, Marchioness, or Duchess have to theirs” (Coke, Inst. ii., ““Of Additions,” p. 668).*~~

~~*PREC P ENC EH*~~

~~*Attention to the foregoing tables will show that general precedence is of different kinds as well as of several degrees. It is first either personal or official, and secondly either substantive or derivative. Personal precedence belongs to the royal family, the peerage, and certain specified classes of the commonalty. Official precedence belongs to such of the dignitaries of the church and such of the ministers of state and the household as have had rank and place accorded to them by parliament or the crown, to the speaker of the HIouse of Commons, and to the members of the privy council and the judicature. Substantive pre- cedence, which may be either personal or official, belongs to all those whose rank and place are enjoyed by them independently of their connexion with anybody else, as by the archbishop of Canterbury, the lord high chancellor or the lord great chamberlain, peers and peeresses, baronets, knights, and some esquires. Derivative precedence, which can only be personal, belongs to all those whose rank and place are determined by their consanguinity with or affinity to somebody else, as the lineal and collateral relations of the sovereign, the sons, daughters, and daughters-in-law of peers and peeresses in their own right, and the wives, sons, daughters, and daughters-in-law of baronets, knights, and some esquires. It is to be observed, however, that the precedence of the sovereign is at once official and personal, and that the precedence of peeresses by marriage is at once derivative and substantive. In the case of the sovereign it is his or her actual tenure of the office of king or queen which regulates the rank and place of the various members of the royal family, and in the case of peeresses by marriage, although their rank and place are derivative ‘in origin, yet they are substantive in continuance, since during coverture and widowhood peeresses by marriage are as much peeresses as peeresses in their own right, and their legal and political status is precisely the same as if they had acquired it by creation or inheritance.*~~

~~*Bearing the above definitions and explanations in mind,the following canons or rules may be found practically useful.*~~

~~*1. AnybcJy who is entitled to both personal and official preced- ence is to be placed according to that which implies the higher rank. If, for example, a baron and a baronet are both privy coun- cillors, the precedence of the first is that of a baron and the pre- cedence of the second is that of a privy councillor. And similarly, except as hereafter stated, with respect to the holders of two or more persoual or two or more official dignities.*~~

~~*2. Save in the case of the sovereign, official rank can never supply the foundation for derivative rank. HIence the official preced- ence of a husband or father affords no indication of the personal precedence of his wife or children. The wives and children, for example, of the archbishop of Canterbury, the lord high chancellor, or the speaker of the HIouse of Commons do not participate in their official rank but only in their personal rank whatever it may be.*~~

~~*3. Among subjects men alone can convey derivative rank, except in the case of the daughters and sisters of the sovereign, or of peer- esses in their own right. But no man can acquire any rank or place by marriage. The sons-in-law or brothers-in-law of the sovereign and the husbands of: peeresses in their own right have as such no precedence whatever. And the daughter and heiress of the premier duke of England, unless she happens to be also a peeress in her own right, does not transmit any rank or place to her children.*~~

~~*4, Within the limits of the peerage derivative rank is asa rule always merged in personal, as distinguished from official, substantive rank. If, for example, the younger son of a duke is created a baron or inherits a barony, his precedence ceases to be that of a duke's younger son and becomes that of a baron. But, where the eldest son of a duke, a marquess, or an earl is summoned to the HIouse of Lords in a barony of his father's, or succeeds as or is created a baron, he is still, as before, "commonly called" by some superior title of peerage, as marquess, earl, or viscount, and retains his derivative precedence on all occasions, except in parliament or at ceremonies which he attends in his character as a peer. The younger sons of all peers, however, who are created or who inherit peerages—which they*~~

~~*often do under special limitations—are every- where placed according to their substautive rank, no matter how inferior it may be to their derivative rank. But if the son of a duke or a marquess, whether eldest or younger, or the eldest son of an earl is consecrated a bishop his derivative rank is not merged*~~

~~*665*~~

~~*in his substantive rank, because it is official, and his derivative and personal rank implies the higher precedence. Again, the daughters of dukes, marquesses, and earls who become peeresses by marriage or creation, or who inherit as peeresses, are placed according to their substantive and not according to their derivative rank, although they may thereby be assigned a far lower precedence than that to which their birth entitles them.*~~

~~*5. The widows of peers and baronets have precedence immedi- ately before the wives or widows of the next successors in their husbands' dignities. But the sons and daughters of peers and baronets have precedence immediately before the sons and daughters of the holders of the dignities to whom their fathers succeeded. The reason of this is that the first are senior in the dignities and the second are nearer in the line of succession to them.*~~

~~*6. The widows of peers who marry again either share the pre- cedence of their second husbands or resume the precedence belong- ing to them independently of their marriage with their first husbands. Thus, if the daughter of a duke or an esquire marries first au earl and secondly a baron, although she remains a peeress, she is placed as a baroness instead of a countess. But if either of them should marry a commoner as her second husband, whatever may be his rank or degree, she ceases to be a peeress. While, however, the duke's daughter, if her second husband were not the eldest son of a duke, would resume her precedence as the daughter of a duke, the esquire's daughter would share the precedence of her second husband, whether he were a peer's son, a baronet, a knight, or an esquire. By the etiquette of society, however, the widows of peers who marry again do not forfeit the titles and precedence acquired by their marriage with their first husbauds unless they choose to lay them aside, or unless their own rank or the rank of their second husbands is equal or superior to that of their first husbands.*~~

~~*7. The widows of the eldest and younger sons of dukes and marquesses and of the eldest sons of earls, and also the widows of baronets and knights who marry again, are permitted by the eti- quette of society to keep the titles and rank acquired by their first marriage if their second marriage is with a commoner whose pre- cedence is considerably lower. But the widows of the younger sons of earls and of the eldest and younger sons of viscounts and barons, although their precedence is higher than that of the widows of baronets and knights, are not allowed to retain it, under any circumstances, after a second marriage.*~~

~~*8. Marriage does not affect the precedence of peeresses in their own right unless their husbands are peers whose peerages are of a higher degree, or, being of the same degree, are of more ancient creation than their own. If, for example, a baroness in her own right marries a viscount she is placed and described as a viscountess, or if she marries a baron whose barony is older than hers she is placed in his precedence and described by his title. But if she marries a baron whose barony is junior to hers she keeps her own precedence and title.*~~

~~*9. The daughters of peers, of sons of peers, baronets, and knights retain after marriage the precedence they derive from their fathers, unless they marry peers of any rank or commoners of higher rank than their own. Hence, for example, the daughter of a duke who marries the eldest son of a marquess is placed as a duke's danghter, not as the wife of a marquess's eldest son, and the daughter of a baronet who marries the younger son of a knight is placed asa baronet's daughter and not as the wife of a knight's younger son.*~~

~~*10. What are termed "titles of courtesy" are borne by all the sons and daughters of peers and peeresses in their own right, who in this connexion stand on exactly the same footing. The eldest sons of dukes, marquesses, and earls are designated by the names of one or other of the inferior peerages of their fathers, usually a mar- quessate or an earldom in the first, an earldom or a viscounty in the second, and a viscounty or barony in the third case. But, whatever it may be, it is altogether without effect on the rank and place of the bearer, which are those belonging to him as the eldest son of his father. The younger sons of dukes and marquesses are styled*~~

~~*“lords” followed by both their Christian names and surnames. The younger sons of earls and both the eldest and the younger sons of viscounts and barons are described as “ honourable” before both their Christian names and surnames. The daughters of dukes, marquesses, and earls are styled “ladies” before both their Christian names and surnames. The daughters of viscounts and barons are described as “honourable” before both their Christ- ian uames and surnames. If the eldest son of a marquess or an earl marries a woman of rank equal or inferior to his own, she takes his title and precedence; but if she is of superior rank she retains, with her own precedence, the prefix “lady” before her Christian name followed by the name of her husband’s title of courtesy. Again, if the younger son ofa duke or a marquess marries a woman of rank equal or inferior to his own, she is called ‘“‘ lady,” with his Christian and surnanie following, and is placed in his precedence ; but, if she is of superior rank, she retains, with her own precedence, the prefix “lady” before her Christian name and his surname. If the daughter of a duke, a marquess, or an earl*~~

~~*it — 32*~~

~~*666*~~

~~*marries the younger son of an earl, the eldest or younger son of a*~~

~~*viscount or baron, a baronet, a knight, or an esquire, &c., she retains, with her own precedence, the prefix “lady” before her Christian name and her husband’s surname. If the daughter of a viscount marries the younger son of au earl or anybody of inferior rank to him, or the daughter of a baron marries the younger son of a viscount or anybody of inferior rank to him, she retains her owl precedence with the prefix “honourable” before the addition “Mrs and his surname or Christian name and surname. But, if her hus- band is a baronet or a knight, she is called the Honourable Lady Smith or the Honourable Lady Jones, as the case may be. The wives of the younger sons of earls and of the eldest and younger sons of viscounts and barons, if they are of inferior rank to their husbands, take their precedence and are described as the Honour- able Mrs, with the surnames or Christian names and surnames of their husbands following. It was because the judges were placed by James I. before the younger sons of viscounts and barons that they were accorded the title of “honourable,” and that they are*~~

~~*designated as the Honourable Mr Justice Hawkins or the Honour- able Mr Justice Stephen, instead of as Sir Henry Hawkins or Sir James Stephen, which would connote their inferior personal dignity of knighthood. But in this addition their wives do not participate, since it is merely an official distinction.*~~

~~*It is manifest on even a cursory examination of the tables we have given that, although they embody the only scheme of general precedence, whether for men or for women, which is authoritatively sanctioned or recognized, they are in many respects very imperfectly fitted to meet the circumstances and requirements of the present day. In both of them the limits prescribed to the royal family are pedantically and inconveniently narrow, and stand out in striking contrast to the wide and ample bounds through which the operation of the Royal Marriage Act (12 Geo. III. c. 11) extends the disabilities but not the privileges of the sovereign's kindred. Otherwise the scale of general precedence for women compares favourably enough with the scale of general precedence for men. If, indeed, it includes the queen's maids of honour and the wives of the companions of the knightly orders, there certainly does not see to be any good reason why it should omit the mistress of the robes and the ladies of the bedchamber, or the ladies of the royal order of Victoria and Albert and the imperial order of the Crown of India. But these are trifling matters in themselves, and concern only an extremely minute fraction of the community. The scale of general precedence for men is now in substantially the same condition as that in which it has been for be- tween two and three centuries, and the political, to say nothing of the social, arrangements to which it was framed to apply have in the interval undergone an almost com- plete transformation. The consequence is that a good deal of it has come down to us in the shape of a survival, and has ceased to be of any practical use for the purpose it was originally designed to effect. While it comprises several official and personal dignities which are virtually obsolete and extinguished, it entirely omits the great majority of the members of Government in its existing form, and whole sections of society on a less exalted level, to whom it is universally felt that some rank and place at all events are both in public and in private justly due.*~~

~~As we have already said, it accords no precedence what- ever to the prime minister, whether as premier or as first lord of the treasury. In the same way it ignores not only the first lord of the admiralty but also the presidents of the Board of Trade and the Local Government Board, the post- master-general, the vice-president of the council, and all the~~

~~law officers of the crown.1_ And, when it does confess the Se 2 ee eee eee eee~~

~~ae There are no doubt certain public ceremonials of State, snch as Coronations, Royal Public Funerals, and Processions of the Sovereign me Parliament, ees wherein various pnblic fimetionaries walk and have Mt am certain places assigned to them, lmt which they may fans cate, find the same, as it hy no means follows that they are Fs ae aoe to the same place for having been there once: there age ain extent a precedent furnished thereby, and in some he uniformity of precedence in regard to one class over another~~

~~PRECEDENCE~~

~~presence of any of the sovereign's principal ministers, it commonly places them in positions which are out of all keeping with their actual eminence and importance. It ranks the lord president of the council and the lord privy seal before dukes, while it places the chancellor of the ex- chequer after the younger sons of earls and the eldest sons of barons, and the secretaries of state after the master of the horse and the vice-chamberlain of the household. The lord chancellor still has precedence as the first of the great officers of state, which was allotted to him not as what he is, the head of the judicature, but as what he once was, the prime minister of the sovereign ; and the lord chief justice, who is next to him in regular judicial rank, as presiding over the Common Law Courts, as he presides over the Courts of Equity, is placed after the chancellors of the exchequer and of the duchy of Lancaster, who still have the precedence which was allotted to them not as ministers, which they are, but as judges, which they are no longer. Neither the lord lieutenant of Ireland, the viceroy of India, nor the governor-general of Canada has any rank or place at St James's, where, as well as at Westminster, the lord steward or the lord chainberlain of the household is a much greater and more splendid personage. Again, in the scale of general~~

~~*precedence there are no clergymen except bishops, no lawyers except judges, and no officers'of either the army or the navy from field-marshals and admirals of the fleet downwards. Nor, of course, are any colonial governors or lieutenant-governors entered on it. It contains no mention of under-secretaries of state, chairmen or commissioners of administrative boards, comptrollers or secretaries of Govern- ment departments, lord lieutenants or sheriffs of counties, deputy lieutenants or justices of the peace, members of the House of Commons, or graduates of the universities. It is true that among some of these classes definite systems of subordination are established by either authority or usage, which are carefully observed and enforced in the particular areas and spheres to which they have reference. But we have seldom any means of determining the relative value of a given term in one series as compared with a given term in another series, or of connecting the different steps in the scales of local, professional, or academical pre- cedence with the different steps in the scale of general precedence, to which such scales of special precedence ought to be contributory and supplementary. We know, for example, that major-generals and rear-admirals are of equal rank, that with them are placed commissaries-general and inspectors-general of hospitals and fleets, that in India along with civilians of thirty-one years' standing they immediately follow the vice-chancellors of the Indian uni- versities, and that in relation to the consular service they immediately precede agents-general and consuls-general. But there is nothing to aid us in determining whether in England they should be ranked with, before, or after deans, queen's counsel, or doctors in divinity, who are as destitute as they are themselves of any recognized general precedence, and who, as matters now stand, would certainly have to give place to the younger sons of baronets and knights and the companions of the knightly orders.*~~

~~*The subjoined tables of special precedence, although their authority would not always be admitted in the Col-*~~

~~*has in such cases become established. 'This applies, for instance, to the places of the Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, Law Officers of the Crown, and Masters and Six Clerks in Chancery, who have no definite or fixed place in the tables of precedency regulating the general orders of society, though in reference to State ceremonials they have certain places assigned*~~

~~*in the order of procession in right of their offices, which, however, give them no general rank. Upon such occasions, nevertheless, the legal rank and precedence which they hold in the Courts of Law is observed, and so far establishes among themselves, and in respect to their several classes, their precedency"' (Sir Charles Young, Order of Precedence, &c., pp. 59-61).*~~

~~*PRECEDENCE*~~

~~*lege of Arms, may perhaps assist towards the solution of some of the problems which occasionally arise in ordinary society.*~~

~~*1. Ecclesiastical Precedence.—(1) Archbishop of Canterbury; (2) archbishop of York ; (3) archbishop of Armagh ; (4) archbishop of Dublin ; (5) bishop of London ; (6) bishop of Durham; (7) bishop of Winchester ; (8) other bishops*~~

~~*of England ; (9) bishop of Meath ; (10) other bishops of Ireland ; (11) suffragan bishops of England ; (12) bishop of Sodor and Man; (13) bishops of Scotland ;*~~

~~*- (14) colonial bishops ; (15) deans of cathedrals ; (16) archdeacons ; (17) canous 5*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*(18) rural deans ; (19) rectors ; (20) vicars ; (21) curates.*~~

~~*2. Legal Precedence.—(1) Lord chancellor of Great Britain ; (2) lord chancellor of Ireland ; (3) lords of appeal in ordinary in the HIouse of Lords ; (4) members of the judicial committee of the privy council ; (5) lord chief justice of England ; (6) lord justice-general and president of the Court of Session of Scotland ; (7) lord chief justice. of Ireland; (8) master of the rolls in England ; (9) lord justice-clerk and president of the second division of the Court of Session of Scotland ; (10) master of the rolls in Ireland ; (11) lords justices of appeal in England ; (12) lords chief justice of the Common Pleas, chief baron of the Exchequer, and justices of appeal in Ireland ; (13) vice-chancellor in England ; (14) vice-chancellor in Ireland ; (15) judges of the HIgh Court of Justice in England ; (16) senators of the College of*~~

~~*Justice in Scotland ; (17) judges of the High Court of Justice in Ireland ; (18) attorney-general for England ; (19) lord advocate of Scotland ; (20) attorney-general for Ireland ; (21) solicitor-general for England ; (22) solicitor-general for Scotland; (23) solicitor-general for Ireland ; (24) queen's counsel ; (25) serjeants-at-law ; (26) masters in lunacy ; (27) recorder of London ; (28) treasurers of the Inns of Court; (29) dean of the faculty in Scotland; (30) barristers ; (31) advocates ; (32) president of the Incor- porated Law Society ; (33) solicitors ; (34) writers to the signet ; (85) writers.*~~

~~*8. Military Precedence.—(1) Field-marshals; (2) generals; (3) lieutenant-generals ; (4) major-generals, inspectors-general of hospitals after three years' service or with an army in the field, and commissaries-general ; (5) brigadier- generals, deputy paymasters-general, and inspectors-general of hospitals of under three years' service and not with an army in the field; (6) colonels, deputy judge advocate, and deputy inspectors-general of hospitals after five years' service ; (7) lieutenant-colonels, deputy commissaries-general after five years' service, deputy inspectors-general of hospitals, and surgeon-majors ; (8) majors, deputy commissaries-general under five years' service, assistant com- missaries-general, inspectors of army accounts, staff or regimental surgeons, chaplains attached to brigades, deputy judge advocates if not at the head of their department, storekeepers of the ordnance, and barrack masters of the first and second classes; (9) captains, deputy assistant commissaries-general, assistant deputy paymasters-general, regimental paymasters, principal examiner of military accounts, staff or regimental assistant surgeons after ten years' service, veterinary surgeons after twenty years' service, chaplains attached to regiments, deputy Seereket ro of the ordnance, and barrack masters of the third and fourth classes;! (10) lieutenants, acting deputy assistant com- missaries-general, examiners of military accounts, assistant surgeons, apothe- caries of less than fifteen years' service, deputy medical purveyors, and veterinary surgeons after ten years' service; (11) second lieutenants, com- missariat clerks, clerks in the paymaster-general's and military accounts departments, medical and ordnance clerks, and veterinary surgeons under ten years' service ; (12) superintending schoolmasters.*~~

~~*4, Naval Precedence.—(1) Admirals of the fleet ; (2) admirals ; (3) vice-admirals; (4) rear-admirals and inspectors-general of hospitals and fleets ; (5) coinimodores ; (6) captains of over three years' seniority, deputy inspectors-general of hospitals and fleets, secretaries to admirals of the fleet, paymaster-in-chief, chief inspec- tors of machinery, and inspectors of machinery of eight years' standing; (7) captains of under three years' seniority ; (8) staff captains, secretaries to com- manders-in-chief of five years' standing, and inspectors of machinery of under eight years' standing ; (9) commanders ; (10) staff commanders, fleet surgeons, secretaries to commanders-in-chief of under five years' standing, paymasters of fifteen years', chief engineers of ten, and naval instructors of fifteen years' standing ; (11) lieutenants of eight years' seniority ; (12) navigating lieutenants of eight years' seniority, staff surgeons, secretaries to junior flag officers, pay- masters of eight, naval instructors of eight, and chief engineers of under ten years' standing ; (13) lieutenants of under eight years' seniority ; (14) navigating lieutenants of under eight years' seniority, surgeons, secretaries to commodores of the second class, paymasters and naval instructors of under eight and assistant paymasters and engineers of over eight years' standing ; (15) sub-lieu- tenants ; (16) navigating sub-lieutenants, assistant paymasters and engineers of under eight years' standing, chief carpenters, and assistant engineers ; (17) chief gunners and chief boatswains ; (18) gunners, boatswains, and carpenters ; (19) midshipmen and clerks ; (20) naval cadets and assistant clerks.*~~

~~*5. Relative Military and Naval Precedence.—{1) Field-marshals with admirals of the fleet; (2) generals with admirals; (8) lieutenant-generals with vice- admirals ; (4) major-generals with rear-admirals; (5) brigadier-generals with commodores ; (6) colonels with captains of over three years' seniority ; (7) lieu- tenant-colonels with captains of under three years' seniority and staff captains, and before commanders and staff commanders ; (8) majors with lieutenants and navigating lieutenants of eight years' seniority ; (9) captains with lieutenants and navigating lieutenants of under eight years' seniority ; (10) lieutenants with sub-lieutenants and navigating sub-lieutenants ; (11) second lieutenants with midshipmen. —*~~

~~*6. Diplomatic and Consular Precedence.—(1) Ambassadors immediately after the royal family and the sons and brothers of sovereigns, and before*~~

~~arch- bishops, great officers of state, and dukes ; (2) envoys and ministers accredited to the sovereign after dukes and before marquesses ; (3) chargés d'affaires who are accredited, not to the sovereign, but to the minister of foreign affairs, have no ak ew: general precedence ; (4) military or naval attachés of higher rank than colonel in the army or captain in the navy, next to the head of the mission ; (5) agents-general and consuls-general with but after major-generals and rear- admirals ; (6) consuls-general with but after brigadier-generals and commo- dores; (7) secretaries of embassy ; (8) secretaries of legation ; (9) military or naval attachés of or under the rank of colonel in the army or captain in the navy, next to the secretary of embassy or legation ; (10) consuls with but after colonels in the army and captains in the navy ; (11) second secretaries of em- bassy ; (12) second secretaries of legation; (13) vice-consuls with but after majors in the army and lieutenants in the navy of eight years' seniority ; (4) third secretaries of embassy; (15) third secretaries of legation ; (16) consular agents with but after captains in the army and lieutenants in the navy of under eight years' seniority ; (17) attachés.~~

~~7. Colonial Precedence generally.—(1) The governor or lieutenant-governor or officer administering the government ; (2) general in command of the troops and admiral in command of the naval forces; (3) the bishop; (4) the chief justice ; (5) colonel or lieutenant-colonel in command of the troops and thie officer of equivalent rank in command of the naval forces ; (6) members of the ee eee~~

~~1 Town or fort majors, if officers under the rank of captain, rank as the~~

~~junior captains in the garrison, and apothecaries after fifteen years' service rank immediately before lieutenants.~~

~~*executive council; (7) president of the legislative council; (8) members of the legislative council; (9) speaker of the house of assembly; (10) puisne judges; (11) members of the house of assembly ; (12) colonial secretary not being in the executive council; (13) commissioners or Government agents of provinces or districts ; (14) attorney-general ; (15) solicitor-general ; (16) major or other senior officer in command of the troops and the officer of equivalent rank in command of the naval forces ; (17) the archdeacon ; (18) treasurer, pay- master-general, or collector of internal revenue ; (19) auditor-general or inspector of general accounts; (20) commissioner of crown lands; (21) collector of customs ; (22) comptroller of customs ; (23) surveyor-general ; (24) clerk of the executive council ; (25) clerk of the legislative council; (26) clerk of the house of assembly.*~~

~~*8. Precedence in the Dominion of Canada.—(1) The governor-general or officer administering the government; (2) general commanding the troops and admiral commanding the naval forces; (3) lieutenant-governor of Ontario ; (4) lieutenant-governor of Quebec ; (5) lieutenant-governor of Nova Scotia ; (6) lieutenant-governor of New Brunswick; (7) archbishops and bishops; (8) members of the cabinet; (9) speaker of the Senate; (10) chief judges of the courts of law and equity; (11) members of the privy council; (12) generals and admirals not in chief command ; (18) colonel in command of the troops and naval officer of equivalent rank in command of the naval forces ; (14) members of the Senate; (15) speaker of the HIouse of Commons ; (16) puisne judges ; (17) members of the HIouse of Commons ; (18) members of provincial executive councils within their province ; (19) speaker of legislative councils within his province; (20) members of legislative councils within their province; (21) speaker of legislative assemblies within his province ; (22) members of legis- lative assemblies within their province.*~~

~~*9. Precedence in the Indian Empire—(1) Governor-general and viceroy of India ; (2) governors of Madras and Bombay ; (3) president of the council of the governor-general ; (4) lieutenant-governors of Bengal, the North-West Provinces, and the Punjab when in their own territories ; (5) commander-in-chief in India ; (6) lieutenant-governors of Bengal, the North-West Provinces, and the Punjab ; (7) chief justice of Bengal; (8)*~~

~~bishop of Calcutta, metropolitan of India; (9) ordinary meinbers of the council of the governor-general ; (10) commanders-in- chief in Madras and Bombay ; (11) commander-in-chief of the naval forces un- less senior in relative rank to the above ; (12) chief justices of Madras, Bombay, and the North-West Provinces ; (13) bishops of Madras and Bombay ; (14) ordi- nary embers of council in Madras and Bombay ; (15) chief commissioners and resident at Hyderabad, and agents to the governor-general in Rajputana, Cen- tral India, and Baroda; (16) puisne judges of the High Courts of Calcutta, Madras, Bombay, and the North-West Provinces ; (17) military officers above major-generals ; (18) additional members of the councils of the governor-general ; (19) secretaries to the Government of India; (20) commissioner in Sind ; (21) judges of the Chief Court in the Punjab ; (22) additional members of the councils of the governors of Madras and Bombay ; (23) chief secretaries to the Govern- ments of Madras and Bombay ; (24) members of the legislative council of the lieutenant-governor of Bengal; (25) vice-chancellors of Indian universities. First class: (26) civilians of thirty-one years' standing and major-generals ; (27) advocate-general, Calcutta ; (28) advocates-general, Madras and Bombay ; (29) members of the boards of revenue, Bengal, Madras, and the North-West Provinces, and commissioners of revenue and customs, Bombay ; (30) financial commissioner, Punjab ; (31) judicial commissioners and recorder of Rangoon ; (32) comptroller-general of accounts in India ; (33) commissioners of divisions within their own divisions, and residents, political agents, and superintendents, on pay of Rs.2000 per mensem or more (not being collectors or deputy com- missioners of British districts), within their own charges; (34) civil and military secretaries to Governments of Madras and Bombay, and civil secretaries to Governments of Bengal, North-West Provinces, and Punjab; (35) surveyor- general of India, and directors-general of the post-office and of telegraphs ; (36) chief engineers, first class ; (37) archdeacons of Calcutta, Madras, and Bombay ; (88) brigadier-generals. Second class: (89) civilians of twenty-three years' standing and colonels; (40) commissioners of divisions, and commissioners of police, Calcutta ; (41) private secretary to the viceroy ; (42) residents, political agents, and superintendents on pay of Rs.2000 per mensem or more (not being collectors or deputy cominissioners of British districts); (43) superintendent of the trigonometrical survey ; (44) commissioner of inland customs ; (45) sani- tary commissioner of the Government of India;~~

~~*(46) Supers of the Geological Survey ; (47) inspector – general of forests in India; (48) standing council to the Government of India; (49) military accountant – general ; (50) directors of public instruction under local governments ; (51) accountant-general for local governments ; (52) inspectors-general of police under local govern- ments; (53) director of revenue settlement and superintendent of revenue survey, Madras, survey and settlement commissioners, Boinbay, and com- missioner of settlements, Punjab; (54) remembrancers of legal affairs and Government advocates in the North-West Provinces, the Punjab, and British Burmah; (55) consulting engineers to the Government of India for guaranteed railways, Calcutta and Lahore, and chief engineers (second and third classes) under local governments ; (56) district and sessions judges, col- lectors and magistrates of districts, deputy superintendent of Port Blair, and the chief officer of each presidency municipality, within their respective charges ; (57) officers of the first class graded list of civil offices not reserved for members of the Covenanted Civil Service. Third class: (58) civilians of eighteen years' standing and lieutenant-colonels; (59) political agents and superintendents on pay of Rs.1000 and less than Rs.2000 per inensem (not being collectors or deputy commissioners in British districts) within their own charges ; (60) military secretary to the Government, Punjab, and civil secretaries to local administrations ; (61) private secretaries to governors ; (62) directors of public instruction under local administrations ; (63) administrators-general, Calcutta, Madras, and Bombay; (64) inspectors-general of jails and of registration, sanitary commissioners, inspectors, and conservators of forests under local governments, and postmasters-general; (65) accountants- general for local administrations ; (66) consulting engineer to the Government of India for guaranteed railways, Lucknow, and chief and superintending engineers when secretaries to local administrations or to agents to the governor-general ; (67) inspectors-general of police under local administrations ; (68) senior chaplains ; (69) superintendent of marine, Bombay ; (70) master attendants ; (71) sheriffs within their own charges ; (72) officers in the second class graded list of civil offices not reserved for members of the Covenanted Civil Service. Fourth class: (73) civilians of twelve years' standing and majors ; (74) political agents and superintendents of less than Rs.1000 per mensem within their own charges ; (75) Government solicitors; (76) inspectors-general of jails and of registration, sanitary commissioners, and conservators of forests under*~~

~~local administrations; (77) officers in the third class graded list of civil offices not reserved for members of the Covenanted Civil Service.? een eee ee~~

~~2 Aj] ladies to take place according to the rank herein assigned to their respective husbands, with the exception of wives of Peers and of ladies having precedence in England independently of their husbands and who are not in rank below the daughters of Barons, such ladies to take place according to their several ranks with reference to such precedence in England immediately after the wives of members of council at the presidencies in India" (Royal Warrant, 18th October 1876).~~

~~668~~

~~10. Academical Precedence.—{(1) Chancellors; (2) high stewards; (3) vice-chancellors; (4) rectors; (5) principals; (6) heads of colleges and halls pe doctors of divinity ; (8) doctors of law; (9) doctors of medicine ; (10) doe ors of music; (11) bachelors of divinity ; (12) proctors; (13) professors ; (z masters of law ; (15) masters of arts; (16) bachelors of law; (17) bachelors 0 medicine; (18) bachelors of music; (19) bachelors of arts. Offices in a universities are more or less different in each of them, and those whic. are peculiar to any one vary so much from those which are peculiar to the others that it is not convenient to enumerate and distinguish them. Among graduates of all of them the senior take precedence of the id according to their several faculties and degrees and the relative antiquity o their universities in the order of Oxford, Cambridge, St Andrews, Glasgow, Aberdeen, Edinburgh, Dublin, London, Durham, Queen's, Sydney, Melbourne, Catholic, Royal, and Victoria. (F. DR.)~~

~~PREDESTINATION is a theological term, sometimes used with greater latitude to denote the decree or purpose of God by which He has from eternity immutably deter- mined whatever comes to pass ; sometimes more strictly to denote the decree by which men are destined to everlasting happiness or misery ; and sometimes with excessive strict- ness to denote only predestination to life or election.)~~

~~The question to which the theory of predestination supplies an answer, although it has a special interest to Christian thought, yet arises in all~~

~~minds which are occupied with the problems of human existence. That question is, To what. cause can we refer the diversities in human character, fortunes, and destiny? The Greek tragedians made it their business to exhibit the helplessness of man in his strife against fate. Sometimes indeed they explicitly distinguish fate from a mere pitiless and non-moral sove- reignty and identify it with the Nemesis which pursues hereditary or individual guilt; and sometimes—as in the case of Gidipus—they follow the history of the sufferer for the sake of showing how the predestined and inevitable. transgression and punishment educate the character. But the idea which fascinates and pursues them is that man can- not escape his destiny, that his life is woven with a "shuttle of adamant," and that when God means to destroy a man He makes evil seem good to him (Soph., Antig., 622-24). The Greek philosophy tended in the same direction ; and the Stoic doctrine of necessity or providence, though based on a broad and thoroughly philosophical view of nature and of man's place in it, was entangled in the very diffi- culties which attach to Calvinism.~~

~~Among the Jews the Sadducees carried their defence of free will so far as to deny predestination ; while the~~

~~1 This restricted use of the term is favoured by Lutherans (" Ac- cipitur preedestinatio vel improprie, quomodo destinationem et ad vitam et ad mortem complectitur, . . . vel proprie, quomodo phrasi scripture tantum ordinationem ad vitam notat," Quenstedt). In a different interest, the Westminster Confession seems to incline to restrict the use of the word " predestinate " to the decree which secures to some men life eternal, while for the obverse of that decree, by which the rest of men are consigned to everlasting death, it prefers the term "foreordained" : its words are, " By the decree of God, for the manifestation of His glory, some men and angels are predestinated unto everlasting life and others foreordained to everlasting death. These angels and men, thus predestinated and foreordained," &c. Dr Cunningham (Historical Theol., ii. 422) tells us that this distinction is not grounded either on etymology or on the usage of theologians, "but Calvinists, in general, have held that there is an important dif- ference between the way and manner in which the decree of election bears or operates upon the condition and fate of those who are saved, and that in which the decree of reprobation, as it is often called,~~

~~*bears or operates upon the condition of those who perish ; and the e2istence of this difference, though without any exact specification of its nature, the compilers of the Confession seem to have intended to indicate, by restricting the word ‘ predestinate’ to the elect, the saved ; and using the word ‘foreordained’ in regard to the rest.” Probably a signi- ficance slightly more definite shonld, however, be attached to the Introduction of this distinction ; for as early as the age of Augustine objection was taken to the expression “ predestinati ad interitum” on the specific ground that it seemed to impose upon men a necessity of _Perishing. And Bishop Davenant, while he does not shrink from using the term “ predestinate to death,” gives this significant explana- tion: “if by predestinating ad interitum we understand the causing and effectual working of any man’s destruction, God cannot be said predestinare ad interitum: but if we only understand the foreordain- Ing of those to damnation whom God foresaw deserving and working*~~

~~*the same, we neither think nor speak otherwise than the orthodox Fathers did (Animadversions, &c., p. 41).*~~

~~*PR E—*~~

~~*PR*~~

~~*Pharisees and Essenes ran to the other extreme and left no place for human freedom (Josephus, Antig., xviii. 1, 3, 4 ; Mi. <0):*~~

~~*In Islam the subject of predestination has produced endless controversy. The orthodox doctrine is thus stated by Al-Berkevi. “It is necessary to confess that good and evil take place by the predestination and predetermination of God, that all that has been and all that will be was de- creed in eternity and written on the preserved table; that the faith of the believer, the piety of the pious, and their good actions are foreseen, willed, predestinated, decreed by the writing on the preserved table produced and approved by God: that the unbelief of the unbeliever, the impiety of the impious, and bad actions come to pass with the foreknowledge, will, predestination, and decree of God, but not with His satisfaction and approval. Should any ask why God willeth and produceth evil, we can only reply that He may have wise ends in view which we cannot comprehend.”*~~

~~*Some Mohammedan teachers (disciples of Al-Ash'ari) endeavour to maintain the consistency of this doctrine with man's freedom and responsibility ; but prac- tically the Sunnite or orthodox Mohammedans believe that by the force of God's eternal decree man is constrained to act thus or thus. From this there has resulted, on the one hand, the Epicurean pessimism of 'Omar Khayy4am—*~~

~~*"°Tis all a chequer-board of nights and days*~~

~~*Where destiny with men for pieces plays :*~~

~~*Hither and thither moves, and mates, and slays,*~~

~~*And one by one back in the closet lays ""— or the weak recklessness of the poet Faizi: '" Before thou and I were thought of, our freewill was taken from us; be without cares for the Maker of both worlds settled our affairs long before we were made." On the other hand, there has resulted the freethinking (Mo'tazilite) reaction, to which the Shiahs incline and which rehabilitates freewill © at the expense of the divine sovereignty.*~~

~~*Within the Christian church there have in like manner always existed two opposed beliefs regarding predestina- tion, which have received their ultimate development and expression in the Calvinistic and Arminian systems respect- ively. The Calvinistic doctrine of predestination is that "from all eternity God chose or elected some men—certain definite persons of the human race—to everlasting life ; that He decreed or determined certainly and infallibly, and not conditionally and mutably, to bring those persons to salvation by a Redeemer ; that in making this selection of some men, and in decreeing to save them, He was not in- fluenced or determined by anything existing in them or foreseen in them—such as faith or good works—by which they were distinguished from other men, or by anything out of Himself, or by any reason known to us or compre- hensible by us; and that this eternal purpose or decree He certainly and infallibly executes, in regard to each and every one included under it; while all the rest of men not thus elected He decreed to pass by,—to leave in their natural state of sin and misery, and finally to punish eter- nally for their sin." The Arminian doctrine of predestina- tion (see ARMINIUS) is that God has from eternity decreed to give eternal life to as many as repent and believe, and foreseeing*~~

~~who shall repent and believe He has determined to give life to these. The "peremptory" election of indi- viduals to life eternal proceeds only on the foreknowledge of their faith and obedience, so that, as the Remonstrants explicitly affirmed, the decree proper in predestination is that decree by which it is determined on what grounds or conditions God assigns sinners to salvation.2 The differ- ence between these two views of predestination is wide, and, when logically carried out, radical. The Calvinist~~

~~? "Sententia Remonstr.," in Hales's Letters from Dort, pp. 174- 175 ; also Apol. Conf. Remonstr., p. 102.~~

~~2~~

~~maintains that God absolutely decrees the salvation of a certain fixed number of definite persons, and in pursuance of this decree infallibly secures their salvation; the Armi- nian maintains that God's decree, so far as it concerns the salvation of individuals, is conditional upon their use of the means of grace. That which constitutes Arminianism is the denial that God absolutely elects individuals to eternal life; and that which lies at the root of Calvinism, and out of which all that is characteristic of the system springs, is the-affirmation that God does absolutely elect certain in- dividuals to life eternal, and in pursuance of this decree works in them all that constitutes life eternal. Accord- ing to Calvinism, salvation is the work of God. Seeing men to be all alike helplessly involved in sin and misery, God determined to save some, not on account of any good in them but for sonie inscrutable but necessarily wise and just reasons, and because of this determination He gives to those whom He wills to save, and enables them to receive and retain, all that is involved in salvation,—renewal of will, union to Christ, holiness of life, the indwelling Spirit.~~

~~The doctrine of predestination was first formulated in the church by Augustine. The Pelagian idea that man is competent to determine his own character, conduct, and destiny was repugnant to him, and he strove to show that the initial and determining element in the salvation of.the individual is not the human but the divine will. He based his position upon the doctrine of original sin and the consequent depravity of the will. This~~

~~doctrine represents the whole human race as involved in moral ruin, guilty and sinful, incapable of self-regeneration or of willing what is good. By God alone, therefore, can regeneration and deliverance be accomplished. The salvation designed by God must not be allowed to depend for its efficacy on the depraved and incapable will of man ; it must be an absolute act of power on God's part. Provision must be made not only for the offer but for the acceptance of grace. In a word, grace must be effectual or irresistible. Hence Augustine distinguished between 'assistance without which a thing cannot be done" and "assistance by which a thing is done" (the Jansenist adjutorvum sine quo non, and adjutorium quo, assisting and efficacious or irresistible grace). By every device of language he throws the whole work of salvation upon God ("facit credentes," "data sunt et ipsa merita quibus datur," "non solum mentes bonas adjuvat, verum etiam bonas eas facit"). This is the distinctive characteristic of the dispensation of redemption, that it depends not on man's will but on God's. 'A dispensation which left the salvation of man dependent on his will was highly suitable as a first one, suitable alike to the justice of the Creator and the powers of the untried creature, and such as we should naturally expect at the beginning of things ; but such having been the nature of the first, the second must, for that very reason, be a dispensation of a different kind, effecting its design not by a conditional but by an absolute saving act." This absolute saving act being an act of God, and it being maintained by all theologians that whatever God Himself does in time He has from eternity decreed to do, we have the doctrine of predestina- tion. As Aquinas tersely puts the kernel of the Augus- tinian doctrine: "It is manifest that whatever is of grace is the effect of predestination." With Augustine grace is nothing else than predestination realized. Grace is irresistible because it is God's instrument in fulfilling His decree. This carries with it a refutation of the three modified forms of predestinarian doctrine which continually seek to make good for themselves a position within the church. It maintains (1) that men are elected not to mieans of grace only but to grace itself. Salvation is infallibly secured to the elect (De Dono Persev., passim).~~

~~669~~

~~It maintains (2) that not nations or the church but individuals are the object of predestination,—a certain fixed number, "'so certain that no one can be~~

~~added to it or taken from it" (De Corr. et Gratia, 13). And (3) this predestination must be founded, not on foreseen good in man, but on the inscrutable but necessarily just will of God (De Pred. Sanct., 17).~~

~~As Augustine thus constructed the doctrine of pre- destination as an integral part of the evangelical system, he necessarily spoke much more of election than of re- probation ; but he did not shrink from acknowledging, with all intelligent predestinarians, that the election of some involved the passing by (preteritio) of the rest : "for the rest, where are they but in that mass of perdition where the Divine justice most justly leaves them?" (De Dono Persev., 14). "If God from eternity absolutely elected some unto the infallible attainment of grace and glory, we cannot but grant that those who are not com- prised within this absolute decree are as absolutely passed by as the others are chosen" (Bishop Davenant's Animad- versions, p. 4). All men being naturally under condem- nation, it seemed to Augustine no injustice that in some that condemnation should take effect; and, if it is sug- gested that it would at all events have been better had all been saved, he is content to reply, " Who art thou, O man, that repliest against God?" He has no hesita- tion, therefore, in using the expressions "' preedestinati ad interitum," or "ad sternam mortem," or '" damnationi preedestinati"; and in using these expressions he indicates that there are some to whom God has decreed not to give saving grace, and that He foresaw that these persons would sin and be damned. He does not bring the decree of reprobation into direct, and of course not into causal, connexion with the sins of the reprobate, holding that, while the decree of God is the efficient cause of all good in the elect, the cause of sin in the reprobate is the evil will of man. He denies that God's foreknowledge of man's sin makes that sin necessary, but he nowhere ex- haustively discusses the distinction between foreknowledge and decree. When pushed to defend God's justice in creat- ing those whose damnation He foreknew, he responds to the challenge sometimes by showing that, so far as the Creator's responsibility is concerned, the creature which sins with free will is of a higher kind than that which cannot sin because it has no free will; sometimes on the ground that it contributes to God's glory that His retributive justice should be manifested ; and sometimes on the ground that in the destruction of sinners the elect will see what God's goodness has saved them from.~~

~~About the middle of the 9th century Gottschalk attempted to revive Augustinianism (see GOTTSCHALR). His teaching regarding predestination was precisely that of his master, and as such it was maintained by Remigius of Lyons in opposition to the blundering and intolerant Hincmar of Rheims. Hincmar admitted predestination to life and also the consequent abandonment of the rest of men to their sinful state, and yet he mercilessly persecuted Gottschalk for maintaining a predestination to punish- ment, and sought to establish a distinction befween leaving men in a state which involves punishment and ordaining them to punishment. Remigius exposed the futility of such a distinction, and showed that "the abandonment of a certain portion of mankind to the state of sin in which they are born is predestinarian reprobation, whether we express it as abandonment to sin or as ordaining to punishment." The discussion, however, extensive and heated as it was, did not go deeply into the substance of the controversy. The incident which gave a distinctive character to this period of the development of the doctrine~~

~~1 See Mozley, Augustinian Doctrine of Predestination.~~

~~was the appeal for aid which Hincmar made to John Scotus Frigena ; for in the tract on predestination which Erigena wrote in response to this appeal he introduced the terms and methods of philosophy and sought a solu- tion for the problem in the nature of God. He argued that, God being eternal, foreknowledge and predestination, which are temporal relations, could only improperly be predicated of Him. He argued also that sin and its con- sequences in death and misery are nonentities, the mere corruption, defect, or privation of their opposite realities, and that therefore they can neither be caused by God nor be known by Him. Reprobation is therefore impossible. Still further, he argued that evil is only a stage in the development of good, and that the ultimate issue of the development is universal return to God. This orthodoxy was considered more dangerous than the heresy it was called in to resist. Prudentius, Ratramnus, Lupus, and Florus denounced the introduction of this style of discus- sion, for which indeed the mind of the church was not at that time prepared. Not only did interested individuals resist the teaching of Erigena, but two councils~~

~~*condemned his treatise as containing "' heereses plurimas, ineptas ques- tiunculas, et aniles pzne fabellas, pluribus syllogismis conclusas, Scotorumque pultes puritati fidel nauseam in- ferentes." Accordingly no additional light on the problem was received by the church at this time.*~~

~~*This controversy, however, was merely the prelude to a discussion which was maintained throughout the scholastic period, and in which the Thomists adopted the more rigid Augustinian view, while the Scotists leaned to Semi- pelagianism. Anselm and Peter Lombard were moderately and guardedly Augustinian. Thomas Bradwardine (arch- bishop of Canterbury, d. 1349) complained that almost the whole world had fallen into Pelagianism, and strenu- ously opposed this tendency. But it is in Aquinas (Summa, 1, Q. xxiii.) that we find the clearest and most compact treatment of the subject. His doctrine is sub- stantially that of Augustine. In express terms he teaches that predestination is an essential part of the divine providence, and that, as some, and these a fixed number, are ordained to life eternal, so by the same divine providence others are allowed to fail of this end ("et hoc dicitur reprobare"). He teaches further that this pre- destination does not depend upon any foreseen difference of character ("preescientia meritorum non est causa vel ratio predestinationis"). Aquinas derives his doctrine of predestination directly from his doctrine of God (not from his anthropology, as Augustine had done). His idea of God was the Aristotelian "first mover, itself unmoved." That God is in all things by His power, presence, and essence he explicitly maintains against three forms of error regarding the connexion of God and the world. The divine will is the cause of all things past, present, and to come.*~~

~~*But the contribution made by Aquinas consists in his theory of the divine concurrence, by which he seeks to provide a philosophical basis for Augustinianism. The divine providence governs all things by means of two great classes of secondary causes, the necessary or natural and the contingent or voluntary. The mediate or proxi- mate causes of all that takes place in the natural world are necessary ; the proximate causes of human action are the voluntary motions of the will. But both are set in motion by God, the First Cause: as the actings of natural causes remain natural, though they are moved by God, so do the actings of voluntary causes*~~

remain voluntary though moved by God.!_ But obviously this theory leaves only an appearance of free will. 'Free will is here reconciled

*1 «tq; * * Sicut naturalibus causis, movendo eas, non aufert quin actus earum sint naturales, ita movendo causas voluntarias, non aufert quin actiones earum sint voluntariz, sed potius hoc in eis facit."*

PREDELSETAWA T oR

and made consistent with the divine power, brought into the same scheme and theory. But it is of itself a sufficient test that a system is necessitarian, that it maintains the divine power in harmony with free will. The will as an original spring of action is irreconcilable with the divine power "—at least with the scholastic idea of the divine power—'"'a second first cause in nature being inconsistent with there being only one First Cause." Besides, every theory of predestination which bases itself on the idea that God is the sole originating and true cause must give an account of the origin of evil. Aquinas recognizes this and endeavours to meet the requirement by showing (1) that to a complete universe all kinds of creatures are requisite, not only the highest but the lowest ; (2) that there cannot be a perfect universe without the existence of free will, but that this involves the risk of evil; and (3) that evil is a negation. Of these arguments there are hints in the writings of Augustine and Erigena, and none of them is satisfactory, although they certainly point in the right direction. °

At the Reformation the discussion was drawn back from the endeavour initiated by the schoolmen to find for the doctrine of predestination a scientific basis in the nature of God and HIs connexion with the world. The more circumscribed method of Augustine was reverted to, and it was deemed sufficient to show that predestination was indispensable to the ideas of grace which found a response in the devout Christian consciousness, and that it was In harmony with Scripture. Not only Calvin, but much more unguardedly Luther, and even Melanchthon in the earliest (1521) edition of his Loce Communes, taught the most rigid Augustinian doctrine. In the later editions (1535, 1543) Melanchthon greatly modified his opinions and inclined more to the synergistic view, though even in this he was not thoroughgoing. But the attempt to terminate the synergistic controversy saddled the Lutherans with a symbol—the formula concordix—which,

~~*awkwardly enough, rejected both the Semipelagian theory of co-opera- tion and the Augustinian doctrine of predestination. The consequence has been that later Lutheran theologians, in their efforts to purge their church of this inconsistency, have devised the theory that man, unable as he is to will any good thing, can yet use the means of grace, and that these means of grace, carrying in themselves a divine power, produce a saving effect on all who do not volun- tarily oppose their influence. Baptism, ¢.g., confers grace which, if not resisted, is saving. And God, foreseeing who will and who will not resist the grace offered, pre- destinates to life all who are foreseen as believers.*~~

~~*The theory of Calvin (Jnst., i. 15-18; iii. 21-24) need not be detailed, because it is Augustinian not only in its substance but in the methods and grounds by which it is sustained.2 Hagenbach (Hist. of Doctrines, iii. 103) and others have indeed asserted that Calvin held the supra- lapsarian theory, and in so far differed from Augustine. But in order to prove Calvin or any one else a supra- lapsarian it is not enough to show that he believed that the fall was decreed, for this is admitted by Augustine and all sublapsarians; it must be shown that the fall was decreed as a means towards carrying out a previous decree to save some and leave others to perish,—a view which Calvin turns from as an otiosa curtositas. The supra-lapsarian view was, however, adopted by Beza and other Calvinists, as it had been held by some of the Augustinian schoolmen; and indirectly this led to the reopening of the controversy in the beginning of the 17th century. For it is said to have been the extreme supralapsarianism of Perkins which repelled Arminius from Calvinism and*~~

~~*2 Compare Burnet, On the XXXIX. Articles, and Mozley's Augustin. Doct., where this agreement is affirmed.*~~

-

~~*PR E—*~~

~~*led him to promulgate the opinions which are known as Arminianism, and which led to the summoning of the synod of Dort (see ARMINIUS and Dort). 'The canons of Dort, while not definitively exclusive of supralapsarianism, are favourable to the sublapsarian view; and the West-*~~

~~minster divines followed the lead of Dort in constructing their Confession so as to admit of signature by either party.~~

~~Meanwhile the Church of Rome had been torn by similar diversities of opinion. The council of Trent was careful not to offend the Doniinicans by explicitly repudi- ating Augustinian doctrine. But, as time went on, the Jesuit MoLina (q.v.) stirred the sleeping controversy by a well-meant and decidedly able attempt to reconcile free will and God's foreknowledge. A still more serious dis- turbance was created by the strenuous efforts of Jansen to revive the decaying Augustinianism of the church. But neither then nor in more recent times has anything essential been added to the argument on either side; and until our knowledge of the freedom of the will becomes more scientific—that is, more accurate, thorough, and reliable—it is impossible that the argument can advance. During the last two centuries the discussion in England has turned not so directly on the truth or falsity of Calvinism as upon the question whether the Church of England Articles are or are not Calvinistic. This question has been reopened at various times—at the dismissal of Baro from the Margaret professorship at Cambridge at the close of the 16th century; on occasion of Dr Samuel Clarke's plea for Arian subscription ; in connexion with the Wesleyan claim that the Articles favoured Arminianism ; and again, in this century, in the Bampton lectures of Archbishop Lawrence. The arguments which may be gathered from the actual terms of the seventeenth Article itself are very fairly stated by Bishop Burnet, who, though himself an Arminian, frankly allows that Calvinists can**

_ sign the Article with less scruple than Arminians, "since

the Article does seem more plainly to favour them." The historical facts regarding the theological school to which the frainers of the Articles belonged are very fully given in Goode's Effects of Infant Baptism.1 In Germany, not- withstanding Herder's dismissal of the subject of pre-destination with the curse, "'May the hand wither that shall ever bring it back," theologians still range them- selves in opposite camps,—Kliefoth, Frank, and Sartorius advocating the Augustinian doctrine, while Thomasius, Hofmann, and Luthardt attempt a middle course.

Lipsius justly observes that the solution of the problem of pre- destination is the solution of the religious problem in general. The Augustinian theory is

~~not an isolated doctrine which may be accepted or rejected without any material alteration of fundamental beliefs. It is rather a deliverance upon the relation which subsists between God and the world,—that is, upon the radical problem of philosophy. No doubt it is rather in a theological than in a philosophical interest that the subject has usually been debated. It has been felt that the Augustinian theory accords better with the devout humility of the religious spirit, and lays a sure ground for hopeful confidence ; while the opposed theory is considered to be more likely to excite human effort and secure a more satisfactory level in conduct, if not a higher spiritual condition. Both parties have been influenced by a perhaps somewhat officious zeal for the divine reputation, the one party being concerned to maintain God's sovereignty, the other His goodness. Our ignorance of the divine nature, aud our inability to apprehend the subtlety of His connexion with the world, have not been sufficiently allowed for by either party. Is God the absolute sovereign without whose will no indi- vidual act isdone? Is He in all things by His essence and will? Then the Calvinistic scheme seems alone legitimate. As Calvin himself argues, if God has not absolutely decreed all things, then "ubi erit illa Dei omnipotentia, qua secundum arcanum consilium, quod aliunde non pendet, omnia moderatur?" (Jnst., iii. 23, 7). And yet, if God's sovereignty is thus universal, can the freedom of the human will be preserved in more than name? Is not the world~~

~~1 A review of the controversy and its literature will be found in Cunningham's Reformers and Theology of the Reform., Essay iv.; and, on the other side, Hardwick's Hist. of the Articles may be consulted.~~

~~Ee 671~~

~~of human thought and action reduced to a mere play of puppets, a pantheistic sham? If God's will has determined all that is to be, what real power of origination is left to man? He who determines upon a certain event sets in operation such causes as will produce it, and is himself its proper efficient cause. If God is thus the real cause of all that is, the universe would seem to be merely God evolving Himself, and there has been no true creation, no bringing into being of wills separate from His own.~~

~~The grave difficulty, therefore, with which the strict doctrine of predestination has always to contend is its apparent inconsistency with~~

~~*human accountability. It is accused generally of colliding with human freedom, and particularly of representing God as the author of sin. This consequence of their teaching Calvinists repudiate. They maintain that by God's foreordination of whatsoever comes to pass "violence is not offered to the will of the creature"; and they have adopted various methods of relieving their doctrine from the odium of this charge. The character of an act has been separated from its substance or actuality, and, while its character is ascribed to man's free will, its actuality is referred to God's sustaining energy. Or it has been supposed that God may have created men with the power of originating action, so that, though dependent upon God for life, yet when kept in life men can act freely. But this scarcely meets the difficulty, for Calvinism maintains that each individual act is determined by God. Others again prefer to relegate these seeming contradictions to the region of the unknowable, and to say with Locke: "I cannot have a clearer perception of anything than that I am free, yet I cannot make freedom in man consistent with omnipotence and omniscience in God, though I am as fully per- suaded of both as of any truth I most firmly assent to; and there- fore I have long since given off the consideration of that question, resolving all into the short conclusion that if it be possible for God to make a free agent, then man is free, though I see not the way of it." M. D.)*~~

~~*PRE-EMPTION. See Sate.*~~

~~*PRELATE. See Azszot and BisHop.*~~

~~*PRELLER, Friepricu (1804-1878), German landscape- painter, was born at Eisenach on 25th April 1804. After studying drawing at Weimar, he went in 1821, on Goethe's advice, to Dresden, where he made such progress that in 1824 he was invited to accompany the grand-duke of Weimar to Belgium, where he became a pupil in the academy at Antwerp. From 1827 to 1831 he studied in Italy, and in the last-named year he received an appoint- ment in the Weimar school of art. In 1834-36 he exe- cuted in tempera six pictures on subjects taken from the Odyssey in the "Roman HIouse" at Leipsic, in 1836-37 the landscapes with scenes from Oberon in the Wieland room in the grand-ducal palace at Weimar, and in 1836- 48 six frescos in Thuringian subjects commissioned by the grand-duchess. In 1840 he visited Norway and produced a number of easel works, some of which are*~~

~~preserved at Weimar. In 1859 he revisited Italy, and on his return in 1861 he completed for the grand-ducal museum the landscapes illustrative of the Odyssey, which are held to constitute his chief claim to fame, entitling him to rank with Poussin and Claude Lorraine in the hierarchy of painters. Preller, who was also a successful etcher, died at Weimar on 23d April 1878.~~

~~PRELLER, Lupwice (1809-1861), author of well-known works on Greek and Roman mythology, was born at Ham- burg on 15th September 1809. He studied philology at Leipsic under Gottfried Hermann, at Berlin under Bockh, and at Gottingen under O. Miiller, graduating at the last- nained university in 1832. After "'habilitating" as privat- docent in Kiel, he was called in 1838 to an ordinary pro- fessorship at Dorpat, which, however, he speedily resigned along with several other German professors in consequence of misunderstandings with the Russian governing body. He afterwards spent some time in Italy, but settled in Jena in 1844, where he became professor in 1846. In the same year he removed to Weimar as head librarian and hofrath. In 1852 he travelled in Greece and Asia Minor. His death occurred at Weimar on 21st June 1861.~~

~~Preller's chief works are—Demeter wu. Persephone (1837), Griechische Mythologie (1854-55 ; 3d_ed., 1872-75), and Romische Mythologie (1858 ; 3d ed., 1878). He also co-operated with H. Ritter in the preparation of a useful Historia philosophiew grec et romanz~~

~~ex fontium locis contexta (1838 ; 4th ed., 1869), and contributed extensively to Ersch and Gruber's -Allgem. Encykl. ae~~

~~PRENZLAU, or PRENZLOW, a town of Prussia, in the province of Brandenburg, lies on the lower Ucker See, 60 miles north by east of Berlin and 30 miles west by south of Stettin. It is a busy little place with various branches of industry, among the chief of which are wool cleaning and spinning, iron-founding, and sugar-refining. A good deal of tobacco is grown in the neighbourhood, and there is a cigar manufactory in the town. A brisk trade is carried on also in cattle and grain. The Gothic church of the Virgin, dating from 1340, is one of the finest churches in the district, and~~

~~*the remains of the old town gates and walls are also interesting. In 1880 Prenzlau contained 16,933 inhabitants, nearly all Protestants and many of French descent. The garrison consists of about 800 men.*~~

~~*Prenzlau is first mentioned in a document of the close of the 12th century, and received its municipal charter in 1235. As the capital of the old Ucker mark it was a frequent object of dispute between Pomerania and Brandenburg until finally incorporated with the latter about 1480. It was at Prenzlau that Prince Hohenlohe, with his corps of 12,000 men, surrendered to Murat on the retreat after the battle of Jena.*~~

~~*PRERAU (Slav. Prerov), one of the oldest towns in Moravia, lies on the Beczwa, 13 miles to the south-east of Olmiitz. It is an important railway junction and carries on a considerable trade. The chief industries are sugar- boiling (from beetroot), rope-making, and the manufacture of agricultural and other machinery. The only buildings of interest are the old castle, once occupied by Matthias Corvinus, and the Gothic town-house. The population in 1880 was 10,985.*~~

~~*PREROGATIVE, in law, is an exclusive privilege of the crown. The word, originally an adjective, is derived from the centuria prerogativa, or century which voted first on a proposed law (rogatio) in the Roman comatia centuriata. In English law, Blackstone says, "' by the word prerogative we are to understand the character and power which the sovereign hath over and above all other persons, in right of his regal dignity ; and which, though part of the common law of the country, is out of its ordinary course. This is expressed in its very name, for it signifies, in its etymology, something that is required or demanded before, or in pre- ference to, all others; and, accordingly, Finch lays it down as a maxim that the prerogative is that law in the case of the king which is law in no case of the subject " (Stephen's Comm., vol. ii. bk. iv. pt. i. ch. vi.). The prerogative is sometimes called jura regalia or regalia, the regalia being either majora, the regal dignity and power, or minora, the revenue of the crown. The word "prerogative" is used to denote the whole privilege of the crown or any part of it ; in the latter sense it may be used in the plural number.*~~

~~*_The theory of English law as to the prerogative of the king seems to be not quite consistent. On the one hand, he is a perfect and irresponsible being,*~~

~~holding his office by divine right ; "Victoria, by the grace of God of Great Britain and Ireland Queen,"! is still the heading of every writ. On the other hand, his powers are defined and limited by law. This is laid down as early as the 13th century: "Rex non debet esse sub homine sed sub Deo et sub lege, quia lex facit regem" (Bracton, 5b),—a strik- ing contrast to the rule of Roman law, "quod principi placuit legis habet vigorem." A consequence of this posi- tion is that the prerogative may be confined or extended by the supreme legislative authority, and that the courts have jurisdiction to decide whether or not any alleged right falls within the prerogative. The prerogative of the crown, still of great extent, has been gradually limited by a long~~

~~1 There is no difference in the prerogative as exercised by a king or 4 queen regnant, so that the word "king"' in its constitutional sense~~

~~includes queen. That the queen regnant has the i king was declared by 1 Mary sess. es He :~~

~~PRE—PRE~~

~~series of enactments, the most worthy of notice being Magna Carta, Confirmatio Cartarum, Prerogatwa Regis, the Petition of Right, the Habeas Corpus Act, the Bill of Rights, and the Act of Settlement. (SeeENcLanp.) Where a prerogative was abolished by statute, in some instances compensation was granted in return for the surrender, in others no compensation was given. An example of the former is the statute 12 Car. II. c. 24, by which excise duties were granted to the crown in return for the aboli- tion of military tenures and their incidents ; of the latter, the statute 16 Car. I. c. 20, abolishing the prerogative of imposing compulsory knighthood or a fine in its place. The prerogative has also been limited by judicial decision. and by tacit abandonment. Thus monopolies were de- clared illegal (in the respectful language of the judges the queen was held to have been deceived in her grant) in the reign of Elizabeth by The Case of Monopolies (11 Coke's Reports, 84), and the right to exclude a member from par- liament was abandoned by the same queen in 1571. The most important of the obsolete prerogatives, other than those named, which have been at one time claimed and exercised are the following. (1) The right to impose a tax upon the subject without the consent of parliament was the~~

~~subject of contest for centuries. Sums were raised at various times under the names of talliage, scutage, hydage, subsidies, aids, benevolences, tonnage and poundage, tolls, ship-money, tenths, fifteenths, &c. (2) The right to dispense with the obligation of statutes, by the insertion in a grant of the clause non obstante statuto, was frequently asserted by the crown down to the Revolution. An end was finally put to this and the last right by the Bill of Rights. (3) The right of purveyance and pre-emption—that is, of buying up provisions at a valuation without the consent of the owner—and the right of impressing carriages and horses were finally abolished by 12 Car. II. c. 24. (4) The authority to erect tribunals not proceeding according to the ordinary course of justice was declared illegal by 16 Car. I. c. 10 (the Act dissolving the Star Chamber, the court of the marches of Wales, and the court of the president and council of the north). (5) The revenue from first-fruits and tenths, annexed to the crown by Henry VIII., was vested by Queen Anne in trustees for the augmentation of poor benefices, 2 and 3 Anne c. 11. This is what is usually called "Queen Anne's bounty." (6) The right of corody—that is, of sending one of the royal chaplains to be maintained by a bishop until the bishop promotes him to a benefice—has become obsolete by disuse. (7) The right by forfeiture to the property of a convict upon his convic- tion for-treason or felony was abolished by the Felony Act, 1870. (8) The immunity of the crown from payment of costs has been taken away in almost all cases. The crown is liable to costs in revenue cases by 18 and 19 Vict. c. 90, in petitions of right by 23 and 24 Vict. c. 34. (9) The right to alienate crown lands by grant at pleasure was taken away by 1 Anne c. 8, passed in consequence of the improvident alienations of land by William III. In very few cases has the prerogative been extended by statute ; 34 and 35 Vict. c. 86 is an example of such extension. By that Act the jurisdiction of lords-lieutenant of counties over the auxiliary forces was revested in the crown.~~

~~The prerogative may be exercised in person or by dele- gation. The prerogative of conferring honours is generally (though not necessarily) exercised by the king in person, as in the case of investment with knighthood and military or civil decorations. The delegation of the prerogative often takes place by commission, issued with or without a joint address from both Houses of parliament. An ex- ample of a commission~~

~~*issued on a joint address is the commission to inquire into the existence of corrupt prac- tices after an election (15 and 16 Vict. c. 57). In most*~~

~~*cases a commission is issued by the prerogative alone with- out any address from parliament ; thus the assent of the crown to a Bill may be given by commission, and rights of command may be granted by commission to officers in the army and navy. The delegation of the prerogative in judi- cial matters is illustrated by commissions of the peace and commissions of assize. The prerogative may still further be delegated by a delegate; thus commissions of lunacy are and commissions of bankruptcy were issued by the lord chancellor as the representative of the crown. Parts of the prerogative—generally in the nature of profit, and so in derogation of the revenue of the crown—may be con- ferred upon subjects by grant in letters patent, which will be presumed after enjoyment by the subject for a certain time. What in the king is a prerogative becomes a fran- chise in the subject, e.g., chases, warrens, wrecks, treasure- trove, courts-leet.*~~

~~*The existing prerogatives may be divided, with Blackstone, into such as are direct and such as are by way of exception ; or perhaps better, with Chief Baron Comyns, into those affecting external relations and those affecting internal relations. Under the first class would fall the power of making war and concluding peace. As incidents to this power the king has the right of sending and receiving ambassadors, of concluding treaties, and of granting pass- ports, safe-conducts, letters of marque, and reprisals. These rights may be limited by international agreement ; thus the Declaration of Paris, 1856, abolished privateering as far as the assenting nations (of whom Great Britain was one) were concerned.*~~

~~*The prerogatives affecting internal relations may be conveniently, if not scientifically, classified as personal, political, judicial, ecclesi- astical, and fiscal.*~~

~~*Personal.—In order that there may always be an existing head of the state the king is regarded as a corporation. He cannot die ; there can be only a demise of the crown,—that is, a transfer of the royal authority to a different person. On the same principle the 'king cannot be under age, though in*~~

~~*cases where the king has been of tender years a protector or regent has usually been appointed for administrative purposes. The king is personally irresponsible for crime or tort, it being an ancient common law maxim that the king can do no wrong, and that any injury suffered by a subject at the hands of the king is to be attributed to the mistake of his advisers. A curious consequence of this irresponsibility is that the king is apparently the only person in the realm who cannot under any circumstances arrest a suspected felon, for no action for false imprisonment would lie against him, and in the event of the arrest of an innocent person there would be a wrong without aremedy. He cannot be guilty of laches or negligence. The maxim of the common law is "Nullum tempus occurrit regi." This is still the law in criminal matters. With avery few exceptions, such as prosecutions for treason and offences against the customs, no lapse of time will in England (though it is otherwise in Scotland) bar the right of the crown to prosecute. In civil matters the crown is barred of its right in suits relating to land by the lapse of sixty years (9 Geo. III. c. 16). The king is exempt from taxation on the ground that, as the revenue of the realm is his prerogative, it is useless for him to tax himself. But lands purchased by the privy purse are liable to taxation (89 and 40 Geo. III. c. 88, s. 6). He is also exempt from tolls (which can only exist as a franchise granted by him), and from the poor-rate, as he is not mentioned in the Poor Law Acts. His person cannot be arrested, or his goods distrained or taken in execution. The privilege of exemption from taxation applies to his palaces and to the public buildings of the state. No kind of judicial process can be executed in a palace as long as it continues to be a royal residence. The privilege does not attach to palaces which the king has ceased to use as a dwelling, such as Hampton Court, with the one exception of Holyrood House, with the precincts, which still affords a sanctuary from civil process. It does not, however, protect criminals or crown debtors. The king has also several personal privileges of minor importance, such as the title of "majesty," the right to a royal salute, to the use of the royal standard and of special liveries, &c.*~~

~~*Political.—The king is the supreme executive and co-ordinate legislative authority. As such authority he has the attribute of sovereignty } or pre-eminence, and the right to the allegiance of his subjects. All land is mediately or immediately held of him (see Lanp). Land derelict suddenly by the sea, land newly discovered by subjects, and islands arising in the sea*~~

~~are his. As paramount authority in parliament he can dissolve or prorogue it at pleasure, but cannot prolong it beyond seven years. In theory parliament~~

~~1 The word 'sovereign '"' is frequently applied to the king in legal works. It should'be borne in mind at the same time that the king is not a sovereign in the strict sense in which the term is used by Austin.~~

~~673~~

~~only exists at his will, for it is summoned by his writ, and the vote fora member of parliament is only a franchise, not a right existing independently of his grant. He can refuse his assent to a Bill passed by the Houses of parliament. This right has, however, not been exercised since 1707, when Queen Anue re- fused the royal assent to a Scottish Militia Bill. The king has power to issue proclamations and (with the assent of the privy council) orders in council, in some cases as part of the ancient pre- rogative, in others under the provisions of an Act of parliament. Proclamations are only binding so far as they are founded upon and enforce the laws of the realm. They cannot alter the common law or create a new offence. By 31 Hen. VIII. c. 8 it was enacted that the king's proclamations should, under certain conditions, have the force of Acts of parliament, but this Act was repealed by 1 Edw. VI. c. 12. The king is not in general bound by an Act of parliament unless named therein. He can, by virtue of his supreme executive authority, recall a subject from abroad, or forbid his leav- ing the realin by the writ of ne exeat regno. This writ at the pre- sent day is not used for state purposes, but merely to prevent a party to an action from going abroad. To order aliens to leave the realm is apparently a matter not falling within the prerogative, as, where such a course is necessary, an Act of parliament is passed ; 11 and 12 Vict. c. 20 is an instance of ath an Act passed for a temporary purpose. The right of the crown to grant letters of denization to aliens is preserved by 33 and 84 Vict. c. 14, s. 18. The king is the fountain of honour ; as such he has the valuable power of granting peerages at will, so far as he is not restrained by any Act of parliament, and so far as he keeps within certain constitu- tional limits, ¢.g., he cannot insert a shifting clause in a patent of peerage. He also confers all other titles of honour, whether here- ditary or not, and grants precedence and armorial bearings. The~~

~~*great, officers of state are appointed by the king. The only restric- tion upon the creation of offices is that he cannot create new offices with new fees attached to them, or annex new fees to old offices, for this would be to impose a tax upon the subject without an Act of parliament. The king, as head of the state, is in supreme com- mand of the army and navy for the defence of the realm. This right, contested by the Long Parliament, was finally declared by 138 Car. II. ¢. 6 to be in the king alone. All supplies for the mainte- nance of the army and navy are voted annually, so that it is prac- tically impossible for the king to use his position to the detriment of the state. The army is an annual institution, the Army Act of each session (which corresponds to the Mutiny Act passed annually up to 1878) reciting the provision of the Bill of Rights, 'that the raising or keeping a standing army within the kingdom in time of peace, unless it be with consent of parliament, is against law." The right of command carries with it as an incident the right to build forts and defences, to impress seamen in case of necessity, and to prohibit the importation of munitions of war (39 and 40 Vict. c. 36, s. 48), also the right to the soil of the foreshore and of estuaries of rivers, and the jurisdiction over territorial waters. (See Navi- GATION Laws.) Other rights which fall under the political branch of the prerogative may be called the commercial rights, including the coining of money, the regulating of weights and measures, the establishing of markets and fairs, and the erecting of beacons, lighthouses, and sea-marks. The king also has the power of con- stituting corporations, A royal grant to inhabitants makes them a corporation for the purposes of the grant. The king is presumed to be the visitor of all civil corporations. As parens patriw he is ex officio guardian of infants, idiots, and lunatics. It is scarcely necessary to point out that all these prerogatives (except the con- ferring of honours and such prerogatives as are purely personal) are exercised through responsible ministers, practically in these days members of the party to which the majority of the House of Com- mons belongs. Thus the jurisdiction over infants, &c., is exercised in England by the lord chancellor, and over beacons, &c., by the Trinity House, under the general superintendence of the Board of Trade.*~~

~~*Judicial.—The king is the fountain of justice, and the supreme conservator of the peace of the realm. " By the fountain of justice," as has been well said by Blackstone, "the law does not mean the author or original, but only*~~

~~*the distributor. Justice is not derived from the sovereign, as from his free gift; but he is the steward of the public, to dispense it to whom it is dwe. He is not the spring, but the reservoir, from whence right and equity are conducted, by a thousand channels, to every individual " (Stephen's Comm., vol. ii. bk. iv. pt. i. ch. vi.). The king was bound to the observance of justice by the well-known words of Magna Carta, "Nulli ven- demus, nulli negabimus aut differemus, rectum aut justiciam." As supreme judge the king has the appointment of all judicial officers (other than those in certain local courts), who act as his deputies. He may constitute legal courts for the administration of the general law of the land, but he cannot erect tribunals not proceeding ac- cording to the known and established law of the realm, such as the Star Chamber (see above) or the commissions of martial law forbidden by the Petition of Right. Nor can he add to the juris- diction of courts; thus he cannot give a spiritual court temiporal*~~

~~*X.—85*~~

~~*674*~~

~~*powers. In early times the kings sat in person in the curia regres. 'The growth of a permanent judicature seems to be due to the increase of judicial business, making it impossible for the king to hear all the suits in the curia regis in person. Appeals from the colonies, the Channel Islands, and the Isle of Man still lie to the crown in council, a jurisdiction now practically exercised by the judicial committee of the privy council. The king is still (or was until very recently) in theory present in court. Actions in the Queen's Bench were until modern times said to be coram rege ipso, and the king could not be non-snited, for a non-suit implied the uon-appearance of the plaintiff in court. The king enforces judg- ment by means of the sheriff, who represents the executive authority. As supreme conservator of the peace, the king, through the lord- lieutenant in counties and through the lord chancellor in citics and boroughs, appoints justices of the peace. In the same capacity he is the prosecutor of crimes. All indictments still conclude with the words "against the peace of our lady the Queen, her crown and dignity." As it is the king's peace that is broken by the commission of a crime, the king has, as the offended party, the power of remission. The king cannot be sued by ordinary action. He may sue by ordinary action, but he*~~

~~*has the advantage of being able to use prerogative process (see below). He has the right of intervention in all litigation where his rights are concerned, or in the interests of public justice, as where collusion is alleged between the decree nisi and the decree absolute in divorce. Crown debts have priority in administration and bankruptcy.*~~

~~*Ecclesiastical.—The king is recognized as head of the church by 26 Hen. VIII. c. 1 and 1 Eliz. c. 1. By this prerogative he con- venes and dissolves convocation and nominates to vacant bishop- rics and other ecclesiastical preferments. He is also guardian of the temporalities during the vacancy of a see, but this is now merely a nominal prerogative. The dean and chapter of a cathedral can- not proceed to the election of a bishop without the king's per- inission to elect (congé d'élire).. When any benefice is vacant by the promotion of the incumbent to a bishopric other than a colonial bishopric the king has the patronage pro hac vice. He is the supreme court of appeal in ecclesiastical cases. This appellate jurisdiction is now vested in the judicial committee of the privy council, with the assistance of archbishops and bishops as assessors (39 and 40 Vict. c. 59, s. 14). The king cannot create new ecclesi- astical jurisdiction in England or in colonies other than crown colonies. (See BrsHop.) Where a new bishopric is created it is under the powers of an Act of parliament. It seems to be as head of the church that the king grants licences to hold in mortmain, though the right now extends to lay as well as ecclesiastical corpora- tions. The right is acknowledged by 7 and 8 Will. III. ¢. 37.*~~

~~*Fiscal.—The theory of the constitution is that the king, being entrusted with the defence of the realm and the administration of justice, must have sufficient means given him for the purpose. The bulk of the revenue of the Norman and Plantagenet kings was derived from crown lands and feudal dues. At the present day the rents of crown lands form a very small part of the revenue, and the feudal dues do not exist except in the pecuniarily unimportant cases of escheat, royal fish, wrecks, treasure-trove, waifs and strays, &c. Of the revenue a comparatively small part (the civil list) is paid to the king in person, the rest (the consolidated fund) is applied to public purposes.*~~

~~*Prerogative Process.—This is the name given to certain methods of procedure which the crown alone has the right of using ; such are inquest of office (an inquiry by jury concerning the right of the crown to land or goods), extent (a mode of execution), scire facias (for the resumption of a grant), and information (by which pro- ceedings are commenced in the name of the attorney-general for a public wrong or for injury to crown property).*~~

~~*Prerogative Writs.—Certain writs are called "prerogative writs," as distinguished from writs of right, because it is within the pre- rogative to issue or reissue them. In order to induce the court to issue them a prima facie case must be made out by the applicant. Writs of right, on the other hand, are ea debito justitiz, and cannot be refused. Examples of prerogative writs are certiorari, habeas corpus, mandamus, procedendo, prohibition, quo warranto.*~~

~~*Prerogative Courts.—This was the name given to the provincial courts of Canterbury and York, as far as regarded their jurisdiction over the estates of deceased persons. They had jurisdiction to grant probate or administration where the diocesan courts could not entertain the case owing to the deceased having died possessed of goods above the value of £5 (bona notabilia) in each of two or — dioceses. The jurisdiction of the prerogative courts. was*~~

~~*ransferred to the Court of Probate in 1857 by 20 and 21 Vict. c. 77, and is now vested in the Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division of the High Court of Justice by the Judicature Act, 1873 (36 and 37 Vict. ¢. 66, s. 34). : Hele State of New J ersey, United States, the court having juris- a over probate matters is called the Prerogative Court (Kent's*~~

~~*omm., vol. li. p. 427).*~~

~~*Besides the authorities cited and the writer ituti i A 3 on constitutional history, the reader is referred to Allen, Inquiry into the Rise and Growth of the Papel Pre-*~~

~~*rogative in Englund ; Chitty, The Prerogative of the Crown ; Staunforde, Expost-*~~

~~*tion of the King's Prerogative; Comyns, Digest, art. " Prerogative"; Broom,*~~

~~*Constitutional Law. (J. Wt.) PRESBYTER. 'Towards the end of the 2d century the*~~

~~*organization of the Christian congregations throughout the Roman empire, at least of all the greater ones, was identical. At the head of each was the bishop, whose function it was to conduct public worship, control the church funds, and keep watch over the manners of his flock. The free prophets and teachers having almost everywhere died out, the duty of religious instruction and edification also fell on him. In conducting the worship and in ministering to the wants of the poor he was assisted by the deacons as his subordinates. The presbyters formed a college, whose business was that of advising the bishop. Of this college he was the president, and as such he was himself a presbyter, and conversely the presbytery, in- clusive of the bishop, formed the governing body of the community.! Outside of the presbytery the individual presbyter as such had no definite official duties. If he baptized, celebrated the eucharist, preached, or the like, this was only as commissioned and deputed by the bishop.? Such deputation was frequently necessary, and therefore the presbyter behoved as far as possible to be qualified to teach. As member of the college, which before everything had to do with jurisdiction and discipline, it was required of him that he should be of blameless life, that he should administer just judgment without respect of persons, and that in private life also he should as occasion offered exhort and admonish the faithful and set before them the law of God. The presbyters, who as a rule were expected to be men of advanced years, were, like the bishop and the deacons, chosen by the congregation. Their number was unrestricted, but there were small communities in which they did not exceed three or even two. In rank they were above the deacons, but below the bishop, yet in such a way that the bishop could call them his '" co-presbyters."% As the bishop was not unfrequently chosen from among the deacons, even although in many congregations it may have been the case that the office was invariably bestowed on presbyters, and as the deacons stood in closer personal relation with the bishop than the presbyters, cases*~~

~~*of invasion of the rights of the latter by the former began to occur from an early period. There can be no doubt that at the end of the 2d century all presbyters were elected office-bearers, but the way in which Irenzus speaks makes it quite clear that at an earlier date "presbyter" was also a title of honour borne by worthy and prominent persons in the congregations, who, in virtue of their advanced years, were witnesses for the purity of tradition. Irenzeus, frequently speaking (as he does) of bishops simply as "presbyters," also proves that there must have been a time in which the bishop as member of the "synedrium " of the church cannot have held a higher position than the other members of this college.*~~

~~*Tracing the history upwards from Irenzus, we find in the Epistles of Ignatius, which may be assigned perhaps to about 140, the presbyters holding essentially the same*~~

~~*1 Tertull., Apol., 39: '* President probati quique seniores, honorem istum non pretio sed testimonio adepti."*~~

~~*2 Tertull., De Bapt., 17: '" Baptismi dandi habet jus summus sacer- dos, qui est episcopus; dehinc presbyteri . . . non tamen sine episcopi auctoritate." In the oldest constitution of the Catholic Church which has come down to us relating to presbyters a regular service of some presbyters in public worship is indeed presupposed (Kavéves éxxAn- ciao. T. ay. arooré\wy, c. 18), but this fact is unique of its kind.*~~

~~*3 Compare the regulations laid down in the Arabic text of the Canones Hippolyti (c. 4): " At the ordination of a presbyter every- thing is to be done as in the case of a bishop, save that he does not seat himself upon the throne. The same prayer also shall be said as for a bishop, the name of bishop only being left out. The presbyter shall in all things be equal with the bishop save iu the matters of pre- siding and ordaining, for the power to ordain is not given him."*~~

~~*o*~~

~~*PRESEY TER*~~

~~*position as they have at the end of the century. With Ignatius also the presbyters come into account only as a college ; according to him they constitute a senate, as it were; he compares them to the college of the apostles, but gives great prominence to their subordination under the bishop, whom he likens to our Lord Himself. Except in the Ignatian Hpzstles, however, one finds the presbyters holding a different position within the Christian commu- nities of the period from 90 to 140. This is not at all surprising, for there was not at that time any rigid and uniform organization of the congregations at all; as yet no one bishop stood at the head of each congregation, and as yet the church constitution was not determined by the idea of office alone, that of charismata (spiritual gifts) still having wide scope alongside of the other. Church organization was still influenced by a variety of ways of looking at the question—ways which sometimes crossed each other, and from the combination of which it cannot be doubted that a variety of constitutions resulted. We are not in a position to give a complete view of these, the historical material being insufficient, but points of leading importance can be established. Before all it is of conse- quence to recognize that in the congregations a threefold organization had place. (1) The duty of edifying and of preaching the gospel was not yet attached to an office but toa charisma. 'Service in the word" was the business of apostles, prophets, and teachers who had been awakened by the Spirit and by the Spirit endowed. These were the jyryobpevoe in the congregations; they alone in the first instance form the class of persons entitled to honour in Christendom ; they never belonged to any one congregation exclusively, but were held to be "organs of the Spirit," given by God to the whole church. (2) In so far as each local church embraced a system of higher and lower functions—each was indeed a little world to itself—it possessed a governing body (otxovémor). For the care of the poor, for worship, for correspondence,—in a word, for its "economy," in the widest sense of that word, the con- gregation needed controlling officials. These were the bishop and the deacons,—the former for higher, the latter for inferior services; they owed their official position to the congregation, and in the nature of their offices there was, strictly speaking, nothing which could have laid the foundation of any special rank or exaltation. Many of the functions discharged by them nevertheless had the result of making the post of a bishop a very influential one (charge of the worship, control of the funds), and in so far as their service rested upon*~~

~~a charisina (xapurpa Ths dvrtAjpwews) a certain inner relation between them and the teachers endowed with the gift of the Spirit was established. (3) In so far as the individual congregation was an actual organism in which the varieties of age, of sex, of experience, of manner of life, and of ethical culture continued to exist and which had to be admonished, dis- ciplined, and heeded, it from the nature of the case divided itself into leaders and led, a distinction which would assert itself in every sphere of the congregation's activities. The leaders were, as might be expected, the "elders" (of zpec- Birepor), or, so to speak, the patrons; the led were the "younger" members (of vedrepor). Out of this distinction arose equally naturally—for it was impossible for all the "elders" to take part in the conduct of affairs—the separa- tion of an elected ruling college (of rperButepor ot rpoic- tdpevot) from the rAROos (plebs, Aads). Thus an "order" (ordo) arose, placed over the congregation by the congrega- tion itself! To the presbyters belonged a tyu7 KaPjKovca, —that is to say, the honour which naturally came from their a~~

~~1 Tertull., De exhort. cast., 7: "Differentiam inter ordinem et~~

~~plebem constituit ecclesie auctoritas et honor per ordinis consessum sanctificatus."~~

~~675~~

~~position in life. In some congregations it may have been long before the elders were chosen, in others this may have come very soon ; in some the sphere of the competency of the presbyters and patrons may have been quite indefinite and in others more precise. In some congregations, lastly, as in those of Asia Minor, the presbyters may have enjoyed particular honour for the special reason that they had known apostles or disciples of apostles personally ;? in the majority of congregations this was not the case. With the congregational administration, properly so called, in any case, they had nothing to do. ;~~

~~We may call the first-named organization the spiritual, the second the administrative, the third the patriarchal. It is obvious that from the first it was impossible they should coexist side by side without coming into contact. Here two facts are of the highest importance. (1) If in any~~

congregation prophets and teachers were wanting, then the administrative officials charged themselves with their function. (2) The bishops had as such a seat and a voice in the presbyters' college; every bishop was at the same time a presbyter, whether, old or young, but every presbyter was not necessarily also a bishop. In many communities, indeed—as, for example, at Philippi,* at Ephesus,® and in Crete ®—all the presbyters may possibly also have been bishops, although this is by no means cer- tain; but in other cases—as, for example, in that of Rome, as we learn from the Pastor of Hermas—all presbyters were not also bishops. Thus it is not the case that origin- ally the bishops were simply identical with the presbyters, and that the one bishop was a gradual development out of the presbyters' college ; on the contrary, the attributes of presbyters and bishops were originally distinct. But, since the bishops had a seat and a voice in the college and exercised special functions of importance besides, they ultimately acquired a higher place.

The office of presbyter was not during the oldest period (90-140) a spiritual one. The apostle, the pro- phet, the teacher, in a certain sense also even the old bishop and deacon, had a spiritual character, for they pos- sessed a charisma. It was not so with the presbyters ; they had no charisma, and the respect in which they were held arose out of the natural position which they took within the congregations. Hence the newly-discovered Asay?) Tv daooréAwv has nothing to say at all about presbyters, but only about apostles, prophets, teachers, bishops, and deacons. The design of that writing was to give those institutions of the apostles which are peculiar to the Christian community. The system of leaders and led is, however, a matter of order; it does not depend upon the special Christian charismata, and therefore does not impart to the Christian community its peculiar character. But, on the other hand, that the community is God's building is shown by such marks as these, that the apostles spread the gospel by their inspired preaching, that prophets and teachers edify the churches, that everywhere bishops and deacons are found at work in the churches, endowed with the gift of government and of loving service. Other communities also—towns, temples, synagogues, and the like—have presbyters, but they have no persons endowed with the gift of the Spirit. A sure proof of the correctness of the view just given is found in the cir- cumstance that before the time of Domitian we do not

~~*a ee a ia*~~

~~*2 Compare what is said by Papias, Irenzus, and also by Clement of Alexandria.*~~

~~*3 See Arday) trav dmtooré\wv, 15. According to 1 Tim. v. 17 those presbyters are to be counted worthy of special honour of xomidvres év 6yw Kal &dackadig. But this makes it plain that the presbyters were under no obligation to teach.*~~

~~*+ Polyc., Ad Philinp., 5, 6, 11.*~~

~~*5 1 Tim. and Acts xx, 17, 28.*~~

~~*6 Ep. to Titus.*~~

~~*Refor- mation theories.*~~

~~*676*~~

~~*possess in Christian literature a single sure testimony to the existence of presbyters. In the genuine epistles of St Paul and in the Epistle to the Hebrews they are not mentioned. In 1 Cor. xii. 28 Paul says that God has given to the church apostles, prophets, teachers, miracles, gifts of healing, help, government ; but of presbyters he has not a word to say. Even from passages where he is speaking of the jurisdiction of the congregation—as, for example, in 1 Cor. v., vi—the presbyters are absent, while in Phil. i. 1 it is the bishops and deacons that he mentions. In the Epistle of James, in the First Epistle of Peter, in the Acts of the Apostles, and in the pastoral epistles the presbyters certainly occur, but no one is able to show that any of these writings are earlier than the age of Domitian. Even Clement of Rome (Ad Cor., 42, 4) does not say that the apostles had appointed presbyters in the congregation ; he speaks only of bishops and deacons. For this very reason is the statement in Acts xiv. 23 to be looked upon with suspicion. It would be much too pre- cipitate to assert that before the time of Domitian there were no presbyters in the Christian churches ; on the con- trary, it may be assumed that the distinction between*~~

~~"elder" and "younger" would not fail from the very first to assert itself in these communities, organized as they were so largely on the model of the family. But in this there is no reason for assigning any special importance to the distinction. Out of it there grew very gradually a special rank and gradually the presbyters had assigned to them definite functions ; or, in other words, the functions which they had exercised from the first, of exhorting, rebuking, superintending, becanie recognized ecclesiastical duties and privileges. There is accordingly no need for answering the question whether the Christian "elder" is akin to the Jewish or to any kind of heathen "elder." This, however, can well be affirmed, that the pattern of the civic senates was not without its influence upon the later development of the presbyterate. As for the com- munities of Jewish Christians, we know nothing certain about their constitution, and are therefore unable to say anything definite about their presbyters.~~

~~See Hatch, Organization of the Early Christian Churches (2d ed., 1882), and Harnack's excursus in the German translation of this work (1883); also Harnack, Die Lehre der zwolf Apostet (1884). (A. HA.)~~

~~PRESBYTERIANIS@®~~

~~HE Presbyterian form of church government began at the Reformation and attained development only in the churches commonly called ' Reformed." The Saxon Reformers were not indeed fundamentally averse to Pres- byterian principles. Melanchthon, for instance, expressly declared that no minister, without a college of elders and the consent of worthy members of the congregation, might excommunicate ; and, in a letter to Nuremberg (1540), Bugenhagen, Jonas, Luther, and Melanchthon say, "Resti- tuatur et excommunicatio . . . adhibitis in hoc judicium senioribus in qualibet ecclesia." On the other hand, the 'Reformed " churches did not all accept the system, ¢.., Zwingli and the Zurich congregation.~~

~~In 1526 John Brenz drew up at Halle (Swabia) a scheme including elders, ministers chosen from the elders, and councils, by which the elders were~~

~~*chosen by the Govern- ment, who also had the final decision in all questions of importance. Franz Lambert, at the same time, provided for the church at Hesse provincial synods, representative of the churches, and a general or land synod, under the control of the Government. Within the limits of a con- gregation the scheme was purely congregational. At Ziegenhain in 1539 a decided advance was made towards autonomy, as only half the elders, who had extended powers, were there chosen by the Government. Zwingli theoretically gave the power to the congregation, practic- ally to the civil power, as being the representative of the church. Jn Basel in 1529 the clergy alone had the power of church discipline. In 1530, however, Cicolampadius, fearing a spiritual tyranny, wished to join a body of elders with the clergy, to be chosen by the council partly from its own body and partly from the congregation, four from each, who with the clergy would form the "censorum consensus." But the council, fearing the imperium in wmperto, preferred four colleges, one for each parish, each college being formed by two members of the council, one of the congregation, and the minister; and the council also retained the final decision regarding excommunication. At Strasburg (1531) the council created an assembly of the ministers of the seven churches, with three life elders from each, nominated by the council. In 1534 this system was modified: ordinary matters were settled each fort- night by the minister and three of the twenty-one elders. Difficult. questions were carried to the twenty-one, and*~~

~~*discipline, short of excommunication, to them with the seven imninisters. Capito's system at Frankfort differed from this in that only three out of nine elders were elected by the council, and that the office was for three years only.*~~

~~*These all remained mere theories, limited, fragmentary, Calvin's Calvin set himself to create a majestic system.*~~

~~*and abortive. and comprehensive system and to give to it the double authority of argumentative statement and practical realiza- tion. He saw that the impulses and the aspirations of the Reformation were, for want of discipline, robbed of a large part of their dynamic force. He threw these forces and aspirations into the mould of his own genius, developed order*~~

~~out of tumult, and created a definite, yet elastic code, which should match the discipline of Rome and at the same time frustrate the anarchical tendencies of extreme Pro-~~

~~testantism. The contrast with Luther is complete: Luther~~

~~created, Calvin fashioned ; “‘the watchword of the one was war, of the other order.” Calvin, surrounded by Catholic powers, felt more strongly than Luther that a definite pro- test as to church government was necessary. His leading principles are that—(1) a separate ministry is an ordinance of God (Jnst., iv. 3, 1-3); (2) ministers duly called and ordained may alone preach and administer sacraments (iv. 3, 10); (3) a legitimate ministry is one where suitable per- sons are appointed with the consent and approbation of the people, but that other pastors should preside over the elec- tion to guard against inconstancy, intrigue, or confusion (iv. 3, 15), the final act of ordination, the laying on of hands, being confined to the pastors; (4) to co-operate with the pastors there should be “‘ governors,” whom he “ appre- hends” to be persons of advanced years, selected from the people to join with the pastors in admonishing and in exercising discipline (iv. 3, 8); (5) discipline, the ordering of men’s lives, is all-important and is the special business of the governors aforesaid. Calvin arrived at these principles as follows. From Eph. iv. 11 sg., Rom. xii.7, and 1 Cor. xii. 28 he deduced five orders, of which three—apostles, prophets, and evangelists—were extraordinary and had lapsed, but two—pastors and doctors—were for all time. Doctors are concerned only with interpretation and exposi- tion, pastors with preaching, sacraments, discipline. From the pastors some are singled out (1 Tim. v. 17), called, and ordained to “labour in the word,” to occupy them- selves, in fixed charges, with preaching and administering~~

~~rae SY PHA Aa NI Ss~~

~~sacraments ; while the rest are invested with jurisdiction in the correction of manners and with the care of the poor.~~

~~*the state, Calvin was utterly opposed to the Zwinglian Calvinon theory, whereby all ecclesiastical power was handed over ae*~~

~~:~~

~~*For, although Christ gave to the whole congregation the power of excommunication, as in the Jewish Sanhedrim, and although, therefore, the elders are to use their power only with the consent of the congregation, yet the crowd are not to rule, lest arbitrariness and confusion enter. Deacons (or elders who have the care of the poor) are of two kinds, those who administer alms and those who attend to the sick. For additional sanction to his views Calvin often refers to the primitive church and the writ- ings of the fathers. But with respect to this his position is best indicated by his own words in the preface to the Institutes: "We so read their writings as always to keep in view the saying of Paul (1 Cor. iii. 21-23) that all things are ours, to serve us that is, and not to rule over us, while we ourselves belong to the Lord, whom, without exception, we must all obey." (1) His system, while preserving the democratical theory in so far as it recognized the congrega- tion as the holder of church power, was in practice strictly aristocratic, inasmuch as the congregation is never allowed any direct use of that power, which is invested in the whole body of elders; and the system constantly tended to development in the aristocratic direction. (2) The great object is discipline of life: '"We come now to the third branch of the power of the church, and that which is the principal one in a well-regulated state, which, we have said, consists in jurisdiction. The whole jurisdiction of the state relates to the discipline of manners" (iv. 11, 1). In his correspondence too Calvin is ever on this subject, while the eldership itself is seldom mentioned ; at Stras- burg his mind was constantly occupied with it; it was the first business that he set his hand to in Geneva; it was for insisting upon this that he was banished ; and he made it his first condition for return (iv. 12). (3) Although the Presbyterian form of church government has to thank Calvin for its vertebrate existence, he nowhere makes the true church depend upon this or any other form of govern- ment. The inner life is what he insists upon, not the out- ward form ; all that is needed for a true church, he asserts, is the word of God duly preached and the pure adminis- tration of the sacraments. He held the jus divinum of the ministerial office as admitting of no question—'"'that mode of governing the church by its~~

ministers which the Lord appointed to be of perpetual continuance" (iv. 3, 1-3)—but the manner in which the ministerial office is divided is to some extent in his mind a matter of argument and '"'apprehension." The same elasticity and desire for adapta- tion may often be noticed in his words, as, for example, when on the very question of election of ministers, whether it should be by the congregation or not, he says, ""We must be guided in this respect by times and circumstances" (Henry, i. 371).1 Nor does he put forward any theory as to the details—the number, method of choice, or period of office. All these he leaves to each individual 'church. (4) He does not include synods as necessary. Should contro- versy arise respecting doctrine (iv. 9, 13), there is no better or more certain remedy, he says, than to assemble a council of true "bishops," in which the controverted doc- trine may be discussed. Regarding the question histori- cally he gives to the ancient councils a modified approbation, but he denies the power of councils to frame new doctrine.

With regard to the relations between the church and

1 On the question of the jus divinum of the eldership, see Lorimer, On the Eldership, especially the tract therein by James Guthrie, who first suggested the idea in the middle of the 17th century, and two papers in the Records of the First General Presbyterian Council, 1877 (pp. 52, 98), by Dr Cairns and Professor Lee, in the latter of which it is stated with wonderful confidence that 'Calvin himself holds that we may rest the doctrine of a divine warrant for the ruling eldership on the ground mentioned in Jnst., iv. 3, 8."

*to the state. The political administration, he says, is as * necessary to human weakness as are food 'and light and air; but it has not the right to legislate for religion or divine worship, though it must take care that the gospel religion is not insulted or injured. "The church of God stands in need of a certain spiritual polity, which, however, is entirely distinct from civil polity, and is so far from obstructing or weakening it, that on the contrary it highly conduces to its assistance and advancement" (iv. 11, 2). "The church does not assunie to itself what belongs to the magistrate, nor can the magistrate execute that which is executed by the church." Thus, the magistrate imprisons a man for drunkenness ; the church excommunicates*

~~*him, and regards him spiritually as an outlaw. Should he re- pent, the magistrate takes no cognizance of his repentance, but the church can do so by allowing him to return to communion. The magistrate makes laws, and God makes laws; the breach of the one is a "crime," that of the latter is a "sin," though perhaps no crime; it is with the sin that the church deals. The magistrate may neglect to punish magisterially; the church, with spiritual penalty, supplies the neglect.*~~

~~*But, though the church disclaims interference with the domain of the state, she expects the state to support her. Indeed, while Calvin utterly abjures the thought of an umpertum im tmperio, while he spends much labour in showing how the papacy, by continual encroachments, secured the civil power, and in condemning this confusion of two distinct spheres of action, the function of giving support to the church is in the Calvinistic system really the raison Wétre of the state. Ina very remarkable passage (iv. 20, 3) Calvin's position is clearly shown. A well- ordered state, that for which the best of the popes strove, is a theocracy. There can be no question as to what doctrine is right, for the law of God, the only possible doctrine, is plainly stated in the Bible. That law is the highest thing that a state can regard ; it is indeed the very life of the state, and the position of the state towards the church follows at once. The words '"'toward the church" alone introduce the difficulty. They should be "toward God." If the state fail to support the church, it fails to support, not a human, but a divine organization. In the infliction of punishments, for example, the magistrate should regard himself merely as executing the judgments of God. So that the objection of the empertum in imperio, the assertion that the church claims spiritual liberty inde- pendent of the judgment of the state, while at the same time insisting on the support of that state whose authority she thus disregards, falls to the ground. The civil magis- tracy is as much a divine institution as is the ministry of Christ ; the state and the church are as much one as are the veins and the blood which permeates and vivifies them.*~~

~~*The fallacy in all this is obvious. The argument neces- sarily presupposes a theocracy, and such a thing did not exist in Europe. A state church, claiming at once inde- pendence of the state and support from the state, must bring about contest and complication where the state is not prepared to recognize the claim. The imperium in imperio difficulty (expressed most*~~

~~*briefly by James I.'s "No bishop, no king") arises acutely at once, however much the church may refuse to admit it. This was the case in Scotland. And where, as was the case in France, it is not a state church but a union of persons holding a religion, and therefore views on important matters, which differ from those of the Government, oppression must arise in an age ignorant of religious liberty, and the oppressed will become a polttical party opposed to the Government, however much they may disclaim the position.*~~

~~←~~

~~*678*~~

~~*Tt can now be seen how far Calvin was able to carry out his theory. But for his life the theory, like those which preceded it, would probably have had no universal historical interest.*~~

~~*Calvin's The course of events in Geneva had developed a theo-*~~

~~*relations cratical feeling; and the essence of a theocracy seemed*~~

~~*ba gained when the citizens were summoned by tens in*~~

~~*enevae 1536 to swear the confession contained in Calvin's first*~~

~~*Catechism (really an analysis of the Institutes). They*~~

~~*swore as citizens, and those who refused lost their citizen-*~~

~~*ship. As soon, however, as Calvin attempted to make*~~

~~*this a reality trouble followed. His ruling idea was dis-*~~

~~*cipline, and this was exercised against both the moral*~~

~~*and the spiritual libertines,—against those who objected*~~

~~*to the discipline of manners and those who disliked sub-*~~

~~*mission to the confession. As the reins were drawn*~~

~~*tighter these two bodies gained influence in the council, and inveighed against the new popedom. At length, in 1538, when Calvin, Farel, and Conrad refused to give the communion in a city which, as represented by the council, would not submit to church discipline, the storm broke out. The three preachers were banished, and Calvin retired to Strasburg. This refusal of the sacrament is important as a matter of ecclesiastical history, because it is the essence of that whole system which Calvin subsequently introduced, and which rests on the principles that the church has the right to exclude those who, according to her judgment, appear unworthy, and that she is in no way subject to the state in matters of religion. For the present the state had refused to admit the claims of the church. Calvin laid down as the conditions of his return the recognition of the church's independence, the division of the town into parishes, and the appointment by the council of elders in each parish for excommunication. The feeling, however, was for three years too strong ; the banishment was confirmed on the specific ground that the*~~

~~*insistence on excommunication was an attempt at despotic*~~

~~*power. Calvin's absence left the town a prey to anarchy:*~~

~~*one party threatened to return to Romanism, another to*~~

~~*give up their independence to Bern. It was felt to be a*~~

~~*political necessity to recall Calvin, and in 1541 he returned*~~

~~*on his own terms. Meanwhile he had been maturing and*~~

~~*carrying out his system (Jnst., iv. 8) in the French and Walloon churches in Strasburg.*~~

~~*Church By the Ordonnances Ecclésiastiques de 1'Eglise de Genéve,*~~

~~*organiza- which represent the terms on which Calvin consented to*~~

~~*pt 9 be pastor in Geneva and which were published on 20th*~~

- ~~*November 1541 in the name of Almighty God by the*~~

~~*syndics, the small and great councils, and the people, there*~~

~~*are, as in the /nstitutes, the four orders,—pastors, doctors,*~~

~~*elders, deacons. (1) The pastors preach, administer the*~~

~~*sacraments, and, in conjunction with the elders, exercise*~~

~~*discipline. In their totality they form the '"'vénérable*~~

~~*compagnie." It was the duty of each minister, with the*~~

~~*elders of his parish, to be diligent in house-to-house visita-*~~

~~*tion, to catechize, and, generally, to supervise family life.*~~

~~*After being approved as to knowledge and manner of life,*~~

~~*and ordained by the pastors already in office, and settled in a fixed charge by the magistrate with the consent of the congregation, the newly-made pastor vowed to be true in office, faithful to the church system, obedient to the laws and the civil government (with reservation of freedom in doctrine and the rights of office; compare Becket's "saving our order"), and, in especial, to exercise discipline with-out fear or favour. (2) The doctors teach the faithful in sound learning and guard the purity of doctrine. They too are subject to "discipline." (3) The work of the elders (" Anciens, Commis ou Députez par la Seigneurie ou Consistoire") Calvin regarded as the sinew and essential substance of the system. They were the bond of union*~~

~~*PRESBYTERAANASS*~~

~~*[GENEVA.*~~

~~*between church and state, and therefore the most important element of the theocratic government. Their business was to stuipervise daily life, to warn the disorderly, and to give notice to the consistory of cases requiring church chastise- ment. They were nominated by the small council and confirmed by the "two hundred." Two were chosen from the small council, four from the "sixty," eight from the "two hundred"; some were to live in each quarter, that the whole might be well supervised. After a year's pro- bation an elder might be dismissed or confirmed by the small council. If confirmed, he held office for life. To form the "consistoire " or church court, all the elders,*~~

~~*with the pastors, met every Sunday under the presidency of one of the four syndics. This court was erected purely as a — means to secure discipline. It could award punishments up to exclusion from the sacrament. It had, too, great authority (with appeal to the civil Government) in marriage questions. An officer of the Government was placed at its disposal to summon persons before it; should they refuse to appear, the Government itself compelled attendance. Moreover, the consistoire was bound to give notice of every excommunication to the Government, which attached to it certain civil penalties: "et que tout cela ne face en telle sorte que les ministres n'ayent aucune jurisdiction civile et que par ce consistoire ne soit rien derogué & l'authorité de la seigneurie, ni & la justice ordinaire, ainsi que la puissance divine demeure en son entier."*~~

~~*The inevitable quarrel arose in 1546-53, when the council overruled the decision of the consistory in a ques- tion of excommunication. The deniers of the autonomy of the church referred to the clause which laid down that excommunications were to be notified to the small council; but Calvin argued that the aim of this was merely that in extreme cases the Government should support the action of the church, not criticize it, and he won the victory. His position gradually became stronger. In 1557 banishment was awarded to any one who contemned the sacrament or the sentence of the consistoire. In 1560 it was ordered that the names of the elders should be published, honoris causa ; and in the same year the appearance of state con- trol, by the presence of a syndic with his staff of office at the consistoire, was done away with. He was present, but not officially as a syndic, and without his staff.*~~

~~*It should be noticed (1) that the provision that in cer- tain cases the censure of the consistoire should be followed by civil penalties is in keeping with the theocratic view. So too is the provision that members of political bodies alone were eligible to the eldership. The rights of the church as distinct from the state authority were preserved by the condition that the meeting of the consistoire was summoned by the ministers. (2) In the Institutes ecclesi- astical power is ascribed to the congregation, to be exer- cised by foreknowledge of and in agreement with the acts of the ecclesiastical jurisdiction. But in the Ordonnances the congregation as a unit is passed over in silence as regards discipline and the choice of elders. (3) It must be*~~

~~*remembered that Calvin never professed to regard this as a perfect plan, but as good as under the circumstances he could hope for. It was a compromiise, and showed the practical character of the man. If he could secure the essence of his longed-for church discipline he was willing to waive the question of privilege.*~~

~~*To sum up the characteristics of early Presbyterianism — (1) It is an organization for discipline. Whatever else they may be, the elders of the Reformed churches are, primarily, censors of morals. (2) The institution claims the triple ground of Scripture, history, expediency. (3) The Lutheran doctrine of universal priesthood is wanting. (4) No voice is raised for the choice of elders by the congregation. As to eligibility there is as little anxiety :*~~

~~*Organi- zation of*~~

~~*SCOTLAND. |*~~

~~*Brenz says, "from among the citizens"; Cicolampadius and Capito, partly from the Government, partly from the congregation ; Calvin theoretically leaves it unsettled, but in practice gives it only to the political bodies. As to period of office, Capito wishes for regular change ; the rest leave it in theory undetermined. Geneva retained per- manence as the rule and change as the exception. (5) Synods have no place except with Lambert.*~~

~~*In 1549 Lasky, who had established a flourishing church at Emden, was driven to London. There in 1550 he became superintendent of the foreign congregation, which was independent of the state church, but which was in- tended by the king to serve as a model to be followed when England should be ripe for reform. This church was in two congregations, French and German. The French kept the Genevan system, the German a modification of it. In this latter the ministers, elders, and deacons were chosen by the written votes of the congregation, with revision and final decision by the officers already existing, though any objection on the part of the congregation must be duly considered. The strictest discipline was carried out. Not merely the congregation but the ministers also were subject to the elders. Every three months ministers and elders came together for mutual censure. Deacons were subordinate to the elders. The eldership was for life,*~~

~~*the diaconate for a year. The essential difference be- tween this and Calvin's system is that here the congre- gation has a very real though a limited share in the choice of the officers; the ground-work of Lasky's prin- ciple is subdued Congregationalism. Lasky held also that the ministers should have a fixed president, selected from themselves. This office he regarded as a permanent one. Under the Marian persecution the London system found in a modified form a new home in Frankfort and on the lower Rhine. At Frankfort, in the French congregation, in choosing elders, the church council selected twice as many names as were wanted, and out of them the con- gregation made its choice.!*~~

~~*Scotland.—The initial conditions of Scottish Presby- terianism are seen in the historical facts—(1) that the Reformation was the form taken by the triumph of a violent and grasping aristocracy over the encroachments of the sovereign and an alien church; and (2) that Jolin Knox was its spiritual leader. Under his advice the Pro- testant nobles in December 1557 formed themselves into a covenanted body called "The Lords of the Congregation" ; in 1559 Perth declared itself Protestant, and Knox's sermon there on 11th May was the manifesto of revolt. In 1560, being hard pressed, the lords concluded with England the Pacification of Berwick, and a few months later the treaty of Edinburgh, whereby the whole government was placed in their hands.*~~

~~*To the parliament which now assembled a petition was addressed praying (1) that a "true kirk of God" and the*~~

~~*"sound doctrines of the Reformation might be established,*~~

~~*(2) that the true discipline of the ancient church might be restored, and (3) that the ecclesiastical revenues might be applied to the support of the ministry, schools, and the poor. Meanwhile the Reformers garrisoned, as it were, the country. Under Knox's agency Edinburgh, St Andrews, Aberdeen, Jedburgh, Perth, Dunfermline, and Leith had fixed ministers appointed, whilst wider districts were placed under superintendents or travelling ministers. To*~~

~~*1 On the pre-Calvin reformers and Lasky, see Lechler, Geschichte der Presbyterial- und Synodal-Verfassung seit der Reformation ; Richter,*~~

~~*Gesch. der evang. Kirchenverfassung in Deutschland, and Evang. Kirchenordnungen, &c.; Herzog, Real-Encyklopddie ; Allix, Hist. of the Waldenses; and other works. For Calvin, see Institutes and Cor- respondence ; Lechler, as above; Henry, Life and Times; Mosheim, Eccles. History; Hagenbach, Works; Cunningham, Hist. Theology ; Ranke, Franzésische Geschichte ; Richter, ué supra.*~~

~~*meet the first prayer of the petition Knox and five other ministers drew up a scheme of doctrine and discipline. The Confession of Faith, produced within four days and ratified by the three estates on 17th July 1560, was natur- ally aggressive and uncompromising. It expresses abhor- rence especially of the blasphemy of them "that affirme that men who live according to equity and justice sall be saved what religioun soever they have professed," and of all the doctrines of the Anabaptists. The civil magistrate is appointed for the "suppressing of idolatrie and supersti- tioun whatsoever." Above all, no mercy was to be shown to Catholicism : the celebration of mass was to be punished by death. To accomplish the second prayer of the petition the Reformed ministers and the leading Protestant nobles met at Edinburgh on 20th December 1560. This was a purely church meeting ; parliament had in it no part what- soever. Even in its birth the Scottish Church announced its independence. It will, however, be observed that there were in the forty-six members comprising it but six minis- ters. At this assembly was drawn up the Jirst Buk of Discipline, which, though not accepted by the privy council, was on 27th January 1561 signed by the great majority of the members, and by the chiefs of the great Protestant families, on the noteworthy condition that the deposed prelates were allowed to enjoy their benefices during life. This book, which was a grand effort to reconstruct society, and for which, its authors asserted, 'they took not their example from any kirk in the world,—no, not from Geneva," was nevertheless on the Genevan principle. It deals solely with the congregation ; the idea only of synods may be traced. As regards the relations of church and state, the eldership, and the economy of the church generally, especially the supervision of life and manners, its views are those of Calvin.*~~

~~*Doctors or teachers are not mentioned until the edition of 1621, published by Calder- wood in Holland. The order of deacons was of the utmost service in poor relief. It was abolished, of course, at the Restoration, and the want of it was shown by the fact that in 1688 one-fifth of the population were beggars. Upon the restoration of Presbyterianism the evil was again grappled with, and in 1709 so great a change had taken place that the justices of the peace were instructed to leave the whole question of poor relief to the kirk sessions.? Besides the regular orders there were two others, called for by the exigencies of the situation, superintendents and readers. The latter of these was temporary, lasting only until 1581; it was required by the lack of highly-qualified men for the ministry. Readers were appointed to read the common prayers and the Scriptures; in process of time they might become ministers. The superintendents travelled through their districts—of which there were to be ten—establishing churches, settling ministers, and generally putting the church in order. Moreover, com- missions were given, lasting for a year only, for special needs. It has been asserted that this office of superin- tendent was also intended to be temporary ; but it is not stated so, as in the case of the readers; on the contrary, the whole language points to permanence. It is obvious that it is only by the most strained use of language that this institution can be used as an historical argument for Episcopacy in any modern sense. Not only was the super- intendent in all respects subject to the same rule as his brethren, but in the last exhortation upon election he is*~~

~~*| strictly charged, "Usurpe not dominion nor tyrannical*~~

~~*authority over thy brethren." In June 1562, however,*~~

~~*subjection of ministers to superintendents, as far at any*~~

~~*rate as receiving admonition, was enacted; and in December*~~

~~*1562 the superintendent received the power, with the con-*~~

~~*sent of the majority of the ministers in his district, to trans- 2 Hetherington, ii, 243.*~~

~~*680*~~

~~*late ministers. In 1665 his functions increased vitally; he might then call a disobedient minister before himself, accom- panied only by the nearest discreet ministers, who might suspend the delinquent from ministry and stipend until the next general assembly. In 1575 it was ordered that superintendents should be elected yearly, to avoid ambition.*~~

~~*Care was taken to preserve the rights of the congrega- tion: "It apperteaneth to the Pepill, and to everie several congregation, to elect their minister. . . . Altogether this is to be avoided that any man be violently intrused or thrust in upon any congregation." But, once elected, he is irremovable, except for heinous crimes or by the majority of the whole kirk. Of course he is strictly "examinated" as regards both "lyiff and maneris" and "doctryne and knawledge," and especially as to his grasp of the chief points of controversy with Papists, Anabaptists, dc. No special method of nomination of elders is laid down, but from those nominated the whole congregation is to choose, special care being taken "that every man may gyf his vote freelie." The liberty of the churches is preserved by making the elections of elders and deacons annual. The affairs of each congregation were managed by the kirk session (French "'consistoire"), which met at least once a week. In every considerable town another weekly meet- ing was held, called the "' exercise of prophesying," which in course of time became the presbytery or classical assembly (colloque). It was formally erected in 1579, and gener- ally introduced in 1581. Then, again, the superintendent, with the ministers and delegated elders of his district, formed what developed into the provincial assembly. To this any one aggrieved by the kirk session might appeal, and, if necessary, the appeal went to the general assembly. This right of appeal was given in 1563. The general assembly, composed of delegated ministers and elders, into the constitution of which a change similar to that in France in 1565 was introduced in 1568, met as occasion served.*~~

~~*A splendid educational system was sketched. Parish schools, where grammar and Latin should be taught ; colleges in every important town, with professors of logic, rhetoric, and the tongues; universities at Glasgow, St Andrews, and Aberdeen,—such was what Knox desired. (The parish schools were not established till 1696.) The principle was affirmed that education was the affair of the state. "No fader, of what estait and condition that ever he be, use his children at his own fantasie, especially in their youthheade, but all must be compelled to bring up their children in learnyng and virtue." Compulsion and free education for the poor were Knox's idea. In 1567 parliament compelled patrons who had " provestries, pre- bendaries, altarages, or chaplaincies at their gift to present bursars to them to studie in anie college or universitie of this realm."*~~

~~*PRESBYTEHRAIARW' SES*~~

~~*[SCOTLAND.*~~

~~*assemblies, the independence of which was the essence of the kirk's existence. Against Mary's able secretary, Mait- land of Lethington, he threw himself with his whole vigour into this vital contest, and so far won the day that all Mary could gain was the compromise (important in prin- ciple) that a representative of the crown should have a place in the meetings.*~~

~~*The next struggle was on the question of patronage. The church requested that the vacant benefices, about 200 in number, might be filled by duly qualified persons. Mary answered that she would not give up her right of patronage. The church replied that no claim was made on this right, only it was desired that the places should be filled, and that the church should have the right of collat- ing, after approval by examination, those presented by the crown or patron. The church, in fact, was compelled to admit the principle of lay patronage. This was accepted in 1567, and no change was made until twenty years later, when all church lands not already bestowed inalienably on the nobles were annexed to the crown. James VI. gave these lands lavishly away with their patronages, which thus became lay patronages. Charles I. and Laud used their best efforts, but in vain, to regain them. The church pro- tested until March 1649, when lay patronage was altogether abolished. It was naturally restored at the Restoration, and remained until the Revolution. On 19th July 1690 the system was again*~~

~~abolished, and the nomination to a vacancy was placed in the hands of the Protestant heritors and elders with a veto to the whole congregation. In 1712, under the influences of the Jacobite revival, the English parliament reimposed lay patronage. This Act, as violating the Act of Security, has never been admitted as valid by the purer Presbyterians.~~

~~During the troublous years 1566-67 the kirk, stable in a time of confusion, consolidated her strength, and. within her own bounds established the strictest discipline. In 1567 parliament made the monarchy Protestant, ratified the rights of the church to collation, and established the important principle, resisted from time to time, that the "thrids" of benefices should be henceforth collected by persons nominated by herself, and that she should pay the surplus into the exchequer after satisfying the ministers' stipends. Her progress may be gathered from the fact that, while in 1560 the general assembly contained only 6 ministers and 34 laymen, in 1567 she contained 252 ministers and 467 readers. Her power is seen in the cen- sure passed upon the countess of Argyll, the earl being the most powerful of the nobility, for assisting at the baptism of Mary's son with Catholic rites.~~

~~To the nobility, which retained the old turbulence of feudalism that had long ceased to be tolerated in any other country in Europe, this power of the church was hateful,~~

~~bu _ To carry out these schemes and one for composition of | and after the death of Murray their enmity became out- "hy ® tithes Knox proposed to apply the revenues of the disestab: | spoken. Morton, acting under English influence, led the~~

~~lished church. But he was completely baffled by the nobles,~~

~~fe attack. In 1571, the Roman Catholic archbishop of St who hastened to divide the spoil. The absolute irrecon-~~

~~and the crown.~~

~~cilability of the views of these feudal barons, who were Re- formers because their supremacy was threatened by crown and church, and because they coveted the abbey lands, with those of Knox and his fellow-labourers was at~~

~~*once brought into strong relief. His petitions were disregarded; the privy council would not ratify the Book; the lords determined that "the kirkmen shall intromett with the 2 parts of their benefices, and the third part be lifted up to the ministers' and Queene's use," or, as Knox bitterly said, two parts were "freelie given to the Devill" and the third part was "divided between God and the Devill." Even the sixth part allowed to the ministers was irregularly paid, a leading subject of complaint for many years. Knox's next struggle was to maintain the right to hold*~~

~~*Andrews having died, Morton obtained a grant of the archbishopric and of the two-thirds of his revenues dis- posable, and, by appointing a minister on condition that he himself should retain the greater part of the income, gained a strong footing within the church. In January 1572 the earl of Mar got together the superintendents and some ministers at Leith, on pretence of consultation. This convention, under the influence of the nobility, assumed the functions of a general assembly, and restored the titles of "archbishop" and "bishop" and the bounds of the dioceses, on the conditions that they should be chosen by a chapter of learned ministers, that they should have no more power than the superintendents, and that they should be subject to the general assembly in spiritual matters. These were the "tulchan" bishops. The general*~~

~~*Andrew Melville.*~~

~~*SCOTLAND.*~~ |

~~*assembly of August 1572 was not strong enough to resist. The effect of this arrangement, however, was to rob Episco- pacy, as a system, of all title to respect. It soon became the earnest belief of all who were truthful and independent in the nation that the Presbyterian system was the one divinely appointed mode of church government, from which it was sinful to deviate in the slightest degree.*~~

~~*In 1574 Andrew Melville appeared on the scene, and, by steady persistence and firm defiance of Morton's violence, gave fresh life to the church. The Second Book of Disci- pline, sanctioned by the general assembly in April 1578, and ordered in 1581 to be registered in the acts of the church, represents her determination to repel the aggres- sions of the nobility. It*~~

~~was decreed that no more bishops should be appointed, that the existing ones should be called by their own names, not by their titles, and that they~~

~~PRESBY-TERIANISM~~

~~681~~

~~liament met secretly and, having been thoroughly corrupted by the court, passed the "Black Acts." Act 2 declared Melville's claim to be treason ; Act 4 forbade presbyteries, synods, and assemblies, as being not allowed by parliament ; Act 20 re-established Episcopacy and made it treason to speak against any of the three estates (¢.g., bishops). king was made supreme in all cases and over all persons, while none were to presume "to meddle with the affairs of his Highness and estate." The course of events from 1584 to 1592, the fear of Catholic Spain, the league with England, and especially the ability of Robert Bruce led to a settlement, by which in May 1592 Presbyterianism was restored and ratified by parliament. It was of course a compromise, as is shown in the provision that, if a presby- tery refuse to admit a qualified minister, the patron may retain the income.~~

~~The —~~

~~should submit to the general assembly for disposal. The first Book of Discipline occupied itself chiefly with the congregation, the Second Book with the dependence~~

~~The quarrel, however, was not to be settled. For re- Struggle jecting the bill of attainder against the popish lords the with the synod of Fife excommunicated James and convened a °°W2~~

~~of the congregation upon higher courts. It did away with superintendents and established complete parity among ministers, transferring discipline and authority from indi- viduals to bodies of men. These were four. (1) The kirk session, which in 1587 was ordered to be subject to the presbytery. (2) The presbytery or eldership, which had the oversight of a number of neighbouring congregations, and consisted of all the ministers of the district, and as many olders as congregations, so that clergy and laity were equally represented. It had authority to control the kirk session, try~~

~~candidates, ordain or depose ministers. It constituted, in fact, the prominent feature of the system. (3) The provincial synod, composed of all the members of the presbyteries in its district, had jurisdiction of appeal over these presbyteries. (4) The general assembly, con- sisting of ministers and elders, chosen, be it observed, not from the provincial synod, but from the presbytery. Thus the presbytery took the same commanding position in Scotland as, it will be seen, the provincial synod did in France. The importance of these church courts politically, in the organization which they effected of the middle classes against the aristocracy, cannot be overrated.~~

~~The ruling elder was now to hold office for life,—an important limitation of the power of the congregation. The general tendency henceforward, natural in a complex society, was towards centralization ; the rights of the congregation were gradually diminished, those of the presbytery increased. This tendency was strengthened as time went on by the passionate hatred of the Presbyterians for the congregational system. Thus in 1639 Baillie declares that if the congregation is to have a veto upon the appointment of the minister it is "sheer Brownism" (vol. i. p. 241); and on 30th July 1643, although " William Rigg and the people" were against an appointment, the intruder was de- cerned by the general assembly to be admitted, since the patron, presbytery, and provincial synod were in favour of it. As the position of elder increased relatively to that of simple members of the congregation, so the position of minister increased relatively to that of elder. The supremacy of ministers and the subordination of the elders reached their height after the great rising of 1638.~~

~~The contest which was waged during 1582-84 between the kirk and the crown was chiefly concerned with the denial by Melville of the primary jurisdiction of the privy council over ministers summoned for offences committed in their ministerial capacity. He demanded in his own case to be tried, in the first instance, by the ecclesiastical courts. A more important case of the same claim, because connected with less important persons, occurred in 1591, and the de- mand of the church was allowed so far that the offender was tried in both courts concurrently. In May 1584 the par-~~

~~meeting from the whole kingdom to complain of his con- duct. A little later Andrew Melville, when sent on a deputation, called James "God's silly~~

~~*vassal," and told him that there were two kings and two kingdoms in Scot- land, King James the head of the commonwealth and Christ Jesus the head of the church, whose subject he was. James, however, was strong enough to remain inflexible and to secure a victory on the question of the church courts, which, in the case of David Black, one of the ministers of St Andrews, who had in a sermon reflected upon the queen and Church of England, had arisen in its most acute form.*~~

~~*Two alternative steps were now suggested for prevent- ing future strife, the establishment of Episcopacy or the admission into parliament of representatives of the church without any title or jurisdiction derived from the crown. In a general assembly opened at Perth on 29th February 1597, and packed with ministers from the remote northern presbyteries, where the democratic spirit of the High Presbyterians of the South was unknown, James obtained leave to suggest in a future assembly alterations in the existing government of the church, a disapproval of the discussion of state questions and of the denunciation of individuals from the pulpit, and the forbidding of extra- ordinary conventions. Ministers were also to confine their discourses strictly to their own congregations, and summary excommunication was abolished. He had previously with a high hand put down the opposition of the Edinburgh ministers, Bruce and others seeking safety in flight.*~~

~~*In April, at Dundee, an assembly similar to that of Perth consented that commissioners should be appointed to advise the king on church affairs, which step in a great degree freed him from the general assembly. These com- missioners were easily induced to petition that the church might be represented in parliament. Parliament thereupon passed an Act allowing those to sit there who might be ap- pointed by the king, as bishop, abbot, or other prelate, the duties of their offices to be determined in conference with the assembly. At the second assembly of Dundee, how- ever, which met on 7th March 1598, and at which Andrew Melville was refused admittance by James on frivolous though legal grounds, it was resolved that fifty-one repre- sentatives of the church, chosen partly by the king and partly by the church, should vote in parliament. At a convention held at Falkland on 25th July, at which three representatives of each synod and six doctors of the universities were present, it was decided that the repre- sentatives should be*~~

~~nominated by the king out of a list of six as vacancies occurred. They were to be respon- sible to the general assembly, and were to propose nothing unless instructed to doso by the church. Of these two~~

~~XIX. — 86~~

~~682~~

~~plans, the parliament's and the church's, James greatly to induce the church to agree to it to the general assembly at~~

~~At Montrose the assembly Falkland convention by~~

~~preferred the former ; he held a conference previous Montrose in 1600, but in vain. put limitations to the plan of the insisting that their representatives should sit but for one year, and that at the end of that year they should resign and account for their conduct to the assembly, which might depose them. They were to be called commissioners only. Six were to be nominated for each province, from whom the king was to choose one. The commissioner was to have no power above that of other ministers, was to perform full pastoral work, and was to lose his vote in parliament if deposed from the ministry. Victory James at length took a decisive step. On 14th October of James 1600 he summoned a convention of commissioners from we the various synods, and by some means secured its consent to the appointment of three bishops in addition to those formerly nominated and still living. They took their seats and voted in parliament next November ; but the church, disowning the authority of the convention, refused to ac- knowledge the appointment as valid, and assigned them no place in her own organization. The quarrel became intensified when James was master of the power of corrup- tion with English money. The proposals for union between the kingdoms at once brought out the views of the church. "The realmes," said Melville, "could not be united with- out the union of the kirk; neither could the kirkes be united in discipline, the one being Episcopal and the other Presbyterian, unless one should surrender to the other." When James twice prorogued the meeting of the general assembly nine presbyteries met at Aberdeen in defiance. The Government at once struck hard: eight ministers were banished to remote charges and six to France. Next followed the alienation of church lands and revenues and their erection into temporal~~

~~*lordships, the re-establishment of seventeen prelacies, and the restoration of the bishops. The immense step was taken of recognizing the king as "absolute prince, judge, and governor over all estates, persons, and causes, both spiritual and temporal." In 1606 another packed assembly declared for constant moderators of presbyteries and for the supremacy of the bishops in their own presbytery and provincial synod. In 1609 the bishops gained the right of fixing ministers' stipends. In 1610 courts of high commission with most arbitrary powers were erected at Glasgow and St Andrews ; and in June the general assembly placed the whole ecclesi- astical power in the king's hands. In 1618, under threats of violence, the general assembly of Perth passed the Five Acts, which enforced kneeling at communion, observance of holy days, Episcopal confirmation, private baptism, and private communion. These were ratified by parliament on Black Saturday, 4th August 1621. Thus matters remained until the death of James. Almost the first act of Charles I. was to proclaim the strict observance of the articles of Perth. In November 1625 he revoked all the Acts of his father prejudicial to the crown, as a first step toward the resumption of the church lands. This, of course, met with the vehement opposition of the nobility, and the scheme in the end had to be given up. In 1630 Maxwell, in Laud's confidence, was sent to Scotland to try to force upon the people the English liturgy. It is significant of the change in feeling that a paper of grievances sent in by ministers was sup- ported by several of the nobility. Their hatred was always directed to the nearest enemy, against the crown before le Mae and during its early stages, against the ormed Church of late years, now against the crown again. In 1633 Charles came to Edinburgh and forced through the convention the " Act anent his Majesty's Pre-*~~

~~*PEESBYTERIANYTSS*~~

~~*[SCOTLAND.*~~

~~*rogative and Apparel of Churchmen," a combination of two Acts passed in 1606 and 1609 respectively. All pro- tests were disregarded and the whole nation was thrown into a state of anger and disappointment. The attack on Balmerino still further alienated the lords. In 1635 dio- cesan courts were erected with the most vexatious powers, and the Book of Canons, subversive*~~

~~*of Presbyterianism and insulting in language, was distributed ; and in 1636 the people were ordered to adopt Laud's book of public wor- ship ; while in July 1637 the prelates 'obtained an order of outlawry against ministers who should be backward in re- ceiving the liturgy. As Baillie said, they were like to go "to Rome for religion, to Constantinople for policy." On 23d July, however, the outburst of St Giles's took place. Fina The history of the great rising cannot be traced here. National Covenant, which was its outcome, drawn up by Alexander Henderson and Johnston of Warriston, consisted of the Second Book of Discipline, a recapitulation of the Acts of Parliament condemning Popery and ratifying the acts of the general assembly, and the application of the whole to present times.*~~

~~*After some months of trickery and evasion, frustrated with firmness and ability by the Covenanters, the general assembly met on Wednesday, 21st November 1638. When they determined to sit in judgment on the prelates, Hamilton, the king's commissioner, dissolved the assembly. It, however, continued its sitting, refused to acknowledge the assemblies which had introduced prelacy, condemned the Acts of Perth and*all the late innovations, and abjured all Episcopacy different from that of a pastor over a parti- cular flock. Baillie alone made a stand for not rejecting Episcopacy as represented by the superintendents of Knox's time. Eight prelates were excommunicated, four deposed only, two reduced to the simple pastorate. All church assemblies were restored, and the principle that the con- sent of the congregation was necessary to a minister's appointment was re-enacted. Schools and schoolmasters were at once to be provided. In August 1639 an Act was passed, called the, Barrier Act, that no change should be made in the laws of the church until the proposal had been submitted to all provincial synods and presbyteries.*~~

~~*The church was now secure. She had gained the day, because on this occasion the zeal of her ministers and the interests of the nobles had been both enlisted in her service. The victory had been won in her name and the influence of her ministers was vastly increased. For the spiritual tyranny which they introduced the reader should refer to Mr Buckle's famous chapter ; or, if he think those statements to be partial or exaggerated, to original records, such as those of the presbyteries of St Andrews and Cupar.*~~

~~1~~

~~*The success of the*~~

~~*church,*~~

~~*The arrogance of the ministers' pretensions and the readi- Rule of*~~

~~*ness with which these pretensions were granted, the appal- ™mini*~~

~~*sters*~~

~~*the*~~

~~*ling conceptions of the Deity which were inculcated and the ane absence of all contrary expression of opinion, the intrusions on the domain of the magistrate, the vexatious inter- ference in every detail of family and commercial life and the patience with which it was borne, are to an English reader alike amazing. 'We acknowledge," said they, "that according to the latitude of the word of God (which is our theame) we are allowed to treate in an ecclesiastical way of greatest and smallest, from the King's throne that should be established in righteousness, to the merchant's ballance that should be used in faithfulness." The liber- ality of the interpretation given to this can only be judged of after minute reading.*~~

~~*Up to this point the Kirk had worked out her own salvation ; the problem had been purely Scottish ; hence- forward her history is in close connexion with that of England and assumes a different complexion. Her first difficulties, however, arose in her own midst. Under the*~~

~~*ch,*~~

~~*-*~~

~~*Restora- tion of Episco- pacy.*~~

~~*SCOTLAND. |*~~

~~*prelatic rule conventicles had arisen, which after the re- storation of Presbyterianism caused great searchings of heart. Whatever he had to say about popery, prelacy, or arbitrary power, the true Presbyterian reserved his fiercest hatred and his most ferocious language for anything which savoured of Congregationalism. At the instance of Henry Guthrie, who under Charles II. became a bishop, the general assembly of 1640 limited family worship to the members of each family, and forbade any one to preach who was not duly ordained and approved. This was but the beginning of dissension.*~~

~~*Passing over the events of the next six years, as coming more conveniently under the head of England, we notice that the moment external danger was removed the natural and abiding antipathy between a licentious and entirely selfish aristocracy and a masterful, censorious, and demo- cratic church broke out. Two parties showed theinselves, —that of the ministers, who insisted that no arrangement should be come to with Charles unless he would take the Covenant (compare the French "consistoriaux"), the other, headed by Hamilton, Lanark, Lauderdale, and others, who "engaged" to raise an army for him on condition, ostensibly, that he would confirm Presbyterian church government for three years. The real conditions, as long believed but only just discovered, contain not a word about the church, but are entirely concerned with the privileges of the Scottish nobility. A vehement disruption of the church at once took place and did not cease until the defeat of Hamilton. Then the ministers were once more masters. Parliament repealed the Act of Engagement and passed the Act of Classes, whereby all those to whom the church deemed it inexpedient to give political power were regis- tered in four classes according to their faults. It was by this parliament that lay patronage was abolished, and that the rights of the congregation as to election of ministers were settled for the time. After the battle of Dunbar, when troops were being hastily raised, the Act of Classes stood much in the way. In spite of the remonstrances of Patrick Gillespie and the western Covenanters, the com- mission of the assembly (which sat en permanence during the recess of the assembly itself) resolved to allow all persons to serve who were not professed enemies to the Covenant or excommunicated. The parliament went further and rescinded the Act of Classes altogether. Against this union of the church with the "malignants" Gillespie's faction protested, and henceforward the rivalry*~~

~~*and bitter- ness between Resolutioners and Protesters, the latter being favoured by Cromwell, deprived the church of much of its power of resistance. Both parties, absorbed in their quarrel, looked on while Monk, after the battle of Worcester (1651), took the matter into his own hands by refusing to allow any general assembly whatever to meet, though he permitted the continuance of the other assemblies.*~~

~~*Within two years of the Restoration the Presbyterian Church ceased to exist. Weariness, internal dissension, the indifference or positive hatred of the nobles, and the extremity of treachery in James Sharp? brought about the downfall. The steps by which Episcopacy was restored were these. The leaders of the strict Covenanting party were imprisoned, while a quibbling proclamation was issued by Charles which served to keep the Resolutioners in play. Proclamations were issued against all unlawful meetings, and papers such as Rutherford's Lea Rex and Guthrie's Causes of God's Wrath were called in. In January 1661 a bribed and packed parliament passed an oath of allegiance in which the king was acknowledged as supreme over all persons and in all causes. With scarcely an exception,*~~

~~*1 See Lauderdale Papers, vol. i. p. 8 (Camden Society).*~~

~~*2 For proof of his active participation in the re-establishment of Episcopacy, see Lauderdale Papers, vol. ii., App. III.*~~

~~*Cassilis being the only one of note, the nobility took the oath. Next the acceptance of the Solemn League and Covenant was declared null and void, and its renewal was prohibited. And, by way of clearing the field entirely, a Rescissory Act was passed annulling all the parliaments since 1633 and thereby suspending the Presbyterian system. The parliament then declared that the church government was to be such as was most agreeable to the word of God, to monarchical government, and to public peace; remonstrances were disregarded and synods suppressed or corrupted. Argyll and James Guthrie were judicially murdered. Finally, on 14th August 1661, Episcopacy was restored by proclamation ; Sharp, Fairfoul, Hamilton, and*~~

~~— Leighton were consecrated in London ; and on 2d January 1662 all Presbyterian assemblies of every sort, unless autho- rized by the prelates, were forbidden. On 8th May the proclamation was enforced by Act of parliament. All reli- gious covenants and leagues, protestat'ons and petitions, were made treasonable, nor might any one be professor, minister, schoolmaster, or private tutor without a bishop's licence. On 5th September 1662 the abjuration of the National Covenant and all other religious covenants was made a condition for public trust. Finally, the Act of Indemnity, which had been delayed as long as possible, contained a schedule of persons of the Presbyterian interest who were punished with heavy fines. Dangerous ministers were banished from Edinburgh and all were ordered to attend the bishops' courts when suzimoned, while by the Glasgow Act ministers who had taken charges since 1649 were ousted from home, parish, and presbytery unless be- fore 1st November they obtained presentation from the patron and collation from the bishop. This led to the ejectment of 400 ministers. Ejectment led, of course, as in England, to conventicling, and on 17th June and 13th August 1663 severe Acts were passed against these meet- ings. Presbyterian ministers from Ireland were forbidden to reside in Scotland, and absentees from public worship were vigorously proceeded against. The system of perse- cution was now complete, and the triumph was signalized by the execution of Johnston of Warriston, who had been kidnapped in France and who was now put to death with flippant cruelty. In 1664, at the suggestion of the arch- bishops Sharp and Burnet, a court of high commission was erected with unlimited powers.~~

~~Revolt soon followed ; it was crushed at Pentland and ruthlessly punished. But the nobles speedily became jealous of the growing power of the prelates. Lauderdale in especial saw his influence threatened. He reported to Charles that Prelacy was becoming as great a danger to the crown as Presbyterianism had been, "so unwilling are churchmen, by whatever name tliey are distinguished, to part with power." Sharp was easily threatened and cajoled, and Burnet, after a struggle of three years, was forced to resign. It was not, however, until after the fall of Clarendon in 1667 that indulgence was seriously tried there as in England. In July 1669 ten ministers, of whom Hutcheson was the chief, who were willing to admit te ecclesiastical supremacy of the king and to accept tue bishops' collation,~~

~~were allowed to return to their livings, and were henceforth known as the "bishops' curate." This subservience caused a renewal of the breach in the hurch; from henceforward the feud between the "Tndulged" and the "non-Indulged" took the place of that between Resolutioners and Protesters. Forty-two ministers accepted the indulgence. A second indulgence followed in 1672. From Lauderdale's marriage with Lady Dysart until 1687 there ensued a policy of extermination, borne with marvellous fortitude. To Covenanters had succeeded Protesters, to Protesters Conventiclers, to Conventiclers now succeeded Hamiltonians, to Hamiltonians~~

~~Presby- terian- ism once more supreme.~~

~~684~~

~~Cameronians or Society People. Want of space prevents us from giving even the names of a series of Acts which would disgrace any nation however barbarous, in any age however intolerant, and under which, it is asserted with great probability, 18,000 persons died. In February 1687 James II. proclaimed indulgences to moderate Presby- terians as far only as regarded private worship. By the same proclamation the profession of Roman Catholicism was made absolutely free. In March a more extended indulgence and in June the suspension of all penal laws, except as regarded field-preaching, were granted. The party which had throughout refused compromise refused it still. In their Znformatory Vindication they scouted the claim of the sovereign to "indulge" or to "tolerate" an inalienable right, and went on with their field-preaching as though nothing had happened. The death of Renwick, their leader, closes the awful story of the rule of the later Stuarts in Scotland.~~

~~On 5th November 1688 William landed at Torbay ; the bishops' curates were ejected without violence ; no retri- bution was taken, but Presbyterianism quietly reasserted itself as the form of church government natural to the Scottish mind. Presbyterianism, however, was not now what it had been in the days of Andrew Melville or in 1638. The last twenty-six years had thoroughly cowed a great part of the nation, and a new generation had come to manhood who could not even remember the time when Scotland was not Episcopal. The nobles had no interest to serve in re-establishing the old form ; the very ministers were those who had~~

~~conformed or had accepted indulgence. Out of the 400 ejected in 1663 only sixty now survived. Moreover, Scotland had not escaped the wave of latitudi- narianism that had come over all forms of Protestant reli- gion. Most of all, the character of William III. and his confidential adviser Carstares affected the nature of the settlement. William was above all a statesman, and a toler- ant statesman, and he wished for union of the moderate parties in both kingdoms ; on taking the coronation oath he refused to swear the clause binding him to root out heretics and enemies of the true worship of God. The claim of right, too, avoids any assertion of the jus divinum of Presby- terianism. But on 22d July 1689 its declaration that prelacy had been an insupportable grievance was made into an Act by the convention of estates, and all Acts in favour of Episcopacy were rescinded. In April 1690 the Act of Supremacy was also rescinded; ministers ejected since 1661 were replaced, and the Presbyterian government of 1592 (thus avoiding all mention of the covenants) restored ; lay patronage was abolished, but pecuniary compensation was granted. On 16th October 1690 the first general assembly since 1653 met, when the preliminary act was to receive into the national church the remaining three ministers of the Cameronians (Thomas Lining, Alexander Shields, and William Boyd). Their followers, however, regarded this as a compromise with Satan, and kept them- selves aloof.! Episcopalian ministers who subscribed the confession and obeyed the Presbyterian government re- tained their livings, and all sentences of Resolutioners and Protesters against one another were rescinded. Mr Hether- ; . They remained without a minister until 1707, when they were joined by John M'Millan, minister of the parish of Balmaghie, who had been summarily deposed for principles akin to those of the Society People. The accession of Thomas Nairn, one of the ministers of the Secession Church, made a "Reformed Presbytery" possible in 1743 ; this became a synod of three presbyteries in 1811. The first "Testi- mony," published in 1761, was afterwards superseded by that of 1839, which thenceforward was regarded as one of the "subordinate stand- ards " of the Reformed Presbyterian Church. In 1876 before the union with the Free Church (see vol. ix. p. 746) the denomination in Scotland numbered 6 presbyteries, 38 niinisters, and 40 congregations.~~

~~It also had six missionaries in the New Hebrides. For the fortunes of the Reformed presbyteries in Ireland and the United States, see below.~~

~~*PRBESBYTERIANISC@G*~~

~~*[SCOTLAND.*~~

~~*ington well says, 'Without a clear conception of this point it is impossible to understand the subsequent history of the Church of Scotland. In consequence of the introduction of the prelatic party the church thenceforward contained within its pale two systems, that of the old and true Pres- byterian, subsequently known as the ' evangelical,' and that of the new and semi-prelatical, subsequently known as the 'moderate.' Thenceforward the history of the Church of Scotland is the history of the protracted struggle between these two systems, which were necessarily irreconcilable."*~~

~~*In the first case of friction with the crown, which occurred in 1691, a compromise was effected,—the church success- fully asserting its autonomy by granting only part of the privileges which William desired for the Episcopal clergy. The critical dispute occurred when parliament imposed a new oath of allegiance, the taking of which was made a necessary qualification for sitting in the assembly. The church denied the right of the crown to impose a civil oath as a condition of spiritual office ; and a serious breach would have occurred but for the efforts of Carstares, who induced the king to give way at the last moment. Having thus asserted her independence, the church conceded to William nearly all he had asked for on behalf of the Episcopalians. In 1696 the parish schools were estab- lished. In 1698, to vindicate the church from the charges of backsliding, the general assembly published the Season- able Admonition, which claimed in emphatic language the dependence of the church on Christ alone, and repudiated the doctrine that the inclination of the people was the foundation of Presbyterianism. In 1701 the first con- demnation of heresy took place.*~~

~~*The spirit of watchfulness on the part of the church increased during Anne's reign. In naming commissioners for the Union the parliament forbade them to mention the church. The extreme section indeed regarded the Union itself as a violation of the Solemn League and Covenant. The Act of Security provided that the Con- fession of Faith and the Presbyterian government should "continue without any alteration to the people of this land in all succeeding ages," and the first oath taken by the queen at her accession*~~

~~*was to preserve it. The Union, however, teuded to Anglicize the upper classes and thus to increase the latitudinarianism which was finding its way within the church. Politically speaking, the settlement of the Scottish Church was of great importance to the Govern- ment during the Jacobite intrigues, for its attitude was one of vigilance against all that was favourable to Prelacy, and its influence consolidated opinion against the Stuarts.*~~

~~*The HIgh-Church revival of 1710, however, had its effect upon the church. In 1711 an Episcopalian named Greenshields used the English liturgy in Edinburgh. HIe was condemned by the Court of Session; but the HIouse of Lords reversed the decision and imposed heavy damages on the magistrates who had closed his chapel. In 1712 a Bill of Toleration, which allowed Episcopalian dissenters to use the English liturgy, was hurried through both HIouses, in spite of the urgent remonstrances of the Scottish commissioners, and on 22d April lay patronage was restored. This latter Act, as violating the Act of Security, has never been regarded as valid by the severer Presby- terians. That no further resistance was made than by protests and petitions shows how far the '" moderatizing " spirit had spread. The remnant of the Cameronians, who were outside of and discouraged by the church, alone met and renewed the Covenant after solemnly acknowledging the sins of the nation.*~~

~~*The progress towards Arminianism, due to the influence Schisms.*~~

~~*of Baxter's writings and to the training of the young ministers in HIolland, may be seen in the treatment of Professor Simson and in the Auchterarder case. It was*~~

~~*Early move- ments.*~~

~~*ENGLAND.*~~ |

~~*now that Neonomianism, or the doctrine that the gospel is a new law, promising salvation upon the condition of the abandonment of sin, began. Its first victory was when the general assembly condemned the doctrines of the Marrow of Modern Dimnity, and rebuked the twelve ministers who had sent in a representation against the decision. The Patronage Act was*~~

~~*rapidly being accepted and was showing its effects chiefly in the neglect shown to the wishes of the congregations. In 1731 the right was given to the heritors and elders to "elect and call" instead of to "name and propose the person to the whole congregation to be approven or disapproven," and was made law without having first been submitted to the pres- byteries according to the Barrier Act of 1639. This led to the first great schism. Ebenezer Erskine denounced the action of the assembly in two sermons. Being rebuked by the synod of Perth and Stirling, he appealed to the assembly, who approved the rebuke. With three other ministers he protested. 'The four were temporarily deposed by the assembly, and on 6th December 1733 they formed the "Associate Presbytery." In 1737 their number was largely increased, and they published their manifesto, the "Declaration and Testimony." Their final deposition, and the first schism, occurred on 15th May 1740.*~~

~~*For several years the wishes of congregations were ignored; wherever the presbytery refused to appoint at the will of the assembly, a 'riding committee," often assisted by military force, carried out the decision. The civil courts were bound to obey the Act of Patronage, and therefore never upheld the congregation against a legal appoint- ment. At length in 1752 the leader of the "moderate" 'party, Principal Robertson, seeing in this refusal of pres- byteries the elements of endless confusion, and that tem- porary substitutes, e.g., riding committees, were uncon- stitutional and bad in principle, determined that the presbyteries themselves should be compelled to carry out the decisions of the assembly. From the deposition of Thomas GILLESPIE (g.v.), a member of the presbytery of Dunfermline, who refused to act in accordance with the assembly's decision, is dated the second or 'Relief " schism. Principal Tulloch says upon this: "The policy was so far successful ; but the success was of that nature which is almost worse than defeat. It introduced order within the church. It crushed the revolt of presbyteries. It silenced in many cases popular clamour. But it quietly and gradually alienated masses of the people from the estab- lishment." So rapidly did dissent spread that from a report presented to the general assembly in 1765 it appears that 'there are now 120 meeting- houses erected, to which more than 100,000 persons resort, who were formerly of our communion, but have separated them- selves from the Church of Scotland. This secession," the report adds, "is most extensive in*~~

~~*the greatest and most populous towns." For the subsequent history of Presby- terianism in Scotland, see FREE CHurcH, UNITED PRESByY-TERIAN CHURCH, and ScoTLAND (CHURCH oF).}*~~

~~*England.—Several faint traces may be noted of the presence of Presbyterian ideas in England within a few years of the Reformation. During the reign of Edward*~~

~~*1 Chief References.—Calderwood, List. of the Kirk; Knox, Hist. of the Reformation, and Works (ed. Laing) ; Hetherington, Hist. of the Church of Scotland ; M'Crie, Life of Knox and Life of Melville ; Cunningham, Historical Theology; Rudloff, Geschichte der Ref. in Schottland ; Neal, Hist. of the Puritans ; St Giles' Lectures (1st ser.) ; Records of the First Pan-Presbyterian Council (Edinburgh, 1877) ; James Melville, Diary; Burton, List. of Scotland; Laing, Hist. of Scotland ; Wodrow, Church History and Miscellanies ; Baillie, Letters and Journals; Records of Presbyteries of St Andrews and Cupar ; Buckle, History; Burnet, Hist. Reform; Robertson, Mist. of Scotland ; Spottiswoode, Hist. of Church of Scotland; Kirkton, Mist. of the Church ; Stevenson, I/ist. of the Church ; Lamont, Diary ; Gardiner, History of England, ch. 2; Lauderdale Papers (Camden Society).*~~

~~*PRESBYTERIAN IS M*~~

~~*685*~~

~~*VI, for instance, Bucer, with Cranmer's goodwill, laid before the king a sketch of church discipline and reform of episcopal government. Each bishop was to have a council of presbyters, and provincial synods with a royal commissioner were to meet twice a year. Many English joined Lasky's foreign church, and when it was dispersed under Mary settled chiefly in Frankfort, where the dispute took place in which the adherents of the Prayer Book de- feated Knox and his followers. These came to England filled with Calvinistic views regarding church and state, only to find the royal supremacy absolute, and uniformity enforced under crushing penalties. Even the foreign Pro- testants were compelled to choose the bishop of the diocese as their superintendent. The contest, which began after a scheme of reform had been lost in convocation by one vote in 1562,*~~

~~was ostensibly concerning vestments and cere- monies ; really it rested on a far wider basis, one which found place even in Cambridge disputations, viz., " whether the civil magistrate has authority in ecclesiastical affairs." That the Puritans? did not look for a speedy setting up of "discipline " may be seen in Cox's letter to Gualter, ."' We have some discipline among us with relation to men's lives, such as it is; but if any man would go about to persuade our nobility to submit their necks to that yoke, he may as well venture to pull the hair out of a lion's beard." In 1566 took place the first separation of several deprived London ministers, who determined in future to use the Geneva service book, which they did until they were ar- rested in Plumbers' Hall on 19th June 1567. During 1567 and 1568 the persecutions in France and Holland drove thousands of Protestants, chiefly Presbyterians, to England. In 1570 the leading Presbyterian views found an exponent in Thomas Cartwright at Cambridge (the headquarters of advanced Puritanism) ; and the temper of parliament is shown by the Act of 1571 for the reformation of disorder in the church, in which, while all mention of discipline is omitted, the doctrinal Articles alone being sanctioned, ordination by presbyters without a bishop is implicitly recognized. It is to be observed that Cartwright and the leading Puritan theologians opposed the idea of separation. The voluntary association of bishop, ministers, and laity at Northampton is interesting as showing how earnest men were thinking. Their discipline was strict and their tone with regard to the state and to the existing con- stitution of the church was too bold to allow of indulgence. In spite, however, of constant deprivation, especially in the midland and eastern counties, the obnoxious doctrines spread ; and in 1572 the first formal manifesto was put forth in the Admonition to Parliament of Field and Wilcox, with theassent of others. Equality of ministers, choosing of elders and deacons, election of ministers by the congrega- tion, objection to prescribed prayer and antiphonal chant- ing, the view that preaching is a minister's chief duty and that the magistrate should root out superstition and idolatry, are leading points. The controversy which followed between Whitgift and Cartwright showed how impossible agreement was when the one side argued that the Holy Scriptures were the only standard as well for church government as of faith, and the other that a system of church government was nowhere laid down in Scripture, and might be settled by and accommodated to the civil government under which men happen to be living. On 20th November 1572~~

~~*the authors of the Admonition set up at Wandsworth what has been called the first presby- tery in England. They chose eleven elders and put out*~~

~~*2 We use this word in its widest sense to include all who desired purity in church government and doctrine. They consisted at first of the returned exiles of the Marian persecution, and separated under the stress of Elizabeth's action into Independents and Presbyterians, the latter remaining inside the church.*~~

~~*Presby-*~~

~~*in England.*~~

~~*686*~~

~~*a purely Presbyterian system, the Orders of Wandsworth. Similar associations were erected in London and in the midland and eastern counties. When, however, an attempt was made to join the foreign churches in London, the privy council forbade it. Jersey and Guernsey, whither large numbers of Huguenots had fled after the massacre of St. Bartholomew's, alone were Presbyterian by per- mission. Cartwright and Snape were pastors there, and from 1576 to 1625 a completely appointed Presbyterian church existed, confirmed by synods (held at Guernsey and Jersey on 28th June 1576 and 17th October 1577) and authorized by the governor. Meantime Cartwright and Travers had drawn up a scheme, never realized, by which ministers were bound to refuse ordination by a bishop unless they had previously been "called " by a congre- gation and approved by a church classis. Ceremonies in dispute might be omitted; should this cause danger of deprivation the classis was to decide. The doctrinal Articles might be subscribed, but not the Prayer Book. Churchwardens might easily be converted into elders and deacons ; and classical, comitial, and provincial assemblies were to be held.*~~

~~*The suppression of independent life in the church at length drove numbers out, known in the future as Brownists or LNDEPENDENTS (q.v.). Those who remained still strove for reform. They were met by a new court of high com- mission and the "ex officio" oath,—an increase of severity strongly opposed by Burghley and the privy council. These views are expressed in*~~

~~*Travers's Disciplina Ecclesiz ex verbo Dei descripta, printed at Geneva in 1574, trans- lated with additions by Cartwright in 1584, then sup- pressed and not again published until 1644, when it was officially recognized as the Directory of Government.' Its leading principles were those of French Protestantism.*~~

~~*terianism Jt was signed by some 500 ministers, Cartwright among*~~

~~*them. The action of the Commons in 1584, stimulated by the opposition of the Lords, shows that the principles of Presbyterianism were very strong in the country. Bills were introduced to limit the stringency of subscription, and to confine the penalties of suspension and deprivation to cases of heresy or scandalous life, to reduce the posi- tion of. a bishop wellnigh to that of merely primus inter pares, for placing the power of veto in the congregation, for abolishing the canon law and all spiritual courts, and for establishing a presbytery in every parish. All these proposals were, however, cut short by the unflinch- ing exercise of the queen's prerogative; and, with some slackening during the great year of peril, the Puritans suffered extreme persecution. In 1588 they held a pro- vincial synod at Warwick, and also again at Michaelmas. It is noticeable, as showing the growth side by side with Presbyterianism of the spirit directly its opposite, that on 12th January 1588 Bancroft for the first time maintained the jus divinum of Episcopacy. There seems no doubt that during the later years o Elizabeth Presbyterianism declined. The position of the conforming Puritan was in every way a weak one. He had sworn to the queen's ecclesiastical supremacy, and this supremacy was what he most hated; he was compelled to have recourse to the figment that, although she had this supremacy, she could not exercise it ecclesiastically, but could merely give her sanction to whatever was enacted by the church. On the other hand, in appearing to attack the church he appeared to attack the nationality of the country when the national spirit was most intense. The nation was rapidly becoming conscious of a vivid and energetic national life, and whatever impaired the national*~~

~~*unity was regarded with impatience and resentment at a*~~

~~*_1MCrie, Annals of Presbytery, says that the Orders of Wands- worth were the Directory.*~~

~~*PRESBYTERIAN IS®*~~

~~*presbyters.*~~

~~*[ENGLAND.*~~

~~*time when the political condition of Europe was fraught with such danger to England herself. The Scottish Presbyterian had triumphed over a hated and alien church, and the bishops whom he overthrew were evil-living and oppressive men ; the English Presbyterian knew that his church was the symbol of freedom and that her bishops had been holy men martyred for the sake of that freedom. Finally, in England there had existed among the common people, as there had not in Scotland, an absence of inter- ference and an independence of private life which would naturally form the strongest obstacle to the introduction of the longed-for Presbyterian discipline. The difference between English and Scottish Presbyterianism was clear to James when in the millenary petition the reforming clergy disclaimed all idea of affecting parity in the church _ or of attacking the royal supremacy, and merely requested the redress of certain abuses in rites and ceremonies. Even with regard to the "ex officio" oath they asked only that it might be more sparingly used. The Puritans had evidently lost faith in themselves and had been unable to spread their views. 'Elizabeth had drained the life out of Puritanism by destroying the Armada and by her subse- quent policy in taking the leadership of the Protestant interest in Europe." It needed the abuses of the reign of James I. to restore it. The king was still further en- couraged by the servile support of the universities, which had quite lost their Puritan tone. At the Hampton Court Conference in January 1604, Dr Reynolds as spokesman of the Puritans desired permission for clerical assemblies every three weeks, " prophesyings" in rural deaneries, and that appeals might lie from the archdeacon's invitation to the diocesan synod, composed of the bishop and his The coarse and menacing rejection of these demands made clear the weakness of the reforming party within the church as opposed to the cordial alliance between the High Church and the crown. The breach was wider than at any time under Elizabeth. The struggle was becoming political. Divine right of Episcopacy, Arminianism, and prerogative in the crown were becoming ranged against Presbyterianism in church government, Calvinism in creed,*~~

~~*and moderate republicanism in politics. In 1604 James put out the Book of Canons, by which, Persecu- every clergyman was forced to subscribe, "willingly and ex tion of animo," (1) the spiritual and ecclesiastical supremacy of the r. oe crown, (2) the Book of Common Prayer, (3) the Thirty- the nine Articles of 1562, as being all and every one of them Stuarts. agreeable to the word of God. The Book was passed under the great seal, but was never ratified by parliament. As the result,a large number of ministers, variously reckoned at from 45 to 300, were deprived of their benefices. Henceforward the persecution was steady and grievous, and an exodus took place to Holland, where the exiles erected Presbyterian churches which in their turn reacted con- tinually upon opinion in England. By far the larger part of the Puritans, however, clung to the church. As late as 1607 they eagerly expressed their desire "above all earthly things" to continue their ministry "as that without which our whole life would be wearisome and bitter to us." And in 1605, in answer to the attacks from both the extreme parties, William Bradshaw published his Lnglish Puritanism. The system herein developed, so far from being Presbyterian, is Congregationalism under state con- trol. While each congregation is to be entirely inde- pendent of all other ecclesiastical courts, the election of its officers and other important matters are ostentatiously given to the civil magistrate. Not the slightest intrusion by ecclesiastical officers upon civil authority may be allowed ; and all church preferment is absolutely in the hands of the crown, which is supreme over the constitution and pro- ceedings of synods, and whose commands may not be*~~

~~*The West- minster Agssem- bly.*~~

~~*ENGLAND. |*~~

~~*actively resisted. The king himself is subject to his own particular church alone, and even though apostate or an evil liver he retains his full supremacy. It is clear that the denial, in the Scottish sense, of the state supremacy is not expressed by the English Puritan: that which galled him was the jurisdiction of other ecclesiastics.*~~

~~*From the synod of Dort in 1618 Arminianism gained ground in England in spite of the fact that Abbot, the primate, was head of the "doctrinal" (or old Calvinist) Puritans. As soon as Laud came into power the Govern- ment*~~

~~*attacked Presbyterianism wherever it was found. Guernsey was compelled to accept Episcopacy, as Jersey had been in 1605, and the ten foreign congregations in England were placed under the control of the English Church. The English congregations in Hamburg and the Netherlands were also ordered to relinquish their synods. The system of the church was aristocratic exclusiveness..*~~

~~*One effect of the Scottish outburst in 1638 and of the events which followed was of course largely to strengthen in especial the Presbyterian interest. The action of the church tended constantly to cut off waverers. Baxter, for in- stance, was led toexamine and finally to throw off Episcopacy by the "et cetera" oath in 1640. Nevertheless at the opening of the Civil Wars, if he is to be believed, Noncon- formity, and in especial Presbyterianism, was very weak. "Where I was bred before 1640, which was in divers places, I knew not one Presbyterian clergyman or layman. . . . About as many Nonconformists as counties were left, and those few stuck most at subscription and ceremonies, and but few of them studied or understood the Presby- terian or Independent disciplinary causes." Those who sat in the Westminster Assembly were almost all such as had conformed.*~~

~~*In 1640 Henderson, Baillie, Blair, and Gillespie came with the Scottish commission to London, the ministers there having written to the general assembly expressing their desire for the establishment of the Scottish system. They at once set themselves to turn the current of Puritan- ism into the Presbyterian channel, and to bring about a union on the Presbyterian basis. Their preaching attracted large crowds, and, by a common mistake, they judged of all England from the London ministry, which was largely Presbyterian and which in December 1641 had petitioned for a synod (a desire expressed also in the Grand Remon- strance) to include ministers from foreign parts. The parties, however, which were to join issue at the assembly were already clearly recognizing one another, for we hear that "the separatists are like to be of some help to hold up the bishops through their impertinence." For the views of moderate men on church reform the speeches of Sir E. Deering are important. It is clear that had the bishops been willing to become the allies of a reforming parliament Presbyterianism would not have been seriously discussed.*~~

~~*In September, 1642 the Long Parliament abolished Episcopacy, the abolition to date from the 5th November 1643; the question what form of Puritanism should succeed it was that for which the Westminster Assembly was sum- moned by parliament on 12th June 1643. The interven- ing months were marked by a great increase of sects, of whom all were by nature opposed to the iron domination of Presbyterianism, which in its turn found support in the English ministers of Dutch congregations. It is important at the outset to notice that the assembly was born in Erastianism, the spirit which, from the whole course of English history for several centuries, may be regarded as national. It was a mere council of advice to the parlia- ment of England, a creature of the parliament alone. Its members, two from each county, though some counties had but one, were chosen by parliament, and 'nearer agreement with the Church of Scotland" is one of the*~~

~~*chief points in the ordinance. In 1643 also the Long Parliament, needing Scottish support, and willing to bid high, formed the Solemn League and Covenant. In this the English, struggling for civil liberty, cared only for a political league; moreover, "they were," says Baillie, "more nor we could consent to, for keeping of a doore open in England to Independencie. Against this we were peremptorie." To the Scots "its chief aim was the pro- pagation of our church discipline to England and Ireland." The title was a compromise, utterly distasteful to the Scots, who refused to call it anything but the "Covenant."*~~

~~*The number summoned to the assembly was 151, 10 being lords, 20 members of the House of Commons, 121 ministers. About one-half attended regularly. Besides the Episcopalian clergy, who did not attend, there were four parties—(1) moderate Reformers of Presbyterian tem- per, (2) Presbyterians of Scottish views, (3) Erastians, and (4) Independents. At the request of the parliament six Scottish commissioners, without a vote, of whom five (the sixth was Maitland, afterwards the celebrated duke of Lauderdale) were. informed with the intensest spirit of Scottish Presbyterianism, attended the assembly. To them their mission was a holy*~~

~~*one, being no less than "to estab- lish a new platform of worship and discipline for this people for all time to come." That this was to be Presbyterian was the one thought that possessed their minds,—at first with eager hope, changing to apprehension and then to disappointment so bitter that it broke the heart of Alex- ander Henderson and made Baillie bewail the distance of the Scotch army. They struggled with pathetic earnestness against influences whose strength they had not realized,— the hated sentiment of Erastianism and the still more hated sentiment of Independency. The first of these was chiefly in the background in parliament, where it did not express itself fully until late in the proceedings ; within the assem- bly it was consummately represented by Lightfoot, Cole- man, and Selden, who held that 'parliament is the church." The Independents, numbering only ten or eleven in all, their principal representative being Nye, were also men of great ability and clear views, who knew that they could depend on the support of the party led by Cromwell.*~~

~~*The assembly began in September by considering what to substitute for the Thirty-nine Articles. On 12th October, however, in deference to Scottish pressure, the parliament instructed them to take up at once the questions of church government and a liturgy. Church officers were first dis- cussed. The Independents disputed every inch of ground : "to the uttermost of their power they have studied pro- crastination of all things, finding that by tyme they have gained." The long discussion which they forced on the question of the identity of pastor and doctor (in which, holding the offices to be distinct, and that every congrega- tion ought to have both, they were opposed both by the Scots on the latter and by the Anglicans on the former ground) was but one example of their skill in obstruction. The grand battle, however, began on 22d November over the ruling eldership—the essence of the 'Scots' disci- pline,"—against which Independents and Erastians alike did their best. All were willing to admit elders "in a prudential way," i.e, as expedient, but "sundry of the ablest were flat against the institution of any such offices by divine right," and the Independents kept them "in a pitiful labyrinth these twelve days." In the end a com- promise was effected, grievous to the Scots, by which it was merely declared "agreeable to, and warranted by, the word of God, that some others besides the ministers of the word should join in the government of the church." An attempt further to*~~

~~define their office failed. By the end of the year the Scots became anxious: "as yet a presbyterie to this people is conceaved to be a strange~~

~~monster." Ina minor point they had experienced a rebuff. They had done, as true Presbyterians, all they could to induce the assembly to sit on Christmas Day, church fes- tivals being to them an abomination; but they only pre- vailed so far "that both houses [of Parliament] did profane that holy day, by sitting on it, to our joy and some of the assembly's shame." 'The observance of saints' days and holidays was not abolished until 8th June 1647.' On 9th January 1644 the pressing question of ordina- tion was brought forward. The committee reported that preaching presbyters should alone ordain. 'To this the Independents of course objected and kept the assembly in debate until 21st January. The House of Lords pressing for a settlement, it was next day proposed that "certain ministers of the city be desired to ordain ministers in the city and vicinity jure fraternitatis." On this and on the essential question, how far the consent of the congregation should be necessary, the Independents kept up the struggle until 19th April, when the latter point was determined in the non-intrusionist sense. The bitterness of the Scots against the Independents increased daily ; they were fairly puzzled at the want of enthusiasm for that which was the breath of their lives. 'This stupid and secure people, . . . this fainting and weak-hearted people," Baillie calls them, and adds, "the humour of this people is very various, and inclinable to singularities, to differ from all the world and from one another, and shortly from themselves." No people, he says, had so much need of a presbytery. The hatred was fully returned. An intrigue! was set on foot for a union between the Independents and the moderate royalists to keep out Scots and Presbyterianism on the basis of the restoration of Charles. So anxious did this render the Presbyterians that they offered to make a com- promise whereby to strengthen their cause in parliament ; and, probably at the suggestion of their chiefs there, the five leading Independents published (February 1644) their Apologetical Narrative, which traversed their whole contro- versy with the Presbyterians and was addressed, not to the assembly, but to the parliament. This manifesto, as well as the Antapologia and other answers from the Pres- byterians, is well analysed by Hetherington. From the moment of this publication there was~~

no longer any object in delaying the main battle. 'The Independents are resolute to give in their reasons to parliament against us, and that shall be the beginning of an open schism : lykelie we shall be forced to deal with them as open enemies." On 6th February it was proposed that "the Scripture holdeth forth that many particular congregations may be under one Presbyterian government." After six weeks' incessant debate, in which both Erastians and Independents used their utmost ability, and in which Nye ostentatiously and successfully appealed to the jealousy of the imperium wm umperio, they were forced to yield. In this discussion the English Presbyterians were less disposed to compronise than the Scottish, who were keenly anxious for the success of their mission. The ruling eldership was then voted, and 'on Fryday, after a week's debate, we carried, albeit hardlie (27 to 19), that no single congregation has the power of ordination." On 31st May Baillie adds, "our church sessions, to which the Independents gave all, and their opposite nothing at all, we have gotten settled with unanimity in the Scots' fashion." The Presbyterians were, however, by no means easy ; they felt their triumph to be yet but a barren one. "The chief point we wish were proven is the real authority, power, and jurisdiction of synods and classical presbyteries over any the members of i whole of a particular congregation ; also I wish that power of presbyteries classical to ordaine and excom-

1 For the first time investicated and h i i . stig rought to light by Prof : R. Gardiner (Camden M. iscellany, 1888). : i

PRESSE YF BRIAN Sa

[ENGLAND.

municate were cleared. Many beside the Independents are brought to give the rights of both these actions to the congregational presbyteries, much against our mind and practice." The great question, the power of parliament in ecclesiastical affairs, was yet unsettled; and here they looked anxiously at 'Selden and others, who will have no discipline at all in any church jure divino, but settled only on the free will and pleasure of the Parliament," and they had forebodings that "Erastus' way will triumph." Their fears were soon realized. On 15th November 1644

~~*the assembly reported to parliament all that had been done, Parlia- and the House at once debated the jus divinum question, mentary Glynn and Whitelocke spoke vehemently and at great ®tom*~~

~~*length, and then upon the question it was carried to lay aside the point of jus divinum, and the House gave them thanks for preventing a surprise. It was resolved, how- ever, that the Presbyterian government should be estab- lished, and that if upon trial it was not found acceptable it should be reversed or amended. ;*~~

~~*Cromwell, who had shortly before "expressed himself with contempt of the assembly of divines," terming them "'persecutors" and saying that "they persecuted honester men than themselves," and who had told Manchester that "in the way they [Scots] now carried themselves he could as soone draw his sword against them as against any in the king's army," came to the rescue of the Inde- pendents in the asseinbly by procuring on 13th September an order from the parliament to refer to a committee of both kingdoms the accommodation or toleration of the Independents. This committee, lasting until 15th October, was no doubt intended to gain time, for time was against the Scots, and it did nothing else. The Independents then, with written reasons against the propositions respecting church government, with objections on the question of excommunication, with their "model" and their remon- strances, managed to protract discussion until March 1646, and in the end to leave matters unsettled and without prospect of settlement. In January 1645 the abortive negotiations at Uxbridge took place, at which each party asserted the jus divinum. The conditions proposed to the king had been drawn up by Johnston of Warriston and approved by the Scottish parliament; they included the acceptance of the Covenant. In the compromise offered by the king he assented to the limitation of the bishops' power by a council of the lower clergy, and even by lay- men to be elected by this council, in each diocese,*~~

~~*In April (Self-Denying Ordinance) and again in October 1645 (the battle of Naseby having been fought in June) the parliament passed a vote which was gall and worm- wood to the Scots, for it provided a power of appeal from the national assembly to the parliament. It also insisted that there should be two ruling elders for each minister in a church meeting, and*~~

~~allowed censures to be passed only in cases which it enumerated. No way remained to stay the mischief, Baillie felt, except by "hastening up our army, well recruited and disciplined." On 20th February 1646 they resolved that a choice of elders should be made throughout the kingdom ; but on 14th March Baillie him- self bewails that "the House of Commons has gone on to vote (by a majority of one) a committee in every shire to cognosce on sundry ecclesiastical causes, which will spoil all our church government." The fact was that, the king? being now very weak, Scottish friendship was daily grow- ing of less importance. When the commissioners from the Scottish parliament urged the speedy erecting of presby- teries, the English expressed their dread of "granting an~~

- ~~At Newcastle in November 1646 the king offered to sanction the Presbyterian establishment, with all its forms and the order of public worship already adopted, for a period of three years, without preju- dice to his own personal liberty~~

~~ENGLAND. |~~

~~arbitrary and unlimited power to near 10,000 judicatories within this kingdom," and declared that, experience having shown that the parliament had preserved the Reformation and purity of religion, they had no reason "to part with this power out of the hand of the civil magistrate." On~~

~~FREES eY TERIA NTIS M~~

~~689~~

~~provincial or national assemblies," except royal chapels and peers' houses. In October 1648 Charles at Newport offered to accept Ussher's scheme,? and, in answer to an address from London, consented to a temporary alienation of church property for the maintenance of Presbyterian~~

~~ministers. In November, however, the army asserted it- Under self ; it afterwards purged the parliament when it found the~~

~~30th April 1646 the House proposed queries which practi-~~

~~*cally challenged: the jus divinum position from one end to d Common-*~~

~~*the other. The assembly at once set themselves to answer these captious questions ; but of questions and answers the parliament took care that for the present no more should be heard. When, however, on lst December 1646 the London ministers published their manifesto Jus divinum reguminis ecclestastict, the House of Commons called for the assembly's answers, which do not appear to have been forthcoming. Throughout the contest the Scottish com- missioners, especially Baillie, organized the opposition, im- mortalized in Milton's sonnet, of the London ministers against the parliament's action. The king, however, hav- ing fled in April to the Scots, parliament thought it need- ful to temporize. On 5th June, therefore, both Houses ratified the ordinance establishing presbyteries; on the 9th they ordered it at once to be put into execution; and— a still more significant step—they rescinded the clause for provincial committees which had given Baillie such vexa- tion. The order, however, remained a dead letter until 22d April 1647. Twelve presbyteries were then erected for London; Lancashire and Shropshire were organized, and Bolton was so vigorous in the cause as to gain the name of the Geneva of Lancashire ; but the system spread no farther in the ungenial soil and air of England. Even here the difference between Scottish and English Presby- terianism is shown by the fact that two-thirds of every classis or presbytery were necessarily laymen. The first meeting of the London synod was on 3d May 1647, and it met half-yearly until 1655. That of Lancashire met at Preston in February 1648. After all, however, it appeared that the votes of the Houses were permissive only ; for on 13th October 1647 the Lords voted to ask the king for his sanction to the proviso that "no person shall be liable to any question or penalty only for Non-Conformity to the said government or to the form of the divine services appointed in the ordinances," while such as would not con- form were to be allowed to meet for religious exercise in a fit place so long as the peace was not disturbed! The language of the Commons was almost equally indulgent, while on Ist November the "agitators" declared that "matters of religion and the ways of God's worship are not at all entrusted by us to any human power." Presby- terlanism was wellnigh as far from being established at the close of the assembly as in the days of Elizabeth. English Protestantism had been a protest, not against Roman Catholicism, but against papal supremacy; the country was as little disposed to accept Presbyterian*~~

~~*supremacy. The reader will gain some idea of the parti- cular forms of tyranny which England had declined in "The Harmonious Consent of the ministers of the pro- vince within the County Palatine of Lancaster, &c." (Hal- ley, Lancashire, its Nonconf., p. 467). In May 1648 the*~~

~~*that there was an accommodation between Charles an the Presbyterians, and killed the king. With the founda- tion of the Commonwealth the dream of Presbyterian supremacy passed away. The Presbyterians are hence- forth to be regarded as a political far more than as a religious body. They now formed the nucleus of that party which desired the restoration of monarchy on good conditions. Opposing the toleration granted to all forms of Protestantism by Cromwell, they became his most dangerous opponents by their sympathy with the Scots and their refusal to take the "engagement," as is illus- trated by the plot for which Love was executed. The parliament meanwhile secured them in their livings. As Cromwell said to the Scots, "The ministers in England are supported and have liberty to preach the Gospel, though not to rail at their superiors at discretion, nor under a pretended privilege of character to overtop the civil powers." In the Instrument of Government (1653) Cromwell expressly retained all the laws in their favour and appointed some of them on the list of triers. They had their classical presbyteries for ordination, but these, having no coercive power, gradually became merely meet- ings of ministers of all denominations. The position of Baxter and his followers is worthy of notice, and should be read in his own words (Orme's Bacter, vol. i. p. 92). Nominally a Presbyterian, he disliked the lay eldership ; he disliked their intolerance ; he disliked the subordinate position ascribed to the civil magistrate ; in his own terse language, "Till magistrates keep the sword themselves, and learn to deny it to every angry clergyman who would do his own work by it, . . . the church will never have unity and peace." On the question of the independence of congregations he was an Independent in sympathy and practice. His absorbing idea was union ; with Ussher, he says, he had agreed in half an hour; among rigidly de- fined parties it is not possible to find him a place; but in the light of that idea he appears perfectly consistent. John Owen was another man who illustrates the light and shade of English opinion. He opposed the London ministers, though he held a Presbyterian appointment. In 1644 he upheld Presbyterianism against Independency ; in 1646 he became formally connected with the*~~

~~*Independ- ents. The Presbyterian was above all, on the political side, a hater of the army and a parliamentarian, and therefore, especially after Richard Cromwell's resignation, a monarchist. Monarchy and parliaments were co-ordi- nated in the English mind. Baxter preaching before the Commons on 30th April 1660 said, 'Whether we should be loyal to our king is none of our differences. . . . For the concord now wished in matters of religion it is easy for moderate men to come to a fair agreement." To take*~~

~~*advantage of this feeling Charles IT. used all the resources Under of duplicity ; the deputation of divines was easily and Charles entirely tricked, and on his entry into London the Presby- ue terian ministers received him with acclamation. Until*~~

~~*parliament, now that army pressure was removed, passed the celebrated 'ordinance against blasphemy and heresy." If ordinances could have fought against the inherited instincts of centuries Presbyterian government would have*~~

~~*run riot. On 29th August it was again decreed that 'all parishes and places whatsoever within England and Wales shall be under the government of congregational, classical,*~~

~~*1 In December 1647 Charles, at Carisbrooke, again agreed with the commissioners from the Scottish Kirk to the conditions formerly offered at Newcastle, in consideration of their promise to take up arms for his cause. The establishment of Presbyterianism, the extirpation of sectaries, and covenant uniformity were demanded by the English.*~~

~~*the actual Restoration the ascendency of Presbyterianism,*~~

~~*2 Ussher's scheme suggested (a) three synods, namely, one of the clergy of the rural deanery, meeting once a month; one of the clergy of the whole diocese, meeting once or twice a year ; and representatives of the clergy of the province, meeting once in three years, the arch- bishop presiding ; (6) if parliament were sitting, the two provincial synods were to unite, and the whole government of the church was to be in their hands. There was no representative of the laity in the*~~

~~scheme. XIX. — 87~~

~~690~~

~~subsequent to Monk's entry into London, had seemed com- plete. The couucil was almost exclusively Presbyterian ; Presbyterians commanded the garrison towns and the fleet, and had possession of the universities. The last acts of the Long Parliament had been to establish Presbyterianism as the religion of the state. It was therefore necessary. on the part of Charles and Clarendon to temporize. Pro- mises were made from Breda; hopes of comprehension and preferment were placed before the Presbyterian minis- ters; conferences were arranged between them and the leading Episcopal clergy. There is no sign, however, that the most ardent Presbyterian hoped for more than Ussher's model. They were sufficiently bound over by the Cove- nant, the oath of allegiance, the traditional connexion of parliament and monarchy, and, above all, by their jealousy of the Scots, to restore the king.~~

~~The solemn farce began. Ten ministers were made royal chaplains, and Charles II. expressed his intention of doing his best to heal the differences in religion. He wished to know their desires. They asked for a resident ministry, Sunday observance, Ussher's model, the revision of the Prayer Book, extemporary prayer, that kneeling at communion and the observance of saints' days might not be enforced, and that bowing at the name of Jesus, making the sign of the cross in baptism, and the use of the surplice might be abolished. Baxter also suggested that the suffragan bishop should be elected by the clergy of the rural deanery. The bishops replied in writing, refusing all concession, ex- cept, perhaps, as regarded the cross, bowing, and the surplice, and taunting their opponents with '" scruple-mongering." Charles now put out his declaration, which included a proviso that the presbyters' advice and assistance should be necessary to certain episcopal functions, and especially to church censures. This, and the Bill to turn it into a law, kept the Presbyterians in play ; by Clarendon's influ- ence the Bill was thrown out on the second reading, and the convention parliament was dissolved. The parliament which followed was Episcopahan. The church at once struck hard. The Corporation Act, 20th December 1661, destroyed Presbyterian influence in the large towns, the centres of its~~

~~*power; the Act of Uniformity, 19th May 1662, compelling "assent and consent" to everything in the Book of Common Prayer, destroyed it in the church. Under circumstances of open deceit and flippant cruelty 2000 ministers were, on St Bartholomew's Day, deprived of their offices. It is important to notice that the Papists and other Dissenting bodies opposed toleration to the Presbyterians ; they felt that the only chance of a general toleration was in the failure of the Presbyterians to obtain comprehension. ;*~~

~~*Between these two Acts the Savoy Conference had been held, beginning 25th March 1662; it met apparently to signalize the church's triumph. It was intended to fail, as the Hampton Court Conference had been intended to fail, and is of interest merely as being the last attempt at union by conference.*~~

~~*With regard to toleration Charles II. and James II. were Bourbons, and they wished to carry out the policy of their ancestor, Henry IV. of France. They hoped to use the grati- tude and dependence of the sects whereby to sustain them against the church. Cromwell had done the same ; tolera- tion and military despotism had been parallel ideas. Charles desired that the church should not tolerate, but that he should. Thus he hoped to have a despotism founded upon the support of the sects. The greater part of his reign presents a constant struggle of the church and parliament to frustrate his views. To gain the power of suspending the penal laws was the great object in the com- prehension scheme of 26th December 1662. In au instant church opposition began ; the primate and the parliament*~~

~~*PRESBYTERAANT SS*~~

~~*[ENGLAND.*~~

~~*spoke with equal sternness, and the suggestion was dropped. As had happened in Scotland, the ejection of St Bartholo- mew's Day had led to conventicles ; the first Conventicle Act, 16th May 1664, was an expression of the hatred of the Anglican Church to Charles's scheme.*~~

~~*In 1665 the plague occurred; the pulpits of London were deserted by the Episcopal clergy, with a few brillant exceptions. The Presbyterians and Independents came forward to fill them. The jealousy of the church was*~~

~~*aroused, and at its demand, and in return for a supply for the Dutch War, Charles passed the Five Mile Act. The extent to which these successive acts of persecution affected the country varied greatly. In some parts the justices refused to convict, or were languid. Thus Seth Ward, in one of his reports to Sheldon from Exeter (in 1663), says, "Your Grace shall know that there are, in this county of Devon onely, . . . at least fourteen Justices of the peace who are accounted arrant Presbyterians." The bishop of Chester makes the same complaint in 1667.2, With the fall of Clarendon the idea of toleration at once revived. In February 1667 Charles recommended it to parliament and relaxed the penal laws. But the idea had taken possession of the English mind that what Charles wanted to tolerate was Popery; wherever Charles wrote "dissent " the English mind read "pope of Rome." Some questions drawn out by Sheldon against toleration may be seen in the Sheldon MSS., and are worth reading. It was this fear, and the belief that the integrity of the Church of England was the great safeguard against Popery, that had to answer for much of the persecution. By 176 votes against 70 parliament voted against comprehension, and by 144 against 78 for the continuance of the Con- venticle Act, while on 2d March 1670 a second Conventicle Act of special severity was forced from Charles.*~~

~~*On 15th March 1672 the king made another attempt by his famous Declaration of Indulgence, in which he boldly claimed the suspensory power. This caused great searchings of heart among the Dissenters, for they must either refuse the indulgence or uphold an unconstitutional proceeding. Ought they to accept anything short of comprehension? Their doubts were cut short by the withdrawal of the Indulgence only three months after its utterance, and the Test Act signalized the victory of the church. The church became more and more exclusive ; the parliament, drawing its life from the people, gradually changed its tone. In 1663 the Anglican Church wished to triumph over Dissent ; in 1673 Protestants wished only to secure themselves against Popery. The Commons there- fore passed a Bill for the ease of Dissenters, which was, however, dropped in the Lords.*~~

~~*No further change occurred in the legal status of the Presbyterians, Their party continually increased in in- fluence under Shaftesbury's guidance, and in 1680 the Commons agreed to a scheme of comprehension for all Dissenters who would subscribe the doctrinal Articles ; the surplice was to*~~

~~*be omitted except in cathedrals or royal chapels; and ceremonies were to be regarded as in- different. This attempt at union came to nothing, how- ever, through church opposition, as did a final attempt at toleration by Charles in 1684. Throughout his reign the church had held him in a never-relaxing grasp. The intervening years were a period of constant annoyance to the Presbyterians, who were discredited by the Rye*~~

~~*1 By this Act all who refused to declare that they "would not at any time endeavour any alteration in church or state" were made in- capable of teaching in schools, and prohibited from coming within 5 miles of any city, corporate town, or parliamentary borough, or within 5 miles of any parish, town, or place, where they had since the Act of Oblivion been parson, vicar, or lectnrer, or where they had preached*~~

~~*in any conventicle, on any pretence whatever. 2 Sheldon MSS., Bodleian Library,*~~

~~*Merged in Dis- sent gener- ally.*~~

~~*IRELAND. |*~~

~~*House Plot. Such were the relations of the Presbyterians to the church. Their relations to the Independents were the old ones of jealousy and hostility. They themselves always looked for a position in the establishment ; the principles of the Independents excluded the idea. Attempts at union occurred, but they were useless.*~~

~~*From this time the history of the Presbyterians is lost in that of Dissent generally. James refused to enforce the penal laws ; but they enforced themselves, and Baxter was one of the first to suffer. Monmouth's attempt only increased their sufferings. In 1687 their prospects bright- ened. James II., following his brother's policy, issued his Declaration for Liberty of Conscience, as he had already done in Scotland and Ireland. The motive, as Hallam says, was that already mentioned, "to enlist' under the standard of arbitrary power those who had been its most intrepid and steadiest adversaries." In the addresses of thanks sent up the leading Dissenters (except the Quakers) refused to join; indeed, at a general meeting of ministers a resolution was passed directly condemning the dispensing*~~

~~*power. The action of James, by which the work of the Cor- poration Act was in a great measure undone and the power in corporations once more thrown into Dissenting hands, was equally unsuccessful. Throughout his reign the king failed to comprehend that the Dissenters were, first of all, Protestants. William III.'s declaration from Torbay recom- mended comprehension, and in March 1689 he urged it upon parliament. A Bill was brought into the Lords for abrogating the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and for abolishing the Test Act so far as Dissent was concerned. The High-Church party, however, was strong enough to secure its failure. Another Bill with the same intent, as well as attempts to relieve the Dissenters of kneeling at the sacrament and using the cross in baptism, and to ex- plain away "assent and consent," as required by the Act of Uniformity, was also jealously and successfully opposed. By the Act of Toleration, however, all the penal laws, ex- cept the Corporation and Test Acts and those against the deniers of the Trinity, were removed. But it did not abrogate the statutes of Elizabeth and James I., which exacted certain penalties on such as absented themselves from the parish church. Heresy, too, was still subject to the church courts. A last attempt was made, by an ecclesi- astical commission of thirty divines, to frame a scheme of comprehension. It was vehemently opposed in convoca- tion ; the High Churchmen withdrew from it; and it was never submitted to parliament. Thus ended the last of the fruitless attempts to comprehend Dissent within the estab- lishment. During William's reign the hatred of the church to the Presbyterians had been obliged to lie dormant. Anne's accession, however, led at once to an attempt on the part of the churchmen to revenge themselves by the intro- duction of the Occasional Conformity Bill for the toleration which they had heen compelled to practise. This, however, they were unable to carry through against the opposition, of which Burnet was the foremost champion.*~~

~~*Having secured toleration, the Dissenters began to think of their own internal condition. A coalition of Presby- terians and Independents was thought desirable. The mere mention of such a thing shows how profoundly the complexion of affairs had changed. Under the name of "United Brethren" about eighty ministers of London inet and drew up heads of an agreement, in nine articles, on church government and ecclesiastical discipline. Article 8 provided that the union should not discuss doctrine, and named as auxiliaries to Scripture the Articles, the Savoy Confession,*~~

~~*and the Westminster Catechism. Mutual con- cessions were now made. The Independents gave up the necessity of the consent of a church to the ordination of a minister, and only made it desirable ; and the office of*~~

~~*doctor, as distinct from pastor and ruling elder, was passed over. But the Presbyterians gave up far more, viz., the authoritative power of synods over individual churches. In other words, the Presbyterians gave up and the Inde- pendents retained each the kernel of their system. Excom- munication was emasculated. The prerogative of synods was reduced to occasional meetings and a reverential regard for their judgment. But this arrangenient only affected London and its neighbourhood. Moreover, while their views of church government were so profoundly modified in the Independent direction, a change equally noticeable took place in their doctrinal views. From the beginning of the 18th century the greater number of their congregations becanie Unitarian, while those which remained orthodox joined themselves to the Scottish Church. The fact that at a time when full toleration was enjoyed the Presbyterian principle ever grew weaker shows how little it had pene- trated into the English mind. During the present century a new establishment of Presbyterian congregations has taken place upon the Scottish models, and indeed at first as an offset of the Scottish Church itself. In May 1836, how- ever, the synod of the Presbyterian Church of England was established, in entire independence of, though in friendly union with, the Scottish Church, containing at the present time (1885) 10 presbyteries with 280 congregations.1*~~

~~*Treland.—Presbyterianism in Ireland dates from the plantation of Ulster, by which a large part of Ireland ceased to be Papist and was peopled afresh by Scotsmen and Englishmen. An independent Protestant church was settled in James I.'s reign, and at the convocation of 1615 the first confession of faith was drawn up by James Ussher, which implicitly admitted the validity of Presbyterian ordination and denied the distinction between bishop and presbyter. It was not, however, until 1626 that the begin- ning of the Presbyterian system was laid by HIugh Campbell, a Scot, who, having become converted, "invited some of his honest neighbours . . . to meet him*~~

~~*at his house on the last Friday of the month. . . . At last they grew so numerous, that the ministers thought fit that some of them should be still with them to prevent what hurt might follow." Within the Episcopal Church, and supported by its endowments, Blair, Livingstone, and others maintained a Scottish Pres- byterian communion. From 1625, however, to 1638 the history of Presbyterianism in Ireland is one of bare exist- ence, not of progress. The ministers, silenced by Went- worth, fled finally to Scotland, after an ineffectual attempt to reach New England, and there took a leading part in the great movement of 1638. In 1639 the "black oath," which forbade the making of any covenants, was forced by Wentworth upon the Ulster Scots. His absence in 1640 raised hopes which were destroyed by the Irish rebellion of 1641, whereby the Protestant interest was for the time ruined. The violence of the storm had, however, fallen upon the Episcopal Church, and her desolation made the rise of Presbyterianism more easy. A majority of the Ulster Protestants were Presbyterian, and in the great revival which now took place the ministers who accom- panied the Scottish regiments took a leading part. Sessions were formed in four regiments, and the first regular presby- tery was held at Carrickfergus on Friday 10th June 1642, attended by five ministers and by ruling elders from the four regimental sessions. This presbytery supplied ministers to as many congregations as possible, and for the remainder the ministers were sent from Scotland with full powers of ordination. Many of the Episcopal clergy also joined the*~~

~~*1 Chief References.—Neal, Ilist. of the Puritans ; Brook, Cart- wright ; Strype, Whitgift ; Hetherington, Hist. of Westminster As- sembly ; Mitchell, Hist. of Westminster Assembly; Orme, Baxter and Owen; Halley, Lancashire, its Nonconformity; Toulmin, Hist. of Dis- senters; Marsden, Puritans; Parl. Wist.; Philip Henry, Diary; and the various English histories.*~~

~~*Modern*~~

~~*doctrinal*~~

~~*tend- encies.*~~

~~*Treland.*~~

~~Estab- lished in Ulster.~~

~~692~~

~~winning side, and by the end of 1643 the Ulster church was fairly established. Ireland was included in the Solemn League and Covenant, though the oath was not taken until March 1644. So strong were the Presbyterians that their request that the whole army should be subjected to their discipline was at once granted; and, when a number of Episcopal ministers formed themselves into a presbytery of their own, but without lay eldership and subjection to higher courts, the jealous zeal of the Scots found means to break it up. Meanwhile they were in constant communication with Scotland, of whose system Ulster can best be regarded as a part. In 1645 they were~~

~~PRESS YTenrian ea~~

~~[TRELAND.~~

~~Restoration, in which they heartily co-operated, assisting Sir C. Coote in the coup de main which secured Dublin for~~

~~the king. There were now in Ulster seventy ministers in.~~

~~fixed charges, with nearly eighty parishes or congregations, containing 100,000 persons. These ministers were in five presbyteries, holding monthly nieetings and annual visita- tions of all the churches within their bounds, and coming together in general synod four times a year. An entire conformity with the Scottish Church was maintained, and strict discipline was enforced by kirk sessions, presbyteries, and house-to-house visitations.~~

~~At the Restoration the determination of the Govern- History~~

~~ment to put down Presbyterianism was speedily felt in since the~~

~~strengthened by the Scots who fled from Montrose, and : Restor Ireland. In January 1661 the lords justices forbade all ,0~~

~~by the presence of the commissioners of the parliament,~~

~~*tion.*~~

~~*who ordered that the covenant should be tendered to all who had not yet taken it. The commissioners also gave the tithes of parishes to ministers who applied for them, and their sanction as a civil power to the presbyteries to censure and punish scandalous ministers. It should be noted that this assumption by the civil power was much scrupled by the ministers as savouring of Erastianism, and the commissioners had to explain away their action. The celebrated vote of the English House of Commons on 14th March 1646 was the first check ; the second was the crush- ing defeat of the Scottish troops at Benburb by O'Neill. Nevertheless by 1647 there were, besides the chaplains of Scottish regiments, nearly thirty ordained ministers with fixed charges in Ulster. When the affair of the "engage- ment" took place, both the Scottish parliament and the general assembly sent to secure the Irish vote. The pres- byteries obeyed the church, the regiments the parliament.*~~

~~*unlawful assemblies, under which head were placed meet- ings of presbyteries, as exercising ecclesiastical jurisdiction not warranted by the laws of the kingdom. In a discus- sion with Jeremy Taylor they upheld the jus divinum of Presbyterianism and refused to take the oath of supremacy without the qualification suggested by Ussher. At first their parishes were merely declared vacant and Episcopal clergy appointed to them; but shortly afterwards they were forbidden to preach, baptize, or publicly exhort. In Ulster alone sixty-one ministers were ejected ; only seven out of seventy conformed. Conventicles, of course, arose, conducted chiefly by young Covenanting ministers from Scotland, of whom the ablest, most indefatigable, and most obnoxious to the authorities was Michael Bruce.*~~

~~*The abortive attempt of Blood, in which he endeavoured to associate the Presbyterians, brought fresh trouble, and the Ulster ministers were with a few exceptions compelled*~~

~~*Inde- After the Scottish defeat at Preston the English parliament, | to leave the kingdom. Ormonde, indeed, refrained from pendency now entirely anti- Presbyterian, determined to attack the | harassing them; but it was not until 1665 that the un- supreme Scots in Ulster. In this they were so well served by Monk | molested return of the ministers enabled them to revive that by*~~

~~*the end of 1648 the Independents, as opposed both | their worship and discipline. Presbyteries without ruling to Prelatists and Presbyterians, were superior, and by the | elders were organized in private houses, parishes were regu- end of the year were supreme. Independency became the | larly visited, chapels were built, baptisms were performed, state church, and the Presbyterian clergy were excluded | help was sent to the brethren in Holland, and offenders from the garrison towns. In spite, however, of their | once more came under the active discipline of presbyteries downfallen condition, they absolutely refused to take the | and kirk sessions. A committee which met in place of the oath of the engagement, which bound men to be faithful | regular synod went so far as to insist that all irregular to the Commonwealth without a king or House of Lords, | baptisms should be regularly performed. The toleration whereupon the most important among them were arrested, | afforded them is remarkable when compared with that in while the rest fled to Scotland. During 1651 they were | England and Scotland. excluded from the pulpit and deprived of their tithes, and Hitherto, thanks to the wise Act of Bangor, the church in March they were formally banished by a council of war, | had had peace within her own borders. It was not until while the engagement oath was pressed on all classes. 1671-72 that this was broken by David Houston, who Presby- Upon Henry Cromwell's arrival, the Protector's object | showed an impatience of ecclesiastical restraint and opposed terianism being to reconcile all parties to his sovereignty, the penal- | the settled ministry. This led to the drawing up in*~~

~~*restored.*~~

~~*ties for refusing the engagement were remitted ; ministers were allowed to officiate without restraint; and the banished ministers returned. So rapidly did their number increase that by 1655 three bodies performing all the functions of regularly constituted presbyteries had been formed, acting under commission of the whole presbytery. Meanwhile, however, no settled maintenance was available, and it was with great difficulty that the council was induced to afford two years' salary. One illustration of the united state of this church and of its autonomy is to be found in its action regarding the schism in Scotland between Pro- testers and Resolutioners. Ata general meeting at Bangor it was determined, by the Act of Bangor, 1654, that,*~~

~~*"though some differed in opinion from the rest, yet there should be no mutual contestings about the differences in Scotland among themselves, nor any owning of them on either side In public preaching or prayer. But, whatever mention might indirectly be made of these divisions, it should be in order to healing them in Scotland." Under Henry Cromwell all sects pursued their course in peace, and the Presbyterians especially increased their strength until the*~~

~~*February 1672 of a series of regulations as to conducting the trials, ordination, and settling of ministers. Houston left Ireland in 1673, but the schism created by him lasted till 1840 in the Reformed Presbyterian Church of Ireland. In 1672 the Presbyterian Church received from Charles II. a sum of £600 from the secret service fund.*~~

~~*For several years the church prospered, not only in the north, but in the south and west as well. In 1679 the rising in Scotland, which ended in the battle of Bothwell Brigg, brought trouble on the Irish Presbyterians, in spite of their loyal addresses disowning it. It was not, how- ever, until 1682 that they again lost the privilege of public ministry and that oppression became so severe. They cor- dially concurred with the Episcopalians against James II., though they had benefited by his Declaration of Indulg- ence, and were the first to congratulate William III. on his arrival in England. During the war several of them took an active part in the siege of Londonderry ; the rest fled to Scotland. A list sent in by them to the general assembly shows that there were then in Ireland a hundred congre- gations, seventy-five with fixed ministers, and that there*~~

~~*rEporra hk i & N 1's a 693*~~

~~*(1) Ministers were not elected by the congregation (not Church even by a minister and his consistoire), but by two or three officers.*~~

~~*FRANCE. |*~~

~~*were eighty ministers under five presbyteries. With the close of the war came the close of their troubles, as under*~~

~~*William they enjoyed complete toleration. So hopeful were they of regaining supremacy that they sent up a petition to the crown that, since the north of Ireland was almost entirely peopled by Scottish Presbyterians, Epis- copacy might be done away with in that part. In 1731 again a deputation of ministers and elders went to Dublin with the vain request that their church might receive legal recognition and be placed on an equal footing with the Episcopal Church. Irish Presbyterianism presents no feature of note until 1840, when the original synod of Ulster and all seceding Presbyterian churches united themselves in the "'General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of Ireland." In 1881 there were 36 presbyteries with 552 congregations, containing 101,403 communi- cants, with 621 ministers. Their synods meet in Belfast. Entirely independent of other churches, they, like those in England, live in friendly union with the Scottish Church. Both English and Irish Churches are in sympathy with the Free Church on the questions which brought about the Disruption of 1843.1*~~

~~*France.—The extension of the Genevan system on the synodal side became necessary as soon as it was applied to a large community. Up to 1555 the organization of the 'French churches had been incomplete: there had been no settled clergy nor regular administration of the sacraments. In that year, however, at the suggestion of De la Ferriére, a church was formed at Paris on the Genevan plan, com- plete in all points, with La Riviére for pastor ; and in a few years the organization was set up in Meaux, Angers, Poitiers, Bourges, Nimes, Blois, Tours, and Orleans. By 1559, according to Théodore de Béze, there were in France 2150 organized churches; in 1562 Cardinal St Croix reckoned the Huguenots as being one-half of the population. These churches were isolated, and therefore weak. The step needed to repair their weakness was taken as it were by accident. Antoine Chandieu, minister at Paris, while at Poitiers in 1558, found there several ministers from the neighbourhood. It struck them that it would be serviceable to have a common confession of faith and system of government. Thereupon the consistoire of Paris summoned a synod, not, however, to attribute to this church any special pre-eminence or dignity. On 26th May 1559 the representatives of eleven churches met in the first national synod and laid down a confession of faith (drawn up by Chandieu) and a system of discipline. The confession, in forty articles, was purely Calvinistic. The emphasis with which the right and duty of the magistrate to interfere on*~~

~~*behalf of the truth are insisted upon is important. Foremost in the discipline, as in the confession, comes the fundamental statement of perfect equality : " Aucune église ne pourra prétendre primauté ni domination sur autre; ni pareillement les ministres d'une église les uns sur les autres; ni les anciens, ou diacres, les uns sur les autres." A breach of this law was sternly condemned by the synod of Orleans in 1562.*~~

~~*Next to the consistoire, which, as being well understood, is not mentioned, came the colloque (not finally settled until 1572), consisting of the minister and an elder from each church of the district. In 1637 a colloque was com- posed of representatives from about ten churches. This met twice a year at least and took cognizance of disputes, but had no initiative power. Each province contained in 1637 three or more colloques. Above the colloque was the pro- vincial synod, also containing a minister and an elder or deacon for each church in the province. This synod met once a year. Finally, there was the national synod, which met every year if possible.*~~

~~*T See Reid, /ist. of Presby. in Ireland ; Carte, Ormond.*~~

~~*ministers with their consistoires, by the provincial synod, or by the colloque. If the congregation objected, the con- sistoire was to inquire how far the objection was valid ; if the consistoire upheld the congregation, the provincial synod had the final right of decision (art. 7). In 1572, however, the synod of Nimes laid down the principle that no minister might be imposed upon an unwilling people. (2) In the first forming of a church the elders and deacons were elected by the people; but here the power of the con- gregation ceased. Future vacancies were filled up by the votes of those remaining. The eldership was not to be for life; but there was always a tendency to make it so. In 1565 the synod of Paris warned the churches not to change without urgent cause, so too in 1572 at Nimes. In 1596, however, it was decided that they were to be changed when- ever expedient. (3) The office of deacon was of great im- portance; besides having the charge of the poor and sick, he might catechize and, if the minister were ill, offer prayer and read a written sermon. He was a member of the consistoire, but apparently without the right to vote. In 1572 his dignity was increased, and (compare "readers" in Scotland) he was regarded as preparing for the ministry. As regards the consistoire,—if a parish was without one, it must be*~~

~~created ; if a great lord had a congregation in his own family, one must be formed from it. In 1565 the power of excommunication was given to it, and it might depose elders and deacons, with appeal to the provincial synod. Its right to manage the affairs of its own church was strongly asserted in 1563, 1565, and 1571 at the synods of Lyons, Paris, and La Rochelle. One of the ministers was president, but only as primus inter pares. Over all marriage and baptismal questions it had jurisdiction so long as it avoided interference with the civil Government by dissolving marriages. The attention paid to marriage by Presbyterianism in all countries is worthy of notice. The ruling idea is the intense sanctity of the tie. Only in case of adultery might it be broken in France. A contract of marriage was declared indissoluble by the synod of Lyons (art. 44) in 1563, though the woman averred that she had been forced into it and that the man had a loathsome dis- ease. Still more remarkable examples might be quoted.? The office of elder was far more limited than in Geneva ; his supervision over morals was, for example, confined to reporting scandals to the consistory ; but in 1572 this was greatly extended. The remarkable feature of the French system is its aristocratical nature: the consistory, by the method of co-optation, was a purely aristocratic council, and the greatest pains were taken by the various synods to crush all attempts towards giving power to the congre- gations (¢.g., the condemnation of Jean Morelli, 1562-72, and the synods of Verteuil in 1567 and La Rochelle in L5G).~~

~~In the national synods, also, the aristocratic formation Synods.~~

~~soon asserted itself. Up to 1565 every church sent a minister with one or two elders or deacons. On questions of discipline elders or deacons might vote, on doctrinal questions only as many laymen as ministers. In 1565, however, to avoid overcrowding, the national synod of Paris determined that for the future only one or two ministers and one or two elders, chosen by each provincial synod, should be admitted. Thus the national synod, which had hitherto represented single churches, now repre- sented only the provincial synods, which of course gained immensely in importance.~~

~~The church disclaimed any encroachments upon the civil~~

~~2 For the method of constituting a consistory, for its supervision of private life and public morals, see Borrel, Histoire de VEglise de Nimes, pp. 61, 96,~~

~~117.~~

~~cism.~~

~~possible ; extermination for one of the conflicting faiths, or their concurrent existence, were the alternatives. The edict of January 1562 marked the conditions on which the latter was adopted. One remarkable provision was that ministers should swear before the civil magistrate to preach according to the word of God and the Nicene creed. By March war had begun ; the peace of Amboise in March the next year gave the Protestants some privileges, which, however, were afterwards much restricted, especially in the matter of synods, in August 1564; and the armed truce lasted until 1567. During these years the churches con- solidated themselves, At Nimes, for example, the Genevan~~

~~694 PRESBYTERIANISM [FRANCE, Rela- authority (compare the national synods of Lyons, Figeac, discipline was ag gS in 7 — The ey of tions to La Rochelle, Montauban, 1563, 1579, 1581, 1594). Butin the consistory to rae ri 7 e civil domain was shown the state. 17 Borrel's work, especially valuable as showing what went in many ways, while ae close y paerand naa of the~~

~~on in a single church, we find that so early as 1561 Pres- French system appeared from the fact that at each annual~~

~~byterianism was following its natural bent. "A mesure election the outgoing members formed a body called the que son pouvoir grandit, il impiéta sur le domaine du | "old consistory, which was ie with the new consistory gouvernement civil, et crut pouvoir prendre des mesures | for election of ministers and all ordinary affairs. Its pour la défense . . . pour ordonner, qui plus est, les levers ministers were of two classes—the one ordinary and per- dargent. . . . En un mot, la police, la garde de la ville, petual, the other temporary, such as the professors at the Vinspection de la conduite des habitants, . . . devinrent | theological college. 4 graduellement Vobjet de ses déliberations et de ses régle- The wars of 1567 displayed the value of the facility ments." And a stern stand was made against the supre- | for union, which was one of the most important features macy of the state. In 1571 the minister of Bordeaux re- | of the Presbyterian polity. During three years of~~

~~horrors ported to the synod of La Rochelle "qu'un médecin soutient | meetings both of consistories and of provincial synods were que le magistrat est le chef de Péglise et que ce que les | held. In April 1571, at the peace of St Germain en Laye, ministres entreprennent n'est que tirannie." The synod | the seventh national synod at La Rochelle reaffirmed the rejected "Verreur du dit médecin et de tous autres qui | confession of faith. In May 1572 a very important synod veulent abolir la discipline de Véglise en la confondant avec | was held at Nimes, in which the whole church system was le gouvernement civil." The language of the synods will | carefully revised and developed In many important respects, be found to vary as their political prospects vary. some of which have been mentioned. The rigidity of the Progress The cause of the astonishing progress of Protestantism | Calvinistic faith was illustrated by the sentence of excom- of Pro- and the extent to which it was but one phase of a general | munication against ministers or elders who caused any testant- movement for reform may be seen in the proceedings of | dispute touching doctrine, ceremonies, or discipline, and the anal the states-general at Orleans in December 1560, where, | Puritan temper by the prohibition "assister aux spectacles both in the noblesse and in the tiers-état, loud complaints | profanes, comme aux danses de théAtre, aux comédies," were uttered against the clergy (Félice, p. 117), and free- | &c. The church senate, the difference of which from the dom of worship was demanded. Only afew months after- | consistory it is difficult to trace, was now merged in it, and wards a proposal was made by a magistrate of Autun to | care was taken to get rid of wandering and uncertificated sell all the church lands, to retain a fourth of the sum for | ministers by drawing up a "réle des vagabonds."~~

~~the support of the priests, and with the rest to pay off By the end of 1573 the positions of the Catholics and of~~

~~the crown debts and encourage agriculture and commerce. | the 'religion prétendue réformée," as it was henceforward~~

~~The disbelief in the possibility of two widely varying | officially known, had greatly altered. Against the Italian~~

~~religions living side by side is shown in the proposals of | and Spanish influences, as represented by Catherine and~~

~~*ail the speakers for a national council to settle vari- | the Guises, there had after St Bartholomew's Day arisen ances. "Otons ces noms diaboliques," said De l'Hépital, | a patriot Catholic party ; while the Presbyterians had*~~

~~*"ces noms de partis, factions, et séditions—Luthériens, | become sharply divided into two bodies,—one the Consis-*~~

~~*Huguenots, Papistes—ne changeons pas le nom de Chrétien." | toriaux (the Covenanters of France), careful only for the*~~

~~*Great forces were contending for Protestantism ; it had | purity and free exercise of their religion, and the other the*~~

~~*the goodwill of three-fourths of the nobles and of the bour- | Aristocracy (as in Scotland), who, having become Presby- Political*~~

~~*geoisie in the principal towns. But against it were ranged | terians for political purposes, were now fearful of seeing Presby- the strength of tradition and of habit ; the craft of Cathe- | themselves excluded from political life, and were therefore trian*~~

~~*rine de' Medici, to whom all religions were equally matters | anxious for union and compromise. This party formed a*~~

~~*of policy ; the ambition of the Guises, backed by Spain ; | league with the Catholic patriots, and, as the " tiers-parti,"*~~

~~*the interests of the clergy, backed by the pope; and the | was so threatening that Henry III., to sever the alliance,*~~

~~*Paris mob. And there was another influence, perhaps | offered to the Calvinist Aristocracy the free exercise of*~~

~~*still more powerful. One of the greatest obstacles to the | their religion, and, what they were far more anxious*~~

~~*success of a new religious movement in a country of strong | about, full participation in public employments and the national feeling will be the existence of a strong national | re-establishment of their chiefs in their*~~

~~*former positions. church. The church of France was Gallican, anti-papal, | Fighting, however, again broke out in the beginning of practically and essentially national. In spite of manifold 1577, and was adverse to the Presbyterians, who never-*~~

~~*corruptions she had become the centre of much national | theless held a national synod at Sainte Foy in 1578,*~~

~~*attachment. As was the case in England, she represented | attended by a commissioner from Henry of Navarre. Very*~~

~~*the idea of nationality in a concrete form, and in this lies | remarkable is the strictness with which in a time of desola- to a great measure the explanation of the fact that the | tion the laws of the church were maintained. The luke-*~~

~~*Huguenots had so long to fight for the right to exist. warmness of the Presbyterian Aristocracy had made the Struggles By September 1561 the situation had become intoler- | ministers stern and unyielding, and they now gained great eek able. _ The colloquy of Poissy then met, as desired by De | influence. In this respect too the course of things was Catholi- YHopital. It made but one thing clear: union was im- very analogous to that in Scotland. In both countries*~~

~~*the ministers threw themselves upon the lower middle classes as distinct from and opposed to the aristocracy. In 1585 Henry ITI. came to terms with the Guise faction at Nemours on condition of exterminating Calvinism. This, however, was under the stress of circumstances ; his policy was to play off one party against the other, and he soon became lukewarm in persecution. Along with Henry of Navarre he was excommunicated by the pope ; he replied by defiance, murdered Guise, was compelled by the abhor- rence thus created to join the Protestants, marched with Navarre on Paris, and was there, in 1589, assassinated. To gain the Catholics and to retain the Presbyterians was*~~

~~FRANCE. |~~

~~Henry IV.'s task after Ivry. To secure the latter he put out an edict of toleration; to gain the former he was "converted" to Catholicism in 1593. The Presbyterian Aristocracy now took a most important step. In May 1594 they held a political meeting at Sainte Foy and formally established a political imperium im imperio of the most decided character. France was divided into ten sections for administrative purposes. There was a general council of four nobles, four bourgeois, two clergy,—the numbers being afterwards raised to twelve, twelve, and six. Under the general council were the provincial councils of five or seven members, of whom only one was necessarily a minister. The general council acted as an intermediary between the whole body of the Calvinists and the king. Owing doubtless to its operation Henry, whose leading idea was national unity, in April 1598 ("Van de salut") put forth the Edict of Nantes, which practically conceded entire liberty of conscience to the Presbyterians. The truce lasted during the rest of Henry's reign. Synods were re- gularly held, and the language of controversy became more bitter. At Gap, in 1603, the pope was declared to be Antichrist, and this declaration was in force until 1637, when the synod of Alengon was compelled to expunge it. At the synod of Gap it was reported that there were 760 organized churches, with 565 ministers. The ministry now received from the king a subsidy of 40,000 crowns, the distribution of which took up a large part of the time of subsequent synods. In spite of the confirmations of the Edict which followed Henry's death, the anxious Presby- terians held another political synod at Saumur in 1611, when they swore faith to the crown, "le souverain empire de Dieu demeurant toujours en son entier." In 1620 the political assembly met at La Rochelle, when they confis- cated all property belonging to Catholic churches, struck a great seal, levied arms and taxes, organized the church, and divided France into eight military districts. The aus- terity and intolerance displayed at the synods at this time were intense (see Buckle, vol. ii. p. 57, ed. 1867). The war, however, was disastrous to the Presbyterians, and at the peace of Montpellier the cessation of political meetings was insisted upon. The policy of Richelieu was that of Henry IV.,—protection as regarded religion, and a stead- fast refusal to permit any political "league" which tended against the concentration of French~~

~~*nationality. The result of his treatment of combined conciliation and repres-sion and of the attractions of the court on the nobility was that the Presbyterians, as a political party, ceased to exist. The number of churches, too, greatly diminished : in 1603 there were 760, in 1619 only 700. Mazarin pursued the same course ; and his assent in 1660 to the synod of Loudun was the last favour they received.*~~

~~*The action of the fourteen synods held since 1600 had been (as was also the case in Scotland) in the direction of increasing the power of the minister and diminishing that of the elders and congregations (Vitré in 1603, La Rochelle in 1607, and Gap in 1617), and to define the relations with the state. From 1623 (Charenton) a royal commissioner was always present, and year by year the*~~

~~*or who had studied in Geneva, Holland, or England, the hot-beds of republicanism. The Presbyterians showed a corresponding desire for union with other Protestants. In 1620 they accepted the confession of the synod of Dort ; in 1631, for the first time, they held out the hand of fellow- ship to the Lutherans. In 1614 an attempt had been already made to convene a general council of orthodox churches from all Protestant countries ; and an oath of union was taken among themselves, repeated at Charenton in 1623. With two parties alone they would accept no union, Roman Catholics and Independents.*~~

~~*Of the time of horrors which reached its climax in the revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685 we can give no account here. The provincial synods were held continu- ously and were of great importance in preserving the vitality and spirit of the church. Thus in 1661 the pro- vincial synod of Nimes checked defection by compelling every minister within its bounds to swear that he had not thought of joining "light to darkness and God to Belial."? It is reckoned that under the persecution, in addition to the killed, from four to five millions of French Protestants left the country. Armed resistance took place, but no settled struggle until 1702, when the war of the Camisards took place in Languedoc,—a war of uneducated peasants*~~

~~without arms or leaders of rank. Like the Cameronians, they believed that they received direct communications from God ; they had their prophets or "inspirés"; they lived in a state of religious ecstasy, and bore with patient defiance spoliation, the galleys, and death ; and, when opportunity offered, they exercised against their enemies reprisals as cruel as was the persecution itself. For three years every effort to crush them was made in vain; and they yielded at last only to the moderate measures of Villars.~~

~~To abolish the undisciplined rule of the "inspirés" and to Antoine~~

~~restore Presbyterianism, which had ceased since the revo- Court.~~

~~cation, was the work of Antoine Court, the most notable figure produced by Protestant France. From 1715 to 1730, without a day's rest, this man accomplished a work truly marvellous. He was but eighteen years old when he began it. In momentary peril of death for fifteen years, he restored in the Vivarais and the Cevennes the Presby- terian constitution in all its integrity. On 21st August 1715 he assembled his first colloque, consisting of the preachers of the Cevennes and several laymen. In 1718 he held a synod of forty-five members, and again in 1723, when the old discipline was restored. In 1726 he held another synod attended by three ministers and forty-four elders, and again in the next year; and in 1744, in a re- mote spot of Bas Languedoc, the first national synod since 1660 brought together representatives from every province formerly Protestant. This alarmed the Government, and persecution again began. From 1760, however, thanks to the gradual spread of the sceptical spirit and to the teach- ings of Voltaire, more tolerant views prevailed ; synods were held without disturbance; and in 1787 Turgot, whose great object was to separate the civil and the spiritual domains, put out the Edict of Tolerance. In 1789 all citizens were made equal before the law, and the position~~

~~of Presbyterianism improved up to 1791. Napoleon in Napo- 1801 and 1802 took into his own hands the independence ¢on's of both Catholic and Protestant churches. ome~~

~~increasing subserviency of their language shows that the national synods were coming more and more under royal~~

~~*control. The consistory ,;*~~

~~*Period of national synods with the provinces.*~~

~~*= for the choice of ministers were prohibited, and then nN.*~~

~~*In 1637 (Alengon) the royal commissioner, who openly taunted them with their powerlessness, forbade not only the provincial synods but even intercourse of the In 1657 meetings*~~

~~*the colloques were suppressed. At Loudun in 1659 the national synod was forbidden and the provincial synods were restored. The greatest jealousy, too, was shown by the crown in respect of communication with other countries. No one might be a minister who was not born in France,*~~

~~*was abolished and replaced by an ‘“église consistoriale,” uniting several churches. Representation on the “premier consistoire ” of this “église” was now determined by taxa- tion instead of by choice of the people. Five “ églises consistoriales” formed a “ synode d’arrondissement,” which superseded the provincial synod. It consisted of ten mem- bers only, and was absolutely under state control. The*~~

~~*1 See Borrel for this and for a most interesting account of the action of the consistory of Nimes in 1663.*~~

~~*tion.*~~

~~*Consti- tution of*~~

~~*1852.*~~

~~*Position in the Nether- lands.*~~

~~*696*~~

~~*national synod was abolished. “ C’était une liberté interne et murée dans les temples. II y avait rigoureuse défense de faire aucun bruit, aucun mouvement dans les choses de réligion, ni journaux, ni associations, ni controverse, ml prosélytisme ; et si quelqu’ idée ou action réligieuse osait*~~

~~*franchir l'enceinte ow elle était emprisonnée, la main de fer de Napoléon l'y refoulait immédiatement." Its life was taken from the church, and in 1807 it numbered less than 200 ministers. ;*~~

~~*In 1848, however, all but three of the ninety-two "'églises consistoriales" sent a deputy to an assembly at Paris. From this assembly, when it refused to discuss points of doctrine, a secession took place, and the secessionists with the independent churches which had sprung up formed the "Union des églises évangéliques de France." This society held a synod in 1849 and there laid down a con- fession of faith and an ecclesiastical discipline. Mean- while the established church set itself to the work of reconstitution on the basis of universal suffrage (with re- strictions), the particular church being an essential element, with provincial synods, and a general synod meeting at regular intervals ; but no result was arrived at. In 1852 a change took place in its constitution. The "églises con- sistoriales" were abolished, and in each parish a presby- terial council was erected, the pastor being president, with from four to seven elders chosen by the people. In the large towns there were consistoires composed of all the pastors and of delegates from the various parishes. Half the elders in each assembly were subject to re-election every three years. Above all was the central provincial council, consisting of the two senior pastors and fifteen members nominated by the state in the first instance. All property qualification for eldership was abolished. In 1858 there were 617 pastors, and the subvention from the state amounted to 1,375,936 francs. The " Union des églises évangéliques" numbered twenty-seven churches.!*~~

~~*The Netherlands—From the geographical position of the Netherlands Presbyterianism took there from the be- ginning its tone from France. In 1562 the Confessio Bel- gica was revived, according to the French Confession of 1559, and publicly acknowledged ; and in 1563 the church system was similarly arranged. In 1572, however, in the northern provinces alone, which had been chiefly Lutheran or Melanchthonian, serious schisms took place. The in- vasion of Alva of course destroyed all Protestant order, and it was not until the Union of Utrecht in 1579 that the exiled Presbyterians returned. Previous to this, how- ever, in 1574, the first provincial synod of Holland and Zealand had been held ; but William of Orange would not allow any action to be taken independently of the state.*~~

~~*The Reformed churches had established themselves in independence of the state when that state was Catholic ; when the Government became Protestant the church had protection, and at the same time became dependent: it was a state church. The independence of the church was not consistent with that of the communes and provinces, each of which by the Union of Utrecht had the regulation of its own religion. Thus the history of the church is one of constant conflict. Both church and state were divided, the former into Zwinglian and Calvinist, the latter into those who desired and those who refused a non-Erastian church. In most cases it was insisted on as necessary that church discipline should remain with the local authority. Ing W57 6 William, with the support of Holland, Zealand, and their allies, put forth forty articles, by which doctors,*~~

~~*1 For Presbyterianism in France, see De Félice, IWist. des Protestants de France ; Aymon, Synodes Nationaux des Eglises Réformées de France ; Borrel, Itist. de (Eglise Réformée de Nimes; Beze, Hist. Ecclésiastique; Weber, Geschichtliche Darstellung, &c. ; Coquerel,*~~

~~*Hist. des Eglises du Désert ; Vincent, Vue sur le Protestantisme en France ; Buckle, History.*~~

~~*PRESBYTERGANGSEA*~~

~~*[NETHIERLANDS,*~~

~~*elders, and deacons were recognized and church discipline given to the elders, with appeal to the magistrate, but which placed the church in absolute dependence on the state. These articles, however, never came into operation; and the decisions of the synod of Dort in 1578, which made the church independent, were equally fruitless. In 1581 the Middelburg synod divided the church, created pro- vincial synods and presbyteries, but could not shake off the civil power in connexion with the choice of church officers. Thus, although Presbyterian congregations remained the rule, the civil Government retained overwhelming influence. As the Leyden magistrates said in 1581, "If we accept everything determined upon in the synods, we shall end by being vassals of the synod. We will not open to church- men a door for a new mastership over Government and subjects, wife and child."*~~

~~*The contest between Zwinglian and Calvinist came to a decision at the synod of Dort, 1618. Arminius, on the one hand, inveighed against church autonomy as a new pope- dom; Gomarus defended it. The oligarchy supported Arminius; the democratic party, headed by the stadt- holders, held with the Calvinists. The question at first was whether synods should be provincial or general. The independent provinces were naturally for provincial synods, as Arminius wished, the states-general fora national synod. The synod of Dort, wherein were represented all Reformed churches, decided against Arminius. When that was settled, the church system, as laid down in 1586 at the synod of The Hague (called by the earl of Leicester), and including general synods, was confirmed. This, however, was accepted only in Utrecht and Guelders; and from 1619 to 1795 there were seven church republics with more or less state inter- ference. The synodal form predominated, except in Zealand, and the Presbyterian form also, except in a few congregations which did not choose elders. As a rule elders held office for only two years. The "kerke raad," or kirk session, met weekly, the magistrate being a member ex officio. The colloque consisted of one minister and one elder from each congregation. At the annual provincial synod, held by consent of the states, two ministers and one elder attended from each colloque. Every congregation was annually visited by ministers appointed by the pro- vincial synod. The old controversy broke out again in the middle of the 17th century, Johann Cocceius and Gisbert Voet being the Arminian and Calvinist cham- pious. The state made good its power in every case.*~~

~~*In 1795, of course, everything was upset; and it was not until after the restoration of the Netherland states that a new organization in 1816 was formed. Its main features were that it was strictly synodal, with a national synod, and Presbyterian. But the minister was greatly superior to the elder, and the state had wide powers, especi- ally in the nomination of higher officers. In 1827 a new organ was brought into play, viz., a permanent commission of the general synod, consisting of seven members, chosen by the king from twice their number nominated by the synod, meeting twice a year. This was revived in 1847. In 1851 the system now in force was formed. In every congregation sufficiently large there is a church council of all the officers. In large congregations with three or more ministers the ministers and elders alone form one college, the deacons another. The congregation*~~

~~chooses all officers. There are 43 presbyteries in 10 provincial districts; in 1850 there were 1273 congregations with 1508 ministers and over 1,500,000 people. The special provincial synod (1619-1795) has ceased. In its place is the provincial authority of as many ministers as presbyteries in the pro- vince ; it chooses its own president. It meets three times a year, and has general superintendence, with power of examining, placing, and deposing ministers. A general~~

~~Rhine pro- vinces,~~

~~Poland,~~

~~PALATINATE, ETC. |~~

~~synod meets at The Hague every July; the ten provincial authorities send each one minister and three elders, chosen by each of those authorities in turn, and a deputy from each of the three theological colleges of Leyden, Utrecht, and Groningen. The commissions for the Walloon, East and West Indian, and Limburg churches also send each a representative. The permanent commission is chosen by the synod itself, and altogether the church is independent of the state.~~

~~Rhine Provinces.—In the Palatinate the spirit of the Presbyterian organization, though not the thing itself, had been active since the middle of the 16th century; and in 1568 Wither of Heidelberg, an Englishman, urged the establishment of the eldership. In 1570 Frederick III. established a church college in every congregation. Elders were for life. Besides the college or kirk session there was the church council in Heidelberg, consisting of three theologians and three laymen; one of the latter presided. These were all nominated by the Government. Between the church council and the various colleges were superintend- ents or inspectors. Finally there were synods, provincial and general, of ministers only. This arrangenient was a compromise between the Lutheran and Presbyterian systems. From 1576 to 1583, after Frederick's death, the system was again Lutheran, but was made Presbyterian once more by John Casimir, tutor to Frederick IV., and so it remained. The churches of the lower Rhine were formed at first entirely by foreign refugees. Walloons fled from Charles V.'s persecution in 1545, and again in 1553- 54. In 1564 the Heidelberg catechism was~~

introduced. Thousands of Protestants were driven hither by Alva in 1567-68, and in the latter year a synod was held at Wesel of forty-six preachers and elders from twenty Netherland churches. The Presbyterian system was now fully intro- duced. For the election of ministers and elders, until synods could be regularly established, twice as many were to be nominated as were wanted, and then the congregation was to choose by individtal voting. A ‘“‘collegium pro- phetarum ” was to be formed of all the officers and learned laymen for Bible exposition every week or fortnight. In 1571 the synod of Emden determined that half the elders and deacons were to give up office every year, but might be re-elected. Readers, on the Scottish plan, were appointed, and entire parity among all the church officers and the congregation insisted on. The synods are as in France, the members of the general synod being chosen from the provincial synod. The system was in fact partly French and partly Scottish. The congregations were in three divisions—(1) Germany and East Friedland, (2) Netherlands, (3) England. In 1586 a synod was held at Nassau, and the system was partially introduced in West- phalia in 1588 ; in general, however, in Lutheran countries Presbyterianism made but little way against the consistories. Its prevalence in Germany generally was too partial and obscure, and it partook too much of the consistorial char- acter, to require notice here.

Poland, &c.—The Polish nobility and all of Slav blood accepted the “Reformed” doctrine and discipline, the aristocratic republican system suiting the national polity. The German elenient, however, retained Lutheran syin- pathies. The first synod was held at Pinkzow in 1550; from 1556 John Lasky worked in the interests of Calvinism ; in 1570 all parties were united at the synod of Sandomir. By this a common confession was agreed to, but church government was left to be settled by each church. Another general synod was held at Cracow in 1573. In spite of the earnest endeavours of the church leaders, it was found impossible to introduce stringent discipline in the congre- gations ; on the synodal side, however, the system flour- ished, and the nobles were able to convert the synods into

~~*new aristocratic assemblies. It must be remembered that the Reformation was confined to the nobility, the serfs being neglected. Many of the nobles relapsed to Roman- ism; this and internal divisions weakened the Reformed cause. In 1634 a synod was held to meet the taunt of the Catholics that no two churches had the same system. From 1655, when the Swedes were in Poland, the influ- ence of synods practically ceased.*~~

~~*The Bohemian Brethren were known of in 1450; in Bohe- by the mian whole congregation, had an important place; in the 16th a:*~~

~~*their statutes (1457) discipline, entirely managed*~~

~~*century it was specialized, elders being chosen to act with the minister. After the Schmalkald War in 1544 the Brethren were driven to Prussia and Poland. During the 16th century they developed rapidly ; their system, sanc- tioned in 1609, had many peculiarities; it placed, for instance, the supervision of the women with female eiders. In 1630 they printed at Lissa their Ratio discipline ordin- asque. The Thirty Years' War destroyed them, except in Great Poland, where they were led by Comenius. Just as different civil governments—e.g., monarchical, aristocratic, democratic—suited different peoples, he said, so it was with religious governments, e.g., Episcopal, Consistorial, Presbyterian. Let all three be welded into one, and we shall have unity from the first, association from the second, propagation from the third. Accordingly their system was a combined one of Episcopacy, consistories, and synods.*~~

~~*In Hungary up to 1550 the Lutherans were supreme ; Hungary.*~~

~~*but in 1557 the Calvinists had the majority, and their system was accepted in its entirety in 1558. The race division here also decided the ecclesiastical system. All of German blood in Hungary and Transylvania remained true to Lutheranism, whilst the Magyars and Slavs ac- cepted Calvinism. Continual contests with both Unitarians and Jesuits prevented the free development of Presbyter- ianism ; hence it was confined to the synodal side, and the synods, in which the nobles had special rights, were entirely clerical.*~~

~~*In 1689 the Waldenses introduced Presbyterianism of a Wal- The consistory was the civil authority as denses.*~~

~~peculiar type. well as the church authority. For choice of elders each urban district chose three laymen, from whom the consis- tory chose the district elders for supervision of manners and of the poor. The consistory itself was subject to a church council, consisting of three spiritual and two lay members, which had supreme authority, especially when no synod was sitting. Synods were called by consent of the congregations and of the king. Two laymen were present for each ecclesiastic. (0. A.)~~

~~UNITED STATES.~~

~~Presbyterianism in the United States is a reproduction and further development of Presbyterianism in Europe. Jt differs from the latter in that the various types produced in Great Britain and on the continent of Europe combined to produce a new American type.~~

~~1. Zhe Colonial Period.—The earliest Presbyterian Colonial emigration consisted of French Huguenots under the period.~~

~~auspices of Admiral Coligny, led by Ribault in 1562 to the Carolinas and in 1565 to Florida. But the former enterprise was soon abandoned, and the colonists of the latter were massacred by the Spaniards. The Huguenots also settled in Nova Scotia in 1604 under De Monts. The later Huguenot colonists mingled with the Dutcli in New York and with the British Presbyterians and Episcopalians in New England and the Carolinas. A Huguenot church was formed on Staten Island, New York, in 1665; in New York city in 1683 ; at Charleston, South Carolina, in 1686; at Boston, Massachusetts, in 1687 ; at New Rochelle, New York, in 1688; and at other places. XIX. — 88~~

~~Presby- tery of Phila- delphia.~~

~~698~~

~~The Charleston church alone maintains its independence at present. :~~

~~English Puritanism emigrated under the auspices of the Virginia Company to the Bermudas in 1612. In 1617 a Presbyterian church, governed by ministers and four elders, was established by Lewis Hughes, and the liturgy~~

~~*of the isles of Guernsey and Jersey was used. From 1620 on- wards English Puritanism colonized New England. This was of the two types which developed from the discussions of the Westminster Assembly (1643-48) into Presbyterian- ism and Congregationalism. They co-operated in New England as they did in Old England in the county associa- tions. The Plymouth colony was more of the Congrega- tional type, the Massachusetts Bay colony more of the Presbyterian type. A mixed system was produced which has been happily called by Henry M. Dexter "a Congre- gationalized Presbyterianism or a Presbyterianized Congre- gationalism . . . which was essentially Genevan within the local congregation and essentially other outside of it." Presbyterianism was stronger in Connecticut than in Massa- chusetts. Thence it crossed the borders into the Dutch settlements on the Hudson and the Delaware, and mingled with other elements in Virginia, Maryland, and the Caro- linas. Nine of these Puritan Presbyterian churches were established on Long Island, New York, from 1641 to 1670, and three in Westchester county, New York, from 1677 to 1685. In New York city Francis Doughty in 1643 ministered to a congregation of Puritan Presbyterians, and was succeeded by Richard Denton in 1650. Francis Doughty also preached in Virginia and Maryland from 1650 to 1659, and was followed by Matthew Hill in 1667 and others subsequently. Francis Doughty was the father of British Presbyterianism in the middle colonies, but he left it in an unorganized condition.*~~

~~*Dutch Presbyterianisin was planted in New Amsterdam, New York, in 1628, when the first Reformed Dutch church was organized by Jonas Michaelius with two elders and fifty communicants. This had a strong Huguenot and Walloon representation. Services were held in the Dutch and the French languages, and subsequently in the English language also. The Dutch churches spread along the valleys of the Hudson, the Mohawk, the Raritan, and the Passaic, and also on the Delaware. They continued in subor- dination to the classis of Amsterdam, Holland, until 1747.*~~

~~*Irish Presbyterianism was carried to America by an un- known Irish niinister in 1668, by William Traill in 1683, and especially by Francis Makemie in the same year, an ordained missionary of the presbytery of Laggan, who was invited to minister to the Maryland and Virginia Presby- terians. He was a merchant and a man of executive ability, and was the*~~

~~*chief instrument in establishing the presbytery of Philadelphia, and interesting the Presby- terians of London, Dublin, and Glasgow in the feeble state of their church in America. In 1704 he obtained aid from the London ministers and returned to America with two ordained missionaries, John Hampton (Irish) and George Macnish (Scotch).*~~

~~*Meanwhile the New England ministers had sent several missionaries to the banks of the Delaware: Benjamin Woodbridge and Jedidiah Andrews went to Philadelphia in 1698-1700; John Wilson became pastor of a Presby- terlan church at Newcastle, Delaware, in 1698; Samuel Davis and Nathaniel Taylor supplied other churches in the vicinity. Seven of these ministers organized the presbytery of Philadelphia in 1706. It was a meeting of members for ministerial exercise "to consult the most proper measures for advancing religion and propagating Christianity." The presbytery only a ieerenigs to exercise oversight over the churches. The ministers con- stituting it were from many lands and of many types of*~~

~~*Presbyterianism, and could agree only in a loosely organ- ized body. During the existence of the original presbytery the chief sources of support were London, Glasgow, and Dublin in the United Kingdom, and Boston, Massachusetts, and Fairfield county, Connecticut, in New England. Its Presbyterianism was of the broad, tolerant type that we might expect from a happy union of English, Irish, Scottish, and Welsh Presbyterians, with a few Dutch, Germans, and French. In 1716 the presbytery divided itself into four "subordinate meetings, or presbyteries," after the Irish model, and increased its number by a large accession of Puritan churches and ministers from eastern New Jersey and New York.*~~

~~*The synod remained without a constitution and without subscription until 1729. It assumed the functions of Presbyterian government and discipline only gradually, as circumstances required. It developed naturally from its own inherent vitality, and adapted itself to the circum- stances of the New World without anxiety as to its con- formity to stereotyped models in the Old World. How- ever, two parties developed with the growth of the church. The*~~

~~*stricter section urged the adoption of the Westminster standards and conformity thereto ; the broader party were unwilling to sacrifice their liberty. The former followed the model of the Church of Scotland ; the liberal party sympathized with the London and Dublin Presbyterians. The result of the conflict was union under the Act of 1729, which adopted the Westminster symbols "'as being, in all the essential and necessary articles, good forms of sound words and systems of Christian doctrine." It allowed scruples as to "articles not essential and necessary in doctrine, worship, or government." The presbytery was to judge in the case and not the subscriber. 'This Adopt- ing Act (largely influenced by the Irish pacific articles of 1720) established the American Presbyterian Church on a broad generous basis ; but the happy union was brief. In 1730 the stricter party in the presbyteries of Newcastle and Donegal insisted on full subscription, and in 1736, in a minority synod, carried a deliverance interpreting the Adopting Act according to their own views. The liberal men paid no attention to it, except to put themselves on guard against the plotting of the other side. Friction was increased by a contest between Gilbert Tennent and his friends, who favoured Whitefield and his revival measures, and Robert Cross and his friends, who opposed them. The Tennents erected the Log College to educate candidates for the ministry ; and the synod passed an arbitrary Act, aimed at the Log College, that all students not educated in the colleges of New England or Great Britain should be examined by a committee of synod, thus depriving the presbyteries of the right of determining in the case. The presbytery of New Brunswick declined to yield, and the body became more and more divided in sentiment. The Cross party charged the Tennents with heresy and dis- order; the Tennents charged their opponents with un- godliness and tyranny. Passions were deeply stirred when the synod met in 1741. The moderate men remained away. The Cross party brought in a protestation to the effect that the Tennent party were no longer members of the synod ; and thus the synod suddenly broke in two. The New York presbytery declined at first to unite with either party, and endeavoured to bring about a union, but in vain. The Tennent party were found at length to be more reasonable, and the New York presbytery combined with them in establishing the synod of New York, which was called the New Side in contradistinction to the synod of Philadelphia, which was called the Old Side.*~~

~~During the separation the New Side established Nassau New~~

~~Hall at Elizabethtown in 1746, and the Log College of the ee 1de.~~

~~Tennents was merged into it. It was removed to Princeton~~

~~aq~~

~~UNITED STATES. |~~

~~in 1755, large funds being received from England, Ire- land, and Scotland in its aid. Thus the Presbyterians of~~

~~Great Britain showed their sympathy with the broad and~~

~~tolerant Presbyterians of the synod of New York ; and the~~

~~college at Princeton was based upon the pledges of Davies~~

~~and Tennent as to liberal subscription in terms of the original Adopting Act. The Old Side adopted the academy at New London, which had been organized by Francis Alison in 1741, as their own. Thus each side gained an important institution of learning. The division continued until 1758. During this period the synod of Philadelphia decreased from twenty-six ministers to twenty-two, whereas the synod of New York increased from twenty to seventy- two. The New Gide reaped all the fruits of the wonderful revival that spread over the colonies under the influence of Whitefield and his successors. The barriers to union were the different views as to subscription and discipline, and the arbitrary act of excision; but they were after a while happily removed, and the Adopting Act was re- established in its original breadth as the foundation of the reunited church. 'The reunion was signalized by the formation of the presbytery of Hanover in Virginia. The synod increased with great rapidity, by the reception of new ministers, new churches, and also entire presby- teries, until the outbreak of the Revolution and the close of the colonial period, when the synod numbered 11 pres- byteries and 132 ministers.~~

~~*The synod of New York and Philadelphia embraced only a portion of the Presbyterian ministers of the middle colo- nies. Inthe Carolinas Presbyterianism had an independent development. There was a considerable Scottish emigra- tion between 1684 and 1687. William Dunlop ministered to them until 1688, when he returned to become principal of the university of Glasgow. A mixed congregation of English Puritans and Scottish Presbyterians was organized at Charleston in 1690. _ In 1710 there were five churches, which combined to form the presbytery of James Island in 1722-23. This presbytery went through the same struggle with reference to subscription as the synod of Philadelphia, and the parties separated in 1731 into subscribers and non-subscribers.*~~

~~*In 1718 Irish Presbyterianism from Ulster established itself at Londonderry in New England. The church at Londonderry grew into a presbytery in 1726-29, including the Huguenot church-of Boston. A second presbytery was organized at Salem in 1745. The original presbytery became extinct owing to internal strife in 1765; but the presbytery of Salem grew into the synod of New England, 31st May 1775, composed of three presbyteries and sixteen ministers. Besides this synod the presbytery of the East- ward was organized at Boothbay, Maine, in 1771 and re- mained independent. A presbytery of the Puritan type was organized at Grafton, New Hampshire, and continued from 1776 to 1796 independent of other presbyteries.*~~

~~*The Scottish' Presbyterians from the established church combined with the American Presbyterian Church, but the separating churches of Scotland organized independent bodies. The Reformed Presbyterian Church ("Cove- nanters") sent Cuthbertson in 1751 (or 1752); he was joined by Lind and Dobbin from the Reformed presbytery of Ireland in 1774, and they organized an American Re- formed presbytery. 'The Anti-Burgher synod sent Alex- ander Gellatly and Andrew Arnot in 1752, and they or- ganized the Associate presbytery of Pennsylvania in 1754 ; they were joined by the Scotch Church in New York city in 1657, a split from the American Presbyterian Church ; they had grown to two presbyteries and thirteen ministers in 1776. The Burgher synod sent Telfair and Clark in 1764; the latter settled at Salem, New York ; they united with the Associate presbytery of Pennsylvania.*~~

~~*Dutch Presbyterianism in 1747 formed a ccetus which grew into a classis in 1755 independent of the classis of Amsterdam. A minority adhered to the mother classis and organized under its supervision a conference which grew into an assembly in 1764. In 1770 Queen's (now Rutgers) College was organized at New Brunswick, New Jersey. A union of the two parties was accomplished through the efforts of Dr J. H. Livingston in 1772, and a synod of five classes was organized, of 100 churches and 34 ministers. At the outbreak of the Revolution they numbered 44 ministers and 105 churches.*~~

~~*German Presbyterians began to emigrate into Pennsyl- vania in 1684, but not in large numbers until 1709, when a tide of emigration set in from the Palatinate and Switzerland. These attached themselves to the Dutch churches, but, where such did not exist, they organized churches of their own. In accordance with the advice of the German mother churches, in 1730 they put themselves under the care of the classis of Amsterdam, Holland. In 1747 the German churches organized a ccetus under the influence of Schlatter, who had found forty-six churches scattered over a wide region in Pennsylvania, but only four ordained ministers. He acted as general superintendent and was very efficient. He sought aid from all quarters, but this excited internal jealousies and controversies. At the outbreak of the Revolution it is estimated that the German churches numbered twenty-five ministers andsixty churches.*~~

~~*The classis of Amsterdam had a magnificent opportunity at the opening of the 18th century. The Dutch, German, and French churches in America were under its care. If it had organized them into classes and a synod at an early date the Reformed Church of America would have been the strongest Presbyterian body in the country, but by keeping them in pupilage it separated the various nation- alities and prevented closer union with British Presby- terians. The strength of Presbyterianism in the colonies which became the United States of America may be esti- mated at the close of the period as 3 synods, 20 presby- teries, 5 classes, 1 ccetus, and 260*~~

~~*ministers. The synod of New York and Philadelphia was a trifle stronger than all the others combined.*~~

~~*2. From the Revolution to the Civil War.—During the From the war of the Revolution the Presbyterian churches suffered Revolu- severely. The ministers and people, with scarcely an ex- es ..*~~

~~*‘ ea 3 e Civil*~~

~~*ception, entered upon the struggle for constitutional liberty wa). with all their souls. The Presbyterian Church was the church of constitutional government and orderly liberty. The Presbyterians exerted great influence in the con- struction of the constitution of the United States, and the government of the church was assimilated in no slight degree to the civil government of the country.*~~

~~*At the close of the war the Presbyterian bodies began at once to reconstruct themselves on more solid bases. In 1782 the presbyteries of the Associate and Reformed Churches united and formed the Associate Reformed synod of North America. But there were a few dissenters in both bodies, so that the older Associate and Reformed presbyteries were still continued. The Associate presby- tery of two members, Marshall and Clarkson, continued to exist until 1801, when it was subdivided and became the Associate synod of North America. In 1798 the Re- formed presbytery of North America was reconstituted by M‘Kenney and Gibson from Ireland ; it grew into a synod of three presbyteries in 1809, and in 1823 into a general synod. In 1781 the Dutch Reformed organized them- selves into a synod and classes. In 1784 they founded a theological seminary, which was settled at New Brunswick, and in 1792 adopted a constitution with general synod, particular synods, and classes. In 1792 the German Re- formed declared themselves independent of the classis of*~~

~~*Cumber- land presby- tery.*~~

~~*Period of*~~

~~*revivals,*~~

~~Amsterdam, and adopted a constitution in 1793 having 150 churches and 22 ministers. ; ;~~

~~In 1785 the synod of New York and Philadelphia took steps for the organization of a general assembly and also with a view to the union of all the Presbyterian bodies into one. In 1789 the synod resolved itself into a general assembly of four synods, which, after revising the chapters relating to church and state, adopted the Westminster symbols as their constitution, "as containing the system of doctrine taught in the Holy Scriptures," and they made them unalterable without the consent of two-thirds of the presbyteries and the general assembly. In 1798 another effort was made for union with the Reformed Dutch and the Associate Reformed, which failed. Three years after- wards a plan of union with the general association of Con- necticut was agreed upon by the general assembly, and the work of home missions in the western section of the country was prosecuted jointly. The result was mixed churches in western New York and the new States west of the Alleghany Mountains, which grew into presbyteries and synods having peculiar features midway between Pres- byterianism and Congregationalism.~~

~~The revivals in Kentucky brought about differences which resulted in the high-handed exclusion of the re- vivalists. These formed themselves into the presbytery of Cumberland, 4th February 1810, which grew in three years into a synod of three presbyteries. In 1813 they revised the Westminster confession and excluded, as they claimed, fatalism and infant damnation. If they had appealed to the general assembly they might have received justice, or possibly the separation might have been on a larger scale. In 1822, under the influence of John M. Mason, the Associate Reformed synod combined with the general assembly of the Presbyterian Church, but the majority was too slender to make the union thorough. The greater part of the ministers decided to remain separate, and accordingly three independent synods were organized —WNew York, Scioto, and the Carolinas. In 1858 the Associate synods of the north and west united with the Associate synod as the United Presbyterian Church. In 1833 the Reformed Presbyterian Church divided into New Lights and Old Lights in a~~

~~*dispute as to the propriety of Covenanters exercising the rights of citizenship under the constitution of the United States.*~~

~~*A great and widespread revival marked the opening years of the century, resulting in marvellous increase of zeal and numbers in the churches. New measures were adopted, doctrines were adapted to the times and occasions, and ancient disputes were revived between the conserva- tive and progressive forces.- Theological seminaries had been organized at Princeton in 1812, at Auburn in 1820, at Hampden Sydney in 1824, Allegheny in 1827, Columbia in 1828, Cincinnati in 1829, and Union Seminary, New York, in 1836. Differences in doctrine as well as polity and discipline became more and more prominent. Puritan theology had developed in New England into Edwardism and then into Hopkinsianism, Emmonsism, and Taylorism. A new theology had sprung up which was held to be an improvement and adaptation of Calvinism to modern thought. This new theology had entered the Presbyterian Church in the form of a milder Calvinism, which was represented to be more in accordance with the original type. On the other side the scholastic type of Calvinism, as represented by Francois Turretin and the Zurich Consensus, was insisted on as the true orthodoxy. The doctrinal differences came to a head in the trials of Albert Barnes, George Duffield, and Lyman Beecher, which, how- ever, resulted in the acquittal of the divines, but increased friction and ill-feeling. The differences developed were chiefly between general atonement and atonement for the*~~

~~*elect only and between mediate imputation and immediate imputation. But there was a middle party which regarded these differences as forced, and held that the rival views were alike inadequate if taken alone and that they were really complementary.*~~

~~*The agitation with reference to African slavery threw old and the bulk of the Southern Presbyterians on the Old Side, New which was further strengthened by the accession of the Side.*~~

~~*Associate Reformed. The ancient differences between Old and New Side were revived, and once more it was urged that there should be (1) strict subscription, (2) ex- clusion of the Congregationalized churches, and strict Presbyterian polity and discipline, (3) the condemnation and exclusion of the new divinity and the maintenance of scholastic orthodoxy. In 1834 a convention of the Old Side was held in Philadelphia, and the "Act and Testi- mony" was adopted charging doctrinal unsoundness and neglect of discipline upon the New Side, and urging that these should be excluded from the church. The moderate men on both sides opposed this action and strove for peace or an amicable separation, but in vain. In 1837 the Old Side obtained the majority in the general assembly for the second time only in seven years. They seized their oppor- tunity and abrogated the "Plan of Union," cut off the synod of Western Reserve and then the synods of Utica, Geneva, and Genesee, four entire synods, without a trial, and dissolved the third presbytery of Philadelphia without | providing for the standing of its ministers. This revolu- tionary proceeding brought about the second great rupture in the Presbyterian Church. The New Side men met in convention at Auburn in August 1837 and adopted measures for resisting the wrong. In the general assembly of 1838 the moderator refused to recognize the commis- sioners of the four exscinded synods. An appeal was made to the assembly and the moderator's decision reversed. A new moderator was chosen, while the assembly adjourned to another place of meeting. The Old Side remained after the adjournment and organized themselves, claiming the historic succession. Having the moderator and clerks from the assembly of 1837, they retained the books and papers. Thus two general assemblies were organized, the Old and the New School. An appeal was made to the civil courts, which decided in favour of the New School; but this decision was overruled on a technical point of law by the court in bank and a new trial ordered. It was deemed best, however, to cease litigation and to leave matters as they were.*~~

~~*Several years of confusion followed. In 1840 we have the first safe basis for comparison of strength.*~~

~~*| Ministers. Churches. Communicants, Old Side … 1308 1898 126,583 New Side … 1234 1375 102,060*~~

~~*The churches remained separate throughout the re- mainder of this period. The North was especially agitated by the slavery question, and the auti-slavery element be- came so strong that the Southern synods of the New School assembly felt constrained to withdraw in 1858. They organized the United Synod of 4 synods, 15 presby- teries, 113 ministers, 197 churches, 10,205 communicants. Just before the outbreak of the Civil War in 1861 these churches numbered :—*~~

~~*Synods. — Ministers. |Churches.| Communicants. Old Side…... 33 171 2656 S531 292,927 (1860) New Side … re, 104 1523 1482 134,933 (1860) UnitedSynod, 4 in| is 197 | 10,205 (1858) | Cumberland | Presbyterian| 23 96 890 | 1189 | 82,008 (1859)*~~

~~*UNITED STATES. | rRESSYTHATaANIS M 701*~~

~~*The several branches of the Scottish separating churches continued 'to grow independently until the year 1858, when the United Presbyterian Church was formed by a union of three synods,—one of the Associate and two of the Associate Reformed Churches.*~~

~~*Presby- pe cs Communi-| Theological*~~

~~*teries. Ministers. | Churches. cants. | Seminaries. Associate Associate Reform-*~~

~~*ed (4 synods) 5 Synods*~~

~~*The Dutch Reformed increased, though not without slight internal struggles; in 1822 there was a secession of thirteen ministers. The name "Dutch" was dropped in 1867 because it was found hurtful to the progress of the denomination. At the outbreak of the Civil War they numbered 1 general synod, 3 particular synods, 31 classes, 387 ministers, 370 churches, 50,427 communicants.*~~

~~*The German Reformed in 1816 improved their organi- zation. In 1819 the constitution was revised and the church divided into synods and classes. In 1824 they were divided into two independent synods. In the next year they established a theological seminary at Carlisle, which was removed to*~~

~~*Mercersburg, and finally to Lan- caster (all in Pennsylvania). This institution became the centre of the liturgical party in the church. The Ohio synod established Heidelberg College in 1850. At the outbreak of the Civil War this denomination numbered 2 synods, 24 classes, 391 ministers, 1045 churches, 92,684 coramunicants.*~~

~~*In 1826 the first Calvinistic Methodist Church in America was organized in Oneida county, New York, and a presbytery was constituted a few years afterwards. This little denomination, which is in entire sympathy with other Presbyterian bodies, is composed almost ex- clusively of Welshmen, wio have settled in communities by themselves.*~~

~~*Period 3. From the Civil War to 1885.—The Civil War in*~~

~~*since the separating the people of the North from the people of*~~

~~*= the South also brought about a separation of churches.*~~

- ~~*Some of the breaches have been healed, others remain until now.*~~

~~*In 1861 the Southern section of the Presbyterian Church withdrew from the Northern and organized the general assembly of the Presbyterian Church in the Confederate States of America, with 11 synods, 47 presbyteries, about 700 ministers, 1000 churches, and 75,000 communicants. In 1865 this body united with the United Synod of the South, and increased its strength by 120 ministers, 190 churches, and 12,000 communicants. After the close of the war the name of the denomination was changed to "the Presbyterian Church in the United States." In 1867 this church was joined by the presbytery of Patapsco, in 1869 by the synod of Kentucky, and in 1874 by the synod of Missouri, all of which had separated from the Northern church.*~~

~~*The war also united the Northern churches more closely together, and there was an increasing desire for organic union. An effort was made to combine all the Presby- terian bodies of the North in 1867, but in vain. In 1869, however, the Old and New School churches of the North combined on the basis of the common standards. A memorial fund of $7,883,983 was raised, and the church entered with renewed strength upon a fresh career of use- fulness. An effort to unite the Dutch and German Re- formed Churches*~~

failed, as also the effort to combine the Presbyterian Churches of the North and the South. The German Reformed synods in 1863 united in a general

synod with 26 classes, 447 ministers, and 98,775 com- inunicants. Ursinus College was founded by it in 1869. All branches of Presbyterians have increased with the growth of the United States. The present strength of the churches is as follows :—

es a Ri) 2 9 33 Se & o 34 'toh se; 25) 2 fe ifs So) RB we, re Soe 36 OF 2, £1 8 = | 5 < | ae] oO Eto || S| Presbyterian Church in U.S.A.| 1 | 23, 182 | 5,218 600,695 | 12 Presbyterian Church in U.S. ..| 1 {13} 67 | 1,070 127,017 | 2 Cumberland Presbyterian Ch. | 1 | 27) 116 | 1,439 130,000 | 1 United Presbyterian Church ..| 1 9| 60 730 85,443 | 3 Reformed Presbyterian Church, ULL ee tes eset Boas 1 6 6,700! 1 Reformed Presbyterian Church, | SMG visings OMS OOS copesmaneeeeeal| of 1 8 6,648} 1 Reformed Church in America | 11 | 4] 342 569 516 80,156 | 2 Reformed Church in U.S.A. ..}] 1} | 7! 522 783 | 1,465 169,530; 3 Calvinistic Methodist ……..| 1 | 6) 16 4) 175] 9,563! .. TOUMS:...1501) = 92 | 552 | 10,121 | 13,728 | 1,226,377 | 26

The American Presbyterian churches have always been marked by a zeal for missions. John Eliot, the apostle to the Indians in New England, was a Puritan Presby- terian. The synod of New York carried on mission work among the Indians through David Brainerd and others, with the help of the Society in Scotland for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge. The Presbyterian churches generally co-operated with the Congregationalists in the work of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, established in 1710, until 1832, when the Re- formed Church in America set the example of organizing a denominational board. Each denomination now has its board of missions. The summary of missionary operations, as reported to the council of the Reformed churches hold- ing the Presbyterian system which met at Belfast in June 1884, was 230 ordained missionaries, 25 male lay agents, and 359 female, all sent out by the societies. These were aided by 138 ordained converts and 1115 other agents from among the converts, and there was a total of 25,235 communicants and 29,060 day-school pupils. The work of home missious is equally extensive, and is especi- ally important in the United States, where the church has to attend

~~*to the wants of an immense population constantly flowing from Europe, and the natural increase of population in the country itself also enlarges the older towns and States and creates new ones with astonishing rapidity.*~~

~~*The tendency of Presbyterianism in the United States is to adapt itself to the circumstances of the country. The divisions are chiefly the result of differences of nationality, and traditional doctrines and modes of worship brought by the immigrants from the countries of Europe. These are gradually wearing off, and the churches are assimilat- ing themselves to the country and its institutions, and thus are growing closer together. We may expect at no very distant date a combination of them all into one organism.*~~

~~*The chief authorities for the study of American Presbyterianism are—Charles Hodge, Constitutional History of the Presbyterian Church in the United States of America, 1706-1788 (2 vols., Phil- adelphia, 1840) ; Records of the Presbyterian Church in the U.S.A. from 1706 to 1788 (Philadelphia, 1841); Richard Webster, History of the Presbyterian Church in America (Philadelphia, 1857) ; EK. H. Gillett, History of the Presbyterian Church in the U.S.A. (2d ed., Philadelphia, 1873) ; Presbyterian Reunion (New York, 1870); E. B. Crisman, Origin and Doctrines of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church (St Louis, 1877); E. T. Corwin, Alanual of the Reformed Church in America (New York, 3d ed., 1879); Reformation Prin- ciples (Philadelphia, revised ed., 1863); C. A. Briggs, American Presbyterianism, New York, 1885. (C. A. BR.)*~~

~~*1 "General Synods." 2 "Classes."*~~

~~*702*~~

~~*PRESCOT, a market-town of Lancashire, is situated on rising ground on the Liverpool and Wigan branch of the London and North-Western Railway, Liverpool and 28 west of Manchester. It is of considerable antiquity, and received a grant for a market and fair in the 7th year of Edward III. A church existed in the 13th century. The present edifice, in various styles, with a lofty tower and spire and carved timber roof, underwent extensive restoration in 1875-76. Among the other public buildings are the town-hall (1765) and the market-hall (1859). The chief industry is the making of watch hands and wheels, &c., first introduced in 1730 by J ohn Miller from*~~

~~Yorkshire. Coarse earthenware is also manufactured. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 268 acres) in 1871 was 5990, and in 1881 it was 6419.~~

~~PRESCOTT, Winuiam Hickxuine (1796-1859), his- torian, was born in Salem, Massachusetts, on 4th May 1796, his ancestors, of the old Puritan stock, having migrated from Lancashire about 1640 and established themselves in Middlesex county, Massachusetts. He re- ceived his earlier education in his native city until the removal of his family in 1808 to Boston, where he was placed under the tuition of Dr Gardiner, a pupil of Dr Parr. His schooldays appear to have been in the main typical rather than prophetic, though in his passion for mimic warfare and for the narration of original stories some indication of the historical bias may perhaps be dis- cerned. A healthy aversion to persistent work, which even in later years broke at times through his rigorous system of self-discipline, did not hinder him from making a good if somewhat desultory use of his permission to read at the Boston athenzeum,—an exceptional advantage at a time when the best books were by no means readily accessible in any part of the United States. He entered Harvard College in the autumn of 1811, therefore, with a fairly thorough mental equipment, but almost at the outset his career was interrupted by an accident which affected the whole subsequent course of his life. A hard piece of bread, flung at random in the Commons Hall, struck his left eye with such force that he fell to the ground ; and, though the first shock speedily passed, the**

sight was irremediably destroyed. He resumed his college

work, however, with success in classics and literature,

though he abandoned the study of mathematics as one in

which he could not attain even an average proficiency. After graduating honourably in 1814 he entered his father's office as a student of law; but in January 1815 the un- injured eye showed dangerous symptoms of inflammation, which for some time refused to yield to remedies. When at last in the autumn he was in condition to travel, it was determined that he should pass the winter at St Michael's and in the spring obtain medical advice in Europe. His visit to the Azores, which was constantly broken by

~~*con- finement to a darkened room, is chiefly noteworthy from the fact that he there began the mental discipline which enabled him to compose and retain in memory long pass- ages for subsequent dictation ; and, apart from the gain in culture, his journey to England, France, and Italy (April 1816 to July 1817) was scarcely more satisfactory. The verdict of the physicians consulted by him was that the injured eye was hopelessly paralysed, and that' the pre- servation of the sight of the other depended upon the maintenance of his general health. His further pursuit of the legal profession seemed out of the question, and on his return to Boston he remained quietly at home listening to a great deal of reading, but with no fixed object in view. On 4th May 1820 he was married to Miss Susan Amory. Prior to his marriage he had made a few experiments in composition which had obtained no further publicity than that of his own circle of friends, but he now finally decided*~~

~~*to devote his life to literature. It must be admitted that he had not hitherto displayed any remarkable aptitude ;*~~

~~*8 miles east of | but having once determined his future occupation he set*~~

~~*himself strenuously to the task of self-preparation. With almost amusing thoroughness he commenced the study of Murray's Grammar, the prefatory matter of Johnson's Dictionary, and Blair's Rhetoric, reading at the same time for general purposes of style a series of the standard English writers from the period of Elizabeth onwards. A review of Byron's Letters on Pope in 1821 constituted his first contribution to the North American Review, to which he continued for many years to send the results of his slighter researches. He next turned to French literature, the irksomeness with which he regarded his studies in this subject being mitigated by incursions into the early Eng- lish drama and ballad literature. Of the direction and quality of his thought at this time he has left indications in his papers on Lssay-Writing (1822) and on French and English Tragedy (1823). In pursuance of his method of successive studies he began in 1823 the study of Italian literature, passing over German as demanding more labour than he could afford ; and so strongly did he feel the fasci- nation of the language that for some time he thought of selecting it as his chief sphere of work. In the*~~

~~*following year, however, he made his first acquaintance with the literature of Spain under the influence of his friend and biographer, Ticknor, who was then lecturing upon it; and, while its attractiveness proved greater than he had at the outset anticipated, the comparative novelty of the subject as a field for research served as an additional stimulus.*~~

~~*In the meantime his aims had been gradually concen- trating. HIstory had always been a favourite study with him, and Mably's Observations sur [Histoire appears to have had considerable influence in determining him to the choice of some special period for historic research. The selection, however, was not finally made without prolonged hesitation. The project of a history of Italian literature held a prominent place in his thought and found some tentative expression in his article on [talian Narrative Poetry (1824) and in the reply to Da Ponte's criticism (1825); but he had also in contemplation a history of the revolution which converted republican Rome into a monarchy, a series of biographical and critical sketches of eminent men, and a Spanish history from the invasion of the Arabs to the consolidation of the monarchy under Charles V. It was not till the 19th of January 1826 that he recorded in the private memoranda begun by him in 1820 his decision "to embrace the gift of the Spanish subject." The choice was certainly a bold one. On the one hand, he had no great liking for, if he had not, as he alleged, an absolute detestation of the investigation of latent and barren anti- quities, while, on the other, he had not the visual power which others besides Milton have deemed indispensable to an historian. The first he might and did overcome, but the second seemed likely to prove a permanent disqualifi- cation. HIe could only use the eye which remained to him for brief and intermittent periods, and as travelling affected his sight prejudicially he could not anticipate any personal research amongst unpublished records and historic scenes. HIe was happy, however, in the possession both of ample means and admirable friends to supply so far as might be the necessary materials, and of a wide leisure in which to give them literary shape and polish; and he sketched with no undue restriction or hesitancy the plan of the HIstory of the Reign of Ferdinand and Isabella —his first great work. Mr English, one of his secretaries, has furnished a picture of him at this period seated in a study lined on two sides with books and darkened by green screens and curtains of blue muslin, which required read- justment with almost every cloud that passed across the*~~

~~*Paka owe OFT*~~

~~*sky. His writing apparatus—a noctograph—lay before him, and he kept his ivory style in his hand to jot down notes as the reading progressed. In accordance with his general method these notes were in turn read over to him until he had completely mastered them, when they were worked up in his memory to their final shape. So pro- ficient did he become that he was able to retain the equiva- lent of sixty pages of printed matter in his memory, turn- ing and returning them as he walked or drove. The rate of progress in preparation was therefore necessarily slow, apart from any liability to interruption by other under- takings and failures in bodily health. He still continued his yearly experimental contributions to the Worth Amert- can Review, elaborating them with a view as much to ultimate historical proficiency as to immediate literary effect, the essays on Scottish Song (1826), Novel-Writing (1827), Mfoliére (1828), and Irving's Granada (1829) belonging to this preparatory period. The death of his eldest daughter in 1828 also led him aside to the study— afterwards renewed in the interval between the Ferdinand and Isabella and the Conquest of Mextco—of Christian evidences, with the result that he convinced himself of the fundamental truth of Christianity, though he did not accept all the tenets of orthodoxy. On the 6th of October 1829 he began the actual work of composition, which was continued without more serious interruptions than those occasioned by the essays on Asylums for the Blind (1830), Poetry and Romance of the Italians (1831), and English Literature of the 19th Century (1832), until 25th June 1836, when the concluding note was written. Another year, during which his essay on Cervantes appeared, was spent in the final revision of the History for the press, in which the author was ably assisted by two friends, of whom Gardiner, the son of his old schoolmaster, criticized the style and Folsom verified the facts. Its success upon its publica- tion in Boston was immediate, the five years' contract being discharged in a few. months. Arrangements were speedily made for its publication in England, and there its success was not less marked. From the position of an ob- scure reviewer Prescott suddenly found himself elevated to the first rank of contemporary historians. Daniel Webster spoke of him as a comet which had suddenly blazed out upon the world in full splendour, and American, British, and Continental reviewers were equally laudatory. Its re- ception determined the nature of all his subsequent work. Hitherto he*~~

~~had still inclined towards the history of literature rather than to that of polity and action, on the ground that the former was more consonant with his previous studies and a more suitable sphere for the display of his special powers. A close examination of his work in the department of literary criticism does not, however, bear out this estimate of his own genius, and the popular voice in approving his narrative faculty gave him the re- quired impetus in the right direction. After coquetting for a short time with the project of a life of Moliére he decided to follow in the track of his first work with a History of the Conquest of Mexico. Washington Irving, who had already made preparations to occupy the same field, generously withdrew in his favour; and in May 1838 Prescott began his first reading in the subject. The work was completed in August 1843, the five years' labour having been broken by the composition of reviews of Lockhart's Life of Scott (1838), Kenyon's Poems (1839), Chateaubriand (1839), Bancroft's United States (1841), Mariotti's Italy (1842), and Madame Calderon's Life in Mexico (1843), and by the preparation of an abridgment of his Ferdinand and Isabella in anticipation of its threatened abridgment by another hand. On 6th December 1843 the Conquest of Mexico was published with a success pro- portionate to the wide reputation won by his previous~~

~~work, the contracted number being sold off in four months and London and Paris editions meeting with a similar reception. The careful methods of work which he had adopted from the outset had borne admirable fruit. While the consultation of authorities had been no less thorough, his style had become more free and less self-conscious ; and the epic qualities of the theme were such as to call forth in the highest degree his powers of picturesque narra- tion. It was only a step from the conquest of Mexico to that of Peru, and scarcely three months elapsed before he began to break ground on the latter subject, though the actual composition was not commenced until the autumn of 1844. While the work was in progress and before the close of the year his father died,—a heavy blow to him, inasmuch as the elder and younger members of the family had continued to share the same home upon almost patri- archal terms, and the breach was therefore in a chain of constant association extending over a period of forty-eight years. In February 1845 he received the announcement of his election as~~

corresponding member of the French Institute in place of the Spanish historian Navarrete, and also of the Royal Society of Berlin. The winter found him arranging for the publication in England of the selection from his articles and reviews which appeared in 1845 under the title of Critical and Historical Essays, and which was issued almost contemporaneously at New York under the title of Biographical and Critical Miscellanies. After some minor interruptions—his removal from the old mansion-house in Bedford Street to the house in Beacon Street, visits to friends, and a renewed failure of sight—the Conquest of Peru was completed in November 1846 and published in March following. His misgivings as to its reception were at once set at rest, and it was speedily issued in translations into French, Spanish, Ger- man, and Dutch, in addition to the English editions of New York, London, and Paris. He was now over fifty and his sight showed serious symptoms of enfeeblement. Although during the composition of the Ferdinand and Isabella it had been of very intermittent service to him, it had by his careful regimen so far improved that he could read with a certain amount of regularity during the writing of the Conquest of Mexico, and also, though in a less degree, during the years devoted to the Conquest of Peru. Now, however, the use of his remaining eye had been reduced to an hour a day, divided into portions at wide intervals, and he was driven to the conclusion that whatever plans he made for future work must be formed on the same calculations as those of a blind man. He had been for many years collecting materials for a history of Philip II., but he hesi- tated for some time to attempt a work of such magnitude, occupying himself in the meantime with the slighter labours of a memoir of Mr John Pickering for the Massa- chusetts Historical Society and the revision of Ticknor's History of Spanish Iaterature. Butin March 1848 he set himself with characteristic courage to the accomplishment of the larger project, though with the intention of writing memoirs rather than a history, as admitting a more ram- bling style and less elaborate research. He had been for- tunate in obtaining the aid of Don Pascual de Gayangos, then professor of Arabic literature at Madrid, by whose offices he was enabled to obtain material not only from the public archives of Spain but from the muniment rooms of the great Spanish families. With an exceptional range of information thus afforded him, he wrote the opening of his history at Nahant, his summer residence, in July 1849 ; but, finding himself still unsettled in his work, he decided in the spring of the following year to carry out a long projected

~~visit to England. His reception there was of the most cordial and gratifying kind, and he returned re- invigorated to his work. The idea of writing memoirs~~

~~was dismissed in favour of the more elaborate form, and in November 1855 the first two volumes of his uncom- pleted History of Philip II. were issued from the press, their sale eclipsing that of any of his earlier books. This was his last great undertaking; but as Robertson's Charles V., in the light of new sources of information, was inade- quate to take its place as a link in the series, he repub- lished it in an improved and extended form in December 1856. A slight attack of apoplexy on the 4th of February 1858 foretold the end, though he persevered with the preparation of the third volume of Phalip LJ. for the press, and with the emendation and annotation of his Conquest of Mewico. On the morning of the 27th of January 1859 a second attack occurred, and he died in the afternoon of~~

~~the same day in his sixty-third year.~~

~~In personal character Preseott possessed many admirable and amiable qualities, his eourageous bearing and persistent labour being by no means without their heroic element, though the greater portion of his life was passed with his friends and his books. A certain habit of striving to be habitual is euriously prominent from his boyhood till his death, the desire for an objective stimulus finding expression in numberless formal resolutions and in frequent wagers with his seeretaries or friends. Necessarily a valetudinarian, the smallest details of life had to be considered by him, even to the adjustment of the weight of his dress to the state of the weather and the thermometer. Yet the formalism, whether voluntary or enforced, was never obtrusive, and the final impression made upon his eontemporaries was that of a frank, spontaneous, and thoroughly manly life. Asan historian he stands in the direct line of literary deseent from Robertson, whose infiuenee is elearly diseernible both in his method and style. But, while Robertson was in some measure the initiator of a movement, Preseott eame to his task when the range of information was ineomparably wider and when progress in soeiologie theory had thrown innumerable convergent lights upon the progress of events. He worked,~~

therefore, upon more assured ground; his sifting of authorities was more thorough and his method less restricted both in the selection of details and in their graphic presentation. At the same time he cannot be classed as in the highest sense a philosophic historian. His power lies chiefly in the clear grasp of fact, in selection and synthesis, in the vivid narration of incident. For extended analysis he had small liking and faculty ; his critical insight is limited in range, and he confines himself almost wholly to the concrete elements of history. When he does venture upon more abstract criticism his standards are often commonplace and superficial, and the. world-scheme to which he relates events is less profound than the thought of his time altogether warranted. If these things, however, indicate failure from the point of view of ideal history, they at least make for popularity. Few historians have had in a higher degree that artistic feeling in the broad arrangement of materials which en- sures interest. The course of his narrative is unperplexed by doubtful or insoluble problems; no pretence at profundity or subtlety saps the vitality of his characters or interrupts the flow of incident with dissertation and digression. The painting is filled in with primary colours and with a free hand; and any sense of crudity which may be awakened by close inspection is compensated by the vigour and massive effectiveness of the whole. Though he did not bring to his work the highest scientific grasp, he brought to it scientific conscientiousness and thoroughness within his limitations, while his dominant pictorial faculty gave to his treatment a super- scientific brilliancy. The romance of history has seldom had an abler exponent, and the large number of editions and translations of his works attests their undiminished fascination at certain stages of popular culture. (R. M. W.)

PRESCRIPTION in the broadest sense of the word denotes the acquisition or extinction of rights by lapse of time. The term is derived from the prescriptio of Roman law, originally a matter of procedure, a clause inserted before the formula on behalf of either the plaintiff or, in early times, the defendant, limiting the question at issue. (See Praepina.) It was so called from its preceding the formula, One of the defendant's prescriptiones was long temporis or longa possessionis prescriptio (afterwards super- seded by the exceptio), limiting the question to the fact of possession without interruption by the defendant for a certain time (see

~~*Possession). It seems to have been introduced by the praetor to meet cases affecting aliens or ae ee _ e*~~

~~*oe Prescriptiones autem appellatas esse ab eo quod ante formulas prescribuntur ” (Gaius, iv. § 132),*~~

~~*PR E—*~~

~~*Pe ae*~~

~~*lands out of Italy where the wsucapro of the civil law (the original means of curing a defect of title by lapse of time) could not apply. The time of acquisition by usucapio was fixed by the Twelve Tables at one year for movables and two years for iminovables. Prescriptio thus constituted a kind of pretorian usucapio. In the time of Justinian usucapto and prescriptio (called also longi temporis possessio), as far as they affected the acquisition of ownership, differed only in name, usucapio being looked at from the point of view of property, prescriptio from the point of view of pleading. By the legislation of Justinian movables were acquired by three years’ possession, immovables by ten years’ possession where the parties had their domicile in the same province (inter presentes), twenty years’ possession where they were domiciled in different provinces (inter absentes). Servitudes could not be acquired by usucapio proper, but were said to be acquired by quasi usucapio, probably in the same time as sufficed to give a title to immovables. There was also a longissimi temporis possessio of thirty years, applicable to both movables and immov- ables, and requiring nothing but bona jides on the part of the possessor. Where the right sought to be established was claimed against the church, a still longer period of forty years (at one time a hundred) was necessary. Im- memorial prescription was required in a few cases of a public character, as roads.? Prescriptio was also the term applied to lapse of time as barring actions upon contracts or torts under various provisions corresponding to the Eng- lish Statutes of Limitation. The prescription of Roman law (and of modern systems based upon it) is thus both acquisitive and extinctive. It looks either to the length of time during which the defendant has been in possession, or to the length of time during which the plaintiff has been out of possession. In English law the latter kind of prescription is called LimrraTion (q.v.).*~~

~~*The tendency of law is to substitute a definite for an indefinite period of prescription.*~~

~~*In English law prescription is used in a comparatively narrow sense. It is acquisitive only, and is very limited initsapplication. A title by prescription can be made only to incorporeal hereditaments—that is, in legal language, hereditaments that are or have been appendant or appurte- nant to corporeal hereditaments—and to certain exemp- tions and privileges.2 The rights claimable by prescription for the most part consist of rights 7m alieno solo, The most important are advowsons, tithes, commons, ways, watercourses, lights, offices, dignities, franchises, pensions, annuities, and rents. Land or movables cannot be claimed by prescription. The foundation of prescription is the pre- sumption of law that a person found in undisturbed enjoy- ment of a right did not come into possession by an unlawful act (see Williams, Rights of Common, 3). "In the English courts this presumption was, perhaps it may be said still is, based upon the fiction of a lost grant, viz., that at some time in the past there had been a grant of the heredita- ment by a person capable of granting it to a person capable of taking it, and that the grant had been lost. The jury were instructed to find the loss of a once existing grant in whose existence no one really believed. The enjoyment of the right must have been from a time whereof the memory of man runneth not to the contrary. The period of legal memory was after a time necessarily fixed for purposes of convenience at a certain date. The date adopted varied at first with the time during which the demandant in a writ of right must have proved seisin in himself or his*~~

~~*° "Vie vicinales, quarum memoria non extat" (Dig., xliii. 7, 3).*~~

~~*3 Prescription seems at one time to have borne a wider meaning. A claim by prescription to land is mentioned in 32 Hen. VIII. e. 2. And it seems that tenants in comn:on may still make title to land by prescription (Littleton's Tenures, § 310).*~~

~~*Poe Be tel Pet ON*~~

~~*ancestors. After one or two previous enactments the date was finally fixed by the Statute of Westminster the First (3 Edw. I. c. 39) at the reign of Richard I., which was in- terpreted to mean the first year of the reign of*~~

~~*Richard I. The inconvenience of this remote date, as time went on, led to the gradual growth of a rule of evidence that proof of enjoyment for twenty years was prima facie evidence of enjoyment from time immemorial. But evidence of the beginning of the enjoyment at however remote a date, if subsequent to 1 Ric. I. was sufficient to destroy the claim. This is still the law with respect to claims not falling within the Prescription Act, mostly rights in gross, —that is, where there is no dominant or servient tenement, €.g., a right to a pew or to a several fishery in gross. The twenty years' rule was of comparatively late introduction; it does not seem to have been known in the time of Elizabeth, and was perhaps introduced in analogy to the Statute of Limitations, 21 Jac. I. c. 16. With respect to claims of profits @ prendre and easements a change was made by the Prescription Act, 2 and 3 Will. IV. c. 71 (extended to Ireland by 21 and 22 Vict. c. 42, but not to Scotland). By that Act claims to rights of common and other profits a prendre are not to be defeated after thirty years' enjoy- ment by any person claiming right thereto without inter- ruption for thirty years by showing only the commencement of the right, and after sixty years' enjoyment the right is absolute and indefeasible unless had by consent or agree- ment by deed or writing (§1). In claims of rights of way or other easements the periods are twenty years and forty years respectively (§2). The right to access and use of light is absolute and indefeasible by twenty years' enjoy- ment without interruption unless by consent or agreement by deed or writing (§3). The before-mentioned periods are to be deemed those next before suits, and nothing is to be deemed to be an interruption unless acquiesced in for one year (§4). In pleading, the enjoyment as of right may be alleged during the period mentioned in the Act, and without claiming in the name or right of the owner of the fee (§5). No presumption is to be made in favour of a right exercised for a less period (§6).. The time during which a person otherwise capable of resisting a claim is an infant, idiot, non compos mentis, feme covert, or tenant for life, or during which an action or suit has been pending until abated by the death of a party, is to be excluded in.the computation of the periods unless where the right or claim is declared to be absolute and indefeasible (§ 7). In the period of forty years a term of life or more than three years is to be excluded in case the claim be resisted' by the reversioner within three years after the determination of the term (§ 8). An Act to define the period of prescription for a modus decimandt, or an exemption from tithes by composition, was passed the*~~

~~same year (2 and 3 Will. IV. c. 100; see Tirnes). The Prescription Act is only supplemental to the common law, so that a claim may be based upon the Act or, in the alternative, upon the common law. Nor does the Act alter the conditions necessary at common law for a good claim by prescription. The claim under the statute must be one which may be lawfully made at common law. The prin- cipal rules upon the subject are these. (1) The title is founded upon actual usage. The amount of actual usage and the evidence necessary to prove it vary according to the kind of claim. For instance, in continuous easements (such as a watercourse) the enjoyment may go on without any active interference by the person claiming the right ; in discontinuous easements (such as a right of way) the right is only enjoyed at intermittent periods. (2) The enjoyment must (except in the case of light) be as of right, a rule sometimes expressed by the words nec w nec clam nec precario, derived from Roman law,—that is to say, peace-~~

~~able, openly used, and not by licence. These words bear a meaning less strict than they did in Roman law. The enjoyment in Roman law must (except in the case of jus aque ducendx) have been ex justo titulo in order to found usucapio or guasi usucapio; in English law there is no doubt that enjoyment may be good by prescription, even though it began in trespass, as a footpath or arent. (3) The prescription must be certain and reasonable. Examples of claims by prescription which have been held to be bad on this ground are a claim to take out of the land of another as much clay as is required for making bricks at a certain kiln, and a claim to a marriage fee which, though reasonable now, would have been an unreasonable amount to have been paid in the reign of Richard IL, looking to the difference in the value of money. Inhabitants cannot claini by prescription, as they are an uncertain and fluctuat- ing body, unless under a grant from the crown, which con- stitutes them a corporation for the purposes of the grant. (4) The prescription must be alleged in a que estate or in aman and his ancestors. Prescription in a que estate lies at common law by reason of continuous and immemorial enjoyment by the claimant, a person seised in fee, and all those whose estate he has (toux ceux que estate il ad). The Prescription Act fixes a definite period and does away with the necessity which existed at common law of prescribing in the name of the person~~

~~seised in fee. Prescription in a man and his ancestors is not of ordinary occurrence in practice. 'I am not aware of more than two cases in modern times," says Mr Joshua Williams (Rights of Com- mon, 9), "'where a prescription of this kind, viz., a pre- scription of enjoyment by a man and his ancestors, irre- spective of the possession of land, has been set up." Corporations, however, occasionally claim by a prescription analogous to this, viz., in the corporation and its prede- cessors. Such claims by either a person or a corporation are not within the Prescription Act, which applies only where there are dominant and servient tenements. By 32 Hen. VIII. c. 2 no person can make any prescription by the seisin or possession of his ancestor unless such seisin or possession has been within threescore years next before such prescription made. (5) A prescription cannot lie for a thing which cannot be granted, as it rests upon the presumption of a lost grant. Thus a lord of a manor cannot prescribe to raise a tax or toll upon strangers, for such a claim could never have been good by any grant. Prescription and Custom.—Prescription must be care- fully distinguished from custom. Prescription, as has been said, is either in a que estate or in a man and his ancestors,—that is to say, it is a personal claim ; custom is purely local,—that is to say, it is a usage obtaining the force of law within a particular district. In the time of Littleton the difference between prescription and custom was not fully recognized (see Littleton's Zenures, § 170), but the law as it exists at present had become established by the time of Sir Edward Coke. "J.S. seised of the Mannor of D. in fee prescribeth thus; That J. S. his ancestors and all those whose estate he hath in the said Mannor have time out of mind of man had and used to have Common of pasture &c. in such a place &c., being the land of some other &c. as pertaining to the said Mannor. This property we call a Prescription. A custome is in this manner ; A copyholder of the Mannor of D. doth plead that within the same Mannor there is and hath been for time out of mind of man used, that all the Copy- holders of the said Mannor have had and used to have Common of pasture &c. in such a waste of the Lord, parcel of the said Mannor &c." (Coke upon Littleton, 113b). A custom must be certain, reasonable, and exercised as of right. Like prescription at common law, it must have existed from time immemorial. On this ground a custom XIX.—89~~

~~*to erect stalls at statute sessions for hiring servants was held to be bad, because such sessions were introduced by the Statute of Labourers, 23 Edw. III. st. 1 (Simpson v. Wells, Law Reports, 7 Queen's Bench, 214). Some rights may be claimed by custom which cannot be claimed by prescription, eg., a right of inhabitants to dance on a village green, for such a right is not connected with the enjoyment of land. On the other hand, profits @ prendre can be claimed by prescription but not by custom, unless in two or three exceptional cases, such as rights of copy- holders to common in the lord's demesne, or to dig sand within their tenements, rights to estovers in royal forests, and rights of tin-bounders in Cornwall.*~~

~~*United States.—The law of the United States (except in Louisiana) is based upon that of England, but the period of enjoyment necessary to found a title by pre- scription varies in the different States. An easement or profit & prendre is acquired by twenty years' enjoyment in most States, following the English common law rule. In Michigan the term is twenty-five years, Pennsylvania twenty-one years, Connecticut and Vermont fifteen years, South Carolina five years. In Louisiana the period varies according to the subject from three to thirty years, and property other than incorporeal hereditaments may be claimed by prescription as in Roman law (see Kent's Comm., vol. iii. 442). In the case of ancient lights the tendency of the decisions of many of the State courts seems to have been against the English doctrine, that a prescriptive right to light may be gained by mere enjoy- ment not necessarily under a claim of right (Washburn's Law of Real Property, vol. ii. 318).*~~

~~*International law uses the term "prescription" in its wider or Roman sense. "The general consent of mankind has established the principle that long and uninterrupted possession by one nation excludes the claim of every other" (Wheaton, Jnt. Law, § 165). Historic instances of rights which were at one time claimed and exercised by pre- scription as against other nations are the sovereignty of Venice over the Adriatic and of Great Britain over the Narrow Seas, and the right to the Sound dues long exacted by Denmark. But such claims were rejected by the highest authorities on international law (e.g., Grotius), on the ground that they were defective both in justus tetulus and in de facto possession. 'There is no special period fixed, as in municipal law, for the acquirement of international rights by*~~

~~*lapse of time. prescription is treated as part of the lex fori or law of procedure. (See Limrration.) (3. WT.)*~~

~~*Scotland.—In the law of Scotland " prescription" is a term of wider meaning than in England, being used as including both pre- seription and limitation of English law. In its most general sense it may be described as the effect which the law attaches to the lapse of time, and it involves the idea of possession held by one person adverse to the rights of another. Though having its basis in the common law, its operation was early defined by statute, and it is now in all respects statutory. The most appropriate mode of treat- ing the preseription of Scotch law is to regard it (1) as a mode of acquiring rights—the positive prescription; (2) as a mode of extin- guishing rights—the negative prescription ; (3) as a mode of limit- ing rights of action—the shorter prescriptions. It must, however be observed with reference to this division that the distinction between (1) and (2) is rather an accidental (due to a loose inter- pretation of the language of the Act 1617, c. 12) than a logically accurate one. It is, moreover, as will immediately be seen, strictly confined to heritable rights, having no application in the case of movable property. But, though the distinction has been com- plained of by the highest anthority as tending to ereate embar- Tassinent in the law (see opinion of Lord Chancellor St Leonards*~~

~~*in Dougall v. Dundee Harbour Trustees, 1852, 24 Juri 85), 1*~~

~~*J E $: 2 wrist, 385), it is — too well settled to be departed from. i*~~

~~*. Positive Preseription.—The positive prescripti yas intr ption was intro- aos me the Act 1617, c. 12,—a statute which has been described ie Or : Kames as "the palladium of our land proprictors." After oa forth in the preamble the inconvenience resulting from the oss of titles and the danger of forgery after the means of improba-*~~

~~*In private international law*~~

~~*PRES*®S¢ Prien*~~

~~*tion are lost by the lapse of time, it enacts that whatever heritages the lieges, their predecessors or authors, have possessed by them- selves or*~~

~~*others in their names peaceably, in virtue of infeftments for the space of forty years, continually and together, from the date of their said infeftments, and without any lawful interruption during the said space, they shall not be disturbed therein, provided they produce a written title on which their possession has pro- ceeded. Such written title must be either a charter and sasine preceding the forty years, or, when no charter is extant, instrn- ments of sasine proceeding upon retours or precepts of clare constat. Though the statute in its literal construction only applied to such heritable subjects as had been conveyed by charter and sasine, it was at an early date interpreted so as to include other heritable rights, as servitudes, tacks, pubhe rights of way, &e., where no charter could be supposed to exist. Thus forty years' possession of aroad by members of the public is held to establish a right of way. And any member of the public who uses or may have occasion to use the road is considered to have a good title to plead prescrip- tion. Thus in the celebrated Glen Tilt case a path through Glen Tilt was established as a right of way in an action at the instance of three gentlemen, one of whom was a residenter in Edinburgh and another in Aberdeen (sce Torrie v. Duke of Atholl, 1849, 12 Dun- lop's Reports, 328 ; affirmed in House of Lords, 1852, 1 Macqueen's Tteports, 65). This valuable Act of 1617 was so well framed that it continued to regulate the prescription of land rights till the year 1874. By the Conveyancing Act of that year (37 and 38 Vict. c. 94, s. 34) the period of prescription was shortened from forty years to twenty. It was provided that possessions for twenty years upon 'an ex facie valid irredeemable title recorded in the appropriate register of sasines" should in future give the same right as forty years' possession upon charter and sasine under the earlier law. This Act of 1874 docs not, however, apply to all the cases which fell under the Act of 1617. Thus it has been decided that twenty years' possession on a charter of adjudieation followed by sasine and a declarator of expiry of the legal is insufficient to give an unchallengeable right, an adjudication not being an " ex facie irre- deemable title." (Hinton v. Connel's Trustees, 1883, 10 Rettie's Reports, p. 1110). It is further specially provided by the Act of 1874 that the twenty years' prescription is not to apply to servi- tudes, rights of way, and public rights generally. The following rules apply to the positive prescription. (a) The possession which is required for it must be peaceable, continuons (" continually and together," as the Act of 1617 has it), and uninterrupted. (6) The prescription runs de momento in momentum. (e) The*~~

~~*person against whom the prescription rnns must be major and swi jusis,—a rule which, as regards minority, was specially provided for by the Act of 1617, and as regards other cases of incapacity by the application of the principles of the common law. Under the Conveyancing Act, however, it is provided that in all cases where the twenty years' prescription applies, the lapse of thirty years is to exclude any plea on the ground of minority or want of eapacity.*~~

~~*2. Negative Preseription.—This prescription was introduced by the Act 1469, e. 28, and re-enacted with some modification by 1474, c. 55. At first restricted to personal claims of debt, it was gradually extended in practice and ultimately made applicable to heritable bonds and other heritable rights by the above-men- tioned Act of 1617. By the Act of 1469 it is declared that the person having interest in an obligation must follow the same within the space of forty years and take document thereupon, otherwise it shall be prescribed. The negative prescription accordingly extin- guishes in toto the right to demand performance of an obligation after forty years, the years being reckoned from the day on which fulfilment of the obligation can be first demanded. The lapse of this period of time creates a conclusive presumption—one incapable of being redargued—that the debt or obligation has been paid or fulfilled. But it must be kept in view that the negative pre- scription does not per se—without the operation of the positive— establish a right to heritable property (Erskine, Znst., b. iii. tit. 7, § 8). Thus, as has been observed, "If A has possessed for a hundred years but was not infeft, any competitor who has neglected his right for that time may completely establish it, if his right was better than A's" (yer Lord Corehouse, in Cubbison v. Hyslop, 183, 16 Shaw's Reports, p. 112). Soa right of patronage has been held incapable of being lost by the negative prescription ; but, on the other hand, it is settled that servitudes and public rights of way may be so extinguished. As regards the character of the pre- scription, it is requisite, in the same way as in the case of the positive, that the years shall have run continuously and without interruption, z.e., without any act done on the part of the creditor which indicates his intention to keep alive the right. Such inter- ruption may, for instance, take place by the payment of interest on the debt, or citation of the debtor in an action for the debt, or by a claim heing lodged in the debtor's sequestration. In the same*~~

~~*Way as in the positive, the currency of the negative prescription is suspended by the debtor being minor or non valens agere.*~~

~~*3. Shorter Prescriptions.—There are certain short prescriptions recognized by Scotch law—corresponding to the limitations of*~~

~~*PRE—PR HE*~~

~~*English law—which operate not as extinguishing rights but as _ excluding the ordinary means of proving them. The following require to be noticed. (a) Vicennial prescription. By the Act 1617, c. 13, a vicennial prescription of retours was introduced, and in modern practice the same prescription is applicable to an extract decree of service which has taken the plaee of a retour (31 and 32 Vict. c. 101, § 37). This prescription protects a person who has been served as heir for twenty years against action by any other person claiming to be heir. By the Act 1669, c. 9, holograph missive letters aud bonds in compt books also prescribe in twenty years. The debt, however, is not in this case extinguished, as within forty years it may be proved by the defender's oath. (b) Decennial prescription. By the Act 1669, c. 9, all actions by minors against their tutors and curators, and vice versa, must be prosecuted within ten years from the expiration of the guardian-ship (Erskine, Just., iii. 7, 25). (e) Septennial prescription. By the Act 1695, c. 5, it is provided that no person binding himself for and with another, conjunctly and severally, in any bond or contract for sums of money shall be bound for more than seven years after the date of the obligation. But it is necessary that the cautioner either be bound expressly as such in the bond, &c., or, if bound as co-principal, that there be either a clause of relief in the bond or in a separate baek bond duly intimated (7.e., notarially or in some formal way) to the creditor. This prescription does not apply to guarantees for the fulfilment of an office, or to security for a bill of exchange, or to judicial bonds. (d) Sexennial prescription. This prescription applies to bills and promissory notes, so as to deprive them of their privileges. After the lapse of six years the holder of the bill or note can no longer found on it except as an adminicle of evidence to prove his debt. This pre- scription was first introduced by 12 Geo. III. c«. 72. (¢) Quin- quennial prescription applies to bargains concerning movables, such as sales of goods, loans, deposits, &c.—in short, to all mercantile transactions except such as pass*~~

~~*into current accounts and fall under the triennial prescription noticed below. By the Act 1669, c. 9, such bargains prescribe in five years, and can thereafter only be proved by the debtor's writ oroath. The same statute also made ministers' stipends, multures, and maills and duties prescribe in five years unless proved by writ or oath. (f) Triennial prescription. This valuable prescription was introduced so far back as the year 1579. By the Act 1579, c. 83, it was provided that "actions of debt for house maills, men's ordinaries, servants' fees, merchants' accounts, and others the like debts not founded on written obligations " shall prescribe in three years. Under the terms "like debts" have been held to fall such debts as workmen's wages, law agents' accounts, and rents due on verbal lease. All such debts must be pursued within three years, otherwise they cannot be proved execpt by the writ or oath of the party sued. The period from which this pre- scription begins to run is the date of the last item in the account. With regard to all the minor prescriptions it is to be observed generally that the respective periods of time must have run without interruption, and that, except when the contrary is expressed in the Act constituting the prescription, the years of minority and non valentia agere are not taken into account. (H. GO.)*~~

~~*PRESERVED- FOOD. 'The perfect preservation of any substance for use as food implies the retention of its full nutritive power, sapidity, and digestibility, with its natural odour and colour unimpaired, for such length of time as may be required. The process employed must be sufficiently cheap to allow of the preserved food being placed in the market at a price which will insure a demand for it. The operations connected with the preparation of many food-substances are partly directed to the produc- tion of food in a new and more convenient form from that in which it is yielded by nature, and partly with the view of preserving the alimentary body. Cheese is an example of such a food-preparation, and to a smaller extent so also are butter and other edible fats and oils, as well as fruit and vegetable jellies and conserves. Con- centrated foods and extracts, such as Liebig's extract of beef, belong to the same category, consisting of certain essential principles of animal food easily preserved, and prepared partly on that account.*~~

Many of the most important food-staples require nothing more than favourable natural conditions for their preser- vation, till they are ordinarily required for consumption. Such is the case with the cereal grains, which are suffi- ciently ripened and dried in the harvest field, and with all hard farinaceous and oleaginous seeds, nuts, and fruits. Most soft succulent fruits and vegetables, on the other

hand, and all varieties of animal food require artificial preservation, and it is to these that the various processes in use are applied. These processes resolve themselves into four groups,—(1) drying, (2) use of antiseptics, (3) exclusion of air, and (4) refrigeration. Several hundreds of patents have been obtained in the United Kingdom alone for preservative processes coming under one or more of these heads; but in reality the methods of preservation in practical operation are not many.

1. Drying is the most ancient and primitive of all processes for preserving food, and, although it answers but imperfectly for most animal substances, yet in dry hot countries it is very extensively practised. In the River Plate regions of South America a large quantity of beef is annually prepared for export to Brazil and the West Indies under the name of "tasajo" or '"'charqui dulce," principally by drying. The meat is simply cut into pieces, freed from fat, bone, and tendon, powdered with maize meal, and dried hard by exposure to the sun, care being taken to keep it protected from rain. The dried product has about one-fourth the weight of fresh meat, and is of a dark colour. It requires to be soaked in water and cooked for a long time, yielding at best a tough indigestible meat ; but it makes a well-flavoured nutritive soup. The greater part of the charqui or jerked beef of South America is, however, slightly salted as well as sun-dried ; and among many races where drying is practised the use of salt and smoking are also appreciated. Many attempts have been made to introduce dried meat in the form of powder or meal. For this purpose fresh meat, deprived of fat, is cut into thin slices and slowly dried at a low heat in an oven or heated chamber till the meat is hard, crisp, and dry. When powdered, such a preparation keeps well if it is not exposed to damp; but it cannot be said to offer any advantages for general use, although it might be of value to an army during

~~*a campaign. Nevertheless a company, under the name of the Carne Pura Company, has been established in Berlin within the last few years for the manufacture of such med&t-powder. Of an ana- logous nature are the concentrated soup tablets or cakes, prepared, principally in Russia, by the rapid evaporation of rich soups, with which dried vegetables and flour are sometimes incorporated in proportion sufficient to yield a good soup on dilution with boiling water. These soups are generally deficient in aroma and have frequently an unpleasant gluey consistency and taste. Concentrated meat biscuits, in which flour and extract of beef are prepared in a thoroughly dry condition, and which were largely used in the American Civil War, the German pea sausage ("Erbsenwurst"), made famous during the Franco-Prussian War, and pemmican are examples of food in which dried meat may be well preserved in conjunction with farinaceous substances. Preservation by simple dry- ing is extensively practised among the Chinese for their gelatinous foods, such as trepang, dried tendons, skins, mussels and other molluscs, and fish. Milk also may be preserved in the form of a dry powder, but the result is not sufficiently attractive to command a market.*~~

~~*Succulent fruits and vegetables 'are satisfactorily pre- served by simple drying. The principal dried saccharine fruits of commerce are raisins, currants, figs, dates, and prunes. 'These differ in their nutritive properties con- siderably from the natural fruits they represent, as do also the farinaceous fruits and vegetables preserved by drying, such as the banana, bread-fruit, mandioc, &c. A process of drying and compressing ordinary pot-vegetables and potatoes, invented by M. Masson about 1845, is now carried out on a large scale by Messrs Chollet & Co. of Paris. The vegetables to be treated are carefully picked, plunged into boiling water to coagulate the vegetable al-*~~

~~*bumen, shred, and promptly dried in a current of heated air. They are then submitted to powerful hydraulic pres- sure, condensing them into thin dense cakes, which retain from 9 to 15 per cent. of the weight of the original green substances, or 20 per cent. of the weight in the case of potatoes, but all in greatly reduced compass. The saving of space is, equally with the*~~

~~*preservation, of the utmost importance for use on board ship or by soldiers in the field. Within the space of a cubic metre 25,000 rations of Chollet's compressed vegetables can be packed, each ration weighing 25 grammes and representing about 200 grammes of green vegetables. As anti-scorbutics such preserved vegetables are inferior; but they are neverthe-less exceedingly useful, and when well cooked almost equal in taste to the fresh vegetables.*~~

~~*2. Use of Antiseptics.—The variety of antiseptic sub- stances which have been experimented with for the curing of food is numberless. Bodies solid, liquid, and gaseous have been proposed, and these have been variously recom- mended for superficial application, for injection, and for forming an artificial atmosphere around the substance to be preserved ; and further, it has been suggested that the creature whose flesh is to be preserved should, before killing, be impregnated with the antiseptic by inhalation or otherwise. In practice the antiseptics used are very few in number, since many of them have a physiological effect on the digestive and other internal organs into which they are introduced with the food, and so must injure the health. Besides, many proposed antiseptics are either in themselves unpleasant in smell or taste, or alter the appearance, colour, taste, or consistency of the food preserved. The least objectionable are substances which enter into human food themselves, such as certain salts, sugar, vinegar, and alcohol. The most ancient, most com- monly used, and throughout most effective is common salt. Salt acts on meat by withdrawing the animal juices, the place of which it takes, and by hardening the muscular tissue. Consequently it seriously lessens the nutritive value of animal food, and renders it much less digestible than fresh meat. It appears to be least injurious in the case of pork, the fat of which it renders more digestible, and, as a consequence, no animal food is more largely pre-served by the process of salting. A certain proportion of other saline bodies, notably saltpetre (nitrate of potash), and of sugar is frequently combined with salt in curing, and so also are other antiseptic and preservative agencies. Bacon, for example, is both salted and smoked, while tongues and fish are not only salted and smoked but also dried. Smoking alone is very effective in preserving and flavouring fish intended for consumption within a limited time after curing. The quantity of fish prepared for human food by salting, smoking, and drying, together or separately, is incalculably great.*~~

~~*Of other antiseptics which have been suggested, and which may be used effectively for the pre- servation of food, few possess any advantage whatever over common salt, which is certain in its action, abundant, cheap, and, within limits, harmless. Among the substances which have of recent years come into prominent notice are bisulphite of lime and various preparations of boracic acid, notably that known as "glacialin" salt and the boro-glycerin introduced by Professor Barff. Boracic acid 1s a powerful, inodorous, and tasteless preservative ; but in repeated small doses it exercises a specific influence on the excretory organs which must be detrimental to health. Salicylic acid has also been extensively tried as a food- preserver, more especially for milk, but, in addition to the unpleasant taste it communicates to the substances, there are physiological objections to its use,*~~

~~*The use of non-saline preservative agents is exemplified on a large scale in the pickling in vinegar of succulent fruits*~~

~~*PRESERVED FO'; D*~~

~~*and vegetables (see Picxies, p. 80 above). Sugar plays a similar part in the preparation of jams, jellies, candied fruits, &c., and alcohol is also occasionally employed as a medium for the preservation of fruits. Oil acts as a preservative more by its power of excluding atmospheric air than from any antiseptic influence it possesses, and therefore comes under the next category.*~~

~~*3. Exclusion of Atr.—The principal method of food preservation dependent on the exclusion of air is the invention of Francois Appert and dates from 1809. It consists essentially in securing cooked food in hermetic- ally sealed vessels from which the atmospheric air is as far as possible driven off before sealing, and in killing by heat or otherwise such germs or ferments as may remain within the vessel either before or after it is sealed up. The process does not depend for its success on the perfect exclusion of air,—indeed, originally there was no attempt to drive it off, but air sealed up with the food was im- mediately submitted to a temperature sufficiently high to kill all germs introduced with it and existing in the food itself. Quite recently experiments have been conducted by Mr J. J. Coleman, the inventor of the cold-air process described below, with the view of*~~

~~*preserving food in her- metically sealed vessels, which, instead of being exposed to heat, are subjected to an intense cold, supposed to be sufficient to kill all minute putrefactive organisms ; but he has found that a cold of 130° Fahr. below freezing-point is insufficient to destroy all organic germs. At present the innumerable varieties of tinned foods, both animal and vegetable, are entirely the result of the application of Appert's principle. In practice there are several processes of ' "tinning" food, but the general method adopted is everywhere uniform in principle.*~~

~~*The tins used are manufactured with the greatest care, and most ingenious machinery has been devised for their thorough and ex- peditious preparation. The proper quantity of meat, generally, though not necessarily, free from bone, tendon, and undue propor- tion of fat, is weighed out and placed raw in the tin, over which the cover is soldered. In the cover a small " pin-hole"' is left, and the tins are placed in a bath or boiler of solution of chloride of calcium, which boils at a temperature of from 260° to 270° Fahr. Each tin is immersed to within an inch or two of the top, and as the heat is gradually raised steam issues from the pin-hole, carrying off the atmospheric air from within the tin. When all the air has been expelled the pin-hole is promptly closed with a drop of solder, and the tin, hermetically sealed, is entirely immersed for some time in the superheated solution. When withdrawn and cooled, the tins are placed in a heated testing-house, in which after a few days those that have been imperfectly treated manifest their defects by a bulging of the sides, due to the generation of gases from the putrefying mass they contain. Those which have been successfully preserved generally show both ends collapsed or depressed by the pressure of the air outside; and usually on a well-preserved tin being pierced the air is audibly sucked in.*~~

~~*The process is applicable to all classes of food, vegetable as well as animal, which may without destruction be sub- mitted to a temperature sufficient to render putrefactive organisms inert, and in experience the amount of heat to which different substances must be exposed varies very con- siderably. The variety of substances preserved by tinning is now very great, and the total weight of human food so stored is enormous. Numerous modifications of the air- exclusion principle, effectual within certain limits, are in use. The preservation of sardines is due partly to cooking them in oil and*~~

~~*surrounding them with it and partly to sealing them in tins, and potted meats, the "conserves fines" of the French, are partly preserved by the use of fat. The most effective means of preserving eggs consists in coating the shells, as soon as they are laid, with butter or some other fat, gum, or varnish. Such coating prevents the transfusion of water from the egg which ordinarily goes on, the place of the water being taken by atmospheric air, rendering the egg specifically lighter and promoting its putrefactive change. Processes for the exclusion of air*~~

~~*by the substitution of an atmosphere of some inert gas have not proved successful, neither has the method pro- posed and patented by Dr Redwood, which consisted in coating meat with a layer of paraffin.*~~

~~*4. Refrigeration.—That cold checks putrefaction has long been known from ordinary experience. Bodies of the prehistoric mammoth have been found in the ice of the Siberian tundra so well preserved that the flesh was eaten by dogs. Ice is much used by fish merchants and other provision dealers for the temporary preservation of their perishable stores ; but the cost and inconvenience of the process in temperate, and still more in hot, climates render it applicable only for brief spaces of time and to the more costly of food-products. But about the year 1875 ice began to be used on a large scale for the preservation of fresh meat during its transit from America to the European markets. This, the first practically successful method of preserving fresh meat for such a period as enabled it to be sold in remote markets, consisted in cooling a large meat chamber hung full of carcases by continually blowing into it air which had previously been cooled to near the freezing point by being made to pass through reservoirs of ice. The process was not all that could be desired, but it successfully solved a question which had previously been attempted many times and ways. It continued to be the method by which large quantities of fresh meat were brought in good condition to the European market, till in 1879 Mr J. J. Coleman inaugurated a new era by the introduction, in conjunction with Mr H. Bell and Mr J. Bell, of his Bell-Coleman dry- air refrigerator.*~~

~~*In the Bell-Coleman machine atmospheric air is compressed to one-fourth or one-third of its normal bulk in an air-pump by means of a steam cylinder.*~~

~~*The air so condensed becomes hot, and is cooled by injecting water into the air-compressor, after which it is still further reduced in temperature and freed from moisture by passing it through a range of pipes in the cold air of the chamber that is being refrigerated. Being then conveyed to the expanding cylinder, the work or energy it contains in virtue of its compression is expended in moving a piston which forms part of the machinery. From the piston the air, now cooled as much as 50° to 100°, or even 200° Fahr., according to the degree of com- pression to which it has been subjected, is distributed through the cold chamber by suitable pipes. Mr A. Seale Haslam has since brought out a refrigerator in which the temperature of the air is lowered by passing it through pipes cooled externally, instead of by injecting water into the tubes containing it.*~~

~~*Numerous other machines have also been produced, the principle and action of which are illustrated in the article Icx, vol. xii. p. 612. By means first of the Bell-Coleman and subsequently of the Haslam method, fresh meat has been regularly imported into Europe from America since March 1879, when the Anchor liner "Circassia" delivered the first cargo. In February 1880 the first shipment from Australia, consisting of 34 tons of beef and mutton, was delivered in London by the "'Strathleven," and in June 1882 the sailing ship "' Dunedin" brought from New Zea- land to London, after a passage of ninety-eight days, 4909 carcases of sheep and twenty-two pigs, all in perfect con- dition, notwithstanding the prolonged voyage and the ex- cessive heat encountered during the passage. The dry-air refrigerators have also been largely adopted in passenger and emigrant vessels for preserving fresh provisions for daily use throughout their voyages, and preserving cham- bers and freezing chambers have been erected on land at the ports of lading and delivery. The machinery at present in use is capable of freezing upwards of 300,000 tons of meat per annum, and it is rapidly being added to ; and. it may be said that these machines have accomplished a perfect solution of the great problem of fresh-meat pre- servation and distribution.*~~

~~*Comnvrce.—lt is impossible to tabulate any reliable figures relating to the trade in products which are properly classed as*~~

preserved food. Within the first five years in which the Bell- Coleman machine was in use there were brought from America by its agency alone 563,568 quarters of beef and 113,633 carcases of mutton. The following figures illustrate the development of the frozen-mutton trade from the great sheep-growing localities, giving the number of carcases imported.

1881. 1882. 1883. 1884.

New Zealand …..... ™ 8,840 98,754 398,859 'Australia …. ⁺ ..... — 18,771 55,087 60,717 107,437 River Plate ……..... — _ = 54,369

As these imports bear only an insignificant relation to the supplies which might be drawn from the several countries at the present moment, it is obvious that a most important factor has been intro- duced into the meat trade which will exercise a powerful influence on the markets. (J. PA.)

PRESSBURG (Hung. Pozsony, Lat. Posoniwm), capital of the county of the same name and in former times also of the country, is a royal free town in Hungary, situated on the left bank of the Danube, in 48° 8' N. lat. and 17° 6' E. long. Pressburg is the see of an evangelical bishop, and the headquarters of one of the fifteen army-corps of the Austrian-Hungarian army and of a honved district ; its civil departments include finance, posts, land-survey- ing, state forestry, public instruction, river regulation, and Government buildings; it has also a district court of justice, a superior law court, and a chamber of trade and commerce. Among its numerous educational and benevolent institu- tions the following are specially worthy of mention—the academy of jurisprudence and philosophy, a Roman Catholic upper gymnasium, an evangelical lyceum, an evangelical seminary, an upper real school, a Government training school for governesses and another of midwifery, schools of music and drawing, two free libraries, a lazaretto, a lunatic asylum, six hospitals, two workhouses, two public kitchens, &c. The most prominent buildings are—a fine cathedral, dating from the 11th century (in which many of the Hungarian kings were crowned), twelve other Roman Catholic churches, two evangelical churches, two syna- gogues, the ancient town-hall, the parliament house (which served for this purpose until 1848), the now uninhabited palace of the archbishop of Esztergom (Gran), a number of palaces of nobles, and the theatre. On the Schlossberg there stood a royal

~~*castle (destroyed by fire in 1811), which was a strong fortress during the wars with the Turks. The inhabitants in 1881 numbered 48,326, of whom 8000 were Protestants, 5000 Jews, and the rest Roman Catholics; as to nationality, 30,000 were Germans, 9000 Slavs, and the rest (chiefly the upper classes) Hungarians. The inhabited houses numbered 2015. The town has five newspapers (three in Hungarian and two in German). A large business is carried on in tobacco and cigars, paper, ribbons, leather wares, chemicals, liqueurs, confectionery, biscuits, &c. There is also a good trade in corn and wine. The Danube, here of considerable width, is crossed by a pontoon bridge. There is a large traffic by water with both Vienna and Budapest. Pressburg is the terminus of the Vale of Vag Railway and is also one of the most important stations on the Austrian-Hungarian State Railway system. Although one of the finest towns in the country, its chief charm is its vicinity, which is of singular beauty. Eastwards and southwards stretches a long fertile plain, whilst to the north and west the town is enclosed by the lovely hills of the Little Carpathian range.*~~

~~*Little is known of the early history of Pressburg. The name does not occur before the 9th century. In 1042 it was destroyed by the Germans, but was soon afterwards rebuilt and so strongly fortified that it sustained two other attacks and was not taken again until 1271. From its strategic situation it has always been an import- ant place. When in 1541 Buda was taken by the Turks, Pressburg became the Hungarian capital, place of coronation, and seat of all the Government offices, and it remained so a good while after the Turks were driven from the country. It was here that the Austrian*~~

~~*and Hungarian malcontents concluded the treaty with Archduke Matthias against Rudolf II. In 1619 Pressburg was taken by the Protestant leader Bethlen Gabor; but it was recovered by the im- perialists in 1621. It was also the scene of that memorable session of parliament, 1687, at which the Hungarians renounced their right of choosing their king and accepted the hereditary succession. In 1784 the capital was removed to Buda. Peace was made here be- tween Napoleon and Francis I. after the battle of Austerlitz, 26th December 1805, and in 1809 Davoust bombarded the place for a*~~

~~*whole month. It continued to be the seat of parliament until 1848, and it was the scene of the great reform debates during the session*~~

~~*of 1847-48.*~~

~~*PRESS LAWS. 'The liberty of the press has always been regarded by modern political writers as a matter of supreme importance. " Give me liberty to know, to utter, and to argue freely according to conscience, above all other liberties," says Milton in the Areopagitica, At the present day the liberty of the press in English-speaking countries is (with perhaps the single exception of Treland) a matter of merely historical importance. The liberty was a plant of slow growth. Before the invention of printing the church assumed to control the expression of all opinion distasteful to her. (See BrsrioGRaPHy, vol. ii. pp. 658, 659, INDEX Lisrorum Prouiprrorum, Inquisirion.) The authority of parliament was invoked in England to aid the ecclesi- astical authority. There is an ordinance as early as 1382, 5 Ric. II. st. 2, c. 5 (not assented to by the Commons, but appearing upon the parliament roll), directed against unlicensed preachers. After the invention of printing the ecclesiastical censorship was still asserted, but only as col- lateral with the censorial rights of the crown, claimed by virtue of its general prerogative. After the Reformation the greater part of the rights of censorship passed to the crown, which at the same time assumed the power of grant- ing by letters patent the right of printing or selling books as amonopoly. The grant, if made to the author himself, was an equivalent of copyright ; if made to a person other than the author, it seems to have always been subject to the author's copyright as it existed at common law.*~~

~~*Censorship was either restrictive or corrective, 7.¢., it interfered to restrict or prevent publication, or it enforced penalties after publication. Repression of free discussion was regarded as so necessary a part of government that Sir Thomas More in his Utopia makes it punishable with death for a private individual to criticize the conduct of the ruling power. Under Mary printing was confined to members of the Stationers' Company, founded by royal charter in 1556. Under Elizabeth the Star Chamber, the great censorial authority of the Tudor period, assumed the right to confine printing to London, Oxford, and Cam- bridge, to limit the number of printers and presses, to prohibit all publications issued without proper licence, and to*~~

~~*enter houses to search for unlicensed presses and publications (Order of 1585, Strype's Whitgift, App. 94). The search for unlicensed presses or publications was entrusted to an officer called the "messenger of the press." The Stuart kings followed the example of their predecessors. Thus in 1637 was issued a stringent order of the Star Chamber forbidding the importation of books printed abroad to the scandal of religion or the church or the Government, and the printing of any book not first lawfully licensed. Law books were to be licensed by one of the chief justices or the chief baron, books of history and state affairs by one of the secretaries of state, of heraldry by the earl marshal, of divinity, philosophy, poetry, and other subjects by the archbishop of Canterbury or the bishop of London, or the chancellors or vice-chan- cellors of the universities. . There were to be only twenty Inaster printers and four letter-founders. The punishment was at the discretion of the court (Rushworth, Historical Collections, vol. ui, App. 306). The same principle of press restriction was carried out by the Long Parliament*~~

~~*PRE—PRHE*~~

~~*after the abolition of the Star Chamber, and it was an ordi- nance of that body issued in 1643 that called forth Milton's Areopagitica, a Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing, itself an unlicensed book. The parliament appointed committees for printing, who appointed licensers, but the licensing was really left in a great measure to the wardens of the Stationers' Company. At the Restoration Sir John Birkenhead acted as licenser, appointed apparently under the general prerogative. It was, no doubt, too, under the general prerogative that Charles IL, by a proclamation in 1660, called in and suppressed Milton's Defensio pro Populo Anglicano. Then followed the Licensing Act of 1662 (13 and 14 Car. II. c. 33), limited to two years, The provisions as to importation of books, the appointment of licensers, and the number of printers and founders were practically re-enactments of the similar provisions in the Star Chamber order of 1637. Printing presses were not to be set up without notice to the Stationers' Company. A king's messenger had power by warrant of the king or a secretary of state to enter and search for unlicensed presses and printing. Severe penalties by fine and imprisonment were denounced against offenders. The Act was success- ively renewed up to 1679. Under*~~

~~*the powers of the Act Sir Roger L'Estrange was appointed licenser, and the effect of the supervision was that practically the newspaper press was reduced to the London Gazette. (See NEWSPAPERS, vol. xvii. pp. 414,415.) The objections made to lines 594- 599 of the first book of Paradise Lost by the archbishop of Canterbury's chaplain, acting as licenser, are well known. The Act expired in 1679, and for the remainder of the reign of Charles IL, as in the reign of George III., the restrictions on the press took the form of prosecutions for libel. The twelve judges resolved in 1680 "that all persons that do write or print or sell any pamphlet that is either scandalous to public or private persons, such books may be seized and-the person punished by law ; that all books which are scandalous to the Government may be seized, and all persons so exposing them may be punished. And further, that all writers of news, though not scan- dalous, seditious, nor reflective upon the Government or the state, yet, if they are writers (as there are few else) of false news, they are indictable and punishable upon that account" (Harris's case, State Trials, vii. 929). In 1685 the Licensing Act was renewed for seven years (1 Jae. II. c. 8, § 15). "No mention of the liberty of the press was made in the Bill of Rights. On the expiration of the Licensing Act in 1692 it was continued till the end of the existing session of parliament (4 and 5 Will. and Mary, c. 24,§ 14). In 1695 the Commons refused to renew it. The immediate effect of this was to lay authors open to the attacks of literary piracy, and in 1709 the first Copyright Act (8 Anne, c. 19) was enacted for their protection. The power of a secretary of state to issue a warrant, whether general or special, for the purpose of searching for and seizing the author of a libel or the libellous papers them- selves—a power exercised by the Star Chamber and con- firmed by the Licensing Act —was still asserted, and was not finally declared illegal until the case of Entick v. Car- rington in 1765 (State Trials, xix. 1030). In 1776 the House of Commons came to a resolution in accordance with this decision. The compulsory stamp duty on news- papers was abandoned in 1855 (18 Vict. c. 27), the duty on paper in 1861 (24 Vict. c. 20), the optional duty on newspapers in 1870 (33 and 34 Vict. c. 38). From that time the English press may be said to date its complete freedom, which rests rather upon a constitutional than a legal foundation. It is not confirmed by any provision of the supreme legislative authority, as is the case in many countries. A declaration in favour of the liberty of the press is usually a prominent feature in the written*~~

~~*Pats > LAWS*~~

~~*constitutions of foreign states. Its legal aspect in England cannot be better expressed than in the words of Lord Wynford :— .*~~

~~*"My opinion of the liberty of the press is that every man ought to be permitted to instruct his fellow-subjects ; that every man nay fearlessly advance any new doctrines, provided he docs so with proper respect to the religion! and government of the country; that he may point out errors in tle measures of public men, but he must not impute criminal conduct to them. 'The liberty of the press cannot be carried to this extent without violating another equally sacred right, the right of character. This right can only be attacked in a court of justice, where the party attacked has a fair opportunity of defending himself. Where vituperation begins, the liberty of the . ends" (Rex v. Burdett, Barnewall and Alderson's Reports, iv. 182).*~~

~~*The few existing restrictions on the liberty of the press are presumed to be imposed for the public benefit. They are in some cases of great historical interest. The rights of private persons are in general sufficiently protected in one direction by the law of Lipen (¢.v.), in another by the law of Copyricut (9.v.), while the criminal law provides for the cases of press offences against morality, public justice, &c. Thus the courts have power to punish sum- marily as a contempt the publication of comments upon proceedings sub judice or reflexions upon the conduct of judicial officers. (See Contempt or Court.) The last relic of the censorship before publication is to be found in the licensing of stage plays. By 6 and 7 Vict. c. 68 no new plays or additions to old plays can be acted for hire at any theatre in Great Britain until they have been sub- mitted to the lord chamberlain, who may forbid any play or any part of a play. The penalty for acting a play before it has been allowed or after it has been disallowed is a sum not exceeding £50 for every offence and the for- feiture of the licence of the theatre in which the offence occurred. This jurisdiction is exercised by an official of the lord chamberlain's department called the 'examiner of stage plays." The last relic of the monopoly of print ing formerly granted to licensees of the crown is found in the exclusive right of the queen's printer and the univer- sities of Oxford and Cambridge to print the Bible? and the Book of Common Prayer, and of the queen's printer to print Acts of parliament and other state*~~

~~*documents. The privileges of the universities are confirmed by 13 Eliz. c. 29. The rights of the queen's printer are protected by severe penalties. A maximum term of seven years' penal servitude is incurred by any person who prints any Act of parliament or other Government document, falsely pur- porting to be printed by the queen's printer or under the authority of Her Majesty's stationery office (8 and 9 Vict. ce. 113; 45 Vict. c. 9). The rights of the printers of the journals of either House of parliament are protected by 8 and 9 Vict. c. 113. The publication of parliamentary debates in any form by any other persons than the printers of the journals of the two Houses is still in theory a breach of privilege, but in practice they have been fully reported since 1771. The other restrictions upon the press are to a great extent those imposed for police purposes. By 32 and 33 Vict. c. 24 (confirming in part previous enactments applying to Great Britain) the printer of any paper or book for profit is required under penalties to print thereon his name and address or the name of a university press, and is to keep a copy of everything printed, with a few exceptions. Penalties must be sued for within three months, and no proceeding for penalties can be commenced*~~

~~*1 This is to be read subject to the remark of Lord Coleridge that the application of the principles of law is to be changed with the changing circumstances of the time (Reg. v. Ramsay, in Cox's Criminal Cases, xv. 235). What was blasphemous in law a hundred years ago is not necessarily so now.*~~

~~*2 The monopoly of the queen's printer does not extend to any trans- lation other than the authorized version, and not to that if it be accompanied by new notes or marginal readings.*~~

~~*lil*~~

~~*unless in the name of the attorney-general or solicitor- general of England or the lord advocate of Scotland. By the Newspaper Libel and Registration Act, 1881 (44 and 45 Vict. c. 60, which applies to England and Ireland, but not to Scotland), newspaper proprietors are, except in the case of joint-stock companies, to be registered and to make annual returns of the title of the newspaper and the names of all the proprietors, with their occupations, places of business, and places of residence. By the Corrupt Practices*~~

~~*Prevention Acts, 1883 and 1884 (46 and 47 Vict. c. 51, s. 18, and 47 and 48 Vict. c. 70, s. 14), the name and address of the printer must be printed on all bills, placards, &c., referring to a parliamentary or muni- cipal election. By 6 and 7 Vict. c. 68, s. 7, the name and place of abode of a manager of a theatre are to be printed on every play-bill announcing a representation at such theatre. Offences against decency by the press are provided for by 20 and 21 Vict. c. 83, 25 and 26 Vict. cc. 101, s. 251 (for Scotland), and 2 and 3 Vict. c. 47, s. 54 (for the metropolis). The importation of obscene literature into the United Kingdom is forbidden by 39 and 40 Vict. c. 36, s. 42. By the Larceny Act, 1861, any person who prints or publishes an advertisement offering a reward for the return of stolen goods with- out questions asked is subject to a penalty (24 and 25 Vict. c. 96, s. 102). This penalty cannot, however, be sued for without the sanction of the attorney-general or solicitor-general of England or Ireland (33 and 34 Vict. cc. 65). The advertisement in the United Kingdom of foreign or illegal lotteries is prohibited by 6 and 7 Will. IV. c. 66, betting advertisements by 16 and 17 Vict. ¢. Ae 1, "amd 31 Vaet.¢. 85…*~~

~~*The right of an author or publisher to the full profits of his undertaking was at one time restricted by the Copy- right Act of Anne (8 Anne, c. 19, s. 4), by which the arch- bishop of Canterbury and other authorities were empowered to lower the price of a book upon complaint that the price was unreasonable. The only restriction of the kind now existing is the obligation of delivering (without request) to the British Museum a copy of any work published within the United Kingdom, and of delivering (on request) copies for the use of the university libraries at Oxford and Cambridge, the library of the faculty of advocates at Edinburgh, and the library of Trinity College, Dublin (5 and 6 Vict. c. 45, ss. 6-10).*~~

~~*Scotland.—Printing became, as in England, a royal monopoly. The exclusive right of printing was granted by James IV. to Walter Chepman, who printed the first book in Scotland. The monopoly of printing Acts of the Scottish parliament was granted by James V. to the printer chosen by the clerk register and specially licensed by the king (1540, c. 127). Printers are forbidden by 1551, c. 27, to print, whether in Latin or English, without licence from ordinaries deputed in that behalf by the crown. No book treating of religion or of the kirk was to be printed without a licence from*~~

~~*the general assembly (1646, c. 164), or of the kingdom without a licence from one of the judges or the secretary (c. 165). The council were empowered to prohibit presses at their discretion by the order of 30th March 1655. The importation of "famous" books and libels in defence of the pope was prohibited by 1581, c. 106. Press offences were treated with the utmost severity. By 1585, c. 1, the author of a libellous writing against the king was punishable with death. It is scarcely neces- sary to say that since the Union the press of Scotland has enjoyed no less liberty than that of England.*~~

~~*In the case of Bibles, Old and New Testaments, Psalm Books, the Book of Common Prayer, the Confession of Faith, and the Larger and Shorter Catechisms a licence for printing is still required. The licensing authority is*~~

~~*the lord advocate, but all proposed publications are sub- mitted for approval to the body officially known as i Her Majesty's sole and only Master Printers in Scotland," con- sisting of the lord advocate, the solicitor-general, the moderator of the general assembly, and four other mem- bers, A licence is also required for printing Acts of parlia- ment ; but a general licence granted in 1848 to a firm of printers in Edinburgh is still operative, and their publi- cations are not submitted for approval. As its work is practically confined to Bibles and the other religious publi- cations enumerated, the above-mentioned body commonly receives the name of the Bible Board.*~~

~~*Treland.—This is the only part of the United Kingdom in which the press cannot be said to be free. The policy of successive Governments has generally been in favour of restrictions. By the Prevention of Crime Act, 1882 (45 and 46 Vict. c. 25), the lord-lieutenant was empowered to order the seizure of any newspaper appearing to contain matter inciting to the commission of treason or of any act of violence or intimidation (§ 13). He may also by war- rant direct the search for and seizure of any papers or documents suspected to be used or to be intended to be used for the purpose of or in connexion with any secret society existing for criminal purposes (§ 14).*~~

~~*United States.*~~

~~*The constitutions of Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, and North Carolina, all enacted in 1776, are interesting as containing the earliest declarations of any legislative authority in favour of the liberty of the press. The same principle was afterwards adopted in the constitution of the United States. By art. i. of the amended constitution, "Congress shall make nolaw . . . abridging the freedom of speech or of the press." Art. iv. secures against warrants for the seizure of papers, except on probable cause supported by oath or affirmation and particularly describing the thing to be seized. The constitution of Louisiana is that in which the right of liberty of the press is declared with the greatest minuteness. By art. vi. s. 21 of the constitution of that State, " Printing presses shall be free to every person who undertakes to examine the proceedings of the legislature or any branch of the government, and no law shall ever be made to restrain the right thereof. The free communication of thoughts and opinions is one of. the invaluable rights of man, and every citizen may freely speak, write, and print on any subject, being responsible for the abuse of that liberty." The Acts of Congress dealing with the press are not numerous, as each State has for the most part its own legislation on the subject, dealing generally with, among other matters, the registration of newspapers, the monopoly of the State printer, and the right of giving the truth in evidence in defence to proceedings for libel. The Act of 18th August 1856 forbids diplomatic or consular officers of the United States to correspond with any foreign news-paper in regard to the affairs of a foreign state. The Act of 3d March 1873 prohibits the printing and circulation of obscene literature. By the Act of 23d June 1860 the congressional printer has, except where otherwise provided by law, the monopoly of printing for the Senate or House of Representatives and the executive and judicial depart- ments. State prosecutions for seditious libel were not infrequent in the early years of the republic; examples will be found in Wharton's State Trials.*~~

~~*Press Laws in the British Colonies and India.*~~

~~*Colonies.—In the British colonies the press is as free as it is in England. Each colony has its special legislation on the subject for police and revenue purposes. Where there is a Government printer, his monopoly is protected*~~

~~*by the Documentary Evidence Act, 1868 (31 and 82 Viet. e. 37), which imposes a maximum*~~

~~*LAWS*~~

~~*penalty of five years' penal servitude upon any person printing a copy of any proclamation, order, or regulation which falsely pur- ports to have been printed by the Government printer, or to be printed under the authority of the legislature of any British colony or possession. The Act is, however, subject to any law made by the colonial legislature.*~~

~~*India.—During the governor-generalship of Lord Lytton was passed the "Act for the better control of publications in Oriental languages," Act ix. of 1878. (1) By this Act copies of newspapers published out of British India are liable to forfeiture and seizure by warrant throughout the whole of British India if the papers "contain any words, signs, or visible representations likely to excite disaffection to the Government established by law in British India, or antipathy between any persons of different races, castes, religions, or sects in British India." The governor-general may, by noti- fication in the Gazette of India, exclude newspapers, books, &c., from British India. (2) In places to which the Act is extended by order of the governor-general in council, a magistrate may require the printer aud publisher of a newspaper to enter into a bond, with a deposit, not to publish a newspaper containing "any words, signs," &c. (as in 1), or to use or attempt to use it for the purpose of extortion or threat. The consequences of offending are forfeiture of the deposit, papers, press, &c. Books used for the illegal purposes above-mentioned are subject to forfeiture, but no bond or deposit is required previous to publication of books, as in the case of newspapers.*~~

~~*Foreign Press Laws.*~~

~~*Liberty of the press is the rule in most European states. This liberty is in almost every case secured by a constitution or organic law, the earliest being those of Sweden and Spain in 1812. In some states there is a tax upon newspapers and advertisements ; in others, as in Sweden and Norway, there is none. In most states there is a Government official newspaper, and a Government printer, enjoying peculiar privileges.*~~

~~*Austria-Hungary.—Restraints upon the press were formerly very stringent, especially in the Italian provinces. Severe penalties against unlicensed printing were denounced by the penal code of 1808. Fora second offence the offender was forbidden to deal in books. Private printing presses were forbidden under a fine of 500 florins. Inciting to emigration was one of the most reinarkable press offences contained in this code. Two censors of the press were appointed in 1810. Booksellers were put under police supervision in Hungary in 1847. In 1848 the press became free for a time, until a restrictive law was again imposed in 1852. Strict censorship ceased in 1863. By the fundamental law concerning the rights of citizens, 21st December 1867, art. 13, every one has the right of freely ex- pressing his thoughts by the press within the limits imposed by law. The press cannot be controlled by ceusorship, or restrained by the system of authorization. Administrative and postal inter- diction is never to extend to matters printed in the realm. By the law of the same date on judicial authority, art. 11, press offences are to be tried by jury. The constitution of 1867 (on the basis of that proposed in 1848) secures liberty of the press in Hungary.*~~

~~*Belgium.—It was the prosecution of political writers by the Dutch Government that directly led to the independence of Belgium in 1830. By the Belgian constitution of 7th February 1831, art. 18, it is declared that the press is free, that censorship shall never again be established, that sureties cannot be exacted from writers, editors, or printers, and that when the author is known and domi- ciled in Belgium the printer or bookseller cannot be prosecuted. By art. 98 press offences are to be tried by jury. The penal law of the press is contained in the decree of 20th July 1831, made perpetual in 1833. By this law it is made an offence, apart from the penal code, (1) to incite to the commission of a crime by placards or printed writings in a public meeting ; (2) to attack the obligatory force of the laws,*~~

~~*or to incite to disobedience of them ; (3) to attack the constitutional authority or inviolability of the king, the constitu- tional authority of the dynasty, or the authority and rights of the chambers. Every copy of a journal must bear the name of the printer and the indication of his domicile in Belgium. Proceedings for offences against the law must be taken in some cases within three months, in others within a year. .*~~

~~*Brazil.—By art. 179 of the constitution of 1824 every one is entitled to express his thoughts by words and writings and publish them in print without liability to censure, but he is answerable for abuses committed in the exercise of this right.*~~

~~*(In most, if not all, of the Central and South American republics liberty of the press is one of the rights secured by the constitution. Thus in Chili it is secured by the constitution of 1833, in the Argentine Republic by that of 1860.)*~~

~~*Denmark.—Press offences were at one time punished with great severity. By the code of Christian V. (1683) libel was punished with infamy and hard labour for life, and, if against a magistrate,*~~

~~*I The writer wishes to take this opportunity of acknowledging the assistance rendered him by representatives of several foreign Govern- ments.*~~

~~*PRESS*~~

~~*with death. Censorship was abolished and the press declared free by art. 86 of the constitution granted by Frederick VII. on 5th June 1849, and confirmed by Christian IX. in 1866. Art. 81 for- bids the search for or seizure of printed matter in a dwelling-house, unless after judicial proceedings.*~~

~~*France.—The Government began early to impose stringent re- strictions upon printing. An edict of Henry II. in 1559 made it punishable with death to print without authority. The university of Paris originally claimed the right of licensing new theological works, a jurisdiction vested in the crown by an ordinance of 1566. Offences against religion were severely punished by the secular authorities. Thus the parliament of Toulouse sent Vanini to*~~

~~*the stake in 1619 for the crime of publishing a heretical work. A few years later, in 1626, Cardinal Richelieu declared it a capital offence to publish a work against religion or the state. In 1723 appeared a regulation forbidding any but licensed booksellers to deal in books. Many later regulations were directed against unlicensed presses, the employment of more than a certain number of workmen, &c. At the Revolution all these restrictions were abolished, aud the assembly declared it to be the right of every citizen to print and publish his opinions. This new liberty quickly needed a cheek, which was attempted as early as 1791, but no effectual restraint was imposed until the law of 5th February 1810 established a direction of the press. The charter of Louis XVIII. in 1814 gave liberty to the press in express terms, but restrictions soon followed. In 1819 a system of suretics (cautionnements) replaced the censor- ship. The Revolution of 1830 was caused by, inter alia, one of the ordinances of St Cloud (25th July 1830) for suspension of the liberty of the press. Restrictions on the liberty were removed for the time in 1830 and 1852, only to be succeeded as usual by the press laws of 1835 and 1852. During the second empire Govern- iment prosecutions for libel were used as a powerful engine against the press. The proceedings against Montalembert in 1858 are a well-known instance. Between 1858 and 1866 many newspapers were suppressed by proclamation. With the republic: liberty of the press was completely re-established. A decree of 27th October 1870 submitted press offences to trial by jury. The law of 29th July 1881, by which the French press is now regulated, begins by asserting the liberty of the press and of bookselling. The principal limitations of this liberty are the prohibition to publish criminal proceedings before hearing in public, or lists of subscriptions for indemnifying an accused person, and the power of forbidding the entrance of foreign newspapers under certain circumstauces (see vol. xvii. p. 427). The order of responsibility for printed matter is (1) the manager or editor, (2) the author, (3) the printer, (4) the vendor or distributor. Proceedings for breaches of the law must be taken within three months. As to taxation, the decree of 5th September 1870 abolished the stamp duty upon newspapers, but it is still imposed upon public notices (afiches) other than those of public anthorities. None but the notices of public authorities may be printed on white paper.*~~

Germany.—Censorship was introduced by the diet of Spires in 1529. From that time till 1848 there were nnmerous restrictions on the liberty of the press. One of the most important was a resolution of the diet of 20th September 1819, by which newspapers were subject to licence and police supervision in each state. Liberty dates, as in Austria and Italy, from 1848. Soon after that year, however, it became necessary to establish press laws in most of the German states, as in Bavaria in 1850, Prussia and Baden in 1851. Since the establishment of the new empire eensorship has dis-appeared. By art. 74 of the constitution of the empire (1871) every one attacking the empire or its officers through the press is liable to punishment in his own state. By art. 4 the laws relat- ing to the press are under imperial and not local control. The press law of 7th May 1874 is therefore in force throughout the whole empire. At its beginning it affirms the liberty of the press. Its main provisions aré these. The name and address of the printer must appear on all printed matter. Newspapers and periodicals must in addition bear the name of some one person, domiciled in

the empire, as responsible editor, and a copy of every number must |

be deposited with the police authorities of the district in which it is published. Foreign periodicals may be exeluded by proclamation of the imperial chancellor for two years, if twice within the year they have been guilty of certain offences against the penal eode. Criminal proceedings are not to be reported while still sub judice. The order of responsibility for offences is the same as in France. Proceedings must be taken within six months. In certain cases printed matter may be seized without the order of a court. This may take place where (1) the publication does not bear the name of printer or editor, (2) military sceerets are revealed in time of war, (3) justice would be defeated by the publication not being immediately seized. A judicial tribunal is to decide at once upon the legality of the seizure. The press law is not to affect regulations made in time of war or internal disturbance. A temporary law passed in 1878 gave the police large powers in the case of socialistic publications.

I See Dalloz, Jurisprudence Générale, s.v, " Presse" ; Id., Titles Alphabétiques, 1845-77, s.v. ' Presse."*

~~*Greece.—The constitution of Epidaurus, Ist January 1822, did not specially mention, though no donbt it implied, liberty of the press. Under Otho censorship was exercised up to 1844. By the constitution of 18th March 1844 every one may publish his thoughts by means of the press, observing the laws of the state. he press is free, and censorship (Aoyoxpicia) is not permitted. Responsible editors, publishers, and printers of newspapers are not required to deposit money on the ground of surety. Publishers of newspapers must be Greek citizens, art. 10. The legislature may exclude reporters from its sittings in certain eases, art. 48. Press offences are to be tried by jury, except when they deal only with private life, art. 93.*~~

~~*Holland.—The press has been free since the existence of the present kingdom of the Netherlands, which dates from 1815. Liberty of the press is expressly secured by art. 8 of the constitu- tion of 1848. By art. 286 of the penal code seditious books and newspapers may be seized. By art. 283 of the same eode and by a royal decree of 25th January 1814 the name of the printer must appear upon newspapers. Press offences are not tried by jury.*~~

~~*Italy.—The strict licensing of the press in Italy excited the derision of Milton. In the Areopagitica he gives examples of the lieences of that period which were usually imprinted at the beginning of a book. The laws of the different states varied in severity. Tlus it was a matter of complaint against Venice by Paul V. that she allowed the publication of works censured at Rome. The power of the ehurch is seen in the fate of Bruno and Galileo. By art. 27 of the political code of Sardinia, granted by Charles Albert on 4th March 1848, and still in foree, the press is free, but abuses of the liberty are restrained by law. Bibles, catechisms, and liturgieal works must be licensed by the bishop. The present press law of Italy is contained in the law of 26th March 1848, as altered by later enactinents. Everything printed in typographical characters, or by lithography or any similar means, must indicate the place and the date of printing and the name of the printer. A copy of everything printed must be deposited with certain officials and at certain libraries. Before the publication of any newspaper or periodical, notice of the intended publication must be given at the office of the secretary of state for internal affairs. The notice must contain (1) a declaration of the legal qualification of the person intending to publish,*~~

~~*whether as proprietor or editor, (2) the nature of the publication, and (3) the name and residence of the responsible editor. Every newspaper is bound to insert gratuitously a contradiction or explanation of any charge made against a person in its columns. For contravention of these and other regulations there is a statutory penalty not exceeding 1000 lire (£40). The publication of a newspaper may be suspended until the payment of a fine. The publication of parliamentary debates is permitted. Press offences are tried by a jury of twelve. By a law of 11th May 1877 it is forbidden to publish any indication of the way in which individual judges or jurors voted in their deliberations.*~~

~~*Mexico.—A board or "junta" of censors existed during the Spanish dominion. The fundamental law of Mexico is now the constitution of 1857, as amended by subsequent additions. By art. 6 the expression of ideas cannot be the object of any judicial or administrative inquiry, unless in case of attacks on morality, public order, &c. By art. 7 the liberty of writing and publishing writings on any subject is inviolable. Censorship is abolished, and press offences are to be tried by one jury which testifies the act and another which applies the law and defines the penalty.*~~

~~*Norway.—The liberty of the press is secured by art. 100 of the constitution of 1814. No one can be punished for any writing unless he, or some one by his instigation, offend against the state, law, religion, or decency, or make infamous accusations against any one. Criticism of the Government is expressly permitted.*~~

~~*Ottoman Empire.—By art. 12 of the constitution of 23d December 1876 the press was recognized as free, subject to the limits imposed by law. Press laws had been previously enacted on 5th March 1865 and 12th March 1867.*~~

~~*Portugal.—It is stated by Braga and others that a free press existed up to the establishment of the Inquisition, and that Gil Vicente (died 1536) was the last writer who dared to express his thoughts freely. At a later period Bocage was imprisoned for writings displeasing to the authorities. Boards of censorship under the names of the "Real Mesa Censoria," or the " Mesa do Desembargo do Paco," assumed to license publications. Liberty of the press was, however, finally secured, and censorship limited, by art. 7 of the constitution granted by John VI. in 1821. By art. 8 a special tribunal was*~~

~~*constituted in both Portugal and Brazil to protect the liberty of printing. The censorship was con- fined to that exercised by the bishops over theological or dogmatic works. The debates in the legislature and proceedings in the courts of justice are not generally reported.*~~

~~*Roumania.—By the constitution of 30th June 1866, art. 5, Roumanians enjoy liberty of the press. By art. 24 the constitution guarantees to all the liberty of communicating and publishing ideas through the press, every one being liable for abuse in cases deter-*~~

~~*mined by the penal code. Press offences are to be tried by jury. Censorship is abolished, and is never to be. re-established. No previous authorization is necessary for the publication of newspapers. No sureties are to be demanded from journalists, writers, editors, or printers. The press is not to be subjected to regulation of ad- vertisements. No newspaper or publication is to be suspended or suppressed, Every author is responsible for his writings ; 1n default of the author, the manager or editor is responsible. Every news- paper must have a responsible manager in the possession of civil and political rights. : ;*~~

~~*Russia.—The position of the Russian press generally is regulated by a law of 6th April 1865. The effect of that law is to exempt from preventive censorship (if published in St Petersburg or Moscow) all newspapers, periodicals, and original works and trans- lations not exceeding a certain number of pages, and (wherever published) all Government publications, matter printed by aca- demies, universities, and scientific bodies, and maps, plans, and charts. Everything printed and published that does not fall within any of these categories must, before issue to the public, be submitted for the approval of Government censors stationed in different parts of the empire. The minister of the interior has power to dispense with the preventive censorship in the case of provincial newspapers and periodicals. In St Petersburg and Moscow the periodical press is subject to corrective censorship for infringement of the numerous restrictive regulations contained in the code, and supplemented at times by secret instructions*~~

~~*from the minister of the interior to editors and publishers. It should be observed that, apart from the code, the sustained display of a spirit hostile to the Govern- inent renders the publisher of a periodical liable to punishment. The penalties established by the law of 1865 for offences against the press regulations consist in the infliction of a series of warnings published in the Official Gazette. A first warning merely enjoins more care for the future; a second is followed by suspension for a certain period, sometimes by a prohibition to insert advertisements ; a third by suppression, and perhaps prosecution of the offending conductor. Ly imperial ukase of 2d June 1872 the jurisdiction of the judicial tribunals over press offences was practically transferred to the minister of the interior, except in the case of violation of private rights, as by libel. The law of 1865 was modified in 1874 by a regulation to the effect that all publications appearing at longer intervals than one week should be submitted to the central board of censors. This is applied to all periodicals that had been formerly published without preventive censorship. By a ukase issued in 1881 a committee of four menibers is entrusted with the decision of all matters relating to the press submitted to it by the minister of the interior. The strictest supervision is exercised over the foreign press, periodical and otherwise. None but a few privi- leged individuals, such as members of the royal family, foreign diplomatists, and editors of newspapers in the capital, may receive foreign publications free of censorship. 'The censorship consists in blackening out, and sometimes in the excision, of whole columns and sheets of publications that may be deemed pernicious. Only such periodicals as are placed on a list approved by the board of censors are allowed to be received through the post-office by non- privileged persons. Telegraphic messages to newspapers are subject to strict censorship. The Russian telegraphic press agency is entirely under official management.*~~

~~*_ Spain.—There was probably no country where restrictions on the liberty of the press were at one time more stringent than in Spain. From the first use of printing up to 1521 censorship was exercised by the crown ; after that date the Inquisition began to assume the right, and continued to do so up to its suppression in 1808. In 1558 Philip II. denounced the penalty of death against even the possessor of a book upon the Index Expurgatorius of the Inquisition. Some of the greatest names in Spanish literature were*~~

~~*sufferers : Castillejo, Mendoza, Mariana, and Quevedo incurred the displeasure of the Inquisition ; Luis Ponce de Leon was imprisoned for his translation of the Song of Solomon. 'The last Jdex appeared in 1790.1 In 1812 the constitution promulgated by the regency in the name of Ferdinand VII. provided by art. 371 that all Spaniards should have liberty to write, print, and publish their political ideas without any necessity for licence, examination, or approbation pre- vious to publication, subject to the restrictions imposed by law. Art. 13 of the constitution of 30th June 1876, promulgated on the accession of Alphonso XII., practically re-enacts this provision.*~~

~~*Sweden.—The press law of 16th July 1812 is one of the funda- mental laws of Sweden. It is an expansion of art. 86 of the con- stitution of 6th June 1809. Liberty of the press is declared to be the privilege of every Swede, subject to prosecution for libellous writing. Privileges of individuals as to publication are abolished. The title and place of publication of every newspaper or periodical must be registered, and every publication must bear the name of the printer and the place of printing. Press offences are tried by a Jury of nine, chosen respectively by the prosecutor, the prisoner. and the court. The verdict of two-thirds of the jury is final. i*~~

~~*? See Ticknor, Hist. of Span. Lit., vol. i. p. 422 sq., vol. iii. p. 366.*~~

~~*PRE—PRE*~~

~~*Switzerland.—Liberty of the press is secured by art. 45 of the constitution of 1848, re-enacted by art. 55 of the constitution of 29th May 1874. Each canton has its own laws for the repression of abuse of the liberty, subject to the approbation of the federal council. The confederation can impose penalties on libels directed against itself or its officers. (J. Wt.)*~~

~~*PRESTER JOHN. The history of Prester John is that of a phantom, taking many forms. It no doubt originally was based on some nucleus of fact, or connected itself with some such nucleus, though what that nucleus was has been much controverted and is extremely difficult to deter- mine. But the name and the figure which it suggested occupied so prominent a place in the mind of Europe for two or three centuries that a real history could*~~

~~*hardly have a stronger claim' to exposition here than this history of a will-o'-the-wisp.*~~

~~*Before Prester John, eo nomine, appears upon the scene we find the way prepared for his appearance by the pre- sentation of a kindred fable, and one which certainly en- twined itself with the legends about Prester John after his figure had lodged itself in the popular imagination of Europe. This is the story of the appearance at Rome (1122), in the pontificate of Calixtus II., of a certain Oriental ecclesiastic, whom one account styles "Jolin, the patriarch of the Indians," and another "'an archbishop of India." This ecclesiastic related the most wonderful stories of the shrine of St Thomas in India, and of the posthumous and still recurring miracles which were wrought there periodically by the body of the apostle, including the distribution of the sacramental wafer by his hand, and many other marvellous things. We cannot regard the appearance at Rome of the personage who related these marvels in presence of the pope as a mere popular fiction : it rests on two authorities apparently independent (one of them a letter from Odo of Rheims, abbot of St Remy from 1118 to 1151), for their discrepancies show that one was not copied from the other, though in the principal facts they agree.*~~

~~*Nearly a quarter of a century later Prester John appears upon the scene, in the outline, at least, of the character which long adhered to him, viz., that of a Christian con- queror and potentate of enormous power and splendour, who combined the characters of priest and king, and ruled over vast dominions in the far East. This idea was uni- versal in Europe from 'about. the middle of the 12th century to the end of the 13th or beginning of the 14th. The Asiatic story then gradually died away, but the name remained as firmly rooted as ever, and the royal presbyter was now assigned a locus in Ethiopia. Indeed, as we shall see, it is not an improbable hypothesis that from a very early date in the history of this phantom its title was assigned to the Abyssinian king, though for a time this identification was overshadowed by the prevalence of the Asiatic legend. At the bottom of the double allocation there was, no doubt, that association or confusion of Ethiopia with India which is as old as Virgil, and perhaps much older.*~~

~~*The first mention of Prester John occurs in the chronicle of Otho or Otto, bishop of Freisingen. This writer states that when at the papal court in 1145 he met with the bishop of Gabala (Jibal in Syria), who related how "not many years before one John, king and priest (rex et sacer- dos), who dwelt in the extreme Orient beyond Persia and Armenia, and was, with his people, a Christian but a Nes- torilan, had made war against the brother kings of the Persians and Medes, who were called Samiards (or Sanjards), and captured Egbatana their capital. The battle with those princes endured three days, but at last Presbyter John—for so he was wont to be styled—routed the Pe sians with immense slaughter. After this victory the aforesaid John was advancing to fight in aid of the church*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*PER OTT eR JOHN*~~

~~*at Jerusalem; but, when he arrived at the Tigris, and found no possible means of transport for his army, he turned northward, as he had heard that the river in that quarter was frozen over in winter-time. After halting on its banks for some years (per aliquot annos) in expectation of a frost he was obliged to return to his own land. This personage was said to be of the ancient race of the Magi mentioned in the gospel, to rule the same nations that they ruled, and to have such a plenitude of wealth and glory that he used none but a sceptre of solid emerald. It was as fired by the example of his ancestors (they said) that he was proposing to go to Jerusalem when thus obstructed." We cannot say how far the report of the bishop of Gabala, or other rumours of the events on which this was founded, made an impression on Europe at that time. But there can be no doubt about the impression that was made some twenty years later (c. 1165) by the wide circulation of a letter which purported to have been addressed by the poten- tate in question to the Greek emperor Manuel. This letter, professing to come from "' Presbyter Joannes, by the power and virtue of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, Lord of Lords," is filled with the most extravagant details of the greatness and splendour of the writer. He claims to be the greatest monarch under heaven, as well as a devout Christian and protector of Christians. And it was his desire to visit the Holy Sepulchre with a great host, and to subdue the enemies of the Cross. Seventy-two kings, reigning*~~

~~*over as many kingdoms, were his tributaries. HIs empire extended over the three Indies, including that Further India where lay the body of St Thomas, to the sun-rising, and back again down the slope to the ruins of Babylon and the tower of Babel. All the wild beasts and monstrous creatures commemorated in current legend were to be found in his dominions, as well as all the wild and eccentric races of men of whom strange stories were told, including those unclean nations whom Alexander Magnus walled up among the mountains of the north, and who were to come forth at the latter day,—and so were the Amazons and the Bragmans. HIs dominions contained the monstrous ants that dug gold and the fish that gave the purple; they produced all manner of precious stones aud all the famous aromatics. Within them was found the Fountain of Youth; the pebbles which give light, restore sight, and render the possessor invisible ; the Sea of Sand was there, stored with fish of wondrous savour ; and the River of Stones was there also ; besides a subterranean stream whose sands were of gems. HIs territory produced the worm called "salamander," which lived in fire, and which wrought itself an incombustible envelope from which were manufactured robes for the presbyter, which were washed in flaming fire. When the king went forth to war thirteen great crosses made of gold and jewels were carried in waggons before him as his standards, and each was followed by 10,000 knights and 100,000 footmen. There were no poor in his dominions, no thief or robber, no flatterer or miser, no dissensions, no lies, and no vices. HIs palace was built after the plan of that which St Thomas erected for the Indian king Gondopharus. Of the splendour of this details are given. Before it was a marvellous mirror erected on a many-storied pedestal (described in detail) ; in this speculum he could discern everything that went on throughout his dominions, and detect conspiracies. HIe was waited on by seven kings at a time, by sixty dukes and 365 counts; twelve archbishops sat on his right hand, and twenty bishops on his left, besides the patriarch of St Thomas's, the protopope of the Sarmagantians (Samarkand 1), and the archprotopope of Susa, where the royal residence was. There was another palace of still more wonderful character, built by the presbyter's father in obedience to a heavenly command, in the city of Bribric.*~~

~~*ZU5*~~

~~*Should it be asked why, with all this power and splendour, he calls himself merely "presbyter," this is because of his humility, and because it was not fitting for one whose sewer was a primate and king, whose butler an archbishop and king, whose chamberlain a bishop and king, whose master of the horse an archimandrite and king, whose chief cook an abbot and king, to be called by such titles as these. But the extent of his power and dominion could only be told when the number of the stars of heaven and of the sands of the seashore could be told.*~~

~~*How great was the popularity and diffusion of this letter may be judged in some degree from the fact that Herr Zarncke in his elaborate treatise on Prester John gives a list of close on a hundred MSS. of it. Of these there are eight in the British Museum, ten at Vienna, thirteen in the great Paris library, fifteen at Munich. There are also several renderings in old German verse. Many circum- stances of the time tended to render such a letter accept- able. Christendom would welcome gladly the intelligence of a counterpoise arising so unexpectedly to the Moham- medan power; whilst the statements of the letter itself com- bined a reference to and corroboration of all the romantic figments concerning Asia which already fed the curiosity of Europe, which figured in the world-maps, and filled that fabulous history of Alexander which for nearly a thousand years supplanted the real history of the Macedonian throughout Europe and western Asia.*~~

~~*The only other surviving document of the 12th century bearing on this subject is a letter of which MS. copies are preserved in the Cambridge and Paris libraries, and which is also embedded in the chronicles of several English annal- ists, including Benedict of Peterborough, Roger Hovedon, and Matthew Paris. It purports to have been indited from the Rialto at Venice by Pope Alexander III. on the 5th day before the calends of October (27th September), data which fix the year as 1177. The pope addresses himself as Alexander episcopus, servus servorum dei, carissimo in Christo filio Johannt, illustro et magnifico indorum regi [Hovedon's copy here inserts sacerdoti sanctissimo], salu- tem et apostolicam benedictionem. He recites how he had heard of the monarch's Christian profession, diligence in good works, and piety by manifold narrators and com- mon report, but also more particularly from his (the pope's) beloved son Master Philip, his physician and confidant (medicus et familiaris noster), who had received*~~

~~*informa- tion from honourable persons of the monarch's kingdom, with whom he had intercourse in those (Eastern) parts. Philip had also reported the king's anxiety for instruction in Catholic discipline and for reconciliation with the apostolic see in regard to all discrepancies. Philip had also heard from the king's people that he fervently desired to have a church in Rome and an altar at Jerusalem. The pope goes on to say that he found it too difficult, on account of the length and obstructions of the way, to send any one (of ecclesiastical position?) a latere, but he would despatch the aforesaid Philip to communicate instruction to him. And on accepting Philip's communications the king should send back honourable persons bearing letters sealed with his seal, in which his wishes should be fully set forth. "The more nobly and magnanimously thou conductest thyself, and the less thou vauntest of thy wealth and power (quanto . . . minus de divitiis et potentia tua videris inflatus), the more readily shall we regard thy wishes both as to the concession of a church in the city and of altars in the church of SS. Peter and Paul, and in the church of the Lord's Sepulchre at Jerusalem, and as to other reasonable requests."*~~

~~*There is no express mention of the title " Prester John" in what seem the more genuine copies of this letter. But the address and the expression in the italicized passage*~~

~~*716*~~

~~*just quoted (which evidently alludes to the vaunting epistle of 1165) hardly leave room for doubt that the pope supposed himself to be addressing the (imaginary) author of that letter. 'To whom the reports of Philip the physician in reality referred is a point that will be discussed below. We do not know how far the imaginations about Prester John retained their vitality in 1221, forty-four years after the letter of Pope Alexander, for we know of no mention of Prester John in theinterval. But in that year again a rumour came out of the East that a great Christian conqueror was taking the hated Moslems in reverse and sweeping away their power. Prophecies current among the Christians in Syria of the destruction of Mohammed's sect after six centuries of duration added to the excitement attending these rumours. The name ascribed to the con- queror was David, and some called him the son or the grandson of Prester John of India. He whose conquests and*~~

~~*slaughters now revived the legend was in fact no Christian or King David but the famous Jenghiz Khan. The delusion was dissipated slowly, and even after the great Tartar invasion and devastation of eastern Europe its effects still influenced the mind of Christendom and caused popes and kings to send missions to the Tartar hordes with a lingering feeling that their khans, if not already Christians, were at least always on the verge of conversion.*~~

~~*Before proceeding farther we must go back on the bishop of Gabala's story and elucidate it as far as we can. The most accomplished of modern geographical antiquaries, M. d'Avezac, first showed to whom the story must apply. The only conqueror whose career suits in time and approxi- mates in circumstances is the founder of Kard-Khitdi, which existed as a great empire in Central Asia during the latter two-thirds of the 13th century. This personage was a prince of the Khitdéi or Khitaian dynasty of Liao, which had reigned over northern China and the regions beyond the Wall during a great part of the 10th and 11th centuries, and from which came the name Khitai (Cathay), by which China was once known in Europe and still is known in Russia. On the overthrow of the dynasty about 1125 this prince, who is called by the Chinese Yeliu Tashi, and who had gone through a complete Chinese education, escaped westward with a body of followers. Being well received by the Uighurs and other tribes west of the desert, subjects of his family, he gathered an army and commenced a course of conquest which eventually extended over eastern and western Turkestan. He took the title of Gur Khan or Kor Khan, said to mean "universal" or "supreme" khan, and fixed at Balasaghun, north of the Tian Shan range, the capital of his empire, which became known as that of Kara-Khitdi (Black Cathay). In 1141 the assistance of this Khitaian prince was invoked by the shah of Kharezm against Sanjar, the Seljuk sovereign of Persia, who had expelled the shah from his kingdom and killed his son. The Gur Khan came with a vast army of Turks, Khitaians, and others, and defeated Sanjér near Samarkand (September 1141) in a great battle, which the historian Ibn al-Athir calls the greatest and most san- guinary defeat that Islam had ever undergone in those regions. Though the Gur Khan himself is not described as having extended his conquests into Persia, the shah of Kharezm followed up the victory by invading Khordsan and plundering the cities and treasuries of Sanjar. In this event—the defeat of Sanjar, whose brother's son, Mas'id, reigned over western Persia—occurring just four years before*~~

~~*the story of the Eastern conqueror was told at Rome to Bishop Otto, we seem to have the destruction of the Samiardi fratres or Sanjér brothers, which was the germ of the story of Prester John.*~~

~~*There is no evidence of any profession of Christianity on*~~

~~*PRES TER TC*~~

~~*the part of the Gur Khan, though it is a fact that the daughter of the last of his race is recorded to have been a Christian. The hosts of the Gur Khan are called by Moslem historians Al-J'urk-al-Kuffdr, the kafir or infidel Turks; and we know that in later days the use of this term "kafir" often led to misapprehensions, as when Vasco da Gama's people were led to take for Christians the Banyan traders on the African coast, and to describe as Christian sovereigns so many princes of the farther East of whom they heard at Calicut. Of the rest of the accretions to the story little can be said except that they are of the kind sure to have grown up in some shape when once the Christianity of the conqueror was assumed. We have said that Prester John was a phantom ; and we know out of what disproportionate elements phantoms are developed. How the name John arose is one of the obscure points. Oppert supposes the title 'Gur Khan" to have been con-founded with Yukhanan or Johannes ; and of course it is probable that even in the Levant the stories of "John the patriarch of the Indies," repeated in the early part of this article, may have already mingled with the rumours from the East.*~~

~~*The obvious failure in the history of the Gur Khan to meet all points in the story of the bishop of Gabala led Professor Bruun of Odessa to bring forward another candidate for identity with the original Prester John, in the person of the Georgian prince John Orbelian, the "sbasalar," or generalissimo under several kings of Georgia in that age. Space forbids our stating all the ingenious arguments and coincidences with which Professor Bruun supported his theory. Among other arguments he does show some instances, in documents of the 15th century, of the association of Prester John with the Caucasus. In one at least of these the title is applied to the king of Abassia, 7.¢., of the Abhasians of Caucasus. Some con- fusion between Abash (Abyssinia) and Abhas seems to be possibly at the bottom of the imbroglio. An abstract of Professor Bruun's arguinent will be found in*~~

~~*the 2d edition of Afarco Polo, vol. ii. pp. 539-542. We may quote here the conclusion arrived at in winding up that abstract. 'Professor Bruun's thesis seems to me more than fairly successful in paving the way for the introduction of a Caucasian Prester John; the barriers are removed, the carpets are spread, the trumpets sound royally,—but the conquering hero comes not. He does very nearly come. The almost royal power and splendour of the Orbelians at this time is on record . . . (see St Martin, Mém. sur T Arménie, ii. 77) . . . Orpel Ivane, 4.¢., Jolin Orbelian, Grand Sbasalar, was for years the pride of Georgia, and the hammer of the Turks. . . . But still we hear of no actual conflict with the chief princes of the Seljukian house, and of no event in his history so important as to account for his being made to play the part of Presbyter Johannes in the story of the Bishop of Gabala." As regards any real foundation for the title of " Presbyter"' we may observe that nothing worth mentioning has been alleged on behalf of any candidate.*~~

~~*When the Mongol conquests threw Asia open to Frank travellers in the middle of the 13th century their minds were full of Prester John ; they sought in vain for an adequate representative, nor was it in the nature of things that they should not find some repre- sentative. In fact they found several. Apparently no real tradi- tion existed among the Eastern Christians of such a personage ; the myth had taken shape from the clouds of rumour as they rolled westward from Asia. But the persistent demand produced a supply ; and the honour of identification with Prester John, after hovering over one head and another, settled for a long time upon that of the king of the Nestorian tribe of Kerait, famous in the histories of Jenghiz under the name of Ung or Awang Khan. We may quote an illustration from geographical analogy: " Pre-Columbian maps of the Atlantic showed an island of Brazil, an island of Antillia, founded—who knew on what?—whether on the real adventure of a vessel driven in sight of the Azores or Bermudas, or on mere fancy and fogbank. But when discovery really came to be undertaken, men looked for such lands and found them accordingly. And there they are in our geographies, Brazil and the Antilles." ?*~~

~~*In Plano Carpini's (1248) single mention of Prester John as the king of the Christians of India the Greater, who defeats the Tartars by an elaborate stratagem, Oppert recognizes Jalaluddin of Kharezm and his brief success*~~

~~*over the Mongols in Afghanistan. In the Armenian prince Sempad's account (1248), on the other hand, this Christian king of India is aided by the Tartars to defeat and harass the Saracens, and becomes the vassal of the Mongols. In the nar- rative of William Rubruquis (1253), though distinct reference is made to the conquering Gur Khan under the name of Coir Cham of*~~

~~*1 App. to Marco Polo, 2d ed., ii. 543.*~~

~~*PRESTER J 0 HN*~~

~~*Caracatay, the title of "King John" is assigned to Kushluk, king of the Naimans, who had married the daughter of the last lineal representative of the gur khans.1_ And from the remarks which Rubruquis nakes in connexion with this King John, on the habit of the Nestorians to spin wonderful stories out of nothing, and of the great tales that went forth about King John, it is evident that the intelligent traveller supposed this king of the Naimans to be the original of the widely-spread legend. He mentions, however, a brother of this Jolin called Une.who ruled over the Crit and Merkit (or Kerait and Mekrit, two of the great tribes of Mongolia), whose history he associates with that of Jenghiz Khan. Une Khan reappears in Marco Polo, who tells much about him as "a great prince, the same that we call Prester Jolin, him in fact about whose great dominion all the world talks." This Unc was in fact the prince of the Kerait, called by the Chinese Tuli, and by the Persian historians of the Mongols Toghral, on whom the Kin emperor of north China had conferred the title of "wang" or king, whence his coming to be known as Awang or Ung Khan. He was long the ally of Jenghiz, but a breach occurred between them, and they were mortal enemies till the death of Ung Khan in 1203. In the narrative of Marco Polo ' Unc Can," alias Prester John, is the liege lord of the Tartars, to whom they paid tribute until Jenghiz arose. And this is substantially the story repeated by other European writers of the end of the 13th century, such as Ricold of Monte- eroce and the Sieur de Joinville, as well as by one Asiatic, the famous Christian writer, Gregory Abulfaraj. We can find no Oriental corroboration of the claims of Ung Klian to supremacy over the Mongols. But that his power and dignity were consider- able appears from the term " Padshah," which is applied to him by the historian Rashiduddin.*~~

~~*We find Prester John in one more phase before he vanishes from Asiatic history, real or mythical. Marco Polo in the latter part of the 18th century, and Friar John of Montecorvino, afterwards archbishop of Cambaluc, in the beginning of the 14th, speak of the descendants of Prester John as holding territory under the great khan in a locality which can be identified with the plain of Kuku- Khotan, north of the great bend of the Yellow River and about 280 miles north-west of Peking. The prince reigning in the time of these two-writers was named King George, and was the "6th in descent from Prester John," 7.e., no doubt from Awang Khan. Friar Odoric, about 1326, visited the country still ruled by the prince whom he calls Prester John ; "but," he says, "as regards him, not one hundredth part is true that is told of him." With this mention Prester John ceases to have any pretension to histori- cal existence in Asia (for we need not turn aside to Mandeville's fabulous revival of old stories or to the barefaced fictions of his contemporary, John of Hese, which bring in the old tales of the miraculous body of St Thomas), and his connexion with that quarter of the world gradually died out of the memory of Europe."*~~

~~*When next we begin to hear his name it is as an African, not as an Asiatic prince; and the personage so styled is in fact the Christian king of Abyssinia. The learned Ludolf has asserted that this application was an invention of the Portuguese and arose only in the 15th century. But this is a mistake; for in fact the application had begun much earlier, and probably long before the name had ceased to be attached by writers on Asia to the descend- ants of the king of the Kerait. It is true that Simon Sigoli, who visited Cairo in 1384, still speaks of " Presto Giovanni" as a monarch dwelling in India; but it is the India which is conter- minous with the dominions of the soldan of Egypt, and whose lord is master of the Nile, to close or open its discharge upon Egypt.* Thirty years earlier (c. 1852) John Marignolli speaks of Ethiopia where the Negroes are, and which is called the land of Prester John.* Going back still farther, Friar J ordanus, who returned from the East before 1328, speaks of the emperor of the Ethiopians 'quem vos vocatis Prestre Johan."*~~

~~*But, indeed, weshall have strong probability on our side if we go back much farther still, and say that, however vague may have*~~

~~*1 It has been pointed out by Mr Alexander Wylie that Kushluk was son of a powerful king of the Naimans, whose name Ta-Yang-Khan is precisely "Great King John" as nearly as that could be expressed in Chinese.*~~

~~*2 The stories of Khitai as a Christian empire, which led the Jesuits at the court of Akbar to despatch Benedict Goes in search of it (1601), did, however, suggest to Jerome Xavier, their chief, that the country in question "was the Cathay of Marco Polo, and its Christian king the representative of the famous Prester John"—a jumble of inaccuracy.*~~

~~*3 So Ariosto—*~~

~~*'¢ Si dice che '] Soldan Re dell' Egitto A quel Re da tributo e sta soggetto, Perch' é in poter di lui dal cammin dritto Levare il Nilo e dargli altro ricetto, E per questo lasciar subito afilitto Di fame il Cairo e tutto quel distretto.*~~

~~*Senapo detto é dai suddetti suoi ; Gli diciam Presto o Prete Ianni noi."*~~

~~*4 In a Spanish work of about the same date, by an anonymous Franciscan, we are told that the emperor called "Abdeselib, which means 'servant of the Cross,' is a protector of Preste Juan, who is the patriarch of Nubia and Ethiopia, and is lord of many great lands, and many cities of Christians, though they be black as pitch, and brand themselves with the sign of the cross in token of their baptism" (Libro del conosciemento de todos reynos, &c., printed at Madrid,*~~

~~*1877).*~~

~~*TAZ*~~

~~*been the ideas of Pope Alexander III. respecting the geographical position of the potentate whom he addressed from Venice in 1177, the only real person to whom the letter can have been sent was the king of Abyssinia. Let it be observed that the "honourable per- sous of the monarch's kingdom" whom the leech Philip had met with in the East must have been the representatives of some real power, and not of a phantom. It must have been a real king and not a rumour-begotten ignis fatuus who professed to desire*~~

~~recon- ciliation with the Catholic Church and the assignation of a church at Rome and of an altar at Jerusalem. Moreover, we know that the Ethiopic Church did long possess a chapel and altar in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, and, though we have been unable to find travellers' testimony to this older than about 1497, it is quite possible that the appropriation may have originated much earlier.>5 We know from Marco Polo that about a century after the date of Pope Alexander's epistle a mission was sent by the king of Abyssinia to Jerusalem to make offerings on his part at the Church of the Sepulchre. It must be remembered that at the time of the pope's letter Jerusalem, which had been taken from the Moslem in 1099, was still in Christian possession. Abyssinia had been going through a long period of vicissitude and distraction. In the 10th century the royal line had been superseded by a dynasty of Falasha Jews, followed by other Christian families ; but weakness and disorder continued till the restoration of the 'House of Solomon" (c. 1268). Nothing is more likely than that the princes of the " Christian families" who had got possession of the throne of northern Abyssinia should have wished to strengthen themselves by a connexion with European Christendom, and_to establish relations with Jerusalem, then in Christian hands. We do not know whether the leech Philip ever reached his destination, or whether a reply ever came back to the Lateran.®~~

~~Baronius, who takes the view for which we have been arguing, supposes it possible that the church in Rome possessed in his own time by the Abyssinians (St Stephen's in the Vatican) might have been granted on this occasion. But we may be sure that this was a modern concession during the attempts to master the Ethiopian Church early in the 16th century. Ludolf intimates that its ocen- pancy had been taken from them in his own time after it had been held "for more than a century."~~

~~In the legendary history of the Translation of the three Blessed Kings by John of Hildesheim (c. 1370), of which an account and extracts are given by Zarncke (Abhandl. ii., 154 sq.), we have an evident jumble in the writer's mind between the Asiatic and the African location of Prester John ; among other matters it is stated that Prester John and the Nubians dug a chapel out of the rock under Calvary in honour of the three kings: "et vocatur illa~~

~~*capella in partibus illis capella Nubiyanorum ad reges in preesentem diem, sed Sarracini . . . ob invidiam obstruxerunt (p. 158).”*~~

~~*There is no need to proceed further. From the 14th century onwards Prester John had found his seat in Abyssinia. It is there that Fra Mauro’s great map (1459) presents a fine city with the rubric, ‘* Qui il Preste Janni fa residentia principal.” When, nearer the end of the century (1481-95), King John II. of Portugal was prosecuting inquiries regarding access to India his first object was to open communication with “ Prester John of the Indies,” who was understood to be a Christian potentate in Africa, and regarding whom information was sought “through Abyssinian monks whio visited these Spanish regions, and also through certain friars who went from this country to Jerusalem.” And when Vasco da Gama went on his memorable voyage from Mozambique northwards he began to hear of “Preste Joham” as reigning in the interior, — or rather, probably, by the light of his preconceptions of the exist- ence of that personage in east Africa he thus interpreted what was told him. More than twenty years later, when the first book on Abyssinia was composed—that of Alvarez,—the title, constantly and as a matter of course designating the king of Abyssinia, is*~~

~~*5 Indeed, we can carry the date back half a century further by the evidence of a letter translated in Ludolf(Comment., p. 303). This is addressed from Shoa by the king Zara Jacob in the eighth year of his reign (1442) to the Abyssinian monks, dwellers at Jerusalem. The king desires thein to light certain lamps in the Church of the Sepulchre, including “three in our chapel.” In the Pilgerfahrt des Ritters Arnold von Harff (1496-99), Cologne, 1860, p. 175, we find it stated that the Abyssinians had their chapel, &c., to the left of the Holy Sepulchre, between two pillars of the temple, whilst the Armenian chapel was over theirs, reached by a stone staircase alongside of the Indians (or Abys- sinians). This exactly corresponds with the plan and references given in Sandys’s Travels (1615, p. 162), which shows the different chapels. The first on the south, i.e., the left looking from the body of the church, is “ No, 35.—The chappell of the Abisines, over which the chappell of the Armenians.” A refer- ence to Jerusalem, which we procured through the kindness of Mr Walter Besant, shows that the Abyssinians no longer have a chapel or privileges in the Church of the Sepulchre. Between the Armenians and the Copts they have*~~

been deprived of these, and even of the keys of their convent. The resentment of King Theodore at the loss of these privileges was one of the indirect causes which led to the war between him and England in 1867-68.

6 Matthew Paris gives a letter from Philip, prior of the Dominicans in Pales- tine, which reached the pope in 1237, and which speaks of a prelate from whom he had received several letters, "qui preest omnibus quos Nestoriana heresis ab ecclesia separavit (cujus prelatio per Indiam Majorem, et per regnum sacer- dotis Johannis, et per regna magis proxima Orientidilatatur)," We have little doubt that Abyssinia was the "regnum" here indicated, though it was a mis- take to identify the Abyssinian Church with the Nestorians.

718

'Prester John," or simply "'the Preste." The name occurs on almost every page of the narrative beginning with page 1, though in the translation printed for the Hakluyt Society that which the editor calls " general index" gives no indication of the fact.

The name of ' Prester John" suggested alike to scholars and sciolists, first in its Oriental and then in its Ethiopian connexion, many fanciful and strained etymologies, from Persian, Hebrew, Ethiopic, and what not, and on the assumption that neither '«Presbyter" nor "John" was any proper element of the name.

But for these dreams this passing notice must suffice. — On the whole subject in its older aspects, see Ludolf's Historia Aithiopica and its Commentary, passim. The excellent remarks of M. d'Avezac, comprising a conspectus of alinost the whole essence of : the subject, are in the Recueil de Voyages et de Mémoires, published by the Société de Géographie, vol. iv., Paris, 1839, pp. 547-564. Two German works of importance which have been used in this article are the interesting and suggestive Der Presbyter Johannes in Sage

und Geschichte, by Dr Gustav Oppert (2d ed., Berlin, 1870), and, most import-.

~~*ant of all in its learned, careful, and critical collection and discussion of all the passages bearing on the subject, Der Priester Johannes, by Friedrich Zarncke of Leipsic (1876-79), still unfortunately unfinished, and without the summing up which is required to complete the subject. The present writer has given considerable attention to the subject, and discussed it partially in Cathay and the Way Thither, p. 173 sqq., and in Marco Polo, 2d ed., i. 229-233, fi, 539-543. (H. Y.) PRESTON, a market-town and municipal and parlia- mentary borough of Lancashire, is situated on the north bank of the Ribble, on the Lancaster Canal, and at the junction of several railway lines, 28 miles north-east of Liverpool and 31 north-west of Manchester. It consists chiefly of one long street, running from east to west along a steep ridge above the Ribble, which is crossed by six bridges, three of which are railway bridges. The parish church of St John, rebuilt in 1855 in the Decorated style, occupies the site of a very ancient structure. A large number of ecclesiastical parishes have been formed within recent years, but none of the churches possess special*~~

~~*architectural features. The Catholic church of St Wal-*~~

~~*1000 Yards*~~

~~*Plan of Preston.*~~

~~*purgis or St Walpurge is an elaborate structure in the Early Decorated style, erected in 1854, and since then extensively altered. There are several good public build- ings, including the town-hall (1867 in the Early Gothic style, from designs by Sir Gilbert Scott), the prison (1789), the corn exchange and market-house (1824), the court- house (1829), the borough magistrates' court (1858), the covered market (1870), the county offices (1882), the public baths, and the barracks. The most important public institution is the free public library and museum, estab- lished in 1879. The building was erected, from designs by Mr J. Hibbert, at a cost of £75,000 by the trustees of Mr E. R. Harris, whose name it bears, a further sum of £30,000 being appropriated by them to furnish and endow*~~

~~*the library and museum, which are to be maintained in efficiency for ever by the corporation. This body gave the site in the principal market-place at a cost of £30,000. Here is placed Dr Shepherd's library, founded in 1761, of nearly 9000 volumes, as well as a collection of pictures, &c., valued at £40,000, bequeathed by Mr R. Newsham. The Harris Institute, endowed by the above-named trustees with £40,000, is established in a building of classical style erected in 1849, wherein are held science and art classes, and where is placed a thoroughly equipped chemical laboratory. For the grammar-school, founded in 1550, a building in the Tudor style was erected in 1841 by private shareholders, but in 1860 they sold it to the corporation, who now have the management of the school. The blue-coat school, founded in 1701, was in 1817 amalgamated with the national schools. Preston is well supplied with public recreation grounds, including Aven- ham Park, the Miller Park with a statue of the 14th earl of Derby, and the Moor Park. Winckley Square, near the centre of the town, has a monument to Sir Robert Peel.*~~

~~*Formerly " proud" Preston was a place of "fashion and society "; but the introduction of the linen manufacture at the end of the 18th century completely altered its charac- ter. The inventions of Sir Richard Arkwright, who was a native of the town, found in Preston early acceptance; and owing to its convenient communications by river, canal, and railway, aided by native enterprise, it has become one of the principal seats of the cotton manufacture in Lancashire. There are also iron and brass foundries, engineering works, cotton-machinery works, and steam- boiler works, and a considerable and increasing coasting trade with Ireland and England. In 1826 Preston became a creek of Lancaster ; in 1839 it was included in the new port of Fleetwood ; and in 1843 it was constituted an independent port. The number of vessels that entered the port in 1883 was 129 of 9365 tons, the number that cleared 137 of 9854 tons. By the deepening of the Ribble vessels of considerable tonnage can now unload at the new quay. But much more extensive operations in connexion with the improvement of the port have (1885) been projected. At an estimate cost of £800,000 the Ribble is to be deepened for a distance of about 12 miles to the point where it falls into the Irish Sea, and a new wet dock is to be constructed, with an area of 40 acres, in the centre of the Ribble valley, between the existing river-course and the intended diversion of the channel. The dock will be 13,240 feet long*~~

~~and 600 feet wide. Four large warehouses are to be erected along the entire length of its east side. In addition to the main dock a timber dock of 25 acres is to be constructed, and also two large graving-docks, enabling vessels up to 1000 tons burden to be constructed.~~

~~The population of the parliamentary borough in 1811 was 17,115, in 1841 50,073, in 1871 85,427, and in 1881 93,720; that of the municipal borough, the area of which was extended in 1880 to 3721 acres, amounted in 1881 to 96,537 (males 44,264, females 52,273). Preston returns two members to the House of Commons.~~

~~At Walton-le-Dale, close to Preston, where the Roman road crosses the Ribble, there are remains of a Roman post. Saxon ware, as well as Roman remains and coins, have been found in the neighbourhood. The mound at Penwortham, to the south-west of the town, was probably a mote-hill of the Saxons. Preston owes its rise to the decay of Ribchester, which it gradually superseded as the port of the Ribble. In the reign of Athelstane the whole district of Amounderness was granted to the cathedral-church of York. ; The capital of the hundred, on account of this ecclesiastical connexion, came to be known as " Priest's town," afterwards changed to "Preston." It possessed two monastic foundations, (1) a convent of Grey Friars founded in 1221 by Edmund, earl of Lancaster, son of Henry II, a little to the west of the Friargate, and occupied after~~

~~the dissolution first as a private residence, then until 1790 as the house of correction, and subsequently as cottages, and now super-~~

~~PRE—P RE~~

~~his having first enunciated the theory of exchanges (see~~

~~seded by an iron-foundry ; and (2) an ancient hospital dedicated to St Mary Magdalen, now occupied by the Roman Catholic church of St Walpurgis. The town is celebrated for its merchant guild celebrations, of which the earliest on record is that of 1329. On account of the devastations to which the district was subjected by the Danes the church of York abandoned its possessions, and Tostig, brother of Harold, beeaime lord paramount. At the Conquest it was granted, along with other possessions, to Roger de~~

~~*Poictou, and on his defection was forfeited to the crown. It possessed at an early period the charter of "a guild merchant, with hanse" and other customs belonging to such guild. Another charter was granted by Henry II., conferring on the inhabitants similar privileges and liberties to those enjoyed by the inhabitants of Newcastle-on-Tyne. Its privileges were confirmed and extended by King John, and in the 23d of Edward I. it obtained the right to send members to parliament. In 1323 Robert Bruce partly destroyed it by fire. In 1617 it was visited by James I. on his return from Scotland. On*~~

~~*the outbreak of the Civil War it declared for King Charles, but on >*~~

~~*the 12th February 1643 it was taken by the Parliamentary forces under Sir John Seaton. Near the town, on the 17th of August 1648, the Scots under Hamilton sustained an overwhelming defeat from Oliver Cromwell. On the 9th of November 1715 Preston was occupied by the troops of the Pretender, and by their surrender on the 13th of the same month the death-blow was given to his cause. On the 27th of November 1745 it was entered by Charles, the young Pretender, on his Quixotic march towards London. By the Muni- cipal Act of 1835 the borough is divided into six wards, comprising the ancient borongh of Preston and the township of Fishwick, and is governed by a mayor, twelve aldermen, and thirty-six councillors.*~~

~~*Whittle, Historical Account of Preston, 1821-37 ; Dobson, History of the Parlia- mentary Representation of Preston, 1856, 2d ed. 1868; Id., Preston in the Olden Time, 1856 ; Id., History of Preston Guild, 1862; Hardwick, History of Preston, 1857 ; Hewitson, History of Preston, 1883.*~~

~~*PRESTWICH, a township of Lancashire, is situated on a branch of the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 4 miles north-west of Manchester and 5 south of Bury. It possesses cotton manufactures, but consists chiefly of handsome mansions and villas inhabited by Manchester merchants. The church of St Bartholomew occupies an eminence overlooking the Irwell. In the neighbourhood is the county lunatic asylum. The population of the urban 'sanitary district (area, 1917 acres) in 1871 was 6820, and in 1881 it was 8627.*~~

~~*PRESUMPTION. See Evipencg, vol. vill. p. 742 sq.*~~

PREVESA, the chief town of a sandjak in the Turkish vilayet of Janina, commanding the entrance to the Gulf of Arta. Its harbour is sinall, but it is a port of call for the steamers of the Austrian Lloyd and has a considerable trade in the export of oil, wool, valonia, &c. Prevesa, which represents the ancient Nicopo.is (q.v.), has a popu- lation of about 7000.

PREVOST, Pierre (1751-1839), son of a Protestant clergyman in Geneva, was born in that city on 3d March 1751, and was educated for a clerical career. But he for- sook it for law, and this too he quickly deserted to devote himself to education and to travelling. He became inti- mate with J. J. Rousseau, and, a little later, with Dugald Stewart, having previously distinguished himself as a trans- lator of and commentator on Euripides. Frederick II. of Prussia secured him in 1780 as professor of philosophy, and made him member of the Academy of Sciences in Berlin. He there became acquainted with Lagrange, and was thus led to turn his attention to science. After some years spent on political economy (as in Adam Smith's Wealth of Nations) and on the principles of the fine arts (in connexion with which he wrote, for the Berlin Memoirs, a remarkable dissertation on poetry) he returned to Geneva and commenced his works on magnetism and on heat. In- terrupted occasionally in his studies by political duties, in which he was often called to the front, he remained pro- fessor of philosophy at Geneva till he was called in 1810 to the chair of physics. He died at Geneva on 8th April 1839. Prévost published much on philology, philosophy, and political economy ; but he will be remembered mainly on two accounts—(1) his having published, with additions of his own, the posthumous memoirs of the ingenious Le Sage (see Arom, vol. iii, p. 46, and ATrRacrion) ; and (2)

RADIATION), on which has been bascd one of the grandest experiinental methods of modern times. He was distin-

guished as much for his moderation, precision, and truth-

fulness as for his extraordinary versatility.

PREVOST D'EXILLES, Antoine Francois (1697- 1763), more commonly called the abbé Prévost, one of the most important French novelists of the

~~*18th century, was born at Hesdin in Artois on Ist April 1697. His father was of good family, and held legal employments of some importance. Prévost was educated by the Jesuits, first at Hesdin and then at Paris. At the age of sixteen he left the Collége d'Harcourt and enlisted. This was, however, at the close of the War of the Spanish Succession, and he soon returned to the Jesuits, and was almost persuaded to enter the order. According to some accounts he actually did so, but a truant disposition once more came on him and he again joined the army, apparently obtaining some com- mission. It is, however, not easy to make his statement that he passed five or six years thus tally with the positive assertion that in 1719 he once more sought the cloister, this time joining the famous learned community of the Benedictines of St Maur. He took the vows finally in 1720, and it would appear that for some seven years he devoted himself without repining to study at various houses of the order, preaching, teaching, and writing some part of the Gallia Christiana. In 1727, however, or thereabouts (for the details of Prévost's life, though un- usually interesting, are most vaguely and insufficiently recorded) he once more broke bounds and fled to Holland. It is said that the immediate occasion was nothing more than a wish which he had formed to be transferred to Cluny, and which made him commit some technical mis- demeanour. However this may be, he was for six years an exile in Holland and England, and one story even asserts that he contracted a regular or rather irregular marriage during this period. He certainly published the first of his remarkable novels, the Afémoires dun Homme de Qualité, in 1728, and continued them for some years. Besides this he produced much miscellaneous work—Cléve- land, another novel; Manon Lescaut, his masterpiece (which is a kind of appendix to his first book) ; and a periodical publication, partly in the style of the Spectator and partly in that of a literary review, called Le Pour et le Contre. All these were begun and most of them were finished before 1735, when he was back in France and produced his last novel of importance, the Doyen de Kullérine, in which, as in Cléveland, he made much use of his English sojourn. He returned to France openly and with the royal permission, being allowed to wear the dress of the secular priesthood. Among his patrons the cardinal de Bissy and the prince de Conti are named ; the latter made him his chaplain, He lived for nearly thirty years longer, composing, though not for bread, an extraordinary num- ber of books, some of them original, some compilations. Amongst them were an Histoire Générale des Voyages, his- torical*~~

~~compilations on William the Conqueror and Margaret of Anjou, letters, moral essays, semi-scientifie works, trans- lations (including Pamela and Clarissa), and some original pieces. Of all these the novel called Hestoire Pune Grecque Moderne (1741) has alone attracted some attention in modern times. Prévost was a facile writer and a fair critic, but except for his first three novels, and especially for Manon Lescaut, he would hardly be remembered save as a man of a curiously eventful and very imperfectly recorded life. His death itself has a kind of legendary character, and some of the circumstances are, it may be hoped, ficti- tious. He lived in a small cottage (for, despite his im- mense literary work on subjects which for the most part occupy only writers for money, he seems to have written~~

~~purely for love) at Chantilly, and it was his custom to walk much in the woods there. What is agreed is that he was struck with apoplexy during one of these walks, on 23d November 1763, and was found senseless. The legend adds the hideous particular that he was not dead, and that a clumsy village surgeon, heedlessly beginning what he sup- posed to be a post-mortem examination, at once recalled his patient to life and killed him. Even without this detail there is sufficient romantic interest (without other stories, some of them demonstrably fictitious, such as that he was accidentally the cause of his father's death) about this life of a man who is at the same time uniformly represented as an indefatigable student and one of a quiet and easy- going temperament.~~

~~Prévost's three chief romances, the Afémoires, Cléveland, and the Doyen de Killérine, are not unremarkable, because they hold a kind of middle place between the incident-romance of Le Sage and Defoe and the sentiment-romance of Marivaux and Richardson ; but they all have the defect of intolerable length and of an indefinite fluency. Jfanon Lescaut, his one masterpiece, and one of the greatest novels of the century, is in both these respects so different that it might seem impossible that the same man should have written it. It is very short, it is entirely free from improbable incident, it is penetrated by the truest and the most cunningly managed feeling, and almost every one of its characters is a triumph of that analytic portraiture which is the secret of the modern novel. The chevalier des Grieux, the hero,~~

~~*is probably the most perfect example of the carrying out of the sentiment "All for love and the world well lost" that exists in fiction (it is curious that Prévost translated Dryden's play of the name), at least where the circum-stances are those of ordinary and probable life. Tiberge, his friend, is hardly inferior in the difficult part of mentor and reasonable man. Lescaut, the heroine's brother, has vigorous touches as a bully and Bohemian ; but the triumph of the book is Manon herself. Animated by a real affection for her lover, and false to him only because her incurable love of splendour, comfort, and luxury prevents her from welcoming privation with him or for him, though in effect she prefers him to all others, perfectly natural and even amiable in her degradation, and yet showing the moral of that degradation more Vividly than a hundred characters drawn with a less compla- cent pencil could have done, Manon is one of the most remarkable heroines in all fiction. She had no literary ancestress ; she seems to have sprung entirely from the imagination, or perhaps the sympathetic observation, of the wandering scholar who drew her. Only the Princesse de Cleves can challeuge comparison with her before or near to her own date, and in Manon Lescaut the plot is much more complete and interesting, the sentiments less artificial, and the whole story nearer to actual life than in Madame de la Fayette's masterpiece. It is not easy to name a novel on the same scale which is more directly and naturally affecting at a first reading, and which on subsequent study approves itself more thoroughly as a work of art, than Manon Lescaut.*~~

~~*There is no complete edition of Prévost's works. Muvres Choisies were pub-*~~

~~*lished in 1783, and again in 1806. Of Manon Lescaut the editions are very numerous.*~~

~~*PREVOST-PARADOL, Lucien AnaTouE (1829-1870), a writer whose career, except in its unhappy end, was typical of the importance of journalism in France, was born at Paris on the 8th of August 1829. His mother was an actress; little is said of his father. He was educated at the Collége Bourbon, showed great brilliancy and precocity, and entered the Ecole Normale. In 1855 he was appointed professor of French literature at Aix. He held the post, however, barely a year, resigning it to take up the pen of a leader-writer on the Journal des Débats. He also wrote in the Courrier*~~

~~*du Dimanche, and for a very short time in the Presse. Even before his appointment at Aix he had produced a book, Revue de l'Histoire Universelle (1854), and he continued to publish at short invervals, his chief work being a collection of essays on politics and literature, which appeared between 1859 and 1866, and some Essais sur les Moralistes Francais (1864). He was, however, rather a journalist than a writer of books, and was one of the chief opponents of the empire on the side of moderate liberalism. culties of a journalist under that régime, and was once imprisoned. In 1865, at the extraordinarily early age of thirty-five, he was elected an Academician. He was twice*~~

~~*He underwent the usual and popular diffi- |*~~

~~*PRE—PRI*~~

~~*a candidate for election to the Chamber, but failed each time. Three years later he visited England and was publicly entertained at Edinburgh, an entertainment which was the occasion of some rather undignified and very foolish contrasts drawn in the English press between the position of journalists in the two countries. The accession of Kmile Ollivier to power was fatal to Prévost-Paradol. There is no reason for doubting that, in common with some of the best men in France, he believed in the possibility of a liberal empire, and he accepted the appointment of envoy to the United States. This was the signal for the most unmeasured attacks on him from the republican party. He had scarcely installed himself in his post before the outbreak of war between France and Prussia occurred. Either an exaggerated feeling of patriotism, or the dis- appointment of his hopes in the combined wisdom of M. Ollivier and the emperor, or (as his enemies said) remorse at having betrayed his party for nothing, or more probably the action of startling news on an excitable temperament and a mind weakened and irritated by the personal in- vectives to which he had been subject, threw his intellect and will out of gear. He committed suicide at New York on 20th July 1870. Prévost-Paradol was not in any sense a strong man, and, except for his tragic end, his name is not very likely to live either in literature or politics. His style was light and facile, but at the same time flimsy, and his thoughts were rarely profound. But he had fora time "Vesprit*~~

~~*de tout le monde" in France, and the personal system of journalism forced him into unnatural prominence and productiveness.*~~

~~*PRIAM. See Troy.*~~

~~*PRIAPUS, the Greek god of teeming flock and fruit- ful field. He was unknown to the earliest Greek poets Homer and Hesiod, but in later times his worship pre- vailed on the fertile coasts of Asia Minor. Lampsacus on the Hellespont, nestling in its vineyards, claimed to be his birthplace. According to the people of Lampsacus he was the son of Dionysus and Aphrodite. Having the misfortune, as a child, to be plain-looking, Priapus was abandoned by his heartless parents, but a gentle shepherd who chanced to pass that way found and reared the help- less babe like his own son. As the youthful god grew to manhood he repaid his benefactor by making: the flocks and herds to bring forth and multiply. So the simple shepherds worshipped him and brought him offerings of the fatlings of their flocks,—lambs and goats and heifers, and even, it is said, donkeys. As the god and guardian of gardens, vineyards, and orchards he received sacrifices of fruits and vegetables, and images of him were set up in gardens to frighten birds and thieves. Bees too were his especial care, and he had power to disarm the evil eye. Fishermen prayed to him for an abundant harvest of the sea, and sailors in their sore distress called on him, and he answered and saved them. On many a wave-beaten bluff his image stood and his altar smoked, decked with flowers the earliest of the year, when winter storms were over and summer seas allured the mariner to launch his bark again. In the rites of Dionysus homage was paid to the rural god with mirth and laughter. From Greece he passed to Italy, and continued in his new home to discharge his old functions of garden-god and scarecrow.*~~

~~*PRIBRAM or PrziperaM, a prosperous mining town of Bohemia, is situated about 32 miles 8.W. of Prague. The lead-mines in the vicinity have been worked for several centuries and are especially important on account of the large quantity of silver extracted from the ore. In average years this amounts to 70,000 ib, representing a money value of nearly £300,000. The mines belong to the Government and employ about 5000 persons. One of the shafts, 3350 feet deep, is among the deepest in the world. Besides*~~

~~*mining, the inhabitants occupy themselves in making glass beads, soap, candles, beer, and liqueurs. The most interesting buildings are the old deanery and church, and the archiepiscopal palace, now converted into a mining academy. At the top of the Heiliger Berg, a hill rising above the town, is a church with a wonder-working image of the Virgin, which attracts numerous pilgrims. The population of Pribram in 1880 was 11,171, or, including the adjacent Birkenberg, where the largest mines are situated, 14,881.*~~

~~*PRICE, Ricuarp (1723-1791), philosopher, son of a Dissenting minister, was born on 23d February 1723, at Tynton, in the parish of Llangeinor, Glamorganshire. His education was conducted partly by private tutors, partly at private schools. His father was a bigoted Calvinist and seems to have been a person of morose temper, facts which may account, on the principle of reaction, for the liberal opinions and the benevolent disposition of the son. Young Price appears at an early age to have studied the works of Clarke and Butler, and to have conceived a special admiration for the theological and philosophical works of the latter writer. In his eighteenth year he removed to a Dissenting academy in London, and, having completed his education, became chaplain and companion to a Mr Streatfield at Stoke-Newington. While still occupying this position he officiated in various Dissenting congrega- tions, such as those in the Old Jewry, Edmonton, and Newington Green. By the death of Mr Streatfield and of an uncle in 1756 his circumstances were considerably improved, and in the following year, the year in which he first published his best-known work, a Review of the Principal Questions in Morals, he married a Miss Sarah Blundell, originally of Belgrave in Leicestershire. Price now resided at Newington Green, where his time appears to have been mainly occupied in the performance of his ministerial duties, though he made occasional excursions into the regions of mathematics and philosophy. In 1767 he published a volume of sermons, including one on the future state, which attracted the attention and gained him the acquaintance of Lord Shelburne, an event which had much influence in raising his reputation and deter- mining the character of his subsequent pursuits. Soon after this date he added to his duties at Newington Green those of morning preacher to a congregation at Hackney, where his audience appears to have been more*~~

~~numerous and appreciative than any which he had heretofore suc- ceeded in keeping together.~~

~~But it was not so much in the capacity of a religious teacher as a writer on financial and political questions that Price was destined to become known to his countrymen at large. In 1769 he wrote some observations addressed in a letter to Dr Franklin on the expectation of lives, the in- crease of mankind, and the population of London, which were published in the Philosophical Transactions of that year ; and, again, in May 1770, he communicated to the Royal Society some observations on the proper method of calculating the values of contingent reversions. The pub lication of these papers is said to have exercised a most beneficial influence in drawing attention to the inadequate calculations on which many insurance and benefit societies had recently been formed. In the year 1769 Price re- ceived the degree of D.D. from the university of Glasgow. In 1771 he published his Appeal to the Public on the Subject of the National Debt, of which subsequent editions appeared in 1772 and 1774. This pamphlet excited con- siderable controversy at the time of its publication, and is supposed to have influenced Pitt in re-establishing the sinking fund for the extinction of the national debt, which had been created by Walpole in 1716 and abolished in 1733. That Price's main object, the extinction of the~~

~~national debt, was a laudable and desirable one would now probably be universally acknowledged. The particu- lar means, however, which he proposed for the purpose of effecting this object are described by Lord Overstone' as "ca sort of hocus-pocus machinery," supposed to work '"'with- out loss to any one," and consequently purely delusive. As Lord Overstone says, all the sinking funds that have been set on foot have been supported either by loans or by the produce of taxes, and have never paid off a single shilling of debt by their own agency. In 1829 Pitt's sinking fund was abolished by Act of parliament.~~

~~A subject of a much more popular kind was next to employ Dr Price's pen. Being an ardent lover of civil and religious liberty, he had from the first been strongly opposed to the war with the American colonies, and in 1776 he published a pamphlet entitled Observations on Civil Liberty and the~~

~~*Justice and Policy of the War with America. Several thousand copies of this work were sold within a few days; a cheap edition was soon issued ; the pamphlet was extolled by one set of politicians and abused by another ; amongst its critics were Dr Markham, archbishop of York, John Wesley, and Edmund Burke ; and its author rapidly became one of the best-known men in England. In recognition of his services in the cause of liberty by the publication of this pamphlet Dr Price was presented with the freedom of the city of London, and it is said that the encouragement derived from this book had no inconsiderable share in determining the Americans to declare their independence. A second pamphlet on the war with Anierica, the debts of Great Britain, and kindred topics followed in the spring of 1777, and whenever the Government thought proper to proclaim a fast-day Dr Price took the opportunity of declaring his sentiments on the folly and mischief of the war. HIs name thus became identified, for good repute and for evil repute, with the cause of Anierican independence. HIe was the intimate friend of Franklin; he corresponded with Turgot; and in the winter of 1778 he was actually invited by Congress to transfer himself to America and assist in the financial administration of the insurgent States. This offer he refused from unwillingness to quit his own country and his family connexions, concluding his letter, however, with the prophetic words that he looked ‘“‘to the United States as now the hope, and likely soon to become the refuge, of mankind.” °*~~

~~*One of Price’s most intimate friends was the celebrated Dr Priestley, but this circumstance did not prevent them from taking the most opposite views on the great questions of morals and metaphysics. In 1778 appeared a published correspondence between these two liberal theologians on the subjects of materialism and necessity, wherein Price maintains, in opposition to Priestley, the free agency of man and the unity and immateriality of the human soul. Both Price and Priestley were in theological opinion what would now vaguely be called “ Unitarians,” though they occupied respectively the extreme right and the extreme left position of that school. Indeed Price’s opinions would seem to have been rather Arian than Socinian.*~~

~~*After the publication of his pamphlet on the American war Dr Price became an important personage. HIe now preached to crowded congregations, and,*~~

~~*when Lord Shel- burne acceded to power, not only was he offered the post of private secretary to the premier, but it is said that one of the paragraphs in the king's speech was suggested by him and even inserted in his very words.*~~

~~*In 1786 Mrs Price died, and as there were no children by the marriage, and his own health was failing, the remainder of Price's life appears to have been somewhat*~~

~~*1 Lord Overstone reprinted in 1857, for private circulation, Price's and other rare tracts on the national debt and the sinking fund.*~~

~~*clouded by solitude and dejection. It was illuminated, however, by one bright gleam, the eager satisfaction with which he witnessed the passing events of the French Revolution. "TI could almost say, Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, for mine eyes have seen thy salvation. After sharing in the benefits of one Revolution, I have been spared to be a witness to two other revolutions, both glorious."! The darker side of the picture he happily did not live to see. On the 19th of April 1791 he died, worn out with suffering and disease. HIs funeral was conducted at Bunhill Fields by Dr Kippis, and his funeral sermon was preached on the following Sunday by Dr Priestley, names which, like his own, are specially honourable in the roll of English Nonconformist*~~

~~*divines.*~~

~~*On the 4th of November 1789 Price had preached at the meeting-house in the Old Jewry, before the Society for commemorating the Revolution in Great Britain, his celebrated sermon on the Love of our Country. This sermon, together with a speech subsequently made by him at a public dinner at the London Tavern, rendered him peculiarly obnoxious to Burke, and brought down upon him some of the fiercest denunciations of that brilliant but impassioned writer in his Reflections on the Revolution*~~

~~*in France.*~~

~~*Price's reputation rests mainly upon the position which he occupies in the history of moral philosophy. HIs ethical theories are contained in the treatise already mentioned, a Review of the Principal Questions in Morals, the third edition of which, express- ing "the author's latest and maturest thoughts," was published in 1787. This work is professedly directed against the doctrines of Hutcheson, but the treatment as a whole is constructive rather than polemical. Price's views approximate more closely to those of Cudworth than to those of any other English moralist ; but they are mainly interesting in the history of morals on account of their resemblance to the theories subsequently propounded by Kant. The main positions of Price's treatise are three, which may be stated as follows :—(1) actions are in themselves right or wrong ; (2) right and wrong are simple ideas incapable of analysis ; (3) these ideas are perceived immediately by the intuitive power of the reason or understanding, terms which he employs indifferently.*~~

~~*To the first of these positions it is not, at first sight, easy to attach any precise ineaning, nor does even a careful perusal of the work altogether remove the ambiguity. The most natural inter- pretation, perhaps, of the expression that "an action is right in itself" is that it is right without any relation to the nature of the agent, the end aimed at, or the circumstances under which it is performed. But, apart from the fact that the objections to such a theory would be too obvious to be overlooked, the following passage is sufficient to show that Price cannot have entertained it: 'All actions being necessarily right, indifferent, or wrong ; what deter- mines which of these an action should be accounted is the truth of the case, or the relations and circumstances of the agent and the objects. In certain relations there is a certain conduct right. There are certain manners of behaviour which we unavoidably approve, as soon as these relations are known. Change the rela tions, and a different manner of behaviour becomes right. Nothing is clearer than that what is due or undue, proper or improper to be done, must vary according to the different natures and circum- stances of beings. Ifa particular treatment of one nature is right, it is impossible that the same treatment of a different nature, or of all natures, should be right" (ch. vi.). What, then, does he mean by the phrase that 'an action is right or wrong in ttself" ? Excluding the meaning which we have set aside, he may wish to*~~

~~express either that actions are right or wrong irrespectively of their consequences, or that the same action would appear right or wrong not to man only but to all intelligent beings, or, as seems to be the case, he may sometimes wish to express one of these meanings and sometimes the other.~~

~~__ The second and third positions, that right and wrong are simple ideas incapable of analysis, and that they are perceived by an intuitive act of the reason, are succinctly stated in the following passage: "''T'is a very necessary previous observation that our ideas of right and wrong are simple ideas, and must therefore be ascribed to some power of immediate perception in the human mind. HIe that doubts this, need only try to give definitions of them, which evil amount to more than synonymous expressions" (ch. i. sect. 1). ae sie passages the question in dispute between the~~

~~al schools of moralists is brought to a definite issue. Does~~

~~1 Sermon on the Love of our Country.~~

~~PRI—PRI~~

~~the term "right" admit ofany explanation, definition, or analysis, or is it simply inexplicable? 'The majority of moralists have adopted the former alternative, and have endeavoured to explain the idea of right in subordination to that of good. Any course of action which has, on the whole, a tendency to promote the happiness or to alleviate the misery of mankind they denominate as right ; and any course of action which has a contrary tendency they denomi- nate as wrong. Price, on the otherr hand, maintains that when we say an action is right we can give no further account of it, that we state an ultimate fact which neither requires nor can receive any further explanation. The connexiou of the third with the first and second positions is obvious. Right and wrong, being simple ideas, and being, moreover, qualities of actions, considered in them- selves, are regarded by Price as being perceived immediately by the reason just in the same way that colour is perceived by the eye or sound by the ear. That they are perceived immediately follows from the fact that they are simple ideas, incapable of analysis ; that they are perceived by the reason or understanding, and not by a sense, is maintained in an elaborate course of~~

~~*argument against Hutcheson. When the reason or understanding has once apprehended the idea of right, it ought to impose that idea as a law upon the will; and thus it becomes, equally with the affections, a spring of action.*~~

~~*The place of the emotional part of our nature in this system is not very clear. The predominant view, however, appears to be that, while it is the source of all vicious action, it may, when enlightened by reason, aid in the determination of virtuous conduct. The school of Hutcheson, on the other hand, maintains that the emotions are, in the last analysis, the original source of all conduct, be it virtuous or vicious.*~~

~~*As already stated, the English moralist with whom Price has most affinity is Cudworth. The main point of difference is that, while Cudworth regards the ideas of right and wrong as vojuara or modifications of the intellect itself, existing firstin germ and after- wards developed by circumstances, Price seems rather to regard them as acquired from the contemplation of actions, though acquired necessarily, immediately, and intuitively.*~~

~~*Those who are familiar with the writings of Kant (which arc posterior to those of Price) will recognize many points of resemblance both in the fundamental ideas and in the modes of expression. Amongst these points are the exaltation of reason ; the depreciation of the affections ; the unwillingness of both authors to regard the '*partial and accidental structure of humanity," the "mere make and constitution of man," as the basis of morality,—in other words, to recognize ethical distinctions as relative to human nature; the ultimate and irresolvable character of the idea of rectitude ; the notion that the reason imposes this idea as a law upon the will, becoming thus our independent spring of action; the insistence upon the reality of liberty or "the power of acting and deter- mining"; the importance attached to reason as a distinct source of ideas; and, it may be added, the discrimination (so celebrated in the philosophy of Kant) of the moral (or practical) and the speculative understanding (or reason)."*~~

~~*Price's ethical theories are almost the antithesis of those of Paley, whose Moral and Political Philosophy appeared in 1785. Speak- ing of this work in his third edition Price says, " Never have I met with a theory of morals which has appeared to me more exception- able."*~~

~~*Most of Price's more important works have been already mentioned. To these may be added an Essay on the Population of England (2d ed., 1780); two Fast-day Sermons, published respectively in 1779 and 1781; and Observations on the importance of the American Revolution and the means of rendering it a benefit to the World, 1784. A complete list of his works is given as an appendix to Dr Priestley's Funeral Sermon. Notices of Price's ethical system occur in Mackintosh's Progress of Ethical Philosophy, Jouffroy's Introduction to Ethics, Whewell's History of Moral Philosophy in England, Bain's Mental and Moral Sciences, the article on Etutes (vol. viii. pp. 603, 604), and a monograph on*~~

~~*Shaftesbury and Hutcheson by the writer of this article in Sampson Low & Co.'s series of English Philosophers. The authority for his life is a memoir by*~~

~~*his nephew, William Morgan. (T. F.) PRICHARD, James Cowzs (1786-1848), the founder of ethnology or anthropology in England, was born on 11th February 1786 at Ross in Herefordshire. His parents were of the Society of Friends, and his career in after life partly turned on his not receiving the then narrow course of school education, but a wider home training in modern languages and general literature. Living at Bristol, he occupied himself much in examining the natives of different countries who were to be met with amongst the shipping of the port, and he would occasionally bring a foreigner to his father's house. Thus in early life he laid a foundation for his later researches, and he was mainly led to adopt medi- cine as a profession from the facilities which its study offered*~~

~~*? Price does not, like Kant, distinguish between the words "reason" and " understanding."*~~

~~*PRI—PRI*~~

~~*for the investigation of man. He took his degree at Edin- burgh, afterwards reading for a year at Trinity College, Cambridge, whence, joining the Church of England, he migrated to St John's College, Oxford, afterwards entering as a gentleman commoner at Trinity College, Oxford, but seeking no degree in either university. In 1810 he settled at Bristol as a physician, and in 1813 published his Re- searches into the Physical History of Man, in*~~

~~*2 vols., after- wards extended to 5 vols. The central principle of the book is the primitive unity of the human species, acted upon by causes which have since divided it into permanent varieties or races. Dr Prichard states that he was led into this inquiry by the diversity of races being alleged as a disproof of the Mosaic records ; in argument, however, he endeavoured not to rely on theology, but to proceed "' by the ordinary method of observation and experience." The work is dedicated to Blumenbach, whose five races of man are adopted. But where Prichard excelled Blumenbach and all his other predecessors was in his grasp of the principle that people should be studied by combining all available characters, and he accordingly discusses them at large with regard at once to bodily form, language, and state of civilization. One investigation begun in this work requires special mention, the bringing into view of the fact, neglected or contradicted by philologists, that the Celtic nations are allied by language with the Slavonian, German, and Pelasgian (Greek and Latin), thus forming a fourth European branch of the Asiatic stock (which would now be called Indo-European or Aryan). Prichard, whose own Celtic descent is shown by his name, was a fitting pro- mulgator of this leading principle of Celtic research. His special treatise containing Celtic compared with Sanskrit words appeared in 1831 under the title Hastern Origin of the Celtic Nations. It is remarkable that the essay by Adolphe Pictet, De PAffinité des Langues Celtuques avec le Sanscrit, which was crowned by the French Academy and made its author's reputation, should have been published in 1837 in evident ignorance of the earlier and in some respects stricter investigations of Prichard. His work has been re-edited since by Dr R. G. Latham (London, 1857), with large additions of Celtic material. Prichard's Analy- sts of Egyptian Mythology (London, 1819) had some popu- larity at the time, and was translated into German with a preface by A. W. v. Schlegel; its comparison of the Egyptian religion with Brahmanisin is now obsolete, and its author was unwise in bringing out a new edition in 1838, after Champollion's Grammar and Dictionary had opened the actual Egyptian inscriptions to scholars. Dr Prichard's last important book was a revision and condensation of his researches into a Natural History of Man (London, 1843), which has gone through several editions, and remains a standard work of the anthropologist's library. Towards the end of his life, in recognition of his services, he was made a commissioner of lunacy, and in consequence re- moved from Bristol to London, where he died in 1848.*~~

~~A memoir by his friend Dr Hodgkin will be found in the Journal of the Ethnological Society, of which he was one of the early presidents.~~

~~PRIDE, Tuomas (d. 1658), Parliamentary officer, was of humble origin, and is stated to have been brought up by the parish of St Bride's, London. Subsequently he was a drayman and a brewer. At the beginning of the Civil War he served as ensign under the earl of Essex, and gradually obtained promotion to the rank of colonel. He distinguished himself at the battle of Preston, 17th August 1648, and in Cromwell's Scottish campaign he held command of a brigade. He was noted for his resolute character and extreme anti-Royalist sentiments. After the Commons had voted that the king's concessions at Newport were a basis for a settlement, he was chosen by the army~~

~~chiefs to effect their purpose of "' purging" the Commons. Taking his stand at the entrance of the House of Commons with a written list in his hand, he caused the arrest of the Royalist members who were pointed out to him, and placed them in custody. After about a hundred members had been dealt with by this ordinance, subsequently known as '"Pride's Purge," the mutilated House of Commons proceeded to bring the king to trial. Pride was one of the judges of the king and signed his death-warrant. Under Cromwell he received the honour of knighthood, and was also chosen a member of the new House of Lords. He died at Nonsuch on 23d October 1658, and after the Restoration his body was dug up and suspended on the gallows at Tyburn along with that of Cromwell.~~

~~Noble, Lives of the Regicides; Bate, Lives of the Prime Actors and Principal Contrivers of the Murder of Charles I. ; Carlyle, Cromwell.~~

~~PRIDEAUX, Humpnurey (1648-1724), dean of Nor- wich, was the third son of Edward Prideaux of Place in Padstow, Cornwall, by his wife Bridget, daughter of John Moyle of Bake in the same county. Both families were of good repute in the west of England, and that of Prideaux was especially influential, as is shown by the elaborate pedigrees in Sir John Maclean's Deanery of Trigg Minor (ii. 194-242). He was born at Place on 3d May 1648, and received the rudiments of his education at the gram- mar-schools~~

~~*of Liskeard and Bodmin. In 1665 he was placed at Westminster under Dr Busby, and after staying there for three years was admitted a student at Christ Church, Oxford, taking his degrees in the following order, B.A. in 1672, M.A. 1675, B.D. 1682, and D.D. 1686. It was the rule of that house that its best scholars should, after they had taken their first degree, be employed in editing some classical writer, and Prideaux was accordingly deputed to superintend a new edition of Lucius Florus and to prepare for the press, from a Greek MS. in the Bodleian, a work by Johannes Malalas. The first of these works is now exceedingly scarce, if indeed a copy be in existence, and the second was, on his advice, left in manuscript. The famous Arundel marbles had just been given to the university, and Prideaux was instructed to undertake the task of describing the gift, his transcript of the inscriptions, with a commentary and additions from the Selden marbles, appearing in 1676. In 1679 he was appointed to the rectory of St Clement's, Oxford, and in the same year became Hebrew lecturer at Christ Church, whereupon he published two Hebrew tracts of Maimonides with a Latin translation and annotations. Prideaux con- tinued tutor at Christ Church until February 1686, hold- ing for the last three years the rectory of Bladon with Woodstock ; but in 1686 he exchanged for the benefice of Saham in Norfolk, and took up his residence in that county, with which he had for some time been connected through his appointment in August 1681 to a prebendal stall in Norwich cathedral. The sympathies of Prideaux inclined to Low Churchism in religion and to Whiggism in politics, and during the years which immediately preceded and succeeded the Revolution of 1688 he took an active part in the controversies of the day, publishing in quick succession the following pamphlets—7Zhe Validity of the Orders of the Church of England (1688), Letter to a Friend on the Present Convocation (1690), The Case of Clandestine Marriages stated (1691). Prideaux was promoted to the archdeaconry of Suffolk at the close of 1688 and to the deanery of Norwich in June 1702, and it was the wish of some of the members of the episcopal bench that he should have been appointed to the bishopric of Norwich, but their desires were not gratified. In 1694 he was obliged, through ill-health, to resign the rectory of Saham, and after having held the vicarage of Trowse for fourteen years*~~

~~(1696-1710) he found himself incapacitated, by repeated attacks of stone, from further parochial duty. — He died at Norwich on lst November 1724, and was buried in the cathedral on 4th November. His wife, Bridget, only daughter and sole heir of Anthony Bokenham of Helming- ham, Suffolk, died at Norwich in November 1700; they were married on 16th February 1686.~~

~~Many of the dean's writings were of great value, and their popu- larity continued unimpaired down to the present century. His Life of Mahomet, originally published in 1697, had passed through eight editions by 1723, and his Directions to Churchwardens, first issued in 1701, reached a twelfth edition in 1871. But the favour with which these volumes were received, great as it was, contrasts but badly with the extraordinary success of his account of The Old and New Testament connected in the History of the Jews, a work of great research and learning. This has been many times reissued since the appearance of the first part in 1716, and has been trans- lated into the French, German, and Italian languages. Le Clere subjected it to a critical examination. A series of remarks upon it is contained in Walter Moyle's works, and continuations were com- piled by Samuel Shuckford and Michael Russell. Prideaux published several small tracts, and many volumes of manuscript collections are in the possession of his descendant at Place. These, with par- ticulars of the dean's letters in print and in manuscript and with bibliographical details of his numerous publications, are described in the Bibliotheca Cornubiensts, ii. 527-533 and iii. 1319. A volume of his letters to John Ellis, some time under-secretary of state, was edited by Mr E. M. Thompson for the Camden Society in 1875, and contained a vivid picture of Oxford life after the Restoration ; but it will always be regretted that some passages in his correspond- ence should betray feelings unworthy of the writer. An anonymous life of Dean Prideaux appeared in 1748, but it was mainly compiled from a larger memoir by his son.~~

~~PRIESSNITZ, VINcENz. p. 542 sq.~~

~~PRIEST (Ger. Priester, Fr. prétre) is a contracted form of " presbyter" (mpeoBurepos, "elder"; see PRESBYTER), a name of office in the early Christian church, already men- tioned in the New Testament. But in the~~

~~*English Bible the presbyters of the New Testament are called "elders," not "priests"; the latter name is reserved for ministers of pre-Christian religions, the Semitic D273 (kahdntm, sing. kohén) and DY23 (kemarim), or the Greek tepe?s. The reason of this will appear more clearly in the sequel ; it is enough to observe at present that, before our English word was formed, the original idea of a presbyter had been over- laid with others derived from pre-Christian priesthoods, so that it is from these and not from the etymological force of the word that we must start in considering historically what a priest is. The theologians of the Greek and Latin Churches expressly found the conception of a Christian priesthood on the hierarchy of the Jewish temple, while the names by which the sacerdotal character is expressed—epevs, sacerdos—originally designated the ministers of sacred things in Greek and Roman heathen- ism, and then came to be used as translations into Greek and Latin of the Hebrew kohén. Kohén, icpevs, sacerdos, are in fact fair translations of one another; they all denote a minister whose stated business was to perform, on behalf of the community, certain public ritual acts, particularly sacrifices, directed godwards. Such ministers or priests existed in all the great religions of ancient civilization, and indeed a priesthood in the sense now defined is generally found, in all parts of the world, among races which have a tribal or national religion of definite character, and not merely an unorganized mass of super- stitious ideas, fears, and hopes issuing in practices of sorcery. The term "priest" is sometimes taken to include*~~

~~*sorcerer," just as religion is often taken to include the*~~

~~*See HypropartHy, vol. xii.*~~

~~*belief in mysterious or superhuman powers which can be:*~~

~~*constrained by spells, but this is an abuse of language. Religion begins when the relation of the divine powers to man is conceived—on the analogy of the relations of formed human society—as having a certain stable personal*~~

~~*character on which the worshippers can calculate and act. The gods of the ancient religions might do arbitrary acts, but their conduct towards man was not habitually arbi- trary. In so far as they could be reckoned on, they had a religion ; in so far as they were still arbitrary, or them- selves subject to the influence of unknown forces, room was left for the persistence of sorcery and similar superstitions, which history proves to have always renewed their strength in times when religious faith failed, when men ceased to be fully persuaded that the favour and help of the gods were sure if certain known conditions were fulfilled. In the best times of the antique religions no such doubts were felt ; the real interest of the gods in their worshippers was certain, for all good things came from their hands, and the actions on the part of individuals or of the state by which their favour was maintained, lost, or regained were matter of undisputed tradition, The main points of this tradition were known to every one concerned, and difficult cases were resolved by experts—such as the Greek é&nynrat—or referred, through some form of oracle, to the gods themselves. The relations of the gods to men, as thus traditionally defined, were not so much to individuals as to families, tribes, or states, and it was the business of the community to see that they were maintained on a sound footing. This was partly done by watching over the conduct of individuals, for every one had certain religious duties ; and conversely, certain acts of a private as well as of a public character were hateful to the gods, and, unless expiated, might bring calamity to the whole community. But it was also necessary to honour the gods by direct acts of homage, by images and temples, by feasts and sacrifices. To attend to these things was an essential part of the right government of the state, the right ordering of tribal and family life, and they could not be wholly left to the spontaneity of individuals, but necessarily fell to be per- formed on behalf of the community by its natural head or by specially appointed officials. In either case the service done to the gods on behalf of many may properly be called "priestly service," though in the former case the priesthood, being only one of the many functions of domestic or civil authority, was not necessarily recognized by a special name. Both kinds of priesthood are found in the old civilization of southern Europe: thus Homer knows special priests who preside over ritual acts in the temples to which they are attached ; but his kings also do sacrifice on behalf of their people. The king, in fact, both in Greece and in Rome, was the acting head of the state religion, and when the regal power came to an*~~

~~*end his sacred functions were not transferred to the ordinary priests, but either they were distributed among high officers of state, as archons and prytanes, or the title of "king" was still preserved as that of a religious functionary, as in the case of the rex sacrorum at Rome and the archon basileus at Athens. In the domestic circle the union of priesthood and natural headship was never disturbed ; the Roman paterfamilias sacrificed for the whole family. On the other hand, gentes and phratriz, which had no natural head, had special priests chosen from their members ; for every circle of ancient society, from the family up to the state, was a religious as well as a civil unity, and had its own gods and sacred rites. The lines of religious and civil so- ciety were identical, and so long as they remained so no antagonism could arise between the spiritual and the temporal power. In point of fact, in Greece and Rome the priest never attained to any considerable independent importance ; we cannot speak of priestly power and hardly even of a distinct priestly class. In Greece the priest, so far as he is an independent functionary and not one of the magistrates, is simply the elected or hereditary minister of a temple charged with " those things which are ordained*~~

~~*PRS T*~~

~~*to be done towards the gods" (see Aristotle, Pol., vi. 8), and remunerated from the revenues of the temple, or by the gifts of worshippers and sacrificial dues. The position was often lucrative and always honourable, and the priests were under the special protection of the gods they served. But their purely ritual functions gave them no means of establishing a considerable influence on the minds of men, and the technical knowledge which they possessed as to the way in which the gods could be acceptably approached was neither so intricate nor so mysterious as to give the class a special importance. The funds of the temples were not in their control, but were treated as public moneys. Above all, where, as at Athens, the decision of questions of sacred law fell not to the priests but to the college of é£yynrai, one great source of priestly power was wholly lacking. There remains, indeed, one other sacred function of great importance in the ancient world in which the Greek priests had a share. As man approached the gods in sacrifice and prayers, so too the gods declared themselves to men by divers signs and tokens, which it was possible to read by the art of*~~

~~*Divination (q.v.). In many nations divination and priesthood have always gone hand in hand; at Rome, for example, the augurs and the XVviri sacrorum, who interpreted the Sibylline books, were priestly colleges. In Greece, on the other hand, divina- tion was not generally a priestly function, but it did belong to the priests of the Oracles (see OraciE). The great oracles, however, were of Panhellenic celebrity and did not serve each a particular state, and so in this direction also the risk of an independent priestly power within the state was avoided.)*~~

~~*In Rome, again, where the functions of the priesthood were politically much more weighty, where the techni- calities of religion were more complicated, where priests interpreted the will of the gods, and where the pontifis had a most important jurisdiction in sacred things, the state was much too strong to suffer these powers to escape from its own immediate control: the old monarchy of the king in sacred things descended to the inheritors of his temporal power ; the highest civil and religious functions met in the same persons (comp. Cic., De Dom., i. 1) ; and every priest was subject to the state exactly as the magistrates were, referring all weighty matters to state decision and then executing what the one supreme power decreed. And it is instructive to observe that when the plebeians extorted their full share of political power they also demanded and obtained admission to every priestly college of political importance, to those, namely, of the pontiffs, the augurs, and the XVviri sacrorum. The Romans, it need hardly be said, did not have hereditary priests.'*~~

~~*The same close connexion between state and religion meets us, under the forms of Oriental despotism, in the great civilizations of Egypt and Babylonia. Here all civil and religious power has its source in the king, and he is therefore himself the centre and head of the priesthood. Nowhere is religion more thoroughly a part of statecraft than in ancient Egypt; the official religion of the united monarchy is plainly an artificial structure built up by priestly fable and speculation out of the old religions of the several nomes and dedicated to the service of the monarchy. The priesthood accordingly has large functions, including, besides the service of the temples, astrology and divination, and the development and preservation of a sort of official theology and ritual theory, by which the conflict-*~~

~~*npn an*~~

~~*1 For the Greek priests, see, besides Schémann and other works on Greek antiquities, Newton, Essays on Art and Archzology, p. 136 sq. (from epigraphic material).*~~

~~*2 On the Roman priests, see in general Marquardt, Rémische Staats-verwaltung, vol. iii., and for the pontiffs in particular PoNTIFEX, supra, p. 455.*~~

~~*725*~~

~~*ing elements of local religion and mythology were recon-*~~

~~*ciled. It has a strict bureaucratic organization, hke any other branch of the administration ; the higher priests are great officers of state, with civil and even military power ; under Smendes (XXIst Dynasty) the priests of Amon at Thebes actually ascended the throne. An absolute mon- archy, in which the king is revered as himself a divine person and in which the ministers of religion are the organs of a comprehensive and mysterious statecraft, obviously offers to sacerdotalism a far greater career than was pos- sible among the free peoples of Greece and Rome; and the priests held in their hands the whole wisdom of the Egyptians, and so kept all parts of culture in such strict subservience, alike to the gods and to the monarchy, as to make the empire of the Nile the ideal type of absolutism based on divine right. In this respect, however, the Babylonian system, of which we have less ample details, probably fell little short of the Egyptian. HIere also we find, as in Egypt, a state religion built on a priestly fusion of older cults, and therefore also a mythological theology which is not folk-lore but priest-lore. The older elements of religion are worked into a theoretic system of astral powers, and this in turn gives rise to a priestly study of astrology containing elements of real science. This com- plicated and many-sided lore gave to the priesthoods of Chaldzea and the Nile the character of a learned class, which is quite wanting in Greece and Rome, and it also produced a sacred and sacerdotal literature quite different in range and importance from such Western analogues as the Sibylline books or the libri augurales.*~~

~~*Against the genuine intellectual achievements of the Chaldean and Egyptian priests must be set the incorpora- tion of magic and sorcery in the circle of priestly sciences. The ordinary functions of religion are directed to conciliate or persuade the gods, but magic pretends to constrain the supernatural powers, and belongs, as we have seen, to super- stition rather than to religion. But in Egypt and Baby- lonia the state religion was an artificial mosaic of old beliefs, in which the crassest superstitions had their place, and thus magical arts received a state recognition and were part of the business of the state priests in a way unknown in the West. Occult arts, in fact, are part of the machinery of government. Now when we go still farther east to the Aryans of India we again find the idea prominent that certain formulas have the power of con- straining the gods, but in a form somewhat different from that of mere sorcery, and less primitive. All ancient peoples sought victory from the gods, and they sought it by sacrifice and prayer; but nowhere is the power of sacrifice more strongly felt than among the ancient Aryans; it was Agni, the sacrificial flame, as ancient legend has it, that led the conquerors of India from victory to victory. But there were also bloody struggles among the Aryans themselves, between men who invoked the same deity, and here the issue was not whether Indra was stronger than the gods of the non-Aryans, but which of the rival sacrifices he would accept. Now the priests accompanied sacrifice with songs of invocation, and so it became essential to have the most powerful song, which the god could not resist. The knowledge of these songs and of all that accompanied their use was handed down in priestly families, whose aid became indispensable to every sovereign, and at last out of these families there grew up the great and privileged caste of Brahmans. For further details as to the development of the priestly caste and wisdom in India the reader must refer to BRAHMANISM; here it is enough to observe that among a religious people a priesthood which forms a close and still more an hereditary corporation, and the assistance of which is indispensable in all religious acts, must rise to practical supremacy in society except*~~

~~*under the strongest form of despotism, where the sovereign is head of the church as well as of the state. ; Among the Zoroastrian Iranians, as among the Indian Aryans, the aid of a priest to recite the sacrificial liturgy was*~~

~~*necessary at every offering (Herod., i. 132), and the Iranian priests (4thravans, later Magi) claimed, like the Brahmans, to be the highest order of society ; but a variety of conditions were lacking to give them the full place of their Indian brethren. Zoroastrianism is not a nature religion, but the result of a reform which never, under the old empire, thoroughly penetrated the masses ; and the priesthood, as it was not based on family tradition, did not form a strict hereditary caste. Under the Sdsdnians, however, Zoroastrianism was a state religion in the strictest sense, and the priests attained very great power, their assistance being absolutely necessary not only in the public ritual of the fire-temple but for the constant guidance of every individual in the minute details of ceremonial observance, which make up the chief body of the religious system of the sacred books, and every breach of which involved penance. It is thus easily understood that the clergy formed a compact hierarchy not inferior in influence to the clergy of the Christian Middle Ages, had great power in the state, and were often irksome even to the great king. But the best established hierarchy is not so powerful as a caste, and the monarchs had one strong hold on the clergy by retaining the patronage of great ecclesi-astical places, and another in the fact that the Semitic provinces on the Tigris, where the capital lay, were mainly inhabited by men of other faith.1 In this rapid glance at some of the chief priesthoods of antiquity we have hitherto passed over the pure Semites, whose priesthoods call for closer examination because of the profound influence which one of them—that of the Jews—has exercised on Christianity, and so on the whole history of the modern world. But before we proceed to this it may be well to note one or two things that come out by comparison of the systems already before us. Priestly acts—that is, acts done by one and accepted by the gods on behalf of many—are common to all antique religions, and cannot be lacking where the primary subject of religion is not the individual but the natural community. But the origin of a separate priestly class, distinct from the natural heads of the community, cannot be explained by any such broad general principle; in some cases, as in Greece, it is little more than a matter of convenience that part of the religious duties of the state should be con-fided to special ministers charged with the care of particu- lar temples, while in others the intervention of a special priesthood is indispensable to the validity of every religious act, so that the priest ultimately becomes a mediator and the vehicle of all divine grace. This position, we see, can be*~~

~~*reached by various paths: the priest may become in- dispensable through the growth of ritual observances and precautions too complicated for a layman to master, or he may lay claim to special nearness to the gods on the ground, it may be, of his race, or it may be of habitual practices of purity and asceticism which cannot be com- bined with the duties of ordinary life, as, for example, celibacy was required of priestesses of Vesta at Rome. But the highest developments of priestly influence are hardly separable from something of magical superstition ; the opus operatum of the priest has the power of a sorcerer's spell. The strength of the priesthood in Chaldea and in Egypt stands plainly in the closest connexion with the survival of a magical element in the state religion, and Rome, in like manner, is more priestly than Greece because it is more superstitious, In most cases, however, where an ancient civilization shows us a strong priestly system 1 Compare especially Noldeke's Tabari, p. 450 sg."*~~

~~*Pil me i*~~

~~*we are unable to make out in any detail the steps by which that system was elaborated ; the clearest case per- haps is the priesthood of the Jews, which is not less interesting from its origin and growth than from the influ- ence exerted by the system long after the priests were dispersed and their sanctuary laid in ruins.*~~

~~*Among the nomadic Semites, to whom the Hebrews be- longed before they settled in Canaan, there has never been any developed priesthood. The acts of religion partake of the general simplicity of desert life ; apart from the private worship of household gods and the oblations and salutations offered at the graves of departed kinsmen, the ritual observances of the ancient Arabs were visits to the tribal sanctuary to salute the god with a gift of milk first-fruits or the like, the sacrifice of firstlings and vows (see Nazar- ITE and Passover), and an occasional pilgrimage to dis- charge a vow at the annual feast and fair of one of the more distant holy places (see Mecca). These acts required no priestly aid ; each man slew his own victim and divided the sacrifice in his own circle; the share of the god was the blood which was smeared upon or poured out beside a stone (nosb, ghabghab) set up as an altar or perhaps as a symbol ofthe deity. It does not appear that any portion of the sacrifice was burned on the altar, or that any part of the*~~

~~*victim was the due of the sanctuary. We find therefore no trace of a sacrificial priesthood, but each temple had one or more doorkeepers (sddin, hdjib), whose office was usually hereditary in a certain family and who had the charge of the temple and its treasures. The sacrifices and offerings were acknowledgments of divine bounty and means used to insure its continuance; the Arab was the "slave" of his god and paid him tribute, as slaves used to do to their masters, or subjects to their lords ; and the free Bedouin, trained in the solitude of the desert to habits of absolute self-reliance, knew no master except his god, and acknowledged no other will before which his own should bend. Hence the other side of Arab religion was to look for divine direction in every grave or difficult concern of life; what could not be settled in the free council of the tribesmen, or by the unenforced award of an umpire, was referred to the command of the god, and the oracle was the only authority by which dissen- sions could be healed, lawsuits determined, and judgment authoritatively spoken. The voice of the god might be uttered in omens which the skilled could read, or con- veyed in the inspired rhymes of soothsayers, but frequently it was sought in the oracle of the sanctuary, where the sacred lot was administered for a fee by the sddin. The sanctuary thus became a seat of judgment, and here too compacts were sealed by oaths and sacrificial ceremonies. These institutions, though known to us only from sources belonging to an age when the old faith was falling to pieces, are certainly very ancient. Their whole stamp is primitive, and they correspond in the closest way with what we know of the earliest religion of the Israelites, the only other Semitic people whose history can be traced back to a time when they had not fully emerged from nomad life. And, in fact, the fundamental type of the Arabic sanctuary can be traced through all the Semitic lands, and so appears to be older than the Semitic disper- sion ; even the technical terms are mainly the same, so that we may justly assume that the more developed ritual and priesthoods of the settled Semites sprang from a state of things not very remote from what we find among the heathen Arabs. Now among the Arabs, as we have seen, ritual service is the affair of the individual, or of a mass of individuals gathered in a great feast, but still doing worship each for himself and his own private circle ; the only public aspect of religion is found in connexion with divination and the oracle to which the affairs of the com-*~~

~~munity are submitted. In Greece and Rome the public sacrifices were the chief function of religion, and in them the priesthood represented the ancient kings. But in the desert there is no king and no sovereignty save that of the divine oracle, and therefore it is from the soothsayers or ministers of the oracle that a public ministry of religion can most naturally spring. With the beginning of a settled state the sanctuaries must rise in importance and all the functions of revelation will gather round them. A sacri- ficial priesthood will arise as the worship becomes more complex (especially as sacrifice in antiquity is a common preliminary to the consultation of an oracle), but the public ritual will still remain closely associated with oracle or divination, and the priest will still be, above all things, arevealer. That this was what actually happened may be inferred from the fact that the Canaanite and Pheenician name for a priest (kdhkén) is identical with the Arabic kahin, a "soothsayer." Soothsaying was no modern im- portation in Arabia; its characteristic form—a monotonous croon of short rhyming clauses—is the same as was prac- tised by the Hebrew " wizards who peeped and muttered " in the days of Isaiah, and that this form was native in Arabia is clear from its having a technical name (saj'), which in Hebrew survives only in derivative words with modified sense.1 The kahin, therefore, is not a degraded priest but such a soothsayer as is found in most primitive societies, and the Canaanite priests grew out of these early revealers. In point of fact sonie form of revelation or oracle appears to have existed in every great shrine of Canaan and Syria,? and the importance of this element in the cultus may be measured from the fact that at Hierapolis it was the charge of the chief priest, just as in the Leviti- cal legislation. But the use of "kahin" for "priest" in the Canaanite area points to more than this: it is connected with the orgiastic character of Canaanite religion. The soothsayer differs from the priest of an oracle by giving his revelation under excitement and often in a frenzy allied to madness. In natural soothsaying this frenzy is the necessary physical accompaniment of an afflatus which, though it seems supernatural to a rude people, is really akin to poetic inspiration. But it is soon learned that a similar physical state can be produced artificially, and at the Canaanite sanctuaries this was done on a large scale. We see from 1 Kings xviii, 2 Kings x., that the great Baal temples had two classes of ministers, kohdnim and nébiim, "priests" and '~~

~~prophets," and as the former bear a name which primarily denotes a soothsayer, so the latter are also a kind of priests who do sacrificial service with a wild ritual of their own. HOw deeply the orgiastic character was stamped on the priesthoods of north Semitic nature-worship is clear from Greek and Roman accounts, such as that of Appuleius (Afetam., bk. viii.). Sensuality and religious excitement of the wildest kind went hand in hand, and a whole army of degraded ministers of a religion of the passions was gathered round every famous shrine. The Hebrews, who made the language of Canaan their own, took also the Canaanite name for a priest. But the earliest forms of Hebrew priesthood are not Canaanite in character ; the priest, as he appears in the older records of the time of the Judges, Eli at Shiloh, Jonathan in the private temple of Micah and at Dan, is much liker the sddin than the kahin.? The whole structure of Hebrew~~

~~1 Méshugga', 2 Kings ix. 11, Jer. xxix. 26,—a term of contempt applied to prophets.~~

~~2 For examples, see PALMYRA and PHILISTINES ; see further, Lucian, De Dea Syria, 36, for Hierapolis ; Zosimus, i. 58, for Aphaca; Pliny, HT N., xxxvii. 58 (compared with Lucian, ut supra, and Movers, Phoe- nizier, i. 655), for the temple of Melkart at Tyre.~~

~~3 This appears even in the words used as synonyms for " priest," Mwn, 4D WY, which exactly correspond to sadin and hajih. 'That the name of {73 was borrowed from the Canaanites appears certain,~~

~~727~~

~~society at the time of the conquest was almost precisely that of a federation of Arab tribes, and the religious ordi- nances are scarcely distinguishable from those of Arabia, save only that the great deliverance of the Exodus and the period when Moses, sitting in judgment at the sanctuary of Kadesh, had for a whole generation impressed the sovereignty of Jehovah on all the tribes, had created an idea of unity between the scattered settlements in Canaan such as the Arabs before Mohammed never had. But neither in civil nor in religious life was this ideal unity expressed in fixed institutions; the old individualism of the Semitic nomad still held its ground. Thus the firstlings, first-fruits, and vows are still the free gift of the individual which~~

~~no human authority exacts, and which every house- holder presents and consumes with his circle in a sacrificial feast without priestly aid. As in Arabia, the ordinary sanc- tuary is still a sacred stone (N2Y!D = nosh) set up under the~~

~~open heaven, and here the blood of the victim is poured out as an offering to God (see especially 1 Sam. xiv. 34, and compare 2 Sam. xxiii. 16,17). The priest has no place in this ritual; he is not the minister of an altar,* but the guardian of a temple, such as was already found here and there in the land for the custody of sacred images and palladia or other consecrated things (the ark at Shiloh, 1 Sam. iii. 3; images in Micah's temple, Judges xvii. 5; Goliath's sword lying behind the " ephod" or plated image at Nob, 1 Sam. xxi. 9; no doubt also money, as in the Canaanite temple at Shechem, Judges ix. 4). Such trea- sures required a guardian ; but, above all, wherever there was a temple there was an oracle, a kind of sacred lot, just as in Arabia (1 Sam. xiv. 41, Sept.), which could only be drawn where there was an "ephod" and a priest (1 Sam. xiv. 18 Sept. and xxiii. 6 sg.). The Hebrews had already possessed a tent-temple and oracle of this kind in the wilderness (Exod. xxxiii. 7 sq.), of which Moses was the priest and Joshua the eedituus, and ever since that time the judgment of God through the priest at the sanctuary had a greater weight than the word of a seer, and was the ultimate solution of every controversy and claim (1 Sam. ii. 25; Exod. xxi. 6, xxii. 8, 9, where for "judge," "judges," read "God"). The temple at Shiloh, where the ark was preserved, was the lineal descendant of the Mosaic sanctuary—for it was not the place but the palladium and its oracle that were the essential thing— and its priests claimed kin with Moses himself. In the divided state of the nation, indeed, this sanctuary was hardly visited from beyond Mount Ephraim; and every man or tribe that cared to provide the necessary apparatus (ephod, teraphim, &c.) and hire a priest might have a temple and oracle of his own at which to consult Jehovah (Judges xvii., xviii.) ; but there was hardly another sanc- for that out of the multiplicity of words for soothsayers and the like common to Hebrew and Arabic (either formed from a common root or expressing exactly the same idea—"3))1), 'arraf ; 72m, habir ; mtn, Ms, hazi; DDP, comp. istiksaim) the two nations should have chosen the same one independently to mean a priest is, in view of the great difference in character between old Hebrew and Canaanite priest- hoods, inconceivable. Besides j73 Hebrew has the~~

~~word 795 (pl. 0°93), which, however, is hardly applied to priests of the national religion. This, in fact, is the old Aramaic word for a priest (with suffixed article, kKwmra). Its origin is obscure, but, as it belongs to a race in which the mass of the people were probably not circumcised (Herod., ii. 104, compared with Joseph., Anz., viii. 10, 3, and C. Ap., i, 22) while the priests were (Dio Cassius, Ixxix. 11; Mp. Barnabe, ix. 6; comp. Chwolson, Ssabier, ii. 114), it may be conjectured that kumra means the circumcised (Ar. kKamara, "glans penis").~~

~~4 Tt is not clear from 1 Sam. ii. 15 whether even at Shiloh the priest had anything to do with sacrifice, whether those who burned the fat were the worshippers themselves or some subordinate ministers of the temple. Certainly it was not "the priest' who did so, for he in this narrative is always in the singular. Hophniand Phinehas are not~~

~~called priests, though they bore the ark, and so were priests in the sense of Josh. iii.~~

~~728~~

~~tuary of equal dignity. The priest of Shiloh is a much greater person than Micah's priest Jonathan ; at the great feasts he sits enthroned by the doorway, preserving decorum among the worshippers ; he has certain legal dues, and if he is disposed to exact more no one ventures to resist al Sam. ii. 12 sg., where the text needs a slight correction). The priestly position of the family survived the fall of Shiloh and the captivity of the ark, and it was members of this house who consulted Jehovah for the early kings until Solomon deposed Abiathar. Indeed, though priesthood was not yet tied to one family, so that Micah's son, or Eleazar of Kirjath-jearim (1 Sam. vii. 1), or David's sons (2 Sam. viii. 18) could all be priests, a Levite—that is, a man of Moses' tribe—was already preferred for the office elsewhere than at Shiloh (Judges xvii. 13), and such a priest naturally handed down his place to his posterity (Judges xviii. 30).~~

~~Ultimately, indeed, as sanctuaries were multiplied and the priests all over the land came to form one well-marked class, "Levite" and legitimate priest became equivalent expressions, as has been explained in detail in the article Levites. But between the priesthood of Eli at Shiloh or Jonathan at~~

~~*Dan and the priesthood of the Levites as described in Deut. xxxiii. 8 sq. there lies a period of the iuner history of which we know almost nothing. It is plain that the various priestly colleges regarded themselves as one order, that they had common traditions of law and ritual which were traced back to Moses, and common interests which had not been vindicated without a struggle (Deut., ut sup.). The kingship had not deprived them of their functions as fountains of divine judgment (comp. Deut. xvii. 8 sg.); on the contrary, the decisions of the sanctuary had grown up into a body of sacred law, which the priests administered according to a traditional preced- ent. According to Semitic ideas the declaration of law is quite a distinct function from the enforcing of it, and the royal executive came into no collision with the purely declaratory functions of the priests. The latter, on the contrary, must have grown in importance with the unifica- tion and progress of the nation, and in all probability the consolidation of the priesthood into one class went hand in hand with a consolidation of legal tradition. And this work must have been well done, for, though the general corruption of society at the beginning of the Assyrian period was nowhere more conspicuous than at the sanctu- aries and among the priesthood, the invective of Hos. iv. equally with the eulogium of Deut. xxxiii. proves that the position which the later priests abused had been won by ancestors who earned the respect of the nation as worthy representatives of a divine Torah.*~~

~~*The ritual functions of the priesthood still appear in Deut. xxxili. as secondary to that of declaring the sentence of God, but they were no longer insignificant. With the prosperity of the nation, and especially through the absorp- tion of the Canaanites and of their holy places, ritual had become much more elaborate, and in royal sanctuaries at least there were regular public offerings maintained by the king and presented by the priests (comp. 2 Kings xvi. 15). Private sacrifices, too, could hardly be offered without some priestly aid now that ritual was more complex; the pro- vision of Deut. xviii. as to the priestly dues is certainly ancient, and shows that besides the.tribute of first-fruits and the like the priests had a fee in kind for each sacrifice, as we find to have been the case among the Pheenicians accord- Ing to the sacrificial tablet of Marseilles. Their judicial functions also brought profit to the priests, fines being exacted for certain offences and paid to them (2 Kings xii. ee oe 8; Amos ii. 8). The greater priestly offices sadinitie pe ee = cg respect very important places,*~~

~~*e royal sanctuaries were among the*~~

~~*PRIiSsa*~~

~~*grandees of the realm (2 Sam. viii. 18; 2 Kings x. 11, xii. 2); minor offices in the sanctuaries were in the patronage of the great priests and were often miserable enough,) the petty priest depending largely on what "customers" he could find (2 Kings xii. 7 [8]; Deut. xviii. 8). That at least the greater offices were hereditary—as in the case of the sons of Zadok, who succeeded to the royal priesthood in Jerusalem after the fall of Abiathar—was almost a matter of course as society was then constituted, but there is not the slightest trace of an hereditary hierarchy officiating by divine right, such as existed after the exile. The sons of Zadok, the priests of the royal chapel, were the king's servants as absolutely as any other great officers of state ; they owed their place to the fiat of King Solomon, and the royal will was supreme in all matters of cultus (2 Kings xil., xvi. 10 sg.); indeed the monarchs of Judah, like those of other nations, did sacrifice in person when they chose down to the time of the captivity (1 Kings ix. 25; 2 Kings xvi. 12 sg.; Jer. xxx. 21). And as the sons of Zadok had no divine right as against the kings, so too they had no claim to be more legitimate than the priests of the local sanctuaries, who also were reckoned to the tribe which in the 7th century B.c. was recognized as having been divinely set apart as Jehovah's ministers in the days of Moses (Deut. x. 8, xviii. 1 sg.).*~~

~~*The steps which prepared the way for the post-exile hierarchy, the destruction of the northern sanctuaries and priesthoods by the Assyrians, the polemic of the spiritual prophets against the corruptions of popular worship, which issued in the reformation of Josiah, the suppression of the provincial shrines of Judah and the transference of their ministers to Jerusalem, the successful resistance of the sons of Zadok to the proposal to share the sanctuary on equal terms with these new-comers, and the theoretical justifica- tion of the degradation of the latter to the position of mere servants in the temple supplied by Ezekiel soon after the captivity, have already been explained in the article LevITEs and in PENTATEUCH (vol. xviii. p. 510), and only one or two points call for additional remark here.*~~

~~*It is instructive to observe how differently the prophets of the 8th century speak of the judicial or "teaching" functions of the priests and of the ritual of the great sanctuaries. For the latter they have nothing but con- demnation, but the former they acknowledge as part of the divine order of the state, while they complain that the priests have prostituted their office for lucre. In point of fact the one rested on old Hebrew tradition, the other had taken shape mainly under Canaanite influence, and in most of its features was little more than the crassest nature- worship. In this respect there was no distinction between the temple of Zion and other shrines, or rather it was just in the greatest sanctuary with the most stately ritual that foreign influences had most play, as we see alike in the original institutions of Solomon and in the innovations of Ahaz (2 Kings xvi. 10 sg., xxiii. 11 sqg.). The Canaanite influence on the later organization of the temple is clearly seen in the association of temple prophets with the temple priests under the control of the chief priest, which is often referred to by Jeremiah; even the viler ministers of sensual worship, the male and female prostitutes of the Phoenician temples, had found a place on Mount Zion and were only removed by Josiah's reformation.2 So, too, the more com- plex sacrificial ritual which was now in force is manifestly not independent of the Pheenician ritual as we know it from the Marseilles tablet. All this necessarily tended to make the ritual ministry of the priests more important*~~

~~*1 See 1 Sam. ii. 36, a passage written after the hereditary dignity of the sons of Zadok at Jerusalem was well established.*~~

~~*2 2 Kings xxiii.7; comp. Deut. xxiii. 18, where " dogs" = the later Galli; comp. Corp. Insc. Sem., i. 98 sq.*~~

~~*Pip 1 ae 7*~~

~~*than it had been in old times; but it was in the dark days of Assyrian tyranny, in the reign of Manasseh, when the sense of divine wrath lay heavy on the people, when the old ways of seeking Jehovah's favour had failed and new and more powerful means of atonement were eagerly sought for (Micah vi. 6 sg.; 2 Kings xxi.; and comp. Motoen), that sacrificial functions reached their full importance. In the time of Josiah altar service and not the function of " teach- ing" has become the essential thing in priesthood (Deut. x. 8, xviii. 7); the latter, indeed, is not forgotten (Jer. ii. 8, xviii. 18),*~~

~~*but by the time of Ezekiel it also has mainly ‹o do with ritual, with the distinction between holy and profane, clean and unclean, with the statutory observances at festivals and the like (Ezek. xliv. 23 sg.). What the priestly Torah was at the time of the exile can be seen from the collection of laws in Lev. xvii.-xxvi., which includes many moral precepts, but regards them equally with ritual precepts from the point of view of the maintenance of national holiness. 'The sacrificial ritual of the Priestly Code (see PENTATEUCH) is governed by the same principle. The holiness of Israel centres in the sanctuary, and round the sanctuary stand the priests, who alone can approach the most holy things without profanation, and who are the guardians of Israel's sanctity, partly by protecting the one meeting-place of God and man from profane contact, and partly as the mediators of the continual atoning rites by which breaches of holiness are expiated.*~~

~~*The bases of priestly power under this system are the unity of the altar, its inaccessibility to laymen and to the inferior ministers of the sanctuary, and the specific atoning function of the blood of priestly sacrifices. All these things were unknown in old Israel: the altars were many, they were open to laymen, and the atoning function of the priest was judicial, not sacrificial. So fundamental a change as lies between Hosea and the Priestly Code was only possible in the general dissolution of the old life of Israel produced by the Assyrians and by the prophets; and indeed, as is explained under PenrATEUCH, the new order did not take shape as a system till the exile had made a tabula rasa of all old institutions; but it was undoubtedly the legitimate and consistent outcome of the latest develop- ment of the temple worship at Jerusalem before the exile. It was meant also to give expression to the demands of the prophets for spiritual service and national holiness, but this it did not accomplish so successfully; the ideas of the prophets could not be realized under any ritual system, but only in a new dispensation (Jer. xxxi. 31 sq.)s when priestly Torah and priestly atonement should be no longer required. Nevertheless, the concentration of all ritual at a single point, and the practical exclusion of lay- men from active participation in it—for the old sacrificial feast had now shrunk into entire insignificance in compari- son with the stated priestly holocausts and atoning rites?—lent powerful assistance to the growth of a new and higher type of personal religion, the religion which found its social expression not in material acts of oblation but in the language of the Psalms. In the best*~~

~~*times of the old kingdom the priests had shared the place of the prophets as the religious leaders of the nation; under the second temple they represented the unprogressive traditional side of religion, and the leaders of thought were the psalmists and the scribes, who spoke much more directly to the piety of the nation.*~~

~~*But, on the other hand, the material influence of the priests was greater than it had ever been before; the temple was the only visible centre of national life in the ages of servitude to foreign power, and the priests were the only great national functionaries, who drew to them-*~~

~~*1 Compare the impression which the ritual produced on the Greeks, Bernays's Theophrastus, pp. 85, 111 sq.*~~

~~*Tae*~~

~~*selves all the sacred dues as a matter of right and even appropriated the tithes paid of old to the king. The great priests had always belonged to the ruling class, but the Zadokites were now the only hereditary aristocracy, and the high priest, who now stands forth above his breth- ren with a prominence unknown to the times of the first temple, is the one legitimate head of the theocratic state, as well as its sole representative in the highest acts of religion (comp. PENTATEUCH, vol. xviii. p. 510). When the high priest stood at the altar in all his princely state, when he poured out the libation amidst the blare of trumpets, and the singers lifted up their voice and all the people fell prostrate in prayer till he descended and raised his hands in blessing, the slaves of the Greek or the Persian forgot for a moment their bondage and knew that the day of their redemption was near (Ecclus.1.). The high priest at such a moment seemed to embody all the glory of the nation, as the kings had done of old, and when the time came to strike a successful blow for freedom it was a priestly house that led the nation to the victory which united in one person the functions of high priest and prince. From the foundation of the Hasmonean state to the time of Herod the history of the high-priesthood merges in the political history of the nation; from Herod onward the priestly aristocracy of the Sadducees lost its chief hold over the nation and expired in vain controversy with the Pharisees. (See Israzt.)*~~

~~*The influence of the Hebrew priesthood on the thought and organization of Christendom was the influence not of a living institution, for it hardly began till after the fall of the temple, but of the theory embodied in the later*~~

~~*parts of the Pentateuch. Two points in this theory were*~~

~~*laid hold of—the doctrine of priestly mediation and the system of priestly hierarchy. 'The first forms the text of the principal argument in the Epistle to the Hebrews, in which the author easily demonstrates the inadequacy of the mediation and atoning rites of the Old Testament, and builds upon this demonstration the doctrine of the effectual high-priesthood of Christ, who, in His sacrifice of Himself, truly "led His people to God," not leaving them outside as He entered the heavenly sanctuary, but taking them with Him into spiritual nearness to the throne of grace. This argument leaves no room for a special priesthood in the Christian church, and in fact nothing of the kind is found in the oldest organization of the new communities of faith. The idea that presbyters and bishops are priests and the successors of the Old Testament priesthood first appears in full force in the writings of Cyprian, and here it is not the notion of priestly mediation but that of priestly power which is insisted on. Church office is a copy of the old hierarchy. Now among the Jews, as we have seen, the hierarchy proper has for its necessary condition the destruction of the state and the bondage of Israel to a foreign prince, so that spiritual power is the only basis left for a national aristocracy. The same conditions have produced similar spiritual aristocracies again and again in the East in more modern times, and even in antiquity more than one Oriental priesthood took a line of development similar to that which we have traced in Judea. Thus the hereditary priests of Kozah (Ko(é) were the chief digni- taries in Idumea at the time of the Jewish conquest of the country (Jos., Ant., xv. 7, 9), and the high priest of Hierapolis wore the princely purple and crown like the high priest of the Jews (De Dea Syria, 42). The kingly insignia of the high priest of the sun at Emesa are described by Herodian (v. 3, 3), in connexion with the history of Elagabalus, whose elevation to the Roman purple was mainly due to the extraordinary local influence of his sacer- dotal place. Other examples of priestly princes are given by Strabo in speaking of Pessinus (p. 567) and Olbe XIX.—92*~~

~~672).1 As no such hierarchy existed in the West, it is plain that if the idea of Christian priesthood was influ- enced by living institutions as well as by the Old Testa- ment that influence must be sought in the East (comp. Lightfoot, Philippians, p. 261). The further development of the notion of Christian priesthood was connected with the view that the Eucharist is a propitiatory sacrifice which only a consecrated priest can perform. The history of this development is still very obscure, especially as regards its connexion with heathen ideas, but something will fall to be said on it under the heading of Sacririce. It is sufficient to remark here that the presentation of the sacri- fice of the mass came to be viewed as the essential priestly office, so that the Christian presbyter really was a sacerdos in the antique sense. Protestants, in rejecting the sacrifice of the mass, deny also that there is a Christian priesthood "like the Levitical," and have either dropped the name of "priest" or use it in a quite emasculated sense.~~

~~There is probably no nature religion among races above mere savagery which has not had a priesthood ; but an ex- amination of other examples would scarcely bring out any important feature that has not been already illustrated. Among higher religions orthodox Islam has never had real priests, doing religious acts on behalf of others, though it has, like Protestant churches, leaders of public devotion (imams) and an important class of privileged religious teachers ('ulem4). But a distinction of grades of holiness gained by ascetic life has never been entirely foreign to the Eastern mind, and in the popular faith of Mohammedan peoples something very like priesthood has crept in by this channel. For where holiness is associated with ascetic practices the masses can never attain to a perfect life, and naturally tend to lean on the professors of special sanctity as the mediators of their religious welfare. The best example, however, of a full- blown priestly system with a monastic hierarchy grafted in this way on a religion originally not priestly is found in Tibetan Buddhism (see Lamaism), and similar causes undoubtedly had their share in the development of sacerdotalism in the Christian church. The idea of priestly asceticism expressed in the celibacy of the clergy belongs also to certain types of heathen and especially Semitic priesthood, to those above all in which the priestly service is held to have a magical or theurgic quality. (WwW. R. 8.)~~

PRIESTLEY, Josepu (1733-1804), was born on 13th March 1733 at Fieldhead near Birstal, in the West Riding of Yorkshire. HIs father, Jonas Priestley, was a woollen- cloth dresser and apparently of very moderate means. His mother was the only child. of Joseph Swift, a farmer at Shafton near Wakefield. The paternal grandfather, also named Joseph, was a churchman whose high moral char- acter became a sacred tradition in his family. The young Joseph's parents were Nonconformists. They had six children in eight years, and on the birth of the last, in the hard winter of 1739, the mother died. During those years Joseph lived a good deal with his maternal grand- father at Shafton. But he relates that his mother "was careful to teach him the Assembly's Catechism," and that, with a view of impressing on his mind "a clear idea of the distinction of property," she on one occasion made him carry back a pin which he had picked up at the house of an uncle. Three years after the loss of his mother, his father's sister, Mrs Keighley, a lady in good circum- stances, having no children of her own, took the boy to live with her.

At the age of twelve he was sent to a neighbouring endowed school, where, under the tuition of a clergyman, Mr Hague, he made rapid progress in classics, while on holidays, by way of recreation, he learned Hebrew from

1 See also Mommsen, Hist. of Rome, Eng. trans., iv. 150.

Mr Kirkley, a Dissenting minister. On the removal of the clergyman Mr Kirkley opened a school of his own, and Priestley became entirely his pupil. From the age of sixteen to nearly twenty his health was unsatisfactory, and he attended neither school nor college, but still con- tinued his studies in private with occasional assistance. It was thought that his constitution would be better adapted to an active than to a sedentary life, and with a view to commerce he learned French, Italian, and German without assistance. But the aunt, Mrs Keighley, had set her heart on making a minister of him, and young Priestley's own aspirations took the same form. When, therefore, his health improved, the offer of a mercantile situation in Lisbon was surrendered, and Priestley in his twentieth year (1752) was sent to Daventry, where there existed a Non- conformist academy, originally

~~*founded by Dr Doddridge at Northampton, and removed after his incapacitation by illness or on his death in 1751.*~~

~~*There is no mention of any hesitation on the part of Priestley or his friends as to whether he should enter the established church or not. But there was certainly nothing in his theological creed at this period to have prevented his taking orders. The hindrance, therefore, must have been his adherence to the Nonconformist tradition on ques- tions of ecclesiastical polity and ritual. There were, how- ever, in his early associations some elements which not only help to explain his after career but throw a curious light on the fluid condition of Nonconformist denominations in those days as compared with their sectarian fixedness now. He was brought up in the principles of Calvinism. But he tells us his aunt's house 'was the resort of all the Dissenting ministers in the neighbourhood without dis- tinction ; and those who were most obnoxious on account of their heresy were almost as welcome to her, if she thought them honest and good men—which she was not unwilling to do—as any others." Notwithstanding the comparative freedom of the conversations to which he listened, young Priestley at seventeen was strictly orthodox, and anxiously endeavoured to realize the experiences he supposed to be necessary to conversion. His chief trouble was that he could not repent of Adam's transgression, a difficulty he never surmounted. The pressure of this im- possibility forced his candid mind to the conclusion that there must be a mistake somewhere, and he began to doubt whether he was really so much entangled in Adam's guilt as he had been taught. Accordingly he was refused admission into the communion of the Independent church which his aunt attended. His adhesion to Calvinism was now considerably relaxed. But this did not interfere with his entrance at Daventry. Dr Doddridge had not confined his educational aims to students for the ministry, and he not only refused to impose theological tests but he incurred reproach by resolutely refusing to press his own orthodox creed on the heterodox pupils occasionally re- ceived. Priestley's intellectual preparation previous to his entrance is noteworthy. Besides being a fair classic, he had improved his Hebrew by giving lessons in that lan- guage. He had acquired three modern languages. He had 'learned Chaldee and Syriac, and just begun to read Arabic"; nor was he disproportionately backward in mathematics. He had also mastered 's Gravesande's Ele- ments of Natural Philosophy, and various text-books of*~~

~~*the time in logic and metaphysics. It cannot surprise us that he "'was excused all the studies of the first year and a great part of those of the second.' At Daventry he stayed three years, taking a prominent part in the singularly free discussions that seem to havé formed a considerable part of the academical exercises. "In this situation," he says, ""T saw reason to embrace what is generally called the heterodox side of almost every question." His chief tutors*~~

~~*PELRWseTainy*~~

~~*were Dr Ashworth of conservative and the Rev. Samuel Clark of decidedly liberal tendencies. Priestley's specula- tions at this time were philosophical rather than scientific. Under the influence of Hartley's Observations on Man and Collins's Philosophical Enquiry he exchanged his early Calvinism for a system of "necessarianism,"—that is, he learned to hold that the invariable connexion of cause and effect is as inviolable in the moral as in the material world. During these early years he began his enormous industry as a writer, and in particular laid down the lines of his Institutes of Natural and Revealed Religion.*~~

~~*From Daventry he went in 1755, at twenty-two years of age, to take charge of a small congregation at Needham Market in Suffolk. This church was halting between Presbyterianism and Independency, being subsidized by both. Priestley insisted on dropping the Independent con- nexion. As a consequence he had to content himself with a salary of £30, and succeeded in living on less. His studies had not in the least chilled his devotion to the sacred work, which indeed to the end of his life he counted his highest honour. He was diligent in preaching and teaching, but his intellectual freedom, together with a physical difficulty in speech, prevented his attaining popularity. To cure the defect in speech he paid twenty guineas, given by his aunt, to a London specialist or quack. But this difficulty turned out to be as irremediable as his intellectual unconformability ; and the only per- manent advantage derived from his visit to the metropolis was an introduction to various scholars of the day, such as Dr Price, also Dr Benson and Dr Kippis, friends of Lardner. Later on he made the acquaintance of the last also through some manuscript notes on the doctrine of atonement, which attracted the great scholar's attention.*~~

~~*In 1758 Priestley removed to Nantwich, obtaining a more congenial congregation; and there he established a school, which increased his income but lessened his literary activity. Always bringing his best intelligence to bear on everything he undertook, he varied his element- ary lessons with instruction in natural philosophy, illus- trated by experiments, for which he could now afford the needful instruments. "These," he says, "I taught my scholars in the highest class to keep in order, and to make use of ; and by entertaining their parents and friends with experiments, in which the scholars were generally the operators, and sometimes the lecturers too, I con- siderably extended the reputation of my school." Up to this time his studies had been entirely literary and theologico-philosophical. It is noteworthy that his efforts to liberalize education turned his attention to science. He was probably one of the very first teachers to appreciate the importance of physical science to early culture.*~~

~~*In 1761 he was appointed classical tutor in a Noncon- formist academy, then recently established at Warrington on the same liberal principles as the institution at Daventry. In this position he passed six of his happiest years, pursuing his scientific studies, especially in chemistry and electricity, enjoying congenial intercourse with Dr Turner of Liverpool, also with Wedgwood's partner Mr Bentley, Dr Enfield, and various Manchester men whose sons or grandsons helped to form the '"'Manchester school." In 1762 he married the daughter of Mr Isaac Wilkinson, an ironmaster of Wrexham. At Warrington Priestley received the complimentary degree of LL.D. from Edinburgh, apparently in recognition of his Chart of History. On a, visit to London he made the acquaintance of Dr Franklin, and his researches in electricity procured his election to the Royal Society in 1766.*~~

~~*In the following year (1767) Dr Priestley removed to Leeds to take charge of Mill Hill chapel ; and in the same year was published his History of Electricity, a work*~~

~~*731*~~

~~*suggested by Dr Franklin, and contributing greatly to the author's fame. to speculative theology, and surrendered_the Arianism he had hitherto loosely held, adopting instead definite Socinian*~~

~~*Now, however, he turned once more*~~

~~*views. In addition to preaching and teaching diligently in his congregation he carried on his chemical researches with results considered at the time startling. Chemistry was hardly in its infancy; it was unborn. "The vast science," says Mr Huxley, 'which now passes under that name had no existence." Living next door to a brewery Dr Priestley amused himself with experiments on the "fixed air" (carbonic acid) produced there, and succeeded in forcing it into water. Thus commenced his researches*~~

~~*on "different kinds of air," remarkable rather for the*~~

~~*impulse they gave to controversy and experiment than for any mature scientific results. He had a keen instinct for surmise, but no adequate method of research and verification. On this point Roscoe and Schorlemmer observe in their treatise on Chemistry (vol. i. p. 18) that "Priestley's notion of original research, which seems quite foreign to our present ideas, may be excused, perhaps*~~

~~*justified by the state of science in his day. He believed*~~

~~*that all discoveries are made by chance, and he compares the investigation of nature to a hound, wildly running after, and here and there chancing on game (or, as James Watt called it, 'his random haphazarding'), whilst we would rather be disposed to compare the man of science to the sportsman, who having, after persistent effort, laid out a distinct plan of operations, makes reasonably sure of his quarry." At this time also he wrote various*~~

~~*political tracts and papers, always in favour of popular rights, and in particular hostile to the attitude of the Government towards the American colonies.*~~

~~*In 1771 he was nearly appointed to accompany Captain Cook to the South Seas. But the Government of the day was shocked at the idea of giving official position to a Socinian minister, and Priestley was disappointed. Shortly afterwards he accepted the somewhat anomalous situation of "literary companion" and librarian to Lord Shelburne. With this nobleman he travelled in Holland and Germany, returning by Paris, where he spent a month in 1774. The position gave him ample leisure for his scientific and literary pursuits. But on the completion of his most noteworthy philosophical treatise, Disquisitions on Matter and Spirit, the connexion was dissolved. It has been surmised that the patron feared to share the unpopularity of his client's views. Those views Priestley himself considered to be "materialistic." It is a question of words. Seeing that he denied impenetrability to matter, it is difficult to say why the substance he left might not as well be called spirit as anything else.*~~

~~*In 1780 he removed to Birmingham, where he enjoyed the friendship of James Watt and his partner Boulton, also of Dr Darwin, grandfather of the illustrious man in whom the honours of the name culminated. Here Dr Priestley again took charge of a congregation, and resumed his theological efforts in a controversy with the bishop of Waterford, and in a laborious History of the Corruptions of Christianity. But bad times were at hand. The French Revolution excited passionate controversy, and Priestley was naturally on the side of the revolutionists. In 1791 the anniversary of the capture of the Bastille was observed in Birmingham by a dinner at which he was not present, and with which he had nothing to do. But the mob wished to testify by some signal deed their abhorrence of the un-English notions propounded at the dinner, and there- fore burned down Priestley's chapel and house. Before the deed was done they waded knee deep in torn manuscripts, and amused themselves with futile efforts to make an electric machine avenge its owner's impiety by firing*~~

~~*the papers with a spark. The blow was a terrible one. Priestley and his family had escaped violence by timely flight, but every material possession he valued was de- stroyed and the labours of years annihilated. But neither despair nor bitterness possessed him. He left Birmingham, and for three years preached in Hackney, then a suburban village, and in 1794 he went out to the young States whose cause he had advocated, to spend the last ten years of his life in the land of the future. He resided at Northumber- land in Pennsylvania, eager as ever for controversy and research. His materialism, so-called, never dimmed his hope of immortality. His religion to the end was char- acterized by a childlike simplicity of spirit. On his death- bed he would have his grandchildren to kneel by his side for their daily prayers, and listened with pleasure to the hymns they lisped. On the 6th of February 1804 he clearly and audibly dictated a few alterations he wished to make in some of his publications. 'That is right," he said, "I have now done"; and within an hour he quietly expired.*~~

~~*The interest of Dr Priestley's life lies not so much in any splendid achievements, either literary or scientific, but rather in the character of the man. His career also affords a typical illustration of the mutual relation and interaction of several great factors of human progress at a very critical period. Asa Nonconformist minister, born into a Calvin- istic circle, educated in an Independent academy, develop- ing into a Socinian divine, yet maintaining always the most friendly relations with clergymen, priests, and orthodox ministers, he gives us a curious insight into the condition of English religion just before its sectarian divisions had hardened into their modern form. As a pioneer in the investigation of gases and the discoverer of oxygen he helped—but, it must be admitted, as often by his mistakes as by his successes—to erect. chemistry into a science. As a professed materialist whose doctrines seemed at the same time to merge matter in force he, amongst others, prepared the way for the modern agnosticism, which declines to look behind phenomena. As a politician he anticipated nine- teenth-century radicalism. In general, as an exceptionally single-eyed and fearless searcher after truth he bore the brunt of persecution by vulgar ignorance, and in his dis- appointments illustrated how little can be practically accomplished by isolated enlightenment apart from popular education.*~~

The works of Dr Priestley, as collected and edited by John Towill Rutt, fill twenty-five octavo volumes, one of which, however, con- sists of memoirs and correspondence. The date of this collected edition is 1832. It contains upwards of 130 separate works, varying in size from brief pamphlets to treatises in four volumes, and his labours range over almost all possible subjects of human knowledge or speculation. Mathematics, chemistry, physiology, grammar, logic, mental and moral philosophy, history, theology, Interpretation of prophecy, politics, and sociology, alt alike fur- nished themes for Priestley's untiring pen, and if he did not write on any of them with striking originality he treated all with freedom and intelligence. In 1761 he issued his first published works, a treatise ou the Scripture Doctrine of Remission and The Rudiments of English Grammar. From that date till 1767 he was content with publishing something every alternate year. But from 1767 to 1804 he allowed only two years to go by unmarked by one or more publications, many of them remarkable as monuments of con- scientious and laborious industry. HIs first scientific work, The HIstory and Present State of Electricity, with Original Experiments, was published in 1767. The rapid advance of science has left to this and similar works of his little more than an antiquarian inter- est. But the treatise illustrates his prophetic spirit, inasmuch as it shows how far he was in advance of his contemporaries in appreci- ation of the prospects of physical research. In 1774 he issued his first volume of Experiments and Observations on Different Branches of Air, ec. In this volume he announced his discovery of "de- phlogisticated air," now known as oxygen. The then prevalent theory of phlogiston, or the combustible principle in matter, betrayed him into great confusion, evident enough in the very name he gave to his new 'branch of air." Nevertheless it is said of him in Roscoe and Schorlemmer's Chemistry (vol. i. p. 16) that "no one

obtained more important results or threw more light upon the chemical existence of a number of different gases than Joseph Priestley." These HLaperiments and Observations were continued through five volumes, of which the last appeared in 1780. Perhaps the limit of Priestley's power of growth is illustrated by the persist- ency with which he clung to phlogiston notwithstanding the dis- coveries of Black, Lavoisier, and Cavendish. In

~~*1800 he issued a treatise called 7'he Doctrine of Phlogiston established, and that of the Composition of Water refuted. In a letter of that year to the Rev. T. Lindsay he says, "I have well considered all that my opponents have advanced, and feel perfectly confident of the ground I stand upon. In this definitive treatise I insert all that is contained in my former publications on the subject, with many new experiments. Though nearly alone, I am under no apprehension of defeat." Dr Priestley clearly failed to appreciate the progress of the science he had done so much to promote. But the attempt made by Lavoisier to claim for himself a concurrent discovery of oxygen at the saine time as Priestley's was certainly unjustifiable. This achievement, together with the first preparation of nitric oxide, nitrous oxide, hydrochloric acid, and other important gases, constitutes the true ground of his fame as a scientific pioneer (see Roscoe and Schor- lemmer, J.¢.).*~~

~~*Priestley's chief theological works were the Institutes of Natural and Revealed Religion, A History of the Corruptions of Christianity, and A General History of the Christian Church to the Fall of the Western Empire. Bishop Horsley's criticisms on the second of these works produced letters in reply, " with additional evidence that the primitive church was Unitarian." His principal meta- physical writings were Disqwisitions relating to Matter and Spirit and various essays and letters on necessarianism. A complete list of his works will be found in vol. i. part ii. of Rutt's collected edition. (Gl, AES apes)*~~

~~*PRIM, Juan, Marquis DE Los CASTILLEJOS, COUNT DE Reuss (1814-1870), Spanish soldier and statesman, was the son of Lieutenant-Colonel Pablo Prim, and was born at Reuss in Catalonia on 12th December 1814. He entered the free corps known as the volunteers of Isabella II. in 1834 and greatly distinguished himself throughout the Carlist War, in the course of which he rose to the rank of lieutenant-colonel and had two orders of knighthood conferred upon him. After the pacification of 1839 he entered political life, and as a progressist opposed to the dictatorship of Espartero he was sent into exile. How- ever, in 1843 he was elected deputy for Tarragona and issued a pronunciamento against Espartero at Reuss; and after defeating Espartero at Bruch he entered Madrid in triumph with Serrano. The regent Maria Christina recog- nized his services, promoted him to the rank of major- general, and made him count of Reuss. Prim now*~~

~~*looked forward to peace under a settled constitutional monarchy, but Narvaez, the prime minister, failed to understand what constitutional freedom meant, and Prim, on showing signs of opposition, was sentenced to six years' imprisonment in the Philippine Islands. The sentence was not carried out, and Prim remained an exile in England and France until the amnesty of 1847. He then returned to Spain, but kept aloof from politics, and was first employed as captain- general of Porto Rico and afterwards as military represent- ative of Spain with the sultan during the Crimean War. In 1854 he returned to Spain on being elected to the cortes, and gave his support to O'Donnell, who promoted him to be lieutenant-general in 1856. In the war with Morocco, at the head of his division, he did such good service at Los Castillejos or Marabout, Cabo Negro, Guad al Gelu, and Campamento in 1860 that he was made mar- quis de los Castillejos and a grandee of Spain. He next commanded the Spanish expeditionary army in Mexico, when he acted in exact accordance with the treaty of London and refused to consent to the ambitious schemes of Napoleon III. On his return to Spain he joined the opposition, heading pronunciamentos in Catalonia against Narvaez and O'Donnell. All his attempts failed until the death of Narvaez in April 1868, after which Queen Isa- bella fell more and more under the influence of the Jesuits, and became increasingly tyrannical, until at last even Serrano was exiled, and more than 10,000 persons, includ-*~~

~~*ing every journalist of position, were in prison. In Sep- tember 1868 Serrano and Prim returned, and Admiral Topete, commanding the fleet, raised the standard of revolt at Cadiz. For the public events of the subsequent ten months the reader is referred to the article Spain. In July 1869 Serrano was elected regent, and Prim became president of the council and was made a marshal. On 16th November 1870 Amadeo, duke of Aosta, was elected king of Spain, but Prim was not destined to receive the new monarch, for on leaving the chamber of the cortes on 28th December he was shot by unknown assassins and died two days later. The cortes at once declared that he had deserved well of his native land, and took his children as wards of the country; three days afterwards King Amadeo I. swore in the presence of the corpse to observe the new Spanish constitution.*~~

~~*Two biographies of Prim down to 1860 were published in that year by Gimenez y Guited and Gonzalez Llanos ; see also L. Blairet,*~~

~~*Le Général Prim et la situation actuelle de V Espagne, Paris, 1867, and Guillaumot, Juan Prim et V Espagne, Paris, 1870.*~~

~~*PRIMATE (primas, i.e., primus), a title more than once bestowed in the Codex Theodosianus on various civil func- tionaries, came about the beginning of the 4th century to be used also, especially in Africa, as a designation of the "prime sedis episcopus." In the canon law the word "primate" is regarded as essentially the Western equiva- lent of the Eastern "patriarch." See ARCHBISHOP and PATRIARCH.*~~

~~*PRIMOGENITURE. The term "primogeniture" is used to signify the preference in inheritance which is given by law, custom, or usage to the eldest son and his issue, or in exceptional cases to the line of the eldest daughter. The practice prevailed under the feudal codes throughout all the Western countries. It is now almost entirely con- fined to the United Kingdom, having been abolished (ex- cept in the succession to the crown) by the various civil codes which have superseded feudalism on the Continent, and having been universally rejected in the United States of America as being contrary to the spirit of their institu- tions. The system has of late years been persistently attacked in Great Britain, chiefly on the ground of hard- ship in cases of intestacy where the property is small; but the rule was found to operate so successfully in former times towards keeping large properties together that it seems likely to be still maintained by law; and even if abolished as a rule of law it would most probably be main- tained in full vigour as a habit or rule of practice.*~~

~~*In dealing with the whole subject it will be convenient to state in the first place the nature of the rules of primo- geniture as they now exist in England, with some notice of the exceptional usages which illustrate the meaning and origin of the system, and in the second place to give an account of those archaic customs in which we may find the actual origiri of primogeniture before it was altered and extended by the policy of the feudal sovereigns, and by traditional usages which governed their succession to the throne. The English law provides that in ordinary cases of inheritance to land the rule of primogeniture shall prevail among the male children of the*~~

~~*person from whom descent is to be traced, but not among the females; and this principle is applied throughout all the degrees of relationship. There are exceptions to this rule in the gavelkind lands of Kent, where all the males take equally in each degree, in the burgage tenements of certain ancient boroughs, where the descent is to the youngest son under the custom called "borough-English," and in the copyhold lands of a great number of manors, where customs analogous to those of gavelkind and borough-English have existed from time immemorial. In another class of exceptions the rule of primogeniture is applied to the inheritance of*~~

~~*733*~~

~~*females, who usually take equal shares in each degree. The necessity for a sole succession has, for example, intro- duced succession by primogeniture among females in the case of the inheritance of the crown, and a similar necessity led to the maxim of the feudal law that certain dignities and offices, castles required for the defence of the realm, and other inheritances under "the law of the sword" should not be divided, but should go to the eldest of the co-heiresses (Bracton, De Legibus, ii. c. 76; Co. Litt., 165a). In the case of dignities the rule of sole succession is adopted without reference to the right of primogeniture, the dignity lying in abeyance until the line of a particular co-heiress is selected by the sovereign as "the fountain of honour." Another exceptional usage gives a preference to the line of the eldest daughter in the inheritance of customary holdings in the Isle of Man, in various lordships in Cumber- land, Westmoreland, and Durham, as well as in isolated manors in Surrey and Sussex, and in other parts of the southern and midland counties. At Tynemouth in North- umberland it was the custom that the eldest daughter surviving her parents should inherit her father's estate for her life, and in some of the southern manors already mentioned the rule of primogeniture among females is not. confined to daughters but is extended to the eldest sister or aunt, or even to female relations in more remote degrees. There are many other special customs by which the ordi- nary rules of descent are varied according to manorial usage, as that the youngest son shall inherit if the father dies. seised, but otherwise the eldest, or that fee-simple shall go to the youngest and entailed land to the eldest, or that the special custom shall only affect lands of a certain value. (as is said to be the usage in several manors near London),*~~

~~*or that male and female issue should share together (as. formerly was the practice at Wareham and Exeter and in certain other ancient boroughs, as well as in some of the copyholds belonging to the see of Worcester), or that the eldest or the youngest should be preferred among the daughters in the claim to a renewal of a customary estate for lives, with other analogous variations.*~~

~~*It will be seen that the English law of inheritance creates a double preference, subject to the exceptions already mentioned, in favour of the male over the female and of the firstborn among the males. This necessitates. the rule of representation by which the issue of children are regarded as standing in the places of their parents. This is called "representative primogeniture." The rule appears to have been firmly established in England during the reign of Henry IIL., though its application was favoured as early as the 12th century throughout the numerous con- tests between brothers claiming by proximity of blood and their nephews claiming by representation, as in the case of King John and his nephew Prince Arthur (Glanville, vii. c. 3; Bracton, De Legibus, ii. c. 30). We must now describe some of those ancient usages in which the origin of primogeniture is to be sought.*~~

~~*In addition to the rule of eldership as applied to inherit- ances of land there are traces of a multitude of customs which applied a similar rule to certain classes of ** prin-. cipals" or heirlooms, such as the best bed or piece of fur- niture, or horse and cart, and the like, which descended to the eldest son; and by a similar rule of the common law the ancient jewels of the crown are heirlooms which descend to the successor according to the rule of primo- geniture. In the district of Archenfield near the Welsh border the house and lands were divided between the sons on their father's death, but certain "principals" passed to the eldest as heirlooms, such as the best table and bed, "all which the men of Archenfield retained as derived to them from great antiquity, even before the Norman Con- quest " (Quo Warranto Roll, 20 Edw. L., "Trchinfield ").*~~

~~*Zot*~~

~~*A similar usage existed in some of the lands in Sussex belonging to Battle Abbey; and by the custom of the hundred of Stretford in Herefordshire the*~~

~~*eldest son was entitled to keep the best article of every kind of chattel, as the best of the chests and cups, or the best table and chair (Co, Litt., 18b). This right resembles in many respects the privilege of the youngest co-heir to take the hearth- place or covert del astre, which formerly prevailed in the gavelkind lands of Kent according to the Kentish custumal, and privileges of the same kind which were customary in the district round Amiens and in many parts of Flanders under the tenures called ‘“maineté,” ‘ quévaise,” and ‘“madelstad ” (Bouthors, “ Couttimes Locales du Bailhiage d’Amiens,” Cout. Gén., i. 699, ii. 901). This exceptional law does not seem to have prevailed in Scotland or Ire- land; but in the Shetland Islands it appears to have been the custom, as also in several of the Continental instances, that the youngest child of either sex should have the house when the property came to division. Similar benefits were reserved to the youngest son by the Welsh laws, which provided that when brothers divided a patrimony contain- ing a habitation “the youngest should have the principal messuage and all the buildings and eight acres of land, and the hatchet, the boiler, and the ploughshare,” and a preference of the same kind prevailed in some parts of Devon and Cornwall and in very extensive lordships in Brittany. Traces of the same or analogous usages may be found in many parts of Germany, Switzerland, Russia, Hungary, and other countries.)*~~

~~*The custom of giving a preferential birthright to the eldest son or child did not prevail so extensively in ancient times, though it was known in some parts of Germany as well as in France, where it is called “le préciput.” The eldest son or eldest child got the house and a piece of fur- niture and a plot of land “as far as a chicken could fly,” as being traditionally exempt from the general partition. In the Ordinances of St Louis we find a rule that a gen- tleman having daughters only should divide the rest of his property equally among them, “ mais |’ainée outre sa portion aura la maison paternelle et le vol du chapon.”*~~

~~*Instances of this kind are found among the rural customs of England and Normandy, which serve to indicate the source of one part at least of the English system of primo- geniture. The rights of the eldest, however, have been collected from many quarters. Sir Henry Maine has traced the modern form of this system to the growth of the power of the chieftain and its*~~

~~development in feudal times. The medieval jurists are responsible for many exaggerations of the principle of sole succession to rights of dominion. But it is at any rate important to observe that there were Teutonic customs giving a benefit of eldership before the feudal system was invented, which appear to have much less connexion with the power of the patriarch or chieftain than with the sentiment that gave the father's house to the eldest son under the Athenian law or secured to him a larger set of rights under the Laws of Manu (Demosth., Pro Phorm., 34; Coulanges, Cité Antique, c. 6). It should also be remembered that at least one tribe of Germans was accustomed in the days of Tacitus to allow the father's war-horse to descend as an heirloom or "principal" to the eldest son (Germ., cc. 18, 20, 32), and that the strict rule of primogeniture appears to have existed in Scandi- navia from the most ancient times. To the English in- stances already mentioned may be added a passage from Bede's life of St Benedict which shows that some sub- stantial birthright was reserved in his time for the eldest~~

~~1 Reports on Tenure of Land, 1869 ; Grimm, Deutsche Alterthiim.,~~

~~475 ; Wenckebach, Jus Theelacticum Redivivum, 1759 6 3 ach, F . 3; Kovy, Summ. Juris Hungarici, 351 ; MesdkGvesel, Les Bachkirs, ke, ili, 81.~~

~~PRIN CeCe VLU ERS~~

~~Northumbrian laws, '"'Quomodo terreni parentes, quem primum: fuderint, eum principium liberorum suorum cog- noscere et ceteris preferendum ducere solent" (Bede, Vit. Bened.,s. 11). This may refer to some system of double portions, like the Jewish rule as to "birthright" (Deut. xxi. 15, 16), or it may denote a preference in parti- tion which secured the dwelling-house or principal chattels to "the first-fruits of the family." A passage from Glan- ville, which is applicable to England and Scotland in the 12th century, shows that in the case of a rustic holding the custom of the district determined whether it should be divided among all the sons or reserved for the eldest or youngest. "If he were a free sokeman, the inheritance in that case will be divided among all the sons according to their number in equal shares, if the holding was partible by ancient custom, the chief messuage being, however, reserved for the first-born son in honour of his seniority, but on the terms of his making compensation to his brothers from the rest of~~

~~*his property. But if it was not anciently partible, then by the custom of some places the first-born son will take the whole inheritance, but by other customs the youngest son is the heir" (Glanville, vii. c. 3). In the time of Bracton, a century later, the presumption that primogeniture was an exceptional rule had been reversed, and special proof was required in freehold lands of a custom to exclude the eldest. He still speaks, however, of customs in favour of the eldest or youngest son in the case of the " villein-socage " holdings, which afterwards developed into copyholds. 'When a free sokeman dies leaving several heirs to share, if the inheritance is partible from ancient times, they shall all have their equal shares; and if there is only one messuage that shall remain entire for the eldest, but so that the others shall have up to its value out of the common stock. But if the inheritance has not been divided from ancient times then it shall remain to the eldest. But if it be villein-socage then the custom of the place is to be observed, for it is the usage in some parts for the youngest to be preferred to the eldest, or the contrary" (De Leg,, ii. c. 76). The ancient rule of inheritance among socage tenants in Scotland was the same as that described by Glanville.*~~

~~*These customs of "rural primogeniture" can be traced, as we have seen, in some parts of the Continent, but their existence is rarely to be distinguished where the influence of the Roman law prevailed in the barbarian kingdoms, as in Italy, Spain, and Provence. In Normandy and Picardy, however, these usages long remained in an exceptionally vigorous form,—a fact which may be due to the Scandi- navian origin of the Normans, or perhaps, as Richebourg suggested in his note on the Coutiime de Caux, the custom may have lasted down as a tradition from Gaulish times. The laws of the Channel Islands still preserve a special benefit for the eldest son; but the Coutémier Général affords several examples of a more ample birthright which can hardly be attributed to any feudal influence. By the custom of Normandy "' the eldest son in right of his elder- ship might take and choose as a préciput such fief or terre noble as he pleased; and if there were but one manoir roturier on the land the eldest before the division might declare that he retained it with court and garden, making recompense to his younger brothers" (Coutéme de Nor- mandie, 337, 356). "L'aisné faisant partage . . . peut retenir par précipu le lieu chevels . . . anciennement appelé hébergement, soit en ville ou en champs, de quelque estendue qu'il*~~

~~soit" ("Usage de Bayeux," Cout. Gén., iv. 77, 78, 94). The usage of the district of Caux, on the frontier of Picardy, was even more favourable to the eldest son: " Demeurant le manoir et pourpris en son integrité au profit de l'aisné sans qu'il en puisse étre disposé & son préjudice, ny qu'il soit tenu en faire récompense ausdits puisnés" ("'Suce. Bailliage de Caux," zbid., 74).~~

~~PRIM OC EHR ITU RE~~

~~This last instance appears to give usa clue to the origin of the strict English primogeniture as applied to the rustic holdings, sometimes called jiefs de roturier or '" plough- man's fee," which in most parts of the Continent, as in almost every district in England before the Norman Con- quest, descended to all the sons in equal shares, with some customary privilege or birthright in favour of the eldest or youngest son. The strict rule of the custom of Caux was deliberately applied by the Norman kings of England not only to military fiefs but also (wherever it was possible) to agricultural tenancies. This was effected partly by reversing the presumption of partibility, as shown by the passage from Bracton cited above, and partly by direct enactments of the king or of his greater tenants, who assumed or received the prerogative of abolishing incon- venient modes of inheritance. The urban customs of the "French" portions of Hereford and Nottingham appear to have been altered in this way. (See Muwicrpariry.) Simon de Montfort, by his charter in 1255, granted to the burgesses of Leicester that the eldest son should be his father's heir instead of the youngest; and an analogous right was exercised under the name of "disgavelling" by the archbishop of Canterbury in Kent. About the reign of Edward II. the idea first began to prevail that such alterations of descent could not be carried out without the consent of parliament, and it was eventually held that even the king had no such prerogative (Robinson, Gavel- kind, i. c. 5). The earlier view is very clearly stated in a charter by which Edward I. disgavelled certain lands of John de Cobham (Charter Rolls, 4 Edw. I., No. 17). The most important clauses of this document were in effect as follows : —~~

~~'Tt pertains to our prerogative to abolish such laws and customs as diminish instead of increasing the strength of the kingdom, or at least to~~

~~*change them by our special favour in the case of our deserving and faithful followers ; and since it has often happenced by the Kentish custom that lands, which when undivided in certain hands are quite sufficient for the service of the state and the maintenance of many, are afterwards divided and broken up among co-heirs into so many parts and particles that no one portion suffices even for its owner's maintenance, we.therefore grant to J. de Cobham that all the gavelkind lands and tenements which he now holds in fee simple shall descend to his eldest son or other heir at common law in the same way as his estates held by serjeauty or knight-service."*~~

~~*A similar change of tenure was effected by Acts of parliament for many estates in Kent in 11 Hen. VIL., 15 Hen. VIIL, 31 Hen. VIIL, 2 and 3 Edw. VI, 1 Eliz, 8 Eliz., and 21 James I., and primogeniture was introduced in the same way into the soke of Oswaldbeck in Notting- hamshire in 32 Hen. VIII. and into the city of Exeter by the Act of 23 Eliz. c. 12. The customary descent of copyhold lands (where primogeniture had not been estab- lished in ancient times by the ordinances of the lords or by an application of the current presumption) has been changed in a greaf number of cases by other private Acts of parliament or has been destroyed by enfranchisement. The Welsh custom of partition was altered in some respects, especially by forbidding the inheritance of bastards, by the Statute of Wales passed in the 12th year of Edward I.; the custom as modified was confirmed when the prin- cipality was united in 27 Hen. VIII. to the kingdom of England, but it was soon afterwards enacted by the Act 34 and 35 Hen. VIII. c. 26 that freehold lands in Wales should thenceforth be "holden as English tenure to all intents according to the common laws of this realm of England, and not be partible amongst heirs-male after the custom of gavelkind as heretofore in divers parts of Wales was used and accustomed." The change in the Irish customs was carried out in a different way. There is evidence that before the adoption of the English law several systems of customary inheritance were known in Treland.*~~

~~*discretion. a competent portion of land, assembled all the sept and having put*~~

~~*whole ; in which partition. .*~~

~~*Besides the law of tanistry, which will be described after- wards, there are indications in the Brehon tracts not only*~~

~~*of arrangements in favour of the youngest branch, such as have been already mentioned, but also of a preference in some cases for the eldest son, "the cattle and land being*~~

~~*equally divided, but the house and offices going in addition*~~

~~*to his own share to the eldest son" (Hearn, Aryan House- hold, 80, 82; O'Curry, Lectures, clxxix.). cases we have the record of that system of " Irish gavel- kind " which was described by Spenser and Davis, and which has been shown by Sir H. S. Maine to be closely connected with very early Aryan institutions still surviving in practice among the Hindus.*~~

~~*Besides these*~~

~~*'The lands in that kingdom possessed by the mere Irish were*~~

~~*divided into several territories or countries, and the inhabitants of every Irish 'country' were divided into several septs or lineages, in every one of which there was a chief called Canjinny or 'caput cognationis,' and all the inferior tenancies in these territories were partible among the males in gavelkind ; but the estate which these inferior tenants had was not an estate of inheritance, but a tempo- rary or transitory possession, for these lands were not partible among the next heirs of him that died, but among all the males of this sept or clan in this manner: the Canjinny (who was generally the*~~

~~*oldest man in the sept) made all these partitions according to his This Canfinny, after the death of every one who had*~~

~~*all their possessions into hotchpot made a new partition of the . he allotted to every one of the sept according to his age a better or larger part" (Robinson, Gavelkind,*~~

~~*i.c.2; Davis's Reports, 37, " Case of 'Tanistry ").*~~

~~*This is obviously the description of a joint family similar to those which have been found in the Scottish Highlands, in France, in the Slavonic countries, and in India, and, as it would seem, the various modes and periods of redistributing such joint possessions are merely matters of detail and convenience. It would be of greater importance to our subject to know whether any special property was reserved for one of the dead man's sons, as in the case of the Frisian ‘“‘theel-lands.” It was resolved in the great case cf tanistry in the third year of James I. that this Irish “custom of gavelkind ” was void in law as being unreason- able and as being “a mere personal custom” not binding the descent of the inheritance, “‘and therefore all the lands in these Irish territories were adjudged to be descendible according to the course of the common law, notwithstanding the Irish usage.” By one of the penal statutes against Roman Catholics in Ireland (2 Anne c. 6), the usage of partibility was to some extent revived, it being enacted that the lands of Roman Catholics should be divided among all the sons “as in gavelkind,” unless the heir should be a Protestant; but this harsh law was fortunately repealed by the Irish Act of 18 Geo. III. c. 49.*~~

~~*The remote origin of all these ancient forms of primo- geniture may probably be traced to a system of family religion that prevailed among the tribes from which the Aryan nations have descended. We are told in the Laws of Manu that the eldest son had his very being for the purpose of accomplishing the rites of the family religion, of offering the funeral cake, and of providing the repasts for the spirits of the dead ancestors. “The right of pro- nouncing the prayers belongs to him who came into the world the first. A man must regard his elder brother as equal to his father. By the eldest at the moment of his birth the father discharges his debt to his own progenitors ; the eldest son ought therefore before partition to manage the whole of the patrimony ” (Laws of Manu, ix. 105, 126; Coulanges, La Cité Antique, c. 6, “La Droit d'Ainesse”). This view seems to account for the widespread usage that the eldest son should keep the house, or hearthplace, or the parents' furniture as part of his share of the inheritance, It is said that among the Hindus the right to inherit a dead man's property is exactly coextensive with the duty of performing his obsequies, and we are told that in ancient*~~

~~Rome an inheritance could not be distributed under a will "without a strict apportionment of the expenses of these ceremonies among the different co-heirs" (Maine, Anc. Lau, 191). Some support is also given to this theory by the custom which is said to have prevailed in Norway by which particular lands were set apart for funeral expenses, and if a man had no kinsman to give him proper burial le might leave his property as "' brande-erbe " or '"burning- land" as an endowment for burial, and the friend who accepted the duty was allowed to keep the property as "odal land" or privileged family inheritance (Robertson, Early Kings, ii. 323). Numerous other illustrations might be given from the analogous customs in which the youngest son is preferred. 'There seems to be no reason why the eldest should be preferred by one nation and the youngest by another; but something may perhaps be due to the acci- dent that the one set of tribes was civilized enough to have fixed family habitations, and the other may have lived ina nomad fashion, so that the youngest would be most likely to remain in the parents' tent and to be ready to perform the duties of the hearthplace. Sir Henry Maine draws a distinction between the archaic customs of the tribe and that strict form of primogeniture which he has traced to the power of the chieftain. Taking primogeniture in the sense of an exclusive succession of the eldest son to pro- perty, he finds no sign of its existence before the destruction of the Roman empire by the barbarians. "Even when the Teutonic races spread over western Europe they did not bring with them primogeniture as their ordinary rule of succession." He considers the "birthright" given to the eldest in the instances which have been mentioned to be in the nature of a reward or a security for impartial distribution (Zarly Hist. Inst., 197,198). 'Primogeniture, as we know it in our law, had rather a political than a civil origin, and comes from the authority of the feudal lord and probably from that of the tribal chief; but here and there on the Continent there are traces of it as a civil institution, and in such cases the succession of the eldest son does not exclude provision for the younger sons by what are called appanages. The evidence of ancient law and usage would, however, seem to show that it was usually the youngest son who remained at home with his father to serve him through life and succeed to his remaining property at his death" (Karly Law and Custom, p. 260). As regards the political origin of a great part of~~

~~*the English system of primogeniture a distinction should be made between royal and feudal successions. The devolu- tion of the crown in European countries 'has usually been regulated by some kind of primogeniture, based partly on the rules which have governed private successions, partly on the indivisible character of the empire as it survived into modern times, and partly again on that "law of the sword" or rule of public policy which forbids the dis- integration of the state. It is possible also that the Irish system of tanistry contained some of the elements of this method of royal succession. The custom was described by Spenser in his View of the State of Ireland shortly before the abolition of the Brehon law in the reign of James I. as follows: "It is a custom among all the Irish that, pre- sently after the death of any of their chief lords or captains, they do presently assemble themselves . . . to choose another in his stead, where they do nominate and elect for the most part not the eldest son nor any of the children of the lord deceased, but the next to him of blood that is eldest and worthiest, as commonly the next brother, if he have any, or the next cousin and so forth, as any is elder in that kindred or sept, and then next to him they choose the next of the blood to be tanaist, who shall succeed him in the said captaincy if he live thereunto." This system may be described as the election of an elder*~~

~~*PRIMOGANTTU BE*~~

~~*to be head of the sept (like the analogous election of a patriarchal "house- father" in a joint family), with an additional choice of an elder in reversion, to avoid dis- putes as to succession in times of war. A similar rule may have obtained among the Teutonic tribes (Maine, Early Hist. Inst., 202); as the smaller chiefs sank into the position of nobles and were succeeded by their eldest sons (for reasons connected with the priestly character of the king) in the possession of their offices and demesnes, a rule of the same kind might grow up with regard to the king or ruling chieftain, by which the eldest son would get not only his private demesne but also that "portion of land attached to the seignory or chiefry which went without partition to the tanaist." In this way a prin- ciple of inheritance might be formed 'which first of all extended from the demesne to all the estates of the holder of the seignory, however acquired, and ultimately deter- mined the law of succession for the privileged classes throughout feudalized Europe" (zbid.,*~~

~~204, 208). This part of the subject is confessedly very obscure ; and it must not be forgotten that there were other and stranger modes of succession to chieftainships in Ireland and Scotland, which appear to have been unconnected with any such rules of primogeniture (Girald. Cambr., Zop. Hibern., iii. 25; Ware, Ant. Hib., 11. 64 ; Ailred's Chron., ed. Twysden, 348 ; Robertson, Karly Kings, i. 36). Bede has left us a description of the rule among the Picts. 'It was the custom in Pictland," as the saying went, that the kingdom should come from women rather than from men. (Com- pare the similar customs among the ancient Spartans, Lycians, and Iberians in M'Lennan's Studies, 101, 145.) The dignity never went from father to son, but when the king died the crown went to his next brother, or in default to his sister's son, or in any event to the nearest male relation claiming through a female and on the female side. The list of kings contains no instance of a son bearing his father's name, or of the same name belonging to both father and mother; and the only fathers of kings of whom any account has survived are certainly known to have been foreigners, the one being a prince of Strathclyde and the other a grandson of the king of Northumbria. One and the same rule of primogeniture has been applied in England to royal and to private estates, with the exception as to the succession of the eldest daughter which has already been mentioned. The system varied greatly in the Conti- nental countries according to the circumstances of each case. In France the crown was regarded as a partible in- heritance under the first two dynasties. At the beginning of the 11th century primogeniture had become the rule as to fiefs, offices, and dignities, and partly no doubt from ana- logy and partly for reasons of public policy the crown was brought within the same rule under the house of Capet (Montesquieu, Lsprit des Lois, xxxi. 32; Kenny, Law of Primogeniture in England, 10). But in this case there was a singular modification, known as the "Salic law" or '*Salic rule" (as if it had been derived froni the customs of the Salian Franks), by which the succession was event- ually limited to males claiming through males. The origin of this law has been found in the fact that "the kings sprung from Hugh Capet succeeded one another, son to father, or brother to brother, for more than 300 years" previously to the disputes which arose in the 14th century as to the succession of an heir claiming through a female (Maine, Early Law and Custom, 154). The rule was adopted because it corresponded to the facts which had existed; it was extended because it suited the circumstances of those states in which the~~

~~*sovereign had a large authority ; in constitutional countries the rule has been considered to be against public policy, partly perhaps because the reign of a femalesovereign isregarded as favourable to popular liberties.*~~

~~*PRI—PRI*~~

~~*The history of primogeniture as applied to feudal suc- cession is simpler than that of the inheritance of the crown. When a fief was regarded not strictly as an estate in land but rather as being in the nature of an office there was at first no room for the notion of its descent toan heir. HeId first at will and afterwards for short fixed periods, the fiefs or benefices came gradually to be regarded as inheritances. When this idea was first established the fief was usually treated as being partible among all the sons, and it was not until 1138 that Frederick Barbarossa, for reasons of public policy, forbade the greater tenancies to be sub- divided. The Assises de Jérusalem had laid down the same rule in 1099, though the king was then allowed to select any one of the children for succession. "In Brittany, primogeniture was not introduced till 1185, even for nobles and knights. ... Down to the French Revolution a German baron had to make a family settlement and to get the consent of his younger sons, if he wished his land to descend to the eldest son alone" (Kenny, 11). In France the eldest son began to gain pre-eminence in the division of fiefs about the beginning of the 11th century, and the usage spread with more or less vigour through all the Western countries. '"'Usu ad omnia feuda serpsit, ut vel ex asse majori cedant, vel major preecipuum aliquod in iis habeat" (Zoesius, cited in Co, Litt., 191a). In countries where the Roman law prevailed the privileges of the eldest son were secured by a legal fiction, the jurists deciding that every noble was a "miles" or soldier on service entitled to exceptional benefits. In Spain the inheritance was con- sidered to be divisible into fifteen shares, of which seven in all (being one-fifth of the whole and one-third of the residue, known as the customary "fifth and third") were within the parent's disposal as a majoratus ; and this was usually entailed upon the eldest son. Similar privileges by way of majorat have been given to particular land-owners in France at various times since the abolition of primogeniture in the great Revolution. The feudal primogeniture of England was firmly established in the reigns of the first two Norman kings, with a temporary provision for the case of estates lying both in England and*~~

~~*Normandy, in which the Norman estate was allotted to*~~

~~*the eldest son and the English estates to the second. Its origin, as we have seen, is to be found partly in old modes of customary inheritance surviving both in England and in Normandy, but mainly in the deliberate policy of the sovereigns, who wished to keep the military estates together, and took advantage of the strictness of the "custom of Caux" to carry out the objects of the "law of the sword." (com By) PRIMROSE.! The genus Primula contains numerous species distributed throughout the cooler parts of Europe and Asia, and found also on the mountains of Abyssinia and Java. 'They are all herbaceous perennials, possessing a permanent stock, from which are emitted tufts of leaves and flower-stems which die down in winter; the new growths formed in autumn remain in a bud-like condition ready to develop themselves in spring. They form the typical genus of Primulacex, the floral conformation of which is very interesting on several accounts independently of the beauty of the flowers. Thus the five stamens spring- ing from the tube of the corolla, instead of being placed alternately with or between its lobes, are opposite or 'super posed ." to them, an arrangement accounted for by some on the supposition that an outer row of stamens (which, if present, would render the flower symmetrical) is suppressed. In support of this view the case of Samolus, an allied genus*~~

~~*1 Lat. primula; Ital, and Span. primavera ; Fr. primevére, or in some provinces primerole, Strangely enough, the word was applied, according to Dr Prior, in the Middle Ages to the daisy (Bellis perennis), the present usage being of comparatively recent origin.*~~

~~*aT in which there are five petaloid stamens as well as five fertile ones, may be cited. By others the anomaly is ex- plained on the hypothesis that the corolla is suppressed, what appears to be such being merely an outgrowth from the stamens. But this view is not borne out by observa- tion of the development of the flower. Within the base of the corolla tube is the one-celled superior ovary, rising up into the centre of which is a dome-shaped placenta, quite detached from the walls of the ovary and studded with ovules. The origin and explanation of this free central placenta have formed the subject of a copious literature, the point at issue being whether the placenta is a direct pro- longation from the axis of the plant or an*~~

~~*outgrowth from the walls of the carpels.2 The variation in the length of the stamens and of the style in the flowers of this genus has attracted much attention since Darwin pointed out the true significance of these varied arrangements. Briefly it*~~

~~*-may be said that some of the flowers have short stamens*~~

~~*anda long style, while others have long stamens, or stamens inserted so high up that the anthers protrude beyond the corolla tube, and a short style. Gardeners and florists had for centuries been familiar with these variations, calling the flowers from which the anthers protruded "thrum-eyed" and those in which the stigma appeared in the mouth of the tube "pin-eyed." Darwin showed by ex- periment and research that the most perfect degree of fertility, as shown by the greatest number of seeds and the healthiest seedlings, was attained when the pollen from a short-stamened flower was transferred to the stigma of a short-styled flower, or when the pollen from the long stamens was applied to the long style. As in any given flower the stamens are short (or low down in the flower- tube) and the style long, or conversely, it follows that to ensure a high degree of fertility cross fertilization must occur, and this is effected by the transfer of the pollen from one flower to another by insects. Incomplete fertility arises when the stigma is impregnated by the pollen from the same flower. The size of the pollen-grains and the texture of the stigma are different in the two forms of flower. The discovery of the physiological significance of these variations in structure, which had long been noticed, was made by Darwin, and formed the first of a series of similar observations and experiments recorded from time to time in the Journal of the Linnean Society and elsewhere by himself and subsequent observers. Among British species may be mentioned the Common Primrose (P. vul- garis) ; the Cowslip (P. verts), which is the original source of the Polyanthus of the gardens; the true Oxlip (P. elatior), a rare plant only found in the eastern counties ; and the Common Oxlip, by some considered to be a form of the Common Primrose but provided with a stem supporting the flowers. Darwin's experiments go to prove that the first-named three are species, while the last-named is a hybrid between the cowslip and the primrose. In addition to these species two others occur in Britain, namely, P. farinosa, found in Wales, the north of England, and southern Scotland, and P. scotica, which occurs in Orkney and Caithness.*~~

~~These two species are found also in high Arctic latitudes, and P. farinosa, or a very closely allied form, exists in Fuego.~~

~~The Awricula of the gardens was formerly considered to be a form of P. Auricula, a yellow-flowered species, a native of the Swiss mountains, but it has been recently shown by Kerner that in all probability the origin of the Awricwla was P. pubescens, supposed to be a natural hybrid between P. Auricwla and P. hirsuta. The Polyanthus has already been mentioned as a variety of the cowslip,~~

~~but it may further be added that some very remarkable forms which have been cultivated for centuries owe their peculiarities to 2 For a full discussion of this and other points in the morphology of the flower, the reader may refer to Dr Masters's paper in the Pro- ceedings of the Linnean Society, 2d ser., vol. i. (1877) p. 285, or to Eichler's Bliithen- Diagramme. XIX, — 93~~

~~738~~

~~the assumption by the ordinarily green calyx of a petaloid con- dition ; Slen this is complete we have the condition called "hose in hose" by the gardeners. This may, however, arise from actual duplication of the corolla within the calyx. The Chinese Primrose, now so much cultivated in gardens, is derived from P. prwnitens. The Japanese Primrose is nearly or quite hardy, and is the stateliest of the genus ; its flowers of varied colours are placed tier above tier, like the branches of a fir tree. P. cortusoides is another Japanese species of which many forms are now cultivated. P. simensis, with mealy leaves and yellow flowers, is the Abyssinian Primrose of gardens. The Himalayas are rich in species of primrose, often very difficult of determination or limitation, certain forms being peculiar to particular valleys. Of these P. denticulata, Stuartii, sikkim- mensis, nivalis, may be mentioned as frequently cultivated, as well as the lovely rose-coloured species P. rosea.~~

~~PRINCE. "Prince" and "princess" are names or de-~~

~~scriptions implying either political authority or social rank~~

~~*in the persons to whom they relate or are accorded. We have in "prince" the English and French form of the Latin princeps, which with more or less modification has been adopted into nearly every language of modern Europe, and of which the original and common use was to indicate priority or pre-eminence of any sort. In an honorary sense it was, to begin with, applied by the Romans to the first or most distinguished members of the senate and the equestrian order respectively, and their appellations of princeps senatus and princeps juventutis were afterwards appropriated to the emperors themselves and to their adopted heirs and successors in the empire. Hence the attribute princeps became definitely associated with the notions of sovereignty and dominion, and its derivatives have been always and everywhere employed as titles of dignity and expressions of awe or respect.*~~

~~*In English the word "prince" may be used in certain connexions in the original wide sense of the Latin word. More definitely it is applicable to supreme rulers of both sexes and almost all kinds. Thus the emperor of Russia, the queen of England, and the king of the Belgians are equally princes or monarchs, and the consorts of emperors and kings are princesses. But the presidents of republics are neither princes nor monarchs. Prince, however, unlike monarch, applies to rulers who are subordinate as well as to rulers who are supreme, to sueli minor potentates as the electors of the old German empire or the feudal peers of France once were, and the reigning grand-dukes or dukes of Germany now are. Again, all the children and many of the descendants and other relations of monarchs and princes of every class and grade are themselves princes or princesses, although it often happens that they have also some special name or personal dignity by which they are ordinarily known. The eldest son of the emperor of Russia, for instance, is called the "cesarewich," as the eldest son and next brother of the king of France under the ancien régime were called the "dauphin" and "monsieur." In England for several centuries the younger sons of the sovereign have had dukedoms conferred on them, as in the cases of the dukes of Edinburgh, Connaught, and Albany, and from the reign of Edward IV. until the reign of Victoria the dukedom of York was always given to the second son and the dukedom of Gloucester to the third, unless it was already appropriated. The princes and princesses of Russia are "grand-dukes" and "grand-duchesses," of Austria*~~

~~"archdukes" and "archduchesses." and of Spain "infants" and "infantas." Some of the eldest sons of kings are "dukes," as the duke of Brabant in Belgium and the duke of Sparta in Greece. But, when they are not dukes, or princes with a territorial title, as the prince of Wales or the princes of Naples in Italy and oe me they are described as "princes" with Pa ae 'i ge de 4 crown," "royal," or "here- renee. bee Rl en the name of the dominions~~

~~elrs-apparent. The eldest sons~~

~~PRI—PRI~~

~~of reigning grand-dukes or dukes, however, are called "hereditary grand-dukes" or "hereditary dukes," their younger brothers and their sisters being all the same princes and princesses. The Prussian fashion of call- ing the eldest daughter of the sovereign the 'princess royal" was introduced into England by George II. It was not the custom, however, for the daughters of English monarchs to be entitled "' princesses" at all until the reign of Charles I. The two daughters of Henry VIII. were the Lady Mary and the Lady Elizabeth until they ascended the throne, for, although there is a tradition that they were both made princess of Wales successively, there is no evidence whatever to support it. As late as the reign of Charles II. the granddaughters of Charles I., daughters of James, duke of York, the heir-presumptive to the crown, were called the Lady Mary and the Lady Anne until they became princesses by marriage, the one as the wife of William, prince of Orange, and the other as the wife of Prince George of Denmark. It is difficult to say when the younger sons of English sovereigns were originally called "' princes." But the practice of so calling them prob- ably began as early as the reign of Henry VIL, although there was no opportunity of observing it again before the reign of James I., when it was certainly established.~~

~~In France before the Revolution the designation of "'nrinces du sang," or " princes of the blood," was common from generation to generation to all the male descendants of the French kings, and they had precedence according to their proximity to the crown of all dignitaries and nobles. It was not, however, until the reign of Charles VIL or Louis XI. that they were called "princes," their earlier appellation having been "seigneurs du sang" or "seigneurs du lignage du roi." In France, too, the natural children of the~~

~~*king were, when formally acknowledged, termed "princes légitimés," at any rate from the reign of Louis XIV., and although they were excluded from the line of succession to the throne they were ranked imme- diately after the princes du sang. The princely character of all the male descendants of the imperial, royal, and other reigning families of the Continent, when neither illegitimate nor the issue of a morganatic marriage, is perpetual and indelible. Moreover, the families which were formerly reigning within the boundaries of the old German or existing Austrian empires, despite that they have now ceased to reign, are in this respect still in the full possession of their earlier privileges. But in England, on the contrary, it was considered necessary only about a quarter of a century ago to make express provision by royal authority that the titles of "' prince" and " princess " should be enjoyed by the children of the sons as well as by the sons and daughters of any sovereign of the United Kingdom. It may therefore be concluded that they had no previous claim to the attributes of prince and princess, and that they will not transmit them to their posterity.*~~

~~*Besides the more or less general uses of the words "prince" and ' princess" which we have already noticed, there are the particular applications of them, first to a dis- tinct class of rulers, and secondly to a particular order of nobility. Princes regarded as the political chiefs of states are inferior to emperors and kings, and not necessarily superior to reigning grand-dukes or dukes. Very few ex- amples of them at present exist,—those of Waldeck and Pyrmont, Montenegro, Bulgaria, and Monaco alone occur- ring tous. None of the great feudatories of the Middle Ages, whether in Germany, France, or Spain, were formally described as princes, and of the mediatized families still extant who once supplied members to the imperial diet, many of them from a remote period, not one had the de- signation of "prince" before the commencement of the 17th century, while not more than five or six had it before the*~~

~~*comniencement of the 18th century. The old Italian and Welsh princes and the more modern princes of Orange are in fact nearly the only reigning princes who are remembered in history. As a name of dignity, neither of dominion on the one hand nor of courtesy on the other, "' prince" is*~~

~~*common enough among the nobility of the Continent. But in England it is never conferred on anybody except the heir-apparent to the crown, and his principality is a peerage. Since the reign of Edward III. the eldest sons of the kings and queens of England have always been dukes of Cornwall by birth, and, with a few exceptions, princes of Wales by creation. Before that Edward I. had con- ferred the principality on his eldest son, afterwards Edward II., who was summoned to and sat in parliament as prince of Wales. But Edward the Black Prince was the original grantee of the principality as well as of the dukedom, under the special limitations which have continued in force to the present day. The entail of the former was "to him and his heirs the kings of England" and of the latter '"'to him and his heirs the first-begotten sons of the kings of England." Hence when a prince of Wales and duke of Cornwall succeeds to the throne the principality in all cases merges at once in the crown, and can have no sepa- rate existence again except under a fresh creation, while the dukedom, if he has a son, descends immediately to him, or remains in abeyance until he has a son if one is not already born. If, however, a prince of Wales and duke of Corn- wall should die in the lifetime of the sovereign, leaving a son and heir, both dignities are extinguished, because his son, although he is his heir, is neither a king of England nor the first-begotten son of a king of England. But, if instead of a son he should leave a brother his heir, then— as was decided in the reign of James I. on the death of Henry, prince of Wales, whose heir was his brother Charles, duke of York—the dukedom of Cornwall would pass to him as the first-begotten son of the king of England then alive, the principality of Wales alone becoming merged in the crown. It has thus occasionally happened that the dukes of Cornwall have not been princes of Wales, as Henry VI. and Edward VIL. and that the princes of Wales have not been dukes of Cornwall, as Richard II. and George III. It was in direct imitation of these dignities that the princi- pality of the Asturias and the dukedom of Rothesay were created by John J. of Castile and Robert IL of Scotland in favour of their eldest sons and the eldest sons of their successors. In the new kingdoms of Holland and Italy the principalities of Orange and Naples have been appropriated to the eldest sons of the sovereigns. Under the monarchy in France princes invariably yielded precedence to dukes, unless of course they were "princes du sang" or " princes légitimés," as the princes of Condé, of Conti, or of Lamballe. Several of the French dukes numbered principalities among their inferior titles, as the duke of La*~~

~~Rochefoucauld also prince of Marcilla¢, and the duke of Gramont also prince of Bidache, while several of the French princes were the heads merely of junior branches of ducal families, as the princes of Léon and of Soubise of the Rohan family, and the princes of Tingry and of Robecq of the Montmorency family. When Napoleon established the empire and reintroduced titles into France, princes were made the first and dukes the second order of the new nobility. But only a few princes were created—Talleyrand, prince of Bénévent; Bernadotte, prince of Ponte Corvo; Berthier, prince of Wagram ; Davoust, prince of Eckmiihl ; Masséna, prince of Essling ; and Ney, prince of Moskowa, nearly if not quite exhausting the list. In Germany and Austria the title of "prince" is represented by "Prinz" when it appertains to the members of imperial and royal families, as Kronprinz von Oesterreich or Prinz Wilhelm von Preussen, and by "Fiirst" when it appertains to the members of mediatized or noble families,~~

~~as Fiirst von Salm-Salm or von Hohenlohe-Langenburg, and Fiirst von Metternich-Winneburg or von Bismarck- Schénhausen. According to its identification with '" Prinz" or " Fiirst" it is a higher or lower dignity than " Herzog" (duke). In the old empire, however, the Churfiirsten or electors were always next to the emperor and the king of the Romans. In Italy, as well as in Belgium and Hol- land, princes are inferior to dukes as members of a parti- cular order of nobility. In Spain and Portugal we are not aware that the title of "prince" has ever been conferred on a subject outside of the royal family except in the well- known case of Godoy, Prince of the Peace. Among the Russian nobility there are neither dukes nor marquesses, the orders being princes, counts, and barons. It is to be observed, however, that in no part of the Continent does precedence depend exclusively as in the United Kingdom on the apparent rank of titular distinctions or the relative positions which they nominally occupy in formal classifi- cation. F. DR.~~

~~PRINCE EDWARD ISLAND, formerly called Isle St See North America, Plate IV. . and 62° and 64° Yo *¥¥-~~

~~Jean, a province of Canada, in British lies between 45° 58' and 47° 7' N. lat.~~

~~*27' W. long., on the south side of the Gulf of St Lawrence. It is separated from Nova Scotia on the south and from New Brunswick on the south and west by Northumberland Strait, which varies from 9 to 30 miles in width. Its greatest length is nearly 150 miles, its general breadth 34 miles, and the area 2133 square miles (1,365,120 acres).*~~

~~*Physical Features.—Prince Edward Island resembles a crescent in its northern outline, the two horns being North and East Capes, and it is altogether irregular in form. Its surface is slightly rolling, the elevations of land, how- ever, rising nowhere higher than 500 feet., The coast-line is indented with numerous bays and projecting headlands, the more prominent of the latter being North Cape on the north-west, West Cape on the west, East Cape on the east, Cape Bear on the south-east; others are Stewart, Bell, Prim, Gallas, Black, Amherst, and Fifteen on the south, Kildare, Aylesbury, Turner, Cablehead, and Campbell on the north, Durell and Bruce on the east, and Seal Point on the west. The principal bays are Richmond on the north, Egmont on the south-west, Hillsborough on the south, and Cardigan on the east. These inlets, piercing the land from opposite directions, form narrow isthmuses which divide the island into three distinct peninsulas. Other bays are St Peter's, Grenville, Harrington, and Tignish on the north; Colville, Rollo, Fortune, and Bough- ton on the east ; Orwell and Pownal on the south. Along the coasts there are several small islands, viz., Grover, Fish, Burnbury, Lennox, Robinson's, Boughton, Panmore, Wood, Governor, St Peter's, and Brae. The chief rivers are North, Elliott or West, Hillsborough or East, Ellis or Grand, Percival, Trout, Boughton, Murray, Dunk, and Morrell. The Grand river is the seat of a large and in- creasing oyster and codfish trade. The Dunk is a fine salmon and trout stream. The principal harbours are Charlottetown, Georgetown, Bedeque, Port Hill, Cascum- peque, Souris, Murray, Savage, Bedford, and Westmore- land. The island is well watered, and by the disintegration of the soft red sandstones a bright red loamy soil of great fertility is produced. To this the province owes its re- markable prodtictiveness as an agricultural district, and the gently undulating surface, the rich fields, and pretty homesteads embowered in trees give variety and beauty to the landscape.*~~

~~*Geology.—The oldest geological formations in Prince Edward Island are represented by beds of brown, grey, and red sandstone and shale, with*~~

~~layers of coarse concre- tionary limestone and fossil plants. These are of newer Carboniferous (or in part of Lower Permian) age, and have~~

~~740 PRUNC Se~~

~~been named by Sir William Dawson the Permo-carbonifer- ous series. They appear in the peninsula between Orwell Bay and Pownal Bay, in Governor's Island, in Hillsborough Bay, and on the coast between West and North Capes, as well as in other localities on the south and west. But the prevalent rocks are bright red sandstones with calcareous cement, alternating with beds of red and mottled clay, and with occasional white bands and layers of concretionary limestones and conglomerate, which in mineral character resemble the Trias or New Red Sandstone of Nova Scotia. The formation may be divided into two sections: "the lower, representing," says Dawson, "the Bunter Sandstein of Europe, is characterized by the prevalence of hard con- cretionary calcareous sandstones and obscure fossil plants, while the upper (representing, perhaps, the Keuper of Europe) has softer and more regularly bedded sandstones and clays." Owing to the similarity of the Permo-carboni- ferous and Triassic beds, and the general covering of soil, it is not possible definitely to mark the limits of the two formations. Drift deposits, viz., boulder clay, stratified sand and gravel containing in some places sea- shells of species now living and occasional boulders (this deposit comparatively rare), and loose boulders, overlie the surface of the more solid rocks in the greater part of the island. Beds of peat, dunes of drifted sand, alluvial clays, and mussel mud (valuable as a fertilizer) occur in creeks and bays. The portions of country occupied by the Upper Carboniferous series are generally flat, and this applies, observe Drs Dawson and Harrington, to a portion of the Triassic region north of Bedeque, where the beds seem to have been subjected to severe aqueous denudation. The minerals are unimportant, neither coal, gypsum, nor gold eing found in.any part of the island. .**

~~Climate and Vegetation.—The climate of Prince Edward Island is much milder than that of the adjacent provinces, and, though the winter is severe and cold, the air is in- vigorating and salubrious. The coldest month is January, when the thermometer registers a daily average of 15°°9. Fogs~~

~~seldom occur. In the summer the heat is less extreme than in Quebec, the mean being 62°:3, and the pleasant autumn months attract visitors from all parts of the American continent. Vegetation develops rapidly, and agriculture is extensively prosecuted. Wheat, barley, oats, pease and beans, potatoes, turnips, and other crops ripen to perfection.~~

~~The amount of land under crop in 1881 was 467,211 acres, and in pasture 126,935 acres. The chief pro- duce raised in that year was 546,986 bushels of wheat, 119,368 of barley, 3,538,219.of oats, 90,458 of buckwheat, 6,042,191 of potatoes, 1,198,407 of turnips, 42,572 of other roots, 143,791 tons of hay, and 15,247 tons of grass and clover seed. Of live stock there were 31,335 horses, 45,895 milch cows, 44,743 other horned cattle, 166,496 sheep, and 40,181 swine. 1,688,690 tb of butter, 196,273 of cheese, 14,945 of honey, and 25,098 of maple sugar were made during the year. Prince Edward Island does not grow much fruit, but the apple crop is usually good, though not large, and grapes, plums, and currants are grown in small quantities. The land which is not cul- eo consists of soft spongy turf which may be used or fuel.~~

~~Commerce.—The forests of the island used to be very extensive, but lumbering operations, destructive fires, and the needs of the husbandmen have reduced them, though many trees still remain, the principal being beech, birch, pine, maple, poplar, spruce, fir, hem- lock, larch, cedar, &c. The exports in 1888 were valued as follows :— produce of the forest, $28,385 ; agricultural produce, $377,614 ; animals and their produce, $238,952 ; manufactures, $188,986, the ie Peng $1,318,549 ; that of the imports (manufactured goods, eae ae ane spirits, tobacco, tea, coffee, sugar, molasses,~~

~~Industries.—Shipbuilding in former years was a very active~~

~~EDWARD~~

~~ip Law.~~

~~industry. It is still carried on, but to a considerably smaller extent,—the number of vessels built in 1883 having been only seventeen, with a tonnage of 5348. On the 31st of December 1883 the vessels registered in the~~

~~*province and remaining on the registry books of the several ports amounted to 241, with a tonnage of 40,400. In that year there were engaged in the coasting trade (including steamers) 1162 vessels, representing a tonnage of 113,117. The manufactures are chiefly for domestic use, and include the making of woollen cloth, saws and files, saddles and harness, sashes, doors, and blinds; there are also saw-mills, starch factories, tan- neries, tin and sheet-iron works, tobacco-pipe factories, &c. In 1881 the amount of capital invested in industries was $2,085,776, giving employment to 5767 hands, and the value of the products was $3,400,208.*~~

~~*Fisheries.—The fisheries are exceedingly valuable, particularly those on the north coast, the catch being chiefly mackerel, haddock, cod, hake, and herrings, though other kinds are taken. Of late years increased impetus has been given to this industry, and many men and boats are employed in conducting it. Enormous quan- tities of lobsters and oysters are annually shipped to all parts of the American continent as well as elsewhere. The value of the fisheries in 1883 was nearly half a million dollars.*~~

~~*Game, &c.—Wild ducks, teal, brant, wild geese, woodcocks, partridges, pigeons, and snipe occur in great abundance, Birds number 260 species. Of wild animals the principal are bears (found occasionally only), lynxes, foxes, musk-rats, hares, squirrels, &c. In the summer and autumn seals in large numbers frequent the shores.*~~

~~*Communication.—Good waggon roads are to be found wherever there is a settlement. The Prince Edward Island Railway, 200 miles long, runs from one end of the island to the other, and branches off to every town or point of importance. The main line extends from Souris and Georgetown on the east to Tignish on the north-western extremity, connecting with Summerside and Charlottetown, the capital. During the season of navigation regular communication is had by steamer with Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Quebec, and Boston. Navigation usually closes about the middle of December and opens before the first of May. In winter the mails and passengers are conveyed across the strait in ice-boats, which ply between Cape Traverse in Prince Edward Island and Cape Tormentine in New Brunswick. A steamer runs between Georgetown and Pictou, Nova Scotia, nearly the whole season. There isa post-office to every 400 of the*~~

~~*inhabitants. Tele- graphic communication is maintained with America and Europe by means of a submarine cable about 10 miles in length, connecting the island with New Brunswick. Telegraph offices are established throughout the province and along the line of railway.*~~

~~*Population.—The province is divided into three counties, viz., King's, Queen's, and Prince, which are subdivided into sixty-seven townships and three royalties. The population is of mixed origin, a large proportion being emigrants from Great Britain, and the remainder natives of the country, descendants of the French Aca- dians, Scottish, English, and Irish settlers, and the loyalists who went to the island after the American revolution. The Indians number 281. In 1881 the population was 108,891 (54,729 males and 54,162 females). The Roman Catholic diocese is situated at Charlottetown, and authority over the spiritual affairs of the Episcopalians is exercised by the bishop of Nova Scotia. The following table shows the chief religious denominations and the number of their adherents :—*~~

~~*Church of Rome ……..47,115 | Church of England …..... 7,192*~~
~~*Presbytertans …0.0.cs0ee SBGSS || EEOC Sees asrsmasoan 6,236*~~
~~*Methodists inf. <:-siciciewiees oc 13,485*~~

~~*The chief towns are Charlottetown (11,485), the capital of the island and the county town of Queen's, Summerside (2853), capital of Prince county, and Georgetown (1118), capital of King's county. Princetown is a flourishing seaport on Richmond Bay, and Rustico, famous for its bathing facilities, is a place of popular summer resort. Tignish and Alberton are stations much frequented by fishermen, and Souris, 60 miles east of Charlottetown, well furnished with harbour accommodation, is the outlet for the exports of the greater part of King's county. Other rising villages are Mount Stewart, Kensington, Montague, Breadalbane, and Crapaud.*~~

~~*Administration, Finanee, &e.—The affairs of the province are administered by a lieutenant-governor and an executive council consisting of nine members, three with portfolios and six without, assisted by a legislative council of thirteen members and a legisla- tive assembly of thirty members, both elective. The lieutenant- governor is appointed by the governor-general of Canada in council. A system of responsible government has existed in the island since 1851. Prince Edward Island returns six members*~~

~~*to the Canadian House of Commons, and four senators are appointed to the Canadian Senate by the crown. All males owning a freehold or leasehold property to the value of $400, or partly freehold and partly lease- hold amounting together to $400, and in possession of the same for at least twelve months previous -to election, have the right to vote for a member of the Legislative Council. The franchise*~~

~~*for the House of Assembly is practically residential manhood suffrage.*~~

~~*In 1882 the public revenue was $233,464 and the expenditure $257,228. The chief source of revenue is the yearly subsidy granted by the Dominion Government under the terms of the British North America Act. In 1883 it amounted to $164,674. The remainder of the receipts is derived from the sale of Government lands, licences, and miscellaneous fees. The provincial legislature meets at Char- lottetown, where the public offices are situated. The judiciary con- sists of a supreme court with one chief and two assistant judges ; a court of chancery, of which the lieutenant-governor is ex officio chancellor, and the judicial powers of which are exercised by a master of the rolls and vice-chancellor; a court of marriage and divorce, of which the lieutenant-governor and members of the executive council are judges; a court of vice-admiralty with one judge and two deputies; acourt of probate and wills with one judge ; three county courts with one judge for each ; and stipendiary magis- trates and justices of the peace. The province has authority to make its own civil laws, but in all criminal cases the form employed in the courts is the criminal law of the Dominion. Prince Edward Island is the twelfth military district in the militia of Canada. The established strength of the active force, by arms, is composed of three batteries of garrison artillery, one company of engineers, and ten companies of infantry,—total, 54 officers and 608 non-commis- sioned officers and men. The period of service in time of peace is three years.*~~

~~*Education.—The free-school system has obtained in the island since 1852. Previous to that date the schools were mainly supported by voluntary subscription and such local assistance as could be obtained. In 1877 the Public Schools Act—an ample and liberal measure—was passed, and a department of education was instituted. Two years later ladies were*~~

~~*admitted to Prince of Wales College, an institution established in 1860, and amalgamated in 1879 with the normal school, and since then the department has introduced many improvements into the system. The total number of teachers in 1883 was 473, of school districts 419, and of schools 424. The number of pupils enrolled was 21,495, and the average daily attend- ance was 11,759. The total expenditure for education was, by the provincial Government $101,193, by the school districts $35,624, total $136,817. The Bible is read in all public schools. Besides the institutions named there are St Dunstan's College (exceedingly well conducted, and Roman Catholic in religion), a model school, thirteen high schools, and several private schools and academies. The local government maintains a hospital for the care of the in- sane, and the marine hospital is under the control of the Dominion authorities.*~~

~~*History.—Sebastian Cabot is said to have discovered this island in 1497, but the authority on which this statement rests is at least doubtful. Certain it is that Jacques Cartier had the credit of naming it Isle St Jean when he discovered it on 24th June 1534 during one of his voyages up the St Lawrence. That name clung to it for 265 years. Champlain, early in the next century, took possession of it for France, and in 1663 a grant was made of it to Captain Doublet, an officer in the army, who, however, failing to make settlements im the colony, soon afterwards lost his grant. Little attention was paid to the island until after the peace of Utrecht, when the French, allured by its fertility, made efforts to colonize it. In 1719 it was granted, en seigneurie, to the count of St Pierre, who tried to establish fisheries and a trading company. HIe lavished considerable means on his enterprise, but the scheme proved unsuccessful and his grant was revoked. In 1755 the island was captured by the British, but after the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle it was restored to France, from which it was again wrested in 1758. It was afterwards placed under the administration of Nova Scotia, and some years later it was erected into a separate government. The first parliament was called together in 1778, and a constitution was given to the colony. In November 1798 the legislature passed an Act changing the name of the province to Prince Edward Island, out of compliment to the duke of Kent, who was at that time com- =nander of the forces in British North America. In February 1799 the Act was confirmed by the king in council.*~~

~~After the peace of 1763 a plan was agreed to by which the island was divided into townships of about 20,000 acres each. Grants of these lands were made to individuals supposed to have claims on the Government. They were to paya small sum as quit rents, and the conditions imposed provided for the establishment of churches and wharves, and bona fide settlement. The grantees, however, were in most cases mere speculators, who had no mind to brave the trials of colonization in a new country. Many promptly dis- posed of their "lots," and the lands fell into the hands of a large number of non-residents. The land question remained a vexed point of contention until 1860, when the Government was compelled to appoint a commission to appraise the rights of the absentee owners, and to formulate ascheme of adjustment. The commission advised the Government to buy the lands and resell them to the tenantry. A Bill for that purpose was passed, but the imperial authorities dis- allowed it. Asecond attempt proved more successful, and a measure,~~

~~having the same object in view, was agreed to, The agitation was silenced, and the tenants eagerly availed themselves of their privi- leges. At the close of 1882, out of the 843,981 aeres of land acquired~~

~~by the Government, only 142,011 acres remained to be disposed of. Of that amount about 75,000 acres represented land held by parties who had not yet purchased.~~

~~Prince Edward Island declined to accept the Act of Confederation in 1867, but in July 1873 it entered the union of American colonies which constitute the Dominion of CANADA (9.1.). (Cio SHE)~~

~~PRINCE OF WALES ISLAND,! the official name of the island popularly known as Penanc or PuLo-PENANG (i.e, Areca Nut Island), which lies 8 or 9 miles off the west coast of the Malay peninsula in 5° 20' N. lat. and 100° 20' E. long. The island is about 15 miles long by 5 broad and has an area of 107 square miles or 69,000 acres, considerably less than the Isle of Wight. When in 1785 it was ceded to the English by the rajah of Kedah in re- turn for an annual pension of 10,000 dollars, it was almost uninhabited; at the census of 1881 its population amounted to 90,951 (comprising 612~~

~~*Europeans, 21,772 Malays, 45,135 Chinese, 15,730 natives of India), and it has since been increased mainly by further Chinese and Indian im- migration. The people from the east coast of India are locally known as Klings, a Malay corruption of Telinga or Telugu ; and the half-breed race between Indian and Malay is distinguished as Jawi-Pekan. About two-fifths of Penang are lowland and the rest consists of hills, which towards the north reach their culminating point, 2922 feet above the sea, in the peak now utilized as a sanatorium. A con- siderable portion of the surface is still uncleared, and from the summit of the peak the whole island presents very much the appearance of a forest, the villages always lying in the midst of groves of the cocoanut palm. On the whole, however, vegetation is not so rich as on the neigh- bouring mainland. Apart from the cocoa-nuts and areca- nuts, the principal products are sugar, coffee, and pepper ; but increasing attention is again being given to nutmegs and cloves, which can be grown on the hillsides. Of the landholders 2280 were Chinese and 1482 Malays in 1882. In the lowlands the temperature ranges from 80° to 90°, but on the peak from 60° to 75°. The rainfall in 1882 was 126-50 inches—somewhat above the average. George- town or Penang, the only town on the island, lies on the east coast on a low plain stretching out into the sea; its harbour, always well filled with both European vessels and native craft, is the strait between island and mainland. Water-works were undertaken in 1865. Among the public buildings are the town-hall (1872-80), the post-office (1881), the free school with upwards of 600 pupils, the Christian Brothers' school, several Tamil schools, the general hospital (1882), and the pauper hospital. An important leper hospital is maintained on Pulo-Jarajah, a small but lofty island in the strait opposite the town. Though Singapore has withdrawn much of the trade that formerly found its way to Penang, there has been a great increase both in exports and imports, the aggregate value for 1859-60 being £3,530,000 and for 1882 £8,855,919.*~~

~~*The attention of the East India Company was first called to Pulo- Penang by Captain Light in 1771, and it was under his personal command that the settlement was founded in July 1786. At his death in 1794 he left "a compact little township with fort and public buildings." In 1798 Sir George Leith (for the purpose mainly of rooting out piracy) purchased from the rajah of Kedah for 2000 dollars the tract of land opposite Prince of Wales Island, which has since become known as Province Wellesley (area in 1885,*~~

~~234 square miles). In 1806 the island was made a presidency of equal rank with Madras or Bombay ; and after Singapore and Malacca were incorporated with it in 1826 it remained the seat of the general government till 1832, The commercial part of the town was destroyed by fire in 1808.~~

~~1 Prince of Wales Island is also the name of an island separated by Endeavour Strait from York Peninsula in Queensland, Australia, discovered by Captain Cook in 1770, and since famous for its pearl fishery.~~

~~PRINCE OF WALES LAND, a large insular tract in the northern Arctic region opposite Boothia Felix, from which it is separated by Franklin Strait.~~

~~PRINCES ISLANDS, the Demonesi or Demonnesi of the ancients, a beautiful cluster in the Sea of Marmora opposite that part of the Asiatic coast which trends south- east from Scutari to the entrance of the Gulf of Ismid (Nicomedia). They are nine in number—Prote (Turkish, Tinaki), Antigone, Khalki or Karki (Chalcitis or "copper- mine island" of the ancients), Plate, Oxeia, Pitys, Antiro- bido (Terebinth or Rabbit Island), Neandro, and Prinkipo. Prinkipo or Principo (with an Italian ¢), Kyzyl-Ada or Red Island of the Turks, the largest of the group, is a broad green hill of red quartz rising with soft and verdant out- lines into two peaks, the higher of which (500 feet) is crowned by the ex-monastery of St George, embosomed amid its oaks. On the height above the town of Prinkipo is the monastery of the Transfiguration and on the coast opposite Antirobido that of St Nicholas. A white-flowered heath (Erica arborea), two species of cistus (Cistus villosus and salvifolius), and lavender give character to the luxuri- ant vegetation. Khalki contains three convents and an Ottoman naval college; and the whole group, especially Khalki and Plate, form a great summer resort for the Greeks of Constantinople, from which city there is a regular steamer service.~~

~~The Princes Islands are intimately associated with Byzantine history. A convent in Prinkipo (now a mass of ruins at the spot called Kamares) was a place of exile for the empresses Irene, Euphrosyne, Zoe, and Anna Dalassena. Antigone was the prison of the patriarch Methodius, and its chapel is said to have been built by Theodora. In Khalki the monastery of~~

~~*the Theotokos (originally of St John), which since 1831 has been a Greek com- mercial school, was probably founded by John VIII. Palologus, and was rebuilt about 1680 by the famous Panagiotaki, and again by Alexander Ypsilanti of Moldavia. Close beside it is the tomb of Edward Barton, second English ambassador to the Porte. Hagia Trias (a school of theology since 1844) was rebuilt by the patriarch Metrophanes of bibliographical memory. Antirobido is associated with the exile of Ignatius and Theodosius ; and Plate contained subterranean state-prisons hewn out of the rock.*~~

~~*See Gustave Schlumberger, Les Iles des Princes, Paris, 1884; Grisebach, Rume- lien und Brussa, 1839.*~~

~~*PRINCETON, a borough and township of the United States, in Mercer county, New Jersey, on the Delaware and Rariton Canal, 3 miles north by rail from Princeton Junction, which is 48 miles south-west of New York and 42 north-east of Philadelphia on the Pennsylvania Rail- way. Standing on high ground, it commands a fine prospect towards the east and south. The town is the seat of Princeton or New Jersey College, founded in 1746 by menibers of the presbytery of New York, chartered in the same year, and opened at Elizabethtown (now Eliza- beth) in 1747, removed to Newark in the same year and rechartered in 1748, and finally transferred in 1756 to Princeton, where Nassau Hall, so called in honour of William ITI. of England, had. been erected. Nassau Hall has been twice burned down, in 1802 and 1855, but was restored in 1856 in the old style. This building, Reunion Hall (1870), West College (1836), East College (1833), and the halls of the American Whig and Cliosophic literary societies enclose a quadrangle ; and eastward, in the line of Nassau Hall or the north front, stand the library build- ings (1873), consisting of an octagonal centre with two wings, the Dickinson Hall (1870), and the John C. Green School of Science (1873). Along the western border of the grounds are University Hall (1876), the Halstead observatory (1867), the gymnasium (1869), Witherspoon Hall (1876), and Edwards Hall (1879), while on the east are the Marquand Chapel (1881), Murray Hall (1877) and the residence of the president. Almost all these buildings are the gifts of generous benefactors, the most*~~

~~*munificent of whom was Mr John C. Green, by whom and by the trustees of his estate not less than $1,500,000 has been given in buildings and endowments. In 1884 the college, which is steadily growing, had 39 professors and 519 students, and the library contained 77,000 volumes. The endowments amount to $1,392,000. The governor of the State of New Jersey is ex officio president of the board of trustees, who are twenty-five in number besides the president of the college. The trustees appoint the members of the faculty and have entire control over the funds and property of the college. They fill all vacancies in their own body. Besides the Halstead observatory, there is another well-equipped observatory at the School of Science, and the laboratories and museum are well furnished for scientific study. In the cemetery, which lies to the north of the college, are the tombs of Jonathan Edwards, Aaron Burr, &c. Princeton is also the seat of the oldest theological seminary of the Presbyterian Church in the United States (founded in 1812), with 7 professors, 1 instructor, about 150 students, and an endowment of about a million dollars. The population of the township in 1870 was 3986 and of the borough 2798, and in 1880 respectively 4348 and 3209.*~~

~~*At Princeton on 3d January 1777 Washington defeated the British forces ; the Continental Congress met in the town (Nassau Hall) from 26th June to 4th November 1783.*~~

~~*PRINGLE, Sir Joun (1707-1782), a distinguished physician, was the younger son of Sir John Pringle of Stitchel, Roxburghshire, and was born on the 10th of April 1707. He was educated at home under a private tutor, and subsequently at St Andrews, at Edinburgh, and at Leyden, where he took the degree of doctor of physic. At the last-named university he was an intimate friend of Van Swieten and [faller. He at first settled in Edinburgh as a physician, but was soon after appointed assistant and successor to the professor of moral philosophy in the university. In 1742 he became physician to the earl of Stair, then commanding the British army in Flanders, and in 1745 was appointed by the duke of Cumberland physician-general to the forces in the Low Countries. In 1749, having settled in London, he was made physician in ordinary to the duke of Cumberland ; and he afterwards received other court appointments as physician, and im 1766 a baronetcy. He read a series of papers to the Royal Society, which*~~

~~are to be found in the Z'vansactions, and which gained for him the Copley gold medal. HIs first book was Observations on the Nature and Cure of Hospital and Jayl-Fevers (London, 1750). He married in 1752 a daughter of Dr Oliver, a physician in Bath; and in the same year he published his important work, Observations on the Diseases of the Army in.Camp and Garrison, which went through many editions and was also translated into French, German, Italian, and Spanish. After having acted for many years as a member of the council of the Royal Society, he was in November 1772 elected president of that body. In this capacity he delivered and published, in connexion with the annual assignments of the Copley medal, six '" discourses," which were afterwards collected into a single volume (1783). In 1776 he published A Discourse on Improvements in preserving the Health of Mariners. After passing his seventieth year he resigned his presidency and removed to Edinburgh in 1780, but returned to London in September 1781, and died in Janu- ary following. There isa monument to him in Westminster Abbey, executed by Nollekens.~~

~~_ A Life of Pringle by Kippis is prefixed to the volume contain- ing the Six Discourses. The library of the College of Physicians of Edinburgh possesses ten folio volumes of tis unedited MSS., in-~~

~~cluding an essay "on air, climate, diet, and exercise." There are Eloges on Pringle by Vicq d'Azyr and Condorcet.~~

~~PRINTING, Typocrapnic. See TyPpoGRAPHY.~~

~~PRI—PRI~~

~~PRIOR, Matruew (1664-1721), the most distinguished of English society poets, was the nephew, as Chaucer was the son, of a London vintner, and the lives of the two poets were parallel in a good many other respects. Their art earned for both of them social advancement and political employment ; both had a turn for business and diplomacy ; both were employed on embassies, both even in secret missions; both were officers of the royal household, and both were rewarded with posts in Government offices of trade; and there was besides not a little in common between them as poets. There are not two careers in literature that offer more numerous or more curious points of parallelism. The vintner's nephew in the reign of Charles~~

~~*II. (born, July 21, 1644, either, it would appear, at Wimborne in Dorsetshire, or in or near London) attracted the notice of a noble patron while still at school at Westminster, under the famous Dr Busby. 'The earl of Dorset was with a party at the tavern, and the school- boy was called in to decide some debate that had arisen about a passage in Horace. According to the story, Prior acquitted himself so well that the earl, the Mzecenas of his generation, at once undertook to send him to Cambridge, and he was entered at St John's in 1682. As it happened a fellow schoolboy at Westminster was Charles Montague, who afterwards became earl of Halifax. The two con- tinued comrades at Cambridge, and together wrote in 1687 the City Mouse and Country Mouse, in ridicule of Dryden's Hind and Panther. It was an age when satirists were in request, and sure of patronage and promotion. The joint production made the fortune of both authors. Montague, who was an earl's grandson, was promoted at once, and Prior had to languish only three years as a fellow of his college when hewas gazetted secretary to the embassy at The Hague. After four years of this employment he was re- called to England, and appointed one of the gentlemen of the king's bedchamber. Apparently also he acted as one of the king's secretaries, and in 1697 he was secretary to the plenipotentiaries who concluded the peace of Ryswick. Prior's talent for affairs was doubted by Pope, who had no special means of judging, but it is not likely that King William would have employed in this important business a man who had not given proof of diplomatic skill and grasp of details. The poet's knowledge of French is specially men- tioned among his qualifications, and this was recognized by his being sent in the same year to Paris in attendance on the English ambassador. At this period Prior could say with good reason that "he had business enough upon his hands and was only a poet by accident." To poetry, however, which had laid the foundation of his fortunes, he still occasionally trusted as a means of maintaining his position, and composed odes on various public events that required celebration. His wit made him a favourite as a member of the English legation at Paris, although he used it sometimes in a patriotic manner at the expense of the French. After his return from France, and a brief tenure of other offices, Prior succeeded Locke as a commissioner of trade. In 1701 he sat in parliament for East Grinstead. About the sante time for some undiscovered reason he changed his side in politics, and allied himself with Harley and St John. Perhaps in consequence of this for nine years there is no mention of his name in*~~

~~connexion with any public trans- action, But when the Tories came into power in 1710 Prior's diplomatic abilities were again called into action, and till the death of Anne he held a prominent place in all negotiations with the French court, sometimes as secret agent, sometimes in an equivocal position as am- bassador's companion, sometimes as fully accredited but very unpunctually paid ambassador. From this greatness the poet had a sudden fall when the queen died and the~~

~~Whigs regained power. He was considered of sufficient consequence not to be allowed to escape into obscurity. He was specially examined by a committee of the privy council, and kept in close custody for three years. During this imprisonment, maintaining his cheerful philo- sophy, he wrote his longest humorous poem, Alma, or The Progress of the Mind. This, along with his most am- bitious work Solomon, and a collection of Poems on several Occasions, was published by subscription in 1718. The poet did not long survive his enforced retirement from public life, although he bore his ups and downs with rare equanimity. He died at Wimpole, Cambridgeshire, a seat of the earl of Oxford, September 18, 1721, and was buried in Westminster Abbey, where his monument may be seen in Poets' Corner. Prior had very much the same easy pleasure- loving disposition as Chaucer, combined with a similar capacity for solid work. Johnson lays stress with justice on the variety and the uniform excellence of Prior's poetry. This distinction may fairly be claimed for a poet who has received the enthusiastic praise, in different views of his work, of two men so different as John Wesley and Mr Swinburne. Prior tried many kinds of grave and gay, and in the face of such testimony it would seem as if we ought to reconsider Johngon's verdict that he never rises high above mediocrity in any kind. Johnson might have been more lenient to Prior's love-verses if he had not made so much use in them of classical fictions. This was the one thing that the great critic would on no account tolerate ; frigid allusions to Venus, Cupid, Diana, Ganymede, and such like "easy fictions and vulgar topics," put him out of temper at once, and excluded the unlucky composition from all chance of fair consideration at his hands. The truth was that what Johnson desiderated in love-verses was honest fervent passion. He had no taste for such elegant trifling as the poems in playful praise of Cloe. Even~~

~~the pretty compliments in the love-letter to the lady of quality aged five would not have moved him to any ecstasy of admira- tion. "Whatever Prior obtains above mediocrity," he says, "seems the effort of struggle and of toil. He has many vigorous but few happy lines ; he has everything by purchase, and nothing by gift… .. His expression has every mark of laborious study; the line seldom seems to have been formed at once; the words did not come till they were called, and were then put by constraint into their places, where they do their duty, but do it sullenly." This criticism is too unqualified. It applies very happily to many of Prior's verses, but not to Prior at his best ; and, even when he is at his worst, it strikes us that the failure is rather owing to his not having laboured long enough to conceal the labour. If Prior has nothing by gift, it is equally true—and Johnson admits this also— that he has nothing by theft. He is eminently original, and this will probably help to keep his reputation alive with students of poetry for a very long time. There isa fresh intellectual force and a pregnancy of thought in his writing that has made Prior exceedingly serviceable read- ing for subsequent poets, and there are some of his short poems in which every stanza has been the cause of happy thought and perfect expression in his successors. "Prior is a lady's book," Johnson once said to Boswell. He might have said with more propriety that Prior is a poet's book —a very good book, not exactly to steal from, but to get stimulus from. (w. M.) PRISCIAN (Prisctanus C#SARIENSIS), the most cele- brated Latin grammarian, lived about 500 a.D., 7.2. some- what before Justinian. Thisis shown by the facts that he addressed to Anastasius, emperor of the East 491-518, a laudatory poem, and that the MSS. of his Institutiones Grammatice contain a subscription to the effect that the work was copied (526, 527) by Flav. Theodorus, a clerk in~~

~~the imperial secretariat ("memorialis saeri scrinii episto- larum"). Threeminor treatises are dedicated to Symmachus (the father-in-law of Boetius). Cassiodorus, writing 1n the ninety-third year of his age (560? 573%), heads some extracts from Priscian with the statement that he taught at Constantinople in his (Cassiodor's) time (Keil, G7. Lat., vii. p. 207). His title Cxsarensis points, accord- ing to Niebuhr and others, to Caesarea in Mauretania. Priscian's teacher was Theoctistus, '"noster preeceptor, omnis~~

~~eloquentize decus, cui quicquid in me sit doctrinze post deum imputo" (Inst. Gr., vi. 51), who also wrote an Institutio artis grammatice (ibid., xviii. 56). A later gram- marian, Eutyches, pays Priscian himself a still higher com- pliment—"de quibus Romanz lumen facundiz, meus, immo communis omnium hominum, preceptor, summa cum subtilitate copiosissime grammaticus Priscianus disser- uisse cognoscitur." (Eutych., i. 8; Keil, Gr. Lat., v. p. 456). Priscian was quoted by several writers in Britain of the 8th century—Aldhelm, Bede, Alcuin—and was abridged or largely used in the next century by HIrabanus Maurus of Fulda and Servatus Lupus of Ferrara. Of the general use made of his great work the best proof is that, as HIertz says, there is hardly a library in Europe that did not and does not contain a copy, and that there are now about a thousand MSS, of it. The greater part of these contain only books i-xvi. (sometimes called Priscianus major) ; a few contain (with the three books Ad Symmachum) books XVii., xviii. (Priscianus minor); and a few contain both parts. The earliest MSS. are of the 9th century, though a few fragments are somewhat earlier. All are ultimately derived from the copy made by Theodorus. The first printed edition was in 1470 at Venice. It may fairly be said that from the beginning of the 6th century until recently Priscian has reigned over Latin grammar with almost as generally recognized an authority as Justinian has over Roman law. Some account of so remarkable a treatise may reasonably be required.~~

~~The Jnstitutiones Grammatice is a systematic exposition of Latin grammar, dedicated to Julian, consul and patri- cian, whom some have identified with the author of a well- known epitome of Justinian's Wovellx, but the lawyer appears to be somewhat later than Priscian. In length the treatise is about twice the size of Quintilian's Jnstitutio Oratoria, and about equal to Madvig's Latin Grammar. It is divided into eighteen books, of which the first sixteen deal mainly with sounds, word-formation, and inflexions, the last two, which form from a fourth toa third of the whole work, deal with syntax. Priscian informs us in his preface that he has translated into Latin such pre- cepts of the Greeks HIerodian and Apollonius as seemed suitable, and added to them from Latin grammarians. Of the latter he occasionally refers to Caper, Donatus, Probus, and Servius; and more rarely to Charisius, Dio- medes, Asper, Nonius, Remmius Palemon, and others. HIe proceeds in orderly and almost exhaustive fashion, though with some~~

~~*digressions and repetitions, gives defini- tions, rules, examples, and exceptions, and constantly quotes passages from various writers to illustrate the use of a form. He has thus preserved to us numerous frag- ments which would otherwise have been lost, e.g., from Ennius, Pacuvius, Attius, Lucilius, Cato,and Varro. But the authors whom he quotes most frequently are Virgil, and, next to him, Terence, Cicero, Plautus; then Lucan, Horace, Juvenal, Sallust, Statius, Ovid, Livy, and Persius. His industry in collecting forms and examples is both great and methodical. His style is somewhat heavy, but sensible and clear ; it has not the admirable grace of Quin- tilian, nor the adroit use of a technical language such as is found in the Roman jurists ; but there isno attempt at fine writing, and it is free not of course from usages of late*~~

~~*rpRe ioe fT AN*~~

~~*Latin, but from anything that can be called barbarism. Considering the time at which it was written, it is very creditable to the author, and not unworthy of the high place it obtained in the grammatical world. Its defects are such as were till lately common more or less to all grammars.*~~

~~*These defects may be referred in the main to four heads. (1) Priscian avowedly treats Greek writers on (Greek) grammar as his supreme authorities (¢f. 1. 13; vi. 1; xii. 13, &c.), and, though noticing differences between the two languages, bears too little in mind that each has a history of its own and is a law to itself. (2) There had been no scientific study of phonetics, and consequently the changes and combinations of languages are treated in a mechanical way: ¢.g., 7 passes into a, as genus, generis, generatum ; into o as sax, saxosus (1. 33); g passes into s as torqueo, torsi (i. 48), &c. (3) The resolution of a word into root or stem and inflexional or derivative affixes was an idea wholly unknown, and the rules of formation are often based on unimportant phenomena, and yet are invested with an authority which is irrational and mis- leading: ¢g., Venus, like other names ending in ws, ought to have genitive Veni, but, as this might be taken for a verb, it has Veneris (vi. 86; viii. 5). Ador has no geni- tive because two rules conflict; for neuters in ov have a short penult (e.g., equor, xqguoris), and adoro, from which it is derived, has a long penult (vi. 49; viii. 6). (4) The practical meaning of the inflexions is not realized, and syntactical usages*~~

~~are treated as if they were arbitrary or accidental associations. Thus, after laying down as a general rule for declinable words that, when they refer to one and the same person, they must have the same case, gender, and number, Priscian adds, that when there are transitive words we may use different numbers, as doceo discipulos, docemus discipulum (xvii. 153-155). He often states a rule too broadly or narrowly, and then, as it were, gropes after restrictions and extensions.~~

~~His etymologies are of course sometimes very wild: eg., celebs from celestium vitam ducens, b being put for wu because a consonant cannot be put before another conson- ant (i. 23); deterior from the verb detero, deteris; potior (adj.) from potior, potiris (iii. 3); arbor from robur (vi. 48); verbum from verberatus aeris (vill. 1), &c. Nor is he always right in Greek usages: thus, in illustrating Latin moods by Greek he frequently uses the future optative with dy, ¢.9., ekdvcowro ay, muaTevooyn av (xviii. 106), and still more strangely treats dpa as identical in force with dy, é.g., quasi tolleretur ac constitueretur, éraiporo dy kat katarattoito apa, and misuses both particles, e.g., im me causam conferebat quod eum codicem obsignassem, éoppayira av nro eodpayicds cinv dpa (xviii. 110). He evidently regarded dy or dpa as normally required with the Greek optative or other moods corresponding to the Latin sub- junctive (xviii. 117, &c.).~~

~~A rapid notice of the order and of some salient points will show both merits and defects in the treatment of his subject-matter. The references are to the book and to Krehl's paragraphs.~~

~~Book i. treats of vocal sound and of letters, their changes and com- binations. Elementa are vowels, semi-vowels, or mutes. Vowels are named from their own sound; semi-vowels sound a vowel before them ; mutes sound a vowel after them (i. 7). As semi- vowels he classes f, 1, m, n, 7, s, x, and in Greek names z. FF was, among the earliest Latins, the Holie digamma, but afterwards was equivalent to g. It is, however, rather a mute, because it is not found at the end of a word, and can be placed before 7 and 7 in the same syllable (7b. 13). K is quite superfluous; g merely shows that a u following has no metrical effect ; 4 is a mere aspiration ; 7 and uw sometimes pass into consonants, and then have a different metri- cal effect~~

~~*from what they have as vowels (ib. 14-17). D has often the sound of 2: ¢.g., in mcridies, hodie (ib. 31).*~~

~~*Book ii. treats of the syllable and of the letters used to end it, then of the parts of speech. A syllable is an ordered combination of letters uttered with one accent and one breath (ii. 1). A word (dictio) is the unit of orderly speech (ib. 14). Speech (oratio) is a suitable arrangement of words expressing a complete meaning (7d.*~~

-

~~*Pie iS i*~~

~~*15). The parts of speech are, according to Priscian, eight, viz., noun, verb, participle, pronoun, preposition, adverb, interjection, conjunction. Infinites (7.¢., infinitive moods) are included under the verb, because they have tenses and nocases. Participles are not included, because they have cases and genders but no moods (4d. 18). Priscian obtains a framework for the arrangement of his facts from the "accidents" of each part of speech, and subordinate classifications are taken from the endings of the words. Nouns have the following accidents :—specics, genus, numerus, figura, casus. As regards specics ("class") nouns are proper or appel- lative, and each of these classes are subdivided into many others. Adjectives are (rightly) treated by Priscian in cominon with other nouns (il, 22 sg.). The rest of this book and books iii. and iv. treat of the formation of the different classes of nouns, c¢.g., of patronymics, possessives, comparatives, superlatives, diminutives, and other derivatives. Book v. treats of gender, number, figure, and case. For gender, nouns are discussed by their endings. Figure is either simple or composite or decomposite (¢.e., derivative from composite), as, magnus, magnanimus, magnanimitas (v. 61). There are four modes of composition :—(1) cx dwobus integris, as tribunusplebis ; (2) ex duobus corruptis, as benivolus ; (8) ex integro*~~

~~*et corrupto, e.g., mnimicus ; (4) ex corrupto ct integro, as impius | There are six cases, thus arranged :—(1) the nominative |*~~

~~*(v. 58). as the original ; (2) the genitive, because it is born fron the nomin- ative, and begets the other oblique cases; (3) the dative, "qui magis amicis*~~

~~*convenit;" (4) the accusative, " qui magis ad inimicos attinet ;" (5) the vocative as the most imperfect ; (6) the ablative as hew and peculiar to the Latins (v. 74). mation of the genitive is discussed, each nominative termination being taken in order, irrespective of the declension. Book vii. treats of the other cases in each of the five declensions. modern grammars. Hic, hujus, &c., are often prefixed as symbols of gender and case.*~~

~~*Books viii.—x. decal with the verb. Verbs have eight accidents:— genus, tempus, modus, species, figura, conjugatio, persona, numerus. Some verbs (as other parts of speech) are defective, either by natural necessity or by chance. Necessity may lie in the meaning (c.g., puerperus is not found) or in the incompatibility of sound (e.g., cursor but not cursrix). Chance may lie simply in non-use, ¢.g., faux, prex, dicio, for, dor; or because the form would be un- pleasant, ¢.g., metuturus or mctuiturus, nutritrix (from nutritor), for which nutriz is used. Sometimes a word isnot used in order to avoid confusion, ¢.g., conjunxz has conjugis, lest conjungis should be taken fora verb ; maneohas manst, not manut ; fac, duc avoid con- fusion with ablatives face, duce, &c. (viii. 4-6).*~~

~~*Genus or significatio verbi is its being active or passive. Verbs in o are active, neuter, and neutro-passive, ¢.g., amo, spiro, gawdeo (of. xi. 28). Verbs in or are passive, common, and deponent, ¢.g., amor, osculor te and a tc, sequor. Verbs whose meaning and use do not correspond with the form are enumerated (tb. 7-39). Tempus is present, past, and future. Past time is divided into past imper- fect, past perfect, past pluperfect. Present and future time are not divided by the Romans (7b. 38). Dzxcro is called the subjunc- tive future (b. 55, 57). The indicative and subjunctive have all tenses ; the imperative has present, future, and, in passive, a past (e.g., amatus sit). The optative and infinite have one form ex- pressing both present and past imperfect, and another expressing perfect and pluperfect (7b. 38-43). The present tense embraces to some extent both past and future (¢.g., Priscianus vocor, seribo versum). The perfect corresponds to Greek aorist as well as to perfect (7b. 51-54). Priscian makes five moods, —the optative (same in forms as the subjunctive) always requiring an adverb of wishing ; the subjunctive, requiring not only an adverb or conjunction, but also another verb, e¢.g., cum faciam venito. In expressions of com- mand, as ne dicas, another verb is not required (7b. 68). Supines and gerunds*~~

~~*(sometimes confused, sometimes distinguished, by Priscian) are nouns used in place of the infinite. Amandus, &c., is called participiale or nomen verbale (ib. 44, 70). Impersonal verbs have a peculiar meaning (2b. 69).*~~

~~*In class verbs are primitive or derivative. Derivatives are nuimerously classified as inchoatives, frequentatives, &c. (ib. 72 sq.). In figure verbs are simple or compound (2d. 81). Conjugations in Latin are determined by the vowel of the 2nd person, and are thus four only, while the Greeks have ten. Person and number close the eighth book. ero, volo, edo are specially treated (ix. 4-11). The formation of the perfect is first treated generally (ix. 13), and then the perfects and supines of 1st and 2nd conjugations and (in book x.) of 3rd and 4th conjugations.*~~

~~*Book xi. deals with participles, which were invented to act as verbs applied to nouns, especially in oblique cases. Hence we can say not only bonus homo loquebatur but bont hominis loquentis orationem audivi, &c. (xi. 8). The participle has six accidents :— genus, casus, significatio, tempus, numerus, figura (ib. 13),—where genus is gender, and significatio and figura have same application as in verbs. The formation of the participles, especially of the past participle, is fully discussed.*~~

~~*Neither | here nor in the books on the verb are full paradigins set out asin |*~~

~~*In book vi. the for- |*~~

†

~~*145*~~

~~*Books xii. and xiii. deal with pronouns, They have six acci- dents :— species, persona, genus, numerus, figura, casus. There are four declensions, viz., personal, ile, &c., meus, &c., nostras, &e. Priscian classes as nouns, and not as pronouns, gis, qualis, talis, quantus, tantus, tot, unis, solus, totus, alius, nullus, uter, alter, and their compounds (xiii. 11, 29-35).*~~

~~*Having finished the four declinable parts of speech, Priscian turns to the four indeclinable. Prepositions (book xiv.) are (except some- times in verse) put before nouns both by apposition and com- position ; before pronouns*~~

~~only by apposition ; before all elsc by composition (xiv. 8). He treats first of prepositions used with the accusative case, then of those used with the ablative, and lastly of those occurring only in composition. Adverbs (book xv.) have species, significatio, figura, where species refers to their being primi- tive or derivative, and signtficatio to their meaning as temporal, local, confirmative, optative, &c. Some are used with all tenses and moods, others with some only. They are arranged for discus- sion under their endings (zb. 7). Under the endings ind are treated also ablatives of nouns used as adverbs, e¢.g., una, qua, Roma, and also other local uses of nouns, ¢.g., Roma sum, Romam co, &e. (tb. 9). Interjections are separated from adverbs by Roman writers, because they express fully an emotion of the mind, ¢.9., pape, quid video, where paps =miror (ib. 40). Conjunctions have figura and species, species denoting meaning and use as copulative, causal, disjunctive, &c. Some conjunctions belong to several of these classes.~~

~~The two books on syntax are looser in arrangement, and are not so clear and exhaustive as the former books. The truth is, Priscian lacked a good frainework for the facts of construction, and first tries one and then another. The seventeenth book rests mainly on Apollonius ; the eighteenth is less dependent on him, and ends with a long miscellaneous list, in alphabetical order, of Greek idioms, chiefly verbal, which he compares with corresponding Latin usages. Part of this list occurs twice over. Omitting duplicates, there are nearly 300 such comparisons. Hertz suggests (Pref. ili. p. vii.) that it was only closed by the fortunate occurrence of xopta (omar, illustrated by a line of Terence which ended with satwr! These idioms are illustrated by copious quotations from Demosthenes and Plato, and not a few from Homer, Herodotus, Thucydides, and Xenophon, besides Latin authors. .~~

~~The syntax commences with showing the analogy of elements, words, and speech. In each of these we have repetition, omission, conjunction, transposition, &c. (xvii. 3 sq.). Then Priscian dis- cusses why interrogatives are all of two parts of speech only, viz., nouns and adverbs (7b. 22): why not also verbs (2b. 36)? He dis- cusses the difference of pronouns from one another, their use with impersonals, particularly enterest, refert (tb. 92), the use of the pos- sessive and reflexive pronouns. He says that met ager may be used for meus ager, but also for " the land of my husband" (2b. 129,~~

~~130). There are many possible unions and interchanges of different parts of speech and of their accidents. Such unions as tlle ego qui quondam, &c., are justified analogically by the union of different cases, e.g., animalium quedam sunt mortalia, or by the rise of compounds from different cases, as mediterraneus a medio terrz (ib. 144-152). Different numbers and genders arc combined, as pars secant; aperite aliquis; in Hunuchum suam ; or different eases, as urbem quam statuo vestra est; or different times, as post-quam ccecidit. .. Ilion et omnis humo fumat Troja (tb. 155-168). Often we find interchange, ¢.g., of parts of speech, as sublime (volas) for an adverb, genus unde Latinum for ex quo, &c. (tb. 168).~~

~~In the eighteenth book he discusses the use of the cases. The nominative and vocative are absolute, and with substantival or vocatival verbs of the first or second person they do not require a pronoun, ¢.g., homo sum, Cicero nominor, but with other verbs they do, ¢.g., ego Priscianus scribo, tu Apollonius (or Apollont) scribis. Tu may, however, be omitted with the vocative, but Priscianus scribo is a solecism, because nouns by themselves and participles, without the vocative case, are of the third person (7b. 2-4). Ifa noun requires an oblique case, we must have the verb substantive or participle, ¢.g., filius Hercules sum. In filius Peleit Achilles multos interfecit, the participle ens (" for which we now use qu? est or qui fuit") must be understood (7b. 6). The nominative is joined to the genitive when possession and a possessor are meant. In Hector filius Priami the genitive denotes the possessor ; in magne virtutis vir it denotes the possession. In the latter use the Latins often have the ablative, as they have also for the Greek geni- tive of consequence, euod (avros =me vivo (ib. 14). The geni-tive after comparatives and superlatives and after verbals in -or and riz is mentioned ; also such usages as jidens animi, dives lactis (ib. 18, 19). In doctus grammaticam we have a participle ; in doctus grammatice a noun (ib. 21). The dative is used acquisi tively, e.g., commodus tibi swm, also after verbals in -J's and -dus. Words of equivalence or subjection or the reverse are used in any order with either genitive or dative, ¢9., pater filii, or filio est pater; so similis, par, amicus, &c. Nominatives are joined to accusatives when what belongs to a part is assigned to the whole, e.g., fortis dextram for fortem dextram habens. In all (even in oblique) cases we must understand qui est, as albi colorem equi~~

~~=equi cjus qui est albi coloris (ib. 27). The ablative 1s joined to the nominative to express the instrument, the possession, the con- sequence (see above). It is used also with words of passive mean- ing, ¢g., viduus pharetra, dignus morte, : 32). He then proceeds (in awkward language) to point out that the nominative which is joined to a verb remains unchanged, and either takes no oblique cases of another declinable word or only such as are construed with the verb, ¢.9., Terentius ambulat ; Cesar vincit Pompeiwm ; pater indulget filro. But the nominative, which in consequence of the nature of the noun itself takes oblique cases, takes those cases, be its own case what it may; ¢g., victor Pompei Cxsar interfectus est a Bruto ; victoris Pompett Caxsaris filia fit Julia; victori Pompett Caxsari, &c. (ib. 85, 36). Similarly datives like curzx, cordi, &c., are used with all cases, ¢.9., cordi hominis for jucundi hominis (ib. 38; xi. 24). Priscian would have found it difficult to give an instance of this. PP, Date~~

~~The syntax of the verb follows. The infinite is taken first as the most general. Infinites are often joined to nouns, ¢.9., bonwm est legere, and, by a beautiful figure, to adjectives, ¢.g., fortis bellare ; also to verbs aud participles (xviii. 40-46). All verbs may be resolved into infinites, ¢.g., ambulo=dico me ambulare, scribebam =scribere cept. Hence cepit was sometimes omitted, ¢.g., ego tllud sedulo negare factwm (ib. 48). Participials and supines have the same case as the verb; verbal nouns in -dus have the same case as the nouns to which they are joined (7. 61-63). All transitive verbs are joined either to a genitive or dative or accusative or ablative, eg., egeo tut, insidior tibi, &c. Similarly participials or supines, e.g., miscrendo tut moveor, nocitum tibt propero, nocitu tibt gaudet (4b. 61). An instance of the last would be hard to find.~~

~~The uses of indicative, imperative, and optative moods are briefly treated. The subjunctive, which is the same in form as the optative (ib. 82), requires always to be joined to another mood or to another verb of the same mood. It is especially frequent with s?, when expressing doubt and put for édy (2b. 80). With the indica- tive si used for e? shows confirmation and belief. In siqua id for- tuna vetabit, vetabit is put metri gratia for vetet. The~~

~~subjunctive expresses doubt or approval or possibility, ¢.g., doubt in eloquar an sileam, approval in si non perteswm thalamt tedaxquc fuisset, where fuisset = éyeydver Spa. Ut and qui, que, quod, giving a reason or expressing a doubt, are often used with subjunctive (2b. 82-98). In discussing ut for tva, his examples carefully give the same tense of the principal verb (whether indicative or subjunctive) as that of the dependent subjunctive, ¢.g., doces ut proficias, doceres ut pro- ficeres, docuisti ut profeceris, docuissces ut profecisses, docebis ut profeceris (future subjunctive). But he also notes that fecissem or faccrem are equally right with nisi impedires, and that faciam or — is used with either nist impedias or tmpedires (1b. 101-~~

~~104).~~

~~After then discussing the cases used after verbs according to the meaning of the verbs as transitive, passive, common, absolute (e.g., rubeo pudore), or expressing various affections of the body or mind é 127-167), he proceeds to the long list of idioms spoken of above.~~

~~Priscian's three short treatises dedicated to Symmachus are on weights and measures, the metres of Terence, and some rhetorical elements. He also wrote De nomine, pronomine, et verbo (an abridg- ment of part of his Znstitutiones), and an interesting specimen of the school teaching of grammar in the shape of complete parsing by question and answer of the first twelve lines of the neid (Par- titiones «it. versuum Aineidos principaliwm). The metre is discussed first, each verse is scanned, aud each word thoroughly and instruct- ively examined. Its meaning, its form, its accent, its class, its other cases or tenses, its compounds and derivatives are all required from the pupil, as well as the rules to which they ought to conform. Such parsing, rarely, if ever, takes place in modern schools. A treatise on accents is ascribed to Priscian, but is rejected by modern writers on the ground of matter and language. He also wrote two poems, notin any way remarkable, viz., a panegyric on Anastasius in 312 hexameters with a short iambic introduction, and a faithful translation into 1087 hexameters of Dionysius's Periegesis or geogra- oe survey of the world. A few passages have, says Bernhardy,~~

~~een altered by Priscian on account of their heathen contents.~~

~~*The grammatical treatises have been critically edited, in excellent fashion, in Keil's Grammatict Latini, vols. ii. and iii., 1855-60; the Jnstitutiones by Martin Hertz ; and the smaller treatises by Keil. The poems have been recently edited by Bahrens, in his Poete Latini Minores, vol. y., 1883. H. J.*~~

~~*PRISCILLIANISTS, an heretical sect which rose to some prominence in Spain towards the end of the 4th century and continued to subsist, in varying numbers, there and in Gaul, until after the middle of the 6th. Its founder was Priscillian, a wealthy and influential layman of considerable reading and ability who had devoted his life to a self-denying study of the occult sciences and the deeper problems of philosophy. In the course of his speculations he came under the influence of two teachers,*~~

~~*and in comparisons (70. |*~~

~~*PRI—PRI*~~

~~*Elpidius and Agape, who professed to have derived their views from a certain Marcus, a native of Egypt who had settled in Spain. The creed which Priscillian now formu- lated appears to have combined various features of Gnosti- cism and Manicheism: he seems, for example, to have held the theory of emanations—high in rank among these being the heavenly powers whom he called by the name of the twelve patriarchs, and brought also into close relation with the signs of the zodiac—the doctrine of the demiurge, the pre-existence of souls, the eternity of the devil, the essen- tial sinfulness of the flesh, the unlawfulness of procreation, and the like. He and his followers retained their con- nexion with the Catholic Church,—insisting, however, on fasting on Sundays, and refusing the bread in the sacra- ment; but they also held separate meetings in private at which they were accused by their adversaries (with what truth is not known) of practising magic and indulg- ing in licentious orgies. Many women joined the sect, and among the more prominent of its converts were two bishops, named Instantius and Salvianus. Bishop Hyginus of Cordova, who had been the first to raise the alarm against the new doctrines and practices, himself soon afterwards joined the sect; but through the exer- tions of Idacius of Emerita the leading Priscillianists, who had failed to appear before the synod of Spanish and Aquitanian bishops to which they had been summoned, were excommunicated at Saragossa in October 880. The*~~

~~*same synod passed certain canons against the heresy, and*~~

~~*Ithacius of Ossonuba was charged with the publication of its decisions. Meanwhile, however, Priscillian was made bishop of Avila, and the orthodox party found it necessary to appeal to the emperor (Gratian), who issued an edict threatening the sectarian leaders with banishment. Pris- cillian, Instantius, and Salvianus now passed through Gaul to Italy with the object of enlisting the sympathies of Ambrose of Milan and Pope Damasus, but without result. They succeeded, however, by bribing the pro- consul, it is said, in procuring the withdrawal of Gratian's edict, and the attempted arrest of Ithacius. With the murder of Gratian and accession of Maximus (383) the aspect of matters again changed ; Ithacius fled to Treves, and in consequence of his representations a synod was held (384) at Bordeaux where Instantius was deposed. Priscillian for his part appealed to the emperor, with the unexpected result that along with six of his companions he was condemned to death and executed at Treves in 385. This first instance of the application of the Theo- dosian law against heretics caused a profound sensation throughout the Catholic world ; it had the approval of the synod which met at Treves in the same year, but Ambrose of Milan and Martin of Tours can claim the glory of having lifted up their voices against it, and of having in some measure stayed the hand_of persecution. The heresy, notwithstanding the severe measures taken against it, con- tinued to spread in France as well as in Spain; and the barbarian invasions of the 5th century appear to have helped its further diffusion. About 444 it attracted the attention of Leo I. at Rome, along with other forms of Manicheism, and something was done for its repression by a synod held at the pope's instance by Turribius of Astorga in 446 and by that of Toledo in 447; as an openly pro- fessed creed it wholly disappeared after the second synod of Braga in 563.*~~

~~*PRISHTINA, or Pristina, a town of European Turkey, since 1877 at the head of a liwa in the vilayet of Kossovo, lies on an affluent of the Sitnitza, a subtribut- ary of the Morava, and gives its name to one of the stations on the Salonica-Uskub-Mitrowica Railway, which runs at a distance of 6 or 7 miles to the west of the town. It stands at a height of 1700 feet above the sea on undu-*~~

~~lating ground, and presents in the distance a pleasant | appearance with the minarets erected, according to the legend, by Turkish women whose husbands fell in the | battle of Kossovo fought in the neighbourhood. Prishtina | is the seat of a Greek bishop. Its population is estimated at from 8000 to 10,000. To the south-east lies the partly ruined monastery of Gratchanitza founded by King Milutin of Servia, who reigned from 1275 to 1321. Itisa graceful building with a large central dome surrounded by four smaller domes and a variety of arches, of which the higher are pointed and the lower round. Among the frescos are portraits of the founder and his queen Simonida, daughter of Andronicus IJ. Paleeologus, and a remarkable head of Christ in the dome. See Mackenzie and Irby, The Slavonic Provinces of Turkey.~~

~~PRISON DISCIPLINE. Authority in every age and in every country has claimed to impose penalties on all who offend against-it. Either coercion or protection has been the moving principle: the master extorted submis- sion, or society, through its rulers, defended itself against evil doers. 'The most common punishments in early times were naturally those most easily inflicted. Offenders paid in their persons: they were put to death with every variety of the capital sentence, were branded, mutilated, or sold as slaves. They were fined also, were degraded, or for- feited civil rights, or yet again were simply banished from their homes. Enforced detention, incarceration within four walls, was another method of coercion which grew and gained favour under the feudal system. The lord temporal or spiritual or corporate body could thus hold the vassal safe until he yielded fealty or submitted to extortion. A dungeon told no tales, and served conveni ently to bury the victims of medieval oppression. The unrestrained and unjustifiable exercise of the power to im- prison lingered long in lands where personal liberty was unknown ; nor did arbitrary imprisonment terminate with the destruction of the Bastille. In England, however, free- dom from illegal arrest, the dearest of the Briton's pri- vileges, was resolutely fought for and early achieved. The Great Charters conceded it; and, although often in danger, it was confirmed finally and beyond all question by the Habeas Corpus Act passed in the reign of Charles IT. But the theory was better than the practice: numbers always languished in jail, the victims of needlessly severe or~~

~~*misinterpreted laws, who nowadays would have been at large. Through long years of trouble and dis- quiet, when the country was torn with religious and political dissensions, the prisons were always full. Intoler- ance appealed to the strong arm, and the jail was the antechamber of the scaffold or stake. When party warfare ran high, when kings struggled for larger powers or their ministers and myrmidons ruled with a high hand, incar- ceration was the easy recompense for all on the losing side. The commercial laws of a nation wedded to trade kept a large contingent always in jail. The debtor was at the mercy of his creditor, who could command the best efforts of the law to assist him in recovering his own again. Irregu- larity in the administration of justice contributed largely to fill the prisons. Jail deliveries were frequently de-*~~

~~*layed indefinitely; while, even when tardy trial ended in an acquittal, release was not always accorded, and innocent men, unable to meet extortionate demands in fees, were carried back to prison. This was one reason why jails were full; yet another was the laxity or entire absence of discipline which suffered the families of accused persons to share their confinement. Under such conditions, more or less universal, the state of prisons, not in England alone, but throughout the then civilized world, was deplorable in theextreme. Yet the terrors of incarceration were long but vaguely understood. Glimpses of light sometimes pene-*~~

~~*trated the dark recesses of the prison house, as when the atrocities perpetrated by the keepers of the chief debtors' prisons in London were made the subject of parliamentary inquiry. This was in 1730, forty-three years before the revelations of Howard. But in the interval voices were occasionally raised in protest, and there was a general sense of uneasiness throughout the country to which the great philanthropist gave point and expression. Howard began his journeys of inspection in 1773; in the following year he was examined by the House of Commons, and received the thanks of the House for his arduous and self-sacrificing labours for the mitigation of suffering in jails. What Howard found is sufficiently well known. The prisons of tue kingdom were a disgrace to humanity: they were for the most part poisonous pestiferous dens, densely over- crowded, dark,*~~

~~*foully dirty, not only ill-ventilated, but de- prived altogether of fresh air. The wretched inmates were thrown into subterranean dungeons, into wet and noisome caverns and hideous holes to rot and fester, a prey to fell disease bred and propagated in the prison house, and de- prived of the commonest necessaries of life. For food they were dependent upon the caprice of their jailers or the charity of the benevolent ; water was denied them except in the scantiest proportions ; they were half naked or in rags; their only bedding was putrid straw reeking with exhalations and accumulated filth. Every one in durance, whether tried or untried, was heavily ironed ; women did not escape the infliction. All alike were subject to the rapacity of their jailers and the extortions of their fellows. Jail fees were levied ruthlessly, —" garnish" also, the tax or contribution paid by each individual to a common fund to be spent by the whole body, generally in drink. Drunken- ness was universal and quite unchecked ; gambling of all kinds was practised; vice and obscenity were everywhere in the ascendant. Idleness, drunkenness, vicious inter- course, sickness, starvation, squalor, cruelty, chains, awful oppression, and everywhere culpable neglect—in these words may be summed up the state of the jails at the time of Howard's visitation.*~~

~~*It must be borne in mind that all this time the prisons were primarily places of detention, not of punishment. The bulk of those committed to their safe keeping were accused persons awaiting trial in due process of law, or debtors; and of these again by far the most numerous class were the impecunious and the unfortunate, whom a niistaken system locked up and deprived of all means of paying their liabilities. Now and again an offender was sentenced to be imprisoned in default of payment of fine, or to pass the intervals between certain periods of dis- graceful exposure on the pillory. Imprisonment had as yet no regular place in the code of penalties, and the jail was only the temporary lodging of culprits duly tried and sentenced according to law. The punishment most in favour in these ruthless times was death. The statute- book bristled with capital felonies, and the gallows was in perpetual requisition. These were days when the pick- pocket was hanged; so was the sheep-stealer, and the forger of one-pound notes. Well might Sir Samuel Romilly, to whose strenuous exertions the amelioration of the penal code is in a great measure due, declare that the laws of England were written in blood. But even then there was another and a less sanguinary penalty. The deportation of criminals beyond seas grew*~~

~~naturally out of the laws which prescribed banishment for certain offences, The Vagrancy Act of Elizabeth's reign contained in it the germ of transportation, by empowering justices in quarter sessions to banish offenders and order them to be conveyed into such parts beyond the seas as should be assigned by Her Majesty's privy council. Full effect was given to this statute in the next reign, as is proved by a letter~~

~~748~~

~~of James I., dated 1619, in which the king directs "a hundred dissolute persons" to be sent to Virginia. An- other Act of similar tenor was passed in the reign of Charles II., in which the term "transportation " appears to have been first used. A further and more systematic development of the system of transportation took place in 1718, when an Act was passed by which offenders who had escaped the death penalty were handed over to con- tractors, who engaged to transport them to the American colonies. These contractors were vested with a property in the labour of the convicts for a certain term, generally from seven to fourteen years, and this right they fre- quently sold. Labour in those early days was scarce in the new settlements; and before the general adoption of negro slavery there was a keen competition for felon hands. 'The demand was indeed so great that it produced illegal methods of supply. An organized system of kid- napping prevailed along the British coasts; young lads were seized and sold into what was practically white slavery in the American plantations. These malpractices~~

~~were checked, but the legitimate traffic in convict labour || landed at Port Jackson, where it entered and occupied the~~

~~continued until it was ended peremptorily by the revolt of the American colonies and the achievement of their inde- pendence. In 1776 the British legislature, making a virtue of necessity, discovered that transportation to His Majesty's colonies (which three years previously had de- clared their independence) was bound to be attended by various inconveniences, particularly by depriving the king- dom of many subjects whose labour might be useful to the community ; and an Act was accordingly passed which provided that convicts sentenced to transportation might be~~

~~*employed at hard labour at home. At the same time the consideration of some scheme for their disposal was*~~

~~*entrusted to three eminent public men—Sir William |*~~

~~*Blackstone, Mr Eden (afterwards Lord Auckland), and John Howard. The result of their labours was an Act for the establishment of penitentiary houses, dated 1778. This Act is of peculiar importance. public enunciation of a general principle of penal treat- ment, and shows that even at that early date the system since nearly universally adopted was fully understood. The object in view was thus stated. It was hoped, by sobriety, cleanliness, and medical assistance, by a regular series of labour, by solitary confinement during the inter- vals of work, and by due religious instruction, to preserve and amend the health of the unhappy offenders, to inure them to habits of industry, to guard them from pernicious company, to accustom them to serious reflexion, and to teach them both the principles and practice of every Christian and moral duty. The experience of a century has added nothing to these the true principles of penal discipline ; they form the basis of every species of prison system carried out since the passing of the Act 19 Geo. ITT. c. 74 in 1779.*~~

~~*The first step towards giving effect to this Act was the appointment of a commission of three " supervisors" to select and acquire a site for the first penitentiary house. Howard was one, and no doubt the most influential, of these ; but he could not agree with his colleagues as to the most suitable situation. One was for Islington, another for Limehouse, while Howard insisted upon some site which was healthy, well supplied with water, and in such a convenient spot that it could be readily visited and in- spected. It is interesting to observe that the great phil- anthropist anticipated modern English practice in his pre- paration of the plans for the construction of the prison. He was strongly of opinion that the penitentiary should be built by convict labour, just as in recent years the new prison has been erected at Wormwood Scrubs, and large blocks added to the prisons of Chatham, Portsmouth, and*~~

~~*It contains the first |*~~

~~*PRISON DIsStITLIR®*~~

~~*Dartmoor. Howard, however, withdrew from the com- mission, and new supervisors were appointed, who were on the eve of commencing the first penitentiary when the discoveries of Captain Cook in the South Seas turned the attention of the Government towards these new lands. The vast territories of Australasia promised an unlimited field for convict colonization, and for the moment the scheme for penitentiary houses fell to the ground. Public opinion generally preferred the idea of establishing penal settlements at a distance from home. "There was general confidence," says Merivale in his work on colonization, "in the favourite theory that the best mode of punishing offenders was that which removed them from the scene of offence and temptation, cut them off by a great gulf of space from all their former connexions, and gave them the opportunity of redeeming past crimes by becoming useful members of society." These views so far prevailed that an expedition consisting of nine transports and two men- of-war, the "first fleet" of Australian annals, sailed in March 1787 for New South Wales. This first fleet reached Botany Bay in January 1788, but passed on and*~~

~~*harbour of Sydney, one of the finest and most secure havens in the world. We shall return further on to the proceedings of these first criminal colonists when the pro- gress of transportation as a secondary punishment will be described.*~~

~~*The penitentiary scheme was not, however, abandoned on the adoption of transportation to New South Wales. It was revived and kept alive by Jeremy Bentham, who in 1791 published a work on prison discipline entitled The Panopticon or Inspection House, and followed it next year by a formal proposal to erect a prison house on his own plan. Bentham's main idea was "a circular building, an iron cage glazed, a glass lantern as large as Ranelagh, with the cells on the outer circumference." Within, in the centre, an inspection station was so fixed that every cell or part of a cel! could be at all times closely observed,— the prisoners being themselves at liberty to communicate with visitors and make known their complaints by means of tubes. He hoped to effect much in the way of reforma- tion from a system of solitude or limited seclusion, with constant employment on work in the profits of which the prisoners were to share. His project was warmly*~~

~~*approved by Pitt, but secret influences—the personal hostility, it was said, of George III. to Bentham as an advanced*~~

~~*‘ Radical—hindered its adoption until 1794. A contract*~~

~~*was then made between the treasury and Bentham, by which the latter was to erect a prison for a thousand convicts, with chapel and other necessary buildings, for £19,000. A portion of this sum was advanced, and Bentham also acquired on behalf of the Government certain lands in the neighbourhood of Tothill Fields. But the undertaking languished, and never took practical shape. Nearly fifteen years later, when the penitentiary question was again revived, Bentham’s claims were referred to arbitration, and the Government proceeded to erect the prison on its own account, “fully recognizing the import- ance of attempting reformation by the seclusion, employ- ment, and religious instruction of prisoners.” This had been tried already on a small scale but with satisfactory results, first at the Gloucester prison erected in 1791 and afterwards in the house of correction at Southwell. A larger and more ambitious experiment was resolved upon, worthy of the state ; and the great penitentiary still stand- ing after many vicissitudes, but practically unaltered, at Millbank was the result of this determination. It was built on the lands originally acquired by Bentham, and the work commenced in 1813 was continued at great out- lay until 1816, when a portion was ready for the reception*~~

~~*PRiSsenw VAS CIPEINE*~~

~~*of prisoners. A great flourish attended its opening. Its affairs were entrusted to a specially appointed committee of eminent and distinguished personages, the chairman being the Speaker of the House of Commons. Crowds of visitors—royal dukes, foreign princes, the élite of society—came to see the new prison; most elaborate arrange- ments were made for its internal government, and no money was spared either upon the staff or upon the com- pletion of the buildings. The sum total expended upon the latter amounted to half a million of money, and the yearly charges of the establishment were a heavy burthen on the exchequer.*~~

~~*The erection of Millbank was, however, a step in the right direction. The energy with which it was under- taken was the more remarkable because*~~

~~*elsewhere through- out the United Kingdom the prisons, with but few exceptions, remained deplorably bad. Mr Neild, who in 1812 followed in the footsteps of John Howard, found that the old conditions, overcrowding and indiscriminate inter- course, remained unchanged. "The great reformation produced by Howard," to use Neild's own words, " was merely temporary ; prisons were relapsing into their former horrid state of privation, filthiness, severity, and neglect." Yet the legislature was alive to the need for prison reform. Besides the building of Millbank it had promulgated many Acts for the amelioration of pri- soners. Jail fees were once more distinctly abolished ; the appointment of chaplains was insisted upon ; the erec- tion of improved prison buildings was rendered impera- tive upon local authorities. But these with other and much older Acts remained in abeyance. Thus an Act which provided for the classification of prisoners had re- mained a dead letter; even the separation of the males from the females was not an universal rule. Humane pro- visions intended to secure the good government of prisons, their cleanliness and ventilation, and the proper supply of food, clothing, and bedding to the prisoners were still sys- tematically ignored. Roused by these crying evils, a small band of earnest men, philanthropists and members of the Society of Friends, formed themselves into an association for the improvement of prison discipline, and devoted themselves with rare energy and singleness of purpose to their self- constituted task. They perambulated the country inspecting all the prisons; they issued lengthy interrogatories to prison officials; they published periodi- cal reports giving the result of their inquiries, with their views on the true principles of prison management, and much sound advice, accompanied by elaborate plans, on the subject of prison construction. The labours of this society brought out into strong relief the naked deformity of the bulk of the British jails. It was the old story. Jails, speaking broadly, were lamentably inadequate for the numbers crowded into them. Hence there was the most terrible overcrowding : by day in some prisons it was nearly impossible to push through the throngs in the yards; by night the wretched prisoners ran the risk of suffocation. Prisoners were still very generally obliged to wear heavy irons. They had no regular diet—at best only dry bread. Speaking of St Albans from his personal observation, Mr Buxton, a most active member of the Society, says, " All were in ill health ; almost all were in rags; almost all were filthy in the extreme. The state of the prison, the desperation of the prisoners, broadly hinted in their*~~

~~*conversation and plainly expressed in their con- duct, the uproar of oaths, complaints, and obscenity, the indescribable stench, presented together a concentration of the utmost misery and the utmost guilt." This was no over-coloured picture; nor did it portray a solitary instance. The reports of the Society laid bare the exist- ence of similar horrors in numbers of other jails. Yet this*~~

~~*was in 1818, when the legislature was setting a praise- worthy example—when half a million had been spent in providing large airy cells for a thousand prisoners. Even in London itself, within easy reach of this palatial Mill- bank penitentiary, the chief prison of the city, Newgate, was in a disgraceful condition. This had been exposed by a parliamentary inquiry as far back as 1814, but nothing had been done to remedy the evils laid bare. All the shameful conditions of neglect, ill-treatment, and over- crowding were present in Newgate, and to the same extent as in any of the provincial prisons. The state of the female side had already attracted the attention of that devoted woman, Mrs Fry, whose ministrations and wonder- ful success no doubt encouraged, if they did not bring about, the formation of the Prison Society. Mrs Fry went first to Newgate in 1813, but only as a casual visitor. It was not till 1817 that she entered upon the great and noble work with which her name will ever be associated. She worked a miracle there in an incredibly short space of time. The ward into which she penetrated, although strongly dissuaded by the officials, was like a den of wild beasts; it was filled with women unsexed, fighting, swearing, dancing, gaming, yelling, and justly deserved its name of "hell above ground." Within a month it was transformed, and presented, says an eye witness, "a scene where stillness and propriety reigned." The wild beasts were tamed. It was not strange that such marvellous results should be bruited abroad, that public attention should be attracted to Mrs Fry's labours, and that others should seek to follow in her footsteps. Movements similar to that which Mrs Fry headed were soon set on foot both in England and on the Continent, and public attention was generally directed to the urgent necessity for prison reform.*~~

~~*Stimulated no doubt by the success achieved by Mrs Fry, the Prison Discipline Society continued its useful labours. Hostile critics were not wanting; many voices were raised in protest against the ultra-humanitarianism which sought to make jails too comfortable and tended to pamper criminals. But the society pursued its way undeterred by sarcasm, through evil and good report striv- ing earnestly after the objects it had in view. Many of these are now accepted as axioms in prison treatment. It is, for instance, established beyond question that female officers only should have charge of female prisoners, that prisoners of both sexes should be kept constantly employed. Yet these principles were unacknowledged at that time, and were first enunciated in Acts such as the 4 Geo. IV. ¢. 65 and the 5 Geo. IV. c. 85 (1823-24), the passing of which were mainly due to the strenuous exertions of the Prison Discipline Society. It was laid down in these that over and above safe custody it was essential to preserve health, improve morals, and enforce hard labour on all prisoners sentenced to it. These Acts also provided that male and female prisoners should be confined in separate buildings, that matrons should be appointed, and schoolmasters, and that there should be divine service daily in the jails. Now at last irons were strictly forbidden except in cases of "urgent and absolute necessity," and it was ruled that every prisoner should have a bed to himself,—if possible a separate cell, the last being the first formal statement of a principle upon which all future prison discipline was to be based.*~~

~~*The importance of these Acts cannot be overestimated as supplying a legal standard of efficiency by which all prisons could be measured. Still the progress of iniprove- ment was extremely slow, and years after the managers of jails still evaded or ignored the Acts. Many local authorities grudged the money to rebuild or enlarge their jails; others varied much in their interpretation of the*~~

~~*rules as to hard labour and the hours of employment. One great drawback to general reform was that a large number of small prisons lay beyond the reach of the law. Those under small jurisdictions in the boroughs and under the petty corporate bodies continued open to the strongest reprobation. Not*~~

~~*only were they wanting in all the in- dispensable requirements as laid down by the most recent Acts, but they were often unfit for the confinement of human beings, and were described "as fruitful sources of vice and misery, debasing all who are confined within their walls." They thus remained until they were swept away by the measure which brought about the reform of the municipal corporations in 1835. But by this time a still more determined effort had been made to establish some uniform and improved system of prison discipline. In 1831 a select committee of the House of Commons went into the whole subject of secondary punishment, and re- ported that, as the difficulties in the way of an effective classification of prisoners were insurmountable, they were strongly in favour of the confinement of prisoners in separate cells, recommending that the whole of the prisons should be altered accordingly, and the expense borne by the public exchequer. There can be little doubt that this committee, like every one just then, was greatly struck by the superior methods of prison discipline pursued in the United States. The best American prisons had recently been visited by two eminent Frenchmen, MM. Beaumont and De Tocqueville, who spoke of them in terms of the highest praise. It was with the object of appro- priating what was best in the American system that Mr Crawfurd was despatched across the Atlantic on a special mission of inquiry. His able and exhaustive report, published in 1834, was a valuable contribution to the whole question of penal discipline, and it was closely and attentively studied at the time. Another select committee, this time of the House of Lords, returned to the subject in 1835, and after a long investigation re- enunciated the theory that all prisoners should be kept separate and apart from one another. It also urged in strong terms the necessity for one uniform system of treatment, more especially as regarded dietaries, labour, and education, and strongly recommended the appointment of official inspectors to enforce obedience to the Acts. These recommendations were eventually adopted, and formed the basis of a new departure. This was the first indication of a system which, although greatly modified, enlarged, and improved, is in its main outlines the same as that now in force.*~~

~~*It must, however, be borne in mind that the prisons at home still formed an item only, and not the largest, in the scheme of secondary punishment. The jail was only a place of temporary detention, where prisoners awaited trial, suffered short terms of imprisonment, or passed on to the gallows or the*~~

penal colonies. The last-named was the chief outlet, for by this time the country was fully committed to the system of deportation. Since the first fleet in 1787 convicts had been sent out in constantly increas- ing numbers to the antipodes. Yet the early settlement at Sydney had not greatly prospered. The infant colony, composed of such incongruous materials, of guards and criminals, had had a bitter struggle for existence. It had been hoped that the com- munity would raise its own produce and speedily become self-sup- porting. But the soil was unfruitful ; the convicts knew nothing of farming ; there was no one fully competent to instruct them in agriculture. All lived npon rations sent out from home ; and when convoys with relief lingered by the way famine stared all in the face. The eolony was long a penal settlement and nothing more, peopled only by two classes, convicts and their masters— eriminal bondsmen on the one hand who had forfeited their inde- pendence and were bound to labour without wages for the state, on the other officials to guard and exact the due performance of tasks. From the first it had been felt that the formation of a steady respectable class was essential to the future healthy life of the colony. But such an element was not easy to infuse into the community. A few free families were encouraged to ek but they were lost in the mass they were intended to eaven, swamped and outnumbered by the convicts, shiploads of

PRAIZON DISCIPLIAS

whom continued to pour in year after year. As the influx in- creased difticulties arose as to their employment. Free settlers were too few to give work to more than a small proportion. Moreover, a new poliey was in the ascendant, initiated by Governor Macquarie, who considered the convicts and their reha- bilitation his chief care, and steadily discouraged the immigration of any but those who "came out for their country's good." The great bulk of the convict labour thus remained in Government hands. This period marked the first phase in the -history of transportation. The penal colony, having triumphed over early dangers and difficulties, was crowded with convicts in a state of

| semi-freedom, maintained at the public expense, and utilized in the

development of the latent resources of the country. The methods employed by Governor Macquarie were not perhaps invariably the best ; the time was

~~*hardly ripe as yet for the erection of palatial buildings in Sydney, while the congregation of the workmen in large bodies tended greatly to their demoralization. But some of the works undertaken and carried out were of incalculable ser- vice to the young colony; and its early advance in wealth and prosperity was greatly due to the magnificent roads, bridges, and other facilities of inter-communication for which it was indebted to Governor Macquarie.*~~

~~*But now the criminal sewage flowing from the Old World to the New was greatly increased in volume under milder and more humane laws. Many now escaped the gallows, and mnch of the over-crowding of the jails at home already mentioned was caused by the gangs of convicts awaiting transhipment to the antipodes. They were packed off, however, with all convenient despatch, and the numbers on Government hands in the colonies multiplied exceedingly, causing increasing embarrassment as to their disposal. Moreover, the expense of the Australian convict establishments was enormous, and some change in system was inevitable. These were the conditions that brought about the plan of "assign- ments," in other words of freely lending the convicts to any who would relieve the authorities of the burdensome charge. By this time free settlers were arriving in greater number, invited by a different and more liberal policy than that of Governor Macquarie.*~~

~~*Inducements were especially offered to persons possessed of capital,*~~

~~*to venture in the development of the country. Assignment developed rapidly ; soon eager competition arose for the convict hands that were at first very reluctantly taken. Great facilities existed for utilizing them on the wide areas of grazing land and on the new stations in the interior. A pastoral life, without temptations and contaminating influences, was well snited for convicts. As the colony grew richer and more populous, other than agricultural employers became assignees, and numerous enter-*~~

~~*prises were set on foot. The trades and callings which minister to —*~~

~~*the needs of all civilized communities were more and more largely pursued. There was plenty of work for skilled convicts in the towns, and the services of the more intelligent were highly prized. It was a great boon to secure*~~

~~*gratis the assistance of men specially trained as clerks, book-keepers, or handicraftsmen. Hence all manner of intrigues and manveuvres were set agoing on the arrival of drafts, and there was a scramble for the best hands. Here at once was a flaw in the system of assignment. The lot of the con- vict was altogether unequal. Some, the dull unlettered and unskilled, wete drafted to heavy manual labour at which they remained, while clever and expert rogues found pleasant, con- genial, and often profitable employment. The contrast was very marked from the first, but it became the more apparent, the anomaly more monstrous, as time passed on and some were still engaged in unlovely toil while others, who had come out by the same ship, had already attained to affluence and ease. For the latter transportation was no punishment, but often the reverse. It meant too often transfer to a new world under conditions more favourable to success, removed from the keener competition of the old. By adroit management, too, they often obtained the com- mand of funds, the product of nefarious transactions at home, which wives or near relatives or unconvicted accomplices presently brought out to them. It was easy for the free new-comers to secure the assignment of their convict friends ; and the latter, although still nominally servants and in the background, at once assumed the real control. Another system prodnetive of much evil was the employment of convict clerks in positions of trust in various Government offices ; convicts did much of the legal work of the colony ; a convict was clerk to the attorney-general ; others were schoolmasters, and were entrusted with the education of youth. Under a system so anomalous and uncertain the main object of transportation as a method of penal discipline and repression was in danger of being quite overlooked. Yet the state could not entirely abdicate its functions, although it surrendered to a great extent the care of criminals to private persons. It had established a eode of penalties for the coereion of the ill-conducted, while it kept the worst, perforce, in its own hands. The master was always at liberty to appeal to the strong arm of the law. A message carried to a neighbouring magistrate, often by the culprit himself, brought down the prompt retribution of the lash. Con-*~~

~~*PRELOeOwW BPABOCISLINE*~~

~~*victs might be flogged for petty offences, for idleness, drunkenness, turbulence, absconding, and so forth. At the out-stations some show of decorum and regularity was observed, although the work done was generally scanty, and the convicts were secretly given to all manner of evil courses. The town convicts were worse, because they were far less under control. They were nominally under the surveillance and supervision of the police, which amounted to nothing at all. They came and went, and amused themselves after working hours, so that Sydney and all the large towns were hot-beds of vice and immorality. The masters as a rule made no attempt to watch over their charges; many of them were absolutely unfitted to do so, being themselves of low character, " emanci- pists " frequently, old convicts pardoned or wlio had finished their terms. No effort was made to prevent the assignment of convicts to improper persons; every applicant got what he wanted, even though his own character would not bear inspection. Al] whom the masters could not manage—the incorrigibles upon whom lash and bread and water had been tried in vain—were returned to Government charge. These, in a word, comprised the whole of the refuse of colonial convictdom. Every man who could not agree with his master, or who was to undergo a penalty greater than flogging or less than capital punishment, came back to Govern- ment, and was disposed of in one of three ways—the road parties, the chain gangs, or the penal settlements. The convicts in the first might be kept in the vicinity of the towns or marched about the country according to the work in hand; the labour was irk- some, but, owing to inefficient supervision, never intolerable; the diet was ample, and there was no great restraint upon independ- ence witlin certain wide limits. To the slackness of control over the road parties was directly traceable the frequent escape of des- peradoes, who, defying recapture, recruited the gangs of bush- rangers, which were a constant terror to the whole country. In the chain or iron gangs, as they were sometimes styled, discipline was far more vigorous. It was maintained by the constant presence of a military guard, and, when most efficiently organized, was governed by a military officer who was also a magistrate. The work was really hard, the custody close—in hulk, stockaded barrack, or caravan; the first was at Sydney, the second in the interior, the last when the undertaking required constant change of place. All were locked up from sunset to sunrise; all wore heavy leg irons; and all were liable to immediate flagellation. The convict "scourger" was one of the regular officiais attached to every chain 'gang.*~~

~~*The third and ultimate receptacle was the penal settlement, to which no offenders were transferred till all other methods of treatment had failed. These were terrible cess- pools of iniquity, so bad that it seemed, to use the words of one -who knew them well, "the heart of a man who went to them was taken from him and he was given that of a beast." The horrors accumulated at Norfolk Island, Moreton Bay, Port.Arthur, and Tasman's Peninsula are almost beyond description. The convicts herded together in them grew utterly degraded and brutalized ; no wonder that reckless despair took possession of them, that death on the gallows for murder purposely committed, or the slow terror from starvation following escape into surrounding wilds, was often welcomed as a relief.*~~

~~*The stage which transportation was now reaching, and the actual condition of affairs in the Australian colonies about this period, do not appear to have been much understood in England. Earnest and thoughtful men might busy themselves with prison discipline at home, and the legislature might watch with peculiar interest the results obtained from the special treatment of a limited nuinber of selected offenders in Millbank penitentiary. But for the great mass of criminality deported to a distant shore no very active concern was shown. 'The country for a long time seemed satisfied with transportation. Portions of the system might be open to criticism. Thus the Commons committee of 1882 freely condemned the hulks at Woolwich and other arsenals in which a large number of convicts were kept while waiting embarka- tion. The indiscriminate association of prisoners in them produced more vice, profaneness, and demoralization than in the ordinary prisons. After dark the wildest orgies went on in them—dancing, fighting, gambling, singing, and so forth; it was easy to get drink and tobacco, and see friends from outside. The labour hours were short, the tasks light; "altogether the situation of the convict"' in the hulks, says the report, "cannot be considered penal; it is a state of restriction, but hardly of punishment." But this same committee spoke well of transportation, considering it "a most valuable expedient in the system of secondary punish- ment." All that it felt necessary to suggest was that exile should be preceded by a period of severe probationary punishment in England, a proposal which was reiterated later on and actually adopted, as we shall see. It was in the country most closely affected that dissatisfaction first began to find voice. Already in 1832 the most reputable sections of*~~

~~*Australian society were beginning to find grave fault with transportation. It had fostered the growth of a strong party—that representing convict views—and these were advocated boldly in unprincipled prints. This*~~

~~*Tol*~~

~~| party, constantly recruited from the emancipists and ticket-of- ie~~

~~†~~

~~eave holders, gradually grew very numerous, and threatened soon to swamp the respectable and untainted parts of the community. As years passed the prevalence of crime, and the universally low tone of morality due to the convict element, became more and more noticeable, and created greater disgust. At length, in 1835, Judge Burton raised a loud protest, and in a charge to the grand jury of Sydney plainly intimated that transportation niust cease. While it existed, he said, the colonies could never rise to their proper position; they could not claim free institutions; in a word, Anstralia suffered in its whole moral aspect. This bold but forcible language commanded attention. It was speedily echoed in England, and by none more eloquently than Archbishop Whately, who logically argued that transportation failed in all the leading requisites of any system of secondary punishment. It was not formidable—criminals did not dread it; it was not corrective, but tended obviously to produce further moral debasement; it was not cheap—on the contrary it entailed great outlay without bringing any adequate returns. In the first most important object it had certainly failed. Transportation exercised no salutary terror in offenders; it was no longer exile to an unknown inhospitable region, but to one flowing with milk and honey, whither innumer- able friends and associates had gone already. There was every chance of doing well in the new country. The most glowing de- scriptions came back of the wealth which any clever fellow miglit easily amass ; stories were told and names mentioned of those who had made ample fortunes in Australia in a few years. As a matter of fact the convicts, or at least large numbers of them, had pro- spered exceedingly. Some had incomes of twenty, thirty, even forty thousand pounds a year. They owned shops and farms and public houses and ships, drove in carriages, and kept up grand establishments. It. could be no great punishment to be put within reach of such advantages. As regarded the deteriorating effects of the system, these were plainly manifest on the surface from the condition of the colony—the profligacy of the towns, the leniency shown to crimes and those who had committed them. Down below, in the depths where the dregs rankled perpetually, in the openly sanctioned slavery called assignment, in~~

~~*the demoralizing chain gangs, and in the inexpressibly horrible penal settlements, were more abundant and more awful proofs of the general wick- edness and corruption. Moreover, these appalling results were accompanied by a vast expenditure. The cost of the colonial con- vict establishments, with the passages out, amounted annually to upwards of £300,000; another hundred thonsand was expended on the military garrisons; and various items brought the whole outlay to about half a million per annum. It may be argued that this was not a heavy price to pay for peopling a continent and laying the foundations of our vast Australasian empire. But that empire could never have expanded to its present dimensions if it had depended on convict immigration alone. There was a point, too, at which all development, all progress, would have come to a full stop had it not been relieved of its stigma as a penal colony.*~~

~~*That point was reached between 1835 and 1840, when a powerful party eame into existence in New South Wales, pledged to procure the abandonment of transportation. A strongly hostile feeling was also gaining ground in England. In 1837 a new committee of the HIouse of Commons had inade a patient and searching investigation into the merits and demerits of the system, and freely condemned it. The Government had no ehoice but to give way ; it could not ignore the protest of the colonists backed up by sneh an authori- tative expression of opinion. In 1840 orders were issued to suspend the deportation of criminals to New South Wales. But what was to become of the convicts? It was impossible to keep them at home. The hulks, which might have served, had also failed ; the faultiness of their internal management had been fully proved. The committee last mentioned had recommended the erection of more penitentiaries. But the costly experiment of Millbank had been barren of results. The model prison at Pentonville, now in process of construction under the pressure of a movement towards prison reform, could offer but limited accommodation. A proposal was put forward to construct eonvict barracks in the vicinity of the great arsenals ; but this, which contained really the germ of the present British penal system, was premature. The Government in this dilemma steered a middle course, and resolved to adhere to transportation, but under a greatly modified and, it was hoped, much improved form. The colony of Van Diemen's Land, younger and less self-reliant than its neighbour, had also endured convict immigration, but had made no protest. It was resolved to*~~

~~*direct the whole stream of deportation upon Van Diemen's Land, which was thus constituted one vast colonial prison. The main principle of the new system was one of probation ; hence its name. All con- victs were to pass through various stages and degrees of punishment according to their conduct and character. Some general depét was needed where the necessary observation could be made, and it was found at Millbank penitentiary. Thence boys were sent to the prison for juveniles at Parkhurst; the most promising subjects*~~

~~*among the adults were selected to undergo the experimental disci- pline of solitude and separation at Pentonville ; less hopeful cases went to the hulks; and all adults alike passed on to the antipodes. Fresh stages awaited the convict on his arrival at Van Diemen's Land. 'The first was limited to "lifers" and colonial convicts sen- tenced a second time. It consisted in detention at one of the penal stations, either Norfolk Island or Tasmau's Peninsula, where the disgraceful conditions already described continued unchanged to the very last. The second stage received the largest number, who were subjected in it to gang labour, working nnder restraint in various parts of the colony. 'These probation stations, as they were called, were intended to inculcate habits of industry and subordination ; they were provided with supervisors and religious instructors ; and, had they not been soon tainted by the vicious virus brought to them by others arriving from the penal stations, they might have answered their purpose for a time. But they became as bad as the worst of the penal settlements, and contributed greatly to the deplorable breakdown of the whole system. The third stage, and the first step towards freedom, was the concession of a pass which permitted the convict to be at large under certain conditions to seek work for himself; the fourth was a ticket-of-leave, the possession of which allowed him to come and go much as he pleased ; the fifth, and last, was absolute pardon, with the prospects of rehabilitation.*~~

~~*This scheme seemed admirable on paper; yet it failed completely when put into practice. Colonial resources were quite unable to bear the pressure. Within two or three years Van Diemen's Land was fairly inundated with convicts. Sixteen thousand were sent out in four years ; the average annual*~~

~~*draft in the colony was about thirty thousand, and this when there were only thirty-seven thousand free settlers. Half the whole number of convicts remained in Government hands, and were kept in the probation gangs, engaged upon public works of great utility ; but the other half, pass-holders and ticket-of-leave men in a state of semi-freedom, could get little or no employment. The supply greatly exceeded the demand ; there were no hirers of labour. Had the colony been as large and as prosperous as its neighbour it could scarcely have absorbed the mass of workmen ; but it was veally on the verge of bankruptcy—its finances were embarrassed, its trades and industries at a standstill. But not only were the convicts idle; they were utterly depraved. It was soon found that the system wliich kept large bodies always together had a most pernicious effect upon their moral condition. "The congregation of criminals in large batches without adequate supervision meant simply wholesale widespread pollution," as was said at the time. These ever-present and con- stantly increasing evils forced the Goveruinent to reconsider its position ; and in 1846 transportation to Van Diemen's Land was temporarily suspended for a couple of years, during which it was hoped some relief might be afforded. The formation of a new con- vict colony in North Australia had been contemplated ; but the project, warmly espoused by Mr Gladstone, then under secretary of state for the colonies, was presently abandoned ; and it now became clear that no resumption of transportation was possible.*~~

~~*Some fresh scheme had to be devised, and that with- out delay. The task fell upon Sir George Grey as home secretary, who, in dealing with it laid the foundations of the present British penal system. This system was to consist (1) of a limited period of separate confinement in a home prison or penitentiary, accompanied by industrial employment and moral training; (2) of hard labour at some public works prison either at home or abroad; and (3) of exile to a colony with a conditional pardon or ticket- of-leave. No pains were spared to give effect to this plan as soon as it was decided upon. Pentonville was available for the first phase ; Millbank was also pressed into the service, and accommodation was hired in some of the best provincial prisons, as at Wakefield, Leicester, and else- where. Few facilities existed for carrying out the second stage, but they were speedily improvised. Although the hulks at home had been condemned, convict establish- ments in which these floating prisons still formed the principal*~~

~~*part were organized at Bermuda and Gibraltar. Neither of these, it may be stated at once, was a con- Spicuous success ; they were too remote for effective super- vision; and, although they lingered on for some years, they were finally condemned. The chief efforts of the authorities were directed to the formation of public works prisons at home, and here the most satisfactory results bal soon obtained. The construction of a harbour of reluge at Portland had been recommended in 1845 sn*~~

~~*1847 an Act was passed to facilitate the purchase of land*~~

~~*PRISOW DIiSCIV EIS*~~

~~*there, and a sum of money taken up in the estimates for the erection of a prison, which was commenced next year. At another point Dartmoor, a prison already, stood avail- able, although it had not been occupied since the last war, when ten thousand French and American prisoners had been incarcerated in it. A little reconstruction made Dartmoor into a modern jail, and in the waste lands around there was ample labour for any number of convict hands. Dartmoor was opened in 1850; two years later a convict prison was established at Portsmouth in con- nexion with the dockyard, and another of the same class at Chatham in 1856. The works undertaken at these various stations were of national importance, and the results obtained extremely valuable, as will presently be shown. 'The usefulness of these public works prisons and the need for their development soon became apparent. Although the authorities still clung to the principle of transportation, that punishment grew more and more difficult to inflict. The third stage in Sir George Grey's scheme contemplated the enforced emigration of released convicts, whom the discipline of separation and public works was supposed to have purged and purified, and who would have better hopes of entering on a new career of honest industry in a new country than when thrown back among vicious associations at home. The theory was good, the practice difficult, No colony would accept these ticket- of-leave men as a gift. Van Diemen's Land, hither- to submissive, rebelled, and positively refused to receive them, even though this denial cut off the supply of labour, now urgently needed. Other colonies were no less resolute in their opposition, The appearance of a convict ship at the Cape of Good Hope nearly produced a revolt. Athough Earl Grey addressed a circular to*~~

~~all colonial Governments, offering them the questionable boon of trans-portation, only one, the comparatively new colony of Western Australia, responded in the affirmative. But this single receptacle could not absorb a tithe of the whole number of convicts awaiting exile. It became necessary therefore to find some other means for the disposal of those so rapidly accumulating at home. Accordingly, in 1853 the first Penal Servitude Act was passed, substitut- ing certain shorter sentences of penal servitude for trans- portation. It was only just to abbreviate the terms; under the old sentence the transportee knew that if well conducted he would spend the greater part of it in the comparative freedom of exile. But, although sentences were shortened, it was not thought safe to surrender all control over the released convict ; and he was only granted a ticket-of-leave for the unexpired portion of his original sentence. But no effective supervision was maintained over these convicts at large. They speedily relapsed into crime; their numbers, as the years passed, became so great, and their depredations so serious, especially in garotte robberies, that a cry of indignation, led by general alarm, was raised against the system which exposed society to such dangers, 'There was a vague desire to return to transportation—to rid the country once more, by removal to far-off points, of the criminals who preyed uponit. The usual panacea for all public grievances was presently tried, and the system with which Sir Joshua Jebb's name had come to be identified was arraigned before a select com- mittee of the House of Commons in 1863.~~

~~Before reviewing the report of this committee, it will be well to retrace our steps and examine the phases through which prison discipline had passed since 1836. We left this, which embraces the preliminary stages of secondary punishment, at a date when public attention was very generally drawn to it. The true object of penal treatment had begun to be understood, and keen controversy had arisen as to the best methods for securing it. This~~

~~object, broadly stated, was to compass the reformation of the convicted offender and at the same time deter others from crime. The chief experiments in this direction had been made in the United States, where two remarkable systems of penal discipline had for some time been in operation.~~

~~*Each had its warm supporters and friends. One had originated with the Quakers of Pennsylvania, who, as far back as 1786, had abolished capital punishment and all other purely personal penalties, and had subjected all offenders instead to solitary confinement without occupa- tion for mind or body. This, as developed in the years following, became the purely solitary system, and was the first of the two methods mentioned above. The idea, although not absolutely new, having been already accepted in the United Kingdom both in the Gloucester penitentiary and the Glasgow bridewell, was hailed with enthusiasm as a solution of all difficulties of prison treatment. Many other States in the Union followed the lead of Pennsyl- vania. That of New York built the great Auburn peni- tentiary in 1816 to carry out the new principles. There every prisoner was kept continuously in complete isolation. He saw no one, spoke to no one,.and did no work. But within a short period very deplorable results began to show themselves at Auburn. Many prisoners became insane ; health was impaired, and life greatly endangered. Mr Crawfurd, whose mission to the United States has been already referred to, was in favour of solitary confinement, but he could not deny that several cases of suicide followed this isolation. Some relaxation of the disastrous severity seemed desirable, and out of this grew the second great system, which was presently introduced at Auburn, and afterwards at the no less renowned prison of Sing Sing. It was called the silent system. While the prisoners were still separated at night or meals, they were suffered to labour in association, but under a rule of silence ruth- lessly and rigorously maintained. The latter, entrusted to irresponsible subordinates, degenerated into a despotism which brought the system into great discredit. All discipline officers were permitted to wield the whip sum- marily and without the slightest check. 'The quantity of punishment," says Mr Crawfurd, "' is entirely dependent on the will of the overseers, against whose acts there is no appeal." Under such a system the most frightful excesses were possible, and, many cases of brutal cruelty were laid bare. Reviewing the merits and demerits of each system, Mr Crawfurd gave in his adhesion to that of unvarying solitude as pursued in the Eastern Penitentiary in Penn- sylvania. "I have no hesitation in declaring my con- viction," he says, " that its discipline is a safe and efficacious mode of prison management"; of the opposite system, that of Auburn, he reports that, notwithstanding the order and regularity with which its discipline was enforced, " its effects were greatly overrated."*~~

~~*Mr Crawfurd came back from the United States an ardent champion of the solitary system. To use his own words, ‘“‘so greatly does increasing experience prove the importance of solitude in the management of prisons that I could not, if circumstances admitted, too strongly ad- vocate its application in Great Britain, for every class of offenders as well as for persons before trial, under modifica- tions which would divest seclusion of its harshest character.” He saw great difficulties in making this the universal rule, chief among which was the enormous expense of providing suitable prisons. Some niodification of the rule of unbroken solitude would be inevitable ; but he strongly urged its adoption for certain classes, and he was equally convinced of the imperative necessity for giving every prisoner a separate sleeping cell. It is clear that the Government endorsed Mr Crawfurd’s views. Where it was possible they gave effect to them at once.*~~

~~*with its spacious solitary cells, the rule of seclusion was more and more strictly enforced under the supervision of a reverend governor, also a warm partisan of the system. Ere long permissive legislation strove to disseminate the new principles. In 1830 Lord John Russell had given it as his opinion that cellular separation was desirable in all prisons. But it was not until 1839 that an Act was passed which laid it down that individuals might be con- fined separately and apart in single cells. Even now the executive did not insist upon the construction of prisons ona new plan. It only set a good example by under- taking the erection of one which should serve as a model for the whole country. In 1840 the first stone of Pen- tonville prison was laid; and, after three years of very considerable outlay, its cells, 520 in number, were occupied on the solitary, or more exactly the separate, system, —the latter being somewhat less rigorous and irksome in its restraints. To the credit of many local jurisdictions, they speedily followed the lead of the central authority. Within half a dozen years no less than fifty-four new prisons were built on the Pentonville plan, which now began to serve generally as a “model” for imitation, not in England alone, but all over the world. That able administrator Sir Joshua Jebb, who presided over its*~~

~~*erection, may fairly claim indeed to be the author and originator of modern prison architecture.*~~

~~*Other jurisdictions were less prompt to recognize their responsibilities, the city of London among the number. They were satisfied with small makeshifts and modifica- tions, without entering upon that complete and radical reconstruction which could alone meet the case. From this inertness there followed a lamentable want of uni- formity in the administration of legal penalties. Crimi- nals suffered niore or less punishment according to the locality in which they were incarcerated. Dietaries differed—here too high, there too low. The amount of exercise allowed varied greatly; there was no universal rule as to employment. In some prisons hard labour was insisted upon, and embraced treadwheels or the newly invented cranks; in others it was industrial, devoted to manufactures ; while in some it did not exist at all. The cells inhabited by prisoners (and separate cellular con- finement was now very general) were of different dimen- sions,—variously lighted, warmed, and ventilated. The time spent in these cells was not invariably the same, and as yet no authoritative decision had been made between the solitary and silent systems. The first-named had been tried at Pentonville, but the period for which it was deemed possible had been greatly reduced. The duration had been at first fixed at eighteen months, but it was in- contestably proved that the prisoners' minds had become enfeebled by this long isolation, and the period was limited to nine months. In many jurisdictions, however, the silent system, or that of associated labour in silence, was still preferred ; and there might be prisons within a short distance of each other at which two entirely different systems of discipline were in force. In 1849 Mr Charles Pearson, M.P., moved for a select committee to report upon the best means of securing some uniform system which should be at once punitive, reformatory, and self- supporting. He urged that all existing plans were ineffi- cacious, and he advocated a new scheme by which the labour of all prisoners should be applied to agriculture in district prisons. The result of a fuil inquiry was the reiteration of views already accepted in theory, but not yet generally adopted in practice. The comnuittee re- comniended separation, so long as it was conducted under proper safeguards ; it animadverted upon the great variety which still existed in prison discipline and the*~~

~~At Millbank, | construction of jails and strongly urged the legislature to~~

~~XIX. — 95~~

~~Ta4~~

~~entrust full powers to some central authority who would exact adherence to the rules laid down. Thirteen more years elapsed and still no such steps had been taken. A new committee sat in 1863, and in its report again re- marked, and in no measured terms, upon the many and wide differences that still existed in the jails of Great Britain as regards construction, diet, labour, and general discipline, 'leading to an inequality, uncertainty, and inefficiency of punishment productive of the most pre- judicial results." Even yet separation was not univer- sal; labour, dietaries, education— everything varied still. Matters could only be mended by the exercise of legisla- tive authority, and this came in the Prison Act of 1865, an Act which consolidated all previous statutes on the subject of prison discipline, many of its provisions being still in force. It promulgated minute and precise regula- tions on every item of prison management, and backed them up with pains and penalties that ought to have ensured attention. Yet the years passed and uniformity was still far from secured; it was impossible, indeed, while prison administration was still left to a number of local authorities, no two of which were often of the same mind. Great varieties of practice still obtained. The number of feet ascended at hard labour on the treadwheel differed in different districts ; each jurisdiction still pleased itself as to dietaries; and it was still, as of old, a mere accident of locality whether imprisonment was light or heavy. The legislature had tried its best, but its best had failed. It had exercised some supervision through its inspectors, had forbidden cells to be used until duly certi- fied as fit, had threatened to withhold exchequer contri- butions from prisons of which unfavourable reports were re- ceived. Such penalties had exercised no sufficient terrors. It began to be understood, moreover, that the prisons under local jurisdictions were not always conveniently and economically situated. In one district there might be too many, in another not enough; one prison was empty and its neighbour full to overflowing; yet there was no power to make transfers and equalize accommodation. All this produced excessive, even wasteful, expenditure. Nor was its incidence, under altered~~

~~*conditions, exactly fair. Crime, with the many facilities offered for rapid locomotion to those who committed it, had ceased to be merely local, and the whole state rather than individual communities ought to be taxed; prison charges should be borne by the exchequer, and not by local rates. These considerations gained strength, and led at length to the introduction of the Prison Bill which became law in 1877, and which is the last Act passed for the regulation of prisons. By the Act of 1877 the control of all jails was vested in a body of prison commissioners appointed by, and responsible to, the home secretary. These commis- sioners had power to consolidate by closing superfluous prisons, to establish one system of discipline, and gene- rally by watchful supervision, aided by the experience of specialists, to maintain that much desired uniformity which had been so long and unsuccessfully sought. At the same time the co-operation of the local magistrates was invited so far as advice and assistance were concerned ; but all real power and control had passed from their hands into that of the commissioners of prisons. The system established by the Act of 1877 is that now in force, and we shall recur to it directly, in recapitulating the whole of our present method of secondary punishment.*~~

~~*_ Meanwhile considerable changes had been introduced into penal servitude, the punishment reserved for the gravest offences. We left this branch of the subject at a date (1863) when its efficiency was about to be tested by a parliamentary inquiry. The verdict given was in the main satisfactory; but doubts were expressed as to the*~~

~~*PRISOS,N WOILSCIP Lise*~~

~~*severity of the discipline inflicted, the principal features of which were moderate labour, ample diet, and substantial gratuities. The first was far less than the work free men did for a livelihood, the second larger, the third exces- sive, so that convicts often left prison with thirty, forty, even eighty pounds in their pockets. Penal servitude, to use the words of the lord chief justice, Sir Alexander Cockburn, one of the members of the committee, " was hardly calculated to produce on the mind of the criminal that salutary dread of the recurrence of the punishment which may be the means of deterring him, and through his example others, from the commission of crime." The chief recommendations put forward to mend the system*~~

~~*comprised lengthening of all sentences, a diminution in the dietaries, the abolition of large gratuities, and, speak- ing broadly, a general tightening of the reins. The most notable change, however, was in regard to labour, the quantity and value of which was to be regulated in future by the so-called "mark system." This plan had originated with Captain Maconochie, at one time superintendent in Norfolk Island, who had recommended that the punish- ment inflicted upon criminals should be measured, not by time, but by the amount of labour actually performed. In support of his theory he devised an ingenious system of recording the convicts' daily industry by marks, which on reaching a given total would entitle them to their release. The mark system had already been tried with good results in Ireland, where the Irish system, as it was called, introduced by Sir Walter Crofton had attracted widespread attention from the extraordinary success which seemed to follow it. There had been a very marked diminution in crime, attributable it was supposed to the system, which was in almost all respects the same as the English, although the Irish authorities had invented an "intermediate stage" in which convicts worked in a state of semi-freedom, and thus practised the self-reliance which in many superinduced reform. As a matter of fact the diminution in crime was traceable to general causes, such as a general exodus by emigration, the introduction of a poor law, and an increase in the facilities for earning an honest livelihood. It may be added here that, judged by later experience, the Irish system has evinced no transcendent merits, and it is now (1885) moribund. But we owe something to the Irish practice which first popularized the idea of maintaining a strict supervision over convicts in a state of conditional release, and it recon- ciled us to a system which was long wrongfully stigmatized as espionage. The mark system, as recommended by the committee of 1863, and as subsequently introduced, had, however, little in common with either Maconochie's or the Trish plan. It was similar in principle, and that was all. According to the committee every convict should have it in his power to earn a remission—in other words, to shorten his sentence by his industry. This industry was to be measured by marks, earned by hard labour at the public works, after a short probational term of close "separate" confinement. But the remission gained did not mean absolute release. All males were to be sent, during the latter part of their sentences, "without disguise to a thinly peopled colony," to work out their time and their own rehabilitation. The committee, it will be seen, still clung to the old theory of*~~

~~*transportation, and this in spite of the lively protests of some of its members. The one outlet remaining, however, that of Western Australia, was soon afterwards (1867) closed to convict emigrants ; and this part of the committee's recommendations became a dead letter. Not so the mark system, or the plan of earning remission by steady industry. This was carried out on a broad and intelligent basis by officials prompt to avail themselves of the advautages it offered ; a readiness*~~

~~┼┼┼~~

~~*PREEON*~~

~~*to move with the times, to adopt suggestions tending towards improvement, and generally to benefit by external advice and experience, has always characterized convict prison administration in recent years. Remedies have been at once applied where flaws were found. Thus in 1877-78 efforts were made to minimize contamination by segrevating the worst criminals, and restricting conversa- tion at exercise. Again, the recommendation of the latest commission of inquiry, that of 1878-79, tending in the same direction was immediately adopted, and a special class was fornied in 1880 in which all convicts "not versed in crime," first offenders or at least comparatively innocent men, are now kept apart from the older and more hardened criminals. While these concessions have been cheerfully made, the stern necessities of a penal system have been rigorously maintained. The committee last quoted gave it as their opinion that " penal servitude as at present administered is on the whole satisfactory ; it is effective as a punishment and free from serious abuses ; a sentence of penal servitude is now generally an object of dread to the criminal population." This change is ascribed to the various improvements in- troduced —" longer sentences, spare diet, and generally a more strict enforcement of work and discipline."*~~

~~*Having thus traced the history of secondary punish- ments and prison discipline in England from the earliest times to the present day, it will be well to describe briefly the system of penal repression as now actually in force. This will best be effected by following those who break the law through all stages from that of arrest, through conviction, to release, conditional or complete. After a short detention in a police cell—places of durance which still need improvement — an offender, unless disposed of*~~

~~summarily, passes into one of Her Majesty's local prisons, there to await his trial at sessions or assizes. The period thus spent in the provinces will never exceed three months ; in London, with the frequent sittings at Clerkenwell and of the Central Criminal Court, it is seldom more than one month. While awaiting trial the prisoner may wear his own clothes, provide his own food, see and communicate with his friends and legal adviser, so as to prepare fully for his defence. His fate after conviction depends on his sentence. If this be imprisonment, so called to distin- guish it from penal servitude, although both mean depriva- tion of liberty and are closely akin, it is undergone in one of the "local" prisons—the prisons till 1878 under local jurisdiction, but now entirely controlled by the state through the home secretary and the commissioners of prisons. The régime undergone is cellular ; able-bodied prisoners are kept in strict separation for at least one month, and during that time subjected to first-class hard labour, which is purely penal in character; and nowa-~~

~~days, under the uniform system introduced by the commis.,~~

~~sioners, consists of the treadwheel, in which each indivi- dual ascends 8640 feet in a day's work, or six hours' work on cranks or hard labour machines is exacted where there are no treadwheels; and the labour, whether of treadwheel or crank, is generally utilized as the motive power for grinding corn or pumping water for prison use. Beating oakum with a heavy beater and mat-making with heavy implements are also considered first-class hard labour. A system of progressive stages not unlike the mark system has been adopted in the local prisons, and the prisoner's progress through each depends on his own industry and good conduct. During the first month he sleeps on a plank bed, a wooden frame raised from the floor, with bedding but without mattress. When he has earned the proper number of marks, which at the earliest cannot be until one month has elapsed, he passes into the second stage, and is allowed better diet, and a mattress twice~~

~~a week. The third stage, at the end of the third month, gives him further privileges as regards diet and bed. The fourth stage concedes to the~~

~~prisoner a mattress every night, and the privilege, if well conducted, to communi- cate by letter or through visits with his friends outside. These stages are applicable to females except as regards the plank bed; while youths under sixteen and old men above sixty are also allowed mattresses. A small gratuity may be earned during the second and three following stages, amounting in the aggregate to ten shillings. The labour, too, may be industrial, and include instruction in tailoring, shoemaking, basket-making, book-binding, printing, and many more handicrafts. Throughout the sentence the prisoner has the advantage of religious and moral instruction ; he attends divine service regularly and according to his creed, is visited by the chaplain, and receives educational assistance according to his needs. His physical welfare is watched over by competent medi- cal men ; close attention is paid to the sanitary condition of prisons; strict rules govern the size of the cells, with their lighting, warming, and ventilation. Dietaries are everywhere the same; they are calculated with great nicety according to the terms of durance, and afford variety and ample nutrition without running into excess. In a word, as regards discipline, labour, treatment, exactly the same system obtains throughout the United Kingdom from Bodmin to the far north, from Cork to Belfast. Where the sentence passes beyond two years it ceases to be styled imprisonment and becomes penal servitude, which may be inflicted for any period from five years to life. The prisoner becomes a convict, and undergoes his penalty in one or more of the convict prisons. These are entirely under state management. A sentence of penal servitude, as now administered, consists of three distinct periods or stages : —(1) that of probation endured in separate confinement at a so-called "close" prison ; (2) a period of labour in association at a public works prison; and (3) conditional release for the unexpired portion of the sentence upon licence or ticket-of-leave. (1) In the first stage, which is limited to nine months for reasons already given, the convict passes his whole time in his cell apart from other prisoners, engaged at some industrial employment. He exercises and goes to chapel daily in the society of others, but holds no com- munication with them; his only intercourse with his fellow creatures is when he is visited by the governor, chaplain, schoolmaster, or trade instructor. This period of almost unbroken solitude, when the mind, thrown in on itself, is supposed to be peculiarly open to lessons of ad- monition and warning, is one of severely penal character, and its duration has therefore been wisely limited. It is deemed, moreover, that perpetual seclusion in a~~

cell is an artificial state of existence, that its infliction for long terms would altogether unfit an offender for a return to the ordinary conditions of daily life. (2) The second is a longer stage, and endures for the whole or a greater part of the remainder of the sentence,—its duration being governed by the power a convict holds in his own hands to earn a remission. It is passed at a public works prison,—either at Borstal, Chatham, Chattenden, Ports- mouth, Portland, Dartmoor, or (for the present) Worm- wood Scrubs. While cellular separation, except at work, at prayers, or exercise, is strictly maintained, labour is in association under the close and constant supervision of officials. Intercommunication no doubt takes place ; men working together in qnarry, brickfield, or barrow-run, and out of earshot of their guardians, may and do converse at times. But the work is too arduous to allow of long and desultory conversation ; while the chance of mutual con- tamination is now minimized by the separation of the less

756

hardened from the old offenders in the manner already pointed out. There is no reason to suppose that any

great evils result from this association, and without it the-

execution of the many important national public works which now attest its value would have been impossible. Among these may be mentioned the following :—~the quarrying of stone for the great Portland breakwater, which is nearly 2 miles in length, and between 50 and 60 feet deep in the sea, with the defensive works on the Verne, batteries, casemates, and barracks intended to render the island of Portland impregnable, and the enlarge ment and extension of the dockyards at Chatham and Portsmouth; at the former three grand basins 20, 21, and 28 acres respectively in extent have been completed on the marshy lands and reaches of the Medway, and at the latter extensive operations of the same kind have long been in progress. At Borstal a line of forts intended to protect Chatham on the southern and western side are being erected by convicts; they are also building maga- zines at Chattenden on the left bank of the Medway ; they will soon be at work at Dover on the vast improve- nents for the enlargement of the harbour and port. Be- sides this, convict labour has been usefully employed in the erection of prison buildings at new points or

~~*in exten- sion of those at the old; at Borstal cells for five hundred, and at Wormwood Scrubs for ten hundred and fifty-two have been built, with chapel, quarters, hospitals, and so forth ; large additions have been made to the prisons of Woking, Pentonville, Chatham, Portsmouth, Dartmoor, Parkhurst, and Brixton. In all cases the bricks have been made, the stone quarried and dressed, the timber sawn, the iron cast, forged, and wrought by the prisoners ; only one article was bought ready made, and that was the locks. The great merit of this system is the skill acquired in handicrafts by so many otherwise idle and useless hands. Convict mechanics are rarely found ready made. A return dated July 1882 shows that 82 per cent. of the total number employed at trades had learnt them in prison. These results are no doubt greatly aided by the judicious stimulus given to the highest effort by the mark system. The chief objection to enforced labour has been the difficulty in ensuring this; but the convict nowadays eagerly tries his best, because only thus can he win privi- leges while in prison and an earlier release from it. Every day's work is gauged, and marks recorded according to its value ; upon the total earned depend his passage through the stages or classes which regulate his diet and general treatment, and more especially his interviews and com- munications with his relations and friends. Yet more; steady willing labour continuously performed will earn a remission of a fourth of the sentence, less the time spent in separate confinement. It must be borne in mind that the marks thus earned may be forfeited at any time by misconduct, but only to this extent does conduct affect remission, and the latter is really directly dependent upon industry. The full remission ina five years' sentence is one year and twenty-three days; in seven years, one year two hundred and seventy-three days; in fourteen, three years one hundred and eighty-one days; in twenty, four years eighty-six days. "' Lifers" cannot claim any remis- sion, but their cases are brought forward at the end of twenty years, and then considered on their merits. (3) Having earned his remission, the convict enters upon the third stage of his punishment. He is released, but only conditionally, on licence or ticket-of-leave. This permis- sion to be at large may easily be forfeited. Stringent conditions are endorsed upon the licence, and well known to every licence holder. He has to produce the licence when called upon ; he must not break the law, nor asso- ciate with notoriously bad characters, nor lead an idle*~~

~~*Person PIs CiTi tes*~~

~~*dissolute life, without visible means of obtaining an 'honest livelihood. The observance of these rules is enforced by the police, to whom Acts known as the Prevention of Crimes Acts give large powers. The licence holder is ordered to report himself at intervals to the police, to whom also he must notify any change in his place of residence; he must take care that he is not found in any suspicious locality under suspicious circumstances. A breach of the regulations may entail the forfeiture of the licence, with imprisonment and the obligation to return to a convict prison to serve out the unexpired term of penal servitude. Police supervision by special sentence of a court may be extended in the case of habitual criminals to longer periods than that of the original sentence. An elaborate machinery also exists for the registration of these habitual criminals, and voluminous official records are regularly published and circulated giving detailed in- formation, distinctive marks, and previous history, to enable the police in all parts of the country to identify habitual criminals. A system so rigorous towards offenders who have already expiated their crimes may be deemed to bear heavily on any who have repented of their evil ways and are anxious to turn over a new leaf. To be ever sub- jected to the intrusive watchfulness of the myrmidons of the law must often increase the licence holder's difficulty of leading an honest life. The struggle is often severe ; employers of labour are not too ready to accept the services of "jail birds," and free workmen often resent the admission of an old convict amongst their number. Private charity has happily come forward to diminish or remove this hardship, and many societies have been called into existence for the special purpose of assisting dis- charged prisoners. The first of these, now honoured with the title of "' Royal," was organized in 1856, and had assisted, up to 1879, some eleven thousand prisoners. This society labours chiefly in the metropolis; it is sup- ported by private subscriptions, but it has control also over the gratuities of the licensees who accept its aid. The prisoners on release are first examined at the society's office as to their prospects and wishes; they are given some pocket money out of their own gratuities ; and their "liberty clothing," a present from the prison, is changed for more suitable clothes. They are then placed in respectable lodging-houses until in due course employ- ment is obtained for them, after which the society under- takes the reporting to the police, and by its own agents exercises a watchful care over its protegés.*~~

~~There are now upwards of twenty societies established in various parts of the country, and the number is rapidly increasing.~~

~~The foregoing system is applicable more particularly to adult males; but for females the rules are much the same as regards imprisonment and penal servitude. But the remission a female convict can earn is greater, and amounts to a third of the sentence, less the separate con- finement. Moreover, female convicts whose conduct and character warrant a hope of complete amendment are admitted into "refuges" nine months before the date of their conditional release on leave. There are two of these refuges, which are more like "homes" than prisons,—the Westminster Memorial Refuge at Streatham for Protest- ants, and the East End House, Finchley, for Roman Catholics. The training of these refuges is calculated to fit the licensee for more complete freedom, and many of the women who go from them into the world do well. The aid societies also help effectually in obtaining situations, often very good ones, for the released female convicts.~~

~~Juvenile criminals are now subjected to special 'treat- ment. Young offenders, although liable to be treated as adults by the court before which they are brought, are generally dealt with summarily under various powers,~~

~~FrRisonw DASCIPYPLINE~~

~~exercised, in some cases in England and Ireland, with the consent of the accused, or, in the case of a child, of the parent or guardian. The discretionary powers of summary courts are wide, ranging in many cases from dismissal (although the charge is proved) to payment of damages and costs, or fine, or limited imprisonment, and in the case of a male child with private whipping either in addition to or instead of any other punishment; and whipping in addi- tion to other punishment may be imposed by all courts on the trial of male offenders under sixteen for the majority of offences. For the very important power of relegating juvenile offenders to reformatory schools and vagrant and neglected children to industrial schools see the separate article, REFORMATORY AND INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS (g.v.).~~

~~Juvenile offenders and children while detained in re- formatory: or industrial schools are not subject to prison discipline, but the rules for the~~

~~*management and dis- cipline of the schools and the detention in them may be enforced by imprisonment. Very beneficial results as re- gards the diminution of crimes are undoubtedly obtained by various institutions, both public and private. The possible criminal is removed from evil associations while still amenable to better influences; and while still malle- able he is taught to labour honestly with his hands. Prison statistics, more especially of the convict prisons, show a marked decrease in the number of youthful offenders in durance, and it is reasonble to suppose that from the causes above mentioned there is a gradual stoppage in the supply. In the ten years between 1871 and 1881 the number in custody of ages between fifteen to twenty-four fell from 2948 to 1957, and this although the general population had increased four millions. The same reduction has shown itself as regards the number of the same ages in local prisons; and it is clear that the improvement is general.*~~

~~*Uniformity in prison discipline is now general through—*~~

~~*out the United Kingdom. The Prisons Act of 1877 also extended to Scotland and Ireland, and in both those countries the system of imprisonment for terms of two years and under has been assimilated to that in force in England. As regards penal servitude, convicts pass through the same stages or periods; but Scottish convicts, after undergoing their separate confinement in the general prison at Perth, have been drafted into the English public works prisons. Of late there has been a movement towards securing some of the advantages of convict labour for works north of the Tweed, and it is probable that harbour works will soon be undertaken at one or more points on the Scottish coast. For Ireland, the progressive periods are passed in that country,—separate confinement in Mountjoy prison, public works at Spike Island. The administration of prisons has also been assimilated in Great Britain and Ireland, and has been centralized in each capital under the authority of the state. Boards of prison commissioners in London, Edinburgh, and Dublin, and acting under the immediate orders of the executive, control all local prison affairs, including finance, victualling, clothing, the appoint- ment of officers of all grades, and the discipline of prisoners. The English convicts are still managed by an independent board called the directors of convict prisons, but both commissioners and directors have the same chairman and chief, while the*~~

~~staff of clerks and accountants and store- keepers—in a word, the whole administrative machinery— is identical for both. The welfare of the inmates of all prisons is not, however, left entirely at the discretion of official managers. The local magistracy have still a certain jurisdiction in the local prisons ; through elected re- presentatives styled " visiting committees," they constantly inspect the prisons and exercise supervision over their inmates. They have retained their power to punish and~~

~~generally deal with all cases of aggravated misconduct. The functions exercised by these visiting committees might seem to constitute a dual authority in prison management. But so far the two powers have worked harmoniously and well. Since 1880 unofficial and unpaid visitors have also been appointed to undertake an inde- pendent inspection of the convict prisons. This practice was introduced, not on account of any administrative failure in the system, but as a safeguard against possible abuses, and to strengthen public confidence. These visitors can give no orders, but they are empowered to make full inquiries into the state of the prisoners and the condition and discipline of the prison.~~

~~The sum voted in 1883-84 for convict establishments in England was £414,463, but this includes £18,100 for expenditure in colonies where a few imperial convicts still survive, and grants in aid of colonial magistrates, police, and jails. The vote for local prisons in the same year was £481,852. The returns from male prisoners' labour in the convict prisons in 1883-84 amounted to £248,995, 11s. 3d. Of this total, £121,956, 5s. 2d. represented the estimated value, by measurement, of labour on public works, and £42,159, 8s. 4d. more the value of prison buildings erected, while the earnings in manufactures amounted to £37,581, 8s. 8d. The balance was the farm and the work performed for the prisons. The female convicts' labour amounted in the same year to £9933, 9s. 5d., half of which was in washing and manufactures. In the local prisons in England manufactures brought in £39,790, 3s. 11d. The value of the labour on prison buildings was £24,510, 4s. 2d., and that in the service of the prisons £59,562, Os. 8d. The prison vote in Scotland for 1883-84 was £110,170, the returns from earnings £6000; in Ireland the vote was £145,689 and the earnings £4000. The~~

~~above terms of expenditure include all outlay—staff (superior and sub-ordinate), maintenance, travelling expenses, «ce.~~

~~Most civilized nations have considered the question of prison discipline from time to time, and have endeavoured, but with varying degrees of earnestness, to conform to accepted modern ideas as to the proper method of dealing with criminals, The subject has also been dealt with at two international congresscs, one of which assembled in London in 1873, and the other at Stockholm in 1878, wheu views were exchanged and matters of much interest discussed. It is proposed now to supplement the foregoing account of British prison discipline by a brief survey of the prison systems in force in the British dependencies and in various other countries.~~

~~British Colonies and India.—The prison systems of most of the British colonies have been assimilated as far as possible to that in force in the mother country. In all the larger colonies there are convict prisons and local prisous, and in all cellular separation for the whole or part of the sentence is the rule. This is the case in the Australian colonies, in Tasmania, and in New Zealand.~~

~~The prison system of Canada is advanced and enlightened. The numbers incarcerated are not great, and crime is not very prevalent. Six establishments suffice for the Dominion—Kingston, St Vincent de Paul (for the province of Quebec), Halifax, Manitoba, British Columbia, and Dorchester. The last-named has replaced that at St John's. All these are cellular prisons; and they receive prisoners of all categories, for trial and after sentence whatever the term. Females have a special quarter in each prison. Isolation is strictly carried out for all short sentences ; but for tle longer labour is in association. A great deal of good work is turned out in the Canadian prisons. All the rolling stock for railways in Government hands, iron-work, clothing, and boots and shoes are produced at the varions prisons, but not to an extent to allow all prisoners to be instructed in trades. Most of the prisons possess land in their vicinity which is tilled by the prisoners. There are no prisoners' aid societies as yet in Canada, although their formation has been earnestly recom- mended.~~

~~For the Cape of Good Hope there is a good prison at Cape Town. In Ceylon, since 1867, cellular separation has been enforced for the whole~~

~~period of short sentences, and the first six months of long sentences. In Jamaica there are several kinds of prisons, but only the principal, the general penitentiary, has any number of separate sleeping cells.~~

~~In India the jails number upwards of 230, with an indefinite number of small lock-ups. There is also the large convict depét at Port Blair in the Andaman Islands, Very few of the Indian jails~~

~~are entirely cellular ; two in particular may be mentioned, that of Utakamand and that of Hazaribagh, both of which are for European convicts. 'The remainder," says Dr Mouatt, formerly inspector general of prisons in Bengal, "are built on every conceivable plan ; a large number of them are miserable mud structures, which are constantly being washed away by heavy rain, and as constantly pro- vide work for the prisoners in repairing them." A few of them are radiating, and nearly all provide for the separation by night of the male and female prisoners ; and there is a certain rough classifica — tion according to sentence. All work is in association, except when prisoners are kept in cells for misconduct. The proportion of cell accommodation, when Dr Mouatt wrote, was barely 10 per cent. Work is mostly intramural, and generally remuncrative and in- dustrial. Prisoners are occasionally employed out of doors in gangs upon canalsand other public works. The ironing of prisoners where prisons are insecure still prevails as a safeguard against escape. Prison punishments are generally severe, and include flogging, fetters, penal labour, and complete isolation. The whole question of prison discipline in India is strictly subordinated to financial considerations, and the svstem in consequence lacks uniformity and completeness.~~

~~Austria.—It was not until 1867 that the Austrian Government declared in favour of a system of cellular imprisonment. Tull then all prisoners had been kept in association, but at the date above mentioned a recommendation that separation should be the rule was made to the reichsrath and approved. Owing to the expense of reconstructing or converting prisons, the principle could not be generally adopted ; moreover, the Austrian authorities were not in favour of continuous isolation. Hence the practice adopted was a combination of the two methods. Short~~

~~imprisonments might be endured entirely in separate cells; every prisoner might pass the first part of a long term in a cell, but the isolation was not to exceed eight months, the reniainder of the sentence to be undergone in association or collectively, due regard being had to the classifica- tion of the prisoners brought together. This classification is based upon the individual's age, education, state of mind, and former life, and the nature of his crime. The progress made in the erection of cellular prisons has not been very rapid. Although the total number of prisoners in Austria-Hungary exceeds 17,000, up to the end of 1879 only 1050 cells had been provided, viz., at Gratz 252, at Stein 348, at Pilsen 387, and at Karthaus 68, while two small prisons for trial prisoners have also been built at Cilli and Reichen- berg. These new prisons are, however, very complete and perfect ; they have all modern appliances, chapels, hospitals, workshops, and baths ; the cells are spacious, and well ventilated, lighted, and warmed. Two days of cellular imprisonment, after three months have elapsed, count as three in association. There is no distinctly penal labour. In separation prisoners follow such trades as shoe- making, tailoring, weaving, button-making, wood-carving ; women are employed in embroidery, spinning, quill-pen making, and knitting. In association the principal employments are carpenter- Ing, coopering, smith's work, brick-making ; and a number of the more trustworthy prisoners have helped to construct railways and lay down roads. Asa rule the prisoners' labour is let out to con- tractors ; this plan is preferred as relieving the state of all risks, while officials are more at liberty to attend to the pure disciplinary treatment of the prisoners. As a rule every prisoner who enters ignorant of a trade is taught one in prison. Prisoners can earn substantial wages ; where contractors are employed, the prisoners receive half what is paid over, after all costs have been deducted. Half of the earnings may be spent in the prison canteen in the purchase of luxuries, including beer and tobacco, or in the support of a prisoner's family, or in the purchase of clothing to be worn on discharge. 'There is only one " Liberated Prisoner Aid Society," which is established at Vienna, and which does good service in supporting prisoners until they find occupation, and providing them with money, clothes, and tools. Speaking generally, there are three classes of prisons 'in Austria-Hungary, viz., for minor offences, and for prisoners sentenced to terms less than one year and to terms of one year and upwards respectively. The treatment of the incarcerated is humane : their diet is sufficient ; they have good beds and~~

~~bed- ding ; the sick are cared for in hospitals; the labour of the able- bodied is not excessive, although supposed to extend over ten hours daily. Religious services are provided for, and non-Roman-Catholic prisoners may be seen by ministers of their own form of faith. Prison administration is under the minister of justice, who dele- gates his powers to an inspector general of prisons. Commissions of inspection are appointed to visit all the cellular prisons monthly, and there are also local boards of management and control.~~

~~, Belgiwm.—Prison discipline has perhaps received as close atten- tion in Belgium as anywhere in the world. In 1835, when the great movement towards prison reform was in progress, Belgium first adopted the cellular system experimentally by constructing thirty- two cells in connexion with the old prison at Ghent. After a trial of nine years a verdict was passed in favour of cellular separa- tion and it was authoritatively adopted in 1844. Progress was steady if not rapid; by degrees many cellular prisons were built ;~~

~~PRISON DWISCIPLene~~

~~and up to the present date (1885) twenty-four are in existence. A model prison for 600 on the same plan is in process of construction at Brussels, and three others, smaller, will soon be finished. Bel- gium has unhesitatingly accepted the rule of absolute separation as regards all prisoners, whatever the duration of their sentences. That solitude which disastrous results in England have strictly limited to either nine months, or, under certain modifications, to two years, may be enforced in Belgian prisons for at least ten years. At the end of that period a prisoner may claim to go into associa- tion, and they are then removed to Ghent, where they work and eat in company but have separate sleeping cells. Separation, again, is not insisted upon with the sickly, or those whose minds appear weak ; while all upon whom cellular imprisonment has failed may aiso in due course be removed to association. But for the rest the separate system is the invariable rule, and it is carried out with careful and unvarying sternness. The prisoner never leaves his cell save for chapel or exercise ; at the former he is in a separate box or compartment; the latter he takes alone in a narrow yard. HIs life, however, is not one of absolute solitude. HIe is~~

~~*visited fre- quently by his warders and schoolmasters and trade instructors ; chaplain, governor, and doctor also break the monotony of his life. According to the Belgian view of the case, he "lives in association with the prison staff," not with his fellow criminals. It is claimed for this system, which aims prinarily at the reformation of indivi- duals, that no evil consequences have as yet been seen to follow from the treatment. Official statistics may be searched in vain for the record of cases of suicide or of mental alienation; neither are abnormally frequent. On the other hand the Belgian authorities insist that the dread of the. punishinent has had a marked effect upon crime, and that there isa diminution in the number of second sentences. " Recidivists," or reconvicted prisoners, are, moreover, subjected to a more rigorous discipline.*~~

~~*There are three classes of prisons in Belgium ;—the maisons darrét, or prisons of detention, for accused persons undergoing examination or awaiting trial; the masons de sireté, or prisons for the infliction of short sentences ; and the matson centrales, which correspond to the English convict prisons. Prisoners awaiting trial, and still innocent in the eyes of the law, are treated with much leniency and consideration. An arrangement peculiar to the French and Belgian prisons is the privilege of the " pistole." A prisoner on payment of a certain charge is conceded better accommodation ; he has a room, not a cell, decently furnished, and may provide his own food, have books, sce his friends, and do no work. Offenders of the better class, and never previously convicted, arc sometimes relegated specially to the pistole by the tribunals ; and the local boards of visitors have also power to transfer prisoncrs to this privileged class. Independent of the pistole the law provides three kinds of penalty—correctional imprisonment, seclusion, and imprisonment with hard labour. But, except the slight differences as regards privileges of letters and visits, the treatment is identical in all three categories. It is correctional for all ; all prisoners are kept in seclusion ; and there is no hard laboury as we understand it. Purely penal labour does not exist in the Belgian prisons. Public works are obviously impossible; and there arc no tread- mills or cranks. The labour is entirely industrial; but its object is rather to reform individuals than to produce profit to the state. With strict cellular confinement the range of prison indus- tries is generally limited to sedentary employment; but, besides weaving, tailoring, shoemaking, book-*~~

~~*binding, and so forth, various handicrafts are practised. The prisoner's labour is partly let out to contractors, partly utilized by the authorities. A portion of the earnings for work done goes to the prisoners; and part of the money may be spent in the purchase of better food or tobacco, where it is permitted, from the canteen. No pains are spared to instruct the prisoners ; those ignorant of any trade are regularly appren- ticed and taught, the idea being to provide every one with a means of livelihood on release. The severity, not to say cruelty, of the strict rule of separation is mitigated as far as possible by the pater- nal solicitude of the authorities. The administrative arrange- ments of the Belgian prisons are nearly perfect. The buildings are spacious—the halls lofty, light, and airy; the cells are of ample dimensions, carefully ventilated, well-lighted, and well-warmed. An abundant water supply assists the sanitary services ; dietaries are sufficient and well-chosen, soup with plenty of vegetables forming an especial feature in them. School instruction is available for all. There are well-supplied libraries. The hospitals are clean and spacious, fitted with every necessary, and the percentage of patients under treatment is usually small. An epidemic of ophthalmia was, however, long present in the reformatory prison of St Hubert. An independent system of visitation is supposed to protect the prisoners from ill usage ; local boards composed of local functionaries exercise constant supervision and control over the prisons in their*~~

~~*'vicinity. The central administr:tion is intelligent ; and the prison*~~

~~*service being esteemed highly hoxourable attracts good men to recruit its ranks. Female prisons are exclusively managed by the nuns of some religious order in the locality. Besides the prisons of punishment for adults, there are two evtablishments in Belgium*~~

~~*lee*~~

~~*PRIiBON DISCIPLINE*~~

~~*which deal exclusively with juvenile crime. These are at St | Hubert in Luxemburg, and at Namur. The first, dating from 1840, is an agricultural colony which receives all youths up to the age of fourteen ; the labour is exclusively in the fields. Young criminals belonging to the towns are sent to Namur, where the work is mechanical but more sedentary. A good education*~~

~~both moral and practical is received at these reformatories, which are more like schools than prisons. There are also philanthropic schools for vag- rants and non-criminal children. At present no societies labour to assist prisoners on release. A complete organization once existed for the purpose, but it was wholly official, and those whom it was supposed to benefit suspected and kept aloof from it. It may be added that, although there is no power in the prisoners' own hands of working out remission by steady industry and good conduct, sen- tences may be abbreviated on these grounds on the recommendation of the prison authorities. All sentences, too, have been shortened since the general introduction of cellular. imprisonment ; as the treatment was more severe, justice demanded a curtailment of the penalties. Capital punishment, although not definitively abolished, is never inflicted, and all sentenced to death pass into prison for life. But after ten years they too are transferred to Ghent for the remainder of their days.~~

~~Brazil.—The present emperor of Brazil has long taken an active interest in prison reform. He has encouraged the prison adminis- tration of his country to introduce a scheme which is in many respects the same as that in force in England. Prisoners, after sentence, are subjected to a period of close cellular confinement enduring eight months; they then pass to another prison, where cellular separation is still enforced, but the daily labour is in associa- tion and insilence. This is styled the reformatory stage ; after that comes the third stage, which is reached by marks gained through industry and good conduct. In this last stage, called the testing stage, prisoners work together ; they may converse, May wear their own clothes, and are under the care and supervision of the most trustworthy of their fellows. They sleep in large dormitories, not in cells, are allowed to cultivate a piece of garden ground on their own account, and a large portion of their earnings is placed to their credit and handed over to them on release.~~

~~Denmark.—The prison system in force in Denmark dates from 1840, previous to which time the arrangements were extremely unsatisfactory. In the early part of the century Danish prisons were in as deplorable condition as any in Europe; after enduring indescribable 'horrors, the worst malefactors passed on to hard labour in the fortresses or in the fleets. But a commission was appointed in 1840 to report, and recommended the~~

~~adoption of the cellular system for all prisoners awaiting trial, and under short- term sentences,—thosé condemned to long imprisonments to be put to hard labour in association. The necessary prisons were con- structed at a eost, within a quarter of a century, of two millions of pounds. There are a large number of small detention prisons, and four principal prisons for the convicted ; one cellular for males at Vridslocsville, and two associated at Horsens and Viborg, one for females combined cellular and associated at Christianshavn. Abont 75 per cent. of the whole are sentenced to separative con- finement in cells ; its infliction is limited to first offenders, youths, or those sentenced to six months and upwards to three years and a half; the associated or aggregate system applies to the reconvicted, and for terms from two years to life. There is no distinctly penal labour in the prisons ; the industrial prevails, and is in the hands of contractors. Prisoners in cells are constantly visited ; religious and secular instruction is imparted ; the dietaries are carefully cal- culated, and the régime generally intelligent and humane.~~

~~A number of aid societies have been established at the seat of the large prisons, which assist prisoners on release who have been dili- gent and well conducted in confinement. Work is found, tools and subsistence given, asin England. It is interesting to note that the first aid society was formed at Copenhagen in 1841 through the exertions of Mrs Fry. Besides the regular prisons, there are three reformatories for juveniles modelled on the French school at Mettray ; they have been founded by private benevolence, but re- ceive aid from the state. Agriculture is the principal employment of the inmates.~~

~~France.—Prisons and their management have not attracted close or continuous attention in France. Dynastic changes, wars, revolu- tions, and intestinal troubles may be pleaded as the excuse. A system based on the principle of individual separation as practised in the United States was on the point of being adopted in France when the legislation to secure it was interrupted by the revolution~~

~~of 1848. Under the empire the question was generally subordinated to more pressing political needs. Cellular imprisonment was, how- ever, adopted partially, but only to alimited extent, for persons await- ing trial. Central~~

~~*prisons in which the prisoners lived and worked in association had been established early in the century, and their use was extended, 'They received all sentenced to the shorter terms. The long-term convicts went to the bagnes, the great convict prisons at the arsenals of Rochefort, Brest, and Toulon; and in 1851, a few years after it had been abandoned by England, transportation |*~~

~~*759*~~

~~*to penal colonies was adopted by France. In 1869 Napoleon III. appointed a commission to inquire and report upon the whole question, but its labours were. rudely interrupted by the Franco- German War. Three years later a fresh commission, appointed by the national assembly to discuss parliamentary reform, made a most exhaustive report in 1874. It unhesitatingly recommended cellular confinement, and the principle became law the following year. This system of prison discipline then became applicable to all persons awaiting trial, to those sentenced to any term up to a year and a day, and to those for longer terms provided they asked to be kept separate and apart. It was calculated by the commission first mentioned that there were nearly eight thousand cells already in existence and available, but an additional twenty-one thousand would have to be econstrueted at an outlay of sixty-three millions of francs in order to meet the demands of this new system. A model cell was designed and plans for model prisons, but the expense the change would entail appears to have deterred French authorities, both the central executive and the conseils généraux, from promptly making it. There are not more than ten or a dozen cellular prisons in Franec, and two of them are in Paris—Mazas (for trial prisoners) and La Santé, but the latter is not entirely cellular. The construction of others has been contemplated, but in few cases proceeded with, and many years will probably elapse before any uniformity in penal treatment is established in France. Prison administration is complex in Francc, and there are many kinds of prisons, —a few of them being under the authority of the minister of the interior :—(1) the mazson d'arrét, temporary places of durance in every arrondissement for persons charged with offences, and those sentenced to more than a year's imprisonment who are awaiting transfer to a maison centrale; (2) the maison de justice, often part and parcel of the former, but only existing in the assize court towns for*~~

~~*the safe custody of those tried or condemned at the assizes ; (3) the depdt situated on the island of Re, for all sentenced to travaux foreés awaiting deportation to New Caledonia (Arabs so sentenced wait at Avignon their removal to French Guiana) ; (4) departmental prisons or houses of correction, for summary con- victions, or those sentenced to less than a year, or, if provided with sufficient cells, those amenable to separate confinement; (5) the maisons centrales, or central prisons, for all sentenced to more than a year, or for men and women above sixty sentenced to travaux forcés ; (6) maisons de force, for women senteneed to travaux forces, or both sexes condemned to seclusion; (7) prisons for those sen- tenced to simple detention; (8) penal settlements in Corsica, more particularly at Chiavari, Casabianca, and Castellucio, the régie of which is the same as in the maisons centrales; (9) reformatory establishments for juvenile offenders ; and (10) depéts de streté, for prisoners who are travelling, at places where there are no other prisons. The total number of prisons of all classes in France, exclusive of the last, exceeds 500, and the prison population averages 50,000 daily. Besides the foregoing there are a certain number of military prisons under the war minister seated at the great garrison towns, or in Algeria ; and at all the seaports there are maritime prisons for soldiers or sailors who have broken laws civil or military. he latter are under the minister of marine, who also has special charge of the penal settlements at a distance from France, including French Guiana and New Caledonia, where there are several prisons and hulks adapted for the confinement of convicts. The dis- ciplinary treatment of all prisoners in separate confinement is much the same in France as elsewhere; the isolation while it lasts is com- plete and is broken only by the frequent visits of officials. The exer- eise is solitary, and at chapel the same rule obtains by each prisoner occupying a separate box, or by having service in the centre of the prison, to which all the cell doors, slightly opened, converge. It may be stated here that religious tolerance prevails everywhere ; and prisoners not Roman Catholics may receive the ministration of clergymen of their own erced. Female prisons are mostly managed by nuns or members of the female religious orders. There is one at Doullens especially kept for Protestant female prisoners, and managed by a Protestant sisterhood. The evils of association in the congregate prisons are diminished by classification, so far as it goes. But prisoners are at least kept in categories: trial prisoners are together ; those for a year are kept*~~

~~apart from the summary convictions, and convicts en route for the island of Ré from all the rest. Males and females occupy different prisons. As almost all prisons have at least a few separate cells, these are utilized either for the recidivists and those of worst character, or for any well-disposed prisoners who exhibit a real desire to amend. The diet, although coarse, is liberal. It may be supplemented by purchase made from the canteen, at which both wine and tobacco may be obtained by all who can pay for it. Each person may thus spend a certain proportion of his earnings or péerle, the rest being reserved for his discharge. What remains of the product of the prisoner's labour is handed over to the contractor, who also receives a grant per prisoner from the state. Labour is only obligatory upon those so sentenced ; it is purely industrial; penal labour, such as treadmill or crank, does not exist in French prisons. In the smaller it is not easy to find occupation for the inmates, but in the~~

~~larger many and varions industries are carried on. Among the more ordinary trades the manufacture of 'articles de Paris," toys, neat bonbon boxes, hosiery, and cabinet-making produce good finan- cial returns. The labour of the prisoners in Corsican settlements has been usefully directed upon the reclamation of marshy lands, the clearing of forests, and the tilling of the less fertile districts. The agricultural results have been good as regards the cultivation of the orange, olive, and vine; mulberry trees have been planted for the silk-worm, and the wheat fields have returned rich harvests of grain, much esteemed in Italy and the south of France. Good roads and many canals have been made, to open up the interior. These Corsican prisons have long suffered from the unhealthiness of their neighbourhood, but the draining of the marshes, the develop- ment of irrigation, and the plantation of trees have all combined to improve their sanitary conditions. ;~~

~~The efforts made in France, more particularly by private bene- volence, to cope with juvenile delinquency have been very praise- worthy. French reformatories are of two classes—those that are punitive or correctional, and those that are simply reformatory. To the first, where the discipline is severe, are sent all youths con- victed of offences committed with full~~

~~*knowledge of their crimi- nality, and these relegated from the re formatories as insubordinate ; to the second, children proved guilty but not responsible for their acts, or the ill-conducted whose parents cannot manage them. The first-named are public institutions maintained by the state; the latter are private, and may be supported entirely by subscriptions. There are in all thirty-eight of the former, as well as five penal colonies, and five juvenile quarters attached to various departmental prisons; of the latter there are twenty-eight. All these are for males. For females there are twenty-three private establishments and one public. The most important of the public reformatories for boys is that of La Petite Roquette in Paris, immediately opposite the convict prison of the same name, in front of which executions are carried out. Of the private institutions that of Mettray near Tours, started by the benevolent enterprise of M. de Metz, has a world-wide reputation. A very successful female re- formatory is that of Darnétal near Rouen, where the women are employed in farming and field operations.*~~

~~*As regards the most heinous offenders, France not only clings to deportation, but is disposed to enlarge and multiply her penal settlements. In 1884 the Government had under consideration the necessity for sending out all "recidivists" to the Polynesian islands. This, however, has been hindered for the moment by the energetic protest of the Australian colonies, and, instead of the number sent to New Caledonia being increased, French Guiana will probably be more largely utilized. In the former islands most of the evils which attended the early days of transportation to Australia have been appareut. The French convicts either remain in the hands of the Government incarcerated in badly constructed prisons, where discipline and supervision are unsatis- factory or incomplete, or they pass into a state of semi-freedom to work for free settlers on their own account. There are not enough of the latter to afford much employment, and the conditions of the soil of New Caledonia are not such as to encourage the convicts to work for themselves. It is extremely improbable that the penal settlement will ever grow into a prosperous self- supporting colony, and thus the chief end of deportation remains unachieved. At present the French penal settlements beyond sea are merely badly-built indifferently-managed prisons at a long dis- tance from home.*~~

~~*Germany.—There isa similarity in the prison discipline of the various units of the German empire. In the grand-duchy of Baden there are four kinds of prisons—district prisons, fortresses, houses of correction, and central prisons. The punishment in the two first named is simply detention or privation of liberty,—the district prisons being for persons under examination and waiting trial, or those sentenced to less than six weeks' imprisonment. Sentences above that time are endured in the central_prisons. The principle of cellular imprisonment is the general rule, but it is not extended, unless at a prisoner's wish, beyond three years, For youths between twelve and eighteen the limit is six months. Prisoners unfit for solitary confinement and those who have en- dured three years' detention are kept together, but they are not associated during working hours. Both systems are supposed to be attended with good results in Baden. Both have their merits, but Popular feeling inclines most to the cellular plan as conducing to reform while it keeps the prisoners from mutual contamination. The chief cellular prison is at Bruchsal, where there is accommoda- tion for five hundred, but there are a certain number of separate cells attached to many other prisons. The labour in the prisons is industrial as opposed to penal; contractors are not encouraged; and in most prisons the administration itself keeps the employment of oe rison In its own hands, Forty per cent. of the prisoners on admission are ignorant of any trade, but they do not leave prison without learning one. Prisoners' aid societies exist in twenty-nine*~~

~~*out of fifty-nine districts, and they achieve good resul their aid is not too frequently cee = go sults, although*~~

~~*PRISON DISCTIPECRYD*~~

~~*The bulk of the prisons in Bavaria, mostly converted castles and convents, are on the collective system, but there are four cellular prisons—one at Nuremberg, and three other district prisons for those awaiting trial. The prisons are much the same as in Baden. There are police prisons for first arrests ; district prisons mentioned above, which also take short sentences ; prisons for three months' sentences and upwards, and for juveniles; and houses of correction. There are also special prisons set apart for persons convicted of theft, fraud, robbery, receiving, whose sentences exceed three*~~

~~*months ; and a system of classification exists which separates all likely by their previous character to exercise a baneful influence on their fellows. For the long-term prisoners the labour may be npon public works beyond the walls of the jail, and prisoners may de- mand to be soemployed, or in work for which they are fit. Industry and good conduct will secure a remission of sentence. After three months of the sentence have been served there.is no purely penal labour. Industrial labour is conducted by the prison authorities, who are not in favour of the employment of contractors, which is thought to jeopardize discipline. Secular education is not over- looked ; there are hospitals, chapels, libraries, and the adniinistra- tion generally is humane. There are numerous societies to assist discharged prisoners, which, however, are said to be much hainpered in action by the ignorance and prejudice of the public. One at Munich has nevertheless done great good.*~~

~~*There are but few prisons in Prussia in which isolatign is exclu- sively carried out. But in forty-six cellular and associated im- prisonment exist side by side ; the total number of cellsis, however, small when compared with the total population in prison. The advantage of introducing the system of "progressive stages," of passing from strict separation to labour in association, is anxiously discussed, but nothing yet has been donc. Prussian prisons may be classed as—(1) those exclusively for hard labour, (2) those for im- prisonment and simple detention, and (3) those of a mixed character. Hard-labour sentences may be for any term from one year to life; the labour is compulsory, without restriction, both inside and be- yond the walls. The maximum of simple imprisonment or deten- tion is for five years, during which time a prisoner is not compelled to work except in accordance with his capacity and the position he occupied in social life; nor need he work outside the prison against his will. Imprisonment in a fortress, which may be for life and the minimum of which is for one day, means simple deprivation of liberty. There is also a detention on summary conviction for vag- rants and beggars limited to six weeks. These may be made to work inside or outside the prison. There is no penal labour; but much variety and enterprise exist as regards the prison industrial employ- ments, which, in addition to the ordinary kinds, include feather- scraping, leather-dressing, turning, carving, illuminating, &c. The males also farm; the women make gloves, cigars, and tapestry, embroider, knit, weave, and spin. The work is*~~

carried on through contractors, who pay a certain sum on the amount produced. A portion of their earnings goes to the prisoners,—half of it to be expended in buying extra food, half accumulated against release. To reduce evils of association it is ordered that first sentences shall be separated from hardened offenders, but this classification is not always possible ; juvenile prisoners are, however, kept apart in cells. Release, provisionally, may take place after three-fourths of the sentence has been endured with good conduct, but the licence to be abroad may be revoked for a breach of law. There are many prisoners' aid societies, the best being in Rhenish Prussia and Westphalia, but the results obtained have not been very satis- factory. Employers and free workmen will not receive liberated prisoners freely, and the aid societies would effect more if they were more centralized and worked more together. Prussian prisons are on the whole well organized ; the discipline is severe yet just ; order reigns everywhere ; secular instruction and religious minis- trations are ample, and the employment of prisoners according to their capacities is carefully attended to. But many of the prisons require rebuilding or reconstruction ; isolation at night should be the universal rule ; and more cells are needed to ensure the separa- tion of the trial prisoners and short sentences. Administrative centralization is much needed in Prussia.

Prison discipline has attractéd close attention in the kingdom of Saxony since 1850, when the penitentiary at Zwickau was first opened and conducted with satisfactory results. In 1854 it was decreed that all Saxon prisons should follow the same system, which is that of treatment either solitary or associated according to individual wants; neither rule obtains exclusively, and the prisons have facilities for both. Work, education, and diet are supposed to be carefully allotted to prisoners. The prisons follow the usual classification of German prisons; there are those for severe punishment, two in number, three for less severe punish- ment, and two for the older offenders. Besides these there are the fortresses and the prisons of detention. The labour is purely industrial, not penal ; Saxony is a very industrial country, and its prisons produce nearly every article of manufacture. Work is carried out in them partly by contractors and partly by the authorities. In the five reformatories agriculture is the principal

~~*occupation. A graduated system of remission of sentences is in force, dependeut on industry and conduct.*~~

~~*In /Viirtemberg the cellular system was adopted for women in 1865, and a prison on that plan erected at Heilbronn, which has sinee been utilized exclusively for men. The bulk of the Wirtem- berg prisons are, however, still on the eollective system; but at all prisons there are places for the isolated detention of a certain number of prisouers. The classification of prisous is much the same as in other parts of the German empire under the penal code of the empire. There is no distinction between penal and industrial labour ; the latter is of the varied character followed in other German prisons, and is partly in the hands of contractors, partly in that of the administration. An aid society has existed in Wiirtemberg since 1831, and it has numerous ramifications through the country. It does good service in obtaining work, providing tools, and assisting emigration.*~~

~~*Italy.—There is a want of uniformity in the prison system of the Italian kingdom, which is not strange, having regard to the recent unification of the country. The various units which were till recently independent of each other had each its own views. Many varieties of prison discipline, therefore, still remain in force. There are some prisons in which complete isolation is the rule, others where the labour is associated with cellular separa- tion at uight. But the largest number are on the collective system. All new prisons of detention are built on the principle of isolation, and this rule is as far as possible strictly observed for all prisoners awaiting trial. This period of detention may be spent in a provincial (careere centrale), district (circondarale), or communal (mandamentale) jail. Sentences are carried out accord- ing to their character in different prisons. There are prisons for those condemned to simple confinement and detention ; others for "'velegates" ; others again for reclusion accompanied with hard labour ; and twenty are bagnios or hard-labour prisons for those sentenced for long periods (up to life), to undergo the punish- ment of the ergastolo or galera. The discipline is progressive. In the ordinary prisons a gradual amelioration of condition may be secured by good conduct; in the bagnios, besides the exemption from fetters, convicts may gain the privilege of completing the last half of their sentences in one or other of the agricultural colonies. These have been.established in various islands of the Tuscan*~~

~~*archipelago, as at Pianosa and Gorgona; and an intermediate prison has been established on the island of Capraia for well-conducted prisoners in a last stage of semi-liberty. Associated convict labour has produced good results in Italy. By it all necessary prison buildings have been erected at the penal colonies and at various points on the mainland: it has also been applied to agriculture, the reclamation of land, the construction of storehouses, docks, salt works, and ou the improvement of various ports. In the prisons or penitentiaries the labour is industrial, and follows the usual lines. Contractors have generally the control of this labour, receiving the results after deductions for prisoners' earnings to be spent in the usual way and with the obligation to teach trades. On the latter condition contractors are granted the exclusive right to the labour of juveniles in houses of correction ; and there are a number of reformatory schools, mostly on a charitable basis, into which are drafted all juveniles, vagrants, and idlers sentenced to compulsory detention.*~~

~~*Mexico.—In Mexico the rule of constant separation for all pris- oners has been accepted, but not yet carried out entirely. The oll prisons were on the associated system; but new cellular prisons have recently been built, or are in process of construction at Jalisco, Durango, Puebla, and Mexico. These will receive trial prisoners and those sentenced. There is an " hospicio de pobres " for young children ; also a special reformatory establishment for children between nine and eighteen. Political offenders are kept apart from ordinary offenders. All convicted prisoners may earn conditional release on completion of half their whole sen- tence. This form of release is called preparatory liberty, and for a' short time preceding it they are allowed to leave the jails to run errands or seek work. The labour in Mexican prisons is indus- trial, not penal, and in theory at least the advantages of learning a trade in prison are fully understood. Contracts for prison labour are forbidden. A portion of the proceeds goes to the prisoners, and may be spent in purchasing food or furniture or articles of comfort. There are 'protective boards" who visit and seek to improve the prisoners, and independent philanthropists are also admitted. Prisoners on release go to the protective boards, who assist in obtaining them an honest livelihood.*~~

~~*The Netherlands.—Here the treatment a condemned prisoner undergoes depends mainly upon the sentence awarded. The judge at his discretion may*~~

~~*direct the imprisonment to be on the solitary or the associated system. This power as regards the first is, however, limited to half the whole term of sentence, and in 1851 it could only be applied to sentences of one year; this was extended in 1864 to two years, and in 1871 to four years,—so that now the maximum of cellular imprisonment to be inflicted is actually limited to two years. There are several prisons on the cellular |*~~

~~*761*~~

~~*plan ; but in most the two kinds of imprisonment exist side by side. There are four classes of prisons :—(1) the central prisons for persons sentenced to eighteen months and upwards ; (2) detention prisons for less than eighteen months ; (8) prisons of arrest for those sen- tenced to three months or less; and (4) police or central prisons for those condemned to one month and under. In the three last named are also kept prisoners awaiting trial. As regards classifica- tion nothing more is attempted where association is the rule than the separation of the most hardened and previously convicted offenders from other prisoners. Imprisonment is either simple detention or accompanied by hard labour. 'The latter is industrial only, never penal, and embraces a great variety of handicrafts, most of which are carried out under contractors. But work is also done on account of the state, with the advantage that it is not subject to the fluctuations of supply and demand. All prisoners, except those for short terms, are, if possible, taught a trade. The earnings go in part to the prisoners, to be expended by them in the -usual way. Remissions of sentence not exceeding six months may be accorded to all originally condemned to not less than three years, and who have undergone at least half. There is a society for the moral amelioration of prisoners in the Netherlands, which has numerous ramifications, and is devoted to prison visiting and the welfare of prisoners generally. This extends to efforts to obtain employment for them on release, which are praiseworthy, and on the whole eminently successful.*~~

~~*Norway.—Prisons in Norway may be divided into two princi- pal classes, the Strafarbeidesanstalter, or penal institutions where prisoners are compelled to labour, and the district prisons estab- lished in 1857 for detention and simple imprisonment. (1) The first may be further subdivided into fortress prisons, houses of correction, and the cellular prison or*~~

~~*penitentiary of Christiania. This last takes the first convicted for short terms between the ages of eighteen aud thirty, the fortresses the longer sentences, aud the houses of correction the intermediate terms. All these prisons except that of Christiania are on the associated system, with no attempt at classification beyond the separation of the worst from the least corrupt in workshops or dormitories. The hours of labour are long—fourteen in summer and ten in winter. The labour, conducted solely by the authorities, is industrial; at Christiania cloth manufacture is a principal trade, at Akershuus it is stonecutting. Most prisoners learn a trade if they are ignorant of one on reception. No portion of the proceeds of their labour goes to the prisoners. There is no regular system of granting remis- sions. All the penal institutions have chaplains, schools, libraries, and hospitals. Released prisoners are, as far as possible, preserved from relapse by the eare taken to provide them with work when free. There are a few aid societies, but their operations are somewhat circumscribed from want of means. (2) The district prisons, fifty-six in number, take summary convictions from four to two hundred and forty days. Imprisonment may be endured on bread and water with regnlated intervals, or on the jail allowance. Prisoners in these prisons are not compelled to work, but they can have employment if they wish it. These district jails are also used for the detention of all persons apprehended and awaiting trial, and as debtors' prisons. They are mostly on the cellular plan, especially in the cases of those sentenced to solitary confine- ment on bread and water and those committed for trial.*~~

~~*Portugal is still behindhand as regards its prison administra- tion. he jails are extremely defective in construction ; the disei- pline is lax and the management careless. All prisons are on the associated plan; they stand mostly in the market places of the large towns, with the first-floor windows upon the public thorough- fares, so that the inmates are at liberty to talk and communiecate with the passers by, whom they importune constantly for alms. Little less lamentable than the neglect of prison discipline is the practice of indefinitely postponing jail deliveries, with the inevit- able consequence of frequent failures of justice. Juries often will not conviet, alleging that the accused have been sufficiently pun- ished by long detention awaiting trial.*~~

~~*Russia.—Prison discipline was much discussed in Russia as far back as the commencement of the present century, and in the year 1819a society, now known as the Imperial Society, was established to watch over the administration of prisons. This society still exists, and is affiliated to the ministry of the interior. Its central committee and the provincial committees working under it select the staff of the prisons, and exercise a general surveillance over them. Various classes of prisons have existed in European Russia. As at present organized they consist of—(1) the fortresses, for grave offenders, especially the political and revolutionary,—in these the discipline is very severe; (2) the military prisons, in which the discipline is not less strict; (8) the house of detention, the ancient ostrog or stronghold which every town has always had for the safe keeping of prisoners charged with offences,—in these were detained also prisoners awaiting corporal punishment or deporta- tion to a penal colony; (4) the hard-labour prisons, in which were located the labour parties or correctional corps instituted by the emperor Nicholas, organized and disciplined on a military basis ;*~~

~~*XIX.—96*~~

~~*762*~~

~~*(5) the amendment prisons or houses of industry established by the empress Catherine. These are all on the associated system, and fall very far short of accepted ideas on prison management. But an entirely new cellular prison has recently been erected in St Peters- burg, which is a model ofits kind. It is a house of detention for persons awaiting trial, and contains upwards of a hundred cells. 'All the internal arrangements of this prison are exeellent; but it may be doubted whether the Russian Government will embark upon the expenditure necessary to build others of the class. The eman- cipation of the serfs in 1867, followed by the substitution of im- prisonment for corporal punishment, added enormously to the prison population of Russia. A great lucrease of prison aceom- modation became necessary, and a comniission was appointed to frame a new peuitentiary system. This, as now adopted, although not entirely earried out, consists of two parts—punitive lmprison- nent for short sentences, and penal probationary detention as a pre- liminary to banishment toa colony. For the first, central prisons, associated not cellular, are being constructed at various points,*~~

~~*and a regulated system of labour will be introduced following the lines of that in force in other European countries. For the second, at the end of the probationary period banishment, or, as it is styled in official language, enforced colonization, will be the rule. Deportation to Siberia began in 1591. It was principally used for political prisoncrs, insurgents, religious dissenters, and con- spirators. Large numbers of Poles were exiled in 1758 ; others again in 1830, and now, since the Nihilist movement, numbers of these implacable foes to the existing régime are regularly despatched to Siberia, The total number deported varies from 17,000 to 20,000 per annum, but this includes. wives and children who may elect to accompany the exiles, The sentences are of two kinds—(1) the loss of all rights and (2) the loss of particular rights. The first includes degradation, the rupture of the marriage tie, inability to sign legal documents, to hold property, or to give a bond. The exile must wear prison dress, and have his head half-shaved. He may be flogged, and if murdered would not be much missed. After a lengthened period of probation in prison the exile becomes a colonist and may work on his own account. Those sentenced to the loss of particular rights are only compelled to live in Siberia, where they may get their living as they can. Many, however, are condemned to spend a portion of their time in confinement but without hard labour. The exiles are sent from all parts of the empire by rail or river to Ekaterinburg, and thence to Tiumen, whence they are distributed through Siberia. Those deprived of partial rights are generally located in western Siberia. Those deprived of all rights go on to eastern Siberia. The latter go by river generally to Tomsk ; thence they walk to their ultimate rest- ing place, which may be Irkutsk or Yakutsk or Tchita, or the island of Saghalien, and the journey may occupy months. Not long ago a party of convicts was despatched by sea to the last-named destina- tion, embarking at Odessa and travelling through the Suez Canal and by the Pacific Ocean. There are several hundred prisons in Siberia. They are of three kinds:—(1) the efape, which afford temporary lodgings for prisoners on the line of march ; (2) the prisylnie, where the detention is often for several months during the winter or until the ice is broken up ; and (8) the ostrog, the generic Russian name for a prison, which is the place of durance for all exiles not ou their own resources. Few of the large prisons in Siberia were built for the purpose. They are converted buildings—old factories, distilleries, and so forth. 'hey are all upon the associate principle, containing a number of large rooms to*~~

~~*accommodate any number from twenty-five to a hundred.. The great central prison near Irkutsk, called the Alexandrefisky, oue of the most important in Siberia, generally holds from 1600 to 2000 prisoners all under sentence of hard labour, and awaiting transfer to the mines. Dr Lansdell, who visited this prison in 1879, found the prisoners very short of work. Some were engaged in making cigarette papers, others in shoemaking and brickmaking. The prison is a huge stone-built building, very different from the ordinary run of Siberian prisons, which are usually built of logs caulked with moss to keep out the cold. They are surrounded by a high wooden palisade. Each prison has its hospital, chapel, generally a schoolroom, and a few workshops. The prisoncrs themselves are not unkindly treated. At most of the stations there are local committees to watch over the welfare of the prisoners. This is an extension of the Imperial Society of St Petersburg already mentioned. The committees supply books and visit the prisoners. They clothe and educate the prisoners' children, and help their wives to employ- ment. They also augment the prisoners' diet from funds obtained by subscription. The regulation rations of Siberian exiles seem very liberal. The Russian prisoner has nearly twice the amount of solid food that an English prisoner receives, and he is at liberty to add to his diet out of his own means, which the English prisoner a a The prisoners are also supplied with ample clothing if E oe sel none of their own, those sentenced _to deprivation of all g eing obliged to wear convict dress. The discipline of the prisons 1s now in aecordance with European ideas. Prison offences awe punished by relegation to a solitary cell, a certain number of*~~

~~*PRISON DiIsCiPrLAtre*~~

~~*which exist at all the prisons. Diminutions of diet are also inflicted, and an obligation to wear irons if they are not already worn. All exiles wear leg- irous for a certain time. These are riveted on to the ankles, and caught by a chain which is carried suspended to a belt round the waist. The irons are worn for various periods from eighteen months to four and even eight years. Very heinous offenders or those who have escaped frequently are chained to a wheelbarrow, which they are obliged to pull about with them wherever they go. A more severe punishment when confinement and irons fail is birching with a rod, for the knout is now abolished. The rod consists of switches so small that three nay be passed together into the muzzle of*~~

~~amusket. The punishment is described as not more severe than that inflicted at English public schools. There is another flagellator, however, called the plete, a whip of twisted hide, which is still retained at a few of the most distant Siberian prisons and only for the most incorrigible, on whom irons, the birch, and other punishments have had no effect. The eostli- ness of deportation is enormous and the results it obtains doubtful. The slow colonization of this vast territory may follow eventually, but there are already great difficulties in finding employment for the mass of labour in the Government's hands. The mines of gold, silver, and coal are passing into private hands, and there are no other public works. Hence part of the Russian criminals who would have gone to Siberia are detained in the large prisons in Russia, where they are employed in manufactories or in the labours of ordinary mechanics, or any outdoor work such as making bricks, mending roads, and manufacturing salt. Nevertheless recent visit- ors to Russian prisons, whether in Russia proper or in the heart of Siberia, describe the prisoners as generally idle. The principle of progressive stages by which a prisoner can gain a remission of sen- tence or milder treatment prevails throughout. The well-conducted persons can earn wages, and may spend the money in buying an increase to their diet. The bulk of the worst convicts gravitate to the island of Saghalien, where the number in 1879 was about 2600. Half of those were kept in prison, half remained comparatively free. The discipline here is very severe. The diet is said to be scanty, and as the island is barren everything has to be imported. Fish, how- ever, is found in large quantities. There are four large prisons at Dui, the principal post on the island, which are insufiiciently heated in winter and generally overcrowded. The convicts are chiefly employed in raising coal from mines which are let to a company. Very conflicting evidence is current as regards the Siberian prisous. Prince Kropotkine, an exile, speaking with some authority, de- nounces them as hotbeds of vice and cruelty. Dr Lansdell on the other hand, a reputable eyewitness, does not on the whole speak unfavourably of them. He describes them as rough, perhaps; but so are Siberian dwellings. He thinks that as compared with the English convict the Siberian is not badly off. The labour is lighter ; he has more privileges ; friends may see him oftener and bring him food ; and he passes his time neither in the seclusion of a cell nor in unbroken silence, but among his fellows with whom he may lounge, talk, and speak. The Russian convict, however, misses those intellectual, moral, and religious influences which~~

are abun- dantly showered upon the English. There are no prisoners' aid societies in Siberia, and the convict, after release, when suffered to begin life again on his own account, carries with him always the convict stain and is hindered rather than helped to begin life afresh. Dr Lansdell sums up his opinion in these words :—

"Taken at the worst, condemnation tothe mines is not so bad as it seems; and, in the case of peasant exiles willing to work, J cannot but think that many of them have a better chance of doing well in several parts of Siberia than at home in some parts of Russia. There is reason to suppose that reports of tlie ill-treatment of Russian prisoners have been greatly exaggerated by careless, ill-informed, or malicious writers. No doubt some years ago there were good grounds for serious complaint. It is very evident that now the political prisoner, beyond exile, and temporary confinement in the jail, is not ill-used. He is not always subjected to the ordinary discipline of the criminal convict, nor is he obliged to associate with them. A fabulous story has long been current that the worst criminals were buried alive in quicksilver mines, where they were speedily killed by the unhealthy fumes. There are no quicksilver mines in Siberia, and the principal mines, those of Nertchinsk, are now passing out of Government hands. These are mostly of silver, although other minerals and gems are found in the neighbourhood, The hours of labour in the Nertchinsk mines were thirteen, and it was the same at the Kara gold mines. The convicts arrange their hours of work themselycs. No definite amount of mineral was required, so they might work hard or not as they pleased. No doubt the lot of convicts in these mincs was hard. Besides the laxity of discipline, the herding together of the worst characters andthe deprivation of social, intellectual, and religious privileges must have made life a burden to many."

Spain, like Portugal, still lags behind. It is not to the credit of a country in which prison discipline was discussed three centuries ago that now at the close of the 19th its prison system is about the worst in Europe. Till very recently the posts of governors in the jails were sold to the highest bidder, and pur- chasers were suffered to recoup themselves out of the unfortunate wretches committed to their charge. The principal prison in the capital of the kingdom was nothing more than a converted slaughter house where pigs were killed and salted, as its name, the Saladero, implied. This dark, dirty,

~~*noisome den, although generally con- demned, continues to serve even now. Numerous efforts to provide amore suitable prison have been made from time to time. The*~~

~~*PRISO® DISBUVUIPLINE*~~

~~*construction of model prisons was decreed as far back as 1847, but in 1860 nothing had been done, and a new project was brought forward. Again in 1869 a fresh scheme replaced the previous ones, which were still dead letters. Seven more years elapsed, and in 1876 a new law was passed providing for the construction of a new cellular prison in Madrid with cells for a thousand prisoners. This law too hung fire, and the prison is not yet completed. The bulk of the prison population in Spain is still sent to presidios, or convict establishments, where general association both in the prison and at labour is the rule. The principal of these are situated at Cartagena, Valencia, where there are two prisons, Valladolid, Granada, and Burgos. There are also prisons at Alcala, Tarragona, Saragossa, and Santofia. Persons convicted of grave crimes are deported to the Balearic Islands or to the penal settlements in Africa, the principal of which are situated at Ceuta and Melilla. Throughout these establishments there is an utter absence of sanitary regulations; the diet is coarse and meagre , the discipline is brutal ; the authorities are quite callous ; and morality does not exist. The Spanish authorities, however, claim the credit of having abolished corporal punishment in their prisons.*~~

~~*Sweden.—A great impetus was given to prison reform in Sweden by the interest taken in the question by King Oscar I. in 1840. Following special legislation, thirty-eight new cellular prisons were built in the various provinces of the kingdom. These prisons have been used since for all prisoners awaiting trial, those condemned to reclusion and those sentenced to imprisonment with hard labour for two years and under. Persons sentenced to pay fines, but unable to pay, go to the cellular prisons. The isolation is continuous day and night. Besides these cellular there are a number of associated prisons for terms longer than two years and up to life. The labour in the first-named is of the usual kind—tailoring, shoemaking, and some kinds of carpentry. Trade instructors are specially appointed, so as to provide a prisoner on liberation with some employment. In the*~~

~~*associated prisons there is more variety of work: linen and woollen cloths are manufactured, timber split up for matches, granite cnt and dressed for buildings and pavements. The female prisoners weave textile fabrics, and make match boxes. A portion of the earnings is granted to prisoners, which, to a limited extent, may be spent in buying extra food. There is no purely penal labour, nor any regulated system of granting remissions for industry or good conduct. Many aid societies were formed about twenty- five years ago, but throngh want of success or funds their number has dwindled down to two.*~~

~~*Switzerland.—From the complete independence of each canton, each has its own special penal system and places of imprisonment. Hence the systems are various, and are not all equally good. The prisons of Switzerland may be divided into four groups :—(1) those of the cantons of Uri, Schwyz, Unterwalden, and Valais, which are still of a patriarchal character; (2) those of Fribourg, Basel (rural), and Lucerne, which are on the associated plan and un- satisfactory from every point of view; (3) those of the cantons of St Gall, Vaud, Geneva, and Zurich, which have prisons for asso- ciated labour and separation at night, while Soleure, Grisons, Bern, and Schaffhausen are labouring to raise their prisons to this level ; (5) the penitentiaries of Lenzburg, Basel (urban), Neuchatel, and Ticino, which are good modern prisons in which the cellular system is completely applied. The system is one of progression, the pris- oner passes through several stages of isolation, employment in association, and comparative freedom ; but only at Neuchatel is there separation by day as well as night. The general principle is one of collective imprisonment ; but there is an attempt at classifi- cation, according to degrees of morality, in the best prisons. Sen- tences may be either to imprisonment or reclusion with hard labour. The first may be from twenty-four hours to five years ; the second from one year to fifteen, twenty, thirty years, or to life. An ab- breviation of punishment- may under all the cantonal laws be obtained, but such reduction is rarely made according to fixed rules. In most of the cantons prisoners have a share in their own labour. This labour is chiefly industrial, but there is a form of penal labour to be seen where the plan has survived of employing certain pris- oners to sweep the streets, make roads, or dyke the rivers. Such labour is felt to have a bad moral effect, and industrial labour is preferred. The latter is conducted by the administration itself, and not by contractors.*~~

~~*It is thought that the state can introduce a greater variety of employments, and control the prisoner better when at labour than could free employers. Aid societies exist in most of tle cautons; the first was established at St Gall about 1845. Wherever they exist the societies protect prisoners in durance and assist prisoners on release by providing tools and employment with private persons. The only drawback in the Swiss aid societies is the want of organization and uniformity of action.*~~

~~*United States.—There is no uniform prison system in the United States. The variety of jurisdictions following the constant ex- tension of territory and development of communities more or less populous perpetuates changing conditions, and the supreme Goveru- ment has not concerned itself greatly with prison affairs, and has claimed uo supervision or special control. The rule of local self-*~~

~~*_at public expense."*~~

~~*a6*~~

~~*763*~~

~~*government has left each jurisdiction to manage its prison according to its own ideas, and hence the utmost diversity of practice still obtains. While some prisons are as good as need be, others are marked with many defects. There is a wide distinction between the best and the worst. In the country which initiated prison reform, numbers of prisons exist nowadays which fall far below the commonest requirements of a good prison system. Taken broadly, the prisons of the Union may be classed into—(1) State prisons; (2) district prisons ; (3) county prisons ; (4) municipal or city prisons. Each State asa rule has its own State prison, but Pennsylvania and Indiana have two and New York three such prisons. The cellular system, or the rule of continuous separation, to which refer- ence has been made already (see p. 753), was at first followed by several States, but gradually abandoned in favour of the so-called silent system, or that of labour in association under the rule of silence, with cellular separation at night. At the present time there is but one prison, the Eastern Penitentiary of Philadelphia, inanaged on the purely solitary plan. Of the long-sentenced con- victs 96 per cent. are now confined in congregate prisons. There are about forty State prisons in*~~

~~*all. Of the district prisons inter- mediate between the State and the county prisons there are but few. The county prisons are by far the most nwmereus. The county in the United States is the unit of political organization under the State, and, with area and population comparatively limited, is a convenient subdivison for the purposes of the criminal law. Hence it has been asserted that no one knows exactly the number of county prisons in the United States, but it has been computed at upwards of two thousand. 'The city or municipal prisons are also very numerous and constantly increasing. Each and every one, as in the State prisons, is managed locally by local authorities, with the inevitable result of the utmost diversity in practice, and often enough the utmost neglect of the commonest rules of prison dis- cipline. A self-constituted body inspected a couple of hundred of these jails a few years back, and reported that they were mostly defective from a sanitary point of view, insecure, and-so constructed as to compel the promiscuous association of all classes old and young, the guilty and innocent, the novice and the hardened in crime. The sexes even were not invariably separated. Little or no employ- ment was provided for the prisoners, and in few prisons was any effort made to compass religious or intellectual culture. An eye- witness, Dr Wines, reporting of other jails of the same class still more recently, unhesitatingly condemned them. " Ohio, to-day," says the Ohio Board of Charity, " supports base seminaries of crime "In our jail system lingers more barbarism than in all our other State institutions together." Yet there arc a few and conspicuous exceptions to the general verdict of condemna- tion. The discipline and management of the district prisons at Albany, Detroit, Rochester, and Pittsburgh are excellent. The good example is gradually becoming more and more largely imitated. Where good prisons exist it will be found that their admiuistration remains for some length of time in intelligent hands, free from the "' nernicious influence of partisan politics." The chief drawback to improvement is the uncertainty no less than the complexity of the governing bodies. These are apt to be changed capriciously ; and, what is worse, they are needlessly intricate and often far too numer- ous. They act independently, without reference to each other, and they are not too ready to benefit by example and experience. What is wanted is a supreme central authority over all the prisons of a State, if not throughout the Union. Wherever there is the nearest approach to this the results are most satisfactory.*~~

~~*It is not strange that under these conditions discipline should also vary greatly, or, as has been said, " every variety of discipline, lack of discipline, or abuse of discipline is found." Neither the deterrent nor the reformatory agencies are properly or uniformly brought to bear. Prison punishments are still severe ; although flog- ging is nominally abolished, it is said to be still practised in prisons where it is forbidden ; and some more ancient methods such as the yoke, the shower bath, and the iron crown have not yet entirely disappeared. There is, however, often good secular and religious instruction. The dietaries are fuller than on the opposite side of the Atlantic, meat is a more common ingredient, and Indian meal is very largely issued. The financial results obtained are not un- satisfactory: many of the State prisons are now self-supporting, and an examination of the labour returns will prove that much cuter- prise has been displayed in finding employment for the prisoners. There is no purely penal labour, although much of the labour performed is sufficiently severe. There may be no treadwheel or cranks, but convicts in Alabama and Texas have been employed to build railways ; they have raised cotton in Mississippi, and have worked mines in Tennessee and New York, while in many States they are utilized in gardening and agriculture. A great deal of labour has been expended on quarrying and dressing stone for building, or for burning into quicklime ; at Auburn there is a large manufactory of agricultural tools ; Ohio employs saddlers ; Massa- chusetts prisoners make ornamental iron work; in Michigan they tan leather ; and at Dannemora, in northern New York, iron ore is quarried, smelted, forged, and wrought into nails by the prisoners.*~~

~~*764*~~

~~*In general the labour is hired by contractors at a fixed sum per day, which varies from a few cents to as much as a dollar. The chief cause for the present inadequacy of the American prisons, over and above the faults in administration already mentioned, is probably the rapidly increased demand on their accommodation in recent years. This is due partly to the growth of population, partly also to the influx of * coloured" criminals since the emancipation. In the days of slavery the slave was punished summarily by his master, but now he is arraigned and sent to prison. The result has been that the prisons were suddenly crowded before any uew and improved system could be introduced. ; ;*~~

~~*While there are but few agencies for the assistance of discharged prisoners, considerable care is devoted in the United States to the treatment and checking of juvenile crime. Reformatories have existed since 1825, when the first was established on Randall's Island within the limits of the city of New York. Others followed ; but these did not form part of the penal system of the States till 1847, when the State reform school at Westborough was established by law. They soon increased and multiplied, and now between sixteen and twenty are to be found within the principal States. There are also a number of semi-public schools. The average reformatory population is about 15,000. The results are said to be very satisfactory. The percentage of youths reformed and trained into good citizens has been placed as high as 60, 75, even 80 per cent. Parents may in some States contribute to the support of their children in reformatories, but as a rule the inmates are orphans or abandoned children or those whose parents are very poor. The best system for training and caring for juvenile offenders probably is that which obtains in Massachusetts. (A. G.)*~~

~~*PRISREND, Prispren, PrisprAa, PIspRA, PISREN, or PisrA, in Roumelia, the chief town of a sandjak and the seat of a Greek and a Roman Catholic archbishop, in the Turkish vilayet of Kossovo (formerly Monastir), stretches for 2 or 3 miles along the north-western base of the Scardus or Shar-dagh, and is traversed by the rapid waters of the Resna Mitritza, which, issuing from a deep gorge a little above the town, joins the Drin (White or Albanian Drin) a few miles below. To the north-north-west of Prisrend, which lies at a height of 1577 feet above the sea, a great undulating and fertile plain extends for more than 40 miles towards Ipek. In 1865 the Roman Catholic archbishop estimated the total at 50,000 (8000 Moham- medan families, 3000 Greek, and 150 Latin). It is now about 46,000. There is a castle on the buttress of the Scardus, at the foot of which lies the Christian quarter, with a small brick-built ancient-looking Byzantine church. The old cathedral, now a mosque, is also a Byzantine build- ing. Prisrend, doubtfully identified with Tharendus, was at one time the capital of Servia, and the district is still called Old Servia. At present the town owes much of its importance to its manufacture of arms; and it also pro- duces glass, pottery, and saddlery.*~~

~~*PRIVATEER is an armed vessel belonging to a private owner, the subject of a belligerent power, conimissioned by the sovereign of that power. The*~~

~~commission is either a commission of war or of marque and reprisals in time of peace. It was marque in this sense which was granted to aggrieved subjects of the realm of England as early as the statute 4 Hen. V. c. 7. The term "letters of Inarque," however, is now generally applied less strictly to the commission under which a privateer sails in time of war. 'The acceptance of a commission from a belligerent power by a neutral, though not piracy by the law of nations, has frequently been made so by treaty. Accept- ance of such a commission by a British subject is for- bidden by the Foreign Enlistment Act, 1870. A vessel with a commission from each of two powers at war with one another is a pirate by the law of nations. Privateers stand in a position between that of a public ship of war anda merchant vessel. They are not entitled to the full rights which the comity of nations extends to public ships of war ; e.g., by the municipal regulations of most nations they may not carry the flag of a public ship of war. A~~

~~a Instances will be found in Phillimore, Znternational Law, vol, i. pt. iii. ch. xx. ; Twiss, Law of Nations, vol. ii. ch. x.~~

~~PRI—PRI~~

~~capture made by a privateer may either become the pro- perty of the captor or, following the general rule of inter- national law, the property of the state (see Prize). In Great Britain, in order to encourage privateering, the prize taken by a privateer was formerly divided between the owners and the captors, and the rights of the crown were specially excluded in numerous Prize Acts. But now, by the Naval Prize Act, 1864, a prize made by a privateer belongs to the crown in its office of admiralty. By the United States Prize Act of 1864, the whole pro- ceeds of a prize made by a privateer go, unless it is other- wise provided in her commission, to the captors. The sum awarded is divided, in the absence of agreement, equally between the owners and the ship's company.~~

~~Privateering is now a matter of much less importance than it formerly was, owing to the terms of Art. 1 of the Declaration of Paris, April 16, 1856, "Privateering is and remains abolished." The Declaration binds only the powers who are signatories or who afterwards assented, and those only when engaged in war with one another. The United States, Mexico, Uruguay, and Spain have not acceded to it, and thus it would not hold in~~

~~*case of a war be- tween the United States and any other power, whether the latter were bound by the Declaration or not. By the constitution of the United States, Congress has power to grant letters of marque and reprisal. Congress, by an Act of March 8, 1868, authorized the issue of letters of marque by the president, but they were never in fact issued either by the United States or Confederate Government.*~~

~~*In the Franco-Prussian War of 1870, Prussia, in spite of the Declaration of Paris, took a course very little removed from priva- teering in the creation of a volunteer fiect.*~~

~~*PRIVET (Ligustrum), the vernacular name? of a genus of Oleacex. There are several species, all of them shrubs or low trees with evergreen or nearly evergreen opposite entire leaves, and dense cymes of small white tubular four-parted flowers, enclosing two stamens and succeeded by small, globular, usually black berries, each with a single pendulous seed. The best-known species is the common European privet, which makes good hedges in cases where no great powers of resistance to the inroads of cattle, &c., are required. ZL. ovalifolium thrives by the seaside and even in towns, and is thus a valuable all but evergreen shrub. JL. lucidum is taller and handsomer. There are several other species, mostly natives of China and Japan, some of which when attacked by a species of scale-insect (Coccus) yield a waxy substance.*~~

~~*PRIVILEGE, in law, is an immunity or exemption conferred by special grant in derogation of common right. The term is derived from privilegiwm, a law specially passed in favour of or against a particular person. In Roman law the latter sense was the more common; in modern law the word bears only the former sense. Privi- lege in English law is either personal or real,—that is to say, it is granted to a person, as a peer, or to a place, as a university. The most important instances at present existing in England are the privilege of parliament (see PARLIAMENT), the privilege which protects certain com- munications from being regarded as libellous (see LiBen), and certain privileges enjoyed by the clergy and others, by which they are to some extent exempt from public duties, such as serving on juries. Privileged copyholds are those held by the custom of the manor and not by the will of the lord. There are certain debts in England, Scotland, and the*~~

~~United States which are said to be privileged, that is, such debts as the executor may pay before all others—for example, funeral expenses or servants' wages. In English law the term "preferred" rather than "privi- leged" is generally applied to such debts. There are certain deeds and summonses which are privileged in Scotch law, the former because they require less solemnity than ordinary deeds, the latter because the ordinary~~

~~? Another form of the name, primprivet, primprint, or primet, like ligustrum itself, used at one time to be applied to the primrose.~~

~~PRI—P RI~~

~~induciz are shortened in their case (see Watson, Law Dict., s.v. "Privilege").~~

~~In the United States the term privilege is of considerable politi- eal importance. By Art. 1V. § 2 of the constitution, "the citizens of each State shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of citizens in the several States." By Art. XIV. § 1 of the amend- ments to the constitution (enacted July 28, 1868), "no State shall make or enforce any law which shall abridge the privileges or immunities of citizens of the United States." It will be noticed that Art. IV. applies to citizens of the States, Art. XIV. to citizens of the United States. "Thc intention of this clause (Art. IV.) was to confer on the citizens of each State, if one may so say, a general citizenship, and to communicate all the privileges and immunities which the citizens of the same State would have been entitled to under the like circumstances" (Story, Constitw- tion of the United States, § 1806). The clauses have several times been the subject of judicial decision in the supreme court. Their practical effect may be thus illustrated. With regard to Art. 1V., it was held that a State licence tax discriminating against commodities the production of other States was void as abridging the privileges and immunities of the citizens of such other States (Ward v. State of Maryland, 12 Wallace's Keports, 418). With regard to Art. XIV. 1, it was held that its main purpose was to protect from the hostile legislation of the States the privileges and immunities of citizens of the United States, looking more especi- ally to the then recent admission of negroes to political rights. Accordingly it was held that a grant of exclusive right or privilege of maintaining slaughter-houses for twenty-one years, imposing at the same~~

~~*time the duty of providing ample conveniences, was not unconstitutional, as it was only a police regulation for the health of the people (The Slaughter-House Cases, 16 Wallace, 36). The same has been held of a refusal by a State to grant to a woman a licence to practise law (Bradwell v. The State, 16 Wallace, 130), of a State law confining the right of suffrage to males (Minor v. Happersett, 21 Wallace, 162), and of a State law regulating the sale of intoxicating liquors (Bartemeyer v. Iowa, 18 Wallace, 129). Suits to redress the deprivation of privilege secured by the consti- tution of the United States must be brought in a United States court. It isa crime to conspire to prevent the free exercise and enjoyment of any privilege, or to conspire to deprive any person of equal privileges and immunities, or under colour of law to subject any inhabitant of a State or Territory to the deprivation of any privileges or immunities (Revised Statutes of United States, §§*~~

~~*5507, 5510, 5519).*~~

~~*PRIVY COUNCIL. In England the king almost of necessity has been at all times guided by a council. The council, as it existed in the Norman period under the name of curia regis (a branch of the larger commune con- cilium regni), exercised judicial, legislative, and administra- tive functions. It contained the germs of the courts of law and equity, the Houses of Parliament, and the privy council. The Courts of King's Bench and Common Pleas were gradually separated from it and became only courts of first instance, subject to appeal to the king's council. From the time of Edward I. the concilium ordinarium, the ordinary or standing council of the king, superseded the curia regis. It exercised high judicial functions as the ultimate court of appeal, as the adviser of suitors on petition what court to choose for redress, and as the resort of those who failed to obtain justice in the ordinary course. It was also the supreme administrative body, and as such issued ordinances on matters of a local or temporary nature, with not infrequent usurpations at a later period of juris- diction belonging more properly to the common law courts or to parliament. The council "consisted of the chief ininisters, the chancellor, treasurer, lord steward, lord admiral, lord marshall, the keeper of the privy seal, the chamberlain, treasurer, and comptroller of the household, the chancellor of the exchequer, the master of the ward- robe; and of the judges, king's serjeant, and attorney- general,*~~

~~the master of the rolls, and justices in eyre, who at that time were not the same as the judges at West- minster" (Hallam, Middle Ages, vol. iii. p. 205). The growing power of the ordinary council (it does not seem to have been called the privy council until after the reign of Henry VI.) led to many complaints on the part of the Commons, some of which found their expression in statutes. The most worthy of notice is 25 Edw. III. st. 5,¢. 4,~~

~~characterized by Hallam as probably the most extensively beneficial enactment in the whole body of our laws. Among other provisions it prohibited arbitrary imprison- ment and the determination of pleas of freehold before the council. The power of the council expanded or con- tracted according to the vigour of the king. Its authority was finally reduced by the Long Parliament in 1640 by means of 16 Car. I. c. 10. Assumption of jurisdiction over freeholds was still a grievance, for the Act specially declared that the king's council has no jurisdiction over any man's land, goods, or chattels. From the beginning of Edward. III.'s reign the council and the House of Lords were often blended into one assembly, called the magnum concilium or great council. As it met only when summoned by writ and not daily, like the ordinary council, it could scarcely have exerted as much authority as the latter. It is therefore not surprising to find it soon split permanently into its two component parts, each retaining both judicial and legislative authority. The privy council still exercises authority of both kinds, though not as completely as the House of Lords. The political importance of the privy council has almost entirely disappeared since the duties of government have been assumed by the cabinet. Its modern legislative jurisdiction is of a subordinate char- acter. Its position as.a court of appeal from the foreign possessions of the crown is a strictly logical one. It was always the court for redress where no other redress could be obtained. For the sake of convenience this jurisdiction in cases of what is now called equity was exercised by the chancellor, originally the president of the ordinary council when it sat as a court of justice. But in cases for which equity made no provision, as being out of the bounds of the realm, the privy council still exercises to the full one of the most ancient parts of its jurisdiction. Appeals lay from foreign possessions by virtue of the prerogative, but are now generally regulated by statute. The jurisdiction of~~

~~*the HIgh Court of Delegates over ecclesiastical and admiralty cases was transferred to the privy council in 1832. The council lost its probate appeal jurisdiction in 1857, its admiralty jurisdiction in appeals from England in 1875, from Ireland in 1877.*~~

~~*At the present day members of the privy council become so at the will of the crown, but it is understood that persons in certain positions have an ex officio claim to be nominated. The conncil consists of princes of the royal family or of some of the great officers of state, such as the principal members of the Government, the archbishops and the bishop of London, the judges of the HIouse of Lords, the judicial committee, and the court of appeal, diplo- matists of high rank, &. Members of the privy council have the title of "right honourable" and social precedence next after knights ofthe Garter. Ireland has its own privy council. Scotland has had none of its own since 6 Anne c. 40, which provided for one privy council for Great Britain. The modern jurisdiction of the privy council may be divided into two branches, administrative and judicial.*~~

~~*Administrative.—This jurisdiction chiefly depends upon statutory authority, which practically makes of the privy council a subordinate legislature. It is exercised either by the whole council or by committees to which matters are referred by the crown in council. Examples of the latter are the board of trade, the committee of council on education, the local government board (see PuBLIC HEALTH), the universities committee, with temporary powers under the Universities Act, 1877, and the committee of council for the con- sideration of charters of incorporation under the Municipal Corpora- tions Act, 1882. Cases affecting the constitutional rights of the Channel Islands are referred to a committee for the affairs of Jersey and Guernsey. The comunittees report to the crown in council, and their report is adopted and enforced by an order in council, published in the Gazette. Among other Acts conferring administrative powers upon the privy council are the Pharmacy Act, 1852, as amended by 31 & 32 Vict. c. 121, the Medical Act, 1858, the Foreign Enlistment Act, 1870, the Destructive Insects Act, 1877, the Contagious Diseases (Animals) Act, 1878, the Dentists Act, 1878, the Veterinary Surgeons Act, 1881.*~~

~~*Judicial.—Up to 1833 the judicial authority of the privy council was exercised hy judicial committees appointed from time to time for the hearing of appeals referred to them by the crown*~~

~~*age*~~

~~*766*~~

~~*in council. In 1833 the judicial committee of the privy council was established as a permanent court by 3 & 4 Will. IV. c. 41. Under this and later Acts the judicial committee now consists of the lord president, the lord chancellor, and other persous who fill or have filled high judicial offices (all unpaid), of two retired Indian or colonial judges who receive an allowance for attending the sittings of the committee, and of paid members, now two in number, appointed under 84 & 85 Vict. c. 91. The Appellate Jurisdiction Act, 1876, provides for what is in effect the union of the House of Lords and of the privy council in their judicial capacities by the lords of appeal in ordinary gradually becoming judges of both courts. After the death or resignation of the present paid members these two high judicial bodies will be practically combined, and a near approach will be inade to the medieval magnum concilium in an ultimate court of appeal from the whole of the British dominions. = :*~~

~~*In proceedings under the Church Discipline Act archbishops and bishops who are members of the privy council are members of the judicial committee, 3 & 4 Vict. c. 86. In proceedings under the Public Worship Act, 1874, archbishops and bishops attend as assessors according to rules made by order in council, 39 & 40 Viet. c. 59, § 14. The jurisdiction of the judicial committee is either original or appellate. The original jurisdiction is the less important, and consists of ecrtain powers conferred by the Copy- right, Patent, Endowed Schools, and other Acts. The power most frequently exercised is that of extending the term of patents. The appellate jurisdiction is entirely regulated by statute, with the exception of the rarely occurring appeal from orders made by the lord chancellor of Great Britain or of Ireland in exercise of powers conferred by royal sign manual for the custody of idiots and lunatics. Appeals lie fromthe Arches Court of Canterbury, from a vice-admiralty court abroad, and from the Channel Islands, the Isle of Man, India, and the colonies. Appeals are either of right*~~

~~*or by leave. Appeals lie as of right when the value of the matter at issue is of a certain amount (the amount varying according to the appeal rules of the different forcign possessions), and in a few other cases. Appeals lie at the discretion of the judicial committee, on leave being obtained by petition for special leave to appeal. The proceedings in all cases alike, whether original or appellate, are by petition (see PETITION). The petition is addressed to the crown in council in the first instance.*~~

~~*See, in addition to the writers on constitutional history, Sir Harris Nicolas, Proceedings and Ordinances of the Privy Council of England; Dicey, The Privy Cowncil ; Macpherson, Practice of the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council. (J. Wt.)*~~

~~*PRIZE, or Prizz or War, denotes the ship or goods of an enemy, or i transitu to an enemy, captured at sea. Goods captured on land are not prize, but booty of war. To be good prize the capture must be on the high seas or in the territorial waters of one of the belligerents, and must be by an armed vessel duly commissioned by the sovereign of the captor. A capture made in neutral waters is a violation of neutrality, and may be restored at the discretion of the neutral power. Most nations have municipal regulations upon the subject. Thus prize cap- tured in breach of the neutrality of Great Britain may be restored by the High Court of Justice (Admiralty Division) under the powers of the Foreign Enlistment Act, 1870, 33 & 34 Vict. c. 90, § 14. Capture may be actual or constructive. Constructive or joint captors are those who have assisted the actual captors by conveying encourage- ment to them or intimidation to the enemy. All public ships of war within signalling distance are usually held entitled to share in the proceeds of the capture. This Tule is incorporated in the United States code of prize law, the Act of Congress of June 30, 1864. It is not all enemy's property that is good prize. The conflicting interests of neutrals have led to modifications of the general belligerent right of seizing enemy's property wherever found, a right which had become established as part of the general maritime law as early as the Consolato del Mare (see vol. vi. p. 317, and Sra Laws). By the rules laid down in the Consolato neutral vessels or neutral goods were to be restored to the owners without com- pensation for the loss of time and other inconveniences attending capture. This may be said to have been the*~~

~~*general law of the sea down to 1856. At the same time it 1s to be noticed that two doctrines inconsistent with the*~~

~~*PRI-PRI*~~

~~*original rule had met with the sanction of certain nations, viz., (1) the French doctrine of hostile infection, by which neutral property on an enemy's ship or a neutral ship carrying enemy's property was good prize; (2) the Dutch doctrine, by which the character of the ship alone was regarded—free ship made free goods, enemy ship enemy goods (see Twiss, Law of Nations, vol. ii. ch. v.). In 1856 the Declaration of Paris adopted an intermediate system. To this Declaration most nations have acceded (see PRIVATEER). By article 2 of the Declaration, "the — neutral flag covers enemy's goods, with the exception of contraband of war." By article 3, "neutral goods, with the exception of contraband of war, are not liable to capture under an enemy's flag." Contraband of war, speaking generally, includes all articles, such as provisions and munitions of war, likely to add to the military or naval resources of the enemy (see CoNTRABAND). After the capture has been made, the next proceeding is the determination of its legality. It is now an understood rule of international law that the question of prize or no prize must be determined by a qualified prize court (see below). Captors: should send their capture to a conveni- ent port, if possible a port of their own nation or an allied power, for adjudication. They may forfeit their rights by misconduct in this respect. The property in the prize vests in the sovereign, in accordance with the old maxim of law Parta bello cedunt reipublice. This right attaches both in cases of capture and recapture, subject in the latter case to what is called the jus postliminit, that is, the right of the owner of property recaptured from the enemy to have it returned—formerly if the recapture has taken — place before the property had been taken within the enemy's territory (infra presidia), at present if less than twenty-four hours has elapsed between the capture and recapture. The right of the recaptors to salvage on recap- ture is regulated by the municipal law of different nations. By English law one-eighth of the value is the sum usually awarded, but this may be increased to one-fourth under special circumstances. The right does not exist at all if the vessel has been fitted out as a vessel of war by the enemy, 27 & 28 Vict. c. 25, § 40. One-eighth is awarded for recapture from pirates, 13 & 14 Vict. c. 26,§ 5. In the*~~

~~*United States, by the Prize Act of June 30, 1864, salvage on recapture is allowed according to the circum- stances of the case. There is no sum fixed as in England. Although the prize vests in the sovereign, it has been held in England that the captors have an insurable interest in the prize immediately after capture and before condemna- tion on the ground that under the Prize Act the captors have a certain expectation of profit upon the safe arrival of the prize in port,.and that they are liable to condemna- tion in damages and costs if the capture be unjustifiable. By the general maritime law a prize may be released upon ransom; but it has been the general policy of European nations to discountenance ransom as less beneficial to the state than the detention of a prize. Thus an Act of 1782, and subsequent Acts, avoided ransom bills given by British subjects, and subjected a commander giving one to an enemy to penalties, unless in either case the circum- stances were such as to justify the giving or taking of the bill. The Naval Prize Act, 1864, is less strict in its terms. It enacts that the queen in council may from time to time in relation to any war make such orders as are expedient as to contracts for the ransoming of a ship or goods ; contravention of the orders makes the contract void and renders the offender liable to a penalty not exceeding £500, 27 & 28 Vict. c. 25, § 45. By the Naval Discipline Act, 1866, a commanding officer making an unlawful agreenient for ransom is liable to be dismissed from the service, 29 & 30 Vict. c. 109, § 41. The*~~

~~*PwIiZ2ak*~~

~~*United States have never prohibited ransom bills. The rights of the sovereign to prize may be waived, as was formerly done by the crown of Great Britain in the case of privateers (see PRIVATEER).*~~

~~*Many statutes dealing with prize have been enacted at different times in England. The first general Prize Act was 6 Anne c. 12. The Act that now regulates prize is the Naval Prize Act, 1864, already referred to. Various offences in relation to prize are dealt with by the Naval Prize Act and the Naval Discipline Act. Such are false swearing in a prize cause or appeal, taking money, &c., out of a ship before condemnation, ill-using persons on board the prize, &c., or breaking bulk with a view to embezzlement. Prize is subject to the usual customs regulations. The United States Prize Act is the*~~

~~*Act of June 30, 1864, just seven days later in date than the British Prize Act. The two Acts are similar in character, but the United States Act is more full and definite than the British, as it deals with some matters which in Great Britain are left to the discretion of the executive.*~~

~~*Prize Court.—This is a court sitting by the commission of the the sovereign of the captor for the determination of prize causes. A capture does not become good prize until condemnation by a prize court. As a general rule the court must be commissioned by the sovereign, must sit in the country of the captor, and must be in possession of the prize. In the case of allied powers, it is usually agreed (as it was between Great Britain and France in 1854) that the decision shall be made by a court of the country to which the officer in command belongs. A prize court may sit in the territory of an ally, though this is irregular ; but it is a violation of neutrality to constitute a prize court within the limits of a neutral power. A prize may, however, in case of necessity be brought into a neutral port and sold there under the decree of a prize court, subject to objection on the part of the neutral Government. The sentence of a prize court is, where the jurisdiction is well-founded, a judgment in rem and entitled to universal respect. In the British dominions the prize courts are such courts as the crown or parliament invests with authority in prize matters. In practice these are the HIgh Court of Justice (Admiralty Division) and the Vice-Admiiralty Courts abroad. By the Naval Prize Act, 1864, the HIgh 'Court of Admiralty of England (now represented by the Admiralty Division) has jurisdiction asa prize court throughout the British dominions. It is to be noticed that this jurisdiction is entirely derivative ; the court has no original prize jurisdiction as it has original instance jurisdiction. The prize jurisdiction of Scotch courts was vested in the HIgh Court of Admiralty of England by 6 Geo. IV. c. 120, § 57. Art. III. § 2 of the constitution, "The judicial power, shall extend ae all cases of admiralty and maritime jurisdiction") the prize courts are the district courts, the State courts having no jurisdiction. The procedure of a prize court is simple in its character. In Great Britain and the United States standing inter- rogatories are administered to the captors. The case is heard upon the depositions of the witnesses in answer to the interrogatories, and upon the ship's papers, which it is the duty of the captor to forward to a port of 'his country for deposit in the court. The flag is regarded as prima facie evidence of the nationality of a captured vessel. The pleadings are not*~~

~~*technical. A libel is filed, followed by a monition to parties interested. If the cause be not prosecuted, the court will issue a monition to the captors to proceed. A prize court has power to order matters incidental to the cause, such as unlivery and appraisement and sale. It also distributes prize money in some cases (see below). The procedure of prize courts in the British dominions may be regulated by order in council under the powers of the Naval Prize Act, 1864; in the United States it depends upon the Prize Act of June 30, 1864; An appeal lies in England from the Admiralty Division to the Court of Appeal and thence to the House of Lords, from the Vice-Admiralty Courts abroad to the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council. In the United States it lies to the supreme court where the matter in dispute exceeds 2000 dollars, or involves a question of general importance. In addition to prize proper, prize courts have had jurisdiction in some analogous matters conferred on them by statute. Thus a prize court in the British dominions has juris- diction over (1) enemy's property captured in a conjunct expedi- tion of land and naval forces, 2 & 3 Will. IV. c. 53, § 30, or captured on land by a naval or naval and military force acting either alone or with allied forces, 27 & 28 Vict. c. 25, 8§ 34, 35 ; (2) petitions of right where the subject-matter of a petition arises out of the exercise of any belligerent right by the crown, or would be cognizable in a prize court if the same were a matter in dispute between private persons, § 52. Questions of booty of war may be referred to the Admiralty Division as a prize court, 3 & 4 Vict. c. 65, § 22. The United States prize courts have by the Act of 1854 jurisdiction over property captured in an insurrection.!*~~

~~*1 For the procedure of prize courts see Story, On Prize Courts; Phillimore, International Law, vol. iii, | t. xi.; Lushington, Manual of Naval Prize Law.*~~

~~*In the United States (in accordance with |*~~

~~*167*~~

~~*Prize Money.—The term prize money is used in a wider sense than the term prize. It extends toany reward granted by the state for the capture of enemy's property whether by land or sea. (1) The Act consolidating the right to and distribution of army prize money is the Army Prize Act, 1832, 2 & 3 Will. 1V. c. 53. The right and interest of troops to prize money and bounty money is at the discretion of the crown, and is to be distributed in*~~

such propor- tions as the crown may direct. It is to be noticed that capture by troops of an enemy's ship in a road, river, haven, or creek of the enemy gives a right to prize money in this sense, though it is not prize proper, not having been captured at sea by an armed ship. Deserters are uot entitled to prize money. Shares not claimed within six years are forfeited. A list of persons entitled is trans- mitted to Chelsea Hospital, the treasurer of which distributes the money either to such persons or their assignees, or to the regi- mental agent, according to the rules laid down in the Act. Prize money may be assigned subject to certain conditions. In the case of officers the assignment must express the consideration money actually paid for the assignment ; in the case of non-commissioned officers or seamen the assignment is ouly valid where there is no regimental agent. In conjunct expeditions of land and naval forces, the share of the land forces is to be paid to the treasurer of Chelsea Hospital. By 27 & 28 Vict. c. 36, § 3, prize money not exceeding £50 may be paid without probate or letters of administration. By 39 Vict. c. 14, the accounts are to be laid before parliament. In the United States provision was made by several Acts of Congress that officers and soldiers who had served in certain wars should be entitled to warrants for bounty-lands as a reward for their services. (2) For the right to prize money where the captor at sea is nota public ship of war, see PRIVATEER. Where the captor is a public ship of war of Great Britain, the officers and crew have only such interest in the proceeds of prize as the crown may from time to time grant

| them. This interest is subject to forfeiture for misconduct in rela-

tion to the prize, 27 & 28 Vict. c. 25, §§ 36, 55. In the United States, by the Prize Act of 1864, the whole proceeds go to the captor where the prize is of superior or equal force, one-half to the eaptor and one-half to the United States where the prize is of inferior foree. The prize money accruing to the United States forms part of the fund for pensions. Besides a share of the prize, prize bounty is generally given. By the Naval Prize Act, 1864, this is at the rate of £5 for caeh person on board the enemy's ship, if a ship of war, 27 & 28 Vict. c. 25, § 42. By the United States Act of 1864, the rate is 200 dollars if the prize is of superior or equal force, 100 if of inferior foree. The distribution of prize money and prize bounty in Great Britain is regulated by the Naval Agency and Distribution Act, 1864, 27 & 28 Vict. c. 24. The

~~*money is distributed under the direction of the lords of the Admiralty in the proportions speci- fied in a royal proclamation or order in council, 'The proportions are graduated according to rank (see vol. xvii. p. 298). Assign- ment of a share by a petty officer or seaman or a non-commissioned. officer of marines or marine is void unless in accordance with orders in council. All forfeited and unclaimed shares, and a percentage of 5 per ceut. out of the proceeds and grants, are carried to the account of the naval prize cash balance. The Admiralty Division has the sole right of determining disputes as to distribution or investment. In the United States the distribution is regulated by the Act of 1864. The distribution is by the district court; it isa judicial act, not, as in Great Britain, the act of a Government department. The proportions too are fixed by statute—uot left, as in Great Britain, to the discretion of the executive. The command- ing officer of a fleet or squadron has one-twentieth allotted to him, of a division one-fiftieth, a fleet captain one-hundredth, the com- mander of a single vessel one-tenth of the amount awarded to the vessel; the residue share in proportion to their pay. Prize money is paid into the treasury of the United States to be distributed according to the decree of the court. Ransom mouey, salvage, bounty; and proceeds of condemned property are distributable as prize money. Assignments of prize money must be attested by the commanding officer and the paymaster. There are certain cases where money is granted to the officers and crew of vessels making . captures which are not prize in the strict sense of the word. Under this head may be classed the salvage on recapture already men- tioned, besides the cases provided for in the following enactments. By 22 & 28 Car. II. c. 11, § 10, 2 percent. of the value of the ship defeuded may be awarded to those wounded and the representatives of those slain in the defence of a merchant ship against pirates. By the Customs Act, 1876, 39 & 40 Vict. c. 36, §$ 210-216, rewards may be granted to officers of the customs out of the penalties for goods seized. By the Slave Trade Act, 1873, 36 & 37 Vict. c. 88, §§ 11, 12, a bounty of £5 per slave or of £4 per ton is payable to the officers and crew of one of Her Majesty's ships upon capture of aslaveship. Where the capture is not by a ship of war, the Lounty is one-third of the value of the ship seized, and a bounty of £5 for each slave. By an Act of Congress of March 3, 1819, a bounty of 25 dollars is given for each slave captured, and the proceeds of con- demned slave ships are divided between the United States and the captors, half to eacli. (J. Wt.)*~~

~~HE mathematical theory of probability is "a science~~

~~which aims at reducing to calculation, where possible,~~

~~the amount of credence due to propositions or statements,~~

~~or to the occurrence of events, future or past, more especi-~~

~~ally as contingent or dependent upon other propositions or events the probability of which is known. }~~

~~Any statement or (supposed) fact commands a certain amount of credence, varying from zero, which means con- viction of its falsity, to absolute certainty, denoted by unity. An even chance, or the probability of an event which is as likely as not to happen, is represented by the fraction }. It is to be observed that } will be the probability of an event about which we have no knowledge whatever, because if we can see that it is more likely to happen than not, or less likely than not, we must be in possession of some information respecting it. It has been proposed to form a sort of thermometrical scale, to which to refer the strength of the conviction we have in any given case. Thus if the twenty-six letters of the alphabet have been shaken together in a bag, and one letter be drawn, we feel a very feeble expectation that A has been the one taken. If two letters be drawn, we have still very little confidence that A is one of them; if three be drawn, it is somewhat stronger; and so on, till at last, if twenty-six be drawn, we are certain of the event, that is, of A having been taken.~~

~~Probability, which necessarily implies uncertainty, is a consequence of our ignorance. To an omniscient Being there can be none. Why, for instance, if we throw up a shilling, are we uncertain whether it will turn up head or tail? Because the shilling passes, in the interval, through a series of states which our knowledge is unable to predict or to follow. If we knew the exact position and state of motion of the coin as it leaves our hand, the exact value of the final impulse it receives, the laws of its motion as affected by~~

~~*the resistance of the air and gravity, and finally the nature of the ground at the exact spot where it falls, and the laws regulating the collision between the two substances, we could predict as certainly the result of the toss as we can which letter of the alphabet will be drawn after twenty-five have been taken and examined.*~~

~~*The probability, or amount of conviction accorded to any fact or statement, is thus essentially subjective, and varies with the degree of knowledge of the mind to which the fact is presented (it is often indeed also influenced by passion and prejudice, which act powerfully in warping the judgment),—so that, as Laplace observes, it is affected partly by our ignorance partly by our knowledge. Thus, if the question were put, Is lead heavier than silver?*~~ ~~*some persons would think it is, but would not be surprised if they were wrong ; others would say it is lighter ; while to a worker in metals probability would be superseded by certainty. Again, to take Laplace's illustration, there are three urns A, B, C, one of which contains black balls, the other two white balls ; a ball is drawn from the urn C, and we want to know the probability that it shall be black. If we do not know which of the urns contains the black balls, there is only one favourable chance out of three, and the probability is said to be 4. But ifa person knows that the urn A contains white balls, to him the uncertainty is confined to the urns B and C, and therefore the proba- bility of the same event is 4. Finally to one who had found that A and B both contained white balls, the probability is converted into certainty.*~~

~~*_ im common language, an event is usually said to be likely or probable if it is more likely to happen than not,*~~

~~*or when, in mathematical language, its probability exceeds 3; and it is said to be improbable or unlikely when its probability is less than 4. Not that this sense is always adhered to; for, in such a phrase as "It is likely to thunder to-day," we do not mean that is more likely than not, but that in our opinion the chance of thunder is greater than usual; again, "Such a horse is likely to win the Derby," simply means that he has the best chance, though according to the betting that chance may be only 4, Such unsteady and elliptical employment of words has of course to be abandoned and replaced by strict definition, at least mentally, when they are made the subjects of*~~

~~*mathematical analysis. Certuinty, or absolute conviction, also, as generally understood, is different from the mathematical sense of the word certainty. It is very difficult and often impossible, as is pointed out in the celebrated Grammar of Assent, to draw out the grounds on which the human mind in each case yields that con- viction, or assent, which, according to Newman, admits cf no degrees, and either is entire or is not at all! If, when walking on the beach, we find the letters "' Constantinople " traced on the sand, we should feel, not a strong impression, but absolute certainty, that they were characters not drawn at random, but by one acquainted with the word so spelt. Again, we are certain of our own death as a future event; we are certain, too, that Great Britain is an island ; yet in all such cases it would be very difficult, even for a practised intellect, to present in logical form the evidence, which nevertheless has compelled the mind in each instance to concede the point.2 Mathematical certainty, which means that the contrary proposition is inconceivable, is thus different, though not perhaps as regards the force of the mental conviction, from moral or practical certainty. It is questionable whether the former kind of certainty is not entirely hypothetical, and whether it is ever attainable in any of the affairs or events of the real world around us. The truth of no conclusion can rise above that of the premises, of no theorem above that of the data. That two and two make four is an incon- trovertible truth ; but before applying even it to a concrete instance we have to be assured that there were really two in each constituent group; and we can hardly have mathematical certainty of this, as the strange freaks of memory, the tricks of conjurors, &c., have often made apparent.*~~

~~*There is no more remarkable feature in the mathematical theory of probability than the manner in which.it has been found to harmonize with, and justify, the conclusions to which mankind have been led, not by reasoning, but by instinct and experience, both of the individual and of the race. ? At the same time it has corrected, extended, and invested them with a definiteness and precision of which these crude, though sound, appreciations of common sense were till then devoid. Even in cases where the theoretical result appears to differ from the common-sense view, it often happens that the latter may, though perhaps unknown to the mind itself, have taken account of circumstances in the case omitted in the data of the*~~

~~*1 "There is a sort of leap which most men make from a high pro- bability to absolute assurance . . . analogous to the sudden consilience, or springing into one, of the two images seen by binocular vision, when gradually brought within a certain proximity."—Sir J. Herschel, in Hidin. Review, July 1850.*~~

~~*2 Archbishop Whately's jeu d'esprit, Historic Doubts respectiny Napoleon Bonaparte, is a good illustration of the difficulties there may be in proving a conclusion the certainty of which is absolute.*~~

~~*rPEODe wi PIT y*~~

~~*theoretical problem. Thus, it may be that a person accords a lower degree of credence to a fact attested by two or more independent witnesses than theory warrants,—the reason being that he has unconsciously recognized the possibility of collusion, which had not been presented among the data. Again, it appears from the rules for the credibility of testimony that the probability of a fact may be diminished by being attested by a new witness, viz., in the case where his credibility is less than 3. This is certainly at variance with our natural impression, which*~~

~~*is that. our previous conviction of any fact is clearly not. |*~~

~~*weakened, however little it be intensified, by any fresh evidence, however suspicious, as to its truth. But on reflexion we see that it is a practical absurdity to suppose the credibility of any witness less than $—that is, that he speaks falsehood oftener than truth—for all men tell the truth probably nine times out of ten, and only deviate from it when their passions or interests are concerned. Even where his interests are at stake, no man has any preference for a lie, as such, above the truth; so that his testimony to a fact will at worst leave the antecedent probability exactly what it was.*~~

~~*A celebrated instance of the confirmation and comple- tion by theory of the ordinary view is afforded by what is known as James Bernoulli's theorem. If we know the odds in favour of an event to be three to two, as for instance that of drawing a white ball from a bag contain- ing three white and two black, we should certainly judge that if we make five trials we are more likely to draw white three times and black twice than any other*~~

~~combination. very uncertain; instead of three white, we might draw white 0, 1, 2, 4, or 5 times. But if we make say one thousand trials, we should feel confident that, although the numbers of white and black might not be in the proportion of three to two, they would be very nearly in that proportion. And the more the trials are multiplied the more closely would this proportion be found to obtain. This is the principle upon which we are continually judg-~~

~~ing of the possibility of events from what is observed in a.~~

~~certain uumber of cases.! Thus if, out of ten particular~~

~~infants, six are found to live to the age of twenty, we |~~

~~judge, but with a very low amount of conviction, that nearly six-tenths of the whole number born live to twenty. But if, out of 1,000,000 cases, we find that 600,000 live to be twenty, we should feel certain that the same propor-tion would be found to hold almost exactly were it possible to test the whole number of cases, say in England during the 19th century. In fact we may say, considering how seldom we know a priort the probability of any event, that the knowledge we have of such probability in any case is en-~~

~~tirely derived from this principle, viz., that the proportion |~~

~~which holds in a large number of trials will be found to hold in the total number, even when this may be infinite, —the deviation or error being less and less as the trials are multiplied.~~

~~Such no doubt is the verdict of the common sense of mankind, and it is not easy to say upon what considera- tions it is based, if it be not the effect of the unconscious habit which all men acquire of weighing chances and probabilities, in the state of ignorance and uncertainty which human life is, It is now extremely interesting to see the results of the unerring methods of mathematical analysis when applied to the same problem. It isa very~~

~~1 So it is said, "the tree is known by its fruits"; " practice is better than theory"; and the universal sense of mankind judges that the safest test of~~

~~any new invention, system, or institution is to see how it works. So little are we able by a priori speculations to forecast~~

~~the thousand obstacles and disturbing influences which manifest them- selves when any new cause or agent is introduced as a factor in the~~

~~world's affairs.~~

~~Still, however, we should feel that this was |~~

~~769~~

~~difficult one, and James Bernoulli tells us he reflected upon it for twenty years. His methods, extended by De Moivre and Laplace, fully confirm the conclusions of rough common sense; but they have done much more. They enable us to estimate exactly how far we can rely on the proportion of cases in a large number of trials, truly representing the proportion out of the total number—that is, the real probability of the event. Thus he proves that if, as in the case above mentioned, the real probability of an event is 2, the odds are 1000 to 1 that, in 25,550 trials, the event shall occur not more than 15,841 times and not less than 14,819 times,—that is, that the deviation from 15,330, or 2 of the whole, shall not exceed 5 of the whole number of trials.~~

~~The history of the theory of probability, from the celebrated question as to the equitable division of the stakes between two players on their game being inter- rupted, proposed to Pascal by the Chevalier de Méré in 1654, embracing, as it does, contributions from almost all the great names of Europe during the period, down to Laplace and Poisson, is elaborately and admirably given by Mr Todhunter in his //istory of the subject, now a classical work. It was not indeed to be anticipated that a new science which took its rise in games of chance, and which had long to encounter an obloquy, hardly yet extinct, due to the prevailing idea that its only end was to facilitate and encourage the calculations of gamblers, could ever have attained its present status—that its aid should be called for in every department of natural science, both to assist in discovery, which it has repeatedly done (even in pure mathematics), to minimize the unavoid- able errors of observation, and to detect the presence of causes as revealed by~~

~~*observed events. Nor are com- mercial and other practical interests of life less indebted*~~

~~*.to it: 2 wherever the future has to be forecasted, risk to be*~~

~~*provided against, or the true lessons to be deduced from statistics, it corrects for us the rough conjectures of common sense, and decides which course is really, accord- ing to the lights of which we are in possession, the wisest for us to pursue. It is su generis and unique as an application of mathematics, the only one, apparently, lying quite outside the field of physical science. De Moivre has remarked that, 'some of the problems about chance having a great appearance of simplicity, the mind is easily drawn into a belief that their solution may be attained by the mere strength of natural good sense"; and it is with sur- prise we find that they involve in many cases the most subtle and difficult mathematical questions. It has been found to tax to the utmost the resources of analysis and the powers of invention of those who have had to deal with the new cases and combinations which it has pre- sented. Great, however, as are the strictly mathematical difficulties, they cannot be said to be the principal. Especially in the practical applications, to detach the problem from its surroundings in rerum natura, discard- ing what is non-essential, rightly to estimate the extent of our knowledge respecting it, neither tacitly assuming as known what is not known, nor tacitly overlooking some datum, perhaps from its very obviousness, to make sure that events we are taking as independent are not really connected, or probably so,—such are the preliminaries necessary before the question is put in the scientific form to which calculation can be applied, and failing which the*~~

~~*2 Men were surprised to hear that not only births, deaths, and mar- riages, but the decisions of tribunals, the results of popular elections, the influence of punishments in checking crime, the comparative values of medical remedies, the probable limits of error in numerical results in every department of physical inquiry, the detection of causes, physical, social, and moral, nay, even the weight of evidence and the validity of logical argument, might come to be surveyed with the lynx-eyed scrutiny of a dispassionate analysis. —Sir J. Herschel.*~~

~~*result of the mathematician will be but an ignoratio elenchi — a correct answer, but to a different question. ;*~~

~~*From its earliest beginnings, a notable feature in our subject has been the strange and insidious manner 1n which errors creep in—often misleading the most acute minds, as in the case-of —D'Alembert—and the difficulty of detecting them, even when one is assured of their presence by the evident incorrectness of the result. This is probably in many cases occasioned by the poverty of language obliging us to use one term in the same context for different things—thus introducing the fallacy of ambiguous middle; ¢g., the same. word * probability * referring to the same event may sometimes mean its pro- bability before a certain occurrence, sometimes after ; thus the chance of a horse winning the Derby is different after the Two Thousand from what it was before. Again, it may mean the probability of the event according to one source of information, as distinguished from its probability taking everything into account; for instance, an astro- nomer thinks he can notice in a newly-discovered planet a rotation from east to west; the probability that this is the case is of course that of his observations in like cases turning out correct, if we had no other source of informa- tion; but the actual probability is less, because we know that at least the vast majority of the planets and satellites revolve from west to east. It is easy to see that such employment of terms in the same context must prove a fruitful source of fallacies; and yet, without wearisome repetitions, it cannot always be avoided. But, apart from mere logical errors, the main stumbling-block is no doubt the uncertainty as to the limits of our knowledge in each case, or—though this may seem a contradiction in terms — the difficulty of knowing what we do know; and we certainly err as often in forgetting or ignoring what we do know, as in assuming what we do not. It is a not uncommon popular delusion to suppose that if a coin has turned up head, say five times running, or the red has won five times at roulette, the same event is likely to occur a sixth time ; and it arises from overlooking (perhaps from the imagination being struck by the singularity of the occurrence) the a priort knowledge we possess, that the chance at any trial is an even one (supposing all perfectly fair); the mind thus unconsciously regards the event simply as one that has recurred five times,*~~

~~*and therefore judges, correctly, that it is very likely to occur once more. Thus if we are given a bag containing a number of balls, and we proceed to draw them one by one, and the first five drawn are white, the odds are 6 to 1 that the next will be white,—the slight information afforded by the five trials being thus of great importance, and strongly influencing the probabilities of the future, when it is all we have to guide us, but absolutely valueless, and without influence on the future, when we have a priori certain information. The lightest air will move a ship which is adrift, but has simply no effect on one securely moored.*~~

~~*It is not to be supposed that the results arrived at when the calculus of probabilities is applied to most practical questions are anything more than approxi- mations ; but the same may be said of almost all such applications of abstract science. Partly from ignorance of the real state of the case, partly from the extreme intricacy of the calculations requisite if all the conditions which we do or might know are introduced, we are obliged to substitute in fact, for the actual problem, a simpler one approximately representing it. questions, assumptions such as that the centre of gravity of an actual sphere is at its centre, that the friction of the rails on a railway is constant at different spots or at different times, or that in the rolling of a heavy body no depres- sion 1s produced by its weight in the supporting substance,*~~

~~*Thus, in mechanical |*~~

~~*PaR-ore ab wi Tey*~~

~~*are instances of the convenient fictions which simplify the real question, while they prevent us accepting the result as more than something near the truth. So in probability,*~~

~~*the chance of life of an individual is taken from the*~~

~~*general tables (unless reasons to the contrary are very palpable) although, if his past history, his mode of life, the longevity of his family, &c., were duly weighed, the general value ought to be modified in his case ; again, in attempting to estimate the value of the verdict of a jury, whether unanimous or by a majority, each man is supposed to give his honest opinion,—feeling*~~

~~*and prejudice, or pressure from his fellow-jurors, being left out of the account. Again, the value of an expectation to an indi- vidual is taken to be measured by the sum divided by his present fortune, though it is clearly affected by other circumstances, as the number of his family, the nature of his business, &c. Anevent has been found to occur on an average once a year during a long period : it is not difficult to show that the chance of its happening in a particular year is 1~e-}, or 2 to 1 nearly. But, on examining the record, we observe it has never failed to occur during three years running. This fact increases the above chance ; but to introduce it into the calculation at once renders the question a very difficult one, Even in games of chance we are obliged to judge of the relative skill of two players by the result of a few games ; now one may not have been in his usual health, &c., or may have designedly not played his best; when he did win he may have done so by superior play, or rather by good luck ; again, even in so simple a case as pitch and toss, the coin may, in the con- crete, not be quite symmetrical, and the odds of head or tail not quite even.*~~

~~*Not much has been added to our subject since the close of Laplace's career. The history of science records more than one parallel to this abatement of activity. When such a genius has departed, the field of his labours seems exhausted for the time, and little left to be gleaned by his successors. It is to be regretted that so little remains to us of the inner working of such gifted minds, and of the clue by which each of their discoveries was reached. The didactic and synthetic form in which these are pre- sented to the world retains but faint traces of the skilful inductions, the keen and delicate perception of fitness and analogy, and the power of imagination—though such a term may possibly excite a smile when applied to such dry subjects—which have doubtless guided such a master as Laplace or Newton in shaping out each great design—only the minor details of which have remained over, to be supplied by the less cunning hand of commentator and disciple.*~~

~~*We proceed to enumerate the principal divisions of the theory of probability and its applications. Under each we will endeavour to give at least one or two of the more remarkable and suggestive questions which belong to it,—especially such as admit of simplification or improvement in the received solutions; in such an article as the pre- sent we are debarred from*~~

~~attempting even an outline of the whole. We will suppose the general fundamental principles to be already known to the reader, as they are to be now found in several elementary works, such " Todhunter's Algebra, Whitworth's Choice and Chance,~~

~~e~~

~~Many of the most important results are given under the apparently trifling form of the chances in drawing balls from an urn, &c., or seem to relate to games of chance, as dice or cards, but are in reality of far wider application,— this form being adopted as the most definite and lucid manner of presenting the chances of events occurring under circumstances which may be assimilated, more or less closely, to such cases,~~

~~PRQO 8 2th Lt:T ¥ 771~~

~~I. DETERMINATION OF THE PROBABILITIES OF CoMPOUND EVENTS, WHIEN THE PROBABILITIES OF THE SIMPLE EVENTS ON WHICH THIEY DEPEND ARE KNOWN.~~

~~1. Under this head come a very large and diversified range of questions ; a very few of the most important are all that we can give. One great class relates to the fulfilment of given conditions in repeated trials as to the same event, knowing the probability of what will happen in each trial.~~

~~2. Let there be an event which must turn out in one of two ways, W and B(as in drawing a ball from an urn containing white and black balls only) ; let the respective probabilities for each trial be y,¢; sothat p+q=1. Let two trials be made: the four possible cases which may arise are~~

~~WW, WB, BW, BB. The probability of the first is p?, of the second pg, of the third ng, of the fourth g% Thus the probability of a white and a black ball being drawn in an assigned order is pq; but that of a white and a black in any order is 2pq.~~

~~Suppose now 7 trials to be made. The probability of W every time is p"; that of B once and W (m—1) times in an assigned order is p"-1q, but if the order~~

~~*is indifferent it is np”-1q; that of B occurring twice only is p”-°q? if the order is given, but*~~

~~*min 1) jn-292 in any order; and so on. We have then this*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*result :—in the binomial expansion (p+gy”=1 =pr+npr-2q4 Dyn-2q2 +*~~

~~*ig ee ae. See*~~

~~*the terms in their order give the probabilities of the event W happening m times ; of W (n—1) times and B once; of W (n-2) times and B twice; and so on,—the sum of the whole giving 1, that is, certainty.*~~

~~*3. Asan example, let A and B be two players whose respective chances of winning one game are p and q; to find the probability of A winning m games before B wins n games, the play terminat- ing when either of these events has occurred.*~~

~~*The chance of A winning the first m games is py. The chance of his winning in the first m+1 games is mp™-!q.p=mp™q; for he must have won m—1 games out of the first m, and then win the (m+1)th; otherwise we should be including the first case. Again, the chance of A winning in the first m+2 games is, in like*~~

~~*(m <4 1 J sm Panag a Now the*~~

~~*match must be decided at latest by the (m+n —1)th game; for, if A fails to win m games by that time, B must have won 2. Hence the chance of A winning the match is*~~

~~*pr {14mg BOE _m(m+1) Tame hE*~~

~~*Thus, if A’s skill be double that of B, the chance that A wins*~~

~~*‘ ~· 412 Je» an SBE four games before B wins two is 943° That of B winning is 343° If A and B agree to leave off playing before the match is decided, the stakes ought clearly to be divided between them in proportion to their*~~

~~*respective probabilities of winning, as given above, —putting for m and n the numbers of games required to be won, at any given point of the match, by A and B respectively. This was one of the questions proposed to Pascal] by the Chevalier de Méré in the year 1654. 4, In the expansion (1) it may be asked which combination of the events W, B is most likely to occur in the » trials. As the ratio of the 2d term to the 1st is 7 of the 3d to the 2 oe A*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*n—-r+1lq*~~

~~*<=*~~

~~*manner, qg?; and so on.*~~

~~*ee*~~

~~*and of the (r+1)th to the rth*~~

~~*continues to increase the terms will increase. therefore, for the 7th term to be the greatest is*~~

~~*r+1 arhte tt or > (n+1)9;*~~

~~*~, so long as this ratio*~~

~~*The condition,*~~

~~*r*~~

~~*that is, v is the next integer above (x+1)g.*~~

~~*We conclude that if 7 is the next integer below (n+1)q the (r+1)th term is the greatest—that is, it is most likely that the event W occurs" —r times and Br times. If(z+1)q should be an integer (r), B is as likely to occur 7 as r+1 times; and either is more probable than any othernumber. 'Thus, in twelve throws of a die, the ace is more likely to turn np twice than any other number ; while in eleven throws it is as likely to turn up once only as twice.*~~

~~It is important to remark that, if the number of trials » be very large, we may treat qn and pn as whole numbers, and conclude that the event W is more likely to happen pn times and B qn times than in any other proportion.~~

~~5. Among the many questions which relate to the occurrence of~~

~~different combinations in successive trials as to the same event, one is as to the chances for a succession, or run, of the same result several times.~~

~~Let us consider the very simple case—In x throws of a coin, what is the chance that head occurs (at least) twice running ?~~

~~This will be an instance of the aid afforded by the calculus of finite differences in questions on probability. Let w,=the number of cases of r throws of a coin in which head turns up twice running, the whole number of cases being of course 2", Now if we consider the value of tn43, it includes 2%n+42, because the (n+3)th throw may turn up two ways; but it includes also those cases when head turns up in the last two throws, tail in the preceding one, and no run of two heads oecurs in the m preceding ones. The number of these cases is 2"—wy. We have therefore the equation~~

~~tes = 2a Fao Me ee 6 If E be an operator such that Ew, =u,41, equation (2) is (E3 — 2K? + 1)u,= 2" ; or, (E— 1)(E?- E-1)u,=2" ; so that, if we put a, B for the roots of the equation E?- E-1=0, th=2A- Bat +CA" 2.9. 3 2 6 (ee since U,=2" is a particular solution of (2),—A, B, C being three undetermined constants.~~

~~Now in two throws there is one case where head turns up twice, and in three throws there are three cases ; hence we have~~

~~U,=0=2+A+Ba+Cp Uy=1=4+A-+ Ba? +Cp? Uz =38=8+A+4+Ba*+Cp'; and, remembering that a?=a+1, 6?=8+1, we shall easily find from these 5.~~

~~(2).~~

~~A=0,B=5"_, c=;~~

~~a a n+2 _ gn+2~~

~~so that tl ome wl by a wine get OR~~

~~=~~

~~Now ann te p=,~~

~~expanding by the binomial theorem and reducing,~~

~~+2 n+1 +1)n(n—1)(n—2 a fi+S hey ON aa aie | a a. 1.)~~

~~Un = 2" —5+~~

~~'dividing by the total number of cases 2", we have for the proba-~~

~~bility of head turning up at least twice running in » throws~~

~~big ee ~· ? .. (6).~~

~~92nFi Another method of obtaining the same result is to consider the number of cases in which head never occurs twice running ; let an be this number, then 2"— 2, must be the number of cases when head occurs at least twice successively. Consider the value of Unio; if the last or (n+2)th throw be tail, #4, includes all the eases (tn+,) of the »+1 preceding throws which gave no succession of heads ; and if the last be head the last but one must be tail, and these two may be preceded by any one of the wu, favourable cases for the first » throws. Consequently~~

~~Unt2= UntitUn, lf a, 8, as before, are the roots of the quadratie E?- H-1=0, this equation gives~~

~~tig = Ka? BB". Here A and B are easily found from the conditions u,=2, w.=8 ; viz.,~~

~~: a2 B? 5 eel as ae , _n+2 (n+1)n~~

~~whence Un= Sati '1 133 5+ &c. ;~~

~~as in eq. (5). The probability that head never turns up twice running is found by dividing this by 2", the whole number of cases. This probability of~~

~~course becomes smaller and smaller as the number of trials (7) is increased.~~

~~6. Let us consider the chance of a run of three heads or tails during » throws,—that of a run of two heads or tails being~~

~~i evidently bg =1- gai» 98 there are but two cases out of the 2" which are alternately head and tail.~~

~~Let 2, be the number of cases, during 7 throws, which give at least one succession of three heads or three tails. Consider the value of tng; it includes 2uv,+4,, as the last throw may be head or tail ; but, besides these, every case of the first » throws which contains no run of three gives rise to one new case of thez+3 having a run of three ; thus, if the th throw be head, the last four may be HTTT, or THHHH if the nth be tail. HIence~~

~~Unt3= 22n+2 +2”? —Un,~~

~~C72~~

~~the same equation of differences as(2). Its solution is equation (Sp in which, if we determine the constants by the conditions m=0, U,=0, Ug=2, and divide by 2”, we find for the probability of a run of three of either event during 1 trials~~

~~Un 4 Saas unrest… 17)~~

~~aon~~

~~m1 3 5+ Comparing this result with (6) we find that the chanee of a run of two heads in n trials is equal to the chanee of a run of three, of either heads or tails, in n+1 trials, ; ,~~

~~7. If an event may turn out on each trial in a+6 ways, of which a@ are favourable and & unfavourable (thus a card may be drawn from a pack in fifty-two ways, twelve of which give court cards), and if we consider the probability that during 7 trials there shall occur a run of at least p~~

~~*favourable results, it is not difficult to see that (u» denoting the number of ways this may occur In r trials)*~~

~~*Untp+1 = (a+ b)tUnty + ba? { (a +5)" — ttn} '*~~

~~*aS Untp+, includes, besides (a+)tn+p, those cases in which the last p trials are favourable, the one before unfavourable, and the n preceding eontaining no such run as stated. ;*~~

~~*We will not enter on Laplace's solution of this equation, or rather of one equivalent to it, especially as the result is not a simple one (see Todhunter, p. 185). ;*~~

~~*8. Let the probability of an event happening in one trial be p, that of its failmg q; we have seen (art. 4) that, if a large number N of trials be made, the event is most likely to happen pN times and fail gN times. The chance of this oceurring is, however, extremely sinall, though greater than that in favour of any other proportion. We propose now to examine the probability that the proportion of successes shall not deviate from its most probable value by more than a given limit—that is, in fact, to find the probability that in N trials the number of times in which the event happens shall lie between the two limits pN +r.*~~

~~*Let m=pN , n=@N, which are taken to be integers. The proba- bility of the event happening m times is the greatest term T of the expansion (1), viz.,*~~

~~*|N*~~

~~*"fin*~~

~~*yang" A*~~

~~*The caleulation of this would be impracticable when N, m, x are large numbers, but Stirling's theorem gives us*~~

~~*1.2.3… w=attte-2/2n,*~~

~~*very nearly, when 2 is large ; and by substituting in the preceding value of T, and reducing, we easily find*~~

~~il~~

~~(y es 8 . /2mpqN ” Now the terins of the expansion (1) on either side of T are n(n—1)_ p? np, m q m(m—1) 92 ot Gh e atig’ Haris taenery et (O- But if z is much greater than a, &-a=xe7; nearly, so that 142+ ...(s—1 = n(n—1)(n-2).. . (s terms) =n%e— HEE CT) ns ;~~

~~(s+]),~~

~~2m~~

~~also~~

~~(m+1)(m+2)... (s terms) =m Hence the sth term before T in (9) is~~

~~(<) s(s—1) = 1 2 aS m~~

~~s(s+1) NG Ns? m—n Qn © 2m (2) I, or Cana Hae.~~

~~The sth term after T is~~

~~Ns? m—n €~· Imn~· Imn*T.~~

~~Now the probability that the event shall happen anumber of times comprised between m+7r and m—r is the sum of the terms in (9) from the rth term before T to the rth term after T. (N.B., though r may be large, it is supposed small as compared with N, m, or 7.) Now the sth term before T+ the sth term after T= 20-5,~~

~~C x —7 Ne nN since e” +e ~·=2, when z= Sj ss LE » 2mn Hel~~

~~Taking then each~~

~~term before T wi ; ‘ 5 i eco: with the corresponding term after T, and putting~~

~~if a aed 2mn 2qN * (10). we have for the required probability Pr =2(5T + To # 4 Te 2 eBoy pyre)~~

*If we now consider the curve whose equation is —72 y=Te—**

>

PROBRABTLIT ¥

and take a series of its ordinates corresponding to x=0, a, 2a, 3a… . 7a, where a is very small, and if A be its area from x=0 to z=ra, then A _ a (frst + last ordinates) - + sum of intermediate ordinates a

4G JO; "A + last ordinate,

re _2 i 6 Oda + Te a 0

il . or pea ig fy 0 State Jao a/2pqNa 9. We refer to the integral calculus for the methods of com-

puting the celebrated integral /e "dz, and will give here a short table of its values.

Table of the Values of the Integral Ir] ye 1 ee.

(11).

}

*T I T I | 7 I T I 0°00 | 0:00000 | 2 20270 Wl aes 93401 Det 99931 'O01 01128 'a "a2000 I) 1 95229 2°5 99959 02 "02256 |i "4 49839 || 1°5 96611 M548) 99976 "03 "03384 || °5 SOO5O Ge 16 97635 DH 99986 "04 04511 6 "60386 eye 98379 wes 99992 05 05637 " 67780 1°8 98909 2°9 99996 : "06 06762 | °8 7420 We 1G 99979 3°0 -99998 07 07886 || °9 79691 | 2:0 99532 co |1:°00000 08 | °09008 || 1°0 84270 Bell 99702 09 THOUS af mall *88020 || 2:2 99814 ll NG ||) lee 91031 |} 2°3 99886*

If the value of I is 0°5, or 4, r= °4769.

10. The second term in formula (11) expresses the probability that the number of occurrences of the event shall be exactly m+r or m—r, or more correctly the mean of these two pro- babilities. It may be neglected when the

~~number of trials N is : very great and the deviation 7 not a very small number.~~

~~We see from the foregoing table that when~~

~~Tr \/2pqN it becomes practically a certainty that the number of occurrences~~

~~will fall between the limits m-+r. Thus, suppose a shilling is tossed 200 times in succession; here~~

~~If therefore = 30, it may be called~~

~~i~~

~~2pqN 10 a certainty that head will turn up more than 70 and less than 130 times.~~

~~In the same case suppose we wish to find the limits m-+r such that it is an even chance that the number of heads shall fall between them, if the second term of (11) be neglected, we see from the table that~~

~~p= q=i and a=~~

~~it oa ed 48, .°.7=4°8; so that the probability that the number of heads shall fall between 95 and 105 is il 104/r rather more than an even chance. 11. Neglecting the second term of (11), we sce that p, depends solely on the value of ra, or that of oN ; so that, if the number of~~

~~Pso= 52+ e—t= '57 nearly,~~

~~trials N be increased, the value of 7, to give the same probability, tnereases as the square root of N; thus, if in N trials it is practically ' certain (when ra=8) that the number of occurrences lies between PNr, then, if the number of trials be doubled, it will be certain that the occurrences will lie between 2pN+ra/2. In all cases, if N be given, r can be determined, so that there is a probability amounting to certainty that the ratio of the number of occurrences to the whole number of cases shall lie between the limits~~

~~*pie 5 Now if N be increased re 4/N ; so that these limits are C pty ? © being a constant. Hence it is always possible to imerease the number of trials till it becomes a certainty that the proportion of occurrences of the event will differ from p, its probability on a single*~~

~~*trial, by a quantity less than any assignable. This is the celebrated*~~

~~*theorem given by James Bernoulli in the Ars Conjectandt. (See Todhunter's History, p. 71.)*~~

~~*PROBABILITY*~~

~~*12. We will give here a graphical representation (fig. 1), taken from M. Quetelet's Lettres sur la Théorie des Probabilités, of the facilities of the different numbers of successes which may occur in 1000 trials as to any event which is equally likely to happen as not in each trial,—as in 1000 tosses of a coin, or 1000 drawings from an urn containing one white and one black ball, replacing the ball each time,—or again in drawing 1000 balls together from an urn containing a great number of black and white in equal proportion.*~~

~~*As p=q=3, we find from formula (8) that the chance of exactly half the entire number drawn, viz., 500, being white is*~~

~~*tT ok 02523 ;*~~

~~*4/500*~~

~~*and the chance for any number 5004s is found by multiplying 82 f*~~

~~*T by e 500.*~~

~~*If then we take the central ordinate to represent T on any scale, and arrange along the horizontal line AB the different num- bers of white balls which may occur, and erect opposite each number an ordinate representing the probability of that number, we have a graphical diagram of the relative possibilities of all possible proportions of black and white in the result.*~~

~~*We see from it that all values of the number of white balls drawn less than 450, or greater than 550, may be considered impossible, the probabilities for them being excessively small.*~~

~~*500*~~

~~*Fig. 1.*~~

~~*The probability of the number of white balls falling between any two assigned limits, as 490 and 520, is found by measuring the area of the figure comprised between the two ordinates opposite those numbers, and dividing the result by the total area.*~~

~~*490° 480*~~

~~*IJ. PropaBinity of Future EVENTS DEDUCED FROM EXPERIENCE.*~~

~~*13. In our ignorance of the causes which influence future events, the cases are rare in which we know a priori the chance, or "facility," of the occurrence of any given event, as we do, for instance, that of a coin turning up head when tossed. In other cases we have to judge of the chances of it happening from experience alone. We could not say what is the chance that snow will fall in the month of March next from our knowledge of meteorology, but have to go back to the recorded facts. In walking down a certain street at 5 o'clock on three different days, I have twice met a certain individual, and wish to estimate from these data the likelihood of again meeting him under the same circumstances—in ignorance of the real state of things, viz., that 'he lives in that street, and returns from his business at that hour. Such is nearly the position in which we stand as to the probabilities of the future in the majority of cases.*~~

~~*We have to judge then, from certain recorded facts, of the pro- bability of the causes which have occasioned them, and thence to deduce the probabilities of future events occurring under the operation of the same causes. The term " cause" is not here used in its metaphysical sense, but as simply equivalent to 'antecedent state of things."*~~

~~*Let us suppose two urns, A containing two white balls, B con- taining one white and one black ball, and that a person not know- ing which is which has drawn a white ball from one, to find the probability that this is the urn A. This is in fact to find, suppos- ing a great number of such drawings to be made, what proportion of them have come from the urn A. If a great number N of drawings are made indiscriminately from both urns, 4N come from the urn A and are all white, N white come from the um B, and }N black. The drawing actually made is either one of*~~

~~*C73*~~

~~*| the 4N white from A, or of the }N white from B. As it is equally likely to have been any one of these, the chance that it came from A is 4N+#2N, or 2.*~~

~~*Suppose there had been two urns A and three urns B, and a white ball has been drawn from one of the five; as in a great number N of drawings 3N come from A and are white, 3N from Band 4 of them are white, the chance that it came from one of the urns A is*~~

~~*GH (R+EB)=F.*~~

~~*In general suppose an event to have occurred which must have been preceded by one of several causes, and let the antecedent probabilities of the causes be*~~

~~*| a a) ee*~~

~~*and let p, be the probability that when the first canse exists the event will follow, p, the same probability when the second cause exists, and so on, to find, after the event has occurred, the pro- babilities of the several causes or hypotheses.*~~

~~*Let a great number N of trials be made; out of these the number in which the first cause exists is P,N, and out of this number the cases in which the event follows are p,P,N; in like manner the cases in which the second cause exists and the event follows are P2P,N ; andso on. As the event has happened, the actual case is one out of the number*~~

~~(pi P, + poP.psP3 &c.)N,~~

~~and as the number in which the first cause was present is p,P,N the a posteriori pro- bability of that cause is~~

~~= PyPy~~

~~PP + PoPyt+pzP3+&c. * So likewise for the other causes,—the sum of these a posteriori probabilities being~~

~~Mk Wot Wet sw co =~~

~~Supposing the event to have occurred as above, we now see how the probability as to the future, viz., whether the event will happen or fail in a fresh trial, is affected by it. If the first cause exists, the chance that it will happen is y,; hence the chance of its happening from the first cause is p,r,; so likewise for the second, third, &c. Hence the probability of succeeding on a second trial is~~

~~Ty 2).~~

~~Py™ + PyT. + Pg™3 + (18). 14. To give a simple example: suppose an~~

~~= ai = urn to contain three balls which are white or black; one is drawn and found to be white. It is replaced in the urn and a fresh drawing made ; find~~

~~the chance that the ball drawn is white. There are three hypo- theses, which are taken to be equally probable a priori, viz., the urn contains three white, two white, or one white,—-that of none white being now impossible. The probability after the event of the first is by (12)~~

~~=SB= B+33+54 °° that of the second is 4, that of the third 4.~~

~~Hence the chance of the new drawing giving a white ball is~~

~~$+$-3+43=$.~~

~~15. The calculations required in the application of formulas (12) and (13) are often tedious, and such questions may often be solved in a simpler manner. Let us consider the following :—~~

~~An urn contains 7 black or white balls. A ball is drawn and replaced ; if this has been done 7 times, and in every case a white ball has appeared, to find the chance that the (r + 1)th drawing will give a white ball.~~

~~If s drawings are made successively from an urn containing 2 balls, always replacing the ball drawn, the number of different ways this may be done is clearly n'.~~

~~If there be » + 1 such urns, one with 0 white balls, one with 1 white, one with 2 white, &c., the last with » white, the whole number of ways in which 7 drawings can be made from any one of them is (n + 1)n".~~

~~Now the number of ways in which r drawings, all white, can be made from the first is 0, from the second 1, from the third 2", from the fourth 37, and so on; so that the whole number of ways in which r drawings of a white ball can be made from the » + 1 urns is~~

~~ree is ait HIence the chance that if r drawings are made from an urn containing n black or white balls all shall be white is 1°4 + 274 + -3" + 2… mr (1 + 1)n7~~ ,

~~774~~

~~for all we know of the contents of such an urn is that they are | equally likely to be those of any one of the n + 1 urns above.~~

~~If now a great number N of trials of r drawings be made from such urns, the number of eases where all are white isp-N. Ifr + 1 drawings are made, the number of eases where all are white 1s prtiN ; that is, out of the prN cases where the first r drawings are white there are ,4,N where the (7 + 1)th is also white ; so that the probability sought for in the question is~~

~~OOO 0 euce © ies aes ee 1 a ee oe~~

~~16. Let us consider the same question when the ball is not replaced. First suppose the 7 balls arranged in a row from A to Bas below, the white on the left, the black on the right, the arrow marking the point of separation, which point is unknown (as it would be to a blind man), and is equally likely to be in any of its n+1 possible positions.~~

~~ntti~~

~~A ik 2 B oo0o0o0o0o0ogOoOo Oo.~~

~~Now if two balls, 1 and 2, are selected at random, the chanee that both are white is the chance of the arrow falling in the divi- sion 2B of the row. But this chanee is the same as that of a third ball 3 (different from 1 and 2), chosen at random, falling in 2B,— which chance is 4, beeause it is equally probable that 1, 2, or 3 shall be the last in order. It is easy to see that these chances are the same if we reflect that, the ball 3 being equally likely to fall in Al, 12, or 2B, the number of possible positions for the arrow in each division always exceeds by 1 the number of positions for 3; therefore as 8 is equally likely to fall in any of the three divi- sions, so is the arrow.~~

~~The chanee that two balls drawn at random shall both be white is thus 4; in the same way that for three balls is 3, and so on. Hence the chanee that r balls drawn shall all be white is~~

~~I Poe r+ 1 ? the same chance for 7+1 balls is Pr +1> r+2 > thus, as in a large number N of trials the number of cases where the first 7 drawn are white is p,N, and the number where the first r+1 are white is p,.;,N, we have the result :—~~

~~If r balls are drawn and all prove to be white, the chance that~~

~~the next drawn shall also be white is~~

~~woth ttl De tet 2~~

~~This result is thus independent of n, the whole number of balls. This result applies to repeated trials as to any event, provided we have really no a priori knowledge as to the chanee of suecess or failure on one trial, so that~~

~~all values for this chanee are equally likely before the trial or trials. 'Thus, if we see a stranger hit a mark four times running, the chance he does so again is 3; or, ifa person, knowing nothing of the water where he is fishing, draws up a fish each time in four easts of his line, the same is the chanee of his succeeding a fifth time.?~~

~~In eases where we know, or rather think we know, the facility |~~

~~as to a single trial, if the result of a number of trials gives a large differenee in the proportion of suceesses to failures from what we should anticipate, this will afford an appreciable presumption that our assuniption as to the facility' was erroneous, as indeed eommon sense indicates. Ifa eoin turns up head twenty times running, we should say the two faees are probably not alike, or that it was not thrown fairly. We shall see later on, when we eome to treat of the combination of separate probabilities as to the same event, the method of dealing with such eases (see art. 39).~~

~~We will give another example which may be easily solved by means of (12), or by the simpler proeess below.~~

~~There are 7m horses in a race, about which I haye no knowledge exeept that one of the horses A is black ; as to the result of the race I have only the information that a blaek horse has eertainly won: to find the chanee that this was A—supposing the propor- tion of black among raechorses in general to be p; 1.¢., the pro- bability that any given horse is black is p. ie~~

~~Suppose a large number N of trials made as to such a case. A~~

~~wins in a of these. Another horse B wins in Iy, ont of these 7"~~

~~1It may be asked why the above reasonin 3 . g does not apply to the ease of oe chance of a coin which hag turned up head 7 times dung so onee more. = Bsa ig is that the anteeedent probabilities of the different hypotheses are ey equal. Thus, let a shilling have turned up head once; to find the chanee : rip Nae a second time. In formula (12) three hypotheses may be made as — { aa :—throw 1° two heads, 2° a head and tail, 3° two tails; but the proba- a poh A pepe om ie eaeeee * 4, 4; rps by (12) the probability of the oe G+ }~~

~~-4)=}; that of the second is also }; the probability of succeeding on a cy trial is i tia a~~

~~FRORABIL IPT~~

~~B is black in Np. Likewise for C; andsoon. Ifence the actual~~

~~| ease which has oecurred is one out of the number~~

~~1 n—1 and, as of these the eases in which A wins are "N, the required~~

~~ehance that A has won is~~

~~1+(a-1)p-~~

~~17. We now proceed to consider the important theorem of Bayes (see Todhunter, p. 294; Laplace, Théorie Analytique des Prob., chap. 6), the object of which is to deduce from the experience of a given number of trials, as to an event which must happen or fail on each trial, the information thus afforded as to the real facility of the event in any one trial, which facility is identieal with the proportion of suceesses out of an infinite number of trials, were it possible to make them.~~

~~Thus we find in the Carlisle Table of Mortality that of 5642 persons aged thirty 1245 died before reaching fifty ; it beeomes then a question how far we ean rely on the real facility of the event, that is, the proportion of mankind aged thirty who die before fifty not differing from the ratio 324$ by more than given limits of excess or defect. Again, it may be asked, if 5642 (or any other number of) fresh trials be made, what is the probability that the number of deaths shall not differ from 1245 by more than a given deviation ?~~

~~The question is equivalent to the following :—An urn contains a very great number of black and white balls, the proportion of each being unknown ; if, on drawing m+ balls, m are found white and a black, to find the probability that the proportion of the numbers in the urn of each eolour lies between given limits.~~

~~The question will not be altered if we suppose all the balls ranged in a line AB (fig. 2), the white ones on the left, the black on the right, the point Vv X where they meet being unknown and all positions for it in AB being a priort equally probable. Then, m + n points having Xx been ehosen at random : in AB, mare found to Fig. 2. fall on AX, non XB. That is, all we know of X is that it is the (m + 1)th in order beginning from A of m + n + 1 points chosen at random in AB. If we put AB=1, AX=z, the number of eases when the point X falls on the element dz, is measured by~~

~~|m + n fae ia" —x)"dx ,~~

~~K B~~

~~since for a specified set of m points, out of the m + n, falling on AX, the measure would be x(1—2)*dz, and the number of such [m + n |m |n* ing this differential from 1 to 0; and the number in which X falls between given distances a, 6 from A is found by integrating from Btoa. Hence the probability that the ratio of the white balls in the urn to the whole number lies between any two given limits a, B is~~

~~Pa Pom(1— ayn ' = ee ne, ee~~

~~i m(] — nm fw eae~~

~~The curve of frequency for the point X after the event—that is, the ordinate of which at any point of AB is proportional to the fre- queney or density of the positions of X in the immediate vicinity of that point—is~~

~~sets is Now the whole number of eases is given by integrat-~~

~~y=am(1— 2)" 5 the maximum ordinate KV occurs at a point K, dividing AB in the ratio m : n,—the ratio of the total numbers of white and black balls being thus more likely to be that of the numbers of each aetually drawn than any other.~~

~~Let us suppose, for instanee, that three white and two blaek have been drawn ; to find the chance that the proportion of white balls is between 2~~

~~and 4 of the whole; that is, that it differs by less than + + from 2, its most natural value.~~

~~4~~

~~, *¢3(1 — x)*da P= aS i ee ee f 23(1 — x)*da at a 18. An event has happened m times and failed » times in m + n~~

~~trials. To find the probability that in + g further trials it shall happen p times and fail g times,—that is, that, p + q more points~~

~~ERO@OMASBIUMIET Y~~

~~being taken at random in AB, p shall fall in AX and q in XB. The whole number of cases is measured by~~

~~«3 [m + n 7? : jm + n = ” (AB)pt4 x(1 — 2) ae xm(1—a)“dx. A Peet ele Sl)~~

~~[m [un J~~

~~The number of favourable cases, when any particular set of p points, out of the » + ¢q additional trials, falls in AX, is measured~~

~~by ’~~

~~| m + ae (a) tides~~

~~[mn J,~~

~~because, the number of cases as to the m + points being, when X falls on the element dz,~~

~~eer~~

~~fei each of these affords ~ ?(1 — x)2 cases where p new points fall on AX, and gon XB.~~

~~Now, the number of different sets of p points being~~

~~the required probability is~~

~~1~~

~~m+ — p\n+4/7: Eo P(1 —a)” +4dx~~

~~I (15); x™(1 —x)“dx~~

~~or, by means of the known janie of these definite integrals, [peed imitate | matettigge litera~~

~~Ip la’ |m|2 °|m+n+pt+qt1-~~

~~For instance, the chance that in one more trial the event shall~~

~~(16).~~

~~nt This is easy to verify, as the line AB has been divided into m+n+2 sections by the m++1 points taken on it (including X). Now if one more trial is made, ¢.¢., one more point taken at random, it is equally likely to fall in any section; and m-+1 sections are favourable. A~~

~~19. When the number of trials m+ in art. 17 is large, the pro- bability is considerable that the facility of the event on a single~~

~~m+n more than a very small deviation. To make this apparent, we shall have to modify the formula (14), which gives for the chance that this faeility lies between the limits a and 8 (by substi- tuting for the denominator its known value),~~

~~happen is~~

~~trial will not differ from its most natural value, viz.,~~

~~|jm+n+1 78 ‘ ” or m1 — 7), p mn, 71 — aye (17) To find now the probability that the facility lies between the Pe m me se limits = cae 5, and OS emia 8, where 6 is small. Put for m A me, and (17) becomes~~

~~|m+n+~~

~~5~~

~~if in Si a — s \mt + n~~

~~|an | %~~

~~m n m + n~~

~~Now if # is small, and we put w=(@ + 2)”,~~

~~- wv) de 5~~

~~logw=m] ape gu=m log a a oe~~

~~mx mx? rs m ————) Ua “Cra Daz~~

~~correct as far as the square of ~· Hence the two factors under the~~

~~sign of integration become~~

~~mm (m + n)? nn (m + n o. maa ee a SAE ee 9 (m + nym° 2m 7, and Geen’ oe~~

~~so that § m + nu + 1 mn” Coe = ae — a |m [7 rae Qmn ~· dx (18).~~

~~Now, since by Stirling’s theorem |m=mv”t4e-”,/2z, the constant coefficient here becomes (m + n + 1)(m + nyrtrtte-m-n,/2e mim” (m + nyt mn, e-™-“2arn/mn (m + nynt” /2mne taking m + n + 1=m- + n. Now if we substitute in (18)~~

~~%~~

~~A/2mn~~

~~i ee~~

~~= ioe. et):~~

~~, rather infinitesimal, strictly speaking.~~

~~C75~~

~~z= where A gan) (20), A/2mn~~

~~2 ; 2~~

~~or finally resp Cat END).~~

~~for the approximate value of the probability that the real facility "£8 m+n Thus, if out of 10,000 trials, the event has happened 5000 times, the probability that, out of an infinite number, the number of successes shall lie between 4-545, or between $24 and °,, of the whole, will be~~

~~of the event hes between the limits~~

~~p= 678 =2 nearly,~~

~~6~~

~~for we find from (20) A "TT -aop= 7 nearly; and, referring to the table in art. 9, we find the above value for the integral (21).~~

~~We must refer to the sixth chapter of Laplace for the investigation of how far the number of successes in a given number of fresh trials may be expected to deviate from the natural proportion, viz., that of the observed cases—as also for several closely allied questions, with important applications to statistics.~~

~~III. On EXPeEcTATION.~~

~~20. The value of a given chance of obtaining a given sum of money is the chance multiplied by that sum ; forin a great number of trials this would give the sum actually realized. The same may be said as to loss. Thus if it is 2 to 1 that a horse will win a race, it is considered a fair wager to lay £10~~

~~to £20 on the result; for the value of the expected gain is % of 10, and that of the expected loss § of 20, which are equal. Thus, if the probabilities for aud against an event are p, g, and I arrange in any way to gain a sum a if it happens and lose a sum 0 if it fails, then if ya=qb I shall neither gain nor lose in the long run; but if the ratio a@: b be less than this, my expectation of loss exceeds that of gain; or, in other words, I must lose in the long run.~~

~~The above definition is what is called the mathematical expecta- tion ; but it clearly is not a proper measure of the advantage or loss to the individual ; for a poor man would undoubtedly prefer £500 down to the chance of £1000 if a certain coin turns up head. The importance of asum of nioney to an individual, or its moral value, as it has been called, depends on many circumstances which it is impossible to take into account; but, roughly and generally, there is no doubt that Daniel Bernoulli's hypothesis, viz., that this importance is measured by the sum divided by the fortune of the individual \ —is a true and natural one. Thus, generally speaking, £5 is the same to a man with £1000 as £50 to one with £10,000; and it may be observed that this principle is very generally acted on, in taxation, &c.~~

~~21. To estimate, according to this hypothesis, the advantage or moral value of his whole fortune to the individual, or his moral fortune, as Laplace calls it, in contradistinetion to his physical fortune, let x=his physical fortune, y=his moral fortune, then, if the former reeeive an increment dx, we have, from Daniel Ber- noulli's principle,~~

~~Cie dy =k— - 3~~

~~.Y=k logs : (22), k, h being two constants. & and y are always positive, anda>h; for every man must possess some fortune, orits equivalent, in order to live.~~

~~22. To estimate now the value of a moral expectation. Suppose a person whose fortune is @ to have the chance p of obtaining a sum a,'q of obtaining f, 7 of obtaining y, &c., and let~~

~~(DSEGHIEPSE oh 5 lly~~

~~only one of the events being possible. Now his moral expectation from the first chance—that is, the increment of his moral fortune into the chance—is~~

~~ph) log“** — log =pk log(a+a)-pkloga.~~

~~Hence his whole moral expectation is~~

~~E=kp log (a+a)+kqlog (a+ B)+krlog(at+y)+... —kloga;~~

~~1 This rule must be understood to hold only when the sum is very small, or It would lead to absurdities if it were used for large inerements (though Buffon has done so; see Todhunter, p. 345), Thus, to 2 man possessing £100, it is of the same importanee to reeeive a gift of~~

~~; £100 as two separate gifts of £50; but this rule would give as the measure of~~

~~the importanee of the first }§8—=1; while in the other ease, it would give ,§2,+ Yis=%. The real measure of the importanee of an increment when not small is a matter for caleulation, as shown in the text.~~

~~2 It is important to remark that we should be wrong in thus adding the expeetations if the events were not mutually exclusive. For the mathematical expectations it is not so.~~

~~776~~

~~and, if Y stands for his moral fortune including this expectation, that is, & log < +E, we have~~

~~Y=kplog(ata)+kg g(a+B)+..- klogh. (23). Let X be the physical fortune corresponding to this moral one, by (22) Y=klog X—k log h. Hence X= (a+a)r(at+p)(aty)”..— (24); and X—a will be the actual or physical increase of fortune which is of the same value to him as his expectation, and which he may reasonably accept in lieu of it. Rk: The mathematical value of the same expectation 1s patqBtryt+... .- (25). 23. Several results follow from (24). ‘Thus, if the sums a, B, . . are very sinall, it is easy to see that the moral expectation coincides with the mathematieal, for ee i, eee. _ on 2. 2 \s~~

~~X=a (1+ 2yO+8)... a (1tpt+cb+.... .. A=a+patqBt+ ... 24. We may show also that it is disadvantageous to play at even a fair game of chance (unless the stakes are very small, in which case the last article applies). Thus, suppose a nan whose fortune is a plays at a game where his chance of winning a sum a is p, and his chance of losing asum Bisg=1—p. If the game is fair, pa=qB. Now by (24) the physieal fortune which is equivalent to his prospeets after the game is X=(a-+a)P(a — B), Ee. ites X=(a+a)*tha— pet , Now the geometrical mean of r quantities is less than the arith- metical,! so that if there are B quantities a+a, aud a quantities a&— B,~~

~~or~~

~~1 :~~

~~B a)otB ~3(a+a)+a(a-— 8B)) (a+ a) (a py = ae ; or Mea, so that he must expect morally to lose by the game.~~

~~25. The advantage of insurance against risks may be seen by the following instance. A merehant, whose fortune is represeuted by 1, will realize a sum ¢ if a eertain vessel arrives safely. Let the probability of this be p To make up exactly for the risk run by the insuranee company, he should pay them a sum~~

~~(1-p)e. If he docs, his moral fortune Beles by (22), l+pe .~~

~~k log ——— :~~

~~while, if he does not insure, it will be (23).~~

~~kp log e~~

~~Now the first of these exceeds the second, so that he gains by | in | thus :—~~

~~insuring on these terms ; because~~

~~log(1+pe) >p log (1+e),~~

~~1~~

~~that is (L+pe)? >1+e;~~

~~for, putti =-——~~

~~or, putting p=—— = m(1+e)+n\mtn (m+n) eo (be)~~

~~because (see note art. 24), if m (1+¢)+mis divided into m+n equal parts, their product is greater than that of m parts each equal to 1+e and m parts each equal to 1. The merchant will still gain by paying, over and above what eovers the risk of the company, a sum a, at most, which satisfies log (1-a+pe)=plog(1+e); *, a=1+pe-—(1+e).~~

~~By paying any sum not exceeding this value, hc still gains, while~~

~~1 A very simple proof of this principe is as follows :—let aa e ; :—lefi a number N be divided into r parts a, b, c, &c.; if any two of these, as a, 6, are unequal, since~~

~~a+b\2 (‘>) > ab, it follows that the product abed .. . is increased by substituting and b, HIence as long as any two are unequal we can divide~~

~~to obtain a greater product; product is greatest, or~~

~~a+b a+b ce a~~

~~N differently so as and therefore when the parts are all equal the~~

~~(a abc…~~

†

~~rae ota BI Pee~~

~~the insurance office also makes a profit, which is really a certainty when it has a large business ; so that, as Laplace remarks, this example explains how such an office renders a real service to the public, while making a profit for itself. In this it differs from a gambling establishment, in which ease the public must lose, in any sense of the term.~~

~~It may be shown that it is better to expose one's fortune in separate sums to risks independent of each other than to expose the whole to the same danger.? Suppose a merchant, having a for- tune @, has besides a sum e which he must receive if a ship arrives in safety. By (24) the value in money of his present fortune is~~

~~X=(a+e)Pat, where p= chance of the ship arriving, and g=1-p.~~

~~Now suppose he risks the same sum in two equal portions, in two ships. We cannot apply (28), as the events are not mutually exclusive ; but we see that, if both ships arrive, the chance of this being py", he realizes the whole sum «; if one only arrives, the chance being 2pq, he receives $e ; if both are lost, the chance being gq', he loses all. Thus (24) he is now worth a sum~~

~~X' = (a-+e)P"(a + $e)? aad? Now this sum is greater than the former ; for (a+e)??—-P, (a+he)?Pt. a?—%>1,~~

~~that is, (a+e)~·?Ua+ 4e)Pla-Pe > 1 ; (a+4e) for ae a il~~

~~as is obviously true. Now suppose he risks the sum e in ¢hree separate ventures. fortune will be~~

~~X"=(ate)". (a + Ze)P"2, (a + Le) PVa® ; and we have to show that this is worth more than when there were~~

~~His~~

~~two. If we put a outside each bracket, and put a= 3 we have to prove (1+33)P9(1 + 28)87@, (1 + 8)8P@? >(14+.38)P2, (1+4+38)°P2 ; (14+38)??—-P, (1 428)8?%1 4 8)?2? > (1+88)°2 ; or, since p?~· p= — pq, (1+33)—?(1 + 25)9P(1 +8)°2 >(1 + 38),~~

~~or~~

~~25)3~~

~~ee roe now (1+28)?< (1+ 8)3(1+38);~~

~~hence the fraction in the brackets is always less than its yth power as p<1; and we can now show that~~

~~(L2aF 3 2 ae : aL 3 _ (Tess sept?) oe 0 that is, (14+ 28)? >(1+35)(1+ $8), or 1463+ 1252+ 853 >1+65 + 4232 + 2733.~~

~~Laplace shows (ch. x.) that the gain continues to inerease by subdivision of the risk ; it eould no doubt be shown by ordinary algebra. He shows further that the moral advantage tends to become equal to the mathematical. 'This may be done more easily~~

~~The expression is, when e is divided into r equal parts,~~

~~eal -292 d~~

~~. Z rpt-lg X=(a+6"(ate-£) (a+~~

~~and we have to find the limit towards which this tends as 7 becomes infinitely great. Put z=a+e;~~

~~rpr-lq r(r—1) 7-2 92 rg' — 1p qr X=2"(2-5) (=-2£) 2 a ; "(2-(r-0)5) (<-«) ;~~

~~Now in the binomial expansion~~

~~y—-1. r(r—1) v2 2 a ae p a.~~

~~the greatest term is the (gr+1)th, viz., Bilge ||) ee (7p +1) rp rq = 12°3…7 " qT'~~

~~The faetor in X corresponding to this is~~

~~/ e\T (2 = gs) if we put U=z-ge. : Let us now express the binomial series before and after T thus : l=... +7,+T,4+7T,4+T+§+4+6+..~~

~~2e~~

~~eS = 2 Via~~

~~l=p"+rp~~

~~U~~

~~?~~

~~2 The familiar expression not to " put all one's eggs in the same basket " shows us how general common sense has recognized this principle.~~

~~PE ODteLetiL rT ¥~~

~~and we have~~

~~ae (u+28)"(U4 = ou — £\M(u-28)", 7 7 r r ,~~

~~The factors towards the beginning and end may be all taken as 1, because the terins of the binomial increase rapidly in value from either end when r= o, and we shall have the true limit for X by taking an indefinitely great number of factors on either side of U, which number, however, may be infinitely less than r.~~

~~As the sth factors before and after U may be expressed thus (s being always very small compared to 7)—~~

~~th e \ts (ueia)" (uvva)'*~~

~~and as… T,+T,+T+¢,+é,... =1, we have~~

~~€ x-Uert 56 Di gd th pins 5)~~

~~Now we have seen in art. 8 that~~

~~See ae EE~~

~~T,=Te Qpqr* 2pgr* , t= Te 2pgr 2pqr® ae Heuce T,—ts=Te—apgr oa ag s2~~

~~Hence the exponent of ¢ above becomes~~

~~uf Pisa rU° pg i~~

~~Ss, 52 s?~~

~~0 7° TF~~

~~s, being the extreme limit for s.~~

~~If we put x =~~

~~a/r?~~

~~tlhe above sum is~~

~~$1~~

~~1 2 5) = rt o10)+0(=)+9(G)+ is o(3)an [p(a)dex . Now it is easy to prove that oo) ee XZ °c K dz is finite;~~

~~and much more is it so when the superior limit is finite. Hence the exponent of ¢ becomes~~

~~x2 and x°¢—an9=9(2),~~

~~eta, go Oe ee) TU pq BR U-" pg ae where K is finite; so that the exponent becomes infinitesimal when 7=00, The limit therefore towards which X tends is X=U=z-qe=at+pe, that is, the mathematical value of the fortune. The very important applications of probability to annuities and insurance are to be found in the articles on those subjects, to which therefore we refer the reader.~~

~~IV. PROBABILITY OF TESTIMONY.~~

~~26. We have here to treat of the probability of events attested by several witnesses of known credibility, or which have several different probabilities in their favour, derived from different inde- pendent sources of information of any kind, of known values.!~~

~~A witness may fail in two ways: he may be intentionally dis- honest, or he may be mistaken ; his evidence may be false, either because he wishes to decéive, or because he is deceived himself. However, we will not here take separate accouut of these two sources of error, but simply consider the probability of the truth of a statement made by a witness, which will be a~~

~~true measure of the value of his evidence. To estimate this probability in any given case is not an easy matter ; but if we could examine a large number of statements made by a eertain person, and find in how many of them he was right, the ratio of these numbers would give the pro- bability that any statement of his, taken at random, whether past or future, is a true one.~~

~~27. Suppose a witness, whose credibility is p, states that a fact occurred or did not occur, or that an event turned out in one way, when only two ways are possible. Hf nothing was known a priori as to the probability of the fact, or if its real facility was 4, it is clear that the probability that it did occur is p. For ifa great~~

~~1 The question now before us is quite different from that of the chance of an event happening or having happened which may happen in different ways, in which case we add the separate probabilities. Thus if there are but two horses~~

~~in a race, of equal merit and belonging to one owner, his chance of winning is | But suppose I only know that one of the two is his, and, besides, some |~~

~~4+4=1,~~

~~one whose credibility is } tells me he has won the race; here I have two separate probabilities of 4 each for the same event; but it would clearly be wrong to add them together,~~

~~at~~

~~number N of trials were made (either really as to the event, if its facility is known to be 4, as in tossing a coin ; or as to it and other eases resembling it as to our ignorance of the real facility, if such is the state of things) in 4N the event happens, and out of these the witness asserts in 4yN eases that it did happen. Now, out of the whole number, he asserts in $N cases that it happened, as there is no reason for his affirming oftener than he denies (or, it may be said, he affirms in 4pN cases where it did happen, and in 4(1— p)N eases where it did not). Hence, dividing the whole number of cases when it happens and he affirms it by the whole number of cases where he affirms it, we find 4pN-+4N =p.~~

~~We have entered at length on the proof of what is almost self- evident (perhaps indeed included in the definition) in this case, because the same method will succeed in other eases which are not so easily to be discerned.~~

~~28, Let us now consider the same question when the a priori pro- bability of the fact or event is known. Suppose a bag contains 2 balls, one white and the rest black, and tle same witness says he has seen the white ball drawn; what is the chance that it was drawn ?~~

~~A great number N of trials being made, the number in which~~

~~: : awl a 5 the white ball is drawn is a and out of these he states it in~~

~~n-1pN cases. Out of the remaining (1-2-1!) N cases where a black ball was drawn, he says (untruly) that in (1—yp) (1-2-1) N cases it was white.~~

~~Now, dividing the number of favourable cases, viz., those where he says it is white and it is so, by the whole number of cases, viz., those where lke says it is white, we have for the probability required~~

~~&- n~lp a Dp = np+(1—n-(1—p) n—-1—(n—2)p~~

~~This holds for any event whose a priori probability is 2-1.~~

~~If 2 be very large, this probability will be very small, unless p is nearly =1; and, indeed, if we go back to the common sense view, it is elear we should hesitate to believe a man who said he had drawn the white ball from a bag containing 10,000 balls, all but — being black. It may be observed that if n=2, w=p, as in Be Palle~~

~~We have thus a'scientific explanation of the universal tendency rather to reject the evidence of a witness than to accept the truth of a fact attested by him, when it is in itself of an extraordinary or very improbable nature.~~

~~29. "wo independent witnesses, A and B, both state a fact, or that au event turned out in a particular way (only two ways being possible), to find the probability of the truth of the statement.~~

~~*Supposing nothing is known @ priori as to the event iu question, let a great number N of trials be made as to such events; the number of successes will be 4N ; out of these the witness A affirms the success in 4pN cases; out of these the witness B affirms it, too, in 4pp'N eases.? Out of the 4N failures A affirms a success in 4(1-p)N cases; and out of these B also affirms one in 4(1—p)(1—p')N cases. Hence, dividing the favourable cases by the whole number, the probability sought is*~~

~~*ṫ*~~

~~*Ss = Ss pp' +(1—p)(1 -p') where », yp' are the credibilities of the two witnesses.*~~

~~*This very important result also holds if p be the probability of the event derived from any source, and y' the credibility of one witness, as in art. 28; or if p and p' be any independent proba- bilities, derived from any sources, as to one event.*~~

~~*30. We give another method of establishing the formula (27). Referring to art. 13, the observed event is the concurrent evidence of A and B that a statement is true. There are two hypotheses —that it is true or false. Antecedent to B's evidence the pro- babilities of these hypotheses are p and 1—yp (art. 27), as A has said that it is true. The observed event now is that B says the same. On the first hypothesis, the probability that he will say this is p' ; on the second, it is 1—p'. Hence by formula (12) the 'pro- bability a posteriori of the first hypothesis, viz., that the joint statement is true, is, as before,*~~

~~*pp" pp +(1—p)(1-p')*~~

~~*31. If a third witness, whose credibility is p", concurs with the two former, we shall have to combine p" with @ in formula (27) ;*~~

~~*hence the probability @' of the statement when made by three witnesses is ae ap = ppp"*~~

~~*ap +(1—@)1-p") ppp" +(1-p) -—p)(1—p")*~~

~~*and so on for any number.*~~

~~*(26).*~~

~~*(27),*~~

~~*(28);*~~

~~*2 Here we are assuming the independence of the witnesses. If B, forinstance, were disposed to follow A's statements or to dissent from them, he would affirm the success here in more or less than 4pp'N cases.*~~

~~*a:*~~

~~*(Us)*~~

~~*As an example, let us find how many witnesses to a faet, the odds against which are 1,000,000,000,000 to 1, would be required to make it an even ehanee that the faet did oceur, supposing the credibility of each witness to be p= 4%.*~~

~~*Let x be the number.*~~

~~*10-12p7 ae ¥ 10-p= 4 (1—10-®)(1—p)* pt + 10% —p}*'*~~

~~*i=*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*so that thirteen such witnesses would render the chanee more than an even one. é*~~

~~*32, Let us now eonsider an event which may turn out in more than two ways, and let each way be equally probable a priori, and suppose a witness whose eredibility is p states that it turned out in a eertain way; what is the ehance that it did so?*~~

~~*Thus if a die has been thrown, and he states that aee turned up ; or if tickets in a lottery are numbered 1, 2, 8, &e., and he states that 1 was drawn ; to*~~

~~find the chance that he is right.~~

~~Take the case of the die, and suppose a great number N of throws. In 4N the ace turns up, and he says so in 3pN cases. In 4N the two tums up, and he is wrong in 3(1—p)N cases out of these ; but he says ace in only } of these, as there is no reason why he should give it more or less often than any of the five wrong numbers. In the same way for the other throws ; so that the whole number of cases where he says aee turned up is~~

~~tN +5-G(1—p)N=GN 5~~

~~and, the number, out of these, when it actually turned up being 4pN, we find the chance it did turn up is p, the credibility of the witness. In any such case, this result will hold. We might indeed safely have argued that when the die is thrown a great number of times, any witness, whatever his veracity, will quote each face as often as any other, as there is no reason for one to turn up oftener than another, nor for him to affirm, rightly or wrongly, one rather than another; so that he will say aee in aN of the throws, while he says aee in ayN out of the 3N cases where it does turn up.~~

~~This result compared with art. 28 affords an apparent paradox. If a large number of tickets are marked 1,0,0,0,0,0….anda witness states that 1 has been drawn from the bag, we see from art. 28 that the chance he is right is very small; whereas if the tickets were marked 1,2,3,4,5,6…. and he states that 1 has been drawn, the chance he is right is p, his own credibility. However, we must remember that in the first case he is limited to two statements, 1 and 0, and he makes the first, which is very improbable in itself; whereas in the other case, the assertion he makes is in itself as probable as any other he can make—c.g., that 2 was the ticket drawn—and therefore our expectation of its truth depends on his own credibility only.~~

~~33. Suppose now that two witnesses A, B both assert that the event has turned out in a certain way,—there being, as in art. 32, n equally probable ways.~~

~~Both, for instance, say that in a lottery numbered 1,2,3,4,5…. No, 1 has been drawn. A large number N of drawings being made, 1 is drawn in-n-1N cases; out of these A says 1 in n-1pN cases, and out of these B also says 1 in~~

~~n-lpp'N. 'No. 2 is drawn in 2~1N eases; here A is wrong in n-1(1—p)N, but says 1 in only (n-1)-'m-\(1-—p)N; and B will also say 1 in (1—p')\(n ~1)-1 of these; that is, both agree that 1 has been drawn in~~

~~(w—1)-*n-(L—p)(1—p')N~~

~~eases. So likewise if No. 3 has been drawn, and so on; hence, when No. 1 has not been drawn, they both say that it has in~~

~~mn—1)-\1 -p)(1—p')N~~

~~eases. Hence the number of cases where they are right divided hy the whole number of eases where they make the statement, that is, the probability that No. 1 has been drawn, is~~

~~a ae~~

~~PP nee map) * If 7 be a large number the chance that they have named the ticket drawn is nearly certainty. Thus, if two independeut witnesses both select the same man out of a large number, as the one they have seen commit a erime, the presumption is very strong against him. Of eourse, for the ease to eome under the above ae it is supposed that some one of the number must be~~

~~uilty.~~

~~34. In the same ease, when the event may turn out in » ways not equally probable, as in a race between n horses Ay BAC ae)... witese chanees of winning area, b,c… .,sothatatb+e+... =i. if one witness. whose eredibility is p states that A has won, it is~~

~~(29).~~

~~BPrOBADBILIVY~~

~~easily shown by the same reasoning as in art. 33 that the pro- bability A has really won is ae . = pe (iat ey OS and if two witnesses say so, it is~~

~~app'~~

~~app' + (1-a)(n—1)-(1—p)(1—p') ° It is easily shown in formula (30) that if p>n~-1 the probability zis inereased by the testimony, beyond a, its anteeedent value. Thus, suppose there are ten horses in a race, and that one of them, A, has a chanee 4 of winning, and that just after the race I learn that a blaek horse has won, black being A's eolour; now, if I kuow that % of raeeliorses in, general are blaek, this gives me a new chanee + (see art. 16) that A has won. Therefore from. (30) the chanee of the event is now 74=2.~~

~~35. To illustrate the effeet of discordant testimony. In art. 29 let A have asserted that the faet oecurred, and let B deny it. It is easy to see that 1—yp' is to be put for p', so that the probability that it did occur is~~

~~(81).~~

~~a=~~

~~ee ey) (l-p) + p" —p) if there had been an a priori probability @ in favour of the fact this would have been~~

~~(32);~~

~~a ap(1—p') : ap(1—p')+p'(1-a)(1—p) * Thus if the credit of both witnesses were the same, y=p', and we find from (33) w=a, so that the evidence has not altered the likelihood of the event.~~

~~36. Where the event may turn out in » equally probable ways as in art. 38, and the witness A asserts one to have oeeurred, say the ticket marked 1 to have been drawn, while the witness B asserts another, say the tieket marked 2; to find the chance that No. 1 was drawn.~~

~~By the same reasoning as in art. 83 we find for the chance~~

~~pl-p') 7 p-p + — py) |~~

~~This result will also follow if we consider B's evidence as testi- mony vm favour of No. 1 of the value (1—')(7-1)-1,~~

~~When the number of tiekets 7 is very great, (84) gives~~

~~iz, wa — f 1-pp~~

~~37. As remarked in art. 26, the methods we have given for de- termining the probability of testimony apply to cases where the evidence is derived from other sources. Thus, suppose it has been found that a eertain symptom (A) indicates the presence of a certain disease in three cases out of four, there is a probability ? that any patient exhibiting the symptom has the disease. This, however, must be considered in conjunction with the a priori probability of the presenec of the disease, if we wish to know the value of the evidence dedueed from the symptom being observed. For instanee, if we knew that ? of the whole population had the disease, the evidenee would have no value, and the eredibility of the symptom per se would be 4, telling us nothing either way. For if @ be the a priori probability, = that after the evidence, p the credibility of the evidence, we have found~~

~~(33).~~

~~pie ae Hs, | oap + (1=a)(1 =p) ' so that, if w=a, p=3.~~

~~If wand a are given, the credibility p of the evidence is deduced from this equation, viz.,~~

~~(l-a)e~~

~~Pa teen Gee a~~

~~38. Suppose now the probability of the disease when the symptom A oeeurs is w (that is, it is observed that the disease exists in wN eases out of a large number N where the symptom is found), and likewise the same probability when another independent symptom B oeeurs is a'. What is the probability of the disease where both symptoms oecur ?~~

~~Let a be the a priori probability of the disease in all the cases ; then the value of the evidenee of B is, as explained above,~~

~~,. (ame. ate' —2ae' and this has to be combined with w, which is the probability of the disease after A is observed. We find the probability (I) required to be a wp' + (1—-w)(1-p)'~~

~~*PHOQOBABILET Y*~~

~~*= (1l-a)aa' . (l-ajeu'+al-sll-w) (35). Thus, if the @ priori probability of the disease in all the patients was 7/5, and 3 out of 4 have the disease where A is observed, and also 3 out of 4 where B is observed, the chance is $4 that the*~~

~~*disease exists when both symptoms are present.*~~

~~*This question illustrates the exceeding delicacy and care required in reasoning on probabilities. If we had combined the two given probabilities in the usual way without considering the @ priori value (as would be correct if this were quite unknown, or=4) we should have had*~~

~~*whence Tl*~~

~~*U War*~~

~~*— +(l-aw)(1l-a')° The fallacy of so doing will appear if we consider a large population, and a very uncommon disease, and that the latter 1s observed to exist in 4 the cases where the symptom A occurs, and also in 4 for the symptom B; this formula would give 4 for the chance when both are present. This is elearly absurd ; for, both the disease and the symptoms being by hypothesis extremely rare, and the symptoms being independent, that is, having no connexion with each other, it is next to impossible that any one individual of the 4N(A)—calling N(A) the number who have the sympton1 A — who have not the disease should also be comprised in the 4N(B) who have not the disease, because this 4N(A), 4N(B) are very small numbers (relatively) taken indiscriminately from the whole population who are free from the disease. It is different for the 4N(A), 4N(B) cases who have the disease ; these cases all come out of the very small number N(D) who have the disease ; therefore several individuals will be probably common to both; hence, if both symptoins coexist, it is highly probable that the ease is one of the disease. We find from (35) the true probability to be in the preseut case*~~

~~*T=1-a,*~~

~~so that, if only 1 in 1000 have the disease, the chance is 999 to 1, instead of an even one.~~

~~39. If a coin thrown m times has turned up_head every time, the |~~

~~chance derived from this experience alone that the real facility for head exceeds 4 is, by formula (14),~~

~~1 m 2 dx 5 =| 1 1 —" Om-+1 ° fy en 2 i)~~

~~But there is here a very strong a priori presumption that the facility is 4; suppose then that there is a very small a priori probability (p) that either in the coin itself or the way it is thrown there is something more favourable to head than to tail ; after the new evidence the probability of this will be pe _ | (ae Tp pat(l—p)(l-@) (2"41-2)p4+1° Thus if there is an a priori probability zg¢yz, and if the coin has turned up head 5 times and never tail, the probability that the facility for head exceeds that for tail becomes 63 «6~~

~~62+1000 1000~~

~~40. From art. 19 we see that if a large number of trials m+™ be made as to any event, m being favourable, it may be considered certain that the real facility differs from m/(m+m) by a very small fraction at most. If then our @ prior? idea as to the facility gives it outside the limits derived from formula (21), the evidence from experience will overrule our a priori presumption. Thus, if a shilling thrown up 1000 times gives head 560 times and tail 440, the evidence thus afforded that the throws were not fair is so much stronger than any antecedent conviction we could have to the contrary that we may conclude with certainty that, from some cause or other, head is more likely than tail. 41. Closely allied to the subject of our present section are the applications of the theory of probabilities to the verdicts of juries, the decisions of courts, and the results of elections. Our limits,~~

~~a=~~

~~nearly.~~

~~1 Or thus: let N = whole population and m,n' the numbers who show the symptoms A and B respectively, all these numbers being large. Now aN= whole number who have the disease; an, w'n' the numbers out of n,n' who have~~

~~.it. Now wn, wn' are both comprised in aN; and, out of an', the number also included in wn is the same fraction of wn that an' is of aN; that is, the number who hare both symptoms and the disease is~~

~~an' ann? and those who have both symptoms and have not the disease is : (l—a')n' (-—a)" q—an , so that, if both symptoms are present, the odds that it is a case of the disease are as aa (l—a\(l-z') re 1—a@ :~~

~~779~~

~~however, will hardly allow of even a sketch of the methods given by Condoreet, Laplace, and Poisson, as it is not possible to render them intelligible within a short compass. We must therefore refer the reader to Todhunter's HIstory, as well as the original works of these writers, especially to Poisson's Recherches sur la Probabilité des Jugements. .~~

~~42. We will consider here one remarkable question given by Laplace, because the mathematical difficulty may be solved in a simpler way than by deducing it as a case of a general problem given in his chap. ii., or than Todhunter's method (see his p. 545), which depends on Lejeune Dirichlet's theorem in multiple integrals.~~

~~An event (suppose the death of a certain person) must have pro- ceeded from one of ~ causes A, B, C, &c., anda tribunal has to pronounce on which is the most probable.~~

~~Let each member of the tribunal arrange the causes in the order of their probability according to his judgment, after weighing the evidence. To compare the presumption thus afforded by any one judge in favour of a specified cause with that afforded by the other judges, we must assign a value to the probability of the cause derived solely from its being, say, the rth on his list. As he is supposed to be unable to pronouuce any closer to the truth than to say (suppose) H is more likely than D, D more likely than L,~~

~~&c., the probability of any cause will be the average value of all those which that probability can have, given simply that it always occupies the same place on the list of the probabilities arranged in order of magnitude. As the sum of the 7 probabilities is always 1, the question reduees to this—~~

~~Any whole (sueh as the number 1) is divided at random into » parts, and the parts are arranged in the order of their magnitude— least, second, third, . . . greatest; this is repeated for the same whole a great number of times; required the mean value of the least, of the second, &c., parts, up to that of the greatest.~~

~~A B | |”~~

~~Let the whole in question be represented by a line AB=a, and let it be divided at random into parts by taking x —1 points indis- criminately on it. Let the required mean values be~~

~~Mgt, Nels AyS- 2 os Bethy~~

~~where Aj,A,A3- — . must be constant fractions. Asa great number of positions is taken in AB for each of the m points, we may take a as representing that number; and the whole number N of cases will be N=a”-!,” The sum of the least parts, in every case, will be S; = Naya = Aa”.~~

~~Let a small increment, Bb= 8a, be added on to the line AB at the end B; the increase in this sum is 6S, =2A,a”~18a.~~

~~But, in dividing the new line Ad, either the n—1 points all fall on AB as before, or 7—2 fall on AB and 1 on Bd (the cases where 2 or more fall on Bd are so few we may neglect them). If all fall on AB, the least part is always the same as before except when it is the last, at the end B of the line, and then it is greater than before by Sa; as it falls last in n-! of the whole nuinber of trials, the increasc in 8, is z-‘a”-18a. But if one point of division falls on Bb, the number of new cases introdueed is (n-1)a”-78a ; but, the least part being now an infinitesimal, the sum S, is not affected ; we have therefore~~

~~59, =na,a”- a=n-la”- 8a ; oo. Ay=n 2,~~

~~To find A, reasoning exactly in the same way, we find that where one point falJs on Bd and »—2 on AB, as the least part is infinitesimal, the second least part is the least of the n—1 parts made by the n— 2 points ; consequently, if we put A’, for the value of A, when there are —1 parts only, instead of n,~~

~~58, =7a,0" 8a=n-) a®-l8a+(n-1)a”2r’aba , ‘. MAg=n!; but Ay=(m—-1)-? 2; *, NMAg=n-1(n—1)-}. In the same way we can show generally that NAp=n-)+(M—-1)aA’r-13 and thus the required mean value of the rth part is Ane=an-IIn-+(n-1) 34+ (n-2) 4… (m-rt+1)1}. . (86). Thus each judge implicitly assigns the probabilities~~

~~ae 1,1 1/i, 1,1 nm?n\n n-1/’ n\n n-1 n-2)’? °°? 2~~

~~to the causes as they stand on his list, beginning from the lowest. Laplace now says we should add the numbers thus found on the different lists for the cause A, also for B, &c.; and that cause which has the greatest sum is the most probable. This doubtless seemed self-evident to him, but ordinary minds will hardly be convinced~~

~~780~~

~~of its correctness without proof. be, beginning from the lowest,~~

~~ee eR Bee ees Ceres Liter Ges Probabilities ipiR wiht Nag here 202"~~

~~ini j reight, the As the opinions of all the judges are supposed of equal weight, aie H Aner is as likely as the cause K; but the probability that H or K was the cause is}~~

~~Let the lists of two of the judges~~

~~Ag tAg- Hence prob. (H)+prob. (K)=2 prob. (H)=A2+Aq4 3 .*. prob. (H) =3(Ag+Ay,) 5~~

~~that is, the probability of any eause is the mean of its probabili- ties on the two lists, the circumstance being elearly immaterial~~

~~*whether the same cause K is found opposite to it or not. The same follows for 3 or more lists. 43, Laplace applies the same method to elections. Suppose*~~

~~*there are 2 candidates for an office ; each elector is to arrange them in what he believes to be the order of merit ; and we have first to find the numerical value of the merit he thus implicitly attributes to each candidate. Fixing on some limit a as the maximum of merit, 2 arbitrary values less than a are taken and then arranged in order of magnitude—least, second, third, ... greatest; to ind the mean value of each.*~~

~~*os*~~

~~*A Xx Y Z B*~~

~~*Take a line AB=a, and set off ~ arbitrary lengths AX, AY, AZ.… . beginning at A; thatis, 2 points are taken at random in AB. Now the mean values of AX, XY, YZ,.... are all equal; for if a new point P be taken at random, it is equally likely to be Ist, 2d, 3d, &c., in order beginning from A, because out of n+1 points the chance of an assigned one being 1st is (x+1)-1; of its being 2d (7+1)-1; and so on. But the chance of P being Ist is equal to the mean value of AX divided by AB; of its being 2d M(XY)+AB; and so on. Hence the mean value of AX is AB (n+1)-!; that of AY is 2AB(x~+1)-1; and so on. mean merit assigned to the several candidates is*~~

~~*an+1)-1, 2Za(n+1)-1, 8a(n+1)-)... . ma(n+1)-1.*~~

~~*Thus the relative merits may be estimated by writing under the names of the candidates the numbers 1, 2,3,.... mn. The same being done by each elector, the probability will be in favour of the candidate who has the greatest suin.*~~

~~*Practically it is to be feared that this plan would not succeed, though certainly the most rational and logical one if the conditions are fulfilled—because, as Laplace observes, not only are electors swayed by many considerations independent of the merit of the candidates, but they would often place low down in their list any candidate whom they judged a formidable competitor to the one they preferred, thus giving an unfair advantage to candidates of mediocre merit.*~~

~~There are, however, many eases where such objections would not apply, and therefore where Laplace's method would be certainly the most rational. Thus, suppose a jury or committee or board of examiners have to decide on the relative merit of a number of prize essays, designs for a building, &c.; each member should place them in what he judges to be the order of merit, beginning with the worst, and write over them the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. ; then the relative merit of each essay, &., would be represented by the sum of the numbers against it in each list. No doubt there would be cases where a juror would observe a great difference in merit between one essay and the one below it, which difference wonld not be adequately rendered by an excess of 1 in the number. But even then, as such superiority could not fail to be recognized by the other members of the tribunal, it is not likely that any injustice would result.~~

~~44. An argument advanced in support of a proposition differs from the ease of testimony in that, if the arguinent is bad, the previous probability of the conclusion is unaffected. Let p be the @ priort probability of the proposition, g the chance that the argument is eorreet ; then, ina large number N of eases, in gN the argument is good, and therefore the proposition is true ; and out of the remaining (1—q) N, where the argument is bad, there are~~

~~p(l-gN cases where the proposition is nevertheless true. HIence the probability of the conclusion is~~

~~PT 99.~~

~~HIence any argument, however weak, adds something to the foree of preceding arguments.~~

~~Thus the~~

~~1 This is the same as if there was onl j eauses in the same order the pr ni No~~

~~now one judge transposes two cause P ot hee oes S, he does not alter the ehance that one or~~

~~this chance solely depends th iti 5 Orne le : h y dep on the positions of renting to ae a lists, and is the same whatever the arrangements as to the~~

~~PROBABILITY~~

~~V. ON MEAN VALUES AND THE THEORY oF Errors.~~

~~45. The idea of a mean or average among many differing magnitudes of the same kind is one continually employed, and of' great value. It gives us in one result, easily pictured to the mind and easily remembered, a general idea of a number of quantities which perhaps we have never seen or observed, and we can thus eonvey the same idea to others, without giving a long list of the quantities themselves. We could searcely form any clear coneep- tion as to the duration of human life, unless by taking the average, — that is, finding the length of life each individual would have if the whole sum of the years attained by each were equally divided among the entire population. How, again, could we so easily form an idea of the eliniate of Rome or Niece as by learning the mean of the temperatures of each day for a year, ora series of years? Here, again, it will be an important addition to the information to find also the mean summer temperature and the mean in winter, as we thus learn what extremes of heat and cold are to be expeeted. We may even go further and inquire the diurnal variation in the temperature in summer or in winter; and for this we should know the average of a number of partieular cases.~~

~~It may be said that the whole value of statistics depends on the doctrine of averages. The price of wheat and of other commodities, the inerease or deerease of a particular crime, the age of marriages both for men and women, the amount of rain at a given locality, the advance of education, the distribution of wealth, the spread of disease, and numberless other subjects for inquiry—are instances where we often see hasty and misleading conclusions drawn from one or two particular cases which happen to make an impression, but where the philosophical method bids us to observe the results in a large number, and then to present them as summed up and represented by the average or mean.~~

~~46. There is another application of averages of a different nature from the foregoing. Different estimates of the same thing are given by several~~

~~*independent authorities: thus the precise moment of an earthquake is differently stated by correspondents in the papers ; different heights are given for a mountain by travellers ; or suppose I have myself measured the height of a building a number of times, never obtaining exactly the same result. In all such cases (if we have no reason to attach greater weight to one result than to another) our common sense tells us that the average of all the estimates is more likely to be the truth than any other value. In these eases, as M. Quetelet remarks, there is this important distinction from the preceding, that the mean value represents a thing actually existing; whereas in the others it merely serves to give a kind of general idea of a number of indi- viduals essentially different, though of the same kind. Thus if I take the mean of the heights of 200 houses in a long street, it does not stand for any real entity, but is a mere ideal height, repre- senting as nearly as possible those of the individual houses, whereas, in taking 200 measurements of the same house, their mean is intended to give, and will very nearly give,-the actual height of that house.*~~

~~*47. So far it is obvious how to proceed in such eases; but it becomes a most important question in the theory of probabilities, to determine how far we can rely on the mean value of the different observations giving us the true magnitnde we seek,—or rather, as we never can expect it to give exactly that value, to ascertain with what probability we may expect the error not to exceed any assigned limit. Such is the inquiry on which we are about to enter,*~~

~~*This investigation is of the more importance, because we find what is really the same problem present itself again under cireum- stances different from what we have been considering. In the ineasurement of any whole by means of repeated partial measure- ments—as, for instance, in measuring a distance by means of a chain—the error in the result is the sum of all the partial errors (with their proper signs) incurred at each successive application of the chain. If we would know, then, the amount of confidence we may have in the accuracy of the result, we must determine, as well as we can, the probability of the error—that is, the sum of all the partial errors—not exceeding assigned limits; and to this end, we have in the first place to try to determine the law of facility, or frequency, of different values of this sum. The problem only differs from the preceding in that here we seek for*~~

~~*the facility of the sum of the errors; in the former, of the ath part of that sum.*~~

~~*In both these eases, we may reasonably and naturally suppose that the error incurred in each observation, or each measurement, follows the same law as to the frequency of its different possible values and as to its limits, as each is made by the same observer, under the same circumstances, though what that law is may be unknown to us. But there is another class of cases where the same problem presents itself. An astronomical observation is made (say) of the zenith distance of a star at a particular instant ; the error in this determination is a complex one, caused by an error in the time, an error in the refraction, errors of the instru-*~~

~~*PR ORs Pir' vy*~~

~~*ment, personal error of the observer, and others. The error of the observation is in fact the suin of the partial errors arising from these different sources; now these evidently cannot be taken each to follow the same law, so that we have here a more general problem of the same species, viz., to combine a number of partial errors, each having its own law of facility and limits.*~~

~~*There is every reason to suppose that the error incurred in any single observation or measurement of any kind is generally due to the operation of a large number of independent sources of error; if we adopt this hypothesis, we have the same problem to solve in order to arrive at the law of facility of any single error.*~~

~~*48. We will consider the question as put by Poisson (Recherches, p. 254; see Todhunter, HIstory, p. 561), and will adopt a method which greatly shortens the way to the result.*~~

~~*Let « be the error arising from the combination or superposition of a large number of errors ¢, €,, €g. . . . each of which by itself is supposed very small, then*~~

~~*; C= €) + €o + €g+ ss (¢ . ° ° ° (37). Kach partial error is capable of a number, large or small, of values, all small in themselves ; and this number*~~

~~may be quite different fOmeach error €; €5, €g- ... » There may be more positive than negative, or less, foreach.1 If n,, 2,23… . be the numbers of values of the several errors, the number of different values of the compound error « will be~~

~~MyNyNe . .~~

~~We will suppose it, however, to take an indefinite number of values N, some multiple of the above, so that the 2, 22,3… . different values are repeated, but all equally often, so as to leave the relative facility of the different values unaltered. We will suppose the same number N of values in every case, whether more or fewer of the partial errors ¢,, «,, «;. . . . are included or not.~~

~~Let the frequency of an error of magnitude x be called y, and let the equation expressing the frequency be : Vj) eee 6 eke t.¢., yde—=number of values of x between x and «+da. The whole number of values is~~

~~Le — N= ve "(ade~~

~~where y, w' are the sums of the higher and lower limits of all the partial errors.~~

~~If now a new partial error e be included with the others, let it have 2 particnlar values ¢, e, e'. ... . 3; if it had but the one value ¢, then to every value x of the old compound error would correspond oue x' of the new, such that +e=2'; and the number of values of the new from 2' to x'+dz' is the same as of the old from x to x+dx—that is, f(x)dx, or f(z'- edz'. Now the next value é gives, besides these, the number /(z'—e')dx', and soon. Thus the whole number of values of the new compound error between a' and x'+dz' is~~

~~{ f(a!—e)+f(a'—c)+fla'—e")+... shea HIence the equation of frequency for the new error is (dropping the accent, and dividing by n—that is, reducing the total number of values from Nn to N, the same as before)~~

~~y=n-l{ f(w—e)+f(w—e)+f(e-e")+...}. . (89).~~

~~(38);~~

~~etete' +...~~

~~Hence yaf(e) — Frey ty —~~

~~neglecting higher powers of e, ce'... .~~

~~Hence 7 @ new partial error e, whose mean value=a, and whose mean square is r, be superposed on the compound error (88) resulting from the combination of a large number of partial errors, the equa- tion of frequency for the resulting error is~~

~~Y =f (a) — of (a) + Zaf"(x) =(1 — aD + $aD*) f(x) (40).~~

~~It thus appears that each of the small errors only enters the result by its mean value a, and mean square A.~~

~~If a second error were superposed, we should thus have~~

~~y=(1-—a,D+4a,D?)(1 — aD +4aD?) f(x); 'y= {1 —(a+a,)D+(G4(a "+ Ay) + 4a,)D?} f(x) g as A is a lower infinitesimal than a, we retain no other terms.~~

~~A+ — a? —a,?+(a+a,)? eC~~

~~Thus any two errors enter the result in terms of a+ a, and A+A" —a* —a,?; as this holds for any two, it is easy to see that all the partial errors in (37) enter the equation of frequency (38) only in terms of m and h-7; putting~~

~~M=a,+G+ag+ ... =sum of mean errors,~~

~~=D Ag Ag+ . .. =sum of mean squares of errors, (41). t=aita;,ta?+... =sum of squares of mean errors,~~

~~Me APs Se Le (nr Cs Ae oe 7"),~~

~~"Y= 1-(a+a,)D+~~

~~. 1 An error may have all its values positive, or all negative. In estimating the instant when a star crosses the meridian we may err in excess or defect, but in estimating that when it emerges from behind the moon, we can only errin excess. We have heard this instance given by Clerk Maxwell.~~

~~781~~

~~Thus, y=f (“=F (a, m, h-7).~~

~~Let m receive an increment dm; this is equivalent to superposing a new error whose inean value is 6m, and mean square infinitely. smaller (¢.g., let its values be all +, or indeed we may take it to have but the single value 5m) ;~~

~~ieee a 5 Oy ae : by= 7 Oe dno by (40); dy a ”’ du dx~~

~~Hence y is a function of z—m; so our equation must be of the form~~

~~y=F(a—m, h-7) (42). Let 2% receive an increment 52; or conceive a new error whose mean value a=0, and whose mean square=6h ; we have (40)~~

~~AY oy PY~~

~~dh ae ‘ dy _ dy 2 = QS AB Hence Ie ah (43)~~

~~Let us now suppose in (37) that all the values of every error are increased in the ratio 7; all the values of x are increased in the sanie ratio ; consequently there are the same number of values of x from rx to r(c+dx) as there were before from x to «+dz. This~~

~~ives P F(a-m, h-i)dx=F(rxe—-rm, rh—1))rdz, for m is increased in the ratio 7, and % aud 7 in the ratio 72. Let us write for shortness~~

~~f=“-m, n=h—-t,~~

~~so that y=FE,n) . . . (44) ; we have r-1F(E, n)\=F (ré, 77m). Let r=1+., where wo is infinitesimal ; (1- @)ySF(E+ wk, 4+ 20m) 5 oe y-ay=y+ ott aP Zong) 3 dy dy 2 ES SY by 45). This equation, and c= oe a (46), identical with (43), contain the solution of the problem. Thus, (45) gives by~~

~~integration y=ny-*(e'n-1) (47) Again, combining (45) and (46), Oo ae Te ap bade y=0, af dy y or Sel gh tay 95 dy ve nge tty = x(n). Substitute for y the value (47); and we find 2kq~ by'(EPn 2) + En BYE') = x(n) 5 that is, a function of é)~? identical with a function of y. This~~

~~cannot be, unless both sides are constant.~~

~~Now c=0, for = vanishes with é, by (47); and, y being always~~

~~dy H y = ence Nag + ty =e.~~

~~finite, the left hand number vanishes with ¢ ; 2 DY (By 7}) + Wen 1) =0. 2°. (E29 1) = Ce 884-29}, Substituting in (47) and restoring the values of £, 7, we find the form of the function (42) to be~~

~~: (rx—m)? y=C(h-t)-te~ ogra . (48). C is a constant depending on the number N.~~

~~The probability of the error falling between x and x#+dz is~~

~~found by dividing ydx by the whole area of the curve (48); i.e.,~~

~~(x—m)?~~

~~p= {2n(h- t)} 4e s@aa dx (49). 49. If, instead of eq. (37), we had put E=1€1 t+ Yolo t ysegt .— (50),~~

~~where 7), Yo Y3- — are any numerical factors, the formula (49) gives the probability for x, provided A, 7, m are taken to be M= 10+ Yolo t Ygagt — + — h=irytypratyirgt. — t= ia tyiegtysegt--- instead of the values in (41). 50. If we take the integral of eq. (49), between any two limits #, v, it gives us the probability that the sum 2 of the errors lies~~

~~(51),~~

~~782~~

~~between p and y—that is, that the mean of all the errors lies between pr-) and yr-}, if r is the number of the partial errors in (37). The most likely~~

~~value of x (that is, for which the frequency 1s greatest) is of course =m, and the chance that xz does not differ from m by more than +6 is — ™~~

~~ay fim h—-i)4 mS~~

~~In this put (2-m){2(h-2)t=t; .°. dw=dtN2h—%). The limits m8 for z become+5{2(h-4)}-} for ¢; hence, putting 7=5{2(h-7)}-3,~~

~~to and remembering that ee dt= vA eat,~~

~~=~~

~~2—~~

~~we find wos fie ie 3)~~

~~is the probability that the sum x of the errors in (37) lies between the~~

~~limits m1 2h—2); wis also the probability that the mean of all the errors, zr-1, lies between the limits~~

~~nr-lArr-lV/2(h=7) .~~

~~51. The important result (48), which is the key to the whole theory of errors, contains several particular cases which Laplace gives in his fourth chapter. We may first make one or two rciarks on it.~~

~~(1) 4-7 is always positive ; for in (41)~~

~~(rm)? é€ 2(h—i) dx.~~

~~IS ECHO NG Cy (lap because the mean of the squares of n numbers is always greater than the square of the mean.! (2) To find the mean value M(x) of the sum 2, and the mean value of its square M(x”), we have~~

~~Sryde Z Sxrydz the limits being +0. Hence~~

~~M(ax)=m ; M(2*?)=m?+h-7.~~

~~The first is obvious from the fact that to every value m+z for x there corresponds another m—z. Both results also easily follow from common algebra: the case is that of a sum, a,~~

~~@=eE retest, &e, where each quantity e,, €), €,.... poe through an independent series of values ; and it is easily proved that M(x)=M(e,)+ M(e.)+M(e3)+ ... M(x") = M(e?)+ M(e2)+M(e2)+ ... =(2Me,)?— 3(Me,)? + SM(e?).~~

~~52. One particular case of the general problem in art. 48 is when the errors €;, €2, €g. . . . in (37) all follow exactly the same law; as, for instance, if €, €,,¢€3. . . . are the errors committed in observing the same magnitude, under exactly the same circumstances, a great number of times; and we are asked to find the chance that the sum of the errors, or that their arithmetical mean, shall fall between given limits. Here the law of facility for each error is of course the~~

~~same, though we may not know what it is. We have then from (41) :~~

~~— wea ecm. 2 M=ra,, h=rr,, t=7ra?,~~

~~ma =Me, 3 +23{M(¢,)M(eq)}~~

~~so that in eq. (52), 9 a =a~~

~~a a) é t is the probability that the mean of all the errors shall lie between a brV2r-Ka, =a) ty here is the mean of all the possible values of the error in this par- ticular observation, which are of course infinite in number ; and (53) shows us, what is evident beforehand, that the more the number 7 of observations is increased the narrower do the limits for the mean error become for a given probability @; so that if, suppose, we take 7=3, and r=oo, we have very nearly wz=1, and it becomes practically certain that the mean of the actual observations will differ from a, by an infinitesimal deviation.~~

~~53. What we have found hitherto would be of very little practi- cal use, because the constants involved suppose the amounts of the errors known, and therefore the true value known of the quantity which is observed or~~

~~measured. _ It is, however, precisely this true value which we usually do not know and are trying to find. Let us how suppose a large number 7 of measurements, which we will call~~

~~UUs 5 6 Ue made of a magnitude whose true but unknown value is A.~~

~~1 This may be very easil i I asily proved by re; employed in the note on aveele a3. os~~

~~(53).~~

~~asoning precisely analogous to that~~

~~Pio aA hirer:~~

~~The (unknown) errors of the observations will be~~

~~€j=0,-A, €:=G@,—-A, C3=a,A…; we Ter tegt .. . Cr) =7 ay, Gg ... dr)—A; or M(e,)=M(a,)—A;~~

~~or the mean of the errors is the error committed in taking the mean of the observations as the value of A.~~

~~Hence (53) @ is the probability that the error committed in taking the mean of the observations as the truth shall lie between~~

~~Ogee N of (toe~~

~~Here a, is the true inean of the errors of an infinite number of observations, A, the ncan of their squares. As we have no means of determining a, (except that it is nearly equal to the mean of the errors we are dealing with, which would give us no result), we have to limit the generality of the question by assuming that the law of error of the observation gives positive and negative crrors with equal facility ; if so a,=0, and we have the probability @ that the error~~

~~lies between t¢7 V ips .~~

~~*Here A,, which is the mean of the squares of all possible values of the error of the observation, will be at least very nearly the mean square of the actual values of the errors, if 7 is large ;*~~

~~*oe Ag=rWeit+ept+ ... e); wt. AL=r-1{(a,-A)??... (ay -A)*} ; or Ay = M(a7) — 2AM (a,) + A? = M(a?) — (Ma,)?+ (Ma, — A)?. Rejecting the last term, as the square of a very small quantity, Ay=M(a2) — (May), and we have the probability z (in (53)) that the error in taking the mean of the observations as the truth lies between rN 2y-1{ M(a2) — (Ma,)?} (54), a value depending on the mean square, and mean first power, of the observed values. These imits may be put in a different form, rather easier for*~~

~~*calculation. If f,, fo, fa… fr be the apparent errors, that is, not the real ones, but what they would be on the hypothesis that the*~~

~~*mean is the true value, then, putting M for r-'(a,a, .. . dr), A=%-M, f,=a,M,... f=a,—M; .. M(f7)=M(a{) — 2M. M+ M?= M(a?) — (Ma,)?; so that A=M(/7), and (54) may be written Sear) eat… — fae — (55).*~~

~~*54. In the last article we have made no assumption as to the law of frequency of the error in the observation we are considering, except that it gives positive and negative values with equal facility. If, however, we adopt the hypothesis (see art. 47) that every error in practice arises from the joint operation of a number of independ- ent causes, the partial error due to each of which is of very small importance, then the process in art. 48 will apply, and we may con- clude that the errors of every series of observations of the same mag- nitude made in the same circumstances follow the law of frequency in formula (48); aud if we suppose, as is universally done, that _ positive and negative values are equally probable, the law will be*~~

~~*Zia ee: y= Ce — le -x-e and the probability (49) will be 2) See pata age =" "oe where ¢ is a constant, which is sometimes called the modulus of the system.*~~

~~*Every error in practice, then, is of the form (56), and is similar to every other. Ifc be small, the error has small amplitudes, and the series of observations are accurate.*~~

~~If, as supposed in art. 58, a set of observations have been made, we can determine the modulus c, with an accuracy increasing with the number iu the set. For (art. 51)~~

~~3c?= true mean square of all possible values of the error.~~

~~This we have called A, in last article, and have shown it nearly equal to M(a,?) — (Ma,)? or M(fq?) ; so that 3c? =mean square of obs. — (mean of obs.)?=mean square of apparent errors.~~

~~55. Thus, if a set of observations have been made, and ¢ thus determined from them, it is easy to see that~~

~~Mean error = ter-?=0°5642c Mean square of error= $c Probable error = +0°4769¢~~

~~The mean error means that of all the positive or all the negative errors. The probable error is the value which half the errors exceed and half fall short of, so that it is an even chance that the error of any particular observation lies between the limits +0°4769c. Its value is found from the table in art. 9, taking I=}.~~

~~56. We have often to consider the law of error of the sum of~~

~~(56),~~

~~(57).~~

~~PROP AGAL IY Yr~~

~~several magnitudes, eaeli of which has been determined by a set of observations. Suppose A and B two such magnitudes, and X their sum, to find the law of error in X=A+B. Let the funetions of error for A and B be Comte eae, feo lge es ~· 7p.~~

~~In formula (49) let m=o0, ¢=0, 2h=c?; then the funetion for A is the law for the sum of a number of errors (37) the sum of whose mean squares is h=4c*; likewise that for B is the law for the sum of a number the sum of whose mean squares is ¥f2; the saine formula (49) shows us ¢hat the law~~

~~for the sum of these two series of errors—that is, for the sum of the errors of A and B—is~~

~~{a(c? +f)} ~·4g-22(c2+f2) gy , that is, the modulus for X or A+B is Jen Probable error of X =*4769/c? f? .*. (p.e. of X)?=(p.e. of A)?(p.e. of B)? . So likewise for the mean error. If X were the difference A—B, (58) still holds.~~

~~If X be the sum of m magnitudes A, B, C. . . instead of two, its probable error is in like manner~~

~~(p.e. X)?=(p.e. A)??, &e.; and if the function of error for A, B,C. . . be the same for all (p.e. X)?=m(p.e. A)}?, Also the probable error in the mean M(A)=m-(A+B+C+4+...) is the mth part of the above ; .*. p.e. of M(A)=m-# p.e. of A) (59).~~

~~Airy gives the following example. The eo-latitude of a place is found by observing m times the Z.D. of a star at its upper cul- mination and " times its Z.D. at its lower eulmination ; to find the probable error.~~

~~Hence~~

~~(58).~~

~~By (59) p.e. upper Z.D. =m~·*(p.e. of an upper obs.) ; p-e. lower Z.D. =n-i(p.e. of a lower obs.) ; Now eo-latitude=4(U.Z.D. + L.Z.D.). Hence (58)~~

~~(p.e. eo-lat.)?=3m-l(p.e. up. obs.)? + 32-\(p.e. low. obs. ae If the upper Z.D. observations are equally good with the lower,~~

~~p-e. eo-lat. =4(p.e. an obs.),/m-14+n71,~~

~~57. The magnitude to be found is often not observed directly, but another magnitude of which it issome function. Let A=true but unknown value of a quantity depending on another whose true unknown value is a, by the given function~~

~~A=f(q) ; let an observed value for a be v, the corresponding value for A being V, then~~

~~V=f(v).~~

~~Let e=error of v, then the error of V is V-A=f(a+e)-f(a)= f® as v is nearly equal to a. Suppose now the same magnitude A also a given funetion Fila) of a seeond magnitude a,, which is also observed and found to be %; also for a third, and so on ; henee, writing C= f' (v), Cp=7"1(2,),~~

~~&e. V-A=/"(v). e=Ce V,-A=f'(y)) =Cye 7. Vo at A =f'(V2). €,= Coe,~~

~~(60),~~

~~1);~~

~~and we have to judge of the best value for the unknown quantity, whose true value is called A. The arithmetical mean of V,Vi, Ve — Seems the simplest, but it is not here the most probable, and~~

~~we shal] assume it to be a different mean, viz.,~~

~~x eV +m Vi mV_ Base M+tM+M,+ . (As V,V,,V. ... . are very nearly equal, it would be easy to show that any other way of eombining them would be equivalent to this.) The factors m, m, m.… . . remain to be determined. From (61) the error of X is KH A MCE +m Oye, + MCoeg + ree M+m,+ Mgt.…~~

~~Let the moduli of the errors €, €],€ Demc.GnCoue a = (See art, 56); then (see art. 49) for modulus of the error X— A we have (mod.)2= m?C*¢c* +m? 0%? + m2C2c2? +... (63) (M+m,myt...)? ; . are determined so us to make this~~

~~(62).~~

~~If the faetors mm,m, . .~~

~~783~~

~~modulus the least possible, the importanee of the error X — A is the least possible. Differentiate with regard to m, and we find~~

~~mO%e a ee + mi Ore + ae~~

~~M+Mm+Myt… Likewise for m,, and so on. Hence~~

~~mO?c? = m,Cici =m,02c2 =, &c.; so that the most accurate mean to take is NE octave me oy aa i ead (CAR Chee * Cae The modulus of error in this value is, from (63), 1 1 1 il (mod.)? C22 * Gee? T Oza t pant ee) 58. The errors ¢,¢,€... . areunknown. We have as to the~~

~~first V-A=ef'(v)=(v-a) f®. Let the values of the quantities observed corresponding to the value X for that sought be w, ,... so that X=f(x)=f(%)=fo(2) . . — then X-A=(x-a)f"(v) ; and, subtracting, V—-X=(v-2)f'(v)=(v-2)C. Here V — X is the apparent error in V, v—z the apparent error of the observation v, taking X, x as the true values. Of course we have also Vi X=(4,)0], Ve—-X=(t%-m)C,,-...~~

~~If now we were to determine X so as to render the sum of squares of apparent errors of the observations, each divided by the square of tts modulus, a minimum,—that is,~~

~~Cae Fa eV — AY, (Vg Vg XP a or es ee Circ? Gee? a minimum,—we shall find the same value (64) for X.~~

~~Of course if the modulus is the same for all the observations the sum of squares simply is to be made a minimum.~~

~~To take a very simple instance. An observed value of a quantity is P ; an observed value of a quantity known to be the square root of the former is Q; what is the most probable value ?~~

~~If X be taken for the quantity, the apparent error of P is P—X ; the apparent error of Q is found from~~

~~(Q-e'=X; »*. €=(Q?— X)/2Q ; .. (P-X)?+(Q?- X)?/4Q?= minimum ; .. X= (4P + 1)Q?/(4Q?+ 1) ;s the weight of both observations being supposed the same.~~

~~Again, suppose a circle is divided by a diameter into two semi- circles ; the whole circumference is measured and fonnd to be L; also the two~~

~~*semicircles are found to be M and N respectively. What is the most probable value of the circumference ?*~~

~~*If X be taken as the circumference, the apparent error in L is , L-X; those of Mand N are M-4X, N-4X. HIence, if all the measurements are equally good,*~~

~~*(L—X)??(N -3X)?=minimun, .. A=3(M+N+2L) is the most probable value. The modulus of error of this result is (65) found to be (mod.)?=2(miod. of measurements)?*~~

~~*; (64).*~~

~~*ig sires*~~

~~*+ +, &c.,*~~

~~*so that probable errer= (prob. error of a measurement),/?.*~~

~~*59. In the last article we have explained the method of least squares, aS applied to determine one unknown element from more than one observation of the element itself or of others with which it is eonnected by known laws. If several observations of the element itself are made, it is obvious that the method of least squares gives the arithmetical mean of the observations as the best value, thus justifying what eommon sense seems to indicate. If the observations are rot equally good, the best value will be*~~

~~*x VV FV + eVot ae WW + Uyt… calling w, w,, W., .. . the weights of the different observations V,V;, V2 v*~~

~~*1.6, w=c-?, wy=¢,-2, Wo=C,7?,, &c.*~~

~~*It would earry us beyond our assigned limits in this article to attempt to demonstrate and explain the method of least squares when several elements have to be determined from a number of observations exeeeding the elements in number. We must there- fore refer the reader to the works already named, and also to the following :—Gauss, Theoria Combinationis Observationum ; Gauss, Theoria Motus; Airy, Theory of Errors of Observation; Leslie Ellis, in Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. viii.*~~

~~The rule in such cases is that the sum 0 f errors is to be made a minimum, as in the case of a singl~~

~~To take a very simple example :— ; ; A pe ciatb is weighed, and the weight is found to be W. It is~~

~~adhe ; : : 7 ee then divided into two portions, whose weights are found to and Q. What is the most probable weight of the body ? Taking A and Bas the weights of the two portions, the apparent errors are P— A, Q — B, and that of the whole is W- A—B; hence~~

~~(P- A)?? (W-A- ByY=minimum there being two independent variables A, B. ., P-A+W-A-B=0; Q-B+W-A-B=0; or 2A+B=P+W 2B+A=Q+W ., A+B=} (P+Q+2W); A=4(2P+W-Q); B=4(2Q+W-P); which are the most probable weights of the whole and the two parts.~~

~~f squares of the apparent e element.~~

~~VI. On LocaL PROBABILITY.~~

~~60. It remains to give a brief acconnt of the methods of deter- mining the probabilities of the fulfilment of given conditions by variable geometrical magnitudes, as well as the mean values of such magnitudes. Recent researches on this subject have led to many very remarkable results; and we may observe that to English mathematicians the credit almost exclusively belongs. It is a new instance, added to uot a few which have gone before, ofa revival for which we have to thank the eminent men who during the 19th century have enabled the country of Newton to take a place less unworthy of her in the world of mathematical science.~~

~~At present the investigations on this subject have not gone beyond the theoretical stage ; but they should not be undervalued on this account. The history of the theory of probabilities has sufficiently shown that what at first seems merely ingenious and a matter of curiosity may turn out to have valuable applications to practical questions. HIow little could Pascal, James~~

~~*Bernoulli, and De Moivre have anticipated the future of the science which they were engaged in creating ? :*~~

~~*61. The great naturalist Buffon was the first who proposed and solved a question of this description. It was the following :—*~~

~~*A floor is ruled with equidistant parallel lines ; a rod, shorter than the distance between each pair, being thrown at random on the floor, to find the chance of its falling on one of the lines.*~~

~~*Let « be the distance of the centre of the rod from the nearest line,*~~ ~~the inclination of the rod to a perpendicular to the parallels, 2a the common distance of the parallels, 2c the length of rod; then, as all values of « and*~~ ~~*between their extreme limits are equally probable, the whole number of cases will be represented by*~~

~~*fof peed =r0. 0 f_*™ 3 ‘*~~

~~*‘ ‘ 2 Now if the rod crosses one of the lines we must have c> are*~~

~~*so that the favourable cases will be measured by*~~

~~*3 ccosé of ao fe deo= 2c,*~~

~~*= 0 2*~~

~~*Thus the probability required is p=2c/ra.*~~

~~*Laplace in solving this question suggests that by making a great number of trials, and counting the cases where the rod falls on a line, we could determine the value of x from this result, He further considers, for a given value of a, what length 2c should be chosen for the rod so as to give the least chance of error in a given large number N of throws.*~~

~~*In art. 8 we have shown that the chance that the number of successes shall lie between pN-+r is*~~

~~*a= Zs a Seal! a/rJ0*~~

~~1~~

~~where a? = ——— _es—7" 2p(1—p)N~~

~~For a given probability =, ra is given. We have then a given~~

~~chance that the number of successes shall differ from its most pro-~~

~~ws value pN by an error r which is the least possible fraction of~~

~~the latter when r/pN, or when 1/apN, or when «/p(1— is the~~

~~least possible ; that is, when p-} =i =7a/2c nf ae least~~

~~1 = 2~~

~~Tf S=number of successes, we have an assigned chance @w that S lies~~

~~between pN—r; that is, the value of m lies between a6 Sar' or = te)~~

~~a r a isa Henes the error in z is least: when 2cr/S? is least. Now roc /PA—p), 2cccp, and Scop nearly; hence /~1—p)/p is to be the least possible.~~

~~EROBABAU UTE~~

~~possible, or when ¢ is the greatest possible. Now the greatest value of ¢ is a; the rod therefore should be equal to the distance between the lines.~~

~~*Laplace's answer is incorrect, though originally given right, (see Todhunter, p. 591; also Czuber, p. 90).*~~

~~*62. Questions ou local probability and mean values are of course reducible, by the employment of Cartesian or other coordinates, to multiple integrals. Thns any one relating to the position of two variable points, by introducing their coordinates, can be made to depend on quadruple integrals,—whether in finding the sum of the values of a given function of the coordinates, with a view to obtaining its mean value, or in finding the number of the favourable cases, when a probability is sought. The intricacy and difficulty to be encountered in dealing with such multiple integrals aud their limits is so great that little success could be expected in attacking such questions directly by this method ; and most of what has been done in the matter consists in turning the difficulty by various considerations, and arriving at the result by evading or simplifying the integrations. We have a certain analogy here in the variety of contrivances and artifices used im arriving at the values of definite integrals without performing the integrations. We will now select a few of such questions.*~~

~~*63. Ifa given space S is included within a given space A, the chance of a point P, taken at random on A, falling on 8, is*~~

~~*p=S/A. But if the space S be variable, and M(S) be its mean value p=M(S)/A. .. . (66).*~~

~~*For, if we suppose S to have » equally probable valnes S,, S,,*~~

~~*S3… ., the chance of any one 8, being taken, and of P falling*~~

~~*py=n-1S,/A 5 now the whole probability p=p,+p.pgt ..*~~

~~*once to the above expression. The chance of two points falling on S is, in the same way,*~~

~~*p=M(8?)/A?.*~~

~~*., which leads at*~~

~~(67) ;~~

~~and so on.~~

~~In such a case, if the probability be known, the mean value follows, and vice versa. Thus, we might find the mean value of the nth power of the distance XY between two points taken at random in a line of length J, by considering the chance that, if n more points are so taken, they shall all fall between X and Y. This chance is"~~

~~M(XY)"/"=2(n+1)-'n+2)-?; for the chance that X shall be one of the extreme points, out of the whole (n+ 2), is 2(2+2)-1; and, if it is, the chance that the other extreme point is Y is(n+1)-1. Therefore < M(XY)" = 27" (n+1)-'(m+2)-1.~~

~~64. A line / is divided into ~· segments by »—1 points taken at random ; to find the mean value of the product of the x segments.~~

~~Let a, b,c, . .. be the segments in one particular case. If » new,points are taken at random in the line, the chance that one falls on each segment is~~

~~4.23. do BME LAS = hence the chance that this occurs, however the line is divided, 1 | wl-*"M(abew. .).~~

~~Now the whole number of different orders in which the whole 2n-1 points may occur is |2~—1; out of these the number in which one of the first series falls between every two of the second is easily found by the theory of permutations to be~~

~~|n|n-1. Hence the required mean value of the product is~~

~~|n-1~~

~~|Qn-1 ~~

~~65. If M be the mean value of any quantity depending on the positions of two points (e.g., their distance) which are taken, one in a space A, the other in a space B (external to A); and if M' be the same mean when both points~~

~~are taken indiscriminately in the whole space A+B; Mz, Ms the same mean when both points are taken in A and both in B respectively ; then~~

~~_ (A+B)?M'=2ABM + A?M,+ BM. If the space A=B,~~

~~Mabe. . .)~~

~~4M'=2M+M,+Mb;~~

~~2M'=M+Mg.~~

~~66. The mean distance of a point P within a given area from a fixed straight line (which docs not meet the area) is evidently the distance of the centre of gravity G of the area from the line. Thus, if A, B are two fixed points on a line outside the area, the mean value of the area of the triangle APB=the triangle AGB.~~

~~From this it will follow that, if X, Y, Z are three poiuts taken at random in three given spaces on a plane (such that they cannot~~

~~if, also, Mz =Msz,~~

~~PRO@®AS-LLIT ¥~~

~~all be cut by any one straight line), the mean value of the area of the triangle XYZ is the triangle GG'G", determined by the three centres of gravity of the spaces. For example—~~

~~Two points X, Y are taken at random within a triangle. What is the mean area M of the triangle XYC, formed by joining them with one of the angles of the triangle ?~~

~~Biseet the triangle by the line CD; let M, be the mean value when both points fall in the triangle ACD, and M, the value when one falls in ACD and the other in BCD; then 2M=M,+M,. But M,=4M; and M,=GG'C, where G, G' are the centres of gravity of ACD, BCD, this being a case of the above theorem; hence M,=3ABC, and~~

~~M=;;ABC.~~

~~*Hence the chance that a new point Z falls on the triangle XYC is 4; and the chance that three points X,Y,Z taken at random form, with a vertex C, a re-entrant quadrilateral, is §.*~~

~~*67. If M be a mean value depending on the positions of 2 points falling on a space A; and if this space receive a small increment a, and M' be the same mean when the ~ points are taken on A+a, and M, the same mean when one point falls on a and the remaining m—1 on A; then, the sum of all the cases being M'(A+a)", and this sum consisting of the cases (1) when all the points are on A, (2) when one is on a the others on A (as we may neglect all where two or more fall on a), we have*~~

~~*M(A+ a)"=MA"+nM,aA"-1; .. (M'-M)A=no(M,-M). . . . . (68), as M' nearly=M.*~~

~~*As an example, suppose two points X, Y are taken in a line of length 7, to find the mean value M of (XY)*, as in art. 63.*~~

~~*lf 7 receives an increment d/, formula (68) gives*~~

~~*ldM =2di(M, — M).*~~

~~*Now M, here=the mean nth power of the distance of a single point taken at random in 7 from one extremity of 7; and this is i(m+1)-1 (as is shown by finding the chance of other points falling on that distance) ; hence*~~

~~*idM =2di(i"(n + 1)-1-M); .*. dM + 2Mdl=2(n + 1)-Wnul, or l-1.d.MP=2(n+1)-Udl ; ate MP =2(0-+4 1)-L inHg] =21"42(n + 1)-\n+2)-14C ; ot. M=22"(n+1)-'(n4+-2)-}, r as in art. 63, C being evidently 0.*~~

~~*68. Ifp is the probability of a certain condition being satisfied by the points within A in art. 67, p' the same probability when they fall on the space A+a, and p, the same when one point falls on a and the rest on A, then, since the numbers of favourable cases are respectively p'(A+a)", pA", np,aA"-1, we find*~~

~~*(p'-p)A=no(p,-p) . . . ~ ~ ~ (69).*~~

~~*Hence if p'=p then p,=p; this result is often of great value. Thus if we have to find the chance of three points within a circle forming an acute-angled triangle, by adding an infinitesimal con- centric ring to the circle, we have evidently p'=p; hence the required chance is unaltered by assuming one of the three points taken on the circumference.*~~

~~*Again, in finding the chance that four points within a triangle shall form a convex quadrilateral, adding to the triangle a small band between the base and a line parallel to it, the chance is clearly unaltered. Therefore by (69) we may take one of the points at random in the base of the triangle without altering the pro- bability.*~~

~~*69. HIstorically, it would seem that the first question given on local probability, since Buffon, was the remarkable four-point problem of Prof. Sylvester' It is, in general, to find the pro- bability that four points taken at random within a given boundary shall form a re-entrant quad- rilateral. It is easy to see that this problem is identical with the problem of finding the mean area of the triangle formed by three points taken at random; for, if M be this inean, and A the given area, the chance of a fourth point falling on the triangle is M/A; and the chance of a re-entrant quadrilateral is four times this, or 4M/A. * yet é*~~

~~*Let the four points be Eig, & taken within a triangle. We may take one of them W (fig. 3) at random on the base (art. 68); the others X, Y, Z within the triangle. Now the four lines from the vertex B to the four points are as likely to occur in any specified order as any other. HIence it is an even chance that X, Y, Z fall on one of the triangles ABW, CBW, or that two fall on one of these triangles and the*~~

~~*B*~~

~~*785*~~

~~*Hence the probability of a re-entrant*~~

~~*EP, + 3Pr ' where p,=prob. (WXYZ re-entrant), X,Y,Z in one triangle ; Pr= O55 X in one triangle, Y in the other, Z in either.*~~

~~But p,=% (art. 66). Now to find p,; the chance of Z falling within the triangle WXY is the mean area of WXY divided by ABC. Now by the principle in art. 66, for any particular position of W, M(WXY)=WGG', where G, G' are the centres of gravity of ABW, CBW. It is easy to see that WGG'=3ABC=}, putting ABC=1. Now, if Z falls in CBW, the chance of WXYZ re- entrant is 2M(IYW), for Y is as likely to fall in WXZ as Z to fall in WXY;; also if Z falls in ABW the chance of WXYZ re-entrant is 2M(IXW). 'Thus the whole chance is p,=2M(1YW + 1XW)=#.~~

~~Hence the probability of a re-entrant quadrilateral is~~

~~b-$44-3-8- That of its being convex is 2.~~

~~70. If three points X, Y, Z are taken at random iu a triangle, the mean value of the triangle XYZ= 7, of the given triangle. For we have seen that the chance of four points forming a re-entrant figure is 4M/A, where M is the required mean and A the given triangle ; as this has been shown to be 3,~~

~~M=;54. 71. Let the three points be taken within a circle; and let M be~~

~~the mean value of the triangle formed. Adding a concentric ring a, aoe Or~~

~~A~~

~~remaining one on the other. quadrilateral is~~

~~we have (68) since M':M as the areas of the circles, M'=~~

~~1% A-;M=80e(M, — M) ; .. M=2M,,~~

~~where M, is the value of M when one of the points is on the~~

~~circumference. Take O fixed ; we have to find the mean value of OXY (fig. 4). Taking (p, 0) (p', 0') as coordinates of X, Y,~~

~~M, =(xa?) -*/[pdpde //p'dp'de'. (OXY). . Mj =(a*) Uff sep" sin (0 — 6')pp'dpdp'dode' =(rat)-}, 4 ff ¥rrr'. sin (6 — 6')dedé' , putting r=OH, r'=OK; as r=2asin@, 7' =2asin&, 1 (2a)8 T 8 me Sah ta U = $ — 6 dade'~~

~~. M, = ir og ve sin 30 sin 39' sin (6 — 0')d6a Professor Sylvester has remarked that this double integral, by means of the theorem~~

~~ff te ydxdy= f° "F(a -y,a— x)dedy ;~~

~~is easily shown to be identical with~~

~~a 8 A ae aff sin 44 sin°@' cos gaede'— ff sin89d0 =4~~

~~0/0~~

~~_ 85a? . . {= 35 kg "ae i ae HIence the probability that four points within a circle shall form a re-entrant figure is~~

~~1°3°~~

~~_ 35~~

~~p= 127? *~~

~~72, Professor Sylvester has remarked that it would be a novel question in the calculus of variations to determine the form of the convex contour which renders the probability a maxi- mum or minimum that four points taken within it shall give a re-entrant quadri- lateral. It will not be difficult to show, by means of the principles we have been examining, that the circle is the contour which gives the minimum.~~

~~For, if p be the probability of a re- entrant figure for four points within a circle of area A, p' the same probability when a small addition a, of any kind~~

~~Fig. 4.~~

~~which still leaves the whole contour convex, is made to the circle, we have by (69)~~

~~(p'-p)A=4a(p,-p); J . where p,=the probability when one point is taken in a —that is, in the limit, when one point is taken on the circumference.of the circle. But p,~p, as is shown in art. 68; hence~~

~~*yp =p=e, Hence any infinitesimal variation of the contour from the circum-ference of the circle gives dp, the variation of the probability, zero,— the same method being applicable when portions are taken away, instead of being added, provided the contour is left convex.*~~

~~*XIX. — 99*~~

~~*786*~~

~~*Hence, for the circle, the probability is a maximum or minimum. It will be a minimum, because in the formula (68) for the mean triangle formed by three points*~~

~~*(M'- M)A=3a(M, — M). M,, which is the mean triangle when one point is in a, is really greater than when it is on the circumference, though the same in the limit ; hence*~~

~~*M,>4M; .. (W'-M)A>aM ; . M/(Ata)>M/A.*~~

~~*Therefore, if we consider infinitesimals of the second order, the chance of a re-entrant figure is increased by the addition of the space a to the circle. It will be an exercise for the reader to verify this when the space is subtracted. 7*~~

~~*For an ellipse, being derived by projection from the circle, the probability is the same, and a minimun.*~~

~~*It is pretty certain that a triangle will be found to be the con- tour which gives the probability the greatest.*~~

~~*Mr Woolhouse has given (Hduc. Times, Dec. 1867) the values of p for*~~

~~*Triangle. Parallelogram. Reg. Hexagon. Circle. p= : th | aR te? or °3333 "3056 2973 "2955*~~

~~*73. Many questions may be made to depend upon the four-point problem. Thus, if two points A,B are taken at random in a given convex area, to find the chance that two others C, D, also taken at random, shall lie on opposite sides of the line AB.*~~

~~Let » be the chance that ABCD is re-entrant. If it is, the chance is easily seen to be 4 that any two of the four lie on opposite sides of the line joining the two others. If ABCD is convex, the same chance is 4; hence the required probability is~~

~~w=tp+3(1—-p)=h+ép. Or we might proceed as follows, ¢.g., in the case of a triangle :—~~

~~The sides of the triangle ABC (fig. 5) produced divide the whole triangle into seven spaces. Of these, the mean value of those marked ais the same, viz., the mean value of ABC, or 7, of the whole triangle, as we have shown, —the mean value of those marked 8 being 3 of the triangle. .~~

~~This is easily seen : for instance, if the whole area =7, the mean value of the space PBQ gives the chance that if the fourth point D be taken at random B shall falt within the triangle ADC ; now the mean value . of ABC gives the chance that D Fig. 5. shall fall within ABC ; but these two chances are equal. Hence we see that if A, B, C be taken at random, the mean value of that portion of the whole triangle which lies on the same side of AB as C does is 44 of the whole, and that of the opposite portion is 3%. Hence the chance of C and D falling on opposite sides of AB is 4%. _ 74. We can give but few of the innumerable questions depend- Ing on the position of points in a plane, or in space. Some may be solved without any aid from the integral calculus, by using a few very evident subsidiary principles. As an instance, we will state the following two propositions, and proceed to apply them to one or two questions :— Gs~~

~~; (1) In a triangle ABC, the frequency of any direction for the line CX is the same when X is a point taken at random on the base AB as when X is taken at random in the area of the triangle.~~

~~(2) If X (fig. 6) is a point taken at random in the triangle AB (Bb being infinitesimal), the ae eagles SL!~~

~~frequency of the distance meee) ig AX is the same as that of 4 Med ad AZ, Y and Z being two Pig: ©.~~

~~points taken at random in AB, and Z denoting always that one~~

~~of the two which is nearest to B. For the frequency in each case |~~

~~1s proportional to the distance AX or AZ. _ Let us apply these to the follow- ing question :—~~

~~A point O is taken at random in a triangle (fig. 7) ; if m more points are taken at random, to find the chance that they shall all lie on some one of the three triangles AOB, \ AOC, BOC. So fc be joined with all the points mM question, every joining line is Ls , pie equally likely to be nearest to CB. Fig. 7. Hence the chance that all the n points fall on the triangle ACD is~~

~~(m+1)-1,~~

~~B~~

~~PROBABILITY~~

~~If this isso, we have to find the chance that all he on AOC. Now if O range over the infinitesimal: triangle DCd, we may, by prin- ciple (2) above, suppose it to be the nearest to D of two points taken at random in CD. If so, the chance that AO is nearer to AD than any of the lines from A to the x points is~~

~~2(n+2)-2 ;~~

~~for, by (1) above, we may suppose all the points taken at random in CD; now any one of the n+2 is equally likely to be the last; and O is the last of the two additional points. Hence, if O is in the triangle CDd, the chance that the » points fall on AOC is~~

~~2(n+1)-(n4+2)-1;~~

~~therefore this is the chance wherever O falls in ABC.~~

~~Therefore the required chance that the n points fall on some one~~

~~of the triangles AOB, AOC, BOC is P=6(n+1)-n4+2)-!.~~

~~*Again, if O be taken at random in the triangle, and three more points X, Y, Z be also taken at random in it, to find the chance that they shall fall, one on each of the triangles AOB, AOC, BOC.*~~

~~*First, two of the points are to fall on one of the triangles ACD, BCD, and the remaining one on the other; say two on ACD, the chance of this is }, as CO must then be the third in order of the four distances from C. If this is so, the chance that the point X in BCD falls on BOC is 3. For, as above, if O ranges over the triangle CDd, we may take it to be the lowest of two points taken at random on CD; and the chance that, if another point be also taken at random in CD, it shall be lower than O is 4. Now if one of the points X is in BOC, the frequency of O in CDd will be the same as that of the lowest of three points taken on CD; and the chance that one of the remaining points shall fall in AOC and the other in AOD is the chance that O, the lowest of three particular points out of five, all taken at random in CD, shall be the fourth in order from C. Itis easy to see that this chance is #3. Hence the chance that one point falls on BOC, one on AOC, and the third on AOD is*~~

~~*4°3-Lo=20- And it will be the same for the case where the third falls on BOD. Hence the chance that one point falls on each of the three triangles above is double this, or 75.*~~

~~*75. Straight lines falling at random on a Plane.—If an infinite number of straight lines be drawn at random in a plane, there will be as many parallel to any given direction as to any other, all directions being equally probable ; also those having any given direction will be disposed with equal frequency all over the plane. Hence, ifa line be determined by the coordinates p, w, the perpen- dicular on it from a fixed origin O, and the inclination of that perpendicular to a fixed axis, then, if p, w be made to vary by equal infinitesimal increments, the series of lines so given will represent the entire series of random straight lines. Thus the number of lines for which p falls between p and p + dp, and w between w and w + dw, will be measured by dpdw, and the integral*~~

~~*S/apde '*~~

~~*between any limits, measures the number of lines within those limits.*~~

~~*It is easy to'show from this that the number of random lines which meet any closed convex contour of length L is measured by L. For, taking O inside the contour, and integrating first for p, from 0 to p, the perpendicular on the tangent to the contour, we*~~

~~*have J pd ; taking this through four right angles for w, we have by Legendre's theorem on rectification, N being the measure of the*~~

~~*number of lines,*~~

~~*: 2*~~

~~*N= ie "pd =L,!*~~

~~*θ*~~

~~*Thus, if a random line meet a given contour, of length L, the chance of its meeting another convex contour, of length /, internal to the former, is*~~

~~*p=lL.*~~

~~*If the given contour be not convex, or not closed, N will evi-*~~

~~*1 This result also follows by considering that, if an infinite plane be covered by an infinity of lines drawn at random, it is evident that the number of these which*~~

~~*| meet a given finite straight line is proportional to its length, and is the same*~~

~~*whatever be its position. HIence, if we take 7 the length of the line as the measure of this number, the number of random lines which cut any element ds of the contour is measured by ds, and the number which meet the eontour is therefore measured by 3L, half the length of the boundary. If we take 2/ as the measure for the line, the measure for the eontour will be L, as above. Of eourse we have to remember that each line must meet the eontour twice. It would be possible to rectify any elosed curve by means of this principle. Suppose it traced on the surfaee of a cireular disk, of circumferenee L, and the disk thrown a great number of times on a system of parallel lines, whose*~~

~~*distance asunder equals the diameter, if we count the number of cases in which the closed curve meets one of the parallels, the ratio of this number to the whole number es ot will be ultimately the ratio of the circumference of the curve to that of ne circle.*~~

~~*PROBABLE LT Y.*~~

~~*dently be the length of an endless string, drawn tight around the contour.*~~

~~*76. Ifa random line meet a closed convex contour, of length L, the chance of it meeting s another such contour, external to the former, is*~~

~~*p=(X-Y)/L,*~~

~~*where X is the length of " an endless band envelop- ing both contours, and crossing between them, and Y that of a band also enveloping both, but not crossing. This may Fig. 8.*~~

~~*be shown by means of Legendre's integral above ; or as follows :—*~~

~~*Call, for shortness, N(A) the number of lines meeting an area A; N(A, A') the number which meet both A and A'; then (fig. 8) :*~~

~~*N(SROQPH) + N(S'Q'OR'P'H') = N(SROQPH +S'Q'OR'P''H') +N(SROQPH, 8'Q'OR'P'H'), since in the first member each line meeting both areas is counted twice. But the number of lines meeting the non-convex figure consisting of OQPHSR and OQ'S'H'P'R' is equal to the band Y, and the number meeting both these areas is identical with that of those meeting the given areas Q, (; hence X=Y+N(Q,).*~~

~~*Thus the number meeting both the given areas is measured by X-Y. Hence the theorem follows.*~~

~~*77. Two random chords cross a given convex boundary, of length L, and area ©; to find the chance that their intersection falls inside the boundary.*~~

~~*Consider the. first chord in any position ; let C be its length, considering it as a closed area, the chance of the second chord meeting it is*~~

~~*ac/L ;*~~

~~*and the whole chance of its coordinates falling in dp, dw and of the second chord meeting it in that position is*~~

~~*2C dpdw*~~

~~*'L f/fapde*~~

~~*But the whole chance is the sum of these chances for all its positions ;*~~

~~*= FCdpde :*~~

~~*+, prob. =2L-2//Cdpda.*~~

~~*Now, for a given value of w, the value of I Cdp is evidently the area Q; then, taking w from z to 0,*~~

~~*required probability =27QL~°. The mean value of a chord drawn at random across the boundary*~~

~~*is * TI Cdpaw 1Q Lipdo ©*~~

~~*78. A straight band of breadth ¢ being traced on a floor, and a circle of radius r thrown on it at random; to find the mean area of the band which is covered by the circle. (The cases are omitted where the circle falls outside the band.)!*~~

~~*If S be the space covered, the chance of a random point on the circle falling onthe band is."*~~

~~*p=M(S)/xr°.*~~

~~*This is the same as if the circle were fixed, and the band thrown on it at random. Now let A (fig. 9) be a 5 Saat of the random point; the*~~

~~*avourable cases are when HK, the bisector of the band, meets a circle, centre A, radius 4c; and the whole number are when HK meets a circle, centre O, radius 7+4c¢; hence the probability is*~~

~~M~~

~~ya 2m: BC _¢ DP On(r+4e) Irte.~~

~~This is constant for all positions of A; hence, equating these two values of p, the mean value required is~~

~~M(S) =c(27+¢)-197°. The meaui value of the portion of the circumference which falls~~

~~: : c a on the band is the same fraction as of the whole circumference.~~

~~1 Or the floor may be supposed painted with parallel bands, at a distance asunder equal to the diameter; so that the circle must fall on one.~~

~~(87~~

~~If any convex area whose surface is Q and circumference L be thrown on the band, instead of a circle, the mean area covered is~~

~~M(S)=a2e(L+7e)-10,~~

~~For as before, fixing the random point at A, the chance of a~~

~~random point in © falling on the band is p=ln.tee/L,~~

~~where L' is the perimeter of a parallel curve to L, at a normal distance $e fromit. Now~~

~~L/= Li 29. $e. _ MS) ze TA, Lee~~

~~79. Buffon's problem may be easily deduced in a similar manner. Thus, if 27=length of line, a=distance between the parallels, and we conceive a circle (fig. 10) of diameter a with its centre at the middle O of the line,? rigidly attached to the latter, and thrown with it on the parallels, this circle must meet one of the parallels; if it be thrown an in- finite number of times, we shall thus have an infinite number of chords crossing it at random. : Their number is measured by 2x. $a, and the Fig. 10. number which meet 2r~~

~~is measured by 4r. Hence the chance that the line 27 meets one of the parallels is~~

~~p=4rlra.~~

~~80. To investigate the probability that. the inclination of the line joining any two points in a given convex area (shall lie within given limits. We give here a method of reducing this question to calculation, for the sake of an integral to which it leads, and which is not easy to deduce otherwise.~~

~~First let one of the points A (fig. 11) be fixed ; draw through it a chord PQ =C, at an inclination to some fixed line; put AP=r, AQ=r'; then the number of cases for which the direction of the line joining A and B lies between 6 and 6+dé is measured by~~

~~£(7?+72)\d0. 3~~

~~Now let A range over the space be- Hig. At tween PQ and a parallel chord distant dp from it, the number of cases for which A lies in this space and the direction of AB is from 6 to 64+dé is (first considering A to lie in the element drdp)~~

~~Cc sdpao/, (72 +92) dr =4C%dpde .~~

~~Let p be the perpendicular on C from a given origin O, and | let w be the inclination of p (we may put dw for dé), C will be | a given function of p, w; and, integrating first for » constant,~~

~~the whole number of cases for which falls between given limits~~

~~w', w" is a 1 oe fe du [C ap ;~~

~~the integral /Cdp being taken for all positions of C between two tangents to the boundary parallel to PQ. The question is thus reduced to the evaluation of this double integral, which, of course, is generally difficult enough ; we may, however, deduce from it a remarkable result ; for, if the integral~~

~~1 /f Cdpdw~~

~~*be extended to all possible positions of C, it gives the whole number of pairs of positions of the points A, B which lie inside the area ; but this number is 0? ; hence*~~

~~*S/Cdpdw = 30,3 the integration extending to all possible positions of the chord C,— its length being a given function of its co- ordinates p, w.*~~

~~*Cor. Hence if L, Q be the perimeter and area of any closed convex contour,*~~

~~*two concentric similar ellipses); let the Fis, 12." annular area between them be called A; atic,*~~

~~*the mean value of the cube of a chord from a point X taken at random on this annulus draw tangents*~~

~~*Q*~~

~~*drawn across it at random is 30°/L.*~~

~~*81. Let there be any two convex boundaries (fig. 12) so related that a tangent at any point V to the inner cuts off a constant segment S from the outer (¢.9.,*~~

~~*2 The line might be anywhere within the circle without altering the question.*~~

~~*3 This integral was given by the present writer in the Comptes Rendus, 1869, p. 1469. An analytical proof was given by Serret, Annales scient. de Ecole Normale, 1869 p. 177.*~~

~~*788*~~

~~*XA, XB to the inner. shall find ' M(AB)=LS/A,*~~

~~*L being the whole length of the inner curve ABY.*~~

~~*We will first prove the following lemma :— |*~~

~~If there be any convex are AB (fig. 18), and if N, be (the measure of) the number of random lines which meet it once, N, the number which meet~~

~~it twice, 2arc AB=N,+2N,. Fig. 13.~~

~~For draw the chord AB; the number of lines meeting the convex figure so formed is~~

~~N,+N,=are+chord (the perimeter) ; but N,=number of lines meeting the chord =2 chord ; .. 2arct+N,=2N,+2N,, .°. 2arc—N,+2Ny.~~

~~Now fix the point X, and draw XA, XB. Ifa random line cross the boundary L, and p, be the probability that it meets the are AB once, 7, that it does so twice, Cr~~

~~2AB/L=p, + 2p, ; eee.~~

~~Find the mean value of the are AB. We~~

~~B~~

~~and if the point X range all over the an- nulus, and 7,, p, are the same probabilities for all positions of X, 2M(AB)/L=p, + 2p,. Let now IK (fig. 14) be any position of~~

~~it is easy to see that it will cut the arc AB ;~~

~~twice when X is in the space marked a, Fig. 14.~~

~~and once when X isin either space marked § ; hence, for this posi- tion of the line, 2a+268 28~~

~~the random line ; drawing tangents at I, K, Dp + 2p,= Vom «, which is constant; hence~~

~~M(AB)_S~~

~~a i Hence the mean value of the arc is the same fraction of the perimeter that the constant area § is of the annulus. If L be not related as above to the~~

~~*outer boundary,*~~

~~*M(AB)/L=M(S)/A,*~~

~~*M(S) being the mean area of the segment cut off by a tangent at a randoni point on the perimeter L.*~~

~~*The above result may be expressed as an integral. If s be the are a included by tangents from any point (2, y) on the annulus,*~~

~~*S{sdedy =LS.*~~

~~*It has been shown (Phil. Trans., 1868, p. 191) that, if 0 be the angle between the tangents XA, XB,*~~

~~*S/odxdy =1(A- 28). The mean value of the tangent XA or XB may be shown to be*~~

~~*s*~~

~~*oar?*~~

~~*where P=perimeter of locus of centre of gravi –*~~

~~*nee € gravity of the seg 82. If C be the length of a chord crossing any convex area Q;*~~

~~*3, 3' the areas of the two segments into which it divides the*~~

~~*area ; and p, w the coordinates of C, viz., the perpendicular on C*~~

~~*from any fixed pole, and the angle made by p with any fixed axis ;*~~

~~*then ST Adpde=6 J/s3! dpa, both integrations extending to all possible values of DP, w which give a line meeting the area, : This identity will follow by proving that, if p be the distance between two points taken at random in the area, the mean value of*~~

~~*p will be | M()=0-2 //23'dpdes .*~~

~~*M(XA)=*~~

~~*(1),*~~

~~*and also M(p)=30-3//Ctdpde . (2),*~~

~~*The first follows by considering that, if a random li area, the chance of its passing betes the two mee 21 IM, x L being the perimeter of Q. "Again, for any given position of the random line C, the chance of the two points lying on opposite sides of it is 233/0-2; therefore, for all positions of C, the chance*~~

~~*is 20-2) "ys , ule ae ae but the mean value M(33'), for all positions of*~~

~~*M(zz') J ST sx'dpdeo nd Lf/* 'dpa 'Vie L Sdpdea .*~~

~~*PROBA TLE?*~~

~~*To prove equation (2), we remark that the mean value of p is found by supposing each of the points 2 A, B to occupy in succession every pos- — sible position in the area, and dividing the sum of their distances in each case by the whole number of cases, the mea-___- sure of which number is 9%. Confin- ™ ing our attention to the cases in which the inclination of the distance AB to some fixed direction lies between and 6+d8, let the position of A be fixed (fig. 15), and draw through it a chord HH'=C, at the inclination @; the sum of the cases found by giving B all its*~~

~~*positions is wer Fig. 15.*~~

~~*a0 fe . pap +a0f" p. pdp=43(7 +1°)d0 ,*~~

~~*where r=AH, 7'=AH'. Now let A occupy successively all posi- tions between HH' and hh', a chord parallel to it at a distance =dp; the sum of all the cases so given will be*~~

~~*C aaodp f, (73+ 73)\dr = 4dédp}z2C = tdedpC}. Now, if A moves over the whole area, the sum of the cases will be 1d0fChdp , where p= perpendicular on C from any fixed pole O, and the integration extends to all*~~

~~parallel positions of C between two tan- gents T, T' to the boundary, the inclination of which is 6. Remov-~~

~~ing now the restriction as to the direction of the distance AB, and giving it all values from 0 to a, the sum of all the cases is~~

~~T of dé} Cidp ;~~

~~or, if w= inclination of p, dw=dé, and the sum is~~

~~+ ST Cidpdw .~~

~~The mean value of the reciprocal of the distance AB of two points taken at random in a convex area is easily shown to be~~

~~Mp-!=02-2//C*dpde .~~

~~Thus, for a circle,~~

~~It may also be shown that the mean area of the triangle formed by taking three points A, B, C within any convex area is~~

~~M(ABC)=02.- 09-3//08x%dpdw.~~

~~83. In the last question if we had sought for the mean value of the chord HH' or C, which joins A and B, the sum of the cases when A is fixed and the inclination lies between~~ and ~~+d6 would have been~~

~~C.4(r?+7')d0 ,~~

~~and when A lies between HH' and hh' Cc 4Cdodp rf (024. 7)dr=3dddpCs ; and finally, the mean value of C is~~

~~M©= 10 "2 ff Ctdpdeo ,~~

~~Thus the mean value of a chord, passing through two points taken at random within any convex boundary, is double the mean dis- tance of the points.~~

~~84. We have now done enough to give the reader some idea of the subject of local probability. We refer him for fuller information to the very interesting work just published by Emanuel Czuber of Prague, Geometrische Wahrscheinlichkeiten und Mittelwerte, Leip- sic, 1884 ; also to the HducationaI Times Journal, in which most of the recent theorems on the subject have first appeared in the form of questions, under the able editorship of Mr Miller, who has him- self largely contributed. In Williamson's Integral Calculus, and : 4 by Prof. Crofton, Phil. Trans., 1868, the subject is also~~

~~reated.~~

~~Literature.—Besides the works named in the conrse of this article, see De Morgan's treatise in the Encyclopedia Metropolitana; Laurent, Traité du Calcul des Probabilités, Paris, 1873; Gourand, HistoIre du Calcul des Prob., Paris, 1848; J. W. L, Glaisher, "On the Law of Facility of Errors of Observations, and the Method of Least Squares," Zrans. R.A.S., vol. xxxix.; Cournot, Théorie des Chances; Liagre, Calcul des Prob.; General Didion, Calcul des Prob. appliqué au tir des projectiles, Those who are interested in the metaphysical aspect of the question may consult Boole's Laws of Thought, also J. S. Mill's Logic. To these and the other works we have named we refer the reader for an account of what we have had to omit, but above all, to the great work of Laplace, of which it is sufficient to say that it is worthy of the genius of its author—the Théorie analytique des Probabilités. It is no light task to master the methods and the reasonings there employed; but it is, and will long continue to be, one that must be attempted by all who desire to understand and to apply the theory of probability. (CM. W. C.)~~

~~PhRO—PRO 789~~

~~EROBATE. See, WIxt.~~

~~PRCBUS, Marcus AURELIUS, Roman emperor from 276 to 282 A.D., was a native of Sirmium on the Save, and son of a military officer of moderate fortune. HIe early entered the army, where he recommended himself to the emperor Valerian, and against all rule became tribune while still amere lad. In these times there were abundant oppor- tunities for a capable officer, and~~

~~*Probus served with great distinction in all parts of the empire. Under:Aurelian he operated against the Palmyrene realm in Egypt and had a large part in the restoration of Roman authority in the East. On Aurelian's death he was quite the most pro- minent military officer of Rome, and had a great hold on the troops by his constant care for their comfort, his judicious discipline, and his unselfishness. Tacitus is said to have hesitated to assume the purple which Probus was better fitted to wear, and it is certain that he felt the support of Probus indispensable, and raised him to the rank of commander of the whole East. Ina few months the purple actually fell to him, for on the news of Tacitus's death his soldiers at once made him emperor, Florianus, who had claimed to succeed his brother, was put to death by his own troops, and the senate were eager to ratify the choice of the army. The reign of Probus was mainly spent in successful wars by which he re-established the security of all the frontiers ; the fiercest and most bloody of these operations was directed to clearing Gaul of the Germans. Probus had also to put down three usurpers, Saturninus, Proculus, and Bonosus. One of his principles was never to allow the soldiers to be idle, and to employ them in time of peace on useful works, such as the plant- ing of vineyards in Gaul, Pannonia, and other districts where a selfish policy had previously forbidden this forn1 of husbandry. 'This increase of duties was naturally unpopular with the troops, and while the emperor was urging on the draining of the marshes of his native place he was attacked and slain by a sudden mutiny. Scarcely any emperor has left behind him so good a reputation ; his death was mourned alike by senate and people, and even the soldiers presently repented and raised a monument in honour of ' Probus imperator vere probus." According to the Chron. Alex. Probus was fifty years old at the time of his death; he left a family, but they withdrew into private life in northern Italy, and the empire fell to Carus.*~~

~~*PROCESS, in law, denotes in the widest sense of the word any means by which a court of justice gives effect to its authority. In the old practice of the English com- mon law courts process was either original or judicial. Original process was a means of compelling a defendant to compliance with an original writ (see Writ). Judicial process was any compulsory proceeding rendered necessary after the appearance of the defendant. Process was also divided in civil matters into original, mesne, and final. Original process in this sense was any means taken to compel the*~~

~~appearance of the defendant. A writ of sum- mons is now the universal means in the HIgh Court of Justice. Mesne process was either any proceeding against the defendant taken between the beginning and the end of the action, such as to compel him to give bail, or was directed to persons not parties to the action, such as jurors or witnesses. Arrest on mesne process was abolished in England by the Debtors Act, 1869. Final process is practically coexistent with execution. It includes writs of jfiert facias, capias, elegit, sequestration, and attach- ment. Incriminal matters process only applies where the defendant does not appear upon summons or otherwise. A warrant is now the usual form of such process. Service of process on Sunday is void, except in cases of treason, felony, or breach of the peace, 29 Car. II, c. 7. Recent legislation gives facilities for service and execution of~~

~~certain kinds of process of the courts of one part of the United Kingdom in another part. Thus by 44 & 45 Vict. c. 24 process of an English court of summary jurisdiction may be served in Scotland, and vice versa. A writ of summons in the HIgh Court of Justice may be served out of the jurisdiction in certain cases (Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, Ord. xi.).~~

~~Stet processus was a technical term used in old common law practice. It consisted of an entry on the record by consent of the parties for a stay of proceedings. Since the Judicature Acts there has been no record, and the stet processus has disappeared with it.~~

~~In Scotch law process is used in a much wider sense, almost equivalent to practice or procedure in English law. Process in the English sense corresponds rather to diligence. Where papers forming steps of a process are borrowed and not returned, diligence of process caption lies for their recovery.~~

~~In the United States process is governed by numerous statutes, both of Congress and of the State legislatures. The law is founded upon the English common law.~~

~~PROCIDA, an island less than 2 miles off the west coast of southern Italy between Capo Miseno (or rather Monte Procida) on the mainland and the island of Ischia, forming part of the circondario of Pozzuoli and the pro-~~

~~vince of Naples. Its total area is not much more than 14 square miles, but it is fertile, well-cultivated, and thickly peopled (10,788 inhabitants in 1871, 10,891 in 1881). Like the neighbouring mainland it is largely of volcanic origin, and the ancient Greek name Prochyte (Ipoyvry), Latinized as Procita, possibly refers to this fact. The two fine bays on the south coast are remains of craters, and the soil is almost exclusively tuff. The coasts are usually a rocky scarp ; the general surface of the island is compara- tively low and flat. Procida, the chief town, lies on the isthmus of a peninsula, at the landward extremity, looking out over a spacious bay. It contains a castle, now used as a prison, and an old royal palace of the Bourbons, who had a hunting park in the island ; and the harbour is defended by a fort. Inthe Piazza dei Martiri is a monument to the twelve who were executed as political offenders in 1799. The islanders are mainly engaged in market-gardening, vine-growing, the fisheries, and the coasting trade; but the number of fishing-boats belonging to Procida is much smaller than it used to be. In accordance with their claim to be of Greek descent the women are accustomed to wear on the festival of St Michael a picturesque Greek costume and to dance the tarantula.~~

~~In the 13th century the island was the feudal possession of Gio- vanni da Procida, the chief conspirator in the Sicilian Vespers. The capture off the coast, by the Ottoman fleet, of a number of Andrea Doria's galleys in 1522 was the last of many instances in which Procida was made to realize the hostility of Mohammedan powers. In 1799, from 1806 to 1809, and again in 1813 it was occupied by the English.~~

~~PROCLUS. See NEoPLaToNIsM.~~

~~PROCONSUL. See Consut, vol. vi. p. 315, and PROVINCE.~~

~~PROCOPIUS, the most eminent historian of the Eastern Roman empire, was born at Ceesarea in Palestine, then one of the chief cities of the Ronian East, towards the end of the 5th century, probably between 485 and 495 a.p. Of his family and earlier life nothing is known, but it has been plausibly conjectured from the aristocratic sympathies he manifests that he belonged to one of the better families of his city, and from the place of his birth that lhe was educated at the great law school of Berytus (Beirut). He became a lawyer, probably at Constantinople, and was in 526 appointed avpPovdos~~

~~to Belisarius, who was proceed- ing to command the imperial army in the war against the Persians (Proc., Pers., i. 12). The chief duties of this office, which is also described as that of rdpedpos or cvyxédedpos,, seem to have been the giving of legal advice to the general,~~

~~who had a measure of judicial as well as administrative |~~

~~power, and have been well compared by Mr Hodgkin (Italy and Her Invaders, vol. iii. p. 638) to those of an English judge advocate. When the Persian War was suspended Procopius probably returned with his general to Constanti- nople ; and when Belisarius was despatched against the Vandals of Africa in 533 Procopius again accompanied him, as he subsequently did in the war against the Ostro- goths of Italy which began in 536. Whether he held the same position of legal assessor through these campaigns or was merely a member of the large personal following which Belisarius had we do not know. Suidas calls him the secre- tary (iroypapets) of Belisarius, but this may be merely a reference to his original appointment as ovpPovdos in the Persian campaign. He was evidently much valued by Beli- sarius, who twice employed him on difficult and important missions—once in 533 to obtain from Syracuse provisions for the Roman fleet and information as to the preparations of the Vandals, and again in 537, when the historian was despatched from Rome, which Belisarius was holding against the Goths, to collect troops and corn in Campania and bring them in a fleet to Ostia. On both occasions Procopius ac- quitted himself with skill and success. He passes lightly over his own performances, and nowhere strikes us as eager for an opportunity of singing his own praises.~~

~~After the capture of Ravenna in 539 Procopius would seem to have returned to Constantinople, where he was in 542, the year of the great plague, which he has minutely described (ers., ii. 22). It does not appear whether he was with the Roman armies in the later stages of the Gothic War, when Belisarius and afterwards Narses fought against Totila in Italy, though his narrative of these years is so much less full and minute than that of the earlier warfare that probably he was not an eye-witness of these campaigns. Of his subsequent fortunes we know nothing, except that he was living in 559. He was an advocate by profession (Agathias, Evagrius, and other~~

~~*Byzantine writers call him fyrwp), but whether he practised law after his return from the Italian wars may be doubted, for he must have been then occupied with the composition of his his- tories, and his books show that he spent a good deal of time in travel. HIe seldom refers to legal matters, and shows little interest in them, mentioning only in the most cursory way the legislation and codification of Justinian. Whether he was the Procopius who was prefect of Con- stantinople in 562 (Theophanes, Chronographia, 201, 202) and was removed from office in the year following cannot be determined. Little can be founded on the name, for it was a common one in that age, and had this Procopius been our historian one might have expected some of the subsequent writers who refer to the latter to have men- tioned this fact about him. On the other hand the historian was evidently a person of note, who had obtained the rank of Ilustris (Suidas calls him "IAAovezpios), and a passage in the Anecdota looks as if he had risen to be a senator (Anecd., c. 12), so that there is no improbability in his having been raised to the high office of prefect.*~~

~~*There has been some controversy as to his religion. So far as external profession went, he must have been a Christian ; for paganism, persecuted by Justinian, would hardly have been tolerated in so conspicuous a person ; nor is there any evidence for his being a heathen other than the cool indifference with which (except in the De didi- Jictis) he speaks about Christian beliefs and practices. HIe seems to have been so far a Christian as to have believed in a God and have held Christ to be a supernatural being, but he frequently expresses himself in sceptical language, ee God and Fate as if practically synonymous, and*~~

~~*ertained great contempt for the theological controversies which raged so hotly in his own time,*~~

~~*PR OC OrkEUS*~~

~~*Procopius's writings fall into three divisions—the /is- tories (Persian, Vandal, and Gothic Wars) in eight books, the treatise on the Buildings of Justinian (De Aidificiis) in six books, and the Unpublished Memoirs (ra '"Avéxdora, HIstoria Arcana), here cited as the Anecdota.*~~

~~*The Histories are called by the author himself the Books about the Wars (ot trép rév wodkepwv Adyot). They consist of—(1) the Persian Wars, in two books, giving a narrative of the long struggle of the emperors Justin and Justinian against the Persian kings Kobad and Chosroes Anushirvan down to 550 ; (2) the Vandal War, in two books, describ- ing the conquest of the Vandal kingdom in Africa and the subsequent events there from 532 down to 546 (with a few words on later occurrences); (3) the Gothic War, in four books, narrating the war against the Ostrogoths in Sicily and Italy from 536 till 552. These three treatises were written continuously to form one connected history ; but, as the arrangement of events is geographical, not chronological, they overlap in time, the Persian War carry- ing its narrative over a large part of the period embraced in the Vandal War and the Gothic War. The fourth and last of the four books of the Gothic War is really a general history of the empire, designed to continue the Persian War as well as the Gothic. It was written after the year in which the preceding seven books had been published, and was itself published apparently in 554 or 555. These eight books of Histories, although mainly occupied with military matters, contain notices of some of the more im- portant domestic events, such as the Nika insurrection at Constantinople in 532, the plague in 542, the conspiracy of Artabanes in 548. They tell us, however, comparatively little about the civil administration of the empire, and nothing about legislation. On the other hand they are rich in geographical and ethnographical information, often of the highest value for our knowledge of the barbarian and particularly of the Teutonic tribes who lived on the borders of the empire and were either its enemies or the material of its armies.*~~

~~*As an historian, Procopius would have deserved honous in any age, and is of quite unusual merit when one con- siders the generally low literary level of the age which produced him. From the 4th to the 15th century the Eastern empire has no lay writer of gifts approaching his. He is industrious in collecting facts, careful and impartial in stating them; his judgment is sound, his reflexions generally acute, his conceptions of the general march and movement of things not unworthy of the great events he has recorded. His descriptions, particularly of military operations, are clear, and his especial fondness for this part of the subject seldom leads him into unnecessary minuteness. The style, although marked by mannerisms, by*~~

~~*occasional affectations and rhetorical devices, is on the whole direct and businesslike, nor is the Greek bad, when one considers the time. Thucydides and Herodotus are the two models whom he keeps always before his eyes: he imi- tates the former in the maxims (yv@par) he throws in, and the speeches which he puts into the mouth of the chief actors ; the latter in his frequent geographical digressions, in the personal anecdotes, in the tendency to collect and attach some credence to marvellous tales. It need hardly be said that he falls far short of the vigour and profundity of the Attic, as well as of the genial richness, the grace, the simplicity, the moral elevation, the poetical feeling of the Ionic historian. posed by Procopius himself, rarely showing any dramatic variety in their language, but they seem sometimes to con- vey the substance of what was said, and even when this is not the case they frequently serve to bring out the points of a critical situation. The geographical and ethnological notices are precious. Procopius is almost as much a geo-*~~

~~*The speeches are obviously com-*~~

~~*PE@*eceorrtus*~~

~~*grapher as an historian—it is one of his merits to have perceived the importance of each science to the other—and his descriptions of the peoples and places he himself visited are generally careful and thorough. Although a warmly patriotic Roman, he does full justice to the merits of the barbarian enemies of the empire, and particularly of the Ostrogoths; although the subject of a despotic prince, he criticizes the civil and military administration of Justinian and his dealings with foreign peoples with a*~~

~~*freedom which gives a favourable impression of the toler- | His chief defects are a somewhat |*~~

~~*ance of the emperor. pretentious and at the same time monotonous style, and*~~

~~*a want of sympathy and intensity, which prevents him |*~~

~~*from giving full life and reality to the personages who figure in his narrative, or raising it to a level worthy of the great and terrible scenes*~~

~~*which he has sometimes to describe.*~~

~~*The De Adificiis, or treatise on the Buildings of Jus- tinian, contains an account of the chief public works executed during the reign of the emperor down to 558, in which year it seems to have been composed, particularly churches, palaces, hospitals, fortresses, roads, bridges and other river works. All these are of course ascribed to the personal action of the monarch. The treatise is a litle longer than the average length of one single book of the eight books of the Histories. Its arrangement is geogra- phical ; beginning from Constantinople, it describes works executed in the Mesopotamian provinces, in Armenia and the Caucasian countries, in Thrace and Macedonia, in Asia Minor and Syria, in Egypt and Africa as far as the Pillars of Hercules. If not written at the conimand of Justinian (as some have supposed), it is at any rate semi- official, being evidently grounded on official information, and is full of gross flattery of the emperor and of the (then deceased) empress. In point of style it is greatly inferior to the Histories—florid, pompous, and affected, and at the same time tedious. Its chief value lies in the geographi- cal notices which it contains.*~~

~~*The Anecdota, or Secret History, in length almost equal to the De Adificits, and somewhat shorter than the aver-*~~

~~*age length of a book of the Histories, purports to be a | supplement to these, containing explanations and additions | _ ITistories, and have the air of being unfinished or at least*~~

~~*which the author could not place in the //istories for fear of Justinian and Theodora. It is a furious invective*~~

~~*against these sovereigns, their characters, personal con- |*~~

~~*duct, and government, with attacks on Belisarius and his wife Antonina, and on other official persons of note in the civil and military services of the empire—attacks whose effect is weakened by the passion the author betrays.*~~

~~*Frequent references to the Hzstories are interspersed, but | the events of the wars are seldom referred to, the main | topic being the personal and official*~~

~~*misdeeds of the rulers | The ferocity and brutality of |*~~

~~*as shown in domestic affairs. this scandalous chronicle astonish us, for modern writings*~~

~~*of the same order have usually been the work of vulgar | | of Trajan or Hadrian.*~~

~~*and anonymous scribblers, not of an able, accomplished, and highly placed man such as Procopius was. its authenticity has been often called in question, and a few words are needed both on that question and on the further question of the credibility of its contents.*~~

~~*It was unknown to Agathias and Evagrius, younger contemporaries of Procopius who frequently mention his LTistories, and is first referred to by Suidas (writing in the 10th century), who ascribes it to Procopius. Two MSS. (since lost) are mentioned as having been brought to Italy in the days of the Renaissance, but the first publication was made by Nicholas Alemanni, an official of the Vatican, who found a MS. in that library and edited it with copious and learned notes and a Latin translation (Lyons, 1623). Since his day several jurists (led thereto by jealousy for*~~

~~*Hence |*~~

~~*791*~~

~~*Justinian's reputation) and other scholars have denied it to be the work of Procopius, among whom it is sufficient to refer to the latest, J. H. Reinkens.! The external argunient against its genuineness, drawn from its not being mentioned till four centuries after the death of Procopius, appears weak when we recollect that it was obviously not written to be published at the time, and may well have remained concealed for generations. The internal argument from the difference between the view of Justinian it presents and that given in the De Zdijicus will impress no one who has observed the almost patent insincerity of the latter book, and the censure, severe though carefully guarded, which the Hzstories frequently bestow on Justinian's policy. On the other hand the agreement in many points of fact between the L/istories and the Anecdota, and the exactness of the references from the*~~

~~latter to the former, point to unity of author- ship; while the similarity of opinions, ideas, beliefs, pre- judices, and still more the similarities of literary manner, style, and language, supply an overwhelming body of evidence that the Anecdota are a.genuine, and so far as his deep-seated feelings go the most genuine, work of Procopius. The question, which ought never to have been deemed doubtful, has been set at rest by the careful com- parison of the use of words and phrases in the acknow- ledged works of Procopius and in the Anecdota, which we owe to the industry of Dr Felix Dahn, and which is set forth in his excellent book mentioned at the close of this article. It is less easy to pronounce on the credibility of the picture which the Anecdota give of the court and government of Justinian. Plainly there are many exag- gerations and some absurdities; yet, when we find some of the severest statements of the book confirmed by other annalists and others substantially tallying with or explain- ing those made by Procopius himself in the HIstories, we are led to conclude that there is a substantial basis of fact for the charges it brings. It is of course often difficult, sonietimes impossible, to say what deductions must be made from the form these charges take; but after study-~~

~~'ing the book closely one becomes rather less than more~~

~~sceptical. In point of style, the~~

~~unrevised. Their merit lies in the furious earnestness with which they are written, and which gives them a force and reality sometimes wanting in the more elaborate books written for publication.~~

~~The character of a man who could revenge himself for~~

~~having been obliged to bestow gross flattery on his sove-~~

~~reign by ferocious invective meant to be launched after his death inspires little respect. Otherwise Procopius is a favourable specimen of his age. HIe is patriotic, with a strong feeling for the greatness of the empire, its dignity, the preservation of its ancient order. HIe is a worshipper of the past, whose ideal is such a government as that HIs ethical standard is scarcely affected by Christianity, but is that of a Greek of classical times, with too great a tolerance of deceit when practised against barbarian enemies, and~~

~~doubtless also with a de- ficient sense of honour and personal independence. Yet his patriotism does not prevent him from doing justice to the valour of the Persians, or the still finer qualities of the Goths as he had learnt to know them in Italy. He is, however, frigid in sentiment as well as in style, and throws little geniality into his narratives and de- scriptions. In his attitude towards the unseen world he is at once sceptical and superstitious —sceptical in that he speaks with equal hesitation about the practices~~

~~1 Anecdota sintne scripta a Procopio Cesariensi inguiritur, Breslau,~~

~~1858.~~

~~and doctrines of different faiths, and declares his persua- sion that nothing more can be known about God than that He is all-wise and all-powerful ; superstitious in his readiness to accept all kinds of marvels, omens, prophecies, apparitions, and to find in the sudden changes of human affairs the action of a spiteful fortune which delights to startle men and confound their schemes. Procopius has little philosophy in his history; he is a vague and incon- sistent thinker, and is strongest when he is describing events or facts, or drawing such direct inferences from them as strike an acute man of the world.~~

~~The best edition of Procopius is that by Dindorf in the Corpus Scriptorum Historiz Byzanting, 3 vols., Bonn, 1833-388. The best criticisms and examinations of his writings are those by W. 8. Teuffel, in his Studien und Charakteristiken zur Litera- turgesehichte, Leipsic, 1871; and F. Dahn, Prokopius von Cisarea, Berlin, 1865. (J. BR.)~~

~~PROCOPIUS. Two leaders of this name are mentioned in connexion with the wars of the Hussirss (q.v.).~~

~~J. ANDREAS Procoprivs, surnamed "the Great" or "the Bald," was a native of Bohemia, born about 1380. He had travelled extensively in Europe, and had even visited Jerusalem before he received priestly orders. On the outbreak of the Hussite War he joined Zizka, and was chosen to succeed him after his death in 1425. From 1426 onwards he met with a~~

~~*succession of military suc- cesses in Austria, Moravia, Silesia, and Hungary which compelled various potentates to purchase peace, and dis- posed even the council of Basel to a spirit of compromise. Procopius and his " Taborites" were, however, dissatisfied with the "Compactata" which the " Calixtines" accepted, and resolved to carry on the contest. He perished in the decisive battle fought near Bohmischbrod on May 80, 1484.*~~

~~*II. Of Procopius surnamed "the Little" nothing is known save that he co-operated with Procopius " the Great" from 1427 onwards, and that he shared his fate.*~~

~~*PROCTER, Bryan Water (1787-1874), poet and iniscellaneous writer, was born on the 2lst November 1787. At an early age he was sent to a small boarding school near London, and thence in his thirteenth year to Harrow, where he had for contemporaries Lord Byron and Sir Robert Peel. On leaving school he was placed in the office of a solicitor at Calne, Wiltshire, remaining there until about 1807, when he returned to pursue his legal studies in London. By the death of his father in 1816 he became possessed of a small property, and soon after entered into partnership with a solicitor; but in 1820 the partnership was dissolved, and during the temporary difficulties thus occasioned he supported himself in part by literary work under the pseudonym of Barry Cornwall. After his marriage in 1824 to Miss Skepper, a daughter of Mrs Basil Montague, he returned to his professional work as conveyancer, and was called to the bar in 1831. {In the following year he was appointed metropolitan com- missioner of lunacy—an appointment annually renewed until his election to the permanent commission constituted by the Act of 1842. He resigned office in 1861. During the last years of his life a failure of speech led him to withdraw increasingly from society, and his death took place on October 4, 1874. The period of his poetic pro- ductiveness had closed many years previously, the larger proportion of his verse having been composed between 1815, when he began to contribute to the Interary Gazette, and 1823, or at latest 1832.*~~

~~*His principal works in the verse forni were—Dramatic Seenes and other Poems (1819), A Sicilian Story (1820), Mirandola, a tragedy performed at Covent Garden with Macready, Charles Kemble, and Miss Foote in the leading parts (1821), The Flood of Thessaly Cee and English Songs (1832).*~~

~~He was also the author of ee Poetica (1824), Life of Edmund Kean (1835), Essays and~~

~~ales in Prose (1851), Charles Lamb; a Memoir (1866), and of memoirs of Ben Jonson and Shakespeare for editions of their works,~~

~~PRO—PRO~~

~~A posthumous autobiographical fragment with notes of his literary friends, of whom he had a wide range from Bowles to Browning, was published in 1877. His genius cannot be said to have been entirely mimetic, but his works are full of subdued echoes. His songs have caught some notes from the Elizabethan and Cavalier lyrics, and blended them with others from the leading poets of his own time ; and his dramatic fragments show a similar infusion of the early Victorian spirit into pre-Restoration forms and cadences. The results are somewhat heterogeneous, and without the impress of a pervading and dominant personality to give them unity, but they abound in pleasant touches, with here and there the flash of a higher, though casual, inspiration.~~

~~His daughter, ADELAIDEANNE PROCTER (1825-1864), also attained some distinction asa poet, her principal works being her Legends and Lyrics, of which a first series, published in 1858, ran through nine editions in seven years, and a second series issued in 1860 met with a similar success. Her unambitious verses dealing with simple emotional themes in a simple manner have a charm which is scarcely explicable on the ground of high literary merit, but which is due rather to the fact that they are the cultured expression of an earnest and beneficent life. Latterly she became a convert to Roman Catholicism, and her philanthropic zeal appears to lave hastened her death, which took place February 38, 1864.~~

~~PROCTOR, the English form of the Latin procurator, denotes a person who acts for another, and so approaches very nearly in meaning to AGENT (¢.v.). The word is used in three senses. (1) A particular kind of university official. (2) A representative of the clergy in convocation.~~

~~There are no proctors in the United States. In Scotland the original term procurator is used to denote a law agent who practises in an inferior court.~~

~~*A procurator has been, since the Law Agents Act, 1878, exactly in the same legal position as other law agents. The procurator-fiscal is a local officer charged with the prosecution of crimes. He is appointed by the sheriff. He also performs the duties of an English coroner by holding inquiries into the circum- stances of suspicious deaths.*~~

~~*PRODICUS of Ceos, whose birth is conjecturally assigned to 465-460 B.c., was a humanist of the first period of the Sophistical movement. He was still living in 399 Bc. Visiting Athens, in the first instance (it is said) as the accredited agent of his native island, he be- came known in the intellectual capital as a good speaker and a successful teacher. Like Protagoras, he professed to train his pupils for domestic and civic affairs ; but it would appear that, while Protagoras's chief instruments of education were rhetoric and style, Prodicus made ethics prominent in his curriculum. Asa moralist he seems to have been orthodox, neither impugning nor developing traditional notions. In his literary teaching he laid special stress upon distinctions in the use of words. The Platonic Socrates (as well as Aristophanes) speaks of Prodicus with a certain respect, earned perhaps by his simple though conventional morality; but it is easy to see that Plato thought him affected and pedantic, and did not rank him either with Protagoras as a thinker or with Gorgias as*~~

~~*PRO*~~

~~*Two of Prodicus's discourses were especially | mandamus) was repealed as to England by 46 & 47 Vict.*~~

~~*a stylist. famous: one, "on propriety of language," is repeatedly alluded to by Plato; the other, entitled dpa, contained the celebrated apologue of the choice of Heracles, of which the Xenophontean Socrates (J/em., ii. 1, 21 sq.) gives a summary. Theramenes, Euripides, and Isocrates are said to have been pupils or hearers of Prodicus. For some personal traits, and a caricature of his teaching, see Plato's Protagoras, 315 C sq., 337 A sq. }*~~

~~*On the Sophistical movement, as well as for bibliographical information, see SOPHISTs.*~~

~~*PROHIBITION is defined by Blackstone as "a writ directed to the judge and parties of a suit in any inferior court, commanding them to cease from the prosecution thereof, upon a surmise either that the cause originally or some collateral matter arising therein does not belong to that jurisdiction, but to the cognizance of some other court."*~~

~~*Prohibition lies either before or after judgment. In order that proceedings should be restrained after judgment it is necessary that wanf of jurisdiction in the inferior court should appear upon the face of the proceedings, that the party seeking the prohibition should have taken his objection in the inferior court, or that he was in ignorance of a material fact. A prohibition goes either for excess of jurisdiction, as if an ecclesiastical court were to try a claim by prescription to a pew, or for transgression of clear laws of procedure, as if such a court were to require two witnesses to prove a payment of tithes. It will not as a rule be awarded on a matter of practice. The remedy in such a case is appeal. Nor will it go, unless in excep- tional cases, at the instance of a stranger to the suit. The procedure in prohibition is partly common law, partly Statutory. By 50 Edw. III. c. 4 prohibition is not to be awarded after consultation, i.e., after the judges of the superior court have remitted the case as within the juris- diction of the inferior court. 1 Will. IV. c. 21 (an Act to improve the proceedings in prohibition and on writs of*~~

~~*c. 49, but it still applies to Ireland, to which it was extended by 9 & 10 Vict. c. 118. Application for a pro- hibition is usually made ex parte to a judge in chambers on affidavit. The application may be granted or refused. If granted, a rule to show cause why a writ of prohibition should not issue goes to the inferior judge and the other party. In prohibition to courts other than county courts pleadings in prohibition may be ordered. These pleadings are as far as possible assimilated to pleadings in actions. They are rare in practice, and are only ordered in cases of great difficulty and importance. In prohibition to county courts they cannot be ordered, 19 & 20 Vict. c. 108, § 42. Further statutory regulations as to prohibition to county courts are contained in §§ 40, 41, and 44 of the same Act, and in 13 & 14 Vict. c. 61, § 22. Much learning on the subject of prohibition will be found*~~

~~*in the opinion of Mr Justice Wills delivered to the House of Lords in The Mayor and Aldermen of London v. Cox (Law Leports, 2 Eng. and Ir. Appeals, 239).*~~

~~*In Scotch Jaw prohibition is not used in the English sense. The same result is obtained by suspension or reduction. In the United States the supreme court has power to issue a prohibition to the district courts when proceeding as courts of admiralty and maritime jurisdiction. Most of the States have also their own law upon the subject, generally giving power to the supreme judicial authority in the State to prohibit courts of inferior jurisdiction.*~~

~~*PROJECTILES. See Mecuanics (vol. xv. pp. 682 sq., 706 sq.) and GUNNERY.*~~

~~*PROJECTION. If from a fixed point S in space lines or rays be drawn to different points A,B,C, . . . in space, and if these rays are cut by a plane in points A',B,C',. . . the latter are called the projections of the given points on the plane, Instead of the plane another surface may be taken, and then the points are projected to that surface instead of toa plane. In this manner any figure, plane or in space of three dimensions, may be projected to any surface from any point which is called the centre of pro- jection. If the figure projected is in three dimensions*~~

~~*| then this projection is the same as that used in what is*~~

~~*generally known as perspectwe.*~~

~~*In modern mathematics the word projection is often taken with a slightly different meaning, supposing that plane figures are projected into plane figures, but three- dimensional ones into three-dimensional figures. Projec- tion in this sense, when treated by coordinate geometry, leads in its algebraical aspect to the theory of linear substi- tution and hence to the theory of invariants and co-variants.*~~

~~*In this article projection will be treated from a purely geometrical point of view.*~~

~~*We shall first and principally treat of the projection of plane figures into plane figures, and consider a number of special cases due to special positions of the two planes or of the centre of projection. We shall next consider the representation of figures of three dimensions by plane figures (orthographic projections, drawing in plan and elevation, &c.), then treat of perspective in its ordinary sense, and speak shortly of projections to curved surfaces.*~~

~~*References like (G. § 87) relate to section II. of the article GEOMETRY, vol. x. pp. 388 sq.*~~

~~*§ 1. ProgEcTION oF PLANE FicurEs.—Let us suppose we have in space two planes wand x', Inthe plane 7 a figure is given having known properties ; then we have the problem to find its projection from some centre S to the plane x', and to deduce from the known properties of the given figure the properties of the new one.*~~

~~*Ifa point A is given in the plane w we have to join it -to the centre S and find the point A' where this ray SA cuts the plane aw'; it is the projection of A. On the other hand if A' is given in the plane a', then A will be its projection in 7. Hence # one figure in x' is the projection of another in m, then conversely the latter ts also the projection of the former.*~~

~~*A point and its projection are therefore also called corresponding points, and similarly we speak of corresponding lines and curves, &¢,*~~

~~*XD == ice*~~

~~*794*~~

~~*§ 2. We at once get the following properties :—*~~

~~*The projection of a point is a point, and one pont only, ;*~~

~~*The projection of a line (straight line) as a line ; for all points = a line are projected by rays which lie in the plane determined by and the line, and this plane cuts the plane 7' in a line which is the*~~

~~*rojection of the given line. Ase" I F 7 a point lies in a line its projection lies in the projection of the ees*~~

~~*The projection of the line joining two points A, B is the line whic joins the projections A', B' of the points ALM i or the projecting plane of the line AB contains the rays SA, SB which project the points A, B. 7 : . ? "¢ th*~~

~~*The projection of the point of intersection of two lines a, b ts the point of intersection of the projections a', b' of those lines.*~~

~~*Similarly we get—*~~

~~*The projection of a curve will be a curve.*~~

~~*The projections of the points of intersection of two curves are the points of intersection of the projections of the given curves. ;*~~

~~*If a line cuts a curve in n points, then the projection of the line cuts the projection of the curve in m points. Or –*~~

~~*The order of a curve remains unaltered by projection. ar*~~

~~*The projection of a tangent to a curve is a tangent to the projection of the curve. For the tangentis a line which has two coincident points in common with a curve. ;*~~

~~*The number of tangents that can be drawn from a point to a curve remains unaltered by projection. Or*~~

~~*The class of a curve remains unaltered by projection.*~~

~~*Example.—The projection of a circle is a curve of the second order and second class.*~~

~~*§ 3. Two figures of which one is a projection of the other ob- tained in the manner described may be moved out of the position in which they are obtained. They are then still said to be one the projection of the other, or to be projective or homographic. But when they are in the position originally*~~

~~*considered they are said to be in perspective position, or (shorter) to be perspective.*~~

~~*All the properties stated in §§ 1, 2 hold for figures which are projective, whether they are perspective or not. 'There are others which hold only for projective figures when they are in perspective position, which we shall now consider.*~~

~~*If two planes and a' are perspective, then their line of inter- section is called the axis of pryection. Any point in this line coincides with its projection. Hence*~~

~~*All points in the axis are their own projections. ence also*~~

~~*Every line meets tts projection on the axis.*~~

~~*The property that the lines joining corresponding points all pass through a common point, that any pair of corresponding points and the centre are in a line, is also expressed by saying that the figures are co-linear ; and the fact that both figures have a line, the axis, in common on which corresponding lines meet is expressed by saying that the figures are co-axal.*~~

~~*The connexion between these properties has to be investigated.*~~

~~*For this purpose we consider in the plane m a triangle ABC, and let the lines BC, CA, AB be denoted by a, b, c. The projection will consist of three points A', B', C' and three lines a' ,0,c'. These have such a position that the lines AA', BB', CC' meet in a point, viz., at S, and the points of intersection of @ and a', band 0', cand c' lie on the axis (by § 2). The two triangles therefore are said to be both co-linear and co-axal. Of these properties either is a consequence of the other, as will now be proved.*~~

~~*§ 4. DEsARcuE's THEOREM.—Jf two triangles, whether in the same plane or not, are co-linear they are co-axal. Or*~~

~~*If the lines AA', BB', CC' joining the vertices of two triangles meet in a potnt, then the intersections of the sides BC and BC', CA and C'A', AB and A'B' are three points in a line. Conversely,*~~

~~*If two triangles are co-axal they are co-linear. Or*~~

~~*Ff the intersection of the sides of two triangles ABC and A'B'C',, viz., of BC and B'C', of CA and C'A', and of AB and A'B', lie in a line, then the lines AA', BB', and CC' meet am @ point.*~~

~~*roof.—Let us first suppose the triangles to be in different planes. By supposition the lines AA', BR CO' (fig. 1) meet ina point S. But three intersecting lines determine three planes, SBC, SCA, and SAB. In the first lie the points B, © and also B', C'. Hence the lines BO and B'C' will intersect at some point P, because any two lines in the same plane intersect. Similarly CA and C'A' will intersect at some point Q, and AB and A'B' at some point R. These points P, Q, R lie in the plane of the triangle ABC because*~~

~~*Fig. 1. they are points on the sides of this triangle, and similarly in the*~~

~~*plane of the triangle A'B'C'.*~~

~~*le A Hence they lie in the intersection of two planes, —that is, in a line.*~~

~~*PROJECTION*~~

~~*Secondly, If the triangles ABC and A'B'C' lie both in the same plane the above proof does not hold. In this case we may consider the plane figure as the projection of the figure in space of which we have just proved the theorem. Let ABC, A'B'O' be the co-linear triangles with S as centre, so that AA', BB', CC' meet at S. Take now any point in space, say your eye E, and from it draw the rays projecting the figure. . 1u the line ES take any point S,, and in EA, EB, EC take points A,, B,, C, respectively, but so that S,, A;, B,, C, are not in a plane. In the plane ESA which projects the line S,A, lie then the line S,A, and also EA'; these will therefore meet in a point A', of which A' will be the projec- tion. Similarly points B'), C') are found. Hence we have now in space two triangles A,B,C, and A',B',C', which are co-linear. They are therefore co-axal, that is, the points P,, Q,, R,, where A,B,, &c., meet will lie in a line. Their projections therefore lie in a line. But these are the points P, Q, R, which were to be proved to lie in a line.*~~

~~*This proves the first part of the theorem. The second part or converse theorem is proved in exactly the same way. For another proof see (G. § 37).*~~

~~*§ 5. By aid of Desargue's theorem we can now prove a funda- mental property of two projective planes,*~~

~~*Let s be the axis, S the centre, and let A, A' and B, B' be two pairs of corresponding points which we suppose fixed, and ©, C' any other pair of corresponding points. Then the triangles ABC and A'B'C' are co-axal, and they will remain co-axal if the one plane a' be turned relative to the other about the axis. They will therefore, by Desargue's theorem, remain co-linear, and the centre will be the point S', where AA' meets BB', Hence the line joining any pair of corresponding points C, C' will pass through the centre S'.. The figures are therefore perspective. This will remain true if the planes are turned till they coincide, because Desargue's theorem remains true.*~~

~~*THEOREM.—/f two planes wre perspective, then if the one plane be turned about the axis through any angle, especially if the one plane be turned till tt coincides with the other, the two planes will remain perspective ; corresponding lines will still meet on a line called the axis, and the lines joining corresponding points will still pass through a common centre § situated in the plane.*~~

~~*Whilst the one plane is turned this point 8 will move in a circle whose centre lies in the plane r, which is kept fixed, and whose plane ts perpendicular to the axis.*~~

~~*The last part will be proved presently. As the plane r' may be turned about the axis in one or the opposite sense, there will be two perspective positions possible when the planes coincide.*~~

~~*§ 6. Let (fig. 2) , wr' be the planes intersecting in the axis s whilst S is the centre of projection. To project a point A in w we join A to S and seé where this line cuts 7'. This gives the point A'. But if we draw through S any line parallel to x, then this line will cut r' in some point I', and if all lines through S be drawn which are parallel to w these will form a plane parallel to + which will cut the plane 7' in a line 7' parallel to the axis s. If we say*~~

~~*that a line parallel to a plane cuts the latter at an infinite distance, we may say that all points at an infinite distance in x are projected into points which lie in a straight line z', and conversely all points in the line are projected to an infinite distance in Fie. 2 m, whilst all other points are projected =< to finite points. We say therefore that all points in the plane at an infinite distance may be eonsidered as lying in a straight line, because their projections lie ina line. Thus we are again led to =o points at infinity in a plane as lying in a line (comp. G. §§ 2-4),*~~

~~*Similarly there is a line j in » which is projected to infinity in x'; this projection shall be denoted by j' so that ¢ and j' are lines at infinity.*~~

~~*§ 7. lf we suppose through S a plane drawn perpendicular to the axis s entting it at T, and in this plane the two lines SI' parallel to and SJ parallel to r', then the lines through I' and J parallel to the axis will be the lines 7' andj. At the same time a parallelogram SJTI'S has been formed. If now the plane 7' be turned about the axis, then the points I' and J will not move in their planes ; hence the lengths TJ and TI', and therefore also SI' and SJ, will not change. If the plane a is kept fixed in space the point J will remain fixed, and S describes a circle about J as centre ser — SJ as radius. This proves the last part of the theorem in § 5.*~~

~~*§ 8. The plane 7' may be turned either in the sense indicated by the arrow at Z or in the opposite sense till 7' falls into 7. In the first case we get a figure like fig. 8; 2' and 7 will be on the same side of the axis, and on this side will also lie the centre S;*~~

~~—~~

~~*PROTEC TIGON*~~

~~*and then ST=SJ+SI' or SI'=JT, SJ=I'/T. In the second case (fig. 4) 7' and j will be on opposite sides of the axis, and the centre*~~

~~*u*~~

~~*$*~~

~~: T ; J —— ee Fig. 3. Fig. 4.~~

~~S will lie between them in such a position that I'S=TJ and V'T=SJ. If I'/S=SJ, the point S will lie on the axis.~~

~~It follows that any one of the four points S, T, J, I' is completely determined by the other three: if the axis, the centre, and one of the lines 7' or j are given the other is determined ; the three lines s, ', j determine the centre ; the centre and the lines 7', 7 deter- mine the axis.~~

~~§ 9. We shall now suppose that the two projective planes x, 7' are perspective and have been made to coincide.~~

~~THEOREM.—/Jf the centre, the axis, and either one pair of corre- sponding points on a line through the centre or one parr of corre- sponding lines meeting on the axis are given, then the whole projection is determined.~~

~~Proof.—If A and A' (fig. 1) are given corresponding points, it has to be shown that we can find to every other point B the cor- responding point B'. Join AB to cut the axis in R. Join RA'; then B' must lie on this line. But it must also lie on the line SB. Where both meet is B'. That the figures thus obtained are really projective can be seen by aid of Desargue's theorem. For, if for any point © the corresponding point C' be found, then the triangles ABC and A'B'C' are, by construction, co-linear, hence co-axal ; ands will be the axis, because AB and AC meet their corresponding lines A'B' and A'C' on it. BC and B'C' therefore also meet on s.~~

~~If on the other hand a, a' are given corresponding lines, then any line through S will cut them in corresponding points A, A' which may be used as above.~~

~~§ 10. Rows and pencils which are projective or perspective have been considered in the article GtomETRY (G. §§$ 12-40). All that has been said there holds, of course, here for any pair of correspond- ing rows or pencils. The centre of perspective for any pair of corresponding rows is at the centre of projection S, whilst the axis contains coincident corresponding elements. Corresponding pencils on the other hand have their axis of perspective on the axis of projection whilst the coincident rays pass through the centre.~~

~~*We mention here a few of those properties which are indepen- dent of the perspective position :—*~~

~~*The correspondence between two projective rows, or pencils, is com- pletely determined if to three elements in one the corresponding ones in the other are given. If for instance in two projective rows three pairs of corresponding points are given, then we can find to every other point in either the corresponding point (G. §§ 29-36).*~~

~~*If A, B,C, D are four points in a row and A', B', C', D' the corre- sponding points, then thetr cross-ratios are equal (ABCD) =(A'B'C'D'), —where (ABCD)=AC/CB : AD/DB.*~~

~~*If in particular the point D lies at infinity we have (ABCD)= — AC/CB=AC/BC. If therefore the points D and D' are both at infinity we have AC/BC=AD/BD, and the rows are similar (G. § 39). 'This can only happen in special cases. For the line joining corresponding points passes through the centre; the latter must therefore lie at infinity if D, D' are different points at infinity. But if D and D' coincide they must lie on the axis, that is, at the point at infinity of the axis unless the axis is altogether at infinity.*~~

~~*HEnce—Jn two perspective planes every row which is parallel to the axis is similar to its corresponding row, and in general no other row has this property.*~~

~~*But if the centre or the axis is at infinity then every row is similar to its corresponding row.*~~

~~*In either of these two cases the metrical properties are particu- larly simple. If the axis is at infinity the ratio of similitude is the same for all rows and the figures are similar. If the centre is at infinity we get parallel projection; and the ratio of similitude changes from row to row (see §§ 16, 17).*~~

~~*In both cases the mid-points of corresponding segments will be corresponding points.*~~

~~_§ 11. Invorution.—If the planes of two projective figures coin- cide, then every point in their common plane has to be counted twice, once as a point A in the figure , once asa point BY' in the figure w'. The points A' and B corresponding to them will in general be different points ; but it may happen that they coincide. Here a theorem holds similar to that about rows (G. §$ 76 sq.).~~

~~795~~

~~THEOREM.—Jf two projective planes coincide, and if it happens that to one point in their common plane the same point corresponds, whether we consider the point as belonging to the first or to the second plane, then the same will happen for every other potnt—that is to say, to every point will correspond the same point in the first as in the second plane.~~

~~In this case the figures are said to be in tnvolution.~~

~~Proof.—Let (fig. 5) S be the centre, s the axis of projection, and let a point which has the name A in the first plane and B' in the second have the property that the points A' and B corresponding to them again coincide. Let C and D' be the names which some other point has in the two planes. If the line AC cuts the axis in X, then the point where the line XA' cuts SC will be the point C' corresponding to C (§ 9). The line B'D' also cuts the axis in X, and therefore the point D corresponding to D' is the point where XB cutsSD'. But this is the same point as Ce Q@EhD~~

~~This point O' might also be got by drawing CB and joining its intersection Y with the axis to B'. Then C' must be the point where B'Y meets SC. This figure, which now forms a complete quadrilateral, shows that in order to get involution the correspond- ing points A and A' have to be harmonic conjugates with regard to S and the point T where AA' cuts the axis.~~

~~THEoREM.—If two perspective figures are in involution, two cor- responding points are harmonic conjugates with regard to the centre and the point where the line joining them cuts the axis. Similarly—~~

~~Any two corresponding lines are harmonic conjugates with regard to the axis and the line from their point of intersection to the centre.~~

~~*Conversely—IJf in two perspective planes one pair of corresponding points are harmonic conjugates with regard to the centre and the point where the line joining them cuts the axis, then every pair of corresponding points has this property and the planes are in involu- tion.*~~

~~*§ 12., PRosJECTIVE PLANES WHICH ARE NOT IN PERSPECTIVE POSITION. —We return to the case that two planes m and x' are pro- jective but not in perspective position, and state in some of the more important cases the conditions which determine the correspondence between them. Here it is of great advantage to start with another definition which, though at first it may seem to be of far greater generality, is in reality equivalent to the one given before.*~~

~~*Derinition.— We call two planes projective if to every point im one corresponds a point in the other, to every line a line, and to a point in a line a point in the corresponding line, in such a manner that the cross-ratio of four points in a line, or of four rays in @ pencil, ts equal to the cross-ratio of the corresponding points or rays.*~~

~~*The last part about the equality of cross-ratios can be proved to be a consequence of the first. But as space does not allow us to give an exact proof for this we include it in the definition.*~~

~~*If one plane is actually projected to another we get a correspond- ence which has the properties required in the new definition. This shows that a correspondence between two planes conform to this definition is possible. That it is also definite we have to show. It follows at once that—*~~

~~*Corresponding rows, and likewise corresponding pencils, are pro- jective in the old sense (G. $$ 25, 30). Further,*~~

~~*Tf two planes are projective to a third they are projective to each other.*~~

~~*THEOREM. — The correspondence between two projective planes w and x' is determined tf we have given either two rows u, vine and the corresponding rows u', v' in w', the point where u and » meet corre- sponding to the points where u' and v' meet, or two penctis U, V in 3 and*~~

~~*the corresponding pencils U', V' in m', the ray UV joining the centres of the pencils in m corresponding to the ray U'V'.*~~

~~*It is sufficient to prove the first part. Let any line a cut u, v in the points A and B. To these will correspond points A' and B' in u' and v' which are known. To the line a corresponds then the line A'B'. Thus to every line in the one plane the corresponding line in the other can be found, hence also to every point the corre- sponding point.*~~

~~*§ 13. THEoREM.—/J/ the planes of two projective figures coincide, and if either four points, of which no three lie in a dine, or else four lines, of which no three pass through a point, in the one coincide with thetr corresponding points, or lines, in the other, then every point and every line cotncides with its corresponding point or line so that the figures are identical.*~~

~~*If the four points A, B, C, D coincide with their corresponding points, then every line joining two of these points will coincide with its corresponding line. Thus the lines AB and CD, and therefore also*~~

~~*Fig. 5.*~~

~~*796*~~

~~*their point of intersection E, will coincide with their corresponding elements. The row AB has thus three points A, B, E coincident with their corresponding points, and is therefore identical with it (§ 10). As there are six lines whieh join two and two of une Jour points A, B, C, D, there are six lines such that each point in either eoineides with its corresponding point. Every other line will thus have the six points in which it cuts these, and therefore all points, coincident with their corresponding points. The proof of the second part is exactly the same. It follows——— a*~~

~~*§ 14. If two projective figures which are not identical lie in the same plane, then not more than three points which are not im a line, or three lines whieh do not pass through a point, ean be eoineident with their corresponding points or lines. ;*~~

~~*If the figures are in perspective position, then they have in common one line, the axis, with all points in it, and one point, the centre, with all lines through it. No other point or line can there- fore coincide with its corresponding point or line without the figures becoming identical.*~~

~~*It follows also that— ;*~~

~~*The correspondence between two projective planes is completely determined if there are given—either to four points in the one the corresponding four points in the other provided that no three of them lie in a line, or to any four lines the corresponding lines provided that no three of them pass through a point.*~~

~~*To show this we observe first that two planes 7, 7' may be made projective in such a manner that four given points A, B, C, D in the one correspond to four given points A,' B', C', D' in the other ; for to the lines AB, CD will correspond the lines A'B' and C'D', and to the intersection E of the former the point E' where the latter meet. The correspondence between these rows is therefore determined, as we know three pairs of corresponding points. But this determines a correspondence (by § 12). To prove that in this case and also in the case of § 12 there is but one correspondence possible, let us suppose there were two, or that we could have in the plane 2m' two figures which are each projective to the figure in + and which have each the points A'B'C'D' corresponding to the points ABCD in m Then these two figures will themselves be projective and have four corresponding points coincident. They are therefore identical by § 13.*~~

~~*THEOREM.—7'wo projective planes will be in perspective position if one row coincides with its corresponding row. The line containing these rows will be the axis of projection.*~~

~~*Proof.—As in this case every point on s coincides with its corre- sponding point, it follows that every row a meets its corresponding row a' on s where corresponding points are united. The two rows a, w are therefore perspective (G. § 30), and the lines joining corresponding points will meet in a point S. If 7 be any one of these lines cutting a, a' in the points A and A' and the line s at K, then to the line AK correspouds A'K, or the ray 7 corresponds to itself. The points B, B' in which r cuts another pair 0b, b' of*~~

~~corresponding rows must therefore be corresponding points. Hence the lines joining corresponding points in 6 and 0' also pass through 8. Similarly all lines joining corresponding points in the two planes w and 7' meet in S; hence the planes are perspective,~~

~~The following proportion is proved in a similar way :—~~

~~THEOREM. —T'wo projective planes will be in perspeetive position if one peneil cotneides with its corresponding one. The centre of these penetls will be the centre of perspective.~~

~~In this ease the two planes must of course coincide, whilst in the first case this is not necessary.~~

~~§ 15. We shall now show that two planes which arc projective according to definition § 12 can be brought into perspective position, hence that the new definition is really equivalent to the old. We use the following property :—If two coincident planes 7 and 7' are per- spective with S as centre, then any two corresponding rows are also perspective with S as centre. This therefore is true for the rows J and 7' and for 7 and 7', of which 7 and J are the lines at infinity in the two planes. If now the plane x' be made to slide on x so that each line moves parallel to itself, then the point at infinity in each line, and hence the whole line at infinity in a', remains fixed. So does the point at infinity on j, which thus remains coincident with its corresponding point on j', and therefore the rows j and j' remain perspective, that is to say the rays joining corresponding points in them meet at some point T. Similarly the lines joining cor- responding points in 7 and 7' will meet in some point T'. These ae eel T and T" originally coincided with each other and~~

~~Conversely, if two projective planes are placed one on the other, = " soon as the lines / and 7' are parallel the two points T and I" can e found by Joining corresponding points in j and j', and also in ¢ and v. If now a point at infinity is called A as a point in + and B' as a point in 7', then the point A' will lie on 7 and B on j, so that the line AA' passes through T' and BB' through T. These two lines are parallel. If then the plane 2' be moved parallel to itself till TY eomes to T, then these two lines will coincide with~~

~~each other, and with them will coincide the lines AB and A'B' This line and slnilarly every line through T will thus now coincide~~

~~PROEUTIOCR~~

~~with its corresponding linc. The two planes are therefore accord- ing to the last theorcin in § 14 in perspective position.~~

~~It will be noticed that the plane w' may be placed on 7 in two different ways, viz., if we have placed 7' on x we may take it off and turn it over in space before we bring it back to m, so that what was its upper becomes now its lower face. For each of these positions we get one pair of centres T, T', and only one pair, because the above process must give every perspective position. It follows—~~

~~In two projective plains there are in general two and only two pencils in either such that angles in one are equal to their eorrespond- ing angles in the other. If one of these peneils is made eoineident with its eorresponding one, then the planes will be perspeetive.~~

~~This agrees with the fact that two perspective planes in space can be made coincident by turning one about their axis in two different ways (§ 8).~~

~~In the reasoning employed it is essential that the lines 7 and 7' are finite. If one lies at infinity, say j, then 7 and / coincide, hence their corresponding lines 7' and j' will coincide; that is, 2' also lies at infinity, so that the lines at infinity in the two planes are correspond- ing lines. If the planes are now made coincident and perspective, then it may happen that the lines at infinity correspond point for point, or can be made to do so by turning the one plane in itself. In this case the line at infinity is the axis, whilst the centre may be a finite point. This gives similar figures (see § 16). In the other case the line at infinity corresponds to itself without being the axis ; the lines joining corresponding points therefore all coincide with it, and the centre S lies on it at infinity. The axis will be some finite line. This gives parallel projection (see § 17). For want of space we do not show how to find in these cases the perspective position, but only remark that in the first case any pair of corresponding points in + and w' may be taken as the points T and T', whilst in the other case there is a pencil of parallels in x~~

~~such that any one line of these can be made to coincide point for point with its corre- sponding line in 7', and thus serve as the axis of projection. It will therefore be possible to get the planes in perspective position by first placing any point A' on its corresponding point A and then turning 7' about this point till lines joining corresponding points are parallel.~~

~~§ 16. SimILar Ficures.—If the axis is at infinity every line is parallel to its corresponding line. Corresponding angles are there- fore equal. The figures are similar, and (§ 10) the ratio of simili- tude of any two corresponding rows is constant.~~

~~If similar figures are in perspective position they are said to be similarly situated, and the centre of projection is called the centre of similitude. To place two similar figures in this position, we observe that their lines at infinity will coincide as soon as both figures are put in the same plane, but the rows on them are not necessarily identical. They are projective, and hence in general not more than two points on one will eoincide with their corresponding points in the other (G. § 34). To make them identical it is either sufficient to turn one figure in its plane till threc lines in one are parallel to their corresponding lines in the other, or it is necessary before this can be done to turn the one plane over in space. It can be shown that in the former case all lines are, or no line is, parallel to its cor- responding line, whilst in the second case there are two directions, at right angles to each other, which have the property that each line in either direction is parallel to its corresponding line. We also sec that—~~

~~If in two similar figures three lines, of whieh no two are parallel, are parallel respeetively to their corresponding lines, then every line has this property and the two figures are similarly situated ; or~~

~~Two similar figures are similarly situated as soon as two ecorre- sponding triangles are so situated.~~

~~If two similar figures are perspective without being in the same plane, their planes must be parallel as the axis is atinfinity. HIence~~

~~Any plane figure is projected from any centre to a parallel plane into a similar figure.~~

~~*If two similar figures are similarly situated, then corresponding points may either be on the same or on different sides of the centre. If, besides, the ratio of similitude is unity, then corresponding points will be equidistant from the centre. In the first case therefore the two figures will be identical. In the second case they will be identi- cally equal but not coincident. They can be made to coincide by turning one in its plane through two right angles about the centre of similitude S. The figures are in involution, as is seen at once, and they are said to be symmetrical with regard to the point S as centre. If the two figures be considered as part of one, then this is said to have acentre. Thus regular polygons of an even number of sides and parallelograms have each a centre, which is a centre of symmetry.*~~

~~*§ 17. PARALLEL Prosecrion.—If, instead of the axis, the centre be moved to infinity, all the projecting rays will be parallel, and we get what is called Parallel Projection. In this case the line at in- finity passes through the centre and therefore corresponds to itself, — but not point for point asin the case of similar figures. To any point I at infinity corresponds therefore a point I' also at infinity but different from the first. Hence to parallel lines mecting at I cor-*~~

~~*PROJECTION*~~

~~respond parallel lines of another direction meeting at I'. Further, in any two corresponding rows the two points at infinity are cor- responding points; hence the rows are similar. This gives the principal properties of parallel projection :—~~

~~T6 parallel lines correspond parallel lines; or~~

~~To a parallelogram corresponds a parallelogram.~~

~~The correspondence of parallel projection is completely determined as soon as for any parallelogram in the one figure the corresponding parallelogram in the other has been selected, as follows from the general ease in § 14. '~~

~~Corresponding rows are similar (§ 10).~~

~~The ratio of similitude for these rows changes with the direction :~~

~~If a row is parallel to the axis, its corresponding row, which is also parallel to the aais, will be equal to it, because any two pairs AA' and BB' of corresponding points will form a parallelogram.~~

~~Another important property is the following :—~~

~~The areas of corresponding figures have a constant ratio.~~

~~We prove this first for parallelograms. Let ABCD and EFGH be any two parallelograms in «, A''B'C'D' and E''F'G'H' the _ corre- sponding parallelograms in x'. Then to the parallelogram KLMN which lies (fig. 6) be- tween the lines AB, CD and EF, GH will correspond a_parallelo- gram K'L'M'N' formed in exactly the same manner. As ABCD and KLMN are between the same parallels their areas are as the bases. Hence~~

~~ABCD _ AB A"B'C'D. _ A'B' KLMN KL' K'LM'N' KL'~~

~~But AB/KL=A'B'/K''L', as the rows AB and A'B' are similar.~~

~~Hence ABCD — KLMN 5 danke EFGH KLMN ABCD ~ KL MN? ODO SUNNY PEGA KU MN"~~

~~*Hence also*~~

~~*Fig. 6.*~~

~~*and similarly*~~

~~*ABCD _EFGH |. A'BC'D' E'F'G'H'*~~

~~*This proves the theorem for parallelograms and also for their halves, that is, for any triangles. As polygons can be divided into triangles the truth of the theorem follows at once for them, and is then by the well-known method of exhaustion extended to areas bounded by curves by inscribing polygons in, and circumscribing polygons about, the curves.*~~

~~*Just as (G. § 8) a segment of a line is given a sense, so a sense may be given to an area. This is done as follows. If we go round the boundary of an area, the latter is either to the right or to the left. If we turn round and go in the opposite sense, then the area will be to the left if it was first to the right, and vice versa. If we give the boundary a definite sense, and go round in this sense, then the area is said to be either of the one or of the other sense according as the area is to the right or to the left. The area is generally said to be positive if it is to the left. The sense of the boundary is indi- cated either by an arrowhead or by the order of the letters which denote points in the boundary. Thus, if A, B, C be the vertices of a triangle, then ABC shall denote the area in magnitude and sense, the sense being fixed by going round the triangle in the order from A toBtoC. It will then be seen that ABC and ACB denote the same area but with opposite sense, and generally ABC=BCA= CAB= - — ACB= — BAC= — CBA;; that is, an interchange of two letters changes the sense. Also, if A and A' are two points on opposite sides of, and equidistant from, the line BC, then ABC= -A'BC.*~~

~~*mene account of the sense, we may make the following state- ment :—*~~

~~*If A,A' are two corresponding points, if the line AA' cuts the axis in B, andif C is any other point in the axis, then the triangles ABC and A'BC are corresponding, and*~~

~~ABC AB AB, A'BC A'R- BA" or The constant ratio of corresponding areas is equal and opposite to the ratio in which the axis divides the segment joining two corre- sponding points, § 18. Several special cases of parallel projection are of interest. OrrHocrapuic Prosection.—If the two planes x and a' have a definite position in space, and if a figure in m is projected to w' by rays perpendicular to this plane, then the projection is said to be orthographic. If in this case the plane w be turned till it coincides with 7' so that the figures remain perspective, then the projecting rays will be perpendicular to the axis of projection, because any one~~

~~797~~

~~of these rays is, and remains during the turning, perpendicular to the axis.~~

~~The constant ratio of the area of the projection to that of the original figure is, in this ease, the cosine of the angle between the two planes x and x', as will be seen by projecting a rectangle which has its base in the axis.~~

~~Orthographic projection is of constant use in geometrical drawing and will be treated of fully later on in this article (§ 28 sq.).~~

~~SHEAR.—If the centre of projection be taken at infinity on the axis, then the projecting rays are parallel to the axis; hence cor- responding points will be equidistant from the axis. In this case therefore areas of corresponding figures will be equal.~~

~~If A, A' and B, B' (fig. 7) are two pairs of corresponding points on the same line, parallel to the axis, then, as correspond- ing segments parallel to the axis are equal, it follows that AB=A'B', hence also AA'= BB'. If these points be joined to any point O on the axis, then AO and A'O will be corresponding lines ; they will therefore be cut by any~~

~~Fig 7.~~

~~line parallel to the axis in corresponding points. therefore C, C' and also D, D' will be pairs of corresponding points~~

~~In the figure~~

~~*and CC'=DD'. As the ratio CC'/AA' equals the ratio of the dis- tances of C and A from the axis, therefore—*~~

~~*Two corresponding figures may be got one out of the other by moving all points in the one parallel to a fixed line, the axis, through distances which are proportional to their own distances from the axis. Points in a line remain hereby in a line.*~~

~~*Such a transformation of a plane figure is produced by a shearing © stress in any section of a homogeneous elastic solid. For this reason Sir William Thomson has given it the name of shear.*~~

~~*A shear of a plane figure is determined if we are given the axis and the distance through which one point has been moved ; for in this case the axis, the centre, and a pair of corresponding points are given.*~~

~~*§ 19. SYMMETRY AND SxkEW-SYMMETRY.—If the centre is not on the axis, and if corresponding points are at equal distances from it, they must be on opposite sides of it. The figures will be in involution (§ 11). In this case the direction of the projecting rays is said to be conjugate to the axis.*~~

~~*The conjugate direction may be perpendicular to the axis. If the line joining two corresponding points A, A' cuts the axis in B, then AB=BA'. Therefore, if the plane be folded over along the axis, A will fall on A'. HIence by this folding over every point will coincide with its corresponding point. The figures therefore are identically equal or congruent, and in their original position they are symmetrieal with regard to the axis, which itself is called an axis of symmetry. If the two figures are considered as one this one is said to be symmetrical with regard to an axis, and is said to have an axis of symmetry or simply an axis. Every diameter of a circle is thus an axis; also the median line of an isosceles triaugle and the diagonals of a rhombus are axes of the figures to which they belong.*~~

~~*In the more general case where the projecting rays are not per- pendicular to the axis we have a kind of twisted symmetry which may be called skew-symmetry. It can be got from symmetry by giving the whole figure a shear. It will also be easily seen that we get skew-symmetry if we first form a shear*~~

~~*to a given figure and then separate it from its shear by folding it over along the axis of the shear, which thereby becomes an axis of skew-symmetry;*~~

~~*Skew-symmetrical and therefore also symmetrical figures have the following properties :—*~~

~~*Corresponding areas are equal, but of opposite sense.*~~

~~*Any two corresponding lines are harmonic conjugates with regard to the axis and a line in the conjugate direction.*~~

~~*If the two figures be again considered as one whole, this is said to be skew-symmetrical and to have an axis of skew-symmetry. Thus the median line of any triangle is an axis of skew-symmetry, the side on which it stands having the conjugate direction, the other sides being conjugate lines. From this it follows, for instance, that the three median lines of a triangle meet in a point. For two median lines will be corresponding lines with regard to the third as axis, and must therefore meet on the axis.*~~

~~*An axis of skew-symmetry is generally called a diameter. Thus every diameter of a conic is an axis of skew-symmetry, the conjugate direction being the direction of the chords which it bisects.*~~

~~*§ 20. We state a few properties of these figures useful in mechanics, but we omit the easy proofs :—*~~

~~*Tf a plane area has an axis of skew-symmetry, then the mass-eentre (centre of mean distances or centre of inertia) lies on i.*~~

~~*Tf a figure undergoes a shear, the mass-eentre of its area remains the mass-centre ; and generally—*~~

~~*In parallel projection the mass-centres of corresponding areas {or of groups of points, but not of eurves) are corresponding points.*~~

~~*798*~~

~~*The moment of inertia of a plane figure does not change of the figure undergoes a shear in the direction of the axis with regard to 'which the*~~

~~moment has been taken. : .~~

~~Tf a figure has an axis of skew-symmetry, then this axis and the conjugate direction are conjugate diameters of the momental ellipse for every point in the axis. ka ;~~

~~Tf a figure has an axis of symmetry, then this is an axis of the momental ellipse for every point tn vt.~~

~~The truth of the last propositions follows at once from the fact that the product of inertia for the lines in question vanishes. ;~~

~~It is of interest to notice how a great many propositions of Euclid are only special cases of projection. The theorems Euel. I. 35-41 about parallelograms or triangles on equal bases and between the same parallels are examples of shear, whilst I. 43 gives a case of skew-symmetry, hence of involution. Figures which are identi- eally equal are of course projective, and they are perspective when~~

~~laced so that they have an axis ora centre of symmetry (comp. Hensel Elementary Geometry, Congruent Figures). In this case again the relation is that of involution. The importance of treat- ing similar figures when in perspective position has long been recognized ; we need only mention the well-known proposition about the centres of similitude of circles.~~

~~APPLICATIONS TO CONIES.~~

~~§ 21. THrorEM.—Any conie can be projected into any other conie. This may be done in such a manner that three points on one conie and the tangents at two of them are projected to three arbitrarily selected points and the tangents at two of them on the other.~~

~~Proof.—lf wand wu' are any two conics, then we have to prove that we can project w in such a manner that five points on it will be projected to points on wu'. As the projection is determined as soon as the projections of any four points or four lines are selected, we cannot project any five points of w to any five arbitrarily selected points on w'. But if A, B, C be any three points on u, and if the tangents at B and C meet at D, if further A', B', C'~~

~~are any three points on w', and if the tangents at B'and C' meet at D', then the plane of « may be projected to the plane of w' in such a manner that the points A, B, C, D are projected to to A', B', C', D'. This determines the correspondence (§ 14). The conic wu will be projected into a conic, the points A, B, C and the tangents BD and CD to the points A', B', C' and the lines B'D' and C'D', which are tangents to wu' at B' and C'.. The projection of w must therefore (G. § 52) coincide with w', because it is a conic i has three points and the tangents at two of them in common with w'.~~

~~Similarly we might have taken three tangents and the points of fons of two of them as corresponding to similar elements on the other.~~

~~If the one conic be a circle which cuts the line j, the projection will cut the line at infinity in two points; hence it will be an hyper- bola. Similarly, if the circle touches j, the projection will be a parabola; and, if the circle has no point in common with J, the projection will be an ellipse. These curves appear thus as sections of a circular cone, for in case that the two planes of projection are separated the rays projecting the circle form such a cone.~~

~~Any conte may-be projected into ttself.~~

~~If we take any point § in the plane of a conie as centre, the polar of this point as axis of projection, and any two points in which a line through S cuts the conic as corresponding points, then these will be harmonic conjugates with regard to the centre and the axis, We therefore have involution (§ 11), and every point is projected into its harmonic conjugate with regard to the centre and the axis, — hence every point A on the conic into that point A' on the conic in which the line SA' cuts the conic again, as follows from the harmonic properties of pole and polar (G. § 62 sq.).~~

~~_ Pwo conies which eut the line at infinity in the same two points are similar figures and similarly situated, —the eentre of similitude being tn general some finite point.~~

~~To prove this, we take the line at infinity and the asymptotes of one as corresponding to the line at infinity and the asymptotes of the other, and besides a tangent to the first as corresponding to a parallel tangent to the~~

~~other. The line at infinity will then correspond to itself point for point; hence the figures will be similar and similarly situated. é~~

~~§ 22. Angas oF Parapotic SEGMENTS.—One parabola may always be considered asa parallel projection of another in such a manner that any two points A, B on the one correspond to any two points A', B' on the other; that is, the points A, B and the point at infinity on the one may be made to correspond respectively to the points A', B' and the point at infinity on the other, whilst Ma pone at A and at infinity of the one correspond to the~~

~~ngent at B' and at infinity of the other. This completely deter- mines the correspondence, and it is parallel projection because the line at infinity corresponds to the line at infinity. Let the tangents at A and B meet at ©, and those at A', B' at C'; then OC, C' will correspond, and so will the triangles ABC and A'B'C' as well as the parabolic segments cut off by the chords AB and A'B'. If (AB)~~

~~PEOJELOTIOR~~

~~denotes the area of the segment cut off by the chord AB we have~~

~~therefore (AB)/ABC =(A'B')/A'BC' ; or~~

~~The area of a segment of a parabola stands in a constant ratioto the area of the triangle formed by the chord of the segment and the tangents at the end points of the chord.~~

~~If then (fig. 8) we join the point C to the mid-point M of AB, then this line 7 will be M bisected at D by the parabola (G. § 74), and the tangent at D will be parallel to AB. Let this tangent cut AC in E and CB in F, then by the last theorem~~

~~(AB)_(AD)_(BD)_~~

~~ABC ADE BFD ' where m is some number to be determined. The figure gives (AB)=ABD + (AD) +(BD). Combining both equations, we have ABD=m (ABC- ADE – BFD). But we have also ABD=4 ABC, and ADE=BFD=} ABC; hence 4 ABC=m (1-3-3) ABC, or m=32.~~

~~*The area of a parabolic segment equals two-thirds of the area of the triangle formed by the chord and the tangents at the end points of the chord.*~~

~~*§ 23. ELtutiptic AREAS.—To consider one ellipse a parallel projec- tion of another we may establish the correspondence as follows. If AC, BD are any pair of conjugate diameters of the one and A'C', B'D' any pair of conjugate diameters of the other, then these may be made to correspond to each other, and the correspondence will be completely determined if the parallelogrdm formed by the tangents at A, B, C, D is made to correspond to that formed by the tangents at A', B', C', D' (§§ 17 and 21). As the projection of the first conic has the four points A', B', OC', D' and the tangents at these points in common with the second, the two ellipses are pro- jected one into the other. Their areas will correspond, and so do those of the parallelograms ABCD and A'B'C'D'. Hence*~~

~~*The area of an ellipse has a constant ratio to the area of any inseribed parallelogram whose diagonals are conjugate diameters, and also to every eireumseribed parallelogram whose sides are parallel to conjugate diameters.*~~

~~*It follows at once that*~~

~~*All parallelograms inseribed in an ellipse whose diagonals are conjugate diameters are equal in area; and*~~

~~*All parallelograms eireumseribed about an ellipse whose sides are parallel to conjugate diameters are equal in area.*~~

~~*If a, b are the length of the semi-axes of the ellinse, then the area of the eireumscribed parallelogram will 'be 4ad and of the inscribed one 2ab.*~~

~~*For the circle of radius r the inscribed parallelogram becomes the square of area 27? and the circle has the area r*x ; the constant ratio of an ellipse to the inscribed parallelogram has therefore also the value $7. Hence*~~

~~*The area of an ellipse equals abr.*~~

~~§ 24, ProgecTIVE PropEertigs.—The properties of the projection of a figure depend partly on the relative position of the planes of the figure and the centre of projection, but principally ou the pro- perties of the given figure. Points in a line are projected into points in a line, harmonic points into harmonic points, a conic into a conic ; but parallel lines are not projected into parallel lines nor right angles into right angles, neither are the projections of equal segments or angles again equal. There are then some pro- perties which remain unaltered by projection, whilst others change. The former are called projective or descriptive, the latter metrical properties of figures, because the latter all depend on measurement.~~

~~To a triangle and its median lines correspond a triangle and three lines which meet in a point, but which as a rule are not median lines.~~

~~In this case, if we take the triangle together with the line at infinity, we get as the projection a triangle ABC, and some other line 7 which cuts the sides a, 0, ¢ of the triangle in the points A,, B,, Cj. If we now take on BC the harmonic conjugate A, to A, and similarly on CA and AB the harmonic conjugates to B, and C, respectively, then the lines AA,, BB,, CC, will be the projections of the median lines in the given figure. Hence these lines must meet in a point.~~

~~As the triangle and the fourth line we may take any four given lines, because any four lines may be projected into any four given lines (§ 14). This gives a theorem :—~~

~~If each vertex of a triangle be joined to that point in the opposite side which is, with regard to the vertices, the harmonic conjugate of the point in which the side is cut by a given line, then the three lines thus obtained meet in a point.~~

~~We get thus out of the special theorem about the median lines~~

~~Fig. 8.~~

~~PROJ E~~

~~*of a triangle a more general one. But before this could be done we had to add the line at infinity to the lines in the given figure. In a similar manner a great many theorems relating to metrical properties can be generalized by taking the line at infinity or points at infinity as forming part of the original figure. Conversely special cases relating to measurement are obtained by projecting some line in a figure of known properties to infinity. This is true for all properties relating to parallel lines or to bisection of segments, but not immediately for angles. It is, however, possible to establish for every metrical relation the corresponding projective property. Todo this it is necessary to consider imaginary elements. These have originally been introduced into geometry by aid of*~~

~~*coordinate geometry, where imaginary quantities constantly occur |*~~

~~*as roots of equations.*~~

~~*Their introduction into pure geometry is due principally to Poncelet, who by the publication of his great work Traité des Propriétés Projectives des Figures became the founder of projective geometry in its widest sense. Monge had considered parallel projection and had already distinguished between permanent and accidental properties of figures, the latter being those which depended merely on the accidental position of one part to another. Thus in projecting two circles which lie in different planes it depends on the accidental position of the centre of projection whether the projections be two conics which do or do not meet. Poncelet introduced the principle of continuity in order to make theorems general and independent of those accidental positions which depend analytically on the fact that the equations used have real or imaginary roots. But the correctness of this principle re- mained without a proof. Von Staudt has, however, shown how it is possible to introduce imaginary elements by purely geometrical reasoning, and we shall now try to give the reader some idea of his theory.*~~

~~*§ 25. IMAGINARY ELEMENTS.—If a line cuts acurve and if the line be moved, turned for instance about a point in it, it may happen that two of the points of intersection approach each other till they coincide. The line then becomes a tangent. If the line is still further moved in the same manner it separates from the curve and two points of intersection are lost. Thus in considering the rela- tion of a line to a conic we have to distinguish three*~~

~~*cases—the line cuts the conic in two points, touches it, or has no point in common with it. This is quite analogous to the fact that a quadratic equation with one unknown quantity has either two, one, or no roots. But in algebra it has long been found convenient to express this differently by saying a quadratic equation has always two roots, but these may be either both real and different, or equal, or they may be imaginary. In geometrya similar mode of expressing the fact above stated is not less convenient.*~~

~~*We say therefore a line has always two points in commoi with a conic, but these are either distinct, or coincident, or invisible. The word imaginary is generally used instead of invisible ; but, as the points have nothing to do with imagination, we prefer the word "invisible" recommended originally by Clifford.*~~

~~*Invisible points occur in pairs of conjugate points, for a line loses always two visible points of intersection with a curve simultane- ously. This is analogous to the fact that an algebraical equation with real coefficients has imaginary roots in pairs. Only one real line can be drawn through an invisible point, for two real lines meet in a real or visible point. The real line through an invisible point contains also its conjugate.*~~

~~*Similarly there are invisible lines—tangents, for instance, from a point within a conic—which occur in pairs of conjugates, two con- jugates having a real point in common.*~~

~~*The introduction of invisible points would be nothing but a play upon words unless there is a real geometrical property indicated which can be used in geometrical constructions—that it has a definite meaning, for instance, to say that two conics cut a line in the same two invisible points, or that we can draw one conic through three real points and the two invisible ones which another conic has in common with a line that does not actually cut it. We have in fact to give a geometrical definition of invisible points. This is done by aid of the theory of involution (G. § 76 sq.).*~~

~~*An involution of points on a line has (according to G. § 77 (2)) either two or one or no foci. Instead of this we now say it has always two foci which may be distinct, coincident, or invisible. These foci are determined by the involution, but they also determine the involution. If the foci are real this*~~

~~*follows from the fact that conjugate points are harmonic conjugates with regard to the foci. That it is also the case for invisible foci will presently appear. If we take this at present for granted we may replace a pair of real, coincident, or invisible points by the involution of which they are the foci.*~~

~~*Now any two pairs of conjugate points determine an involution (G. § 77 (6)).*~~

~~*Hence any point-pair, whether real or invisible, is completely determined by any two pairs of conjugate points of the involution ap has the given point-pair as foci and may therefore be replaced*~~

~~*y them.*~~

~~*CTION 799*~~

~~*Two pairs of invisibie points are thus said to be identical if, and only if, they are the foci of the same involution.*~~

~~*We know (G. § 82) that a eonic determines on every line an in- volution in which conjugate points are conjugate poles with regard to the conic—that is, that either lies on the polar of the other. This holds whether the line cuts the conic or not. Furthermore, in the former case the points common to the line and the conic are the foci of the involution. Hence we 'now say that this is always the case, and that the invisible points common to a line and a conic are the invisible foci of the involution in question. If then we state the problem of drawing a conic which passes through two points given as the intersection of a conic and a line as that of drawing a conic which determines a given involution on the line, we have it in a form in which it is independent of the accidental circumstance of the intersections being real or invisible. So is the solution of the problem, as we shall now show.*~~

~~*§ 26. We have seen (§ 21) that a conic may always be projected into itself by taking any point S as centre and its polar s as axis of projection, corresponding points being those in which a line through S cuts the conic. If then (fig. 9) A, A' and B, B' are pairs of corresponding points so that the lines AA' and BB' pass through §, then the lines AB and A'B', as corresponding lines, will meet at a point Ron the axis, and the lines AB' and*~~

~~*A'B will meet at another point R' on the axis. These points R, R' are conjugate points in the involution which the*~~

~~*Fig, 9. conic determines on the line s, because the triangle RSR' is a polar triangle (G. § 62), so that R' lies on the polar of R.*~~

~~*This gives a simple means of determining for any point Q on the line s its conjugate point Q'. We take any two points A, A' on the conic which lie on a line through 8, join Q to A by a line cutting*~~

~~*the conic again in C, and join C to A'. This line will cut s in the point Q' required.*~~

~~*ProsLEeM.—Z'o draw some conic which shall determine on a line s a given involution.*~~

~~*Solution. —We have here to reconstruct the fig. 9, having given on the line s an involution. Let Q, Q' and R, R' (fig. 9) be two pairs of conjugate points in this involution. We take any point B and join it to R aud R', and another point C to Q and Q'. Let BR and CQ meet at A, and BR' and CQ' at A'. If nowa point P be moved along sits conjugate point P' will also move and the two points will describe projective rows. The two rays AP and A'P' will therefore describe projective pencils, and the intersection of corre- sponding rays will lie on a conic which passes through A, A', B, and C. This conic determines on s the given involution.*~~

~~*Of these four points not only B and C but also the point A may be taken arbitrarily, for if A, B, C are given, the line AB will cut s in some point R. As the involution is supposed known, we can find the point R' conjugate to R, which we join to B._ In the same way the line CA will cut s in some point Q. Its conjugate point Q' we join to C. The line CQ' will cut BR' in a point A', and then AA' will pass through the pole S (comp. fig. 9). We may now inter- change A and B and find the point B. Then BB' will also pass through S, which is thus found. fAt the same time five points A, B, ©, A', B' on the conic have been found, so that the conic is completely known which determines on the line s the given involu- tion. HIence—*~~

~~*THEOREM.—Through three points we can always draw one conte, and only one, which determines on a given line a given involution, all the same whether the involution has real, coincident, or invisible*~~

~~*oct. In the last case the theorem may now also be stated thus :—*~~

~~*THEOREM.—ZJt ts always possible to draw a conic which passes through three given real points and through two invisible points which any other conic has in common with a line.*~~

~~*§ 27. The above theory of invisible points gives rise to a great number of interesting consequences of which we state a few.*~~

~~*The theorem at the end of § 21 may now be stated :—*~~

~~*THEOREM.—Any two conics are similar and similarly situated if they cut the line at infinity in the same two points—real, coincident, or tnvistble.*~~

~~*It follows that*~~

~~*Any two parabolas are similar ; and they are similarly situated as soon as their axes are parallel.*~~

~~*The involution which a circle determines at its centre is circular (G. § 79); that is, every line is perpendicular to its conjugate line. This will be cut by the line at infinity in an involution which has the following property: —The lines which join any finite point to two conjugate points in the involution are at right angles to each other. Hence all circular involutions in a plane determine the*~~

~~*800*~~

~~*same involution on the line at infinity. The latter is therefore called the eireular involution on the line at infinity; and the involution which a circle determines at its centre is called the circular involution at that point. All circles determine thus on the line at infinity the same involution ; in other words, they have the same two invisible points in common with the line at infinity.*~~

~~*THEOREM.—AII circles may be considered as passing through the same two points at infinity. e : .*~~

~~*These points are called the cirewlar points at infinity, and by Prof. Cayley the absolute in the plane. They are the foci of the circular involution in the line at infinity. ; :*~~

~~*Conversely—Every conte which passes through the etreular points is a circle; because the involution at its eentre is circular, hence conjugate diameters are at right angles, and this property only circles possess. ;*~~

~~*We now see why we ean draw always one and only one circle through any three points: these three points together with the cireular points at intinity are five points through which one conic only ean be drawn. ;*~~

~~*Any two circles are similar and similarly situated because they have the same points at infinity (§ 21). ;*~~

~~*Any two eoneentrie etreles may be considered as having double contact at infinity, because the lines joining the common centre to the circular points at infinity are tangents to both circles at the circular points, as the line at infinity is the polar of the centre.*~~

~~*Any two lines at right angles to one another are harmonie conjugates with regard to the rays joining their intersection to the cireular points, beeause these rays are the focal rays of the circular involution at the interseetion of the given lines.*~~

~~*To bisect an angle with the vertex A means (G. § 23) to find two rays through A which are harmonic conjugates with regard to the limits of the angle and perpendicular to each other. These rays are therefore harmonic with regard to the limits of the given angle and with regard to the rays through the circular points. Thus perpendieularity and bisection of an angle have been stated in a projective form.*~~

~~*It must not be forgotten that the cireular points do not exist at all; but to introduce them gives us a short way of making a state- ment which would otherwise be long and cumbrous.*~~

~~*We can now generalize any theorem relating to metrical pro- perties. For instanee, the simple fact that the chord of a circle is touched by a concentric circle at its mid point proves the theorem:*~~

~~*If two conies have double contaet, then the points where any tangent to one of them euts the other are harmonic with regard to the point of contact and the point where the tangent cuts the chord of contaet.*~~

~~*DESCRIPTIVE GEOMETRY.*~~

~~*For many, especially technical, purposes it is of the utmost importance to represent solids and other figures in three dimensions by a drawing in one plane.*~~

~~*A variety of methods have been introduced for this purpose. The most important is that which towards the end of the last century was invented by Monge under the name of "descriptive geometry." We give the elements of his method. It is based on parallel projections to a plane by rays perpendicular to the plane. Such a pro- jection is called orthographic (§ 18). If the plane is horizontal the projection is called the plan of the figure, and if the plane is vertical the elevation. In Monge's method a figure is represented by its plan and elevation. It is therefore often called drawing in plan and elevation, and sometimes simply orthographic projection.*~~

~~*§ 28. We suppose then that we have two planes, one horizontal the other vertical, and these we call the planes of plan and of dlera- tion respectively, or the horizontal and the vertical plane, and denote them by the letters m, and ,. Their line of intersection is ealled the axis, and shall be denoted by the letter x.*~~

~~*If the surface of the drawing paper is taken as the plane of the plan, then the vertical plane will be the plane perpendicular to it through the axis a To bring this also into the plane of the drawing paper we turn it about the axis till it coincides with the horizontal plane. This process of turning one plane down till it coincides with another is called rabatting one to the other. Of*~~

~~*course there is no necessity to have one of the two planes hori-*~~

~~zontal, but even when this is not the case it is convenient to retain~~

~~the above names,~~

~~F The whole arrangement will be better understood by a glance at~~

~~wh = ; Y sae " in = is ar projected by the perpendicular 1 g to the planes 7, and z,, so that A, and 1~~

~~horizontal and vertical projections of A. pated ose~~

~~If we remember that a line is perpendicular to a plane that~~

~~PROJECTION~~

~~is perpendicular to every line in the plane if only it is perpen- dicular to any two intersecting lines in the plane,! we see that the axis which is perpendicular both to AA, and to AA, is also per- pendicular to A,A, and to A,A, becanse these four Lites are all in the same plane. Hence, if the plane +, be turned about the~~

~~Fig 11. axis till it coincides with the plane m,, then A,A, will be the con-~~

~~tinuation of A,;Ay. This position of the planes is represented in fig. 11, in which the line A, A, is perpendicular to the axis x.~~

~~Conversely any two paints A,, A, in a line perpendicular to the axis will be the projections of some point in space when the plane a, is turned about the axis till it is perpendicular to the plane 7, because in this position the two perpendiculars to the planes 7, and zw, through the points A, and A, will be in a plane and there- fore meet at some point A.~~

~~REPRESENTATION oF Pornts.—We have thus the following method of representing in a single plane the position of points in space :— we take in the plane a line x as the axis, and then any pair of points Ay, A, in the plane _on a line perpendicular to the axis represent a point A im space. If the line A,A, cuts the axis at Ay, and if at A, a perpendicular be erected to the plane, then the point A will be in it at a height A|A=A,A, above the plane, This gives the position of the point A relative to the plane 7,. In the same way, if~~

~~*ina perpendicular to w, through A, a point A be taken such that A,A=A,A,, then this will give the point A relative to the plane 7.*~~

~~*§ 29. The two planes 7, w, in their original position divide space into four parts. These are called the four quadrants. We suppose that the plane 7m, is turned as indicated in fig. 10, so that the point P comes to Q and R to 8, then the quadrant in which the point A lies is called the first, and we say that in the first quadrant a point lies above the horizontal and in front of the vertical plane. Now we go round the axis in the sense in which the plane a, is turned and come in succession to the second, third, and fourth quadrant. In the second a point lies above the plane of the plan and behind the plane of elevation, and soon. In fig. 12, which represents a side view of the planes in fig, 10 the .P quadrants are marked, and in each a point with its projection is taken.*~~

~~*Fig. 11 shows how these are repre- 8 sented when the plane z, is turned down. We see that A point lies in the first quadrant B 5*~~

~~*Uf the plan lies below, the elevation 0 <¢ above the axis; in the seeond if plan*~~

~~*and elevation both lie above; in the ry third ¢f the plan lies above, the eleva-*~~

~~*tion below; in the fourth if plan and elevation both lie below the axis.*~~

~~*Tf a point lies in the horizontal Fic. 12 plane, its elevation lies in the axis sg and the plan coineides with the point itself. If a point les in the vertieal plane, its plan lies in the axis and the elevation coincides with the point itself. Jf a point lies in the axis, both its plan and elevation lie in the axis and coincide with it.*~~

~~*Of each of these propositions, which will easily be seen to be true, the converse holds also.*~~

~~*§ 30, REPRESENTATION OF A PLANE.—As we are thus enabled to represent points in a plane, we can represent any finite figure by representing its separate points. It is, however, not possible to represent a*~~

~~*plane in this way, for the projections of its points com- pletely cover the planes 7, and w,, and no plane would appear different from any other. But any plane a cuts each of the planes ™, 7 in aline, These are called the traces of the plane. They cut each other in the axis at the point where the latter cuts the plane a.*~~

~~*A plane is determined by its two traces, which are two lines that meet on the axis, and, conversely, any two lines which meet on the axis determine a plane.*~~

~~*SSS eee ee*~~

~~*1 It is very convenient here to make use of the modern extension of the mean- ing of an angle according to which we take as the angle between two non-inter- secting lines the angle between two interseeting lines parallel respectively to the given ones. If this angle is a right angle, the lines are called perpendiculars. Euelid's definition (XI, def. 8), and theorem (XI. 4) may then be stated as in the text. Compare also article Gzometry (EUCLIDIAN), § 75, vol. x. p. 386.*~~

~~*PROJ KE*~~

~~*Tf the plane is parallel to the axis its traces are parallel to the axis. Of these oue may be at infinity; then the plane will cut one of the planes of projection at infinity and will be parallel toit. Thus a plane parallel to the horizontal plane of the plan has only one finite trace, viz., that with the plane of elevation.*~~

~~*If the plane passes through the asis both its traces coincide with the axis. This is the only case in which the representation of the plane by its two traces fails. A third plane of projection is there- fore introduced, which is best taken perpendicular to the other two. We call it simply the third plane, and denote jt by ;. As it is perpendicular to 7, it may be taken as the plane of elevation, its line of intersection y with a, being the axis, and be turned down to coincide with w,. This is represented in fig. 18, OC is the axis x whilst OA and OB are the tracesof the third plane. They lie in one line y. The plane is rabatted about y to the horizontal plane. A plane a through the axis x will then show in ita trace ag. In fig. 18 the lives OC aud OP will*~~

~~*thus be the traces of a plane through the axis « which makes an angle POQ with the horizontal plane.*~~

~~*We can also find the trace which any other plane makes with a3. In rabatting the plane 7, its trace OB with Q the plane aw, will come to Fi the position OD. Hence a ig. 13, plane B having the traces CA and CB will have with the third plane the trace B,, or AD if OD=OB,*~~

~~*It also follows immediately that—*~~

~~*If a plane a is perpendicular to the horizontal plane, then every point in it has its horizontal projection in the horizontal trace of the plane, as all the rays projecting these points lie in the plane itself.*~~

~~*Any plane which is perpendicular to the horizontal plane has tts vertical trace perpendicular to the axis.*~~

~~*Any plane which is perpendicular to the vertical plane has tts horizontal tracee perpendicular to the axis and the vertical projections of all points in the plane lie in this trace.*~~

~~*§ 81. REPRESENTATION OF A LINE. —A line is determined either by two points in it or by two planes through it. We get accord- ingly two representations of it either by projections or by traces.*~~

~~*First.—-A line a ts represented by its projections a, and a, on the two planes 7, and w,, These may be any two lines, for, bringing the planes m,, 7, into their original position, the planes through these lines perpendicular to 7, and 7, respectively will intersect in some line a which has a, a as its projections.*~~

~~*Secondly.— line a is represented by its traces—that is, by the points in which it cuts the two planes m, m, Any two points may be taken as the traces of a line in space, for it is determined when the planes are in their original position as the line joining the two traces. This representation becomes undetermined if the two traces coincide in the axis. In this case we again use a third plane, or else the projections of the line.*~~

~~§ 82. The fact that there are different methods of representing points and planes, and hence two methods of representing lines, snggests the principle of duality (G. § 41). It is worth while to keep this in mind. It is also worth remembering that traces of planes or lines always lie in the planes or lines which they repre- sent. Projections do not as a rule do this excepting when the point or line projected lies in one of the planes of projection.~~

~~§ 38. Having now shown how to represent points, planes, and lines, we have to state the conditions which must hold in order that these elements may lie one in the other, or else that the figure formed by them may possess certain metrical properties. It will be found that the former are very much simpler than the latter.~~

~~Before we do this, however, we shall explain the notation used ; for it is of great importance fo have a systematic notation. We shall denote points in space by capitals A, B, C; planes in space by Greek letters a, B, y; lines in space by small letters a, 0, ¢; horizontal projections by suffixes 1, like Aj, a; vertical pro- jections by suffixes 2, like A,, a); traces by single and double dashes a' a', a' a'. Hence P, will be the horizontal projection of a point P in space; a line a will have the projections a, a2 and the traces a' and a"; a plane a has the traces a' and a'.~~

~~§ 34. If a point lies in a line, the projections of the point lie in the projections of the line.~~

~~Lf a Vine lies in a plane, the traces of the line lie in the traces of the plane.~~

~~These propositions follow at once from the definitions of the projections and of the traces.~~

~~If a point lies in two lines its projections must lie in the pro- jections of both. Hence~~

~~crit N 801~~

~~If two lines, given by their projections, intersect, the intersection of their plans and the interseetion of their elevations must lie in a line~~

~~*perpendicular to the axis, because they must be the projections of the point common to the two lines.*~~

~~*Similarly—If two lines given by their traces lie in the same plane or intersect, then the lines joining their horizontal and vertical traces respectively must meet on the axis, because they must be the traces of the plane through them.*~~

~~*§ 35. To find the projections of a line which joins two points A, B given by their projections A,, Ag and B,, By, we join A,, B, and A,, By; these will be the projections required. For example, the traces of a line are two points in the line whose projections are known or at all events easily found. They are the traces them- selves and the feet of the perpendiculars from thein to the axis.*~~

~~*Hence if a', a" (fig.. 14) are the traces of a line a, and ·f the per- pendiculars from them cut the axis in P and Q respectively, then the line a'Q will be the horizontal and a'P the vertical projection of the line.*~~

~~*Conversely, if the projec- tions a, a of a line are given, and if these cut the axis in Q and P respectively, then the perpendiculars Pa' and Qa" to the axis drawn through these points cut the projections a, and a, in the traces a' and a".*~~

~~*To find the line of intersec- tion of two planes, we observe that this line lies in both planes; its traces must therefore lie in the traces of both. Hence the points where the horizontal traces of the given planes meet will be the horizontal, and the point where the vertical traces meet the vertical trace of the line required.*~~

~~*§ 36. To decide whether a point A, given by its projections, lies in a plane a, given by its traces, we draw a line p by Joining A to some point in the plane a and determine its traces. If these lie in the traces of the plane, then the line, and therefore the point A, lies in the plane ; otherwise not. This is conveniently done by joining A, to some point p' in the trace a'; this gives p,; and the point where the perpendicular from p' to the axis cuts the latter we join to A,; this gives p,. If the vertical trace of this line lies in the vertical*~~

~~*trace of the plane, then, and then only, does the line p, and with it the point A, lie in the plane a,*~~

~~*§ 37. Parallel planes have parallel traces, because parallel planes are cut by any plane, hence also by 7, and by 7, in parallel lines.*~~

~~*Parallel lines have parallel projections, because points at infinity are projected to infinity.*~~

~~*Tf a line is parallel to a plane, then lines through the traces of the line and parallel to the traces of the plane must meet on the aats, because these lines are the traces of a plane parallel to the given*~~

~~*lane. : § 38. Todrawa plane through two intersecting lines or through two parallel lines, we determine the traces of the lines; the lines joining their horizontal and vertical traces respectively will be the horizontal and vertical traces of the plane. They will meet, at a finite point or at infinity, on the axis if the lines do intersect.*~~

~~*To draw a plane through a line and a point without the line, we join the given point to any point in the line and determine the plane through this and the given line.*~~

~~*To draw a plane through three points which are not tn a line, we draw two of the lines which each join two of the given points and draw the plane through them. If the traces of all three lines AB, BC, CA be found, these must lie in two lines which meet on the axis.*~~

~~*§ 39. We have in the last example got more points, or can easily get more points, than are necessary for the determination of the figure required—in this case the traces of the plane. This will happen in a great many constructions and is of considerable importance. It may happen that some of the points or lines obtained are not convenient in the actual construction. The horizontal traces of the lines AB and AC may, for instance, fall very near together; in which case the line joining them is not well de- fined. Or, one or both of them may fall beyond the drawing paper, so that they are practically non-existent for the construction. _ In this case the traces of the line BC may be used. Or, if the vertical traces of AB and AC are both in*~~

convenient position, so that the vertical trace of the required plane is found and one of the horizontal traces is got, then we may join the latter to the point where the vertical trace cuts the axis.

Furthermore the draughtsman will never forget that the lines which he draws are not mathematical lines without thickness. For this reason alone every drawing is affected by some errors. And inaccuracies also come in in drawing the lines reqnired in the con- struction. It is therefore very desirable to be able constantly to check the latter. Such checks always present themselves when the same result can be obtained by different constructions, or

AI — Fox

av e

Fig. 14.

802

when, as in the above case, some lines must meet on the axis, or Tine points must lie in a line. A careful draughtsman will always avail himself of these checks. _ ; x

§ 40. To draw a plane through a given point parallel to a given plane a, we draw through the point two lines which are parallel to the plane a, and determine the plane through them ; or, as we know that the traces of the required plane are parallel to those of the given one (§ 37), we need only draw one line i through the point parallel to the plane and find one of its traces, say the vertieal trace 7'; a line through this parallel to the vertical traee of a will be the vertical traec 8" of the required plane 8, and a line parallel to the horizontal trace of a meeting B" on the axis will be the

horizontal trace p'. ; : rx, j

Let A, Ay (fig. 15) be the given point, a' a" the given plane, a line J, through A, parallel to a' and a horizontal line 1, through

~~*A, will be the projec- ip" a tions of a line 7through A parallel to the plane, beeause the horizontal plane through this line will cut the plane a in a line ¢ which has its horizontal projection é, parallel to a'.*~~

~~*' § 41. We now come to the metrical proper- ties of figures.*~~

~~*A line ts perpendicu-*~~

~~*Fig. 15. lar to a plane tf the projections of the line are perpendicular to the*~~

~~*traces of the plane. We prove it for the horizontal projection. If a line p is perpendicular to a plane a, every plane through » is per- pendicular to a; hence also the vertical plane which projects the line p to p,. As this plane is perpendicular both to the horizontal plane and to the plane a, it is also perpendicular to their intersection — that is, to the horizontal trace of a. It follows that every line in this projecting plane, therefore also p,, the plan of p», is perpendicu- lar to the horizontal trace of a. E.D.*~~

~~*To draw a plane through a given point A perpendicular to a given line p, we first draw through some point O in the axis lines y', y" perpendicular respectively to the projections p, and p, of the given line. These will be the traces of a plane y which is perpendicular to the given line. We next draw through the given point A a plane parallel to the plane y; this will be the plane required.*~~

~~*Other metrical properties depend on the determination of the real size or shape of a figure.*~~

~~*In general the projection of a figure differs both in size and shape from the figure itself. But figures in a plane parallel to a plane of projection will be identical with their projections, and will thus be given in their true dimensions. In other cases there is the problem, constantly recurring, either to find the true shape and size of a plane figure when plan and elevation are given, or, con- versely, to find the latter from the known true shape of the figure itself. To do this, the plane is turned about one of its traces till it is laid down into that plane of projection to which the trace belongs. This is technically called rabatting the plane respectively into the plane of the plan or the elevation. As there is no difference in the treatment of the two cases,*~~

~~we shall consider only the case of rabatt- ing a plane a into the plane of the plan. The plan of the figure is a parallel (orthographic) projection of the figure itself. The results of parallel projection (§§ 17 and 18) may therefore now be used. The trace a' will hereby take the place of what formerly was called the axis of projection. Hence we see that corresponding points in the plan and in the rabatted plane are joined by lines which are perpen- dicular to the trace a' and that corresponding lines meet on this trace. We also see that the correspondence is completely deter- mined if we know for one point or one line in the plan the corre- sponding point or line in the rabatted plane.~~

~~Before, however, we treat of this we consider some special cases.~~

~~§ 42. To determine the distance between two points A, B given by their projec- tions Ay, B, and A, By.~~

~~Solution.—Thetwo points A, B in space lie vertically above their plans A,, B, (fig. 16) and A,A=A,A,, B,B=B,B,. The four points A, B, A,, B, therefore form a plane quadrilateral on the base A,B, and having right angles at the base. This plane we rabatt about A,B, by drawing A,A and B,B perpendicular to A,B, and~~

~~Fig. 16.~~

~~oes eae, B,B=B,B,. Then AB will give the length~~

~~The construction might have been performed in the elevation by~~

~~PROJECTION~~

~~making A,A=A,A, and B,B=B,B, on lines perpendicular to A,B,. Of course AB must have the same length in both cases.~~

~~This figure may be turned into a model. "We cut the paper along A,A, AB, and BB, and fold the piece A, ABB, over along A,B, till it stands upright at right angles to the horizontal plane. The points A, B will then be in their true position in space relative to 7. Similarly if B,BAA, be cut out and turned along A,B, through a right angle we shall get AB in its true position~~

~~*relative to the plane m,. Lastly we fold the whole plane of the paper-along the axis x till the plane 7, is at right angles to 7. In this position the two sets of points AB will coincide if the drawing has been accurate.*~~

~~*Models of this kind can be made in many cases and their construc- tion cannot be too highly recommended in order to realize ortho- graphic projection.?*~~

~~*§ 43. To find the angle between two given lines a, b of which the projections ay, b, and ay, by are given.*~~

~~*Solution. —Let a, b, (fig. 17) meet in Py, a», by in T, then if the line P,T is not perpendicular to the axis the two lines will not meet. In this ease we draw a line paral- lel to 6 to meet the line a. This is easiest done by drawing first the line P,P, perpendicular to the axis to meet a, in P,, and then drawing through P, a line é, parallel to by; then by, é, will be the projections of a line e which is parallel to 6 and meets a in P. The plane a which these two lines determine we rabatt to the plan. We determine the traces a'*~~

~~*Fig. 17.*~~

~~*and e' of the lines a and ¢; then ae' is the trace a' of their plane. Ou rabatting the point P comes to a point S on the line P,Q per- pendicular to a'e', so that QS=QP: But QP is the hypothenuse*~~

~~*of a triangle PP,Q with aright angle P,. This we construct by making QR=P,P,; then P}R=PQ. The lines a'S and e'S will therefore inelude angles equal to those made by the given lines. It is to be remembered that two lines include two angles which are supplementary. Which of these is to be taken in any special case depends upon the cireumstances.*~~

~~*To determine the angle between a line and a plane, we draw through any point in the line a perpendicular to the plane (§ 41) and determine the angle between it and the given line. 'The eomple- ment of this angle is the required one.*~~

~~*To determine the angle between two planes, we draw through any point two lines perpendicular to the two planes and determine the angle between the latter as above.*~~

~~*In special cases it is simpler to determine at once the angle between the two planes by taking a plane section perpendicular to the intersection of the two planes and rahatt this. This is especially the case if one of the planes is the horizontal or vertical plane of projection.*~~

~~*Thus in fig. 18 the angle P,QR is the angle which the plane a makes with the horizontal plane.*~~

~~*§ 44. We return to the general case of rabatting a plane a of which the traces a' a" are given.*~~

~~*Here it will be convenient to determine first the position which the trace «"—which is a line in a—assumes when rabatted. Points in this line coincide with their elevations. Hence it is given in its true dimension, and we can measure off along it the true distance between two pointsinit. Ifthere- fore (fig. 18) P is any point in a" originally coincident with its elevation P,, and if O is the point where a" cuts the axis x, so that O is also in a', then the point P will after rabatting the*~~

~~*Fig. 18. plane assume such a position that OP=OP,. At the same time*~~

~~*the plan is an orthographic projection of the plane a. Hence the line joining P to the plan P, will after rabatting be perpendicular toa'. But P, is known; it is the foot of the perpendicular from P, to the axis z. We draw therefore, to find P, from P, a perpen- dicular P,Q to a' and find on it a point P such that OP=OP,.*~~

~~*1 In order to makea along this line,*~~

~~*sharp crease along A,B, it is well to place a straight edge and then to turn the piece A, ABB, up against it.*~~

~~*PROJECTION*~~

~~*Then the line OP will be the position of a" when rabatted. This line corresponds therefore to the plan of a"—that is, to the axis 2, corresponding points on these lines being those which lie on a per- pendicular to a'.*~~

~~*We have thns one pair of corresponding lines and can now find for any point B, in the plan the corresponding point B in the rabatted plane. We draw a-line through B,, say B,P,, cutting a' in C. To it corresponds the line CP, and the point where this is cut by the projecting ray through By, perpendicular to a', is the re- quired point B.*~~

~~*Similarly any figure in the rabatted plane can be found when the plan is known; but this is usually found in a different manner with- out any reference to the general theory of parallel projection. As this method and the reasoning employed for it have their peculiar advantages, we give it also.*~~

~~*Supposing the planes 7, and 7, to be in their positions in space peipendicular to each other, we take a section of the whole figure by a plane perpendicular to the trace a' about which we are going to rabatt the plane a. Let this section pass through the point Q in a'. Its traces will then be the lines QP, and P,P, (fig. 18). These will be at right angles, and will therefore, together with the section QP, of the plane a, form a right-angled triangle QP,P, with the right angle at P,, and having the sides P,Q and P,P, which both are given in their true lengths. This triangle we rabatt about its base P\|Q, making P\|R=P,P,. The line QR will then give the true length of the line QP in space. If now the plane a be turned about a' the point P will describe a circle about Q as centre with radius QP=QR, in a plane perpendicular to the trace a'. HIence when the plane a has been rabatted into the horizontal plane the point P will lié in the perpendicular P,Q to a', so that QP=QR.*~~

~~*If A, is the plan of a point A in the plane a, and if A, lies in QP), then the point A will lie vertically above A, in the line QP. On turning down the triangle QP,P., the point A will come to Ag, the line A, A) being perpendicular to QP}. HIence A will be a point in QP such that QA=QA,.*~~

~~*If B, is the plan of another point, but such that A,B, is parallel to a', then the corresponding line AB will also be parallel to a'. HIence, if through A a*~~

~~*line AB be drawn parallel to a', and B, B*~~

~~*'perpendicular to a', then their intersection gives the point B. Thus of any point given in plan the real position in the plane a, when rabatted, can be found by this second method. This is the one most generally given in books on geometrical drawing. The first method explained is, however, in most cases preferable as it gives the draughtsman a greater variety of constructions. It requires a somewhat greater amount of theoretical knowledge.*~~

~~*If instead of our knowing the plan of a figure the latter is itself given; then the process of finding the plan is the reverse of the above and needs little explanation. We give an example.*~~

~~*§ 45. Propiem.—It is required to draw the plan and elevation of a polygon of which the real shape and position in a given plane a are known.*~~

~~*Solution.—We first rabatt the plane a (fig. 19) as befcre so that P, comes to P, hence*~~

~~*é OP, toOP. Let the given polygon in a be ' the figure ABCDE. We project, not the*~~

~~*vertices, byt the sides. To project the line*~~

~~*P AB, we produce it to cut «' in F and OP in*~~

~~*G, and draw GG, perpendicular to a'; then*~~

~~*G, corresponds to G, therefore FG, to FG. In the same manner we might project all the other sides, at least those which cut OF and in convenient points. It will be best, however, first to produce*~~

~~*all the sides to cut OP and a' and then to draw all the projecting rays through A,B,C . . . perpendicular to a', and in the same direc-*~~

~~*tion the lines G,G,, &c. By drawing FG we get the points Aj, B, on the projecting ray through A and B. We then join B to the point M where BC produced meets the trace a'. This gives C,. So we go on till we have found E,. The line A, E, must then meet AE in a', and this gives a check. If one of the sides cuts a' or OP beyond the drawing paper this method fails, but then we may easily find the projection of some other line, say of a diagonal, or directly the projection of a point, by the former methods. The diagonals may also serve to check the drawing, for two corre- sponding diagonals must meet in the trace a'.*~~

~~*Having got the plan we easily find the elevation. The elevation of G is above G, in a", and that of F is at F, in the axis. This gives the elevation F,G, of FG and in it we get A,B, in the verticals through A, and B, As a check we have OG=OG,. Similarly the elevation of the other sides and vertices are fonnd.*~~

~~*§ 46. We have now obtained the ABC of descriptive geometry, and proceed to give some applications to the representation of solids and of the solution of problems connected with them.*~~

~~*PROBLEM.—Of a pyramid are given tts base, the length of the perpendicular from the vertex to the base, and the point where this perpendicular cuts the base ; it is required first to develop the whole surface of the pyramid into one plane, and second to determine tts section by a plane which euts the plane of the base ina given line and makes a given angle with it.*~~

~~*Solution.—(1) As the planes of projection are not given we can take them as we like, and we select them in such a manner that the solution becomes as simple as possible. We take the plane of*~~

~~*the base as the horizontal plane and the vertical plane perpen- Let then (fig. 20) ABCD be*~~

~~*dicular to the plane of the section. the base of the pyramid, V, the plan of the ver- tex, then the elevations of A, B, C, D will be in the axis at A,, B,, Cy, D,, and the vertex at some point V, above V, at a known distance*~~

~~: from the axis. The lines V,A, V,B, &c., will be the plans and the lines V,A,, "V,B,, &c., the elevations of the edges of the pyramid, of which thus plan and eleva- tion are known.~~

~~We develop the surface into the plane of the base by turning each lateral face about its lower edge into the horizontal plane by the method used in § 43. If one face has been turned down, say ABV to ABP, then the point Q to which the vertex of the next~~

~~'| face BCV comes can be got more simply by finding on the line~~

~~V,Q perpendicular to BC the point Q such that BQ= BP, for these lines represent the same edge BV of the pyramid. Next R is~~

~~'found by making CR=CQ, and so on till we have got the last~~

~~vertex—in this case S. The fact that AS must equal AP gives a convenient check.~~

~~(2) The plane a whose section we have to determine has its hori- zontal trace given perpendicular to the axis, and its vertical trace makes the given angle with the axis. This determinesit. To find the section of the pyramid by this plane there are two methods applicable: we find the sections of the plane either with the faces or with the edges of the pyramid. We use the latter.~~

~~As the plane @ is perpendicular to the vertical plane, the trace a' contains the projection of every figure in it; the points E,, F,, G,, H, where this trace cuts the elevations of the edges will there- fore be the elevations of the points where the edges cut a. From these we find the plans Ej, F,, Gy, Hy, and by joining them the~~

~~804 Pa Od E~~

~~plan of the section. If from Ty, F, lines be drawn perpendicular to AB, these will determine the points E, F on the developed face in which the plane a cuts it ; hence also the line EF. Similarly on the other faces. Of course BF must be the same length on BP and on BQ. If the plane abe rabatted to the~~

~~*plan, we get the real shape of the section as shown in the figure in EFGH. This is done easily by making Hoe Ogee. i the figure representing the development of the pyramid, or better a copy of it, is cut out, and if the lateral faces be bent along the lines AB, BC, &c., we get a model of the pyramid with the section marked on its faces. This may be placed on its plan ABCD and the plane of elevation bent about the axis x. The pyramid stands then in front of its eleva- tions. If next the plane a with a hole cut out representing the true section be bent along the trace a' till its edge coincides with a', the edges of the hole onght to coincide with the lines EF, FG, &c., on the faces.*~~

~~*§ 47. Polyhedra like the pyramid in § 46 are represented by the projections of their edges and vertices. But solids bounded by curved surfaces, or surfaces themselves, cannot be thus represented.*~~

~~*For a surface we may use, as in case of the plane, its traces—that is, the curves in which it cuts the planes of projection. We may also project points and curves on the surface.*~~

~~*Thus the tangents drawn from any finite centre to a sphere form a right circular cone, and this will be cut by any plane in a conic. It is often called the projection of a sphere, but it is better called the contour-lne of the sphere, as it is the boundary of the projec- tions of all points on the sphere.*~~

~~*If the centre is at infinity the tangent cone becomes a right circular cylinder touching the sphere along a great circle, and if the projection is, as in our case, orthographic, then the section of this cone by a plane of projection will be a circle equal to the great circle of the sphere. We get such a circle in the plan and another in the elevation, their centres being plan and elevation of the centre of the sphere.*~~

~~*Similarly the rays touching a coné of the second order will lie in two planes which pass through the vertex of the cone, the contour-line of the projection of the cone consists therefore of two lines meeting in the projection of the vertex. These may, however, be invisible if no real tangent rays can be drawn from the centre of projection; and this happens when the ray projecting the centre of the vertex lies within the cone. In this case the traces of the cone are of importance. Thus in representing a cone of*~~

~~*revolution with a vertical axis we get in the plan a circular trace of the surface whose centre is the plan of the vertex of the cone, and in the elevation the contour, consisting of a pair of lines intersecting in the elevation of the vertex of the cone. The circle in the plan and the pair of lines in the elevation do not determine the surface, for an infinite number of surfaces might be conceived which pass through the circular trace and touch two planes through the contour lines in the vertical plane. The surface becomes only completely defined if we write down to the figure that it shall represent a cone. The same holds for all surfaces. Even a plane is fully represented by its traces only under the silent understanding that the traces are those of a plane. a*~~

~~*§ 48. Some of the simpler problems connected with the repre- sentation of surfaces are the determination of plane sections and of the curves of intersection of two such surfaces, The former is constantly used in nearly all problems concerning surfaces. Its solution depends of course on the nature of the surface.*~~

~~*To determine the curve of intersection of two surfaces, we take a plane and determine its section with each of the two surfaces rabatting this plane if necessary. This gives two curves which lie in the same plane and whose intersections will give us points on both surfaces. It must here be remembered that two curves in space do not necessarily intersect, hence that the points in which their projections intersect are not necessarily the projections of points common to the two curves. This will, however, be the case if the two curves lie in a common plane. By taking then anumber of plane sections of the surfaces we can get as many points on their ee of intersection as we like. These planes have, of course, to*~~

~~*e selected in such a way that the sections are curves as simple as*~~

~~*ee ae of, and such that they can be easily and accurately*~~

~~*vn. us when possible the sections should be straight lines*~~

~~*or circles. This not only saves time in drawing but determines all*~~

~~points on the sections, and therefore also the points where the two curves meet, with equal accuracy.~~

~~h ee give few examples how these sections have to be selected.~~

~~y every plane through the vertex in lines, and if~~

~~CT TOR~~

~~| it is a cone of revolution by planes perpendicular to the axis in~~

~~circles.~~

~~A cylinder is cut by every plane parallel to the axis in lines, and if it is a cylinder of revolution by planes perpendicular to the axis in circles.~~

~~A sphere is cut by every plane in a circle.~~

~~Hence in case of two cones situated anywhere in space we take sections through both vertices. These will cut both cones in lines. Similarly in case of two cylinders we may take sections parallel to the axis of both. In case of a sphere and a cone of revolution with vertical axis, horizontal sections will cut both surfaces in circles whose plans are circles and whose elevations are lines, whilst vertical sections through the vertex of the cone cut the latter in lines and the sphere in circles. To avoid drawing the projections of these circles, which would in general be ellipses, we rabatt the plane and then draw the circles in their real shape. And so on in other cases.~~

~~Special attention should in all cases be paid to those points in which the tangents to the projection of the curve of intersection are parallel or perpendicular to the axis x, or where thiese projections touch the contour of one of the surfaces.~~

~~PERSPECTIVE.~~

~~§ 50. We have seen that, if all points in a figure be pro- jected from a fixed centre to a plane, each point on the pro- jection will be the projection of all points on the projecting ray. A complete representation by a single projection is therefore possible only when there is but one point to be~~

~~*projected on each ray. This is the case by projecting from one plane to another, but it is also the case if we project the viszble parts of objects in nature ; for every ray of light meeting the eye starts from that point in which the ray, if we follow its course from the eye, backward nieets for the first time any object. Thus, if we project from a fixed centre the visible part of objects to a plane or other surface, then the outlines of the projection would give the same impression to the eye as the outlines of the things projected, provided that one eye only be used and that this be at the centre of projection. If at the same time the light emanating from the different points in the picture could be made to be of the saine kind—that is, of the same colour and intensity and of the same kind of polarization—as that coming from the objects themselves, then the projection would give sensibly the same impres- sion as the objects themselves. The art of obtaining this result constitutes a chief part of the technique of a painter, who includes the rules which guide him under the name of perspective, distinguishing between linear and aerial perspective,—the former relating to the projection, to the drawing of the outlines, the latter to the colouring and the shading off of the colours in order to give the appearance of distance. We have to deal only with the former, which is in fact a branch of geometry consisting in the applications of the rules of projection.*~~

~~*§ 51. Our problem is the following:—There is given a figure in space, the plane of a picture, and a point as centre of projection ; ut is required to project the figure from the point to the plane.*~~

~~*From what has been stated about projection in general it follows at once that the projection of a point is a point, that of a linea line. Further, the projection of a point at infinity in a line is in general a finite point. Hence parallel lines are projected into a pencil of lines meeting at some finite point. This point is called the vanishing point of the direction to which it belongs. To find it, we project the point at infinity in one of the parallel lines; that is, we draw through the eye a line in the given direction. This cuts the picture plane in the point required.*~~

~~*Similarly all points at infinity in a plane are projected to a line (§ 6) which is called the vanishing line of the plane and which is common to all parallel planes.*~~

_All lines parallel to a plane have their vanishing points in a line, viz., in the vanishing line of the plane.

All lines parallel to the picture plane have their vanishing points at infinity in the picture plane; hence parallel lines which are parallel to the picture plane appear in the projection as parallel lines in thetr true direction.

The projection of a line is determined by the projection of two points in tt, these being very often its vanishing point and its trace on the picture plane. The projection of a point is determined by the pro- jection of two lines through it.

PEGE TION

These are the general rules which we now apply. We suppose

the picture plane to be vertical.

§ 52. Let (fig. 21) S be the centre of projection, where the eye is situated, and which in perspective is called the point of sight, ABKL the picture plane, ABMN a horizontal plane on which we suppose the ob- jects to rest of which a perspective drawing is to be made. The lowest plane which contains points that are to appear in the picture is generally selected for this purpose, and is therefore called the ground plane, or some- times the geometrical plane. It cuts the picture plane in a horizontal line AB called the ground line or base line or funda- mental line of the picture. Fi A horizontal line SV, ig. 21. drawn through the eye S perpendicular to the picture, cuts the latter at a point V called the centre of the picture or the centre of vision. The distance SV of the eye from the picture is often called the distance simply, and the height ST of the eye above the ground the height of the eye.

The vanishing line of the ground plane, and hence of every hori- zontal plane, is got by drawing the projecting rays from S to the points at infinity in the plane—in other words, by drawing all hori- zontal rays through S. These le in a horizontal plane which cuts the picture plane in a horizontal line DD' through the centre of vision V. This line is called the horizon in the picture. It con- tains the vanishing points of all horizontal lines, the centre

~~*of vision V being the vanishing point of all Lines parallel to SV, that is perpendicular to the picture plane. To find the vanishing point of any other line we draw through S the ray projecting the point at infinity in the line; that is, we draw through S aray parallel to the Tine, and determine the point where this ray cuts the picture plane. If the line is given by its plan on the ground plane and its elevation on the picture plane, then its vanishing point can at once be deter- mined ; it is the vertical trace of a line parallel to it through the eye (comp. § 35).*~~

~~*§ 538. To have construction in a single plane, we suppose the pic- ture plane turned down into the ground plane; but before this is done the ground plane is pulled forward till, say, the line MN takes the place of AB, and then the picture plane is turned down. By this we keep the plan of the figure and the picture itself separate. In this new position the plane of the picture will be that of the paper (fig. 22). On it are marked the base line AB, the ceutre of vision V, and the horizon DD', and also the limits ABKL of the actual picture. These, however, need not necessarily be marked. In the plan the picture plane must be supposed to pass through A,B, and to be perpendicular to the ground plane. If we further suppose that*~~

~~*the horizontal plane ame! through the eye which A Qw, R, B, cuts the picture plane Fig. 22*~~

~~*in the horizon DD' be 5 turned down about the horizon, then the centre of sight will come to the point 8, where VS equals the distance of the eye.*~~

~~*To find the vanishing point of any line in a horizontal plane, we have to draw through S a line in the given direction and see where it euts the horizon. For instance to find the vanishing*~~

~~*points of the two horizontal direetions which make angles of 45° |*~~

~~*with the horizon, we draw through S lines SD and SD' making each an angle of 45° with the line DD'. by making VD and VD' each equal to the distance SV. points D, D' are therefore called the distance points.*~~

~~*§ 54. Let it now be required to find the perspective P of a point P, (figs. 21 and 22) inthe ground plane. We draw through P, two lines of which the*~~

~~projection can easily be found. The most con- venient lines are the perpendicular to the. base line, and a line making an angle of 45° with the picture plane. These lines in the~~

~~These points can also be found | The two |~~

~~805~~

~~ground plan are P,Q, and P,R,. The first cuts the picture at Q, or at Q, and has the vanishing point V; hence QV is its perspeetive. The other cuts the picture in R,, orrather in R, and has the vanish- ing point D; its perspective is RD. These two lines meet at P, which is the point reqnired. It will be noticed that the line QR=Q,R,=Q,P, gives the distance of the point P behind the pic- ture plane. Hence if we know the point Q where a perpendicular from a point to the picture plane cuts the latter, and also the dis- tance of the point behind the picture plane, we can find its perspec- tive. We join Q to V, set off QR to the right equal to the distance of the point behind the picture plane, and join R to the distance point to the left; where RD cuts QV is the point P required. Or we set off QR' to the left equal to the distance and join R' to the dis- tance point D' to the right.~~

~~If the distance of the point from the picture should be very great, the point R might fall at too great a distance from Q to be on the drawing. In this case we might set off QW equal to the wth part of the distance and join it to a point E, so that VE equals the mth part of VD. Thus if QW=4QR and VE=3VD, then WE will again pass through P. It is thus possible to find for every point in the ground plane, or in fact in any horizontal plane, the perspective ; for the construction will not be altered if the ground plane be replaced by any other horizontal plane. We can in fact now jind the perspective of every point as soon as we know the foot of the per- pendicular drawn from tt to the picture plane, that ts, if we know its elevation on the picture plane, and its distance behind it. For this reason it is often convenient to draw in slight outlines the clevation of the figure on the picture plane.~~

~~Instead of drawing the elevation of the figure we may also proceed as follows. Suppose (fig. 23) A, to be the projection of the~~

~~*H*~~

~~*“1*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*Sgt*~~

~~-~~

~~*es*~~

~~*R Fig. 23.*~~

~~*plan of a point A. Then the point A lies vertically above A, because vertical lines appear in the perspective as vertical lines*~~

~~*($51). If then the line VA, cuts the picture plane at Q, and we erect at Qa perpendicular in the picture plane to its base and set off on it QA, equal to the real height of the point A above the ground plane, then the point A, is the elevation of A and hence the line A,V will pass through the point A. The latter thus is deter- mined by the intersection of the vertical line through A, and the line A.V.*~~

~~*This process differs from the one mentioned before in this that the construction for finding the point is not made in the horizontal plane in which it lies, but that its plan is constructed in the ground plane. But this has a great advantage. The perspective of a hori- zontal plane from the picture to the line at infinity occupies in the picture the space between the line where the plane cuts the picture and the horizon, and this space is the greater the farther the plane is from the eye, that is, the farther its trace on the picture plane lies from the horizon. “~The horizontal plane through the eye is projected into a line, the horizon; hence no construction can be*~~

~~*erformed in it. The ground plane on the other hand is the lowest 1orizontal plane used. HIence it offers most space for constructions, which consequently will allow of greater accuracy.*~~

~~§ 55. The process is the same if we know the coordinates of the point, viz., we take in the base line a point O as origin, and we take the base line, the line OV, and the perpendicular OZ as axes of coordinates. If we then know the coordinates x, y, 2 measured in these directions, we make OQ=z, set off on QV a distance QA such that its real length QR=y, make QA,=z, and find A as before. This process might be simplified by setting off to begin with along'OQ and OZ scales in their true dimensions and along OV a scale obtained by projecting the scale on OQ from D to the line OF.~~

~~§ 56. The methods explained give the perspective of any point in space. If lines have to be found, we may determine the perspec- tive of two points in them and join these, and this is in many cases the most convenient process. Often, however, it will be advantageous to determine the projection of a line directly by finding its vanishing point. This is especially to be recommended when a number of parallel lines have to be drawn.~~

~~The perspective of any curve is in general a curve. jection of a conic is a conic, or in special cases a line.~~

~~The pro- The~~

~~806~~

~~perspective of a circle may be any conic, not necessarily an ellipse. Similarly the perspective of the shadow of a circle on a plane is some conic. : bees~~

~~§ 57. A few words must be said about the determination of shadows in perspective. The theory of their construction 1s very simple. We have given, say, light. : J : the shadow and produce this line till it cuts the surface on which the shadow falls. These constructions must in many cases first be performed in plan and elevation, and then the point in the shadow has to be found in perspective. The constructions are different according as we take as the source of light a finite point (say, the flame of a lamp), or the sun, which we may suppose to be at an infinite distance. ;~~

~~If, for instance, in fig. 23, A is a source of light, EHGF a vertical wall, and C a point whose shadow has to be determined, then the shadow must le on~~

~~*the line joining A to C. To see where this ray meets the floor we draw through the source of light and the point C a vertical plane. This will cut the floor in a line which contains the feet A,, C, of the perpendiculars drawn from the points A, C to the floor, or the plans of these points. At C', where the line A,O, cuts AC, will be the shadow of C on the floor. If the wall EHGF prevents the shadow from falling on the floor, we determine the intersection K of the line A,C, with the base EF of the wall and draw a vertical through it, this gives the intersection of the wall with the vertical plane through A and C. Where it cuts AC is the shadow C" of C on the wall.*~~

~~*If the shadow of a screen CDD,C, has to be found we find the shadow D' of D which falls on the floor; then D,D' is the shadow of D,D and D'C' is the shadow on the floor of the line DC. The shadow of D,D, however, is intercepted by the wallat L. Here then the wall takes up the shadow, which must extend to D" as the shadow of a line on a plane is a line. Thus the shddow of the screen is found in the shaded part in the figure.*~~

~~*§ 58. If the shadows are due to the sun, we have to find first the perspective of the sun, thatis, the vanishing point of its rays. This will always be a point in the picture plane; but we have to distin- guish between the cases where the sun is in the front of the picture, and so behind the spectator, or behind the picture plane, and so in front of the spectator. In the second case only does the vanishing point of the rays of the sun actually represent the sun itself. It will be a point above the horizon. In the other case the vanishing point of the rays will lie below the horizon. It is the point where a ray of thesun through the centre of sight S cuts the picture plane, or it will be the shadow of the eye on the picture. In either case the ray of the sun through any point is the line joining the per- spective of that point to the vanishing point of the sun's rays. But in the one case the shadow falls away from the vanishing point, in the other it falls towards it. The direction of the sun's rays may be given by the plan and elevation of one ray.*~~

~~*For the construction of the shadow of points it is convenient first to draw a perpendicular from the point to the ground and to find its shadow on the ground. But the shadows of verticals from a point at infinity will be parallel; hence they have in perspective a vanishing point L, in the horizon. To find this point, we draw that vertical plane through the eye which*~~

~~contains a ray of the sun, This cuts the horizon in the required point L, and the picture plane in a vertical line which contains the vanishing point of the sun's rays themselves. Let then (fig. 24) L be the vanishing~~

~~,/~~

~~,~~

~~/~~

~~¢ V7;~~

~~/~~

~~r-~~

~~-~~

~~_ te i :, S| + — ' jf H~~

~~!~~

~~~ \~~

~~~ '~~

~~i]~~

~~'~~

~~fad~~

~~Fig. 24.~~

~~point of the sun's rays, L, be that of their projection in a horizon- tal plane, and let it be required to find the shadow of the vertical column AH. We draw AL, and EL; they meet at E', which is the shadow of E. Similarly we find the shadows of F, G, H. Then E'F'G'H' will be the shadow of the quadrilateral EFGH. For the shadow of the column itself we join E' to A,~~

~~*&c., but only mark the outlines; F'B, the shadow of BF, does not appear as such in the figure.*~~

~~*If the shadow of E has to be found when falling on any other surface we use the vertical plane through E, determine its inter-*~~

~~*PR O—*~~

~~*| slightly modified. The general principles will remain true.*~~

~~*a figure and a point L as source of |*~~

~~*We join the point L to any point of which we want to find | somewhat more complicated.*~~

~~*_ it would be necessary to have a representation in plan and eleva-*~~

~~*| enter.*~~

~~*PRO*~~

~~*section with the surface, and find the point where this intersection*~~

~~*/ is cut by the line EL. This will be the required shadow of E.*~~

~~*§ 59. If the picture is not to be drawn on a vertical but on an- other plane—say, the ceiling of a room—the rules given have to be But if the picture is to be on a curved surface the constructions beconie In the most general case conceivable*~~

~~*tion of the figure required and of the surface on which the pro- jection has to be made. A number of points might also be found by calculation, using coordinate geometry. But into this we do not Asan example we take the case of a panorama, where the surface is a vertical cylinder of revolution, the eye being in the axis. The ray projecting a point A cuts the cylinder in two points ou opposite sides of the eye, hence geometrically speaking every point has two projections ; of these only the one lying on the half ray from the eye to the point can be used in the picture. But the other has sometimes to be used in constructions, as the projection of a line has to pass through*~~

~~*both. Parallel lines have two vanish- ing points which are found by drawing a line of the given direction through the eye; it cuts the cylinder in the vanishing points reqnired. This operation may be performed by drawing on the ground the plan of the ray through the foot of the axis, and through the point where it cuts the cylinder a vertical, on which the point required must lie. Its height above is easily found by making a drawing of a vertical section on a reduced scale.*~~

~~*Parallel planes have in the same manner a vanishing curve. This will be for horizontal planes a horizontal circle of the height of the eye above the ground. For vertical planes it will be a pair of generators of the cylinder. For other planes the vanishing curves will be ellipses having their centre at the eye.*~~

~~*The projections of vertical lines will be vertical lines on the cylinder. Of all other lines they will be ellipses with the centre at the eye. If the cylinder be developed into a plane, then these ellipses will be changed into curves of sines. Parallel lines are thus represented by curves of sines which have two points in common. There is no difficulty in making all the constructions on a small scale on the drawing board and then transferring them to the cylinder.*~~

~~*§ 60. A variety of instruments have been proposed to facilitate perspective drawings. If the problem is to make a drawing from nature then a camera obscura or, better, Wollaston's camera lucida may be used. Other instruments are made for the construction of perspective drawings. It will often happen that the vanishing point of some direction which would be very useful in the construc- tion falls at a great distance off the paper, and various methods have been proposed of drawing lines through sucha point. For some of these see Stanley's Descriptive Treatise on Mathematical Drawing Instruments.*~~

~~*Literature.—Descriptive geometry dates from Monge, whose Géométrie Descrip- tive appeared in 1800. Before his time plans and elevations, especially of build- ings, had been in use, and rules had been developed to determine by construction from drawings the shapes of the stones required in bnildings, especially in vaults and arclies, These rules were reduced to a consistent method by Monge.*~~

~~*Perspective was investigated much earlier, as painters felt the need of it. Its beginnings date from the time of the Greek mathematicians, but its modern development from the time of the Renaissance, when the first books on the subject appeared in Italy. Albrecht Diirer also published a treatise on it and constructed amachine for making perspective drawings of objects. Of later writers we men- tion in the 17th century Desargues, and in the 18th Dr Brook Taylor, whose Linear Perspective appeared first in 1715 and New Principles of Linear Perspective in 1719. At present perspective is generally treated as a special case of projec- tion, and included in books on descriptive geometry.*~~

~~*For the literature of projection in general, we refer to the list of books given under GEOMETRY, vol. x. p. 407. For descriptive geometry and perspective. see Monge, Géometrie Descriptive; Leroy, Traité de Géometrie Descriptive ; Fiedler, Darstellende Geometrie, Gournerie, Traité de Perspective, Mannheim, Géométrie Descriptive (1880) and Eléments dela Géométrie Descriptive (1882); J. Woolley, Descriptive Geometry (1856), which is based on Leroy's work, and is the only scientific publication on the subject in England. A number of other publications with titles such as " Practical Geometry" and "Geometrical Drawing" contain more or less full explanations of the methods of descriptive geometry. These are based generally on Euclidian as opposed to projective geometry, and are there- fore in their theoretical part more or less unsatisfactory. We may mention Angel, Practical Plane Geometry and Projection. (O. H.)*~~

~~*PROJECTION OF THE SPHERE. See Grocrarny.*~~

~~*PROME, a district in Pegu division, British Burmah, India, between 18° 30' and 19° 15' N. lat., and 94° 40' and 96° E. long., containing an area of 2887 square miles. It occupies the whole breadth of the valley of the lrawadi, between Thayet district on the north and Hen- zada and Tharawadi districts on the south, and originally extended as far as the frontier of the province of Burmah, but in 1870 Thayet was formed into an independent juris- diction. There are two mountain ranges in Prome, which form respectively the eastern and western boundaries. The Arakan Yoma extends along the whole of the western side, and that portion of the district lying on the right bank of the Trawadi is broken up by thickly wooded spurs*~~

~~running in a south-easterly direction, the space for cultiva- tion being but limited and confined to the parts adjacent to the river. On the eastern side lies the Pegu Yoma, and north and north-east of the district its forest-covered spurs form numerous valleys and ravines, the torrents from which unite in one large stream called the Na-weng river. The most important of the plains lie in the south and south- west portions of Prome, and extend along the whole length of the railway that runs between the towns of Poungdé and Prome ; they are mostly under cultivation, and those in the south are watered bya series of streams forming the Myit- ma-kha or upper portion of the Hlaing. There are in addition large tracts of land covered by tree-jungle which are available for cultivation. The principal river is the Irawadi, which intersects the district from north to south ; next in importance are the Tha-ni and its tributaries and the Na-weng system of rivers. In the hills near the capital the soil is of Tertiary formation, and in the plains it is of alluvial deposit. The climate is much drier than other districts in British Burmah. The total rainfall in 1882 was 49°64 inches.~~

~~In 1881 the population was 322,342 (161,488 males and 160,909 females). Buddhists and Jains numbered 313,261, Mohammedans 1795, Hindus 978, Christians 336, Aborigines 5818, and Parsees 5. More than two-thirds of the population are agriculturists. The chief towns are Prome (see below), and Shwedoung and Poungdé, with 12,373 and 6727 inhabitants respectively. The chief products are rice, teak, eutch, silk, sugar cane, cotton, tobacco, and sesame oil; but the staple product is rice, which is cultivated mainly in the Poungdé and Shwe-doung townships. The total area under cultivation in 1882 was 234,222 acres. One of the most important manufactures is silk ; others are ornamental boxes, coarse brown sugar, and cutch. The gross revenue of the district in 1882 amounted to about £92,000, of which overa third was derived from the land.~~

~~The early history of the once flourishing kingdom of Prome, like that of the other states which now form portions of the province of British Burmah, is veiled in obscurity. Fact and fable are so interwoven that it is impossible to disentangle the true from the false. After the conquest of Pegu in 1758 by Aloung-bhura, the founder of the third and present dynasty of Ava kings,~~

~~*Prome remained a province of the Burman kingdom till the close of the second Burmese war in 1858, when the province of Pegu was annexed to British territory.*~~

~~*PROME, chief town of the above district, on the left bank. of the Irawadi, had a population in 1881 of 28,813 (males 14,982, females 13,831). To the south and south-east the town is closed in by low pagoda-topped hills, on one of which stands the conspicuous gilded Shwe Tsan-daw. The town was taken by the British in 1825 and again in 1852, on both occasions with hardly any opposition from the Burmese. In 1862 it was almost entirely destroyed by fire, and was afterwards relaid out in straight and broad streets. It was erected into a municipality in 1874, and since then great improvements have been made. Its principal manufactures are silk cloths and lacquer ware.*~~

~~*PROMETHEUS, son of the Titan Iapetus by the sea nymph Clymene, is the chief "culture hero," and, in some accounts, the Demiurge of Greek mythical legend. Asa culture-hero or inventor and teacher of the arts of life, he belongs to a wide and welltknown category of imaginary beings. Thus Qat, Quahteaht, Pundjel, Maui, Ioskeha, Cagn, Wainamoinen, and an endless array of others repre- sent the ideal and heroic first teachers of Melanesians, Ahts, Australians, Maoris, Algonquins, Bushmen, and Finns. Among the lowest races the culture-hero com- monly wears'a bestial guise, is a spider (Melanesia), an eagle hawk (Australia), a coyote (north-west America), a dog or raven (Thlinkeet), a mantis insect (Bushman), and so forth, yet is endowed with human or even superhuman qualities, and often shades off into a permanent and practically deathless god. Prometheus, on the other hand, is purely anthropomorphic. He is the friend and*~~

~~*benefactor of mankind. He defends them against Zeus, who, in accordance with a widely diffused mythical theory, desires to destroy the human race and supplant them with a new and better species, or who simply revenges a trick in which men get the better of him. The pedigree and early exploits of Prometheus are given by Hesiod (Zheog., 510-616). On a certain occasion gods and men met at Mecone. The business of the assembly was to decide what portions of slain animals the gods should receive in sacrifice. On one*~~

~~*side Prometheus arranged the best parts of the ox covered with offal, on the other the bones covered with fat. Zeus was invited to make his choice, chose the fat, and found only bones beneath. A similar fable of an original choice, in which the chooser is beguiled by appearances, recurs in Africa and North America. The native tribes adapt it to explain the different modes of life among themselves and white men. In wrath at this trick, according to Hesiod, or in other versions for the purpose of exterminating the remnants of people who escaped the deluge of Deucalion, Zeus never bestowed, or later withdrew, the gift of fire. In his "philanthropic fashion," Prometheus stole fire, concealed in a hollow fennel stalk (Hesiod, Op. et Di.), and a fennel stalk is still used in the Greek islands as a means of carrying a light (cf. Pliny, xiii. 22). According to some legends he gained the fire by holding a rod close to the sun. Pro- bably the hollow fennel stalk in which fire was carried got its place in myth from the very fact of its common use.*~~

~~*We thus find Prometheus in the position of the fire-bringer, or fire-stealer, and so connected with a very wide cycle of similar mythical benefactors. Among the Murri of Gippstand, to begin with a backward people, the fire-stealer was a man, but he became abird. Tow-e-ra, or fire, was in the possession of two women who hated the blacks. A man who loved men cajoled the women, stole fire when their backs were turned, and was metamorphosed into "a little bird with a red mark on its tail, which is the mark of fire." The fire-bringer in Brittany is the golden or fire-crested wren. Myths hike this kill two birds with one stone, and at onee account for the possession of fire by men and for the marking of certain animals regarded as fire-bringers.1_ In another Australian legend fire was stolen by the hawk from the bandicoot, and given to men. In yet another a man held his spear to the sun, and so got alight. A bird is fire-bringer in an Andaman island tale, and a ghost in another myth of the samc island.2_ In New Zealand, Maui stole fire from Mauika, the lord of fire. He used a bird's inter- vention. Among the Ahts, in North America,' fire was stolen by animals from the euttle-fish, Among the Thlinkeets, Yehl, the raven-god, was the fire-stealer. Among the Cahroes, the coyote steals fire from "two old women." Among the Aryans of India, Soma is stolen by birds, as water is among the Thlinkeets, and mead in the Edda.* Fire concealed himself, in the Veda, was dragged from his hiding place by Matarigvan, and was given to the priestly clan of Bhrigu. We also hear that Mataricvan " brought fire from afar" (R.*~~

~~*V., iii. 9, 5), and that Bhrigu found fire lurk- ing in the water (R. V., x. 46, 2).º*~~

~~*In considering the- whole question, one must beware of the hasty analogical method of reasoning too common among mythologists. For example, when a bird is spoken of as the fire-bringer we need not necessarily conclude that, in each case, the bird means lightning. On the other hand, the myth often exists to explain the cause of the mark- ings of certain actual species of birds. Again, because a hero is said to have stolen or brought fire, we need not regard that hero as the personification of fire, and explain all his myth as a fire-myth. The legend of Prometheus has too often been treated in this fashion, though he is really a culture hero, of whose exploits, such as making*~~

~~*1 For these see Brough Smith, Aborigines of Victoria; Kuhn, on bird fire-bringer in Isle of Man, Die Herabkunft des Feuers, p. 109.*~~

~~*2 Journ. Anthrop. Inst., Nov. 1884.*~~

~~*3 Sproat, Savage Life.*~~

- ~~*Bancroft, iii. 100;*~~

~~*> Compare Bergaighe, Za Religion Védique, i. 52-56, and Kuhn's Herabkunft ; and see the essays by Steinthal in appendix to English version of Goldziher's Mythology among the Hebrews.*~~

~~*808*~~

~~*men of clay, fire-stealing is no more than a single example. This tendency to evolve the whole myth of Prometheus from a belief that he is personified fire, or the fire-god, has been intensified by Kuhn's ingenious and plausible etymo- logy of the name Ipopnfevs. The Greeks derived it from mpopnOys, '" provident," and connected it with such other words as mpouyféopar, mpop7ea. — They had also the proper name "Exiuybevs for the slow-witted brother of Prometheus who turned all the hero's wisdom to foolish- ness. Against these very natural etymologies the philo- logists support a theory that Prometheus 1s really a Greek form of pramantha (Skt.), the fire-stick of*~~

~~*the Hindus. The process of etymological change, as given by Steinthal, was this. The boring of the perpendicular in the horizontal fire-stick, whereby fire was kindled, was called manthana, from math, "I shake." The preposition pra was prefixed, and you get pramantha. But Matarig- van was feigned to have brought Agni, fire, and "the fetching of the god was designated by the same verb mathniémi as the proper earthly boring" of the firestick. "Now this verb, especially when compounded with the preposition pra, gained the signification to tear off, snatch to oneself, rob."! Steinthal goes on—'"' Thus the fetching of Agni became a robbery of the fire, and the pramdtha (fire-stick) a robber. The gods had intended, for some reason or other, to withhold fire from men; a benefactor of mankind stole it from the gods. This robbery was called pramdtha; pramdthyu-s is 'he who loves boring or robbery, a borer or robber.' From the latter words, according to the peculiarities of Greek phonology, is formed Ipopzyfev-s, Prometheus. He is therefore a fire- god," &c. Few things more ingenicus than this have ever been done by philologists. It will be observed that "forgetfulness of the meaning of words" is made to account for the Greek belief that fire was stolen from the gods. To recapitulate the doctrine more succinctly, men originally said, in Sanskrit (or some Aryan speech more ancient still), " fire is got by rubbing or boring ;" nothing could have been more scientific and straightforward. They also said, " fire is brought by Matarievan ;" nothing can be more in accordance with the mythopceic mode of thought. Then the word which means " fetched" is con- fused with the word which means "bored," and gains the sense of "robbed." Lastly, fire is said (owing to this confusion) to have been stolen, and the term which meant the common savage fire-stick is by a process of delusion conceived to represent, not a stick, but a person, Prometheus, who stole fire. Thus then, according to the philologists, arose the myth that fire was stolen, a myth which, we presume, would not otherwise have occurred to Greeks. Now we have not to decide whether the Greeks were right in thinking that Prometheus only meant "the fore-sighted wise man," or whether the Germans know better, and are correct when they say the name merely meant "fire-stick." But we may, at least, point out that the myth of the stealing of fire and of the fire-stealer is current among races who are not Aryan, and never heard the word pramantha. We have shown that Thlinkeets Ahts, Andaman Islanders, Australians, Maoris, South Sea Islanders, Cahrocs, and others all believe fire was origin- ally stolen. Is it credible that, in all their languages, the*~~

~~name of the fire-stick should have caused a confusion of thought which ultimately led to the belief that fire was obtained originally by larceny? If such a coincidence appears Incredible, we may doubt whether the belief that 18 common to Greeks and Cahroes and Ahts was pro- duced, in Greek minds by an etymological confusion, in Australia, America, and so forth by some other cause. What, then, is the origin of the widely-diffused myth that~~

- ~~Of. Kuhn, op. cit., pp. 16, 17.~~

~~fire was stolen? We offer a purely conjectural suggestion. No race is found without fire, but certain races? are said to have no means of artificially reproducing fire ; whether this be true or not, certainly even some civilized races have found the artificial reproduction of fire very tedious. Thus we read (Od., v. 488-493), " "As when a man hath hidden away a brand in the black embers at an upland farm, one that hath no neighbour nigh, and so saveth the seed of fire that he may not have to seek a light other- where, even so did Odysseus cover him with the leaves." If, in the Homeric age, men found it so hard to get the seed of fire, what must the difficulty have been in the earliest dawn of the art of fire-making? Suppose, then, that the human groups of early savages are hostile. One group lets its fire go out, the next thing to do would be to borrow a light from the neighbour, perhaps several miles off. But, if the neighbours are hostile, the unlucky group is cut off from fire, zgni interdicitur. The only way to get fire in such a case is to steal it. Men accustomed to such a precarious condition might readily believe that the first possessors of fire, wherever they were, set a high value on it, and refused to communicate it to others. Hence the belief that fire was originally stolen. This hypothesis at least explains all myths of fire-stealing by the natural needs, passions, and characters of men, "a jealous race," whereas the philological theory explains the Greek myth by an exceptional accident of changing language, and leaves the other widely diffused myths of fire-stealing in the dark. It would occupy too much space to discuss, in the ethnological method, the rest of the legend of Prometheus. Like the Australian Pundjel, and the Maori Tiki, he made men of clay. He it was who, when Zeus had changed his wife into a fly, and swallowed her, broke open the god's head and let out his daughter Athene. He aided Zeus in the~~

~~*struggle with the Titans. He was punished by him on some desolate hill (usually styled Cau- casus) for fire-stealing, and was finally released by Heracles.*~~

~~*His career may be studied in Hesiod, in the splendid Prometheus Vinctus of Aischylus, with the scholia, in Heyne's Apollodorus, in the excursus (1) of Schiizius to the Aischylean drama, and in the frequently quoted work of Kuhn. The essay of Steinthal may also be examined (Goldziher, Myth. Hebr., Engl. transl., p. 363-892), where the amused student will discover that "Moses is a Pra- manthas," with much else that is learned and convincing. See also Mr Tylor's Early History of Alan; Mr Nesfield in Calcutta Review, January, April, 1884; and above, art. Fig, vol. ix. p. 227 sq. cL Ie)*~~

~~*PRONGBUCK. See ANntTELoPE, vol. i. p. 102, and Plate I. fig. 6.*~~

~~*PRONY, Gasparp CLAIR Francois Mariz RIcHE DE (1755-1839), a celebrated French engineer, was born at Chamelet, in the department of the Rhone, 22d July 1755, and was educated at the Ecole des Ponts et Chaus- sées. His Mémoire sur la poussée des voiites published in 1783, in defence of the principles of bridge construction introduced by his master Peronnet, attracted special atten- tion. Under Peronnet he was engaged in restoring the fort of Dunkirk in 1785, and in erecting the bridge of Louis XVI. in 1787. The laborious enterprise of drawing up the famous Zables du Cadastre was entrusted to lis direction in 1792, and in 1798 he was appointed director at the Ecole des Ponts et Chaussées. He was employed by Napoleon to superintend the engineering operations both for protecting the province of Ferrara against the inundations of the Po and for draining and improving the Pontine Marshes. After the Restoration he was likewise engaged in regulating the course of the Rhone, and in several other important works. He was made a baron in 1828, and a peer in 1835. He was also a member of the principal academies and scientific societies of Europe. He died at Lyons 31st July 1839.*~~

~~*2 Tylor, Zarly History of Man.*~~

~~*PEGE GAN DA*~~

~~PROPAGANDA, or Sacred Congregation de Propaganda Fide, is the name given to a commission of cardinals appointed for the direction of the missions of the Roman Church. The idea of forming such an institution was conceived by Pope Gregory XIII. and other pontiffs, but it was Gregory XV. (1621-1623) who, after having sought counsel from cardinals and information con- cerning the state of religion in various countries from apostolic nuncios and superiors of religious erders, pub- lished, 22nd July 1622, the bull Jnscrutabile by which he founded the Congregation of Propaganda and provided means for its continuance. The cardinal vicar and the cardinal secretary of state were amongst its first members. Additional privileges were granted it by other bulls; and all the pontifical colleges founded up to that date as well as those which should afterwards be founded for the propagation of the faith were declared subject to the Propaganda. The deliberations of this body, embracing a great variety of important questions, when formulated in decrees and signed by the cardinal prefect and the secre- tary were declared by Urban VIII., in 1634, to have the force of apostolic constitutions, which should be inviolably observed. The cardinal prefect. is the head of the Con- gregation, and as such governs the Catholic missions of the world ; the secretary is assisted by five subalterns (minu- tanti), who act as heads of departments, and these again are assisted by inferior employees (scrittori). The more important acts of the Congregation, which are discussed in weekly meetings by the cardinal prefect and the officials, are submitted to the pope for his supreme decision. The archives of the institution were transferred, in 1660, from the Vatican to the Palazzo Ferrattini in the Piazza di Spagna, Rome, which is the seat of the Congregation. They form a valuable collection of historical, ethnographical, and geographical documents, embracing a period of two hundred and fifty years, and serve as a record of past events and of precedents to be followed in decisions on questions that may arise. The funds of the institution were supplied in the first instance by Gregory XV. and by private bequests. Cardinal Barberini, brother of Urban VIIL, provided for eighteen places in perpetuity for students, Mgr. Vives for ten. Pope Innocent XII. be- queathed to it 150,000 crowns in gold; Clement XII. gave it 70,000 crowns. In the second assembly of the Congregation it was proposed, and accepted as a rule, that prelates on being raised to the dignity of cardinal should pay for a ring offered them by the pope a sum which was at first fixed at 545 golden scudi, and which is now 600 Roman~~

~~*scudi. Large donations were made to the Propa- ganda by Catholics in England, Scotland, Ireland, the United States, Spain, and" Italy. The cardinal prefect administers the property of the institution in the name of the Congregation. To provide for the affairs of the Church of the Oriental Rite, Pius IX., in 1862, appointed a special Congregation with its own secretary, consultors, and officials.*~~

~~*The primary purpose of the Propaganda being to secure laborious and pious missionaries, colleges for their education and training were established. Chief amongst these is the Propaganda or Urban College in Rome, so named from Urban VIII. It is a general missionary seminary for the whole world. Here students are received from all foreign nations, and there are special foundations for Georgian, Persian, Chaldean, Syrian, Coptic, Brahman, Abyssinian, Armenian, Greek, and Chinese students, as well as for students from England, Ireland, America, and Australia, although thiese last have special colleges in Rome. After the age of fourteen each student takes an oath to serve the missions during his whole life in the ecclesiastical province or vicariate assigned to him by the Congregation, to which*~~

~~*he must send annually an account of himself and of his work. He is maintained and clothed free of expense. His studies embrace the full course of Greek, Latin, and Italian letters, some of the chief Oriental languages, as Hebrew, Syriac, Arabic, Armenian, and, when necessary, Chinese. There are also schools for the teaching of rational and natural philosophy, a complete course of theology, and the institutions of canon law. Besides this principal seminary, the Propaganda has colleges dependent on it both in Rome and in other countries, under the direction of regular and secular priests. From its begin- ning it had at its disposition national colleges,— such as the English, founded by Gregory XIII. ; the Irish, by Cardinal Ludovisi in 1628 ; the Scotch, by Clement VIII. in 1600 ;*~~

~~*the German and Hungarian; the American, of the United States, opened by Pius IX. in 1859; the Greek, founded by Gregory XIII; the Armenian, recently established by Leo XIIT.; and the Bohemian, opened 4th November 1884. The jurisdiction of the Propaganda extends over the English colleges*~~

~~*of Lisbon and Valladolid, the Irish college of Paris, and the American of Louvain. Until recently it had the Chinese college of Naples, transformed by the Italian Government, and the Illyrian college of Loreto, suppressed by the same Government ; and it still has the Albanian pontifical college of Scutari. Besides these, other colleges serve for the education of missionaries for the Pro- paganda, as the college of SS. Peter and Paul in Rome, founded by Pius IX., in Milan the seminary of St Calocero for all foreign missions, and at Genoa the College Brignole Sale for Italian emigrants to America. The institutions at Verona for central Africa are the support of the missions in the Soudan. Chief of all the seminaries is that of Paris which, for two centuries, has supplied missionaries for India and China. To these is committed the vast college of the island of Pulo Penang, where young men from China and neighbouring countries are trained to the priesthood. In Paris many missionaries are taken from the French seminary directed by the fathers of the Congregation of the Holy Ghost, who go to French colonies. At Lyons is the college for African imissions. In Belgium there are the colleges of F oreign Missions, of the Immaculate Conception, and of St Francis Xavier for Chinese missions. In Holland there was recently established the college of Stiel, whose students go to China. In All Hallows College, Ireland, the students are educated for the missions in Australia, Canada, and the Cape of Good Hope. In England a seminary has grown up within a few years at Mill Till, which has already supplied priests to the missions of Borneo and Madras. Previous to the late changes in Rome, the Propaganda had dependent upon it the college of Reformed Minors in 8. Pietro in Montorio,*~~

~~*the Carmelites in S- Pancrazio (suppressed), the Minor Observants of §. Bartolomeo all' Isola recently re- established, the Conventuals (suppressed), and the Irish Minor Franciscans of St Isidore. Outside of Rome there were also colleges of regulars for the missions, as Ocaila in Spain, Sernache in Portugal, and others. The Propaganda, in the establishment of vicariates or new episcopal sees, has always encouraged the formation, as soon as circum- stances would permit, of seminaries for the education of a native clergy, and frequently these have flourished, as the community of the "Houses of God" (case di Dio) in Tong- king, the seminaries of Sze-chuen, of Peking, and of Nanking. The first step taken in a new mission is the erection of a chapel, followed by the opening of a*~~

~~*school and an orphan- age. As numbers increase, and more priests come to the new mission, they are united under a superior invested with special powers by the Propaganda—in fact a prefect apostolic. As churches increase and the faith spreads, a vicar apostolic, who is a bishop 7m partibus, is appointed,*~~

~~*'IX. — 102*~~

~~*810*~~

~~*and, if the progress made requires it, the mission is erected into an episcopal diocese. Such has been the method of proceeding in the American and Canadian missions ; such, in part, what has happened in India, China, and Africa. Through these, whether prefects or vicars apostolic or bishops, the orders of the Propaganda, which are those of the head of the church, are transmitted to the faithful, and they are the ordinary centres of its correspondence, although it does not disdain the reports furnished by the humblest members of the Christian flock. The prelates furnish exact reports to the Propaganda of the progress and circum- stances of the faith in their various missions.*~~

~~*The material means for the diffusion of the faith are supplied in the first place by special grants from the revenues of the Propaganda and from various associations in Europe. The greatest part is furnished by the society for the propagation of the faith of Paris and Lyons. This society is independent of the Propaganda, relying wholly on the energy of the two central councils of Paris and Lyons and on the charity of the faithful, though it attends to the sug- gestions of the Propaganda, which indicates to it the needs of new missions. Contributions are also furnished by other associations, as that of the Holy Infancy, or that for the education of Oriental nations. Similar societies, occupied with the support of special missions, exist in Bavaria, Ger- many, and Austria. The Propaganda likewise takes care that, as soon as a mission is established, pious foundations are constituted by native Christians, and become the local property of the church, and so supply it with a stable and enduring vitality. Subscriptions from Europe are given only to the poorer missions, which, however, are very numerous. One of the most powerful aids adopted by the Propaganda in the diffusion of the faith is the print- ing-press. The*~~

~~*missionaries are required to study the lan- guages of the countries to which they are sent and exhorted to publish books in these languages. Printing-presses are introduced into new missions. In China, what may be described as wooden stereotypes are employed for the printing of Catholic works in the Chinese language. Early in its career the Congregation of Propaganda estab- lished at its seat in Rome the celebrated Polyglott Print- ing Press, and gave it a character of universality. There people of all nations—the Copt, the Armenian, the Arab, the Hebrew, the Japanese, and the native of Malabar— may find books in their native tongue and in their special type. Although great progress has been made by other countries in polyglott printing, the Propaganda press still holds a high position.*~~

~~*The part of the world to which the cardinals of the Congregation of Propaganda first turned their attention was Asia. In no region of the globe has Christianity had greater difficulties to struggle against than in China. An ancient tradition exists, confirmed by documents, that in the early centuries of the Christian era Christianity had penetrated into and left traces in China. It was re- introduced in the 13th century by Franciscan fathers. It flourished at Peking for a time, but died out with the Mongolian dynasty, and China remained closed to Christian influences until 1555, when the Dominican father Gaspare della Croce introduced it into the province of Canton. After he was expelled came the Jesuits Rogeri and Ricci. They established a residence there in 1579, and were followed by Dominicans and Franciscans. These were succeeded a century later by the priests of the Paris seminary of foreign missions, in the last century by le and Lazarists, and in the present century ba : ee ae of the seminary of St Calocero of Milan.*~~

~~*shopties were created in 1688, one at Nanking, the*~~

~~*other at Peking, and the missi chuen ion e missions of Yun-nan and Sze-*~~

~~*At the beginning of the 18th century |*~~

~~*PROPAGANDA*~~

~~*the number of churches in the northern provinces reached 300, and of Christians 300,000. In 1803 a college for native clergy was opened in Sze-*~~

~~chuen, and the work of the Holy Infancy introduced. In 1837 the Portuguese patronage of Chinese missions was brought to an end, with the exception of that exercised over Macao, a Portu- guese colony.~~

~~In 1310 B. Odorico di Friuli, a Franciscan, entered Tibet and made many converts. In 1624 Father D'Andrada penetrated into the same country, but was not allowed to remain. Others followed, and were put to death. In 1847 the Propaganda entrusted to the seminary of foreign missions the task of entering Tibet, and in 1857 a vicariate apostolic was erected on the frontiers. In Mongolia, constituted a vicariate apostolic in 1840, many converts were made and several priests educated in the seminary of Siwang-se. This mission offers great hopes. It was divided into three vicariates in 1883, and is entrusted to the Belgian congregation of the Immaculate Heart of Mary. The Manchuria mission was made a vicariate in 1839; in 1854 a church, S. Maria ad Nives, was erected, and many other churches have since been built for the increasing mission. In 1592 an attempt was made to Christianize Corea; but repeated persecutions crushed out the germs of Christianity. Its first neophyte, its first native priest, its first bishops, and its first European missionaries were martyrs. From 1784 to 1789 4000 Coreans were converted, but their number was greatly reduced by persecution. In 1831 a vicariate was estab-~~

~~| lished ; in 1835 the number of Christians was 6280; in~~

~~1861 they reached 18,000 ; but in 1866 persecution began anew. Christianity was introduced into Japan in 1549 by S. Francis Xavier. In less than fifty years there were in Japan a bishopric, 380 churches, and 30,000 professing Christians. Persecution broke out in 1601, and in 1614 became so fierce that the priests were put to death and the people dispersed. In 1640 all Europeans, missionaries included, were banished from Japan, this proscription continuing for two centuries. Missionaries were admitted in 1843, but so jealously watched that little good was accomplished. In 1863 a treaty was concluded between the emperor of the French and the Japanese Government permitting the preaching of the gospel. The first church was built after a lapse of two centuries; the number of catechumens soon reached 10,000; other churches were constructed ; and the descendants of the old Christians, who had still preserved the faith, came forth from their~~

~~*concealment. A new persecution broke out in 1870; many Christians apostatized; a great number died of . hunger, and many were exiled. Peace was established in 1873. The vicariate apostolic was divided in 1876 into two—the northern and southern vicariates. By the treaty of Peking, concluded between the French and Chinese Governments, liberty of religion was granted in the Chinese empire and a new era opened. In 1873, in the eighteen provinces of the Chinese empire, the number of Catholics was 410,644, with 4054 centres, 1220 churches and public chapels, 294 bishops and missionaries, 252 native priests, 137 European female religious and 924 native, 104 orphanages with 6853 orphans, and 947 schools frequented by 10,624 pupils. In spite of popular tumults and per- secutions these numbers have increased in late years.*~~

~~*In the year of its foundation the Propaganda established a prefecture apostolic in Burmah. Italian Barnabites penetrated into the country in 1721, and two of them, Fathers Gallizio and Nerici, were put to death. The priests of the seminary of foreign missions continue the work, and three vicariates have been established. Malacca was visited by S. Francis Xavier, and was for a long time under the Portuguese jurisdiction ; but a vicariate was*~~

~~*established in 1841 and entrusted to the Paris seminary, which has a college in Penang for natives of China and neighbouring countries. Jesuits, Dominicans, and Fran- ciscans brought the Catholic faith to Siam in the 16th century. The first vicar apostolic was appointed in 1678. A terrible persecution of Christians, causing great loss, broke out in 1772, and it was not till 1821 that the missions were restored. The vicariate was divided into two in 1841. Inthe missions of the Anamite empire, comprising Tong-king and Cochin China, and the missions to Cambodia and to the Laos people, Christianity may be said to have had its birth and its growth in blood, so fierce and numerous have the persecutions been. In the 14th century the faith was introduced by Dominicans and Franciscans, and the first mission established in 1550 by Gaspare della Croce. The Jesuits came in 1615, and in 1665 the Propaganda established here the priests of the seminary of foreign missions. A few years later the number of Christians in the southern*~~

~~*provinces of Cochin China was 17,000, with 60 churches. Persecution followed persecution. The Dominican Father Francesco Gil, after nine years' imprisonment, was martyred in 1745. All foreigners were driven from the kingdom in 1825, and in 1826 an edict was issued against the Christians. What seemed a war of extermination was undertaken in 1833. Missionaries sought refuge in tombs and grottos, whence they issued by night to administer the sacraments.*~~

~~*his coadjutor, several Chinese priests, Mgr. Barie, vicar apostolic of Eastern Tong-king (about to be consecrated bishop), and an incredible number of lay persons of all ranks were put to death. beatification and sanctification of the Anamite martyrs was introduced by the Sacred Congregation of Rites. Perse- cution was renewed in 1844; the exiled missionaries and prelates returned, though a price was put upon their heads. Christianity was proscribed throughout all Anam in 1848 ; native priests were exiled, and European clergy cast into the sea or the nearest river. Nevertheless the vicariate of Cambodia was founded in 1850, and Eastern Cochin China was made a separate vicarlate. A new edict appeared in 1851, again enjoining that European priests should be cast into the sea, and natives, unless they trampled upon the cross, severed intwo. The missionaries Schaefiler and Bonnard were put to death; the vicars apostolic perished of hunger ; the mass of Christians were imprisoned or exiled. In 1856 and 1857 whole Christian villages were burned and their inhabitants dispersed. The edict of 1862 enjoined that Christians should be given in charge to pagans, that their villages should be burned and their property seized, and that on one cheek should be branded the words " false religion." In 1863 the number of martyrs had reached forty thousand, without reckoning those driven into the woods, where they perished. Never- theless, the Anamite church, steeped in blood, has in- creased, and is regarded as the brightest gem of the Propaganda missions,*~~

~~*India is one of the most extensive fields in which the mis- sionaries have laboured. Previous to the founding of the Propaganda the Jesuits had established several missions in India. The introduction of vicars apostolic consolidated the basis of Christianity, and now twenty-three vicariates apostolic and a delegate apostolic direct the spiritual affairs of this great country. In Africa, Catholic missionaries were the first travellers, two*~~

~~*centuries prior to Livingstone and Stanley. The earliest mission was that of Tunis (1624). The missions of the Cape of Good Hope were entrusted to the clergy of Mauritius; the Reformati and the Observants went to Egypt, the Carmelites to Mo-*~~

~~*| of the United States. | Philadelphia, Boston, and Bardstown (Louisville) were*~~

~~*Mgr. Delgado, vicar apostolic of Western Tong-king, Mgr. Henares |*~~

~~*811*~~

~~*to Ethiopia and Abyssinia. The spiritual affairs of Africa are directed by one metropolitan and thirty-six bishops, vicars, and prefects apostolic. The progress of Catholicism in Australia is evident from the fact that two metro-politans, those of Melbourne and Sydney, with twelve suffragans direct its ecclesiastical affairs. While the missionary field of the Propaganda embraces Asia, Africa, Oceania, and both Americas, as well as England, Ireland, Scotland, Holland, Germany, Norway and Sweden, Iceland, Greenland, Switzerland, Albania, Macedonia, Greece,*~~

~~*| Turkey, &c., perhaps the most splendid results of its work*~~

~~*are to be met with in the United States and in Canada. In 1632 many Catholics settled with Lord Baltimore in Maryland. A century and a half later, in 1789, they had so increased that the Congregation of Propaganda withdrew them from the jurisdiction of the vicar apostolic of London and formed a new see in Baltimore, comprising the territory*~~

~~*In 1808 the sees of New York,*~~

~~*erected, and Baltimore was made the metropolitan diocese. At the end of 1884 there were twelve metropolitans and seventy-six bishops and vicars apostolic in the United States. In 1659 Mgr. Francois de Laval was the first vicar apostolic of Canada; shortly afterwards the episco- pal see of Quebec was established. Now Canada has four metropolitan and sixteen suffragan sees.*~~

~~*The Italian Government, in virtue of the laws relating to ecclesi- astical property of 1866, 1867, and 19th June 1878, sold the Villa Montalto, Frascati, belonging to the Propaganda, and placed the*~~

~~*| price in the Italian funds, paying interest to the Congregation. | Other property of the Congregation having been sold, a law-suit was | entered upon and decided in the Court of Cassation at Rome, 31st In 1842 the cause of the |*~~

~~*May 1881, in favour of the Propaganda. Appeal was made to the*~~

~~*tribunal of Ancona, where, 14th December 1881, decision was given*~~

~~*against the Propaganda. Appeal being again made, the Court of Cassation of Rome gave final judgment, 9th February 1884, against*~~

~~*the Propaganda. This sentence empowers the Italian Government*~~

~~*to sell the landed or immovable property of the Propaganda, place — the proceeds in the Italian funds, and pay the interest to the*~~

~~*Congregation. Protests against this act have been issued by Pope*~~

~~*Leo XIII., by Cardinal Jacobini, secretary of state to the pontiff,*~~

~~*by nearly all the Catholic bishops, and by innumerable thousands*~~

~~*of lay Catholics and many Protestants. (D. J.)*~~

~~*PROPERTIUS, Sextus, the greatest elegiac poet of Rome, was born of a good Umbrian family, who were con- siderable landed proprietors in the fair and fertile region between Perusia and the river Clitumnus. The seat of the Propertii was at Asisium or Assisi, the birthplace of the famous St Francis; and here also was Propertius born. The year of his birth is uncertain, and it has been vari- ously placed between 57 and 44 B.c. We learn from one passage of Ovid that Propertius was his senior, but also his friend and companion ; from another that he was third in the sequence of elegiac poets, following Gallus, who was born in 69 B.c., and Tibullus, whose birth has been assigned to 54 B.c., and immediately preceding Ovid*~~

~~himself, who, as he tells us elsewhere, was bornin 43 8.c. We shall not be far wrong in supposing he was born about 50 B.c., a date which also agrees well with the indications of the poenis themselves. HIs early life was full of misfortune. HIe buried his father before his time; and grief was closely followed by poverty. After the battle of Philippi and the return of Octavian to Rome the victorious legions had to be provided for; their clamorous need and cupidity could only be appeased by wholesale agrarian confiscation, and the north of Italy had to be surrendered. In common with his fellow poets Virgil and HIorace, Propertius was de- prived of his estate; but, unlike these, he had no patrons at court, and he was reduced from opulence to comparative in- digence. The widespread disaffection which these measures provoked was turned to account by Lucius Antonius, the brother of the triumvir, and his wife, the notorious Fulvia.~~

~~zambique and Madagascar, the Capuchins and Jesuits | The insurrection which is generally known as the bellwm~~

~~812~~

~~Perusinum from its only important incident, the fierce and |~~

~~fatal resistance of Perugia, deprived the poet of another of his relations, who was killed by brigands while making his escape from the lines of Octavian. The loss of his patri- mony, however, thanks no doubt to his mother's providence, did not prevent Propertius from receiving a superior educa- tion. After or, it may be, during its completion he and she left Umbria for Rome; and there, about the year 34)B.C., he assumed the garb of manly freedom. HIe was urged to take up a pleader's profession ; but the serious study went against the grain, and, like Ovid, he found in letters and gallantry a more congenial pursuit. Soon afterwards he made the acquaintance of Lycinna, about whom we know little beyond the fact that she subsequently excited the jealousy of Cynthia, and was subjected to all her powers of persecution (vexandi). This passing fancy was suc- ceeded by a serious attachment, the object of which was the famous "Cynthia." HIer real name was HIostia, and she was a native of Tibur. She was a courtezan of the superior class, somewhat older than Propertius, and seems to have been a woman of singular beauty and varied accom- plishments. HIer own predilections led her to literature ; and in her society Propertius found the~~

~~*intellectual sym- pathy and encouragement which were essential for the development of his powers. Her character, as depicted in the poems, is not an attractive one; but she seems to have entertained a genuine affection for her lover. The inti- macy began in 28 and lasted till 23 B.c. These six years must not, however, be supposed to have been a period of unbroken felicity. Apart from minor disagreements, an in- fidelity on Propertius's part excited the deepest resentment in Cynthia; and he was banished for a year. The quarrel was made up about the beginning of 25 B.c.; and soon after Propertius published his first book of poems and inscribed it with the name of his mistress. Its publication placed him in the first rank of contemporary poets, and amongst other things procured him admission to the literary circle of Mecenas. The intimacy was renewed; but the old enchantment was lost. Neither Cynthia nor Propertius was faithful to the other. The mutual ardour gradually cooled ; motives of prudence and decorum urged the dis- continuance of the connexion; and disillusion changed in- sensibly to disgust. Although this separation might have been expected to be final, it is not certain that it was so. It is true that Cynthia, whose health appears to have been weak, does not seem to have survived the separation long. But a careful study of the seventh poem of the last book, in which Propertius gives an account of a dream of her which he had after her death, leads us to the belief that they were once more reconciled, and that in her last illness Cynthia left to her former lover the duty of carrying out her wishes with regard to the disposal of her effects and the arrange- ments of her funeral. Almost nothing is known of the subsequent history of the poet. He was certainly alive in 16 B.c., as some of the allusions in the last book testify. And there are two passages in the letters of the younger Pliny in which he speaks of a descendant of the poet, one Passennus Paullus. Now in 18 3.c. Augustus carried the Leges Juliz, which offered inducements to marriage and Imposed disabilities upon the celibate. It would seem therefore at least a natural conclusion that Propertius was one of the first to comply with the provisions of the law, and that he married and had at least one child, from whom the contemporary of Pliny was descended.*~~

~~*Propertius appears to have had a large number of friends and acquaintances, chiefly literary, belonging to the circle of Mecenas, Amongst these may be mentioned Virgil, the epic poet Ponticus, Bassus (probably the*~~

~~*iambic poet of the name), and at a later period Ovid. He does not seem to have come across Tibullus ; and his relations with*~~

~~*Pe R«O"P Wh aa A*~~

~~*Horace were not particularly friendly. Horace may have regarded him'as an interloper in the favour of Mecenas, though there is nothing in the poems of Propertius to warrant the supposition. In person Propertius was pale and thin, as was to be expected in one of a delicate and even sickly constitution. He was very careful about his personal appearance, and paid an almost foppish attention to dress and gait. He was of a somewhat voluptuous and self-indulgent temperament, which shrank from danger and active exertion. He was anxiously sensitive about the opinion of others, eager for their sympathy and re- gard, and, in general, impressionable to their influence. His over-emotional nature passed rapidly from one phase of feeling to another; but the more melancholy moods predominated. A vein of sadness runs through his poems, sometimes breaking out into querulous exclamation, but more frequently venting itself in gloomy reflexions and prognostications. He had fits of superstition which in healthier moments he despised. It must be added that the native weakness of his character was no doubt con- siderably increased by his infirm and delicate constitution.*~~

~~*The poems of Propertius, as they have come down to us, consist of four books containing 4046 lines of elegiac verse. 'The unusual length of the second one (1402 lines) has led Lachmann and other critics to suppose that it originally consisted of two books, and they have placed the beginning of the third book at ii. 10, a poem addressed to Augustus. This theory, somewhat modified, has been powerfully advocated by Th. Birt (Das Antike Buchwesen, pp. 413-426). He divides the poems into two parts,—a single book (lib. 1.), published separately and called Cynthia Monobiblos, as in the MSS. and the lemma to Martial (xiv. 189), and a Yetraliblos Syntaxis, a collec- tion of four books, published together, consisting of the remainder of his poems. If this view is correct, the greater part of the first book of the Syntaxis must have been lost, as ii. 1-9 only contain 354 lines. The first book, or Cynthia, was published early in the poet's literary life, and may be assigned to 25 B.c. The date of the publication of the rest is uncertain, but none of them can have been published before 24 B.c., and the last, at any*~~

~~rate, was probably published posthumously. The subjects of the poems are threefold :—(1) amatory and personal, mostly regarding Cynthia—seventy-two (sixty Cynthia elegies), of which the last book contains three; (2) poli-. tical and social, on events of the day—thirteen, including three in the last book ; (3) historical and antiquarian—-six, of which five are in the last book.~~

~~The writings of Propertius are noted for their difficulty ; and this has undoubtedly prejudiced his reputation as a poet. His style seems to unite every element by which a reader could be deterred. Not to speak of the unequal quality of his workmanship, in which curtness alternates with redundance, and carelessness with elaboration, the indistinctness and discontinuousness of his thought is a serious strain upon the attention. An apparently desul- tory sequence of ideas, sudden and often arbitrary changes of subject, frequent vagueness and indirectness of expres- sion, a peculiar and abnormal Latinity, a constant tend- ency to exaggeration, and an excessive indulgence in learned and literary allusions,—all these are obstacles lying in the way of a study of Propertius. But those who have the will and the patience to surmount them will find their trouble well repaid. In power and compass of imagination, in freshness and vividness of conception, in truth and originality of presentation, few Roman poets can compare with him. If these qualities are seldom eminent for long together, if his flights are rarely steady and sustained, this is matter for regret rather than cavil or even astonishment. Propertius was essentially incapable~~

~~PY Oeeeieie! 1 US~~

~~of self-criticism, constitutionally intolerant of the slow labour of the file. His work is ever best' when done under the urgency of a supreme and rapid excitement, aud when, so to say, the discordant qualities of his genius are fused together by the electric spark of an immediate inspiration. Two of his merits seem to have impressed the ancients themselves. The first is most obvious in the scenes of quiet description and emotion in whose presenta- tion he particularly excels. Softness of outlire, warmth of colouring, a fine and almost voluptuous feeling for beauty of every kind, and a pleading and almost melan- choly tenderness—such were the elements of the spell which he threw round the sympathies of his reader, and which his compatriots~~

~~*expressed by the vague but expres- sive word blanditia. HIs facundia, or comniand of striking and appropriate language, is more noticeable still. Not only is his vocabulary very extensive, but his employ- ment of it extraordinarily bold and unconventional. New settings of use, idiom, and construction continually sur- prise us, and, in spite of occasional harshness, secure for his style an unusual freshness and freedom. HIs handling of the elegiac couplet, and especially of its second line, deserves especial recognition. It is vigorous, varied, and even picturesque. In the matter of the rhythms, ceesuras, and elisions which it allows, the metrical treatment is much more severe than that of Catullus, whose elegiacs are comparatively rude and barbarous; but it is not bound hand and foot, like that of the Ovidian distich, in a formal and conventional system. It only now remains to call attention to the elaborate symmetry of construction which is observable in many of his elegies. Often indeed the correspondence between different parts of his poem is so close that critics have endeavoured with more or less success to divide them into strophes.*~~

~~*Propertius's poems bear evident marks of the study of his predecessors both Greek and Latin, and of the influ- ence of his contemporaries. He tells us himself that Callimachus and Philetas were his masters, and that it was his ambition to be the Roman Callimachus, We can trace obligations to Theocritus, Apollonius Rhodius, and other Alexandrines, but above all to Meleager, and amongst earlier writers to Homer, Pindar, Auschylus, and others. Amongst Latin writers he had read with more or less care the works of Ennius, Lucretius, the dramatists, and Catullus. We find coincidences too close to be for- tuitous between his poems and those of Virgil, Horace, and Tibullus his contemporaries; but it is very possible the influence was reciprocal. Propertius's influence upon his successors was considerable. There is not a page of Ovid which does not show obligations to lis poems, while other writers made a more modest use of his stores. Among these may be mentioned Manilius, Juvenal, Martial, Statius, Claudian, Seneca, and Apuleius.*~~

~~*The works of Propertius have come down to us in a far from perfect condition. Some of the poems have been lost ; others are fragmentary ; and most are more or less disfigured by corruptions. The manuscripts on which we have to rely are late and im several cases interpolated ; and these circumstances, combined with the native diffi- culty of the poet's writing, make the task of his restora- tion and interpretation one of peculiar delicacy and diffi- culty.*~~

~~*Donatus (or Suetonius) in his life of Virgil, 30 (45), is the autho- rity for the full name of Propertius. " Aurelius" and " Nauta," which are added in the MSS., are due to confusion with Prudentius, and a corrupt reading of iii. 19, 22 (Miiller), (ii. 24, 22, Palmer). — On the Propertii, see Mommsen in Hermes, iv. p. 870; Haupt, Opusc., i. p. 282. Besides the Propertius Blesus (the Passennus Paullus of Pliny), we hear of a C. Propertius who was triumvir capitalis and proconsul in the time of Augustus, and a Propertius Celer, a poor senator under Tiberius. Inscriptions of the Propertii lave been found at Assisi, of Hertzberg, Prop., i. pp. 10-12.*~~

~~*Propertius tells us himself that his family was not “ noble,” iii. 32 (ii. 34), 55, 6, and iii. 19, 7.c.—Mevania (Bevagna) and Hispellum (Spello) have been put forward as the birth-place of Propertius, but the poet’s own expressions are decisive for Asisium. Apart from the question of reading in v. (iv.) 1, 125 (MSS. Asis.), the climbing walls of his town (scandentes arces, scandens murus, Vv. (iv.), 1, 65 and i.c.), its nearness to Perugia, and its position close above the plain (i. 22, 9, 10) are altogether unsuitable to Spello and Bevagna.—Ovid thus assigns Propertius his place :—successor fuit hic (Tibullus), tibi, Galle: Propertius ili (Tibullus): quartus ab his serie teimporis ipse fui (7’r., iv. 10, 58, 54) ; and again (2d., ii. 467), his (to Tibullus and Propertius) ego successi. For Ovid’s friendship with Propertius see below.—v. 1, 121 sq. is the chief authority for the earlier events of his life. For the premature death of his father and the loss of his property, see 127 sq. :—ossaque legisti non illa acetate legenda patris et in tenues ecogeris ipse Lares. nam tibi cum multi uersa- rent rura iuuenci abstulit excultas pertica tristis opes. _Else- where he says that he is non ita diues (iii. 19 (22), l.c.), aud that he had nulla domi fortuna relicta, iii. 32, 55, d.c. Indirect evi- dence, such as his living on the Esquiline, iv. (iii.), 23, 24, points to a competence. For the death of his kinsman, generally supposed to be the Gallus of i. 21, see i. 22, 5-8. Propertius’s mother is mentioned in ii. 8, 39; iii. 18, 15; and in very affeetionate terms in i. 11, 21. She was dead when iii. 18 (11) was written, @.c., six months after the publication of the first book. Yor the quality of Propertius’s education, the poems themselves are the only, but a sufficient, testimony.—For Lycinna see iv. 14 (iil. 15), 3-10, 43.— Cynthia, or Hostia (Apul., Apol., p. 415) of Tibur (v. (iv.), 7, 85), was the granddaughter (iv. 19 (iii. 20), 8) of L. Hostius, who wrote a poem on the Illyrian war of 178 z.c., of which some fragments arc preserved. She was much older than Propertius (ili, 10 (ii. 18), 20). hat she was a merctriz is clear from many indications—her accomplishments, her house in the Subura, the occurrence of scenes like those in i. 3, iii. 27 (ii. 29), the fact that Propertius could not. marry her, &c. For descriptions of her beauty see il. 2, 5 sq., and 8, 9 sq.; iii. 3 (ii. 18), 28, 24; her poetry, 1i. 8, 21; aud other accomplishments, i. 2, 27 sg., iv. 19 (20), 7, 8. In char- acter she was fickle (i. 15, ii. 6, &c.), greedy (iii. 8 (ii. 16), 11, 12, Cynthia non sequitur fasces, nec curat honores: semper aima- torum ponderat una sinus), and fond of finery (ii. 3, 15, 16); her temper was violent, iv. 7 (iii. 8), &c., and led her to slander those who had offended her (i. 4, 18 sg., &e).—*~~

~~*For the five years, see iv. (iii.) 25, 8, quinque tibi potui scruire fideliter annos ; and for the year of separation, iv. 15, 11 (iii. 16), 9, peccaram semel, ct totum sum pulsus in annum. The secoud separation is vouched for by the two last elegies of book iv. The evidence which v. (iv.) 7 furnishes in favour of a reconciliation is analysed by Postgate (Prop., Introd., p. xxv. sg.).—v. 6 commemorates the celebration of the Judi quinquennales, and v. 11, 66 alludes to the consulship of P. Scipio in 16 3.c. For Passennus Paullus (or as an Assisi inseription calls him C. Passennus Sergius Paullus Propertius Blesus), see Pliny (Hp., vi. 15), municeps Properti atque ctiam inter maiores Propertium numerat; (9, 22), in litteris uetcres aemulatur exprimit reddit: Propertium in primis a quo genus ducit, uera soboles eoque simillima ill in quo ille praecipuus, si elegos eius in manum sumpseris, leges opus tersum molle incundum et plane in Properti domo scriptuin.—ii. 1 and iv. (iii.) 9 are addressed to Mecenas, iii. 1 (ii. 10) to Augustus. Virgil is spoken of in the highest terms in iil. 32 (ii. 34), 61 sg. Other poems are addressed to Ponticus (i. 7, 9), Bassus (i. 4), Lyneeus a tragic poet (iii. 32, ii. 84). Volpi con- jectured (in his edition of Propertius, i. pp. xv. sg.) that the inquisitive fellow of Horace, Sad., i. 9; but the conjecture is generally rejected on grounds of chronology. It has recently been re-discussed and rejected by Prof. A. Palmer in his edition of Horace's Satires, i. 9 (notes), p. 219. In £p. ii. 87 sq., how- ever, Horace seems to make a direct attack on Propertius.—On Propertius's personal appearance, see i. 1, 22, 5, 21; palloremn nos- trum … cur sim toto corpore nullus ego. A Jikeness of him has possibly been preserved in a double Hermes in the Villa Albani and the Vatican, which representsa young beardless Roman, ofa nervous and somewhat sickly appearance, in combination with a Greek poet, possibly Callimachus or Philetas (Viseonti, Jconograph. Romana, plate 14, 8, 4; sce E. Brizio, Annal. dell' inst. arch., 1873, 105; C. Robert, Arch. Zeit., 88, 35, eited by Teuffel). Ill health is proved, as well by the specific allusion of i. 15 as by the frequent references to death and burial—i. 19; ii. 1, 71 sq. ; iii. 5, 1 (ii. 18,17) sq. For his care about dress and the like, sce il. 4, 15, 16, (5, 6), nequiquam perfusa meis unguenta eapillis ibat et expenso planta morata gradu. His character is mirrored in his poems. In particular it has had a great deal to do in moulding his vocabu- lary (Postgate, Introd., p. xxxvi. sg.). For want of courage and cnergy, especially, sce ii. 7, 14; iii. 12 (ii, 19), 17-24; and for superstitious leanings iii, 23 (ii. 27); ii. 4, 15, (25); v. (iv.) 5, 9, sg.—The numbering of the books is one of the most vexed questions of*~~

~~*Propertius ; but it is not unlikely that Birt's conclu- sions will be ultimately accepted. The dates of the several poems*~~

~~*are, Where known, some guide towards determining that, of the books: i. 8 seems to have been written about 27 B.c.; i. 6 not before 27 B.c.; ii. 1in 25 B.c.; i. 8 after 27 B.c. 3 iil. 1 (il. 10) in 24 B.c. ; 29, 31, end of 28; 32 not before 28 .c.; iv. (ili) 17 (18) in or after 23 B.c. ; so 8 (4), 4 (5), 11 (12), but 20 about 28 B.c.; v. (iv.) 6, 11 not before 16 B.c.; 3 in 23 Bc. For the evidence for believing book v. to-be posthumous see Postgate, pp. liv., lv.—It is beyond our limits to discuss the style and idiom of Propertius in fnll. For details see Hertzberg, Introduction, pp. 47, sq.; Postgate, Introduction, pp. lvii. sg. (literary style), Ixxxviii. sg. (grammar and vocabulary), cxxvi. sg. for metre and prosody; also L. Miiller's Introduction, pp. xlviii. sg. For ancient references to Propertius as a writer see Quint., x. 1, 93, where it is stated that some (not Quintilian) preferred him to Tibullus, Ov., A. A., ii. 383, Tr., ii1.465 (blandus P.), v. 1, 17 (blandus), Mart., xiv. 189 (facundus P.), viii. 78, Pliny, /.c. above, Stat., Silv., 1. 2, 253, Vibro Propertius antro.—Prop., iii. (iv.) 1, Callimachi Manes et Coi sacra Philetae, in uestrum, quaeso, ine sinite ire nemus ; v. (iv.) 1, 64, Vmbria Romani patria Callimachi. But, as is well pointed out by Teuffel in his History of Roman Literature, Pro- pertius's debt to Callimachus and Philetas is chiefly a formal one. Kven into his mythological learning he breathes a life to which those dry scholars were complete strangers.—For a summary ac- count of his relations to his predecessors and contemporaries see Postgate, Introd. ch. v. Coincidences with Horace are quoted in Teutfel (§ 246, 2); with Catullus, M. Magnus, Flecketsen's Jahr- biicher, 115, p. 418; with Tibullus, A. Zingerle, Ovid's Verhdliniss, &c., i. 55, 98, 101, &c. ; with Virgil, Nettleship, Ancient Lives of Vergil, p. 63, 64.*~~

~~*There is no existing MS. of Propertius older than the 14th century. Up till the publication of Bahrens's edition (1880), the Neapolitanus (N., now often called the Guelferbytanus) was regarded as the best. Buhrens, however, maintained its worthlessness as compared with the concurrence of four other MSS. of his own collating :—Vossianus, circa 1360 (A) ; Laurentianus, beginning of 15th century (F.); Ottoboniano-Vaticanus, end of 14th century (V.); Daventriensis, 1410-20 (D.). Béhrens's attack upon the Neapolitan was answered by H. Leo (RA. Mus., xxxi. 431), Ellis(Amer.*~~

~~*Journ. Phil., 1.389), Palmer (Hermathena, iv, 48-72). The contending merits of these MSS. have been examined by Solbisky (Comm. Phil. Jenenses, ii. 1883) with considerable care, and his conclusions as to the independ- ent value both of N. and the consensus of D. V. are likely to be accepted.*~~

~~*The editio princeps of Propertius is that of 1472, Venice. Among the chief editions may be mentioned the following, those with notes being marked with an asterisk :—*Scaliger (1577, &c.), *Broukhusius (2d ed., 1577), *Passeratius (1608), *Vulpius (1755, 2 vols.), *P. Burmann (and Santen) (1780), *Lachmann (1816; text only, 1829), "Jacob (1827), Hertzberg (1843-45, 2 vols.), *F. A. Paley (2d cd., 1872), L. Miiller (1870), Haupt-Vahlen (1879), Bahrens (1880), A. Palmer (1880); selec- tions, with introduction, Postgate (1881). Those of Miiller and Palmer are the editions cited throughout this article. 1t is impossible to cite the numerous pro- grains, dissertations, papers, &c., which have been published on subjects con- nected with Propertius. For fuller bibliographies it is sufficient to refer to Hertzberg, Prop., i. pp. 248-59; Engelmann's Bibliotheca Scriptorum Latinorum (ed. Preuss, 1882); J. E. B. Mayor's Bibliographical Clue to Latin Literature (1875); W. Teuffel, Geschichte d. Rom. Litteratur (2d ed., 1882; Eng. trans., 1873; sec. 246 gives an excellent account of Propertius); Pauly, Real-Encyclopéddie, ye ord ee) eer of recent Propertian literature are given in Bursian's*~~

~~*ahresberic pp. 7-54 (very meagre), and in the Trans. Camb. Philol. Soc., 1880 (i. 372-86), 1881-82 (ii. 226-36), a:*~~

~~*The following translations into English yerse are known:—G. F. Nott, Book i. (published anonymously, 1872); C.A. Elton, selections in his Specimens. of the Classic Poets, vol. ii. p. 215 sq. (1814, reprinted along with the preceding and a prose version by P. J. F. Gantillon, in Bohn's series, 1848, 1883); C. R. Moore (London, 1870); J. Cranstoun (Edinburgh, 1875); F.A, Paley, verse translations*~~

~~*from Book v. with notes (1866); also a few translations by Gray (th t) firs printed in Gosse's edition, vol. 1. (1884). ae es inom*~~

~~PROPHET (zpogyrys) is a word taken from the voca- bulary of ancient Greek religion, which passed into the language of Christianity, and so into the modern tongues of Europe, because it was adopted by the Hellenistic Jews as the rendering of the Hebrew x75 (nabi, pl. nébtim). The word therefore as we use it is meant to convey an idea which belongs to Hebrew and not to Hellenic belief — but when it first underwent this change of application the age of the nebiim was long past, and the Jews themselves had a very imperfect conception of what they had been and done. Hence in actual usage the idea conveyed by the word prophet has never quite corresponded with its his- torical prototype; the prophets of early Christendom, for example, are not by any means exact counterparts of the Old-Testament prophets, and in general very various ideas have prevailed as to what a prophet is or should be, because up to quite a recent date the work of the Hebrew prophets has been habitually approached not in~~

~~a purely historical spirit but under the influence of pre- conceived ideas.1~~

~~1 It does not appear that the origi i iati ; inal Hellenic associations of the Hee have had any sensible effect on 'these ideas. According to Plato e ae. Bae the name mpopfrns ought properly to be confined to erpreters employed to put an intelligible sense on the dreams,~~

~~PRO—P RO~~

~~In the present article no attempt will be made to follow those speculations about the nature of prophecy which belong to dogmatic theology rather than to history; but a brief sketch will be given (1) of the history of Hebrew prophecy (in supplement to what has been already said in the article ISRAEL or is to be found in the articles devoted to individual prophets), and (2) of prophecy in the early Christian Church. To speak of more recent religious phenomena within Christendom which have claimed to be prophetic would carry us too far; for them the reader is referred to such articles as MontanisM, ANABAPTISTS. The conception of prophecy on which the Mohammedan religion is built has been sufficiently explained in the life of Mohammed ; borrowed, somewhat unintelligently, from later Judaism, it is radically different from that of the Old Testament, and when narrowly looked at lends no countenance tothe statement often made, and at~~

~~*first sight plausible, that prophecy is a phenomenon characteristic of Semitic religion in general.*~~

~~*1. The Prophets of the Old Testament.—The author of 1 Sam. ix. 9 tells us that '"beforetime in Israel, when a man went to inquire of God, thus he spake, Come and let us go to the seer; for he that is now called a prophet (nab) was beforetime called a seer." This remark is introduced to explain how his contemporaries spoke of Samuel. He wasa "seer" (ver. 11), or, ashe is also called (ver. 6 sq.), a "man of God," that is one who stood in closer relations to God than ordinary men; "all that he: said was sure to come to pass," so that he could be consulted with advantage even in private matters like the loss of the asses of Kish. The narrative of 1 Sam. ix. is so vivid and exact that not many generations of oral tradition can have separated the writer from the events he records ; it shows us therefore, at least broadly, what the word prophet meant in the early times of the Hebrew kingdom, and it shows us that it had acquired that meaning after the age of Philistine oppression in which Samuel lived, and to which his younger contemporaries Saul and David put an end. That this is the sense of the author, and that we must not suppose that the word prophet had merely become more common in his time and supplanted an older synonym, appears beyond question a few verses further down, where we see that there were already in Samuel's time people known as nebéim, but that they were not seers. The seer, with his exceptional insight, is a man of prominent individuality and held in great respect : when Saul asks for the seer every one knows that there is only one person in the town whom he can mean. With the prophets it is quite otherwise ; they appear not individually but in bands; their prophesying is a united exercise accompanied by music, and seemingly dance-music ; it is marked by strong excitement, which sometimes acts contagiously, and may be so powerful that*~~

~~*visions, or enigmatic utterances of the frenzied udyris. Butin ordinary Greek usage the prophet of any god is in general any human instru- ment through whom the god declares himself; and the tendency was "to reserve the name for unconscious interpreters of the divine thought, and for the ministers of the oracles in general" (Bouché-Leclercq, ist. de la Divination [1880], ii. 11). This probably facilitated the adoption of the term by the Hellenists of Alexandria, for, when Philo distinguishes the prophet from the spurious*~~

~~*diviner by saying that the latter applies his own inferences to omens and the like while the true prophet, rapt in ecstasy, speaks nothing of his own, but simply repeats what is given to him by a revelation in which his reason has no part (ed. Mangey, ii. 321 sg., 843; comp. i. 510 sq.), he follows the preva- lent notion of the later Jews, at least in so far as he makes the function of the prophet that of purely mechanical reproduction; compare John xi. 51, and the whole view of revelation presupposed in the Apo- calyptic literature. But in any case the Greek language hardly offered another word for an organ of revelation so colourless as mpophrns, while the condition of etymology among the ancients made it possible to interpret it as having a special reference to prediction (so Eusebius, Dem. Zv., v., deriving it from mpopulve).*~~

~~*rnRor kh & T*~~

~~*he who is seized by it is unable to stand,! and, though this condition is regarded as produced by a divine afflatus, it is matter of ironical comment when a prominent man like Saul is found to be thus affected. Samuel in his later days appears presiding over the exercises of a group of nebiim at Ramah, where they seem to have had a sort of coenobium (Naioth), but he was not himself a na@bi—that name is never applied to him except in 1 Sam. iii. 21, where it is plainly used in the later sense for the idea which in Samuel's own time was expressed by '"'seer."? But again the nebitm seem to have been a new thing in Israel in the days of Samuel. Seers there had been of old as in other primitive nations; of the two Hebrew words literally corresponding to our seer, réeh and hézeh, the second is found also in Arabic, and seems to belong to the primitive Semitic vocabulary. But the enthusiastic bands of prophets are nowhere mentioned before the time of Samuel; and in the whole previous history the word prophet occurs very rarely, never in the very oldest nar- ratives, and always in that sense which we know to be later than the age of Samuel, so that the use of the term is due to writers of the age of the kings, who spoke of ancient things in the language of their own day. The appearance of the nebtim in the time of Samuel was, it would seem, as has been explained in the article IsraxEt, one manifestation of the deep pulse of suppressed indignant patriotism which began to beat in the hearts of the nation in the age of Philistine oppression, and this fact explains the influence of the movement on Saul*~~

~~*and the interest taken in it by Samuel. The ordinary life of ancient Israel gave little room for high-strung religious feeling, and the common acts of worship coincided with the annual harvest and vintage feasts or similar occasions of natural gladness, with which no strain of abnormal enthusiasm could well be*~~

~~*combined. It was perhaps only in time of war, when he*~~

~~*felt himself to be fighting the battles of Jehovah, that the Hebrew was stirred to the depths of his nature by emotions of a religious colour. Thus the deeper feelings of religion were embodied in warlike patriotism, and these feelings the Philistine oppression had raised to extreme tension among all who loved liberty, while yet the want of a captain to lead forth the armies of Jehovah against his foemen deprived them of their natural outlet. It was this tense suppressed excitement, to which the ordinary acts of worship gave no expression, which found vent in the enthusiastic services of the companies of prophets. In its external features the new phenomenon was exceedingly like what is still seen in the East in every zikr of dervishes—the enthusiasm of the prophets expressed itself in no artificial form, but in a way natural to the Oriental temperament. Processions with pipe and hand-drum, such as that described in 1 Sam. x., were indeed a customary part of ordinary religious feasts; but there they were an outlet for natural merriment, here they have changed their character to express an emotion more sombre and more intense, by which the prophets, and often mere chance spectators too, were so overpowered that they seemed to lose their old personality ane to be swayed by a super- natural influence. More than this hardly lies in the expression "a divine spirit" (ods nv), which is used not only of the prophetic afflatus but of the evil frenzy that afflicted Saul's later days. The Hebrews had a less narrow conception of the spiritual than we are apt to read into their records.*~~

~~*11 Sam. x. 5 sg., xix. 20 sg. In the latter passage read "they saw the fervour of the prophets as they prophesied, &c." (see Hoff- mann in Stade's Zeitschr., 1883, p. 89), after the Syriac.*~~

~~*2 On grounds of text-criticism indeed both this passage and 1 Sam. xxviii., where at ver. 6 prophets appear as revealers (seers), are held to be no part of the old stock of the history of Samuel.*~~

~~3 Hoffmann, ut supra, p. 92 sq.~~

~~815~~

~~To give a name to this new phemonenon the Israelites, it would seem, had to borrow a word from their Canaanite neighbours. At all events the word nai is neither part of the old Semitic vocabulary (in Arabic it is a late loan word), nor has it any etymology in Hebrew, the cognate words "to prophesy" and the like being derived from the noun in its technical sense. But we know that there were nebiim among the Canaanites; the " prophets" of Baal appear in the history of Elijah as men who sought to attract their god by wild orgiastic rites. In fact the presence of an orgiastic character is as marked a feature in Canaanite religion as the absence of it is in the oldest religion of Israel; but the new Hebrew enthusiasts had at least an external resemblance to the devotees of the Canaanite sanctuaries, and this would be enough to deter- mine the choice of a name which in the first instance seems hardly to have been a name of honour.* In admit- ting that the name was borrowed, we are not by any means shut up to suppose that the Hebrew nebiim simply copied their Canaanite neighbours. The phenomenon is perfectly intelligible without any such hypothesis. A wave of in- tense religious feeling passes over the land and finds its expression, according to the ordinary law of Oriental life, in the formation of a sort of enthusiastic religious order. The Nazarites and the Rechabites are parallel phenomena, though of vastly inferior historical tmportance.~~

~~The peculiar methods of the prophetic exercises de- scribed in 1 Samuel were of little consequence for the future development of prophecy. The heat of a first en- thusiasm necessarily cooled when the political conditions that produced it passed away ; and, if the prophetic asso- ciations had done no more than organize a new form of spiritual excitement, they wotld have only added one to the many mechanical types of hysterical religion which are found all over the East. Their real importance was that they embodied an intenser vein of feeling than was ex- pressed in the ordinary feasts and sacrifices, and that the greater intensity was not artificial, but due to a revival of national sentiment. The worship of the local sanctu- aries did nothing to promote the sense of the religious unity of Israel; Jehovah in the age of the Judges ran no small risk of being divided into a number of local~~

~~*Baals, givers of natural good things each to his own locality. The struggle for freedom called forth a deeper sense of the unity of the people of the one Jehovah, and in so doing raised religion to a loftier plane ; for a faith which unites a nation is necessarily a higher moral force than one which only unites a township or a clan. The local worships, which subsisted unchanged during the greater part of the Hebrew kingship, gave no expression to this rise in the religious consciousness of the nation; on the contrary we see from the prophetic books of the 8th century that they lagged more and more behind the pro- gress of religious thought. But the prophetic societies were in their origin one symptom of that upheaval of national life of which the institution of the human sove- reign reigning under the divine King was the chief fruit ; they preserved the traditions of that great movement ; they were, in however imperfect a way, an organ of national religious feeling, and could move forward with the movement of national life. And so, though we cannot follow the steps of the process, we are not surprised to*~~

~~*4 If this account of the origin of the nebiim is correct (comp.*~~

~~*Kuenen, Prophets, Eng. tr., p. 554 sq.), the etymological sense of the*~~

~~*word %3 is comparatively unimportant. The root seems to mean _ "to start up," "to rise into prominence," and so "to become audible" ;*~~

~~*but the range of possible explanations of the noun which remains open*~~

~~*is too great to give value to any conjecture. The leading views are*~~

~~*collected in several of the books cited at the close of this article, and*~~

~~*a fresh and interesting investigation is given in G. Hoffmann's article*~~

~~*quoted above.*~~

~~*learn that they soon had an established footing in Israel, and that the prophets came to be recognized as a standing sacred element in society.*~~

~~*What was their precise place in Hebrew life we hardly know, but they formed at least a religious class which in all its traditions represented the new national and not the old communal and particularistic life. One characteristic point which appears very early is that they felt themselves called upon to vindicate the laws of divine righteousness in national matters, and especially in the conduct of the kings, who were not answerable to human authority. The cases of Nathan and David in the matter of Uriah, of Elijah and Ahab after the judicial murder of Naboth, will occur to every one, and from the Hebrew standpoint the action of Gad in the matter of the census taken by David belongs to the same category. Such interventions with an Eastern king demanded great moral courage, for, though to some extent protected by their sacred character, the persons of the prophets were by no means legally inviolable (1 Kings xix. 2; xxii. 27; 2 Kings vi. 31). Another point of the first importance in the development of the class was the absorption into it of the old seers, which, as we have already seen, must have occurred comparatively early. The great prophecy of Nathan (2 Sam. vii.) is of too disputed a date to be cited in evidence, but already in David's time we find that Gad the abt is also the king's seer (2 Sam. xxiv. 11; comp. 1 Sam. xxii. 5), and by and by it comes to be clearly understood that the prophets are the appointed organ of Jehovah's communications with His people or His king. The rise of this function of the prophets is plainly parallel with the change which took place under the kings in the position of the priestly oracle; the Torah of the priests now dealt rather with permanent sacred ordinances than with the giving of new divine counsel for special occasions. Jehovah's ever-present kingship in Israel, which was the chief religious idea brought into promin- ence by the national revival, demanded a more continuous inanifestation of His revealing spirit than was given either by the priestly lot or by the rise of occasional seers ; and where could this be sought except among the prophets? It does not of course follow that every one who had shared in the divine afflatus of prophetic enthusiasm gave forth oracles; but the prophets as a class stood nearer than other men to the mysterious workings of Jehovah, and it was in their circle that revelation seemed to have its natural home.*~~

~~*PrOorHae*~~

~~*is not only prophet and priest but judge and ruler. But as the history goes on the prophet stands out more and more as the typical organ of revelation, the type of the man who is Jehovah's intimate, sharing His secrets (Amos ii. 7; Jer. xxiii. 22), and ministering to Israel the gracious guidance which distinguishes it from all other nations (Amos ii. 11; Hosea xii. 10, 13), and also the sentences of awful judgment by which Jehovah rebukes rebellion (Hos. vi. 5). The full development of this view seems to lie between the time of Elijah and that of Amos and Hosea,—under the dynasty of Jehu, when prophecy, as represented by Elisha and Jonah, stood in the fullest harmony with the patriotic efforts of the age. This growth in the conception of the prophetic function is reflected in parts of the Pentateuch which may be dated with probability as belonging to the period just named ; the name of nab? is extended to the patriarchs as Jehovah's intimates (Gen. xx. 7), and Moses begins to be chiefly looked at as the greatest of prophets (Num. xi. xi; Deut. xxxiv. 10), while Aaron and Miriam are also placed in the same class (Exod. xv. 20; Num. xii.) because they too are among the divinely favoured leaders of Israel (comp. Micah vi. 4).?*~~

~~*Elisha, the successor of Elijah, stood in much closer relations to the prophetic societies than his great master had done. As a man of practical aims he required a circle through which to work, and he found this among the prophets, or, as they are now called, the sons of the prophets. According to Semitic idiom "sons of the pro- phets" most naturally means "members of a prophetic corporation," ? which may imply that under the headship of Elisha and the favour of the dynasty of Jehu, which owed much to Elisha and his party, the prophetic societies took a more regular form than before. The accounts we have certainly point in this direction, and it is character- istic that in 2 Kings iv. 42 first fruits are paid to Elisha. But to an institution hike prophecy national recognition, royal favour, and fixed organization are dangerous gifts. It has always been the evil fate of the Hebrews to destroy their own highest ideals by attempting to translate them into set forms, and the ideal of a prophetic guidance of the nation of Jehovah could not have been more effectu- ally neutralized than by committing its realization to the kind of state church of professional prophets, 'eating bread" by their trade (Amos vii. 12),3 which claimed to inherit the traditions of Elijah and Elisha. The sons of the prophets appear to have been grouped round the lead- ing sanctuaries, Gilgal, Bethel, and the like (comp. Hos. ix. 8), and to have*~~

~~stood in pretty close relation to the priesthood (Hos. iv. 5), though this comes out more clearly~~

~~1 None of these passages belong to the very oldest thread of Penta- teuchal story, and similarly Deborah is called prophetess only in the later account (Jud. iv. 4), not in the song (Jud. v.). It is character- istic that in Num. xi. the elders who receive a share in Moses's task also receive a share of his prophetic spirit (comp. the parallel 2 Kings ii. 9 sg.). In the older account (Exod. xviii.) this is not so. Again Moses differs from all other prophets in that Jehovah speaks to him face to facc, and he sees the similitude of Jehovah. This is in fact the difference between him and Elijah (comp. Exod. xxxiii. 8-11 with 1 Kings xix. 13), but not between him and the great prophets of the 8th century (Isa. vi. 5). That prophecy was generally given in visions, dreams, and obscure sentences is truc only of an early period. Amos still has frequent visions of a more or less enigmatic character, as Micaiah had, but there is little trace of this in the-great prophets after him. On the psychological reasons for this see W. R. Smith, Prophets of Israel (1882), p. 221 sq.~~

~~2 See G. Hoffmann, Kirchenversammlung zu Ephesus (1878), p, 89.~~

~~3 Those who consulted the old seers were expected to make a pre- sent, 1 Sam. ix. 7 (Arabic holwanu-'l-kahin ; comp. Bokhari, iv. 219). Similar presents were brought to the older prophets (1 Kings xiv. 3), and first fruits were sometimes paid to a man of God; but the suc- cessors of Amos share his contempt for those who traded on their oracles (Mic. iii. 5 sq.).~~

~~PROPHET~~

~~for the southern kingdom, where, down to the last days of Hebrew independence, the official prophets of Jerusalem were connected with the temple and were under the authority of the chief priest (Jer. xxix. 26). Since the absorption of the aborigines in Israel Canaanite ideas had exercised great influence over the sanctuaries—so much so that the reforming prophets of the 8th century regarded the national religion as having become wholly heathenish ; and this influence the ordinary prophets, whom a man like Micah regards as mere diviners, had certainly not escaped. 'They too were, at the beginning of the Assyrian period, not much more different from~~

~~*prophets of Baal than the priests were from priests of Baal. Their God had another name, but it was almost forgotten that He had a different character.*~~

~~*The rise and progress of the new school of prophecy, beginning with Amos and continued in the succession of canonical prophets, which broke through this religious stagnation, has already been discussed in the article IsRAEL (vol. xiii. p. 410 sg.) ; for from Amos and still more from Isaiah downwards the prophets and their work make up the chief interest of Hebrew history. From this time, moreover, the prophets appear as authors ; and their books, preserved in the Old Testament, form the subject of special articles (Amos, Hosma, &c.).*~~

~~*lace. — Amos disclaimed all connexion with the mere profes- sional prophets, and in this he was followed by his suc- cessors. Formerly the prophets of Jehovah had been all on the same side; their opponents were the prophets of Baal. But henceforth there were two parties among the prophets of Jehovah themselves, the new prophets accus- ing the old of imposture and. disloyalty to Jehovah, and*~~

~~*these retaliating with a charge of disloyalty to Israel.*~~

~~*We have learned to call the prophets of the new school "true" prophets and their adversaries "false"; and this is perfectly just if we take the appellations to mean that the true prophets maintained a higher and therefore a truer view of Jehovah's character, purpose, and relation to His people. But the false prophets were by no means mere common impostors ; they were the accredited expon- ents of the common orthodoxy of their day — and even of a somewhat progressive orthodoxy, for the prophets who opposed Jeremiah took their stand on the ground of Josiah's reformation, and plainly regarded. themselves as conservators of the prophetic traditions of Isaiah, whose doctrine of the inviolability of Jehovah's seat on Zion was the starting point of their opposition to Jeremiah's pre- dictions of captivity. No doubt there were many con- scious hypocrites and impostors among the professional prophets, as: there always will be among the professional representatives of a religious standpoint which is intrin- sically untenable, and yet has on its side the prestige of tradition and popular acceptance. But on the whole the false prophets deserve that name, not for their conscious impostures, but because they were content to handle religious formulas*~~

~~*which they had learned by rote as if they were intuitive principles, the fruit of direct spiritual experience, to enforce a conventional morality, shutting their eyes to glaring national sins, after the manner of professional orthodoxy, and in brief to treat the religious status quo as if it could be accepted without question as fully embodying the unchanging principles of all religion. The popular faith was full of heathenish superstition strangely blended with the higher ideas which were the inheritance left to Israel by men like Moses and Elijah ; but the common prophets accepted all alike, and combined heathen arts of divination and practices of mere physical 'onthusiasm with a not altogether insincere pretension that*~~

~~*through their professional oracles the ideal was being maintained of a continuous divine guidance of the people of Jehovah.*~~

~~*Amos and his successors accepted the old ideal of pro- phecy if they disowned the class which pretended to em- body it. "The Lord Jehovah will do nothing, but He re- vealeth His secret to His servants the prophets." "By a prophet Jehovah brought Israel out of Egypt, and by a prophet" in each successive age Israel had been watched over and preserved. But in point of fact the function of the new prophecy was not to preserve but to destroy Israel, if Israel still meant the actual Hebrew nation with its traditional national life. 'Till Amos prophecy was optimist—even Elijah, if he dendunced the destruction of a dynasty and the annihilation of all who had bowed the knee to Baal, never doubted of the future of the nation when only the faithful remained ; but the new prophecy is pessimist—it knows that Israel is rotten to the core, and that the whole fabric of society must be dissolved before reconstruction is possible. And this it knows, not bya mere ethical judgment on the visible state of society, but because it has read Jehovah's secret written in the signs of the times and knows that He has condemned His people. 'To the mass these signs are unintelligible, be- cause they deem it impossible that Jehovah should utterly cast off His chosen nation; but to those who know His absolute righteousness, aud confront it with the people's sin, the impending approach of the Assyrian can have only one meaning and can point to only one issue, viz., the total ruin of the nation which has denied its divine head. It is sometimes*~~

~~*proposed to view the canonical prophets as simple preachers of righteousness ; their pre- dictions of woe, we are told, are conditional, and tell what Israel must suffer if it does not repent. But this is an incomplete view ; the peculiarity of their position is that they know that Israel as it exists is beyond repentance. Only, while they are hopeless about their nation they have absolute faith in Jehovah and HIs purpose. That cannot be frustrated, and, as it includes the choice of Israel as HIs people, it is certain that, though the present commonwealth must perish, a new and better Israel will rise from its grave. Not the reformation but the resur- rection of Israel is the goal of the prophets' hope (HOs. vi. 1 sq.).*~~

~~*This of course is only the broadest possible statement of a position which undergoes many modifications in the hands of individual seers, but on the whole governs all prophecy from Amos to Jeremiah. The position has, we see, two sides: on the one side the prophets are heralds of an inexorable judgment based on the demands of abso- lute righteousness ; on the other they represent an assured conviction of Jehovah's invincible and gracious love. The current theological formula for this two-sided position is that the prophets are at once preachers of the law and forerunners of the gospel ; and, as it is generally assumed that they found the law already written, their originality and real importance is made to lie wholly in their evan- gelical function. But in reality, as has been shown in IsraEL and PENTATEUCH, the prophets are older than the law, and the part of their work which was really epoch- making for Israel is just the part which is usually passed over as unimportant. By emphasizing the purely moral character of Jehovah's demands from Israel, by teaching that the mere payment of service and worship at Jehovah's shrines did not entitle Israel's sins to be treated one whit more lightly than the sins of other nations, and by en- forcing these doctrines through the conception that the approach of the all-destroying empire before which Israel must fall equally with all its neighbours was the proof of Jehovah's impartial righteousness, they gave for the first*~~

~~*time a really broad and fruitful conception of the moral government of the whole earth by the one true God."*~~

~~*It is impossible to read the books of the older prophets, and especially of their protagonist Amos, without seeing that the new thing which they are compelled to speak is not Jehovah's grace but His inexorable and righteous wrath. That that wrath must be followed by fresh mercies is not in itself a new thought, but only the neces- sary expression of the inherited conviction that Jehovah, whom they preach as the judge of all the earth, is never- theless, as past history has proved, the God who has chosen Israel as His people. That this is so appears most clearly in the fact that with Amos the prophecy of restora- tion appears only in a few verses at the end of his book, and in the still more instructive fact that neither he nor Hoséa attempts to explain how the restoration which they accept as a postulate of faith is to be historically realized." One point only in their picture of the great restoration appears to present the germ of an historical principle. The Israel of the future is to be one united nation as in the days of David. The Davidic kingdom is accepted by both prophets, and by Hosea even more explicitly than by Amos, as the type of the future kingdom of Jehovah. But one sees from the way in which this thought is handled that it is the idea of that kingdom as it was in days of old which is before the prophet's mind ; the actual state of Judah, which was not religiously better than the greater Israel, though it perhaps still possessed elements of greater political and social stability, was not such as to suggest the thought that when Samaria fell the continuity of Jehovah's relations with His people could be preserved at Jerusalem. It was in the great northern kingdom— still Israel par eacellence—not in the petty region that had remained loyal to David, that the drama of divine justice and mercy was to be acted. to ity end: to Hosea, at least in his later prophecies, the fate of Judah does not appear separable from that of the northern realm—when Israel and Ephraim fall by their iniquity Judah must fall with them (Hos. v. 5). Thus even on this side there is no real bridge over the chasm that separates the total ruin impending over the Israel of the present from the glorious restoration of the Israel of the future. There is a unity in the divine purpose, of which judgment and mercy are the two poles, but there is as yet no conception of an historical continuity in the execution of that purpose, and therefore no foundation laid for the maintenance of a con- tinuous community of faith in the impending fall of the nation.*~~

~~*From this we can see the enormous importance of the work of Isaiah as it has been exhibited in the article IsRaEL, vol. xiii. p. 413 sq.; his doctrine of the remnant, the holy seed, never lost to the nation in the worst times, never destroyed by the most fiery judgments, supplies the lacking element of continuity between the Israel of the present and of the future. Jehovah's kingdom cannot perish even for a time; nay, Isaiah argues that it must remain visible, and visible not merely in the circle of the like-minded whom he had gathered round him and who a ee*~~

~~*: 1 It must not be supposed that this conception necessarily came into force as soon as it was recognized that Jehovah was the creator of the universe. That the national or tribal god is the creator is an idea often found in very low religions. To us God's sovereignty over nature often seems the hardest thing to conceive ; but to primi- tive peoples who know nothing of laws of nature His moral sove- reignty is a much more difficult conception. In the older literature of the Hebrews the nearest approach to the thought of Amos and Hosea is Ber Gen. ii, ili., but Gen. xviii. 25.*~~

~~*Hosea ii. 14 sq., xi. 10 sq. are not solutions of this difficulty, as ap- pears from their metaphorical form. They tell us that Jehovah will call His people and that they will answer; but this is only putting in an-*~~

~~*other form the axiom that i ee at the gifts and calling of God are without*~~

~~*PROUPREBSG2*~~

~~*formed the first germ of the notion of the church, but in the political form of a kingdom also. Zion at least, the sacred hearth of Jehovah, the visible centre of his king- dom, must remain inviolable; it can never be delivered into the hands of the Assyrian. Thus, with Isaiah in the days of Sennacherib's invasion, the prophetic word became again, as it had been in the days of the Syrian wars, 'the chariots and horsemen of Israel," the stay and strength of all patriotic hope.*~~

~~*Yet even at this crisis the resemblance between Isaiah and Elisha, between the new prophecy and the old, is more apparent than real. Elisha still stands firmly planted on the old national conception of the religion of Jehovah ; his ideals are such as do not lie beyond the range of practical politics. In*~~

~~*doing battle against the Tyrian Baal he is content with a reformation for which the whole nation can be heartily won, because it makes no radical change in their inherited faith and practices of worship. And in stimulating resistance to Syria he is still the prophet of the old "God of the hosts of Israel"—a God who works deliverance by the thews and sinews of His earthly warriors. But Isaiah's ideal of religion was one which could never have been realized by a political move- ment; to root out all idols, all superstitions inconsistent with his lofty conception of the just King of Israel, who cares not for sacrifice and oblation, who can be acceptably approached through no religion of rote, whose sovereignty can receive practical recognition only by a thoroughgoing reformation of all parts of social life—this. was an ideal which could not be carried out by the mere education and concentration of any forces inherent in the nation. The true Israel of Isaiah is not an historical possibility ; it is a transcendental ideal for which he himself demands as a preliminary condition an outpouring of Jehovah's spirit on king (Isa. xi. 2) and people (Isa. xxxii. 15), working an entire moral regeneration. And so too it is not through the material organization of the Judean kingdom that Isaiah looks for deliverance from Assyria. He sees with absolute clearness the powerlessness of the little realm against that great empire: the Assyrian must fall, and fall before Jerusalem, that Jehovah alone may appear to all the earth as the one true God, while all the idols appear as vain to help their worshippers; but he falls by no earthly sword, but before the direct interposition of Jehovah Himself. These conceptions break through the old particularistic idea of Jehovah and His religion at every point. Zion is now not the centre of a mere national cult, but the centre of all true religion for the whole world ; and more than once the prophet indicates not obscurely that the necessary issue of the great conflict between Jehovah and the gods of the heathen must be the conversion of all nations, the disappearance of every other religion before the faith of the God of Israel. But this all-conquering religion is not the popular Jehovah wor- ship ; why then can the prophet still hold that the one true God is yet the God of Israel, and that the vindica- tion of His Godhead involves the preservation of Israel ? Not because His providence is confined to Israel—it embraces all nations; not because He shows any favour- itism to Israel—He judges all nations by the same strict rule. If Israel alone among nations can meet the Assyrian with the boast "with us is God," the reason is that in Zion the true God is known'—not*~~

~~*indeed to the mass, but to the prophet and to the "holy seed" which forms the salt of the nation. The interpretation which Isaiah puts*~~

~~*3 We should be apt to say "the true idea of God," but that is a way of putting it which does not correspond with prophetic thought. To the prophets knowledge of God is concrete knowledge of the*~~

~~*divine character as shown in acts—knowledge of a person, not of au idea.*~~

~~*PROPHET*~~

~~*on this fact depends on the circumstance that at that date religion had never been conceived asa relation between God and individuals, or as a relation between God and a purely spiritual society, but always asa relation between a deity and some natural social group—a stock, a tribe, a nation. It was therefore only as the God of Israel that the true God could be known within Israel ; and so on the one hand the little society of faith—which had not in reality the least tinge of political coherence—is thought of as yet forming the true kernel of the nation gua nation, while on the other hand the state of Judah profits by the prophetic religion inasmuch as the nation must be saved from destruction in order that the prophetic faith—which is still bound up with the idea of the nation—may not be dissolved. This connexion of ideas was not of course explicitly before the prophet's mind, for the distinctive features of a national religion could not be formulated so long as no other kind of religion had ever been heard of. When we put down in black and white the explicit details of what is involved in Isaiah's conclusion of faith we see that it has no absolute validity. True religion can exist without having a particular nation as its subject as soon as the idea of a spiritual community of, faith has been realized. But till this idea was realized Isaiah was right in teaching that the law of continuity demanded that the nation within which Jehovah had made Himself known to His spiritual prophets must be maintained as a nation for the sake of the glory of God and the preservation of the '"'"holy seed."*~~

~~*The catastrophe of Sennacherib's army, in which the doctrine of the inviolability of Zion received the most striking practical confirmation, was welcomed by Isaiah and his disciples as an earnest of the speedy inbringing of the new spiritual era. But these hopes were not fulfilled. The prophetic*~~

~~*teaching had indeed produced a profound effect ; to the party of reaction, as the persecution under Manasseh shows, it seemed to threaten to subvert all society ; and we can still measure the range and depth of its influence in the literary remains of the period from Isaiah to the captivity, which include Micah vi. 1-8, and that noble essay to build a complete national code on the principle of love to God, righteousness, and humanity— the legislation of Deuteronomy. Nay more, the reception of the book of Deuteronomy by king and people in the eighteenth year of Josiah shows what a hold the prophetic teaching had on the popular conscience; it was no small triumph that there was even a passing attempt to intro- duce such a code as the law of the land. But it was one thing to touch the conscience of the nation and another to change its heart and renew its whole life. That no code could do, and, as every practical government must adapt itself to actualities and not to a purely ideal standard, it must have appeared at once that the attempt to govern by prophetic ideas was only sewing a new piece on an old garment. The immediate result of Josiah's reformation was the complete dissolution of anything that could be called a political party of prophetic ideas; the priests and the ordinary prophets were satisfied with what had been accomplished ; the old abuses began again, but the nation had received a reformed constitution and there was nothing more to be said.*~~

~~*Thus it was that, though beyond question there had been a real advance in the average ethical and spiritual ideas of the people since the time of Isaiah, Jeremiah found himself more isolated than Isaiah had ever been. Even in that earliest part of his book which is mainly a recapitulation of his experiences and work in the reign of Josiah, his tone is one of absolute hopelessness as to the future of the nation. But we should quite misunderstand this pessimism if we held it to mean that Jeremiah saw*~~

~~*no signs of private morality and individual spiritual con- victions among his people. To him as a prophet the ques- tion was whether Israel as a nation could be saved. In Isaiah's days the answer had been affirmative; there appeared to be at least a potentiality of national regenera- tion in the holy seed when once it should be cleansed from the chaff by a work of judgment. But, now a cen- tury of respite had been granted, the Chaldeans were at the*~~

~~*gates, and there was no sign of valid national repent- ance. The harvest was past, the season of ripe fruits was over, and still Israel was not saved (Jer. viii. 20). The time of respite had been wasted, all attempts at national reformation had failed; how should Jehovah spare a nation which had shown no tokens of fitness to discharge the vocation of Jehovah's people? The question was not whether there was still a faithful remnant, but whether that remnant was able to save the state as a state, and this Jeremiah was forced todeny. Nay every attempt at genuine amendment was frustrated by the dead weight of a powerful opposition, and when the first captivity came it was precisely the best elements of Judah that went into captivity and were scattered among the nations (xxiv. 5 ; xxiil. 2 sq.). And so the prophet was compelled to teach that the immediate future of Israel was a blank, that the state asa state was doomed. HIe did not even dare to intercede for such a nation (vii. 16); though Moses and Samuel stood pleading for it before Jehovah, HIe could not but cast it out of HIis sight (xv. 1). It was the death-struggle of the idea of a national religion (vi. 8) ; the con- tinuity of true faith refused to be longer bound up with the continuity of the nation. Still indeed the New-Testa- ment idea of a purely spiritual kingdom of God, in this world but not of it, is beyond the prophet's horizon, and he can think of no other vindication of the divine purpose than that the true Israel shall be gathered again from its dispersion. But the condition of this restoration is now changed. To gather the dispersed implies a call of God to individuals, and in the restored Israel the covenant of Jehovah shall be not merely with the nation but with men one by one, and "they shall no more teach everyone his neighbour saying, Know the Lord, for all shall know Me from the least of them even to the greatest of them" (xxxi. 33 sg.). Ina word, when the nation is dissolved into its individual elements the continuity and ultimate victory of true faith depends on the relation of Jehovah to individual souls, out of which the new state shall be built up (Jer. ili. 14).*~~

~~*Thus, for the first time in the world's history, the ulti- mate problem of faith is based on the relation of God to the individual, believer; and this problem Jeremiah is com- pelled to face mainly in relation to his own personality, to assure himself that his own faith is a true possession and lifts him above all the calamities that assail him, in spite of the hopeless ruin of his nation. The struggle is a sore one; his very life is bitter to him; and yet he emerges victorious. To know that God is with him is enough though all else fail him.*~~

~~*Now as soon as the relation of God to a single soul has thus been set free from all earthly conditions the work of prophecy is really complete, for what God has done for one soul He can do for all, but only by speaking to each believer as directly as He does to Jeremiah. Henceforth revelation is not a word to the nation spoken through an individual, but a word spoken to one which is equally valid for every one who receives it with like faith. The New Testament joins on not to the post-exile prophets, who are only faint echoes of earlier seers, but to Jeremiah's great idea of the new covenant in which God's law is written on the individual heart, and the community of faith is the fellowship of all to whom He has thus spoken. The prophets of the restoration are*~~

~~*only the last waves beating on the shore after the storm which destroyed the old nation, but created in its room a fellowship of spiritual religion, had passed over ; they resemble the old prophets in the same imperfect way in which the restored community of Jerusalem resembled a real nation. It was only in so far as the community of faith still possessed certain external features of nationality that post-exile prophecy was possible at all, and very soon the care of the national or quasi-national aspects of religion passed altogether out of their hands into those of the scribes, of whom Ezekiel was the first father, and whose Torah was not the living word of prophecy but the Penta- teuchal code. From the time of Jeremiah downwards the perennial interest of Old-Testament thought lies in the working out of the problems of personal religion and of the idea of a spiritual fellowship of faith transcending all national limitation ; and these are the motives not only of the lyrics of the Psalter but of the greater theodiceas of Isa. xl.—lxvi. and of the book of Job. The theodicea of the prophets is national; they see Jehovah's righteousness working itself out with unmistakable clearness in the present, and know that all that He brings upon Israel is manifestly just; but from the days of Jeremiah! the fortunes of Israel as a nation are no longer the one thing which religion has to explain; the greater question arises of a theory of the divine purpose which shall justify the ways of God with individual men or with His "righteous servant "—that is, with the ideal community of true faith as distinct from the natural Israel. The discussion of these problems constitutes a quite distinct type of Old-*~~

~~*Testament literature beginning with the book of the Great Unknown, which is now appended to the writings of Isaiah; but this is an accident of arrangement that ought not to lead us to include among the prophetic writings proper a work so entirely different in origin and scope, and addressed not to an actual nation but to the ideal Israel, whose vocation is uo longer political but purely religious.*~~

~~*It will be evident even from this rapid sketch, neces- sarily confined to a few of the most cardinal points, that Hebrew prophecy is not a thing that can be defined and reduced to a formula, but was a living institution which can only be understood by studying its growth and observing its connexion with the historical movements with which its various manifestations were bound up. Throughout the great age of prophecy the most obvious formal character that distinguished it was that the pro- phet did not speak in his own name but in the name of Jehovah. But the claim to speak in the name of God is one which has often been made—and made sincerely—by others than the prophets of Israel, and which is suscep- tible of a great variety of meanings, according to the idea of God and His relation to man which is presupposed. Every early religion seeks to realize such an intercourse with the object of worship as shall be two-sided ; when the worshipper approaches the deity he desires to have an answer assuring him of acceptance and divine aid. The revelation thus looked for may be found in natural omens, in the priestly lot or some similar sacral oracle, or, finally, in the words of a seer who is held to be in closer contact with the deity than common men. Broadly speaking these methods of revelation are found in all ancient religions, but no other religion presents anything precisely analogous to prophecy. It is true that the prophets absorbed the old seers, and that the Israelites, as we see in the case of the asses of Kish, went to their seers on the same kind of occasions as sent heathen nations to seers or diviners. There is sufficient evidence that down to the last age of the J udeean monarchy practices not essentially different from divination were current in all classes of*~~

~~*One might say from the days of Habakkuk.*~~

~~*rR Pa Tt*~~

~~society, and were often in the hands of men who claimed to speak as prophets in the name of Jehovah. But the great prophets disallowed this claim, and the distinction which they draw between true prophecy and divination is recognized not only in the prophetical law of Deuteronomy but in earlier parts of the Pentateuch and historical books, "There is no augury in Jacob and no divination in Israel ; in due time it is told to Jacob and to Israel what God doth work" (Num. xxiii. 23). The seer, in the sense in which all antiquity believed in seers, is simply a man who sees what others cannot see, no matter- whether the thing seen be of public or of mere private interest; but the prophet is an organ of Jehovah's kingship over His people — he sees and tells so much of the secret purpose of Jehovah as is needful for His people to know. We have already seen how Amos and Hosea put this (supra, p. 817), and it does not appear that they were introducing a conception of prophecy formally novel—the new thing was their cou- ception of Jehovah's purpose. And so too with the fol- lowing great prophets ; the important thing in their work was not their moral earnestness and not their specific pre- dictions of future events, but the clearness of spiritual insight with which they read the spiritual significance of the signs of the time and interpreted the movements of history as proofs of Jehovah's actual moral sovereignty exercised over Israel. So long as the great problems of religion could be envisaged as problems of the relation of Jehovah to Israel as a nation the prophets continued to speak and to bring forth new truths; but the ultimate result was that it became apparent that the idea of moral government involved the destruction of Israel, and then the function of prophecy was gone because it-was essentially national in its objects. But meantime the relation of God to the prophet had acquired an independent significance ; the inner life of Isaiah during the lie years when his teaching seemed lost, or of Jeremiah through the whole course of his seemingly fruitless ministry, was rich in experiences of faith triumphing over temptations and trials, of personal converse with God sustaining the soul in the face of difficulties hopeless to the eye of sense, which formed the pattern of a new and higher stage of religion in which the relation of the individual soul to God should be set free from those limitations which had been imposed by the conception that the primary subject of religion is the nation. But the religion of the Old Testament did not become merely individualistic in becom- ing individual, and now the problem was to realize a new conception of the society of faith, the true Israel, the collective servant of~~

~~*Jehovah—in a word to form the idea of a spiritual commonwealth and to show how it was pos- sible for faith to hold fast, in spite of all seeming contra- diction, to the truth that Jehovah had chosen for Himself a spiritual people, every member of which was in truth the object of His saving and unfailing love, and which should ultimately in very deed inherit that glory of which the carnal Israel was unworthy. This is the post-prophetic problem which occupies the more profound of the later Old-Testament books, but first received its true solution in the gospel, when the last shreds of the old nationalism disappeared and the spiritual kingdom found its centre in the person of Christ.*~~

~~*Old-Testament prophecy therefore forms only one stage in a larger development, and its true significance and value can only be realized when it is looked at in this light. In this as in all other matters of transcendental truth "wisdom is justified of her children"; the conclusive vindication of the prophets as true messengers of God is that their work forms an integral part in the progress of spiritual religion, and there are many things in their teaching the profundity and importance of which are*~~

~~*re OPn t Tt*~~

~~*much clearer to us than they could possibly have been to their contemporaries, because they are mere flashes of spiritual insight lighting up for a moment some corner of a region on which the steady sun of the gospel had not yet risen.*~~

~~*A less complete but yet most powerful vindication of the spiritual prophets was furnished by the course and event of Israel's history. After the captivity it was no longer a question that the prophetic conception of Jehovah was the only possible one. Thenceforth the religion of Jehovah and the religion of the prophets are synonymous ; no other reading of Israel's past was possible, and in fact the whole history of the Hebrews in Canaan, as it was finally shaped in the exile, is written from this point of view, and has come down to us, along with the remains of actual prophetic books, under the collective title of "The Prophets."*~~

~~*To some extent this historical vindication of the pro- phetic insight went on during the activity of the prophets themselves. From the time of Amos*~~

~~*downwards the pro- phets spoke mainly at great historical crises, when events were moving fast and a few years were often sufficient to show that they were right and their opponents wrong in their reading of the signs of the times. And here the controversy did not turn on the exact fulfilment of de- tailed predictions; detailed prediction occupies a very secondary place in the writings of the prophets ; or rather indeed what seem to be predictions in detail are usually only free poetical illustrations of historical principles which neither received nor demanded exact fulfilment. Isaiah, for example, in the time of Ahaz sketches the fatal results of Assyrian intervention, and pictures the sufferings of Judah when it should become the battlefield of the rival empires of the Tigris and the Nile, in a way that was by no means realized in detail; but this does not affect the fact that he alone in Judah had correctly appreciated the historical situation, and that he did so not because he was a better statesman than his opponents, but because he had a different conception of the 'religious significance of the crisis. All through the prophetic period it was plain that the true prophets differed from the mere pro- fessional prophets and statesmen in their view of the political duties and prospects of the nation because they had a different idea, or, as they themselves would have said, a truer knowledge, of God, and so the prophets and their successors—notably Isa. xl.—-lxvi.—look on the event of Israel's history, not so much as proving that Isaiah or Jeremiah was a true prophet, but as proving that the Jehovah of the prophets is the true God, whose word cannot return to HIm void, but must surely accomplish that which HIe pleaseth (Isa. lv. 11).*~~

~~*The prophets themselves required no historical verifica- tion of their word to assure them that it was indeed the word of God, nor do they for a moment admit that their contemporaries are entitled to treat its authority as un- proved till such verification is offered. The word of God carries its own evidence with it in its searching force and fire: "Is not my word likes a fire, saith Jehovah, and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?" (Jer. xxiii. 29). Tio the prophet himself it comes with imperi- ous force: it constrains him to speak (Amos iii. 8), seizes him with a strong hand (Isa. viii. 11), burns like a fire within his bones till it finds utterance (Jer. xx. 9); and it is this force of moral conviction which ought also to com- mend it to the conscience of his hearers. The word is true because it is worthy of the true God. When Deut. Xviii. 21, 22 seeks the legal criterion of true*~~

~~*prophecy in the fulfilment of prediction, the writer is no doubt guided by the remembrance of the remarkable confirmation which the doctrines of spiritual prophecy bad received in history*~~

~~*821*~~

~~*then recent, but his criterion would have appeared inade- quate to the prophets themselves, and indeed this passage is one of the most striking proofs that to formulate the principles of prophetic religion in a legal code was an impossible task.*~~

~~*The mass of the nation, of course, was always much more struck by the "signs" and predictions of the pro- phets than by their spiritual ideas; we see how the idea of supernatural insight and power in everyday matters dominates the popular couception of Elijah and Elisha in the books of Kings. Ata very early date the great pro- phets became a kind of saints or welzs, and the respect paid to the tombs of the prophets, which ultimately took in almost every particular the place of the old local shrines (Mat. xxiii. 29; Jerome, Lpit. Paulx, § 13; see OBADIAH), can be traced back to the time before the exile.'*~~

~~*After the extinction of the prophetic voice, an ever-increasing weight was not unnaturally laid on the predictive element in their writings. Their creative religious ideas had become the common property of religious-minded Jews, at least in the somewhat in- perfect shape in which they were enibodied in the law, and their work on this side was carried on by the great religious poets. But the restored community which was still making a sort of faint attempt to be a religious nation as well as a church felt very pain- fully the want of a direct message from God in critical times such as the prophets of old had been wont to bring. And in this need men began to look at the prophetic books, mainly in the hope that there might be found in them predictions which still awaited ful- filment, and might be taken as referring to the latter days of Persian or Greek oppression. By ignoring the free poetical form ofpro- phecy, and still more by ignoring the fact that the proplietic pictures of the ideal future of Israel could not be literally fulfilled after the fall of the ancient state had entirely changed the sphere in which the problems of true religion had to be worked out, it was possible to find a great mass of unfulfilled prophecy which might form the basis of*~~

~~*eschatological constructions. 'To use this material for the purpose in hand it was necessary to symbolize what was literal and to literalize what was figurative, to harmonize and to rearrange, above all to introduce some sort of prophetical chrono- logy of future events. But all this was quite in the vein of later Judaism, and so at length the unfulfilled predictions of the prophets served as the raw material for the elaborate eschatology of the apoca- lypses. See APocALypric LITERATURE and MeEssiau. In spite of superficial resemblances, mainly due to the unavoidable influence of current exegetical methods, the New-Testament conception of prophecy as fulfilled in Christ is fundamentally different from the Jewish apocalyptic view of unfulfilled prophecy. Not external details but the spiritual ideas of the prophets find their fulfilment in the new dispensation, and they do so under forms entirely diverse from those of the old national kingdom of Jehovah.*~~

~~*Literature.—In the ancient and medieval church and in the dogmatic period of Protestantism there was little of no attempt at historical study of prophecy, and the prophetical books were found instructive only through the application of allegorical or typical exegesis. For details the reader may refer to Diestel, Geschichte des Alten Testaments, Jena, 1869, and for the final form of orthodox Protestant views to Witsius, De Prophetis et Prophetia. The growing sense of the insufficiency of this treatment towards the close of the period of dogmatism showed itself in various ways. On the one hand we have the revival of apoca- lyptic exegesis by Cocceius and his school, which has continued to influence certain circles down to the present day, and has led to the most varied attempts to find in prophecy a history, written before the event, of all the chief vicissitudes of the Christian church down to the end of the world. On the other hand Lowth's Lectures on Hebrew Poetry, and the same author's Commentary on Isaiah (1778), show the beginnings of a tendency to look mainly at the esthetic aspects of the prophetical books, and to view the prophets as enlightened religious poets. This tendency culminates in Eichhorn, Die ebrdischen Propheten, 1816. Neither of these methods could do much for the historical understanding of the pheno- mena of prophecy as a whole, and the more liberal students of the Old Testament were long blinded by the moralizing unhistorical rationalism which succeeded the old orthodoxy. The first requisite of real progress, after dogmatic pretudices had been broken through, was to get a*~~

~~*living conception of the history in which the prophets moved; and this again called for a revision of all traditional notions as to the age of the various parts of Hebrew literature—criticism of the sources of the history, among which the prophetical books themselves take the first place. In recent times therefore advance in the understanding of the prophets has moved on pari passu with the higher criticism, especially the criticism of the Pentateuch, and with the general study of Hebrew history ; and most works on the subject prior to Ewald must be regarded as quite antiquated except for the light they cast on detailed points of exegesis. On the prophets and their works in general the best book is still Ewald's Propheten des Alten Bundes (1st ed. 1840-41, 2d ed. 1867-68, Eng. tr. 1876-77). The subject is treated in all works on Old Testament introduction (among which Kuenen's Onderzoek, vol. ii., claims the first placc), and on Old Testament theology (see especially Vatke, Religion des A, T., 1835). On the theology of the prophcts there is a separate work by Duhm, Bonn, 1875, and Knobel's Prophetismus der Hebréer, 1837, is a separate introduction to the prophetical books. Kuenen's Prophets and Prophecy in Israet*~~

~~*1 See 2 Kings xxiii. 21, and also Deut. xxxiv. 6. So too all the old national heroes and heroines ultimately became prophets ; in the case of Deborah there is even a fusion in local tradition between an old heroine and an historical seer.*~~

~~*822*~~

~~*1875, Eng. tr. 1877) is in form mainly a criticism of the traditional view of nd Pe therefore be compared with his Onderzoek and Godsdienst van Israel. Most English books on the subject are more theological than historical, but a sketch of Hebrew prophecy in connexion with the history down to the close of the 8th century is given by W. R. Smith, The Prophets of Israel, Edin- burgh, 1882. A useful commentary on the prophetical books in general forms two volumes of Reuss, La Bible (Paris, 1876); the special literature is referred to in the articles on the several prophets. The literature of the theological questions connected with prophecy is much too copious to be cited here ; lists will be found in several of the books already refeired to. cw. BR. 8.)*~~

~~*2. Prophets in the Christian Church.—The appearance of prophets in the first Christian communities 1s one proof of the strength of faith and hope by which these bodies were animated. An old prophecy (Joel iii. 1) had foretold that in the Messianic age the spirit of God would be poured out on every member of the religious community, and in point of fact it was the universal conviction of those who believed in Christ that they all possessed the Spirit of God.*~~

~~*This Spirit, manifesting His presence in a variety of ways and through a variety of gifts, was to be the only ruling authority in the church. He raised up for Himself par- ticular individuals, into whose mouths He put the word of God, and these were at first regarded as the true leaders of the congregations. We find accordingly that there were prophets in the oldest church, that of Jerusalem (Acts xi. 27; xv. 32), and again that there were "prophets and teachers" in the church at Antioch (Acts xiii. 1). These were not office-bearers chosen by the congregation, but preachers raised up by the Spirit and conferred as gifts on the church. When Paul says (1 Cor. xii. 28; cf. Eph. iv.*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*11), '"'God has set some in the church, first as apostles,—*~~

~~*second as prophets, third as teachers," he points to a state of things which in his time prevailed in all the churches both of Jewish and heathen origin. We here learn from Paul that the prophets occupied the second position in point of dignity ; and we see from another passage (1 Cor. xiv.) that they were distinguished from the teachers by their speaking under the influence of inspiration,—not, however, like the "speakers in tongues," in unintelligible ejaculations and disconnected words, but in articulate, rational, edifying speech. Until recently it was impossible to form any distinct idea of the Christian prophets in the post-apostolic age, not so much from want of materials as because what evidence existed was not sufficiently clear and connected. It was understood, indeed, that they had maintained their place in the churches till the end of the 2d century, and that the great conflict with what is known as Montanism had first proved fatal to them ; but a clear conception of their position and influence in the churches was not to be had. But the discovery, by Bryennios, of the ancient*~~

~~Christian work called Adayn Tov dddexa aroordAwv has immensely extended the range of our knowledge, and has at the same time thrown a clear light on many notices in other sources which for want of proper interpretation had been previously neglected or in- correctly understood.~~

~~The most important facts known at present about the manner of life, the influence, and the. history of the early Christian prophets are the following. (1) Down to the close of the 2d century the prophets (or prophetesses) were regarded as an essential element in a church possess- ing the Holy Ghost. Their existence was believed in, and they did actually exist, not only in the catholic congrega- tions—if the expression may be used—but also in the Marcionite church and the Gnostic societies. Not a few — prophets are known to us by name 3 as Agabus,~~

~~udas, and Silas in Jerusalem ; Barnabas, Simon Niger, &c., in Antioch; in Asia Minor, the daughters of Philip, Quadratus, Ammia, Polycarp, Melito, Montanus, Maximilla and Priscilla ; In Rome, Hermas; among the followers of Fa tog gm and Barkoph ; in the community of oe es, Philumene, &e. Lucian tells us that the impostor grinus Proteus, in the time of Antoninus Pius,~~

~~PROPHET~~

~~figured as a prophet in the Christian churches of Syria. (2) Till the middle of the 2d century the prophets wero the regular preachers of the churches, without being attached to any particular congregation. While the "apostles" (¢.e., itinerating missionaries) were obliged to preach from place to place, the prophets were at liberty either, like the teachers, to settle in a certain church or to travel from one to another. (3) In the time of Paul the form of prophecy was reasoned exhortation in a state of inspiration; but very frequently the inspiration took the form of ecstasy—the prophet lost control of himself, so that he did not remember afterwards what he had said. In the Gentile-Christian churches, under the influence of pagan associations, ecstasy was therule. (4) With regard to the matter of prophecy, it might embrace anything that was necessary or for the edification of the church. The prophets not only consoled and exhorted by the recital of what God had done and predictions of the future, but they uttered extempore thanksgivings in the congregational assemblies, and delivered special~~

~~directions, which might extend to the most minute details, as, for example, the disposal of the church funds. (5) It was the duty of the prophets to follow in all respects the example of the Lord (€yew rots tpdrovs rod Kvupiov), and to put in practice what they preached. But an ascetic life was expected of them only when, like the apostles, they went about as missionaries, in which case the rules in Mat. x. applied to them. Whenever, on the contrary, they settled in a place they had a claim to a liberal maintenance at the hands of the congregation. The author of the A.dayy even compares them to the high priests of the Old Testament, and considers them entitled to the first- fruits of the Levitical law. In reality, they might justly be compared to the priests in so far as they were the mouthpieces of the congregation in public thanksgiving. (6) Since prophets were regarded asa gift of God and as moved by the Holy Spirit, the individual congregation had no right of control over them. When anyone was ap- proved as a prophet and exhibited the " conversation of the Lord," no one was permitted to put him to the test or to criticize him. The author of the A:dayy goes so far as to assert that whoever does this is guilty of the sin against the Holy Ghost. (7) This unique position of the prophets could only be maintained so long as the original enthu- siasm remained fresh and vigorous. rom three quarters primitive Christian prophecy was exposed to danger,— first, from the permanent officials of the congregation, who, in the interests of order, peace, and security could not but look with suspicion on the activity of excited prophets ; second, from the prophets themselves, in so far as an in- creasing number of dishonest characters was found amongst them, whose object was to levy contributions on the churches ;! third, from those prophets who were filled with the stern spirit of primitive Christianity and imposed on churches, now becoming assimilated to the world, obliga- tions which these were neither able nor willing tofulfil. It is from this point of view that we must seek to understand the so-called Montanistic crisis. Even the author of the A.daxy finds it necessary to defend the prophets who practised celibacy and strict asceticism against the depre- ciatory criticism of church members. In Asia Minor there was already in the year 160 a party, called by Epiphanius " Alogi," who rejected all Christian prophecy. On the other hand, it was also in Asia Minor that there appeared along with Montanus those energetic prophetesses who charged the churches and their bishops and deacons with becoming secularized, and endeavoured to prevent Chris-~~

~~1 See Lucian's story about Peregrinus, and that chapter of the~~

~~Aidax7 where the author labours to establish criteria for distinguish- ing false prophets from true.~~

~~PRO—PRO 893~~

~~tianity from being naturalized in the world, and to bring the churches once more under the exclusive guidance of the Spirit and His charismata. The critical situation thus arising spread in the course of a few decades over most of the provincial churches. The necessity of resisting the inexorable demands of the prophets led to the introduction of new rules for distinguishing true and false prophets. No prophet, it was declared, could speak in ecstasy,—that was devilish; further, only false prophets accepted gifts. Both canons were innovations, designed to strike a fatal blow at prophecy and the church organization re-established by the prophets in Asia,—the bishops not being quite pre- pared to declare boldly that the church had no further need of prophets. But the prophets would not have been suppressed by their new methods of judging them alone. A much more important circumstance was the rise of a new theory, according to which all divine revelations were summed up in the apostles or in their writings. It was now taught that prophecy in general was a peculiarity of the Old Testament ("lex et prophetze usque ad Johannem"); that in the new covenant God had spoken only through apostles ; that the whole word of God so far as binding on the church was contained in the apostolic record—the New Testainent ;1 and that, consequently, the church neither required nor could acknowledge new revelations, or even instructions, through prophets. The revolution which this theory gradually brought about is shown in the trans- formation of the religious, enthusiastic organization of the church into a legal and political constitution. A great many things had to be sacrificed to this, and amongst others the old prophets. The strictly enforced episcopal constitution, the creation of a clerical order, and the for- mation of the New Testament canon accomplished the overthrow of the prophets. "God continually confers on the church apostles, prophets, and teachers," the word now was—"The church is founded in the (written) word of the prophets (z.c., the Old-Testa- ment prophets) and the apostles (vz, the twelve and Paul)." After the beginning of the 3d century there were still no~~

~~doubt men under the control of the hierarchy who experienced the prophetic ecstasy, or clerics like Cyprian who professed to have received special directions from God; but prophets by vocation no longer existed, and these sporadic utterances were in no sense placed on a level with the contents of the sacred Scriptures.~~

~~See Btickmann, "Ueber die Wunderkrifte bei den ersten Christen und ihr Erléschen," in the Ztschr. f. d. ges. luther. Theol. . Kirche, 1878, p. 216-255 (learned but utterly uncritical) ; Bonwetsch, "Dic Prophetie im apostol. und nachapostol. Zeitalter," in the Ztschr. f. kirchl. Wissensch. wu. kirchl. Leben, 1884, part 8, p. 408 sq., part 9, p. 460 sq¢.; Harnack, Die Lehre der zwilf Apostel, 1884, p. 93-137. (A. HA.)~~

~~PROSELYTE (zpooyAvros) is the term most frequently adopted by the Septuagint, especially in legal passages, to represent the Hebrew 33. The gér, or more fully gér wtdshab, is not any " stranger" but a stranger dwelling in a Hebrew community and enjoying a certain measure of protection. In old time at least the position of such a stranger was no doubt very insecure, for he had no strong kinsmen to take his part, and so, like the widow and orphan, with whom many passages of the Old Testament associate him, he was liable to oppression. The law as well as the prophets commend him ¢o the humane regard of his neighbours, but it would have been quite foreign to antique ideas to grant him equal rights (see Lev. xxv. 45; Deut. xxii. 20). Like the Arabic jar, therefore (whose name is at bottom the same), he must have gene- rally sought to attach himself as a client to some indi- vidual or community able to protect him, and so we must~~

~~1 The Apocalypse of John was received into it, not as the work of a prophet, but as that of an apostle.~~

~~Instead of the old formula, |~~

~~understand the metaphor in passages like Ps. xv. 1, imonx. 12.~~

~~In the old Hebrew kingdom the word gér had a civil not a religious significance, and it would almost seem that a poor Israelite without inheritance might sink to this position, which indeed is scarcely distinguishable from that of the Levite in Jud. xvii. 8, who went forth to~~

~~*sojourn (gur) where he might find a place. The exile and the restoration made a change in this as in all other aspects of Hebrew society. On the one hand Ezekiel xlvii. 22 and Isa. xiv. 1 contemplate that the restored nation shall be recruited by strangers who are received on equal terms; but, as the Jews returned not as an inde- pendent nation but as a distinct religious community, this implies especially that the sons of the stranger, by joining Israel, observing the Sabbath, and holding fast to Jehovah's covenant, may gain admission to all the privi- leges of the temple and its worship. So it is put in Isa. lvi. 6, 7 in marked contrast to the restrictions laid down in Deut. xxiii. 3, 7 sg. That the views of the prophets had practical issue cannot be doubted ; even the foreign Nethi- nim in the second temple were rapidly transformed not merely into good Israelites but into Levites. The condi- tion of admission to the full privileges of an Israelite, in particular to the passover, is, according to the Priestly Code (Exod. xii. 48; Numb. ix. 14), circumcision,—to which the later Jewish usage adds lustration by immer- sion in water (baptism, ?b7/d) and the presentation of a sacrifice (korban). The immersion, about which there has been a good deal of controversy, some maintaining that it came into use later than Christian baptism, was really a necessary act for one who had been previously unclean, and may be held to be involved in the general Pentateuchal law of ceremonial washings. The later technical name for a heathen who thus joined the theo- cracy was payn 13, '" proselyte of righteousness."*~~

~~*The free admission of foreigners to the Jewish church is a mark of the universalistic tendency which, in spite of all the narrownesses of Judaism under the law, accom- panied the break-up of the old national system. On the other hand the so-called Law of Holiness (later than Ezekiel but earlier than the Priestly Code), which is contained in Lev. xvii. sg., presents a different line of transition from the purely civil to the religious meaning of gér. In these laws, which proceed throughout on the principle that Israel, and all that has to do with Israel, must be regu- lated by regard to formal holiness, it is demanded that certain rules shall be enforced not only on Israelites proper but on strangers sojourning in their land. They are not to eat blood (xvii. 10), commit incest (xviii. 26), sacrifice to Moloch (xx. 2), or blaspheme Jehovah (xxiv. 16); and for murder and other ¢rimes they are to be answerable to the Hebrew authorities according to Hebrew law (xxiv. 22). These rules are in substance—the third being ex- tended to a*~~

prohibition of idolatry generally—the ‘“Noachic laws” to which in later usage a man or woman might pro- mise to conform and thereby, without becoming a regular member of the theocracy, be recognized as a ‘“‘ proselyte of the gate,” «ae, “within the gates of Israel.” What the Law of Holiness proposed to enforce became in fact—the theocracy not possessing political power over strangers— a voluntary obligation assumed by those “ who worshipped God” (ceBopevor Tov Oedv, Acts xiii. 50, xvi. 14, xvii. 4, 17, xviii. 7—in E.V. often rendered “devout ”).

The proselytizing zeal of the Jews is spoken of in Mat. . xxill. 15, and by many Greek and Latin writers. Up to the time of Hadrian it was facilitated by the favour gene- rally extended to the Jews by the Roman emperors ; and not only on Semitic soil, as at Damascus, where Josephus tells us that most of the women were proselytes, but

824

throughout the Roman world many converts were made, especially among women. The most noted conversion was that of the royal house of Adiabene (Josephus, Ant., xx. 2), of which the splendid tomb of Queen Helena, a little way outside of Jerusalem, still remains a monument. PROSERPINE (Proserpina) is the Latin form of Prr- SEPHONE,! a Greek goddess, daughter of Zeus and the earth-goddess Demeter. In Greek mythology Demeter and Proserpine were closely associated, being known to- gether as the two goddesses, the venerable or august god- desses, sometimes as the great goddesses. herself was commonly known as the daughter (Core), sometimes as the first-born. As she was gathering flowers with her playmates in a meadow, the earth opened and Pluto, god of the dead, appeared and carried her off to be his queen in the world below. This legend was localized in various places, as at Eleusis, Lerna, and “‘ that fair field of Enna” in Sicily. Torch in hand, her sorrowing mother sought her through the wide world, and finding her not she forbade the earth to put forth its increase. So all that year not a blade of corn grew on the earth, and men would have died of hunger if Zeus had not persuaded Pluto to let Proserpine go. But before he let her go Pluto made her eat the seed of a pomegranate, and thus she could not stay away from him for ever.2. So it was arranged that she should spend two-thirds (according to later authors,

~~one-half) of every year with her mother and the heavenly gods, and should pass the rest of the year with Pluto beneath the earth. There can be little doubt that this is a mythological expression for the growth of vegetation in spring and its disappearance in autumn. According to Theopompus there was a Western people who actually called the spring Proserpine. As wife of Pluto, she sent spectres, ruled the ghosts, and carried into effect the curses of men. The lake of Avernus, as an entrance to the infernal regions, was sacred to her. From the head of a dying person Proserpine was supposed to cut a lock of hair which had been kept sacred and unshorn through life? She was sometimes identified with Hecate. On the other hand in her character of goddess of the spring~~

~~she was honoured with flower-festivals in Sicily and at i are oa ig veel Seals nk een~~

~~1 Some, however, regard Proserpina as a native Latin form, not borrowed from the Greek.~~

~~? The idea that persons who have made their way to the abode of the dead can return to the upper world if they have not tasted the food of the dead appears elsewhere, as in New Zealand (R. Taylor, New Zealand, pp. 238, 271).~~

~~3 Ain., iv. 698 sq. It appears to have been a Greek custom to cut a lock of hair from a dead man's head, and hang it outside of the house door, in token that there was a corpse in the house. At least this seems a fair inference from Eurip., Bee ti, HG, MON lock so cut may have been that which was kept sacred to the gods and unshorn (Htym. Mag., s.v., amrecxoAuumévos). For examples of hair dedicated to gods, see JJ., xxiii, 141 sq.; Plut., Phes., 5; Pans., vili. 20, 3. In Tibet a lama (priest) is called in to cut off some hairs from the head of a dying person, in order that his soul may escape through the top of his head, which is deemed an essential condition of a good transmigration (Horace de la Penna, in Bogle and Manning's Travels in Tibet). We can hardly doubt that the intention of the Greco-Roman custom was similar. In modern Greece the god of death, Charos, is supposed to draw the soul out of the body, and if a man resists the Arachobites believe that Charos slits open his breast (B. Schmidt, Volksleben der Neugriechen, p. 228). There are other instances of incisions made in the body of a dying~~

~~*person to allow his soul to escape (cp. Bastian, Mensch, ii. 342). The custom probably dates from the times when death in battle was the usual death. In the legend of Nisus and Scylla there is a trace of the custom which was still observed in classical times in the sacrifice of animals. The practice of cutting off the hair of the dead prevailed in India, though it does not appear in the Vedas (Monier Williams, Religious Thought and Life in India, p. 281). We are reminded of the practice of the Pawnees and other North American Indians, who shaved the head with the exception of one lock (the scalp-lock), which was removed by a victorious enemy (Catlin, North American Indians, vol. ii. p. 24). The Sandwich Islanders also cut a lock from a slain foe (Ellis, Pol. Res., vol. iv, p. 159)*~~

~~*Proserpine |*~~

~~*PRO—P RO*~~

~~*Hipponium in Italy. Sicily was a favourite haunt of the two goddesses, and ancient tradition affirmed that the whole island was sacred to them. The Sicilians claimed to be the first on whom Demeter had bestowed the gift of corn, and hence they honoured the two goddesses with many festivals. They celebrated the festival of Demeter when the corn began to shoot, and the descent of Proser- pine when it was ripe. At Cyare, a fountain near Syra-cuse which Pluto made to spring up when he carried off his bride, the Syracusians held an annual festival in the course of which bulls were sacrificed by being drowned in the water. At Cyzicus also, in Asia Minor, bulls were sacrificed to Proserpine. Demeter and Proserpine were worshipped together by the Athenians at the greater and less Eleusinian festivals, held in autumn and spring respectively. In the Eleusinian mysteries Proserpine no doubt played an important part (see Enzusinra and MystTErIEs). One Greek writer, Achemachus, identified Proserpine with the Egyptian Isis. At Rome Proserpine was associated with Ceres (the Roman representative of Demeter) in the festival of the Cerealia (April 12 to 19), she was represented as the wife of Dis Pater (the Roman Pluto), and was sometimes identified with the native Latin goddess Libera. The pomegranate was Proserpine's symbol, and the pigeon and cock were sacred to her. Her votaries abstained from the flesh of domestic fowls, fish, beans, pomegranates, and apples. In works of art she appears with a*~~

~~*cornucopia or with ears of corn and a cock. The regular form of her name in Greek was Per- sephone, but various other forms occur—Phersephone, Persephassa, Phersephassa, Pherrephatta, &c., to explain which different etymologies were invented. Correspond- ing to Proserpine as goddess of the dead is the old Norse goddess Hel (Gothic Halja), whom Saxo Grammaticus calls Proserpine. (J. G. FR.)*~~

~~*PROSKUROFF, a district town of the government of Podolia, Russia, situated on the railway from Odessa to Lemberg, 62 miles to the north-west of Schmerinka junction, and on the highway from Zhitomir to Kieff. It is poorly built, mostly of wood, on a low marshy plain surrounded by hills, at the junction of the Ploskaya with the Bug. Its old castle has been destroyed, the site being occupied by a Catholic church. The Orthodox cathedral (1839) contains a very ancient and highly venerated icon of the Virgin. The manufactures are insignificant ; but the Jewish merchants carry on an active export trade in corn and sugar, while the imports consist of salt and various manufactured wares. Agriculture and market-gardening are the chief occupations of its Little-Russian inhabitants. Of the population (11,750 in 1880) more than one-half are Jews.*~~

~~*PROSPER oF AquiTainz (AQUITANUS, or AQUITANICUS), a Christian prose and verse writer of the first half of the 5th century. Of his personal history almost nothing is known ; his surname seems to imply that he was a native of Aqui- tania, and there are various indications that he was edu- cated as a "rhetorician." While still comparatively young he gave himself to a religious and ascetic life, and at Marseilles soon made himself prominent as a champion of orthodoxy in the controversy with the Massilians or Semi- Pelagians. In this connexion he opened a correspondence with Augustine, along with his friend Hilarius (c. 429 A.D.), and about the same time (c. 430) he composed an hexameter poem of upwards of one thousand lines, Adversus Ingratos, a glowing polemic against the Pelagians. After Augustine's death he wrote Pro Augustino Re- sponsiones, and about 431 he visited Rome, still in the interests of Augustinianisin, eliciting from Pope Celestine his Lpistola ad Episcopos Gallorum against Cassianus. There are some indicatious that the latter years of his life*~~

~~were spent in Rome, and that he wrote his Chronicon there. The year of his death is unknown; the chronicle is brought down to 455.~~

~~Prosper's enthusiastic admiration for Augustine (to whom, how- ever, he was not personally known) led him to make an abridg- ment of that author's commentary on the Psalms, as well as a collection of sentences for his works,—probably the first dogmatic compilation of the class in which the Liber Sententiarwm is the best known example. Some of Augustine's theological dicta he also put into elegiac metre (one hundred and six epigrams). Prosper's~~

~~Chronicon is of value from the year 29 A.D. onwards, some of the.~~

~~sources which he used for that period being no longer extant. The best edition of the Opera is the Benedictine by Le Brun and Mangeant (Paris, 1711), reprinted in Migne's collection.~~

~~PROSSNITZ (Slavonic, Prostejov), the chief place in the fertile district of the Hanna, in Moravia, Austria, is situated on the small river Rumza, 11 miles south-west of Olmiitz. It carries on manufactures of sugar, cotton, and linen, and isan important centre for the sale of the barley and other produce of the Hanna. It is a town of ancient origin, and in the 16th century was one of the chief seats of the Moravian Brethren. Population in 1880,~~

~~16,751.~~

~~PROTAGORAS of Abdera, the first of the so-called Sophists,—who, about the middle of the 5th century B.c., asserted throughout Greece the claims of education or culture in opposition on the one hand to technical instruc- tion and on the other to physical research,—was an older contemporary of Socrates. At the age of seventy, having been accused and convicted of atheism, Protagoras fled from Athens, and on his way to Sicily was lost at sea. His birth has been plausibly assigned to 481 and his death to 411 B.c. Forty years of his life were spent in the exercise of his popular and lucrative profession in the principal cities of Greece and Sicily. According to Plato (Prot., 318 E), he endeavoured to communicate to his pupils "good counsel~~

~~or prudence (edSovAia), which should fit them to manage their households, and to take part by word and deed in civic affairs." In short, he professed not to "instruct" but to " educate." Further, the educa- tion which he provided was of a literary sort,—oratory, grammar, style, and the interpretation of the poets being among the subjects which he used as instruments. HIs formal lectures were supplemented by discussions amongst his pupils. HIe left behind him several treatises, of which only two or three sentences have survived. In 7'ruth, by way of justifying his rejection of philosophy or science, he maintained that "'man is the measure of all things— of what is, that it is, and of what is not, that it is not."} Besides 7'ruth, and the book Of the Gods which caused his condemnation at Athens, Diogenes Laertius attributes to him treatises on political, ethical, educational, and rhetorical~~

~~subjects.~~

~~On the significance of the Sophistical movement, and the part which Protagoras took in promoting it, as well as for bibliographi- cal information, see Sop1isTs.~~

~~PROTECTION. See Free Trade and PoliricaL Economy.~~

~~PROTESTANTENVEREIN is the name of a society in Germany the general objectrof which is to promote the union and the progress of the various established Pro- testant churches of the country in harmony with the advance of culture and on the basis of Christianity. It was founded at Frankfort-on-the-Main in 1863 by a number of distinguished clergymen and laymen of liberal tendencies, representing the freer parties of the Lutheran and Reformed churches of the various German states, amongst whom were the statesmen Bluntschli and Von Bennigsen and the professors Rothe, Ewald, Schenkel, HIlgenfeld, and HItzig. The more special objects of the~~

~~1 The exposition of this maxim contained in Plato's Theetetus, 152 C sq., is plainly not to be ascribed to Protagoras,~~

~~'circumstances of the church at the moment.~~

~~*association are the following :—the development of the churches on the basis of a representative parochial and synodal system of government in which the laity shall enjoy their full rights; the promotion of a federation of all the churches in one national church ; resistance to all hierarchical tendencies both within and without the Pro- testant churches; the promotion of Christian toleration and mutual respect amongst the various confessions ; the rousing and nurture of the Christian life and of all Christian works necessary for the moral strength and prosperity of the nation. These objects include opposition to the claims of Rome and to autocratic interference with the church on the part of either political or ecclesiastical authorities, efforts to induce the laity to claim and exercise their privileges as members of the church, the assertion of the right of the clergy, laity, and both lay and clerical professors to search for and proclaim freely the truth in independence of the creeds and the letter of Scripture. When the association was first formed the necessity for it was felt to be great. The separation between the Calvinistic and the Lutheran churches on the one hand, and between the churches of the various states on the other, even when the former separation had been bridged over by the Prussian Union ; the entire absence of any satisfactory system of church government, the autocratic authority of either the monarch or his ministers, or of the clergy, being supreme; the increasing encroachments of the papal power upon the rights of the individual and the state; the growing estrangement of the educated classes from the church on the one hand, with the manifestation of either ignorance of the fact or a determination to meet it with bitter denunciation on the part of the orthodox clergy on the other, were regarded as urgent calls to action by the liberals) Membership in the association is open to all Germans who are Protestants and declare their willingness to cooperate in promoting its objects. To facilitate its operations, the general association is broken up into a few groups or societies confined to certain geo- graphical areas. Every second year (at first every year) general meetings of the entire association are held at some convenient place. At first the governing committee had its permanent seat at Heidelberg, but in 1874 Berlin, as the new capital of the empire, was chosen. The means used to promote the objects aimed at are mainly (1) the formation of local branch associations throughout the country, the duty of which is by lectures, meetings, and the distribution of suitable literature to make known and advocate its principles, and (2) the holding of great annual or biennial meetings of the*~~

whole association, at which its objects and principles are expounded and applied to the The ‘“‘theses” accepted by the general meetings of the association as the result of the discussions on the papers read indicate the theological position of its members. The following may

serve as illustrations :—

The creeds of the Protestant church shut the doors on the past only, but open them for advance in the future; it is immoral and contrary to true Protestantism to require subscription to them. The limits of the freedom of teaching are not prescribed by the letter of Scripture, but a fundamental requirement of Protestautism is free inquiry in and about the Scriptures. The attempt to limit the freedom of theological inquiry and teaching in the universities is a violation of the vital principle of Protestantism. Only such con- ceptions of the person of Jesus can satisfy the religious necessities of this age as fully recognize the idea of his humanity and place in history. The higher reason only has unconditional authority, and the Bible must justify itself before its tribunal ; we find the history of divine revelation and its fulfilment in the Bible alone, and reason bids us regard the Bible as the only authority and canon in matters of religious belief.

The formation of the association at once provoked fierce and determined opposition on the part of the orthodox sections of the church, particularly in Berlin. Attempts

more or less successful have been made from the first to exclude clergymen and professors identified with it from the pulpits and chairs of Berlin and elsewhere, though mem- bership in it involves no legal disqualification for either. One of the objects of the association was to some extent obtained by the reorganization of the Prussian Churcli when Dr Falk was cultus minister, on the basis of parochial and synodal representation, which came into full operation in 1879. But the election for the general synod turned out very unfavourable to the liberal party, and the large orthodox majority endeavoured to use their power against the principles and the members of

~~*the association. The members of the association elected to the general synod were nine only, while the party of the decidedly orthodox numbered upwards of seventy. In 1882 the position of the association was rendered still more difficult by the agitation in Berlin of Dr Kalthoff and other members of it in favour of a "people's church" on purely dis- senting and extremely advanced theological principles. The turn of the political tide in the direction of conserva- tism in Berlin indicated by the retirement of the cultus minister Dr Falk increased the difficulties and the work of the association, far as Dr Falk was from sanctioning its theological principles. Moreover, it had sustained severe losses in its membership by death and other causes.*~~

~~*I, Evrope—*~~

~~*PRO—PRO*~~

~~*At the end of the twelfth year of its existence (1877) the associa- tion had 7500 members, its annual income was nearly £350, and it had distributed in the same year 10,000 copies of its publications. In 1880 the number of members had risen to 26,000, and of loeal associations to 80.*~~

~~*See Schenkel, Der Deutsche Protestantenverein und seine Bedeutung fiir die Gegenwart (Wiesbaden, 1868, 2d ed. 1871); Der Deutsche Protestantenverein in seinen Statuten und den Thesen seiner Hauptversammilungen, 1865-82 (Berlin, 1883), and the annual reports in the Allgemeine Kirchliche Krontk, 1865-52, and Theological Review, July 1869, pp. 289-96.*~~

~~*PROTESTANTS is the generic term for members of the churches which owe their origin directly or indirectly to the RerormMaTIon (q.v.). The name is derived from the Protest of Spires in 1529 (see LurHer, vol. xv. p. 80). Certain small communities of Christians older than the Reformation, but agreeing with it in rejecting the author- ity of Rome, are generally and quite logically grouped as Protestants; and popularly the name is considered to include all Christians who do not belong to the Greek and Roman Catholic communions, though members of the Anglican Church, for example, frequently protest against such a classification as historically false and personally obnoxious. Protestantism has flourished best among the Teutonic*~~

~~*peoples of Northern Europe, and has always found it difficult to make its way among the Latin peoples of the South.*~~

~~*The following table shows approximately the number of Protestants in the world :—*~~

~~*Great Britain and Ireland (Anglicans, 18,800,000; Presbyterians, 3,900,000; Methodists, 3,500,000;*~~

~~*Independents, 1,200,000; Baptists, 1,000,000) .....ccasacaeccesjesocoeessecaditeceen sees stememenemenen die epameene 28,400,000 (estimate) German Empire (Lutherans, Reformed, and United, 28,318,280 ; Mennonites and other Baptists, 38,744) 28,357,024 (1880 Norway and Sweden (Norway, 1,805,076; Sweden, 4,561,759, mostly \ORRDNS HN) doponacdoaedmeosonacoso0nee 6,366,835 (1875 and 1880*~~

~~*Denmark and Iceland (Denmark, 1,960,844; Iceland, 72,000, mostly Lutheran) 9678; Lutherans, 73,696; Mennonites,*~~

~~*XO) 77) COBB tebcodonnccacddenceecmda sg onan occ eberace onsen dusbeonboseoooaoHOr Switzerland (mainly Reformed) ..... ee eaadiscAs sates satesins*~~

~~*Holland (Reformed, 2,346,568—including Remonstrants,*~~

~~*bem e meer cee e cs eee res esses ere seeessessses cesses eee*~~

~~*ere en*~~

~~*sect eee e cere e rere eeeesesee*~~

~~*9,472,680 (1879) 1,667,109 (1880)*~~

~~*(Making a total in countries of the Teutonic race of 69,296, 492.)*~~

~~*France (Reformed or Calvinists, 467,531; Lutherans, 80,117; others, 33,109) Belgium, Spain and Portugal, Luxemburg, and Monaco (respectively 15,000, 10,500, 968, and 626) ... el (Waldensians, Free Church of Italy, Methodists, Baptists, &c.)*~~

~~UME VDI cae cr Re wavestia cei nnastvann.~~

~~eee were cece reer eee eeerersaresssesesssseseseasss ee~~

~~580,757 (1872)~~

~~27,089 (various) 62,000 (estimate) 13,800 (estimate)~~

~~peewee eet eneseeereeseeress eens~~

~~wee cece reaccerscereeeeesesessseessees sees~~

~~(Total in countries of the Latin race, 683,646.)~~

~~Austria (Lutherans, 289,005; Reformed, 110,525; Unitarians, 169, &¢.).....:ccccccccerecrnceesee senses eenees Hungary (Lutherans, 1,180,150; Reformed, 2,043,280; Unitarians, 56,190) ..... - ssssesecccesrerreeeees Russia in Europe (Lutherans in Finland, 2,019,727)..... + Turkey, Greeee, Servia (respectively 10,200, 20,000, and 500) ..~~

~~eielblelaielelete:eisinisiaieja'alais 0.0/9 4/9 st0/6/@10)s(4isinaiaisiala(s)s)«(es#:s\s/=\6.5 (©~~

~~Pee e cece cee e ee eee nee eeeeerersessssssssrsrss ses eee~~

~~401,479 (1880) 3,229,620 (1880)~~

~~4,504,000 (partly estimate)~~

~~30,700 (estimate)~~

~~(Total in countries of Slavonic, non-Aryan, and mixed race, 8,165,799.) ——— - - ——— 78,145,937~~

~~IJ. AMERICA—~~

~~United States (Methodists, 3,686,114 church members; Baptists, 2,424,878; Lutherans, 950,868; Disciples of Christ, 591,821; Congregationalists,~~

~~381,697; Episeopalians, 347,781).....+++6+ 30,000,000 1~~

~~(Ca ee cs: RE IT «ic RRR ee cn srr~~

~~West Indies~~

~~III, Astra and AusTRALASIA—~~

~~India (Anglicans, &c., 373,848; Baptists, Presbyterians, &c., 128,794 ; Lutherans, 29,577).....6~~

~~Dutch Possessions . Turkey in Asia (100,000) and Persia (5000)~~

~~South Australia (216,626) and West A : Nise. Weald ( ) an est Australia (20,613)~~

~~IV. Arrica—~~

~~Egypt and North Africa (10,000) and West Africa (110,000)...~~

~~Cape Colony, &c. East and Central Africa (2000) and Madagascar (300,000)~~

~~Total number of Protestants thus ascertained~~

~~Pee meme ee eee ees ese e cc eeenne CUE DOUDOGDOCD DOO OFOROG oS OUNU CCU d brn oOo Do SUad CUO OOo Dod Ob Ro U Rr OCC Corr itt tert gC)~~

~~Peer eeeeeeessseeeeees POO meee reece eee e eee rere eases eas eee sees esses sseenesessssssssseresssonse Seeessssessssssess see~~

~~CO Ce i a ead~~

~~China and Corea (73,000), Japan (13,000), and Siam (2000)...~~

~~'eieieb)eieis/ajeieie) ele olaicleleieiu]ein(e()p inl)» (¢1wleleieleinivicis sisi 0i#leini=iajeie:4) AOD DOD DOO ODUODOON GOOD UCD Ob DOS oo GaiOGG GG Ort ert~~

~~Ce cee eee eee ee eee eereesesece~~

~~New South Wales (516,512), Victoria (618,392), Queensland (139,380)..... :seeceessseeeeeeeeeneneetens~~

~~Pee eee ee teem eee ses eeerereeessess see reseessresee Terre rrr errr rrr err eee eee ee~~

~~Reece cater rece res eee sesesseeeesee POO eee merece eens eames eee sees ees ee sees sees essesseresere res ssEseesss seers ssesssassceeese~~

~~Pee eee eee cree eee ee eee serseetenseeeessessse ers ses Hee Pee eee eee eee a wees eeeesesees ee ee eee ee ee es~~

~~ee ee ee~~

~~Pee meee e eere eet eee seeeseesess seeee eeessrerses coves~~

~~ee i ee~~

~~Bc evhiciss ot 2,422,285 (1881)~~

~~160,500 (estimate) 180,000 (partly estimate)~~

~~32,762,785~~

~~532,219 (1881)~~

~~170,000 (partly estimate) 88,000 (estimate) 105,000 (estimate)~~

~~1,274,284 (1881) 237,239 (1881) 393,971 (1881)~~

~~284,000 (estimate)~~

~~3,084,713~~

~~120,000 (estimate) 400,000 (estimate) 302,000 (estimate)~~

~~822,000~~

114,815,435

This total of 115,000,000 is for obvious reasons considerably within the truth. Making allowance for increase of population since

$0 . p : me of the census returns, it will probably be not beyond the mark to state the Protestants of Europe at 81,000,000, of

America at

34,0 i : : ,000,000, of Asia and Australasia at 3,300,000, and of Africa at 850,000, and the total in round numbers at 120,000,000. As regards

Europe, compare Brachelli, Die Staaten Europa's, 1884.

Jurasehek in his edition of Otto Hiibner's Geograph.-statistische Tabellen,

1884, gi Totes : : » gives 123,000,000 Protestants, or 8°5 per cent. of the total population of the world, which he states at 1,485,000, 000.

eee

of 1880.

1 Thi . . : mer his estimate of the Protestant population is based on the details of church membership (partly given above) obtained at the census

occipital absent.

PRO-PRO

PROTEUS, a Greek sea-god, spoken of by Homer as the Old Man of the Sea. In the Odyssey he dwells in the sea near Pharos, an island said to be a day's sail from the mouth of the Nile; in Virgil his home is the Carpathian Sea between Crete and Rhodes. He knew all things past, present, and future, but was very loth to tell what he knew. Those who would consult him had first to surprise and bind him during his noon-day slumber ina cave by the sea, where he was wont to pass the heat of the day surrounded by his seals. Even when caught he would try to escape by assuming all sorts of shapes;

~~*now he was a lion, now a serpent, a leopard, a boar, a tree, fire, water. But if his captor held him fast, the god at last returned to his proper shape, gave the wished-for answer, and then plunged into the sea. He was subject to Poseidon, whose finny droves he shepherded under the billows. In post-Homeric times some thought that Proteus was a king of Egypt, at whose court the fair Helen tarried after she had been carried off by Paris, while the Greeks fondly deemed she was in Troy. This is the story followed, with varia- tions, by Herodotus, who got it from Egyptian priests, and by Euripides in his play of Helen.*~~

~~*The fairy tale of Proteus has been interpreted in various fanciful ways. Proteus's leading features—his knowledge of the future and his power of assuming any shape at pleasure—are characteristic of the "medicine-men" of savages in many parts of the world. As late as the beginning of our era there was a class of wizards at Rhodes who possessed two at least of the chief marks of " medicine- men "—the powers of transforming themselves and of making rain (Diod. Sie, v. 55). There were rain-makers also at Rome (Festus, s.v. "aquelicium," where see commentary).*~~

~~*PROTEUS ANGUINUS, a blind, newt-like perenni- branchiate Amphibian, about a foot long, found in the Adelsberg, Maddalena, and other limestone caverns of Carinthia and Carniola. The creature is white or flesh- coloured, and the transparent gills appear blood red; the skin passes uninterruptedly over the rudimentary eyes. The animal's body is cylindrical; the snout is long and blunt ; the fore-feet have three toes, and the hind (which are set very far back) two. There are three gill-arches and two gill-slits on each side. The absence of the fourth branchial arch is a feature that Proteus has in common with Afenobranchus and also with Spelerpes. The skull is of an elongated form, and presents several remarkable characters. The trabecule cranii are persistent, as in the snake. The membrane bones are singularly few, the maxille being rudimentary and the nasals and supra- In the lower jaw the splenial is said to be absent, but a mento-Meckelian cartilage element is present, as in Batrachia. The palatines have a row of teeth, and are ankylosed with the pterygoids; the premaxille, dentaries, and vomers carry teeth. The absence of a cartilage roof to the nasal cavity is one of the many characters in which Proteus agrees with Menobranchus, but differs from Siren and Menopoma. The suspensorium has only a simple pedicle, as*~~

~~in Batrachia, and the hyoid arch is remarkable for the enormous hyo-mandibular element, which is larger even than in many sharks. The notochord is scarcely constficted by the amphicccelous vertebree, and the intervertebral cartilages are at a minimum of development. There are twenty-nine trunk vertebree, one sacral, and twenty-eight caudal. The pectoral arch contains a long thin ossified scapula, a supra- scapula, and a long precoracoid separated by a deep notch from the main coracoid ; a fissure exists in the glenoid region. There is no sternum. The pectoral girdle is almost identical with that of Menobranchus. The pelvis has a narrow tapering ischial region, well-marked prepubes, and (?)a pointed epipubis; this girdle also is extremely like that of Jfenobranchus, but notably different from that of the Axolotl, which is only a pseudo-perennibranchiate,~~

~~f~~

~~827~~

~~and whose real affinities are with Salamander and Triton. The bones of the fore-arm and leg are unankylosed, There are three unossified carpal and tarsal elements, which Gegenbaur identifies as a radiale, ulnare, and a fused distal row; such a carpus has no resemblance to either the em-bryonic or adult stage of any other amphibian. In the heart the auricular septum is incomplete; the truncus arteriosus bifurcates into two trunks: each divides into two, and the posterior of these again into two, thus forming the three aortic arches on each side. The pulmonary vein sends part only of its blood into the heart, and part into the systemic veins. The blood-corpuscles are the largest known among vertebrates, and are comparable to the exceedingly large corpuscles of the Dipnor. The brain is very small, straight, and embryonic in character. The gut is straight, and the stomach is a scarcely perceptible dilata- tion. The thyroid (alone among amphibians) is unpaired. The lungs are long simple sacs, expanded distally, as in Menobranchus ; the trachea is excessively short, and the two cartilages which bound the glottis are continued into long processes which pass to the base of the lungs. As in Siren, Siredon, and others, the lateral branch of the vagus nerve is connected with a series of sense-organs forming a "lateral line." These characters together indicate the exceedingly low position of Proteus among Amphibia ; it and its close~~

~~relative the American Jfenobranchus are the lowest of living Amphibia. The creature seems to be abundant within its limited habitat; it feeds on worms and small fishes, which in spite of its blindness it catches dexterously. It has bred in captivity, and lays round, isolated eggs, about a third of an inch in diameter. It changes colour slightly in the breeding season, and two rows of reddish spots make their appearance on the hinder~~

~~-part of the body. Such a change seems to indicate that~~

~~the creature has not always lived in the absolute darkness in which it now spends its life. Individuals differ in some minor characters, and Cope (Journ. Acad. Philadelphia, v. p. 103, 1866) has based four new species on Hyrtl's specimens (PP. zoisti, carrarx, xanthostichus, schreitersii). Merrem altered the name of the genus to Hypochthon (Gesch. der Amphibien, 1790-1820).~~

~~Authorities.—Proteus was first described by Laurenti in his Synopsis Reptilium (Vienna, 1768, p. 37); his locality, Lake Zirknitz, was erroneous. It was next mentioned by Scopoli (Annus V. Hist. Nat., 1772).~~

~~PROTOGENES, a Greek painter, born in Caunus on the coast of Caria, but resident in Rhodes during the latter half of the 4th century B.c., was celebrated for the minute and laborious finish which he bestowed on his pictures, both in drawing and in colour. Apelles, his great rival, standing astonished in presence of one of these works, could only console himself that he knew wheu to stop whereas Protogenes did not. So also Petronius (Satyr., 83) experienced a sensation of horror at the too vivid realization of nature in which Protogenes indulged. On one picture, the Ialysus, he spent seven years; on another, the Satyr, he worked continuously during the~~

~~siege of Rhodes by Demetrius Poliorcetes (305-4 B,C.) notwithstanding that the garden in which he painted was in the middle of the enemy's camp. Demetrius unsolicited took measures for his safety; more than that, when told that the Ialysus just mentioned was in a part of the town exposed to assault, Demetrius changed his plan of opera- tions. Possibly the slowness and laboriousness of the work of Protogenes was due partly to a want of~~

~~*training in his youth. He appears to have been self-taught ; some said that he had begun life as a ship-painter, and, though the painting of certain small figures of ships in a picture of his in Athens, however excellent it may have been, can hardly be held to confirm this account of his youth, it does not on the other hand render the account unreliable. It may have been due also to a want of early training that he found so much difficulty in rendering the foam at the mouth of a dog which occurred in the picture of Ialysus. Angry at his many failures, he dashed the sponge wet with the white colour which he had just wiped off at the mouth of the dog. The result was a perfectly successful foam. Ialysus was a local hero, the founder of the town of the same name in the island of Rhodes, and probably he was represented asa huntsman. The picture was still in Rhodes in the time of Cicero, but was afterwards removed to Rome, where it perished in the burning of the temple of Peace. On another occasion Protogenes seems to have used his sponge with a different effect. painted during the siege of Rhodes consisted of a satyr leaning idly against a pillar on which was a figure of a partridge so life-like that ordinary spectators saw nothing*~~

~~*but it. Enraged on this account, the painter wiped out the partridge. The Satyr must have been one of his last works. He would then be about seventy years of age, and*~~

~~*had enjoyed for about twenty years a reputation next only to that of Apelles, his friend and benefactor. Both were finished colourists so far as the fresco-painting of their day permitted, and both were laborious in the practice of draw- ing, doubtless with the view to obtaining bold effects of perspective as well as fineness of outline. It was an illus- tration of this practice when Apelles, finding in the house of Protogenes a large panel ready prepared for a picture, drew upon it with a brush a very fine line which he said would tell sufficiently who had called. Protogenes*~~

~~*on his return home took a brush with a different colour |*~~

~~*and drew a still finer line along that of Apelles dividing it in two. Apelles called again; and, thus challenged, drew with a third colour another line within that of Protogenes, who then admitted himself surpassed. This panel was seen by Pliny (V.H., xxxv. 83) in Rome, where it was much admired, and where it perished by fire. In the gallery of the Propylewa at Athens was to*~~

~~*be seen the panel by Protogenes in which occurred the figures of ships already mentioned. The subject consisted of two figures representing personifications of the coast of Attica, Paralus and Hammonias, to whom the presence of ships would be the more appropriate as the Athenians actually possessed two ships so named. For the council chamber at Athens he painted figures of the Thesmothete, but in what form or character is not known. Probably these works were executed in Athens, and it may have been then that he met Aristotle, who recommended him to take for subjects the deeds of Alexander the Great. In his Alexander and Pan he may have followed that advice in the idealizing spirit to which he was accustomed. To this spirit must be traced also his Cydippe and Tlepolemus, legendary personages of Rhodes, Among his portraits are mentioned those of the mother of Aristotle, Philiscus the tragic poet, and King Anti- gonus. But Protogenes was also a sculptor to some extent, and made several bronze statues of athletes, armed figures, huntsmen, and persons in the act of offering sacrifices.*~~

~~*The picture |*~~

~~*PRO—P RO*~~

~~*PROTOPLASM. In most of the biological articles already before the reader, whether concerned with general questions, as Brotocy, ANatomy, Borany, Empry- oLocy, Evotution, Histotocy, MorpHoiocy, PHysioLocy, &c., or even with special groups of living beings, as ANIMAL Kincpom, ForAMINIFERA, Funcus, Protozoa, &c., special reference has been made to protoplasm as the living matter from which all kinds of living beings are formed and developed, and to the properties of which all their functions are ultimately referred. Fundamentally important then as this substance is, whether we occupy the standpoint of morphology, physiology, or ztiology, an attempt must be made to outline the way in which our knowledge of it has been reached, to bring together by the aid of a short summary the statements of such preceding articles, and to supply means of extending the general idea thus obtained by reference to the original literature of the subject.*~~

~~*§ 1. Hestoryn—Among the varied and fruitful observa-. tions of the early microscopists, Résel v. Rosenhof's ex- cellent account (1755) of his*~~

~~*"Proteus animalcule" (the familiar Ameba) is especially noteworthy as the earliest description of the form and movements of what we now know as a mass of living protoplasm. Such discoveries as those of rotation in the cell of Chara (Corti, 1772), and of similar movements in other plant cells (Vallisneria, Meyen, 1827; Tradescantia, R. Brown, 1831), are also memorable,—imore so indeed in this relation than is the great contemporaneous movement in general histology, since this, though aided by the rapid improvement of the microscope, eagerly carried on by the united labours of. zoologists and botanists, headed by Johannes Miiller and Robert Brown, and culminating in the hands of Schleiden and Schwann (1838-39) in the fundamental morphologi- cal generalization of the cell theory (see MorpHoLocy), included views of the structure, origin, and function of the cell-substance alike erroneous and misleading. Know- ledge had in fact to start afresh from the level of the unappreciated discovery of Rosenhof ; and it is accordingly from the observations of Dujardin on Foraminifera (1835) that our modern knowledge of protoplasm dates. His main account is still worth reading in his own words. In proposing the term "sarcode," he says, "je propose de nommer ainsi ce que d'autres observateurs ont appelé une gelée vivante, cette substance glutineuse, diaphane, in- soluble dans leau, se contractant en masses globuleuses, sattachant aux aiguilles de dissection, et'se laissant étirer comme du mucus, enfin se trouvant dans tous les animaux inférieurs interposée aux autres éléments de structure." Though thus dissipating many errors, and placing the study of the lowest forms of life on its true basis, Dujardin unfortunately did not see the full bearing of his discovery. He recognized his sarcode, however, in the polyps, and noted that the ova of the slug exhibited similar move- ments. The next important step was not taken until 1846, when the botanist Hugo von Mohl, working on quite independent lines, reached a clearly defined conception of the vegetable cell, not only, as usual hitherto, distinguish- ing the cell wall and the nucleus from the cell contents (Zellsaft), but also the "tough, slimy, granular, semi- fluid" constituent from the watery cell-sap hitherto generally confused with it under the common name. For this substance (which Schleiden had already vaguely men- tioned as "Schleim") he proposed the term "protoplasma" (rpdros, first, rAdopa, formed substance). The discovery of the amoeboid movements of colourless blood-corpuscles dates from the same year, and the basis was thus prepared for Ecker's acute comparison (1849) of the "formed*~~

~~*contractile substance" of muscle with the "unformed contractile substance" of the lowest types of animal life. This*~~

~~*PROP?*~~

~~*speculation, so profoundly anticipatory of our present stand- point (see PuysioLocy), was greatly strengthened when Donders shortly afterwards succeeded in referring con- tractility from the cell-membrane to the cell-substance. Cohn's researches among microscopic plants and animals, and particularly his study of the transition, which at that time seemed so marvellous and so perplexing, from plant- like quiescence to animal-like activity, exhibited by the protoplasm of such an alga as Protococcus on escaping from its cell-wall, led him to suggest that vegetable protoplasm and animal sarcode, "if not identical, must be at any rate in the highest degree analogous substances." This speculation again ran too far in advance of current con- ceptions, dominated as these were by the errors which accompanied the cell-theory, and another decade of research was needed for its establishment. This was effected on several simultaneous and convergent lines. The botanical evidence culininated in De Bary's classical monograph of the Myxomycetes (1859) ; the study of the segmentation of the ovum, and the rapid advance of animal histology, both largely due to Kolliker, were of marked importance; while the clear identification of the vegetable " protoplasm " with the animal "sarcode," requiring, as it did, a mastery of all these lines and results of inquiry, was finally effected by M. ScHULTZE (¢.v.), whose researches on Foraminifera (1854), and subsequent admirable studies in animal histology, prepared him to accomplish the definite reform of the cell-theory. This he did by fully and finally replacing (1861-63) the early conception of the cell as an all-import- ant membrane enclosing a nucleus surrounded by fluid by that of a unit- mass of living matter or protoplasm (the nucleus alone being viewed as essential, the wall or mem- brane no longer so). Our present usage of the term proto- plasm for the living substance of the animal as well as of the plant dates from Schultze's paper ("' Ueber Muskelkor- perchen und das was man eine Zelle zu nennen habe," Arch. f. Anat. u. Physiol., 1861) ; and the term sarcode, notwith- standing Dujardin's priority, has since lapsed into disuse, save to some extent among French authors.*~~

~~This rejuvenescence of the cell theory, in a form point- ing to a far deeper unity of the forms and processes of organic nature than its founders had ventured to dream, marks the commencement of a new epoch of detailed inves- tigation of all the forms, aspects, conditions, and products of protoplasmic life; but in this movement the workers are too numerous for mention save in so far as may be inciden- tal in the following scanty reference to some of their main results (1).1~~

~~§ 2. Appearance and Properties of Protoplasm.—To ob- tain a notion of the appearance and physical properties of protoplasm; it is expedient as it were to repeat the process of discovery, and acquire concrete ideas by actual observa- tion as far as possible, or at least from good figures. The Amba (see Protozoa) and the FoRaMINIFERA (¢.v.) thus afford convenient and classical examples of the protoplasm of the lowest animal forms; the colourless corpuscles of blood should also be examined, and the structure of the higher tissues (see ANaTomY and HistoLoey) inquired into, and the segmentation of an ovum (see REPRODUC- TION) observed,—most conveniently perhaps in frog spawn. Vegetable examples are readily obtained from the cells of a growing shoot (see Botany, vol. iv. pp. 83 s¢., figs. 1 and 6); while the living cells of Chara (Botany, fig. 7) and other examples of protoplasmic movement should be observed. Thus, with the aid of the descriptive passages to be found in the articles referred to at the outset, a tolerably clear idea of a mass of protoplasm, with its con- tained granules of various kinds and its sap-vacuoles, will~~

~~1 These numbers refer to the bibliography at p. 830.~~

~~be obtained ; and its frequent differentiation into an outer layer or ectoplasm, clearer and denser, passing into an inner layer or endoplasm, usually more fluid and granular, will be noted. A finely reticulated structure of the protoplasm may also be made out in many cases; the nucleus (incon- Spicuous since equally refracting with the protoplasm dur- ing life, but brought out clearly after death by the process of internal digestion of the surrounding protoplasm, or by the application of dyes and other reagents), and its con- tained nucleolus, as well as the cell-wall when present, will be observed. Wide variations of consistency will thus be noted from the~~

~~*comparatively solid, almost brittle, state of the quiescent protoplasm of some seeds to its thin, syrupy, and largely vacuolated state in a growing vegetable tissue (cf. Botany, fig. 6). Such structural inquiries are now in active progress, especially in connection with the process of cell division (see HistoLocy, REPRODUCTION), and many questions of detail are more or less under active dispute, e.g., the relation of the nucleus to the protoplasm the existence or constancy of an internal network (the "'stroma") in both, the conditions of occurrence of that continuity of protoplasm lately shown to exist through the cell walls of many vegetable tissues, and so on (2).*~~

~~*§ 3. Manzfestations of Life (iunctions).—The vital pro- perties or "functions" exhibited by undifferentiated living protoplasm (e.g., Ameba) are usually enumerated as con- tractility, irritability and automatism, reception and assimi- lation of food, metabolism with secretion and excretion, respiration, and reproduction. Thus we have represented all those functions which in higher animals seem to be confined to special tissues—which we accordingly recognize as muscular or nervous, secretory or excretory, respiratory, reproductive, or the like. Yet in these organs, however apparently specialized to one function only, a residue of all or nearly all the other fundamental properties of pro- toplasm remains and may be redeveloped; and thus those functional changes (necessarily accompanying morpholo- gical evolution or change of environment) which we call 'adaptation" and those pathological disturbances which we term "disease" are alike provided for. See BloLoey, PATHOLOGY, SELECTION AND VARIATION, also (8).*~~

~~*§ 4. External Conditions of Iife—See Biouocy.*~~

~~*§ 5. Hxperimental Modification of the Conditions of Infe.—The behaviour of protoplasm under various modifications of physical conditions has been investigated by Schultze, Kihne, Strasburger, Engelmann, and others, while not a few researches are also extant as to the behaviour of living cells under various chemical stimuli, among which those of Darwin (see InsecTIVoRous PLants) and Frommann may be mentioned as especially suggestive. See also Scu1zo- MYCETES, NUTRITION, and (4).*~~

~~§ 6. Chemical Composition and Processes.—This aspect of protoplasm is of constantly increasing importance, since for the chemist all functions alike can only be viewed in terms of those specific anabolic or katabolic changes which to the physiologist, on the other hand, seem mere accom- paniments of them (see PuysioLocy, Nutrition, REprRo- puctTion). The determination of the chemical nature of protoplasm is thus the supreme problem of physiological chemistry; and, while, thanks to the labours of Reinke, E. Schultze, and others, there has been a rapidly increasing knowledge of its anastates, but more especially of its katastates, and of many cases of the unity of metabolic processes throughout nature, several daring general hypo- theses are already in the field. Of these that of Schiitzen- berger, who views proteid bodies as complex ureides, and that of Loew and Bokorny, who regard them as a complex mixture of aldehyde groups, are examples. See (9).~~

~~§ 7. Molecular Constituttion.—Many hypotheses as to the minute structure of protoplasm have been proposed ; thus~~

~~Spencer resolves protoplasm into " physiological units," Haeckel into "plastidules," while Darwin accounts for heredity by reference to the properties of supposed " gem- mules," Engelmann suggests the existence of "contractile units" (isotagmen), &c.; but those various hypotheses, framed mostly for special purposes, still await more general criticism. See (6).~~

~~§ 8. Origin of Protoplasm.—See ABIOGENESIS, BroLoey, REPRODUCTION, and (7).~~

~~Bibliography.—In addition to the articles above referred to, the reader may with advantage consult the following works, from which complete bibliographical details can be obtained. (1) For general history see Sachs, Geschichte d. Botanik; Carus, Ge- schichte d. Zoologie; Engelmann, " Physiol. d. Protoplasma u. Flimmerbewegung," in Hermann's Handb. d. Phystologie, 1., Leipsic, 1879 ; and for special history, Dujardin, = Recherches s. 1. organismes inférieurs," especially § lii., "S. 1. prétendus estomacs d. animales Infusoires ct s. u. subst. appelée Sarcode," Ann. d. Sci. Nat., 1835, p. 367; H. v. Mohl, "Ueb. d. Saftbewegung im Innern d.~~

~~*Zelle," Bot. Zeitung, 1846, p. 73; Max Schultze, Ueb. d. Organismus d. Polythalamien, Leipsic, 1854; Id., "Ueb. Mus- kelkérperchen," &c., Arch. f. Anat. u. Physiol., 1861, Id., D. Protoplasma d. Rhizopoden u. d. Pflanzenzellen, Leipsic, 1863 ;*~~

~~*PR O—*~~

~~*PRO*~~

~~*De Bary, "Die Mycetozoen," Zeitsch. f. wissensch. Zool., x., 1859 ; Haeckel, Generelle Morphologie, i., Berlin, 1866. (2) For general structure and properties sce Hofmeister, D. Lehre d. Pfl.-Zelle, Leipsic, 1867; Sachs, Lehrb. d. Botanik, or Engl. translation, Oxford, 1882; Sachs, Vorlesungen tib. Pflanzen-Physiol., Leipsic, 1882; and other text-books of vegetable physiology, especially those of Reinke and Pfeffer; Strasburger, D. Botan. Practicum, Leipsic, 1884; and Engelmann, op. cit. Among special works see Kiihne, Untersuch. ib. d. Protop. u. d. Contractilitét, Leipsic, 1864; Strasburger, "Studien iib. d. Protoplasma," Jena. Zettsch., x., 1876, also Ucb. Zellbildung wu. Zelitheilung, 2d ed., Jena, 1876. (3) Dohrn, Das Princip d. Funetionsweehsels, Leipsic, 1875; Foster, Handbook of Physiology, 4th ed., London, 1884. (4) For ex- perimental researches see Engelmann, Kiihne, and other authors cited under (2) passim; also Darwin, Jnsectivorous Plants, London, 1876; Frommann, "Ueb. Structur, Lebenserschein, &c., d. Thier. n. Pfi.Zellen," Jena. Zeitsch., xviii., 1884. (5) Gamgec, Physiol. Chem. of Anim. Body, London, 1880; Foster, Handbook of Physi ology ; Gautier, Chimie appliquée a4 la Physiologie; Schitzenberger, "¢ Recherches s. PAlbumine, &c.," Bull. d. l. Soc. Chimique, 1875 ; Leow and Bokorny, Biol. Central-Blatt, 1., No. 7; and Reinke, "Ueber d. Protoplasma," in Untersuch. a. d. bot. Lab. Univ. Gottingen, 1881.. (6) Spencer, Principles of Biology, vol. 1.; Haeckel, Gen. Morph.,i.; Darwin, Variation under Domestication; Engelmann, op. cit. (7) Engelmann, op. cit. (P. GE.)*~~

~~*PROTOZOA*~~

~~*ROTOZOA is the name applied to the lowest grade of the animal kingdom, and originated as a translation of the German term "Urthiere." Whilst at first used some forty years ago in a vague sense, without any strict*~~

~~*definition, so as to include on the one hand some simple organisms which are now regarded as plants and on the other some animals which are now assigned a higher place in the animal series, the term has within the last twenty years acquired a very clear signification.*~~

~~*The Protozoa are sharply and definitely distinguished from all the rest of the animal kingdom, which are known by the names ‘“Metazoa” or “ Enterozoa.” They are those animals which are structurally single “cells” or single corpuscles of protoplasm, whereas the Enterozoa consist of many such units arranged definitely (in the first instance) in two layers—an endoderm or enteric cell-layer and an ectoderm or deric cell-layer—around a central cavity, the enteron or common digestive cavity, which is in open communication with the exterior by a mouth.*~~

~~*The Protozoa are then essentially unicellular animals. The individual or person in this grade of the animal king- dom is a single cell ; and, although we find Protozoa which consist of aggregates of such cells, and are entitled to be called “multicellular,” yet an examination of the details of structure of these cell-aggregates and of their life- history establishes the fact that the cohesion of the cells in these instances is not an essential feature of the life of such multicellular Protozoa but a secondary and non-essen- tial arrangement. Like the budded “persons” forming, when coherent to one another, undifferentiated “ colonies” among the Polyps and Corals, the coherent cells of a com- pound Protozoon can be separated from one another and live independently ; their cohesion has no economic signifi- cance. Each cell is precisely the counterpart of its neigh- bour ; there is no common life, no distribution of function among special groups of the associated cells, and no cor- responding differentiation of structure. As a contrast to this we find even in the simplest Enterozoa that the cells are functionally and structurally distinguishable into two groups—those which line the enteron or digestive cavity and those which form the outer body wall. The cells of these two layers are not interchangeable ; they are funda- mentally different in properties and structure from one another. The individual Enterozoon is not a single cell ; it 1s an aggregate of a higher order consisting essentially of a digestive cavity around which two layers of cells are*~~

disposed. The individual Protozoon is a single cell; a number of .these individuals may, as the result of the pro- cess of fission (cell-division), remain in contact with one another, but the compound individual which they thus originate has not a strong character. The constituent cells are still the more important individualities; they never become differentiated and grouped in distinct layers differing from one another in properties and structure ; they never become subordinated to the individuality of the aggregate produced by their cohesion; hence we are justified in calling even these exceptional aggregated Protozoa unicellular.

By far the larger number of Protozoa are absolutely single isolated cells, which, whenever they duplicate them- selves by that process of division common to these units of structure (whether existing as isolated organisms or as constituents of the tissues of plants or of animals), separ- ate at once into two distinct individuals which move away from one another and are thenceforward strangers.

Whilst it is easy to draw the line between the Protozoa and the Enterozoa or Metazoa which lie above them, on account of the perfectly definite differentiation of the cells of the latter into two primary tissues, it is more difficult to separate the Protozoa from the parallel group of unicellular plants.

Theoretically there is no difficulty about this distinction. There is no doubt that organisms present themselves to us in two great series starting in both cases from simple unicellular forms. The one series, the plants, can take up the carbon, hydrogen, oxygen, and nitrogen necessary to build up their growing protoplasm from mineral com- pounds soluble in water, compounds which constitute the resting stage of those elements in the present physical conditions of our planet. Plants can take their nitrogen in the form of ammonia or in the form of nitrates and their carbon in the form of carbonic acid. Accordingly they require no mouths, no digestive apparatus; their food being soluble in water and diffusible, they absorb at all or many points of their surface. The spreading diffuse form of plants is definitely related to this fact. On the other hand the series of organisms which we distinguish as animals cannot take the nitrogen, necessary to build up their protoplasm, in a lower state of combination than it presents

~~*in the class of compounds known as albumens; nor can they take carbon in a lower state of combination than it presents when united with hydrogen or with*~~

~~*PREO@OPOAZOA*~~

~~*hydrogen and oxygen to form fat, sugar, and starch. Albumens and fats are not soluble in water and diffusible ; they have to be seized by the animal in the condition of more or less solid particles, and by chemical processes superinduced in the living protoplasm of the animal by the contact of these particles they are acted upon, chemic- ally modified, and rendered diffusible. Hence the animal is provided with a mouth and a digestive cavity, and with organs of locomotion and prehension by which it may search out and appropriate its scattered nutriment. Further the albumens, fats, sugars, and starch which are the necessary food of an animal are not found in nature excepting as the products of the life of plants or of animals ; accord- ingly all animals are in a certain sense parasitic upon either plants or other animals. It would therefore seem to be easy to draw the line between even the most minute unicellular plants and the similarly minute unicellular animals—assigning those which feed on the albumens, &c., of other organisms by means of a mouth and digestive apparatus to the animal series, and those which can appro- priate the elements of ammonia, nitrates, and carbonates to the plants.*~~

~~*Such absolute distinctions lending themselves to sharp definitions have, however, no place in the organic world ; and this is found to be equally true whether we attempt to categorically define smaller groups in the classification of plants and animals or to indicate the boundaries of the great primary division which those familiar names imply. Closely allied to plants which are highly and specially developed as plants, and feed exclusively upon ammonia, nitrates, and carbonates, we find exceptionally modified kinds which are known as "insectivorous plants" and are provided with digestive cavities (the pitchers of pitcher- plants, &c.), and actually feed by acting chemically upon the albumens of insects which they catch in these diges- tive receptacles. No one would entertain for a moment the notion that these insectivorous plants should be con- sidered as animals. The physiological definition separat- ing plant from animal breaks down in*~~

~~their case; but the consideration of the probable history of their evolution as indicated by their various details of structure suffices at once to convince the most sceptical observer that they actually belong to the vegetable line of descent or family tree, though they have lost the leading physiological char- acteristic which has dominated the structure of other plants. In this extreme case it is made very obvious that in grouping organisms as plants or as animals we are not called upon to apply a definition but to consider the multifarious evidences of historical evolution. And we find in the case of the Protozoa and the Protophyta that the same principle holds good, although, when dealing with extremely simple forms, it becomes much more diffi- cult to judge of the genetic relationship of an organism in proportion as the number of detailed points of possible agreement with and divergence from other forms to which it may be supposed to be related are few.~~

~~The feeding of plants upon carbonic acid is invariably accompanied by the presence df a peculiar green-colouring matter—chlorophyll. In virtue of some direct or indirect action of this chlorophyll the protoplasm of the plant is enabled to seize the carbon of the mineral world—the car- bon which has sunk to the lowest resting stage of combina- tion—and to raise it into combination with hydrogen and~~

~~oxygen and ultimately with nitrogen. There are plants which have no chlorophyll and are thus unable to feed upon carbonic acid. They are none the less plants since they agree closely with particular chlorophyll-bearing plants in details of form and structure, mode of growth and reproduction. A large series of these are termed Fungi. Though unable to feed on carbonic acid, they do |~~

~~not feed as do animals. They can take their carbon from acetates and tartrates, which animals cannot do, and their nitrogen from ammonia. Even when it is admitted that some of these colourless plants, such as the Bacteria (Schizomycetes), can act upon albumens so as to digest them and thus nourish themselves, it is not reasonable to place the Bacteria among animals, any more than it would be reasonable so to place Nepenthes, Sarracenia, and Drosera (insectivorous Phanerogams). For the structure and mode of growth of the Bacteria is like that of well- known~~

~~*chlorophylligerous minute Algze from which they undoubtedly differ only in having secondarily acquired this peculiar mode of nutrition, distinct from that which has dominated and determined the typical structure of plants.*~~

~~*So we find in a less striking series of instances amongst animals that here and there the nutritional arrangements which we have no hesitation in affirming to be the leading characteristic of animals, and to have directly and perhaps solely determined the great structural features of the animal line of descent, are largely modified or even alto- gether revolutionized. The green Hydra, the freshwater Sponge, and some Planarian worms produce chlorophyll corpuscles in the protoplasm of their tissues just as green plants do, and are able in consequence to do what animals usually cannot do—namely, feed upon carbonic acid. The possibilities of the protoplasm of the plant and of the animal are, we are thus reminded, the same. The fact that characteristically and typically plant protoplasm ex- hibits one mode of activity and animal protoplasm another does not prevent the protoplasm of even a highly developed plant from asserting itself in the animal direction, or of a thoroughly characterized animal, such as the green Hydra, from putting forth its chlorophylligenous powers as though it belonged to a plant.*~~

~~*Hence it is not surprising that we find among the Protozoa, notwithstanding that they are characterized by the animal method of nutrition and their forms determined by the exigencies of that method, occasional instances of partial vegetable nutrition such as is implied by the deve- lopment of chlorophyll in the protoplasm of a few members of the group. It would not be inconsistent with what is observed in other groups should we find that there are some unicellular organisms which must, on account of their structural resemblances to other organisms, be con- sidered as Protozoa and yet have absolutely given up alto- gether the animal mode of nutrition (by the ingestion of solid albumens) and have acquired the vegetable mode of absorbing ammonia, nitrates, and carbonic acid. Experi- ment in this matter is extremely difficult, but such " veget- able" or "holophytic nutrition" appears to obtain in the case of many of the green Flagellata, of the Dinoflagellata, and possibly of other Protozoa.*~~

~~*On the other hand there is no doubt that we may fall into an error in including in the animal line of descent all unicellular organisms which*~~

~~*nourish themselves by the inception of solid nutriment. It is conceivable that some of these are exceptional creophagous Protophytes parallel at a lower level of structure to the insectivorous Phanero- gams. In all cases we have to balance the whole of the evidence and to consider probabilities as indicated by a widely-reaching consideration of numerous facts.*~~

~~*The mere automatic motility of unicellular organisms was at one time considered sufficient indication that such organisms were animals rather than plants. We now know that not only are the male reproductive cells of ferns and similar plants propelled by vibratile protoplasm, but such locomotive particles are recognized as common products*~~

~~*" swarm-spores " and " zoospores") of the lowest plants.*~~

~~*The danger of dogmatizing erroneously in distinguish-*~~

~~*832*~~

~~*ing Protozoa from Protophyta, and the insuperable diffi- culty in really accomplishing the feat satisfactorily, has led at various times to the suggestion that the effort should be abandoned and a group constituted confessedly containing both unicellular plants and unicellular animals and those organisms which may be one or the other. Haeckel has proposed to call this group the Protista (1). On the whole, it is more satisfactory to make the attempt to dis- criminate those unicellular forms which belong to the animal line of descent from those belonging to the veget- able line. It is, after all, not a matter of much conse- quence if the botanist should mistakenly claim a few Protozoa as plants and the zoologist a few Protophyta as animals. 'The evil which we have to avoid is that some small group of unattractive character should be rejected both by botanist and zoologist and thus our knowledge of it should unduly lag. Bearing this in mind the zoologist should accord recognition as Protozoa to as wide a range of unicellular organisms as he can without doing violence to his conceptions of probability.*~~

~~*A very interesting and very difficult subject of speculation forces itself on our attention when we attempt to draw the line between the lowest plants*~~

and the lowest animals, and even comes again before us when we pass in review the different forms of Protozoa.

That subject is the nature of the first protoplasm which was evolved from not-living matter on the earth's surface. Was that first protoplasm more like animal or more like vegetable proto- plasm as we know it to-day? By what steps was it brought into existence ?

Briefly stated the present writer's view is that the carliest proto-

plasm did not possess chlorophyll and therefore did not possess the power of feeding on carbonic acid. A conceivable state of things

is that a vast amount of albuminoids and other such compounds |

had been brought into existence by those processes which cul- minated in the development of the first protoplasm, and it seems therefore likely enough that the first protoplasm fed upon these antecedent steps in its own evolution just as animals feed on organic compounds at the present day, more especially as the large creeping plasmodia of some Mycetozoa feed on vegetable refuse. It indeed seems not atall improbable that, apart from their elaborate fructification, the Mycetozoa represent more closely than any other living forms the original ancestors of the whole organic world. At subsequent stages in the history of this archaic living matter chlorophyll was evolved and the power of taking carbon from carbonic acid. he "' green" plants were rendered possible by the evolution of chlorophyll, but through what ancestral forms they took origin or whether more than once, i.e., by more than one branch, it is difficult even to guess. The green F lagellate Pro- tozoa (Volvocinez) certainly furnish a connecting point by which it is possible to link ou the pedigree of green plants to the primi- tive protoplasm ; it is noteworthy that they cannot be considered as very primitive and are indeed highly specialized forms as com- pared with the naked protoplasm of the Mycetozoou's plasmodium.

Thus then we are led to entertain the paradox that though the animal is dependent on the plant for its food yet the animal preceded the plaut in evolution, and we look among the lower Protozoa and not among the lower Protophyta for the nearest representatives of that first protoplasm which

~~*was the result of a long and gradual evolution of chemical structure and the starting point of the development of organic form.*~~

~~*The Protozoon Cell-Individual compared with the Typical Cell of Animal and Vegetable Tissues.*~~

~~*Morpnotocy.*~~

~~*The Protozoon individual is a single corpuscle of proto- plasm, varying in size when adult from less than the zoooth of an inch in diameter (some Sporozoa and Flagel- lata) up to a diameter of an inch (Nummulites), and even much larger size in the plasmodia of Mycetozoa. The sub- stance of the Protozoa exhibits the same general properties — irritability, movement, assimilation, growth, and division — — and the same irremediable chemical alteration as the result of exposure to a moderate heat, which are observed in the protoplasm constituting the corpuscles known as cells Which build up the tissues of the larger animals and*~~

~~*? These numbers refer to the bibliography at p. 866.*~~

~~*PROTOZOA*~~

~~*plants. There is therefore no longer any occasion to make use of the word "sarcode" which before this identity was established was very usefully applied by Dujardin (2) to the substance which mainly forms the bodies of the Protozoa. Like the protoplasm which constitutes the "cells" of the Enterozoa and of the higher plants, that of the Protozoon body is capable of producing, by chemical processes which take place in its substance (over and above those related merely to its nutrition), a variety of distinct chemical compounds, which may form a deposit in or beyond the superficial protoplasm of the corpuscle or may accumulate centrally. These products are therefore either ectoplastic or entoplastic. The chemical capacities of protoplasm thus exhibited are very diverse, ranging from the production of a denser variety of protoplasm, probably as the result of dehydration, such as we see in the nucleus and in the cortical substance of many cells, to the chemical separation and deposition of membranes of pure chitin or of cellulose or of shells of pure calcium carbonate or quasi-crystalline needles of silica.*~~

~~*Noctevus.—The nucleus is probably universally present in the Protozoon cell, although it may have a very simple struc- ture and be of very small size in some cases. The presence of a nucleus has recently been demonstrated by means of appropriate staining reagents in some Protozoa (shell- bearing Reticularia or Foraminifera and many Mycetozoa) where it had been supposed to be wanting, but we are not yet justified in concluding absolutely that there are not some few Protozoa in which this central differentiation of the protoplasm does not exist ; it is also a fact that in the young forms of some Protozoa which -result from the breaking up of the body of the parent into many small "spores" there is often no nucleus present.*~~

~~*In contrast to this it is the fact that the cells which build up the tissues of the Enterozoa are all derived from the division of a nucleated egg-cell and the repeated division of its macleated products, and are invariably nucleated. The same is true of tissue-forming plants,— though there are a few of the lowest plants, such as the Bacteria, the protoplasm of which presents no nucleus. In spite of recent statements (8) it cannot be asserted that the cells or protoplasmic corpuscles of the yeast-plant (Saccharomyces) and of the hyphz of many simple moulds contain a true nucleus. We are here brought to the question "What is a true nucleus?" The nucleus which is handed on from the egg-cell of higher plants and Enterozoa to the cells derived from it by fission has lately been shown to possess in a wide variety of instances such very striking characteristics that we may well question whether every more or less distinctly outlined mass or spherule of protoplasm which can be brought into view by colouring or other reagents, within the protoplasmic body of a Protozoon or a Protophyte, is necessarily to be con- sidered as quite the same thing as the nucleus of tissue- forming egg-cell- derived cells.*~~

~~*Researches, chiefly due to Flemming (4), have shown that the nucleus in very many tissues of higher plants and animals consists of a capsule containing a plasma of "achromatin" not deeply stained by reagents, ramifying in which is a reticulum of "chromatin" consisting of fibres which readily take a deep stain (Fig. I, A). Further it is demonstrated that, when the cell is about to divide into two, definite and very remarkable movements take place in the nucleus, resulting in the disappearance of the capsule and*~~

~~*in an arrangement of its fibres first in the form of a wreath (Fig. I, D) and subsequently (by the breaking of the loops formed by the fibres) in the form of a star (E). A further movement within the nucleus leads to an arrangement of the broken loops in two groups (F), the position of the open ends of the broken loops being reversed*~~

~~*PROTWZOA*~~

~~*as compared with what previously obtained. Now the _ two groups diverge, and in many cases a striated appear- ance of the achromatin substance between the two groups of loops of chromatin is observable (H). In some cases (especially egg-cells) this striated arrangement of the achromatin substance precedes the separation of the loops (G). The striated achromatin is then termed a " nucleus- spindle," and the group of chromatin loops (Fig. L, G, «)*~~

~~*)*~~

~~*Fie. I.—Karyokinesis of a typical tissue-eell (epithelium of Salamander) after Flemming and Klein. The series from A to 1 represent the suecessive stages in the movement of the chromatin fibres during division, exeepting G, whieh represents the "' nucleus-spindle" of anegg-eell. A, resting nucleus; D, wreath- form; E, single star, the loops of the wreath being broken; F, separation of the star into two groups of U-shaped fibres; H, diaster or double star; 1, comple- tion of the ecell-division and formation of two resting nnelei. In G the chromatin fibres are marked a, and correspond to the phase shown in F; they are in this case called the " equatorial plate"; 6, achromatin fibres forming the nucleus-spindle; c, granules of the eell-protoplasm forming a "polar star." Such a polar star is seen at eaeh end of the nueleus-spindle, and is not to be confused with the diaster H.*~~

~~*is known as "the equatorial plate." At each end of*~~

~~*the nucleus-spindle in these cases there is often seen a- star consisting of granules belonging to the general proto- |*~~

~~*plasin of the cell (G,c). These are known as " polar stars." After the separation of the two sets of loops (H) the protoplasm of the general*~~

~~*substance of the cell becomes constricted, and division occurs, so as to include a group of chromatin loops in each of the two fission products. of these then rearranges itself together with the associated achromatin into a nucleus such as was present in the mother-cell to commence with. This phenomenon is termed "karyokinesis," and has been observed, as stated above, in a large variety of cells constituting tissues in the higher animals and plants.*~~

~~*There is a tendency among histologists to assume that this process is carried ont in all its details in the division of all cells in the higher plants and animals, and accordingly to assume that the structural differentiation of achromatin plasma and chromatin nucleus-fibres exists in the normal nucleus of every such cell. If this be true, it is necessary*~~

~~*cell-individual by no means conforms universally to this model. As will be seen in the sequel, we find cases in*~~

~~*to this structure and to this definite series of movements during division (Fig. VIII. 3 to 12, and Fig. XXV.); and a knowledge of these phenomena has thrown light upon*~~

~~*some appearances (conjugation of the Ciliata) which were |*~~

~~*previously misinterpreted. But there are Protozoa with a*~~

~~*deeply-placed nucleus-like structure which does not pre- | sent the typical structure above described nor the typical |*~~

~~*changes during division, but in which on the contrary the*~~

~~*nucleus is a very simple homogeneous corpuscle or vesicle |*~~

~~*of more readily stainable protoplasm. The difficulties of observation in this matter are great,*~~

~~*and it is proportionately rash to generalize ; but it appears |*~~

~~*that we are justified at the present moment in asserting that not all the cells even of higher plants and animals*~~

~~_ which is paralleled in many Protozoa. Each |~~

~~exhibit in full detail the structure and movement of the typical cell-nucleus above figured and described ; and accord- ingly the fact that such structure and movement cannot always be detected in the Protozoon cell-nucleus must not be regarded as either an isolated phenomenon peculiar to such Protozoon cells, nor must it be concluded that we have only to improve our means of analysis and observation in order to detect this particular structure in all nuclei. It seems quite possible and even probable that nuclei may vary in these details and yet be true nuclei. Some nuclei which are observed in Protozoon cell-bodies may be regarded as being at a lower stage of differentiation and specializa- tion than are those of the epithelial and embryonic cells of higher animals which exhibit typical karyokinesis. Others on the contrary, such as the nuclei of some Radiolaria (vde infra), are probably to be regarded as more highly developed than any tissue cell-nuclei, and will~~

~~| be found by further study to present special phenomena~~

~~peculiar to themselves. In some of the highest Protozoa (the Ciliata) it has lately been shown that the nucleus may have no existence as such, but is actually dispersed throughout the protoplasm in the form of fine particles of chromatin-substance which stain on treatment with car- mine but are in life invisible (84). This diffuse condition of the nuclear matter has no parallel, at present known, in tissue-cells, and curiously enough occurs in certain genera of Ciliata whilst in others closely allied to them a solid single nucleus is found. The new results of histological research have uecessitated a careful study of the nucleus in its various stages of growth and division in the cell- bodies of Protozoa and a comparison of the features there observed with those established as "typical" in tissue-cells. Accordingly we have placed the figure and explanation of the typical cell-nucleus in the first place in this article for subsequent reference and comparison.~~

~~CorticaL Suspstance.—The superficial protoplasm of an embryonic cell of an Enterozoon in the course of its development into a muscular cell undergoes a change The cortical layer becomes dense and highly refringent~~

~~as compared with the more liquid and granular medullary substance. Probably this is essentially a change in the degree of hydration of the protoplasm itself, although it may be accompanied by the deposition of metamorphic products of the protoplasm which are not chemically to be regarded as protoplasm. The differentiation of this cortical substance (which is not a frequent or striking phenomenon in tissue-cells) may be regarded as an ectoplastic (2.e., peripheral) modification ofthe protoplasm, comparable to the entoplastic (central)~~

~~| modification which produces a nucleus.~~

~~The formation of "cortical substance" in the Protozoa~~

~~: furnishes the basis for the most important division into to note very distinctly that the nucleus of the Protozoon —~~

~~_ animals. (_ cortical substance ; their protoplasm is practically (except-which a close approach is made by the nucleus of Protozoa~~

~~lower and higher forms, in this assemblage of simplest A large number (the Gymnoniyxa) form no~~

~~ing the nucleus) of the same character throughout. A nearly equally large number (the Corticata) develop a complete cortical layer of denser protoplasm, which is distinct from the deeper medullary protoplasm. This layer is permanent, and gives to the body a definite shape and entails physiological consequences of great moment. The cortical protoplasm may exhibit further specialization of structure in connexion with contractile functions (muscular).~~

~~Ecropiastic PRODUCTS CHEMICALLY DISTINCT FROM ProTorLAsSM. —The protoplasm of all cells may throw down as a molecular precipitate distinct from itself chemical compounds, such as chitin and horny matter and other nitrogenized bodies, or again non-nitrogenous compounds, such as cellulose. Very usually these substances are~~

~~| deposited not external to but cm the superficial proto-~~

~~plasm. They are then spoken of as cell-cuticle if the cell bounds the free surface of a tissue, or as matrix or cell-wall in other cases. The Protozoon cell-body frequently forms such "cuticles," sometimes of the most delicate and evanescent character (as in some Ameebee), at other times thicker and more permanent. They may give indications (though proper chemical examination 1s difficult) of being allied in composition to chitin or gelatin, in other instances to cellulose, which is rare in animals and usual in plants. These cuticular deposits may be absent, or may form thin envelopes or in other cases jelly-like substance intimately mixed with the protoplasm (Radiolaria). They may take the form of hooks, tubercles, or long spines, in their older and more peripheral parts free from permeation by protoplasm, though deeply formed in and interpenetrated by it. Such pellicles and cuticles, the deeper layers (if not the whole) of which are permeated by protoplasm, lead insensibly to another category of ectoplastic products in which the material produced by the protoplasm is separated from it and can be detached from or deserted by the proto- plasm without any rupture of the latter. These are—~~

~~Shells and Cysts. —Such separable investments are formed by the cell-bodies of many Protozoa, a phenomenon not exhibited by tissue-cells. Even the cell-walls of the protoplasmic corpuscles of plant tissues are permeated by that protoplasm, and could not be stripped off without rupture of the protoplasm. The shell and the cyst of the Protozoon are, on the contrary, quite free from the cell- protoplasm. The shell may be of soft chitin-like sub-stance (Gromia, &c.), of cellulose (Labyrinthula, Dino- flagellata), of calcium carbonate (Globigerina, &c.), or of silica (Clathrulina, Codonella). The term "cyst" is ap- plied to completely closed investments ("shells" having one or more apertures), which are temporarily produced either as a protection against adverse external conditions or during the breaking up of the parent-cell into spores. Such cysts are usually horny.~~

~~Stalks,—By a localization of the products of ectoplastic activity the Protozoon cell can produce a fibre or stalk of ever-increasing length,~~

~~*comparable to the seta of a Cheetopod worm produced on the surface of a single cell.*~~

~~*ENTOPLASTIC PRODUCTS DISTINCT FROM PRoTOPLASM.— Without pausing here to discuss the nature of the finest granules which are embedded as a dust-cloud in the hyaline matrix of the purest protoplasm alike of Protozoa and of the cells of higher animals and plants, and leaving aside the discussion of the generalization that all protoplasm presents a reticular structure, denser trabecule of extreme*~~

~~*minuteness traversing more liquid material, it is intended |*~~

~~*here merely to point to some of the coarser features of structure and chemical differentiation, characteristic of the cell-body of Protozoa.*~~

~~*With regard to the ultimate reticular structure of protoplasm it will suffice to state that such structure has been shown to obtain in not a few instances (e.g., Lith- ameeba, Fig. V.), whilst in most Protozoa the methods of microscopy at present applied have not yielded evidence of it, although it is not improbable that a recticular differentiation of the general protoplasm similar to that of the nucleus may be found to exist in all cells.*~~

~~*Most vegetable cells and many cells of animal tissues exhibit vacuolation of the protoplasm ; 7.e., large spaces are*~~

~~*present in the protoplasm occupied by a liquid which is not |*~~

~~*protoplasm and is little more than water with diffusible salts in solution. Such vacuoles are common in Protozoa. They are either permanent, gastric, or contractile.*~~

~~*_ Permanent vacuoles containing a watery fluid are some- times so abundant as to give the protoplasm a '" bubbly " structure (Thalamophora, Radiolaria, &e.), or may merely give to1t a trabecular character (Trachelius, Fig. XXIV.*~~

~~*| but are confined to a few species.*~~

~~14, and Noctiluca, Fig. XXVI. 18). Such vacuoles may contain other matters than water, namely, special chemical secretions of the protoplasm. Of this nature are oil-drops, and from these we are led to those deposits within the cell-protoplasm which are of solid consistence (see below).~~

~~Gastric vacuoles occur in the protoplasm of most Proto- zoa in consequence of the taking in of a certain quantity of water with each solid particle of food, such ingestion of solid food-particles being a characteristic process bound up with their animal nature.~~

~~Contractile vacuoles are frequently but not universally observed in the protoplasm of Protozoa. They are not observed in the protoplasm of tissue-cells. The contrac- tile vacuole whilst under observation may be seen to~~

~~| burst, breaking the surface of the Protozoon and discharg-~~

~~ing its liquid contents to the exterior; its walls, formed of undifferentiated protoplasm, then collapse and fuse. After a short interval it re-forms by slow accumulation of liquid at the same or a neighbouring spot in the protoplasm. The liquid is separated at this point by an active process taking place in the protoplasm which probably is of an excretory nature, the separated water carrying with it nitrogenous waste-products. A similar active formation of vacuoles containing fluid is observed in a few instances (Arcella, some Amœbæ) where the protoplasm separates a gas instead of liquid, and the gas vacuole so produced ap- pears to serve a hydrostatic function.~~

~~Corpuscular and Amorphous Entoplastic Solids.—Con- cretions of undetermined nature are occasionally formed within the protoplasm of Protozoon cells, as are starch and nitrogenized concretions in tissue-cells (Lithamœba, Fig. V. conc.). But the most important corpuscular products after the nucleus, which we have already discussed, are chlorophyll corpuscles. These are (as in plants) concavo- convex or spherical corpuscles of dense protoplasm resem- bling that of the nucleus, which are impregnated superfi- cially with the green-coloured substance known as chloro- phyll. They multiply by fission, usually tetraschistic, independently~~

~~of the general protoplasm. They occur in representatives of many different groups of Protozoa (Pro- teomyxa, Heliozoa, Labyrinthulidea, Flagellata, Ciliata), Similar corpuscles or band-like structures coloured by other pigments are occa- sionally met with (Dinoflagellata).~~

~~Recently it has been maintained (Brandt, 5) that the chlorophyll corpuscles of Protozoa and other animals are parasitic Algz. But, though it is true that parasitic Algze occur in animal tissues, and that probably this is the nature of the yellow cells of Radiolaria, yet there seems to be no more justification for regarding the chlorophyll corpuscles of animal tissue-cells and of Protozoa as parasites than there is for so regarding the chlorophyll corpuscles of the leaves of an ordinary green plant.~~

~~Corpuscles of starch, paramylum, and other amyloid substances are commonly formed in the Flagellata, whose nutrition is to a large extent plant-like.~~

~~Entoplastic Fibres.—A fibrillation of the protoplasm of the Protozoon cell-body may be produced by differentia- tion of less and more dense tracts of the protoplasm itself. But as distinct from this we find horny fibres occasionally produced within the protoplasm (Heliozoa) having definite skeletal functions. The threads produced in little cavities in the superficial protoplasm of many Ciliate Protozoa, known as trichocysts, may be mentioned here.~~

~~Entoplastic Spicules. — Needle-like bodies consisting either of silica or of a horny substance (acanthin) are produced in the protoplasm of many Protozoa (Heliozoa, Radiolaria). These are known as spicules; they may be free or held together in groupsand arranged either radially or tangentially in reference to the more or less spherical~~

~~Re,~~

~~PRO TOA O &~~

~~A similar production of siliceous |~~

~~*body of the Protozoon. spicules is observed in thie tissue-cells of Sponges. Crys- tals of various chemical nature (silica, calcium carbonate, oxalate, &c.) are also frequently deposited in the protoplasm of the Protozoa, differing essentially from spicules in that their shape is due purely to crystallization.*~~

~~*GENERAL F'orRM OF THE Protozoon CELLt.—Those Proto- zoa Which have not a differentiated cortical substance, and are known as Gymnomyxa, present very generally an extreme irregularity of contour. Their protoplasm, being liquid rather than viscous, flows into the most irregular shapes. Their fundamental form when at rest is in many cases that of the sphere; others are discoidal or may be monaxial, that is to say, show a differentiation of one region or "end" of the body from the other. Frequently the protoplasm is drawn out into long threads or filaments which radiate uniformly from all parts of the spherical or discoidal cell-body or originate from one region to the exclusion of other parts of the surface.*~~

~~*These non-corticate Protozoa can take solid particles of food into their protoplasm, there to be digested in an extemporized "gastric vacuole," at any part or most parts of their superficies.*~~

~~*is everywhere freely exposed.*~~

~~*The corticate Protozoa have (with the exception of some parasites) one, and in the Acinetaria more than one, de- finite aperture in the cortical substance leading into the softer medullary protoplasm. This is the cell-mouth,—morphologically as distinct from the mouth of an Entero- zoon as is the hole in a drain pipe from the front door of a house, but physiologically subserving the same distinc- tively animal function as does the mouth of multicellular animals. The general form of the body is in these Proto- zoa oblong, with either monaxial symmetry, when the mouth is terminal, or bilateral symmetry, when the body is oblong and flattened and the mouth is towards one end of what becomes by its presence the " ventral" surface. Though the protoplasm is not nakedly exposed in irregular lobes and long filaments in these corticate Protozoa so as to pick up at all points such food-particles as may fall in its way, yet the protoplasm does in most Corticata project in one or more peculiarly modified fine hair-like processes from the otherwise smooth surface of the cell-body. These*~~

~~*processes are vibratile cilia, identical in character with the vibratile cilia of epithelial tissue-cells of Entero- zoa. They are essentially locomotor and current-produc- ing (therefore prehensile) organs, and, whilst unable to ingest solid food-particles themselves, serve to propel the organism in search of food and to bring food into the cell- mouth by the currents which they excite. Either a single vibratile filament is present, when it is called a flagellum, or a row or many rows of cilia are developed.*~~

~~*Constituent cells of the Enterozoa are well known which closely resemble some of the Gymnomyxa or non-corticate Protozoa in their general form. These are the colourless blood corpuscles or lymph corpyscles or phagocytes (Mecz- nikow, 6) which float freely in the blood and ingest solid particles at any part of their surface as do non-corticated Protozoa; they exhibit a similar irregularity and muta- bility of outline, and actually digest the particles which they take in. The endodermal digestive cells of some Enterozoa (Ccelentera and Planarians) are also naked proto- plasmic corpuscles and can take in solid food-particles.*~~

~~*No tissue-cells are known which present any close parallel to the mouth-bearing corticate Protozoa. The differentiation of the structure of a single cell has in these forms reached a very high degree, which it is not surpris- ing to find without parallel among the units which build up the individual of a higher order known as an Entero-*~~

~~*They have no permanent cell-mouth | leading into the soft protoplasm since that soft protoplasm | | ciliary movement are all exhibited by the protoplasm of*~~

~~*839*~~

~~*zoon. Cilia are developed on such cell-units (ciliated epithelium), but not used for the introduction of food- particles into the cell. In rare cases (the ciliated "' pots" of the vascular fluid of Sipunculus) they act so as to freely propel the ciliated cell through the liquid "blood" of the Enterozoon, as the cilia of a Protozoon propel it through water. An aperture in the cortical substance (or in the cuticular product) of a tissue-cell is sometimes to be observed, but is never (?) used for the ingestion of food. particles. Such an*~~

~~aperture occurs in unicellular glands, where it serves as the outlet of the secretion.~~

~~PHYSIOLOGY. Motion — As has just been hinted, the movement of~~

~~protoplasm, which in the tissue-cells of Enterozoa and~~

~~higher plants is combined and directed so as to produce effects in relation to the whole organism built up of countless cells, is seen in the Protozoa in a different relation, namely, as subserving the needs of the individual cell of which the moving protoplasm is the main sub- stance. The phenomena known in tissue-cells as "' stream- ing" (eg., in the cells of the hairs of Tradescantia), as local contraction and change of form (e «, in the corpuscles of the cornea), as muscular contraction, and as~~

~~the cell-body of Protozoa, with more or less constancy, and are intimately related to the processes of hunting, seizing, and ingesting food, and of the intercourse of the individuals of a species with one another and their evasion of hostile agencies. Granule streaming and the implied movement of currents in the protoplasm are seen in the filamentous protoplasm of the Heliozoa, Radiolaria, Reti- cularia, and Noctiluca, and in the cyclosis of the gastric vacuoles of Ciliata. Local contraction and change of form is seen best in the Amœbe and some Flagellata, where it results in locomotion. Definite muscular contraction is exhibited by the protoplasmic band in the stalk of Vorti- cella, by the leg-like processes of the Hypotrichous Ciliata, and by the cortical substance of some large Ciliata. Cili- ary movement ranging from the vibration of filaments of protoplasm temporarily evolved, up to the rhythmic beat of groups of specialized cilia, is observed in all groups of Protozoa in the young condition if not in the adult, and special varieties of ciliary movement and of cilia-like organs will be noted below. For an account of the con- ditions and character of protoplasmic movement generally which cannot be discussed in the present article the reader is referred to Engelmann (7).~~

~~The protoplasm of the cell-body of the Protozoa is drawn out into lobes and threads which are motile and are used as locomotive and prehensile organs. These processes are of two kinds, which are not present on the same cell and are not capable of transmutation, though there are excep- tions to both~~

~~of these statements. The one kind are termed “ pseudopodia,” and are either lobose or filamentous or branched and even reticular (Figs. 1V.and IX.). The Pro- tozoa which exhibit them are sometimes termed Myxopods. The other kind are cilia and flagella, and are simple threads which are alternately bent and straightened almost inces- santly during the life of the organism. These Protozoa are termed Mastigopods. Whilst the cilia and flagella are permanent organs, the pseudopodia vary greatly in char- acter; they are in some cases rapidly expanded and with- drawn in irregular form, and can hardly be said to be more than lobose protuberances of the flowing moving mass of protoplasm. In other cases they are comparatively per- manent stiff threads of protoplasm which can be contracted and can fuse with one another but rarely do so (Heliozoa, Radiolaria). Between these extreme forms of ‘“ pseudo- podia” there are numerous intermediate varieties, and the~~

~~836 rkO%s whole protoplasmic body of the Protozoon assume the form of a slowly changing network of threads of greater or less tenuity (Chlamydomyxa, Fig. V I). Nutrition.—Typically—that is to say, by determinate hereditary tendency—the Protozoa take solid food-particles into their protoplasm which form and occupy with the water surrounding them “gastric vacuoles i the protoplasm. The food-particle is digested in this vacuole, by what chemical processes is not ascertained. It has been shown~~

~~that the contents of the gastric vacuole give in some cases | LH1C1er | to point out that the range of chemical capacities is quite~~

~~as great as in the cells of the higher Enterozoa.~~

~~an acid reaction, and it is not improbable that free acid is secreted by the surrounding protoplasm. It is not known whether any ferment! is separated by the protoplasm, but it is probable from observations made on the digestive~~

~~may evel | appears, however, to be an excretory organ. | shown to rapidly excrete in a state of solution colouring matters (anilin blue) which have been administered with | food particles (8).~~

~~0OZ04~~

~~The contractile vacuole which exists in so many Protozoa It has been~~

~~No evidence has been adduced to show whether traces of nitrogenous waste-products are present in the water expelled by the contractile vacuole.~~

~~Chemical Metamorphosis.—The form which the various products of the activity of the Protozoon's protoplasm may assume has been noted above. It will be sufficient here~~

~~Chitin,~~

~~'cellulose, silicon, calcium carbonate, fats, pigments, and~~

~~process of Ccelentera (Actinize) that the ferment is not | separated, but that actual contact of the food-particle with |~~

~~the protoplasm is necessary for a "ferment influence" to be~~

~~exerted. The digestion of a food-particle by a Protozoon | is intra-cellular, and has been contrasted with the cavitary |~~

~~digestion of higher animals. In the latter, ferments and~~

~~acids are poured out by the cells bounding the enteric |~~

~~cavity into that space, and digestion is extra-cellular. In the lowest Enterozoa (many Coelentera and some Planarian worms) it has been shown that food-particles are actually taken up ina solid state by the soft protoplasm of the enteric cells and thus subjected to intra-cellular digestion. There appears to be a gradual transition from this process, in which close contact with living protoplasm is necessary that the solution of an albuminous food-particle may be effected, onwards to the perfectly free cavitary digestion by means of secretions accumulated in the enteron.~~

~~We have not yet any satisfactory observations on the chemistry of intra-cellular digestion either of Protozoa or of Ccelentera.~~

~~*Certain Protozoa which are parasitic do not take solid |*~~

~~*food particles; they (like higher parasites, such as the Tapeworms) live in the nutritious juices of other animals aud absorb these by their general surface in a liquid state. The Gregarine (Sporozoa), many Ciliata, &c., are in this case. Other Protozoa are known which are provided with chlorophyll corpuscles and do not take in solid food, but, apparently as a result of exceptional adaptation in which they differ from closely-allied forms, nourish themselves as do green plants. Such are the Volvocinean Flagellata and some of the Dinoflagellata. It has also been asserted that other Protozoa (viz., some Ciliata)—even some which possess a well-developed mouth—can (and experimentally have been made to) nourish themselves on nitrogenous compounds of a lower grade than albumens—such, for Instance, as ammonium tartrate. Any such assertions must be viewed with the keenest scepticism, since experi- mental demonstration of the absence of minute albuminous particles (eg., Bacteria) from a solution of ammonium tartrate in which Ciliate Protozoa are flourishing is a*~~

~~*Undigested food-remnants are expelled by the protoplasm*~~

~~*. a see cell either at any point of the surface or y the cell-mouth or by a special cell-a ili*~~

~~*coe Fig, XXLY. 29), y as} nus (some Ciliata,*~~

~~*Respiration and Excretion. —The protoplasm of the*~~

~~*Protozoa respires, that is, takes up oxygen and liberates |*~~

~~*carbonic acid, and can readily be shown experimentally to require a supply of oxygen for the manifestation of its activity. No special respiratory structures are developed in any Protozoa, and as a rule also the products of oxida- tion appear to be washed out and removed from the proto- plasm without the existence of any special apparatus.*~~

~~*1 The digestive ferment on*~~

~~*the plasmodium of the this subject Zopf (13),*~~

~~*pepsin has been detected by Krukenberg in ay raes Fuligo (flowers of tan). See on p. 88.*~~

~~*(| Spore-formation. matter of extreme difficulty and has not yet been effected. |*~~

~~*gases can be both deposited and. absorbed by it. Owing to the minuteness of the Protozoa, we are at present unable to recognize and do justice to the variety of chemical bodies*~~

~~*| which undoubtedly must play a part in their economy as*~~

~~*the result of the manufacturing activity of their pro- toplasm. See, however, Zopf (13), p. 71.*~~

~~*Growth and Reproduction.—The Protozoon cell follows the samie course as tissue-cells, in that by assimilation of*~~

~~*' nutriment its protoplasm increases in volume and reaches*~~

~~*a certain bulk, when its cohesion fails and the viscid droplet divides into two. The coefficient of cohesion varies in different genera and species, but sooner or later the disrupting forces lead to division, and thus to multi- plication of individuals or reproduction. The phenomena connected with the division of the nucleus (already alluded to) will be noticed in particular cases below.*~~

~~*Whilst simple binary division is almost without excep- tion a chief method of reproduction among the Protozoa, it is also very usual, and probably this would be found if our knowledge were complete to have few exceptions, that under given conditions the Protozoon breaks up rapidly into many (from ten to a hundred or more) little pieces, each of which leads an independent life and grows to the form and size of its parent. It will then multiply by binary division, some of the products of which division will in their turn divide into small fragments. The small fragments are called "spores." Usually the Protozoon before breaking up into spores forms a " cyst" (see above) around itself. Frequently, but not as a necessary rule, two (rarely three or more) Protozoon cell-individuals come together and fuse into one mass*~~

~~*before breaking up into spores. This process is known as "conjugation ;" and there can be no doubt that the physiological significance of the process is similar to that of sexual fertilization, namely, that the new spores are not merely fragments of an old individual but are something totally new inasmuch as they consist of a combination of the substance of indi- viduals who have had different life experiences.*~~

~~*Whilst spore-formation is not necessarily preceded by conjugation, conjugation is not necessarily followed by Among the Mycetozoa the young indi- viduals produced from spores conjugate at a very early period of growth in numbers and form " plasmodia," and after a considerable interval of feeding and growth the formation of spores takes place. Still more remarkable is*~~

~~*| the fact observed among the Ciliata where two individuals*~~

~~*conjugate and after a brief fusion and mixture of their respective protoplasm separate, neither individual (as far as certain genera at least are concerned) breaking up into spores, but simply resuming the process of growth and recurrent binary division with increased vigour.*~~

~~*There is certainly no marked line to be drawn between*~~

~~*_ reproduction by simple fission and reproduction by spore- | formation ; both are a more or less complete dividing of the parent protoplasm into separate masses; whether the*~~

~~*products of the first fission are allowed to nourish them- selves and grow before further fission is carried out or not*~~

~~*PRODROZO «A*~~

~~*does not constitute an essential difference. The fission of the Ciliate Protozoon, Opalina (see below Fig. XXIV. 4-8), is a step from the ordinary process of delayed binary divi- sion towards spore-formation. In some Protozoa spores are produced after encystation by a perfectly regular process of cleavage (comparable to the cleavage of the egg-cell of*~~

~~*Enterozoa) —first two, then four, then eight, sixteen, and thirty-two fission products being the result (see Fig. XX. 24, 25, &c.). :*~~

~~*But more usually there is a hastening of the process, and in these cases it is by no means clear what part the parent cell-nucleus takes. An encysted Gregarina (or two conjugated Gregarine) suddenly breaks up into a number of equal-sized spores, which do not increase in number by binary division and have not been formed by any such process. This multicentral segregation of the parent pro- toplasm is a marked development of the phenomenon of sporulation and remote from ordinary cell-division. How it is related to ordinary cell-division is not known, inas- much as the changes undergone by the nucleus in this rapid multicentral segregation of the parent protoplasm have not been determined. The spores of Protozoa may be naked or encased singly or in groups in little en- velopes, usually of a firm horny substance (see Fig. XX. 23 to 26, and Fig. XXIV. 15 to 18). Whenever the whole or a part of a Protozoon cell divides rapidly into a number of equal-sized pieces which are simultane- ously set free and are destined to reproduce the adult form, the term spore is applied to such pieces, but the details of their formation may vary and also those of their subsequent history. In typical cases each spore produced as the result of the fission of an encysted Protozoon (con- jugated or single) has its own protective envelope, as in the Mycetozoa (Fig. III.) and the Sporozoa (Fig. XVIIT.), from which the contained protoplasm escapes by " ger- mination " as a naked corpuscle either flagellate or ameebi- form. In some terminologies the word "spore" is limited to such a "coated" spore, but usually the naked proto- plasmic particles which issue from such "coated " spores, or are formed directly by the rapid fission of the parent Protozoon, are also called "spores." The former condition is distinguished as a "chlamydospore," whilst the latter are termed " gymnospores." Many Protozoa produce gymno- spores directly by the breaking up of their protoplasm, and these are either " flagellule" (swarm-spores) or '"' amce- bulz " (creeping spores). The production of coated spores is more usual among the lower plants than it is among Protozoa, but is nevertheless a characteristic feature of the Gregarin (Sporozoa) and of the Mycetozoa. The term "gemma" or "bud-spore" is applied to cases, few in number, where (as in Acinetaria, Fig. XXVL, Spiro- chona, Fig. XXIII. 10, and Reticularia, Fig. X. 8) the spores are gradually nipped off from the parent-cell one or*~~

~~more at a time. This process differs from ordinary cell-division only in the facts (1) that the products of division are of unequal size—the parent-cell being distin- guishable as the larger and more complete in structure, and (2) that usually the divi8ion is not binary, but more than one bud-spore is produced at a time.~~

~~Whilst in the binary cell-division of the Protozoa the two products are usually complete in structure at the period of separation, spores and spore-buds are not only of small size and therefore subject to growth before attaining the likeness of the parent, but they are also very often of simple and incomplete structure. The gap in this respect between the young spore and its parent necessarily varies according to the complexity of the parental form.~~

~~In the case of the Radiolaria, of the Gregarine, of Noctiluca, and of the Acinetaria, for instance, the spore has before it a considerable process of development in~~

~~structure and not merely of growth, before attaining the adult characters. Hence there is a possible embryology of the Protozoa, to the study of which the same prin- ciples are applicable as are recognized in the study of the embryology of Enterozoa. Embryonic forms of great sim- plicity of structure, often devoid of nucleus, and cousist- ing of simple elongate particles of protoplasm, are hatched from the spore-cases of the Gregarine (Fig. XVII. 13, 14)~~

~~These gradually acquire a differentiated cortical protoplasm and a nucleus. A very large number of Gymnomyxa pro- duce spores which are termed "monadiforni," that is, have a single or sometimes two filaments of vibratile protoplasm extended from their otherwise structureless bodies. By the lashing of these flagella the spores (swarm-spores or zoospores) are propelled through the water. 'The resem- blance of these nonadiform young (best called "flagel- lulee") to the adult forms known as Flagellata has led to the suggestion that we have in them a case of recapitula- tive development, and that the ancestors of the Gymno- myxa were Protozoa similar to the Flagellata. Again the Acinetaria produce spores which are~~

~~*uniformly clothed with numerous vibratile cilia (Fig. XXVI-), although the adults are entirely devoid of such structures; this is accounted for by the supposition that the Acinetaria have been developed from ancestors like the Ciliata, whose characters are thus perpetuated in their embryonic stages. There can be little doubt that these embryological sugges- tions are on the whole justified, and that the nucleated Protozoa are the descendants of non-nucleated forms simi- lar to the spores of Gymnomyxa and Sporozoa, whilst it seems also extremely probable that the ancestral Protozoa were neither exclusively amoeboid in the movement of their protoplasm nor provided with permanent vibratile filaments (flagella and cilia); they were neither Myxopods nor Mastigopods (to use the terms which have been intro- duced to express this difference in the character of the locomotor processes), but the same individuals were capable of throwing out their protoplasm sometimes in the form of flowing lobes and networks, sometimes in the form of vibratile flagella. A few such undifferentiated forms exist at the present day among the Proteomyxa and in a little more advanced condition among the lowest Flagellata, ¢.7., Ciliophrys.*~~

~~*Death.—It results from the constitution of the Proto- zoon body as a single cell and its method of multiplication by fission that death has no place as a natural recurrent phenomenon among these organisms. Among the Entero-zoa certain cells are separated from the rest of the consti- tuent units of the body as egg-cells and sperm-cells ; these conjugate and continue to live, whilst the remaining cells, the mere carriers as it were of the immortal reproductive cells, die and disintegrate. There being no carrying cells which surround, feed, and nurse the reproductive cells of Protozoa, but the reproductive cell being itself and alone the individual Protozoon, there is nothing to die, nothing to be cast off by the reproductive cell when entering on a new career of fission. 'The bodies of the higher animals which die may from this point of view be regarded as something temporary and non-essential, destined merely to carry for a time, to nurse, and to nourish the more import- ant and deathless fission-products of the unicellular egg. Some of these fission-products of the new individual de- veloped from an egg-cell—namely, the egg-cells and sperm- cells—are as immortal as the unicellular Protozoon, This method of comparing the unicellular and the multicellular organism is exceedingly suggestive, and the conception we*~~

thus gain of the individuality of the Enterozoon throws light upon the phenomena of reproduction and heredity in those higher organisms.

Experiment and observation in this matter are extremely

difficult ; but we have no reason to suppose that there is any inherent limit to the process of nutrition, growth, and fission, by which continuously the Protozoa are propagated. The act of conjugation from time to time confers upon the protoplasm of a given line of descent new properties, and apparently new vigour. Where it is not followed by a breaking up of the conjugated cells into spores, but by separation and renewed binary fission (Ciliata), the result is described simply as "rejuvenescence." The protoplasm originated by the successive division of substance traceable to one parent cell has become specialized, and in fact too closely adapted to one series of life-conditions ; a fusion of substance with another mass of protoplasm equally specialized, but by experience of a somewhat differing character, imparts to the resulting mixture a new com- bination of properties, and the conjugated individuals on separation start once more on their deathless career with renewed youth.

CLASSIFICATION OF THE PROTOZOA.

In attempting a scheme of classification it would be most in accordance with the accepted probabilities of the ancestral history of the Protozoa to separate altogether those forms devoid of a nucleus from those which possess one, and to regard them as a lower " grade" of evolution or differentiation of structure.

By some systematists, notably Biitschli (9), the presence or absence of a nucleus has not been admitted as a basis of classifica- tory distinction, whilst on the other hand both Haeckel (1) and Huxley (10) have insisted on its importance.

The fact is that during recent years many of those Protozoa which were at one time supposed to be devoid of nucleus even in a rudimentary form, and furnished therefore the tangible basis for a lowest group of " Protozoa

~~*Homogenea" or '"' Monera," have been shown by the application of improved methods of microscopic investigation to possess a nuclens, that is to say, a differentiated corpuscle of denser protoplasm lying within the general protoplasm, and capable when the organism is killed by alcohol or weak acids of taking up the colour of various dyes (such as carmine and heematoxylin) more readily and permanently than is the general protoplasm. In such cases the nucleus may be very small and exhibit none of the typical structure of larger nuclei. 'It is usually surrounded by a clear (z.e., non-granular) halo of the general protoplasm which assists the observer in its detection. Nuclei have been discovered in many Reticularia (Foraminifera), a group in which they were supposed to be wanting, by Schultze (11) and the Hertwigs (12) and more recently in the Mycetozoa and in Vampyrella and Protomonas (Zopf, 18), where so excellent an observer as Cienkowski had missed them.*~~

~~*It seems therefore not improbable that a nucleus is present though not observed in Protomyxa, Myxastrum, and other similar forms which have been by Haeckel and others classed as " Monera " or " Homogenea." The recently described (14) Archerina (Fig. II. 8, 11) certainly possesses no nucleus in the usual sense of that term, but it is possible that the chlorophyll-coloured corpuscles of that organism should be considered as actually representing the nucleus. Whilst then refraining from asserting that there are no existing Protozoa devoid of nucleus corresponding in this character with non-nucleate Protophyta, such as the Bacteria, we shall not in our scheme of classification institute a group of Homogenea, but shall leave the taking of that step until it has been shown after critical examination that those forms now regarded by some observers as Homogenea are really so.- In the meantime these forms will find their places alongside of the Nucleata most nearly allied to them in other characters,*~~

~~*The Protozoa with a definite permanent cortical substance of differentiated protoplasm are undoubtedly to be regarded as evolved from forms devoid of such differentiation of their substance, and we accordingly take this feature as the indication of a primary division of the Protozoa.! The lower grade, the Gymnomyxa, afford in other respects evidence of their being nearly related to the ancestral forms from which the Corticata (the higher grade)*~~

have developed. _.The Gymnomyxa all or nearly all, whilst exhibiting amceboid movement and the flowing of their protoplasm into "' pseudopodia " of very varied shapes, produce spores which swim by means of one or two flagella of vibratile protoplasm (monadiform young or flagellule). These flagellate young forms

1 The "exoplasm" and " by some authors are not dis tinuous substance— what wa ternal at another, them,

endoplasm" described in Ameebe, &e., tinct layers but one and the same con- $ internal at one moment becoming ex- no really structural difference existing between

PROTUAV:A

are closely related to the Flagellata, a group of the Corticata from which it seems probable that the Dinoflagellata, the Ciliata, and the Acinetaria have been derived. The Gymnomyxa themselves cannot, on account of the small number of structural features which they offer as indications of affinity and divergence in genetic relationships inter se, be classified with anything like confidence in a genealogical system. We are obliged frankly to abandon the attempt to associate some of the simpler forms with their nearest genetic allies and to content ourselves with a more or less artificial system, which is not, however, artificial in so far as its main groups are concerned. Thus the genetic solidarity of each of the large classes Heliozoa, Reticularia, Mycetozoa, and Radiolaria is not open to question. The Lobosa on the other hand appear to be a more artificial assemblage, and it is difficult to say that genetically there is any wide separation between them and the Mycetozoa or between the Mycetozoa and some of the simpler forms which we bring together under the class Proteomyxa.

The scheme of classification which we adopt is the following :—

PROTOZOA. GraDE A. GYMNOMYXA.

Class I. ProrEoMYXA. Ex. Vampyrella, Protomyxa, Archerina. Class II. M e ' ass I]. Mycerozoa. Ex. The Lu-mycetozoa of Zopf. \ Class I1I. Logosa. Ex. Ameba, Arcella, Pelomyxa. Class IV. LABYRINTHULIDEA. (Kx.

~~*Labyriuthula, Chlamydomyxa. | Class V. HEL10zZ0A. Filosa j Ex. Actinophrys, Raphidiophrys, Clathrulina. ee Class VI. ReticuLaRia. Ex. Gromia, Lituola, Astrorhiza, Globigerina. | ; Class VII. RapIoLaRiA. \ Ex. Thalassicolla, Eucyrtidium, Aecanthometra.*~~

~~*GRADE B. CORTICATA. (Class I. Sporozoa. Ex. Gregarina, Coccidium. (Class II. FLAGELLATA. | Ex. Monas, Salpingeca, Euglena, Volvor. Class II]. DINOFLAGELLATA. Ex. Prorocentrum, Ceratium. Class IV. RHYNCHOFLAGELLATA. Ex. Noctiluca. Class V. CILIATA. Ex. Vorticella, Paramecium, Stentor. ; Class VI. ACINETARIA. { Ex. Acineta, Dendrosoma. The genetic relationships which probably obtain among these groups may be indicated by the following diagram :—*~~

~~*Sections. Proteana. Plasmodiata. Lobosa.*~~

~~*Lipostoma.*~~

~~*Stomato- phora.*~~

~~*Class Acinetaria.*~~

~~*Class Rhyncho-dagellata.*~~

~~*Class Dino-flagellata.*~~

~~*a Class Ciliata.*~~

~~*< = &*~~

~~*oe*~~

~~*2)*~~

~~*o Class Sporozoe.*~~

~~*&*~~

~~*e Class Flagellata.*~~

~~*BE} oS*~~

~~*Class Class*~~

~~*‘ Mycetwzoa. Heliozoa. od Class Class ee Labyrinthulidea.\ Class Proteomyxa, Reticularia. = \ * 2) 2 Class Ss Lobosa. Radiolaria. a jes] CPs Gide*~~

~~*< WMW/Z*~~

~~*s (Protonucleata.)*~~

~~*:┤*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*mH*~~

~~*Homogenea.*~~

~~*Literature.—Certain works of an older date dealing with micro- Scople organisms, and therefore including many Protozoa, have historical interest. Among these we may cite O. F. Miiller, Animaleula Infusoria, 1786 ; Ehrenberg, Infusionsthierchen, 1838;*~~

~~*PROTEOMYXA.* |~~

~~*Dujardin, Histoire naturelle des Infusoires, 1841 ; Pritehard, Jn- JSusoria, 1857.*~~

~~*The general questions relating to protoplasm and to the consti- tution of the Protozoon body as a single cell are dealt with in the following more recent treatises:—Max Schultze, Ueber den Organ- ismus der Polythalamien, 1854, and Ueber das Protoplasma der Rhizopoden und Pflanzenzellen, 1863 , and Engelmann, article " Pro- toplasma" in Hermann's Handworterbuch der Physiologie, 1880.*~~

~~*Special works of recent date in which the whole or large groups of Protozoa are dealt with in a systematic manner with illustra- tions of the chief known forms are the following :—Biitschli, " Pro- tozoa," in Bronn's Classen und Ordnungen des Thierreichs, a comprehensivé and richly illustrated treatise now in course of publication, forming the most exhaustive account of the subject matter of the present article which has been attempted (the writer desires to express his obligation to this work, from the plates of which a large proportion of the woodcut figures here introduced have been selected); W. S. Kent, Manual of the Infusoria, 1882— an exhaustive treatise including figures and descriptions of all species of Flagellata, Dinoflagellata, Ciliata, aud Acinetaria ; Stein, Der Organismus der Infusionsthiere, 1867-1882; Haeckel, Die Radiolarien, 1862; Archer, '"' Résumé of recent contributions to our knowledge of freshwater Rhizopoda," Quart. Jour. of Micro- seopical Science, 1876-77; Zopf, " Pilztniere" (Mycetozoa), in Encyklopidie der Naturwissenschaften, Breslau, 1884.*~~

~~*We shall now proceed to consider the classes and orders of Protozoa in detail.*~~

~~*PROTOZOA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Organisms consisting of a single cell or of a group of cells not differentiated into two or more tissues ; incapable of assimilating nitrogen in its diffusible compounds (ammonia or nitrates) or carbon in the form of carbonates, except in special instanees which there is reason to regard as directly derived from allied forms not possessing this capacity.*~~

~~*The food of the Protozoa is in consequence as a rule taken in the form of particles into the protoplasm either by a specialized mouth or by any part of the naked cell-substance, there to be digested and rendered diffusible.*~~

~~*Grave A. GYMNOMYXA, Lankester, 1878 (64).*~~

~~*Characters. —Protozoa in which the cell-protoplasm is entirely or partially exposed to the surrounding medium, during the active vegetative phase of the life-history, as a naked undifferentiated slime or viscous fluid, which throws itself into processes or "nseudopodia" of various form either rapidly changing or relatively constant. Food can be taken into the protoplasm in the form of solid particles at any point of its surface or at any point of a large exposed area. The distinction into so-called "exoplasm" and "endoplasm" recognized by some authors, is zot founded on a permanent differentiation of substance corresponding to the cortical and medullary substance of Corticata, but is merely due to the centripetal aggregation of granules lying in a uniform undiffer- entiated protoplasm. 'The cell-individual exhibits itself under four phases of growth and development—(1) as a swarm-spore (monadiform young or flagellula) ; (2) as an ameeba form ; (8) as constituent of a plasmodium or eell-fusion or conjugation ; (4) as a eyst, which may be a flagellula(Schwdrme)-producing cyst, an amebula-producing cyst, a covered-spore(chlainydospore)-producing eyst (sporocyst sens. stric., Zopf), or a simple resting cyst which does not exhibit any fission of its contents (hypnoeyst). Any one of these phases may be greatly predominant and specialized whilst the others are relatively unimportant and rapidly passed through.*~~

~~*Onass I. PROTEOMYXA, Lankester.*~~

~~*Characters. -Gymnomyxa which exhibit in the ameba phase various forms of pseudopodia often-changing in the same individual, and do not produce elaborate spore eysts; hence they are not re- ferable to any one of the subsequent six classes. Mostly minute forms, with small inconspicuous nucleus (absent in some ?).*~~

~~*A division into orders and families is not desirable, the group being confessedly an assemblagesof negatively characterized or insnfliciently*~~

~~*known forms.*~~

~~*Genera.—Vampyrella, Cienkowski (15); Vampyrellidiwm, Zopf (18); Spirophora, Zopf (=Amaba radiosa, Perty) ; Haplococeus, Zopf ; Leptophrys, Hertwig and Lesser (16) ; Endyomena, Zopf ; Bursulla, Sorokin (17); Jfyxastrwm, Haeckel (1); Enteromyxa, Cienkowski (18); Colpodella, Cienkowski (19); Pseudospora, Cien- kowski (20); Protomonas, Cienkowski (15); Diplophysalis, Zopf (18); Gymnococcus, Zopf; Aphelidium, Zopf; Pseudosporidium, Zopf ; Protomyaa, Haeckel (1); Plasmodiophora, Woronin (21); Tetramyxa, Gobel (22); Gloidiwm, Sorokin (28) ; Gymnophrys, Cienkowski (24); Myzxodietywm, Hacckel (1); Boderia, Wright (25); Biomyxa, Leidy (92) ; Protogenes, Haeckel (1) ; Protameba, Haeckel (1); Nwelearia, Cienkowski (26); Afonobia, Aim. Schneider (27) ; Archerina, Lankester (14). e*~~

~~*The forms here brought together include several genera (the*~~

~~*PROTO? O &*~~

~~*839*~~

~~*first nineteen) referred by Zopf to the Mycetozoa, some again (Vampyrella, Myxastrum, Nuclearia, Monobia) which are by Biitschli associated with the Heliozoa, others (Protamceba, Gloidium) referred by the same authority to the Lobosa (Amcebea) and others (Colpodella, Protomonas) which might be grouped with the lower Flagellata. By grouping them in the manner here adopted we are enabled to characterize those higher groups more satisfactorily and to give a jnst expression to our present want of that knowledge of the life-history both of these forms and of the higher Gymnomyxa which when it is obtained may enable us to disperse this hetero- geneous class of Proteomyxa. The gronp has the same function in relation to the other classes of Gymnomyxa which the group Vermes has been made to discharge in relation to the better defined phyla of the Metazoa ; it is a lumber-room in which obscure, lowly- developed, and insufficiently known forms may be kept until they can be otherwise dealt with.*~~

~~*It is true that, thanks to the researches of Continental botanists (especially Cienkowski and Zopf), we know the life-history of several of these organisms; but we are none the less unable to con- nect them by tangible characteristics with other Gymnomyxa.*~~

~~*Nearly all of the above-named genera are parasitic rather than "voracious," that is to say, they feed on the organized products of larger organisms both 'plants and animals (Haplococcus is parasitic in the muscles of the pig), into whose tissues they penetrate, and do not, except in a few eases (Protomyxa, Vampyrella), engulph whole organisms, such as Diatoms, &c., in their protoplasm. Many live upon and among the putrefying debris of other orgallisms (c.g., rotting vegetable stems and leaves, excrements of animals), and like the Mycetozoa exert a digestive action upon the substances with which they come in contact comparable to the putrefying and fermentative activity of the Schizomycetes (Bacteria).*~~

~~*Fig. II. illustrates four chief genera of Proteomyxa.*~~

~~*Protomyxa aurantiaca was described by Haeckel (1), who found it on shells of Spirnla on the coast of the Canary Islands, in the form of orange yellow flakes consisting of branching and reticular protoplasm nourishing itself by the ingestion of Diatoms and Peridinia. This condition is not a simple ameba phase but a "plasmodium" formed by the union of several young ameebe. The plasmodium under certain conditions draws itself together into a spherical form-and secretes a clear membranous cyst around itself, and then breaks up into some hundreds of flagellule or swarin- spores (Fig. 11. 2). The diameter of the cyst is "12 to '2 millimetre. The flagellule subsequently escape (Fig. II. 3) and swim by the*~~

~~*vibratile movement of one end which is drawn out in the form of a*~~

~~*coarse flagellum. phase (Fig. II. 4).*~~

~~*The swarm-spore now passes into the ameeba Several of the small ameebe creeping on the*~~

~~*surface of the spirula-shell then unite with one another and form a plasmodium which continues to nonrish itself by " voracious " inception of*~~

~~*Diatoms and other small organisms.*~~

~~*The plasmodia may attain a diameter of one millimetre and be visible by the naked eye.*~~

~~*A nucleus was not observed by Haeckel in the spores nor in the amœba phase, nor scattered nuclei in the plasmodium, but it is not improbable that they exist and escaped detection in the living con- dition, in consequence of their not being searched for by methods of staining, &c., which have since come into use. A contractile vacuole does not exist.*~~

~~*Vampyrella spirogyre, Cienkowski (Fig. II. 5, 6, 7), is one of several species assigned to the genus Vampyrella, all of which feed upon the living cells of plants. The nucleus previously stated to be absent has been detected by Zopf (18). There is no con- tractile vacuole. The amœba phase has an actinophryd character (i.e., exhibits fine radiating psendopodia resembling those of the sun-animalcule, Actinophrys, one of the Heliozoa). This species feeds exclusively upon the contents of the cells of Spirogyra, effect- ing an entrance through the cell-wall (Fig. IL. 5), sucking out the contents, and then creeping on to the next cell. In some species of Vampyrella as many as four amœba-individuals have been observed to fuse to forma small plasmodium. Cysts are formed which enclose in this species a single amœba-individual. The cyst often acqnires a second or third inner cyst menibrane by the shrinking of the protoplasmic body after the first encystment and the subsequent formation of a new membrane. The encysted pro- toplasm sometimes merely divides into four parts each of which creeps out of the cyst as an Actinophrys-like amœba (Fig. II. 'Ciel other instances it forms a dense spore, the product of which is not known.*~~

~~*Protogenes primordialis is the name given by Haeckel to a very simple form with radiating filamentous pseudopodia which he observed in sea-water. It appears to be the same organism as that deserihed and figured by Max Schultze as Amwba porrecta. Schultze's figure is copied in Fig. II. 12. No nucleus and no con- tractile vacuole is observed in this form. It feeds voraciously on smaller organisms. Its life-history has not been followed over even a few steps. Hence we must for the present doubt altogether as to its true affinities. Possibly it is only a detached portion of the protoplasm of a larger nucleate Gymnomyxon, The same kind of*~~

is justified i °s Pre imitiva, which doubt is justified in regard to Haeckel's Pi otameeba primitiva, 2 ba cried by hin "in pond water and differs from Protogenes n having lobose pseudopodia, whilst agreeing with it in absence of nuclei, contractile vacuoles, and other differentiation of structure.

‘ ‘

ŕ

ŕ

Fre. I1.—Various Proteomyxa 1. Protom f J 2 s yxa aurantiaca, Haeckel—modium phase. The naked protoplasm shows branched, reticulate ct Bo ——=. and numerous non-contractile vacuoles. It is in the act of en- = mt ing a Ceratium. Shells of engulphed Ciliata (Tintinnabula) are embedded

ean signs! tinea svete e,and " ech ee a. The onploms (though ‘ Y is drawing. . Cyst phase of Vampyrella. Th contents of the cyst have divided into four e 1 par i ‘ | visible. One is commencing to break its wa thi "i " ae Be bso: particles. 8. Archerina Boltoni Lenbesiar a ad bias en Mea protoplasm, and three groups of chloroph jheore a ae pAaace engulphing a Bacterium 7. 9. Cyst pbane Of kacherion hfs site ies ail; ee ; ee as : a. a, spinous cyst- :

puseles. 12. Prot rimordialis, Hi from Schultze's f seg primordialis, Haeckel (Ameba porrecta, M. Schultze),

The structureless protoplasmic network described by Haeckel

PROTOZOA

[PROTEOMYXa.

from spirit-preserved specimens of Atlantic ooze and identified b him with Huxley's (28) Bathybius, as also the similar network described by Bessels (29) as Protobathybius, must be regarded for the present as insufficiently known. ;

~~*It is possible that these appearances observed in the ooze dredged from great depths in the Atlantic are really due to simple Protozoa. On the other hand it has been asserted by Sir Wyville Thomson, who at one time believed in the independent organic nature of Bathybius, that the substance taken for protoplasm by both Huxley and Haeckel is in reality a gelatinous precipitate of calcium sulphate thrown down by the action of alcohol upon sea-water. Other naturalists have pointed to the possibility of the protoplasmic network which Bessels studied in the living condition on board ship being detached portions of the protoplasm of Reticularia and Radiolaria. The matter is one which requires further investigation.*~~

~~*Archerina Boltoni is the name given by Lankester (14) to a very simple Gymnomyxon inhabiting freshwater ponds in company with Desmids and other simple green Alge (Fig. II. 8 to 11). Archerina exhibits an amceba phase in which the protoplasm is thrown into long stiff filaments (Fig. II. 11), surrounding a spherical central mass about z5;th inch in diameter (actinophryd form). A large vacuole (non-contractile) is present, or two or three small ones. No nucleus can be detected by careful use of reagents in this or other phases. The protoplasm has been seen to ingest solid food particles (Bacteria) and to assume a lobose form. 'The most striking characteristic of Archerina is the possession of chlorophyll corpuscles. In the actinophryd form two oval green-coloured bodies (2, b) are seen. As the protoplasm increases by nutrition the chlorophyll corpuscles multiply by quaternary division (Fig. Il. 10) and form groups of four or of four sets of four symmetrically arranged. The division of the chlorophyll corpuscles is not necessarily followed by that of the protoplasm, and accordingly specimens are found with many chlorophyll corpuscles embedded ina large growth of protoplasm (Fig. II. 8) ; the growth may increase to a considerable size, numbering some hundreds of chlorophyll corpuscles, and a proportionate development of protoplasm. Such a growth is not a plasmodium, that is to say, is not formed by fusion of independent amceba forms, but is due to continuous growth. When nutrition fails the individual chlorophyll corpuscles separate, each carrying with it an investment of protoplasm, and then each such amceba form forms a cyst around itself which is covered with short spines (Fig. II. 9). The cysts are not known to give rise to spores, but appear to be merely hypnocysts. ;*~~

~~*The domination of the protoplasm by the chlorophyll corpuscles is very remarkable and unlike anything known in any other organism. Possibly the chlorophyll corpuscles are to be regarded as nuclei, since it is known that there are distinct points of affinity between the dense protoplasm of ordinary nuclei and the similarly dense protoplasm of normal chlorophyll corpuscles.*~~

~~*Ciass II]. MYCETOZOA, De Bary.*~~

~~*Characeters.—Gymnomyxa which, as an exception to all other Protozoa, are not inhabitants of water but occur on damp surfaces exposed to the air. They are never parasitic, as are some of the Proteomyxa most nearly allied to them (Plasmodiophora, &c.), but feed on organic debris. They are structurally characterized by the fact that the ameeba forms, which develop either directly or through flagellnle from their spores, always form large, sometimes very large, i.e, of several square inches area, fusion plasmodia (or rarely aggregation plasmodia), and that the spores are always chlamydospores (¢.e., provided with a coat) and are formed either in naked groups of definite shape (sori) or on the surface of peculiar columns (conidiophors) or in large fruit-like cysts which enclose the whole or a part of the plasmodinm and develop besides the spores definite sustentacular structures (capillitium) holding the spores in a mesh-work. :*~~

~~*Three orders of Mycetozoa are distinguishable according to the arrangement of the spores in more or less complex spore-fruits.*~~

~~*OrpvER 1. SOROPHORA, Zopf.*~~

~~*Characters.—Mycetozoa which never exhibit a vibratile (monadi- form) swarmspore or flagellula phase, but hatch from the spore as ameebe. A true fusion plasmodium is not formed, but an aggrega- gation plasmodium by the contact without fusion of numerous amceba forms. The spore fruit is a naked aggregation of definitely arranged encysted amcebe called a sorus, not enclosed in a common capsule ; each encysted amceba has the value of a single spore and sets free on germination a singleamebula. They inhabit the dung of various animals.*~~

~~*Genera.—Copromyxa, Zopf; Cynthulina, Cienk. ; Déetyosteliwm, Brefeld ; Acrasis, Van Tieghem ; Polyspondylium, Brefeld.*~~

~~*OrDER 2. ENDOSPOREA, Zopf.*~~

~~*Characters.—Mycetozoa always passing through the flagellula phase and always forming true plasmodia by fusion of ameeba forms. The spore-fruit is in the form of a large cyst which encloses a quantity of the plasmodium ; the latter then breaks up into (a)*~~

~~*MYCETOZOA. |*~~

~~*spores (one corresponding to each nucleus of the enclosed_plas- | modium) each of which has a cellulose coat, and (0) a capillitium | of threads which hold the spores together. Each spore (chlamydo- | spore) liberates on germination a single nucleated flagellula, which develops into an amcebula, which in turn fuses with other aimceebule to form the plasmodium. The Endosporea are essentially dwellers on rotten wood and such vegetable refuse.*~~

~~*Fig. I11].—Mycetozoa (after De Bary). 1-6. Germination of spore (1) of Trichea varia, showing the emerging ‘“ flagellula” (4, 5), and its conversion into an “ameebula” (6). 7-18. Series leading from spore to plasmodium phase of Chondrioderma difforme:—7, spore; 10, flagellula; 12, amcebula; 14, apposi- tion of two amcebule ; 15-17, fusions; 18, plasmodium. 19, 20, Spore-fruit (cyst) of Physarum leucopheum, Fr. (Xx 25), the former from the surface, the latter in section with the spores removed to show the sustentaeular network or eapillitium. 21. Section of the spore-cyst of Didymium squamulosum, with the spores removed to show the radiating capillitium x and the stalk.*~~

~~*Sub-order 1. Prrirricura, Zopf. » 40]*~~

~~*Fam. 1. CLATHROPTYCHIACEA, Rostafinski.*~~

~~*Genera.—Clathroptychium, Rost. ; Enteridiwm, Ehr. Fam. 2. CRIBRARIACES.*~~

~~*Genera.—Dietydiwm, Pers. ; Cribraria, Pers.*~~

~~*Sub-order 2. EXNDOTRICHEA, Zopf.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. PHYSAREA.*~~

~~*Genera.—Physarwm, Pers.; Cratertwm, Trentepol; Badhamia, Berkeley; Zeoearpus, Link.; Tilmadoche, Fr.; Fuligo (4ithalium), Hall; dthaliopsis, Z.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. DipyMIACEs.*~~

~~*Genera.—Didymiwm; Lepidoderma, De Bary. Fam. 3. SPUMARIACE.*~~

~~*Genera.—Spumaria, Pers. ; Diaehea, Fries. Fam. 4. STEMONITEA.*~~

~~*Genera.—Stemonitis, Gleditsch ; Comatricha, Preuss ; Lam-*~~

~~*proderma, Rost.*~~

~~*Fam. 5. ENERTHENEMEA.*~~

~~*Genera.—Hnerthema, Bowman. Fam. 6. RETICULARIACEA, Zopf.*~~

~~*Genera.—Amaurochete, Rost. ; Reticularia, Bull. Fam. 7. TRICHINACES,*~~

~~*Genera.—Hemiareyria, Rost. ; Trichia, Hall. Fam. 8, ARCYRIACES.*~~

~~*Genera.—Areyria, Hall; Cornuvia, Rost.; Lyeogala, Ehr. Fam. 9. PERICHENACES.*~~

~~*Genera.—Periehana, Fries. ; Lachnobolus, Fries.*~~

~~*Fam. 10. Lickaera.*~~

~~*Genera.—JLieea, Schrader ; Fries. ; Z'ubulifera, Zopf.*~~

~~*ORDER 8. EXOSPOREA, Zopf.*~~

~~*Characters.—The ehlamydospore liberates an amcebula in the first instance, which develops into a flagellula. This subsequently returus to the amceba form, and by fusion with other amcebule it forms a true fusion plasmodium. The spores are not produced within a eyst but upon the surface of eolumn-like up-growths of the plasmodium, each spore (conidum) forming as a little spherical out- growth attached to the column (conidiophor) by a distinet pedicle.*~~

~~*Sole Genus.—Ceratium. [This name must be changed, since it was already applied to a genus of Dinoflagellata, when Famintzin and Woronin gave it to this Myeetozoon.]*~~

~~*Tubulina, Pers.; Lindbladia,*~~

~~*Further Remarks on Myeetozoa.—About two hundred species of Myeetozoa have been deseribed. Botanists, and especially those who oceupy themselves with Fungi, have accumulated the very large*~~

~~*PROT@ZO A*~~

~~*_ of eell-conjugation. | Proteomyxa; but among the other Gymnomyxa, excepting Myceto-*~~

~~*| undifferentiated protoplasm available for such study. | is referred to Zopf's admirable treatise (13) as to these matters, and*~~

~~*841*~~

~~*mass of facets now known in reference to®these organisms ; never- theless the most eminent botanist who has done more than any other to advance our knowledge of Myeetozoa, namely, De Bary, has expressed the view that they are to be regarded rather as animals than as plants. The fact is that, once the question is raised, it*~~

~~*' becomes as reasonable to relegate all the Gymnomyxa without*~~

~~*exception to the vegetable kingdom as to do so with the Myeetozoa.*~~

~~*| Whatever course we take with the latter, we must take also with*~~

~~*the Heliozoa, the Radiolaria, and the Reticularia.*~~

~~*The formation of plasmodia, for which the Mycetozoa are conspicu- ous, appears to be a particular instance of the general phenomenon Small plasmodia are formed by some of the*~~

~~*zoa, and among Corticate Protozoa, the fusion of two individuals (conjugation sensw strieto) is more usual than the fusion of several. Zopf (18) has attempted to distinguish arbitrarily between conjuga- tion and plasmodium formation by asserting that in the former the nuelei of the cells which fuse are also fused, whereas in the latter process the nuelei retain their independence. Both state- ments are questionable. What happens to the nucleus in suehi conjugations as those of the Gregarine has not yet been made out, whilst it is only quite recently that Strasburger (30) has shown that the plasmodia of Myeetozoa contain numerous scattered nuelei, and it is not known that fusion does not oecur between some of these. There is no doubt that the nuelei of plasmodia multiply by fission, though we have no detailed aceount of the process.*~~

~~*The Sorophora are exceptional in that the amcebe which unite to form a cell-colony in their ease do not actually fuse but only remain in close contact ; with this goes the fact that there are no large spore-cysts, but an identification of spore and spore-eyst. The aimcehee arrange themselves in stalked clusters (sori), and each be- eomes eneysted: one may, in this case, consider the eyst equally as a spore or as a spore-cyst which produces but a single spore. The amcebee described by various writers as inhabiting the alimentary canal and the dung of higher animals (including man) belong to this group. The form described by Cunningham in the Quart. Jour. Murer, Sei., 1881, as Protomyxomyees eoprinarius is appa- rently related to the Copromyxa (Guttulina) protea of Fayod (81).*~~

~~*The spore-fruits of the Endospores oceur in various degrees of elaboration. Usually they are (1) spherical or pear-shaped cysts with or without an obvious stalk (Fig. LI. 19, 20, 21), and often have a brilliant colour, and are of a size readily observed by the naked eye, the plasmodia which give rise to them being by no means microscopic. But they may present themselves (2) as irregular ridges growing up from the plasmodium, when they are termed serpula forms. Lastly, the cysts may be united side by side in larger*~~

*or smaller groups instead of forming at various sepa- rate points of the plasmodium. These composite bodies are termed "*fruit-cakes" or "eethalia," in view of the fact that the spore-eysts of Fuligo, also called Aithaliuni—the well-known "' flowers of tan " —form a cake of this description.*

The capillitium or network of threads which lies between the spores in the spore-cysts of Endosporez is a remarkable structure which exhibits special elaborations in detail in different genera, here not to be noticed for want of space. Although definite in form and structure, these threads are not built up by eells but are formed by a residual protoplasm (¢. Sporozoa) which is left in the cyst after the spores have been segregated and enclosed each in its special eoat. They are often impregnated by caleium carbonate, and exhibit erystalline masses of it, as does also the cyst-wall.

The spores of the Mycetozoa are as a rule about the ;4,th inch in diameter. They are produced by millions in the large fruit- cakes of such forms as Fuligo. Often the spore-coat is coloured; it always consists of a substance which gives the cellulose reaction with iodine and sulphuric aeid. This has been sometimes con- sidered an indication of the vegetable nature of the Mycetozoa, but cannot be so regarded. sinee many animals (especially the Tunicata and varions Protozoa) produee substances giving this same reaction.

*Dryness, low temperature, and want of nutriment lead to a.dor- miant condition of the protoplasm of the plasmodium of many Mycetozoa and to its enelosure in cyst-like growths known as '*selerotia," which do not give rise to spores, but from which the protoplasm creeps forth unaltered when temperature, nutrition, and moisture are again favourable. The sclerotia are similar in nature to the hypnoeysts of other Protozoa.*

The physiological properties—chemieal composition, digestive action, reaction to moisture, heat, light, and other physical influ- enees—of the plasmodia of Myeetozoa have been made the subject of important investigations; they furnish the largest masses of The reader

also for a detailed aceount of the genera and species.

~~*Cuass III. LOBOSA, Carpenter.*~~

~~*Characters. —Gymnomyxa in which (as in the succeeding four classes) the amceba-phase predominates over the others in perma- nence, size. attained, and physiological importance. The pseudo-*~~

~~*XIX, — 106*~~

~~*842 PROT*~~

~~*odia are lobose, ranging in form from mere wave-like bulgings of the surface to blunt finger-like processes, but never having the character of filaments either simple, arborescent, or reticulate. Fusions of two individuals (conjugation) have been observed in a*~~

~~*Fic. IV.—Various Lobosa. 1, 2, 3. Dact J é - — ylosphzra (Ameba) pol:*~~

~~*ee in three. successive stages of division; he itp ahs 9 Pera ra — Lape sr Saree Buti ae vacuole (copied from . E. . uf. Mikrosk. Anat.). 4. Amceba princeps, Ehr. ome hyn a & Gorter nd b, 4; —_ (one or more wantreniiie: ihe*~~

~~*: -particles). 5. Pelomyxa palustris, G angel eee example with comparatively few teso-gorticies Gatanal a i in length). 6. Portion of a Pelomyxa more highly magni- See fee' ee zone of seh seta (so-called "'exoplasm"); 3,*~~

~~*» extre Imerous; c, lobose pseudopodium; d imi*~~

~~*Larch be nag ; é, nuclei ; f, refractive bodies " aniuedis Si eatcenl oom ac : e ee are seen numerous cylindrical crystals. vi oo ode ee fe hr. a,shell; 5, protoplasm within the shell; ¢, extended pe pag in the form of lobose pseudopodia; d, nuclei; ¢, contractile ; the dark bodies unlettered are gas vacuoles. 0 8.. Cochlio-*~~

~~*podium pellucidum, Hert. i alo sometimes mistaken ye ok claus, whilst the Waller teens*~~

~~*re Mi a, ucleus, whilst the latter is termed few cases, but not fusi indi ; sions of many individuals so as to form erie ; nevertheless the size attained by the naked protoplasm vy i : Shag 1S In Some cases considerable, forming masses readily y the naked eye (Pelomyxa). The presence of more than*~~

~~*one nucleus is a frequent character. A contractile vacuole may or may not be present. The formation of sporocysts and of chlamydo- spores (coated spores) has not been observed in any species, but naked spores (flagellule or ameebule) have been with more or less certainty observed as the product of the breaking up of some species (Ameeba? Pelomyxa). The cyst phase is not unusual, but the cyst appears usually to be a hypnocyst and not a sporocyst. In the best observed case of spore-production (Pelomyxa) the spores were apparently produced without the formation of acyst. Repro- duction is undoubtedly most freely effected by simple fission (Ameeba) and by a modified kind of bud-fission (Arcella). Fresh- water and marine. 'Two orders of the Lobosa are distinguished in accordance with the presence or absence of a shell.*~~

~~*OrpvER 1. NUDA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Lobosa devoid of a shell.*~~

~~*Genera.—Ameba, Auct. (Fig. IV. 4); Ourameba, Leidy (with a villous tuft at one end, Wallich's A. villosa); Coryeta, Duj. (low, ridge-like pseudopodia) ; Lithameba, Lankester (Fig. V.); Dina- meba, Leidy (92) (covered with short stiff processes); Hyalodiseus, H. and L.; Plakopus, F. E. Schultze; Dactylosphera, H. and L. (Fig. LV. 1, 2,8); Pelomyxa, Greeff (Fig. 1V. 5, 6) ; Amphizonella, Greeff (forms a gelatinous case which is broken through by the pseudopodia).*~~

~~*OrvER 2. TESTACEA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Lobosa which secrete a shell provided with an aperture from which the naked protoplasm can be protruded. The shell is either soft and membranous, or strengthened by the in- clusion of sand-particles, or is hard and firm.*~~

~~*Genera. —Cochliopodium (Fig. IV. 8), H. and L. ; Pyxidicula, Ehr. ; Areella, Ehr. (Fig. IV. 7); Hyalosphenia, Stein; Quad- rula, F. E. Schultze (shell membraneous, areolated) ; Difiugia, Leclerc (shell with adventitious particles).*~~

~~*Further remarks on the Lobosa.—The Lobosa do not form a very numerous nor a very natural assemblage. Undoubtedly some of the forms which have been described as species of Amba are ameeba forms of Mycetozoa ; this appears to be most probably the case in parasitic and stercoricolous forms. But when these are removed, as also those Proteomyxa which have pseudopodia of varying character, at one time lobose and at another filamentous, we have left a certain small number of independent lobose Gymnomyxa which it is most convenient to associate in a separate group. We know very little of the production of spores (whether it actually obtains or not) or of developmental phases among these Lobosa. The common Ameebe are referable to the species A. prineeps, A. lobosa, Daetylosphera polypodia, Ourameba villosa. Of none of these do we know certainly any reproductive phenomena excepting that of fission (see Fig. TV. 1, 2,3). Various statements have been made pointing to a peculiar change in the nucleus and a production of spores having the form of minute Amebx, arising from that body; but they cannot be considered as.established. Whilst the observed cases of supposed reproduc- tive phenomena are very few, it must be remembered that we have always to guard (as the history of the Ciliata has shown, see below) against the liability to mistake parasitic amebule and flagellulee for the young forms of organisms in which they are merely parasitic. The remarkable Pelomyxa palustris of Greeff (32) was seen by him to set free (without forming a cyst) a number of amcebulz which he considers as probably its young. Mr Weldon of St John's College, Cambridge, has observed the same pheno- menon in specimens of Pelomyxa which made their appearance in abundance in an aquarium in the Morphological Laboratory, Cambridge. It seems probable that the amcebulz in this case are not parasites but spore-like young, and this is the best observed case of such reproduction as yet recorded in the group.*~~

~~*Arcella is remarkable for the production of bud-spores, which may be considered as a process intermediate between simple fission and the complete breaking up of the parent body into spores. As many as nine*~~

~~*globular processes are simultaneously pinched off from the protoplasin extruded from the shell of the Arcella ; the nuclei (present in the parent Arcella to the number of two or three) have not been traced in connexion with this process. The buds then be- come nipped off, and acquire a shell and a contractile vacuole (33).*~~

~~*The presence of morc than one nucleus is not unusual in Lobosa, and is not due to a fusion of two or more uninuclear individuals, but to a multiplication of the original nucleus. This has been observed in some Amebe (A. princeps?) as well as Arcella. Pelomyxa (Fig. IV. 6) has a great number of nuclci like the Helio- zoon, Actinospherium (Fig. VIIL).*~~

~~*_Pelomyxa is the most highly differentiated of the Lobosa. The highly vacuolated character of its protoplasm is exhibited in a less degree by Lithameeba and resembles that of Heliozoa and Radiolaria. Besides the numerous nuclei there are scattered in the protoplasm strongly refringent bodies (Fig. IV. 6, /), the significance of which has not been ascertained. The superficial protoplasm is free from vacuoles, hyaline, and extremely mobile. Occasionally it is drawn*~~

~~*LABYRINTHULIDEA. |*~~

~~*out into very short fine filaments. Scattered in the protoplasm are a number of minute cylindrical crystals, of unascertained composi- tion. Pelomyxa is of very large size for a Protozoon, attaining a diameter of 7th of an inch. It takes into its substance a quantity*~~

~~*of foreign particles, both nutrient organic matter such as Rotifera | to*~~

~~*and Diatoms and sand particles. It occurs not uncommonly in old*~~

~~*Fig. V.—Lithameba discus, Lank. (after Lankester, 34). A, quiescent ; B, throwing out pseudopodia. .v., contractile vacuole, overlying whicli the vacuolated protoplasm is seen; conc, concretions insoluble in dilute HCl and dilute KHO, but soluble in strong HCl; ", nucleus.*~~

~~*muddy ponds (such as duck-ponds), creeping upon the bottom, and*~~

~~*has a white appearance to the naked eye. Lithameba (Fig. V.) is*~~

~~*distinguished by its large size, disk-like form, the disk-like shape of its pseudopodia, the presence of specific concretions, the vacuolation of its protoplasm, and the block-like form and peculiar tessellated appearance of its large nucleus, which has a very definite capsule. In Lithameba it is easy to recognize a distinct pellicle or temporary*~~

~~*cuticle which is formed upon the surface of the protoplasm, and |*~~

~~*bursts when a pseudopodium is formed. In fact it is the rupture of*~~

~~*this pellicle which appears to be the proximate cause of the outflow |*~~

~~*of protoplasm as a pseudopodium. Probably a still more delicate pellicle always forms on the surface of naked protoplasm, and in the way just indicated direction of the "flow" of protoplasm which is described as the "pro- trusion" of a pseudopodium,*~~

~~*The shells of Lobosa Testacea are not very complex. That of Arcella is remarkable for its hexagonal areolation, dark colour, and firm consistence; it consists of a substance, resembling chitin. That of Difflugia has a delicate membranous basis, but includes foreign particles, so as to resemble the built-up case of a Caddis worm.*~~

~~*Arcella is remarkable among all Protozoa for its power of secret-*~~

~~*ing gas-vacuoles (observed also in an Ameeba by Biitsehli), which |*~~

~~*serve a hydrostatic function, causing the Arcella to float. The gas can be rapidly absorbed by the protoplasm, when the vacuole neces- sarily disappears and the Arcella sinks.*~~

~~*Cuass IV. LABYRINTHIULIDEA.*~~

~~*Characters.—Gymnomyxa forming irregular heaps of ovoid nucleated cells, the protoplasm of which extends itself as a branching network or labyrinth of fine threads. The oval (spindle-shaped) corpuscles, consisting of well-marked nucleus (not observed in Chlamydomyxa), travel regu- larly*~~

~~*and continuously along the network of filaments. The oval corpuscles multiply by fission ; they also occasionally become encysted and divide into four spherical spores. The young forms*~~

~~*developed from these spores presumably develop into colonies, but |*~~

~~*have not been observed.*~~

~~*Genera.—Two genera only of Labyrinthulidea are known :—*~~

~~*Cienkowski; Chlamydomyxa, Archer.*~~

~~*Cienkowski (35) discovered Labyrinthula on green Alge growing on wooden piles in the harbour of Odessa (marine). It has an orange colour and forms patches visible to the naked eye. Chlamy- domyxa was discovered by Archer of Dublin (86) in the cells of Sphagnum and crawling on its 3 ey hence it is a freshwater form. Unlike Labyrinthula, the latter forms a laminated shell of cellulose (Fig. VI. 2, ¢), in which it is frequently completely enclosed, and indeed has rarely been seen in the expanded labyrinthine condition. The laminated cellulose shells are very freely secreted, the organism frequently deserting one and forming another within or adherent to that previously occupied. The network of Chlamydomyxa appears to consist of hyaline threads of streaming protoplasm, whilst that of Labyrinthula has a more horny consistence, and is not regarded by Cienkowski as protoplasm.*~~

~~*The spindle-shaped cells are much alike in form and size in the two genera; but no nucleus was detected by Archer in those of Chlamydomyxa. The encysting of the spindle-cells and their fission into spores has been seen only in Labyrinthula. Chlamy- domyxa is often of a brilliant green colour owing to the presence of chlorophyll corpuscles, and inay exhibit a red or mottled red and green appearance owing to the chemical change of the chlorophyll.*~~

~~*Labyrinthula,*~~

~~*determines by its rupture the form and the |*~~

~~*PROTOZOA*~~

1 It has been observed to take in solid nourishment, though Labyrin- thula has not.

The Labyrinthulidea present strong resemblances to the Myceto- zoa. The genus Dactylostelium (Sorophora) would come very close Labyrinthula were the amcebe of its ageregation plasmodium

dense protoplasm, and possessing each a |

Fia. Vi.—Labyrinthulidea. 1. A colony or "cell-heap" of Labyrinthu'a vitellina, Cieénk., crawling upon an Alga. 2. A colony or "cell-heap" of Chlamydomyxa labyrinthuloides, Archer, with fully expanded network of threads on which the oat-shaped corpuscles (cells) are moving. o is an ingested food particle; at ¢ a portion of the general protoplasm has detached itself and become encysted. 3. A portion of the network of Labyrinthula vitellina, Cienk., more highly magnified. », protoplasmic mass apparently produced by fusion of several filaments; p', fusion of several cells which have lost their definite spindle-shaped contour; s, corpuscles which have become spherical and are no longer moving (perhaps about to be eucysted). 4, Asingle spindle cell and threads of Laby- yinthula macrocystis, Cienk. n, nucleus. 5. A groupof encysted cells of L. macrocystis, embedded in a tough secretion. 6, 7. Encysted cells of L. macrocystis, with enclosed protoplasin divided into four spores. 8. 9, Transverse division of a non-encysted spindle-cell of L., macrocystis.

set upon a network of threads. Such a network, whether in the condition of soft protoplasm or hardened and horny, is represented in the higher Myectozoa by the capillitium of the sporocysts.

The most important difference between Archer's Chlamydomyxa and Cienkowski's Labyrinthula is that in the former the threads

Bal reo 7

| numerous isolated filamentous pseudopodia which exhibit very little

si ile protoplasm, whilst k appear to consist of contracti . : 25 he beg ao ae ee ae oti saad ae aol — s od i -cells. Neither form has bee -exal e eo at it is possible that this apparent difference will be removed by further study.

Fie. VII.—Heliozoa. 1. Actinophrys sol, Ehrb.; x 800. a. food-particle lying in a large food-vacuole ; b, deep-lying finely granular protoplasm ; c¢, axial filament of a pseudopodium extended inwards to the nucleus; d, the central nucleus; e, contractile vacuole; /, superficial much-vacuolated

protoplasm. 2. Clathrulina elegans, Cienk.; x 200. 3. Heter-

ophrys marina, H. and L. x 660. a, nucleus; b, clearer protoplasm surrounding the nucleus ; ¢, the peculiar felted envelope. 4. Raphi-diophrys pallida, F. E. Schultze; x 430. a, food-particle ; b, the nucleus ; ¢, contractile vacuole ; d, central granule in which all the axis-filaments of the pseudopodia meet.' The tangentially disposed spicules are seen arranged in masses on the surface. 5. Acanthocystis turfacea, Carter ;

x 240. a, probably the central nucleus ; b, clear protoplasm around the

nucleus ; ¢, more superficial protoplasm with vacuoles and chlorophyll

corpuscles ; d, coarser siliceous spicules ; e, finer forked siliceous spicules ;

J, finely granular layer of protoplasm. The long pseudopodia reaching beyond the spicules are not lettered. 6. Bi-flagellate "flagellula" of Acanthocystis aculeata, a, nucleus, 7.

Ditto of Clathrulina elegans, a, nucleus. 8. Astrodisculus ruber, Gre

central sphere (? nucleus) ; b, peripheral homogeneous envelope. Ciass V. HELIOZOA, Haeckel, 1866. Characters. —Gyinnomyxa in which the dominating ameba phase has the form of a spherical body from the surface of which radiate

eis 3× 8205 Va. red-coloured —

OZoOA | (HELIOZOA.

r change of form, except when engaged in the inception tions "The red loeb of the spherical body is richly vacuolated ; it may exlubit one or more contractile vacuoles and either a single central nucleus or many nuclei (Nuclearia, ss spherium). Skeletal products may or may not be present. F he — lule have been observed as the young forms of some species (one thocystis, Clathrulina), but very little has been as yet ee as to spore-formation or conjugation in this group, though isolatec facts of importance have been observed. Mostly freshwater forms.

13

Fic. VUI—Heliozoa. 1. Actinospherium Eichhornii, Ehr.; x 200. dt, nuclei ; b, iy veniueiden witht amnaiied vacuoles and numerous men : ¢, contractile vacuoles; d, peripheral protoplasm with larger vacuoles. 2. A portion of the same specimen more highly magnified and — o optical section. a@, nuclei; b, deeper protoplasni (so-called en Seg te d, peripheral protoplasm (so-called ectosare); €, pseudopodia oe vs grauular protoplasm streaming over the stiff axial filament; J, a : particle in a food-vacuole. 8, 4. Nuclei of Actinospherinm in : he resting condition. 5-18. Successive stages in the division a nucleus of Actinosphxrium, showing fibrillation, and in 7 and 8 forma = of an equatorial plate of chromatin substance (after Hertwig). Th ie Cyst-phase of Actinosphxrium Eichhornii, showing the pi otop! — divided into twelve chlamydospores, each of whicli has a siliceous coat ;

a, nucleus of the spore ; g, gelatinous wall of the cyst ; h, siliceous coat of the spore.

RETICULARIA. |

Orper 1. APHROTHORACA, Hertwig (56).

Characters. —Heliozoa devoid of a spieular or gelatinous envelope, excepting in some a temporary membranous cyst.

Genera. —Nuclearia, Cienk. (37) (many nuclei ; inany contractile |

vacuoles ; body not permanently spherical, but amceboid) ; Actin- ophrys, Khr. (Fig. VII. 1; body spherical ; pseudopodia with an axial skeletal

~~*filament; central nucleus; one large contractile vacuole; often forming colonies ; A. sol, the Sun-animaleule); Actinospherium, Stein (Fig. VIII; spherical body ; pseudopodia with axial filament ; nuclei very numerous ; contractile vaeuoles 2 to 14); Actinolophus, F. E. Schulze (stalked). :*~~

~~*OrvER 2. CHLAMYDOPHORA, Archer (57).*~~

~~*Characters.—Heliozoa with a soft jelly-like or felted fibrous envelope.*~~

~~*Genera.—Heterophrys, Areher (Fig. VII. 38); Sphenastrum, Greeff ; Astrodisculus, Greeff (Fig. VII. 8).*~~

~~*OrpvEr 8. CHALAROTHORACA, Hertw. and Lesser (58).*~~

~~*Characters.—Heliozoa with a loose envelope eonsisting of isolated siliceous spicules.*~~

~~*Genera.—Raphidiophrys, Areher (Fig. VII. 4; skeleton in the form of numerous slightly eurved spicules placed tangentially in the superficial protoplasm) ; Pompholyxophiys, Areher ; Pinacocystis H. and L. ; Pinaciophora, Greetf ; Acanthocystis, Carter (skeleton in the form of radially disposed siliceous needles ; encysted eon- dition observed, and flagellula young, Fig. VII. 6); Wagnerella, Mereseh.*~~

~~*OrprR 4. DESMOTHORACA, Hertw. and Less.*~~

~~*Characters.—Heliozoa with a skeletal envelope in the form of a spherieal or nearly spherical shell of siliea preforated by numerous large holes.*~~

~~*Genera.—Orbulinella, Entz (without a stalk); Clathrulina, Cienk. (with a stalk, Fig. VII. 2).*~~

~~*Further remarks on the Heliozoa.—The Sun-animaleules, Actino- phrys and Actinospherium, were the only known members of this group when Carter diseovered in 1863 Acanthocystis. Our further knowledge of them is chiefly due to Archer of Dublin, who dis- covered the most important forms, and figured them in the Quart. Jour. Micr. Sct. in 1867.*~~

~~*Some of the Proteomyxa (¢.g., Vampyrella) exhibit "heliozoon- | like" or "aetinophryd" forms, but are separated from the true |*~~

~~*Heliozoa by the fact that their radiant pseudopodia are not main- tained for long in the stiff isolated condition characteristic of this group. It is questionable whether Nuclearia should not be relegated to the Proteomyxa on account of the mobility of its body, which in all other Heliozoa has a constant spherical form.*~~

~~*Actinophrys sol is often seen to form groups or colonies (by fission), and so also is Raphidiophrys.*~~

~~*simple fission but by multiple fission, producing flagellate spores which may or may not be preceded by encystment.*~~

~~*been observed in the encysted state, and only the first two have been credited with the production of flagellated young. The two latter genera form covered spores within their cysts, those of Actino- spherium being remarkable for their siliceous coats (Fig. VIII. 14), but their further development has not been seen.*~~

~~*Crass VI. RETICULARIA, Carpenter, 1862.*~~

~~*(Foraminifera, Auct., Thalamophora, Hertwig).*~~

~~*Characters.—Gymnomyxa in which the dominating ameba- phase, often of great size (an inch in diameter), has an irregular*~~

~~*form, and a tendency to throw out great trunks of branching and |*~~

~~*often anastomosing filamentous pseudopodia, and an equally strong tendency to form a shell of secreted membrane or secreted lime or of agglutinated sand particles (only in one genus of secreted silex) into which the protoplasm (not in all?) can be drawn and out of and over which it usually streams in widely spreading lobes and branches. One nucleus is present, or there are many. A contrac- tile vacuole is sometimes, but not as a rule, present (or at any rate not described). Reproduction is by fission and (as in some other Protozoa) by the formation of peculiar bud-spores which*~~

~~*remain for a time after their formation embedded in the parental proto- plasm. No multiple breaking up into spores after or independent of the formation of a cyst is known. Marine and freshwater.*~~

~~*The Reticularia are divisible into several orders. The marked peculiarity of the shell structure in certain of these orders is only fitly emphasized by grouping them together as a sub-class Per- forata, in contrast to which the remaining orders stand as a sub-class Imperforata. The distinction, however, is not an ab- solute one, for a few of the Lituolidea are perforate, that is, are*~~

~~*PROT OA20A*~~

~~*CESS*~~

~~*£*~~

~~*RE: Ese)*~~

~~*It is probable from the | little that is known that reproduction takes place not only by |*~~

~~*Only Clath- ! rulina, Acanthoeystis, Aetinospherium, and Aetinophrys have †*~~

~~*ELIE Pee eLiey,*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*ND Maes*~~

~~*om a*~~

~~*TET*~~

~~*7¥ es*~~

~~*iy*~~

~~*LS*~~

~~*Ee*~~

~~*30.85*~~

~~*we*~~

~~*TT oee*~~

~~*TA te*~~

~~*Ao SUSE, PER EEALs DOR aes*~~

~~*Ra ESTEE*~~

~~*Fic. 1X.—Gromiidea (Reticularia membranosa). Archeri, Barker. a, nucleus; 5, contractile vacuoles; c, the yellow oil-like body. Moor pools, Ireland. 2. Gromia oviformis, Duj. a, the numerous nuclei; near these the elongated bodies represent ingested Diatoms. Freshwater. 3. Shepheardella teniiformis, Siddall (Quart. Jour. Mier. Sci., 1880); x 30 diameters. Marine. The protoplasm is retracted at both ends into the tubular case. a, nucleus. 5. Shep- heardella txniiformis; x 15; with pseudopodia fully expanded. 6-10. Varying appearance of the nuclens as it is carried along in the streaming protoplasm within the tube. 11. Amphitrema Wrightianum, Archer, showing membranous shell encrusted with foreign particles. Moor pools, Ireland. 12. Diaphorophodon mobile, Archer. a, nucleus. Moor pools, Ireland.*~~

~~*1. Diplophrys*~~

~~*Sus-ciass A. Imperforata.*~~

~~*Characters.—Shell-substanee not perforated by numerous aper- tures through which the protoplasm ean issue, but provided with only one or two large apertures, or in branched forms with a few sueh apertures.*~~

~~*Orver 1. GROMIIDEA, Brady.*~~

~~*Characters.—Shell or test membranous, in the form of a simple sac with a pseudopodial aperture either at one extremity or at both.*~~

~~*sandy isomorphs of perforate genera such as Globigerina and — Rotalia.*~~

~~*Psendopodia thread-like, long, branching, reticulated. Marine and freshwater.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Monosromrna, with a single aperture to the shell.*~~

~~*846 PROTOZOA / [RETICULARIA.*~~

~~*Genera.—Lieberkuhnia, Clap. and Lach. ; Gromia, Duj. (Fig.*~~

~~*: : : 5 : r | IX. 2); Mikrogromia, Hertw. ; Euglypha, Duj. (shell built up o | crea siliceous plates); Diaphorophodon, Archer (88) (many |*~~

~~*foreign particles cemented to form shell; small pseudopodia issue*~~

~~*i long ones from | between these, hence resembling Perforata, and large tong | extended from either aperture, Fig. IX. 5, and rapidly circulating*~~

~~*| within the tubular test during life, carrying with it the nucleus | which itself exhibits peculiar movements of rotation, Fig. IX. 6, 7, 1 869; a):*~~

~~*i*~~

~~*the proper mouth of the shell, Fig. IX. 12).*~~

~~*on*~~

~~*ato*~~

~~*Dees SONA Oe is ed*~~

~~*Fie. X.—_Imperforata, 1. Sptroloculina planulata, Lamarck, showing five*~~

~~*“coils”; porcellanous 2. Young ditto, with i ;*~~

~~; é ; : ; shell d protoplasm stained so as _to show the seven nuclei (eeTay Golene (Pans roplis); a sculptured imperfectly coiled shell; porcellanous. 4,~~

~~Vertebralina, a simple shell consisting of chambers succeedin \ ] 4 g onean — - rip og line; porcellanous. 5, 6. Thurammina papillata, mc age "5 "J orm. 45 is broken open so as to show an inner chamber; recent. ok s pte (Haplophragmium) canariensis, a sandy form; — * ucleated reproductive bodies (bud-spores) of Haliphysema. nici ina levis, M. Schultze; x 40; a simple porcellanous Greek 'a Ph Protoplasmic core removed after treatment with weak eal ci Pag the shell of Haliphysema Tumanovitzti, Bow. n — ae nuclei, stained With hematoxylin (after Lankester). ia = prhewes f umanovitett; x 25 diam.; living specimen, showing the : fag ass-shaped shell built up of sand-grains and sponge-spicules, and \ e mee protoplasm p, issuing from the mouth of the shell and pve Fate over its projecting constituents. 12. Shell of Astro- e. a timicola, Sand.; x 3; showing the branching of the test on some of rays usually broken away in preserved specimens (original). 13.~~

~~Secti ANE : ; oe of the shell of Marsipella, showing thick walls built of sand-~~

~~{~~

~~Fam. 2. AMPHISTOMINA, With an aperture at each end of the shell. Genera.—Diplophrys, Barker (Fig. 1X. 1); Détrema, Archer ; Amphitrema, Archer (Fig. IX. 11); Shepheardella, Siddall (39) (membranous shell very long and cylindrical so as to be actually tubular, narrowed to a spout at each end, Fig. 1X. 3; protoplasm~~

~~OrpER 2. ASTRORHIZIDEA, Brady.~~

~~Characters. —Test invariably consisting of foreign particles ; it is usually of large size and single-chambered, often branched or radiate with a pseudopodial aperture to each branch, the test often con- tinned on to the finer branches of the pseudopodia (Fig. X. 12) ; never symmetrical. Al] marine.~~

~~*Fam. 1. ASTRORHIZINA, Brady. Walls thick, composed of loose sand or mud very slightly cemented.*~~

~~*Genera.—Astrorhiza, Sandahl (Fig. X. 12, very little enlarged); Pelosina, Brady ; Storthosphera, Brady ; Dendrophrya, St. Wright ; Syringammina, Brady.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. PILuLININA. Test single-chambered ; walls thick, composed chiefly of felted sponge-spicules and fine sand, without calcareous or other cement.*~~

~~*Genera.—Pilulina, Carpenter; Technitella, Norman; Bathy- siphon, Sars.*~~

~~*Fam. 8. SACCAMMININA. Chambers nearly spherical ; walls thin,*~~

~~*| composed of firmly cemented sand grains.*~~

~~*Genera.—Psammosphera, Schultze; Sorosphera, Brady ; Saccam- mina, M. Sars.*~~

~~*Fam. 4. RHABDAMMININA. 'Test composed of firmly cemented sand – grains, often with sponge-spicules intermixed; tubular ; straight, radiate, branched or irregular; free or adherent; with one, two, or more apertures ; rarely segmented.*~~

~~*Genera.—Jaculella, Brady; Marsipella, Norman (Fig. X. 18) ; Rhabdammina, M. Sars;*~~

~~*OrpDER 3. MILIOLIDEA, Brady.*~~

~~*Characters.—Test imperforate ; normally calcareous and porcel- lanous, sometimes encrusted with sand; under starved conditions (e.g., in brackish water) becoming chitinous or chitino-arenaceous ; at abyssal depths occasionally consisting of a thin homogeneous,*~~

~~*| imperforate, siliceous film. The test has usually a chambered*~~

~~*structure, being divided by septa (each with a hole in it) into a series of loculi which may follow one another in a straight line (Fig. X. 4) or the series may be variously coiled (Fig. X. 1 and 38). The chambering of the*~~

~~*test does not express a corresponding cell- segmentation of the protoplasm; the latter, although growing in volume as the new shell-chambers are formed, remains one continuous cell-unit with many irregularly seattered nuclei (Fig. X. 2). The chambered and septate structure results in this group and in the other orders from the fact that the protoplasm, expanded beyond the*~~

~~*_ last-formed chamber, forms a new test upon itself whilst it lies and | rests upon the surface of the old test. The variations in such a*~~

~~*formation are shown in Fig. XII. 1, 2, 3, 4.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. NupecuLaRIna. Test free or adherent, taking various irregular asymmetrical forms, with variable aperture or apertures.*~~

~~*Genera.——Squammulina, Schultze (Fig. X. 9, showing the ex- panded pseudopodia) ; Nubeeularia, Defrance.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. Miriotina. Shell coiled on an elongated axis, either symmetrically or in a single plane or inequilaterally; two cham- bers in each convolution. Shell aperture alternately during growth (addition of new chambers) at either end of the shell.*~~

~~*Genera.—Biloculina, D'Orb. ; Fabularia, Defrance ; Spirolocu- lina, D'Orb. (Fig. X. 1, 2); Miliolina, Williamson (Fig. X1.).*~~

~~*Fam. 8. HAvErtninA. Shell dimorphous; chambers partly milioline, partly spiral or rectilinear.*~~

~~*Genera.—Articulina, D'Orb.; Vertebralina, D'Orb. (Fig X. 4); Ophthalmidium, Kubler; Hauerina, D'Orb.; Planispirina, Seguenza. _ Fam. 4. PENEROPLIDINA. Shell planospiral or cyclical, some- times erosier-shaped, bilaterally symmetrical.*~~

~~*Genera.—Cornuspira, Schultze ; Peneroplis, Montfort (Vig. X. 3) ;*~~

~~*RETICULARIA. |*~~

~~*Orbiculina, Lamarck ; Orbitolites, Lamarck (by a division of the chambers regularly into chamberlets, and a cyclical mode of growth which results in shells of the size of a shilling, a very elaborate- looking structure is produced which has been admirably analysed by Carpenter (40), to whose memoir the reader is specially referred).*~~

~~*Fic. XI.—Miliolina (Triloculina) tenera. Young living animal with ex- panded pseudopodia (after Max Schultze). A single nucleus is seen in the innermost chamber.*~~

~~*Fam. 5. ALVEOLININA. Shell spiral, elongated in the line of the axis of the convolution ; chambers divided into chamberlets. Genus.—Alveolina, D'Orb. Fam. 6. KERAMOSPHERINA. centric layers. Genus.—Keeramosphexra, Brady.*~~

~~*Orper 4. LITUOLIDEA, Brady.*~~

~~*Characters.—Test arenaceous, usually regular in contour ; septa- tion of the many-chambered forms often imperfect, the cavity being labyrinthic. 'lhis order consists of sandy isomorphs of the simpler Miliolidea, and also of the simpler Perforata (Lagena, Nodosaria, Cristellaria, Globigerina, Rotalia, Nonionina, &c.); it also contains some peculiar adherent species.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Lirvotina. Test composed of coarse sand-grains, rough externally ; often labyrinthic.*~~

~~*Genera.—Reophax, Montfort; Haplophragmium, Reuss (Fig.*~~

~~*X. 7); Goskinolina, Stache; Placopsilina, D'Orb. ; Haplostiche,*~~

~~*Reuss; Litwola, Lamarck ; Bdelloidina, Carter.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. TROCHAMMININA. Test thin, composed of minute sand-grains incorporated with calcareous and other organic cement, or embedded in a chitinous membrane ; exterior smooth, often polished ; interior smooth or rarely reticulated ; never labyrinthic.*~~

~~*Genera.—Thurammina, Brady (test consisting typically of a single spherical chamber with several mammillate apertures, Fig. X. 5,6); Hippocrepina, Parker; Hormosina, Brady ; Ammo- discus, Reuss; Trochammina, Parker and Jones; Carterina, Brady; Webbina, D'Orb.*~~

~~*Fam. 3. Enpornyrina. 'Test more calcareous and less sandy than in the other groups of Lituolidea ; sometimes perforate ; septation distinct.*~~

~~*Genera.—Nodosinella, Brady ; Polyphragma, Reuss ; Involutina, Terg.; Endothyra, Phillips ; Bradyina, Moll.; Stacheia, Brady.*~~

~~*Fam. 4. Lorrusina. Test of relatively large size ; lenticular, spherical, or fusiform ; constructed either on a spiral plan or in concentric layers, the chamber cavities occupied to a large extent by the excessive development of the finely arenacecus cancellated walls.*~~

~~*Genera.—Cyclammina, Brady ; Loftusia, Brady ; Parkeria, Carpenter.*~~

~~*Sus-ciass Ps Perforata.*~~

~~*Characters.—Shell substance perforated by numerous minute apertures, through which as well as from the main aperture the protoplasm can issue.*~~

~~*Orper 5. TEXTULARIDEA, Brady.*~~

~~*Characters.—Tests of the larger species arenaceous, either with or without a perforate calcareous basis ; smaller forms hyaline and conspicuously perforated. Chambers arranged in two or more alternating series, or spiral or confused ; often dimorphous.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. TEXTULARINA. Typically bi- or tri-serial; often bi- rarely tri-morphous.*~~

~~*Genera.—Textularta Defrance ; Cuneolina, D'Orb. ; Verneiul- ina, D'Orb.; Tritaxia, Reuss; Chrysalidina, D'Orb.; Bigenerina, D'Orb.; Pavonina, D'Orb.; Spiroplecta, Ehr. ; Gaudryina, D'Orb. ; Valeulina, D'Orb.; Clavulina, D'Orb.*~~

~~*Shell spherical; chambers in con-*~~ |

~~Fam. 2. Buniminrna. Typically spiral ; weaker forms more or less regularly biserial; aperture oblique, comma-shiaped or some modification of that form.~~

~~Genera.—Bulimina, D'Orb.; Virgulina, D'Orb.; Bifarina, Parker and Jones; Bolivina, D'Orb.; Plewrostomelia, Reuss.~~

~~Fam. 3. CASsIDULINA. Test consisting of a Textularia-like series of alternating segments more or less coiled upon itself.~~

~~Genera.—Cassidulina, D'Orb.; Ehrenbergina, Reuss.~~

~~OrpER 6. CHILOSTOMELLIDEA, Brady.~~

~~Characters.—Test calcareous, finely perforate, many-chambered. Segments following each other from the same end of the long axis,~~

~~| or alternately at the two ends, or in cycles of three, more or less~~

~~embracing. Aperture a curved slit at the end or margin of the final segment.~~

~~Genera.—Ellipsoidina, Seguenza ; morphina, Reuss.~~

~~Orper 7. LAGENIDEA, Brady.~~

~~Characters.—Test calcareous, very finely perforated; either single-chambered, or consisting pf a number of chambers joined in a straight, curved, spiral, alternating, or (rarely) branching series. Aperture simple or radiate, terminal. No interseptal skeleton nor canal system.~~

~~Fam. 1. LAGENINA. Shell single-chambered.~~

~~Genera.—Lagena, Walker and Boys; Nodosaria, Lamk. ; Lin- gulina, D'Orb. ; Frondicularia, Defrance ; Rhabdogonium, Reuss ; Marginulina, D'Orb. ; Vaginulina, D'Orb. ; Rimulina, D'Orb. ; Cristellaria, Lamk. ;~~

~~*Amphicoryne, Schlumb. ; Lingulinopsis, Reuss ; Flabellina, D'Orb. ; Amphimorphina, Neugeb. ; Dentalinopsis, Reuss.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. PotyMorpHIINIva. Scgments arranged spirally or irregularly around the long axis; rarely biserial and alternate.*~~

~~*Genera.—Polymorphina, D'Orb. ; Dimorphina, D'Orb. ; Uviger- ina, D'Orb. ; Sagrina, P. and J.*~~

~~*Fam. 3. RAMULININA. Shell branching, composed of spherical or pyriform chambers connected by long stoloniferous tubes.*~~

~~*Genus.—Ramulina, Rupert Jones.*~~

~~*OrpEr 8. GLOBIGERINIDEA, Brady.*~~

~~*Characters.—Test free, calcareous, perforate ; chambers few, inflated, arranged spirally; aperture single or multiple, con- spicuous. No supplementary skeleton nor canal system. All the larger species pelagic in habit.*~~

~~*Genera.—Globigerina, D'Orb. (Fig. XII. 6): Orbulina, D'Orb (Fig. XII. 8); Hastigerina, Wy. Thomson (Fig. XII. 5); Pul-*~~

~~*Chilostomella, Reuss; Allo-*~~

~~*lenia, P. and J. ; Sphwxroidina, D'Orb. ; Candeina, D'Orb.*~~

~~*Orver 9. ROTALIDEA, Brady.*~~

~~*Characters.—Test calcareous, perforate ; free or adherent. Typi- cally spiral and "'rotaliform" (Fig. XII. 2), that is to say, coiled in such a manner that the whole of the segments are visible on the superior surface, those of the last convolution only on the inferior or apertural side, sometimes one face being more convex sometimes the other. Aberrant forms evolute, outspread, acervuline, or irregular. Some of the higher modifications with double chamber- walls, supplemental skeleton, and a system of canals. The nature of this supplemental skeleton is shown in Fig. XII. 2 and 10.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Spirmuurnina. Test a complanate, planospiral, non- septate tube ; free or attached.*~~

~~*_ Genus. —Spirillina, Ehr.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. Roraurna. 'Test spiral, rotaliform, rarely evolute, very rarely irregular or acervuline.*~~

~~*Genera._—Patcellina, Williamson ; Cymbalopora, Hay ; Discorbina, P. and J.; Planorbulina, D'Orb. ; Truncatulina, D'Orb. ; Anomal- ina, P. and J.; Carpenteria, Gray (adherent); Rupertia, Wallick ; Pulvinulina, P. and J. ; Rotalia, Lamk. ; Calcwrina, D'Orb. [Shell rotaliform ; periphery furnished with radiating spines ; supplemental skeleton and canal system largely developed. This form is shown in a dissected condition in Fig. XII. 10. Outside and between the successive chambers with finely perforated walls a2, a3, at a secondary sheell-substance is deposited by the proto- plasm which has a different structure. Whilst the successive chambers with their finely perforate walls (resembling dentine in structure) are formed by the mass of protoplasm issuing from the mouth of the last-formed chamber, the secondary or supplemental- shell substance is formed by the protoplasm which issues through*~~

~~*the fine perforations of the primary shell substance ; it is not finely canaliculated, but is of denser substance than the primary shell and traversed by coarse canals (occupied by the protoplasm) which make their way to the surface of the test (c', c'). In Cal- carina a large bulk of this secondary shell-substance is deposited around each chamber and also forms the heavy club-like spines.]*~~

~~*Fam. 3. Trnoportna. Test consisting of irregularly heaped chambers with (or sometimes without) a more or less distinctly spiral primordial portion ; for the most part without any general | pseudopodial aperture.*~~

~~*848*~~

~~*Genera. —Tinoporus, Carpeuter ; Gypsina, Carter ; Aphrosint, Carter; Thalamopora, Roemer ; Polytrema, Risso. [Shell para- sitie, enerusting, or arboreseent ; surfaee areolated, eoloured pink or white, Fig. XII. 9. Interior*~~

~~partly oecupied by small chambers, arranged in more or less regular layers, and partly by non- segmented canal-like spaces, often crowded with sponge-spieules No true eanal system. This is one of the most important types as exhibiting the arborescent and enerusting form of growth. It is fairly abundant.]~~

~~Fic. XII.—Perforata, 1. Spiral arrangement of simp]~~

~~. x . 5 . € ¢ ; Reticularian shell, 2. Ditto, with pe septal eat ig peepee — shell-substance (shaded). 8. Diagram to show the mode in = — Successively-formed chambers may completely embrace their pre- bs 4, Diagram of a simple straight series of non-embracing~~

~~ers. 5. Hastigerina (Globigerina) Murrayi, Wyy. Thomson~~

~~calcareous matter, which are set on the shell, and have an axis of active~~

~~protoplasm. Pelagic: drawn in the livin igert } : ae 1 g state, 6. Glob poses onea D'Orb., showing the punctiform perforations of the anol sud aperture. 7. Fragment of the shell of Globigerina, seen~~

~~from within, and highly magni ions i agnified. a, fine perforations in the j song gh b, outer (secondary) shell substance. Two cptsag echo oe seen in section, and one lying among the smaller. 8. Or- universa, D'Orb. Pelagic example, with adherent radiating~~

~~PROTOZOA [RETICULARIA,~~

~~calcareous spines (hollow), and internally a small Globigerina shell. It is uncertain whether Orbulina is merely a developmental phase of Globi-~~

~~gerina. a, Orbulina shell; 6, Globigerina shell. 9. Polytrema miniu- _ceum, Lin.; x 12. Mediterranean, Example of a branched adherent cal- careous perforate Reticularian. 10. Calcarina Spenglert, Gmel.; x 10.~~

~~Tertiary, 'sicily. Shell dissected so as to show the spiral arrangement of the chambers, and the copious secondary shel! substance. a?, a3, a, chambers of three successive coils in section, showing the thin primary wall (finely~~

~~*tubulate) of each ; }, b, b, b, perforate surfaces of the primary wall of four titrs of chambers, from which the secondary shell substance has been cleared away; c', c', secondary or intermediate shell substance in section, showing coarse canals; d, section of secondary shell substance at right angles to c'; e, tubercles of secondary shell substance on the surface ; J, f, club-like processes of secondary shell substance.*~~

~~*Orper 10. NUMMULINIDEA, Brady.*~~

~~*Characters.—Test ealeareous and finely tubulated ; typically free, many-chambered, and symmetrically spiral. The higher modifications all possess a supplemental skeleton, and canal system of greater or less complexity.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Fusuurnina. Shell bilaterally symmetrical ; chambers extending from pole to pole; each convolution completely enclosing the previous whorls. Shell-wall finely tubulated. Septa single or rarely double; no true interseptal eanals. Aperture a single elongated slit, or a row of small rounded pores, at the inner edge of the final segment.*~~

~~*Genera.—Fusulina, Fiseher ; Schwagerina, Moller.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. PoLYSTOMELLINA. Shell bilaterally synimetrieal, nauti- loid. Lower forms without supplemental skeleton or interseptal canals ; higher types with eanals opening at regular intervals along the external septal depressions.*~~

~~*Genera.—Nonionina, D'Orb. ; Polystomella, Lamarck.*~~

~~*Fam. 3. NUMMULITINA. Shell lentieular or complanate ; lower forms with thickened and finely tubulated shell-wall, but uo inter- mediate skeleton ; higher fornis with interseptal skeleton and eoin- plex canal system.*~~

~~*Genera.—Arehxodiscus, Brady ; Amphistegina, D'Orb.; Oper- eulina, D'Orb. ; Heterostegina, D'Orb. ; Nummutlites, Lamarck ; Asstlina, D'Orb.*~~

~~*Fam. 4. CyctociyPetna. Shell eomplanate, with thickened eentre, or lenticular ; consisting of a disk of chambers arranged in concentrie annuli, with more or less lateral thickening of lami- nated shell substanee, or*~~

~~*aeervuline layers of chamberlets, Septa donble and furnished with a system of interseptal eanals.*~~

~~*Genera.—Cycloelypeus, Carpenter ; Orbitoides, D'Orb.*~~

~~*Fam. 5. Eozoonina. Test forming irregular, adherent, aeervu- line masses.*~~

~~*Genus.—Lozoon, Dawson.*~~

~~*further remarks on the Reticularia.—The name Thalamophora, pointing to the peeuliar tendency which the larger members of the group have to form ehamber after clamber and so to build np a eomplex shell, has been proposed by Hertwig (56) and adopted by many writers. The old name Foraminifera (which did not refer to the fine perforations of the Perforata but to the large psendo- podial aperture leading from ehamber to ehamber) has also been extended by some so as to include the simpler Gromia-like forms. On the whole Carpenter's term Reticularia (62) seenis most suitable for the group, since they all present the character indicated. It has been objeeted that the Radiolaria are also retienlar in their pseudopodia, but if we except the pelagie forms of Reticularia (Globigerina, Orbulina, &e.), we find that the Radiolaria are really distinguishable by their stiffer, straighter, radiating pseudopodia. No doubt the Labyrinthulid Chlamydomyxa and the plasmodia of some Myeetozoa are as retienlar in their pseudopodia as the Reticularia, but they possess other distinctive features which serve, at any rate in an artificial system, to separate them.*~~

~~*The protoplasm of the majority of the Reticularia is unknown, or only very superficially observed ; henee we have made a point of introducing among our figures as many as possible which show this essential part of the organism. It is only recently (1876) that uuelei have been deteeted in the ealcareous-shelled members of the group, and they have only been seen in a few cases.*~~

~~*The protoplasm of the larger shell-making forms is known to be often strongly coloured, opaque, and creamy, but its minute strue- ture remains for future investigation. Referring the reader to the figures and their explanation, we would draw especial attention to the strueture of the protoplasmie body of Hastigerina (one of the Globigerinidea) as deteeted*~~

by the "Challenger" naturalists. It will be seen from Fig. X11. 5 that the protoplasm extends as a rela- tively enormous "bubbly" mass around the shell which is sunk within it ; from the surfaee of this " bubbly " (vacuolated or alveol- ated) mass the pseudopodia radiate.

The reader is requested to compare this with.Fig. XIII., repre- senting the " bubbly" protoplasmic body of Thalassieolla. It then beeomes obvious that the perforated central eapsule CK of the latter holds the same relation to the mass of the protoplasm as does the central perforated shell of Globigerina (Hastigerina). The extreme vacuolation of the protoplasm in both eases (the vacuoles being

filled with sea-water accumulated by endosmosis) and the stiff radiat- ing pseudopodia are directly correlated with the floating pelagic life of the two organisms. All the Radiolaria are pelagic, and many exhibit this vacuolation ; only a few of the Reticularia are so, and their strne- tural correlation to that habit has only lately been ascertained.

The Reticularia are almost exclusively known by their shells, which offer a most interesting field for stndy on acconnt of the very great complexity of form attained by some of them, notwithstand- ing the fact that the animal which produces them is a simple uni- cellular Protozoon. Space does not permit the exposition here of the results obtained by Carpenter in the study of the complex shells of Orbitolites, Operculina, Nummulites, &c.; it is essential that his work Introduction to the Study of the Foraminifera (Ray Society, 1862) should be consulted, and in reference to the sandy-shelled forms the monograph by Brady, in the Challenger Reports, vol. ix., 1883 ; and it must be sufficient here to point out the general prin- ciples of the shell-architecture of the Reticularia. Let us suppose that we have an ever-growing protoplasmic body which tends to produce a calcareous shell on its surface, leaving an aperture for the exit of its pseudopodia. 1t will grow too large for its shell and accumulate outside the shell. The accumulated

external mass may then secrete a second chamber, resting on the first as chamber 1 rests on chamber 0 in Fig. XII. 4. By further growth a new chamber is necessitated, and so is produced a series following one another in a straight line, each chamber commnnicating with the newer one in front of it by the narrow pseudopodial aperture (a, a}, a, a). Nowit is possible for these chambers to be very variously arranged instead of simply asin Fig. XII. 4. For instance, each new chamber may completely enclose the last, as in Fig. X11. 8, supposing the protoplasm to spread all over the outside of the old chamber before making a new deposit. Again the chambers

need not succeed one another in a straight line, but may be dis- |

posed in a spiral (Fig. XII. 1). And this spiral may be a flat coil, or it may be a helicine spiral with a rising axis ; further it may be close or open. All these forms in varions degrees of elaboration are exhibited by Miliolidea and various Perforata.

| But the Perforata in virtue of their perforate shell-walls introduce |

a new complication. The protoplasm issues not only from the mouth of the last-formed chamber, bnt from the numerons pores in the wall itself. This latter protoplasm exerts its lime-secreting functions ; it gathers itself into coarse branching threads which remain uncalcified, whilst all around a dense deposit of secondary

or supplemental shell-substance is thrown down, thus producing a | The thickness and amount of this |

coarsely eanalicnlar structure. secondary shell and the position it may occupy between and around the chambers of primitive shell-substance vary necessarily in dif- ferent genera according to the mode in which the primitive cham- bers are arranged and connected with one another. Calcarina is a fairly typical instance of an abundant secondary shell-deposit (Tig. XII. 10), and it is the existence of structure resembling the chambers of Calcarina with their surrounding primary and secondary shell- substances which has rendered it necessary toregard Eozoon (41) as the metamorphosed cnernsting shell of a pre-Cambrian Reticularian.

~~*The division of the Reticularia into Imperforata and Perforata which is here maintained has no longer the significance which was once attributed to it. It appears, according to the researches of Brady, that it is not possible to draw a sharp line between these snb-classes, since there are sandy forms which it-is diffienlt to separate from imperforate Lituolidea and are nevertheless perforate, in fact are "sandy isomorphs of Lagena, Nodosaria, Globigerina, and Rotalia." 1t does not appear to the present writer that there can be any insurmountable difficulty in separating the Lituolidea into two groups—those which are sandy isomorphs of the porcel- lanous Miliolidea, and those which are sandy isomorphs of the hyaline Perforata. The two groups of Lituolidea thus formed might be placed in their natural association respectively with the Imperforata and the Perforata.*~~

~~*The attempt to do this has not been made here, but the classifi- cation of Brady has been adopted. In Biitschli's large work on the Protozoa (9) the breaking up of the Lituolidea is carried out to a logical conclusion, and its members dispersed among the Miliolidea on theone hand and the various ordersof Perforata on the other hand.*~~

~~*The calcareous shell-substance of the Miliolidea being opaque and white has led to their being called " Porcellana," whilst the transparent calearcous shells of the smaller Perforata has gained for that group the synonym of " Hyalina."*~~

~~*The shells of the calcareous Reticularia and of some of the larger arenaccous forms are found in stratified rocks, from the Paleozoic strata onwards. The Chalk is in places largely com- posed of their shells, and the Eocene Numumulitic limestone is mainly a cemented mass of the shells of Nummulites often as large each as a shilling. The Atlantic ooze is a chalky deposit consisting largely of the shells of Globigerina, &c.*~~

~~*Cuass VII. RADIOLARIA, Haeckel, 1862 (63) (Polycystina, Ehr.).*~~

~~*Characters.—Gymnomyxa in which the protoplasmic body of the dominant amceba phase has the form of a sphere or cone from*~~

~~*PROTOZOA*~~

~~the surface of which radiate filamentous pseudopodia, occasionally anastomosing, and encloses a spherical (homaxonic) or cone-shaped (monaxonic) perforated shell of inembranous consistence known as the central capsule, and probably homologous with the perforated shell of a Globigerina. The protoplasm within the capsule (intra- capsnlar protoplasm) is continuons through the pores or apertures of the capsule with the outer protoplasm. Embedded in the former lies the large and specialized nucleus (one or more). Gelatinous substance is frequently formed peripherally by the extracapsular protoplasm, constituting a kind of soft mautle which is penetrated by the pseudopodia. A contractile vacuole is never present.~~

~~Usually an abundant skeleton, consisting of spicules of silica or of a peculiar substance called acanthin arranged radially or tangen- tially, loose or united into a basket-work, is present. Oil globules, pigment, and crystals are fonnd in greater or less abundance in the protoplasm.~~

~~In most but not all Radiolaria peculiar nucleated yellow cor- puscles are abundantly present, usually regarded as parasitic Alge. Reproduction by fission has been observed, and also in some few species a peculiar formation of swarm-spores (flagellule) within the central capsule, in which the nucleus takes an important part. All the Radiolaria are marine. The Radiolaria are divided into two sub-classes according to the chemical natnre of their spicular skeleton, and into orders according to the nature and the disposi- tion of the apertures in the wall of the central eapsule.~~

~~BS YA Se WA os = Q\ IWS on eae~~

~~IOS~~

~~TT ee~~

~~u~~

~~Ss~~

~~*Fic. XII.—Thalassicolla pelagica, Haeckel; x 25. CK, central capsule ; EP, extracapsular protoplasm ; «@é, alveoli, liquid-holding vacuoles in the protoplasm similar to those of Heliozoa, Pelomyxa, Hastigerina, &c.; ps, pseudopodia. The minute unlettered dots are the "yellow cells."*~~

~~*Sus-cLass 1]. Silico-Skeleta, Lankester.*~~

~~*Characters. —A more or less elaborate basket-work of tangential ant radial elements consisting of secreted silica is present ; in rare exceptions no skeleton is developed.*~~

~~*OrpeR 1. PERIPYLA, Hertwig.*~~

~~*Characters.—Silico-skeletal Radiolaria in which the central cap- sule is uniformly perforated all over by fine pore-canals ; its form is that of a sphere (homaxonic), and to this form the siliceous skeleton primarily conforms, though it may become discoid, rhabdoid, or irregular. 'Ihe nucleus is usually single, bnt numerous nuclei are present in each central capsule of the Polycyttaria.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Spnaripa, Haeck. Spherical Peripylea with a spheri- cal basket-work skeleton, sometimes surrounded by a spongy outer skeleton, sometimes simple, sometimes composed of many concentric spheres (never discoid, flattened, or irregular). The central capsule sometimes encloses a part of the spherical skeleton, and often is penetrated by radiating elements.*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Hthmosphera, Haeck. ; Xtphosphera, Haeck. ; Staurosphera, Haeck. ; Heliosphera, Haeck. (Fig. XIV. 14) ; As- tromma, Haeck. : Haliomma, Haeck. ; Actinomma, Haeck. (Fig. X1V. 17; note the sphere within sphere, the smallest lying in the nucleus, and the whole series of spherical shells connected by radial spines) ; Arachnosphera, Haeck. ; Pleymosphera, Haeck. ; Spongo- sphera, Haeck. (Fig. XVI. 8).*~~

~~*Fam. 2. Discrpa, Haeck. Discoid Peripylea; both skeleton and central capsule flattened.*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Phawodiscus, Haeck. ; Heliodiscus, Haeck. ; Spongodiscus, Haeck. ; Spongurus, Haeck.*~~

~~Fam. 3. THALASSICOLLIDA. Peripylea devoid of a skeleton, or with a skeleton composed of loose siliceous spieules only. Nueleus single ; central eapsule and general protoplasm spherieal.~~

~~Genera (seleeted).— Thalassicolla, Huxley (Fig. XIIL, Fig. XIV. 1); Thalassosphera, Haeck. ; Physematiwm, Haeek.~~

~~Fam. 4. Ponycyrraria. Peripylea eonsisting of eolonies of many central eapsules united by their extracapsular protoplasm. Central capsules multiplying by fission. Nuclei in each central capsule numerous. Siliceous skeleton either absent, or of loose spieules, or having the form of a spherical fenestrated shell sur- rounding each eentral eapsule.~~

~~Genera (seleeted). —Collosphera, Miiller (with fenestrated globular skeleton); Sphxrozowm, Haeek. (skeleton of numerous loose spieules which are branched); Raphidozoum, Haeek. (spieules simple); Col- lozowm, Miiller (devoid of skeleton, Fig. XIV. 2, 3, 4, 5).~~

~~——~~

~~Fig. XIV.—Radi i — olaria, Huxley, in radial section. corpuscular structures of th~~

~~1. Central capsule of Thalassicoll ‘ a nucleata ie beaten ch wisn (Binnenblaschen); b, pails : psular protoplasm aini con- mia i ee aes! of the eapsule (membranous anid, iene ae ‘fas ini, — = Ms z nucleolar fibres (chromatin substance) of the pets ee eek en ogi tnerme, J. Miiller, two different forms of Collozoum feicntea ciefwing thi hee ‘eric eRe tee ts. Sing~~

~~eat ¢ , psular protopl~~

~~en up <4 & number of spores, the germs of smesutaporien i eciece: co a~~

[RADIOLARIA.

each encloses a crystalline rod. _c, yellow cells lying in the extracapsular protoplasm. 5. A small colony of Collozowm inerme, magnified 25 diameters. a, alveoli (vacnoles) of the extracapsular protoplasm; 0

central capsules, each containing besides protoplasm a large vil-globule. 6-13. Yellow cells of various Radiolaria:—6, normal yellow cell; 7, 8

division with formation of transverse septum; 9, a modified condition according to Brandt ; 10, division of a yellow cell into four ; 11, ameeboid condition of a yellow cell from the body of a dead Spheerozoon ; 12, a similar cell in process of division; 13, a yellow cell the protoplasm of which is creeping out of its cellulose envelope. 14. Heliosphxra inermis, Haeck., living example; x 400. a, nucleus; b, central capsule ; c, siliceous basket-work skeleton. 15. Two swarm-spores (tlagellule) of Collozoum inerme, set free from such a central capsule as that drawn in 4; each contains a crystal 6 and a nucleus a. 16. Two swarm-spores of Collozoum inerme, of the second kind, viz., devoid of crystals, and of two sizes, a macrospore and a microspore. They have been set free from central capsules with contents of a different appearance from that drawnin4. a, nucleus. 17. Aetinomma asteracanthion, Haeck ; x 260; one of the Peripylea. Entire animal in optical section. 4, nucleus : b,. wall of the central capsule ; '¢, innermost siliceous shell enclosed in the nucleus ; cl, middle shell lying within the central capsule; ¢e?, outer shell lying in the extracapsular protoplasm. Your radial siliceous spines, hold. ing the three spherical shells together are seen. The radial fibrillation of the protoplasm and the fine extracapsular pseudopodia are to be noted. 18. Amphilonche messanensis, Haeck; x 200; one of the Acanthometridea. Entire animal as seen living.

OrpER 2, MONOPYLAA, Hertwig.

Characters. —Silieo-skeletal Radiolaria in which the central cap- sule is uot spherieal but monaxonie (cone-shaped), with a single per- forate area (pore-plate) placed on the basal face of the eone ; the membrane of the capsule is simple, the nucleus single ; the skeleton is extracapsular, and forms a seaffold-like or bee-hive-like strueture of monaxonie form.

~~*Fie. XV.—Eueyrtidium cranioides, Haeck ; x150; one of the Monopylea. Entire animal as seen in the living condition. The central capsule is hidden by the bee-hive-shaped siliceous shell within which it is lodged. Fam. 1. Preetrpa, Haeck: Skeleton formed of siliceous spines*~~

~~*loosely conjoined.*~~

~~*Genera (seleeted).—Plagiacantha, Haeek. ; Plegmatium, Haeck.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. CyrtTrpA, Haeek. Skeleton a monaxonie or triradiate shell, or continuous piece (bee-hive-shaped).*~~

~~*Genera (selected). —Halicalyptra, Haeek. ; Eucyrtidium, Haeek. (Fig. XV.) ; Carpocanium, Haeek. (Fig. XVI. 3).*~~

~~*Fam. 3. Borripa, Haeek. Irregular forms; the shell composed of several chambers agglomerated without definite order ; a single eentral capsule.*~~

~~*Genera. —Botryocyrtis, Haeek. ; Lithobotrys, Haeek.*~~

~~*_ Fam. 4. SpyRipA, Haeek. Gemminate forms, with shell con- sisting of two eonjoined chambers ; a single eentral capsule.*~~

~~*_Fam. 5. STEPHIIDA, Haeek. Skeleton ericoid, forming a single siliceous ring or several conjoined rings.*~~

~~*Genera (seleeted).—Acanthodesmia, Haeek. ; Haeek. ; Lithocircus, Haeek. (Fig. XVI. 1).*~~

~~*OrpER 3. PHAODARIA, Haeek. (Tripylea, Hertwig). Characters.—Silieo-skeletal Radiolaria in which the central*~~

~~*Zygostephanus,*~~

-

—

~~*a*~~

1. Lithocircus annularis, Hertwig; one of the

Fie. XVE.—Radiolaria.. i ICU ? d Monopylea. Whole animal in the living state (optical section). a@, nucleus; b, wall of the central capsule; ¢, yellow cells; d, perforated area of the

central capsule (Monopyla). 2. Cystidium inerme, Hertwig ; one of the Monopylea. Living animal. An example of a Monopyleon destitute of skeleton. a@,nucieus; 0, capsule-wall; c, yellow cells in the extracapsular protoplasm. 3. Carpocanium diadema, Haeck. ; optical section of the bee-hive-shaped shell to show the form and position of the protoplasmic body, a, the tri-lobed nucleus; 0, the siliceou$ shell; ¢, oil-globules; d, the per-forate area (pore-plate) of the central capsule. 4, Celodendrum gracillimum, Haeck.; living animal, complete ; oneofthe Tripylea. a, the characteristic dark pigment (phzeodium) surrounding the central capsule b. The peculiar branched siliceous skeleton, consisting of hollow fibres, and the expanded pseudopodia are seen. 5. Central capsule of one of the Tripylea, isolated, showing a, the nncleus; 0,c, the inner and the outer laminze of the capsule-wall; d, the chief or polar aperture; ¢é,c, the two secondary apertures. 6,7. Acanthometra Claparedei, Haeck. 7 shows the animal in optical section, so as to exhibit the characteristic meeting of the spines at the central point as in all Acanthometridea; 6 shows the transition from the uninuclear to the multinuclear condition hy the breaking up of the large nucleus. «a, small nuclei; 0, large fragments of the single nucleus; ¢c, wall of the central capsnie; d, extraeapsular jelly (not protoplasm); é, peculiar intracapsular_yellow cells. 8. Spongo- sphera streptacantha, Haeck.; one of the Peripylxa. Siliceous skeleton not quite completely drawn on the right side. a@, the spherical extra- capsular shell (compare Fig. XIV. 17), supporting very large radial spines which are connected by a spongy network of siliceous fibres. 9. Aulosphxra elegantissima, Haeck.; one of the Phwodaria. Half of the spherical siliceous skeleton.

~~*capsule has a double membrane and more thau one perforate area, viz., one chief " polar aperture," and one, two, or more accessory apertures (Fig. XVI. 5). The nucleus is single. Around the central capsule is an abundant dark brown pigment (phodium of Haeckel). The siliceous skeleton exhibits various shapes regular and irregular, but is often remarkable for the fact that it is built up of hollow tubes.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Pu#ocystipa, Haeck. The siliceous skeleton is either entirely absent or consists of hollow needles which arc disposed outside the central capsule, regularly or irregularly.*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Aulacantha, Haeck.; Thalassoplancta, Haeck.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. PH#oGRoMiIpA, Haeck. The siliceous skeleton consists of a single fenestrated shell, which may be spherical, ovoid, or often dipleuric, but always has one or more large openings.*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Challengeria, Wy. Thomson; Lithogromia, Haeck.*~~

~~*Fam. 8. PHmospHmRiDA. The siliceous skeleton consists of nunierous hollow tubes which are united in a peculiar way to form a large spherical or polyhedral basket-work.*~~

~~*Genera (selected). —Aulosphera, Haeck. (Fig. XVI. 9); Autlo- plegma, Haeck.; Cannacantha, Haeck.*~~

~~*Fam. 4. PHmoconcuipa. The siliceous skeleton consists of two separate fenestrated valves, similar to a mussel's shells; often there are attached to the valves simple or branched hollow tubes of silex.*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Conchidium, Haeck. ; Celodendrum, Haeck. (Fig. XVI. 4).*~~

~~*Sus-cLAss II, Acanthometridea, Lankester (= Acanthino-skeleta).*~~

~~*Characters.—Radiolaria in which the skeleton is composed of a peculiar horny substance known as acanthin (rarely of silica). The central capsule is uniformly perforate (Peripylea type).*~~

~~*Fam. I. AcANTHONIDA, Haeck. Skeleton consisting of twenty spines of acanthin disposed in five parallel zones of four spines each, meeting one another at the central point of the organism ; never forming a fenestrated shell. :*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Acanthometra, J. Miiller (Fig. XVI. 6, 7); Astrolonche, Haeck. ; Amphilonche, Haeck. (Fig. XIV. 18).*~~

~~*Fani. 2. DipLoconipa, Haeck. Skeleton a double cone.*~~

~~*Genus unicum.— Diploconus, Haeck.*~~

~~*Fam. 3. DorataspprpA, Haeck. The twenty acanthin spines of the skeleton form by transverse outgrowths a spherical fenestrated shell.*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Stawraspis, Haeck. ; Dorataspis, Haeck.*~~

~~*Fam. 4. SpH#RocAPSIDA, Haeck. The twenty acanthin spines are joined together at their free apices by a simple perforate shell of acanthin.—*~~

~~*Genus unicum.—Spherocapsa.*~~

~~*Fam. 5. LirHonopHipa. Skeleton of many needles of acanthin radiating from a single point without definite number or order.*~~

~~*Genera.—Litholophus, Haeck: ; Astrolophus, Haeck.*~~

~~*Further remarks on the Radiolaria.—It has not been possible in the systematic summary above given to enumerate the immiense number of genera which have been distinguished by Haeckel (42) as the result of the study of the skeletons of thisgroup. The important differences in the structure of the central capsule of different Radio- laria were first shown by*~~

~~*Hertwig, who also discovered that the spines of the Acanthometridea consist not of silica but of an organic com- pound. In view of this latter fact and of the peculiar numerical and architectural features of the Acanthometrid skeleton, it seems proper to separate them altogether from the other Radiolaria. The Peripylea may be regarded as the starting point of the Radiolarian pedigree, and have given rise on the one hand to the Acantho- metridea, which retain the archaic structure of the central capsule whilst developing a peculiar skeleton, and on the other hand to the Monopylea and Pheodaria which have modified the capsule but retained the siliceous skeleton.*~~

~~*Pheodaria. Monopylea. Acanthometridea,*~~

~~*= * 4)*~~

~~*Peripylea. g. ay C Ss = * SS ie s*~~

~~*% =*~~

~~*oy Archi-peripylxa. RADIOLARIA,*~~

~~*The occasional total absence of any siliceous or acanthinous skeleton does not appear to be a matter of classificatory importance, since skelctal elements occur in close allies of those very few forms*~~

~~*852*~~

~~*which are totally devoid of skeleton. Similarly it docs not appear to be a matter of great significance that some forms (Polycyttaria) form colonies, instead of the central capsules separating from one another after fission has occurred. ; :*~~

~~*It is important to note that the skeleton of silex or acanthin does not correspond to the shell of other Gymnomyxa, which appears rather to be represented by the membranous central cap- snle. The skeleton does, however, appear to correspond to the spicules of Heliozoa, and there is an undeniable affinity between such a form as Clathrulina (Fig. VI. 2) and the Spherid Peripylea (such as Heliosphera, Fig. XIV. 14). The Radiolaria are,*~~

~~*however, a very strongly marked group, definitely separated from all, other Gymnomyxa by the membranous central capsule sunk:in their proto- plasm. Their differences inter se do not atiect their essential struc- ture. The variations in the chemical composition of the skeleton and in the perforation of the capsule do not appear superficially. The most obvious features in which they differ from one another relate to the form and complexity of the skeleton, a part of the organism so little characteristic of the group that it may be wanting altogether. It is not known how far the form-species and form-genera which have been distinguished in such profusion by Haeckel as the result of a study of the skeletons are permanent (i.e., relatively permanent) physiological species. There is no doubt that very many are local and conditional varieties of a single Protean species. The same remark applies to the species discriminated among the shell-bearing Reticularia. It must not be supposed, however, that less importance is to be attached to the distinguishing and record- ing of such forms because we arc not able to assert that they are permanent species.*~~

~~*The yellow cells (of spherical form, 005 to 0°15 of a millimetre in diameter) which occur very generally scattered in the extra- capsular protoplasm of Radiolaria were at one time regarded as essential components of the Radiolarian body. Their parasitic nature is now rendered probable by the observations of Cien- kowski (43), Brandt (44), and Geddes (45), who have established that each cell has a cellulose wall and a nucleus (Fig. XIV. 6 to 18), that the protoplasm is impregnated by chlorophyll which, as in Diatoms, is obscured by the yellow pigment, and that a starch- like substance is present (giving the violet reaction with iodine). Further, Cienkowski showed, not only that the yellow cells multiply by fission during the life of the Radiolarian, but that when isolated they continue to live; the cellulose envelope becomes softened ; the protoplasm exhibits amoeboid movements and escapes from the envelope altogether (Fig. XIV. 13) and multiplies by fission. Brandt has given the name Zooxanthella nutricola to the parasitic*~~

~~*unicellular Alga thus indicated. Hie and Geddes have shown that a |*~~

~~*similar organism infests the endoderm cells of Anthozoa and of some Siphonophora in enormous quantities, and the former has been led, it seems*~~

~~*erroneously, to regard the chlorophyll corpuscles of Hydra viridis, Spongilla, and Ciliata as also parasitic Alge, for which he has coined the name Zoochlorella. The same arguments which Brandt has used to justify this view as to animal chlorophyll would warrant the creation of a genns " Phytochlorella" for the hypothetical Alga which has hitherto been described as tlic '**chlorophyll corpuscles" of the cells of ordinary green plants.*~~

~~*Zooranthella nutricola does not, for some unknown reason, infest*~~

~~*the Acanthometridea, and it is by no means so universally present in the bodies of the Silico-skeleta as was supposed before its parasitic nature was recognized, _ The streaming of the granules of the protoplasm has heen observed in the psendopodia of Radiolaria as in those of Heliozoa and Reticularia ; it las also been seen in the deeper protoplasm ; and granules have been definitely seen to pass through the pores of the central capsule from the intracapsular to the extraeapsular pro- toplasm. A feeble vibrating movement of the pseudopodia has been occasionally noticed.*~~

~~*The production of swarm-spores has been observed only in Acanthometra and in the Polycyttaria aud Thalassicollide, and ouly in the two latter groups have any detailed observations been made. Two distinct processes of swarm-spore production have been observed by Cienkowski (48), confirmed by Hertwig (46)—dis- tinguished by the character of the resulting spores which are called crystalligerous " (Fig. XIV. 15) in the one ease, and ' di- morphous" in the other (Fig. X1V. 16). In both processes the nucleated protoplasm within the central capsule breaks up by a more or less regular cell-division into small pieces, the details of the process differing a little in the two cases. In those individuals which produce crystalligerous swarm- spores, each spore encloses a small crystal (Fig. XIV. 15). On the other hand, in those indi- viduals which produce dimorphous swarm-spores, the contents of the capsule (which in both instances are set free by its natural rupture) are seen to consist of individuals of two sizes " macro- ae and "'microspores, " neither of which contain crystals (ig. XIV. 16). The further development of the spores has not been observed in either case. Both processes have been observed ps the same species, and it is suggested*~~

~~*that there is an alternation oF sexual and asexual generations, the crystalligerous spores*~~

~~*PROTOZOA*~~

~~*| (cf. capillitium of Mycetozoa).*~~

~~*[RADIOLARIA.*~~

~~*developing directly into adults, which in their turn produce in their central capsules dimorphous swarm-spores (acrospores and microspores), which in a manner analagous to that observed in the Volvocinean Flagellata copulate (permanently fuse) with one another (the larger with the smaller) before proceeding to develop. The adults resulting from this process would, it is suggested, pro- duce in their turn crystalligerous swarm-spores. Unfortunately we liave no observations to support this hypothetical scheme of a life-history.*~~

~~*Fusion or conjugation of adult Radiolaria, whether preliminary to swarm-spore-production or independently of it, has not been observed—this affording a distinction between them and Heliozoa, and an agreement, though of a negative character, with the Reticu- laria.*~~

~~*Simple fission of the central capsule of adnlt individuals and subsequently of the whole protoplasmic mass has been observed in several instances, and is probably a general method of reproduction in the group.*~~

~~*The siliceous shells of the Radiolaria are found abundantly in certain rocks. They furnish, together with Diatoms and Sponge- spicules, the silica which has been segregated as flint in the Chalk formation. They are present in quantity (as much as 10 per cent.) in the Atlantic ooze, and in the celebrated "Barbados earth" (a Tertiary deposit) are the chief components.*~~

~~*Grave B. CORTICATA, Lankester, 1878 (64).*~~

~~*Characters. Protozoa in which the protoplasm of the cell-body, in its adult condition, is permanently ditlerentiated into two layers, an outer denser*~~

~~*cortical substance and an inner more fluid medul- lary substance (fot to be confused with the merely temporary distinction of exoplasm and endoplasm sometimes noted in Gymmnomyxa, which is not structural but due to the gravitation and self-attraction of the coarser granules often embedded in the uniformly fluid protoplasm).*~~

~~*Since the Corticata have devcloped from simple Gymnomyxa exhibiting both ameeboid and flagellate phases of form and activity, it results (1) that the forms of the body of many Corticata are traceable to modifications of these primitive forms; (2) that the young stages of the Corticata are in the lower classes of that group typical flagellule or amcebnle ; and (3) that there are certain archaic forms included in those lower classes whose position there is doubtful, and which might be with almost equal propriety assigned. to the Gymnomyxa, since they are transitional from that lower grade to the higher grade of Corticata.*~~

~~*Crass I. SPOROZOA, Leuckart (47); Syn. Gregarinida, Auct. Characters. —Corticata parasitic in almost all classes and orders of animals, imbibing nutriment from the diffusible albuminoids of*~~

~~*their hosts and therefore monthless. In typical cases there is hatched froma chlamydospore one or more modified nucleate or*~~

~~*‘ non-nucleate flagellula (falciform young, drepanidium phase).*~~

~~*The flagellula increases in size and differentiates cortical and medullary substance. Fission is common in the younger stages of growth. The movements now become neither vibratile nor ame- boid but definitely restrained, and are best described as “ “ eugle- noid” (cf. Flagellata, Fig. XX. 27, 28). The nucleus is single, large, and spherical, No contractile vacuole and rarely any vacuole is present. A size of ?yth inch may be attained in this phase, which may be definitely spoken of as the euglena phase corre- sponding to the amceba phase of Gymnomyxa. It is usually of oblong form, with sac-like contractile wall of cortical substance, but may be spherical (Coccidiidea) or even amceboid (Myxosporidia).*~~

~~*Conjugation, followed directly or after an interval by sporulation, may now ensue. The conjugated individuals (two), or sometinics a single individual,*~~

~~*become encysted. The contents of the cysts now rapidly divide (by a process the details of which are unknown) into minute ovoid nucleated (2) bodies ; sometimes a portion of the protoplasm is not converted into spores but may form sporoducts Each piece acquires a special chitin-like colourless coat, and is then a chlamydospore. Rarely one spore only is formed from the whole contents of a cyst. The spore-coat is usually thick, and remarkable for processes and other accessory developments. The included protoplasm of the chlamydo- spore frequently divides into several pieces before hatching. These usually, when set free from the spore-coat, have the form of modified nucleated flagellule, i.¢., flagellule in which the protoplasm is not drawn out into a thread-like flagellum but exhibits an elongate form, uniformly endowed with vibratile activity. With few (if any) excep- tions, the falciform young thus characterized penetrates a cell of some tissue of its host and there undergoes the first stages of its growth (hence called Cytozoa). In some forms the pre-cystic phase never escapes from its cell host. In other cases it remains connected with the hospitable cell long after it has by growth exceeded by many hundred times the bulk of its quondam entertainer; often it loses all connexion with its cell host and is carried away to some other part of the infested animal before completing its growth and eneysting,*~~

~~*SPOROZOA. |*~~

~~*The Sporozoa are divided into four sub-classes, differing from one another according to the form and development attained by the euglena phase. We shall place the most highly developed first, not only because our knowledge about it is most complete, but because it is possible that one at least: of the other sub-classes is derived by degeneration from it.*~~

~~*Sus-ciass I, Gregarinidea, Biitschli (9).*~~

~~*Characters. —Sporozoa in which the euglena phase is dominant, being relatively of large size, elongate in form, definitely shaped, having contractile but not viscid cortex, and exhibiting often active nutritional and locomotor phenomena. Though usually if not*~~

~~*invariably cell-parasites in early youth, they become free before attaining adult growth, and inhabit either the body-cavity or the Many spores are*~~

~~*produced in the encysted The spores have an oblong, sometimes caudate coat, and At present only*~~

~~*intestine of their hosts. phase. produce each one or several falciform young. known as parasites of Invertebrata.*~~

~~*st*~~

~~*Fig. X VII.—Sporozoa. . 1, 2. Monocystis agulis, Stem; x250; from the testis of the Earthworm. Two phases of movement—a ring-like contraction*~~

~~*NN)*~~

~~*passing along the body from one end to the other. 3. Individual of the sanie species which has penetrated in the young stage a sperm-cell of the Earthworm, aud is now clothed as it were with spermatoblasts. 4, Monocystis magna, A. Schmidt, from the testis of the Earthworm (Z. terres-*~~

~~*PROTOZOA*~~

~~*853*~~

~~*tris, L.). Two individuals, which are implanted by one extremity at b in two epithelial cells of the rosette of the spermatic duct. a, uuclens of the Monocystis. 5. Tailed chlamydospores of Monocystis senuridis, Koll. 6. Two M. agilis encysted, spores forming on the surface of the*~~

~~*protoplasm. 7. A similar cyst further advanced in spore-formation (see Fig. XVITIT.). 8. Spore of af. agilis, now elongated but still naked. a,nucleus. x 1400. 9. The spore has now encased itselfin a navicula-*~~

~~*shaped coat. a, nucleus. 10. The spore protoplasm has now divided into several falciform swarm-spores, leaving a portion of the protoplasm unused. 06, Schneider's residual core. 11. Optical transverse section of a completed spore. b, Schneider's residual core. 12. Chlamydospor*~~

~~*of Klossia chitonis, nov. sp., from the liver of Chiton (original.) 13, 14. Chlamydospore of Monocystis nemertis, Koll., liberating falciform young. 0b, Schneider's residue. 15. Monocystis pellucida, Koll. (from Nereis) ; x*~~

~~150; to show the very thick cortical substance and its fibrilla- tion (after Lankester, 54). 16. Monocystis senuridis, K6ll., two indivi- duals adhering to one another (asyzygium). For spores see 5. 17. Mono- cystis aphrodite, Lankester (55); x 60; remarkable among Monocystids for its long proboscis resembling the epimerite of some Septata. 18. Klossia helicina, Aim. Schn., from the kidney of Helix hortensis. A single cell of the renal epithelium in which a full-grown Klossia is embedded. a, nucleus of the Klossia; a', nucleus of the renal cell. 19. Cyst of Klossia helicina, the contents broken up into spherical chlamydo- spores. 20. Single spore from the last, showing falciform young and a Schneider's residue b. 21. The contents of the same spore. 22, A small renal cell of Helix containing two of the youngest stage of Klossia. a Monocystis sagittata, Leuck., from the intestine of Capitella capitata ; x 100. 24 to 31. Coccidium oviforme, Leuck., from the liver of the Rabbit: —24, adult individual encysted; 25, the protoplasm contracted—a, nucleus ; 26, 27, division into four spores, as yet naked; 28, 29, the spores haveacquired a covering, 7.¢., are chlamydospores, and each contains a single falciform young; 30, 31, two views of a chlamydospore more highly magni- fied so as to show the single falciform young (from Leuckart). 32. Klossia octopiana, Aim. Schn., fron Cephalopoda. a, nucleus; b, cyst-membrane. Xx 200 diam. 33. Single spherical spore of the same; x 1400 diam; showing numerous falciform young, and }, Schneider's residue. 34. Myzidium Lieberkiihnii, Biitschli, one of the Myxosporidia, from the bladder of the Pike (Esox); creeping euglena phase, showing strongly lobed amoeboid character (pseudopodia and undifferentiated (?) cortex); x 60 diam. 35-39. Eimcria falciformis, Eimer sp., from the Mouse :— 35, an adult non-encysted individual inhabiting an epithelial cell of the intestine of the mouse; 36, encysted phase; 37, clear corpuscles appear in the encysted protoplasm; 38, the protoplasm now forms a single spore containing several falciform young; 6, Schneider's residue; 39, isolated spore showing falciform young, and 0, Schneider's residue. 40. Chlamydospore of Myzobolus Miilleri, Biitschli, one of the Myxo- sporidia from the gills of Cyprinoid Fishes. a, nucleus; b, refringent corpuscle; ¢, polar body or thread-capsule. 41. A similar chlamydo- spore which has ejected the filaments from its thread capsules. 42. Chlamydospore of a Myxosporidium infesting the kidney of Lota vulgaris. ¢, polar body (psorosperm of authors). 43, 44. Chlamydospores of a Myxosporidium from the gills of Perca (psorosperm of authors). Compare with the tailed chlamydospore of~~

~~*Monocystis senuridis, 5. 45 =47, Drepanidium ranarum, Lankester, the falciform young of an unascertained Coccidiide infesting the Frog (supposed by Gaule to be pro- duced by the blood corpuscles) :—45, specimen stained by iodine; 46, red- blood corpuscle of Frog, showing b, two contained Drepanidia, and a, the nucleus of the blood corpuscle ; 47, living Drepanidium. 48. Chlamy- dospore of Lieberkiihn's Voccidium of the Frog's kidney, perhaps belong- ing to the life-cycle of Drepanidium ranarum. The spore contains two falciform young (Drepanidia?) and a Schneider's residue. 49. Chlamydospore of Monocystis thalassemv, Lankester, containing nume- rous falciform young. 50, 51. Sarcocystis Miescheri, Lankester :—50, falciform young escaped from chlamydospores ; 51, adult euglena phase inhabiting a striated muscle fibre of the Pig.*~~

~~*Oxnper 1. HAPLOCYTA, Lankester.*~~

~~*Characters.—Gregarinidea in which there is never at any time a prtition of the medullary substance into two or more chambers. The euglenoid is always a single contractile sac with one mass of medullary substance in which floats the large vesicular transparent nucleus. Spores larger than in the next group, each producing several falciform young.*~~

~~*Genus unicum.—Monocystis, Stein, 1848. The various generic subdivisions proposed by Aim. Schneider (48), and accepted by Biitschh, appear to the present writer to have insufficient characters, and serve to complicate rather than to organize our knowledge of the subject. We do not yet know enough of the sporulation and subsequent development of the various monocystic Gregarinides to justify the erection of distimet genera.*~~

~~*Monocystis agilis, Stein, Fig. XVII. 1, 2, 3, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, and Fig. XVIII. is the type. The other species of Monocystis oveur chiefly (and very commonly) in marine Annelids, Platyhel- minthes, Gephyrea, and Tunicata; not in Arthropoda, Mollusca, nor Vertebrata. The only definite differences which they present of possibly more than specific worth, as compared with M. agilis, are in the form of the chlamydospores, which are sometimes tailed, as in M. senuridis (Fig. XVII. 5), and in Af. nemertis (Fig. XVII. 13) and M. sipunculi, and further also certain differences in the*~~

~~*eneral form, as for instance the anchor-like M. sagittata (Fig. XVII. 23), and the proboscidiferous If. aphroditz (Fig. XVII. 17). The fine parallel striation of the cuticule in some species (Jf, serpul#, &c.) might also be made the basis of a generic or sub- generic group.*~~

~~*On the whole it seems best to leave all the species for the present in the one genus Monocystis, pending further knowledge. It seems probable that more than one species (at least two, Mf. agilis and Jf. magna) infest the common Earthworm.*~~

~~*Orver 2. SEPTATA, Lankester.*~~

~~*Characters. —Gregarinidea in which in the adult the medullary substance is separated into two chambers—a smaller anterior (the*~~

~~*854*~~

~~*protomerite) and a larger posterior (the deutomerite), in which lies the nucleus. 'There is frequently if not always present, either in early growth or more persistently, an anterior proboseis-like appen- dage (the epimerite) growing from the protomerite. The epimerite serves to attach the parasite to its host, and may for that purpose earry hooklets. It is always shed sooner or later. The phase in which it is present is called a " eephalont," the phase after it has broken off a "sporont" (see Fig. XIX. 22, 23). The spores are smaller than in the preceding group, often very minute, and some- times the eyst is complicated by the formation of sporoduets, and by a kind of "capillitium " of residual protoplasm (Fig. XIX. 2). Spores produeing each only a single (?) faleiform young.*~~

~~*Genera. —Gregarina, Dufour ; Hoplorhynchus, Von Carus.*~~

~~*[The numerous genera which have been proposed at different times by Hammersehmidt and others, and more recently by Aime Sehneider, appear to the present writer to be unservieeable, owing to the fact that our knowledge is as yet very incomplete. XIX. 2).*~~

~~*Another possible basis for generic division of the Septata may be found in the characters of the epimerite. This may be present or absent altogether. It*~~

~~may exist only in the young condition or persist until growth is completed. It may be simple, short, elongate, or provided with hooklets. The presence of hooklets on the epimerite is the only character which at present seems to serve conveniently for generic distinction. With regard to the other points mentioned we are not sufficiently informed, since we know the complete history of development from the young form set free from the spore in only one or two cases.]~~

~~The Septata are found exclusively in the alimentary canals of Arthropoda (Insects, Myriapods, Crustacea, not Arachnida). See Fig. XIX. for various examples of the group. ;~~

~~Fic. XVITI.—Cyst of Monocysti ili i ; | cystis agilis, the common Gregarini Earthworm ; X 750 diam. ; showing ripe chlamydospores vit toniles~~

~~absence of a] (aic. any residual protoplasm or other material in the cyst~~

~~Sus-cuass I]. Coccidiidea, Biitsehli (9).~~

~~Sporozoa in which the euglena phase remains of relati ae size, of spherical shape and tape egg-cell-like cee ¥ . not locomotive, but continues, until the cyst is formed to im abit a single cell of the host. Many, few, or one single chlamy- cee, are formed in the cyst. One or more falciform youn Tike Pe caeli spore, and exhibit active movements (flagellula- iike) leading to a penetration of a tissue-cell by the young form as in Gregarinidea. Many are parasites of Vertebrata. =~~

~~OxpER 1. MONOSPOREA, Aim. Schn.~~

~~Characters. — ers clers.—The whole content of the cyst forms but a single Genus unicum.—Fimeria (in the intestinal epithelium of Triton,~~

~~Frog, Sparr M ie irae : ‘ Fig XVI poy _ and the Myriapods Lithobius and Glomeris,~~

~~PROTOZOA~~

~~[SPOROZOA.~~

~~*Be*~~

~~*tas*~~

~~*se Ss Se*~~

~~*Fig. XIX.—Sporozoa (Septata). 1. Gregarina blattarwm, Siebold, from the intestine of Blatta orientalis; x 80. Asyzyginm of two individuals. Each animal consists of a small anterior chamber, the protomerite, and a large posterior chamber, the deutomerite, in which is the nucleus a. 2; Over-ripe cyst of Gregarina dlattarum, with thick gelatinous envelope e, and projecting sporoducts d. The spores have been nearly all discharged, but amass of them still lies in the centre of the cyst b. Thespecimen has been treated with dilute KHO, and the granular contents of the cyst dissolved. Around the central mass of spores is rendered visible the net- work of protoplasmic origin in which the ejected spores were embedded. This distinctly resembles in origin and function the capillitium of Mycetozoa (Fig. III.). a, the plasmatic channels leading to the everted sporoducts; b, the still remaining spores; ¢, the proper cyst-wall ; d, the everted sporoducts; ¢, the gelatinous envelope. 3. Aripe spore (chlamydo spore) of Gregarina blattarum, a long time after its escape from the cyst; x 1600 diam. 4, Commencing encystment of a syzy- gium of G. blattarum. a, protomerite of one individual ; b, gelatinous envelope ; ¢, protomerite of the second individual. 5. Three epithelial cells of the mid-gut of Blatta orientalis, into the end of each of which an extremely young Gregarina blattarwm has made its way. 6. Further development of the young Gregarina; only the epimerite a is now buried in the substance of the epithelial cell, and this will soon break off and set the Gregarina free. It is now a "'cephalont" ; it will then become a " sporont." 7. Basal part of an everted sporodnct of Gregarina blattarum. a, granu- lar-fibrous mass investing the base of the duct; b, commencement of the plasmatic channel in the interior of which the sporoduct was produced as an invaginated cuticular formation before its eversion. 8. Gregarina giyantea, E. Van Ben., from the intestine of the Lobster; x 150. a, nucleus.~~

~~*ee*~~

~~*SPOROZOA.*~~ |

~~*9. Anterior end of the same more highly magnified. a, protomerite ; 6, layer of circular fibrille lying below the cuticle ; ¢, cortical substance of the deutomerite; d, medullary substance of the deutomerite. 10. Two spores of Gregarina gigantea (after Butschli), showing the very thick coat of the spore. 11-15. Stages in the development of Gregarina gigantea :—11, recently escaped from the spore-coat, no nucleus; 12, still no nucleus, one vibratile and one motionless process; 138, the two processes have divided; one here drawn has developed a nucleus; 14, further growth ; 15, the deutomerite commences to develop. 16. Cysts of Gregarina gigantea, from the rectum of the Lobster. The donble contents are believed by Ed. Van Beneden to be due not to conjugation previous to encystment but to subsequent fission. 17,18. Gregarina longicollis, Stein, from the intestine of Blaps mortisaga :—17, cephalont phase, with a long proboscis-like epimerite a, attached to the protomerite 0}; 18, sporont phase, the epimerite having been cast preliminarily to syzygy and encystment. 19. Gregarina Maniert, Aim. Schneider, from the intestine of Timarcha knebricosa, to show the network of anastomosing fibres beneath the cuticle, similar to the annular fibrille of G. gigantea shown in 9. 20. Gregarina (Hoplorhynchus) obligacanthus, Stein, from the intestine of the larva of Agrion. Cephalont with spine-crowned epimerite a. 21. Spores of Gregarina oligacanthus. 22, 23. Grega- rina (Hoplorhynchus) Dujardini, Aim. Schneider, from the intestine of Lithobius forficatus :—22, specimen with epimerite a, therefore a “ cepha- lont”; 23, specimen losing its epimerite by rupture and becoming a*~~

~~*“*sporont.” OrpER 2. OLIGOSPOREA, Aim. Schn.~~

~~*Characters.——The cyst-content develops itself into a definite and constant but small number of spores.*~~

~~*Genus unicum.—Coccidiwm, Leuck. (in intestinal epithelium and liver of Mammals, and some Invertebrates, Figs. XVI. 24 to 31).*~~

~~*OrpER 3. POLYSPOREA.*~~

~~*Characters.—The cyst-content develops itself into a great num- ber of spores (sixty or more).*~~

~~*Genus unicum.—K/ossia, Aim. Schn. Three species of Klossia are found in Mollusca—viz., in Helix, in Cephalopods, and in Chiton. Schneider's genus, Adelea, from Lithobius, appears to belong here. Kloss (49) discovered the parasite of the renal cells of Helix hortensis represented in Fig. XVII. 18, 19, 20, 21, and 22; Schneider that of Cephalopods, Fig. XVII. 32, 33. In Chiton Dr Tovey has discovered a third species with very remarkable spores, which are here figured for the first time (Fig. XVII. 12).*~~

~~*The Drepanidium Ranarum (Fig. XVII. 45, 46, 47), discovered by Lankester (50) in the Frog's blood, is probably the falciform young of a Coccidium parasitic in the Frog's kidney, and discovered there by Lieberktihn (51). A spore of this Coccidium is shown in Fig. XVII. 48; whilst in 46 two Drepanidia which have penetrated a red-blood corpuscle of the Frog are represented.*~~

~~*The Polysporous Coccidiidea come very close to the Gregarinide genus Monocystis, from which they may be considered as being derived by an arrest of development. The spores and falciform young of the Coccidiidea are closely similar to those of Monocystis, and the young in both cases penetrate the tissue-cells of their host ; but in Monocystis this is only a temporary condition, and growth leads to the cessation of such "'cell-parasitism." On the other hand, growth is arrested in the Coccidiidea, and the organism is permanently a cell-parasite.*~~

~~*Since the parasitism is more developed in the case of a cell-para- site than in the case of a parasite which wanders in the body cavity, it seems probable that the Coccidiidea have been derived from the Gregarinidea rather than that the reverse process has taken place.*~~

~~*Sup-ciass III. Myxosporidia, Biitschli.*~~

~~*Characters.—Sporozoa in which the euglena-phase is a large multinucleate amceba-like organism (Fig. XVII. 34). The cysts are imperfectly known, but appear to be simple; some attain a diameter of two lines. The spores are highly characteristic, having each a thick coat which is usually provided with a bifurcate process or may have thread capsules (like nematocysts) in its substance (Fig. XVII. 40, 41, 42, 43, 44).*~~

~~*The spores contain a single nucleus, and are not known to produce falciform young, but in one case have been seen to liberate an ameebula. The further development is unknown. The Myxo- sporidia are parasitic beneath the epidermis of the gills and fins, and in the gall-bladder and urinary bladder of Fishes, both freshwater and marine. .*~~

~~*Genera.—Myzxidiwm, Biitschli (Pike, Fig. XVII. 34); Myzobolus, Biitschli (Cyprinoids) ; Lithocystis, Giard (the Lamellibranch Echino- cardium).*~~

~~*The Myxosporidia are very imperfectly known. They present very close affinities to the Mycetozoa, and are to be regarded as a connecting link between the lower Gymnomyxa and the typical Sporozoa. Possibly their large multinucleate amceba phase is a plasmodium formed by fusion of amcebule set free from spores, though it is possible that the many nuelei are the result of a division of an original single nucleus, preparatory to sporulation.*~~

~~*Their spores are more elaborate in structure than those of any other Protozoa, and are more nearly paralleled by those of some species of Monocystis than by those of Mycetozoa. The thread- capsules of the spores are identical in structure with those of Hydrozoa, and probably serve as organs of attachment, as do the furcate processes of the spore-case. It is not certain that a definite*~~

~~*cyst is always or ever formed, but as occurs rarely in some Gregari- nidea, the spores may be formed in a non encysted ameba form. Although pseudopodia, sometimes short and thread-like, have been observed in the ameeba phase, yet it is also stated that a distinction of cortical and medullary substance obtains. The " psorosperms" of J. Miiller arc the spores of Myxosporidia.*~~

~~*Sus-ciass IV. Sarcocystidia, Biitschli.*~~

~~(This division is formed by Biitschli for the reception of Sarco- cystis, parasitic in the muscular fibres of Mammals, and of Ameebi- dium, parasitic in Crustacea. Both are very insufficiently known, but have the form of tubular protoplasmic bodies in which numcer- ous ovoid spores are formed from which falciform young escape.)~~

~~Genera.—Sarcocystis, Lankester ; Amebidiwm, Cienkowski (52). Sarcocystis (Fig. X VIL. 50,51, S. Mieseheri, Lank.), was first observed by Miescher in the striated muscle-fibres of the Mouse ; then by Rainey in a similar position in the Pig, and taken by him for the youngest stage in the development of the cysts of Tania soliwm ; subsequently studied by Beale and others in connexion with the cattle-plague epidemic, and erroneously supposed to have a causal connexion with that disease. It is common in healthy butcher's meat. See Leuckart (47).~~

~~Further remarks on the Sporozoa.—The Sporozoa contrast strongly with the large classes of Gymnomyxa, the Heliozoa, Reticularia, and Radiolaria, as also with the Ciliate and Tentaculi- ferous Corticata, by their abundant and rapidly recurrent forma- tion of spores, and agree in this respect with some Proteomyxa, with Mycetozoa, and some Flagellata. Their spores are remark- able for the firm, chitin-like spore-coat and its varied shapes, contrasting with the cellulose spherical spore-coat of Mycetozoa and with the naked spores of Radiolaria and Flagellata.~~

~~The protoplasm of the more highly developed forms (Gregarini- dea) in the euglenoid phase exhibits considerable differentiation. Externally a distinct cuticle may be present, marked by parallel ruge (AMonocystis serpulx) or by fine tubercles (Aonoeystis sipun- euli). A circlet of hooks may be formed by the cuticle at one end of the body. Below the cuticle is sometimes developed a layer of fibrils running transversely to the long axis of the body (Fig. AIX. 9 and 19), which have been regarded as contractile, but are probably cuticular. The cortical layer of protoplasm below these cuticular structures is dense and refringent and sometimes fibril- lated (Monocystis pellucida, Fig. XVII. 15). It is the contractile substance of the organism, and encloses the finely granular more liquid medullary substance. The granules of the latter have been shown by Riitschli (9) to give a starch-like reaction with iodine, &c. Probably the protoplasm in which they lie is finely~~

~~*reticulate or vacuolar, and when the granules are few it is actually seen to be so. No contractile vacuole is ever present. In Myxosporidia the medullary protoplasm is coloured yellow by hematoidin derived from the blood of its host or by absorbed bile-pigment, and also contains small crystals.*~~

~~*The nucleus of the Gregarinidea is a large clear capsule, with a few or no nucleolar granules. It has never been seen in a state of division, and it is not known what becomes of it during sporula- tion, though sporulating Gregarinidea have been observed with many minute nuclei scattered in their protoplasm, presumably formed by a breaking up of the single nucleus.*~~

~~*The habit of attaching themselves in pairs which is common in Gregarinidea is perhaps a reminiscence of a more extensive forma- tion of aggregation plasmodia (compare Mycetozoa). The term '**syzygium"' is applied to such a conjunction of two Gregarinidea ; it is not accompanied by. fusion of substance. The formation of cysts is not connected with. this pairing, since the latter occurs in young individuals long before encystment. Also cysts are formed by single Gregarinidea, as is always the case in the non-motile Coccidiidea.*~~

~~*The encystment always leads to the formation of spores, but in rare cases sporulation has been observed in unencysted Gregarini- dea, and it occurs perhaps normally without true cyst-formation in the Myxosporidia.*~~

~~*The cell-parasitism of the young Sporozoa, and their flagellula- like (falciform) young and active vibratile movement, are points indicating affinity with the lower Gymnomyxa, and especially with those Proteomyxa, such as Vampyrella and Plasmodiophora, which are cell-parasites. Indeed it is probable that we have in this fact of cell-parasitism, and especially of parasitism in animal cells, a basis for the theoretical association of several unicellular organisms. The Haplococcus of Zopf (regarded by him as a Mycetozoon) is parasitic in the muscular cells of the Pig, and is probably related to Sarcocystis. Recently Von Lendenfeld (53) has described in Australia an amœba-like organism as parasitic in the skin of Sheep, which will probably be found to be either a Sporozoon or referable to those parasitic spore-producing Proteomyxa which are separated from Sporozoa*~~

~~only by their negative characters (see previous remarks on the negative characters of Proteomyxa).~~

~~The application of the name "Gregarines" has sometimes been~~

~~nothing in common with the Sporozoa. This was the case in regard to a fungoid growth in human hair—the so-called ni — Gregarine." The Silk-worm disease known as " pebrine" las also been attributed to a Gregarine. Itseems probable that the parasitic organism which eauses that disease is (as 1s also the distinct parasite causing the disease known as " flaecidezza" in the same animals) one of the Schizomyeetes (Bacteria). No disease is known at present as 'due to Sporozoa, although (eg., the Klossia chitonis) they may lead to atrophy of the organs of the animals which pe! infest, in consequenee of their enormous numbers. Coccidia an~~

~~Sarcoeystis are stated to oeeur in Man.~~

~~Ciass I. FLAGELLATA,! Ehrenberg.~~

~~Characters. —Corticata in which the dominant phase in the life- history is a eorticate flagellula, that is, a nueleated cell-body pro- vided with one or a few large processes of vibratile protoplasin. Very eommonly solid food particles are ingested through a distinct cell-mouth or aperture in the cortical protoplasm, thongh in some an imbibition of nutritive matter by the whole surface and a nutri- tional process ehemically resembling that of plants (holophytic), ehlorophyll being present, seems to oceur. ;~~

~~Conjugation followed by a breaking up into very numerous minute naked spores is frequent in some; as also a division into small individuals (mierogonidia), which is followed by their conjugation with one another or with big individuals (macrogonidia) and subse- quent normal growth and binary fission. ;~~

~~Many have a well-developed cuticle, which may form collar-like outgrowths or stalk-like processes. Many produce either gelatinous or ehitin-like shells (eups or ceenceeia), which are connected so as to form spherical or~~

~~*arborescent colonies ; in these colonies the proto- plasmic organisms themselves produce new individuals by fission, which separate entirely from one another but are held together by the continuity, with those already existing, of the new shells or jelly-houses or stalk-like supports produced by the new individuals. 'A single well-marked spherieal nucleus, and one or more contractile vacuoles, are always present in the full-grown form.*~~

~~*Often, besides ingested food-particles, the protoplasm contains starch granules (amylon nucleus), paramylum corpuscles, chromato- phors and ehlorophyll corpuseles, some of which may be so abundant as to obscure the nucleus. One or two pigment spots (stigmata or so-called eye-spots) are often present at the anterior end of the body.*~~

~~*Sus-exiass I. Lissoflagellata, Lankester.*~~

~~*Never provided with a collar-like outgrowth around the oral pole.*~~

~~*Orper 1. MONADIDEA, Biitschli.*~~

~~*Characters.— Lissoflagellata of small or very small size and simple structure; often naked and more or less amceboid, sometimes forming tests. Usually colourless, seldom with ehromatophors. With a single anterior large flagellum or sometimes with two additional paraflagella. A special month-area is often wanting, sometimes is present, but is never produced into a well-developed pharynx.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Ruromasriciva, Butsehli. Simple mouthless forms with 1 to 2 flagella; either permanently exhibiting a Gymnomyxa- like development of pseudopodia or eapable of passing suddenly from a firm-walled into a Gymnomyxa-like condition, when the flagella may remain or be drawn in. Ingestion of food by aid of the pseudopodia.*~~

~~*Genera.—Mastigameba, F. E. Sehultze; Ciliophrys, Cienkowski (65); Dimorpha, Gruber; Actinomonas, Kent; Trypanosoma, Gruby (parasitic in the blood of Frogs and other Amphibia and Reptiles. Fig. XX. 21, 22). The Rhizomastigina might all be assigned to the Proteomyxa, with which they closely connect the group of Flagellata. The choice of the position to be assigned to such a form as Ciliophrys must be arbitrary.*~~

~~*Fam. 2, CERCOMONADINA, Kent. Minute oblong cell-body which posteriorly may exhibit amceboid changes. One large anterior flagellum. Mouth at the base of this organ. Reproduc- tion by longitudinal fission and by multiple fission producing spores in the eneysted resting state. j*~~

~~*_ Genera. —Cercomonas, Duj. (Fig. XX. 82, 33); Herpetomonas, S. Kent ; Oikomonas, Kent (=Monas, James Clark ; Pseudospora Cienkowski, Fig. XX. 29, 80, 81); Ancyromonas, 8. K.*~~

~~*Fam. By CopoNGcINA, Kent. Small colourless monads similar to Oikomonas in structure, which secrete a fixed gelatinous or membranous envelope or cup.*~~

~~*——— pee 24 Sse Clark; Platytheca, Stein.*~~

~~*. 4. Brkaerna, Stein. Distinguished fro ily by the fact that the monad is fixed in its pg na thread-like stalk ; eup usually raised on a delicate stalk.*~~

~~*Genera. —Bicoseca, J. Cl. ; Poteriodendron, Stein.*~~

~~*1 Butschili's work*~~

~~*groups of Flag (9) has been pretty closely followed in the diagnosis of the*~~

~~*ellata and the cnumeration of genera here given.*~~

~~*PROTOZOA*~~

~~*made erroneously to external parasitic organisms, which have*~~

~~*[FLAGELLATA.*~~

~~*Fic. XX.—Flagellata. 1. Chlamydomonas pulvisculus, Ehr. (=Zygoselmis, From.); one of the Phytomastigoda; free-swimming individual. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole; ¢, starch corpuscle; 4, cellulose investment; e, stigma (eye-spot). 2. Resting stage of the same, with fourfold division of the cell-contents. Letters as before. 3. Breaking up of the cell-contents into minute biflagellate swarm-spores, which escape, and whose history is not further known. 4. Synerypta volvox, Thr. ; one of the Phytomastigoda. A*~~

colony enclosed by a common gelatinous test c. a, stigma; 6b, vacuole (non-contractile). 5. Uroglena volvoz, Ehr.; one of the Monadidea. Half of a large colony, the flagellates embedded in a common jelly. 6. Chlorogonium euchlorum, Ehr. ; one of the Phytomastigoda. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole; ¢, starch grain; d@, eye-spot. 7. Chlorogonium euchlorum, Ehr., one of the Phytomastigoda. Copulation of two liberated microgonidia. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole; d, eye-spot (so-called). 8. Colony of Dinobryon sertularia, Ehr. ; x 200; one of the Monadidea. 9. Hxemato-coccus palustris, Girod (= Chlamydococcus, Braun, Protococcus Cohn), one of the Phytomastigoda; ordinary individual with widely separated test. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole; c, amylon nucleus (pyrenoid). 10. Dividing resting stage of the same, with eight fission products in the common test e | 11. A microgonidium of the same. 12. Phalansterium consociatum, Cienk., one of the Choanoflagellata ; x 325. Disk-like colony. 13. Euglena viridis, Bhr.; x 300; one of the Euglenoidea. a, pigment spot (stigma); }, clear space ; ¢, paramyluml granules ; d, chromacophor (endochrome plate). 14. Gonium pectorale, O. F. Miiller; one of the Phytomastigoda. Colony seen from the flat side. x 300. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole; ¢, amylon nucleus. 15. Dinobryon sertularia, Ehr.; one of the Monadidea. a, nucleus; 0, con-

FLAGELLATA. |

tractile vacuole: c, amylon-nucleus ; d, free colourless flagellates, probably not belonging to Dinobryon; e, stigma (eye-spot); Jf, chromatophors.

16. Peranema trichophorum, Ehr., (one of the Euglenoidea), creeping |

individual seen from the back; x 140. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuoles; c, pharynx ; d, month. Ehr., in profile. (eye-spot); ¢, paramylumi-body ; /, chlorophyll corpuscles. 18. Part of the surface of a colony of Volvox globator, L. (Phytomastigoda), showing the intercellnlar connective fibrils. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole; c, amylum granule. 19. Two microgonidia of Volvox globator, L. a, nucleus; 06, contractile vacuole. 20. Ripe asexually produced daughter-individual of Volvox minor, Stein, still enclosed in the cyst of the partheno-gonidium. a, young partheno-gonidia. al Le OP, Trypanosoma sanguinis, Gruby; one of the Rhizomastigina, from the blood of Rana esculenta. a, nucleus. — x 500. 23-26. Repro- duction of

~~*Bodo caudatus, Duj. (one of the Heteromastigoda), after Dallin- ger and Drysdale :—23, fusion of several individuals (plasmodium); 24, encysted fusion-product dividing into four; 25, later into eight; 26, cyst filled with swarm-spores. 27. Astasia tenax, 0. F. Mill. (Proteus) ; one of the Euglenoidea; x 440. Individual with the two flagella, and strongly contracting hinder region of the body. a, nucleus ; 8, contractile vacuole, close to the pharynx. 98. The same devoid of flagella. a, nucleus; ¢, ¢, the two dark pigment spots (so-called eyes) near the mouth. ag). Oikomonas termo (Monas t-rmo) Ehr.; one of the Monadidea. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole ; ¢, food-ingesting vacuole ; d, food-particle. x 440. 30. The food-particle d has now been ingested by the vacnole. Sa Oikomonas mutabilis, Kent (Monadidea), with adherent stalk. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole ; ¢, food-particle in food vacuole. 82, 33. Cerco- monas crassicauda, Duj. (Monadidea), showing two conditions of the pseudopodium-protruding tail. a, nucleus ; b, contractile vacuoles ; c¢, mouth.*~~

~~*Fam. 5. Hererernonapina, Biitschli. Small colourless or green monads which possess, besides one chief flagellum, one or two smaller paraflagella attached near it, often forming colonies secreting a common stalk.*~~

~~*Genera.—Monas (Ehr.), Stein ; Dendromonas, Stein : Cephalo- thamnium, Stein ; Anthophysa, Bory d. Vine. (Fig. XXI. 12, 13); Dinobryon, Ehr. (Fig. XX. 8 and 15); Epipyzxis, Khr. ; Uroglena, Ehr. (Fig. XX. 5).*~~

~~*OrpER 2. EUGLENOIDEA, Biitschli.*~~

~~*Characters.—Generally somewhat large and highly developed monoflagellate forms, of monaxonic or slightly asymmetrical build. Cuticle present ; cortical substance firm, contractile, and elastic: some forms quite stiff, others capable of definite annular contraction and worm-like elongation. At the base of the flagellum a small or large mouth leading into a more or less distinct pharyngeal tube. Near this is always the contractile vacuole. Rarely a pair of flagella instead of one.*~~

~~*Fam. 1, Canomonapina. Colonred Euglenoidea, with numer-*~~

~~*ous small chlorophyll corpuscles or 1 to 2 large plate-like green or*~~

~~*brown chromatophors. Mouth and pharynx inconspicuous ; nutri- tion probably largely vegetal (holophytic).*~~

~~*Genera.—-Celomonas, Stein ; Gonyostomum, Dies. ; Vacuolaria, Cienk.; Aficroglena, Ehr. ; Chromalina, Cienk.; Cryptogicua, Ehr. Fam. 2. EugLenina, Stein. Body monaxonic, elongated, hinder end pointed. Spirally striated cuticle. A fine mouth-aperture leads into the well-developed tubular pharynx. Flagellum usually single, sometimes paired, often cast off. Near the pharynx is the '¢reservoir" of the contractile vacuoles and several of the latter. A single (sometimes two) stigma or colour-speck near the same spot. Chromatophors nearly always present, generally bright green. A large nucleus in the middle of the body. Multiplication by longitudinal fission. Encysted condition and atteudant fission imperfectly studied. Copulation doubtful.*~~

~~*Genera.—(a) With flexible cuticle :—Zuglena, Ehr. (Fig. XX. 18, 17; this is probably Priestley's "' green inatter," from which he obtained oxygen gas; though one of the very commonest of all Protozoa, its life-history has yet to be worked out); Colaciwm, Ehr.; Hutreptia, Perty.*~~

~~*(b) With stiff, shell-like cuticle :—Ascoglena, Stein ; Trachelo- monas, Ehr.; Lepocinelis, Perty; Phacus, Nitzsch.*~~

~~*Fam. 3. Mesorrna, Biitschli. Similar to the Euglenina, but devoid of chlorophyll, a deficiency connected with the saprophytic mode of life. Stigma always absent.*~~

~~*Genera.—(a) With flexible cuticle :—Astasiopsis, Biitschli ; Asta- siodes, Biitschli.*~~

~~*(b) With stiff cuticle and non-cgntractile body :—Monoidium, Perty ; Atractonema, Stein ; Rhabdomonas, Fresenius.*~~

~~*Fam. 4. Peranemina. Very contractile (metabolic) colourless Euglenoids. Mouth and pharynx large ; inception of solid nutri- ment certainly observed.*~~

~~*Genera.—Peranema, Duj. (Fig. XX. 16); Urceolus, Meresch.*~~

~~*Fam. 5. Peratomonapina. Colourless, non-metabolic forms. Mouth opening at the base of the single large flagellum.*~~

~~*Genera.—Petalomonas, Stein.*~~

~~*Fam. 6. ASTASINA. Colourless, metabolic, or stiff Euglenoids, differing from the rest in having a. sinall or large paraflagellum in addition to the chief one. Nutrition partly saprophytic partly animal.*~~

~~*Genera.—Astasia, Ehr. emend. Stein (Fig. XX. 27, 28); £Hetcro- noma, Duj.; Zygosclmis, Duj. ; Sphenomonas, Stein; Tropido- seynhus, Stein.*~~

~~*17. Anterior end of Euglena acus, |*~~

~~*a, mouth ; b, contractile vacuoles ; ¢, pharynx ; d, stigma | : | ; 5 A ; é roe ‘ function; the larger is directed backwards and trailcd, without*~~

~~*FPROADRAO s*~~

~~*857*~~

~~*Orver 3, HETEROMASTIGODA, Biitschli.*~~

~~*Characters. Small and large monads. Naked and even ameeboid or with stiff cuticle. Two flagella at the anterior end differing in size: the smaller directed forwards subserves the usual locomotor*~~

~~*movement. Sometimes two backwardly directed flagella are present. Always a mouth and animal nutrition. Always colourless.*~~

~~*Fain. 1. Bopontna, Btitschli. Size of the two flagella not very different.*~~

~~*Genera.—Bodo, Ehb. emend. Stein (Fig. XX. 23 to 26, and Fig. XXI. 10; the hooked monad and the springing monad of Dal- linger and Drysdale (66); Hetcromita of Dujardin and Kent); Phyllomitus, Stein ; Colponema, Stein; Dallingeria, Kent; Zri- mastix, Kent.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. ANISONEMINA, Kent. ence of the two flagella considerable. nutrition.*~~

~~*Genera.—Anisonema, Duj. ; Entostphon, Stein.*~~

~~*Large forms with cuticle ; differ- Mouth, pharynx, and animal*~~

~~*OrpER 4. ISOMASTIGODA, Biitschli.*~~

~~*Characters. —Small and middle-sized forms of monaxonic rarely bilateral shape. Fore-end with 2, 4, or seldom 5 equal-sized and similar flagella. Some are coloured, some colourless ; naked or with strong cuticle or secreting an envelope. Mouth and pharynx seldom observed ; nutrition generally holophytic (7.e., like a green plant), but in some cases, nevertheless, holozoic (2.¢., like a typical*~~

~~*animal). Fam. 1. AMPHIMONADINA. Small, colourless, biflagellate Iso-mastigoda.*~~

~~*Genera. —Amphimouas, Duj. (? Pseudospora, Cienk.).*~~

~~*Fam. 2, SPONGOMONADINA, Stein. Small colourless oval forms with two closely contiguous flagella. Chief character in the union of numerous individuals in a common jelly or in branched gelatinous tubes, the end of each of which is inhabited bya single and distinct individual.*~~

~~*Genera.—Spongomonas, Stein; Cladomonas, Stein; Rhipido- monas, Stein.*~~

~~*[Group Phytomastigoda, Biitschli. The following three families, viz., Chrysomonadina, Chlamydomonadina, and Volvocina, are so closely related to one another as to warrant their union as a sub- order. They are typical Isomastigoda, but have chlorophyll corpuscles and holophytic nutrition with correlated deficient mouth and pharynx. They are usually regarded by botanists as belonging to the unicellular Algz.]*~~

~~*Fam. 3. CHRYSOMONADINA, Bitschli. Single or colony-forming ; seldom an envelope. Spherical free-swimming colonies may be formed by grouping of numerous individuals around a centre. With two or rarely one brown or greenish brown chromatophor; a stigma (eye-speck) at the base of the flagella.*~~

~~*Genera.—Stylochrysalis, Stein; Chrysopyxis, Stem; Nephroscl- mis, Stein; Synura, Ehr. ; Syacrypta, Ehr. (Fig. XX. 4).*~~

~~*Fam. 4. CHLAMYDOMONADINA. Fore-end of the body with two or four (seldom five) flagella. Almost always green in consequence of the presence of a very large single chromatophor. Generally a delicate shell-like envelope of membranous consistence. 1 to 2 contractile vacnoles at the base of the flagella. Usually one eye- speck. Division of the protoplasm within the envelope may pro- duce four, eight, or more new individuals. This may occur in the swimming or in a resting stage. Also by more continuous fission microgonidia of varicus sizes are formed. Copulation is frequent.*~~

~~*Genera.—Hymenomonas, Stein; Chlorangium, Stein; Chloro- gonium, Er. (Fig. XX. 6, 7); Polytoma, Khr. ; Chlamydomonas, Ehr. (Fig. XX. 1, 2, 3); Hematococcus, Agardh (=Chlamydo- coccus, A. Braun, Stein ; Protococcus, Cohn, Huxley and Martin ; Chlamydomonas, Cienkowski) ; Carteria, Diesing ; Spondylomorum, Ehr. ; Coccomonas, Stein ; Phacotus, Perty.*~~

~~*Fam. 5. Vouvocina. Colony-building Phytomastigoda, the cell- individuals standing in structure between Chlamydomonas and Hematococcus, and always biflagellate. The number of individuals united to form a colony varies very much, as does the shape of the colony. Reproduction by the continuous division of all or of only certain individuals of the colony, resulting in the production ofa daughter colony (from each such individual). In some, probably in all, at certain times copulation of the individuals of distinct sexual colonies takes place, without or with a differentiation of the colonies and of the copulating cells as male and female. The result of the copulation is a resting zygospore (also called zygote cr o00-spermospore or fertilized egg-cell), which after a time develops itself into one or more new colonies.*~~

~~*Genera.—Gonium, O. F. Miiller (Fig. XX. 14) ; Stephanosphera, Cohn; Pandorina, Bory de Vine.; Eudorina, Ehr.; Volvox, Ehr. (Fig. XX. 18, 20).*~~

~~*[The sexual reproduction of the colonies of the Volvocina is one of the most important phenomena presented by the Protozoa. In some families of*~~

~~*Flagellata full-grown individuals become aineboid, fuse, encyst, and then break up into flagellate spores which develop*~~

~~*XIX. — 108*~~

~~*958 PROTOZOA*~~

~~*simply to the parental form (Fig. XX. 23 to 26). In the Chlamydomonadina a single adult individual by division produces small individuals, so-called ‘“‘microgonidia.” These copulate with one another or with similar microgonidia formed by other adults (as in Chlorogonium, Fig. 2.2.¢ 7) 3, 0r more rarely in certain genera a microgonidium copulates with an ordinary individual (macrogonidium). The result in either case 1s a “ zygote,” a cell formed by fusion of two which divides in the usual way to produce new individuals. The microgonidium in this case 1s the male element and equivalent to a spermatozoon , the macrogonidium is the female and equivalent to an egg-cell. The zygote isa fertilized egg-cell, or oo-spermospore. In the colony-building forms we find that only certain cells produce by division microgonidia ; and, regarding the colony as a multicellular individual, we may consider these cells as testis-cells and their microgonidia as spermatozoa. In some colony-building forms the microgonidia copulate with ordinary cells of the colony which, when thus fertilized, become encysted as zygotes, and subsequently separate and develop by division into new colonies. In Volvox the macrogonidia are also specially-formed cells (not merely any of the ordinary vegetative cells), so that in a sexually ripe colony we can distinguish egg- cells as well as sperm mother-cells. Not only so, but in some instances (Eudorina and some species of Volvox) the colonies which produce sexual cells can not merely be distinguished from the asexual colonies (which reproduce parthenogenetically), but can be distinguished also inter se into male colonies, which produce from certain of their constituent cell-units spermatozoa or microgonidia only, and female colonies which produce no male cells, but only macrogonidia or egg-cells which are destined to be fertilized by the microgonidia or spermatozoa of the male colonies.*~~

~~*The differentiation of the cell-units of the colony into neutral or merely carrying cells of the general body on the one hand and special sexual cells on the other is extremely important. It places these cell-colonies on a level*~~

~~with the Enterozoa (Metazoa) in regard to reproduction, and it cannot be doubted that the same process of specialization of the reproductive function, at first com- mon to all the cells of the cell-complex, has gone on in both eases. The perishable body which carries the reproductive cells is nevertheless essentially different in the two cases, in the Volvocina being composed of equipollent units, in the Enterozoa being com- posed of units distributed in two physiologically and morphologi- cally distinct layers or tissues, the ectoderm and the endoderm.~~

~~The sexual reproduction of the Vorticellidee may be instructively compared with that of the Phytomastigoda; see below.]~~

~~Fam. 6. TeTRAMITINA. Symmetrical, naked, colourless, some- what amceboid forms, with four flagella or three and an undulating membrane. Nutrition animal, but mouth rarely seen.~~

~~Genera.—Collodictyon, Carter; Tetramitus, Perty (Fig. XXI. 11, 14; calycine monad of Dallinger and Drysdale (66)) ; Monocerco- monas, Grassi; Trichomonas, Douné; Trichomastiz, Blochmann.~~

~~Fam. 7. Potymasticina. Small, colourless, symmetrical forms. Two flagella at the hinder end of the body and two or three on each ae in ee Nutrition animal or saprophytic.~~

~~enera.—Hexamitus, Duj. (Fig. XXI. 5); te Polymastix, Biitschli. tan aE aeete Pee)~~

~~Fam. 8. TREpoMONADINA, Kent. As Polymastigina, but the — shee flagella are placed far back on the sides.~~

~~Dallinger (67), epomonas, Duj., described recently without name by~~

~~Fam. 9. CryptomonaptNna. Coloured or colourless, laterally compressed, asymmetrical forms; with two very long anterior be gn placed a little on one side springing from a deep atrium-~~

~~@ groove or furrow (cf. Dinoflagellata and Noctiluca, to which these forms lead). , me eer From. ; Chilomonas, Ehr. ; Cryptomonas,~~

~~*Fam. 10. LopHomonapina. Atuftof numerousflagella anteriorly.*~~

~~*Genus.—Lophomonas, Stein (Fig. XXI. 9 lata with the Peritrichous Gilatay' ee ae*~~

~~*Sub-class II. Choanoflagellata, Saville Kent.*~~

~~*Flagellata provided with an u i i*~~

~~*pstanding collar surround —_— pole of the cell from which the ieee fecal ni hoi 2 entical in essential structure with the 'collared cells" of Sponges. ingle or colony-building. Individuals naked (Codosiga), or inhabit-*~~

~~*ing each a cup (Salpingeea), or embedded i i Fee oe ps aay embedded in a gelatinous common OrDER 1. NUDA, Lankester.*~~

~~*Characters.—Individuals nak i i i Pepsin aked, secreting neither a lorica (cup)*~~

~~*Genera.—Monosiga, 8. Kent (solit i*~~

~~*; , S. ary stalked or sessile) ; .*~~

~~*vga, ae Clark (united socially on a common Pre oie 1g. XXI. 3, 4); Astrosiga, S. Kent ; Desmarella, S. Kent.*~~

~~*Orper 2. LORICATA, Lankester.*~~

~~*Cha t ——— * . . . on hes Each individual collared-cell unit secretes a horny*~~

~~*[FLAGELLATA,*~~

~~*Fic. XXI.—Flagellata. 1. Salpingeea fusiformis, 8. Kent; one of the Choanoflagellata. The protoplasmic body is drawn together within the goblet-shaped shell, and divided into numerous spores. x 1500. 2. Hiscape of the spores of the same as monoflagellate and swarm-spores. 3. Codosiga umbellata, Tatem; one of the Choanoflagellata; adult colony formed by dichotomous growth; x 625. 4, A single zooid of the same ; x 1250. a, nucleus ; b, contractile vacuole ; ¢, the characteristic "collar" formed by*~~

~~*cuticle on the inner face of which is a most delicate network of naked streaming protoplasm. 5. Hexamita inflata, Duj. ; one of the Isomastigoda; x 650; normal adult; showinga, nucleus, and b, contrac- tile vacuole. _ 6,7. Salpingeca urceolata, 5. Kent ; one of the Choano- flagellata ;—6, with collar extended; 7, with collar retracted within the stalked cup. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole. 8. Polytoma uvella, Miill. sp. ; one of the Phytomastigoda. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole. x 800. 9. Lophomonas blattarum, Stein; one of the Isomastigoda, from the intestine of Blatta orientalis. a,nucleus. _ 10. Bodo lens, Miill. ; one of the Heteromastigoda; x 800. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole; the wavy filament is a flagellum, the straight one is an immobile trailing thread. 11. Tetramitus sulcatus, Stein; one of the Isomastigoda ; x 430. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole. 12. Anthophysa vegetans, O. F. Miiller; one of the Monadidea; x 300.*~~

~~*DINOFLAGELLATA. |*~~

~~*cells of a sponge-colony); d, similar zooid multiplying by transverse*~~

~~*fission ; e, normal zooids with their collars contracted ; 7, hyaline mucila-*~~

~~*ginous common test or zoothecium ; g, individual contracted and dividing*~~

~~*into minute flagellate spores (microgonidia) comparable to the spermato-*~~

~~*zoa of a Sponge.*~~

~~*Genera. —Salpingeca, Janies Clark (sedentary, Fig. XOSIL ©, TOE Lagenaca, 8. Kent (free swimming) ; Polyeca, S. Kent (cups united socially to form: a branching zocecium as in Dinobryon).*~~

~~*OrpER 3. GELATINIGERA, Lankester.*~~

~~*The cell-units secrete a copious gelatinous investment and form large colonies.*~~

~~*Genera. —Phalansteriwm, Cienk. (Fig. XX. 12); Proterospongia, Saville Kent (Fig. XX1. 15).*~~

~~[The Choanoflagellata were practically discovered by the Ameri- can naturalist James Clark (68), who also discovered that the ciliated chambers of Sponges are lined by collared cells of the same peculiar structure as the individual Choanoflagellata, and hence was led to regard the Sponges as colonies of Choanotlagellata. Saville Kent (69) has added much to our knowledge of the group, and by his discovery of Proterospongia (see Fig. XXI. 15, and description) has rendered the derivation of the Sponges from the Flagellata a tenable hypothesis.]~~

~~Further remarks on the Flagellata.—Increased attention has been directed of late years to the Flagellata in consequence of the researches of Cienkowski, Biitschli, James Clark, Saville Kent, and Stein. They present a very wide range of structure, froin the simple amceboid forms to the elaborate colonies of Volvox and Proterospongia. By some they are regarded as the parent-group of the whole of the Protozoa ; but, whilst not conceding to them this position, but removing to the Proteomyxa those Flagellata which would justify such a view, we hold it probable that they are the ancestral group of the mouth-bearing Corticata, and that the Ciliata and Dinoflagellata have been derived from them. One general topic of importance in relation to them may be touched on here, and that is the nature of the flagellum and its movements. Speaking roughly, a flagellum may be said to be an isolated filament of vibratile protoplasm, whilst a cilium is one of many associated filaments of the kind. The movement, however, of a flagellum is not the same as that of any cilium; and the movement of all flagella is not identical. A cilium is simply bent and straightened alternately, its substance probably containing, side by side, a con- tractile and an elastic fibril. A flagellum exhibits lashing move- ments to and fro, and is thrown into serpentine waves during these movements. But two totally distinct kinds of flagella are to be distinguished, viz., (@) the pulsellum, and (2) the tractellum. An example of the pulsellum is seen in the tail of a spermatozoon which drives the body in front of it, as does the tadpole's tail. Such a *pulsellum" is the cause of the movement of the Baeteria. It is never found in the Flagellata. So little attention has been paid to this fact that affinities are declared by recent writers to exist between Baeteria and Flagellata. The flagellum of the Flagellata is totally distinct from the pulsellum of the Bacteria. _ It is earrieo in front of the body and draws the body after it, being used as a man uses his arm and~~

~~*hand when swimming on his side. Hence it may be distinguished as a "tractellum." Its action may be best studied in some of the large Euglenoidea, such as Astasia. Here it is stiff at the base and is earried rigidly in front of the animal, but its terminal third is reflected and exhibits in this reflected condition swinging and undulatory movements tending to propel the reflected part of the flagellum forward, and so exerting a traction in that direction npon the whole animal. It is in this way (by reflexion of its extremity) that the flagellum or tractellum of the Flagellata also acts so as to impel food-particles against the base of the flagellum where the oral aperture is situated.*~~

~~*Many of the Flagellata are parasitic (some heematozoic, sce Lewis, 70); the majority live in the midst of putrefying organic matter in sea and fresh waters, but are not known to be aetive as putrefaction. Daliinger and Drysdale have shown that the spores of Bodo and others will survive ansexposure to a higher tempera- ture than do any known Schizomyeetes (Bacteria), viz., 250° to 300° Fahr., for ten minutes, although the adults are killed at 180°.*~~

~~*Cuass III. DINOFLAGELLATA, Bitschli.*~~

~~*Characters.—Corticate Protozoa of a bilaterally asymmetricalform, sometimes flattened from back to ventral surface (Diplopsalis, Glenodinium), sometimes from the front to the hinder region (Ceratium, Peridinium), sometimes from right to left (Dinophysis, Amphidinium, Prorocentrum)—the anterior region and ventral surface being determined by the presence of a longitudinal groove and a large flagellum projecting from it. In all except the genus Prorocentrum (Fig. XXII. 6) there is as well as a longitudinal groove a transverse groove (hence Dinifera) in which lies horizon- tally a second flagellum (Klebs and Biitschli), hitherto niistaken for a girdle of cilia. The transverse groove lies either at the anterior end of the body (Dinophysis, Fig. XXII. 3, 4; Amphidinium) or*~~

~~*PROT ®Z O &*~~

~~*within the common jelly or test (compared by 8. Kent to the mesoderm- | at the middle.*~~

~~agents of |~~

~~859~~

~~In Gymnodinium it takes a spiral course. In Polykrikos (a compound metameric form) there are eight indepen- dent transverse grooves.~~

~~The Dinoflagellata are either enclosed in a cuticular shell (Ceratium, Peridinium, Dinophysis, Diplopsalis, Glenodinium, Prorocentrum, &c.) or are naked (Gymnodinium and Polykrikos). 'he cuticular membrane (or shell) consists of cellulose or of a similar substance (cf. Labyrinthulidea) and not, as has been sup- posed, of silica, nor of chitin-like substance ; it is either a simple cyst or perforated by pores, and may be built up of separate plates (Fig. XXII. 10).~~

~~The cortical protoplasm contains trichocysts in Polykrikos.~~

~~The medullary protoplasm contains often chlorophyll and also diatomin and starch or other amyloid substance. In these cases (Ceratium, some species of Peridinium, Glenodinium, Prorocentrum, Dinophysis acuta) nutrition appears to be holophytic. But in others (Gymnodinium and Polykrikos) these substances are absent and food-particles are found in the medullary protoplasin which have been taken in from the exterior through a mouth ; in these nutrition is holozoic. In others which are devoid of chlorophyll and diatomin, &c., there is found a vesicle and an orifice connected with the exterior near the base of the flagellum (¢f. Flagellata) by which water and dissolved or minutely granular food-matter is introduced into the medullary protoplasm (Protoperidinium pellr- cidum, Pcridinium divergens, Diplopsalis lenticula, Dinophysis levis). It is important to note that these divergent methods of nutrition are exhibited by different species of one and the same genus, and possibly by individuals of one species in successive phases of growth (°).~~

~~No contractile vacuole has been observed in Dinoflagellata.~~

~~The nucleus is usually single and very large, and has a peculiar labyrinthine arrangement of chromatin substance.~~

~~*Transverse binary fission is the only reproductive process as yet ascertained. It occurs either in the free condition (Fig. XXII. 2) or in peculiar horned cysts (Fig. XXII. 8). Conjugation has been observed in some cases (by Stein in Gymnodinium).*~~

~~*Mostly marine, some freshwater. Many are phosphorescent.*~~

~~*The Dinoflagellata are divisible into two orders, according to the presence or absence of the transverse groove.*~~

~~*Orver 1. ADINIDA, Bergh.*~~

~~*Characters.—Body comyressed laterally ; both longitudinal and transverse flagellum placed at the anterior pole; a transverse groove is wanting ; a cuticular shell is present.*~~

~~*Genera.—Prorocentrum, Ehr. (Fig. XXII. 6, 7); Zxwviella, Cienk. (=Dinopyzis, Stein ; Cryptomonas, Ehr.).*~~

~~*OrpeR 2. DINIFERA, Bergh.*~~

~~*Characters.—A transverse groove is present and usually a longi- tudinal groove. The animalsare either naked or loricate.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. Drnopuyipa, Bergh. Body coinpressed ; the transverse groove at the anterior pole; the longitudinal groove present ; longitudinal flagellum directed backwards ; loricate.*~~

~~*Genera.—Dinophysis, Ehr. (Fig. XXI1. 3, 4); Amphidinium, Cl. & L.; Amphisolenia, Stein ; Histioncis, Stein ; Citharistes, Stein ; Ornithocercus, Stein.*~~

~~*Fam. 2. Peripinipa, Bergh. Body either globular or flattened ; transverse groove nearly equatorial ; longitudinal groove narrow or broad ; loricate.*~~

~~*Genera.—Protoperidinium, Bergh; Pertdinium (Ehr.), Stein (Fig. XXII]. 1, 2); Protoceratuum, Bergh; Ceratiwm, Sehrank (Fig. XXII. 15); Diplopsalis, Bergh ; Glenodinium, Ehr. ; Heterocapsa, Stein; Gonyaulax, Diesing ; Gontodoma, Stein ; Blepharocysta, Ehr.; Podolampas, Stein'; Amphidoma,*~~

Stein ; Oxytoxum, Stein ; Ptychodiscus, Stein ; Pyrophacus, Stein ; Ceratocorys, Stein.

Fam. 3. GyMNopInipa, Bergh. As Peridinida but no lorica

(cuticular shell). Genera.—Gymnodinium (Fig. XXII. 5), Stein; Hemidinium, Bergh.

Fam. 4. Potyprnipa, Biitschli, As Gymnodinida, but with several independent transverse grooves. Genus.—Polykrikos, Biitschli.

Further Remarks on the Dinoflagellata.—This small group is at the moment of the printing of the present article receiving a large amount of attention from Bergh (81), Klebs (83), and Biutschli (82), and has recently been greatly extended by the discoveries of Stein (80),—the last work of the great illustrator of the Ciliate Protozoa before his death. The constitution of the cell-wall or cuticle from cellulose, as well as the presence of chlorophyll and diatomin, and the holophytic nutrition of many forms recently demonstrated by Bergh, has led to the suggestion that the Dinoftlagellata are to be regarded as plants, and allied to the Diatomacez and Desmidiacez. Physiological grounds of this kind have, however, as has been pointed out above, little importance in determining the affinities of Protozoa, Biitschli (82) in a recent very important article has

| shown in confirmation of Klebs that the Dinoflagellata do not

possess ture mis

irdle of cilia as previously supposed, but that the struc- ekon for cilia is cS poad flagellum which lies horizontally

i ili llata is super- the transverse groove. Hence the name Cilioflage mad by Dinoflagellata (Gr. dinos, the round area where oxen tread

out on a threshing floor).

%,—

~~; nce, ;~~

~~Fic. XXII.—Dinoflagellata and Rhynchonagellata, : » N.B. In all tt figures the apparent girdle of cilia is, sevice to Klebs and "piitschii's recent discovery, to be interpreted as an encircling flagellum lying in the~~

~~transverse groove,~~

~~1. Peridinium uberrimum, Allman; x 300 (fresh-~~

~~Water ponds, Dublin) Probably (according to Biitschli) th a) g e proces the surface are not cilia nor flagellum. Both the fonpitutines mall: the~~

~~transverse groove are Well seen,~~

~~2. The same species in transverse~~

~~ssion. 3. Dinophysis ovata, Cl. and L; x350 (salt water, Norwegian~~

~~coast), Norwegian coast). trum micans, Ehr.; 300 (salt water).~~

~~4. Dinophysis acuminata, Cl. and L.: x350 (salt water 5. Gymnodinium, sp.; 600. 6. Prorocen- 7. Dorsal aspect of the~~

~~same species, 8, 9. Cysts of Peridinia; the contents of 8 divided~~

~~into eight minute Ceratium divergens. of its component plates. 11. The gs~~

~~naked Peridinia; 300, 10. Empty cuirass of Cl. and L.; x500; showing the form and disposition | ame species with the animal con-~~

~~aantod into a spherical form. The transverse groove well seen. 1~~

~~he same species in the normal stat really an undulating flagellum lying " th Sapeekent ins Waste, miliaris. (clal ridge of the adult); a, the big flagellum ; the 1s a flagellum which becomes the oral Poaiolhats of the adult.~~

~~e transverse groove.~~

~~*The apparent girdle of cilia is*~~

~~*13, 14,*~~

~~*n, nucleus; s, the so-called spine nlettered filament*~~

~~*15. Cera-*~~

~~*tium tripos, Mull. The transverse groove well seen. The cilia really are a single horizontal flagellum. 16, 17. Two stages in the transverse fission of Noctiluca miliaris, Suriray. n, nucleus; N, food-particles; t, the muscular flagellum. 18. Noctiluca miliaris, viewed from the aboral side (after Allman, Quart. Jour. Mic. Sct., 1872). a, the entrance to the atrium or flagellar fossa (=longitudinal groove of Dinoflagellata); ¢, the superficial ridge; d, the big flagellum (=the flagellum of the transverse groove of Dinoflagellata); h, the nucleus, 19. The animal acted upou by iodine solution, showing the protoplasm like the "primordial utricle" of a vegetable cell shrunk away from the structureless firm shell or cuirass. 20. Lateral view of Noctiluca, showing a, the entrance to the groove-like atrium or flagellar fossa in which 0 is placed; ¢, the superficial ridge; d, the big flagellum; e, the mouth and gullet, in which is seen Krohn's oral flagellum (=the chief flagellum or flagellum of the longitu- dinal groove of Dino-flagellata) ; 4, broad process of protoplasm extending from the superficial ridge ¢ to the central protoplasm; g, duplicature of the shell in connexion with the superficial ridge; A, nucleus.*~~

~~*Biitschli further suggests that the Dinoflagellata with their two flagella and their 1-shaped combination of longitudinal and transverse grooves may be derived from the Cryptomonadina (see p. 858). In the latter a groove-like recess is present in connexion with the origin of the two flagella. Biitschli thinks the large pro- boscis-like flagellum of Noctiluca (Rhynchoflagellata) represents the horizontal flagellum of Dinoflagellata, whilst the prominent longitudinal flagellum of the Dinoflagellata is represented in that*~~

~~*| animal by the small flagellum discovered by Krohn within the*~~

~~*gullet (see Fig. XXII. 20, c). The young form of Noctiluca (Fig. XXII. 14) has the longitudinal flagellum still of large size.*~~

~~*The phosphorescence of many Dinoflagellata is a further point of resemblance between them and Noctiluca.*~~

~~*Bergh has shown that there isa considerable range of form in various species of Dinoflagellata (Ceratium, &c.), and has also drawn attention to the curious fact that the mode of nutrition (whether holophytic or holozoic) differs in allied species. Possibly it may be found to differ according to the conditions of life in individuals of one and the same species.*~~

~~*The drawings in Fig. XXII. were engraved before the publication of Biitschli's confirmation of Klebs's discovery as to the non-existence of cilia in the transverse groove. The hair-like processes figured by Allman (91) external to the transverse groove in his Peridinium uberrimum (Fig. XXII. 1, 2) cannot, however, be explained as a flagellum. Biitschli inclines to the opinion that their nature was misinterpreted by Allman, although the latter especially calls attention to them as cilia, and as rendering his P. uberrimum unlike the Peridinium of Ehrenberg, in which the cilia (horizontal flagellum) are confined to the transverse groove.*~~

~~*Ciass IV. RHYNCHOFLAGELLATA, Lankester.*~~

~~*Characters.—Corticate Protozoa of large size (Ayth inch) and globular or lenticular form, with a firm cuticular membrane and highly vacuolated (reticular) protoplasm. In Noctiluca a deep groove is formed on one side of the spherical body, from the bottom of which springs the thick transversely striated proboscis or "big flagellum." Near this is the oral aperture and a cylin- drical pharynx in which is placed the second or smaller flagellum (corresponding to the longitudinal flagellum-of Dinoflagellata).*~~

~~*Nutrition is holozoic. No contractile vacuole is present ; granule- streaming is observed in the protoplasm. An alimentary tract and anus have been erroneously described. The nucleus is spherical and not proportionately large (see for details Fig. XXII. 18 to 20).*~~

~~*Reproduction by transverse fission occurs, also conjugation and, either subsequently to that process or independently of it, a forma- tion of spores (Cienkowski, 87), the protoplasm gathering itself, within the shell-like cuticular membrane, into a cake which divides rapidly into numerous*~~

~~*flagellated spores (flagellulx). These escape and gradually develop into the adult form (Fig. XXII. 13, 14).*~~

~~*The proboscis-like large flagellum is transversely striated, and exhibits energetic but not very rapid lashing movements.*~~

~~*Noctiluca is phosphorescent, the seat of phosphorescence being, as determined by Allman (86), the cortical layer of protoplasm underlying the cuticular shell or cell-wall as the primordial cuticle*~~

~~*_ of a vacuolated vegetable cell underlies the vegetable cell-wall.*~~

~~*Genera.—Only two genera (both marine) are known :—Woetiluca, Suriray (90) (Fig. XXII. 17-20) ; Leptodiscus, Hertwig (88).*~~

~~*Further Remarks on the Rhynchoflagellata.—The peculiar and characteristic feature of Noctiluca appears to be found in its large transversely-striated flagellum, which, according to Biitschli, is not the same as the longitudinal flagellum of the Dinoflagellata, but probably represents the horizontal flagellum of those organisms in a modified condition ; hence the name here proposed—Rhyncho- flagellata.*~~

~~*Noctiluca is further remarkable for its large size and cyst-like form, and the reticular arrangement of its protoplasm, like that of a vegetable cell. This is paralleled in Zrachelius ovum among the Ciliata (Fig. XXTV. 14), where the same stiffening of the cuticle allows the vacuolation of the subjacent protoplasm to take place. The remarkable Lepiodiseus medusoides of R. Hertwig (88) appears to be closely related to Noctiluca.*~~

~~*It would no doubt be not unreasonable to associate the Dino-*~~

~~*——wy*~~

~~*CILIATA.*~~ |

~~*flagellata and the Rhynchoflagellata with the true Flagellata in one*~~

~~*class. But the peculia*~~

~~rived from the Flagellata. to any other group, but they must be r branch of the family tree of Corticata.~~

~~luca to Peridinium was recently been put in a~~

~~atrial recess of Noctiluca (Fig.~~

~~PROTOZOA 861~~

~~‘ rities of the organization of the two former groups is best emphasized by treating them as separate classes de-~~

~~Neither group leads on to the Ciliata or egarded as forming a lateral The relationship of Nocti-~~

~~first insisted upon by Allman, but has quite new light by Biitschli, who identifies the~~

~~furrow or groove of the Dinoflagellata, and the large and flagella of the former with the transverse and longitudinal flagella~~

~~respectively of the latter. appears to represent the continua~~

~~The phosphorescence~~

~~Meduse, Crustaceans, Annelids, in the phenomenon. Not unfrequently, escence on the British eoasts seems~~

~~which then occurs in m~~

~~Fic. XXII. Ciliata.—1. Spirostomum ambiguu~~

~~tricha; x 120. Observe trichous band of long cil 2. Stentor polymorphus,~~

~~XXIf. 20, 5) with the longitudinal~~

~~minute~~

~~The superficial ridge ¢ of Noctiluca tion of the longitudinal groove.~~

~~*of the sea, especially on northern coasts, is largely caused by Noctiluea, but by no means exclusively, since*~~

~~*illions in the littoral waters.*~~

~~*and various Protozoa often take part however, the phosphor- to be solely due to Noctiluca,*~~

~~*m, Ehr.; one of the Hetero-*~~

~~*on theright side the oral groove and special hetero- ia. a, moniliform nucleus ; b, contractile vacuole.*~~

~~*Miiller; one of the Heterotricha; x 50;*~~

~~*group of*~~

~~*individuals with the area fringed by the heterotrichous cilia expanded trumpet-wise. 3. Tintinnus lagenula, C. and L.; one of the Hetero- tricha; x 300. 4. Strombidium Claparedii, 8. K.; one of the Peritricha; x 200. 5. Empty shell of Codonella campanella, Haeck.; one of the Heterotricha; x 180. 6, 7. Terquatella typica, Lankester. p, the supra- oral lobe seen through the membranous collar. 8,9. View of the base and of the side of Trichodina pediculus, Ehr.; one of the Peritricha; x 300. a, nucleus; ¢, corneous collar; d, mouth. 10. Spirochona gemmipara, Stein; one of the Peritricha; x 350. a, uucleus; g, bud. 11. Vorticella citrina, Ehr.; x 150 (Peritricha). At d multiple fission of an individual cell to form "microgonidia." 12. Vorticella microstoma, Ehr. (Peritricha); x 300. At ¢ eight "microgonidia" formed by fission of a single normal individual. 13. Same species, binary fission. a, elongated nucleus. 14. Vorticella nebulifera, Ehr.; free-swimming zooid resulting from fission in the act of detaching itself and swimming away, possessing a posterior circlet of cilia. ¢, ciliated disk; J, pharynx. 15. Vorticella microstoma, Ehr.; normal zooid with two*~~

~~*microgonidia (or microzooids) c,d, in the act of conjugation. a, nucleus ; b, contractile vacuole; ¢, ciliated disk; f, pharynx. 16, Vorticella microstoma, Ehr., with stalk contracted and body enclosed ina cyst. 4, nucleus. 17. Vorticella nebulifera, Ehr. a, nucleus; 8, contractile vacnole ; c, muscular*~~

~~*region of the body continuous with the muscle of the stalk; d, pharynx (the basal continuation of the oral vestibule which receives at a higher point the foecal excreta and the ejected liquid from the contractile vacuole). 18. Carchesium spectabile, Ehr.; retractile colony; x 50. 19. Trichocysts of Epistylis flavicans, Ehr., as figured by Greeff. 20. Opercularia stenostoma, Stein; x 200; a small colony. Observe the ciliation of the oral vestibule and the upstanding ciliate disk (opercular-like). 21, 22. Pywxicola afinis, 8.K.; one of the stalked loricate Peritricha, in expanded and retracted states. 2, the true oper- culum. 23, 24. Gyrocoris oxyura, Stein; one of the free-swimming Peritricha, with spiral equatorial cilia-band; x 250. 6, contractile vacuole. 25, 26. Thuricola valvata, Str. Wright; one of the sessile tubicolous Peritricha. Two individuals are as a result of fission tempo- rarily occupying one tube; u, the valve attached to the tube, like the door of the trap-door spider's nest and the valve of the Gasteropod Clausilium.*~~

~~*Ciass V. CILIATA, Ehrenberg (Jnfusoria sensu stricto).*~~

~~*Characters. —Corticata of relatively large size, provided with either a single band of cilia surrounding the anteriorly placed oral aperture or with cilia disposed more numerously over the whole surface of the body. The cilia are distinguished from the flagella of Flagellata by their smaller size and simple movements of alternate flexion and erection ; they serve always at some period of growth as locomotor organs, and also very usually as organs for the introduction of food particles into the mouth. Besides one larger oblong nucleus a second (the paranucleus) is invariably (?) present' (Fig. XXV. 2), or the nucleus may be dispersed in small fragments. Conjugation of equal-sized individuals, not resulting in permanent fusion, is frequent. The conjugated animals separate and their uuclei and paranuclei undergo peculiar changes; but no formation of spores, either at this or other periods, has been de- eisively observed (Fig. XXV. 8 to 15). Multiplication by transverse fission is invariably observed in full-grown individuals (Fig. XXV. 16), and conjugation appears to take place merely as an interlude in the fissiparous process ; consequently young or small Ciliata are (with few exceptions) unknown. Possibly spore-formation may hereafter be found to occur at rare intervals more generally than is at present supposed (Fig. XXIV. 15, 18). A production of micro- gonidia by rapid fission occurs in some Peritricha (Fig. XXIII. 11, 12, 14, 15), the*~~

~~*liberated mierogonidia conjugating with the normal individuals, which also can conjugate with one another.*~~

~~*The Ciliata, with rare exceptions (parasites), possess one or more contractile vacuoles (Fig. XXV. 3). They always possess a delicate cuticle and a body-wall which, although constant, in form is elastic. They may be naked and free-swimming, or they may form horny (Fig. XXIII. 21, 25) or siliceous cup-like shells or gelatinous envelopes, and may be stalked and form colonies like those of Choanoflagellata, sometimes with organic connexion of the con- stituent units of the colony by a branching muscular cord (Vorti- cellide). Many are parasitic in higher animals, and of these some are mouthless. All are holozoic in their nutrition, though some are said to combine with this saprophytic and holophytic nutrition. The Ciliata are divisible into four orders according to the distribution and character of their cilia. The lowest group (the Peritricha) may possibly be connected through some of its members, such as Strombidium (Fig. XXIII. 4), with the Flagellata through such a form as Lophomonas (Fig. XXI. 9).*~~

~~*In the following synopsis, chiefly derived from Saville Kent's valuable treatise (71), the characters of the families and the names of genera are not given at length owing to the limitation of our space.*~~

~~*OrpErR 1. PERITRICHA, Stein (79).*~~

~~*Characters. —Ciliata with the cilia arranged in one anterior circlet or in two, an anterior and a posterior ; the general surface of the body is destitute of cilia.*~~

~~*Sub-order 1. NATANTIA (animals never attached).*~~

~~*Fam. 1. ToRQUATELLID&. a Genus. —Torquatella, Lankester, like Strombidium, but the cilia adherent so as to form a vibratile membranous collar (Fig. XXIII.*~~

~~*6, 7).*~~

~~*Fam. 2. Dicryocystipz. Animals loricate.*~~

~~*Fam. 3. ACTINOBOLID. Illoricate, with retractile tentacula.*~~

~~*862*~~

~~*Fam. 4. HALTERIIDZ. tri Oa Wwiesi< ra. — bidium, Cl. & L. (Fig. X: cM eee Dujard ae Soaalnrncn tats girdle of springing hairs; Didiniwm, Stein, (Fig. XXIV. 19). Fam. 5. GYROCORIDE, aie oemele patialiy — oris, Stein, with an equatorial ciliary g1 disnoned (Fig XXII 23, 24); Urocentrum, Nitzsch, girdle annular.*~~

~~*b> én Ali a i) ALN A\ -C hy, VAN*~~

~~*SS*~~

~~*Sess*~~

~~*SS*~~

~~*50 8 00°*~~

~~*= 6-676-0 6*~~

~~*Fie. XXIV. Ciliata.—1, Ophalinopsis sepiole, Foett. : trichous mouthless Ciliate from the liver of the § vacuoles (non-contractile), 2. A similar sp carmine, showing a remarkably branched and twist place of several nuclei. . Prichonympha agili in the intestine of the Termites (White Ants); granules (food 2). 4. Opalina ranarum, Purk mouthless Ciliate parasitic in the Frog's rectum ; a. numerous regnlarly dispersed nuclei, cess of binary fission. a, nuclei. now reduced the individuals to a relatively small size. produced fragment encysted, exp swallowed by Tadpoles. 8.*~~

~~*ree aA -; &@ mouthless Holotrichous Ciliate parasitic in the worm Nais; x 200. a, the large axial nucleus; b,*~~

~~*c 4 cuole 10. Anoplophrya prolifera, C. and L.; from the intestine of Clitellio, Remarkable for the adhesion in a metameric series*~~

~~*PROTOZOS*~~

~~*Fic. XXV. Ciliata (conjugation, &c.).*~~

~~*[CILIATA.*~~

~~*i ion-products. a, nuclens. 11. Aimphileptus gigas, e a oe of tlie Holotricha: x'100. b, contractile vacuoles; e, bi y 'ie (see Fig XXIII. 19); d, nucleus ; e, pharyux. 12, 13. Proro oe ao s, Ehr.; one of the Holotricha; x 75. a, nucleus; b, contractile zacaines A 'pharynx with horny ——— eed 12. The on ee i of isolated. 14. Zrachelius ovum, ; re fea) nn? sy oe the acyl i oye tg _ 1 tractile vacuoles; c,the cuticle-lined pha 3 , 16, eee Teinyophthirius multifilius, ' Fouquet ; one of the Holotricha; x'120.. Free individual and successive stages of division to form spores. a, nucleus; 2, contractile vacuoles. 19, Didinium nasutum, bay one of the 'Peritricha ; x 200. The pioune angen ⁎ — i d. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole; c,*~~

~~*0 3 5*~~

~~*ambulatory organs. 21. Euplotes harpa, Stein yp Sar ee q trichous processes (limbs). , 22 Nyctotherus pee 1 a polseoutihoes Ciliate Baringo ey ee eer ihe 5 4] . 1¢. . . Ns nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole; c, food pa e; d, 38, nti he Ia band of large cilia ; f, g, mouth; h, pharnyx; 7, small cilia.*~~

~~*Fam. 6. URCEOLARIID2.*~~

~~*Sg a fd*~~

~~*SSS*~~

~~*eee*~~

~~*iit HT) AH 44] IN WMH*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*ee*~~

~~*ee SS Sm nate cee*~~

~~*aeneee—apeee meee*~~

~~*1. Surface view of Holotrichous Ciliate, showing the disposition of the cilia in longitudinal rows. 2.*~~

~~*CILIATA.* |~~

~~*and paranucleus in each animal elongate and become fibrillated ; 10, two spherical paranuclei pn in each, two dividing or divided nuclei N+ ; 11, the spherical paranuclei have become fusiform; 12, there are now four paranuclei in each (pn4 and pn*), broken into four or- even more fragments ; 13, the two paranuclei marked pn* in 12 have united in each animal to form the new nucleus pn*; the nuclear fragments are still numerous; 14, after cessation of conjugation the nuclear fragments N and the two unfused paranuclear pieces pn are still present; 15, from a part or all of the fragments the new paranucleus is in process of formation, the new nucleus (pn* = N) is large and elongated. 16. Diagram of a Ciliate in process of trans- verse fission. 17. Condition of the nucleus N, and of the paranucleus pn in Paramecium aurelia after cessation of conjugation as observed by Biitschli. 18. Stylonichia mytilus (one of the Hypotricha), showing endoparasitic unicellular organisms b, formerly mistaken for spores ; a, nuclei (after conjugation and breaking up).*~~

~~*Fam. 7. OPHRYOSCOLECIDA,*~~

~~*Genera.—Astylozoon, Engelm. ; Ophryoscolex, Stein.*~~

~~*Sub-order 2. SEDENTARIA, animals always attached or sedentary during the chief part of the life-history.*~~

~~*Fam. 1. VorticeLtipa. Animals ovate, campanulate, or sub- cylindrical; oral aperture terminal, eccentric, associated with a spiral fringe of adoral cilia, the right limb of which descends into the oral aperture, the left limb encireling a more or less elevated protrusible and retractile ciliary disk.*~~

~~*Sub-family 1. Vorticelline: aniinalcules naked.*~~

~~*a.—Solitary forms.*~~

~~*Genera.—Gerda, Cl. and L. ; Scyphidia, Dujard.; Spirochona, Stein (sessile with peristome in the form of a spirally convolute mem- branous expansion, Fig. XXIII. 10); Pyzxidium, Kent (with a non-retractile stalk) ; Vorticella, Linn. (with a hollow stalk in which is a contractile muscular filament).*~~

~~*g.—Forming dendriform colonies.*~~

~~*Genera.—Carchesium, Ehr. (Fig. XXIII. 18, with contractile stalks); Zoothammium, Ehr. (contractile stalks) ; Epistylis, Ehr. (stalk rigid) ; Opercularia, Stein (stalk rigid, ciliated disk oblique ; an elongated peristomial collar, Fig. XXIII. 20).*~~

~~*Sub-family 2. Vaginicoline : animalcules secreting firm cup-like or tube-like membranous shells.*~~

~~*Genera.—Vaginicola, Lamarek (uo internal valve); Thuricola, Kent (with a door-like valve to the tube, Fig. XXIII. 25, 26) ; Cothurina, Ehr. (lorica or shell pedieulate ; no operculum); Pyxicola, Kent (lorica pedunculate, animal carrying dorsally a horny oper- culum, Fig. XXIII. 21, 22).*~~

~~*Sub-family 8. Ophrydina: animalcules secreting a soft gelatinous envelope.*~~

~~*Genera.—Ophionella, Kent ; Ophrydium, Ehr.*~~

~~*ORDER 2. HETEROTRICHA, Stein.*~~

~~*Characters. A band or spiral or cirelet of long cilia is developed in relation to the mouth (the heterotrichous band) corresponding to the adoral circlet of Peritricha; the rest of the body is uniformly beset with short cilia.*~~

~~*a,—Heterotrichal band circular.*~~

~~*Genera (selected).—Zintinnus, Schranck (Fig. XXIII. 3); Zri- chodinopsis, Cl. and L.; Codonella, Haeck. (with a peri-oral fringe of lappet-like processes) ; Calceolus, Diesing.*~~

~~*g.—Heterotrichal band spiral.*~~

~~*Genera (selected). —Stentor, Oken (Fig. XXIII. 2); Blepharisma, Perty (with an undulating membrane along the oral groove); Spirostomum, Ehr.. (oral groove linear and elongate, Fig. XXILI. 1); Leucophrys, Ehr. (oral groove very short).*~~

~~*y.—Heterotrichal band in the form of a simple straight or oblique adoral fringe of long cilia.*~~

~~*Genera (selected). —Bursaria, Miiller ; Nyctotherus, Leidy (with well-developed alimentary tract and anus, Fig. XX1V. 22); Balan- tidium, Cl. and L. (B. eolt parasitic in the human intestine).*~~

~~*OrpEr 3. HOLOTRICHA, Stein.*~~

~~*Characters.—There is no special adoral fringe of larger cilia, nor a band-like arrangement of cilia upon any part of the body ; short cilia of nearly equal size are uniformly disposed all over the surface. The adoral cilia sometimes a little longer than the rest.*~~

~~*a._With no membraniform expansion of the body wall.*~~

~~*Genera. Paramecium, Ehr. (Fig. XXV. 1, 2); Prorodon, Ebr.*~~

~~*BPRODO2O A*~~

~~*863*~~

~~*(Fig. XXIV. 13); Coleps, Ehr.; Enchelys, Uhr. ; Tracheloeerea, Khr. ; Trachelius, Ehr.; Amphileptus, Ehr.; Jethyophthirius, Fouquet (Fig. XXIV. 15).*~~

~~*g.—Body with a projecting membrane, often vibratile.*~~

~~*Genera.—Ophryoglena, Ehr.; Colpidiwm, Stein; Lembus, Cohn ; Trichonympha, Leidy (an exceptionally modified form, parasitic, Fig. XXIV. 3).*~~

~~*y.—Isolated parasitic forms, devoid of a mouth.*~~

~~*Genera.—Opalina, Purkinje (nuclei numerous, no contractile vacuole, Fig. XXIV. 4 to 8); Benedenia, Foett. ; Opalinopsis, Foett. (Fig. XXIV. 1, 2); Anoplophrya, Stein (large axial nucleus, numerous contractile vacuoles in two linear series, Fig. XXIV. 9 10); Haptophrya, Stein ; Hoplitophrya, Stein.*~~

~~*OrpER 4. HYPOTRICHA, Stein.*~~

~~*Characters.—Ciliata in which the body is flattened and the locomotive cilia are confined to the ventral surface, and are often modified and enlarged to the condition of musenlar appendages (sete so-called). Usually an adoral band of cilia, like that of Heterotricha. Dorsal surface smooth or provided with tactile hairs only. Mouth and anus conspicuously developed.*~~

~~*a.—Cilia of the ventral surface uniform, fine, and vibratile.*~~

~~*Genera.—Chilodon, Ehr. ; Loxodes, Ehr. ; Dysteria, Huxl. ; Huzleya, Cl. and L.*~~

~~*g.—Cilia of the ventral surface variously modified as sete (muscular appendages), styles, or uncini. ,*~~

~~*Genera.—Stylonichia, Khr. (Fig. OY, 1S) 2 Euplotes, Ehr. (Fig. XXIV. 20, 2M)*~~

~~*Oxytricha, Khr.;*~~

~~*Further remarks on the Ciliata.—The Ciliata have recently formed the subject of an exhaustive treatise by Mr Saville Kent (71) which is accessible to English readers. On the other hand Prof. Biitschli has not yet dealt with them in his admirable critical treatise on the Protozoa. Hence a large space has not been devoted in this article to the systematic classification and enumeration of their genera. See (79) and (98).*~~

~~*One of the most interesting features presented by the group is the presence in many of a cell anus as well as a cell mouth (Fig. XXIV. 22, d). In those devoid of an anus the undigested remnants of food are expelled either by a temporary aperture on the body-surface or by one opening into the base of*~~

~~*the pharynx. In many parasitic Ciliata, as in higher animal parasites, such as the Cestoid worms, a mouth is dispensed with, nutriment being taken by general imbibition and not in the solid form. Many Ciliata develop chlorophyll corpuscles of definite biconcave shape, and presumably have so far a capacity for vegetal nutrition. In Vorticella viridis the chlorophyll is uniformly diffused in the pro- toplasm and is not in the form of corpuscles (72).*~~

~~*The formation of tubes or shells and in connexion therewith of colonies is common among the Peritricha and Heterotricha. The cuticle may give rise to structures of some solidity in the form of hooks or tooth-like processes, or aS a lining to the pharynx (Fig. XXIV. 12).*~~

~~*The phenomena connected with conjugation and reproduction are very remarkable, and have given rise to numerous misconcep- tions. They are not yet sufficiently understood. It cannot be surely asserted that any Ciliate is at the present time known to break up, after encystment or otherwise, into a number of spores, although this was at one time supposed to be the rule. Icthyoph- thirius (Fig. XX1V. 15 to 18) and some Vorticelle (76) have been stated, even recently, to present this phenomenon ; but it is not impossible that the observations are defective. The only approach to a rapid breaking up into spores is the multiple formation (eight) of microgonidia or microzooids in Vorticellide (Fig. XXIII. 11, 12); otherwise the result of the most recent observations appears to be that the Ciliata multiply only by binary fission, which is very frequent among them (longitudinal in the Peritricha, transverse to the long axis in the others).*~~

~~*Several cases of supposed formation of spores within an adult Ciliate and of the production endogenously of numerous "* acineti- form young" have been shown to be cases of parasitism, minute unicellular parasites, ¢.g., parasitic Acinete (such as Spherophrya described and figured in Fig. XXVI.) being mistaken for the young.*~~

~~*The phenomenon of conjugation is frequent in the Ciliata, and is either temporary, followed by a separation of the fused individuals, as in most cases, or permanent, as in the case of the fertilization of normal individuals by the microgonidia of Vorticellide.*~~

~~*Since the process of conjugation or copulation is not followed by a formation of spores, it is supposed to have merely a fertilizing effect on the temporarily conjomed individuals, which nourish themselves and nultiply by binary fission more aetively after the process than before (hence termed " rejuvenescence)."*~~

~~*Remarkable changes have been from time to time observed in the nuclei of Ciliata during or subsequently to conjugation, and these were erroneously interpreted by Balbiani (73) as indicating the formation of spermatozoa and ova. The nuelei exhibit at one period great elongation and a distinct fibrillation, as in the dividing*~~

~~*864*~~

~~*nuclei of tissue cells (compare Fig. I. and Fig. XXV. 9, 11, 17). The fibrille were supposed to be spermatozoids, and this erroneous view was confirmed by the observation of rod-like Bacteria (Schizomycetes) which in some instances infest the deeper proto- plasm of large Ciliata. : : é*~~

~~*The true history of the changes which oceur in the nuclei of conjugating Ciliata has been determined by Biitschli (74) in some typical instances, but the matter is by no means completely under- stood. The phenomena present very great obstacles to satis- factory examination on account of their not recurring very fre- quently and passing very rapidly from one phase to another. They have not been closely observed in a sufficiently varied number of genera to warrant a secure generalization. The follow- ing scheme of the changes passed through by the nuclei must be regarded as necessarily referring to only a few of the larger Heterotricha, Holotricha, and Hypotricha, and is only probably true in so far as details are concerned, even for them. It is at the same time certain that some such series of changes occurs in all Ciliata as the sequence of conjugation.*~~

~~*In most of the Ciliata by the side of the large oblong nucleus is a second smaller body (or even two such bodies) which has been very objectionably termed the nucleolus (Fig. XXV. 8), but is better ealled the " paranucleus" since it has nothing to do with the nucle- olus of a typical tissne-cell. When conjugation occurs and a "*syzygium"' is formed, both nucleus and paranucleus in each con- jugated animal elongate and show fibrillar*~~

~~*structure (Fig. XXV. 10). Each nucleus and paranucleus now divides into two, so that we get two nuclei and two paranuclei in each animal. . Elongation and fibrillation are then exhibited by each of these new elements and subsequently fission, so that we get four nuclei and four para- nuclei in each animal (11, 12). The fragments of the original nucleus (marked N in the figures) now become more dispersed and broken into further irregular fragments. Possibly some of them are ejected (so-called "cell excrement"); possibly some pass over from one animal to the other. Two of the pieces of the four-times- divided paranucleus now reunite (Fig. XXV. 13), and form a largish body which is the new nucleus. The remaining fragments of paranucleus and the broken down nucleus now gradually dis- appear, and probably as a remnant of them we get finally a few cor- puscles which unite to form the new paranucleus (14; 15). The conjugated animals which have separated from one another before the later stages of this process are thus reconstituted as normal Ciliata, each with its nuclens and paranucleus. They take food and divide by binary fission until a new period of conjugation arrives, when the same history is supposed to recur.*~~

~~*The significance of the phenomena is entirely obscure. It is not known why there should be a paranucleus or what it inay correspond to in other cells—whether it is to be regarded simply as a second nucleus or as a structurally and locally differentiated part of an erdinary cell-nuclens, the nucleus and the paranucleus together being the complete equivalent of such an ordinary nucleus. An attempt has been made to draw a parallel between this process and the essential features of the process of fertilization (fusion of the spermatic and ovicell nuclei) in higher animals; but it is the fact that concerning neither of the phenomena compared have we as yet sufficiently detailed knowledge to enable us to Judge conclusively as to how far any comparison is possible. Whilst there is no doubt as to the temporary fusion and admixture of the protoplasm of the conjugating Ciliata, it does not appear to be established that there 1s any transference of nuclear or paranuclear matter from one indi. vidual to the other in the form of solid formed particles.*~~

~~*_ Conjugation resulting merely in rejuvenescence and ordinary fis- sive activity is observed in many Flagellata as well as in the Ciliata. . _ A noteworthy variation of the process of binary fission occurring in the*~~

~~*parasite Opalina deserves distinct notice here, since it is inter- mediate in character between ordinary binary fission and that multiple fission which so commonly in Protozoa ig known as spore- formation. In Opalina (Fig. XXIV. 4) the nucleus divides as the animal grows; and we find a great number of regularly disposed Separate nuclei in its protoplasm. (The nuclei of many other Ciliata have recently been shown to exhibit extraordinary branched and even " fragmented " forms; compare Fig. XXIV. 2.) Ata certain stage of growth binary fission of the whole animal sets in, and growth ceases. Consequently the products of fission become smaller and smaller (Fig. XXIV. 6). At last the fragments contain each but two, three, or four nuclei. Each fragment now becomes encased in a spherical cyst (Fig. XXIV. 7). If this process had occurred rapidly, we should have had a uninucleate Opalina breaking up at once into fragments (as a Gregarina does), each fragment being a spore and enclosing itself in a Spore-case. The Opalina ranarum puma ake rectum of the Frog, and the encysted spores are in the early part of the year. They pass out into the water and undergo no change unless swallowed by a Tadpole, in the intestine of which they forthwith develop. From each spore- case escapes a uninucleate embryo (Fig. XXIV. 8), which absorbs nourishment and grows. As it grows its nucleus divides, and so the large multinucleate form from which we started is reattained.*~~

~~*PRO'TFOZOA*~~

~~*[CILIATA.*~~

~~*This history has important bearings, not only on the nature of sporulation, but also on the question of the significance of the multinucleate condition of cells. HIere it would seein that the formation of many nuclei is merely an anticipation of the retarded fissive process.*~~

~~*It is questionable how far we are justified in closely associating Opalina, in view of its peculiar nuclei, with the other Ciliata. It seems certain that the worin-parasites sometimes called Opaline, but more correctly Anaplophrya, &c., have no special affinity with the true Opalina. They not only differ from it in having one large nucleus, but in having numerous very active contractile vacuoles*~~

~~75).~~

~~es it has been shown, more especially by Gruber (84), that many Ciliata are multinucleate, and do not possess merely a single nucleus and a paranucleus. In Oxytricha the nuclei are large and numerous (about forty), scattered through the protoplasm, whilst in other cases the nucleus is so finely divided as to appear like a powder or dust diffnsed uniformly through the medullary proto- plasm (Trachelocerca, Choenia). Carmine staining, after treatment with absolute alcohol, has led to this remarkable discovery. The condition described by Foettinger (85) in his Opalinopsis (Fig. XXIV. 1, 2) isan example of this pulverization of the nucleus. The condition of pulverization had led in some cases to a total failure to detect any nucleus in the living animal, and it was only by the use of reagents that the actual state of the case was revealed. Curiously enough, the pulverized nucleus appears periodically to form itself by a union of the scattered particles into one solid nucleus just before binary fission of the animal takes place ; and on the completion of fission the nuclei in the two new individuals break up into little fragments as before. The significance of this observation in relation to the explanation of the proceedings of the nuclei during conjugation cannot be overlooked. It also leads to the suggestion that the animal cell may at one time in the history of evolution have possessed not a single solid nucleus but a finely molecular powder of chromatin-substance scattered uniformly through its protoplasm, as we find actually in the living Trachelo- cerca. 4 Some of the Ciliata (notably the common Vorticelle) have been observed to enclose themselves in cysts ; but it does not appear that these are anything more than " hypnocysts" from which the animal emerges unchanged after a period of drought or deficiency of food. At the same time there are observations which seem to indicate that in some instances a process of spore-formation may occur within such cysts (76).~~

~~The differentiation of the protoplasm into cortical and medul- lary substance is very strongly marked in the larger Ciliata. The food-particle is carried down the gullet by ciliary currents and is forced together with an adherent drop of water into the medullary protoplasm. Here a slow rotation of the successively formed food-vacuoles is observed (Fig. XXV. 2, 1, m, n, 0), the water being gradually removed as the vacuole advances in position. It was the presence of numerous successively formed vacuoles which led~~

~~*Ehrenberg to apply to the Ciliata the not altogether inappro- priate name "' Polygastrica." The chemistry of the digestive pro- cess has not heen successfully studied, but A. G. Bourne (8) has shown that, when particles stained with water-soluble anilin blue are introduced as food into a Vorticella, the colouring matter is rapidly excreted by the contractile vacuole in a somewhat concen- trated condition.*~~

~~*The differentiation of the protoplasm of Ciliata in some special cases as "muscular" fibre cannot be denied. The contractile filament in the stalk of Vorticella is a muscular fibre and not simple undifferentiated contractile protoplasm ; that is to say, its change ot dimensions is definite and recurrent, and is not rhythinie, as is the flexion of a cilium. (Perhaps in ultimate analysis it is impossible to draw a sharp line between the contraction of one side of a ciliam which causes its flexion and the rhythmical contraction of some muscular fibres.) The movements of the so-called "sete " of the Hypotricha are also entitled to be called " muscular," as are also the general contractile movements of the cortical substance of large Ciliata. Haeckel (77) has endeavoured to distinguish various layers in the cortical substance; but, whilst admitting that, as in the Gregarine, there is sometimes a distinct fibrillation of parts of this layer, we cannot assent to the general distinction of a *"myophane" layer as a component of the cortical substance.*~~

~~*Beneath the very delicate cuticle which, as a mere superficial pellicle of extreme tenuity, appears to exist in all Ciliata we freqnently find a layer of minute oval sacs which contain a spiral thread ; the threads are everted from the sacs when irritant reagents are applied to the animal (Fig. XXV. 2, g, h). These were discovered by Allman (78), and by him were termed " tricho- cysts." They appear to be identical in structure and mode of formation with the nematocysts of the Ccelentera and Platyhelmia. Similar trichocysts (two only in number) are found in the spores of the Myxosporidia (see ante, page 855).*~~

~~*The comparative forms of the nucleus and of the contractile vacuoles, as well as of the general body-form, &c., of Ciliata may*~~

~~*ACINETARIA.* |~~

~~be learnt from an examination of Figs. XXIII., XXIV., XXV., and the explanations appended to them. ;~~

~~Ciass VI. ACINETARIA, Lankester (Tentaculifera, Huxley).~~

~~Characters. —Wighly specialized Corticate Protozoa, probably derived from Ciliata, since their young forms are provided with a more or less complete investment of cilia. They are distinguished by having no vibratile processes on the surface of the body in the adult condition, whilst they have few or many delicate but firm~~

~~÷~~

~~Fig. XX VI.—Acinetaria.~~

~~1. Rhyneheta cyclopum, Zenker. 4, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole ; only a single tentacle, and that suctorial ; x 150. Parasitic on Cyclops. 2. Spherophrya urostylz, Maupas ; normal adult; x 200. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole. Parasitic in Urostyla. 3. The same dividing by transverse fission, the anterior moiety with tem- porarily developed cilia. a, nucleus ; b, contractile vacuole. 4, 5, 6. Spherophrya stentorea, Maupas; x 200. Parasitic in Stentor, and at one time mistaken for its young. 7. Trichophrya epistylidis, Cl. and L. ; x 150. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole. 8. Hemiophrya gemmi- para, Hertwig; x 400. Example with six buds, into each of which a brauch of the nucleus a is extended. 9. The same species, showing the two kinds of tentacles (the suctorial and the pointed), and the con- tractile vacuoles }. 10, Ciliated embryo of Podophrya Steinit, Cl. and~~

~~Thy «800. ll. Acincta grandis, Saville Kent; x 100; showing pedun- culated lorica, and animal with two bunches of entirely suctorial tentacles. | a, nucleus. 12. Sphwerophrya magna, Maupas; xX 300. It has seized |~~

~~| fused individuals,~~

~~*with its tentacles, and is in the act of sucking out the juices of six examples of the ciliate Colpoda parvifrons. 13. Podophrya elongata, Cl, and L.; % 150. a, nucleus; 6, contractile vacuole. 14. Hemiophrya Benedenit, Fraip.; x 200; the suctorial tentacles retracted. 15. Dendrocometes paradoxus, Stein; x 350. Parasitic on Gammarus pulex. a, nucleus; b, contractile vacuole; ¢, captured prey. 16. A single tentacle of Podophrya; x 800. (Saville Kent.) 17-20. Dendrosoma radians, Ehr.: —17, free-swimming ciliated embryo, x 600 ; 18, earliest fixed condition of the embryo, x 600; 19, later stage, a single tentaculiferous process now developed, x 600; 20, adult colony; ¢, enclosed ciliated embryos; d, branching stolon; e, more minute reproductive (2) bodies. 21. Ophryo- dendron pedicellatum, Hincks; x 300. tentacle-like processes, which are either simply adhesive or tubular and suctorial. In the latter case they are provided at their ex- tremity with a sucker-disk and have contractile walls, whereas in the former case they have more or less pointed extremities. The Acinetaria are sedentary in habit, even if not, as is usual, per- manently fixed by a stalk. The nucleus is frequently arboriform. Reproduction is effected by simple binary fission, and by a modified fission (bud-fission) by which (as in Reticularia and Arcella) a number of small bud-like warts containing a portion of the branched parental nucleus are nipped off from the parent,. often simul- tancously (Fig. XXVI. 8). These do not become altogether dis- tinct, but are for a time enclosed by the parental cell each in a sort of vacuole or brood-chamber, where the young Acinetarian develops a coat or band of cilia and then escapes from the body of its parent (Fig. XXVI. 10,17). After a brief locomotive existence, it becomes sedentary, develops its tentacles, and loses its cilia. The Acinetaria have one or more contractile vacuoles. Their nutrition is holozoic. : The surface of the body in some cases is covered only by a delicate cuticle, but in other cases a definite membranous shell or cup (often stalked) is produced. Freshwater and marine. See Fraipont*~~

~~*(89).*~~

~~*OrpER 1. SUCTORIA, Kent.*~~

~~*A greater or less proportion or often all of the tentacles are suctorial and terminated with sucker-like expansions.*~~

~~*Genera.—Rhyncheta, Zenker (stalkless, naked, with only one tentacle ; epizoic on Cyclops; Fig. XXVI.1); Urnula, C. and L. ; Spherophrya, C. and L. (naked, spherical, with distinctly capitate tentacles only ; never with a pedicle; parasitic within Ciliata, supposed young ; Fig. XXVI. 2-6, 12); Trichophrya, C. and L. (as Spherophrya, but oblong and temporarily fixed without a pedicle); Podophrya, Ehr. (naked, solitary, globose, ovate or elongate, fixed by a pedicle; tentacles all suctorial, united in fascicles or distri- buted irregularly; Fig. XX V1. 10, 13, 16) ; Hemiophrya, 8. Kent (as Podophrya, but the tentacles are of the two kinds indicated in the definition of the group; Fig. XXVI. 8, 9, 14); Podocyathus, 8. Kent (secreting and inhabiting stalked membranous cups or lorice ; ten- tacles of the two kinds); Solenophrya, C. and L. (with a sessile lorica ; tentacles only suctorial) ; Acineta, Ehr. (as Solenophrya, but the lorica is supported on a pedicle; Fig. XXVI. 11); Dendro- cometes, Stein (cuticle indurated ; solitary, sessile, discoid ; tentacles peculiar, viz., not contractile, more or less branched, root-like, and perforated at the extremities and suctorial in function ; Fig. XXVI. 15). Dendrosoma, Ehr. (forming colonies of intimately with a basal adherent protoplasmic stolon and upstanding branches the termination of which bear numerous capi- tate suctorial tentacles only ; Fig. XX VI. 17-20).*~~

~~*OrvDER 2. NON-SUCTORIA, Lankester (= Actinaria, Kent).*~~

~~*Characters.—Tentacles filiform, prehensile, not provided with a sucker. :*~~
~~*Genera.—Ephelota, Str. Wright (solitary, naked, pedunculate,*~~

~~*| with many flexible inversible tentacles) ; Actinocyathus, 8S. Kent ;*~~

~~*Ophryodendron, C. and L. (sessile, with a long, extensile, anterior proboscis bearing numerous flexible tentacles at its distal extremity ; Fig. XXVI. 21); Acinetopsis, Robin (ovate, solitary, secreting a stalked lorica ; from the anterior extremity of the animal is deve- loped a proboscis-like organ which does not bear tentacles).*~~

~~*Further remarks on the Acinetaria.—The independence of the Acinetaria was threatened some years ago by the erroneous view of Stein (79) that they were phases in the life-history of Vorticellide. Small parasitic forms*~~

~~(Spherophrya) were also until recently regarded erroneously as the "acinetiform young" of Ciliata.~~

~~They now must be regarded as an extreme modification of the Protozoon series, in which the differentiation of organs in a unicellular animal reaches its highest point. The sucker-tentacles of the Suctoria are very elaborately constructed organs (see Fig. XXVI. 16). They are efficient means of seizing and extracting the juices of another Protozoon which serves as food to the Acinetarian. The structure of Dendrosoma is remarkable on account of its multicellular character and the elaborate differentiation of the reproductive bodies.~~

~~The ciliation of the embryos or young forms developed from the buds of Acinetaria is an indication of their ancestral connexion with the Ciliata. The cilia are differently disposed on the young of the various genera (see Fig. XXVI. 10, 17).~~

~~XIX, — 109~~

~~866~~

~~tbliography.—(1) Haxrcxet (Protista), " Monographie der — Moncren,~~

~~a es ee 1868. (2) Dusanvin (Sarcode), Bee ae sur va organismes inférieures," Amales des Sciences Naturelles, 1835, 2d series, me iv. (3) Scumitz (nucleus of yeast), Sizd. d, niederrhein. aeteaer gee~~

~~1879. (4) FLeumine (Karyokinesis), Virclow''s Archiv, 1xxvii., _1879. by Branvt (chlorophyll in animals), Sttzungsbericht der Gesellsch. DA ett als al Freunde zu Berlin, No. 9, 1881. (6) MrczNtikow (phagocytes), Baha a. : Zoolog. Instit, Wien, 1883, and Biologisches Centralbiatt, November 1883, bot~~

~~translated in Quart. Jour. Micr. Sct., January 1884. (7) ENGELMANN (proto- plasm) in Nermann's ffandwérterb. der Physiologte, translated in the Quart. Jour. of Micr. Sct., July 1884. (8) Bourne (excretion by contractile vacuole) in translation of (7), Quart. Jour. Micr. Sci., 1884, p. 378. (9) BiTscALI (Pro- tozoa), in Bronn's Classen u. Ordnungen des~~

~~Thierreichs (Protozoa, 1883, in pro- gress). (10) Huxtey (classification of Protozoa), A Manual of the Anatomy og Invertebrated Animals, 1877,p.76. (11) Scuuxrze, F. E. (nuclei of Foraminifera) '"'Rhizopodenstudien," Archiv f. Mikros. Anat., 1874-75-77. (12) Hertwie, R. (nuclei of Foraminifera), Jenaische Zeitschrift, x., 1876, (13) ZorrF (Mycetozoa), Encykiop. der Naturwissensch., Abtheilung 1, Lieferung. 39-41, 1884. (14) LANKESTER, E. Rar (Archerina), Quart. Jour. Micr. Sct., January 1885. (15) CreNKowsk1 (Vampyrella), Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anatomie, vol. i. p. 218. (16) Hertwie, R., and Lesser (Leptoplirys) Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anat., x., Supplement, 1874. (17) Sonoxin (Bursulla), Annales des Sciences Naturelles (Botanique), 1876, p.40. (18) Cienxowsx1 (Enteromyxa), cited in (18) by Zopf, Pp. 114. (19) Cienxkowsk1 (Colpodella), " Beitrige zur Kenntuiss der Monaden," Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anal., vol. i. (20) Crexkowsk1 (Pseudospora), same as (18). (21) Worontn (Plasmodiophora), Pringsheim's Jafrbiicher, xi. 548. (22) GoBuL (Tetramyxa), Flora, No. 23, 1884 (23) Soroxin (Gloidium), Morphol. Jahro., vol. iv., 1878. (24) CrenKowski (Gymnophrys), Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anatomie, vol. xii., 1876. (25) Wricut (Boderia), Jour. of Anat. and Phystol., vol. i., 1867. (26) CizNKOWsKI (Nuclearia), Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anatomie, sol aie 1865. (27) Scuvztper, Aim. (Monobia), Archives d. Zoolog. Experimentale, vol. vii., 1878. (28) Huxtuy (Bathybius), Quart. Jour. Micr. Sci., vol. viii., 1868. (29) BesseLs (Protobathybius), Jenatsche Zettschrift, ix.; also American Naturalist, ix. (30) StraspurGeR (nuclei of Mycetozoa), Zellbildung und Zelithetlung, 3d ed.,p. 79. (31) Fayvop (Copromyxa), Botan, Zeitung, 1883, No. ll. (82) Greerr (Pelomyxa=Pelobius), Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anatomie, vi., 1870. (33) Buck (Arcella, spore-bud production), Zeitsch. wiss. Zoologie, xxx. (34) LANKESTER, E, Ray (Lithameeba), Quart. Jour. After. Sci., vol. xix., 1879. (35) CiENKOWSKI (Labyrinthula), Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anat., vol. iii., 1867, p. 274. (86) AucHER (Chlamydomyxa), Quart. Jour, Micr. Sci., vol. xv., 1875. (37) CieNKowskKI (Nuclearia), Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anat., vol. i., 1865. (38) ARCHER (Diaphorophodon, &c.), Quart. Jour. Micr. Sci., vols. ix., x.,* 1869-70. (39) StppALit (Shepheardella), Quart. Jour. Micr, Sci., vol. xx., 1880, p. 180. (40) CARPENTER (shell of Orbitolites), Pati. Trans. Roy. Soc. London, 1883, part ii. (41) CarpenTER (Koozoon), Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., vols, xxi, and xxii.; and Annals and Mag. Nat. Hist., xiii. (42) Harcxen (Radioloria), Jenaische Zeitschr., xy., 1881. (48) Crenxowskl (yellow cells of Radiolaria), Archiv f. Mikrosk. Anat., vii., 1871. (44) Branpt~~

~~(yellow cells of Radiolaria), Monatsber. d. Berlin Acad., 1881, p. 388. {45) GuppeEs (yellow cells of Radiolaria), Nature, vol. xxv., 1882, p. 303. (46) Hurtwic (Radiolarian reproduction), "Der Organismus der Radiolarien," Jenaische Denkschriften, 1879; also Zur Histologie der Radiolarien,~~

~~PRO—P RO~~

~~Leipsic, 1876. (47) Levexart (Sporozoa), Die menschlichen Parasiten, 2d ed., 1879, (48) ScunerpER, Aim, (Gregarinidea), Archives d, Zoologie Experim,, 1873, p. 615, 1875, p. 432 and p. 493, 1881, p. 387. (49) Koss (Coccidiide of Helix), Abhand. d. Senkenberg. naturf. Gesellsch., i., 1855. (50) LANKESTER, E. Ray (Drepanidium), Quart. Jour, Micr. Sci., vol. xxii., 1882, p. 53. (51) Linperkuan (Coccidinm of Frog's kidney), Archiv f, Anat. and Physiolog., 1854, (52) CirnKowsKI (Ameebidium), Sotan. Zeitung, 19 Jahrg., 1861, p. 169. (53) Von LENDENFELD (parasitic ameeboid organism), in Proceedings of Linnean Society of New South Wales, 1885, (54) LANKESTER, E. Ray (Monocystts pellucida), Quart. Jour, Micr. Sci. (new series), vol. vi., 1866. (55) LANKESTER, Ez. Ray (Afono- cystis aphrodite), Quart. Jour. Micr, Sci. (new series), vol. iii., 1863. (56) Hertwie, R. (Aphrothoraca), in Organismus der Radiolarien, Jena, 1879. (57) ArcHer (Chlamydophora), '"'Résumé, &e.," Quart. Jour, Alter. Sct., vol. xvi., 1876. (58) HeRtWwic, R., and Lesser (Chalarothoraca), Archiv f. Mikrosk, Anat., x., Supplement, 1874. (59) LanKester, E. Ray (Haliphysema), Quart. Jour. Micr. Sci. Mew series), vol. xix., 1879. (60) HArcKet (Physemaria), Jenaische Zeitschr., x. (61) BEssets (Astrorhiza), Jenaische Zeitschr., ix. (62) CARPENTER (classification of Reticularia), " Researches on the Foraminifera," Phil. Trans., 1856-59-60. (63) HArckEt (Radiolaria), Die Radiolarien, Berlin, 1862. (64) LANKESTER, E. Ray (term Corticata), Preface to the English editionot Gegenbaur's Elements of Comparative Anatomy, 1878. (65) ClENKowsK1 (Ciliophrys), Archiv J. Mikrosk, Anat., xii., 1876, p. 15-50. (66) DALLINGER and DryspALE (hooked and springing Monads), a series of papers in the Afonthly Microscopical Journal, 1873-74-75. (67) DALLINGER (Trepomonas), President's Address, Jour, of the Roy, Mic. Soc., April 1885. (68) JAMES CLARK (Choanoflagellata, Memoirs of the Boston Society of Nat. Hist., 1867, vol. i. (69) SAVILLE KENT (Choano- flagellata),. Monthly Microscopical Journal, vol. vi., 1871. (170) Lewis, T. R. (Hizematozoic~~

~~Flagellata), Quart. Jour. Aicr, Sct., vol. xxiv., 1884, and vol. xix., 1879. (71) Savitte Kent, Manual of the Infusoria, London, 1882, (72) SaLuiTr, J. (chlorophyll of Ciliata), Quart. Jour, Micr. Set., 1884. (73) BALBIANI (sexuality of Ciliata), Journal de la Physiologie, i., iii., and iv., and Archives de Zool. Experim., ii., 1873. (74) Btrscui1 (conjugation of Ciliata), Abhand. d, Senkenberg. naturf. Gesellschaft., x., 1876. (75) LankestER (Opalina=Anaplo- phyra), Quart. Jour. Micr, Sci, (new series), vol. x., 1870. (76) ALLMAN (encysted Vorticellee), Quart. Jour. Micr. Set. (new series), vol. xii, 1872, p. 393. (77) HAECKEL (structure of Ciliata), Zur Morphologie der Infusorien, Leipsic, 1878. (78) ALLMAN (trichocysts of Ciliata), Quart. Jour. Micr, Sct., vol. iii, 1855, (79) STEIN (relations of Acinetz to Ciliata) Der Organismus der Infusionsthiere, Abth. i., Leipsic, 1859. (80) Srmin (Dinoflagellata). Der Organisnus, &c., Abth. iii., Leipsic, 1883. (81) BEren (Dinoflagellata), Morphology, Jahrb., vii., 1881. (82) BUrscnii (Dinoflagellata), Morpholog. Jahrb., x., 1885. (83) KLEBs (Dino-flagellata), Botan. Zeitung, 1884, pp. 722, 737. (84) GruBER (nuclei of Ciliata Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zoologie, xi., 1884. (85) ForrTincrR (Opalinopsis, &c.), Archives de Biologie, vol. ii. (86) ALLMAN (Noctiluca), Quart. Jour. Aficr. Sci. (new series), vol. xii., 1872, p. 526. (87) CienxowskI (Noctiluca spores), Arch. Jj. Mikrosk, Anat., vii., 1871. (88) HEeRTWwiIe (Leptodiscus), Jenaische Zeitschr., xi, 1877. (89) FRAIponT, "' Recherches sur les Aeinétiniens de la cote d'Ostende,"' Bulletins de V Acad, Roy. Bruxelles, 1877-78. (90) SuriRAY, Afagasin de Zoologie, 1836. (91) ALiman (Peridininm), Quart. Jour. Micr, Sct., iii, 1855. (92) Lerpy, U.S. Geological Survey of the Territories, vol. xii. (93) CLapAREDE and LACHMANN, Etudes sur les Infusotres et les Rhizopodes, Geneya, 1858-61. (E. R.L.)

~~7~~

~~PROUDHON, Pierre JosepH (1809-1865), a well- known revolutionary writer, was born in 1809 at Besancon, France, the native place also of the socialist Fourier. HIs origin was of the humblest, his father being a brewer's cooper; and the boy herded cows and followed other simple pursuits of a like nature. But he was not entirely self-educated ; at sixteen he entered the college of his native place, though his family was so poor that he could not procure the necessary books, and had to borrow them from his mates in order to copy the lessons. There isa story of the young~~

~~*Proudhon returning home laden with prizes, but to find that there was no dinner for him. At nineteen he became a working compositor; afterwards he rose to be a corrector for the press, reading proofs of ecclesiastical works, and thereby acquiring a very compet- ent knowledge of theology. In this way also he came to learn Hebrew, and to compare it with Greek, Latin, and French; and it was the first proof of his intellectual audacity that on the strength of this he wrote an " Essai*~~

~~*de grammaire générale." As Proudhon knew nothing |*~~

~~*whatever of the true principles of philology, his treatise was of no value. In 1838 he obtained the pension Suard, a bursary of 1500 franes a year for three years, for the encouragement of young men of promise, which was in the gift of the academy of Besangon. In 1839 he wrote a treatise "On the Utility of Keeping the Sunday," which contained the germs of his revolutionary ideas. About this time he went to Paris, where he lived a poor, ascetic, and studious life.—making acquaintance, however, With the socialistic ideas which were then fomenting in the capital. In 1840 he published his first work Qw est-ce que la Propriété? His famous answer to this question, "La propricté, c'est le vol," naturally did not please the academy of Besancon, and there was some talk of with- drawing his pension ; but he held it for the regular period.*~~

~~*For his third memoir on property, which took the shape of a letter to the Fourierist, M. Considérant, he was tried at Besangon but was acquitted. In 1846 he published his greatest work, the Systéme des Contradictions économi- ques ou Philosophie de la Misére. For some time Proud- hon carried on a small printing establishment at Besancon, but without success ; afterwards he became connected as a kind of manager with a commercial firm at Lyons. In 1847 he left this employment, and finally settled in Paris, Where he was uow becoming celebrated as a leader of innovation. He regretted the sudden outbreak of the*~~

~~*revolution of February (1848), becausc it found the social*~~

~~*reformers unprepared. But he threw himself with ardour into the conflict of opinion, and soon gained a national notoriety. He was the moving spirit of the Représentant du Peuple and other journals, in which the most advanced*~~

theories were advocated in the strongest language ; and as member of assembly for the Seine department he brought forward his celebrated proposal of exacting an impost of one-third on interest and rent, which of course was rejected. His attempt to found a bank which should operate by granting gratuitous credit was also a complete failure ; of the five million francs which he required only seventeen thousand were offered. The violence of his utterances led to an imprisonment at Paris for three years, during which he married a young working woman. As Proudhon aimed at economic rather than political innova-

_tion, he had no special quarrel with the second empire,

and he lived in comparative quiet under it till the publica- tion of his work, De la Justice dans la Révolution et dans ?kglise (1858), in which he attacked the church and other existing institutions with unusual fury. This time he fled to Brussels to escape imprisonment. On his return to France his health broke down, though he continued to write. He died at Passy in 1865.

PRO—P RO

Personally Proudhon was one of the most remarkable figures of modern Franee. His life was marked by the severest simplicity and even Puritanism ; he was affectionate in his domestic relations, a most loyal friend, and strictly upright in conduct. He was strongly opposed to the prevailing I'rench socialism of his time because of its utopianism and immorality ; and, though he uttered all manner of wild paradox and vehement invective against the dominant ideas and institutions, he was remarkably free from feel- ings of personal hate. In all that he said and did he was the son of the people, who had not been broken to the usual social and academic diseipline; hence his roughness, his one-sidedness, and his exaggera- tions ; but he is always vigorous, and often brilliant and original.

It would of course be impossible to reduce the ideas of such an irregular thinker to systematic form. In later years Proudhon him- self confessed that "the great part of his publications formed

only a work of dissection and ventilation, so to speak, by means of |

~~which he slowly makes his way towards a superior conception of political and economic laws." is clear and firm ; no one could insist with greater emphasis on the~~

~~demonstrative character of economic principles as understood by |~~

~~himself. He strongly believed in the absolute truth of a few moral ideas, with which it was the aim of his teaching to mould and suffuse political economy. Of these fundamental ideas, justice, liberty, and equality were the chief. What he desiderated, for instance, in an ideal society was the most perfect equality of remuneration. It was his principle that service pays service, that a day's labour balances a day's labour—in other words, that the duration of labour is the just measure of value. He did not shrink from any of the consequences of this theory, for he would give the same remuneration to the worst mason as toa Phidias ; but he looks forward also to a period in human development when the present inequality in the talent and capacity of men would be reduced to an inappreciable minimum. equivalent of service is derived his axiom that property is the right of aubaine. The awbain was a stranger not naturalized ; and the~~

~~right of aubaine was the right in virtue of which the sovereign |~~

~~claimed the goods of such a stranger who had died in his territory. Property isa right of the same nature, with a like power of appro- priation in the form of rent, interest, &c. labour, consumes without producing, and enjoys without exertion.~~

~~Proudhon's aim, therefore, was to realize a science of society resting |~~

~~on principles of justice, liberty, and equality thus understood ; "a~~

~~science absolute, rigorous, based on the nature of man and of his |~~

~~faculties, and on their mutual relations ; a science which we have not to invent, but to discover." But he saw clearly that such ideas with their necessary accompaniments could only be realized through a long and laborious process of social transformation. As we have said, he strongly detested the prurient immorality of the schools of Saint-Simon and Fourier.~~

~~*He attacked them not less bitterly for thinking that society could be changed off-hand by a ready-made and complete scheme of reform. It was "the most accursed lie," he said, "that could be offered to mankind." In social change he distinguishes between the transition and the per- fection or achievement. With regard to the transition he advocated the progressive abolition of the right of awbaine, by reducing interest, rent, &c. For the goal he professed only to give the general principles; he had no ready-made scheme, no utopia. The positive organization of the new society in its details was a labour that would require fifty Montesquieus. The organization he desired was one on collective principles, a free association which would take account of the division of labour, and which would maintain the personality both of the man and the citizen. With his strong and fervid feeling for human dignity and liberty, Proudhon could not have tolerated any theory of social change that did not give full scope for the free development of man. Connected with this was his famous paradox of anarchy, as the goal of the free development of society, by which he meant that through the ethical progress of men government should become unnecessary. '"'Government of man by man in every form," he says, "is oppression. The highest perfection of society is found in the union of order and anarchy."*~~

~~*Proudhon's theory of property as the right of aubaine is substan- tially the same as the theory of capital held by Marx and most of the later socialists. Property and capital are defined and treated as the power of exploiting the labour of other men, of claiming the results of labour without giving an equivalent. Proudhon's famous paradox, "La propriété, c'est le vol," is merely a trenchant expression of this general principle. As slavery is assassination inasmuch as it destroys all that is valuable and desirable in human personality, so property is theft inasmuch as it appropriates the value produced by the labour of others in the form of rent, interest, or profit without rendering an equivalent. For property Prondhon would substitute individual possession, the right of occupation being equal for all men (see SOCIALISM).*~~

~~*The principal works of Proudhon have already been mentioned. A complete edition, including his posthumous writings, was published at Paris, 1875. See P. J. Proudhon, sa vie et sa correspondance, by Sainte-Beuve (Paris, 1875), an*~~

~~*admirable work, unhappily not completed; also Revue des Deux Mondes, Jan. 1866 and Feb. 1873, ins)*~~

~~*Yet the groundwork of his teaching |*~~

~~*From the great principle of service as the |*~~

~~*It reaps without |*~~

~~*867*~~

~~*PROUT, Samuet (1783-1852), water-colour painter, was born at Plymouth on September 17, 1783. His education in art was obtained by a patient and enthiusi- astic study of nature. He spent whole summer days, in company with the ill-fated Haydon, in drawing the quiet cottages, rustic bridges, and romantic water-mills of the beautiful valleys of Devon. He even made a journey through Cornwall, to try his hand in furnishing sketches for Britton's Beauties of England. On his removal in 1803 to London, which became his headquarters after 1812, a new scene of activity opened up before Prout. He now endeavoured to correct and improve his style by the study of the works of the rising school of land- scape. To gain a living he painted marine pieces for Palser the printseller, received pupils, aud published many drawing books for learners. He was likewise one of the first who turned to account in his profession the newly-invented art of lithography. In spite of all this industry, however, it was not until about 1818 that Prout discovered his proper sphere. Happening at that time to make his first visit to the Continent, and to study the quaint streets and market-places of Continental cities, he suddenly found himself in a new and enchanting province of art. All his faculties, having found their congenial element, sprung into unwonted power and activity. His eye readily caught the picturesque features of the architec- ture, and his hand recorded them with unsurpassed felicity and fine selection of line. The composition of his draw- ings was exquisitely natural; their colour exhibited "the truest and happiest association in sun and shade"; the picturesque remnants of ancient architecture were rendered with the happiest breadth and largeness, with the heartiest perception and enjoyment of their time-worn ruggedness ; and the solemnity of great cathedrals was brought out with striking effect. Encouraged by this success, Prout continued most enthusiastically to*~~

~~pursue that path upon which he had unexpectedly come. At the time of his death, 10th February 1852, there was scarcely a nook in France, Germany, Italy, and the Netherlands where his quiet, benevolent, observant face had not been seen search- ing for antique gables and sculptured pieces of stone. In Venice especially there was hardly a pillar which his eye had not lovingly studied and his pencil had not dexter-~~

~~ously copied.~~

~~See a memoir of Prout, by Johu Ruskin, in Aré Journal for 1849, and the same author's Notes on the Fine Art Soctety's Loan Col- lection of Drawings by Samuel Prout and William Hunt, 1879-80.~~

~~PROVENCAL LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE. I. Lancuacr.—Provengal is a name used to comprehend all the varieties of Romanic speecli formerly spoken and written, and still generally used by country people, in the south of France. The geographical limits of this infinitely varied idiom cannot be defined with precision, because it is conterminous on the north, south, and east with idioms of the same family, with which almost at every point it blends by insensible gradations. Roughly speaking, it may be said to be contained between the Atlantic on the west, the Pyrenees and Mediterranean on the south, and the Alps on the east,and to be bounded on the north by a line pro- ceeding from the Gironde to the Alps, and passing through the departments of Gironde, Dordogne, Haute Vienne, Creuse, Allier, Loire, Rhone, Istre, and Savoie. These limits are to some extent conventional. 'True, they are fixed in accordance with the mean of linguistic characters ; but it is self-evident that according to the importance attached to one character or another they may be deter- mined differently.~~

~~1. Different Names.—Though the name Provengal is generally adopted to designate the Romanic idiom of this | region, it must not be supposed that this name has been~~

~~imposed by general consensus, very firm historical basis. In the southern part of Gaul, Romanic developed itself, so to say, in the natural state of language. Contrary to what took place in other Romanic countries, no local~~

~~*variety here raised itself to the rank of the literary idiom par excellence. While in Italy the Florentine, in France the French dialect proper (that is to say, the dialect of the fle de France), succeeded little by little in monopolizing literary use, to the exclusion of the other dialects, we do not find that either the Mar- seillais or the Toulousain idiom was ever spoken or written outside of Marseilles or "oulouse. In consequence of this*~~

~~*circumstance, no name originally designating the language | ' TO | no doubt that to the Spaniards he joined more correctly*~~

~~*of a town or of a small district came to be employed to designate the language of the whole of southern France ; and on the other hand the geographical region described above, having never had any special name, was not able to give one to the idiom.*~~

~~*In the Middle Ages the idiom was spoken of under various appellations: Romans or lenga Romana was that most generally used. authors of the Leys d@Amors, a treatise on grammar,*~~

~~*poetry, and rhetoric, composed at Toulouse in the 14th | century. But this term, which is capable of being applied, ,*~~

~~*and which, in fact, has been applied, to each of the Romanic languages individually, is too general to be retained. It is, however, that which was revived in the beginning of the present century by Raynouard, the author of the Lexiqgue roman. It is now abandoned. In the 13th century a poet born in Catalonia, on the southern slope of the Pyrenees, Raimon Vidal of Besalu, introduced the name of Limousin language, probably on account of the great reputation of some Limousin troubadours, but he took care to define the expression, which he extended beyond its original meaning, by saying that in speaking of Inmousin he must be understood to include Saintonge,*~~

~~*This expression found favour in Spain, and especially in Catalonia, where the little treatise of Raimon Vidal was extensively read. The most ancient lyric poetry of the Catalans (13th and 14th centuries), composed on the model of the poetry of the troubadours, was often styled in Spain poesia*~~

~~lemosina, and in the same country lengua lemosina long designated at once the Provencal and the old literary Catalan.~~

~~The name Provengal as applied to language is hardly met with in the Middle Ages, except in the restricted sense of the language of Provence proper, i.¢., of the region lying south of Dauphiné on the eastern side of the Rhone. Raimon Feraut, who composed, about 1300, a versified life of St Honorat, uses it, but he was himself a native of Provence. We can also cite the title of a grammar, the Donatz Proensals, by Hugh Faidit (about 1250) ; but this work was composed in north Italy, and we may con- ceive that the Italians living next to Provence employed the name Provengal somewhat vaguely without inquiring into the geographical limits of the idiom so called. In fact the naine Provengal became traditional in Italy, and in the beginning of the 16th century Bembo could write, " Era per tutto il Ponente la favella Provenzale, ne tempi ne quali ella fiorf, in prezzo et in istima molta, et tra tutti gli altri idiomi di quelle parti, di gran lunga primiera. Conciosiacosa che ciascuno, o Francese, o Fiamingo, o Guascone, o Borgognone, o altramente di quelle nationi che egli si fosse, il quale bene scrivere e specialmente verseggiar volesse, quantunque egli Provenzale non fosse, lo faceva Provenzalmente" (Prose, ed. 1529, fol. vile)~~

~~PROVENOAL~~

~~or that it rests upon any | This passage, in which the primacy of the Provengal~~

~~[LANGUAGE.~~

~~tongue is manifestly exaggerated, is interesting as showing the name Provencal employed, though, with little pre- cision, in the sense in which we now apply it.~~

~~Another designation, which is supported by the great authority of Dante, is that of langued'oc. In his treatise De Vulgari Eloquo (bk i. chaps. viii. and ix.), the Floren- tine poet divides the languages of Latin origin into three idioms, which he characterizes by the affirmative par- ticles used in each, oc, o#l, st; 'nam alii oc, alii oil, alii st affirmando loquuntur, ut puta~~

~~*Hispani, Franci, et Latini." As is seen, he attributes the affirmation oc to the Spaniards, which is of course erroneous, but there is*~~

~~*the inhabitants of southern France, for in the Vita nuova, chap. xxv., he speaks of the /ingua d'oc as having been long celebrated for its poets, which can apply only to the lan- guage of the troubadours. The name langue d'oc occurs*~~

~~*| also as early as the end of the 13th century, in public _acts, but with a different sense, that of the province of It is notably that employed by the |*~~

~~*Languedoc, as constituted after the union of the county of Toulouse to the French king's dominion in 1271. In the royal acts of the end of the 13th and of the 14th century partes lingux occitane or pays de langue doc designates the union of the five seneschalates of Périgueux, Carcassone, Beaucaire, Toulouse, and Rhodez, that is to say, the province of Languedoc, such as it existed till 1790. Some scholars, following the example of Dante, still actually use the term langue d'oc in opposition to langue dour, but these names have the inconvenience that they take such a secondary fact as the form of the affirmative particle as an essential character. Moreover it can hardly help to dis- tinguish the other Romanic languages, as langue de st would cause a confusion between Italian and Spanish. Provengal, without being entirely satisfactory, since in*~~

~~*_ principle it applies solely to the language of Provence, is, Quercy, Auvergne, &c. (Fasos de trobar, ed. Stengel, p. 70). |*~~

~~*notwithstanding, the least objectionable name that can be adopted. In addition to its being in some sort conse- crated by the use made of it by the Italians, who were the first after the Renaissance to study the works of the troubadours, it must not be forgotten that, just as the Roman Provincia, in which the name originated, extended across the south of Gaul from the Alps to Toulouse and the Pyrenees, so still in the Middle Ages Provincia, Provinciales, were understood in a very wide sense to designate not only Provence strictly so called, zc. the*~~

~~*| present departments of Alpes Maritimes, Basses Alpes,*~~

~~*Var, Bouches du Rhéne, but also a very considerable part of Languedoc and the adjacent countries. Thus in the 12th century the chronicler Albert of Aix-la-Chapelle*~~

~~*| (Albertus Aquensis) places the town of Puy (Haute Loire) an Provincia.*~~

~~*2. General Characters of the Language in its Ancient State.—The Provencal language, within the limits above indicated, cannot be said to have any general characters really peculiar to it. Such of its characters as are found in all the varieties of the language are met with also in neighbouring idioms; such as are not found elsewhere are not general characters, that is to say, are manifested 'only In certain varieties of Provengal. In reality '" Provengal language" does not designate, properly speaking, a linguistic unity; 1t is merely a geographical expression.*~~

~~*Tonic or Accented Vowels.—Latin a is preserved in an open syllable amare, amar, amatum, amat, as well as in a closed syllable carnem, carn, This character is common also to the Romanic of Spain and Italy; but it is one of the best distin guish- ing marks between Provencal and French, for, to the north, this a, when in an open syllable, does not pass beyond a line which*~~

~~*Mv "The Provengal speech in the times in which it flourished was prized and held in great esteem all over the West, and among all the other idioms of that region was Ly far the foremost : so that every one,*~~

~~*whether Frenchman Fleming, Gascon, Burgundian, or of what nation Soever, who wished to write and versify well, although he was not a Provengal, did it in the Provengal language."*~~

~~*LANGUAGE. |*~~

~~*would run approximately through Blaye, Coutras (Gironde), Riberae, Nontron (Dordogne), Bellac (Haute Vienne), Boussac (Creuse), Montlugon, Gannat (Allier), Montbrison (Loire). Start- ing eastward from Lyons or thereabouts, there appears a notable linguistic fact which is observable in varied proportions in the*~~

~~*departments of Ain, Isere, and Savoie, and in Romanic Switzer- |*~~

~~land. This is, that accented Latin a in an open syllable, when~~

~~preceded by a mouzllure or palatalization (whatever the origin |~~

~~of this), becomes ¢; on the contrary, when there is no mouwéllure, it remains a. Thus we find in the Meditations of Marguerite d'Oingt (Lyons, about 1300) ensennier, deleitier, as against desirrar, recontar, regardar. Of these two endings, the former, -ter, is that which is found regularly in French, the second that which is regular in Pr. Pure Pr. would have -ar in both cases (ensenhar, deleitar, desirrar, &c.); Fr. would have. -ier (enseignier, delitier) and -er (destrer). Prof. Ascoli has given the name of Franco-provencal (franco-provenzale) to the varieties of Romanie in which we find this duality of treatment of Latin a,~~

~~according as it was or was not preceded by a palatalized sound. |~~

~~Lat. 2 % become close ¢ (Ital., ¢ chiwso; Fr. é): habére aver, erédet eve, mé(n)sem mes, fidem fe, pilum pel. This character is not only common to Italian and Spanish, but also extends over the French domain on its western side as far as Britanny. Certain exceptions noticed in French do not occur in Pr.: thus mercédem, eéra, pr(eh)e(u)sum, venénum, which give in Fr. merei, etre, pris, venin, where we should have expected mereei, ceire, preis, venein, give regularly in Pr. meree, cera, pres, vere. Lat. &@ preserves, as in Italy, the sound of open ¢ (Ital., e aperto): pédem, pe, lévat, leva, lEporem, lebre. In certain determinate cases, this e from about the 13th century onwards may diphthongize to ze: égo, ew, then teu, héri, er, ter, férit, fer, fier. Lat. 7 is preserved, as in all the iomanic languages: amicum, amt, ripa, riba. Lat. 7% is treated lke z long when it precedes (with hiatus) another vowel : pium, pia, piu, pia, via, via, ligat, lia. Lat. 6, % result in one and the same sound, that of Italian w, Fr. ow (Eng. 00). The same phenomenon takes place in the north of Italy, and in the Romanic of Switzerland. 'This sound, which is styled by the Donat Proensal the o estrett (elose 0), is usually symbolized in the early texts by simple 0, and is thus confounded in spelling, though not in pronunciation, with the open o (0 lare of the Donatz Proensals) which comes from Lat. 8. Lat. @ becomes % (i.¢., Fr. 2), as all over France, and also in North Italy and Catalonia: Intirum, mur (=miir), dirum, dur (=diir). Lat. aw is rigorously preserved over the whole extent of the Pr. domain: aurum, aur, alauda, alauza, pauperem,~~

~~*paubre. At present the preservation of Lat, aw does not extend much outside the Prov. domain; it is, however, found in certain parts of the Ladino zone in Switzerland (upper Rhine valley), and in Friuli, and it is to be supposed to have been once general over the whole of that Zone. It is attested as late as the 16th century in the Vaudois valleys of Piedmont, and there are also examples of it in old Catalan. Elsewhere the diphthong has regularly become open o (aurum, It. and Sp. ovo, Fr. or, &c.).*~~

~~*Atonte Vowels.—The atonic vowels (7.e., vowels of the unac- cented syllables) which precede the accented syllable present no very characteristic phenomenon ; but it is otherwise with those that follow the accented syllable, the post-tonic vowels. The Pr. is one of the Romanic idioms which, like the French, but unlike the Castilian and the dialects of central and northern Italy, admit of only one syllable after the accent. But the rules are not quite the same as in French. In French the only vowel which can stand after the accented syllable is "e feminine," otherwise called "'e mute." In Prov. a and e are the most frequent vowels in this position, but 7 and o also occur. In French the first of the two post-tonic vowels of a Lat. proparoxytone always disappears ; in Prov. it tends to be preserved, when followed by one of the consonants », 7, J, d: te'rminum, te'rmen, ho'minem, o'men, angclum, angel, se'calem, se'guel, cre'scere, crei'sser, tespidum, te°bez. Finally, Prov. presents in certain words coming from Lat. pro- paraxytones the trace of forms which (like Ital.) admitted two atonic vowels after the accented sylHable: thus we have porte gue and po'rgue (po'rticum), Fabre'ga, a place name, and fa'rga (fa'brica), perte'ga and perga (pe*rtica), feme'na and fe-mna (fe'mina). We have also lagre*ma (la'eryma), but a form accented like Fr. Jarme does not exist. There seems to be no doubt that these forms in which a displacement of the Latin accent is observed were at an earlier period pronounced as proparaxytones (po'rtegue, fa'brega, pe rtega, fe'mena, la' grema).*~~

~~*Consonants.—The boundary usually recognized between Prov. and French is founded upon linguistic characters furnished by the vowels, especially a; if it had been determined by characters furnished by the consonants, the line of demarcation would have to be drawn farther south, becanse the consonantal system which is regarded as proper to French really extends in*~~

~~its main features over the northern zone of the Provencal region as defined above. As with the vowels, only a few of the salient facts cau here be~~

~~PROVENGAL~~

~~i)~~

~~869~~

~~indicated. C initial, or second consonant of a group, before a (caballum, mercatum), preserves its Lat. sound (=£) in the greater part of the Prov. region. But in the northern zone it takes the sound of teh (Eng. ef in chin) as in O. Fr., and this sound is still pretty well preserved, although there is here and there a tendency to the present sound of ch in Fr. (=sh Eng.). The place names Castellum, Castanétum, Casale, give Chastel, Chastanet, Chazal, in Dordogne, Haute Vienne, Corréze, Puy de~~

~~| Dome, Cantal, Haute Loire, the north of Lozére, of Ardéche, of~~

~~Drome, of Isere, and of Hantes Alpes, and Castel, Castanet, Cazal, farther to the south. Analogously, g initial, or second consonant of a group, followed by a, becomes j (i.¢., dzh=O. Fr. and Eng. j in jam) in the same zone; Garrica is Jarrija, Jarria in Dordogne, Corréze, Cantal, Haute Loire, Isére, and Garriga farther south. Between two vowels ¢ becomes d: edat, emperador, nadal, amada (etatem, imperatorem, natale, amata). This was also the case in O. Fr. until the course of the 11th century (honurede, emperedur, lavadures, &c., in the Life of St Alexis). But in the northern zone this d representing a Lat. ¢ fell away as~~

~~| early as in Fr.; in an 1lth-century text from the environs of'~~

~~Valence, we read mraor, coroaa (*muratorem, corrogita), Fr. corvée (P. Meyer, Recueil d'anevens textes, Provencal section, No. 40). In the south, d between two vowels was preserved almost everywhere until about the middle of the 12th century, when it became z (as in Fr. and Eng. zero): erwzel, azorar, auzir, vezer (crudélem, adorare, audire, vidére). In the 14th and 15th centuries this z, like every z or s soft of whatever origin, was ljable to become 7 (lingual, not uvular): aurir, veren (audire, videntem). In Béarn~~

~~and Gascony d remained; but in the northern zone Lat. d, instead of changing into z, r, disappeared as in Fr. and quite as early. The poem of Boetius, of which the MS. is of the 11th century, shows in this respect great hesitation: e.g., @ preserved in chaden, eredet, tradar, veder (cadentem, *eredé'dit, *tradare, vidére); d fallen away in ereessen, JSeeltat, traazo, veiit, fiar (*credessent, fidelitatem, *tra- datidnem, *viditum, p. ple. of vidére, fidare). One of the most general facts in Pr. is the habit of rejecting Lat. final 4, of which examples to any number are presented by the verbs. In Fr. this ¢ was formerly retained when it followed a vowel which remained, avmet, entret (amat, intrat), and still remains (in writing at least) when, in Latin, it follows a consonant, atmendt, Jou, vit (amant, facit, *fact, vivit, *vivt); but in Pr. the t is dropped in all cases, even in the most ancient texts: aman, fai, viu. Yet in the northern zone we find the ¢ retained in the 3d per. pl. of verbs, -ant, -ont (Lat. -ant, -unt). H has gone completely (or at least only appears through orthographic tradition, and very intermittently, (A)erba, (h)onor, (h)wmil, &c.), not only in words of Lat. origin, which is the case in O. Fr, but even in Teutonic words (anta, ardit, arene, ausbere, elm, Fr. honte, hardi, hareng, haubert, heawme, with h aspirated). By this feature, the~~

~~| northern limits of which are not yet well determined, the Pro-~~

~~vengal attaches itself to the Romanic of the southern countries. N final, or standing in Lat. between two vowels of which the second is to be dropped, disappears in the whole central part of the Pr. domain: gran gra, ben be, en e, ven-ve, fin fi, un u (granum, bene, in, venit, finem, unum). The forms with 2 belong to the eastern part (left of the Rhone), the western part (Gascony, but not Béarn), and the region of the Pyrenees. It is possible that this loss of 2 went along with a lengthening of final vowel; at least, in Béarnese when the x falls away the vowel is doubled: eaperaa, bestt, boo (capellanum, vicinum, bonum), &c. These are the most important characteristics of the consonants, in relation to the extent of space over which they prevail. Others, which appear only within a more limited area, are perhaps more curious ou account of their strangeness. It will suffice to mention a few which belong to the district bounded on the west and south by the Atlantic, the Basque provinces, and the Pyrenees, and which extends northward and eastward towards the Garonne and its affluents, as far as the Gironde. (This~~

~~*includes Béarn, Bigorre, and Gascony.) Here the sound v no longer exists, being replaced generally by 6; between two vowels, in Gascony, by « with the sound of Eng. w. Initial r assumes a prosthetic a: arram, arre, Arrobert (ramum, rem, Robertnm). JZ between two vowels becomes 7: aperar, eaperan, or (Béarn) caperaa, bera, era (apel- larc, capellanum, bella, ella). On the contrary, at the end of words (viz., in Romanic) 77 becomes g or ¢, d; the former*~~

~~*| change seems to belong rather to Hautes and Basses Pyrénées,*~~

~~*Landes, the latter to Gironde, Lot et Garonne, Gers: eg, ed, et (ille), arrasteg, -ed, -et (rastcellum), easteg, -ed, -et (castellum), eapdeg, -ed, -et (capitellum), whence Fr. cadet (in 16th century eapdet, originally a Gascon word). For further details upon the consonants in this region of south-west France, see Romania, iii. 435-38, v. 368-69.*~~

~~*Flexion.—Old Provengal has, like Old French, a declension con- sisting of two cases for each number, derived from the Latin nominative and accusative. In certain respects this declension is more in conformity with etymology in Provencal than in Old*~~

~~*870*~~

~~*French, having been less influenced by analogy. 'he following are the types of this declension, taking them in the order of the Lat. declensions. 1. Words in a coming from Lat. Ist decl., increased by certain words coming from Lat. neuter plurals treated in Prov. as feminine singulars; one form only for each number ; sing. eausa, pl. eawsas. 2. Words of the Lat. 2d dee'., with a few from the 4th; two forms for each number: sing. subject cavals (caballus), object caval (caballum); pl. sub ject eaval (ca balli), object eavals(caballos). 38. Words of Lat. 3d decl. Here there are three Lat. types to be considered. The*~~

~~*first type preseuts the same theme and the same aceentuation in all |*~~

~~*the cases, ¢.g., eanis. The second presents the same accentuation in the nominative singular and in the other eases, but the theme ditfers: comes, cormitem. Inthe third type the acceutuation changes: pecca'tor,*~~

~~peccato‘rem. The first type is naturally confounded with nouns of the 2d decl.: sing., subj. cans or cas, obj. ean or ea. in their original variety; to co’mitem. Latin the theme of the nominative singular had been refashioned after the theme of the oblique cases. They said in the nom. sing. heredis, pareutis, principis, for heres, parens, prtinccps. Consequently the difference both of theme and of accentuation which existed in Lat. between nominative and accu- sative has disappeared in Pr. ‘This reconstruction of the nomina-~~

~~thus coms answers to co’mes, and eo’mte~~

~~tive singular after the theme of the other cases takes place in all |~~

~~Lat. words in -as (except abbas), in those in -7o, in the greater part of those in -o7, at least in all those which have an abstract meaning. Thus we obtain bontatz (bonitatis for bonitas) and bontat (bonitatem), eiutatz (civitatis for civitas) and ezutat (civitatem), anors (amoris foramor) and amor (amorem). All present participles in the subject case singular are formed in this way upon refashioned Latin nominatives : amans (amantis foramans) amant (amantem). It is to be remarked that in regard to feminine nouns Pr. is more etymological than Fr. In the latter feminine nouns have generally only one forni for each number; bonté for the subj. as well as for the obj. case, and not bontés and bonté; in Pr. on the contrary bontatz and bontat. Still, in a large number of nouns the original difference of accentuation between the nominative singular and the other cases has been maintained, whence there result two very distinct forms for the subj. and obj. cases. Of these words it is impossible to give a full list here; we confine ourselves to the exhibition of a few types, remarking that these words are above all sueh as designate persons: a‘bas abat, pa‘stre pasto’r, sor soro’r, eantai’re cantado’r (cantator, -Orem), emperarre envperado’r, bar baro’, compa nh conpanho’, lative lairo’ (latro,Onem). To this class belong various proper names: E’ble Eblo, Gui Guto:, Ue Ugo. A few have even come from the 2d decl., thus Peire Petro’, Pons Ponso’, Carle Carlo’, as if the Latin types had been Petro, -Onem, Ponso, -dnem, Carlo, dnem. We may mention also geogra phical adjectives, such as Bret Breto’, Bergo-nhz Bergonho’, Gase Gaseo’, &. The plural of the 3d decl. is like that of the second: subj. aba’t, soro’r, eantado’r, emperado’r, baro, companho, lairo’; obj. aba‘tz, soro’rs, eantado’rs, emperado’rs, baro’s, eonpanho’s, latvo’s, as if the Lat.~~

~~*nominative pl. had been abbati, sordri, cantatori, &c. It is barely possible that such forms actually existed in vulgar Latin; no trace of them, however, is found in the texts, save in the glosses of Cassel (8th c.), sapienti for sapientes, andina great many ancient charters parentorum, which implies a nominative parenti. The words of the 4th and 5th declensions present no points requiring mention here.*~~

~~*This declension of two cases is a notable character of the whole Romanic of Gaul, north as well as south, ¢.¢., French as well as Provengal. It must be noted, however, that in the south-west it existed only in a very restricted fashion. In the old texts of Gascony it is no longer general in the 13th century. In Béarn it appears to have been completely unknown, the nouns and adjs. having ouly one form, usually that of the obj. case. In Catalan poetry its application is often laid down in the 13th century, but as the charters and documents free from literary influence show no trace of it, its introduction into the poetry of this country may be assumed to be an artificial fact. In the region where it is best observed, “.@., in the centre and north of the Provencal territory, it tends to disappear from ordinary use already in the 13th century. The poet grammarian Raimon Vidal of Besalu, who flourished about the middle of the century, points out in various troubadours transgressions of the rules of declension, and recognizes that in conversation they are no longer observed. The general tendency was to retain only a single form, that of the obj. case. For certain words, however, it was the subj. form which survived. Thus in modern Pr. the words in the ending -ai-re (answering to Lat. -a tor) are as frequent as those in -adow’ (repr. -at or em). But there is a slight difference of meaning between these two suffixes.*~~

~~*Adjcetives, generally speaking, agree in flexion with the nouns. But there is one fact particular to adjectives and past participles which is observed with more or less regularity in certain 12th and*~~

~~*PROVENGAL*~~

~~*The secoud and third types are sometimes followed |*~~

~~*But it has often happened that already m vulgar |*~~

~~[LANGUAGE.~~

~~13th century texts. 'There is a tendency to mark more clearly than in the substantives the flexion of the subj. pl., chiefly when the adj. or participle is employed predicatively. 'This is marked by the addi- tion of an ¢, placed, according to the district, either after the final consonant, or else after the last vowel so as to form a diphthong with it. The following are examples from an ancient translation of the New Testament (MS. in library of the Palais Saint-Pierre, Lyons, end of 13th century):—'" Die a vos que no siatz consirost" (ne solliciti sitis, Mat. vi. 25); "que siatz visti d' els" (ut videamini ab eis, Mat. vi. 1); "e davaut los reis els princeps seretz menadi" (et ad presides et ad reges ducemini, Mat. x. 18). In charters of the 12th and 18th centuries we find in the subj. case pl., and especially in this predicative use, pagatg, certifiath, aecossatlhath,~~

~~| representing pagati, certificati, adconsiliati.~~

~~It is in the verbs that the individuality of the different Romanic idioms manifests itself most distinctly. At a very early date the etymological data were crossed, in various directions and divers manners according to the country, by analogical tendencies. The local varieties became little by little so numerous in the Romanic conjugation that it is not easy to discover any very characteristic features observed over a territory so vast as that of which the limits have been indicated at the commencement of this article. The following are, however, a few.~~

~~The infinitives are in -a7, -é, -re, -vr, corresponding to the Lat. -Gre, -ére, -ére, -ire, respectively; as in the whole Romanic domain, the conjugation in -ar is the most numerous. The table of verbs, which forms part of the Pr. grammar called the Donatz~~

~~| Proensals (18th century) contains 473 verbs in -a7, 101 in -ér and~~

~~-re, 115 in -iv. In the ar eonjugation we remark one verb from another conjugation : far (ef. It. fare) from faeere. The con jugations in -ér and -re encroach each upon the territory of the other. The three Lat. verbs cadére, capére, sapére have become -é7 verbs (eaze'r, eaber, saber) as in Fr. eheoir, -eevoir, savoir ; and several other verbs waver between the two: crede'r,~~

~~*creér, and eret‘re (cre ‘dére), quere‘rand querre(querére). This fluctuation is most frequent in the case of verbs which belonged originally to the -ée conjugation: arde‘r and a‘rdre, plaze’r and plai’re, taze’r and tat‘re (ardére, placére, tacére). Next to the -ar conjugation, that in -ir is the one which has preserved most formative power. As in the other Romanic languages, it has welcomed a large number of German verbs, and has attracted several verbs which etymologically ought to have belonged to the conjugations in -ér and -re : emplir (in plére), jauzir (gaudére), eosir (consuére), erebir (eripére), fugir (fugére), sequir (*sequére=seq wi). ;*~~

~~*Except in the -ar conjugation, the ending of the infinitive does not determine in a regular manner the mode of forming the different tenses. The present participles are divided into two series ; those in -a (obj. sing.) for the first conj., those in -e7 for the others. In this the Pr. distinguishes itself very clearly from the French, in which all present participles have ant. There is also in Pr. a participial form or verbal adjective which is not met with in any other Romanic language, except Romanian, where more over it is employed in a different sense; this is a form in -do’r, -doi‘ra, which supposes a Lat. type -torius, or-ttrius; the sense is that of a future participle, active for the intransitive verbs, passive for the transitive: endevenido’r, -doira, “that is to happen”; fazedo’r, -dot-ra, “that isto be done”; punido’, -doi’ra, ‘to be punished.” In conjugation properly so called, we may remark the almost eomplete disappearance of the Lat. preterite in -avi, of which traces are found only in texts written in the neighbourhood of the French-speaking region, and in Béarn. In return, a preterite which seems to have been suggested by the Latin dédi, has increased and become the type of the tense almost everywhere in the -a7 conjugation, and in many verbs in -ér and re: amet’, ame‘st, ame’t, ame’m, ame’tz, ame’ron. In Fr. there is a form like this, or at least having the same origin, only in a small number of verbs, none of which belong to the first con jugation, and in these only in the 8rd. pers. sing. and pl. (perdvé, perdierent ; entendié, entendierent, &c.) It is well known that re- duplicated preterites had greatly multiplied in vulgar Latin : there have been recovered such formsas ascendiderat,ostendedit, pandiderunt, adtendedit, incendiderat, &c. (see Schuchardt, Vokalismus des Vulgarlateins, i. 35, iii. 10; cf. Romania, ii. 477). But, in order to explain the Pr. form -et, -est, -et (with open é), we must suppose a termination not in -idi or -édi, but in*~~

~~-é°di. In the western region the 3d pers. sing. is generally in -ce, probably by analogy with preterites like bee, crec, dee, sec, formed after the Lat. type in ui. Another notable pecmli arity, of which Old Fr. shows only rare traces, in texts of a very remote period, is the preservation of a preterite in -ara or era, de rived from the Lat. pluperfect, ama'ra or ame'ra, 'I loved." The former comes directly from Lat. am &ram, the latter has been in- fluenced by the ordinary preterite in e'. This preterite is used with the sense of a simple past, not of a pluperfeet, and conse quently is an exaet doublet of the ordinary preterite, which explains how it was at length eliminated almost everywhere by the latter, of~~

~~LANGUAGE. |~~

~~which it was a mere synonym. But it remained in general use with the sense of a past conditional: ama'ra or ame'ra, "I should have loved," fora, " I should have been." .~~

~~3. Existing State of the Provencal_—In consequence of political circumstances (see notice of Provengal Literature below), the Provencal ceased to be used for administrative as well as literary purposes about the 15th century, in some places a little sooner, in others later (notably in Béarn, where it continued to be written as the language of ordinary use till the 17th century). The poems in local dialect composed and printed in the 16th century and on to our own day have no link with the literature of the preceding period. Reduced to the condition of a patois, or popular dialect simply, the idiom experienced somewhat rapid modifications. Any one who should compare the poems of Goudelin of Toulouse (1579-1649) with those of a Toulousain troubadour of the 13th century would be astonished at the changes which the language has under- gone. Yet this impression would probably be exaggerated. In order to make a rigorously accurate comparison of the language at the two epochs, it would have to be written in the two cases with the same orthographic system, which itis not. The first writers of Provengal, about the 10th or llth century, applied to the language the Latin ortho- graphy, preserving to each letter, as far as possible, the value given to it in the contemporary pronunciation of Latin. To express certain sounds which did not exist in Latin, or which were not there clearly enough noted, there were introduced little by little, and without regular~~

~~system, various conventional symbolizations such as Zh |~~

~~and nh to symbolize the sound of / and 2 mowillée. From this method of proceeding there resulted an orthographic system somewhat wanting in fixity, but which from its very instability lent itself fairly well to the variations which the pronunciation underwent in time and locality. But, the tradition having been interrupted about the 15th century, those who afterwards by way of pastime attempted composition in the patois formed, each for himself apart, an orthography of which many elements were borrowed from French usage. It is evident that differences already considerable must be exaggerated by the use of two very distinct orthographical systems. Nevertheless, even if we get quit of the illusion which makes us at first sight suppose differences of sound where there are merely different ways of spelling the same sound, we find that between the 14th and 16th century the language under- went everywhere, Béarn (for reasons already given) excepted, great modifications both in vocabulary and grammar. The Provengal literature having gradually died~~

~~out during the 14th century, the vocabulary lost immedi-~~

~~ately the greater part of the terms expressing general ideas or abstract conceptions. To supply the place of these, the authors who have written in the patois of the south during the last few centuries have been obliged to borrow from French, modifying at the same time their form, a multitude of vocables.which naturally have remained for the most part unintelligible to people who know only the patois. In this case the adoption of foreign words was excusable; but it did not stop here. Little by little, as primary instruction (now compulsory) was diffused, and introduced first in the towns and afterwards in the villages a certain knowledge of French, words purely French have been introduced into use in place of the corresponding dialect words. Thus, one hears constantly in Provence~~

~~pero, mero, fré-ro, forms adapted from French, instead of |~~

~~paire, maire, fraire; cacha (catsha' = Fr. cacher) instead~~

~~of escoundre, &c.~~

~~*In the phonology, the modifications are of the natural order, and so have nothing revolutionary. The language has developed locally tendencies which certainly already existed during the flourishing period, although the ancient orthography did not recognize them.*~~

~~*PROVENGCAL*~~

~~*in which they appeav.*~~

~~*871*~~

~~*Of the vowels, a@ tonic is generally preserved; an in an open syllable becomes 0 (open) in part of the departments of Aveyron, Lot, Dordogne, Corréze, Cantal, and south of Haute Loire: gro granum), mo(manum), po(panem). This nasalized a must have had a particular sound already in Old Pr., for it is qualified in the Donatz Proensals (ed. Stengel, p. 49) as a estreit (=close or narrow a). A feature almost general is the passage of post-tonic a into 0: terro, amavo, amado (terra, amabat, amata). In Var and the Maritime Alps examples of this change occur as early as the end of the 15th century. But even yet there are a few cantons, notably Montpellier and its neighbourhood, where the ancient post-tonic @ is preserved. 1t is remarkable that the Latin diphthong au, which had become simple o in almost all Romanic lands at the date of the most ancient texts, is to this day preserved with a very distinct diphthongal sound everywhere in the south of France.*~~

~~*In the morphology,the leading feature of modern Provengal is the ever greater simplification of grammatical forms. Not only have the two forms (nominative and objective) in each number, in nouns and adjectives, been reduced to one—this reduction manifested itself in ordinary use already in the 14th century—but in many places there no longer remains any distinction between the singular and the plural. In a great part of the south dew (ego) does duty as an objective, me or mi having disappeared. In part of Drome it is the other way, mi being substituted in the nomin- ative for iew, which it has completely displaced. It is perhaps in conjugation that the greatest changes from the older form of the language are seen. Analogy, basing itself upon one or another much used form, has acted with immense force, tending to make general in the whole conjugation, without any regard*~~

~~*to the original classes to which the various verbs belonged, certain terminations, chiefly those which were accented, and thus appeared to the popular instinct to have more significance. The result, if the tendency were carried the full length, would be the reduction of all the three coujugations to one. Perhaps before this point is reached the patois of the south will themselves have disappeared. As the endless modifications which the language undergoes, in vocabulary and grammar alike, develop themselves in different directions, and each over au area differently circumscribed, the general aspect of the language becomes more and more confused, without the possibility of gronping the endless varieties within dialectal divisions, there being no case in which a certain number of phonetic or morphological facts present themselves within the same geographical limits. The custom has been adopted of roughly designating these varieties by the name of the ancient provinces Limousin (divided into HIgh and Low Limousin), Alarchese, Auwvergnese, Gaseon, Béarnese, Rouergat, Languedocian, Provencal, &c.; but these divisions, though con- venient in use, correspond to no actualities. Nimes and Mont- pellier are in Languedoc, and Arles and Tarascon are in Provence ; nevertheless the dialect of Nimes resembles that of Arles and Tarascon more than that of Montpellier.*~~

~~*Texts.—For the history of the Provencal in all its varieties there are many more mate. ials than for any other Romanie language, not excepting even Italian or French. The literary texts go back to the 10th or lith century (see below). For phonetie purposes many of these texts are of secondary value, beeause the MSS. in which they have reached us, and several of which, especially for the poetry of the troubadours, are of Italian origin, have altered the original forms to an extent which it is not easy to determine; but we possess a countless number of eharters, coutumes, regulations, aceounts, registers of taxation, which are worthy of absolute confidence,—first, beeause these doenments are in most eases origin- als, and, seeondly, becausé, none of the dialectal varieties having raised itself to the rank of the literary language, as happened in France with the central (Parisian) variety and in Italy with the Florentine, writers never had the tempta- tion to abandon their own idiom for another, it is proper to add that Provencal possesses two ancient grammars of the 13th century (the earliest compiled for any Romanic idiom)—the Donatz Proensals and Razos de trobar (see p.*~~

~~$76). Although very short, especi:Jly the second, which is a eolleetion of detached ob- servations, they furnish valuable data. The 14th-century Leys d'Amors (see p. 876) presents the language in rather an artificialstate—the language which ought to be written rather than the langnage actually existing.~~

~~Bibliography.—l. Ancient Condition.—There docs not exist any comprehensive work upon the Provencal whenee to obtain a precise idea of the history of the language at its different epochs. Diez's Grammatik der romanischen Sprachen is stillthe groundwork. it gives, especially in the 3d ed. (1869-72), the last re- vised by the author, the results of extensive resexrches conveniently arranged. But Diez had only a slender knowledge of the language in its present state, and in his time phonology hed made little progress. The French translation of MM. G. Paiis, A. Brachet, and Morel-Fatio (Paris, 1573-76) was to be com- pleted by a supplementary volume, which was announeed at vol. ix. p. 636 of the present work, but this expedient has had to be abandoned, it having been reeognized that what was wanted was nota supplement but a gencral recast. The "Recherches plilologiqres si la langue romane," and " Résumé de la grammaire romanc," published by Raynouard at the beginning of vol. i. of his Lexique roman (1838), ave entirely out of date. The "Tableau sommaire des flexions provengales," published by M. Bartsch, in the Chrestomathie provencale (4th ed., 1880), is incomplete and often crroneous. , The actnal state of our know- ledge of ancient Provencal must be sought ina great number of scattered dis- sertations or monographs, which will be found especially in the Afémotres of the Société de Linguistique de Paris, 1868 (Phonétique provengale, 0, pp. 145-61), in the Romania (1872-85), and in the Rerue de la Société pour [étude des langues romanes, to which may be added some doctoral dissertations published in Ger- many, and the special studies upon the language of particular texts prefaeed to editions of these. As to dietionaries, the Lerique roman, ou Dictionnatre de la langue des Troubadours, by Raynouard (Paris, 6 vols. Svo, 1836-44), ean always be used with advantage, but the numerous speeial voeabularies appended by editors to texts published by them cannot be negleeted. These yield a considerable~~

~~r of words, either wanting or wrongly explained in the Lexique roman, 2 Modern Form.—The most sel grammatical works (all done with insufficient knowledge of phonology, and under the preconceived idea that there exist dialects with definite circumscription) are J. B. Andrews, Essai de grammatre du dialecte mentonais [Mentone] (Nice, 1878), see also his "Phonétique mentonaise," in Romania, xii. 394; Cantagrel, Votes sur Porthographie et la LOS langue- dociennes, prefixed to La Canson de la Lauseto, by A. Mir (Montpetlier, 1876); Chabanceau, Grammaire limousine (Paris, 1876), referring especially to the variety -of Nontron, in the north of Périgord (Dordogne) ; Constans, Essai sur V histoire du sous-dialecte du Rouergue (Montpellier and Paris, 1880) ; Lespy, Grammaire béarnaise (2d ed., Paris, 1880) ; A. Luchaire, Etudes sur les idiomes pyrénéens de la region francaise (Paris, 1879); Moutier, Grammaire dauphinoise, Dialecte dela vallée de la Dréme (Montelimar, 1882); Ruben, "Etude sur le patois du Haut Limousin," prefixed to Poems by J. Foucand, in the Limousin patois (Limoges, 1866). As to dictionaries we may mention, among others, Andrews, Vocabulaire Francais-mentonais (Nice, 1877); Azais, Dictionnaire des idiomes romans du midi de ia France (Montpellier, 1877, 3 vols. Svo), taking for its basis the dialect of Béziers; Chabrand and De Rochas d'Aiglun, Patots des Alpes Cottiennes et en particulier du Queyras (Grenoble and Paris, 1877) ; Couzini¢, Dictionnaire de la langue romano-castraise (Castres, 1850); Garcin, Nouveau dictionnatre provencal-francais (Draguignan, 1841, 2 vols.); Honnorat, Dictionnaire provencal-francais (Digne, 1846-7, 2 vols. 4to);=De Sauvages, Dictionnaire languedocien-frangais (new ed., Alais, 1820, 2 vols.); Vayssier, Dictionnaire patois-francais du departe- ment de l' Aveyron (Rodcz, 1879). From 1880 the Dictionnaire provencal-francais of Fr, Mistral. in 2 vols. 4to, has been in progress ; more than the half has ap- peared. This dictionary takes as its basis the variety of Maillane (in the north of Bouches-du-Rhéne), the author's native district, and gives in ascomplete a manner as possible all the forms used in the south of France. ltis by far the best of all the dictionaries of the southern dialects which have yet been published, and when finished it will almost enable the student to dispense with all the others.~~

~~If. ProvengaL Lirerature.—Provengal literature is much more easily defined than the language in which it is expressed. Starting in the 11th and 12th~~

~~*centuries in several centres, it thence gradually spread out, first over the greater portion, though not the whole, of southern France, and then into the north of Italy and Spain. It nowhere merged in the neighbouring literatures. At the time of its highest development (12th century) the art of composing in the vulgar tongue did not exist, or was only*~~

~~*beginning to exist, to the south of the Alps and the |*~~

~~*Pyrenees. In the north, in the country of French speech, vernacular poetry was in full bloom; but between the districts in which it had developed—Champagne, fle de France, Picardy, and Normandy—and the region in which Provengal literature had sprung up, there seems to have been an intermediate zone formed by Burgundy, Bourbon- nais, Berry, Touraine, and Anjou which, far on in the Middle Ages, appears to have remained barren of vernacular literature. In its rise Provencal literature stands com- pletely by itself, and in its development it long continued to be absolutely original. It presents at several points genuine analogies with the sister- literature of northern France ; but these analogies are due principally to certain primary elements common to both and only in a slight degree to mutual reaction.*~~

~~*It must be inquired, however, what amount of origin- ality could belong to any, even the most original, Romanic literature in the Middle Ages. In all Romanic countries compositions in the vernacular began to appear while the custom of writing in Latin was still preserved by unin- terrupted tradition. Even during the most barbarous periods, when intellectual life was at its lowest, it was in Latin that sermons, lives of saints more or less apocryphal, accounts of miracles designed to attract pilgrims to certain shrines, monastic annals, legal documents, and contracts of all kinds were composed. When learning began to re- vive, as was the case in northern and central France under the influence of Charlemagne and later in the 11th century, it was Latin literature which naturally received increased attention, and the Latin language was more than ever employed in writing. Slowly and gradually the Romanic languages, especially those of France, came to occupy part of the ground formerly occupied by Latin, but even after the Middle Ages had passed away the parent tongue retained no small portions of its original empire. Conse- quently Romanic literatures in*~~

~~*general (and this is especi- ally true of Provencal as it does not extend beyond the medizeval period) afford only an incomplete representation of the intellectual development of each country. Those literatures even which are most truly national, as*~~

~~*having been subjected to no external influence,*~~

~~*are only to a*~~

~~*PR OV EN ce*~~

~~*[LITERATURE,*~~

~~*limited extent capable of teaching us what the nation was. They were, in short, created in the interests of the illiterate part of the people, and to a considerable degree by those who were themselves illiterate. But that does not make them less interesting.*~~

~~*Origin.—It was in the 11th century, and at several places in the extensive territory whose limits have been described in the foregoing account of the Provengal language, that Provengal literature first made its appearance. It took poetic form ; and its oldest monuments show a relative perfection and a variety from which it may be concluded that poetry had already received a considerable develop- ment. The oldest poetic text, if the date and origin be correctly determined, is said to be a Provengal refrain attached to a Latin poem recently published (Zeitschrift fiir deutsche Philologie, 1881, p. 335) from a Vatican MS., written, it is asserted, in the 10th century. But it is use- less to linger over these few words, the text.of which seems corrupt, or at least has not yet been satisfactorily interpreted. The honour of being the oldest literary monument of the Provengal language must be assigned to a fragment of two hundred and fifty-seven decasyllabic verses preserved in an Orleans MS. and frequently edited and annotated since it was first printed by Raynouard in 1817 in his Choix des poésies originales des Troubadours. The writing of the MS. is of the first half of the 11th century. The peculiarities of the language point to the north of the Provencal region, probably Limousin or Marche. It is. the beginning of a poem in which the*~~

~~*– unknown author, taking Boetius's treatise De Consolatione*~~

~~*Philosophiz as the groundwork of his composition, adopts and develops its ideas and gives them a Christian cast of which there is no trace in the original. Thus from some verses in which Boetius contrasts his happy youth with his afflicted old age he draws a lengthy homily on the necessity of laying up from early years a treasure of good works. The poem is consequently a didactic. piece com- posed by a "clerk," knowing Latin. He doubtless preferred the poetic form to prose because his illiterate contempor- aries were accustomed to poetry in the vulgar tongue, and because this form was better adapted to recitation ; and thus his work, while a product of erudition in as far as it was an adaptation of a Latin treatise, shows that at the time when it was composed a vernacular poetry was in existence. A little later, at the close of the same century, we have the poems of William IX., count of Poitiers, duke of Guienne. They consist of eleven very diverse strophic pieces, and were consequently meant to be sung. Several are love songs; one relates a bonne fortune in very gross terms ; and the most important of all—the only one which can be approximately dated, being composed at the time when William was setting out for Spain to fight the Saracens—expresses in touching and often noble words the writer's regret for the frivolity of his past life and the apprehensions which oppressed him as he bade farewell, perhaps for ever, to his country and his young son. We also know from Ordericus Vitalis that William IX. had composed various poems on the incidents of his ill-fated expedition to the Holy Land in 1101. And it must further be mentioned that in one of his pieces (Ben voil que sapchon li plusor) he makes a very clear allusion to a kind of poetry which we. know only by specimens of later date, the partimen, or, as it is called in France, the jeu parti. William IX. was born in 1071 and died in 1127. There is no doubt that the most prolific period of his literary activity was his youth. On the other hand there is no reason to believe that he created the type of poetry of which he is to us the oldest representative. It is easy to understand how his high social rank saved some of his productions from oblivion whilst the poems of his pre-*~~

~~*decessors and contemporaries disappeared with the genera- tions who heard and sang them; and in the contrast in form and subject between the Boetius poem and the stanzas of William IX. we find evidence that by the*~~

~~*11th century Provengal poetry was being rapidly developed in various directions. Whence came this poetry? HIow and by whose work was it formed? 'That it has no connexion whatever with Latin poetry is generally admitted. There is absolutely nothing in common either in form or ideas between the last productions of classical Latinity, as they appear in Sidonius Apollinaris or Fortunatus, and the first poetic compositions in Romanic. The view which seems to meet with general acceptance, though it has not been distinctly formulated by any one, is that Romanic poetry sprang out of a popular poetry quietly holding its place from the Roman times, no specimen of which has survived,—just as the Romanic languages are only con- tinuations with local modifications of vulgar Latin. There are both truth and error in this opinion. The question is really a very complex one. First.as to the form: Romanic versification, as it appears in the Boetius poem and the verses of William IX., and a little farther north in the poem of the Passion and the Life of St Leger (10th or 11th century), has with all its variety some general and permanent characteristics ; it is rhymed, and it is composed of a definite number of syllables certain of which have the syllabic accent. This form has evident affinity with the rhythmic Latin versification, of which specimens exist from _the close of the Roman empire in ecclesiastical poetry. The exact type of Romanic verse is not found, however, in this ecclesiastical Latin poetry; the latter was not popular, and it may be assumed that there was a popular variety of rhythmic poetry from which Romanic verse is derived.*~~

~~*Again, as regards the substance, the poetic material, we find nothing in the earliest Provencal which is strictly popular. The extremely personal compositions of William IX. have nothing in common with folklore. They are subjective poetry addressed to a very limited and probably rather aristocratic audience. The same may be said of the Boetius poem, though it belongs to the quite different species of edifying literature; at any rate it is not popular poetry. Vernacular compositions seem to have been at first produced for the amusement, or in the case of religious poetry for the edification, of that part of lay society which had leisure and lands, and reckoned intellectual pastime among the good things of life. Gradually this class, intelligent, but with no Latin education, enlarged the circle ofitsideas. In the 12th century and still more in the 13th, historical works and popular treatises on contemporary science were composed for its use in the only*~~

~~*language it understood ; and vernacular literature continued gradually to develop partly on original lines and partly by borrow- ing from the literature of the "clerks." century vernacular poetry was still rather limited, and has hardly any higher object than the amusement and edifica- tion of the upper classes. An aristocratic poetry like the oldest Provengal cannot be the production of shepherds and husbandmen ; and there is no probability that it was invented or even very notably improved by William IX.*~~

~~*From what class of persons then did it proceed? Latin chroniclers of the Middle Ages mention as joculares, jocula- tores, men of a class not very highly esteemed whose pro- fession consisted in amusing their audience either by what we still call jugglers' tricks, by exhibiting performing animals, or by recitation and song. They are called joglars in Provengal, jouglers or jougleors in French. A certain Barnaldus, styled joglarius, appears as witness in 1058 to a charter of the chartulary of Saint Victor at Marseilles. In 1106 the act of foundation of a salva terra in Rouergue*~~

~~*PEO WN Cua L,*~~

~~*But in the 11th –*~~

~~*873*~~

~~*specifies that neither knight nor man-at-arms nor joculator is to reside in the village about to be created. These individuals—successors of the mimi and the thymelici of antiquity, who were professional amusers of the public — were the first authors of poetry in the vernacular both in the south and in the north of France. To the upper classes who welcomed them to their castles they supplied that sort of entertainment now sought at the theatre or in books of light literature. There were certain of them who, leaving buffoonery to the ruder and less intelligent members of the profession, devoted themselves to the composition of pieces intended for singing and conse- quently in verse. In the north, where manners were not so refined and where the taste for warlike adventure pre- vailed, the jongleurs produced chansons de geste full of tales of battle and combat. In the courts of the southern nobles, where wealth was more abundant and a life of ease and pleasure was consequently indulged in, they produced love songs.*~~

~~*There is probably a large amount of truth in the remark made by Dante in chapter xxv. of his Vita Nuova, that the first to compose in the vulgar tongue did so because he wished to be understood by a lady who would have found it difficult to follow Latin verses.1. And in fact there are love songs among the pieces by William of Poitiers; and the same type preponderates among the compositions of the troubadours who came immediately after him. But it is worthy of note that in all this vast body of love poetry there is no epithalamium nor any address to a marriageable lady. The social conditions of the south of France in the feudal period explain in great measure the powerful development of this kind of poetry, and also its peculiar characteristics—the profound respect, the extreme deference of the poet towards the lady whom he addresses. Rich heiresses were married young, often when hardly out of their girlhood, and most frequently without their fancy being consulted. But they seem after marriage to have enjoyed great liberty. Eager for plea- sure and greedy of praise, the fair ladies of the castle became the natural patronesses of the mesnie or household of men-at-arms and jongleurs whom their husbands main- tained in their castles. Songs of love addressed to them soon became an accepted and almost conventional form of literature ; and, as in social position the authors were generally far below those to whom they directed their amorous plaints, this kind of poetry was always distin- guished by great reserve and an essentially respectful style. From the beginning the sentiments, real or assumed, of the poets are expressed in such a refined and guarded style that some historians, overestimating the virtue of the ladies of that time, have been misled to the belief that the love of the troubadour for the mistress of his thoughts was generally platonic and conventional.*~~

~~*The conditions under which Romanic poetry arose in the south of France being thus determined as accurately as the scarcity of documents allows, we now proceed to give a survey of the various forms of Provencal literature, chronological order being followed in each instance. By this arrangement the wealth of each form will be better displayed ; and, as it is rare in the south of France for the same person to distinguish himself in more than one of them, there will be generally no occasion to introduce the same author in different sections.*~~

~~Poetry of the Troubadours.—Though he was certainly not the creator of the lyric poetry of southern France, William, count of Poitiers, by personally cultivating it gave it a position of honour, and indirectly contributed in a very powerful degree to insure its development and pre-~~

~~1 "Elo primo che comenciéd a dire sicome poeta volgare si mosse~~

~~peroche volle fare intendere le sue parole a donna alla quale era mala-gevole ad intendere i versi latini."' : XIX. — 110~~

~~servation. Shortly after him centres of poetic activity | father was a servant, Peire Vidal's a maker of furred~~

~~make their appearance in various places—first in Limousin and Gascony. In the former province lived a viscount of Ventadour, Eble, who during the second part of William of Poitiers's life seems to have been brought into relation with him, and according to a contemporary historian, Geffrei, prior of Vigeois, erat valde gratiosus in cantilens. We possess none of his compositions ; but under his influ- ence Bernart of Ventadour was trained to poetry, who, though only the son of one of the serving-men of the castle, managed to gain the love of the lady of Venta- dour, and, when on the discovery of their amour he had to depart elsewhere, received a gracious welcome from Eleanor of Guienne, consort (from 1152) of Henry II. of England. Of Bernart's compositions we possess about fifty songs of elegant simplicity, some of which may be taken as the most perfect specimens of love poetry Pro- vencal literature has ever produced. Bernart must therefore have been in repute before the middle of the 12th century ; and his poetic career extended well on towards its close. At the same period, or probably a little earlier, flourished Cercamon, a poet certainly inferior to Bernart, to judge by the few pieces he has left us, but nevertheless of genuine importance among the troubadours both because of his early date and because definite information regard- ing him has been preserved. He~~

~~was a Gascon, and composed, says his old biographer, " pastorals" according to the ancient custom (pastorelas a la wansa antiga). This is the record of the appearance in the south of France of a poetic form which ultimately acquired large develop- ment. 'The period at which Cercamon lived is determined by a piece where he alludes very clearly to the approaching marriage of the king of France, Louis VII., with Eleanor of Guienne (1137). Among the earliest troubadours may also be reckoned Marcabrun, a pupil of Cercamon's, from whose pen we have about forty pieces, those with dates ranging from 1135 to 1148 or thereabout. This poet has great originality of thought and style. HIs songs, several of which are historical, are free from the commonplaces of their class, and contain curious strictures on the corrup- tions of the time.~~

~~We cannot here do more than enumerate the leading troubadours and briefly indicate in what conditions their poetry was developed and through what circumstances it fell into decay and finally disappeared :—Peter of Auvergne (Peire d'Alvernha), who in certain respects must be classed with Marcabrun ; Arnaut Daniel, remarkable for his com- plicated versification, the inventor of the sestena, a poetic form for which Dante and Petrarch express an admiration difficult for us to understand ; Arnolt of Mareuil (Arnaut de Maroill), who, while less famous than Arnaut Daniel, certainly surpasses him in elegant siniplicity of form and delicacy of sentiment; Bertran de Born, now the most generally known of all the troubadours on account of the part he played both by his sword and his strventeses in the struggle between Henry IL. of England and his rebel sons; Peire Vidal of Toulouse, a poet of varied inspiration, who grew rich with gifts bestowed on him by the greatest nobles of his time; Guiraut de Borneil, lo maestre dels trobadors, and at any rate master in the art of the so-called~~

~~close" style (trobar clus), though he has also left us poems of charming simplicity; Gaucelm Faidit, from whom we have a touching lament (planh) on the death of Richard Coeur de Lion; Folquet of Marseilles, the most powerful thinker among the poets of the south, who from being a troubadour became first a monk, then an abbot, and finally bishop of Toulouse.~~

~~*It is not without interest to discover from what class of society the troubadours came. Many of them, there is no doubt, had a very humble origin. Bernart of Ventadour's*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*garments, Perdigon's a fisher. Others belonged to the bourgeoisie: Peire d'Alvernha, for example, Peire Raimon of Toulouse, Elias Fonsalada. More rarely we see traders' sons becoming troubadours ; this was the case with Folquet of Marseilles and Aimeric de Pegulhan. A great many were clerics, or at least studied for the church,—for instance, Arnaut of Mareuil, Hugh of Saint Cireq (Uc de Saint Circ), Aimeric de Belenoi, Hugh Brunet, Peire Cardinal; some had even taken orders—the monk of Montaudon, the monk Gaubert of Puicibot. ecclesiastical authority did not always tolerate this breach of discipline. Gui d'Uissel, canon and troubadour, was obliged by the injunction of the pontifical legate to give up his song- making. One point is particularly striking—the number of nobles (usually poor knights whose incomes were in-*~~

~~*sufficient to support their rank) who became troubadours,*~~

~~*or even, by a greater descent, jongleurs—Raimon de Miraval, Pons de Capdoill, Guillem Azemar, Cadenet, Peirol, Raimbaut de Vacqueiras, and many more. There is no doubt they betook themselves to poetry not merely for their own pleasure, but for the sake of the gifts to be obtained from the nobles whose courts they frequented. A very different position was occupied by such important persons as William of Poitiers, Raimbaut of Orange, the viscount of Saint Antonin, William of Berga, and Blacatz, who made poetry for their own amusement, but contributed not a little, by thus becoming troubadours, to raise the profession.—*~~

~~*The profession itself was entirely dependent on the exist- ence and prosperity of the feudal courts. The troubadours could hardly expect to obtain a livelihood from any other quarter than the generosity of the great. It will conse- quently be well to mention the more important at least of those princes who are known to have been patrons and some of them practisers of the poetic art. They are arranged approximately in geographical order, and*~~

~~after each are inserted the names of those troubadours with whom they were connected.~~

~~France. —ELEANOR OF GUIENNE, Bernart of Ventadour (Venta- dorn); Henry CuRTMANTLE, son of Henry II. of England, Bertran de Born; Rictarp Caur pE Lion, Arnaut Daniel, Peire Vidal, Folquet of Marseilles, Gaucelm Faidit ; ERMENGAKDE OF NARBONNE (1143-1192), Bernart of Ventadour, Peire Rogier, Peire d'Alvernha ; Rarmon V., count of Toulouse (1148-1194), Bernart of Ventadour, Peire Rogier, Peire Raimon, Hugh Brunet, Peire Vidal, Folquet of Marseilles, Bernart of Durfort; Rarmon VI., count of Toulouse (1194-1222), Raimon de Miraval, Aimeric de Pegulhan, Aimeric de Belenoi, Ademar lo Negre; ALPHONSE II., count of Provence (1185- 1209), Elias de Barjols; Rarmon BERENGER IV., count of Provence~~

~~1209-1245), Sordel ; BARRAL, viscount of Marseilles (died c. 1192),~~

~~Peire Vidal, Folquet of Marseilles; Winniam VIIL., lord of Mont- pellier (1172-1204), Peire Raimon, Arnaut de Mareuil, Folquet of Marseilles, Guiraut de Calanson, AinericdeSarlat; RoBERT, dauphin of Auvergne (1169-1234), Pcirol, Perdigon, Pierre de Maensac, Gaucelm Faidit; GuizLAuME pu Baus, prince of Orange (1182- 1218), Raimbaut de Vacqueiras, Perdigon; SAVARIC DE MAvULrKON (1260-1230), Gaucelm de Puicibot, Hugh of Saint Cireq; Buacatz, a Provengal hoble (1200 ? -1236), Cadenet, Jean d'Aubusson, Sordel, Guillem Figueira; Henry I., count of Rodez (1208-1222), Hugh of Saint Cireq; perhaps Huen IV., count of Rodez (1222 1 1274), and Henry IL, count of Rodez (1274-1302), Guiraut Riquier, Folquet de Lunel, Serveri de Girone, Bertran Cartonel; Nunyo SANCHEZ, count of Roussillon (died in 1241), Aimeric de Belenoi ; Bernarp IV., count of Astarac (1249-1291), Guiraut Riquier, Amanieu de Sescas.~~

~~Spain. —A.PHonse II., king of Aragon (1162-1196), Peire Rogier, Peire Raimon, Peire Vidal, Cadenet, Guiraut de Cabreira, Elias de Barjols, the monk of Montaudon, Hugh Brunet; Persr IL, king of Aragon (1196-1213), Raimon de Miraval, Aimeric de Pegulhan, Perdigon, Ademar lo Negre, Hugh of Saint Cireq; Jamus I., king of Aragon (1213-1276), Peire Cardinal, Bernart Sicart de Maruejols, Guiraut Riquier, At de Mons; Prtser III., king of Aragon (1276-1285), Paulet of Marseilles, Guiraut Riquier, Serveri de~~

~~*Girone ; ALPHONSO IX., king of Leon (1188-1214), Peire Rogier, Guiraut de Borneil, Aimeric de Pegulhan, Hugh of Saint Cireq; Atrnonso X., king of Castile (1252-1284), Bertran de Lamanon,*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*LITERATURE. |*~~

~~*Bonifaci Calvo, Guiraut Riquier, Folquet de Lunel, Arnaut Plages, Bertran Carbonel.*~~

~~*Jtaly.—BontFack II., marquis of Montferrat (1192-1207), Peire Vidal, Raimbaut de Vaequeiras, Elias Cairel, Gaucelm Faidit (?) ; FREDERICK II., emperor (1215-1250), Jean d'Aubusson, Aimeric de Pegulhan, Guillem Figueira; Azzo VI., marquis of Este (1196— 1212), Aimeric de Pegulhan, Rambertin de Buvalel; Azzo VIII., marquis of Este (1215-1264), Aimeric de Pegulhan.*~~

~~*The first thing that strikes one in this list is that, while the troubadours find protectors in Spain and Italy, they do not seem to have been welcomed in French-speaking countries. This, however, must not be taken too absolutely. Provencal poetry was appreciated in the north of France. There is reason to believe that when Constance, daughter of one of the counts of Arles, was married in 998 to Robert, king of France, she brought along with her Provencal jongleurs. Poems by troubadours are quoted in the French romances of the beginning of the 13th century; some of them are transcribed in the old collections of French songs, and the preacher Robert de Sorbon informs us in a curious passage that one day a jongleur sang a poem by Folquet of Marseilles at the court of the king of France. But in any case it is easy to understand that, the countries of the langue dout having a full developed literature of their own suited to the taste of the people, the troubadours generally preferred to go to regions where they had less to fear in the way of competition.*~~

~~*The decline and fall of troubadour poetry was mainly due to political causes. When about the beginning of the 13th century the Albigensian war had ruined a large number of the nobles and reduced to lasting poverty a part of the south of France, the profession of troubadour ceased to be*~~

~~*lucrative. It was then that many of those poets went to spend their last days in the north of Spain and Italy, where Provengal poetry had for more than one generation been highly esteemed. Following their example, other poets who were not natives of the south of France began to compose in Provencal, and this fashion continued till, about the middle of the 13th century, they gradually abandoned the foreign tongue in northern Italy, and somewhat later in Catalonia, and took to singing the same airs in the local dialects. About the same time in the Provengal region the flame of poetry had died out save in a few places—Narbonne, Rodez, Foix, and Astarac—where it kept burn- ing feebly for a little longer. In the 14th century com- position in the language of the country was still practised ; but the productions of this period are mainly works for instruction and edification, translations from Latin or some- times even from French, with an occasional romance. As for the poetry of the troubadours, it was dead for ever.*~~

~~*Form.—Originally the poems of the troubadours were intended to be sung. The poet usually composed the music as well as the words ; and in several cases he owed his fame more to his musical than to his literary ability. Two manuscripts preserve specimens of the music of the troubadours ; but, as the subject has not as yet been investigated, we are stil] ignorant of one of the elements of their success. The following are the principal poetic forms which they employed. The oldest and most usual generic term is vers, by which is understood any composition intended to be sung, no matter what the subject. At the close of the 12th century it became customary to call all verse treating of love canso,—the name vers being then more generally reserved for poems on other themes. The sirventesc differs from the vers and the canso only by its subject, being for the most part devoted to moral and political topics. Peire Cardinal is celebrated for the sirventeses he composed against the clergy of his time. The political poems of Bertran de Born are sirventescs. There is reason to believe that originally this word meant simply a poem composed by a szrvent (Lat. serviens) or man-at- arms. The sirventesc is very frequently composed in the form, sometimes even with the rhymes, of a popu- lar song, so that it might be sung to the same air. The tenson is a debate between two interlocutors, each of whom has a stanza in turn. The partimen (Fr. jeu parti) is also a poetic debate, but it differs from the tenson in so far that the range of debate is limited. In the*~~

first stanza one of the partners proposes two alternatives ; the other partner chooses one of them and defends

PR OPV HNeC A «.

875

it, and the opposite side remains to be defended by the original pro- pounder. Often in a final couplet a judge or arbiter is appointed to decide between the parties. This poetic game is mentioned by William, count of Poitiers, at the end of the 11th century. The pastoreta, afterwards pastorela, is in general an account of the love adventures of a knight with a shepherdess. All these classes have one form capable of endless variations, five or more stanzas and one or two envois. The dansa and balada, intended to mark the time in dancing, are pieces with a refrain. The adba, which has also a refrain, is, as the name indicates, a waking or morning song at the dawning of the day. All those elasses are in stanzas. The descort is not thus divided, and consequently it must be set to music right through. Its name is derived from the fact that, its component parts not being equal, there is a kind of "discord" between them. It is generally reserved for themes of love. Other kinds of lyric poems, sometimes with nothing new about them except the name, were developed in the south of France ; but those here mentioned are the more important.

Narrative Poetry.—Although the strictly lyric poetry of the troubadours forms the most original part of Provengal literature, it must not be supposed that the remainder is of trifling import- ance. Narrative poetry, especially, received in the south of France a great development, and, thanks to recent discoveries, a consider- able body of it has already become known. Several classes must be distinguished :—the chanson de geste legendary or historic, the romance of adventure, and the novel. Northern France remains emphatically the native country of the chanson de geste; but, although in the south different social conditions, a more delicate taste, and a higher state of civilization prevented a similar pro- fusion of tales of war and heroic deeds, Provengal literature has some highly important specimens of this class. The first place belongs to Girart de Roussillon, a poem of ten thousand verses, which relates the struggles of Charles Martel with his powerful vassal the Burgundian Gerard of Roussillon. It is a

~~*literary production of rare excellence and of exceptional interest for the history of civiliza- tion in the 11th and 12th centuries. Gerard of Roussillon belongs only within certain limits to the literature of southern France. The recension which we possess appears to have been made on the borders of Limousin and Poitou ; but it is clearly no more than a recast of an older poem no longer extant, probably either of French or at least Burgundian origin. To Limousin also seems to belong the poem of Azgar and Maurin (12th century), of which we have unfortunately only a fragment so short that the subject cannot be clearly made out. Of less heroic character is the poem of Dawrel and Beton (end of the 12th or beginning of the 13th century), con- nected with the cycle of Charlemagne, but by the romantic character of the events more like a regular romance of adventure. We can- not, however, form a complete judgment in regard to it, as the only MS. in which it has been preserved is defective at the close, and that to an amount there is no means of ascertaining. Midway between legend and history may be classified the Provengal Chanson of Antioch, a fragment of which, 700 verses in extent, has been recently recovered in Madrid and published in Archives de 0 Orient Latin, vol. ii. To history proper belongs the chanson of the crusade against the Albigensians, which, in its present state, is composed of two poems one tacked to the other: the first, contain- ing the events from the beginning of the crusade till 1213, is the work of a certain William of Tudela, a moderate supporter of the crusaders ; the second, from 1213 to 1218, is by a veheinent opponent of the enterprise. The language and style of the two parts are no less different than the opinions. Finally, about 1280 a native of Toulouse named Guillaume Anelier composed, in the chanson de geste form, a poem on the war carried on in Navarre by the French in 1276 and 1277. It is an historieal work of little literary merit. All these poems are, as chansons de geste ought to be, in stanzas of indefinite length, with a single rhyme. Gerard of Roussillon, Aigar and Maurin, and Daurel and Beton are in verses of ten, the others in verses of twelve syllables. The peculiarity of the versi- fication in Gerard is that the pause in the line occurs after the sixth syllable, and not, as is usual, after the fourth. Like the chanson de geste, the romance of adventure is but slightly represented in the south ; but it is to be borne in mind that many works of this class must have perished, as is rendered evident by the mere fact that, with few exceptions, the narrative poems which have come down to us are each known by a single manuscript only. We possess but three Provengal*~~

~~*romances of adventute :—Jaz/ré (com- posed in the middle of the 13th century and dedicated to a king of Aragon, possibly James I.), Blandin of Cornwall, and Guillem de la Barra. The first two are connected with the Arthurian cycle: Jaufré is an elegant and ingenious work ; Blandin of Cornwall the dullest and most insipid one can well imagine. The romance of Guillem de la Barra tells an unlikely story also found in Boccaccio's Decameron (2d Day, viii.). It is rather a poor poem; but as a contribution to literary history it has the advantage of being dated. It was completed in 1318, and is dedicated toa noble of Languedoc called Sicart de Montaut. Connected with the romance of adven- ture is the novel (in Provencal novas, always in the plural), which*~~

~~*876*~~

~~*is originally an account of an event "newly" happened. The novel must have been at first in the south what, as we sce by the Decameron, it was in Italy, a society pastime,—the wits in turn relating anecdotes, true or imaginary, which they think likely to amuse their auditors. But before long this kind of production was treated in verse, the form adopted being that of the romances of adventure—octosyllabie verses rhyming in pairs. Some of those novels which have come down to us may be ranked with the most graceful works in Provengal literature ; two are from the pen of the Catalan author Raimon Vidal de Besall. One, the Castia-gilos (the Chastisement of the Jealous Man), is a treatment, not easily matched for elegance, of a frequently-handled theme—the story of the husband who, in order to entrap his wife, takes the disguise of the lover whom she is expecting and receives with satisfaction blows intended, as he thinks, for him whose part he is playing ; the other, The Judgment of Love, is the reeital of a question of the law of love, departing eonsiderably from the subjects usually treated in the novels. Mention may also be made of the novel of The Parrot by Arnaut de Carcassonne, in which the principal character is a parrot of great, eloquence and ability, who succeeds marvellously in securing the success of the amorous enterprises of his master. Novels came to be extended to the proportions of a long romance. Flamenca, which belongs to the novel type, has still over eight thousand verses, though the only MS. of it has lost some leaves both at the beginning and at the end. This poem, composed in all probability in 1234, is the story of a lady who by very ingenious devices, not*~~

~~*unlike those employed in the Miles Gloriosus of Plautus, succeeds in eluding the vigilance of her jealous husband. No analysis can be given here of a work the action of which is so highly complicated ; suffice it to remark that there is no book in medieval literature which betokens so much quickness of intellect and is so instructive in regard to the manners and usages of polite society in the 13th century. We know that novels were in great favour in the south of France, although the specimens preserved are not very numerous. Statements made by Francesco de Bar- berino (early part of 14th century), and recently brought to light, give us a glimpse of several works of this class which have been lost. From the south of France the novel spread into Catalonia, where we find in the 14th century a number of novels in verse very similar to the Provengal ones, and into Italy, where in general the prose form has beeu adopted.*~~

~~*Didactic and Religious Poetry.—Compositions intended for instruction, correction, and edification were very numerous in the south of France as well as elsewhere, and, in spite of the enormous losses sustained by Provengal literature, much of this kind still remains. But it is seldom that such works have much originality or literary value. Originality was naturally absent, as the aim of the writers was mainly to bring the teachings contained in Latin works within the reach of lay hearers or readers. Literary value was not of eourse exeluded by the lack of originality, but by an unfortunate chance the greater part of those who sought to instruct or edify, and attempted to substitute moral works for secular pro- ductions in favour with the people, were persons of limited ability. It is needless to enumerate all the lives of saints, all the treatises of popular theology and morals, all the books of devotion, all the pious canticles, composed in Provengal during the Middle Ages. Enough to recall the Boetius poem (unfortunately a mere fragment) already mentioned as one of the oldest doeuments of the language, and really a remarkable work. From the multitude of saints' lives we may single out that of St Honorat of Lerins by Raimon Feraud (about 1300), which is distinguished by variety and elegance of versification, but is almost entirely a translation from Latin. Among poems strictly didactie one stands out by reason of its great extent (nearly thirty-five thousand verses) and the somewhat original conception of its' scheme—the Breviari @amor, a vast encyclopedia, on a theological*~~

~~basis, composed by the Minorite friar Matfre Krmengaut of Béziers between 1288 and 1300 or thereabout.~~

~~Drama.—Twenty years ago it might have been questioned whether dramatie representation was known in the south of France, but within that time several short dramatic pieces have been pub- lished or described ; and a eonsiderable number of actual theatrical representations have been found mentioned in the local records, Everything of this kind that we know of belongs to the religions drama, the oldest form in every medisval: literature. The period at which a purely secular theatre takes its rise in most quarters is the 15th eentury ; and by that time there was hardly any Provencal literature left. We possess in Provengal mysteries of Saint Agnes, of the Passion, of the Marriage of the Virgin, all belonging to the elose of the 13th eentury or the first half of the 14th. In the 15th eentury there is a fragment of a mystery of St James. Provence pigveny so-called, especially the eastern portion of it, seems to~~

~~ave been particularly fond of representations of this sort, to judge gilt in the local records. At the close of the 15th and ginning of the 16th eentury many mysteries were played in~~

~~that part of Dauphiné which corresponds to the present depart- ment of Hautes-Alpes. Five mysteries of this distriet, composed and played somewhere about 1500 (the mysteries of St Eustaee, of~~

~~PROVENGAL~~

~~[LITERATURE.~~

~~St Andrew, of St Pons, of Sts Peter and Paul, and of St Anthony of Vienne), have come down to us, and are now (1885) being edited. The influence of the contemporary French sacred drama may to some extent be traeed in them.~~

~~Prose—Prose composition in the south of France belongs to a comparatively late stage of literary development ; and the same remark applies to the other Romanie eountries, particularly to northern France, where prose hardly comes into fashion till the 13th eentury, the prose of the~~

~~*preceding century being little else than translations of the books of the Bible (especially the Psalter).*~~

~~*As early as the 12th century we find in the south sermons, whose importance is more linguistic than literary. To the 13th century belong certain lives of the troubadours intended to be prefixed to, and to explain, their poems. They were written before 1250, when the first anthologies of troubadour poetry were com- piled ; and some of them are the work of the troubadour Hugh of Saint Cireq. To the same period must be assigned Las Razos de trobar of the troubadour Raimon Vidal de Besalu (an elegant little treatise touching on various points of grammar and the poetic art), and also the Donatz Proensals of Hugh Faidit, a writer otherwise unknown, who drew up his purely grammatical work at the request of two natives of northern Italy. Of about the same date are two translations ofthe New Testament, one of which, preserved in MS. at Lyons, seems to have been made for Albigensians, A remark- able work, both in style and thought, is the Life of St Douceline, who lived at the elose of the 13th century near Marseilles, and founded an order of Beguines. In the 14th century compositions in prose grew more numerons. Some rare local chronicles may be mentioned, the most interesting being that of Mascaro, which eontains the annals of the town of Beéziers from 1338 to 1390. Theological treatises and pious legends translated from Latin and French also increase in number. The leading prose work of this period is the treatise on grammar, poetry, and rhetoric known by the namie of Leys d'Amors. It was composed in Toulouse, shortly before 1350, by a group of scholars, and was intended to fix the rules of the language with a view to the promotion of a poetical renaissance. Yor this purpose an academy was founded which awarded prizes in the shape of flowers to the best compositions in verse. We still possess the collection of the pieces crowned by this aeademy during the 14th eentury, and a large part of the 15th (Flors del gay saber). Unfortunately they are rather academic than poetic. The Leys d' Amors, which was to be the starting point and rule of the new poetry, is the best production of this abortive renaissance. The decay of Provencal literature arrived too soon to allow of a full development of prose. The 14th and 15th centuries were in no respect a prosperous period for literature in the south of Franee. In the 15th century people began to write French both in verse*~~

~~*and prose ; and from that time Provengal literature became a thing of the past.*~~

~~*Bibliography.—Fauriel, Histoire de la poésie provencale (Paris, 1846, 3 vols. 8vo), is quite antiquated. Not only are three-fourths of the works in Provengeal poetry ignored, but the very idea of the book is vitiated by the author's system (now abandoned), based on the supposition that in the south of France there was an immense epic literature. The articles on the troubadours in the Ziéstoire littéraire de la France, by Ginguené, E. David, &c., must be consulted with extreme caution. F. Diez's Die Poesie der Troubadours (Zwickau, 1827, 8vo; new ed. by Bartsch, 1883) and his Leben und Werke der Troubadours (Zwickau, 1829, 8vo; new ed. by Bartsch, 1882) are of great excellence for the time at which they appeared. For the history of Provengal literature in Spain, see Mila y Fontanals, De Jos trovadores en Espaiia (Barcelona, 1861, 8vo); for Italy, Cavedoni, Ricerche storiche intorno ai trovatori provenzali (Modena, 1844, 8vo) ; A. Thomas, Francesco Barberino et la littérature provencale en Italie (Paris, 1883, 8vo); O. Schultz, " Die Lebensverhdltnisse der italienischen Trobadors," in Zeits. Sir romanische Philologie (1833). For the bibliography consnlt especially Bartsch, Grundriss zur Geschichte der provenzalischen Literatur (Elberfeld, 1872, 8vo), For texts the reader may be referred to Raynouard, Choix de poésies originales des Troubadours (1816-21, 6 vols. 8vo), and Lexique roman, ou dict. de la langue des troubadours, of which vol. i. (1838) is entirely taken up with texts; and Rochegudc, Parnasse occitanien (Toulouse, 1819, Syo). All the pieces published by Raynouard and Rochegude have been reprinted without amendment by Mahn, Die Werke der Troubadours in provenz. Sprache (Berlin, 8vo, vol. i. 1846, ii. 1855-64, iii, 1880, iv., Containing an edition of the troubadour Guiraut Riquier, 1884). The same editor's Gedichte der Troubadours (Berlin, 1856-78) is a collection conspicuous for its want of order and of accuracy (see Romania, iii. 303). Among editions of individual troubadonrs may be mentioned—Petre Vidal's lieder, by Karl Bartsch (Berlin, 1857, 12mo); Les derniers troubadours de la Provence, by Paul Meyer (Paris, 1871, 8vo); Der Troubadour Jauyfre Rudel, sein Leben und seine Werke, by A. Stimming (Kiel, 1873, 8vo); Bertran de Born, sein Leben und seine Werke, by A. Stimming (Hallc, 1879, 8vo); Gutlhem Figueira, ein provenzalischer Troubadour, by E. Levy (Berlin, 1880, 8vo); Das Leben und die Lieder des*~~

~~*Troubadours Peire Rogier, by Carl Appel (Berlin, 1882, Svo); La vita e le opere del trovatore Arnaldo Daniello, by U. A. Canello (Halle, 1883, 8vo). Among editions of Provencal works of a miscellaneous kind are—Bartsch, Denkmdler der Provenzalischen Literatur (Stuttgart, 1856, 8vo); H. Suchier, Denkmdler der pro- venz. Literatur und Sprache (Halle, 1883-85, 2 vols, 8vo); Fr. Armitage, Sermons du XII stécle en vieux provencal (Heilbronn, 1884, 12mo); Paul Meyer, La Chanson de la Croisade contre les Albigeois, (Paris, 1875-79, 2 vols. 8vo); Id., Dauriel et Beton, Chanson de geste provencale (Paris, 1880, 8vo); Id., Le Roman de Flamenca (Paris, 1865, 8vo); E. Stengel, Die beiden diltesten provenzal. Gram- matiken, lo Donatz proensals und las Razos de trobar (Marburg, 1878, 8vo); Bartsch, Sancta Agnes, provenz. geistliches Schauspiel (Berlin, 1867, 8vo); Le Breviari @amor de Matfre Ermengaud, published by the Archeological Society of Béziers (Béziers, 1862-80, 2 vols, 8vo); A. L, Sardou, La Vida de Sant Honorat, légende en vers provenceaux par Raymond Feraud (Nice [1875], 8vo). Documents and dissertations on various points of Provengal literature will be found in almost all the volumes of Romania (Paris, in progress since 1872, Svo), and the Rerue des Langues romanes (Montpellier, in progress since 1870, 8vo0). Sce also the other jour- nals devoted in Germany and Italy to the Romanic languages, passim. (ESM)*~~

~~*Pa Ory*~~

~~*PROVENCE (Provincia), a province of France lying to the extreme south-east on the shores of the Mediterranean, bounded on the W. by Languedoc, on the N. by Ven- aissin and Dauphiné, and on the E. by Italy. It now forms the departments of Bouches-du-Rhéne, Var, and Basses- Alpes, with portions of Vaucluse and Alpes Maritimes. It was divided into Upper Provence, containing the four seneschalates of Forcalquier, Castellane, Sisteron Digne, and the Valley of Barcelonnette ; and Lower Provence, containing the eight seneschalates of Aix, Arles, Brignoles, Grasse, Marseilles, Draguignan, Hyéres, and Toulon. In ancient aS in modern times the most important city was Marseilles (Massilia), a chief seat of trade for the Greek merchants of the Mediterranean, who extended their power along the coast and founded Agde, Antibes, Grasse, and Nice. They afterwards called in the aid of the Romans (125 B.c.) against the Ligurian inhabitants of the surround- ing country, and the new-comers soon made tliemselves*~~

~~*masters of the territory which later formed the provinces of Languedoc, Dauphiné, and Provence. The new pro- vinec, of which the capital was Aquz Sextize (Aix), was called Provincia Gallica until the total conquest of Gaul, when the name of the district was changed to Gallia Narbonensis. In the 4th century of the Christian era, when the greater part of Languedoc, or Narbonensis Prima, had become subject to the Visigoths, and the Burgundians had spread to the Viennois, Provincia came to be applied only to the country lying between the Rhone, the Durance, and the Alps which was still held by the Romans. But they could not withstand for long the advancing tide of barbarian power. Although the Visi- gothic king Theodoric I. was defeated by Aetius before Arles in 425 A.p., and their united armies in turn defeated Attila in 451, yet Theodoric II. imposed the emperor Avitus on the Romans, and Euric by the capture of Arles (480) made the Visigoths masters of Provence. Their defeat at the battle of Bouglé in 507 by Clovis and Gundibald, king of the Burgundians, placed Provence at the mercy of the latter, who ceded it in 511 to Theodoric, king of the Ostrogoths, as guardian of the Visigothic king. The powers so gained were, however, resigned by his suc- cessor Witiges in 536 to Theodebert, king of the Franks, who had previously overthrown the Burgundian kingdom. On the death of Clotaire I. (561) Provence was divided between his sons Sigebert, king of Austrasia, and Gontran, king of Burgundy, Marseilles falling to the former and Arles to the latter. When Gontran died in 593 the pro- vince was united under his nephew Childebert, only to be divided again by his sons and reunited under Clotaire II. (613), until the sons of Dagobert, Sigebert II. and Clovis II. (633) parted it between them. In 719 the Saracens crossed the Pyrenees and made themselves masters of almost all Septimania, or Languedoc, and in 739 they joined with Maurontis, a Byzantine governor of Marseilles, in his attempt to drive out the Franks. Fortunately for Europe their forces were completely defeated by Charles Martel, who again united Provence to the Frankish kingdom. On the division of the Carlovingian empire in 843 Provence fell to Lothair, who left it with the title of king to his son Charles (855), at whose death without issue in 863 it was seized by Charles the Bald. In 879 his brother-in-law Boson, a son-in-law of the emperor Louis II., and governor of Vienne, was elected king by the synod of Mantale, when lis united provinces became known as Cisjuran Burgundy. HIs son, Louis the Blind, obtained the crown of Italy (900), but was deposed by HIugo, who, in his turn obtaining the*~~

~~*Italian kingdom, ceded Provence in 932 to Rudolph IL, king of Transjuran Burgundy. The two Burgundies thus united received the name of the Kingdom of Arles, which lasted in a phantom form until*~~

~~*HNCH 877*~~

~~*1032, but Provence was always governed by princes whose powers gradually increased, until the county was changed from a beneficiary to an hereditary fief. The line of bene- ficiary counts begins with Boson I. (926), who was rein- vested by Rudolph II. in 934. He was succeeded by Boson II. (948), whose son William I. (968) signalized his reign by driving out from the stronghold of Fraxinet the Moorish pirates who had seized it in 889, and thence ravaged the neighbouring country. His brother Rothbold, who held the fief until 1008, was followed by his nephew William IL, and, as the union of the kingdom of Arles with the German empire was by this time almost nominal, the counts of Provence claimed independence, and William's sons, Geoffrey-Bertrand I. and William IIL, divided the county in 1018 as an allodial fief. William III. died in 1053 and Geoffrey-Bertrand handed over to his nephews the northern part, or the county of Forcalquier, he himself retaining the main province to which his son Bertrand II. succeeded in 1063. At his death without issue in 1093 the county was ruled by his mother Etiennette, who was followed (1100) by her daughter Gerberge, wife of Gilbert, viscount of Milhaud and Gévaudan. Their daughter Douce was married to Raymond-Bérenger, count of Barcelona, of the house of Aragon, and Provence passed to him in 1112. But his succession was not undisputed. Raymond de 8. Gilles, count of Toulouse and Venaissin, a great-grandson of Rothbold, had about 1085 laid claim to the county of Forcalquier, and his pretensions were pro- bably partly admitted. The excitement of the crusades put a stop to further action, and in 1096, accompanied by Count Gilbert, he led the Provencal contingent, which was, however, more distinguished for foraging than fighting. On his death in 1105 his claims were revived by his son Alfonse Jourdain, who succeeded in obtaining from Raymond-Bérenger an extension of the county of Venaissin. Raymond-Bérenger I. died in 1130, and was succeeded by his son Bérenger-Raymond, whose rights were disputed by Raymond de Baux, husband of his mother's sister Etiennette. In the war which ensued the count was killed before Melgueil, leaving a young son, Raymond-Bérenger II.*~~

~~(1144), to the guardianship of his uncle, Raymond-Bérenger of Aragon. The claims of Raymond de Baux were renewed by his son HIugo, on whose defeat in 1162 the emperor Frederick I. gave his niece Richilda in marriage to the young count, and invested him with the fiefs of Provence and Forcalquier. HIs only daughter Douce had been betrothed to the count of Toulouse, who accordingly on the death of Raymond- Berenger II. (1166) claimed the county, but was defeated by Alphonso I. of Aragon, who invested his brother Raymond-Berenger III., on whose death in 1181 the fief reverted to Alphonso I. to pass to his son Alphonso II. (1196). This prince died in 1209, and was succeeded by his son Raymond-Bérenger IV., who, seeing that the great cities were nests of intrigue for rivals to the throne, set himself to destroy their independence. Through all changes of rulers the cities had kept their internal freedom and old Roman self-government. The election of the governing body had always remained in the hands of the citizens, but the office of chief magistrate, after ceasing to be filled by a nominee of the Byzantine emperor, had be- come vested either in certain families or in the bishops. In the 12th century measures of reform were imitated from the Italian republics, the chief characteristic of which was the election for life of a stranger as chief magistrate or podesta. The power of the podestas was too great to be broken at once, and, though the Albigenses in Avignon capitulated in 1226, and Nice, Grasse, Toulon, and Marseilles afterwards submitted to Raymond-Bérenger IV., it was left to his son-in-law, CHARLES oF ANJou (see~~

~~vol. v. pp. 422-23), to replace the podestas by governors of his own nomination (1246). Charles died in 1285, leav- ing the states of Anjou, Provence, and Naples to his son Charles II., under whose rule peace and prosperity to some extent revived. But the efforts of his son Robert (1309) in the cause of the Guelphs called for increased taxation, and he left a troubled heritage to his granddaughter Joan of Naples (1343). To avenge the murder of his brother Andrew, the husband of Joan, at whose instigation the crime had been committed, Louis of HIungary marched into Italy (1347), and made himself master of the kingdom of Naples. Joan fled to Provence, and by timely conces- sions to her people secured their favour in her efforts to regain the Neapolitan crown, But money was needed ; so Avignon, where~~

~~*the popes had resided since 1305, was sold to Pope Clement VI., and Joan won back Naples. An important part in the affair was played by the Pro- vencal estates, which consisted of the three houses of clergy, nobility, and commons, and were supreme in all financial matters, however absolute the counts might be in other branches of government. This power of the purse was jealously guarded, and the subsidies granted to the prince were never considered as other than dons gratuits, the name by which they were called even after the union with France, when they became an annual tri- bute. Owing to the right of répartition to definite objects of the sums raised by taxation, the Provengaux were not on the whole badly governed, for, though the estates had only the right of petition for legislation, yet when the need arose they could very effectually speak with the voice of the whole people. The representation of the bulk of the nation in the tiers-état was particularly good, for the deputies, who were paid, were returned not only by the twenty-five country electorates, or vigueries, but from thirty-seven communes as well. The English constitution may therefore be indebted to Provence for the important step which was taken by the younger Simon de Montfort in first summoning the representatives of cities and boroughs to the parliament of 1265. The earliest re- corded session of the estates was in 1146, and the meet- ings continued at intervals until 1639, when they ceased until 1787. The sessions not being annual, the powers of the estates in ordinary matters were delegated to a general assembly, composed of the archbishop of Aix, the pro- cureurs joints, who were representatives of each of the estates of the clergy and the nobility, and the whole of the tiers-état. This assembly gradually superseded the estates until in 1639 it replaced them altogether. To meet sudden emergencies there was a "great council," which consisted of the archbishop and three consuls of Aix as procureurs du pays, and the procureurs joints of the three estates, under the presidency of the grand seneschal. This officer was the representative of the counts in judicial affairs, and during their absence from the country in military matters also. HIs powers were not only adminis- trative, but to a great extent legislative, and they were therefore fated either to increase at the expense of the soverelgn or to be cut down by a firm ruler. Joan chose the latter course, and deprived the grand seneschal of his powers over the state domains, and his right to remove judges and pardon capital crimes. And she not only reduced. his power but appointed an Italian to the office, upon which the nation rose in revolt, and Louis of Anjou, selzing the opportunity to press*~~

~~his claims to the throne, led an army into Provence in 1368. The pretensions of Louis were met by Joan's offer to adopt him as her heir, and on her death in 1382 he succeeded to the county. The reign of Louis I. was passed in the unsuccessful pur- suit of his claims to the kingdom of N aples, and his son Louis II. (1384) and grandson Louis ITIL (1417) con-~~

~~tinued the same unprofitable contest. Reneé (1434), a brother of Louis III, was not less inclined to give up his rights, which had revived in force from his adoption by Joan II. of Naples, but, though fortune at first smiled on him, he was at last forced to resign his claim in favour of the house of Aragon. The count, or titular king, was an accomplished musician and a lover of literature and the arts; and, the latter part of his reign being on the whole peaceful, he was able to give free play to his inclinations. The artistic fame of his court has lasted to the present day, but it was the interest which he took in his subjects' material welfare, and his administration of wise laws, which caused his people to lament the death of René the Good. He died in 1480, and, leaving only a daughter Margaret, the ill-fated wife of Henry VI. of England, bequeathed the county to his nephew Charles of Maine. Charles ITI. died in the following year, making Louis XI. of France his heir, and in 1486 Charles VIII. by letters patent reunited the county to the kingdom of France.~~

~~The union was confirmed by the estates with the full approval of the people; but the emperor was not inclined to relinquish without a struggle his claims to overlordship, and he found a willing tool in the constable, Charles of Bourbon, who entered Provence at the head of the im. perialist army in 1524. His adventure met with failure, and the invasion by the emperor Charles V. himself in 1536 was equally unsuccessful. In 1501 Louis XIIL., with the view of strengthening his own authority, replaced the "conseil eminent," which in the time of the counts had been the highest court of justice, by a "parlement," consist- ing at first of the grand seneschal, a president, and eleven nominated councillors. The functions of the court were strictly judicial, but before its abolition in 1790 it had often assumed legislative rights, and consequently played a conspicuous part in the civil wars of the 16th and 17th centuries. The principles of the Reformation~~

~~*made what little progress they did in Provence from external rather than internal causes, and the people themselves never took kindly to doctrines which in many ways assumed an extremely bizarre and heretical form. The 13th century had witnessed Simon de Montfort's crusade against the Albigenses of Languedoc, and the ruin which heresy had brought on that province cannot have given the prosper- ous Provengaux any great love for new doctrines. The Waldenses of the 16th century were therefore chiefly con- fined to the mountainous districts, but the persecutions ordered by the parlement brought the horrors of civil war on the whole country. The extreme Catholics formed the Holy League against the Protestants, and the two parties were equally at enmity with Henry III, who tried to please both without satisfying either. In time the royal- ists and Protestants united under the name of Bigarrats, but it was not until Henry IV. had come to the throne, and Marseilles, the last stronghold of the League, had submitted, that the worn-out country was again at peace. Richelieu tried to increase the taxation of the people with- out their consent, but the disorders of the Cascaveous were the result, and a similar attempt by Mazarin in 1647 led to disturbances in connexion with the Fronde which lasted until 1652. In 1707, during the War of the Spanish Succession, the army of the allies under Prince Eugene invaded the province, and the horrors of war were followed by those of the plague of 1720, when 100,000 persons perished, Marseilles alone losing 50,000 out of a popula- tion of 90,000. The dispute between the Jesuits and Jansenists waxed warm about 1726, but the victory of the former only preceded their suppression by Pope Clement XIV. in 1773 in return for the cession of Avignon and the county of Venaissin, which had twice changed hands since their reunion with Provence in 1663. On the re-*~~

~~*convocation of the estates in 1787 the two upper houses refused to bear their share of taxation, and in 1789, in the states-general of the kingdom, Mirabeau with his col- leagues renounced the freedom and independence of the province. The division of Provence into departments in | 1790 finally obliterated all traces of the ancient con- | stitution, but the people still preserve in the soft tones of their Jangue d'oc an undying reminder of their former independence. (H. B. B.)*~~

~~*PROVERBS, Boox or. The title of the book of Pro- verbs is "The Proverbs of Solomon" (moby wn, mishlé shelomoh, or more shortly meshlé, for which Origen gives the feminine form misloth, Euseb., H. #., vi. 25). The | title in the LXX. is a literal rendering of the Hebrew, Tlapoiuiat Sartwpavros. In early times the book was frequently referred to both among Jews and Christians under the name of " Wisdom" or "The Wisdom that com- prises all Virtues" (4 wavaperos copia, Clem. Rom., ch. 57). This name, however, was employed somewhat indis- criminately, for not only Proverbs but also Ecclesiastes and the apocryphal books Ecclesiasticus and Wisdom were also designated by it, and sometimes apparently the whole third division of the canon (Lightfoot, Epp. of S. Clement, p. 164 sq.).*~~

~~*The book of Proverbs as it now lies before us consists of*~~

~~*a number of distinct parts. 1. We have, chap. i. 1-7 (or i. 1-6 as some think), a general heading and preface, giving the title of the*~~

~~*"The Proverbs of Solomon, the son of David, king of Israel. To know wisdom and instruction . . . to give subtlety to the simple, to the young man knowledge and discretion . . . to understand a proverb and a figure, the | words of the wise and their dark sayings." This is_ followed by the fundamental maxim of the Wisdom, " The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom." The question to what parts of the book this preface extends is not easy to settle.*~~

~~*2. This general preface is followed by a lengthy pas- sage, i. 8-ix. 18, which consists, not of detached proverbs, though a number of such proverbs are scattered through it, but of connected discourses in praise of wisdom and the benefits which she confers on those who embrace her. The speaker is one of the wise, or a type of them, who ad- dresses his youthful pupil or friend as "my son," though at several points wisdom herself is introduced speaking, displaying her graces, offering herself to men, narrating her history, and magnifying the delights which they who follow her enjoy, as well as painting in dark colours the evils from which she preserves them. Attempts have been made to divide the passage into distinct sections, but without much success. Ewald counts three general divisions, Bertheau seven, Hooykaas eleven, and Delitzsch fifteen. The passage is in the main homogeneous, though containing at more places than one elements which*~~

~~at first sight might appear foreign (eg., vi. 1 sq.), and on the whole at least is the composition of a single author. Several of its characteristics, such as the style, and par- ticularly the personification of wisdom in chap. vill. and else- where, one of the most remarkable and beautiful things in Hebrew literature, indicate that the passage belongs to an advanced stage of the Hebrew wisdom.~~

~~3. Then follows the largest section in the book, x. 1- xxii. 16, with a new heading, "The Proverbs of Solomon." This division consists of a number of verses—three hundred and seventy-four, it is said—each of which contains a single proverb or maxim in two lines, the only exception being xix. 7, which has three lines, but this is probably due to one member of a second verse having fallen out. The kind of poetical parallelism most common in these verses is the |~~

~~antithetic, of the type "A wise son maketh a glad father, but a foolish son is the heaviness of his mother" (x. 1). This type of parallelism prevails almost exclusively in x.—xv., after which other types are more commonly introduced. The proverbs in this collection are of a very miscellaneous character, and are thrown together without any classifica- tion or regard to subject, though occasionally a few verses~~

~~| are found to follow one another having reference to a~~

~~common topic. 4, After this comes a small collection consisting of two parts which have been put together, xxii. 17—xxiv. 22 and~~

~~_ xxiv. 23-34. The author of the first collection informs his~~

~~son or disciple that what he addresses to him is " words of the wise" (xxii. 17) ; and the second small code is inscribed "These also are by the wise" (xxiv. 23). The proverbs in this collection sometimes make one verse, sometimes two or three, and even occasionally run out to a short proverbial discourse.~~

~~5. Then follows an important collection, xxv.—xxix., with the inscription, "These also are proverbs of Solomon, which the men of Hezekiah, king of Judah, copied out" (xxv. 1). The expression "copied out" (LXX. e&eypayav7o), lit. "transferred" or removed from one place to another,~~

~~| implies that the men of Hezekiah made use of written~~

~~sources in forming their collection. The notice is of great historical interest. Hezekiah, besides being a wise and reforming king, had probably literary tastes; he has the~~

~~reputation of having been a poet himself (Isa. xxxviii.) ; book and the purposes to be served by its contents :—|~~

~~| 2 Kings xviii. 37).~~

~~and his "men" were no doubt scholars and scribes about his court, who shared in his tastes and pursuits, and under his direction used their opportunities to rescue from oblivion the precious remains of the most ancient wisdom by transferring them from the small collections in which they lay hidden into a single and authorized code (cf. It may perhaps be considered some corroboration of the genuine historical character of the inscription that the collection begins with a number of proverbs relating to kings. The maxims in this code, particularly in xxv.—xxvii., approach much nearer to what we should imagine the early popular proverb to have been than many of those in the other large collection ; they are simple, usually contain a comparison, and have none of the abstractness which characterizes many of the maxims in x.-xxil. This may be regarded as a guarantee of their great antiquity.~~

~~6. Two small pieces then follow, evidently related to one another, xxx. and xxxi. 1-9,—the former with the inscription, "The words of Agur, the son of Jakeh," and the other with the heading, " The words of King Lemuel." The inscriptions to these two pieces are very obscure. In the former the A. V. can hardly be correct. More probably by a different division of words we should read —' The words of Agur the son of Jakeh of Massa. The man said, I have wearied myself, O God, I have wearied myself, O God, and am consumed ; for I am more brutish than any man," &. The words are those of one who~~

~~*has striven to comprehend God and found the task above him (Ps. lxxiii. 22). Possibly the above rendering re- quires a slight correction in the text, already made in the Veneto-Greek version, which renders "Jakeh the Massaite" (Gen. xxiv. 14%). Similarly the heading in xxxi. should probably read—" The words of Lemuel king of Massa, wherewith his mother instructed him." It is uncertain whether the names Agur and Lemuel be real or fictitious.*~~

~~*7. Finally the book is closed by an alphabetical poem, xxxi. 10-31, in praise of the virtuous (that is, the active, capable) woman.*~~

~~*The contents of these several sections are very various and not easy to classify. The proverbialists occupy them- selves with life in all its aspects. Sometimes they simply*~~

~~*880*~~

~~*catch the expression of men good or bad, or photograph their actions and thoughts; more generally they pass a verdict upon them, and exhort or instruct men in regard tothem. The proverbs differ from the shrewd or humorous sayings which are so called in profane literature ; some of them have a certain flavour of humour, but they are mainly maxims touching practical life on its religious and moral side. Such maxims cannot be regarded as wholly or even in a very large degree the production of an individual mind. A number of them may well be by Solomon, and a greater number may belong to his age ; but, though the stream of wisdom began to flow in his day, its beginnings were then comparatively small ; as the centuries advanced it gathered volume. In the book which now exists we find gathered together the most precious fruits of the wisdom in Israel during many hundred years, and undoubtedly the later centuries were richer, or at all events fuller, in their contributions than the earlier. The tradition, however, which connects Solomon with the direction of mind known as the wisdom cannot reasonably be set aside. The renown for wisdom which this king enjoyed among his own people, and even, though in a distorted and fantastic form, among the other peoples of the East, must have rested on some real founda- tion. No doubt reputations grow, and veneration mag- nifies its hero sometimes in proportion to the indistinct- ness of its real knowledge of him; and objects seen in the broad light of day*~~

~~*are very insignificant compared with the bulk which they assume when seen between us and the light still lingering on the horizon of a day that has gone down. But, making allowance for the exaggerations of later times, we should leave history and tradition altogether unexplained if we disallowed the claim of Solomon to have exercised a creative influence upon the wisdom in Israel. At the same time it is probable that this influence did not lie in the application of new methods, much less in the creation of a new direction of thought. The supposition that Solomon was the inventor of the proverbial distich or mashal, particularly of the antithetical distich, or that he was the first to use this in his sententious sayings on men and life, and thus the father of didactic poetry among the Hebrews, is a mere conjecture. The distich was employed long before his day, and sententious maxims regarding life and men long preceded him. Moreover the conjecture is based on the very false assumption that the essence of the wisdom lay in the form of expression rather than in the matter, and that the curt, sharp, antithetical distich was its proper characteristic and belonged to it from the beginning. This assumption, made by Ewald, has been so usually accepted by writers after him that the polished pointed antithesis has been elevated into a criterion of the higher antiquity of those proverbs which possess it. Pro- bably the opposite conclusion would be nearer the truth. The form of these antithetical proverbs betrays art, long use of the literary methods of the wise, and an approach to technicality—things not to be expected in an early age. The early mashal was probably simple, containing a figure or comparison, as the name implies; some truth of the life of mankind thrown into an image from nature, without anything artificial or technical. Proverbs like "iron sharp- eneth iron," or such fine similes as these—"'a trampled fountain and a fouled spring is the righteous man who hath given way before the wicked," "a city that is broken down and hath no wall is the man whose spirit is without con- trol" (xxv. 26, 28)—are the kind of proverbs which we should look for in this earliest time. Solomon has a place of renown in the wisdom, not because he imposed any mannerism upon it, but because he threw a vigorous mind into it. He probably formed no class: the word "wise" did not, from being an adjective, become a noun in his*~~

~~*PROVERBS*~~

~~*days. The nature of his wisdom is best illustrated by the story of the two women with the living and the dead child (1 Kings iii. 16-28). He possessed a keen insight into the operations of human nature; he knew the world and men and life. Most likely also he possessed the power of giving pointed expression to his shrewd and ready judgments ; and, as it is said that he spoke of beasts and fishes and trees, he probably had an eye for the analogies between human life and the external world. From his character we should judge that his three thousand proverbs were not all religious ; neither were his thousand and one songs all hymns, or some of them would have been preserved to us besides the two more than doubtful poems in the Psalter (Ps. lxxii., cxxvii.). The theme of the wisdom was life, and its aims were practical; and, if the rise of the wisdom be connected with the age of Solomon, that is due to the fact that life in the civil sense began in this age, and its principles could be discovered. Then the tribes were con- solidated into one community, the state rose into existence, the channels of commerce were opened, men entered into various and complicated relations with one another, and the principles which rule such relations revealed themselves to the eye that was open to observe them.*~~

~~*It is not quite easy to form definite conceptions of those called the wise in Israel. They were certainly no heredi- tary caste like the priests; neither had they any distinct call to a vocation like the prophets, although in later times at least they were so well recognized that they could be ranked with these two classes as influential in forming men's opinions and guiding their actions (Jer. xviii. 18). They were probably men who might be named elders, not always because of their age, but because of their superior sagacity ; men who, having at heart the welfare of the state and particularly the moral soundness of the citizens, sought to gain the ear of the young and inculcate upon them the principles of right conduct. While the priests were the clergy and lawyers in Israel, and the prophets the statesmen, the wise were the moralists and educa- tionists, whose operations touched the individual in all his relations and duties. Their methods were probably simple to begin with, and natural, without anything strictly characteristic ; they were moral "reprovers," or ordinary "counsellors," and possibly at fi'st their ethical maxims were general, touching life as a whole. By and by they surveyed life with a keener scrutiny and subjected it to a sharper analysis, bringing their moral principles to bear on its shades and sides and aspects, and applying*~~

~~*these principles with greater inwardness so as to strike not merely at external conduct but at the disposition of the mind. And, finally, under the influence of the universalistic ideas of God and providence suggested to the minds of men in Israel by contact with the great empires of the world and observation of their destinies, when the Jewish state became involved in political movements as wide as the known world, the wise were enabled to gather together the manifold fragments into which they had analysed the moral life of man and the operation of the providence of God, and to perceive that they were all but elements in one great divine system embracing all things, both the world of nature and the destinies of men. 'To this great scheme, which was but God fulfilling himself in many ways, they gave the name of wisdom in the abstract; it was the counterpart of the divine mind, God's fellow and architect in framing the world. This was the divine wisdom; human wisdom consisted both in intellectual comprehension of it and in moral harmony with it, and the first could be reached only through the second: tke fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom. Illustrations of the wisdom in its earliest form may be seen in the collection XXV.—xxix., and in many proverbs in x.—xxii.*~~

~~*PRO nr h 2s*~~

~~*(many examples of the period of most subtle analysis in the last-named collection), while the period of synthesis and what comes near to bea science of wisdom is represented in the passage i.—ix. Naturally along with this advance in thought there appeared a corresponding advance in the forms of expression in which the wisdom clothed itself: the wise acquired a method; a particular spirit began to animate their circles; their phraseology showed the impress of a particular mint, and ultimately assumed a form almost technical.*~~

~~*Perhaps some of the things which failed to attract the attention of the wise are more suggestive than those things with which they occupied themselves. Though sacrifice, for example, be once or twice alluded to, no importance is attached to the ritual system; the priest is not once mentioned, and the external exercises of worship appear to have little significance. But, what is more remarkable, the wise man differs as much froni the prophet as he does from the lawgiver. All those ideas around which prophecy revolves, such as*~~

~~*the idea of the kingdom of God, of a chosen people, of a Messiah or future king of the house of David, and the like, are entirely absent. The distinction between "Israel" and the "nations" has no place. The darling phraseology of the prophets—"Israel," "Jacob," "Zion," "my people," "the latter day"—and the whole terminology of particu- larism characteristic of prophecy and many even of the Psalms nowhere occurs. The conflict between the worship of Jehovah and that of false gods, with which the pages of prophetic writers are filled, does not receive even a pass- ing reference. Conclusions have been drawn from these peculiarities which, though not unnatural, are scarcely warranted. It has been inferred that the wise were men whose way of thinking placed them outside of their dis- pensation and in antagonism to the circle of beliefs cherished in Israel and represented by the prophets and other public teachers—in short, that they took up a humanistic or naturalistic position. A position to which the name naturalistic could be given is inconceivable in Israel. There were no doubt men called wise who pursued false directions (Jer. xviii. 18), as there were false prophets ; but there is nothing in the Proverbs to indicate any antagonism between their authors and either priest or pro- phet. On the contrary the passage iii. 9—a solitary one no doubt—"Honour the Lord with thy substance, and with the first fruits of all thine increase," shows their friendliness to the ritual. If they say on the other hand that the sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord (xv. 8), and that by mercy and truth iniquity is atoned for (xvi. 6), this is nothing but what the prophets proclaim in a body, and means merely that obedience is better than sacrifice and the moral higher than the ritual. And even Sirach, a fervent supporter of priesthood and sacrifice (Ecclus. vii. 29 sq.), enunciates the same doctrine: "He that keepeth the law multiplieth offerings; he that taketh heed to the commandments sacrificeth a peace-offering. To depart from wickedness is a thing pleasing to the Lord, and to depart from unrighteousness is a pro- pitiation" (Ecclus. xxxv. 1 sg.). And that the wise men feel themselves within the circle of the revealed religion is evident from their use of the name Jehovah, their frequent references to the "law," that is, torah or revelation, the "commandment," the "word," and the like; and sucha sentence as this, "Where there is no vision (prophetic revelation, 1 Sam. iii. 1) the people cast off restraint" (xxix. 18), shows no unfriendliness to the prophets. The wise men had no quarrel with the institutions of Israel, nor with the public teachers and their operations ;*~~

~~they occupied themselves more, however, with the life of the individual than the community, and sought to distil from~~

~~881~~

~~the particularistic thought in Israel principles which, both in morals and religion, should be universal and applicable wherever men lived.~~

~~Still this very universalism is a remarkable thing, and a different attempt has been made to explain it. It has been suggested that the wisdom, though some beginnings of it may have appeared during the prophetic period and while the autonomy of Israel as a state continued, must be in the main elements of its literature a thing posterior to the downfall of the state and the cessation of prophecy. Only in this way it is thought is it possible to explain the complete absence of all those ideas regarding Israel as a people, its relation to the heathen, and its future destiny, which fill the pages of the earlier literature. That inspira- tion and exaltation of mind which marked the prophetic age has disappeared and reflexion has taken its place. Enthusiasm for the state has died out because the state has perished, and is now represented by care for the individual. Prophecy has fulfilled its mission; it has lodged its principles in men's minds; it has seen itself fulfilled in the overthrow of the kingdom, but the hour of its triumph has been the hour of its death. Now follows the time of reflexion upon the prophetic truths, when the mind has accepted principles and risen through prophetic teaching to universal conceptions of God and the world, and an effort is made to apply them to the individual life. In short the age of the wisdom is the period of the return from exile, when Israel was no more a nation but a com- munity of people, when it had no king of its own but obeyed a foreign ruler, and when prophecy speedily became dumb, partly because its mission had been fulfilled and partly because the chief condition of its exercise, the exist- ence of the state, was awanting. In this condition of things the wise arose and exercised their functions; they do not allude to prophetic conceptions because, so far as these concerned the people in its nationality, they had in the meantime lost their meaning, and so far as they belonged to the general region of religious and ethical truth they had been accepted at least by the better minds among the people, and it is the aim of the wise to per- suade every individual in the community to receive them~~

~~*and live by them. The wise indeed are the successors of the prophets; they inculcate the same truths as they did, but the subject whose ear they seek to gain is the individual and no more the state.*~~

~~*Such a theory, should it come to be accepted, would carry its compensations with it. It would fill with the liveliest activity a period in the life of Israel where a silence almost of death seems at present to reign. The centuries after Malachi are a great blank ; if we could suppose them filled with the life and thought reflected in the charming literature of the wisdom, they would yield in interest to no period of the nation's history. And beyond doubt the wisdom continued to flourish in this age, for Ecclesiastes and later down the extra-canonical wisdom of Sirach are the fruits of it. If we consider Ecclesiastes, however, we find that it is the proper successor to the book of Job; it reflects the natural exhaustion of speculation on the great mysteries of God and providence which could not but follow the stormy conflict exhibited in Job. But in the two great collections of Solomonic proverbs such doubts regarding providence do not at all appear, and even in the other collections (except chap. xxx.) they are touched on lightly. The Proverbs appear to signalize the stage of Hebrew thought anterior to the book of Job. It may be said that Sirach does not debate such questions. This is true, but the reason is that he consciously declines to entertain them, "Seek not things that are too hard for thee"; " None shall say, what is this? wherefore is that?" (Ecclus, iii. 21, xxxix. 16), while to the proverbialists they*~~

~~*XIX. — 111*~~

~~*882*~~

~~*do not occur. Again, it is doubtful if any period in the history of Israel was marked by an absence of those national aspirations and hopes so prominent in the pro- phets; and if the wise do not allude to them it is not because the hopes were dead but because another direction of thought absorbed them. They are equally indifferent to the claims of the law. But, at whatever time the Leviti- cal legislation arose or was codified, it is certain that at no period was it observed as it was after the restoration. And yet there is no allusion to it in the Proverbs; the "Jaw " referred to is not the ritual but the ethical law as in the prophets ; it is the law of one's mother, of the wise, of*~~

~~*divine revelation in general, but never specifically that of the priest. In Sirach on the contrary the wisdom her- self is identified with "the law which Moses commanded us for a heritage unto the assemblies of Jacob" (Ecclus. xxiv. 23). The truth is that the wisdom is a direction of thought differing from the main line of thought in Israel at any time, and yet a direction which we should expect and which we desiderate at all times. It is a force which was disrupting the particularism of the Jehovah religion from within just as the events of history shattered it from without, and bringing to view its inherent universalism. The prophets direct their attention mainly to the state, and they appear at irregular intervals. It is when the lion roars that they give the alarm (Amos iii. 8). Their voice is heard only when the tempest is rising, when some crisis in the people's history is approaching. We can hardly doubt that the intervals were filled up by the operations of men who pursued a calmer method, such as the wise, who were the "reprovers" and monitors fre- quently alluded to by the prophets themselves (Hos. iv. 4; Amos v. 10; Jer. xviii. 18). There is some danger of pushing the principle of development to an extreme so as under the influence of too ideal a conception of progress to divide the history and thought of Israel into sections by drawing straight lines across it, as.Ezekiel in his vision divided the holy land into rectangular belts. No people moves forward on one line or in a mass. Alongside of the main current of thought and progress there are always minor currents running. And finally, while there are many proverbs that from their nature can hardly be placed in the period of the restoration, there are really none that from their internal character require to be dated so low. The proverb already quoted, "Where no vision is the people cast off restraint " (xxix. 18), must be contempor- aneous with the prophetic period. The other, " My son, fear the Lord and the king" (xxiv. 21), would scarcely be spoken later than the monarchy (cf. 1 Kings xxi. 10). Many of the references to kings are no doubt general, though they are more natural under the native kingdom than at any other period (¢.g., xvi. 12, xx. 8); but such a saying as this, "A divine sentence is on the lips of the king, his mouth shall not transgress in judgment" (chap. xvi. 10), seems to take us back to the more ancient days in Israel.when the king actually judged causes in person. And undoubtedly the national tradition at the time of the composition of Job, as we see it reflected in the speeches of that book, was that the moral wisdom was so ancient as to be of immemorial antiquity.*~~

~~The questions regarding the age of the individnal collections contained in the present book and the age of the book as a whole are ele ae ?~~

~~1S an untortunate thing that the headings cannot be ely relied on. Such headings are often foillfticd on tradi- it arc merely suggestions of later editors or collectors. The oe ing of the collection XXV.—xxix., "These are also proverbs of pmo which the men of Hezekiah copied out," does not of course ? rom the men of Hezekiah, for the word "also" shows that itis ge ie nee who brought the collection into our present book, Th uch other proverbs of Solomon, viz., X.~xxii., already stood. vere 1s BO reason, however, to doubt the historical accuracy of the~~

~~| selves or by others.~~

~~' to another.~~

~~PROVERSS~~

~~inscription. This collection is at least as old as the end of the 8th century. At this period the proverbs contained in it were considered and called Solomonic. This of course does not guarantee that every proverb in the collection is by Solomon, though it guarantees the antiquity of the maxims, for the individual proverbs in a collection will always be older than the collection itself, and some of them may be of great antiquity. The term "copied out" implies that the men of Hezekiah confined themselves to written sources. We have little knowledge how the wise conducted their operations. Probably their instructions were in the main given orally. But small collections of their sayings were occasionally made by them- Several such collections were in existence in Hezekiah's days, and his scribes gathered them into one book. The usual extent of such small codes may be inferred from some of those embodied in our present book, e¢.g., xxii. 17—xxiv. 22, xxiv. 23-34, and xxx. There is no probability that the term 'copied out" implies that the men of Hezekiah proceeded critically and made a selection from a large mass of proverbs of such as they considered Solomonic, neither can their collection have been a gleaning made from _a number of small codes after the large code x.—xxii. had already been extracted from them. They can hardly have been acquainted with x.-xxii., otherwise their code would not lave contained so many duplicates of~~

~~maxims in that collection. It is certainly not improbable that Hezekiah's collection forms the oldest element in our book. Many of the proverbs contained in it have the stamp of antiquity. It comprises almost all the proverbs that we still use. Such sayings as "iron sharpeneth iron," "as face answereth to face in water," "the dog is returned to his vomit," "bray a fool in a mortar," phrases like 'heap coals of fire upon his head," "singing songs to a weary heart," "good news from a far country," "the curse causeless," "a whip for the horse, and a bridle for the ass, and a rod for the fool's back," are examples. Alinost all the proverbs in xxv.—xxvii. contain a comparison, and some are of great beauty, as for example, "an earthen vessel glazed with silver dross, so are fervent lips and a bad heart." The youngest elements in this collection are found in xxviii.xxix., which ap proach nearer the abstract and analytic manner of many of the proverbs in x.—xxii.~~

~~2. The passage i. 8-ix. is in all likelihood by one author, though some of the individual maxims contained in it may have been drawn from foreign sources (comp. vi. 9 sg. with xxiv. 30 sg.), and does not appear to be of very high antiquity. The general preface extends at least to xxii. 16; but, while its author says, "The pro- verbs of Solomon, son of David" (i. 1), a new inscription, "The proverbs of Solomon," heads x. This implies that i.-ix. were not considered Solomonic; the proverbs properly so-called commenced with the tenth chapter. Several things point towards a particular age as that to which the passage belongs. (1) The passage is pro- bably prior to the book of Job, for the personification of wisdom seems referred to in that book (xv. and xxvili., though xxviii. may be later than the main portions of the book). The age of Job is no doubt uncertain, but it can hardly be considered anterior to the exile, nor yet much later. (2) The descriptions given of wisdom taking her stand by the broadways and at the gates and addressing the throng- ing crowds of men (i., viii.), as well as the picture of the strange woman prowling in the streets at nightfall (vii.), suggest that the writer had the idea of a large and populous city present to his mind. This conld be no other than Jerusalem, and certainly Jerusalem before its destruction. The miserable city of the restoration could not until many generations after the return have afforded materials for the ideal before the author's eye, for nearly a century after the first exiles returned great part of it was still in ruins (Neh. vii. 4). Though the author warns the~~

~~youth of his day against disorderly and violent men, his references to life suggest a condition of general comfort and plenty. (3) On the other hand the personification of the wisdom marks the highest point to which Hebrew thought on the world rose, and cannot belong to an early age. It is scarcely conceivable except at a time when the operations of the wise had been long pursued. Wisdom, pausing in the work of expounding providence and the laws of human happiness, which she had long instinctively pursued with self-forgetful fascination in her task, becomes self-conscious, and turning her eyes upon herself displays her own graces and beauty before the sight of men. A philosophy of wisdom has now been reached. These facts together point to a time not very long anterior to the destruction of Jerusalem, possibly about a century after the men of Hezekiah made their collection. With this agrees the language of the piece, which, though generally good, has several marks of a somewhat late age, ¢.g., the frequent formation of abstracts in -wth.~~

~~3. It is more difficult to form an opinion regarding the large code, X.-xxli. It has generally been considered the oldest collection in our book ; and without doubt many of the proverbs contained in it may be old, as old as those in Hezekiah's collection, though others may be of more recent. origin. From the nature of such genera] maxims there is little about them to suggest one age in preference The grounds, however, on which these proverbs have been considercd the oldest in the book hardly support such~~

~~PR O—~~

~~a belief. These grounds are partly the form of the proverbs and partly the nature of their contents compared with the other collec- tions. In form the collection consists exclusively of distichs, and in large parts of antithetical distichs. But, though the distich may be the oldest form of proverb, the inference can hardly be drawn that all distichs are ancient; the distich continued the prevailing type at all times, being still largely used by Sirach, and all that we are entitled to say is that some distichs. are older than any proverbs that have another form. But many of the antitheti- cal distichs for which a high antiquity is claimed are probably comparatively modern. Their literary style is too finished and elaborate to possess a high antiquity. There is an abstractness in them, and an artificial balance of member~~

~~against member and word against word which suggests high literary culture and long use of the arts of the proverbialist. Further the extremely pro- miscuous nature of the collection, the repetitions in it, and the frequent occurrence of proverbs which are but modifications of others are proofs that it contains elements belonging to very different periods. The conjecture that Solomon himself put forth any collection of his proverbs has little to support it. At all events neither this whole collection nor any part of it in its present shape can have come from the hand of one who was the author of any great number of the proverbs contained in it. Nor can its present confusion be sufficiently explained by supposing with Ewald that an original ancient and orderly collection has suffered mutilation and fallen into disorder through repeated transcription and strong interpolation. That collections of pro- verbs were particularly liable to interpolation appears from the Septuagint, but the incoherence of our present code is such that it must have characterized it from the beginning. When we find one proverb repeated verbally (xiv. 12=xvi. 25), a nuinber of others having the first member identical but differing in the second, and again a number more differing in the first member but identical in the second, we are led to infer that many of the proverbs before coming into the collection had a long history of oral transmission and curreney, during which they underwent great changes, that like defaced coins they were thrown into the mint and came forth with a new image and superscription to circulate again among men, and that the code as a whole has been drawn largely from oral sources. While many of the maxims in such a code may be very ancient, the collection as a whole may be pretty late. Judged by contents, there is nothing in it that might not belong to the prophetic age or which would compel us to bring it in its present form below the exile. Some references in this collection, ¢.g., those to kings, when compared with similar allusions in Hezekiah's code, are thought to reflect an earlier and a happier time. The king is spoken of in a complimentary way, while in Hezekiah's collection the evils of corrupt government are bewailed and the misera contribuens plebs comes to the front. But the argument that proverbs in praise of a wise monarch must have originated under wise monarchs and conversely is not particularly strong ; if the men of Hezekiah had felt the force of it they would scarcely have set a number of equivocal references to kings at the head of a collec- tion formed under the auspices of that exemplary monarch. The history of the monarchy of Israel, both north and south, was~~

~~*sufii- ciently chequered to give the people experience of every kind of rule. Solomon himself was not a model prince, and neither in his nor his successor's days were the people unfamiliar with oppressive exactions. The references to rulers in all the collections are general reflexions from which historical conclusions cau hardly be drawn; in xix. 10 the rise of a slave to rule over princes is spoken of, a thing unknown in Israel; and similar general allusions to rulers occur both in Ecclesiastes and in Sirach (Ecclus. vii. 4 sq.).?*~~

~~*4, There is nothing in the contents of the small collections xxii. 17-xxiv. 34 to suggest a date lower than the exile (¢f xxiv. 21). On the other hand the despair of attaining to the knowledge of God expressed in ch, xxx. reminds us of Job xxviii. and Ecclesiastes, and the passage may belong to the post-exile period. The warning against adding to the words of God (xxx. 6) might also suggest the existence of canonical writings. The section is marked by peculi- arities of language and manner. If thenames Agur and Lemuel be real the passage might belong to a time when Israel and the tribes towards the south began to coalescc. The alphabetical poem with which the book is closed is probably not early, though there is little in it to suggest any precise age. Ezek. xxvii. 17 compared with xxxi. 16, 24 perhaps shows that in the time of this prophet Judah did not yet engage in the kind of manufactures mentioned in the poem.*~~

~~*The general heading i. 1-7 must be preface to at least i.—xxii. 16; it may extend to xxiv., or to xxix., or to the end of the book. Its relation to i. 8-ix. is of importance in reference to the date of the collection x.-xxii. On the one hand it is probable that the*~~

~~*1 The statement of Ewald that the article is rarer in this collection than in that of Hezekiah is not supported by the facts ; on the other hand the anticipative Aramean suffix, not found in xxv. sq., is com- mon to the two other large codes, i.-ix. and x.-xxii.*~~

~~*PRO 883*~~

~~*preface comprises ver. 7, "The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom." Some such general aphorism was necessary to clinch the statement regarding the uses of the proverbial literature. On the other hand the*~~

~~*passage i. 8-ix. could scarcely have begun abruptly, "My son, &c." The general aphorism both closes the preface and introduces what follows. If this be the case the author of the preface is also author of i. 8-ix., and undoubtedly the preface agrees in style with these chapters. He is certainly also the editor of x.xxii. It is possible that he was also the collector of the proverbs in this code. In any case this important collection would be anterior to the exile, though it is not likely that the collection was made long before the destruction of Jerusalem. The agree ment, however, between the style of the preface and that of the first nine chapters is supposed by others to be due to imitation on the part of the author of the preface. This is possible, though less natural. On such a supposition, however, the preface would be younger in date than i. 8-ix., and the conclusion as to the age of x.~xxii. would fall to the ground. This collection in that case might be later than i.—ix. and contain proverbs of the post-exile period. The preface refers to "the words of the wise," and it is probable that it extends to xxiv. Whether the author of the pre- face and editor of i.-xxiv. added also xxv.-xxix. is uncertain; the word "also" (xxv. 1) implies that this independent code was added when x.—xxii. had already received a place in the general collection.*~~

~~*The Septuagint version exhibits great variety of reading, and has many additions and also remarkable omissions. The additions are usually of little worth, though with exceptions, as the word " not" in v. 16. Critically the omissions are of more interest than the insertions. This version transfers xxx. 1-14 to a place after xxiv. 22; then follows the remainder of chap. xxiv. After this comes xxx. 15-xxxi. 9, then the code xxv.-xxix., and finally xxxi. 10-81. The objects of this transposition are not apparent; but the effect of the changes here and elsewhere has been to obliterate all traces of other than Solomonic authorship from the book, and possibly this was intended.*~~

~~*Literature.—Important commentaries are those of Schultens, M. Stuart, Ewald, Hitzig, Delitzsch, Bertheau (Exeg. Handb., lst cd.; 2d ed. by Nowack). Valuable on the text is Lagarde, Anmerkungen zur Griech. Uebersetzung der Proverbien ; also Deyserinck, Krit. Scholien (reprint from Theol. Tijds., 1883.) Works on the Wisdom are—Bruch, Weisheitslehre der Hebrder; Hooykaas, Geschiedents der*~~

~~*Beoefening van de Wijsheid onder de Hebreén; Oehler, Grundztige der Alttest. Weisheit. The literature is fully given in Lange's Comm., and the introductions;*~~

~~*sec especially the valuable section in Kuenen's Hist. Krit. Onderzoek. There is a special treatise on xxx.—xxxi. 9 by Miihlau. (A.B. DS*~~

~~*PROVIDENCE, a city of the United States, one of the capitals of the State of Rhode Island (the other being Newport), and the seat of justice of Providence county, is sitneted in 41° 49' 22" N. lat. and 71° 24' 48" W. long.,*~~

~~*Varragansets Bay*~~

~~*Plan of Providence. at the head of Narragansett Bay, on both banks of Providence River, and with Seekonk River on its eastern boundary. A nearly circular sheet of water known as the Cove lies in the heart of the city at the junction of river and estuaries. The total area of Providence is 14°76 square miles. On the east side the ground rises to a*~~

~~*884*~~

~~*height of 204 feet, and on the west, where there is much more of level surface, to 75 feet ; but both the sides and summits of the hills are occupied by dwelling-houses. To the south lies the Roger Williams Park (102 acres), bequeathed to the city in 1871 by Betsy Willams, a descendant of the founder of Providence. The best known of all the public institutions is Brown University, whose spacious buildings (University Hall, Manning Hall, Hope College, Rhode Island Hall, Sayles Memorial Hall, Slater Hall, &c.) crown the heights on the east side of the river. Originally founded at Warren in 1764 as Rhode Island College, it was removed to Providence in 1770, but did not obtain its present name (bestowed in honour of Nicholas Brown, one of its principal benefactors) till 1804. By the terms of its charter 30 out of the 48 members of its board of fellows and board of trustees must be Baptists, but the management is unsectarian. In 1884 there were 20 professors and instructors, and 248 students. The library, kept in a fire-proof building, numbers 62,000 volumes. Besides the university, the city contains two high-schools, the Friends' Yearly-Meeting Boarding-School*~~

~~*(1819), the Roman Catholic Academy of the Sacred Heart of Jesus (1873), the Athenzeum (1836) with a library of over 43,000 volumes, the Providence Public Library with nearly 32,000 volumes, the Rhode Island Historical Society (1822, present building 1844), the Franklin Society (1823) for the furtherance of the natural sciences and mechanic arts, and many other educational institutions. The Butler Hospital for the insane (1844-47), which takes its name from Cyrus Butler, the principal subscriber, occupies several handsome buildings on the west bank of Seekonk river, capable of accommodating about 200 patients and possessing 140 acres of ground. Dexter Asylum (1827) for the poor, with 39 acres, the bequest of Mr Ebenezer Knight Dexter, receives about 125 inmates; and the Rhode Island Hospital (1863-68), erected at a cost of $450,000, has about 80 patients. Other institutions of a benevolent character are a home for aged men, a home for aged women, a Roman Catholic orphan asylum (1860), and dispensaries. The State prison and county jail used to stand on the north side of the Cove; but the State prison, the workhouse, the house of correction, the almshouse, and the State hospital for the insane are now clustered together at the State farm in Cranston, about 3 miles from the city line. The State house, which dates from 1762, is a plain brick building; but the city-hall, erected about 1878-79, at a cost of more than $1,000,000, is one of the finest buildings of its kind in New England. In front of it is a soldiers' and sailors' monument designed by Randolph Rogers and erected (1871) by the State in memory of 1741 citizens who fell in the civil war. Worthy of note also are the county court-house (1877), the Providence opera-house (1871), the Butler Exchange (1872), the arcade (1828), which runs 225 feet between Westminster and Wey bosset Street, with a width of 80 feet. Among the principal churches are a new cathedral (1878-85), St Stephen's Episcopal, the First Baptist, erected in 1775, and St Joseph's and St Mary's Roman Catholic. At one time Providence carried on a good trade with China and the East Indies ; but its shipping interests, though still considerable,! are now mainly absorbed by the coasting-trade, and altogether it has become rather a manufacturing than a commercial centre. In the production of gold jewellery it is one of the leading cities in the United States, and the Gorham silver factory alone employs 560 workmen. Cotton, wool, and iron are all worked up on the most extensive scale into a vast variety of forms—*~~

~~1 The merchandise imported into the district of Providence was valued at $537,800 in 1884, and the imports at $25,296; 59 vessels (10,864 tons) entered from foreign ports, and 41 (5012 tons) cleared.~~

~~PRO—P RO~~

~~yarn, calico, braids, laces, broad-cloth, worsteds, steam- engines, rifles, sewing machines, boilers, screws, hinges, dc. Among the larger companies are the Providence Tool Company (1500 workmen), the Corliss steam-engine works, the Providence Steam-engine Company, the Allen Fire Department Supply Company, Perry Davis's pain-killer manufactory, &c. Altogether there are about one hundred cotton mills and sixty wool mills. In 1880 the value of the cotton products was $2,250,273, of the wool products and worsted goods $7,139,947, and of the iron castings, machinery, &c., $4,757,401. The growth of the city in population is shown by the following figures :—~~

~~1708……1,446 1810……10,071 1850… 41,513 1730……8,916 1820……11,745 1860… 50,666~~

~~1774……4,321 1880……16886 Te70…… 68,904 1800……7,614 1840……23,172 — 1880……104,857~~

~~According to the registrar's returns the total for 1885 may be estimated at 121,000. From 1855 to 1883 in. clusive there has been an average of one birth in 36°37 of the population, one person married in 44-21, and one death in 50°89. 'The value of real estate in 1883 was $91,642,100; that of personal estate $30,854,400. The municipal revenue was $3,417,593, the expenditure $3,196,382, and the debt $8,142,223. .~~

~~Providence was founded and named by Roger Williams the religious reformer, who, having been expelled from Massachusetts in 1636, landed first at What Cheer Rock near the mouth of Seekonk river and settled some time after at the head of Providence river, where he obtained a grant of gronnd from the Sachem Canonicus. The town united with others in applying for and re- ceiving a charter from the Parliamentary Government in 1643-44. It was partially burned in King Philip's war in 1675. In 1788 De Warville describes it as decayed. A south-easterly storm in Sep- tember~~

~~*1815 raised the water in the harbour 12 feet above the usual spring-tide level and did great damage. The city charter dates from 1832. (W. E. F.)*~~

~~*PROVINCE (provincia, etymology uncertain), in the Roman sense, may be defined as the department or sphere of duty assigned to one of the higher magistrates (the con- suls and praetors).? But when, with the spread of the Roman arms, the government of conquered countries grew to be one of the most important duties of the higher magistrates, the term province, from designating the govern- ment of a conquered country as one particular duty of a Roman magistrate, came to be used generally as a designa- tion of the country itself. It is to province in the sense of a subject territory lying outside of Italy and governed by Roman magistrates that the following remarks will apply. As distinguished from Italy, the provinces paid tribute to Rome, for, at least from the time of the Gracchi, it was a recognized constitutional principle that the pro- vinces were the estates of the Roman people and were to be managed for its benefit. Under the republic the con- stitution of a province was drawn up by the victorious Roman general assisted by ten commissioners appointed by the senate from its own body, and the province was henceforth governed on the lines laid down in this con- stitution or charter (lex provinciz). For administrative purposes the province was divided into districts, each with its capital, the magistrates and council of which were responsible for the collection of the district taxes. For judicial purposes the province was divided into circuits (conventus), and in the chief town of each circuit the governor of the province regularly held assizes.*~~

~~*Cities taken by the sword were destroyed, and their lands were turned into Roman domains and were let out by the censors at Rome to private persons, who undertook to pay a certain proportion of the produce. Royal domains, such as those of Syracuse, Macedonia, Pergamum,*~~

- ~~*Only those magistrates who had imperium (military power) had a province. When the province of a questor is mentioned it refers to the province of the consul or pretor to whom the questor is subor- dinate. In familiar language any business was called a province,*~~

~~*PwOV IAC E*~~

~~*Bithynia, and Cyrene, were also confiscated. On the other hand communities which surrendered without offering an obstinate resistance were usually allowed to retain their personal freedom and private property, and their chief town was left in the enjoyment of its territory and civil rights, but all the lands were subjected to a tax, consisting either of a payment in kind (vectigal) or of a fixed sum of money (tributum, stipendium), and in some cases a custom-duty (portorium) was levied. It is to this latter class of com- munities (the civitates vectigales or stipendiariz) that the large majority of the provincial states belonged. In a better position were those states whose freedom was guaranteed by Rome on the ground of old alliances or special loyalty. Their freedom was recognized either by a treaty or by a decree of the Roman people or senate. As a decree of the people or senate could at any time be recalled, the position of the free states without a treaty was more precarious than that of the treaty states (civtates federatx). The latter, though not allowed to meddle in foreign politics, enjoyed a certain amount of internal freedom, retained their lands, paid no taxes, and were bound to render those services only which were expressly stipu- lated for in the original treaty, such as furnishing ships and troops, supplying corn at a certain price, and receiving Roman officials and soldiers en route. Amongst these treaty states were Massilia (Marseilles), Athens, Rhodes, and Tyre. The privileges of the free but not treaty states were somewhat similar, but, as stated, more precarious. All political distinctions, save that between slave and freeman, disappeared when Caracalla bestowed the Roman franchise on the whole empire.*~~

~~*Provincial Diets.—Apart from the government by Roman officials, every province appears to have had, at least under the empire, a provincial assembly or diet of its own (con- cilium or commune), and these diets are interesting as the first attempts at representative assemblies. The diet met annually, and was composed of deputies (legatz) from the provincial districts. It arranged for the celebration of religious rites and games, especially (under the empire) for the worship of the emperor, the neglect of which was severely punished. 'The actual celebration was under the conduct of the high priest of the province, a person of much dignity and importance, perhaps the forerunner of the Christian bishop. The diet also decreed the erection of statues and monuments; it passed votes of thanks to*~~

~~the outgoing governor, or forwarded complaints against him to Rome; and it had the right of sending embassies direct to the senate or the emperor.~~

~~The Provincial Governor.—The provinces were administered by governors sent direct from Rome, who held office for a year. From the formation of the first provinces in 227 3.c. down to the time of Sulla (82 B.c.) the governors were preetors (see PrR#Tor); from the time of Sulla to that of Augustus the preetors remained in Rome during their year of office, and at the end of it assumed the government ofa province with the title of propretor. This applies, however, only to provinces which were in a settled state and could consequently be administered without a large military force. A province which was the seat of war, or was at least in a disturbed state, was committed to the care either of one of the consuls for the year or of a commander specially appointed for the purpose with the title of proconsul, who might be one of the consuls of the pre- ceding or of a previous year, or else a former pretor, or even, in rare eases, a private individual who had held neither consulship nor pretorship. Thus the distinction between consular (or pro- consular) and pretorial (or propretorial) provinces varied from year to year with the military exigencies of different parts of the empire. At the close of the republic, however, we find even such a peaceful province as Asia administered by a proconsul. In the earlier period of the republic the senate either before or after the elections determined which provinces were to be governed by con- suls and which by pretors, and after their election the consuls arranged between themselves by lot or otherwise which of the provinces nominated by the senate each should have, and similarly with the pretors. But in order to guard against partiality the Sempronian law of 123 B.c. provided that the senate should yearly*

~~nominate the two consular provinces before the election of the consuls, and that the consuls should after their election but before their entry on office arrange between themselves which of the two provinces each should have. The Pompeian law of 53 B.c. enacted that no one should hold the governorship of a province till at least five years after his consulship or pretorship. This law was repealed by Cesar after the battle of Pharsalia, but was re-enacted under Augustus ; it severed the connexion which had~~

~~*previously existed between an urban magistracy and the governorship of a province, and turned the latter, from the mere prolongation of a Roman magistracy, into an independent office. Like magistracies at Rome a provincial governorship was regularly held for one year; but, unlike them, it could be prolonged, formerly by a vote of the people, later by a decree of the senate. The Julian law of Cesar (46 B.c.) enacted that the governorship of a consular province should be held for two, that of a pretorian province for one year. The necessary supplies of men and money were voted to the governor by the senate. His staff consisted of one or more lieu- tenants (legati), a questor, and numerous subordinates. The lieu- tenants were nominated by the senate from men of senatorial rank ; if they proved incompetent, the governor dismissed them ; if they showed ability, he entrusted them with military or judicial functions. As to the questor, see QumsTor. Besides these the governor took with him from Rome a number of young men of the upper classes to assist him in the government. These were known as the companions (comites) or suite of the governor, some- times, but incorrectly, as the preetorian cohort (see PRETORIANS). These members of his suite were chosen by the governor himself, who was responsible for them, but they were maintained at the expense of the state, and under the empire received regular pay. ln addition there was a crowd of beadles, clerks, couriers, criers, doctors, dragomans, &c., not to speak of freedmen and slaves for the personal service of the governor. Under the republic the governor was not allowed to take his wife with him to his province ; under the empire he might do so, but he was answerable for her conduct. Before setting out for his province the governor, clad in the purple military robe of his office, offered sacrifice on the Capitol ; then immediately after receiving the ¢mperium or military command he marched out of the city (for the ¢mperium could only be exercised outside of Rome and was forfeited by staying in the city), preceded by his sergeants (lictores), and accompanied by his suite. He was bound to travel direct to his province; the means of transport were supplied partly by the state, partly by the pro- vinces through which he travelled. His year of office began from the day he set foot in his province, but the time of arrival varied with the length and difficulty of the route. In the hands of the governor all powers military and civil were united. He commanded all the troops in the province, and had power to raise levies of Roman citizens as well as of provincials, and to make requisitions of war material. He possessed both*~~

~~criminal and civil jurisdiction ; as criminal judge he had the power of life and death, and from his sentence none but Roman citizens could appeal; as civil judge he was guided partly by the charter of the province (lex provincie), partly by the edict which it was customary for him to issue before his entrance on office (compare PRmToR), partly by the original laws of the country so far as their validity was acknowledged by the charter or by the governor's own edict. Under the empire Gaius wrote a commentary on the provincial edict, and it is usually supposed that this was a general edict drawn up for use in all the provinces and superseding all separate edicts for the different pro- vinces. Mommsen, however, is of opinion that Gaius only com- mented on the edict of a particular province.~~

~~Condition of the Provinces under the Republic.—Under the republic the Roman people regarded the provinces as so many estates from which they were to derive revenue. 'The weal or woe of the provincials was of no moment, but the development of the material resources of the provinces was of great moment. Hence agriculture and commerce were encouraged, settlements were made, roads and aqueducts were constructed ; in short, the Roman aimed at exploiting his empire by a system of prudent economy as far as possible removed from the blind rapacity which has turned the empire of the Turk from a garden into a wilderness. But the Roman governors were too apt to look on their provinces as their own peculiar prey ; they had usually bought their way to office at vast expense, and they now sought in the provinces the means of reimbursing themselves for the expenditure they had incurred at Rome. The annual change of governor was thus a frightful calamity to the provincials, for every year brought a repetition of the same extravagant demands to be met by the same or, as the province became exhausted, still heavier sacrifices. Redress was to be had originally by a complaint to the senate; after 149 B.c. there was a regular court established at Rome for thie trial of cases of oppression (repetunde) by provincial governors. But, even when after much trouble and expense the provincials had arraigned their oppressor, it was difficult to secure his condemnation at the hands of juries composed (as they usually were) of men who had a fellow-feeling for the offender because they had themselves com-~~

mitted or hoped for means of committing similar offences. Besides the governor, two classes of harpies joined in wringing the utter- most farthing from the unhappy provincials. These were the publicans or farmers of the taxes, and the money-lenders (negott- atores), who supplied a temporary accommodation at ruinous rates of interest. Both these classes were recruited from the ranks of the Roman knights, and, since from the legislation of Caius Gracchus (122 B.c.) the juries were drawn at first exclusively and after Sulla's time (81 B.c.) partially from the knightly order, the provincial governor could not check the excesses of those blood-suckers without risking a condemnation at the hands of their brethren. Accordingly he generally made common cause with them, backing their exactions when needful by military force.

The Provinces under the Emptre.—Under the empire the pro- H pelt cine great part of the 13th-cen tury line of fortifica-

vinces fared much better. The monarchy tended to obliterate the

distinction between Romans and provincials by reducing both to a |

common level of subjection to the emperor, who meted out equal justice to all his subjects. The first centuries of our era were pro- bably for some of the countries included in the Roman empire the happiest in their history ; Gibbon indeed fixed on the period from the death of Domitian to the accession of Commodus (96-180 A.D.) as the happiest age of the world. ' ; :

Augustus, in 27 B.c., divided the provinces into imperial and senatorial. Those which, from their proximity to the frontier or the turbulance of their population, required the presence of an army were placed under the direct control of the emperor; those which needed no troops were left to be administered by the senate. (1) The senatorial provinces were ruled by an annual governor as under the republic. Of these provinces Augustus ordained that Africa and Asia should be consular, the rest pretorian; but all the governors of the senatorial provinces were now called proconsuls. Their powers and dignities were much the same as they had been under the republic, except that they had how no troops, or only a handful to maintain order. (2) The imperial provinces were governed by imperial lieutenants (legatt Cxsaris), who were nominated by the emperor and held office at his

~~*pleasure; all of them had the power of the sword (jus gladii). For the administration of the finances these lieu- tenants had procurators under them, while the governors of the senatorial provinces continued to have questors as under the republic. Another class of imperial provinces consisted of those which from the physical nature of the country (as the Alpine districts) or the backward state of civilization (as Mauretania and Thrace) or the stubborn character of the people (as Judzea and igypt) were not adapted to receive a regular provincial constitu- tion. These were regarded as domains of the emperor, and were managed by a procurator (in the case of Egypt by a prefect, see PR&FECT) nominated by and responsible to the emperor.*~~

~~*Under the empire all provincial governors received a fixed salary. Complaints against them were brought before the senate, and the accusers were allowed a senator to act as their advocate. The lengthened periods during which the governors, at Icast in the imperial provinces, held office, together with the oversight exer- cised by the emperor, alleviated materially the position of the provincials under the empire. In order to keep himself well informed of what was passing in the empire, Augustus established a post whereby official despatches were forwarded by couriers and yofficial persons were conveyed by coaches. The post, however, was only for the use of the Government; no private person was allowed, unless by an exceptional concession, to avail himself of it. (J. G. FR.)*~~

~~*_PROVINS, a town of France, at the head of an arron- dissement of the department of Seine-et-Marne, at the junction of the Durtain with the Voulzie (an affluent of the Seine), 59 miles south-east of Paris by a branch rail-*~~

~~*PhRO—P RO*~~

~~*way which rejoins the main line from Paris to Belfort at Longueville (4 miles from Provins). While the town derives a certain reputation from its mineral waters (which contain iron, lime, and carbonic acid, and are used for bathing and drinking), and is also known from its trade in roses (incorrectly called Provence roses) for certain minor industries (such as the making of "conserves" and colouring bonbons), a far higher interest attaches to it as a place which during the Middle Ages enjoyed great pros-*~~

~~*perity and still preserves, in proof of its former import ance, a number of historical monuments. There still*~~

~~*tions, which makes a circuit of about 4 miles, encloses an area of about 300 acres, is strengthened at intervals by towers, generally round, and now, being bordered with fine trees, forms the principal promenade of the town. The large tower, situated within this line and variously known as the king's, Cesar's, or the prisoners' tower, is one of the most curious of the 12th-century keeps now extant.*~~

~~*|The base is surrounded by a thick mound of masonry added by the English in the 15th century when they were*~~

~~*masters of the town. The tower serves as steeple to the church of St Quiriace, which, dating its foundation from the 12th century, presents some exquisite features and preserves among its treasures the pontifical ornaments of St Edmund of Canterbury. The palace of the counts of Champagne, some fragments of which also belong to the 12th century, is occupied by the communal college. The old tithe-barn is a strange erection of the 13th century with noteworthy fireplaces, windows, and vaulting. Vari-ous portions of the church of St Ayoul date from the llth, 13th, 14th, and 16th centuries respectively ; but it is in a state of great dilapidation, and part of it is used as a fodder-store. Ste Croix belongs partially to the 13th century. On Mont Ste Catherine opposite Provins the general hospital occupies the site of an old convent of St Clare, of which there remains a cloister of the 13th century. The population of the town in 1881 was 6949.*~~

~~*Provins begins to figure in history in the 9th century. Passing from the counts of Vermandois to the counts of Champagne it rapidly attained a high degree of prosperity. Its fairs, attended by traders from all parts of Europe, were of as much account as those of Beaucaire. They were held twice a year, in spring and*~~

~~*| autumn, and fixed the price of provisions for the intervening months.*~~

~~*In the 18th century the population of the town is said to have reached 60,000 ; but the plague of 1848 and the famine of 1349 proved exceedingly disastrous. The War of the Hundred Years, during which Provins was*~~

~~*captured and recaptured, completed the ruin of thé unfortunate town. During tle religious wars it sided with the Catholic party and the League, and Henry IY. obtained possession of it in 1592 only after thirteen days' siege. See Felix Bourquelot, Wistoire de Provins, 2 vols., 1840.*~~

~~*PROVOST. See BorouciI and MunIcIPALity, also CATHIEDRAL and UNIVERSITIES, PROXY. See Proctor.*~~

~~*END OF VOLUME NINETEENTH.*~~

~~*So eeeeeeeeeSeeeesSFs*~~

~~*PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & ZR.*~~

~~*CLARK, EDINBURGH.*~~

~~*worst OS WV NM*~~

~~*Sot {Susu*~~

~~*i WLYSNP R DISSMAT "PISSTET JO Syrury Pua SILT => "[U02jodnyy jo 7UR OY ua Punjog*~~

~~*yuepes ysaqpob sy po puyjoy jo wophuy — rrr DIO NYNT YIM*~~

~~*UOTUN SPL BLOG PUDIOT JO wuophury*~~

~~*CNVTOd! #0 WOCDNIM*~~

~~*sae*~~

~~*lA*~~

~~*a xy*~~

~~†~~

~~'┼┼~~

†

÷

;

4a

I

ALP TI

Prates, Vout. XIX.—Dz1Rections To BINDER.

When insertion throughout the text is desired, the Plates to be placed opposite

the following pages :—

£

Plate

—_ OY SroqsSrug} 7 cal ears ae ~ y

“XIX

“TOA

886

mnitted or hoped for means of committing similar offences. Besides the governor, two classes of harpies joined in wringing the utter- most farthing from the unhappy provincials. These were the publicans or farmers of the taxes, and the money-lenders (negoti- atores), who supplied a temporary accommodation at ruinous rates of interest. Both these classes were recruited from the ranks of the Roman knights, and, since from the legislation of Caius Gracchus (122 3.c.) the juries were drawn at first exclusively and after Sulla’s time (81 B.c.) partially from the knightly order,

the provincial governor could not check the excesses of those blood-suckers without risking a condemnation at the hands of their brethren. Accordingly he generally made common cause with them, backing their exactions when needful by military force.

The Provinces under the Empire.—Under the empire the pro- vinces fared much better. The monarchy tended to obliterate the distinction between Romans and provincials by reducing both to a common level of subjection to the emperor, who meted out equal justice to all his subjects. The first centuries of our era were pro- bably for some of the countries included in the Roman empire the happiest in their history ; Gibbon indeed fixed on the period from the death of Domitian to the accession of Commodus (96-180 A.D.) as the happiest age of the world.

Augustus, in 27 B.c., divided the provinces into imperial and senatorial. Those whichyefrom their proximity to the frontier or the turbulance of their population, required the presence of an

army were placed under the direct control of the emperor; those which neodad na teanns oe Toe im a

= awewwevary vv avait LMselt of aus (JG. FR.)

PROVINS, a town of France, at the head of an arron- dissement of the department of Seine-et-Marne, at the Junction of the Durtain with the Voulzie (an affluent of the Seine), 59 miles south-east of Paris by a branch rail-

t

PRO—PLRO

way which rejoins the main line from Paris to Belfort at Longueville (4 miles from Provins). While the town derives a certain reputation from its mineral waters (which contain iron, lime, and carbonic acid, and are used for bathing and drinking), and is also known from its trade in roses (incorrectly called Provence roses) for certain minor industries (such as the making of " conserves" and colouring bonbons), a far higher interest

~~*attaches to it as a place which during the Middle Ages enjoyed great pros- perity and still preserves, in proof of its former import: ance, a number of historical monuments. There still remains a great part of the 13th-century line of fortifica- tions, which makes a circuit of about 4 miles, encloses an area of about 300 acres, is strengthened at intervals by towers, generally round, and now, being bordered with fine trees, forms the principal promenade of the town. 'The large tower, situated within this line and variously known as the king's, Ceesar's, or the prisoners' tower, is one of the most curious of the 12th-century keeps now extant. The base is surrounded by a thick mound of masonry added bv'the-Mnolish in tha TAtIIh ~·-~1——- 1 =*~~

~~*anyeeeomtnrortunate town. During the religious wars it sided with the Catholic party and the League, and Henry IV. obtained possession of it in 1592 only after thirteen days' siege.*~~

~~*See Felix Bourquelot, Histotre de Provins, 2 vols., 1840.*~~

~~*PROVOST. See Borover and Monicipatity, also CATHEDRAL and Universirttizs. PROXY. See Procror.*~~

~~*END OF VOLUME NINETEENTH.*~~

~~*eee PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH*~~

~~*unsUyOS HV A*~~

~~*"NOWIG2 HININ "VOINNVHYE VIGHdOTIAING*~~

~~*;uuDexy Jog epupsuoy*~~

~~*oy*~~

~~+~~

~~*I*~~

~~*woosow ?*~~

~~*9*~~

~~*Sot {sysuy*~~

~~*< DLQSNL R DISSTIAT TASSTYT JO SPRUEN YUP BILT — “p uoxpodny jo vum ey) un puog | quays ysapoul spy pumjoy jo wopbhuy*~~

~~*PU DNY IVT YIM*~~

~~*UOTUN SPL BLOPAG PUDIOT JO wmopbhury*~~

~~*CAV TOd #0 WOON*~~

~~*St*~~

~~*TALVTd*~~

~~*CNV 10d*~~

~~*“XIX “TOA*~~

~~*VOL. XIX.*~~

~~*a | ” GREEMNLANY Z*~~

~~*CM? Clintock — Cornwall 1 SS rary eukemee be*~~

~~*Cormpalh ‘aMelwille gr*~~

~~*LAE*~~

~~*8*~~

~~*ENCYCLOPAGIA BRITANE*~~

~~*NI*~~

~~*PLATE I.*~~

~~*ia*~~

~~Ves~~

~~W.& AY Johnewn~~

~~®~~

~~a~~

~~VOL. XIX. ~ : ——~~

~~q 140 150 160 170 bse Leh | ay | ou : F ——= Morell. a} 30 “Lots Wife orkticade Oro “ve i Curd I 5 or Byer — * Midway I.~~

~~amnbier BR * PearL& Hames R~~

~~Farallon de Paja ~Urracas |. . Assumptions.~~

~~want igator Sh. Tinian pee ot » Alig ator Sh Stee Taongi t®” oRotal. Se~~

~~Galvex BK, iGuayan I. pete = Sl4Rosa Rt~~

~~| V Maryl. L MeKeanl. Birniet + Enderbury I. PHENIX ISLes “Pheniel Gardnerl- Ayr “Sydney 1. arnanea Niutao | ELLICE a Vaigupu 7 | hcutetau* a cotta 8 Atatin by laua, L—. Wrhkulaelae Nukunono~ .Fakaoto ¢ pag a oS sc — TOKELAU Isis eapukeMh ty | (apices Indep endacoi— 3 Maja . Bellonals| — Rennell. Ti 3 ate -Olosenga arg ; — vom ps se - LousaBle | Adolph ~~ ~Ge jeltermosa “Wess, i ~~ PandoraR? Eagleston.Rf> Spay) Sn aiseBee Gee. Tarn Be see Vv GULF oF S,.. Rotuma* aad olalaRookhBk pe tt mmeres | | *SUsroote Kyland! enor Wallisl®: Sawaiixy Goat + = Manono S>T813 ~ ff sic~~

~~2 :~~

~~a] cdo Ths~~

~~3 =~~

~~“MtLleod Bk | } Ha a \ Worfolkd. tt 304 —— Philip? Uk -Raoul or Sunday I == | | = yLord Howell. | “B Pyramid }~~

~~| Aucle q | | NORTH \y#~~

~~| ISLAND aS) x~~

~~Wew Plymo: er. |~~

~~40}~~

~~iy~~

~~= 4 =~~

~~erat ei NEW dee~~

~~Neds~~

~~Memot the dnthrop! Soe of Washington U.S.A, 150 Long. E.of Greenwich 160~~

~~170 Long. W. of Gree:~~

~~ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITAMEG~~

~~PLATE [I~~

~~130 120 no 100~~

~~oO~~

~~20~~

~~Malays &c. of Indian Archipela,~~

~~New Zealand~~

~~Malagasy niigration~~

~~i~~

~~Trruption froin)~~

~~*Asiatic Continent ~ autroducing Sanscrit*~~

~~*un certlernent*~~

~~*Sawaiori noigration*~~

~~*Tree of SAWAIORI, MALAGASY, TARAPON & MALAY RACES.*~~

~~*rchipelago*~~

~~*_ sabe = > :*~~

~~*+ 4 10*~~

†

~~*a 20 | j — "Tropic of Capricom eSala-y Gomer eR ne Easter I. : ee ae 4 = 30 ~, i Ss,*~~

~~*5%*~~

~~*| | hs =e ' 40 Reference to Physical Characteristics Reference to Ethnological Divisions q — oe ASAT ES) — via | L Within the lower and middle lines crossing the map from N.Wto Sawaiort or Brown Polynesians ——— ~ - — - — Pink SE. are situated all the Volcanic Islands of Polynesia, with Taraporn. or Micronesians . . Green the exception of the Hawatian & Marquesan archipelagoes. Papuans or Melanesians… ee Yellow Il Within the middle and upper lines lie all the Atolls Mi ee nee sation L by Pink Bands Ill. Elevated. (oral Islands, in three groups near the southern edge of the voleanio ridge, are enclosed within « dotted line. is ss ——— — > — rol 'seh. 160 150 140 130 120 n0 100 = W.& AK Johnston*~~

~~*t*~~

~~*jaANPA NINTH EDITION.*~~

~~*VOL. XIX" : PORTUGAL PLATE IV*~~

~~*ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.*~~

~~° i a a a~~

~~,—~~

~~i, ve Sarg hs tame J 7~~

~~VOL. XIX. POTTERY PLATE V~~

~~KYLIX FROM CAPUA~~

~~AMPHORA COMPLETE~~

~~AMPHORA FROM CAMIRUS, RHODES (THETIS ANB PELEUS.)~~

~~ENCYCLOPADIA 2ITANNICA. NINTH EDITION~~

~~7 | ae a Pe~~

~~:~~

~~‘ rey P ° — i: ‘~~

~~, ; :~~

~~x~~

-

~~of ke~~

~~&~~

~~‘ q~~

-

~~a~~

~~, ‘ ‘ ; .~~

~~‘ = ’ S,~~

~~ANON ee EAN YN AM~~

~~bd Leda,~~

~~AGS~~

~~PAG~~

~~sa yet~~

~~-~~

~~hed wees~~

Vol 20 (PRU-ROS)

Britannica 9th

~ erry x Prong he

ALE 12 tN eel al Y : terrcere sre CAL ES 3,5 8 vs walhitrsy eds

National Library of Scotlan

TIME iM Wt I

iia

he

ae

7

: >

47

Pa

bod

-.

— i

i (

Encyclopedia Britannica.—Vol. XX.

> PRINCIPAL CONTENTS.

RADIATION. Prof. P. G. Tarr. RHODE ISLAND. Ww. E. Forsrer.
ROSSETTI. Tuxopore Warts.

e~

Encyclopedia Britannica.—Vol. XX.

PRUSSIA. J. F. Mureueap. PRUSSIC ACID. Prof. W. Drrrmar. PRYNNE. 8S. Rawson GARpDIner, LL.D., and OSMUND AIRY. PSALMS. Prof. W. Rosertson Smiru, JUIUAID} PSKOFF. P. A. Kroporkine. PSYCHOLOGY. James Warp. PTERODACTYLE. E. T. Newron. PTOLEMY. Prof. G. Jomnston ALLMAN, LL.D., and E. H. Bunzpury. PUBLIC HEALTH. JaAmes Witurams, IB (ChIOs PUFENDORF. Prof. Ernest Nys. PULTENEY. W. P. Courtney. PUNCHINELLO. R. Mortimer WHEELER, PUNJAB. Gen. R. Mactaean, R.E. PURCELL. W. 8S. Rockstro. PUSEY. Rev. Epwin Hatceu, D.D. PYM. S. Rawson Garpiner, LL.D. PYRAMID. W. M. F. Perris. PYRENEES. Gerorce G. CuisHomm. PYROMETER. W. N. Suaw. PYROTECHNY. Orme Masson, M.D., D.Se. PYTHAGORAS—Pritosorny. Prof. ANDREW SETH. Geometry. Prof.G. J. AnuMAN, LL.D. PYTHEAS. E. H. Bunsury. QUAIL. Prof. ALFRED Nrewron. QUAKERS. Rt. Hon. Sir Epwanrp Fry. QUARANTINE. Cuas. Crricuton, M.D. QUATERNIONS. Prof. P. G. Tarr. QUEBEC. Grorer Stewart, Jun. QUEENSLAND. James Bonwicx. QUESNAY. J. K. Ineram, LL.D. QUEVEDO. A. Moret- FATIO. QUININE. E. M. Hormss. QUINTILIAN. J. S. Rez, D. Litt. RABBI. S. M. ScuriiER- Saini ssy, Ph.D. RABELAIS. Groresr SAINTSBURY. RABIES. GrorceE Fiemine, LL.D. RACINE. Grorcer SAINTSBURY. RACKETS. H. F. Wirkryson, RADIATION. Prof. P. G. Parr.

PRINCIPAL CONTENTS. RAILWAY. D. Kinwzar Crank, C.E.;

Prof. A. T. Hapiey; A. M. Wenuine- Ton, C.E.; and S. Wrient Dunnine.

RAJPUTANA. W. T. Ronson.

RALEIGH. S. Rawson GARDINER.

RAPHAEL. J. Henry Mippieron.

RATIONALISM. Rev. J. F. Surru.

RAVENNA. Tuomas Honexin.

RAY. A.LBert GUNTHER, M.D., Ph.D.

RAY, JOHN. Prof. D'Arcy W. THOMP- SON,

READE. Prof. W. Minto.

REAL ESTATE. James WiLniAmMs.

RECORDS.

RED SEA. H. R. Mitt.

REFORMATION. J. BAss MuLLINGER.

REFORMATORY. J. E. Davis.

REGISTRATION. James WiLuiAMs and J. E. Davis.

REID. Prof. ANDREW SETH.

REISKE. Prof. Jun. WeLLHAuseEn, Ph.D,

RELICS. Rev. J. G. Cazenove, D.D.

RELIGIONS. Prof. C. P. Tizus.

REMBRANDT. J. F. Wuirr.

RENAISSANCE. J. A. Symonps.

RENI. W. M. Rossetry.

RENNELL. Col. Yuus, C.B.

REPORTING. CHaAar.es Cooper.

REPRODUCTION—

ANIMAL. PATRICK GEDDES. VEGETABLE. SYDNEY HowArp VINEs.

REPTILES. Arsert Ginruer, M.D., Ph.D., and St Grorgse Mrvarv, M. De Ph. D.

RESPIRATION. Prof. ArtauR GAMGER. REUNION. H. A. Wessrer. REUTER. JAmes Sims. REVELATION, BOOK OF. Prof. ApouF HARNAOK. REYNOLDS. Joun M. Gray. RHETORIC. Prof. R. C. Jess, LL.D. RHEUMATISM. J. O. AFFLECK, M.D. RHINE. J. F. Murrueap. RHINOCEROS. W. H. Fiower, LL.D. RHODE ISLAND. Ww. E. Forsrsr.

RHODES. E. H. Bunnury.

RICARDO. J. K. Incram, LL.D.

RICHARD I.—III. G. W. Proruero,

RICHARDSON. Prof. W. Minvro.

RIEMANN, Prof. GrorGEt CurystTAt.

RIMINI. Prof. PasquaLe VILLAR.

RIO DE JANEIRO. H. A. Wezstrr.

RIOT. JAMES WILLIAMS.

RIPLEY. E. L. BurtincaMrn.

RIVER ENGINEERING. L. F. Vernon- Harcourt, C.E.

ROADS AND STREETS. Tuomas Cop- RINGTON, C.E.

ROBERT THE BRUCE, Ainnas J. G. Mackay, LL.D.

ROBERTSON, F. W. Rev. Marous Dons, D.D.

ROBERTSON, WILLIAM. J, Correr Morrison.

ROBESPIERRE. H. Morse SrrepHens.

ROBIN HOOD. Prof. J. Westry Hates.

RODNEY. G. F. Hoorer.

ROLAND. Tuomas Suaw, LL.B.

ROLAND, LEGEND OF. T. A. Arcier.

ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH. FP: L. CONNELLAN.

ROMANCE. H.R. Tepprr and MicHarn KERNEY.

ROMANCE LANGUAGES. Prof. Jonan Srorm, LL.D.

ROMAN LAW. Prof. James Muirweap, LL.D.

ROMAN LITERATURE. Prof. W. Y. SELLAR, LL.D.

ROMANS, EPISTLE TO THE. Prof. E. ScirURER.

ROME—

HIsToRY—ANCIENT. MEDIA2VAL AND RECENT. VILLARI.
TorpoGRAPHY AND ARcHmOoLOaY. J.

Henry MIDDLETON.

ROPE. James Paton.

ROSA. W. M. Rossertt.

ROSSETTI. TuEoporre Warts.

H. F. PELHAM. eno tele

ey a s—- ro rai – “an ee ae + ri

e = 7 weit —. : ‘ oe bee a Tat Se Nena a. at, t vis mn “) “an iy a os ; ‘dint :
A : a : 4 – _ , > ” ; ise a oo6 Caw Fj wel, eg ‘

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

4

THE

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

A

DICTIONARY

OF

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XxX

ZNOCATS

7

a ty (AR WY? } LA oe

Re ee

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXVI

[All Rights reserved. |

- =) — aah

ENCYCLOPADIA

BRITANNICA.

Pa Ph rv

RUDENTIUS, Avretivs CLEMENS, a Christian verse- writer, apparently a native of Spain, who flourished during the latter half of the 4th century and in the begin- ning of the 5th. According to the meagre and vague auto-biographical notices given by himself in the preface to his poems he was born in the year 348, and, after receiving a liberal education, practised at the bar and subsequently held judicial office in two important cities. At the time of the publication of his poems in 405 he held from the emperor a high military appointment at court. Of his subsequent history nothing is known. ‘

His extant works, besides the preface already referred to and an epilogue, are the following :—(1) Cathemerinon Liber, a scries of twelve hymns (xaOnuepwav tuvGv) in various metres to be repeated or sung at particular periods of the day or seasons of the year ; (2) Apotheosis, a poem of 1085 hexameter verses on the divinity of Christ ; (3) Hamartigenia (967 hexameter verses) on the origin of evil and sin ; (4) Psyehomaehia, or the conflict between virtue and vice for the soul (915 hexameter verses) ; (5) Contra Synumachwn, two books, of 658 and 1131 hexameter verses respectively, directed against the petition of Symmachus to the emperor for the restora- tion of the altar and statue of Victory which Gratian had cast down ; (6) Peristephanon Liber, fourteen poems in various metres, in honour of certain saints who had won the crown of martyrdom (hence the name, repli orepdvwv),—these, which are often vigorous and graphic, are generally considered to show Prudentius at his best ; (7) Diptyehon or Dittoehxon, a scries of forty-nine hexameter tetrastichs on various events and characters mentioned in Scripture. The editio princeps appeared at Deventer in 1472; among modern editions may be named those of Faustus Arevalus (2 vols., Rome, 1788-89), Obbarius (Tiibingen, 1845), and Dressel (Leipsic, 1860).

PRUD’HON, Pierre (1758-1823), French painter, born at Cluny on the 4th of April 1758, was the third son of a mason. The monks of the abbey undertook his education. The paintings which decorated the monastery excited his emulation, and by the aid of Moreau, bishop of Macon, he was placed with Devosges, director of the art school at Dijon. In 1778 Prud’hon

went to Paris armed with a letter to Wille, the celebrated engraver, and three years later he obtained the triennial prize of the states of Burgundy, which enabled him to go to Rome, where he became intimate with Canova. He returned to Paris in 1787, and led for some time a precarious existence, paint- ing portraits and making designs for booksellers. The illustrations which he executed for the Daphnis and Chloe published by Didot brought him into notice, and his Teputation was extended by the success of his decorations

in the Hétel de Landry (now Rothschild), his ceiling paint- ing of Truth and Wisdom for Versailles (Louvre), and of Diana and Jupiter for the Gallery of Antiquities in the Louvre. In 1808 he exhibited Crime pursued by Venge- ance and Justice (Louvre, engraved by Royer), which had been commissioned for the assize courts, and Psyche carried off by Zephyrs (engraved by Massard). These two remark- able compositions brought Prud'hon the Legion of Honour; his merit was widely recognized ; he received innumerable orders, and in 1816 entered the Institute. Easy as to fortune, and consoled for the misery of his marriage by the devoted care of his excellent and charming pupil, Mademoiselle Mayer, Prud'hon's situation seemed enviable; but Mademoiselle Mayer's tragical suicide on 26th May 1821 brought ruin to his home, and two years later (16th February 1823) Prud'hon followed her to the grave. The classic revival which set in towards the close of the 18th century, and of which Louis David was the academic chief, found in Prud'hon an interpreter whose gifts of grace and naiveté tempered by seriousness atoned by the personal charm which they imparted to all he did for the want of severity and correctness in his execution. Mademoiselle Mayer (1778-1821) was his ablest pupil. Her Aban- doned Mother and Happy Mother are in the Louvre. Voiart, Notice historique de la vie et wwvres de P. Prud'hon; Areh. de Vart francais; Qu. de Quincy, Diseowrs prononcé sur la

tombe de Prud'hon, Fev. 1823 ; Eugene Delacroix, Rev. des Dewx Mondes, 1846 ; Charles Blanc, Hist. des peintres francais.

PRUSSIA (Ger., Preussen ; Lat., Borussia), a kingdom Plate J.

of northern Europe and by far the most important mem- ber of the German empire, occupies almost the whole of northern Germany, between 5° 52'

and 22° 53’ E. long. and 49° 7’ and 55° 53’ N. lat. It now forms a tolerably compact mass of territory, with its longest axis from south- west to north-east ; but within the limits just indicated lie the “enclaves” Oldenburg, Mecklenburg, Brunswick, and other small German states, while beyond them it possesses Hohenzollern, in the south of Wiirtemberg, and other “‘exclaves” of minor importance. On the N. Prussia is bounded by the North Sea, Denmark, and the Baltic; on the E. by Russia and Poland; on the 8. by Austrian Silesia, Moravia, Bohemia, Saxony, the Thuringian states, Bavaria, Hesse-Darmstadt, the Rhenish Palatinate, and Lorraine; and on the W. by Luxemburg, Belgium, and XX, — I

2 PR Usst aa

the Netherlands. With the exception of the sea on the north and the mountain-barrier on the south-east, the frontiers are political rather than geographical, a fact that has always been characteristic of Prussia’s limits and that has had considerable influence in determining its history. The Prussian monarchy, with an area of 134,490 square miles, comprises nearly two-thirds of the entire extent of the German empire. Its kernel is the Mark of Branden- burg, round which the rest of the state has been built up gradually, not without costly and exhausting wars. The territory ruled over by the first Hohenzollern elector (1415-40) did not exceed 11,400 square miles, an area that had been quadrupled before the death of the first king in 1713. Frederick the Great left behind him a realm of 75,000 square miles, and the following two monarchs, by their Polish and Westphalian acquisitions, brought it to a size not far short of its present extent (122,000 square miles in 1803). After the disastrous war of 1806 Prussia shrank to something smaller than the kingdom of Frederick the Great (61,000 square miles), and the readjustment of Europe in 1815 still left it short by 14,000 square miles of its extent in 1803. Fully one-fifth of its present area is due to the war of 1866, which added Hanover, Hesse-Cassel, Hesse-Nassau, Schleswig-Holstein, and the city of Frankfort-on-the-Main to the Prussian dominions.

History.

The claims which Prussian history makes upon our attention are based neither upon venerable antiquity nor upon uniformity of origin. ‘The

territorial and political development of the country has taken place wholly within the last thousand years; and the materials out of which it has been built up—marquisates and duchies, ecclesiastical principalities and free imperial cities—are of the most heterogeneous description. The history of Prussia acquires its primary significance from the fact that this state was the instrument by which the political regeneration of Germany was ultimately effected from within, and the unity and coherence of the narrative are best observed when we consider it as a record of the training that fitted the country for this task. This rdle was forced upon Prussia rather by the exigencies of its geographical position than by its title to be racially the most representative German state. The people who have established the power of Germany cannot rank in purity of Teutonic blood with the inhabitants of the central, western, and southern parts of the empire. The conquest of the Slavonic regions that form so great a part of modern Prussia did not occur without a considerable intermingling of race, and Prussia may perhaps be added to the list of great nations that seem to owe their pre-eminence to the happy blending of their composite parts. It is perhaps also worthy of remark that this state, like its great rival, was developed from a marchland of the German empire,—Prussia arising from the North Mark erected against the Wends, and Austria from the East Mark erected against the Hungarians.

In tracing the early development of Prussia three main currents have to be noticed, even ina short sketch like the present, which do not completely unite until the beginning of the 17th century; indeed many writers begin the history of modern Prussia with the accession of the Great Elector in 1640. We have (1) the history of the Mark of Bran- denburg, the true political kernel of the modern state ; (2) the history of the district of Preussen or Prussia, which gave name and regal title to the monarchy; and (3) the history of the family of Hohenzollern, from which sprang the line of vigorous rulers who practically deter- mined the fortunes of the country.

Mark of Brandenburg.—Whether Teutons or Slavs were the earlier inhabitants of the district extending from the

Elbe on the west to the Oder and the Vistula on the east is a question mainly of antiquarian interest and one upon which authorities are not wholly agreed. In the open- ing centuries of the Christian era we find it occupied by Slavonic tribes, whose boundaries reach even to the west of the Elbe, and the conquest and absorption of these by the growing German power form the subject of the early history of Brandenburg. Hand in hand with the territorial extension of the Germans went the spread of Christianity, which, indeed, often preceded the arms of the conquering race. The Slavs to the east of the Elbe were left un- molested down to the foundation of the German monarchy, established by the successors of Charlemagne about the middle of the 9th century. Then ensued the period of formation of the German “marks” or marches, which served at once as bulwarks against the encroachments of external enemies and as nuclei of further conquest.

part of the present province of Saxony, to the west of the

year 930, and formed the beginning of the Prussian state. The same energetic monarch extended his career of con- quest considerably to the east of the Elbe, obtaining more or less firm possession of Priegnitz, Ruppin, and the district round the sources of the Havel, and even carried his arms to the banks of the Oder. His son Otho I. (936- 973) followed in his father’s footsteps and founded the bishoprics of Havelberg and Brandenburg, the latter taking its name from the important Wendish fortress of Bran- nibor. Towards the end of the 10th century, however, the Wendish flood again swept over the whole territory to the east of the Elbe, and the Germans were confined to the original limits of the North Mark. Christianity was rooted out and the bishop of Brandenburg reduced to an episcopus in partibus. The history of the next century and a half is simply a record of a series of desultory struggles between the margraves of the North Mark and the encom- passing Wends, in which the Germans did no more than hold their own on the left bank of the Elbe.

Things begin to grow a little clearer in 1134, when the Albert — emperor Lothair rewarded the services of Albert the the Bean

Bear, a member of the house of Anhalt and one of the most powerful princes of the empire, by investing him with the North Mark. Albert seems to have been a man of great vigour and considerable administrative talent,

and by a mixture of hard fighting and skilful policy he ex- tended his power over the long-lost territories of Priegnitz, Ruppin, the Havelland, and the Zauche. He also shifted the centre of power to the marshy district last-mentioned and changed his title to margrave of Brandenburg. The North Mark henceforth began to be known as the Altmark, or Old Mark, while the territory round Brandenburg was for a short time called the New Mark, but more per- manently the Mittelmark, or Middle Mark. The soil of Albert's new possessions was for the most part poor and unpromising, but he peopled it with industrious colonists from Holland and elsewhere, and began that system of painstaking husbandry and drainage which has gradually converted the sandy plains and marshes of Brandenburg into agricultural land of comparative fertility. The clergy were among his most able assistants in reclaiming waste land and spreading cultivation, and through them Christ- lanity was firmly established among the conquered and Germanized Slavs.

of their ancestral castle of Aschersleben, ruled in Branden- burg for nearly two hundred years ; but none of them seem to have been on a par with him in energy or ability. On the whole, however, they were able to continue in the course marked out by him, and, in spite of the pernicious practice

The North Estab-

Mark of Saxony, corresponding roughly to the northern oe C0} e

Elbe, was established by the emperor Henry I. about the y orth

Albert's descendants, generally known Ascaniai as the Ascanian line from the Latinized form of the name line.

fark. —

HISTORY. |

of dividing the territory among the various scions of the reigning house, the Mark grew steadily in size and import- ance. Before the end of the 12th century the margrave was created arch-chamberlain of the German empire, an office that eventually brought in its train the privilege of belong- ing to

the electoral college. Berlin became a fortified post of the margraves in 1240 and soon began to take the place

rFRUS sf A

3

ruler to checkmate any attempt on the part of the Polish- Lithuanian power, which had just overthrown the Teutonic Order (see p. 6), to push forward the Slavonic settlements to their old frontier on the Eibe. At first Frederick was merely appointed administrator of Brandenburg; but in 1415 he was declared the actual feudal superior of the land, and two years later formally installed as elector.

The Brandenburg to which Frederick succeeded was con- Internal siderably smaller than it had been in the best days of the con- Ascanians, consisting merely of the Altmark, Priegnitz, Mered the Mittelmark, part of the Ukermark, and the territory of jurg, Sternberg. Including his family possessions of Ansbach 11th to

and Baireuth, he ruled over a territory of about 11,400 14th cen-

of Brandenburg as the political centre of the margraviate. Under Waldemar, who succeeded in 1309, the scattered possessions of the house were again gathered into one hand. His sway extended over the Altmark ; Priegnitz, or the Vormark ; the Middle Mark, now extending to the Oder ;

the lands of Krossen and Sternberg beyond the Oder ; ae ry.

yir- wes,

. promise of an annuity.

,

the Ukermark, to the north ; Upper and Lower Lusatia ; and part of Pomerania, with a feudal superiority over the rest. No other German prince of the time had a more ex- tensive territory or one less exposed to imperial interference.

With Waldemar’s death in 1319 the Ascanian line be- came extinct and a period of anarchy began, which lasted for a century and brought the once flourishing country to the verge of annihilation. Its neighbours took advan- tage of its masterless condition to help themselves to the outlying portions of its territory, and its resources ‘were further wasted by intestine conflicts. In 1320 the emperor

I varian Louis the Bavarian took possession of the Mark as a lapsed

fief, and conferred it upon his son Louis, at that time a mere child. But this connexion with the imperial house proved more of a curse than of a blessing: the younger Louis turned out a very incompetent ruler, and Branden- burg became involved in the evils brought upon the Bavarian house by its conflict with the pope. To crown all, a pretender to the name of Waldemar appeared, whose claims to Brandenburg were supported by the new emperor, Charles IV. ; and in 1351 Louis, wearied of his profitless sovereignty, resigned the margraviate to his brothers, Louis the Roman and Otho. The first of these died in 1365, and Otho soon became embroiled with Charles IV. But he was no match for the astute emperor, who in- vaded the Mark, and finally compelled the margrave to resign his territory for a sum of ready money and the The ambition of Charles was directed towards the establishment of a great east German monarchy, embracing Bohemia, Moravia, Silesia, Lusatia, and Brandenburg, and he had the sagacity to recognize the commercial importance of the last-named as offering an outlet by the Baltic Sea. Charles, however, died in 1378, and with him perished his far-reaching plans. He was succeeded in the electorate of Brandenburg —for as such it had been formally recognized in the Golden Bull of 1356— by his second son Sigismund. This prince was too greatly hampered by his other schemes to bestow much attention on Brandenburg, and in 1388 his pecuniary embarrassments were so great that he gave the electorate in pawn to his cousin Jobst or Jodocus of Moravia. The unfortunate country seemed now to have reached the lowest point consistent with its further independent existence. Jobst looked upon it merely as a source of income and nade little or no attempt at government. Internal order completely disappeared, and the nobles made war on each other or plundered the more peaceful eitizens without let or hindrance. Powerful neighbours again took the op- portunity of appropriating such parts of Brandenburg as lay most convenient to their

own borders, and the final dissolution of the electorate seemed imminent. Jobst died in 1411; and Sigismund, who succeeded to the imperial throne mainly through the help of Frederick VI., burgrave of Nuremberg, conferred the electorate of Brandenburg on this stout supporter, partly in gratitude for services rendered and partly as a mortgage for money advanced. Sigismund also may possibly have recognized in Frederick the fitting

square miles in extent. The internal condition of Branden- burg had declined as much as its territorial extension had decreased. The central power had become weakened and the whole inner organization relaxed, while the electorate had also lost most of the advantages that once favourably distinguished it from other imperial fiefs. Under the first margraves the official side of their position had been pro- minent, and it was not forgotten that technically they were little more than the representatives of the emperor. In the 13th century this feeling began to disappear, and Brandenburg enjoyed an independent importance and carried out an independent policy in a way not paralleled in any other German mark. The emperor was still, of course, the suzerain of the country, but his relations with it had so little influence on the course of its development that they may be practically ignored. Within the Mark the power of the margraves was at first almost unlimited. This arose in part from the fact that few great nobles had followed Albert the Bear in his crusade against the Wends, and that consequently there were few large feudal manors or lordships with their crowds of dependent vassals. The great bulk of the knights, the towns, and the rural com- munes held their lands and derived their rights directly from the margraves, who thus stood in more or less im- mediate contact with all classes of their subjects. The towns and villages were generally laid out by contractors (locatores), not necessarily of noble birth, who were installed as hereditary chief magistrates of the community and re- ceived nunierous encouragements to reclaim waste lands. This mode of colonization was especially favourable to the peasantry, who seem in Brandenburg to have retained the disposal of their persons and property at a time when villainage or serfdom was the ordinary state of their class in feudal Europe. The dues paid by these contractors in return for their concessions formed the principal revenue of the margraves. As the expenses of the latter increased, chiefly in consequence of the calls of war, lavish

donations to the clergy, and the attempt to maintain court establish- ments for all the members of the reigning house, they were frequently driven to pawn these dues for sums of ready money. This gave the knights or barons an opportunity to buy out the village magistrates and replace them with creatures of their own; and the axe was laid at the root of the freedom of the peasants when Louis the Bavarian formally recognized the patrimonial or manorial juris- diction of the noblesse. Henceforth the power of the nobles steadily increased at the expense of the peasants, who were gradually reduced to a state of feudal servitude. Instead of communicating directly with the margrave through his burgraves and vogts (bailiffs), the village com- munities came to be represented solely by the knights who had obtained feudal possession of their lands. Many of the towns followed in their wake. Others were enabled to maintain their independence, and also made use of the pecuniary needs of the margraves, until many of. them practically became municipal republics. Their strength, however, was perhaps more usefully shown in their ability

The Hohen- zollerns.

Elector Freder- ick I.

Freder- ick II,

to resist the barons, which saved industry and commerce from extinction at a time of unbridled lawlessness, when the central power could do nothing for their aid. ; In the pecuniary embarrassments of the margraves also originated the power of the Stande, or estates, consisting of the noblesse, the clergy, and the towns. ‘The first recorded. instance of a diet co-operating with the ruler occurs in 1170, and in 1280 we find the margraves solemnly binding themselves not to raise a ‘‘bede” or special voluntary con- tribution (like the English “ benevolence”) without the consent of their estates. By 1355 the estates had secured the appointment of a permanent councillor, without whose concurrence the decrees of the margraves were invalid. In the century that followed the extinction of the Ascanians liberty degenerated into licence, and the land was given over to an almost total anarchy. Only the most powerful towns were able to maintain their

independence, and many of them and of the clergy paid regular black-mail to the nearest nobles. Thus rotten within, it is no wonder that the electorate completely lost its independent political importance.

The Hohenzollerns.—The new ruler who had to face this state of affairs was a member of an old Swabian family, which took its name of Hohenzollern from the ancestral castle in the Swabian Alb. Recent investigation has traced back the line to Hunfrid, duke of Rheetia and Istria at the beginning of the 9th century, a member of the widely-spread family of the Burkardingians, while it finds the actual progenitors of the Swabian branch of the family in two Alemannian dukes of the 10th century. Ata later period the Hohenzollerns were conspicuous for their loyal services to the Hohenstauffen emperors, under whom they acquired extensive possessions In Franconia and Moravia, and also the office of burgrave of Nuremberg (1191). They were ultimately recognized as among the most powerful princes of the empire, and, though they never attained to the electoral dignity, they frequently exercised considerable influence in the transference of the imperial crown. Rudolf of Hapsburg owed his succession in 1273 to the exertions of one Hohenzollern burgrave, and Louis the Bavarian owed the victory of Miihldorf (1322) to another. The two sons of the first burgrave, Conrad and Frederick, divided their inheritance between them, the former retaining the Franconian estates and the dignity of burgrave, the latter the ancestral possessions in Swabia. From the first of these descended the rulers of Prussia, while the other line also still exists in the person of the mediatized prince of Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen.

Frederick (1415-1440), who as elector of Brandenburg assumed the style of Frederick I., showed himself equal to the troublesome task before him, and would have been still more successful had his interests been limited to the elec- torate. By a prudent mixture of lenity and firmness, which did not shrink from actual fighting, he controlled the law- lessness of the Quitzows and other robber barons, restored a fair degree of internal order, and made his subjects feel that the central power was a fact that could not be ignored. While thus regulating the affairs of Brandenburg, Frederick was also a conspicuous figure in imperial politics, especially in the Hussite wars. His candidature for the imperial throne in 1438 may be regarded as the first occasion on which the houses of. Hohenzollern and Hapsburg came into

competition. Frederick was succeeded in Brandenburg by his son Frederick II. (1440-1470), and in his Franconian possessions by his son Albert. The former followed in his ae footsteps by taking energetic measures to consoli-

ate Als power and restore the electorate to its former extent. His chief struggle was with the large towns, which had cordially welcomed the Hohenzollerns as cham- pions against the freebooting barons, but were unwilling

to allow any intervention in their own affairs. Frederick subdued the resistance of Berlin, among other towns, and by a somewhat unwarrantable stretch of his prerogative erected a royal castle within its walls. He also regained possession of the Neumark, which had been given in pledge to the Teutonic Order in 1402, and would have added Lusatia and Pomerania to his domains if the emperor had not placed obstacles in his way. A long-standing feud with the archbishop of Magdeburg was also finally settled in this reign. Under his brother and successor

Albert (1470-1486), surnamed “ Achilles” from his chival- Albert rous valour and military talent, the Franconian lands were (Achilles)

again united with Brandenburg. Albert allowed his devo- tion to the emperor to interfere to some extent with his own interests, but he carried on successful wars with Mecklenburg and Pomerania, and effectually resisted the attempts of the Teutonic knights to repossess themselves of the Neumark. His name is best remeinbered by the Dispositio Achillea, a family ordinance providing for the future separation of Brandenburg and Ansbach-Baireuth, and establishing the custom of primogeniture in each. According to Hallam, this was the first instance of the legal establishment of primogeniture, and, when we con- sider the effect it had in keeping the Brandenburg posses- sions together, while those of Saxony (for instance) were frittered away among younger sons and their descendants, we shall not fail to discern its importance in determining

Prussia’s future. With the accession of John (1486-1499), John surnamed “Cicero” on account of his eloquence or of his (Cicero).

knowledge of Latin, begins a short period in which the rulers of Brandenburg take little share in imperial politics. At home John found his hands full in repressing the dis- orders that had arisen through Albert’s long absence from the electorate, and he acted with such vigour and address that he succeeded in obtaining from the towns an import- ant excise on beer, frequently refused to his father. The old claim to feudal supremacy over Pomerania, dating from the days of the Ascanians, was compromised in 1493 for an assurance of eventual succession on the extinction of the Pomeranian dukes.

the foundation of a university at Frankfort-on-the-Oder. He also effected an important internal reform by the intro- duction of Roman law, looking upon this as an easier way of securing uniformity of procedure than by a codification of the heterogeneous common law of his dominions. The inconvenience arising from the fact that the supreme court followed the sovereign from place to place was now re- moved in Brandenburg, asa short time before in England, by the establishment of a fixed and central court of final jurisdiction (Aammergericht). This court had its seat at Berlin, which had recently become the capital and resi- dence of the electors. In curbing the lawlessness of the nobles, who were yet far from being perfectly disciplined, Joachim showed as strong a hand as his predecessors. He adhered strenuously to his Roman Catholic belief in spite of the fact that Protestantism had been embraced by his own family and by most of his subjects, and he regarded with abhorrence the attitude of the Protestant princes towards the emperor. In violation of the family law, Joachim I. bequeathed the Neumark to his younger son

Jolin, and thus Joachim II. (1535-157 1) succeeded to only Joachim ; John seems to have I.

a part of the paternal possessions. been the more vigorous and decided of the two brothers, and led the way in announcing his transition to the Pro- testant faith, followed by Joachim in 1539. John also jomed the Schmalkald League, but was induced to retire from it by his brother, who succeeded in conjoining an adoption of the Reformation in his own dominions with

The next elector, Joachim I. Joachim (1499-1535), acquired the surname of “ Nestor” from his I. (Nes- encouragement of learning, which he showed inter alia by *°”

a careful avoidance of conflict with the emperor and Roman Catholic party. The church ordinance which he framed for Brandenburg was drawn up in such a way that the head of the state became likewise the head of the state church, and henceforth he regarded him- self, like Henry VIII. of England, as standing towards his own country in the place of the pope. The public introduction of the new faith was accomplished without difficulty, and the clergy witnessed the secularization of their property with much equanimity. ‘The funds thus acquired by Joachim, a prince of magnificent ideas and of lavish expenditure, were of great service to him ; but part of them he devoted to the encouragement of science and art. A compact of mutual right of eventual inheritance made in 1537 with the duke of Liegnitz and Brieg was of great ultimate importance as affording Frederick II. a pretext for his claims to Silesia. A still more useful arrangement of a similar kind was carried out by Joachim in 1569, when he secured the right of succession to the duchy of Prussia.

Between the accession of the Hohenzollern dynasty and the period at which we have now arrived the area of Brandenburg had been increased to nearly 15,000 square miles, and its material prosperity had grown in at least an equal ratio. It was still, however, far from being a com- pact or united state, nor had it as yet any pretension to an independent part on the European stage. Perhaps the most marked internal change was the increase in the power of the estates, resulting in great measure from the financial needs of the electors. Their gradual progress towards com- plete recognition as a co-ordinate branch of government may be said to have culminated in the formal declaration of Joachim II., that he would never undertake any action of importance affecting the welfare of his subjects without first consulting the estates. Yet alongside of this growth of the estates there were other causes at work paving the way for the future absolutism of the rulers. Thus the new ecclesiastical constitution brought the elector, as head of the church, into immediate relation with all classes of the people, and the

abolition of the distinction between mediate and immediate subjects in the religious sphere prepared the way for a similar position in secular matters. So too the introduction of Roman law accustomed the mind to dwell on the central authority and administration, and its very terminology promoted the conception of the elector as a “royal” ruler. A more important cause, however, than either of these was the gradual dccline of the power of the towns, with the accompanying revival of that of the nobles. The practical independence and com- parative wealth of the towns had been followed by intestine feuds, in which the patricians were arrayed against the guilds, and these not only weakened the towns directly, but also gave the electors frequent pretexts to interfere and curtail their privileges. At the end of the reign of Joachim II. the elector and the diet, the noblesse and the municipalities, were still in a state of comparative and promising equilibrium. But it was evident that the power of the diet was now almost wholly confined to its command of the purse, and that an elector who could make himself independent of its subsidies would be in a position to defy its claims ; while it was equally evident that the growing weakness of the towns was incapacitating them for any effectual resistance to an ambitious prince, who might utilize the congenial support of the noblesse as a stepping- stone to arbitrary power. The short-sighted and selfish neglect of general questions now making way among the separate sections of the diet, and their increasing tendency to appear at those sittings only in which their own peculiar interests were under discussion, also helped to free the hands of the electors. The condition of the peasantry

EPRUPGe Ls A 5

had been steadily deteriorating, and their personal rights were already seriously encroached upon.

Under Joachim’s son, John George (1571-1598), who John permanently reunited the Neumark with Brandenburg, the George.

tendencies just noticed received emphatic expression. All vacant official positions were filled with members of the noblesse, who also received the right of exacting compul- sory service from the peasants and other similar privileges. The elector, who acquired the name of “ Oekonom” or steward from his admirable financial management, soon reduced the large debt left

by his father, and, leaning on the support he had earned from the barons, was able to act with great independence towards the other elements of the diet. During his undisturbed reign the material prosperity of Brandenburg advanced considerably, and the population was increased by numerous Protestant refugees from France and Holland.

testament of his father, which had assigned the Neumark to his younger brother, and in the Gera Bond executed a solemn ratification of the Dispositio Achillea. Ansbach and Baireuth were formally relinquished to the younger line, and have never since, except from 1791 to 1806, formed part of the Prussian dominions. ‘This reign is memorable for the establishment of a state council (Staatsrath), which served in sone degree as a ministerial cabinet, and may be characterized as the nucleus of the bureaucracy of modern Prussia.

reign is of great importance in the history of Brandenburg on account of the extensive territorial enlargement that fell to its lot. The contingency which had been contem- plated in the treaty with Prussia in 1569 was realized on the death of Duke Albert in 1618; and John Sigismund, whose title was strengthened by his marriage with the late duke’s daughter, inherited the duchy. His marriage also brought him a claim to the duchies of Cleves and Jiilich and other lands near the Rhine, but this title was disputed by the count palatine of Neuburg. The count was a Roman Catholic, and his contest with the elector soon became a mere incident in the great conflict that now broke out between the two religions. The disputed territories were occupied by Spanish and Dutch troops, and neither claimant derived much advantage from them till after the Thirty Years’ War. For a time, however, the outlying possessions of John Sigismund touched on both sides the limits of modern Prussia. In 1613 the elector, either from pure conviction or from a desire to conciliate the Reformed diet of Cleves, announced his adoption of the Reformed (Calvinistic) type of Protestantism, an action that gave great offence in his older dominions. He made, however, no attempt to induce his subjects to follow his example, and may be said to have inaugurated the policy of religious toleration that has since been characteristic of Prussian rulers. During his reign his territories were more than doubled in extent, covering at his death an area of 31,000 square miles;

but the elector of Brandenburg could not yet claim to rank above those of Bavaria and Saxony.

Duchy of Prussia.—The duchy of Prussia, thus ac- Duchy of quired by the elector, formed the eastern half of the ter- Prussia.

ritory bearing the name of Preussen, and stretched along the Baltic Sea from the Vistula to the Memel. It still remained a Polish fief, and was separated from the rest of the electoral dominions by West Prussia, which the Teutonic Order had been forced to resign to Poland a century and a half before. The native Prussians were of a race akin to the Letts and Lithuanians, and their name (Pruzi, Prutheni) was probably derived from a Lettish root meaning "'intelligence."! Towards the end of the 1 The traditionary counexion of the name with the proximity of

Joachim Frederick (1598- Joachim 1608) had the good sense and resolution to oppose the Frederick.

John Sigismund (1608-1619) does not seem to John have been a man of marked personal character, but his Sigis-

Teutonic Order.

6 PRUS 3a 4

first century of the Christian era we find authentic accounts of the importation by the Romans of amber from the Baltic coast, but the first mention of the Pruzi by name occurs in a document of the 9th century. Their first appearance in German history is connected with the attempt made in 997 by Adalbert, bishop of Prague, to convert them to Christianity. But his efforts, as well as those of his successor Bruno, met with little success, and each of these pious missionaries found a martyr's grave on the shore of the Baltic. The obstinate adherence of the natives to their paganism was strengthened by their natural suspicion of a political aim under cover of missionary enterprise, and they felt that they were fighting for their land as well as for their religion. The next serious attempt at their conversion was made two hundred years later by a Cistercian nionk named Christian, who at the outset had some success and was appointed first bishop of Prussia.

The Prussians, however, soon expelled Christian and his supporters, and even invaded Polish territory, plundering and exacting tribute. In this extremity Christian and Conrad, duke of Masovia, applied for aid to the knights of the TEUToNIC ORDER (¢.v.), who gladly embarked on this new crusade. The Prussians made a desperate resistance; but the military discipline and strength of the Teutonic knights were not in the long run to be withstood, reinforced, as they were, by crowds of crusaders and adventurers anxious to share in the pious work, and assisted on two occasions by the troops of Ottocar of Bohemia. The knights entered Prussia in 1230, and after half a century of hard fighting found them- selves masters of the entire country. They had previously taken care to procure from the emperor and the pope a grant of all the lands they should conquer, as well as of those offered to them by Conrad of Masovia. At first the government of the Order, though arbitrary, was not un- favourable to the welfare of the land. The few native nobles who adopted Christianity were allowed to retain their privileged position, and the ranks of the noblesse were recruited by grants to German knights. Numerous towns and villages were built; the place of the greatly thinned Prussians was taken by industrious German colonists ; agriculture and commerce were carried on with energy and success; and all aggression from without was vigorously repelled. The general plan of colonization was similar to that in Brandenburg, except that the place of the margrave was taken by a class of privileged nobles, who divided the power of government among them. In 1309 Pomerelia, to the west of the Vistula, was subdued, and the headquarters of the Order were removed from Venice to the fortress of Marienburg on the Vistula; and before the end of the century: the “ Ordensland” of Prussia is said to have contained about fifty walled towns, still more numerous castles, and several hundred villages and hamlets, while it extended from Pomerania to the western frontier of Lithuania. The active trade which now flourished was carried on mainly with England and the Hanseatic towns. As time went on, however, the knights allowed their vows of temperance and chastity to sink into abeyance and became enervated by luxury and excess. Their old military skill declined, and they had sunk to such a state of weakness that the single battle of Tannenberg (1410), in which they were defeated by the Poles, shook their power to its foundations. Their arbitrary and exclusive rule now began to reap its reward : the Prussians took advantage of the weakness of the Order to claim a larger share in the government, and, as

their burdens continued to grow more oppressive, finally formed an alliance with its arch-enemy Poland. Attacked from

Russia seems unfounded, and the form Borussia or Porussia, which has been adopted as the Latin appellation of the country, is used for the first time by a chronicler of the fifteenth century.

[HISTORY.

without and weakened by dissension within, the Order was at length compelled to succumb ; and a war begun in 1454 ended thirteen years later with the cession of West Prussia to Poland and an acknowledgment of the latter's feudal superiority over the remaining territories of the Order. The knights turned to Germany for help, and endeavoured to persuade powerful German princes to undertake the office of grand master. In 1511 their choice fell on Albert, a member of the Franconian branch of the Hohenzollerns, who undertook the task of reorganization with vigour and attempted to dispense with the oath of fealty to Poland. But, failing to receive any adequate support from the emperor, he at length, acting on the advice of Luther, determined to embrace Protestantism and convert the Ordensland into a secular and hereditary duchy. This momentous transformation was carried out in 1525 with- out interference from either the empire or Poland, and Albert continued to be a vassal of the latter state as duke of Prussia. The people of Prussia, many of whom had already gone over to the new faith, hailed the reform with great satisfaction, and most of the knights contentedly changed their life-rents for feudal holdings, married, and became hereditary nobles. When it passed into the hands of the elector of Brandenburg, Prussia thus consisted of a compact secular duchy, owing fealty to Poland, and pos- sessing the two well-defined estates of nobles and burghers, the first of which held the reins of power.

John Sigismund died in 1619, a year after his acquisi- George tion of Prussia, and left his territories to his son George William: |

William (1619-1640). This unfortunate prince may per- haps be described as the first utterly incompetent ruler of his ne, though due allowance must be made for the extreme difficulty of his position. Succeeding to power at the outbreak of the great struggle between Catholicism and Protestantism,

he neglected the opportunity of joining with Saxony in the formation of a strong league of German Protestant princes, and by his temporizing policy converted his electorate into the common battle-ground. In the language of Carlyle, "'where the Titans were bowling rocks at each other, George William hoped by dexterous skipping to escape share of the game." His own irresolu- tion was aided by the fact that his chancellor and chief adviser, Schwarzenberg, was a Roman Catholic and of strong imperialist sympathies, while the great bulk of his subjects dreaded an increase of the power of Calvinism almost more than that of Roman Catholicism. Branden- burg was overrun in turn by Mansfeld, Tilly, and Wallen- stein, and suffered as much as if it had taken an active part in the war. The Restitution Edict of 1628, however, gave the elector serious cause of alarm, and the appearance of Gustavus Adolphus before Berlin in 1631 confirmed his faltering decision and made him for a time throw in his lot with the Protestant cause. After the death of Gustavus, Brandenburg followed the example of Saxony in negotiating a separate peace with the emperor (1635), But this apostasy brought little relief, as the emperor gave no aid in expelling the Swedes from Brandenburg and Pomerania, which they continued to occupy for several years. In 1639 the elector removed his court to Kénigs- berg in Prussia, the only part of his realms in which he was sure of comparative tranquillity, and there he died in 1640, leaving a land devastated in great part by fire and sword and at the lowest ebb of dignity and power.

Frederick William (1640-1688), whom both his con- Great temporaries and after ages have agreed to dignify with Elector |

the title of the 'Great Elector," was only twenty years old when he succeeded to the throne, but he at once began to manifest a decided and vigorous character very different from that of his father. He emancipated himself without delay from the guidance of Schwarzenberg, and, in spite of

Pe U Sed «A c

rear in his war with the Turks. At his death, which took place in 1688, he was engaged in helping the prince of Orange to prepare for his descent on England.

The reign of the Great Elector forms one of the most Branden- signal instances in history of the conquest of adverse cir- burg cumstances by personal energy and merit; and it is with eee, reason that Prussian historians describe him as the second phector.

founder of the state. At his accession the greater part of

the emperor’s displeasure, concluded a peace with Sweden, which provided for the withdrawal of the Swedish troops from the electorate. During the following years of war Frederick William preserved a strict neutrality and utihzed the opportunity to restore the material resources of his country and reorganize and strengthen his army. The fruits of this line of action were seen at the peace of Westphalia (1648), when Frederick William, as lord of

an efficient army of 25,000 men, was able to secure a ready hearing for his claims to territorial extension. He established his right to the whole of Pomerania, but, as the Swedes refused to give up Western or Hither Pomerania (Vorpommern), he received as compensation the rich ecclesiastical principalities of Magdeburg, Halberstadt, and Minden, in central Germany. In the second Swedish and Polish war, which broke out in 1655, he used his inter- mediate position with great skill and unscrupulousness, allying himself first with one and then with the other of the belligerents, as seemed hkely to be most profitable. Thus the troops of Brandenburg took a prominent share in the defeat of the Poles at the three days’ battle of Warsaw (1656), in return for which service Sweden undertook to recognize the elector as independent sovereign of the duchy of Prussia. Scarcely, however, did the scale of victory begin to turn than the elector deserted his former ally, and in the treaty of Wehlau (1657) received his reward in the formal relinquishment by Poland of its feudal rights over Prussia. This important step, which added the electorate to the independent states of Europe and pre- pared the way for the growth of a great north German power, was ratified three years later at the general peace of Oliva. In 1666 the long-vexed question of the inheritance to the Rhenish duchies was settled by an amicable parti- tion, according to which Cleves, Mark, and Ravensberg fell to the share of Prussia. When Louis XIV. attacked Holland in 1672 Frederick William was at first the only German prince to

suspect danger in the anibitious designs of the French monarch. In spite of tempting offers from France, he concluded an alliance with Holland, and at the head of Austrian and Brandenburgian troops joined the Dutch in an ineffectual campaign on the Rhine. In 1673 he was forced, through lack of sufficient support from the emperor, to make peace with France; but he joined the triple alliance of Holland, Spain, and the empire in the following year and took part in an indecisive campaign in Alsace. There he received intelligence that the Swedes, at the instigation of France, had broken into Brandenburg. Hastening back to his own country without delay, he took the enemy by surprise, and at the head of about 6000 men gained a brilliant victory over twice that number of Swedish troops at Fehrbellin (1675), a small town to the north-west of Berlin. This success over the hitherto invincible Swedes lent great prestige to the elector's arms, and he followed it up by a series of vigorous campaigns, in which, with the aid of Denmark, he swept Branden- burg and Pomerania clear of the invaders, capturing Stettin in 1677 and Stralsund in 1678. The invasion of Prussia from Livonia, which formed the last effort of the Swedes, was also triumphantly repelled, the most memorable inci- dent of the short struggle being the elector's forced march over the frozen surface of the Frische Haff. At the peace of St Germain (1679), however, owing to the influence of France and the lukewarm support of the emperor, Frederick Wilham saw himself forced to restore Hither Pomerania to Sweden. The policy of the last years of the Great Elector may be described as an endeavour to hold the balance between France and the emperor. At first he jomed in a somewhat unnatural alliance with Louis XIV., but after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes (1685) he drew nearer to Austria and covered the emperor's

his territory was in the occupation of strangers and de- vastated by war, and in European politics Brandenburg was regarded as merely an appendage of the empire. Its army was of little value; its soil was poor; and its revenue was insignificant. To other sources of weakness were added the scattered nature of the electoral possessions, their mutual jealousies, and their separate interests. At Frederick Wilham's death the new north German state of Brandenburg-Prussia was a power that had to be reckoned with in all European combinations. Inferior to Austria alone among the states of the empire, it was regarded as the head and patron of German Protestantism ; while the fact that one-third of its territory lay outside the empire added to

its independent importance. Its area had been raised to 43,000 square miles ; its revenue had multiplied fivefold ; and its small army was nowhere surpassed in efficiency. The elector had overthrown Sweden and in- herited her position on the Baltic, and he had offered a steady and not ineffectual resistance to the ambition of France.

While thus winning for himself a position in the councils of Europe, the elector was not less active in strengthening the central authority within his dominions, and the trans- formation effected during his reign in the internal govern- ment of the state was not less striking than that in its external importance. Frederick William found Branden- burg a constitutional state, in which the legislative power was shared between the elector and the diet ; he left it to his successor as in substance an absolute monarchy. Many circunistances helped him in effecting this change, among the chief of which were the want of harmonious action on the part of the estates and the accelerated decline of the political power of the towns. The substitution of a perma- nent excise for the subsidies granted from time to time by the estates also tended to increase the elector's independ- ence, and the Government officials (Steuerrdthe) appointed to collect this tax in the towns gradually absorbed many of the adininistrative functions of the local authorities. The nobles and prelates generally preferred to raise their quota according to the old method of bede or "contri- bution," and this weakened the last bond of common interest between them and the estate of the burghers. In Brandenburg the elector met with little opposition in establishing his personal sovereignty, and after 1653 no general diet of Brandenburg was held. In Cleves and Mark he gained his end simply by an overwhelming display of force; but in Prussia, where the spirit of independence . was fostered by its history and by its distance from the seat of power, he found much greater difficulty. His emancipation from the suzerainty of Poland gave him a great advantage in the struggle, though the estates on their side averred that their relation with Poland was one that could not be dissolved except by common consent. It was not until the elector had occupied K6énigsberg with an armed force, and imprisoned the one (Burgomaster Roth) and executed the other (Baron Kalkstein) of the principal champions of independence, that he was able to bend the estates to his will, Arbitrary and unconstitu- tional as this conduct seems to us, we must not forget that Frederick William's idea of the functions of an absolute prince was very

superior to the unqualified egotism of the French monarchs, and that, while he insisted upon being

King Frederick Ie

8 fF EU oee 1 a

master in his own house, it was that he might at the same time be the first servant of the state. In his eyes an absolute government was the best guarantee of the common welfare, and was not sought merely for the sake of personal aggrandizement. It is not without significance in con- nexion with this that beyond his own territories he twice espoused the cause of the people against an absolute ruler, first in opposing Louis XIV., and again in aiding William of Orange. .

In matters of general administration Frederick William showed himself a prudent and careful ruler, and laid the foundation of the future greatness of Prussia in almost every department. The military and bureaucratic systems of the country both received their first important impulse in this reign. The wounds inflicted by the Thirty Years' War were in a great measure healed, and the finances and credit of the state were established on a firm basis. Agri- culture and commerce were improved and encouraged by a variety of useful measures, and education was not neglected. The elector even established Prussian colonies in Africa, and formed a small but efficient navy. In matters of religion Braudenburg stands out prominently as the only country of the time in which all Christian confessions were not only tolerated but placed upon an equal footing. The condition of the peasantry, however, reached almost its lowest ebb, and the "' recess" or charter of 1653 practically recognizes the existence of villainage. While the barons had been losing power on the one side as opposed to the elector, they had been increasing it on the other at the expense of the peasants. The Thirty Years' War afforded them frequent opportunities of replac- ing the village "Schulzen" with manorial courts; and the fact that their quota of taxation was wholly wrung from the holdings of the peasants made the burden of the latter four or five times as great as that of the towns. The state of public morals also still left much to be desired, while the clergy were too mucli occupied with squabbles over Lutheranism and Calvinism to be an effective instrument of reform.

The Great Elector's son Frederick I. (1688-1713) was an ostentatious and somewhat frivolous prince, who hazarded the acquisitions of his father by looking on his position as assured and by aiming rather at external tokens of his dignity than at a further consolidation of the basis on which it rested. The Brandenburg troops showed all their wonted prowess in the war of the second coalition against Louis XIV. and in that of the Spanish Succession ; but Frederick's interests were only mediately concerned, and neither the peace of Ryswick (1697) nor that of Utrecht (1713) brought him any very tangible advantage. Bran- denburg soldiers also helped the emperor in his wars with the Turks, and English readers should not forget that Frederick's action in covering the Dutch frontier with 6000 troops left William of Orange free scope in his expedition to England. The most notable incident in Frederick's reign was, however, his acquisition of the title of king of Prussia, which long formed the principal object of his policy, and which led him to make important con- cessions to all whose co-operation was necessary. The emperor's consent was finally purchased by the promise of a contingent of 8000 men to aid him in the War of the Spanish Succession, and on 18th J anuary 1701 Frederick crowned himself at Ké6nigsberg with accompanying cere- monies of somewhat inflated grandeur. Elector Frederick IIL. of Brandenburg became henceforth King Frederick I. of Prussia,! the title being taken from that part of his

Sei ee aN a a

1 Strictly speaking, the title assumed was "king ix Prussia" (K6nig in Preussen), this apparently being meant to indicate that there was still a Prussia (West Prussia) of which he was not king, though it has also been otherwise explained.

territories in which he had no suzerain to acknowledge. Superficial as this incident may at first sight appear, it added considerably to the moral and political moment- um of the country, and its advantages were reaped by Frederick's two vigorous successors. About the same time (1697) the elector of Saxony also acquired the kingly dignity by his election to the throne of Poland, but in doing so he had to become a Roman Catholic, and thus left the Hohenzollerns without a rival among the Protest- ant dynasties

of Germany. Frederick was an extravagant ruler, who lavished large sums in maintaining his personal state ; but his expenditure was not wholly of this profitless nature, since he founded the university of Halle as a school of liberal theology, established academies of art and science at Berlin, and patronized men of literary eminence. In this he was perhaps mainly inspired by his talented wife Sophia Charlotte, a sister of George I. of England.

The court of Vienna had consoled itself for the growing power of Prussia under the Great Elector by the reflexion that it was probably of a temporary nature and due mainly to the vigorous individuality of that prince. The events of Frederick I.'s reign seemed to justify this view. At his accession Prussia might fairly claim to rank as the second state of Germany and possessed considerable influence as a European power of all but the first order. This, however, had been changed before the death of Frederick. Bavaria, Saxony, and Hanover had all raised themselves to at least a level with Prussia, which now sank back into the posi- tion of a merely German state and loyal supporter of the empire. Frederick's preoccupation in the western wars had allowed Sweden to reassert her pre-eminence in northern Europe, and it was Russia and not Prussia that now impeded her progress. The internal soundness of the country had also suffered: the finances were in a state of complete disorganization, and the burden of taxation was almost insupportable. If Frederick's successor had not been a man of vigorous character the downhill progress might have continued until it had removed Prussia alto- gether from the list of important states. Perhaps the general estimate of Frederick's character is unduly low owing to the fact that he was followed as well as preceded by a ruler of unusual capacity.

His son Frederick William I. (1713-1740) possessed Frederick administrative talents of no mean order and was singularly William painstaking, industrious, and determined in carrying out °

his plans. Though marked by no great external achieve- ments or exciting events, his reign is of the utmost im- portance in the Prussian annals from having checked the threatened downfall of Prussia and paved the way for Frederick the Great. By carefully husbanding his finances Frederick William filled his treasury and was able to keep on foot one of the largest and best disciplined armies in Europe, thereby securing for Prussia an

influence in Euro- pean councils altogether disproportionate to its size and population. In internal management he made Prussia the model state of Europe, though his administration was of a purely arbitrary type, in which the estates were never con- sulted and his ministers were merely clerks to register his decrees. The first act of the young king, who was as economical as his father was extravagant, was to institute a salutary reform in the expensive institutions of the court; and some idea of the drastic nature of this change may be gathered from the fact that the annual allowance for the salaries and pensions of the chief court officials and civil servants was at once reduced from 276,000 to 55,000 thalers. The peace of Utrecht (1713), which added Guelders to the Prussian territories, left Frederick William free to turn his attention to the northern war then raging between Sweden on the one side and Russia, Poland, and Denmark on the other. Though at first disposed to be

friendly to Sweden, he was forced by circumstances to take up arms against it. In September 1713 Stettin was captured by the allies and handed over to the custody of Frederick William, who paid the expenses of the siege and undertook to retain possession of the town until the end of the war. But Charles XII. refused to recognize this arrangement and returned from his exile in Turkey to demand the immediate restitution of the town. With this demand the Prussian monarch naturally declined to comply, unless the money he had advanced was reimbursed, and the upshot was the outbreak of the only war in which Frederick William ever engaged. The struggle was of short dura- tion and was practically ended in 1715 by the capture of Stralsund by the united Prussians, Saxons, and Danes under the command of the king of Prussia. The Swedes were driven from Pomerania, and at the peace of 1720 Frederick William received the greater part of Vorpom- mern, including the important seaport of Stettin. Sweden now disappeared from the ranks of the great powers, and Prussia was left without a rival in northern Germany.

A detailed history of Frederick William's reign would necessitate the recital of a long and tedious series of diplomatic proceedings, centring in the question of the succession to the duchies of Jiilich and Berg. In 1725 we find the king trusting for support to an alliance with England, while the queen has set her heart on a double marriage between her eldest son and daughter and an English princess and prince. The treaty of Wusterhausen between Austria and Prussia was concluded in the follow- ing year, and was confirmed with some modifications by the treaty of Berlin in 1728. Frederick William engaged to recognize the Pragmatic Sanction, while the emperor on his side undertook to support Prussia's claims to Jiilich and Berg. The policy of the latter, however, was far from straightforward, as he had already entered into a similar compact with the count palatine of Sulzbach, the rival claimant to the succession, who was a Roman Catholic and therefore a more sympathetic ally. Frederick William's intervention in the matter of the succession to the throne of Poland, rendered vacant by the death of Augustus IT. in 1733, proved barren of advantage to Prussia and failed to secure the hoped-for reversion of the duchy of Cour- land. A Prussian contingent took part none the less in the ensuing war between Austria and France, but Austria concluded peace in 1735 without consulting her ally. In 1737 the king was resolute enough to withstand the pressure brought to bear upon him by England, France, Holland, and Austria in order to induce him to submit to their settlement of the Jiilich-Berg question; and in 1739, convinced at last of the confirmed duplicity of the emperor, he turned to his hereditary enemy for help and concluded a defensive alliance with France. This action may be looked upon as marking the end of that phase in the rela- tions of the houses of Hapsburg and Hohenzollern in which the latter regarded the former with simple loyalty as its natural suzerain; the rivalry between Austria and Prussia had begun, and for the rest of the century formed the pivot on which the politics of Europe mainly turned. Frederick William died in 1740, conscious of his diplo- matic failures, but confident that his son would repair his errors.

If the external history of Frederick William's reign is not especially glorious, and if in diplomacy he was worsted by the emperor, the country at least enjoyed the benefits of a twenty-five years' peace and those of a well-meaning, though somewhat too patriarchal, government. During this reign the revenues of Prussia were doubled, and the king left at his death a well-

filled treasury and an army of 85,000 men. Though not ranking higher than twelfth among the European states in extent and population,

Prussia occupied the fourth place in point of military power. The king himself took the greatest interest in the management of his*army, in which the discipline was of the strictest ; and he carried the habits of the military martinet into all departments of the administration. His untiring industry occupied itself with the minutest details of government, and his downright blunt character showed there to greater advantage than in diplomatic circles. His chief innovation was the abolition of the distinction between the military and civil funds, and the assignment of the entire financial management of the country to a general directory of finance, war, and domains. Hitherto the proceeds of the excise and contribution had been paid into the military chest, while those of the royal monopolies and domains belonged to the civil service, deficiencies in one department being made good by the surplus of the other. Now, however, the directory was instructed to pay for everything out of a common fund, and so to regulate the expenditure that there should invariably be a surplus at the end of the year. As the army absorbed five-sevenths of the revenue, the civil administration had to be conducted with the greatest economy. The king himself set the example of the frugality which he expected from his officials, and contented himself with a civil list of 52,000 thalers (£7800). The domains were now managed so as to yield a greater income than ever before, and important reforms were made in the system of taxation. By the substitution of a payment in money for the obsolete military tenure the nobles were deprived of their practical exemption from taxation, and they were also required to pay taxes for all the peasant holdings they had absorbed. Attempts were made to better the condition of the peasants, and the worst features of villainage were abolished in the crown domains. The military system of cantonment, according to which each regiment was allotted a district in which to recruit, was of constitutional as well as military importance, since it brought the peasants into direct. contact with the royal officials. The collection of the taxes of the peasantry was removed from the hands of the

landowners. The duties of the state officials were laid down with great detail, and their performance was exacted with great severity. Official corruption was punished with extreme rigour. Justice seems to have been administered in an upright if somewhat Draconian manner, though the frequent and often arbitrary inflic- tion of the penalty of death by the king strikes us with astonishment. The agricultural and industrial interests of the country were fostered with great zeal. The most important industrial undertaking was the introduction of the manufacture of woollen cloth, the royal factory at Berlin supplying uniforms for the entire army. The com- mercial regulations, conceived in a spirit of rigid pro- tection, were less successful. In the ecclesiastical sphere the king was able to secure toleration for the Protestants in other parts of Germany by reprisals on his own Roman Catholic subjects, and he also gave welcome to numerous Protestant refugees, including 18,000 exiled peasants from Salzburg. For art, science, and the higher culture he had no respect, but he has the credit of founding the common- school system of Prussia and of making elementary educa- tion compulsory.

After the accession of Frederick the Great (1740-1786) Frederick

the external history of Prussia coincides to such an extent 1. with that of the German empire that it has already been treated with considerable detail in the article GERMANY (vol. x. pp. 503-4 ; see also FrepEricx II.). The outline of Frederick's foreign policy was probably determimed in some degree by the events of the later years of lis father's reign, and Austrian duplicity in the matter of Jiilich gave him a colourable pretext for his hostile attitude m reviving XX, — 2

Prussia under Frederick Te

the long dormant claims of Prussia to the Silesian duchies. Within a year of his accession he had embarked on the first Silesian War, and this was closely followed by the second, which ended in 1745, leaving Frederick in undis- puted possession of almost the whole of Silesia, with the frontier that still exists. East Friesland, the Prussian claim to which dated from the time of the Great Elector, was absorbed in 1744 on the death without issue of the

last duke. The two Silesian wars completely exhausted the stores left by Frederick William, both of grenadiers and thalers, and Frederick gladly welcomed the interval of peace to anlass new treasures and allow his subjects time to recover from their exertions. The measures he took were so successful that when the Seven Years' War broke out in 1756 he had an army of 150,000 men at his com- mand, representing about one-seventh of the available male population of his little kmgdom. He had also a fund of eleven million thalers in his treasury, though this would have gone but a small way in defraying the expenses of the protracted struggle had he not been assisted by the subsidies of England and able to make the fertile plains of Saxony his chief basis of supply. The succession of brilliant campaigns in which Frederick maintained himself against a coalition embracing nearly the whole of Europe has been narrated in the article AUSTRIA (vol. iii. p. 127 s¢.). As Macaulay points out in a somewhat highly-coloured passage, Frederick ruled over a population of less than five million souls, while his adversaries could draw their armies from a joint population of a hundred millions. The disproportion in wealth was at least as great. Nor was the small size of Frederick's land made up for by its strong patriotism and loyalty; on the contrary, the affections of his subjects had been partially alienated by the severity of his rule and the weight of taxation. Prussia had no strong natural bulwarks on its frontiers, but lay exposed to every foe. Yet Frederick's brilliant military genius was able to counteract all these dis- advantages and carry on the contest in spite of all odds. Though without gain in extent or population, Prussia emerged from the war as an undoubted power of the first rank, and henceforth completely eclipsed Saxony, Bavaria, and Hanover, while it was plain that Austria would no longer stand without a rival for the hegemony of the Ger- man empire. The glorious victories over the French and Russians also awakened a spirit of German patriotism that had hitherto been almost unknown. But the price paid for these results was enormous. Of the 850,000 soldiers who, as is estimated, perished during the war about 180,000 fell in the service of Prussia, and the gross popu- lation of the kingdom had decreased in seven years to the extent of half a million souls. The misery and poverty indirectly attendant on the war were incalculable, Numter- ous Prussian towns and villages were destroyed or made tenantless ; large tracts were left uncultivated for want of labourers ; and famine reigned to such an extent that even the seed-corn was converted into bread. The development of the country was thrown back for

many years, which were almost a repetition of the period succeeding the Thirty Years' War. But, while nearly a century elapsed before the traces of that struggle disappeared, Frederick, who showed himself great in peace as in war, repaired most of the ravages of the Seven Years' War in a tenth of the time, By great dexterity in the management of his finances he had kept clear of debt, and was soon able to advance large sums to the most impoverished districts. Foreign colonists were invited to repeople the deserted villages ; taxes were in several instances remitted for a& series of years ; the horses of the army were employed in farm labour ; and individual effort in every department was liberally supported by the Government. By 1770 nearly

all the ruined villages had been rebuilt; the ground was again under cultivation; order had been restored; the vacant offices had been filled ; and the debased currency had been called in. Throughout the kingdom agriculture was encouraged by the drainage of marshy districts; in- dustry was extended by the introduction of new manu- factures, by bounties, and by monopolies; and commerce was fostered by a series of well-meant, if economically unsound, measures of protection. Frederick's methods of administration did not greatly differ from those of his pre- decessor, though the unrelenting severity of Frederick William was relaxed and the peculiarities of his system toned down. Frederick's industry and activity were as great as those of his father, his insight keener, and his views more liberal. His rule was quite as personal and absolute, and the despotism was altered only in so far as the character of the despot was different. His own personal supervision extended to every department, and his idea of his position and duties made him his own first minister in the widest and most exacting sense of the term. He endeavoured to spare his subjects as far as was compatible with the immense army he maintained, and sought to raise the necessary revenues rather by improving the resources of the country than by additional taxation. He kept the charges of the civil administration down to the lowest point consistent with efficiency, and the court establishment was very economical, though it avoided the extreme of shabbi- ness witnessed under Frederick William. His efforts to improve the administration and the bureaucracy were un- ceasing, and he succeeded in

training a body of admirable public servants. One of his most sweeping reforms was in the department of law, where, with the able aid of Cocceji, he carried out a complete revolution both in procedure and personnel. The expenses of justice were greatly lightened, and no suit was allowed to drag on for more than a year. A complete divorce was effected between the departments of justice and provincial administration, a change that greatly strengthened the position of the private citizen in any contest with the officials of Government. One of the king's first acts was to abolish legal torture, and he rarely sanctioned capital punishment except in cases of murder. The application of the privilegium de non appellando (1746) freed Prussia from all relations with the imperial courts and paved the way for a codification of the common law of the land, which was begun under Frederick but not completed till the end of the century. In matters of religion Frederick not only exercised the greatest toleration, remarking that each of his subjects might go to heaven after his own fashion, but distinctly disclaimed the con- nexion of the state with any one confession, Equal liberty was granted in speaking and writing. Though his finances did not allow him to do much directly for education, his example and his patronage of men of letters exercised a most salutary effect. The old system of rigid social privi- lege was, however, still maintained, and unsurmountable barriers separated the noble from the citizen and the citizen from the peasant. The position of the last was very deplorable ; villainage still to a great extent existed, and the mental attitude of the rural population was servile in the extreme.!_ The paramount defect of Frederick's administration, as future events proved, was the neglect of any effort to encourage independence and power of self- government among the people. Every measure emanated from the king himself, and the country learned to rely on him alone for help in every emergency. Public opinion on political matters could not be said to exist ; and the

provincial diets met simply to receive the instructions of the royal agents.

. . %

u One illustration of this is afforded by the fact that the private soldiers felt no resentment at being struck by their officers,

In 1772 Prussia and Austria, in order to prevent an overweening growth of Russia, joined in the first partition of Poland. Frederick's share consisted of West Prussia and the Netze district, a most welcome addition, filling up the gap between the great mass of his territories and the isolated district of East Prussia. It had also this advan- tage over later acquisitions at Poland's expense, that it was a thoroughly German land, having formed part of the colonizations of the Teutonic Order. In 1778 Prussia found herself once more in opposition to Austria on the question of the Bevarian succession, but the war that ensued was almost entirely nominal, and the difficulty was adjusted without much bloodshed. The same question elicited the last action of importance in which Frederick engaged,—the formation of a " Fiirstenbund," or league of German princes under Prussian supremacy, to resist the encroachments of Austria. The importance of this union was soon obscured by the momentous events of the French Revolution, but it was a significant foreshadowing of the duel of Austria and Prussia for the pre-eminence in Ger- many. Frederick died on 17th August 1786, having in-ereased his territories to an area of 75,000 square miles, with a population of five anda half millions. The revenue also had immensely increased and now amounted to about twenty million thalers annually, of which, however, thirteen were spent on the army. The treasury contained a fund of sixty million thalers, and the land was free of debt.

Frederick A continuation of the personal despotism under which

I.

William Prussia had now existed for seventy years, as well as of its

disproportionate influence in Europe, would have required a ruler with something of the iron will and ability of Frederick the Great. Unfortunately Frederick's nephew and suc- cessor, Frederick William II. (1786-1797), had neither the energy nor the insight that his position demanded. He was too undecided to grasp the opportunity of adding to Prussia's power by adhering to the vigorous external policy of his predecessor, nor did he on the other hand make any attempt to meet the growing discontent of his subjects under their heavy burdens by putting himself at the head of an internal movement of liberal reform. The rule of absolutism contintied, though the power now lay more in the hands of a "'camarilla" or cabinet

than in those of the monarch ; and the statesmen who now came to the front were singularly short-sighted and inefficient. The freedom of religion and the press left by Frederick the Great was abrogated in 1788 by royal ordinance. In 1787 the army engaged in an expensive and useless campaign against Holland. The abandonment of Frederick's policy was shown in a tendency to follow the lead of Austria, which culminated in an alliance with that power against revolu- tionary France. But in 1795 Prussia, suspicious of the Polish plans of Russia and Austria, concluded the separate peace of Basel, almost the only redeeming feature of which was the stipulation that all north German states beyond a certain line of demarcation should participate in its benefits. This practically divided Germany into two camps and inflicted a severe blow on the imperial system. The indifference with which Prussia relinquished to France German lands on the left bank of the Rhine, compared with her eagerness to increase her Slavonic terri- tories on the east, was certainly one of the great blunders of the reign. Prussia's share in the second and third partitions of Poland (1793 and 1795) nearly doubled her extent, but added little or nothing to her real power. The twelve years following the peace of Basel form one of the most sombre periods of the history of Prussia. Her prestige was lost by her persistent and ill-timed neutrality in the struggle with France; the old virtues of economy, order, and justice disappeared from the bureaucracy ; the army was gradually losing its excellence and was weakened

Pie US ee i

rather than strengthened by the hordes of disaffected Polish recruits ; the treasury was exhausted and a large debt in- curred ; the newly-awakened feeling of German patriotism had died away, especially among the upper classes.

Frederick William III. (1797-1840) possessed many Frederick virtues that did him credit in his private capacity, but he William lacked the vigour that was at this juncture imperatively ~~

required from a ruler of Prussia, while he was unfortu- nately surrounded by counsellors who had as little concep- tion as himself of Prussia's proper réle. He continued to adhere closely to a policy of timid neutrality and seemed content to let Prussia slip back into the position of a second-rate

state, the attitude of which in the great Euro- pean struggle could be of no special importance. Not even the high-handed occupation of Hanover by the French in 1803 could arouse him; and the last shred of self-respect seemed to have been parted with in 1805 when Prussia consented to receive Hanover, the property of its ally England, from the hands of France. The formation of the Confederation of the Rhine in 1806 and the intelligence that France had agreed to restore Hanover to England at last convinced Frederick William of what he had to fear from Napoleon; while Napoleon on his side, being now free of his other antagonists, was only too glad of an opportunity to destroy his tool. Prussia declared war on 9th October 1806; and the short campaign that ensued showed that the army of Frederick the Great had lost its virtue, and that Prussia, single-handed, was no match for the great French commander. On 14th October the Prussian armies were overthrown at Jena and Auerstadt, and a total collapse set in. Disgraceful capitulations of troops and fortresses without a struggle followed one another in rapid succession; the court fled to East Prussia ; and Napoleon entered Berlin in triumph. At the peace of Tilsit (9th July 1807) Frederick William lost half his kingdom, including all that had been acquired at tlie second and third partitions of Poland and the whole of the territory to the west of the Elbe. An enormous war indemnity was also demanded, and the Prussian fortresses were occupied by the French until this should be paid. Prussia now paid heavily for its past remissness and drained the cup of humiliation to the dregs.

The next half-dozen years form a period of the greatest significance in the history of Prussia, embracing, as they do, the turning-point in the moral regeneration of the country. The disasters of 1806 elicited a strong spirit of devoted patriotism, which was fanned by the exertions of the ‘“ Tugendbund,” or League of Virtue, and by the writ- ings of men like Fichteand Arndt. This was accompanied by a wonderful revelation of vitality and recuperative power.

chancellor Hardenberg. The condition on which Stein based his acceptance of office was itself of immense import- ance ; he insisted that the system of governing through irresponsible cabinet councillors, which had gradually be- come customary, should cease, and that the responsible ministers of departments should be at once the confidential advisers and the executive

agents of the king. Stein's designs and wishes extended to the establishment of a regular system of parliamentary and local government like that of England, but he had not an opportunity to do much more than begin the work. His edict of 1807 abolished serfdom and obliterated the legal distinction of classes by establishing freedom of exchange in land and free choice of occupation.! The '"Stadteordnung " of 1808

1 Previous to this measure the distinction between '' noble,' "burgher," and "peasant" land and occupations was strictly observed, and no transition of property or employment from one class to another was possible.

The credit of the reformation belongs mainly te Stein's the great minister Stein, and in the second place to the reforms.

reformed the municipalities and granted them important rights of self-government. His administrative reforms amounted to a complete reconstruction of the ministerial departments and the machinery of provincial government, and practically established the system now In force. In 1810 Hardenberg, with a precipitancy which Stein would scarcely have approved, continued the reform in the con- dition of the peasants by making them absolute owners of part of their holdings, the landlords obtaining the rest as an indemnity for their lost dues.1 The revolution thus effected in Prussia has been aptly compared in its results to the great revolution in France ; but, while there the reforms were exacted by a people in arms, here they were rather forced upon the people by the crown. The army was also reorganized by Scharnhorst and Gneisenau, while the condition imposed by Napoleon that it should not exceed 42,000 men was practically evaded by replacing each body of men by another as soon as it was fairly versed in military exercises. The educational reforms of Wilham von Humboldt established the school system of Prussia on its present basis, and the university of Berlin was founded in 1809.

Frederick William hesitated to take part in the Austrian rising of 1809, but his opportunity came in 1813, when Napoleon fled from Russia, denuded of his troops. General York, commander of the corps that Prussia had been obliged to contribute to the French expedition, anticipated the formal

declaration of war by joining the Russians with his troops on his own responsibility (30th December 1812). On the outbreak of the war the people rose en masse and with the utmost enthusiasm. The regular army was sup- ported by hosts of “‘ Landwehr,” or militia, eager to share in the emancipation of their country. A treaty of alliance between Russia and Prussia was concluded at Kalisch, and Austria, after some hesitation, also joined the league against Napoleon. In the struggle that followed (see Austria, vol. 1. pp. 134-135) Prussia played one of the most prominent parts, and her general Bliicher ranks high among the heroes of the war. Between 1813 and the battle of Waterloo Prussia lost 140,000 men, and strained her financial resources to the utmost. As compensation she received at the congress of Vienna the northern half of Saxony, her old possessions to the west of the Elbe, Swedish Pomerania, the duchies of Berg and Jiilich, and other districts in Westphalia and on the Rhine. The acquisitions of the last partition of Poland, with the excep- tion of the grand-duchy of Posen, were resigned to Russia, Friesland went to Hanover, and Bavaria was allowed to retain Baireuth and Ansbach, which had come into her hands in 1806. This rearrangement of the map did not wholly restore Prussia to its former extent, as its area was now only 108,000 square miles compared with 122,000 square miles at the beginning of 1806, but the substitu- tion of German for Slavonic territory and the shifting of the centre of gravity towards the west more than made up for any slight loss In mere size. Hanover still formed a huge wedge splitting Prussia completely in two, and the western frontier was very ragged. Prussia’s position re- quired caution, but forced upon it a national German policy, and the situation of the new lands was vastly more effectual in determining the future leader of Germany than ae 8 aggrandizement in Italy. The work of incor- _ eae was accomplished with as little

F I 7 e, and the Prussian statesmen had the ce . re to leave the Rhenish districts in the full enjoy- : 8) the institutions they had been used to under the

rench régime. The remainder of Frederick William ITI.’s reign, though

2 The patrimonial jurisdiction of the 1 away till 1848, sine

was not taken

marked by much material and social progress, was in the political sphere a period of the most deplorable reaction. At first the king seemed disposed to fulfil his promise of 1815 and grant the country a constitution, but ultimately both le and his minister Hardenberg suffered themselves to be dragged in the wake of the retrogressive policy of Metternich. The only concession made to the popular demand was the utterly inadequate patent of 1823, appoint- ing triennial provincial diets with a merely consultative function. The king also allowed himself to be alarmed by the ultra-liberal movement at the universities, and joined in the notorious Carlsbad decrees (1819) and in the senseless prosecutions of demagogues that formed the sequel. Many of Prussia's noblest and most patriotic sons now suffered unmerited punishment, and the Government showed a total incapacity to understand the real state of affairs. Respect for the aged king, however, prevented an outburst during his reign. After 1830 Prussia began to shake herself clear of the Austrian leading-strings, and the establishment of the " Zollverein," or customs union of the German states under Prussian supremacy, was a decided step towards a policy of independence. In ecclesiastical matters this reign is memorable for the union forced by the crown upon the Lutherans and Calvinists, and for the preliminary symptoms of the '" Culturkampf."

Frederick William IV. (1840-1861), a man of character and intelligence, began his reign promisingly by an amnesty for political offenders and by well-meant concessions to the dissatisfied Ultramontanes; but it soon became evident that he held too exalted an idea of the divine right of kings willingly to grant such a constitution as was required. Then followed the contest between the crown and the people, the various steps of which have been chronicled in the article Germany. At last the king had to give way and grant a constitution based upon democratic principles, and substituting a representative parliament for the old Prussian system of estates. This constitution was pro- mulgated on 3lst January 1850, and Prussia therewith formally entered the ranks of modern and constitutional states. But in the following years the king maintained as reactionary a policy as was in any

way compatible with the constitution, receiving his chief support in this line of action from the Prussian “Junkerthum,” or squirearchy. In external politics the chief feature of the reign is Prussia’s neglect of the opportunity to take up a strong position as the political and military leader of northern and central Germany: the king refused the imperial crown offered to him by the Frankfort Parliament in 1849, and allowed Prussia to play a subordinate réle at Olmiitz in the fol- lowing year. Towards the close of his life the Prussian Government was distrusted at home and discredited abroad.

In 1858 William, prince of Prussia, became regent in consequence of the mental illness of his brother, and in 1861 he succeeded to the throne as William I. His acces- sion was hailed as likely to increase both the liberalism of Prussia’s internal institutions and the vigour of its external policy ; and the second at least of these expectations was not disappointed. But at an early period of his reign the king became involved in a constitutional dispute with the House of Representatives, which declined to grant the supplies necessary for an extensive system of military reorganization. Bismarck, who became prime minister in 1862, refused to allow the crown to be hampered by patrlia- mentary restrictions and raised the funds required in defi- ance of the attitude of the lower house. This internal conflict may have had its influence in forcing upon the ministry the necessity of a strong foreign policy, especially in its dealings with Austria, though the party of reform believed that the hegemony of Germany might have been secured by Prussia without war if she had simply placed

herself at the head of the liberal movement. Prussia’s neutral attitude in the Austro-Italian War was the first sign of the coming storm ; and then followed the Schileswig- Holstein episode, culminating in the war of 1866 (see Avsrria), the successful issue of which expelled Austria from Germany and left its rival in undisputed possession. The territorial acquisitions which Prussia now made, con- sisting of Hanover, Hesse-Cassel, Hesse-Nassau, Frankfort, and Schleswig- Holstein, increased its extent by about a fifth and

for the first time gave a satisfactory rounding-off toitsform. The Prussian landtag, carried away by success, granted Bismarck, by a large majority, the indemnity he had the grace to ask for in regard to his previous unconsti- tutional proceedings in the financial dispute.

The war of 1866 gave the deathblow to the Germanic Confederation of 1815, and in its place appeared the North German Confederation under the lead of Prussia. The transformation was completed five years later, after the successful war with France, when the south German states also joined the union and the king of Prussia became the German emperor. The united Germany that Frederick the Great had sought in the Fiirstenbund, that Frederick William III. had tried to organize in 1806 in opposition to the Confederation of the Rhine, that Frederick William IY. had hoped to achieve in 1850, was at length an accomplished fact. In entering this union Prussia may in a sense be said to have abdicated her position as a great power in favour of Germany, but her influence within the empire, practically comprising that of all the small north German states, is so overwhelming that her identity is not likely ever to be wholly lost. Any measure increasing the power of the empire at the expense of the individual states is tantamount to an increase of the power of Prussia.

Since the Franco-German War the history of Prussia has been for the outside world practically identical with that of Germany and has centred in the figure of Prince Bismarck. The policy of the imperial chancellor and Prussian premier is essentially autocratic in its nature, and seems to have for its keynote the necessity of main- taining at any price a strong central Government to cope with external emergencies. He identifies himself with no party, but generally manages by timely concessions to form such temporary parliamentary combinations as are necessary to carry the measures he has most at heart. On the other hand, he does not hesitate freely to call into requisition the royal veto on resolutions of parliament of which he does not approve. His reversion to a strong protectionist policy, which became marked in 1879, the date to which the history is brought down in the article GerMANY, has so far proved permanent, and numerous protective measures have been passed, though his favourite scheme of a Government monopoly of tobacco has been decisively rejected both by the imperial and the Prussian chambers. Asa pendant to these measures may be

men- tioned the laws intended to improve the position of the working classes, most of which are inspired by a spirit of state socialism. The alienation of the National Liberals, occasioned by the change in Bismarck's economic policy, has compelled him to seek his later majorities in a com- bination of Conservatives and Ultramontanes, the benefit of which has been mainly reaped by the latter. On the ac- cession of Pope Leo XIII. some conciliatory advances were made by Rome and Prussia; in 1881 diplomatic relations Were reopened with the Vatican, and several important concessions were made by a measure passed in 1883. The May laws have not been repealed, but they have latterly been put in force with much less stringency, and a great many of the vacant bishoprics and pastorates have been at least temporarily filled. The Ultramontanes continue to form one of the largest "fractions" both in the reichstag

and in the Prussian landtag. In spite of the continued existence of the special law passed against the socialists, which has been prolonged from time to time, their numbers have grown steadily, and in the autumnal election of 1884 they returned no fewer than twenty-four of their candidates to the reichstag, polling 550,000 votes, or about ten per cent. of the total number recorded. Their success was especially marked in Berlin, where they returned two members and polled 70,000 votes. The same election was also remarkable for the diminution of the German Liberal- ists (Deutsch-Ireisinnige), a party formed by the fusion of the Progressists and Secessionists.

Perhaps the most significant event in the recent history of Germany has been her entrance into the ranks of the colonial powers by the annexation in 1884 of several dis- tricts on the west coast of Africa, and among the islands of the Pacific Ocean. In this step Prince Bismarck has revived a policy that has slumbered since the time of the Great Elector (see p. 8), but there seems little reason to doubt that this new scheme of colonization will prove of more permanent importance than that of the 17th century.

CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF THE CHIEF EVENTS IN THE HIsTORY OF PRUSSIA.

930. Foundation of the North Mark, the nucleus of Brandenburg. 1134. Albert the Bear is invested with the North Mark, and founds the Ascanian line of margraves. 1230-83. Conquest of Preussen by the Teutonic Order. 1324-66. Margraves of the Bavarian line. 1356. Brandeuburg definitely recognized as an electorate. 1373-1413, Luxemburg line of electors. 1415. Frederick of Hohenzollern becomes elector of Brandenbnrg. 1539, Reforma- tion proclaimed by Joachim II. 1618. Duchy of Prussia inherited by Elector John Sigismund. 1640. Accession of Frederick William, the Great Elector. 1648. Brandenburg-Prussia receives Farther Pomerania, Magdeburg, Halber- stadt, and Minden at the peace of Westphalia. 1657. Independence of the duchy of Prussia recognized. 1675. Victory over the Swedes at Fehrbellin. 1701. Elector Frederick assumes the title of ‘‘ king of Prussia.” 1720. Acqnisition of Hither Pomerania. 1740. Accession of Frederick the Great. 1742. Acquisi- tion of Silesia at the close of the first Silesian War. 1744-45. Second Silesian War. 1756-63. Seven Years’ War; principal victories : Prague (6th May 1757), Rossbach (5th November 1757), Leuthen (5th December 1757), Liegnitz (idth August 1760), and Torgau (3d November 1760) ; principal defeats: Kolin (Sth June 1757), Hochkirch (14th October 1758), Kunersdorf (12th August 1759). 1772. First partition of Poland; acquisition of West Prussia, 1792. War with France. 1793. Second partition of Poland; acquisition of South Prussia. 1795. Third partition of Poland; acqnisition of New East Prussia; peace of Basel, providing for Prussia’s neutrality in the strnggle with France. 1806. War declared against Napoleon; defeats of Jena and Auerstaédt; Prussia conquered by the French. 1807. Peace of Tilsit and dismemberment of the kingdom. 1808, Beginning of Stein’s constitutional reforms. 1813. War of liberation; battle of Leipsic (16th to 19th October). 1814-15. Congress of Vienna; Prussia rehabilitated ; establishment of the Germanic Confederation. 1815. Battle of Waterloo. 1850. Promuigation of the Prussian constitution. 1864, War with Denmark. 1866. War with Austria; battle of Koniggratz (3d July); acquisition of Hanover, Schleswig-Holstein, and electoral Hesse; establishinent of North German Confederation. 1870-71. War with France. 1871. The king of Prussia proclaimed German emperor.

GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

Physical Features.._Fully three-fifths of Prussia belong to the Physical great north European plain and may be generally characterized as features.

lowlands. The plain is much wider on the east, where only the southern margin of Prnssia is mountainous, than on the west, where the Hanoverian hills approach to within less than 100 miles of the sea. A line drawn fron: Diisseldorf through Halle to Breslau would, roughly speaking, divide the flat part of the conntry from the hilly distriets. In the south-east Prussia is separated from Austria and Bohemia by the Sudetie chain, which begins at the valley of the Oder and extends thence towards the north-west. This chain includes the Riesen Gebirge, with the highest mountain in Prussia (Schneeckoppe, 5266 feet), and subsides gradually in the hills of Lnsatia. The Harz Mountains, however, beyond the Saxon plain, follow the same general direction and may be regarded asa detached continuation of the system. To the south of the Harz the Prussian frontier intersects the northern part of the Thuringian Forest, which is also prolonged towards the north-west by the Weser Hills and the Teutoburgian Forest. The south-west of Prussia is occupied by the plateau of the lower Rhine, including on the left bank the Hundsriiek and the Eifel, and on the right the Taunus, the Westerwald, and the Sanerland. Between the lower Rhenish and Thuringian systems are interposed the Vogelsberg, the Rhén, and other hills belonging to the Triassic system of the upper Rhine. The Silesian mountains are composed ehiefly of granite, gneiss, and schists, while the Harz and the lower Rhenish plateau are mainly of Devonian and Silurian formation. To the north of the Sauerland is the important Carboniferous system of the

1 The physical features of Prussia have been already so fully de- seribed under Germany that it has been deemed unnecessary to give here more than the briefest recapitulation. For other points which the reader may here miss he is also referred to that article.

Climate.

Soil.

Products,

Ruhr, and there are also extensive coal-fields in Silesia. With the exception of the Danube Prussia is traversed by all the chief Be of Germany, comprising almost the entire course of the Oder an the Weser. Nearly the whole of the Gerinan coast-line belongs to Prussia, and it possesses all the important seaports except the two most important of all, Hamburg and Bremen. ;

Climate.—The climate of Prussia is rendered more uniform than it would otherwise be by the fact that the average elevation in- ereases from north to south. The greatest extremes of temperature are found between the east and west, the mean annual warmth in the bleak and exposed provinces of the north-east being about 44 Fahr., while that of the sheltered valley of the Rhine is 6° higher. The difference is greatest in winter, when the respective means are 26° and 35°; in summer the difference is not above 2¢ to 4”. In Prussia as a whole the thermometer ranges from 100° to — 30°, but these extremes are rarely reached. The average annual rainfall is about 21 inches ; it is highest in the hilly district on the west (34 inches) and on the north-west coast (30 to 32 inches), and lowest (16 inches) in the inland parts of the eastern provinces.

Soil.— According to the most recent official returns, about 29 per cent. of the soil of Prussia consists of good loam or clay, 32 per cent. is mediocre or of loam and sand mixed, 31 per cent. is pre- dominantly sandy, and 6 per cent. is occupied by bogs and marshes. The north-eastern provinces eontain a high proportion of poor soil, and in the north-west oceur large traets of heath and moor. The reclaimed marshlands in both districts, as well as the soil in the immediate neighbourhood of the rivers, are usually very fertile,

and admirable traets of fruitful ground are found in the valleys of

the Rhine and its affluents and in the plain around Magdeburg. Patient and long-continued effort has, however, done much to equalize production, and large crops are now grown in some of the most unpromising parts of the kingdom. Prussia contains a greater proportion of tilled land than any of the countries of south Germany, while it is surpassed in this respect by Saxony, Hesse-Darmstadt, and the Thuringian states. The most fertile Prussian

province is Saxony, while the least productive are East and West Prussia. The following table shows the distribution of the cultivable area in the different provinees and in the country as a whole :—

| Meadow and F Arable Land, | Forests. Province. Area, – >| Pasture, 2 2 50 per cent. | 20°4 per cent. 23°3 per cent.

Sq. miles, Acres. Acres, Acres, BastyProsata…..... 14,280 4,709,295 2,127,317 1,681,057 West Pinssia…....| 9,850 3,455,000 1,124,885 1,349,392 Brandenburg …...| 15,410 4,586,360 1,487,872 3,205,635 Pomerania 11,620 4,152,002 1,408, 882 1,480,990 | Rosen 2 11,180 4,452, 360 934,450 1,464,449 SS eee eee ae 15,560 5,588,090 1,055,487 2,907,570 h GSANOMY: Meee… oe 9,750 3,836,192 826,352 1,269,920 Schleswig-Holstein .. 7,280 2,712,575 1,357,905 287,917 IFETION GT… sone e 14,840 3,126,182 4,365,115 1,512, 567 Westphalia…..... 7,800 2,121,745 1,262,530 1,411,085 Hesse-Nassau …... 6,060 1,561,552 623,872 1,572,492 Rhenish Prussia ….! 10,420 3,134,190 1,158,065 2,073,580 Hoheuzollern …., 440 130,967 50,212 94,652 Total 134,490 43,566,510 17,782,944 20,311,299

Prussia contains a greater proportion of woodland than any other large country in the south or west of Europe (France 17 per cent., Italy 12 per eent., Great Britain 3 per cent.), though not so large a proportion as Russia, Austria, and some of the minor German states. The most extensive forests are in East and West Prussia, Silesia, and Brandenburg, where coniferous trees prevail, and in the Rhenish and Hessian districts, where oaks and beeches are the most prominent growths. The north-vest is almost entirely desti- tute of timber, and peat is there used universally as fuel, The Government forests cover about 6,000,000 acres, or upwards of one- fourth of the whole, and are admirably managed, bringing in an annual revenue of 14 millions sterling. The state also controls the management of forests in private possession, and exerts itself to secure the planting of waste lands.

Products. —The principal crop in Prussia is rye, of which the ordinary bread of the country is made ; it grows in all parts of the kingdom, especially in the north and east, and oeeupies about one- fourth of the whole tilled surface. Oats occupy an area equal to about half that devoted to rye, and are also grown most extensively in the north-eastern district’, Wheat,

which is chiefly cultivated in the south and west, does not cover more than a fourth as much ground as rye. Barley is most largely grown in Saxony and Silesia. Other grain crops are spelt (chiefly on the Rhine), buekwheat (Hanover and Schleswig-Holstein), and millet; maize is grown for fodder in Some districts. The produce of grain scarcely covers the consumption and is supplemented by imports of rye and other cereals from Russia and Holland, Potatoes, used both as food aud for the distillation of spirits, are cultivated over nearly as large an area as rye and are especially predominant in the eastern provinces The common beet is extensively grown for the production of sugar in Saxony, Hanover, Silesia, Pomerania, and Brandenbure Flax and hemp oceupy considcrable areas in East Prussia, Silesia and

? Mite

Poi US aS Te:

[SOIL AND PRODUCTS.

r, while hops are raised chiefly in Posen and Saxony. The eas of ape el for oil has fallen off since the use of petro- leum has become general. The tobacco of Silesia, Brandenburg, Hanover, and the Rhine province is inferior to that of southern Germany ; the annual value of Prussian-grown tobacco is about £500,000, or one-fourth of the total produce of the empire. Only a comparatively sinall part of the Rhenish wine district falls within Prussia, which does not elaim more than a sixth (200,000,000 gallons, value £400,000) of the annual produce of Germany ; but this ineludes many of the choicest varieties, such as Steinberger, Johannisberger, and Riidesheimer. The best vineyards of the Moselle also belong to Prussia, and inferior kinds of wine are pro- duced in Saxony and Lower Silesia. Great quantities of apples, cherries, and plums are raised ou the Rhine, in Saxony, and other districts, while market-gardening on an extensive scale is practised near Erfurt and some other large towns. The hay-meadows of the eastern provinees are the largest, but those in the west bear lieavier erops. ‘The richest pasture is afforded by the marshlands along the North Sea and by the plain of the lower Rhine, while the Targe moors of Westphalia and Hanover are of comparatively little value in this respect. The accompanying table shows the yield in tons of the principal crops in 1883, in which year, however, the returns were rather below the average :-— ,

| Province. | Rye | Wheat. Barley. | Oats. | Potatoes.| Hay. East Prussia…./ 330,565| s8,585| 71,987! 911,139| 586,640 600,231 ‘West Prussia ../ 269,030 83,608} 69,600| 119,710] 838,953] 390,984 Brandenburg ..| 499,957, 55,963] 74,330, 140,382 | 2,555,660 699,751 Pomerania…... | 810,789 64,406 59,554 | 183,554 | 1,240,691! 578,290 | Posen ….....6- | 366,707 | 82,999 | 71,156) 98,670 | 1,377,857 | 435,534 | | Silesia…..... | 481,706 177,981} 174,671| 330,810} 1,929,859| 703,269 ‘Saxony …..... 377,259 197,293| 278,237] 224,808 | 1,744,984] 424.477 | Schleswig- | 181,793 75,049) 60,775] 196,731} 224,869] 375,469. Holstein ae | 459,780 | 130,488} 44,053| 177,401] 1,003,765] 715,734 Westphalia ….! 264,358 88,153 27,976 | 116,435 714,486 333,833 Hesse-Nassau ../ 117,938| 60,110] 28,156 96,642| 642:360| 386,781 Rhenish Prussia | 237,883} 151,309] 43,078 224,720 1,383,182] 4787575 , Hohenzollern ae ses 1,894 6,463 9,433 19,955 | 48,197 Total… .‘3,898,617 1,257,718 |1,010,036 (2,125,435 14,263,211 j8,101,125

| i { ee ee ee ee ee |

About one-half of the cultivable soil is in the possession of owners with properties exeeeding 180 acres in extent and averaging 860 acres, while one-half of the total number of owners occupy only one-fortieth of the entire area. The manner of distribution varies greatly in different parts of the kingdom, large propertics prevailing in the less fertile regions in the east and veasant-holdings in the west. In the district of Stralsund the average number of land- owners for each German square mile is 100, while in the district of Wiesbaden it is ten times as high. In Silesia and Posen Jati-fundia oceupy nearly half the total area, though this disproportion is gradually disappearing there as elsewhere. Asa general rule the best crops seem to be raised on the holdings of intermediate size,

Live Stock.—Aceording to an enumeration made in 1883, Prussia Live contains 2,417,641 horses, 8,737,367 cattle, 14,752,328 sheep, stoek. 5,819,136 pigs, and 1,680,686 goats. The province of Fast Prussia, with the principal Government stud of Trakehnen, is the head- quarters of horse-rearing, and contains the greatest number of horses both relatively (1 per 5 inhabitants) and absolutely (383,555). The horses bred there are generally suitable for the hghter kind of work only, and are in great request for

military purposes. Horses of a stouter type are bred in Schleswig-Holstein and on the Rhine, but heavy draught horses have to be imported from France, Holland, Belgium, and Denmark. The best cattle are reared in the maritime provinces, and the highest proportion (65 per 100 inhabitants) is found in Sehleswig-Holstein, whence, as well as from the marshy lowlands of Hanover, large numbers are exported to England. As a rule, however, the south German states are richer in cattle than Prussia. Prussia is one of the leading sheep-breeding countries of Europe, and much has been done to improve the race and increase the value of the flesh and wool. In Pomerania there are 170 sheep for every 100 inhabitants, and West Prussia and Posen also contain a high proportion. The total number of sheep in Prussia is, how- ever, diminishing owing to the spread of agriculture and the in- creased importation of wool; in 1861 it was nearly 21 millions. Swine abound in the central provinees, and hams and sausages are largely exported from Westphalia, Hanover, and Saxony. Huge flocks of geese are reared in Pomerania, and bee-keeping is a profit- able industry in Hanover, East and West Prussia, and the province of the Rhine.

Fisheries.—The fishery on thé Baltie Sea and its haffs employs about 15,000 men, and that on the North Sea about 2000 more. In the former the take consists mainly of herrings, flat fish, salmon, mackerel, and eels, while the chief objects of the latter are cod and oysters. Inland fishery has been encouraged by the foundation of numerous piscicultural establishments and by the enactment of close-time laws. Carp, perch, pike, and salmon, the latter especi- ally in the Rhine, are the principal varieties ; sturgeon are taken in the Elbe and Oder, and the lakes of East Prussia swarm with

Fisheries.’

ees at

Minerals,

INDUSTRIES. |

bream and lampreys. Game of various kinds abounds in different parts of Prussia, and the lakes are frequented by large flocks of water-fowl. .

Minerals.—Although it is obvious that the recent formations of the north German plain can boast of little or no mineral wealth, Prussia still takes rank among the great mining states. Its produce of coal and iron exceeds that of any country in Europe, except Great Britain ; in the production of zinc it is the foremost country in the world ; and its stores of salt are very considerable. In 1882 the total valuc of the mineral produce of Prussia was about 177 millions sterling. About 370,000 persons are employed in its mines, the larger part of whom are engaged in the production of coal. For purposes of administration and supervision the entire country is divided into five mining districts (Oberbergamtsbezirke), the head- quarters of which are Breslau, Halle, Klausthal (in the Harz), Dort- mund, and Bonn.

The two great deposits of coal are in the basin of the Ruhr on the west, where about 20 million tons are raised annually, and in Upper Silesia, where the beds are still more extensive but the coal of asomewhat inferior quality. The greater part of the smaller but valuable coal-field of the Saar also belongs to Prussia, and other important beds occur in Lower Silesia, near Halle, and near Aix-la- Chapelle. In 1882 Prussia produced upwards of 47 million tons of coal, equal to 90 per cent. of the total yield of Germany, and double the output of 1869. Nearly three-fourths of this amount came from the western coal-fields and upwards of one-fourth from the coal-measures of Silesia. The total value was £11,636, 250. Brown coal or lignite is found throughout the whole of Prussia, exeept in the extreme north-east and north-west, but occurs most plentifully in Saxony, Brandenburg, and north Silesia. In 1882 the produce was nearly 11 million tons, value 13 millions sterling. Peat is cut in large quantities in Hanover, where 15 per cent. of the surface consists of moorland. Iron is found in all parts of Prussia, occurring in the form of bog-iron ore even in the northern lowlands. The richest districts are those of Coblentz in the province of the Rhine, Arnsberg in Westphalia, Oppeln in Silesia, and Wiesbaden. A valuable bed of magnetic-iron ore occurs in the Harz. In 1882 fully 4,000,000 tons of iron ore were raised in Prussia, valued at £1,415,950 and forming 70 per cent. of the total yield of Germany. The quantity of pig-iron smelted from these and from imported ores was 2,467,500 tons and its value £7,490,000. Prussia produces nearly the whole of the zinc of Germany, and Silesia three-fourths of that of Prussia; in 1882 the amount was 113,300 tons, valued at £1,795,000. The produce of lead in the same

year was 88,300 tons, valued at £1,200,000 and found mainly in the valley of the Lahn near Coblentz, in Silesia, in the Harz, and in Hesse-Nassau. Copper was produced to the extent of 15,400 tons and the value of £1,025,000 ; five-sevenths were raised in Saxony, which includes some of the productive mines of the Harz. Silver and gold are extracted from the copper ore of Mansfeld in Saxony, and silver also from the lead ores of Silesia, Aix-la- Chapelle, Wiesbaden, and Arnsberg. In 1882 the value of the silver smelted out was £1,214,700, of gold only £9050. Salt also ranks high in importance among the mineral treasures of Prussia. In 1882 the total yield included 252,300 tons of boiled salt, 210,100 tons of rock-salt, and 85,400 tons of other salts, with a total value of £719,600. Brine springs occur throughout almost the whole kingdom, but by far the most productive provinces are Saxony and Hanover. Rock-salt is mined at Stassfurt in the province of Saxony, and in Posen. Chloride of potash and potassium salts arc also extensively found in Saxony. The other mineral products include manganese, nickel, pyrites, cobalt, quicksilver, alum, gypsum, and sulphuric acid. Good building-stone is common throughout the country, marble is found in Silesia, and roofing slates in the Devonian formations of the Rhine and the Harz. Chalk pits and cliffs abound in the Island of Rtigen. The amber of the Baltic coast is picked up on the beach after a storm, and is also found by digging and dredging. About 3000 persons are em- ployed in the search, and in favourable seasons 3000 to 4000 ewts. are collected. Mineral springs are numerous among the mountains of Silesia, the Taunus, and the Eifel. The most generally known are those in the district of Wiesbaden, including Wiesbaden itself, Ems, Homburg, Schlangenbad, and Schwalbach.

Industries. — Prussia now takes a high place among the manufac- turing states of Europe, though the foundation of its industrial im- portance cannot be dated farther back than the reign of the Great Elector (1640-88). As a general rule, apart from a few of the larger towns, the busiest manufacturing centres are found on the lower slopes and outskirts of the mountainous districts, such as the Rhenish valleys, Lusatia, and the vicinity of the Silesian coal- fields. About 35 per cent. of the population are supported by industrial pursuits. The district of Diisseldorf is the busiest in Prussia, and Berlin and Elberfeld-Barmen are among the chief hives of industry on the

Continent. The principal manufactured products are woollen, linen, cotton, silk, and iron goods.

The metallic industries, as might be expected, flourish chiefly in the neighbourhood of the coal-fields and have reached their highest

development in the district of the Ruhr. Steel is made most ex- tensively in the districts of Arnsberg (Westphalia) and Diisseldorf ; at Essen in the latter is Krupp's celebrated cannon-foundry, with 20,000 workmen. Small iron and steel goods also come chiefly from the Westphalian and Rhenish districts; and the cutlery of Solingen, the tools of Remscheid, and the needles of Aix-la- Chapelle enjoy a widespread reputation. Berlin is the chief seat of the manufacture of machinery and locomotives. Small arms are made at Suhl, Spandau, Potsdam, and Sommerda (Erfurt). Articles in bronze, brass, and electro-plate are largely made at and exported from Berlin, Frankfort-on-the-Main, Iserlohn, and Altena, while gold and silver goods are produced chiefly at Berlin and Hanau.

The textile industries of Prussia are also important, employing 400,000 workpeople, though they do not rank in extent with those of Great Britain. Until recently the chicf textile manufacture was linen, which was largely made by hand in Silesia, Westphalia, and Saxony. The domestic mode of manufacture has now to a great extent disappeared, but Westphalian and Silesian linens still maintain their reputation. The manufacture covers the home demand, but about one-third of the necessary flax and hemp has to be imported. Jute is made at Bielefeld and Bonn. The manu- facture of cotton has of late made great progress, though it is not so important in Prussia as in the kingdom of Saxony and in Alsace. The chief centres of this branch of industry are Diisscl- dorf, Miinster, Elberfeld-Barmen, Hanover, Breslau, and Licgnitz.. About 65 per cent. of the woollen yarn of Germany is made in Prussia, and woollen cloth of good quality is produced in the pro- vince of the Rhine, Silesia, Brandenburg, and Saxony. The spinning and weaving of worsted and woollen cloth are also still carried on throughout the country as domestic industries, but not to such an extent as formerly. Wool and

worsted yarn are imported from England and other countries, but the cloth manufactured is much in excess of the home demand and forms an important article of export. Carpets are made at Berlin and at Diiren in the Rhine province. Silk is manufactured at Crefeld, Elberfeld-Barmen, and other places near the Rhine. Though hardly reaching the high standard of that of Lyons, Rhenish silk commands a good price, and is exported to England, America, Russia, and Austria.

Tobacco and cigars are largely manufactured at Berlin and numerous other towns, aud to some extent wherever the tobacco plant is cultivated. The annual consumption of tobacco amounts to about 4 fb per head of population, or nearly thrice as much as in Great Britain ; but the revenue derived from the tobacco excise, owing to the small impost on home-made tobacco, is not more than 6d. a head as compared with 5s. per head in England. A com- paratively modern but very important branch of industry is the manufacture of sugar from the common beet. The great centre of this industry is the province of Saxony, which in 1882-83 contained nearly half the 280 sugar-works in the kingdom, the remainder being chiefly in Hanover and Silesia. Upwards of 600,000 tons of raw sugar and 160,000 tons of molasses are produced annually.! About 320 million gallons of beer are brewed in Prussia per annum and about 35 million more are imported from Bavaria and Bohemia ; the consumption per head, amounting from 65 to 70 quarts, is about half of the English and one-fourth of the Bavarian rate. Wine-making, as already mentioned, is an important industry on the Rhine, and large quantities of spirits are distilled from potatoes in Brandenburg and the eastcrn provinces. The remaining indus- trial products of Prussia include chemicals, chiefly made in Saxony, Silesia, and the Rhenish province ; dyes, at Elberfeld-Barmen and Crefeld ; paper, in the districts of Aix-la-Chapelle, Arnsberg, and Liegnitz ; glass (“ Bohemian glass”’), in Silesia ; pianos, at Berlin, Breslau, Cassel, and Erfurt ; and scientific instruments, at Berlin and Halle. The artistic furniture and porcelain of Berlin are char- acteristic specialities. In nearly every department there has been in recent years a steady advance both in quantity and quality.

Trade.—The commerce of Prussiais greatly facilitated by itscentral Trade.

position, which enables it to carry on a very extensive transit trade ; but, as the returns are not separated from those of the other members of the Zollvercin, it is impossible to do more than guess at its annual value. According to the Almanach de Gotha, the total value of the exports and imports of the German Customs Union in 1883 amounted to upwards of £330,000,000; and, to judge from the customs receipts, about three-fifths of this amount must be credited to Prussia. The chief imports are tea, coffee, sugar, and other colonial products, grain, wine, textile fabrics, fruit, petroleum, and manufactured articles of various kinds. Among the principal ex-

orts are grain, cattle, wine, potatoes, woollen and linen goods, Mics and leather, chemicals, iron and steel wares, lead, and zinc. The export of grain to France and England has fallen off greatly of recent years, owing to the increasing demand at home. The inland trade is fostered by numerous fairs, the most important of which take place at the two Frankforts, Breslau, and Magdeburg. The money-markets of Berlin and Frankfort-on-the-Main are among the most influential in Europe.

1 Over-production, stimulated by over-protection and the high bounty on exportation, produced a serious crisis in this industry in 1884.

Com- munica- tion.

Popula- tion.

In 1883 Prussia possessed upwards of three-fifths of the merchant ships of Germany, including 2586 sailing vessels and 229 steamers, manned by 17,315 men. Their burden, however, aiounting to 449,391 tons, was little more than one-third of the whole, and was exceeded by that of Bremen and Hamburg taken together. None of the Prussian seaports vies with either Hamburg or Bremen ; Lies largest is Stettin, whieh possesses a fleet of 40 steamers and 280 sailing ships. In 1881 the Prussian harbours were entered by 38,054 vessels of 3,483,545 tous burden, and cleared by 38,005 of 3,518,098 tons burden. The best seamen are furnished by the fishing population of Friesland or Frisia. ae

Communication.—With most internal means of communication Prussia is well provided. Almost none of its excellent highroads existed in the time of Frederick the Great, and many of them date from the Napoleonic era. The first Prussian railway was laid in 1838, but the railway system did not reeeive its full development until the events of 1866 removed the obstacles placed in the way by Hanover. Most of the lines were easy of construction, and absorbed comparatively little capital. The great majority were laid by private companies, and the Government confined itself to establishing lines in distriets not likely to attraet private capital. In 1879, however, a measure was passed authorizing the acquisi- tion by the state of the private railways, and in 1884 nine-teuths of the 13,800 miles of railway in Prussia were in the hands of Government. The proportion of railway mileage in Prussia (5 iniles per 10,000 inhabitants) is nearly as high as in Great Britain, but the traffic is mueh less. Thus in 1880-81 the Prussian rail- ways carried only 124 million passengers, while the British lines conveyed 622 millions. The expenses swallowed up 56 per cent. of the gross receipts, or 4 per cent. more than those of England in the sarne year; but in the matter of railway accidents the comparison is more favourable to the Prussian railways, on which only 235 persons lost their lives as compared with about four times as many in Great Britain. The passenger traffic has not increased in pro- portion to the extension of the railway system and the growth of population, but the goods traffic has steadily advanced. ‘The canal system of Prussia is little beyond its infancy, the total length of all the canals in the kingdom being only 1200 miles, a very small number as compared with either England or France. Among the most important are those uniting the Pregel with the Memel, and the Vistula with the Oder (via the Netze), and those bringing the Spree and Havel into commuuication with the Elbe on the one side and the Oder on the other. Canals uniting the Ems and the

Rhine, the Ems and the Weser, and the Weser and the Elbe are still desiderata. navigable rivers.

Population.—The last census of Prussia was taken in 1880, and the accompanying table summarizes the principal results then ascer- tained. The total population amounts to about 60 per cent. of that of the German empire.

On the other hand, Prussia has a large supply of

ail 2S} Roman | ther – Popula- |“) Protest- Chris- | Provinces. ae ae ants. | — tian | Jews: |Others. ag F Sects.

East Prussia ….| 1,938,986 | 135 | 1,654,510 | 250,462 | 7,483} 18,218 3,263 | West Prussia ….| 1,405,898} 142| 672,402| 693,719 |12,390 | 26,547, 840 Brandenburg ….| 3,389,155 | 220| 3,182,486 | 181,781] 6,087 | 66,245) 2,556 Pomerania …... 1,540,034 | 132 1,498,930 23,877 | 1,962} 13,886] 1,379 Posen ayes eon on 1,703,397 | 152 532,499 11,112,020 451} 56,609 | 1,818 Silesia 0.0.00… 4,007,925 | 257 | 1,867,470 |2,082,084 | 3,328 | 52,682) 2,361 Rpxony.a…..... 2,312,007 | 237 | 2,154,655 | 145,51S| 3,394] 6,700, 1,740 Schleswig-Hol- 1,127,149 | 154) 1,111,252) 8,903 | 1,687} 3,522/ 1,785

stein | Hawover’..... 2,120,168 | 142 1,842,186 | 258,824) 2,738) 14,790} 1,680 Westphalia …... 2,013,442 | 262, 949,644 |1,070,212| 2,614] 18,S10| 2.169 Hesse-Nassau_ ..| 1,554,376 | 256 | 1,087,901! 420,206 | 3,073 | 41,316| 1,880 Rhtineland ary 4,074,000 | 390 | 1,077,173 2,944,186 | 7,015} 43,694 | 1,932 ohenzollern…. 67,624 153 | 2,221! 64,491 3 771 138

27,279,111 | 202 |17,633,279 9,206,283 52,225 863,790 |23,534 |

The following table shows the growth of the population since the death of Frederick, the first king of Prussia. The first trustworthy census of Prussia was taken in 1816; the earlier figures are only uiore or less reasonable estimates.

Bate. Population. Area in square Average per niles, square mile.

1713 1,731,000 43,425

1740 2,486,000 45,900 3

1786 5,430,000 75,220 vs

1797 8,700,000 118,000 73

1816 10,349,031 108,100 93

1831 13,038,070 108,100 120

1864 19,254,649 108,430 Witt

1880 27,279,111 134,490 202°8

Between 1816 and 1831 the increase of the population i was about 30 per cent., and between 1831 ee T3864 it ae ae cent. Some districts have more than doubled their population since 1816, but the annual increment since 1866 has not exceeded 1 per cent., a fact due to the less rapid multiplication in the new pro-

vinces and the losses in the Franco-German War. The rate of increase in the latter part of the period 1867-84 has, however, been considerably more rapid than in the first half. The inerease is

cutirely due to the surplus of births over deaths, as emigration is-

very much in excess of nmmigration. With the exception of Saxony and some of the smallest states, Prussia is increasing more rapidly in population than any other member of the German empire. Its rate of increase is fully twice that of France aud about the same as that of the United Kingdom. The highest rate of increase i 1875-80 took place in Berlin (2°92 per annum) and Westphalia (1°39), the lowest in Hohenzollern (0°35) and East Prussia (0°82). The birth-rate, which for the entire country is 40 per 1000, is highest in West Prussia, Posen, and Westphalia and lowest in Schleswig-Holstein, Hanover, and Hesse-Nassau. The death-rate for the whole monarehy is about 27 per 1000, considerably higher than that of Great Britain, which is about 20 per 1000. Pomerania is remarkable for its low death-rate, West Prussia and Silesia for a high one. Both the birth-rate and the death-rate show a tendency todininish. Of the birtlis in 1882 8°11 per cent. were illegitimate, the proportion varying from 2°92 per cent. in Westphalia to 11 per eent. in Pomerania, and nearly 15 per cent. in Berlin. Between 1872 and 1880 the number of marriages diminished with ahnost unvarying steadiness; sinee 1880 it has risen again and uow amounts to about 8 per 1000 inhabitants. An interesting feature is the large proportion of mixed confessional marriages, amounting as a rule to about 7 per cent. of the whole. Between 1871 and 1881 the annual emigration from Prussia

amounted to 1°8 per 1000 inhabitants ; in 1882 no fewer than 129,894, and in 1883 104,167 emigrants left the country by the German ports and Antwerp. The highest proportion of emigrants comes from Pomerania (5°6) and Posen (4°3), the lowest from Silesia, the Rhineland, and Saxony.

A study of the figures in the table given above will show that as a rule the density of population increases from north to south and from east to west. As might be expected, the thickest population is found in the mining and manufacturing district of the Rhine, which is closely followed by the coal-regions of Silesia and parts of Saxony and Westphalia. The proportion for the whole kingdom is about 200 per square mile, but in the district of Diisseldorf this figure rises to 750 and in the nioorlands of Hanover it sinks to less than 50. According to the census of 1880, 57°4 per cent. of the popula- tion is rural, and 42°6 per cent. urban, 7.¢., lives in communities of more than 2000 inhabitants. The relative proportions vary greatly in the different provinces, as much as 62 per cent. of the population living in towns in the Rhineland, and as little as 23 or 24 per cent. in East Prussia and Posen. About 17 per cent. of the population is absorbed by towns each with 29,000 inhabitants aud upwards, while in Great Britain half the population is massed in the large towns and from 65 to 70 per cent. is urban. In Prussia also there is observable a strong movement towards concentration in towns, the annual rate of increase in the urban population being six times as great as that in the rural communities. In 1880 Prussia contained 24 towns each with upwards of 50,000 inhabit- ants, and 7 with upwards of 100,000 inhabitants, the correspond- ing numbers in Great Britain being 59 and 26. The following are the towns with upwards of 100,000 inhabitants each :—

SOMPRI cia terese sei stele svcreiee 1,122,330 IROMESDEUE, ia… te sector 140,909 GTOSIAMW os im scree Dees 272,912 Frankfort-on-the-Main ..136,819 18 C00) er 145,227 DEUSIC. 8. yon coe 108,551 Colm bade esa 144,772

Elberfeld and Barmen practically form one town with a popula- tion of 189,479 ; and Magdeburg, Diisseldorf, Stettin, and Altona are all above 90,000. The annual rate of suicides in Prussia is 18 to 20 per 100,000 inhabitants, a proportion seldom exceeded among European states. Divided

according to nationalities, the present (1885) population of Prussia consists roughly of 24,000,000 Germans, 2,800,000 Poles in the eastern provinces, 150,000 Lithu- anians in the north-cast, 180,000 Danes in Schleswig – Holstein, 90,000 Wends in Brandeuburg and Silesia, 60,000 Czechs in Silesia, and 12,000 Walloons near the Belgian frontier. In the rural dis- tricts of Posen and in parts of Silesia the Poles form the predominant element of the population.

In 1882 a census of occupations was taken in the German empire, the main results of which, so far as they relate to Prussia, are summarized in the following table. The figures include the wives, families, and other dependants of those actually engaged in the several occupations. The actual workers are about 11 millions in number and their dependants 16 millions.

tg | Ss

Percentage

Number of per- of total

Oc tions, cupations sons supported.

population. ee ee [cai ete 1. Agriculture, forestry, and fishing …..... 11,904,407 43 2 lndustrial PUrSWiLS |... oc.6 les. lee. leon. 9,393,750 35 Gk, JET 12 ne sees | Se eh Mn en 2,725,844 10 4. Domestic servants (and general labourers) 690,892 2-4 5. Official, military, and professional classes 1,305,657 5 6. Personsnot returned underany occupation 1,267,810 4°6

Religion.

Eduea- tion,

EDUCATION. |

Religious Statistics. —According to the census returns of 1880 (see table, p. 16), 64°64 per cent. of the population of Prussia were Pro- testants, 84 per cent. Roman Catholics, and 1°33 Jews. A glance at a confessional map of Prussia shows that the centre of the king- dom is solidly Protestant, the

proportion of Roman Catholics increas- ing as the eye travels east or west and reaching its maximum on the Rhine and in the Slavonic provinces. East Prussia, however, with the exception of Ermland, is Protestant. The Roman Catholics out- number the Protestants in the provinces of the Rhine (3 to 1), Posen, Silesia, and West Prussia. All religious bodies are granted freedom of worship, and civil rights are not conditional upon religious confession.

The Evangelical or Protestant State Church of Prussia consists as it now stands of a union of the Lutherans and Calvinists, effected under royal pressure in 1817. According to the king this was not a fusion of two faiths but an external union for mutual admission to the Eucharist and for the convenience of using the same liturgy, prepared under the royal superintendence. Those who were unable from conscientious scruples to join the union became Separatist or Old Lutherans and Old Calvinists, but their numbers were and are insignificant. The king is ‘‘summus episcopus,” or supreme pontiff of the ehurch, and is represented in the exercise of his ecclesiastical functions by the minister of public worship and instruction. The highest authority for the ordinary management of the church is the ‘‘Oberkirchenrath,” or supreme church council at Berlin, which acts through provincial consistories and superintendents appointed by the crown. Recent legislation has made an effort to encourage self-government and give a congregational eharacter to the church by the granting of a presbyterial constitution, with parish, diocesan, provincial, and general synods. The clergy, of whom there were 9146 in 1880, are appointed by the crown, by the consistories, by private or municipal patronage, or by congregational election.

The hierarchy of the Roman Catholic Church in Prussia consists of two archbishops (Cologne, Gnesen-Posen) and ten bishops. The prince-bishop of Breslau and the bishops of Ermland, Hildes- heim, and Osnabriick are directly under the pope, and the bishop- ries of Fulda and Limburg are in the archiepiscopal diocese of Freiburg in Baden. The higher ecclesiastics receive payment from the state, and the annual appropriation appearing in the budget for the Roman Catholic Church is as high as that made for the State Church. All the Roman Catholic religious orders in Prussia have been suppressed except those mainly or wholly occupied with attend- ance on the sick.

The relations of the state with the dissenting Christian sects, such as the Baptists, Mennonites, and Moravian Brethren, are prac- tically confined to granting them charters of incorporation which ensure them toleration. The Mennonites were formerly allowed to pay an extra tax in lieu of military service, which is inconsistent with their belief, but this privilege has been withdrawn. The Old Catholics number about 30,000, but do not scem to be increasing.

The Jews belong mainly to the urban population and form 20 to 30 per cent. of the inhabitants in some of the towns in the Slavonic provinces. They are especially prominent in commerce, finance, and on the stage, and also exercise great influence on the press. Perhaps the actual majority of newspaper editors and proprietors are of Jewish blood. The wave of social persecution to which they were subjected from 1876 onwards, especially in Berlin and Pomerania, has, to some extent at least, subsided.

Education.—In Prussia education is looked upon as the province

of the state, and the general level attained is very high. All schools, public and private, are under state supervision, and no one is allowed to exercise the profession of teacher until he has given satisfactory proof of his qualifications. At the head of the admi- nistration stands the minister of public instruction, to whoin the universities are directly subordinate. The sccondary schools are supervised by provincial ‘‘Schulcollegia,” or school-boards, ap- pointed by Government, while the management of the elementary and private schools falls within the jurisdiction of the ordinary “‘Regierungen,” or department officials. This they carry out through qualified school-inspectors, frequently chosen from among the clergy. All children must attend school from their sixth to their fourteenth year.

The expenses of the primary schools (Volksschulen) are borne by the communes (Gemeinden, see infra), aided when necessary by subsidies from the state. The subjects of instruction are theology, reading, writing, spelling, arithmetic, the elements of geometry, history, geography, and natural science, singing, drawing, sewing, and gymnastics. The fees are extremely small, amounting in the rural districts to about 1d. per week, and in Berlin and some other towns they have been entirely done away with. In 1882 Prussia contained 33,040 primary schools with 59,917 teachers and

4,339,729 pupils. This shows an average of 159 children attending school out of every 1000 inhabitants, the proportion varying from 120 to 130 in the north-eastern provinces to 175 to 180 in Westphalia and Rhenish Prussia. The number of illiterate recruits among those called upon cach year to serve in the arnvy affords a good test of the universality of elementary education. In 1882-83 the proportion of

“ Analphabeti,” or men unable to read or write, among the recruits levied was only 2 per cent., the rate varying from 9°75 per cent. in Posen to 0°03 in Schleswig-Holstein, where there was only one illiterate recruit among 3662. The teachers for the elementary schools are trained in normal seminaries or colleges estabHshed and supervised by the state, and much has been done of late years to improve their position. In most of the larger towns the ele- mentary schools are supplemented by middle schools (Biirgerschulen, Stadtschulen), which carry on the pupil to a somewhat more advanecd stage, and are partly intended to draw off thc unsuitable elements from the higher schools.

The secondary schools of Prussia may be roughly divided into classical and modern, though there are comparatively few in which Latin is quite omitted. The classical schools proper consist of Gymnasia and Progymnasia, the latter being simply gymnasia wanting the higher classes. In these boys are prepared for the universities and the learned professions, and the full course lasts for nine years. In the modern schools, which are divided in the same way into Realgymnasia and Realprogymnasia, and also have a nine years’ course, Latin is taught, but not Greek, and greater stress is laid upon modern languages, mathematics, and natural science. The three lower classes are practically identical with those of the gymnasia, while in the upper classes the thoroughness of training is assimilated as closely as possible to that of the classical schools, though the subjects are somewhat altered. Ranking with the realgymnasia are the Oberrealschulen, which differ only in the fact that Latin is entirely omitted, and the time thus gained de- voted to modern languages. The Héhere (or upper) Birgerschulen, in which the course is six years, rank with the middle schools above

mentioned, and are intended mainly for those boys who wish to enter business life immediately on leaving school. AJ] these secondary schools possess the right of granting certificates entitling the holders, who must have attained a certain standing in the school, to serve in the army as one-year voluntcers. The gymunasial ‘‘ certificate of ripencss ” (Maturitdtszeugniss), indicating that the holder has passed satisfactorily through the highest class, enables a student to enroll] himself in any faculty at the university, but that of the realgymnasium qualifies only for the general or “ nhilosophical”’ faculty, and docs not open the way to medicine, the church, or the bar. Considerable efforts are, however, now being made to have the realgymnasiuin certificate recognized as a sufficient qualification for the study of medicine at least. At any of these schools a thoroughly good edncation may be obtained at a cost seldom exceeding, in the highest classes, £5 per annum. The teachers are men of scholarship and ability, who have passed stringent Government examinations and been submitted to a year of probation. The great majority of the secondary schools have been established and endowed by municipal corporations. In 1881 Prussia contained 251 gymnasia, 64 progymunasia, 88realgymnasia, 15 oberrealschulen, 27 realschulen, 47 hohere bitrgerschulen, and 276 Hihere Tochterschulen, or higher schools for girls. Besides these there are, of course, numerous commercial, technical, indus- trial, and other special schools.

Prussia possesses ten of the twenty German universities, attended by 12,800 students, or at the rate of one student for 2125 inhabitants. The largest Prussian university is that of Berlin, attended by more than 4000 students, while Breslau, Bonn, Gottingen, and Halle have each npwards of 1000. The oldest is the university of Greifswald, founded in 1456. Like the schools the universities arc state insti- tutions, and the professors are appointed aid paid by Government, which also makes liberal annual grants for apparatus and equipment. The full obligatory course of study extends over three, and in the case of medicine four years. It is, however, not unusual for non- medical students also to spend four years at the university, and there is an agitation to make this compulsory. Students qualifying for a Prussian Government appointment are required to spend at least three terms or half-years (Semestc7’) at a Prussian university.

Ranking with the universities are the large polytcchnic colleges at Berlin, Hanover, and Aix-la-Chapelle, the mining academies of Berlin and Klansthal, and the academies of forestry at Eberswalde aud Minden. Departments for the study of agriculture are attached to many of the uiiiversities. Music is taught at several conservatoria, the best known of which are at Berlin and Frankfort-on-the-Main.

The science and art of Prussia find their most conspicuous ex- ternal expression in the academies of science and art at Berlin, both founded by Frederick I. ; and each town of any size throughout the kingdom has its antiquarian, artistic, and scientific societies. Recognized schools of painting exist at Berlin and Diisseldorf, and both these towns, as well as Cassel, contain excellent picture galleries. The scientific and archxological collections of Berlin are also of great importance. Besides the university collections, there are numerous large public libraries, the chief of which is the royal library at Berlin (1,000,000 vols.).

Constitution.— The present form of the government of Prussia, Consti- consisting of an hereditary monarchy with two houses of parlia- tution,

ment, is based upon a fundamental law promulgated in 1850, and subsequently somewhat modified by various enactinents, The

Phe SH 3}

constitution affirms the legal equality of all citizens in the eye of the law, provides for universal military service, and guarantees = personal liberty of the subject, the security of property, Immun} y. from domiciliary visits, the inviolability of letters, toleration ot religious sects, ee ae of ae Lae right of association an ic meetings, and liberty of migration. ;

Phe monarchy is herded in the male line of the house of Hohenzollern, and follows the custom of primogeniture. The king alone exercises the executive power, but shares the legislative power with his parliament. He appoints and discharges the ministers and other officials of the crown, summons and dissolves parliament, possesses the right of pardon and

mitigation of punishment, declar war and concludes peace, and grants orders and titles. He is hel

to be irresponsible for his public actions, and his decrees require the countersign of a minister, whose responsibility, however, is not very clearly defincd. The national tradition and feeling lend the crown considerable power not formulated in the constitution, and the king is permitted to bring his personal influence to bear upon parliament in a way quite at variance with the English con- ception of a constitutional monarch. The annual civil list of the king of Prussia amounts to £600,000. :

The legislative assembly consists of two chambers, which are convoked annually at the same time but meet separately. The right of proposing new measures belongs equally to the king and each of the chambers, but the consent of all three estates is neces- sary before a measure can pass into law. The chambers have con- trol of the finances and possess the right of voting or refusing taxes. Financial questions are first discussed in the lower house, and the upper house can accept or reject the annual budget only en bloc. All measures are passed by an absolute majority, but those affect- ing the constitution must be submitted to a second vote after an interval of at least twenty-one days. Members may not be called to account for their parliamentary utterances except by the chamber in which they sit. No one may at the same time be a meinber of both chambers. The ministers of the crown have access to both chambers and may speak at any time, but they do not vote unless they are actually members. The general scheme of govern- ment, though constitutional, is not cxactly “parliamentary” in the English sense of the word, as the ministers are independent of party and need not necessarily represent the opinions of the par- hamentary majority. The Herrenhaus, or house of peers, contains two classes of members, the hereditary and non-hereditary. The former consists of the adult princes of the house of Hohenzollern, the mediatized princes and counts of the old imperial nobility, and the heads of the great territorial nobility. The non-hereditary members comprise life peers chosen by the king from the ranks of the rich landowners, manufacturers, and men of general eminence, and representatives “presented” for the king’s approval by the landowners of the nine old provinces, by the larger towns, and by the universities. The Abycordnetenhaus, or chamber of deputies, consists of 433 members,

elected for periods of three ycars by indirect suffrage, exercised by all male citizens who have reached the age of twenty-five and have not forfeited their communal rights. The original electors are arranged in three classes, according to the rate of taxes paid by them, in such a way that the gross amount of taxation is equal in each class. The country is accordingly divided into electoral districts, with the electors grouped in three cate- gories, each of which selects a Wahlmann or electoral proxy, who exercises the direct suffrage. Members of the lower house must be thirty years old and in full possession of their civic rights. They receive a daily allowance (Didten) during the sitting of the house.

The king exercises his executive functions through an irrespons- ible Staatsrath, or privy council, revived in 1884 after thirty years of inactivity, and by a nominally responsible cabinet or council of ministers (Staats-Ministerium). The latter consists at present of the minister-president and of the ministers of foreign affairs, war, justice, finance, the interior, public worship and instruction, in- dustry and commerce, public works, agriculture, domains, and forests. Ministers conduct the affairs of thcir special departments independently, but meet in council for the discussion of general questions. They represent the executive in the houses of parlia- ment and introduce the measures proposed by the crown, but do not need to belong to either chamber. The affairs of the royal household and privy purse are entrusted to a special minister, who 1s not a inember of the cabinet.

_ The Prussian governmental system is somewhat complicated by its relation to that of the empire. The king of Prussia is at the same time German emperor, and his prime minister is also the imperial chancellor. The ministries of war and foreign affairs practically coincide with those of the empire, and the customs-dues and the postal and telegraph service have also been transferred to the imperial Government. Prussia has only seventeen votes in the federal council, or less than a third of the total number, but its influence is practically assured by the fact that the small northern states almost invariably vote with it. To the reichstag Prussia sends more than half the members. The double parliamentary

system works in some respects inconveniently, as the reichstag and Prussian landtag are often in_session at the same time and many persons are members of both. Where imperial and Prussian legisla- tion come into conflict the latter must give way. —

For administrative purposes Prussia 1s divided into Provinzen or provinces, Regicrungsbezirke or governmental departments, Kreise or circles, and Gemeinden or communes. The city of Berlin and the district of Hohenzollern are not included in any province, and the larger towns usually form at once a commune and a circle (Stadtkreis). Recent legislation has aimed at the encouragement of local government and the decentralization of administrative authority by admitting lay or popularly elected members to a share in the administration alongside of the Government officials. Certain branches of administration, such as the care of roads and the poor, have been handed over entirely to local authorities, while a share is allowed them in all. Asa general result it may be stated that the Prussian administrative system intervenes between the strongly centralized government of France and the liberty of local govern- ment enjoyed in England. In the province the Government is represented by the Oberprésident, whose jurisdiction extends over all matters affecting more than one department. He is assisted by a council (Provinzialrath), consisting, besides himself as chair- man, of one member appointed by Government and five members elected by the provincial committee (Provinzialausschuss), The latter forms the permanent executive of the provincial diet (Pro- vinzial-Landtag), which consists of deputies elected by the kreise or circles, and forms the chief provincial organ of local government. The regierungsbezirk is solely a Government division and is only indirectly represented in the scheme of local administration. The Government authorities are the Regierungs-Prdsident, who is at the head of the general internal administration of the department, and the Regierwng, or Government board, which supervises ecclesi- astical and educational affairs and exercises the function of the state in regard to the direct taxes and the domains and forests. The departmental president is also assisted by a Bezirksrath or district council, consisting of one official member and four others selected from inhabitants of the department by the provincial com- mittee. The governmental official in the kreis (county, circle) is the Landrath, an office which existed in the Mark of Brandenburg as early as the 16th century. He is aided by the Kreissausschuss, or

executive committee of the Kreistag (the diet of the circle), the members of which are elected by the rural and urban coinmunes. The kreis is the smallest state division; the communes, divided into urban and rural, are left almost entirely to local government, though the chief officials must obtain the sanction of the central authority. In the rural communes the head magistrate, called a Schulze or Dorfrichter, is elected for six years and is assisted by assessors called Schéffen. The regulations for the government of towns still rest in great measure on the liberal reforms effected by Stein at the beginning of the century. The chief power rests in the hands of the Stadtrath, which consists of Stadtverordneten, or town deputies elected by the citizens for six years. The practical executive is entrusted to the magistracy (Jagistrat), which usually consists of a burgomaster, a deputy burgomaster (both paid officials), several unpaid members, and, where necessary, a few other paid members. The unpaid members hold office for six years ; the paid members are elected for twelve years, and their election requires ratification from the state. The administrative system above described applies as yet in its full extent to about three-fourtlis of the provinces only, but is to be extended to the others in due course. Though in some respects rather cumbrous in its machinery, the system is on the whole found to work well and with economy.

In the seven eastern provinces, Westphalia, and part of the Rhenish province the common law of Prussia (Landrecht), codified in 1794, 1s in force, while the common law of the German empire, formed by an amalgamation of Roman, canon, and German law, prevails in the three new provinces and part of Pomerania. The Code Napoléon, however, still exists in the greater part of the Rhine district, and the commercial law has been consolidated in the German commercial code of 1861. A new penal code, promulgated in 1850, did away with the old patrimonial or seigniorial jurisdiction, and the administration of justice is now wholly in the hands of Government. The courts of lowest instance are the Amts- gerichte, in which sits a single judge, accompanied in penal cases by two Schéffen or lay assessors (a kind of jurymen, who vote with the judge). Cases of more importance are decided by the Land- gerichte or county courts, in which the usual number of judges is three, while in important criminal cases a jury of twelve persons is generally empanelled. From the landgerichte appeals may be made to the Oberlandesgerichte or provincial courts. The

oberlandesgericht at Berlin is named the Kammergericht and forms the final instance for summary convictions in Prussia, while all other cases may be taken to the supreme imperial court at Leipsic. The judges (ichter) are appointed and paid by the state, and hold office for

| life. After finishing his university career the student of law who

wishes to become a judge or to practise as qualified counsel (Reehtsan-walt, barrister and solicitor in one) passes a Government examina-

—— —E —

| i

_ Finances

FINANCES. |

tion and becomes a Referendarius. He then spends at least four years in the practical work of his profession, after which he passes a second examination, and, if he has chosen the bench instead of the bar, becomes an Assessor and is eligible for the position of judge. A lawyer who has passed the necessary examinations may at any time quit the bar for the bench, and a judge is also at liberty to resign his position and enter upon private practice. In all criminal cases the prosecution is undertaken by Government, which acts through Staatsanwailte, or directors of prosecutions, in the pay of the state.

Finances. —The finances of the: Prussian Government are well managed, and a deficit is now a rare occurrence. The expenditure has been considerably relieved by the transference of the cost of the army and navy to the imperial treasury, while on the other hand the customs-dues and several excise duties have been relinquished to the empire and an annual ‘‘ matricular” contribution paid towards its expenses. The budget is voted annually by the abgeordneten- haus ; the following table is an abstract of that for 1884-85 :—

Revenue | Expenditure. MiPCCTAKES 2..0c.s00s £7,296,286 | Expenses of collection and nclinect taxes' .....0-... 4,586,510 management …..... £28,234, 532 State lottery é AOI AOOM CLVAISE ie «,o.< «0.5.0 .0:s 01,0. 225,000 Marineinstitute and mint 128,225 Interest and management Domains and forests …. 3,805,857 | of public debt …..... 7,877,316 Mines and salt-works 5,120,752 | Houses of parliament…. 68,652 State railways …..... 28,798,867 | Apanages, annuities, and General financial adminis- IWCENNOES Be ONSaeo oe 3.262,017 tration 5,582, 368 | Matricular contribution Adininistrative revenues 1,160,253 to the German empire 2,038,460 Adininistrative expenditure 12,632,930 SUISHIGEE "face adearce ess 2,017,020 LOINTC THC) NBEO ee 1,644,670 IRENPION, sorec!. wee cs <3 596,333 Ministry of the interior 2,077,510 Occasional and _ extra- ordinary expenses 2,341,881 Total…. £56,680,818 | Total…. £56,680,818

Perhaps the only item requiring explanation in the above sum mary is the general financial administration under the head of revenue ; this includes advances from the surplus in the treasury, Prussia's proportion of the profits of the imperial customs and excises, repayments, interest, and other miscellaneous sources of revenue. 'he extraordinary expenses included upwards of £450,000 for railways and £750,000 for public works. The total expenditure is rather more than £2 per head of population, while in the United Kingdom it is about £2, 10s. Between 1821 and 1844 the rate in Prussia was 11s. 6d. per head, and even in 1858 it was only 21s. 8d. The incidence of direct taxation in Prussia is also less than in Great Britain, the respective figures being 5s. 3d. and 7s. per head. The principal direct imposts are the income-tax, which brings in 40 per cent. of the whole, the land-tax producing 37 per cent., and the house-tax producing 19 per cent. 'The proceeds of the income- tax amount to about 1s. 2d. per head, as compared with 6s. per head in Great Britain (in 1881). The comparative insignificance of the sum raised by indirect taxation is mainly due to the above- noted fact that the customs-dues and the most important excise duties have been made over to the imperial exchequer. In the preliminary estimates for 1885-86 the receipts and expenditure are balanced at £62, 886,250.

Local taxation in Prussia is often very high. The state income- tax is limited to 3 per cent. of the assessed income, but the com- munes and towns are allowed to make an arbitrary addition for local purposes, sometimes amounting to twice or thrice the sum paid to the state. This is chiefly owing to the fact that the state reserved for itself all taxation on real property, while imposing on the conm- munes the principal share in maintaining the expensive system of public schools. Incomes below £45 (900 marks) are not now taxed, but this exemption is of very recent origin. A few facts from the statistics of taxation and allied subjects may be of interest as affording some slight index to Prussia's growth in prosperity. Between 1864 and 1878 the entire capital subject to income-tax mereased from 24 to 48 marks per head of population, while the proportionate number of those liable to the tax had increased by about 75 per cent. It has also been computed that the average imcome per head increased between 1872 and 1881 by 15 marks, equivalent to a rise of 5 per cent. ; that of Great Britain increased In the same period by 88s., or 15 per cent. Of all the payers of meome-tax in 1872-81 only 0°10 per cent. had incomes of or above £1000, while 43 per cent. had not more than £25 and 52 per cent. between £25 and £100. Between 1867 and 1880 the proceeds of the house-tax increased by over 100 per cent. It now averages 1s. per head, varying from 6d. in country districts up to 5s. or 5s. 6d. in Berlin, Frankfort-on-the-Main, and Cologne. In 1875 the number of depositors in savings banks was 86 per 1000 inhabitants, and by 1880 the number had risen to 107. The sum deposited amounted to £79, 643, 400, equivalent to 58s. per head of population. At the same date Austria alone of European powers had a higher ees (67s.), while in Great Britain the sum was 44s. and in

rance 27s.

The public debt of Prussia in 1884 amounted to 3,345,097, 438

Pm sl A

19

marks, or £167,254,872. This is equivalent to about £6 per head of population, as compared with three and a half times as much in England. The annual charge for interest on the debt is 5s. 8d. per head in Prussia and

16s. 2d. in England. Between the end of the struggle with Napoleon and 1848 the debt was considerably reduced ; since 1848 it has steadily increased. It is, however, admirably secured, and a great part of it was incurred in the con- struction and acquisition of railways, the clear income from which covers the annual charges on the entire debt. The various branches of the debt are being gradually united in a consolidated fund, bearing interest at the rate of 4 per cent.

Army and Navy.—The Prussian army now forms about 75 per cent. of that of the German empire, of which it also furnished the model. (See Germany.) The first attempt at the foundation ofa Prussian navy was made by the Great Elector, who established a small fleet of eight or ten vessels. This, however, was completely neglected by his successors, and the present marine establishment is of quite recent origin. The present imperial navy is simply the Prussian navy under a different name. (See GERMANY.)

Bibliography.—The statistical facts in the foregoing article have been mainly drawn from the Jahrbuch fiir die amtliche Statistik des preussischen Staats, the Statistisches Jahrbuch. fiir das deutsche Reich, and other publications of the statistical offices of Prussia and Germany. Good general accounts of the natural, social, and political features of the country are given in Eiselen's Der preussische Staat (Berlin, 1862) and in Daniel's Handbuch der Geographie (5th ed., 1881 sq.). The Prussian constitution and administrative system are concisely described in the Handbuch der Verfassung und Verwaltung in Preussen, by Graf Hué de Grais, and are treated at length in Von Ronne's Staatsrecht der preussischen Monarchie (4th ed., 1881-84), For English readers the most interesting introduction to Prussian history is perhaps still to be found in the first part of Carlyle's Frederick the Great, the not invariably unprejudiced views of which may be corrected by Professor Tuttle's History of Prussia to the Accession of Frederick the Great (Boston, 1884). The latter admirable little work is, indeed, almost indispensable to every English student of Prussian constitutional history. Professor Seeley's Life of Stein (London, 1879) contains an excellent account of Prussia in the Napoleonic period, especially with regard to the important in- ternal reforms carried out at the beginning of the present century. Among the numerous German histories of Prussia two of the best are Droysen's Geschichte der preussischen Politik

and Ranke’s Zwolf Biicher preussischer Geschichte; the former is authoritative from the writer’s copious use of the Prussian archives, but the latter is less diffuse and more interesting. Other standard works arc those of Stenzel, Pauli, Riedel, and Lancizolle, while among shorter histories may be mentioned the manual of F. Voigt. Fix’s Territorial-Geschichte des brandenburgisch-preussischen Staates, with ten historical maps, is a convenient sketch of the territorial growth of Prussia. The period since the death of Frederick the Great is treated in Forster’s Neuere und neueste preussische Gesch- ichte and in Reimann’s Neuere Geschichte des preussischen Staats (1882 sq.). The history of the present century is perhaps most fully given in Treitschke’s Deutsche Geschichte im neunzehnten Jahrhundert (1879 sq.). Until recently the standard work on the history of Prussia proper was that of Johannes Voigt, but this is now being superseded by Lohmeyer’s Geschichte von Ost u. West Preussen (1881 sq.). The latter forms one of an admirable series of provincial histories in course of publication by Perthes of Gotha. The development of the Prussian bureaucracy is traced in Isaacsohn’s Geschichte des preussischen Beamienthums (1870-84). Several points are most satisfactorily handled in the humerous monographs on special periods, the lives of kings and statesmen, and the like. (J. FM.)

PRUSSIA, in the original and narrower sense of the word, is a district in the north-eastern corner of the modern kingdom of the same name, stretching along the Baltic coast for about 220 miles, and occupying an area of up-wards of 24,000 square miles. The eastern part of this territory formed the duchy of Prussia, which was acquired by the electors of Brandenburg in 1618, and furnished them with their regal title. The western part, which had been severed from the eastern half and assigned to Poland in 1466, was not annexed to Prussia until the partition of Poland in 1772, while the towns of Dantsic and Thorn remained Polish down to 1793. In spite of the contrast between the political and social conditions of the two districts, arising from the difference of their history, they were united in 1824 to forma single province. But, as might have been expected, the union did not work well, and it was dissolved in 1878, giving place to the modern provinces of East and West Prussia. The early history of the whole district is related under the kingdom of Prussia (above) and Teutonic Orper, while the former article also gives (p. 14) some statistics as to the produce

of the two provinces.}

East Prussia (Ostpreussen), the larger of the two provinces, has an area of 14,280 square miles, and is bounded by the Baltic Sea, Russia, and West Prussia. It shares in the general characteristics of the great north German plain, but, though low, its surface is by no means absolutely flat, as the southern half is traversed by a low ridge or plateau (comp. GERMANY), which attains a height of 1025 feet at a point ncar the western boundary of the province. This plateau, here named the Prussian Seenplatte, is thiekly sprinkled with small lakes, among which is the Spirding See, 46 square miles in extent and the largest inland lake in the Prussian monarchy.

1 Conipare Lohmeyer's Geschichte von Ost u. West Preussen (1881, sq.)

Army and navy.

20 PRUs St &

The coast is lined with low dunes or sandhills, in front of which lie the large littoral lakes or lagoons named the Frische Haff and the Kurische Haff. (See GerMANy.) The first of these receives the waters of the Nogat and the Pregel, and the other those of the Memel or Niemen. Fast Prussia is the coldest part of Germany, its mean annual temperature being about 44° Fahr., while the mcan January temperature of Tilsit is only 25°. The rainfall is 24 inches per annum. About half the province is under cultivation ; 18 per cent. is occupied by forests, and 23 per cent. by meadows and pastures. The most fertile soil is found in the valleys of the Pregel and the Memel, but the southern slopes of the Baltic plateau and the district to the north. of the Memel consist in great part of sterile moor, sand, and bog. The chief crops are rye, oats, and potatoes, while flax is cultivated in the district of Ermland, between the Passarge and the upper Alle. East Prussia is the headquarters of the horse-breeding of the country and contains the priucipal Government stud of Trakehnen ; numerous cattle are also fattened on the rich pasturcs of the river-valleys. The extensive woods in the south part of the province harbour a few wolves and lynxes, and the elk is still preserved in the forest of Ibenhorst, uear the Kurische Haff. The fisheries in the lakcs and hafis are of some importance ; but the only mincral product of note is amber, which is found in the peninsula of Samland in greater abundance

than in any other part of the world. Manufactures are almost confined to the principal towns, though linen-weaving is practised as a domestic industry. Commerce is facilitated by canals connecting the Memel and Pregel and also the principal lakes, but is somewhat hampered by the heavy dues exacted at the Russian frontier. A brisk foreign trade is carried on through the seaports of Konigsberg (140,909), the capital of the province, and Memel (19,660), the exports con- sisting mainly of timber aud grain. In 1880 the population of Kast Prussia was 1,933,936, including 1,654,510 Protestants, 250,462 Roman Catholics, and 18,218 Jews. The Roman Catholics are mainly confined to the district of Ermland, in which the ordinary proportions of the confessions are completely reversed. The bulk of the inhabitants are of German blood, but there are 400,000 Protestant Poles (Masurians or Masovians) in the south part of the province, and 150,000 Lithuanians in the north. As in other provinces where the Polish element is strong, East Prussia is below the general average of the kingdom in education ; in 1883 fully 54 per cent. of its recruits were unable to read or write. There is a university at Konigsberg.

West Prussia (IV estpreussen), with an area of 9850 square miles, is bounded by the Baltic, East Prussia, Poland, Posen, Brandenburg, and Pomerania. It resembles East Prussia in its physical character- istics, but its fertility is somewhat greater and its climate not quite so harsh. The Baltic plateau traverses the province from east to west, reaching its culminating point in the Thurmberg (1090 feet), near Dantsic. Near the middle of the province the range is in- terrupted by the valley of the Vistula, beyond which it trends to the north and approaches the coast. The lakes of West Prussia are nearly as numerous but not so large as those of the sister pro- vince. The natural products are similar, and the manufactures are also almost confined to the large towns. The cultivation of the common beet, for the production of sugar, has been introduced, and several sugar refineries have becn erected. The valley of the Vistula, particularly the rich lowlands (Werder) of the delta, are very fertile, producing good crops of wheat and pasturing large herds of horses, cattle, aud sheep. The population in 1880 was 1,405,898, consisting in almost equal proportions of Roman Catholics and Protestants ; there were 26,547 Jews and 490,000 Poles. The percentage of illiterate recruits in 1882 was still higher than in East Prussia (7°97), but not so high as in Posen (9°75). The capital and principal town is Dantsic

(108,551), while Elbing (35,842) and Thorn (20,617) also carry on a considerable trade.

PRUSSIA, RuenisH (German, Rheinpreussen, Rhein- provinz, Rheinland), the most westerly province of the kingdom of Prussia, is bounded on the N. by Holland, on the E. by Westphalia, Hesse-Nassau, and Hesse-Darmstadt, on the S.E. by the Rhenish Palatinate, on the S. and S.W. by Lorraine, and on the W. by Luxemburg, Belgium, and Holland. The small district of Wetzlar in the midst of the province of Hesse also belongs to Rhenish Prussia, which, on the other hand, surrounds the Oldenburg principality of Birkenfeld. The extent of the province is 10,420 square miles, or nearly twice that of the kingdom of Saxony ; its extreme length, from north to south, is nearly 200 miles and its greatest breadth is just under 90. It includes about 200 miles of the course of the Ihine, which forms the eastern frontier of the province

from Bingen to Coblentz and then flow oy s through north-westerly direction. gh itina

The southern and larger half of Rhenish Prussia, belong- ing geologically to the Devonian formations of the lower Rhine, is hilly. On the left bank are the elevated plateaus of the Hundsriick and the Eifel, separated from each other by the deep valley of the Moselle, while on the right bank are the spurs of the Westerwald and the Sauerland, the former reaching the river in the picturesque group known as the Seven Mountains. The highest hill in the province is the Walderbeskopf (2670 feet) in the Hochwald, and there are several other summits above 2000 feet on the left bank, while on the right there are few which attain a height of 1600 feet. Most of the hills are covered with trees, but the Eifel is a barren and bleak plateau, with numerous traces of volcanic agency, and is continued to- wards the north-west by the moorlands of the Hohe Venn. To the north of a line drawn from Aix-la-Chapelle to Bonn the province is flat, and marshy districts occur near the Dutch frontier. The climate varies considerably with the configuration of the surface. That of the northern lowlands and of the sheltered valleys is the mildest and most equable in Prussia, with a mean annual temperature of 50° Fahr., while on the hills of the Eifel the mean does not exceed 44°. The annual rainfall varies in the different districts

from 18 to 32 inches. Almost the whole province belongs to the basin of the Rhine, but a small district in the north-west is drained by affluents of the Meuse. Of the numerous tributaries which join the Rhine within the province, the most important are the Nahe, the Moselle, and the Ahr on the left bank, and the Sieg, the Wupper, the Ruhr, and the Lippe on the right. The only lake of any size is the Laacher See, the largest of the ‘‘ maare” or extinct crater lakes of the Eifel.

Of the total area of the Rhenish province about 46°5 per cent. is occupied by arable land, 17 per cent. by mea- dows and pastures, and 31 per cent. by forests. Little except oats and potatoes can be raised on the high-lying plateaus in the south of the province, but the river-valleys and the northern lowlands are extremely fertile. The great bulk of the soil is in the hands of small proprietors, and this is alleged to have had the effect of somewhat retarding the progress of scientific agriculture. The usual cereal crops are, however, all grown with success, and tobacco, hops, flax, rape, hemp, and beetroot (for sugar) are cultivated for commercial purposes. Large quantities of fruit are also produced. The vine-culture occupies a space of 30,000 acres, about half of which are in the valley of the Moselle, a third in that of the Rhine itself, and the rest mainly on the Nahe and the Ahr. The choicest varieties of Rhine wine, however, such as Johannisberger and Steinberger, are produced higher up the river, beyond the limits of the Rhenish province. In the hilly districts more than half the surface is sometimes occupied by forests, and large plantations of oak are formed for the use of the bark in tanning. Considerable herds of cattle are reared on the rich pastures of the lower Rhine, but the number of sheep in the province is comparatively small, and is, indeed, not greatly in excess of that of the goats. The wooded hills are well stocked with deer, and a stray wolf occasionally finds its way from the forests of the Ardennes into those of the Hundsriick. The salmon fishery of the Rhine is very productive and trout abound in the moun- tain streams. (Compare the agricultural tables under Prussia, p. 14 supra.)

The great mineral wealth of the Rhenish province probably furnishes its most substantial claim to the title of the ‘richest jewel in the crown of Prussia.” Besides parts of the Carboniferous measures of the Saar and the Ruhr, it also contains important deposits of coal near Aix-la-Chapelle. Iron

occurs abundantly near Coblentz, the Bleiberg in the Eifel possesses an apparently inex-

ene ee

haustible supply of lead, and zinc is found near Cologne and Aix-la-Chapelle. The mineral products of the district also include lignite, copper, manganese, vitriol, lime, gyp- sum, volcanic stones (used for mill-stones), and slates. In 1882 the total value of the minerals raised in the pro- vince was £5,460,000, or nearly one-third of the produce of Prussia; by far the most important item is coal, the output of which was upwards of 15,000,000 tons, valued at £4,400,000. Of the numerous mineral springs the best known are those of Aix-la-Chapelle and Kreuznach.

The mineral resources of Rhenish Prussia, coupled with its favourable situation and the facilities of transit afforded by its great waterway, have made it the most important manufacturing districtin Germany. The industry is mainly concentrated round two chief centres, Aix-la-Chapelle and Diisseldorf (with the valley of the Wupper), while there are naturally few manufactures in the hilly districts of the south or the marshy flats of the north. In the forefront stand the metallic industries, the total produce of which was valued in 1882 at £5,200,000. The foundries pro- duced upwards of a million tons of iron, besides zine, lead, copper, and other metals. The largest iron and steel works are at Essen (including Krupp’s cannon-foundry), Oberhausen; Duisburg, Diisseldorf, and Cologne, while cutlery and other small metallic wares are extensively made at Solingen, Remscheid, and Aix-la-Chapelle. The cloth of Aix-la-Chapelle and the silk of Crefeld form im- portant articles of export. The chief industries of Elber-feld-Barmen and the valley of the Wupper are cotton- weaving, calico-printing, and the manufacture of turkey red and other dyes. Linen is largely made at Gladbach, leather at Malmedy, glass in the Saar district, and beet-root sugar near Cologne. Though the Rhineland is par excellence the country of the vine, no less than 52,000,000 gallons of beer were brewed in the province in 1882-83, equivalent to an annual consumption of fifty-one quarts per head of population ; distilleries are also numerous, and large quantities of sparkling Moselle are made at Coblentz, chiefly for

exportation to England. Commerce is greatly aided by the navigable rivers, a very extensive network of railways, and the excellent roads constructed during the French régime. The imports consist mainly of raw material for working up in the factories of the dis- trict, while the principal exports are coal, fruit, wine, dyes, cloth, silk, and other manufactured articles of various descriptions.

The population of Rhenish Prussia in 1880 was 4,074,000, including 2,944,186 Roman Catholics, 1,077,173 Protest- ants, and 43,694 Jews. The Roman Catholics muster strongest on the left bank, while on the right bank about half the population is Protestant. The distribution of the confessions is, however, somewhat sporadic, owing to the varied histories of the constituent parts of the province. The great bulk of the population is of Teutonic stock, and about a quarter of a million are of Flemish blood. On the north-west frontier reside about 12,000 Walloons, who speak French or Walloon as their native tongue. The Rhine province is the most thickly populated part of Prussia, the general average being 390 persons per square inile, while in the government district of Diisseldorf the proportion rises to 754. The province contains a greater number of large towns than any other province in Prussia, and 62-5 of the population is returned as urban. Upwards of half the population are supported by industrial and commercial pursuits, and barely a quarter by agriculture. There is a university of good standing at Bonn, and the Success of the elementary education is borne witness to by the fact that in 1883 only 0°19 per cent. of the Rhenish recruits were unable to read and write. For purposes of administration the province is divided into the five districts

of Coblentz, Diisseldorf, Cologne, Aix-la-Chapelle, and Treves ; Coblentz is the official capital, though Cologne is the largest and most important town. In the greater part of the province the Code Napoléon, introduced under the French réginie, is still in force. Being a frontier province the Rhineland is strongly garrisoned, and the Rhine is guarded by the four strong fortresses of Cologne with Deutz, Coblentz with Ehrenbreitstein, Wesel, and Saar- louis. In the Prussian parliament the province of the Rhine is represented by twenty-seven members in the upper house and eighty-two in the lower.

History.—The present province of Rhenish Prussia was formed in 1815 out of the duchies of Cleves, Berg, Upper Guelders, and Jiilich, the ceclesiastical principalities of Treves and Cologne, the free cities of Aix-la-Chapelle and Cologne, and nearly a hundred small independent lordships, knightships, and abbeys. It is there- fore manifestly impracticable to give more than a broad general sketch of the historical development of a region of which the com- ponent parts have had so little of their past in common. At thie earliest historical period we find the territories between the Ardennes and the Rhine occupied by the Treviri, Eburones, and other Celtic tribes, who, however, were all more or less niodified and influenced by their Teutonic neighbours. On the right bank of the Rhine, between the Main and the Laln, were the scttlements of the Mattiaci, a branch of the Germanic Chatti, while farther to the north were the Usipetes and Tencteri. Julius Cesar conquered the tribes on the left bank and Augustus established numerous fortified posts on the Rhine, but the Romans never succeeded in gaining a firm footing on the right bank. Under the Romans the districts to the west of the Rhine, forming parts of the provinces of Belgica Prima, Germania Superior, and Germania Inferior, en- joyed great prosperity and reached a high degree of civilization. Several Roman cmperors resided and issued their edicts at Treves, the capital of Belgica Prima, and the important Roman remains in this city as well as in other parts of the province give an idea of the material benefits the territory derived from their dominion. As the powcr of the Roman empire declined the Franks pushed forward along both banks of the Rhine, and by the end of the 5th century had regained all the lands that had formerly been under Teutonic influence. The German conqucrors of the Rhenish dis- tricts were singularly little affected by the culture of the provincials they subdued, and all traces of Roman civilization were submerged in a new flood of paganism. By the 8th century the Frankish dominion was firmly established in central Germany and northern Gaul ; and under the Carlovingian monarchs the Rhineland, and especially Aix-la-Chapelle, plays a réle of considerable prominence. On the division of the Carlovingian realm the part of the Rhenish province to the cast of the river fell to the share of Germany, while that to the west remained with the evanescent middle kingdom of Lotharingia. By the time of Otho I. (936-973) both banks of the Rhine had become German, and the Rhenish territory was divided between the duchies of Upper and Lower Lorraine, the one on the Moselle and the other on the Meuse. Subsequently, as the central

power of the German sovereign became weakencd, the Rhineland followed the general tendency and split up into numerous small indcpendent principalities, each with its separate vicissitudes and special chronicles, The old Lotharingian divisions passed wholly ont of use, and the name of Lorraine became restricted to the dis- trict that still bears it. In spite of its dismembered condition, and the sufferings it underwent at the hands of its French neigh- bours in various periods of warfare, the Rhenish territory prospered greatly and stood in the foremost rank of German culture and pro- gress. Aix-la-Chapelle was fixed upon as the place of coronation of the German emperors, and the ecclesiastical principalities of the Rhine bulk largely in German history. Prussia first set foot on the Rhine in 1609, when it acquired the duchy of Cleves; and about a century later Upper Guelders and Mors also became Prussian. At the peace of Basel in 1795 the whole of the left bank of the Rhine was resigned to France, and in 1806 the Rhenish princes all joined the Confederation of the Rhine. The congress of Vienna assigned the whole of the lower Rhenish districts to Prussia, which had the tact to leave them in undisturbed possession of the liberal institu- tions they had become accustomed to under the republican rule of the French. (Compare RHINE.) CJ. He aie)

PRUSSIAN BLUE. See Prussic Acrp (p. 24 infra).

PRUSSIC ACID, the familiar name for a dangerously poisonous, though chemically feeble, acid, known scienti- fically as “‘ hydrocyanic acid,” or ‘cyanide of hydrogen,” is here taken as a convenient heading under which to treat of cyanides generally. This generic term (from xvavos, blue) is not meant to hint at any generic property; it is due simply to the fact that all cyanides, in an historical sense,

are derivatives of a blue pigment which was discovered accidentally by Diesbach, a Berlin colourmaker, about the beginning of the 18th century.

The foundations of our present knowledge of cyanides were laid by Scheele (1783), whose discoveries were subse- quently (from 1811) confirmed and supplemented, chiefly in the sense of quantitative determinations, by Gay-Lussac. Although we have no space for further historical notes, we must not

omit to state that Gay-Lussac, as one result of his work, conceived and introduced into chemistry the notion of the “compound radical,” having shown that prussic acid and its salts are related to the group NC in precisely the same way as chlorides are to chlorine, or sulphides to sulphur. This idea, in his own eyes and in those of his contemporaries, was greatly fortified by his success in even isolating his “ cyanogéne” as a substance.

In preparing cyanogen or cyanides in the laboratory the operator now always starts from prussiate of potash, with which, accordingly, we begin.

Prussiate of Potash, (NC)sFe.K,+3H,0 (syn. ferrocyanide of potassium ; Germ. Blutlaugensalz).—This salt is being produced industrially from animal refuse (hide and horn clippings, old shoes, blood solids, &c.), carbonate of potash, and iron filings or borings as raw materials. The carbonate of potash is fused at a red heat in an iron pear-shaped vessel suspended within a furnace, or on the cupel-shaped sole of a reverberatory furnace, and the animal matter, which should be as dry as possible, is then introduced in instal- ments along with the iron. The fusion is continued as long as inflammable gases are going off; then the still fluid mass is ladled out and allowed to cool, when it hardens into a black stone-like body known to the manufacturer as “metal.” When the broken- up inetal is digested with water in an iron vessel prussiate of potash passes into solution, while a black residue of charcoal, metallic iron, sulphide of iron, &c., remains. The clarified solution, after sufficient concentration in the heat, deposits on cooling part of its prussiate in lemon-yellow quadratic crystals (generally trun- cated octahedra), which are purified by recrystallization. The last mother-liqnors furnish an impure green salt, which is added to a fresh fuse and so utilized.

In former times it was believed that the prussiate was produced during the fusion process, and in the subsequent process of lixivia- tion simply passed into solution, until Liebig showed that this view was untenable. The fuse cannot contain ready-formed prussiate, because this salt at a red heat breaks up with formation of a residue of carbide of iron and cyanide of potassium. The metal in fact when treated with dilute alcohol gives up to it plain cyanide of potassium, and the fully exhausted residue yields no prussiate on treatment with water. The prussiate accordingly must be produced during

the process of lixiviation by the action of the cyanide of potassium on some ferrous compound in the metal. Liebig thought that it was partly the metallic iron, partly the sulphide of iron present in the metal, which effected the conversion. According to more recent researches a double sulphide, K,S+Fe,8,, which is always produced during the fusion (from the reagents proper and the sulphur of the organic matter and that of the sulphate of potash present in the carbonate as an impurity), plays this important part. The double sulphide by the action of water breaks up into alka- line sulphide, sulphide of iron (FeS), and sulphur. This sulphide of iron is of a peculiar kind ; it docs what ordinary FeS does not effect, readily at least : it converts the cyanide into prussiate, thus, 6NC.K+FeS=K,S+(NC),Fe.K,, while the eliminated sulphur of the original Fe,S, unites with another part of the cyanide of potassium into sulphocyanate, S+NCK=SNC.K, which latter salt is thus unavoidably produced as a (rather inconvenient) bye- product. Pure prussiate of potash has the specific gravity 1°83 ; it 1s permanent in the air. It loses its water, part at 60° C., the rest at 100° C., but very slowly. The anhydrous salt isa white powder. he crystals dissolve in four parts of cold and in two parts of boiling water. It is insoluble in, and not dehydrated by, alcohol.

Prussiate of potash has the composition of a double salt, te at ENG, but the idea that it contains these two binary

yanides 1s entirely at variance with its reactions. Cyanide of potassium is readily decomposed by even the feeblest acids, and to some extent even by water, with elimination of hydrocyanic acid, and on this account perhaps is intensely poisonous. A solu- tion of the prussiate remains absolutely unchanged on evaporation, ae the action on it even of strong acids in the cold results in the formation of the hydrogen salt, (NC), FeH,, which is decomposed, it 1s true, but only when the mixture is heated, with evolution of hydrocyanic acid. It is not poisonous. Its solution when mixed with nitrate of silver does not give a precipitate of cyanide of silver NC. Ag, and a solution of the two nitrates, but yields a unitary pre-

cipitate of the composition (NC)gFe.Agy which contains all the iron; only nitrate of potassium passes into solution. Other heavy metallic salts behave similarly. On the strength of these con- siderations chemists, following the

lead of Liebig, view prussiate as a binary compound of potassium, Ky, with a complex radical, N,CgFe, ‘‘ ferrocyanogen.” ; int

Hydrocyanic Acid, NC.H.—This acid is prepared most con- veniently from prussiate of potash. Wohler recommends the following method. Ten parts of powdered prussiate are placed in a retort, the neck of which is turned upwards, and a (cooled down) mixture of seven parts of oil of vitriol and fourteen parts of water is then added. If the aqueous acid is wanted, the exit-end of the retort is joined on direct to a Liebig’s condenser, which must be kept very cool by a current of cold water. If the anhydrous acid is desired, two wide-necked bottles (or two large U-tubes) charged with fused chloride of calcium and kept at 30° C. by immersion in a water bath of this temperature, must be inserted between the retort and condenser. In this case more particularly it is indispensable to provide for a most efficient condensation of the vapours; the exit- end of the condenser should be provided with an adapter going down to near the bottom of the receiver, which must be surrounded by a freezing mixture. The temperature of the latter, of course, must not be allowed to fall to the freezing-point of the distillate. The retort is heated by means of a sand bath and a brisk distilla- tion maintained until the residue begins to dry up. The result of the reaction is in accordance with the assumption that the dilute vitriol, in the first instance, converts the prussiate, one-half into (NC),Fe.H,, the other into (NC),Fe.K,H., and that through the effect of the heat these two bodies decompose each other into {(NC)gFe} K,Fe, which remains in the residue as a precipitate, and (NC);H,=6NCH, which distils over. Real NCH is a colour- less liquid of 0°6967 specific gravity at 18° C., which freezes at —15° C. (Gay-Lussac) into a white fibrous solid. According to Schulz the acid, if really pure, remains liquid at —- 37° C. It boils at 26°°5 C.; at 4°°5 its vapour-tension already amounts to half an atmosphere. The vapour is inflammable and burns into carbonic acid, water, and nitrogen. The acid mixes with water in all proportions, with contraction and yet absorption of heat. The solution beliaves on distillation like a mere mechanical mixture of its two components. Prussic acid has a very peculiar powerful smell ; more characteristic still is a kind of choking action which even the highly attenuated vapour exerts on the larynx. Prussic acid is fearfully poisonous; a few drops of even the ordinary pharmaceutical preparation (of 2 per cent.) are sufficient to kill a large dog. It acts with characteristic promptitude,

especially when inhaled asa vapour. Even a relatively large dose, if it has once found its way into the stomach without producing a fatal effect, is said to do relatively little harm there.}

Prussic acid is characteristically prone to suffer ‘‘ spontaneous decomposition.” Whether the pure anhydrous acid really is, in the strictest sense of the word, still requires to be found out; the ordinary preparation, when kept ina close bottle, soon turns brown and turbid from ‘‘azulmic” acid, a substance of complex constitu- tion. Other things are formed at the same time. The pure aqueous acid is liable to similar changes; in its case formiate of ammonia always forms the predominant product. This change is easily

understood— NC. H+2H,O=NH,+H. COOH. Ammonia. Formic acid.

A strong aqueous prussic acid, when mixed with fuming hydro. chloric acid, is soon converted into a magma of crystals of sal- ammoniac, with formation of formic acid, which remains dissolved. And yet, most singularly, the addition to the preparation of a small proportion of hydrochloric or sulphuric acid is the best means for preventing, or at least greatly retarding, its spontaneous change in the very same direction. Aqueous prussic acid acts only very feebly (if at all) on blue litmus ; it combines with aqueous caustic alkalis but does not decompose their carbonates; uor does it act upon the generality of insoluble basic metallic oxides or hydrates ; mercuric oxide and oxide of silver form noteworthy exceptions to this rule.

Cyanogen, (NC),.—When dry mercuric cyanide is heated it breaks up, .below redness, into mercury and cyanogen gas; part of the latter, however, always suffers polymerization into a solid called ‘“paracyanogen,” and presnmed to consist of molecules (NC)s. Cyanogen gas is colourless ; it has the specific gravity demanded by its formula. It possesses a peculiar odour and has a characteristic

} The British Pharmacopeia prescribes for the medicinal acid a strength of 2 per cent. of real NCH. The two medicinal prepara- tions known as agua amygdalarum amararum and as agua lawrocerast respectively contain prussic acid in combination with hydride of ben- zoyl, CgsH;.COH. In

neither case does the prussic acid pre-exist in the vegetable materials, but is produced during the mashing process which precedes the distillatiou, by a fermentative decomposition of the amygdalin which they contain. (See FERMENTATION, vol. ix. Ts Obs)

Pme WS ote -AC ID

irritating effect on the eyes and mucous membranes of the nose. It is poisonous. By strong pressure it is condensible into a liquid which freezes at —34°:4 C., and has the following vapour-tensions P at the temperatures ¢ stated —

i= — 20°°7 – 10° 0° = + 10° +20° C.

(Ps 1 1°85 27 3°8 5 atmos.

At ordinary temperatures water dissolves about 4°5 times, alcohol about 23 times its volume of the gas. The solutions are liable to (very complex) spoutaneous decomposition. The list of products includes oxalate of ammonia and urea. Cyanogen burns with a characteristically beautiful peach-blossom coloured flame into car-

~~ponic acid and nitrogen. This gas cyanogen, as already stated, is to cyanides what chlorine gas Cl, is to chlorides, but it is well to remember that the analogy, though perfect in regard to the corre~~ sponding formule, does not, as a rule, extend to the conditions of formation of the bodies represented. Thus cyanogen does not unite with hydrogen into prussic acid, nor does it combine with ordinary metals in the chlorine fashion. When passed over heated potas- sium, it is true, it combines with it into cyanide; and caustic potash-ley absorbs it with formation of cyanide and cyanate (NCO.K), just as chlorine yields chloride and hypochlorite KCIO ; but this is about the sum-total of the analogies in action. Yet metallic cyanides of all kinds can be produced indirectly.

Cyanide of Potassiwm, NC.K.—An aqueous mixture of the quan- tities NCH and KHO no doubt contains this salt, but it smells of the acid, and on evaporation behaves more like a mixture of the two congeners than in any other way. An exhaustive union can be brought about by passing NCH

vapour into an alcoholic solution of KHO; the salt NC.K then comes down as a crystalline precipi- tate, which must be washed with alcohol and dried, cold, over vitriol. A more convenient method is to dehydrate yellow prussi- ate and then decompose it by heating it to redness in an iron crucible. The Fe(NC), part of the salt breaks up into cyanogen and nitrogen, which go off, and a carboniferous finely-divided iron, which remains, with cyanide of potassium, which at that temperature isa thin fluid. Yet the iron sometimes refuses to settle with suffi- cient promptitude to enable one to decant off the bulk even of the fused cyanide. According to private information received by the writer a French manufacturer uses a certain kind of very porous fireclay as an efficient filtering medium.

The ordinary “cyanide of potassium” of trade is not strictly that at all, but at best a mixture of the real salt with cyanate. It is produced by fusing a mixture of eight parts of anhydrous prussiate and three parts of anhydrous carbonate of potash, allowing the reaction

‘yanate. to complete itself and the iron to settle, and decanting off the clear fuse. The product goes by the name of “ Liebig’s cyanide,” but the process was really invented by Rodgers.

Fused cyanide of potassium assumes on cooling the form of a milky white stone-like solid. It fuses readily at a red heat, and at a white heat volatilizes without decomposition, provided that it is under the influence of heat alone; in the presence of air it gradually passes into cyanate; when heated in steam it is converted into carbonate of potash with evolution of ammonia, carbonic oxide, and hydrogen. When heated to redness with any of the more easily reducible metallic oxides it reduces them to the metallic state, while it passes itself into cyanate. It also reduces the corresponding sulphides with formation of sulphocyanate ; for example, Pb(S or O)+ NCK=Pb+NC(O or S)K. Hence its fre- quent application in blowpipe analysis. When heated with chlor- ates or nitrates it reduces them with violent explosion. The aqueous solution of the salt has a strongly alkaline reaction ; it smells of hydrocyanic acid and is readily decomposed by even such feeble acids as acetic or carbonic. It readily dissolves precipitated chlor- ide, bromide, and iodide of silver ; this is the basis of its application in photography. Large quantitics of the salt are used in clectro- plating.

Other Binary Cyanidcs.—Of these only a few can be noticed here. (1) Cyanide of sodium is very similar to the potassium salt. The same remark, in a more limited sense, holds for the cyanides of barium, strontium, and calcium. (2) Cyanide of ammonium (NC.NH,) forms crystals volatile at 36° C. and smelling of ammonia and hydrocyanic acid. The solution in water decomposes spon- taneously, pretty much like that of the free acid. But the anhy- drous vapour by itself stands a high temperature, as is proved by the fact that it is produced largely when ammonia is passed over red-hot charcoal, C+ 2NH,;=H,+NCH.NH3. (3) Mercurie cyanide, Hg(NC).,, forms very readily when mercuric oxide is dissolved in aqueous prussic acid. The solution on evaporation and cooling deposits crystals soluble in eight parts of cold water. This salt is not at all decomposed, even when heated, by water, nor appreci- ably by dilute sulphuric or uitric acid; boiling hydrochloric acid eliminates the NC as hydrocyanic acid; sulphurettcd hydrogen acts similarly in the cold. It gives no precipitate with nitrate of silver. nor is it changed visibly by caustic alkalis. 1t readily

unites not only with other cyanides but also with a multitude of other salts into crystallizable double salts. Mercurous cyanide, Hg,(NC),, seems to have no existence. When it is attempted to produce it by double decompositions, the mixture Hg+(NC),Hg comes forth instead of the conipound Hg,(NC).. (4) Heavy metallic cyanides are mostly insoluble in water, and the general method for their preparation is to decompose a solution of the respective sulphate, chloride, &c., with one of cyanide of potassium. The most important general property of these bodies is that they readily dissolve in solution of cyanide of potassium with formation of double cyanides, which in their capacity as double salts all exhibit, in a higher or lower degree, those anomalies which were fully explained above (sce “ prussiate of potash”’). These “ metallo- cyanides,” as we will call them, being all, unlike plain cyanide of potassium, very stable in opposition to water and aqueous alkalis, are readily produced from almost any compound of the respective metallic radical—some from the metal itself—by treatment with solution of cyanide of potassium. In all we have said ‘‘potassium” may be taken as including sodium and in a limited sense am-

monium, but the potassium compounds are best known, and we accordingly in the following section confine ourselves to these.

Metallo-cyanides.—(1) Stlver.—Cyanide of silver, Ag. NC, is pro- duced as a precipitate by addition of hydrocyanic acid or cyanide of potassium to solution of nitrate of silver. The precipitate is similar in appearance to chloride of silver and, like it, insoluble in cold dilute mineral acids, but soluble in ammonia. At a red heat it is decom- posed with formation of a residue of carboniferous metallic silver. Precipitated cyanide of silver, though insoluble in hydrocyanic acid, dissolves readily in cyanide of potassium with formation of argento- cyanide, AgK.(NC)., which is easily obtained in crystals, perma- nent in the air and soluble in eight parts of cold water. Chloride of silver dissolves in cyanide of potassium solution as readily as the cyanide does and with formation of the same double salt— AgCl1+2KNC=KCl+AgK(NC),. This salt is used very largely in electro- plating. (2) Zcad.—From a solution of the acetate cyanide of lead is precipitated by addition of lydrocyanic acid or cyanide of potassium. The precipitate, Pb(NC)., has the exceptional pro- perty of being insoluble in cyanide of potassium. (3) Zine.— Cyanide of zinc, Zn(NC)., is obtained by addition of hydrocyanic acid to a solution of the acetate, as a white precipitate readily soluble in cyanide of potassium with formation of a double salt, ZnK,(NC),, which forms well-defined crystals. (4) Nickel.— The cyanide, Ni(NC),, is an apple-green precipitate, which is obtained by methods similar to those given under ‘‘zinc.” It readily dissolves in cyanide of potassium with formation of a crystallizable salt, Nik,(NC),+H,0, the solution of which is stable in air and not convertible into one of a nickelic (Ni’”) compound by chlorine (com- pare ‘‘cobalt” infra). The potassio- cyanides of silver, zinc, and nickel as solutions are not, changed visibly by caustic alkalis, but their heavy metals can be precipitated by sulphuretted hydrogen or sulphide of ammonium, as from solutions of, for instance, the chlorides. Aqueous mineral acids (in the heat at least) decompose them exhaustively with elimination of all the NC as NCH. (5) Copper.—When cyanide of potassium solution is added to one of sulphate of copper, a yellow precipitate of cupric cyanide, Cu(NC),, comes down; but on boiling this precipitate loses cyanogen and is converted into a white precipitate of the cuprous salt Cu(NC). This white precipitate dissolves in cyanide of potassium with for- mation chiefly of two crystalline double salts, viz.,

CuNC+6NCK, easily soluble in water, and CuNC+NCK. The latter is decom- posed by water with elimination of Cu.NC. The solution of the 6NC.K salt is not precipitated by sulphuretted hydrogen. Solu- tions of potassio-cyanides of cuprosum are used in electro-plating. (6) Gold.—Metallic gold dissolves in cyanide of potassium solution in the presence of air, thus—

Au+ 2KNC+40=3K,0 + Auk. (NC),.

This auro-cyanide of potassium is used largely for electro-gilding, for which purpose it is conveniently prepared as follows. Six parts of gold are dissolved in aqua regia and the solution is precipitated by anumonia, The precipitate (an explosive compound known as “fulminating gold ”) is dissolved in a solution of six parts of cyanide of potassium, when the double salt is formed with evolution of ammonia. The salt crystallizes in rhombic octahedra, soluble in seven parts of cold water.

In the following potassio-cyanides the heavy metals cannot be detected by means of their ordinary precipitants ; these salts all behave like the potassium salts of complex radicals composed of the heavy metal and all the cyanogen. (7) Cobalt.—Cyanide of potas- sium when added to a solution of a cobaltous salt (CoCl,, &c.) gives a precipitate soluble in excess of reagent. The solution presumably contains a cobalto-cyanide, Co(NC)..2KNC, but on exposure to air eagerly absorbs oxygen with formation of cobalti-cyanide, thus—

Co(NC),~~++4KNC +40=$3K,0 + Co””(NC),. 3K NC. Chlorine (Cl instead of 40) acts more promptly with a similar effect, If the alkaline solution is acidified and boiled, the same cobalti~~ cyanide is produced with evolution of hydrogen—

Co(NC), + 4KNC + HCl = KCl +43H,+Co’(NC);. 3K NC.

24

Cobalti-cyanide of potassium, (NC),0o’”’.Ks, forms yellow crystals isomorphous with those of red prussiate (see infra). It is a re- markably stable salt. In its behaviour to reagents 1t exhibits none of the characters of

a cobalt salt or of a simple cyanide. Aque- ous inineral acids convert it into the hydrogen salt (NC),Co”Hs, which remains undecomposed on boiling. Heavy metallic salts pro- duce precipitates of cobalti-cyanides ; for example, (NC),Co”. Ag. (8) Ferrosum.—See ‘‘ prussiate of potash above. (9) Ferriewm.— Ferric hydrate and ferric compounds generally do not act upon cyanide of potassium in a manner analogous to that of ferrous com- pounds; but a ferri-cyanide analogous to the cobalti-salt referred to in (7) is readily produced by passing chlorine into a cold coumen of ordinary prussiate, (NC),Fe”. Ky + Cl= KC1+(NC)gfe”. Kg.* In preparing the salt an excess of chlorine and elevation of tempera- ture must be avoided, or else part of the salt is decomposed with formation of a green precipitate. The solution on evaporation and cooling yields splendid dark red crystals, soluble in 2°54 parts of water of 15°°6 C. (Wallace), forming a most intensely yellow solution. (Ordinary prussiate solution is only pale yellow even when saturated in the cold.) This salt (discovered by L. Gmelin in 1822) is now being manufactured industrially and is known in commerce as ‘‘red prussiate.” In its reactions it is analogous to ordinary yellow prussiate. The same group, (NC),Fe, which in the latter acts as a four-valent, in the red salt plays the part of a tri-valent radical, (NC),fe. But the radical thus modified has a great tendency to assume the four-valent form; hence an alkaline solution of red prussiate is a powerful oxidizing agent, (NC)¢fe.K, + KHO=(NC),Fe. K,+ HO. The HO goes to the reduc- ing agent. Like the yellowsalt, red prussiate is not poisonous, at least when pure.

Ferro- and Ferri-cyanides of Iron.—The two prussiates are con- stantly being used in the laboratory as very delicate reagents for the detection of iron salt, and for the discrimination of ferrous and ferric compounds in solutions,—(1) ferro-cyanide and ferrous salt, white precipitate ; (2) ferri-cyanide and ferric salt, intensely brown coloration; (38) ferro-cyanide and ferric salt, blue precipitate ; (4) ferri-cyanide and ferrous salt, blue precipitate. These blue precipitates are being produced industrially and used as pigments, under the names of “‘prussian blue” and ‘‘Turnbnll’s blue” for (8) and (4) respectively. The latter has been thus known for now half a century ; yet the constitution of the precipitates and the true rationale of their formation have been fully cleared up only during the last few years. The main results of the researches referred to are included in the following paragraphs.

(1) Ferro-eyanide of Hydrogen, (NC),Fe. H,, is obtained as a white crystalline precipitate when air-free concentrated solution of yellow precipitate is mixed with hydrochloric acid and ether. It is casily soluble in water and in alcohol. An aqueous solution of it is pre- pared for technical purposes by mixing a strong solution of yellow prussiate with enough tartaric acid to bring down the potassium as cream of tartar. When the solution of this ferro-hydrocyanic acid is boiled half the cyanogen goes off as NCH, while the other

remains as part of a white, rather unstable, precipitate, (NC),Fe ae

When the solution is exposed to the air, especially at higher temperatures, part of the cyanogen goes off as NCH, another part suffers oxidation into H,0+NC, and this latter combines with the Fe(NC), of the original compound into blue bodies similar in their general propertics to prussian blue. This latter change is utilized in calico-printing for producing patterns of, or dyeing with, prus- sian blue. The white precipitate (N Fe ine

as an acid of which ee iit! Tne Pe

(2) Everett’s Salt, (NC),Fe. Ke is the potash salt. This salt is

produced in the ordinary process for making prussic acid (see above). It is probably identical with the white precipitate produced when ferrous salt is decomposed by prussiate of potash. Everett’s salt when exposed to the air quickly absorbs oxygen and becomes blue ; the reaction, as Williamson showed, assumes a simple form when the precipitate is boiled with nitric acid. One-half of the potassium is then oxidized away, and a blue double ferri-cyanide of potassium and ferrosum takes the place of the original precipitate :—

(NC)¢Fe . K,Fe=4(K,0 as nitrate) + {(NC),fc} ““Fe’K’. sie ‘ ; Williamson’s blue. uis blue when boiled with ferro-cyanide of potassium is reconverted

into the original Everett’s salt wi rmati i eee salt with formation of a solution of red

(NO)efe. KFe* + K,*Ky . Fo(NC)p= (NO) gfe. Ky +Fe(NC),. FeK,

2 ; Red prussiate, Everett’s salt. the asterisked radicals changing places.

(3) Soluble Prussian Blue is isomerie Wi Pill; oe SStC with Williamson’s blue. It 1s produced by mixing a solution of ferric salt with exeess of yellow prussiate, which, however, is an old process ; what has been ascer-

ee

1 Here Wwe use the y ‘ ey i nat ng – s mbol ‘fe as desig i par ici — meani . i f aa 5 J s 56 parts of ferric iron, ce Fe

PRUSGSSTC CUD

tained lately is that the very same precipitate is produced by addi- tion to a ferrous salt of an excess of red prussiate. I. (NC), fe. K, + FeCl, =2KC1+ (NC)efe. KFe= B. Il. (NC),Fe. Ky + feCl; =3KC1+(NC)Fe. Kfe= B”. B’ and B” in the formule look different, but the difference is only apparent ; in either case the group (NC), is combined with 1Fe and lfe and 1K; the bodies are identical (Skraup; Reindel). The precipitate B, though insoluble in salt solutions, is soluble in pure water, forming an intensely blue solution ; hence the name. Now the potassium in soluble prussian blue can be displaced by iron in two ways, namely, by digestion with solutions of ferrous or ferric salts. In the former case (NC)gfeFeK becomes (NC)gfeFe gy OF

empirically (NC),.Fe;; this is Gmelin’s (‘‘Turnbull’s”) blue. In the latter case (NC), Fefelx becomes (NC),F efes, or empirically (NC),,Fe, ;

this is prussian blue as discovered by Diesbach. Contrasting this latter formula with that of Gmelin’s blue (NC),,.Fe,, we see that

the latter needs only lose }Fe to become prussian blue ; this sur- plus iron in fact can be withdrawn by means of nitrie acid.

In the manufacture of prussian blue the general process is to first precipitate ferrous sulphate with yellow prussiate and then to fully oxidize the precipitate by means of nitric acid or chlorine as far as the oxygen of the air does not doit. The following receipt is recommended amongst others. Six

parts each of green vitriol and yellow prussiate are dissolved separately, each in fifteen parts of water, and the solutions mixed. One part of concentrated sul- phuric acid and twenty-four parts of fuming muriatic acid are then added, and after standing some hours also a solution of bleaching powder in instalments until the blue colour is fully developed. “‘Turnbull’s”” blue is made by precipitating red prussiate of potash with excess of ferrous salt; but it is easily seen from what was said above that the use of this relatively expensive double cyanide might be dispensed with. The properties of the two pigments are pretty much the same. They are sold in the form of solid cakes or lumps, which, in addition to their blue colour, present a coppery lustre on fracture. They are stable against acids, but sensibly affected (bleached) on prolonged exposure to sunlight ; and, although they stand neutral soap fairly well, they are decomposed promptly by solutions of even the carbonates of the alkalis with formation of hydrated oxides ofiron. The cheaper commercial varieties are more or less largely diluted with clay, sulphate of baryta, &c. Pure prussian blue dissolves readily in a dilute solution of oxalic acid ; the intensely blue solution used to serve as a blue ink, but has come to be snperseded by the several more brilliant blues of the coal-tar series. These tar-blues have displaced prussian blue also in other applications, and as a commercial pigment it has besides to struggle against ultramarine. In short, it has gone very much out of use, and as a consequence the manufacture of yellow prussiate is no longer so remunerative as it used to be.

Analysis of Cyanides.—As hydrocyanic acid and cyanide of potassium are dangerously poisonous, and the latter at least is easily procured in commerce, the detection of cyanogen in this state of combination is one of the problems of forensic chemistry. To detect such cyanogen in, say, the contents of a stomach the first step is to distil the mass after acidification with tartaric acid, which decomposes cyanide of potassium but does not liberate prussic acid from prnssian blue (or even prussiate of potash?). If the dis- tillate gives no precipitate with nitrate of silver hydrocyanic acid is absent, if it does the precipitate may have been produced by hydrochloric acid, which may then be eliminated by redistillation with borax or sulphate of soda, neither of which affects NCH. But even in the presence of chlorides the following two tests give perfect certainty. (1) A solution of hydrocyanic acid, when alkalinized with caustic potash and then mixed

with, first ferroso-ferric salt and then excess of hydrochloric acid, gives a precipitate, or at least a green suspension, of prussian blue. (2) A solution of NCH, when mixed with ammonia and yellow sulphide of ammonium, is changed into onc of sulphocyanate of ammonium, which, after removal of the excess of reagents by evaporation at a gentle heat, strikes an intense aud very characteristic red colour with ferric salts, which colour does not vanish (as that of ferric acetate does) on even strong acidification with mineral acid (Liebig's test). The quantitative determination of cyanogen given as an aqneous solution of hydrocyanic acid or cyanide of potassium can (if haloids are absent) be effected by adding excess of nitrate of silver, then acidifying, if necessary, with nitric acid, filtering off, washing, drying, and weighing the cyanide of silver produced. AgNC=134 corresponds to NCH = 27 parts. A more ex- peditious method has been invented by Liebig. A known quantity of the given prussie acid is alkalinized strongly with caustic potash and then diluted freely with water. The caustic alkali usually contains plenty of chloride as an impurity, else a little alkaline chloride must be addcd. A standard solution of nitrate of silver (conveniently adjusted so as to contain 6°30 grammes of fused ni- trate per 1000 cubic centimétres, equivalent to 2 grammes of NCH) is now dropped in from a burette until the cloud of chloride of silver which appears locally from the first just fails to disappear on string, t.¢., until the reaction 2KNC + AgNO,=KAg.(NO), + KNO,

PR Y—

has just been completed. One cub. cent. of silver solution used indicates 2 milligrammes of NCH. Liebig's method lends itself particularly well for the assaying of the medicinal acid and of cyanide of potassium. The two tests for hydrocyanic acid given above apply as they stand to solutions of the cyanides of alkali and alkaline-earth metals, but of to mercuric cyanide. In regard to all other eyanides we have only space to say that from a certain set (which includes the cobalti-cyanides and the platinum cyanides) cyanogen cannot be extracted at all as NCH (or AgNC) by any known methods. Such bodies must be identified by their own specific reactions or by elementary analysis. All cyanides are de- composed by hot concentrated sulphurie acid ; the carbon goes off as CO, the nitrogen remains as sulphate of ammonia

and the metals as sulphates, which brings them within the range of the routine methods of analysis.

Cyanates.—These were discovered by Wohler. The potassium salt NCO.K is produced by the oxidation of fused cyanide, for pre- parative purposes most conveniently by Wohler's method. An intimate mixture of two parts of absolutely anhydrous prussiate of potash and one part of equally dry binoxide of manganese is heated on an iron tray until the mass has become brownish black and just begun to fuse. It is now allowed to cool and exhausted by boiling 80 per cent. alcohol. The filtrate on cooling deposits crystals of the salt NCO.K. If only an aqueous solution of this salt is wanted for immediate use, the fuse may be extracted by cold water. From this solution the eyanate of silver, NCO.Ag, or lead, (NCO),Pb, can be prepared by precipitation with solutions of the respective nitrates or acetates. Hot water decomposes cyanate of potash promptly with formation of carbonates of potash and ammonia, KNCO 2H,0=NH, KHO+CO,. On addition of mineral acid to even the cold solution only a very little of the cyanic acid is liberated as such ; the bulk breaks up at once with effervescence, thus, NCO.H+2H,O=NH;+C0,+H,O. Very interesting is the action of the solution of cyanate of potash on sulphate of ammonia; its direct effect is the formation of cyanate of ammonia, NCO.NH,, but this salt almost immediately passes spontaneously into its isomer urea, which is not a cyanate at all but the amide of carbonic

Ng

acid, ie. CO(OH),-2(0H) +2NH,= CoN te,

2

discovered by Wohler, who thus for the first time produced an organic substance from inorganic materials, or virtually from its elements. Singularly, it is this pseudo-cyanate urea which serves as a material for making cyanic acid. When hydrochlorate of urea, HCl. CON.H,, is heated to 145°C. the latter behaves as if it were cyanate of ammonia: the ammonia unites with the hydrochloric acid into sal-ammoniac and the cyanic acid is set free, but imme- diately suffers polymerization into cyanuric acid, a solid tri-basie acid of the composition N,C,0,H;, which, being difficultly soluble,

can be freed from the sal-ammoniac by being washed with cold water. If perfectly anhydrous cyanuric acid be subjected to dry distillation it furnishes a distillate of (liquid) cyanic acid NCO. H, which must be condensed in a vessel surrounded by a freezing mixture.

Cyanic acid has a very appreciable vapour-tension even at ordi- hary temperatures, and the least trace of its vapour makes itself felt by a characteristically violent and dangerous action on the respira- tory organs. With dry animonia gas it unites into true cyanate of ammonia. We do not know much of its own properties, because as soon as it comes out of the freezing mixture it begins to suffer polymerization into ‘‘cyamelid” with great evolution of heat. This cyamelid is a porcelain-like mass, insoluble in all ordinary solvents and devoid of acid properties. Dry distillation reconverts it into cyanic acid.

Thiocyanates.—This term means bodies like cyanates, but containing sulphur instead of the oxygen of the latter. Thio- cyanates are better known, however, as sulphocyanates or sulpho- cyanides. (1) The potassium salt NCS.K is formed when cyanide of potassium is fused with sulphur or eertain metallie sulphides, €.g., PbS. The usual method of preparation is to fuse together forty-six parts of dehydrated yellow prussiate of potash, seventeen of dry carbonate of potash, and thirty-two of sulphur. The fuse is exhausted with boiling alcohol and thc filtered solution allowed to cool, when crystals of the salt separate out. The salt is very Soluble in water with characteristically large absorption of heat. (2) The ammonium salt NCS .NH, can’ be prepared by allowing a mixture of alcohol, strong aqueous ammonia, and bisulphide of carbon to stand for a time and then warming it. Thiocarbonate of ainmonium, CS,.(NH,),S, is produced first, but subsequently 1t gives up 2H,S to the ammonia and becomes NCS. NH,, which 1s easily obtained in crystals. The tar water obtained in the manufacture of coal-gas sometimes contains sufficient quantities of this salt to make it worth while to recover it. Both the potassium ald the ammonium salt are much used as reagents, and more especi- ally as precipitants for copper and silver. Solutions of eupric salt when mixed with sulphocyanate assume the dark-brown eolour of the cuprie salt Cu(NCS),, but on addition of sulphurous acid the colour disappears and a white precipitate of cuprous sulphocyanide,

This reaction was

Pa OY 25

NCS.Cu, comes down, which, if enough of reagent was used, con- tains all the copper. If sulphocyanate is added to nitrate of silver, all the silver is precipitated as Ag. NCS, similar in appearance to the chloride and, like it, insoluble in water and in nitric acid. Upon this and the fact that sulphocyanates strike a deep red colour with ferric salts Volhard has based an excellent titrimetric method for the determination of silver. (See SitveEr.)

Syntheses of Cyanogen Compounds.—Synuthetical organic chemistry dates from Wohler's discovery of the artificial formation of urea, and in the further development of this branch of the science cyano- gen has played a prominent part. (For illustrations we may refer to certain passages in the present article and in those on METHYL and on NirrocEN.) Hence it is worth while to enumerate briefly the synthetical method for the making of cyanogen itself. (1) Hydrocyanic acid is produced when a current of electric sparks is made to cross a mixture of acetylene, C,H,, and nitrogen. (2) Cyanide of ammonium is formed when ammonia is passed over red-hot charcoal (see supra). (3) Metallic cyanides are produced when dry nitrogen gas is passed over a dry mixture of carbonate of potash or baryta and charcoal at a white heat. A similar reaction goes on spontaneously in the iron-smelting furnaces and gives rise to the formation of vapour of cyanide of potassium. (4) Sulpho- eyanide of ammonium is produced from bisulphide of carbon and ammonia, as explained above. Gia 108)

PRYNNE, Wittiam (1600-1669), was born at Swains- wick near Bath in 1600. He was educated at Bath gramniar-school, and became a commoner of Oriel College, Oxford, in 1616, takmg his B.A. in 1621; he was ad- mitted a student of Lincoln's Inn in the same year, and in due time became a barrister. His studies Jed him deeply into legal and constitutional lore, and no less deeply into ecclesiastical antiquities. He was Puritan to the core, with a tenacious memory, a strength of will bordering upon obstinacy, and a want of sympathy with human nature in its manifold variety. His first book, The Per- petuity of a Regenerate Man's Estate, 1627, was devoted to a defence of one of the main Calvinistic positions, and The Unloveliness of Love-locks and Health's Sickness, 1628, were devoted to attacks upon

prevailing fashions, con- ducted without any sense of proportion, and treating follies on the same footing as scandalous vices.

After the dissolution of parliament in 1629 Prynne came forward as the assailant of Arminianism in doctrine and of ceremonialism in practice, and thus drew down upon himself the anger of Laud. Z/istrio-mastix, published in 1633, was a violent attack, not upon the special im- moralities of the stage of Prynne's day but upon stage- plays in general, in which the author laid himself open to the charge of assailing persons in high position, in the first place by pointing out that kings and emperors who had favoured the drama had been carried off by violent deaths, which assertion might easily be interpreted as a warning to the king, and in the second place by applying a dis- graceful epithet to actresses, which, as Henrietta Maria was taking part in the rehearsal of a ballet just as the sheet containing the offensive words was passing through the press, was supposed to apply to the queen. On 17th February 1634 Prynne was sentenced by the Star Chamber to be imprisoned and also to be fined £5000, expelled from Lincoln's Inn, rendered incapable of returning to his pro- fession, degraded from his degree in the university of Oxford, and set in the pillory, where he was to lose both his ears. On 7th May Prynne was placed in the pillory and lost his ears. The rest of the sentence, with the exception of the clause relating to the payment of the fine, was carried out. A sharp letter written by him to Laud criticizing his arguments at the trial was made the founda- tion of a fresh charge. Prynne, however, got the letter into his hands and tore it up. Though he was again brought before the Star Chamber, on 11th June, no addi tional penalty was inflicted on him. There is no reason to suppose that his punishment was unpopular. In 1637 he was once more in the Star Chamber, together with Bastwick and Burton. In A Divine Tragedy lately acted

he had attacked the Declaration of Sports, and in News from Ipswich he had attacked Wren and the bishops generally. On 30th June a fresh sentence, that had been delivered on the 14th, was executed. The stumps of Prynne's ears were shorn off in the pillory. When on 27th July he was sent to what

was intended to be perpetual imprisonment at Lancaster his journey was a triumphal progress,—the imposition of ship-money and the metro- political visitation having rendered the minds of English- men far more hostile. to the Government than they had been in 1634. Before long Prynne was removed to Mont Orgeuil Castle in Jersey, where it was hoped that he could be so entirely isolated that no word of his would reach the outer world again. ;

Immediately upon the meeting of the Long Parliament in 1640 Prynne was liberated. On 28th November he entered London in triumph, and on 2d March 1641 repara- tion was voted by the Commons, to be made to him at the expense of his persecutors. As might have been expected, Prynne after his release took the side of the Parliament strongly against the king, especially attacking in his writ- ings his old enemies the bishops, and accusing Charles of showing undue favour to the Roman Catholics. He com- mented on the words of Psalm cv., “Touch not mine anointed,” by arguing that they inhibited kings from injuring God’s servants who happened to be their subjects, and in a lengthy work entitled Zhe Sovereign Power of Parliaments and Kingdoms he maintained that the taking arins by parliament in a necessarily defensive war was no treason either in law or in conscience.

Prynne’s sufferings had not served to render him comn- passionate to others. In 1643 he took an active part in the proceedings against Nathaniel Fiennes for the surrender of Bristol. During this and the following year, however, his chief energies as a prosecutor were directed against Archbishop Laud. The cessation of hostilities with the Irish insurgents agreed to on 15th September 1643 brought Charles’s relations with the Catholics into increased dis- repute, and Prynne attacked Laud as the soul of a great Popish plot by publishing both before and after his execu- tion various collections of documents, one of which at least was garbled to render it more telling. Even before the execution of Laud Prynne found a new enemy in the In- dependents. In 1644 he published Z’welve Considerable Serious Questions touching Church Government, in which he upheld the right of the state to form a national church in accordance with the word of God, and reviled the Inde- pendents, partly as advocating an unscriptural discipline, partly as introducing heresy and division, and

maintaining that all religions ought to be tolerated. To the principle of individual liberty Prynne was from the beginning to the end irreconcilably hostile. For some time to come he poured forth pamphlet after pamphlet in vindication of his assertions. Flowing out of this controversy came another, beginning in 1645 with Four Short Questions, privately circulated, and followed by A Vindication of Four Serious Questions of Great Importance, in which he denied the right of the clergy to excommunicate or to suspend from the reception of the sacrament otherwise than by law. Prynne, in short, maintained the supremacy of the state over the church, whilst he argued that the state ought to protect the church from the rivalry of sectarian associations,

Early in 1648 Prynne broke new ground. The Levellers Levelled was directed against the dangerous opinion that the Lords should be brought down into the House of Com- mons, there to sit and vote. As usual, he argued his case on purely antiquarian and technical grounds, without any intellectual grasp of his subject.

On 7th November 1648 Prynne at last obtained a seat

in the House of Commons. He at once took part against those who called for the king's execution, and on 5th December delivered a speech of enormous length in favour of conciliating the king, who had inflicted the most griev- ous injuries upon him and whose misgovernment he had bitterly denounced. The result was his inclusion in Pride's " purge" on the morning of the 6th, when, having attempted resistance to military violence, he was subjected to imprisonment. A fresh protest, published on Ist January 1649 under the title of A Brief Memento to the Present Unparliamentary Junto, coupled with his contemptuous refusal to avow his authorship, brought about a fresh order of imprisonment on 10th January from the House of Commons itself, which, however, does not seem to have been carried out. After recovering his liberty Prynne retired to Swainswick. On 7th June 1649 he was assessed to the monthly contribution laid on the country by Parlia- ment. He not only refused to pay but published A Legal Vindication of the Liberties of England on the ground that no tax could be raised without the consent of the two Houses. In the same ycar he commenced a long histori- cal account of ancient parliaments, which was evidently

intended to reflect on the one in existence. In 1650 his labours were cut short by a warrant from President Brad- shaw, dated Ist July, and ordering his arrest. For the remainder of the year he was imprisoned in Dunster Castle, whence he was removed in January 1651 to Taunton, and in July to Pendennis Castle. On lst February 1652 the council of state ordered his discharge on giving a bond of £1000 to do nothing to the prejudice of the Common- wealth. On his resolute refusal to accept the condition an absolute order for his release was given on 18th Febru- ary. From his release till the death of Cromwell Prynne refrained from making any further assault on the existing Government. His strong conservatism, however, found expression in an argument in defence of advowsons and patronages and an attack on the Quakers, both published in the same year, as well as in an argument against the admission of the Jews to England issued in the beginning of 1655.

It was not until the restoration of the Rump Parliament by the army on 7th May 1659 that Prynne again came into prominent notice, though he had in the previous year issued A Plea for the Lords and House of Peersand A New Discovery, viz., that Quakers were Jesuits in disguise. On that day, in addition to the Rump, fourteen of the secluded members, with Prynne among them, claimed admittance. The claim was of course refused, but on a second attempt on the 9th, through the inadvertence of the doorkeepers, Prynne, Annesly, and Hungerford succeeded in taking their seats. When they were observed, however, no busi- ness was done, and the House purposely adjourned for dinner. At the return of members in the afternoon the doors were found guarded; the secluded members were not permitted to pass, and a vote was at once taken that they should not again be allowed to enter the House. Wrath- ful at the failure of his protest and at the continuance of the republican form of government, Prynne attacked his adversaries fiercely in print. In England’s Confusion, pub- lished 30th May 1659, in the Z’rue and Full Narrative, and in The Brief Necessary Vindication he gave long accounts of the attempt to enter the House and of his ejection, while in the Curtaine Drawne he held up the claims of the Rump to derision. In Mola Asinaria the ruling powers are described as ‘‘a new-fangled Government, compacted of Treason, Usurpation, Tyranny, Theft, and Murder.” Wood, however, denies that this was by Prynne. In Shufling, Cutting, and Dealing, 26th May, he rejoiced at the quarrels which

he sees arising, for “if you all complain I hope I shall win at last.” Concordia Discors pointed out

the absurdity of the constant tendency to multiply oaths, while “‘remonstrances,” ‘“ narratives,” “queries,” “ prescrip- tions,” “ vindications,” “declarations,” and “statements” were scattered broadcast. Upon the cry of the “good old cause” he is especially sarcastic and severe in The True Good Old Cause rightly stated and other pamphlets. Loyalty Banished explains itself. His activity and fear- lessness in attacking those in power during this eventful year were remarkable, and an ironical petition was circu- lated in Westminster Hall and the London streets com- plaining of his indefatigable scribbling. On 12th October the Rump was again expelled by Lambert, and on 24th December once more restored. On 26th December Prynne made another fruitless attempt to take his seat. In obedi- ence to the popular voice, however, the ejected members of 1648, with Prynne among them, wearing a basket-hilt sword, re-entered the House and resumed their old seats on 21st February 1660. He boldly declared that if Charles was to come back it were best done by the votes of those who had made war on his father, and was admonished for his language by Monk and the privy council. This parlia- ment recalled Charles and dissolved itself immediately,— Prynne bringing in the Bill for the dissolution on 24th February. On 13th March he appears as one of three appointed to carry out the resolution of the House expung- ing the Engagement.

The Convention Parliament, which met on 25th April 1660, contained a large number of Presbyterians. Prynne, who was returned for two places, Ludgershall and Bath, elected to sit for the latter, and on 16th June presented to the king an address from the corporation, evidently drawn up by himself, under the title of Bathonia Rediviwa. On lst May he was nominated on the committee appointed “to peruse the Journals and Records, and to examine what pre- tended Acts or orders have passed, inconsistent with the government by King, Lords, and Commons, and report them, with their opinion thereon, to this House,” and to secure the steady administration of the law, and the con- firmation of the legal judgments of

the past years. On 9th May he went to the Lords with various loyal votes of the Commons, and again on 18th May and on 9th June. On 3d June he “ fell upon” Ashley Cooper for putting his hand to the “instrument” to settle the Protector in power. On the 13th he moved that Colonel Fleetwood, Richard Crom- well, John Goodwin, Thorpe, and Whitelock should be excepted from the Act of general pardon and oblivion, the speedy passing of which he strongly urged upon the House. It is said that at the Restoration he applied to be made one of the barons of the exchequer, and that it was in default of this, and to keep so active a man in good temper, that he was appointed chief keeper of the records in the Tower with a salary of £500 a year by Charles, ‘of his owne meere motion for my services and sufferings for him under the late usurpers, and strenuous endeavours by printing and otherwise to restore His Majesty.” On 2d July he supported a proposal that all officers who had served during the Protectorate should now refund their salaries, and declared that he knew that those persons had received above £250,000 for their iniquitous doings and to keep out the king, a charge he had previously made on 12th May. In all the debates he was for severity upon any one who had held office under Cromwell. On 9th July he spoke “very honestly and passionately” from the Presby- terian point of view in the first great debate on religion, and on the 16th declared he “would not be for bishops unless they would derive their power from the king and not vaunt themselves to be jure divino.” In the debate of the 27th upon the Lords’ delay in passing the Act of Indemnity Prynne found an opportunity for expressing his hatred of priests and Jesuits ; and on the 30th, in the

debate on the Ministers’ Bill, he urged a settlement on the principle that the ministers should be compelled to take the oath, but that ‘all presentations should be good throughout, though not by the right patrons, in time of trouble.” On 17th August he spoke passionately against any leniency whatsoever being extended to any of the king’s judges. It is curious, however, to find that the House appointed him to carry the petition to the king in favour of Lambert or Vane. When the question of dis- banding came up, for the carrying out of which he was in October made one of the commissioners, Prynne moved that no arrears should be paid to those who had acted with Lambert and did not submit. On 7th November he supported

the Bill for the attainder of Cromwell and others who had participated in the king's execution, and were since dead, and particularly desired that the House would take the first and second reading at the same sitting, as was done in the case of the king's trial. At some time in this year (1660) he wrote a letter on the evil custom of drinking healths, a subject discussed in the House on 10th November. There was indeed scarcely any debate in which Prynne's voice was not heard; he spoke against laying the cost of the abolition of the court of wards upon the excise, having been in August appointed on the commission for appeals and regulating the excise, and in favour of Bills against the profanation of the Lord's Day (in which his knowledge of ecclesiastical con- troversy again appeared) and against swearing. He ap- pears at this time to have been officially connected with the Admiralty. He supported on 27th November the abortive attempt to turn the king's declaration concern- ing ecclesiastical affairs into a Bill, and moved against the payment of the debts of the attainted regicides. In December he wrote against the bishops to the king, thus "'blemishing his late services." During this year was pub- lished A Seasonable Vindication of the Supream Authority and Jurisdiction of Christian Kings, Lords, Parliaments, as well over the Possessions as Persons of Delinquents, Pre- lates, and Churchmen.

At the elections for the Pensionary Parliament, which met on 8th May 1661, Prynne was again returned as member for Bath in spite of the vehement efforts of the Royalists headed by Sir T. Bridge. This parliament was bent upon the humiliation of the Presbyterians, and Prynne appears in his familiar character of protester. On 30th May, when the members took the sacrament together at St Margaret's, 'Mr Prynne and some few others refused to take it kneel- ing. The parson with the bread passed on and refused to give it, but he with the wine, not noticing, gave the wine." With Secretary Morris Prynne opposed the motion that Dr Gunning should receive the thanks of the House and be desired to print hissermon. On the 18th of this. month he had moved that the Engagement, with the Solemn League and Covenant, should be burned by the hangman. On 13th July he was the subject of attack, as being in a way the representative of Presbyterianism ; the House in its vehement Anglicanism declared that his paper lately pub- lished, Sundry Reasons against the new intended Bill for governing and reforming Corporations, was illegal, false, scandalous, and

seditious. Prynne was censured, and so strong was the feeling that he deemed it best to express his sorrow, upon which the offence was remitted. The continued attacks upon the Presbyterians led him to pub- lish his Short, Sober, Pacific Examination of Hxuberances in the Common Prayer, as well as the Apology for Tender Consciences touching Not Bowing at the Name of Jesus. In 1662 there appeared also the Brevia Parliamentaria Rediviva, possibly a portion of the Register of Parlia- mentary Writs, of which the fourth and concluding volume was published in 1664. During 1663 he served constantly

on committees, and was chairman of the committee of supply in July, and again in April 1664.

In the third session Prynne was once more, 13th May 1664, censured for altering the draft of a Bill relating to public-houses after commitment, but the House again, upon his submission, while taking severe notice of an irregu- larity committed by “so ancient and knowing a member, remitted the offence, and he again appears on the com- inittee of privileges in November and afterwards. In 1665 and 1666 he published the second and first volumes respectively of the Exact Chronological Vindication and ‘ Historical Demonstration of the supreme ecclesiastical juris- diction exercised by the English kings from the original planting of Christianity to the death of Richard I. In the latter year especially he was very busy with his pen against the Jesuits. In January 1667 he was one of three appointed to manage the evidence at the hearing of the impeachment of Lord Mordaunt, and in November of the same year spoke in defence of Clarendon, so far as the sale of Dunkirk was concerned ; and this appears to have been the last time that he addressed the House. In 1668 was published his Aurum Regine or Records concerning Queen-gold, the Brief Animadversions on Coke’s Institutes in 1669, and the History of King John, Henry III., and Edward I., in which the power of the crown over ecclesi- astics was maintained, in 1670, The date of the Abridg- ment of the Records of the Tower of London is doubtful, though the preface is dated 1656/57. Prynne died in his lodgings at Lincoln’s Inn, 24th October 1669, and was buried in the walk under the chapel there, which stands upon pillars. His will, by which he

gave one portion of his books to Lincoln's Inn and another to Oriel College, is dated 11th August 1669. Prynne was never married.

The following curious account of his habits is given by Wood. '*His custom when he studied was to put on a long quilted cap which came an inch over his eyes, serving as an umbrella to defend them from too much light; and, seldom eating a dinner, would every three hours or more be munching a roll of bread, and now and then refresh his exhausted spirits with ale brought to him by his servant." There is a portrait of him in Oriel College, Oxford,

and Wood mentions one by Hollar, and an engraving by Stent, as the best extant. (S. R. G.—O, A.)

PRYTANIS (pl. prytancis) was the title of certain officials in Greek states. They appear.to have succeeded the kings at the time when the monarchical form of government was abolished throughout Greece. At Rhodes they continued to be the chief magistrates as late as the Ist century 8.c., but in other states their functions dwindled. Though they were not priests, they had the charge of certain public sacrifices. Their headquarters were in the "* pryta- neum" or town-hall, the central point of a Greek state, where a fire was kept perpetually burning on the public hearth. When a colony was founded the fire in the prytaneum of the new city was kindled from the fire in the prytaneum of the mother-city, and if this colonial fire ever happened to be extinguished it was rekindled from the same source. At Athens in classical times the prytaneis were those fifty members of the council of five hundred who presided at the council meetings as well as at the popular assemblies. They consisted of the fifty members who represented one of the ten tribes on the council. The office was held for a tenth of a year and passed in rotation to the representa- tives of each of the ten tribes, During their term of office the prytaneis were maintained at the public expense in the tholos or rotunda (not, as is sometimes stated, in the prytaneum). As the highest mark of honour, distinguished citizens and their descendants were sometimes maintained for life in the prytaneum. Here, too, ambassadors were entertained. There was further a court of justice at Athens called the "court in the prytaneum "; it tried murderers wlio were not to be found, and also lifeless instruments

which had been the cause of death,—an institution prob- ably existing from a very remote antiquity. >

PRZEMYSL, one of the principal towns of Galicia, Austria, and the seat of a Roman Catholic and of a Greek bishop, is picturesquely situated on the river San, about 140 miles to the east of Cracow. It contains several churches, of which the two cathedrals are the most inter- esting, and numerous convents, schools, and seminaries. Among its manufactures are wooden wares, linen, leather, and liqueur, and a brisk trade is carried on in these articles and in agricultural produce. hands of Jews, who form fully a third of the population. On the hill above the town are the ruins of an old castle, said to have been founded by Casimir the Great. Since 1874 Przemys] has been strongly fortified. The population of the town proper in 1880 was 9244, of the commune

20,040.

Przemysl, one of the oldest towns in Galicia, clairas to have been founded in the 8th century, and was at one time capital of a large independent principality. Casimir the Great and other Polish princes endowed it with privileges similar to those of Cracow, and it attained a high degree of prosperity. In the 17th century its im- portance was destroyed by inroads of Tatars, Cossacks, and Swedes.

PSALMANAZAR, George (c. 1679-1763), the assumed name of a pretended native of Formosa, who was in reality a Frenchman, and was born about 1679, probably in Languedoc. According to his own account he was sent in his seventh year to a free school taught by two Franciscan monks, after which he was educated in a Jesuit college “in an archiepiscopal city.” On leaving college he was recommended as tutor to a young gentleman, but soon fell into a lazy and idle life and became involved in pecuniary difficulties. This induced him to assume various personations in order to obtain a supply of ready money, his first being that of a pilgrim on the journey to Rome. Afterwards he travelled through Germany, Brabant, and Flanders in the character of a Japanese convert. At Liége he enlisted in the Dutch service, shortly after which he altered his character to that of an unconverted Japanese. At Sluys he made the acquaintance of a Scotch chaplain, by whom he was brought over to

England and introduced to the bishop of London. Having undergone conversion to Christianity, he was employed by the bishop to translate the church catechism into what was supposed to be the Formosan language. In 1704 he published a fictitious Historical and Geographical Description of Formosa, and was shortly afterwards sent to complete his studies at the university of Oxford. The work of course was founded on previous publications, but the compilation was done with great cleverness, in addition to which he printed a so-called Formosan alphabet, and specimens of the language accompanied with translations. In 1707 he published Dialogue between a Japanese and a Formosan. There also appeared without date An Inquiry into the Objections against George Psalmanazar of Formosa, with George Psalmanazar's Answer. To add to his income he also joined another person in promoting the sale of a sort of white japan, the art of paimting which he professed to have brought from Formosa. His pretensions were from the beginning doubted by many, and when exposure was inevitable he made a full confession of his guilt. Through- out the rest of his life he not only exhibited a seemingly conscientious regard for truth but according to Dr Samuel Johnson, as reported by Mrs Piozzi, "a piety, penitence, and virtue exceeding almost what we read as wonderful in the lives of the saints." Dr Johnson used to discuss theo- logical and literary matters with him in an alehouse in the city, and cherished so high an opinion of his character and talents that he asserted he would "as soon think of contradicting a bishop." Psalmanazar obtained a comfort- able living by writing for the booksellers. He published

The trade is mostly in the –

:

PSA—PSA

Essays on Scriptural Subjects (1753), contributed various articles to the Ancient Universal History, and completed Palmer's History of Printing. He died in Ironmonger Row, Old Street, London, 3d May 1763. His memoirs appeared in 1764 under the title Memoirs of * * * commonly known by the Name of George Psalmanazar, but do not disclose his real name or the place of his birth.

PSALMS, Boox or, or Psaurer, the first book of the Hagiographa in the Hebrew Bible.

Title and Traditional Authorship.—The Hebrew title of the book is p*>an, téhillim, or pdm 7D, “the book of hymns” or rather “songs of praise.”! The singular nmbnn is properly the infinitive or nomen verbi of on, a verb employed in the technical language of the temple service for the execution of a jubilant song of praise to the accompaniment of music and the blare of the priestly trumpets (1 Chron. xvi. 4 sq., xxv. 3; 2 Chron. v. 12 sq.). The name is not therefore equally applicable to all psalms, and in the later Jewish ritual the synonym hadlel specially designates two series of psalms, cxiii.-cxvill. and exlv.~~cl., of which the former was sung at the three great feasts, the encenia, and the new moon, and the latter at the daily morning prayer. That the whole book is named “ praises ” is clearly due to the fact that it was the manual of the temple service of song, in which praise was the leading feature. But for an individual psalm the usual name is “WN (in the Bible only in titles of psalms), which is applic~~ able to any piece designed to be sung to a musical accom- paniment. Of this word Yadpos, “psalm,” is a translation, and in the Greek Bible the whole book is called Yadpoé or Yadrripiv.? The title Yadpoi or BuBrAdgs Yadav is used in the New Testament (Luke xx. 42, xxiv. 44; Acts i. 20), but in Heb. iv. 7 we find another title, namely “ David.” Hippolytus tells us that in his time most Christians said “the Psalms of David,” and believed the whole book to be his; but this title and belief are both of Jewish origin, for in 2 Mac. ii. 13 ra rod AaviS means the Psalter, and the title of the apocryphal “Psalter of Solomon” implies that the previously existing Psalter was ascribed to David. Jewish tradition does not make David the author of all the psalms; but as he was regarded as the founder and legislator of the temple psalmody (1 Chron., ut sup. ; Ezra li, 10; Neh. xii. 36, 45 sg.; Ecclus. xlvii. 8 sq.), 80 also he was held to have completed and arranged the whole book, though according to Talmudic tradition he incor- porated psalms by ten other authors, Adam, Melchizedck, Abraham, Moses, Heman, Jeduthun, Asaph, and the three sons of Korah. With this it agrees that the titles of the psalms name no one later than Solomon, and even he is not recognized as a psalmodist by the most ancient tradition, that of the LXX., which omits him from the title of Ps, cxxvil. and makes Ps, Ixxii. be written not by but of him. The details of the tradition of authorship show consider- able variation

; according to the Talmudic view Adam is author of the Sabbath psalm, xcii., and Melchizedek of Ps. cx., while Abraham is identified with Ethan the Ezrahite Os ixxxix.), But, according to older Jewish tradition attested by Origen, Ps. xcii. is by Moses, to whom are assigned Pss. xe,-c. inclusive, according to a general rule that all anonymous pieces are by the same hand with the nearest preceding psalm whose author is named ; and Ps, cx., which by its title is Davidic, seems to have been given to Melchizedek to avoid the dilemma of Matt. xxii. 41 sq.

1 Hippol., ed. Lag., p. 188; Enseb., W.E., vi. Za ea Epi he, MV et Pond., § 23; Jerome's preface to Psalt. juata Hebrxos. Similarly in the Syriac Bible the title is '' mazinoré." The passages are collected in Kimhi's preface to his commentary ihe Psalms, ed. Schiller-Szinessy, Cambridge, 1883. é Opp., ii. 514 sq., ed. Rue ; cp. Hippol., ut supra; Jerome, Ep. CXL. (ad Cypr.), and Pref. in Mal.

29

Origen's rule accounts for all the psalms except i. and ii., which were sometimes reckoned as one poem (Acts xiii. 33 in the Western text ; Origen; B. Berakhoth, f. 9b), and appear to have been ascribed to David (Acts iv. 25).

The opinion of Jerome (Pref. in Ps. Heb.) and other Christian writers that the collector of the Psalter was Ezra does not seem to rest on Jewish tradition.

Nature and Origin of the Collection.—Whatever may be the value of the titles to individual psalms, there can be no question that the tradition that the Psalter was col- lected by David is not historical ; for no one doubts that some of the psalms date from after the Babylonian exile. The truth that underlies the tradition is that the collection is essentially the hymn-book of the second temple, and it was therefore ascribed to David, because it was assumed, as we see clearly from Chronicles, that the order of worship in the second temple was the same as in the first, and had David as its father: as Moses completed the law of Israel for all time before the people entered Canaan, so David completed the theory and contents of the temple psalmody before the temple itself was built. When we thus under- stand its

origin, the tradition becomes really instructive, and may be translated into a statement which throws light on a number of points connected with the book, namely, that the Psalter was (finally, at least) collected with a liturgical purpose. Thus, though the Psalms represent a great range of individual religious experience, they avoid such situations and expressions as are too unique to be used in acts of public devotion. Many of the psalms are doxologies or the like, expressly written for the temple ; others are made up of extracts from older poems in a way perfectly natural in a hymn-book, but otherwise hardly in- telligible. Such ancient hymns as Exod. xv. 1 sq., Judges v., 1 Sam. ii. 1 sq., are not included in the collection, though motives borrowed from them are embodied in more modern psalms ; the interest of the collector, we see, was not his- torical but liturgical. Again, the temple, Zion, the solemn feasts, are constantly kept in the foreground. All these points go to show that the collection was not only used but actually formed for use in the temple.

The question now arises, Was the collection a single act or is the Psalter made up of several older collections And here we have first to observe that in the Hebrew text the Psalter is divided into five books, each of which closes with a doxology. The scheme of the whole is as follows :—

Book I., Pss. i.-xli.: all these are ascribed to David except 1., il., x. (which is really part of ix.), xxxiii. (ascribed to David in LXX.); doxology, xli. 13. Book 1I., Pss, xlii.-lxxii.: of these xlii.-xlix. are ascribed to the Korahites (xliii. being part of xlii.), 1. to Asaph, li.-lxxi, to David (except Ixvi., Ixvii., xxi. anonymous; in LXX. the last two bear David's name), lxxii. to Solomon ; dovology, 1xxii. 18, 19 followed by the subscription "The prayers of David the son of Jesse are ended." Book III., Pss. lxxiii.~~lxxxix.: here lxxiii.~~ Ixxxili, bear the name of Asaph, lxxxiv., lxxxv., lxxxvii., 1xxxviii. that of the Korahites, Ixxxvi. of David, Ixxxviii. of Heman, lxxxix. of Ethan ; doxology, 1xxxix. 52. Book IV., Pss. xc.-cvi.: all are anonymous except xc. (Moscs), ci., ciii. (David),—LXX. gives also civ. to David ; here the doxology is peculiar, ' Blessed be Jehovah God of Israel from everlasting and to everlasting. And let all the people say Amen, Hallelujah." Book Y., Pss. evii.-cl.: of these eVili.-cX., CXXli., CXxiv., cxxxi., cxxxili., exxxviii.-cxlv. are ascribed to David, and cxxvii. to Solomon, and cxx.-cxxxiv. are pilgrimage psalms; LXX. varies

considerably from the Hebrew as to the psalms to be ascribed to David; the book closes with a group of doxological psalms.

The division into five books was known to Hippolytus, but a closer examination of the doxologies shows that it does not represent the original scheme of the Psalter; for, while the doxologies to the first three books are no part of the psalms to which they are attached, but really mark the end of a book in a pious fashion not uncommon in Eastern litera- ture, that to book iv. with its rubric addressed to the people plainly belongs to the psalm, or rather to its liturgical exe- cution, and does not therefore really mark the close of a

collection once separate. In point of fact books iv. and v. have so many common characters that there 1s every reason to regard them as a single great group. | Again, the main part of books ii. and inl. (Pss. xlii.-lxxxiil.) is distinguished from the rest of the Psalter by habitually avoiding the name Jehovah (the Lord) and using Elohim (God) instead, even in cases like Ps. l. 7, where “I am Jehovah thy God” of Exod. xx. 2 is quoted but changed very awkwardly to “Tam God thy God.” This is not due to the authors of the individual psalms, but to an editor ; for Ps. liii. is only another recension of Ps. xiv., and Ps. lxx. repeats part of Ps. xl., and here Jehovah is six times changed to Elohim, while the opposite change happens but once. The Elohim psalms, then, have undergone a common editorial treatment distinguishing them from the rest of the Psalter. And they make up the mass of books ii. and ii1., the remaining psalms, Ixxxiv.~~lxxxix., appearing to be a sort of appendix. But when we look at the Elohim psalms more nearly we see that they contain two distinct elements, Davidic psalms and psalms ascribed to the Levitical choirs (sons of Korah, Asaph). The Davidic collection as we have it splits the Levitical psalms into two groups and actually divides the Asaphic Ps. 1. from the main Asaphic collection, lxxiil.~~ Ixxxiii. This order can hardly be original, especially as the Davidic Elohim psalms have a separate subscription (Ps. lxxii. 20). But if we remove them we get a continuous body of Levitical Elohim psalms, or rather two collections, the first Korahitic and the second Asaphic, to which there have been added by way of appendix by a non-Elohistic editor a supplementary

group of Korahite psalins and one psalm (certainly late) ascribed to David. The formation of books iv. and v. is certainly later than the Elohistic re- daction of books ii. and iii., for Ps. eviii. is made up of two Elohim psalms (vii. 7-11, lx. 5-12) in the Elohistic form, though the last two books of the Psalter are generally Jehovistic. We can thus distinguish the following steps in the redaction :—(«) the formation of a Davidic collection (book i.) with a closing doxology; (5) a second Davidic collection (li.-lxii.) with doxology and subscription ; (c) a twofold Levitical collection (xlii.-xlix. ; 1, Ixxiii.-lxxxiii.) ; (d) an Elohistic redaction and combination of (0) and © ; (e) the addition of a non-Elohistic supplement to (d) with a doxology ; (/) a collection later than (d), consisting of books iv., v. And finally the anonymous psalms i., ii., which as anonymous were hardly an original part of book 1. may have been prefixed after the whole Psalter was completed. We see too that it is only in the latest collec- tion (books iv., v.) that anonymity is the rule, and titles, especially titles with names, occur only sporadically. Else- where the titles run in series and correspond to the limits of older collections. ; Date of the Collection.—A process of collection which involves so many stages must plainly have taken a con- siderable time, and the question arises whether we can fix a limit for its beginning and end or even assign a date for any one stage of the process.. An inferior limit for the final collection is given by the Septuagint translation. But this translation itself was not written all at once, and its history is obscure ; we only know from the pro- logue to Ecclesiasticus that the Hagiographa, and doubt- less therefore the Psalter, were read in Greek in Egypt about 130 B.c. or somewhat later.1_ And the Greek Psalter, ae <_< one apocryphal psalm at the close, is y the same as the Hebrew; there is nothing to suggest that the Greek was first translated from a less complete Psalter and afterwards i extended to agree with ellen a a

1 The text of the passage is obscure and Latin “cum multum temporis ibi fuissem ” author’s meaning. A friend has suge ovyxpovicas we ought perhaps to read 7

in part corrupt, but the

probably expresses the ested to the writer that for auxvov éyxpovicas.

the extant Hebrew. It is therefore reasonable to hold that the Hebrew Psalter was completed and recognized as an authoritative collection long enough before 130 B.c. to allow of its passing to the Greek-speaking Jews in Alex- andria. Beyond this the external evidence for the com- pletion of the collection does not carry us. It appears indeed from 1 Chron. xvi., 2 Chron. vi. 41, 42, that various psalms belonging to books iv, and v. were current in the time of the Chronicler,—that is, towards the close of the Persian or more probably in the earlier part of the Greek period. But it is not certain that the psalms he quotes (xevi., ev., evi, cxxxii.) already existed in their place in our Psalter, or that Ps. cvi. even existed in its present form. Turning now to internal evidence, we find the surest start- ing-point in the Levitical psalms of the Elohistic collection. These, as we have seen, form two groups, referred to the sons of Korah and to Asaph. At the beginning of the Greek period or somewhat later Asaph was taken to be a. contemporary of David and chief of the singers of his time (Neh. xii. 46), or one of the three chief singers belonging to the three great Levitical houses (1 Chron. xxv. | sq.). But the older history knows nothing of an individual Asaph ; at the time of the return from Babylon the guild of singers as a whole was called Bné Asaph (Ezra ii. 41), and so apparently it was in the time of Nehemiah (Neh. xi. 22, Heb.).2 The singers or Asaphites are at this time still distinguished from the Levites; the oldest attempt to incorporate them with that tribe appears in Exod. vi. 24, where Abiasaph—that is, the eponym of the guild of Asaphites—is made one of the three sons of Korah. But when singers and Levites were fused the Asaphites ceased to be the only singers, and ultimately, as we see in Chron- icles, they were distinguished from the Korahites and reckoned to Gershom (1 Chron. vi.), while the head of the Korahites is Heman, as in the title of Ps. Ixxxvin, It is only in the appendix to the Elohistic psalm-book that we find Heman and Ethan side by side with Asaph, as in the Chronicles, but the body of the collection distinguishes between two guilds of singers, Korahites and Asaphites, and is therefore as a collection younger than Nehemiah, but presumably older than Chronicles with its three guilds. The contents of the Korahite and Asaphic psalms give no reason to doubt that they really were collected by or for these two guilds. Both groups are remarkable by the fact that they hardly contain any recognition of present sin on the part of the community of Jewish faith—though they do confess the sin of Israel in the past—but are exercised with the observation that prosperity does not follow righteousness either in the

case of the individual (xlix., xxiii.) or in that of the nation, which suffers not- withstanding its loyalty to God, or even on account thereof (xliv., Ixxix.). Now the rise of the problems of individual faith is the mark of the age that followed Jeremiah, while the confident assertion of national righteousness under misfortune is a characteristic mark of pious Judaism after Ezra, in the period of the law but not earlier. Malachi, Ezra, and Nehemiah, like Haggai and Zechariah, are still very far from: holding that the sin of Israel lies all in the past. Again, a considerable number of these psalms (xliv., Ixxiv., lxxix., lxxx.) point to an historical situation which can be very definitely realized. They are post-exile in their whole tone and belong to a time when prophecy had ceased and the synagogue worship was fully established (Ixxiv. 8, 9). But the Jews are no longer the obedient

2 The threefold division of the singers appears in the same list according to the Hebrew text of ver. 17, but the occurrence of Jedu- thun as a proper name instead of a musical note is suspicions, and makes the text of LXX. preferable. The first clear trace of the triple choir is therefore in Neh. xii. 24, ¢.e., not earlier than Alexander the Great, with whom Jaddua (ver. 22) was contemporary.

slaves of Persia; there has been a national rising and armies have gone forth to battle. Yet God has not gone forth with them: the heathen have been victorious, blood has flowed like water round Jerusalem, the temple has been defiled, and these disasters assume the character of a reli- gious persecution. These details would fit the time of re- ligious persecution under Antiochus Epiphanes, to which indeed Ps. Ixxiv. is referred (as a prophecy) in 1 Mac. vii, 16. But against this reference there is the objection that these psalms are written in a time of the deepest de- jection and yet are psalms of the temple choirs. Now when the temple was reopened for worship after its pro- fanation by Antiochus the Jews were victorious and a much more joyous tone was appropriate. Besides, if the psalms are of the Maccabee period, they can have been no original part of the Elohistic psalm-book, which certainly was not collected so late. But there is one and only one time in the Persian period to which they can be referred, viz., that of the great civil wars under Artaxerxes ITI. Ochus (middle of 4th century

8.c.). See Persts, vol. xviii. p. 580, and Puanicra, 7b. p. 809. The Jews were involved in these and were severely chastised, and we know from Josephus that the temple was defiled by the Persians and humiliating conditions attached to the worship there. It would appear that to the Jews the struggle took a theo- cratic aspect, and it is not impossible that the hopeful beginnings of a national movement, which proved in the issue so disastrous, are reflected in some of the other pieces of the collection.1 All this carries the collection of the Elohistic psalm-book down to quite the last years of the Persian period at the earliest, and with this it agrees—to name but one other point—that the view of Israel's past history taken in Ps. lxxviii., where the final rejection of the house of Joseph is co-ordinated with the fall of Shiloh and the rise of Zion and the Davidic kingdom, indi- cates a standpoint very near to that of Chronicles. The fusion of the separate Korahite and Asaphic psalm-books in a single collection along with the second group of Davidic psalms may very probably be connected with the remodelling of the singers in three choirs which Chronicles presupposes.

Now books iv. and v. are, as we have seen, later than the Elohistic redaction of books 11. and iii, so that the collection of the last part of the Psalter must, if our argu- ment up to this point is sound, be thrown into the Greek period, and probably not the earliest part thereof. And this conclusion is borne out by a variety of indications. First of all, the language of some of these psalms clearly points to a very late date indeed.2, The Jews had even in the time of Nehemiah (Neh. xiii. 24) been in danger of forgetting their own tongue and adopting a jargon com- pounded with neighbouring idioms; but the restorers of the law fought against this tendency with vigour and with so much success that very tolerable Hebrew was written for at least a century longer. But in such a psalm as cxxxix, the language is a real jargon, a mixture of Hebrew and Aramaic, which, in a hymn accepted for use in the temple, shows the Hebrew speech to have reached the last

1 Ps. Ixxxiii., in which Judah is threatened by the neighbouring States acting with the support rather than under the guidance of Asshur (the satrap of Syria?) is also much more easily understood under the loose rule of Persia than under the Greeks, and the associa- tion of Tyre with Philistia (as in lxxxvii. 4) agrees with Pseudo-Scylax (see vol. xviii. p. 809). If this psalm has a definite historical back- ground, which many critics doubt, it

must be later than the destruc- tion of Sidon by Ochus. That it is not of the Assyrian age is obvious from the mention of Arab tribes.

2 For details as to the linguistic phenomena of the Psalms, see especially Giesebrecht in Stade's Zeitschr., 1881, p. 276 sq. The objec- tions of Driver (Jowrn. of Phil., xi. 233) do not touch the argument

that such psalms as cxxxix. belong to the very latest stage of Biblical Hebrew,

ol

stage of decay. Again, though no part of the Psalter shows clearer marks of a liturgical purpose, we find that in books iv. and v. the musical titles have entirely disap- peared. The technical terms, that is, of the temple music which are still recognized by the Chronicler have gone out of use, presumably because they were already become un- intelligible, as they were when the Septuagint version was made. This implies a revolution in the national music which we can hardly explain in any other way than by the influence of that Hellenic culture which, from the time of the Macedonian conquest, began to work such changes on the whole civilization and art of the East. Once more the general tone of large parts of this collection is much more cheerful than that of the Elohistic psalm-book. It begins with a psalm (xc.) ascribed in the title to Moses, and seemingly designed to express feelings appropriate to a situation analogous to that of the Israelites when, after the weary march through the wilderness, they stood on the borders of the promised land. It looks back on a time of great trouble and forward to a brighter future. In some of the following psalms there are still references to deeds of oppression and violence, but more generally Israel ap- pears as happy under the law with such a happiness as it did enjoy under the Ptolemies during the 3d century B.c. The problems of divine justice are no longer burning ques- tions; the righteousness of God is seen in the peaceful felicity of the pious (xci., xcii., &c.). Israel, indeed, is still scattered and not triumphant over the heathen, but even in the dispersion the Jews are under a mild rule (cvi. 46), and the commercial activity of the nation has begun to develop beyond the seas (cvii. 26 sq.). The whole situation and vein of piety here are strikingly parallel to those shown in Ecclesiasticus, which dates from the close of the Ptolemaic sovereignty in

Palestine. But some of the psalms carry us beyond this peaceful period to a time of struggle and victory. In Ps. cxviii. Israel, led by the house of Aaron — this is a notable point—has emerged triumphant from a desperate conflict and celebrates at the temple a great day of rejoicing for the unhoped-for victory ; in Ps. exlix. the saints are pictured with the praises of God in their throat and a sharp sword in their hands to take vengeance on the heathen, to bind their kings and nobles, and exercise against them the judgment written in prophecy. Such an enthusiasm of militant piety, plainly based on actual successes of Israel and the house of Aaron, can only be referred to the first victories of the Maccabees, culminating in the purification of the temple in 165 B.c. This restora- tion of the worship of the national sanctuary under cir- cumstances that inspired religious feelings very different from those of any other generation since the return from Babylon might most naturally be followed by an extension of the temple psalmody ; it certainly was followed by some liturgical innovations, for the solemn service of dedication on the twenty-fifth day of Chisleu was made the pattern of a new annual feast (that mentioned in John x. 22). Now in 1 Mac. iv. 54 we learn that the dedication was celebrated with hymns and music. In later times the psalms for the encenia or feast of dedication embraced Ps. xxx. and the hallel Pss, cxiii.-cxvill. There is no reason to doubt that these were the very psalms sung in 165 B.c., for in the title of Ps. xxx. the words “the song for the dedication of the house,” which are a somewhat awkward insertion in the original title, are found also in the LXX., and therefore are probable evidence of the liturgical use of the psalm in the very first years of the feast. But no collection of old psalms could fully suffice for such an occasion, and there is every reason to think that the hallel, which especially in its closing part contains allusions that fit no other time so well, was first arranged for the same ceremony. The course of the subsequent history makes

it very intelligible that the Psalter was finally closed, as we have seen from the date of the Greek version that it must have been, within a few years at most after this great event.) From the time of Hyrcanus downwards the ideal of the princely high priests became more and more diver- gent from the ideal of the pious in Israel, and in the Psalter of Solomon we see

religious poetry turned against the lords of the temple and its worship. (See MEsSIAH.)

All this does not, of course, imply that there are not in books iv. and v. any pieces older than the completion of books ii. and iii, for the composition of a poem and its acceptance as part of the Levitical liturgy are not necessarily coincident in date, except in psalms written with a direct liturgical purpose. In the fifteen “songs of degrees” (Pss. cxx.-cxxxiv.) we have a case in point. According to the Mishna (Iiddoth, ii. 5) and other Jewish traditions, these psalms were ‘sung by the Levites at the Feast of Tabernacles on the fifteen steps or degrees that led from the women’s to the men’s court. But when we look at the psalms themselves we see that they must originally have been a hymn-book, not for the Levites, but for the laity who came up to Jerusalem at the great pilgrimage feasts ; and the title of this hymn-book (which can be restored from the titles derived from it that were prefixed to each song when they were taken into the Levitical connexion) was simply “Pilgrimage Songs.”? All these songs are plainly later than the exile ; but some of them cannot well be so late as the formation of the Elohistic psalm-book, and the simple reason why they are not included in it is that they were hymns of the laity, describing with much beauty and depth of feeling the emotions of the pilgrim when his feet stood within the gates of Jerusalem, when he looked forth on the encircling hills, when he felt how good it was to be camping side by side with his brethren on the slopes of Zion (cxxxili.), when a sense of Jehovah’s forgiving grace and the certainty of the redemption of Israel triumphed over all the evils of the present and filled his soul with humble and patient hope.

The titles which ascribe four of the pilgrimage songs to David and one to Solomon are lacking in the true LXX., and inconsistent with the contents of the psalms. Better attested, because found in the LX.X. as well as in the Hebrew, aud therefore probably as old as the collection itself, are the name of Moses in Ps. xc. and that of David in Pss. ci., cii., evlil.-cx., cxxxviii.-cxlv. But where did the last collectors of the Psalms find such very ancient pieces which had been passed by by all previous collectors, and what criterion was there to establish their genuineness? No canon of literary criticism can treat as valuable external evidence an attestation which first appears so many centuries after the supposed date of the poems, especially

when it is confronted by facts so conclusive as that Ps. eviii. is made up of extracts from Pss. lvii. and lx. and that Ps. exxxix. is marked by its language as one of the latest pieces in the book. The only possible question for the critic is whether the ascription of these psalms to David was due to the idea that he was the psalmist par excellence, to whom any poem of unknown origin was naturally ascribed, or whether we have In some at least of these titles an example of the habit so common in later Jewish literature of writing in the name of ancient worthies. In the case of Ps. xc. it can hardly be doubted that this is the real explanation, and the same account must be given of the title in Ps. ex. if, as seems probable, it is meant to cover the whole of the great hallel or tehilla (Ps. cxlv.-cl.), which must, from 2 a ee

1 Possibly under Simon : le sae on; compare the other allel (Ps. cxlv.-cl.)

2 nipyon pwr (Abyy as in Ezra vii. 9 ¢

plural like MINA N43). eems to be properly a

the allusions in Ps. exlix., as well as from its place, be almost if not quite the latest thing in the Psalter. Davidic Psalms.—For the later stages of the history of the Psalter we have, as has been seen, a fair amount of circumstantial evidence pointing to conclusions of a pretty definite kind. The approximate dates which their con- tents suggest for the collection of the Elohistic psalm- book and of books iv. and v. confirm one another and are in harmony with such indications as we obtain from external sources. But, in order to advance from the con- clusions already reached to a view of the history of the Psalter as a whole, we have still to consider the two great groups of psalms ascribed to David in books i. and i. Both these groups appear once to have formed separate collections and in their separate form to have been ascribed to David; for in book i. every psalm, except the introduc- tory poems i. and ii. and the late Ps. xxxiii., which may have been added as a liturgical sequel to Ps. xxxii., bears the title “of David,” and in like manner the group Pss. li.-lxxii., though it contains a few anonymous pieces and one psalm which is either “of” or rather according to the oldest tradition “for Solomon,” is essentially a Davidic hymn-book, which has been taken over as a whole into the Elohistic Psalter, even the subscription lxxil. 20 not being omitted. Moreover, the collectors of books i.~~1ii. knew of no Davidic psalms outside of these two collec~~ tions, for Ps. lxxxvi. in the

appendix to the Elohistic collection is merely a cento of quotations from Davidic pieces with a verse or two from Exodus and Jeremiah. These two groups, therefore, represented to the collectors the oldest tradition of Hebrew psalmody ; they are either really Davidic or they passed as such. This fact is im- portant ; but its weight may readily be over-estimated, for the Levitical psalms comprise poems of the last half-cen- tury of the Persian empire, and the final collection of books ii. and i. may fall a good deal later. Thus the tradition that David is the author of these two collections comes to us, not exactly from the time of the Chronicler, but certainly from the time when the view of Hebrew history which he expresses was in the course of forma- tion. And it is not too much to say that that view— which to some extent appears in the historical psalms of the Elohistic Psalter—implies absolute incapacity to under- stand the difference between old Israel and later Juda- ism and makes almost anything possible in the way of the ascription of comparatively modern pieces to ancient authors. Nor will it avail to say that this uncritical age did not ascribe the Psalms to David but accepted them on the ground of older titles, for it is hardly likely that each psalm in the Davidic collections had a title before it was transferred to the larger Psalter ; and in any case the titles are manifestly the product of the same uncritical spirit as we have just been speaking of, for not only are many of the titles certainly wrong but they are wrong in such a way as to prove that they date from an age to which David was merely the abstract psalmist, and which had no idea what- ever of the historical conditions of his age. For example, Pss, xx., XX1. are not spoken by a king but addressed to a king by his people; Pss. v., xxvii. allude to the temple (which did not exist in David’s time), and the author of the latter psalm desires to live there continually. Even in the older Davidic psalm-book there is a whole series of hymns in which the writer identifies himself with the poor and needy, the righteous people of God suffering in silence at the hands of the wicked, without other hope than patiently to wait for the interposition of Jehovah (Pss. xii., xxv., xxxvil., xxxvull., &c.). Nothing can be farther removed than this from any possible situation in the life of the David of the books of Samuel, and the case is still worse in the second Davidic collection, especially where we have in the titles

——E——————EEE——

definite notes as to the historical occasion on which the poems are supposed to have been written. To refer Ps. liii. to Doeg, Ps. liv. to the Ziphites, Ps. lix. to David when watched in his house by Saul, implies an absolute lack of the very elements of historical judgment. Even the bare names of the old history were no longer correctly known when Abimelech (the Philistine king in the stories of Abraham and Isaac) could be substituted in the title of Ps. xxxiv. for Achish, king of Gath. In a word, the ascrip- tion of these two collections to David has none of the characters of a genuine historical tradition.

At the same time it is clear that the two collections do not stand on quite the same footing. The Elohistic redac- tion—the change in the names of God—extends only to the second. Now the formation of the Elohistic Psalter must have been an official act directed to the consolidation of the liturgical material of the temple, and if it left one of the so-called Davidic collections untouched the reason must have been that this collection had already a fixed liturgical position. In other words, book i. is the oldest extant liturgy of the second temple, while there is no evidence that the Davidic psalms of book ii. had a fixed liturgical place till at least the close of the Persian period.

And now the question arises: May we suppose that the oldest liturgy of the second temple was also the liturgy of the temple of Solomon? We have it in evidence that music and song accompanied the worship of the great sanctuaries of northern Israel in the 8th century B.c. (Amos v. 23), but from the context it appears probable that the musicians were not officers of the temple but rather the worshippers at large (compare Amos vi. 5). So it cer- tainly was in the days of David (2 Sam. vi. 5) and even of Isaiah (xxx. 29); the same thing is implied in the song of Hezekiah (Isa. xxxvili. 20), and in Lam. ii. 7 the noise within the sanctuary on a feast-day which affords a simile for the shouts of the victorious Chaldeans suggests rather the untrained efforts of the congregation than the disci- plined music of atemple choir. The allusion to “chambers of singers” in Ezek. xl. 44 is not found in the Septuagint text, which is justified by the context, and the first certain allusion to a class of singers belonging to the sacred min- isters is at the return from Babylon (Hzra ii. 41). The way in which these singers, the sons

of Asaph, are spoken of may be taken as evidence that there was a guild of temple singers before the exile ; but they cannot have been very conspicuous or we should have heard more of them. The historical books, as edited in the captivity, are fond of varying the narrative by the insertion of lyrical pieces, and one or two of these—the "' passover song" (Exod. xv.) and perhaps the song from the book of Jashar ascribed to Solomon (see vol. xi. p. 598)—look as if they were sung in the first temple; but they are not found in the Psalter, and, conversely, no piece from the Psalter is used to illustrate the life of David except Ps. xviii., and it occurs in a section which can be shown to be an interpolation in the original form of 2 Samuel. These facts seem to indicate that even book i. of the Psalter did not exist when the editing of the historical books was completed, and that in music as in other matters the ritual of the second temple was com- pletely reconstructed. Indeed the radical change in the religious life of the nation caused by the captivity could not fail to influence the psalmody of the sanctuary more than any other part of the worship; the book of Lamenta- tions marks an era of profound importance in the religious poetry of Israel, and no collection formed before these dirges were first sung could have been an adequate hymn- book for the second temple. In point of fact the notes struck in the Lamentations and in Isa. xl.-lxvi. meet our ears again in not a few psalms of book i., e.g., Pss. xxii., xxv., where the closing prayer for the redemption of Israel in a

verse additional to the acrostic perhaps gives, as Lagarde suggests, the characteristic post-exile name Pedaiah as that of the author; Ps. xxxi., with many points of resem- blance to Jeremiah ; Pss. xxxiv., xxxv., where the "servant of Jehovah" is the same collective idea as in Deutero- Isaiah ; and Pss. xxxviii., xlii The key to many of these psalms is that the singer is not an individual but, as in Lam. ui., the true people of God represented as one per- son; and only in this way can we do justice to expressions. which have always been a stumbling-block to those who regard David as the author. But, at the same time, other psalms of the collection treat the problems of individual religion in the line of thought first opened by Jeremiah. Such a psalm is xxxix., and above all Ps. xvi. Other pieces, indeed, may well be earlier. When we compare Ps. viii. with Job vii. 17, 18, we can hardly doubt that. the psalm lay before the writer who gave its expressions so bitter a turn in the anguish of his soul, and Pss. xx., xxi. plainly belong to the old

kingdom. But on the whole it is not the pre-exilic pieces that give the tone to the collection ; whatever the date of this or that indivi- dual poem, the collection as a whole—whether by selec- tion or authorship—is adapted to express a religious life of which the exile is the presupposition. Only in this way can we understand the conflict and triumph of spirit- ual faith, habitually represented as the faith of a poor and struggling band living in the midst of oppressors and with no strength or help save the consciousness of loyalty to Jehovah, which is the fundamental note of the whole book.

Whether any of the older poems really are David's is a question more curious than important, as, at least, there is none which we can fit with certainty into any part of his life. If we were sure that 2 Sam. xxii. was in any sense part of the old tradition of David's life, there would be every reason to answer the question in the affirmative, as has been done by Ewald (see Davip); but the grave doubts that exist on this point throw the whole question into the region of mere conjecture.

The contents of book i. make it little probable that it was originally collected by the temple ministers, whose hymn-book it ultimately became. The singers and Levites were ill provided for, and consequently irregular in their attendance at the temple, till the time of Nehemiah, who made it his business to settle the revenues of the clergy in such a way as to make regular service possible. With regular service a regular liturgy would be required, and in the absence of direct evidence it may be conjectured that the adoption of the first part of the Psalter for this. purpose took place in connexion with the other far-reaching reforms of Ezra and Nehemiah, which first gave a stable character to the community of the second temple. In any case these psalms, full as they are of spiritual elements. which can never cease to be the model of true worship, are the necessary complement of the law as published by Ezra, and must be always taken along with it by those who would understand what Judaism in its early days really was, and how it prepared the way for the gospel.

The second Davidic collection, which begins with a psalm of the exile (Ps. li. ; see the last two verses), contains some. pieces which carry us down to a date decidedly later than that of Nehemiah. Thus Ps. lxviii. 27 represents the wor- shipping congregation as drawn partly from the neighbour- hood of

Jerusalem and partly from the colony of Galilee. In several psalms of this collection, as in the Levitical psalms with which it is coupled, we see that the Jews have again begun to feel themselves a nation and not a mere municipality, though they are still passing through bitter struggles; and side by side with this there is a de- velopment of Messianic hope, which in – lxxil. takes a

XX. — §

34

wide sweep, based on the vision of Deutero-Isaiah. All these marks carry us down for this as for the other collec- tions of the Elohistic Psalter to the time when passive obedience to the Achemenians was interrupted. Several points indicate that the collection was not originally formed as part of the temple liturgy. The title, as preserved in the subscription to Ps. xxii, 20, was not “Psalms but “Prayers of David.” Again, while the Levitical psalms were sung in the name of righteous Israel, of which, according to the theory of the second temple, the priestly and Levitical circles were the special holy representatives, these Davidic psalms contain touching expressions of con- trition and confession (li., Ixv.). And, while there are direct references to the temple service, these are often made from the standpoint, not of the ministers of the temple, but of the laity who come up to join in the solemn feasts or appear before the altar to fulfil their vows (Pss. liv. 6, lv. 14, Ixiii., Ixvi. 13, &c.). Moreover, the didactic element so prominent in the Levitical psalms is not found here.

Such is the fragmentary and conjectural outline which it seems possible to supply of the history of the two Davidic collections, from which it appears that the name of David which they bear is at least so far appropriate as it marks the generally non-clerical origin of these poems. But the positive origin of this title must be sought in another direction and in connexion with book i. From the days of Amos, and in full accordance with the older history, the name of David had been connected with musical skill and even the invention of musical instruments (Amos vi. 5). In the days of Nehemiah, though we do not hear of psalms of David,! we do learn that instruments of the singers were designated as Davidic, and the epithet ‘man of God” (Neh. xii. 36) probably implies that agreeably with this David was already

regarded as having furnished psalms as well as instruments. But it was because the temple music was ascribed to him that the oldest liturgy came to be known in its totality as "'Psalms of David," and the same name was extended to the lay collection of "Prayers of David," while the psalms whose origin was known because they had always been temple psalms were simply named from the Levitical choirs, or at a later date had no title.

Musical Execution and Place of the Psalms in the Temple Service. ~The musical notes found in the titles of the psalms and occasion- ally also in the text (Selah, Higgaion) are so obscure that it seems unnecessary to center here upon the various conjectures that have been made about them. The clearest point is that a number of the psalms were set to melodies named after songs,? and that one of these songs, beginning novn-by (Al-taschith in E.V., Ps. lvii. sq.), may be probably identified with the vintage song, Isa. lxv. 8. The temple music was therefore apparently based on popular melodies. A good deal is said about the musical services of the Levites in Chronicles, both in the account given of David's ordi- nances and in the descriptions of particular festival occasions. But unfortunately it has not been found possible to get from these accounts any clear picture of the ritual or any certainty as to the

technical terms used. By the time of the Septuagint these terms were no longer understood ; it is not quite clear whether even the san understood them fully. e music of the temple attracted the attention of Theophrastus (ap. Porph., De Abst., 'ii. 26), who was perhaps the first of the Greeks to make observations on the Jews. His description of the temple ritual 1s not strietly accurate, but he speaks of the wor- anes as passing the night in gazing at the stars and calling on ' ao st prayer ; his words, if they do not exactly fit anything in e later ritual, are well fitted to illustrate the original liturgical use of Pss. vu, exxxiv. Some of the Jewish traditions as to the use of partieular psalms have been already cited ; it may be added that the Mishna (Témid) assigns to the service of the continual

1 Te, not in th i i Meek ee € parts of the book of Nehemiah which are by

2 Compare the similar way of eiting

'al kala, &e., in Syriac (Land, Aneecd, Lamy).

melodies with the prep. ‘al or » lv. ; Ephr. Syr., Zymni, ed.

purnt-offering the following weekly cycle of psalms, —(1) xxiv., (2) xlviii., (3) lxxxii., (4) xciv., (5) Ixxxi., (6) xciil., (Sabbath) xci.., asin the title. Many other details are given in the treatise Saférim, but these for the most part refer primarily to the synagogue service after the destruction of the temple. For details on the liturgical use of the Psalter in Christendom the reader may refer to Smith’s Diet. Chr. Ant., s.v. “ Psalmody.”

Ancient Versions.—A. The oldest version, the LXX., follows a text generally closely corresponding to the Massoretic Hebrew, the main variations being in the titles and in the addition (lacking in some MSS.) of an apocryphal psalm ascribed to David when he fought with Goliath. Pss. ix. and x. are rightly taken as one psalm, but conversely Ps. exlvii. is divided into two. The LXX. text has many “‘ daughters,” of which may be noticed (a) the Memphitic (ed. Lagarde, 1875); (b) the old Latin, which as revised by Jerome in 383 after the current Greek text forms the Psalterium Romanum, long read in the Roman Church and still used in St Peter’s ; (c) various Arabic versions, including that printed in the polyglotts of Le Jay and Walton, and two others of the four ex- hibited together in Lagarde’s Psalterium, Iob, Proverbia, Arabice, 1876; ou the relations and history of these versions, see G. Hoffmann, in Jenaer Literaturz., 1876, art. 589; the fourth of Lagarde’s versions is from the Peshito. The Hexaplar text of the LXX., as reduced by Origen into greater conformity with the Hebrew by the aid of subsequent Greek versions,? was further the mother (d) of the Psalterium Gallicanum,—that is, of Jerome’s second revision of the Psalter (385) by the aid of the Hexaplar text; this edition became current in Gaul and ultimately was taken into the Vulgate (e) of the Syro-Hexaplar ver- sion (published by Bugati, 1820, and in facsimile from the famous Ambrosian MS. by Ceriani, Milan, 1874). B. The Christian Aramaic version or Peshito (P’shitta) is largely influenced by the LXX.; compare Baethgen, Untersuchungen diber die Psalmen nach der Peschita, Kiel, 1878 (unfinished). This version has peculiar titles taken from Eusebius and Theodore of Mopsuestia (see Nestle, in Theol. Literaturz., 1876, p. 283). C. The Jewish Aramaic version or Targum is probably alate work. The most

convenient edition isin Lagarde, Hagiographa Chaldaice, 1873. D. The best of all the old versions is that made by Jerome after the Hebrew in 405. It did not, however, obtain ecclesiastical currency— the old versions holding their ground, just as English churchmen still read the Psalms in the version of the ‘‘ Great Bible” printed in their Prayer Book. This important version was first published in a good text by Lagarde, Psal- terium iuxta Hebreos Hieronymi, Leipsic, 1874.

Exegetical Works.—While some works of patristic writers are still of value for text criticism and for the history of early exegetical tradition, the treatment of the Psalms by ancient and medieval Christian writers is as a whole such as to throw light on the ideas of the commentators and their times rather than on the sense of a text which most of them knew only through translations. For the Psalms as for the other books of the Old Testament the scholars of the period of the revival of Hebrew studies about the time of the Reformation were mainly dependent on the ancient versions and on the Jewish scholars of the Middle Ages. In the latter class Kimhi stands pre-eminent ; to the editions of his commentary on the Psalms cnumerated in the artiele KimHI must now be added the admirable edition of Dr Schiller-Szinessy (Cambridge, 1883), con- taining unfortunately only the first book of his longer commentary. Among the works of older Christian scholars since the revival of letters, the commentary of Calvin (1557)—full of religious insight and sound thought—and the laborious work of M. Geier (1668, 1681 et s#pius) may still be consulted with advantage, but for most purposes Rosenmiiller’s Scholia in Pss. (2d ed., 1821-22) supersedes the necessity of frequent reference to the predecessors of that industrious com- piler. Of more recent works the freshest and most indispensable are Ewald’s, in the first two half volumes of his Dichter des alten Bundes (2d ed., Gottingen, 1866 ; Eng. tr., 1880), and Olshausen’s (1853). To these may be added (excluding general commentaries on the Old Testament) the two aeute but wayward com- mentaries of Hitzig (1836, 1863-65), that of Delitzsch (1859-60, then in shorter . form in several editions since 1867 ; Eng. tr., 1871), and that of Hupfeld (2d ed. by Riehm, 1867, 2 vols.). The last-named work, though lacking in original power and clearness of judgment, is extremely convenient and useful, and has had an influence perhaps disproportionate to its real exegetieal merits. The question of the text was first properly raised by Olshausen, and has since

received special attention from, among others, Lagarde (Prophetx# Chald., 1872, p. xlvi. sg.), Dyserinck (in the ‘‘scholia” to his Dutch translation of the Psalms, Theol. Tijdschr., 1878, p. 279 sq.), and Bickell (Carmina V. T. metrice, &c., Innsbruck, 1882), whose eritical services are not to be judged merely by the lueasure of assent which his metrical theories may command. 1n English we have, among others, the useful work of Perowne (5th ed., 1883), that of Lowe aud Jennings (2d ed., 1885), and the valuable translation of Cheyne (1884). The mass of literature on the Psalnis is so enormous that no full list even of recent commentaries can be here attempted, much less an enumeration of treatises on individual psalms and special critical questions. For the latter Kuenen’s Onderzoek, vol. iii., is, up to its date (1865), the most complete, and the new edition now in preparation will doubtless prove the standard work of reference. As regards the dates and historical interpretation of the Psalms, all older dis- eussions, even those of Ewald, are in great measure antiquated by recent pro- – gress in Pentateuch criticism and the history of the canon, and an entirely fresh treatment of the Psalter by a sober critical commentator is urgently needed. GY¥RSS)

PSALTERY. For the medieval instrument of this name (“sautrie” or ‘‘cembalo”), see PIANOFORTE (vol. xix. p. 65). The Hebrew 933, rendered YaAripior,* véBXa, Padpos (Ps. lxxi. 22), xebdpa (Ps. lxxxi, 2), dpyavov (Am. v. 23, vi. 5), in the LXX., and “psaltery” or “viol” in the A.V. (also “lute” in the Prayer-Book version of the Psalms), appears to have been a small stringed instrument, harp or lyre, the strings of which were touched with the player’s fingers. The statement of Josephus (Ant., vii. 12, 3), that the xuvépa (1123) had ten strings and was struck with the plectrum, while the v¢Bda had twelve and was played with the hand, is the earliest definition having any authority to be met with of these obscure instruments. The xwvtpa, if not a smaller lyre with tighter strings re-

3 See Field, Origenis Hexapla, where the fragments of these ver-

a are colleeted. That of Symmachus is esteemed the best. This word reappears in the PWAID! of Dan, iii. 5, &e.

quiring a plectrum, may, as some suppose, have been a kind of guitar, rather a tamboura, the most extensively known Eastern stringed instrument, which, in principle, is found represented in the oldest Egyptian monuments. The paucity of strings in the latter is, however, against this attribution. Nothing being more variable than the number of strings attached to the various stringed instru- ments at different times and in different places, eight, nine, or ten strings to the xevvpa, or ten (see Ps. xxxiil. 2, cxliv. 9, Heb.) or twelve to the vaGda, are probably immaterial variations. The musical instruments of the Bible are the most difficult subject in musical archeology, about which the translators of the A.V. or the Prayer-Book Psalms did not trouble themselves, but named the instruments from those in use around them.

PSAMMETICHUS. See Eeypt, vol. vii. p. 743.

PSELLUS, the name of several Byzantine writers, of whom the following were the most important.

1. Micuart PseLtvus the elder, a native of Andros and a pupil of Photius. He flourished in the second half of the 9th century, and strove to stem the rising tide of bar- barism by his devotion to letters and philosophy. His study of the Alexandrine theology, as well as of profane literature, brought him under the suspicions of the ortho- dox, and a former pupil of his, by name Constantine, accused him in an elegiac poem of having abandoned Christianity. In order to perfect his knowledge of Christ- ian doctrine, Psellus had recourse to the instructions of Photius, and then replied to his adversary in a long iambic poem, in which he maintained his orthodoxy. It has been conjectured by Allatius, Cave, and others that some of the books commonly attributed to the younger Psellus are the works of the elder, ¢.g., the Dialogue on Operations of Demons, and the short treatises On the Virtues of Stones and On Demons. Their reasons, however, resting on the inferiority of literary style and mode of treatment, are inconclusive,

2. MICHAEL CONSTANTINE PsELLUS the younger was born at Constantinople in 1020, of a consular and patrician family. He studied at Athens, and by his talents and vast industry made himself master of all the learning of the age, including theology, law, physics, mathematics, philosophy, and history. At Constantinople he taught philosophy, rhetoric,

and dialectic with the greatest suc- cess, and was honoured with the title of “Prince of Philosophers” by the emperors, who sometimes sought his advice and employed his services. But in 1078, when his pupil, the emperor Michael Ducas, was deposed, Psellus shared his downfall, being compelled by the new emperor, Nicephorus Botanias, to retire to a monastery. On his accession to the empire in 1081 Alexius Comnenus de-

prived Psellus of his title of “Prince of Philosophers” and

transferred it to his less talented rival John the Italian.

He appears to have been still alive in 1105 and perhaps mm 10,

Of his works, which are very numerous, many have not yet been printed. Even of those which have been printed there is no com- plete edition. Of his published works we nay mention—(1) his mathematical Opus in quatuor Mathematicas Disciplinas, Arith- meticam, Musicam, Geometriam, et Astronomiam, published at Venice in 1532, and several times reprinted, as at Basel in 1556 with the notes of Xylander; (2) a Paraphrase of Aristotle’s Tlepi eppnvelas, published in Greek by Aldus at Venice in 1503; (3) Synopsis legum, in iambic verse, edited with a Latin translation and notes by Franciscus Bosquetus, Paris, 1632; (4) De Vitits et Virtu- tibus, et Allegoriz, in iambic verse, published by Arsenius at Rome (no date), and reprinted at Basel, 1544 ; (5) Ilept évepyeias dardvav didoyos (De operatione demonum dialogus), translated into Latin by Petrus Morellus and published at Paris in 1577 ; (6) De lapidum virtutibus, published in Greek and Latin at Toulouse in 1615 (for 5 and 6 see MicuarL PsELLus above). :

PSEUDONYMOUS LITERATURE. GRAPHY, vol. ili. pp. 657-658,

See Brsuio-

PSKOFF, a government of the lake-region of north- west Russia, which extends from Lake Peipus to the source of the Dwina, having St Petersburg on the N., Novgorod, Tver, and Smolensk on the E., Vitebsk on the S., and Livonia on the W. It has an area of 16,678 square miles. In the south-east it extends partly over the Alaun heights —a broad ridge 800 to 1000 feet

above the sea, deeply in- dented with numerous valleys and ravines, thickly covered with forests, and dotted with small lakes and ponds. In the district of Toropets these heights take the name of Vorobiovy Hills ; extending westwards into Vitebsk, they send to the north a series of irregular ranges, separated by broad valleys, which occupy the north-western parts of Pskoff and give rise to the rivers flowing into Lakes Peipus and Ilmefi. A depression 120 miles long and 35 miles broad, watered by the Lovat and Polist, occupies the inter- val between the two hilly tracts ; it is covered throughout with forests and thickly studded with marshes overgrown with rank vegetation, the only tracts suitable for human occupation being narrow isolated strips of land on the banks of rivers, or between the marshes, and no communi- cation is possible except along the watercourses. These marshy tracts, which extend westwards into Vitebsk and north-eastwards towards St Petersburg, were even more impassable ten centuries ago, and, encircling the old Russian city of Pskoff, formed its best protection against the repeated attacks of its neighbours.

With the exception of the south-eastern corner, where Carboniferous rocks make their appearance, nearly the whole of the government consists of Devonian deposits of great thickness,—the Old Red Sandstone, with sub-ordinate layers of various sandstones, and clays containing brown iron ore; and the White Limestone, which contains ~ layers of dolomite, marls, clays with deposits of gypsum, and white sandstone, which is extensively quarried for building purposes. As regards the fauna the Devonian deposits of Pskoff are intermediate between those of Belgium, the Eifel, and Poland and those of middle Russia. The whole is covered with very thick sheets of boulder clay and bears unmistakable traces of glacial action ; the bottom moraine of the Scandinavian and Finnish ice-sheet formerly extended over the whole of this region, which often takes the shape of ridges (Lames or eskers), the upper parts consisting of Glacial sands and post-Glacial clays, sands, and peat-bogs. The soil is thus not only infertile on the whole, but also badly drained, on account of the impermeable nature of the boulder clay and the frequent occurrence of depressions having no distinct outlets to the rivers. Only those parts of the territory which are covered with thicker strata of post-Glacial deposits are suitable for agriculture.

The rivers are numerous and belong to three separate basins—to Lakes Peipus and Pskoff the rivers in the north- west, to Lake Ilmeii those in the middle, and to that of the Dwina the rivers in the south-east. A great number of small streams pour into Lake Pskoff, the chief being the Velikaya, which flows from south to north and receives numerous tributaries, which are used for floating rafts, a wide region being thus brought into communication with Lake Peipus and thence with the Narova. The Velikaya, which is now navigable for only 25 miles from Lake Pskoff, was formerly deeper. The Lovat and Sheloii, belong- ing to the basin of Lake I]meii, are both navigable, and a lively traffic is carried on on both; while the Dwina flows for 100 miles on the borders of the government or within it, and is used only for floating timber. There are no less than 850 lakes in Pskoff, with a total area of 391 square miles. The largest is Lake Pskoff, which is 50 miles long and 13 broad, and covers 312 square miles, having a depth of from 3 to 18 feet; it is connected by a channel, 40 miles

long and 3 to 10 wide, with Lake Peipus. Its islands, numbering nearly fifty, have an aggregate population of 2000 persons. The marshes on the banks of the Polist are nearly 1250 square miles in extent ; one in the neigh- bourhood of Lake Dviniye is 27 miles long and 17 broad, and another on the Toropa extends for 17 miles, while many elongated marshes, 15, 20, and 30 miles long and from 2 to 3 broad, run parallel to one another in the broad depression of the Lovat. Forests occupy nearly one-half (about 45 per cent.) of the entire area, and in some districts (Cholm, Toropets, Porkhoff) as much as two- thirds of the surface. Large pine forests are met with in the north; in other parts the birch and aspen prevail ; but almost one-quarter of the forest area is covered with low brushwood.

The climate is very moist and changeable. The average temper- ature is 41° Fahr. (17°°1 in January and 64°°8 in July).

The population of the government, which was 895,710 in 1881 (718,910 in 1863), consists almost exclusively of Great Russians, there being only 8000 Esthonians (in the district of Pskoff), about 500 Letts, and less than 1500 Jews. Many German traders live at Pskoff. The Russians and the greater part of. the Esthonians belong to the Greek Church, or are Nonconformists

(upwards of 12,000 in 1866, according to official figures). Of the total number of inhabitants only 58,900 live in towns, the remainder being distributed over no fewer than 15,000 small villages. ,

Notwithstanding the infertility of the soil the chief occupation is agriculture —rye, oats, barley, and potatoes being grown every- where ; but though corn is exported by the larger landowners to the average annual amount of nearly 1,600,000 bushels the amount imported is much greater (9,600,000 bushels). The annual export of flax is estimated at 530,000 ewts., Pskoff, Ostroff, Opotchka, Porkhoff, and Soltsy being important centres for the trade. The average annual crops during 1870-77 were 28,972,800 bushels of corn and 5,984,000 bushels of potatoes. The limited area of pasture lands is unfavourable for cattle- breeding, and in 1881 there were only 171,000 horses, 304,000 head of cattle, and 166,000 sheep ; mur- rains are very frequent. Fishing is a considerable source of wealth on the shores of the larger lakes, small salted or frozen fish (snyetk?) being annually exported to the value of £25,000 or £35,000. The timber trade is steadily increasing, the exports being estimated at present at nearly £50,000; wood for fuel is, however, at the same time imported from the government of St Petersburg. The popu- lation engage also in the preparation of lime, in stone-quarrying, in the transport of merchandise, and in some domestic trades. The manufactures are insignificant; their aggregate production in 1879 reached £518,800, and gave occupation to only 2350 persons. The total amount of merchandise loaded and discharged on the rivers within the government in 1880 was 1,761,000 ewts.

Pskoff is divided into eight districts, the chief towns of which are—Pskoff (21,170 inhabitants), Cholm (5550), Novorjeff (1915), Opotchka (4075), Ostroff (4200), Porkhoff (3925), Toropets (5760), Velikiya Luki (6600). Alexandrovskii Posad (2920) and Soltsy (5825, an important shipping place on the Shelofi river) have also

municipal institutions.

PSKOFF, capital of the above government, is pictur- esquely situated on both banks of the broad Velikaya river, 9 miles from Lake Pskoff and 171 miles by rail south-west of St Petersburg. The chief part of the town, with its kremlin on a hill and several suburbs, occupies the right bank of the

river, to which the ruins of its old walls descend; the Zapskovie, consisting of several suburbs, stretches along the same bank of the Velikaya below its confluence with the Pskova; and the Zavelitchie occupies the left bank of the Velikaya,—all three keeping their old historical names. The cathedral in the kremlin has been four times rebuilt since the 12th century and contains some very old shrines, as also the graves of the bishops of Pskoff and of several princes, including those of Dovmont and Vsevolod. The church of Dmitrii Solunskii also dates originally from the 12th century ; there are others belong- ing to the 14th and 15th. The Spaso-Mirojskii monastery, founded in 1156, has many remarkable antiquities. The ruins of numerous rich and populous monasteries in or near the town attest its former wealth and greatness. The present town is ill built, chiefly of wood, and shows traces of decay. Many of the inhabitants live by agriculture

or gardening ; the remainder are engaged in loading and unloading merchandise on the Velikaya and at the rail- way station, in combing flax, fishing, and domestic trades. The manufactures are unimportant. Since the completion of the St Petersburg and Warsaw railway the trade of Pskoff has increased. In 1880 the exports reached 99,000 ewts. on the Velikaya and 463,000 cwts. by rail; the imports were 125,700 ewts. on the Velikaya and 591,600 ewts. by rail. Pskoff has regular steam communication . with Dorpat. The population in 1882 was 21,170 (15,086 _ in 1866).

History.—Pskoff, formerly the sister republic of Novgorod, and one of the oldest cities of Russia, maintained its independence and its free institutions until the 16th century, being thus the last to be brought under the rule of Moscow. Its annals, unquestion- ably the fullest and liveliest of any in Russia, affirm that it already existed in the time of Rurik ; and Nestor mentions under the year 914 that Igor’s wife, Olga, was brought from Pleskoff (i.¢., Pskoff). It was quite natural that a Russian fortified town should rise at the entrance of the Velikaya valley within the earliest period of the Russian colonization of that region ; the river had from a remote antiquity been a channel for the trade of the south with the north Baltic coast. Pskoff being an important strategic point, its pos- session was obstinately disputed between the Russians and the Germans and

Lithuanians, and throughout the 11th and 12th centuries numerous battles were fought. At that time the place had its own independent institutions ; but, attacked as it was from the west, it became in the 12th century a "' prigorod" of the Nov- gorod republic,—that is (so far as can be judged from the incom- plete testimony of historical documents), a city having its own free institutions, but included in certain respects within the juris- diction of the metropolis, and compelled in time of war to march against the common cnemy. Pskoif had, however, its own prince (defensor municipii) ; and in the second half of the 13th century Prince (Timotheus) Dovmont fortified it so strongly, and was so successful in repelling its enemies, that the town acquired much importance and asserted its independence of Novgorod, with which in 1848 it concluded a treaty wherein the two republics were recog- nized as equals. The institutions of Pskoff resembled those of Novgorod ; it, in its turn, had several prigorods, and its rule ex- tended over the territory which now forms the districts of Pskoff, Ostroff, Opotchka, and Gdoff. Within this territory the ''vyetche " or ''forum"' of Pskoff was sovereign, the vyetches of the subordinate towns being supreme in their own municipal affairs. The city of Pskoff was divided into several sections or ''kontsy," according to the prevalent occupations of the inhabitants, and the kontsy were divided into ''ulitsy" (streets), which cnjoyed extensive powers of self-government. The vyetche was supreme in all affairs of general interest, as well as a supreme court of justice, and the princes were elected by it; these last had to defend the city and levied the taxes, which were assessed by twelve citizens, who com- bined to some extent the functions of judges with those of a jury. Pskoff differed widely, however, from Novgorod in the more demo- cratic character of its institutions; and, while the latter con- stantly showed a tendency to become an oligarchy of the wealthier merchants, the former figured as a republic where the influence of the poorer classes prevailed. Its trading associations, supported by those of the labourers, checked the influence of the wealthier merchants.

This struggle (of which the annals give a lively picture) con- tinued throughout the 14th and 15th centuries, resulting sometimes in armed riots. Notwithstanding these conflicts Pskoff was a very wealthy city. Its strong walls, whose ruins are still to be seen, its forty-two large and wealthy churches, built during this period, as also its humerous monasteries and its extensive trade, bear testimony to the wealth of the inhabitants, who then

numbered about 60,000. The ‘‘dyetinets ” or fort, enclosed by a stone wall erected by Dov- mont, stood on a hill between the Pskova and the Velikaya, having within its walls the cathedral of the Holy Trinity. Another stone wall enclosed the commercial part, the Kromy (kremlin) or middle town. In 1465 the suburb Polonische became so prosperous that it also was enclosed by a wall, and included within the circuit of the town proper. Even the Zapskovie was enclosed by a wooden palisade in the 15th century and later on by a stone wall; while the Zave- litchie was a busy centre of foreign trade. As early as the 13th century Pskoff had become an important station for the trade between Novgorod and Riga. A century later it entered the Hanseatie League. Its merchants and trading associations had factories at Narva, Revel, Riga, and exported fiax, corn, tallow, skins, tar, pitch, honey, and timber for shipbuilding, which were transported or shipped via Lake Peipus, the Narova, and the Embach to the ports on the Baltic and on the Gulf of Finland. Silks, woollen stuffs, and all kinds of manufactured wares were brought back in exchange and sold throughout northern Russia.

Internal and ex- ternal,

i Y —

Nevertheless, the continuous struggle between the “black” and ‘white’ people (the patricians and the plebeians) offered many opportunities to Moscow for interference in the internal affairs of Pskoff, especially with regard to the election of the princes, which was often the occasion of severe conflicts. In 1399 the prince of Moscow arrogated the privilege of confirming the elected prince of Pskoff in his rights ; and though, fifty years later, Pskoff and Noy- corod concluded several defensive treaties against Moscow the fall of both republics was inevitable, the poorer classes continuing to seek at Moscow a protection against the oppression of the richer citizens. After the fall of Novgorod (1475) Pskoff could no longer maintain its independence, and in 1510 it was taken by Vasilii Joannovitch. The vyetche was abolished and its bell taken away, and a waywode was nominated by Moscow to govern the city. Moscow merchants were settled at Pskoff, and put in possession of the fortunes of the former citizens. The conquered territory still maintained to some extent its self-government, especially with re-

gard to trade, but the struggle between rich and poor was aggravated by the intervention of foreigners. The “lutschiye ludi” (wealthier merchants) prohibited the ‘“‘malomotchnyie” (poorer merchants) from entering into direct trade relations with foreigners, and com- pelled them to sell their wares to themselves or to become their agents. These disputes furnished Moscow at the end of the 17th century with a pretext for abolishing the last vestiges of self-govern- ment at Pskoff, and for placiug all affairs of local administration in the hands of the Moscow waywodes. Thenceforward Pskoff fell into rapid decay. It became a stronghold of Russia against Poland and was besieged for seven months by Stephan Bathory during the Livonian War, and later on by Gustavus Adolphus. Under Peter I. it became a fortified camp, and its walls were protected by earth- works. But it never recovered its former importance, and is now one of the poorer cities of the empire. (e. &. K.)

PSYCHE. See Cupmp.

PSYCHOLOGY

The Standpoint of Psychology.

WN the several natural sciences the scope and subject- i matter of each are so evident that little preliminary discussion on this score is called for. It is easy to dis- tinguish the facts dealt with in a treatise on light from those that belong to one on sound; and even when the need arises to compare the results of two such sciences— as in the case, say, of light and electricity— there is still no difficulty,—apart, of course, from any which the im- perfect state of the sciences themselves may occasion. Theoretically, a standpoint is attainable from which this comparison can be made, in so far, say, as the facts of both sciences can be expressed in terms of matter and motion. But with psychology, however much it is freed from metaphysics, all this is different. It is indeed ordi- narily assumed that its subject-matter can be at once defined: “It is what you can perceive by consciousness or reflexion or the internal sense,” says one, “just as the subject-matter of optics is what you can perceive by sight.” Or, “psychology is the science of the phenomena of mind,” we are told again, “and is thus marked off from the

physical sciences, which treat only of the phenomena of matter.” But, whereas nothing is simpler than to dis- tinguish between seeing and hearing, or between the phenomena of heat and the phenomena of gravitation, a very little reflexion may convince us that we cannot in the same fashion distinguish internal from external sense, or make clear to ourselves what we mean by phenomena

of mind as distinct from phenomena of matter.

Let us begin with the supposed differentia of internal and ex- ternal; and first of all what are we to understand by an inner sense? To every sense there corresponds a sense-organ ; the several senses are distinct and independent, so that no one sense can add to or alter the materials of another ; and each is swt generis as regards quality,—the possession of five senses, ¢.9., furnishing no data as to the character of a possible sixth. Moreover, sense-im- pressions are passively reccived and occur in the first instance with- out regard to the feeling or volition of the recipient and without any manner of relation to the ‘‘ contents of consciousness ” at the moment. Now such a description will apply but very partially to the so-called ‘internal sense.” We can imagine consciousness without seclf-consciousness, still more without introspection, much as we can imagine sight without taste or smell. But this does not entitle ns to speak of self-conscionsness as a sense. For we do not by means of it passively receive impressions differing from all previous presentations, as the sensations of colour for one couched differ from all he has experienced before: the new facts consist rather in the recognition of certain relations among pre-existing presentations, z.¢., are due to our mental activity and not to a special mode of what has been called our sensitivity. For when we taste we cannot hear that we taste, when we see we cannot smell that we see ; but when we taste we may be conscious that we taste, when we hear we may be conscious that we hear. In this way all the objects of the external senses are recognized as having new relations by the miscalled ‘‘internal sense.’’ Moreover, the facts so ascertained are never independent of fecling and volition and of the contents of consciousness at the time, as true sensations are. Alsoif we consult the physiologist we learn that there is no evidence of any organ or “‘ centre” that could be regarded as the ‘‘ physical

basis” of this inner sense; and, if sclf-consciousness alone is tempo- rarily in abeyance and a man merely ‘‘beside himself,” such state of delirium has little analogy to the functional blindness or deafness that constitutes the temporary suspension of sight or hearing.

To the conception of an internal perception or observation the preceding objections do not necessarily apply,—that is to say, this conception may be so defined that they need not. But then in proportion as we escape the charge of assuming a special sense which furnishes the material for such perception or observation, in that same proportion are we compelled to seek for some other mode of distinguishing its subject-matter. For, so far as the mere mental activity of perceiving or observing is concerned, it is not easy to see any essential difference in the process whether what is observed be psychical or physical. It is quite true that the so-called psychological observation is more difficult, because the facts observed are often less definite aud less persistent, and admit less of actual isolation than physical facts do; but the process of recognizing similarities or differences, the dangers of mal-observa- tion or non-observation, are not materially altered on that account. It may be further allowed that there is one difficulty peculiarly felt in psychological observation, the one most inaccurately ex- pressed by saying that herg the observer and the observed are one. But this difficulty is surely in the first instance due to the very obvious fact that onr powers of attention are limited, so that we cannot alter the distribution of attention at any moment without altering the contents of cousciousness at that moment. Accord- ingly, where there are no other ways of surmounting this difficulty, the psychological observer must either trust to representations at a later time, or he must acquire the power of taking momentary glances at the psychological aspects of the phase of consciousness in question. And this one with any aptitude for such studies can do with so slight a diversion of attention as not to disturb very seriously either the given state or that which immediately succeeds it. But very similar difficulties have to be similarly met by physical observers in certain special cases, as, ¢.9., in observing and registering the phenomena of solar eclipse ; and similar apti- tudes in the distribution of attention have to be acquired, say, by extempore orators or skilful surgeons. Just as little, then, as there is anything that we can with propriety call an inner sense, just so little can we find in the process of inner perception any satis- factory

characteristic of the subject-matter of psychology. The question still is: What is it that 1s perceived or observed ? and the readiest answer of course is: Internal experience as distinguished from external, what takes place in the mind as distinct from what takes place without.

This answer, it must be at once allowed, is adequate for most purposes, and a great deal of excellent psychological work has been done without ever calling it in question. But the distinction be- tween internal and external experience is not one that can be drawn from the standpoint of psychology, at least not at the outset. From this standpoint it appears to be either (1) inaccurate or (2) not extra-psychological. As to (1), the boundary between the snternal and the external was, no doubt, originally the surface of the body, with which the subject or self was identified ; and in this sense the terms are of course correctly used. Fora thing may, in the same sense of the word, be in one space and therefore not in —i.e., ont of—another ; but we express no intelligible relation if we speak of two things as being one in a given room and the other in last week. Any one is at liberty to say if he choose that a certain thing is “in his mind”; but if in this way he distinguishes it from something else not in his mind, then to be intelligible this must imply one of two statements, —cither that the something else is actually or possibly in some other mind, or, his own mind being alone considered, that at the time the something else does not exist at all. Yet, evident as it seems that the correlatives in and not-in must both apply to the same category, whether space,

Mental and material.

Stand- point of psycho- logy.

time, presentation (or non-presentation) to a given subject, and so forth, we still find psychologists more or less consciously con- fused between “internal,” meaning “ presented” in the psychological sense, and “external,” meaning not “not-presented ” but corporeal or oftener extra-corporeal. But (2), when used to distinguish between presentations (some of which, or some relations of which with respect to others, are called “internal,” and others or other relations, “ external”), these terms are at all events accurate ;

only then they cease to mark off the psychological from the extra-psychological, inasmuch as psychology has to analyse this distinc- tion and to cxhibit the steps by which it has come about. But we have still to examine whether the distinction of phenomena of Matter and phenomena of Mind furnishes a better dividing line than the distinction of internal and external. — : ;

A phenomenon, as commonly understood, is what is manifest, sensible, evident, the implication being that there are eyes to see, cars to hear, and so forth,—in other words, that there is presenta- tion to a subject ; and wherever there is presentation to a subject it will be allowed that we are in the domain of psychology. But in talking of physical phenomena we, in a way, abstract from this fact of presentation. Though consciousness should cease, the physicist would consider the sum total of objects to remain the same: the orange would still be round, yellow, and fragrant as before. For the physicist—whether aware of it or not—has taken up a position which for the present may be described by saying that phenomenon with him means appearance or manifestation, or—as we had better say—object, not for a concrete individual, but rather for what Kant called Bewusstsein tiberhaupt, or, as some render it, the objective consciousness, 2.¢., for an imaginary subject freed from all the limitations of actual subjects save that of depending on “sensi- bility ” for the material of experience. However, this is not all, for,

as we shall see presently, the psychologist also occupies this posi- |

tion ; at least if he does not, his is not a true science. But further, the physicist leaves out of sight altogether the facts of attention, feeling, and so forth, all which actual presentation entails. From the psyehological point of view, on the other hand, the removal of the subject removes not only all such facts as attention and feeling, but all presentation or possibility of presentation whatcver. Surely, then, to call a certain object, when we abstract from its presentation, a material phenomenon, and to call the actual presentation of this object a mental phenomenon, is a clumsy and confusing way of representing the difference between the two points of view. For the terms “ material” and “mental” sgem to imply that the two so-called phenomena have nothing in common, whereas the same object is involved

in both, while the term “ phcnomenon” implies that the point of view is in each case the same, when in truth what is emphasized by the one the other ignores.

Paradoxical though it may be, we must then conclude that psychology cannot be defined by reference to a special subject-matter as such concrete sciences, for example, as mineralogy and botany can; and, since it deals in some sort with the whole of experience, it is obviously not an abstract science, in any ordinary sense of that term. To be characterized at all, therefore, apart from metaphysical assumptions, it must be characterized by the standpoint from which this experience is viewed, It is by way of expressing this that widely different schools of psychology define It as subjective, all other positive sciences distinguished as objective, than a first approximation

being But this seems scarcely more a fi to the truth, and, as we have seen incidentally, is apt to be misleading. The distinction rather is that the standpoint of psychology is what is some- times termed “ individualistic,” that of the so-called object- sciences being “‘universalistic,” both alike being objective in the sense of being true for all, consisting of what Kant would call judgments of experience. For psychology is not a biography in any sense, still less a biography deal ing with idiosyncrasies, and in an idiom having an interest and a meaning for one subject only, and incommunicable to any other. Locke, Berkeley, and Hume have been of late severely handled because they regarded the critical investigation of knowledge as a psychological problem and set to work to study the individual mind simply for the sake of this problem. But none the less their stand- point was the proper one for the science of psychology itself; and, however surely their philosophy was fore- doomed to a collapse, there is no denying a steady psycho- logical advance as we pass from Locke to Hume and his modern representatives, By “idea” Locke tells us he

means “whatsoever is the object of the understanding when a man thinks” (i.¢., is conscious), and having, as it were, shut himself within such a circle of ideas he finds himself powerless to explain his knowledge of a world that is independent of it; but he is able to give a very good account of some of

these ideas themselves. He cannot justify his belief in the world of things whence certain of his simple ideas ‘‘were conveyed” any more than Robinson Crusoe could have explored the continents whose products were drifted to his desert island, though he might perhaps survey the island itself well enough. Berkeley accord- ingly, as Professor Fraser happily puts it, abolished Locke’s hypothetical outer circle. Thereby he made the psycho- logical standpoint clearer than ever—hence the truth of Hume’s remark, that Berkeley’s arguments ‘‘admit of no answer”; at the same time the epistemological problem was as hopeless as before—hence again the truth of Hume’s remark that those arguments ‘produced no conviction.” Of all the facts with which he deals, the psychologist may truly say that their esse is percept, inasmuch as all his facts are facts of presentation, are ideas in Locke’s sense, or objects which imply a subject. Before we became con- scious there was no world for us; should our consciousness cease, the world for us ceases too; had we been born blind, the world would for us have had no colour; if deaf, it would have had no sounds; if idiotic, it would have had no meaning. Psychology, then, never transcends the limits of the individual; even the knowledge that there is a real world, as common-sense assumes, is, when psycho- logically regarded, an individual’s knowledge, which had a beginning and a growth, and can have an end. In fact, for the psychologist it is not ‘essentially knowledge, but presentations, partly possible, partly actual, in the mind of A, B, or C; just as this page is for the printer essentially “copy,” and only for the reader essentially “discourse.” But what the psychologist has to say about knowledge is, of course, itself knowledge, @.¢., assuming it to be correct ; the knowledge about which he knows is, however, for him not primarily knowledge, but “states of consciousness.”

But now, though this Berkeleyan standpoint is the standpoint of psychology —as we find it occupied, say, by J. 8. Mill and Dr Bain—psychology is not pledged to the method employed by Berkeley and by Locke. Psycho- logy may be individualistic without being confined ex- clusively to the introspective method. There is nothing to hinder the psychologist from employing materials fur- nished by his observations of other men, of infants, of the lower animals, or of the insane; nothing to hinder him taking counsel with the philologist or even the physiologist, provided always he can show the psychological bearings of those facts which are not directly psychological. N or, again, are we bound, because we take the

individualistic stand- point as psychologists, to accept the philosophical conclu- sions that have been reached from it, unless, indeed, we hold that it is the right point of view for philosophical speculation. A psychologist may be an idealist in Berkeley's sense or in Fichte's, but he need not ; he is just as free, if he see reason, to call himself, after Hamilton, a natural real- ist; only psychology will afford him no safe warrant for the realism part of it. The standpoint of psychology, then, is individualistic; by whatever methods, from whatever sources its facts are ascertained, they must—to have a psychological import—be regarded as having place in, or as being part of, some one's consciousness, In this sense, %€., aS presented to an individual, "the whole choir of heaven and furniture of earth" may belong to psychology, but otherwise they are psychological nonentities. The problem of psychology, in dealing with this complex sub- Ject-matter, is in general—first, to ascertain its constituent

Consti- tuent elements of mind.

Subject or Ego.

to ex- trude the Ego,

Attempts

Poy Ctl 0 1, 0 G Y¥

elements, and secondly, to ascertain and explain the laws

of their combination and interaction.

General Analysis of Mind ; its Ultimate Constituents.

As to the first, there is in the main substantial agree- ment: the elementary facts of mind cannot, it is held, be

expressed in less than three propositions,—I feel somehow,

I know something, I do something. But here at once there arises an important question, viz., What are we to understand by the subject of these

propositions? Nobody nowadays would understand it to imply that every psychi-

cal fact must be ascertained or verified by personal intro- spection ; perhaps no modern writer ever did understand this ; at any rate to do so is to confound the personal with the psychological. We are no more confined to our own immediate observations here than elsewhere ; but the point is that, whether seeking to analyse one's own consciousness or to infer that of a lobster, whether discussing the asso- ciation of ideas or the expression of emotions, there is always an individual mind or self or subject in question. It is not enough to talk of feelings or volitions: what we mean is that some individual, man or worm, feels, wills, acts—thus or thus. Obvious as this may seem, it has been frequently either forgotten or gainsaid. It has been for- gotten among details or through the assumption of a medley of faculties, each treated as an individual in turn, and among which the real individual was lost. Or it has been gainsaid, because to admit that all psychological facts per- tain to a psychological subject seemed to carry with it the admission that they pertained to a particular spiritual substance, which was simple, indestructible, and so forth : and it was manifestly desirable to exclude such assump- tions from psychology, 7.e., from a science which aims only at a scientific exposition of what can be known and verified by observation. But, however much assailed or disowned, the conception of a mind or conscious subject is to be found implicitly or explicitly in all psychological writers whatever,—not more in Berkeley, who accepts it as a fact, than in Hume, who accepts it asa fiction. This being so, we are far more likely to reach the truth eventually if we openly acknowledge this inexpugnable assumption, if such it prove, instead of resorting to all sorts of devious peri- phrases to hide it. Now wherever the word Subject, or its derivatives, occurs in psychology we might substitute the word Ego and analogous derivatives, did such exist. But Subject is almost always the preferable term 3 its im- personal form is an advantage, and it readily recalls its modern correlative Object. Moreover, Ego has two senses, distinguished by Kant as pure and empirical, the latter of which is, of course, an object, while the former is subject always. By pure Ego or Subject it is proposed to denote the simple fact that everything mental is referred to a Self. This psychological conception of a self or subject, then, is after all by no means identical with the metaphysical conceptions of a soul

or mind-atom, or of mind-stuff not atomic ; it may be kept as free from metaphysical implica- tions as the conception of the biological individual or organism with which it is so intimately connected.

The attempt, indeed, has frequently been made to resolve the former into the latter, and so to find in mind only such an indivi- duality as has an obvious counterpart in this individuality of the organism, 7.¢., what we may call an objective individuality. But such procedure owes all its plausibility to the fact that it leaves out of sight the difference between the biological and the psycho- logical standpoints. All that the biologist means by a dog is "the Sum of the phenomena which make up its corporcal existence." } And, inasmuch as its presentation to any one in particular is a point of no importance, the fact of presentation at all may be very well dropped out of account. Let us now turn to mind: Why should we not take this word or "'the word 'soul' simply as a name for the series of mental phenomena which make up an indi-

- Professor Huxley, Hume (English Men of Letters series), p. 171.

vidual mind?"2 Surely the moment we try distinctly to under- stand this question we realize that the cases are different. "Series of mental phenomena" for whom? For any passer-by such as might take stock of our biological dog? No, obviously only for that individual mind itself ; yet that is supposed to be made up of, to be nothing different from, the series of phenomena. Are we, then, (1) quoting J. S. Mill's words, 'to accept the paradox that something which ex hypothesi is but a series of feelings, can be aware of itself as a series?"3 Or (2) shall we say that the several parts of the series are mutually phenomenal, much as A may look at B, who was just now looking at A? Or (3) finally, shall we say that a large part of the so-called series, in fact every term but one, is phenomenal for the rest—for that one ?

As to the first alternative, paradox is too mild a word for it 8 even contradiction will hardly suffice. It is as impossible to express ''being aware of" by one term as it is to express an cquation or any other relation by one term: what knows can no more be iden- tical with what is known than a

weight with what it weighs. Ifa series of feelings is what is known or presented, then what knows, what it is presented to, cannot be that series of feelings, and this without regard to the point Mill mentions, viz., that the infinitely greater part of the series is either past or future. The question is not in the first instance one of time or substance at all, but simply turns upon the fact that knowledge or consciousness is unmeaning except as it implies something knowing or conscious of something. But it may be replied :—Granted that the formula for consciousness is something doing something, to put it generally ; still, if the two somethings are the same when I touch myself or when I see myself, why may not agent and patient be the same when the action is

| knowing or being aware of ; why may I not know myself—in fact,

do I not know myself? Certainly not ; agent and patient never are the same in the same act; the conceptions of self-caused, self- moved, self-knowun, et id genus omne, either connote the incompre- hensible or are abbreviated expressions—such, €é.g., as touching oneself when one's right hand touched one's left.

And so we come to the second alternative :—As one hand washes the other, may not different members of the series of feelings be sub- ject and object in tun? Compare, for example, the state of mind of a man succumbing to temptation (as he pictures himself enjoying the coveted good and impatiently repudiates scruples of conscience or dictates of prudence) with his state when, filled with remorse, he sides with conscience and condemns this 'former self,""— the "better self" having meanwhile become supreme. Here the cluster of presentations and their associated sentiments and motives, which together play the réle of self in the one field of consciousness, have —only momentarily it is true, but still have—for a time the place of not-self ; and under abnormal circumstances this partial alterna- tion may become complete alienation, as in what is called 'double consciousness." Or again, the development of self-consciousncss might be loosely described as taking the subject or self of onc stage as an object in the next,—self being, e.g., first identified with the body and afterwards distinguished from it. But all this, however true, is beside the mark ; and it is really a very scrious misnomer, ~—though the vagueness of our

psychological terminology seems to allow it—to do, as ¢.g., Mr Spencer does—represent the develop- ment of self-consciousness as a ‘differentiation of subject and object.” It is, if anything, a differentiation of object aud object, v.e., in plainer words, it is a differentiation among presentations— a differentiation every step of which implies just that relation to a subject which it is supposed to supersede.

There still remains an alternative, which, like the first, may be expressed in the words of J. S. Mill, viz., “the alternative of believ- ing that the Mind or Ego is something different from any series of feelings or possibilities of them.” To admit this, of course, is to admit the necessity of distinguishing between Mind or Ego, mean- ing the unity or continuity of consciousness as a complex of pre- sentations, and Mind or Ego as the subject to which this eomplex is presented. In dealing with the body from the ordinary biological standpoint no such necessity arises. “But, whereas there the indi- vidual organism is spoken of unequivocally, in psychology, on the other hand, the individual mind may mean either (i.) the series of feelings or ‘‘mental phenomena” above referred to; or (i) the subject of these feelings for whom they are phenomena; or (iii.) the subject of these feelings or phenomena + the series of feelings or phenomena themselves, the two being in that relation to each other in which alone the one is subject and the other a scries of feelings, phenomena, or objects. It is in this last sense that Mind is used in empirical psychology, its exclusive use in the first scnse being favoured only by those who shrink from the speculative associations connected with its exclusive use in the second. But psychology is not called upon to transcend the relation of subject to object or, as we may call it, the fact of presentation. On the other hand, as has been said, the attempt to ignore one term of the relation is hopeless ; and cqually hopeless, even futile, is the

2 Professor Huxley, op. cit., p. 172. 3 Examination of Sir W. Hamilton’s Philosophy, ch. xii. fin.

attempt, by means of phrases such as consciousness or the unity of

consciousness, to dispense with the recognition of a conscious subject.

We might now proceed to inquire more closely into the character and relations of the three states, modes, or acts! of this subject, which are

commonly held to be the invari- able constituents of psychical life and broadly distinguished as cognitions, feelings, and conations. But we should be at once confronted by a doctrine much in vogue at present, which, strictly taken, amounts almost to a denial of this tripartite classification of the facts of mind—the doctrine, viz., that feeling alone is primordial, and invariably present wherever there is consciousness at all. Every living crea- ture, it is said, feels, though it may never do any more ; only the higher animals, and these only after a time, learn to discriminate and identify and to act with a purpose. This doctrine, as might be expected, derives its plausibility partly from the vagueness of psychological terminology, and partly from the intimate connexion that undoubtedly exists between feeling and cognition on the one hand and feeling and volition on the other. As to the meaning of

the term, it is plain that further definition is requisite for a word that may mean (a) a touch, as feeling of roughness ; (6) an organic sensation, as feeling of hunger ; (¢) an emo- tion, as feeling of anger ; (d) feeling proper, as pleasure or pain. But, even taking feeling in the last, its strict sense, it has been maintained that all the more complex forms of consciousness are resolvable into, or at least have been developed from, feelings of pleasure and pain. The only proof of such position, since we cannot directly observe the beginnings of conscious life, must consist of considera- tions such as the following. ‘So far as we can judge, we find feeling everywhere ; but, as we work downwards from higher to lower forms of life, the possible variety and the definiteness of sense-impressions both steadily diminish. Moreover, we can directly observe in our own organic sensa- tions, which seem to come nearest to the whole content of infantile and molluscous experience, an almost entire absence of any assignable quale. Finally, in our sense-experience generally, we find the element of feeling at a maximum in the lower senses and the intellectual element ata maximum inthe higher. But the so-called intellectual senses are the most used, and use we know blunts feeling and favours intellection, as we see in chemists, who sort the most filthy mixtures by smell and taste without discomfort. Tf, then, feeling predominates more and more as we approach the beginning of consciousness, may we not say that it is the only sine qua non of consciousness? Considerations of this kind, however impressive when exhibited at length, are always liable to be overturned by some apparently

un- important fact which may easily be overlooked. Two lines, e.g., may get nearer and nearer and yet will never meet, if the rate of approach is simply proportional to the distance. A triangle may be diminished indefinitely and yet we can- not infer that it becomes eventually all angles, though the angles get no less and the sides do. Now, before we decide that pleasure or pain alone may constitute a complete state of mind, it may be well to inquire : What is the connexion between feelings of pleasure and pain and the two remain- ing possible constituents of consciousness, aS Wwe can observe them now? And this is an inquiry which will help us towards an answer to our main question, namely, that concerning the nature and connexions of what are commonly regarded as the three ultimate facts of mind. Relation Broadly speaking, in any state of mind that we can as feeling directly observe, what we find is (1) that we are aware of ocogni- 4 certain change in our sensations, thoughts, or circum-

Feeling.

tion and

conation. 1 Tt is useless at this point attempting to decide on the comparative

appropriateness of these and similar terms, such as “faculties,” “ capacities,” “functions,” &c.

stances, (2) that we are pleased or pained with the change, and (3) that we act accordingly. We never find that feeling directly alters—z.e., without the intervention of the action to which it prompts—either our sensations or situation, but that regularly these latter with remarkable promptness and certainty alter it. We have not first a change of feeling, and then a change in our sensations, perceptions, and ideas; but, these changing, change of feel- ing follows. In short, feeling appears frequently to be an effect, which therefore cannot exist without its cause, though in different circumstances the same cause may pro- duce a different amount or even a different state of feeling. Turning from what we may call the receptive phase of con- sciousness to the active or appetitive phase, we find in like manner that

feeling is certainly not, in such cases as We can clearly observe, the whole of consciousness at any moment. True, in common speech we talk of liking pleasure and disliking pain ; but this is either tautology, equivalent to saying, we are pleased when we are pleased and pained

when we are pained, or else it is an allowable abbrevia-

tion, and means that we like pleasurable objects and dislike painful objects, as when we say, we like feeling warm and dislike feeling hungry. And feeling warm or feeling hungry, we must remember, is not pure feeling in the strict sense of the word. Such states admit, if not of description, yet at least of identification and distinction as truly as colours and sounds do. Within the limits of our observation, then, we find that feeling accompanies some more or less definite presentation which for the sake of it becomes the object of appetite or aversion ; in other words, feeling implies a relation toa pleasurable or pain- ful presentation, that, as cause of feeling and end of the action to which feeling prompts, is doubly distinguished from it. Thus the very facts that lead us to distinguish feeling from cognition and conation make against the hypothesis that consciousness can ever be all feeling.

But, as already said, the plausibility of this hypothesis is in good part due to a laxity in the use of terms. Most psychologists before Kant, and English psychologists even to the present day, speak of pleasure and pain as sensa- tions. But it is plain that pleasure and pain are not simple ideas, as Locke called them, in the sense in which touches and tastes are,—that is to say, they are never like these localized or projected, nor elaborated in conjunction with other sensations and movements into percepts or intul- tions of the external. This confusion of feeling with sensa- tions is largely consequent on the use of one word pain for certain organic sensations and for the purely subjective state. But, to say nothing of the fact that such pains are always more or less definitely localized,—which of itself is so far cognition,—they are also distinguished as shooting, burning, gnawing, dc. &c., all which symptoms indicate a certain objective quality. Accordingly all the more recent psychologists have been driven by one means or another to recognize two ‘aspects ” (Bain), or “properties” (Wundt), in what they call a sensation, the one a “sensible or intellectual” or “qualitative,” the other an “affective” or “emotive,” aspect or property. The term “aspect hi is

figurative and obviously inaccurate ; even to describe pleasure and pain as properties of sensation is a matter open to much question. But the point which at present concerns us is simply that when feeling is said to be the primordial element in consciousness more is usually in- cluded under feeling than pure pleasure and pain, viz., some characteristic or quality by which one pleasurable or painful sensation is distinguishable from another. No doubt, as we go downwards in the chain of life the quali- tative or objective elements in the so-called sensations become less and less definite ; and at the same time organ- isms with well-developed sense-organs give place to others

Feeling and sensation distinct.

rey ew or OG Y

without any clearly differentiated organs at all. But there is no ground for supposing even the amoeba itself to be affected in all respects the same whether by changes of temperature or of pressure or by changes in its internal fluids, albeit all of these changes will further or hinder its life and so presumably be in some sort pleasurable or pain- ful. On the whole, then, there are grounds for saying that the endeavour to represent all the various facts of consciousness as evolved out of feeling is due to a hasty

Al

and treacherous word “consciousness,” or committing our- selves to the position that ideas are modifications of a certain mental substance and identical with the subject to which they are presented, we may leave all this on one side, and say that ideas are objects, and the relation of objects to subjects—that whereby the one is object and the other subject—is presentation. And it is because only objects sustain this relation that they may be spoken of simply as presentations.

It will be convenient here to digress for a moment to take account Sensa- of an objection that is sure to be urged, viz., that sensations at all tious not events ought not to be called objects, that they are ‘“‘states of the psycho- subject” and that this is a deliverance of common sense, if anything logically is. Now if by this be meant (i.) that sensations are metaphysically

subject- subjective modifications in an idealistic sense, there is no need at ive.

striving after simplicity, and has been favoured by the ambiguity of the term feeling itself. If by feeling we mean a certain subjective state varying continuously in intensity and passing from time to time from its positive

Presenta- tion.

phase (pleasure) to its negative phase (pain), then this purely pathic state implies an agreeing or disagreeing something which psychologically determines it. If, on the other hand, we let feeling stand for both this state and the cause of it, then, perhaps, a succession of such " feelings " may make up a consciousness ; but then we are including two of our elementary facts under the name of one of them. The simplest form of psychical life, therefore, involves not only a subject feeling but a subject having qualitatively distinguish- able presentations which are the occasion of its feeling.

We may now try to ascertain what is meant by cogni- tion as an essential element in this life, or,. more ~~eaammmihy, what we are to understand by the term presentation. It was an important step onwards for psychology when Locke introduced that ."'new way of ideas" which Stillingfleet found alternately so amusing and so dangerous. By idea Locke tells us he meant true appearances in men's minds, or "whatsoever is the immiediate object of perception, thought, or understanding"; and it was so far a retro~~ grade step when Hume restricted the term to certain only of these appearances or objects, or rather to these appear- ances or objects in a certain state, viz., as reproduced ideas or images. And, indeed, the history of psychology seems to show that its most important advances have been made by those who have kept closely to this way of ideas; the establishment of the laws of association and their many fruitful applications and the whole Herbartian psychology may suffice as instances (see HERBART). The truth is that the use of such a term is itself a mark of an important generalization, one which helps to free us from the mytho- logy and verbiage of the "faculty-psychologists." All that variety of mental facts which we speak of as sensa- tions, perceptions, images, intuitions, concepts, notions, have two characteristics in common :—(1) they admit of being more or less attended

to, and (2) can be reproduced and associated together. It is here proposed to use the term presentation to connote such a mental fact, and as the best English equivalent for what Locke meant by idea and what Kant and Herbart called a Vorstellung.

A presentation has then a twofold relation,— first, directly to the subject, and secondly, to other presenta- tions. By the first is meant the fact that the presentation 1s attended to, that the subject is more or less conscious of it: itis “in his mind” or presented. As presented to a subject a presentation might with advantage be called an object, or perhaps a psychical object, to distinguish it from what are called objects apart from presentation, ¢.e., con- ceived as independent of any particular subject. Locke, as we have seen, did so call it; still, to avoid possible con- fusion, it may turn out best to dispense with the frequent use of object in this sense. But on one account, at least, it Is desirable not to lose sight altogether of this which 18 after all the stricter as well as the older signification of object, namely, because it enables us to express definitely, without implicating any ontological theory, what we have So far seen reason to think is the fundamental fact in psychology. Instead of depending mainly on that vague

this stage either to assert or deny that. But if the meaning be (ii.) that sensations are presented as modes of the subject, such a position is due toa confusion between the subject proper or pure Ego and that complex presentation or object, the empirical, or as we might call it the biotic, Ego. A self-conscious subject may not only havea sensation but may recognize it as its own,—recognize a certain con- nexion, that is to say, between the sensation and that presentation of the empirical self which self-consciousness implies. But such referenee only renders more obvious the objective nature of a sensa- tion, in the psychological sense of the term objective. Or, again, the meaning may be (iii.) that a subject whose presentations were all sensations would know nothing of the difference between subject and object. In this objection there is a lurking confusion between the standpoint of a given experience and the standpoint of its exposition. The true way, surely, to represent the bare fact of sensation is not to attempt to reproduce an experience as yet con- fined to sensations, but to describe such experience as a scientific psychologist would do if we could imagine him a spectator of it. The infant who is delighted by a bright

colour does not of course conceive himself as face to face with an object; but neither does he conceive the colour as a subjective affection. We are bound to describe his state of mind truthfully, but that is no reason for abandoning terms which have no counterpart in his consciousness, when these terms are only used to depict that consciousness to us. As to the objection (iv.) that, when all is said and done, sensations are conceived by common sense as modifications of self, whether so presented or not, it may be granted that it appears so at first blush, but not when common sense is more closely examined. The fact is we arc here upon what has been called ‘‘the margin of psycho- logy,” where our ordinary thinking brings into one vicw what science has to be at great pains to kecp distinct. Though it is scientifically a long way round from a fact of mind to the corre- sponding fact of body, yet it is only on careful reflexion that we can distinguish the two in those cases in which our practical interests have closely associated them. Such a case is that of sensation. The ordinary conception of a sensation coincides, no doubt, with the definition given by Hamilton and Mansel :— ‘*Sensation proper is the consciousness of certain affections of our body as an animated organism”; and it is because in ordinary thinking we reckon the body as part of self that we come to think of sensations as subjective modifications. But, when considerations of method compel us to eliminate physiological implications from the ordinary conception of a sensation, we are able here to dis- tinguish the conscious subject and the ‘‘ affections” of which it is conscious as clearly as we can distinguish subject and object in other cases of presentation. On the whole, then, we may conclude that there is nothing either in the facts or in our necessary conceptions of them to prevent us from representing whatever admits of psychical reproduction and association, no matter how simple it be, as an object presented to a subject.

As to the subjective relation of objects, the relation of Atten- presentation itself, we have merely to note that on the Hou.

side of the subject it implies what, for want of a better word, nay be called attention, extending the denotation of this term so as to include even what we ordinarily call inattention. Attention so used will thus cover part of what is meant by consciousness,—so much of it, that is, as answers to being mentally active, active enough at least to “receive impressions.” Attention

on the side of the subject implies intensity on the side of the object: we might indeed almost call intensity the matter of a pre- sentation, without which it is a nonentity.1 As to the connexion between these two, subjective attention and

1 Compare Kant's Principle of the Anticipations of Perception :— "Tn all phenomena the real which is the object of scusation has in- tensive magnitude."

}

Con- tinuity of con- scious- ness.

objective intensity—in that higher form of attention called voluntary we are aware (1) that concentration of atten- tion increases or its abstraction diminishes the intensity of a presentation in circumstances where physically and physiologically there is nothing to prevent the intensity of the presentation from continuing uniform. Again, (2) in circumstances when psychologically we are aware of no previous change in the distribution of attention, we find the intensity of a presentation increased or diminished if certain physical concomitants of the presentation (¢g., stimulus, nervous process, é&c.) are increased or diminished. Thus, though this is a point we could hardly establish without the aid of psychophysics, we may conclude that the intensity of a presentation may be altered from two sides ; that it depends, in other words, partly upon what we may perhaps call its physical intensity and partly on the amount of attention it receives.

Some further exposition of the connexion between subjective attention and objective intensity is perhaps desirable here, where we are seeking to get a general view of the essential facts of mind and their relations, rather than later on, when we shall be more concerned with details. We are aware in ordinary life that the inteusity of any given sensation depends upon certain physical quantities, varying directly in some proportion as these vary. Hence, since our habitual standpoiut is the physical not the psy- chological,

we conceive sensory objects as having an intensity per se apart from the attention that their presentation secures. From the physical standpoint indeed it is manifest that no other conception is compatible with a scientific treatment of phenomena. Subjective ¢ «ees of variation are supposed to be eliminated: the general mind to which, according to the physicist's conception of a pheno- menon, that phenomenon is implicitly supposed to be presented is a mind in which there is no feeling to produce variations of atten- tion, or to favour sesthetic combinations of objects. Attention is thus assumed to be constant, and all variations in intensity to be objectively determined. But psychologically we cannot assume this. In any given presentation there is, it must be admitted, no immediate evidence that the intensity of the object is a function of two variables,—(1) what we have called its physical or absolute intensity and (2) the intensity of atteution. Still there are facts which justify this conclusion. That the intensity of the prescnta- tion varies with the absolute intensity of the object, attention remaining constant, is a proposition not likely to be challenged. What has to be shown is that the intensity of presentations varies with the attention, all else remaining constaut. Assuming that voluntary and non-voluntary attentiou are fundamentally the same, this amounts to showing (1) that concentration of attention upon some objects diminishes the intensity of presentation of others in the same ficld, whether the concentration be voluntary or non- voluntary, t.¢., due to a shock; and (2) that, even though only within narrow limits, increasing attention voluntarily has the same effect on the presentation as increasing the objective intensity from the physical side. The narrowness of these limits—practically an all-important fact—is theoretically no objection. It would not be difficult psychologically to account for our inability to concentrate attention indefinitely : that we can concentrate it at all is enough to show that there is a subjective as well as an objective factor in the intensity of a presentation. Any fuller consideration of the connexion between attention and presentations may be deferred.

The inter-objective relations of presentations, on which their second characteristic, that of revivability and asso- ciability depends, though of the first importance in them- selves, hardly call for examination in a general analysis like the present. But there is one point still more funda- mental that we cannot wholly pass by: it is—in part at any rate—what is commonly

termed the unity or con- tinuity of consciousness. From the physical standpoint and in ordinary life we can talk of objects that are isolated and independent and in all respects distinct individuals. The screech of the owl, for example, has physically nothing to do with the brightness of the moon: either may come or go without changing the order of thmgs to which the other belongs. But psychologically, for the individual percipient, they are parts of one whole: special attention to one diminishes the intensity of presentation of the other and the recurrence of the one will afterwards entail the re-presentation of the other also. Not only are they still parts of one whole, but such distinctness as they have

at present is the result of a gradual differentiation. It is quite impossible for us now to imagine the effects of years of experience removed, or to picture the character of our infantile presentations before our interests had led us habitually to concentrate attention on some, and to ignore others, whose intensity thus diminished as that of the former increased. In place of the many things which we can now see and hear, not merely would there then be a confused presentation of the whole field of vision and of a mass of undistinguished sounds, but even the difference between sights and sounds themselves would be without its present distinctness. Thus the further we go back the nearer we approach to a total presentation having the character of one general continwwm in which differences are latent. There is, then, in psychology, as in biology, what may be called a principle of “progressive differen- tiation or specialization” ; and this, as well as the facts of reproduction and association, forcibly suggests the con- ception of a certain objective continuum forming the background or basis to the several relatively distinct pre- sentations that are elaborated out of it—the equivalent, in fact, of that unity and continuity of consciousness which has been supposed to supersede the need for a conscious subject.

There is one class of objects of special interest even in a general survey, viz., movements or motor presentations. These, like sensory presentations, admit of association and reproduction, and seem to attain to such distinctness as they possess in adult human experience by a gradual differ- entiation out of an original diffused mobility which is little besides

emotional expression. Of this, however, more presently. It is primarily to such dependence upon feel- ing that movements owe their distinctive character, the possession, that is, under normal circumstances, of definite and assignable psychical antecedents, in contrast to sensory presentations, which enter the field of consciousness ex abrupto. We cannot psychologically explain the order in which particular sights and sounds occur; but the move- ments that follow them, on the other hand, can be ade- quately explained only by psychology. The twilight that sends the hens to roost sets the fox to prowl, and the lion's roar which gathers the jackals scatters the sheep. Such diversity in the movements, although the sensory presenta- tions are similar, is due, in fact, to what we might call the principle of " subjective or hedonic selection "—that, out of all the manifold changes of sensory presentation which a given individual experiences, only a few are the occasion of such decided feeling as to become objects of possible appetite (or aversion). The representation of what in- terests us comes to be associated with the representation of such movements as will secure its realization, so that— although no concentration of attention will secure the requisite intensity to a pleasurable object present only in idea—we can by what is strangely like a concentration of attention convert the idea of a movement into the fact, and by means of the movement attain the coveted reality. :

And this has brought us round naturally to what is per- haps the easiest way of approaching the question: What is a conation or action? In ordinary voluntary move- ment we have first- of all an idea or re-presentation of the movement, and last of all the actual movement itself,—a new presentation which may for the present be described as the filling out of the re- presentation,! which thereby attains that intensity, distinctness, and embodiment we call reality. How does this change come about? The attempt has often been made to explain it by a reference to the more uniform, and apparently simpler, case of reflex

1 On the connexion of presentations and re-presentations, see p. 59 below.

.

Motor presenta- tions. Subject-

ive selec- tion.

Cona-

tion.

rey Cl @lLOG Y

action, including under this term what are called sensori-

motor and ideo-motor actions. In all these the movement

seems to be the result of a mere transference of intensity

from the associated sensation or idea that sets on the movement. But, when by some chance or mischance the same sensory presentation excites two alternative and con- flicting motor ideas, a temporary block, it is said, occurs ; and, when at length one of these nascent motor changes finally prevails and becomes real, then we have the state of mind called volition. But this assumption that sen- sory and motor ideas are associated before volition, and that the volition begins where automatic or reflex action ends, is due to that inveterate habit of confounding the psychical and the physical which is the bane of modern psychology. How did these particular sensory and motor presentations ever come to be associated? It is wholly beside the mark to answer that they are " organically de- termined psychical changes." In one respect all psychical changes alike are organically determined, inasmuch as all alike—so far, at least, as we at all know or surmise—have organic concomitants. In another respect no psychical changes are organically determined, inasmuch as physical events and psychical events have no common factors. Now the only psychological evidence we have of any very intimate connexion between sensory and motor representa- tions is that furnished by our acquired dexterities, 7.c., by such movements as Hartley styled secondary automatic. But then all these have been preceded by volition: as Mr Spencer says, "the child learning to walk wills each movement before walking it." Surely, then, a psycho- logist should take this as his typical case and prefer to assume that all automatic actions that come within his ken at all are in this sense secondarily automatic, Rie. 880 say

that either in the experience of the individual or of his ancestors volition, or something analogous to it, preceded habit.

But, if we are thus compelled by a sound method to regard sensori-motor actions as degraded or mechanical forms of voluntary actions, instead of regarding voluntary actions as gradually differentiated out of something physi- cal, we have not to ask: What happens when one of two alternative movements is executed? but the more general question: What happens when any movement is made in consequence of feeling? It is obvious that on this view the simplest definitely purposive movement must have been preceded by some movement simpler still. For any dis- tinct movement purposely made presupposes the ideal pre- sentation, before the actual realization, of the movement. But such ideal presentation, being a re-presentation, equally presupposes a previous actual movement of which it is the so-called mental residuum. There is then, it would seem, but one way left, viz., to regard those movements which are immediately expressive of pleasure or pain as prim- ordial, and to regard the so-called voluntary movements as elaborated out of these. The vague and diffusive char- acter of these primitive emotional manifestations is really a point in favour of this position. For such “ diffusion ” is evidence of an underlying continuity of motor presenta- tions parallel to that already discussed in connexion with Sensory presentations, a continuity which, in each case, becomes differentiated in the course of experience into comparatively distinct and discrete movements and sensa- tions respectively.?

1 Compare Spencer’s Principles of Psychology, i. 496.

? It may be well to call to mind here that Dr Bain also has regarded emotional expression as a possible commencement of action, but only to reject it in favour of his own peculiar doctrine of ‘* spontaneity,” which, however, is open to the objection that it makes movement Precede feeling instead of following it—an objection that would be

Serious even if the arguments advanced to support his hypothesis were a8 cogent as only Dr Bain takes them to be. Against the position

But, whereas we can only infer, and that in a very roundabout fashion, that our sensations are not absolutely distinct but are parts of one massive sensation, as it were, we are still liable under the influence of strong emotion directly to experience the corresponding continuity in the case of movement. Such motor-continuum we may sup- pose is the psychical counterpart of that permanent readi- ness to act, or rather that continual nascent acting, which among the older physiologists was spoken of as “tonic action”; and as this is now known to be intimately de- pendent on afferent excitations so is our motor conscious- ness on our sensory. Still, since we cannot imagine the beginning of life but only life begun, the simplest picture we can form of a concrete state of mind is not one in which there are movements before there are any sensations or sensations before there are any movements, but one in which change of sensation is followed by change of movement, the link between the two being a change of feeling.

Having thus simplified the question, we may now ask again: How is this change of movement through feeling brought about? The answer, as already hinted, appears to be: By a change of attention. We learn from such observations as psychologists describe under the head of fascination, imitation, hypnotism, &c., that the mere con- centration of attention upon a movement is often enough to bring the movement to pass. But, of course, in such cases there is neither emotional experience nor volition in question ; such facts are only cited to show the connexion between attention and movements. Everybody too has often observed how the execution of any but mechanical movements arrests attention to thoughts or sensations, and vice versa. Let us suppose, then, that we have at any given moment a certain distribution of attention between sensory and motor presentations; a change in that dis- tribution means a change in the intensity of some or all of these, and change of intensity in motor presentations means change of movement. Such changes are, however, quite minimal in amount so long as the given presentations are not conspicuously agreeable or disagreeable. As soon as they are, we find pleasure to lead at once to concentra- tion of attention on the pleasurable object ; so that pleasure is not at all so certainly followed by movement as we find pain to be, save of course when movements are themselves the pleasurable objects and are executed, as we say, for their own sakes. In fact, pleasure would seem rather to repress

movement, except so far as it is coincident either with a more economic distribution, or with a positive augmentation, of the available attention; and either of these, on the view supposed, would lead to increased but indefinite (7.¢., playful) movement. Pain, on the other hand, is much more closely connected with movement, and movement too which for obvious reasons much sooner acquires a purposive character. Instead of voluntary con- centration of attention upon a painful presentation we find attention to such an object always involuntary ; in other words, attention is, as it were, excentrated, dispersed, or withdrawn, If, therefore, the painful presentation is a movement, it is suspended ; if it is a sensation, movements are set up which further distract attention, and some of which may effect the removal of the physical source of the sensation.

ee eee maintained above he objects that ‘‘ the emotional wave almost invari- ably affects a whole group of movements,” and therefore does not furnish the ‘‘ isolated promptings that are desiderated in the case of the will” (Mental and Moral Science, p. 323). But to make this objection is to let heredity count for nothing. In fact, wherever a variety of isolated movements is physically possible, there also we always find corresponding instincts, ‘that untaught ability to perforn1 actions,” to use Dr Bain’s own language, which a minimum of prac- tice suffices to perfect.

Depend- ence of

action on

feeling.

Prim- ordial facts of mind.

44 Ps YC

We are now at the end of our analysis, and the results may perhaps be most conveniently summarized by first throwing them into a tabular form and then dppending a few remarks by way of indicating the main purport of the table. Taking no account of the specific difference between one concrete state of mind and another, and supposing that we are dealing with

presentations in their simplest form, 1.¢., aS sensations and movements, we have :—

| (1) non-voluntarily at- >

= Presentation ‘

tending to changes of sensory

in the sensory-con- tinuum!; [Cognition]

(2) being, im conse- quence, either pleased or pained ;

A te [Feeling]

and (8) by voluntary attention or “inner- vation” producing changes in the motor- continuum.! [Conation] Of the three phases, thus logically distinguishable, the first and the third correspond in the main with the receptive and active states or powers of the older psychologists. The second phase, being more difficult to isolate, was long overlooked ; or, at all events, its essential characteristics were not distinctly marked: it was either confounded with (1), which is its cause, or with (3), its effect. But per- haps the most important of all psychological distinctions is that which traverses both the old bipartite and the prevailing tripartite classification, viz., that between the subject, on the one hand, as acting and feeling, and the objects of this activity on the other. Such distinction lurks indeed under such terms as faculty, power, conscious- ness, but they tend to keep it out of sight. With this distinction clearly before us—instead of crediting the sub- ject with an indefinite number of faculties or capacities, we must seek to explain not only reproduction, association, agreement, difference, d&c., but all varieties of thinking and acting by the laws pertaining to ideas or presentations, leaving to the subject only the one power of variously distributing that attention upon which the intensity of a presentation in part depends. Of this single subjective activity what we call activity in the narrower sense (as, é.g., purposive movement and intellection) is but a special case, although a very important one.

According to this view, then, presentatvons, attention, feeling, are not to be regarded as three co-ordinate genera, each a distinguishable “state of mind or consciousness,” i.e, as being all alike included under this one supreme category. There is, as Berkeley long ago urged, no resem- blance between activity and an idea; nor is it easy to see anything common to pure feeling and an idea, unless it be that both possess intensity. Classification seems, in fact, to be here out of place. Instead, therefore, of the one summum genus, state of mind or consciousness, with its three co-ordinate subdivisions—cognition, emotion, cona- tion—our analysis seems to lead us to recognize three dis- tinct and irreducible facts—attention, feeling, and objects or presentations—as together, in a certain connexion, con- stituting one concrete state of mind or psychosis. Of such concrete states of mind we may then say there are two forms, more or less distinet, corresponding to the two ways in which attention may be determined and the two classes of objects attended to in each, viz, (1) the sensory or

= Presentation of motor

| | |

receptive state, when attention is non-voluntarily deter- mined, i.c., where feeling follows the act of attention ; and gua eS ee

1 To cover more complex cases, we might here add the words “or

trains of ideas.”

OL Ora Y

(2) the motor or active state, where feeling precedes the act of attention, which is thus determined voluntarily.

To say that feeling and attention are not presentations will seem to many au extravagant paradox. If all knowledge consists of presentations, it will be said, how come we to know anything of feeling and attention if they are not presented? We know of them indirectly through their effects, not directly in themselves. This is, perhaps, but a more concrete statement of what philosophers have very widely acknowledged in a more abstract form since the days of Kant2—the impossibility of the subjective qua subjective being presented. It is in the main clearly put in the following passage from Hamilton, who, however, has not had the strength of his convictions in all cases :—‘‘The peculiarity of feeling, therefore, is that there is nothing but what is subjectively sub- jective ; there is no object different from self,—no objectification of any mod of self. We are, indeed, able to constitute our states of pain and pleasure into objects of reficxion, but, in so far as they are objects of reflexion, they are not feelings but only reflex cogni- tions of feelings.”* But this last sentence is not, perhaps, alto- gether satisfactory. The meaning seems to be that feeling ‘‘can only be studied through its reminiscence,” which is what Hamilton has said elsewhere of the ‘‘ phenomena of consciousness ” generally. But this is a position hard to reconcile with the other, viz., that feeling and cognition are generically distinct. How can that which was not originally a cognition become such by being reproduced ? The statements that feeling is ‘‘ subjectively subjective,” that in it ‘‘there is no object different from self,” are surely tantamount to saying that it is not presented ; and what is not presented cannot, of course, be re-presented. Instead, therefore, of the position that feeling and attention are known by being made objects of reflexion, it would seem we can only maintain that we know of them by their effects, by the changes, i.¢., which they produce in the character and succession of our presentations.4 We ought also to bear in mind that the effects of attention

and feeling cannot be known without attention and feeling: to whatever stage we advance, there- fore, we have always in any given ‘‘state of mind” attention and feeling on the one side, and on the other a presentation of objects. Attention and feeling seem thus to be ever present, and not to adinit of the continuous differentiation into parts which gives to presentations a certain individuality, and makes their association and reproduction possible.

Theory of Presentations.

Having now ascertained what seem to be the essential elements in any state of mind, we may next proceed to examine these several elements separately in more detail. It will be best to begin with that which is both the clearest in itself and helps us the most to understand the rest, viz., the objects of attention or consciousness, 1.¢., presentations. And this exposition will be simplified if we start With a supposition that will enable us to leave aside, at least for the present, the difficult question of heredity.

tion of a

there is more or less of progressive differentiation or ‘ psycho-

development ; we know too that the same holds broadly j\yo of a race; and it is believed to hold in like manner of the Fe evolution of the animal kingdom generally. It is believed vidual. that there has existed a series of sentient individuals beginning with the lowest form of life and advancing con- tinuously up to man. Some traces of the advance already made may be reproduced in the growth of each human being now, but for the most part such traces have been obliterated. What was experience in the past has become instinct in the present. The descendant has no conscious- ness of his ancestors’ failures when performing by “an

2 Compare “ Gefiihle der Lust und Unlust und der Wille. . . die gar nicht Erkenntnisse sind” (Krittk der reinen Vernunft, Harten- stein’s ed., p. 76).

3 Lectures on Metaphysics, ii. p. 432.

4 But, while we cannot say that we know what attention and feeling are, inasmuch as they are not presented, neither can we with any propriety

maintain that we are ignorant of them, inasmuch as they are by their very nature unpresentable. As Ferrier contends, ‘‘we can be ignorant only of what can possibly be known ; in other words, there can be ignorance only of that of which there can be knowledge” (Institutes of Metaphysics, § I1., Agnoiology, prop. iii. sqg.). The antithesis between the objective and the subjective factors in presenta- tion is wider than that between knowledge and ignorance, which is an antithesis pertaining to the objective side alone.

We know that in the course of each individual’s life Assump- |

as

PeyYonH @nto¢€g y

untaught ability” what they slowly and painfully found

out. But if we are to attempt to follow the genesis of mind from its earhest dawn it is the primary experience rather than the eventual instinct that we have first of all to keep in view. To this end, then, it is proposed to assume that we are dealing with one individual which has continuously advanced from the beginning of psychical hfe, and not with a series of individuals of which all save the first have inherited certain capacities from its pro- genitors. The life-history of such an imaginary indi- vidual, that is to say, would correspond with all that was new, all that could be called evolution or development, in a certain typical series of individuals each of whom advanced a certain stage in mental differentiation. On the other hand, from this history would be omitted that inherited reproduction of ancestral experience, or tendency to its reproduction, by which alone, under the actual con- ditions of existence, progress is possible.

If an assumption of this kind had been explicitly avowed by the psychologists who have discussed the growth of experience in accordance with the evolution hypothesis, not a few of the difficulties in the way of that hypothesis might have been removed. That individual minds make some advance in the complexity and distinct- ness of their presentations between birth and maturity is an obvious fact ; heredity, though a less obvious fact, is also beyond question. Using Locke’s analogy of a writing-tablet—or let us say an etching-tablet—by way

sent altogether. The worm is aware only of the difference between light and dark. The steel-worker sees half a dozen tints where others see only a uniform glow. To the child, it is said, all faces are alike; and throughout life we are apt to note the general, the points of resem- blance, before the special, the points of difference.1 But, even when most definite, what we call a presentation is still part of a larger whole. It is not separated from other presentations, whether simultaneous or successive, by some- thing which is not of the nature of presentation, as one island is separated from another by the intervening sea, or one note in a melody from the next by an interval of silence. In our search for a theory of presentations, then, it is from this " unity of consciousness" that we must take our start. Working backwards from this as we find it now, we are led alike by particular facts and general con- siderations to the conception of a totum objectivum or objective continuum which is gradually differentiated, thereby becoming what we call distinct presentations, just as with mental growth some particular presentation, clear as a whole, as Leibnitz would say, becomes a complex of distinguishable parts. Of the very beginning of this continuum we can say nothing: absolute beginnings are beyond the pale of science. Actual presentation consists in this continuum being differentiated; and every dif- ferentiation constitutes a new presentation. Hence the commonplace of psychologists :—We are only conscious as we are conscious of change.

of illustration, we may be sure that every individual started with some features of the picture completely pre- formed, however latent, others more or less clearly out- lined, and others again barely indicated, while of others there is as yet absolutely no trace. But the process of

But "change of consciousness" is too loose an expression Gradual to take the place of the unwieldy phrase differentiation differen- of a presentation-continuum, to which we have been driven. daha For not only does the term "consciousness" confuse what pea

exactness requires us to keep distinct, an activity and its tinvum.

reproducing the old might differ as widely from that of producing the new as electrotyping does from engraving. However, as psychologists we know nothing directly about it; neither can we distinguish precisely at any link in the chain of life what is old and inherited—original in the sense of Locke and Leibnitz—from what is new or acquired —original in the modern sense. But we are bound as a matter of method to suppose all complexity and differentia- tion among presentations to have been originated, i.e., experimentally acquired, at some time or other. So long, then, as we are concerned primarily with the progress of this differentiation we may disregard the fact that it has not actually been, as it were, the product of one hand dealing with one tabula rasa but of many hands, each of which, starting with a reproduction of what had been wrought on the preceding tabula'; put in more or fewer new touches before devising the whole to a successor who would proceed in like manner.

object, but also the term "change" fails to express the characteristics which distinguish presentations from other changes. Differentiation implies that the simple becomes complex or the complex more complex; it implies also that this increased complexity is due to the persistence of former changes ; we may even say such persistence is essen- tial to the very idea of development or growth. In trying, then, to conceive our psychological individual in the earliest stages of development we must not picture it as experienc- ing a succession of absolutely new sensations, which, com- ing out of nothingness, admit of being strung upon the "thread of consciousness" like beads picked up at random, or cemented into a mass like the bits of stick and sand with which the young caddis covers its nakedness. The notion, which Kant has done much to encourage, that psychical life begins with a confused manifold of sensa- tions not only without logical but without psychological unity is one that becomes more inconceivable the more

The pree What is implied in this process of differentiation or closely we consider it. An absolutely new presentation, — mental growth and what is it that grows or becomes | having no sort of connexion with former presentations till

tinuum,

differentiated 1—these are the questions to which we must nowattend. Psychologists have usually represented mental advance as consisting fundamentally in the combination and recombination of various elementary units, the so-called sensations and primitive movements, or, in other words, in a Species of “mental chemistry.” If we are to resort to physical analogies at all—a matter of very doubtful pro- priety—we shall find in the growth of a seed or an embryo far better illustrations of the unfolding of the contents of consciousness than in the building up of molecules: the Process seems much more a segmentation of what is origin- ally continuous than an aggregation of elements at first independent and distinct. Comparing higher minds or stages of mental development with lower—by what means such comparison is possible we need not now consider— we find in the higher conspicuous differences between pre- sentations which in the lower are indistinguishable or ab-

the subject has synthesized it with them, is a conception for which it would be hard to find a warrant either by direct observation, by inference from biology, or in con- siderations of an-a@ priori kind. At any given moment we have a certain whole of presentations, a ‘field of con- sciousness” psychologically one and continuous; at the next we have not an entirely new field but a partial change within this field. Many who would allow this in the case of representations, 7.e., where idea succeeds idea by the workings of association, would demur to it in the case of primary presentations or sensations. “For,” they would say, ‘‘may not silence be broken by a clap of thunder, and have not the blind been made to see?” To

1 This last statement is apt to mislead by implying an active com- parison of several objects ; but that absence or confusion of differences which hides the many is really very different from the detection of resemblances which makes the many one.

Diffusion and re- striction.

A6

urge such objections is to miss the drift of our discussion, and to answer them may serve to make it clearer. Where silence can be broken there are representations of preced- ing sounds and in all probability even subjective

pre- sentations of sound as well; silence as experienced by one who has heard is very different from the silence of Con- dillac's statue before it had ever heard. The question is rather whether such a conception as that of Condillac's is possible ; supposing a sound to be, qualitatively, entirely distinct from a smell, could a field of consciousness consist- ing of smells be followed at once by one in which sounds had part? And, as regards the blind coming to see, we must remember not only that the blind have eyes but that they are descended from ancestors who could see. What nascent presentations of sight are thus involved it would be hard to say; and the problem of heredity is one that we have for the present left aside.

The view here taken is (1) that at its first appearance in psychical life a new sensation or so-called elementary presentation is really a partial modification of some pre- existing presentation, which thereby becomes as a whole more complex than it was before ; and (2) that this com- plexity and differentiation of parts never become a plural- ity of discontinuous presentations, having a distinctness and individuality such as the atoms or elementary particles of the physical world are supposed to have. Beginners in psychology, and some who are not beginners, are apt to be led astray by expositions which begin with the sensa- tions of the special senses, as if these furnished us with the type of an elementary presentation. The fact is we never experience a mere sensation of colour, sound, touch, and the like; and what the young student mistakes for such is really a perception, a sensory presentation combined with various sensory and motor presentations and with representations—and having thus a definiteness and com- pleteness only possible to complex presentations. More- over, if we could attend to a pure sensation of sound or colour by itself, there is much to justify the suspicion that even this is complex and not simple, and owes to such complexity its clearly marked specific quality. In certain of our vaguest and most diffused organic sensa- tions, in which we can distinguish little besides variations in intensity and massiveness, there is probably a much nearer approach to the character of the really primitive presentations.

The importance of getting a firm grasp of this concep-

tion of a presentation-continuum as fundamental to the.

whole doctrine of presentations will justify us in ignoring a little longer the details of actual mental development and regarding it first from this more general point of view. In a given sensation, more particularly in our organic sensations, we can distinguish three variations, viz., variations of quality, of intensity, and of what Dr Bain has called massiveness, or, as we will say, extensity. This last characteristic, which everybody knows who knows the difference between the ache of a big bruise and the ache of a little one, between total and partial immersion in a bath, is, as we shall see later on, an essential element in our perception of space. But it is certainly not the whole of it, for in this experience of massive sensation alone it is impossible to find other elements which an analysis of spatial intuition unmistakably yields. Exten- sity and extension, then, are not to be confounded. Now we find, even at our level of mental evolution, that an increase in the intensity of a sensation is apt to entail an increase in its extensity too; this is still more apparent in the case of movements, and especially in the movements of the young. In like manner we observe a greater extent of movement in emotional expression when the intensity of the emotion increases. Even the higher region of ima-

gination is no exception, as is shown by the whirl and confusion of ideas incident to delirium, and, indeed, to all strong excitement. But this “diffusion” or “radiation,” as it has been called, diminishes as we pass from the class of organic sensations to the sensations of the five senses, from movements expressive of feeling to movements de- finitely purposive, and from the tumult of ideas excited by passion to the steadier sequences determined by efforts to think. Increased differentiation seems, then, to be inti- mately connectéd with increased “restriction.” The causal relations of the two must be largely matter of conjecture and cannot be fully discussed here. Probably there may be found certain initial differentiations which for psycho- logy are ultimate facts that it cannot explain. But, such differentiations being given, then it may be safely said that, in accordance with what we have called the principle of subjective selection (see p. 42), attention would be voluntarily concentrated upon some of them and voluntary movements specially connected with these. To such subjectively initiated modifications of the presentation- continuum, moreover, we may

reasonably suppose “re- striction” to be in large measure due. But increased restriction would render further differentiation of the given presentation possible and so the two processes might supplement each other. But, be their interaction what it may, these processes have now proceeded so far that at the level of human consciousness we find it hard to form any tolerably clear conception of a field of con- sciousness in which an intense sensation, no matter what, might diffuse over the whole. Colours, e.g., are with us so distinct from sounds that—except as regards the drain upon attention—there is nothing in the intensest colour to affect the simultaneous presentation of a sound. But at the beginning whatever we regard as the earliest differ- entiation of sound might have been incopresentable with the earliest differentiation of colour, if sufficiently diffused, just as now a field of sight all blue is incopresentable with one all red. Or, if the stimuli appropriate to both were active together, the resulting sensation might have been what we should describe as a blending of the two, as purple is a blending of red and violet. Now, on the other hand, colours and sounds are necessarily so far localized that we are directly aware that the eye is concerned with the one and the ear with the other. This brings to our Inco- notice a fact so ridiculously obvious that it has never been Present deemed worthy of mention, and yet it has undeniably im- abi | portant bearings—the fact, viz., that certain sensations or movements are an absolute bar to the simultaneous pre- sentation of other sensations or movements. We cannot see an orange as at once yellow and green, though we can feel it at once as both smooth and cold ; we cannot open and close the same hand at the same moment, but we can open one hand while closing the other. Such incopresent- ability or contrariety is thus more than mere difference, and occurs only between presentations belonging to the same sense or to the same group of movements. Strictly speaking, it does not always occur even then ; for red and yellow, hot and cold, are presentable together provided they have certain other differences which we shall meet again presently as differences of local sign.

In the preceding paragraphs we have had occasion to Reten- distinguish between the presentation-continuum or whole tenes field of consciousness, as we may for the present call it, and those several modifications within this field which are ordinarily spoken of as presentations, and to which—now that their true character as parts is clear—we too may confine the term. But

it will be well in the next place, before inquiring more closely into their characteristics, to consider for a moment that persistence of preceding modi- fications which the differentiation of the presentation-

ene ~~ *SRE i EE TS*

rem i

rey Ci OL © é ¥ 47

continuum implies. This persistence is best spoken of as retentiveness ; it is sometimes confounded with memory, though this is something much more complex and special. Retentiveness is both a biological and a psychological In memory there is necessarily some contrast of past and present, im rez tentiveness nothing but the persistence of the old. If psychologists have erred in regarding the presentations in consciousness together as a plurality of units, they have erred in like manner concerning the persisting residua of As we see a certain colour or a cer- tain object again and again, we do not go on accumulating images or representations of it, which are somewhere crowded together like shades on the banks of the Styx ; nor is such colour, or whatever it be, the same at the hundredth time of presentation as at tha first, as the There is no such constancy or uniformity in mind. Obvious as this must appear when we pause to think of it, yet the explanations of perception most in vogue seem wholly to

fact; memory is exclusively the latter.

such presentations.

hundredth impression of a seal on wax would be.

ignore it. Such explanations are far too mechanical and,

So to say, atomistic; but we must fall back upon the

unity and continuity of our presentation-continuum if we are to get a better. minutes we take half a dozen glances at a strange and curious flower. We have not as many complex presenta- tions which we might symbolize as ff,

Ly, J. But rather, at first only the general outline is noted, next the disposi- tion of petals, stamens, &c., then the attachment of the anthers, form of the ovary, and so on ; that is to say, symbolizing the whole flower as [p' (a b) 8' (c d) o' (fg) We first apprehend say [p'.. s'. . o'], then [p' (a 6) 8'. . 0/1, Oape@..)s' (c..)o' (Ff. .)], and so forth. It is because the earlier apprehensions persist that the later are an advance upon them and an addition to them. There is nothing in this process properly answering to the repro- duction and association of ideas: in the last and complete apprehension as much as in the first vague and inchoate one the flower is there as a primary presentation. There is a limit, of course, to such a procedure, but the instance taken, we may safely say, is not such as to exceed the bounds of a simultaneous field of consciousness. Now the question is: Ought we not to assume that such increase of differentiation through the persistence of preceding differentiations holds of the contents of consciousness as a whole? Here, again, we shall find limitations,— limitations too of great practical importance; for, if presentations did not pale as well as persist, and if the simpler presentations admitted of indefinite differentiation, mental advance— unless the field of consciousness, ¢.¢., the number of pre- Sentations to which we could attend together, increased without limit—would be impossible. But, allowing all this, it is still probably the more correct and fundamental view to suppose that, in those circumstances in which we now have a sensation of, say, red or sweet, there was in the primitive consciousness nothing but a vague modification, Which persisted; and that ona repetition of the circum- Stances this persisting modification was again further Inodified. The whole field of consciousness would thus, like a continually growing picture, increase indefinitely in complexity of pattern, the earlier presentations not disap- pearing, like the waves of yesterday in the calm of to-day, but rather lasting on, like old scars that show beneath new ones,

There is yet one more topic of a general kind calling for attention before we turn to the consideration of parti- cular presentations—the hypothesis of unconscious mental Modifications, as it has been unfortunately termed,— the hypothesis of subconsciousness, as we may style it to avoid this contradiction in terms. Tt is a fact easily

Suppose that in the course of a few

*verified, that we do not distinguish or attend separately to presentations of less than a certain assignable intensity. On attaining this intensity presentations are said to pass over the threshold of consciousness, to use Herbart's now classic phrase. What are we to say of them before they have attained it? * After they have attained it, any further increase in their intensity is certainly gradual; are we then to suppose that before this their intensity changed instantly from zero to a finite quantity, and not rather that there was also a subliminal Stage where too it only changed continuously? The latter alternative constitutes the hypothesis of subconsciousness. According to this hypothesis, a presentation does not cease to be so long as it has any intensity, no matter how little. We can directly observe that an increase in the intensity of many complex presentations brings to light details and differences before imperceptible ; since these details are themselves presenta- tions, they have been brought by this increase from the subconscious stage into the field' of consciousness. Simi- larly, presentations not separately distinguishable, because of too close a proximity in time, become distinguishable when the interval between them is such as to allow of a Separate concentration of attention upon each. Again, we find that presentations "revived" or re-presented after their disappearance from the field of consciousness appear fainter and less distinct the longer the time that has elapsed between their exits and their re-entrances. N obody hesi- tates to regard such obliviscence as a psychological fact ; why, then, should we hesitate to suppose that presenta- tions, even when no longer intense enough directly to influence attention, continue to be presented, though with ever lessening intensity ?*

On the whole we seein justified in assuming three grades of consciousness thus widely understood—(1) a centre or focus of consciousness within (2) a wider field, any part of which may at once become the focus, Just as in sight, surrounding the limited area of distinct vision on which the visual axes are directed, there is a wider region of indirect vision to any part of which those axes may be turned either voluntarily or by a reflex set up by the part itself, as happens, ¢.y., with moving objects quite on the margin of vision. But in describing (3) subconscious- ness as the third grade, this simile, due to Wundt, more or less forsakes us. Presentations in

subconsciousness have not the power to divert attention, nor can we voluntarily concentrate attention upon theni. Before either can happen the subconscious presentations must cross the threshold of consciousness, and so cease to be subconscious ; and this, of course, is far from being always possible. Now in the case of sight an object may fail to catch the eye, either because, though within the field of sight, it is too far away to make a distinct impression or because it is outside the field altogether. But we cannot conveniently interpret "threshold of consciousness" in keeping with the latter alternative; mere accretion from without is a conception as alien to psychology as it is to biology. We must make the best we can of a totum objectivum differen- tiated within itself, and so are confined to the first alternative. Our threshold must be compared to the sur- face of a lake and subconsciousness to the depths beneath it, and all the current terminology of presentations rising and sinking iniplies this or some similar figure,

This hypothesis of subconsciousness has been Strangely mis- understood, and it would be hard to say at whose hands it has suffered most, those of its exponents or those of its opponents. In the main it is nothing more than the application to the facts of presentation of the law of continuity, its introduction into psycho- logy being due to Leibnitz, who first formulated that law. © Half the difficulties in the way of its acceptance are due to the manifold ambiguities of the word consciousness. With Leibnitz consciousness was not coextensive with all psychical life, but only with certain

AS PSY C BW Lo7C ea

higher phases! of it. Of late, however, the tendency has been to make consciousness cover all stages of mental devclopment and all grades of presentation, so that a prescntation of which there is no consciousness resolves itself into the manifest contradiction of an unpresented presentation—a contradiction not involved in Leibnitz's "unapperceived pereeption." Moreover, the active form of the word "eonscious" almost unavoidably suggests that an "uncon- scious mental modification" must be one in which that subjective activity, variously called consciousness, attention, or thinking, has no part. But such is not the meaning intended when it is said, for example, that a soldier in battle 1s often unconscious of

his wounds or a scholar uuconscious at any one time of most of the knowledge "hidden in the obscure recesses of his mind." There would be no point in saying a subject is not conscious of objects that are not presented at all; but to say that what is presented lacks the intensity requisite in the given distribution of attention to change that distribution appreciably is pertinent enough. Sub- eonscious presentations may tell on conscious life—as sunshine or mist tells on a landscape or the underlying writing on a palimpsest —although lacking either the differences of intensity or the indivi- dual distinctness requisite to make them definite features. Even if there were no facts to warrant this conception of a subliminal presentation of impressions and ideas it might still claiin an @ priort justification. For to assume that there ean be no presentations save such as pertain to the complete and perfect consciousness of a human being is as arbitrary and as improbable as it would be to suppose—in the absence of evidence to the contrary—that there was no vision or audition save such as is mediated by human cyes and ears. Psychological magnification is not more absurd than physical, although the processes in the two cases must be materially different ; but of course in no case is magnification possible with- out limit. 'The point is that, while we cannot fix the limit at which the subconscious becomes the absolutely unconscious, it is only reasonable to expect beforehand that this limit is not just where our powers of discrimination cease.

Over and above hindrances to its acceptance which may be set down to the paradoxical and inaccurate use of the word uncon- sciousness, there are two material difficulties which prevent this hypothesis from finding favour. First, the prevailingly objective implications of language are apt to make us assume that, asa tree remains the same thing whether it is in the foreground of a land- scape or is lost in the grey distance, so a presentation must be a something which is in itself the same whether above the threshold of consciousness or below, if it exist, that is, in this lower degree at all. But it must be remembercd that we are not now dealing with physical things but with presentations, and that to these the Berkeleyan dictum applies that their esse is peretpi, provided, of course, we give to percipi the wide meaning now assigned to consciousness. 'The qualitative differences of all presentations and the distinctness of structure of such as are complex both diminish with a diminution of intensity. In this sense much is latent or

“involved” in presentations lying below the threshold of con- sciousness that becomes patent or “evolved” as they rise above it. But, on the other hand, the hypothesis of subconsciousness does not cominit us to the assumption that all presentations are by their very nature imperishable: while many modifications of con- sciousness sink only into-obliviscence, many, we may well suppose, lapse into complete oblivion and from that there is no recall. Secondly, to any one addieted to the atomistic view of presenta- tions just now referred to it may well seem incredible that all the incidents of a long lifetime and all the items of knowledge of a well-stored mind that may possibly recur— the infinitely greater part of our spiritual treasures,” as Hamilton says—can be in any sense present continuously. The brunt of such an objection is effectually met by the fact that the same presentation may figure in very various connexions, as may the same letter, for example, in many words, the same word in many sentences. We cannot measure the literature of a language by its vocabulary, nor may we equate the extent of our spiritual treasures as suceessively pee with the psychical apparatus, so to say, into which they resolve.”*

The attempt has more than once been made to avoid the diffi- culties besetting subconsciousness by falling back on the concep- tions of faculties, capacities, or dispositions. Stored-up knowledge, says J. S. Mill, “‘is not a mental state but a capability of being put into a mental state” ; similarly of the cases which Hamilton records, “in whieh the extinct memory [2] of whole languages was suddenly restored,” he says, ‘it is not the mental impressions that are latent

1 The following brief passage from his Principes de la Nature et de la Grace (@ 4) shows his meaning :~~—“ I] est bon de faire distinction entre la Perception, qui est l’état intérieur de la Monade representant les choses externes, et lAp~~ perception, qui est la Conscience, ou la connoissance réflexive de cet état intérieur, laquelle n’est point donnée 4 toutes les Ames, nt toujours dla méme dme. Et c’est faute de cette distinction que les Cartésiens ont manqué, en comptant pour rien les perceptions dont on ne s’appercoit pas, comme le peuple compte pour rien les corps insensibles” (Op. Phil., Erdmann’s ed., ii. p. 715).

_ 2 Much light may be thrown on this matter and on many others by such inquiries as those undertaken by Mr Francis Galton, and described in his Inquiries into Human Faculty, pp. 182-203.

its unwonted glow reveals. all men, and in psychology of all subjects, should have supposed such merely formal conveniences as these conceptions of faculties and powers could ever dispense us from further inquiry. be urged in Mill's defence that he has investigated further and concludes that the only distinct meaning he can attach to uncon- scious mental modification is that of unconscious modification of the nerves—a modification of the nerves, that is to say, without any psychical accompaniment. But, while we can frequently under- stand a psychical fact better if we can understand its physical counterpart, a physiological explanation can never take the place of a psychological explanation. nervous modifications which have no psychical concomitants, then so far there is nothing psychological to explain ; but, if there really is anything calling for psychological explanation—and this Mill does not deny—then physical accompaniments must admit of psychical interpretation if they are to be of any avail, And in

but the power of reproducing them." But surely the capability of being put into a mental state is itself a mental state and something actual, and is, moreover, a different something when the state to be reproduced is different. E exerted? Even where the capability cannot be consciously exerted, must there not still! be something actual to justify the phrase latent

ower ? beaton but not for the contents of the " extinct memories " which

If not, how is such eapability ever

The "exaltation" of dclirium may account for the intensi-

It seems extraordinary that Mill of

It might

If all we have to deal with are

fact, although Mill professes to recognize only unconscious modi-

fications of nerves, he finds a psychological meaning for these by

means of his "mental chemistry,"—a doctrine which has done its

work and which we need not here discuss.

The exposition of subconseiousness given by Wundt is in the main an advance on that of Mill and calls for brief notice. Pre- sentations, says Wundt,? are not substances but functions, whose physiological counterparts in like manner are functional activities, viz., of certain arrangements of nerve-cells. Consciousness of the presentation and the nervous activity cease together, but the

latter leaves behind it a molecular modification of thc nervous –

structure which becomes more and more permanent with exercise, and is such as to facilitate the recurrence of the same functional activity. A more precise account of these after-effects of exercise is for the present unattainable; nevertheless Wundt regards it as obvious that they are no more to be compared to the activity to whieh they predispose than the molecular arrangement of chlorine and nitrogen in nitric chloride is to be compared to the explosive decomposition that ensues if the chloride is slightly disturbed. Mutatis mutandis, on the psychological side the only actual pre- sentations are those which we are conscious of as such; but pre-sentations that vanish out of consciousness leave behind psychical dispositions tending to renew them. 'The essential difference is that, whereas we may some day know the nature of the physical disposition, that of the psychical disposition must of necessity be for ever unknown, for the threshold of consciousness is also the limit of internal experience. The theory thus briefly summarized seems in some respects arbitrary, in some respects ambiguous. It is questionable, for instance, whether the extremely meagre in- formation that physiologists at present possess at all compels us to assume that the " physical disposition" of Wundt cannot con- sist in a continuous but much fainter discharge of function. At all events it is quite beside the mark to urge, as he does, that the effect of training a group of muscles is not shown in the persist- ence of slight movements during

intervals of apparent rest.4 The absence of molar motions is no evidence of the absence of molecular motions. And it is certain that psychologically we can be conscious of the idea of a movement without the movement actually ensuing, yet only in such wise that the idea is more apt to pass over into action the intenser it is, and often actually passes over in spite of us. Surely there must be some functional activity answering to this conscious presentation, and if this amount of activity is possible without movement why may not a much less amount be conceived possible too? Again, what meaning can possibly be attached to a psychical disposition which is the counterpart, not of physical changes, but of an arrangement of molecules? Compared with such an inconceivable unknown, the perfectly conceivable hypothesis of infinitesimal presentations so faint as to elude discrimination is every way preferable. In fact, if conceivability is to count for any- thing, we have, according to Wundt, no choice, for " we can never think of a presentation that has disappeared from consciousness except as retaining the properties it had when in consciousness." None the less he holds it to be an error 'to apply to presentations themselves a style of conception that has resulted from our being of necessity confined to consciousness." Verily, this is phenomenalism with a vengeance, as if presentations themselves were not also confined to consciousness !

3 Phystologische Psychologie, p. 203 sq.

4 J. S. Mill adopts substantially the same line of argument: "I have the power to walk across the room, though I am sitting in my chair ; but we should hardly call this power a latent act of walking" (Examination of Sir W.

Hamilton's Philosophy, 3d ed., p. 329).

Rela- tivity.

PSYCHOLOGY

This will be the most convenient place to take note of certain psychological doctrines which, though differing in some material respects, are usually included under the term Law of Relativity.

1. Hobbes's Ldem semper sentire et non sentire ad idem recidunt is often cited as one of the first formulations of this law ; and if we take it to apply to the whole field of con- sciousness it becomes at once true and trite: a field of consciousness unaltered either by change of impression or of ideas would certainly be a blank and a contradiction. Understood in this sense the Law of Relativity amounts to what Hamilton called the Law of Variety (Reid's Works, p. 932). But, though consciousness involves change, it is still possible that particular presentations in the field of consciousness may continue unchanged indefinitely. When it is said that "a constant impression is the same as a blank," what is meant turns out to be something not psychological at all, as, e.g., our insensibility to the motion of the earth or to the pressure of the air—cases in which there is obviously no presentation, nor even any evidence of nervous change. Or else this paradox proves to be but an awkward way of expressing what we may call accommodation, whether physiological or psychological. Thus the skin soon adapts itself to certain seasonal altera- tions of temperature, so that heat or cold ceases to be felt: the sensation ceases because the nervous change, its proximate physical counterpart, has ceased. Again, there is what James Mill calls "an acquired incapacity of atten- tion," such that a constant noise, for exainple, in which we have no interest is soon inaudible. As attention moves away from a presentation its intensity diminishes, and when the presentation is below the threshold of conscious- ness its intensity is then subliminal, whatever that of the physical stimulus may be. In such a case of psychological accommodation we should expect also to find on the phy- slological side some form of central reflexion or isolation more or less complete. Asa rule, no doubt, impressions do not continue constant for more than a very short time P still there are sad instances enough in the history of disease, bodily and mental, to show that such a thing can quite well happen, and that such constant impressions (and "fixed ideas," which are in effect tantamount to them), instead of becoming blanks, may dominate the entire consciousness, colouring or bewildering everything.

2. From the fact that the field of consciousness is con- tinually changing it has been supposed to follow, not only that a constant presentation is impossible, but as a further consequence that every presentation is essentially nothing but a transition or difference. "All feeling," says Dr Bain, the leading exponent of this view, "is two-sided. ... We may attend

more to one member of the couple than to the other. . . . We are more conscious of heat when passing to a higher temperature, and of cold when passing to a lower. The state we have passed to is our explocit con- sciousness, the state we have passed from is our umplocet consciousness." But the transition need not be from heat to cold, or vice versa: it can equally well take place from aneutral state, which is indeed the normal state, of neither heat nor cold ; a new-born mammal, e.g., must experience cold, having never experienced heat. Again, suppose a sailor becalmed, gazing for a whole morning upon a stretch of sea and sky, what sensations are implicit here? Shall Wwe say yellow as the greatest contrast to blue, or darkness as the contrary of light, or both? What, again, is the Impheit consciousness when the explicit is sweet; is it bitter or sour, and from what is the transition in such a case 4

It is difficult to avoid suspecting a certain confusion here between the transition of attention from one presentation to another and the qualitative differences among presenta-

tions themselves. It is strange that the psychologist who has laid such stress on neutral states of surprise as being akin to feeling, and so distinct from special presentations, should in any way confound the two. The mistake, if mistake indeed it be, is perhaps accounted for by the fact that Dr Bain, in common with the rest of his school, nowhere dis- tinguishes between attention and the presentations that are attended to. To be conscious or mentally alive we must have a succession of shocks or surprises, new objects calling off attention from old ones; but, over and above these movements of attention from presentation to presentation, do we find that each presentation is also itself but a transi- tion or difference? 'We do not know any one thing of itself but only the difference between it and another thing," says Dr Bain. But it is plain we cannot speak of con- trast or difference between two states or things as a contrast or difference if the states or things are not themselves presented, else the so-called contrast or difference would itself be a single presentation, and its supposed "relativity" but an inference. Difference is not more necessary to the presentation of two objects than two objects to the presenta- tion of

difference. And, what is more, a difference between presentations is not at all the same thing as the presenta- tion of that difference. The former must precede the latter ; the latter, which requires active comparison, need not follow. There is an ambiguity in the words " know," "knowledge," which Dr Bain seems not to have considered : "to know" may mean either to perceive or appreliend, or it may mean to understand or comprehend.! Knowledge in the first sense is only what we shall have presently to dis- cuss as the recognition or assimilation of an impression (see below, p. 53); knowledge in the latter sense is the result of intellectual comparison and is embodied in a proposition. Thus a blind man who cannot know light in the first sense can know about light in the second if he studies a treatise on optics. Now in simple perception or recognition we cannot with any exactness say that two things are per- ceived : straight is a thing, 7.c., a definite object presented ; not so not-straight, which may be qualitatively obscure or intensively feeble to any degree. Only when we rise to intellectual knowledge is it true to say, "No one could understand the meaning of a straight line without being shown a line not straight, a bent or crooked line."2 Two distinct presentations are necessary to the comparison that is here implied ; but we cannot begin with such definitional differentiation : we must first recognize our objects before we can compare them. We need, then, to distinguish be- tween the comparativity of intellectual knowledge, which we must admit—for it rests at bottom on a purely ana- lytical proposition—and the "differential theory of pre- sentations," which, however plausible at first sight, must be wrong somewhere since it commits us to absurdities. Thus, if we cannot have a presentation X but only the presentation of the difference between Y and Z, it would seem that in like manner we cannot have the presentation of Y or Z, nor therefore of their difference X, till we have had the presentation of A and B say, which differ by Y, and of C' and D, which we may suppose differ by Z. The lurking error in this doctrine, that all presentations are but differences, may perhaps emerge if we examine more closely what may be meant by difference. We may speak of (a) differences in intensity between sensations supposed

1 Other languages give more prominence to this distinction ; compare yravar and eidévar, noscere and scire, kennen and wissen, connattre and savoir. On this subject there are some acute remarks in a little- known book,

the Hxploratio Philosophica, of Professor J. Grote. Hobbes too was well awake to this difference, as, e.g., when he says, '"'There are two kinds of knowledge; the one, sense or knowledge original and remembrance of the same; the other, science or know- ledge of the truth of propositions, derived from understanding."

- *Bain, Logic, vol. i. p. 3.*

regards the qualities of sensations the outlook of the rela- tivists is, if anything, worse. In what is called Meyer's experiment, ¢.g. (described under Eyx, vol. vill. p. 825), what appears greenish on a red ground will appear of an orange tint on a ground of blue; but this contrast is only possible within certain very narrow limits. In fact, the phenomena of colour-contrast, so far from proving, dis- tinctly disprove that we apprehend the qualities of light only according to their mutual relation. In the case of tones it is very questionable whether such contrasts exist at all. Summing up on the particular doctrine of relativity of which Wundt is the most distinguished adherent, the truth seems to be that, in some cases where two presenta- tions whose difference is itself presentable occur in close connexion, this difference—as we indirectly learn—exerts a certain bias on the assimilation or identification of one or both of the presentations. There is no "unalterably fixed unit" certainly, but, on the other hand, "the mutual

to be qualitatively identical, or of (6) differences in quality in the same continuum or class of presentations, or of (¢) differences between sensations of different classes or con- tinua. Now, as regards (a) and (6), it will be found that the difference between two intensities of the same quality, or between two qualities of the same continuum, may be itself a distinct presentation. But nothing of this kind holds of ©.1 In passing from a load of 10 ib to one of 20 tb, or from the sound of a note to that of its octave, it is possible to make the change continuously, and to esti- mate it as one might the distance between two places on the same road. But in passing from the

scent of a rose to the sound of a gong or a sting from a bee we have no such means of bringing the two into relation—scarcely more than we might have of measuring the length of a journey made partly on the common earth and partly through the looking-glass. In ©, then, we have only a

change, a difference of presentation, but not a presentation of difference; and we only have more than this in (a) or (b) provided the selected presentations occur together. Tf red follows green we may be aware of a greater differ- ence than we could if red followed orange; and we should ordinarily call a 10-Ib load heavy after one of 5 ib and light after one of 20 tb. Facts like these it is which make the differential theory of presentations plausible.

3. On the strength of such facts Wundt has formulated a law of relativity, free, apparently, from the objections just urged against Dr Bain's doctrine, which runs thus: Our sensations afford no absolute but only a relative measure of external impressions. The intensities of stimuli, the pitch of tones, the qualities of light, we apprehend (empfinden) in general only according to their mutual rela- tion, not according to any unalterably fixed unit given along with or before the impression itself." ? We are not now concerned with so much of this statement as relates to the physical antecedents of sensation ; but that what is of psychological account in it requires very substantial qualification is evident at once from a single consideration, viz., that if true this law would make it quite immaterial what the impressions themselves were: provided the rela- tion continued the same, the sensation would be the same too, just as the ratio of 2 to 1 is the same whether our unit be miles or millimétres. In the case of intensities, e.g., there is a minimum sensibile and a maximum sensibile. The existence of such extremes is alone sufficient to turn the flank of the thoroughgoing relativists ; but there are instances enough of intermediate intensities that are directly recognized. A letter-sorter, for example, who identifies an ounce or two ounces with remarkable exact- ness identifies each for itself and not the first as half the second; of an ounce and a half or of three ounces he may have a comparatively vague idea. And so generally within certain limits of error, indirectly ascertained, we can identify intensities, each for itself, neither referring to a common standard nor to one that varies from time to time —to any intensity, that is to say, that chances to be simul-

taneously presented; just as an enlisting sergeant will recognize a man fit for the Guards without a yard measure and whether the man's comrades are tall or short. Of course such identification is only possible through the re- production of past inrpressions, but then such reproduction itself is only possible because the several impressions con- cerned have all along had a certain independence of related

As

impressions, and a certain identity among themselves.

1 Common language seems to recognize some connexion even here, or we should not speak of harsh tastes and harsh sounds, or of dull sounds and dull colours, and so forth. All this is, however, super- added to the sensation, probably on the ground of similarities in the accompanying organic sensations.

2 Physiologische Psychologie, Ist ed., p. 421; the doctrine re- appears in the 2d ed., but no equally general statement of it is given.

*relations of impressions" are not everything.**

Sensation and Movement. One of the first questions to arise concerning our simplest

presentations or sensations is to account for their differ- ences of quality. In some respects it may well seem an idle question, for at some stage or other we must acknow- ledge final or irresolvable differences. be frequently shown to be due to variety in the number,*

Still, differences can

arrangement, and intensity of parts severally the same,— these several parts being either simultaneously presented or succeeding each other with varying intervals. It is a sound scientific instinct which has led writers like G. H. Lewes and Mr Spencer to look out for evidence of some simple primordial presentation—the psychical counterpart, they supposed, of a

single nerve-shock or neural tremor— out of which by various grouping existing sensations have

‘arisen. It must, however, be admitted that but little of

such evidence is at present forthcoming ; and further, if we look at the question fora moment from the physiological standpoint which these writers are too apt to affect, what we find seems on the whole to make against this assump- tion. Protoplasm in its simplest state is readily irritated either by light, heat, electricity, or mechanical shock. ‘Detl the physiological characteristics of these various stimuli are better known, it is fruitless to speculate as to the nature of primitive sensation. But we have certainly no warrant for supposing that any existing class of sensations is entitled to rank as original. Touch, as we experience it now, is probably quite as complex as any of our special sensations. If a supposition must be ventured at all, it is perhaps most in keeping with what we know to suppose that the sensations answering to the five senses in their earliest form were only slightly differing variations of the more or less massive organic sensation which constituted the primitive presentation-continuum. We may suppose, in other words, that at the outset these sensations corre- sponded more completely with what we might call the general physiological action of light, heat, &c., as distinct from the action of these stimulants on specially differen- tiated end-organs. But, short of resolving such sensations into combinations of one primordial modification of con- sciousness, if we could conceive such, there are many interesting facts which point clearly to a complexity that we can seldom directly detect. Many of our supposed sensations of taste, e.g., are complicated with sensations of

8 Those who, like Helmholtz, explain the phenomena of contrast and the like as illusions of judgment, must class them as cases of comparativity ; those who, like Hering, explain them physiologically, would see in them nothing but physiological adaptation.

4 For a detailed account of the various sensations and perceptions pertaining to the several senses the reader is referred to the articles Eve, Ear, Toucu, Taste, SMELL, &c.

Quali- tative | differ- ences.

— Ln LQ,

Poe HO 1 0 G Y

touch and smell: thus the pungency of pepper and the dryness of wine are tactual sensations, and their spicy flavours are really smells. How largely smells mingle with what we ordinarily take to be simply tastes is best brought home to us by a severe cold in the head, as this temporarily prevents the access of exhalations to the olfac- tory surfaces. The difference between the smooth feel of a polished surface and the roughness of one that is unpolished, though to direct introspection an irresolvable difference of quality, is probably due to the fact that several nerve-terminations are excited in each case: where the sensation is one of smoothness all are stimulated equally ; where it is one of roughness the ridges compress the nerve-ends more, and the hollows compress them less, than the level parts do. The most striking instance in point, however, is furnished by musical timbre (see Ear, vol. vii. p. 593).

We find other evidence of the complexity of our existing sensations in the variations in quality that accompany variations in intensity, extensity, and duration. With the exception of spectral red all colours give place, sooner or later, to a mere colourless grey as the intensity of the light diminishes, and all in like manner become indis- tinguishably white after a certain increase of intensity. A longer time is also in most cases necessary to produce a sensation of colour than to produce a sensation merely of light or brightness: the solar spectrum seen for a moment appears not of seven colours but of two only— faintly red towards the left side and blue towards the right. Very small objects, again, such as coloured specks on a white ground, though still distinetly seen, appear as colour- less if of less than a certain size, the relation between their intensity and extensity being such that within certain limits the brighter they are the smaller they may be with- out losing colour, and the larger they are the fainter in like manner. Similar facts are observable in the case of other senses, so that generally we seem justified in regard- ing what we now distinguish as a sensation as probably com- plicated in several respects. In other words, if psychical magnification were possible, we might be directly aware that sensations which we now

suppose to be both single and simple were both compound and complex—that they

continuous variations in quality, as in looking at the rain- bow, for example. Still it is not to be supposed that colours or notes are necessarily presented as continua : that they are such is matter of after-observation.

The groups of sensations known as touches, smells, tastes, on the other hand, do not constitute continua : bitter tastes, for instance, will not shade off into acid or sweet tastes, except, of course, through a gradual diminution of inten- sity rendering the one quality subliminal followed by a gradual increase from zero in the intensity of the other. This want of continuity might be explained if there were grounds for regarding these groups as more complex than the rest,—in so far as tertiary colours or vowel-sounds, say, are complex and comparatively discontinuous. But it might equally well be argued that they are simpler than the rest and, as simple and different, are necessarily dis- parate, while the continuity of colours or tones is due to a gradual change of components.

Our motor presentations contrast with the sensory by their want of striking qualitative differences, We may divide them into two groups, (a) motor presentations proper and (6) auxilio-motor presentations. The former answer to our "feelings of muscular effort " or " feelings of innerva- tion." The latter are those presentations due to the strain- ing of tendons, stretching and flexing of the skin, and the like, by which the healthy man knows that his efforts to move are followed by movement, and so knows the position of his body and limbs. It is owing to the absence of these presentations that the anesthetic patient cannot directly tell whether his efforts are effectual or not, nor in what position his limbs have been placed by movements from without. Thus under normal circumstances motor pre- sentations are always accompanied by auxilio-motor ; but in disease and in passive movements they are separated and their distinctness thus made manifest, Originally we may suppose auxilio-motor objects to form one imper- fectly differentiated continuum, but now, as with sensa- tions, movements have become a collection of special continua, viz., the groups of movements possible to each limb and certain combinations of these.

Perception.

In treating apart of the differentiation of our sensory Mental and motor continua, as resulting merely in a number of synthesis distinguishable sensations and movements, we have been ° inte-

° : BRO eration. compelled by the exigencies of exposition to leave out of

consisted, that is, of two or more sensational elements or changes, alike or different in quality, of uniform or variable intensity, and occurring either simultaneously or in regular or irregular succession.

Quali- It is interesting to note that all possible sensations of sight another process which really advances part passu ee colour, of tone, and of temperature constitute as many | with this differentiation, viz., the integration or synthesis groups of qualitative continua. By continuum is here | of these proximately elementary presentations into those

_ tinuity,

meant a series of presentations changing gradually in quality, z.e., so that any two differ less the more they approximate in the series. We may represent this rela- tion among presentations spatially, so long as the differences do not exceed three. In this way our normal colour-sensa- tions have been compared to a sphere, in which (a) the maximum of luminosity is at one pole and the minimum at the other ; (b) the series of colours proper (red to violet and through purple back to red), constituting a closed line, are placed round the equator or in zones parallel to it, according to shade; and © the amount of saturation (or absence of white) for any given zone of illumination in- creases with distance from the axis. The several musical tones, again, have been compared to an ascending spiral, a given tone and its octaves lying in the same perpen- dicular. Temperatures similarly might be represented as Tanging in opposite directions, 2.¢., through heat or through cold, between a zero of no sensation and the organic sensa- Hons that accompany the destructive action of heat and cold alike. As we frequently experience a continuous Tange of intensity of varying amount, so we may experience

complex presentations which are called perceptions, in- tuitions, sensori-motor reactions, and the like. It is, of course, not to be supposed that in the evolution of mind any creature attained to such variety of distinct sensations and movements as a human being possesses without making even the first step towards building up this material into the most rudimentary knowledge and action. ‘ On the contrary, there is every reason to think, as has been said already incidentally, that further differentiation was helped by previous integration, that perception prepared the way for distincter sensations, and purposive action for more various movements. This process of synthesis, which ig in the truest sense a psychical process, deserves some general consideration before we proceed to the several complexes that result from it. Most complexes, certainly the most important, are consequences of that principle of subjective selection whereby interesting sensations lead through the intervention of feeling to movements ; and the movements that turn out to subserve such interest come to have a share in it. In this way—which we need not stay to examine more closely now—it happens that, in the

alternation of sensory and motor phases which is common to all psychical life, a certain sensation, comparatively in- tense, and a certain movement, definite enough to control that sensation, engage attention in immediate succession, to the more or less complete exclusion from attention of the other less intense sensations and more diffused movements that accompany them. Apart from this intervention of controlling movements, the presentation-continuum, how- ever much differentiated, would be for all purposes of know- ledge little better than the disconnected manifold for which Kant took it. At the same time it is to be remembered that the subject obtains command of particular movements out of all the mass involved in emotional expression only because such movements prove on occurrence adapted to control certain sensations. Before experience, and apart from heredity, there seems not only no scientific warrant for assuming any sort of practical prescience but also none for the hypothesis of a prior forms of

knowledge. Of a pre-established harmony between the active and passive phases of consciousness we need none, or—it may be safer to say—at least indefinitely little. A sentient creature moves first of all because it feels, not because it intends. A long process, in which natural selection probably played the chief part at the outset-—subjective selection becoming more prominent as the process advanced—must have been necessary to secure as much purposive movement as even a lobster displays. It seems impossible to except from this process the movements of the special sense-organs which are essential to our perception of external things. Here too subjective interest will explain, so far as psycho- logical explanation is possible, those syntheses of motor and sensory presentations which we call spatial perceptions and intuitions of material things. For example, some of the earliest lessons of this kind seem to be acquired, as we may presently see, in the process of exploring the body by means of the limbs,—a process for which grounds in sub- jective interest can obviously never be wanting.

The mere process of "association ""—Wwhereby we may suppose the synthesis of presentations to be effected so that presentations originally in no way connected tend to move in consciousness together—will confront us with its own problems later on. We need for the present only to bear in mind that the conjunction or continuity upon which the association primarily depends is one determined by the movements of attention, which movements in turn depend very largely upon the pleasure or pain that pre- sentations occasion. To some extent, however, there is no doubt that attention may pass non-voluntarily from one indifferent presentation to another, each being sufficiently intense to give what has been called a "shock of surprise," but not so intense as to awaken feeling to move for their de- tention or dismissal. But throughout the process of mental development, where we are concerned with what is new, the range of such indifference is probably small : indifferent presentations there will be, but that does not matter while there are others that are interesting to take the lead.

Perception as a psychological term has received various, though related, meanings for different writers. It is sometimes used for the recognition of a sensation or move- ment as distinct from its mere presentation, and thus is said to imply the more or less definite revival of certain residua or re-presentations of past experience which re- sembled the present. More

frequently it is used as the equivalent of what has been otherwise called the " localiza- tion and projection " of sensations,—that is to say, a sensa- tion presented either as an affection of some part of our own body regarded as extended or as a state of some foreign body beyond it. According to the former usage, strictly taken, there might be perception without any spatial pre- sentation at all: a sensation that had been attended to a

we had a precise name for each.

few times might be perceived as familiar. Such percept being a " presentative ~~*representative " complex, and wholly sensory, we might symbolize it, details apart, as S+s, using S for the present sensation, and s for a former S re*~~ *presented. According to the latter usage, an entirely new sensation, provided it were complicated with motor experi-*

ences in the way required for its localization or projection, would become a perception. Such a perception might be roughly symbolized as X + (Jf-+m), or as X+msimply, M standing for actual movements, as in ocular adjustment, which in some cases might be only former movements re- presented or m. probably invariably includes both cases : impressions which we recognize we also localize or project, and impressions which are localized or projected are never entirely new,— they are, at least, perceived as sounds or colours or aches, dc. It will, however, frequently happen that we are speci- ally concerned with only one side of the whole process, as is the case with a tea-taster or a colour-mixer on the one hand, or, on the other, with the patient who is perplexed to decide whether what he sees and hears is "' subjective," or whether it is "real." to discriminate the quality of an impression than to fix it spatially; indeed this latter process was taken for

But as a matter of fact actual perception

Usually we have more trouble

granted by most psychologists till recently. But, however little the two sides are actually separated, it is important to mark their logical distinctness, and it would be well if In any other science save psychology such names would be at once forthcoming ;

but it seems the fate of this science to be restricted in its

terminology to the ill-defined and well-worn currency of conimon speech, with which every psychologist feels at liberty to do what is right in his own eyes, at least within the wide range which a loose connotation allows. If there were any hope of their general acceptance we might pro- pose to call the first-mentioned process the assimilation or recognition of an impression, and might apply the term localization to its spatial fixation, without distinguishing between the body and space beyond,—a matter of the less importance as projection hardly enters into primitive spatial experience. But there is still a distinction called for: perception as we now know it involves not only localization, or 'spatial reference," as it is not very happily termed, but "objective reference" as well, We may perceive sound or light without any presentation of that which sounds or shines; but none the less we do not regard such sound or light as merely the object of our attention, as having only immanent existence, but as the quality or change or state of a thing, an object distinct not only from the subject attending but from all presentations whatever to which it attends. Here again the actual separation is impossible, because this factor in perception has been so intertwined throughout our mental develop- ment with the other two. Still a careful psychological ana- lysis will show that such "reification," as we might almost call it, has depended on special circumstances, which we can at any rate conceive absent. These special circumstances are briefly the constant conjunctions and successions of impressions, for which psychology can give no reason, and the constant movements to which they prompt. Thus we receive together, ¢.g., those impressions we' now recognize as severally the scent, colour, and "feel" of the rose we pluck and handle. We might call each a " percept," and the whole a "complex percept." But there is more in such a complex than a sum of partial percepts ; there is the apprehension or intuition of the rose asa thing having this scent, colour, and texture. We have, then, under perception to consider (i.) the assimilation and (ii.) the localization of impressions, and (iii.) the intuition of things.

The range of the terms assimilation or recognition of

Pe Y CHO LOG Y

Assimi- impressions is wide: between the simplest mental process lation of they may be supposed to denote and the most complex unpre' there is a great difference. The penguin that watched "unmoved the first landing of man upon its lonely rock becomes as wild and wary as more civilized fowl after two or three visits from its molester: it then recognizes that featherless biped. His friends at home also recognize him though altered by years of peril and exposure. In the latter case some trick of his voice or manner, some " strik- ing" feature, calls up and sustains a crowd of memories of the traveller in the past,—events leading on to the present scene. The two recognitions are widely different, and it is from states of mind more like the latter than the former that psychologists have usually drawn their descrip- tion of perception. At the outset, they say, we have a primary presentation or impression P, and after sundry repetitions there remains a mass or a series of P residua, P\P2P3 + – - ; perception ensues when, sooner or later, P,, "calls up " and associates itself with these re-presentations or ideas. Much of our later perception, and especially when we are at all interested, awakens, no doubt, both distinct memories and distinct expectations; but, since these imply previous perceptions, it is obvious that the earliest form of recognition, or, as we might better call it, assimilation, must be free from such complications, can have nothing in it answering to the overt judgment, P,, is a P, Assimilation involves retentiveness and differentia- tion, as we have seen, and prepares the way for re-presenta- tion; but in itself there is no confronting the new with the old, no determination of likeness, and no subsequent classification. The pure sensation we may regard as a psychological myth ; and the simple image, or such sensa- tion revived, seems equally mythical, as we may see later on. The nth sensation is not like the first: it isa change in a presentation-continuum that has itself been changed by those preceding ; and it cannot with any propriety be said to reproduce these past sensations, for they never had the individuality which such reproduction implies. Nor does it associate with images like itself, since where there is association there must first have been distinctness, and what can be associated can also, for some good time at least, be dissociated. Localiza- 'To treat of the localization of impressions is really to give hie an account of the steps by which the psychological indi- ae ' vidual comes to a knowledge of space. At the outset of such an inquiry it seems

desirable first of all to make plain what lies within our purview, and what does not, lest we disturb the peace of those who, confounding philosophy and psychology, are ever eager to fight for or against the a prwrt character of this element of knowledge. That space is priort in the epistemological sense it is no concern of the psychologist either to assert or to deny. Psychologically priori or original in such sense that it has been either actually or potentially an element in all presentation from the very beginning it certainly is not. It will help to make this matter clearer if we distinguish what philosophers frequently confuse, viz., the concrete spatial experiences, constituting actual localization for the individual, and the abstract conception of space, generalized from what is found to be common in such experiences. A gannet's mind "possessed of" a philosopher, if such a conceit may be allowed, would certainly afford its tenant very different Spatial experiences from those he might share if he took up his quarters ina mole. So, any one who has revisited In after years a place from which he had been absent since childhood knows how largely a "personal equation," as it Were, enters into his spatial perceptions. Or the same truth may be brought home to him if, walking with a friend more athletic than himself, they come upon a ditch, which both know to be twelve feet wide, but which the one

feels he can clear by a jump and the other feels he cannot. In the concrete "up" is much more than a different direc- tion from "along." The hen-harrier, which cannot soar, 18 indifferent to a quarry a hundred feet above it—to which the peregrine, built for soaring, would at once give chase— but is on the alert as soon as it descries prey of the same apparent magnitude, but upon the ground. Similarly, in the concrete, the body is the origin or datum to which all posi- tions are referred, and such positions differ not merely quantitatively but qualitatively. Moreover, our various bodily movements and their combinations constitute a net- work of co-ordinates, qualitatively distinguishable but geo- netrically, so to put it, both redundant and incomplete. It is a long way from these facts of perception, which the brutes share with us, to that scientific conception of space as having three dimensions and no qualitative differences which we have elaborated by the aid of thought and lan- guage, and which reason may see to be the logical

presup- position of what in the order of mental development has chronologically preceded it. That the experience of space is not psychologically original seems obvious—quite apart from any successful explanation of its origin—from the mere consideration of its complexity. Thus we must have a plurality of objects—A out of B, B beside C, distant from D, and so on; and these relations of externality, juxtapo- sition, and size or distance imply further specialization : for with a mere plurality of objects we have not straight- way spatial differences. Juxtaposition, e.g., is only possible when the related objects form a continuum; but, again, not any continuity is extensive. Now how has this com- plexity come about ?

The first condition of spatial experience seems to lie Exten- in what has been noted above (p. 46) as the extensity of sity. sensation, This much we may allow is original; for the longer we reflect the more clearly we see that no combina- tion or association of sensations varying only in intensity and quality, not even if motor presentations are added, will account for the space-element in our perceptions. A series of touches a, b, c, d may be combined with a series of movements 7m, my, ms, m4; both series may be reversed ; and finally the touches may be presented simultaneously. In this way we can attain the knowledge of the coexistence of objects that have a certain quasi-distance between them, and such experience is an important element in our per- ception of space; but it is not the whole of it. For, as has been already remarked by critics of the associationist psychology, we have an experience very similar to this in singing and hearing musical notes or the chromatic scale. The most elaborate attempt to get extensity out of succes- sion and coexistence is that of Mr Herbert Spencer. He has done, perhaps, all that can be done, and only to make it the more plain that the entire procedure is a tutepov mpotepov. We do not first experience a succession of touches or of retinal excitations by means of movements, and then, when these impressions are simultaneously pre- sented, regard them as extensive, because they are asso- ciated with or symbolize the original series of movements ; but, before and apart from movenient altogether, we ex- perience that massiveness or extensity of impressions in which movements enable us to find positions, and also to measure. But it will be objected, perhaps not without

1 We are ever in danger of exaggerating the competence of a new discovery ; and the associationists seem to have fallen into this mistake, not only in the use they have made of the conception of asso- ciation in psychology in general, but in the stress they have laid upon the fact of movement when explaining our space-perceptions in particular. Indeed, both ideas have here conspired against them,— association in keeping up the notion that we have only to deal with a plurality of discrete impressions, and movement in keeping to the front the idea of sequence. Mill's Hxamination of Hamilton (3d ed., p. 266 sq.) surely ought to convince us that, unless we are prepared to

impatience, that this amounts to the monstrous absurdity of making the contents of consciousness extended. The edge of this objection will be best turned by rendering the conception of extensity more precise. Thus, suppose a postage stamp pasted on the back of the hand; we have in consequence a certain sensation. If another be added beside it, the new experience would not be adequately described by merely saying we have a greater quantity of sensation, for intensity involves quantity, and increased intensity isnot what is meant. For a sensation of a certain intensity, say a sensation of red, cannot be changed into one having two qualities, red and blue, leaving the inten- sity unchanged ; but with extensity this change is possible. For one of the postage stamps a piece of wet cloth of the same size might be substituted and the massiveness of the compound sensation remain very much the same. Inten- sity belongs to what may be called graded quantity: it admits of increment or decrement, but is not a sum of parts. Extensity, on the other hand, does imply plurality : we might call it latent or merged plurality or a " ground " of plurality, inasmuch as to say that a single presentation has massiveness is to say that a portion of the presentation- continuum at the moment undifferentiated is capable of differentiation. Attributing this property of extensity to the presentation-continuum as a whole, we may call the relation of any particular sensation to this larger whole its local sign, and can see that, so long as the extensity of a presentation admits of diminution without the pre- sentation becoming nil, such presentation has

two or more local signs,—its parts, taken separately, though identical in quality and intensity, having a different rela- tion to the whole. Such difference of relation must be regarded fundamentally as a ground or possibility of distinctness of sign—whether as being the ground or pos- sibility of different complexes or otherwise—rather than as being from the beginning such an overt difference as the term "local sign," when used by Lotze, is meant to imply. From this point of view we may say that more partial presentations are concerned in the sensation caused by two stamps than in that caused by one. The fact that these partial presentations, though identical in quality and intensity, on the one hand are not wholly identical, and on the other are presented only as a quantity and not as a plurality, is explained by the distinctness along with the continuity of their local signs. Assuming that to every distinguishable part of the body there corresponds a local sign, we may allow that at any moment only a certain portion of this continuum is definitely within the field of consciousness ; but no one will maintain that a part of one hand is ever felt as continuous with part of the other or with part of the face. This we can only represent by saying that the local signs have an invariable relation to each other: two continuous signs are not one day coin- cident and the next widely separate.2 This last fact is

say, a8 Mill seems to do, " that the idea of space is at bottom one of time" (p. 276), we must admit the inadequacy of our experience of movement to explain the origin of it.

1 To illustrate what is meant by different complexes it will be enough to refer to the psychological implications of the fact that scarcely two portions of the sensitive surface of the human body are anatomically alike. Not only in the distribution and character of the nerve-endings but in the variety of the underlying parts—in one place bone, in another fatty tissue, in others tendons or muscles variously arranged—we find ample ground for diversity in "the local colour- ing" of sensations. And comparative zoology helps us to see how such diversity has been developed as external impressions and the answering movements have gradually differentiated an organism origin- ally almost homogeneous and symmetrical. Between one point and another on the surface of a sphere there is no ground of difference; but this is no longer true if the sphere revolves round a fixed axis, still less if it also runs in one direction along its axis.

2 The improvements in the sensibility of our "spatial sense" con- sequent on its variations under practice, the action of drugs, &c. pane

PS Y Cl Glog y

hardly perhaps implied in the mere massiveness of a sensa- tion, but it will be convenient to include it when speaking of the continuum of local signs as extensive. We have, then, a plurality of presentations constituting a continuum, presented simultaneously as impressions and having certain fixed and invariable relations to each other. Of such experience the typical case is that of passive touch, though the other senses exemplify it. It must be allowed that our conception of space in like manner involves a fixed continuity of positions ; but then it involves, further, the possibility of movement. Now in the continuum of local signs there is nothing whatever of this ; we might call this continuum an implicit plenum. It only becomes the pre- sentation of occupied space after its several local signs are complicated or "associated" in an orderly way with active touches, when in fact we have experienced the contrast of movements with contact and movements without, 2.c., in vacuo. It is quite true that we cannot now think of this plenum except as a space, because we cannot divest ourselves of these motor experiences by which we have explored it. We can, however, form some idea of the difference between the perception of space and this one element in the perception by contrasting massive internal sensations with massive superficial ones, or the general sensation of the body as "an animated organism" with our perception of it as extended.

It must seem strange, if this conception of extensity is essential to a psychological theory of space, that it has escaped notice so long. The reason may be that in investi- gations into the origin of our knowledge of space it was always the conception of space and not our concrete space perceptions that came up for examination. Now in space as we conceive it one position is distinguishable from another solely by its co-ordinates, z.c., by the magnitude and signs of certain lines and angles, as referred to a certain datum position, or origin; and these elements our motor experiences seem fully to explain. But on re- flexion we ought, surely, to be puzzled by the question, how these coexistent positions could be known before those movements were made which constitute them different positions, The link

we thus suspect to be missing is supplied by the more concrete experiences we obtain from our owu body, in which two positions have a qualitative difference or "local colour" independently of movement. True, such positions would not be known as spatial without move- ment; but neither would the movement be known as spatial had those positions no other difference than such as arises from movement.

We may now consider the part which movement plays Move- in elaborating the presentations of this dimensionless ™™™™

continuum into perceptions of space. In so doing we must bear in mind that this continuum implies the inco- presentability of two impressions having the same local sign, but allows not only of the presentation of impressions of varying massiveness but of several distinct impressions at the same time. As regards the motor element itself, the first point of importance is the incopresentability and invariability of a series of auxilio-motor presentations, P,P, PsP, P, cannot be presented along with P,, and from P, it is impossible to reach P, again save through P, and P,. Such a series, taken alone, could afford us, it is evident, nothing but the knowledge of an invariable sequence of impressions which it was in our own power to produce, Its psychological interest would lie solely in the fact that, whereas other impressions depend on an object- ive initiative, these depend ona subjective. But in the course of the movements necessary to the exploration of

obviously no real contradiction to this ; on the contrary, such facts are all in favonr of making extensity a distinct factor in our space experi- ence and one more fundamental than that of movement.

rey CH OL OG Y

the body—probably our earliest lesson in spatial perception —these auxilio-motor presentations receive a new signifi- cance from the active and passive touches that accompany them, just as they impart to these last a significance they could never have alone.

It is only in the resulting complex that we have the presentations of position and of spatial magnitude. For space, though conceived as a coexistent

continuum, excludes the notion of omnipresence or ubiquity ; two positions /, and /, must coexist, but they are not strictly distinct positions so long as we conceive ourselves present in the same sense in both. But, if F, and JF, are, eg., two impressions produced by compass-points touching two different spots as 7 and Z, on the hand or arm, and we place a finger upon J, and move it to /,, experiencing thereby the series P,,P,,P;,P,, this series constitutes J, and J, into positions and also invests /', and fF, with a relation not of mere distinctness but of definite distance. The resulting complex perhaps admits of symbolization as follows :—

Fa Fs Fe FaFeFelyFnFe….. SEG BY P) Po P3P4 Here the first line represents a portion of the tactual continuum, /', and /, being distinct "feels," if we may so say, or passive touches presented along with the fainter

D5

But in the evolution of our spatial experience impressions and positions are not thus presented apart. We can have, or at least Wwe Can suppose, an impression which is recognized without being localized ; but if it zs localized this means that a more complex presentation is formed by the addition of new elements, not that a second distinct object is presented and some indescribable connexion established between the impression and it, still less that the im- pression is referred to something not strictly presented at all. The truth is that the body as extended is from the psychological point of view not perceived at all apart from localized impressions. In like manner impressions projected (or the absence of impressions projected) constitute all that is perceived as the occupied (or un- occupied) space beyond. It is not till a much later stage, after many varying experiences of different impressions similarly local- ized or projected, that even the mere materials are present for the formation of such an abstract conception of space as "spatial reference" implies. Psychologists, being themselves at this later stage, are apt to commit the oversight of introducing it into the earlicr stage which they have to expound.

In a complex presentation, such as that of an orange or Intuition a piece of wax, may be distinguished the following points of things.

concerning which psychology may be expected to give an account :—(a) its reality, (6) its solidity or occupation of space, (c) its permanence, or rather its continuity in time, (d) its unity and complexity, and (e) its substantiality and the connexion of its attributes and powers. Though, in fact, these items are most intimately blended, our exposi- tion will be clearer if we consider each for a moment apart.

(a) The terms actuality and reality have each more Actual- than one meaning. Thus what is real, in the sense of ity or material, is opposed to what is mental; as the existent or 'elity:

sensations of the continuum as a whole; 7' stands for the active touch of the exploring finger and P, for the corre- sponding auxilio-motor object; the rest of the succession,

as not actually present at this stage but capable of re- vival from past explorations, is symbolized by the ¢¢¢ and P2P3P4. When the series of movements is accompanied by active touches without passive there arises the distinc- tion between one's own body and foreign bodies ; when the initial movement of a series is accompanied by both active and passive touches, the final movement by active touches only, and the intermediate movements are unaccompanied by either, we get the further presentation of empty space lying between us and them,—but only when by frequent experience of contacts along with those intermediate move- ments we have come to know all movement as not only succession but change of position. Thus active touches come at length to be projected, passive touches alone being localized in the stricter sense. But in actual fact, of course, the localization of one impression is not perfected before that of another is begun, and we must take care lest our necessarily meagre exposition give rise to the mistaken uotion that localizing an impression consists wholly and solely in performing or imaging the particular movements necessary to add active touches to a group of passive im- pressions. That this cannot suffice is evident merely from the consideration that a single position out of relation to all other positions is a contradiction. Localization, though it depends on many special experiences of the kind de- scribed, is not like an artificial product which is completed apart at a time, but is essentially a growth, its several constituent localizations advancing together in

definiteness and interconnexion. So far has this development advanced that we do not even imagine the special movements which the localization of an impression implies, that is to say, they are no longer distinctly represented as they would be if we definitely intended to make them: the past experiences are "retained," but too much blended in the mere perception to be appropriately spoken of as remembered or imaged. Apropos of this almost instinctive character of even our carliest spatial perceptions it will be appropriate to animadvert on a mis- leading implication in the current use of such terms as "localization," projection," " bodily reference," " spatial reference," and the like. The implication is that external space, or the body as extended, is im some sort presented or supposed apart from the localization, projection, or reference of impressions to such space. That it may

be possible to put a book in its place on a shelf there must be (1) the book, and (2), distinct and apart from it, the place on the shelf.

actual it is opposed to the non-existent ; and again, what is actual is distinguished from what is possible or necessary. But here both terms, with a certain shade of difference, in so far as actual is more appropriate to movements and events, are used, in antithesis to whatever is ideal or repre- sented, for what is sense-given or presented. This seems at least their primary psychological meaning; and it is the one most in vogue in English philosophy at any rate, over-tinged as that is with psychology.) Any examination of this characteristic will be best deferred till we come to deal with ideation generally (see p. 58 below). Meanwhile it may suffice to remark that reality or actuality is nota single distinct element added to the others which enter into the complex presentation we call a thing, as colour or solidity may be. Neither is it a special relation among these elements, like that of substance and attribute, for example. In these respects the real and the ideal, the actual and the possible, are alike; all the elements or qualities within the complex, and all the relations of those elements to each other, are the sae in the rose repre- sented as in the presented rose. The difference turns not upon what these elements are, regarded as qualities or relations presented or represented, but upon whatever it is that distinguishes the presentation from the representation of any given qualities or relations. Now this, as we shall see, turns partly upon the relation of

such complex pre- sentation to other presentations in consciousness with it, partly upon its relation as a presentation to the subject whose presentation it is. In this respect we find a differ- ence, not only between the simple qualities, such as cold, hard, red, and sweet in strawberry ice, eg., as presented and as represented, but also, though less conspicuously, in the spatial, and even the temporal, relations which enter into our intuition as distinct from our imagination of it. Where no such difference exists we have passed beyond ee eee ee

1 Thus Locke says, "Our simple ideas [t.e., presentations or im- pressions, as we should now say] are all real . . . and. not fictions at pleasure ; for the mind . . . can make to itself no simple idea inore than what it has received " (Essay, ii. 80, 2). And Berkeley says, "The

ideas imprinted on the senses by the Author of Nature are called real

things ; and those excited in the imagination, being less regular, vivid, and constant, are more properly termed ideas or images of things, which they copy or represent" (Prin. of Hum. Know., part i. § 38),

Impene- trability.

Unity

and com-

plexity.

56

the distinction of percept and image to the higher level of conception and thought. So, then, reality or actuality is not strictly an item by itself, but a characteristic of all the items that follow.

(b) Here our properly motor presentations or " feelings of effort or innervation" come specially into play. They are not entirely absent in those movements of exploration by which we attain a knowledge of space ; but it is when these movements are definitely resisted, or are only pos- sible by

increased effort, that we reach the full meaning of body as that which occupies space. Heat and cold, light and sound, the natural man regards as real, and by and by perhaps as due to the powers of things known or unknown, but not as themselves things. At the outset things are all corporeal like his own body, the first and archetypal thing, that is to say: things are intuited only when touch is accompanied by pressure; and, though at a later stage pass- ive touch without pressure may suffice, this is only because pressures depending on a subjective initiative, %.¢., on voluntary muscular exertion, have been previously experi- enced. It isof more than psychological interest to remark how the primordial factor in materiality is thus due to the projection of a subjectively determined reaction to that action of a not-self on which sense-impressions depend,— an action of the not-self which, of course, is not known as such till this projection of the subjective reaction has taken place. Still we must remember that accompany- ing sense-impressions are a condition of its projection : muscular effort without simultaneous sensations of contact would not yield the distinct presentation of the resistant occupying the space into which we have moved and would move again. Nay morc, it is in the highest degree an essential circumstance in this experience that muscular effort, though subjectively initiated, is still only possible when there is contact with something that, as it seems, 1s making an effort the counterpart of our own. But this something is so far no more than thing-stuff; without the elements next to be considered our psychological in- dividual would fall short of the complcte intuition of dis- tinct things.

(c) The remaining important factors in the psychologi- cal constitution of things might be described in general terms as the time-relations of their components. Such relations are themselves in no way psychologically deter- mined ; impressions recur with a certain order or want of order quite independently of the subject's interest or of any psychological principles of synthesis or association whatever. It is essential that impressions should recur, and recur as they have previously occurred, if knowledge is ever to begin; out of a continual chaos of sensation, all matter and no form, such as some philosophers describe, nothing but chaos could result. But a flux of impressions having this real or sense-given order will not suffice ; there must be also attention to and retention of the order, and these indispensable processes at least are psychological. Still they need not be further

emphasized here, nor would it have been necessary at this point to call them to mind at all had not British empirical philosophers brought psycho- logy into disrepute by overlooking them altogether.

But for its familiarity we should marvel at the fact that out of the variety of impressions simultaneously presented we do not instantly group together all the sounds and all the colours, all the touches and all the smells, but, dividing what is given together, single out a certain sound or smell as belonging with a certain colour and feel, similarly singled out from the rest, to what we call one thing. We might wonder, too—those at least who have made so much

of association by similarity ought to wonder—that, say, the white of snow calls up directly, not other shades of white or other colours, but the expectation of cold or of powdery soft-

ness. The first step in this process has been the simultane- ous projection into the same occupied space of the several impressions which we thus come to regard as the qualities of the body filling it. Yet such simultaneous and coincident projection would avail but little unless the constituent impressions were again and again repeated in like order so as to prompt anew the same grouping, and unless, further, this constancy in the one group was present along with changes in other groups and in the general field. There

is nothing in its first experience to tell the infant that the

song of the bird does not inhere in the hawthorn whence the notes proceed, but that the fragrance of the may-flower does. It is only where a group, as a whole, has been found to change its position relatively to other groups, and —apart from causal relations—to be independent of changes of position among them, that such complexes can become distinct unities and yield a world of things. Again, be- cause things are so often a world within themselves, their several parts or members not only having distinguishing qualities but moving and changing with more or less inde- pendence of the rest, it comes about that what is from one point of view one thing becomes from another point of view several,—like a tree with its separable branches

and fruits, for example. Wherein, then, more precisely, does the unity of a thing consist? This question, so far as it here admits of answer, carries us over to temporal continuity.

(d) Amidst all the change above described there is

thing comparatively fixed : our own body is both cohstant f é inuity.

as a group and a constant item in every field of groups ; and not only so, but it is beyond all other things an object of constant and peculiar interest, inasmuch as our earliest pleasures and pains depend solely upon it and what affects it. The body becomes, in fact, the earliest form of self, the first datum for our later conceptions of permanence and individuality. A continuity like that of self is then transferred to other bodies which resemble our own, so

far as our direct experience goes, in passing continuously

from place to place and undergoing only partial and gradual changes of form and quality. As we have ex- isted—or, more exactly, as the body has been continuously presented—during the interval between two encounters with some other recognized body, so this is regarded as having continuously existed during its absence from us. However permanent we suppose the conscious subject to be, it is hard to see how, without the continuous presenta- tion to it of such a group as the bodily self, we should ever be prompted to resolve the discontinuous presenta- tions of external things into a continuity of existence. It might be said: "Since the second presentation of a par- ticular group would, by the mere workings of psychical laws, coalesce or become identical with the image of the first, this coalescence suffices to ' generate' the conception of continued existence." But such assimilation is only the ground of an intellectual identification and furnishes no motive, one way or the other, for resolving two like things into the same thing: between a second presentation of A and the presentation at different times of two A's there is so far no difference. Real identity no more involves exact similarity than exact similarity involves sameness of things; on the contrary, we are wont to find the same thing alter with time, so that exact similarity after an interval, so far from suggesting one thing, is often the surest proof that there are two concerned. Of such real identity, then, it

would seem we must have direct experience ; and we have it in the continuous presentation of the bodily self; apart from this it could not be " generated" by association among changing presentations. Other bodies being in the first instance personified, that then is regarded as one thing— from whatever point of view we look at it, whether

one Tempo-

al con-

a EE —

Substan- | tiality.

cD nm

Impres- sions and ideas,

Pre Ut @ iO G ¥

as part of a larger thing or as itself compounded of such But what is it that has thus a beginning and continues indefinitely ?

parts—which has had one beginning in time.

This leads to our last point.

(ec) So far we have been concerned only with the com- bination of seusory and motor presentations into groups and with the differentiation of group from group; the

relations to each other of the constituents of each group still for the most part remain. To these relations in the

main must be referred the correlative conceptions of sub- stance and attribute, the distinction in substances of

qualities and powers, of primary qualities aud secondary, and the like.?

Of all the constituents of things only one is universally present, that above described as physical solidity, which presents itself according to circumstances as impenetrability, resistance, or weight. Things differing in temperature, colour, taste, and smell agree in resisting compression, in filling space. Because of this quality we regard the wind as a thing, though it has neither shape nor colour, while a shadow, though it has both but not resistance, is the very type of nothingness. This constituent is invariable, while other qualities are either absent or change,—form altering, colour disappearing with ight, sound and smells intermitting. Many of the other qualities—colour, tem- perature, sound, smell—increase in intensity until we reach and touch a body occupying space; with the same move- ment too its visual magnitude varies. At the moment of contact an unvarying tactual magnitude is ascertained, while the other qualities and the visual magnitude reach a fixed maximum ; then first it becomes possible by effort to change or attempt to change the position and form of what we appreliend. This tangible plenum we thence- forth regard as the seat and source of all the qualities we project into it. In other words, that which occupies space is psychologically the substantial; the other real consti- tuents are but its properties or attributes, the marks or manifestations which lead us to expect its presence.

Imagination or Ideation.

Before the intuition of things has reached a stage so complete and definite as that just described, imagination or ideation as distinct from perception has well begun. In passing to the consideration of this higher form of mental life we have to note the distinction between im- pressions and images or ideas, to which Hume first gave general currency. Hume did not think it "necessary to employ many words in explaining this distinction. Every one of himself will readily perceive the difference . . .; though it is not impossible but in particular instances they may very nearly approach to each other. Thus in sleep, in a fever, in madness, or in any very violent emotions of soul, our ideas may approach to our impressions ; as, on the other hand, it sometimes happens our impressions are so faint and low that we cannot distinguish them from our ideas." In most cases, no doubt, the obvious differ- ence in intensity, or, as Hume puts it, "in the force or liveliness with which they strike upon the mind," is a sufficient

characteristic, but we must examine a good deal further and pay more attention to his uncertain cases if this important distinction is ever to be in any sense psychologically "explained."

To begin with, it is very questionable whether Hume was right in applying Locke's distinction of simple and complex to ideas in the narrower sense as well as to im- es eee eee

1 The distinction between the thing and its properties, like all the |

foregoing distinctions, is one that might be more fully treated under the head of " Thought and Conception." Still, inasmuch as the material Warrant for these concepts is contained more or less implicitly in our percepts, some consideration of it is in place here.

2 Treatise af Human Nature, book i. part i. § 1.

oe

pressions. 'That idea of red," says Hume, "which we form in the dark and that impression which strikes our eyes in the sunshine differ only in degree, not in nature."2 But what he seems to overlook is that, whereas there can be a mere sensation red—and such a presentation may for present purposes be regarded as simple—we can only have an image or representation of a red thing or a red form, 2.¢., of red in some way ideally projected or intuited. In other words, there are no ideas answering to simple or isolated impressions: what are revived in memory and imagination are percepts, not unlocalized sensations and movements. It is not only that we cannot now directly observe such representations,—because, for that matter, we can no longer directly observe even the original pre- sentations as merely elementary impressions; the point rather is that ideas as such are from the first complex, and do not begin to appear in consciousness apart from the impressions which they are said to reproduce till after these impressions have been frequently attended to together, and have been more or less firmly synthesized into percepts or intuitions.

The effects of even the earliest of these syntheses or "associations " of impressions must of course in some way persist, or progress in perception

would be impossible. On this account it has been usual to say that "perception" implies both 'memory " and 'imagina- tion"; but such a statement can be allowed only so long as these terms are vaguely used. The dog's mouth waters only at the sight of food, but the gourmand's mouth will also water at the thought of it. We recognize the smell of violets as certainly as we recog- nize the colour when the spring brings them round again ; but few persons, if any, can recall the scent when the flower has gone, so as to say with Shelley—

"Odours, when sweet violets sieken,

Live within the sense they quicken "— though most can recall the colour with tolerable clearness. In like manner everybody can perform innumerable complex voluntary movements which only a few can mentally rehearse or describe without the prompting of actual execution. And not only does such reproduction as suffices for perception fall short of that in- volved in reminiscence or memory in the narrower sense, but the manner in which the constituent elements in a perception are com- bined differs materially from: what is strictly to be called the asso- ciation of ideas. 'Io realize this difference we need only to observe first how the sight of a suit of polished armour, for cxample, instantly reinstates and steadily maintains all that we retain of former sensations of its hardness and smoothness and coldness, and then to observe how this same sight gradually calls up ideas now of tournaments, now of crusades, and so through all the changing imagery of romance. Though the percept is complex, it is but a single whole, and the act of perception is single too ; but, where, as is the case in memory and imagination, attention passes, whether voluntarily or non-voluntarily, from one repre- sentation to another, it is obvious that these several objects of attention are still distinct and that it is directed in turn to each. The term "association" seems only appropriate to the latter. To the connexion of the partial presentations in a complex, whether perception or idea, it would be better to apply the term "complica- tion," which was used in this sense by Herbart, and has been so used by many psychologists since. When we perceive an orange by sight we may say that its taste or feel is represcnted, when we perceive it by touch we may in like manner say that its colour is represented, symbolizing the whole complex in the first case sufficiently for our present purpose as C'tf, in the second as Pct. We might also symbolize

the idea of an orange as seen by ¢' tf and the idea of an orange as felt by /'c¢, using the accented Ictter to signify that different constituents are dominant in the two cases. What we have, then, to observe is briefly (1) that the processes by which the whole complex ¢' éf or f 'cé is bronglit into conscious- ness differ importantly from the process by which C or #' rein- states and maintains ¢f or ¢é, and (2) thate, ¢, and f never have that distinct existence as representations which they had as pre- sentations or impressions.

The mental synthesis which has taken place in the evolu- tion of the percept can only partially fail in the idea, and never so far as to leave us with a chaotic '"inanifold" of mere sensational remnants. On the contrary, we find that in 'constructive imagination " a new kind of effort is often requisite in order to dissociate these representational com-

3 Ibid. XX. — 8

Charac- teristics of ideas.

plexes as a preliminary to new combinations. But it is doubtful whether the results of such an analysis are ever the ultimate elements of the percept, that is, merely isolated impressions in a fainter form. We may now try to ascertain further the characteristic marks which distinguish what 1S imaged from what is perceived.

The most obvious, if not the most invariable, difference is that which, as we have seen, Hume calls the superior force or liveliness of primary presentations as compared with secondary presentations. But what exactly are we to understand by this somewhat figurative language? A simple difference of intensity cannot be all that is meant, for, though we may be momentarily confused, we can per- fectly well distinguish the faintest impression from an image, and yet can hardly suppose the faintest impression to be intenser than the most lively image. Moreover, we can reproduce such faintest impressions in idea, so that, if everything depended on intensity, we should be committed to the gratuitous supposition that secondary presentations can secure attention with a less intensity than is

required for primary presentations. The whole subject of the in- tensity of representations awaits investigation. Between moonlight and sunlight or between midday and dawn we could discriminate many grades of intensity ; but it does not appear that there is any corresponding variation of intensity between them when they are not seen but ima- gined. Many persons suppose they can imagine a waxing or a waning sound or the gradual abatement of an intense pain; but what really happens in such cases is probably not a rise and fall in the intensity of a single representa- tion, but a change in the complex represented. In the primary presentation there has been a change of quality along with change of intensity, and not only so, but most frequently a change in the muscular adaptations of the sense-organs too, to say nothing of organic sensations accompanying these changes. A representation of some or all of these attendants is perhaps what takes place when variations of intensity are supposed to be reproduced. Again, hallucinations are often described as abnormally intense images which simply, by reason of their intensity, are mistaken for percepts. But such statement, though supported by very high authority, is almost certainly false, and would probably never have been made if physiological and epistemological considerations had been excluded as they ought to have been. Hallucinations, when carefully examined, seem just as much as percepts to contain among their constituents some primary presentation—either a so- called subjective sensation of sight and hearing or some organic sensation due to deranged circulation or secretion. Now we have noticed already incidentally in a preced- ing paragraph that primary presentations reinstate and maintain the representational constituents of a percept ina manner very different from that in which what are unmis- takably ideas reproduce each other. The intensity and steadiness of the impressional elements are, as it were, shared by the ideational elements in a complex containing both. Intensity alone, then, will not suffice to discrimi- nate, neither will extremes of intensity alone lead us to confuse, impressions and images.

The superior steadiness just mentioned is perhaps a more constant and not less striking characteristic of per- cepts. Ideas are not only in a continual flux, but even when we attempt forcibly to detain one it varies continu- ally in clearness and completeness, reminding one of nothing so much as of the illuminated devices made of gas jets, common at fétes, when the wind

sweeps across them, momentarily obliterating one part and at the same time intensifying another. There is not this perpetual flow and flicker in what we perceive ; for this, unlike the train of ideas, has at the outset neither a logical nor a

psychological continuity. sciousness at any one moment are psychologically inde- pendent of each other; they are equally independent of the impressions and images presented the moment before independent, 2.e., as regards their order and character, not, of course, as regards the share of attention they secure. Attention to be concentrated in one direction must be withdrawn from another, and images may absorb it to the exclusion of impressions as readily as a first impression to the exclusion ofa second. But, when attention 2s secured, a faint impression has a fixity and definiteness lacking in the case of even vivid ideas. One ground for this definite- ness and independence lies in the localization or projec- tion which accompanies all perception. it might be asked, do we not confound percept and image when what we imagine is imagined as definitely localized and projected ? give the image the lie ; where this fails, as in dreams, or where, as in hallucination, the image obtains in other ways the fixity characteristic of impressions, such con- fusion does in fact result. have the whole presentation-continuum, as it were, occu- pied and in operation: we are distinctly conscious of being embodied and having our senses about us.

The impressions entering con-

But why, if so,

Because we have a contrary percept to

But in normal waking life we

This contrariety between impression and image suggests,

however, a deeper question: we may ask, not how it is

resolved, but how it is possible. With eyes wide open,

and while clearly aware of the actual field of sight and its filling, one can recall or imagine a wholly different scene :

lying warm in bed one can imagine oneself out walking in the cold. It is useless to say the terms are different, that what is perceived is present and what is imaged is past or future The images, it is true, have certain temporal marks—of which more presently—by which they may be referred to past or future; but as imaged they are present, and, as we have just observed, are regarded as both actual and present in the absence of correcting im- pressions. We cannot at once see the sky red and blue ; how is it we can imagine it the one while perceiving it to be the other? When we attempt to make the field of sight at once red and blue, as in looking through red glass with one eye and through blue glass with the other, either the colours merge and we see a purple sky or we see the sky first of the one colour and then of the other in irregular alternation. 'That this does not happen between impres- sion and image shows that, whatever their connexion, images altogether are distinct from the presentation-con- tinuum and cannot with strict propriety be spoken of as revived or reproduced impressions. This difference 1s manifest in another respect, viz., when we compare the effects of diffusion in the two cases. An increase in the intensity of a sensation of touch entails an increase in the extensity ; an increase of muscular innervation entails irradiation to adjacent muscles; but when a particular idea becomes clearer and more distinct there rises into consciousness an associated idea qualitatively related prob- ably to impressions of quite another class, as when the smell of tar calls up memories of the sea-beach and fish- ing-boats. Since images are thus distinct from impres- sions, and yet so far continuous with each other as to form a train in itself unbroken, we should be justified, if it were convenient, in speaking of images as changes in a repre- sentation- or memory-continuum ; and later on we may see that this is convenient.

Impressions, then, have no associates to whose presence their own is accommodated and on whose intensity their own depends. Each bids independently for attention, so

1 Moreover, as we shall see, the distinction between present and past or future psychologically presupposes the contrast of impression and image.

Con- nexion of impres- sions

and images.

rFeYrCcHotLoc Y

that often a state of distraction ensues, such as the train of ideas left to itself never occasions. The better to hear we listen; the better to see we look; to smell better we dilate the nostrils and sniff; and so with all the special senses: each sensory impression sets up nascent movements for its better reception.! In like manner there is also an adjustment for images which can be distinguished from sensory adjustments almost as readily as these are distin- guished from each other. We become most aware of this, as, mutatis mutandis, we do of them, when we voluntarily concentrate attention upon particular ideas instead of remaining mere passive spectators, as it were, of the general procession. To this ideational adjustment may be referred most of the strain and "head-splitting" connected with recollecting, reflecting, and all that people call head- work ; and the "absent look" of one intently thinking or absorbed in reverie seems directly due to the absence of sensory adjustment that accompanies the concentration of attention upon ideas.

But, distinct as they are, impressions and images are still closely connected. In the first place, there are two or three well-marked intermediate stages, so that, though we cannot observe it, we seem justified in assuming a steady transition from tlie one to the other. As the first of such intermediate stages, it is usual to reckon what are often, and—so far as psychology goes—inaccurately, styled after-images. They would be better described as after-sensations, except perhaps when the sense of sight is speci- ally in question, inasmuch as they are due either (1) to the persistence of the original peripheral excitation after the stimulus is withdrawn, or (2) to the effects of the exhaustion or the repair that immediately follows this excitation. In the former case they are qualitatively identical with the original sensation and are called "posi- tive," in the latter they are complementary to it and are called "negative" (see Ey, vol. viii. p. 823). These last, then, of which we have clear instances only in connexion with sight, are obviously in no sort re-presentations of the original impression, but a sequent presentation of dia- metrically opposite quality ; while positive after-sensations are, psychologically regarded, nothing but the original sensations in a state of evanescence. It is this continu- ance and gradual waning after the physical stimulus has completely ceased that give after-sensations their chief title to a place in the transition from impression to image. There is, however, another point of resemblance: after- sensations are less affected by

movement. If we turn away our eyes we cease to see the flame at which we have been looking, but the after-image remains and is projected upon the wall, and continues still localized in the dark field of sight even if we close our eyes altogether. But the fact that movement affects their localization, though it does not exclude them, and the fact also that we are dis- tinctly aware of our sense-organs being concerned in their presentation, both serve to mark them off as primary and not secondary presentations. The after-sensation is in reality more elementary than either the preceding percept or its image. In both these, in the case of sight, objects appear in space of three dimensions, ¢.e., with all the marks of solidity and perspective ;2 but the so-called after-image

1 Organic sensations, though distinguishable from images by their definite though often anatomically inaccurate localization, furnish no clear evidence of such adaptations. But in another respect they are

still more clearly marked off from images, viz., by the pleasure or pain they directly occasion,

- *The following scant quotation from Fechner, one of the best observers in this department, must suffice in illustration. " Lying awake in the early morning after daybreak, with my eyes motionless though open, there usually appears, when I chance to close them for @ moment, the black after-image of the white bed immediately before me and the white after-image of the black stove-pipe some distance away against the opposite wall. . . . Both [after-images] appear as*

lacks all these. Still further removed from normal sensa- tions (2.¢., sensations determined by the stimuli appropri- ate to the sense-organ) are the "recurrent sensations " often unnoticed but probably experienced more or less frequently by everybody—cases, that is, in which sights or sounds, usually such as at the time were engrossing and impressive, suddenly reappear several hours or even days after the phy- sical stimuli, as well as their effects on the terminal sense- organ, seem entirely to have ceased. Thus workers with the microscope often see objects which they have examined during the day stand out clearly before them in the dark i it was

indeed precisely such an experience that led the anatomist Henle first to call attention to these facts. But he and others have wrongly referred them to what he called a "sense-memory" ; all that we know is against the supposition that the eye or the ear has any power to retain and reproduce percepts. 'Recurrent sensations" have all the marks of percepts which after-images lack ; they only differ from what are more strictly called "hallu-cinations" in being, as regards form and quality, exact reproductions of the original impression and in being independent of all subjective suggestion determined by emotion or mental derangement.

In what Fechner has called the " memory-atter-image," or primary memory-image, as it is better termed, we have the ordinary image in its earliest form. As an instance of what is meant may be cited the familiar experience that a knock at the door, the hour struck on the clock, the face of a friend whom we have passed unnoticed, may sometimes be recognized a few moments later by means of the persist- ing image, although the actual impression was entirely disregarded. But the primary memory-image can always be obtained, and is obtained to most advantage, by looking intently at some object for an instant and then closing the eyes or turning them away. 'The object is then imaged for a moment very vividly and distinctly, and can be so recovered several times in succession by an effort of atten-tion. Such reinstatement is materially helped by rapidly opening and closing the eyes, or by suddenly moving them in any way. In this respect a primary memory-image re- sembles an after-sensation, which can be repeatedly revived in this manner when it would otherwise have disappeared. But in other respects the two are very different : the after-sensation is necessarily presented if the intensity and direction of the original excitation suffice for its production, and cannot be presented, however much we attend, if they donot. Moreover, the after-sensation is only for a moment positive, and then passes into the negative or complement- ary phase, when, so far from even contributing towards the continuance of the original percept, it directly hinders it. Primary memory-images, on the other hand, and indeed all images, depend mainly upon the attention given to the impression ; provided that was sufficient the faintest impression may be long retained, and without it very in- tense ones will soon leave no trace. The primary memory- image retains so much of its original definiteness and intensity as to make it possible with great

accuracy to compare two physical phenomena, one of which is in this way remembered while the other is really present; for the most part this is indeed a more accurate procedure than that of dealing with both together. But this is only possible for a very short time. From Weber's experiments with weights and lines? it would appear that even after

if they were in juxtaposition in the same plane; and, though—when my eyes are open—I seem to see the white bed in its entire length, the after-image—when my eyes are shut—presents instead only a narrow black stripe owing to the 'fact that the bed is seen considcrably fore- shortened. But the memory-image on the other hand completely reproduces the pictorial illusion as it appears when the eyes are open" (Elemente der Psychophysik, ii, p. 473). 3 Die Lehre vom Tastsinne, &c., p. 86 sq.

10 seconds a considerable waning has taken place, and after 100 seconds all that is distinctive of the primary image has probably ceased.

On the whole, then, it appears that the ordinary memory- image is a joint effect; it is not the mere residuum of changes in the presentation-continuum, but an effect of these only when there has been some concentration of attention upon them. It has the form of a percept, but is not constituted of "revived impressions," for the essential marks of impressions are absent ; there is no localization or projection, neither is there the motor adaptation, nor the tone of feeling, incident to the reception of impressions. Ideas do not reproduce the intensity of these original con- stituents, but only their quality and complication. What we call the vividness of an idea is of the nature of inten- sity, but it is an intensity very partially and indirectly determined by that of the original impression ; it depends much more upon the state of the memory-continuum and the attention the idea receives. The range of vividness in ideas is probably comparatively small; what are called variations in vividness are often really variations in dis- tinctness and completeness! Where we have great in- tensity, as in hallucinations, primary presentations may be reasonably supposed to enter into the complex.

It is manifest that the memory-continuum has been in some way formed out of or differentiated from the pre sentation-continuum by the movements of attention, but the precise connexion of the two continua is still very difficult to determine. We see perhaps the first distinct step of this evolution in the primary meniory-image : here there has been no cessation in presentation and yet the characteristic marks of the impression are gone, so much so, indeed, that superposition without "fusion" with an exactly similar impression is possible. In this manner we seem to have several primary images in the field of consciousness together, as when we count up the strokes of the clock after it has ceased striking. But, though the image thus first arises in the field of conscious- ness as a sort of drdppoa or emanation from the presenta- tion-continuum, its return (at which stage it first becomes a proper re-presentation) is never determined directly and solely by a second presentation like that which first gave it being. Its "revival" is not another birth. With a second impression exactly like the first we should have assimilation or simple recognition—an identity of the in- discernible which precludes the individual distinctness required in representation. But how, then, was this dis- tinctness in the first instance possible in the series of primary images just referred to as being due to the re- petition of the same presentation? Seemingly to differ- ences in the rest of that field of consciousness in which each in turn occurred and to some persistence of these differences. If the whole field which the second impres- sion entered had been just like the field of the first it is hard to see what ground for distinctness there would have been. When such second impression does not occur till after the primary memory-image has ceased, a representa- tion is still possible provided the new impression can reinstate sufficient of the mental framing of the old to give the image individual distinctness. This is really what happens in what is ordinarily called 'association by similarity," —-similarity, that is, in the midst of some diversity. Our inquiry into the connexion between pre- sentations and representations has thus brought us to the general consideration of mental association.

1 As we have seen that there is a steady transition from percept to image, so, if space allowed, the study of hallucinations might make clear an opposite and abnormal process—the passage, that is to say, of images into percepts, for such, to all intents and purposes, are hallucinations of perception, psychologically regarded.

PeYc Hy ®@ Lo 6 ¥ ;

Mental Association and the Memory-continuum.

Only a very brief treatment of this important subject Associa. is permissible here, as it has already been handled at length tion by

under AssoctaTion or Ipzas (g.v.). Great confusion has

creased by a further laxity in the use of the term " associa- tion by similarity." In so far as the similarity amounts to identity, as in assimilation, we have a process which is more fundamental than association by contiguity, but then it is not a process of association. Yet, when the re- viving presentation is only partially similar to the pre- sentation revived, the nature of the association does not appear to differ from that operative when one "contiguous" presentation revives another. In the one case we have, say, aba recalling aby and in the other abc recalling def. Now anybody who will reflect must surely see that the similarity between aba and aby, as distinct from the identity of their partial constituent a 6, cannot be the means of recall; for this similarity is nothing but the state of mind—to be studied presently—-which results when a6 «# and ab y, having been recalled, are in con- sciousness together and then compared. But, if a 6, having concurred with y before and being now present in a ba, again revives y, the association, so far as that goes, is manifestly one of contiguity, albeit the state of mind im- mediately incident as soon as the revival is complete be what Dr Bain loves to style "the flash of similarity." So far as the mere revival itself goes, there is no more simi- larity in this case than there is when a 6 ¢ revives def. For the very a 6 c that now operates as the reviving pre- sentation was obviously never in time contiguous with the def that is revived; if all traces of previous experiences of a be were obliterated there would be no revival. In other words, the a 6c now present must be "automatically asso- ciated," or, as we prefer to say, must be assimilated to those residua of abc which were "contiguous" with d e/, before its representation can occur. And this, and nothing more than this, we have seen, is all the "similarity" that could be at work when a 6b x '"'brought up" a b y.

On the whole, then, we may assume that the only Couti-

principle of association we have to examine is the so-called

“association by contiguity,” which, as ordinarily formulated, (15.

runs :—Any presentations whatever, which are in conscious- ness together or in close succession, cohere in such a way that when one recurs it tends to revive the rest, such tendency increasing with the frequency of the conjunction. But such a statement is liable to all the objections already urged against what we may call atomistic psychology. Pre- sentations do not really crowd into Mansoul by the avenues of Eyegate, Eargate, &c., there to form bonds and unions as in Bunyan’s famous allegory. It has been often con- tended that any investigation into the nature of association must be fruitless.? But, if association is thus a first princi- ple, it ought at least to admit of such a statement as shall remove the necessity for inquiry. So long, however, as we are asked to conceive presentations originally distinct and isolated becoming eventually linked together, we shall naturally feel the need of some explanation of the process, for neither the isolation nor the links are clear,—not the isolation, for we can only conceive two presentations sepa- rated by other presentations intervening; nor the links, unless these are also presentations, and then the difficulty recurs. But, if for contiguity we substitute continuity and regard the associated presentations as parts of a new con- tinuum, the only important inquiry is how this new whole was first of all integrated.

2So Hume, Treatise of Human Nature, pt. i. § 4 (Green and Grose’s ed., p. 321); also Lotze, Afetaphystk, 1st ed., p. 526.

: oe ~ ity not been occasioned, as we have seen incidentally, by the lax fai

use of the term “association”; this confusion has been in- mental,

Forma- tion of

PSYCHOLOGY

.

To ascertain this point we must examine each of the two

leading divisions of contiguous association—that of simul-

merry” taneous presentations and that of presentations occurring

con-

tinuum.

———

taken first.

in close succession. The last, being the clearer, may be In a series of associated presentations, A B C D &, such as the movements made in writing, the words of a poem learned by heart, or the simple letters of the alphabet themselves, we find that each member recalls its successor but not its predecessor. Familiar as this fact is, it is not perhaps easy to explain it satisfactorily. Since Cis associated both with B and D, and apparently as intimately with the one as with the other, why does it revive the later only and not the earlier? B recalls C; why does not C’ recall B? We havé seen that any reproduction at all of A or B or C depends primarily upon its having been the object of special attention so as to occupy at least momentarily the focus of consciousness. Now we can in the first instance only surmise that the order in which they are reproduced is determined by the order in which they were thus attended to when first presented. The next question is whether the association of objects simul- taneously presented can be resolved into an association of objects successively attended to. Whenever we try to recall a scene we saw but for a moment there are always a few traits that recur, the rest being blurred and vague, instead of the whole being revived in equal distinctness or indistinctness. On seeing the same scene a second time our attention is apt to be caught by something unnoticed before, as this has the advantage of novelty ; and so on, till we have “lived ourselves into” the whole, which may then admit of simultaneous recall. Dr Bain, who is rightly held to have given the best ex- position of the laws of association, admits something very like this in saying that “coexistence is an artificial growth formed from a certain peculiar class of mental successions.” But, while it is easy to think of instances in which the associated objects were attended to suc- cessively, and we are all perfectly

aware that the surest —not to say the only—way to fix the association of a number of objects is by thus concentrating attention on each in turn, it seems hardly possible to mention a case in which attention to the associated objects could not have been successive. In fact, an aggregate of objects on which attention could be focused at once would be already associated.

The only case, then, that now remains to be considered is that—to take it in its simplest form—of two primary presentations A and X, parts of different special continua or distinct—7.e., non-adjacent—parts of the same, and oecupying the focus of consciousness in immediate succes- sion. This constitutes their integration ; for the result of this occupation may be regarded as a new continuum in which A and X become adjacent parts. For it is characteristic of a continuum that an increase in the intensity of any part leads to the intenser presentation of adjacent parts; and in this sense A and X, which were hot originally continuous, have come to be so. We have here, then, some justification for the term secondary or memory-continuum when applied to this continuous series of representations to distinguish it from the primary or presentation-continuum from which its constituents are derived. The most important peculiarity of this con- tinuum, therefore, is that it is a series of representations Integrated by means of the movements of attention out of the differentiations of the primary or presentation-continuum, or rather out of so much of these differentia- tions as pertain to what we know as the primary memory- Image. These movements of attention, if the phrase may be allowed, come in the end to depend mainly upon in- terest, but at first appear to be determined entirely by

mere intensity.! To them it is proposed to look for that continuity which images lose in so far as they part with the local signs they had as impressions and cease to be either localized or projected. Inasmuch as it is assumed that these movements form the connexion between one re-presentation and another in the memory-train they may be called "temporal signs."? The evidence for their ex- istence can be more conveniently adduced presently ; it must suffice to remark here that it consists almost wholly of facts connected with voluntary attention and the volun- tary control of the flow of ideas, so that temporal signs, unlike local signs, are

fundamentally motor and not sensory. And, unlike impressions, representations can have each but a single sign,? the continuum of which, in contrast to that of local signs, is not rounded and com- plete but continuously advancing.

But in saying this we are assuming for a moment that the memory-continuum forms a perfectly single and un- broken train. If it ever actually became so, then, in the absence of any repetition of old impressions and apart from voluntary interference with the train, consciousness, till it ceased entirely, would consist of a fixed and mechanical round of images. Some approximation to such a state is often found in uncultured persons who lead uneventful lives, and still more in idiots, who ean scarcely think at all.

In actual fact, however, the memory-train is liable to Oblivis- change in two respects, which considerably modify its cence.

structure, viz., (1) through the evanescence of some parts, and (2) through the partial recurrence of like impressions, which produces reduplications of varying amount and extent in other parts. As regards the first, we may infer that the waning or sinking towards the threshold of con- sciousness which we can observe in the primary mental image continues in subconsciousness after the threshold is past. For the longer the time that elapses before their revival the fainter, the less distinct, and the less complete are the images when revived, and the more slowly they rise. All the elements of a complex are not equally revivable, as we have seen already : tastes, smells, and organic sensations, though powerful as impressions to revive other images, have little capacity for ideal repro- duction themselves, while muscular movements, though perhaps of all presentations the most readily revived, do not so readily revive other presentations. Idiosyncrasies are, however, frequent; thus we find one person has an exceptional memory for sounds, another for colours, another for forms. Stillit isin general true that the most intense, the most impressive, and the most interesting presentations persist the longest. But the evanescence, which is in all cases comparatively rapid at first, deepens sooner or later into real or apparent oblivion. In this manner it comes about that parts of the memory-continuum lose all distinct-

ness of feature and, being without recognizable content, a

} This connexion of association with continuous movements of atten- tion makes it easier to understand the difficulty above referred to, viz. that in a series 4 BCD... B revives C but not A, and so on—a diffi- culty that the analogy of adhesiveness or links leaves unaccountable. To ignore the part played by attention in association, to represent the Memory-continnum as due solely to the concurrence of presentations, is perhaps the chief defect of the associationist psychology, both Eng- lish and German. Mr Spencer's endeavour to show 'that psychical life is distinguished from physical life by consisting of successive changes only instead of successive and simultaneous changes " (Prin- ciples of Psychology, pt. iv. ch. ii., in particular pp. 403, 406) is really nothing but so much testimony to the work of attention in forming the memory -continuum, especially when, as there is good reason to do, we reject his assumption that this growing seriality is physically determined.

2 A term borrowed from Lotze (Metaphysik, 1st ed., p. 295), but the present writer is alone responsible for the sense here given to it and the hypothesis in which it is used.

% Apart, that is to say, of course, from the reduplications of the memory-train spoken of below,

Repeti- tion.

Generic images.

Train of ideas,

shrivel up to a dim and meagre representation of life that has lapsed—a representation that just suffices, for example, to show us that "our earliest recollections" are not of our first experiences, or to save them from being not only isolated but discontinuous. Such discontinuity can, of course, never be absolute ; we must have something repre- sented even to mark the gap. Oblivion and the absence of all representation are thus the same, and the absence of all representation cannot psychologically constitute a break. The terms "evolution" and "involution" have in this respect been happily

applied to the rising and falling of representations. When we recall a particular period of our past life or what has long ceased to be a familiar scene, events and features gradually unfold and, as it were, spread out as we keep on attending. A precisely opposite process may then be supposed to take place when they are left in undisturbed forgetfulness ; with loss of distinct- ness in the several members of a whole or series, there is a loss of individuality and of individual differences. And such loss is not a mere latency, as some psychologists, on metaphysical grounds! or from a mistaken use of physical analogies, have been led to suppose. There is no real resemblance between the action, or rather inaction, of a particle obedient to the first law of motion and the per- sistence of a presentation," which is not even the psychical equivalent of an atom.

More important changes are produced by the repetition of parts of the memory-train. The effect of this is not merely to prevent the evanescence of the particular image or series of images, but by partial and more or less frequent reduplications of the train upon itself to convert it into a partially new continuum, which we might perhaps call the "ideational continuum." The reduplicated por- tions of the train are strengthened, while at the points of divergence it becomes comparatively weakened, and this apart from the effects of obliviscence. One who had seen the queen but once would scarcely be likely to think of her without finding the attendant circumstances recur as well; this could not happen after seeing her in a hundred different scenes. The central representation of the whole complex would have become more distinct, whereas the several diverging lines would tend to dissipate attention and, by involving opposing representations, to neutralize each other, so that probably no definite background would be reinstated. Even this central representation would be more or less generalized. It has been often remarked that one's most familiar friends are apt to be mentally pictured less concretely and vividly than persons seen more seldom and then in similar attitudes and moods ; in the former case a " generic image" has grown out of such more specific representations as the latter affords. Still further removed from memory-images are the images that result from such familiar percepts as those of horses, houses, trees, &c.

Thus as the joint effect of obliviscence and reduplication we are provided with a flow of ideas distinct from the memory-train and thereby with the material, already more or less organized, for intellectual and volitional manipu- lation. We do not experience this flow—save very momentarily and occasionally—altogether undisturbed ; even in dreams and reverie it is continually interrupted and diverted. Nevertheless it is not difficult to ascertain that, so far as it is left to itself, it takes a very different course from that which we should have to retrace if bent on reminiscence and able to recollect perfectly. The readi- ness and steadiness of this flow are shown by the extremely small effort necessary in order to follow it. Nevertheless

a So, e.g., Hamilton (following H. Schmid), Lect. on AMet., ii. p.

SY. 2 Cf. Lotze, Metaphysik, p. 518.

from its very nature it is liable, though not to positive

breaches of continuity from its own working, yet to occasional blocks or impediments to the smooth succession of images at points where reduplications diverge, and either permanently or at the particular time neutralize each other.?

The flow of ideas is, however, exposed to positive interruptions Conflict from two distinct sides, —by the intrusion of new presentations and of pre-

by voluntary interference.

The only result of such interruptions senta-

which we need here consider is the conflict of presentations that may tions.

ensue. Hcrbart and his followers have gone so far as to elaborate a complete system of psychical statics and dynamics, based on the conception of presentations as forces and on certain more or less improbable assumptions as to the modes in which such forces interact. Since our power of attention is limited, it continually happens that attention is drawn off by

new presentations at the expense of old ones. But, even if we regard this non-voluntary redistribution of attention as implying a struggle between pre- sentations, still such conflict to secure a place in consciousness is very different from a conflict between presentations that are already there. Either may be experienced to any degree possible without the other appearing at all; as, absorbed in watching a starry sky, one might be unaware of the chilliness of the air, though recog- nizing at once, as soon as the cold is felt, that, so far from being incompatible, the clearness and the coldness are causally connected. This difference between a conflict of presentations to enter con- sciousness, if we allow for a moment the propricty of the expression, and that opposition or incompatibility of presentations which. is only possible when they are in consciousness has been strangely confused by the Herbartians. In the former the intensity of the presentation is primarily alone of account ; in the latter, on the contrary, quality and content are mainly concerned. Only the last requires any notice here, since such opposition arises when the ideational continuum is interrupted in the ways just mentioned, and apparently arises in no other way. Certainly there is no such opposition between primary presentations : there we have the law of incopresentability preventing the presentation of opposites with the same local sign; and their presentation with different local signs involves, on this level at all events, no conflict. But what has never been presented could hardly be represented, if the idea- tional process were undisturbed : even in our dreams white negroes or round squares, for instance, never appear. In fact, absurd and bizarre as dream-imagery is, it never at any moment cntails overt contradictions, though contradiction may be implicit.

But between ideas and percepts actual incompatibility is frequent. In the perplexity of Isaac, ¢.g.—“ The voice is J acoh’s voice, but the hands are the hands of Esau ”—we have such a case in a familiar form. ‘There is here not merely mental arrest but actual conflict : the voice perceived identifies Jacob, at the same time the hands identify Esau. The images of Esan and Jacob by themselves are different, but do not conflict ; neither is there any strain, quite the contrary, in recognizing a person partly like Jacob and partly like Esau. For there is no direct incompatibility between smooth and rough, so long as one pertains only to voice and the other only to hands, but the same hands and voice cannot be both smooth and rough. Similar incompatibilities may arise without the intrusion of percepts, as when, in

trying to guess a riddle or to solve a problem, or generally to eliminate intellectual differences, we have images which in themselves are only logically opposite, psychologically opposed, or in conflict, because each strives to enter the same com- plex. In all such conflicts alike we find, in fact, a relation of presentations the exact converse of that which constitutes similarity. In the latter we have two complete presentations, aba and aby, as similar, each including the common part a0; in the former we have two partial presentations, a and y, as contraries, each excluding the other from the incomplete aj—. And this ab, it is to be noted, is not more essential to the similarity than to the conflict. But in the one case it is a generic image (and cau logically be predicated of two subjects); in the other it ts a partially determined individual (and cannot be subject to opposing predicates). Except as thus supplementing ab, «and y do not conflict ; black and white are not incompatible save as attributes of the same thing. The possi- bility of most of these conflicts—of all, indeed, that have any logical interest—lies in that reduplication of the memory-continuum which gives rise to these new complexes, generic images, or general ideas.

Having thus attempted to ascertain the formation of the ideational continuum out of the memory-train, the

3 It is a mark of the looseness of much of our psychological termino- logy that facts of this kind are commonly described as cases of associa- tion. Dr Bain calls them "obstructive association," which is about on a par with "progress backwards"; Mr Sully's '"' divergent association " is better. But it is plain that what we really have is an arrest or inhibition consequent on association, and nothing that is either itself association or that leads to association.

question arises: How now are we to distinguish between imagining and remembering, and again, between imagining and expecting? It is plainly absurd to make the difference depend on the presence of belief in memory and expecta- tion and on its absence in mere imagination ; for the belief itself depends on the difference instead of constituting it. One real and

obvious distinction, however, which Hume pointed out as regards memory, is the fixed order and posi- tion of the ideas of what is remembered or expected as contrasted with "the liberty" of the imagination to trans- This order and position in the case of memory are, of course, normally those of the origial impressions, but it seems rather naive of Hume to tell us that memory "'is tied down to these without any power of variation," while imagination has liberty to transpose as it pleases, as if the originals sat to memory for their portraits, while to imagination they were but studies. Such correspondence being out of the question— as Hume takes care to state as soon as it suits him—all we have, so far, is this fixity and definiteness as contrasted In this

pose and change its ideas.

with the kaleidoscopic instability of ideation. respect what is remembered or expected resembles what is

perceived: the grouping not only does not change caprici-

ously and spontaneously, but resists any mental efforts to change it. But, provided these characteristics are there, we should be apt to believe that we are remembering, just as, mutatis mutandis, with like characteristics we might believe that we were perceiving: hallucination is possible in either case.

This fixity of order and position is, however, not suffi- cient to constitute a typical remembrance where the term is exactly used. But remembering is often regarded as equivalent to knowing and recognizing, as when on revisit- ing some once familiar place one remarks, '" How well I remember it!" What is meant is that the place is re- cognized, and that its recognition awakens memories. Memory includes recognition ; recognition as such does not include memory. In human consciousness, as we directly observe it, there is, perhaps, no pure recognition : here the new presentation is not only assimilated to the old, but the former framing of circumstance is reinstated, and so perforce distinguished from the present. It may be there is no warrant for supposing that such redinte- gration of a preceding field is ever absolutely nz, still we are justified in regarding it as extremely vague and meagre, both where mental evolution is but slightly advanced and

where frequent repetition in varying and irrelevant circumstances has produced a blurred and neutral zone. The last is the case with a great part of our knowledge ; the writer happens to know that bos is the Latin for "ox" and bufo the Latin for "toad," and may be said to remember both items of knowledge, if "remember" is only to be synonymous with "retain." But if he came across bos in reading he would think of an ox and nothing more; bufo would immediately call up not only "toad" but Virgil's Georgics, the only place in which he has seen the word, and which he never read but once. In the former there is so far nothing but re- cognition (which, however, of course rests upon retentive- ness) ; in the latter there is also remembrance of the time and circumstances in which that piece of knowledge was acquired. Of course in so far as we are aware that we Tecognize we also think that remembrance is at any rate possible, since what we know we must previously have learned,—recognition excluding novelty. But the point here urged is that there is an actual remembrance only When the recognition is accompanied by a reinstatement of Portions of the memory-train continuous with the previous Presentation of what is now recognized. Summarily stated, we may say that between knowing and remembering on

the one hand and imagining on the other the difference primarily turns on the fixity and completeness of the grouping in the former; in the latter there is a shifting play of images more or less "generic," reminding one of 'dissolving views." Hence the first two approximate in character to perception, and are rightly called recogni- tions. Between them, again, the difference turns primarily on the presence or absence of temporal signs. In what is remembered these are still intact enough to ensure a localization in the past of what is recognized ; in what is known merely such localization is prevented, either because of the obliviscence of temporal connexions or because the reduplications of the memory-train that have consolidated the central group have entailed their suppression. There is further the difference first mentioned, which is often only a difference of degree, viz., that remembrances have more circumstantiality, so to say, than mere recognitions have: more of the collateral constituents of the original concrete field of consciousness are reinstated. But of the two characteristics

of memory proper—(a) concreteness or circumstantiality, and (6) localization in the past—the latter is the more essential. It sometimes happens that we have the one with little or nothing of the other. For example, we may have but a faint and meagre representa- tion of a scene, yet if it falls into and retains a fixed

place in the memory-train we have no doubt that some

such experience was once actually ours. On the other hand, as in certain so-called illusions of memory, we may suddenly find ourselves reminded by what is happening at the moment of a preceding experience exactly like it—some even feel that they know from what is thus recalled what will happen next; and yet, because we are wholly unable to assign such representation a place in the past, instead of a belief that it happened, there arises a most distressing sense of bewilderment, as if one were haunted aud had lost one's personal bearings! It has been held by some psychologists? that memory proper includes the representation of one's past self as agent or patient in the event or situation recalled. And this is true as regards all but the earliest human experience, at any rate ; still, whereas it is easy to see that memory is essential to any development of self-conscicusness, the converse is not at all clear, and would involve us in a needless circle. Intimately connected with memory is expectation. We Expecta-

may as the result of reasoning conclude that a certain tion. event will happen ; we may also, in like manner, conclude that a certain other event has happened. But as we should not call the latter memory, so it is desirable to distinguish such indirect anticipation as the former fron that expectation which is directly due to the interaction of ideas. Any man knows that he will die, and may make a variety of arrangements in anticipation of death, but he cannot with propriety be said to be expecting it unless he has actually present to his mind a series of ideas ending in that of death, such series being due to previous associations, and unless, further, this series owes its re- presentation at this moment to the actual recurrence of some experience to which that series succeeded before. And as familiarity with an object or event in very various settings may be a bar to recollection, so it may be to expectation : the average Englishman, e¢.g., is continually surprised without his umbrella, though only too familiar with rain, since in his

climate one not specially attentive to the weather obtains no clear representation of its successive phases. But after a series of events ABCDE... has been once experienced we instinctively expect the recurrence

1 Any full discussion of these very interesting states of mind belongs to mental pathology.

2 As, eg., James Mill (Analysis of the Human Mind, ch. x.), who treats this difficult subject with great acuteness and thoroughness.

of BC… on the recurrence of A, 7.¢. provided the memory-train continues so far intact. Such expectation, at first perhaps sight—a mere tendency easily overborne— becomes strengthened by every repetition of the series in the old order, till eventually, if often fulfilled and never falsified, it becomes certain and, as we commonly say, irresistible. To have a clear case of expectation, then, it is not necessary that we should distinctly remember any previous experience like it, but only that we should have actually present some earlier member of a series which has been firmly associated by such previous experiences, the remaining members, or at least the next, if they continue serial, being revived through that which is once again realized. This expectation may be instantly checked by reflexion, just as it may of course be disappointed in fact ; but these are matters which do not concern the inquiry as to the nature of expectation while expectation lasts.

We shall continue this inquiry to most advantage by now widening it into an examination of the distinction of present, past, and future. To a being whose presenta- tions never passed through the transitions which ours undergo—first divested of the strength and vividness of impressions, again reinvested with them and brought back from the faint world of ideas—the sharp contrasts of "now" and "then," and all the manifold emotions they occasion, would be quite unknown. Even we, so far as we confine our activity and attention to ideas, are almost without them. Time-order, succession, antecedence and consequence, of course, there might be still, but in that sense of events as 'past and gone for ever," which is one of the

melancholy factors in our life; and in the obligation to wait and work in hope or dread of what is "still to come " there is much more than time-order. It is to presentations in their primary stage, to impressions, that we owe what real differ- ence we find between now and then, whether prospective or retrospective, as it is to them also that we directly owe our sense of the real, of what 7s and exists as opposed to the non-existent that is not. But the present alone and hfe in a succession of presents, or, in other words, continuous occupation with impressions, give us no knowledge of the present as present. This we first obtain when our present consciousness consists partly of memories or partly of ex- pectations as well. An event expected differs from a like event remembered chiefly in two ways—in its relation to present impressions and images and in the active attitude to which it leads. The diverse feelings that accompany our intuitions of time and contribute so largely to their colour- ing are mainly consequences of these differences. Let us take a series of simple and familiar events 4B CDE, re- presenting ideas by small letters and perceptions by capitals whenever it is necessary to distinguish them. Such series may be present in consciousness in such wise that abcd are imaged while Z is perceived anew, ¢.¢., the whole symbolized as proposed would be abcd £; such would be, e.g., the state of a dog which had just finished his daily meal. Again, there may be a fresh impression of A which revives bede; we should have then (1) 4bcde—the state of our dog when he next day gets sight of the dish in which his food is brought to him. A little later we may have (2) abC de. Here ab are either after-sensations or primary memory- images, or have at any rate the increased intensity due to recent impression; but this increased intensity will be rapidly on the wane even while C lasts, and ab will pale still further when C gives place to D, and we have (3) abcDe. But, returning to (2), we should find de to be in- creasing in intensity and definiteness, as compared with their state in (1), now that C, instead of .A, is the present impression. For, when A occupied this position, not only was ¢ raised less prominently above the threshold of con- sciousness by reason of its greater distance from A in the

memory-continuum, but, owing to the reduplications of this continuum, more lines of possible revival were opened up, to be successively negatived

as L succeeded to A and C to B; even dogs know that "there is many a slip 'twixt the cup and the ip." But, where 4 BC D # isa series of percepts such as we have here supposed—and a series of simpler states would hardly afford much ground for the distinctions of past, present, and future—there would be a varying amount of active adjustment of sense-organs and other movements supplementary to full sensation. In (2), the point at which we have a6 C de, for instance, such adjustments and movements as were appropriate to 6 would cease as B lapsed and be replaced by those appropriate to C. Again, as C succeeded to B, and d in consequence increased in intensity and definiteness, the movements adapted to the reception of D would become nascent, and so on. Thus, psychologically regarded, the distinction of past and future and what we might call the oneness of direction of time depend, as just described, (1) upon the continuous sinking of the primary memory-images on the one side, and the continuous rising of the ordinary images on the other side, of that member of a series of percepts then repeating which is actual at the moment ; and (2) on the prevenient adjustments of attention, to which such words as "expect," "await," "anticipate," all testify by their etymology. These conditions in turn will be found to depend upon all that is implied in the formation of the memory-train and upon that recurrence of lke series of impressions which we attribute to the "uniformity of nature." If we never had the same series of impressions twice, knowledge of time would be impossible, as indeed would knowledge of any sort.

This is perhaps the fittest pomt at which to inquire into Succes- the character and origin of our knowledge of succession Sion.

and duration, so far, that is, as such an inquiry belongs to psychology. We have not to ask how time itself comes to be; but, assuming it to be, we ask how the individual comes to know it. Time ig often figuratively represented as a line, and we may perhaps utilize this figure to make clear the relation of our intuition of time to what we call time itself. Time, then, we say, stretches backwards and forwards from the present moment. But the present, though a point of time, is still such that we can and do in that moment attend to a plurality of presentations to which we might otherwise have attended severally in suc- cessive moments. Granting this implication of simul- taneity and succession, we may, if we represent succession asa

line, represent simultaneity as a second line at right angles to the first; empty time—or time-length without time-breadth, we may say—is a mere abstraction. Now it is with the former line that we have to do in treating of time as it is, and with the latter in treating of our intuition of time, where, just as in a perspective repre- sentation of distance, we are confined to lines in a plane at right angles to the actual line of depth. Ina succession of events, say of sense-impressions, A BC DH… the presence of 4 means the absence of A and of C, but the presentation of this succession involves the simultaneous presence, in some mode or other, of two or more of the presentations A 5C' D. In presentation, as we have seen, all that corresponds to the differences of past, present,

and future is in consciousness simultaneously. This truism

—-or paradox—that all we know of succession is but an interpretation of what is really simultaneous or co- existent, we may then concisely express by saying that we are aware of time only through time-perspective, and experience shows that it isa long step from a succession of presentations to such presentation of succession. The first condition is that we should have represented together presentations that were in the first instance attended to

fPeye fH OL OG Y

successively, and this we have both in the persistence of primary memory-images and in the simultaneous reproduc- tion of longer or shorter portions of the memory-train. In a series thus secured there may be time-marks, though no time, and by these marks the series must be distin- guished from other simultaneous series. To ask which is first among a number of simultaneous presentations is unmeaning; one might be logically prior to another, but in time they are together and priority is excluded. Nevertheless after each distinct representation a, b, c, d there probably follows, as we have supposed, some trace of that movement of attention of which we are aware in passing from one presentation to another. In our present reminiscences we have, it must be allowed, little direct proof of this interposition, though there is strong indirect evidence of it in the tendency of the flow to follow the order in which the presentations were first attended to. With the movements: themselves we are familiar enough, though the residua of such movements are not ordinarily conspicuous, These residua,

then, are our temporal signs, and, together with the representations connected by them, constitute the memory-continuum. But temporal signs alone will not furnish all the pictorial exactness of the time-perspective. They give us only a fixed series; but the working of obliviscence, by insuring a progressive variation in intensity and distinctness as we pass from one member of the series to the other, yields the effect which we call time-distance. By theniselves such variations would leave us liable to confound more vivid repre- sentations in the distance with fainter ones nearer the present, but from this mistake the temporal signs save us; and, as a matter of fact, where the memory-train is imperfect such mistakes continually occur. On the other hand, where these variations are slight and imperceptible, though the memory-continuum preserves the order of events intact, we have still no such distinct appreciation of comparative distance in time as we have nearer the present where these perspective effects are considerable. When in retrospect we note that a particular presenta- tion X has had a place in the field of consciousness, while a series of objects A BC D . . . have succeeded each other, then we may be said in observing this relation of the two to perceive the duration of X. And it is in this way that we do subjectively estimate longer periods of time. But first, it is evident that we cannot apply this method to indefinitely short periods without passing beyond the region of distinct presentation; and, since the knowledge of duration implies a relation between distinguishable pre- sentations A BC D and X, the case is one in which the hypothesis of subconsciousness can hardly help any but those who confound the fact of time with the knowledge of it. Secondly, if we are to compare different durations at all, it is not enough that one of them should last out a series A BC D, and another a series L M NV 0; we also want some sort of common measure of those series. Locke was awake to this point, though he expresses himself vaguely (Hssay, ii. 14, §§ 9-12). He speaks of our ideas Succeeding each other "at certain distances not much unlike the images in the inside of a lantern turned round by the heat of a candle," and " guesses" that 'this appear- ance of theirs in train varies not very much ina waking man." Now what is this "distance" that separates A from B, B from C, and so on, and what means have we of knowing that it is tolerably constant in waking life? It is probably that the residuum of which we have called a temporal sign ; or, in other words, it is the movement of attention from A to B. But we must endeavour here to get a more exact notion of this movement. Everybody

knows what it is to be distracted by a rapid succession of varied impressions, and equally what it is to be wearied

by the slow and monotonous recurrence of the same im- pressions. Now these "feelings" of distraction and tedium owe their characteristic qualities to movements of atten- tion. In the first, attention is kept incessantly on the move : before it is accommodated to A, it is disturbed by the suddenness, intensity, or novelty of B; in the second, it is kept all but stationary by the repeated presentation of the same impression. Such excess and defect of sur- prises make one realize a fact which in ordinary life is so obscure as to escape notice. But recent experiments have set this fact in a more striking light, and made clear what Locke had dimly before his mind in talking of a certain distance between the presentations of a waking man. In estimating very short periods of time, of a second or less, indicated say by the beats of a metronome, it is found that there is a certain period for which the mean of a number of estimates is correct, while shorter periods are on the whole overestimated, and longer periods under- estimated. This we may perhaps take to be evidence of the time occupied in accommodating or fixing attention. Whether the "point of indifference" is determined by the rate of usual bodily movement, as Spencer asserts and Wundt conjectures, or conversely, is a question we need not discuss just now. But, though the fixation of atten- tion does of course really occupy time, it is probably not in the first instance perceived as time, ¢.¢., as continuous " protensity," to use a term of Hamilton's, but as intensity. Thus, if this supposition be true, there is an element in our concrete time-perceptions which has no place in our abstract conception of time. In time conceived as physical there is no trace of intensity; in time psychically experi- enced duration is primarily an intensive nagnitude, witness the comparison of times when we are "bored" with others when we are amused. It must have struck every one as strange who has reflected upon it that a period of time which seems long in retrospect—such as an eventful ex- cursion—should have appeared short in passing; while a period, on the contrary, which in memory has dwindled to a wretched span seemed everlasting till it was gone. But, if we consider that in retrospect length of time is repre- sented primarily and chiefly by impressions that have sur- vived, we have an explanation of one-half; and

in the intensity of the movements of attention we shall perhaps find an explanation of the other. What tells in retrospect is the series a b cd e, &c. ; what tells in the present is the intervening ¢,t,t,, &c., or rather the original acconimoda- tion of which these temporal signs are the residuum. For, as we have seen elsewhere, the intensity of a presentation does not persist, so that in memory the residuum of the most intense feeling of tedium may only be so many ?'s in &@ memory-continuum whose surviving members are few and uninteresting. But in the actual experience, say, of a wearisome sermon, when the expectation of release is continually balked and attention forced back upon a monotonous dribble of platitudes, the one impressive fact is the hearer's impatience. On the other hand, so long as we are entertained, attention is never involuntary, and there is no continually deferred expectation. Just as we are said to walk with least effort when our pace accords with the rate of swing of our legs regarded as pendulums, so in pastimes impressions succeed each other at the rate at which attention can be most easily accommodated, and are such that we attend willingly. We are absorbed in the present without being unwillingly confined to it; not only is there no motive for retrospect or expectation, but there is no feeling that the present endures, Each im- pression lasts as long as it is interesting, but does not con- tinue to monopolize the focus of consciousness till attention to it is fatiguing, because uninteresting. In suc: facts, then, we seem to have proof that our perception of duration rests XX. — 9

Is time discrete or con- tinuous?

66 PSs Yen wr oa y

ultimately upon quasi-motor objects of varying intensity, the duration of which we do not directly experience as duration at all. They do endure and their intensity is a function of their duration; but the intensity is all that we directly perceive. In other words, it is here contended that what Locke called an instant or moment—"the time of one idea in our minds without the succession of another, wherein therefore we perceive no succession at all"—is psychologically not "a part in duration" in that sense in which, as he says, "' we cannot conceive any duration with- out succession" (Essay, ii. 16, 12).

How do we know that the distance between our ideas cannot vary beyond certain bounds? This is not altogether a psychological question ; but we are perhaps entitled to note some interesting facts bearing upon it which may also serve to connect the perceptions of duration and suc- cession, If we make a Savart's wheel with a single tooth revolve slowly, say in three-quarters of a second, it will be found that in the long-run we estimate this interval correctly,—slight overestimates and slight underestimates occurring indifferently. If we next place a second tooth opposite the first, letting the wheel revolve as before, so as to divide the three-quarters of a second into two inter- vals, we shall on the average overestimate it, and must increase the whole period to reach a new point of indiffer- ence. With two other teeth at right angles to the first two, the three-quarters of a second will appear longer still, and the time of a revolution must be still more increased before we shall cease to overestimate it. Ifwe next employ, say, six teeth, 60° apart, the wheel revolving as at first, we shall detect ourselves attending to the alternate strokes, say to the first, third, and fifth, or perhaps to the third and the sixth; in this way, though we continue to over- estimate the total period, we can note the number and regularity of the subdivisions. If these, however, be yet further increased, we can no longer reproduce them, though still aware that the whole period is divided into parts. But by the time we have introduced about fifteen equi- distant teeth, although there is physically an alternation of noise and silence as before, we perceive only a continu- ous hum, which steadily changes in quality as the number of teeth is further increased. Facts like these not only show that we estimate duration primarily by the effects of attention, but also make it probable that such estimate is fairly constant, since it is always approximately the same physical interval that becomes blurred. Further, we see that, where the distance between successive presentations is too short for a separate fixation of attention upon each, we proceed to take them in groups. This procedure is facilitated by differences in the quality and intensity of the objects as well as by differences in the intervals be- tween them; hence among other things the zsthetie pro- perties of modulation and rhythm.

But, if our experience of time depends primarily upon acts of attention to a succession of distinct objects, it would seem that time, subjectively regarded, must be discrete and not continuous. This, which is the view

steadily maintained by the psychologists of Herbart's school, was implied if not stated by Locke, Berkeley, and Hume. Locke hopelessly confuses time as perceived and time as conceived, and can only save himself from pressing objections by the retort, 'It is very common to observe intelligible dis- courses spoiled by too much subtlety in nice divisions." But Ber- keley and Hume with the mathematical discoveries of Newton and Leibnitz before them could only protest that there was nothing answering to mathematical continuity in our experience. And, whereas Locke had tried to combine with his general psychological account the inconsistent position that "none of the distinct ideas we have of either [space or time] is without all manner of com- position," Berkeley declares, "For my own part, whenever I attempt to frame a simple idea of time, abstracted from the succession of ideas in my mind, which flows uniformly and is participated by all beings, I am lost and embrangled in inextricable difficulties. I

have no notion of it at all, only I hear others say it is infinitely divisible, and speak of it in such a manner as leads me to harbour

odd thoughts of my existence. . abstracted from the succession of ideas in our minds, it follows that the duration of any finite spirit must be estimated by the number of ideas or actions succeeding each other in that same spirit or mind"

. . Time therefore being nothing,

(Principles of Knowledge, 1. § 98). Hume, again, is at still greater

pains to show that "the ddea which we form of any finite quality is not infinitely divisible, but that by proper distinctions and separa- tions we may run this idea up to inferior ones, which will be perfectly

simple and indivisible . . . that the imagination reaches a mnt-

mum, and may raise up to itself an idea of whieh it cannot conceive any subdivision, and which cannot be diminished without a total annihilation" (Hwman Nature, pt. ii. § 1, Green's ed., p. 335).

‘At the first blush we are perhaps disposed to accept this account of our time-perception, as Wundt, ¢.g., does, and to regard the attri- bution of continuity as wholly the result of after-reflexion.! But

it may be doubted if this is really an exact analysis of the case.

Granted that the impressions to which we chiefly attend are dis-

tinet and discontinuous in their occupation of the focus of con-

sciousness, and that, so far, the most vivid element in our time-

experience is discrete; granted further that in recollection and expectation such objects are still distinct—all which seems to imply

that time is a mere plurality—yct there is more behind. Able

whole field of consciousness is not occupied by distinct objects,

neither are the changes in this field discontinuous. The experi-

mental facts above-mentioned illustrate the transition from a

succession the members of which are distinctly attended to to one in which they are indistinctly attended to, 7.¢., are not dis- continuous enough to be separately distinguished. Attention does

not move by hops from one definite spot to another, but, as Wundt himself allows, by alternate diffusion and concentration, like the foot of a snail, which never leaves the surface it is traversing. We have a clear presentation discerned as 4 or B when attention is gathered up; and, when attention spreads out, we have confused

presentations not admitting of recognition. But, though not

recognizable, such confused presentations are represented, and so

serve to bridge over the comparatively empty interval during which

attention is unfocused. 'Thus our perception of a period of time

is not comparable to so many terms ina series of finite units any more than it is to a series of infinitesimals. When attention is concentrated in expectation of some single impression, then, no doubt, it is brought to a very fine point ("zugespitzt," as Herbart would say); and a succession of such impressions would be repre- sented as relatively discrete compared with the representation of the scenery of a day-dream. But absolutely discrete it is not and cannot be. In this respect the truth is rather with Herbert Spencer, who, treating of this subject from another point of view, remarks, "When the facts are contemplated objectively, it becomes manifest that, though the changes constituting intelligence ap- proach to a single succession, they do not absolutely form one" (Psychology, i. § 180, p. 408).

On the whole, then, we may conclude that our concrete time-experiences are due to the simultaneous representa- tion of a series of definite presentations both accompanied and separated by more or fewer indefinite presentations more or less confused ; that, further, the definite presenta- tions have certain marks or temporal signs due to the movements of attention; that the rate of these movements or accommodations is approximately constant; and that each movement itself is primarily experienced as an intensity.

Feeling.

Such summary survey as these limits allow of the more elementary facts of cognition is here at an end ; so far the most conspicuous factors at work have been those of what might be termed our ideational mechanism. In the higher processes of thought we have to take more account of mental activity and of the part played by language. But it seems preferable, before entering upon this, to explore also the emotional and active constituents of mind in their more elementary phases. .

In our preliminary survey we have seen that psychical life consists in the main of a continuous alternation of receptive and reactive consciousness, 7.¢., in its earliest form, of alternations of sensation and movement. At a later stage we find that in the receptive phase ideation is added to sensation, and that in the active phase thought and fancy, or the voluntary

manipulation and control of the idea- tional trains, are added to the voluntary manipulation and control of the muscles. At this higher level also it is possible that either form of receptive consciousness may lead to either form of active: sensations may lead to thought rather than to action in the restricted

1 Comp. Wundt, Logik, vol. i. p. 482.

sense, and ideas apart from sensations may prompt to muscular exertion. There isa further complication still: not only may either sensations or ideas lead to either muscular or mental movements, but movements themselves, whether of mind or limb, may as merc presentations determine other movements of either kind. In this respect, however, movements and thoughts either in themselves or through their sensational and ideational accompaniments may be regarded as pertaining to the receptive side of consciousness. With these provisos, then, the broad generalization may hold that re- ceptive states lead through feeling to active states, and that presentations that give neither pleasure nor pain meet with no responsive action. But first the objection must be met that presenta- tions that are in themselves purely indifferent lead continually to very energetic action, often the promptest and most definite action. To this there are two answers. First, on the higher levels of psychical life presentations in themselves indifferent are often in- directly interesting as signs of, or as means to, other presentations that are more directly interesting. It is enough for the present, therefore, if it be admitted that all such indifferent presentations are without effect as often as they are not instrumental in furthering the realization of some desirable end. Sccondly, a large class of movements, such as those called sensori-motor and ideo-motor, are initiated by presentations that are frequently, it must be allowed, neither pleasurable nor painful. In all such cases, however, there is probably only an apparent exception to the principle of subjective selection. They may all be regarded as instances of another im- portant psychological principle which we have to deal with more fully by and by, viz., that voluntary actions, and especially those that either only avert pain or are merely subsidiary to pleasure- giving actions,

tend at length, as the effect of habit in the individual and of heredity in the race, to become "secondarily automatic," as it has been called. Such mechanical or instinctive dexterities make possible a more efficient use of present energies in securing pleasurable and interesting experiences, and, like the rings of former growths in a tree, afford a basis for further advance, as old interests pall and new ones present themselves. Here, again, it suffices for our present purpose if it be granted that there is a fair presumption in favour of supposing all such movements to have been originally initiated by feeling, as certainly very many of them were.

Of the feeling itself that intervenes between these sensory and motor presentations there is but little to be said. The chief points have been already insisted upon, viz., that it is not itself a presentation, but a purely sub- jective state, at once the effect of a change in receptive consciousness and the cause of a change in motor conscious- ness ; hence its continual confusion either with the move- ments, whether ideational or muscular, that are its expres- sion, or with the sensations or ideas that are its cause. For feeling as such is, so to put it, matter Of being rather than of direct knowledge ; and all that we know about it we

know from its antecedents or consequents in presentation.

stated, is too teleological to serve asa purely psychological principle, and, as generally formulated and illustrated, it takes account of matters quite outside the psychologist's ken. We are not now concerned to know why a bitter taste, eg., is painful or the gratification of an appetite pleasant, but what marks distinctive of all painful presenta- tions the one has and the other lacks. From a biological standpoint it may be true enough that the final cause of sexual and parental feelings is the perpetuation of the species; but this does not help us to ascertain what common character they have as actual sources of feeling for the individual. From the biological standpoint even the senile decadence and death of the individual may be shown to be advantageous to the race; but it would cer- tainly be odd to describe this as advantageous to the individual, so different are the two points of view. What we are in search of, although a generalization, has reference to something much more concrete than conceptions like race or

life, and does not require us to go beyond the con- sciousness of the moment to such ulterior facts as they imply.

Were it possible it would be quite unnecessary to examine in detail every variety of pleasurable and painful con- sciousness in connexion with a general inquiry of this sort. It will be best to enumerate at the outset the only cases that specially call for investigation. Feeling may arise mainly from (1) single sensations or movements, including in these what recent psychologists call their tone ; or it may be chiefly determined by (2) some combination or arrange- ment of these primary presentations,—hence what might be styled the lower esthetic feelings. We have thus among primary presentations a more material and a more formal cause or ground of feeling. The mere representa- tion of these sources of feeling involves nothing of moment: the idea of a bright colour or a bitter taste has not definite- ness or intensity enough to produce feeling ; and the ideal presentation of a harmonious arrangement of sounds or colours dees not in itself differ essentially as regards the feeling it occasions from the actual presentation. When we advance to the level at which there occur ideas more complex and more highly representative—or re-representa- tive, as Mr Spencer would say—than any we have yet con- sidered we can again distinguish between material and

| Causes Pure feeling, then, ranging solely between the opposite formal grounds of feeling. To the first we, might Ee 8 extremes of pleasure and pain, we are naturally led to in- | "7 (3) the se aan sympathetic, = religious feelings FeELINe. : this class will probably require but brief notice. The

quire whether there is any corresponding contrast in the causes of feeling on the one hand, and on the other in its manifestations and effects. To begin with the first ques- tion, which we may thus formulate: What, if any, are the invariable differences characteristic of the presentations or states of mind we respectively like and dislike; or, taking account of the diverse sources of feeling—sensuous, esthetic, intellectual, active—is there anything that we can predicate

second, consisting of (4) the intellectual and (5) the higher esthetic feelings, is more important. There is a special class of feelings, which might be distinguished from all the preceding as refler, since they arise from the

niemory or expectation of feelings; but in fact these are largely involved in all the higher feelings, and this brief reference to them will suffice ; of such hope, fear, regret, are examples.

1. The quality and intensity as well as the duration Sensa- and frequency of a sensation or movement all have to tions and do with determining to what feeling it gives rise. It Move

alike of all that are pleasurable and deny of all that are | painful, and vice versa? It isat once evident that at least

In presentations objectively regarded no such common ments,

characters will be found; if we find them anywhere it must be in some relation to the conscious subject, 7. in the fact of presentation itself. There is one important truth concerning pleasures and pains that may occur at once as an answer to our inquiry, and that is often ad- vanced as such, viz., that whatever is pleasurable tends to further and perfect life, and whatever is painful to disturb or destroy it. The many seeming exceptions to this law of self-conservation, as it has been called, probably all admit of explanation in conformity with it, so as to leave its substantial truth unimpeached.! But this law, however

i See Spencer, Data of Ethics, chaps. i.-iv.; G. H. Schneider, Freud und Leid des Mi enschengeschlechis, chap. i.

will be best to leave the last two out of account for a time. Apart from these, the pleasantness or painfulness of a movement appears to depend solely upon its intensity, that is to say, upon the amount of effort necessary to effect it, in such wise that a certain amount of exertion is agrec- able and any excess disagreeable. Some sensations also, such as light and sound, are agreeable if not too intense, their pleasantness increasing with their intensity up to a certain point, on nearing which the feeling rapidly changes and becomes disagreeable or even painful. Other sensa- tions, as bitter tastes, e.g., are naturally unpleasant, how- ever faint,—though we must allow the possibility of an acquired liking for moderately bitter or pungent flavours. But in every case such sensations produce unmistakable

manifestations of disgust, if at all intense. Sweet tastes, on the other hand, however intense, are pleasant to an unspoiled palate, though apt before long to become mawkish, like "sweetest honey, loathsome in lis own deliciousness," as confectioners' apprentices are said soon to find. The painfulness of all painful sensations or movements increases with their intensity without any assignable maximum being reached.

A comparison of examples of this kind, which it would be tedious to describe more fully and which are indeed too familiar to need much description, seems to show (1) that, so far as feeling is determined by the intensity of a pre- sentation, there is pleasure so long as attention can be adapted or accommodated to the presentation, and pain so soon as the intensity is too great for this; and (2) that, so far as feeling is determined by the quality of a presenta- tion, those that are pleasurable enlarge the field of con- sciousness and introduce or agreeably increase in intensity certain organic sensations, while those that are painful contract the field of consciousness and introduce or disagree- ably increase in intensity certain organic sensations. There are certain other hedonic effects due to quality the exa- mination of which we must for the present defer. Mean- while as to the first point it may be suggested, as at any rate a working hypothesis, that in itself any and every simple sensation or movement is pleasurable if there is attention forthcoming adequate to its intensity. In the earliest

and simplest phases of life, in which the presentation-

continuum is but little differentiated, it is reasonable to suppose that variation in the intensity of presentation preponderates over changes in the quality of presentation, and that to the same extent feeling is determined by the former and not by the latter. And, whereas this depend- ence on intensity is invariable, there is no ground for supposing the quality of any primary presentation, when not of excessive intensity, to be invariably disagreeable ; the changes above-mentioned in the hedonic effects of bitter tastes, sweet tastes, or the like tend rather to prove the contrary. This brings us to the second point, and it requires some elucidation. We need here to call to mind the con- tinuity of our presentations and especially the existence of a background of organic sensations or somatic conscious- ess, as it is

variously termed. By the time that qualita- tively distinct presentations have been differentiated from this common basis it becomes possible for any of these, without having the intensity requisite to affect feeling directly, to change it indirectly by means of the systemic sensations accompanying them, or, in other words, by their tone. The physiological concomitants of these changes of somatic tone are largely reflex movements or equivalents of movements, such as alterations in circulatory, respira- tory, and excretory processes. Such movements are psy- chologically movements no longer, and are rightly regarded as pertaining wholly to the sensory division of presenta- tions. But originally it may have been otherwise. To us now, these organic reflexes seem but part and parcel of the special sensation whose tone they form, and which they accompany even when that sensation, so far as its mere intensity goes, might be deemed indifferent. But perhaps at first the special qualities that are now through- out unpleasant may have been always presented with an excessive intensity that would be painful on this score alone, and the reflexes that at present pertain to them may then have been psychologically the expression of this pain.) At any rate it is manifestly unfair to refuse either

1 In the lowly organisms that absorb food directly through the skin such bitter juices as exist naturally might at once produce very violent effects, comparable, say, to scalding ; and the reflexes then established may have been continued by natural selection so as to save from

poisoning the higher organisms, whose absorbent surfaces are internal and only guarded in this way by the organ of taste. Some light is

,

to seek out the primitive effects of the sensations in ques- tion and allow for the workings of heredity, or to reckon this accompanying systemic feeling as part of them. The latter seems the readier and perhaps, too, the preferable course. A word will now suffice to explain what is meant by enlarging and contracting the field of consciousness and agreeably increasing or decreasing certain elements therein.

The difference in point is manifest on comparing the flow of spirits, buoyancy, and animation which result from a certain duration of pleasurable sensations with the lowness or depression of spirits, the gloom and heaviness of heart, apt to ensue from prolonged physical pain. Common language, in fact, leaves us no choice but to describe these contrasted states by figures which clearly imply that they differ in the range and variety of the presentations that make up consciousness, and in the quickness with which these succeed each other.? It is not merely that in hilarity as contrasted with dejection the train of ideas takes a wider sweep and shows greater liveliness, but as it were at the back of this, on the lower level of purely sensory ex- perience, certain organic sensations which are ordinarily indifferent acquire a gentle intensity, which seems by flow- ing over to quicken and expand the ideational stream, as we see, for instance, in the effects of mountain air and sunshine. Or, on the other hand, these sensations become so violently intense as to drain off and ingulf all available energy in one monotonous corroding care, an oppressive weight which leaves no place for free movement, no life or leisure to respond to what are wont to be pleasurable solicitations.®

As regards the duration and the frequency of presenta- tion, it is in general true that the hedonic effect soon attains its maximum, and then, if pleasant, rapidly de- clines, or even changes to its opposite. Pains in like manner decline, but more slowly, and without in the same sense changing to pleasures. The like holds of too frequent repe- tition. Physiological explanation of these facts, good as far as it goes, is, of course, at once forthcoming : sensibility is blunted, time is required for restoration, and so forth ; but at least we want the psychological equivalent of all this. In one respect we find nothing materially new; so far as continued presentation entails diminished intensity we have nothing but diminished feeling as a consequence ; so far as its continued presentation entails satiety the train of agreeable accompaninients ceases in which the pleasur- able tone consisted. But in another way long duration and frequent repetition produce indirectly certain charac-

thrown on questions of this kind by the very interesting experiments of Dr Romanes; for a general account of these see his Jelly-/fish, Star-fish, and Sea-urchins, chap. ix.

2 This is one among many cases in which the study of a vocabulary is full of instruction to the psychologist. The reader who will be at the trouble to compare the parallel columns under the heading "' Passive Affections," in Roget's Thesaurus of English Words and Phrases, will find ample proof both of this general statement and of what is said above in the text.

3 Observation and experiment show that the physical signs of pain in the higher animals consist in such changes as a lowered and weaker pulse, reduction of the surface temperature, quickened respiration, dilatation of the iris, and the like. And so far as can be ascertained these effects are not altogether the emotional reaction to pain but in large measure its actual accompaniments, the physical side of what we have called its fone. The following is a good description of these general characteristics of feeling :—" En méme temps, il se fait une série de mouvements gén¢raux de flexion, comme si l'animal voulait sc rendre plus petit, et offrir moins de surface 4 la douleur. II est intéressant de remarquer que, pour 'homme comme pour tous les animaux, on retrouve ces mémes mouvements généraux de flexion ct d'extension répondant aux sentiments différents de plaisir et de la douleur. Le plaisir répond 4 un mouvement d'épanouissement, de dilatation, d'extension. Au contraire, dans la douleur, on se rapetisse, on se referme sur soi; c'est un mouvement général de flexion" (C. Richet, L'Lomme et U' Intelligence: La Douleur, p. 9).

= io v © EO ib GY 69

teristic effects on feeling in consequence of habituation and accommodation. We may get used to a painful pre- sentation in such wise that we cease to be conscious of it as positively disagreeable, though its cessation is at once a source of pleasure ; in like manner we come to require things simply because it is painful to be without them, although their possession has long ceased to be a ground of positive enjoyment. This loss (or gain) consequent on accommodation! has a most important effect in changing the sources of feeling: it helps to transfer attention from mere sensations to what we may distinguish as interests. Combin- 2. Certain sensations or movements not separately un- ations of pleasant become so when presented together or in imme- sensa- diate succession ; and contrariwise, some combinations of tions aud : 2 of move- Sensations or of

movements may be such as to afford plea- ments. sure distinct from, and often greater than, any that they separately yield. Here again we find that in some cases the effect seems mainly to depend on intensity, in others mainly on quality. (i.) As instances of the former may be mentioned the pleasurableness of a rhythmic succession of sounds or movements, of syinmetrical forms and curved

painful combinations of different ungraduated colours. A comparison of these seems to justify the general statement that those colours yield good combinations that are far apart in the colour circle, while those near together are apt to be discordant. The explanation given, viz., that the one arrangement secures and the other prevents perfect retinal activity, seems on the whole satisfactory, —especially if we acknowledge the tendency of all recent investigations and distinguish sensibility to colour and sensibility to mere light as both psychologically and physiologically two separate facts. Thus, when red and green are juxtaposed, the red increases the saturation of the green and the green that of the red, so that both colours are heightened in brilliance. But such an effect is only pleasing to the child and the savage ; for civilized men the contrast is excessive, and colours less completely opposed, as red and blue, are preferred, each being a rest from the other, so that as the eye wanders to and fro over their border different elements are active by turns. Red and orange, again, are bad, in that both exhaust in a similar manner and leave the re- maining factors out of play.

outlines, of gentle crescendos and diminuendos in sound, and 3. The more or less spontaneous workings of imagina- Ideation of gradual variations of shade in colour, and the painfulness | tion, as well as that direct control of this working necessary 2nd in-

of flickering lights, “beats” in musical notes, false time, Ge false steps, false quantities, and the like. In all these, whenever the result is pleasurable, attention can be readily accommodated,—is, so to say, economically meted out ; and, whenever the result is painful, attention is surprised, balked, wasted, Thus we can make more movements and with less expenditure of energy when they are rhythmic than when they are not, as the performances of a ball- room or of troops marching to music amply testify. Of this economy we have also a striking proof in the ease with which

rhythmic language is retained. (ii.) As instances of the latter may be cited those arrangements of musical tones and of colours that are called harmonious or the opposite. Harmony, however, must be taken to have a different meaning in the two cases. When two or three tones harmonize there results, as is well known, a distinct pleasure over and above any pleasure due to the tones themselves. On the other hand, tones that are discordant are unpleasant in spite of any pleasantness they may have singly. Besides the negative condition of absence of beats, a musical interval to be pleasant must fulfil certain positive conditions, sufficiently expressed for our purpose by saying that two tones are pleasant when they give rise to few combination-tones, and when among these there are several that coimcide, and that they are unpleasant when they give rise to many combination-tones, and when among these there are few or none that coincide. 'Too many tones together prevent any from being distinct. But Where tones coincide the number of tones actually present 18 less than the number of possible tones, and there is a proportionate simplification, so to put it: more is com- manded and with less effort. A recent writer ? on harmony, m fact, compares the confusion of a discord to that of "trying to reckon up a sum in one's head and failing because the numbers are too high." A different explana- tion must be given of the so-called harmonies of colour. The pleasurable effect of graduations of colour or shade—to which, as Ruskin tells us, the rose owes its victorious beauty when compared with other flowers—has been already men- tioned : it is rather a quantitative than a qualitative effect. What we are now concerned with are the pleasurable or

1 It has been definitely formulated, but in physiological language, by Dr Bain as the Law of Novelty : "No second occurrence of any great shock or stimulus, whether pleasure, pain, or mere excitement, is ever fully equal to the first, notwithstanding that full time has been Siven for the nerves to recover from their exhaustion " (Afind and

Body, p. 51). Comp. also his Emotions and Will, 3d ed., p. 83. ~ Preyer, Akustische Untersuchungen, p. 59.

to thinking in the stricter sense, are always productive of pain or pleasure in varying degrees. Though the ex- position of the higher intellectual

processes has not yet been reached, there will be no inconvenience in at once taking account of their effects on feeling, since these are fairly obvious and largely independent of any analysis of the processes themselves. It will also be convenient to include under the one term "intellectual feelings," not only the feelings connected with certainty, doubt, per- plexity, comprehension, and so forth, but also what the Herbartian psychologists—whose work in this department of psychology is classical—have called par excellence the formal feelings,—that is to say, feelings which they regard as entirely determined by the form of the flow of ideas, and not by the ideas themselves. Thus, be the ideas what they may, when their onward movement is checked by divergent or obstructing lines of association, and especi- ally when in this manner we are hindered, say, from re- collecting a name or a quotation (as if, e.g., the names of Archimedes, Anaximenes, and Anaximander each arrested the clear revival of the other), we are conscious of a certain strain and oppressiveness, which give way to momentary relief when at length what is wanted rises into distinct consciousness and our ideas resume their flow. Here again, too, as in muscular movements, we have the con- trast of exertion and facility, when "thoughts refuse to flow" and we work 'invita Minerva," or when the appro- priate ideas seem to unfold and display themselves before us like a vision before one inspired. To be confronted with propositions we cannot reconcile—z.e., with what is or appears inconsistent, false, contradictory—is apt to be painful; the recognition of truth or logical coherence, on the other hand, is pleasurable. The feeling in either case is, no doubt, greater the greater our interest in the subject- matter ; but the mere conflict of ideas as such is in itself depressing, and the discernment of agreement, of the one in the many, in like manner a distinct satisfaction. Now in the one case we are conscious of futile efforts to com- prehend as one ideas which the more distinctly we appre- hend them for the purpose only prove to be the more completely and diametrically opposed ; we can only affirn and mentally envisage the one by denying and suppressing the representation of the other, and yet we have to strive to predicate both and to embody them together in the same mental image. Attention is like a house divided against itself: there is effort but it is not effective, for the field of consciousness is narrowed and the flow of ideas

Higher esthetic feelings.

arrested. When, on the other hand, we discern a common principle among diverse and apparently disconnected par- ticulars, instead of all the attention we can command being taxed in the separate apprehension of these "disjecta mem- bra," they become as one, and we seem at once to have at our disposal resources for the command of an enlarged field and the detection of new resemblances.

4, Closely related to these formal intellectual feelings are certain of the higher esthetic feelings. A reference to some of the commonplaces of esthetical writers may be sufficient briefly to exhibit the leading characteristics of these feelings. There is a wide agreement among men in general as to what is beautiful and what is not, and it is the business of a treatise on empirical zsthetics from an analysis of these matters of fact to generalize the principles of taste,—to do, in fact, for one source of pleasure and pain what we are here attempting in a meagre fashion for all. And these principles are the more important in their bearing upon the larger psychological question, be- cause among esthetic effects are reckoned only such as are pleasing or otherwise in themselves, apart from all recog- nition of utility, of possession, or of ulterior gratification of any kind whatever. Thus, if it should be objected that the intellectual satisfaction of consistency is really due to its utility, to the fact that what is incompatible and incom- prehensible is of no avail for practical guidance, at least this objection will not hold against the esthetic principle of wnity in variety. In accordance with this primary maxim of art criticism, at the one extreme art productions are con- demned for monotony, as incapable of sustaining interest because " empty," "bald," and "poor"; at the other ex- treme they are condemned as too incoherent and discon- nected to furnish a centre of interest. And those are held as so far praiseworthy in which a variety of elements, be they movements, forms, colours, or incidents, instead of conflicting, all unite to enhance each other and to form not merely amass but a whole. Another principle that serves to throw light on our inquiry is that which has been called the principle of economy,! viz., that an effect is pleasing in proportion as it is attained by little effort and simple means. The brothers Weber in their classic work on human locomotion discovered that those movements that are eesthetically beautiful are also physiologically correct ;

grace and ease, in fact, are wellnigh synonymous, as Herbert Spencer points out, and illustrates by apt instances of graceful attitudes, motions, and forms. The same writer,? again, in seeking for a more general law underlying the current maxims of writers on composition and rhetoric is led to a special formulation of this principle as applied to style, viz., that "economy of the recipient's attention is the secret of effect."

Perhaps of all esthetical principles the most wide- reaching, as well as practically the most important, is that which explains esthetic effects by association. Thus, to take one example where so many are possible, the croak- ing of frogs and the monotonous ditty of the cuckoo owe their pleasantness, not directly to what they are in them- selves, but entirely to their intimate association with spring-time and its gladness. At first it might seem, therefore, that there is nothing fresh in this principle relevant to our present inquiry, since a pleasure that is only due to association at once carries back the question to its sources, so that in asking why the spring, for ex- ample, is pleasant we should be returning to old ground. But this is not altogether true ; wxsthetic effects call up not

1 Compare Fechner, Vorschule der Aesthctik, ii. p. 263. Fechner's full style for it is " Princip der Skonomischen Verwendung der Mittel oder des kleinsten Kraftmasses."

2 Essays, Scientific, Political, and Speculative, vol. ii., Ess. I. and VIL.

merely ideas but ideals. A great work of art improves upon the real in two respects: it intensifies and it trans- figures. It is for art to gather into one focus, cleared from dross and commonplace, the genial memories of a lifetime, the instinctive memories of a race ; and, where theory can only classify and arrange what it receives, art— in a measure free from "the literal unities of time and place"—creates and glorifies. Still art eschews the abstract and speculative ; however plastic in its hands, the material wrought is always that of sense. We have already noticed more than once the power which primary presentations have to sustain vivid re- presentations, and the bearing of this on the esthetic effects of works of art must be straight- way obvious. The notes and colours, rhymes and rhythms,

forms and movements, which produce the lower esthetic feelings also serve as the means of bringing into view, and maintaining at a higher level of vividness, a wider range and flow of pleasing ideas than we can ordinarily command.

5. When we reach the level at which there is distinct Egoistic

self-consciousness (comp. p. 84), we have an important class of feelings determined by the relation of the presentation of self to the other contents of consciousness. the knowledge of other selves advances part passu with that of one's own self, so along with the egoistic feelings appear certain social or altruistic feelings. The two have much in common; in pride and shame, for example, account is taken of the estimate other persons form of us and of our regard for them; while, on the other hand, when we admire or despise, congratulate or pity another, we have always present to our mind a more or less definite conception of self in like circumstances. It will therefore amply serve all the ends of our present inquiry if we briefly survey the leading characteristics of some contrasted egoistic feelings, such as self-complacency and disappoint- ment. When a man is pleased with himself, his achieve- ments, possessions, or circumstances, such pleasure is the result of a comparison of his present position in this respect with some former position or with the position of some one else. Without descending to details, we may say that two prospects are before him, and the larger and fairer is recognized as his own. Under disappointment or reverse the same two pictures may be present to his mind, but accompanied by the certainty that the better is not his or is his no more. So far, then, it might be said that the contents of his consciousness are in each case the same, the whole difference lying in the different relationship to self. But this makes all the difference even to the contents of his consciousness, as we shall at once see if we consider its active side. Even the idlest and most thoughtless mind teems with intentions and expectations, and in its prosperity, like the fool in the parable, thinks to pull down its barns and build greater, to take its ease, eat, drink, and be merry. The support of all this pleasing show and these far-reaching ainis is, not the bare knowledge of what abundance will do, but the reflexion— These many goods are mine. In mind alone final causes have a place, and the end can produce the beginning ; the prospect of a

summer makes the pre- sent into spring. But action is paralysed or impossible when the means evade us—

- *Now drops at once the pride of awful state, The golden canopy, the glittering plate,"*

and a bleak and wintry barrenness is filled with the emptiness of despair. In so far as a man's life consists in the abundance of the things he possesseth, we see then why it dwindles with these. The like holds where self-complacency or displicency rests on a sense of personal worth or on the honour or affection of others.

And 5 feelings,

um-

PeYec OL OG ¥

We are now at the end of our survey of certain .typical

uaryand pleasurable and painful states. The answer to our in-

sult. quiry which it seems to suggest is that there is pleasure | tinuous pain to fall asleep, since in this state consciousness in proportion as a maximum of attention is effectively | is rapidly restricted both as to intensity and range. This exercised, and pain in proportion as such effective atten- | statement is entirely true as regards the intensity and tion is frustrated by distractions, shocks, or incomplete substantially true as regards the range, at least of the and faulty adaptations, or fails of exercise, owing to the | higher consciousness: certain massive and agreeable organic . narrowness of the field of consciousness and the slowness | sensations pertain to falling asleep, but the variety of . and smallness of its changes. Something must be said in | presentations at all events grows less. But then the explication of this formula, and certain objections that capacity to attend is also rapidly declining ; even a slight might be made to it must be considered. First of all, it intruding sensation entails an acute sense of strain in one i implies that feeling is determined partly by quantitative, | sense, in place of the massive pleasure of repose throughout; | or, as we might say, material,

conditions, and partly by | and any voluntary concentration either in order to move conditions that are formal or qualitative. As regards the | or to think involves a like organic conflict, futile effort, former, both the intensity or concentration of attention | and arrest of balmy ease. There is as regards the more and its diffusion or the extent of the field of consciousness | definite constituents of the field of consciousness a close have to be taken into account. Attention, whatever else | resemblance between natural sleepiness and the state of it is, is a limited quantity— monotonous humdrum we call tedium or ennui; and yet Pluribus intentus minor est ad singula sensus— the very same excitement that would relieve the one by to quote Hamilton's pet adage. Moreover, as we have | dissipating the weariness of inaction would disturb the seen, attention requires time. If, then, attention be dis- | other by renewing the weariness of action: the one is tributed over too wide a field, there isa corresponding loss | commensurate with the resources of the moment, the other | of intensity, and so of distinctness: we tend towards a | isnot. Thus the maximum of effective attention in question succession of indistinguishables—indistinguishable, there- | is, as Aristotle would say, 4 maximum "relative to us." fore, from no succession, We must not have more pre- | It is possible, therefore, that a change from a wider to sentations in the field of consciousness than will allow of | a narrower field of consciousness may be a pleasurable some concentration of attention: a maximum diffusion | change, if attention is more effectively engaged. Strictly will not do. A maximurh concentration, in like manner— | speaking, however, the so-called negative pleasures of rest even if there were no other objection to it—would seem | do not consist in a mere narrowing of the field of conscious- to conflict with the general conditions of consciousness, | Ness so much as in a change in the amount of concentration, inasmuch as a single simple presentation, however intense, | Massive organic sensations connected with restoration take would admit of no differentiation, and any complex pre- the place of the comparatively acute sensations of jaded sentation is in some sort a plurality. The most effective | powers forced to work, We have, then, in all cases to attention, then, as regards its quantitative conditions, | bear in mind this subjective relativity of all pleasurable must lie somewhere between the two zeros of complete | or painful states of consciousness. indifference and complete absorption. If there be an But there is still another and more serious difficulty to Do plea- excess of diffusion, effective attention will increase up

to | face. It has long been a burning question with theoretical sures a certain point as concentration increases, but beyond that | moralists whether pleasures differ only quantitatively or aan point will decrease if this intensification continues to in- | differ qualitatively as well, whether psychological analysis tively : crease ; and wce versa, if there be an excess of concentra- | Will justify the common distinction of higher and lower tion. But, inasmuch as these quantitative conditions | pleasures or force us to recognize nothing but differences involve a plurality of distinguishable presentations or | of degree, of duration, and so forth,—as expounded, e., changes in consciousness, the way is open for formal con- | by Bentham, whose cynical mot, "Pushpin is as good as ditions as well. Since different presentations consort | poetry provided it be as pleasant," was long a stumbling- differently when above the threshold of consciousness | block in the way of utilitarianism. The entire issue here together, one field may be wider and yet as intense as | is confused by an ambiguity in terms that has been already . another, or intenser and yet as wide, owing to a more | noticed: pleasure and pleasures have not the same conno- advantageous arrangement of its constituents,1 tation. By a pleasure or pleasures we mean some assign- gative The doctrine here developed, viz., that feeling depends | able presentation or presentations which are pleasant, —i.e.,

a- mes,

on efficiency, is in the main as old as Aristotle ; all that has been done-is to give it a more accurately psychological expression, and to free it from the implications of the faculty theory, in which form it was expounded by Hamil- ton, Of possible objections there are at least two that we must anticipate, and the consideration of which will

l As it is impossible to say that any distinguishable presentation is absolutely simple, the hypothesis of subconsciousness would leave us free to assume that any pleasantness or unpleasantness that cannot be explained on the score of intensity is due to some obscure harmony or discord, compatibility or incompatibility, of elements not separately discernible. But this, though tempting, is not really a very scientific procedure, If a particular presentation is pleasurable or painful in such wise as to lead to a redistribution of attention, it is reasonable to look for an explanation

primarily in its connexion with the rest of the field of consciousness. Moreover, it is obvious—since what takes Place in subconsciousness can only be explained in analogy with what takes place in consciousness—that, if we have an inexplicable in the one, We tnust have a corresponding inexplicable in the other. If the feeling produced by what comports itself as a simple presentation cannot be explained by what is in consciousness, we should be forced to admit that some presentations are unpleasant simply because they are un- Pleasant—an inexplicability which the hypothesis of subconsciousness might push farther back but would not remove,

71

help to make the general view clearer, F irst, it may be urged that, according to this view, it ought to be one con-

afford pleasure ; by pleasure simply is meant this subject- ive state of feeling itself. The former, like other objects of knowledge, admit of classification and comparison: we may distinguish them as coarse or as noble, or, if we will, as cheap and wholesome. But, while the causes of feeling are manifold, the feeling itself is a subjective state, varying only in intensity and duration. The best evidence of this lies in the general character of the actions that ensue through feeling,—the matter which has next to engage us. Whatever be the variety in the sources of pleasure, what- ever be the moral or conventional estimate of their worthi- ness, if a given state of consciousness is pleasant we seek to retain it, if painful to be rid of it: we prefer greater pleasure before less, less pain before greater, This is, in fact, the whole meaning of preference as a psychological term. Wisdom and folly prefer each the course which the other rejects. Both courses cannot, indeed, be objectively preferable ; that, however, is not a matter for psychology. But, as soon as reflexion begins, exceptions to this primary principle of action seem to arise continually, even though we regard the individual as a law to himself. Such excep-

72

tions, however, we may presently find to be apparent only. At any rate the principle is obviously true before reflexion begins,—true so long as we are dealing with actually present sources of feeling, and not with their re-

presenta- tions, But to admit this is psychologically to admit everything, at least if mind is to be genetically explained. Assuming, then, that we start with only quantitative variations of feeling, we have to attempt to explain the development of formal and qualitative differences In the grounds of feeling. But, if aversions and pursuits result from incommensurable states of pain and pleasure, there seems no other way of saving the unity and continuity of the subject except by a speculative assumption,—the doc- trine known as the freedom of the will. The one position involves the other, and the more scientific course 1s to avoid both as far as we can.

The question, then, is: How, if action depends in the last resort on a merely quantitative difference, could it ever come about that what we call the higher sources of feeling should supersede the lower? If it is only quantity that turns the scales, where does quality come in, for we cannot say, ¢.g., that the astronomer experiences a greater thrill of delight when a new planet rewards his search than the hungry savage in finding a clump of pig-nuts ? Tempora mutantur, nos et mutamur in illis contains the answer in brief. We shall understand this answer better if we look at a parallel case, or what is really our own from another point of view. We distinguish between higher and lower forms of life: we might say there is more life in a large oyster than in a small one, other things being equal, but we should regard a crab as possessing not necessarily more life—as measured by waste of tissue— but certainly as manifesting life in a higher form. How, in the evolution of the animal kingdom, do we suppose this advance to have been made? The tendency at any one moment is simply towards more life, simply growth ; but this process of self-preservation imperceptibly but steadily modifies the self that is preserved. The creature is bent only on filling its skin; but in doing this as easily as may be it gets a better skin to fill, and accordingly seeks to fill it differently. Though cabbage and honey are what they were before, they have changed relatively to the grub now it has become a butterfly. So, while we are all along preferring a more pleasurable state of consciousness before a less, the content of our conscious- ness is continually changing; the greater pleasure still outweighs the less, but the pleasures to be weighed are either wholly different, or at least are the same for us no more. What we require, then, is not that the higher pleasures shall always afford greater pleasure than the lower did, but that to advance to the level of life on which pleasure is

derived from higher objects shall on the whole be more pleasurable and less painful than to remain behind. And this condition seems provided in the fact of accommodation above referred to (p. 69) and in the important fact that attention can be more effect- ively expended by what we may therefore call improve- ments in the form of the field of consciousness. But when all is said and done a certain repugnance is apt to arise against any association of the differences between the higher and lower feelings with differences of quantity. Yet such repugnance is but another outcome of the com- mon mistake of supposing that the real is obtained by pulling to pieces rather than by building up.

- *Do not all charms fly At the mere touch of cold philosophy ?"*

But no logical analysis—nay, further, no logical synthesis —is adequate to the fulness of things. For the rest, such aversion is wholly emotional, and has no more an intel-

lectual element in it than has the disgust we feel on first witnessing anatomical dissections.'

Emotional and Conative Action.

We turn now from the causes of feeling to its manifesta- tions or effects, and have here in like manner to inquire whether there is in these also any contrast corresponding to the opposing extremes of pleasure and pain. We have already seen reasons for dismissing reflex movements or movements not determined by feeling as psychologically secondary, the effects of habit and heredity, and for re- garding those diffusive movements that are immediately expressive of feeling as primordial,—such movements as are strictly purposive being gradually selected or elaborated from them. But some distinction is called for among the various movements expressive of emotion; for there is more in these than the direct effect of feeling regarded as merely pleasure or pain. It has been usual with psycho- logists to confound emotions with feeling, because intense feeling is essential to emotion. But, strictly speaking, a state of emotion is a complete state of mind, a psychosis, and not a psychical element, if we may so say. Thus in

anger we have over and above pain a more or less definite object as its cause, and a certain characteristic reactive display —frowns, compressed lips, erect head, clenched fists, in a word, the combative attitude—as its effect, and similarly of other emotions ; so that generally in the par- ticular movements indicative of particular emotions the primary and primitive effects of feeling are overlaid by what Darwin has called serviceable associated habits. The purposive actions of an earlier stage of development become, though somewhat atrophied as it were, the emo- tive outlet of a later stage: in the circumstances in which our ancestors worried their enemies we only show our teeth. We must, therefore, leave aside the more complex emotional manifestations and look only to the simplest effects of pleasure and of pain, if we are to discover any fundamental contrast between them.?

Joy finds expression in dancing, clapping the hands, and meaningless laughter, and these actions are not only pleasurable in themselves but such as increase the existing pleasure. Attention is not drafted off or diverted; but rather the available resources seem reinforced, so that the old expenditure is supported as well as the new. To the pleasure on the receptive side is added pleasure on the active side. The violent contortions due to pain, on the other hand, are painful in themselves, though less intense than the pains from which they withdraw attention : they are but counter-irritants that arrest or inhibit still more painful thoughts or sensations. Thus, according to Darwin, "sailors who are going to be flogged sometimes take a piece of lead into their mouths in order to bite it with their utmost force, and thus to bear the pain." When in this way we take account of the immediate effects as well

1 "To look at anything in its elements makes it appear inferior to what it seems asa whole. Resolve the statue or the building into stone and the laws of proportion, and no worthy causes of the former beautiful result seem now left behind. So, also, resolve a virtuous act into the passions and some quantitative law, and it seems to be rather destroyed than analysed, though after all what was there else it could be resolved into?" Sir A. Grant, Avristotle's Ethics, Essay TV., "The Doctrine of the Mean," vol. i. p. 210 (2d ed.).

; 2 Of the three principles Darwin advances in explanation of emo- tional expression that which he places last—perhaps because it admits of less definite illustration—seems both psychologically and physio- logically more fundamental than the more striking principle of service- able associated habits which he places first ; indeed the following, which is his statement of it, implies as much: "Certain actions which we recognize as expressive of certain states of mind are the direct result of the constitution of the nervous system, and have been from the first independent of the will, and to a large extent of habit " (Hxpression of the Emotions, p. 66). It is in illustration of this principle too that

Darwin describes the movements expressive of joy and grief, emotions which in some form or other are surely the most primitive of any.

EFFECTS OF FEEL- ING.

Emo- tional expres: | sion.

| |

\j

Pur-

_ posi _ posive

| action,

!

1

:

q

em Y € wo L0G Y

as of the causes of feeling, we find it still more strikingly true that only in pleasurable states is there an efficient expenditure of attention. It is needless now to dwell upon this point, although any earlier mention of it would hardly have been in place. But we should fail to realize the con- trast between the motor effects of pleasure and of pain if we merely regarded them as cases of diffusion. The in- tenser the feeling the intenser the reaction, no doubt, whether it be smiles or tears, jumping for joy, or writhing in agony ; but in the movements consequent on pleasure the diffusion is the result of mere exuberance, an overflow of good spirits, as we sometimes say, and these movements, as already remarked, are always comparatively purposeless or playful. Even the earliest expressions of pain, on the contrary, seem but so many efforts to escape from the cause of it; in them there is at least the blind purpose to flee from a definite ill, but in pleasure only the enjoyment of present fortune.

From Plato downwards psychologists and moralists have been fond of discussing the relation of pleasure and pain. It has been maintained that pain is the first and more fundamental fact, and pleasure nothing but relief from pain; and, again, on the other side, that pleasure is prior and positive, and pain only the negation of pleasure. So far as the mere change goes, it is obviously true that the diminution of pain is pro tanto pleasant, and the diminn- tion of pleasure pro tanto unpleasant ; and if relativity had the unlimited range sometimes assigned to it this would be all we could say. But we must sooner or later recognize the existence of a comparatively fixed neutral state, deviations from which, of comparatively short duration and of sufficient intensity, consti- tute distinct states of pleasure or pain. Such states, if not of liminal intensity, may then be further diminished without reversing their pleasurable or painful character, The turning- point here implied may, of course, gradually change too,—as a result, in fact, of the law of accommodation. Thus a long run of pleasure would raise "the hedonistic zero," while—to the small extent to which accommodation to pain is possible—a continuance of pain would lower it. But such admission makes no material difference where the actual feeling of the moment is alone concerned and retrospect out of the question. On the whole it seems, therefore, most reasonable to regard pleasure and pain as emerging out of a nentral state, which is prior to and distinct from both,—not a state of absolute indifference, but of simple coutentment, marked by no Special

active display. But it is by reference to such state of equi- librium or draGia that we see most clearly the superior volitional efficacy of pain upon which pessimists love to descant. Nobody," says Von Hartmann, "who had to choose between no taste at all for ten minutes or five minutes of a pleasant taste and then five minutes of an unpleasant taste, would prefer the last." Most men and all the lower animals are content "to let well alone."

To ascertain the origin and progress of purposive action it seems, then, that we must look to the effects of pain rather than to those of pleasure. Necessity is the mother of invention, and all things are full of labour. It is true that psychologists not unfrequently describe the earliest purposive movements as appetitive ; or at least they treat appetitive and aversive movements as co-ordinate and equally primitive, pleasures being supposed to lead to actions for their continuance as much as pains to actions for their removal. No doubt, as soon as the connexion between a pleasurable sensation and the appropriate action 1s completely established, as in the case of imbibing food, the whole process is then self ~~sustaining till satiety begins, But the point is that such facility was first acquired under the teaching of pain,—the pain of unsatisfied hunger. The term "appetite" is apt both by its etymology and its later associations to be misleading. What are properly called the "instinctive" appetites are—when regarded from their active side—movements determined by some existing un~~ easy Sensation. So far as their earliest manifestation in a particular individual is concerned, this urgency seems almost entirely of the nature of a vis a tergo; and the movements are only more definite than those simply ex- pressive of pain because of inherited pre-adaptation, on Which account, of course, they are called " instinctive." But what one inherits another must have acquired, and

we have agreed here to leave heredity on one side and consider only the original evolution.

But if none but psychological causes were at work this evolution would be very long and in its early stages very uncertain. At first, when only random movements ensue, we may fairly suppose both that the chance of at once making a happy lit would be small and that the number of chances, the

space for repentance, would also be small. Under such circumstances natural selection would hare to do almost everything and subjective selection almost nothing. So far as natural selection worked, we should have, not the individual subject making a series of tries and perfecting itself by practice, as in learning to dance or swim, but we should have those individuals whose stuff or structure happened to vary for the better surviving, increasing, and displacing the rest. How much natural selection, apparently unaided, can accomplish in the way of complicated adjustment we see in the adaptation of the form and colour of plants and animals to their environ- ment. Both factors, in reality, operate at once, aud it would be hard to fix a limit to either, though to our minds natural selection seems to lose in comparative im- portance as we advance towards the higher stages of life.

But psychologically we have primarily to consider sub- jective selection, 7.e., first of all, the association of parti- cular movements with particular sensations through the mediation of feeling. The sensations here concerned are mainly painful excitations from the environment, the re- curring pains of innutrition, weariness, &c., and pleasur- able sensations due to the satisfaction of these organic wants—pleasures which, although not a mere " filling up," as Plato at one time contended, are still preceded by pain, but imply over and above the removal of this a certain surplus of positive good. There seem only a few points to notice. (a) When the movements that ensue through pleasure are themselves pleasurable there is ordinarily no ground for singling out any one; such movements simply enhance the general enjoyment, which is complete in itself and so far cotitains no hint of anything beyond. (2) Should one of these spontaneous movements of pleasure chance to cause pain, no doubt such movement is speedily arrested. Probably the most immediate connexion possible between feeling and purposive action is that in which a painful movement leads through pain to its own suppres- sion. But such connexion is not very fruitful of conse- quences, inasmuch as it only secures what we may call internal training and does little to extend the relation of the individual to its environment. (c) Out of the irregular, often conflicting movements which indirectly relieve pain some one may chance to remove the cause of it altogether. Upon this movement, the last of a tentative series, attention, released from the pain, is concentrated ; and in this way the evil and the

reniedy become so far associated that on a recurrence of the former the many diffused movements become less, and the one purposive movement more, pronounced ; the one effectual way is at length established and the others, which were but pallia- tives, disappear. (d) When things have advanced so far that some one definite movement is definitely represented along with the painful sensation it remedies, it is not long before a still further advance is possible and we have pre- ventiwe movements, Thanks to the orderliness of things, dangers have their premonitions, After a time, therefore, the occurrence of some signal sensation revives the image of the harm that has previously followed in its wake, and a movement—either like the first, or another that has to be selected from the random tries of fear—occurs in time to avert the impending ill. (e) In like manner, provided the cravings of appetite are felt, any signs of the presence of pleasurable objects prompt to movements for their enjoy-

ment or appropriation. In these last cases we have action determined by perceptions. The cases in which the sub- ject is incited to action by ideas as distinet from percep- tions require a more detailed consideration ; such are the facts mainly covered by the term “ desire. ‘ ae

By the time that ideas are sufficiently self-sustaining to form trains that are not wholly shaped by the circum- stances of the present, entirely new possibilities of action are opened up. We can desire to live again through ex- periences of which there is nothing actually present to remind us, and we can desire a new experience which as yet we only imagine. We often, no doubt, apply the term to the simpler states mentioned under (e) in the last paragraph : the fox in the fable is said to have desired the grapes he vilified because out of his reach. Again, at the other extreme it is usual to speak of a desire for honour, or for wealth, and the like; but such are not so much single states of mind as inclinations or habitual desires. Moreover, abstractions of this kind belong to a more advanced stage of development than that at which desire begins, and of necessity imply more complicated

grounds of action than we can at present examine. The essential characteristics of desire will be more apparent if we suppose a case somewhere between these extremes, A busy man reads a novel at the close of the day, and finds himself led off by a reference to angling or tropical scenery to picture himself with his rods packed en rowte for Scot- land, or booked by the next steamer for the fairyland of the West Indies. Presently, while the ideas of Jamaica or fishing are at least as vividly imagined as before, the fancied preparations receive a rude shock as the thought of his work recurs. Some such case we may take as typical and attempt to analyse it.

First of all it is obviously true, at least of such more concrete desires, that what awakens desire at one time fails to do so at another, and that we are often so absorbed or content with the present as not to be amenable to (new) desires at all, A given X or Y cannot, then, be called desirable per se, it is only desirable by relation to the con- tents of consciousness at the moment. Of what nature is this relation? (1) At the level of psychical life that we have now reached very close and complete connexions have been formed between ideas and the movements necessary for their realization, so that when the idea is vividly present these movements are apt to be nascent. This association is the result of subjective selection—+.e., of feeling—but, being once established, it persists like other associations independently of it. (2) Those movements are especially apt to become nascent which have not been recently exe- cuted, which are therefore fresh and accompanied by the organic sensations of freshness, but also those which are frequently executed, and so from habit readily aroused. The latter fact, which chiefly concerns habitual desires, may be left aside fora time. (3) At times, then, when there is a lack of present interests, or when these have begun to wane, or when there is positive pain, attention is ready to fasten on any new suggestion that calls for more activity, requires a change of active attitude, or promises relief. Such spontaneous concentration of attention ensures greater vividness to the new idea, whatever it be, and to its be- longings. In some cases this greater vividness may suffice. This 1s most likely to happen when the new idea affords intellectual occupation, and this is at the time congenial, or with indolent and imaginative persons who prefer dreaming to doing. (4) But when the new idea does not lead off the pent-up stream of

action by opening out fresh channels, when, instead of this, it is one that keeps them nee upon itself in an attitude comparable to expectation,

hen we have desire. In such a state the intensity of the re-presentation 1s not adequate to the intensity of the

incipient actions it has aroused. This is most obvious when the latter are directed towards sensations or percepts, and the former remains only an idea. If it were possible by concentrating attention to convert ideas into percepts, there would be an end of most desires: "if wishes were horses beggars would ride." (5) But our voluntary power over movements is in general of this kind: here the fiat may become fact. When we cannot hear we can at least listen, and, though there be nothing to fill them, we can at least hold out our hands. It would seem, then, that the source of desire lies essentially in this excess of the active reaction above the intensity of the re-presentation (the one constituting the "impulse," the other the "object" of desire, or the desideratum), and that this disparity rests ultimately on the fact that movements have, and sensations have not, a subjective initiative. (6) The impulse or striving to act will, as already hinted, be stronger the greater the available energy, the fewer the present outlets, and, habits apart, the fresher the new opening for activity. (7) Finally, it is to be noted that, when such inchoate action can be at once consummated, desire ends where it begins: to constitute a definite state of desire there must be not only an obstacle to the realization of the desider- atum—if this were all we should rather call the state one of wishing—but an obstacle to its realization by means of the actions its representation has aroused.

However the desire may have been called forth, its intensity is primarily identical with the strength of this impulse to action, and has no definite or constant relation to the amount of pleasure that may result from its satisfac-tion. The feeling directly consequent on desire as a state of want and restraint is one of pain, and the reaction which this pain sets up may either suppress the desire or prompt to efforts to avoid or overcome the obstacles in its way. To inquire into these alternatives would lead us into the higher phases of voluntary action ; but we must first con- sider the relation of desire to feeling more closely.

Instances are by no means wanting of very imperious desires accompanied by the clear knowledge that their gratification will be positively distasteful! On the other hand it is possible to recollect or picture circumstances known or believed to be intensely pleasurable without any desire for them being awakened at all: we can regret or admire without desiring. Yet there are many psycho- logists who maintain that desire is excited only by the prospect of the pleasure that may arise through its grati- fication, and that the strength of the desire is propor- tional to the intensity of the pleasure thus anticipated. Quidquid petitur, petitur sub specie bont is their main formula. The plausibility of this doctrine rests partly upon a seemingly imperfect analysis of what strictly per- tains to desire and partly on the fact that it is substantially true both of what we may call ‘ presentation-prompted ” action, which belongs to an earlier stage than desire, and of the more or less rational action that comes later. In the very moment of enjoyment it may be fairly supposed that action is sustained solely by the pleasure received and is proportional to the intensity of that pleasure. But there is here no re-presentation and no seeking; the con- ditions essential to desire, therefore, do not apply. Again, in rational action, where both are present, it may be true —to quote the words of an able advocate of the view here controverted—that “our character as rational beings is to desire everything exactly according to its pleasure value.” ? But consider what such conceptions as the good, pleasure value, and rational action involve, Here we have foresight and calculation, regard for self as an object of permanent

1 As such an instance may: be cited Plato’s story of Leontius, the

*son of Agleon, in fep., iv. 489 fin. * Bain, Emotions and Will, 3d ed., p. 488.*

interest,—Butler’s cool self-love; but desire as such is blind, without either the present certainty of sense or the assured prevision of reason. Pleasure in the past, no doubt, has usually brought about the association between the

representation of the desired object and the movement for its realization; but neither the recollection of this pleasure nor its anticipation is necessary to desire, and

interest to ascertain the general mode of its elaboration : but as to this the reader must consult the article PHttotocy (vol. xviii. p. 766 sq.) Our space will only allow us to note in what way language, when it already exists, is instru- mental in the development as distinct from the communi cation of thought. But, first of all, what in general is thinking, of which language is the instrument 2

even when present they do not determine what urgency it will have. The best proof of this lies in certain habitual

In entering upon this inquiry we are really passing one of the Distinc- hardest and fastest lines of the old psychology,—that between sense tion be-

: Sane a ia and understanding. So long as it was the fashion to assume a tween desires. Pleasures are diminished by repetition, whilst multiplicity of faculties the need was less felt for a clear exposition sense

habits are strengthened by nit: ; if the intensity of desire, of their connexion. A man had senses and intellect much as he and un- therefore, were proportioned to the " pleasure value" of | had eyes and ears; the heterogeneity in the one case was no more derstand-

its gratification, the desire for renewed gratification should diminish as this pleasure grows less; but, if the present pain of restraint from action determines the intensity of desire, this should increase as the action becomes habitual. And observation seems to show that, unless prudence sug- gest the forcible suppression of belated desires or the active energies themselves fail, desires do in fact become more imperious, although less productive of positive pleasure, as time goes on.

In this there is, of course, no exception to the general principle that action is consequent on feeling,—a greater pleasure being preferred before a less, a less pain before a greater; for, though the feeling that follows upon its satisfaction be less or even change entirely, still the pain of the unsatisfied desire increases as the desire hardens into habit. It is also a point in favour of the position here taken that appetites, which may be compared to

inherited desires, certainly prompt to action by present pain rather than by prospective pleasure.

Intellection.

Desire naturally prompts to the search for the means to its satisfaction and frequently to a mental rehearsal of various possible courses of action, their advantages and disadvantages. Thus, by the time the ideational continu- um has become, mainly by the comparatively passive work- ing of association, sufficiently developed to furnish thinking material, motives are forthcoming for thinking to begin. It is obviously impossible to assign any precise time for this advance ; like all others, it is gradual. Fitfully, in strange circuinstances and under strong excitement, the lower animals give unmistakable signs that they can under- stand and reason. But thought as a permanent activity may be fairly said to originate in and even to depend upon the acquisition of speech. This indispensable instrument, which more than anything else enables our psychological individual to advance to the distinctly human or rational Stage, consists of gestures and vocal utterances, which were originally—and indeed are still to a large extent—emotional expressions! It is a question of the highest 0 a eae ee ee

1 It must here be noted that, though we still retain our psyehologieal standpoint, the higher development of the individual is only possible through intercourse with other individuals, that is to say, through society. Without language we should be mutually exelusivevand impenétrable, like so many physieal atoms ; with it each several mind may transcend

its own limits and share the minds of others. As a herd of individuals mankind would have a natural history as other animals have ; but

puzzling than in the other. But for psychologists who do not cut ing.

the knot in this fashion it is confessedly a hard matter to explain the relation of the two. The contrast of receptivity and activity hardly avails, for all presentation involves activity and esscntially the same activity, that of attention. Nor can we well maintain that the presentations attended to differ in kind, albeit such a view has been held from Plato downwards. N¢hdl est in intellectu quod non fuertt prius in sensu: the blind and deaf are

necessarily with- out some concepts that we possess. If pure being is pure nothing, pure thought is equally empty. Thought consists of a certain elaboration of sensory and motor presentations and has no content apart from thesc. We cannot even say that the forms of this ela- boration are psychologically a priort; on the contrary, what is epistemologically the most fundamental is the last to be psycho- logically realized. This is not only true as a fact ; it is also true of necessity, in so far as the formation of more concrete concepts is an essential preliminary to the formation of others more abstract, —those most abstract, like the Kantian categories, &c., being thus the last of all to be thought out or understood. And though this formative work is substantially voluntary, yet, if we enter upon it, the form at each step is determined by the so-called matter, and not by us; in this respect "the spontaneity of thought" is not really freer than the reccptivity of sense.2 "It is sometimes said that thought is synthetic, and this is true; but imagination is synthetic also; and the processes which yield the ideational train are the only processes at work in intellectual synthesis. Moreover, it would be arbitrary to say at what point the mere generic image ecases and the true concept begins,—so continuous are the two. No wonder, therefore, that English psychology has been prone to regard thought as only a special kind of perception—perceiving the agreement or disagreement of ideas—and the ideas themselves as mainly the products of association. Yet this is much like con- founding observation with experiment or invention,—the act of a cave-man in betaking himself toa drifting tree with that of Noah in building himself an ark. In reverie, and even in understanding the communications of others, we are comparatively passive spec- tators of ideational movements, non-yoluntarily determined. But in thinking or "intellection," as it has been conveniently termed, there is always a search for something more or less vaguely con- ceived, for a clue which will be known when it occurs by seeming to satisfy certain conditions. Thinking may be broadly described as solving a problem,—finding an AX that is B. In so doing we start from a comparatively fixed central idea or intuition and work along the several diverging lines of ideas associated with it,—hence far the aptest and in fact the oldest description of thought is that it is discursive. Emotional excitement—and at the outset the natural nian does not think much in cold blood—quickens the flow of ideas: what seems relevant is at once contemplated more closely, while what scenis irrelevant awakens little interest and receives little attention. At first the control

acquired is but very imperfect ; the actual course of thought of even a disciplined mind falls far short of the clearness, distinctness, and coherence of the logician's ideal. Familiar associations hurry attention away froin the proper topic, and thought becomes not only discursive but wandering ; in place of concepts of fixed and crystalline completeness, such as logie describes, we may find a congeries of ideas but unperfectly compacted into one generic idea, subject to continual transforma- tion and implicating much that is irrelevant and confusing.

Thus, while it is possible for thought to begin without Thought language, just as arts may begin without tools, yet language and lan- enables us to carry the same process enormously farther, 8%48°-

personality ean only emerge out of intercourse with persons, and of sueh intercourse language is the means, But, important as is this addition of a transparent and responsive world of minds to the dead

opaqueness of external things, the development of our psyehological individual still remains a purely individual development. The only new point is—and it is of the highest importance to keep it in sight-— that the materials of this development no longer consist of nothing but presentations elaborated by a single mind in aeeordance with psychieal laws. But that combination of individual experienees that converts subjective idiosyncrasy and isolation into the objeetivity and solidarity of Universal Mind only affects the individual in accordance with psyehieal laws, and we have no need therefore to overstep our proper domain in studying the advanee from the non-rational phase to the phase of reason.

In the first place it gives us an increased command of even such comparatively concrete generic images as can be

- *Locke, so often misrepresented, expressed this truth aceording to his lights in the following :—" The earth will not appear painted with flowers nor the fields covered with verdure whenever we have a mind to it… . Just thus is it with our understanding : all that is voluntary in our knowledge is the employing or withholding any of our faculties from this or that sort of objeets and a more or less accurate survey of them " (Hssay, iv. 18, 2).*

formed without it. The name of a thing or action becomes for one who knows the name as much an objective mark or attribute as any quality whatever can be. The form and colour of what we call an "orange" are perhaps even more intimately combined with the sound and utterance of this word than with the taste and fragrance which we regard as strictly essential to the thing. But, whereas its essential attributes often evade us, we can always com- mand its nominal attribute, in so far as this depends upon movements of articulation. By uttering the name (or hearing it uttered) we have secured to us, in a greater or less degree, that superior vividness and definiteness that pertain to images reinstated by impressions: our idea approximates to the fixity and independence of a percept (comp. p. 57 above). With young children and uncultured minds—who, by the way, commonly "think aloud "—the gain in this respect is probably more striking than those not confined to their mother-tongue or those used to an analytical handling of language at all realize' When things are thus made ours by receiving names from us and we can freely manipulate them in idea, it becomes easier mentally to bring together facts that logically belong together, and so to classify and generalize. For names set us free from the cumbersome tangibility and particu- larity of perception, which is confined to just what is pre- sented here and now. But as ideas increase in generality they diminish in definiteness and unity; they not only become less pictorial and more schematic, but they become vague and unsteady as well, because formed from a num- ber of concrete images only relatcd as regards one or two constituents, and not assimilated as the several images of the same thing may be. The mental picture answering to the word "horse" has, so to say, body enough to remain a steady object when under attention from time to time; but that answering to the word "animal" is perhaps scarcely twice alike. The relations of things could thus never be readily recalled or steadily controlled if the names of those relations, which as words always remain concrete, did not give us a definite hold upon them,— make them comprehensible. Once these 'airy nothings " have a name, we reap again the advantages a concrete constituent affords: by its means that which is relevant becomes more closely associated, and that which is irrele- vant—

abstracted from—falls off. When what answers to the logical connotation or meaning of a concept is in this way linked with the name, it is no longer necessary that such "matter or content" should be distinctly present in consciousness. It takes time for an image to raise its associates above the threshold; and, when all are there, there is more demand upon attention in proportion. There is thus a manifest economy in what Leibnitz happily styled "symbolic," in contrast to "intuitive" thinking. Our power of efficient attention is limited, and with words for counters we can, as Leibnitz remarks, readily perform operations involving very complex presentations, and wait till these operations are concluded before realizing and spreading out the net result in stcrling coin.

But this simile must not mislead us. In actual thinking there never is any complete separation between the symbol and the ideas symbolized: the movements of the one are never entirely suspended till those of the other are com- plete. "Thus," says Hume, "if, instead of saying, that in war the weaker have always recourse to negotiation, we should say, that they have always recourse to conquest, the custom which we have acquired of attributing certain relations to ideas still follows the words and makes us

occurred.

PS ye Gt Orirremer te

immediately perceive the absurdity of that proposition." ? How intimatcly the two are connected is shown by the surprises that give what point there is to puns, and by the small confusion that results from the existence of homo- nymous terms. The question thus arises—What are the properly ideational elements concerned in thought? Over this question psychologists long waged fight as either nominalists or conceptualists. The former maintain that what is imaged in connexion with a general concept, such as triangle, is some individual triangle "taken in a certain light,"> while the latter maintain that an "abstract idea" is formed embodying such constituents of the several par- ticulars as the concept connotes, but dissociated from the specific or accidental variations that distinguish one par- ticular from another. As often happens in such contro- versies, each party saw the weak point in the other. The nominalists easily showed that there was no distinct abstract idea representable apart from particulars; and the conccptualists

could as easily show that a particular presentation "considered in a certain light" is no longer merely a particular presentation nor yet a mere crowd of presentations. The very thing to ascertain is what this consideration ina certain light implies. Perhaps a speedier end might have been put to this controversy if either party had been driven to define more exactly what was to be understood by image or idea. Such ideas as are possible to us apart from abstraction are, as we have seen, revived percepts, not revived sensations, are complex total re-pre- sentations made up of partial rce-prescntations (comp. p. 57). Reproductive imagination is so far but a faint rehearsal of actual perceptions, and constructive imagina- tion but a faint anticipation of possible perceptions. In either case we are busied with elementary presentations complicated or synthesized to what are tantamount to intuitions, in so far as the forms of intuition remain in the idea, though the fact, as tested by movement, &c., is absent. The several partial re-presentations, however, which make up an idea might also be called ideas, not merely in the wide sense in which every nicntal object may be so called, but also in the narrower sense as second- ary presentations, 2.¢e., aS distinguished from primary pre- sentations or impressions. But sucli isolated images of an impression, even if possible, would no more be intuitions than the mere impression itself would be one: taken alone the one would be as free of space and time as is the other. Till it is settled, therefore, whether the ideational elements concerned in conception are intuitive complexes or some- thing answering to the ultimate elements of these, nothing further can be done.

In the case of what are specially called "concrete" as distinct from "abstract" conceptions—if this rough-and- ready, but unscientific, distinction may be allowed—the idea answering to the concept differs little from an intuition, and we have already remarked that the generic image (Gemeinbild of German psychologists) constitutes the con- necting link between imagination and conception. But even concerning these it is useless to ask what does one imagine in thinking, ¢g., of triangle or man or colour. We never—except for the sake of this very inquiry— attempt: to fix our minds in this manner upon some isolated conception ; in actual thinking ideas are not in conscious- ness alone and disjointedly but as part of a context. When the idea "man" is present, it is present in some proposition or question, as—Man is the paragon of animals; Jn man there

is nothing great but mind; and so on. It is quite clear that in understanding or mentally verifying such statements very different constituents out of the

- *Treatise of Human Nature, pt. i. § vii. (Green and Grose's ed.) p. 831. 3 So Hume, op. cit., p. 456.*

| General

ic and growth

of intel.

lection,

tory Cm Ob OGY

whole complex "man" are prominent in cach. Further, what is present to consciousness when a general term is understood will differ, not only with a different context, but also the longer we dwell upon it: we may either analyse its connotation or muster its denotation, as the con- text or the cast of our minds may determine. Thus what is relevant is alone prominent, and the more summary the attention we bestow the less the full extent and intent of the concept are displayed. To the nominalist's objection, that it is impossible to imagine a man without imagining him as either tall or short, young or old, dark or light, and so forth, the conceptualist might reply that at all events percepts may be clear without being distinct, that we can recognize a tree without recognizing what kind of tree it is, and that, moreover, the objection proves too much : for, if our image is to answer exactly to fact, we must represent not only a tall or a short man but a man of definite nature,—one not merely either light or dark, but of a certain precise complexion. But the true answer rather is that in conceiving as such we do not necessarily imagine @ man or « tree at all, any more than—if such an illustration may serve—in writing the equation to the parabola we necessarily draw a parabola as well.

The individuality of a concept is thus not to be con-

founded with the sensible concreteness of an intuition |

either distinct or indistinct, and "the pains and skill" which Locke felt were required in order to frame what he called an abstract idea are not comparable to the pains and skill that may be necessary to discriminate or decipher what is faint or fleeting. The material "framed " consists no doubt of ideas, if by this is meant that in thinking we work ultimately with the ideational continuum, but what results is never a mere intuitive complex nor yet a mere Sroup of such. The concept or "abstract idea " only emerges when a certain intelligible relation is established among the members of such a group; and the very same intuition may furnish the material for different concepts as often as a different gerstiges Band is drawn between them. The stuff of this bond, as we have seen, is the word, and this brings into the foreground of consciousness when necessary those elements—whetlier they form an intuition or not—which are relevant to the concept. Con- ception, then, is not identical with imagination, although the two terms are still often, and were once generally, regarded as synonymous. The same ultimate materials occur in each ; but in the one they start with and retain a sensible form, in the other they are elaborated into the form which is called " intelligible."

The distinctive character of this intellectual synthesis

ee lies, we have seen, in the fact that it is determined entirely

by what is synthesized, whether that be the elementary constituents of intuitions or general relations of whatever Kind among these. It differs, therefore, in being selective from the synthesis of ideation, which rests upon contiguity and unites together whatever occurs together. It differs also from any synthesis, though equally voluntary in its uuitiation, which is determined by a purely subjective preference, in that intellection depends upon objective relations alone. . Owing to the influence of logic, which has long been in a much more forward state than psycho- logy, it has been usual to resolve intellection into compari- Son, abstraction, and classification, after this fashion : ABCM and ABCN are compared, their differences M and N left out of sight, and the class notion ABC formed Including both; the same process repeated with ABC and ABD yields a higher class notion AB; and so on. But Our ideational continuum is not a mere string of ideas of concrete things, least of all such concrete things as this View implies. Not

till our daily life resembles that of a Museum porter receiving specimens will our higher mental

ne

activity be comparable to that of the savant who sorts such specimens into cases and compartments. What we perceive is a world of things in continual motion, waxing, waning, the centres of manifold changes, affecting us and apparently affected by each other, amenable to our action and, as it seems, continually interacting among themselves, Liven the individual thing, as our brief analysis of percep- tion attempts to show (comp. pp. 55, 56), is not a mere sum of properties which can be taken to pieces aud distributed like type, but a whole combined of parts very variously related. To understand intellection we must look at its actual development under the impetus of practical needs, rather than to logical ideals of what it ought to be. Like other forms of purposive activity, thinking is primarily undertaken asa means to an end, and especially the end of economy. It is often easier and always quicker to manipulate ideas than to manipulate real things; to the common mind the thoughtful man is one who "uses his head to save his heels." In all the arts of life, in the growth of language and institutions, in scientific explana- tion, and even in the speculations of philosophy, we may remark a stcady simplification in the Steps to a given end or conclusion, or —what is for our present inquiry the same thing—the attainment of better results with the Same means. The earliest machines are the most cum- brous and clumsy, the earliest speculations the most fanci- ful and anthropomorphic. Gradually imitation yields to

| invention, the natural fallacy of post hoc, ergo propter hoc

to methodical induction, till what is essential and effective is realized and appreciated and what is accidental and inert is discarded and falls out of sight. In this way man advances in the construction of a complete mental clue or master-key to the intricacies of the real world, but this key is still the counterpart of the world it enables us to control and explain.

To describe the process by which such insight is attained as a mere matter of abstraction deserves the stigma of "soulless blunder" which Hegel applied to it. Of course if attention is concentrated on X it must pro tanto be

abstracted from Y, and such command of attention may require "some pains and skill." But to see in this invariable accompaniment of thinking its essential feature is inuch like the schoolboy's saying that engraving consists in cutting fine shavings out of a hard block. The great thing is to find out what are the light-bearing and fruit- bearing combinations. Moreover, thinking does not begin with a conscious abstraction of attention from recognized differences in the way logicians describe. The actual process of generalization, for the most part at all events, is much simpler. The same name is apphed to different things or events because only their more salient features are perceived at all. Their differences, so far from being consciously and with effort left out of account, often can- not be observed when attention is directed to them: to the inexperienced all is gold that. glitters, Thus, and as an instance of the principle of progressive differentiation already noted (p. 42), we find genera recognized before species, and the species obtained by adding on differences, not the genus by abstracting from them. Of course such vague and indefinite concepts are not at first logically general: they only become so when certain common ele- ments are consciously noted as pertaining to presentations in other respects qualitatively different, as well as numer- ically distinct. But actually thinking starts from such more potential generality as is secured by the association of a generic image with a name. So far the material of thought is always general,—is freed, that is, from the local and temporal and other defining marks of percepts.

The process of thinking itself is psychologically much better described as (1) an analysis and (2) a re-synthesis of

Thought as ana- lytic.

Logical bias in

psycho- logy.

78

this material already furnished by the ideational trains. The logical resolution of thought into hierarchies of con- cepts arranged like Porphyry's tree, into j udgments uniting such concepts by means of a logical

copula, «kc , 18 the out- come of later reflexion—mainly for technical purposes— upon thought as a completed product, and entirely pre- supposes all that psychology has to explain, The logical theory of the formation of concepts by generalization (or abstraction) and by determination (or concretion)—1.e., by the removal or addition of defining marks—assumes the previous existence of the very things to be formed, for these marks or attributes—X's and Y's, A's and B's—are themselves already concepts. Moreover, the act of gener- alizing or determining is really an act of judgment, so that the logician's account of conception presupposes judgment, while at the same time his account of judgment presup- poses conception. But this is no evil; for logic does not essay to exhibit the actual genesis of thought but only an ideal for future thinking. Psychologically—that is to say, chronologically—the judgment is first. The growing mind, we may suppose, passes beyond simple perception when some striking difference in whiat is at the moment perceived is the occasion of a conflict of presentations (comp. p. 62). The stalking hunter is not instantly recognized as the de- stroying biped, because he crawls on all fours; or the scare- crow looks like him, and yet not like him ; for, though it stands on two legs, it never moves. There is no immedi- ate assiinilation :; percept and idea remain distinct till, on being severally attended to and compared, what is there is known in spite of the differences. Recognition under such circumstances is in itself a judgment; but of more account is the further judgment involved in it or accom- panying it—that which connects the new fact with the old idea. Though actually complex, as the result of a combination of impressions, generic images are not neces- sarily known as complexes when they first enter into judgments; as the subjects of such judgments they are but starting-points for predication,—It crawls; It does not move; and the like. Such impersonal judgments, according to most philologists, are in fact the earliest ; and we may reasonably suppose that by means of them our generic images have been partially analysed, and have attained to something of the distinctness and constancy of logical concepts. But the analysis is rarely complete: a certain confused and fluctuating residuum remains behind. The psychological concept merges at sundry points into those cognate with it,—in other words, the continuity of the underlying memory-train still operates ; only the ideal concepts of logic are in all respects totus, teres, atque rotun- dus. Evidence of this, if it seem to any to require proof, is obtainable on all sides, and, if we could recover

the first vestiges of thinking, would be more abundant still. But, if we agree that it is through acts of judgment which suc- cessivcly resolve composite presentations into elements that con- eepts first arise, it is still very necessary to inquire more carefully what these elements are. On the one side we have seen logicians comparing them to so many letters, and on the other psychologists enumerating the several sensible propertics of gold or wax—their colour, weight, texture, &¢.—as instances of such elements. In this way formal logic and sensationalist psychology have been but blind leaders of the blind. Language, which has enabled thought to ad- vance to the level at which reflexion about thought can begin, is now an obstacle in the way of a thorough analysis of it. A child or savage would speak only of "red" and "hot," but we of "redness " and heat. They would probably say, 'Swallows come when the ys oe lengthening and snipe when they are shortening"; we on Sere are spring and snipe are winter migrants," In- oe he sun shines and plants grow,' we should say, "Sun- g e cause of vegetation." In short, there is a tendenc to resolve all concepts into substantive concepts ; and the rea 4 of this is not far to seek. Whether the subject or starting- oa of our discursive thinking be actually what we perceive as aie or whether it be a quality, an action, an effectuation (i.e, a transi- tive action), a concrete spatial or temporal relation, or finally, a

garded as its property or attribute. characteristic of every completed concept to bea fixed and inde- pendent whole, as it were,

of ideas. } \ t concepts must naturally be those of the things that live and move

about us; hence, then—to seek no deeper reason for the present— this natural tendency, which language by providing distinct names powerfully seconds, to reify or personify not only things but every clement and relation of things which we can single out, or, in other words, to concrete our abstracts.1 reached this stage that logic begins. mal, logic, which intends to concern itself not with thinking but only with the most general structure of thought, is debarred from recognizing any their relations as terms in a proposition.

Pere OLOGY

resemblance or difference in these or in other respects, it becomes

by the very : of t unity, and all that can be affirmed concerning it may so far be re-

fact of being the central object of thought pro tanto a

It is, as we have seen, the

crystallized out of the still-fluent matrix Moreover, the earliest objects of thought and the earliest

It is when things have But ordinary, so-called for-

difference between concepts that does not affect Asa consequence it drifts inevitably into that compartmental logic or logic of extension which knows nothing of categories or predicables, but only of the one relation of whole and part qualitatively considered. It thus pushes this reduction to a common denomination to the utmost: its terms, grammiatically regarded, are always names and symbolize classes or compartments of things. From this point of view all dis- parity among concepts, save that of contradictory exclusion, and all connexion, save that of partial coincidence, are at an end.

Of a piece with this are the logical formula for a simple judgment, X is Y, and the corresponding definitions of judgment as the com- parison of two concepts and the recognition of their agreement or disagreement.? It certainly is possible to represent every judg- ment as a comparison, although the term is strictly adequate to only one kind and is often a very artificial description of what actually happens. But fora logic mainly concerned with inference— i.c., with explicating what is implicated in any given statements concerning classes—there is nothing more to be done but to ascertain agreements or disagreements ; and the existence of these, if not necessarily, is at least most evidently represented by spatial rela- tions. Such representation obviously implies a single ground of comparison only and therefore leaves no room for differences of category. The resolution of all concepts into class concepts and that of all judgments into comparisons thus go together. On this view if a concept is complex it can only be so as a class combination ; and, if the mode of its synthesis could be taken account

of at all, this could only be by treating it as an element in the combination like the rest :—iron is a substance, &c., virtue a quality, &c., distance a relation, &c., and so on. There is much of direetly psychological interest in this thoroughgoing reduction of thought to a form which makes its consistency and logical concatenation conspicuously evi- dent. But of the so-called matter of thought it tells us nothing. And, as said, there are many forms in that matter of at least equal moment, both for psychology and for epistemology ; these formal logic has tended to keep out. of sight.

It has generally been under the bias of such a formal or com- putational logic that psychologists, and especially English psycho- logists, have entered upon the study of mind. They have brought with them an analytic scheme which affords a ready place for sensations or "simple ideas" as the elements of thought, but none for any differences in the combinations of these elements. Sensations being in their very nature concrete, all generality becomes an affair of names ; and, as Sigwart has acutely remarked, sensationalism and nominalisin always go together. History would have borne him out if he had added that a purely formal logic tends in like manner to be nominalistic (see Locic, vol. xiv. p. 791).

If we are still to speak of the elements of thought, we must extend this term so as to include not only the sensory elements we are said to receive but three distinct ways in which this pure matter is combined :—(1) the forms of intuition,2—Time and Space; (2) the real categories,— Substance, Attribute, State, Act, Effect, End or Purpose, &c,—the exact determination of whicl is not here in place; and (3) certain formal (logical and mathematical) categories, as Unity, Difference, Identity, Likeness. These can no more be obtained by such a process of abstraction and generalization as logicians and psychologists alike have

been wont to describe than the melody could be obtained

ie See Wundt, Logik, i. p. 107 sq., where this process is happily styled "die kategoriale Verschiebung der Begriffe."

two individual things, or a concept and an individual, compared to- gether, stand to each other"' (Lectures on Logic, i. p. 225).

3 As to these it must suffice to refer to what has been already said ; comp. pp. 53 and 64 sq.

2 Comp. Hamilton: "To judge (xplvew, judicare) is to recognize ~ the relation of congruence or of confliction in which two concepts,

Forms 0!) synthes!

Pe yc rR eme cy They are

by suppressing all the several notes in a tune. not primarily concepts more general than all others in the

sense in which animal is more general than nian, but rather

distinct methods of relating or synthesizing presentations. Kant, though he accepted almost unquestioned the logic and psychology current in his day, has yet been the occa- sion, in spite of himself, of materially advancing both, and chiefly by the distinction he was led to make between formal and transcendental logic. In his exposition of the latter he brings to light the difference between the "functions of the understanding " in synthesizing—or, as we might say, organizing—percepts into concepts and the merely analytic subsumption of abc and abd under ab,—a, b, c, and d being what they may. Unlike other concepts, categories as such do not in the first instance signify objects of thought how- ever general, but these functions of the understanding in constituting objects. In fine, they all imply some special process, and into these processes it is the business of psychology to inquire. But only the briefest attempt at such inquiry is here possible.

To begin with what are par excellence formal categories, and among these with that which is the most fundamental and formal of all—How do we come by the conception of unity? " Amongst all the ideas we have," says Locke, "as there is none suggested to the mind by more ways, so there is none more simple than that of unity, or one. It has no shadow of variety or composition in it ; every object our senses are employed about, every idea in our understand- ings, every thought of our minds, brings this idea along with it."! And the like with painful iteration has been said by almost all English psychologists since. Such con- sensus notwithstanding, to assign a

sensible origin ta unity is certainly a mistake,—one of a class of mistakes already more than once referred to, which consist in transferring to the data of sense all that is implied in the language necessarily used in speaking of them. The term "a sensa- tion" no doubt carries along with it the idea of unity, but the bare sensation as received brings along with it nothing but itself. And, if we consider sensory consciousness merely, we do not receive a sensation, and then another sensation, and so on seriatim ; but we have always a con- tinuous diversity of sensations even when these are quali- tatively sharply differentiated. Moreover, if unity were an impression of sense and passively received, it would, in common with other impressions, be unamenable to change. We cannot see red as blue, but we can resolve many (parts) into one (whole), and vice versa.2 Unity, then, is the result of an act the occasions for which, no doubt, are at first non-voluntarily determined ; but the act is still as distinct from them as is attention from the objects attended to. It is to that movement of attention already described in dealing with ideation (p. 61) that we must look as the source of this category. This same movement, in like manner, yields us temporal signs ; and the complex unity formed by a combination of these is what we call number. When there is little or no difference between the field and the focus of attention, unifying is an impossibility, whatever the impressions received may be. On the other hand, as voluntary acts of concentration become more fre- quent and distinct the variegated continuum of sense is shaped into intuitions of definite things and events. Also, aS soon as words facilitate the control of ideas, it becomes possible to single out special aspects and relations of

: Essay concerning Human Understanding, Il. xvi. § 1.

_ _ "Wir kénnen eines der hier gedruckten Worter als Eins ansehen, indem wir eine Mannigfaltigkeit von Buchstaben doch in einem ab- Schliessenden Acte zu einem Bilde vereinigen und es von den benach- barten Bildern trennen ; Wir konnen es als Vielhett ansehen, wenn wir auf den Uebergang von einem Buchstaben zum andern, jeden Schritt absetzend, achten " (Sigwart, Logik, ii. p. 41).

things as the subjects or starting-points of our dis- cursive thinking. Thus the forms of unity are manifold: every act of intuition or thought, whatever else it is, is an act of unifying.

It is obvious that the whole field of consciousness at any moment can never be actually embraced as one. What is unified becomes thereby the focus of consciousness and so leaves an outlying field ; so far unity may be held to imply plurality. But it cannot with propriety be said that in a simple act of attention the field of consciousness is analysed into two distinct parts, 2… two unities,—this (now attended to) and the other or the rest (abstracted from). For the not-this is but the rest of a continuum and not itself a whole ; it is left out but not determined, as the bounding space is left out when a figure is drawn. To know two unities we must connect both together; and herein comes to light the difference between the unity which is the form of the concept or subject of discourse and the unity of a Judgment. The latter is of necessity complex ; the former may or may not be. But in any case the complexity of the two is different. If the subject of thought is not only clear but distinct—z.e., not merely defined as a whole but having its constituents likewise more or less defined—such distinctness is due to previous judgments. At any future time these may of course' be repeated ; such are the ana- lytical or explicative judgments of logic. As the mere subject of discourse it is, however, a single unity simul- taneously apprehended ; the relation ascertained between it and its predicate constitutes the unity of judgment, a unity which is comprehended only when its parts are successively apprehended.

But, though a judgment is always a complex unity, the Law of extent of this complexity seems at first sight to vary as dicho- the form of synthesis varies. Formal logic, as we have iy. seen, by throwing the form of synthesis into the predicate ' has no difficulty in reducing every judgment to an § is P. But, if we at all regard the matter thought, it is certain, for example, that "It is an explosion" is less complex than "The enemy explodes the mine." The first answers one question ; the second answers three. But as regards the more complex judgment both the process of ascertaining the fact and the language in which it is expressed show that the three elements concerned in it are not synthesized at once. Suppose we start from the explosion,—and changes or movements are not only apt to attract attention first, but, when

recognized as events and not as abstracts per- sonified, they call for some supplementing beyond them- selves—then in this case we may search for the agent at work or for the object affected, but not for both at once. Moreover, if we find either, a complete judgment at once ensues: "' The enemy explodes," or "The mine is exploded." The original judgment is really due to a synthesis of these two. But, when the results of former judgments are in this manner taken up into a new judgment, a certain "condensation of thought" ensues. Of this condensation the grammatical structure of language is evidence, though logical manipulation—with great pains—obliterates it. Thus our more complex judgment would take the form — "The enemy is now mine-exploding" or "The mine is enemy-exploded," according as one or other of the simpler judgments was made first. An examination of other cases would in like manner tend to show that intellectual synthesis is always—in itself and apart from implications—a binary synthesis. Wundt, to whom belongs the merit of first explicitly stating this "law of dichotomy or duality"? as the cardinal principle of discursive thinking, contrasts it with synthesis by mere association. This, as running on continuously, he represents thus—A™B-C-D- . . . ; the

3 Wundt, Logik : eine Untersuchung der Principien der Erkenntniss, i, p. 53 sq.

Formal cate- gories.

Differ- ence and like- ness.

synthesis of thought, on the other hand, he symbolizes by forms such as the following :—

ae eS SC AmcsS ee.

In explanation of this law as a law of intellection it 1s hardly sufficient to rest it ultimately on the fact "that in a given moment of time only a single act of apperception is possible."! This applies to all syntheses alike. _ The point surely is that the one thing attended to in an intel- lective act is the synthesis of two things, and of two things only, because, as only one

movement of attention 1s possible at a time, only two things at a time can be synthesized. In that merely associative synthesis by which the memory-continuum is produced attention moves from A to Band thence to CO without any relation between A and B being attended to at all, although they must have relations, that of sequence, ¢.g., at least. The intellective synthesis which follows upon this first resolves the A~B into its elements, and then, if there be any ground for so doing, re-synthesizes them with a consciousness of what the syn- thesis means."

Passing now to the remaining formal categories—Differ- ence, Likeness, Identity—all of which come under the law of duality so far as they imply not a single presentation but some relation between two presentations, we have to seek out the characteristics of the states of mind in which these relations become objects of consciousness. The so- called fundamentum relationis, of course, can be nothing but the two presentations concerned. Just as certain, however, is it that the relation itself involves something more than these. Two equal triangles may be made to coincide, but are not necessarily coimcident: Dromio of Ephesus might be mistaken for Dronno of Syracuse, but at least they never mistook each other. And this brings us to the point. As Lotze puts it, "Two impressions « and 6 are never to be regarded as more than stdmuli which, by affecting the conscious subject—in its very nature in- dividual and sui generis—incite to reaction that activity by means of which there arise the new presentations, such as similarity, equality, contrast, &c."° The activity thus stimulated is what in other words we call the voluntary concentration of attention ; to ascertain, then, what these "'new presentations" of difference, likeness, and so forth are, we must analyse carefully what takes place when two impressions a and 6 are expressly compared.

"Difference," says Hume, "I consider rather as a nega- tion of relation than as anything real or positive. Differ- ence is of two kinds, as opposed either to identity [unity ? | or resemblance. The first is called a difference of number, the other of kind." The truth seems rather to be that difference in the sense of nunterical difference is so far an element in all relations as all imply distinct correlatives. To this extent even identity—or at least the recognition of it—rests on difference, that form of difference, viz., which is essential to plurality. But absolute difference of kind may be considered

*tantamount not, indeed, to the negation, but at least to the absence, of all formal relation. That this absolute difference—or disparateness, as we may call it—affords no ground for relations becomes evident when we consider (1) that, if we had only a plurality of absolutely different presentations, we should have no con- sciousness at all (comp. p. 45); and (2) that we never com- pare—although we distinguish, 7.c., recognize, numerical * SS ae ee ie that in every act of thought,*

abstract, ideas related have been previously con- nected by association. But certainly at the outset this is the case, in such wise that all the forms of intellectual synthesis are prefigured in

*the connexions of the ideational train or its reduplications. * Grundatige der Psychologie, p. 24.*

ES AB

PSY CU Oi orerh

difference—where presentations seem absolutely or totally different, as are, e.g., a thunderclap and the taste of sugar, or the notion of free trade and that of the Greek accusative. Allactual comparison of what is qualitatively different rests upon opposition or contrariety, 7.c., upon at least partial likeness (comp. p. 46). This being understood, it 1s note- worthy that the recognition of such unlikeness is, if any- thing, more "real or positive" than that of likeness, and is certainly the simpler of the two. In the comparison of sensible impressions—as of two colours, two sounds, the lengtlis or the directions of two lines, &c.—we find it easier in some cases to have the two impressions that are com- pared presented together, in others to have first one pre- sented and then the other. But either way the essential matter is to secure the most effective presentation of their difference, which in every case is something positive and, like any other impression, may vary in amount from bare perceptibility to the extremest distance that the continuum to which it belongs will admit. Where no difference or distance at all is perceptible, there we say there is likeness or equality. Is the only outcome, then, that when we pass from ab to ac there is a change in consciousness, and that when ab persists there is none? To say this is to take no account of the operations (we may symbolize them as ac — ab =cb,

ab —ab=0) by which the difference or the equality results. The change of presentation (6c) and absence of change (0) are not here what they are when merely passive occurrences, so to put it. This is evident from the fact that the former is but a single presentation and the latter no presentation at all. The relation of unlikeness, then, is distinguished from the mere "position" of change by (1) the voluntary concentration of attention upon ab and ac with a view to the detection of this change as their difference, and by (2) the act, relating them through it, in that they are judged unlike to that extent. The type of comparison is such superposition of geometrical lines or figures (as, e.g., in Euclid I. iv.) : if they coincide we have concrete equality ; if they do not their difference is a line or figure. All sensible comparisons conform essentially to this type. In comparing two shades we place them side by side, and passing from one to the other seek to determine not the absolute shade of the second but its shade relative to the first,—in other words, we look out for contrast. We do not say of one "It is dark," for in the scale of shades it may be light, but "It is darker"; or vice versa. Where there is no distance or contrast we simply have not two impressions, and, as said—if we consider the difference by itself—no impression at all. Two coincident triangles must be perceived as one. The distinction between the one triangle thus formed by two coinciding and the single triangle rests upon something extraneous to this bare pre- sentation of a triangle that is one and the same in both cases. The marks of this numerical distinctness may be various: they may be different temporal signs, as in re- duplications of the memory-continuum ; or they may be constituents peculiar to each, from which attention is for the moment abstracted, any one of which suffices to give the common or identical constituent a new setting. In general, it may be said (1) that the numerical distinctness of the related terms is secured in the absence of all qualita- tive difference solely by the intellectual act which has so unified each as to retain what may serve as an individual mark ; and (2) that they become related as "like" either in virtue of the active adjustment to a change of impres- sion which their partial assimilation defeats, or in virtue of an anticipated continuance of the impression which this assimilation confirms.

It is in keeping with this analysis that we say in common Ident

speech that two things in any respect similar are so far the same ; that, e.g7., the two Dromios—

Material identity.

Pe Can OL O 6 Y

“The one so like the other

As could not be distinguished but by names” — had the same complexion and the same stature just as we say they had the same mother. This ambjguity in the word “same,” whereby it means either individual identity or indistinguishable resemblance, has been often noticed, and from a logical or objective point of view justly com- plained of as “engendering fallacies in otherwise enlight- ened understandings.” But apparently no one has in- quired into its psychological basis, although more than one writer has admitted that the ambiguity is one “in itself not always to be avoided.”! It is not enough to trace the confusion to the existence of common names and to cite the forgotten controversies of scholastic realism. We are not now concerned with the conformity of thought to things or with logical analysis, but with the analysis of a psychological process. The tendency to treat presenta- tions as if they were copies of things—the objective bias, as we may call it—is the one grand obstacle to psycho- logical observation. Some only realize with an effort that the idea of extension is not extended ; no wonder, then, if it should seem “unnatural” to maintain that the idea of two like things does not consist of two like ideas. But, assum- ing that both meanings of identity have a psychological Justification, it will be well to distinguish them and to ex- amine their connexion. Perhaps we might term the one “material identity” and the other “ individual identity,’ — following the analogy of expressions such as “ different things but all made of the same stuff,” “the same person but entirely changed.” Thus there is unity and plurality concerned in both, and herein identity or sameness differs from singularity or mere oneness, which entails no relation, But the unity and the plurality are different in each, and each is in some sort the converse of the other. In the one, two different individuals partially coincide; in the other, one individual is partially different ; the unity in the one case is an individual presentation, in the other is the presentation of an individual.

In material identity the unity is that of a single pre- sentation, whether simple or complex, which enters as a common constituent into two or more others, It may be possible of course to individualize it, but as it emerges in a comparison it is a single presentation and nothing more, On account of this absence of individual marks this single presentation is what logicians call "abstract"; but this is not psychologically essential. It may bea generic image which has resulted from the neutralization of individual marks, but it may equally well be a simple presentation, like red, to which such marks never belonged. We come here from a new side upon a truth which has been already expounded at length, viz., that presentations are not given to us as individuals but as changes ina continuum. Time and space—the instruments, as it were, of individualiza- tion, which are presupposed in the objective sciences—are psychologically later than this mere differentiation.

The many vexed questions that arise concerning indi- vidual identity are metaphysical rather than psychological. But it will serve to bring out the difference between the two forms of identity to note that an identification cannot be established solely by qualitative comparison; an alibi or a breach of temporal continuity will turn the flank of the Strongest argument from resemblance, Moreover, resem- blance itself may be fatal to identification when the law of being is change. But, while temporal and spatial de- terminations are essential to individual identity, they have, strictly speaking, no individual identity of their own.

Vhen we speak of two impressions occurring at the same

1 Comp. J. 8. Mill, Logie, Hamilton, 34 ed., ch. xiv. p. 306, note; also Meinong, ""Hume-Studien " IL., Wiener Sitzungberichte (Phil. Hist. Cl.), vol. ci. p. 709.

unity of apperception."

bk. i. ch. iii, § 11, and ELeamination of

S1

time, or localize or project them into the same place, a careful analysis shows only that we detect no difference of temporal and local signs

respectively,—in other words, have only special cases of comparison.

As regards the real categories, it may be said generally Real that these owe their origin in large measure to the an- cate- thropomorphic or mythical tendency of human thought, — &°™es. TO dpowov TH dpoiw ywioKerOa, Into the formation of these conceptions two very distinct factors enter—(1) the facts of what in the stricter sense we call "self-conscious- hess," and (2) certain spatial and temporal relations among our presentations themselves. On the one hand, it has to be noted that these spatial and temporal relations are but the occasion or motive—and ultimately perhaps, we niay say, the warrant—for the analogical attribution to things of selfness, efficiency, and design, but are not directly the source of the forms of thought that thus arise. On the other hand, it is to be noted also that such forms, although they have an independent source, would never apart froi. suitable material come into actual existence. If the followers of Hume err in their exclusive reliance upon "associations naturally and even necessarily generated by the order of our sensations" (J. 8, Mill), the disciple of Kant errs also who relies exclusively on "the synthetic The truth is that we are on the verge of error in thus sharply distinguishing the two at

all ; if we do so momentarily for the purpose of exposition it behoves us here again to remember that mind grows and is not made. priori," "necessary," "formal," &c., without further quali- fication leads only too easily to the mistaken notion that all the mental facts so named are alike underived and original, independent not only of experience but of each other ; whereas but for the forms of intuition the forms of thought would be impossible,—that is to say, we should never have a self-consciousness at all if we had not pre- viously learnt to distinguish occupied and unoccupied space, past and present in time, and the like. equally true that, if we could not feel and move as well as receive impressions, and if experience did not repeat it- self, we should never attain even to this level of spatial and temporal intuition. Kant shows a very lame and halting recognition of this dependence of the higher forms on the lower both in his schematism of the categories, and again in correcting in his Analytic the opposition of sense and under- standing as respectively receptive and active with which he set out in his Aisthetic. the subjective and objective factors of real knowledge ad- vance together, the former is in a sense always a step ahead. We find

again without us the permanence, individuality, efficiency, and adaptation we have found Jirst of all within (comp. p. 56, b and d). of personality, though it facilitates a first understanding, soon proves itself faulty and begets the contradictions which have been one chief motive to philosophy. We smile at the savage who thinks a magnet must need food and is puzzled that the horses in a picture remain for ever still ; but few consider that underlying all common-sense thinking there lurks the same natural precipitancy. We attribute to extended things a unity which we know only as the unity of an unextended subject; we attribute to changes among these extended things what we know only when we act and suffer ourselves; and we attribute further

The use of terms like "innate," "a

But, again, it is

Still, although what are called

But such primitive imputation

both to them and their changes a striving for ends which we know only because we feel. In asking what they are, how they act, and why they are thus and thus, we assimi- late them to ourselves, in spite of the differences which lead us by and by to see a gulf between mind and matter. Such instinctive analogies have, like other analogies, to be confirmed, refuted, or modified by further knowledge, z.e.,

ROG = TT

Causal- ity.

82

by the very insight into things which these analogies have themselves made possible. That in their first form they were mythical, and that they could never have been at all unless originated in this way, are considerations that make no difference to their validity, assuming, that is, that they admit, now or hereafter, of a logical transformation which renders them objectively

valid. This legitimation is of course the business of philosophy ; we are concerned only with the psychological analysis and origin of the conceptions themselves.

As it must here suffice to examine one of these categories, let us take that which is the most important and central of the three, viz., eausality or the relation of cause and effect, as that will necessarily throw some light upon the constitution of the others. To begin, we must distinguish three things, which, though very different, are very liable to be confused. (1) Perceiving im a de- finite case, ¢.g., that on the sun shining a stone becomes warm, we may say the sun makes the stone warm. 'This is a concrete Im- stance of predicating the cansal relation. In this there 1s, exphiitly at all events, no statement of a gencral law or axiom, sucli as we have when we say (2) "Every event must have a cause," —a statement commonly known as the principle of cansality. This again is dis- tinct from what is on all hands allowed to be an empirical general- ization, viz., (3) that such and such particular causes have invariably such and such particular effects. With these last psychology 1s not directly concerned at all: it has only to analyse and trace to its origin the bare conception of causation as expressed in (1) and involved in both these generalizations. Whether only some things have causes, as the notion of chance implies, whether all causes are uniform in their action or some capricious and arbitrary, as the unreflecting suppose, —all this is beside the qnestion for us.

One point in the analysis of the cansal relation Hume may be said to have settled once for all: it does not rest upon or contain any immediate intnition of a causal nexus. The two relations that Hume allowed to be perceived (or " presumed to exist'), viz., con- tiguity in space of the objects causally related and priority in time of the cause before the effect, are the only relations directly dis- cernible. We say indeed "The sun warms the stone"' as readily as we say "The sun rises and sets," as if both were matters of direct observation then and there. But that this is not so is evident from the fact that only in some cases when one change follows upon another do we regard it as following from the other: casual coin- cidence is at least as common as cansal connexion. Whence the difference, then, if not from perception ? Hume's answer,! repeated in the main by English psychologists since, is, as all the world knows, that the difference is the result of

association, that when a change 8 in an object B has been frequently observed to sncceed a change a in another object A, the freqnent repetition determincs the mind to a transition from the one to the other. It is this determination, which conld not be present at first, that constitutes 'the third relation betwixt these objects." This "internal im- pression" generated by association is then projected ; "for 'tis a common observation that the mind has a great propensity to spread itself ou external objects."

The subjective origin and the after-projection we must admit, put all else in Hume's famous doctrine seems glaringly at variance with facts. In one respect it proves too much, for all constant sequences are not regarded as causal, as according to his analysis they ought to be; again, in another respect it proves too little, for causal connexion is continually predicated on a first occurrence. The natural man has always distinguished between causes and signs or portents; bnt there is nothing to show that he produced an effect many times before regarding himself as the cause of it. J. 8. Mill has indeed obviated the first objection epistemologically by adding to constant conjunction the further characteristic of "uncon- ditionality." But this isa conception that cannot be psychologi- cally explained from Hume's premisses, unless perhaps by resolving it into the qualification that the invariability must be complete and not partial, whereupon the second objection applies. " Uncondi- tional" is a word for which we can find no meaning as long as we confine onr attention to temporal snccession. It will not do to say both that an invariable succession generates the idea, and that such invariable snecession must be not only invariable but also uncondi- tional in order to generate it. We may here turn the master against the disciple: "the same principle," says Hume, ' cannot be both the canse and the effect of another, and this is perhaps the only proposition concerning that relation which is either intni- tively or demonstratively certain" (op. cit., p. 891). Uncondition-

ality is then part of the causal relation and yet not the product of

invariable repetition. Perhaps the sonrce of this element in the relation will become clear if we examine more closely the internal impression of the

A : es : 5 Treatise of Human Nature, pt. tii., § xiv., "Of the idea of neeessary connexion.

mind which according to Hume constitutes the whole of onr idea of power or efficacy. To illustrate the nature of this impression Hume cites the instant passage of the imagination toa particnlar idea on hearing the word commonly annexed to it, when "'twill scarce be possible for the mind by its utmost efforts to prevent that transition" (op. cit., p. 398). It is this determination, then, which is felt internally, not perceived externally, that we mis- takenly transfer to objects and regard as an intelligible connexion between them. But, if Hume admits this, must he not admit more? Can it be pretended that it is through the workings of association among our ideas that we first feel a determination which our utmost efforts can scarce resist, or that we feel such determination under no other circumstances? If it be allowed that the natural man is irresistibly determined to imagine an apple when he hears its name or to expect thunder when he sees lightning, must it not also be allowed that he is irresistibly determined mnch earlier and in a much more impressive way when overmastered by the elements or by his enemies? Bnt further, such instaincesbring to light what Tinme's " determination" also implies, viz., its necessary correla- tive, effort or action. Even irresistible association can only be known as such by efforts to resist it. Hume allows this when he says that his principles of association 'are not infallible causes ; for one may fix his attention dnring some time on any one object without looking farther" (op. ctt., p. 898). But the fact is, we know both what it is to act and what it is to suffer, to go where we would and to be carried where we would not, quite apart from the work- ings of association. And, had Hume not confused the two differ- ent inquiries, that concerning the origin of the idea of causation and that concerning the ground of causal inference or law of causation, it could never have occurred to him to offer such an analysis of the former as he does.

Keeping to the former and simpler question, it would seem that when in ordinary thinking we say A causes this or that in B we project or analogically attribute to A what we experience in acting, and to B what we experience in being acted on ; and the structure of language shows that such projection was made long before it was suspected that what A once did and B once suffered must happen in like manner again. The occasions suitable for this projection are detemnined by the temporal and spatial

relations of the objects concerned, which relations are matter of intuition. These are of no very special interest from a psychological point of view, but the subjective elements we shall do well to consider further. First of all, we mnst note the distinction of immanent action and transitive action ; the former is what we call action simply, and implies only a single thing, the agent; the latter, which we might with advan- tage call effectuation, implies two things, z.¢e.,a patient distinct from the agent. In seientific language the agent in an intransitive act is called a causa immanens and so distinguished from the agent in effectuation or causa transiens, Common thought, however, does not regard mere action as caused at all; and we shall find it, in fact, impossible to resolve action into effectuation. But, since the things with which we ordinarily deal are complex, have many parts, pro- perties, members, phases, and in consequence of the analytic pro- cedure of thought, there ensues, indeed, a eontinual shifting of the point of view from which we regard any given thing, so that what is in one aspect one thing, is in another many (comp. p. 56 ¢). So it comes about that, when regarding himself as one, the natural man speaks of himself as walking, shouting, &c.; but, when dis- tinguishing between himself and his members, he speaks of raising his voice, moving his legs, and so forth. 'Thus no sooner do we re- solve any given action into an effectuation, by analytically dis- tinguishing within the original agent an agent and a patient, than a new action appears. Action is thus a simpler notion than causation and inexplicable by means of it. It is certainly no easy problem in philosophy to determine where the resolution of the complex is to cease, at what point we must stop, because in the presence of an individual thing and a simple activity. At any rate, we reach such a point psychologically in the conscious subject, and that energy in consciousness we call attention. If this be allowed, Hume's critique of the notion of efficacy is really wide of the mark. "Some," 2 he says, " have asserted that we feel an energy or power in our own mind; and that, having in this manner acquir'd the idea of power, we transfer that 'quality to matter, where we are not able immediately to discover it… . Bnt to convince us how fallacious this reasoning is, we need only consider that the will, being here consider'd as a cause, has no more a discoverable con- nexion with its effects than any material cause has with its proper effect. . . . The effect is there [too] distinguishable and separable from the cause, and cou'd not be foreseen without the experience of their constant conjunction" (op. cit.,p. 455). This is logical analysis, not psychological ; the point is that

the will is not considered as a cause and distinguished from its effects, nor in fact considered at

2 Hume here has Locke and Berkeley specially in view. Locke as a patient and acute inquirer was ineomparably better as a psychologist than a man addieted to literary foppery like Hume, for all his genius, could possibly be. On the partieular question, see Locke, it. 21, 3-5.

.

Object- ivity of thought.

FevCcroeLt © é ¥

It is not a case of sequence between two separable impressions ; for we cannot really make the indefinite regress that such logical distinctious as that between the conscious subject and its acts im- Moreover, our activity as such is not directly presented at and further than this psychological There are, as we have Seen, two ways in which this activity is manifested, the receptive or passive and the motor or active in the stricter sense—(comp. p. 44) aud our experience of But two halves do not make a whole ; so we have no complete experience of effectua-

all.

plies. i (all: we are, being active ; analysis will not go.

these we project in predicating the causal relation.

tion, for the simple reason that we cannot be two things at once.

We are guided in piecing it together by the temporal and spatial

relations of the things concerned. Hence, perhaps, some of the antinomies that beset this conception. In its earliest form, then, the so-called necessary connexion of cause and effect is perhaps nothing more than that of physical constraint. To this, no doubt, is added the strength of expectation—as Hume supposed—when the same effect has been found invariably to follow the same cause. Finally, when upon a basis of associated uniformities of

sequence a definite intellectual elaboration of such material ensues, the logical necessity of reason and consequent finds a place, and so far as deduc- tion is applicable cause and reason become interchangeable ideas. } The mention of logical necessity brings up a topic already inci- dentally noticed, viz., the objectivity of thought and cognition gen- erally (comp. pp. 55,77). The psychological treatment of this topic

is tantamount to an inquiry into the characteristics of the states of

mind we call certainty, doubt, belief—all of which centre round the one fact of evidence. Between the certainty that a proposition is true and the certainty that it is not there may intervene continu- ous grades of uncertainty. We may know that A is sometimes B, or sometimes not; or that some at least of the conditions of B are present or absent ; or the presentation of A may be too confused for distinct analysis. This is the tegion of probability, possibility, more or less obscurity. Leaving this aside, it will be enough to notice those cases in which certainty may be complete. With that certainty which is absolutely objective, é.¢., with knowledge, psycho- logy has no direct concern; it is for logic to furnish the criteria by which knowledge is ascertained,

Emotion and desire are frequent indirect causes of subjective certainty, in so far as they determine the constituents and the grouping of the field of consciousness at the monrent —" pack the Jury" or "'suborn the witnesses," as it were. certainty is in all cases some quality or some relation of these pre- sentations inter se. Ina sense, therefore, the ground of all certainty is objective—in the sense, that is, of being something at least directly and immediately determined for the subject and not by it. But, though objective, this ground is not itself—at least is not ultimately —au object or presentation. Where certainty is mediate, one judg- ment is often spoken of as the ground of another; but a syllogism is still psychologically a single, though not a simple, judgment, and the certainty of it as a whole is immediate. Between the judgment is B and the question Is A B? the difference is not one of content nor scarcely one of form: it is a difference which depends upon the effect of the proposition on the subject judging. (i.) We have this effect before us most clearly if we consider what is by common con- sent regarded as the type of certainty and evidence, the certainty of

present sense-impressions whence it is said, "Seeing is believing." The evident is here the actual, and the " feeling or consciousness " of certainty is in this case nothing but the sense of being taken fast hold of and forced to apprehend what is there. (ii.) The like 1s true of memory and expectation : in these also there is a sense of being tied down to what is given, whereas in mere imagination, however lively, this non-voluntary determination is absent (comp. p. 63). Hume saw this at times clearly enough, as, ¢.g., when he Says, "An idea assented to fecls different from a fictitious idea that the fancy alone presents to us." But unfortunately he not only made this difference a mere difference of intensity, but spoke of belief itself as "an operation of the mind" or 'manner of Conception that bestowed on our ideas this additional force or vivacity."® In short, Hume confounded one of the indirect causes of belief with the ground of it, and again, in describing this ground committed the terepop mporepov of making the mind determine the ideas instead of the ideas determine the mind. (iii.) In speaking of Intellection he is clearer: " The answer is easy with regard to Propositions that are prov'd by intuition or demonstration. In that case, the person who assents not only conccives the ideas according to the proposition, but is necessarily determin'd to con- celve them in that particular manner" (op, cit., p. 395). It has been often urged—as by J. S. Mill, for example—that belief is somcthing

"ultimate and primordial." No doubt it is; but so is the distinc. tion between activity and passivity, and it is not here maintained that certainty can be analysed into something simpler, but only that it is identical with what is of the nature of passivity—

' Comp. Wundt, Logik— Das Causal-Gesetz und Satz vom Grunde," Vol. i. p. 544,

- *Treatise of Human Nature, Green and Grose's ed, 21. p. 396.*

But the ground of

83

objective determination. As Dr Bain puts it, "The leading fact in belief . . . is our primitive credulity. We begin by believing everything: whatever is is

true" (Emotions and Will, 3d ed., :p.

511). But the point is that in this primitive state there is no act answering to "believe" distinct from the hon-voluntary attention answering to "perceive," and no reflexion such as a modal term like "true" implies. With eyes open in the broad day no man says, "I am certain there is light": he simply sees. He may by and by come absolutely to disbelieve much that he sees—e.g., that things are nearer when viewed through a telescope—just as he will

cone to disbelieve his dreams, though while they last he is certain

in these too. The limits of this article forbid any attempt to deal

specially with the intellectual aspects of such conflicts of preseuta-

tions (comp. p. 62) or with their resolution and what is meant by

saying that reason turns out superior to sense. The consistency we fiud it possible to establish among certain of our ideas becomes

an ideal, to which we expect to find all our experience conform, – Still the intuitive evidence of logical and mathematical axioms is

psychologically but a new form of the actual ; We are only certain

that two and two make four and we are not less certain that we see

things nearer through a telescope.

Presentation of Self, Self-Consciousness, and Conduct.

The conception of self we have just seen underlying and to a great extent shaping the rest of our intellectual furni- ture; on this account it is at once desirable and difficult to analyse it and ascertain the conditions of its develop- ment. In attempting this we must carefully distinguish between the bare presentation of self and that reference of other presentations to it which is often called specially self-consciousness, "inner sense," or internal perception. Concerning all presentations whatever—that of self no*

less than the rest—it is possible to reflect, "This presentation is mine ; it is my object; I am the subject attending to it." Self, then, is one presentation among others, the result, like them, of the differentiation of the original continuum. But it is obvious that this presentation must be in existence first before other presentations can be re- lated to it. On the other hand, it is only in and by means of such relations that the conception of self is completed. We begin, therefore, with self simply as an object, and end with the conception of that object as the subject or "myself" that knows itself. Self has, in contradistinction from all other presentations, first of all (a) a unique in- terest and (1) a certain inwardness ; (c) it is an individual that (d) persists, (c) is active, and finally (f) knows itself. These several characteristics of self are intimately involved ; so far as they appear at all they advance in definiteness from the lowest level of mere sentience to those moments of highest self-consciousness in which conscience approves or condemns volition.

The earliest and to the last the most important element in self— Self and what we might perhaps term its root or material element—is that the body.

variously styled the organic sensations, vital sense, cceneesthesis, or somatic consciousness. This largely deterinines the tone of the

® See BELIEF, vol. iii, p, 532.

4 A large, though certainly diminishing, school of thinkers would entirely demur to such a proposal. " This personality," says one, "like all other simple and immediate presentations, is indefinable . . . it can be analysed into no simpler elements; for it is revealed to us in all the clearness of an original intuition " (Mansel, Metaphysies, p. 182). Such an objection arises from that confusion between psycho- logy and epistemology which we have met already several times before (as, ¢.g., in the case of space, p. 53, and of unity, p. 79). The fact is that a conception that is logically "' simple and immediate," in such wise as to be underivable from others, and therefore indefinable, may be—we might almost say will be—psychologically the result of a long process of development; for the more abstract a concept is, es, tae more fundamental in epistemological structure, the more thinking there has been to elaborate it. 'The most complex integrations of experience are needed to furnish the ideas of its ultimate elements, Such ideas when

reached have intelleetually all the clearmess of an original intuition, no doubt; but they are uot therefore to be con- founded with what is psychologically a simple and immediate presenta- tion. It was in this last sense that idealists like Berkeley and Kant denied any presentation of self as much as sceptics like Hume. Self is psychologically a product of thought, not a datum of sense ; hence, while Berkeley called it a "notion" and Kant an "'idea of the reason," Hume treated it as a philosophical fiction.

Inner self,

Self as a person.

84

special sensations and enters, though little suspected, into all our higher feelings. If, as sometimes happens in serious nervous affections, the whole body or any part of it should lose common sensibility, the whole body or that part is at once regarded as strange and even as hostile. In some forms of hypochondria, in which this extreme somatic insensibility and absence of zest leave the intellect and memory unaffected, the individual doubts his own existence or denies it altogether. Ribot cites the case of such a patient who, declaring that he had been dead for two years, thus expressed his perplexity :—J'existe, mais en dehors de la vie réelle, matérielle, et, malgré moi, rien ne mayant donné la mort. Tout est mécanique chez moi et se fait inconsciemment, q It is not because they accompany physiological functions essential to the efficiency of the organism as an organism, but simply

because they are the most immediate and most constant sources of

feeling, that these massive but ill-defined organic sensations are from the first the objects of the directest and most _unrefiecting interest. Other objects have at the outset but a mediate interest through subjective selection in relation to these, and never become so instinctively and inseparably identified with self, never have the same inwardness. This brings us to a new point. As soon as definite perception begins, the body as an extended thing is dis- tinguished from other bodies, and such organic sensations as can be localized at all are localized within it. At the same time the actions of other bodies upon it are accompanied by pleasures and pains, while their

action upon each other is not. The body also is the only thing directly set in motion by the reactions of these feelings, the purpose of such movements being to bring near to it the things for which there is appetite and to remove from it those towards which there is aversion. 1t is thus not merely the type of occupied space and the centre from which all positions are reckoned, but it affords us an unfailing and ever-present intuition of the actu- ally felt and living self, to which all other things are external, more or less distant, and at times absent altogether. The body then first of all gives to self a certain measure of individuality, permanence, and inwardness.

But with the development of ideation there arises within this what we may call an inner zone of self, having still more unity and permanence. We have at this stage not only an intuition of the bodily self doing or suffering here and now, but also memories of what it has been and done under varied circumstances in the past. External impressions have by this time lost in novelty and become less absorbing, while the train of ideas, largely increased in number, distinctness, and mobility, diverts attention and often shuts out the things of sense altogether. In all such reminiscence or reverie a generic image of self is the centre, and every new image as it arises derives all its interest from relation to this; and so apart from bodily appetites new desires may be quickened and old emotions stirred again when all that is actually present is dull and unexciting. But desires and emotions, it must be remembered, though awakened by what is only imaginary, invariably entail actual organic perturbations, and with these the generic image of self comes to be intimately combined. ence arises a contrast between the inner self, which the natural man locates in his breast or ¢pyv, the chief seat of these emotional disturbances, and the whole visible and tangible body besides. Although from their nature they do not admit of much ideal representation, yet, when actually present, these organic sensations exert a powerful and often irresistible in- fluence over other ideas; they have each their appropriate train, and so heighten in the very complex and loosely compacted idea of self those traits they originally wrought into it, suppressing to an equal extent all the rest. Normally there is a certain equilibrium to which they return, and which, we may suppose, determines the so-called temperament, naturel, or disposition, thus securing some tolerable uniformity and continuity in the presentation of self. But even within the limits of sanity great and sudden changes of mood are

possible, as, ¢.g., in hysterical persons or those of a "mercurial temperament," or among the lower animals at the onset of parental or migratory instincts. Beyond those limits—as the concomitant apparently of serious visceral derangements or the altered nutrition of parts of the nervous system itself—complete

alienation" may ensue. A new self may arise, not only distinct from the old and devoid of all save the most elementary know- ledge and skill that the old possessed, but diametrically opposed to it in tastes and disposition, — obscenity, it may be, taking the place of modesty and cupidity or cowardice succeeding to generosity er courage. The most convincing illustrations of the psycho- oe Sales on structure of the presentation of self on the lower me ae bee ie furnished by these melancholy A ae hove ; but it is impossible to refer to them

Passing to the higher level of intellection, w o upon the concept which every intelligent oatne Seemann Tae tinctly forms of himself as a person, M. or N., having such and such a character, tastes, and eonvictions, such and such a history, and

1 'Bases affectives de la Personnalité," in Revue philosophique, xviii. p. 149.

Peron ob Oe Y

such and such an aim in life. The main instrument in the forma- tion of this concept, as of others, is language, and especially the social intercourse that language niakes possible. Up to this point the presentation of self has shaped that of not-self, that is to say, external things have been comprehended by the projection of its characteristics. But now the order isin a sense reversed : the indi-

vidual advances to a fuller self-knowledge by comparing the self within with what is first discernible in other persons without. So

far avant homme est la société ; it is through the "us" that we learn of the "me" (comp. p. 75 note 1), Collective action for common ends is of the essence of society, and in taking counsel together for the

good of his tribe each one learns also to take counsel with himself for his own good on the whole ; with the idea of the common weal

arises the idea of happiness as distinct from momentary gratification. The extra-regarding impulses are now confronted by a reasonable self-love, and in the deliberations that thus ensue activity attains to its highest forms, those of thought and volition. In the first we have a distinctly active manipulation of ideas as compared with the more passive spectacle of memory and imagination. Thereby emerges a contrast between the thinker and these objects

of his thought, including among them the mere generic image of

self, from which is now formed this conception of self as a person.

A similar, even sharper, contrast also accompanies the exercise of

what is very misleadingly termed "self-control," z.¢., control by this personal self of "the various natural affections," to use Butler's phrase, which often hinder it as external objects hindered them. It is doubtful whether the reasoning, regulating self is commonly regarded as definitely localized. The effort of thinking and concen- trating attention upon ideas is no doubt referred to the brain, but this is only comparable with the localization of other efforts in the limbs ; when we think we commonly feel also, and the emotional basis is of all the most subjective and inalienable. this latest phase of self as par eacellence "the inner self" such language is then mainly figurative, inasmuch as the contrasts just described are contrasts into which spatial relations do not enter.

The term "reflexion" or internal perception is applied to that state Self-con- of mind in which some particular presentation or group of presenta- Sclous- tions (x or y) is not simply in the field of consciousness but there as ness.

consciously related to self, which is also presented at the same time. Self here may be symbolized by M, to emphasize the fact that it is in like manner an object in the field of consciousness. The relation of the two is commonly expressed by saying, "This (# or y) is my (M's) percept, idea, or volition ; I (M) it is that perceive, think, will it.? Self-consciousness, in the narrowest

sense, as when we say, "I know myself, I am conscious that Iam," &c., is but a special, though

the most important, instance of this internal perception: here self

(M) is presented in relation to self (with a difference, M'); tlie subject itself —at least so we say—is or appears as its own object.

It has been often maintained that the difference between con- sciousness and reflexion is not a real difference, that to know and to know that you know are "the same thing considered in different aspects.'2 But different aspects of the same thing are not the same thing, for psychology at least. Not only is it not the same thing to feel and to know that you feel; but it might even be held to be a different thing still to know that you feel and to know that you know that you feel,—such being the difference perhaps between ordinary reflexion and psychological introspection.® The difficulty of apprehending these facts and keeping them distinct seems obvi- ously due to the necessary presence of the earlier along with the later ; that is to say, we ean never know that we feel without feel- ing. But the converse need not be true. How distinct the two states are is shown in one way by their notorions incompatibility, the direct consequence of the limitation of attention: whatever we have to do that is not altogether mechanical is ill done unless we lose ourselves in the doing of it. This mutual exclusiveness receives a further explanation from the fact so often used to dis- credit psychology, viz., that the so-called introspection and indeed all reflexion are really retrospective. It is not while we are angry or lost in reverie that we take note of such states, but afterwards, or by momentary side glances intercepting the main interest, if this be not too absorbing.

But we require an exacter analysis of the essential fact in this retrospect—the relation of the presentation x or y to that of self or M. What we have to deal with, it will be observed, is, implicitly at least, a judgment. First ofall, then, it is noteworthy that we are never prompted to such judgments by every-day occurrences or acts of routine, but only by matters of interest, and, as said, gener-

2 So—misled possibly by the confusions incident to a special faculty of reflexion, which they controvert—James Mill, Analysts, i. p. 22459.

(corrected, aes by both his editors, pp. 227 and 230), and also Hamilton, Lectaeme

3 It has been thought a fatal objection to this view that it implies the possibility of an indefinite regress ; but why should it not? We reach the limit of our experience in reflexion or at most in deliberate introspection, just as in space of three dimensions we reach the limit of our experience in another respect. But there is no absurdity in supposing a Consciousness more evolved and explicit than our self-consciousness and advancing on it as it advances on that of the unreflecting brutes.

If we speak of

Conduct.

PoYTcCwm Oro G Y¥

ally when these are over or have ceased to be all-engrossing. Now in such cases it will be found that some cffect of the preceding state

of objective absorption persists, like wounds reccived in battle un-

noticed till the fight is over,—such, ¢.g., as the weariness of muscular exertion or of long concentration of attention ; some pleasurable or

painful after-sensation passively experienced, or an emotional wave subsiding but not yet spent ; "the jar of interrupted expectation,"

or the relief of sudden attainment after arduous striving, making

prominent the contrast of contentment and want in that particular ; or, finally, the quiet retrospect and mental rumination in which we note what time has wrought upon us and either regret or approve what we were and did. All such presentations are of the class out of which, as we have seen, the presentation of self is built up, and so form in each case the concrete bond connecting the generic image of self with its object.1 In this way and in this respect each is a concrete instance of what we call a state, act, affection, &c., and the judgments in which such relations to the standing

presentation of self are recognized are the original and the type of all real pre- dications (comp. p. 81). The opportunities for reflexion are at first few, the materials being as it were thrust upon attention, and the resulting "percepts" are but vague. By the time, however, that a clear conception of self has been attained the exigencies of life

make it a frequent object of contemplation, and as the abstract of

a series of instances of such definite self-consciousness we reach the purely formal notion of a subject or pure ego. For empirical psychology this notion is ultimate ; its speculative treatment falls altogether—usually under the heading "rational psychology "'—to inetaphysics.

The growth of intellection and self-consciousness reacts power- fully upon the emotional and active side of mind. To describe the various sources of feeling and of desire that thus arise—es thetic, social and religious sentiments, pride, anibition, selfishness, sym- pathy, &c.—is beyond the scope of systematic psychology and certainly quite beyond the limits of an article like the present.? But at least a general réswmé of the characteristics of activity on this highest or rational level is indispensable. If we are to gain any oversight in a matter of such complexity it is of the first im- portance to keep steadily in view, as a fundamental principle, that as the causes of feeling become more complex, internal, and repre- sentative the consequent actions change in like manner. We have noted this connexion already in the case of the emergence of desires, and seen that desire in prompting to the search for means to its end is the primum movens of intellection (pp. 73-75). But intellect does much more than devise and contrive in unquestioning sub- servience to the impulse of the moment, like some demon of Eastern fable; even the brutes, whose cunning is on the whole of this sort, are not without traces of self-control. As motives conflict and the evils of hasty action recur to mind, deliberation succeeds to mere invention and design. In moments of leisure, the more imperious cravings being stilled, besides the rehearsal of failures or successes in the past, come longer and longer flights of imagination into the future. Both furnish material for intelectual rumination, and so we have at length (1) conceptions of general and distant ends, as wealth, power, knowledge, and —self-consciousness having arisen— the conception also of the happiness

or perfection of self, and (2) Maxims or practical generalizations as to the best means to these ends. Instead of actions determined by the vis a tergo of blind passion we have conduct shaped by what is literally prudence or foresight, the pursuit of ends that are not esteemed desirable till they are judged to be good. The good, it is truly urged, is not to be identified with the pleasant, for the one implies a standard and a judgment and the other nothing but a bare fact of feeling ; thus the good is often not pleasant and the pleasant not good ; in talk- ing of the good, in short, we are passing out of the region of nature into that of character. It is so, and yet this progress is itself so far natural as to admit of psychological explication. As already urged (p. 72), the causes of feeling change as the constituents of cou- Sclousness change and depend more upon the form of that conscious- hess as that increases in complexity. When we can deliberately vauge to and fro in time and circumstances, the good that is not directly pleasant may indeed be preferred to what is only pleasant while attention is confined to the seen and sensible ; but then the choice of such good is itself pleasant, — pleasanter than its rejection would have been. Freedom of will in the sense of absolute arbi- trariness or ' causeless volition," then, is at least without support from experience. The immediate affirmation of self-consciousness*

1 They have thus a certain analogy to the presentative element in external Perception, the re-presentative elements being furnished by the rest of the generic image of self. But, as this generic image is combined with and priin- arily sustained by a continuous stream of organic sensations, the analogy is not very exact.

2 The psychology of a century or so ago, like the biology of the same period, was largely of the ' natural history" type and was much occupied with such descriptions ; writers like Dugald Stewart, Brown, and Abercrombie, e.g., draw freely from biography (and even from fiction) illustrations of the popularly received mental faculties and affections. A very complete and competent handling of the various emotions and springs of action will be found in Bain,

he Emotions and the Will; Nahlowsky, Das Gefithisleben, 2d ed., 1884, is also good.

S5

that in the moment of action we are free must be admitted indeed, but it does not prove what it is supposed to prove—the existence of a liberum arbitrium indifferentie —but only that the relation of the end approved to the empirical self as then presented was the determining motive. This freedom of this empirical self is in all cases a relative freedom ; hence at a later time we often come to see that in some past act of choice we were not our true selves, not really free. Or perhaps we hold that we mere free and could have acted otherwise ; and this also is true if we suppose the place of the purely formal and abstract conception of self had been occupied by some other mood of that empitical self which is con- tinuously, but at no one moment completely, presented. It must, however, be admitted that psychological analysis in such cases is not only actually incomplete but in one respect must necessarily always remain so; and that for the simple reason that all we discern by reflexion must ever be less than all we are. That empirical self that the subject sces and even fashions is after all only its object and workmanship, not itself. If this be so, the indeterininist posi- tion, that particular acts are not fully determined by aught in con- sciousness, can neither be certainly established nor finally overthrown on scientific grounds ; but the presumption is againstit. Inanother sense, however, it may be allowed that freedom is possible, if not actual, viz., as synonymous with self-rule or autonomy. Freedom apples not to the ultimate source of an activity but to execution ; that man is free "externally" who can do what he pleases, and when we talk of internal freedom the same meaning holds.#

BrBuioGrapHy.—A. Historical.—There are few good works on the history of psychology ; the only one in English (R. Blakey, History of the Philosophy of Mind from the Earlicst Pertod to the Present Time, London, 1848) is said to be worthless, F. A. Carus's Geschichte der Psychologie (Leipsic, 1808) is at least useful for refer- ence. A work bearing the same title by H. Siebeck, of which only the first part has yet appeared (consisting of two divisions—(i.) Die Psychologie von Aristoteles, (il.) Die Psychologie von Aristotcles bus zu Thomas von Aquino, Gotha, 1880 and 1884) is thoroughly and carefully done. Die Philosophic in threr Geschichte (I, Psychologic), by the late Professor Harms (Berlin, 187), is also good. Ribot's La Psychologie Anglaise contemporaine (2d ed., Paris, 1875) and La Psychologie Allemande contemporaine (Paris, 1879) are lucid and

concise in style, though the latter work in places is superficial and inaccurate.

B. Positive.~~—The most useful and complete work as an intro~~ duction, and for the English reader, is Mr Sully's well-arranged and well-written Outlines of Psychology (2d ed., London, 1885). Of more advanced text-books the late Professor Volkmann's Lehr- buch der Psychologic (2 vols., 3d ed., K6then, 1885, edited by Cornelius) is a monument worthy the lifelong labours it entailed. Written in the main from a Herbartian standpoint, it is still the work of one who not only had read and thought over all that was worth reading by psychologists of every school but was unusually gifted with the qualities that make a good investigator and a good expositor. The importance of the Herbartian psychology to English students has been too long overlooked; while it has much in common with the English preference for empirical methods, it is in aim, if not in attainment, greatly in advance of English writers in exactness and system. Other excellent works of the same school are M. W. H. Drobisch's Empirische Psychologie (Leipsic, 1842), T. Waitz's Lehrbuch der Psychologic als Naturwissenschaft (Bruns-wick, 1849), and Steinthal's Einleitung in dic Psychologie und Sprachwissenschaft (Berlin, 1871). To the honoured name of Lotze belongs a distinguished place in any enumeration of recent produe- tions in philosophy ; his Afedicinische Psychologie (Gottingen, 1852) is still valuable ; but it is out of print and scarce.

PSYCHOPHYSICS. See Weper's Law.

3 See Eruics, to which these questions more fitly belong.

36 pT A—P TE

tremity of the vertebra next in front of it. The eight or nine cervical vertebrae are always large, and are succeeded by about fourteen or sixteen which bear ribs. Probably there are no vertebra which can be called lumbar. The sacrum consists of from three to six vertebra. – The tail is short in some genera and very long in others. The sternum has a distinct median crest, and the scapula and coracoid are also much like those of carinate birds. The humerus has a strong ridge for the attachment of the pectoral muscle, and the radius and ulna are separate bones. There are four distinct

metacarpals ; passing from the inner or radial side, the first three of these bear respectively two, three, and four phalanges, the terminal ones having had

PTARMIGAN. See Grovss, vol. xi. p. 222.

PTERODACTYLE. The extinct flying reptiles known as "pterodactyles" are among the most aberrant forms of animals, either living or extinct. Since the beginning of this century, when Blumenbach and Cuvier first described the remains of these curious creatures, they have occupied the attention of naturalists, and various opinions have been expressed as to their natural affinities. The general pro- portions of their bodies (excepting the larger head and neck) and the modification of the forelimb, to support a mem- brane for flight, remind one strongly of the bats, but the resemblance is only superficial ; a closer inspection shows that their affinities are rather with reptiles and birds.

In all pterodactyles the head, neck, and forelimb are large in proportion to the other parts of the body (fig. 1). The skull is remarkably avian, and even the teeth, which

amore

}

Fia. 1.—Pterodactylus spectabilis, Von Meyer, natural size, from the lithographic slate. h, humerus ; ru, radius and ulna; mc, metacarpals ; pt, pteroid bone; 2, 3, 4, digits with claws; 5, elongated digit for support of wing membrane ;

pe sternum, crest not shown ; is, ischium; pp, prepubis. The teeth are not shown.

most of them possess, and which seem so unbird-like, are paralleled in the Cretaceous toothed birds of North America. Judging from the form of the skull, the brain was small, but rounded and more like that of a bird than that of a reptile. The position of the occipital condyle, beneath and not at the back of the skull, is another char- acter pointing in the same direction.

The nasal opening is not far in advance of the large orbit, and in some forms there is a lachrymo-nasal fossa between them. The pre- maxilla are large, while the maxille are slender. In certain species the extremities of the upper and lower jaws seem to have been covered with horn, and some forms at least had bony plates around the eye. The union of the post-frontal bone with the squamosal to form a supra-temporal fossa is a reptilian character. Both jaws are usually provided with long slender teeth, but they are not always present. The vertebral column may be divided into cervical, dorsal, sacral, and caudal regions. The centra of the vertebree are proccelous,—that is, the front of each centrum is cup-like and receives the ball-like hinder ex-

Fig. 2.—Rhamphorhynchus phyllurus, Marsh, from the Solenhofen slates, one- fourth natural size, with the greater part of the wing membranes preserved. x, caudal membrane; st, sternum; h, humerus; sc, scapula and coracoid ; wm, wing membrane.

claws. The phalanges of the outermost digit are much elongated, and except in one doubtful form are always four

digit, for the support of the patagium, which is the most characteristic feature of the pterodactyle's organization. A slender bone called the "pteroid" is sometimes seen extending from the carpal region in the direction of the upper part of the humerus. Some naturalists look upon the pteroid merely as an ossification of a tendon, corre- sponding with one which is found in this position in birds, while others are inclined to regard it rather as a rudiment- ary first digit, modified to support the édge of the patagium. The pelvis is small. In form the ilia'resemble rather the ornithic than the reptilian type ; but the other portions of the pelvis are more like those of the crocodiles. The hind

in number. It is the extreme elongation of this outer:

PTO—PTO

limb is small, and the fibula seems to have been feebly developed and fixed to the tibia. The hind foot has five digits in some forms, but only four in others. In the latter case the number of phalanges to each digit, counting

from the tibial side, is two, three, four, five respectively, The long bones and vertebrz, as well as some parts of the skull, contained large pneumatic cavities similar to those found in birds. There can be little doubt that the ptero- dactyles had the power of sustained flight. The large size of the sternal crest indicates a similar development of the pectoral nuscles and a corresponding strength in the arms. The form of the forelimb, especially its outer digit, indi- cates in no uncertain manner that it supported a flying membrane ; but within the last few years this has been more clearly demonstrated by the discovery of a specimen in the Solenhofen slates with the membrane preserved (fig. 2). The occurrence of pterodactyle remains in marine deposits would seem to indicate that they frequented the seashore ; and it is tolerably certain that those forms with long and slender teeth were, in part at least, fish-eaters. Seeing, however, that the armature of the jaws varies considerably in the different genera, it is most likely that

their diet varied accordingly.

Pterodaetyles present so many avian peculiarities that it has been proposed to place them ina special group, to be called Ornithosauria, which would hold a position intermediate between Aves and Reptilia. On the other hand, pterodactyles are thought by most authorities to have a closer relationship with the reptiles, and the different genera are placed in a separate order of the Reptilia called Ptero- swuria. The most important genera are five. (1) Pterodaetylus; these have the jaws pointed and toothed to their extremities, and the tail veryshort. (2) Rhamphorhynchus (fig. 2); this genus has the jaws provided with slender teeth, but the extremities of both mandible and upper jaw are produced into toothless beaks, which were prob- ably covered with horn ; the tail is extremely long. (3) Dimor- phodon ; in this form the anterior teeth in both upper and lower Jaws are long, but those at the hinder part of the jaws are short 2 the tail is extremely long. (4) Pteranodon ; similar in most respects to Pterodactylus, but the jaws are devoid of teeth. In these four genera the outer digit of the manus has fonr phalanges. (5) Ornt- thopterus; this form is said to have only two phalanges in the outer digit of the manus ; the genus, however, is very imperfectly known, and it has been suggested that it may perhaps be a true bird.

The Pterosauria are only known to have lived during the Meso- zoic period. They are first met with in the Lower Lias, the Dimor- phodon macronyx from Lyme Regis being perhaps the earliest known species. The Jurassic slatcs of Solenhofen have yielded a large number of beautifully preserved examples of Pterodactylus and Rhamphorhynchus, and remains of the same genera have been found in England in the Stonesfield slate. Bones of pterodactyles have also been obtained in some abundance from the Cretaccous phosphatic deposits near Cambridge ; and their remains have been met with occasionally in the Wealden and Chalk of Kent. The genus Peranodon is only known from the Upper Cretaceous rocks of North America, The Pterosauria were for the most part of moderate or small size (see fig. 1), but some attained to very con- siderable dimensions ; for instance, Rhamphorhynchus Bucklandi from the Stonesfield slate probably measured 7 feet between the wing-tips. But the largest forms existed apparently towards the elose of the Mesozoic period, the pterodactyles of the British Cretaceous rocks and the American Pieranodon being of still larger Size: some of them, it is calculated, must have had wings at least 20 feet in extent.

See Buckland, Bridgewater Treatise, 1836; Cuvier, Ossements fossiles, vol. v. pt. 2, p. 359 (1824) ; Huxley, "On Rhamphorhynchus Bucklandi," in Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., vol. xv. p, 658 (1859), and Anatomy of Vertebrated Animals (1871), p. 266; Marsh, " Notice of New Sub-order of Pterosauria (Pteranodon)," Amer. Journ. Sei. and Art, vol. xi. p. 507 (1876), and on the " Wings of Pterodac- tyles," in Amer. Journ, Science, vol. xxiii. p. 251 (1882); Owen, Palaonto- graphical Society (1851, 1859, 1860); Seeley, Ornithosawria (1870); Von Meyer,

Reptilien aus dem lithograph. Schiefer [Fauna der Vorwelt] (1859), and Paleonto- graphica, vol. x. p. 1 (1861). (E. T. N.

PTOLEMIES, the Macedonian dynasty of sovereigns of Egypt. See Eoypr, vol. vil, pp. 745-748, and Mace. DONIAN Empire, vol. xv. p. 144.

PTOLEMY (Cravpivs PTOLEM&Us), celebrated as a mathematician, astronomer, and geographer. He was a native of Egypt, but there is an uncertainty as to the place of his birth ; some ancient manuscripts of his

works describe him as of Pelusium, but Theodorus Meliteniota, a Greek writer on astronomy of the 12th century, says that he was

born at Ptolemais Hermii, a Grecian city of the Thebaid. It is certain that he observed at Alexandria during the reigns of Hadrian and Antoninus Pius, and that he sur- vived Antoninus. Olympiodorus, a philosopher of the Neoplatonic school who lived in the reign of the emperor Justinian, relates in his scholia on the Phedo of Plato that Ptolemy devoted his life to astronomy and lived for forty years in the so-called IIrepa 70d KavéBov, probably elevated terraces of the temple of Serapis at Canopus near Alexandria, where they raised pillars with the results of his astronomical discoveries engraved upon them. This statement is probably correct ; we have indeed the direct evidence of Ptolemy himself that he made astronomical ob- servations during a long series of years; his first recorded observation was made in the eleventh year of Hadrian, 127 a.p.,! and his last in the fourteenth year of Antoninus, 151 a.p, Ptolemy, moreover, says, " We make our obser- vations in the parallel of Alexandria." St Isidore of Seville asserts that he was of the royal race of the Ptolemies, and even calls him king of Alexandria ; this assertion has been followed by others, but there is no ground for their opinion. Indeed Fabricius shows by numerous instances that the name Ptolemy was common in Egypt. Weidler, from whom this is taken, also tells us that according to Arabian tradition Ptolemy lived to the age of seventy-eight years ; from the same source some description of his personal appearance has been handed down, which is generally considered as not trustworthy, but which may be seen in Weidler, Historia Astronomiz, p. 177, or in the preface to Halma's edition of the Almagest, p. lxi. Ptolemy's work as a geographer is treated of below (p. 91 sg.), and an account of the discoveries in astronomy of Hipparchus and Ptolemy has been given in the article Astronomy. Their contribu- tions to pure mathematics have not yet been noticed in the present work. Of these the chief is the foundation of

trigonometry, plane and spherical, including the formation

of a table of chords, which served the same purpose as our table of sines. This branch of mathematics was created by Hipparchus for the use of

astronomers, and its exposi- tion was given by Ptolemy in a form so perfect that for 1400 years it was not surpassed. In this respect it may be compared with the doctrine as to the motion of the heavenly bodies so well known as the Ptolemaic system, which was paramount for about the same period of time. There is, however, this difference, that, whereas the Ptole- maic system was then overthrown, the theorems of Hip- parchus and Ptolemy, on the other hand, will be, as Delambre says, for ever the basis of trigonometry. The astronomical and trigonometrical systems are contained in the great work of Ptolemy 'H pa@npatixy otvragis, or, as Fabricius after Syncellus writes it, MeydAy otvrakis rips detpovopias; and in like manner Suidas says of7os [IroA.] eypaile Tov peyav dotpovopov rot cbvragw. The Syntacxis of Ptolemy was called 'O péyas dotpovdpos to distinguish it from another collection called 'O puxpds dotpovdpos, also highly esteemed by the Alexandrian school, which con- tained some works of Autolycus, Euclid, Aristarchus, Theo- dosius of Tripolis, Hypsicles, and Menelaus. To designate the great work of Ptolemy the Arabs used the superlative peyiorm, from which, the article al being prefixed, the hybrid name Almagest, by which it is now universally

known, is derived.

We proceed now to consider the trigonometrical work of Hippar- chus and Ptolemy. In the ninth chapter of the first book of the Almagest Ptolemy shows how to form a table of chords. He sup- poses the circumference divided into 360 equal parts (rujyara), and then bisects each of these parts. Further, he divides the diameter

1 Weidler and Halma give the ninth year; in the account of the eclipse of the moon in that year Ptolemy, however, does not say, as in other similar cases, he had observed, but it had been observed (Abmagest, iv. 9).

into 120 equal parts, and then for the subdivisions of these he em- ploys the sexagesimal method as most convenient in practice, ¢.2., he divides each of the sixty parts of the radius into sixty equal parts, and each of these parts he further subdivides into sixty equal parts. In the Latin translation these subdivisions become " partes minute prime" and " partes minute secund,"

whence our “minutes” and “seconds” have arisen. It must not be supposed, however, that these sexagesimal divisions are due to Ptolemy ; they must have been familiar to his predecessors, and were handed down from the Chal- deans. Nor did the formation of the table of chords originate with Ptolemy ; indeed, Theon of Alexandria, the father of Hypatia, who lived in the reign of Theodosius, in his commentary on the Almagest says expressly that Hipparchus had already given the doctrine of chords inscribed in a circle in twelve books, and that Menelaus had done the same in six books, but, he continues, every one must be astonished at the ease with which Ptolemy, by means of a few simple theorems, has found their values ; hence it is inferred that the method of calculation in the Almagest is Ptolemy’s own.

As starting-point the values of certain chords in terms of the diameter were already known, or could be easily found by means of the Elements of Euclid. Thus the side of the hexagon, or the chord of 60°, is equal to the radius, and thercfore contains sixty parts. The side of the decagon, or the chord of 36°, is the greater segment of the radius cut in extreme and mean ratio, and therefore contains approximately 37? 4’ 55” parts, of which the diameter contains 120 parts. Further, the square on the side of the regular pentagon is equal to the sum of the squares on the sides of the regular hexagon and of the regular decagon, all being inscribed in the same circle (Eucl. XIII. 10); the chord of 72° can therefore be calculated, and contains approximately 70° 32’ 3”, In like manner, the square on the chord of 90°, which is the side of the inscribed square, is twice the square on the radius ; and the square on the chord of 120707 the side of the equilateral triangle, 1s three times the square on the radius; these chords can thus be calculated approximately. Further, from the values of all these chords we can calculate at once the chords of the arcs which are their supplements.

This being laid down, we now proceed to give Ptolemy's exposition of the mode of obtaining his table of chords, which is a piece of geometry of great elegance, and is indeed, as De Morgan says, "one of the most beautiful in the Greek writers."

He takes as basis and sets forth as a lemma the well-known theorem, which is called after him, concerning a quadrilateral in- scribed in a circle: The rectangle under the diagonals is equal to the sum of the rectangles under the opposite sides. By means of this theorem the chord of the sum or of the difference of two arcs whose chords are given can be easily found, for we have only to dyaw a diameter from the common vertex of the two arcs the chord of whose sum or difference is required, and complete the quadri-lateral ; in one case a diagonal, in the other one of the sides is a diameter of the circle. The relations thus obtained are equivalent to the fundamental formule of our trigonometry —

sin (A+ B)=sin A cos B+cos A sin B, sin (A—B)=sin A cos B—cos A sin B, which can therefore be established in this simple way.

Ptolemy then gives a geometrical construction for finding the chord of half an are from the chord of the arc itself. By means of the foregoing theorems, since we know the chords of 72° and of 60°, we can find the chord of 12°; we can then find the chords of 6°, 3°, 14°, and three-fourths of 1°, and lastly, the chords of 44°, 74°, 9°, 104°, &c.,—all those ares, namely, as Ptolemy says, which being doubled are divisible by 3. Performing the calculations, he finds that the chord of 14° contains approximately 1" 34' 55", and the chord of three-fourths of 1° contains 0? 47' 8". A table of chords of ares increasing by 14° can thus be formed ; but this is not suffi-cient for Ptolemy's purpose, which was to frame a table of chords increasing by half a degree. This could be effected if he knew the chord of one-half of 1°; but, since this chord cannot be found geometrically from the chord of 14°, inasmuch as that would come to the triscction of an angle, he proceeds to seek in the first place the chord of 1°, which he finds approximately by means of alemma of great elegance, due probably to Apollonius. It is as follows: If two unequal chords be inscribed in a circle, the greater will be to the less in a less ratio than the arc described on the greater will be to the are described on the less. Having proved this theorem,

he proceeds to employ it in order to find approximately the chord of 1°, which he does in the following manner—

chord 60’ | 60 . 4 a

ame eo “chord 1 <3 chord 45’ ; again—

chord 90! _ 20

chord 60’ ~ 60’ For brevity we use modern notation. It has been shown that the chord of 45’ is OP 47’ 8” q.p., and the chord of 90’ is 1? 34’ 15” q.p. ; hence it follows that approximately

chord 1° <1» 2’ 50” 40” and > 1» 2’ 50”.

Since these values agree as far as the seconds, Ptolemy takes 1° 2’ 50"

be ae ”. chord Tee chord 90’.

as the approximate value of the chord of 1°. being thus known, he finds the chord of one-half of a degree, the approximate value of which is 0° 31’ 25”, and he is at once ina position to complete his table of chords for ares increasing by half a degree. Ptolemy then gives his table of chords, which is arranged in three columns ; in the first he has entered the arcs, increasing by half-degrees, from 0° to 180°; in the second he gives the values of the chords of these arcs in parts of which the diameter contains 120, the subdivisions being sexagesimal ; and in the third he has inserted the thirtieth parts of the differences of these chords for each half-degrec, in order that the chords of the intermediate arcs, which do not occur in the table, may be calculated, it being assumed that the increment of the chords of arcs within the table for each interval of 30’ is proportional to the increment of the arc.?

use of astronomers. applicable to astronomy, it is not surprising that its development was prior to that of plane trigonometry. of the eleventh chapter of the Almagest, whilst the solution of plane triangles is not treated separately in that work.

on a few simple and useful lemmas. known theorem of plane geometry concerning the segments of the sides of a triangle made by a transversal : The segments of any side are in a ratio compounded of the ratios of the segments of the other two sides. inscribed quadrilateral, was called after Ptolemy—naturally, indeed,

The chord of 1°

Trigonometry, we have seen, was created by Hipparchus for the Now, since spherical trigonometry is directly

It is the subject-matter

To resolve a plane triangle the Greeks supposed it to be inscribed

in a circle ; they must therefore have known the theorem—which is the basis of this branch of trigonometry—The sides of a triangle are proportional to the chords of the double arcs which measure the angles opposite to those sides. triangle this theorem, together with Eucl. I. 32 and 47, gives the complete solution. angled triangles by_drawing the perpendicular from a vertex on the opposite side. Halma) Ptolemy solves a triangle in which the three sides are given by finding the segments of a side made by the perpendicular on it from the opposite vertex. eleventh chapter of the first book of the Almagest contains inci- dentally some theorems and problems in plane trigonometry. The problems which are inet with correspond to the following: Divide a given are into two parts so that the chords of the doubles of those arcs shall have a given ratio; the same problem for external sec- tion. Lastly, it may be mentioned that Ptolemy (Alm., vi. 7; vol. 1.

ee, eee" p. 421, ed. Halma) takes 3° 8' 30", 22, 3 +45 +3600 =? 1416, as

the value of the ratio of the circumference to the diameter of a circle, and adds that, as had becn shown by Archimedes, it lies between 34 and 37%.

In the case of a right-angled Other triangles were resolved into right-

In one place (dlm., vi. c. 7; vol. i. p. 422, ed.

It should be noticed also that the

The foundation of spherical trigonometry is laid in chapter x1. The starting-point is the well-

This theorem, as well as that concerning the

since no reference to its source occurs in the Almagest. This error was corrected by Mersenne, who showed that it was known to Menelaus, an astronomer and geometer who lived in the reign of the emperor Trajan, The theorem now bears the name of Menelaus, though most probably it came down from Hipparchus ; Chasles, indeed, thinks that Hipparchus deduced the property of the spheri- cal triangle froin that of the plane triangle, but throws the origin of the latter further back and attributes it to Euclid, suggesting that it was given in his Portsms.? Carnot made this theorem the basis of his theory of transversals in his essay on that subject. It should be noticed that the theorem is not given in the Almagest in the general manner stated above ; Ptolemy considers two cases only of the theorem, and Theon, in his commentary on the Almagest, has added two more cases. 'The proofs, however, are general. Ptolemy then lays down two lemmas : If the chord of an arc of a circle be cut in any ratio and a diameter be drawn through the point of section, the diameter will cut the arc into two parts the chords of whose doubles are in the same ratio as the segments of the chord ; and a similar theorem in the case when the chord is cut externally in any ratio. By means of these two lemmas Ptolemy deduces in an ingenious manner—easy to follow, but difficult to discover-—from the theorem of Menelaus for a plane triangle the corresponding theorem for a spherical triangle: If the sides of a spherical triangle be cut by an arc of a great circle, the chords of the doubles of the segments of any one side will be to each other in a ratio compounded of the ratios of the chords of the doubles of the segments of the other two sides. Here, too, the theorem is not stated generally ; two cases only are considered, corresponding to the two cases given i plano. Theon has added two cases. The proofs are general. By means of this theorem four of Napier's for- mule for the solution of right-angled spherical triangles can be easily

1 Ideler has examined the degree of accuracy of the numbers in these tables and finds that they are correct to five places of decimals.

2 On the theorem of Menelaus and the rule of six quantities, see Chasles, uaa a istorique sur VOrigine et Développement des Méthodes en Géomeétrie, note vi. p. 291.

established. Ptolemy does not give them, but in each case when required applies the theorem of Menelaus for spheries directly. This greatly increases the length of his demonstrations, which the modern reader finds still more ecumbrous, inasmuch as in each case it was necessary to express the relation in terms of chords—the equivalents of sines—ouly, cosines and tangents being of later invention.

Such, then, was the trigonometry of the Greeks. Mathe- matics, indeed, has ever been, as it were, the handmaid of astronomy, and many important methods of the former arose from the needs of the latter. Moreover, by the found- ation of trigonometry, astronomy attained its final general constitution, in which calculations took the place of dia- grams, as these latter had been at an earlier period sub- stituted for mechanical apparatus in solving the ordinary problems. Further, we find in the application of trigon- ometry to astronomy frequent examples and even a sys- tematic use of the method of approximations,—the basis, in fact, of all application of mathematics to practical questions. There was a disinclination on the part of the Greek geometer to be satisfied with a mere approximation, were it ever so close; and the unscientific agrimensor shirked the labour involved in acquiring the knowledge which was indispensable for learning trigonometrical cal- culations. Thus the development of the calculus of approximations fell to the lot of the astronomer, who was both scientific and practical.?

We now proceed to notice briefly the contents of the Almagest. It is divided into thirteen books. The first book, which may be regarded as introductory to the whole work, opens with a short preface, in which Ptolemy, after some observations on the distinc- tion between theory and practice, gives Aristotle's division of the sciences and remarks on the certainty of mathematical knowledge, ""inasmuch as the demonstrations in it proceed

by the incontrovert- ible ways of arithmetic and geometry." He concludes his preface with the statement that he will make use of the discoveries of his predecessors, and relate briefly all that has been sufficiently explained by the ancients, but that he will treat with more care and develop- ment whatever has not been well understood or fully treated. Ptolemy unfortunately does not always bear this in mind, and it is sometimes difficult to distinguish what is due to him from that which he has borrowed from his predecessors.

Ptolemy then, in the first chapter, presupposing some preliminary notions on the part of the reader, announces that he will treat in order—what is the relation of the earth to the heavens, what is the position of the oblique circle (the ecliptic), and the situation of the inhabited parts of the carth ; that he will point out the differences of climates ; that he will then pass on to the consideration of the motion of the sun and moon, without which one cannot have a just theory of the stars ; lastly, that he will consider the sphere of the fixed stars and then the theory of the five stars called " planets." All these things—i.c., the phenomena of the heavenly bodies—he says he will endeavour to explain in taking for principle that which is evident, rcal, and certain, in resting everywhere on the surest observations and applying geometrical methods. He then enters on a summary exposition of the general principles on which his Syntaxis is bascd, and adduces arguments to show that the heaven is of a spherical form and that it moves after the manner of a sphere, that the earth also is of a form which is sensibly spherical, that the earth is in the centre of the heavens, that it is but a point im comparison with the distances of the stars, and that it has not any motion of translation. With respect to the revolution of the carth round its axis, which he says some have held, Ptolemy, while admitting that this supposition renders the explanation of the phenomena of the heavens much more simple, yet regards it as altogether ridiculous. Lastly, he lays down that there are two principal and different motions in the heavyens—one by which all the stars are carried from east to west uniformly about the poles of the equator; the other, which is peculiar to some of the stars, is in 4 contrary direction to the former motion and takes place round different poles. These preliminary notions, which are all older than Ptolemy, form the subjects of the second and following chapters. He next proceeds to the construction of his table of chords, of which we have given an account, and

which is indispensable to practical astronomy. The employment of this table presupposes the evaluation of the obliquity of the ecliptic, the knowledge of which is indeed the foundation of all astronomical science. Ptolemy in the next chapter indicates two means of determining this angle by observation, describes the instruments he employed for that purpose, and finds the same value which had already been found

; Comte, Systéme de Politique Positive, tii, 324. Cantor, Vorlesungen tiber Geschichte der Mathematik, p. 356.

by Eratosthenes and used by Hipparchus. This 'is followed by spherical geometry and trigonometry enough for the determination of the connexion betwecn the sun's right ascension, declination, and longitude, and for the formation of a table of declinations to each degree of longitude. Delambre says he found both this and the table of chords very exact." 3

In book ii., after some remarks on the situation of the habitable parts of the earth, Ptolemy proceeds to make deductions from the principles established in the preceding book, which he does by means of the theorem of Menelaus. The length of the longest day being given, he shows how to determine the ares of the horizon intercepted between the equator and the ecliptic—the amplitude of the eastern point of the ecliptic at the solstice—for different degrees of obliquity of the sphere ; hence he finds the height of the pole and reeiprocally. From the same data he shows how to find at what places and times the sun becomes vertieal and how to calculate the ratios of gnomons to their equinoctial and solstitial shadows at noon and conversely, pointing out, however, that the latter method is wanting in precision. All these matters he con- siders fully and works out in detail for the parallel of Rhodes. Theon gives us three reasons for the seleetion of that parallel by Ptolemy : the first is that the height of the pole at Rhodes is 36°, a whole number, whereas at Alexandria he believed it to be 30° Dom the second is that Hipparchus had made at Rhodes many observa- tions ; the third is that the climate of Rhodes holds the mean place of the seven climates subsequently described. Delambre suspects a fourth reason, which he thinks is the true one, that Ptolemy had taken his examples from the works of Hipparchus, who observed at Rhodes and had made these calculations for

the place where he lived. In chapter vi. Ptolemy gives an exposition of the most important properties of each parallel, commencing with the equator, whieh he considers as the southern limit of the habitable quarter of the earth. For each parallel or climate, which is determined by the length of the longest day, he gives the latitude, a principal place on the parallel, and the lengths of the shadows of the gnomon at the solstices and equinox. In the next chapter he enters into par- ticulars and inquires what are the arcs of the equator which cross the horizon at the same tine as given arcs of the ecliptic, or, which comes to the same thing, the time which a given are of the ecliptic takes to cross the horizon of a given place. He arrives at a formula for calculating ascensional differences and gives tables of asceusions arranged by 10° of longitude for the different climates from the equator to that where the longest day is seventeen hours. He then shows the use of these tables in the investigation of the length of the day for a given climate, of the manner of reducing temporal 4 to equinoctial hours and vice versa, and of the nonagesimal point and the point of orientation of the ecliptic. In the following chapters of this book he determines the angles formed by the inter- sections of the ecliptic—first with the meridian, then with the horizon, and lastly with the vertical circle—and coneludes by giving tables of the angles and ares formed by the intersection of these circles, for the seven climates, from the parallel of Meroe (thirteen hours) to that of the mouth of the Borysthenes (sixteen hours). These tables, lie adds, should be completed by the situation of the chief towns in all countries according to their latitudes and longi- tudes ; this he promises to do in a separate treatise and has in fact done in his Geography.

Book iii. treats of the motion of the sun and of the length of the year. In order to understand the difficulties of this question Ptolemy says one should read the books of the ancients, and especi- ally those of Hipparchus, whom he praises "as a lover of labour and a lover of truth" (dvdpi piAomdvy re duod Kal dihadnet). He begins by telling us how Hipparchus was led to discover the pre- cession of the equinoxes; he relates the observations which led Hipparchus to his second great discovery, that of the eccentricity of the solar orbit, and gives the hypothesis of the eccentric by which he explained the inequality of the sun's motion. Ptolemy concludes this book by giving a clear exposition of the circum- stances on which the equation of time depends. ll this the reader will find in the article Astronomy (vol. il. p.

750). Ptolemy, moreover, applies Apollonius's hypothesis of the epicycle to explain the inequality of the sun's motion, and shows that it leads to the same results as the hypothesis of the eccentric. He prefers the latter hypothesis as more simple, requiring only one and not two motions, and as equally fit to clear up the difficulties. In the second chapter there are some general remarks to which attention should be directed. We find the principle laid down that for the explanation of phenomena one should adopt the simplest hypothesis that it is possible to establish, provided that it is not contradicted by the observations in any important respect.> This fine principle,

3 De Morgan, in Smith's Dictionary of Greek and Roman Biography, s.v. "Ptolemaxus, Claudius."

4 Katpexal, temporal or variable. These hours varied in length with the seasons; they were used in aneient times and arose from the division of the natural day (from sunrise to sunset) into twelve parts.

5 Alm., ed. Halma, i. 159.

which is of universal application, may, we think—regard being paid to its place in the Almagest—be justly attributed to Hipparehus. It is the first law of the "philosophia prima" of Comte. We find in the same page another principle, or rather practical injunction, that in investigations founded on observations where great delicaey is required we should select those made at considerable intervals of time in order that the errors arising from the imperfection which is inherent in all observations, even in those made with the greatest care, may be lessened by being distributed over a large number of years. In the same chapter we find also the principle laid down that the object of mathematicians ought to be to represent all the celestial phenomena by uniform and circular motions. This prin- ciple is stated by Ptolemy in the manner which is unfortunately too common with him,—that is to say, he does not give the least indication whence he derived it. We know, however, from Sim- plieius, on the authority of Sosigenes,? that Plato

*is said to have proposed the following problem to astronomers : "What regular and determined motions being assumed would fully account for the phenomena of the motions of the planetary bodies?" We know, too, from the same source that Eudemus says in the second book of his History of Astronomy that " Eudoxus of Cnidus was the first of the Greeks to take in hand hypotheses of this kind," ® that he was in fact the first Greek astronomer who proposed a geometrical hypothesis for explaining the periodic motions of the planets—the famous system of concentric spheres. It thus appears that the principle laid down here by Ptolemy can be traced to Eudoxus and Plato ; and it is probable that they derived it from the same source, namely, Archytas and the Pythagoreans. We have indeed the direct testimony of Geminus of Rhodes that the Pythagoreans endeavoured to explain the phenomena of the heavens by uniform and circular motions.**

Books iv., v. arc devoted to the motions of the moon, which are very complicated ; the moon in fact, though the nearest to us of all the heavenly bodies, has always been the one which has given the greatest trouble to astronomers.' Book iv., in whieh Ptolemy follows Hipparchus, treats of the first and principal inequality of the moon, which quite corresponds to the inequality of the sun treated of in the third book. As to the observations which should be employed for the investigation of the motion of the moon, Ptolemy tells us that lunar eclipses should be preferred, inasmuch as they give the moon's place without any error on the score of parallax. The first thing to be determined is the time of the moon's revolution ; Hipparchus, by comparing the observations of the Chaldeans with his own, discovered that the shortest period in which the lunar eclipses return in the same order was 126,007 days and 1 hour. In this period he finds 4267 lunations, 45738 restitutions of anomaly, and 4612 tropical revolutions of the moon less 74° q.p. 3; this quantity (73°) is also wanting to complete the 345 revolutions which the sun makes in the same time with respect to the fixed stars. He concluded from this that the lunar month contains 29 days and 81' 50" 8'" 20" of a day, very nearly, or 29 days 12 hours 44' 3 20'". These results are of the highest import- ance. (See Astronomy.) In order to explain this equality, or the equation of the centre, Ptolemy makes use of the hypothesis of an epicycle, which he prefers to that of the eccentric. The fifth book commences with the description of the astrolabe of Hip- parchus, which Ptolemy made use of in following up the observa- tions of that astronomer,

and by means of which he made his most important discovery, that of the second inequality in the moon's motion, now known by the name of the "cvection." In order to explain this inequality he supposed the moon to move on an epicyele, which was carried by an eccentric whose centre turned about the earth in a direetion contrary to that of the motion of the epicycle. This is the first instance in which we find the two hypotheses of eccentric and epicycle combined. The fifth book treats also of the parallaxes of the sun and moon, and gives a description of an instrument—called later by Theon the "'parallactic rods'"—devised by Ptolemy for observing meridian altitudes with greater accuracy.

The subject of parallaxes is continued in the sixth book of the Almagest, and the method of calculating eclipses is there given. The author says nothing in it which was not known before ltis time.

Books vii., viii. treat of the fixed stars. Ptolemy verified the fixity of their relative positions and confirmed the observations of Hipparchus with regard to their motion in longitude, or the pre- cession of the equinoxes. (See Astronomy.) The seventh book concludes with the catalogue of the stars of the northern hemi- sphere, in which are entered their longitudes, latitudes, and magni-

1 Systeme de Politique Positive, iv. 173.

2 This Sosigenes, as Th. H. Martin has shown, was not the astronomer of that naine who was a contemporary of Julius Cesar, but a Peripatetic philosopher

who lived at the end of the 2d century a.D.

3 Brandis, Schol. in Aristot. edidit Acad. Reg. Borussica (Berlin, 1836), p. 498.

4 Hicaywy) eis Ta Paivdpueva, c. i. in Halma's edition of the works of Ptolemy, vol. iii. (Introduction aux Phénoménes Célestes, traduite du Gree de Geminus," p. 9), Paris, 1819.

5 This las been noticed by Pliny, who says, "' Multiformi hee (luna) ainbage torsit ingenia contemplantium, et proximum ignorari maxime sidus indignan- tium" (N, H., ii. 9).

book commences with what concerns them all in general. planets are much nearer to the earth than the fixed stars and more distant than the moon. then Jupiter and then Mars.

PTOLE Ma

tudes, arranged according to their constellations ; and the eighth book commences with a similar catalogue of the stars in the con- stellations of the southern hemisphere. the subject of keen controversy amongst modern astronomers. Some, as Flamsteed and Lalande, maintain that it was the same catalogue which Hipparchus had drawn up 265 years before Ptolemy, whereas others, of whom Laplace is'one, think that it is the work of Ptolemy himself. The probability is that in the main the catalogue is really that of Hipparchus altered to suit Ptolemy's own time, but that in making the changes which were necessary a wrong precession was assumed, This is Delambre's opinion ; he says, " Whoever may have been the true author, the catalogue is unique, and does not suit the age when Ptolemy lived ; by sub- tracting 2° 40' from all the longitudes it would suit the age of Hipparchus ; this is all that is certain."® It has been remarked that Ptolemy, living at Alexandria, at which city the altitude of the pole is 5° less than at Rhodes, where Hipparchus observed, could have seen stars which are not visible at Rhodes; none of these stars, however, are in Ptolemy's catalogue. contains, moreover, a description of the milky way and the manner of constructing a celestial globe ; it also treats of the configura- tion of the stars, first with regard to the sun, moon, and planets, and then with regard to the horizon, and likewise of the different aspects of the stars and of their rising, culmination, and setting simultaneously with the sun.

This catalogue has been

The eighth book

The ninth The

The remainder of the work is devoted to the planets.

Saturn is the most distant of all, These three planets are at a greater distance from the earth than the sun.? So far all astronomers are

agreed, This is not the case, he says, with respect to the two remaining planets, Mercury and Venus, which the old astronomers placed between the sun and earth, whereas more recent writers ® have placed them beyond the sun, because they were never seen on the sun.2 He shows that this reasoning is not sound, for they might be nearer to us than the sun and not in the same plane, and

consequently never seen on the sun. He decides in favour of the former opinion, which was indeed that of most mathematicians. The ground of the arrangement of the planets in order of distance

was the relative length of their periodic times; the greater the

circle, the greater, it was thought, would be the time required for its description, Hence we see the origin of the difficulty and the difference of opinion as to the arrangement of the sun, Mercury, and Venus, since the times in which, as seen from the earth, they appear to complete the circuit of the zodiac are nearly the same— a year. Delambre thinks it strange that Ptolemy did not see that these contrary opinions could be reconciled by supposing that the two planets moved in epicycles about the sun; this would be stranger still, he adds, if it is true that this idea, which is older than Ptolemy, since it is referred to by Cicero," had been that of the Egyptians.!? It may be added, as strangest of all, that this doetrine was held by Theon of Smyrna," who was a contemporary of Ptolemy or somewhat senior to him. From this system to that of Tycho Brahe there is, as Delambre observes, only a single step.

We have seen that the problem which presented itself to the astronomers of the Alexandrian epoch was the following: it was required to find such a system of equable circular motions as would represent the inequalities in the apparent motions of the sun, the moon, and the planets. Ptolemy now takes up this question for the planets; he says that "this perfection is of the essence of celestial things, which admit of neither disorder nor inequality,"

that this planetary theory is one of extreme difficulty, and that no one had yet completely succeeded in it. He adds that it was owing to these difficulties that Hipparchus—who loved truth above all things, and who, moreover, had not received from his prede- cessors observations either so numerous or so precise as those that he has left—had succeeded, as far as possible, in representing the motions of the sun and moon by circles, but had not even com- menced the theory of the five planets. He was content, Ptolemy

6 Delambre, Histoire de l Astronomie Ancienne, li. 264.

7 This is true of their mean distances ; but we know that Mars at opposition is nearer to us than the sun.

8 Hratosthenes, for example, as we learn from Theon of Smyrna.

9 Transits of Mercury and Venus over the sun's disk, therefore, had not been observed.

10 This was known to Eudoxus. Sir George Cornewall Lewis (An Historical Survey of the Astronomy of the Ancients, p. 155), confusing the geocentric revolu- tions assigned by Hudoxus to these two planets with the heliocentric revolu- tions in the Copernican system, which are of course quite different, says that " the error with respect to Mercury and Venus is considerable"; this, however, is an error not of Budoxus but of Cornewall Lewis, as Schiaparelli has remarked.

11 "Hune [solem] ut comites consequuntur Veneris alter, alter Mereurii cursus Ms (Somnium Scipionis, De Rep., vi. 17). This hypothesis is alluded to by Pliny, N. H., ii. 17, and is more explicitly stated by Vitruvius, Arch., ix. 4.

12 Macrobius, Commentarius ex Cicerone in Somnium Scipionis, i. 19.

13 Theon (Smyrneus Platonicus), Liber de Astronomia, ed.Th. H. Martin (Paris, 1849), pp. 174, 294, 296. Martin thinks that Theon, the mathematician, four of whose observations are used by Ptolemy (Alm., ii.

176, 193, 194, 195, 196, ed. Halma), is not the same as Theon of Smyrna, on the ground chiefly that the latter was not an observer.

in which the length of the longest day varies from 13} hours to 15} hours,—that is, from the latitude of Syene to that of the middle of the Euxine. This

3

work has been printed by Petavius in his Uranologium, Paris, 1630, and by Halma in his edition of the works of Ptolemy, vol. iii., Paris, 1819. (2) 'Crobéces Tay TRavwpever 9 Tov ovpaviwy KiKNwy Kwicets, On the Planetary Hypothesis. This is a summary of a portion of the Almagest, and con- tains a brief statement of the principal hypotheses for the explanation of the motions of the heavenly bodies, It was first published (Gr., Lat.) by Bainbridge, the Savilian professor of astronomy at Oxford, with the Sphere of Proclus and the Kavav Baotdecv, London, 1620, and afterwards by Halma, vol. iv., Paris,

1820. (3) Kavav Baotdedv, A Table of Reigns. This is a chronological table of Assyrian, Persian, Greek, and Roman sovereigns, with the length of their reigns, from Nabonagar to Antoninus Pius. This table (comp. G. Synecellus, Chronogr., ed. Dind., i. 388 sg.) has been printed by Scaliger, Calvisius, Petavius, Bainbridge (as above noted), and by Halma, vol. iii., Paris, 1819. (4) "A pyovt- k@v BiBdia 7. This Treatise on Music was published in Greek and Latin by Wallis at Oxford, 1682. It was afterwards reprinted with Porphyry's com- mentary in the third volume of Wallis's works, Oxford, 1699. (5) Terpd Bi Bros otvrakis, Tetrabiblon or Quadripartitum. This work is astrological, as is also the small collection of aphorisms, called Kaprés or Centiloquiwm, by which it is followed. It is doubtful whether these works are genuine, but the doubt

merely arises from the feeling that they are unworthy of Ptolemy. They were both published in Greek and Latin by Camerarius, Nuremberg, 1535, and by Melanchthon, Basel, 1553. (6) De Analemmate, The original of this work of Ptolemy is lost. It was translated from the Arabic and published by Com- mandine, Rome, 1562. The Analemma is the description of the sphere on a

*plane. We find in it the sections of the different circles, as the diurnal parallels, and everything which can facilitate the intelligence of gnomonics. This de scription is made by perpendiculars let fall on the plane ; whence it has been called by the moderns 'orthographic projection." (7) Planispherium, The Planisphere. The Greek text of this work also is lost, and we have only a Latin translation of it from the Arabic. The '*planisphere " is a projection of the sphere on the equator, the eye being at the pole,—in fact what is now called "stereographie" projection. The best edition of this work is that of . Commandine, Venice, 1558. (8) Optics. This work is known to us only by imperfect manuscripts in Paris and Oxford, which are Latin translations from the Arabic ; some extracts from them have been recently published. The Opties consists of five books, of which the fifth presents most interest : it treats of the refraction of luminous rays in their passage through media of different densities, and also of astronomical refractions, on which subject the theory is more complete than that of any astronomer before the time of Cassini. De Morgan doubts whether this work is genuine on account of the absence of allusion to the Almagest or to the subject of refraction in the Almagest itself; but his chief reason for doubting its authenticity is that the author of the Optics was & poor gcometer. (G. J. A.)*

Geography.

Ptolemy is hardly less celebrated as a geographer than as an astronomer, and his great work on geography exer- cised as great an influence on the progress of that science as did his Almagest on that of astronomy. It became indeed the paramount authority on all geographical ques- tions for a period of many centuries, and was only gradu- ally superseded by the progress of maritime discovery in the 15th and 16th centuries. This exceptional position was due in a great measure to its scientific form, which rendered it very convenient and easy of reference 3 but; apart from this consideration, it was really the first attempt ever made to place the study of geography on a truly scientific basis, The great astronomer Hipparchus had indeed pointed out, three centuries before the time of Ptolemy, that the only way to construct a. really trust- worthy map of the Inhabited World would be by observa- tions of the latitude and longitude of all the principal points on its surface, and laying down a map in accordance with the positions thus determined. But

the materials for such a course of proceeding were almost wholly wanting, and, though Hipparchus made some approach to a correct division of the known world into zones of latitude, or "'climata," as he termed them, trustworthy observations even of this character were in his time very few in number, while the means of determining longitudes could hardly be said to exist. Hence probably it arose that no attempt was made by succeeding geographers to follow up the im- portant suggestion of Hipparchus. Marinus of Tyre, who lived shortly before the time of Ptolemy, and whose work is known to us only through that writer, appears to have been the first to resume the problem thus proposed, and lay down the map of the known world in accordance with the precepts of Hipparchus. His materials for the execu- tion of such a design were indeed miserably inadequate, and he was forced to content himself for the most part with determinations derived not from astronomical obser- vations but from the calculation of distances from itineraries and other rough methods, such as still continue to be em- ployed even by modern geographers where more accurate

continues, to arrange the observations which had been made on them in a methodic order and to show thence that the phenomena did not agree with the hypotheses of mathematicians at that time. He showed that in fact each planet had two inequalities, which are different for each, that the retrogradations are also different, whilst other astronomers admitted only a single inequality and the same retrogradation ; he showed further that their motions cannot be explained by eccentrics nor by epicycles carried along concentrics, but that it was necessary to combine both hypotheses. After these preliminary notions he gives from Hipparchus the periodic motions of the five planets, together with the shortest times of restitutions, in which, moreover, he has made some slight corrections. He then gives tables of the mean motions in longitude and of anomaly of each of the five planets,1 and shows how the motions in longitude of the planets can be represented in a general manner by means of the hypothesis of the eccentric combined with that of the epicycle. He next applies his theory to each planct and concludes the ninth book by the explanation of the various phenomena of the planet Mercury. In the tenth and eleventh books he treats, in like manner, of the various phenomena of the planets Venus, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn.

Book xii. treats of the stationary and retrograde appearances of each of the planets and of the greatest elongations of Mercury and Venus. The author tells us that some mathematicians, and amongst them Apollonius of Perga, employed the hypothesis of the epicycle toexplain the stations and retrogradations of the planets. Ptolemy goes into this theory, but does uot change in the least the theorems of Apollonius ; he only promises simpler and clearer demonstra- tions of them. Delambre remarks that those of Apollonius must have been very obscure, since, in order to make the demonstrations in the Almagest intelligible, he (Delambre) was obliged to recast them. This statement of Ptolemy is important, as it shows that the mathematical theory of the planetary motions was in a toler- ably forward state long before his time. Finally, book xiii. treats of the motions of the planets in latitude, also of the inclinations of their orbits and of the magnitude of these inclinations.

Those who wish to go into details and learn the mathematical explanation of this celebrated system of "eccentrics" and "epicycles" are referred to the Almagest itself, which can be most conveniently studied in Halma's edition,2 to Delambre's Histoire del' Astronomie Ancienne, the second volume of which is for the most part devoted to the Almagest,3 or to Narrien's History of Astronomy,4 in which the subject is treated with great clearness.

Ptolemy concludes his great work by saying that he has ineluded in it every- thing of practical utility which in his judgment should find a place in a treatise on astronomy at the time it was written, with relation as well to dis-

A.D., and the Arabic translation was revised in the following century by Thabit ibn Korra. The emperor Frederick II. caused the Almagest to be trans- lated from the Arabic into Latin at N aples about 1230. In the 15th century it

graphical history, see Fabricius, Bibliotheca Greea, ed. Harles, vol. v. p. 280, and Halma's preface. An excellent summary of the bibliographical history is

qucrvations of the best meteorologists, as, for example, Meton, Democritus, ae 'igre Hipparchus, &c, Ptolemy, in order to make his Parapegma useful

all the Greeks scattered over the enlightened world of his time, gives the

mapeambre compares these mean motions with those of our modern tables af "- 8 them tolerably correct. By "motion in longitude" must be understood the motion of the centre of the epicycle about the eccentric, and by ee the motion of the star on its epicycle. " 7 this edition the Greek text and the French translation are given in the foycommns ; the latter, however, should not be read without reference to 3 Delambre begins his analysis of the Almagest thus—' L'Astronomie des recs est toute entidre dans la Syntaxe mathématique de Ptolémée."

arrien. istori rtai London, oe Historical Accownt of the Origin and Progress of Astronomy,

See Plate VII., vol. Sa%

Uz

means of determination are not available. The greater part of the treatise of Marinus was occupied with the discussion of these authorities, and it is impossible for us, in the absence of the original work, to determine how far he had succeeded in giving a scientific form to the results of his labours ; but we are told by Ptolemy himself that he considered them, on the whole, so satisfactory that he had made the work of his predecessor the basis of his own in regard to all the countries bordering on the Mediterranean, a term which would comprise to the ancient geographer almost all those regions of which he had really any definite know- ledge. With respect to the more remote regions of the world, Ptolemy availed himself of the information imparted by Marinus, but not without reserve, and has himself ex- plained to us the reasons that induced him in some instances to depart from the conclusions of his predecessor. It is very unjust to term Ptolemy a plagiarist from Marinus, as

has been done by some modern authors, as he himself

acknowledges in the fullest manner his obligations to that writer, from whom he derived the whole mass of his materials, which he undertook to arrange and present to luis readers in a scientific form, It is this form and

ar- rangement that constitute the great merit of Ptolemy's work and that have stamped it with a character wholly distinct from all previous treatises on geography. But at the same time it possesses much interest, as showing the greatly increased knowledge of the more remote por- tions of Asia and Africa which had been acquired by geo- graphers since the time of Strabo and Pliny.

It' will be convenient to consider separately the two different branches of the subject,—(1) the mathematical portion, which constitutes his geographical system, properly so termed; and (2) his contributions to the progress of positive knowledge with respect to the Inhabited World.

1. Mathematical .Geography. —As a great astronomer, Ptolemy was of course infinitely better qualified to comprehend and explain the mathematical conditions of the earth and its relations to the celestial bodies that surround it than any preceding writers on the special subject of geography. But his general views, except on a few points, did not differ from those of his most emincnt precursors Eratosthcnes and Strabo. In common with them, he assumed that the earth was a globe, the surface of which was divided by certain great circles—the cquator and the tropics— parallel to one another, and dividing the earth into five great zones, the relations of which with astronomical phenomena were of course clear to his mind as a matter of theory, though in regard to the regions bordering on the equator, as well as to those ad- joining the polar circle, he could have had no confirmation of his conclusions from actual observation. He adopted also from Hip- parchus the division of the equator and other great circles into 360 parts or "degrees" (as they were subsequently called, though the word does not occur in this sense in Ptolemy), and supposed other circles to be drawn through these, from the equator to the pole, to which he gave the name of "meridians." He thus conceived the whole surface of the earth (as is done by modern geographers) to be covered with a complete network of "parallels of latitude" and "meridians of longitude," terms which he himself was the first ex- tant writer to employ in this technical sense. Within the network thus constructed it was the task of the scientific geographer to place the outline of the world, so far as it was then known by experience and observation.

Unfortunately at the very outset of his attempt to realize this conception he fell into an error which had the effect of vitiating all his subsequent conclusions. Eratosthenes was the first writer who had attempted in a scientific manner to determine the cir- eumference of the carth, and the result at which he arrived, that it amounted to 250,000 stadia or 25,000 geographical milcs, was gencrally adopted by subsequent geographers, including Strabo. Posidonius, however, who wrote about a century after Eratosthenes, had made an independent calculation, by which he rcdueed the eircumferenee of the globe to 180,000 stadia, or less than three- fourths of the result obtained by Eratosthenes, and this computa- tion, on what grounds we know not, was unfortunately adopted by Marinus Tyrius, and from him by Ptolemy. The consequence of this error was of course to make every degree of latitude or longi- tude (measured at the equator) equal to only 500 stadia (50 geo- graphical miles), instead of its true equivalent of 600 stadia. Its effects would indeed have been in some measure neutralized had there cxisted a sufficient number of points of which the position

was determined by actual observation ; but we learn from Ptolemy himself that this was not the case, and that such observations for latitude were very few in number, while the means of determining longitudes were almost wholly wanting.' Hence the positions laid down by him were really, with very few exceptions, the result of computations of distances from itineraries and the statements of travellers, estimates which were liable to much greater error in ancient times than at the present day, from the want of any accurate mode of observing bearings, or portable instruments for the measure- ment of time, while they had no means at all of determining dis- tances at sea, except by the rough estimate of the time employed in sailing from point to point. The use of the log, simple as it appears to us, was unknown to the ancients. But, great as would naturally be the errors resulting from such imperfect means of cal- culation, they were in most cases increased by the permanent error arising from the erroneous system of graduation adopted by Ptolemy in laying them down upon his map. Thus, if he had arrived at the conclusion from itineraries that two places were 5000 stadia from one another, he would place them at a distance of 10° apart, and thus in fact separate them by an interval of 6000 stadia.

Another source of permancnt crror (though one of much less im- portance) which affected all his longitudes arose from the errone- ous assumption of his prime meridian. In this respect also he followed Marinus, who, having arrived at the conclusion that the Fortunate Islands (the Canaries) were situated farther west than any part of the continent of Europe, had taken the meridian through the outermost of. this group as his prime meridian, from whence he calculated all his longitudes eastwards to the Indian Ocean. But, as both Marinus and Ptolemy were very imperfectly acquainted with the position and arrangements of thc islands in question, the line thus assumed was in reality a purely imaginary one, being drawn through the swpposed position of the outer island, which they placed 24° west of the Sacred Promontory (Cape St Vincent), which was regarded by Marinus and Ptolemy, as it had becn by all previous geographers, as the westernmost point of the continent of Europe,—while the real difference betwecn the two is not less than 9°20'. Hence ali Ptolemy's longitudes, reckoned east- wards from this assumed line, were in fact about 7° less than they would have been if really measured from the meridian of Ferro, which continued so long in use among gcographers in modern times. The error in this instance was the more unfortunate as the longitude could not of course be really measured, or even calculated, from this imaginary line, but was in reality calculated in both directions from Alexandria, westwards as well as eastwards (as Ptolemy himself has done in his eighth book) and aftcrwards 7e- versed, so as to suit the supposed method of coimputation.

It must be observed also that the equator was in like manner placed by Ptolemy at a considerable distance from its true geo- graphical position. The place of the equinoctial line on the sur- face of the globe was of course well known to him as a matter of theory, but as no observations could have been made in those remote regions he could only caleulate its place from that of the tropic, which he supposed to pass through Syene. And as he here, as elsewhere, reckoned a degree of latitude as equivaleut to 500 stadia, he inevitably madc the interval between the tropic and the equator too small by one-sixth; and the place of the former on the surface of the earth being fixed by observation he necessarily carried up the supposed place of the equator too high by more than 280 geographical miles. But as he had practically no geographical aequaintance with the equinoctial regions of the earth this error was of little importanee.

With Marinus and Ptolemy, as with all preceding Greek geo- graphers, the most important line on the surface of the globe for all practieal purposes was the parallel of 36° of latitude, which passes through the Straits of Gibraltar at one end of the Mediter- rancan, and through the Island of Rhodes and the Gulf of Issus at the other. It was thus regarded by Diceearchus and almost all his successors as dividing the regions around the inland sea into two portions, and as being continued in theory along the chain of Mount Taurus till it joined the great mountain range north of India; and from thence to the Eastern Ocean it was regarded as constituting the dividing line of the Inhabited World, along which its length must be measured. But it sufficiently shows how inaccurate were the observations and how imperfect the materials at his command, even in regard to the best known portions of the earth, that Ptolemy, following Marinus, describes this parallel as passing through Caralis in Sardinia and Lilybeum in Sicily, the one being really in 39° 12' lat., the other in 87° 50". It is still more strange that he places so important and well known a city as Carthage 1° 20' sowth of the dividing parallel, while it really lies nearly 1° to the north of it.

1 Hipparchus had indeed pointed out long before the mode of de- termining longitudes by observations of eelipses, but the instanee to which he referred of the eelebrated eclipse before the battle of Arbela, whieh was seen also at Carthage, was a mere matter of popular obser- vation, of no scientific value. no other,

Yet Ptolemy seems to have known of ,

Pe? Oo lh MY

The great problem that had attracted the attention and exercised the ingenuity of all geographers from the time of Diczarchus to that of Ptolemy was to determine the length and breadth of the Inhabited World, which they justly regarded as the chief subject of the geograplier's consideration. This question had been very fully diseussed by Matinus, who had arrived at conclusions widely dif- ferent from those of his predecessors. Towards the north indeed there was no great difference of opinion, the latitude of Thule being generally recognized as that of the highest northern land, and this was placed both by Marinus and Ptolemy in 63° lat., not very far beyond the true position of the Shetland Islands, which had come in their time to be

generally identified with the mysterious Thule of Pytheas. The western extremity, as already mentioned, had been in like manner determined by the prime meridian drawn through the supposed position of the Fortunate Islands. But towards the south and east Marinus gave an enormous extension to the con- tinents of Africa and Asia, beyond what had been known to or suspected by the earlier geographers, and, though Ptolemy greatly reduced his calculations, he still retained a very exaggerated esti- mate of their results.

The additions thus made to the estimated dimensions of the known world were indeed in both directions based upon a real exten- sion of knowledge, derived from recent information ; but unfortu- nately the original statemeuts were so perverted by misinterpretation in applying them to the construction of a map as to give results differing widely from the truth. The southern limit of the world as known to Eratosthenes, and even to Strabo (who had in this respect no further knowledge than his predecessor more than two eenturies before), had been fixed by them at the parallel which passed through the eastern extremity of Africa (Cape Guardafui), or the Land of Cinnamon as they termed it, and that of the Sembritz (corresponding to Sennaar) in the interior of the same continent. This parallel, which would correspond nearly to that of 10° of true latitude, they supposed to be situated at a distance of 3400 stadia (340 geographical miles) from that of Meroe (the position of which was accurately known), and 13,400 to the south of Alexandria ; while they conceived it as passing, when prolonged to the eastward, through the island of Taprobane (Ceylon), which was universally recognized as the southernmost land of Asia. Both these geo- graphevs were wholly ignorant of the vast extension of Africa to the south of this line and even of the equator, and conccived it as trending away to the west from the Land of Cinnamon and then to the north-west to the Straits of Gibraltar. Marinus had, how- ever, learned from itinerarics both by land and sea the fact of this great extension, of which he had indeed conceived so exaggerated an idea that even after Ptolemy had reduced it by more than a half it was still materially in excess of the truth. The castern coast of Africa was indeed tolerably well known, being frequented by Greek and Roman traders, as far as a place called Rhapta, opposite to Zanzibar, and this is placed by Ptolemy not far from its true posi- tion in 7° S. lat. But le added to this a bay of great extent as far as a promontory called Prasum

(perhaps Cape Delgado), which he placed in 153° 8. lat. At the same time he assumed the position in about the same parallel of a region called Agisymba, which was Supposed to have been discovered by a Roman general, whose itinerary was employed by Marinus. Taking, therefore, this parallel as the limit of knowledge to the south, while he retained that of Thule to the north, he assigned to the inhabited world a breadth of nearly 80°, instead of less than 60°, which it had occupied on the maps of Eratosthenes and Strabo.

It had been a fixed belief with all the Greek geographers from the earliest attempts at scientific geography not only that the length of the Inhabited World greatly exceeded its breadth, but that it was more than twice as great, —a wholly unfounded assump- tion, but to which their successors seem to have felt themselves bound to conform. Thus Marinus, while giving an undue extension to Africa towards the south, fell into a similar error, but to a far greater degree, in regard to the extension of Asia towards the'east. Here also he really possessed a great advance in knowledge over all his predecessors, the increased trade with China for silk having led to an acquaintance, though of course of a very vague and general kind, with the vast regions in Central Asia that lay to the east of the Pamir range, which had formed the limit of the Asiatic nations previously known to the Greeks. But Marinus had learned that traders proceeding eastward from the Stone Tower—a station at the foot of this range—to Sera, the capital city of the Seres, occupied Seven months on the journey, and from thence he arrived at the Chormous result that the distance between the two points was not less than 36,200 stadia, or 3620 geographical miles. Ptolemy, while he justly points out the absurdity of this conclusion and the errone- ous mode of computation on which it was founded, had uo means of Correcting it by any real authority, and hence reduced it summarily by one half. 'he effect of this was to place Sera, the easternmost point on his map of Asia, at a distance of 454° from the Stone Tower, which again he fixed, on the authority of itineraries cited by Marinus, at 24,000 stadia or 60° of longitude from the Euphrates,

reckoning in both cases a degree of longitude as equivalent to 400

stadia, in accordance with his uniform system of allowing 500 stadia to 1° of latitude. Both distanees were greatly in exeess of the truth, independently of the error arising from this mistaken system of graduation. The distances west of the Euphrates were of course comparatively well known, nor did Ptolemy's calculation of the length of the Mediterranean differ very materially from those of previous Greek geographers, though still greatly exceeding the truth, after allowing for the permanent error of graduation. The cffect of this last cause, it must be remembered, would unfortunately be cumulative, in consequence of the longitudes being computed from a fixed point in the west, instead of being reckoned east and west from Alexandria, which was undoubtedly the mode in which they were really calculated. The result of these combined causes of error was to lead him to assign no less than 180°, or 12 hours, of longitude to the interval between the meridian of the Fortunate Islands and that of Sera, which really amounts to about 130°.

But in thus estimating the length and breadth of the known world Ptolemy attached a very different sense to these terms from that which they had gencrally borne with preceding writers. All former Greek geographers, with the single exception of Hipparchus, had agreed in supposing the Inhabited World to be surrounded on

_all sides by sea, and to form in fact a vast island in the midst of

a eircumfluous ocean. This notion, which was probably derived originally from the Homeric fiction of an ocean stream, and was certainly not based upon direct observation, was nevertheless of course in accordance with the truth, great as was the misconception it involved of the extent and magnitude of the continents included within this assumed boundary. Hence it was unfortunate that Ptolemy should in this respect have gone back to the views of flipparchus, and have assumed that the land extended indefinitely to the north in the case of Europe and Scythia, to the east in that of Asia, and to the south in that of Africa. His boundary-line was in each of these cases an arbitrary limit, beyond which lay the Unknown Land, as he calls it. But in the last case he was not content with giving to Africa an indefinite extension to the south: he assumed tlie existence of a vast prolongation of the land to the east from its southernmost known point, so as to form a

connexion with the south-eastern extremity of Asia, of the extent and position of which he had a wholly erroneous idea.

In this last case Marinus had derived from the voyages of recent navigators in the Indian Seas a knowledge of the fact that there lay in that direction extensive lands which had bcen totally un- known to previous geographers, and Ptolemy had acquired still more extensive information in this quarter. But unfortunately he had formed a totally false conception of the bearings of the coasts thus made known, and consequently of the position of the lands to which they belonged, and, instead of carrying the line of coast northwards from the Golden Chersonese (the Malay Peninsula) to China or the land of the Sine, he brought it down again towards the south after forming a great bay, so that he placed Cattigara— the principal emporium in this part of Asia, and the farthest point known to him—on a supposed line of coast, of unknown extent, but with a direction from nortl to south. The hypothesis that this land was continuous with the most southern part of Africa, so that the two enclosed one vast gulf, though a mere assumption, is stated by him as definitely as if it was based upon positive in- formation ; and it was long received by medieval geographers as an unquestioned fact. This circumstance undoubtedly contributed to perpetuate the error of supposing that Africa could not be cir- cumnavigated, in opposition to the more correct views of Strabo and other earlier geographers. On the other hand, there can be no doubt that the undue extension of Asia towards the east, so as to diminish by 50° of longitude the interval between that continent and the western coasts of Europe, had a material influence in foster- ing the belief of Columbus and others that it was possible to reach the Land of Spices (as the East Indian islands were then called) by direct navigation towards the west.

It is not surprising that Ptolemy should have fallen into con- siderable errors respecting the more distant quarters of the world ; but even in regard to the Mediterranean and its dependencies, as well as the regions that surrounded them, with which he was in a certain sense well acquainted, the imperfection of his geographical knowledge is strikingly apparent. Here he had indeed some well-established data for his guidance, as far as latitudes were con- cerned, That of Massilia had been determined many years before by Pytheas within a few miles of its true position, and the latitude of Rome,

as might be expected, was known with approximate accuracy. Those of Alexandria and Rhodes also were well known, having been the place of observation of distinguished astronomers, and the fortunate accident that the Island of Rhodes lay on the same parallel of latitude with the Straits of Gibraltar at the other end of the sea enabled him to connect the two by drawing the parallel direct from the one to the other. The importance attached to this line (86° N. lat.) by all preceding geographers has been already mentioned. Unfortunately Ptolemy, like his predecessors, supposed its course to lie almost uniformly through the open sea, wholly ignoring the great projection of the African coast towards

the north from Carthage to the neighbourhood of the straits. The erroneous position assigned to the former city has been already adverted to, and, being supposed to rest upon astronomical observa- tion, doubtless determined that of all the north coast of Africa. The result was that he assigned to the width of the Mediterranean from Massilia to the opposite point of the African coast an extent of more than 11° of latitude, while it does not really exceed 64°.

At the same time he was still more at a loss in respect of longi- tudes, for which he had absolutely no trustworthy observations to guide him ; but he nevertheless managed to arrive at a result con- siderably nearer the truth than had been attained by previous geo- graphers, all of whom had greatly exaggerated the length of the Inland Sea. Their calculations, like those of Marinus and Ptolemy, could only be founded on the imperfect estimates of mariners ; but unfortunately Ptolemy, in translating the conclusions thus arrived at into a scientific form, vitiated all his results by his erroneous system of graduation, and, while the calculation of Marinus gave a distance of 24,800 stadia as the length of the Mediterranean from the straits to the Gulf of Issus, this was converted by Ptolemy in preparing his tables to an interval of 62°, or just about 20° beyond the truth. Even after correcting the error due to his erroneous computation of 500 stadia to a degree, there remains an excess of nearly 500 geographical miles, which was doubtless owing to the exaggerated estimates of distances almost always made by navi- gators who had no real means of measuring them.

Another unfortunate error which disfigured the eastern portion of his map of the Mediterranean was the position assigned to By- zantium, which Ptolemy (misled in this instance by the authority of Hipparchus) placed in the same latitude with Massilia (43° 5'), thus carrying it up more than 2° above its true position. This had the inevitable effect of transferring the whole of the Euxine Sea— with the general form and dimensions of which he was fairly well acquainted—too far to the north by the same amount ; but in addi- tion to this he enormously exaggerated the extent of the Palus Meotis (the Sea of Azoff), which he at the same time represented as having its direction from south to north, so that by the com- bined effect of these two errors he carried up its northern extremity (with the mouth of the Tanais and the city of that name) as high as 54° 30', or on the true parallel of the south shore of the Baltic. Yet, while he fell into this strange misconception with regard to the great river which was universally considered by the ancients as the boundary between Europe and Asia, he was the first writer of antiquity who showed a clear conception of the true relations be- tween the Tanais and the Rha or Volga, which he correctly described as flowing into the Caspian Sea. With respect to this last also he was the first geographer after the time of Alexander to return to the. correct view (already found in Herodotus) that it was an inland sea, without any communication with the Northern Ocean.

With regard to the north of Europe his views were still very vague and imperfect. He had indeed considerably more acquaint- ance with the British Islands than any previous geographer, and even showed a tolerably accurate knowledge of some portions of their shores. But his map was, in this instance, disfigured by two unfortunate errors,—the one, that he placed Ireland (which he calls Ivernia) altogether too far to the north, so that its southernmost portion was brought actually to a latitude beyond that of North Wales; the other, which was probably connected with it, that the whole of Scotland is twisted rownd, so as to bring its general exten- sion into a direction from west to east, instead of from south to north, and place the northern extremity of the island on the same parallel with the promontory of Galloway. He appears to have been embarrassed in this part of his map by his having adopted the conclusion of Marinus—based upon what arguments we know not—that Thule was situated in 63°, while at the same timc he regarded it, in conformity with the received view of all earlier

geographers, as the most northern of all known lands. In accord- ance with this same assumption Ptolemy supposed the northern coast of Germany, which he believed to be the southern shore of the Great Ocean, to have a general direction from west to east, while he placed it not very far from the true position of that of the Baltic, of the existence of which as an inland sea he was wholly ignorant, as well as of the vast peninsula of Scandinavia beyond it, and only inserted the name of Scandia as that of an island of inconsiderable dimensions. At the same time he supposed the coast of Sarmatia from the Vistula eastwards to trend away to the north as far as the parallel of Thule ; nor did he conceive this as an actual limit, but believed the Unknown Land to extend indefinitely in this direction, as also to the north of Asiatic Scythia.

The enormous extent assigned by him to the latter region has been already adverted to; but vague and erroneous as were his views concerning it, it is certain that they show a much greater approximation to the truth than those of earlier geographers, who possessed hardly a suspicion of the vast tracts in question, which stretch across Central Asia from the borders of Sarmatia to those of China. Ptolemy was also the first who had anything like a clear idea of the chain to which he gave the name of Imaus, and correctly regarded as having a direction across Scythia from south

to north, so as to divide that great region into two distinct portions which he termed Scythia intra Imaum and Scythia extra Imaum, corresponding in some degree with those recognized in modern inaps as Independent and Chinese Tartary. The Imaus of Ptolemy corresponds clearly to the range known in modern days as the Bolor or Pamir, which has only been fully explored in quite recent times. It was, however, enormously misplaced, being transferred to 140° E. long., or 80° east of Alexandria, the rea] interval between the two being little more than 40°.

It is in respect of the southern shores of Asia that Ptolemy's geography is especially faulty, and his errors are here the more unfortunate as they were associated with greatly increased know- ledge in a general way of the regions in question. For more than a century before his time, indeed, the commercial relations between Alexandria, as the great emporium of the

Roman empire, and India had assumed a far more important character than at any former period, and the natural consequence was a greatly increased geographical knowledge of the Indian peninsula. The little tract called the Periplus of the Erythrxean Sea, about 80 A.D., contains sailing directions for merchants to the western ports of that country, from the mouth of the Indus to the coast of Malabar, and correctly indicates that the coast from Barygaza southwards had a general direction from north to south as far as the extremity of the peninsula (Cape Comorin). We are utterly ignorant of the reasons which induced Marinus, followed in this instance as in so many others by Ptolemy, to depart from this correct view, ard, while giving to the coast of India, from the mouths of the Indus to those of the Ganges, an undue extension in longitude, to curtail its extension towards the south to such an amount as to place Cape Cory (the southernmost point of the peninsula) only 4° of latitude south of Barygaza, the real intervals being more than 800 geo- graphical miles, or, according to Ptolemy's system of graduation, 16° of latitude! This enormous error, which has the effect of dis- torting the whole appearance of the south coast of Asia, is associated with another equally extraordinary, but of an opposite tendency, in regard to the neighbouring island of Taprobane or Ceylon, the dimensions of which had been exaggerated by most of the earlier Greek geographers; but to such an extent was this carried by Ptolemy as to extend it through not less than 15° of latitude and 12° of longitude, so as to make it about fourteen times as large as the reality, and bring down its southern extremity more than 2° to the south of the equator.

We have much less reason to be surprised at finding similar distortions in respect to the regions beyond the Ganges, concern- ing which he is our only ancient authority. During the interval which elapsed between the date of the Periplus and that of Marinus it is certain that some adventurous Greek mariners had not only crossed the great Gangetic Gulf and visited the land on the opposite side, to which they gave the name of the Golden Chersonese, but they had pushed their explorations considerably farther to the east, as far as Cattigara. It was not to be expected that these commercial ventures should have brought back any accurate geographical information, and accordingly we find the con- ception entertained by Ptolemy of these newly discovered regions to be very different from the reality. Not only had the distances, as was usually the case with ancient

navigators in remote quarters, been greatly exaggerated, but the want of accurate observations of bearings was peculiarly unfortunate in a case where the real features of the coast and the adjoining islands were so intricate and exceptional. A glance at the map appended to the article Mar (vol. xv. Plate VII.) will at once show the entire discrepancy between the configuration of this part of Asia as conceived by Ptolemy and its true formation. Yet with the materials at his command we can hardly wonder at his not having arrived at a nearer approximation to the truth. The most Tatfertuimaee error was his idea that after passing the Great Gulf, which lay beyond the Golden Chersonese, the coast trended away to the south, instead of towards the north, and he thus placed Cattigara (which was probably one of the ports in the south of China) not less than 84° south of the equator. It is probable that in this instance he was misled by his own theoretical conclusions, and carried this remotest part of the Asiatic continent so far to the south with the view of connecting it with his assumed eastward pro- longation of that of Africa.

Notwithstanding this last theoretical assumption Ptolemy's map of Africa presents a marked improvement upon those of Erato- sthenes and Strabo. But his knowledge of the west coast, which he conceived as having its direction nearly on a meridional line from north to south, was very imperfect, and his latitudes utterly erroneous. Even in regard to the Fortunate Islands, the position of which was so important to his system in connexion with his prime meridian, he was entirely misinformed as to their character and arrangement, and extended the group through a space of more than 5° of latitude, so as to bring down the most southerly of them to the real parallel of the Cape de Verd Islands.

In regard to the mathematical construction, or, to use the modern phrase, the projection of his maps, not only was Ptolemy

greatly in advance of all his predecessors, but his theoretical skill was altogether beyond the nature of the materials to which he applied it. The

methods by which he obviated the difficnlty of transferring the delineation of different countries from the spherical

surface of the globe to the plane surface of an ordinary map differed °

indeed but little from those in use at the present day, and the errors arising from this cause (apart from those produced by his fundamental error of graduation) were really of little consequence compared with the-defective character of his information and the want of anything approaching to a survey of the countries deline- ated. He himself was well aware of his deficiencies in this respect, and, while giving full directions for the scientific construction of a general map, he contents himself for the special maps of different countries with the simple method employed by Marinus of drawing the parallels of latitude and meridians of longitude as straight lines, assuming in each case the proportion between the two, as it really stood with respect to some one parallel towards the middle of the map, and neglecting the inclination of the meridians to one another. Such a course, as he himself repeatedly affirms, will not make any material difference within the limits of each special map.

Ptolemy's geographical work was devoted almost exclusively to the mathematical branch of his subject, and its peculiar arrange- ment, in which his results are presented in a tabular form, instead of being at once embodied in a map, was undoubtedly designed to enable the geographical student to construct his maps for himself, instead of depending upon those constructed ready to his hand. This purpose it has abundantly served, and there is little doubt that we owe to the peculiar form thus given to his results their transmission in a comparatively perfect condition to the present day. Unfortunately the specious appearance of the results thus presented to us has led to a very erroneous estimate of their accu- racy, and it has been too often supposed that what was stated in so scientific a form must necessarily be based upon scientific observa- tions. Though Ptolemy himself has distinctly pointed out in his first book the defective nature of his materials and the true char- acter of the data furnished by his tables, few readers studied this portion of his work, and his statements were generally received with the same undoubting faith as was justly attached to his astronomical observations. It is only in quite recent times that his conclusions have been

estimated at their just value, and the apparently scientific character of his work shown to be in most cases a specious edifice resting upon no adequate foundations.

There can be no doubt that the work of Ptolemy was from the time of its regularly referred to in the eighth book. But how far those which are now extant represent the original series is a disputed point. In two of the most ancient MSS. it is expressly stated that the iuaps which accompany them are the work of one Agathodemon of Alexandria, who "drew them according to the eight books of Claudius Ptolemy." This expression might equally apply to the work of a contemporary draughtsman under the eyes of Ptolemy himself, or to that of 'a skilful geographer at a later period, and nothing is known from any other source concerning this Agatho- demon. The attempt to identify him with a grammarian of the same name who lived in the 5th century is wholly without founda- tion. But it appears, on the whole, most probable that the maps appended to the MSS. still extant have been transmitted by unin- terrupted tradition from the time of Ptolemy.

2. Progress of Geographical Knowledge.—The above examination of the methods pursued by Ptolemy in framing his general map of the world, or according to the phrase universally employed by the ancients, the Inhabited World (4 otkouyérn), has already drawn attention to the principal extensions of geographical knowledge since the time of Strabo.

While anything like an accurate acquaintance was still confined to the limits of the Roman empire and the regions that immediately adjoined it, with the addition of the portions of Asia that had been long known to the Greeks, the geographical horizon had been greatly widened towards the east by commercial enterprise, and towards the south by the same cause, combined with expeditions of a military character, but which would appear to have been dictated by a spirit of discovery. Two expeditions of this kind had been carried out by Roman generals before the time of Marinus, which, starting from Fezzan, had penetrated the heart of the African continent due south as far as a tract called Agisymba, " which Was inhabited by Ethiopians and swarmed with' rhinoccroses." These statements point clearly to the expeditions having traversed the great desert and arrived at the Soudan or Negroland. But the actual position of Agisymba cannot be

determined except by mere conjecture. The absurdly exaggerated view taken by Marinus has been already noticed ; but, even after his estimate had been reduced by Ptolemy by more than one-half, the position assigned by that author to Agisymba was doubtless far in excess towards the south. But, while this name was the only result that we know to have been derived from these memorable expeditions, Ptolemy found himself In possession of a considerable amount of information con- cerning the interior of northern Africa (from whence derived we

first publication accompanied with maps, which are:

know not), to which nothing similar is found in any earlier writer. Unfortunately this new information was of so crude and vague a character, and is presented to us in so embarrassing a form, as to perplex rather than assist the geographical student, and the state- ments of Ptolemy concerning the rivers Gir and Nigir, and the lakes and mountains with which they were connected, have exer- cised the ingenuity and baffled the sagacity of successive generations of geographers in modern times to interpret or explain them. It may safely be said that they present no resemblance to the real features of the country as known to us by modern explorations, and cannot be reconciled with them except by the most arbitrary conjectures,

It is otherwise in the case of the Nile. To discover the source of that river had been long an object of curiosity both among the Greeks and Romans, and an expedition sent out for that purpose by the emperor Nero had undoubtedly penetrated as far as the marshes of the White Nile ; but we are wholly ignorant of the sources from whence Ptolemy derived his information. But his statement that the mighty river derived its waters from the confluence of two streams, which took their rise in two lakes a little to the south of the equator, was undoubtedly a nearer approach to the truth than any of the theories concocted in modern times before the discovery in our own days of the two great lakes now known as the Victoria and Albert Nyanza. He at the same time notices the other arm of the river (the Blue Nile) under the name of the Astapus, which he correctly describes as rising in another lake. In connexion with this subject he introduces a range of mountains running from east to west, which he calls the Mountains of the

Moon, and which have proved a sad stumbling-block to geographers in modern times, but may now be safely affirmed to represent the real fact of the exist- ence of snow-covered mountains (Kilimanjaro and Kenia) in these equatorial regions,

Much the same remarks apply to Ptolemy's geography of Asia as to that of Africa. In this case also he had obtained, as we have already seen, a vague knowledge of extensive regions, wholly un- known to the earlier geographers, and resting to a certain extent on authentic information, though much exaggerated and misunder- stood. But, while these informants had really brought home some definite statements concerning Serica or the Land of Silk, and its capital of Sera, there lay a vast region towards the north of the line of route leading to this far eastern land (supposed by Ptolemy to be nearly coincident with the parallel of 40°) of which appa- rently he knew nothing, but which he vaguely assumed to extend indefinitely northwards as far as the limits of the Unknown Land. The Jaxartes, which ever since the time of Alexander had been the boundary of Greek geography in this direction, still con- tinued in that of Ptolemy to be the northern limit of all that was really known of Central Asia. Beyond that he places a mass of names of tribes, to which he could assign no definite locality, and mountain ranges which he could only place at haphazard. The character of his information concerning the south-east of Asia has been already adverted to. But, strangely as he misplaced Catti- gara and the metropolis of Sinz connected with it, there can be no doubt that we recognize in this name (variously written Thine and Sine) the now familiar name of China; and it is important to observe that he places the land of the Sine immediately south of that of the Seres, showing that he was aware of the connexion be- tween the two, though the one was known only by land explora- tions and the other by maritime voyages,

In regard to the better known regions of the world, and especially those bordering on the Mediterranean, Ptolemy according to his own account followed for the most part the guidance of Marinus. The latter seems to have relied to a great extent on the work of Timosthenes (who flourished more than two centuries before) in respect to the coasts and maritime distances, Ptolemy, however, introduced many changes, some of which he has pointed out to us, though there are doubtless many others which we

have no means of detecting. For the interior of the different countries the Roman roads and itineraries must have furnished him with a mass of valuable materials which had not been available to earlier geo- graphers. But neither Marinus nor Ptolemy seems to have taken advantage of this last resource to the extent that we should have expected, and the tables of the Alexandrian geographer abound with mistakes—even in countries so well known as Gaul and Spain— which might easily have been obviated by a more judicious use of such Roman authorities.

Great as are undoubtedly the merits of Ptolemy's geographical work, it cannot be regarded as having any claim to be a complete or satisfactory treatise upon this vast subject. It was the work of an astronomer rather than a geographer, in the highest sense of the term. Not only did its plan exclude all description of the countries with which it dealt, their climate, natural productions, inhabitants, and peculiar features, all of which are included in the domain of the modern geographer, but even its physical geography strictly so called.is treated in the most irregular and perfunctory manner. While Strabo was fully alive to the importance of the great rivers and mountain chains which (to use his own expressive

phrase) "geographize" a country, Ptolemy deals with this part of his subject in so careless a manner as to be often worse than useless. Even in the case of a country so well known as Gaul the few notices that he gives of the great rivers that play so important a part in its geography are disfigured by some astounding errors; while he does not notice any of the great tributaries of the Rhine, though mentioning an obscure streamlet, otherwise unknown, because it

happened to be the boundary between two Roman provinces.

The revival of the study of Ptolemy's work after the Middle Ages and the influence it exercised upon the progress of geography have been described in the article Map (vol. xv. p. 520). His Geographia was printed for the first time in a Latin translation, accompanied with maps, in 1478, and numerous other editions followed in the latter part of the 15th and earlier half of the 16th century, but the Greek text did not make its appearance till 1533, when

it was published at Basel in 4to, edited by the celebrated Erasmus. All these early editions, however, swarm with textual errors, and are wholly worthless for critical purposes. The same may be said of the edition of Bertius (Gr. and Lat., Leyden, 1618, typ. Elzevir), which was long the standard library edition of the work. lt contains a new set of maps drawn by Mercator, as well as a fresh series (not intended to illustrate Ptolemy) by Ortelius, the Roman ltiner- aries, including the Tabula Peutingeriana, and much othcr miscellaneous matter. The first attempt at a really critical edition was made by Wilberg and Grashof (4to, Essen, 1842), but this unfortunately was never completed. The edition of Nobbe (8 vols. 18mo, Leipsic, 1843) presents the best Greek text of the whole work as yet available and has a useful index. But by far the best edition, so far as completed, is that published in Didot's Bibliotheca Classicorum Grecorum (Paris, 1883), edited by Dr C. Miiller, with a Latin trans- lation and a copious commentary, geographical as well as critical. The first part, which is all that has yet appeared, coutains only the first three books, without the Prolegomena, which will be anxiously expected by all students of Ptolemy. (E. H.

PUBLIC HEALTH. State medicine as an organized department of administration is entirely of modern growth. By the common law of England the only remedy for any act or omission dangerous to health was an action for damages or an indictment for nuisance. (See NUISANCE.) At the same time the jurisdiction of the commissioners of sewers acted to a certain extent as a preventive means. Commissions of sewers were granted by the crown, at first in virtue of the general prerogative, afterwards under the provisions of numerous statutes, the earliest dating from 1427 (6 Hen. VI. c. 5). The powers of the com- missioners included the removal of obstructions in rivers, the making of fosses and drains, &c. Their jurisdiction, where still existing, is expressly preserved in the modern Public Health Acts. The indictment for nuisance still lies for many offences which are now punishable in a summary manner under the powers of recent legislation. But for a long time it was the only, not as nowa concurrent, remedy. Its obvious defect is that proceedings can only be taken after the mischief has been done. Old examples of nuisances dangerous to health and punishable at common law are the keeping of swine in a town, the dividing of a house in a town so that by reason of overcrowding it would be more dangerous in

time of sickness or plague, and the carrying on of offensive trades, such as the melting of tallow. The court leet seems to have had some jurisdic- tion in sanitary matters, confined to the prevention of nuisances and the determination of the quality of provi- sions within its local limits. At a comparatively early date statutes were passed dealing with matters for which the common law had provided too cuntbrous a remedy The attention of parliament, though but to a slight extent, was directed to the health of London as early as the Statute of the City of London in 1285 (18 Edw. I. st. 5). The earliest legislative enactment affecting the public health generally appears to be 12 Ric. I. c. 13, 1388, forbid- ding the deposit of offensive matter in rivers and other waters, as well in the city of London as in other cities. Acts of a similar character were from time to time passed to meet particular offences, such as 4 and 5 Hen. VII. c. 8, by which no butcher was to slaughter cattle in London or other walled towns. The plague called forth the Act of 1 Jac. I. c. 31, which made it a capital offence for an infected person to go abroad after bemg commanded by the proper authority to keep his house. The Act for the rebuilding of London after the great fire, 19 Car. II. c. 3, contained various provisions as to the height of houses, breadth of streets, construction of sewers, and pro- hibition of noisome trades. In 1832 the fear of cholera

led to 2 Will. IV. c. 10, empowering the privy council to take certain preventive measures against the spread of the disease. Numerous local Acts gave the authorities of the more important towns power over the public health. To this day London is governed by separate legislation. 'The Towns Improvement Act, 1847, contained provisions of a sanitary kind for incorporation in local Acts. But it was not until as recently as 1848 that a general Public Health Act, embracing the whole of England (except the metro- polis), was passed. The Public Health Act, 1848, created a general board of health as the supreme authority in sanitary matters. The Local Government Act, 1858, amended the Act of 1848, chiefly in the direction of greater local sanitary control. By an Act immediately preceding the Act of 1858 the general board of health was superseded partly by the home office, partly by the privy council, The Local Government Board, the present central authority, was created in 1871 by 34 and 35 Vict. ce. 70. The president of the Local Government Board is usually a member of the cabinet. Numerous other Acts dealing with public health were passed from

1849 to 1874. Finally in 1875 the existing law was digested into the Public Health Act, 1875 (38 and 39 Vict. c. 55).!

The tendency of sanitary legislation has been 'to place local sani- tary regulations in the hands of the local authorities, subject toa general superintendence by a Government departinent. The Act of 1875, which registers the results of this tendency, is a con- solidating not an amending Act, and did not materially alter the law. It is impossible in this place to do more than give a short notice of its comprehensive provisions. For the purposes of the Act England, except the metropolis, is divided into urban and rural sanitary districts, subject respectively to the jurisdiction of urban and rural sanitary authorities. The urban authority is either the corporation of a borough, improvement commissioners, or a local board, according to circumstancecs. QUARANTINE.) The jurisdiction ofa local authority is both preventive and remedial. The matters falling under this jurisdiction include (1) sewers, with certain exceptions, among which come sewers under the authority of commissioners of sewers, (2) scavenging and cleansing streets, (3) water-supply, (4) cellar-dwellings and lodging-houses, (5) nuisances," (6) offensive

1 For the history of sanitary legislation in England, see the /teport of the Royal Sanitary Comiission, 1869; M. D. Chalmers, Local Government, ch. vii.; Stephen, Commentaries, vol. iii. bk. iv. pt. iii. ch. ix. ; G. A. R. Fitzgerald, The Public Health Act, 1875, Introd.

2 The list of nuisances which may be dealt with summarily under the Act is as follows :—"(1) any premises in such a state as to bea nuisance or injurious to health; (2) any pool, ditch, gutter, water- course, privy, urinal, cesspool, drain, or ashpit so foul or in such a state as to be a nuisance or injurious to health ; (8) any animal so kept as to be a nuisance or injurious to health; (4) any accumulation or deposit which is a nuisance or injurious to health; (5) any house or part of a honse so overcrowded as to be dangerous or injurious to the health of the inmates, whether or not members of the same family ; (6) any factory, workshop, or bakeshop (not already under the opera- tion of any general Act for the regulation of factories or bakehouses) not kept in a cleanly state, or not ventilated in such a manner as to render harmless as far as practicable any gases,

vapours, dust, or other impurities generated in the course of the work carried on therein, that are a nuisance or injurious to health, or so overcrowded while work is carried on as to be dangerous or injurious to the health of those employed therein ; (7) any fireplace or furnace which does not, as far as practicable, consume the smoke arising from the combustibles used therein, and which is used for working engines by steam, or in any mill, factory, dyehouse, brewery, bakehouse, or gaswork, or in any manufacturing or trade process whatsoever ; (8) any chimney (not

being the chimney of a private dwelling-house) sending forth black

smoke in such qnantity as to be a nuisance." In relation to these statutory nuisances it is provided that no penalty is to be inflicted in respect of any accumulation or deposit if it is necessary for business purposes and if effectual means have been taken for preventing injury therefrom to the public health, or in respect of a nnisance from uncon-

enn street

trades, (7) unsound meat, (8) infections diseases and hospitals, (9) prevention of epidemic diseases, (10) mortuaries and (by the Public Health Act, 1879) cemeteries, (11) highways, (12) streets, (18) buildings, (14) lighting, (15) publie pleasure-grounds, (16) markets and slaughter-houses, (17) licensing of hackney carriages, horses, and boats. It is to be noticed that jurisdiction in some of these cases is confined to an urban authority. Contracts made by an urban authority, whereof the value or amount exceeds £50, must be in writing, and sealed with the common seal of the authority. Where the contract is of the value or amount of £100 or upwards tenders for its execution must be invited. A local authority has power, subject to the approval of the Local Government Board, to

+ make bye-laws and impose penalties for their breach. The authority

must appoint a medical officer and an inspector of nuisances ; if an urban authority, it must in addition appoint a surveyor, elerk, and treasurer. Officers may not contract with a local authority. An urban authority has

power tq levy a general district rate, a private improvement rate (an additional rate levied in return for some special advantage beyond that obtained by the inhabitants in general), and (in certain cases) a highway rate. The expenses of a rural authority are either general or special, the latter being chiefly the expenscs arising from sewerage and water-supply. General expenses are defrayed out of a common fund raised out of the poor rate. Special expenses are a charge upon the contributory places benefited. A local authority may, with the sanction of the Local Government Board, raise loans for the purposes of the Act. The loans are charged upon the general district rate. Legal procecd- ings under the Act are generally summary. Where proceedings are by action, one month's notice of action must be given where the cause of action is anything done, or intended to be done, or omitted to be done under the provisions of the Act. The action must be brought within six months after the accruing of the cause of action. The local authority and its officers are protected from personal liability for matters done in pursuance of the Act. An appeal from a court of summary jurisdiction lies to quarter sessions. In cases where the local authority decides a question as to liability to expenses, an appeal lies to the Local Government Board. The Local Government Board has power to alter areas and unite dis- tricts, to direct inquiries in relation to any matters concerning the public health in any place, to make provisional orders, and to enforce performance of duty by a defaulting local authority.

In addition to the Public Health Act, 1875, there are various Acts incorporated with that Act under the name of the "Sanitary Acts," dealing with similar subjects. These are the Bakehouse Regulation Act (1863), the Artisans and Labourers Dwellings Act (1868), the Baths and Washhouses Acts, the Labouring Classes Lodging- House Acts (1851, 1866, 1867). Since 1875 numerous Acts amending and extending the Public Health Act have been passed, dealing with (among other matters) river- pollution, water-supply, hospitals for infectious diseases, nuisance arising from alkali-works, and lodging of fruit- pickers. There is besides a mass of legislation which in fact, if not in name, has for its object the sanitary welfare of the people. It is sufficient to mention the Vaccination Acts, the Factory Acts, the Artisans and Labourers Dwell- ings Acts subsequent to 1868, the Merchant Shipping Acts (insuring the carrying of medicines and antiscorbutics on board ships, the provision of sleeping space for seamen, and the inspection

of seamen's lodging-houses), the Adul- teration Acts, and the numerous Burial Acts. In many local Acts notification of infectious disease by the medical man in attendance to the local authority is made com- pulsory, but the legislature has not as yet adopted any general provision of the kind.

The scientific aspect of public health does not fall within the Scope of the present article; it has been treated under the title Hycrenz. It is sufficient to say here that the effect of the attention which of late years has been given to the subject is seen in the reduction of the death-rate from 22°23 per thousand in the years 1841-51 to 21:27 for the years 1871-81.

London.—The metropolis is governed by a series of statutes, Some peculiar to itself, others general Acts, repealed as to the rest of England, but specially preserved as to the metropolis by the Publie Health Act, 1875. The limits of the metropolis for the SS ———EEE

sumed smoke if it be proved to the court that the smoke has been consumed as far as practicable and that the fire has been carefully attended to.

purposes of public health depend primarily upou the Metropolis Management Act, 1855 (18 and 19 Vict. c. 120, s. 250, schedules A and B). The local authorities are the metropolitan board of works, the vestries and district boards, and (in the eity of London) the commissioners of sewers. Asylums and hospitals are administered by the metropolitan asylums board. The water-supply is regulated by the Metropolis Water Acts, 1852 and 1871, gas by the Metro- politan Gas Act, 1860.

Scotland. —Sanitary legislation occurs as early as the reign of Alexander III. The Statwta Gilde, c. 19, forbade the deposit of dung or ashes in the street, market, or on the banks of the Tweed at Berwick under a penalty of eight shillings. At a later date the Act of 1540, c. 20, enacted that no flesh was to be slain in Edinburgh on the east side of the Leith Wynd ; that of 1621, e. 29, fixed the locality of fleshers and eandlemakers, The existing law of public health is contained in the Public Health (Scotland) Act, 1867 (30 and 31 Vict. e101). The local authority is the town council, the police commissioners or trustees, or the parochial board, accord- ing to circumstances. There is no distinction of urban and rural authority. The central authority is the board of supervision con- stituted by 8 and 9 Vict. e.

83. Proceedings by a local authority in cases of nuisance are by summary petition to a sheriff or a justice (in some cases only to a sheriff) upon requisition in writing under the hands of ten inhabitants. An appeal lies in cases of sufficient value from the sheriff-substitute to the sheriff and from the sheriff to the Court of Session. The list of nuisances in the Act differs, but not materially, from that in the English Act. The powers of local authorities in England and Scotland are very similar. There are no provisions as to contracts by local authorities corresponding to those in the English Act.

Ireland.—Several Acts of the Irish parliament dealt with specific nuisances, e.g., 5 Geo. III. c. 15, forbidding the laying of filth in the streets of cities or county towns, and making regulations as to sweeping and scavenging. 'There were also numerous private Acts dealing with water-supply and the obstruction of watercourses, In 1878 the existing legislation was consolidated by the Public Health (Ireland) Act, 1878 (41 and 42 Vict. e. 52), a close copy of the English Act of 1875. The list of statutory nuisances is the same in both Acts. The urban authority is the eorporation, the commissioners, the municipal commissioners, or the town com-

| missioners, according to circumstances. Ireland has its own local

government board.

United States.—After the Civil War boards of health were estab- lished in the chief cities. Public health is under the control of the local authorities to a greater extent than in England. By the Act of Congress of 25th February 1799 officers of the United States are bound to observe the health laws of the States. A national board of health was created by the Act of 8d March 1879, e. 202. Its main duties are to give advice to local authorities and to carry on investigations in sanitary matters. It has certain jurisdiction in quarantine and in epidemics of a peculiarly dangerous nature. (J. Wt.)

PUBLIC RECORDS. See Recorns, Pustic,

PUBLILIUS (less correctly written Pusuius) Syrus, a Latin writer of farces (mimi), flourished in the 1st cen- tury B.c. He was a native of Syria and was brought as a slave to Italy, but by his wit and talent he won the favour of his

master, who freed and educated him. His farces, in which he acted himself, had a great success in the provincial towns of Italy and at the games given by Cesar in 46 B.c. Publilius appeared on the stage at Rome and received from Czsar himself the prize for a histrionic con- test in which the actor vanquished all his competitors, including the celebrated Laberius. For the rest, we learn from Jerome that in 43 Publilius still enthralled the Roman playgoers. Cicero witnessed with pleasure the exhibition of his plays, and Seneca was a warm admirer of his wise and witty sayings. All that remains of his works is a collection of Sentences (sententix), a series of moral maxims in iambic and trochaic verse. This collection must have been made at a very early date, since it was known to Aulus Gellius in the 2d century a.p. Each maxim is comprised in a single verse, and the verses are arranged in alphabetical order according to their initial letters. In course of time the collection was interpolated with sentences drawn from other writers, especially from apocryphal writings of Seneca; the number of genuine verses is about 700. They include many pithy sayings, such as the famous "judex damnatur ubi nocens absolvitur." The best editions of the Sentences are those of E. Wélfflin (Teubner, 1869) and W. Meyer (Teubner, 1880).

eo 13

98 PUC—PUE

PUCKLER-MUSKAU, Hermann Lupwic HEINRICH, Prince or (1785-1871), a German author, was born at Muskau in Lusatia on 30th October 1785. He served for some time in the body-guard at Dresden, and afterwards travelled in France and Italy. In 1811, after the death of his father, he inherited the barony of Muskau and a considerable fortune. As an officer under the duke of Saxe-Weimar he distinguished himself in the war of liberation and was made military and civil governor of Bruges. After the war he retired from tue army and visited England, where he remained about a year. In 1822, in compensation for certain privileges which he re- signed, he was raised to the rank of prince by the king of Prussia. Some years earlier he had married the countess of Pappenheim, daughter of Prince Hardenberg ; but he separated from her in 1826. He again visited England and travelled in America and Asia Minor, living after his return at Muskau,

which he spent much time in cultivating and adorning. In 18465 he sold this estate, and, although he afterwards lived from time to time at various places in Germany and Italy, his principal residence was the castle of Branitz in the district of Kottbus, where he formed splendid gardens as he had already done at Muskau. In 1863 he was made an hereditary member of the Prussian Herrenhaus, and in 1866 he attended the Prussian general staff in the war with Austria. He died at Branitz on 4th February 1871, and, in accordance with instructions in his will, his body was burned. As a writer of books of travel he held a high position, his power of observation being keen and his style lucid and animated. His first work was Briefe eines Verstorbenen (1830-31), in which he ex- pressed many independent judgments about England and other countries he had visited and about prominent persons whom he had met. Among his later books of travel were Semilasso's vorletzter Weltgang (1835), Semalasso in Afrika (1836), Aus Mehemed-Ali's Reich (1844), and Die Riick- kehr (1846-48). He was also the author of Andeutungen tiber Landschaftsgdrtneret (1834).

See Piickler-Muskau's Briefwechsel und Tagebiicher ; Ludmilla Assing, First Hermann von Piiekler-Muskau ; and Petzold, First Hermann von Piekler-Muskau in seiner Bedeutung fiir die bildende Gartenkunst.

PUDSEY, a township of the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on an acclivity rising above the valley of the Aire and on the Great Northern Railway, 4 miles east of Bradford and 6 south-west of Leeds. The principal build- ings are the church of St Lawrence in the Gothic style, erected in 1821 and lately improved, and the mechanics' institute, a fine building, comprising class-rooms, a library, a public hall, and a lecture hall. The town has an import- ant woollen trade and possesses dyeing and fulling mills. Pudsey appears in Domesday as '" Podechesaie." It was sold by Edward II. to the Calverley family, from whom it passed to an ancestor of the Milners. By the Bradford Water and Improvement Act of 1881 part (37 acres) of the urban sanitary district of Pudsey was amalgamated with that of Bradford. The population of the diminished district (2409 acres) in 1871 was 12,173, and in 1881 it was 12,314.

PUEBLA, or in full La Purpia DE Los ANGELES, a city of Mexico, formerly capital of the province of Tlaxcala, now of the state of Puebla, lies

76 miles south-east of Mexico, in 19° N. lat. and 98° 2’ W. long., at a height of 7220 feet above the sea. It is admirably situated on a spacious and fertile plateau, which, while almost destitute of trees, is, especially in the neighbourhood of the city, clothed with gardens and fields. To the south-west rises the summit of Popocatepetl, and Orizaba and Iztaccihuatl are also within the horizon. By Humboldt Puebla was ranked as the most important city of Spanish America after Mexico, Guanajuato, and Havana, and in the matter

of population it still stands third among the state capitals, Its spacious streets run exactly east-west and north-south, and its houses, often of three stories, are solidly built of stone and in Spanish style. The cathedral, dedicated to the Immaculate Conception, was commenced in 1552 after the designs of Juan Gomez de Mora, but it was not completed until 1649, after Bishop Juan de Palafox y Mendoza had devoted eight years of strenuous effort to the enterprise. It is rather more than 320 feet long and

165 wide, and consists of a nave 80 feet high, with side.

aisles and a dome, the upper portion of which is con- structed of pumice-stone for the sake of lightness. The main front, like the columns of the interior, is in the Doric style, but its two side towers are Ionic. In one is a great bell cast in 1637 and weighing upwards of 8 tons. Apart from the cathedral Puebla was famous for the number, and more especially for the lavish decoration of its churches, monasteries, and colleges. Several of these (such as the church and convent of Santo Domingo and the church of S. Felipe Neri) are still of note, and the city also contains a museum, a theatre, &c. Puebla has long been one of the great trading and manufacturing centres of the country, and it has recently become an important point in the rapidly-developing railway system, having in 1884 lines to Apizaco on the railway from Vera Cruz to Mexico (28 miles), to Villa de Libres (58 miles), to San Martin (24 miles), to Matamoros Izucar (31 miles), and to San Juan de los Llanos. Cotton and woollen goods, leather, earthen- ware, soap, and glass are the leading manufactures. The population, which was about 80,000 in 1746 and 52,717 in 1793, and which greatly decreased during the revolu- tionary period, is now (1885) stated at 75,000.

Puebla was founded in 1533-34 by Sebastian Ramirez de Fuenleal, archbishop of Santo Domingo, and the Franciscan friar Toribio Motolinia. In 1550 it became the seat of the bishopric which had originally been founded in 1526 at Tlaxcala. The epithet 'de los Angeles," which is now practically dropped, was in the 17th and 18th centuries the chief part of the name, which often appears simply as Angeles. It is associated, with a popular belief that during the building of the cathedral two angels every night added as much to the height of the walls as the workmen had managed to add in the preceding day. In 1845 Santa Anna made an unsuccessful attempt to capture the city. On 18th March 1863 it was invested by the French under Forey, and on 17th May taken by storm.

See Buschman's history of the city and cathedral in Ztschr. f. allgem. Erdkunde, 1868, vol. xv. pp. 195-212, and xvi. pp. 338-345.

PUERPERAL FEVER. See SepricaMia.

PUERTO CABELLO, a town and seaport in the South American republic of Venezuela, in the province of Cara- bobo, used to rank next to Cartagena, and possesses one of the finest natural harbours in that part of the world. It is backed at the distance of about 5 miles by a range of mountains 3000 feet high, across which pass, at a height of 1800 feet, the road (36 miles) and the railway now (1885) in course of construction to Valencia, the capital of the province. The old town used to lie on an island (originally a coral bank) joined to the mainland by a bridge ; but since about 1850 the narrow channel between the town and the more extensive suburbs on shore has been filled up and covered with blocks of building, so that now Puerto Cabello occupies a kind of headland projecting into the bay. Formerly the lowness of its site and the mangrove swamps which fringed the whole coast rendered it appallingly unhealthy : at the time of Humboldt's visit, for example, the surgeon of the hospital reported that in seven years he had 8000 cases of yellow fever, and there were instances of the authorities having to take possession of vessels in the harbour because the entire crew had per- ished (Eastwick). But yellow fever has not been known at Puerto Cabello since about 1868, and the general death- rate of the place is quite normal. A good supply of water

is obtained from the Rio Esteban by means of an aqueduct –

3 miles long. The harbour, about 2 miles long and from one-fourth of a mile to a mile in breadth, is formed by a narrow spit of land or coral ledge running out for about 2 miles from the coast in a northerly and westerly direction. The entrance, about 90 feet deep, is so clear that no pilot is required ; and in the outer bay (100 to 800 feet deep) there is safe anchorage. On a high rock to the south- east of the town is the Mirador of Solano, or castle of Puerto Cabello, which has often proved an obstacle to enemies advancing from the interior. In 1883 the muni- cipality, with a population of 12,000, contained a tannery, a foundry and machine-shop, a coffee-mill, two soap and candle factories, and about fourteen wholesale warehouses. The exports consist of coffee, cocoa, hides, goat and deer skins, bark, woods, indigo, and cotton, but only the first in large quantities. Germany and the United States are the chief recipients. Within 6 miles of the town there are four villages of from 200 to 1500 inhabitants.

See Jiilfs and Balleer, Scchdfen der Erde, Oldenburg, 1878; and U.S. Consular Reports, Nos, 24, 26, 30, &c.

PUERTO DE SANTA MARIA, probably the " Mene-

sthei Portus" of Ptolemy, commonly called EL Puerto ("The Port"), a town of Spain, in the province of Cadiz, 7 miles to the north-east of that city (214 miles by rail ; see sketch map, vol. iv. p. 627), near the mouth and on the right bank of the Guadalete, which is here crossed by a suspension bridge. It is a pleasant and well-built though somewhat dull town, in a fertile country, and its houses resemble those of Cadiz, though they are often larger and profusely decorated with painting. Calle Larga, the principal street, is handsome and well-paved; there are several "alamedas" or public promenades, that of La Victoria being the finest. The place is famous for its bull-fights, that given here in honour of Wellington being the subject of the considerably idealized description in Byron's Childe Harold. Among the public buildings is a large Jesuit college, recently established. Puerto is chiefly important as a wine-exporting place; the "bodegas" " or wine-stores are large and lofty, but hardly equal to those of Xerez. The harbour is formed by the river ; its mouth is considerably obstructed by a bar. There is regular steam communication with Cadiz. Timber and iron are the chief

imports. The population of the munici- pality in December 1877 was 22,125.

PUERTO PRINCIPE, or now more correctly C1UDAD DEL PRrincipg, a city at the head of the central department of the island of Cuba. When first founded in the begin- ning of the 16th century by Velazquez, it was, as its more familiar name implies, on the sea-coast ; but it has been more than once shifted southward and inland, and is now nearly as far from the north as from the south side of the island. Though for some time after the surrender of San Domingo to France in 1800 Principe was the seat of the central government and supreme courts of the Spanish West Indies, it is no longer a place of much importance. The population is estimated at 31,000. Since 1840 the city has been connected by a railway with its port, which 18 sometimes called by its own name and sometimes by that of a smaller town on the bay about 11 miles from its entrance, San Fernando de Nuevitas. The harbour or bay s large, completely sheltered, and capable of admitting vessels of the largest draught ; but it is entered by a narrow crooked passage 6 miles long, which, though there are no hidden dangers, makes the assistance of a pilot desirable,

PUERTO RICO. See Porto RIco.

PUFENDORF, SAMUEL (1632-1694), was born at Chemnitz, Saxony, on the 8th of J. anuary 1632, the same year which also saw the birth of three other illustrious political and philosophical writers—Locke, Cumberland,

pa 99

and Spinoza. He belonged to an ecclesiastical family ; his father was a Lutheran pastor, and he himself was destined for the ministry. Having completed his pre- liminary studies at the celebrated school of Grimma, he was sent to study theology at the university of Leipsic, at that time the citadel of Lutheran orthodoxy. Its narrow and dogmatic teaching was profoundly repugnant to the liberal nature of the young student, who was not long in bidding adieu to the professors of theology and throwing himself passionately into the study of public law.

He soon went so far as to quit Leipsic altogether, and

betook himself to Jena, where he formed an intimate friendship with Erhard Weigel the mathematician, a man of great distinction. Weigel was imbued with the Cartesian philosophy ; and it was to his teaching and to the impetus he gave to the application of the mathematical method that Pufendorf owes the exact and ordered mind, and the precision, frequently approaching almost to dryness, which characterize his writings. It was also under Weigel's in- fluence that he developed that independence of character which never bent before other writers, however high their position, and which showed itself in his profound disdain for "ipsedixitism," to use the piquant phrase of Bentham.

Pufendorf was twenty-five years old when he quitted Jena. He hoped to find a career in some of the adminis- trative offices which were so frequently the refuge of the learned in the small states of ancient Germany ; but in this he was unsuccessful. In 1658, thanks to his eldest brother Isaiah, who had given up university teaching to enter the Swedish service, he went, in the capacity of tutor, into the family of Petrus Julius Coyet, one of the resident ministers of Charles Gustavus, king of Sweden, at Copen- hagen. At this time Charles Gustavus was endeavouring to impose upon Denmark a burdensome alliance, and in the middle of the negotiations he brutally opened hostilities. The anger of the Danes was turned against the envoys of the Swedish sovereign ; Coyet, it is true, succeeded in escaping, but the second minister, Steno Bjelke, and the whole suite were arrested and thrown into prison. Pufen- dorf shared this misfortune, and the future successor of Grotius was subjected to a strict captivity of eight months' duration. Like Grotius, he too had his Loevestein. The young tutor, deprived of books, occupied himself during his captivity in meditating upon what he had read in the works of Grotius and Hobbes. He mentally constructed a system of universal law; and, when, at the end of his captivity, he accompanied his pupils, the sons of Coyet, to the university of Leyden, he was enabled to publish the fruits of his reflexions under the title of Elementa Jurisprudentia wriversalis, libri duo. The work was de- dicated to Charles Louis, elector palatine, an enlightened prince and patron of science, who offered Pufendorf a chair of Roman law at Heidelberg, and when this was declined he created a new chair, that of the law of nature and nations, the first of the kind in the world. Pufen- dorf accepted it, and was thus in 1661, at the age of twenty-nine, placed in the most enviable of positions. He showed himself

equal to his task, and by his science and eloquence proved himself to be an honour and an orna- nent to the university.

The keenly sarcastic tract De statu imperii germanict, liber unus, dates from this period of his life. Smal] in bulk, it is great in significance, and is one of Pufen- dorf's most important works. Written with the assent of the elector palatine, but published under the cover of a pseudonym at Geneva in 1667, it was supposed to be addressed by a gentleman of Verona, Severinus de Mon- zambano, to his brother Lelius. The pamphlet made a great sensation. Its author arraigned directly the organi-

zation of the holy empire and exposed its feebleness, denounced in no measured terms the faults of the house of Austria, and attacked with remarkable vigour the politics of the ecclesiastical princes. But he did not thus describe the evil without at the same time suggesting the remedy. Thinking that Germany could not attain to a true monarchy without a great revolution, he proposed to call together a confederation, with a perpetual council representing all the members and occupying itself with external affairs. Before Pufendorf, Philipp Bogislaw von Chemnitz, publicist and soldier, had written, under the pseudonym of " Hippolytus a Lapide," De ratione status in amperio nostro Romano-Germanico. Inimical, like Pufen- dorf, to the house of Austria, Chemnitz had gone so far as to make an appeal to France and Sweden. Pufendorf, on the contrary, rejected all idea of foreign intervention. But in his plan, in which national initiative was all in all, were propounded the ideas of an army supported at the general expense, the secularization of the ecclesiastical principalities, the abolition of convents, and the expulsion of the Jesuits. His little book is pcrhaps the most im- portant that was produced in relation to the public law and politics of Germany, and it is noteworthy that he reveals himself as a consummate statesman, having a broad comprehension of the present and a clear insight into the future. Subsequent events proved the justice of his conclusions.

In 1670 Pufendorf was called to the university of Lund. The influence of his brother Isaiah, as also some disagree- ments which he had had with his colleagues at Heidelberg, influenced his decision to accept the call; but by

this acceptance he did not break with German culture, for in Scandinavia that culture was predominant. The sojourn at Lund was fruitful. In 1672 appeared the De jure nature et gentium, libri octo, and in 1675 a résumé of it under the title of De officio hominis et civis. The treatise De jure nature et gentiwm is the first systematic work on the subject. Grotius, whom. Pufendorf has been accused of having too servilely followed, had more especially treated of international relations ; and on the other hand Oldendorp, Hemming, and Winkler treated of the rudimentary part of the subject. Pufendorf took up in great measure the theories of Grotius and sought to complete them by means of the doctrines of Hobbes and of his own ideas. Judging of the work of Pufendorf as a whole, Mr Lorimer has felt justified in saying that "his conception was a magnificent one, and in the effort which he made to realize it he has left behind him a work which, notwithstanding the unpardonable amount of commonplace which it contains and its consequent dulness, is entitled to the respect of all future jurists. It was nothing less than an attempt to evolve from the study of human nature a system of jurisprudence which should be of universal and permanent applicability." The author derived law from reason, from the civil law, and from divine revelation, and established thus three " disciplines "—natural law, civil law, and moral theology. Natural law is all that is commanded to us by pure reason, and hence resulted the first important pcint in Pufendorf's theory, viz., that natural law does not extend beyond the limits of this life and that it confines itself to regulating external acts. Pufendorf combats Hobbes's conception of the state of nature, and concludes that the state of nature is not one of war but of peace. But this peace is feeble and insecure, and if something else does not come to its aid it can do very little for the preservation of mankind. As regards public law Pufen- dorf, while recognizing in the state (civitas) a moral person (persona moralis), teaches that the will of the state is but the sum of the individual wills that constitute it, and that this association explains the state. In this a priori con-

PUP 2 WD Om?!

ception, in which he scarcely gives proof of historical insight, he shows himself as one of the precursors of J. J. Rousseau and of the Contrat social. On the subject of international law, with which he occupies himself in-

cidentally, it is to be noted that Pufendorf belongs to the philosophical school, and also that he powerfully defends the idea that international law is not restricted to Christen- dom, but constitutes a common bond between all nations. because all nations form part of humanity. As was to be expected, the work made a sensation: it provoked enthusiastic admiration as well as anger and indignation ; the author was praised to the skies on the one hand, and accused of irreligion and atheism on the other. The universities of Lund and Leipsic, above all, furnished adversaries and critics. Being passionately attacked, he defended himself with passion, and he may be held to have come victorious out of these conflicts in which his combative and sarcastic soul delighted, for Pufendorf dearly loved a fray.

In 1677 he was called to Stockholm in the capacity of historiographer-royal. To this new period belong among others the work On the Spiritual Monarchy of the Pope, which was afterwards inserted in his fntroduction to the History of the principal States in Europe at the present Day, also the great Commentariorumi de rebus Suecacrs, libre XXVI., ab expeditione Gusta Adolphi regis in German- iam ad abdicationem usque Christine and a History of Charles Gustavus. In his historical works Pufendorf is hopelessly dry ; but he professes a great respect for truth and generally draws from archives. The treatise On the Spiritual Monarchy of the Pope alone recalls Severinus de Monzambano, There we find the same vigour and the same passion, and all through its pages we feel the indig- nation of the Prctestant who sees the noble cause of reli- gious liberty menaced by the papacy and by its two allies Louis XIV. and James IT. Of the same nature is another work of this period, De halitu religionis christiane ad vitam civilen, in which he undertakes to trace the limits between ecclesiastical and civil power, and where he expounds for the first time completely the theory known under the name of " Kollegial System" or " Kollegialismus," which was actually applied later in Prussia. This work is dated 1687. In 1688 Pufendorf was called to the service of Frederick William, elector of Brandenburg. He accepted the call; but he had no sooner arrived than the elector died. His son Frederick III. fulfilled the promises of his father, and Pufendorf, historiographer and privy coun- cillor, was instructed to write Zhe History of the Elector William the Great. The king of Sweden did not on this account cease to testify his goodwill towards Pufendorf, and in 1694 he created him a baron. In the same year, on the 26th of October, Pufendorf

died at Berlin and was buried in the church of St Nicholas, where an inscription to his memory is still to be seen.

The value of the man whose life has been thus briefly sketched was great ; he was at once philosopher, lawyer, economist, historian, we nay even add statesman. His influence also was considerable, and he has left a profound impression on thought, and not on that of Germany alone. Posterity has, however, done him scant justice, and has not acknowledged what it really owes to him. Much of the responsibility for this injustice rests with Leibnitz, who would never recognize the incontestable greatness of one who was con- stantly his adversary. Everybody knows the bitter criticism which he made ou Pufendorf, 'vir parum jurisconsultus et minime philo- sophus." This is only the condensed expression of a multitude of judgments passed by him on the author of the De jure nature et gentium. It was on the subject of the pamphlet of Severinus de Monzambano that the quarrel began. The conservative and timid Leibnitz was beaten on the battlefield of politics and public law, and the aggressive spirit of Pufendorf aggravated yet more the dis- pute, and so widened the division. From that time the two writers could never meet on a common subject without attacking each

other. The combat was almost always decided in favour of Pufen- dorf, but the irony of fate has ratified the words of his adversary,

i q

7

j

7

f

:

j

Ls

and the future has accepted an estimate dictated by anger and spite.

= H. von Treitschke, "Samuel von Pufendorf," Preussische Jahrbiicher, 1875, vol. xxxv. p. 614, and vol. xxxvi. p. 61; Bluntschli, Deutsches Staats-Worter- buch, vol. viii. p. 424, and Geschichte des allgemeinen Statsrcchts wnd der Politik, p. 108; Lorimer, The Institutes of the Law of Nations, vol. i. p. 74; Droysen, "Zur Kritik Pufendort's," in his Abhandlungen zur neueren Geschichte ; Roscher, Geschichte der National-Oekonomik in Deutschland, p. 304; Franklin, Das deutsche Reich nach Severinus von Monzambano. (Ee. NE

PUFF-ADDER. See Viprr.

PUFF-BIRD, the name first given, according to Swain- son (Zool. Illustrations, ser. 1, ii, text to pl. 99), by English residents in Brazil to a group of Birds known to ornithologists as forming the restricted Family Bucconide, but for a long time confounded, under the general name of Barbets, with the Cayntonide of modern systematists, who regard the two Families as differing very considerably from one another. Some authors have used the generic name Capito in a sense precisely opposite to that which is now usually accorded to it, and the natural result has been to produce one of the most complex of the many nomen- clatural puzzles that beset Ornithology. Fortunately there is no need here to enter upon this matter, for each group has formed the subject of an elaborate work—the Capi- tomde being treated by the Messrs Marshall,! and the Bucconide by Mr Sclater?—in each of which volumes the origin of the confusion has been explained, and to either of them the more curious reader may be confidently referred. The Bucconidx are zygodactylous Birds belonging to the large heterogeneous assemblage in the present work gener- ally looked upon as forming the "Order" Picarie# (see ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 41), and commonly considered nowadays to be most nearly allied to the Galbulide (JACAMAR, vol. xiii. p. 531), and like them confined to the Neotropical Region, in the middle parts of which, and especially in its Sub-Andean Sub-region, the Puff-birds are, as regards species, abundant; while only two seem to reach Guatemala and but one Paraguay. As with most South-American Birds, the habits and natural history of the Bucconide have been

but little studied, and of only one species, which happens to belong to a rather abnormal genus, has the nidification been described. This is the Chelidoptera tenebrosa, which is said to breed in holes in banks, and to lay white eggs much like those of the King- fisher and consequently those of the Jacamars. From his own observation Swainson writes (Joc. cit.) that Puff-birds are very grotesque in appearance. They will sit nearly motionless for hours on the dead bough of a tree, and while so sitting "the disproportionate size of the head is rendered more conspicuous by the bird raising its feathers so as to appear not unlike a puff ball. . . . When frightened their form is suddenly changed by the feathers lying quite flat." They are very confiding birds and will often station them- selves a few yards only from a window. The Bucconide almost without exception are very plainly-coloured, and the majority have a spotted or mottled plumage suggestive of immaturity. The first Puff-bird known to Europeans Seems to have been that described by Marcgrave under the name of " Tamatia," by which it is said to have been called in Brazil, and there is good reason to think that his description and figure—the last, comic as it is in outline and expression, having been copied by Willughby and many of the older authors —apply to the Bucco maculatus of modern Ornithology—a bird placed by Brisson (Orni- thologie, iv. p. 524) among the Kingfishers. But if so, Maregrave described and figured the same species twice, since lis " Matwtuc" is also Brisson's " Martin-pescheur tacheté du Brésil."

Mr Sclater in his Jonograph divides the Family into 7 A i Be eee

1 A Monograph of the Capitonide or Scansorial Barbets, by C. H. T. and G. f. L. Marshall, London, 1870-71, 4to:

a A Monograph of the Jacamars and Puff-birds, or Families Gal- bulide and Bucconide, by P. L. Sclater, London, 1879-82, 4to.

LOL

genera, of which Bucco is the largest and contains 20 species. The others are Malacoptila and Monacha each with 7, Nonnula with 5, Chelidoptera with 2, and Micro- monacha and Hapaloptila with 1 species each. The most showy Puff-birds are those of the genus Monacha with an inky-black plumage, usually diversified by white about the head, and a red or yellow

bill. The rest call for no particular remark. (A. N.) PUFFIN, the common English name of a sea-bird, the Lratercula arctica of most ornithologists, known however on various parts of the British coasts as the Bottlenose, Coulterneb, Pope, Sea-Parrot, and Tammy-Norie, to say nothing of other still more local designations, some (as Marrott and Willock) shared also with allied species of Alcidx, to which Family it has, until very lately, been invariably deemed to belong. Of old time Puffins were a valuable commodity to the owners of their breeding- places, for the young were taken from the holes in which they were hatched, and 'being exceeding fat," as Carew wrote in 1602 (Survey of Cornwall, fol. 35), were "kept salted, and reputed for fish, as coming neerest thereto in their taste." In 1345, according to a document from which an extract is given in Heath's Islands of Scilly (p. 190), those islands were held of the crown at a yearly rent of 300 Puffins? or 6s. 8d., being one-sixth of their estimated annual value. A few years later (1484), either through the birds having grown scarcer or money cheaper, only 50 Puftins are said (op. cit., p. 196) to have been demanded. It is stated by both Gesner and Caius that they were allowed to be eaten in Lent. Ligon, who in 1673 published a Mistory of the Island of Barbadoes, speaks (p. 37) of the ill taste of Puffins "which we have from the isles of Scilly," and adds "this kind of food is only for servants." Puftins used to resort in vast numbers to certain stations on the coast, and are still plentiful on some, reaching them in spring with remarkable punctuality on a certain day, which naturally varies with the locality, and after passing the summer there, leaving their homes with similar precision. They differ from most other Alcidx in laying their single egg (which is white with a few grey markings when first produced, but speedily begrimed by the soil) in a shallow burrow, which they either dig for them- selves or appropriate from a rabbit, for on most of their haunts rabbits have been introduced. Their plumage is of a glossy black above—the cheeks grey, encircled by a black band—and pure white beneath ; their feet are of a bright reddish orange, but the most remarkable feature of these birds, and one that gives them a very comical ex- pression, is their huge bill. This is very deep and laterally flattened, so as indeed to resemble a coulter, as one of the bird's common names expresses ; but moreover it is parti- coloured—blue, yellow, and red —curiously grooved and still more curiously embossed in places, that is to say during the breeding-season, when the birds are most frequently seen. But it had long been known to some observers that such Puffins as

occasionally occur in winter (most often washed up on the shore and dead) presented a beak very different in shape and size, and to account for the difference was a standing puzzle. Many years ago Bingley (North Wales, i. p. 354) stated that Puffins "are said to change their bills annually." The remark seems.

3 There can not be much doubt that the name Puffin given to these young birds, salted and dried, was applied on account of their downy clothing, for an English informant of Gesner's described one to him (iTist. Avium, p. 110) as wanting trne feathers, and being covered only with a sort of woolly black plumage. It is right, however, to state that Caius expressly declares (Rarior. animal. libellus, fol. 21) that the name is derived "a naturali voce pnpin." Prof. Skeat states that the word is a diminutive, which favours the view that it was originally nsed as a name for these young birds. The parents were

_.-/-probably known by one or other of their many local appellations.

ee cay, a

to have been generally overlooked ; but it has proved to be very near the truth, for after investigations carefully pursued during some years by Dr Bureau of Nantes he was in 1877 enabled to shew (Bull. Soc. Zool. France, ii. pp. 377-399) that the Puffin's bill undergoes what may be called an annual moult, some of its most remarkable appendages, as well as certain horny outgrowths above and beneath the eyes, dropping off at the end of the breeding- season, and being reproduced the following year. Not long after the same naturalist announced (op. cit., iv. pp. 1-68) that he had followed the similar changes which he found to take place, not only in other species of Puffins, as the Fratercula corniculata and I'. cirrhata of the Northern Pacific, but in several birds of the kindred genera Cera- torhina and Simorhynchus inhabiting the same waters, and consequently proposed to regard all of them as forming a Family distinct from the Alcide—a view which has since found favour with Dr Dybowski (op. cit., vil. pp. 270-300 and viii. pp. 348-350), though there is apparently insufficient reason for accepting it.

The name Puffin has also been given in books to one of the Shearwaters, and its Latinized form Puffinus is still used in that sense in scientific nomenclature. This fact seems to have arisen from a mistake of Ray's, who, seeing in Tradescant's Museum and that of the Royal Society some young Shearwaters from the Isle of Man, prepared in like manner to young Puffins, thought they were the birds mentioned by Gesner (/oc. cit.), as the remarks inserted in Willughby's Ornithologia (p. 251) prove ; for the specimens described by Ray were as clearly Shearwaters as Gesner's were Puftins. (A. N.)

PUGET, Pierre (1622-1694), born at Marseilles on 31st October 1622, painter, sculptor, architect, and engineer, is a rare instance of precocious genius and mature power. At the age of fourteen he carved the ornaments of the galleys built in the port of his native city, and at sixteen the decoration and construction of a ship were entrusted to him. Soon after he went to Italy on foot, and was well received at Rome by Pietro di Cortona, who employed

him on the ceilings of the Barberini palace and on those.

of the Pitti at Florence. In 1643 he returned to Mar- seilles, where he painted portraits and carved the colossal figure-heads of men-of-war. After a second journey to Italy he painted also a great number of pictures for Aix, Toulon, Cuers, and La Ciotat, and sculptured a large marble group of the Virgin and Child for the church of Lorgues. A serious illness in 1665 brought Puget a pro- hibition from the doctors which caused him wholly to put aside the brush. He now sculptured the caryatides of the town-hall of Toulon (Louvre), went to Normandy, where he executed a statue of Hercules and a group of Janus and Cybele for the marquis of Vaudreuil, and visit- ing Paris made the acquaintance of Le Pautre and Fou- quet, who determined to eniploy him at Vaux and sent him to Italy to choose marbles for his work. The fall of Fouquet found Puget at Genoa, where he remained em- ployed by the nobles of the town. There he executed for Sublet des Noyers his French Hercules (Louvre), the statues of St Sebastian and of Alexandre Sauli in the church of Carignano, and much other work. The Doria family gave him a church to build; the senate proposed that he should paint their council-chamber. But Colbert bade Puget return to France, and in 1669 he

again took up his old work in the dockyards of Toulon. The arsenal which he had there undertaken to construct under the

1 A translated abstract of this paper—containing an account of what is perhaps the most interesting discovery of the kind made in ornithology for many years—is given in the Zoologist for 1878 (pp. 283-240) and another in the Bulletin of the Nuttall Ornithological Club for the same year (iii, pp. 87-91).

orders of the duke of Beaufort was destroyed by fire, and Puget, disheartened, took leave of Toulon. In 1685 he went back to Marseilles, where he continued the long series of works of sculpture on which he had been employed by Colbert. His statue of Milo (Louvre) had been completed in 1681, Perseus and Andromeda (Louvre) in 1683, and Alexander and Diogenes (bas-relief, Louvre) in 1685; but, in spite of the personal favour which he enjoyed, Puget, on coming to Paris in 1688 to push forward the execu- tion of an equestrian statue of Louis XIV., found court intrigues too much for him. He-was forced to abandon his project and retire to Marseilles, where he remained till his death in 1694. His last work, a bas-relief of the Plague of Milan, which remained unfinished, was placed in the council-chamber of the town-hall.

Puget was the. most vigorous representative of French sculpture in the 18th century ; in spite of his visits to Paris and Rome his work never lost its local character: his Hercules is fresh from the galleys of Toulon ; his saints and virgins are men and women who speak Provencal. His best work, the St Sebastian at Genoa, though a little heavy in parts, shows admirable energy and life, as well as great skill in contrasting the decorative accessories with the simple surface of the nude.

Cicognara, Storia della seultwra ; Lenoir, Afusée des Mon. Fran- pais; Lagrange, Vie de Pierre Puget; Barbet de Jouy, Sculptures mod. aw Lowvre.

PUGIN, Avcusrus Wetpy NorrumoreE (1812-1852), architect, was the son of Augustus Pugin, a native of France, who practised as an architect in London. He was born in Store Street, Bedford Square, on Ist March 1812. After completing the ordinary course of education at Christ's Hospital (blue-coat school), he entered his father's office, where he displayed a remarkable talent for drawing, When he had mastered the elements of his profession he devoted a large portion of his time to the sketching of public buildings ; he also accompanied his father on several professional tours in France. While still very young he was employed by his father to design furniture in the medieval style for Windsor Castle, and in 1831 he de- signed the scenery for the new opera of Aventlworth at Her Majesty's Theatre. Shortly afterwards he involved him- self deeply in money difficulties by an attenipt to establish a manufactory of stained glass, metal work, and furniture at Hart Street, Covent Garden. From the time, however, that he devoted himself steadily to his profession as an architect he never failed to find full employment. Shortly after his secession from the Church of England to that of Rome he published Contrasts ; or a Parallel between the Architecture of the 15th and 19th Centuries (1836), in which he severely criticized the architecture of Protestantism. His other principal works are Zrue Principles of Christian Architecture (1841), a Glossary of Ecclesiastical Ornament (1844), and a Z'reatise on Chancel Screens and Rood Lofts (1851). Pugin was the designer of a large number of im- portant Roman Catholic buildings, and also assisted Sir Charles Barry in the preparation of the designs for the new Houses of Parliament, Westminster. Early in 1852 he was attacked by insanity, which caused his death on 14th September of the same year.

Future historians who may write the architectural history of the 19th century will probably describe as its leading characteristic that enthusiastic revival of the Gothic style which took place in the second quarter of the century and continued with unabated vigour for more than thirty years. Among the many able archi- tects who during this period contributed to cover England with churches and other buildings, designed in a style which for three centuries had been rejected as barbarous, the name of Pugin deserves to be the most conspicuous. No man so thoroughly mastered the true principles of the Gothic style in its various stages, both in its leading

lines and in the minutest details of its mouldings and carved enrichments, and that too at a time when illustrated works on

Gothic architecture, such as have since been produced in enormous quantities,? had scarcely begun to exist; thus young Pugin had

2 These numerous illustrated works, with every detail shown toa workable seale, by doing away with the necessity for studying the

to learn the alphabet of his chosen style by careful and laborious study of the glorious examples of Gothic, both ecclesiastical and domestic, in which England was then (far more than now) so extra- ordinarily rich. His father was for many years engaged in prepar- ing a large series of works on the Gothic buildings of England, almost, if not quite, the first which were illustrated with accurate drawings of medieval buildings ; the early youth of A. W. Pugin was mostly occupied in making minute measured drawings for his father's books, and in this way his enthusiasm for Gothic art was first aroused. All through his life, both in England and during many visits to Germany and France, he continued to make, for his own instruction and pleasure, great numbers of drawings and sketches, especially in pen and ink, and with sepia monochrome. These are perhaps the most beautiful architectural sketches that have ever been produced, perfect in their delicacy and precision of touch, and masterpieces of skilful treatment of light and shade. They are mostly minute in scale, some almost microscopic in detail. Many of the Continental street scenes and interiors of cathedrals are of especial beauty from their contrasts of brilliant light and transparent shadow,! treated with Rembrandt-like vigour. At a very early age his wonderful mastery of Gothic detail was shown by the valuable aid he rendered to Sir Charles Barry in the con- struction of the new Houses of Parliament in 1836 and 1837.2 For some time he worked as a paid clerk to Barry, and to Pugin is mainly due the very remarkable excellence of all the details in this great building, execnted, it must be remembered, at a time when hitherto all examples of the revived Gothic were of the most ignor- ant and tasteless description. Pugin not only designed and even modelled a great part of the sculpture and other decorations of the building, but had

actually to train a school of masons and carvers to carry out his designs with spirit and accuracy.?

While still young Pugin became a Roman Catholic, and this, if possible, increased his intense zeal and enthusiasm for Gothic, or, as he preferred to call it, Christian architecture. His profession became to him a sort of religion, and his study of medieval build- ings was closely associated with his love for the mystic symbolism and the highly esthetic outward form of the old faith. 'he result of this was that he was almost wholly employed by adherents of the Catholic religion, In one way this was a fortunate circumstance, for it saved him from the temptation of assisting in that great wave of falsification and vulgarization which, under the name of "restor- ation," has devastated the principal medieval buildings of Great Britain and Ireland. In another way it was unfortunate, for his Catholic employers were mostly much pinched for money, and at the same time so devoid of all sympathy for the principles of which he was the chief exponent, that they almost always insisted on the greatest possible amount of display being made in the cheapest possible manner. On account of this it is unfair to judge of Pugin's genius from a critical examination of his executed works. In almost every case his design was seriously injured, both by cutting down its carefully considered proportions and by introducing shams (above all things hateful to Pugin), such as plaster groining and even cast-iron carving. The cathedral of St George at Southwark, and even the church of the Jesuits in Farm Street, Berkeley Square, London, are melancholy instances of this. Thus his life was one series of disappointments ; no pecuniary success compensated him for the destruction of his best designs, as in him the man of busi- ness was thoroughly subordinate to the artist. He himself used to Say that the only church he had ever executed with unalloyed Satisfaction was the one at Ramsgate, which he not only designed but paid for. Pugin was very broad in his love for the medixval styles, but on the whole preferred what is really the most suited to modern requirements, namely, the Perpendicular of the 15th century, and this he employed in its simpler domestic form with much success both in his own house at Ramsgate and in the stately Adare Hall in Iveland, built for Lord Dunraven. The cathedral of Killarney and the chapel of the Benedictine monastery of Dowtai Were perhaps the ecclesiastic buildings which were carried out with least deviation from Pugin's original conception,

He was a skilfnl etcher and produced a number of works illus- trated in this way by his own hand, and written with much elo-

buildings themselves, and being used simply like "'cribs" to an un- known language, are partly accountable for numberless recent build- Ings, which, while they are Gothie in form, are utterly devoid of the Tefinement, fitness, and true taste displayed in the buildings of the Middle Ages, _! Three volumes of photographs of these sketehes have been pub- lished in a square oetavo form, but have suffered from reduction in size,

ee A. comparison of the decorations of the Houses of Parliament with other contemporary and even later Gothie buildings shows in a very striking way the remarkable talent and industry displayed by Pugin in the work,

A few years ago very ill-judged attempts were made to elaim for Pugin the main eredit of Barry's design—claims whieh he himself Would have been the last to raise.

105

quence, antiquarian knowledge, and even brilliant humour. This last gift is exemplified in a series of etched plates in his Contrasts : on one side is some noble structure of the Middle Ages, and on the other an example of the same building as erected in the 19th century. His works on Chaneel Sereens and on The True Prin- ciples of Christian Architecture are very ably written and exquisitely illustrated.*

Pugin's melancholy and premature end was to a great extent caused by the embittering influence of the constant frustration of his noblest artistic struggles and conceptions. oe Ben. Ferrey, Recollections of A. Welby Pugin and his Father, London,

PULCTI, Luter, Italian poet, was born at Florence on 3d December 1431 and died in 1487. The first edition of his Morgante Maggiore appeared at Venice in 1481. (See Iray, vol. xiii. p. 507 sq.)

PULGAR, Frernanpo pz, Spanish prose-writer of the latter part of the 15th century, born probably at Pulgar near Toledo, was brought up at the court

of John II. Henry IV. made him one of his secretaries, and under Isabella he became a councillor of state, was charged with at least one mission to France, and in 1482 was appointed historiographer-royal. His official Chronicle of the relgn of the Catholic sovereigns for the period previous to his appointment is loose and inaccurate; but in the later portion, where he had the advantage of personal know- ledge, he is always precise and often graphic. It is not brought down beyond the year 1492. It was first printed at Valladolid in 1565 under the name of Antonio de Lebrija. Pulgar's Claros Varones de Castilla, a series of sketches of forty-six of the most celebrated men of the reign and court of Henry IV., is of considerable interest both for its matter and for its style. He wrote, besides, a commentary on the ancient Coplas de Mingo Revulgo; and thirty-two of his Letters written to various persons of emi- nence, including some to the queen, are also extant. The first edition of the Cluros Varones was that of Seville (1500) ; some of the letters did not appear until 1528,

PULKOWA,. See OpsErvarory, vol. xvii. p. 714.

PULLEY. See MrcHanics and Brock MaAcuINERY.

PULTENEY, Witt1am, Earn or Baru (1684-1764), a politician elevated by a living historian > into the import- ant position in history of the first leader of the opposition, was descended from an ancient family with a pedigree duly recorded in Nichols's /istory of Leicestershire (iv. 320). His father, William Pulteney, died in 1715, and the future statesman was the offspring of his first wife, Mary Floyd, and was born in 1684. As his grandfather had been inti- mately connected with the city of Westminster, the boy was sent to Westminster school and from it proceeded to Christ Church, Oxford, acquiring in these institutions that deep classical knowledge which adorned his own speeches and enabled him to correct his great antagonist when he blun- dered in a quotation. On leaving Oxford he made the usual tour on the Continent. In 1705 he was brought into parliament by Henry Guy for the Yorkshire borough of Hedon, and at the death of that gentleman (a politician who had at one time held the office of secretary of the treasury) Pulteney inherited an estate of £500 a year and £40,000 in cash. This seat was held by him without a break until 1734, and though the family was then dispos- sessed for a time the supremacy was regained in the return of

another Pulteney in 1739. Throughout the reign of Queen Anne William Pulteney played a prominent part in the struggles of the Whigs, and on the prosecution of Sacheverell he exerted himself with great zeal against that violent divine. When the victorious Tories sent his friend

4 Pugin's sense of humour was keener than is altogether convenient for a man of business ; on one oeeasion when a eertain Catholie bishop wrote asking him to design a handsome ehureh, which was to eost an absurdly small sum of money, he replied, " My lord, say thirty shillings more and have a tower and spire."

> Justin M'Carthy, History of the Four Georges, vol. i. (1884).

Robert Walpole to the Tower in 1712, Pulteney championed his cause in the House of Commons and joined with the leading Whigs in visiting him in his prison-chamber. For these acts he was duly rewarded on the accession of George I. In the first ministry of the new king he held the post of secretary of war, a post which in the previous reign had been conferred upon St John, Walpole, and Granville suc- cessively, and when the committee of secrecy on the Utrecht treaty was formed the list included the name of William Pulteney. Two years later (6th July 1716) he becaine one of the privy council. Jn the following year the Whig ministry was rent in twain by internal dissension. On the proposition of the Government for granting a supply against Sweden the friends of Lord Townshend and Sir Robert Walpole voted against the administration, which only escaped defeat by a majority of four. Townshend was immediately dismissed from his post of lord-lieutenant of Ireland, and Walpole at once resigned his places, and amongst the Whigs who followed him in his retirement was Pulteney. Devotion like this merited some signal mark of favour on the return to power of the displaced ministers ; yet, when the crash of the South Sea Company restored Walpole to the highest position of authority, all that he offered to Pulteney was a peerage, a distinction which entailed the misfortune of banishment from the House where his faculties found their highest opportunities for display. The offer was rejected, but in 1723 Pulteney stooped to accept the lucrative but insignificant post of cofferer of the household. In this obscure position he was content for some time to

await the future; but when he found himself neglected he broke out into sarcasms on the civil list and in 1725 was dismissed from his sinecure. From the day of his dismissal to that of his ultimate tri- umph Pulteney remained in opposition, and, although Sir Robert Walpole attempted on his quarrel with Townshend to conciliate him, all his overtures were spurned. Pul- teney's resentment was not confined to his speeches in parliament. With Bolingbroke he set on foot the well- known periodical called The Craftsman, and in its pages the minister was incessantly denounced for many years. The war of pamphlets raged without ceasing. Lord Hervey published an attack on the Craftsman, and Pulteney, either openly or behind the person of Amhurst, defended its strict- ures of the minister. Whether the question at issue was the civil list, the excise, the income of the prince of Wales, or the state of domestic affairs Pulteney was ready with a pamphlet, and the minister or one of his friends came out with a reply. For one of these efforts he was challenged to a duel by Lord Hervey ; for another he was struck off the roll of privy councillors and dismissed from the com- mission of the peace in several counties. In print Pulteney was inferior to Bolingbroke alone among the antagonists of Walpole, but in parliament, from which St John was ex- cluded, he excelled all his comrades. When the sinking fund was appropriated his voice was the foremost in denunciation; when the excise scheme was stirring popular feeling to its lowest depths the passion of the multitude broke out in his oratory. Through Walpole's prudent withdrawal of the latter measure the fall of his ministry was averted, and dismay fell on the opposition leaders. Bolingbroke withdrew to France and Pulteney sought con- solation in foreign travel.

From the general election of 1734 until his elevation to the peerage Pulteney sat for Middlesex. For some years after this election the minister's assailants made little progress in their attack, but in 1738 the troubles with Spain supplied them with the opportunity which they desired. Walpole long argued for peace, but he was feebly supported in his own cabinet, and the frenzy of the people for war knew no bounds. In an evil moment for

his own reputation he consented to remain in office and to gratify popular passion with a war against Spain. His downfall was not long deferred. War was declared in 1739 ; a new parliament was summoned in the summer of 1741, and over the division on the election petitions the ministry of Walpole fell to pieces. The task of forming the new administration was after some delay entrusted to his principal antagonist, whereupon Pulteney offered the post of first lord of the treasury to that harmless poli- tician the earl of Wilmington, being content himself, as he had often declared his disdain for office, with a seat in the cabinet coupled with a peerage. At this act popular feeling broke out into open indignation. Exclamations that the country was betrayed were heard on all sides, and from the moment of his elevation to the Upper House Pulteney's influence dwindled to nothing. Horace Walpole asserts that when Pulteney wished to recall his desire for a peerage it was forced upon him through the ex-minister's advice by the king, and another chronicler of the times records that when victor and vanquished met in the House of Lords, the one as Lord Orford, the other as the earl of Bath, the remark was made by the exulting Orford: "'Here we are, my lord, the two most insignificant fellows in England." On 14th July 1742 Pulteney was created baron Pulteney of Hedon, county York, viscount Pulteney of Wrington, county Somerset, and earl of Bath, and a few months previously he had been restored to his rank in the privy council. On Wilmington's death in 1743 he made application to the king for the post of first lord of the treasury, only to find that it had been conferred on Henry Pelham. For two days in 1746 he was at the head of a ministry, but in "48 hours, three quarters, seven minutes, and eleven seconds" this short-lived ministry collapsed. An occasional pamphlet and an unfrequent speech were afterwards the sole fruits of Lord Bath's talents. His praises whilst in retirement have been sung by two prelates of the established church of England, Bishops Pearce and Newton. He died on 7th July 1764, and was buried on 17th July in his own vault in Islip chapel, Westminster Abbey.

Pultcney's eloquence was keen and incisive, sparkling with viva- city and with allusions drawn from the literature of his own country and of Rome. Of business he was never fond, and the loss in 1734 of his trusted friend John Merrill, who had supplied the qualities which he lacked, was feelingly lamented by him in a letter to Swift. His chief weakness was a passion for money, which was born with him and grew as he grew. As he left no

surviving issue! his vast fortune went to William Johnstone of Dumfries (the third son of Sir James Johnstone), who had married Frances, the daughter' and heiress of his cousin Daniel Pulteney, and had taken the name of Pulteney. Lord Bath has left no trace of the possession of prac- tical statesmanship, but for nearly twenty years he led the opposi- tion in the House of Commons to the greatest minister of the age, and had at last the triumph of driving his adversary from office. (W. Beh)

PULTOWA. See Porrava.

PUMA, a name, probably of native origin, introduced into European literature by the early Spanish writers on South America (as Garcilaso de la Vega and Hernandez) for one of the largest feline animals of the New World. It is generally called "'cougouar" by the French, "leon" by the Spanish Americans, and "panther" by the Anglo- American hunters of the United States. It is the Melis concolor of Linneeus and all subsequent systematic zoo- logical authors. In general and anatomical characters, teeth, &c., it is a typical member of the genus Felis, (See MAMMALIA, vol. xv. p. 434.) Though often spoken of as the American lion, chiefly on account of its colour, it rather resembles the leopard of the Old World in size and habits. Jt usually measures from nose to root of tail about 40

} His wife, Anna Maria Gumley, daughter of John Gumley of Isle- worth, usually styled "a wealthy glass manufacturer and army con- tractor," died on 14th September 1758, aged sixty-four. |

[Stee

inches, the tail being rather more than half that length. The head is rather small compared with that of other cats and has no mane. 'The ears are large and rounded. The tail is cylindrical, with some bushy elongation of the hairs near the end, but not forming a distinct tuft as in the lion. The general colour of all the upper parts and sides

Puma,

of the adult is a tawny yellowish brown, sometimes having a grey or silvery shade, but in some individuals dark or inclining to red. The lower parts of the body, inner sur-

face of the limbs, the throat, chin, and upper lip are dirty white ; the outside of the ears, particularly at their. base,

and a patch on each side of the muzzle black ; the end of

the tail dusky. The young, as is the case with the other plain-coloured Felidx, are, when born, spotted with dusky brown and the tail ringed. These markings gradually fade, and quite disappear before the animal becomes full-grown.

The puma has an exceedingly wide range of geographical distribution, extending over a hundred degrees of latitude, from Canada in the north to Patagonia in the south, and was formerly pretty generally diffused in suitable localities from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean, but the advances of civilization have in recent years considerably curtailed the extent of the districts which it inhabits. In Central America it is still common in the dense forests which clothe the mountain ranges as high as 8000 or 9000 feet above the sea-level, where the hideous sound of its howl- Ing is said to be almost continuously heard at night dur- Ing the breeding season, Though an expert climber, it is by no means confined to wooded districts, being frequently found in scrub and reeds along the banks of rivers, and even in the open pampas and prairies. Its habits much resemble those of the rest of the group to which it be- longs 3; and, like the leopard, when it happens to come Within reach of an abundant and easy prey, as the sheep or calves of an outlying farming station, it kills far more than it can eat, either for the sake of the blood only or to gratify its propensity for destruction. It rarely attacks man, and, when pursued, escapes if possible by ascending lofty trees. Several instances have occurred of pumas becoming tame in captivity. Edmund Kean, the celebrated actor, had one which followed him about like a dog. When caressed they express their pleasure by purring like a domestic cat,

PUMICE, a highly porous light mineral substance of Volcanic origin, resulting from the solidification of foam or scum formed by the escape of

steam or gas on the surface of molten lava, It is principally found of a whitish or clear

grey colour, more rarely of a slaty blue or reddish tint. In composition it is allied to the obsidians, containing in every 100 parts about 72 of silica, 17 of alumina, 2 of iron oxide, and 9 of soda and potash ; and under the blow-pipe it fuses to a whiteenamel. Its porosity renders it so exceedingly light that in the dry condition it floats readily on the surface of water, sinking only when thoroughly saturated. Owing to this property it is found very widely diffused over the ocean-bed, even at points far removed from volcanic vents, considerable blocks having been brought up in the dredgings of the "Challenger" at all the points of its sea-bottom exploration. It is obtained for industrial purposes in the regions of recent volcanoes—the Lipari Islands, Iceland, Auvergne, Teneriffe, &c.—and is highly valued as a smoothing and polishing material for the metals, marble, horn, wood, bone, ivory, and leather. For some purposes it is reduced to the condition of a fine powder, and used either direct or spread upon paper or linen, as glass or emery-paper. A toilet soap is prepared contain- ing a proportion of powdered pumice. An artificial pumice is made from a mixture of calcined and pulverized quartz and alumina baked in the form of a porous brick.

PUMP. Sce Mining, vol. xvi. pp. 458,459; Preumarics, vol. xix. p. 246; and HypromecuHanics, vol. xii. p. 533 sq.

PUMPKIN, See Gourp, vol. xi. p. 4, and Hort CULTURE, vol. xii, p. 283.

PUNCHINELLO (It. Policinella, Pulcinella), the most popular of the puppets, is of Italian origin, though its history is by no means free from obscurity. The earlier etymologists sought to trace the name to various mythical individuals, by whom, it was alleged, the type was first furnished. Galiani adopts the theory which derives it from the name of Puccio d'Aniello, a vintager of Acerra near Naples, who, having by his wit and grotesque appear- ance vanquished some strolling comedians in their own sphere, was induced to join the troop, and whose place, by reason of his popularity, was supplied after his death by a masked actor who imitated his

dress and manner. The claims of other individuals—Paolo Cinella, Polliceno, and Pulcinella, a Neapolitan dealer in fowls—have also found supporters, and the derivation of the name and character from some old mystery representing Pontius (O.E. Pownce ; Fr. Ponce) Pilate and Judas, or the J ews, was formerly popular. It has even been suggested that the title is a modification of roAd xuvéw as expressive of the restlessness which is characteristic of the puppet ; and the assumption that the character was invariably, of diminutive size has given rise to its reference to the word pollece, the thumb (cf. Ddumling, Tom Thumb). The most plausible theory, however, regards the name in its Italian form as a diminutive of pudcino, fem. pulcina, a chicken. It is sometimes stated that, in consequence of the habit of using the word "chicken" as a term of endearment, it came to mean "a, little child," and hence "a puppet" (Skeat), But this again involves the assumption that the application of the name to the char- acter was in some measure determined by the size of the puppets, whereas it would appear to have been trans- ferred from the comic stage to the puppet show, and the Pulcinella of the stage was not necessarily a dwarf. The choice, therefore, seems to lie between the theory of Quadrio, that it was applied on account of the resemblance of the hooked nose to a beak, and that of Baretti, which ascribes its employment to the nasal squeak and timorous impotence of the original character. With respect to the development of the modern type, it has been assumed that the whole family of Italian maschere (Arlecchino, Brighetta, and the like) are modified survivals of the principal Oscan characters of the Atellane, and that Punchinello is the representative of Maccus, the fool or clown. In proof of

this it is urged that Acerra, the supposed residence of Puccio d'Aniello and the traditional source of the char- acter, is in the neighbourhood of Aversa, the old Atella ; and reference is also made to a bronze statue of Maccus, discovered at Rome in 1727, an engraving of which has been preserved in Ficoroni's Le Maschere Sceniche e le Figure Comiche @Antichi Romani. But the resemblance of the statue to the puppet is scarcely to be termed a striking one, and the large nose and deformed figure are somewhat

hazardous ground on which to base a theory,— especially in view of the fact that such points of likeness as there are in it to the northern Punch are not to be found in the Neapolitan Pulcinella. It is possible that some relic of the old Ludi Oscz, transmitted through the Vice of the mystery plays, is to be found in the character ; but any direct descent from the Maccus of the Atellanz seems precluded by the fact that, while there are traces of the gradual development of the northern Punch from the Neapolitan Pulcinella, the latter with its grey hat, white smock and trousers, masked face, and undistorted body is widely different from its alleged prototype. It seems

necessary, therefore, to regard the Pulcinella as in large

part a distinct creation of comparatively modern date. Prior to the 17th century there is no indication in the Italian burlesque poets of the existence of Pulcinella, though Riccoboni places the creation of the part before

1600.

Andrea Perrucci (1699) and Gimma assert with some show of authority that Silvio Fiorillo, a comedian named after his principal part Captain Matamoros (the Italian Miles Gloriosus), invented the Neapolitan Pulcinella. It was afterwards improved by Andrea Calcese, surnamed Ciuccio, who died of the plague in 1656, and who, accord- ing to Gimma, imitated in the character the peasants of Acerra. This would place the origin of the Italian Pulcin- ella somewhere about the commencement of the 17th century, the original character appearing to have been that of a country clown, hook-nosed, shrill-voiced, cowardly, boastful, and often stupid, yet given at times to knavish tricks and shrewd sayings. In thorough accordance with this date, we find that the earliest known appearance of Polichinelle in France is at the commencement of the reign of Louis XIV., in the show of the puppet-playing dentist Jean Brioché. It might have been expected that the shrewder and wittier side of the character would most com- mend itself to the French mind, and there is good reason to believe that the Polichinelle of Brioché was neither a blunderer nor a fool. The puppet was almost immediately seized upon as the medium of political satire of the kind exemplified in the Letter of Polichinelle to Cardinal Mazarin (1649), and it is described in the Combat de Cyrano de Bergerac as a 'petit Ksope de bois, remuant, tournant, virant, dansant, riant, parlant,

petant" and as "cet hétéro- clite marmouset, disons mieux, ce drolifique bossu." In this there appear signs of transformation, whether the im- portation to France took place before or after the alleged improvements of Calcese. The hunchback had been long associated in France with wit and laughter, and there are, therefore, some grounds for Magnin's theory that the northern Punch is of French origin, a Gallic type under an Italian name, though there does not seem to be suffi- cient reason for adopting his suggestion that Polichinelle was a burlesque portrait of Béarnais. The date of its in- troduction into England has been disputed, Payne Collier being of opinion that Punch and King William came together, a second theory suggesting an earlier origin with the Huguenot refugees. In view of its popularity in France prior to the Restoration, however, it would be strange if its migration had been so long delayed, and it is more than probable that it crossed the Channel in the

wake of the Royalists. Apart from the general references by Pepys (1662) and by Evelyn (1667) to an Italian puppet-show at Covent Garden, the former makes men- tion (1669) of some poor people who called their fat child Punch, "that word being become a word of common use for all that is thick and short." An allusion to " Punch- inellos" is also to be found in Butler's satire on English imitation of the French, and Aubrey speaks of "a Punch- inello holding a dial" as one of the ornaments of Sir Samuel Lely's house at Whitehall. But, though the puppet did not travel in the train of William of Orange, allusions

_to it become far more frequent after the Revolution of 1688,

and the skill of the Dutch in their treatment of puppet mechanism may have enhanced its attractiveness. In 1703 it was introduced at Bartholomew Fair into a puppet play of the creation of the world; in 1709 (Yatler, No. 16) it was to be found in a representation of the Deluge, though in a different part from that of the Momus Polichinelle of Piron's Arlequin-Deucalion (1722); and in 1710 (Spectator, No. 14) it is mentioned as a leading figure in Powell's puppet-show at Covent Garden. The alleged satire on Robert Walpole, entitled A Second Tale of a Tub, or the History of Robert Powel, the Puppet-Showman (1715), furnishes some details of Punch

performances, and has an interesting frontispiece representing Powell with Punch and his wife. The Judy (or Joan, as she appears to have been sometimes called) is not of a specially grotesque order, but the Punch is easily recognizable in all but the features, which are of the normal puppet type. Other allusions are to be found in Gay's Shepherd's Week— Saturday (1714) and Swift's Dialogue between Mad Mulli- nix and Timothy (1728). The older Punchinello was far less restricted in his actions and circumstances than his modern successor. He fought with allegorical figures representing want and weariness as well as with his wife and with the police, was on intimate terms with the patriarchs and the seven champions of Christendom, sat on the lap of the queen of Sheba, had kings and dukes for his companions, and cheated the Inquisition as well as the common hangman. Powell seems to have introduced a trained pig which danced a minuet with Punch, and the French have occasionally employed a cat in place of the dog Toby, whose origin is somewhat uncertain. A typical version of the modern play, with illustrations, was published by Payne Collier and Cruikshank in 1828, (R. M. w.)

PUNCTUATION. See Patmocrapuy, vol. xviii. p.

163.

PUNJAB,! the most northern province of British India. Geographically the region called by this name is the tri- angular tract of country of which the Indus and the Sutlej (Satlaj) to their confluence form two of the sides, the third being the lower Himalaya hills between these two rivers. The British province now includes a large extent of country outside these boundaries, on all three sides—beyond the Indus to the range of hills running parallel to it on the west ; beyond the Sutlej eastward to the Jumna (Jamna) and southward to a distance of 60 miles below Delhi; within the hills, a large highland tract on the east and another on the west, with the Kashmir and Chamba terri- tories between. The British province stretches north and south from 35° 10' N. lat. at the head of the hill district of Hazara to 27° 40' at the south end of the Gurgaon dis- trict, and east and west from 69° 36' E. long. on the Dera Ghazi Khan and Sind frontier to 78° 55' on the Jumna. The length of the central line of communication across the province from Delhi to Peshawar by rail is 645 miles.

The name Punjab signifies "(country of] five rivers," Rivers ng ies ee

1 Panjab, according to received modern spelling ; but, as in other cases. of important and fanriliar names, the old form is commonly retained. :

oo

Doabs,

PUNJAB

the five rivers being the great tributaries of the Inpus (q.v.), namely, the Jhelum, Chinab, Ravi, Bids, and Sutlej. These are all rivers of large volume, but, on account of the great width of sandy channel in their passage through the plains, their changing courses, and shifting shoals, they are of very moderate value for steam navigation, though they all support a considerable boat-traffic. The Indus has a course of about 550 miles through the Punjab. The Jhelum enters the plains a little above the town of Jhelum. Thence it flows south-west about 200 miles to join the Chinab. The Chinab (called Chandrabhaga in the hills, being formed by the union of the Chandra and the Bhaga, both from the Bara Lacha "ae aa Hills) enters the Punjab Sea about 15 miles north of Sialkét. About 200 miles lower down it receives the Jhelum on the right, and Saictoont about 60 miles farther the Na Ravi on the left. After a further course of about 120 miles it joins the Sut- lej. The Ravi, after reach- ing the plains, follows a very Winding course to its junction with the Chindb. | A deserted channel runs generally parallel to the present river through part of the district of Mont- gomery. The Bids enters the Punjab in the Gur- daspur district, and has a course in the plains of nearly 100 miles to its}, junction with the Sutlej near Hari-ki-Patan. The Sutlej flows nearly 500 miles through the plains before it unites with the Chinab, which is the junc- } tion of the five tributaries. |: Thence the united rivers (sometimes called Panj-nad or "the five streams ") flow in one channel about 50 miles to the Indus.

Whilst the general name Punjab is applied to the whole country of the five rivers, there are distinct names for each of the "doabs" (do, two ; db, water) or tracts between two

ee

1S M/AIL KHAN’

H

‘ The name first given by the Aryans after their immigration was Sapia Sindhi, ‘(land of] seven rivers,” these being the five rivers of the modern Punjab with the addition of the Indus on the one side and of the Saraswati on the other. In the Vedic poems they are severally addressed as Sindhi, the Indus (the river) ; Vitasta, the Jhelum ; Asikni, Chinab; Atravati and Marudvridha, Ravi ; Vipdsa, Bids; Sutudri, Sutlej; and Saraswati, Sarsuti. It may be remarked that Sindhé itself means “river,” and Saraswati, “ having running water,” and that each is applied as an epithet to other great rivers. The Saraswati, alone of the seven, is not now great. It is represented by a channel or channels, occupying the position assigned to the ancient much-praised stream, but now nearly dry for a great part of the year; for, unlike the others, it comes ouly from the lower hills, not from perpetual snows. The large body of water which it carries for a time in the rainy season never reaches the Indus, towards which it directs Its course, but is lost in the desert lands of northern Rajputana and Bahawalpur. In writings of the 6th or 7th century B.C. the Saraswati is said to disappear and pass underground to join the Ganges and Jumna at Prig (Allahdb4d), which triple confluence received therefore the name Tribént. The Saraswati dropped out of the enumeration of the rivers of the early Aryan settlement; and, when in later days the Indus, which receives all the others, ceased to be reckoned along with them, the country took its name Panchanada, and afterwards, in Persian form, Panjab.

107

adjoining rivers. The country between the Sutlej and the Bids is called the Jalandar Dob ; it includes the districts Jalandar and Hushidrpur. The long strip between the Bids-Sutlej and the Ravi, containing the greater part of the Gurdaspur, Amritsar, Lahore, Montgomery, and Multan districts, is called the Barf Doab. And Rechna Dodab is the tract between the Ravi and the Chinab, embracing the Sialkét and Gujranwala districts with the trans-Ravi portions of the districts of the Barf Dodb. Chaj or Jach is the dob

between the Chindb and the Jhelum (Gujrat and Shahpur districts and part of Jhang), and Sind Sagar (Indus Sea) is the name of the large dodb between the

ead

faxirabad "wy, ISIALKOT(

Map of Punjab. Jhelum and the Indus, including the Rawal Pindi, Jhelum, and Muzaffargarh districts, with parts of Shahpur, Bann, Déra Ismail Khan. The higher and drier parts of the dodbs are called "bar." They are waste but not barren, scantily covered with low shrubs, capable, when watered, of being well cultivated. The bar is the great camiel- grazing land. Large areas of the Muzaffargarh and Multan districts are "thal," barren tracts of shifting sand. The middle part of the Barf Dodb, in the Amritsar district, bears the distinctive name of Manjha (middle) as the centre and headquarters of the Sikh nation, containing their two sacred tanks of Amritsar and Taran Taran, and a dense and fine population of Jats, Rajputs, and Gujars. The Malwa Sikhs, again, are those of the cis-Sutlej country.

Besides the great rivers, the distinguishing feature of Minor the Punjab, there are some others deserving of notice. rivers.

The Cabul river joins the Indus above Attock after receiving, about 12 miles north-east of Peshawar, the Swat river, which enters British territory at Abazai. The Kunhar, from the Kashmir hills, flows down the Kaghan valley (the upper part of the Hazara district) and joins the Jhelum at Muzaffarabad. The Siran and the Dér in Hazara unite and near Torbéla run into the Indus, which

Area,

Physical features.

Mineral products.

Crops, &e.

below Attock also receives the Harro from Hazara. The Kurram, rising in Afghanistan and flowing through the Bannt district, falls into the Indus near Isa Khil, and the Sohan, from the lower hills of Kashmir, joins it above Kalabagh. The Bimbar, from the Kashmir Hills, below the Pir Panjal Pass, runs into the Chindb near Wazirdbad. The Dég, from the Jammu Hills, joins the Ravi near Gugaira. South of the Sutlej the Markanda, the Saras- wati, the Gaggar, and the Chitang, from the lower hills of Sirmur, which are violent torrents during the rainy season but nearly dry at other times, flow towards the Indus, but never reach it, being lost in the sands of the Bikanir and Bahawalpur desert.

The area of the Punjab proper, the triangular tract of country between the Indus and the Sutlej, is about 62,000 square miles; the whole area of the British province is 106,632, and of the feudatory states 35,817, making a total of 142,449 square miles. This area is for the most part a great alluvial plain. The north-east side of the province is a belt of hill-country, the outer margin of the Himalayas, on which are the valuable hill-stations of Murree, Dalhousie, Dharmsala, Kassauli, Sabéthi, Dagsliai, and Simla. In the Delhi and Gurgaon districts is the north end of the Aravali range. A part of the extremity of these hills became well known at the time of the siege of Delhi in 1857 under the name of the " Ridge," which was held by the British troops. Between the Jhelum and the Indus is the hilly region known by the general name of the Salt Range, containing the inexhaustible stores of rock-salt which have been worked for many centuries. The salt is dug from enormous caverns entered by narrow tunnels. The salt-hills are continued west of the Indus, where the salt is dug from open quarries. A double range of low hills runs south-westward from the Indus near the mouth of the Kurram. The part near the south end called Sheikh Budin (Sheikh Shahdéb-uddin) is a useful sana- torium, though of no great height or great extent. The western boundary of the province is the fine range of the Suliman Mountains, dividing the Punjab from Afghan- istan. The British possessions do not extend beyond the base of the hills, which are occupied by very independent tribes. It is only within a short time past that any exact knowledge has been obtained of the interior of these hills, beyond the parts visited in the course of the numerous frontier expeditions for the punishment

of inroads into British territory. A survey was made for the first time in 1883 of the fine mountain mass containing the snowy peak Takht-i-Suliman (Solomon's throne) and its sur- roundings.

Besides the rock-salt the mineral products of the Punjab are not many. Limestone, good for building, is obtained at Chanidt on the Chinab and at a few other places. There are extensive alum-beds at Kaélabagh on the Indus. A small quantity of coal is found in the Salt Range in disconnected beds, mostly at a considerable height above the plain, and not very accessible, the beds thinning out westwards from the Jhelum to the Indus. Petroleum is found in small quantities at a number of places in the Rawal Pind{, Kohat, and Bann districts, being gathered from the surface of pools or collected in shallow pits. It is used for making gas for the station of Rawal Pindi. In almost all parts of the Punjab there is '"kankar," rough nodular limestone, commonly found in thick beds, a few feet below the surface of the ground, used for road metalling and burned for lime.

As in other parts of India, there are commonly two har- vests in the year. The spring crops are wheat, barley, gram, various vegetables, oil-seeds, tobacco, and a little opium ; the autumn crops, rice, millets, maize, pulses, cotton, indigo, and sugar-cane. Tea is now extensively

cultivated in the Kangra district. Flax has been pro- duced successfully, but the cultivation has not been ex- tended. Hops have been grown experimentally, for the Murree brewery, on neighbouring hills; the cultivation in Kashmir has been more encouraging. Potatoes are grown extensively on cleared areas on the hills. The Punjab produces freely many of the Indian fruits, but none of special excellence except the peaches of Peshawar. Grapes are grown in many of the Himalayan valleys, where the rain is not excessive, also at Peshawar; but they are in- ferior to those brought from Cabul.

The forest area of the Punjab consists of 4694 square Forests, miles reserved, under the management of the forest depart- ment, and 13,000 square miles under the district officers.

The demarcation of protected and reserved forests is being extended. The wasteful destruction of trees is checked in the hill forests rented from native

states by the British Government. The principal reserved forests are the deodar (Cedrus Deodara) and chil (Pinus longifolia) tracts in the hills, the plantations of shisham (Dalbergia Sissu) and sal (Shorea robusta) in the plains, and the fuel rakhs or pre- serves (Acacia, Prosopis, &c.). The average nett surplus of forest income for the ten years 1875-85 was Rs.161,800. ;

The rainfall in the Punjab varies greatly in different Climate, | parts and from year to year. The maximum (126°55 | inches in the year) is at Dharmsala, on the face of the high north wall of the Kangra valley; the minimum (5:96) is in the Muzaffargarh district. In a country so open and so far from the sea there are extremes of heat and cold. A temperature of 128° Fahr. in the shade has been recorded, and a winter temperature of 25° at sunrise is not in- frequent. At Lahore, on the grass, the thermometer has | been known to fall to 17°. 1]

Of the whole area of British Punjab (106,632 square Cultiva- |

miles) 36,755 square miles are cultivated and 64,263 un- tion | cultivated, the remaining 5614 being reckoned uncultivable. | An area of 75,434 square miles (48,377,760 acres) is held by 33,020 village communities, formed of small proprietors | having joint interests and joint responsibility for the land | revenue, but cultivating each his own land. Among the Pathans of the trans-Indus districts the tribe and not the village community is in some cases the jointly responsible a body. There are 3406 estates of larger proprietors, with | a total area of 4,531,415 acres; and there are 10,216,872 acres of waste land, the property of the Government, of which less than one-half is capable of cultivation. The total area under wheat is seven millions of acres. There

is an increasing export of wheat, gram, rice, and oil- seeds.

Irrigation for large areas is from canals and from reser- Irriga- voirs, and for smaller areas from wells. The canals are of tion. two kinds, those carrying a permanent stream throughout the year, and those which fill only on the periodical rising of the rivers, the latter commonly known as " inundation canals," There are only a few parts of the country pre senting facilities for forming reservoirs, by closing the narrow outlets of smiall

valleys and storing the accumulated rainfall. The old canals made by the Mohammedan rulers, of which the principal are Firéz's Canal from the Jumna and the Hasli Canal from the Ravi, have been improved or reconstructed by the British Government. The principal new canals are the Sirhind, drawn from the Sutlej near Rupar, and irrigating parts of the native states of Patidla and Nabha as well as British territory ; the Barf Doéb Canal from the Ravi; the Swat Canal, drawn from the Swat river at Abazai; and inundation canals in the districts of Firéz pur, Shéhpur, Multén, and the Dérajat, from the Sutlej, the Jhelum, the Chindb, and the Indus. Water was admitted into the Sirhind Canal on 1st July 1882. Its branches are still under construction.

Popula- tion. |

| Adminis- curative "| livisions.

ative tates,

rwws AB

The population of the British province in 1881 numbered 18,850,437, of the feudatory states 3,861,683 ; total, 22,712,120, This total number consists of :—

British Native Territory. States. Total.

MOWAMMEMAMS ..5… cern ccnese 10,525,150 1,137,284 11,662,434 WS sacecougR nae 7,130,528 | 2,121,767 9,252,295 PEE ne ari ca ies ones «a0 1,121,004 595,110 1,716,114 IPP sh hiceentesaes esc 35,826 6,852 42,678 IPM SINANIS so. clslele's s0ise rt oaecce ee 33,420 279 33,699 PRUTISHS sci ccs e sees cs cesces 2,864 387 3,251 ISS S36 cocg0e BODE Co eee 462 3 465 'CAINE 9.0 Gree eae eee 1,183 1 1,184

18,850, 437 3,861,683 22,712,120

The Christians are thus distri-}—-—-———— |———___ —_____

buted :—

Huropean, British subjects …. 10,761 159 10,920 Other European and American 17,015 8 17,023 [ORCESI 9 leon enone e Conene 1,821 23 1,844 SUNG "Gqgggeoee eee 3,823 89 3,912 33,420 | 279 38,699

The Punjab has one-fourth of the Mohammedan inhabitants of India, one-twentieth of the Hindus, and eleven-twelfths of the Sikhs. Of the Hindus the classes most largely represented are Jats (4,432,720) and Rajputs (1,677,569). There are in the Punjab certain criminal tribes, always under surveillance, of which the population is at present 13,957.

The tribes of the western hill frontier are Mohammedans and Pathans in the north and Baluchis in the south (with one Pathan tribe among them). 'There are sixteen principal Pathan tribes, of which the most important are the Momand, Afridi, and Orakzai on the Peshawar border, and the Waziri adjoining Bannti and the Dérajat ; and seven Baluch tribes on the Déra Ghazi Khdn border, the chief of which are the Bézdar, Marri, and Bugti.

The British province is divided for administrative purposes into thirty-one districts, each under a deputy commissioner, grouped in

six divisions, each under a commissioner. Division.) District. | Area.| POP |! pivision.| District. | Area, | P: ae sq.m. sq. m. Delhi ..! Delhi…./ 1,276 | 643,515 || Rawal | Rawal – Gurgaon 1,938] 641,848|/ Pindi Pindi..) 4,861] 820,512 Rohtak ..'1,811 | 553,609 Jhelum ..| 3,910] 589,373 Hissar 1,./5,042 | 630,820 Shahpur 4,691} 421,508 Karnal ..'2,396 | 622,621 Gujrat ..| 1,973] 689,115 Ambala .. 2,570 |1,067,263 Gujran- Simla….! 18 42,945 wala ../ 2,587) 616,892 Jalandar| Ludidna 1,375 | 618,835 Sialkot ..) 1,958] 1,012,148 Firdzpur! 4,254 | 777,156 || Dérajat | Muzaffar- Jalandar 1,322] 789,555 garh ..| 8,139] 338,605 Hushiar- Dera ur…. 2,180] 901,381 Ghazi Kangra …9,069 | 730,845 Khan..| 4,517] 363,346 Lahore | Gurdas- Déra pur.. .(1,822 | 823,695 Ismail Airitsar 1,574 | 893,266 Khan..| 9,296] 441,649 Lahore ..:3,648| 924,106 Bannu ..! 3,868} 332,577 Jhang .. 5,702} 395,296 || Pesha- | Peshawar 2,504| 592,674 Mont- war Hazira ..) 3,039] 407,075 gomery 5,574] 426,529 Kohat . 2,838! 181,540 Multan …5,880| 551,964 Khyber ra 8,173 Pass —_———

106,632 18,850,437

The native states in feudal subordination to the British Govern- ment and in connexion with the Punjab are thirty-six in number, thirty-one Hindu and five Mohammedan. Of these many are very insignificant, the rulers being petty Rajput chiefs of old family and smal] means. The highest chief in rank and importance is the maharaja of Kashmir and Jammu, a Dogra Rajput (see vol. xiv. p. 12). The next is the maharaja of Patida (¢.v.). The Moham- medan state of Bahawalpur on the Sutlej is next, with a popula- tion under half a million and a revenue of about 20 lakhs. Next mM order are the rajas of Jind and NABHA (g.v.), cis-Sutlej states. They are Jats, like the mahardéja of Patidla, of the Phulkian clan (named from Phul, the founder of these three houses, in the middle of last century). Next comes the raja of KAPURTHALA (g.v.) in the fertile Jalandar Doab, of the Ahltwalia family. Of the rest the Most important in point of revenue are the states of Mandi in the hill country west of the Sutlej, and Sarmur in the hills east of that 'iver, under Rajput rulers, and Farfdkét and Malér Kotla in the plains, cis-Sutlej, the former Hindu, the latter Mohammedan.

Of the 22,700,000 people in the Punjab, in British territory and the native states, about 14,000,000 speak the provincial language, Panjabi, which varies in character in different parts of the pro-

vince, About 4,250,000 speak HinpusTani (q.v.), this number Including those whose ordinary vernacular is Hindi, but who 1 The

figures for the Hissir and Firdzpur districts are only approximate,

but the sum of the two together is correct. In the redistribution which is

_ROw (1885) being carried out the former district of Sirsa has been abolished ;

the eastern part is added to Hissar and the western to Firédzpur. In the above Statement half of the area and population has been assigned to each.

understand and are gradually adopting the more comprehensive Hindustani. These two languages are the most generally used. throughout

the province, but not equally in all parts. The other languages in use are more or less local. Jatki, spoken by about 1,500,000, belongs chiefly to the south-east districts. The language of the eastern hill country is a form of Hindi, spoken by about 1,500,000. Dégri is the language of the northern hills, and Kashmiri of a few large bodies of Kashmir workpeople at Ludiana, N urpuy, Amritsar, and some other places. The language of the Pathans of the northern part of the trans-Indus frontier is Pushtu (see vol. i. p. 238). Baluchi is spoken on the same frontier, farther south, ad- Jacent to Baluchistan, Sindi at the extreme south, next to Sind, and Bagri, a variety of Hindi, in the cis-Sutlej district bordering on Bikanir. There are also some minor local dialects, and a few people speaking langnages not of the Punjab,—Persian, Bengali, Mahrathi, Turki, Tibetan, Nipalese. Hindustani is the language of the law courts and of all ordinary official and other communica- tions with chiefs and people.

Many books, periodicals, and newspapers are published in some of these spoken languages, the greatest number in Hindustani, others in Hindi, Panjabi, Pushtu, and Persian, also some in Sanskrit and classical Arabic, which are not spoken. During the last quarter of which the details are published 360 books were registered, 161 Hindustani, 135 Hindi, 36 English, 16 Arabic, the rest bilingual. There are 7 English and 23 vernacular periodicals, monthly and fortnightly, and 28 vernacular hewspapers are published in the British province and 8 in native states.

The number of children under instruction in schools in the Pun- Educa- jab is 184,000 (9000 girls). There are 1559 primary schools for tion, boys, 206 middle schools, 25 high schools, and 3 industrial schools, also a training college and 4 normal schools. For girls there are 321 primary schools, 4 middle, 1 high, 1 industrial, and 4 normal schools. The higher and special educational institutions are the Lahore Government College, the Cambridge University Mission College at Delhi, the Oriental College of the Punjab University, the Medical School, and the Mayo School of Art, the last three at Lahore. A ward's school, for the orphans of Sikh chiefs, estab- lished at Ambala in 1867, is about to be extended to receive other upper- class students. The Government department of public in- struction was established in 1856. In 1868 the first proposal of a university for the Punjab was made, chiefly at the instance of the literary society called the Anjuman-

i-Punjab, with the support of the native chiefs. The institution took the form in 1870 of the Punjab University College, and it was raised in November 1882 to the status of a university. There are several other literary societies in the Punjab besides the Anjuman at Lahore.

The police force numbers 19,827 men, with 580 officers, 68 of whom are Europeans. There is in addition a special frontier police.

The military force in occupation of the Punjab consists of (1) Army. British troops (of which it has a larger proportion than any other province) ; (2) native troops of the regular Indian army ; (3) the Punjab frontier force, a local body of cavalry, infantry, and artillery, ordinarily employed only on the military duties of the western frontier ; and (4) the frontier militia, composed of men of the border tribes, both within and without British territory, employed as auxiliary to the regular troops, to garrison certain of the smaller fortified posts along the fronticr. There is also a volunteer rifle corps of Europeans at the large stations and on the lines of railway. The total military force, including police, of the native states in connexion with the Punjab is 21,500.

Most of the native manufactures of the Punjab are those common Manu- to other parts of India, such as the ordinary cotton fabrics, plain factures. woollen blankets, unglazed pottery, ropes and cord, grass matting, paper, leather-work, brass vessels, simple agricultural implements, and the tools used in trades.2 Other manufactures, not so general, yet not peculiar to the Punjab, are woollen fabrics, carpets and shawls, silk cloths and embroidery, jewellery and ornamental metal-work, wood and ivory carving, turned and lacquered wood- work, glazed pottery, arms and armour, and musical instruments. But some of these classes of manufacture are represented by work of special kinds or special excellence in particular parts of the Punjab, notably the silk fabrics of Multan and of Bahawalpur, the capital of the native state ; the carpets of Lahore, Peshawar, &c. ; the ‘“ “kashi” (see KasH1) or glazed tile-work (an ancient art still practised in a few places); “kéft-kari,” inlaid metal-work (gold wire on steel), chiefly made at Gujrat and Sialkét ; shawls and other fine woollen fabrics, made by Kashmiri workpeople at Ludiana and Nurpur, as well as in Kashinir ; ‘“lungis,” waist and turban scarfs, made at Peshawar, Bannu, &c. ; silk

embroidery for shawls, scarfs, and turbans, at Delhi, Lahore, and Multan ; embroidery on cloth for elephant-trappings, bed and table covers, &c., at Lahore and Multan ; enamelled ornaments, in Kangra and Miltdn ; quill embroidery on leather, in Kangra and Simla ; lacquered wood-

2 The India Museum at South Kensington has an excellent series of repre- sentations of native artisans and their mode of working, from the pencil of the present director of the Lahore School of Art, Mr J. L. Kipling, formerly of the School of Art at Bombay.

Finance.

Com- munica- tion.

History.

work, Pak Pattan. At Kohat there is a special manufactory of gun-barrels made of twisted iron straps. Thcre is much excellent carved wood-work on houses and on boats. Among the Punjab arts should be mentioned the artificial nose-making practised by a special class of surgeons at Kangra. Injury has been done to some of the native arts of the Punjab, as of other parts of India, by unwise copying of European patterns. The Lahore School of Art is expected to correct this and promote the study and execution of native forms and designs. The Lahore Museum contains illustra- tions of the arts and manufactures, as well as raw products, of the Punjab, and a large collection of the sculptures, mostly Buddhist, and many of Greek workmanship, found in the north-west of the province, chiefly trans-Indus. Upwards of 200 Greco – Buddhist sculptures were excavated in Yusufzai in 1883 and 1884. The number of visitors to the Lahore Museum during the year 1884 was upwards of 251,000. The value of the imports into the Punjab during the same year was £981,167, and of the exports £1,088,919. The chief lines of export and import traffic, apart from the trade with the immediately adjoining countries, are on the one side the railway to Delhi and the North-West Provinces, and on the other the Indus River and Indus Valley Railway to Sind and the sea. The Punjab exports wheat, tea, rock-salt, sugar, and other pro- ducts, and articles of local manufacture. English

piece-goods, cutlery and other metal-work, fruits (especially from Afghanistan and Kashmir), rice, drugs, and spices are among the chief inrports. The most important trade-centres are Delhi, Peshawar, Multan, and Amritsar. There is a large amount of both export and import trade with the countries on the north-west frontier. Efforts were made for some time by the Government to promote trade between the Punjab and Kashgar, but without much result. The endeavour is now being carried on by private enterprise. There are great difficulties in the hill country between, where the goods have to be carried on mules and ponies.

The revenue of the British province is £3,232,349. Of this sum £1,605,243 (consisting of land revenue £1,220,880, and minor items £384,363) goes to the iniperial treasury; £1,410,379 is provincial, raised and expended in the province in addition to an imperial grant ; and £216,727 is derived from local rates and mis- cellaneous income, and is locally expended.

The total length of railways in the province now (1885) open for trafic is 1205 miles. The main central line from Delhi to Pesha- war is 645 miles in length, of which 125 are east of the Jumna in the North-West Provinces, and 520 in the Punjab. Other lines now open are—Lahore to Multan 208 miles, and 10 to Shir-Shah, the port of Multan on the Chinab, Multan to Bahawalpur 63, Delhi to Riwari 52, Riwari to Hissar 89, Hissar to Firdzpur 130, Amritsar to Pathankot 67, Wazirabad to Sialkét 27, Lala Musa (near Gujrat) to Pind Dadan Khan and the Salt Mines 62, Rawal Pindi to Khushhalgarh 77. Other lines are under construction. There are 1467 miles of metalled road, 23,156 unmetalled, and 2676 miles of navigable river. In this country of great rivers, crossing lines of road, the value of boat-bridges is very great. During the five years following the construction of the bridge of boats over the Indus at Déra Ismail Khan the annual camel traffic between Afghanistan and the Punjab by the Gumal Pass, through the hills on the west, increased from 50,000 to 80,000, with corresponding increase of the " tirni" or grazing-tax paid by the Povinda camel- drivers. This trade-route and this class of carriers are of some im- portance. For a long time to come they are not likely to make way for other means of transport by road or railroad, though the trade will grow. The Povinda are a travelling tribe belonging to the Ghilzai country in Afghanistan. They make annual trade journeys into India by this route,

which is an easy and good one, capable of being turned to more account. The Sikhs imposed heavy duties on the goods they brought. The remission of these duties by the British Government greatly encouraged the trade, which is now further helped by the boat-bridge across the Indus. There are many passes through the hills between British India and Afghanistan, of which the principal are—the Khyber in the north, close to Peshawar, the nearest way to Cabul; the Bolan in the south, approached from Shikarpur and Jacobabad in Sind, the way to Quetta and Candahar; and between them three others looking towards Ghazni, namely, Gumal Pass, the valley of the united Gumal and Zhob rivers opposite Déra Ismail Khan, and the Kurram and Dawar routes opposite Bannu.

While the amount of railway and other traffic has been steadily increasing with the facilities afforded, the demands on the post- office and telegraph have likewise been growing rapidly. The annual number of letters and post-cards, now about twenty millions, has nearly doubled in ten years. The telegraph has had a fluctuat- ing increase in the number of messages, which during the year 1884 was upwards of 142,000.

History.—For the early history of the Punjab from the Aryan immigration to the rise of the Mogul dynasty the reader may consult the article Inp1a (vol. xii. p. 779 sqg.). It deserves, how- ever, to be specially noted here with reference to that period that from the time of Alexander onwards Greek settlers remained in

PUN? 2%

the Punjab, and that Greek artists gave their services for Buddhist work and introduced features of their own architecture in Indian as well as Grecian buildings. Besides the bases and capitals of large Greek columns at Shah-deri (Taxila) and elsewhere, numerous sculptures of Greek workmanship have been found at various places. These are single statues (probably portraits), also figures of Buddha, and representations of scenes in his legendary history, and other subjects. They are obtained from ruins of monasteries and other buildings, from mounds, and the remains of villages or monumcutal topes. Of Buddhist buildings now remaining the most conspicuous as well as distinctive in character are the topes (sthupa), in shape a plain hemisphere, raised on a platform of two or more stages, One

of the largest of these is at Manikyala, 14 miles east of Rawal Pindi. These Buddhist buildings and sculptures are all probably the work of the two centuries before and the three or four after the beginning of the Christian era. The character of the sculptures is now well known from the specimens in the India Museum, South Kensington, and both originals and casts of others in the Lahore Museum. Unfortunately they have no names or inscriptions, which give so much value to the sculptures of the Bharhut tope.

The several bodies of settlers in the Punjab from the earliest Tribes times have formed groups of families or clans (not identical with and Indian castes, but in many cases joining them), which have gener- clans,

ally preserved distinct characteristics and followed certain classcs of occupation in particular parts of the country. Some of the existing tribes in the Punjab are believed to be traceable to the early Aryan settlers, as the Bhatti tribe, whose special region is Bhattiana south of the Sutlej, and who have also in the village of Pindi Bhattian a record of their early occupation of a tract of country on the left bank of the Chinab, west of Lahore. The Dogra, another Aryan clan, belong to a tract of the lower hills between the Chinab and the Ravi. Others similarly have their special ancient localities. To the earlier settlers—the dark race (Dasyt) whom the Aryans found in the country, and who are commonly spoken of as aborigines—belonged, as is supposed, the old tribe called Takka, whose name is found in Taksha-sila or Taxila. And from the later foreigners again, the Indo-Scythians, are probably descended the great Jat tribe of cultivators, also the Gujars, a pastoral people and traders, and others. Some of the tribes or sections of them, having received the Hindu faith and the system of caste, have afterwards given large bodies of converts to Mohammedanism, so that there are now Hindus and Moham- medans of the same tribe continuing to bcar the same name, There are Mohammedan Rajputs, and there are both Hindu and Mohammedan Jats, and so with others.

It was during the events which brought Babar, the first of the Sikh Mogul dynasty, to the throne that the sect of the Sikhs arose. sect.

Nanak, the founder, derived his first ideas of the movement he was to lead from Kabir of Banaras, a Mohammedan by birth (it is

-believed), who joined himself to a sect of Hindus and strove to

give to their religion a new form and spirit free from idolatry. And the Sikh religion of the Punjab, founded on this model, was a reformed and monotheistic Hinduism. Nanak was born in 1469 at Talwandi on the Ravi, and lived to the age of seventy, leaving a large number of followers at his death. The name Sikh means "disciple," and the strength of the movement lay in the relation of the disciple to the "guri" or spiritual guide. In the time of Babar's successor, Humayiin (who was only in the Punjab during the tem- porary success of his rival, Shir Khan Sur), the Sikhs were under the direction of the second of their gurus, Angad (1539-1552), and of the third, Amar Das (1552-1574). During the long reign of Akbar (1556-1605) the Sikhs increased in number and power under the mild and liberal rule of a Mohammedan emperor who was nore than tolerant in all matters of religion. He himself sought diligently for knowledge of other faiths, and Amar Das, the Sikh guru, was one of those who had conferences with him. Rain Das, son-in-law of Amar Das, succeeded him in 1574. He received from Akbar a gift of a piece of land, on which he dug the large sqnare tank afterwards called Amritsar ("the pool of immortality"). In the last year of this guri's life the Punjab was visited, on Akbar's invitation, by several Jesuit fathers from Goa, who were received with great favour. To them the emperor gave a site for a church in the city of Lahore, and the church was built at his expense. In 1581 Ram Das was succeeded by his son Arjun Mal, a man of note. In the middle of his father's tank at Amritsar he built the temple, which was called at first Hari Mandar, and afterwards Darbar Sahib, the name by which it is now known. The town which began to rise round the tank and temple was made the headquarters of the Sikhs. Arjun gave further coherence to the body of his followers by levying a regular tax in place of the free and varied offerings they used to give; and he was the compiler of the sacred book called the Adi Granth, the materials for which he had received unarranged from his father. Akbar lived much in the Punjab. In 1586 he directed a campaign against the Afghans of the Peshawar valley, which was attended with no important results except the death of his able minister Bir Bal. In the next year he conquered Kashmir. On his visit to this new acquisition he was

)

|

|

Har Govind.

yovind Xai.

ersian

nd \fghan nyasion,

Pian od & B

accompanied by one of the Portuguese Jesuits, Jerome Xavier (nephew of the celebrated Francis), who was a special friend of the emperor and was with him at the time of his death at Agra in 1605. Arjun's power and prosperity lasted only during Akbar's lifetime. Jahangir was equally favourable to the Christian mis- sionaries ; but the Sikh gurt incurred his displeasure. Believed to be a partisan of the emperor's rebellious son Khusru, Arjun was imprisoned in 1606 and died soon after. His successor, Har Govind, was only twelve years of age at the time of Arjun's death, and as he grew up his relation to the Sikhs became that of com- mander more than guri. The promulgation of the Granth for instruction of the people had made a way for this change in the character of the leadership. The work of the teacher was now in great measure transferred to the guardians of the sacred volume, who read it in the ears of the people. The guri thenceforth was the organizing head more than the religious guide. As a young man Har Govind accompanied the emperor to Kashmir. Jahangir, on his way back from this favourite summer resort, died at Rajaori in 1627, and was buried at Shah-dera on the Ravi, opposite Lahore. His widow, Nur Jahan, erected a beautiful monument over him, and was herself buried at the same place.

The reign of Shah Jahan (1627-1658) added much to the pros- perity of the Punjab. The emperor's large views found a fitting agent in Ali Mardin

Khan, his minister and director of works. Under his orders the canal from the Ravi near the foot of the hills to Lahore was made, and the Jumna Canal, which had been con- structed in the 14th century by Firéz Shah, was restored and im- proved. Ali Mardan Khan also built the magnificent "sardis" or rest-houses for travellers on the high road to Kashmir, and other works of utility in the Punjab. In the contests between the two sons of Shah Jahan the Punjab favoured the elder, Dara Shiké, whose intelligent interest in the welfare of the country, joined to literary tastes and liberal views, commended him to all classes of the people. His name is preserved in the town of Shiké-pira, 18 miles west of Lahore, Dara-nagar, and other places. The present military station of Lahore bears the name of Dara's religious in- structor, Mian Mir, near whose tomb, erected by his royal pupil, the British cantonment is built.

Har Govind, the sixth Sikh gurd, died in 1645. Har R4i, who succeeded him, gave his support to Dara Shiké. Dara was not successful in maintaining his rights against his younger brother Alamgir (called Aurangzib), who succeeded his father in 1658. Bernier, who was visiting India at this time, was a companion of the elder brother when in misfortune and of the younger when in power. Like his three predecessors, Aurangzib was fond of visiting Kashmir, and his journey through the Punjab on one of these occasions (1663-64) furnishes one of the most lively pictures of Bernier's Indian experiences. Har Rai died in 1661, and his successor, Har Kishan, a boy, held the nominal leadership of the Sikhs only three years, being followed in 1664 by Tegh Bahadur, a son of Har Govind. When, on his return to the Punjab from a visit to Bengal, he was thought to be exercising authority in- consistent with loyalty to the emperor, he was put to death by Aurangzib in 1675. This roused the Sikhs to greater zeal in the adoption of a military constitution. The next gurt, Govind Rai, son of Tegh Bahadur, after passing some years in retirement and study, came forth a vigorous and enthusiastic leader, with high aims. He set himself to the task of organizing the Sikhs of the Punjab, now becoming formidable from their number, their phy- sique, and their warlike propensities. The first adherents of Nanak, the founder of the sect, had been mostly Jats and Khattris. Many Were men of great stature and powerful frame. As Sikhs they acquired a distinctive appearance by giving up the Hindu prac- tice of shaving the head and face. They were forbidden the use of tobacco; and their discipline in other things

prepared them for being indeed the soldiers they looked. Govind Rédi adopted the designation " Singh" (lion), and this became the distinctive addition to the names of all Sikhs. He called the whole body the "khalsa" or free, and he devised a rite of initiation called the "pahal." He compiled a supplement to the Granth, containing instruction suited to the altered coudition of the Sikh people. After the death of Aurangzib in 1707 he accepted the invitation of Bahadur Shah to join him in a campaign against the Mahrattas. At Nadér, on the Godavari, he was murdered in 1708. His prin- cipal associate, Banda, led the Sikhs back to the Punjab and turned

18 arms against the Government. After a long series of fights with the Mogul's troops, during the reigns of Bahadur Shah and Farrukh Siyar, Banda was at length taken in 1716 and put to death.

Mohammed Shah was on the throne of Delhi, much occupied in contests with the Mahrattds, when Nadir Shah invaded India. Nadir's march through the Punjab in the beginning of 1739 met with no great opposition; but the Sikhs kept up a system of desultory plunder both of the invaders and of the people fleeing from them. Lahore submitted and was spared ; and it escaped again, on Nadir's return, after the defeat of Mohammed Shah at Karnal and the massacre at Delhi, by having a large sum of money teady to meet the expected demand. The Punjab offered no more

J11

effective resistance to the invasion in 1747 of Ahmad Shgh Abdali, who kept possession of Afghanistan after Nadir's death, He began by claiming the revenues of the parts of the Punjab and Sind which had been ceded to Nadir. On his third invasion (1752) he obtained possession of Lahore and Multan. The king of Delhi was now also an Ahmad Shah, and the invader was, for distinction, called in India Ahmad Khan Afghan. His son Timur, whom he made governor of Lahore, was driven out by the Mahrattas. Ahmad found frequent visits to the Punjab necessary, and only aftcr the total defeat of the Mahrattds at Panipat in 1761 did he retire finally to Cabul.

For a time the Sikhs seemed to have the prospect of holding the Period Punjab for themselves. Their number and power had greatly of inde-

increased. They had grouped themselves in associations and neighbourhood called " misls," with distinctive names, Power- ful menibers of certain of these clans, representing the aristocracy of the Sikh families, acquired the chiefship of large tracts of country on both sides of the Sutlej, some of which became nearly independ- ent states. Then there were certain members of the Sikh con- fedcration, not enrolling themselves in any clan nor owning any master, who assumed the réle of religious enthusiasts and warriors, and the name "Akali" or immortal. They were the ghazis of Sikhism. They dressed in blue and wore a high-pointed turban on which they carried several chakras of different sizes, their own special weapon. The chakr or chakra is a thin knife-edged ring of flat steel, a severe missile in skilled hands, but not much used. The Sikhs south of the Sutlej enlarged their possessions and made marauding excursions across the Jumna and the Ganges even as far as to Rohilkand. The capital was held by three leading Sikh chiefs, when, in 1797 and the following year, Zaman Shah, grand- son of Ahmad, brought an army with the view of recovering the Punjab, but was recalled both times by troubles at home. He secured Lahore without opposition, and on leaving in 1798 he niade it over to a young Sikh who had attracted his attention and done him good service. This was Ranjit Singh, son of Maha Singh, Ranjit a Jat Sikh who had risen to considerable power, and who died Singh. in 1792. The young ruler of Lahore was soon to make himself master of the whole Punjab, while heavy misfortune was awaiting Zaman Shah himself, who was to find shelter in the Punjab. The dethroned and blinded king was met in 1808 at RAwal Pind{ by Mountstuart Elphinstone when returning from his mission to Shah Shuja at Peshawar. When Ranjit Singh was beginning his career at Lahore the English adventurer George Thomas was trying, with the army he had raised, to carve out a little principality for himself in the Sikh states south of the Sutlej. Ranjit was a man of strong will and immense energy, of no education but of great acutcness in acquiring the knowledge that would be of use to him. He soon began to bring all the separate bodies of Sikhs under his control, and to acquire authority over others besides the Sikhs. When he endeavoured to include the Sikh states south of the Sutlej within his jurisdiction, the heads of these states—chiefs of Sirhind and Malwa, as they were called—sought and obtained in 1808 the protection of the British, whose territories had now extended to their neighbourhood. The English were at this time desirous of alliance with Lahore as well as with Cabul, for

protec- tion against supposed Freuch designs on India. A British envoy, Mr Charles Metcalfe, was received by Ranjit at Kasur in 1809 and the alliance was formed. Ranjit steadily strengthened himself and extended his dominions. In 1809 he obtained possession of Kangra, which the Nepalese were besieging. In 1813 he acquired the fort of Attock on the other side of the Punjab ; and the same year he obtained from Shah Shuja, now in his turn a refugee in Lahore, what he coveted as much as territory, the celebrated Koh-i-nir diamond, which had been carried off by Nadir Sh4h from Delhi. In 1818, after some failures in previous years, he captured Multan. Kashmir, which had successfully opposed him several times, was annexed the following year, and likewise the southern part of the country between the Indus and the hills. The Peshawar valley he succeeded in adding four years later, but he found it best to leave an Afghan governor in charge of that troublesome district. These trans-Indus and other outlying tracts were left very much to themselves, and only received a military visit when revenue was wanted. Peshawar was never really ruled till General Avitabile was sent there in later years. When he was gradually raising his large and powerful army Ranjit received into his service certain French and other officers, who drilled his troops and greatly improved his artillery. He valued these European officers highly, and exerted himself much to retain them. One of them, M. Allard, used to say that, if it was sometimes difficult to get into Ranjit's service, it was more difficult to get out of it. Whilst he relied on these foreigners for military and sometimes also for administrative services, he drew around him a body of native ministers of great ability, of whom the brothers Guldb Singh and Dhian Singh of Jammu were the most influential. (They had another brother, Suchét Singh, less prominent and less at court.) Ranjit maintained friendly relations with the English Government till his death. This was of much importance when, immediately

of kindred pendence.

Years of disorder.

First Sikh war.

Second Sikh war.

Under British rule.

after his death in 1839, the British were putting Shah Shuja back on the throne of Cabul. Ranjit was succeeded by his eldest son Kharrak Singh. He left two reputed sons, Shir Singh and Dhalip Singh, and two adopted sons, Kashmira Singh and Peshaura Singh, named from expeditions on which Ranjit was engaged at the time they were taken into his family. When Kharrak Singh nade Cheit Singh his chief minister in place of the Jamimi brothers, Dhian Singh killed the new minister. And now for a time the history of the Punjab became a history of intrigues and deeds of violence, and of contests for power which, when gained, could not be kept. Kharrak Singh's successor, Nau Nihal Singh, was killed by the fall of a beam from the Roshnai gateway of the Huzuri Bagh at Lahore as he was returning from the deceased king's funeral. Shir Singh succeeded, a man addicted, like Ranjit, to intemperance, and he was soon put out of the way by Ajit Singh Sindhanwala. His son Partab Singh was murdered by Lena Singh Majithia. Ranjit's adopted sons, Peshaura and Kashmara Singh, were also killed. Then caine the turn of the ex-minister Dhian Singh, who was slain by the same hand that had put Shir Singh to death, and which now placed the young Dhalip Singh on the throne. Other assassinations accompanied these chief ones. The leading Sindhanwalas were now all murdered, and with the accession of Dhalip Singh the friends of his mother, the rani, came into power, some of the wise old servants of Ranjit also continuing to hold important offices. Ranjit had left an army of 92,000 infantry, 31,800 cavalry, with 171 garrison guns and 384 field-pieces. It wasa force which could not be held in the feebler grasp of his successors. When one after another of those in nominal power had been assassinated and the treasury plundered, the army, unpaid and unmanageable, demanded to be led into British territory, and had their way. They crossed the Sutlej in December 1845. The battles of Mudki, Firdz-shahr, Baddiwal, and Aliwal were followed by the rout of the Sikh army at Sobraon on 10th February 1846, when they were driven back into the Sutlej with heavy loss, and the British army advanced to Lahore. Of the Sikh guns 256 fell into the hands of the British in these actions on the Sutlej. A treaty was made at Lahore on 9th March with the Sikh darbar, the chiefs and ministry who were to hold the government on behalf of the young maharaja, Dhalip Singh. By this treaty the Jalandar Doab and the hill district of Kangra were ceded to the British,

also the possessions of the maharaja on the left bank of the Sutlej. In addition the Britisli demanded a money payment of £1,500,000. The services of Gulab Singh, raja of Jamnui, to the Lahore state, in procuring the restora- tion of friendly relations with the British, were specially recognized. His independent sovereignty in such lands as might be made over to him was granted. The Sikh Government, unable to pay the whole of the money demand, further ceded, as equivalent for £1,000,000, the hill country between the Bias and the Indus, including Kashmir and Hazara. Gulab Singh was prepared to give the amount in place of which Kashmir was to have become British, and by a separate treaty with him, 16th March 1846, this was arranged. The pay- ment was seventy-five lakhs of Nanakshahi rupees, and Kashmir was added to Gulab Singh's territory. At the urgent request of the darbar a British force was left at Lahore for the protection of the mahdrdaja and the preservation of peace. To restore order and introduce a settled administration a British resident was appointed, who was to guide and control the council of regency, and assistants to the resident were stationed in different parts of the country. Peace was not long preserved. The governor of Multan, Diwan Mulraj, desired to resign. Two English officers sent by the resident to take over charge of the fort were murdered, 19th April 1848, and their escort went over to the diwan. Another of the assistants to the resident, Lieutenant Herbert Edwardes, then in the Dérajat, west of the Indus, hearing of the attack on the two officers, hastened to their assistance. On hearing of their fate he collected a force with which to attack the Multan army while the insurrection was yet local. This he did with signal success. But Multan could not fall before such means as he possessed. The movement spread, the operations widened, and the Sikh and English forces were in the field again. Multan was taken. The severe battle of Chilian- wala on 13th January 1849 left the Sikhs as persistent as after the two terrible days of Firdz-shahr in the previous campaign. And it needed the crushing defeat of Gujrat, 21st February 1849, like Sobraon in 1846, to bring the war to a conclusion, and this time to give the Punjab to England. It was annexed on 2d April 1849. For the government of the new province, including the Jalandar Doab, previously annexed, and the cis-Sutlej states, a board of administration was appointed consisting of three members. In place of this board a chief commissioner was appointed in 1853, aided by a judicial commissioner and a financial commissioner. British troops, European and native, of the regular army

were stationed at the chief cities and other places east of the Indus and at Peshawar. For the rest of the trans-Indus territory there was a special body of native troops called the Pnnjab frontier force, under the orders of the chief commissioner. During the Mutiny campaign of 1857 the Punjab, under Sir John Lawrence as chief cominissioner, was able to send important aid to the force engaged in

the siege of Delhi, while suppressing the disturbances which arose, and meeting the dangers which threatened, within the Punjab itself. In 1858 the Delhi territory, as it was called, west of the Jumna, was transferred from the North-West Provinces to the Punjab. The enlarged province was raised in rank, and on Ist January 1859 the chief commissioner became lieutenant-governor. In place of the judicial conimissioner a chief court was constituted in 1866, The number of judges, at first two, was increased to three in 1869. The number is now (1885) three permanent and two temporary. The form and manner of government are for the most part like those of other British provinces in India, except that the employment, as in the earlier days, of military officers as well as civilians in the civil administration is continued to the present time.

Soon after the annexation of the Punjab Christian missions were begun in the new province by the Church Missionary Society and the American Presbyterian Board. Inconnexion with the English society there are twenty-four ordained English missionaries, four medical and two lay missionaries, and ten native clergy. At Delhi there is a mission of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel and the Cambridge University Mission, Also a large number of English ladies are engaged in teaching native ladies, who by the customs of the country are obliged to remain at home. The number of native Christians in the Punjab is nearly 4000. In 1879 a new diocese, that of Lahore, was constituted, embracing the provinces of Punjab and Sind.

Authorities.—D. Ibbetson, Report on the Punjab Census of 1881; Lu. H. Griffin, Punjaub Chiefs and Rajas of the Punjaub; B. H. Baden Powell, Punjab Products and Punjab Manufactures ; A. Cunningham, Ancient Geography of N. India; J. D. Cunningham, History of the Sikhs; H. Elliot, Historians of India (by Dowson); Martin Honigberger, Thirty-five Years in

the Hast; M. Elphinstone, Caubul; Prinsep, History of the Punjab; H. Lawrence, The Adventurer in the Punjab; Bosworth Sinith, Life of Lord Lawrence; H, Edwardes, A Year on the Punjab Frontier; C. Hiigel, Travels in Kashmir and the Punjab; Victor Jacquemont, Journey in India; George Foster, Journey from Bengal to England; Stanislas Julien, Histoire dela Vie de Hiouen Thsang and Hiouen Thsang, Mémoire sur les Contrées Occidentales ; F. Bernier, Voyages; G. St P. Lawrence, Reminiscences of Forty-five Years in India; D'Anville, Antiquité Géographique de VInde; V. de St Martin,. Géographie du Véda; Lassen, Pentapotamia Indica; R. Clark, Thirty Years of Missionary Work in the Punjab; Calcutta Review, vols, i. and ii.; Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal; Punjab Notes and Queries, & (R. M'L.)*

Ce

PUPPETS. See MaRioNnerres.

PURCELL, Henry (1658-1695), English musical com- poser, was born in 1658 in St Ann's Lane, Old Pye Street, Westminster. His father, Henry Purcell, was a gentle- man of the chapel-royal, and in that capacity sang at the coronation of Charles II. After his father's death in 1664 the boy was placed under the guardianship of his uncle, Thomas Purcell, a man of extraordinary probity and kindness. Through the interest of this affectionate guardian, who was himself a gentleman of His Majesty's chapel, Henry was admitted to the chapel-royal as a chorister, and studied first under Captain Henry Cooke, "master of the children," and afterwards under Pelham Humfrey. He is said to have composed well at nine years old; but the earliest work that can be certainly identified as his is an ode for the king's birthday, written in 1670. After Humfrey's early death in 1674 he con- tinued his studies under Dr Blow. In 1676 he was ap- pointed copyist at Westminster Abbey—not organist, as has sometimes been erroneously stated —and in the same year he composed the music to Dryden's Aurenge-Zebe, and Shadwell's Epsom Wells and The Libertine.' These were followed in 1677 by the music to Mrs Behn's tragedy, Abdelazor, and in 1678 by an overture and masque for Shadwell's new version of Shakespeare's Timon of Athens. The excellence of these compositions is proved by the fact that they contain songs and choruses which never fail to please, even at the present

day. The masque in Zimon of Athens is a masterpiece, and the chorus "In these delightful pleasant groves" in The Libertine is constantly sung with applause by English choral societies. In 1679 he wrote some songs for Playford's Choice Ayres, Songs, and Dvalogues, and also an anthem, the name of which is not known, for the chapel-royal. From a letter written by Thomas Purcell, and still extant, we learn that this anthem was composed for the exceptionally fine voice of the Rev. John Gostling, then at Canterbury, but after-

1 The Libertine was suggested by Tirso de Molina's tale, Zl Bur-

lador de Sevilla, afterwards dramatically treated by Moliére and chosen by Da Ponte as the foundation of Mozart's Don Giovanni.

PU € ht L

wards a gentleman of His Majesty's chapel. Purcell wrote several anthems at different times for this extraordinary voice, a basso profundo, the compass of which is known to have comprised at least two full octaves, from D below the stave to D above it. The dates of very few of these sacred compositions are known ; but one, "They that go down to the sea in ships," though certainly not written until some time after this period, will be best mentioned here. In thankfulness for a providential escape of the king from shipwreck Gostling, who had been of the royal party, put together some verses from the Psalms in the form of an anthem, and requested Purcell to set them to music. The work is a very fine one but very difficult, and contains a passage which traverses the full extent of Gostling's voice, beginning on the upper D and descending two octaves to the lower.

In 1680 Dr Blow, who had been appointed organist of Westminster Abbey in 1669, resigned his office in favour of his pupil; and Purcell, at the age of twenty-two, was placed in one of the most honourable positions an English artist could occupy. He now devoted himself almost entirely to the composition of sacred music, and for six years entirely severed his connexion with the theatre. But during the early part of the year, and in all prob- ability before entering upon the duties of his new office, he had produced two important works for the stage, the music for Lee's Theodosius and D'Urfey's Virtuous Wife. There is also strong evidence that it was in

1680—not, as has been generally represented, in 1675—that he com- posed his opera Dido and neas, a work of far greater significance in the development of art than has generally been supposed, since it forms a very important landmark in the history of English dramatic music. It was written, toa libretto furnished by Nahum Tate, at the request of Josiah Priest, a professor of dancing, who also kept a boarding-school for young gentlewomen, first in Leicester Fields and afterwards at Chelsea. At the time of its pro- duction} the condition of dramatic music in England was very rudimentary indeed,—so much so that the opera, properly so called, cannot fairly be said to have existed even in embryo, though it had long flourished brilliantly in Italy, and was beginning to take firm root in France. No English composer had as yet soared above the songs and choruses introduced into the masques, the comedies, and the tragedies of the period, for the purpose of enliven- ing the performance,—music always of a purely incidental character, and always quite unconnected with the pro- gressive action of the piece. Very different was tlie mixed form of entertainment thus produced from the true musical drama, the invention of which in Italy dated as far back as the closing years of the 16th century. At that period a number of literary and artistic savants—among them Vincenzo Galilei, the father of the astronomer, Jacopo Peri, Giulio Carcini, and the poet Rinuccini—were accustomed to meet in Florence for purposes of discussion at the house of Giovanni Bardi, count of Vernio. Deeply imbued with the principles of the Renaissance, these heated enthusiasts were determined to carry them from the domain of literature into that of music ; and their first dream was the revival of the method of recitation practised by the early Greeks in the tragedies of fEschylus and Sophocles. This, however, was, if only for technical reasons, absolutely impossible. The art was lost for ever; but in seeking to resuscitate it they invented something much more Precious-—dramatic recitative. With this at command the construction of the veritable "dramma per la musica " Was no difficult matter; and in fact Peri actually pro-

' The difficulty in fixing the exact date of its composition arises from a doubt as to whether or not it was performed in Leicester Fields before it was played in the new boarding-school at Chelsea,

duced a true opera, Furidice, which in 1600 was per- formed at Florence in honour of the marriage of Maria de' Medici with Henry IV. of France. Purcell, who had never been in Italy, confesses himself, in the preface to his sonatas, "unskilful in the Italian language," and could never by any chance have heard an Italian opera; but he knew very well what Italian music was, and had not neglected to study it deeply. Yet it is doubtful whether all Italy could at that moment have produced a work so full of inborn genius as Dido and dineas.2 It is a musical drama in the strictest sense of the term, a genuine opera, in which the action is entirely carried on in recitative, without a word of spoken dialogue from beginning to end; and the music is of the most genial character—a veritable inspiration, overflowing with spontaneous melody, and in every respect immensely in advance of its age. It never found its way to the theatre, though it appears to have been very popular among private circles. It is believed to have been extensively copied, but one song only was printed by Purcell's widow in Orpheus Britannicus, and the complete work remained in manuscript until 1840, when it was printed by the Musical Antiquarian Society, under the editorship of Sir George Macfarren. There is a tradition that the part of Anna (erroneously called Belinda), written for an alto voice, was sung by the composer himself.' Should this story be veri- fied, it will tell strongly in favour of the opinion that Purcell really did compose Dido and Eneus at the age of seventeen, 7.e., in 1675; for it is certain that at the corona- tion of James IT. he sang bass.

In 1682 Purcell was appointed organist of the chiayel- royal, vice Edmund Lowe deceased, an office which he was able to hold conjointly with his appointment at West- minster Abbey. For some years after this his pen was busily employed in the production of sacred music, odes addressed to the king and royal family, and other similar works. In 1685 he wrote two of his finest anthems, "T was glad" and 'My heart is inditing," for the coronation of James II. In 1687 he resumed his connexion with the theatre by furnishing the music for Dryden's tragedy Tyrannie Love. It is probable that the public were not at this time prepared for works of so advanced a character as Dido and Aineas ; for, though the young composer's pen was constantly employed in the production of incidental music, overtures, and act tunes for pieces of the period, we find him attempting no more operas based upon the true principles so cordially accepted on the Continent. In

this year also Purcell composed a march and quick-step, which became so popular that Lord Wharton adapted the latter to the fatal verses of Zilibulero; and in January 1688 he composed his anthem "Blessed are they that fear the Lord," by express command of the king. A few inonths later he wrote the music for D'Urfey's play, The Fool's Preferment. In 1690 he wrote the songs for Dryden's version of Shakespeare's Tempest, including "Full fathom five" and "Come unto these yellow sands," and the music for Betterton's Prophetess (afterwards called Dioclesian) and Dryden's Amphitryon; and in 1691 he produced his dramatic masterpiece, Aing Arthur, also written by Dryden, and first published by the Musical Antiquarian Society in

1843,

But Purcell's greatest work is undoubtedly his Te Deum and Jubilate, written for St Cecilia's Day, 1694, the first English Te Deum ever composed with orchestral accompaniments. In this he pressed forward so far in advance of the age that the work was annually performed at St Paul's Cathedral till 1712, after which it was per- formed alternately with Handel's Utrecht Te Deum and Jubilate until 1743, when it finally gave place to Handel's

2 Alessandro Scarlatti was one year younger than Purcell, and pro- duced his first opera, L'Onestd nell' amore, in 1680.

XX, — 15

114

Dettingen Te Deum. Purcell did not long survive the production of this great work. He died at his house in Dean's Yard, Westininster, on 21st November 1695, leaving a widow and three children, the former of whom soon after- wards published a number of his works, including the now famous collection called Orpheus Britannicus,

Besides the operas we have already mentioned, he wrote Don Quixote, Bonduea, The Indian Queen, The Fairy Queen, and others, a vast quantity

of sacred music, and numerous odes, cantatas, and other miscellaneous pieces. (W. 5. R.)

PURCHAS, Samvet (1577-1626), compiler of works on travel and discovery, was born at Thaxted, Essex, in 1577. He was educated at St John's College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. in 1600, and some time afterwards B.D., with which degree he was also admitted at Oxford in 1615. In 1604 he was presented by James I. to the vicarage of Eastwood, Essex, and in 1615 was collated to the rectory of St Martin's, Ludgate, London. He was also chaplain to Abbot, archbishop of Canterbury. Some years before his ecclesiastical duties called him to London Purchas had given over the care of his vicarage to his brother, and spent most of his time in the metropolis in the compilation of his geographical works. In 1613 he pub- lished Purchas, his Pilgrimage or Felations of the World, and the Religions observed in all Ages, which reached a fourth edition, much enlarged, in 1626; in 1619 Purchas, his Pilgrim or Microcosmus, or the Historie of Man , relat- ing the wonders of his Generation, varieties in his Degenera- tion, and necessity of his Regeneration ; and in 1625, in four volumes, Purchas, his Pulgrimes ; or Relation of the World in Sea Voyages and Lande Travels, by Englishmen and others. This last work was intended as a continuation of Hakluyt's Voyages, and was partly founded on MSS. left him by Hakluyt. The fourth edition of the Pilgrimage is usually catalogued as vol. v. of the Pilgrimes, but the two works are quite distinct, and essentially different in character, aS is indeed indicated in the names, the differ- ence being thus explained by Purchas himself: in the Pil- grimage he makes use of his own matter though borrowed, while in the Pilgrimes the authors themselves act their own parts in their own words. He was also the author of the King's Tower and Triumphal Arch of London, a sermon on 2 Sam. xxii. 51, published in 1623. He died in Sep- tember 1626, according to some in a debtor's prison, and although Anthony Wood affirms that he died in his own house there can be no doubt that the publication of his books had involved him in serious money difficulties.

PURGATORY (Purgatorium). The Roman Catholic Church has no more than two declarations of supreme authority on the subject of its distinctive doctrine of purgatory. The first is that of the council of Ferrara- Florence, in which it was defined, as regards the truly penitent who have departed this

life in the love of God before they have made satisfaction for their sins of com- mission and omission by fruits meet for repentance, that their souls are cleansed by purgatorial pains after death, and for their relief from these the suffrages of the living —the sacrifice of the mass, prayers, alms, and other offices of piety—are helpful. The second is that of the council of Trent, which runs as follows :—"Since the Catholic Church, instructed by the Holy Spirit from the sacred writings and the ancient tradition of the fathers, hath taught in holy councils, and lastly in this cecumenical council, that there is a purgatory, and that the souls detained there are assisted by the suffrages of the faithful, but especially by the most acceptable sacrifice of the mass, this holy council commands all bishops to have a diligent care that the sound doctrine of purgatory delivered to us by venerable fathers and sacred councils be believed, maintained, taught, and every- where preached." This decree is to be read in the light

of an earlier canon of the same council, by which it is con- demned as heretical to say that after the reception of the grace of justification the guilt of the penitent sinner is so remitted, and the penalty of eternal punishment so annulled, that no penalty of temporal punishment remains to be paid either in this world or in the future in purgatory before the kingdom of heaven can be opened. Thus the essential point of the doctrine is that Christian souls having any sin upon thein at the moment of death pass into a state of expiatory suffering, in which they can be helped by the prayers and other good works of living be- lievers. And this is all that modern Catholic theologians regard as being de fide. It is hardly necessary to say that the doctrine as popularly held and currently taught is generally much more detailed and explicit. In view of some of these developments, there is on all hands admitted to exist abundant room for the admonition of the council of Trent, when it proceeded to warn the clergy to exclude from popular addresses. all the more difficult and subtle questions relating to the subject, and such as do not tend to edification or make for piety. "They must not allow uncertainties or things which have the appearance of falsity to be given forth or handled, and they are to prohibit as scandalous and offensive such things as minister to curiosity or superstition or savour of filthy lucre. Let the bishops see to it that the prayers of the living—to wit,

the sacri- fices, prayers, alms, and other works of piety which have been wont to be rendered by believers for the departed—are done piously-and devoutly, according to the institutions of the church, and that those which are due by the wills of testators or otherwise be not rendered in a perfunctory manner but diligently and punctually, by priests and other ministers of the church who are bound to this service." Among the details of the doctrine, which have been the subject of much speculation among Catholics, may be specified the questions relating to the locality of purgatory and the nature and duration of its sufferings. On none of these points has anything authoritative been delivered. It is of course conceived of as having some position in space, and as being distinct from heaven, tlie place of eternal blessedness, on the one hand, and from hell, the place of eternal woe, on the other. But any theory as to its exact latitude and longitude (such, for example, as underlies Dante's description) must be regarded as the effort merely of the individual imagination. As regards the nature of its pains, there has been a constant disposition to interpret with strict literality the expressions of Scripture as to the cleansing efficacy of fire, but the possibility of interpreting them metaphorically has never been wholly lost sight of. With respect to their duration, it must be inferred from the whole praxis of indulgences as at present authorized by the church that the pains of purgatory are measurable by years and days; but here also everything is left vague. The thesis of all Protestants, as against the Roman Catholic doctrine of purgatory, is that "the souls of be- lievers are at their death made perfect in holiness and do immediately pass into glory." Scripture authority is claimed on both sides, but the argument, which is a some- what complicated one and depends mainly on the view arrived at as to the Scriptural doctrine of sin and satis- faction, cannot be entered upon here. When the two doctrines are compared in the light of ecclesiastical tra- dition it will be found that neither fully coincides with the opinions somewhat vaguely held by the early fathers, whose view of the intermediate state between death and the resurrection was largely affected by the pre-Christian doctrine of Hades or Sheol. On the one hand, Irenzus (Her., v. 31) regards as heretical the opinion that the souls of the departed do immediately pass into glory; he argues that, as Christ tarried for three days 'in the lower

a

parts of the earth," so must the souls of His disciples also go away into the invisible place allotted them by God, and there remain until the resurrection, when, receiving their bodies and rising as their Lord arose, they shall come into heaven and into the presence of God. On the other hand, it is impossible to point out in any writing of the first four centuries any passage which describes the state of any of the faithful departed as one of acute suffer- ing, although Tertullian's belief that martyrs had the exceptional privilege of being taken to " paradise" at once clearly shows that for ordinary Christians the state after death was regarded rather as one of expectancy than of enjoyment. Still less would it be possible to show that the intermediate state was regarded by them as one in which satisfaction was made for sin. Origen's doctrine of Tip kaGépovov is intimately connected with his doctrine of apokatastasis ; in his view the application of purgatorial fire was not to take place until the last judgment, nor was its efficacy to be limited to those who had closed their life on earth as believers in Christ. In a different connexion Augustine, expounding 1] Cor. iii. 15 as referring more immediately to the purification of Christians by means of the trials of the present life, goes on to speak of it asa supposable thing that the process might be continued after death, but without committing himself to the belief ("incredibile non est, et utrum ita sit queri potest"). Gregory the Great was the first to formulate in express terms the doctrine which afterwards became that of the whole Roman obedience "de quibusdam levibus culpis esse ante judicium purgatorius ignis credendus est." Such utterances as this were never accepted by the Greek Church, which in its doctrine of the intermediate state still occupies as nearly as possible the standpoint of the ante-Nicene fathers.

PURI or Poorey, a district of British India in the Orissa division of the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, lying between 19° 28' and 20° 16' N. lat. and 85° 0' and 86° 28' E. long., with an area of 2472 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by the native states of Banki and Athgarh, on the E. and N.E. by Cuttack district, on the S. by the Bay of Bengal, and on the W. by the Ganjam district of the Madras presidency and by the tributary state of Rampur. For the most part the country is flat, the only mountains being a low range which, rising in the west, runs south-east in an irregular line

towards the Chilka Lake, and forms a water-parting between the district and the valley of the Mahanadi. The middle and eastern divisions of the district, forming the south-western part of the Mahanadi delta, consist entirely of alluvial plains, watered by a network of channels through which the most southerly branch of that river, the Koyakhai, finds its way into the sea. The principal rivers in Puri are the Bhargavi, the Daya, and the N un, all of which flow into the Chilka Lake and are navigable by large boats during the rainy season, when the waters come down in tremendous floods, bursting the banks and carrying everything before them. The chief lakes are the Sar and the Chilka, the former, a backwater of the Bhargavi, being 4 miles long by 2 broad. The Chilka Lake is one of the largest in India; its length is 44 miles, and its breadth in some parts 20 miles. It is separated from the sea only by a narrow strip of sand. The lake is saline and everywhere very shallow, its mean depth ranging from 3 to 5 feet. Puri district is rich in historical remains, from the primitive rock-hewn caves of Buddhism—the earliest relics of Indian architecture—to the medieval sun temple at Kanarak and the world-renowned shrine of Jagannath. The chief roads in the district are the Cal- cutta and Madras trunk road and the pilgrim road from Cuttack to Puri. The climate of Puri is dry and healthy, and the average rainfall is 55-80 inches.

The census of 1881 returned the population of Puri district at 888,487 (446,609 males and 441,878 females). By religion 873,664 were returned as Hindus, 14,003 as Mohammedans, and 819 as Christians. The only town with a population excceding 5000 is Puri (g.v.). Puri is strictly a rice-growing tract, but pulses, jute, hemp, flax, and oil-seeds are also produced, while among its mis- ccllaneous crops are tobacco, cotton, sugar-cane, and turmeric. The principal manufactures are salt, earthenware, and brass and _bell- metal utensils and ornaments. In 1882-83 the total revenue of the district amounted to £79,498, towards which the land-tax contri- buted £60,255.

Puri first came under British administration in 1803. The only political cvents in its history since that date have been the rebel- lion of the maharaja of Khurda in 1804 and the rising of the paiks or peasant militia in

1817-18. Since then the country has been gradually restored to order and tranquillity.

PURI or Poorss, chief town of the above district, and commonly known as Jagannath, is situated on the Orissa coast in 19° 48’ N. lat. and 85° 51’ E. long. Its chief interest is centred in the sacred shrine of Jagannath, a temple which dates from the 12th century, and which lies at the southern extremity of the town. In 1881 the popu- lation of Puri was 22,095 (males 11,769, females 10,326), of whom 21,913 were Mohammedans.

PURIM (8), a feast of the later Jews, celebrated in honour of the deliverance of the nation from the schemes of Haman recorded in the book of Esther. The historical value of this record has been discussed in the article EstHER, where also mention is made of the now very prevalent opinion that the feast is an adaptation of a Persian festival. The derivation of the name “ Purim,” as well as the thing, from the Persian /urdigan (Pordigin, Pordiyan) has been raised above the level of a mere guess by Lagarde, who has shown that the readings ¢ovpyaa and dovpd.a in one of the Greek recensions of Esther point with great prob- ability to a form qovpdae (NTN) instead of Purim, exactly corresponding with the Persian word (Ges. Abd, p. 164; Armen, Stud., § 1339). The feast falls on the 14th and 15th of Adar, and is, in accordance with Esther ix. 22, of a joyous character, but quite secular in tone, with a great deal of hard drinking, the only quasi-religious features being the reading in the synagogue of the book of Esther and the section about Amalek, Exod. xvii. 8 sy. This cele- bration appears to have made its way among the Jews only gradually ; according to Josephus, however, it was generally observed in his day in all parts of the Jewish world. On the other hand, the preparatory fast on the 13th of Adar, which is based on Esther ix. 31, cannot have been observed in Palestine till a later date, for in the Megillath Ta‘anith (after the death of Trajan), Adar 13, ‘the day of Nicanor,” is still one of the days on which fasting is forbidden.

PURITANS. See Encianp, Cuurcn oF, vol. viii. p. 376 sg.; INDEPENDENTS, vol. xii. p. 726 sg.; and PRESBY- TERIANISM.

PURNIAH, a district of British India in the Bhagalpur division of the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, occupy- ing an area of 4956 square

miles, is situated between 25° 15’ and 26° 37’ N. lat. and 87° and 88° 33’ E. long. On the N. it is bounded by the state of Nepal and the district of Darjiling, on the E. by the Jalpaiguri, Dinaj- pur, and Maldah districts, on the W. by Bhagalpur, and on the 8. by the Ganges, which separates it from the districts of Bhagalpur and the Santal Parganas. Purniah is a level depressed tract of country, but for the most part of a rich loamy soil of alluvial formation ; it is traversed by several streams, which flow from the Himalayas lying to the north and afford great advantages of irrigation and water carriage, and is well cultivated; but in the west the soil is thickly covered with sand deposited by the Kusi river, which rises in the Nepal mountains and flows southwards to the Ganges. ‘The country is destitute of anything that can be called forest, but much scrub jungle is found in the

neighbourhood of the more swampy tracts. Among other

rivers of the district is the Mahananda, which rises in the

mountains of Sikkim and flows through the east of Purniah into Maldah. Wild animals are not so numerous as in the neighbouring districts, but the tiger is found in all parts of Purniah, particularly along the banks and among the sandy islands of the Kusi, and also in the scrub jungle that runs along the north of the district. The climate of Purniah is of an intermediate character ; the average rain- fall is 67 inches, and the mean temperature is about 76°°8.

The staple product of Purniah is rice, but jute and tobacco are also cultivated to a considerable extent. Its manufactures include indigo, cottons, woollens, and silks, but the chief is that of indigo, which is mostly carried on in the south of the district. In 1882-83 the gross revenue amounted to £179,750, nearly two-thirds (£120,541) being derived from the land. By the census of 1881 the population numbered 1,848,687 (937,080 males, 911,607 females). The majority of the people are Hindus (1,076,589 in 1881) ; of Mohammedans in the same year there were 771,130, and of Christians only 327. PuRN1AH, the capital, is the only town in the district with a population exceeding 10,000.

This district was conquered by the Mohammedans in the 13th century, but it was not until four centuries later that its value was realized. During the 17th century the fronticr was considerably extended ; the country, however, remained in a state of anarchy until 1770, when it was governed by an English official with the title of "superintendent." Of late years the district has made considerable progress, and under all departments of loca] adminis- tration there has been stcady improvement.

PURNIAH, chief town and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated on the east bank of the river Saura, in 25° 46' N. lat. and 87° 30' E. long. It contains a population, according to the census of 1881, of 15,016. The town is neat and well-built, but very un- healthy ; it is distant 283 miles north-west of Calcutta.

PURPLE (rop¢r'pa), the name given by the ancients to a dye derived from various species of Murex and Purpura. '(See Morzusea, vol. xvi. p. 648 sg. ; DyErne, vol. vii. p. 571; and Pua@nicta, vol. xviii. p. 804.) For the modern sources of the various shades of this colour, see DYEING, vol. vii. p. 579.

PURPURA, a disease characterized by the occurrence of purple-coloured spots upon the surface of the body, due to extravasations of blood in the skin, accompanied occasionally with hemorrhages from mucous membranes. Difference of opinion has prevailed among physicians as to whether these symptoms are to be regarded as con- stituting a disease per se, since they are frequently seen in connexion with various morbid conditions. Thus in persons suffering from such diseases as rheumatism, phthisis, heart disease, cancer, Bright's disease, jaundice, as well as from certain of the infectious fevers, extravasa- tions of the kind above-mentioned are not unfrequently present. But the term "purpura" is, strictly speaking, applicable only to those instances where the symptoms exist. apart from any antecedent disease. In such cases the complaint is usually ushered in by lassitude and feverishness. This is soon followed by the appearance on the surface of the body of the characteristic spots in the form of small red points scattered over the skin of the limbs and trunk. They are not raised above the surface, and they do not disappear on pressure. Their colour soon becomes deep purple or nearly black ; but after a few days they undergo the changes which are observed in the case of an

ordinary bruise, passing to a green and yellow hue and finally disappearing. When of minute size they are termed 'petechie" or "stigmata," when somewhat larger "vibices," and when in patches of considerable size '"'ecchymoses." They may come out in fresh crops over a lengthened period.

The form of the disease above described is that known as 'purpura simplex." A more serious form of the malady is that to which the term " purpura heemorrhagica " is applied.

PUR—PUS

Here, in addition to the phenomena already mentioned as affecting the skin, there is a tendency to the occurrence of hemorrhage from mucous surfaces, especially from the nose, but also from the mouth, lungs, stomach, bowels, kidneys, &c., sometimes in large and dangerous amount. Great physical prostration is apt to attend this form of the disease, and a fatal result sometimes follows the suc- cessive hemorrhages, or is suddenly precipitated by the occurrence of an extravasation of blood into the brain.

The causes of purpura are not well understood. The condition of the blood has been frequently investigated, but no alteration in its composition detected. The view most commonly held is that the disease depends on an abnormal fragility of the minute blood-vessels owing to their mal-nutrition. It would seem sometimes to arise in persons enjoying perfect health ; but in a large proportion of instances it shows itself among those who have been exposed to privation or insanitary conditions, or whose health has become lowered. Young persons suffer more frequently than adults, and repeated attacks may occur. Purpura has some points of resemblance to scurvy, but a clear distinction both as to causation and symptoms can be established between the two diseases.

The treatment will bear reference to any causes which may be discovered as associated with the onset of the disease, such as unfavourable hygienic conditions, and nutritive defects should be rectified by suitable diet. The various preparations of iron seem to be the best medicinal remedies in this ailment, while more direct astringents, such as gallic acid, ergot of rye,

turpentine, or acetate of lead, will in addition be called for in severe cases and especially when hemorrhage occurs.

PURSLANE, the vernacular equivalent of the botanical genus Portulaca. The species are fleshy annuals of small dimensions, with prostrate stems and entire leaves; the flowers are small and inconspicuous, or in some species brilliantly coloured, regular, with two sepals, five petals, seven to twenty stamens, an inferior ovary, with a style divided into from three to eight branches and ripening into a pod which opens by a transverse chink. J. oleracea is a native of India, which has been introduced into Europe as a salad plant, and in some countries has spread to such an extent as to become a noxious weed. This is the case in certain parts of the United States, where the evil qualities of "pussly" have become proverbial. Like many other: succulent plants, its juice is cooling and is used in tropical countries as a refrigerant in fever, while the bruised leaves are employed as an application in cases of local inflamma- tion. Some of the species, such as P. grandiflora and its varieties, are grown in gardens on rock-work owing to the great beauty and deep colouring of their flowers, the short duration of individual blossoms being compensated for by the abundance with which they are produced.

PUSEY, Epwarp BovuvertEe (1800-1882), originally Edward Bouverie, was born near Oxford in 1800. His family, which was of Huguenot origin, became through a marriage connexion lords of the manor of Pusey, a small Berkshire village near Oxford, and from it took their name a few years after Edward Bouverie's birth. In 1818 he became a commoner of Christ Church, Oxford, and after gaining high university distinctions was elected in 1824 to a fellowship at Oriel College. He thus became a member of a society which already contained some of the ablest of his contemporaries,—among them J. H. Newman and John Keble. But for several years his intercourse with them seems to have been slight. He divided his time between his country home and Germany, and occupied himself with the study of Oriental languages and of German theology. His first work, published in 1828, was a vindi- cation of the latter from a strong attack which had been

eo

PUSS i

made upon it by one of the leaders of the nascent High- Church party, H. J. Rose. His work, which is entitled

An Historical Enquiry into the probable Causes of the Rational Character lately predominant in the Theology of

Germany, is an impartial and clear summary of the history of German theology since the Reformation. In the same year (1828) the duke of Wellington appointed him to the

regius professorship of Hebrew with the attached canonry

of Christ Church, which he held for the rest of his life. Mr Rose's somewhat intemperate reply to him led to the

publication in 1830 of a second part of his Historical Enquiry, which is not less liberal in its tone than the pre-

vious part. But in the years which immediately followed

the current of his thoughts began to set in another direc-

tion. The revolt against individualism had begun, and he was attracted to its standard. By the end of 1833 "he showed a disposition to make common cause" with those who had already begun to issue the Zracts Jor the Times. "He was not, however, fully associated in the

movement till 1835 and 1836, when he published his

tract on baptism and started the Library of the Fathers" (Cardinal Newman's Apologia, p. 136). The real work of his life then began. He became a close student of the fathers and of that school of Anglican divines who had continued, or revived, in the 17th century the main tradi- tions of pre-Reformation teaching. In ten years after his first adhesion to the movement he had become, with his almost boundless capacity for accumulating information, saturated with patristic and " Anglo-Catholic " divinity ; and a sermon which he preached before the university in 1843, The Holy Eucharist a Comfort to the Penitent, so startled the authorities by

the re-statement of doctrines which, though well known to ecclesiastical antiquaries, had faded from the common view, that by the exercise of an authority which, however legitimate, was almost obsolete he was suspended for three years from the func- tion of preaching. The immediate effect of his suspension was the sale of 18,000 copies of the condemned sermon : its permanent effect was to make Pusey for the next quarter of a century the most influential person in the Church of England. The movement, in the origination of which he had had no share, came to bear his name eit was popularly known as Puseyism and its adherents as Puseyites. His activity, both public and private, as leader of the movement was enormous, He was not only on the stage but also behind the scenes of every important controversy, whether theological or academical. In the Gorham controversy of 1850, in the question of Oxford reform in 1854, in the prosecution of some of the writers of Essays and Reviews, especially of Professor Jowett, in 1863, in the question as to the reform of the marriage laws from 1849 to the end of his life, in the revived con- troversy as to the meaning of everlasting punishment in 1877, he was always busy with articles, letters, treatises, and sermons. The occasions on which, in his turn, he preached before his university were all memorable; and Some of the sermons were manifestoes which mark distinct stages in the history of the party of which he was the leader. The practice of confession in the Church of Eng- land practically dates from his two sermons on The Entire Absolution of the Penitent, in 1846, in which the revival of high sacramental doctrine is complemented by the advocacy of a revival of the penitential system which Medieval theologians had appended to it. The sermon on The Rule of Faith as maimtained by the Fathers and by the Church of England, in 1851, stemmed the current of Secessions to Rome after the Gorham judgment, which had Seemed to show that on an important point of doginatic theology the Church of England had no definite doctrine. The Sermon on Zhe Presence of Christ in the Hi oly Eucharist,

in 1853, first formulated the doctrine round' which almost all the subsequent theology of his followers has revolved, and which has revolutionized the current practices of Anglican worship. And the last university sermon which he composed, and which he was too ill to deliver

himself, Unscience, not Science, adverse to Faith, in 1878, rendered not only to his party but to religion in general the signal service of abandoning the old quarrel between theology and science, as to the manner in which the world was created, by admitting the possibility of evolution. Of his larger works the most important are his two books on the Eucharist—The Doctrine of the Real Presence (consisting of notes on his university sermon of 1853), published in 1855, and The Real Presence… the Doctrine of the English Church, published in 1857 ; Daniel the Prophet, in which he endeavours with great skill to maintain the traditional date of that book; The Minor Prophets, with Commentary, which forms his chief contribution to the study of which he was the professor; and the Eirenicon, in which he endeavoured to find, for those who accepted his premises, a basis of union between the Church of England and the Church of Rome. In 1836 he joined Newman, Keble, and Marriott in editing a series of translations from the fathers entitled A Library of Fathers of the Holy Catholic Church anterior to the Division of Hast and West, and contributed to it a revised translation of St Augustine's Confessions and several valuable prefaces ; the series was accompanied by a translation of the Catena Aurea of Thomas Aquinas, and was followed by an edition of some of the texts which had been translated. He also edited, with suitable omissions, several books of devotion by Roman Catholic writers, such as Avrillon and Scupoli.

In private life his habits were simple almost to austerity.

"He had few personal friends, and rarely mingled in gen-

eral society ; though bitter to opponents, he was gentle to those who knew him, and his munificent charities gave him a warm place in the hearts of many to whom he was personally unknown. In his domestic life he had some severe trials: his wife died, after eleven years of married life, in 1839 ; his only son, who was a scholar like-minded with himself, who had shared many of his literary labours, and who had edited an excellent edition of St Cyril's coin- mentary on the minor prophets, died in 1880, after many years of great bodily affliction. From that time Pusey was seen by only a few persons. His own bodily infirini- ties increased, and on 16th September 1882, after a short illness, he died a painless death. He was buried at Oxford in the cathedral of which he had been for fifty- four years a canon.

His friends devised for him after his death a singular memorial : they purchased his library, and bought for it a house in Oxford which they endowed with sufficient funds to maintain three librarians, who were charged with the duty of endeavouring to perpetuate in the university the memory of the principles which he taught.

His name will be chiefly remembered as the representative of a great religious movement which, whatever may be its ultimate issue, has carried with it no small part of the religious life of England in the latter half of the 19th century. His chief characteristic was an almost unbounded capacity for taking pains. His chief influence was that of a preacher and a spiritual adviser. His Parish Sermons reproduce the substance of patristic homilies in the massive style of the Caroline divines. His correspondence as a spiritual adviser was enornious ; his deserved reputation for piety and for solidity of character made him the chosen confessor to whom large numbers of men and women unburdened their doubts and their sins, But if he be estimated apart from his position as the head of a great party, it must be considered that he was more a theological antiquary than a theologian. He exhumed many forgotten theories and sup- ported them by a large number of quotations from ancient writers ; but the heterogencous inasses of information which he accumulated require a sifting which often leaves but a scanty residuum, and, however valuable to advanced scholars, cannot safely be commended,

to learners. Whatever he wrote was relative to the controversies of his time, and as a controversialist he holds a place which is unique among his contemporaries. He had an almost unrivalled power of massing his evidence, of selecting from an author just so much as was pertinent to the point under discussion, and of ignor- ing or depreciating statements which were at variance with the views which he advocated. Asa party leader he combined great enthusiasm with indefatigable energy and tenacity of purpose ; he chose his positions beforehand with great skill, and never after- wards abandoned them. But he does not seem to have had any great logical power: he builds elaborate arguments upon words of shifting connotation, such as “faith” and “church,” and slides unconsciously fron.

one meaning to another. Nor is there any evidence that he ever faced the historical difficulties which the position of the Church of England presents from the Catholic point of view, and which ultimately led to Newman's secession. He lived in Christian antiquity, and his arguments seldom touched any but sympathetic natures. Unlike Newman, who appealed to the cul- tured intellect of his time, he never caught the modern spirit. The result was that after Newman's departure the party of which Pusey was the head never made a single convert of mark. The intellect of Oxford and of England drifted away from it ; and, in spite of the eloquence of some of its advocates, " Puseyism" does not now number among its adherents any one who exercises an appreciable influence upon the intellectual life of England.

In fact Pusey survived the system which had borne his name. His followers went beyond him, or away from him, in two direc- tions. On the one hand, his revival of the medieval doctrine of the Real Presence, coinciding as it did with the revival of a taste for medieval art, naturally led to a revival of the medieval cere- inonial of worship. With this revival of ceremonial Pusey had little sympathy: he at first protested against it (in a university sermon in 1859); and, though he came to defend those who were accused of breaking the law in their practice of it, he did so on the express ground that their practice was alien to his own. But this revival of ceremonial in its various degrees is now the chief external characteristic of the movement of which he was the leader ; and "Ritualist " has thrust ' Puseyite" aside as the designation of those who hold the doctrines for which he mainly contended. On the other hand, the pivot of his teaching was the appeal to primitive antiquity. It was an appeal which had considerable force as against the vapid theology of the early part of the century, and as acriterion of the claims of Catholicism. But it lost its force, and his followers came to substitute for it an appeal to the prin- ciples of an @ priori philosophy, some of which were borrowed from Thomism and some, though at second hand, from Hegelian- ism. Nor is it probable that Puseyism will revive again. On the one hand, an appeal to primitive times which is divorced, as was Pusey's appeal, from the history of those times must necessarily fail in an age in which the spirit of historical inquiry is abroad ; on the other hand, however excellent the maxim may be which Pusey put in the forefront of his arguments, Qwod semper, quod ubique, quod ab omnibus, yet, when

limited, as Pusey limited it, to the statements of particular writers and the current beliefs of particular ages, it becomes a mere paradox and ccases to afford a logical basis for any system of doctrine. (E. HA.)

PUSHKIN. See PousHKy.

PUSHTU. See AFGHANISTAN, vol. 1. p. 238.

PUSTULE, MALIGNANT, a contagious disease com- municated to man from certain animals (especially cattle, sheep, and horses) suffering from splenic fever. This malady will be referred to under WooLsorTER's DISEASE, of which it forms a variety.

PUTEOLI. See Pozzvott.

PUTNEY, a suburb of London in the county of Surrey, is situated on the right bank of the Thames, about 8 miles above London Bridge by the river and 44 miles west of Hyde Park Corner by road. The picturesque old timber bridge connecting it with Fulham on the left bank of the river, and erected in 1729, is superseded by a structure of iron and granite. Putney is the headquarters of London rowing and the starting-point for most important boat-races. It consists chiefly of the old-fashioned High Street leading to Putney Common, and various streets of villas and houses inhabited by the middle classes. The church of St Mary near the bridge was rebuilt in 1836, with the exception of the picturesque old tower. Among the benevolent institutions are the almshouses of the Holy Trinity, founded by Sir Abraham Dawes in the reign of Charles II. ; the waterman's school, founded in 1684, for

the education of watermen's sons; and the royal hospital for incurables. To the south-west of the town is Putney Heath, 400 acres in extent, formerly a great resort of highwaymen and duellists. Putney is included within the metropolitan area. The population of the registration sub-district (area, 2235 acres) in 1871 was 9439, and in 1881 it was 13,235.

Putney occurs in Domesday as "Putelei," and subsequently appears as " Puttenheth" and " Pottenheth," gradually contracted into "Putney." The ferry was in early times of considerable importance. During the Parliamentary wars the heath was fre- quently occupied by troops, the headquarters of the generals being in the village. Putney was the birthplace of Thomas Cromwell, earl of Essex, and of Gibbon the historian.

oe . See FERMENTATION, vol. ix. pp. SU lsh

PUTTY is a kind of cement composed of fine powdered chalk intimately mixed with linseed oil, either boiled or raw, to the consistency of a tough dough. It is principally used by glaziers for bedding and fixing sheets of glass in windows and other frames, by joiners and painters for filling up nail-holes and other inequalities in the surface of wood-work, and by masons for bedding ashlar-work. The oxidation of the oil gradually hardens putty into a very dense adherent mass. When putty is required to dry quickly, boiled oil and sometimes litharge and other driers are used, " Putty powder" or "'polisher's putty " is oxide of tin in a state of fine division used for the polishing of glass, hard metals, granite, and similar substances.

PUY, Lz, or more precisely L—e Poy EN VEwAyY, chief town of the department of Haute-Loire, France, 352 miles from Paris by rail and 270 in a direct line, rises in the form of an amphitheatre at a height of 2050 feet above sea-level upon Mont Anis, the hill that divides the left bank of the Dolézon from the right bank of the Borne (a rapid stream which joins the Loire 3 miles below). From the new town, which lies east and west in the valley of the Dolézon, the traveller ascends the old feudal and ecclesiastical town through narrow steep streets, paved with slippery pebbles of lava, to the cathedral commanded by the fantastic pinnacle of Mont Corneille. Mont Cor- neille, which is 433 feet above the Place de Breuil (in the lower town), is a steep rock of volcanic breccia, sur- mounted by a colossal iron statue of the Virgin (53 feet high, standing on a pedestal 23 feet high), cast after a model by Bonassieux out of 213 guns taken at Sebastopol. The monument is composed of eighty parts fitted together and weighs 984 tons. Another statue, that of a bishop of Puy, also sculptured by Bonassieux, faces that of the Virgin. From the platform of Mont Corneille a mag- nificent panoramic view is obtained of the town, and of the volcanic mountains, which make this region one of the most interesting parts of France. The Romanesque cathedral (Notre Dame), dating from the 6th to the 12th century, has a particoloured facade of white sandstone and black volcanic breccia, which is reached by a flight of sixty steps, and consists of three tiers, the lowest composed of three high arcades opening into the porch beneath the nave of the church; above are three windows lighting the nave ; and these in turn are surmounted by three gables, two of which, those to the right and the left,

are of open work. Two side porches lead to the cathedral by the transept The bell-tower (184 feet), which rises behind the choir in

seven stories, is one of the most beautiful examples of the –

Romanesque transition period. The bays of the nave are covered in by octagonal cupolas ; the central cupola forms a lantern. The choir and transepts are barrel-vaulted. The cathedral has mural paintings of the 12th and 13th centuries, an open-work Romanesque screen surrounding the sanctuary, and a manuscript Bible belonging to the 9th century. The cloister, to the north of the choir, is striking

owing to its variously-coloured materials and elegant shafts ; Viollet le Duc considers one of its galleries to belong to the oldest known type of cathedral cloister (8th and 9th centuries). Connected with the cloister are remains of fortifications of the 13th century, by which it was sepa- rated from the rest of the city. Near the cathedral the baptistery of St John (4th century), built on the founda- tions of a Roman building, is surrounded by walls and numerous remains of the period, partly uncovered by recent excavations. The church of St Lawrence (14th century) contains the remains of Du Guesclin. Le Puy possesses fragmentary remains of its old line of fortifications, among them a machicolated tower, which has been restored, and a few curious old houses dating from the 12th to the 17th century. Of the modern monuments the statue of La Fayette and a fountain in the Place de Breuil, executed in marble, bronze, and syenite, may be specially mentioned. The museum, named after Crozatier, a native metal-worker to whose munificence it principally owes its existence, con- tains antiquities, engravings, a collection of lace, and ethno- graphical and natural history collections. Among the curiosities of Puy should be noted the church of St Michel d'Aiguille, beside the gate of the town, perched on an isolated rock like Mont Corneille, the top of which is reached by a staircase of 271 steps. The church dates from the end of the 10th century and its chancel is still older. 'The steeple is of the same type as that of the cathe- dral. Three miles from Puy are the ruins of the Chateau de Polignac, one of the most

important feudal strongholds of France. The population of Puy in 1881 was 18,567. The trade is chiefly in cattle, woollens, grains, and vege- tables. The principal manufacture is that of laces and blondes (in woollen, linen, cotton, silk, gold, and silver threads), which is carried on by 130,000 workwomen in the neighbourhood, the yearly turnover being £1,000,000. The town is connected by rail with St Etienne and Lyons, and also with Brioude on the line from Clermont-Ferrand to Nimes.

It isnot known whether Le Puy existed previously to the Roman invasion. Towards the end of the 4th or beginning of the 5th century it became the capital of the country of the Vellavi, at which period the bishopric, originally at Revession, now St Paulien, was transferred hither. Gregory of Tours speaks of it by the name of Anicium, because a chapel "ad Deum" had been built on the mountain, whence the name of Mont Adidon or Ani, which it still retains. In the 10th century it was called Podium Sancte Marie, whence Le Puy. In the Middle Ages there was a double enclosure, one for the cloister, the other for the town. The sanctuary of Notre Dame was much frequented by pilgrims, and the city grew famous and populous. Rivalries between the bishops (who held directly of the see of Rome) and the lords of Polignac, revolts of the town against the royal authority, and the encroachments of the feudal superiors on municipal prerogatives often disturbed the qniet of the town. The Saracens in the 8th century, the Routiers in the 12th, the English in the 14th, the Burgundians in the 15th, suc- cessively ravaged the neighbourhood. Le Puy sent the flower of its chivalry to the crusades in 1096, and Raymond d'Aiguille, called d'Agiles, one of its sons, was their historian. Many councils and various assemblies of the states of Languedoc met within its walls ; popes and sovereigns, among the latter Charlemagne and Francis I, visited its sanctuary. Pestilence and the religious wars put an end to its prosperity. Long occupied by the Leaguers, it did not submit to Henry JV. until many years after his accession.

PUY DE DOME, a department of central France, four- fifths of which belonged to Basse-Auvergne, one-sixth to Bourbonnais, and the remainder to Forez (Lyonnais), lies between 45° 17' and 46° 16' N. lat. and 2° 23' and 4° E, long. It is bounded on the N. by Allier, on the E. by Loire, on the S. by Haute-Loire and Cantal, and on the W. by Corréze and Creuse. The chief

town, Clermont- Ferrand, is 217 miles south of Paris in a direct line; and the department takes its name from a volcanic cone (4800 feet) which overlooks it. A meteorological observatory has stood on the summit, on the site of an old Roman temple, since 1876. The highest point of the department,

the Puy de Sancy (6188 feet), is also the most elevated peak of central France ; it commands the group of the vol- canic Monts Dore, so remarkable for their rocky corries, their erosion valleys, their trap dykes and orgues of basalt, their lakes sleeping in the depths of ancient craters or confined in the valleys by streams of lava, and their wide plains of pasture-land. The Puy de Sancy, forming part of the watershed, gives rise on its northern slope to the Dordogne, and on the east to the Couze, a sub-tributary of the Loire, through the Allier. The Monts Dore are joined to the mountains of Cantal by the non-volcanic group of the Cézallier, of which the highest peak, the Luguet (5101 feet), rises on the confines of Puy de Déme and Cantal. On the north the Monts Dore are continued by a plateau of the mean height of from 3000 to 3500 feet, upon which are seen sixty cones raised by volcanic outbursts in former times. These are the Monts Dome, which extend from south to north as far as Riom, the most remarkable being the Puy de Déme and the Puy de Pariou, the latter having a crater more than 300 feet in depth. To the east of the department, along the confines of Loire, are the Monts du Forez, rising to 5380 feet and still in part crowned with forests. Between these mountains and the Domes extends the fertile plain of Limagne. The drainage of Puy de Dome is divided between the Loire, by its affluents the Allier and the Cher, and the Gironde, by the Dordogne. The Allier traverses the department from south to north, receiving on its right the Dore, which falls into the Allier at the northern boundary and lowest level of the depart- ment (879 feet); on its left are the Alagnon from the Cantal, the two Couzes from the Luguet and the Monts Dore, and the Sioule, the most important of all, which drains the north-west slopes of the Monts Dore and Déme, and joins the Allier beyond the limits of the department. The Cher forms for a short space the boundary between the departments of Puy de Déme and Creuse, close to that of Allier. The Dordogne, while still scarcely formed, flows past Mont-Dore-les-Bains and

La Bourboule and is lost in a deep valley which divides this department from that of Corréze. None of these streams are navigable, but boats can be used on the Allier during floods. The climate of Puy de Déme is usually very severe, owing to its high level and its distance from the sea; the mildest air is found in the northern valleys, where the elevation is least. During summer the hills about Clermont-Ferrand, exposed to the sun, become all the hotter because their black volcanic soil absorbs its rays. On the mountains from 24 to 36 inches of rain fall in the year, but only half this amount (18 inches) in Limagne, around which the mountains arrest the clouds. Nevertheless the soil of this plain, consisting of alluvial deposits of voleanic origin, and watered by torrents and streams from the mountains, makes it one of the richest regions of France.

Of a total area of 1,964,685 acres 925,146 are arable, 266,226 meadow and grass land, 232,210 under wood, 78,006 under vines, while 397,663 are moorland or coarse pasturage. Out of a total of 566,064 inhabitants 392,177 are engaged in agriculture. Puy de Déme possesses 18,500 horses, 1600 mules, 4850 asses, 16,100 oxen or bulls, 174,000 cows or heifers, 60,500 calves, 309,900 sheep, 90,500 pigs, 22,550 goats, and 25,900 beehives, which in 1881 pro- duced 95 tons of honey aud 38 tons of wax. In 1882 there were produced 369,313 quarters of wheat, 493,134 of rye, 197,241 of barley, 320,138 of oats, 25,172 of buckwheat, 5,172,408 bushels of potatoes, and in 1881 234,504 bushels of dried vegetables, 1,986, 208 bushels of beetroot, 33 tons of tobacco, 1625 tons of hemp, 21 tons of flax, 26,176 bushels of rape-seed, a great quantity of colza oil, and 18,054,052 gallons of wine. The Limagne produces fruits of all kinds—apricots, cherries, pears, apples, and walnuts, and there are also plantations of mulberry trees. The department possesses numerous mineral treasures. The coal-mines, occupying a surface- area of 7660 acres, employ 1381 men, and in 1882 produced 188,234 tons. The most important, at Brassac on the Allier, on the borders of Haute-Loire, employ 1200 or 1500 men (in the two departments). Next come those of St Eloi near the department of Allier, and of

Bourg-Lastic and Messeix on the borders of Corréze. The depart- ment also works peat, asphalt, and bituminous schists. Mines of argentiferous lead employ 640 men and produce 33,695 tons of lead or silver, worth £45,600. The most important mines and foundries are at Pontgibaud on the Sioule. Copper, arsenic, iron, antimony, barium sulphate, alum, manganese, white lead, sulphur, sulphuretted zinc, loadstone, and (of precious stones) amethysts, jacinths, rubies, agates, chalcedonies, opals, are also found in the department. Quarries of porphyry and lava are worked (Volvic with 900 men), as well as marl, limestone, and gypsum. The hot springs of Mont Dore, known in the days of the Romans, contain a mixture of arsenic and iron bicarbonates, and are used especially for affections of the respiratory organs. The waters of La Bour- boule, containing sodium chlorides and bicarbonates, are particularly rich in arsenic, and efficacious against affections of the lymphatic glands, scrofula, diseases of the skin and air-passages, and rheuia- tism. The springs of St Nectaire, containing sodium and iron chlorides and bicarbonates, are efficacious in liver complaints, rheumatism, and gravel. Some of them are petrifying, as the spring of St Allyre at Clermont-Ferrand. The waters of Royat, in use in the time of the Romans, containing sodium and iron chlorides and bicarbonates, sparkling and rich in lithia, are used in cases of anemia, rheumatism, gout, diabetes, and gravel. The waters of Chateauneuf (on the Sioule), also known to the Romans, contain iron bicarbonates and are resorted to for skin diseases. Those of Chatelguyon, like the waters of Carlsbad and Marienbad, are used for disorders of the digestive organs, congestions of the liver, rheumatism, &c. The waters of Chateldon are used for the table. There are other chalybeate waters at St Martial, Beaulieu, Pontgibaud, St Myon, St Maurice, Arlanc, and many other mineral springs of varied character. Manufactures are for the most part grouped around Thiers, which produces a large amount of cheap cutlery, pasteboards (especially adapted for stamps or playing- cards), and leather; 20,000 workmen are thus employed, and the annual turn-over amounts to £1,200,000. The department con- tains important paper- mills, factories for lace and braid (in the mountains), for buntings, and camlets. Those for wool, cotton, and hemp contain 3500 spindles and morc than 400 looms. There are wool-carding works and factories for linens, cloths, and counter- panes,—also silk-mills, tanneries, manufactories for chamois and other leathers, for caoutchouc, important sugar-works, starch-works, manufactures of edible pastes with a reputation

as high as those of Italy, and manufactures of fruit-preserves. The saw-mills and the cheese industry in the mountains complete the list, which includes 201 establishments employing 75,553 persons. The department exports grain, fruits, cattle, wines, cheese, wood, and mineral waters. 'Traffic is carried on over 294 miles of Government roads, 9591 miles of other roads, and 178 miles of railway. The depart- ment is crossed from north to south by the railway from Paris to Nimes, and that of Vichy to Thiers; from west to east by that from Bordeaux to Lyons by Tulle, Clermont-Ferrand, and Thiers, with branches from Eygurande to Largnac and from Vertaison to Billom. Itis skirted on the north-west by the line from Montlucon to Gannat, with a branch line for goods to the mines of St Eloi. Twenty thousand inhabitants of the department, belonging chiefly to the district of Ambert, leave it during winter and find work clsewhere as navvies, chimney-sweeps, pit-sawyers, &c. The de- partment in 1881 contained 566,064 inhabitants and includes five arrondissements—CLERMONT-FERRAND (q.v.), Ambert (town, 3940 inhabitants), Issoire (6137), Riom (9590), Thiers (10,583)—50 can- tons, and 467 communes. It is attached to the bishopric of Cler- mont-Ferrand and to the 13th Army Corps in the same town ; the superior court is at Riom. (G. ME.)

PYAMIA. See Parnonoey (vol. xviii. p. 401) and SURGERY.

PYATIGORSK, a district town and watering-place of Caucasus, Russia, in the government of Terek, 124 miles by rail to the north-west of Vladikavkaz. It owes its origin to its mineral waters, which had long been known to the inhabitants of Caucasus, and even at the begin- ning of the present century attracted many Russians, who used to stay at the Konstantinogorsk fort, 2 miles off. The first buildings at the mineral springs were erected, however, in 1812, and in 1830 the name of Pyatigorsk ("town of the five mountains"), referring to the five summits of the Beshtau, was given to the new settlement. Its subsequent rapid increase was greatly stimulated by the completion of its railway connexion with Rostoff, and it has now nearly 14,000 inhabitants (13,670 in 1882). The town is charmingly situated on a small plateau on the south-western slopes of the Mashuka mountain, by which and the Beshtau it is protected on the north, The

snow-covered summits of the Elburz are seen on the south.

The sulphur springs, about fifteen in number, come from a great depth, from trachytic rocks, and vary in temperature from 72° to 115° Fahr. ; they are used both for drinking and for bathing. Before the opening of the railway the summer patients already numbered thousands and have become more numerous since; but defective accommodation and high prices tend to prevent their further in- crease, notwithstanding the very high esteem in whicli these mineral waters are held by medical authorities, both Russian and West European. The industries of Pyatigorsk are insignificant, but its trade has always had some importance, and it is still visited during its fairs by a few Persian merchants.

PYGMALION is the Greek form of a Phoenician name probably derived from the name of a god, oyp (C.1.5S., par. i. t. i. p. 133). Pygmalion or, as Josephus writes,

Phygmalion, brother of Dido (Elissa), has been spoken of |

in Pua@nicia (vol. xviii. p. 807). Another Pygmalion, son of Cilix and grandson of Agenor, king of Cyprus, is the subject of a famous story. He fell in love with an ivory statue he had made; Aphrodite granted life to the image, and Pygmalion married the miraculously born virgin (Ovid, Metam., x. 2438 sq.).

PYGMIES. The name "pygmy " (Greek rvypaios, from mvyp) means one whose height is measured by the distance between the elbow and the knuckles of an ordinary man, or rather less than an ell. The pygmies appear in Homer (11., iii. 6) as a tiny folk who dwelt by the streams of Ocean in the far southern land whither the cranes fly at the approach of our northern winter. The cranes made war on them and slaughtered them. 'These battles between the pygmies and the cranes are often mentioned by later writers and are frequently represented on vases. Philo- stratus describes a picture of the sleeping Hercules beset by swarms of pygmies, as Gulliver was by the Lilliputians, Aristotle held that the pygimies were a race of little men inhabiting the marshes out of which he supposed the Nile to flow. Other writers localized them in various parts of the world. Ctesias describes at some length a race of pygimies in the heart of India. They were black and

ugly; the tallest of them were only two ells high; their hair and beards were so long that they served them as garments ; they were excellent bowmen, and hunted hares and foxes with hawks, ravens, and eagles; their language and customs were those of the rest of the Indians, and they were very honest ; their cattle were small in proportion. Pygmies are also mentioned in Thrace (where they were called Catizi by the natives, according to Pliny) and in Caria.

_Eustathius speaks of pygmies in the far north, near Thule.

Strabo was inclined to regard them as fabulous ; no trust- worthy person, he says, had seen them. There is, how- ever, a story in Herodotus which would seem to show that the belief in the pygmies originated in well-founded reports of a race of undersized men in the heart of Africa. According to Herodotus (ii. 32), five men of the Nasamon- ians (a Libyan people near the Greater Syrtis) journeyed westward through the desert for many days till they came to a tribe of little black men of a strange speech, by whose city ran a great river flowing from west to east, and in it there were crocodiles ; moreover, there were fruit-bearing trees in that country and great marshes. This story is not improbable ; the river may have been the Niger (Joliba or Quorra) and the people niay have been allied to the Akka, an undersized race discovered within recent years near the equator by Schweinfurth, who thinks that they, as well as the Bushmen of South Africa, are remnants of an abori- ginal population of Africa now becoming extinct.

PYM, Joun (1584-1643), was born at Brymore in Somer- set in 1584. In 1599 he entered Broadgates Hall, now Pembroke College, Oxford, asa gentleman commoner. He is said by Clarendon to have held at a later date an office in the exchequer, in which he no doubt acquired that

a

ns a

P Y fi

familiarity with financial business which afterwards dis- tinguished him. His wife, Anna Hooker, died in 1620, and in the following year he entered parliament for the first time as member for Calne, the statement that he sat in the Addled Parliament being now known to have been erroneous. To the patronage of the earl of Bedford no doubt Pym owed the position which he thus acquired. The use which he made of it was all hisown. He had none of the fire of Eliot's genius, but he early showed himself to be possessed of the two qualities which in combination make a leader of men, a thorough and honest sympathy with

the ideas of the time and a modcration in their applica-

There was more of measured force in him than His powers as a party leader were as

tion. there was in Eliot. yet unsuspected.

Pym's name was first prominently brought forward by his speech of 8th November 1621, directed against the Catholics. He strove to distinguish between an attempt "to punish them for believing and thinking" what they did and the disabling of them from doing "that which they think and believe they ought to do." His remedy was an oath of association to be taken by all loyal Protestants. Those who object to Pym's counsel as divisive must nevertheless acknowledge that there was a singular consistency in his advocacy of it. By organizing the resistance of the majority of Englishmen, he wished to baffle parties which might be dangerous by their organization or by the assist- ance which they might receive from abroad.

After the dissolution Pym was confined for three months in his house in London. In the following parliament he pleaded for the execution of the penal laws against recusants and for the restoration of the silenced Puritan clergy. In 1626 he was one of the managers of Bucking- ham's impeachment. In 1628 he was equally prominent in advocating the Petition of Right and in carrying on the impeachment of Mainwaring. The political question and the religious question were in Pym's mind fused into one. His intellect was intensely conservative, not easily admit- ting new ideas or projecting itself into the future to deal with growing changes in society, but seeking to rest on the conservatism of existing society rather than on the

maintenance of artificial forces. He looked for support to the nation itself, and he found it hard to believe that the national judgment could much differ from his own. In 1629 he found himself differing from those with whom he usually acted. Eliot carried the House with him in turn- ing the dispute with the king on the question of tonnage and poundage into one of parliamentary privilege, whilst Pym thought that the main question of the king's right to levy the duties without a parliamentary grant should be first attacked. He was beaten at the time, but his defeat was full of promise for the future. It is much in a man's favour that he is ready to look a difficulty fully in the face. It is characteristic of Pym that nothing is heard of him either during the riotous proceedings in which this parlia- ment closed or during the eleven years which passed with- out a parliament at all. He had neither the virtues nor the failings which accompany excitability of temperament.

With the Short Parliament Pym's three and a half years of authority begin. His speech of 17th April 1640 on grievances lasted for two hours, a length of time without precedent in the parliaments of those days. It was not eloquent in the sense in which Eliot's speeches were eloquent, but it summed up in a telling manner the griev- ances under which, in the opinion of the vast majority of thinking Englishmen, the commonwealth laboured. Before the session closed he showed his powers as a parliamentary tactician by proposing to bring forward the Scottish grievances and to make a peace with the Scots the condition of the grant of supplies. This proposal led

to a hasty dissolution of parliament, but it laid down the basis of a policy which afterwards stood Pym in good stead. That policy was precisely what had been fore- shadowed in his speech of 1621, the association of the majority who thought alike in civic union against official authority ; but that which in 1621 was to be a union of Englishmen alone in 1640 included Scots as well.

With the dissolution of the Short Parliament Pym once more sinks out of sight. There is, however, good reason to suppose that the summer months of 1640 were for him a time of unusual activity, and that he was a leading spirit in those negotiations with the Scots the exact nature of which cannot

now be traced. At all events in the end of August he was in close communication with the leaders of the opposition, and he then drew up, in co-operation with St John, the petition in which twelve peers demanded the redress of grievances and the summon- ing of parliament. The rout of Newburn gave emphasis to the language of the peers, and on 3d November 1640 the Long Parliament met.

Pym's leadership of the Commons rested on his sympathy with the feelings of the House combined with his skill in directing those feelings into a practical course. He expressed the general sentiment in the impeachment of Strafford and Laud, and in the passing of the Triennial Act, which was to make the long intermission of parlia- ments impossible for the future. In the trial of Strafford he showed himself resolute. Being determined to give to an act of state policy the character of a vindication of the law, Pym had to contend 'against the impatience of his followers and against the efforts of Charles, and still more of Henrietta Maria, to save Strafford by force. Over-whelmed for a moment by the impatience of the House, which converted the impeachment into a bill of attainder, he yet carried his point that the change should be no more than nominal, and that the legal arguments should proceed just as if the impeachment had been continued.

The struggle within the House itself was the least part of Pym's labours. In meeting the army plot and the other intrigues of the court he had to develop the powers of a commissioner of police, to be as ready in collecting and sifting information as he was prompt in counteracting the danger which he feared. In the protestation which was adopted by the Commons on 3d May he fell back on his old reinedy, banding together the majority in resistance to an unscrupulous minority. By the legislation which followed on the death of Strafford—the abolition of the special courts which had been erected to defend the Tudor monarchy, and the abandonment by the crown of its claim to levy customs without a parliamentary grant—he brought the king under the obligation to govern according to law. Much, however, remained to be done. Pym had to provide against the breach by force or fraud of the compact made, and also to provide for the harmonious working of the exe-cutive and legislative bodies. He proposed to attain these ends by demanding that the king's ministers should be responsible to parliament. To effect this it was necessary that parliament should be united, and to obtain

this end it was necessary to solve the religious difficulty. In the autumn of 1641 it appeared that a majority of the Peers and a large minority of the Commons wished to maintain the worship of the Prayer Book very nearly intact, whilst a minority of the Peers and a majority of the Commons wished to make very considerable alterations in it. To bind these two parties together against the king needed constructive statesmanship of the highest order, and this neither Pym nor any one else in the House showed signs of possessing. In the Grand Remonstrance, instead of in- dicating terms of compromise, he proposed to throw the regulation of the church on an assembly of divines to be

chosen by parliament,—that is to say, he combined the terrors of a vague threat of impending change with the entire absence of any security that those changes would be moderate. From that moment there were two parties in the state neither of which would give way to the other. Charles's attempt to arrest Pym and four other members on 4th January 1642 embittered but did not produce the conflict. For some months there was much fencing be- tween the two parties, and the Civil War was not begun till Charles raised his standard at Nottingham.

During the remaining months of Pym's life he was the most prominent leader of the war party in the House of Commons. Peace may be made in two ways, by one side capitulating to the other, or by the discovery of a com- promise which may give effect to the better aims of both sides. Pym was resolutely set against a capitulation, and he did not rise to the height of a mediator, His adver- saries of the peace party, led by Holles and Maynard, had as little idea of a compromise as he had, and they were foolish enough to suppose it possible to obtain the assent of Charles and his supporters to the establishment of a Puritan Church,

Pym's policy was at least coherent with itself. In 1621, on his first prominent appearance in political life, he had advocated the formation of an association against popery. The protestation of 1641 was an attempt to carry this plan into practice and to make it at the same time available

against Royalist intrigues. The Parliamentary covenant promulgated after the discovery of Waller's plot in June 1643 was an enlargement of the same project, and the Solemn League and Covenant in September 1643 embraced the three kingdoms. As long as he lived Pym was the soul of the Parliamentary resistance to the king, but it is in the covenants and associations which he brought into existence that his permanent contribution to English political development is to be found. Eliot hoped to rally parliament and the constituencies as a whole to the cause which he maintained to be just. Strafford hoped to rouse the devotion of the nation as a whole to the king whose crown was supported by his own masterful intellect. Pym was the founder of party government in England. He recognized from the first that there were differences of religious opinion amongst his fellow-countrymen, and he hoped to rally round a common purpose those who on the whole felt as he did himself, with such liberty of opinion as was possible under such conditions. If the enterprise failed it was partly because he was assailed by intrigue as well as by fair opposition, and in his fierce struggle against intrigue learned to cling to doctrines which were not sufficiently expansive for the government of a nation, partly because the limitations of government itself and the insufficiency of force to solve a complicated religious and political problem were in his time very im- perfectly understood. At least Pym prepared the way for the immediate victory of his party by summoning the Scots and by the financial measures which made the campaigns of 1644 and 1645 possible.

He did not, however, live to reap the harvest which was due to his efforts. Worn out by the strain of con- stant and agitating work, his health broke down, and on 8th December 1643 he died. His body was followed by both Houses when it was carried to be interred in West- minster Abbey. (Ss. RB. G.)

PYRAMID, This name fora class of buildings, though first taken from a part of the structure,! and mistakenly applied to the whole of it by the Greeks, has now so far

1 The vertical height was named by the Egyptians pir-em-us (see E. Revillout, Rev. g., 2d year, 305-309), hence the Greek form pyranis, pl.

pyramides (Herod.), used unaltered in the English of Sandys (1615), from which the singular pyramid was formed.

acquired a more definite meaning in its geometrical sense that it is desirable to employ it in that sense alone. A pyramid therefore should be understood as meaning a building bounded by a polygonal base and plane triangular sides which meet in an apex. Such a form of architecture is only known in Middle Egypt, and there only during the period from the [Vth to the AIIth Dynasty (before 2000 B.c.)—having square bases and angles of about 50°. In other countries various modifications of the tumulus, barrow, or burial-heap have arisen which have come near to this type; but these when formed of earth are usually circular, or, if square, have a flat top, and when built of stone are always in steps or terraces. The imitations of the true Egyptian pyramid at Abydos, Meroe, and else- where are puny hybrids, being merely chambers with a pyramidal] outside and porticos attached ; and the struc- tures found at Cenchrez, or the monument of Caius Sestius at Rome, are isolated and barren trials of a type which never could be revived: it had run its course in a country and a civilization to which alone it was suitable.

In the earliest monuments of Egypt there are three types, which were ruled by the external shape. For the temples (such as those of the kings of the [Vth Dynasty at Gizeh) varied in shape according to their arrangements; but the pyramid, the obelisk, and the mastaba? are designs whose importance was outward ; and these types, which started apparently at the same epoch (the earliest actually dated examples of each being all within the two reigns of Seneferu and Khufu), only lasted during the life of that archaic system to which they belonged. The pyramid type faded out in the middle kingdom (XIIth Dynasty) ; the obelisk was adapted in later times to a different purpose, as a member of bilateral temple decoration, instead of a solitary monument complete in itself and surrounded by an enclosure, as it was in the old kingdom ; and the mastaba gave way to the rock-hewn chapel or the bastard pyramid.

In considering the origin of the pyramid type there are three theories to be dealt with—(1) that it is merely a higher and refined form of the tumulus;

(2) that it was derived from the mastaba; (3) that it was a fresh idea, an invention de novo, The objection to the first view is that there is no graduated series of examples of lesser sizes before the large ones, possibly not any before the very largest, and that tumulus or mound burial is unknown in Egypt, ancient or modern; and to accept this view we must suppose that all the earlier stages were wrought in another land, and that the pyramid-builders migrated into Egypt when at the height of their architec- tural power. But their history does not agree to this, and in no other land can we find their training-ground. The second view is strongly suggested by the facts before us in Egypt. The only buildings that have been reasonably supposed to be earlier than the great pyramid are the two so-called pyramids of Sakkara and Medum. These struc- tures are not and never were true pyramids; they are mastabas added to by successive accretions at various tines, again and again finished off with a polished casing, only to be afresh enlarged by coats of rough masonry and another fine casing on the outside, until they have been extended upwards and around into a great stepped mass of masonry (Petrie, Pyramids, dc., p. 147), the successive faces of which rise at the characteristic mastaba angle of 75° (or 40n 1). These buildings then present the outline of a pyramidal pile, broken by successive steps, and it is but one stage further to build in one smooth slope from base to top; such a form would readily be designed when oice it was intended to build a large mass complete at

2 An oblong building with sloping sides and flat top, which con- tained usually the funeral chapel and place of offerings, and covered over the mouth of the sepulchral pit.

once on one uniform plan, as certainly was the case for the largest pyramids. The third view has some support in the absence of any datable pyramids before the largest and the second largest that ever existed, and in the steady deterioration of work that is known to have taken place. Remembering also what bold steps architecture has taken occasionally in later times (as in the Pantheon and St Sophia) without a series of graduated exainples, we should not condemn this view too readily by a priori reasoning. It is certain that the pyramids were each begun with a definite

design of their size and arrangement; at least this is plainly seen in the two largest, where continuous accretion (such as Lepsius and his followers propound) would be most likely to be met with. On looking at any section of these buildings it will be seen how impossible it would have been for the passages to have belonged to a smaller structure (Petrie, 165). The supposition that the designs were enlarged so long as the builder's life permitted was drawn from the compound imastabas of Sakkara and Medum ; these are, however, quite distinct architecturally from true pyramids, and appear to have been enlarged at

long intervals, being elaborately finished with fine casing

at the close of each addition.

Around many of the pyramids peribolus walls may be seen, and it is probable that some enclosure originally ex- isted around each of them. At the pyramids of Gizeh the temples attached to these mausolea may be still seen. As in the private tomb, the false door which represented the exit of the deceased person from this world, and to- wards which the offerings were made, was always on the west wall in the chamber, so the pyramid was placed on the west of the temple in which the deceased king was worshipped. The temple being entered from the east (as in the Jewish temples), the worshippers faced the west, looking toward the pyramid in which the king was buried. Priests of the various pyramids are continually mentioned during the old kingdom, and the religious endowments of many of the priesthoods of the early kings were revived under the Egyptian renaissance of the XXVIth Dynasty and continued during Ptolemaic times. A list of the hieroglyphic names of nineteen of the pyramids which have been found mentioned on monuments (mostly in tombs of the priests) is given in Lieblein's Chronology, p. 32, The pyramid was never a family monument, but be- longed—like all other Egyptian tombs—to one person, members of the royal family having sometimes lesser pyramids adjoining the king's (as at Khufu's) ; the essen- tial idea of the sole use of a tomb was so strong that the Inll of Gizeh is riddled with deep tomb-shafts for separate burials, often running side by side 60 or 80 feet deep with only a thin wall of rock between ; and in one place a previous shaft has been partially

blocked with masonry, So that a later shaft could be cut partly into it, macled with it like a twin-crystal.

Turning now to the architecture of -the buildings, their usual construction is a mass of masonry composed of horizontal layers of rough-hewn blocks, with a small amount of mortar; and this mass in the later forms became more and more rubbly, until in the VIth Dynasty it was merely a cellular system of retaining walls of rough Stones and mud, filled up with loose chips, and in the XIIth Dynasty the bulk was of mud bricks, Whatever was the hidden material, however, there was always on the outside a casing of fine stone, elaborately finished, and very well jointed ; and the inner chambers were of simi- larly good work. Indeed the construction was in all cases so far sound that, had it not been for the spite of enemies and the greed of later builders, it is probable that every pyramid would have been standing in good order at this day. The casings were not a mere "veneer" or niin,"

as they have been called, but were of massive blocks, usually greater in thickness than in height, and in some cases (as at South Dahshur) reminding the observer of horizontal leaves with sloping edges.

Inside of each pyramid, always low down, and usually below the ground level, was built a sepulchral chamber : this was reached in all cases by a passage from the north, sometimes beginning in the pyramid face, sometimes de- scending into the rock on which the pyramid was built in front of the north side. This chamber, if not cut in the rock altogether (as in Menkaura's), or a pit in the rock roofed with stone (as in Khafra's), was built between two immense walls which served for the east and west sides, and between which the north and south sides and roofing stood merely in contact, but unbonded. The gable roofing of the chambers was formed by great sloping cantilevers of stone, projecting from the north and south walls, on which they rested without pressing on each other along the central ridge; thus there was no thrust, nor were there any forces to disturb the building; and it was only after the most brutal treatment, by which these great masses of stone were cracked asunder, that the principle of thrust came into play, though it had been provided for in the sloping form of the

roof, so as to delay as long as possible the collapse of the chamber. This is best seen in the pyramid of Pepi (Petrie), opened from the top right through the roof. See also the Abusir pyramids (Howard Vyse) and the king's and queen's chambers of the great pyramid (Howard Vyse, Piazzi Smyth, Petrie). The roof- ing is sometimes, perhaps usually, of more than one layer ; in Pepi's pyramid it is of three layers of stone beams, each deeper than their breadth, resting one on another, the thirty stones weighing more than 30 tons each. In the king's chamber (Gizeh) successive horizontal roofs were in- terposed between the chamber and the final gable roof, and such may have been the case at Abu Roash (Howard Vyse).

The passages which led into the central chambers have usually some lesser chamber in their course, and aré blocked once or oftener with massive stone portcullises. In all cases some part, and generally the greater part, of the passages slopes downwards, usually at an angle of about 26°, or 1 on 2. These passages appear to have been closed externally with stone doors turning on a horizontal pivot, as may be seen at South Dahshur, and as is de scribed by Strabo and others (Petrie). This suggests that the interiors of the pyramids were accessible to the priests, probably for making offerings ; the fact of many of them having been forcibly entered otherwise does not show that no practicable entrance existed, but merely that it was unknown, as, for instance, in the pyramids of Khufu and Khafra, both of which were regularly entered in classical times, but were forced by the ignorant Arabs.

The pyramids of nearly all the kings of the IVth, Vth, and VIth Dynasties are mentioned in inscriptions, and also a few of later times. The first which can be definitely attributed is that of Khufu (or Cheops), called "the glorious," the great pyramid of Gizeh. Ratatef, who appears next to Khufu in the lists, is unknown in other mouuments ; he is perliaps the samc as Khnumu-Khufu, apparently a co-regent of Khufu, who may have becn buried in the so-called qucen's chamber of the great pyramid. Khafra rested in the great pyramid, now known as the second pyramid of Gizch. Menkaura's pyramid was called "the upper," being at the highest level on the hill of Gizeh. The lesser pyramids of Gizeh, near the great and third pyramids, belong respectively to the families of Khufu and Khafra (Howard Vyse). The pyramid of a Men(ka ?)ra at Abu Roash is probably also of this period. The pyramid of Aseskaf, called " the cool," is unknown, so also is that of Userkaf of the Vth

Dynasty, called the "holiest of buildings." Sahura's pyramid, the north one of Abusir, was named "the rising soul," much as Neferkara's (of unknown site) was namcd "of the soul." Raenuser's pyramid, "the firmest of buildings," is the middle pyra- mid of Abusir. The pyramid of Menkauhor, called "the most divine building," is somewhere at Sakkara. Assa's pyramid is unidentified ; it was "the beautiful." Unas not only built the

mastaba Farun, long supposed to be his pyramid, but had a pyra- mid called "the most beautiful of buildings" at Sakkara, which was opened in 1881 (see Recweil des Travaux, by M. Maspero, iii., for those opened at Sakkara). In the VIth Dynasty the "pyramid of souls," built by Ati (Rauserka), isunknown. That of Teta, "the most stable of buildings," was opened at Sakkara in 1881, as well as that of Pepi (Rameri), "the firm and beautiful." The pyramids of Rameren, "the beautiful rising,' and of Neferkara, "the firm life," are unknown. Haremsaf's pyramid was opened at Sakkara in 1881. Of the last two kings of the VIth Dynasty we know of no pyramids. In the VIIth or VIIIth Dynasty most probably the brick pyramids of Dahshur were erected. In the XIth Dynasty the pyramid, "the most glorious building," of Mentuhotep II. is mentioned, and the mud pyramid of one of the Antef kings is known at Thebes. In the XIIth Dynasty the pyramids, the "lofty and beautiful" of Amenemhat I. and "the bright" of Usertesen II. are known in inscriptions, while the brick pyramid at Howara may be most probably assigned to Amenemhat III., who appears to have built the adjoining temple.

Of the architectural peculiarities of some particular pyramids some notice must now be given. The great pyramid of Gizeh (Khufw's) is very different in its internal arrangements from any other known (see vol. ii. p. 385 sg. and vol. vii. p. 771 sq.). The greater number of passages and chambers, the high finish of parts of the work, and the accuracy of construction all distinguish it. The chamber which is most normal in its situation is the subter- ranean chamber; but this is quite unfinished, hardly more than begun. The upper chambers, called the "king's" and "queen's," were completely hidden, the ascending passage to them having been closed by plugging blocks, which concealed the point where it branched upwards out

of the roof of the long descending passage. Another passage, which in its turn branches from the ascending vassage to the queen's chamber, was also completely blocked up. The object of having two highly-finished chambers in the mass

may have been to receive the king and his co-regent (of whom

there is some historical evidence), and there is very credible testi- mony to a sarcophagus having existed in the queen's chamber, as well as in the king's chamber. On the details of construction in the great pyramid it is needless to enter here; but it may be stated that the accuracy of work is such that the four sides of the base have only a mean error of six-tenths of an inch in length and 12 seconds in angle from a perfect square.!

The second pyramid of Gizeh has two separate entrances (one in the side, the other in the pavement) and two chambers (one roofed with slabs, the other all rock-hewn) ; these chambers, however, do not run into the masonry, the whole bulk of which is solid so farasis known. This pyramid has a part of tle original casing on the top; and it is also interesting as having the workmen's barracks still remaining at a short distance on the west side, long chambers capable of housing about 4000 men. The great bulk of the rubbish from the work is laid on the south side, forming a flat terrace level with the base, and covering a steep rock escarpment which existed there. The waste heaps from the great pyramid were similarly tipped out over the cliff on its northern side. Thus the rubbish added to the broad platform which sct off the appear- ance of the pyramids; and it has remained undisturbed in all ages, as there was nothing to be got out of it. The third pyramid was cased around the base with red granite for the sixteen lowest courses. The design of it has been enlarged at one bound from a small pyramid (such as those of the family of Khufu) to one eight times the size, as it is at present; the passages necded therefore to be altered. But there is no sign of gradual steps of enlargement : the ehange was sudden, from a comparatively small design to a large one. The basalt sarcophagus of this pyramid was ornamented with the panel decoration found on early tombs, unlike the granite sarcophagi of the two previous pyramids, which are plain. Un- happily it was lost at sea in 1838.

Farther south are the pyramids of Abusir, the most complete account of which is in the work of Colonel Howard Vyse. Next come those of Sakkara. The construction of the step-pyramid or cumulative mastaba has bcen noticed above ; its passages are very peculiar and intricate, winding around the principal chamber, which is in the centre, cut in the rock, very high, and with a tomb- chamber built in the bottom of it, which is closed with a great plug of red granite, a circular stopper fitting into a neck in the chamber roof. A doorway faced with glazed tiles bearing a king's standard existed here ; the tiles were taken to Berlin by Lepsius. The other pyramids of Sakkara are of the VIth Dynasty, of Unas, Pepi, Haremsaf, &. They are distinguished by the introduction of very long religious texts, covering the whole inside of the chambers and passages; these are carefully carved in small hiero- glyphics, painted bright green, in the white limestone. Beyond

1 With respect to the construction of this and other pyramids, see Howard Vyse; on measurements of the inside of the great pyramid and descriptions, see Piazzi Smyth ; and on measurements in general, mechanical means, and theories, see Petrie.

these come the pyramids of Dahshur, which are in a simple and massive style, much like those of Gizeh. The north pyramid of Dahshur has chambers roofed like the gallery in the great pyramid by successive overlappings of stone, the roof rising to a great height with no less than eleven projections on each side. The south pyramid of Dahshur has still the greater part of its casing remaining, and is remarkable for being built at two different angles, the lower part being at the usual pyramid angle, while the upper part is but 48°. This pyramid is also remarkable for having a western passage to the chambers, which was carefully closed up. Beyond the Memphitic group are the scattered pyramids of Lisht, Illahun, and Howara, and the cumulative mastaba of Medum. Illahun is built with a framework of stone filled up with mud bricks, and Howara is built entirely of mud bricks, though doubtless cased with fine stone like the other pyramids.

Beyond these there are no true pyramids, but we will briefly notice those later forms derived from the pyramid. At Abydos a large cemetery is

covered with more than a hundred mud-brick chambers, the outsides of which are sloped to the form of an acute pyramid, and which have a door (or in later forms a large chamber) projecting on one side. These differ from true pyramids in (1) having an attachment more or less large on one face, (2) being always built on a square plinth, (3) having the principal face generally south, and but rarely to the north, (4) not being oriented, and (5) having the chainbers occupying the greater part of the structure. The sizes are about 18 feet wide and 24 high, with a chamber 11 feet wide and 13 high, and in the later and less acute forms 20 feet base and 21 in height (see Mariette, Abydos, Description des Fouitlles, ii. 48). At Thebes are also some similar structures belonging to the kings of the Xlth Dynasty; the tomb-chamber is, however, in the rock below. The size is not so insignificant, but is under 50 feet square. These, like those at Abydos, are not oriented, and have a horizontal entrance, quite unlike the narrow pipe-like passages sloping down into the regular pyramids (see Mariette, in B2b. Areh. Trans., iv. 193). In Ethiopia, at Gebel Barkal, are other so-called pyramids of a very late date. They nearly all have porches; their simplicity is lost amid very dubious decorations; and they are not oriented. They are all very acute, and have flat tops as if to support some ornament. The sizes are but small, varying from 238 to 88 feet square at Gebel Barkal and 17 to 63 feet square at Meroe. The interior is solid throughout, the windows which appear on the sides being useless architectural members (see Hoskin's Ethiopia, 148, &c.). The structures sometimes called pyramids at Bialimu in the Fayum seem to have no possible claim to such a name, though they are certainly of early work. Judging by the account of Herodotus (which seems intended to apply to them), by the present name (Pharaoh's thrones), and the actual remains, it appears that they were two great enclosed courts with sloping sides, in the centres of which were two seated statues raised on pedestals high enough to be seen over the walls of the courts. This form would appear like a pyramid with a statue on the top; and a rather similar case in early construction is shown on the sculptures of the old kingdom. Obelisks then were single monuments (not in pairs) and stood in the midst of a great courtyard with sides sloping like a mastaba ; such open courtyards on a small scale are found in the mastabas at Gizch, and are probably copied from the domestic architecture of the time.

On the vexed question of inscriptions on the pyramids it will suffice to say that not one fragment of early inscription is known on the casing of any pyramid, either i sitw or broken in pieces. Large quantities of travellers' "graffiti" doubtless existed, and some have been found on the casing of the great pyramid ; these probably gave rise to the accounts of inscriptions, which are expressly said to have been in many different languages.

The mechanical means employed by the pyramid-builders have been partly ascertained. The hard stones, granite, diorite, and basalt were in all fine work sawn into shape by bronze saws set with jewels (either corundum or diamond), hollows were made (as in sarcophagi) by tubular drilling with tools like our modern diamond rock-drills (which are but reinvented from ancient sources, see Engineering, xxxvii. 282), and small articles were turned in lathes fitted with mechanical tool-rests and jewel-pointcd tools. The details of the questions of transport and management of the large stones remain still to be explained.

Works referred to above.—Colonel Howard Vyse, Operations at the Pyramids,

1840; Professor C. Piazzi Smyth, Life and Work at the Great Pyramid, 1867 5 W. M. Flinders Petrie, Pyramids and Temples of Gizeh, 1883. (W. M. F. P.)

PYRENEES, a range of mountains stretching with a general trend 18° to the north of west between France and Spain, from Cape Creus, or more properly Cape Cerbera, on the Mediterranean to the Bay of Biscay. The length of the range is about 240 miles, the greatest breadth little more than 50 miles (exclusive of the lower parallel ranges on the Spanish side), and the area covered

a

by it about 13,000 square miles. For the most part the crest of the main chain constitutes the Franco-Spanish frontier ; the principal exception to this rule is formed by the valley of Aran, which, belonging orographically to

France but politically to Spain, is closed at the head by a transverse ridge running north and south and connecting the eastern and western halves of the chain.

The whole range is remarkable for its regularity. The main chain is on the whole easy to trace; its continuity is unbroken, and the variations in its height are mostly confined within narrow limits. The same regularity is seen in the arrangement of the valleys. Except that of Aran, all the principal valleys are given off at right angles, or nearly so, like the pinnze of a fern-frond, on both sides of the chain, and they are again subdivided by similar minor valleys at right angles to them. In all these re- spects the Pyrenees contrast in a very marked manner with the Alps. They have none of the great longitudinal valleys so characteristic of the latter range, none of the great lakes by which such valleys are occupied, and but few passes like those which are found in plenty leading across the great chains of the Alps at a level much below that of the adjoining peaks. In this last particular, in-deed, the Pyrenees are conspicuously deficient. Between the two extremities of the range, where the principal highroads and the only railways run between France and Spain, there are only two passes practicable for carriages, — the Col de la Perche between the valley of the Tet and the valley of the Segre, and the Col de Somport or Port de Canfrane (where it is now proposed to pierce the range by a railway tunnel) on the old Roman road from Saragossa to Oloron.

This latter pass marks the western extremity of what are known as the Central Pyrenees, which extend east- wards to the valley of Aran and include the highest sum- mits of the whole range—Pic de Néthou or Maladetta (11,165 feet), Posets (11,047 feet), Mont Perdu (10,994 feet, Reclus; other authorities, 11,430 feet). In the Atlantic Pyrenees to the west of that pass the average height gradually, but steadily diminishes till we come to the Mediterranean, while in the Eastern Pyrenees, with the exception of one break at the eastern extremity of the Pyrénées Ariégeoises, the mean elevation is maintained with remarkable uniformity, till at last a rather sudden decline occurs in the portion of the chain known as the Albéres,

Narrow as the range is, the inclination of a straight line drawn from the base to the crest on the French side is not more than 3°, or a rise of about 6 in 100. On the Spanish side it is said to be somewhat steeper, but this has not been definitely ascertained. This fact, however, gives no idea of the general character of the Pyrenean slopes, The descent from the crest to the plains is marked

y a succession of terraces terminating in abrupt precipices. On the French side a long cliff marks the northern limit of the chain for the greater part of its length, and this feature is particularly well defined in the department of Aude, where a steep precipice marks the division between the true Pyrenees and the Corbiéres, a minor chain re- markable for the complexity of its geological structure, stretching in that department from south-west to north-east. _ Besides these longitudinal precipices marking the steps In the descent from the summit-line to the plains, the transverse valleys almost everywhere form profound Tavines, at the bottom of which brawl the innumerable Mountain-torrents (‘“gaves,” as. they are locally called) that form the principal feature in the hydrography of the range. Frequently they form lofty cascades, surpassed in Europe only by those of Scandinavia. The highest is that of Gavarnie at the head of the Gave de Pau, 1515

feet high. The wildness which thus in general marks the scenery of the Pyrenees is even greater on the Spanish than on the French side.

A peculiar and very striking feature in the Pyrenean valleys is the frequency with which their upper end assumes the form of a semicircle of precipitous cliffs. Such basins _ are called “ cirques,” and the most noted is that at the head of the valley just mentioned, the Cirque de Gavarnie. The origin of this form of valley is still a matter of discussion among geologists. Geologically the Pyrenees consist, like the Alps, of a core of granite overlaid by sedimentary strata of various age down to the Tertiary period. The granite is exposed chiefly in the east and centre, and appears in the west only in comparatively small isolated patches. Above the granitic core Cambro-Silurian rocks are very extensively developed, especially in the west, and it would appear that the first upheaval on the site of the present Pyrenees took place after the deposition of the rocks of this age, since those of the next epochs in geological history, the Old Red Sandstone, the

Carboniferous, and probably also the Permian, are almost entirely unrepresented. The Secondary rocks down to the Lower Cretaceous were de- posited perfectly conformably upon one another, probably against the slopes of a gentle ridge rising out of the water. Among these, Triassic rocks occupy a considerable area in the west on both slopes of the mountains; those of Jurassic age are likewise found on both slopes, but at different points; while the Lower Cretaceous form an almost continu- ous band on the north and one quite continuous on the south. After the deposition of the last-mentioned strata a second upheaval took place, and then another period of quiet deposition, during which the Upper Cretaceous and Kocene beds were laid down, was brought to a conclusion by the grand upheaval which elevated the Pyrenees into one of the great mountain-chains of Europe and imparted to them the general outline of their present relicf. The last deposits of the Eocene sea in this quarter, represented on the French side by the conglomerates of Palusson, have been raised by this upheaval up the slopes of the mountains, and are succeeded by the Miocene lacustrine molasse, which lies perfectly horizontally at their base. The next and last upheaval was one that did not affect the Pyrenees separately, but raised the whole area on which they stand, causing the emergence from beneath the sea of the region of the Landes and draining the lake that washed the foot of the Pyrenees on the east, thus establishing the present land connexion between France and the Iberian Peninsula.

The later rocks of the Pyrenees are to a large extent limestones, among which are conspicuous the characteristic hippuritic limestone of the southern Chalk and the nummu- litic limestone of the southern Eocene. For the most part the highest peaks belong to the granitic core of the moun- tains. But this is not always the case. In some instances limestone rocks have been carried up to the very crest of the mountains, as in Mont Perdu and in Marboré; the name of the latter, meaning "marble," indicates the nature of its constituent rock. Such limestone summits have a characteristic square massive form, very different from the sharp peaks of the granite and the schists. As in other limestone regions, caves are numerous in the Pyrenees, and several of these are of great interest to geologists and anthropologists on account of the traces of recent geological changes observable in them, and the remains of early man, both Paleolithic and Neolithic, which they have yielded.

The metallic ores of the Pyrenees are not in general of much importance, though there are considerable iron mines at Vic de Sos in Ariége and at the foot of Canigou in Pyrénées Orientales, Coal- deposits capable of being profitably worked are situated chiefly on the

Spanish slopes, but the French side has numerous beds of lignite. Mineral springs are abundant and very remarkable, and specially

noteworthy are the hot springs, in which the Alps, on the contrary, are very deficient. The latter, among which those of Bagnercs de Luchon and Eaux-Chaudes may be mentioned, are sulphurous and mostly situated high, near the coutact of the granite with the stratified rocks. The lower springs, such as those of Bagneéres de Bigorre (Hautes- Pyrénées), Rennes (Aude), and Campagne (Aude), are mostly selenitic and not very warm.

The amount of the precipitation, including rain and snow, is much greater in the Western than in the Eastern Pyrenees, which leads to a marked contrast between the two halves of the ehain in more than one respect. In the first place, the Eastern Pyrenees are without glaciers, the quantity of snow falling there being insufficient to lead to their development. 'he glaciers are confined to the northern slopes of the Central Pyrenees, and do not descend, like those of the Alps, far down in the valleys, but have their greatest length in the direction of the mountain-chain. They form in fact a narrow zonc near the crest of the highest mountains. Here, as in the other great mountain ranges of central Europe, there are evidences of a much wider extension of the glaciers dur- ing the Ice age. The case of the glacier in the valley of Argeles in the department of Hautes-Pyrénées is the best-known instance. The snow-line is stated to lie in different parts of the Pyrenees at from 8800 to 9200 feet above sea-level.

A still more marked effect of the preponderance of rainfall in the western half of the chain is seen in the aspect of the vegetation. The lower mountains in the extreme west are very well wooded, but the extent of forest declines as we go eastwards, and the Eastern Pyrenees are peculiarly wild and naked, all the more since it is in this part of the chain that granitic masses prevail. There isa change, moreover, in the composition of the flora

in passing from west to east. In the west the flora, at least in the north, resembles that of central Europe, while in the east, though the difference of latitude is only about 1°, on both sides of the chain from the centre whence the Corbiéres stretch north-eastwards towards the central plateau of France it is distinctly Mediterranean in character. The Pyrenees are relatively as rich in endemic species as the Alps, and among the most remarkable instances of that endemism is the occurrence of the sole European species of Dioscorea (yam), the D. pyrenwiea, on a single high station in the Central Pyrenees, and that of the monotypic genus Xatardia, only on a high alpine pass between the Val d'Eynes and Catalonia. The genus most abun- dantly represented in the range is that of the saxifrages, several species of which are here endemic.

In their fauna also the Pyrenees present some striking instances of endemism. There is a distinct species of ibex (Capra pyrenatea) con- fined to the range, while the Pyrenean desman or watcr-mole (Jfygale pyrenatea) is found only in some of the streams of the northern slopes of these mountains, the only other niember of this genus being con- fined to the rivers of southern Russia, Among the other peculiarities of the Pyrenean fauna are blind insects in the caverns of Ariége, the principal genera of which are Anophthalmus and Adelops.

See Murray's Handbook of France; A. Leymerie, Description géologique et paléontologique des Pyrénées dela Haute Garonne (to which a general account of the chain is prefixed), Toulouse, 1881 ; De Chausenque, Les Pyrénées, 1854; for the vegetation, Bentham, Catalogue des Plantes indigénes des Pyrénces et de Bas- Languedoc, Paris, 1826, and Grisebach, Vegetation der Erde, Leipsic, 1872; and for an account of the caverns, Geikie, Prehistoric Kwrope, and the authorities there cited. For the French side of the Pyrenees the best map is that of the Government survey on the seale of gy4an (about an inch to the mile). The first sheet of a map by Fr. Schrader of the Spanish slopes on the scale of yyroan has been published under the title Pyrénées Centrales avec les grands Massifs dw Versant espagnol; and a sketch map of the whole of the Spanish slopes based on the tracings of MM. Schrader, Wallon, and Saint-Sand was published in vol. vii. (1880) of the Annuaire du Club alpin francais, and also separately. See also the maps in Murray's Handbook. (G. G, C.)

PYRENEES, the name of three departments in the south of France.

1. Basses-PyReNEES, a department of south-western France, at the angle of the Bay of Biscay, was formed in 1790, two-thirds of it from Béarn and the rest from three districts of Gascony—Navarre, Soule, and Labourd — which together constitute the Basque region of France. The department lies between 42° 46’ and 43° 36’ N. lat. and between 0° 6’ E. and 1° 47’ W. long., and is bounded on the N. by Landes and Gers, on the E. by Hautes-Pyrénées (which has two enclaves, forming five communes, within this department), on the 8. by Spain, and on the W. by the ocean. The name is due to the fact that the peaks of the Pyrenees on its southern frontier are lower than in the neighbouring department. Their height increases gradually from west to east. The peak of the Rhune, to the south of St Jean de Luz, rises only to 2950 feet; and on the border of the Basque country, which occupies the western half of the department, the mean height of the summits is not much greater. The peak of

Orhy alone, in the south of the valley of Mauléon, reaches 6618 feet. But beyond that of Anie (8215 feet), on the meridian of Orthez, which marks the boundary of Béarn, much loftier elevations appear,—Mourrous (9760 feet), on the border of Hautes-Pyrénées, and the southern peak of Ossau (9465 feet), The frontier between France and Spain follows the crest-line of the main range, except in a few cases mentioned below. The general direction of the rivers of the department is towards the north-west, through a hilly country for the most part wooded or vine-clad, except on the higher slopes, which are grassy. The northern half of the department is covered with bracken or heath, indicating the proximity of the “landes.” The streams almost all meet in the Adour through the Gave de Pau, the Bidouze, and the Nive. In the north-east the two Luys flow directly to the Adour, which they join in Landes. In the south-west the Nivelle and the Bidassoa flow directly into the sea. The lower course of the Adour forms the boundary between Basses-Pyrénées and Landes; it enters the sea a short distance below Bayonne over a shifting bar, which has often altered the position of its mouth. The Gave de Pau, a larger stream than the Adour, passes Pau and Orthez, but its current is so swift that it is only navigable for a few miles

above its junction with the Adour. On the left it receives the Gave d'Oloron, formed by the Gave d'Ossau, descending from the Pic du Midi, and the Gave d'Aspe, which rises in Spain. The second iniportant affluent of the Gave de Pau, the Saison

or Gave de Mauléon, descends from the Pic d'Orhy.

From the Pic des Esealiers, which rises above the forest of Iraty, the Bidouze descends northwards; while the forest, though situated on the southern slope of the chain, forms a part of French territory. The Nive, a pretty river of the Basque country, takes its rise in Spain ; after flowing past St Jean Pied de Port, it joins the Adour at Bayonne. The Nivelle also belongs only partly to France and ends its course at St Jean de Luz. The Bidassoa, which is only important as forming part of the frontier, contains the [le des Faisans, where the treaty of the Pyrenees was concluded (1659), and debouches between Hendaye (France) and Fontarabia (Spain).

The climate of the department is essentially that of the Gironde in the valleys,—mild and damp. The spring is rainy ; the best seasons are summer and autumn, the heat of summer being inoderated by the sea. The winters are mild. The very calm air of Pau (see Pav) agrees with invalids and delicate constitutions. St Jean de Luz and Biarritz are much frequented by winter visitors.

The department is mainly agricultural, 287,719 of its inhabitants being dependent on this industry (Reclus). In 1881, of a total arca of 1,883,667 acres 129,132 were under wheat and produced 217,412 quarters ; the other figures were—barley, 4188 acres, 7197 quarters ; buckwheat, 455 acres, 761 quarters; oats, 12,800 acres, 22,327 quarters ; maizc, 161,786 acres, 354,055 quarters ; meslin, 2600 acres, 3987 ; ryc, 2308 acres, 3536; flax, 13,399 acres, 9348 quarters ; potatoes, 7067 acres, 158,592 bushels; vineyards, 63,511 acres, 4,019,466 gallons of wine (the most highly esteemed vintage being that of Jurancon). From 25,205 acres were produced 642,760 bushels of dried vegctables, and 18,781 acres of chestnut trees yielded 314,480 bushels of chestnuts. There are 163,613 acres of pastures and grazing-lands, 132,342 of permanent meadows and orchards, 28,595 under green crops, and 612,000 acres of waste lands. 'The live stock numbered 27,845 horses, 9110 mules, 15,409 asses, 189,818 horned cattle,

434,130 sheep (giving 300 tons of wool, worth £18,000), 78,310 pigs, 150,608 goats, and there were 16,000 hives of bees (producing 63 tons of honcy and 16 of wax). One-half of the 386,000 acres of forest belongs to private persons, the other almost wholly to the communes or the department, scarcely any woods belonging to the Government. Forest manage ment receives careful attention. The number of inhabitants cm- ployed in manufactures was 67,455. There are mines of antliracite, copper, iron, lead, zinc, silver, and kaolin in small quantity. The salt produced amounted to 9663 tons and is used partly for the famous Bayonne hams (so called, but really prepared in the neigli- bourhood of Orthez). The department has valuable mineral springs.

eee

Arreau and flows northwards through a beautiful valley as far as Labarthe, where it turns to the north-east > It as important as furnishing the plateau of Lannemezan with a feeding canal, the waters of which are partly used for irrigation and partly for supplying the streams that rise there and are dried up in summer,—the Gers and the Baise, affluents of the Garonne. This latter only touches the department. The climate of Hautes-Pyrénées, though very cold on the highlands, is warm and moist in the

The Eaux-Bonnes, hot and cold, containing sodium and sulphur, ave employed especially for disorders of the chest and respiratory organs. The Haux-Chaudes, of like composition, are efficacious in catarrh, rheumatism, and skin diseases. Those of Cambo on the Nive, some hot and sulphurous, some chalybeate and cold, are much frequented by the Basques on the eve of St John. The waters of St Christau, near Oloron, containing copper, are effica- cious in skin discases. The manufactures of the department in- elude woollen caps and sashes, the fez worn by the people of the district, nets, Béarn linen, cord slippers, chocolate, and there are also tanneries and flour-mulls. The only shipping port is Bayonne, which town is also the meeting-place of the roads to St Sebastian

and Pamplona in Spain.

Puyoo with St Palais, and Pau with Laruns (Eaux-Bonnes).

Oloron, Orthez (population of town, 4657), and Mauléon (2038), divided into 40 cantons and 558 communes.

(Bordeaux).

2, HAUTES-PYRENEES, a department of southern France, on the Spanish frontier, was formed in 1790, half of it being taken from Bigorre and the remainder from Armag- nac, Nébouzan, Astarac, and Quatre Vallées, districts which all belonged to the province of Gascony. It lies between 42° 40' and 43° 37' N. lat. and between 19' W. and 39'

E. long., and is bounded on the S. by Spain, on the W. by Basses-Pyrénées, on the N.W. by Landes, on the N.E. by Gers, and on the E. by Haute-Garonne. Except on the south its boundaries are conventional. Pyrenean peaks in this department reach or exceed the height of 10,000 feet, the Vignemale (10,820 feet) being the highest in French territory. The imposing corries, with their glaciers and waterfalls, and the pleasant valleys attract a large number of tourists, the most noted point being the famous Gavarnie. The northern portion of the department consists of plains, or rather fertile valleys, clothed with corn-fields, vineyards, and meadows. To the north-east, however, the cold and wind-swept plateau of Lannemezan (about 2000 feet), the watershed of the Streams that come down on the French side of the Pyre- nees, presents in its bleakness and barrenness a striking contrast to the plain that lies below. The department is drained by three principal streams, the Gave de Pau, the Adour, and the Neste, an affluent of the Garonne, The sources of the first and third lie close together in the Cirque of Gavarnie and on the slopes of Troumouse, whence they flow respectively to the north-west and north- east. An important spur of the Pyrenees, which carries the Pic de Néouvielle and the Pic du Midi de Bigorre, pro- jects to the northward between these two valleys. From the Pic du Midi the Adour descends, which, after watering the pleasant valley of Campan, leaves the mountains at Bagnéres and then divides into a multitude of channels, which irrigate the rich plain of Tarbes. Beyond Hautes- Pyrénées it receives on the right the Arros, which flows through the department from south to north-north-west : on the left it receives the Gave de Pau. This latter stream, rising in Gavarnie, is joined at Luz by the Gave de Bastan from Néouvielle,

and at Pierrefitte by the Gave de Cauterets, fed by streams from the Vignemale. The Gave de Pau, after passing Argelés and the grotto of Lourdes on its left and the chateau of Lourdes on its nght, leaves the mountains and turns sharply from north to north-north-west ; it has a greater volume of water than the Adour, but, being more of a mountain torrent, is regarded as a tributary of the Adour, which is navigable In the latter part of its course. The Neste d'Aure, de- Scending from the peaks of Néouvielle and Troumouse, re- celves the Neste de Louron from the pass of Clarabide at

Within the department there are 258 miles of Government roads and 7460 of departmental or parish roads. There are also 142 miles of railroad, connecting Bayonne with Toulouse, Dax with Puyoo (for Pau), Bayonne with Biarritz, The population in 1881 was 434,366 (57 per square kilométre), almost entirely Catholic. There are five arrondissements—Pau, Bayonne,

Basses – Pyrénées

constitutes the diocese of Bayonne, and is attached to the superior court of Pau and belongs to the district of the 18th Army Corps

Some of the

plains, where there are hot summers, fine autumns, mild winters, and rainy springs. The mean annual temperature is 68° Fahr. On the plateau of Lannemezan, while the summers are dry and scorching, the winters are very severe. A meteorological observatory has been built on the Pic du Midi.

Of the total area of 1,119,292 acres 259,334 are arable, 214,782 under wood, 160,624 pastures and grazing-lands, 76,015 permanent meadows and orchards, and 39,135 vineyards. The mountain slopes are covered with pasture to a height of more than 6600 fect. In 1881 the live stock included 114,900 horned cattle (the milch cows of Lourdes and the oxen of Tarbes being the most esteemed), 18,000 horses (mostly of the Tarbes breed crossed with Arab blood), 11,830 asses, 3200 mules (part of which are bred for Spain), 222,300 sheep, 74,800 pigs, and 8718 goats. The more important cercals are successively, as the elevation increases, maize, wheat,

and rye; in the mountain districts oats, barley, and buckwheat are grown. In 1882 the harvest yielded 158,620 quarters of wheat, 197,931 of maize, 70,690 of rye, 47,586 of oats, 15,069 of barley, 27,586 of buckwheat, 61,241 of meslin, and 1,793,104 bushels of potatoes. The formerly extensive forests have suffered considerably from the weather and other causes. Vines, trained npon trees as in Italy, yield on an average 2,464,000 gallons of wine annually. On the lower slopes chestimt trees and fruit trees take the place of the vines. There are various quarries of fine marbles, which are sawn and worked at Bagnéres, and numerous slate quarries. The mines of iron, nickel, lead, cobalt, manganese, and zinc are worked only irregularly. There is no coal, but a few hundred tons of peat are annually extracted. The mineral waters of Hautes-Pyrénées are numerous and much resorted to. The principal in the valley of the Gave de Pau are Cautercts (twenty-four hot springs containing sulphur and sodium), St Sauveur (two springs with sulphur and sodium), and Baréges (twelve hot springs with sulphur and sodium), and in the valley of the Adour Bagnéres (fifty-two hot or cold springs containing calcium sulphates, iron, and arsenic) and Capvern near Lannemczan (two springs containing calcium sul- phates). There are 2 paper-mills employing 101 workinen, 28 spin- ning or weaving factories employing 908 workmen (4000 spindles and 750 looms, of which 220 are power-looms). The light woollen materials known under the name of 'baréges" and the knitted work of the department are widely known beyond its limits. A company has been formed for establishing chcese- factories in the mountains, as in Switzerland. There are also saw-mills, flour-mills, tanneries, and at Tarbes very important artillery establishments and a bell-foundry.

The passes (ports) into Spain rise more than 6500 feet ; none of them are accessible to carriages, and only three—Gavarnie, Our- dissetou, and Plan —to beasts of burden. ' Within the department there are 222 miles of Government roads, 2837 miles of other roads, and 129 miles of railroad. It is traversed from west to east by the line from Bayonne to Toulouse, which has branches from Lourdes to Pierrefitte for Cauterets, from Tarbes to Bagnéres de Bigorre, and from Montrejeau to Bagnéres de Luchon. It is crossed also by lies from Tarbes to Bordeaux and from Tarbes to Agen, which separate at Vic de Bigorre. The population in 1881 was 236,474. There are three arrondissements, those of Tarbes (chief town), Argelés

(town, 1682 inhabitants), and Bagnéres de Bigorre (7634 inhabitants), 26 cantons, 480 communes. Hautes-Pyrénées con- stitutes the diocese of Tarbes, and is attached to the superior court of Pau and to the 18th Army Corps (Bordeaux).

3. PYRENEES-ORIENTALES, a department of southern ° France, bordering on the Mediterranean and the Spanish frontier, was formed in 1790 out of the old province of Roussillon and to some slight extent out of small portions of Languedoc. It lies between 42° 20' and 42° 56' N. lat. and 1° 43' and 3° 10' E. long., and is bounded on the N. by Ariége and Aude, on the E. by the Mediterranean, on the 8. by Catalonia, and on the W. by Ariége. Its boundaries are almost all natural and on the north follow the line of the Corbitres (from 2500 to 3000 feet high), on the north-west and south-west that of branches of the

Pyrenees (from 8000 to 10,000 feet), and on the south-cast that of the Albéres (from 4000 to 5000 feet), which end in the sea at Cape Cerbera. Deep and sheltered bays in this vicinity are succeeded farther north by flat sandy beaches, along which lie lagoons separated from the sea by belts of sand. The lagoon of St Nazaire is 5400 acres in extent, and that of Leucate on the borders of Aude is 20,000 acres. Mont Canigou (9137 feet), though not the highest mountain in the department, is the most remarkable, since it stands out to almost its full height above the plain, and exhibits with great distinctness the succession of zones of vegetation. From the base toa height of 1400 feet are found the orange, the aloe, the oleander, the pomegranate, and the olive; the vine grows to the height of 1800 feet ; next come the chestnut (2625 feet), the rhododendron (from 4330 to 8330 feet), pine (6400), and birch (6560) ; while stunted junipers grow quite to thesummit. The drainage of the department is shared by the Tet, Tech, and Agly, which flow direct into the Mediterranean. The Aude, the Ariége (an affluent of the Garonne), and the Segre (an afflu- ent of the Ebro) also take their rise within the department and include a small part of it in their respective basins. The Tet rises 9430 feet above the sea and descends rapidly into a very narrow valley before it debouches at Ile (between Prades and Perpignan) upon a large plain, where it flows over a wide pebbly bed and

supplies numerous canals for irrigation. It is nowhere navigable, and its supply of water varies much with the seasons, all the more that it is not fed by any glacier. The Agly, which passes Rivesaltes (famous for its wines), rises in the Corbiéres, and serves almost exclusively for irrigation, though admit- ting of navigation in the lower part of its course. The Tech, which after the Tet is the most important river of the department, flows through Vallespir (Vadlis aspera), which, notwithstanding its name, is a green valley, clothed with wood and alive with industry; in its course the river passes Prats de Mollo and Amélie-les-Bains, before reaching Arles and Céret. In the lowlands the climate is entirely that of the Mediterranean, and the productions are the same as those of Corsica or Sicily ; Amélie-les-Bains is much frequented on account of its mild climate and sheltered position. The thermometer ranges from 85° to 95° Fahr. in summer, and in winter only occasionally falls as low as 26° or 27°. The average number of rainy days in the year is 70; the mean amount of the rainfall is 27 inches on the coast, but increases towards the hills. The most common wind is the " tramontane" from north- north-west, as violent as the mistral of Provence and extremely parching. The "marinada" blows from the south-south-east.

Of a total area of 1,018,632 acres 211,960 are arable, 172,980 under vines, 167,740 under wood, 193,367 pasture-land, 27,305 meadow-land, and 148,270 barren moors (garrigues). In 1881 the live stock numbered 7287 horses, 6261 asses, 4873 mules, 17,768 horned cattle, 121,016 sheep (125 tons of wool in 1878), 12,864 goats, 28,838 pigs, and fowls and game in abundance ; there were also 6163 beehives, yielding 24 tous of wax and 19 tons of honey known as "miel de Narbonne." Thirty tons of cocoons (silk) were produced in the same year. The main source of wealth to the de- partment is its wine, of which 48,840,000 gallons were produced _in 1881; some kinds are strongly alcoholic and others are in request as liqueur wines (Rivesaltes, Banyuls). The harvest of 1881 yielded 26,551 quarters of wheat, 3793 of meslin, 87,9380 of rye, 6896 of barley, 3448 of buckwheat, 34,480 of oats, 55,172 of maize, 1,655,168 bushels of potatoes, 67,448 of dried vegetables, 22,640 of chestnuts, 110,336 of beetroot, 39 tons of henip, 39 of flax, and 23,000 of olives. Market-gardening (artichoke, asparagus, tomatoes, melons) and fruit culture (peaches, apricots, plums, pears, quinces, pomegran- ates, almonds, apples, cherries, walnuts, chestnuts) yield abundant returns. The woods produce timber for the cabinetmaker,

cork, and bark for tanning. In iron Pyrénées-Orientales is one of the richest departments in France. The greater part of the ore is transported to Aveyron, Gard, or Allier, but 25,000 tons arc smelted in blast-furnaces and 1800 in Catalonian forges witliin the depart-

ment. In 1881 12,100 tons of pig-iron were produced. The mineral resources of the department also include a bed of bismuth and mines of copper and silver, while both the Tet and the Tech are to some extent auriferous. A small amount of lignite is ob- tained (1639 tons), and various fine marbles are abundant. Granite, slate, gypsum, and limestone are quarried. The mineral waters are much resorted to. Amélie-les-Bains has twelve hot springs, chalybeate or sulphurous. In the arrondissement of Céret there are also the establishments of La-Preste-les-Bains, near Prats de Mollo, with hot sulphurous springs, aud of Boulou, the Vichy of the Pyrenees. Near Prades are the hot sulphurous springs of Molitz, and a little north of Mont Canigou are the hot springs of Vernet, containing sodium and sulphur. In the valley of the Tet

the sulphuros and alkaline springs of Olcette reach a temperature'

of 172° Fahr. The baths of Escaldas near Montlouis are hot, sulphurous, and alkaline. There are numerous tanneries, oil-works, distilleries, and saw-mills, and the manufactures of the department include the making of corks, cigarette-paper, barrels, bricks, woollen and other cloths, and "espadrilles"' (a kind of shoe made of coarse eloth with esparto soles). The ports of the department are Collioure, Port Vendres, and Banyuls, with 371 vessels and a total tonnage of 3638 in 1882. Port Vendres alone has any importance ; in 1882 the ships entered numbered 380 (104,572 tons), those which cleared 368 (95,931 tons). There are 67 miles of railway, consisting of a portion of the line from Narbonne to Barcelona (Spain) by Per- pignan, with its branches from Perpignan to Prades; there are 208 miles of Government roads and 2107 miles of other roads. The

chief routes across the Pyrenees are from Perpignan and Montlouis.

to Puycerda (Puigcerda) in the Spanish province of Gerona, through the pass of La Perche, skirting in the French department an enclave of Spanish territory. Three other roads run from Perpignan to Figueiras (Figueras) through the passes of Perthus, Banyuls, and Balistres. In 1881 the population of Pyrénées -Orientales amounted to 208,855, the majority of whom were Catalans in speech and the rest Provengal. The chief towns of the three arrondissements are PERPIGNAN (q.v.), Céret (8104 inhabitants), and Prades (3687) ; there are 17 cantons and 231 communes, The department constitutes the diocese of Perpignan and is attached to the superior court and army corps of Montpellier. (G. ME.)

PYRITES (from zp, fire), a name applied to the native

bisulphide of iron, which occurs as a yellow metallic ,

mineral, sufficiently hard to emit sparks when struck with either flint or steel. Nodules of pyrites are common in the lower beds of Chalk, and fragments of these nodules have occasionally been found on prehistoric sites under circumstances which suggest that the mineral was used as a fire-producing medium at a very early period of human culture. Even in late historic time it was often employed instead of flint, as in some of the old wheel-lock guns, whence it came to be known in France as " pierre d'arque- buse." It was afterwards found that pyrites might be made available as a source of sulphur, oil of vitriol, and other chemical products; and the mineral thus acquired such importance that in 1725 it was made the subject of a special treatise by Dr J. F. Henckel, of Freiberg in Saxony. In 1757 an English translation of this work appeared under the title of Pyritologia ; or a History of the Pyrites, the Principal Body in the Mineral Kingdom.

By modern mineralogists the term "pyrites" has been extended to a number of metallic sulphides, and it is there- fore now used rather as a group-name than as the specific designation of a mineral. Hence the typical pyrites is often distinguished as "iron pyrites," while other members of the group are known as "copper pyrites," " cobalt pyrites," "arsenical pyrites," &c. When, however, the term '"pyrites" is used without any qualifying prefix it invariably denotes the original iron pyrites, a mineral which is often known to miners as '"'mundic," and to mineralogists as "pyrite," the final letter

of the original word being omitted to bring the spelling into harmony with that of the names of many other minerals.

Iron pyrites, though containing nearly half its weight of iron, is of no importance as an ore of that metal; but the mineral is extensively worked for the sake of the sulphur which it contains, whence it is sometimes known as "sulphur ore." Large quantities of this ore have been worked in the vale of Avoca, in county Wicklow, Ireland. But by far the

ater ae

——w

PY R—PYR

most important variety of the mineral is a "cupreous iron pyrites," which for many years past has been wrought on an enormous scale in Spain and Portugal. This ore seems to be an intimate mixture of iron pyrites with a small quantity of copper pyrites, the proportion of metallic copper being generally less than 3 per cent. Notwithstanding the poorness of the ore, the copper is profitably extracted by wet processes. There is also present a small quantity of silver (20 to 35 dwt. per ton), with a trace of gold. The deposits of this cupreous pyrites are of enormous magni- tude, and occur at the junction of porphyritic rocks with clay-slate of Devonian age. The principal Spanish mines are those of Rio Tinto, Tharsis, and Calaiias in the province of Huelva; whilst the most important of the Portuguese mines'is that of San Domingos in the province of Alemtejo. There is ample proof that some of these pyritic deposits were worked by the ancient Romans.

The quantity of cupreous and other iron pyrites imported into Great Britain during the year 1883——principally from Spain and Portugal, but partly from Norway and elsewhere —was 601,288 tons, of the declared value of £1,356,083. But this quantity had been exceeded in several previous years, notably in 1880 and 1877. The quantity of iron pyrites raised in the United Kingdom in 1883 amounted to 27,672 tons, of the value (at the mine) of £17,467.

See Iron, vol. xiii. pp. 280, 288 ; Coppsr, vol. vi. p. 847 ; Mar- CASITR, vol. xv. p. 582; and MINERALOGY, vol. xvi. pp. 390, 393. For details of the Rio Tinto pyrites, see 4 Treatise on Ore-Deposits, by J. Arthur Phillips, 1884. |

PYRMONT. See WaLpEcx.

PYROMETER, an instrument for measuring high temperatures. As long ago as 1701, in a paper ! published anonymously in the Philosophical Transactions, Newton gave the results of attempts to estimate the temperature of red-hot iron by noting the time it took to cool to an observed temperature, assuming what has since been called Newton's Law of Cooling. The numerical results are given in terms of the degrees of a linseed-oil thermometer constructed by Newton. Its zero was the temperature of melting ice and its second fixed point the normal temper- ature of the human body, denoted by 12°. About the same time Guillaume Amonton in Paris made somewhat similar attempts to determine the temperature of the red-hot end of an iron bar, using for reference a rudimentary air-thermo- meter—the first of its kind in which the variation of atmospheric pressure was allowed for. Since the middle of the last century the different methods and instruments Suggested for measuring high temperatures have been very numerous,—in fact the variation of alinost every physical property of substances which alter with change of temper- ature has been utilized for this purpose. Measurements of the increase of pressure produced in a quantity of gas while its volume remains constant or of the increase of volume at constant pressure, of the heat given out by a mass of metal in cooling to an observed temperature, of the expansion of a metal or graphite bar or of a mass of clay are those which have been most frequently employed ; but, besides these, the change in the electrical resistance of a wire, the saturation-pressure of the steam of various liquids, the pressure of gas dissociated from various solids, the electromotive force of a thermo-electric couple, the density of the vapour of a liquid, the change of shape of & compound spiral of different metals, have been used,— even the alteration in the wave-length of a note of given pitch has been suggested as capable of being made use of for pyrometric purposes. For reasons which will be Siven below, the numerical results obtained by one or other of the numerous forms of the gas-thermometer have " More definitely intelligible value. The gas-thermometer

1 “Scala Graduum Caloris,” in Phil. Trans., xxii, p. 824.

method and the calorimetric method were both employed by Pouillet for the accurate measurement of high temper- atures before 1836.

§ 2. The indications obtained by any of the numerous methods which have been suggested are, as a rule, expressed in terms of Centigrade or Fahrenheit degrees. This assign- ment of numbers presupposes not only a definition of tem- perature by which the size of the degree is determined but also a physical law which gives the relation between the measured interval of temperature and the standard degree. The various definitions of the standard degree that might be employed will be found in the article Hxaz, secs. 12, 24, 25, 30, 31, 32; and in sec. 35 of the same article the definition of the absolute thermodynamic scale of temper- atures is given. In the same article (sec. 38) it is shown that the “absolute temperature” of a liquid in thermal equilibrium with its own vapour under a pressure p may be obtained from the formula

‘ (1—o)dp

Jpk + t=t,¢ :

where p is the density of the vapour, po that of the liquid, « the latent heat per unit-mass of the vapour corresponding to the saturation-pressure p. The dynamical equivalent of heat is represented by J. We have therefore the com- plete theory of what may soon become a practical method of expressing temperatures in the thermodynamic scale. Sir W. Thomson, in the article mentioned (secs. 39-45), has described arrangements for measuring the pressure of the saturated vapours of various liquids which will give that measurement in a thoroughly satisfactory manner up to, at any rate, some 600° C. For the higher tempera- tures mercury is the liquid employed. There are, however, some experimental data still wanting before the formula quoted above can be applied to the numerical calculation of the temperature. These are (1) the density p of the saturated vapour corresponding to the series of pressures, and (2) the corresponding latent heat « of vaporization. These constants have not yet been actually observed.

Instruments such as those figured in the article cited can, however, be employed with convenience and accuracy as continuous intrinsic thermoscopes, whose indications can supply a numerical measure of temperature after an empirical graduation. When used thus they possess the enormous advantage that the pressure of the saturated vapour at a definite temperature is perfectly definite, so that a single observation of the pressure is all that is necessary to determine the temperature, and the instru- ment can be easily arranged, so that this observation is practically a very simple one. The pressure of mercury vapour has already been determined by Regnault for temperatures up to 550°. A thermoscopic method of pyrometry which is very similar to the above was sug- gested by Lamy.? He proposed to measure the pressure of carbonic-acid gas dissociated from calcium carbonate. There is experimental evidence to show that the pressure of the dissociated gas is definite at a definite tempera- ture. The recombination of the dissociated gas with the solid is, however, a slow process, and the method has been pronounced by Weinhold? to be practically unsatis- factory.

§ 3. Gas Pyrometry. Measurement of High Tempera- tures by the Expansion of Air and other Gases and Vapours. —Temperatures may be expressed in the absolute thermo- dynamic scale by the method of the gas-thermometer, which is available for practical purposes even at very high temperatures. It has been shown? that the indications

*2 Comptes Rendus, xix. p. 347. : 3 '*Pyrometrische Versuche," Pogg. Ann., cxlix. p. 186. 4 See Heat, secs. 46-67.*

of a nitrogen or hydrogen gas-thermometer, whether it is arranged to show the increase of pressure at constant volume or the increase of volume at constant pressure, give for the temperature numerical results which are practically identical with the corresponding numbers on the absolute scale. It follows, therefore, that any two gas-thermo- meters, if similarly graduated, would give identical indica- tions for the same temperature, no matter whether or not they are filled with the same kind of gas and whether

or not the quantities of the gases are such that the pressure in the two thermometers is the same at any one temperature. This important property of gas-thermometers has been experimentally verified by Regnault! by direct comparison up to 350° C. of instruments filled with different gases and at different pressures. For these reasons the readings of a properly arranged gas-thermometer have justly come to be regarded as furnishing the standard of temperature, at any rate outside the limits of the freezing and boiling points, and indeed may now be regarded as the tempera- ture standard for scientific purposes throughout the whole range. The Kew standards are calibrated mercury-in-glass thermometers whose fixed points are repeatedly redeter- mined. Such instruments will not agree exactly with the gas-thermometer except at the freezing-point and _ boiling- point. Comparisons have been made between various mercury-thermometers and air-thermometers by Regnault ? and many others. The results obtained by different ob- servers are not entirely concordant; but it is needless here to discuss them, for, whatever may be the divergence between the mercury and air thermometers in the freezing- point and boiling-point, the method of measuring higher temperatures by continuing the scale of a mercury-thermo- meter beyond those limits is altogether untrustworthy in consequence of the very wide divergence between different mercury-thermometers at the same temperature, amount- ing sometimes to 10° or more? at a temperature of 300°. The air-thermometer readings must therefore be regarded as the standard at any rate for temperatures beyond the boiling-point.

The general principle employed in the use of the gas- thermometer is as follows. Let p, be the pressure of a mass of gas at 0° C., 4) the pressure of the same mass of gas at 100° C., the volume being the same, p, the observed pressure of the same mass of gas at some unknown tem- perature ¢, the volume still remaining the same, then

Per Po. t (1) Pm-R loo :

*We require, therefore, three observations of the pressure, two * to graduate the instrument and the third to measure the temperature. If the thermometer has been filled with gas of a perfectly definite kind—e.g., properly dried and purified air, nitrogen, or hydrogen—and the containing vessel has been*

previously thoroughly dried, the value of Po) May be obtained from tables, since p49) =p)(1 + 100a), where a is the tabulated coefficient of expansion of the gas at constant volume. It is practically impossible to keep the volume of the gas constant in consequence of the expansion of the envelope. A correction must be applied on this account, the value of which is derived from inde- pendent observations of the expansion of the material of the envelope. If the pressure of the gas be maintained constant, and the volumes %, 99, % be observed for the three temperatures ¢°, 100°, 0°, we have—

Wy—V _ t V9 — Vy 100

1 "Dela Mesnre des Températures," Mém. de 'Inst., xxi. p. 168.

2 Mém. de UInst., xxi. p. 191. 3 See Hua, see. 26.

- *The two known temperatures at which the pressure is measured need not neeessarily be 0° and 100°, though these are often the most convenient. The formula requires only slight modification to make it applicable when any two other known temperatures are adopted.*

PYROMETERER

In like manner 2) —v¥ may be taken from a table of the

coefficients of expansion of gases. The different methods which have been suggested for the employment of this property of gases to measure high temperatures are very numerous. We give details of a few of them.

(1) The Constant-Presswre Method.—The following is a very simple and practical plan of employing the method for obtaining a reading of the temperature. A glass or porcelain bulb, provided with a fine neck, is very carefully dried and filled with perfectly dry air ; it is then exposed to the source of the heat whose temper- ature is to be investigated in such a manner that the point of the neck just projects from the furnace. When the equilibrium of temperature is reached, the neck is hermetically sealed by a blow- pipe or oxy-hydrogen flame, and the bulb is withdrawn and allowed to cool, and weighed. The neck is then immersed in water or mercury and the point broken off. In consequence of the previous expansion of the air the

pressure in the interior is much léss than the atmospheric pressure, and the liquid consequently enters the bulb. When so much has entered that the pressure is the same inside and out (the difficulty of the comparative opacity of the porcelain is not insurmountable), the end is closed by a small piece of wax, and the bulb removed and weighed, with the liquid it contains. The bulb is then completely filled with the liquid, and weighed a third time. The difference between the third and first weighings gives a value % of formula (2), which only requires correction for the expansion of the envelope, while the difference between the second and first weighings gives a value of the volume from which v and V9 can be sharia, using the known co-efficient of expansion of air, and thus all the requisite data for the deter- mination of ¢ are obtained. This method was used by Regnault® to determine the coefficient of expansion of air, and has since been described as "a new pyrometer."

In the process just described the volume of the residual gas is measured ; its pressure, after cooling, may be measured instead, by an arrangement which was suggested by Regnault. The bulb is provided with a long fine neck, to the end of which a tap is fitted and so arranged that it can be easily connected with a manometer. The bulb is exposed to the high temperature, the tap being left open, and when the final temperature is reached the tap is closed and the bulb allowed to cool; it is then connected with the manometer, and, if the tap be a three- way tap, drilled as shown in fig. 1, it is easy to expel all the'! air from the bulb side of the manometer, between the mercury surface and the tap. The residual pressure is then measured by the manometer.

An instrument for observing the continuous variation of volume of a gas at constant pressure is figured and described by Sir W. Thomson in Hear (sec. 65). Arrangements have also been sug- gested by which the density ® of the gas at the high temperature can be directly measured. Regnault® has deseribed a hydrogen pyrometer based on this principle suitable for measuring the temperature ofa porcelain furnace. A wrought-iron tube of known capacity is permanently fixed in the furnace ; it is filled with pure dry hydrogen by passing a current of the gas through it for some time. The current of gas is then stopped, and after the gas has attained the

temperature of the furnace it is swept out by a current of dry air and passed over red-hot copper oxide. The water thus

5 Mém. de UInst., xxi.

TAC. h., mer (G06.

8 Throughout this article the term "density" is used whenever the mass of a unit of volume of a substance is referred to.

9 Ann. de Chim., [8], xiii. p. 39.

6 Comptes Rendus, xc. 727, 773.

PYROMETER

formed is collected in sulphuric acid tubes and its amount deter- mined by their increase in weight, and from this observation the density of the hydrogen in the wrought-iron tube is caleulated. An arrangement of taps makes the observation a very easy one when the apparatus is once set up. 'The formula (2) requires in this ease to be slightly modified. Thus let d;, dy, dy be the den- sities of the hydrogen at the temperatures ¢°, 100°, and 0° respect- ively, then for the same mass of gas 7 we have— Uz Ag=Vy99 Ay = Vp Uy =.

The formula therefore beeomes—

dy ~ Ae Ayo t (3)

dy— yp dy 100 ;

(2) The formula shows how the temperature of air in any experi- ment may be determined when its density at that temperature is observed. It is sometimes more convenient to determine instead the density of some vapour whieh at ordinary temperatures would be a solid or a liquid, and to deduce from that observation the density of air at the corresponding tenrperature. Thus, suppose that the density 6, (expressed in grammes per ee.) of the vapour of any given liquid or solid is observed, and that independent observa- tions show that the specifie gravity of the vapour, referred to air at

the same temperature and pressure, is o, then we have d= 6,/, and, since dy and dy can be taken from tables, all the necessary quantities in equation (3) are obtained. It will be noticed that the value of o, the specifie gravity of the vapour, is to be derived from independent observations. Apart from direct experimental evi- dence in any particular casc, there is the generally accepted theory, based on the law of Avogadro, that the specific gravity of a gas or vapour referred to hydrogen at the same temperature and pressure is represented by half the number expressing the molecular weight of the substance of which the vapour is composed. For elements, with few exceptions (of which mereury is one), the ratio of the atomic weights gives the specific gravity referred to hydrogen at the same temperature and pressure. At any rate, if there are suffi- eient data for us to regard « as known, we may evidently deduce the value of d;, and thus by formula (3) the temperature, from an observation of 6;.

Mercury Vapour.—Regnault! suggested the direet observation of the density of mercury vapour for the purpose of detennining the temperature. The process is as follows. A quantity of mereury is placed in a wrought-iron flask provided with a perforated lid as shown in fig. 2, No. 1. The flask is then exposed to the temper- ature to be measured, and when thermal equilibrium is attained the small lid is slid along so that the neck is closed. The flask is then taken out and allowed to cool, The mercury is collected and weighed ; the volume of the flask is determined and eorrected for the expansion of the iron ; and these two observations determine the den- sity of mercury (in grammes per ce.) at the { temperature in question. The specific gravity 2 of mereury vapour referred to air at the same temperature and pressure is known to be 6°92, Nol. Be & A porcelain flask with a ball stopper, shown in Fig. 2. fig. 2, No. 2, may be used instead of the iron flask.

Iodine Vapour. Deville and Troost's Pyrometer.—Some of the best-known determinations of very high boiling-points have been made by Deville and Troost,? who employed iodine in a manner similar to that in which Regnault employed mereury. Some iodine Was contained in a porcelain flask of about 300 ec. capacity, with a fine neek, which just protruded from the source of heat and was loosely elosed by means of a stopper ; when the temperature was reached and the iodine completely volatilized, the stopper was fused on to the nozzle by means of an oxy-hydrogen blowpipe. The

mass of the iodine remaining in the flask was determined by weigh- Ing, after it had cooled; the volume of the flask had been pre- viously determined ; thus the density of the iodine vapour eould be found. A correction of the volume of the flask was necessary in consequence of the expansion of the Bayeux poreelain of which it was composed. This was obtained from independent observa- tions of the linear elongation of a rod of poreelain for temperatures up to 1500° ; their results gave a coefficient of cubical expansion of 00000108 between 0° and the boiling-point of cadmium (856°), 0°0000108 between 0° and the melting-point of silver (1000°), from 0‘000016 to 0-000017 between 1000° and 1400°, reaching 000020 towards 1500°. The specific gravity of iodine vapour was taken to

8-716, referred to air at the same temperature and pressure ; this assumption was justified by additional observations with air and by using the number in a determination of the density of steam at the boiling-point of mereury.

(3) The Manometrie Gas-thermometer.—In the constant-pressure methods of measuring temperature which have just been described one experiment gives only a single observation of the temperature. =) ai eee

l Ann de Chimie, [8], 1xiii. p. 39.

: Mean of results of Von Meyer, Dumas, Mitscherlich, and Bineau. Ann. de Chimie, [3}, lviii. p. 257.

H Gea 7 SDLP LLY 1 17

allow for the expansion of the glass of the

131

The continuous variation of temperature can be better observed by the econstant-volume method. This method as used for tem- peratures up to that at which glass softens (about 550° C.) was thoroughly investigated by Regnault, whose normal instrument is diseussed under HEAT, see. 24. The difference of pressure between the gas contained in the bulb and the atmosphere is measured by an open mercury-manometer. The barometrie

pressure must also be observed in order to obtain the values p,, 499, and py respectively of formula (1). Various forms have been given to the manometric apparatus in order that the mercury may be brought at each observation to the fiducial mark in the limb in connexion with the bulb. Balfour Stewart's> has a screw adjustment. An instru- ment deseribed by Codazza® is provided with an air-eompression manometer, and thus the neeessity of a separate observation of the barometrie height is dispensed with. Various other suggestions have been made for seeuring the same object.

The most convenient form of the instrument for general use is Jolly's (deseribed in Poggendorff's Jubelband, p. 82, 1874), and repre- sented in fig. 3. The two vertical tubes of the manometer are conneeted by an india-rubber tube properly strengthened by a cotton cover- ing, aud they can be made to slide vertically up aud down a wooden pillar which supports them ; they are provided with elamps for fixing them in any position and a tangent serew for fine adjustment. The connexion between the bulb and the manometer is made by means of the convenient three-way tap deseribed above. The seale of the instrument is engraved on the back of a strip of plane mirror before silvering, and the divisions are earried sufficiently far aeross the scale for the reflexions of the two surfaces of the mercury to be visible behind the seale. Parallax ean thus be avoided and an aecurate reading obtained without the ne- eessity of using a kathetometer. In order to

reservoir a weight-thermometer bulb is sup- plied with the instrument, made from another specimen of the same kind of glass, and the relative expansion of the mereury and the glass can thus be determined by the observer him- self. The volume of the air-bulb and that of the eapillary tube and the small portion of the manometer tube above the small beak of glass, the point of whieh serves as the fidueial mark, are determined by the instru- ment-makers, The formula of reduction is— _ #A-H v 1) ~ ally — 88H v° Hy' 1l+at'?'

where Z is the pressure at the high temperature ¢, H, the pressure at the temperature of the air ¢', v'/v the ratio of the volume of the connecting tube, &e., to the volume of the bulb, a the coefficient of expansion of the air, and 38 the coefficient of eubical expansion of the glass. A similar instrument

with a bulb which will resist higher temperatures may be used beyond the softening-point of glass. Pouillet in his elassical researeh on high temperatures" used a platinum bulb and connecting tube. He employed the eonstant- pressure method and measured in the manometer tube the variation of volume. Regnault® mentions a platinum air-pyrometer and gives instructions for drawing the platinum connecting tube; but no results of measurements obtained with it are given. E. Becquerel ® published an aecount of results obtained with a platinum reservoir air-thermometer, whieh were objected to by Deville and Troost on the ground that platinum becomes porous at high temperatures, and their objection is supported by an experiment described by them in the Répertoire de Chimie Appliquée, 1863, p. 237, and Fortsehritte der Physik, 1863, p. 84. Weinhold?° used a Jolly's thermometer fitted with a porcelain bulb and connecting tube, and Deville and Troost are of opinion that porcelain forms the only suitable material for gas-thermometer bulbs for very high tempera- tures.11_ For use at high temperatures the .gas-thermometer should be filled with gas at a low pressure, so that when heated there may be no great difference of pressure between the interior and the external air. It is perhaps unnecessary here to insist upon the necessity for the complete desiccation of the interior of the bulb and of the gas employed.

(4) The last modifieation of the gas-thermometer to which it is necessary to eall attention is that designed and used by Berthelot,!? intended for reading high temperatures rapidly to an aceuraey of within two or three degrees. It consists of a small eylindrical bulb

5 Phil. Trans., eliii. p. 425. 7 Comptes Rendus, iii. (1836), p. 782. § Ann. de Chimie, lxviii. p. 49.

4 Mém de U'Inst., xxi.

6 Dingler's Journal, ecx. p. 255.

8 Mém de l'Inst., xxi. p. 263.

10 Pogg. Ann., cxlix.

ll See Deville and Troost on glass and other envelopes for high-temperature instruments, Ann. de Chimie, [3], lviii. p. 265.

12 Ann. de Chimie, [4], xiii. p. 144.

of glass or silver of 4 cc. capacity connected with a vertical stem of thermometer tubing of 0°2 min. diameter. This stem terminates in an open vessel of mercury, and thus the pressure of the gas can be measured. Berthelot's instrument is graduated by refercnce to four fixed points, namely, the freezing-point and boiling- point of water, and the boiling-points of mercury and sulphur. In order that the mercury index may move easily in the tube, cxtreme care must be taken in drying the tube, and only perfectly pure mercury can be used.

§ 4. The results obtained by any of the air-pyrometric methods just described may be employed to express directly the temperature of the pyrometer in numbers agreeing closely with the thermodynamic scale. The other instru- ments to which we now turn our attention can only be regarded as intrinsic thermoscopes, whicli, in order to give intelligible numerical results, must be graduated by direct comparison with an air-thermometer. Some of them may indeed be used by extrapolation to give a numerical measure of temperatures outside the practical range of the air-thermometer, employing for that purpose a formula verified for temperatures within the range. A case in point is the determination of the temperature of fusion of platinum by the calorimetric method described below. These intrinsic thermoscopes are frequently much more convenient in practice than any of the modifications of the air-pyrometer.

§ 5. Discontinuous Intrinsic Thermoscopes.—The best ex- ample of the measurement of temperature by a discontinu- ous intrinsic thermoscope is that suggested by Prinsep.1 He formed a series of definite percentage alloys of silver and gold and of gold and platinum. The melting-points of these alloys give a series of fixed temperatures lying be- tween the melting-points of silver and gold and of gold and platinum respectively. An observation is taken by exposing in the furnace, upon a small cupel, a set of small

flattened specimens of the alloys, not necessarily larger than pin heads, and noticing which of them are fused.

The temperatures of fusion of these alloys have been determined by Erhard and Shertel?; their results are given in the following

table, taken from Landolt and Bornstein's Physikalisch-chemische Tabellen.

Table IL—The Fusing-Points of Prinsep's Alloys.

1, SitverR AND GOLD.

Remcent, Per cent. Fusing-

Per eent. Per cent. Fusing- of silver. of gold. point.3 of silver. of gold. point. 100 on 954° 40 60 1020° 80 20 975° 20 80 1045° 60 40 995° aa 100 1075°

2. GOLD AND PLATINUM,

Per cent. | Per cent. of Fusing-

Per cent. | Per cent, of | Fusing- of gold. platinum. point.3 of gold. platinum, point. 100 60 1075° 45 55 1420° 95 5 1100° 40 60 1460° 90 10 1130° 35 65 1495° 85 15 1160° 30 'i 1535° 80 20 1190° 25 75 1570° 75 25 1220° 20 80 1610° 70 30 1255° 15 85 1650° 65 85 1285° 10 90 1690° 60 40 1320° 5 95 1730° 55 45 1350° 66 100 1775° 50 50 1385°

It is said, however, that some difficulty is met with in the use of Prinsep's alloys in consequence of the property possessed by silver of taking up oxygen when melted and ejecting it on solidify- ing and of molecular changes in the alloys which make it unadvis- able to use the same specimen more than once. A similar method has recently been employed by Carnellcy and Carleton Williams, in which metallic salts with high fusing-points were employed instead of alloys, the fusing-points being initially determined by a calorimetric method. These methods recall an old empirical method sometimes employed in porcelain manufacture for estimating the*

1 Phil. Trans., 1828, p. 79.

2 Jahrb. fiir das Berg- wid Hiitten-Wesen in Sachsen, 1879.

3 Determinations of temperature by a porcelain air-thermometer. Errors in general less than 20°,

4 See Chem. Soc. Jowr., 1876, i. 489 ; 1877, i. 8365; 1878.

PYROME@E R

temperature of a furnace. Certain "pyrometrical beads" or "trials" —1.¢., small hoops or gallipots of clay—indicated the temperature by their tint much in the same way as the proper temperature is indicated by the colour of steel in tempering.

§ 6. The Calorimetric Method.—This is a very conveni- ent method and is often practically employed for measur- ing the temperature of furnaces. The observation consists in determining the amount of heat given out by a mass of platinum, copper, or wrought-iron on cooling in water from the high temperature. The theory is simple. Let m be the capacity for heat of the calorimeter and of the water contained in it, Jf the mass of metal, 7' the tem- perature required, ¢ the initial temperature of the water in the calorimeter, @ the final temperature of the water after the introduction of the metal, and x the mean specific heat of the metal between the temperatures 0 and 7'. Then

_m(6 -t) ae a

The value of «, the mean specific heat of the metal between the temperatures occurring in the experiment, must be determined by precisely sinilar calorimetric experiments, in which the high tem- perature 7' is determined by the application of one of the air-pyro- meter methods. The following table (II.) gives the best-known determinations of the mean specific heat of platinum for different ranges of temperature.

Table II,—Mean Specific Heat of Platinum.

Pouillet,5 by platinum ' Weinhold,§ by porcelain |; Violle,7 by porcelain re- reservoir air-thermo- | reservoir air – thermo- servoir air – thermo- meter.

|| meter. ineter.

Range of Mean | Range of Mean Range of Mean temp. spec. heat. temp. spec, heat. || temp. |Spec. heat, 0°- 100° 0°03350 10°°2 — 99°“1 | 003287 0°-100° 070323 » 200° 0°03392 | 16°°49-288°°5 0°03270 »» 300° | 0-03434 | 16°-9 -246°-4 | 0-03520 », 400° 0°03476 | 17°°2 -256°S | 0:03411 » 900° 0703518 | 23°°5 ~476° 003188 600° 0°03560 | 24°°6 -478° 003230 700° 0:03602 25°°4 -507° 0°03253 ° ° ‘ », 800° | O-03644 | 2077 ~705° | 003333 “784 00865 900° 0.03686 | 23°°6 -766° 0:03381 », 1000 0°03728 | 22°°3 ~934° 0:03396 0°-1000° 00377 y, 1100° 0°03770 i 17°°3 -952° 003338 e117 7° 0°0388 Violle’s results give, if ¢¢ be the mean specific heat between

0° and é°, ¢y¢=0°0817 +°000006¢. Assuming this formula to hold beyond the verified limits, he obtains by calorimetric observations 1779° C. as the temperature of the melting-point of platinum. The true specific heat of wrought-iron at temperature ¢ is accord- ing to Weinhold (J.c.) given by the formula ¢=cy + at + Bt?, where Cy =0‘105907, a=0‘00006538, B=0:000000066477, and the total heat obtained from unit-mass of wrought-iron cooling from ¢,° to t,°

is therefore Si Co +at+Bt?)dt, The specific heat of copper does not

appear to have been accurately determined for high temperatures. The determinations by Bede, quoted by Landolt and Bornstein (op. cit., p. 178) are— 15°-100° mean specific heat 0°09331 ; 72° 0°09483 ;

16°-17 ” ” ’ 17°-247° ” 19 0°09680.

There are two obvious sources of error of considerable amount in the use of the calorimeter for pyrometrical purposes, viz., (1) the liability of the metal to lose heat during its passage from the fur- nace to the calorimeter, and (2) the evaporation of water from the calorimeter. With the small mass of platinum generally used, the former source of error is likely to be very important, for the temperature of a mass of 50 grammes of mercury at 100° C. may fall a full degree in being carried to a calorimeter 3 feet away. It does not appear that any estimates of the amount of loss which may be so produced in calorimetric determinations have been published ; but in order

to reduce the loss Salleron® suggests the employment of a platinum or copper carrier in which to heat the mass of metal, and J. C. Hoadly® uses a graphite crucible for that purpose. The second source of loss is more easily disposed of. Weinhold (/.c.) uses a calorimeter closed by a lid and quite filled with water. This is provided with a broad tube passing nearly to the bottom of the calorimeter, and the latter is tilted while the platinum mass 1s being introduced ; whereas Violle!° gets over the same difficulty by the use of a calorimeter provided with a platinum " éprouvette, so that the heat is imparted more slowly to the water. In a calori- metric pyrometer for technical purposes, made by Messrs Siemens to. nea nna ont mh

® 0. &., ait. pe 786 (1836). 6 Pogg. Ann., exlix.

7 Phil. Mag., [5], iv. p. 318. 8 Chem. News, xxvii. 77. 9 Jour. of Franklin Inst., xciv. p. 252.

10" Pil. Mag., (5), iv. p. 318)

= eS EO er

PYROMETER

For

Brothers, the mass of metal employed is a copper cylinder. a sketch and description of the instrument, see Iron, vol. xiii. p. 304 (fig. 21).

§ 7. Continuous Intrinsic Thermoscopes.—The other pyro-

metric methods to which we have space to refer are those which depend on the continuous variation of some property of a body with variation of temperature. Each instru- ment of this kind requires graduation by direct or indirect comparison with an air-thermometer. The methods may be grouped under three heads,—(1) the expansion of a rod of metal or earthenware; (2) the variation of electrical resistance of a wire ; (3) the electromotive force of a thermo- electric junction,

(1) Expansion of Metals and Earthenware. —The necessity for the measurement of high temperatures has been most felt perhaps in pottery manufacture, and in consequence many attempts have been made by potters to establish a system of pyrometry based on the

ermanent contraction which clay undergoes when exposed to a high temperature. The action of Wedgwood's pyrometer described in the Phil. Trans., 1782, 1784, and 1786, depends on this property of clay. The linear contraction of a clay cylinder was measured by means of a metal groove with plane sides inclined to each other at a small angle, and the temperature was estimated numerically by comparing the contraction with that produced by a known dif- ference of temperature. The results were not very satisfactory, since the clay would contract the same amount by long-continued heating at a lower temperature as by a short exposure to a higher one. Wedgwood's estimate of the melting-point of cast iron was 20,577° Fahr.

The measurement of temperature by the expansion of a metal rod has been very frequently attempted. The first instrument to which the name of " pyrometer" was given was of this kind, and was devised by Muschenbroek,

and others were devised in the early part of the century by Des Aguliers, Ellicot, Graham, Smeaton, Ferguson, Brogniart, Laplace, and Lavoisier, and later by Pouillet. We may say here that the only acceurate methods of measuring the extremely minute elongations of metal rods are those in which the expansion is referred by some optical arrangement to a scale kept quite uninfluenced by the source of heat which causes the expansion. In this respect Pouillet's method of employing the expansion of a rod is superior to those previously employed.

The relative expansion of a metal in an earthenware socket was employed by Daniell in his well-known pyrometer. The relative expansion was indicated by an index of porcelain which was pushed forward when the bar expanded and left behind when it contracted, so that after the apparatus had cooled the expansion could be measured at leisure by the scale provided ; due allowarice was made for the expansion of the index itself. Quite recently the expansion of graphite has been employed for pyrometry by Steinle and Harting! As the result of his experience, however, Weinhold 2 states that it is not possible to obtain trustworthy measurements of temperature from an instrument depending on the relative expan- sion of solid bodies.

An ingenious application of the relative expansion of gold, silver, and platinum was introduced by Bréguet. Very narrow strips of the three metals are fastened together to form a compound ribbon- spiral, and to the end of the spiral is attached a needle, which, as the temperature changes, moves over a graduated circle. The in- strument, of course, requires empirical graduation. A modification of it is sometimes used to measure the temperature of the hot blast of an iron furnace.

(2) Variation of Electrical Resistance. —A pyrometric method founded on the variation of the electrical resistance of a platinum Wire has been practically carried out by Siemens, and was de- scribed by him in the Bakerian lecture (Proc. Roy. Soc., 1871). " Assuming a dynamical law, according to which the electrical re- sistance increases according to the velocity with which the atoms are moved by heat, a parabolic ratio of increase of resistance with Merease of temperature follows, and in adding to this the coeffi- cients (representing linear expansion and an ultimate

minimum resistancet the resistance r for any temperature is expressed by the general formula r=a7!87-y, which is found to agree very closely both with the experimental data at low temperatures sup- plied by Dr Matthiessen and with the experimental results varying up to 1000° OC." The details of the experimental verification are not given in the abstract of the lecture, nor are the numerical values of the constants for platinum. But Weinhold gives the information, obtained by letter from the lecturer, that 7 is the absolute temperature, and the numerical values of the constants— a=0°039369, B=0°00216407, y= —0°24127.

The experimental arrangement for practical purposes of the in-

*' See Beckert, Zeitschr. f. anal. Chem., xxi. p-. 248, 1882. * Pogg. Ann., cxlix. p. 206.*

strument as supplied by Messrs Siemens Brothers is exceedingly convenient. It is shown in fig. 4. P is the coil of platinum-wire wound on a cy- .

linder of fireclay, and connected by stout platinum wires, X,, X, 0 with three bind- ing screws at the end of a stout iron tube 6 feet long, and thereby with an arrange- ment for compar- ing its resistance with that of a standard coil X, by means of dif- ferential volta- meters V,V. A current from six Leclanché cells is divided into two parts, one going through the standard coil xX, the volta- meter V, and an additional pla- tinuim wire, also marked X, join- ing the other branch again at the end of the platinum coil, while the other branch includes the voltameter V, the connect- ing wire X, and the coil P. The wire OC is com- mon to both cir-

COUT OT TT

Bix

- Fig. 4,

cuits, The amount of gas generated in the voltameters is inversely proportional to the resistances of the respective branch circuits. Thus, if V

and V' be the volumes of gas in the two voltameters respectively,

V _ Resistance of P and its connexions –

V'~ Resistance of X and its connexions

The leading wires from the screws of the iron tube to the com- mutator BLC are bound together in one cable, so that they have the same resistance ; thus the observed variation in the ratio of the resistances may be regarded as entirely due to the variation in the resistance of P. The height of the liquids in the two voltameters can be adjusted by the short glass tubes S, 8' sliding vertically on the wooden support to which the voltameters are attached. They are connected by means of india-rubber tubing with the voltameters. The commutator BBC is used to reverse the direction of the current every ten seconds during the observation, which lasts long enough to give a sufficient supply of gas in the voltameter tubes. By this artifice the error due to variation in the polarization of the electrodes is avoided.

The voltametric arrangement for comparing the resistances simplifies very greatly the apparatus required. In a laboratory the resistances may be, of course, more accurately compared by means of resistance-coils and a galvanometer. For technical purposes the temperatures up to 1400° are reduced from the observations by means of a very convenient slide rule. For temperatures beyond 1400° the calculation has to be gone through. The experimental data upon which the vertfication of the formula and the determination of the constants rest are not very numerous. Besides the measurements of Siemens referred to above, there is an experimental comparison by Weinhold of the results obtained from the instrument and those of an air-thermometer. For these observations the iron cover of the coil was removed. The results up to 500°, which in each case are the mean of from five to ten observations, show an agreement within 9°; those between 500° and 1000°, comprising one observa- tion at each of six temperatures, three of these between 531° and 553° and three between 933° and 992°, show differences of about + 26° at the lower limit and — 53° at the upper. The arrangement for comparing the resistances was found to be satisfactory and sufficiently sensitive. Specimens of this instrument were also sub- mitted to experiment by a committee of the British Association (Report, 1874), but their attention was confined to the resolution of the

question whether the platinum coil gave the same resist- ance after being repeatedly heated and cooled. It was found that

this was not the case unless the coil was carefully protected by a platinum sheath.

(8) Thermo-clectric Methods. —The measurement of high temper- atures by means of a thermo-electric junction has been attempted many times.

§ 8. The application of the variation in the wave-length of sound to the measurement of the density of air and con- sequent determination of the temperature has been sug- gested by Cagnard de Latour, Damon-Ferrand, Mayer, and Chautard. The method is liable to difficulties which need not be detailed here, but which are obviously sufficient to cause the experiments to be regarded rather as scientific curiosities than as pyrometric measurements.

§ 9. Hitherto we have confined our attention to the ques- tion whether any instrument described is capable of giving trustworthy indications of the temperature of the instru- ment itself; in order to be satisfied as to whether they fulfil their object, we have still to consider whether they can be easily made to take up the temperature of the body or enclosure under investigation. This is a very difficult question, and it seems doubtful whether with such an instrument as Siemens's electrical pyrometer, of which the coil is contained in a massive sheath of iron connected to about 6 feet of stout iron tube, thermal equilibrium between the coil and the enclosure is possible. We have not space to discuss the matter, but it sees not unlikely that the differences which still exist between the results of different observers may be due to the method of exposure of the pyrometer. In connexion with this the researches of Regnault® with reference to the determination of the boiling-point of mercury and sulphur are very important. He observed that his thermometers, when exposed directly to the steam, indicated too high a temperature, and that it was therefore necessary for the socket enclosing the ther- mometer to dip into the liquid to such an extent that the surface of the liquid was above the level of the top of the thermometer bulb. Whether or not this may account for some of the

differences between the results obtained for the boiling-point of zinc by Deville and Troost and by E. Becquerel and Violle it is difficult to say.

The following table (III.) will show the divergence among the best of the high-temperature measurements.

Lable III.—Determinations of the Boiling-Point of Zine.

Reference.

Pressure. Temp. Method. Observer. _ 759°54 mm. | 1039° Iodine vapour pyro- | Deville and Troost,| § 8, (2) meter 1859 761°2 ” 1040° ” ” ” ” ” 932° Platinum reservoir | E. Becquerel, 1863 | § 3, (3) air-thermometer 891° Porcelain reservoir os na air-thermometer 718‘9 4, | 1085° Porcelain reservoir Weinhold, 1873 ….| § 3, (3) air-thermometer 929°-954° | Air-thermometer ..’ Deville and Troost,} § 3, (1) | 1880 916°-925° | Hydrogen – thermo- 50 99 as meter 760 ” 930° Porcelain reservoir | Violle, 1882…....| § 8, (8) air-thermometer

§ 10. Perhaps the most important modern attempts at the development of pyrometry are those connected with the identification of the law connecting the temperature

of a body with the amount and nature of the energy which SS Se eee eee 1 Ann. de Chim., 1878. 2 Ann. de Chim., Ixviii. p. 49. 4 Mém. del’Inst., xxi. p. 241.

3 See ELECTRICITY. 5 Mém. de UInst., xxvi. p. 518.

it radiates. On such attempts depends the possibility of measuring the temperature of a hot body by means of the light it emits. This is evidently a most desirable object, since, if that were possible, one of the great difficulties of pyrometry—the bringing of the measuring instrument to the temperature of the body under investigation—would immediately disappear. At present, however, there is no general agreement among scientific men as to the form the relation takes. We cannot here do more than refer to the

“Report on Spectrum Analysis,” in the British Asso- ciation’s Reports for 1881 and 1884, for references to the literature of the subject. See RapIATION. (Ww. N. 8.) PYROTECHNY is the art of producing pleasing scenic effects by means of fire. It is not held to include the manufacture of inflammable and explosive substances for other purposes. The use of fireworks for purposes of display is not a modern invention, for it appears to have existed in China in very ancient times; but the secret of constructing them remained unknown in Europe till about the 13th century, when the knowledge of GuNPowWDER (q.v.) crept in from the East. In modern times the art has been gradually improved by the work of specialists, who have had the advantage of being guided by scientific knowledge. The value of such knowledge to the pyro- technist is extremely great; for he must be governed by the principles of chemistry in the selection of his materials, and his various contrivances for turning them to the best account are subject to the laws of mechanics. As in all such cases, however, science is useless without the aid of practical experience and acquired manual dexterity. Many substances have a strong tendency to combine with oxygen, and will do so, in certain circumstances, so energetically as to render the products of the combination (which may be solid matter or gas) intensely hot and luminous. This is the general cause of the phenomenon known as fire. Its special character depends chiefly on the nature of the substances burned and on the manner in which the oxygen is supplied to them. As is well known, our atmosphere contains oxygen gas diluted with about four times its volume of nitrogen; and it is this oxygen which supports the combustion of our coal and candles. But itis not often that the pyrotechnist depends wholly upon atmospheric oxygen for his purposes ; for the phenomena of combustion in it are too familiar, and too little capable of variation, to strike with wonder. Two cases, however, where he does so may be instanced, viz., the burning of magnesium powder and of lycopodium, both of which are used for the imitation of lightning in theatres. Nor does the pyrotechnist resort much to the use of pure oxygen, although very brilliant effects may be produced by burning various substances in glass jars filled with the gas. Indeed, the art could never have existed in anything like its present form had not certain solid substances become known which, containing oxygen in combination with other elements, are capable of being made to evolve large volumes of it at the moment it is required. The best examples of these solid oxidizing agents are nitrate of potash (nitre or

saltpetre) and chlor- ate of potash ; and these are of the first importance in the manufacture of fireworks. If a portion of one of these salts be thoroughly powdered and mixed with the correct quantity of some suitable combustible body, also reduced to powder, the resulting mixture is capable of burning with more or less energy without any aid from atmo- spheric oxygen, since each small piece of fuel is in close juxtaposition to an available and sufficient store of the gas. All that is required is that the liberation of the oxygen from the solid particles which contain it shall be started by the application of heat from without, and the action then goes on unaided. This, then, is the funda-

mental fact of pyrotechny,—that, with proper attention to the chemical nature of the substances employed, solid mixtures (compositions or fuses) may be prepared which contain within themselves all that is essential for the pro- duction of fire.

If nitre and chlorate of potash, with other salts of nitric and chloric acids and a few similar compounds, be grouped together as oxidizing agents, most of the other materials used in making firework compositions may be classed as oxidizable substances. Every composition must contain at least one sample of each class: usually there are present more than one oxidizable substance, and very often more than one oxidizing agent. In all cases the proportions by weight which the ingredients of a mixture bear to one another is a matter of much importance, for it greatly affects the manner and rate of combustion. The most important oxidizable substances employed are charcoal and sulphur. These two, it is well known, when properly mixed in certain proportions with the oxidizing agent nitre, constitute gunpowder ; and gunpowder plays an important part in the construction of most fireworks. It is sometimes employed alone, when a strong explosion is required ; but more commonly it is mixed with one or more of its own ingredients and with other matters. In addition to charcoal and sulphur, the following oxidizable substances are more or less employed :—many compounds of carbon, such as sugar, starch, resins, é&c.; certain metallic compounds of sulphur, such as the sulphides of arsenic and

antimony; a few of the metals themselves, such as iron, zinc, magnesium, antimony, copper. Of these metals iron (cast-iron and steel) is more used than any of the others. They are all employed in the form of powder or small filings. They do not contribute much to the burning power of the composition; but when it is ignited they become intensely heated and are discharged into the air, where they oxidize more or less completely and cause brilliant sparks and scintillations.

Sand, sulphate of potash, calomel, and some other sub- stances, which neither combine with oxygen nor supply it, are sometimes employed as ingredients of the compositions in order to influence the character of the fire. This may be modified in many ways. Thus the rate of combustion may be altered so as to give anything from an instantane- ous explosion to a slow fire lasting many minutes. The flame may be clear, smoky, or charged with glowing sparks. But the most important characteristic of a fire —one to which great attention is paid by pyrotechnists— is its colowr, which may be varied through the different shades and combinations of yellow, red, green, and blue. These colours are imparted to the flame by the presence in it of the heated vapours of certain metals, of which the following are the most important :—sodium, which gives a yellow colour ; calcium, red; strontium, crimson ; barium, green ; copper, green or blue, according to cir- cumstances. Suitable salts of these metals are much used as ingredients of fire mixtures ; and they are decom- posed and volatilized during the process of combustion. Very often the chlorates and nitrates are employed, as they serve the double purpose of supplying oxygen and of imparting colour to the flame.

The number of fire mixtures actually employed is very great ; for the requirements of each variety of firework, and of almost each size of each variety, are different. Moreover, every pyrotechnist has his own taste in the matter of compositions. They are capable, however, of being classified according to the nature of the work to which they are suited. Thus there are rocket-fuses, gerbe- fuses, squib-fuses, star-compositions, &e. ; and, in addition, there are a few which are essential in the coustruction of Most fireworks, whatever the main composition may be.

HKCHNY

Such are the starting-powder, which first catches the fire, the bursting-powder, which causes the final explosion, and the quick-match (cotton-wick, dried after being saturated with a paste of gunpowder and starch), employed for con- necting parts of the more complicated works and carrying the fire from one to another. Of the general nature of fuses an idea may be had from the following two examples, which are selected at hazard from among the numerous recipes for making, respectively, tourbillion fire and green stars :— Tourbillion. Meal gunpowder …... 24 parts. INIULCH eo rc reece On

Green Stars.

Chlorate of potash …16 parts. Nitrate of baryta …48 ,,

SMUUOHAIE' ws scecouesoed ep MEP UUL eccccaost sees eZ C@hancoalins.cccicccsecs: Ap os: @lrarcodl) ooo .cccec sn .os os Steel MNMTS ..... 6.0006 yp DHENTAC Ess. se. vadcce cer a

Calomell er osssssecc: Bye

Sulphide of copper… 2 ,,

Although the making of compositions is of the first importance, it is not the only operation with which the pyrotechnist has to do; for the construction of the cases in which they are to be packed, and the actual processes of packing and finishing, require much care and dexterity. These cases are made of paper or pasteboard, and are generally of a cylindrical shape. In size they vary greatly, according to the effect which it is desired to produce. The relations of length to thickness, of internal to external diameter, and of these to the size of the openings for discharge, are matters of extreme importance, and must always be attended to with almost mathematical exactness and considered in connexion with the nature of the com- position which is to be used.

There is one very important property of fireworks that is due more to the mechanical structure of the cases and the manner in which they are filled

than to the precise chemical character of the composition, ¢.¢., their power of motion. Some are so constructed that the piece is kept at rest and the only motion possible is that of the flame and sparks which escape during combustion from the mouth of the case. Others, also fixed, contain, alternately with layers of some more ordinary composition, balls or blocks of a special mixture cemented by some kind of varnish ; and these stars, as they are called, shot into the air, one by one, like bullets from a gun, blaze and burst there with striking effect. But in many instances motion is imparted to the firework as a whole,—to the case as well as to its contents. This motion, various as it is in detail, is almost entirely one of two kinds, — rotatory motion round a fixed point, which may be the centre of gravity of a single piece or that of a whole system of pieces, and free ascending motion through the air. In all cases the cause of motion is the same, viz., that large quantities of gaseous matter are formed by the combus- tion, that these can escape only at certain apertures, and that a backward pressure is necessarily exerted at the point opposite to them. When a large gun is discharged, it recoils a few feet. Movable fireworks may be regarded as very light guns loaded with heavy charges; and in them the recoil is therefore so much greater as to be the most noticeable feature of the discharge; and it only requires proper contrivances to make the piece fly through the air like a sky-rocket or revolve round a central axis like a Catherine wheel. Beauty of motion is hardly less important in pyrotecliny than brilliancy of fire and variety of colour.

The following is a brief description of some of the forms of fire- work most employed :—

Fixed Fires.— Theatre fires consist of a slow composition which

may be heaped in a conical pile on a tile or a flagstone and lit at the apex. They require no cases. Usually the fire is coloured, —

green, red, or blue; and beautiful effects arc obtained by illumin-

ating buildings with it. It is also used on the stage ; but, in that

case, the composition must be such as to give no suffocating or poisonous fumes. Bengal lights are very similar, but are piled in saucers, covered with gummed paper, and lit by means of pieces of match. JAfarroons are small boxes wrapped round several times with lind cord and filled with a strong composition which explodes with a loud report. They are generally used in batteries, or in combination with some other form of firework. Sgwids are straight cylindrical cases about 6 inches long, firmly closed at one end, tightly packed with a strong composition, and capped with touch- paper. Usually a little bursting-powder is put in before the ordinary com- position, so that the fire is finished by an explosion. The character of the fire is, of course, susceptible of great variation in colour, &c. Crackers are characterized by the cases being doubled backwards and forwards several times, the folds being pressed close and secured by twine. One end is primed; and when this is lit the cracker burns with a hissing noise, and a loud report occurs every time the fire reaches a bend. If the cracker is placed on the ground, it will give a jump at each report ; so that it cannot quite fairly be classed among the fixed fireworks. Roman candles are straight cylindrical cases filled with layers of composition and stars alternately. These stars are simply balls of some special composition, usually containing metallie filings, made up with gum and spirits of wine, cut to the required size and shape, dusted with gunpowder, and dried. They are discharged like blazing bullets several feet into the air, and produce a beautiful effect, which may be enhanced by packing stars of differently coloured fire in one case. Gerbes are choked cases, not unlike Roman candles, but often of much larger size. Their fire spreads like a sheaf of wheat. They may be packed with vari- ously coloured stars, which will rise 30 feet or more. Lances are small straight cases charged with compositions like those used for making stars. They are mostly used in complex devices, for which purpose they are fixed with wires on suitable wooden frames. They are connected by leaders, t.e., by quick-match enclosed in paper tubes, so that they can be regulated to take fire all at the same time, singly, or in detachments, as may be desired. The de- vices constructed in this way are often of an extremely elaborate character ; and they include all the varieties of lettered designs, of Jixed suns, fountains, palm-trees, waterfalls, mosaic work, High- land tartan, &e.

Rotating Fireworks.—Pin or Catherine wheels are long paper cases filled with a composition by means of a funnel and packing- wire and afterwards wound round a disk of wood. This is fixed by a pin, sometimes vertically and sometimes horizontally ; and the outer primed end of the spiral is lit. As the fire escapes the recoil causes the wheel to revolve in an opposite direction and often with considerable velocity. Pastiles are very similar in principle and construction. Instead of the case being wound ina spiral and made to revolve round its own centre point, it may be used as the engine to drive a wheel or other form of framework round in a circle. Many varied effects are thus produced, of which the fire- wheel is the simplest. Straight cases, filled with some fire-com- position, are attached to the end of the spokes of a wheel or other mechanism capable of being rotated. They are all pointed in the same direction at an angle to the spokes, and they are connected together by leaders, so that each, as it burns out, fires the one next it. The pieces may be so chosen that brilliant effects of changing colour are produced ; or various fire-wheels of different colours may be combined, revolving in different planes and different directions —some fast and some slowly. Bisecting wheels, plural wheels, caprice wheels, spiral wheels, are all more or less coinplicated forms ; and it is possible to produce, by mechanism of this nature, a model in fire of the solar system.

Ascending Fireworks.— Tourbillions are fireworks so constructed as to ascend in the air and rotate at the same time, forming bcauti- ful spiral curves of fire. The straight cylindrical case is closed at the centre and at the two ends with plugs of plaster of Paris, the composition occupying the intermediate parts. The fire finds vent by six holes pierced in the case. Two of these are placed close to the ends, but at opposite sides, so that one end discharges to the right and the other to the left; and it is this which imparts the rotatory motion. The other holes are placed along the middle line of what is the under-surface of the case when it is laid horizon- tally on the ground; and these, discharging downwards, impart au upward motion to the whole. A cross picee of wood balances the tourbillion ; and the quick-match and touch-paper are so arranged that combustion begins at the two ends simultaneously and does not reach the holes of ascension till after the rotation is fairly begun. The sky-rocket is generally considered the most beautiful of all fireworks ; and it certainly is the one that requires most skill and science in its construction. It consists essentially of two parts, —the

body and the head. The body is a straight cylinder of strong pasted paper and is choked at the lower end, so as to pre- sent only a narrow opening for the escape of the fire. The com- position does not fill up the case entirely, for a central hollow conical bore extends from the choked mouth up the body for three quarters of its length. This is an essential feature of the rocket.

It allows of nearly the whole composition being fired at once; the |

result of which is that an enormous quantity of heated gases collects in the hollow bore and the gases, forcing their way downwards through the narrow opening, urge the rocket up through the air, The top of the case is closed by a plaster-of-Paris plug. A hole passes through this and is filled with a fuse, which serves to communicate the fire to the head after the body is burned out. This head, which is made separately and fastened on after the body is packed, consists of a short cylindrical paper chamber with a conical top. It serves the double purpose of cutting a way through the air and of holding the garniture of stars, sparks, crackers, serpents, gold and silver rain, &c., which are scattered by bursting fire as soon as the rocket reaches the highest point of its path. A great variety of beautiful effects may be obtained by the exercise of ingenuity in the choice and construction of this garniture. Many of the best results have been obtained by unpublished methods which must be regarded as the secrets of the trade. The stick of the sky-rocket serves the purpose of guiding and balancing it in its flight ; and its size must be accurately adapted to the dimensions of the case. In winged rockets the stick is replaced by cardboard wings, which act like the feathers of an arrow.

For a description of rockcts used in war, see AMMUNITION.

See Chertier, Sur les Feux d' Artifice (Paris, 1841; 2d ed. 1854); Mortimer, Manual of Pyrotechny (London, 1856); Tessier, Chimie pyrotechnique, ow Tratte pratique des Feux Colorés (Paris, 1858); Richardson and Watts, Chemical Tech- nology, sv. " Pyrotechny" (London, 1863-67); Thomas

Kentish, The Pyro- Hes is?s Treasury (London, 1878); Websky, Lufifeuerwerkkunst oon)”

PYRRHO. See Scerricism.

PYRRHUS. The name of Pyrrhus, king of Epirus, owes its chief fame in history to the fact that with his invasion of Italy in the early part of the 3d century B.c. Greece and Rome for the first time came definitely into contact. Born about the year 318, and claiming descent from Pyrrhus, the son of Achilles, connected also with the royal family of Macedonia through Olympias, the mother of Alexander the Great, he became when a mere stripling king of the wild mountain tribes of Epirus, and learned how to fight battles in the school of Demetrius Poliorcetes (the Besieger) and of his father Antigonus. He fought by their side in his seventeenth year at the memorable battle of Ipsus in Phrygia, in which they were decisively defeated by the combined armies of Seleucus and Lysi- machus. Soon afterwards he was sent to the court of Ptolemy of Egypt at Alexandria as a pledge for the faith- ful carrying out of a treaty of alliance between Ptolemy and Demetrius, as his sister Deidamia was the wife of the latter. Through Ptolemy, whose step-daughter Antigone he married, he was enabled to establish himself firmly on the throne of Epirus, and he became a formidable opponent to Demetrius, who was now king of Macedonia and the leading man in the Greek world. He won a victory over one of Demetrius’s generals in Atolia, invaded Macedonia, and forced Demetrius to conclude a truce with him. For a brief space of about seven months he had possession of a large part of Macedonia, Demetrius finding it convenient to make this surrender on condition that Pyrrhus did not meddle with the affairs of the Peloponnesus. But in 286 he was defeated by Lysimachus at Edessa, driven out of Macedonia, and compelled to fall back on his little king- dom of Epirus. In 280 came the great opportunity of his life, the embassy from the famous Greek city Taren- tum in southern Italy with a request for aid against Rome, whose hostility the Tarentines had recklessly pro- voked. Pyrrhus had a trusted friend and adviser in Cineas of Thessaly, a persuasive speaker and a clever diplomatist, and he at once sent him over with 3000 men to Tarentum with a view to prepare matters. He himself soon fol- lowed, after a disastrous passage across the Adriatic, witha miscellaneous force, furnished him partly by the assistance of

Ptolemy, of about 25,000 men, with some elephants, his best troops being some Macedonian infantry and Thessalian cavalry. He had counted on an army of Italian mercenaries, but the Tarentines and the Italian Greeks

Py P—P YY T

generally shrank from anything like serious effort and resented his calling upon them for men and money. Rome meantime raised a special war contribution, called on her subjects and allies for their full contingent of troops, and posted strong garrisons in all towns of doubtful fidelity. She was now quite the dominant power in Italy, but her position was critical, as in the north she had had trouble with the Etruscans and Gauls, while in the south the Lucanians and Bruttians were making common cause with Tarentum and the Greek cities. In fact there was the possibility of a most formidable coalition of the Italian peoples both in the north and in the south against Rome, and so Pyrrhus had a good deal on which to build his hopes of success. For the first time in history Greeks and Romans met in battle at Heraclea near the shores of the Gulf of Tarentum, and the cavalry and elephants of Pyrrhus secured for him a complete victory, though at so heavy a loss as to convince him of the great uncertainty of final success, Although he now had the Samnites as well as the Lucanians and Bruttians and all the Greek cities of southern Italy with him, he found every city closed against him as he advanced on Rome through Latium, and his dexterous minister Cineas utterly failed to negotiate a peace, the old blind Appius Claudius declaring in the senate that Rome never negotiated with a foreign enemy on Italian ground. In the second year of the war, 279, Pyrrhus again defeated a Roman army at Asculum (Ascoli) in Apulia, but he was no nearer decisive success, as Rome still had armies in the field and her Italian confederation was not broken up. For a while he quitted Italy for Sicily with the view of making himself the head of the Sicilian Greeks and driving the Cartha-ginians out of the island. In his military operations he was on the whole successful, and Rome and Carthage in face of the common danger concluded an offensive and defensive alliance against him. He passed three years in Sicily, but through want of political tact he gave offence to the Greek cities, which he treated rather too much in the fashion of a despot, not paying any respect to their local constitutions or sufficiently humouring their republican tastes and love of independence. He thus lost a good

opportunity of uniting both the Italian and Sicilian Greeks against Rome. On his return to Italy in 276 he had neither men nor money adequately supplied him, as Taren- tum and the other Greek cities had no confidence in him. It is said that he was thoroughly disheartened, and was haunted by mysterious dreams and forebodings which followed on an act which he imagined had involved him in the guilt of sacrilege. He made indeed one more effort, and engaged a Roman army at Beneventum in the Samnite country, but his arrangements for the battle miscarried, and he was defeated with the loss of his camp and the greater part of his army. He had made a fair trial of the strength of Rome and had been utterly baffled. N othing remained but to go back to his allies at Tarentum, He left a garrison in the city and returned the following year to his home in Epirus after a six years' absence, The brief remainder of his life was passed in camps and battles, without, however, any glorious result. He won a victory over Antigonus Gonatas, king of Macedonia, on Macedonian ground. In 273 he was invited into the Peloponnesus to settle at the sword's point a dispute about the royal succession at Sparta. He besieged the city, but was repulsed with great loss. Next he went to Argos at the Invitation of a political faction, and here in the con- fusion of a fight by night in the streets he met his death I his forty-sixth year from the hand of a woman, who hurled a ponderous roof-tile upon his head just at the Moment, it is said, when he was striking a blow at her son.

Pyrrhus was no doubt a brilliant and dashing soldier,

but he was aptly compared "to a gambler who made many good throws with the dice, but could not make the proper use of the game." There was something chivalrous about him which seems to have made him a general favourite. After his death Macedonia had for a time at least nothing to fear, and the liberty of Greece was quite at the mercy of that power.

For Pyrrhus, English readers will do well to consult Thirlwall, Greece, vols. vii., vill. ; Mommsen, History of Rome, ii. 7 ; Niebuhr, Lectures on Roman History, lects. 1., li. Plutarch's Life of Pyrrhus is the fullest of our original sources of information, and there is frequent mention of him in Polybius.

PYTHAGORAS anp PYTHAGOREANS. Pythagoras is one of those figures which have so impressed the imagina- tion of succeeding times that their historical lineaments are difficult to discern through the mythical haze that envelops them. Animated, as it would appear, not merely by the philosophic thirst for knowledge but also by the enthusiasm of an ethico-religious reformer, he became, centuries after his death, the ideal hero or saint of those who grafted a mystical religious asceticism on the doctrines of Plato. Writings were forged in his name. Lives of him were written which gather up in his person all the traits of the philosophic wise man, and surround him besides with the nimbus of the prophet and wonder-worker. He is described by his Neoplatonic biographers as the favourite and even the son of Apollo, from whom he received his doctrines by the mouth of the Delphic priestess. We read that he had a golden thigh, which he displayed to the assembled Greeks at Olympia, and that on another occasion he was seen in Crotona and Metapontum at one and the same time. He is said to have tamed wild beasts by a word and to have foretold the future, while many stories turn upon the knowledge he was reported to retain of his personality and deeds in former states of existence. Thus, as Zeller truly remarks, the information respecting Pythagoreanism and its founder grows fuller and fuller the farther removed in time it is from its subject. The authentic details of Pythagoras's career, on the other hand, are meagre enough and merely approximate in character. He was a native of Samos, and the first part of his life may therefore be said to belong to that Ionian seaboard which had already witnessed the first development of philosophic thought in Greece. The exact year of his birth has been variously placed between 586 and 569 B.C., but 582 may be taken as the most probable date. Some of the accounts make him the pupil of Anaximander ; but such an assertion lies so ready to hand in the circum- stances of time and place that we cannot build with any assurance upon the suggested connexion with the Ionic school. It is probable, however, that Pythagoras was aware of their speculations, seeing that he left behind him in Ionia the reputation of a learned and universally informed man. "Of all men Pythagoras, the son of Mnesarchus, was the most assiduous inquirer," says Hera- clitus, and then proceeds in his contemptuous fashion to brand his predecessor's wisdom as only eclectically compiled information or polymathy (xoAvpa@ia), This accumulated wisdom, as well as most of the tenets of the Pythagorean school, was attributed in antiquity to the extensive travels of Pythagoras,

which brought him in contact (so it was said) not only with the Egyptians, the Phoenicians, the Chaldeans, the Jews, and the Arabians, but also with the Druids of Gaul, the Persian Magi, and the Brahmans. But these tales are told of too many of the early philosophers to be received implicitly; they represent rather the tendency of a later age to connect the beginnings of Greek speculation with the hoary re- ligions and priesthoods of the East. There is no intrinsic improbability, however, in the statement that Pythagoras visited Egypt and other countries of the Mediterranean,

for travel was then one of the few ways of gathering knowledge. Some of the accounts represent Pythagoras as deriving much of his mathematical knowledge from an Egyptian source. Herodotus traces the doctrine of meteim- psychosis to Egypt, as well as the practice of burying the dead exclusively in linen garments, but he does not men- tion any visit of Pythagoras to that country. There is thus little more than conjecture to fill out the first half of the philosopher's life. The historically important part of his career begins with his emigration to Crotona, one of the Dorian colonies in the south of Italy. Nothing is known with certainty of the reasons that led to this step, which he appears to have taken about the year 529 ; perhaps the ethical temper which can be traced in the

Pythagorean school attracted the founder towards the –

sterner Dorian character. At Crotona Pythagoras speedily became the centre of a widespread and influential organiza- tion, which seems to have resembled a religious brother- hood or an association for the moral reformation of society much more than a philosophic school. Pythagoras appears, indeed, in all the accounts more as a moral reformer than as a speculative thinker or scientific teacher ; and it is noteworthy that the only one of the doctrines of the school which is definitely traceable to Pythagoras himself is the ethico-mystical doctrine of transmigration. The aim of the brotherhood was the moral education and purification of the community; and it seems to have been largely based upon a revival of the Dorian ideal of abstinence and hardi- hood along with certain other traits

of a more definitely religious character, which were probably due to the influ- ence of the mysteries. But many details of life and ritual, such as abstinence from animal food and from beans, celibacy, and even community of goods, have been fathered by the organized asceticism of a later period upon the original followers of Pythagoras. Ethics, according to the Greek and especially according to the Dorian conception, being inseparably bound up with the general health of the state, we are not surprised to find the Pythagoreans repre- sented as a political league ; nor is it wonderful that their following was among the aristocracy, and that they formed the staunchest supporters of the old Dorian constitutions. It is unfair, however, to speak of the league as primarily a political organization, wide though its political ramifica- tions must latterly have become. Its entanglement with politics was in the end fatal to its existence. The authori- ties differ hopelessly in chronology, but according to the balance of evidence the first reaction against the Pytha- goreans took place in the lifetime of Pythagoras himself after the victory gained by Crotona over Sybaris in the year 510, Dissensions seem to have arisen about the allotment of the conquered territory, and an adverse party was formed in Crotona under the leadership of Cylon. This was probably the cause of Pythagoras's withdrawal to Metapontum, which an almost unanimous tradition assigns as the place of his death in the end of the 6th or the beginning of the 5th century. The league appears to have continued powerful in Magna Grecia till the middle of the 5th century, when it was violently trampled out by the successful democrats. The meeting-houses of the Pythagoreans were everywhere sacked and burned ; men- tion is made in particular of "the house of Milo" in Crotona, where fifty or sixty of the leading Pythagoreans were surprised and slain. The persecution to which the brotherhood was subjected throughout Magna Greecia was the immediate cause of the spread of the Pythagorean philosophy in Greece proper. Philolaus, who resided at Thebes in the end of the 5th century (cf. Plato, Phedo, 61D), was the author of the first written exposition of the system. Lysis, the instructor of Epaminondas, was another of these refugees. This Theban Pythagoreanism

was not without an important influence upon Plato, and Philolaus had also disciples in the stricter sense. But as a philosophic school Pythagoreanism

became extinct in Greece about the middle of the 4th century. In Italy— where, after a temporary suppression, it attained a new importance in the person of Archytas, ruler of Tarentum— the school finally disappeared about the same time.

Pythagorean Philosophy.

The central thought of the Pythagorean philosophy is the idea of number, the recognition of the numerical and mathematical relations of things. In the naive speculation of an early age the abstract consideration of these relations was tantamount to assert- ing their essential existence as the causes of phenomena. Hence the Pythagorean thought crystallized into the formula that all things are number, or that number is the essence of everything, 'The Pythagoreans seem," says Aristotle, "to have looked mpon number as the principle and, so to speak, the matter of which existences cousist""; and again, "they supposed the elements of numbers to be the elements of existence, and pronounced the whole heaven to be harmony and number." ' Number," says Philolaus, 'is great and perfect and omnipotent, and the principle and guide of divine and human life." Fantastical as such a proposition sounds, we may still recognize the underlying truth that prompted it if we reflect that it is number or definite mathematical relation that separates one thing from another and so in a sense makes them things. Without number and the limitation which number brings there would be- only chaos and the illimitable, a thought abhorrent to the Greck mind. Number, then, is the principle of order, the principle by which a cosmos or ordered world subsists. So we may perhaps render the thought that is crudely and sensnously expressed in the ntterances of the school. They found the chief illustrations, or rather grounds, of their position in the regular movements of the heavenly bodies and in the harmony of musical sounds, the dependence of which on regular mathematical intervals they were apparently the first to discover. The famous theory of the harmony of the spheres combines both ideas: the seven planets are the seven golden chords of the heavenly heptachord.*

Immediately connected with their central doctrine is the theory of opposites held by the Pythagoreans. Numbers are divided into odd and even, and from the combination of odd and even the numbers themselves (and therefore all

things) seem to result. The odd number was identified with the limited, the even with the un- limited, because even numbers may be perpetually halved, whereas the odd numbers (at least the earlier ones), being without factors, seem to stand in solid singleness. All things, accordingly, were derived by the Pythagoreans from the combination of the limited and the unlimited ; and it is in harmony with the Greek spirit that the place of honour is accorded to the odd or the limited. Following out the same thought, they developed a list of ten funda- mental oppositions, which roughly resembles the tables of categories framed by later philosophers :—(1) limited and unlimited ; (2) odd and even; (8) one and many ; (4) right and left; (5) masculine and feminine ; (6) rest and motion ; (7) straight and crooked ; (8) light and darkness ; (9) good and evil; (10) square and oblong. The arbitrariness of the list and the mingling of mathematical, physical, and ethical contrasts are characteristic of the infancy of speculation. The union of opposites in which consists the exist- ence of things is harmony ; hence the expression already quoted that the whole heaven or the whole universe is harmony. But it is to be noted that interpretations of Pythagoreanism which repre- sent the whole system as founded on the opposition of nnity an duality, and suppose this to have been explicitly identified with the opposition of form and iatter, of divine activity and passive material, must be unhesitatingly rejected as betraying on the sur- face their post-Platonic origin. Still more is this the case when in Neoplatonic fashion they go on to derive this original opposition from the supreme Unity or God. The further speculations of the Pythagorcans on the subject of number rest mainly on analogies, which often become capricious and tend to lose themselves at last ina barren symbolism. The decade, as the basis of the numerical system, appeared to them to comprehend all other numbers m itself, and to it are applied, therefore, the epithets quoted above of number in general. Similar language is held of the number "four," because it is the first square number and is also the poten- tial decade (1+2+3+4=10) ; Pythagoras is cclebrated as the dis- coverer of the holy rerpaxrvs, "the fountain and root of ever-living nature." Seven" is called mapOévos and 'A@Avy, because within the decade it has neither factors nor product. "Five," on the other hand, signifies marriage, because it is the union of the first masculine with the first feminine number (8+2, unity being con- sidered asa number apart). The thought already becomes more fanciful when "one" is identified with reason, because it is m- changeable; "two" with opinion, because it is

unlimited and indeterminate ; “four” with justice, because it is the first square

PYUTHACGCORAS

number, the product of equals. More legitimate is their application of number to geometry, according to whieh “one”’ was identified with the point, “two” with the line, “three” with the surface, and “four” with the eube. In the history of music the Pytha- gorean school is also of considerable importanee from the develop- ment which the theory of the octave owes to its members; according to some accounts the discovery of the harmonie system is due to Pythagoras himself.

As already mentioned, the movements of the heavenly hodies formed for the Pythagoreans an illustration on a grand scale of the truth of their theory. Thcir cosmologieal system is also interest- ing on aecount of peeuliarities which imark it out froin the current eonceptions of antiquity and bring it curiously near to the modern theory. Conceiving the universe, like many early thinkers, as a sphere, they placed in the heart of it the central fire, to which they gave the name of Hestia, the hearth or altar of the universe, the citadel or throne of Zeus. Around this move the ten heavenly bodies—farthest off the heaven of the fixed stars, then the five planets known to antiquity, then the sun, the moon, the earth, and lastly the counter-earth (dvrix@wv), which revolves between the earth and the central fire and thns completes the sacred decade. Revolving along with the earth, the last-mentioned body is always interposed asa shield between us and the direct rays of the central fire. Our light and heat eome to us indirectly by way of reflexion from the sun. When the earth is on the same side of the central fire as the sun, we have day ; when it is on the other side, night. This attribution of the ehanges of day and night to the earth’s own motion led up directly to the true theory, as soon as the machinery of the central fire and the counter-earth was dispensed with. The counter-earth became the western hemisphere, and the earth re- volved on its own axis instead of round animaginary centre. But, as appears from the above, the Pythagorean astronomy is also remarkable as having attributed a planetary motion to the earth instead of making our globe the centre of the universe. Long after-wards, when the church condemned the theory of Copernicus, the

indictment that lay against it was its heathen and “ Pythagorean ” character.

The doctrine which the memory of mankind associates most closely with Pythagoras’s name is that of the transmigration of souls—MEreMpsycHosis (g.v.). Though evidently of great import- ance for Pythagoras himself, it does not stand in any very obvious connexion with his philosophy proper. He seems to have adopted the idea from the Orphic Mysteries. The bodily life of the soul, according to this doctrine, is an imprisonment suffered for sins committed in a former state of existence. At death the soul reaps what it has sown in the present life. The reward of the best is to enter the cosmos, or the higher and purer regions of the universe, while the direst ¢rimes receive their punishment in Tartarns. But the general lot is to live afresh in a series of human or animal forms, the nature of the bodily prison being determined in each case by the deeds done in the life just ended. This is the saine doctrine of retribution and purificatory wandering which meets us in Plato’s mythieal descriptions of a future life. ‘They are borrowed by him in their substance from the Pythagoreans or from a common source in the Mysteries. In accordance with this religious view of life as a stage of probation were the cthical precepts of the sehool, inculcat- ing reverence towards the gods and to parents, justice, gentleness, temperance, purity of life, prayer, regular self-examination, and the observance of various ritual requirements.

Connecting its ethics in this way with religion and the idea of a future life, the Pythagorean societies had in them from the be- giuming a germ of asceticism and contemplative mysticism which it was left fora later age fully to develop. The Pythagorean life was destined to survive the peculiar doctrines of the Pythagorean philosophy and to be grafted on later philosophic ideas. The asceticism which characterized it appears in the 4th century B.c. in close connexion with the Orphic Mysteries ; and the ‘“ Pytha- goreans ” of that time are frequently the butts of the New Athenian Comedy. In the Alexandrian period the Pythagorean tradition struck deeper roots; in Alexandria and elsewhere schools of men

“wrose calling themselves Pythagoreans, but more accurately dis-

tinguished by modern eriticism as Neopythagoreans, seeing that their philosophical doctrines arc evidently derived in varying pro- portions from Plato, Aristotle, and the Stoics. In general it may be said that they develop the mystic side of the Platonie doctrine ; aud only so far as this is connected with the similar speculations of Pythagoras can they claim to be followers of the latter. Hence meu like Plutarch, who personally prefer to call themselves Platonists, may also be considered as within the scope of this Pythagorean revival. The link that really connects these Neo- pythagoreans with the Samian philosopher and distinguishes them from the other schools of their time is their aseetic ideal of life and their preoccupation with religion. In religious speculation they paved the way for the Neoplatonic conception of God as immeasur- ably transcending the world ; and in their thirst for prophecies, oracles, and signs they gave expression to the prevalent longing fora supernatural revelation of the divine nature and will. The

asceticism of the Jewish sect of the Essenes seems, as Zeller con- tends, to be due to a strong infusion of Neopythagorean elements. At a still later period Neopythagoreanisim set up Pythagoras and Apollonius of Tyana not only as ideals of the philosophie life but also as prophets and wonder-workers in immediate communication with another world, and in the details of their "lives" it is easy to read the desire to emulate the narrative of the Gospels. The Life of Apollonius by Philostratus, which is for the most part an historical romance, belongs to the 3d Christian century.

Zeller's discussion of Pythagoreanism, in his Philosophie d. Griechen, book 1., is very full; he also deals at considerable length in the last volume of the work with the Neopythagoreans, considered as the precursors of Neoplatonism and the probable origin of the Essenes. The numerous monographs dealing with speeial parts of the subject are there exainined and sifted. (A. SE.)

Pythagorean Geometry.

As the introduction of geometry into Greece is by common consent attributed to Thales, so all are agreed that to Pythagoras is due the honour

of having raised mathe- matics to the rank of a science. We know that the early Pythagoreans published nothing, and that, moreover, they referred all their discoveries back to their master. (See PuHILoLavs.) Hence it is not possible to separate his work from that of his early disciples, and we must therefore treat the geometry of the early Pythagorean school as a whole. We know that Pythagoras made numbers the basis of his philosophical system, as well physical as metaphysical, and that he united the study of geometry with that of arithmetic.

The following statements have been handed down to us. (a) Aristotle (MJet., i. 5, 985) says "the Pythagoreans first applied themselves to mathematics, a science which they improved ; and, penetrated with it, they fancied that the principles of mathematics were the principles of all things." (¢) Eudemus informs us that "Pythagoras changed geometry into the form of a liberal science, regarding its principles in a purely abstract manner, and investigated its theorems from the immaterial and intellectual point of view (advAws «al voepis)."1 (ce) Diogenes Laertius (viii. 11) relates that "it was Pythagoras who carried geometry to perfection, after Moeris? had first found out the prin- ciples of the elements of that science, as Anticlides tells us in the second book of his LHistory of Alexander; and the part of the science to which Pythagoras applied himself above all others was arithmetic." (d) According to Aris- toxenus, the musician, Pythagoras seems to have esteemed arithmetic above everything, and to have advanced it by diverting it from the service of commerce and by likening all things to numbers? (e) Diogenes Laertius (viii. 13) reports on the same authority that Pythagoras was the first person who introduced measures and weiglits among the Greeks. (jf) He discovered the numerical relations of the musical scale (Diog. Laert., viii. 11). (gy) Proclus4 says that "'the word 'mathematics' originated with the Pythagoreans." (h) We learn also from the same author- ity® that the Pythagoreans made a fourfold division of mathematical science, attributing one of its parts to the "how many" (ro wdcov) and the other to the "how much" (ro wnAtkov) ; and they assigned to each of these parts a twofold division. They said that discrete quantity or the "how many" is either absolute or relative, and that con- tinued quantity or the "how much" is either stable or in motion. Hence they laid down that arithmetic contem- plates that discrete quantity which subsists by itself, but

music that which is related to another; and that geometry considers continued quantity so far as it is immovable,

1 Proelus Diadoehus, In primum Huclidis Klemeatorum librum Commentarit, ed. Friedlein, p. 65.

2 Meris was a king of Egypt who, Herodotus tells us, lived 900 years before his visit to that country.

3 Aristox., Fragm., ap. Stob., Helog. Phys., i. 2, 6.

4 Proel., op. cit., p. 45.

Oi, Ct, sty Si

140

but that astronomy (7) oacpix7) contemplates continued quantity so far as it is of a self-motive nature. (z) Diogenes Laertius (viii. 25) states, on the authority of Favorinus, that Pythagoras "employed definitions in the mathema- tical subjects to which he applied himself."

The following notices of the geometrical work of Pytha- goras and the early Pythagoreans are also preserved. (1) The Pythagoreans define a point as 'unity having position" (Procl., op. cit., p. 95). (2) They considered a point as analogous to the monad, a line to the duad, a superficies to the triad, and a body to the tetrad (1b. p. 97). (38) They showed that the plane around a point is completely filled by six equilateral triangles, four squares, or three regular hexagons (2b., p. 305). (4) Eudemus ascribes to them the discovery of the theorem that the interior angles of a triangle are equal to two right angles, and gives their proof, which was substantially the same as that in Euclid I. 321 (a., p. 879). (5) Proclus informs us in his comment- ary on Euclid I. 44 that Eudemus says that the problems concerning the application of areas—-where the term "application" is not to be taken in its restricted sense (xapa8oA%), in which it is used in this proposition, but also in its wider signification, embracing tepBoA% and éAXevyus, in which it is used in Book VI. Props. 28, 29 —-are old, and inventions of the Pythagoreans? (ib., p. 419), (6) This is confirmed by Plutarch,? who says,

after Apollodorus, that Pythagoras sacrificed an ox on finding the geometrical diagram, either the one relating to the hypotenuse, namely, that the square on it is equal to the sum of the squares on the sides, or that relating to the problem concerning the application of an area. (7) Plutarch ® also ascribes to Pythagoras the solution of the problem, To construct a figure equal to one and similar to another given figure. (8) Eudemus states that Pythagoras discovered the construction of the regular solids (Procl., op. cit., p. 65). (9) Hippasus, the Pythagorean, is said to have perished in the sea on account of his impiety, inasmuch as he boasted that he first divulged the know- ledge of the sphere with the twelve pentagons (the in- scribed ordinate dodecahedron): Hippasus assumed the glory of the discovery to himself, whereas everything be- longed to Him—" for thus they designate Pythagoras, and do not call him by name."® (10) The triple interwoven triangle or pentagram—star-shaped regular pentagon— was used as a symbol or sign of recognition by the Pytha-*

1 We learn, however, from a fragment of Geminus, which has been handed down by Eutocius in his commentary on the Conics of Apol- lonius (Apoll., Conica, ed. Halleius, p. 9), that the ancient geometers observed two right angles in each species of triangle, in the equilateral first, then in the isosceles, and lastly in the scalene, whereas later writers proved the theorem generally thus— The three internal angles of every triangle are equal to two right angles."

2 The words of Proclus are interesting. " According to Eudemus the inventions respecting the application, excess, and defect of areas are ancient, and are due to the Pythagoreans. Moderns, borrowing these names, transferred them to the so-called conic lines, the parabola, the hyperbola, the ellipse, as the older school, in their nomenclature concerning the description of areas i plano on a finite right line, re- garded the terms thus :—An area is said to be applied (mapaBddXewv) to a given right line when an area equal in content to some given one is described thereon ; but when the base of the area is greater than the given line, then the area is said to be in excess (brepBdddew) 3 but when the base is less, so that some part of the given line lies without the described area, then the area is said to be in defect (€ANetweww). Euclid uses in this way in his

sixth book the terms excess and defect. . . . The term application (rapaBdddew), which we owe to the Pytha- goreans, has this signification."

3 Non posse suaviter vivi sec. Epicurum, c. xi.

4 Eire wpdBd\nua mwepl rod xwplov ris tapaBodjs. Some authors, rendering the last five words "concerning the area of the parabola," have ascribed to Pythagoras the quadrature of the parabola, which was one of the great discoveries of Archimedes.

5 Symp. viii., Quest. 2, c. 4.

6 Tamblichus, De Vit. Pyth., c. 18, s. 88.

goreans and was called by them "health" (wyseéa)." (11) The discovery of the law of the three squares (Euclid I. 47), commonly called the "theorem of Pythagoras," is attributed to him by many authorities, of whom the oldest is Vitruvius.® (12) One of the methods of finding right- angled triangles whose sides can be expressed in numbers (Pythagorean triangles)—that setting out from the odd numbers—is referred to Pythagoras by Heron of Alex. andria and Proclus.® (13) The discovery of irrational quantities is ascribed to Pythagoras by Eudemus (Procl., op. cit., p. 65). (14) The three proportions—arithmetical, geometrical, and harmonical—were known to Pythagoras," (15) Iamblichus " says, "' Formerly, in the time of Pytha- goras and the mathematicians under him, there were three means only—the arithmetical, the geometrical, and the third in order which was known by the name sub-contrary (vrevavria), but which Archytas and Hippasus designated the harmonical, since it appeared to include the ratios concerning harmony and melody." (16) The so-called most perfect or musical proportion, eg., 6:8::9:12, which comprehends in it all the former ratios, according to Iamblichus,!? is said to be an invention of the Baby- lonians and to have been first brought into Greece by Pythagoras. (17) Arithmetical progressions were treated by the Pythagoreans, and it appears from a passage in Lucian that Pythagoras himself had considered the special case of triangular numbers: Pythagoras asks some one, 'How do you count?" he replies, " One, two, three, four." Pythagoras, interrupting,

says, “Do you see? what you take to be four, that is ten and a perfect triangle and our oath.”!3 (18) The odd numbers were called by the Pytha- goreans “ gnomons,”?!4 and were regarded as generating, in-

7 Lucian, Pro Lapsu in Salut., s. 5; also schol. on Aristoph., Nwb., 611. That the Pythagoreans used such symbols we learn from Iamblichus (De Vit. Pyth., c. 38, ss. 237 and 238), This figure is referred to Pythagoras himself, and in the Middle Ages was called Pythagore figura ; even so late as Paracelsus it was regarded by him as a symbol of health, It is said to have obtained its special name from the letters v, y, t, (=e), a having been written at its prominent vertices.

8 De Arch., ix., Pref., 5, 6, 7. Amongst other authorities are Diogenes Laertius (viii. 11), Proclus (op. cié., p. 426), and Plutarch (ut sup., 6). Plutarch, however, attributes to the Egyptians the know- ledge of this theorem in the particular case where the sides are 3, 4, and 5 (De Is. et Osir., c. 56).

® Heron Alex., Geom. et Stereom. Rel., ed. F. Hultsch, pp. 56, 146; Procl., op. cit, p. 428. The method of Pythagoras is as follows :—he took an odd number as the lesser side; then, having squared this number and diminished the square by unity, he took half the remainder as the greater side, and by adding unity to this number he obtained the hypotenuse, e.g., 3, 4, 53 5, 12, 13.

10 Nicom. Ger., Introd. Ar., c. xxii,

In Nicomachi Arithmeticam, ed. 8, Tenuulius, p. 141,

2 Op. cit., p. 168. As an example of this proportion Nicomachus and, after him, Iamblichus give the numbers 6, 8, 9, 12, the harmonical and arithmetical means between two numbers forming a geometric proportion with the numbers themselves (a: ae ae, v).. Tam- blichus further relates (/.c.) that many Pythagoredins made use of this proportion, as Aristeus of Crotona, Timeus of Locri, Philolaus and Archytas of Tarentum, and many others, and after them Plato in his Timeus (see Nicom., Inst. Arithm., ed. Ast, p. 158, and Animad- versiones, pp. 327-329 ; and Iambl., op. cit., p. 172 sq.).

13 Biwy mpaots, 4, vol. i. p. 317, ed. C. Jacobitz.

14 Tvduwv means that by which anything is known, or“ criterion”; its oldest concrete signification seems to be the carpenter’s square (norma) by which a right angle is known. Hence it came to denote a per- pendicular, of which, indeed, it was the archaic name (Proclus, op. cit., p. 283). Gnomon is also an instrument for measuring altitudes, by means of which the meridian can be found; it denotes, further, the index or style of a sun-dial, the shadow of which points out the hours. In geometry it means the square or rectangle about the diagonal of a square or rectangle, together with the two complements, on account of the resemblance of the figure to a carpenter’s square; and then, more generally, the similar figure with regard to any parallelogram, as defined by Euclid II. Def. 2. Again, in a still more general signification, it means the figure which, being added to any figure, preserves the original form. See Heron, Dejinitiones (59). When

PY rit wGe RAS

asmuch as by the addition of successive gnomons—consist- ing each of an odd number of unit squares—to the original

square unit or monad the square form was preserved. (19)

In like manner, if the simplest oblong (érepdpyxes), consist-

ing of two unit squares or monads in juxtaposition, be taken and four unit squares be placed about it after the manner of a gnomon, and then in like manner six, eight . . . unit

squares be placed in succession, the oblong form will be

preserved. (20) Another of his doctrines was, that of all solid figures the sphere was the most beautiful, and of all plane figures the circle! (21) According to Jamblichus the Pythagoreans are said to have found the quadrature of the circle,”

On examining the purely geometrical work of Pythagoras and

his early disciples, as given in the preceding extracts, we observe that it is much concerned with the geometry of areas, and we are indeed struck with its Egyptian character. This appears in the theorem (3) concerning the filling up a plane with regular figures— for floors or walls covered with tiles of various colours were common in Egypt; in the construction of the regular solids (8), for some of them are found in Egyptian arehitecture ; in the problems con-

cerning the application of areas (5); and lastly, in the theorem of

Pythagoras (11), coupled with his rule for the construction of right- angled triangles in numbers (12). We learn from Plutarch that the Egyptians were aequainted with the geometrical fact that a triangle whose sides contain three, four, and five parts is right- angled, and that the square of the greatest side is equal to the squares of the sides containing the right angle. It is probable too that this theorem was known to them in the simple case where the right-angled triangle is isosceles, inasmuch as it would be at once suggested by the contemplation of a floor covered with square tiles — the square on the diagonal and the sum of the squares on the sides contain each four of the right-angled triangles into which one of the squares is divided by its diagonal. It is easy now to see how the problem to construct a square which shall be equal to the sum of two squares could, in some cases, be solved numerically. From the observation of a chequered board it would be perceived that the element in the successive formation of squares is the gnomon or carpenter's square. Hach gnomon consists of an odd number of squares, and the successive gnomons correspond to the successive odd numbers, and include, therefore, all odd squares, Suppose, now, two squares are given, one consisting of sixteen and the other of nine unit squares, and that it is proposed to form from them another square. It is evident that the square consisting of uine unit squares can take the form of the fourth gnomon, which, being placed round the former square, will generate a new square containing twenty-five unit squares. Similarly it may have been observed that the twelfth gnomon, consisting of twenty-five unit squares, could be transformed into a square each of whose sides contains five units, and thus it may have been seen conversely that the latter square, by taking the gnomonic or generating form with Tespect to the square ou twelve units as base, would produce the square of thirteen units, and so on.

This method required only to be generalized in order to enable Pythagoras to arrive at his rule for finding right-angled triangles whose sides ean be expressed iu numbers, which, we are told, sets out from the odd numbers. The nth square together with the nth gnomon forms the (2 +1)th syuare ; if the nth gnomon contains m? unit squares, m being an

mn? —

odd number, we have el, AS = i » which gives the

Tule of Pythagoras,

The general proof of Euclid I. 47 is attributed to Pythagoras, but we have the express statement of Proclus (op. cit., p. 426) that this theorem was not proved in the first instance as it is in the Elements. The following simple and natural way of arriving at the theorem is suggested by Bretschneider after Camerer.3 A square can be dissected into the sum of two squares and two equal rectangles, as in Euclid II. 4; these two rectangles can, by draw-Ing their diagonals, be decomposed into four equal right-angled triangles, the sum of the sides of each being equal to the side of the square ; again, these four right-angled triangles can be placed 80 that a vertex of each shall be in one of the corners of the square m such a way that a greater and less side are in continuation.

gsnomons are added successively in this manner to a square monad, the first gnomon may be regarded as that consisting of three square monads, and is indeed the constituent of a simple Greek fret; the Second of five Square monads, &c.; hence we have the guomonic numbers,

» Diog. Laert., De Vit, Pyth., viil. 19.

~ Sunplicius, In Aristotelis Paysicorum libros quattuor priores Com- pe etre, ed. H. Diels, p. 60.

, See Bretsch., Die Geom. vor Huklides, p. 82; Camerer, Ruclidis Lilem., vol. i. p. 444, and the references given thera,

The original square is thus dissected into the four triangles as before and the figure within, which is the square on the hypotenuse. This square, therefore, must be equal to the sum of the squares on the sides of the right-angled triangle.

It is well known that the Pythagoreans were much oceupied with the construction of regular polygons and solids, whieh in their cosmology played an essential part as the fundamental forms of the elements of the universe. We can trace the origin of these mathematical speculations in the theorem (8) that "the plane around a point is completely filled by six equilateral triangles, four squares, or three regular hexagons." Plato also makes the Pythagorean Timeus explain—" Each straight-lined figure consists of triangles, but all triangles can be dissected into rectangular ones which are either isosceles or scalene. Among the latter the most beautiful is that out of the doubling of which an equilateral arises, or in which the square of the greater perpendicular is three times that of the smaller, or in which the smaller perpendicular is half the hypotenuse. But two or four right-angled isosceles triangles, properly put together, form the square; two or six of the most beautiful scalene right-angled triangles form the equi-lateral triangle ; and out of these two figures arise the solids which correspond with the four elements of the real world, the tetra- hedron, octahedron, icosahedron, and the cube" 4 (Timeus, 58, 54, 55). The construction of the regular solids is distinctly ascribed to Pythagoras himself by Eudemus (8). Of these five solids three—the tetrahedron, the cube, and the octahedron—were kuown to the Egyptians and are to be found in their architecture. Let us now examine what is required for the construction of the other two solids-—the icosahedron and the dodecahedron. In the formation of the tetrahedron three, and in that of the octahedron four, equal equilateral triangles had been placed with a common vertex and adjacent sides coincident ; and it was known that if six such triangles were placed round a common vertex with their adjacent sides coincident, they would lie in a plane, and that, therefore, no solid could be formed in that manner from them. It remained, then, to try whether five such equilateral triangles could be placed at a common vertex in like manner; on trial it would be found that they could be so placed, and that their bases would form a regular pentagon. The existence of a regular pentagon would thus become known. It was also known from the formation of the cube that

three squares could be placed in a similar way with a common vertex; and that, further, if three equal and regular hexagons were placed round a point as common vertex with adjacent sides coincident, they would form a plane. It re- mained in this case too only to try whether three equal regular pentagons could be placed with a common vertex and in a similar way ; this on trial would be found possible and would lead to the construction of the regular dodecahedron, which was the regular solid last arrived at.

We see that the construction of the regular pentagon is required for the formation of each of these two regular solids, and that, therefore, it must have been a discovery of Pythagoras. If we examine now what knowledge of geometry was required for the solution of this problem, we shall see that it depends on Euclid IV. 10, which is reduced to Euclid II. 11, which problem is reduced to the following: To produce a given straight line so that the reet-angle under the whole line thus produced and the produced part shall be equal to the square on the given line, or, in the language of the ancients, To apply to a given straight line a rectangle which shall be equal to a given area—in this case the square on the given line—and which shall be cacessive by a square. Now it is to be observed that the problem is solved in this manner by Euclid (VI.- 30, Ist method), and that we know on the authority of Eudemus that the problems concerning the application of areas and their cxeess and defect are old, and inventions of the Pythagorcans (5). Hence the statements of Iamblichus concerning Hippasus (9)— that he divulged the sphere with the twelve pentagons—and of Lucian and the scholiast on Aristophanes (10)—that the penta- gram was uscd as a symbol of recognition amougst the Pythagoreans —become of greater importance.

Further, the discovery of irrational magnitudes is ascribed to Pythagoras by Eudemus (13), and this discovery has been ever regarded as one of the greatest of antiquity. It is commonly assumed that Pythagoras was led to this theory from the considera- tion of the isosceles right-angled triangle. It seems to the present writer, however, more probable that the discovery of incommen- surable magnitudes was rather owing to the problem: To cut a line in extreme and inean ratio. From the solution of this problem it follows at once that, if on the greater segment of a linc so cut a part be taken equal to the less, the greater segment, regarded as a new line, will be cut in a similar manner ; and this process can be continued without end. On the

other hand, if a similar method be adopted in the case of any two lines which can be re- presented numerically, the process would end. Hence would arise

4 The dodecahedron was assigned to the fifth element, quinta pars, ether, or, as some think, to the universe. (See PHILOLAUS.)

the distinction between commensurable and incommensurable quantities. A reference to Euclid X. 2 will show that the method above is the one used to prove that two magnitudes are inconmmen- surablc; and in Euclid X. 3 it will be scen that the greatest common measure of two commensurable magnitudes is found by this process of continued subtraction. It seems probable that Pythagoras, to whom is attributed one of the rules for representing the sides of right-angled triangles in numbers, tried to find the sides of an isosccles right-angled triangle numerically, and that, failing in the attempt, he suspected that the hypotenuse and a side had no common measure. He may have demonstrated the incommensurability of the side of a square and its diagonal. The nature of the old proof—which consisted of a reductio ad absurd- um, showing that, if the diagonal be commensurable with the side, it would follow that the same number would be odd and even 1—makes it nore probable, however, that this was accom- plished by his suceessors. The existence of the irrational as well as that of the regular dodecahedron appears to have been regarded by the school as one of their chief discoveries, and to have been preserved as a secret ; it is remarkable, too, that a story similar to that told by Iamblichus of Hippasus is narrated of the person who first published the idea of the irrational, namely, that he suffered shipwreck, &c.?

Eudemus ascribes the problems concerning the application of figures to the Pythagoreans. The simplest cascs of the problems, Euclid VI. 28, 29—those, namely, in which the given parallelogram is a square—correspond to the problem: To cut a given straight line internally or externally so that the rectangle under the segments shall be equal to a given rectilineal figure. The solution of this problem—in which the solution of a quadratic equation is implicitly contained—depends on the problem, Euclid Il. 14, and the theorems, Euclid II. 5 and 6, together with the theorem of Pythagoras. It is

probable that the finding of a mean proportional between two given lines, or the construction of a square which shall be equal toa given rectangle, is due to Pythagoras himself. The solution of the more gencral problem, Euclid VI. 25, is also attributed to him by Plutarch (7). The solution of this problem depends on that of the particular case and on the application of areas ; it requires, moreover, a knowledge of the theorems: Similar rectilineal figures are to each other as the squares on their homo- logous sides (Euclid VI. 20); and, If three lines are in geometrical proportion, the first is to the third as the square on the first is to the square on the second. Now Hippocrates of Chios, about 440 B.c., who was instructed in geometry by the Pythagoreans,

ossessed this knowledge. We are justified, therefore, in ascrib- ing the solution of the general problem, if not (with Plutarch) to Pythagoras, at least to his early successors.

The theorem that similar polygons are to each other in the duplicate ratio of their homologous sides involves a first sketch, at least, of the doctrine of proportion and the similarity of figures. ? That we owe the foundation and development of the doctrine of proportion to Pythagoras and his school is confirmed by the testi- mony of Nicomachus (14) and Jamblichus (15 and 16). From these passages it appears that the early Pythagoreans were acquainted, not only with the arithmetical and geometrical means between two magnitudes, but also with their harmonical mean, which was then called "subcontrary." The Pythagoreans were much occupied with the representation of numbers by geometrical figures. These speculations originated with Pythagoras, who was acquainted with the summation of the natural numbers, the odd numbers, and the even uumbers, all of which are capable of geometrical representa- tion. See the passage in Lucian (17) and the rule for finding Pythagorean triangles (12) and the observations thereon supra. On the other hand, there is no evidence to support the statement of Montucla that Pythagoras laid the foundation of the doctrine of isoperimetry, by proving that of all figures having the same peri- meter the circle is the greatest, and that of all solids having the

1 For this proof, see Euclid X. 117 ; see also Aristot., Analyt. Pr., i. c. 23 and c. 44.

2 Knoche, Untersuchungen tber die neu aufgefundenen Scholien

des Proklus Diadochus zu Euclid's Elementen, pp. 20 and 23, Herford,

1865.

3 It is agreed on all hands that these two theories were treated at length by Pythagoras and his school. It is almost certain, however, that the theorems arrived at were proved for commensurable magni- tudes only, and were assumed to hold good forall. The Pythagoreans themselves seem to have been aware that their proofs were not rigor- ous, and were open to serious objection; in this we may have the explanation of the secrecy which was attached by them to the idea of the incommensurable and to the pentagram which involved, and indeed represented, that idea. Now it is remarkable that the doctrine of proportion is ¢wice treated in the Elements of Euclid—first, in a general manner, so as to include incommensurables, in Book V., which tradition ascribes to Eudoxus, and then arithmetically in Book VII., which, as Hankel has supposed, contains the treatment of the subject by the olde: Pythagoreans.

same surface the sphere is the greatest. We must also deny to Pythagoras and his school a knowledge of the conic sections, and in particular of the quadrature of the parabola, attributed to him by some authors; and we have noticed the misconception which gave vise to this erroneous inference.

Let us now see what conclusions can be drawn from the foregoing examination of the mathematical work of Pythagoras and his school, and thus form an estimate of the state of geometry about 480 B.c. First, as to matter. It forms the bulk of the first two books of Euclid, and includes a sketch of the doctrine of proportion—which was probably limited to cominensurable magnitudes— together with some of the contents of the sixth book. It contains too the discovery of the irrational (4Aoyov) and the construction of the regular solids, the latter requiring the description of certain regular polygons—the founda- tion, in fact, of the fourth book of Euclid. Secondly, as to form. The Pythagoreans first severed geometry from the needs of practical life, and treated it as a liberal science, giving

definitions and introducing the manner of proof which has ever since been in use. Further, they distinguished between discrete and continuous quantities, and regarded geometry as a branch of mathematics, of which they made the fourfold division that lasted to the Middle Ages—the guadrivium (fourfold way to knowledge) of Boetius and the scholastic philosophy. And it may be observed that the name of "inathematics," as well as that of "philosophy," is ascribed to them. Thirdly, as to method, One chief characteristic of the mathematical work of Pythagoras was the combination of arithmetic with geometry. The notions of an equation and a propor- tion—which are common to both, and contain the first germ of algebra—were introduced among the Greeks by Thales. These notions, especially the latter, were elabo- rated by Pythagoras and his school, so that they reached the rank of a true scientific method in their theory of proportion. To Pythagoras, then, is due the honour of having supplied a method which is common to all branches of mathematics, and in this respect he is fully comparable to Descartes, to whom we owe the decisive combination of algebra with geometry.

Sce C. A. Bretschneider, Die Geometric wu. die Geometer vor Hu- klides (Leipsic, 1870); H. Hankel, Zur Geschichte der Mathematik (Leipsic, 1874); F. Hoefer, Histoire des Mathématiques (Panis, 1874); G. J. Allman, "Greek Geometry from Thales to Euclid," in Hermathena, Nos. v., vii., and x. (Dublin, 1877, 1881, and 1884); M. Cantor, Vorlesungen iiber Gesehichte der Mathematik (Leipsie, 1880). The recently published Short History of Greck Mathematics by James Gow (Cambridge, 1884) will be found a convenient compilation. (G. J. A.)

PYTHEAS of Massilia was a celebrated Greek navi- gator and geographer, to whom the Greeks appear to have been indebted for the earliest information they possessed, of at alla definite character, concerning the western regions of Europe, and especially the British Islands. The period at which he lived cannot be accurately determined ; but it is certain that he wrote, not only before Eratosthenes, who relied much upon his authority, but before Diczearchus, who was a pupil of Aristotle, and died about 285 B.C. Hence he may probably be regarded as about contem- porary with Alexander the Great. His work is now wholly lost, and appears to have been consulted in the original by comparatively few ancient writers, most of the

4 Proportion was not regarded by the ancients merely as a branch of arithmetic. We learn from Proclus that " Eratosthenes looked on proportion as the bond of mathematics" (op. cit., p. 43). We are also told in an anonymous scholium on the Elements of Euclid, which Knoche attributes to Proclus, that the fifth book, which treats of pro- portion, is common to geometry, arithmetic, music, and, in a word, to all mathematical science. And Kepler, who lived near enough to the ancients to reflect the spirit of their methods, says that one part of geometry is concerned with the comparison of figures and quantities, whence proportion arises. He also adds that arithmetie and geometry

_ afford mutual aid to each other, and that they eannot be separated.

PYRE AS

statements cited from it being confined to detached points, which may easily have been derived at second or even third hand. We are hence left almost wholly in the dark as to the form and character of the work itself, but the various titles under which it is cited by later writers point rather to a geographical treatise, in which he had embodied the results of his observations, than to a continuous narra- tive of his voyage like that of a modern navigator.

Some modern writers have supposed Pytheas to have been sent out at the public expense, in command of an expedition organized by the republic of Massilia; but there is no ancient authority for this, and the statement of Polybius, who had unquestionably seen the original work, is express, that he had undertaken the voyage in a private capacity and with limited means. All that we know concerning the voyage of Pytheas (apart from such detached notices as those already referred to) is contained in a brief passage of Polybius, cited by Strabo, in which he tells us that Pytheas, according to his own statement, had not only visited Britain but had personally explored a large part of it, and stated its circumference at more than 40,000 stadia (4000 geographical miles). To this he added the account of Thule (which he placed six days' voyage to the north of Britain) and the adjoining regions, in which there was no longer any distinction between the air and earth and sea, but a kind of mixture of all three, forming a substance resembling the gelatinous mollusc known as the Pulmo marinus,

which rendered all naviga- tio and progress in any other mode alike impossible. This substance he had himself seen, but the other state- ments he derived from hearsay. Returning from thence he visited the whole of the coasts of Europe bordering on the ocean as far as the Tanais (Polyb. ap. Strab., ii. p. 104). This last sentence has led some modern writers to suppose that he made two different voyages ; but this is highly improbtble, and the expressions of Polybius certainly imply that his explorations in both directions, first towards the north and afterwards towards the east, formed part of one and the same voyage.

The circumstance that the countries visited, and to a certain extent explored, by Pytheas were not only pre- viously unknown to the Greeks—except perhaps by vague hearsay accounts received through the Phcenicians—but Were not visited by any subsequent authority during a period of more than two centuries led some of the later Greek geographers altogether to disregard his statements, and even to treat the whole story of his voyage as a fiction,

‘ Eratosthenes, indeed, who wrote about a century after his

time, was disposed to attach great value to his authority, though doubting some of his statements ; but Polybius, about half a century later, involved the whole in one Sweeping condemnation, treating the work of Pytheas as & mere tissue of fables, like that of Euhemerus concerning Pancha ; and even Strabo, in whose time the western regions of Europe were comparatively well known, adopted to a great extent the same view with Polybius.

In modern times a more critical examination has arrived at a more favourable judgment, and, though Gossellin in his Recherches sur la Géographie des Anciens (vol. iv. pp. 168-180) and Sir G. C. Lewis in his Llistory of Ancient Astronomy (pp. 466-481) revived the sceptical view, the tendency of modern critics has been rather to exaggerate than to depreciate the value of what was really added by Pytheas to geographical knowledge. The fact is that our Information concerning him is so imperfect, and the scanty notices preserved to us from his work at once so meagre and discordant, that it is very difficult to arrive at anything like a sound conclusion. It may, however, be considered as fairly established that

Pytheas really made a voyage Tound the western coasts of Europe, proceeding from Gades,

the great Phoenician emporium, and probably the farthest point familiar to the Greeks, round Spain and Gaul to the British Islands, and that he followed the eastern coast of Britain for a considerable distance to the north, obtain- ing information as to its farther extension in that direction which led him greatly to exaggerate its size. At the same time he heard vaguely of the existence of a large island to the north of it—probably derived from the fact of the groups of the Orkneys and Shetlands being really found in that position—to which he gave the name of Thule. No ancient writer (except a late astronomer, who merely refers to it in a passing notice and obviously at second hand) asserts that Pytheas had hiniself visited Thule ; his account of the Sluggish Sea beyond it was, as stated by Polybius himself in the passage already cited, derived inerely from hearsay.

But the most important statement made by Pytheas in regard to this unknown land of Thule, and which has given rise to most controversy in modern times, was that connected with the astronomical phenomena affecting the duration of day and night in these remote arctic regions. Un- fortunately the reports transmitted to us at second hand in our existing authorities differ so widely that it is almost. impossible to determine what Pytheas himself really stated. It is, however, probable that the version given in one passage by Phny (#7.¥., iv. 16, 104) correctly represents his authority. According to this he reported as a fact that at the summer solstice the days were twenty-four hours in length, and conversely at the winter solstice the nights were of equal duration. Of course this would be strictly true had Thule really been situated under the arctic circle, which Pytheas evidently considered it to be, and his skill as an astronomer would thus lead him to accept. readily as a fact what he knew (as a voyager proceeded onwards towards the north) must be true at some point. But this statement certainly affords no evidence that he. had himself actually visited the mysterious land to which it refers. (See THULE.)

Still more difficult is it to determine the extent and character of Pytheas's explorations towards the east. The: statement of Polybius that he proceeded along the whole of the northern coasts of Europe as far as the Tanais is evidently based upon the supposition that this would be a simple and direct course along the coast of Germany and Scythia, —Polybius himself, in common with the other Greek geographers till a much later period, being wholly ignorant. of the vast projection of the Cimbric peninsula, and the long circumnavigation that it involved,—of all which no trace is found in the cxtant notices of Pytheas. Notwith- standing this, some modern writers have supposed him to have entered the Baltic and penetrated as far as the mouth of the Vistula, which he erroneously supposed to be the Tanais. The only foundation for this highly improbable as- sumption is to be found in the fact that in a passage cited by Pliny (4/.¥., xxxvii. 2, 35) Pytheas is represented as stating that amber was brought from an island called Abalus, distant a day's voyage from the land of the Guttones, a German nation who dwelt on an estuary of the ocean called Mentonomus, 6000 stadia in extent. It was a production thrown up by the waves of the sea, and was used by the inhabitants to burn instead of wood. It is not improbable that the "estuary" here mentioned really refers to the Baltic, the existence of which as a separate sea was un- known to all ancient geographers ; but the obscure nianner in which it is indicated, as well as the inaccuracy of the

statements concerning the place from whence the amber

was actually derived, both point to the sort of hearsay

accounts which Pytheas might readily have picked up on the shores of the German Ocean, without proceeding farther than the mouth of the Elbe, which is supposed by Ukert

to have been the limit of his voyage in this direction. It must be observed also that amber is found on the western coasts of Germany, as well as in the Baltic, though not in equal abundance.

It is a very singular fact that no mention is found in any ancient writer, in connexion with the voyage of Pytheas, of the Cassiterides or Tin Islands,

the exploration of which might naturally have been supposed to have been one of the chief objects of his voyage. It is indeed not im- possible that the statements on this subject preserved to us from Timeeus, who wrote less than a century after him, were derived from Pytheas, though there is no proof of this. The trade with those islands was probably at this period exclusively in the hands of the Phcenicians, but we know that at a later time a considerable portion of the supply was carried overland through Gaul to Massilia, Whether the voyage of Pytheas had any effect in contributing to bring about the diversion of this lucrative trade we have unfortunately no information.

Whatever uncertainty still hangs around all that has been trans- mitted to us concerning the actual explorations of Pytheas. it is certain that he had one merit which distinguished him from almost all his contemporaries: he was a good astronomer, and was one of the first who made observations for the determination of latitudes, among others that of his native place Massilia, which he fixed with remarkable accuracy, so that his result, which was within a few miles of the truth, was adopted by Ptolemy, and became the basis of liis map of the Western Mediterranean. Pytheas was also the first among the Greeks who arrived at any correct notion of the tides, and not only indicated their connexion with the moon but pointed out their periodical fluctuations in accordance with the phases of that luminary. Other observations concerning the manners and customs of the inhabitants of these remote regions are ascribed to him that are undoubtedly correct and tend strongly to prove that he had himself really visited them. Among these are the gradual disappearance of various kinds of grain as one advanced towards the north; the use of fermented liquors made from corn and honey ; and the habit of threshing out their corn in large covered barns, instead of on open threshing-floors as in Greece and Italy, on account of the want of sun and abundance of rain.

*The fragments of Pytheas have been collected by Arvedson (Upsala, 1824) and by Fuhr (De Pythea Massiliensi, Darmstadt, 1835). Of the numerous treatises and dissertations on the subject see for those of. earlier date Ukert's * Bemerkungen tiber Pytheas" (in vol. i. of his Geog. d. Griechen u. Romer, pp. 298-309), which contains an excellent summary of all that is known con- cerning the author and his work. The question has been also*

discussed by Sir G. C. Lewis, in his Historical Survey of the Astronomy of the Ancients (pp. 466-480, London, 1862), by Mr Bunbury, in his History of Ancient Geography (vol. i. chap. xv. sect. 2), and by Mr Elton, in his Origins of English History (London, 1882). A very elaborate but prolix and somewhat confused investiga- tion of the whole subject will be found in Miillenhoff's Dewtsche Alterthums- kunde (vol. i. pp. 211-497, Berlin, 1870). (E. H. B.)

PYTHON, a genus of gigantic snakes inhabiting the tropical parts of Africa and Asia, and known in some parts of the British possessions by the name of " rock-snakes." "On account of their general appearance, beautifully-marked skin, large size, and similarity of habits they are frequently confounded with the true boas of the New World and misnamed '"boa-constrictors." They differ from them, however, by having a double row of scutes under the tail, pits in the shields round the margins of the upper and lower jaws, and teeth in the intermaxillary bone.

Africa is inhabited by three species(Python sebx, P. regius, and P. natalensis), and Asia by two (Python molurus and P. reticulatus), the former of these two species being found on the continent of India and in Ceylon, the latter in the large islands of the Archipelago and in the Malayan Pen-insula. In Australasia and New Guinea similar snakes occur, but they are of much smaller size and differ in essential structural characters from the rock-snakes. These latter are among the largest of living reptiles ; although their dimensions and strength have been much exaggerated, specimens of 18 and 20 feet have been brought to Europe, and reliable statements of the occurrence of individuals which measured 30 feet are on record. Snakes of this size will easily overpower and kill one of the small species of deer or antelopes which abound in their native haunts, a sheep, or a good-sized dog; but the width of their mouth

PY TLPY &

would not permit them to swallow an animal larger than a half-grown sheep. The way in which they seize and kill their prey does not differ from that observed in num-

el yorted

yint

Python reticulatus (India).

erous other non-venomous snakes: after having seized their victim, they smother it by constriction, throwing several coils of the body over and round it. In swallowing they always commence with the head ; and, as they prey exclusively on mammals and birds, the hairs and feathers offer a considerable impediment to the passage through the narrow but distensible throat. The process of deglu- tition is therefore slow, although facilitated by the great quantity of saliva discharged over the body of the victim. During the time of digestion the snake is very lazy, and unwilling to move and to defend itself when attacked. At other times these animals are fierce enough, although always harmless to man if left unmolested. In captivity they seem to become used to those who attend upon them, but their apparent tameness is due rather to the depress- ing influence of a colder climate than to a change of their naturally excitable temper. Rock-snakes are mostly arbo- real, and prefer localities in the vicinity of water to which animals resort for the purpose of drinking. They move, climb, and swim with equal facility. It has now been well established by observations on specimens in a state of nature as well as in captivity that the female rock-snake incubates her eggs for about two months, at the end of which period the young are hatched, and probably remain under the protection of the mother for a few weeks longer. The snake collects the eggs into a conical heap, round which she coils herself, entirely covering them so that her head rests in the centre on the top of the cone. In this position the animal remains without food throughout the whole period of incubation, and an increase of the temperature between the coils of the snake has been ob- served in every case.

PYX. See Mint, vol. xvi. p. 483.

145

Q

was written in Greek with the straight stroke verti-

cal, 9, as in the Phcenician alphabet from which it

was borrowed, and was called koppa, the equivalent of the Hebrew koph. It is found sparingly on some old inscrip- tions of Rhodes, of some of the A‘%gean islands, of Corinth and of Syracuse, and most frequently in the Chalcidian colonies of Sicily and Italy. But it was soon supplanted by kappa, and survived only in numeration as the repre- sentative of the number 90. It went to Rome with the

Chalcidian alphabet of Cumz, and was written at first

with the vertical line; but the stroke soon became slant, so that the symbol got the form it still retains (Q).

There is a slight but real distinction of sound between the so-called palatal and velar’. The first is the ordinary k, for which the back of the tongue iy raised against the back part of the hard palate. The second is produced by raising the tongue against the soft palate or velum palatt, that is, rather farther back in the mouth. This sound has a tendency to be accompanied by a slight rounding of the lips; this causes an equally slight w sound after the &. It is probable that the velar & with this parasitic w was in use for a time in Greece, and that it was represented by the koppa; the symbol would otherwise have been totally unnecessary ; also the koppa is generally followed by u or 0, which, on this view, is natural. We know that in Greece fw must have been an intermediate sound between kand p in words where x was labialized, such as érouat from root sak (see under K). sound was not retained in the language: either the w was dropped and the sound reverted to &, or p was produced by the assimilating force of the w; therefore all need for a symbol koppa ‘vanished. But in Latin the middle step remained, as in seguor; therefore the symbol was needed. But the parasitic sound became a complete w; and to denote this v was regularly written after the g. There- fore even in Latin the symbol was really otiose, for kv would have been quite sufficient, and did actually suffice for the Umbrian and Oscan, which never possessed the g. In old inscriptions we find qg alone when the following vowel is u, as in Mirgurios, pequnia. In later times, when o passed by weakening into uw, a preceding gu was written c; thus guom became cum, to avoid the double x of guwm. The gu of the Latin naturally passed on into the Romanic languages. It passed into the Teutonic

languages in borrowed words, such as quart, but made its way into Teutonic words also; thus, in English, cwén, cwellan are now spelt queen, quell.

QUADRILATERAL, a military term applied to any combination of four fortresses mutually supporting each other, but especially to that of the four fortified towns of Mantua, Peschiera, Verona, and Legnago, the two former of which are situated on the Mincio and the two latter on the Adige. The real value of the Quadrilateral, which gave Austria such a firm hold on Lombardy, lay in the extraordinary natural strength of Mantua and in the readiness with which troops and supplies could be poured into Verona from the north.

See "The Quadrilateral," in the Cornhill Magazine, 1862; and Professor Malfatti, J2 Quadrilatero, Milan, 1866.

~ QUADRUMANA. See Mammatta, vol. xv. p- 444, and Apr, vol. ii. p. 148.

QUESTOR was the title of a Roman magistrate whose functions, at least in the later times of the republic, were mainly financial. The origin of the questorship is some- what obscure, but on the whole it was probably instituted

But this intermediate

simultaneously with the consulship in 509 z.c.1 The number of the quzstors was originally two, but this was successively increased to four (in 421 B.c.), eight (in 267 or 241 z.c.), and by Sulla (in 81 B.c.) to twenty. Czesar raised the number to forty (in 45 3.c.), but Augustus reduced it again to twenty, which remained the regular number under the empire. When the number was raised from two to four in 421 3.c. the office was thrown open to the plebeians, and it was the first office that was so opened. It was the lowest of the great offices of state, and hence it was regularly the first sought by aspirants to a political career. Towards the close of the republic, if not earlier, the successful candidate was bound to have completed his thirtieth year before he entered on office, but Augustus lowered the age to twenty-five. Originally the questors seem to have been nominated by the consuls independently, but later, perhaps from the fall of the decemvirs (449 B.c.), they were elected by the people assembled in tribes (comitia tributa) and

pre- sided over by a consul or another of the higher magistrates. The queestors held office for one year, but, like the consuls and preetors, they were often continued in office with the title of proqueestor. Indeed it was a regular rule that the queestor attached to a higher magistrate should hold office as long as his superior; hence, when a consul regularly presided over the city for one year, and afterwards as proconsul governed a province for another year, his queestor also regularly held office for two years. Before the election of the queestors the senate decided the duties to be undertaken by them, and after election these duties were distributed amongst the new queestors either by lot or by the choice of the higher magistrates to whom a questor was assigned. A peculiar burden laid on the questors, not so much as an Official duty, but rather as a sort of fee exacted from all who entered on the political career, was the paving of the high roads, for which Claudius substituted the exhibition of gladiatorial games. Various classes of queestors may be distinguished according to the duties they had respectively to discharge. Up to 421 B.c. there were only two queestors, and when fresh ones were added the two original quzestors were distinguished by the appellation of urban questors (quexstores urbant), doubtless because they were bound to remain in Rome during thei» term of office.

1. The Urban Quexstors.—Originally the duties of the questors, like those of the eonsuls, were of a general and Tadefined: nature ; specialization of function had not yet arisen—the consuls were simply the superior, the questors simply the inferior magistratcs of the republie. From a very early time, however, the questors possessed criminal to the exelusion of eivil jurisdietion. Thc very name "questor" (from guexrere, "to seareh out") means " inves- tigator," "inquisitor." In the code of the Twelve Tables they are designated questores parricidit, "inquisitors of parrieide or murder" ;? and perhaps originally this was their full title, which was afterwards abbreviated into questors when their funetions as erim- inal judges fell into the background. In addition to parrieide or murder we ean hardly doubt that all other erimes fell within the jurisdiction of the questors ; political crimes only seem to have been exeepted. The criminal jurisdiction of the questors appears

1 Plutarch (Popl., 12) states that the office was instituted by the first consul. Tacitus, on the other hand (Ann., xi. 22), says that it dated from the time of

the kings, but his ground is merely that they were mentioned in the Lex Curiata of the consul Brutus, which Tacitus assumes to have been identical with that of the kings.

2 The etymology and original meaning of parricidiwm are doubtful. In the latter part of the word we have, of course, the same root as in exedere, "to kill," but whether or not the former part is from pater, "a father," or from the same root that we have in per-peram, per-jurium, is a moot point. Mommsen takes the latter view.

only to have terminated when towards the close of the republic trial by permanent courts (quaestiones perpetuw) was extcnded to criminal cases!

The questors had also charge of the public treasury (@rartwm) in the temple of Saturn, and this was in the later times of the republic their most important function. They kept the keys of the treasury and had charge of its contents, including not only coin and bullion but also the military standards and a large number of public documents, which in later times comprised all the laws as well as the decrees of the senate. Their functions as keepers of the treasury were withdrawn from the urban questors by Augustus and transferred to other magistrates, but the office itself continued to exist into the 8d century, though as to the nature of the duties attached to it we have little or no information.

2. The Military Questors.—These were instituted in 421 B.o., when two new questors were added to the original two, They never had a distinctive appellation like that of the urban questors, from whom, however, they were clearly distinguished by the fact that, while the urban questors did not stand in a special relation of subordination to any particular magistrate, a non-urban questor was regularly assigned as an indispensable assistant or adjutant to' every general in command, whose name or title the questor usually added to his own.? Originally they were the adjutants of the consuls only, afterwards of the provincial pretors, and still later of the proconsuls and propretors. military commanders had no questor, because a questor

woul have been a limitation to his powers. The governor of Sicily had two questors ; all other ae and commanders had but one. Between the questor and his superior a close personal relation, analogous to that. between a son and his father, existed, and was not severed when their official connexion ceased. , Not till the close of the republic do cases occur of a questor being sent toa province invested with preetorial and even consular powers ; in one case at least the questor so scnt had a second questor placed under him. The duties of the military questor, like those of the treasury questor, were primarily financial. Moneys due to a provincial governor from the state treasury were often, perhaps regularly, received and disbursed by the questor; the magazines seem to have been under his charge; he coined money, on which not unfrequently his name appears alone. The booty taken in war. was not necessarily under the control of the questor, but was dealt with, especially in later times, by inferior officers called prefecti fabrum. But, though his duties were primarily financial, . the questor was after all the chief assistant or adjutant of his superior in command, and as such he was invested with a certain degree of military power; under the republic his military rank | was superior to that of the legates, though under the empire this relation was reversed. When the general left his province before the arrival of his successor he usually committed it to the care of his questor, and, if he died or was incapacitated from naming his successor, the questor acted as his representative. Unlike the urban questor, the military questor possessed not a criminal but a civil jurisdiction corresponding to that of the ediles at Rome.

3. The Italian Questors.—The subjugation of Italy occasioned the institution (in 267 B.c.) of four new questors, who appear to have been called questores classici because they were originally intended to superintend the building of the fleet (cassis) ; their functions, however, are very imperfectly known. Though no doubt intended to assist the consuls, they were not subordinated (like the military questors) to a special consul. They were stationed at Ostia, at Cales in Campania, and in Gaul about the Padus (Po). The station of the fourth is not mentioned ; perhaps it was Lilybeeum in Sicily.

QUAGGA, or CovaGaa, an animal of the genus Zguus (see Horsz, vol. xii. p. 175), nearly allied to the zebra, which formerly was met with in vast

herds on the great plains of South Africa between the Cape Colony and the Vaal river, but now, in common with most of the larger wild animals of that region, becoming extremely scarce, owing to the encroachments of European civilization. In length of ears and character of tail it more resembles the horse than it does the ass, although it agrees with the latter in wanting the small bare callosity in the inner side of the hind leg, just below the hock, characteristic of the horse. The colour of the head, neck, and upper parts of

1 It is often supposed that the que&stores parricidti were an old magistraey quite distinet from the ordinary questors. For the identification of the two, see Mommsen, Rémisches Staatsrecht, ii., pe. L, p. 606.

2 Thus Cieero speaks of the provincia consularis of the queestor, and we find guestor Cn. Pompei, &e.

The dictator alone ane

QUA—QUA

the body is reddish-brown, irregularly banded and marked with dark brown stripes, stronger on the head and neck and gradually becoming fainter until lost behind the shoulder., There is a broad dark median. dorsal stripe. The under surface of the body, the legs, and tail are nearly white, without stripes. by a standing mane, banded alternately brown and white. Though never really domesticated, quaggas have occasion- ally been trained to harness, The accompanying figure is

Quagga.

reduced from a painting made from one of a pair which were driven in Hyde Park by Mr Sheriff Parkins in the early part of the present century. The name is an imita- tion of the shrill barking neigh of the animal, “ ouag-ga, ouag-ga,” the last syllable very much prolonged. It must pe remembered, however, in reading books of African travel that the same word is very commonly applied by hunters to another and more completely striped species, called by zoologists Burchell’s zebra. .

QUAIL (Old French Quazlle, Mod. French Caille, Italian Quaglia, Low Latin Quaguila, Dutch Kwakkel, and Kwartel, German Wachtel, Danish Vagtel), a very well- known bird throughout almost all countries of Europe, Asia, and Africa,—in modern ornithology the Coturm« communis or C. dactylisonans, This last epithet was given from the peculiar three-syllabled call-note of the cock, which has been grotesquely rendered in several European lan- guages, and in some parts of Great Britain the species is popularly known by the nickname of '" Wet-my-lips" or '"'Wet-my-feet." The Quail varies somewhat in colour, and the variation is rather individual than attributable to local causes; but generally the plumage may be described as reddish-brown above, almost each feather being trans- versely patched with dark brown interrupted by a longitu- dinal stripe of light buff; the head is dark brown-above, with three longitudinal streaks of ochreous-white ; the sides of the breast and flanks are reddish-brown, distinctly striped with ochreous-white ; the rest of the lower parts are pale buff, clouded with a darker shade, and passing into white on the belly. The cock, besides being generally brighter in tint, not unfrequently has the chin and a double-throat band of reddish or blackish-brown, which marks are want- ing in the hen, whose breast is usually spotted. Quails breed on the ground, as all gallinaceous birds commonly do, and lay from nine to fifteen eggs of a yellowish-white, blotched and spotted with dark brown. Though essenti- ally migratory by nature, not a few Quails pass the winter in the northern hemisphere and even in Britain, and many more in southern Europe. In March and April they cross the Mediterranean from the south on the way to their breed-

The crest is very high, surmounted —

ing homes in large bands, but these are said to be.as | fornia, Lophortyx californica, has also been tried in

nothing compared with the enormous flights that emigrate | Europe without success.

from Europe towards the end of September. During both migrations immense numbers are netted for the market, since they are almost universally esteemed as delicate meat. On capture they are placed in long narrow and low cages, darkened to prevent the prisoners from fighting, and, though they are often so much crowded as to be hardly able to stir, the loss by death that ensues is but trifling. Food, usually millet' or hempseed, and water are supplied in troughs hung in front, and thus these little birds are trans- ported by tens of thousands from the shores of the Mediterranean for consumption in the most opulent and populous cities of Europe. The flesh of Quails caught in spring commonly proves dry and indifferent, but that of those.taken in autumn, especially when they have been kept long enough to grow fat, as they quickly do, is excellent. In no part of the British Islands at present do Quails exist in sufficient numbers to be the especial object of sport, though there are many places in which a few, and in some seasons more than a few, yearly fall to the gun. When made to take wing, which is not always easily done, they rise with great speed, but on such occasions they seldom fly far, and no one seeing them only thus would be inclined to credit them with the power of extensive migra- tion that they possess, though this is often overtaxed, and the birds in their transmarine voyages frequently drop exhausted into the sea or on any vessel that may be in their way. In old days they were taken in England in a net, attracted thereto by means of a Quail-call,—a simple instrument,! the use of which is now wholly neglected,—on which their notes are easily imitated.

Five or six other species of the restricted genus Coturnix are now recognized ; but the subject of the preceding remarks is generally admitted to be that intended by the author of the book of Exodus (xvi. 13) as having supplied

-food to the Israelites in the wilderness, though a few ornithological writers have thought that bird to have been a SAND-GrovusE (¢.v.). In South Africa and India allied species, C'. delegorguii and 'C. coromandelica, the latter known as the Rain-Quail, respectively occur, as well as the commoner one, which in Australia and Tasmania is wholly replaced by C. pectoralis, the Stubble-Quail of the colonists. In New Zealand another species, C. nove-zelandix, was formerly very abundant in some districts, but is considered to have been nearly if not quite extirpated within the last twenty years by

bush-fires. Some fifteen or perhaps more Species of Quails, inhabiting the Indian and Australian Regions, have been separated, perhaps unnecessarily, to form the genera Synecus, Perdicula, Lxcalphatoria, and so forth ; but they call for no particular remark.

America has some fifty or sixty species of birds which are commonly deemed Quails, though by some authors placed in a distinct Family or Sub-family Odontophorine.2 The best known is the Virginian Quail, or Colin, as it is frequently called—that being, according to Hernandez, its old Mexican name. It is the Ortyx virginianus of modern ornithology, and has a wide distribution in North America, im some parts of which it is known as the " Partridge," as well as by the nickname of " Bob-White," aptly bestowed upon it from the call-note of the cock. Many attempts have been made to introduce this bird to England (as indeed similar trials have been made in the United States with Quails from Europe) ; but, though it has been turned out by hundreds, and has been frequently known to breed after liberation, its numbers rapidly diminish until it wholly disappears. The beautiful tufted Quail of Cali-

One is figured in Rowley's Ornithological Miscellany (ii. p. 363). They form the subject of a monograph in folio by Gould, published between 1844 and 1850.

All these American Quails or Colins seem to have the habit of perching on trees, which none of the Old-World forms possess.

Interesting from many points of view as is the group of Birds last mentioned, there is another which, containing a score of species (or perhaps more) often termed Quails or Button-Quails, is of still greater importance in the eyes of the systematist. This is that comprehended by the genus Turnix, or Hemipodius of some authors, the anatomical structure of which removes it far from the genera Coturniz, Ortyx, and their allies, and even from any of the normal Galline. Prof. Huxley, as already stated (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 36), would regard it as the representative of a generalized stock from which the Charadriomorphe and Alectoromorphx, to say nothing of other groups, have sprung. Want of space prevents our here dwelling upon these curious birds. One species, 7. sylvatica, inhabits Barbary and southern Spain, and under the name of Andalucian Hemipode has been

included (though on evidence not wholly satisfactory) among British Birds as a reputed straggler. The rest are natives of various parts of the Ethiopian, Indian, and Australian Regions. It is characteristic of the genus Turnix to want the hind toe; but the African Ortyxelus and the Australian Pedionomus which have been referred to its neighbourhood have four toes on each foot, and, since nothing is known of the anatomy or: habits of the first and but little of those of the second,' their position must at present be considered doubtful. (A. N.)

QUAKERS. The Quakers, or, as they call themselves, the Society of Friends, are a body of Christians small in number but presenting several features of interest. To the student of ecclesiastical history they are curious as exhibiting a form of Christianity widely aberrant from the preva- lent types, and as a body of worshippers without a creed, a liturgy, a priesthood, or a sacrament; to the student of social science they are interesting as having given to women an almost equal place with men in their church organization, and as having attempted to eliminate war, oaths, and litigation from their midst. The student of English constitutional history will observe the success with which they have, by the mere force of passive resistance, obtained from the legislature and the courts indulgence for all their scruples and a recognition of the legal validity of their customs; whilst to the student of American history the Quakers will ever be remarkable for the pro- minent part they played in the colonization of New Jersey and Pennsylvania,

HMistory.—The history of Quakerism in England may conveniently be divided into four periods :—(1) from the first preaching of Fox in 1648 to the establishing of a church organization in 1666; (2) from that date to the Revolution of 1688; (3) from the Revolution to 1835; and (4) from 1835 to the present time.

1. George Fox (q.v.), the son of a weaver of Drayton in Leicestershire, was the founder of the Quakers. He began to preach in 1648, and in a few years gathered around him a great body of followers and a considerable number of itinerant preachers like himself, who zealously promul- gated his doctrines. Amongst these Edward Burrough was one of the most remarkable. In 1655 these preachers num- bered seventy-three. Fox and his

fellow-preachers spoke whenever opportunity offered — sometimes in churches,

3 Col. Legge's observations on the habits of Pedionomus in the Zoological Society's Proceedings (1869, pp. 286-238) would seem to shew a Limicoline affinity. Garrod in the same work (1873, p. 34) figured the skull as that of a Turnicine, in which view Forbes acquiesced (Jéis, 1882, pp. 389, 431); but against it Col. Legge im- mediately protested (tom. cit., p. 610).

sometimes in barns, sometimes at market-crosses. 'There is some evidence to show that the arrangement of this mis- sion, as it would now be called, rested mainly with Fox, and that the expenses of it and of the foreign missions were borne out of a common fund. Margaret Fell, the wife and afterwards the widow of Judge Fell—who sub- sequently married George Fox—opened her house at Swarthmore Hall, near Ulverston, to these preachers, and probably contributed largely to the common fund from which the expenses were paid. Fox's teaching was primarily a preaching of repentance; and he and his friends addressed vast congregations much as Wesley and Whitefield did at a later date. But his teaching had certain marked peculiarities—especially his insistence on the universality and sufficiency of the light of God's Spirit. He regarded the work in which he was engaged as in no wise the founding of a new sect or society, but, to use his own words, as 'the appearance of the Lord's everlasting truth, and breaking forth again in His eternal power in this our day and age in England." Such teaching and such views necessarily brought Fox and his friends into direct conflict with all the religious bodies of England, and they were continually engaged in strife with the Pres- byterian ministers who then filled the pulpits of English churches, with the Independents, with the Baptists, with the Episcopal Church, and with the wilder sectaries, like the Fifth Monarchy men, the Ranters, the Seekers, and the Muggletonians. This strife was conducted on both sides with a zeal and an acerbity of language not consonant with our present notions of decorum. The movement was accompanied, too, by most of those physical symptoms which usually go with vehement appeals to the conscience and the emotions of a rude multitude. The trembling amongst the listening crowd caused or confirmed the name of Quakers given to the body: men and women some- times fell down and lay grovelling on the earth and struggling as if for life. But the Quaker preachers seem not to have encouraged these manifestations, but rather to have sought to assuage them by such reasonable means as carrying the affected to bed or administering a cordial or medicine.

Some of the early Quakers indulged in eccentricities and extravagances of no measured kind. Some travelled and preached naked or barefoot or dressed in sackcloth ; others imitated the Hebrew prophets in the performance of symbolical acts of denunciation or warning; even the

women in some cases distinguished themselves by the impropriety and folly of their conduct. In some cases religious excitement seems to have produced or been attended by insanity, and the aberrations of Naylor and Ibbit can only be attributed to that cause. For, though not altogether free from acts of fanaticism, the Quaker leaders discouraged and disowned the grosser acts of enthusiasm.

The activity and zeal of the early Quakers were not con- fined to England ; they passed into Scotland and Ireland. Fox and others travelled to America and the West Indian Islands ; another reached Jerusalem, and testified against the superstition of the monks; Mary Fisher, "a religious maiden," visited Smyrna, the Morea, and the court of Mohammed IV. at Adrianople; others made their way to Rome; two women suffered imprisonment from the In- quisition in Malta; two men passed into Austria and Hungary ; and William Penn, George Fox, and others preached Quakerism in Holland and Germany.

As early as 1652 meetings of the followers of Fox, calling themselves at first the Children of Light, gathered together in various places in England, and were soon established in considerable numbers. The meetings at Bristol were often attended by from three to four thousand people.

QUAKERS

2. The second period in the history of Quakerism 1s marked by the introduction into the body, hitherto unor- ganized, of an organization and a discipline principally due to the mind and energy of Fox, by a more scholarly and learned air given to the Quaker productions by the writings of William Penn and Robert Barclay, and by the part which the Quakers played in the colonization of New Jersey and of Pennsylvania. It is not wonderful that the introduction of an organization and a discipline inet with great opposition amongst a people taught to believe that the inward light of each individual man was the only true guide for his conduct. The project met with some oppo- sition at the time, and at a later period (1683), from persons of considerable reputation in the body. Wilkin- son, Rogers, Story, and others raised a party against Fox as regards the management of the affairs of the society, and asserted that the meetings for discipline which had been established were useless, and that every man ought to be guided

by the Spirit of God in his own mind, and not to be governed by rules of man. They drew a consider- able following away with them, but the greater number adhered to their original leader.

Robert Barcuay (¢.v.), a Scotsman of family, who had received a polite education, principally in France, joined the Quakers about 1666, and William Penn (¢.v.) joined the body about two years later. The Quakers had always been active controversialists, and a great body of tracts and papers was issued by them; but hitherto they had not been of much account in a literary point of view. Now the writings of Barclay, especially his celebrated Apology for the True Christian Divinity (1675), published by him in Latin and English, and the works of William Penn (amongst which his Vo Cross no Crown was one of the best known) gave to the Quaker literature a more logical and a more scholarly aspect.

One peculiarity of the conduct of the Friends down to the Revolution of 1688, and more or less down to the present time, must not be overlooked. They were essenti- ally non-political. They opposed the most dogged per- sonal and individual resistance to what they thought wrong; but they never attempted by combination or otherwise to exert political influence. 'Keep out of the powers of the earth" was Fox's exhortation ; and, when in 1688 a discussion was introduced into the yearly gathering of the body on the choice of parliament men, Fox strenuously opposed the introduction of politics into the meetings of his followers.

During the whole time between the rise of the Quakers and the passing of the Toleration Act they were the objects of an almost continuous persecution, which they endured with extraordinary constancy and patience. In 1656 Fox computed that there were seldom less than a thousand in prison, and it has been asserted that between 1661 and 1697 13,562 Quakers were imprisoned, 152 were transported, and 338 died in prison or of their wounds. Having come into being after the death of Charles I., the Quakers first endured persecution under the Parliament and then under Cromwell. In 1645 an ordinance of the Parliament had made the directory of the Westminster divines obligatory ; and ordinances of the years 1646 and 1648 were passed for the preventing of blasphemies and heresies, which comprehended under these hard names some doctrines

afterwards promulgated by the Quakers, as that the two sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper are not commanded by the word of God, and that the use of arms for defence, be the cause ever so just, is unlawful. Furthermore these or other ordinances of the Parliament placed the decision of questions as to tithes in the hands of the justices of the peace. The instrument of government under which Cromwell assumed power as the Lord Protector had held out a promise of protection in the exercise of their religion to '"'such as professed faith in God by Jesus Christ" (art. 87); and the Protector himself, in 2 speech addressed to Parliament on the 12th September 1654, had declared liberty of conscience to be a natural right; nevertheless the Quakers found that they were still the subjects of bitter per- secution. They were sometimes dealt with under the ordinances already referred to, sometimes as Sabbath-breakcrs because they

travelled to their mcetings for worship, sometimes as disturbers of the clergy in their office because they spoke in churches, sometimes as guilty of breaches of the peace because they preached in streets or markcts, sometimes for refusing to pay tithes, sometimes for refusing to take off their hats, sometimes for refusing to swear. So matters remained till the Restoration of Charles II., when the publication from Breda of his declaration for liberty of conscience again raised hopes of ease in the hearts of the Friends. But these hopes were again destined to disappointment. The laws under which the Quakers were persecuted during the revived Stuart period were (1) the common law, (2) the old legislation in ecclesi- astical matters which was revived on Charles's accession, (3) the special legislation of the period, and (4) the ecclesiastical laws as administered by the ecclesiastical courts. In the first class was the general law as to breakers of the peace; in the second class may be mentioned the statute of 6 Hen. VIII. by which im- prisonment was appointed as a punishment for non-payment of tithes, the statute of Klizabeth imposing the oath of supremacy, the Act of Uniformity passed in the first year of Elizabeth, the Acts of the 23rd and 29th years of the same queen which im- posed fines and penalties for non-attendance of church and the statute of the 385th year of Elizabeth by which an obstinate offender in that matter was made a felon without benefit of clergy, and, lastly, the statute of 3

James I. imposing the oath of alle- giance. (3) The special legislation during this period under which the Quakers suffered included (a) a statute 18 & 14 Car. II. c. 1, especially dirccted against them and punishing their refusal to take an oath, or the taking part in assemblies for worship, with fine, and a second conviction with an obligation to abjure the realm, or transportation to any of the king's plantations ; (b) the Act of Uniformity (13 & 14 Car. II. c. 4), more stringent than that of Elizabeth ; (c) the Five-Mile Act passed in 1665 (17 Car. II. c. 4); and, lastly, the Conventicle Act of 1670 (22 Car. II. c. 1). (4) The ecclesiastical courts, on the return of the Stuarts, were restored to thcir former vigour, and Quakers were continually proceeded against in them for non-payment of tithes, oblations, and other church claims, and also for non-attendance at the parish churches, and for contempt of the discipline and censures of the church. Many of their body were accordingly excommunicated, and under the writ de eacommunicato capiendo confined to prison.

The passing of the Conventicle Act gave fresh vigour to the persecution of Dissenters. But, on 15th March 1671-72, King Charles II. issued his declaration for suspending the penal laws in matters ecclesiastical, and shortly afterwards by pardon under the great seal released above four hundred Quakers from prison, remitted their fines, and released such of their estates as were forfeited by premunire. The dissatisfaction which this exercise of the royal prerogative created induced the king in the following year to recall his proclamation, and the suffer- ings of the Quakers revived ; and, notwithstanding repre- sentations and appeals to King Charles IT., the persecution continued throughout his reign. On the accession of James IT., the Quakers addressed him with some hope from his known friendship for William Penn, and pre- sented to him a list of the numbers of their members undergoing imprisonment in each county, amounting in all to fourteen hundred and sixty, King James not long afterwards directed a stay of proceedings in all matters pending in the Exchequer against Quakers on the ground of non-attendance on national worship. In 1687 came the king's celebrated declaration for liberty of conscience, and in the following year the Revolution, which put an end to all persecution of the Quakers, though they remained for many years liable to imprisonment for non-payment of tithes, and though they long laboured together with other Dissenters under

various disabilities—the gradual removal of which is part of the general history of England.

_ The Toleration Act was by no means the only legisla- tion of the reign of William and Mary which brought ease to the Quakers. The legislature early had regard to their refusal to take oaths; and from 1689 to a very recent date numerous enactments have respected the peculiar scruples of the Friends. This special legislation may be conveniently studied in Davis's Digest of Legislative Enact- ments relating to Friends (Bristol, 1820).

3. With the cessation of persecution in 1689 the

zeal of the Quaker body abated. Foreign missions had no existence except in the occasional travels of some wandering minister. The notion that the whole Christian church would be absorbed in Quakerism, and that the Quakers were in fact the church, passed away ; and in its place grew up the conception that they were "a peculiar people" to whom had been given a clearer insight into the truths of God than to the professing Christian world around them, and that this sacred deposit was to be guarded with jealous care. Hence the Quakerism of this period was mainly of a traditional kind: it dwelt with increasing emphasis on the peculiarities of dress and lan- guage which tended to shut Quakers off socially from their fellow-men; it rested much upon discipline, which developed and hardened into rigorous forms; and the correction or exclusion of its members was a larger part of the business of the body than the winning of converts either to Christi- anity or to Quakerism.

Excluded from political life by the constitution of the country, excluding themselves not only from the frivolous pursuits of pleasure but from music and art in general, with no high average of literary education (though they produced some men of eminence in medicine and science, as Dr Fothergill and Dr Dalton), the Quakers occupied themselves largely with trade, the business of their society, and the calls of philanthropy. In the middle and latter part of last century they founded several institutions for the more thorough education of their children, and entered upon many philanthropic labours.

During this period Quakerism was sketched from the outside by two very different men. Voltaire (Dictionnaire Philosophique, s.vv. Quaker," "Toleration") has described the body, which attracted his curiosity, his sympathy, and his sneers, with all his brilliance. Clarkson (Portraiture of Quakerism) has given an elaborate and sympathetic ac- count of the Quakers as he knew them when he travelled amongst them from house to house on his crusade against the slave trade.

4. It cannot be denied that the theology of Quakerism had become somewhat mystic and quietist during the long period we have just considered. About the year 1826 an American Quaker named Hicks (q.v.) openly denied the divinity of Christ, depreciated the value of the Scrip- tures, and recognized no other Saviour than the inward light. A large body of the American Quakers followed him, and still maintain a separate existence. Jt was this movement which led to a counter movement in England, known in the Quaker body as the Beacon controversy, from the name of a book published in 1835, advocating views more nearly akin to those known as evangelical than were held by many Quakers. A considerable discussion ensued, and a certain number of the Friends holding these more evangelical doctrines departed from the parent stock, leaving, however, behind them many influential members of the society who strove to give a more evangelical tone to the Quaker theology. Joseph John Gurney, by his various writings (some published before 1835), was the most prominent actor in this movement. This period has also been marked, especially within the last few years, by some revival of aggressive action, and Quakers have taken far more part in the teaching in Sunday schools, in the preaching of the gospel to the poor, and in the establish- ment of foreign missions than in the period immediately preceding. In 1847 an association was established to promote Sunday schools in the body; in 1859 a Friends' foreign mission was established; and the Quakers have now a few regular labourers in Madagascar, India, Syria, and Constantinople.

Other causes have been at work modifying the Quaker body. The repeal of the Test Act, the admission of

Quakers to parliament, the establishment of the university of London, and more recently still the opening to Dis- senters of Oxford and Cambridge, have all operated on the body. It has almost entirely abandoned its peculiarities of dress and language; the cultivation of music and the other arts is no longer discouraged except by a very few; and literary and scientific tastes have been cultivated all the more because their attention was not preoccupied with the love of field sports or of dancing. In fact a number of men either Quakers or of Quaker origin and proclivi- ties, large in proportion to the small body with which they are connected, occupy positions of influence in English society, and carry with them, not the full body of Quaker doctrine, but some leaven of Quaker habits and thoughts and feelings.

Doctrine.—It is not easy to state with certainty the doctrines of a body which has never adopted any creed, and whose views have undoubtedly undergone from time to time changes more or less definite. But the accepted writings of its members and the statements as to doctrine contained in the Book of Christian Discipline of the society furnish materials.

The most characteristic doctrine of Quakerism is un- doubtedly this—that there is an immediate revelation of the Spirit of God to each individual soul, that this light is universal and comes both to the heathen and the Chris- tian, and thereby the love and grace of God towards man- kind are universal. It is almost needless to call attention to the direct antithesis between this doctrine of the Quakers and the various doctrines of election held by the Puritans, so that, if Quakerism be called the climax of Puritanism, it is so only as the rebound is the climax of the wave. From the doctrine of the sufficiency of the inward light proceed several other of the peculiar views of Quakers. They have denied the necessity and abstained from the practice of the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper. The one baptism, says Barclay (12th pro- position), "is a pure and spiritual thing, to wit, the baptism of the spirit and fire….. of which the baptism of John was a figure which was commanded for a time, and not to continue for ever." "The communion of the body and blood of Christ," says the same author (13th proposi- tion), "is inward and spiritual, which is the participation of his flesh and blood by which the inward man is daily

nourished in the hearts of those in whom Christ dwells, of which things the breaking of bread by Christ with his disciples was a figure."

But not merely do the Quakers dispense with the sacra-

ments ; they exist without any priesthood or regular or.

ordained ministry; they allow the liberty of unlicensed preaching and prayer to every member of their society in their assemblies, and those in whom the body recognizes the true gifts are publicly acknowledged as ministers. But by this act they attain to no greater power in the society than they possessed before. By the strength and power of the light of God, says Barclay in his 10th pro- position, "every true minister of the gospel is ordained, prepared, and supplied in the work of the ministry ; and by the leading, moving, and drawing thereof ought every evangelist and Christian pastor to be led and ordered in his labour and work of the gospel both as to the place where, the persons to whom, and as to the times when he is to minister."

The Quakers not only have no stated ministry, but they hold that no form of worship is so good as a patient waiting upon God in silence "by such as find no outward ceremony, no observations, no words, yea not the best and purest words, even the words of Scripture, able to satisfy their weary and afflicted souls." Hence, although per- mitting addresses from their members, they sit frequently

silent both in family worship and in their meetings. Of late years, however, in some places passages from the Bible are read in their meetings for worship. Furthermore the Quakers maintain the equal right of women with men to preach and pray in their assemblies; and they cite the four daughters of Philip who prophesied, and other women who are mentioned in the New Testament as having laboured much in the Lord, as showing that their practice is in accord with that of the early church.

Refusing to acknowledge the ministry of the Estab- lished Church, and holding that they could thus best testify to " the spiritual reign and

government of Christ," the Quakers refused to pay all church rates, tithes, and other ecclesiastical demands. maintained the same objection against tithe-rent charge, and then abandoned it.

The Quakers deny the lawfulness for a Christian of all war, defensive or otherwise, and have always refused, often at the expense of much suffering, to take any part in military matters; they equally deny the lawfulness for a Christian man to take any oath, even in a court of justice, and the law of England has long recognized their affirmations as giving validity to their evidence; they have denied themselves the cultivation of music, attend- ance at the theatres, and hunting, shooting, and field sports generally as vain amusements inconsistent with the gravity and seriousness of Christian life; they have insisted on the duty of using language not only free from that profanity which was so common until lately but stripped of all flattery and purged of all dross of heathen- ism ; they enforced the duty of plainness of dress and of excluding from it, and from the modes of salutation and address, everything calculated to satisfy vanity.

The result of these doctrines on Quaker manners was notorious, and proved a continual source of objection to them on the part of their fellow-men, and frequently led to persecutions. They adopted the singular number in addressing a single individual, however exalted ; and the "thou" and "thee" used to a magistrate or a judge was often a cause of great irritation. They refused to say "good night," "good morrow," or 'good speed"; they adopted a numerical nomenclature for the months of the year and the days of the week. They refused to bow or to remove their hats, and for this they suffered much.1 They forbore the drinking of healths, not merely as a vanity, but as "a provocation to drink more than did people good." They adopted a remarkable simplicity in their marriages and their funerals. They used also great plain- ness in their houses and furniture and in their dress; and, by their tenaciously adhering to forms of attire which had fallen into disuse, their dress both for men and women became antique and peculiar, and Quakers were easily re- cognized as such by the garments they wore. Further- more they discarded the usual symbols of grief on the death of their relations.

One point of morality on which the Friends have long insisted deserves notice. They require their members who may have been released from their debts by bank- ruptcy or composition, when able to pay their debts in full, to do so notwithstanding their legal discharge.

In the great doctrines of Christianity embodied in the apostles' creed the Quakers are in accord with their fellow- Christians: they believe in the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, in the atonement by Christ, and in sanctification by the Spirit ; they receive and believe the Scriptures as proceeding from the Spirit of God. A letter addressed by George Fox and others to the governor of Barbados in 1671 (Journal, Ist ed., p. 358), and the " General Advices"

1 See Thomas Ellwood's Journal for an account of his sufferings in this matter, at once pathetic and ludicrous.

To the year 1875 they

in the Book of Discipline, may usefully be consulted on this point.

Organization and Discipline—The duty of watching over one another for good was insisted on by the early Friends, and has been embodied in a system of discipline. Its objects embrace (a) exhortation and admonition to those who walk contrary to the standard of Quaker ethics, and the exclusion of obstinate or gross offenders from the body, and as incident to this the hearing of appeals from individuals or meetings considering them- selves aggrieved ; (6) the care and maintenance of the poorand provision for the Christian education of their

children, for which purpose the society has established

numerous boarding schools in different parts of the country ; (c) the amicable settlement of "all differences about outward things," either by the parties in contro- versy or by the submission of the dispute to arbitration, and the restraint of all proceedings at law between members except by leave ; (d) the recognition of ministers as such ; (¢) the cognizance of all steps

preceding marriage according to Quaker forms; (/) the registration of births, deaths, and marriages; (g) the issuing of certificates or letters of approval granted to ministers travelling away from their homes, or to members removing from one meeting to another; and (h) the management of the pro- perty belonging to the society. The present organization of the Quaker church is essentially democratic—it has not and never had any president or head; and in theory every person born of Quaker parents is a Quaker and entitled to take part in all the general assemblies of the body. The members are grouped together in a series of subordinated meetings which recall to the mind the Pres- byterian model. The unit is known as a "particular meeting"; next in order comes "the monthly meeting," usually embracing several particular meetings called to- gether, as its name indicates, monthly; then "the quarterly meeting," embracing several monthly meetings; and lastly "the yearly meeting," embracing the whole of Great Britain. Representatives are sent from each inferior to each superior meeting ; but all Quakers may attend and take part in any of these meetings. This system is double, each meeting of "men Friends" having its counterpart in a meeting of "women Friends"; and they usually meet at the same time, and join together in the devotional gatherings which take place before or after the meetings for discipline. The mode of conducting these meetings is noteworthy. There is no president, but only a secretary or clerk ; there are no formal resolutions; and there is no voting. The clerk ascertains what he con- siders to be the judgment of the assembly, and records it I a minute,

The offices known to the Quaker body are—(1) that of minister ; (2) of elder, whose duty it is "to encourage and help young ministers, and advise others as they in the wisdom of God see occasion"; and (3) overseers to whom is especially entrusted that duty of Christian care for and interest in one another which Quakers recognize as obligatory in all the members of a church. These officers hold from time to time meetings separate from the general assemblies of the members.

This present form both of organization and discipline has been reached only by a process of development. The quarterly or general meetings seem to have been the first union of separate congregations. In 1666 Fox established monthly meetings. In 1672 was held the first yearly meeting in

London. In 1675 certain "canons and institu- tions" were issued to the quarterly meetings. In 1727 elders were first appointed. In 1752 overseers were added ; and in 1737 the right of children of Quakers to be considered as Quakers was fully recognized, From

these dates it is obvious that the last century saw a vigor- ous development of the disciplinary element in Quaker- ism; it was probably the time of greatest rigour as regards external matters and of the greatest severity in punishing so-called delinquencies. In Aberdeen the meet- ing entered on their minutes an elaborate description of what was and what was not to be endured in the dress of men and women; and York quarterly meeting was so disturbed at the presence of young women in long cloaks and bonnets that they were ordered to take advice before coming to York, and one monthly meeting directed that those young women who intended to go to York were to appear before their own meeting "in their clothes that they intend to have on at York."

Of late years the stringency of the Quaker discipline has been relaxed: the peculiarities of dress and language have been abandoned; marriage with an outsider has ceased to be a certain ground for exclusion from the body ; and, above all, many of its members have come to "the conviction, which is not new, but old, that the virtues which can be rewarded and the vices which can be punished by external discipline are not as a rule the virtues and the vices that make or mar the soul" (Hatch, Bampton Lectures, 81).

The Quakers maintain that their system of church government and of discipline is in close. accordance with that of the early church. That it has some great differ- ences cannot be denied, especially when we think of baptism and the Lord's supper; that it has some import- ant points of likeness, especially in the care of each member for the others and in the maintenance of the poor, is equally certain. The portraiture of the early Christian church recently drawn by Dr Hatch in his Bampton Lectures is in many respects likely to recall the lineaments of Quakerism.

Philanthropic Interests—A genuine vein of philan- thropy has always existed in the Quaker body. In nothing has this been more conspicuous than in the matter of slavery. George Fox and William Penn laboured to secure the religious teaching of slaves. As early as 1676 the assembly of Barbados

passed "An Act to prevent the people called Quakers from bringing negroes to their meetings." John Woolman! laboured amongst the Quakers of America for the liberation of the slaves with the most winning tenderness. The Quakers were the first Christian body that purged themselves of the stain of dealing in slaves. As early as 1780 not a slave was owned by any Friend in England or America with the knowledge and consent of the society. In 1783 the first petition to the House of Commons for the abolition of the slave trade and slavery went up from the Quakers; and throughout the long agitations which ensued before that prayer was granted the society took an active and pro- minent part.

In 1798 Lancaster opened his first school for the educa- tion of the poor; and the cause of unsectarian religious education found in the Quakers steady support. They have taken also an active part in Sir Samuel Romilly's efforts to ameliorate the penal code; in prison reformation (1813), with which the name of Elizabeth Fry is especially connected ; in the efforts to ameliorate the condition of lunatics in England (the Friends' Retreat at York, founded in 1792, having been remarkable as an early example of kindly treatment of the insane); and in many other phil- anthropic movements.

One thing is noteworthy in Quaker efforts for the edu- cation of the poor and philanthropy in general: whilst

1 Woolman's Journal and Works are remarkable. He had a vision

of a political economy to be based not on selfishness but on love, not on desire but on self-denial,

they have always been Christian in character, they have not to any considerable extent been used as a means of bringing proselytes within the body.

Quakerism in Scotland.—Quakerism was preached in Scotland very soon after its rise in England; but in the north and south of Scotland there existed independently of and before this preaching groups of persons who were

dissatisfied with the national form of worship and met together in silence for devotion. They naturally fell into this society. In Aberdeen the Quakers took considerable hold, and were there joined by some persons of influence and position, especially Alexander Jaffray, some time pro- vost of Aberdeen, and Colonel David Barclay of Ury and his son Robert, the author of the Apology. Much light has been thrown on the history of the Quakers in Aber- deenshire by the discovery in 1826 at Ury of a MS. Diary of Jaffray, since published with elucidations (2nd ed., London, 1836).

Ireland.—The father of Quakerism in Ireland was William Edmondson ; his preachings began in 1653-54. The History of the Quakers in Ireland (from 1653 to 1752), by Wright and Rutty, may be consulted.

America.—tThe earliest appearance of Quakers in America isa remarkable one. In July 1656 two women Quakers, Mary Fisher and Ann Austin, arrived at Boston. Under the general law against heresy their books were burnt by the hangman, they were searched for signs of witchcraft, they were imprisoned for five weeks and then sent away. During the same year eight others were sent back to England.

In 1657 and 1658 laws were passed to prevent the introduction of Quakers into Massachusetts, and it was enacted that on the first conviction one ear should be cut off, on the second the remaining ear, and that on the third conviction the tongue should be bored with a hot iron. Fines were laid upon all who entertained Quakers or were present at their meetings. Thereupon the Quakers, who were perhaps not without the obstinacy of which Marcus Antoninus complained in the early Christians, rushed to Massachusetts as if invited, and the result was that the general court of the colony banished them on pain of death, and four Quakers, three men and one woman, were hanged for refusing to depart from the jurisdiction or obstinately returning within it. That the Quakers were irritating cannot be denied : some of them appear to have publicly mocked the institutions and the rulers of the colony and to have interrupted public worship ; and some of their men and women too acted with fanaticism and disorder. But even such conduct furnishes but a poor apology for inflicting stripes and death on men and women. The particulars of the proceedings of Governor Endicott and the magistrates of New England as given in Besse are startling to read. On the Restoration of

Charles II. a memorial was presented to him by the Quakers in England stating the persecutions which their fellow-members had undergone in New England. Even the careless Charles was moved to issue an order to the colony which effectually stopped the hanging of Quakers for their religion, though it by no means put an end to the persecution of the body in New England.

It is not wonderful that the Quakers, persecuted and oppressed at home and in New England, should turn their eyes to the unoccupied parts of America, and nourish the hope of founding amidst their woods some refuge from oppression and some likeness of a city of God upon- earth. In 1671-73 George Fox had visited the American planta- tions from Carolina to Rhode Island and had preached alike to Indians and to settlers; and in 1674 a moiety of New Jersey was sold by Lord Berkeley to John Fenwick in trust for Edward Byllinge. Both these men were

for the State and sailed for America.

QUAKERS

Quakers, and in 1678 Fenwick with a large company of his co-religionists crossed the Atlantic, sailed up the Dela- ware, and landed at a fertile spot which he called Salem. Byllinge, having become embarrassed in his circumstances, placed his interest in the State in the hands of Penn and others as trustees for his creditors, and they invited buyers, and companies of Quakers in Yorkshire and London were amongst the largest purchasers. In 1677-78 five vessels with eight hundred emigrants, chiefly Quakers, arrived in the colony (now separated from the rest of New Jersey under the name of West New Jersey), and the town of Burlington was established. In 1677 the fundamental laws of West New Jersey were published, and recognized in a most absolute form the principles of democratic equality and perfect freedom of conscience. Notwith- standing certain troubles from claims of the governor of New York and of the duke of York, the colony prospered, and in 1681 the first legislative assembly of the colony, consisting mainly of Quakers, was held. They agreed to raise an annual sum of £200 for the expenses of their commonwealth ; they assigned their governor a salary of £20; they prohibited the sale of ardent spirits to the Indians, and forbade imprisonment for debt. |

But beyond question the most interesting event in con- nexion with Quakerism in America is the foundation by William PEnw (q.v.) of the colony of Pennsylvania, where he hoped to carry into effect the principles of his sect—to found and govern a colony without armies or military power, to reduce the Indians by justice and kindness to civilization and Christianity, to administer justice without oaths, and to extend an equal toleration to all persons professing theism. Such was "the holy experiment," as Penn called it, which he tried, and which seemed as if it was destined to put Quakerism to practical proof. In 1681 he obtained a grant of the colony from Charles IL, and in the following year settled the frame of government Here he entered into his celebrated treaty of unity with the Indians, "le seul traité entre ces peuples et les Chrétiens qui n'est point été juré et qui n'est point été rompu." What was the result of this attempt to realize Quaker principles in a new country and on a virgin soil? The answer is in some respects indecisive. During the time that the Quaker influence was prédominant, and for seventy years after the founda- tion of Pennsylvania, the Indians are said never to have taken the life of a white man ; and once when five hundred Indians were assembled to concert a massacre they were turned from their purpose by six unarmed Friends. From England and Wales, from Scotland and Ireland, from the Low Countries and the banks of the Rhine, where Penn's missionary visit had made a deep impression, emigrants crowded to Pennsylvania; in two years Philadelphia had risen to be a town of six hundred houses, and in three years from its foundation that city had increased more than New York in fifty years; and the first century of the life of the colony exhibited in an unusual degree a scene of happiness and peace. But, on the other hand, little progress was made in winning the Indians to Christianity, and the annals of the infant State were full of petty quarrels and jealousies. Penn was a feudal sovereign, having over him a Stuart king as his lord paramount at home, and the absolute democracy which he had estab- lished as his immediate dependents beneath him. In such relations there were necessarily elements of difficulty, and soon dissensions broke out between the governor and the colonists ; a popular party was headed by members of the Quaker body and opposed the founder, and the influx of members of other religious persuasions led to dissensions in the assembly. The officials of the Court of Admiralty set up claims at variance with Penn's notions; differences

broke out between the province properly so-called and the territories which afterwards became the State of Delaware. Penn was engaged in protracted quarrels as to the bound- aries of his State; the English crown made requisitions on the colonists for men and money to support the war in America against France. Penn was during some years suspended by the crown from his rights as governor ; his son and one of the deputy governors whom he sent out disgraced themselves by their licentious conduct; the colony gradually passed away from under the influence of Quakerism; and Penn's "Civitas Dei" faded into an American republic. For many years large numbers of Quakers emigrated from England to America. The most noteworthy incidents in their history are the part which they have taken in that movement which has ended in the abolition of slavery in the United States and the interest which they have exhibited in the native Indians.

France.—The origin of the few Quaker congregations which exist in France is curious. It seems that amongst the Camisards were found a few who disapproved of the military operations by which their friends resisted the persecution of Louis XIV., who believed in a spiritual light, who met for silent worship, and in other respects were like Quakers. Certain it is that towards the end of last century a small body of persons holding these views and these practices existed at Congeniés and other villages at the foot of the Cevennes. During the war between England and France conse- quent ou the American struggle for independence a Quaker was part owner in two luggers, which, against his protests, were employed as privateers and captured two valuable prizes ; he took his share of the spoil, invested and accumulated it, and on the conclusion of peace in 1783 advertised in the Gazette de France for the owners of the captured ships. the little body at Congeniés, and hence a communication was estab- lished between the French and English Quakers, Probably about the same time certain American Quakcrs, on the invitation of the French Government, migrated from Nantucket to Dunkirk, for the purpose of extending the fisheries. A curious episode in Quaker history is the presentation, on 10th February 1791, to the National Assembly of a petition from these two bodies of French Quakers, and the reply of the president. The petition and answer were printed by Baudoin, printer to the Assembly.

Germany and Norway.—In both these countrics exist small bodies of persons who have adopted the views and practices of the Quakers. These bodies date from early in the present century.

Statistics of Quakerism.—The number of Quakers in England and Wales in 1680 was probably about 40,000, and in 1806 about 32,000. In 1883 the total number of members in England, Wales, and Scotland was returned as 15,219 (193 were in Scotland), an increase of 106 on the previous year, and the number of habitual attcnders of meetings of the body, not members, was 5880, an in- erease of 150. In Ireland there were, in 1883, 2812 Quakers. The Quakers in America number probably (including all bodies which claim to be Friends) from 50,000 to 60,000 or upwards. Besides these there are in Norway about 200, in France from 70 to 80, in Germany from 50 to 60, and in Australia and New Zealand from 500 to 600 Quakers.

Bibliography.—The writings of the early Quakers are numerous; the most noteworthy are the Journal of George Fox and the Life of Thomas Ellwood, both autobiographies, the Apology of Robert Barclay, and the works of Penn and Penington. The History of the Quakers by William Sewel, a Duteh Quaker, was translated into English, and has gone through several editions; a fistory of the Quakers by Gough may also be consulted. The Sufferings of the Quakers, by Besse (London, 1753), is the ehief authority as to the perseeutions they endured. The Peculiarities of the Society of Friends, and the other writings of Joseph John Gurney, exhibit the modern Evangelical Quakerism. Zhe Book of Discipline of the Society, in its successive editions from 1782 to 1883, is the only authoritative statement of the views of the Society on Christian practice and church govern- ment, and a comparison of the different editions would throw light on the ehanges of sentiment in the body. The Inner Life of the Religious Socteties of the Commonwealth (London, 1876), by Robert Barelay, a descendant of the apologist, contains much curious information about the Quakers. Smith's Descriptive Catalogue of Friends' Books (London, 1867) gives the information which its title Promises. Bancroft's History of the Colonization of the United States may be consulted for the American history of Quakers. The periodicals now issued by

members of the Quaker body in Great Britain are The Friend, The British Friend, Friends' Quarterly Examiner, and Friends' Review. (E. F.)

QUANTAMPOH, or Kunrampon, a town of the Gold Coast region of western Africa, situated about 80 miles north-east of Coomassie, in 7° 36' N. lat. and 1° 4' W. long. According to Captain Brandon Kirby, who was the first white man to reach the place, it had in 1881 a resident population of 15,000, and traders passed through it to the number of about 25,000. Formerly it was one of the great ivory-marts of this part of Africa, and it is still a centre of the cola-nut trade, the slave trade, &c.

This advertisement came to the knowledge of |

153

QUARANTINE (Fr. quarantaie, a period of forty days) is, in the original sense of the term, a thing of the past in the United Kingdom and in several of the other states of Europe, as well as in America. Its interest is therefore largely historical, and a sketch of the history will be given at the end of this article. But, in common usage, the same word is applied to the modern substitutes for quarantine, although these are a complete departure in principle or theory from the indiscriminate system of detention of ships and men, unlading of cargo in lazarets, fumigation of susceptible articles, and the like, which used to be carried to great lengths on account of the plague and in connexion with the Levantine trade.

Substitute for Quarantine in the United Kingdom.—The modern practice is to detain or refuse " pratique" to no ship unless there be a communicable form of sickness on board, or there had been such during the voyage. It is the duty of the officers of customs to question the captain as to the existence of any catching disease among the pas- sengers or ship's company; if there be any evidence or suspicion of communicable infection, the officers of cus- toms report the same to the port sanitary authorities, who have power to deal with the case under the Public Health Act, and according to an order of the Local Government Board first issued in 1873. The medical officer of health proceeds at once to make an inspection, detaining the ship and all on board only until such time as the inspection can be satisfactorily made, the sick removed to hospital, and disinfectants applied. This practice was

adopted with success in the casé of several arrivals from Baltic and North Sea ports with cholera on board in 1873, no exten- sion of the disease on shore ensuing, and again in 1884 in the case of a troopship arrived at Portsmouth direct from Bombay, and of at least two arrivals (at Liverpool and Cardiff) from Marseilles, with cholera on board. It is also adopted from time to time on account of small-pox cases, and of other catching importations at the discretion of the port sanitary authority.

The last importation of yellow fever into the United Kingdom was at Swansea in September 1865, by a wooden vessel with copper ore from St Jago de Cuba. There had been cases of yellow fever on board during the voyage ; but at Swansea (as in many other instances) the infection spread rather from the ship's hull and the unladed cargo than from the crew or their effects, and some fifteen deaths ensued. If such a case were to occur again, it would be dealt with, like any other communicable disease, by the port sanitary authority under the Public Health Act. The yellow-fever incident of 1865 at Swansea is the last oc- casion on which the sanction of the Quarantine Acts has been appealed to. The privy council merely directed the board of customs to warn the parties implicated of their liability to prosecution, although no prosecution would be instituted. The Quarantine Acts are still unrepealed, but they may be said to have become practically obsolete during the past twenty years.

Quarantine or tts Substitutes in other European Countries. —The principle of inspection, and of isolation of the sick, as stated above for the United Kingdom, was accepted with small reservation by the sanitary conference of Vienna in 1874, and it is now more or less consistently acted upon by all the larger European maritime states except Spain and Portugal. In times of cholera panic, quarantine of the original kind has been imposed against all arrivals from an "infected country" by ports of the Levant and Black Sea, and by several Mediterranean states besides Spain. But it is only in the ports of the Iberian Peninsula that the old quarantine traditions remain in force from year to year; and it is only for them that any special account need be given.

The principal occupation of the quarantine establish-

ment at Lisbon all the year round is with arrivals from Brazil, where yellow fever is endemic. The lazaretto of Lisbon, which is probably the largest and in ordinary times the busiest in the world, is situated on a hill opposite the Belem Tower, 4 miles below the city. The present establishment was erected by the Portuguese Government at a cost of over £200,000. It consists of seven perfectly distinct pavilions standing radially in a semicircle with the convexity to the river. It is managed by an inspector who is under the minister of the interior. Public tenders are invited every year, or every two years, for boarding and lodging the passengers according to their classes on board ship (Ist, 2d, and 3d), the contract being given to the lowest bidder. The present prices for board and lodging per diem are about 5s, 6d. Ist class, 3s. 2nd class, and Is. 6d. steerage. The establishment is carried on at a loss to the Government. Quarantine is imposed, as a matter of fact, on all ships, passengers, luggage, and cargo coming from the Brazils. The term varies from five days to seven days, according as the Brazilian port is considered infected or suspected. A bill of health is issued to the captain by the Portugese consul at the port of sailing, which usually bears on it that so many deaths from yellow fever had occurred during the previous eight or ten days. If clean bills of health were issued, the quarantine would be raised; and this has happened for short periods at rare intervals, During the winter months (December, January, February), when the cold makes a development of the yellow fever virus at Lisbon improbable, if not impossible, the baggage and cargo only are subject to quarantine, the passengers being allowed to go ashore at once with their hand baggage. Throughout the rest of the year all passengers from the Brazils have to go to the lazaretto and stay there the alloted time, their effects being aired, fumigated, or disinfected. "If Lisbon be the port of discharge, the cargo from an infected ship will be landed at the lazaret for purification if so directed. There is a schedule of "susceptible articles," which includes cotton, hair, hemp, letters, parcels, and other correspond- ence, hides, fresh meat, wool and linen, skin, feathers, and silk. These articles are fumigated with chlorine; the in- side of the ship is washed with chloride of lime or other disinfectant. In the case of a mail steamer on her way to England, the passengers and effects for Lisbon are landed at the quarantine grounds, and

the vessel proceeds to her destination (Liverpool or Southampton) "in quaran- tine," which means nothing as regards the English ports.

This rigorous routine is a concession to the popular recollection of the terrible epidemic of yellow fever in the hot summer of 1857, when there were 19,000 cases in and around Lisbon, with about 6000 deaths, a large proportion being among the well-to-do. The importation was traced to a tainted ship and cargo from Rio. For many years, no cases of yellow fever have developed among the suspected passengers landed ; and in only two or three instances have there been cases among the employés of the establishment who are occupied with the baggage and merchandise, The Lisbon chamber of commerce is now in favour of a modification of the quarantine law, and of regulations in conformity with the prominent facts of experience—namely, that the fever is not started on shore through personal contact, but solely by emanations from a ship's hull, ballast, cargo, or passengers' effects, and that high-class iron steamships are not, in the nature of things, under the same suspicion as old wooden sailing vessels.

The quarantine practices of Lisbon are copied faithfully at the Azores, Madeira, and the Cape Verd Islands.

For Spain there are two chief quarantine stations or "foul lazarets," one for the Atlantic seaboard at Vigo, and another for the Mediterranean coast at Port Mahon,

QU A AN WP aN

Minorca. Vessels arriving at Spanish ports with foul bills of health (from Havana, é&c., in ordinary times, and from various ports in cholera times) must proceed to one or other of these appointed stations to perform their quaran- tine. A 'quarantine of observation," which is usually for six or three days, and is imposed on vessels with clean bills, may be performed at any port. Itis a routine maxim of the Madrid board of health that any country, such as the United Kingdom, which does not practise quarantine, is ipso facto suspected when a foreign epidemic is in any part of Europe to which its vessels trade; and all arrivals from its ports may be subjected to a quaran- tine of observation. This abstract doctrine, which can hardly be

approved by responsible medical authority, was acted on for a short time as recently as 1883 and 1884, when cholera was in Egypt and in Provence.

Next to Spain and Portugal, Turkey and Greece are the countries in Europe where the old quarantine traditions have most vitality, owing doubtless to their nearness to former seats of plague in the Levant. The lazarets at the Pireeus and in the Dardanelles are considerable establishments, mostly used now in times of cholera, Ships bound inwards for Turkish ports take health- guards on board in the Dardanelles. There are many other lazarets at Mediterranean, Adriatic, and Levantine ports, including Malta and Gibraltar, surviving from the days of the plague, whose machinery is furbished up from time to time when cholera breaks out.! For the whole of northern Europe, including the Atlantic seaboard of France, quarantine is now practically obsolete; by Holland it was never seriously practised even for the plague, aud by the states bordering on the Baltic it was given up about the same time as it fell into disuse in Great Britain.? In Norwegian ports subsequent to 1866 there were 3128 arrivals from countries infected with cholera, on board which 25 cases of cholera were found and 29 cases of cholerine ; but the malady obtained no footing on shore although quarantine was not enforced. In 1873, when cholera was prevalent in several ports of the Baltic and North Seas, there were 550 arrivals at Norwegian ports from infected countries, among which were 12 cases of cholera; but importation of the epidemic to the shore was prevented simply by inspection and isolation of the sick. In Italian ports, again, 800 vessels were quaran- tined in 1872, in not one of which was any case of cholera found. The immunity of the United Kingdom in 1873 and 1884, notwithstanding the arrival of ships with cholera on board, and even (in 1873) the unobserved land- ing of cholera cases, has been mentioned already.

Land Quarantine.—A land quarantine on a frontier is still enforced on account of cholera from time to time in southern Europe, ¢g., in 1884 by Italy against France at Ventimiglia and Modena and by Spain against France in the passes of the Pyrenees, and in 1885 by Portugal against Spain. The experiment occasionally succeeds. A "sanitary cordon" is the rigorous isolation (by troops) of a pestilence- stricken place from the

country around. It is a survival from the times of the plague, and is of no use in cholera.

Quarantine or its Substitutes in the Western Hemisphere. —Apart from the visitations of cholera now and then, the

1 Sir William Pym, the superintendent-general of quarantine, who visited most of them officially in 1844, narrates a case at Messina which itustrates the abuses that these establishments might be put to: "it is only very lately that the board of health at Messina placed a vessel (the 'Rapid') from England under quarantine, because a report had appeared in the papers of a fever having prevailed at Glasgow, and subjected her to a charge of about 8 per cent. upon the value of her cargo for quarantine fees" (Correspondence respecting the Quarantine Laws, Part. Paper, 1846, p. 16).

2 The lazaret for all the Baltic states was on the Swedish island of Kanso at the entrance of the Cattegat opposite Gothenburg.

QUARANTINE

chief occasion of quarantine on the American continent and adjacent islands is the endemic existence of yellow fever in Brazilian and West Indian harbours, particularly Havana and Rio de Janeiro (and, since 1853, in Callao and other Peruvian ports). During the yellow-fever season from April to November, the ports of the United States are on the outlook, under the quarantine laws of each State, to de- tain vessels with yellow fever on board arriving from Gulf ports or from the West Indies and Brazil. In like manner the ports of the River Plate would protect themselves against foul arrivals from Brazil ; and some of the Mexican Gulf and West Indian harbours will even practise quaran- tine against each other according as the fever happens to be epidemic here or there. The practice at New York, Boston, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and other United States ports is to detain only the sick, or those who are reasonably suspected, the lazaret (usually on an island in the harbour) being practically a hospital for sailors, immigrants, and other newly-arrived persons suffering from communicable disease. In some years the cases of yellow fever arriving at New York have been numerous, and an epidemic has now and again arisen among the

residents near the lazaret. Experience has shown that the ship's hull, foul ballast, and the like have been the real sources of infection, cases occurring at New York every year among the labourers on infected ships. It is only occasionally that the unlading of the cargo of a yellow-fever ship into the quarantine barges has been insisted on. The classification of ships according as they carry clean or foul bills of health has been found to be practically unworkable in the United States, a foul bill being a rare thing. The severity of the quarantine is left, accordingly, very much to the discretion of the medical officer of the port. According to the de- finition of the National Board of Health, quarantine is "the administration employed to determine the presence or absence of the causes of contagious or infectious diseases, and to secure the removal or destruction of such causes ;" and it does not imply detention for any specified time, nor for more time than is necessary for the above purposes. Notwithstanding the creation of a National Board of Health for the Federal Union, quarantine is still an affair of the States acting independently. The detection and isolation of small-pox cases is one of the chief occupations of the quarantine officers at United States ports.

As regards the introduction of cholera into the United States, Billings says :—' The present quarantine systems of the United States are now probably unable to prevent the introduction of this disease, as they have been heretofore, Unless the disease had actually occurred on board ship, very little precaution would be taken, and very few of our ports have the necessary facilities for properly dealing with a large passenger ship having cholera on board, in such a Manner as to obtain a reasonable amount of security without causing unreasonable delay, involving unnecessary suffering and danger on the part of those not actually sick " (Zrans. Internat. Med. Congress, London, 1881, iv. 416).

In several instances, when cholera has broken out among emigrants in a transatlantic steamship, the vessel has put into Halifax, N. 8., where there are facilities for quarantining passengers ; and more than once the epidemic, although of the most threatening kind, has gone no farther. New Orleans has proved itself a more likely port of entry for cholera than any of the Atlantic ports,

In the ports of South America and the West Indies the quarantine practice is variable and empirical. Sometimes an absolute cordon has been established, as in the instance of Dominica against Guadeloupe in 1865-66 during the cholera. The smaller and healthier the community the more severe is the quarantine likely to be. In the West Indies, the Bermudas, é&c., the very remarkable disease of

dengue (probably a modern hybrid form) is considered to be an importable infection which quarantine can keep out.

Quarantine in the Red Sea and at Suez.—Cholera having come to Europe in 1865 by a new route, by the pilgrim traffic to Mecca, the conference of Constantinople in 1866 took into consideration the question of a quarantine at the Straits of Bab-el-Mandeb. Since that time such a quaran- tine has been instituted for pilgrim ships at the island of Xamaran on the Arabian side of the Red Sea, some 200 miles within the straits. Since the severe outbreak of cholera at Mecca in the end of 1881, the quarantine for pilgrim ships at Xamaran has become more stringent. The slight outbreak at Mecca in 1882 is said, without good reason, to have arisen owing to three English steam- ships with pilgrims having evaded that quarantine. All pilgrim ships whatsoever are required to stop at Xamaran,! and the pilgrims from cholera-stricken countries in the East are disembarked and kept under observation in the lazarets on the island for ten or fifteen days.?

On the dispersal of the hajj at Mecca, another quaran- tine is performed by the pilgrims returning by way of Suez, who are usually only a small fraction of the whole assemblage. They are disembarked either at Wejh on the Arabian coast half way between Jeddah and Suez, or at Tor on the Sinaitic side of the Gulf of Suez, sometimes even at both places. After the epidemic at Mecca from September to December 1881, it was not until the 19th February 1882 that the last company of pilgrims was allowed to re-embark at Wejh for Suez, by the authority of an inspecting sanitary commission from Egypt. If no suspicious cases occur, the detention is for fourteen days; but a single case subjects the whole group in which it had appeared to a further term of quarantine. Pilgrims bound for Smyrna, Beyrout, or other ports in the Levant are subjected to another term of quarantine in the

lazaret of the port of arrival. Those proceeding landwards to Damascus undergo a quarantine at Moses' Wells.

The usefulness of this control over the movements of the Mecca pilgrims has been much debated. Regarding the ad- vantages of the quarantine after the breaking up of the hajj there has been a good deal of positive evidence since 1865 ; but the detention at Xamaran is a much more questionable affair. Ina great assemblage at Mecca, such as that of 1881, there are all the conditions for the fresh breeding of a choleraic form of sickness, which shall be communicable to others, just as there have often been (in the common-

1 The working of the quarantine at Xamaran will be best understood from a particular instance. The steamship "Hesperia" sailed in July 1882 from Bombay for Jeddah with 498 pilgrims, who had been inspected under the Native Passengers Act. She arrived on the 26th July at Aden, where she was quarantined for ten days owing to the death of one of the firemen from cholera, Xamaran was reached on the 8th of August, and the pilgrims landed for a ten days' quarantine. Deaths having occurred among the pilgrims on shore, a second quaran- tine of ten days was imposed ; and towards the expiry of that time the health officer again placed the ship in quarantine for ten days owing to more deaths on shore. On September 8, when the vessel was still in quarantine, it became necessary to proceed to Aden for coals, steam having been kept up continually owing to the dangerous nature of the quarantine moorings. In leaving Xamaran the ship broke her quaran- tine, and only escaped the threatened fire of the Turkish gunboat by her speed. She returned from Aden on the 19th September, and re- embarked her passengers for Jeddah on the 23d, two of them dying in the boats during the embarkation. The drinking-water of the quaran- tine camp at Xamaran was credibly stated to be in a fetid condition, causing vomiting and purging, and the food insufficient and inferior. Each pilgrim had to pay 10 rupees, and the ship 12,000 piastres of sani- tary dues. After landing her passengers at Jeddah, the " Hesperia" proceeded on her voyage to Liverpool, undergoing a twenty-four hours' quarantine of observation at Suez.— Brit. Med. Journ. , 1882, ii. 952.

2 The international sanitary conference of Rome (1885) has pro- posed a relaxation of the rule: each ship with more than thirty pilgrims to carry a doctor, and no ship to be detained more than 24 hours, nor the pilgrims disembarked, unless there be or has been cholera on board.

Plague.

Small- pox.

Typhus.

sense view) the elements of its de novo origin under pre- cisely similar circumstances among a multitude of Hindus at Hurdwar, or other religious places of resort in India; and the excessive pains taken to exclude hypothetical cases of the communicable disease coming from India, Java, or other endemic centre are disproportionate so long as there is no assurance that the soil of Mecca is not itself about to become a breeding-place of the poison de novo. On the other hand the dispersal from Mecea is obviously an occa- sion for sanitary precautions.

For the general traffic from the East a quarantine of observation of twenty-four hours is imposed on arrivals at Suez from time to time when cholera is formally declared to be epidemic in Bombay or other Eastern port. Under such circumstances, ships pass through the canal in quarantine, having their canal pilots either on board the ship "in quarantine," or, under an older and more cum- brous arrangement, navigating the vessel from a steam- launch. In like manner, the coaling at Port Said is done in quarantine, and the mails and passengers landed at Brindisi under the same restrictions and formalities. The question of a more searching quarantine at Suez for the general Eastern traffic has been much discussed in the French Academy of Medicine, and has been taken up more recently at Berlin; but the weight of opinion (led by M. de Lesseps) is against any such inter- ference with the quick despatch of vessels, as at once futile and impracticable.t During all the years that the canal has been open, cholera has become epidemic in Europe only once owing to direct importation from the East, namely in 1884, when the vehicle was a transport returned from

Saigon ; and the circumstances in that case were such that a quarantine at Suez, unless it had included the ship's hull and the personal effects on board, would have made no real difference. On the other hand, transports with recognized cholera on board have on two or three pre- vious occasions been passed through the canal with all despatch, and no harm done on shore either in the isthmus of Suez or at the port of arrival (Portsmouth, Toulon).

PRINCIPLES OF QUARANTINE. —Plague, yellow fever, and Asiatic cholera are the three great spreading diseases which have been successively the subject of quarantine restrictions.

For many years plague has ceased to have any practical interest in this connexion ; the last occasion of alarm in the Mediterranean ports was the outbreak of 1859, at Benghazi, in Tripoli; and at the present date the sole concern is about the land quarantine along the Turko-Persian and Russo-Persian frontiers. It is for yellow fever and Asiatic cholera, therefore, that the principles of quarantine have chiefly to be discussed, the epidemiological prin- ciples being somewhat different in the two cases. But one or two remarks have to be made about the theory of preventing the intro- duction of other communicable diseases.

In the draft of an international bill of health which was adopted by the international sanitary congress at Washington in 1881 small-pox and typhus are scheduled along with plague, yellow fever, and cholera. Although there are few countries where smaJJ- pox has not obtained a footing, yet every seaport finds it advisable to prevent the free entrance of fresh cases. Thus Denmark, in 1884, took precautions against the importation of small-pox from the Thames. It is mostly in Australia, New Zealand, the Cape, and other colonies that quarantine against small-pox is rigorously carried out. Except fora limited outbreak in Sydney in 1884, that disease has been absolutely excluded from the Australasian colonies, thanks to their admirable quarantine establishments. The case is very different at the Cape, owing to the existence of a virulent native centre of variolous disease at no great distancc in the interior.

As regards typhus, the principles of prevention are entircly different from those that apply to small-pox. When the Irish emigration by sailing ships

was brisk forty years ago, typhus often came with the new arrivals to New York, Boston, Philadelphia, Quebec, and Montreal ; and a similar state of things now goes on in

1 A large majority of the medical delegates to the conference of Rome (1885) voted in favour of detaining at Suez for at least five days such vessels as might be judged by an officer of the International Sanitary Commission to be suspect,—the passengers to be disembarked and isolated in groups.

.and Basse Terre (Guadeloupe) were poisonous to the crews of the

connexion with the Italian and other European emigration to Brazil and the River Plate. Filth, overcrowding, and want are the causes of such outbreaks ; and it is only where those conditions obtain on shore that the imported disease spreads. A period of detention amidst clean and wholesome surroundings after landing has much to recommend it, the best argument for such general precaution being the fact that the disease in some instances had not occurred during the voyage, but only after the emigrants had Janded in the new country. Another illustration of the need of quite special rules for typhus, and of the need of freedom from dogmatic bias about pre-existing disease germs, is the remarkable outbreak at Liverpool in 1859. The epidemic was clearly traced to an Egyptian frigate with four hundred souls on board, many of them convicts in chains. The vessel arrived in the Mersey from Alexandria in an indescrib- able state of filth ; about one hundred of the crew and others were on the sick list from diarrhoea, dysentery, and the like; but none of the cases were typhus, nor was there a single case of that disease among the ship's company from first to last. The typhus occurred in the pilot and others who went on board in the river, among the attendants at a bath to which the filthy crew were sent to be washed, and among the patients of the Southern Hospital, into which some of the Arabs and Nubians were admitted for common complaints. To make quarantine effective against typhus, it is necessary to keep in mind that the specific fever may be vicarious to a common condition of filth and general misery. It is a modified form of the same principle of vicarious infection that, in the his- torical retrospect, gives us the key to the much

more important problem of yellow fever, a disease which is to be regarded as a special form of typhus.

Principles of Quarantine against Yellow WFever.—The first Yellow requirement in the quarantine doctrine of yellow fever is to know fever. where the disease is endemic, that is to say, where its poison exists 5 in such a form that it may rise in exhalations from the harbour mud, alluvial foreshores, or wharves and shipping quarters in

eneral, or may enter the bilges of ships with the water. There is a natural reluctance on the part of seafaring communities in the western hemisphere to admit that they harbour the seeds of yellow fever; but some of the endemic foci of the disease are beyond dispute. The principal are Havana and Rio de Janeiro. But if we take the whole historical period of yellow fever into our view, from 1640 onwards, we shall find that there is hardly a single great slave port in the New World that has uot been at one time or another a native seat and source of the miasmatic virus of yellow fever. Some of these have long since got rid of the poisonous exhalations, such as Philadelphia and Baltimore ; others, such as Norfolk, Charleston, and Savannah, have in all probability seen the worst days of the fever, and are now practically free froin the taint in their harbours and their soil ; but there are other United States ports, such as New Orleans, for which the like assurance cannot as yet be given. In the West Indies the ports of the Spanish An- tilles are the worst primary breeding-places of the poison at the present day ; although in the 17th and 18th centuries Bridgetown (Barbados), English Harbour (Antigua), Fort Royal (Martinique),

stationary men-of-war to an almost incredible extent. On the main- land, Georgetown, Demerara, isin the same rank ; and the Brazilian ports (particularly Rio) have been so since 1849. Besides these harbours, all of them among the principal slave-ports at one time or another, there are others, such as Vera Cruz, Tampico, Chagres, and Porto Bello, which would seem to have lurking in their soil or shore-mud the specifically noxious thing that produces yellow fever ; but it is a question whether these have not got the virus at second-hand from other centres in the Gulf. Again, it is probable that the occasional outbreaks at Monte Video had been caused by material quantities of the specifically noxious filth carried thither in trading

bottoms. The great epidemics in the ports of Spain in the first quarter of this century were certainly due either to reship- ment of the virus from the West Indies in the bilges of merchant- men, or to an original deposition of it from contraband slave-ships making the return voyage to Europe with cargoes of produce (see an article by the writer in the North American Review, Oct. 1884). The rare outbreaks in Europe within the last fifty years have been due to foul arrivals from slave-ports like Havana and Rio. Wherever the line be drawn between endemic and non-endemic ports of yellow fever, it is only the latter that can in reason seek to impose quarantine against the disease. Of such are now the ports on the Atlantic seaboard of the United States, the ports of the River Plate, and the whole European seaboard; for these the history is full of instances of true importations traceable to particular vessels, and from such instances the principles of an efficacious quarantine may be deduced. It is not a passenger steamship arriving at New York or Lisbon with a case or cases of VW yellow fever on board that calls for quarantine (as distinguished from isolation and care of the sick); no real epidemic can be shown to have ever arisen from purely personal importation of that kind. The great epidemics in Spain and Portugal, and the more recent and smaller outbreaks in New York and in some ports of northern

_ Cholera.

QUARANTINE

Europe, have been traced to other sources than the persons of the sick. Even a ship with a fevcr-stricken crew is dangerous, not so much because of the fever among the crew, but on account of those lurking causes of yellow fever in the ship through which the crew themselves were infected. There is an overwhelming mass of testi- mony that the real risk of importing the yellow-fever virus is always in the foul bilges of wooden ships, which had been lying in one of the endemic yellow-fever harbours. The poison is sucked in through the ship's seams ; it ferments or multiplies in her bilges, rises as miasmata to infect the hold or 'tween decks, sometimes clinging to cargo, and perhaps making no sign uutil the cargo is all out. Again, in temperate latitudes, the virus may be imported and do no harm, unless it meet with a tract of exceptionally hot weather, such as happened at

Swansea in 1865. According to this principle, all iron ships, which have little or no bilge-water, and all clean ships whatsoever, are practically free from the risk of importing an epidemic of yellow fever, even although one or more of their passengers or crew may have developed the malady on the voyage, having come on board in the stage of its incubation. The only question of practical consequence in the case of iron steam- ships arises in connexion with the modern practice of carrying water-ballast in tanks or compartments of the ship's bottom. On the other hand a wooden ship from a yellow-fever port, espe- cially if she have open seams and had lain long in the harbour or "careenage," is not above suspicion on arriving during hot weather, even if no cascs of yellow fever had occurred on board during the voyage. Such vessels have often carried the yellow-fever poison in their bilges ; in some cases they had not been suspected until it was too late, and in other cases of mysterious outbreaks they have never been suspected at all because they had no actual cases on board. The grand lesson of experience in yellow fever is that the ship's hull is infinitely more dangerous than the persons of yellow- fever patients ; and a ship's hull is dangerous only because there isa material quantity of specifically poisonous filth fermenting in the recesses of the hold. All high-class iron ships, and clean ships in general, are, for common-sense purposes, above suspicion. The persons of the sick are little likely to introduce the fever ; but foul linen, bedding, and clothes are a source of danger, especially if they have been in a box or bundle for some time (witness the slight outbreak at Madrid in 1878 on the unpacking of soldiers' baggage brought via Santander from Cuba).

Principles of Quarantine against Cholera.—The peculiar dangers of cholera diffusion arise from the vomited and purged matters which are characteristic of the common type of the malady. Under certain circumstances the discharges of the sick are infective; they are probably not infective as they come from the body; but even minute quantities of the choleraic matters, if they have fermented in the ground, or in boxes and bundles of foul linen, bedding, or clothes, may exhale a virus which is often suddenly prostrating in its action. Thus every person with cholera, or even with choleraic diarrhoea in times of epidemic, is a source whence many more may be poisoned. When the choleraic matters percolate into wells or reservoirs the poisoning may be on a great scale. Cholera with such

infective properties is an exotic to the soil of Europe and probably of all countries except south-eastern Asia; and, if the in- fective discharges of cholera patients from the East were kept out of Western soil, no choleraic disease would be likely to become epideinic on the latter. Such exclusion has been more or less the endeavour of all Western states from the time of the first invasion through Central Asia in 1881. The only question is whether, by attempting too much, they have not lost the opportunity of con- trolling the spread of the disease by less drastic means. The instances where cholera has been kept out by a rigid cordon, or the strictest form of quarantine, are few: it is probable that Spain owed her immunity in 1849, when all the rest of Europe suffered, to her policy of exclusion; there was a strikingly successful instance of the same in the case of Dominica in 1865, during a frightful cholera mortality in Guadeloupe, only 22 miles distant; and it has happened more than once for Portugal to keep out the epidemic and for Sicily to protect herself for a time against the mainland of Italy. Butin the great majority of instances the quarantines against cholera have becn "elaborate illustrations of leakiness." Island communities have the best chances of succeeding; but in the case of the British Islands the attempt has been abandoned as impracticable. The British policy of attempting a good deal less was justified by success in 1873, when the Baltic and North Sea trade went on uninterruptedly, notwithstanding the presence of cholera at various ports across the water. In 1874 the inter- national sanitary conference of Vienna adopted an abstract resolution by a large majority approximately in favour of the British practicc, though the conference of Rome in 1885 was slightly reactionary. According to this practice a case of cholera isreceived into the country with much the same sort of assurance as a case of typhoid fever would be. There is much reason to believe that in both cases the agency of the soil or other tertiwm quid is necded to give potency to the poison, and that the diffusion of both diseases can be limited by disposing of the discharges of the sick in

such a way that they shall neither taint the soil or the water, nor ferment on unwashed linen or bedding. Wherever a filth- sodden soil receives the choleraic matters, poisonous miasmata will rise from it; and such miasmata will also arise even in houses or on board ship, or from bundles and boxcs

of effects, if cleanliness be thoroughly overpowered by the stress of events. In India such cholera-soils exist from year to year, or are capable of being made on occasion, as at great religious fairs; and in that respect some Indian soils are to cholera what certain of the harbours and fore- shores of the western hemisphere arc to yellow fever. Both dis- eases in their native seats are primarily caused by specific miasmata from the tainted soil. Butin Europe the spreading power of cholera is infinitely greater than that of yellow fever because the choleraic matters are more copious, and more likely to ferment under all circumstances of climate, locality (coast and interior), states of weather, and differences of race. But there is still a reasonable prospect of finding a good substitute for quarantine against cholera in the fact that its power of spreading is certainly made subject to conditions. The maxim for cholera is—Take care of the conditions, and the disease will take care of itself. Cholera is what Pettenkofer calls an "exogenous" infection: the infective mattcr acquires its virulence, not in or upon the body, as in a case of small-pox, but outside the body, amidst filth or other sanitary neglect. The reason why cholera is more difficult to manage than typhoid fever is that it is peculiarly a disease of the poor; " poverty has always been the true quartermaster of cholera." The virus is transported (in the West at least) from place to place largely by emigrants, religious pilgrims (as in Russia), fugitives, tramps, or others hard pressed by circumstances ; one of the most remarkable instances of that kind is its alleged transmission, in 1833, from Kansas across the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific by parties of Indians successively infected. The danger from the wandering poor is all the greatcr that they would be naturally unwilling under any circumstances to sacrifice their small belongings of clothes, bedding, and the like, which are often the real media of infection. It is not to be denied that the old-fashioned detention for a week or more in a lazaret has still something to recommend it for such poor classes of travellers ; but the detention will be more likely to give vitality to any lurk- ing virus of the discase than to extinguish it, unless the lazaret be particularly well found in all the conveniences of living.

HisTory OF QUARANTINE. —The first lazarets in Europe were con- structed for the plague; and that disease was the only one for which quarantine was practised (uot to mention the earlier isolation of lepers, and the attempts to check the invasion of syphilis in northern Europe about

1490) down to the advent of yellow fever in Spain at the beginning of the 19th century, and the arrival of Asiatic cholera in 1831. Venice took the lead in measures to check the spread of plague, having appointed three guardians of the public health in the first years of the Black Death (1348). The next record of preventive measures comes from Reggio in Modena in 1874. The first lazarct was founded by Venice in 1403, on a small island adjoining the city; in 1467 Genoa followed the example of Venice; and in 1476 the old leper hospital of Marseilles was converted into a plague hospital, the great lazaret of that city, perhaps the most complete of its kind, having been founded in 1526 on the island of Pomégue.

The practice at all the Mediterranean lazarets was not different from tise English procedure in the Levantine and North-African trade, to which the rest of this sketch will be confined. On the approach of cholera in 1831 some new lazarets were set up at Western ports, notably a very extensive establishment near Bordeaux, afterwards turned to another use.

The plague had disappeared from England, never to return, for more than thirty years before the practice of quarantine against it was definitely established by an Act of Parliament of Queen Anne's reign (1710). The first Act was called for, owing to an alarm lest plague should be imported from Poland and the Baltic; the second Act of 1721 was due to the disastrous prevalence of plague at Marseilles and other places in Provence; it was rencwed in 1788 owing to a fresh outbreak of the malady on the Continent, and again in 1743 owing to the disastrous epidemic at Messina, In 1752 a rigorous quarantine clause was introduced into an Act regulating the Levantine trade ; and various arbitrary orders were issued during the next twenty years to meet the supposed danger of infection from the Baltic. Although no plague cases ever came to England all those years, the restrictions on traffic became more and more stringent (following the movements of medical dogma), and in 1788 a very oppressive Quarantine Act was passed, with provisions affecting cargoes in particular. The first year of this century marks the turning point in quarantine legislation ; a parliamentary committee sat on the practice, and a more reasonable Act arose on their report. In 1805 there was another new Act, and in 1828-24 again an elaborate inquiry followed by an Act mak- ing the quarantine only at discretion of the privy council, and at the same time recognizing yellow

fever "or other highly infectious disorder" as calling for quarantine measures along with plague. The steady approach of cholera in 1831 was the last occasion in

England of a thorough-going resort to quarantine restrictions. The pestilence invaded cvery country of Europe despite all efforts to keep it out. In England the experiment of hermetically sealing the ports was not seriously tried when cholera returned in 1849, 1853, and 1865-66. In 1847 the Privy Council ordered all arrivals with clcan bills from the Black Sea and the Levant to be admitted to free pratique, provided there had bcen no case of plague during the voyage; and therewith the last remnant of the once formidable quarantine practice against plague may be said to have disappeared. The quarantine establishment fell gradually into disuse, and is now represented by a hulk at the Motherbank (Portsmouth), which is kept up solely for formal reasons.

For a number of years after the passing of the first Quarantine Act (1710) the protective practices were of the most haphazard and arbitrary kind. In 1721 two vessels laden with cotton goods, &c., from Cyprus, then a seat of plague, were ordered to be burned with their cargoes, the owners receiving £23,935 as indemnity. By the clause in the Levant Trade Act of 1752 vessels for the United Kingdom with a foul bill (¢.¢., coming froma country where plague existed) had to repair to the lazaretto of Malta, Venice, Messina, Leghorn, Genoa, or Marseilles, to perform their quarantine or to have their cargoes " sufficiently opened and aired." Since 1741 Stangate Creek (on the Medway) had been made the quarantine station at home; but it would appear froin the above clause that it was available only for vessels with clean bills. In 1755 lazarets in the form of floating hulks were established in England for the first time, the cleansing of cargo (particularly by exposure to dews) having becn done previously on the ship's deck. There was no medical inspection employed, but the whole routine left to the officers of customs and quarantine. In 1780, when plague was in Poland, even vessels with grain from the Baltic had to lie forty days in quarantine, and unpack and air the sacks; but owing to remonstrances, which came chiefly from Edinburgh and Leith, grain was from that date declared to be a "non-

susceptible article." About 1788 an order of council required every ship liable to quar- antine, in case of meeting any vessel at sea, or within four leagues of the coast of Great Britain or Ireland, to hoist a yellow flag in the day time and show a light at the maintopmast head at ight, under a penalty of £200. After 1800 ships from plague-countries (or with foul bills) were enabled to perform their quarantine on arrival in the Medway instead of taking a Mediterranean port on the way for that purpose ; and about the same time an extensive lazaret was built on Chetney Hill near Chatham at an expense of £170,000, which was almost at once condemned owing to its marshy foundations, and the materials sold for £15,000. The use of float- ing hulks as lazarets continued as before. In 1800 two ships with hides from Mogador (Morocco) were ordered to be sunk with. their cargoes at the Nore, the owners receiving £15,000. About this period it was merchandise that was chiefly suspected: there was a long schedule of "susceptible articles," and these were first exposed on the ship's deck for twenty-one days or less (six days for each instalment of the cargo), and then transported to the lazaret, where they were opened and aired forty days more. The whole detention of the vessel was from sixty to sixty-five days, including the time for reshipment of her cargo. Pilots had to pass fifteen days on board a "convalescent ship." The expenses may be esti- mated from one or two examples. In 1820 the " Asia," 763 tons, arrived in the Medway with a foul bill from Alexandria, laden with linseed; her freight was £1475 and her quarantine dues £610. The same year the "Pilato," 495 tons, making the same voyage, paid £200 quarantine dues on a freight of £1060. In 1823 the "William Parker" from Alexandria paid £188, or 54 per cent. on the value of her cargo. In 1823 the expenses of the quarantine service (at various ports) were £26,090, and the dues paid by shipping (nearly all with clean bills) £22,000; in 1824 the figures were respectively £23,704 and £14,419. A parliamentary return moved for by Mr Forster showed the expenses of the quaran- tine establishments at Rochester, Portsmouth, Bristol, Milford, Liverpool, and Bo'ness for the year ending 6th J anuary 1846 to be £15,590. A return for the United Kingdom and colonies moved for by Mr Joseph Hume in 1849 showed, among other details, that the expenses of the lazaret at Malta for ten years from 1839 to 1848 had been £53,553. Under the direction of Sir W. Pym, the superintendent-general of quarantine, the home establishments were gradually reduced from 1846 onwards; and the reports of the Board of

Health (signed by Chadwick, South- wood Smith, and others) in 1849 and 1852, which argued against quarantine, although not always on sound epidemiological prin- ciples, gave a further impetus in the same direction. The most recent appeal to the quarantine law (at Swansea in 1865) has been referred to above.

Literature—The most considerable treatise on quarantine is the article (pp. 166) by Léon Colin in the Dict. Encyl, des Sc, Med., 34 section, vol. i., Paris, 1874 (with a bibliography). There is also a general article by Reincke in Eulenburg's Handbuch des Gesundheitswesen. A quarantine committee of the Social Science Association collected, in 1860-61, valuable consular returns on the practice of quarantine in all parts of the world; these were edited by Milroy and ordered to

be printed (with the report and Summary) as three parliamentary papers com- municated to the board of trade, The third paper (6th August 1861, No. 544)

contains, in an appendix, an Jistortcal Sketch of Quarantine Legislation and Practice in Great Britain, by Dr Milroy, from which the above historical notes have been largely taken. See also Sherston Baker, Law of Quarantine, Lond., 1878. Russell's Treatise of the Plague (4to, London, 1791) contains "remarks on quarantines, lazarcttoes, &c.," and an account of the mode of "shutting up" practised by households in Aleppo on the outbreak of plague in the town. On plague-quarantines, sce also Hirsch, in the Vierteljahrsschrfir Oeffentl. Gesundheitspflege, 1880, xii. 6. The inexpediency of quarantine in the United Kingdom is discussed by John Simon in the eighth Report of the Medical Officer of the Privy Council for 1865, p. 35. The fifth fteport (new series), 1875, contains an abstract by Seaton of Proceedings of the International Santtary Con- Jerence at Vienna, 1874. (C. C.)

QUARANTINE, Carriz, The importation of foreign cattle into England was forbidden at a comparatively early period. Thus 18 Car. IL. c. 2 made such importa- tion a common nuisance. In 1869 previous legislation was consolidated by the Contagious Diseases (Animals) Act, 1869, which applied to the United Kingdom. In 1878 this Act was repealed and new provisions made by the Contagious Diseases (Animals) Act, 1878, amended

by two Acts passed in 1884. By this Act the privy council is empowered to make from time to time such general or special orders as they think fit for prohibiting the landing of animals brought from a foreign country. Foreign animals can be landed only at certain ports named by the privy council, and must be slaughtered on landing, unless they are intended for exhibition or other exceptional purposes, in which case they are subject to the quarantine rules given in the fifth schedule of the Act. In the United States the importation of neat cattle is forbidden by the Act of 1883, c. 121, except as allowed by the secretary of the treasury. The appropriation Acts since 1881 have made annual grants of sums of $50,000 to enable the secretary of the treasury to cooperate with State and municipal authorities in making regulations for the establishment of cattle quarantine stations. The cattle quarantine system of Canada is said to be one of the most perfect existing. In 1876 a quarantine of eight days was established, raised to ninety days in 1879. The chief Canadian Act is 42 Vict. c. 23. The effect of the Canadian precautions has been that English orders in council have allowed Canadian cattle to be imported into the United Kingdom for breeding and exhibition purposes.

QUARANTINE, Winow's, is the right of a widow to remain in the principal house belonging to her husband for forty days after his death. It is specially recognized in Magna Carta and in some of the State laws in the United States.

QUARE IMPEDIT, in English law, is a form of action by which the right of presentation to a benefice is tried. It is so called from the words of the writ formerly in use which directed the sheriff to command the person disturbing the possession to permit the plaintiff to present a fit person, or to show cause "why he hinders" the plaintiff in his right. The action is one of the few surviving real actions preserved by 3 & 4 Will. IV. c. 27. As a real action it could before the Judicature Acts have been brought only in the Court of Common Pleas, The effect of recent legislation has been to assimilate proceedings in quare impedit as far as possible to those in an ordinary action. It is now usually brought against a bishop to try the legality of his refusal to institute a particular clerk. The bishop must fully state upon the pleadings the grounds on which he refuses. Quare impedit is peculiarly the remedy of the patron; the remedy of the clerk is the

proceeding called duplex querela in the ecclesiastical court. At common law no damages or costs were recoverable in quare impedit ; 13 Edw. I. st. 1, ¢. 5, provided for damages up to two years' value of the benefice, and 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 39 for costs, The action is not barred till the expira- tion of sixty years, or of three successive incumbencies adverse to the plaintiff's right, whichever period be the longer (3 & 4 Will. IV. ¢. 27, § 29). Where the patron of a benefice is a Roman Catholic, one of the universities

__"

presents in his place (1 Will. and Mary, sess. I, c. 26). By 13 Anne c. 13 during the pendency of a quare impedit to which either of the universities is a party in right of the patron being a Roman Catholic the court has power toadminister an oath for the discovery of any secret trust, and to order the cestw: que trust to repeat and subscribe a declaration against transubstantiation.

QUARLES, Francis (1592-1644), asacred poet of the 17th century, enjoyed considerable celebrity in his own day, and some of his works" have shared in the recent revival of interest in our older literature. The work by which he is best known, his #mblemes, was originally pub- lished in 1635, with grotesque illustrations, engraved by Marshall, and borrowed from the Pia Desideria of Hermann Hugo. The poems, which are diffuse medita- tions upon Scriptural texts, seem, in modern phrase, to have been "written up" to the illustrations, and are quite in keeping with their quaint mixture of sublime and familiar thoughts. An edition of the Hmblems, with new illustrations by C. H. Bennett, was published in Edinburgh in 1857, and these illustrations are reproduced in Mr Grosart's complete edition in the Chertsey Worthies Library. The incongruous oddities of Quarles's verse are more obvious than the higher qualities that recent admirers claim for him. The following stanza, in a paraphrase of Job xiv. 13, has often been referred to as the supreme example of his occasional sublimity of thought :—

"Tis vain to fice ; till gentle Mercy show Her better eye, the farther off we go The swing of Justice deals the mightier blow."

Quarles would seem to have been a man of good family, and he boasts of his "long-lived genealogy." He was born at Romford in Essex in 1592, and, after a regular education at school, Christ's College, Cambridge, and Lincoln's Inn, had influence enough at court to get the office of cup- bearer to the queen of Bohemia. He was afterwards (about 1621) appointed secretary to Ussher, the primate of Ireland, and later on, returning at an uncertain date to England, obtained (in 1639) the post of city chronologer, which had been held before him by Middleton and Ben Jonson. Upon the outbreak of the Civil War he wrote on the Royalist side, and died in 1644, in consequence, his widow suggests, of his harsh treatment by the king's enemies, Quarles's first publication, with the suggestive title of The Feast of Wormes, appeared in 1620, and from that date till his death he was a busy and prolific writer of verse and prose. His Divine Poems, collected in 1630, were published separately at intervals in the course of the preceding ten years. Divine Fancies followed in 1632 ; then the Emblems, which might well come under that general designation. The earlier poem of Argalus and Parthenia (1622) was in a different vein: the substance Was imitated from Sidney's Arcadia, and the verse from Marlowe's Hero and Leander. The speeches are spun out to a most tedious length, but the poem contains more fine lines and fewer incongruous fancies than any other of the author's productions. Quarles also published many Elegies, In the fashion of memorial verses of which Milton's Lycadas was the contemporary masterpiece. His Llieroglyphics, In the same vein as his Emblems, appeared first in 1638. His principal prose work was the Lnchyridion (1640), a collection of four "centuries" of miscellaneous aphorisms. This was followed two years later by more 'observations " of the same kind " concerning princes and states." Lovers of commonplace wisdom dressed in a garb always studi- ously quaint and sometimes happily epigrammatic, may turn to Quarles with every prospect of enjoyment.

QUARTER SESSIONS (in full, GeneRAL QuaRTER

ESSIONS OF THE Pxacs) is the name given to a local court with civil and criminal jurisdiction. In England the

court consists in counties of two or more justices of the peace, one of whom must be of the quorum (see Justicz OF THE PEACE), in cities and boroughs of the recorder alone. The quarter sessions are a court of record. The records in a county are nominally in the custody of the custos rotulorum, the highest civil officer in the county, practically in that of the clerk of the peace, who is nomin- ated by the custos and removable by the quarter sessions. In a city or borough he is appointed by the council and removable by the recorder. The original jurisdiction of quarter sessions seems to have been confined to cognizance of breaches of the peace. By a series of statutes passed in the reign of Edward III. the time of the holding of the sessions was fixed, and their jurisdiction extended to the trial of felonies and trespasses. The jurisdiction now depends upon a mass of legislation reaching from 1344 to the present time. The dates at which the county sessions must meet are fixed, by 2 Geo. IV. and 1 Will. IV. c. 70, to be the first weeks after the 11th of October, the 28th of December, the 3lst of March, and the 24th of June. Quarter sessions in a city or borough depend upon the Municipal Corporations Act, 1882, 45 & 46 Vict., c. 50. A grant of quarter sessions to a city or borough is made by the crown in council on petition of the town council. The main points in which borough differ from county quarter sessions are these :—(1) the recorder, a barrister of five years' standing, is sole judge in place of a body of laymen ; (2) the recorder has a discretion to fix his own dates for the holding ofa court, as long as he holds it once every quarter of a year; it may be held more frequently if the recorder think fit or a secretary of state so direct ; (3) the recorder has no power to levy a borough rate or to grant a licence for the sale of exciseable liquors by retail. In some few boroughs the recorder is judge of the borough civil court. Quarter sessions in the counties of Middlesex, Kent, and Lancaster, as also in London and the Cinque Ports, are governed by special legislation.

The jurisdiction of quarter sessions is either original or appellate.

Original Jurisdiction.—Civil.—This includes the levying of a county rate and its application, the appointment of a county licensing committee, and of public officers, such as the county treasurer, the public analyst, and the inspectors of weights and measures, the confirmation of bye-laws made by local authoritics, the increase or alteration of polling places and petty

sessional divisions, the regulation of police, and powers under various Acts of Parliament, such as the Highway Acts, and the Contagious Diseases (Animals) Act. The quarter sessions of the metropolitan counties have by 25 Geo. II. c. 36 the power of licensing music-halls, &c., within 20 miles of London.

Criminal.—Apart from statute, the commissions of justices of the peace ovine that they shall reserve the graver felonies for trial at assizes. They are now forbidden by several Acts of Parlia- ment to try a prisoner for treason or murder, or for any felony punishable without a previous conviction by penal servitude for life (such as burglary and rape), or for any of the offences cnumerated in 5 & 6 Vict. c. 88, the most practically important of which are perjury, forgery, bigamy, abduction, conccalment of birth, libel, bribery, and conspiracy. The procedure is by indictment, as at assizes, and the trial of offences by jury. In the case of incorrigible rogues and of sureties of the peace the quarter sessions exercise a quasi-criminal jurisdiction without a jury. They may also estreat recognizances entered into for appearance in a court of summary jurisdiction, but this part of their jurisdiction may be considered practically obsolete, as the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879, gives the court of summary jurisdiction power to estreat the recognizances Lope Jurisdiction.—Civil, —The principal cases in which this jurisdiction is exercised are in appeals from orders of a court of summary jurisdietion as to the assessment of the poor-rate and the removal and settlement of paupers, and orders made under the Highway, Liccnsing, and Bastardy Acts.

Criminal.—An appeal lies to quarter sessions from a court of summary jurisdiction only where such an appcal is expressly given bystatute. The appellate jurisdiction has been considcrably increased by the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 & 48 Vict. c, 49), which allows an appeal (with certain exccptions) from every conviction or order of a court of summary jurisdiction inflicting imprisonment without the option of a fine. The appeal may be

brought in accordance with either the Act giving the appeal or the Summary Jurisdiction Act.

There is no appeal from quarter sessions on the facts, but their decision may be reviewed by the High Court of Justice by means of certiorart, mandamus, prohibition, or a case stated under 12 & 18 Vict. c. 45, § 11. A case may be stated for the opinion of the court of criminal appeal under 11 & 12 Vict. c. 78, § 1.

Ireland.—In Ireland the chairman of quarter sessions is a salaried professional lawyer, and has important civil jurisdiction corresponding very much to that of a county court judge in Eng- land. His jurisdiction depends chiefly upon 14 & 15 Vict. c. 57. The recorders of Dublin and Cork are judges of the civil bill courts in those cities.

Scotland.—In Scotland quarter sessions were established by the Act 1661, c. 338, under which justices were to meet on the first Tuesday of March, May, and August, and the last Tuesday of October to "administrate justice to the people in things that are within their jurisdiction and punish the guilty for faults and crimes done and committed in the preceding quarter." The jurisdiction of quarter sessions in Scotland is more limited than in England, much of what would be quarter-sessions work in Eng- land being done by the sheriff or the commissioners of supply. Quarter sessions have appellate jurisdiction in poaching, revenue, and licensing cases, and under the Pawnbrokers and other Acts. All appeals from proccedings under the Summary Jurisdiction Acts are taken to the High Court of Justiciary at Edinburgh or on circuit (44 & 45 Vict. c. 33). The original jurisdiction of quarter sessions is very limited, and almost entirely civil. Thus they have power to divide a county and to make rules for carrying into effect the provisions of the Small Debts Act, 6 Geo. IV. c. 48. The decision of quarter sessions may be reviewed by advocation, suspension, or appeal.

United States.—In the United States courts of quarter sessions exist in many of the States; their jurisdiction is determined by State legislation, and extends as a rule only to the less grave crimes, They are in some States constituted of professional judges.

QUARTZ, the name of a mineralogical species which includes nearly all the native forms of silica. It thus embraces a great number of distinct minerals, several of which are cut as ornamental stones or otherwise used in the arts. For a general description of the species, see MINERALOGY, vol. xvi. p.

389 ; and for its chief varieties, see AGATE, vol. i. p. 277; Ameruyst, vol. i. p. 736; Furnt, vol. ix. p. 325; and Jaspmr, vol, xiii, p. 596. The crystallography of quartz has been fully investigated by Des Cloizeaux in his classical Afémoire sur la cristal- lisation et la structure intériewre du Quartz, Paris, 1855.

QUASSIA, the generic name given by Linneus to a small tree of Surinam in honour of the negro Quassi or Coissi, who employed the intensely bitter bark of the tree as a remedy for fever. This bark was introduced into European medicine about the middle of the last century, and was officially recognized in the London Pharmacopoia of 1788. In 1809 it was replaced by the bitter wood or bitter ash of Jamaica, Picrena excelsa, Lind]., which was found to possess similar properties and could be obtained in pieces of much larger size. Since that date this wood has continued in use in Britain under the name of quassia to the exclusion of the Surinam quassia, which, however, is still employed in France and Germany. Picrena ex- celsa, Lindl. (Quassia excelsa, Swartz) is a tree 50 to 60 feet in height, and resembles the common ash in appear- ance. It has imparipinnate leaves composed of four or five pairs of short-stalked, oblong, blunt, leathery leaflets, and inconspicuous green flowers. The fruit consists of shining drupes about the size of a pea. It is found also in Antigua and St Vincent. Quassia amara, L., is a shrub or small tree belonging to the same natural order as Picrena, viz., Simarubacexr, but is readily distinguished by its large handsome red flowers arranged in terminal clusters. It is a native of Panama, Venezuela, Guiana, and northern Brazil. Jamaica quassia is imported into England in logs several feet in length and often nearly one foot in thickness, consisting of pieces of the trunk and larger branches. The thin greyish bark is usually removed. The wood is nearly white, or of a yellowish tint, but sometimes exhibits blackish markings due to the

mycelium of a fungus. The wood has a pure bitter taste, and is without odour or aroma. It is usually to be met with in the form of turnings or raspings, the former being obtained in the manufacture of the “bitter cups” which are made of this wood. The medicinal properties are due to the presence of quassiin (first obtained by Winckler in 1835), which exists in

the wood to the extent of ;',th per cent. It isa neutral crystalline substance, soluble in hot dilute alcohol and chloroform and in 200 parts of water. It is also readily soluble in alkalies, and is reprecipitated by acids. It is almost insoluble in ether, and forms an insoluble compound with tannin.

Quassia is used in medicine in the form of infusion and tincture as a pure bitter tonic and febrifuge, and in consequence of contain- ing no tannin is often prescribed in combination with iron. An infusion of the wood sweetened with sugar is also uscd as a fly poison, and forms an effectual injection for destroying thread worms. Quassia also forms a principal ingredient of several " hop substitutes," for which use it was employed as long ago as 1791, when John Lindsay, a medical practitioner in Jamaica, wrote that the bark was exported to England "in considerable quantities for the purposes of brewers of ale and porter."

QUATERNIONS. The word quaternion properly means "a set of four." In employing such a word to denote a new mathematical method, Sir W. R. Hamiitron (g.v.) was probably influenced by the recollection of its Greek equivalent, the Pythagorean Tetractys, the mystic source of all things.

Quaternions (as a mathematical method) is an exten- sion, or improvement, of Cartesian geometry, in which the artifices of coordinate axes, &c., are got rid of, all directions in space being treated on precisely the same terms. It is therefore, except in some of its degraded forms, possessed of the perfect isotropy of Euclidian space.

From the purely geometrical point of view, a quater- nion may be regarded as the quotient of two directed lines "an space—or, What comes to the same thing, as the factor, or operator, which changes one directed line into another. Its analytical definition cannot be given for the moment; it will appear in the course of the article.

History of the Method.—The evolution of quaternions belongs in part to each of two weighty branches of mathe- matical history—the interpretation of the imaginary (or impossible) quantity of common algebra, and the Cartesian application of algebra to geometry. Sir W. R. Hamilton was led to his great invention by keeping geometrical applications constantly before him while he endeavoured to give a real significance to ,/-—1. We will

therefore confine ourselves, so far as his predecessors are concerned, to attempts at interpretation which had geometrical appli- cations in view.

One geometrical interpretation of the negative sign of algebra was early seen to be mere reversal of direction along a line. Thus, when an image is formed by a plane mirror, the distance of any point in it from the mirror is simply the negative of that of the corresponding point of the object. Or if motion in one direction along a line be treated as positive, motion in the opposite direction along the same line is negative. In the case of time, measured from the Christian era, this distinction is at once given by the letters A.D. or B.c., prefixed to the date. And to find the position, in time, of one event relatively to another, we have only to subtract the date of the second (taking account of its sign) from that of the first. Thus to find the interval between the battles of Marathon (490 B.c.) and Waterloo (1815 a.p.) we have

+1815 — (—490)=2305 years. And it is obvious that the same process applies in all cases in which we deal with quantities which may be regarded as of one directed dimension only, such as dis- tances along a line, rotations about an axis, &c. But it

is essential to notice that this is by no- means necessarily true of operators. To turn a line through a certain angle in a given plane, a certain operator is required ; but when we wish to turn it through an equal negative angle we must not, in general, employ the negative of the former operator. For the negative of the operator which turns a line through a given angle in a given plane will in all cases produce the negative of the original result, which is not the result of the reverse operator, unless the angle involved be an odd multiple of a right angle. This is, of course, on the usual assumption that the sign of a product is changed when that of any one of its factors is changed, —which merely means that —1 is commutative with all other quantities.

The celebrated Wallis seems to have been the first to push this idea further. In his Z'reatise of Algebra (1685) he distinctly proposes to construct the imaginary roots of a quadratic equation by going out of the line on which the roots, if real, would have been constructed.

In 1804 the Abbé Buée,! apparently without any know- ledge of Wallis's work, developed this idea so far as to make it useful in geometrical applications. He gave, in fact, the theory of what in Hamilton's system is called Composition of Vectors in one plane—i.e., the combination, by + and —, of complanar directed lines. His construc- tions are based on the idea that the imaginaries +,/—1 represent a unit line, and its reverse, perpendicular to the line on which the real units +1 are measured. In this sense the imaginary expression a+6,/—1 is constructed by measuring a length a along the fundamental line (for real quantities), and from its extremity a line of length 6 in some direction perpendicular to the fundamental line. But he did not attack the question of the representation of products or quotients of directed lines. The step he took is really nothing more than the kinematical principle of the composition of linear velocities, but expressed in terms of the algebraic imaginary.

In 1806 (the year of publication of Buée's paper) Argand published a pamphlet? in which precisely the same ideas are developed, but to a considerably greater extent. For an interpretation is assigned to the product of two directed lines in one plane, when each is expressed as the sum of a real and an imaginary part. This product is interpreted as another directed line, forming the fourth term of a proportion, of which the first term is the real (positive) unit-line, and the other two are the factor-lines. Argand's work remained unnoticed until the question was again raised in Gergonne's Annales, 1813, by Francais. This writer stated that he had found the germ of his remarks among the papers of his deceased brother, and that they had come from Legendre, who had himself received them from some one unnamed, This led to a letter from Argand, in which he stated his communica- tions with Legendre, and gave a résumé of the contents of his pamphlet. In a further communication to the Annales, Argand pushed on the applications of his theory. He has given by means of it a simple proof of the exist- ence of x roots, and no more, in every rational algebraic equation of the mth order with real coefficients. About 1828 Warren in England, and Mourey in France, inde- pendently of one another and of Argand, reinvented these modes of interpretation ; and still later, in the writings of

= Stil a rs

‘ Phil. Trans., 1806.

? Essai sur une maniére de représenier les Quantités Imaginaires dans les Constructions Géométriques. A second edition was published by Hoiiel (Paris, 1874). There is added an important Appendix, Consisting of the papers from Gergonne’s Annales which are referred

to in the text above. Almost nothing can, it seems, be learned of Argand’s private life, except that in all probability he was born at

Geneva in 1768,

161

Cauchy, Gauss, and others, the properties of the expression

a+6,/—1 were developed into the immense and most important subject now called the theory of complex numbers (see Numpers, TuEory oF). From the more purely sym- bolical view it was developed by Peacock, De Morgan, &e., as double algebra.

Argand’s method may be put, for reference, in the following form. The direeted line whose length is a, aud whieh makes an angle @ with the real (positive) unit line, is expressed by

a(cos6+isiné), where ¢ is regarded as +4/-—1. The sum of two sueh lines (formed by adding together the real and the imaginary parts of two such expressions) ean, of course, be expressed as a third direeted line— the diagonal of the parallelogram of which they are conterminous sides, The product, P, of two such lines is, as we have seen, given by 1: a(cos6+7ésin@) :: a(cosé+7sin 6’) : P, or P=aa’{cos(0+6’)+isin(6’)}. Its length is, therefore, the produet of the lengths of the factors, and its inclination to the real unit is the sum of those of the factors. If we write the expressions for the two lines in the form A Bi, A’+B%, the produet is AA’—BB’+7(AB’+ BA’); and the faet that the length of the product line is the product of those of the factors is seen in the form

(A2+ B)(A'2+B)=(AA!— BB')? +(AB'+BA'?. In the modern theory of eomplex numbers this is expressed by saying that the Norm of a produet is equal to the product of the norms of the factors.

Argand's attempts to extend his method to space gene- rally were fruitless. The reasons will be obvious later ; but we mention them just now because they called forth from Servois (Gergonne's Annales, 1813) a very remark- able comment, in which was contained the only yet discovered trace of an anticipation of the method of Hamilton. Argand had been led to deny that such an expression as 2' could be expressed in the form A + Bi,— although, as is well known, Euler showed that one of its values is a real quantity, the exponential function of — 7/2. Servois says, with reference to the general representation of a directed line in space :—

"Tanalogie semblerait exiger que le trindme fit de la forme peosat+geosB+rcosy; a, B, y étant les angles d'une droite avec trois axes rectangulaires; et qu'on etit

*(pcosa+qcosB+rcosy)(p'eosa+q'eos B+7'e08y) =cos*a+cos*B+cos*y=1. Les valeurs de p, g, 7, p', 7, 7 qui satisferaient & eette condition seraicnt abswrdes; mais seraient-elles imaginaires, reductibles 4 la forme générale A+Ba/-—1?% Voila une question d'analyse fort singuliére que je soumets a vos lumiéres. La simple proposition que je vous en fais suffit pour vous faire voir que je ne crois point que toute fonetion analytique non réelle soit*

vraiment reductible & la forme A+ Ba/-1."

As will be seen later, the fundamental 2, 7, & of quater- nions, with their reciprocals, furnish a set of six quantities which satisfy the conditions imposed by Servois. And it is quite certain that they cannot be represented by ordin- ary imaginaries,

Something far more closely analogous to quaternions than anything in Argand's work ought to have been suggested by De Moivre's theorem (1730). Instead of regarding, as Buée and Argand had done, the expression a (cos 6+72sin 6) as a directed line, let us suppose it to represent the operator which, when applied to any line in the plane in which @ is

measured, turns it in that plane through the angle 0, and at the same time increases its length in the ratioa: 1. From the new point of view we see at once, as it were, why it is true that

(cos 6 +7sin 6)” =cosmé + isin mé.

For this equation merely states that m turnings of a line through successive equal angles, in one plane, give the same result as a single turning through m times the common angle. To make this process applicable to any plane in space, it is clear that we must have a special value of i for each such plane. In other words, a unit line, drawn in any direction whatever, must have —1 for itssquare, In such XX. — 21

162

a system there will be no line in space specially distin- guished as the real unit line: all will be alike imaginary, or rather alike real. We may state, in passing, that every quaternion can be represented as a(cos6 +. wsin@),— where ais areal number, 6 a real angle, and # a directed unit line whose square is—1. Hamilton took this grand step, but, as we have already said, without any help from the previous work of De Moivre. The course of his investiga- tions is minutely described in the preface to his first great work! on the subject. Hamilton, like most of the many inquirers who endeavoured to give a real interpretation to the imaginary of common algebra, found that at least two kinds, orders, or ranks of quantities were necessary for the purpose. But, instead of dealing with points on a line, and then wandering out at right angles to it, as Buée and Argand had done, he chose to look on algebra as the science of pure time,2 and to investigate the properties of “sets” of time-steps. In its essential nature a set is a linear function of any number of distinct units of the same species. Hence the simplest form of a set is a couple; and it was to the possible laws of combination of couples that Hamilton first directed his attention. It is obvious that the way in which the two separate time-steps are involved in the couple will determine these laws of combination. But Hamilton’s special object required that these laws should be such as to lead to certain assumed results; and he therefore commenced by assuming these, and from the assumption determined how the separate time-steps must be involved in the couple. If we use Roman letters for mere numbers, capitals for instants of time, Greek letters for

time-steps, and a parenthesis to denote a couple, the laws assumed by Hamilton as the basis of a system were as follows :— (B,, B,)-(Ay, Ag)=(B,- Ay, Bzy- Ag)=(a, 8); (a, b)(a, B)=(aa— bp, ba+ap).3 To show how we give, by such assumptions, a real inter- pretation to the ordinary algebraic imaginary, take the simple casea=0, b=1, and the second of the above for- mule gives (0, 1)(a, B)=(-B, a). Multiply once more by the number-couple (0,1), and we have (0, 1)(0, 1)(a, B)=(0, 1)(-B, a)=(—a,—8) =(-1, 0)(a, B)= -(a, B). Thus the number-couple (0,1), when twice applied to a step-couple, simply changes its sign. That we have here a perfectly real and intelligible interpretation of the ordin- ary algebraic imaginary is easily seen by an illustration, even if it be a somewhat extravagant one. Some Eastern potentate, possessed of absolute power, covets the vast possessions of his vizier and of his barber. He determines to rob them both (an operation which may be very satis- factorily expressed by —1); but, being a wag, he chooses his own way of doing it. He degrades his vizier to the office of barber, taking all his goods in the process ; and makes the barber his vizier. Next day he repeats the opera- tion. Each of the victims has been restored to his former rank, but the operator —1 has been applied to both. Hamilton, still keeping prominently before him as his great object the invention of a method applicable to space of three dimensions, proceeded to study the properties of triplets of the form 2+7y+Jjz, by which he proposed to represent the directed line in space whose projections on

-

1 Lectures on Quaternions, Dublin, 1853.

2 Theory of Conjugate Functions, or Algebraic Couples, with a Pre- liminary and Elementary Essay on Algebra as the Science of Pure Time, read in 18388 and 1835, and published in Trans. R. I. A., xvii. ii. (1835).

3 Compare these with the long-subsequent ideas of Grassmann, presently to be described. i

a

QUATEHERNIONS

the coordinate axes are x, y, 2 The composition of two such lines by the algebraic addition of their several pro- jections agreed with the assumption of Buée and Argand for the case of coplanar lines. But, assuming the dis- tributive principle, the product of two lines appeared to give the expression

ace! — yy! — 22! + tye! + acy') + J (xa! + 2a!) + ij(yz +2y'). For the square of j, like that of 7, was assumed to be negative unity. But the interpretation of y presented a difficulty,—in fact the main difficulty of the whole investi- gation, —and it is specially interesting to see how Hamilton attacked it. He saw that he could get a hint from the simpler case, already thoroughly discussed, provided the two factor lines were in one plane through the real unit line. This requires merely that

yresry'se2's or yz —2zy=0;

but then the product should be of the same form as the separate factors, Thus, in this special case, the term in vj ought to vanish. But the numerical factor appears to be yz' +2y', while it is the quantity yz' — zy' which really vanishes. Hence Hamilton was at first inclined to think that 77 must be treated as nil. But he soon saw that "a less harsh supposition" would suit the simple case. For his speculations on sets had already familiarized him with the idea that multiplication might in certain cases not be commutative; so that, as the last term in the above pro- duct is made up of the two separate terms ¢yyz' and jizy/, the term would vanish of itself when the factor-lines are coplanar provided 7j= —jz, for it would then assume the form ij (yz —zy'). He had now the following expression for the product of any two directed lines

wvat! — yy' — ae + U(yoo! + xy") + j(acd! + xt!) + if(y2 — zy'). But his result had to be submitted to another test, the Law of the Norms. As soon as he found, by trial, that this law was satisfied, he took the final step. "This led me," he says, "to conceive that perhaps, instead of seeking to confine ourselves to triplets,. .... we ought to regard these as only imperfect forms of Quaternions, and that thus my old conception of sets might receive a new and useful application." In a very short time he settled his fundamental assumptions. He had now three distinct space-units 7, 7, 4; and the following conditions regulated their combination by multiplication :—

QaPak=——-1, j= -ji—k, jk— -kj=i, ki= —tkaj4 And now the product of two quaternions could be at

once expressed as a third quaternion, thus—

(a+ib+je+kd)(a’ + ib! +jc’+kd’)=A+iB+JC+kD, where

© 6 © ‘o: Ramee

A=aa’ — bb’ – cc’ — dd’,

B=ab’ + ba’+cd’ — de’,

C=ac’ +ca”+db’ — bd’,

D=ad’ + da’ + be’ — cb’. Hamilton at once found that the Law of the Norms holds,— not being aware that Euler had long before decomposed the product of two sums of four squares into this very set of four squares. And now a directed line in space came to be represented as iv+jy+kz, while the product of two lines is the quaternion

— (aa! + yy! +22”) + i(ye! —2y’) +5 (20! — x2!) +k(ay! — yx’).

To any one acquainted, even to a slight extent, with the elements of Cartesian geometry of three dimensions, 4 glance at the extremely suggestive constituents of this

| expression shows how justly Hamilton was entitled to say

—‘ When the conception . . . . had been so far unfolded and fixed in my mind, I felt that the new instrument for applying calculation to geometry, for which I had so long

4 It will be easy to see that, instead of the last three of these, we may write the single one 7k= — 1.

|

/

|

OU A TY Ew? ON S The date of

sought, was now, at least in part, attained.” this memorable discovery is October 16, 1843.

We can devote but a few lines to the consideration of Suppose, for simplicity, the factor- lines to be each of unit length. Then a, y, z, x’, y’, 2’ express Also, if @ be the angle between

the expression above.

their direction-cosines. them, and x”, y’, 2” the direction-cosines of a line perpendi- cular to each of them, we have «a + yy’ +22’ =cos6, ye — 2 =x sin 6, &e., so that the product of two unit lines is now expressed as — cos@ + (ca + jy” +kz’)sin6. Thus, when the factors are parallel, or 6=0, the product, which is now the square of any (unit) line, is—1. And when the two factor lines are at right angles to one another, or 6=7/2, the product is simply tx” +jy”+kz’, the unit line perpendicular to both. Hence, and in this lies

the main element of the symmetry and simplicity of the quaternion calculus, all systems of three mutually rectangular unit lines in space have the same properties as

the fundamental system 1, j, k. In other words, if the system (considered as rigid) be made to turn about till the jirst factor coincides with 7 and the second with j, the product will coincide with & This fundamental system, therefore, becomes unnecessary ; and the quater- nion method, in every case, takes its reference lines solely from the problem to which it is applied. It has therefore, as it were, a unique internal character of its own.

Hamilton, having gone thus far, proceeded to evolve these results from a train of a priori or metaphysical reasoning, which is so interesting in itself, and so char- acteristic of the man, that we briefly sketch its nature.

Let it be supposed that the product of two directed lines is something which has quantity ; .¢., it may be halved, or doubled, for instance. Also let us assume (a) space to have the same properties in all directions, and make the convention (6) that to change the sign of any one factor changes the sign of a product. Then the product of two lines which have the same direction cannot be, even in part, a directed quantity. For, if the directed part have the same direction as the factors, (b) shows that it will be reversed by reversing either, and therefore will recover its original direction when both are reversed. But this would obviously be inconsistent with (a). If it be perpendicular to the factor lines, (a) shows that it must have simultaneously every such direction. Hence it musé be a mere nuniber.

Again, the product of two lines at right angles to one another cannot, even in part, be a number. For the reversal of either factor must, by (6), change its sign. But, if we look at the two factors in their new position by the light of (a), we see that the sign must not change. But there is nothing to prevent its being represented by a directed line if, as farther applications of (a) and (6) show we must do, we take it perpendicular to each of the factor lines. Hamilton seems never to have been quite satisfied with the apparent heterogeneity of a quaternion, depending as it does on a numerical and a directed part. He indulged in a great deal of speculation as to the exist- ence of an extra-spatial unit, which was to furnish the raison d'étre of the numerical part, and render the quater- nion homogeneous as well as linear. But, for this, we must refer to his own works.

Hamilton was not the only worker at the theory of sets. The year after the first publication of the quaternion niethod, there appeared a work of great originality, by Grassmann,! in which results closely analogous to some of those of Hamilton were given,

In particular two species of multiplication ("inner" and "outer ") of directed lines in one plane were given. The results of these two

Die Ausdehnungslehre, Leipsic, 1844 ; 2d ed., "vollstandig und strenger Form bearbeitet," Berlin, 1862. Sce also the collected works of Mébius, and those of Clifford, for a general explanation of Grassmann's method.

kinds of multiplication correspond respectively to the numerical and the directed parts of Hamilton's quaternion product. But Grassmann distinctly states in his preface that he had not had leisure to extend his method to anglesin space. Hamilton and Grass- mann, while their-earlier work had much in common, had very dif- ferent objects in view. Hamilton, as we have seen, had geometrical application as his main object; when he realized the quaternion system, he felt that his object was gained, and thenceforth con- fined himself to the development of his method. Grassmann's object seems to have becn, all along, of a much more ambitious character, viz., to discover, if possible, a system or systems in which every conceivable mode of dealing with sets should be included, That he made very great advances towards the attain- ment of this object all will allow; that his method, even as com- pleted in 1862, fully attains it is not so certain. But his claims, however great they may be, can in no way conflict with those of Hamilton, whose mode of multiplying couples (in which the "inuer" and "outer" multiplication are essentially involved) was produced in 1833, and whose quaternion system was completed and published before Grassmann had elaborated for press even the rudimentary portions of his own system, in which the veritable diffi- culty of the whole subject, the application to angles in space, had not even been attacked. Grassmann made in 1854 a somewhat savage onslaught on Cauchy and De St Venant, the former of whom had invented, while the latter had exemplified in application, tlic system of "cles algébriques," which is almost precisely that of Grassmann, But it is to be observed that Grassmann, though he virtually accused Cauchy of plagiarism, does not appear to have preferred any such charge against Hamilton. He does not allude to Hamilton in the second edition of his work. But in 1877, in the Mathematische Annalen, xii., he gave a paper "On the Place of Quaternions in the Awsdehnungslehre," in which he condemns, as far as he can, the nomenclature and methods of Hamilton. There are many othcr systems, based ou various principles, which have been given for application to geometry of directed lines, but those which deal with products of lines are all of such complexity as to be practically useless in application. Others, such as the Bary- centrische Calctl of Mobius, and the Jléthode des Equipollences of Bellavitis, give elegant modes of treating space problems, so long as we confine ourselves to projective geometry al matters of that order; but they are limited in their field, and therefore nced not be discussed here. More general systems,

having close analogies to quaternions, have been given since Hamilton's discovery was pub- lished. As instances we may take Goodwin's and O'Brien's papers in the Cambridge Philosophical Transactions for 1849.

Relations to other Branches of Science.-—Even the above brief narrative shows how close is the connexion between quaternions and the ordinary Cartesian space-geometry. Were this all, the gain by their introduction would consist mainly in a clearer insight into the mechanism of coordin- ate systems, rectangular or not—a very important addition to theory, but little advance so far as practical applica- tion is concerned. But we have now to consider that, as yet, we have not taken advantage of the perfect symmetry of the method. When that is done, the full value of Hamilton's grand step becomes evident, and the gain is quite as extensive from the practical as from the theoreti- cal point of view. Hamilton, in fact, remarks,? "I regard it as an inelegance and imperfection in this calculus, or rather in the state to which it has hitherto been unfolded, whenever it becomes, or seems to become, necessary to have recourse …... to the resources of ordinary algebra, for the solution of equations in quaternions." This refers to the use of the x, y, 2 coordinates,—associated, of course, with 2, 7, &. But when, instead of the highly arti- ficial expression ix+jy+kz, to denote a finite directed line, we employ a single letter, a (Hamilton uses the Greek alphabet for this purpose), and find that we are permitted to deal with it exactly as we should have dealt with the more complex expression, the immense gain is at least in part obvious. Any quaternion may now be expressed in numerous simple forms. Thus we may regard it as the sum of a number and a line, a+a, or as the product, By, or the quotient, de", of two directed lines, &c., while, in many cases, we may represent it, so far as it is required, by a single letter such as gq, 7, ce.

2 Lectures on Quaternions, § 513.

Perhaps to the student there is no part of elementary mathematics so repulsive as is spherical trigonometry. Also, everything relating to change of systems of axes, as for instance in the kinematics of a rigid system, where we have constantly to consider one set of rotations with regard to axes fixed in space, and another set with re- gard to axes fixed in the system, is a

matter of trouble- some complexity by the usual methods. But every quaternion formula is a proposition in spherical (some- times degrading to plane) trigonometry, and has the full advantage of the symmetry of the method. And one of Hamilton's earliest advances in the study of his system (an advance independently made, only a few months later, by Cayley) was the interpretation of the singular operator a( )q7}, where qisa quaternion. Applied to any directed line, this operator at once turns it, conically, through a definite angle, about a definite axis. Thus rotation is now expressed in symbols at least as simply as it can be exhibited by mcans of a model. Had quaternions effected nothing more than this, they would still have inaugurated one of the most necessary, and apparently impracticable, of reforms.

The physical properties of a heterogeneous body (pro- vided they vary continuously from point to point) are known to depend, in the neighbourhood of any one point of the body, on a quadric function of the coordinates with reference to that point. The same is true of physical quantities such as potential, temperature, &c., throughout small regions in which their variations are continuous ; and also, without restriction of dimensions, of moments of inertia, d&c. Hence, in addition to its geometrical applications to surfaces of the second order, the theory of quadric functions of position is of fundamental importance in physics. Here the symmetry points at once to the

selection of the three principal axes as the directions for 1, .

j, &; and it would appear at first sight as if quaternions could not simplify, though they might improve in ele- gance, the solution of questions of this kind. But it is not so. Even in Hamilton's earlier work it was shown that all such questions were reducible to the solution of linear equations in quaternions ; and he proved that this, in turn, depended on the determination of a certain operator, which could be represented for purposes of calculation by a single symbol. The method is essentially the same as that developed, under the name of "matrices" by Cayley in 1858 ; but it has the peculiar advantage of the simplicity which is the natural consequence of entire freedom from conventional reference lines.

Sufficient has already been said to show the close con- nexion between quaternions and the theory of numbers. But one most important connexion with modern physics must be pointed out, as it is probably destined to be of great service in the immediate future. In the theory of surfaces, in hydrokinetics, heat-conduction, potentials, &c., we constantly meet with what is called Laplace's operator,

0 ee tee V1Z., Pa apt ae : i.e,, it is independent of the particular directions chosen for the rectangular coordinate axes. Here, then, is a case

specially adapted to the isotropy of the quaternion system , d

and Hamilton easily saw that the expression in j ath could be, like ia +jy +kz, effectively expressed by a single letter. He chose for this purpose y. And we now see that the square of vy is the negative of Laplace's operator ; while v itself, when applied to any numerical quantity conceived as having a definite value at each point of space, gives the direction and the rate of most rapid change of that quantity. Thus, applied to a potential, it gives the direc- tion and magnitude of the force; to a distribution of

We know that this is an mvariant ;

QUA—QUA

temperature in a conducting solid, it gives (when mul- tiplied by the conductivity) the flux of heat, &e. No better testimony to the value of the quaternion method could be desired than the constant use made of its notation by mathematicians like Clifford (in his Kinematic) and by physicists like Clerk-Maxwell (in his Electricity and Mag- netism). Neither of these men professed to employ the calculus itself, but they recognized fully the extraordinary clearness of insight which is gained even by merely trans- lating the unwieldy Cartesian expressions met with in hydrokinetics and in electrodynamics into the pregnant language of quaternions.

Works on the Subject.—Of course the great works on this sub- ject are the two immense treatises by Hamilton himself. Of these the second (Elements of Quaternions, London, 1866) was posthumous—incomplete in one short part of the original plan only, but that a most important part, the theory and applications of vy. These two works, along with Hamilton's other papers on quaternions (in the Dublin Proceedings and Transactions, the Philo- sophical Magazine, &c.), are storehouses of information, of which but a small portion has yet been extracted. A German translation of Hamilton's Elements has recently been published by Glan.

Other works on the subject, in order of date, are Allegret, Essai sur le Caleul des Quaternions (Paris, 1862); Tait, dn Elementary Treatise on Quaternions. (Oxford 1867, 2d ed. 1873; German translation by v. Scherff,

1880, and French by Plarr, 1882-84); Kelland and Tait, Zntroduction to Quaternions (London, 1878, 2d ed. 1882); Hoiiel, Hléments de la Théorie des Quaternions (Paris, 1874); Unverzagt, Theorie der Quaternionen (Wiesbaden, 1876); Laisant, Introduction & la Méthode des Quaternions (Paris, 1881) ; Graefe, Vorlesungen tiber die Theorie der Quaternionen (Leipsic,

1884).

An excellent article on the " Principles" of the science, by Dillner, will be found in the Mathematische Annalen, vol. xi., 1877. And a very valuable article on the general question, Linear Associated Algebra, by the late Prof. Peirce, was unfortunately lithographed for private circulation only. Sylvester and others have recently pub- lished extensive contributions to the subject, including quaternions under the general class matrix, and have developed niuch farther than Hamilton lived to do the solution of equations in quaternions, Several of the works named above are little more than compilations, and some of the French ones are painfully disfigured by an attempt to introduce an improvement of Hamilton's notation ; but the mere fact that so many have alrcady appeared shows the sure progress which the method is now making. (PiGe DD)

QUATREMERE, Errenne Marc (1782-1857), one of the most learned of modern Orientalists, came of an eminent family of Parisian merchants. His father was a victim of the Revolution, his mother a pious woman devoted to works of charity and venerated after her death almost as a saint. The son retained much of what was best in the old spirit of the Parisian bowrgeoisie —its industry, sobriety, and independence of character, along with a certain narrowness of view. He was sincerely religious, with strong Jansenist and Gallican tendencies, a touch of rationalism, and a great dislike of modern growths of Catholicism. His whole life was spent alone among his books, and his works always display the most extensive and accurate erudition—in which indeed, and not in criticism or original ideas, his strength lay. Employed in 1807 in the manuscript department of the imperial library, he passed to the chair of Greek in Rouen in 1809, entered the academy of inscriptions in 1815, taught Hebrew and Aramaic in the Collége de France

from 1819, and finally in 1827 became professor of Persian in the School of Living Oriental Languages.

Quatremére's first work was Recherches sur la langue et la littera- ture de v Egypte (1808), showing that the language of ancicnt Egypt must be sought in Coptic. His Mlém. sur les Nabatéens (1835) has been mentioned under NapaTmAns, and his translation of Maxnizt's history of the Mameluke sultans in the article on that author. The valuable notes to the latter book show his erudition at the best. He published also among other works a translation of Rashid al-Din's Hist. des Mongols de la Perse (1836); Mém. géog- et hist, sur U Egypte (1810); the text of Ibn Khaldtin's Prolegomena ; and a vast number of useful memoirs in the Jour. As. His numerous reviews in the Jour. des Savants should also be men- tioucd. Quatremére made great lexicographic collections in Ort ental languages, fragments of which appear in the notes to his

Plate II.

Moun- tains.

Rivers,

QU E—

various works. His MS. material for Syriac has been utilized in Payne Smith's Thesaurus ; of the slips he collected for a projected Arabic, Persian, and Turkish lexicon some account is given in the preface to Dozy, Supp. aux Diett. Arabes. They are now in the Munich library. :

QUEBEC, a province of Canada in British North America, lying between 52° 30' and 45° N. lat., and be- tween 57° 7' and 79° 33' 20" W. long., and bounded on the N. by Labrador and Hudson's Bay, on the E. by Labrador and the Gulf of St Lawrence, on the S. by the Bay of Chaleurs, New Brunswick, and the States of Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, and New York, and on the S.W. and W. by the river Ottawa and the province of Ontario. Its length, from Lake Temiscamingue to Anse au Sablon in the Straits of Belle Isle, is nearly 1000 miles on a due east and west course, and from Lake Temiscamingue to Cape Gaspé it is 700 miles; its breadth is 300

miles, and the area 188,694 square miles (120,764,651 acres). The sur- face of the country is exceedingly varied and picturesque, embracing several ridges of mountains and lofty hills, diversified by numerous rivers, lakes, and forests. There are many islands of great fertility and beauty, cascades and falls of considerable height, and extensive tracts of cultivable land, rendering the scenery everywhere bold and striking. Mountain ranges extend from south-west to north-east and run parallel to each other. The Notre Dame or Green Mountains, which are a continuation of the Appalachian range, extend along nearly the whole of the south side of the St Lawrence, terminating at the gulf of the same name, between the Bay of Chaleurs and Gaspé Point, where they form an elevated table-land 1500 feet high. Their chief summits are Mount Logan and Mount Murray, very nearly 4000 feet high. In the eastern townships the mountains of this range are capable of cultivation. The Laurentian range(called by Garneau the Laurentides) skirts the northern bank of the St Lawrence, forming undulat- ing ridges of 1000 feet in elevation, and extending from Labrador to the vicinity of Quebec, where it leaves the river. Keeping nearly parallel with it until within 30 miles west of Montreal, it rounds the Ottawa for 100 miles, crosses it, and curves in the direction of Kingston, From this point the range extends north- westward to the shores of Lakes Huron and Superior. The Mealy Mountains, stretching from 75° W. lat. to Sandwich Bay, are always covered with snow, and are about 1500 feet high. There are many rocky masses connected with the mountain chains lining the St Lawrence which form precipitous cliffs, often rising to a considerable height. Some of the hills of the Laurentian range are 1300 feet high, and below the city of Quebec their altitude is 3000 feet. They enclose numberless small lakes, many of which are still unexplored.

The whole country is exceptionally well watered, and abounds in numerous large rivers, bays, and lakes. The principal river is the Sr Lawrence (q.v.), which flows through the entire length of the province. A short dis- tance above Montreal it receives from the north-west the Ottawa, an interesting and beautiful stream over 600 miles in length, with its tributaries the Gatineau, the Liévre, and the Rouge. The St Lawrence is navigable for ships of the line as far as Quebec, and for steamships of over 9000 tons to Montreal. Between Montreal and Lake Ontario the navigation is interrupted

by rapids, the most important of which are the Cedar and Lachine Rapids, the latter about 9 miles above Montreal. The total elevation

between tide water and Lake Ontario is about 230 feet.

This is overcome by eight canals, varying from ? mile to 114 miles in length, in the aggregate only 41 miles of canals, with locks 200 feet long between the gates, and 45 feet wide. The St Maurice, rising in Lake Oskelaneo near the Hudson's Bay Territory, and flowing into the St

pretty falls and rapids.

QUE 165

Lawrence at Three Rivers, is over 400 miles long. It has many tributaries, and drains an area of 21,000 square miles. Twenty-four miles above Three Rivers is the fall of Shawenegan, 150 feet high. The Batiscan river enters the St Lawrence at Batiscan. Jacques Cartier, Ste Anne, and Montmorency are all on the northern side of the St Lawrence. The Montmorency is famous for its falls— situated about 8 miles from Quebec city, 250 feet high —and the natural steps on its rocky bank, 14 miles above the cataract. Near the falls is Haldimand House, once the residence of the duke of Kent, father of Queen Victoria. The Saguenay, sometimes called the River of Death, is one of the most remarkable bodies of water in the world.} It rises in Lake St John, and discharges into the St Law- rence at Tadousac, after a course of 100 miles. At its mouth the Saguenay is 2} miles wide, and the depth ex- ceeds 100 fathoms. The depth in other parts varies from 100 to 1000 feet. Inthe upper part of the river are many The Saguenay is navigable for large vessels as far as Chicoutimi, 98 miles from the mouth of the river. Fifteen miles south of Chicoutimi there re- cedes from the Saguenay Ha Ha Bay, at the head of which is the village of St Alphonse. On the south side of the St Lawrence is the Richelieu river, which drains Lake Cham- plain, and enters Lake St Peter at Sorel, and flows in a northerly direction for 75 miles. Champlain sailed up this river in 1609. Other important streams are the St Francis, rising in Lake Memphremagog ; the Chaudiére, the outlet of Lake Megantic, with its beautiful falls, 125 feet high, and situated 10 miles above Quebec; the Chateau- guay, Yamaska, Etchemin, Loup, Assumption, Becancour, and North. All these rivers are navigable, and contain fish.

Besides the rapids mentioned, there are situated a short distance above Rigaud on the Ottawa the Carillon Falls, a series 12 miles in length. Near Ottawa city are the Chaudiére Falls, or " boiling pot," less than 40 feet in height, and extending over 6 miles. Les Chats, a series of rapids 30 miles further up the Ottawa, are striking and grand. At Calumet there is another rapid. The Falls of Ste Anne are on the north shore of the St Lawrence, 22 miles below Quebec ; the Falls of St Fereol, the Long Sault, Cedars, and Lachine Rapids by no means complete the list.

The principal lakes are Lake St John, which possesses Lakes.

an area of 360 square miles, Lake Temiscamingue, 126 miles, St Peter, Metapedia, Kempt, Megantic, Memphrema- gog, Pipmuakan, the northern part of Lake Champlain, Manouan, Grand Wayagamack, Asturagamicook, Piscaton- que, Kakebonga, Mijizowaja, Keepawa, Papimonagace, Edward, Matawin, St Louis, Massawipi, Pamouscachiou, Graves, Grand, St Francis, and hundreds of others of lesser note, and all stocked with fish. The chief bays along thie coasts are Chaleurs (in part), with its bold and precipitous cliffs, Malbaie, Mille Vaches, Ha Ha, &c. Quebec's prin- cipal islands are Anticosti, sterile and almost uninhabited, Bonaventure, an important fishing station to the east of Gaspé, and the Magdalen Islands, situated in the Gulf of St Lawrence, about 50 miles north of Prince Edward Island. This group is inhabited by about 3200 persons, mostly French fishermen. Other islands are the island of Montreal, St Helen's, Jesus, the island of Orleans, 22 miles long, below Quebec, Grosse Isle, Isle aux Coudres, Hare, Bic Island,—all in the St Lawrence ; and the islands of Calumet and Allumette in the Ottawa river.

1 Bayard Taylor says it is "not properly a river. It is a tremen- dous chasm, like that of the Jordan Valley and the Dead Sea, cleft for 60 miles through the heart of a mountainous wilderness. Hvery- thing is hard, naked, stern, silent. Dark grey cliffs of granite gneiss rise from the pitch-black water; firs of gloomy-green are rooted in their crevices and fringe their suminits; loftier ranges of a dull! indigo hue show themselves in the background; and over all bends a pale, cold, northern sky."

Geology and minerals.

Beginning with the oldest rocks, the more northern part of the province of Quebec is based on the Laurentian system of Sir William Logan. This includes both the Laurentian proper and an overlying formation largely com- posed of Labrador and anorthite felspars, to which Sir William Logan gave the name Upper Laurentian, though it is now more usually known by the name Norian, applied to similar rocks in Scandinavia. This Upper Laurentian formation occupies but limited areas, one of which is near Lake St John, and another to the east of St Jerome, not far from Montreal. The Lower Laurentian of Logan, on the other hand, including the Ottawa or Trembling Mountain group and the Grenville series, extends from the Straits of Belle Isle to the Ottawa river in a continuous belt. It consists largely of gneiss and crystalline schists, and holds thick beds of limestone and beds of iron ore and veins of apatite. It is the chief seat of the iron and phosphate mining industries, and contains also the principal deposits of graphite or plumbago. It is on this formation that the remarkable forms, discovered by Dr Dawson (now Sir William), known as Hozoon canadense, and supposed to be the earliest form of animal life, occur.

The Laurentian formation is succeeded in the western part of the province by the Potsdam sandstone, a probable equivalent in age of the Upper Cambrian of Britain. On this rests a dolomitic limestone—the Calciferous formation, —and on this the great and richly fossiliferous limestones of the Lower Silurian (Ordovician) age known as the Chazy and Trenton groups. These limestones afford the best building-stone of the province, while the Potsdam sand- stone also affords a good stone of construction. Above the Trenton is the Utica shale, a dark-coloured argilla- ceous deposit, rich in graptolites and trilobites, and on this is the Hudson River group, consisting largely of sandstones and calcareous beds.

To the south-west of these rocks lie Upper Silurian and Devonian beds, the latter holding fossil plants and fishes, and at the extreme south-eastern part of the province, on the Bay of Chaleurs, is the outlier of the Lower Carboni- ferous area of New Brunswick, It is not likely that any true coal occurs in the province, though veins of hardened bitumen are found locally in the beds next to be noticed.

From Quebec eastward along the St Lawrence occurs a great series of argillaceous and arenaceous beds, the equivalents of the Upper Cambrian and Lower Silurian of the interior districts, but deposited under different con- ditions, and abounding in some peculiar forms of trilobites and graptolites, In their extension to the southward they pass into the United States. Near the boundary they begin to be associated with various crystalline rocks. These were regarded by Sir William Logan as altered Silurian beds of the Quebec group; but later observers (MacFarlane, Selwyn, and Hunt) have maintained that they are, in part at least, of greater age. They contain several important economic minerals—gold, copper, and iron ores, chrysolite used as asbestos, chromic iron, and serpentine ; marble and roofing slates are found in asso- ciated beds believed to be of Silurian age.

A large part of the country, more especially on the lower levels, is covered with Pleistocene deposits of the so- called Glacial age. The lower part of these beds consists of tile or boulder-clay with local and Laurentian boulders, and in some places a few marine shells of northern species. On this rests a finer blue clay, in some places rich in fossil shells, and known as the Leda clay. It affords a good material for the manufacture of bricks and tiles. Above the Leda clay are sands and gravels, often with travelled boulders, and named the Saxicava sand, from a shell found very abundantly in some portions of their lower part. These superficial deposits appear to imply submergence

and driftage of thick ice-fields with local glaciers descend- ing from the mountains. The prevalent directions of glacial striations is north-east and south-west or parallel to the course of the St Lawrence valley.

In certain alluvial deposits in the vicinity of the St Maurice river there occur workable deposits of bog iron ore, which have been worked for many years.

The climate of Quebec is variable. is generally steady, and the atmosphere is clear and bracing, The thermometer often registers 20°. below zero. Snow lies on the ground from the end of November until the middle of April,

affording good sleighing for five months of the year. The inhabitants enjoy with zest and spirit all the out-door sports common to the country, such as skating, curling, tobogganing, snow-shoeing, coasting, and sliding. In Montreal winter carnivals are held which attract from all parts of Canada and the United States thousands of spec- tators. Snow falls to a very great depth, and though the winds are often sharp they are not often raw or damp, nor is there any fog. The summer is warm and pleasant, and the extreme heat is indicated at 90°. The finest season of the year is the autumn, which lasts about six or eight weeks.

Vegetation develops rapidly in Quebec.

being rich and loamy, and well suited for the growth of cereals, hay, and fruit crops, all of which ripen perfectly, Wheat, barley, oats, rye, flax, pulse, buckwheat, maize, potatoes, turnips, carrots, beets, parsnips, celery, and the various roots thrive well. The principal fruits are plums, apples, melons, grapes, strawberries, raspberries, blueberries, gooseberries, cranberries, currants, and cherries. Hay has always been considered a leading crop, and much of it is exported to the United States, where it finds a ready market. Farming is carried on extensively in the eastern townships, and in all parts of the country agriculture is prosecuted with more or less activity.

The amount of land under crops in 1881 was 4,147,984 acres, and in pasture, 2,207,422 acres. The crops raised were—spring wheat, 1,999,815 bushels; winter wheat, 19,189; barlcy, 1,751,539 ; oats, 19,990,205; rye, 430,242; pease and beans, 4,170,456; buck- wheat, 2,041,670; maize, 888,169; potatoes, 14,878,287 ; turnips, 1,572,476 ; other roots, 2,050,904 bushels; hay, 1,614,906 tons; grass and clover seeds, 119,306 bushels. The number of horses in 1881 was 273,852; of working oxen, 49,287; of milch cows, 490,977 ; of other cattle, 490,119; of sheep, 889,833; of swine, 329,199. In 1881 2,730,546 tb of wool and 559,024 tb of honcy were produced.

Dense forests cover enormous tracts of territory, and afford a Forests.

principal means of revenue to the province, as well as a source of industry for the people. The chief trees are white and red pine, spruce, ash, elm, beech, birch, maple, butternut, black walnut, fir, poplar, cedar, oak, cherry,

hickory, basswood, &c. Upwards of fourteen hundred varieties of plants may be found, of which two hundred possess medicinal virtues. Lumbering is extensively carried on, and large quantities of dressed lumber and square timber are annually shipped to England.

The total value of the forest products exported in 1882-83 was Exports $11,050,002 ; of the fisheries, $719,799 ; of the mines, $516,837 ; of and im animals and their produce, $11,714,674 ; of agricultural products, ports.

$7,795,427 ; of manufactures, $1,437,254. The grand total value of the exports was $41,591,939, whereof produce of the province, $33,339,549. Of late years an active trade has sprung up in the exportation of beef and cattle to England. The imports in the same year amounted to $42,166,729 dutiable goods, and $18, 743, 142 free goods; total $55,909,871.

Shipbuilding, once a leading industry of the province, has Indus- fallen off considerably, steamships and iron vessels having supcr- tries.

seded wooden ships in the carrying trade. The number of vesscls built in Quebce during 1883 was 42, tonnage 6594. On the 31st of December 1883, the vessels registered in the province, and remaining on the registry books of the several ports, were 1738, tonnage 216,577. There were engaged in the coasting trade, including steamers and sailing vessels, 6948 craft, representing @ tonnage of 1,648,550. The number of saw and grist mills in the province in 1881 was 1729, employing 12,461 hands. There were also 419 tanneries, employing 2968 hands. Othcr industries arc shingle-making, manufactures of wool and cloth, cheese and butter making, iron-working, sash, door, and blind factories, sugar-

In winter the cold Climate.

Much of the Agricul- country is well adapted for agricultural purposes, the soil ture.

|

|

Fish- eries.

Mineral “pro- 7 duce.

Com- munica- tion,

‘Popula- ‘lon,

-dminis. ‘ation,

QUEBEC

refining, boat-building, brewing and distilling, and the manufac- ture of edge tools, india-rubber goods, and boots and shoes. In 1871 the amount invested in industries in the province was $28,071,868 ; in 1881 it reached $59,216,992, when 85,673 men, women, and children were employed in the various industries,

$18,333,162 were paid out in wagcs, raw material to the value of

$62,563,967 was consumed, and the value of the articles produced was $104,662, 258.

Quebec derives grcat importance from its fisheries, which are ex- tensive and valuable, particularly those of the St Lawrence, which consist principally of cod, haddock, holibut, salmon, mackerel, shad, white fish, herrings, lobsters, and seals. In the lakes and rivers there are salmon, trout, and bass, and the sporting streams are among the best in the world. The right of fishing in inland waters belongs to the owners of the lands in front of or through which such waters flow. The provincial government holds a large number of uugranted lands bordering on rivers and lakes, and derives an income from the leasing of fishing privileges. A fish- breeding establishment is maintained by the Dominion Govern- ment at Tadousac, from which there are encouraging results. In 1881 there were 110 vesscls and 801 men and 4779 boats and 6929 men engaged in the fisheries. The product netted in 1882 was $1,976,515 ; in 1883 it was $2,138,997.

Game is plentiful in Quebec (wild duck, teal, wild geese, part- tridges, woodcocks, snipe, pigeons, plover, &c.), About 295 dif- ferent birds exist. Of wild animals the principal are bears, wolves, cariboo, deer, lynxes, foxes, musk rats, minks, martens, squirrels, beavers, and hares.

Gold, iron, and copper ores abound in notable quantities. The former is found chiefly on the banks of the Chaudiére in the county of Beauce. In 1881 the quantity produced was 3411 oz.; in 1883 the product was 7902 oz., realizing $140,262. Copper is obtained in the eastern townships, and iron of superior quality abounds

almost everywhere throughout the province. In 1881 the yield of

this ore was 11,326 tons; of iron, 92,001 ; pyrites, 2300; peat, 14,597 ; plumbago, 270 ; mica, 4000 tons ; building stone for dress- ing, 1,674,362 cubic feet ; roofing slate, 4593 squares. In some sections smal] quantities of lead are found.

Good waggon roads intersect the province wherever there is a settlement. In 1883 the amount expended on colonization roads by the local government was $71,392. Telegraphic lines are established throughout the province, each line of railway, besides the great roads, having special wires. The postal facilities are excellent, and regular mails penetrate every part. Railway com- munication is ample and extensive, the chief lines being the Grand Trunk, the Canadian Pacific, and the Intercolonial. In 1884 Quebec had 1942 miles of railways in operation, while other lines are under construction and projected. The canal system is very complete, and commerce is greatly helped by the several water- Ways in operation. These are the Lachine Canal extending from Montreal to Lake St Louis ; the Beauharnois Canal, uniting Lakes St Francis and St Louis ; the Chambly Canal uniting Lake Cham- a with the Richelieu river; and the Carillon and Grenville

anal.

The province is divided into sixty-three counties, with a total area of 120,764,651 acres. Up to the 30th of June 1883 the total superficies of disposable lands surveyed and subdivided into farm lots was 6,539,160

acres, The population was 1,191,516 in 1871; in 1881 it was 1,359,027 (678,175 males and 680,852 females), The prevailing religion is that of the Roman Catholic Church, of which there are seven dioceses, viz., the archdiocese of Quebec, and the dioceses of Montreal, Three Rivers, St Hyacinthe, Sherbrooke, Rimouski, and Chicoutimi. The Protestant dioceses are two in number—Quebec and Montreal. According to the census of 1881 the religious denominations in the province were as follows :—

Church of Rome…....cssccesses MTOM SH PAV ONtIOtGl… nss-.scsceesasscceeees 4,210 Church Cig AgIANG..,.....10600, 68,797 | Other denominations…..... 5,647 BEROYCCTIANIB:.<.+s0c-cecsansesnsees 50,287 | Of MOTELIBION.....0000recee0ee 432 Methodists… 39,220 | No creed stated …....c.cseoseceess 2,609 aptists… SIBDO MMC WStscsscestssrseecrsesscrescersessecs 989 Congregationalist 5,244 nee

1,359,027

The greater portion of the population is composed of French- Speaking people, natives of the soil. There are also a good many Scotch, English, and Irish, and their descendants. The Indians, mostly of the Algonquin, Iroquois, Huron, Abenakis, and Micmac tribes, number 7515, scattered in various parts of the province on Teservations which they cultivate with more or less assiduity. They are peaceably disposed, and live in harmony.

The affairs of the province are administered by a lieutenant- §overnor and an executive council composed of six members with portfolios, assisted by a legislative assembly of sixty-five members, and a legislative council of twenty-four councillors. The latter hold their appointments for life, and the former are elected by the people every five years. The lieutenant-governor is appointed by the Severnor-general in council. Quebec returns to the Dominion House of Commons sixty-five representatives, and twenty-four appointees to the Dominion Senate.

167

The public revenue in 1883 amounted to $4,655,757, and the Finance, expenditure was $3,962,015. The principal source of revenue is the annual

subsidy granted to the province, under the terms of the B,N.A. Act of 1867, by the Dominion Government. This subsidy in 1883 amounted to $959,252, and interest on trust funds in the hands of the Dominion Government, $55,459. The remainder of the revenue is derived from the crown domain and timber limits, licences, stamps on law and registration documents, and other mis- cellaneous receipts. The administration of justice cost in 1883 the sum of $372,400.

The judiciary consists of a Court of Queen's Bench, with a chief justice and five assistants ; a superior court, with a chicf justice and twenty-eight assistants ; a court of review, with three judges forming a quorum ; a court of vice-admiralty ; courts of quarter sessions ; and courts for the summary trial of petty causes. The provincial legislature meets at Quebec.

The militia (military districts Nos. 5, 6, and 7, operating under Militia. the Canada Militia Act of 1883) consists of an active force by arms of the following :—cavalry, officers and men, 448; field artillery, 321 ; garrison artillery, 598 ; engineers, 87 ; infantry, 9885 ; rifles, 924 ; total, 12,258. The number of active militia men authorized for annual drill during 1888 was 7965. Schools of cavalry and gunnery, situated at Quebec, and one of infantry at St J olin's, have been established for the purpose of training officers and non-com- missioned officers of the militia.

Education in Quebec is under the control of a superintendent Eduea- and a council of public instruction appointed by the Government. tion. The council is divided into two sections, called Roman Catholic and Protestant committees, who act independently, and, through the superintendent, control the Roman Catholic and Protestant institu- tions respectively. The province is divided into school municipali- ties containing from one to twenty-five schools each, under five commissioners elected by the people. As the school system includes religious instruction, the religious minority (Catholic or Protestant) in any municipality may separate from the majority, and organize schools of their own, under three trustees, and receive their proper share of the Government grant. Every citizen pays a tax which is levied on his property for the support of primary schools. In Montreal, Quebec, and Sherbrooke the Roman Catholics and Pro- testants are entirely separate for educational purposes. Thirty-six inspectors visit

the schools twice a year, and report to the Govern- ment, by whom they are appointed and paid. In 1883 there were in the province 1071 municipalities, including 4404 elementary schools, 383 model schools, 246 academies, 31 colleges, 18 special schools, 3 normal schools, and 3 universities, making a total of 5038 institutions, attended by 245,225 pupils, under 6871 teachers. In support of these schools, the local contributions amounted to $2,809,739, and the Government grant to $352,677. The two Pro- testant universities are M'Gill University at Montreal, founded in 1821, and Bishops College at Lennoxville, founded in 1843. The Roman Catholic university (Laval) was founded by the Quebec seminary in 1852. It has a succursale at, Montreal.

The public charitable institutions receiving aid from the Govern- Charities. ment are Beauport, St Ferdinand de Halifax, and St Jean de Dieu lunatic asylums. Grants are annually made to about ninety other institutions, including industrial schools and reformatories, the total amount reaching in 1883 $301,121.

The capital is QuEBEC (q.v.). The largest and most important Towns. city is MONTREAL (g.v.). Other chief towns are Three Rivers, population 8670, so-called from the St Maurice, which here joins the St Lawrence by three mouths (it is one of the oldest cities, and the seat of a large lumber and iron trade); St Hyacinthe, 5321; Levis, 7597, where the quarantine for cattle is situated ; Sorel, 5791; St John's, 4814; St Francois, Beauce, 4181; Sher- brooke, 7227; Valley Field, 3906; Malbaie, 3014; Baie St Paul, 3794 ; St Henri, 6415; Hull, 6890; St Jean Baptiste, 5874. ;

The quarantine station is at Grosse Isle, an island in the river St Lawrence, 314 miles below Quebec. It is 24 miles long by 1 mile in width.

History. —Quebec was first visited by the French, under Jacques Cartier, in 1535, and a second time in 15386, though it is said that Sebastian Cabot discovered the country in 1497. The regular settlement of the province, however, was not made until 1608, when Samuel de Champlain landed at the site now occupied by Quebec city. Here he established military and trading posts, and it was not long before the new possession became the seat of the Récollet and Jesuit missions, which were zealously carried on under the most trying circumstances for nearly a century and a half, The early settlers endured countless hardships from the incursions of the

Indians, and the frequent wars in which they were forced to engage with the English and Dutch. In 1759 the marquis of Montcalm was defeated at Quebec by an English army under General Wolfe. A year later the French surrendered all their important ports, and the colony passed under English rule. In 1763 the treaty of Paris was signed, by the terms of which, and the conditions laid down a few years later in the memorable Quebec Act of 1774, the French were guaranteed by England their

laws, language, and religion. In 1791 the province was divided into Upper and Lower Canada, but in 1841, after a series of internal dissensions, ineluding the rebellion of 1837, and several politieal quarrels, the country was again united. In 1867 the provinees of old Canada, under the names of Ontario and Quebee, were erected with New Brunswick and Nova Seotia into the Dominion of Canada. (G. ST.) QUEBEC, the ancient capital of Canada, and present capital of the province of Quebec, is situated on the north- west bank of the river St Lawrence at its junction with the St Charles, about 300 miles from the Gulf of St Lawrence and 180 miles below Montreal, in 46° 49’ 6” N. lat. and 71° 13’ 45” W. long. It is the most picturesque and most strongly fortified city on the continent. Quebec is built on the northern extremity of an elevated table-land which forms the left bank of the St Lawrence for a distance of 8 miles. The highest part of the headland is Cape Diamond, 333 feet above the level of the water, and crowned by the citadel, which covers an area of forty acres, and presents a bold and precipitous front on the south-east side, while towards the north and west the declivity is more sloping and gradual. The harbour of Quebec is spacious and capable of accommodating ships of the largest tonnage, and its docks and tidal basin, when completed, will rank among the most perfect works of the kind in the world. They are constructed of lime- stone and iron, and, including the graving dock on the Levis side of the river, will cost very nearly three millions of dollars. The harbour is protected towards the north-east by the island of Orleans, on either side of which there is an approach. The spring tides rise and fall about 18 feet. Quebec is divided into upper and lower town,— access to the former being obtained by a steep and winding street, several flights of narrow steps, and an elevator. In the lower town are situated the principal banks, merchants’ offices, and wholesale

and retail storos. The streets, with one or two exceptions, are narrow and irregular. In the upper town, where the streets-are wider and well-paved, are the better class of dwelling houses, the public buildings, most of the churches, the public walks and gardens, retail stores and small shops. To the west are the suburbs of St John, St Louis, and St Roche. The latter occupies the lower plain, and is rapidly becoming a place of commercial importance. The other two suburbs are on the same level with the upper town. South-west of St John stretch the historic Plains of Abraham. On this battle-ground a column 40 feet high has been erected to mark the spot where General Wolfe in 1759 died victorious. In the governor's garden, which overlooks the St Lawrence, is a stately monument 65 feet in height, which is dedicated to the memory of Wolfe and Montcalm. An iron pillar surmounted by a bronze statue, the gift of Prince Napoleon Bonaparte, stands on St Foye road, and commemorates the achievements of the British and French troops in 1760. Four martello towers occupy commanding positions. A point of interest in the upper town is Dufferin Terrace, a magnificent promenade 1400 feet long and 200 feet above the level of the river. Part of this terrace occupies the site of the old Chateau St Louis, which was destroyed by fire in 1834. The view from the platform is very striking and beautiful. The Grand Battery also affords a fine prospect. Quebec was once the walled city of the north, but several of its ancient fortifications have been dismantled, and the old gates

taken down. There are three gates now, instead of five as in former years, viz., St Louis, Kent, and St John's, each of — which is very handsome and massive. Among the principal edifices are the parliamentary and departmental buildings, —a stately pile situated on Grande Allée,—the new court house now building, the post office, custom-house, city hall, masonic hall, the Basilica, or Roman Catholic cathedral (an. irregular cut-stone building 216 feet long by 180 feet wide, and containing many fine oil paintings), the archi- episcopal palace, the Anglican cathedral (a plain structure in the Roman style), the skating rink, and the hall of the Young Men's Christian Association ; four large markets — supply the people with

meat and country produce. There are eight Roman Catholic churches, five Church of England, two Presbyterian, one Methodist, one Baptist, one Lutheran, one Congregational, one Scandinavian, one French Pro- testant, and a Jewish synagogue, which is situated in the

Plan of Quebec.

Masonic Hall. Laval University, which derives ifs name from the first bishop of Quebec, who founded in 1663 the seminary for the training of priests, is the principal educational establishment of the Roman Catholics. It was instituted in 1852 by a royal charter from Queen Victoria and a charter from Pope Pius IX. The building is large and spacious, and the university, which is held in high esteem, is well equipped with apparatus, a library of over 85,000 volumes, a museum, geological specimens, and a picture gallery, Laval has a strong staff of professors, lay and clerical, and the faculties are theology, law, medicine, and arts. In connexion with this institution are the grand seminary founded in 1663, where theology is taught, and the minor seminary for literature and philosophy. Laval Normal and Model School, the Ursuline Convent,—a very large establishment for the education of young ladies, founded in 1641,—the Convent of the Good Shepherd, and several nunneries complete the list of

Ov k-@ b EB

Roman Catholic educational institutions. Morrin College (Presbyterian) was founded by Dr Morrin, and is affiliated with M'Gill University. Other Protestant schools are the boys' high school, the girls' high school, a number of academies, and public and private schools, all in a state of efficiency. In 1881 the number of children attending the various schools in Quebec was 9889, of whom half were girls. There is no free public library in the city, but the Literary and Historical Society,—the oldest chartered institution of the kind in Canada, founded by Lord Dalhousie in 1824,—the Canadian Institute, the Geo- graphical Society, the Young Men's Christian Association, the Advocates' Library, and the Parliamentary Library have valuable collections of books. The principal benevolent institutions are the marine hospital, the Hétel Dieu, founded in 1639 by the duchess of Aiguillon, the general hospital (1693), the Finlay Asylum, the Jeffrey Hale Hospital, the Church of England Female Orphans' Asylum, the Ladies'

Protestant Home, St Bridget's Asylum, Grey Nunnery, and the lunatic asylum at Beauport. Nine daily newspapers are published at Quebec, six of which are in the French language. A good supply of water is afforded from Lake St Charles, but the city has suffered so severely from devastating fires in the past that in 1883 the common council ordered an additional pipe to be laid at a cost of half a million of dollars. Quebec is well lighted with gas and the electric light. Connexion is had with all parts of Canada and the United States by several railway lines, and the city is at the head of ocean steam- ship navigation to Europe. There are two lines of street cars. The head offices of three banks are situated in Quebec, viz., the Quebec Bank, the Union Bank of Lower Canada, and La Banque Nationale. Besides these there are two savings banks, the Post Office Savings Bank, and the agencies of the Bank of Montreal, the Bank of British North America, and the Merchants' Bank. The population of the city in 1871 was 59,699 ; in 1881, 62,446 (28,923 males and 33,523 females),—6200 being Protestants.

Shipbuilding was formerly one of the chief industries of Quebec, but of late years very few wooden ships have been built. In 1883 the number was twenty-five, representing a total tonnage of 4596 tons. Manufacturing is carried on to some extent, the principal manufactures being iron castings, machinery, cutlery, nails, leather, Musical instruments, boots and shoes, paper, india-rubber goods, ropes, tobacco, steel, &c.

Quebec's staple export is timber, the greater portion of the ship- ments reaching town from the Ottawa and St Maurice districts. The rafts floating down the river are collected in the coves, and fastened by booms are moored along the banks. These coves extend along the river for upwards of 6 miles above the city. On the right bank of the stream, not far from Quebec, are extensive sawmills. The port is one of the leading emporiums of the export trade between Canada and Great Britain. The number, tonnage, and crews of the vessels entered and cleared at Quebec for several years is as follows :—

Entered.

Cleared.

No. Tons. Crews. No. Tons, Crews. 1880 657 675,634 A221 611 572,562 14,587

1881 783 802,186 19,888 851 847,615 20,225 1882 642 676,327 17,675 680 681,235 17,162 1883 682 737,059 18,687 653 631,213 15,652 1884 693 767,395 19,351 698 686,790 16,408

_ Large quantities of timber—especially white pine (10, 427,000 feet in 1883), oak, and red pine—are exported from Quebec. The total value of exports in 1883 was $9,268,983 ; of imports $4,976,713, and of import duty received $823,213°63. The value of the real estate is set down at $24,000,000.

The city returns three members to the Canadian House of Cominons, and three to the provincial House of Assembly. It is governed by a mayor, eight aldermen, and sixteen councillors, who hold their offices for two years. Quebec is the seat of the Roman Catholic archbishop, and the see of the bishop of the Church of England. _ Quebec was first visited by the French navigator Jacques Cartier in 1535, when it consisted of a sparsely-settled Indian village called

Stadacona. In July 1608 the city was founded by Champlain, who bestowed on it its present name. Its growth was slow, and the humerous wars with the Indians and the English rendered the work of colonization and scttlement precarious and difficult. In 1629 the English captured it, but three years later it was restored to the French. In 1663 the colony was created a royal govern- ment, and Quebec became the capital. In 1690 Sir William Phips with a numerous fleet attempted to reconquer it, but the French governor, Count de Frontenac, destroyed many of his vessels and forced the English to fly. The French held possession until 17 59, when it fell into the hands of the British under Wolfe, and it was finally ceded to Britain by the treaty of Paris in 1763. In 1775 General Montgomery with an American force attacked the city, but he perished before its walls and his troops were dispersed. Since then its capture has not been again attempted. (G. ST.)

QUEDAH or Kepau. See Manay Pxznisuta, vol. RV. p. a22t

QUEDLINBURG, an ancient town of Prussian Saxony, in the district of Magdeburg, is pleasantly situated on the Bode, near the north-west base of the Harz Mountains. It is still partly surrounded by a turreted wall. On the west it is commanded by the old chateau of the imperial abbesses of Quedlinburg, with the interesting abbey church, the body of which was erected in the 11th century. In the crypt, dating from the 10th century, are interred Henry the Fowler and his wife Matilda. The Late Gothic town-house, with additions of the 18th century, contains a good collection of local antiquities. The town also pos- sesses several other churches and numerous schools and charitable foundations. Quedlinburg is famous for its nurseries and market-gardens, and exports vegetable and flower seeds to all parts of Europe and America. It sup- plies most of the seed used for the cultivation of beet- root for sugar in Silesia, Austria, and Poland. It also carries on manufactures of cloth, iron, and chemicals, and a trade in grain and cattle. The poet Klopstock was a native of Quedlinburg. The population in 1880 was 18,437, almost all Protestants.

The town of Quedlinburg, which was founded by Henry the Fowler about the year 930, on the site of the old village of Quit- lingen, became a favourite residence of the Saxon emperors, and was the scene of several diets and assemblies of pas It after- wards joined the Hanseatic League, and attained its greatest pro- sperity in the 13th or 14th century. The convent was established a few years after the town, and was also richly endowed with lands and privileges. The abbesses, who were frequently members of the imperial house, ranked among the independent princes of the German empire and had no ecclesiastical superior except the pope. The town at first strove zealously to maintain its independence against the abbess, and to this end called in the aid of the bishops of Halberstadt. In 1477, however, the abbess Hedwig, aided by her brothers Ernest and Albert of Saxony, forecd the bishops to renounce their claims; and for the next two centuries both town aud abbey remained under the protection of the electors of Saxony. In 1539 the Reformation was embraced, and the nuniery was couverted into a Protestant sisterhood. In 1697 the elector of Saxony sold his rights over Quedlinburg to the elector of Branden- burg, whose troops forthwith entered the town. The abbesses retained their right of private jurisdiction, aud the disputes between them and the Prussian Government were not finally scttled till the secularization of the abbey in

1803. The last two abbesses were tlie Princess Anna Amelia (1755-1787), sister of Frederick the Great, and the Princess Sophia Albertina, daughter of King Adolphus Frederick of Sweden.

QUEEN ANNE'S BOUNTY is the name applied to a perpetual fund of first-fruits and tenths granted by a charter of Queen Anne, and confirmed by statute in 1703 (2 & 3 Anne, c. 11), for the augmentation of the livings of the poorer Anglican clergy. First-fruits (annates) and tenths (decimex) formed originally part of the revenue paid by the clergy to the papal exchequer. The former consist of the first whole year's profit of all spiritual preferments, the latter of one-tenth of their annual profits after the first year. Benefices under the annual value of £50 are now exempt from the tax. The income derived from first-fruits and tenths was annexed to the revenue of the crown in 1535 (26 Hen. VIII. c. 3), and so continued

until 1703. Since that date there has been a large mass of legislation dealing with Queen Anne's Bounty, the effect of which it is impossible to deal with fully in this place. The governors consist of the archbishops and _ bishops, some of the principal officers of the Government, and the chief legal and judicial authorities) The augmentation proceeds on the principle of assisting the smallest benefices first. All the cures not exceeding £10 per annum must have received £200 before the governors can proceed to assist those not exceeding £20 per annum. In order to encourage benefactions, the governors may give £200 to cures not exceeding £45 a year, where any person will give the same or a greater sum. The average income from first-fruits and tenths isa little more than £14,000 a year. In 1883 the trust funds in the hands of the governors amounted to £4,806,717. The grants in 1883 amounted to £15,400, the benefactions to £20,195. The accounts are laid annually before the queen in council and the Houses of Parliament. The duties of the governors are not confined to the augmentation of benefices. They may in addition lend money for the repair and rebuilding of residences and for the execution of works required by the Ecclesiastical Dilapidations Acts, and may receive and apply compensation money in respect of the enfranchise- ment of copyholds on any benefice. The governors are unpaid ;

the treasurer and secretary receives a salary of £1000 a year. He is appointed by patent under the great seal, and holds office during the pleasure of the crown.

QUEEN CHARLOTTE ISLANDS, a group of islands lying off the west coast of British Columbia, to which they belong. They were so called by Captain Dixon, who visited them in the "Queen Charlotte" in 1787, and spent more than a month on their coasts. They are com- posed of two chief islands, Graham Island to the north and Moresby Island to the south, separated by a very narrow channel; but around these, especially in the south, are innumerable smaller islands. The whole group has the form of a wedge with the point towards the south. The extreme length is about 180 miles, and the greatest breadth 60 miles. The total area cannot be determined, as the longitude of the west coast has not yet been definitely ascertained. See vol. iv. Pl. XXXV.

The islands are mountainous, and appear to be a parti- ally submerged continuation of the mountain-chain tra- versing Vancouver's Island, which lies to the south, separ- ated from the group by Queen Charlotte Sound. The mountains are situated more particularly in the southern island, which is little more than a skeleton of mountains washed at their base by the waters of numerous inlets. Many summits here rise above 5000 feet in height. The larger island to the north, which has a length of about 77 miles and a breadth equal to the maximum breadth of the group, is in general lower, though here also there are hills rising to between 2000 and 3000 feet. Both the mountains and lowlands are well wooded, but in general the timber is not found in accessible spots in sufficient quantity to encourage attempts to develop the lumber trade. At present the principal commercial resources of the islands are derived from the fish that frequent these shores. Immense shoals of dog-fish visit the north and north-east, and they are utilized for their oil by a com- pany established on Skidegate Inlet on the east side of Moresby Island. Holibut, herring, salmon, cod, and coal- fish or "skil" (this last also rich in oil and a valuable food-fish) are likewise abundant. The climate is extremely moist, especially on the west side of the watershed.

Geologically the group appears to be composed mainly of Triassic, Cretaceous, and Tertiary strata, with intrusive masses here and there of

granite and other igneous rocks. The Triassic deposits occupy almost the whole of the

‘which he spent some time in foreign travel.

GU H—@ UE

southern part of the group, and it is uncertain whether some Paleozoic rocks may not be exposed at certain points, as they are in corresponding situations on the mainland of British Columbia. The Cretaceous deposits lie uncon- formably on those of Triassic age on both sides of Skide- gate Inlet and Channel (in the south of Graham Island and north-east of Moresby Island), and are interesting geologically from containing a bed of anthracitic coal. These deposits are again unconformably overlaid by those of Tertiary age extending over the greater part of Graham Island ; and the unconformity in this case is accompanied by evidence of great disturbance, indicating that this was the chief period of mountain-making in the group.

The islands are inhabited by an interesting race of Indians called the Haidas, who are chiefly found on the coasts, where they support themselves by fishing, partly also by the cultivation of the potato, which was probably introduced among them by some of the early voyagers. They tattoo their bodies, sometimes paint their faces, and have many singular customs; but their greatest peculi- arity consists in their habit of erecting great numbers of carved posts as ornaments in front of their dwellings. Their number is rapidly decreasing, and in the last official report on the exploration of this group (Victoria, 1884), it is estimated at only eight hundred.

The fullest account of the Queen Charlotte Islands and their inhabitants is to be found in the report of George M. Dawson in the Report of Progress for 1878-79 of the Geological Survey of Canada.

QUEENSBERRY, James Dovcias, sECOND DUKE oF (1662-1711), was the eldest son of William, third earl and first duke, high treasurer of Scotland, and Isabel Douglas, sixth daughter of William, first marquis of Douglas. He was born at Sanquhar Castle 18th Decem- ber 1662, and educated at the university of Glasgow, after He sided with the prince of Orange at the Revolution, and was appointed a privy councillor, and

colonel of the Scotch troop of horse guards. On the death of his father in 1695 he succeeded him as extraordinary lord of session, and was also appointed keeper of the privy seal. In 1702 and 1703 he was appointed by Queen Anne secretary of state, and commissioner to the parliament of Scotland. In the latter year he was deprived of his offices, but he was again restored in 1705, and in the following year was constituted high commissioner on the part of Scotland for carrying out the Treaty of Union between the two king- doms, which, chiefly owing to his influence and skill, was completed in 1707. In recognition of his services he received a pension of £3000 per annum, and on the 26th May 1708 was created a British peer by the title of duke of Dover. On 9th February 1709 he was appointed third secretary of state. He died 6th July 1711.

QUEEN'S COUNTY, an inland county in the province of Leinster, Ireland, is bounded N.W. and N. by King's County, E. by Kildare and a detached portion of King's County, 8. by Carlow and Kilkenny, and W. by Tipperary. Its greatest length from east to west is about 35 miles, and its greatest breadth from north to south about 30 miles. The area is 424,854 acres, or about 663 square miles. The surface is for the most part level or gently undulating, but in the north-west rises into the elevations of the Slieve Bloom Mountains, the highest summit being Ardern, 1733 feet. Like the level country, they belong to the limestone formation, but are wrapped round with folds of Old Red Sandstone. In the central part of the county there is a large extent of bog. The south-east portion is included in the Leinster coal-field. Iron ore, copper, and manganese are found in small quantities. Potter's clay is plentiful; and slate, sandstone, and marble are quarried in some places. Nearly the whole of the

Plate III,

Q U E—

county is drained either by the Barrow, which has its source in the Slieve Bloom Mountains, and forms at various points the boundary with King's County, Kildare, and Carlow, or by the Nore, which enters the county from Tipperary near Borris-in-Ossory, and flows east and then south till it reaches Kilkenny. The lakes are few and small, the largest being Lough Anaghmore on the north- western boundary. The Grand Canal enters the

county at Portarlington, and runs southwards to the Barrow in Kildare, a branch passing westwards 12 miles to Mount- mellick.

Agricultwre.—The climate is dry and salubrious. Originally a great extent of the surface was occupied with bog, but by draining much of it has been converted into good land. For the most part it is very fertile except in the hilly districts towards the north, aud there is some remarkably rich land in the south-east. The total extent under crops in 1884 was 129,617 acres, of which 73,536 acres were under tillage and 56,081 acres under incadow and clover, Of the 42,755 acres under corn crops 639 acres were under wheat, 24,467 acres under oats and 17,639 acres under barley. Of the 30,601 acres under green crops, 15,888 were under potatoes, and 12,077 under turnips. Dairy farming is extensively carried on. The total number of cattle in 18883 was 78,496, of which 20,421 were mileh cows. There were 70,530 shcep, 33,834 pigs, 5433 goats, and 249,619 poultry. Horses and mules numbered 14,494, and asses 5742,

Agriculture forms the chicf occupation, but the manufacture of woollen and cotton goods is carried on to a small extent.

Railways. —The Great Southern and Western Railway crosses the country from north-east to south-west with stations at Portarling- ton, Maryborough, Mountrath, and Ballybrophy. At Portarlington a branch passes westward to Mountmellick ; there is also a branch passing southward from Maryborough, and another passing west- ward from Ballybrophy.

Adminstration.—The county is divided into cleven baronies, and contains 53 parishes and 1156 townlands, Ecclesiastically it is in the dioceses of Leighlin and Ossory, with portions in those of Kil- dare, Killaloe, and Dublin. Judicially itis in the home circuit, Assizes are held at Maryborough, the county town, and quarter sessions at Abbeyleix, Borris-in-Ossory, Carlow-Graigue, Mary- borough, Mountmellick, and Stradbally. There are fifteen petty sessions districts. The poor-law unions of Abbeyleix and Donagh- more are wholly within the county, and portions of those of Athy, Carlow, Mountmellick, and Roscrea. The county is included in the Dublin military district, and there is a barrack station at Maryborough.

Population.—Within the last forty years the population has diminished by more than one-half, Jn 1841 it numbered 153,930, which in 1871 had diminished to 79,765, and in 1881 to omleile The following were the largest towns :—Mountmellick(3126), Mary- borough (2872), Portarlington (partly in King's County) (2357), and Mountrath (1865).

History.—Anciently the territory now included in Queen's County was divided between the districts of Leix, Offaly, Clamnaliere, and Ossory. In the reign of Philip and Mary, it was made shire ground under the name of Queen's County, in honour of the sovercign, the place chosen for the county town being named Maryborough. 'Threc miles south of Stradbally is Dun of Clopook, an ancient dun or fort occupying the whole extent of the hill, and there is another large fort at Lugacurren, Aghaboe, where there are the ruins of the abbey, was formerly the seat of the bishopric of Ossory. There are no remains of the Abbey of Timahoe founded by St Mochua in the 6th century, but in the neighbourhood of the site there is a fine round tower. Among the principal old castles are the fortress of the O'Moores in ruins occupying the precipitous tock of Dunamase, three miles east of Maryborough, Borris-in- Ossory on the Nore, and Lea castle on the Barrow, 2 miles below Portarlington, erected by the F itzgeralds in 1260, burnt by Edward Bruce in 1315, again rebuilt, and in 1650 laid in ruins by the soldiers of Cromwell.

QUEENSLAND, a British colony, the north-eastern portion of Australia, is situated between New South Wales and Torres Strait, and between the Pacific Ocean and the Northern Territory of South Australia. Its southern boundary is about 29° S. lat.; its western is 141° E, long. from 29° to 26° S. lat., and 138° E. thence to the Gulf of Carpentaria; its northern is about 9° °S. including the Torres Straits islands. In extreme length it is 1400 miles; in breadth, 1000. Its area is 669,520 square miles, or about 5} times that of the United Kingdom. The popula- tion is under 300,000.

QU EH Vall

With a seaboard of over 2500 miles, it is well favoured with ports on the Pacific side. Moreton Bay receives the Brisbane river, on whose banks Brisbane, the capital, stands. Maryborough port is on the Mary, which flows into Wide Bay; Bundaberg, on the Burnett ; Gladstone, on Port

Curtis; Rockhampton, up the Fitzroy (Keppel Bay) ; Mackay, on the Pioneer ; Bowen, on Port Denison : Townsville, on Cleveland Bay. Cairns and Port Douglas are near Trinity Bay ; Cardwell is on Rockingham Bay; Cooktown, on the Endeavour; Thursday Island port, near Cape York; and Normanton, near the Gulf of Car- pentaria. The new gulf port is at Point Parker. The quiet Inner Passage, between the shore and the Great Barrier Reef, 1200 miles long, favours the north-eastern Queensland ports. Ipswich, Toowoomba, Oxley, Been- leigh, Maryborough, and Mackay are farming centres ; Warwick, Roma, Clermont, Blackall, Aramac, Hughenden, and Mitchell are pastoral ones. Gympie, Charters Towers, Ravenswood, and Palmerville are gold-niining towns ; while Stanthorpe and Herberton have tin mines. Town- ships are laid out by Government as occasion requires, There are fifteen large districts, viz., Moreton, Darling Downs, Wide Bay, Burnett, Maranoa, Warrego, and South Gregory, southward; Port Curtis, Leichhardt, South Kennedy, Mitchell, and North Gregory, central ; North Kennedy, Burke, and Cook, northward. Cape York Peninsula is the northern limit. A few persons were sent to the Brisbane in 1826; but the Moreton Bay dis- trict of New South Wales was thrown open to coloniza- tion in 1842. Jt was named " Queensland " on its separa- tion from the mother colony in 1859. A natural but unfounded prejudice against its supposed warmer position retarded its progress, or confined its few inhabitants to pastoral pursuits. The discovery of abundant wealth in minerals and sugar-lands, with the growing conviction of its singular salubrity, greatly advanced the immigration prospects of the colony. A broad plateau, of from 2000 to 5000 feet in height, extends from north to south, at from 20 to 100 miles from the coast, forming the Main Range. This region is the seat of mining, and will be of agriculture. The Coast Range is less elevated. A plateau goes westward from the Great Dividing Range, throwing most of its waters northward to the gulf. The Main Range sends numerous but short streams to the Pacific, and a few long ones south-westward, lost in earth or shallow lakes, unless feeding the river Darling. Going northward, the leading rivers, in order, are the Logan, Brisbane, Mary, Burnett, Fitzroy, Burdekin, Herbert, Johnstone, and Endeavour. The Fitzroy receives the Mackenzie and Dawson ; the Burdekin is supplied by the Cape, Belyando, and Suttor. The chief gulf streams are the Mitchell, Flinders, Leichhardt, and Albert. The great dry western plains have the Barcoo, Diamantina, Georgina, Warrego, Maranoa, and Condamine. There are few lakes. A succession of

elevated and nearly treeless downs of remarkable fertility contrasts with the heavily timbered country favoured by the rains. Cape York Peninsula is an – epitome of Queensland. There is good land alternating with bad. The hills are rich in gold, silver, copper, tin, and coal. The forests are valuable, and the scrub is dense. Flats near the mouths of the many streams are admirable for sugar-cane and rice, while rising slopes suit coffee trees. West of the range dividing the gulf waters froin the Pacific is a sandy grassless region where the only vegetation is a poisonous pea. Suddenly the traveller passes from this desert to the glorious downs around Hughenden, a garden-land beside the Flinders. Farther north-west is the charming Leichhardt river district, and the marvellous mineral Cloncurry highland. Southward of 'that again is the country of the Diamantina and

Georgina, with little rain, but having vast tracts of good black soil threaded by slight ridges of barren sandstone. Droughts are there followed by floods from thunder showers. The south-western portion is inferior to all, having heavy sand-rises between the grassy belts. Still the pastoral settlers are taking up areas there. All that dry warm west is remarkably healthy for man and beast. The productive and better-watered part between the Main Range and the Pacific has the principal population.

Climate.—The coast-lands, with an annual rainfall of from 40 to 130 inches, are favoured by the south-east trade-winds and the summer north-west monsoons. Dur- ing 1882 there fell at Johnstone river, 17° 8., nearly 160 inches on one hundred and ninety-seven days. Northern Queensland, up to the ranges, is well watered. Central and southern districts are not so aided by the monsoons. The highlands have on their eastern side from 30 to 70 inches, but on their western only from 15 to 30. The gulf region has from 30 to 60. The southern hills have far less rain than the northern ones. The arid western area depends on occasional thunderstorms, though nature provides a grass that long resists the drought. The low south-west basin, trending to the depressed lake region of South Australia, has repeatedly seasons of intense dryness. In temperature, Brisbane has a mean of 69°—between 34° and 105°. The hilly districts, even in the tropics, have slight frosts in winter, but a high barometer in the dry warm weather. North

Queensland has less heat than its latitude would seem to threaten. Tropical ports show a lower summer thermometer than may sometimes be seen in Sydney, Adelaide, and Melbourne. The western heat is stimulating in its dryness and electrical condition. The oppression on the northern coast is felt during the rainy season, though the showers cool the air. The prevalence of south-east winds off the sea mitigates the trials of summer. The dreaded "hot wind," brought southward by the usual course from central Australian deserts, descends upon the southern colonies, avoiding Queensland. Still the ordinary western breeze, passing over so great an expanse of land, while posftively cold on winter nights, is sufficiently hot during the summer.

In a recent year the colonial registrar-general gave the death-rate of Brisbane municipality at 13 in the thousand, Toowoomba 17, and Rockhampton 15. In tlie tropics it was 12 at Charters Towers and Cooktown, 15 at Towns- ville; but 29 at Mackay, where the sickly Polynesians abound. The prevalent diseases are rather from disordered liver and bowels than lungs and throat. Low fevers, seldom fatal, continue for a time in all newly 'opened-up country throughout Australia, as in America. Female mortality, even in the tropical ports, is considerably less than that of males. Infants, as a rule, thrive better in the colony, according to numbers, than in England. Cooktown, in lat. 16° S., is regarded by some as the sana- torium of the future. Queensland can give invalids any climate they may desire—moist and equable, dry and exhilarating, warm days and cool nights, soft coast airs for bronchial affections, and more bracing ones for other consumptives.

Geology.—Queensland is geologically connected with New South Wales and Victoria by the great chain of hills continued through the eastern portion of Australia, from Cape York to Bass's Strait. That immense range consists largely of Paleeozoic formations with igneous rocks. The granites, porphyries, and basalts have greatly tilted and metamorphosed the sedimentary deposits of Silurian, Devonian, Carboniferous, and Oolitic ages. The width of this elevated and mineral part of the colony varies from 50 to 400 miles. Ancient formations, however, rise in the broad western plains, and everywhere indicate metallic

treasures. Nearer the eastern coast granite and porphy- ritic rocks appear in greater force than .in the Dividing Range, and the voyager rarely loses sight of them all the way from Moreton Bay to Cape York. They add much to the attractiveness of the scenery, especially in Whit- sunday Passage. The old sedimentary strata consist of sandstones, limestones, conglomerates, and slates of vari- ous kinds. The Carboniferous beds are of great extent, occupying thousands of square miles (perhaps as many as 100,000), on the highlands, and on both sides of the Main Chain. It is in north and central Queensland that the mineral is found of the true Paleozoic character, bearing the distinctive floral features of the English and New South Wales Newcastle formation, The Jurassic and Liassic rocks of the southern hilly districts are rich in cannel coal. The Wollumbilla beds are similar to the Upper Wiannamatta ones of New South Wales. The Mesozoic or Secondary formations prevail largely to the westward. Ammonites, belemnites, and ichthyosauri de- clare the same condition of things as once existed in the English midlands. The Cretaceous and Oolitic series on the western plains occupy nearly a third of Queensland, and their grassy surface is being rapidly covered with flocks of sheep.

pials. A monster bird, like the New Zealand moa, twice as large as the existing emu, once strode over Queensland plains. An ichthyosaurus, computed nearly thirty feet in length, was found on the surface of the Flinders river downs. The Secondary fossils have less resemblance than those of Western Australia to the European species. Near the Condamine a fossil monitor twenty feet long was unearthed. The northern coal-fields display the Glos- sopteris, Sygillaria, and Lepidodendron. The northern beds exhibit the mesozoic Thinnfeldia odontopterodes, Aletho- pteris australis, and Podozomites distans.. Some existing Queensland fish, as the ceratodus, are allied to those of the Carboniferous age in Great Britain.

Minerals.—Gold is. found in alluvial deposits and in quartz veins. The most important, of the former werc ncar the northern Palmer river, but auriferous quartz now almost monopolizes the digger's attention. The recognized gold workings are over 7000 square niles. While there were

3454 Europeans, early in 1883, engaged in quartz mining, only 280 were on alluvial ground; in the same year 2046 Chinese worked alluvial claims. Charters Towers in the north and Gympie in the south arc the chief gold centres ; but Mount Morgan, south of Rockhampton, is the richest mine yet discovered. The gold export realized £1,498,433 in 1875, but only £829,655 in 1882. 'The decrease is owing to the greater dependence of the miners on blasting rock.

Gold is often found mixed with silver, copper, or lead. Onc lode had to the ton 75 to 120 ounces of silver and from 4 oz. to 43,02. of gold. Silver ore is being worked to great advantage now near Ravenswood, Star river, and Sellheim river. Copper has been long so low-priced in England that its extraction in the colony, with high-rated labour, has been seriously checked. The cupriferous area is very large there. Mount Perry, Peak Downs, Herberton, and Cloncurry are the leading copper sites. The " Aus- tralian" mine of Cloncurry, 200 miles south of the gulf, is very rich, In one place a lode, 80 to 120 feet wide, showed 30 per cent. of bismuth and 40 of copper to the ton. Tin streams were first opened at Stanthorpe, near the southern border. Tin lodes of astonishing richness exist in the Wild river district about 19° S, lat. There are single claims of tin stream, or on tin lodes, besides tin land leases, at Tate river, Wild river, and other localities. The Tinaroo yield in the five years has been £388,350. Called the Cornwall of Australia, this tin district shows gold, silver, copper, and antimony. The tin export of the colony during 1883 was £298,845, Iron ores abound, but with no present prospect of being utilized. Bismuth, graphite, antimony, ee cinnabar, and other netals are known. Precious stones are gathered from gold and tin workings. Building stones are plentiful in variety, and good in quality, Granite, porphyry, basalt, sandstone, and marbles are wrought. The coal is, after all, the most important and useful of the mincrals. Already steamers, foundries, and railways are being supplied from Qucensland pits. Several beds are known near Moreton Bay. Abont Ipswich and Darling Downs the coal is clean to the touch. Some specimens cake, others do not. All are good for gas and steam purposes. The Darling Downs beds are in an ancient lake, and are valuable for fuel and oil. On 100 tb of that coal being burnt, 529 tb of water were evaporated to 505 from Newcastle coal, leaving 16 tb of ash to 7 for the other. Thatcannel is of Lias age. Much rests under the Eolian sandstone and basalt of the west. The Burrum mineral,

between Maryborough and Bundaberg, is true coal, yielding, at the first opening, 3000 tons a month. One seam would give 5,000,000 tons. The Dawson, Bowen, and Mackenzie river basins, of vast extent, are Paleozoic, as in the Drummond range, and westward over the main chain. Coal is found in the York peninsula. On the coal of Queensland the distinguished Australian geologist, the Rev. J. Tenison Woods, expresses himself thus : —"'The fact that the coal formations cover so vast an extent of the territory, and so many valuable coal-fields having been discovered, makes me con- fident in predicting that its resources in coal are enormous, are equal, if not superior, to any other colony, and will raise her Shores to be in the end the grand céal emporium of the southern hemisphere."

Agriculture.—Until the last few ycars little cultivation was to be seen, and only 180,000 acres yet reccive such attention, Labour Was supposed to pay better in other employments. Still there can be grown in Queensland corn of all varieties, hay, English vege-

' As an illustration of success the Day Dawn mine of Charters Towers may be cited. Some Germans long struggled in vain, and with difficulty got enough gold to supply them with food, Suddenly they struck a rich reef, After considerable gains they formed a company to work the ground. Upon a paid-up capital of £12,000, the share- holders' dividends in four years came to £138,399. Gympie affords evel more remarkable instances of good fortune,

tables, sweet potatoes, mclons, cassava, cocoa, indigo, arrowroot, ginger, coffee, ricc, tobacco, cotton, spices, cinchona, cocoa-nnt, bread-fruit, and sugar-cane, with the frnits of England, India, and China. Lucerne is much grown for stud stock, where winter food is needed. Bananas, oranges, grapes, pine-apples, mangoes, guavas, tamarinds, and dates thrive well. Coffee is being extensively pro- duced. Many Ceylon planters have recently settled in the colony. Cotton pods, tended mostly in Moreton district, are now a paying crop. 'The mulberry success is paving the way for silk culture. The Roma grapes and oranges are much esteemed. Bananas grow on any coast-lands. Arrowroot and tobacco are profitable. Swect potatoes are extcnsively used. Rice will be a crop of the future. Farmers in the southern hills raise corn and English fruits. Dairy farming belongs more to a cooler

latitude. Wheat can be success- fully produced, when labour is cheaper, over an area of 60,000 square miles. Stanthorpe wheat gave 67 Ib to the bushel. Maize is a more certain crop. But sugar-cane is now the Queensland farmer's chief resource. From the southern border up to Cape York, if near the coast, it can be raised. All round Moreton Bay, and in the Maryborough and Bundaberg neighbourhood, it does well; but in the more northern parts, as at the Mackay, Cairns, Burdekin, Johnstone, and Herbert ficlds, the yield is greater, and the plant comes earlier to maturity. In the Mackay sugar district, during 1884, there were 22,000 acres in canc. Coast Queensland has not only warmth, and rich alluvial or scrub soil, but abundance of rain when growth requires it, with fine weather at cane ripening for manufacturing sugar. Some plantcrs have their own appliances for the extraction of juice and the manufacture of sugar, but the small farmers combine to have machinery in their district, or else dispose of cane or juice for cash to the neighbouring sugar-maker, Polynesians or Kanakas have been used for the sugar-house, though Europeans do all the work of growth and manufacture in South Queensland, Chinese merchants are establishing cane grounds, worked by their own countrymen ; and Germans and Scandinavians have extensively embarked in this industry.

Pastoral farming is still the leading industry of the colony, and is rapidly extending over all districts. An occasional check to its prosperity comes by drought in the dry western interior. But a few good seasons, in that healthy wilderness, cnable the shcepmaster to recoup himself, especially as, in the remoter parts, le has a securer tenure and a very small rental. In "settled districts," and within 30 miles of the coast, a "run " is subject to resumption by the state, at six months' notice, should any part be required to be cut up for farms, In the more distant "unsettled district" a lease of twenty- one years is fairly secure. The rent advances every seven years of the term from about half a farthing to a penny an acre. In the dry parts, where grass is insufficient, cattle and sheep thrive well on the salt bush and other shrubs. The only really unavailable pas- tora] region is that portion of the north-western slope of the Main Range already referred to. The spear-grass sometimes sends its barbed tufts into the flesh of sheep. Wild dogs, floods, and droughts have to be encountered, though the animals to be tended are unaffected by ailments plaguing flocks and herds in Britain. The western plains, dry but fertile, are best for sheep ; the hills and moist coast-

lands for cattle and horses. The merino sheep yields excellent wool on tropical pastures, contrary to formcr expectations. The sheep had increased from 3,000,000 to 12,000,000 between 1860 and 1883; and cattle, from 430,000 to 4,320,000. To meet future droughts, subterranean streams have been found by artesian wells in the most, arid wastes, and the storage of water after floods will furnish a supply in dry weather.

Flora.—The Queensland flora comprehends most of the forms

eculiar to Australia, with the addition of about five hundred species belong to the Indian and Malayan regions. The eastern por- tion of New Holland may have a vegetation of a somewhat different type from that of the western, but both have older representatives than those found in the central zone from the gulf to the Southern Ocean. The palms in the north-east of Queensland include the Cycas and the screw or Pandanus. The pines take an important position in the colony,—as the Morcton Bay pine (Araucaria Cunninghamit), the Burnett bunya bunya (Araucaria Bidwelli), the kauri or dundathu (Dammara robusta), and the she pine (Podocarpus elata). The Callitris or cypress family like poor soil. The cedar forests are buricd in scrub towards the mouths of eastern rivers. Coast-lands are crowded with trccs, though brigalow-scrub, with the silver-leaved tops, prevails far inland. There are trees rising above 300 feet. One monster, near the Johnstone river, was seen 88 feet in girth at 55 feet from the ground, and 150 at the base. The Moreton Bay fig-tree has immense wall-like abutments. The bottle or gouty stem tree of the north, Delabechia Gregori, is allied to the African baobab. Flowers are numcrous, yielding often a powerful fragrance, though most commonly exhibited on shrubs. Queensland is notably a timber region, having both hard and soft woods. Above three hundred useful woods, many taking a fine polish, were sent to a recent exhibition. An active export of some, particularly cedar and pine, is conducted at Maryborough and Port Curtis. Woods there are in use for building purposes,

furniture, dyeing, shipbuilding, coachbuilding, hoops and staves, turnery, gunstocks, veneering, &c. Among the Hucalypti are those known as Moreton Bay ash, mahogany, yellow box, blaekbutt, ironbark, turpentine,

bloodwood, messmate, with the blue, red, grey, forest, swamp, scented, and spotted gum trees. The ironwood, brigalow, and myall are of the Acacia genera. Among the Casu- aring are the he, she, swamp, forest, and river oaks. Names are found oddly given by colonists. Their red cedar is the Cedrela Goona ; white cedar, the Melia composita ; pencil cedar, the Dysoxy- lon Muelleri; white wood, the Alstonia; light yellow wood, the Flindersia orleyana; dark yellow wood, the hus; beech, the Gmelina Leichhardtti ; coachwood, the Ceratopetalum ; ebony, the Malba; musk, the Marlea ; Leichhardt's tree, the Sarcocephalus cordatus ; mahogany, the T'ristania; tulip, the Stenocarpus sinuatus ; honeysuckle, the Banksia; pea-tree, the Melaleuca ; bottlebrush, the Callistemon lanceolatus ; beefwood, the Banksia; satinwood, the Xanthoxylum brachyaeanthum ; coral tree, the Erythrina ; apple, the Angophora subvelutina; teak, the Dissilaria balo-ghioides; feverbark, the

Fauna.—The Queensland fauna is much like that described under New Soutn Wass. But forms are now living there whose allies are elsewhere recognized as Tertiary Fossils. The marsupials consti- tute a prominent family. The platypus or water mole is duck-billed and web-footed. The dingo is a howling, nocturnal dog. Queens- land birds are very beautiful. One is something like the New Guinea bird of paradise. Other species of the feathered order are kindred to some in the Asiatic islands. Bower birds have a satin plumage, and indulge in play-bowers, adorned with shells and stones, The regent bird and rifle bird are peculiarly attractive in colours. Mound builders lay their eggs in sand heaps. The wild turkey and other game may be easily obtained. North Queensland has a fine cassowary. Reptiles consist of alligators, lizards, and snakes ; few of the last, particularly of larger species, are hurtful to man.

Fisherics.—The sperm whale has become rare of late in North Australian seas. Deep-sea fishing is unknown in Queensland. About the coasts are the usual edible Australian forms, as whiting, rock cod, bream, flathead, schnapper, guardfish, &c. Sharks and alligators are there. The shell-grinder, Cestracion, is similar to a shark found as fossil in Europe. Sword fish grow to a great size. Some Queensland fish resemble varieties in Indian seas. The Chinese are the best fishermen in Australian waters. The huge dugong, or sea cow, feeding on bay grasses, has a delicate flesh, of the

flavour of veal, and furnishes an oil with the qualities of cod- liver oil, The fishery of the trepang, béche-de-mer, or sea slug employs a considerable number of boats about the coral reefs,

QUEENBSBLAYN D

Boiled, smoke-dried, and packed in bags, the trepang sells for exportation to China, though its agreeable and most nourishing soup is relished by Australian invalids. At Cooktown and Port Douglas more than £100 per ton may be had for the produce. The pearl fishery is a prosperous and progressive one in or near Torres Straits. A licence is paid, and the traffic is under Government supervision. Thursday Island is the chief seat of this industry. The shells are procured by diving, and fetch from £120 to £200 a

'ton. Mother-of-pearl and tortoiseshell constitute important exports

of the colony, capable of great expansion. Oysters are as fine fla- voured as they are abundant. Turtles are caught to the northward.

Commerce.—So extensive a coast-line, and so much of that pro- tected by the Barrier Reef, cannot but be favourable to commerce. The Torres Strait mail service has opened up increased opportunities for trade with China, India, Java, &c. Contiguity to New Cale- donia and the Pacific lsles will conduce to mercantile relations. There are several lines of coasting steamers. The great develop- ment of the mining, pastoral, and sugar industries, the rapid growth of railways, an easy tariff, and the settlements of York Peninsula are giving a great impetus to commerce. The exports for 1882 were £3,534,452; of which wool brought £1,329,019 ; gold £829,655 ; tin £269,904; stock £280,466; sugar £153,188; tallow £129,549 ; preserved meats £119,348 ; pearls £105,869; hides £88,359 ; béche-de-mer £25,082. The imports for that year were £6,318,463. Among these imports some items may be cited: —for manufactured cotton, silk, and woollen goods £889,352, un- manufactured £194,489 ; for metal goods and hardware £910,029 ; flour and grain, £453,307; oilman's stores, £376,987; spirits, wines, and beer, £320,925 ; books and stationcry, £118,798; tea, £109,286. Few of these articles are yet re-exported. The cx- ports for 1883 advanced to £4,652,880, to which wool contributed £2,277,878, and sugar £538,785. The shipping exceeds 1,500,000 tons. Dock conveniences, ships, and

colonial-made steam dredgers exercise the state care. The development of coal mines is aiding both shipping and railway extension. With the establishment of British rule in New Guinca, a serious danger to Queensland interests will be averted, and a happy opportunity offered for the enlarge- ment of its commerce.

Manufactures.—The colony is too young, its population too scattered, its resources in raw material too extensive, for any great advance at present in the industrial stage. Yet already large foundries are established, in which agricultural instruments, mining machinery, sugar appliances, steam engines, and locomotives are constructed. Tanneries, breweries, sugar-mills, distilleries, tobacco- factories, cotton-ginning, woollen factories, wine-making, meat- preserving, boot-factories, &c., are being carried on. The sawmills near Maryborough arc, perhaps, equal to anything in the southern hemisphere, relays of men working at night by electric light.

Roads and Ratlways.—Nearly ninety divisional boards, through- out the colony, raise means by rates for highway improvements, Government supplementing their revenue, as in the ease of muni- cipalities, by special grantsin aid. Coaches travel inland 700 miles from the capital. At the end of 1884, besides several hundreds of niiles of railway in process of construction, the lines opened to traffic were 1201 miles. The western line is from Brisbane, over Darling Downs, through Roma. The south-west will be reached by Cun- namnulla. From Rockhampton westward the railway has gone 350 miles on towards the downs of the Barcoo. The line from Townsville, parallel to the last, after passing Charters Towers, will go on to Hughenden and the Flinders river region. The three great lines will be hereafter eonnected, and the Cloncurry and gulf country united with the western ports. Maryborough is thus eon- neeted with Gympie and Burrum, Bundaberg with Mount Perry, Brisbane with Warwick, and Brisbane with several suburbs. The heavy loans of the colony are mainly devoted to the construction of railways.

Administration.—The governor is appointed by the Queen. The executive council has 8 members, the legislative council 38, and the assembly 55. The term of parliament is five years. There were in January 1884 42 electorates, 18 municipalities, 4 boroughs, 85 divisional boards, 49 police districts.

Excepting very occasional difficulties with blacks in remote and scrubby districts, order is thoroughly observed. Numerous religious and temperance organizations are of assistance in securing respect for law. Among official departments are those of the colonial secretary, treasurer, auditor-general, public works and mines, public lands, customs, administration of justice, post office, police, immigration, and medical board.

Revenue.—Of a revenue of £2,102,095 in 1881-2, £806,719 came from taxation. For the year ending June 30, 1884, the total was £2,566,358. Of this, the customs gave £866,475 ; excise, £34,441 ; land sales, £365,536 ; pastoral rents, £246,108 ; railways, £581,642 ; post and telegraph, £155,996. The expenditure was £2,317,674. In the settled districts, during 1883, 304 runs had an area of 11,162 square miles, at a rental of £21,419. In the unsettled districts 8939 runs had 475,601 square miles, paying £216,638, averaging less than a farthing anacre. Expired and renewed leases realize in-

,_ —

ereasing rates. The absolute public debt in 1884 was £16,570,850. Of that amount the outlay on railways was about 12 millions ; immigration, 2; harbours, 1}. Roads and telegraph lines took other sums.

Education.—Queensland led the way among the Australian colo- nies, in the establishment of a system of public instruction free, unsectarian, and compulsory. At the same time, however, the parliament declined to grant further state aid to the clergy and religious edifices of Protestant Episcopalians, Presbyterians, Wes- leyans, and Roman Catholics, formerly drawing from the treasury. State or provisional schools are formed wherever there is a sufti- cient gathering of children. The annual public cost was £2, 17s. per scholar. There are, however, self-supporting private schools. Masters and mistresses of state schools are paid by the Government according to their own educational status, the number of cliildren, and the proficiency of instruction. Excellent training schools for teachers are established. Five superior grammar schools are partly supported by the state; the municipal councils have voluntarily aided those

institutions, and offered scholarships to their pupils. The Government gives frec education in grammar schools to suc- cessful scholars in state schools, besides thrce years' exhibitions to universities to a certain number passing a high examination. State aid is also rendered to schools of art, schools of design, free libraries, and technical schools.

Population.—The estimated population in January 1884 was 290,000, of whom three-fifths were males, Polynesian labourers, imported for three years, are about 8000. The Chinese, now re- stricted by a heavy poll tax, may be 18,000. The Aborigines, very fast dying out, mainly by contact with civilization, may be from 10,000 to 12,000.

History.—The Portuguese may have known the northern shore nearly a century before Torres, in 1605, sailed through the strait since called after him, or before the Dutch landed in the Gulf of Carpentaria. Captain Cook passed along the eastern coast in 1770, taking possession of the country as New South Wales. Flinders visited Moreton Bay in 1802, Oxley was on the Brisbane in 1828, and Allan Cunningham on Darling Downs in 1827. Sir T. L, Mitchell in 1846-7 made known the Maranoa, Warrego, and Barcoo districts. Leichhardt in 1845-47 traversed the coast country, going round the gulf to Port Essington, but was lost in his third great journey. Kennedy followed down the Barcoo, but was killed by the blacks while exploring York Peninsula. Burke and Wills crossed western Queensland in 1860. Landesborough, Walker, M'Kinlay, Hann, Jack, Hodgkinson, and Favence continued the researches. Squatters and miners have opened new regions. Before its separa- tion in 1859 the country was known as the Moreton Bay district of New South Wales. A desire to form fresh penal depéts led to the discovery of Brisbane river in December 1823, and the proclamation of a penal settlement there in August 1826. The convict popula- tion was gradually withdrawn again to Sydney, and the place was declared open to free persons only in 1842, The first land sale in Brisbane was on August 9, 1843. An attempt was made in 1846, under the ministry of Sir James Graham and Mr Gladstone, to establish at Gladstone on Port Curtis the colony of North Australia for ticket-of-leave men from Britain and Van Diemen's Land. Earl Grey's Government under strong colonial appeals arrested this policy, and broke up the convict settlement. In 1841 there were 176 males and 24 females; in 1844, 540 in all; in 1846, 1867. In 1834 the

governor and the English rulers thought it necessary to abandon Moreton Bay altogether, but the order was withheld. The first stock belonged wholly to the colonial Government, but flocks and herds of settlers came on the Darling Downs in 1841. In 1844 there were 17 squatting stations round Moreton Bay and 26 in Darling Downs, having 13,295 cattle and 184,651 sheep. In 1849 there were 2812 horses, 72,096 cattle, and 1,077,983 sheep. But there were few persons in Brisbane and Ipswich. The Rev. Dr Lang then began his agitation in England on behalf of this northern district. Some settlers, who sought a separation from New South Wales, offered to accept British couvicts if the ministry granted independence. In answer to their memorial a shipload of ticket-of-leave men was sent in 1850. In spite of the objection of Sydney, the Moreton Bay district was proclaimed the colony of Queensland on December 10, 1859. The population was then about 20,000, and the revenue £6475, Little trade, no manu- factures, wretched roads, defective wharfage, struggling townships, aud poor schools marked that epoch. Political liberty occasioned a general advance. The first parliament, with the ministry of Mr (now Sir R. G. W.) Herbert, organized a good school system, carried an effective land bill, and established real religious equality. While the pastoral interest rapidly grew, the agricultural and trad- ing classes got firm footing. The revelation of gold and. copper treasures increased the prosperity. But a reaction followed ; wool prices fell, cotton- growing ceased, early sugar-cane efforts failed, and trouble succeeded excessive speculation in land and mines. A steady application to legitimate pursuits, however, soon restored confidence ; and the colony, as its resources have gradually de- veloped, has continued to advance and prosper. (J, BO.)

QUEENSTOWN, formerly Covz or Cork, a market town and seaport in the county of Cork, Ireland, is pieturesquely situated, 13 miles east-south-east of Cork, on the south side of Great Island, on the slope of an eminence rising somewhat abruptly above the inner Cork harbour. It consists chiefly of terraces, rising above each other, and inhabited by the wealthier classes. On account of the mildness of the climate it is much frequented by valetudinarians in winter. Previous to the American War the Cove of Cork was a very small fishing village, but within the last fifty years it has rapidly increased. It received its present name on the occasion of the visit of Queen Victoria in 1849. The harbour, which is 4 miles long by 2 broad, and is

defended by the Carlisle and Camden Forts at its entrance, and by Fort Westmoreland on Spike Island, can afford shelter to a very large fleet of vessels. The port is the calling station for the American mail steamers. Among the principal buildings are the new Catholic cathedral for the diocese of Cloyne, and the Pro- testant Episcopal church for the united parishes of Clonmel and Temple Robin. A fine promenade, over a mile in length, connects Queenstown with Rushbrook, a favourite watering-place. The population of Queenstown in 1871 was 10,334, and in 1881 it was 9755.

QUERCITRON is a yellow dye-stuff obtained from the bark of the quercitron oak, Quercus tinctoria (see vol. xvii. p. 693). The tree isa native of the United States, but is now also cultivated in France and South Germany. The dye-stuff is prepared by grinding the bark in mills after it has been freed from its black epidermal layer, and sifting the product to separate the fibrous matter, the fine yellow powder which remains forming the quercitron of commerce. The ruddy-orange decoction of quercitron contains quercitannic acid (vol. xvii. p. 692) and an active dyeing principle, quercitrin, C,,H,,O,, The latter sub- stance is a glucoside, and in aqueous solution under the influence of sulphuric acid it splits up into a rich tinctorial principle, quercetin, C,,H,,0,,, and a variety of sugar called isodulcite, C;H,,Og The reaction may be thus formu- lated

CzgH yyy + HO = Cn7Hy,0y. + CsHy 40g. Quercetin precipitates in the form of a crystalline powder of a brilliant citron yellow colour, entirely insoluble in cold and dissolving only sparingly in hot water, but quite soluble in aleohol. Either by itself or in some form of its glucoside quercitrin, quercetin is found in several vegetable substances, among others in cutch, in Persian berries (Zhamnus catharticus), buckwheat leaves (Poly- gonum Fagopyrum), Zante fustic wood (Rhus Cotinus), and in rose petals, &c. Quercitron was first introduced asa yellow dye in 1775. For many years it has been used principally in the form of FLavin (g.v.). Flavin is pre- pared by boiling quercitron in water and precipitating the tinctorial principle by sulphuric acid. By one method soda crystals are added in preparing the solution. The yellow precipitate is washed to free it from acid, pressed, and dried. From 100 parts of quercitron about 85 of flavin are obtained, having a tinctorial power more than twice that of the original

bark. Quercitron and its in- dustrial derivatives are principally employed in calico- printing. With alumina (red liquor mordant) they yield a bright canary colour, with tin salt a fine clear yellow, with iron liquor grey, olive, or black according to the strength of the mordant, and with mixed alumina and iron liquor an orange tint.

QUERETARO, a city of Mexico, capital of the state of the same name, lies on a plateau 5900 feet above the sea, 1524 miles north-west of Mexico by the Central Mexican Railway. It isa well-built place with a beautiful tree-planted alameda, a cathedral, and several handsome

churches and convents (Santa Clara, worthy of special note), a hospital, and other public buildings ; and it is sup- plied with excellent water from the mountains by a great stone aqueduct erected at the expense of the Marquis de Villar del Aquila whose statue adorns one of the squares. In manufactures it occupies a high place, producing cotton and woollen goods, leather, soap, and wood-carv- ings. The great Hercules cotton-factory, about 2 miles by rail from the town, is enclosed by a high loop-holed wall and defended by a small company of soldiers; in this way the proprietors have maintained their position since 1840 in spite of all the revolutions that have swept over the country. About 1400 operatives (all Mexicans) are employed, and work is carried on both day and night. Unbleached cotton is the staple product. The population of the city was stated at 38,000 in 1882.

Querétaro was captured by the Spaniards in 1536, and made a city in 1655. In 1848 it was the seat of a congress by which peace between Mexico and the United States was ratified, and in 1867 the emperor Maximilian, unable to hold it against the republicans

under Escobedo, was made prisoner and shot on the Cerro de las Campanas to the north of the town.

QUERN. See Frovr, vol. ix. p, 343-4.

QUESNAY, Francois (1694-1774), was one of the most eminent economists of the 18th century. He was born at Mérey, near the village of Montfort

/Amaury, about 28 miles from Paris, on the 4th of June, 1694, a year memor- able also for the birth of Voltaire. He was the son of a worthy advocate, who had the reputation of ruining his own practice by reconciling the parties who came to consult him about their suits. The modest resources of the family were derived principally from the cultivation of a small landed estate, Quesnay's mother in particular busying herself much with the details of its management, which she thoroughly understood. His boyish years were thus spent amidst country scenes and the occupations of the farm, and he retained to the end a strong predilection for rural life and a special interest in the welfare of the agricultural population. Little attention was given to his early literary instruction; it is said that he could not read till he was eleven years of age, when he was taught partly by the family gardener, who used as the text book the Maison Rustique of Jean Licbault, a work "wherein" (to quote the words of its old English translator, Richard Surflet, 1606) "is conteined whatever can be required for the building or good ordering of a husbandman's house or countrey farme." This book Quesnay is said to have studied with such assiduity as to have almost known it by heart. He learned Greek and Latin and the elements of several sciences with scarcely any aid from masters. He was possessed with an ardent and untiring desire for know- ledge, and we are told that more than once he walked to Paris for a book, which he read on his way back the same day, thus travelling twenty leagues on foot.

At the age of sixteen he became apprentice to a surgeon in the neighbourhood of Mérey, who was not able to teach him much, and he soon went to Paris to continue his professional education. He there devoted himself with great ardour for five or six years to the study of medicine and surgery, diligently attending the hospitals, and following the courses of anatomy, chemistry, and botany ; he also learned drawing and engraving, in which he acquired considerable skill, and gave some attention to metaphysics, to which he had been attracted by the reading of Malebranche's Recherche de la Vérité. About 1718 he established himself at Mantes, and soon obtained a distinguished clientéle. He became known to the Maréchal de Noailles, who conceived a high esteem for him, and persuaded the queen, whenever she came to Maintenon, which was not very far from Mantes, to consult. no physician but Quesnay. A celebrated practi-

tioner of the time, named Silva, having published a treatise on bleeding, which, though of little merit, was loudly applauded by his friends, Quesnay wrote a refuta- tion of it, founded on the principles of hydrostatics, which brought his name much into notice. When La Peyronnie had procured about 1730 the foundation of an academy of surgery with the view of elevating that profession, he selected Quesnay for the post of perpetual secretary. Coming to Paris to fill it, he obtained through La Pey- ronnie's influence the office of surgeon in ordinary to the king. He was the author of the remarkable preface which was prefixed to the first volume of the Mémovres of the academy. He was for a long time much occupied with the controversies between the faculty of medicine and the college of surgery concerning the respective limits of the two professions, and wrote most of the pieces in which the claims of the latter were asserted. [Finding that frequent attacks of the gout were rendering him incapable of performing manual operations, he procured in 1744 the degree of doctor of medicine from the university of Pont- '-Mousson ; but, though thus changing the nature of his practice, he continued to defend the rights of the surgical profession. He soon after purchased the reversion to the office of physician in ordinary to the king, and afterwards became his first consulting physician; in this capacity he was installed in the palace of Versailles, occupying apart- ments near those of Madame de Pompadour. Louis XV. esteemed Quesnay much, and used to call him his thinker ; when he ennobled him, he gave him for arms three flowers of the pansy (pensée), with the motto Propter excogitationem mentis.

He now devoted himself principally to economic studies, taking no part in the court intrigues which were perpetu- ally going on around him. About the year 1750 he became acquainted with M. de Gournay, who was also an earnest inquirer in the economic field; and round these two distinguished men was gradually formed the philo- sophie sect of the Heonomistes, or, as for distinction's sake they were afterwards called, the Physiocrates. The most remarkable men in this group of disciples were the elder Mirabeau (author of L'Ami des Hommes, 1756-60, and Philosophie Rurale, 1763), the Abbé Baudeau (Introduction a la Philosophie Economique, 1771), Le Trosne (De Ordre Social, 1777), Morellet (best known by his controversy

with Galiani on the freedom of the corn trade), Mercier Lariviére, and Dupont de Nemours. Of the writings of the last two, as well as of the general doctrine of the physio- crats, some account has been given in the article PoxrricaL Economy (see vol. xix. pp. 359 sq.). The principal econo- mic work of Quesnay himself was the 7'ableau Economique, which Laharpe called /'Alcoran des Economistes. A small éditeon de luxe of this work, with other pieces, was printed in 1758 in the palace of Versailles under the king's immediate supervision, some of the sheets, it is said, having been pulled by the royal hand. Already in 1767 the book had disappeared from circulation, and no copy of it is now procurable ; but the substance of it is has been preserved in the Ami des Hommes of Mirabeau, and the Physiocratie of Dupont de Nemours. In Quesnay's Mawimes Générales du Gouvernement Economique d'un Royaume Agricole, which was put forward as an Extrait des Economies Royales de Sully, and was printed along with the Zableau in 1758, besides stating his economic doctrines, he expresses his opinion in favour of a legal despotism as the best form of government. " Let the sovereign authority be single, and superior to all the individuals of society and all the unjust enterprises of private interest. The system of counter- forces in a government is a harmful one, which produces only discord among the great and the oppression of the weak." He had contributed to the Encyclopédie in

|

1756 the articles "'Fermiers" and "Grains," which con- tained the earliest announcement of his principles through the press; and he published 'a number of minor pieces in the Journal de ? Agriculture, du Commerce, et des Finances, and in the Hphémérides du Citoyen. His Droit Naturel, which was included in the Phystocratie of Dupont de Nemours, is especially noteworthy as showing the philo- sophic foundation of his economic system in the theory of the jus nature.

Interesting notices of Quesnay's character and habits have been preserved to usin the Mémovres of Marmontel and those of Mme. du Hausset, femme de chambre to Mme. de Pompadour.! His probity and disinterested zeal for the public good did not suffer from the atmosphere of the court; he never

abused his credit with the sovereign or the favourite for any selfish end. To raise the national agriculture from the decay into which it had fallen and to improve the condition of the working population were the great aims he kept steadily in view. His conversation was piquant, humorous, and suggestive, often taking the form of moral and political apologues. Some of his weighty sayings are quoted by contemporary writers. Here is one of them. Having met in Madame de Pompadour's salon an official person who, in recommend- ing violent measures for the purpose of terminating the vexatious disputes between the clergy and the parliament, used the words, "C'est la hallebarde qui méne un royaume," Quesnay replied, " Et qu'est ce qui meéne la hallebarde?" adding, after a pause, "C'est l'opinion ; cest donc sur Vopinion qu'il faut travailler." Diderot, D'Alembert, Duclos, Helvetius, Buffon, Turgot, Marmontel, used to meet in his rooms in the palace, and also several of the physiocrats above named; and Madame de Pom- padour, who affected the patronage of philosophy and science, sometimes came to join them and converse with them. Amongst them, when they were alone, subjects were sometimes discussed in a tone which would not have pleased the royal ear. Thus, one day, Mirabeau having said, "The nation is in a deplorable state," Lariviére replied in prophetic words, "It can only be regenerated by a conquest like that of China, or by some great internal convulsion ; but woe to those who live to see that! The French people do not do things by halves!" Adam Smith, during his stay on the Continent with the young duke of Buccleuch in 1764-66, spent some time in Paris, where he made the acquaintance of Quesnay and some of his followers ; he paid a high tribute to their scientific services in his Wealth of Nations, and would have dedicated that work to Quesnay, had the latter been alive at the time of its publication.

At. the age of seventy Quesnay went back to the study of mathematics. He thought, we are told, that he had discovered the quadrature of the circle, and was not pre- vented by the remonstrances of his friends from printing his supposed solution of the problem. He died in 1774, having lived long enough to see his great pupil, Turgot, in office as minister of finance. Quesnay had married in 1718, and had a son and a daughter ; his grandson by the former was a member of the first Legislative Assembly.

The cconomic writings of Quesnay are collected in the 2d vol. of the Principaux Economistes, published by Guillaumin, with preface and notes by Eugéne Daire. His writings on medicine and surgery have now only an historic interest. They were as follows :— 1. Observations sur les effets de la saignée, 1730 and 1750; 2. Essai

physique sur Véconomie animale avec Vart de quérir par la saigneée, 1786 and 1747 ; 3. Recherches critiques ct historiques sur Corigine,

1 These Afémoires were first printed by Quintin Craufurd in his Mélanges d' Histotre et de Littérature, 1806, and again in 1817 ; they have since been published in the Collection des Mémoires relatifs a la Révolution Francaise, 1824, and also in the Bibliotheque des Mémoires relatifs aU Histoire de France pendant le 18" Siécle.

les divers états, ct les progrés de la chirurgie cn France (said to have been the joint work of Quesnay and Louis), 1744, and, with slightly altered title, 1749; 4. Traité de la suppuration, 1749 ; 5. Traité de la gangrene, 1749; 6. Traité des fievres continues, 1753 ; 7. Obser- vations sur la conservation de la vie (said to have been printed at Versailles along with the Tableau Economique), 1758. His other writings were the article "Hvidence" in the Encyclopédie, and Recherches sur Vévidence des verités géométriques, with a Projet de nouveaux éléments de géométrie, 1773. Quesnay's loge was pro- nounced in the Academy of Sciences by Grandjean de Fouchy (see the Recueil of that Academy, 1774, p. 134). There is a good por- trait of him, engraved by J. Ch. Francois, which is reproduced in the Dictionnaire d'Economie Politique of Coquelin and Guillau- min. (Cee Gan i)

QUESNEL, Pasquier (1634-1719), Roman Catholic theologian, was born in Paris on July 14, 1634, and, after graduating in the Sorbonne with distinction in 1653, joined the Congregation of the Fathers of the Oratory in 1657, receiving priest's orders in 1659. In 1675 he pub- lished an edition of the works of Leo the Great, in the notes to which the Gallican liberties were defended. The work was consequently put upon the Jndex in the follow- ing year, and Quesnel's relations with his ecclesiastical superiors became so strained that in 1681 he had to retire to Orleans. Four years later, finding himself unable to sign a document imposed on all members of the Oratory in condemnation of Jansenism, he fled to Brussels, where he

was intimately associated with Arnauld, and where, encouraged by him, he published in 1694-95 a complete edition of the Réfleaions Morales sur le Nouveau Testa- ment, a work of edification on which he had first begun to engage himself shortly after joining the Oratory, and a part of which had appeared as early as about 1671. The nature of its contents, and still more the known sympa- thies of its author, made the book an object of unwearying Jesuit hostility ; Quesnel was imprisoned for a short time in the palace of the archbishop of Mechlin in 1703, but happily succeeded in escaping into Holland; his papers, however (compromising, it is said, to many persons), fell into the hands of the enemy, and long were to the Pére La Chaise his "pot au noir" (as he calied it) by means of which he was able to darken the prospects of his adver- saries as he chose. The bull Unigenitus, in which no fewer than 101 sentences from the Wéflexions Morales were condemned as heretical, was obtained from Clement IX. in September 8, 1713 (see vol. xiii. p. 567). Quesnel died at Amsterdam on December 2, 1719, A complete list of his works is given by Moreri.

QUETELET, Lampert ADoLpHE JACQUES (1796-1874), astronomer, meteorologist, and statistician, was born at Ghent, February 22, 1796, and educated at the lyceum of that town. In 1819 he was appointed professor of mathe- matics at the athenzeum of Brussels; in 1828 he became lecturer at the newly created museum of science and literature, and he continued to hold that post until the museum was absorbed in the free university in 1834. In 1828 he was appointed director of the new royal observa- tory which it had been decided to found, chiefly at his instigation. The building was finished in 1832, and the instruments were ready for work in 1835, from which date the observations were published in 4to volumes (Annales de VObservatoire Royal de Brumelles), but Quetelet chiefly devoted himself to meteorology and statistics. From 1834 he was perpetual secretary of the Brussels Academy, and published a vast number of articles in its Bulleten, as also in his journal Correspondance Mathématique et Phys- ique (11 vols., 1825-39). He died on February 17, 1874.?

Quetelet's astronomical papers refer chiefly to shooting stars and similar phenomena. He organized extensive magnetical and

2 His son ERNEST QUETELET (1825-78) was from 1856 attached to the observatory and made a great number of observations of stars with proper motion, from which a large catalogue of stars is now (1885) being published.

meteorological observations, and in 1839 he started regular observa- tions of the periodical phenomena of vegetation, especially the flowering of plants. The results are given in various memoirs published by the Brussels Academy and in his works Sur le Climat de la Belgique and Sur la Physique du Globe (the latter forms vol. xiii. of the Annales, 1861). He is, however, chiefly known by the statistical investigations which occupied him from 1823 onward. In 1835 he published his principal work, Sur l'Homme et le Développe- ment de ses Fueultés, ow Essai de Physique Sociale (2d ed. 1869), containing a résumé of his statistical researches on the develop- ment of the physical and intellectual qualities of man, and on the 'faverage man," both physically and intellectually considered. In 1846 he brought out his Lettres a 8S. A. R. le Due régnant de Saxe- Coburg et Gotha sur la théorie des probabilités appliquée awx sciences morales et politiques (of which Sir J. Herschel wrote a full account in the Ldinburgh Review), and in 1848 Du Systéme Social et des Lois qui le régissent (dedicated to the prince consort). In these works he shows how the numbers representing the individual qualities of man are grouped round the numbers referring to the "average man" in a manner exactly corresponding to that in which single results of observation are grouped round the mean result, so that the principles of the theory of probabilities may be applied to statistical researches on the subjects. These ideas are further developed in various papers in the Bulletin and in his L' Anthropo- métrie, ow Mesure des différentes Facultés del' Homme (1871), in which he lays great stress on the universal applicability of the binomial law, —according to which the number of cases in which, for instance, a certain height occurs among a large number of individuals is repre- sented by an ordinate of a curve (the binomial). symmetrically situated with regard to the ordinate representing the mean result (average height).

A detailed Essat sur la Vie et les Travaux de L. A.J. Quetelet, by his pupil and assistant E. Mailly, was published at Brussels in 1875,

QUETTA, a valley in Baluchistan, and the most northern district in the province. It embraces an area of about 90 square miles, and is situated near the Afghan frontier between 30° 2' and 30° 14' N. lat. and between 66° 55' and 67° E. long. 'The general aspect of the country is hilly, rocky, and sterile, particularly towards the north ; but in many parts the soil is rich and good, yielding wheat, rice, madder, tobacco, and lucerne, besides numerous grasses. The district has abundant orchards, furnishing grapes, apples, pears, pomegranates, figs, dec. ; melons and all kinds of English vegetables are also largely cultivated. The valley is watered by the Lora stream. Wild sheep, goats, and hogs abound in the hills of the district. The climate appears to be healthy and the tem- perature moderate, ranging from 30° Fahr. in the winter to about 80° in the summer. Since 1876 Quetta has been the seat of a British political officer. Its occupation secures the Pishin valley, holds in check border tribes, and keeps open the roads of the Kojak and Gwaja passes over the Khwaja Amran range leading to Kandahar. During the Afghan compaigns of 1878-80 Quetta formed the base of operations of the southern column. In 1879 a railway was commenced to Quetta, with a view to its being pushed on to Kandahar. The line starts from the Sind railway system at Sukkur and runs wa Jacobabad to Sibi, and is now in course of construction to Quetta; it is to be termed the Sind-Pishin railway. Quetta (or Shal, meaning " the fort" or "kot"), the capital, is situated at the northern extremity of the valley, near the head of the Bolan Pass and close to the Pishin valley, at an elevation of 5900 fect above the level of the sea. The town is surrounded by a mud wall; in its centre, on an artificial mound, is a fort which commands a very fine and extensive view of the neighbouring valley.

QUEVEDO VILLEGAS, Francrsco (1580-1645), the greatest satiric writer of Spain, was born in 1580 at Madrid, where his father, who came from the mountains of Burgos, was secretary to Anne of Austria, fourth wife of Philip IT. Karly left an orphan and without other protection than that of his guardian, D. Agustin de Villanueva, protonotary of Aragon, the young man educated himself and chose his own career. Full of zeal to conquer all knowledge, he betook himself to Alcala, the nearest university to Madrid,

where in a few years he covered a vast field of study, acquiring a knowledge of classical and modern tongues—of Italian and French, Hebrew and Arabic, of philosophy (or what passed by that name), theology, civil law, and economics. His masters were astounded at his erudition, and his fame reached beyond Spain; at twenty-one he was in correspondence with Justus Lipsius on questions of Greek and Latin literature, and the great scholar loaded him with praises and treated him as an equal. These years of study left a great and permanent influence on Quevedo's style; to them are due the pedantic traits and mania for quotations which strike and offend us in most of his works.

The licentiate of Alcala next betook himself to the court and mingled with the corrupt society that surrounded Philip III., or rather the duke of Lerma, then the real ruler of Spain. The cynical greed of the ministers, the meanness of their flatterers, the corruption of all the royal officers, the financial scandals, the shamelessness of the women, brutalized by the low place given to them in family life and by the practices of a purely formalist religion, formed a spectacle which soon awoke in Quevedo his talent as a painter of manners. At Madrid or at Valladolid, where the court resided from 1601 to 1605, he mingled freely with these intrigues and disorders, and soon lost the purity of his morals, but not his independence, his uprightness and integrity. From this period date his first Dreams (Suefios), satirical fantasies in which the spirit and manner of Lucian and Dante are combined. '" Dream of Skulls," "The Possessed Alguazil," "The Stables of Pluto," "The Madhouse of Love," such are the titles of these earliest writings composed in 1607-8, which in some degree recall the "Dances of Death" of the later Middle Ages ; the author is transported in sleep to hell, where he assists at the long and lamentable procession of men of all conditions, professions, and trades who move toward their punishment, clad in their most characteristic vices and absurdities. The series was continued from 1612 to 1622 by "The World as it is" and the " Review of Witticisms." With the Dreams may be associated certain works of similar scope and tone, e.g., To every one according to his Works, and Fortune made Reasonable, where Jupiter in concert with Fortune, whom he has caused to stop her wheel, orders all kinds of men instantly to resume their true nature

and the condition they deserve: thus the physician becomes a hangman, the accused a judge, the painted lady a duenna and witch, and so forth.

In 1609 Quevedo entered into relations with the famous D. Pedro Tellez Giron, duke of Osuna, with whom his fortunes were linked for more than ten years. The duke, celebrated for his bold enterprises of war against the Queen of the Adriatic, for his share in the conspiracy of Venice in 1618, for the luxurious splendour of his viceregal rule in Sicily and Naples, and finally for his terrible dis- grace, recognized Quevedo's unusual merits and made him his secretary. Thus between 1611 and 1620 he learned politics,—the one science which he had perhaps till then neglected,—initiated himself into the questions that divided Europe, and penetrated the designs and ambitions of the neighbours of Spain as well as the secret history of the guilty intriguers protected by the favour of Philip ITI. The result was that he wrote several political works, particularly a lengthy treatise, The Policy of God and the Government of Christ, in which he lays down the duties of kings by displaying to them how Christ has governed His church. The disgrace of the duke of Osuna (1620) reached Quevedo, who was arrested and exiled to La Torre de Juan Abad in New Castile, where he possessed lands and of which he afterwards became seignior. ; Quevedo, though involved in the process against the

duke, remained faithful to him in his misfortunes, and bore exile and prison with resignation. On the death of Philip ITI. (31st March 1621), he recommended himself to the first minister of the new king by celebrating his accession to power and saluting him as the vindicator of public morality in an elegant epistle, in the style of Juvenal, on The Present Habits of the Spaniards. Olivares recalled him from his exile and gave him a charge in the palace, and from this time Quevedo resided almost con- stantly at court, where he acquired a position of great weight, only comparable to that of Voltaire in the France of last century. Like Voltaire, he became a sort of oracle, and exercised in Spain a kind of political and literary jurisdic- tion due to his varied relations and knowledge, but especi- ally to his biting and unbridled wit, which had no respect of persons and laid bare every sore. General politics, social economy, war, finance, literary and religious

questions, all fell under his dissecting knife, and he had a dissertation, a pamphlet, or a song for everything. One day he is de- fending St James, the sole patron of Spain, against a powerful coterie that wished to associate St Teresa with him, and meeting these antagonists with the vehemence of a warm patriot and the learning of a professional theo- logian ; next day he is writing against the duke of Savoy, the hidden enemy of Spain, or against the measures taken to change the value of the currency ; or once more he is engaged with the literary school of Gongora, whose affecta- tions and designed obscurity of style seem to him to sin against the genius of the Castilian tongue. And in the midst of this incessant controversy on every possible subject he finds time to compose a comic romance, Don Pablo of Segovia (1626),—a masterpiece of sparkling verve and fun, which admirably continues the series of Lazarillo de Tormes and Guzman de Alfarache,—to pen a dissertation on The Constancy and Patience of Job (1631), to translate St Francis de Sales and Seneca, to compose thousands of verses, and to correspond with Spanish and foreign scholars,

But Quevedo was not to maintain unscathed the high position won by his knowledge, talent, and biting wit. The government of Olivares, which he had welcomed as the dawn of a political and social regeneration, made things worse instead of better, committed fault upon fault, and led the country to ruin. Quevedo saw this and could not hold his peace. An anonymous petition in verse enumerat- ing to the king in strong terms the grievances of his sub- jects was found in the early part of December 1639 under the very napkin of Philip IV. It was shown to Olivares, who exclaimed, "I am ruined"; but before his fall he sought vengeance on the libeller. His suspicions fell on Quevedo, who had enemies glad to confirm them. Quevedo was arrested on December 7, and carried under a strong escort to the neighbouring convent of Leon, where he was kept in rigorous confinement till the fall of the minister (23d January 1643) restored him to light and freedom, but not to the health which he had lost in his dungeon. He had little more than two years to live, and these were spent in inactive retreat, first at La Torre de Juan Abad, and then at the neighbouring Villanueva de los Infantes, where he died September 8, 1645.

Quevedo was of middle height, with black, somewhat crisp hair, a very fair complexion, a broad forehead, and very sharp eyes always furnished with

spectacles. The upper part of his body was well built but the lower part deformed: he limped, and his fect turned inwards. Though of very dissolute manners, he loved stndy most, and lived surrounded by books. He had a table on whecls for reading in bed and a stand that enabled him to read at table. His conversation, as one might guess from his books, was sparkling, full of unexpected turns and slyness, and many bon-mots are ascribed to him.

As a satirist and humorist Quevedo stands in the first rank of Spanish writers ; his other literary work docs not count for much. I. I. Chifflet, in a letter of February 2, 1629, calls him "a very learned man to be a Spaniard," and indeed his erudition was of a solid kind, but he merits attention not as a humanist, philosopher, and moralist, but as the keen polemic writer, the pitiless mocker, the profound observer of all that is wicked and absurd in human nature, and at the same time as a finished master of style and of all the secrets of the Spanish tongue. His style indeed is not absolutely pure, and already belongs to the period of decadence. Quevedo, who ridiculed so well the bad taste of "cultism," fell him- self into another fault and created the style called "conecptism," which hunts after ambiguous expressions and "double entendrcs." But, though involved and overcharged with ideas, his style is of singular force and originality ; after Cervantes he is the greatcst Spanish writer of the 17th century.

There is an exeellent collected edition of Quevedo's prose works with a good life of the author by D. Aureliano Fernandez-Guerra (Bibl. Ribadeneyra, vols. xxiii. and xlviii.) ; his poetieal works in vol. xix of the same colleetion are badly edited by D. Florenzio Ianer. (A, M.-F.)

QUEZAL, or QuEsat, the Spanish-American name for one of the most beautiful of birds, abbreviated from the Aztec or Maya Quwetzal-tototl, the last part of the com- pound word meaning fowl, and the first, also written Cuetzal, the long feathers of rich green with which it is adorned! The Quezal is one of the Trocons (¢.v.), and was originally described by Hernandez (Historia, p. 13), whose account was faithfully copied by Willughby. Yet the bird remained practically unknown to ornithologists until figured in 1825, from a specimen belonging to Leadbeater,? by Temminck (P/. col., 372) who, however, mistakenly thought it was the same as the

Z'rogon pavoninus, a con- generic but quite distinct species from Brazil, that had just been described by Spix. The scientific determination of the Quetzal-bird of Central America seems to have been first made by Bonaparte in 1826, as Trogon paradiseus, according to his statement in the Zoological Society's Pro- ceedings for 1837 (p. 101); but it is not known whether the fact was ever published. In 1832 the egustro Trimestre, a literary and scientific journal printed at Mexico, of which few copies can exist in Europe, contained a communication by Dr Pablo de la Llave, describing this species (with which he first became acquainted prior to 1810, from examining more than a dozen specimens obtained by the natural-history expedition to New Spain and kept in the palace of the Retiro near Madrid) under the name by which it is now commonly known, Pharomacrus mocino.? These facts, however, being almost unknown to the rest of the world, Gould, in the Zoological Proceedings for 1835 (p. 29), while pointing out Temminck's error, gave the species the name of Trogon resplendens, which it bore for some time. Yet little or nothing was generally known about the bird until Delattre sent an account of his meeting with it to the Echo du Monde Savant for 1843, which was reprinted in the Revue Zoologique for that year (pp. 163-165). In 1860 the nidification of the species, about which strange stories had been told to the naturalist last named, was deter- mined, and its eggs, of a pale bluish-green, were procured

1 The Mexican deity Quetzal-coatl had his name, generally trans- lated " Feathered Snake," from the quetzal, feather or bird, and coatl, snake, as also certain kings or chiefs, and many places, e.g., Quetzal- apan, Quetzaltepec, and Quezaltenango, though perhaps some of the last were named directly from the personages (cf. Bancroft, Native Races of the Pacific States, vol. v., Index). Qunetzal-itzli is said to be the emerald.

2 This specimen had been given to Mr Canning (a tribute, perhaps, to the statesman who boasted that he had "called a New World into existence to redress the balance of the Old") by Mr Schenley, a diplo- matist, and was then thought to be unique in Europe ; but, apart from those which had reached Spain, where they lay neglected and unde- scribed, James Wilson says (Zllustr. Zoology, pl. vi., text) that others were brought with it, and that one of them was given to the Edinburgh Museum. On the 21st day of the

sale of Bullock's Museum in 1819, Lot 38 is entered in the Catalogue as "The Tail Feather of a magni- ficent undescribed Trogon " and probably belonged to this species.

3 De la Lliave's very rare and interesting memoir was reprinted by M. Sallé in the Revue et Magazin de Zoologie for 1861 (pp. 23-388).

by Mr Robert Owen (P. 7. S., 1860, p. 374; bis, 1861,

66, pl. ii. fig. 1); while further and fuller details of its –

habits (of which want of space forbids even an abstract here) were made known by Mr Salvin (Jbis, 1861, pp. 138-149) from his own observation of this very local and remarkable species. Its chief home is in the mountains near Coban in Vera Paz, but it also inhabits forests in other parts of Guatemala at an elevation of from 6000 to 9000 feet.

The Quezal is hardly so big as a Turtle-Dove. The

Quezal, male and female.

cock has a fine yellow bill and a head bearing a rounded crest of filamentous feathers; lanceolate scapulars over- hang the wings, and from

the rump spring the long flowing plumes which are so characteristic of the species, and were so highly prized by the natives prior to the Spanish conquest that no one was allowed to kill the bird when taken, but only to divest it of its feathers, which were to be worn by the chiefs alone. These plumes, the middle and longest of which may measure from three feet to three feet and a

half, with the upper surface, the throat, and chest, are of a resplendent golden-green,! while the lower parts are of a vivid scarlet. The middle feathers of the tail, ordinarily concealed, as are those of the Peacock, by the uropygials, are black, and the outer white with a black base. In the hen the bill is black, the crest more round and not fila- mentous, the uropygials scarcely elongated, and the vent only scarlet. The eyes are of a yellowish-brown. Southern examples from Costa Rica and Veragua have the tail-coverts much narrower, and have been needlessly considered to form a distinct species under the name of P. costaricensis, There are, however, some good congeneric species, P. anti- stanus, P. fulgidus, P. auriceps, and P. pavoninus, from various parts of South America, and, though all are beauti- ful birds, none possess the wonderful singularity of the Quezal. (A. N.)

QUEZALTENANGO, a city of Guatemala, capital of the province of its own name, lies on the Siguila in a fertile district about 25 or 30 miles to the west of Lake Atitlan, on the high road between the city of Guatemala and the Mexican province of Chiapas. It has a cathedral and other public buildings, carries on the manufacture of cotton and wool, and contains from 20,000 to 30,000 inhabitants, mostly Indians. In the days of the Quiché power Quezaltenango, or, as it was then called, Xelahuh, was one of the largest and most flourishing cities in the country. The Spanish city was founded by Alvarado in

1524.

QUIETISM, a peculiar form of Mysticism (¢.v.) within the modern Catholic Church, mainly associated with the names of Madame Guyon and Micugr pe Motinos (99.v.).

See also FuneEton,

QUILIMANE, or Kitimane (the former being the Portuguese spelling), a Portuguese town on the east coast of Africa, at the head of a district of the province of Mozambique, lies 12 miles inland from the mouth of the river Quilimane or Qua Qua, which, an independent stream during the rest of the year, during the rainy season becomes a deltaic branch of the Zambesi, with which it is connected by Mutu, a cross channel or ditch. The town lies on the north bank of the river at a point where it is still about a mile broad, and as many as fifty coasting vessels may be seen at a time in the harbour. Large steamers are obliged to lie off the river mouth till high tide. Almost all the European merchants live in one long acacia-shaded street or boulevard skirting the river, while the Indian merchants or Banyans occupy another street run- ning at right angles. The natives have their hut-clusters hid among the tropical vegetation which begins at the very end of the street and rapidly passes off into the uninvaded swamlp-forest. The whole site is low and unhealthy, and the Portuguese have done next to nothing to improve it, The total population is between 6000 and 7000. Quili- mane, at one time the capital of the Arab kingdom of Angoza, was seized by the Portuguese in the 16th century, and became in the 18th and the early part of the 19th the chief slave mart on the east coast of Africa. In modern times it has been the starting point of several exploring expeditions—notably of Livingstone's up the Zambesi to Lake Nyassa in 1861.

QUILL. See Featruers and Pen.

QUILLOTA, a town of Chili, at the head of a district in the province of Valparaiso, lies 30 miles by rail north- east of Valparaiso, on the south or left bank of the Aconcagua, about 20 miles from its mouth. It is one of the oldest towns in the country, and since the opening of the railway in 1863 it has grown so that in population

1 Preserved specimens, if exposed to the light, lose much of their

beauty in a few years, the original glorious colour becoming a dingy greenish-blue.

einen a ey ae 2 ——_ aa

Oe

as

(11,369 in 1875) it is exceeded only by the capital and six other towns. It is famous for the quality of its chiri- moyas (Anona Cherimolia) and lucumas ; and in the neigh- bourhood there are rich copper mines. In 1822 and 1851 it suffered from earthquakes.

QUILON, a seaport town in Quilon district, Travancore state, Madras presidency, India, between the towns of Trevandrum and Aleppi, in 8° 54' N. lat. and 76° 37' E. long. It is a healthy town, and contained in 1881 a popu- lation of 13,588. It enjoys great facilities of water com- inunication, and has an active export trade in timber, cocoa-nuts, ginger, pepper, &c. The outer point of the town (Tangacheri) is slightly elevated above the adjoining ground, and contains high cocoa-nut trees. Besides being a very projecting point, Quilon is rendered still more unsafe to approach by the bank of hard ground called the Tangacheri reef which extends some distance to the south- west and west of the point and along the coast to the northward. 'There is, however, good anchorage in a bight about 3 miles from the fort. Quilon is one of the oldest towns on the Malabar coast, and continued to be a place of considerable importance down to the beginning of the 16th century. It was garrisoned by a strong British force from 1803 to 1830; but the subsidiary force has since been reduced to one native regiment, whose cantonments lie to the east of the town. The town is 385 miles south-west of Madras.

QUIMPER, or QuimPER-CoRENTIN, a town of France, formerly the capital of the county of Cornouailles, and now the chief town of the department of Finistére, is situ- ated 158 miles north-west of Nantes and 68 miles south- east of Brest on the railway between those towns. The delightful valley in which it lies is surrounded by high hills and traversed by the Steir and the Odet, which, meeting above the town, form a navigable channel for vessels of 150 tons during the rest of their journey to the sea (11 miles). With its communal population of 15,288, Quimper ranks in Finistére next to Brest and Morlaix. The only articles in which it has any consider-

able trade are fish and marine manures ; and in 1882 the total movement of the port was 31 vessels (2976 tons) entering and 36 vessels (3352 tons) clearing. The real interest of the town lies in its old churches and its historic associations. Of the old town-walls a few portions are still preserved in the terrace of the episcopal palace and in the neighbourhood of the college. Quimper is the seat of a bishop belonging to the province of Rennes. The cathedral, dedicated to the patron saint St Corentin and erected between 1239 and 1515, has a fine fagade, the pediment of which is crowned by an equestrian statue of King Grallon, and adorned (like several other external parts of the building) with heraldic devices cut in granite. Two lateral towers with modern spires (1854-56) and turrets reach a hetght of 247 feet. The total length of the build- ing is 303 feet and its width 52, the length of the transept 118 feet and the height 66. The nave and the transept are in the style of the 15th century, and the central boss bears the arms of Anne of Brittany (1476-1514). The terminal chapel of the apse dates from the 13th century. In the side chapels are the tombs of several early bishops. The high altar, tabernacle, and ciborium are costly works of contemporary art. The pulpit panels represent episodes in the life of St Corentin. Of the other churches may be mentioned St Matthieu, rebuilt at the beginning of the 16th century, with a fine belfry ; the church of Locmaria, dating from the 11th century; and the college chapel, in the "Jesuit" style. The old seminary is now used as a poorhouse, and there is also a lunatic asylum in the town. The public library in the town-hall possesses 25,000 volumes. The museum built in 1869-70 contains archee-

ological collections and about 1300 paintings and draw- ings. In 1868 a bronze statue of Laennec the inventor of the stethoscope (born at Quimper in 1781) was erected in Place St Corentin.

Quimper, or at least its suburb Locmaria (which lies below the town on the left bank of the Odet), was occupied in the time of the Romans, and numerous traces of the ancient foundations still exist. At a later period Quimpcr became the capital of Cornouailles and the residence of its kings or hereditary counts. It is said to have been Grallon Meur (i.¢., the Great) who brought the name of Cornouailles from Great Britain and founded the bishopric, which was first held by St Corentin about 495. Ho el, count of Cornouailles, marrying the sister and heiress of Duke Conan in 1066, united the countship with the duchy of Brittany. Quimper was surrounded by walls in the course of the 138th century. It suffered greatly in the local wars of succession. In 1344 it was savagely sacked by Charles of Blois. Monfort did not succeed in his attempt to take the town by storm on August 11, 1845, but it opened its gates to his son John IV. in 1364 after the victory at Auray. At a later period it sided with the Leaguc. Besides Lacunec, already mentioned, it has given birth to Kerguélen the navigator, Fréron the critic, Hardouin the anti- quary, and Count Louis de Carne. Doubtless on account of its dis- tance from the capital, Quimpcr, like Carpentras and Landerneau, has undeservedly been made a frequent butt of French popular wit.

QUINAULT, Puitipre (1635-1688), a dramatist of merit, and the only European writer who has made the opera libretto a work of literature (so much so that the popularity of opera may be said to be not a little due to him), was born at Paris on June 3, 1635. He was educated by the liberality of Tristan, the author of Marianne. His first play was produced at the Hotel de Bourgogne in 1653 when Quinault was only eighteen. It is said that it was the occasion of an important innova- tion in dramatic history. Tristan had offered it and it had been accepted as his own at the price of a hundred crowns, which, though little enough, was twice the regular price of a few years before. When Tristan told the actors that it was the work of a novice they wished to throw up their bargain and only held to it on the terms of a ninth part of the receipts. The piece succeeded and Quinault followed it up,

but he also read for the bar ; and in 1660, when he married a widow with money, he bought himself a place in the Cour des Comptes. Then he tried tragedies (Agrippa, &c.) with more success than desert. He re- ceived one of the literary pensions then recently established, and was elected to the Academy in 1670.

Up to this time he had written some sixteen or seven- teen comedies, tragedies, and tragi-comedies, of which the tragedies were mostly of very small value and the tragi- comedies not of much more. But his comedies—especially his first piece Les Rivales, L' Amant Indiscret (1654) (which has some likeness to Molitre's Htourdi, and was with it used to make up Newcastle's and Dryden's Sir Martin Mar-all), Le Fant6me Amoureux (1659), and La Mere Coquette (1665), perhaps the best—are much better. None of these styles, however, made Quinault worthy of a place here. In 1671 he contributed to the singular miscellany of Psyche, in which Corneille and Moliére also had a hand, and which was set to the music of Lulli. Here he showed a remarkable faculty for lyrical drama, and from this time till just before his death he confined himself to composing libretti for Lulli's work. This was not only very profitable (for he is said to have received four thousand livres for each, which was much more than was usually paid even for tragedy), but it established Quinault's reputation as the master of a new style,—so much so that even Boileau, who had previously attacked and satirized his dramatic work, was converted, less to the opera, which he did not like, than to Quinault's remarkably ingenious and artist-like work in it. His libretti are among the very few which are readable without the music, and which are yet carefully adapted to it. They certainly do not contain very exalted poetry or very perfect drama.

But they are quite free from the ludicrous doggerel which (not merely in English) has made the name libretto a by- word, and at the same time they have quite enough dra- matic merit to carry the reader, much more the spectator, along with them. It is not an exaggeration to say that Quinault, coming at the exact time when opera became fashionable out of Italy, had very much to do with estab- lishing it as a permanent European genre. His first piece after Psyche was a kind of classical masque, The Feast of Love

and Bacchus (1672). Then came Cadmus (1674), then in the same year and the three following Alceste, Thésée, Atys (one of his best-liked pieces), and Jsis. All these, it may be observed, were classical in subject, and so was Proserpine (1680), which was superior to any of them. The Triumph of Love (1681) is a mere ballet, but in Persée and Phaeton Quinault returned to the classical opera. Then he finally deserted it for romantic subjects, in which he was even more successful. Amadis (1684), Roland (1685), and Armide (1686) are his masterpieces, the last being the most famous and the best of all. It should perhaps be observed that the very artificiality of the French lyric of the later 17th century and its resemblance to alexandrines cut into lengths were aids to Quinault in arranging lyrical dialogue. Lulli died in 1687, and Quinault, his occupation gone (for the two had now worked together for more than fifteen years, and it would probably have been difficult to find another composer equally well suited to his librettist), became devout, began a poem called the '" Destruction of Heresy," and died on November 26, 1688. The best edition of his works is that of 1739 (Paris, 5 vols.). QUINCE. Among botanists there is a difference of opinion whether or not the quince is entitled to take rank as a distinct genus or as a section of the genus Pyrite At is not a matter of much importance whether we call the quince Pyrus Cydonia or Cydonia vulgaris. For practical purposes it is perhaps better to consider it as distinct from Pyrus, differing from that genus in the twisted manner in which the petals are arranged in the bud, and in the many-celled ovary, in which the numerous ovules are disposed horizontally, not vertically as in the pears.

The quinces are much-branched shrubs or small trees with

entire leaves, small stipules, large solitary white or pink flowers like those of a pear or apple, but with leafy calyx- lobes, and a many-celled ovary, in each cell of which are numerous horizontal ovules. The common quince is a native of Persia and Anatolia, and perhaps also of Greece and the Crimea, but in these latter localities it is doubtful whether or not the plant is not a relic of former cultivation, By Franchet and Savatier P. Cydonia is given as a native of Japan with the native name of "maroumerou." It is certain that the Greeks knew a common variety upon which they engrafted scions of a better variety which they called xvdeviov, from Cydon in Crete, whence it was obtained, and from which the names Cydonia, Codogno (Italian),

Coudougner and Coing (French), Quitte (German), and Quince have been derived. Pliny (1. N., xv. 11.) men- tions that the fruit of the quince, Malum cotoneum, warded off the influence of the evil eye ; and other legends connect it with ancient Greek mythology, as exemplified by statues in which the fruit is represented, as well as by represent- ations on the walls of Pompeii. The fragrance and astringency of the fruit of the quince are well known, and the seeds are used medicinally for the sake of the mucilage they yield when soaked in water, a peculiarity which is not met with in pears. This mucilage is analogous to, and has the same properties as, that which is formed from the seeds of linseed. In English gardens three varieties are cultivated—the apple-shaped quince, the pear-shaped quince, and the Portugal quince; the last-named has larger

oUi=o vu

fruits than the other two (4 inches in length, 3-3} in

width), of a rich yellow colour when ripe and with less

astringency, hence it is better suited for culinary and con-

fectionary purposes than the other two, but is said to be somewhat more tender. The common quince and _ its varieties are very largely used as "dwarfing " stocks on which choice pears are engrafted. The effect is to restrain the growth of the pear, increase and hasten its fruitful- ness, and enabie it to withstand the effects of cold (see Horvicutturg, vol. xii. p. 213). The common Japan quince, Pyrus or Cydonia japonica, is grown in gardens for the sake of its flowers, which vary in colour from creamy white to rich red, and are produced during the winter and early spring months. CO. Maule, a recently introduced shrub from Japan, bears a profusion of equally beautiful orange-red flowers, which are followed by fruit of a yellow colour and agreeable fragrance, so that, when cooked with sugar, it forms an agreeable conserve, as in the case of the ordinary quince. The fruit of the ordinary Japan quince is quite uneatable.

QUINCY, a city of the United States, the county seat of Adams county, Illinois, occupies a limestone bluff 125 feet above low-water mark on the east bank of the Missis- sippi at the extreme western point of the State. The

river is crossed here by the great bridge of the Hannibal and St Joseph Railroad. Quincy Bay, an arm of the river, is the finest natural harbour for steamboats on the upper Mississippi. By water Quincy is 160 miles above St Louis, and by rail 263 miles south-west of Chicago via Galesburg. Commanding an extensive view, being well built, having excellent waterworks, and forming an important centre in the railway system of the region, Quincy is both an attrac- tive and a prosperous place, with very miscellaneous in- dustries. Among the public buildings are the court-houses, St John's cathedral (1877), a medical college (1873), a city library, and several hospitals and asylums. The population in 1860 was 13,718 ; in 1870, 24,052 (1073 coloured) ; and in 1880, 27,268 (1508 coloured). Laid out in 1825 or about three years after the arrival of the first white settler, Quincy was made a town in 1834, and a city in

QUINCY, a township and seaport of the United States, in Norfolk county, Massachusetts, on a small bay of its own name in the south of Massachusetts Bay and 7 miles south-south-east of Boston by rail. It is best known for its great granite quarries, in connexion with which was constructed in 1827 the first (horse) railway in the United

States, and as the birthplace of Governor John Hancock.

and Presidents John Adams and John Quincy Adams. Among the principal buildings—chiefly situated in the village, which lies on an elevated plain near the centre of the township—are the granite town-house, the so-called Adams Temple (a church erected in 1828), beneath the portico of which are the tombs of the two Presidents Adams, the Adams Academy, a home for infirm sailors, a public library, and the mansions of the Quincy and Adams families, whose estates occupied the greater portion of the township. Quincy, which till 1792 formed part of Braintree, had 5017 inhabitants in 1850, 6779 in 1860, 7442 in 1870 and 10,570 in 1880.

QUINCY, Jostan, Jr. (1744-1775), born in Boston, Mass., 1744, is the most eminent of a well-known family whose founder emigrated to New England in 1633, At the time of his death, at the age of thirty-one, he had won distinction as a lawyer, and his place was secured in history as among the most eloquent, the most clear-sighted, and the most devoted of the men who led the American colo- nists in the measures preliminary to the revolution

In 1767 he entered upon the public discussion of political questions, maintaining with great ability and courage the

| ‘]

‘

duty of his countrymen to resist any encroachments upon their right to self-government. In 1770 he wrote An Address of the Merchants, Traders, and Freeholders of Boston in favour of a non-importation Act, asserting, about the same time, in a newspaper article that Americans would “know, resume, assert, and defend their rights” by the “arts of war” if “the arts of policy” should fail. In December 1773 he took an active and leading part in the town-meeting which virtually ordered the destruction of the cargoes of the tea-ships in Boston harbour. The appeal to the other towns for help to sustain Boston against the enforcement of the consequent Acts of Parliament was written by him ; and soon after there appeared under his own name Observations on the Boston Port Bull, with Thoughts on Cwil Society and Standing Armies, his lougest and most important political paper, which made him a marked man both in England and America. He sailed a few months afterwards for England with the approval of the leading revolutionists, to present, though unofficially, to the ministry and other public men the grievances and the determination of the colonists. After six months failing health—he had long been threatened with consumption—compelled him to return home, and he died on shipboard as the vessel was entering the harbour of Gloucester, Massachusetts, April 26, 1775.

A memoir written by his only son, Jostau Quincy (1772-1864), containing his life, correspondence, and the Observations on the Boston Port Bill, was published in 1825 (2d ed. 1874). This only son of Josiah Quincy, jun., born in Boston in February 1772, lived to be three times the age of his father, and filled public stations for more years than his father lived ; he was a member of Congress during the eventful period from 1805 to 1813 ; as the second mayor of Boston his sagacity and energy insurcd the future prosperity of that city ; in Congress he maintained at the head of the

Federal party the struggle with the disastrous foreign policy of the administrations of Jefferson and Madison, and the dangcrous growth of the slave-power, which he never ceased to qppose ; as president of Har- vard College for sixteen years (1829-45) he increased the usefulness and added to the influence of that seat of learning. He wrote a history of the college for two hundred ycars, which was also largely a history of Massachusctts. He died in June 1864 in the ninety- third year of his age. A lifc of hin, by his youngest son Edmund Quincy, an accomplished seholar and well-known author, was pub- lished in 1867.

QUINET, Epcar (1803-1875), was born at Bourg-en- Bresse, in the department of the Ain, France, on February 17, 1803. His father, Jerome Quinet, had been a com- missary in the army, but being a strong republican and disgusted with Napoleon's usurpation, he gave up his post and resided either at Bourg or at a country house which he possessed in the neighbourhood, devoting himself to scien- tific and mathematical study. Edgar, who was an only child, was much alone, but his mother (whose name was Eugénie Rozat Lagis, and who was a person of education and strong though somewhat unorthodox religious views) exercised great influence over him. He was sent to school first at Bourg and then at Lyons, where he took no part in a celebrated barring out which led to the expulsion of his schoolfellow Jules Janin. On leaving school his father wished him to go into the army and then suggested busi- ness. But Quinet was determined upon literature, and after a time got his way. His first publication, the Zab-lettes du Juif Errant, appeared in 1823. Being struck with Herder's Philosophie der Geschichte, he undertook to translate it, learnt German for the purpose, published his work in 1827, and obtained by it considerable credit. At this time he was introduced to Cousin and made the acquaintance of Michelet. He had visited Germany and England before the appearance of his book. Cousin pro- cured him a post on a Government mission to the Morea in 1829, and on his return he published in 1830 a book on La Giréce Moderne. Some hopes of employment which

by the reputation of speculative republicanism which he had acquired. But he joined the staff of the Revue des . Deux Mondes, and for some years

contributed to it numer- ous essays, the most remarkable of which was that on "Les Epopées Francaises du XIIéme Siécle," an early though not by any means the earliest appreciation of the long-neglected chansons de geste. Ahasvérus, his first ori- ginal work of consequence, appeared in 1833. This is a singular prose poem in language sometimes rather bom- bastic but often beautiful. ~~Shortly afterwards he married Minna Moré, a German girl with whom he had fallen in love some years before. Then he visited Italy, and, besides writing many essays, produced two poems, Vapoléon and Promethée (1833), which being written in verse (of which he was not a master) are inferior to Ahasvérus. In 1838 he published a vigorous reply to Strauss's Life of Jesus, and in that year he received the Legion of Honour. In 1839 he was appointed professor of foreign literature at Lyons, where he began the brilliant course of lectures afterwards embodied in the Génie des Religions. Two years later he was transferred to the Collége de France and the Génie des Religions itself appeared (1842). Quinet's Parisian professorship was more notorious than fortunate, owing, it must be said, to his own fault. His chair was one of Southern Literature, but, neglecting his proper subject, he chose, in conjunction with Michelet, to engage in a violent polemic with the Jesuits and with Ultramontanism. Two books bearing exactly these titles appeared in 1843 and 1844, and contained, as was usual with Quinet, the substance of his lectures. These excited so much disturbance and the author so obstinately refused to confine himself to literature proper that in 1846 the Government put an end to them—a course which was not disapproved by the majority of his colleagues. By this time Quinet was a pronounced republican and something of a revolutionist. He appeared in arms during the dis~~ turbances which overthrew Louis Philippe, and was elected by the department of the Ain to the Constituent and then to the Legislative Assembly, where he figured among the extreme Radical party. He had published in 1848 Les févolutions d Italie, one of his principal though not one of his best works. He wrote numerous pamphlets dur- ing the short-lived second republic, attacked the Roman expedition with all his strength, and was from the first an uncompromising opponent of Prince Louis Napoleon. He was banished from France after the coup d'état, and estab- lished himself at Brussels. His wife had died some time previously, and he now married Mademoiselle Assaki, the daughter of a Roumanian poet. At Brussels he lived for some seven years, during which he published Les Hsclaves

| (1853), a dramatic poem, Marnix de Ste Aldégonde (1854),

a study of that Reformer in which he very greatly exagger- ates Sainte Aldegonde's literary merit, and some other books. He then moved to Veytaux on the shore of the Lake of Geneva, where he continued to reside till the fall of the empire. Here his pen was busier than ever. In 1860 appeared a singular book somewhat after the fashion of Akhasvérus entitled Merlin VEnchanteur, in 1862 a Histoire de la Campagne de 1815, in 1865 an elaborate book on the French Revolution, in which the author, republican as he was, blained the acts of the revolutionists unsparingly, and by that means drew down on himself much wrath from more thoroughgoing partisans. Many pamphlets date from this period, as does La Création (1870), a third book of the class of Ahasvérus and Merlin, but even vaguer, dealing not with history, legend, or philosophy, but with physical science for the most part. Quinet had refused to return to France to join the Liberal opposition against Napoleon III., but immediately

he had after the revolution of February were frustrated | after Sedan he returned. He was then restored to his pro-

Me 3:

fessorship, and during the siege wrote vehemently against the Germans. He was elected deputy by the department of the Seine in 1871, and was one of the most obstinate opponents of the terms of peace between France and Germany. He continued to write till his death, which occurred at Versailles on the 27th March 1875. Le Stége de Paris et la Défense Nationale appeared in 1871, La République in 1872, Le Lnvre de VExilé in the year of its author's death and after it. This has been followed by three volumes of letters and some other work. Quinet had already in 1858 published a semi-biographic book called _ LTistoire de mes Idées. The whole of his very numerous works, the chief of which have been already named, have appeared in a uniform edition of which some thirty volumes are now published. His second wife, in 1870, published certain Mémoires @ Exil. There is in English an elaborate Early Life and Writings of Edgar Quinet, by R. Heath (London, 1881), but it does not go beyond the year 1842.

Quinet's character was extremely amiable, and his letters to his mother, his aeconnts of his early life, and so forth are likely always to make him interesting. He was also a man of great moral con- scientiousness, and as far as intention went perfectly disinterested, though it may perhaps be questioned whether the disappointment which he met with for years after the revolution of February had not an insensible influence in determining his republicanism. But he never temporized, and, as has been said above, hesitated not to criticize his own party as severely as his opponents. He had, how- ever, as a writer, a thinker, and a politician, drawbacks which pre- vented him from taking the first rank, and which will probably make his works, except those which are purely personal, less and less read in the future. As a writer his chief fault is want of concentration, asa thinker and politician vagueness and want of practical deter- mination. His work is very extensive and abounds in passages of great beauty. But no single book of his can be called a master- piece, and none is of sueha kind that the reader fecls the subject to have been thoroughly treated in accordance with a definite and eonsistent principle or series of principles. Of verse he had but little command, and his abundance in a certain kind of effusive prose wants chastisement and criticism. The singular rhapsodies,

of which in the threc books Ahasvérus, Merlin, and La Création he.

has left great store, are too diffuse, too inorganic, and too devoid of coherent and positive intention to rank very high. They are more like recorded dreams than anything else. His historical and philo- sophical works on the other hand, though showing much reading, fertile thought, abundant facility of expression, and occasionally, where prejudice does not come in, acute judgment, are rather (as not a few of them were in fact) reported lectures than formal treatiscs. His rhetorical power was altogether superior to his logical power, and the natural consequence is that his work is full of contradictions. These contradictions were,.moreover, due not merely to an incapacity or an unwillingness to argue strictly, but also to the presence in his mind of a large number of inconsistent tastes and prejudices which he either could not or would not co- ordinate into an intelligible creed. Thus he has the strongest attraction for the picturesque side of medievalism and catholicity, the strongest repulsion for the restrictions which medieval and Catholic institutions imposed on individual liberty. Hc

refused to submit himself to any form of positive orthodoxy, yet when a man like Strauss pushed unorthodoxy to its extreme limits Quinet revolted, As a politician he acted with the extreme Radicals, yet universal suffrage, the cardinal doctrine of Radicalism, disgusted him as unreasonable in its principle and dangerous in its results. His pervading characteristic, therefore, is that of an eloquent vagueness, very stimulating and touching at times, but as deficient in coereive force of matter as it is in lastiug precision and elegance of form. He is less inaccurate in fact than Michelet, but he is also much less one-ideaed, and the result is that he seldom attains to the vivid representation of which Michelet was a master. (G. SA.)

QUININE, the most important of the active principles contained in cinchona bark (see CrncHona, vol. v. p. 780). Although the value of this bark in the treatment of intermittent fevers became widely known in 1638 through the cure of the countess of Chinchon, it was not until 1810 that any attempt was made to determine definitely the active principles to which its properties were due. In that year Gomez of Lisbon obtained a mixture of alkaloids by treating an alcoholic extract of the bark with water and then adding a solution of caustic potash. To this he gave the name of cinchonino. In 1820 two French

evTIA_ ATs

chemists, Pelletier and Caventou, proved that the cin- chonino of Gomez contained two alkaloids which they named quinine and cinchonine. Some years afterwards quinidine and cinchonidine were discovered, and subse- quently several other alkaloids, but in smaller quantity, in different varieties of the bark.

Chemistry.—The alkaloids appear to exist in cinchona bark chiefly in combination with cinchotannic and quinic acids, since solvents of the alkaloids in the free state do not dissolve out any from the powdered bark. The cinchotannic acid apparently becomes altered by atmo- spheric oxidation into a red-colouring matter, known as cinchono-fulvic acid or cinchona red, which is very abundant in some species, as in C'. succirubra. For this reason those barks which, like C. Calisaya, C. officinalis, and C. Ledgeriana, contain but little colouring matter are preferred by manufacturers, the quinine being more easily extracted from them in a

colourless form. The value of cinchona bark for the manufacture of quinine depends on the amount of quinine sulphate that can be prepared from it in the crystalline form. The exact mode of extraction adopted by manufacturers is kept a profound secret. That hitherto adopted by the Indian Government for the preparation of the cinchona febrifuge (see below) has the merit of simplicity, but the whole of the alkaloid present in the bark is not obtained by it. This method is to exhaust the powdered bark as far as possible by means of water acidulated with hydrochloric acid and then to pre- cipitate the mixed alkaloids by caustic soda. Another method which is said to give better results consists in mixing the powdered bark with milk of lime, drying the mass slowly with frequent stirring, exhausting the powder with boiling alcohol, removing the excess of alcohol by distillation, adding sufficient dilute sulphuric acid to dis- solve the alkaloid and throw down colouring matter and traces of lime, c&c., filtering, and allowing the neutralized liquid to deposit crystals. The sulphates of the alkaloids thus obtained are not equally soluble in water, and the sulphate of quinine can consequently be separated by fractional crystallization, since, being less soluble in water than the other sulphates, it crystallizes out first.

The quinine of commerce is the neutral sulphate, containing 74 molecules of water of crystallization, and having the formula (C,,H,,N,O,).. H,SO,+1°H,O. When crystallized from alcohol, or when dried over sulphuric acid, it contains only 2 molecules. Cownley has shown that the salt containing 2 molecules of water is the most per- manent one, for when the commercial sulphate containing 7% molecules is dried at 100° C. it becomes anhydrous, and when subsequently exposed freely to the air it rapidly absorbs 2 molecules of water; and that the commercial salt, if exposed to the air, effloresces until only 2 mole- cules of water are retained.!

Two other sulphates are known. The one contains a single equivalent of acid, and in commerce bears the name of acid sulphate or soluble sulphate of quinine; it is soluble in 11 parts of water, but with considerable diffi- culty in absolute alcohol. The other sulphate contains 2 equivalents of sulphuric acid, is very soluble in cold water, but quite insoluble in ether; it is not an article of commerce. Both these sulphates crystallize with 7 molecules of water.

The neutral sulphate of quinine occurs in commerce in the form of slender white acicular crystals, which are very light and bulky. It is soluble in about 740 parts of cold water, but in 30 of boiling water, 60 of rectified spirits of wine (sp. gr. 0°85), and 40 of glycerin. Its solubility in water is lessened by the presence of sodium or magnesium sulphate, but is increased by nitrate of potassium,

' Pharm. Jour., [8], vol. vii p. 189.

ee

chloride of ammonium, and most acids. It is not

soluble in fixed oils or in ether, although the pure alkaloid is soluble in both. It becomes phosphorescent

on trituration. When prescribed it is generally rendered more soluble in water by the addition of dilute sulphuric

acid or of citric acid, one drop of the former or $ths of a grain of the latter being used for each grain of the sulphate of quinine.

When a solution of quinine is exposed to sunlight it assumes a yellowish or brown colour due to the formation of " quiniretin," a body which is isomeric with quinine but has mot an alkaline reaction, is not precipitated by tannin, and has an aromatic as well as a bitter taste. Quinine is precipitated from its solution by alkalies and their carbonates. It is very soluble in solution of ammonia, and also slightly soluble in lime water.

The acid solution of sulphate of quinine is fluorescent, especially when dilute; it is levogyrate; and when a solution of chlorine is first added and then ammonia an emerald green colour, due to the formation of thalleoquin, is developed. This test answers with a solution contain- ing only 1 part of quinine in 5000, or in a solution containing not more than 55 Zo part if bromine be used instead of chlorine. The fluorescence is visible in an acid solution containing one part in 200,000 of water.

Quinine forms with sulphuric acid and iodine a com- pound known as herapathite, 4C,,H,,N,O,.3S0,H,. 61 +3H,O, which possesses optical properties similar to those of tourmaline; it is soluble in 1000 parts of boiling water; and its sparing solubility in cold alcohol has been utilized for estimating quinine quantitatively. The other alkaloids are distinguished from quinine thus:—quinidine resembles quinine, but is dextrogyrate, and the iodide is very in- soluble in water; the solution of cinchonidine, which is levogyrate, does not give the thalleoquin test, nor fluor- escence; cinchonine resembles cinchonidine in these respects, but is dextrogyrate.

Commercial sulphate of quinine frequently contains from 1 to 10 per cent. of the sulphate of cinchonidine owing to the use of barks containing it. The sulphate of cinchonidine is more soluble than that of quinine; and, when 1 part of quinine sulphate suspected to contain it is nearly dissolved in 24 parts of boiling water, the sulphate of quinine crystallizes out on cooling, and the cinchonidine is found in the clear mother liquor, from which it can be precipitated by a solution of tartrate of potassium and sodium, Samples of quinine in which cinchonidine is present usually contain, according to Hesse, a smaller per- centage of water than the pure sulphate, the cinchonidine salt exercising a reducing influence on the quinine salt in this respect. Traces of quinidine are also sometimes, though rarely, found in commercial quinine, but, since quinidine is even more valuable as a medicine than quinine, its presence does not detract in a medicinal point of view from the value of the latter.

Owing to its voluminous character, as much as 18 per cent. of water may remain present in apparently dry samples of sulphate of quinine. If it loses more than

14°6 per cent. of water when dried at 100° C. it contains

an excessive amount of moisture. Owing to its variability in this respect the hydrochlorate of quinine has been recommended as a more constant salt; it also possesses advantages from a therapeutical point of view.

Sulphate of quinine manufactured from cuprea bark (Remyjia pedunculata) is liable to contain from ‘10 to ‘90 per cent. of sulphate of homoquinine, which almost coincides in solubility with sulphate of quinine. Homo-

quinine has been shown by Paul and Cownley to be decomposed on treatment with caustic soda into quinine and a new alkaloid, cupreine, in the proportion of 2 to 3.

They have also shown that cupreine is soluble in a solu- tion of caustic soda (differing in this respect from quinine), and that therefore it is easy to prepare sulphate of quinine perfectly free from either homoquinine or cupreine. So far as the medicinal properties of cupreine and homo- quinine are at present known they appear to be of no practical importance.}

In consequence of the high price of the alkaloid an attempt was made a few years since by the Government of India to manufacture from cinchona bark a cheap febrifuge which should represent the alkaloids contained in the bark and form a substitute for quinine. This enterprise met with such success that in 1884 as much as 8714 Ib of the febrifuge were prepared; and during the previous year 9144 Ib were distributed, of which 4880 ib were supplied to the Government institutions at a cost of little more than a rupee per ounce.

This mixture is known as cinchona febrifuge, and is prepared chiefly from C. succtrubra, which succeeds better in India than the other species in cultivation, and grows at a lower elevation, being consequently procurable in large quantities at a comparatively low price. A mixture of the cinchona alkaloids, consisting principally of cinchoni- dine sulphate, with smaller quantities of the sulphates of quinine and cinchonine, is sold under the name of " quine- tum" at a cheaper rate than quinine.

In 1870 the Indian Government purchased no less than 81,600 ounces of sulphate of quinine, besides 8832 ounces of the sulphates of cinchonine, cinchonidine, and quinidine ; but at the present date it is able to meet the require- ments of its establishments almost entirely by the cinchona febrifuge prepared at the Government plantations in India.

Although quinine is manufactured in the United States, a large quantity has been imported from Europe since the high duty levied on its manufacture has been removed. There is considerable difficulty in obtaining trustworthy statistics as to the extent of the manufacture of quinine. The largest sale that has taken place in America appears to have been in 1883, when 14 tons

were put up to auction, and in the same year 16,000 ounces were sold in London and a similar quantity at Berlin.

Phystological Action.—Quinine arrests the movements of the white corpuscles of the blood, rendering them round and darkly granulate, and, by.preventing them from making their exit from the blood-vessels, diminishes or arrests the formation of pus in inflammation and causes contrac- tion of the spleen when that organ is enlarged. It acts upon the cerebro-spinal nervous system, giving rise to headache and a sense of tension in the brain; these symptoms may be removed by the addition of hydrobromic acid or prevented by the use of the hydrobromide of quinine. It acts through the sympathetic nervous system on the heart, and is thus capable of restraining all the animal processes which develop heat, organic changes, or muscular action. It is antagonistic to atropine in its physiological action.

The use of quinine in medicine dates from its discovery in 1820. Its chief value is as an antiperiodic, especially in intermittent fevers, but also in other diseases when they assume a periodic character, such as neuralgia, asthma, hooping cough, &c. In blood poisoning, whether arising from natural or traumatic causes, it has been found of great utility. Its curative powers in sunstroke have been repeatedly proved in the East Indies, and a dose of quinine will often cut short an attack of catarrh if taken in the early stage. In malarial districts persons have

1 Pharm. Jour, and Trans., [8], vol. xii. p. 497, and vol. xv. p.

729.

been exposed to miasmatic influence without danger after taking a dose or two of five grains of quinine once or twice a day. In the smallest medicinal doses it is purely tonic, in larger ones stimulant ; but it differs from other medicines of the same class in the stimulant action being longer sus- tained. In large doses it acts as a sedative, and in exces- sive doses it is poisonous.

In some individuals it pro- duces an erythematous eruption, and it is also known to act as an oxytocic. Large doses also sometimes produce deafness, and act injuriously in all inflammatory states of the mucous membrane.

The other alkaloids of cinchona bark—quinidine, cincho- nidine, and cinchonine—also possess similar properties, quinidine being even more effectual than quinine ; but cinchonine appears to produce nausea and gastric disturb- ance. This is also the case with the cinchona febrifuge prepared from C. succirubra.

Until the year 1867 English manufacturers of quininc were eutirely dependent upon South America for their supplies of cinchona bark, which were obtained exclusively from uncultivated trees, growing chiefly in Bolivia, Peru, and Ecuador, the prin- cipal species which were used for the purpose being Cinchona Calisaya, Wedd. ; C. officinalis, Hook. ; C. macrocalyz, var. Palton, How. ; C. Pitayensis, Wedd. ; C. micrantha, R. and P.; and C. lanctfolia, Mutis. Since the cultivation of cinchona trees was com- meuced in Java, India, Ceylon, and Jamaica, several other species, as well as varieties and hybrids cultivated in those countries, have been used.! Recently C. lanctfolia, var. Calisaya, Wedd., known as the calisaya of Sauta Fé, has been strongly recommended for cultivation, because the shoots of felled trees afford bark containing a considerable amount of quinine ; C. Pitaycnsis has also been lately introduced into the Indian plantations on account of yielding the valuable alkaloid quinidine, as well as quinine, but the last two species have not as yet been grown in sufficient quantities to afford marketable bark.

The first importation from India took place in 1867, since which time the cultivated bark has arrived in Europe in constantly increasing quantities, London being the chief market for the Indian barks and Amsterdam for those of Java. The principal sales take place in May. In 1876, when Indian calisaya bark first came into the European market, the imports into London were the following :—Cinchona succirubra, 45,000 tb; C. officinalis, 20,000 Ib; C. Calisaya, 1000 tb. During the last few years Cinchona Cali- saya has also been eultivated extensively in Bolivia and in Tolima, United States of Colombia, and this bark, which had almost dis- appeared from

commerce, is likely in a few years to again become an available source of quinine.

In order to obtain the cultivated bark as economically as possible, experiments were made some years ago by M‘lvor and others which resulted in the discovery that, if the bark were removed from the trunks in alternate strips soas not to injure the cambium, or actively growing zone, a new layer of bark was formed in one year which was richer in quinine than the original bark and equal in thickness to that of two or three years’ ordinary growth. This is known in commerce as renewed bark. The process has been found to be most conveniently practised when the trees are eight years old, at which age the bark separates most easily. The yield of quinine has been ascertained to increase annually until the eleventh year, at which it seems to reach its maximum. The portion of the trunk from which the bark has been removed is sometimes pro- tected by moss, and the new bark which forms is then distin- guished by the name of mossed bark. The species which yield the largest ainount of quinine are by uo means the easiest to cultivate, and experiments have consequently been made in cross-fertilization and grafting with the view of giving vigour of growth to delicate trees yielding a large amount of alkaloid or of increasing the yield

1Tn Java, C. Calisaya, vars. anglica, javanica, Hasskarliana, and Ledgeriana; C. officinalis, var. angustifolia; C. lancifolia; C. caloptera, Mig.; C. micrantha and C. succirubra, How. In India, C. succirubra, C. officinalis, vars. angustifolia, crispa, Uritusinga, and Bonplandiana, and to a lesser extent C. Calisaya, vars. Boliviana and microcarpa; C. micrantha, C. Peruviana, How., and C. nitida, R. and P., form only a small proportion of the plantations. Sinee Mr J. E. Howard, the eminent quinologist, pointed out that C. Pahu- diana, How., and C. Calisaya, vars. javanica, Hasskarliana, and anglica, were likely to lead to disappointment as quinine-yielding speeies, these have been replaced in the plantations as rapidly as possible by the more valuable speeies, of which C. Ledgeriana, yield- ing from 5 to 10 per eent. or even more of quinine, C. officinalis, and a hybrid between C. officinalis and C. succirubra which has been named C. robusta, Trimen, are the most important.

in strong growing trees affording but little quinine. Grafting, how- ever, has not been found to answer the purpose, since the stock and the graft have been found to retain their respective alkaloids in the natural proportion just as if growing separately. Hybridization also is very uncertain, and is very difficult to carry out effectually; hence the method of propagating the best varieties by cuttings has been adopted except in the case of those which do not strike readily, as in C. Ledgcriana, in which the plants are grown from the shoots of felled trees.

A few years ago it was discovered that a bark imported from the United States of Colombia under the name of cuprea bark, and derived from Remijia pedunculata, Triana, and other species, con- tained quinine to the extent of 4 to 25 per cent., and in 1881 this bark was exported in enormous quantities from Santander, exceed- ing in amount the united importations of all the other cinchona barks; and by reason of its cheapness this has since that date been largely used for the manufacture of quinine.

The imports of cinchona bark into London in 1884, including cuprea bark, arc stated to have been 59,287 bales, into France 9271 bales, and into New York 8150 bales.

Cinchona bark as imported is never uniform in quality. The South-American kinds contain a variable admixture of inferior barks, and the cultivated Indian barks comprise, under the respec- tive names of yellow, pale, and red barks, a number of varieties of unequal value. For this reason a sample from every bale is analysed before the importations are offered for sale.

The alkaloids arc contained, according to Howard, ehiefly in the cellular tissue next to the liber. No definite knowledge has as yet been attained of the exact steps by which quinine is formed in nature in the tissues of the bark, nor have the numerous cndeavonrs that have been made to build up quinine artificially or to obtain some idea of its constitution by splitting it up into its component parts been more successful. Nearly all that is known at present has resulted from analyses of the leaves, bark, and root. From these it appears that quinine is present only in small quantities in the leaves, in larger quantity in the stem bark, and inereasing in proportion as it approaches the root, where quinine appears to decrease and cinchonine to increase in amount, although the root bark is generally richer in alkaloids

thau that of the stem. The altitude at which the trces are grown seems to affect the production of quinine, since it has been proved that the yield of quinine in C. officinalis is less when the trees are grown below 6000 feet than above that elevation, and that cinchonidine, quinidine, and resin are at the same time increased in amount. It has also been shown by Broughton that C. perwviana, which yields cinchonine but no quinine at a height of 6000 feet, when grown at 7800 feet gives uearly as much crystallized sulphate of quinine, and almost as readily, as C. officinalis. Karsten also ascertained by experiments made at Bogota on C. lancifolia that the barks of one district were sometimes devoid of quinine, while those of the same spccies from a neighbouring locality yielded 34 to 44 per cent. of the sulphate , moreover, Dr De Vrij found that the bark of C. officinalis cultivated at Utakamand varied in the yield of quinine from 1 to 9 per cent. In these cases the variation may have been due to altitude. Free access of air to the tissues also seems to increase the yield of quinine, for the renewed bark is found to contain more quinine than the original bark.

See Pharmacographia, 2d ed., pp. 859-3870; Howard, Quinology of the East Indian Plantations; Hesse in Pharm. Jour. and Trans., ser. 3, vol. iv. pp. 649- 750, 795; Bartholow, Materia Medica and Therapeutics ; King, Manual of Cin- chona Cultivation. (E, M. H.)

QUINSY. See Tonst1itis.

QUINTANA, Manvet Joss (1772-1857), Spanish poet and man of letters, was born at Madrid on April 11, 1772, and after completing his studies at Salamanca was called to the bar. In 1801 he produced an unsuccessful tragedy El Duque de Viseo; his Pelayo (1805), appeal- ing as it did to the spirit of resistance to foreign oppression, was much more successful. The first volume of his some- what rhetorical and superficial Vidas de Espafioles Célebres, in 1807, containing lives of Spaniards who had success- fully opposed the enemies of their country, was similar in motive, and at the outbreak of the revolution of 1808 Quintana, as journalist (Variedades, and Semanarvo patriotico), as secretary to the cortes and the regency, and also as "the Spanish Tyrteus" (Odas @ Espaiia hobre, 1808), rendered important services to the patriotic cause. On the return of Ferdinand VII. in 1814 he shared the fate of other "liberals " or "

constitutionalists," and had to endure six years' imprisonment in Pamplona, obtaining his release only in 1820, when he was named president of the department of public instruction under the new Govern-

ment. The counter-revolution of 1823 again drove him from office, to which he was once more restored after the death of the king in 1833. In 1835 he was made a senator and peer ; and in 1855, at a meeting of the cortes, a laurel crown was placed on his head by Queen Isabella II., whose " governor" he had been during her minority. He died at Madrid on March 11, 1857.

The works of Quintana form the 19th volume in Ribadaneyra's Biblioteca de Autores Espafioles (1852). The third and last volume of the Vidas appeared in 1833. The biographies of Nufiez de Bilboa, Pizarro, The Cid, Guzman el Bueno, Gonsalvo de Cordova, and one or two others have been translated into English.

QUINTILIAN (M. Fasrvus QuINnTILIANUS) was born in the obscure Spanish town of Calagurris (Calahorra), on the Ebro, in the country of the Vascones, not later than 35 a.p. Concerning his family and his life but few facts remain. His father taught rhetoric, with no great success, at Rome, and Quintilian must have come there at an early age to reside, and must have there grown up to manhood. The years from 61 to 68 he spent in Spain, probably attached In some capacity to the retinue of the future emperor Galba, with whom he returned to the capital. Quintilian must have brought back with him a considerable reputation as arhetorician. For at least twenty years after the acces- sion of. Galba he was at the head of the foremost school of oratory in Rome, and may fairly be called the Isocrates of his time. He also gained some but not a great repute as a pleader in the courts. His greatest speech appears to have been a defence of the queen Berenice, on what charge is not known. For a member of a learned profession his circumstances were easy ; but the question of Juvenal, " How is it that Quintilian owns so many estates?" ought perhaps not to be accepted as evidence of great wealth. Vespasian created for him a professorial chair of rhetoric, liberally endowed with public money, and from this time he was unquestionably, as Martial calls him, "the supreme

controller of the restless youth." About the year 88 Quintilian retired from teach- ing and from pleading, to compose his great work on the training of the orator (Institutio Oratoria). After two years' retirement he was entrusted by Domitian with the education of two grand-nephews, whom he destined as suc- eessors to his throne. Quintilian gained the titular rank of consul, and probably died not long before the accession of Nerva (96 a.p.). A good many years earlier his wife had died at the age of nineteen, leaving him two sons, one of whom died when seven years old, the other in his "eae year, while the father was engaged upon his great work.

Such is the scanty record that remains of Quintilian's uneventful life. But it is possible to determine with some accuracy his relation to the literature and culture of his time, which he powerfully influenced. His career brings home to us the vast change which in a few generations had passed over Roman taste, feeling, and society. In the days of Cicero rhetorical teaching had been entirely in the hands of the Greeks. Even Cicero, when he wrote his rhetorical works, was driven to plead that it could not be disgraceful to teach what it was not disgraceful to learn. The Greek language, too, was in the main the vehicle of instruction in rhetoric. The first attempt to open a Latin rhetorical school, in 94 B.c., was crushed by authority, and not until the time of Augustus was there any professor of the art who had been born to the full privileges of a Roman citizen. The appointment of Quintilian as professor by the chief of the state marks the last stage in the emancipation of rhetorical teaching from the old Roman prejudices.

During the hundred years or more which elapsed between the death of Cicero and the birth of Quintilian education all over the Roman empire had spread enor-

mously, and the education of the time found its end and climax in rhetoric. Mental culture was for the most part acquired, not for its own sake, but as a discipline to develop skill in speaking, the paramount qualification for a public career. Rome, Italy, and the provinces alike resounded with rhetorical exercitations, which were pro- moted on all sides by professorships, first of Greek, later also of Latin rhetoric, endowed from municipal funds. The mock contests of the future orators roused a vast

amount of popular interest. In Gaul, Spain, and Africa these pursuits were carried on with even greater energy than at Rome. The seeds of the existing culture, such as it was, bore richer fruit on the fresh soil of the Western provinces than in the exhausted lands of Italy and the Kast. While Quintilian lived, men born in Spain domin- ated the Latin schools and the Latin literature, and he died just too soon to see the first provincial, also of Spanish origin, ascend the imperial throne.

As an orator, a teacher, and an author, Quintilian set himself to stem the current of popular taste which found its expression in what we are wont to call silver Latin. In his youth the influence of the younger Seneca was dominant. But the teacher of Quintilian was a man of another type, one whom he ventures to class with the old orators of Rome. This was Domitius Afer, a rhetorician of Nimes, who rose to the consulship. Quintilian, however, owed more to the dead than to the living. His great model was Cicero, of whom he speaks at all times with unbounded eulogy, and whose faults he could scarce bring himself to mention; nor could he well tolerate to hear them mentioned by others. The reaction against the Ciceronian oratory which had begun in Cicero's own lifetime had acquired overwhelming strength after his death. Quintilian failed to check it, as another teacher of rhetoric, equally an admirer of Cicero, had failed—the historian Livy. Seneca the elder, a clear-sighted man who could see in Cidéero much to praise, and was not blind to the faults of his own age, condemned the old style as lacking in power, while Tacitus, in his Dialogue on Orators, includes Cicero among the men of rude and "unkempt" antiquity. The great movement for the poetization of Latin prose which was begun by Sallust ran its course till it culminated in the monstrous style of Fronto. In the courts judges, juries, and audiences alike demanded what was startling, quaint, or epigrammatic, and the speakers practised a thousand tricks to satisfy the demand. Oratory became above all things an art whose last thought was to conceal itself. It is not surprising that Quintilian's forensic efforts won for him no great reputation.

The Jnstitutio Oratoria is one long protest against the tastes of the age. Starting with the maxim of Cato the Censor that the orator is 'the good man who is skilled in speaking," Quintilian takes his future orator at birth and shows how this goodness of character and skill in speaking may be best

produced. No detail of training in infancy, boyhood, or youth is too petty for his attention. The parts of the work which relate to general education are of great interest and importance. Quintilian postulates the widest culture ; there is no form of knowledge from which something may not be extracted for his purpose; and he is fully alive to the importance of method in education. He ridicules the fashion of the day, which hurried over preliminary cultivation, and allowed men to grow grey while declaiming in the schools, where nature and reality were forgotten. Yet he develops all the technicalities of rhetoric with a fulness to which we find no parallel in ancient literature. ven in this portion of the work the illustrations are so apposite and the style so dignified and yet sweet that the modern reader, whose initial interest in rhetoric is of necessity faint, is carried along with much

less fatigue than is necessary to master most parts of the rhetorical writings of Aristotle and Cicero. At all times the student feels that he is in the company of a high-toned gentleman who, so far as he could do so without ceasing to be a Roman, has taken up into his nature the best results of ancient culture in allitsforms. His literary sympathies are extraordinarily wide. When obliged to condemn, as in the case of Seneca, he bestows generous and even extravagant praise on such merit as he can find. He can cordially admire even Sallust, the true fountain-head of the style which he combats, while he will not suffer Lucilius to lie under the aspersions of Horace. The passages in which Quintilian reviews the literature of Greece and Rome are justly celebrated. The judgments which he passes may be in many instances traditional, but, looking to all the circumstances of the time, it seems remarkable that there should then have lived at Rome a single man who could make them his own and give them expression. The form in which these judgments are rendered is admirable. The gentle justness of the sentiments is accompanied by a curious felicity of phrase. Who can forget "the immortal swiftness of Sallust," or "the milky richness of Livy," or how " Horace soars now and then, and is full of sweetness and grace, and in his varied forms and phrases is most fortunately bold"? Ancient literary criticism perhaps touched its highest point in the hands of Quintilian.

To comprehensive sympathy and clear intellectual vision Quintilian added refined tenderness and freedom from self-assertion. 'Taking him all in all, we may say that his personality must have been the most attractive of his time—more winning and at the same time more lofty than that of the younger Pliny, his pupil, into whom no small portion of the master's spirit, and even some tincture of the master's literary taste, was instilled. It does not surprise us to hear that Quintilian attributed any success he won as a pleader to his command of pathos, a quality in which his great guide Cicero excelled. In spite of some extravagances of phrase, Quintilian's lament (in his sixth book) for his girl-wife and his boy of great promise is the most pathetic of all the lamentations for bereavement in which Latin literature is so rich. In his precepts about early education Quintilian continually shows his shrinking from cruelty and "oppression. The educational method of ' Orbilius, abounding in blows," has never been more earnestly rebuked.

Quintilian for the most part avoids passing opinions on the problems of philosophy, religion, and politics. The professed philosopher he disliked almost as much as did Isocrates. He deemed that ethics formed the only valuable part of philosophy and that ethical teaching ought to be in the hands of the rhetoricians. In the divine govern- ment of the universe he seems to have had a more than ornamental faith, though he doubted the immortality of the soul. As to politics Quintilian, like others of his time, felt free to eulogize the great anti-Ceesarean leaders of the dying republic, but only because the assumption was universal that the system they had championed was gone for ever. But Quintilian did not trouble himself, as Statius did, to fling stones at the emperors Caligula and Nero, who had missed their deification. He makes no remark, laudatory or otherwise, on the government of any emperor before Domitian. No character figured more largely in the rhetorical controversies of the schools than the ideal despot, but no word ever betrayed a conscious- ness that the actual occupant of the Palatine might exemplify the themes. Quintilian has often been re- proached with his flattery of Domitian. No doubt it was fulsome. But it is confined to two or three passages, not thrust continually upon the reader, as by Statius and

Martial. To refuse the charge of Domitian's expected successors would have been perilous, and equally perilous would it have been to omit from the Lnstitutio Oratorva all mention of the emperor. And there was at the time only one dialect in which a man of letters could speak who set any value on his personal safety. There was a choice between extinction and the writing of a few sentences in the loathsome court language, which might serve as an official test of loyalty. So Quintilian, man of honour though he was, swallowed the test as best he might, even as two generations ago in England unbelievers took the sacrament to avoid exclusion from municipal affairs.

The Latin of Quintilian is not always free from the faults of style which he condemns in others. It also exhibits many of the usages and constructions which are characteristic of the silver Latin. But no writer of the decadence departs less widely from the best models of the late republican period. The language is on the whole clear and simple, and varied without resort to rhetorical devices and poetical conceits. Besides the Jnstitutio Oratoria, there have come down to us under Quintilian's name 19 longer and 145 shorter Declamationes, or school exercitations on themes like those in the Controversiw of Seneca. The longer pieces are certainly not Quintilian's. The shorter were probably published, if not by himself, at least from notes taken at his lessons. It is strange that they could ever have been supposed to belong to a later century ; the style proclaims them to be of Quintilian's school and time. The works of Quintilian have often been edited. Of the editions of the whole works the chief is that by Burmann (1720) ; of the Jnstitutio Oratoria that by Spalding, completed by Zumpt and Bonnell (1798-1834, the last volume containing a lexicon), and that by Halm (1868). The tenth book of the Jnséi- tutio Oratoria has often been separately edited, as by Krueger, Bonnell, Mayor (unfinished), and others. There is a critical edition of the 145 Declamationes by C. Ritter (1885). (J. S. RB.)

QUINTUS SMYRNAEUS, a late epic poet of Greece, sometimes called Quintus Calaber because his poem was discovered at Otranto in Calabria. Next to nothing is known of him. He appears to have lived in the latter part of the 4th century, shortly before Nonnus. He speaks of himself as having tended sheep in his youth at Smyrna (bk. xii. 308 sqg.). His epic in fourteen

books, known as 7a ped' "Ounpov or the Posthomerica, takes up the tale of Troy at the point where Homer's Iliad breaks off, 2.¢., after the death of Hector, and carries it down to the capture of the city by the Greeks. It describes the doughty deeds and deaths of Penthesilea the Amazon (bk. i.), Memnon, son of the Morning (bk. ii.), and Achilles (bk. iti.); the funeral games in honour of Achilles (bk. iv.); the contest for the arms of Achilles and the death of Ajax (bk. v.); the exploits of Neoptolemus and Deiphobus, the deaths of Paris and Cinone, the capture of Troy by means of the wooden horse, the sacrifice of Polyxena at the grave of Achilles, the departure of the Greeks, and their dispersal by the storm (bks. vi—xiv.). The poet has no originality ; in conception and style his work is closely modelled on Homer. His materials are borrowed from the cyclic poems from which Virgil also drew, in particular the Athiopis of Arctinus and the Little Iliad of Lesches. The style is clear, but the poem is flat and tedious, in spite of the abundance of similes with which the poet seeks to relieve its dulness.

The first edition of Quintus Smyrneus was published by Aldus Manutius in 1504 or 1505 ; in this century there have been editions by Tychsen, 1807, Lehrs in the Didot edition of Hesiod, &c., 1841, and two editions by Kochley in 1850 (Weidmann) and 1853 (Teubner). Sainte-Beuve has an essay on him.

QUITO, the capital of the republic of Ecuador, South America, an archbishopric, and the chief town of a depart- ment, lies 14' of latitude south of the equator, and in 79° 45' W. long., at a height of 9520 feet above the sea. In ancient times it was connected with Cuzco by a paved highway, portions of which still exist; but under Spanish rule it was allowed to relapse almost into the natural isolation of its position. Since 1870, however,

two carriage roads have been constructed from Quito to Milagro on the Guayaquil river and to the province of Manabi respectively. The railway projected between the city of Guayaquil and Quito has as yet advanced inland only to Chimbo bridge at the foot of the Andes, so that the really difficult part of the enterprise remains un- touched ; a telegraph line, however, has been opened. The distance between these two leading cities of

the republic is 200 miles by road, and the transit of goods takes fourteen days and costs from 10 to 14 dollars per cargo of 250 bb. Though built on the eastern skirts of the magnificent volcano of Pichincha (15,827 feet) and within 5 miles of its crater, Quito is not within sight of the sumniit, a secondary eminence known to the Incas as Yavira, and now as Panecillo, rising between. The site is an irregular plain traversed by two ravines running down from the mountain, one of which is arched over so as not to inter- fere with the alignment of the streets. Though the streams flow east at first, they really belong to the system of the Perucho which discharges into the Pacific near Esmeraldas. The houses, mostly of sun-dried brick, are usually low and squat, and not a chimney is to be seen. The public buildings are also of a massive and heavy- looking Spanish type. In the principal square are the cathedral, with a fine marble porch, the Government house, with a colonnade running the whole length of the facade, and the palace of the nuncio. But the finest building in Quito is the college of the Jesuits, part of which is occupied by the university, an institution long rendered interesting to Englishmen by the presence of the venerable botanist Dr William Jameson. There is a public library in the city of 20,000 volumes, and a polytechnic school was instituted in 1872. The local manufactures are confined to coarse cotton and woollen stuffs, thread, lace, hosiery, silk, and a certain amount of jewellery. About 1870 the population was estimated by Dr Jameson at between 30,000 and 40,000 ; the Almanach de Gotha for 1885 states it as 80,000.

Quito (the city of the Quitus, a race akin to the Quichuas of Peru) was peacefully conquered by the Spanish captain Sebastian Benalcazar in 1533. It received' the rank of a Spanish city in 1541 from Charles V., and became the capital of the province of Quito in the viceroyalty of New Granada. More than once it has suffered severely from earthquakes : in 1797, for example, 40,000 of its inhabitants were thus destroyed ; and in March 22, 1859, property was damaged to the value of $3,000,000.

QUOITS. This pastime resembles the ancient discus- throwing which formed one of the five games of the Greek pentathlon (see Discus, vol. vii. p. 258). The modern quoit, however, is a far lighter missile, and consists of a circular iron ring to be thrown or pitched in play at a fixed object. This ring is flattened, having a thick inner edge and thin outer one. 'he latter is

slightly indented at a Siven spot to receive the tip of the player's forefinger with- out cutting it. There is no limit to the weight of a quoit, but this should be specified before commencing a match. The diameter is restricted to 8 inches over all. Two iron Pins, called "hobs," are driven into the ground at a certain distance apart, generally 19 yards. There may be one or more players a side, and each has two quoits. These he may throw successively ; or else each player throws one Only at a time and a second round follows in the same order, as may have been agreed on. The throwing takes place the reverse way after each round. A player grasps the quoit with his forefinger along the outer edge and the tip in the dent, holding the two surfaces between the thumb and the other fingers. In pitching, a slight rotary Motion is imparted by the wrist, in order that the quoit may pass smoothly and horizontally through the air, and alight flat. Fach player attempts to make his quoit pitch on the hob or pin so that the head of the latter passes

oy

through the circular opening in the centre of the missile, Such a success is termed a " ringer," and two is scored. Quoits of opposite sides alighting equidistant from the pin do not score at all. Ifa player has both his quoits nearer the pin than any of his opponents he scores two ; while if only one be nearer he is entitled to count one to his credit. The game is popular in many country towns and villages of England and in the mining districts of the Midlands and Lancashire. The rules were drawn up as follows in 1869 :—

1. That the distance from pin to pin be 19 yards, and that the player stand level with the pin, and deliver his quoit with the first step. 2. That no quoit be allowed which measures more than 8 inches external diameter, but the weight may be unlimited. 3. That the pins be 1 inch above the clay. 4, That all measurements be taken from any visible part of the pin to the uearest visible part of the quoit. No clay or quoit to be disturbed. 5. That no quoit count unless fairly delivercd in the clay free from the outer rim, and that no quoit on its back count unless it holds clay or is knocked out by another quoit. That no quoit rolling on the clay count unless it first strikes another quoit or the pin. 6. That each player deliver his quoits in succession, his opponent then following. ?. That an umpire be appointed, and in all cases of dispute his decision be final.

QUO WARRANTO, in English law, is the name given to an ancient prerogative writ calling upon any person usurping any office, franchise, liberty, or privilege belonging to the crown to show "by what warrant" he maintained his claim. It lay also for non-user or misuser of an office, &e. If the crown succeeded, judgment of forfeiture or ouster was given against the defendant. The procedure was regulated by statute as early as 1278 (the statute of Quo Warranto, 6 Edw. I.c. 1). After atime the cumbrous- ness and inconvenience of the ancient practice led to its being superseded by the modern form of an information in the nature of a guo warranto, exhibited in the Queen's Bench Division either by the attorney general ex officio or by the queen's coroner and attorney at the instance of a private person called the relator. The information will not be issued except by leave of the court on proper cause being shown. It does not lie where there has been no user or where the office has determined. Nor does it lie for the usurpation of every kind of office. But it lies where the office is of a public nature and created by statute, even though it is not an encroachment upon the prerogative of the crown. Where the usurpation is of a municipal office the information is regulated by 9 Anne c. 20, under which the defendant may be fined and judgment of ouster given against him, and costs may be granted for or against the relator. Such an information must, in the case of boroughs within the Municipal Corporations Act, 1882, be brought within twelve months after disqualifi- cation (45 & 46 Vict. c. 50, § 225); in the case of other boroughs, within six years after the defendant first took upon himself the office (32 Geo. III. c. 58, § 2). The information in the nature of a quo warranto, though nomin- ally a criminal, has long been really a civil proceeding, and has recently been expressly declared to be so (47 & 48 Viet. c. 61, § 15). In cases not falling within 9 Anne c. 20, judgment of ouster is not usually given. The most famous historical instance of guo warranto was the action taken against the corporation of London by Charles II. in 1684. The Queen's Bench adjudged the charter and franchises of the city of London to be forfeited to the crown (State Trials, vol. viii, 1039). This judgment was reversed by 2 Will. & Mary, sess. 1, c. 8; and it was further enacted, in limitation of the prerogative, that the franchises of the city should never be seized or forejudged on pretence of any forfeiture or misdemeanor.

In the United States the right to a public office is tried by quo warranto or analogous procedure, regulated by the State laws. Proceedings by quo warranto lie in a United States court for the removal of persons holding office contrary to Art. xiv. § 3 of the Amendments to the Constitution, Act of May 31, 1870, c. 14.

190

R

was written in Greek originally as P, following the

Phcenician form; sometimes, however, a triangle takes the place of the semicircle ; not unfrequently also a short stroke appears where we have the lower limb on the right hand ; the reason of this addition is not plain: it can hardly have been a diacritical mark to distinguish R from P (as G from C at Rome) because the latter symbol in Greece always kept its two vertical lines ([), the curved line (P) appearing first in the Roman alphabet.

The sounds denoted by the same symbol r differ con- siderably. First, there is the true consonantal r—our English r in reed, é&c.—produced by raising the tip only of the tongue towards the front palate; the voice escapes by this aperture, the side passages between the tongue and the palate being closed ; the mechanism, therefore, is just the opposite to that which produces / (see letter L). Secondly, there is the vowel 7; this is due to the space between the tip of the tongue and the palate being suffi- ciently great to allow the voice to escape without any friction ; the difference between this and consonantal 7 is parallel to that between w and w, or between 2 and y. This vowel-sound, though not heard regularly in any modern language, is not unfrequent in several in certain combina- tions; for example, it is quite possible to articulate "father" as "fath-r," where the r alone forms a syllable and is there- fore vocalic. This vowel-sound was a regular sound in Sans- krit, and was probably also heard in the parent language ; but in the derived languages (except Sanskrit) it became consonantal 7 with an independent vowel preceding or following; thus a presumed original "krd" (= heart), where 7 denotes the vocalic 7, gave in Sanskrit "hrd," in Greek xpad-(y, in Latin "cor(d)." Thirdly, r may denote a trill,—that is to say, a sound produced by the vibration of the tongue when laid loosely against the palate

and set in motion by a strong current of breath or voice. When the point of the tongue is laid loosely in this way against the palate just behind the gums and made to trill as voice passes over it, we hear the Scotch and- the French 7, each of which is a trill, not a consonantal 7. The same sound, but unvoiced, is heard in the French "théatre," &c., and is also the Welsh rh. A similar trill at the back part of the palate gives the Northumbrian " burr."

RAAB (Hungarian Gyér), the capital of a Hungarian province of the same name, lies at the influx of the Raab into a branch of the Danube, 70 miles to the south-east of Vienna. It is a well-built town, with a pleasant pro- menade laid out on the site of the old fortifications, and is the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop. The cathe- dral dates from the 12th century, but has recently been modernized ; the bishop's palace is an imposing castellated edifice, with dungeons constructed by the Turks. The town possesses several other churches, two of which belong to the Protestants and one to the Greek Church, besides convents, schools, and an academy of jurisprudence. The theatre, on an island formed by the Danube and the Raab, is also a handsome building. The inhabitants, who num- bered 20,980 in 1880, manufacture cloth and tobacco and carry on a considerable trade in grain and horses.

Raab occupies the site of the Roman Arabona, aud by the 10th cen- tury had become a place of some importance. In 1594 it fell into the hands of the Turks, who, however, retained possession of it for four years only. In 1809 the forces of the insurgent Hunga- rian noblesse were easily defeated here by Napoleon's veterans; and the attempts made to maintain the town against the Austrians in

1848-49 were also fruitless. About 10 miles to the south-east of Raab is St Martinsberg, the oldest and wealthiest abbey in Hungary.

Jewish titles of honour.

RAB, RABBI, RABBAN, RABBONI, RABBENU, Rab (2), "lord," '" master," "teacher," is the title prefixed to the name of such a Baby-

lonian teacher of the Law or expounder of the Mishnah as, though authorized to "judge" and to decide other religious questions, has not been

ordained, or fully ordained, in Palestine! Rabbi (In, paBPei, Matt. xxiii. 7, &c.), "my teacher," is the title of a teacher fully ordained in Pales- tine.

Rabban, "our teacher" or "our lord," but also "their," z.¢. all Israel's, teacher (]37, later form of D3),

was the title of the prince (president of the synedrium) from the time of Gamliel I. (the Gamaliel of St Paul) and

onward. Ifa prince-president sprang from any other house than Hillel's, who was a descendant of David through the female line (as, for example, R. El'azar b. 'Azaryah), he was not called by this highest title of honour. The only ex- ception to this rule was Rabban Yohanan b. Zakkai, to whom Jewish traditional lore owes so much,—nay, its very existence. For he not merely had a distinguished circle of pupils of his own (Aboth, ii. 8, 9), but he saved the lives of the members of the synedrium and secured its free activity. Vespasian, who knew him to have been friendly to the cause of Rome, granted him " Yamnia and its sages" at his request (T. B., Gittin, 56b). In Babylonia, again, Rabbana (Rab- bono) was the title of the Résh Galutha, or "head of the captivity." He who bore it was always the reigning de- scendant of the house of David in the male line. The only person on whom this title was bestowed, though he was not Résh Galutha, was Rab Ashe (T. B., Kethuboth, 22a), the principal editor of the Babylonian Talmud, who is reported to have united in his person riches, learning, and virtues such as no man had possessed since the time of '" Rabbi," the principal editor of the Mishnah (T. B., Gittin, 59a).

Raz, when the title is not followed by an individual name, denotes par excellence Abba Arékha (Arikha), so called either from the place Arékha in Babylonia, or be- cause of his high stature, or his eminence as a man and scholar. Abba Arékha was the most successful teacher of the Law and interpreter of the Mishnah in Babylonia, having brought the latter with him from Palestine, where he had received it orally and directly from Rabbi Yehudah Hannasi; he taught it to more than 1200 pupils, whom he is related to have housed, fed, and clothed (T. B., Kethuboth, 106a). He introduced many religious and moral reforms, notably in connexion with marriage, which are law among the Jews of all countries to this day. His Hebrew prose approaches the sublimity of the Old Testa- ment poetry, as may be

seen from the tripartite ‘addi- tional service” recited by all Rabbinic Jews on the two days of the “ New Year.” He is also in Babylonia the sole representative of the sublime Palestinian Agadoth, which so closely resemble the words of the Founder of Christianity. In patience with others, and especially with his shrewish wife, he surpassed Job himself. He died as the first head of the academy of Sira (somewhat later identified with Matha Mehasya) in 247 a.p., more than eighty years old.

RaBsi, when the title is not followed by a proper name, denotes par excellence Rabbi Yehudah Hannasi, the prin- cipal editor of the Mishnah (see vol. xvi. p. 504).

*Sdebeees Seeger ee gieemneeren ened Nigga See * aaa Sir 1 An old pronunciation of this title is Rib, as in Biribbi (2 2),*

of which the only true explanation is “son of the greatest doctor of the age,” applied to R. Yose b. Halaphta (T. B., Pesahim, 100a), R. Shime‘on, son of the editor of the Mishnah (Baba Bathra, 16b), and others. Hence the Talmudic explanation of Exod. xxiii. 2, “thou shalt not gainsay a scholar greater than thyself” (T. B., Synhedrin, 18b).

RA B—RAB

The Hellenistic RaBBont (6aBBovvet, John xx. 16) is the Aramaic rzbbonz used by a slave of his master, a son of his father, a wife of her husband, a worshipper of his God. (Com- pare the similar variation of the vowel in pisho = rdcya.)

RABBENU signifies “our teacher” par excellence, and means in Palestine R. Yehudah Hannasi, and in Baby- lonia Rab (¢.e., Abba Arékha).

Rabbah (7.39), also Rubbo and Rubboh, a title plaeed in the

Palestinian Talmud and Midrashim after the names of certain teachers (T. Y., Berakhoth, i. 1; Kilayim, ix. 8, and elsewhere),

corresponds to the Hebrew Sua in the same connexion in the Babylonian Talmud (Berakhoth, 6a, and elsewhere), and does not, as has hitherto been

supposed, mean "'the great" but simply "the elder." Thus many questionable Talmudie magnitudes disappear. (S. M. §.-S.)

RABA (Rds6)—ic., Ras Apa 8. YosrrH 3, HAmA (Homo)—was, like his teacher Rabbah and his fellow-pupil Abayye, a scion of the house of Eli, on whom rested the double curse of poverty and that none of them should reach old age (1 Sam. ii. 31-36). According to T. B., Rosh Hasshanah, 18a,1 he sought to remove this curse, if not by sacrifices and offering then by the study of the Law, while Abayye also practised works of charity. Raba was rabbi and judge of the congregation and head of the school (methibta) of Mahiiza. He lived in the middle of the 4th Christian century, and became on the death of his fellow-pupil Abayye head of the famous academy of Pum-baditha, which was only closed in 1040. He was noted, like his predecessor, for his genius; and the discussions between them (and similar ones of others) are known in the Babylonian Talmud as the Havayoth de-Abayye ve-Raba (Sukkah, 28a). Raba was also noted for the liberality of his religious decisions (T. B., Berakhoth, 22b; Pesahim, 30a, and elsewhere). Being a man of considerable wealth, he showed, in accordance with Scriptural truth (Prov. xviii. 23), his independence in every way. Thus he hesi- tated not to include the exquisites of the congregation of Mahiiza, who were noted for their luxurious style of living, among the candidates for Gehenna, whose faces would one day become as dark as the sides and the bottom of a sauce-pan (T. B., Rosh Hasshanah, 17a), whilst he most ungal- lantly applied to their idle wives the passage of Amos iv. 1 (T. B., Shabbath, 32b). Raba was in fact the Abraham a Sancta Clara of his day, minus the cloister life of the latter. He was married to one of the beautiful, accomplished, and amiable daughters of his teacher, R. Hisda, whom he so dearly loved that he was ready to forgive Bar Hadya (an interpreter of dreams who had much vexed him by his adverse interpretations) everything except the interpreta- tion of a dream foreboding her death. Raba, relying on Gen. xli. 12, 13, believed that the fulfilment of dreams within certain limits was influenced by the interpretation given to them (T. B., Berakhoth, 55b). (S, M. S.-S.)

RABAD (7185). Under this abbreviation five Jewish scholars are known, all of whom, singularly enough, lived during the 12th century.

I. Ras AB-Beru-Drn, zc, the ehief rabbi par excellence. His real name was R. Abraham b. Yishak of Narbonne. He was the teacher of the most distinguished rabbis of Provenee, ineluding his famous son-in-law (Rabad III.) and Rabbenu Zerahyah Hallevi, the author of the Maor. It has always been known that a great deal of literature on the Talmud belonging to him is mixed up with the works of others, notably with those of Rabad (see III. below). CL MN ee Ne Me

1 See Rashi, catchword NIM "ON ; Hullin, 133a, eatchwords

p pra and smont 'at. «The Zosaphoth and printed editions (.cc.) put Rappan (q.v.) for Raba; but Rashi's traditional reading (NYY 15) must be right. For, in the first place, it would have been on the part of the Talmud superfluous to state that Rabbah and Abayye were of the house of Eli, seeing that the latter was the son of the brother of the former. And secondly, the story goes (Rosh Hasshanah, 1. c.) that he who only studied the Law died at the age of forty (Abayye living to sixty), whereas the synchronisms of Rabbah's life show that he must have lived to a much greater age.

19]

In 1867-69, however, Dr B. H. Auerbach, rabbi of Halberstadt, edited for the first time Rabad's chief work, The Eshkol, in three parts, 4to.

_II. R. ABRAHAM B. Davin (Daid, 3)8) HALLEVI of Toledo, the historiographer, who suffered martyrdom in 1180. His ehief work has been printed innumerable times, and repeatedly with historieal additions from earlier sources. Some of the parts of this "Tradi- tion" and of these additions have been translated into Latin,

English, and German. (1) His historical work, MS3PM 70D, is a chroniele down to 1161, preceded by Seder 'Olam and Megillath Ta'anith (Mantua, 1518, 4to); eheap editions are to be got in Poland. (2) His philosophieo-theological work (composed in Arabie, translated into Hebrew by R. Shelomoh Ibn Labi—14th century— and into German by Weil) came out at Frankfort in 1852, 8vo.

III. R. ABRAHAM B, Davip, disciple and son-in-law of Rabad I. This is the " great Rabbi of Posquiéres," the only opponent whom Maimonides thought a mateh for himself. He died in 1198. His works are :—(1) Commentary on the Mishnie treatise 'Eduyyoth (see MIsHNAH, vol. xvi. p. 506), which accompanies some early and all later editions of the Babylonian Talmud (that on amid, as- eribed to him, is not his). (2) Commentary on Siphro (see vol. xvi. p. 507). (8) Mueh of Zemim De'im, part of the collection Lummath Yesharim, on various Rabbinic matters, Venice, 1622, fol. (4) Ba'ale Hannephesh, on laws relating to women (first inde- pendent edition, Prague, 1811, 4to). (5) Hassagoth, or Strictures on the Mishneh Torah of Marmontpxs (q.v.). These accompany most early and all later editions of the Mishneh Torah.

IV. R. Aprauam B. Davin, author of the commentary on the Sepher Yesirah.? His eommentary has been printed innumerable times with the work itself, the editio princeps at Mantua in 1562, 4to. Part of its preface was done in Latin by Rittangelius (Am- sterdam, 1642, 4to).

V. R. ABRAHAM B. Davip. He wrote Strictures (Hassagoth) on Rashi on the Pentateuch. This little and most interesting book was either written by a Sepharadi or Provencal, and lies in MS. (Add., 377, 8, 1) in the Cambridge University Library. No other eopy is known. a (S. M. S.-S.)

RABAN (j'ax1)—2.e., RaBBENU Exr'ezer B. Nain of Mainz—was one of the most famous Halakhic teachers of the 12th century. He lived at Mainz and corresponded with Rashi's son-in-law, Rabbenu Meir b. Shemuel, and his three distinguished sons, RasuBam (q.v.), Ribam (R. Yishak b. Meir, who died young and left seven orphans), and Rabbenu Tham (R. Ya'akob). His great Halakhic work, M3yb NIDY, or WYN jay, is commonly called by the combination of the author's initials which heads this article, the Book of Raban, and was printed at Prague in 1610 fol.2 Other Halakhic literature by him is to be found in Kol Bo, § 123 (without place or date, but probably Naples, towards the end of the 15th century), and its reprints. More lies in MS. in libraries; thus the ben Iaroshah, of which no other copy is known, is preserved in the Cambridge University Library (Add., 498). R. Eliezer was also a fine liturgical poet, vying both in senti- ment and elegance with the poets of the Sepharadic school, as appears, for example, from the Ophan

and other pieces designed for a Sabbath when there is a circumcision. Rabbenu Eli‘ezer died in the 12th century. The date 5007 (=1247) which appears in the formulas of a bill of divorcement and a deed of manumission of a slave is most assuredly due to a scribe of the 13th century, who in transcribing Raban’s book conformed the date to his own time—a practice often to be met with.

Dr A. Jellinek of Vienna has published a History of the First Crusade (VINN NI DIP, Leipsic, 1854, 8vo)—a little book interesting in more than one way—whieh bears the name of Raban. It cannot, however, be by the subject of this article, as one ean see by comparing with his genuine work the questionable poetie stuff whieh forms part of the Konferes. The author is no doubt Raban

of Cologne. Nor does the commentary on ponds by (for Pentecost

eve) under the title of Saun WON, whieh has been often printed, and of whieh the Cambridge Library has an old MS. (Add., 493, 1),

2 The idea that R. Yoseph Arukh—Maxpés (a Greek) or Longus (a Roman) —was the author of this commentary must be given up. On the other hand, it is not quite impossible that this eommentator and the writer of the Strictures on Rashi are one and the same person.

3 The thanks of the writer of these lines are due to the eurators and librarian of the Bodleian for the loan of this book.

belong to this Rabin, though it has been ascribed to him for 600 years. Its writer was undoubtedly a Provengal. (8. M. 8.-8.)

RABANUS MAURUS. See Hrapanus Mavrus.

RABAT (Rrs4z), Rzdt, or ARBAT, also known as NEw SALLEE, a city of Morocco, on the coast of the Atlantic, 130 miles south of Cape Spartel at the mouth of the Bu Rakrak, which separates it from Sallee proper on the northern bank. It is a commercial town of about 26,000 to 30,000

inhabitants, occupying a rocky plateau and sur- rounded by massive but dilapidated walls, strengthened by three forts on the seaward side. The old citadel, over- hanging the mouth of the river, is still, though partially in ruins, an imposing building, with huge arched gateways, square towers, and masses of rich red-brown masonry ; and to the south of the town lies a modern palace defended by earthworks after the European fashion. The conspicuous feature in the view from the sea is the Hasan tower, a beautiful square-built minaret 180 feet high, which stands at an elevation of about 65 feet above the sea to the west of the walled town, and in the midst of gardens and or- chards whose vegetation partly hides the ruined columns of the ancient mosque to which it was attached. It is constructed of soft reddish-brown stone, and each side is adorned with a different design. At one time the Bu Rakrak afforded a much better harbour than it does now: the roadstead is quite unprotected, and there is a danger- ous bar at the mouth of the river. Rabat trades with Fez and the interior of Morocco, with the neighbouring coast- towns and Gibraltar, and with Marseilles, Manchester, and London. The principal articles of export are wool, hides, and wax, and the products of that local manu- facture of leather, carpets, mats, woollen and cotton stuffs, pottery, and circular brass trays which makes Rabat the greatest industrial centre in Morocco. Cotton goods and loaf-sugar are first among the imports. The average value of the exports in the ten years 1872 to 1881 was £47,236, and of the imports £73,945. In 1883 the figures were £39,596 and £50,222 respectively.

Sallee (Sal4), on the north side of the river, is also enclosed with walls. Much of the interior, however, is vacant and the houses are mean; and, unlike their neigh- bours of Rabat, the inhabitants (about 30,000) down to quite recent times distinguished themselves by particular hostility to Christians, who were thus prevented from entering their gates. To the north a ruined aqueduct extends for miles.

Rabat was founded by Yak‘tb al-Mansur (ob. 1306); but Sallee was then an ancient city, and on the scarped hills to the west of Rabat stand the ruins of Sala, a Roman colony. Shella, as the

pe: is now called, was the seat of the mausoleum of the Beni- {erin dynasty.

RABBA, a town of Nupi or Nufi, on the bank of the Kworra (Niger), opposite the island of Zagozhi, in 9° 6' N. lat., and 200 miles above the confluence of the Kworra and the Binue. At the time of Lander's visit in 1830 it was a place of 40,000 inhabitants and one of the most important markets in the country. In 1851 Dr Barth reported it "in ruins," and in 1867 Rohlfs found it with only 500 inhabitants. A mission station, established there in 1857 by the Church Missionary Society, was afterwards withdrawn. The town has latterly somewhat recovered its position.

RABBAH—z.¢, RaB ABBAH BAR NAHMANI—was of the house of Eli, on whom the curse rested that none of them should reach a high age (1 Sam. ii. 33). Like Raba, he tried to remove this curse (T. B., Rosh Has- shanah, 18a; see Rapa). He was twenty-two years head of the academy of Pumbaditha, from which he fled in the year 330, pursued by a troop of the Persian king (Shapur IL), and perished miserably in a jungle (T. B., Bobo Mets'io, leaf 86a).

RA B—RAB

Rabbah, owing to his great dialectic powers, to which no diffi- culty seemed difficult, was called 'Oker Harim, "uprooter of mountains."! This title was applied to him when the selection as "head" lay between him and his friend, fellow-pupil, and suc- cessor, Rab Yoseph, "the Blind," to whom is commonly, but by mistake, ascribed the authorship of certain Targumim. This latter doctor was, owing to his vast but mere reproductive powers, called Sinai, the mountain from which the letter of the Law was given (T. B., Berakhoth, 64a). (8. M. S.-8.)

RABBI See Ras.

RABBIT. This animal, one of the best known and most frequently seen of all wild British mammals, is, with the hare, a member of the Rodent genus Zepus, which contains about twenty-five other species spread over the greater part of the world, and whose more important characters have already been referred to (see Harz, vol. xi. p. 476, and Mamma tia, vol. xv. p. 421).

The rabbit (Lepus cuniculus), speaking for the present of the wild race only, is distinguished from the hare externally by its smaller size, shorter ears and feet, by the absence or reduction of the black patch at the tip of the ears so characteristic of the hare, and by its greyer colour. The skull is very similar to that of the hare (see Mammattia, fig. 99), but is smaller and lighter, and has a slenderer muzzle and a longer and narrower palate. Besides these characters, however, the rabbit is sharply

et oo

Q

Rabbit.

separated from the hare by the fact that it brings forth its young naked, blind, and helpless; to compensate for this, it digs a deep burrow in the earth in which they are born and reared, while the young of the hare are born fully clothed with fur, and able to take care of themselves in the mere shallow depression or "form" in which they are born. The weight of the rabbit is from 24 to 3 hb, although individuals perfectly wild have been recorded up to more than 5. Its general habits are too well known to need a detailed description here. It breeds from four to eight times a year, bringing forth each time from three to eight young. Its period of gestation is about thirty days, and it is able to bear when six months old. It attains to an age of about seven or eight years.

The geographical distribution of the rabbit presents many most interesting peculiarities. It is believed to be originally a native of the western half of the Mediter- ranean basin only, and still abounds in Spain, Sardinia, southern Italy and Sicily, Greece, Tunis, and Algeria ; and many of the islands adjoining these countries are quite overrun with it. Thence it has spread, partly by man's agency, northwards throughout temperate western Europe, increasing rapidly wherever it gains a footing; and this extension is still going on, as is shown by the

1 See for a similar expression Matt. xvii. 20.

case of Scotland, in which sixty years ago rabbits were little known, while they are now found in all suitable localities up to the extreme north. It has also gained admittance into Ireland, and now abounds there as much as in England. Out of Europe the same extension of range has been going on. In New Zealand and Australia rabbits, introduced either for profit or sport, have increased to such an extent as to form one of the most serious pests that the farmers have to contend against, as the climate and soil seem to suit them perfectly and their natural enemies are too few and too lowly organized to keep their numbers within reasonable bounds. In other cases rabbits introduced into islands have become or remained more or less distinct from their parent stock; thus the rabbits both of the Falkland Islands and of Jamaica still show traces of their descent from domesticated varieties, and have never reverted to the ordinary brownish-grey type. And again, as was pointed out by Mr Darwin,} the rabbits in the island of Porto Santo, near Madeira, whose ancestors were introduced from Spain in 1418 or 1419, have formed quite a distinct diminutive race, barely half the bulk or weight of English rabbits, and differing in certain slight details of colour and habits.

The rabbit has been domesticated by man from a very early period. No doubt exists amongst naturalists that all the varieties of the domestic animal are descended from the Lepus euniculus. The variations which have been perpetuated and intensified by artificial selection are, with the exception of those of the dog, greater than have been induced in any other species of mammal. For not only has the weight been more than qnadrupled in some of the larger breeds, and the structure of the skull and other parts of the skeleton greatly altered, but the proportionate size of the brain has been considerably reduccd and the colour and texture of the fur altered in the most remarkable manner. The establish- ment of these extreme variations is dependent on the highly arti- ficial conditions under which the animals are kept, their great pro- lificacy, and the rapidity with which the generations succeed each other, which enable the process of artificial selection by the preserva- tion of those most suited to the purposes of the breeder to be carried into effect with facility.

The Lop-cared breed is the oldest English fancy variety ; it has been cultivated carefully for about a century, the aim of the breeder being chiefly

directed to the development of the size of the ears, and with such success that they sometimes measure more than 23 inches from tip to tip and exceed 6 inches in width. This development, which is accompanied by great changes in the structure of the skull, that have been carefully described by Darwin in his Variation of Animals, &c., depends on breeding the animals in warm damp hutches, without which the best developed parents fail to produce the desired offspring. In colour the lop-eared rabbits vary greatly.

The Belgian hare is a large variety of a hardy and prolific char- acter, which closely resembles the common hare in colour, and is not unlike itin form. Some few years since many of these animals were sold as leporides or hybrids, produced by the union of the hare and the rabbit; but the most careful experimenters have failed to obtain any such hybrid, and the naked immature condition in which young rabbits are born as compared with the clothed and highly developed young hares renders it exceedingly unlikely that hybrids could he produced. Nor does the flesh of the Belgian rabbit resemble that of the hare in colour or flavour. A closely allied variety, though of even larger size, is known by the absurd name of Patagonian rabbit ; it has no relation to the country after which it is called.

The Angora rabbit is characterized by the extreme elongation and fineness of the fur, which in good 'specimens reaches 6 or 7 inches in length, requiring great care and frequent eombing to prevent it from becoming matted. The Angoras most valued are albinos, with pure white fur and pink eyes; in some parts of the Continent they are kept by the peasants and clipped regularly.

Amongst the breeds which are valued for the distribution of colour on the fur are the H imalayan and the Dutch. The former 1s white, but the whole of the extremities—viz., the nose, the ears, tail, and feet—are black or very dark in colour. This very pretty breed has no connexion with the mountain chain from whence it has taken its name, but is a variety produced by careful breeding and selection as fully described by Darwin (op. cit.). Though but recently produced by crossing, it now generally breeds true to colour, at times throwing back, however, to the silver greys from which it was derived. The rabbits known in Great Britain as Dutch are of small size, and are valued for the disposition of the colour and

‘ Variation of Animals and Plants, 2d ed., i. p. 119.

markings. The entire body behind the shoulder-blades is uniformly coloured, with the exception of the feet ; the anterior part of the body, including the fore legs, neck, and jaws, is white, the cheeks and ears being coloured. In some strains the coloured portion extends in front of the fore legs, leaving only a ring of white round the neck. The more accurately the coloured portion is defined the higher is the animal esteemed.

The Silver grey is a uniform coloured variety, the fur of which is arich chinchilla grey, varying in depth of colour in the different strains. From the greater valuc of the fur silver greys have been frequently employed to stock warrens, as they breed true to colour in the open if the ordinary wild rabbits are rigorously excluded. Other colours known, as Silver cream and Silver brown, are closely allied varicties.

As an article of food the domesticated rabbit is of considerable importance. From 100 to 200 tons are imported into London from Ostend every week during the colder months of the year, having been reared in hutches by the Belgian peasants. ‘hey are for- warded without their skins, which are half the value of the flesh. A plan has been recently devised by Major Morant, which is known as “hutch-farming in the open.” The animals are kept in large hutches with projecting roofs, floored with coarse galvanized iron netting, through which the grass projects to be eaten by the rabbits. The hutches are shifted twice or thrice a day, so that the animals are constantly on clean ground and have fresh food. The young, when old enongh to leave the mother, are reared in somewhat larger hntches of a similar description and killed for market under three months of age.

RABELAIS, Francors (c. 1490-1553), the greatest of French humourists and one of the few great humourists of the world, was born at Chinon on the Vienne in the pro- vince of Touraine. The date of his birth is wholly uncer- tain: it has been put by tradition and by authorities long subsequent to his death as 1483, 1490, and 1495. There is nothing in the positive facts of his life which would not suit tolerably well with any of these dates; most 17th-century authorities give the earliest, and this also accords best with

the age of the eldest of the Du Bellay brothers, with whom Rabelais was at school. In favour of the latest it is urged that if Rabelais was born in 1483 he must have been forty- seven when he entered at Montpellier, and proportionately and unexpectedly old at other known periods of his life. In favour of the middle date, which has, as far as recent authorities are concerned, the weight of consent in its favour, the testimony of Guy Patin, a witness of some merit and not too far removed in point of time, is invoked, though perhaps the fact of its being a via media has really had most to do with the adoption. The only contribution which need be made here to the controversy is to point out that if Rabelais was born in 1483 he must have been an old man when he died, and that scarcely even tradition speaks of him as such. And since this tradition is men- tioned it may as well be observed at once that all the anecdotes of Rabelais without exception, and most of the accounts of the facts of his life, date from a period long posterior to his death and are utterly unworthy of cre- dence. Colletet nearly a hundred years later, Antoine Leroy a full hundred, and Bernier nearly a hundred and fifty collected or invented stories which, as far as any actual authority goes, must be regarded as worthless. Bishop Huet's researches were made nearly as late as Bernier's. Throughout this article, therefore, when tradition or any similar word is used without further precision it will be understood that the statements have in themselves only conjectural validity.

With regard to his birth, parentage, youth, and educa- tion everything depends upon tradition, and it is not until he was according to one extreme hypothesis thirty- six, according to the other extreme twenty-four, that we have solid testimony respecting him. In the year 1519, on the 5th of April, the Francois Rabelais of history emerges. The monks of Fontenay le Comte bought some property (half an inn in the town), and among their signatures to the deed of purchase is that of Francois Rabelais. Before this all is cloudland. It is said that he had four brothers

and no sisters, that his father had a country property called La Deviniére, and was either an apothecary or a tavern-keeper. Half a century after his

death De Thou mentions that the house in which he was born had become a tavern. It still stands at the corner of a street called the Rue de la Lamproie, and the tradition may be correct. An indistinct allusion of his own has been taken to mean that he was tonsured in childhood at seven or nine years old; and tradition says that he was sent to the convent of Seuilly, though of course he could then have taken no definite vows, and there is no evidence whatever that the passage in question, which simply condemns the practice referred to, has any personal reference. From Seuilly at an unknown date tradition takes him either to the univer- sity of Angers or to the convent school of La Baumette or La Basmette, founded by good King René in the neighbourhood of the Angevin capital. Here he is sup- posed to have been at school with the brothers Du Bellay, with Geoffroy d'Estissac and others. The next stage in this (as far as evidence goes, purely imaginary) career is the monastery of Fontenay le Comte, where, as has been seen, he is certainly found in 1519 holding a position sufficiently senior to sign deeds for the community, where he, as will be seen, certainly, though at an unknown date, took priest's orders, and where he also pursued, again cer- tainly, the study of letters, and especially of Greek, with ardour. From this date, therefore, he becomes historically visible. The next certain intelligence which we have of Rabelais is somewhat more directly biographical than this bare entry of his name. The letters of the well-known Greek scholar Budzeus, two of which are addressed to Rabelais himself and several more to his friend and fellow- monk Pierre Amy, together with some notices by André Tiraqueau, a learned jurist, to whom Rabelais rather than his own learning has secured immortality, show beyond doubt what manner of life the future author of Gargantua led in his convent. These letters are partly written in Greek and partly in Latin. In Tiraqueau's book De Legibus Connubialibus, which excited a controversy with another jurist of the west, Bouchard, also a friend of Rabelais, the latter is described as "a man most learned in both languages and all kinds of scholarship above his age, and beyond the wont and, if J may say so, the excessive scrupulousness of his order." The excessive scrupulousness of the order showed itself before long in reference to Amy and Rabelais, the latter of whom had, as this sentence of Tiraqueau's also informs us, translated the first book of Herodotus. The letters of Budzeus show that an attempt was made by the heads of the convent or the order to check the studious ardour of these Franciscans; but it failed, and there is no positive evidence of anything like actual

persecution, the phrases in the letters of Budzeus being merely the usual exaggerated Ciceronianism of the Renaissance. Some books and papers were seized as sus- picious, then given back as innocent; but Rabelais was in all probability disgusted with the cloister,—indeed his great work shows this beyond doubt. In 1524, the year of the publication of Tiraqueau's book above cited, his friend Geoffroy d'Estissac procured from Clement VII. an indult, licensing a change of order and of abode for Rabelais. From a Franciscan he became a Benedictine, and from Fontenay he moved to Maillezais, of which Geoffroy d'Estissac was bishop. He seems indeed to have been constantly in the company of the bishop and to have made many new literary acquaintances, notably Jean Bouchet, the poet. To him he wrote an epistle in French verse, still extant, which proves that Rabelais, much more truly than Swift, never could have been a poet. The title of this epistle is, however, noteworthy, inasmuch as the author is described in the original (a collection of Bouchet's works

HASH EA Ls

published in 1545) as a man of great literary knowledge in Greek and Latin, and as a great. orator in Greek, Latin, and French. But even this learned and hospitable retreat did not apparently satisfy Rabelais. In or before 1530 he left Maillezais, abandoned his Benedictine garb for that of a secular priest, and, as he himself puts it in his subsequent Supplicatio pro Apostasia to Pope Paul IIL., "ner seculum diu vagatus fuit." He ismet at Montpellier in the year just mentioned. He entered the faculty of medicine there on the 16th of September and became bachelor on the Ist of November, a remarkably short in- terval, which shows what was thought of his acquirements. Early in 1531 he lectured publicly on Galen and Hippo- crates, while his more serious pursuits seem to have been chequered by acting in a morale comédie, then a very fre- quent university amusement. Visits to the Iles d'Hiéres, and the composition of a fish sauce in imitation of the ancient garum, which he sent to his friend Dolet, are associated, not very certainly, with his stay at Montpellier, which, lasting rather more than a year at first, was renewed at intervals for several years.

In 1532, however, and probably rather early than late in that year, he had moved from Montpellier to Lyons. Here he plunged into manifold work,

literary and professional. He was appointed before the beginning of November phy- sician to the hétel dieu, with a salary of forty livres per annum. He edited for Sebastian Gryphius, in the single year 1532, the medical Epistles of Giovanni Manardi, the Aphorisms of Hippocrates, with the Ars Parva of Galen, and an edition of two supposed Latin documents, which, however, happened unluckily to be forgeries. These three works were dedicated in order to his three chief friends of Touraine and Poitou, André Tiraqueau, the bishop of Maillezais, and Bouchard. We also have a Latin letter written on lst December 1532 to a certain Bernard de Salignac, otherwise unknown.

It is certain that at this time Lyons was the centre and to a great extent the headquarters of an unusually enlightened society, and indirectly it is clear that Rabelais became intiniate with this society. A manuscript distich, which was found in the Toulouse library, on the death of an infant named Theodule, whose country was Lyons and his father Rabelais, would seem to show that he here entered into other connexions than those of friendship. Absolutely nothing, however, is known about the child and its mother; it is enough to say that the existence of the former would have been by the manners and morals of the time very easily condoned. But what makes the Lyons sojourn of the greatest real importance is that at this time probably appeared the beginnings of the work which was to make Rabelais immortal. It is necessary to say "probably," because the strange uncertainty which rests on so much of his life and writings exists here also. There is no doubt that both Gargantua and Pantagruel were popular names of giants in the Middle Ages, though, curiously enough, no mention of the former in French hterature much before Rabelais's time has been traced. In 1526, however, Charles de Bordigné, in a satiric work of no great merit, entitled Za Légende de Pierre Pacfeu, has the name Gargantua with an allusion, and in 1532 (if not earlier) there appeared at Lyons Les Grandes et Inestimables Chroniques du Grand et Enorme Géant Gargantua. This is a short book on the plan of the later burlesques and romances of the Round Table. Arthur and Merlin appear with Grantgosier, as he is here spelt, Galemelle (Gargalelle), Gargantua himself, and the terrible mare. But there is no trace of the action or other characters of Gargantua that was to be, nor is the manner of the piece in the least worthy of Rabelais. No one supposes that he wrote 1t, though it has been supposed that he edited it and that in

reality it is older than 1532, and may be the direct subject of Bordigné's allusion six years earlier. What does, how- ever, seem probable is that the first book of Pantagruel (the second of the whole work) was composed with a definite view to this chap book and not to the existing first book of Gargantua, which was written afterwards when Rabelais discovered the popularity of his work and felt that it ought to have some worthier starting-point than the Grandes Chroniques. The earliest known and dated edition of Puntagruel is of 1533, of Gargantua 1535, though this would not be of itself conclusive, especially as we actually possess editions of both which, though un- dated, seem to be earlier. But the definite description of Gargantua in the title as "Pere de Pantagruel," the omis- sion of the words "second livre" in the title of the first book of Pantagruel while the second and third are duly entitled "tiers" and "quart," the remarkable fact that one of the most important personages, Friar John, is absent from book ii., the first of Pantagruel, though he appears in book i. (Gargantua), and many other proofs show the order of publication clearly enough. There is also in existence a letter of Calvin, dated 1533, in which he speaks of Pantagruel, but not of Gargantua, as having been condemned as an obscene book. Besides this, 1533 saw the publication of an almanac, the first of a long series which exists only in titles and fragments, and of the amusing Prognostication Pantagrueline (still, be it observed, Panta- grueline, not Gargantuine). Both this and Pantagruel itself were published under the anagrammatic pseudonym of "Alcofribas Nasier," shortened to the first word only in the case of the Prognostication.

This busy and interesting period of Rabelais's life was brought to a close apparently by his introduction or rein- troduction to Jean du Bellay. They had been, it has been said, schoolfellows, but Bellay does not appear among the list of Rabelais's friends in the first years of his emancipa- tion. From 1534, however, he and the other members of his family appear as Rabelais's chief and constant patrons during the remainder of his life. It was just before Christ- mas that Jean du Bellay, passing through Lyons on an embassy to Rome, engaged Rabelais as physician. The visit did not last very long, but it left literary results in an edition of a description of Rome

by Marliani, which Rabelais published in September 1534. It is also thought that the first edition of Gargantua may have appeared this year.

In the spring of 1535 the authorities of the Lyons hospital, considering that Rabelais had twice absented himself without leave, elected Pierre de Castel in his room; but the documents which exist do not seem to infer that any blame was thought due to him, and the appointment of his successor was once definitely postponed in case he should return. An epigram of Dolet shows that at least once and probably about this time he per- formed a public dissection. At the end of 1535 Rabelais once more accompanied Jean du Bellay, now a cardinal, to Rome and stayed there till April in the next year. This stay furnishes some biographical documents of importance in the shape of letters to Geoffroy d'Estissac, of the already- mentioned Supplicatio pro Apostasia, and o& the bull of absolution which was the reply to it. This bull not only freed Rabelais from ecclesiastical censure but gave him the right to return to the order of St Benedict when he chose, and to practise medicine. He took advantage of this bull and became a canon of St Maur. The monastery having but recently become collegiate, there seems to have been some technical difficulty which necessitated a new suppli- cation. In the next year (1537) we find Rabelais present at a dinner where the friends of Etienne Dolet met to congratulate him on his pardon for the homicide of

LA & is

Compaing. The luckless printer has left a poem on the occasion, and two other writers, Salmon Macrin and Nicholas Bourbon, have also left poems of this date ex- pressing the regard in which Rabelais was generally held. Now, too, he took his doctor's degree at Montpellier, lectured on the Greek text of Hippocrates, and next year made a public anatomical demonstration. During these two years he seems to have resided either at Montpellier or at Lyons. But in 1539 he entered the service of Guillaume du Bellay-Langey, elder brother of Jean, and would appear to have been with him (he was governor of Piedmont) till his death on 9th January 1543. Rabelais wrote a panegyrical memoir of Guillaume, which is lost, and the year before saw the publication of an edition of Gargantua and Pantagruel, book i., together (both had been repeatedly reprinted separately), in which

some dangerous expressions were cut away. Nothing at all is known of his life, whereabouts, or occupations till the publication of the third book, which appeared in 1546, ‘“Cavec privilége du roi,” which had been given in Septem- ber 1545.

Up to this time Rabelais, despite the condemnation of the Sorbonne referred to above, had experienced nothing like persecution or difficulty. Even the spiteful or treacher- ous act of Dolet, who in 1542 reprinted the earlier form of the books which Rabelais had just slightly modified, seems to have done him noharm. But the storm of persecu- tion which towards the end of the reign of Francis I. was

| fatal to Dolet himself and to Despériers, while it exiled

and virtually killed Marot, did not leave Rabelais scatheless. There is no positive evidence of any measures taken or threatened against him; but it is certain that he passed nearly the whole of 1546 and part of 1547 at Metz in Lorraine as physician to the town at the salary of 120 livres, that Sturm speaks of him as having been ‘“‘cast out of France by the times” (with the exclamation ed Tov xpovwy) in a contemporary letter, and that he himself in a letter, also contemporary, though it is not clear whether it is of 1546 or the next year, gives a doleful account of his pecuniary affairs and asks for assistance. At Francis’s death on 31st March 1547 Du Bellay went to Rome, and at some time not certain Rabelais joined him. He was certainly there in February 1549, when he dates from Du Bellay’s palace a little account of the festivals given at Rome to celebrate the birth of the second son of Henry II. and Catherine de’ Medici. This account, the Scvomachie as it is called, is extant. In the same year a monk of Fontevrault, Gabriel du Puits-Herbault, made in a book called Teotimus the first of the many attacks on Rabelais. It is, however, as vague as it is violent, and it does not seem to have had any effect. Rabelais had indeed again made for himself protectors whom no clerical or Sorbonist jealousy could touch. The Sciomachie was written to the cardinal of Guise, whose family were all-powerful at court, and Rabelais dedicated his next book to Odet de Chatillon, afterwards cardinal,a man of great influence. Thus Rabelais was able to return to France, and was presented to the livings of Meudon and St Christophe de Jambet. It may, however, surprise those who have been accustomed to hear

him spoken of as "curé de Meudon" and who have read lives of him founded on legend to find that there is very little ground for believing that he ever officiated or resided there. He certainly held the living but two years, resign- ing it in January 1552 along with his other benefice, and it is noteworthy that at the episcopal visitation of 1551 he was not present. To this supposed residence at Meudon and to the previous stay at Rome, however, are attached two of the most mischievous items of the legend, though fortunately two of the most easily refutable. It is said that Rabelais met and quarrelled with Joachim du Bellay the

poet at Rome, and with Ronsard at Meudon and elsewhere, that this caused a breach between him and the Pléiade, that he satirized its classicizing tendencies in the episode of the Limousin scholar, and that Ronsard after his death avenged himself by a libellous epitaph. The facts are these. Nothing is heard of the quarrel with Du Bellay or of any meeting with him, nothing of the meetings and bickerings with Ronsard, till 1699, when Bernier tells the story without any authority. The supposed allusions to the Pléiade date from a time when Ronsard was a small boy, and are mainly borrowed from an earlier writer still, Geoffroy Tory. Lastly, the epitaph read impartially is not libellous at all but simply takes up the vein of the opening scenes of Gargantua in reference to Gargantua's author. There is indeed no reason to suppose that either Ronsard or Du Bellay was a fervent admirer of Rabelais, for they belonged to a very different literary school; but there is absolutely no evidence of any enmity between them or even of any acquaintanceship which could have given rise to enmity.

Some chapters of Rabelais's fourth book had been pub- lished in 1548, but the whole did not appear till 1552. The Sorbonne censured it and the parliament suspended the sale, taking advantage of the king's absence from Paris. 3ut it was soon relieved of the suspension. This is the last fact we know about Rabelais. It is supposed that he died in 1553, but actual history is quite silent, and the legends about his deathbed utterances—" La farce est jouée," "Je vais chercher un grand peut-étre," &¢c.—are altogether apocryphal. The same may be said of the numerous silly stories told of his

life, such as that of his procuring a free passage to Paris by inscribing packets "Poison for the king," and so forth.

Ten years after the publication of the fourth book and nine after the supposed date of the author's death there appeared at Lyons sixteen chapters entitled Z'fle Sonnante par Maistre Francois Rabelais, and two years later the entire fifth book was printed as such. In 1567 it took place with the others, and has ever since appeared with them. But from the beginning of the 17th century there have never been wanting disbelievers in its authenticity. The controversy is one of some intricacy, but as it is also one of capital importance in literary history the heads of it at least must be given here. The opponents of the book rely (1) on the testimony of a certain Louis Guyon, who in 1604 declared that the fifth book was made long after Rabelais's death by an author whom he knew, and who was not a doctor, and on the assertion of the bibliographer Du Verdier, about the same time, that it was written by an "écolier de Valence"; (2) on the fact that the anti-monastic and even anti-Catholic polemic is much more accentuated in it; (3) that parts are apparently replicas or rough drafts of passages already appearing in the four earlier books; (4) that some allusions are manifestly posterior to even the farthest date which can be assigned for the reputed author's decease. On the other hand, it is urged that, though Guyon and Du Verdier were ina sense contemporaries, they wrote long after the events, and that the testimony of the former is vitiated, not merely by its extreme vagueness but by the fact that it occurs in a plaidoyer, tending to exculpate physicians from the charge of unorthodoxy; that Du Verdier in another place assigns the Pantagrueline Prognostication to this same unknown student of Valence, and had therefore probably confused and hearsay notions on the subject ; that the rasher and fiercer tone, as well as the apparent repetitions, are sufficiently accounted for on the supposi- tion that Rabelais never finally revised the book, which indeed dates show that he could not have done, as the fourth was not finally settled till just before his death ;

RABELADS

and that it is perfectly probable, and indeed almost certain, that it was prepared from his papers by another hand, which is responsible for the

anachronous allusions above referred to. But the strongest argument, and one which has never been attacked by authorities really competent to judge, is that the "griffe de Yaigle" is on the book, and that no known author of the time except Rabelais was capable of writing the passage about the Chats fourrés, the better part of the history of Queen Whims (La Quinte) and her court, and the conclusion giving the Oracle of the Bottle. To this argument we believe that the more com- petent a critic is, both by general faculty of appreciation and by acquaintance with contemporary French literature, the more positive will be the assent that he yields.

Gargantua and Pantagruel, notwithstanding their high literary standing and the frequency with which certain passages from them are cited, are, owing partly to their archaism of language and partly to the extreme licence which their author has allowed himself, so little read that no notice of them or of him could be complete without some sketch of their contents. The first book, Gargantua, describes the birth of that hero (a giant and the son of gigantic parents), whose nativity is ushered in by the account of a tremendous feast. In this the burlesque exaggeration of the pleasures of eating and drinking, which is one of the chief exterior notes of the whole work, is pushed to an extreme,—an extreme which has attracted natural but perhaps undue attention. Very carly, however, the » author becomes serious in contrasting the early education of his hero—a satire on the degraded schools of the Middle Ages—with its subsequent and reformed stage, in the account of which all the best and noblest ideas of the humanist Renaissance in reference to pedagogy are put with exceptional force. Gargantua is recalled from Paris, whither he had been sent to finish his education, owing to a war between his father, Grandcosier, and the neighbouring king; Picrochole. This war is described at great length, the chief hero of it being the monk, Friar John, a very unclerical cleric, in whom Rabelais greatly delights. Picrochole defeated and peace made, Gargantua establishes the abbey of Thelema in another of Rabelais's most elaborate literary passages, where all the points most obnoxious to him in monastic life are indicated by the assignment of their exact opposites to this model convent. The second book, which introduces the principal hero of the whole, Pantagruel, Gargantua's son, is, on any other hypothesis but that already suggested of its prior composition, very difficult to explain, but in itself it is intelli- gible enough. Pantagruel goes through something like a second edition (really a

first) of the educational experiences of his father. Like him, he goes to Paris, and there meets with Panurge, the principal triumph of Rabelaisian character-drawing, and the most original as well as puzzling figure of the book. Panurge has almost all intellectual accomplishments, but is totally devoid of morality : he is a coward, a drunkard, a lecher, a spiteful trickster, a spend- thrift, but all the while infinitely amusing. This book, like the other, has a war in its latter part; Gargantua scarcely appears in it and Friar John not at all. It is not till the opening of the third book that the most important action begins. 'This arises from Panurge's determination to marry —a determination, however, which is very half-hearted, and which leads him to consult a vast number of authorities, each giving occasion for satire of a more or less complicated kind. At last it is determined that Pantagruel and his followers (Friar John has reappeared in the suite of the prince) shall set sail to consult the Oracle of the Dive Bouteille. The book ends with the obscurest passage of the whole, an elaborate eulogy of the " herb pantagruelion," which appears to be, if it is anything, hemp. Only two probable explanations of this have been offered, the one seeing in it an anticipation of Joseph de Maistre's glorification of the executioner, the other a eulogy of work, hemp being on the whole the most serviceable of vegetable products for that purpose. The fourth and fifth books are entirely taken up with a description of the voyage. Many strange places with stranger names are visited, some of them offering obvious satire on human institutions, others, except by the most far-fetched explanations, resolvable into nothing but sheer extravaganza. At last the Land of Lanterns, borrowed from Lucian, is reached, and the Oracle of the Bottle is consulted. This yields the single word "Tring," which the attendant priestess declares to be the most gracious and intelligible she has ever heard from it. Panurge takes this as a sanction of his marriage and the book ends abruptly. This singular romance is diversified by or, to speak more properly, it is the vehicle of the most bewildering abundance of digression, burlesque amplification, covert satire on things political, social, and religious, miscellaneous erudition of the literary and scientific kind. Everywhere the author lays stress on the excellence of '"Pantagruelism," and the reader who is himself a Pantagruelist (it is perfectly idle for any other to attempt the book) soon discovers

rab mL ATS

what this means. Itis, in plain English, humour. The definition of humour is a generally acknowledged crux, and till it is defined the definition of Pantagruelism will be in the same position. But that it consists in the extension of a wide sympathy to all human affairs together with a comprehension of their vanity may be said as safely as anything else. Moroseness and dogmatism are as far from the Pantagruelism of Rabelais as maudlin sentimentality or dilettantism. Perhaps the chief things lacking in his attitude are, in the first place, reverénce, of which, however, froma few passages, it is elear he was by no nieans totally devoid, and an appreciation of passion and poetry. Here and there there are touches of the latter, as in the portrait of Quintessence, but passion is everywhere absent—an absence for which the comic structure and plan of the book does not by any means supply a complete explanation.

For a general estimate of Rabelais's litcrary character and influ- ence the reader may be referred to the article FRANCE (vol. ix. p- 652). But some detailed remarks must be given here. The life and works of Rabelais, despite the considerable number of publica- tions of which they have been the subject, have hitherto been less fully and satisfactorily treated than the life and works of any author who oceupics an equally important plaee. As will have been seen from the foregoing attempt to give the actual facts, a whole legend has grown up round the scanty details recorded of him, and many, if not all, of the particulars of that legend can be shown to be false. But no one hitherto has undertaken in a satisfactory fashion the construction of a rigorously critical life. In the same way there are many questions in referenee to his main work which have never been thoroughly and finally sifted by a critical intelligence equal to the task. Limits of space, to say no more, prevent any such attempt being made here ; but there are three questions with- out the discussion of which this notice of one of the foremost writers of the world would not be worthy of its present place. These are — What is the general drift and purpose of Gargantua and Panta- gruel, supposing there to be any? What defence can be offered, if any defence is needed, for the extraordinary licence of language and imagery which the author has permitted himself? What was his attitude towards the great questions of religion, philosophy, and politics? These questions succeed each other in the order of reason, and the answer to each assists the resolution of the next.

There have been few more remarkable instances of the lues com- mentatoria than the work of the editors of Rabelais. Almost every one appears to have started with a Rabelais ready made in his head, and to have, so to speak, read that Rabelais into the book. Those who have not done this, like Le Duchat, Motteux, and Esmangart, have generally committed the error of tormenting themselves and their author to find individual explanations of personages and events. The extravagance of the last-named commentator takes the form of seeing elaborate allegories ; that of some others devotes itself chiefly to identifying the characters of the romance with more or less famous historical persons. But the first blunder, that of forming a general hypothetical conception of Rabelais and then adjusting interpretation of the work to it, is the commoner. This conception, however, has singularly varied. According to some expositors, among whom the latest and not the least respectable is M. Fleury, Rabelais is a sober reformer, an apostle of earnest work, of sound education, of rational if not dogmatic religion, who wraps up his morals in a farcical envelope partly to make them go down with the vulgar and partly to shield himself from the consequences of his reforming zeal. According to others, of whom we have had in England a distinguished example in Mr Besant, Rabclais is all this but with a difference. He is not religious at all; he is more or less anti-religious ; and his book is more or less of a general pro- test against any attempt to explain supernaturally the riddle of the earth. According to a third class, the most distinguished re- cent representative of which was M. Paul Lacroix, the Rabelaisian legend does not so much err in principle as it invents in fact. Rabelais is the incarnation of the 'esprit Gaulois," a jovial careless soul, not destitute of common sense or even acute intellectual power, but first of all a good fellow, rather preferring a broad jest to a fine-pointed one, and rollicking through life like a good-natured undergraduate. Of all these views it may be said that those who hold them are obliged to shut their eyes to many things in the book and to see in it many which are not there. The religious part of the matter will be dealt with presently ; but it is impossible to think that any unbiassed judge reading Rabelais can hold the grave philosopher view or the reckless good fellow view without modifications and allowances which practically deprive either of any value asa sufficient explanation of the book and its writer. Those who, as it has been happily put, identify Rabelais with Pantagruel, strive in vain on any view intellectually consistent or morally respectable to account for the vast

ocean of pure or impure laughter and foolery which surrounds the few solid islets of sense and reason and devotion. Those who in the same way identify Rabelais with Panurge can never explain the education scheme, the solemn apparition of Gargantua among the farcical and fantastic Variations on Panurge's wedding, and many other passages ; while, on the other hand, those who insist on a definite propaganda of

any kind must justify themselves by their own power of seeing things invisible to plain men.. But these vagaries are not only un- justifiable ; they are entirely unnecessary. No one reading Rabelais without part? pris, but with a good knowledge of the history and literature of his own times and the times which preceded him, can have much difficulty in appreciating his book. He had evidently during his long and studious sojourn in the cloister (a sojourn which was certainly not less than five-and-twenty years, while it may have been five-and-thirty, and of which the studiousness rests not on legend but on documentary evidence) acquired a vast stock of learning. He was, it is clear, thoroughly penetrated with the instincts, the hopes, and the ideas of the Renaissance in the form whieh it took in France, in England, and in Germany,—a form, that is to say, not merely humanist but full of aspirations for social and political improvement, and above all for a joyous, varied, and non-ascetic life. He had thoroughly convinced himself of the abuscs to which monachism lent itself. Lastly, he had the spirit of lively satire and of willingness desipere in loco which frequently goes with the love of books. It is in the highest degree improbable that in beginning his great work he had any definite purpose or intention. The habit of burlesquing the romans d'aventwres was no new one, and the form lent itself easily to the two literary exercises to which he was most disposed,—apt and quaint citation from and variation on the classics and satirical criticism of the life he saw around him. The immense popularity of the first two parts induced him to eon- tinue them, and by degrees (the genuineness of the fifth book at any rate in substanee is here assumed) the possibility of giving the whole something like a consistent form and a regular conclusion presented itself to him. The voyage in particular allowed the widest licence of satirical allusion, and he availed himself of that licence in the widest sense. Here and there persons are glanced at, while the whole scenery of his

birthplace and its neighbourhood is curiously worked in; but for the most part the satire is typical rather than individual, and it is on the whole a rather negative satire. In only two points can Rabelais be said to be definitely polemic. He certainly hated the monkish system in the debased form in which it existed in his time; he as certainly hated the brutish ignorance into which the earlier systems of education had suffered too many of their teaehers and scholars to drop. At these two things he was never tired of striking, but elsewhere, even in the grim satire of the Chats fourrés, he is the satirist proper rather than the reformer. It is in the very absence of any cramping or limiting purpose that the great merit aud value of the book consist. It holds up an almost perfectly level and spotless mirror to the temper of the earlier Renaissance. The author has no universal medicine of his own (except Pantagruelism) to offer, nor has he anybody else's universal medicine to attack. He ranges freely about the world, touching the laughable sides of things with kindly laughter, and every now and then dropping the ristbile and taking to the rationale. It is not indeed possible to deny that in the Oracle of the Bottle, besides its mercly jocular and fantastic sense, there is a certain "echo," as it has been called, "of the conclusion of the preacher," a certain acknowledgment of the vanity of things. But in sucli a book such a note could hardly be wanting unless the writer had been a fanatic, which he was not, or a mcre voluptuary, whieh he was not, or a dullard, which he was least of all. It is, after all, little more than a suggestion, and is certainly not strengthened by anything in the body of the work. Rabclais is, in short, if he be read without prejudice, a humourist pure and simple, feeling often in earnest, thinking almost always in jest. He is distinguished from the two men who alone can be com1pared to him in character of work and force of genius combined—Lucian and Swift—by very marked characteristics. He is much less of a mere mocker than Lucian, and he is entirely destitute, even when he deals with monks or pedants, of the ferocity of Swift. He neither sneers nor rages; the rire ¢tmmense which distinguishes him is altogether good-natured ; but he is nearer to Lucian than to Swift, and Lucian is perhaps the author whom it is most neccs- sary to know in order to understand him rightly. ,

If this general view is correct (and it may at least claim to be founded on nothing but the reading of Rabelais himself without prejudice and with a tolerable apparatus) it will probably condition to some extent the answer to

be given to the two minor questions stated above. The first is connected with the great blemish of Gargantua and Pantagruel,—their extreme coarseness of language and imagery. It is somewhat curious that some of those who claim Rabelais as an enemy of the supernatural in general have been the loudest to condemn this blemish, and that some of them have made the exceedingly lame excuse for him that it was a means of wrapping up his propaganda and keeping it and himself safe froin the notice of the powers that were. This is not complimentary to Rabelais, and, except in some very small degree, it is not likely to be true. For as a matter of fact obscenity no less than impiety was charged against him by his ultra-orthodox enemies, and the obseenity no less than the supposed impiety gave them a handle against him before such bodies as the Sorbonne and the parliaments. As for the extreme theory of the anti-Rabclaisians, that Rabelais

was a "dirty old blackguard" who liked filth and wallowed in it from choice, that hardly needs comment. His errors in this way are of course, looked at from an absolute standard, unpardonable. But judged relatively there are several, we shall not say excuses, but explanations of them. In the first place, the comparative indecency of Rabelais has been much exaggerated by persons un- familiar with carly French literature. The form of his book was above all things popular, and the popular French literature of the Middle Ages as distinguished from the courtly and hterary litera- ture, which was singularly pure, can hardly be exceeded in point of coarseness. The fabliaux, the carly burlesque romances of the Audigier class, the farces of the 15th century, cqual (the grotesyue iteration and amplification which is the uote of Gargantua and Pantagruel being allowed for, and sometimes without that allow- ance) the coarsest passages of Rabelais. His coarseness, moreover, disgusting as it is, has nothing of the corruption of refined voluptu- ousness about it, and nothing of the sniggering indecency which disgraces men like Pope, like Voltaire, and like Sterne. It shows in its author a want of reverence, a want of decency in the proper sense, a too great readiness to condescend to the easiest kind of ludicrous ideas and the kind inost acceptable at that time to the common run of mankind. The general taste having been consider- ably refined since, Rabelais has in parts become nearly unreadable, —the worst and most

appropriate punishment for his faults. As for those who have tried to make his indecency an argumcut for his laxity in religious principle, that arguinent, like another men- tioned previously, hardly needs discussion. It is notoriously false as a matter of experience. Rabelais could not have written as he has written in this respect and in others if he had been an earnestly pious person, taking heed to every act and word, and studious equally not to offend and not to cause offence. But no onc in his senses would dream of claiming any such character for him.

This brings us to the last point—what his religious opinions were. He has been claimed as a freethinker of all shades, from undogmatic theism to athcism, and as a concealed Protestant. The last of these claims has now bcen very generally given up, and indeed Erasmus might quite as reasonably be claimed for the Reformation as Rabelais. Both disliked and attacked the more erying abuses of their church, and both at the time and since have been disliked and attacked by the more imprudent partisans of that church. But Rabelais, in his own way, held off from the Reformation even more distinctly than Erasmus did. The accusa- tion of freethinking, if not of directly anti-Christian thinking, has always been more common and has recently found mucli favour. It is, however, remarkable that those who hold this opinion never give chapter and verse for it, and it may be said confidently that chapter and verse cannot be given. The sayings attributed to Rabelais whieh colour the idea (such as the famous '"'Je vais chercher un grand peut-étre," said to have been uttered on his death-bed) are, as has been said, purely apocryphal. In the book itsclf nothing of the kind is to be found. Perhaps the nearest approach to it is a jest at the Sorbonne couched in the Pauline phrase about " the evidence of things not seen," which the author removed from the later editions. But irreverences of this kind, as well as the frequent burlesque citations of the Bible, whether commendable or not, had been, were, have since been, and are common in writers whose orthodoxy is unquestioned ; and it must be remembered that the later Middle Age, which in many respects Rabelais represents almost more than he does the Renaissance, was, with all its unquestioning faith, singularly reckless and, to our fancy, irreverent in its use of the sacred words and images, which were to it the most familiar of all images and words. On the other hand, there are in the book, in the description of Gargantua's and Pantagruel's education, in the sketch of the abbey of Thelema, in several

passages relating to Pantagruel, expressions which either signify a sincere and unfeigned piety of a simple kind or else are inventions of the most detestable hypocrisy. For these passages are not, like many to be found from the Renaissance to the end of the 18th century, obvious flags of truce to cover attacks, —mere bowings in the house of Rimmon to prevent evil consequences. There is absolutely no sign of the tongue in the cheek. They are always written in the author's highest style, a style perfectly elo- quent and unaffected ; they can only be interpreted (on the free- thinking hypothesis) as allegorical with the greatest difficulty and obscurity, and it is pretty certain that no one reading the book without a thesis to prove would dream of taking them in a non- natural sense. It is not, indeed, to be contended that Rabelais was a man with whom religion was in detail a constant thought, that he had a very tender conscience or a very scrupulous orthodoxy. His form of religious sentiment was not evangelical or mystical, any more than it was ascetic or eeremonial or dogmatic. As regards one of the accepted doctrines of his own church, the excellence of the celibate life, of poverty, and of elaborate obedience to a rule, he no doubt was a strong dissident ; but the evidence that, as a Christian, he was unorthodox, that he was even an heretical or latitudinarian thinker in regard to those doctrines which the various Christian churches have in common, is not merely weak, it is

practically non-existent. The counter testimony is, indeed, not very strong and still less detailed. But that is not the point. It is sufficient to say that there is absolutely nothing within the covers of Rabelais's works incompatible with an orthodoxy which would be recognized as sufficient by Christendom at large, leaving out of the question those points of doctrine and practice on which Christians differ. Beyond this no wise man will go, and short of it hardly any unprejudiced man will stop.

The dates of the original editions of Rabelais's works have been given where possible already. The earlier books were repeatedly reissued during the author's life, and always with some correction. What may be called the first complete edition appeared in 1567 at Lyons, published by Jean Martin.

It is computed that no less than sixty editions were printed before the close of the 16th century. A very considerable time, however, elapsed before the works were, properly speaking, edited. Huet devoted much pains to them, but his results were not made public. The first edition which calls for notice, except in a complete bibliography, is that of Le Duchat (Amsterdam, 1711). Le Duchat was a very careful student, and on the whole a very efficient editor, being perhaps, of the group of students of old French at the beginning of the 18th century, which included La Monnoye and others, the most sober, critical, and accomplished. But at that time the knowledge of the period was scarcely far enough advanced. The next important date in the bibliography of Rabelais is 1823, in which year appeared the most elaborate edition of his work yet published, that of Esmangart and Johanneau (9 vols.), including for the first time the "Songes Drolatiques," a spurious but carly and not uninteresting collection of grotesque figure-drawings illustrating Gargantua and Pantagruel, and the second edition of M. de lAulnaye, containing a bad text but a useful glossary. From this time the editions have been very numerous. Among them may be mentioned those illustrated by Gustave Doré, first on a small scale (1854), afterwards more elabo- rately (1870); that of the Collection Didot by Burgaud des Marets and Rathery (1859, second edition 1870); the Bibliothéque Elzévir- iene edition by MM. Lacour and A. de Montaiglon; that of the Nouvelle Collection Jannet (seven small volumes, 1867-74), com- pleted by M. Moland ; and lastly, the edition of M. Marty-Laveaux in the Collection Lemerre (1868-81), which is unfortunately not se completed, but which when finished will undoubtedly be the – n1andsomest, the most accurate, and the most complete in the scholarly sense yet published. At present the most really useful edition which combines a handsome form with cheapness is that of the Nouvelle Collection Jannet, though that of MM. Burgaud des Marets and Rathery is not to be despised. Commentaries on Rabelais, independent of editions, have been especially numerous of late years; the work of MM. Reville, Noel, Mayrargues, and Gebhart may be mentioned. But the best recent book on the sub- ject in French is that of M. J. Fleury (2 vols., Paris, 1876), whicli, though deficient in exactitude as to many points of detail, aud sacrificing something to a desire of presenting Rabelais as a great social philosopher, is, on the whole, very sensible and complete.

tabelais was very early popular in England. There are possible allusions to him in Shakespeare, and the current clerical notion of him is very unjustly adopted by Marston in the words "wicked Rabelais"; but Bacon described him better as the great jester of France, and a Scot, Sir Thomas Urquhart, translated the earlier books in 1653. This was not worthily completed till the luckless Motteux, or, as his compatriots call him, Le Motteux, finished it with an extensive commentary. Criticism of a scattered kind on Rabelais in English is abundant, that of Coleridge being the most important, while the constant evidence of his influence in Southey's Doetor is also noteworthy. But he was hardly treated as a whole before Mr Besant's book on the subject in the Foreign Classics for English Readers (1879), which the author has since followed up with Readings from Rabelais (1883). Myr Besant has too readily adopted (probably from Michelet) the apocryphal scandals as to the difference between Rabelais and the poets of the Pléiade, and is committed (it is not quite clear why) to a view of Rabelais as a non-Christian thinker and preacher for which it is impossible to discover solid justification. But otherwise his books form the best introduction possible for a modern English reader to this great author. (G. SA.)

RABENER, Gorriies Winuetm (1714-1771), German satirist, was born in 1714 near Leipsic, and after studying law at that city entered the civil service, in which he continued for many years. He died on 22d March 1771. The papers which he published in the Bremer Beitrdge were subsequently collected into a Sammlung satirischer Schriften (2 vols., 1751), to which two volumes were after- wards added. The work passed through numerous edi- tions. Rabener's Freundschaftliche Briefe were published posthumously by C. F. Weisse with a biography. (See GERMANY, vol. x. p. 533.)

RA Bias

RABIES, a virulent disease, developed primarily in and peculiar to the canine species. Its occurrence in the same manner in other carnivorous animals, as the fox, wolf, hyzena, jackal, raccoon, badger, and skunk, has been asserted ; but there is every probability that it is originally a disease of the dog. It is communicated by inoculation to nearly all, if not all, warin-blooded creatures. The trans- mission from one animal to another only certainly takes place through inoculation with viruliferous matters. The

malady is generally characterized at a certain stage by an irrepressible desire in the animal to act offensively with its natural weapons,—dogs and other carnivora attacking with their teeth, herbivora with their hoofs or horns, and birds with their beaks, when excited ever so slightly. In the absence of excitement the malady may run its course without any fit of fury or madness. Transmission of the disease to man produces HypRopHopia (q.v.) or dread of water, but in animals this symptom is rarely, if ever, observed. Rabies has been known from the very earliest times, and serious outbreaks have been recorded as occur- ring among dogs, wolves, and foxes in different parts of the world, particularly in western Europe and in North and South America. It is very frequent in Europe and appears to be on the increase. France, Germany, upper Italy, and Holland evidently suffer more than other Con- tinental countries. England is becoming more frequently visited than before, though Scotland and Ireland are much less troubled than England. Spain is also sometimes severely scourged by it; but it is rare in Portugal. On the American continent it is well known, though on the eastern side of the Andes it is rarely if ever seen; and it has never been heard of in Quito. In the West Indies —in Hispaniola, Jamaica, Domingo, Havana, Guadaloupe, and Hayti—as well as in Ceylon, it is frequently wit- nessed, and in 1813 it was introduced into Mauritius. It exists in North and South China, and has been reported in Cochin China and the kingdom of Anam. It is fre- quent and fatal in India; and it is by no means rare in Syria, Palestine, and Turkey. It has been observed in the Hij4z in Arabia, and in North Africa and Egypt. Hydrophobia has been reported in Algeria; but Rohlfs asserts that it is unknown in Morocco. Gibraltar and Malta have been seriously invaded at times, and in Sweden, Denmark, Norway, Russia, and Lapland it has been fre- quently seen in an epizootic form; but it is not yet positively decided whether it exists in the Arctic regions. Steller and Erman assert that it is unknown in Kam- chatka and Greenland; but Hayes (Zhe Open Polar Sea) gives us the particulars of an outbreak of disease in South Greenland, which persisted for several years, caused him the loss of his sledge-dogs in 1870, and in 1872 extended from Smith's Sound to Jakobshavn, threatening the utter extinction of the species, and with it the dis- appearance of the Eskimo. In most of its features it appeared to be rabies. The scourge is unknown, accord- ing to reliable evidence, in Australia and New Zealand, Tasmania, the Azores, and St Helena, as well

as the island of Madeira ; it has not been seen at Sumatra, nor in East, South, and West Africa, nor in the island of Réunion.

Rabies (hydrophobia) is almost invariably fatal in man, and in the dog it nearly always terminates in death, though instances of recovery are recorded ; and it is extremely probable that in those cases in which people have been bitten by dogs and subsequently perished from hydro- phobia, without the animals themselves offering any marked Indications of illness either at the time or afterwards, these have been suffering from a mild form of the disease. It 18 also fatal to horses, cows, pigs, goats, and cats, but not to fowls, many of these recovering from accidental or experimental inoculation. Indeed rabies varies consider-

ably in intensity and in the character of its symptoms in different species of creatures. Pasteur has shown that, if it is transmitted from the diseased dog to the monkey and ultimately from monkey to monkey, at each trans- mission it becomes more attenuated in virulence, and remains so attenuated when passed again to the dog, rabbit, or guinea-pig, nor will it any longer produce the disease in dogs by hypodermic inoculations. Even inocu- lation by trepanning the cranium, which is so infallible in conveying rabies, may produce no result, the dog thence- forward being protected, and no longer capable of receiving the disease. On the other hand, the rabific virus is in- tensified when passed from rabbit to rabbit, or from guinea-pig to guinea- pig; and after several transmissions through the bodies of these animals it regains the maxi- mum virulence which it possessed before it was enfeebled by being passed through the monkey. And the same thing holds with respect to the virulence of the ordinary rabid dog: when virus which is far from having reached its maximum intensity is conveyed to the rabbit, it requires to be passed through several of these animals before it reaches its maximum. It may be mentioned that the disease is not readily conveyed from man to animals, either accidentally or experimentally. The virus appears to exist in greatest intensity in the salivary glands and their secretion, in the brain and spinal cord, and perhaps to a lesser degree in the blood ; doubtless it exists also in other fluids and tissues of the diseased animal. The priucipal alterations found in the bodies of rabid animals after

death are located in the spinal cord, especially its upper portion, the medulla oblongata, certain parts of the brain, and the salivary glands, more particularly the submaxillary and sublingual,—less in the parotid. The stomach, kidneys, and other organs also present altera- tions which are more or less significant, especially the former, in which foreign bodies, as hair, wood, stones, earth, pieces of cloth, &c., are very frequently found. But the nature of the lesions, as well as the symptomato- logy, shows that the action of the poison is more especially exerted on the brain or spinal cord, though the eighth pair of nerves, and branches of the fifth and seventh pairs, are not involved in animals, as in man.

The period in which the symptoms of the disease become manifest, especially after accidental inoculations, as bites, varies extremely ; indeed there is no disease in which the period of latency or incubation is more variable or pro- tracted, this being sometimes limited to a few days or weeks and extending in rare cases to more than twelve months. In experimental inoculations the period is greatly shortened and the results more certain,—all the more so if the virus is introduced into the cranial cavity by trepan- ning, or into the blood-stream by intravenous inoculation. In accidental inoculations, as in wounds from rabid dogs, a certain but varying percentage escape. This immunity may be due to natural non-receptivity, to the wound not having been inflicted in a very vascular part, or to the saliva having been expended from frequent bites on other animals, or intercepted by clothing, hair, wool, &c.

Symptoms.—The discase has been divided into three stages or periods, and has also been described as appearing in at least two forms, according to the peculiarities of the symptoms. But, asa rule, one period of the disease does not pass suddenly into another, the transition being almost imperceptible ; and the forms do not differ essentially from each other, but appear merely to constitute varieties of the same disease, due to the natural disposition of the animal, or other modifying circumstances. These forms have been designated true or furious rabies (Fr. rage vrai; Germ. rasende Wuth) and dumb rabies (Fr. rage mue ; Germ. stille Wath).

The malady does not commence with fury and madness, but in a strange and anomalous change in the habits of the dog: it becomes dull, gloomy,

and taciturn, and seeks to isolate itself in out-of-the- way places, retiring beneath chairs and to odd corners. But in its retirement it cannot rest: it is uneasy and fidgety, and no

sooner has it lain down than suddenly it jumps up in an agitated manner, walks backwards and forwards several times, again lies down and assumes a sleeping attitude, but has only maintained it for a few minutes when it is once more moving about. Again it retires to its corner, to the farthest recess it can find, and huddles itself up into a heap, with its head concealed beneath its chest and fore-paws. This state of continual agitation and inquietude is in striking contrast with its ordinary habits, and should therefore receive attention. Not unfrequently there are a few moments when the creature appears more lively than usual, and displays an extra- ordinary amount of affection. Sometimes there is a disposition to gather up straw, thread, bits of wood, &c., which are industriously carried away; a tendency to lick anything cold, as iron, stoncs, &c., is also observed in many instances; and there is also a desire evinced to lick other animals. Sexual excitement is also frequently an early symptom. At this period no disposition to bite is observed ; the animal is docile with its master and obeys his voice, though not so readily as before, nor with the same pleased countenance. There is something strange in the expression of its face, and the voice of its owner is scarcely able to make it change from a sudden gloominess to its usual animated aspect. These symptoms gradu- ally become more marked : the restlessness and agitation increase. If on straw the dog scatters and pulls it about with its paws, and if in a room it scratches and tumbles the cushions or rugs on which it usually lies. It is incessantly on the move, rambling about, scratching the ground, sniffing in corners and at the doors, as if on the scent or seeking for something. It indulges in strange movenients, as if affected by some mental influences, or a prey to hallucinations. When not excited by any external influence it will remain for a brief period perfectly still and attentive, as if watching something, or following the movements of some creature on the wall; then it will suddenly dart forward and snap at the vacant air, as if pursuing an annoying object, or endeavouring to seize a fly. At another time it throws itself, yelling and furions, against the wall, as if it heard threatening voices

on the other side, or was bent on attacking anenemy. Nevertheless, the animal is still docile and submissive, for its master's voice will bring it out of its frenzy. But the saliva is already virulent, and the excess- ive affection which it evinces at intervals, by licking the hands or face of those it loves, renders the danger very great should there be a wound or abrasion. Until a late period in the disease the inaster's voice has a powerful influence over the animal. When it has escaped from all control and wanders erratically abroad, ferocious and restless, and haunted by horrid phantoms, the familiar voiee yet exerts its influence, and it is rare indeed that it attacks its master.

There is no dread of water in the rabid dog; the animal is gener- ally thirsty, and if water be offered will lap it with avidity, and swallow it at the commencement of the disease. And, when, at a later period, the constriction about the throat—symptomatic of the disease—renders swallowing difficult, the dog will none the less endeavour to drink, and the lappings are as frequent and pro- longed when deglutition becomes impossible. So little dread has the rabid dog of water that it will ford. streams and swim rivers ; and when in the ferocious stage it will even do this in order to attack other creatures on the opposite side. The evidence on this head is overwhelming.

At the commencement of the discase the dog does not usually refuse to eat, and some animals are voracious to an unusual degree. But in a short time it becomes fastidious, only eating what it usually has a special predilection for. Soon, however, this gives place to a most characteristic symptom—either the taste becomes extremely depraved or the dog has a fatal and imperious desire to bite and ingest everything. The litter of its kennel, wool from cushions, carpets, stockings, slippers, wood, grass, earth, stones, glass, horse-dung, even its own feces and urine, or whatever else may come in its way, are devoured. On examination of the body of a dog which has died of rabies it is so common to find in the stomach a quantity of dissimilar and strange matters on which the teeth have been exercised that, if there was nothing known of the animal's history, there would be strong evidence of its having been affected with the disease. When a dog, then, is observed to gnaw and eat suchlike matters, though it exhibits no tendency to bite, it should be suspected.

The mad dog does not usually foam at the mouth to any great extent at first. The mucus of the mouth is not much increased in quantity, but it soon becomes thicker, viscid, and glutinous, and adheres to the angles of the mouth, fauces, and teeth. It is at this period that the thirst is most ardent, and the dog sometimes furiously attempts to detach the saliva with its paws; and, if after a while it loses its balance in these attempts and tumbles over, there can no longer be any doubt as to the nature of the malady. There is another symptom connected with the mouth in that form of the disease named '"'dumb madness" which has frequently proved deceptive. The lower jaw drops in consequence of paralysis of its muscles, and the mouth remains open. The interior is dry from the air passing continually over it, and assumes a deep red

tint, somewhat masked by patches of dust or earth, which more especially adhere to the upper surface of the tongue and to the lips. The strange alteration produced in the dog's physiognomy by its constantly open mouth and the dark colour of the interior is rendered still more characteristic by the dull, sad, or dead ex- pression of the animal's eyes. In this condition the creature is not very dangerous, because generally it could not bite if it tried, — indeed there does not appear to be much desire to bite in dumb inadness ; but the saliva is none the less virulent, and accidental inoculations with it, through imprudent handling, will prove as fatal as in the furious form. The mouth should not be touched, —numerous deaths having occurred through people thinking the dog had some foreign substance lodged in its throat, and thrusting their fingers down to remove it. The sensation of tightness which seems to exist at the throat causes the dog to act as if a bone were fixed between its teeth or towards the back of its mouth, and to employ its fore-paws as if to dislodge it. This is a very deceptive symptom, and may prove cqually dangerous if caution be not ob- served. Vomiting of blood or a chocolate-coloured fluid is witnessed in some cases, and has been supposed to be due to the foreign sub- stances in the stomach, which abrade the lining membrane ; this, however, is not correct, as it has been observed in man,

The voice of the rabid dog is very peculiar, and so characteristic that to those acquainted with it nothing more is needed to prove the presence of the disease. Those who have heard it once or twice never forget its signification. Owing to the alterations taking place in the larynx the voiee becomes hoarse, cracked, and stridulous, like that of a child affected with croup,—the "voix du coq," as the French have it. A preliminary bark is made in a somewhat elevated tone and with open mouth; this is immediately succeeded by five, six, or eight decreasing howls, cmitted when the animal is sitting or standing, and always with the nose elevated, which seem to come from the depths of the throat, the jaws not coming together and closing the mouth during such emission, as in the healthy bark. This alteration in the voice is frequently the first observable indica- tion of the malady, and should at once attract attention. In dumb madness the voice is frequently lost from the very commencement, —hence the designation.

The sensibility of the mad dog appears to be considerably dimi- nished, and the animal appcars to have lost the faculty of expressing the sensations it experiences: it is mute under the infliction of pain, though there can be no doubt that it still has peripheral sensation to some extent. Burning, beating, and wounding produee much less effect than in health, and the animal will even mutilate itself with its teeth. Suspicion, therefore, should always strongly attach to a dog which does not manifest a certain susceptibility to painful impressions and receives punishment without any cry or complaint. There is also reason for apprehension when a dog bites itself persistently in any part of its body. A rabid dog is usually stirred to fury at the sight of one of its own species; this test has been resorted to by Bouley to dissipate doubts as to the existence of the disease when the diagnosis is otherwise unccrtain. As soon as the suspected animal, if it is really rabid, finds itself in the presence of another of its species it at once assumes the aggress- ive, and, if allowed, will bite furiously. All rabid animals indeed become excited, exasperated, and furious at the sight of a dog, and attack it with their natural weapons, even the timid sheep when rabid butts furiously at the enemy before which in health it would have fled in terror. This inversion of sentiment is sometimes valu- able in diagnosing the malady ; it is so common that it may be said to be present in every case of rabies. When, therefore, a dog, contrary to its habits and natural inclination, becomes suddenly aggressive to other dogs, it is time to take precautions.

In the large majority of instances the dog is inoffensive in the early period of the disease to those to whom it is familiar, It then flies from its home and either dies, is killed as "mad," or returns in a miserable plight, and in an advanced stage of the malady, when the desire to bite is irresistible. It is in the carly stage that sequestra- tion and suppressive measures are most valuable. The dogs which propagate the disease are usually those that have escaped from their owners, After two or three days, frequently in about twelve hours, more serious and alarming symptoms appear, ferocious in- stincts are developed, and the desire to do injury is irrepressible. The animal has an indcfinable expression of sombre melancholy and cruelty. The eyes have their pupils dilated, and entit flashes of light when they are not dull and heavy; they always appear so fierce as to produce terror in the beholder; they are red and their sensibility to light is increased; and wrinkles, which sometimes appear on the forehead, add to the repulsive aspect of the animal. If caged it flies at the spectator, emitting its characteristic howl or bark, and seizing the iron bars with its teeth, and if a stick be thrust before it this is grasped and gnawed. This fury is soon suc- ceeded by lassitude, when the animal remains insensible to every excitement. Then all at once it rouses up again, and another paroxysm of fury commences. The first paroxysm is usually the most intense, and the fits vary in duration from some hours to a day, and even longer; they are ordinarily briefer in trained and

RABIES

pet dogs than in those which are less domesticated, but in all the remission is so complete after the first paroxysm that the animals appear to be almost well, if not in perfect health. During the paroxysms respiration is hurried and laboured, but tranquil during the remissions. There is an increase of temperature and the pulse is quick and hard. When the animal is kept in a dark place and not excited, the fits of fury are not observed. Sometimes it is agitated and restless in the manner already described. It never becomes really furious or aggressive unless excited by external objects,—the most potent of these, as has been said, being another dog, which, however, if it be admitted to its cage, it may not at onee attack. The attacked animal rarely retaliates, but usually responds to the bites by acute yells, which contrast strangely with the silent auger of the aggressor, and tries to hide its head with its paws or beneath the straw. These repeated paroxysms hurry the course of the discase. The secretion and flowing of a large quantity of saliva from the mouth are usually only witnessed in cases in which swallowing has become impossible, the mouth being gencrally dry. At times the tongue, nose, and whole head appear swollen. Other dogs frequently shun one which is rabid, as if aware of their danger.

The rabid dog, if lodged in a room or kept in a house, is continually endeavouring to escape; and when it makes its escape it goes freely forward, as if impelled by some irresistible force. It travels con- siderable distances in a short time, perhaps attacking every living creature it meets, —preferring dogs, however, to other animals, and these to mankind ; cats, sheep, cattle, and horses are particularly liable to be injured. It attacks in silence, and never utters a snarl or a cry of anger; should it chance to be hurt in return it emits no cry or howl of pain. The degree of ferocity appears to be related to natural disposition and training. Soine dogs, for instance, will only snap or give a slight bite in passing, while others will bite furiously, tearing the objects presented to them, or which they meet in their way, and sometimes with such violence as to injure their mouth and break their teeth, or even their jaws. If chained, they will in some cases gnaw the chain until their teeth are worn away and the bones laid bare. The rabid dog does not continue its progress Very long. Exhausted by fatigue and the paroxysms of madness excited in it by the objects it meets, as well as by hunger, thirst, and also, no doubt, by the malady, its limbs soon become

feeble ; the rate of travelling is lessened and the walk is unsteady, while its drooping tail, head inclined towards the ground, open mouth, and protruded tongue (of a leaden colour or covered with dust) give the distressed creature a very striking and characteristic physiognomy. In this condition, however, it is much less to be dreaded than in its early fits of fury, since it is no longer capable or desirous of altering its course or going out of its way to attack an animal or a man not immediately in the path. It is very probable that its fast-failing vision, deadened scent, and generally diminished perception prevent its being so readily impressed or excited by surrounding objects as it previously was. To each paroxysm, which is always of short avin, there succeeds a degree of exhaustion as great as the fits have been violent and oft repeated. This compels the animal to stop; then it shelters itself in obscure places—frequently in ditches by the roadsidc—and lies there in a somnolescent state for perhaps hours. There is great danger, nevertheless, in disturbing the dog at this period; for when roused from its torpor it has sometimes sufficient strength to in- flict a bite. This period, which may be termed the second stage, i$ as variable in its duration as the first, but it rarely exceeds three or four days. The above-described phenomena gradually merge into those of the third or last period, when symptoms of paralysis appear, which are speedily followed by death. During the remission in the paroxysms these paralytic symptoms are more particularly manifested in the hind limbs, which appear as if un- able to support the animal's weight, and cause it to stagger about ; or the lower jaw becomes more or less drooping, leaving the parched mouth partially open. Emaciation rapidly sets in, and the paroxysms diminish' in intensity, while the remissions become less marked. The physiognomy assumes a still more sinister and repulsive aspect; the hair is dull and ercct; the flanks are re- tracted ; the eyes lose their lustre and are buried in the orbits, the pupil being dilated, and the cornea dull and semi-opaque ; very often, even at an early period, the eyes squint, and this adds still more to the terrifying appearance of the poor dog. The voice, if at all heard, is husky, the breathing laborious, and the pulse hurried and irregular. Gradually the paralysis increascs, and the posterior extremities are dragged as if the animal's back were broken, until at length it becomes general; it is then the prelude to death. Or the dog remains lying in a state of stupor, and can only raise itself With difficulty on the fore-limbs when greatly excited. In this condition it may yet endeavour to bite at objects within its reach. At times

convulsions of a tetanic character appear in certain muscles ; at other times these are general. A comatose condition ensues, and the rabid dog, if permitted to die naturally, perishes, in the great majority of cascs, from paralysis and asphyxia.

In dumb madness there is paralysis of the lower jaw, which im-

parts a curious and very characteristic physiognomy to the dog ; the voice is also lost, and the animal can neither eat nor drink. In this condition the creature remains with its jaw pendent and the mouth consequently wide open, showing the flaccid or swollen tongue covered with brownish matter, and a stringy gelatinous- looking saliva lying between it and the lower lip and coating the fauces, which sometimes appear to be inflamed. Though the animal is unable to swallow fluids, the desire to drink is neverthe- less intense ; for the creature will thrust its face into the vessel of water in futile attempts to obtain relief, even until the approach of death. Water may be poured down its throat without inducing a paroxysm. The general physiognomy and demeanour of the poor creature inspire the beholder with pity rather than fear. The symptoms due to cerebral excitement are less marked than in the furious form of the disease ; the agitation is not so considerable, and the restlessness, tendency to run away, and desire to bite are nearly absent ; generally the animal is quite passive. Not unfre- quently one or both eyes squint, and it is only when very much excited that the dog may contrive to close its mouth. Sometimes there is swelling about the pharynx and the neck; when the tonguc shares in this complication it hangs out of the mouth. In certain cases there is a catarrhal condition of the membrane lining the nasal cavities, larynx, and bronchi; sometimes the animal testifies to the existence of abdominal pain, and the feces are then soft or fluid. The other symptoms—such as the rapid exhaustion and emaciation, paralysis of the posterior limbs towards the ter- mination of the disease, as well as the rapidity with which it runs its course—are the same as in the furious form.

The simultaneous occurrence of furious and dumb madness is frequently observed in packs of fox-hounds. Dumb madness differs, then, from the fnrious type in the paralysis of the lower jaw, which hinders the dog from

biting, save in very exceptional circumstances ; the ferocious instincts are also in abeyance ; and there is no tendency to aggression. It has been calculated that from 15 to 20 per cent. of rabid dogs have this particular form of the disease. Puppies and young dogs chiefly have furious rabies.

These are the symptoms of rabies in the dog; but it is not likely, nor is it necessary, that they will all be present in every case. In other species the symptoms differ more or less from those mani- fested by the dog, but they are generally marked by a change in the manner and habits of the creatures affected, with strong indi- cations of nervous disturbance, in the majority of species amounting to ferociousness and a desire to injure, timid creatures becoming bold and aggressive, (See Fleming, Rabies and Hydrophobia.)

In order to prevent injury from this disease in countries in which it is prevalent owners of dogs should be well acquainted with its symptoms, especially the premonitory ones ; of these a change in the demeanour and habits of the animal—unusual irritability, depraved appetite, rest- lessness, and a tendency to wander from home—are the most marked. One of the chief police measures is dimi- nution in the number of useless dogs. This is best enforced by the imposition of a dog-tax or licence, which may be large or small in proportion to the number of dogs or the urgency of the case. On the licence-paper the chief symptoms of the malady should be described so as to warn dog-owners. Every dog should wear a collar with a brass plate, on which are inscribed the name and address of the owner as well as a police register-number stamped thereon, or some particular mark affixed by the police or inland revenue authorities, for purposes of identi- fication ; all stray dogs without a collar of this description ought to be captured, and sold or destroyed after three or more days if not claimed. Blunting the canine and incisor teeth of dogs has also been proposed as a precautionary measure. All dogs suspected of rabies should be captured and, when the existence of the disease is confirmed, de- stroyed. Rabid dogs should be destroyed at once. It is also well as a precautionary measure to kill dogs or cats which have been bitten or " worried" by rabid animals. During an outbreak of rabies all dogs should be securely muzzled and if possible led. It is a great mistake to de- stroy immediately suspected dogs which have bitten people ; they should be kept until their condition is ascertained, as, if they are found to be healthy, this will greatly relieve the mind of those who have

been bitten. Suspected dogs should be carefully kept under observation and frequently inspected by a veterinary surgeon or other competent per-

son. All wounds inflicted by strange or suspected dogs should be immediately attended to and treated by suction, washing, and expression, until proper surgical treatment can be adopted. In those countries in which the disease has not yet appeared, in order to prevent its admission, the importation of dogs should be forbidden or an extended period of quarantine imposed.

We may here allude to the results of Pasteur's experi- ments in rabies. By passing modified virus into the bodies of dogs he has discovered that they are protected from an attack of the disease—are, in fact, rendered refractory to rabies. For instance, rabific virus is obtained from a rabbit which has died after inoculation by tre- panning, and after a period of incubation longer by some days than the shortest period in these animals, which is invariably between seven and eight days subsequent to inoculation with the most active virus. The virus of the rabbit in the period of long incubation is inoculated by trepanning into a second rabbit, the virus of this into a third; and on each occasion the virus, which becomes more and more potent, is inoculated into a dog. The latter at last becomes capable of supporting what would be to other dogs a deadly virus, and is entirely proof against rabies either by intravenous inoculation, by tre- panning, or by the virus of a rabid animal. By using the blood of rabid animals in certain determinate conditions Pasteur has been able to greatly simplify the operations of inoculation, and to render dogs most decidedly refrac- tory to the malady. There is great importance attached to the suggestion that now, and until rabies has been ex- tinguished altogether by inoculation, it may be possible to prevent development of the disease after bites from rabid dogs, owing to the long duration of the incubative period. Admitting that rabies is produced by the bite of rabid animals only, and that Pasteur's inoculations are really protective, it is suggested that a law compelling all dogs to be so protected would in the end extirpate the disease. But certain important

points have yet to be decided before any definite conclusion can be arrived at. (G. FL.

RABUTIN, Roger pz, Comre pr Bussy (1618-1693), commonly known as Bussy-RasuTin (and for shortness Bussy), is perhaps the most characteristic figure among the lesser noblesse of France in the 17th century, as La Rochefoucauld is among the greater. Bussy, however, except in point of gallantry and literary power, chiefly illustrated the evil sides of the character. He represented a family of distinction and age in Burgundy (see S&vIGN#, Madame de), and his father was Léonor de Rabutin, a soldier of merit and a man of position, holding the lieu- tenant-generalship of the province of Nivernais. Bussy- Rabutin (it is perhaps advisable to add the family name to distinguish him from the hardly less famous Bussy d'Amboise) was born in 1618. He was the third son, but by the death of his elder brothers becanie the representative of the family. He entered the army when he was only sixteen and fought through several campaigns, succeeding his father in the office of "'mestre de camp." But he very early distinguished himself in other ways than that of military service, and in 1641 was sent to the Bastille by Richelieu for some months as a punishment for neglect of his duties in running after his ladyloves. In 1643 he married a cousin, Gabrielle de Toulongeon, who seems to have been fond of him, and for a short time he left the army. But in 1644 he again bought a commission and for some years was closely connected with the great Condé. His wife died, and he became more famous, or at least more notorious, than ever by an attempt to abduct Madame de Miramion, a rich widow. This affair was with some diffi- culty made up and Bussy afterwards married Louise de

Rouville. When the Fronde broke out he, like others, went from party to party, but finally passed to the royal side. He fought with some distinction both in the civil war and on foreign service, and in 1655 he went to serve under Turenne in Flanders. He served there for several cam- paigns and distinguished himself at the battle of the Dunes and elsewhere; but he did not get on well with his general, and his quarrelsome disposition, his overweening vanity, and his habit of composing libellous chansons by degrees made him the enemy of most persons of position both in the army

and at court. In the year 1659 he fell into disgrace for having taken part in an orgy or series of orgies at Roissy near Paris during Holy Week, which caused great scandal, and shortly afterwards he began to compose for the amusement of his mistress, Madame de Montglas, his famous Histoire Amoureuse des Gaules. This book—a series of sketches of the chief ladies of the court, not without wit, but much less remarkable for wit than for ill nature and licence—circulated freely in manuscript and had numerous spurious sequels. One of these stung the king, and Bussy was in 1665 sent to the Bastille, where he remained for more than a year, and from which he was only liberated on condition of retiring to his estates. Here he abode in what was then called exile for seventeen years. He was then restored toa modified degree of royal favour, but never received any great mark of it, and died in 1693.

Although a man of considerable abilities, Bussy had very little in his character that was either amiable or estimable. Despite his extravagant pride of birth and rank, there is much reason for acquiescing in the verdict pronounced on him (by an anonymons contemporary apparently), that he was "a coxcomb, who never, either at court or in camp, lost the taste for bad company and the air of a rustic"; his bravery was undoubted, but he seems to have much overrated his own military ability. He libelled friends and foes alike, and any toleration which might be extended to his innumerable gallantries is lessened by his incorrigible habit of telling tales and his spiteful scandal-mongering against women who had left him or whom he had left. He was, however, possessed of much literary power. The Histoire Amowreuse is in its most striking passages merely adapted from Petronius, and, except in a few portraits, its attractions are chiefly those of the scandalous chronicle. But his Alémoires, published after his death, are ex- tremely lively and characteristic, and his voluminous correspond- ence yields in variety and interest to few collections of the kind, except Madame de Sévigné's, who indeed is represented in it to a great extent, and whose letters first appeared in it. The literary and historical student, therefore, owes Bussy some thanks. But it is impossible not to see that he united some of the worst charae- teristics of an aristocracy on the way to decadence-—relaxed morals, a glaring indifference to duty and to all motives but self-interest, insolence in prosperity, servility in adverse circumstances, jealousy of others more favoured than himself.

The best edition of the Histoire Amoureuse des Gaules is that of Boiteau and Livet in the Bibliotheque Elzevirienne (4 vols., Paris, 1856-76), of the Mémoires and Correspondance that of Lalanne (8 vols., Paris, 1857-59). Bussy wrote other

things, of which the inost important, his Genealogy of the Rabutin Family, re- mained in MS. till 1867.

RACCOON. This name,! familiar to all readers of works on American natural history, is borne by a small carnivore belonging to that section of the order which contains the bears, weasels, badgers, &c. (see MaMMALIA, vol. xv. p. 440). The raccoon resembles in many respects a diminutive bear, both in its general build and in the pro- portions of its skull and teeth, which last are broad, blunt, and rounded, and more suited for a semi-vegetarian than for an exclusively animal diet. Its other more important zoological characters, with an account of its systematic position, have been already noted in the article just re- ferred to. The common North-American raccoon (Procyon lotor) is a clumsy thickly-built animal about the size of a badger, with a coat of long coarse greyish brown hairs, short ears, and a bushy black and white ringed tail. Its

1 A corruption of the North-American Indian "arrathkune" or "aratheone." The Freneh raton or raton laveur, German Waschbir, and other European names are derived from a eurions habit the raccoon has of dipping or washing its food in water before eating it.

range extends over the whole of the United States, and stretches on the west northwards to Alaska and southwards

Raccoon.

well into Central America, where it attains its maximum size. The following notes on the habits of the raccoon are extracted from Dr C. Hart Merriam's charming work on the mammals of the Adirondacks (N. E. New York).

“Raccoons are omnivorous beasts and feed upon mice, small birds, birds’ eggs, turtles and their eggs, frogs, fish, crayfish, molluscs, insects, nuts, fruits, maize, and sometimes poultry. Excepting alone the bats and flying-squirrels, they are the most strictly nocturnal of all our mammals, and yet I have several times seen them abroad on cloudy days. They haunt the banks of ponds and streams, and find much of their food in these places, such as crayfish, mussels, and fish, although they are unable to dive and pursue the latter under water, like the otter and mink. They are good swimmers and do not hesitate to cross rivers that lie in their path. . . . The raccoon hibernates during the severest part of the winter, retiring to its nest rather carly, and appearing again in February or March, according to the earliness or lateness of the season. It makes its home high up in the hollow of some large tree, preferring a dead limb to the trunk itself. It does little in the way of constructing a nest, and from four to six young are commonly born at a time, generally carly in April in this region. The young remain with the mother about a year.”

The South-American species, Procyon cancrivorus, the crab-eating raccoon, is very similar to P. lotor, but differs by its much shorter fur, larger size, proportionally more powerful teeth, and other minor characters. It extends over the whole of South America, as far south as the Rio Negro, and is very common in all suitable localities. Its habits are similar to those of the North-American species,

RACHEL (1820 or 1821-1858), the stage name of a French actress, whose true name was ExizaBerH Fixrx, and who was the daughter of Jacob Félix and Esther Haya, Alsatian Jews, who travelled on foot through France as pedlars. She was born according to one account on 24th March 1820, according to another on 28th February of the following year, in a small inn in Mumpf in the canton of Aargau, Switzerland. At Rheims she and her eldest sister Sophia, afterwards known as Sarah, joined a troupe of Italian children who made their living by singing in the cafés, Sarah taking part in the singing and Elizabeth, then only four years of age, collecting the coppers. In 1830 they came to Paris, where they sang in the streets, Rachel giving such patriotic songs as the Parisienne and the Marseillaise with a rude but precocious energy which evoked special admiration and an abundant shower of coppers. Choron, a famous teacher of singing, was so

im- pressed with the talents of the two sisters that he under- took to give them gratuitous instruction, and after his death in 1833 they were received into the Conservatoire.

_cism.

203

Sophia gained a medal for singing, but Rachel at an early period gave her chief attention to elocution and acting. Her voice, though deep and powerful, was at first hard and inflexible ; and her thin and meagre appearance con- veyed an impression of insignificance, which her plain features and generally impassive manner tended to confirm. It was only her remarkable intelligence that encouraged her instructors to persevere ; but even they did not recognize her talents as exceptional. She made her first appearance at the Gymnase in the Vendéenne in 1837 with only medi- ocre success. On 12th June of the following year she succeeded, after great difficulty, in making a début at the Théatre Frangais, appearing as Camille in Les Horaces, when, attention having been directed to her remarkable genius by Jules Janin in the Débats and Madame de Girardin in the Presse, it at once received universal recognition. Her range of characters was limited, but within this range she was unsurpassable. It was especially in the tragedies of Racine and Corneille that she excelled, and more particularly in the impersonation of evil or malignant passion. By care- ful training her originally hard and harsh voice had become flexible and melodious, and its low and muffled notes under the influence of passion possessed a thrilling and penetrat- ing quality that was irresistible. When excited her plain features became transfigured by the glow of genius, and in her impersonations of evil and malignant emotions there was a majesty and dignity which fascinated whilst it re- pelled. Her facial elocution was unsurpassable in variety and expressiveness, whilst the grace of her gestures and the marvellous skill with which she varied her tones with every shade of thought and emotion were completely beyond criti- It was, however, the predominance of intellect and will rather than the perfection of her art that most specially characterized her impersonations and conferred on them their unique excellence. She appeared successively as Emilie in Cinna, Hermione in Andromaque, Eriphile in Iphigénie, Monime in

Mithridate, and Aménaide in Z'ancréde ; but it was in Phédre, which she first played on 21st January 1843, that her peculiar gifts were most strikingly mani- fested. In modern plays she created the characters of Judith and Cleopatra in the tragedies of Madame de Gir- ardin, but her most successful appearance was in 1849 in Adrienne Lecouvreur. In 1840 she visited London, where her interpretations of Corneille and Racine were the sen- sation of the season. She also played successively in the principal capitals of Europe. In 1855 she made a tour in the United States with comparatively small success, This was, however, after her powers through continued ill-health had begun to deteriorate. She died of consumption at Cannet, near Cannes, on 4th January 1858.

RACINE, a city of the United States, the county seat of Racine county, Wisconsin, lies 23 miles by rail south of Milwaukee, and occupies a plateau projecting for about 6 miles into Lake Michigan, 40 feet above its level. The town is the seat of extensive manufacturing industries— producing carriages, waggons, ploughs, threshing-machines, portable steam-engines, fanning-mills, leather, blinds and sashes, school furniture, wire, linseed oil, baskets, &c.— is engaged in the lumber trade and general commerce, and contains two city hospitals, an orphan asylum, Racine (Episcopalian) college founded in 1852, and a Roman Catholic academy. The harbour is open to vessels drawing 15 feet. Racine, first settled in 1834, was incorporated in 1848, four years after the first steamer had entered the

ort. The population was 7822 in 1860, 9880 in 1870, and 16,031 in 1880.

RACINE, JEAN (1639-1699), the most equal and accom- plished, if not the greatest, tragic dramatist of France, was born at La Ferté Milon in the old duchy of Valois in the month of December 1639. The 20th and the two follow-

ing days of the month are variously given as his birthday ; all that is certain is that he was christened on the 22d. The ceremony was at that time often, though not invariably, performed on the day of birth. Racine belonged to a family of the upper bourgeoisie, which had indeed been technically ennobled some generations earlier and bore the punning arms of a rat and

a swan (rat, cygne). The poet himself subsequently dropped the rat. His family were connected with others of the same or a slightly higher station in La Ferté and its neighbourhood,—the Des Moulins, the Sconins, the Vitarts, all of whom appear in Racine's life. His mother was Jeanne Sconin. His father, of the same name as himself, was only four-and- twenty at the time of the poet's birth. He seems to have been a solicitor (procureur) by profession, and held, as his father, the grandfather of the dramatist, had done, the office of controleur au grener a sel. Racine was the eldest child of his parents. Little more than a year afterwards his sister Marie was born and his mother died. Jean Racine the elder married again, but three months later he himself died and the stepmother is never heard of in connexion with the poet or his sister. They were left 'without any provision, but their grandparents, Jean Racine the eldest and Marie des Moulins, were still lving, and took charge of them. These grandparents had a daughter, Agnes, who figures in Racine's history. She was a nun of Port Royal under the style of Mere de Sainte Thécle, and the whole family had strong Jansenist leanings. Jean Racine the eldest died in 1649, and, apparently as a consequence of this, the poet was sent to the Collége de Beauvais. This (which was the grammar-school of the town of that name, and not the famous Collége de Beauvais at Paris) was intimately connected with Port Royal, and to this latter place Racine was transferred in November 1655. His special masters there were Nicole and Le Maitre. The latter, in an extant letter written to his pupil during one of the gusts of persecution which Port Royal constantly suffered, speaks of himself as 'votre papa"; the manner in which Racine repaid this affection will be seen shortly. It is evident from documents that he was a very diligent student both at Beauvais and Port Royal. He wrote verse both in Latin and French, and his Port Royal odes, which it has been the fashion with the more fanatical admirers of his later poetry to ridicule, are far from despicable. They show the somewhat garrulous nature-worship of the Pléiade tempered by the example of the earlier school of Malherbe. He seems also to have made at least a first draft of his version of the breviary hymns; some, if not most, of a considerable mass of translations from the classics and annotations on them must also date from this time. Racine stayed at Port Royal for three years, and left it, aged nearly nineteen, in October 1658. He was then entered at the Collége dHarcourt and boarded with his second cousin, Nicolas Vitart, steward of the duke of Luynes. Later, if not at first, he lived in the Hétel de Luynes

itself. It is to be observed that his Jansenist surroundings continued with him here, for the duke of Luynes was a severe Port Royalist. It is, however, clear from Racine's correspondence, which as we have it begins in 1660 and is for some years very abundant and interesting, that he was not at all of an austere disposition at this time. His chief correspondent is a certain young abbé Le Vasseur, who seems to have been by no means seriously given, The letters are full of verse-making and of other diversions; a certain Made- moiselle Lucréce, who seems to have been both amiable and literary, is very frequently mentioned, neither is she the only one of her sex who, appears. Occasionally the liveliness of the letters passes the bounds of strict de- cency, though there is nothing very shocking in them.

R&C TUN EH

Those to Madame (or, as the habit of the time called her, Mademoiselle) Vitart are free from anything of this kind, while they are very lively and pleasant. It does not appear that Racine read much philosophy, as he should have done, but he occasionally did some business in super- intending building operations at Chevreuse, the duke's country house. He would seem, however, to have been already given up irrevocably to literature. This by no means suited the views of his devout relations at Port Royal, and he complains in one of his letters that an unlucky sonnet on Mazarin had brought down on him '"'excommunications sur excommunications." But he had much more important works in hand than sonnets. The marriage of Louis XIV. was the occasion of an ambitious ode, "La Nymphe de la Seine," which was submitted before publication to Chapelain, the too famous author of the Pucelle. Chapelain's fault was not ill-nature, and he made many suggestions (including the very pertinent one that Tritons were not usually found in rivers), which Racine duly adopted. Nor did the ode bound his ambitions, for he finished one piece, Amaste, and undertook another, Les Amours d@'Ovide, for the theatre. The first, however, was rejected by the actors of the Marais, and it is not certain that the other was ever finished or offered to those of the Hotel de Bourgogne. Racine's letters show that he was intimate with more than one actress at this time; he also made acquaintance with La Fontaine, and the foundations at any rate of the legendary "society of four" (Boileau, La Fontaine, Moliére, and Racine) were thus laid.

His relations were pretty certainly alarmed by this very pardonable worldliness, though a severe expostulation with him for keeping company with the abominable actors is perhaps later in date. Allusions in a letter to his sister leave little doubt of this. Racine was accordingly disturbed in his easy-going life at Paris. In November 1661 he went to Uzes in Languedoc to live with his uncle the Pére Sconin, vicar-general of that diocese, where it was hoped that Sconin would be able to secure a benefice for his nephew. It is certain that he was not slack in endeavour- ing to do this, but his attempts were in vain, and perhaps the church did not lose as much as the stage gained. Racine was at Uzes for an uncertain time. All that is known is that he was back in Paris before the end of 1663. His letters from Uzés to La Fontaine, to Le Vas- seur, and others are in much the same strain as before, but there is here and there a marked tone of cynicism in them. One passage in particular, in which he tells how he was disenchanted with a damsel of Uzés, has an un- pleasantly Swiftian touch about it. Once back in Paris, he gave himself up entirely to letters with a little courtier- ship. An ode on the recovery of Louis XIV. from a slight illness probably secured him the promise of a pension, of which he speaks to his sister in the summer of 1664, and on 22d August he actually received it. It is uncertain whether this pension is identical with " gratifications" which we know that Racine for some years received and which were sometimes eight and sometimes six hundred livres. It would seem not, as one of these gratifications had been allotted to him the year before he so wrote to his sister. All this shows that he had already acquired some repute as a promising novice in letters, though he had as yet. done nothing substantive. The ode in which he thanked the king for his presents, "La Renommée," is said to have introduced him to Boileau, to whose censor- ship there is no doubt that he owed much, if not every- thing; and from this date, November 1663, the familiarity of "the four" undoubtedly existed in full force. Racine was at the time the least distinguished, but he rapidly equalled, if not the merit, the reputation of his friends. Unfortunately it is precisely at this date that his corre-

spondence ceases, and it is not renewed till after the close of his brief but brilliant career as a dramatist (Esther and Athalie excepted). This is the

more to be regretted in that the most disputable events of Racine's life as well as the greater part of his literary work fall within this silent period. His strange behaviour to Moliére, his virulent attack on his masters and friends of Port Royal, and the sudden change by which, after the failure of Phédre and for no clearly expressed cause, a man of pleasure and an active literary worker became a sober domestic character of almost ostentatiously religious habits, and abstained from almost all but official work, are unillumined by any words of his own. From this time forward the gossip of the period and the Life by his son Louis are the chief sources of information. Unfortunately Louis Racine, though a man of some ability and of unimpeached charac- ter, was only six years old when his father died, and had no direct knowledge. Still his account represents family papers and traditions and seems to have been carefully, as it is certainly in the main impartially, written. From other sources—notably Boileau, Brossette, and Valincourt— a good deal of pretty certainly authentic information is obtainable, and there exists a considerable body of corre- spondence between Boileau and the poet during the last ten years of Racine's life.

The first but the least characteristic of the dramas by which Racine is known, La Thébaide, was finished by the end of 1663, and on Friday 20th June 1664 it was played by Moliére's company at the Palais Royal theatre. editors assert that Moliére himself acted in it, but the earliest account of the cast we have, and that is sixty years after date, omits his name, though those of Madeleine Béjard and Mademoiselle de Brie occur. There is a tradition, supported by very little evidence, that Moliére suggested the subject ; on the other hand, Louis Racine distinctly says that his father wrote most of the play at Uzés before he knew Moliére. Racine's own letters, which cover the period of composition, though not that of representation, give little help in deciding this not very important ques- tion, except that it appears from them that the play was designed for the rival theatre, and that "La Déhanchée," Racine's familiar name for Mademoiselle de Beauchateau, with whom he was intimate, was to play Antigone. The play itself is by far the weakest of Racine's works. He has borrowed much from Euripides and not a little from Rotrou; and in his general style and plan he has as yet struck out no great variation from Corneille. We have very little intelligence about the reception of the piece. It was acted twelve times

during the first month, which was for the period a very fair success, and was occasion- ally revived during the year following.

This is apparently the date of the pleasant picture of the four friends which La Fontaine draws in his Psyche, Racine figuring as Acante, "qui aimait extrémement les jardins, les fleurs, les ombrages." Various stories, more or less mythical, also belong to this period; the best authenticated of them contributes to the documents for Racine's unamiable temper. He had absolutely no reason to complain of Chapelain, who had helped him with eriticism, obtained royal gifts for him, and, in a fashion, Started him in the literary career, yet he helped in com- posing the lampoon of Chapelain décoiffé. The sin would not be unpardonable if it stood alone, but unluckily a much graver one followed.

We have no definite details as to Racine's doings during the year 1664, but in February 1665 he read at the Hétel de Nevers before La Rochefoucauld, Madame de la Fayette, Madame de Sévigné, and other scarcely less redoubtable judges the greater part of his second acted play, Alexandre le Grand, or, as Pomponne (who tells the fact) calls it, Porus,

Some:

205

This was a frequent kind of preliminary advertisement at the time, and it seems, as we find from the rhymed gazettes, to have been successful. It was anxiously expected by the public, and Moliére's company played it on 4th Decem- ber,—Monsieur, his wife Henrietta of England, and many other distinguished persons being present. The gazetteer Subligny vouches for its success, and the still more certain testimony of the accounts of the theatre shows that the receipts were good and, what is more, steady. But a fort- night afterwards Alexandre was played, "de complot avec M. Racine," says La Grange, by the rival actors (who had four days before performed it in private) at the Hotel de Bourgogne. A vast amount of ink has been spilt on this question, but no one has produced any valid justification for Racine. That the piece failed at the Palais Royal is demonstrably false, and as this is stated in the earliest attempt to excuse Racine, and the only one made in his lifetime, it is pretty clear that his case was very weak. His son simply

says that he was ‘ mécontent des acteurs,” which indeed is self-evident. It is certain that Moliére and he ceased to be friends in consequence of this proceeding ; and that Moliére was in fault no one who has studied the character of the two men, no one even who considers the probabilities of the case, will easily believe. If, however, Alexandre was the occasion of showing the defects of Racine’s character as a man, it raised him vastly in public estimation as a poet. He was now for the first time pro- posed as a serious rival to Corneille. There is a story, which a credible witness vouches for as Racine’s own, that he read the piece to the author of the Cid and asked his verdict. Corneille praised the piece highly, but not asa drama, “J1 Vassurait qu’il n’était pas propre a la poésie dramatique.” There is no reason for disbelieving this, for the character of Alexander could not fail to shock Corneille, and he was notorious for not mincing his words. Nor can it be denied that Racine might have been justly hurt, though with a man of nore amiable temper the slight would hardly have caused the settled antagonism to Corneille which he displayed. The contrast between the two even at this early period was accurately apprehended and put by Saint Evremond in his masterly Dissertation sur I’ Alex- andre, but this was not published for a year or two. To this day it is the best criticism of the faults of Racine, though not, it may be, of the merits, which had not yet been fully seen. It may be added that in the preface of the printed play the poet showed the extreme sensitiveness to criticism which perhaps excuses, and which certainly often accompanies, a tendency to criticize others. These defects of character showed themselves still more fully in another matter. The Port Royalists, as has been said, detested the theatre, and in January 1666 Nicole, their chief writer, spoke in one of his Lettres sur Visionnaires of dramatic poets as “‘empoisonneurs publics.” There was absolutely no reason why Racine should fit this cap on his own head ; but he did so, and published immediately a letter to the author. It is very smartly written, and if Racine had con- tented himself with protesting against the absurd exaggera- tion of the decriers of the stage there would have been little harm done. But he filled the piece with personalities, telling an absurd story of Mere Angelique Arnauld’s supposed intolerance, drawing a ridiculous picture of Le Maitre (a dead man and his own special teacher and friend), and sneering savagely at Nicole himself. The latter made no reply, but two lay adherents of Port Royal took up the quarrel with more zeal than discretion or ability. Racine wrote a second pamphlet as bitter and personal

as the first, but less amusing, and was about to publish it when fortu- nately Boileau, who had been absent from Paris, returned and protested against the publication. It remained accord- ingly unprinted till after the author's death, as well as a

preface to both which he had prepared with a view to publishing them together. In this respect Boileau was certainly Racine's good angel, for no one has ventured to excuse the tone of these letters. The best excuse for them is that they represent the accumulated resentment arising from a long course of "excommunications."

After this disagreeable episode Racine's life for ten years and more becomes simply the history of his plays, if we except his liaisons with the actresses Mademoiselle du Pare and Mademoiselle de Champmeslé (which are undoubted, though there is not much to be said about them) and his election to the Academy on 17th July 1673. Mademoiselle du Pare (Marquise de Gorla) was no very great actress, but wag very beautiful, and she had previously captivated Moliére. Racine induced her to leave the Palais Royal company and join the Hétel. She died in 1668, and long afterwards the infamous Voisin accused Racine of having poisoned her. Mademoiselle de Champmeslé was plain and stupid, but an admirable actress and apparently very at- tractive in some way, for not merely Racine but Charles de Sévigné and many others adored her. She was cruel to none, but for five years before his marriage Racine seems to have been her amant en titre. Long after- wards, just before his own death, he heard of her mortal illness and speaks of her to his son without a flash of tenderness.

The series of his dramatic triumphs began with Andro- maque, and this play may perhaps dispute with LPhédre and Athalie the title of his masterpiece. It is much more uniformly good than Phédre, and the character of Hermione is the most personally interesting on the French tragic stage. It is said that the first representation of Andro- maque was on 10th November 1667, in public and by the actors of the Hétel de Bourgogne, but the first con- temporary mention of it by the gazettes, prose and verse, is on the 17th, as performed in the queen's apartment. Perrault, by no means a friendly critic as far as Racine is concerned, says that it made as much

noise as the Crd, and so it ought to have done. Whatever may be thought of the tragédie pathétique (a less favourable criticism might call it the "sentimental tragedy"), it could hardly be better exemplified than in this admirable play. A ferocious epigram of Racine's own (an epigram not unworthy of Martial, and as difficult to comment on to modern ears polite as some of Martial's own) tells us that some critics thought Pyrrhus too fond of his mistress, and Andromache too fond of her husband, which is not likely to be the present verdict. In the contemporary depreciations is to be found the avowal of its real merit. The interest was too varied, the pathos too close to human nature to content Boileau, and the partisans of Corneille still found Racine unequal to the heroic height of their master's grandeur. A just criticism will probably hold that these two objections neutralize each other. Both parties agreed in saying that much of the success was due to the actors, another censure which is equivalent to praise. It so happens, too, that, though the four main parts were played by accomplished artists, two at least of them were such as to try those artists severely. Pyrrhus was taken by Floridor, the best tragic actor by common consent of his time, and Orestes by Montfleury, also an accomplished player. But Made- moiselle du Pare, who played Andromachie, had generally been thought below, not above, her parts, and Mademoiselle des Oeillets, who played the difficult réle of Hermione, was old and had few physical advantages. No one who reads Andromaque without prejudice is likely to mistake the secret of its success, which is, in few words, the application of the most delicate art to the conception of really tragic passion. Before leaving the play it may be mentioned that it is said to have been in the part of Hermione, three

years later, that Mademoiselle de Champmieslé captivated the author. Andromaque was succeeded, at the distance of not more than a year, by a play which, taken in con- junction with his others, is perhaps the best proof of the theatrical talent of Racine,—the charming comedietta of Les Plaideurs. We do not know exactly when it was played, but it was printed on 5th December 1668, and it had succeeded so badly that doubtless no long time passed between its appearance on the stage and in print. For the printing at that time both in France and England made the play publica materies, and therefore in the case of very successful pieces it was put off as

long as possible. Many anecdotes are told about the origin and composition of Les Plaideurs. The Wasps of Aristophanes and the known fact that Racine originally destined it, not for a French company, but for the Italian troupe which was then playing the Commedia dell' Arte in Paris dispense us from enumerating them. The result is a piece admirably dramatic, but sufficiently literary to shock the profanum vulgus, which too frequently gives the tone at theatres. It failed completely, the chief favouring voice being, accord- ing to a story sufficiently well attested and worthy of belief even without attestation, that of the man who was best qualified to praise and who might have been most tempted to blame of any man then living. Moliére, says Valincourt, the special friend of Racine, said in leaving the house, "Que ceux qui se moquoient de cette pitce meritoient qu'on se moquoient d'eux." But the piece was suddenly played at court a month later ; the king laughed, and its fortunes were restored. The truth probably was that the legal profession, which was very powerful in the city of Paris, did not fancy the most severe satire on its ways which had been made public since the or ¢a of the fifth book of Rabelais. It need only be added that, if Louis XIV. admired Les Plaideurs, Napoleon did not, and excluded it from his travelling library. It was followed by a very different work, Britannicus, which appeared on 13th December 1669. It was much less successful than Andromaque, and, whether or not the cabals, of which Racine constantly complains, and which he certainly did nothing to disarm, had anything to do with this, it seems to have held its own but a very few nights. Afterwards it became very popular, and even from the first the ex- quisite versification was not denied. But there is no doubt that in Britannicus the defects of Racine, which in his first two plays were excusable on the score of apprentice- ship, and in the next two hardly appeared at all, display themselves pretty clearly to any competent critic. The complete nullity of Britannicus and Junie and the insuffi- cient attempt to display the complex and dangerous char acter of Nero are not redeemed by Agrippina, who is really good, and Burrhus, who is solidly painted as a secondary character. Voltaire calls it "la piéce des connaisseurs," and the description is—not quite in the sense in which the critic meant it—a very pregnant one. Britannicus is eminently the piece in which persons of a dilettante turn are seduced by the beauties which do exist to discover those which do not. The next play of Racine has, except Phédre, the most curious history of all. " Bérénice," says Fontenelle succinctly, "fut un duel," and he acknowledges

that his uncle was not the conqueror. Henrietta of Orleans proposed (it is said without letting them know the double commission) the subject to Corneille and Racine at the same time, and rumour gives no very creditable reasons for her choice of the subject. Her death, famous for its disputed causes and for Bossuet's sermon, preceded the performance of the two plays, both of which, but especially Racine's, were successful. There is no doubt that it is the better of the two, but Chapelle's not unfriendly criti- cism in quoting the two lines of an old song—

j | { { | {

RACINE

" Marion pleure, Marion crie, Marion veut qu'on la marie "'— is said to have annoyed Racine very much, and it has a most malicious appropriateness. Bajazet, which was first played on 4th January 1672 (for Racine punctually pro- duced his piece a year), is perhaps better. As a play, technically speaking, it has great merit, but the reproach commonly brought against its author was urged specially and with great force against this by Corneille. It is im- possible to imagine anything less Oriental than the atmo- sphere of Bajazet ; the whole thing is not only French but ephemerally French—French of the day and hour ; and its ingenious scenario and admirable style scarcely save it. This charge is equally applicable with the same reservations to Mithridate, which appears to have been produced on 13th January 1673, the day after the author's reception at the Academy. It was extremely popular and, as far as style and perfection in a disputable kind go, Racine could hardly have lodged a more triumphant diploma piece. His next attempt, Jphigénie, was a long step back- wards and upwards in the direction of Andromaque. It

is not that the characters are eminently Greek, but that

Greek tragedy gave Racine examples which prevented him from flying in the face of the propriety of character as he had done in Bérénice, Bajazet, and Mithridate, and that he here called in, as in Andromaque, other passions to the aid of the mere sighing and crying which form the sole appeal of these three tragedies. Achilles is a rather pitiful per- sonage, and the grand story of the sacrifice is softened very tamely to suit French tastes; but the

parental agonies of Clytemnestra and Agamemnon are truly drawn, and the whole play is full of pathos. It succeeded brilliantly and deservedly, but, oddly enough, the date of its appear- ance is very uncertain. It was assuredly acted at court in the late summer of 1674, but it does not seem to have been given to the public till the early spring of 1675, the usual time at which Racine produced his work,

The last and finest of the series of tragedies proper was the most unlucky. Phédre was represented for the first time on New-Year's Day 1677 at the Hétel de Bourgogne. Within a week the opposition company or "troupe du roi" launched an opposition Phédre by Pradon. This singular competition, which had momentous results for Racine, and in which he to some extent paid the penalty of the lex talioms for his own rivalry with Corneille, had long been foreseen. It has been hinted that Racine had from the first been bitterly opposed by a clique, whom his great success irritated, while his personal character did nothing to conciliate them. His enemies at this time had the powerful support of the duchess of Bouillon, one of Mazarin's nieces, a woman of considerable talents and imperious temper, to- gether with her brother the duke of Nevers and divers other personages of high position. These persons of quality, guided, it is said, by Madame Deshouliéres, a poetess of merit whom Boileau unjustly depreciated, selected Pradon, a dramatist of little talent but of much facility, to compose a Phédre in competition with that which it was known that Racine had been elaborating with unusual care. Pradon, perhaps assisted, was equal to the occasion, and it Is said that the partisans on both sides did not neglect means for correcting fortune. On her side the duchess of Bouillon is accused of having bought up the front places in both theatres for the first six nights ; on his part Racine 1s said to have repeated an old trick of his and prevailed on the best actresses of the company that played Pradon's Piece to refuse the title part. There is even some ground for believing that Racine endeavoured to prevent the op- position play from being played at all, and that an express order from the king had to be obtained for it. It was of

no value, but the measures of the cabal had been so well taken that the finest tragedy of the French classical school was all but driven from the

stage, while Pradon's was a positive success. A war of sonnets and epigrams followed, during which it is said that the duke of Nevers menaced Racine and Boileau with the same treatment which Dryden and Voltaire actually received, and was only deterred by the protection which Condé extended to them.

The unjust cabal against his piece and the various annoyances to which it gave rise no doubt made a deep impression on Racine. But in the absence of accurate contemporary information it is impossible to decide exactly how much influence they had on the subsequent change in his life. For thirteen years he had been constantly em- ployed on a series of brilliant dramas. He now broke off his dramatic work entirely and in the remaining twenty years of his life wrote but two more plays, and those under special circumstances and of quite a different kind. He had been during his early manhood a libertine in morals and religion; he now married, became irreproachably domestic, and almost ostentatiously devout. No authentic account of this change exists; for that of Louis Racine, which attributes the whole to a sudden religious impulse, is manifestly little more than the theory of a son pious in both senses of the word. Probably all the motives which friends and foes have attributed—weariness of dissipated life, jealousy of his numerous rivals in Mademoiselle de Champmeslé's favour, pique at Pradon's success, fear of los- ing still further the position of greatest tragic poet which after Corneille's Surena was indisputably his, religious sen- timent, and so forth —entered more or less into his action. At any rate what is certain is that he reconciled himself with Arnauld and Port Royal generally, and on lst June married Catherine de Romanet and definitely settled down to a quiet domestic life, alternated with the duties of a courtier. For his repentance was by no means a repentance in sackcloth and ashes. The drama was not then very profitable to dramatists, but Louis Racine tells us that his father had been able to furnish a house, collect a library of some value, and save 6000 livres. His wife had money, and he had possessed for some time (it is not certain how long) the honourable and valuable post of treasurer of France at Moulins. His annual "gratification" had been increased from 800 to 1500 livres, then to 2000, and in the October of the year of his marriage he and Boileau were made historiographers-royal with a salary of 2000 crowns. Besides all this he had, though a layman, one or two benefices. It would have been pleasanter if Louis Racine had not told us

that his father regarded His Majesty's choice as "'an act of the grace of God to detach him entirely from poetry." Even after allowing for Louis Racine's religiosity and the conventional language of all times, there is a flavour of hypocrisy about this which is disagreeable, and has shocked even Racine's most uncom- promising admirers. For the historiographer of Louis XIV. was simply his chief flatterer. Before going further it may be observed that very little came of this historio- graphy. The joint incumbents of the office made some campaigns with the king, sketched plans of histories, and left a certain number of materials and memoirs ; but they executed no substantive work. Racine, whether this be set down to his credit or not, was certainly a fortunate and apparently an adroit courtier. His very relapse into Jansenism coincided with his rise at court, where Jansen- ism was in no favour, and the fact that he had been in the good graces of Madame de Montespan did not deprive him of those of Madame de Maintenon. Neither in Hsther did he hesitate to reflect upon his former patroness. But a reported sneer of the king, who was sharp-eyed enough, "'Cavoie avec Racine se croit bel esprit; Racine avec Cavoie

se croit courtisan," makes it appear that his comparatively low birth was not forgotten at Versailles.

Racine's first campaign was at the siege of Ypres in 1678, where some practical jokes are said to have been played on the two civilians who acted this early and peculiar variety of the part of special correspondent. Again in 1683, in 1687, and in each year from 1691 to 1693 Racine accompanied the king on similar expeditions. The literary results of these have been spoken of. His labours brought him, in addition to his other gains, frequent special presents from the king, one of which was as much as 1000 pistoles. In 1690 he further received the office of " ventilhomme ordinaire du roi," which afterwards passed to his son. Thus during the later years of his life he was more prosperous than is usual with poets. His domestic life appears to have been a happy one. Louis Racine tells us that his mother "did not know what a verse was," but Racine certainly knew enough about verses for both. They had seven children. The eldest, Jean Baptiste, was born in 1678; the youngest, Louis, in 1692. It has been said that he was thus too

young to have many personal memories of his father, but he tells one or two stories which show Racine to have been at any rate a man of strong family affection, as, moreover, his letters prove. Between the two sons came five daughters, Marie, Anne, Elizabeth, Francoise, and Madeleine. The eldest, after showing " vocation," married in 1699, Anne and Elizabeth took the veil, the youngest two remained single but did not enter the cloister. To complete the notice of family matters—much of Racine's later correspondence is addressed to his sister Marie, Madame Riviére. :

The almost complete silence in the literary sphere which Racine imposed on himself after the comparative failure, shameful not for himself but for his adversaries, of Phédre was broken once or twice even before the appearance of the two exquisite tragedies in which under singular circum- stances he took leave of the stage. The most honourable of these was the reception of Thomas Corneille on 2d January 1685 at the Academy in the room of his brother. The discourse which Racine then pronounced turned almost entirely on his great rival, of whom he spoke even more than becomingly. But it was an odd conjunction of the two reigning passions of the latter part of his life—devoutness and obsequiousness to the court—which made him once more a dramatist. Madame de Maintenon had established an institution, first called the Maison Saint Louis, and afterwards (from the place to which it was transferred) the Maison de Saint Cyr, for the education of poor girls of noble family. The tradition of including acting in edu- cation was not obsolete. At first the governess, Madame de Grinon, composed pieces for representation, but, says Madame de Caylus, a witness at first hand and a good judge, they were "detestable." Then recourse was had to chosen plays of Corneille and Racine, but here there were obvious objections. The favourite herself wrote to Racine that "nos petites filles" had played Andromaque "a great deal too well." Sheasked the poet for a new play suited to the circumstances, and, though Boileau advised him against it, it is not wonderful that he yielded. The result was the masterpiece of Hsther, with music by Moreau, the court composer and organist of Saint Cyr. Although played by schoolgirls and in a dormitory, it had an enormous success, in which it may be charitably hoped that the transparent comparison of the patroness to the heroine had not too much to do. Printed shortly afterwards, it had to suffer a certain reaction, or perhaps a certain vengeance, from those who had not been

admitted to the private stage. But no competent judge could hesitate. Racine probably had read and to some extent followed the Aman of Montchrestien, but he made of it only the use

which a proved master in literature has a perfect right to make of his forerunners. The beauty of the chorus, which Racine had restored more probably from a study of the Pléiade tragedy than from classical suggestions, the per- fection of the characters, and the wonderful art of the whole piece need no praise. Almost immediately the poet was at work on another and a still finer piece of the game kind, and he had probably finished Athale before the end of 1690. The fate of the play, however, was very different from that of Esther. Some fuss had been made about the worldliness of great court fétes at Saint Cyr, and the new play, with settings as before by Moreau, was acted both at Versailles and at Saint Cyr with much less pomp and ceremony than Hsther. It was printed in March 1691 and the public cared very little for it. The truth is that the last five-and-twenty years of the reign of Louis XIV. were marked by one of the lowest tides of literary accom- plishment and appreciation in the history of France. The just judgment of posterity has ranked Athalie, if not as Racine's best work (and there are good grounds for consider- ing it to be this), at any rate as equal to his best. Thence- forward Racine was practically silent, except for four can- tiques spirituelles, in the style and with much of the merit of the choruses of Lsther and Athalze. The general literary sentiment led by Fontenelle (who inherited the wrongs of Corneille, his uncle, and whom Racine had taken care to estrange further) was against the arrogant critic and the irritable poet, and they made their case worse by espousing the cause of La Bruyére, whose personalities in his Carac- teres had made him one of the best hated men in France, and by engaging in the ancient and modern battle with Perrault. Racine, moreover, was a constant and spiteful epigrammatist, and the unlucky habit of preferring his joke to his friend stuck by him to the last. A savage epigram on the Sesostrvs of Longepierre, who had done him no harm and was his familiar acquaintance, dates as late as 1695. Still the king maintained him in favour, and so long as this continued he could afford to laugh at Grub Street and the successors of the Hétel de Rambouillet alike. At last, however, there seems (for the matter is

not too clear) to have come a change. Some say that he disobliged Madame de Maintenon, some (and this would be much to his honour, but not exactly in accord with anything else known of him) that, like Vauban and Fénelon, he urged the growing misery of the people. But there seems to be little doubt of the fact of the royal displeasure, and it is even probable that it had some effect on his health. Disease of the liver appears to have been the immediate cause of his death, which took place on 12th April 1699. The king seems to have, at any rate, forgiven him after his death, and he gave the family a pension of 2000 livres. Racine was buried at Port Royal, but even this transaction was not the last of his relations with that famous home of religion and learning. After the destruction of the abbey in 1711 his body was exhumed and transferred to Saint Etienne du Mont, his gravestone being left behind and only restored to his ashes a hundred years later, in 1818. His eldest son was never married ; his eldest daughter and Louis Racine have left descendants to the present day.

A critical biography of Racine is, in more ways than one, an ex- ceptionally difficult undertaking, —not in regard to the facts, which, as will have been seen, are fairly abundant, but as to the construc- tion to be placed on them. The admirers of Racine's literary genius have made it a kind of rcligion to defend his character ; and strict- ures on his character, it seems to be thought, imply a desire to depreciate his literary worth. The reader of the above sketch of his life must judge for himself whether Racine is or is net to be ranked with those great men of letters, fortunately the greater number, whose personality is attractive and their foibles at worst excusable. There is no doubt that the general impression given,

not merely by the flying anecdotes of the time, but by ascertained facts, is somewhat unfavourable. Racine's affection for his family

and his unbroken friendship for Boileau are the sole points of his life which are entirely creditable to him. His conduct to Moliére and to Nicole cannot be excused ; his attitude towards his critics and his rivals was querulous and spitcful ; his relation to Corneille contrasts strikingly with the graceful position which young men of letters, sometimes by no means lis inferiors, have often taken up towards the surviving glories of a past generation ; his

“ conver- sion,” though there is no just cause for branding it as hypocritical, appears to have been a singularly accommodating one, enabling him to tolerate adultery, to libel his friends in secret, and to flatter greatness unhesitatingly. None of these things perhaps are very heinous crimes, but they are all of the class of misdoing which, fairly or unfairly, mankind are apt to regard with greater dislike than positive misdeeds of a more glaring but less unheroic character.

The personality of an author is, however, by all the laws of the saner criticism, entirely independent of the rank to be assigned to his work, and, as in other cases, the strongest dislike for the char- acter of Racine as a man is compatible with the most unbounded admiration of his powers as a writer. But here again his injudicious admirers have interposed a difficulty. There is a theory common in France, and sometimes adopted out of it, that only a Frenchman, and not every Frenchman, can properly appreciate Racine. The charm of his verse and of his dramatic presentation is so esoteric and delicate that foreigners cannot hope to taste it. This is of course absurd, and if it were true it would be fatal to Racine’s claims as a poet of the highest rank. Such poets, such writers, are not paro- chial or provincial, and even the greatest nations are but provinces or parishes in the realm of literature. Homer, Shakespeare, Dante, even Moliere, Rabelais, Goethe, are not afraid to challenge the approval of the whole world, and the whole world is not found com petent or unwilling to give it. Nor need Racine in reality avail fimeel? of this unwise pretension. Judged by the common tests of literature he isa consuminate artist, but he is scarcely a great poet, for his art, though unsurpassed in its kind, is narrow in range and his poetry is neither of the highest nor of the most genuine.

He may be considered from two very different points of view,— (1) as a playwright and poetical artificer, and (2) as a dramatist andapoct. From the first point of view there is hardly any praise too high for him. He did not invent the form he practised, and those who, from want of attention to the historical facts, assume that he did are unskilful as well as ignorant. When he came upon the scene the form of French plays was settled, partly by the energetic efforts of the Pléiade and their successors, partly by the reluctant acquiescence of Corneille. It is barely possible that the latter might, if he had chosen, have altered the course of French tragedy ; itis nearly certain

that Racine could not. But Corneille, though he was himself more responsible than any one else for the acceptance of the single-situation tragedy, never frankly gave himself up to it, and the inequality of his work is due to this. His heart was, though not to his knowledge, elsewhere, and with Shake- speare. Racine, in whom the craftsman dominated the man of genius, worked with a will and without any misgivings. Every advantage which the Senecan tragedy adapted to modern times was capable of he gave it. He perfected its versification ; he subordi- nated its scheme entirely to the one motive which could have free play in it,—the display of a conventionally intense passion ; he set himself to produce in verse a kind of Ciceronian correctness. The grammar criticisms of Vaugelas and the taste criticisms of Boileau produced in him no feeling of revolt, but only a determination to play the game according to these new rules with triumphant accuracy. And he did so play it. He had supremely the same faculty which enabled the rhétoriqueurs of the 15th century to execute apparently impossible tours de force in ballades couronnées, and similar tricks. He had besides a real and saving vein of truth to nature, which preserved him from tricks pure and simple. He would be and he was as much a poet as prevalent taste would let him be. The result is that such plays as Phédre and Andromaque are supreme in their own way. If the critic will only abstain from thrusting in tierce, when according to the particular rules he ought to thrust in quart, Racine is sure to beat him.

But there is a higher game of criticism than this, and this game Racine does not attempt to play. He does not even attempt the highest poetry at all. His greatest achievements in pure passion— the foiled desires of Hermione and the jealous frenzy of Phédre —are cold, not merely beside the crossed love of Ophelia and the remorse of Lady Macbeth, but beside the sincerer if less perfectly expressed passion of Corneille's Cléopaitre and Camille. In men's parts he fails still more completely. As the decency of his stage would not allow him to make his heroes frankly heroic, so it would not allow him to make them utterly passionate. He had, moreover, cut away from himself by the adoption of the Senecan model all the opportunities which would have been offered to his remarkably varied talent on a freer stage. It is indeed tolerably certain that he never could have achieved the purely poetical comedy of 4s You Like It or the Vida cs Sueno, but the admirable success of

Les Plaidewrs makes it at least probable that he might have done some- thing in a lower and a more conventional style. From all this,

however, he deliberately cut himself off. Of the whole world which is subject to the poet he took only a narrow artificial and conven- tional fraction. Within these narrow bounds he did work which no admirer of literary craftsmanship can regard without admiration. But at the same time no one speaking with competence can deny that the bounds are narrow. It would be unnecessary to contrast his performances with his limitations so sharply if those limitations had not been denied. But they have been and are still denied by persons whose sentence carries weight, and therefore it is still neces- sary to point out the fact of their existence.

Nearly all Racine's works are mentioned in the above notice. There is here no room for a bibliographical aceount of their separate appearances. The first eolleeted edition was in 1675-76, and contained the nine tragedies which had then appeared. The last and most complete whieh appeared in the poet's life- time (1697) was revised by him, and contains the dramas and a few miscellane- ous works. Like the editio princeps, it is in 2 vols. 12mo. The posthumous editions are innumerable and gradually beeame more and more eomplete. The most noteworthy are the Amsterdam edition of 1722; that by Abbé @ Olivet, also at Amsterdam, 1743; the Paris quarto of 1760; the edition of Luneau de Boisjermain, Paris and London, 1768; the magnificent illustrated folios of 1805 (Paris); the edition of Germain Garnier with La Harpe's commentary, 1807 ; Geoffroy's of the next year; Aimé Martin's of 1820; and lastly, the grands écrivains edition of Paul Mesnard (Paris, 1865-73). This last contains almost all that is necessary for the study of the poet, and has been chiefly used in preparing the above notice. Louis Racine's Life was first published in 1747, Translations and imitations of Racine are innumerable. In English the Dis- tressed Mother of Philips and the Phaedra and Hippolytus of Smith, both composed more or less under Addison's influenee, are the most noteworthy. (G. SA.)

RACKETS. Like tennis, this game of ball is of French origin, and its name is derived from "'raquette," the French term for the bat used in the pastime. In the United Kingdom it is not so universally pursued as cricket

and football, and is essentially an indoor game, which is played only in prepared and covered courts. Such buildings have been erected at many of the large public schools, at the universities, and in garrison towns, where will be found the chief exponents of rackets, a game which requires active running powers, quick eyesight, and dexterity of hand.

The old "open" courts, which merely consisted of a plain wall without any side walls, are now almost obsolete and need not be further mentioned. The usual dimen- sions of a "close" court are 80 feet by 40 feet for four- handed matches, whilst 60 feet by 30 feet are sufticient for a single match. Sometimes courts are built of an in- termediate size so as to be available for either single or double matches. The front wall of a court should be 40 feet high, the back one 14 feet, the space over the latter being utilized by a gallery for specta- tors, umpire, and marker.

FRONT 40 Feet

<= 48 Feet >

62 Feet

RIGHT SERVICE SPACE

LEFT SERVICE SPACE

SERVICE LINE

LEFT BACK COURT2| RIGHT BACK COURT The side 3

walls are 40 feet high throughout, in order to support the

roof. This must be well lit with sky- lights carried on light iron girders and protected inside with wire-work in order to ward off damage from the balls. Bricks make the best walls, which must be plastered inside with Roman cement or plaster of Paris, set to a perfectly level surface in order that the balls may rebound evenly. In the military officers' courts in India this plaster is painted white for the sake of XX, — 27

DOOR

coolness, and black balls are in vogue. In England black paint and white balls are used. In cool climates asphalt makes the best flooring. In the tropics stone paving, perfectly evenly set, or some similar material, must be used. Gutta-percha soles to the shoes of the players are indis- pensable, to prevent slipping and to preserve the evenness of the flooring. The narrow entrance door, made of very hard wood, is situated in the centre of the back wall and must be perfectly flush with the same on the inside. The bottom of the front wall is covered with hollow deal sound- ing boarding up to a height of 2 feet 2 inches, where is the "line." The sound betrays a ball striking the board- ing below the line, which throws it out of play. At 7 feet 9 inches above the level of the floor comes another white line across the front wall, termed the "cut line," because the in-player, when serving, must first make the ball re- bound from the front wall above this line. Across the floor, varying in position according to the length of the court, is the "short line," so called because an out-player is not bound to take any ball served which falls between it and the front wall. The space between here and the back wall is divided into two equal-sized parallelograms by a line drawn down to the doorway. As the front wall is faced, these are called "right" and "left" courts. An in-player serving from one side must make the ball fall in the other court after rebounding from the front wall. The "service spaces," in which an in-player stands when serving, are 8 feet 6 inches deep 'from the short line and 6 feet 6 inches wide from each side wall.

The game is played with no other implements but bats and balls. The striking portion of the former is oval- shaped and strung tightly across with catgut. The handle is of pliant ash covered with leather in order to give the hand a tight grip. The balls are about 1} inches in diameter, and very hard in order to rebound evenly and quickly.

In a four-handed game we will suppose A and B to be playing against C and D and that the former couple have won the choice of first innings. A accordingly commences serving from the right service space into the left court, that being the most difficult one to return the ball from. B stands behind A to return any balls for his side in the back portion of the court. C

stands where he likes ready to take the ball about to be served by A, whilst C's partner, D, places himsclf between A and B to take the fore court play for his side. For A's service to be good his ball must first strike the front wall above the cut line, and secondly rebound from the floor of the left-hand court, though whether it strike the side or back walls or not after rebounding from the front wall is immaterial. If these rules are complied with, C is bound to return the ball, at its first bound off the floor, on to the front wall above the sounding- board. Ifhe does not succeed A and B score one ace in their favour. If C achieves his purpose the game is continued by one of either side returning the ball alternately, till a player either strikes the sound- ing board, skies it into the roof or gallery, or strikes it later than the first bound off the floor. If A or B makes the first failure A is out. If it is C or D, the in-side scores an ace, and A continues serving alternately from each service space. The out-playcr may take a faulty service at his own option. If he does, the ace is played out in the usual way. When A is put out C goes in, then D, and lastly A's partner B, and so on in the same rotation. B is not allowed to follow

1. The game to be 15 up. At 13 all, the out-players may set it to 5, and at 14 all, to 8, provided this be done before another ball is struck.

RAD—RAD

2. The going in first, whether odds be given or not, to be deeided by lot; but one hand only then is to be taken.

3, The ball to be served alternately from right and left, beginning whichever side the server pleases.

4, In serving, the server must have one foot in the space marked off for that purpose. The out-player to whom he serves may stand where he pleases, but his partner and the server's partner must both stand behind the server till the ball is served.

5, The ball must be served above, and not touching the line on the front wall, and it mnst strike the floor, before it bounds, within and not touehing the lines enelosing the eourt on the side opposite to that in whieh the server stands.

6. A ball served below the line, or to the wrong side, is a fault, but it may be taken, and then the aee must be played out, and eounts.

7. In serving, if the ball strikes anywhere before it reaches the front wall, it is a hand out.

8. In serving, if a ball touehes the server or his partner before it has bounded twiee it is a hand out, whether it was properly served or not.

9. Itis a fault—

a. If the server is not in his proper place.

b. If the ball is not served over the line.

c. If it does not fall in the proper eourt.

d. If it touches the roof.

e. If it touehes the gallery-netting, posts, or eushions.

The out-player may take a fault if he pleases, but ifhe fails in putting the ball up it eounts against him.

10. Two eonsecutive faults put a hand out.

11. An out-player may not take a ball served to his partner.

12. The out-players may ehange their courts onee only in eaeh game.

13, If a player designedly stops a ball before the second bound it counts against him.

14, If a ball hits the striker's adversary above or on the knee, it is a let; if below the knee, or if it hits the striker's partner or himself, it eounts against the striker.

15. Till a ball has been touehed, or has bounded twiee, the player or his partner may strike it as often as they please.

16. Every player should get out of the way as muchas possible. Ifhe eannot, the marker is to deeide whether it is a let or not.

17. After the serviee, a ball going out of the eourt or hitting the roof is an aee; a ball hitting the gallery-netting, posts, or eushions, in returning from the front wall, is a let; but if it hits the roof before reaehing the front wall it

eounts against the striker. 18. The marker's decision is final. If he has any doubt, he should ask

adviee; and, if he eannot dteide positively, the ace is to be or ones again. . FW.

RADAUTZ, a town in the Austrian duchy of Bukowina, is situated on the Suczava, about 15 miles from the frontier of Moldavia. It was formerly the seat of a Greek bishopric, removed to Czernowitz in 1786, and possesses a cathedral with the tombs of several Moldavian princes. It contains a Government stud, and manufactures paper, glass, machinery, beer, and brandy. In 1880 Radautz had 11,162 inhabitants.

RADBERTUS, head of the Benedictine abbey of Corbie, near Amiens, from 844 to 851, and one of the most pro- minent theological writers of his age, was born at or near Soissons towards the close of the 8th century, and became a monk of Corbie in 814, when he assumed the cloister name of Pascuastus. He soon gained recognition as a learned and successful teacher, and Adalhard, St Anskar the apostle of Sweden, Odo bishop of Beauvais, and Warinus abbot of Corvey in Saxony may be mentioned among the more distinguished of his pupils. In 844 he was chosen abbot, but as a disciplinarian he was more energetic than successful, and in 867 he resigned the office. In his official capacity he took part in the synod of Chiersy which condemned Gottschalk. Of the closing period of his life nothing is known, except that it was one of great literary activity.

His works include an Expositio in Mattheum, in twelve books, a favourable specimen of the exegesis of that period, and the Liber de Corpore et Sanguine Christi, a pious and popularly written treatise, designed to prove that the elements in the sacrament are completely changed. The latter work, originally composed in 881, elicited a reply by Ratramnus, a brother monk

of Corbie, who maintained that the body and blood of Christ were present in the Eucharist only "spiritualiter et secundum potentiam." The De Partw Virginis of Radbertus (845) was also taken exception to by Ratramnus for its Docetic teaching as to the manner of Christ's birth " utero clauso."

RADCLIFFE, a town of Lancashire, is situated on the river Irwell, crossed by a bridge of two arches, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 7 miles north-west of Manchester and 2 south-west of Bury. The church of St Bartholomew dates from the time of Henry IV. ; some of the Norman portions of the building still remain. The tower was rebuilt in 1665, the north transept added in 1846, and the whole building restored in 1870-73. It possesses some good windows and several ancient monu:

ments. Radcliffe Tower, dating from the 13th century, and formerly an extensive manorial residence, is now a complete ruin. Cotton-weaving, calico-printing, and bleaching are the principal industries, and there are extensive collieries in the neighbourhood. The town is governed by a local board of health established in 1866. The area of the urban sanitary district is 2453 acres, with a population in 1871 of 11,446, and in 1881 of 16,267. Radcliffe is so called from a cliff of red rock on the south side of the Irwell opposite the town. The manor was held by Edward the Confessor, and was conferred on Roger de Poictou, but was forfeited by him soon after the Domesday survey. In the reign of Stephen it was granted to Ranulph de Gernons, earl of Chester.

RADCLIFFE, Ann Warp (1764-1823), novelist, was born in London on 9th July 1764. She was the author of three novels unsurpassed of their kind in English litera- ture, The Romance of the Forest (1791), The Mysteries of Udolpho (1794), The Italian (1797). The interval of three years between the successive publications is noticeable ; works so elaborate, intricate, and closely interwoven could not be written in a hurry. The second of the three novels is the one commonly associated with Mrs Radcliffe's name, but the preference is probably due to the title ; each is an improvement on its predecessor, and the last is considerably the best on the whole in style as well as in plot and char- acter. She wrote two other novels before any of these, the Castles of Athlin and Dunbayne (1789) and the Sicilian Romance

(1790), but they attracted no special attention and deserve none, although in them she works with the same romantic materials—dreadful castles, wild adventures, terrible characters. One other was written after the famous three, but not published till 1826, three years after her death—Gaston de Blondeville, interesting as an elaborate study of costume and scenery, and valuable as a monument of her accurate archeological learning, but comparatively tedious as a story, though not without passages in her best style. The circumstances that turned Mrs Radcliffe to literature are not recorded in the meagre memoir published under her husband's direction. Her maiden name was Ward, and her parents, who are described as "persons of great respectability, though engaged in trade," in London, had literary relations. Her husband was an Oxford gradu- ate and proprietor and editor of the Hnglish Chronicle. After The Italian she gave up writing for publication, and was reported to have been driven mad by the horrors of her own creations. This was purely mythical. It appears that she never saw the Italian scenery which she depicts with such minuteness, and never left England but once, in the summer of 1794, after the completion of her Udolpho. A record of the tour was published in the following year, along with descriptions of a visit to the English Lakes, the beauties of which she was one of the first to celebrate. Of scenery, as might be judged from her novels, where the descriptions are often felt as a tedious impediment, Mrs Radcliffe was an enthusiastic amateur, and made driving tours with her husband every other summer through the English counties. She died in February 1823.

_ Asa novelist Mrs Radcliffe deserves a much higher place than 1s accorded to her in general estimation. Critics familiar with her works, from Sir Walter Scott downwards, have shown themselves fully alive to the difference; but the general public confound her with puerile and extravagant imitators, who have vulgarized her favourite " properties" of rambling and ruinous old castles, dark, desperate, and cadaverous villains, secret passages, vaults, trapdoors, evidences of deeds of monstrous crime, sights and sounds of mys- terious horror. She deserves at least the credit of originality, but apart from this there are three respects in which none of her numer- ous imitators approach her,—ingenuity of plot, fertility of incident, and skill in devising apparently supernatural occurrences capable of explanation by human agency and natural coincidence. Except in her last

and posthumously published work she never introduces the really supernatural, and, whether or not we agree with Sir Walter Scott that this limitation was a mistake in art, it must at least be acknowledged to impose a heavier burden on the author's

mn A & Pal

ingenuity. Her imitators found it easier to follow Horace Walpole in this point. Some of the tragic situations in The Italian are worked ont with a vivid power of imagination which it would be hard to parallel in English literature outside the range of the Eliza- bethan draina, with the minor celebrities of which Mrs Radcliffe may fairly challenge comparison.

RADETZKY, Jowann J. W. A. F. C., Count or RaveETz (1766-1858), field-marshal of Austria, was born at Trzebnitz in Bohemia in 1766, to the nobility of which province his family belonged. He entered a cavalry regi- ment in 1784 and served under Joseph II. and Laudon against the Turks in 1788 and 1789. In 1793 his regiment was sent to the lower Rhine, and from this time onwards Radetzky was engaged in the wars which were continued (with intermission) between Austria and France for the next twenty years. In 1796 he was adjutant to General Beaulieu, over whom Bonaparte won his first victories in Italy. In 1799, when the Austrians with Suwaroff's help reconquered Northern Italy, he distinguished himself at the battles of Novi and the Trebbia, displaying, accord- ing to the despatches of General Mélas, great presence of mind in the midst of extreme danger. After the defeat of Marengo he was removed from Italy to Germany, and there took part in the still more disastrous engagement of Hohenlinden. In 1805 Radetzky, now major-general, was back in Italy, serving under the archduke Charles in the successful campaign of Caldiero, the fruits of which were lost by Mack's capitulation at Ulm and the fall of Vienna. In 1809+he fought at Wagram. In 1813, when all the great powers of Europe combined against Napoleon, Radetzky was chief of the staff under Schwarzenberg, the Austrian commander-in-chief of the allied forces, and he now gained a reputation outside his own country. The plan of the battle of Leipsic is said to have been in great part Radetzky's work, and in this engagement he was wounded. He entered Paris with the allied sovereigns in March 1814, and returned with them to the congress of Vienna, where he appears to have

acted as an inter- mediary between Metternich and the czar Alexander, when these great personages were not on speaking terms. During the succeeding years of peace he disappeared from the public view and narrowly escaped being pensioned off in 1829, The insurrection of the Papal Legations in 1831 brought him, however, into active service again ; and on the retirement of General Frimont he was placed in command of all the Austrian forces in Italy, receiving in 1836 the dignity of field-marshal. Radetzky was now seventy years old, but twelve more years were to pass before the really historical part of his career opened. When he was eighty-two the revolution of 1848 broke out. Milan rose in insurrection against its Austrian rulers, and after a struggle of five days Radetzky was forced to eva- cuate the city. Unable to retain any hold on Lombardy, he concentrated his troops at Verona, the fortifications of which were toa great extent his own creation. Charles Albert, king of Sardinia, now declared war upon Austria, occupied Milan, and laid siege to Peschiera. Radetzky, after the arrival of reinforcements, moved southwards to Mantua, and attempted from that point to turn the Sar- dinian flank; he was, however, defeated on the Mincio, and Peschiera fell into the enemy's hands. Radetzky, nevertheless, was secure in the possession of Verona and Mantua; and, after being still further reinforced, he re- sumed the offensive in July, defeated the Sardinians at Cus- tozza and in several other encounters, and advanced victori- ously upon Milan, where, on 6th August, an armistice was concluded, the Sardinian army retiring behind the Ticino. During the succeeding months, while Vienna and the central provinces of the Austrian empire appeared likely to fall into anarchy, Radetzky's army remained firm in its loyalty to the old order of things, and declined to enter

into relations with the democratic leaders. It was in fact at this time the mainstay of the house of Hapsburg, while everything around the central government tottered ; and, when the restoration of authority began, and the young emperor Francis Joseph ascended the throne that had been vacated by his imbecile predecessor, Radetzky gave to the new monarch the prestige of a crushing victory over his Italian enemies. The armistice was denounced by Charles Albert on the 12th of March 1849. On the 20th Radetzky crossed the Ticino at Pavia, and on the 23d he annihilated the Italian army at

Novara. Peace followed this brief and decisive campaign, and for the next eight years Radetzky governed upper Italy. He retired from service in 1857, and died at the age of ninety-two in the following year. Radetzky was idolized by the Austrian army, but his reputation as a general has not survived him.

RADHANPUR, a petty state of India, within the group of states under the supervision of the political superintend- ent of Palanpur ; it is situated in the north-western corner of Gujarat, close to the Runn of Cutch, Bombay presidency, and lies between 23° 26' and 23° 58' N. lat. and between 71° 28' and 72° 3' E. long. The country is an open plain without hills and with few trees, square in shape, and about 35 miles across. Including the pergunnahs of Munjpur and Sami, it contains an area of 1150 square miles with a popu- lation (1881) of 98,129 (males 50,903, females 47,226), the majority being Hindus. Though subject to very great extremes of heat and cold, the climate is healthy. The estimated yearly revenue of the state is from £50,000 to £60,000. Its chief products are cotton, wheat, and all the common varieties of grain; the only manufacture of any importance is the preparation of a fine description of salt- petre. Radhanpur came under British protection in 1819, when the nawab applied for aid to check the raids of mar- auders. No tribute is exacted and its domestic relations are left entirely free.

RADHANPUR, chief town of the state and the seat of the nawab, had a population of 14,722 in 1881. The nearest railway station is at Kharagoda, 40 miles distant.

RADIATA. This term was introduced by Cuvier in 1812 to denote the lowest of his four great animal groups or "embranchements." He defined them as possessing radial instead of bilateral symmetry, and as apparently destitute of nervous system and sense organs, as having the circulatory system rudimentary or absent, and the respira- tory organs on or coextensive with the surface of the body; he included under this title and definition five classes,—Hchinodermata, Acalepha, Entozoa, Polypi, and Infusoria, Lamarck (Hist. nat. d. Anim. s. Vertébres) also used the term, as when he spoke of the Medusez as radiata medusaria et anomala; but he preferred the term Radiaria, under which he included Echinodermata and Meduse.

Cuvier's term in its wide extension, how- ever, passed into general use; but, as the anatomy of the different forms became more fully known, the difficulty of including them under the common designation made itself increasingly obvious. Milne-Edwards removed the Poly- zoa; the group was soon further thinned by the exclu- sion of the Protozoa on the one hand and the Entozoa on the other; while in 1848 Leuckart and Frey clearly distinguished the Coelenterata from the Echinodermata as a separate sub-kingdom, thus condemning the usage by which the term still continued to be applied to these two groups at least. In 1855, however, Owen included under Lamarck's term Radiaria the Echinodermata, Anthozoa, Acalepha, and Hydrozoa, while Agassiz also clung to the term Radiata as including Echinodermata, Acalepha, and Polypi, regarding their separation into Ccelenterata and Echinodermata as "an exaggeration of their anatomical differences" (Hssay on Classification, London, 1859).

RA D—RA-D

These attempts, however, to perpetuate the usage were finally discredited by Huxley's important Lectures on Com- parative Anatomy (1864), in which the term was finally abolished, and the "radiate mob " finally distributed among the Echinodermata, Polyzoa, Vermes (Platyhelminthes), Coelenterata, and Protozoa. On radiate symmetry, see MorpHotocy. Compare also Cuvier, ANIMAL Kinepom, ECHINODERMATA, CoRALS, &e.

RADIATION anp CONVECTION. 1. When a red- hot cannon ball is taken out of a furnace and suspended in the air it is observed to cool, z.e., to part with heat, and it continues to do so at a gradually diminishing rate till it finally reaches the temperature of the room. But the pro- cess by which this effect is produced is a very complex one. If the hand be held at a distance of a few inches from the hot ball on either side of it or below it, the feeling of warmth experienced is considerable; but it becomes intolerable when the hand is held at the same distance above the ball. Even this rude form of experiment is sufficient to show that two processes of cooling are simul- taneously at work,—one which apparently leads to tle loss of heat in all directions indifferently, another which leads to a special loss in a vertical direction upwards. If the ex- periment is made in a dark room, into which a

ray of sun- light is admitted so as to throw a shadow of the ball on a screen, we see that the column of air above the ball also casts a distinct shadow. It is, in fact, a column of air very irregularly heated by contact with the ball, and rising, in obedience to hydrostatic laws, in the colder and denser air around it. This conveyance of heat by the motion of the heated body itself is called convection ; the process by which heat is lost indifferently in all directions is called radiation, These two processes are entirely different in their nature, laws, and mechanism ; but we have to treat of both in the present article.

2. To illustrate how the third method by which heat can be transferred, viz., conduction (see Heat, vol. xi. p. 577), is involved in this process, let the cannon ball (which for this purpose should be a large one) be again heated and at once immersed in water until it just ceases to be luminous in the dark, and then be immediately hung up in the air. After.a short period it again becomes red-hot all over, and the phenomenon then proceeds precisely as before, except that the surface of the ball does not become so hot as it was before being plunged in the water. This form of experiment, which requires that the interior shall be very considerably cooled before the surface ceases to be self- luminous, does not succeed nearly so well with a copper ball as with an iron one, on account of the comparatively high conductivity of copper. In fact, even when its surface is covered with lamp-black, to make the loss by radia- tion as great as possible, the difference of temperature between the centre and the surface of a very hot copper ball—which is only an inch or two in diameter—is in- considerable.

3. In conduction there is passage of heat from hotter to colder parts of the same body; in convection an irregularly heated fluid becomes hydrostatically unstable, and each part carries its heat with it to its new position. In both processes heat is conveyed from place to place. But it is quite otherwise with radiation. That a body cools in con- sequence of radiation is certain; that other bodies which absorb the radiation are thereby heated is also certain ; but it does not at all follow that what passes in the radiant form is heat. To return for a moment to the red-hot cannon ball. If, while the hand is held below it, a thick but dry plate of rock-salt is interposed between the ball and the hand there is no perceptible diminution

of warmth, and the temperature of the salt is not perceptibly raised by the radiation which passes through it. When a piece

| | |

a

moaDlATION

of clear ice is cut into the form of a large burning-glass it can be employed to inflame tinder by concentrating the sun's rays, and the lens does the work nearly as rapidly as if it had been made of glass. It is certainly not what we ordinarily call "heat" which can be transmitted under conditions like these. Radiation is undoubtedly a trans- ference of energy, which was in the form commonly called heat in the radiating body, and becomes heat in a body which absorbs it; but it is transformed as it leaves the first body, and retransformed when it is absorbed by the second. Until the comparatively recent full recognition of the con- servation and transformation of energy it was almost im- possible to form precise ideas on matters like this; and, consequently, we find in the writings even of men like Prévost and Sir J. Leslie notions of the wildest character as to the mechanism of radiation. Leslie, strangely, re- garded it as a species of "pulsation" in the air, in some respects analogous to sound, and propagated with the same speed as sound. Prévost, on the other hand, says, "Le calorique est un fluide discret; chaque élément de calo- rique suit constamment la méme ligne droite, tant qu'aucun obstacle ne l'arréte. Dans un espace chaud, chaque point est traversé sans cesse en tout sens var des filets de calorique."

4, The more intensely the cannon ball is heated the more luminous does it become, and also the more nearly white is the light which it gives out. So well is this known that in almost all forms of civilized speech there are terms corresponding to our "red-hot," " white-hot," ce. As another instance, suppose a powerful electric current is made to pass through a stout iron wire. The wire becomes gradually hotter, up to a certain point, at which the loss by radiation and convection just balances the gain of heat by electric resistance. And as it becomes hotter the amount of its radiation increases, till at a definite temperature it becomes just visible in the dark by red rays of low refrangibility. As it becomes still hotter the whole radiation

increases ; the red rays formerly given off become more luminous, and are joined by others of higher refrangibility. This process goes on, the whole amount of radiation still increasing, each kind of visible light becoming more intense, and new rays of light of higher refrangibility coming in, until the whole becomes white, 7.e., gives off all the more efficient kinds of visible light in much the same relative proportion as that in which they exist in sunlight. When the circuit is broken, exactly the same phenomena occur in the reverse order, the various kinds of light disappearing later as their refrangibility is less. But the radiation continues, grow- ing weaker every instant, even after the whole is dark. This simple observation irresistibly points to the con- clusion that the so-called "radiant heat" is precisely the same phenomenon as "light," only the invisible rays are still less refrangible than the lowest red, and that our Sense of sight is confined to rays of a certain definite range of refrangibility, while the sense of touch comes in where sight fails us. Sir W. Herschel in 1798, by placing the bulb of a thermometer in the solar spectrum formed by a flint-glass prism, found that the highest temperature was in the dark region outside the lowest visible red,—a result amply verified at the time by others, though warmly contested by Leslie.

5 This striking conclusion is not without close ana- logies in connexion with the other senses, especially that of hearing. Thus it has long been known that the "range of hearing" differs considerably in different individuals, some, for instance, being painfully affected by the chirp of a cricket, which is inaudible to others whose general hearing is quite as good. Extremely low notes, on the other hand, of whose existence we have ample dynamical

evidence, are not heard by any one; when perceived at all they are felt.

6. We may now rapidly run over the principal facts characteristic of the behaviour of visible rays (see Liaw), and point out how far each has been found to characterize that of so-called "radiant heat" under similar conditions,

(a) Rectilinear propagation : an opaque screen which is placed so as to intercept the sun's light intercepts its heat also, whether it be close to the

observer, at a few miles from him (as a cloud or a mountain), or 240,000 miles off (as the moon in a total eclipse). (b) Speed of propagation: this must be of the same order of magni- tude, at least, for both phenomena, 7.e., 186,000 miles or so per second ; for the sun's heat ceases to be percep. tible the moment an eclipse becomes total, and is perceived again the instant the edge of the sun's disk is visible. (c) Reflexion: the law must be exactly the same, for the heat-producing rays from a star are concentrated by Lord Rosse's great reflector along with its light. (d) Refraction: when a lens is not achromatic its principal focus for red rays is farther off than that for blue rays ; that for dark heat is still farther off. Herschel's deter- mination of the warmest region of the spectrum (§ 4 above) is another case in point. (¢)-Oblique radiation ; an illumi- nated or a self-luminous surface appears equally bright however it is inclined to the line of sight. The radiation of heat from a hot blackened surface (through an aperture which it appears to fill) is sensibly the same however it be inclined (Leslie, Fourier, Melloni). (/) Intensity : when there is no absorption by the way the intensity of the light received from a luminous point-source is inversely as the square of the distance. The same is true of dark heat. But this is not a new analogy; it is a mere consequence of (a) rectilinear propagation. (g) Selective absorption : light which has been sifted by passing through one plate of blue glass passes in much greater percentage through a second plate of the same glass, and in still greater percentage through a third. The same is true of radiant heat, even when the experiment is made with uncoloured glass ; for clear glass absorbs certain colours of dark heat more than others (De Laroche, Melloni). (2) Interference bands, whether produced by two mirrors or by gratings, characterize dark heat as well as light ; only they indicate longer waves (Fizeau and Foucault). (7) Polarization and double refraction: with special apparatus, such as plates of mica split by heat into numerous parallel films, the polarization of dark heat is easily established. When two of these bundles are so placed as to intercept the heat, an unsplit film of mica interposed between them allows the heat to pass, or arrests it, as it is made to rotate in its own plane (Forbes). (/) By proper chemical adjustments photographs of a region of the solar spectrum beyond the visible red have been obtained (Abney). We might mention more, but those given above, when considered together, are conclusive. In fact (b) or (2) alone would almost settle the question.

7. But there is a superior as well as an inferior limit of visible rays. Light whose period of vibration is too small to produce any impression on the optic nerve can be degraded by fluorescence (see Licur) into visible rays, and can also be detected by its energetic action on various photographic chemicals. In fact photographic portraits can be taken in a room which appears absolutely dark to the keenest eyesight. By one or other of these processes the solar spectrum with its dark lines and the electric arc with its bright lines have been delineated to many times the length of their visible ranges. The electric arc especially gives (in either of these ways) a spectrum of extraordinary length ; for we can examine it, as we can not examine sunlight, before it has suffered any sensible absorption.

214

8. Thus radiation is one phenomenon, and (as we shall find) the spectrum of a black body (a conception roughly realized in the carbon poles of an electric lamp) is continu- ous from the longest possible wave-length to the shortest which it is hot enough to emit. These various groups of rays, however, are perceived by us in very different ways, whether by direct impressions of sense or by the different modes in which they effect physical changes or transforma- tions. The only way as yet known to us of treating them all alike is to convert their energy into the heat-form and measure it as such. This we can do in a satisfactory manner by the thermo-electric pile and galvanometer.

9. Of the history of the gradual development of the theory of radiation we can give only the main features. The apparent concentration of cold by a concave mirror, which had been long before observed by Porta, was redis- covered by Pictet, and led to the extremely important enunciation of the Law of Exchanges by Prévost in 1791. As we have already seen, Prévost's idea of the nature of radiation was a corpuscular one, no doubt greatly influenced in this direction by the speculations of Lesage (see ATom). But the value of his theory as a concise statement of facts and a mode of co- ordinating them is not thereby materially lessened. We give his own statements in the following close paraphrase, in which the italics are re- tained, from sect. ix. of his Du Calorique Rayonnant (Geneva, 1809).

“1, Free caloric is a radiant fluid. And because caloric becomes free at the surfaces of bodies every point of the surface of a body is a centre, towards and from which filaments (filets) of caloric move in all direetions.

“2. Heat equilibrium between two neighbouring free spaces consists in equality of cachange.

‘¢3, When equilibrium is interfered with it is re-established by inequalities of exchange. And, in a medium of constant temper- ature, a hotter or a colder body reaches this temperature according to the law that difference of temperature diminishes in geometrical progression in successive equal intervals of time.

“4, Ifintoa locality at uniform temperature a reflecting or refract- ing surface is introduced, it has no effect in the way of changing the temperature at any point in that locality.

*“*5, Ifinto a locality otherwise at uniform temperature there 7s introduced a warmer or a colder body, and next a reflecting or refract- ing surface, the points on which the rays emanating from the body are thrown by these surfaces will be affected, in the sense of being warmed if the body is warmer, and cooled if it is colder.*

“6, A reflecting body, heated or cooled in its interior, will acquire the surrounding temperature more slowly than would a non-reflector.

“7, A reflecting body, heated or cooled in its interior, will less affect (in the way of heating or cooling it) another body placed at a little distance than would a non-reflecting body under the same circumstances.

“ All these consequences have been verified by experiment, except that which regards the refraction of cold. This experiment remains to be made, and I confidently predict the result, at least if the refraction of cold can be accurately observed. This result is indi- cated in the fourth and fifth consequences [above], and they might thus be subjected to a new test. It is scarcely necessary to point out here the precautions requisite to guard against illusory results of all kinds in this matter.”

10. There the matter rested, so far as theory is con- cerned, for more than half a century. Leslie and, after him, many others added fact by fact, up to the time of De la Provostaye and Desains, whose experiments pointed to a real improvement of the theory in the form of specializa- tion. But, though such experiments indicated, on the whole, a proportionality between the radiating and absorb- ing powers of bodies and a diminution of both in the case of highly reflecting surfaces, the anomalies frequently met with (depending on the then unrecognized colour-differences of various radiations) prevented any grand generalization. The first real step of the general theory, in advance of what Prévost had achieved, and it was one of immense import, was made by Balfour Stewart in 1858. Before we take it up, however, we may briefly consider Prévost's state- ments, putting aside his erroneous views as to the nature

of heat ; and we must also introduce some results of the splendid investigations of Sadi Carnot (1824), which cast an entirely new light on the whole subject of heat.

11. Prévost's leading idea was that all bodies, whether cold or hot, are constantly radiating heat. This of itself was a very great step. It is distinctly enunciated in the term "'exchange" which he employs. And from the way in which he introduces it it is obvious that he means (though he does not expressly say so) that the radiation from a body depends on its own nature and temperature alone, and is independent altogether of the nature and temperature of any adjacent body. This also was a step in advance, and of the utmost value. It will be seen later that Prévost was altogether wrong in his assumption of the geometrical rate of adjustment of differences of temperature,—a statement originally made by Newton, but true only approximately, and even so for very small temperature differences alone. Newton in the Queries to the third book of his Optics distinctly recognizes the pro- pagation of heat from a hot body to a cold one by the vibrations of an intervening medium. But he says no- thing as to bodies of the same temperature.

12. To Carnot we owe the proposition that the thermal motivity of a system cannot be increased by internal actions. A system in which all the parts are

at the same tempera- ture has no thermal motivity, for bodies at different temperatures are required in order to work a heat-engine, so as to convert part of their heat into work. Hence, if the contents of an enclosure which is impervious to heat are at any instant at one and the same temperature, no changes of temperature can take place among them. This is certainly true so far as our modes of measurement are

concerned, because the particles of matter (those of a

gas, for instance) are excessively small in comparison with the dimensions of any of our forms of apparatus for mea- suring temperatures. Something akin to this statement has often been assumed as a direct result of experiment : a number of bodies (of any kinds) within the same imper- vious enclosure, which contains no source of heat, will ultr- mately acquire the same temperature. This form is more general than that above, inasmuch as it involves con- siderations of dissipation of energy. Either of them, were it strictly true, would suffice for our present purpose. But neither statement can be considered as rigorously true. We may employ them, however, in our reasoning as truc in the statistical sense ; but we must not be surprised if we should find that the assumption of their rigorous truth may in some special cases lead us to theoretical results which are inconsistent with experimental facts,—z.e., if we should find that deviations from an average, which are on far too minute a scale to be directly detected by any of our most delicate instruments, may be seized upon and converted into observable phenomena by some of the almost incomparably more delicate systems which we call individual particles of matter.

13. The next great advance was made by Balfour Stewart.1 The grand novelty which he introduced, and from which all his varied results follow almost intuitively, is the idea of the absolute uniformity (qualitative as well as quantitative) of the radiation at all points, and in all direc- tions, within an enclosure impervious to heat, when thermal equilibrium has once been arrived at. (So strongly does he insist on this point that he even states that, whatever be the nature of the bodies in the enclosure, the radiation there will, when equilibrium is established, be that of a black body at the same temperature. He does not expressly say that the proposition will still be true

even if the bodies can radiate, and therefore absorb, one definite wave-length only; but this is a legitimate deduction from his state

1 Trans. R. 8. E., 1858; see also Phil. Mag., 1863, i. p. 354.

i fj

‘

ee

bEoa Oo la) ON

ments. To this we will recur.) His desire to escape the difficulties of surface-reflexion led him to consider the radia- tion inside an imperfectly transparent body in the enclo- sure above spoken of. He thus arrived at an immediate proof of the existence of internal radiation, which recruits the stream of radiant heat in any direction step by step precisely to the amount by which it has been weakened by absorption. Thus the radiation and absorption rigorously compensate one another, not merely in quantity but in quality also, so that a body which is specially absorptive of one particular ray is in the same proportion specially radiative of the same ray, its temperature being the same in both cases. To complete the statement, all that is necessary is to show how one ray may differ from another, viz., in intensity, wave-length, and polarization.

14. The illustrations which Stewart brought forward in support of his theory are of the two following kinds. (1) He experimentally verified the existence of internal radiation, to which his theory had led him. This he did by show-ing that a thick plate of rock-salt (chosen on account of its comparative transparency to heat-radiations) radiates more than a thin one at the same temperature,—surrounding bodies being in this case of course at a lower temperature, so that the effect should not be masked by transmission. The same was found true of mica and of glass. (2) He showed that each of these bodies is more opaque to radia- tions from a portion of its own substance than to radiation in general. Then comes his conclusion, based, it will be observed, on his fundamental assumption as to the nature of the equilibrium radiation in an enclosure. It is merely a detailed explanation that, once

equilibrium has been arrived at, the consequent uniformity of radiation throughout the interior of a body requires the step-by-step compensation already mentioned. And thus he finally arrives at the state- ment that at any temperature a body's radiation is exactly the same both as to quality and quantity as that of its absorption from the radiation of a black body at the same temperature. In symbolical language Stewart's proposi- tion (extended in virtue of a principle always assumed) amounts to this:—at any one temperature let R be the radiation of a black body, and ef (where e is never greater than 1) that of any other substance, both for the same definite wave-length; then the substance will, while at that temperature, absorb the fraction e of radiation of that wave-length, whatever be the source from which it comes. The last clause contains the plausible assumption already referred to. Stewart proceeds to show, in a very original and ingenious way, that his result is compatible with the known facts of reflexion, refraction, &c., and arrives at the conclusion that for internal radiation parallel to a plane the amount is (in isotropic bodies) proportional to the refractive index. Of course, when the restriction of parallelism to a plane is removed the internal radiation is found to be proportional to the square of the refractive index. This obvious completion of the statement was first given by Stewart himself at a somewhat later date.

15. So far Stewart had restricted his work to "dark heat," as it was then called; and he says that he did so expressly in order to confine himself to rays "which were universally acknowledged to produce heat by their absorp- tion." But he soon proceeded to apply himself to luminous radiations. And here he brought forward the extremely important fact that 'coloured glasses invariably lose their colour in the fire" when exactly at the temperature of the coals behind them, z.e., they compensate exactly for their absorption by their radiation. But a red glass when colder than the coals behind appears red, while if it be hotter than they are it appears green. He also showed that a piece of china or earthenware with a dark pattern on a light ground appears to have a light pattern on a

dark ground when it is taken out of the fire and examined in a dark room. Hence he concluded that his extension of Prévost's theory was true for

luminous rays also.

16. In this part of the subject he had been anticipated, for Fraunhofer had long ago shown that the flame of a candle when examined by a prism gives bright lines (i.e., maxima of intensity of radiation) in the position of the constituents of a remarkable double dark line (7.e., minima of radiation) in the solar spectrum, which he called D. Hallows Miller had afterwards more rigorously verified the exact coincidence of these bright and dark lines. But Foucault! went very much farther, and proved that the electric arc, which shows these lines bright in its spectrum, not only intensifies their blackness in the spectrum of sun- hght transmitted through it, but produces them as dark lines in the otherwise continuous spectrum of the light from one of the carbon points, when that light is made by reflexion to pass through the arc. Stokes about 1850 pointed out the true nature of the connexion of these phenomena, and illustrated it by a dynamical analogy drawn from sound, He stated his conclusions to Sir W. Thomson,? who (from 1852 at least) gave them regularly in his public lectures, always pointing out that one con- stituent of the solar atmosphere is certainly sodium, and that others are to be discovered by the coincidences of solar dark lines with bright lines given by terrestrial sub- stances rendered incandescent in the state of vapour. Stokes's analogy is based on the fact of synchronism (long ago discussed by Hooke and others), viz., that a musical string is set in vibration when the note to which it is tuned is sounded in its neighbourhood. Hence we have only to imagine a space containing a great number of such strings, all tuned to the same note, Such an arrangement would form, as it were, a medium which, when agitated, would give that note, but which would be set in vibration by, and therefore diminish the intensity of, that particular note in any mixed sound which passed through it.

17. Late in 1859 appeared Kirchhoft's first paper on the subject. He supplied one important omission in Stewart's development of the theory by showing why it is necessary to use as an absorbing body one colder than the source in order to produce reversal of spectral lines. This we will presently consider. Kirchhoff's proof of the equality of radiating and absorbing powers is an elaborate but unnecessary piece of mathematics, called for in con- sequence of his mode of attacking the question. He chose to limit his reasoning to special wave-lengths by introduc- ing the complex

mechanism of the colours of thin plates (Licut, vol. xiv. p. 608), and a consequent appeal to Fourier's theorem (Harmonic ANALysIs, vol. xi. p. 481), instead of to the obviously permissible assumption of a sub- stance imperfectly transparent for one special wave-length, but perfectly transparent for all others; and he did not, as Stewart had done, carry his reasoning into the interior of the body. With all its elaboration, his mode of attack- ing the question leads us no farther than could Stewart's. Both are ultimately based on the final equilibrium of tem- perature in an enclosure required by Carnot's principle, and both are, as a consequence, equally inapplicable to exceptional cases, such as the behaviour of fluorescent or phosphorescent substances. In fact (see THERMODYNAMICS) Carnot's principle is established only on a statistical basis of averages, and ts not necessarily true when we are deal- ing with portions of space, which, though of essentially finite dimensions, are extremely small in comparison with the sentient part of even the tiniest instrument for measur- ing temperature.

1 L' Institut, 7th February 1849 ; see Phil. Mag., 1860, i. p. 193.

2 Brit, Assoc., President's address, 1871. 3 Pogg. Ann., or Phil. Mag., 1860.

216

18. Kirchhoff's addition to Stewart's result may be given as follows. Let radiation 7, of the same particular wave- length as that spoken of in § 14, fall on the substance ; er of it will be absorbed, and (1 —¢)r transmitted. This will be recruited by the radiation of the substance itself, so that the whole amount for that particular wave-length becomes (1 — e)r+eR, or r— e(r—), Thus the radiation is weakened only when &SPECTROSCOPY).

19. From the extension of Prévost's theory, obtained in either of the ways just explained, we see at once how the constancy of the radiation in an enclosure is maintained. In the neighbourhood of and perpendicular to the surfaces of a black body it is wholly due to radiation, near a transparent body wholly to transmission. A body which reflects must to the same extent be deficient in its radia- tion and transmission ; thus a perfect reflector can neither radiate nor transmit. And a body which polarizes by reflexion must supply by radiation what is requisite to render the whole radiation

unpolarized. A body, such as a plate of tourmaline, which polarizes transmitted light, must radiate light polarized in the same plane as that which it absorbs. Kirchhoff and Stewart independently gave this beautiful application.

20. Empirical formulz representing more or less closely the law of cooling of bodies, whether by radiation alone or by simultaneous radiation and convection, have at least an historic interest. What is called Newton's Law of Cool- ing was employed by Fourier in his Théorie Analytique dela Chaleur. Here the rate of surface-loss was taken as proportional to the excess of temperature over surrounding bodies. For small differences of temperature it is accurate enough in its applications, such as to the corrections for loss of heat in experimental determinations of specific heat, &c., but it was soon found to give results much below the truth, even when the excess of temperature was only 10° C.

21. Dulong and Petit, by carefully noting the rate of cooling of the bulb of a large thermometer enclosed in a metallic vessel with blackened-walls, from which the air had been as far as possible extracted and which was main- tained at a constant temperature, were led to propound the exponential formula Aa'+B to represent the radia- tion from a black surface at temperature ¢. As this is an exponential formula, we may take ¢ as representing absolute temperature, for the only result will be a definite change of value of the constant A. Hence if ¢, be the temper- ature of the enclosure, the rate of loss of heat should be A(a' ~ a), or Aa'(ai-%—1), The quantity A was found by them to depend on the nature of the radiating surface, but a was found to have the constant value 1:0077. As the approximate accuracy of this expression was verified by the experiments of De la Provostaye and Desains for temperature differences up to 200° C., it may be well to point out two of its consequences. (1) For a given differ- ence of temperatures the radiation is an exponential func- tion of the lower (or of the higher) temperature. (2) For a given temperature of the enclosure the radiation is as (1:0077)9-1, or 6(1+0:00380+ ...), where @ is the temperature excess of the cooling body. Thus the New- tonian law gives 4 per cent. too little at 10° C. of difference.

22. Dulong and Petit have also given an empirical formula for the rate of loss by simultaneous radiation and convection. This is of a highly artificial character, the part due to radiation being as in the last section, while that due to convection is independent of it, and also of the

Repl Ad © W

nature of the surface of the cooling body. It is found to be proportional to a power of the pressure of the surrounding gas (the power depending on the nature of the gas), and also to a definite power of the temperature excess. The reader must be referred to French treatises, especially that of Desains, for further information.

23. Our knowledge of the numerical rate of surface- emission is as yet scanty, but the following data, due to Nicol,! may be useful in approximate calculations. Loss in heat units (1 ib water raised 1° C. in temperature) per square foot per minute, from

Brightreoppere ..csansiicuterd 1:09 0°51 0°42 Blackenedicopper…...—.-0 2°03 1°46 ileal:

The temperatures of body and enclosure were 58° C. and 8° C., and the pressure of contained air in the three columns was about 30, 4, and 0-4 inches of mercury respectively. The enclosure was blackened.

24. Scanty as is our knowledge of radiation, it is not at all surprising that that of convection should be almost ni, except as regards some of its practical applications. Here we have to deal with a problem of hydrokinetics of a character, even in common cases, of far higher difficulty than many hydrokinetic problems of which not even ap- proximate solutions have been obtained.

25. What is called Déppler's Principle (Licut, vol. xiv. p. 614) has more recently? led Stewart to some curious speculations, which a simple example will easily explain. Suppose two parallel plates of the same substance, per- fectly transparent except to one definite wave-length, to be moving towards or from one another. Each, we pre- sume, will radiate as before, and on that account cool; but the radiation which reaches either is no longer of the kind

which alone it can absorb, whether it come directly from the other, or is part of its own or of the other's radiation reflected from the enclosure. Hence it would appear that relative motion is incompatible with temperature equilibrium in an enclosure, and thus that there must be some effect analogous to resistance to the motion. We may get over this difficulty if we adopt the former speculation of Stewart, referred to in brackets in § 18 above. For this would lead to the result that, as soon as either of the bodies has cooled, ever so slightly, the radia- tion in the enclosure should become that belonging to a black body of a slightly higher temperature than before, and thus the plates would be furnished with radiation which they could at once absorb, and be gradually heated to their former temperature.

26. A very recent speculation, founded by Boltzmann? upon some ideas due to Bartoli, is closely connected in principle with that just mentioned, This speculation is highly interesting, because it leads to an expression for the amount of the whole radiation from a black body in terms of its absolute temperature. Boltzmann's investigation may be put, as follows, in an exceedingly simple form. It was pointed out by Clerk Maxwell, as a result of his electro-magnetic theory of light, that radiation falling on the surface of a body must produce a certain pressure. It is easy to see (most simply by the analogy of the 'virial equation, MECHANICS, vol. xv. p. 719) that the measure of the pressure per square unit on the surface of an impervi- ous enclosure, in which there is thermal equilibrium, must be one-third of the whole energy of radiation per cubic unit of the enclosed space. We may now consider a re- versible engine conveying heat from one black body to another at a different temperature, by operations alternately of the isothermal and the adiabatic character (THERMO- DYNAMICS), which consist in altering the volume of the en-

1 Prog, ROS. E,, Vii. 1870, p. 206. 2 Brit. Assoc. Report, 1871. 3 Wiedemann's Ann., 1884, xxii.

|

RA D—

closure, with or without one of the bodies present in it. For one of the fundamental equations gives

dE ‘ Cp

ae ae” where ¢ is the absolute temperature. If / be the pressure on unit surface, 3f is the energy per unit of volume, and this equation becomes

we

at

Hence it follows at once that, if the fundamental assump- tions be granted, the energy of radiation of a black body per unit volume of the enclosure is proportional to the fourth power of the absolute temperature. It is not a little remarkable that Stefan! had some years previously shown that this very expression agrees more closely with the experimental determinations of Dulong and Petit than does their own empirical formula.

27. It would appear from this expression that, if an impervious enclosure containing only one black body in thermal equilibrium is separated into two parts by an impervious partition, any alteration of volume of the part not containing the black body will produce a corresponding alteration of the radiation in its interior. It will now correspond to that of a second black body, whose tempera- ture is to that of the first in the inverse ratio of the fourth roots of the volumes of the detached part of the enclosure.

28. Lecher? has endeavoured to show that the distri- bution of energy among the constituents of the radiation from a black body does not alter with temperature. Such a result, though apparently inconsistent with many well- known facts, appears to be consistent with and to harmonize many others. It accords perfectly with the notion of the absolute uniformity (statistical) of the energy in an en- closure, and its being exactly that of a black body, even if the contents (as in § 25) consist of a body which can radiate one particular quality of light alone. And if this be the case it will also follow that the intensity of radiation of any one wave-length by any one body in a given state depends on the temperature in exactly the same way as does the whole radiation from a black body. Unfor- tunately this last deduction does not accord with Melloni’s results ; at least the discrepance from them would appear to be somewhat beyond what could fairly be set down to error of experiment. But it is in thorough accordance with the

common assumption (§ 14) that the percentage absorption of any particular radiation does not depend on the temperature of the source. The facts of fluorescence and phosphorescence, involving the radiation of visible rays at temperatures where even a black body is invisible, have not yet been dealt with under any general theory of radiation ; though Stokes has pointed out a dynamical explanation of a thoroughly satisfactory character, they remain outside the domain of Carnot's principle. (Pp. G. T.)

RADIOMETER. See Pyeumarics, vol. xix. p. 249.

RADISH. See Horticutturg, vol. xii. pp. 286, 287.

RADNOR, an inland county of South Wales, is situated between 52° 5' and 52° 25' N. lat. and between 2° 57' and 3° 25' W. long., and is bounded E. by Hereford and Shropshire, N. by Montgomery, W. by Cardigan, and §. by Brecknock. Its greatest length from north to south is about 30 miles, and its greatest breadth from east to west a 33 miles. The area is 276,552 acres, or 432 square miles,

The greater part of the surface of the county is hilly, and the centre is occupied by a mountainous tract called Radnor Forest, running nearly east and west, its highest summit reaching 2163 feet. Towards the south and south-east the hills are much less elevated and the valleys

1 Sitzungsber. d. k. Ak. in Wien, 1879.

- *Wiedemann's Ann., 1882, xvii.*

widen out into considerable plains, abounding with small rivulets. The hills for the most part present smooth and rounded. outlines, but the valley of the Wye is famed for its beauty. The higher ranges are covered with heath, but there is good pasturage on the lower slopes. The smaller elevations are frequently clothed with wood. The prevailing strata are the Lower Silurian rocks; but in the east there is a considerable area occupied by Old Red Sand- stone, and throughout the county felspathic ash and green- stone are found, while near Old Radnor there is a large patch of Silurian limestone.

Lead and copper are said to exist, but not in quantities sufficient to pay the working. There are saline, sulphurous, and chalybeate wells at Llan-drindod. The Wye enters the county in the north-west, 18 miles from its source in Plinlimmon, and flowing in a south-easterly direction divides it from Brecknock, until it bends north-east and reaches Hay, after which it for some distance forms the boundary with Hereford. Its prin- cipal tributary is the Ithon, which flows south-west and joins it 7 miles above Builth. The Teme, flowing south- east, forms the northern boundary of the county with Shropshire, The Llugw, rising in the northern part of the county, flows south-east into Hereford, a little below Presteigne.

Agriculture.—The climate is somewhat damp, and in the spring cold and ungenial. The greater part of the county is suitable only for pasturage, but there is some good arable land in the valleys in the southern and south-eastern districts, which produces excellent crops of turnips, oats, and Welsh barley, the soil being chiefly open shaly clay, although in the east there is an admixture of red sandstone soils. In 1884 there were 156,628 acres, or about five- ninths of the total area, under cultivation, and of these 114,242 acres, or about four-fifths, were in permanent pasture. Of the 21,356 acres under eorn crops 12,245 acres, or more than half, were under oats, whilst wheat oeeupied 5200 aeres and barley 3853. Green crops occupied only 7100 acres, of which 1107 were under potatoes and 5682 under turnips. Horses numbered 9249 (3755 used solely for agricultural purposes), cattle 30,917 (10,223 cows and heifers in milk or in ealf), and sheep as many as 244,771. The inhabitants are dependent almost solely on agriculture, the manufactures being confined ehiefly to coarse cloth, stockings, and flannel for home use.

Railways. —The eounty is intersected by several lines: the Central Wales Railway ruus south-west from Knighton to Llan- dovery ; another line runs south-eastwards by Rhayaderand Builth and joins the Hereford line, which passes by Hay and Talgarth ; while another branch line passes by Kineton to New Radnor,

Administration and Population.— Radnor eomprises six hun- dreds, ~~but contains no municipal borough. It has one court of quarter sessions and is divided into six petty and special sessional divisions. The aucient borough~~

~~of Radnor (population 2005) is governed by the provisions of an old charter, and has a commission of the peaee. The connty contains sixty civil parishes with part of one other, and is partly in the diocese of St David's and partly in that of Hereford. It returns one member to the House of Com~~ mons. The population in 1871 was 25,430 and in 1881 it was 23,528, of whom 11,939 were males and 11,589 females. The number of inhabited houses was 4775. The average number of persons to an acre was 0°09 and of aeres to a person 11°75.

History and Antiquities.—During the Roman occupation the district was included in the province of Siluria. The Roman road from Chester to Caermarthen entered the northern extremity of the county near Newtown and, following the valley of the Ithon, crossed the Wye and entered Brecknockshire near the town of Builth. There are remains of a Roman station at Cym near Llan- drindod, and at Wapley Hill near Presteigne there is a very good example of a British camp. The district was afterwards included ehiefly in Powis, but partly in Gwent and partly in Feryllwge. It was made a county by Henry VIII. Anciently it was called Maesy- fedd. The name Radnor is also of very great antiquity, and occurs in the Cambrian annals as early as 1196. There are no ancient castles elaiming special notice, and the only ecclesiastical ruin of importance is that of the abbey of Cwm-Hir, founded for the Cis- tercians in 1143, and occupying a romantic situation in the vale of Clywedog. A considerable portion of the ancient building has bcen used as materials for the adjoining modern mansion.

RADOM, a government of Poland, occupying a trian- gular space between the Vistula and the Pilica and bounded on the N. by Warsaw and Siedlce, on the E. by Lublin, on the 8. by Austrian Galicia and Kielce, and on the W.

by Piotrkéw. The area is 4765 square miles. Its southern part stretches over the hilly plateau of Poland, which consists of short ridges of hills from 800 to 2000 feet in height, intersected by deep valleys, and is known as the Sandomir Heights. These heights are thickly wooded ; the valleys, running west and east and watered by several tributaries of the Vistula, are

excellently adapted for agri- culture. Farther north in its central portion the contour of the government is level, the soil fertile, and the surface, which is diversified here and there with wood, is further broken up by occasional spurs, 800 feet in height, of the Lysa Géra Mountains. The northern districts, where the Pilica joins the Vistula, consist of low flat tracts with undefined valleys, exposed to frequent floods and covered over large areas with marshes; the basin of the Pilica, notorious for its unhealthiness, is throughout a low marshy plain. Devonian, Carboniferous, Permian, and Triassic deposits appear in the southern plateau, Chalk and Jurassic in the middle, and Tertiary in the north. Wide tracts are covered with Glacial deposits, —the Scandinavian erratics reaching as far south as Ilza; these last in their turn are covered with widely spreading post-Glacial lacus- trine deposits. The Vistula skirts the government on the south and east and is an important means of com- munication, several hundreds of light boats (galary) descending the river every year, while steamers ply as far up as Sedomierz. The Sedomierz district is occasionally exposed to disastrous inundations of the river. The tribu- taries of the Vistula (Radomka, Kamienna, and several others) are but short and small, while those of the Pilica are mere streams sluggishly flowing amidst marshes.

The population (644,830 in 1882) is Polish for the most part, one- seventh being Jews. According to creed the proportious are— Roman Catholic 84:0 per cent., Jewish 14°6, Protestant 1:3, aud Greek 0°1 per cent. The chief occupation of the inhabitants is agriculture, the principal crops being wheat, oats, rye, potatoes, and beetroot (for sugar). Corn is exported and potatoes largely used for distillation. In 1879 there were 148 manufacturing estab- lishments (197 in 1883), employing 1708 hands, with an aggregate jap egos of 2,121,000 roubles (£212,000), the more important being tanneries, flour-mills, sugar-works, and several machinery and iron-works. These last are suffering, however, from want of wood-fuel, and many of them have recently been closed. Trade is not very extensive, the only channel of commerce being the Vistula. There is no lack of philanthropic institutions within the govern- ment (most of them founded early in this century), but never- theless the sanitary condition of tlre people is deplorable. Plica polonica, which is endemic in the government of Radom as well as in that of Kielee, is widely diffused, no fewer than 15,000 per-

sons suffering from it, and cognate maladies, such as goitre, scabies, and tinea capitis, are also widely prevalent.

The educational institutions include two lycées or gymnasia and two progymnasia (all at Radoin), with 813 male and 287 female pupils, a normal school, a theological seminary at Sandomir, and 170 primary schools (112 in villages), with 8465 scholars.

The government is divided into eight districts, the chief towns of which are —Radom, Iza (2750), Konsk (6275), Kozienice (5690), Opatow (5200), Opoczno (5585), and Sedomierz or Sandomir (6265, or 14,710 including suburbs). Zavihvost (8700) is an important custom-house. Ostrowiec (5290), Staszow (6910), Przedborz (6345), and Szidlowiec (5290) have municipal institutions.

RADOM, capital of the above government, situated on the Mleczna, a tributary of the Radomka, 65 miles south from Warsaw, is one of the best-built provincial towns of Poland. Lublin Street has a number of fine shops, and there are two well-kept public gardens. The permanent population in 1882 was 12,970, half of whom were Jews, and the town is rapidly growing towards the south-east. Though an old town, Radom has no interesting antiquities. The church of St Wlaclaw, contemporary with the founda- tion of the town, was transformed by the Austrians into a storehouse, and subsequently by the Russian Government into a military prison. The old castle is in ruins, and the old Bernardine monastery is now used as barracks. The manufactures are unimportant, but trade has been lately increasing.

RA D—RA E

Radom, which is mentioned in historical documents of the year 1216, at that time occupied the site of what is now Old Radom. New Radom was founded in 1340 by Casimir the Great. Here Jadwiga was elected queen of Poland in 1382, and here too in 1401 the first act relating to the union of Poland with Lithuania was signed ; the "seim"' of 1505, where the organic law of Poland was sworn by the king, was also held at Radom. Several great fires, and still more the Swedish War, were the ruin of the old city. After the third partition of Poland it fell under Austrian rule ; later on, in

1809, it became capital of the Radom department of the grand-duchy of Warsaw. In 1815 it was annexed to Russia and became chief town of the province of Sandomir.

RAEBURN, Sir Henry (1756-1823), portrait-painter, was born at Stockbridge, a suburb of Edinburgh, on the 4th of March 1756, the son of a manufacturer of the city. He was early left an orphan. Being placed in Heriot's Hospital, he received there the elements of a sound education, and at the age of fifteen was apprenticed to a goldsinith in Edinburgh. Here he had some little oppor- tunity for the practice of the humbler kinds of art, and various pieces of jewellery, mourning rings and the like, adorned with minute drawings on ivory by his hand, are still extant. Soon he took to the production of care- fully finished miniatures; and, meeting with success and patronage, he extended his practice to oil-painting, being all the while quite self-taught. The worthy goldsmith his master watched the progress of his pupil with interest, gave him every encouragement, and introduced him to David Martin, who had been the favourite assistant of Allan Ramsay junior, and was now the leading portrait- painter in Edinburgh. Raeburn received considerable assistance from Martin, and was especially aided by the loan of portraits to copy. Soon the young painter had gained sufficient skill to render it advisable that he should devote himself exclusively to art. When in his twenty-second year he was asked to paint the portrait of a young lady whom he had previously observed and admired when he was sketching from nature in the fields. She was the daughter of Peter Edgar of Bridgelands and widow of Count Leslie. The lady was speedily fascinated by the handsome and intellectual young artist, and in a month she became his wife, bringing him an ample fortune. After the approved fashion of artists of the time, it was resolved that Raeburn should visit Italy, and he accord- ingly started with his wife. In London he was kindly received by Sir Joshua Reynolds, who gave him excellent advice as to his study in Rome, especially recommending to his attention the works of Michelangelo. He also offered him more substantial pecuniary aid, which was declined as unneeded; but Raeburn carried with him to Italy many valuable introductions from the president of the Academy. In Rome he made the acquaintance of Gavin Hamilton, of Batoni, and of Byers. For the advice of the last-named he used to acknowledge himself greatly indebted, and particularly for the recommendation that "he should never copy an object from memory, but,

from the principal figure to the minutest accessory, have it placed before him." After two years of study in Italy he returned to Edinburgh in 1787, where he began a most successful career as a portrait-painter. In that year he executed an admirable seated portrait of the second Lord President Dundas,

Of his earlier portraiture we have interesting examples in the bust-likeness of Mrs Johnstone of Baldovie and in the three-quarter-length of Dr James Hutton, works which, if they are somewhat timid and tentative in handling and wanting in the trenchant brush-work and assured mastery of subsequent productions, are full of delicacy and char- acter. The portraits of John Clerk, Lord Eldin, and of Principal Hill of St Andrews belong to a somewhat later period. Raeburn was fortunate in the time in which he practised portraiture. Sir Walter Scott, Blair, Mackenzie,

Woodhouselee, Robertson, Home, Ferguson, and Dugald Stewart were resident in Edinburgh, and they were all, along with a host of others less celebrated, immortalized on the painter's canvas. Of his fully matured manner we could have no finer examples than his own portrait and that of the Rev. Sir Henry Moncreiff Wellwood, the bust of Dr Wardrop of Torbane Hill, the two full-lengths of Adam Rolland of Gask and that of William Macdonald of St Martin's. It was commonly believed that Raeburn was less successful in his female than in his male portraits, but the exquisite full-length of his wife, the smaller like- ness of Mrs R. Scott Moncrieff in the Scottish National Gallery, and that of Mrs Robert Bell are sufficient to prove that he could on occasion portray all the grace and beauty of the gentler sex.

Raeburn spent his life in Edinburgh, rarely visiting the metropolis, and then only for brief periods, thus preserving his own sturdy individuality, if he missed the opportunity of engrafting on it some of the fuller refinement and delicacy of the London portraitists. His leisure was em- ployed in athletic sports, in his garden, and in architectural and mechanical pursuits, and so varied were the interests that filled his life that his sitters used to say of him, "You would never take him for a painter till he seizes the brush and palette." Professional honours fell thick upon him. In 1812 he was elected

president of the Society of Artists in Edinburgh, in 1814 associate, and in the following year full member of the Royal Academy. In 1822 he was knighted by George IV. and appointed His Majesty's limner for Scotland. He died at Edinburgh on the 8th of July 1823.

In his own day the portraits of Raeburn were' excellently and voluminously engraved, especially by the last members of the great school of English mezzotint. In 1876 a collection of over 300 of his works was brought together in the Royal Scottish Academy galleries ; in the following year a series of twelve of his finest portraits was included in the winter exhibition of the Royal Academy, London ; and a volume of photographs from his paintings has been edited by Dr John Brown.

Raeburn possessed all the necessary requirements of a popular and successful portrait-painter. He had the power of produeing a telling and forcible likeness; his productions are distinguished by breadth of effect, by admirable force of handling, by execution of the swiftest and most resolute sort. Wilkie has recorded that, while travelling in Spain and studying the works of Velazquez, the brush-work of that master reminded him constantly of the "square touch" of Raeburn. But the portraits of Velazquez are unsurpassable examples of tone as well as of handling, and it is in the former quality that Raeburn is distinctly wanting. The colour of his portraits is sometimes crnde and out of relation, inclining to the use of positive and definite local igments, and too little perceptive of the changeful subtilties a modifications of atmospheric effect. His draperies frequently consist of little more than two colours—the local hue of the fabric and the blaek whieh, more or less graduated, expresses its shadows and modelling. In his flesh, too, he wants—in all but his very best productions— the delicate refinements of colouring which distinguish the works of the great English portrait-painters. His faces, with all their excellent truth of form and splendid vigour of handling, are often hard and bricky in hue.

RAFF, Josepx Joacim (1822-1882), composer and orchestral conductor, was born near Zurich on 27th May 1822 and educated chiefly at Schwyz. Here, under the care of the Jesuit fathers, he soon became an excellent classical and mathematical scholar, but received scarcely any instruction in his favourite art, in which, nevertheless, he made extraordinary progress

through sheer force of natural genius, developed by persevering study which no external obstacles could induce him to discontinue. So successful were his unaided efforts that, when in 1843 he sent some MSS. to Mendelssohn, that warm encourager of youthful talent felt justified in at once recommending him to Breitkopf & Hirtel of Leipsic, who published a large selection of his early works. Soon after this he became acquainted with Liszt, who gave him much generous

PAS)

encouragement. He first became personally acquainted with Mendelssohn at Cologne in 1846, and gave up all his other engagements for the purpose of following him to Leipsic, but his intention was frustrated by the great composer's death in 1847. After this cruel disappoint- ment he remained for some time at Cologne, where his attention was alternately devoted to composition and to the preparation of critiques for the well-known periodical Cacilia. Thus far he must be regarded as, in every sense of the word, a self-taught artist; but he felt 'the need of systematic instruction so deeply that, retiring for a time from public life, he entered at Stuttgart upon a long course of severe and uninterrupted study, and with so great success that in 1850 he appeared before the world in the character of an accomplished and highly-cultivated musician. Raff now settled for a time in Weimar in order to be near Liszt. Hans von Bitlow had already brought him into notice by playing his Concertstiick for pianoforte and orchestra in public, and the favour with which this fine work was everywhere received encouraged him to attempt a greater one. During his stay in Stutt- gart he had begun the composition of an opera entitled Konig Alfred, and had good hope of securing its perform- ance at Dresden; but the political troubles with which Germany was then overwhelmed rendered its production in the Saxon capital impossible. At Weimar he was more fortunate. In due time Kinig Aljred was produced there under Liszt's able direction with complete success; it is still frequently performed at the court theatre, as is also his second opera, Dame Kobold, written for the same theatre in 1870. His third opera, Samson, has not yet, we believe, been publicly represented.

Raff remained at Weimar until 1856, when he obtained a large clentéle at Wiesbaden as a teacher of the pianoforte. In 1859 he married Doris Genast,

an actress of high repute, and thenceforward devoted himself with renewed energy to the work of composition, displaying an inexhaustible fertility of invention tempered by an amount of technical skill which stamped even his lightest works with the dignity to which the union of natural talent with high artistic cultivation can alone give birth. He resided chiefly at Wiesbaden till 1877, when he was appointed director of the Hoch-Conservatorium at Frankfort, an office which he retained until his death, 25th June 1882.

Raff's compositions are almost innumerable. More than 200 have been published, ineluding ten symphonies—undoubtedly his finest works—quartets, concertos, sonatas, songs, and examples of nearly every known variety of style; yet he never repeats himself. Notwithstanding his strong love for the romantic school, he is never guilty of extravagance, and, if in his minor works he is sometimes a little commonplace, he never descends to vulgarity. His symphonies Lenore and Jn IValde are truly wonderful examples of musical painting, and replete with poetry in every bar.

RAFFLES, Str Tuomas Sramrorp (1781-1826), the son of a captain in the West India trade, was born at sea off the coast of Jamaica on 5th July 1781. Returning with his mother to England, he was placed in a boarding- school at Hammersmith, where he remained till the age of fourteen, when he entered the East India Honse as an extra clerk. While employed there he occupied his leisure hours in particularly studying languages, for which he possessed great facility. In 1805 the directors of the India House having resolved to found a new trading settlement at Penang, Raffles was appointed assistant- secretary, and on his voyage out he acquired the Malay language. Owing to the illness of the chief secretary, he soon had to undertake the entire adniinistrative labour of the new government. In 1808 he had to visit Malacca to recruit his shattered strength ; here he enjoyed large opportunity of mingling with a very varied population, and, in conlpany with the two Orientalists Marsden and

Leyden, he began his elaborate researches into the history, laws, and literature of the Hindu and Malay races. In zoology he took special interest, and on his return to England became founder and first president of the Zoolo- gical Society. While in Calcutta in 1809, Raffles sug- gested to Lord Minto, then governor-general of India, the desirableness of wresting Java from the French. The governor-general took up the idea with vigour ; a fleet of ninety ships dropped anchor before Batavia in August 1811, and ina short time the conquest of the island was effected. Raffles was made lieutenant-general of the new territory, and resolved to give to the island a pure and upright administration, There were three sources of abuse to eradicate—the revenue system, the system of police and public justice, and the slave trade. Ina period of only five years Raftles had almost cffocted his design ; his popularity was secured, and the revenue was eight times larger than it had been under the Dutch. The policy of some of his measures being, however, considered doubtful by the home authorities, he was recalled in 1816, but his conduct was approved. He published a valuable and well-illustrated History of Java, in 2 vols. 4to, 1817.

Having received knighthood, Sir Stamford Raffles set out for Suniatra as lieutenant-governor of Bencoolen, arriving in March 1818, and immediately recommenced the work of reform. Jn 1819 he induced the marquis of Hastings to annex Singapore. He again visited Singapore, his 'political child," in 1822, and occupied himself for nearly a year in laying out the new city, and in estab- lishing its constitution as a free port. Java had been given up to the Dutch shortly after Sir Stamford left it, and now Bencoolen was granted to them in exchange for Malacca. On setting sail for England from Sumatra in February 1824 the ship took fire and the crew and pass- engers were with difficulty saved. The loss to Sir Stam- ford was beyond all repair. The whole of his drawings, all his collections in botany and zoology, all his multi- tudinous papers and manuscripts, fell a prey to the flames, his pecuniary loss amounting to more than £20,000. During one of his excursions into the interior of Sumatra, in company with Dr Arnold, he came upon the largest and most extraordinary of known flowers, the Raflesia Arnoldi (see Parasitism, vol. xviii. p. 265). In 1820 he sent home a

large collection of preserved animals, now in the museum of the London Zoological Society, described in the Zransactions of the Linnean Society. He died of apoplexy at his house near London on 5th July 1826.

RAFN, Carn Curistian (1795-1864), Danish arche- ologist, was born in Brahesborg, Fiinen, on 16th January 1795 and died at Copenhagen on 20th October 1864. He is chiefly known in connexion with the controversy as to the question of the discovery of America by the Norsemen. (See AmERIcA, vol. i. p. 706.)

RAGATZ, or RaGaz, a watering-place in Switzerland, in the canton of St Gall, with a station on the railway to Coire, 64 miles south-east of Zurich, stands 1700 feet above the sea at the mouth of the magnificent gorge through which the impetuous Tamina forces its way to the Rhine; its baths are supplied with mineral water from the hot springs of Pfaffers, which issue from the right side of the ravine 24 miles higher up. As the tourist centre for one of the most picturesque districts of Switzer- land, Ragatz has greatly increased since the middle of the century. It had then only 650 inhabitants; in 1870 there were 1825, and in 1880 1996, while the annual number of visitors is about 50,000. In the churchyard is the grave of Schelling, who died at Ragatz in 1854. Ragatz originally belonged to the abbots of the Benedictine monastery of Pfaffers (713-1838); their residence became in 1840 the "Hof Ragatz" hotel, and in 1868 the whole

property, which had been seized by the state in 1838, passed into private hands. The Swiss defeated the Austrians at Ragatz in 1446.

RAGLAN, Fitzroy James Henry Somerset, Baron (1788-1855), English general, was the eighth and youngest son of the fifth duke of Beaufort by Elizabeth, daughter of Admiral the Hon. Edward Boscawen, and was born on 30th September 1788. He entered the army in 1804. In 1807 he was attached to the Hon. Sir Arthur Paget's embassy to Turkey, and the same year he was selected to serve on the staff of Sir Arthur Wellesley in the expedi- tion to Copenhagen. In the following year he accom- panied the same general in a like capacity to Portugal, and during the whole of the Peninsular War was at his right hand, first as aide-de-camp and then as

military secretary. He specially distinguished himself at the storm- ing of Badajoz, being the first to mount the breach, and it was to him that the governor delivered up his sword. During the short period of the Bourbon rule in 1814 and 1815 he was secretary to the English embassy at Paris. On the renewal of the war he again became aide-de-camp and military secretary to the duke of Wellington. At Waterloo he lost his right arm by a shot, but he quickly gained the facility of writing with his left hand, and on the conclusion of the war resumed his duties as secretary to the embassy at Paris. From 1818 to 1826 he sat in the House of Commons as member for Truro. In 1819 he was appointed secretary to the duke of Wellington as master- general of the ordnance, and from 1827 till the death of the duke in 1852 was military secretary to him as com- mander-in-chief. He was then appointed master-general of the ordnance, and shortly afterwards was raised to the House of Lords as Baron Raglan. In 1854 he was appointed to the command of the English troops sent to the Crimea. Here the advantage of his training under the duke of Wellington was seen in the soundness of his military tactics, but the trying winter campaign in the Crimea also brought into prominence defects perhaps traceable to his long connexion with the formalities and uniform regulations of military offices in peace time. At the same time the hampering influence of a divided com- mand must be taken into account, and it ought not to be forgotten that, if his advice had been adopted by the French at the beginning, Sebastopol would very probably have fallen in a few weeks after the landing of the allies. His suggestion was to march straight upon the north side of Sebastopol, but after the battle of Alma on 20th September the plan was abandoned, and the south side was reached by the desperate expedient of a perilous flank march. For the hardships and sufferings of the English soldiers in the terrible Crimean winter owing to a failure in the commissariat, both as regards food and clothing, Lord Raglan and his staff were at the time severely cen- sured by the press and the Government ; but, while Lord Raglan was possibly to blame in representing matters in a too sanguine light, it afterwards appeared that the chief neglect rested with the home authorities. The monotony of the siege was broken by the battles of Balaclava on 26th October and of Inkermann on 5th November, in which the accurate and rapid decision of Lord Raglan changed impending disasters into brilliant victories. During the trying winter of 1854-55 the suffering he was compelled to witness, the censures, in great part unjust,

which he had to endure, and all the manifold anxieties of the siege seriously undermined his health, and he died of dysentery on 28th June 1855,

See Kinglake's History of the Invasion of the Crimea.

RAGMAN ROLLS, the name given to the collection of instruments by which. the nobility and gentry of Scotland were compelled to subscribe allegiance to Edward IJ. of

England between the conference of Norham in May 1291 and the final award in favour of Baliol in November 1292, and again in 1296. Of the former of these records two copies were preserved in the chapter-house at Westminster (now in the Record Office, London), and it has been printed by Rymer (/edera, ii. 542). Another copy, preserved originally in the Tower of London, is now also in the Record Office. The latter record, containing the various acts of homage and fealty extorted by Edward from Baliol and others in the course of his progress through Scotland in the summer of 1296 and in August at the parliament of Berwick, was published by Prynne from the copy in the Tower and now in the Record Office. Both records were printed by the Bannatyne Club in 1834, The derivation of the word " ragman " has never been satisfactorily explained, but various guesses as to its meaning and a list of examples of its use for legal instruments both in England and Scot- land will be found in the preface to the Bannatyne Club's volume, and in Jamieson's Dictionary, s.v. "Ragman." The name of " Ragman" has been sometimes confined to the record of 1296, of which an account is given in Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland preserved in the Public Record Office, London (1884), vol. ii, Introd., p. xxiv. ; and as to the seals see p. lili. and appendix.

RAGUSA (Slavonic Dubrounik, Turkish Paprovnik), a city on the east coast of the Adriatic, for many centuries an independent republic, now at the head of a district in the province of Dalmatia in Austria-Hungary. It is built close to the sea at the foot of the bare limestone mass of Monte Sergio, on which stands an unfinished Fort Impérial erected by the French. In front lies the island of Lacroma, the traditional landing-place of Cceur-de-Lion. Several ancient stone-built forts—San Lorenzo (11th cen- tury), Leverono

(16th), &c.—defend the harbour, and the city is fenced in with lofty walls. The main street runs in a narrow valley between the mountain and a seaward ridge ; the valley was up till the 13th century a channel of the sea, and the seaward ridge was the rocky island of Lavve or Ragusa proper, opposite which lay among its pine trees the Slavonic settlement of Dubrovnik. Though still a fine street, this corso is not so imposing as before its palatial mansions were overthrown by the earthquake of 1667. It contains a 15th-century cistern, a church (Del Redentore) erected after the earthquake of 1536 to avert similar catastrophes, and a Franciscan monastery ; and in the piazza off its southern extremity are the Palazzo Rettorale, or residence of the "rectors" of the republic (1435-52), the old custom-house and mint, completed in 1520, and the Torre del Orologio, with its curious clock. The "palace" is a marvellous specimen of late Romanesque influence, especially famous for the six columns of its fagade and the alchemist group with which one of the capitals is decorated ; and the custom-house has also a fine Roman- esque element in its style. The cathedral (dedicated to the Virgin Mary, though the patron saint of the city is St Blasius, whose effigy perpetually occurs on its coins, fortifications, and churches) is a building in the Italian taste of the 18th century. Ragusa can never have been a large city. In the 16th century it is said to have contained 30,000 or 40,000 inhabitants ; in 1881 it had only 7245, and its commune, with its fifteen additional villages, 10,936. The harbour, once one of the great ports of southern Europe, is altogether too small for modern requirements, in spite of the new breakwater constructed in 1873 to protect it from the south-west winds. From 400 to 600 vessels (mostly under 50 tons burden) enter yearly. The neighbouring harbour of Gravosa (Slav Grwuz; population 677) is the real port of Ragusa as far as steam- boat traffic is concerned. The staple trade is that of oil ; but the whole supply is sent to the Trieste market.

221

Ragusan Malmsey, once famous, has disappeared before the vine-disease since 1852.

The history of Ragusa has been thus summarized by Mr Free- man :—" Those hills, the slopes of whieh begin in the streets of the eity, once feneed

in a ledge of Hellenie land from the native barbarians of Illyrieum. Then they feneed in a ledge of Roman land from the Slavonie invader. Lastly they still fence in a ledge of Christian land from the dominion of the infidel." The eity was founded on a roeky island by Roman Christian refugees from Epidaurus (now Ragusa Vecchia, 675 inhabitants), in the middle, say some, of the 3d century after Christ ; and in the middle of the 7th century it was strengthened by other refugees from Salona, destroyed by the Slavs. In course of time a Slavic settlement was ineorporated within its walls; and thus by language and sympathies it became a link between two great eivilizations. Ragusa! maintained its independence against all comers partly by war but more by diplomaey. In the 9th eentury it more than onee repulsed the Saracens, and in the 10th defended itself against Venice, the pirates of the Narenta, Samuel (ezar of the Bulgarians), and the emperor Otho; in the 11th century it was drawn by its alliance with Robert Guiseard into a war with Byzantium and Veniee, and in the 12th eentury fought with the ban of Bosnia and with Stephen Nemanya of Servia, who twice invested the eity. But its policy was generally peaceful. To refugees of all nations, even to those who had been its own bitter foes, it afforded asylum ; and by means of treaty and tribute it gradually worked its way to a position of mereantile power which Europe eould hardly parallel. A eompact which it made with the Turkish ruler at Broussa in 1370 was renewed by Bajazet in the 15th eentury and saved the little state from the fate of her most powerful neighbours, Byzantium and Servia. By that time Ragusa had stations at Serai, Bucharest, Tirgovisee, Widdin, Rustehuk, Sophia, and Adrianople ; and her vessels were known not only in Italy, Sicily, Spain, Greece, and the Levant, but in the more northern parts of Europe. Our own language retains in the word "argosy" a relic of the carraeks of Ragusa, then known to Englishmen as Argouse, Argusa, or Aragosa. As the world widened the Ragusan merchants went farther,—to India, even, and America. But the finest vessels of their fleet were compelled to join the Spanish Armada and shared its fate ; and the eity, which had felt shocks of earthquake in 1520, 1521, 1536, and 1639, was in April 1667 laid utterly in ruins and lost a fifth of its inhabitants. "The reetor of the republie, five-sixths of the nobles, nine-tenths of the clergy, a Duteh ambassador with his suite of thirty-three on his way to Constantinople, and 6000 citizens were buried." Ragusa never quite recovered its prosperity, though it was again a busy trading town of 15,000 inhabitants when Napoleon seized it in 1806. In 1808 it was deprived of its

independence ; and by the eongress of Vienna in 1814 it was assigned to Austria. This is not the place to deseribe the remarkable literary development, Latin, Italian, and Slavonic, of whieh Ragusa was the centre in the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries, and to whieh so many of its patricians contributed ; a detailed account will be found in Pypin and Spasovieh's History of Slavic Literatures (German edition, 1880). Gondulic (Gondola) the poet and Boseovich the mathematician are leading names.

See Engel, Geschichte von Ragusa (Vienna, 1807); Makusheff, Investigations into the Historical Documents of Ragusa (in Russian, St Petersburg, 1867); Monu- menta hist. Slavorum meridionalium (Warsaw, 1864); Appendini, Notizie storico- crit. sulle antichita, &c., dei Ragusei (Ragusa, 1802-3); Sir Gardner Wilkinson, Dalmatia; A. A. Paton, The Danube and Adriatic; J. A. Evans, Thro' Bosnia and the Herzegovina, 1876; E. A. Freeman, Subject and Neighbour Lands of Venice, 1881.

RAGUSA, a city of Italy in the province of Syracuse (Sicily), 16 miles east of Vittoria and 10 north-north- west of Modica, lies on the right side of the valley of the Ragusa or Erminio (Herminius). It consists of an upper town with 24,183 inhabitants and a lower town with 6260 (1881), the two communes having a total popula- tion of 30,720. The church of Santa Maria della Scala is in part modern, but in part of considerable antiquity and interest ; and San Giorgio contains the tomb of Bernardo Caprera (ob. 1423), who tried to seize the crown of Sicily. Ragusa possesses a large cotton-factory. Stone impreg- nated with petroleum is quarried in the Grotta Oleosa in the neighbourhood, and after the oil is burned out becomes an article of export under the name of pietra nera. The city, which was destroyed by earthquake in 1693, is of con- siderable antiquity, as is proved by the numerous ancient tombs existing in the district; but whether it is to be identified with Hybla Herzea is matter of opinion.

1 The name, of unknown origin, appears as Rhaugia, Rhaugium, Rhausium, Ragusium, Lavusa, Labuda, Labusedum, &c,

RAHEL. See VARNHAGEN VON ENSE. ;

RAHWAY, a city of the United States in Union county New Jersey, 19 miles by rail south-west of New York, lies on Rahway river at the head of schooner navigation, about 4 miles above its mouth in Staten Island Sound. It is best known for its carriage-factories, but has also a wool- mill, a printing-press manufactory, a printing-house, a shirt-factory, a hunting-goods factory, &c. The popula- tion was 6258 in 1870 and 6455 in 1880. First settled in 1720 and named after Rahwack, the Indian owner of the site, Rahway was incorporated as a city in 1858.

RAI BARELI or Roy Bareitry, a district of British India, in the Rai Bareli division! of Oudh, under the jurisdiction of the leutenant-governor of the North- Western Provinces, has an area of 1738 square miles. It lies between 25° 49' and 26° 35' N. lat. and between 80° 45' and 81° 40' E. long., and is bounded on the N. by the districts of Lucknow and Bara Banki, on the E. by Sultanpur, on the 8. by Partabgarh and the Ganges, and on the W. by Unao. The general aspect of the district is slightly undulating, and the country is beauti- fully wooded ; in fact, the beauty of the country is not to be surpassed by any part of the real plain of Hindustan. The soil is remarkably fertile, and the cultivation of a high class. The principal rivers of the district are the Ganges and the Sai: the former skirts it for 54 miles and is everywhere navigable for boats of 40 tons; the latter traverses it from north-west to south-east, a dis- tance of 55 miles. Other rivers are the Basha, the Loni, and the Naiya. The indigenous products of Rai Bareli consist of several magnificent and useful timber trees, numerous kinds of grazing and thatching grasses, and a variety of rice known as "pasahi," which grows wild in many tanks and marshes ; its jungle products are lac and silk cocoons. Herds of wild cattle are to be found in the south of the district, near the Sai river, and do much harm to the crops ; nylghau are common near the Ganges, and wolves are occasionally met with in the jungles.

According to the census of 1881 Rai Bareli district contains a population of 951,905 (imales 466,906, females 484,999). By religion 874,180 are Hindus, 77,424 Mohammedans, and 123 Christians. The most numerous castes are the Ahirs (114,869), the Brahmans (113,212), and the Rajputs (70,757). Compared withother Oudh districts, the proportion of high castes is large, which is accounted for by the fact that Rai Bareli was for centuries

the seat of Hindu authority and but little controlled by the Mohammedan kings. The population is almost entirely rural, there being only three towns with a population exceeding 5000, viz., Rai Bareli (see below), Jais (11,044), and Dalmau (5367). The principal occupa- tion of the people is agriculture. Of the total area 892 square miles were in 1882 returned as cultivated, 432 as cultivable, and 414 square miles as uncultivable. The greater portion of the cultivated area is two-crop land. The principal crops are rice, wheat, gram, arhar, and pease. In years of scarcity Rai Bareli is worse off than other districts, having no railway and only some 56 miles of water communication along its border. On the other hand, its masonry wells afford it a greater assurance against famine ; its drainage is superior to that of other districts ; it suffers comparatively less from floods; and its area of artificial irrigation is so large that absolute famine ought to be almost unknown. The average rainfall of the district is 37 inches; the rainfall is, however, very capricious and often deficient in the very months when it is most necded for agricultural purposes. Although possessing no railway communication, the district is well opened up by roads. Its gross revenue in 1882 was £153,072, of which £129,841 was derived from the land-tax. There are little trade and few manufactures, except cloth-weaving for local use, the making of brass and copper utensils, and glass ware.

_ RAI BARELI or Roy Barerty, town and administra- tive headquarters of the above district, is situated on the

Rai Bareli division comprises the three districts of Rai Bareli, Sultanpur, and Partabgarh, and contains an area of 4882 square miles, with a population (1881) of 2,756,864 (males 1,362,761, females 1,394,103). The great majority of the people are Hindus, of whom there are 2,493,536; the Mohammedans number 262,892 and the Christians 226,

banks of the Sai in 26° 14’ N. lat. and 81° 17’ E. long. It was founded by the Bhars, who called it Bharauli, but it was subsequently corrupted into Bareli. The prefix “Rai” is either derived from Rahi, a village near the town, or from the fact of its having been long in the possession of a Kayasth family bearing the name of Rai. The population of the town (1881) is 11,781 (males 5970, females 5811). It possesses many architectural features, chief

of which is a spacious and strong fort erected in 1403, and constructed of bricks 2 feet long by 1 foot thick and 14 wide. Among its ancient buildings are the magnificent palace and tomb of Nawab Jahan Khan, the governor in the time of Aurangzeb, and four fine mosques.

RAIKES, Roserr (1735-1811), the founder of Sunday schools, was the son of Robert Raikes, a printer in Gloucester and proprietor of the Gloucester Journal, and was born on 14th September 1735. On the death of his father in 1757 he succeeded him in the business, which he continued to conduct till 1802. Along with some others he started a Sunday school at Gloucester in 1780, and on his giving publicity to the enterprise in the columns of his journal the notice was copied into the London papers and awakened considerable attention. For nearly thirty years he continued actively engaged in the promotion of his undertaking, and he lived to witness its wide extension throughout England. He died on 5th April 1811. Among various accounts of the life and work of Raikes mention may be made of that by P. M. Eastman, 1880.

RAIL (German Ralle, French Rale, Low Latin Rallus), originally the English name of two birds, distinguished from one another by a prefix as Land-Rail and Water-Rail, but latterly applied in a much wider sense to all the species which are included in the Family Rallidx of Ornithology.

The Lanp-Rar, also very commonly known as the Corn-Crake, and sometimes as the Daker-Hen, is the Rallus crex of Linneus and Cres pratensis of recent authors. Its monotonous grating cry, which has given it its common name in several languages, is a familiar sound throughout the summer nights in many parts of the British Islands ; but the bird at that season very seldom shews itself, except when the mower lays bare its nest, the owner of which, if it escape beheading by the scythe, may be seen for an instant before it disappears into the friendly covert of the still standing grass. In early autumn the partridge-shooter not unfrequently flushes it from a clover- field or tangled hedgerow ; and, as it rises with apparent labour and slowly flies away to drop into the next place of concealment, if it fall not to his gun, he wonders how so weak-winged a creature can ever make its way to the shores if not to the interior of Africa, whither it is almost certainly bound ; for, with comparatively few individual exceptions,

the Land-Rail is essentially migratory —nay more than that, it is the Ortygometra of classical authors ——supposed by them to lead the Quam (supra, p. 146) on its voyages—and in the course of its wanderings has now been known to reach the coast of Greenland, and several times that of North America, to say nothing of Bermuda, in every instance we may believe asa straggler from Europe or Barbary. The Land-Rail needs but a brief description. It looks about as big as a Partridge, but on examination its appearance is found to be very deceptive, and it will hardly ever weigh more than half as much. The plum- age above is of a tawny brown, the feathers being longi- tudinally streaked with blackish brown; beneath it is of a yellowish white ; but the flanks are of a light chestnut. The species is very locally distributed, and in a way for which there is at present no accounting. In some dry upland and corn-growing districts it is plentiful; in others, of apparently the same character, it but rarely occurs ; and

|

Early wooden tram- ways,

RAI—RATI

the same may be said in regard to low-lying marshy meadows, in most of which it is in season always to be heard, while in others having a close resemblance to them itis never met with. ‘ The nest is on the ground, generally in long grass, and therein from nine to eleven eggs are commonly laid. ‘These are of a cream-colour, spotted and blotched with light red and grey. The young when hatched are thickly clothed with black down, as is the case in nearly all species of the Family.

The WaATER-RaIL, locally known as the Skiddy or Bill- cock, is the Kallus aquaticus of Ornithology, and seems to be less abundant than the preceding, though that is in some measure due to its frequenting places into which from their swampy nature men do not often intrude. Having a general resemblance to the Land-Rail,! it can be in a moment distinguished by its partly red and much longer bill, and the darker coloration of its plumage—the upper parts being of an olive brown with black streaks, the breast and belly of a sooty grey, and the flanks dull black barred with white. Its geographical distribution is very wide, extending from Iceland (where it is

said to preserve its existence during winter by resorting to the hot springs) to China; and though it inhabits Northern India, Lower Egypt, and Barbary, it seems not to pass beyond the tropical line. It never affects upland districts as does the Land- Rail, but always haunts wet marshes or the close vicinity of water. Its love-note is a loud and harsh cry, not continually repeated as is that of the Land-Rail, but uttered at considerable intervals and so suddenly as to have been termed "explosive." Besides this, which is peculiar to the cock-bird, it has a croaking call that is frog-like. The eggs resemble those of the preceding, but are more brightly and delicately tinted.

The various speeies of Rails, whether allied to the former or latter of those just mentioned, are far too numerous to be here noticed. Hardly any part of the world is without a representative of the genera Orex or Rallus, and every considerable country has one or

perhaps more of each—though it has been the habit of systematists to_refer them to many other genera, the characters of which are with difficulty found. Thus in Europe alone three other species allied to Crex pratensis oceur more or less abundantly ; but one of them, the Spotted Rail or Crake, has been made the type of a so- ealled genus Porzana, and the other two, little birds not mueh bigger than Larks, are eonsidered to form a genus Zapornia. The first of these, which used not to be uneommon in the eastern part of England, has a very near representative in the Carolina Rail or Sora, Crex carolina, of North America, often there miscalled the Ortolan, just as its European analogue, C. porzana, is in England often termed the Dotterel. But, passing over these as. well as some belonging to genera that can be much better defined, and other still more interesting forms of the Family, as Aphanapteryx (Brrps, vol. iii. p. 733), Coor (vol. vi. p. 341), Moor-HEN (vol. Xvi. p. 808), and OcypRoME (vol. xvii. p. 722), a few words must be said of the more distant group formed by the South-Ameriean Heliornis, and the Afriean and Indian Podica, comprising four or five species, to which the name "Finfoots" has been applied — from the lobes or flaps of skin that fringe their toes. Though for a long while placed among the Podieipedide (GruBE, vol. xi. p. 79), their osteology no less than their

habits appear to indicate their allianee with the Rails, if they be not members of the Family Rallide ; but they seem to shew the extreme modification of that type in adaptation to aquatic life. Then again the curious genus Mesites of Madagasear, whose systematic place has been so long in doubt, has been referred by Prof. Alph. Yictne- Raveards (Ann. Se. Naturelle, ser. 6, vii. art. 2) to the neighbourhood of the Rails, though offering some points of resemblance to the Herons. On the other hand the Jacanas (vol. xiii. p. 531) or Parridx, which from their long toes were onee thought to belong to the Rails, are now generally admitted to be Limicoline, while the genus Aramus —the Courlan or Limpkin of the Southern United States—still oceupies a very nndetermined position, On the whole the Rallidx eonstitute a group of birds whieh, particularly as regards their relations to some other remarkable forms, of which the Sun-Bittern, Eurypyga, and Kagu, Rhinochetus, may especially be named, well deserve greater attention from the systematist, and any ornitho- logist in want of a subject could hardly find one more likely to reward his labours if he were only to carry them out in a judicious way. Based on the safe ground of anatomy, but due regard being also had to the external characters, habits, and other peculiarities of this multifarious group, amonograph might be produced of sur- passing interest, and one that in its bearings on the doetrine of evolution would be likely to prove a telling record. (A. N.)

RAILWAY

AILWAYS had their origin in the tramways which were laid more than two hundred years ago in the mineral districts of England for the conveyance of coal to the sea. In those days, before Macadam, roads bearing heavy traffic were with difficulty kept in repair. This led to the plan of laying planks or timbers at the bottom of the ruts as a better contrivance than filling in with stones, and then to laying rails of timber on the level surface. In 1676 tramways consisted of rails of timber laid "from the colliery to the river, exactly straight and parallel, and bulky carts were made with four rollers fitting the rails, whereby the carriage was so easy that one horse would draw down four or five chaldron of coals." The rails originally were formed of scantlings of good sound oak, and were con- nected by sills or cross timbers of the same material pinned together with oak trenails. By and by an additional or wearing rail, which could be easily renewed when worn,

was placed above the supporting rail, and it was then possible to cover the cross pieces or sleepers with earth to protect them from the horses' feet. These ways, laid by permis- sion of local proprietors, were called "way-leaves." It became a common practice to nail down bars of wrought iron on the surfaces of the ascending inclines of the road. These bars or rails were about 2 inches wide and half an inch thick, and were fastened to the wood rails by counter- sunk spikes. But the iron bars, not being stiff enough,

1 Formerly it seems to have been a popular belief in England that the Land-Rail in autumn transformed itself into a Water-Rail, resuming its own characters in spring. The writer has met with several persons who had serious doubts on the subject !

were considerably bent when the trucks were loaded, and the resistance was reduced but slightly below that of a well-constructed double wooden tramway.? Nevertheless, while the regular load of coals for one horse on the common road was but 17 cwt., on the tramway the horse could regularly take a load of 42 cwt. Cast-iron was first tried incidentally as a material for rails in 1767 by the Coal- brookdale Iron Company. The iron rails were cast in lengths of 5 feet, 4 inches – wide, and 1} inches thick, — formed with three holes, through which they were fastened to the oak rails. The tramway was developed into the railway by the em-

ployment of cast-iron flange ~

rails (fig. 1) to replace the \ WK wooden rails; the continuous Fic, 1.—The tram-road, flange or ledge on their inner EPO-aeO

edge kept the wheels on the track. The roads were then called tram-roads, probably as an abbreviation of

trammel-roads, the flanges of the rails being in reality trammels to gauge the road and confine the wheels to

2 The earliest system of way on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad and other railroads in the United States was a simple reproduction of this compound of wood and iron. As the ends of the bars beeame loose and turned upwards

they were known as “ snakes’ heads.” Oceasion- ally they pierced the floors of the earriages and injured passengers,

l

BSS S BYZZAS Ss

Tron rails

on tram- roads,

Stockton and Dar- lington

Railway,

224

the track. The leading objection to this system was that the rail was liable to be covered with dust. J essop therefore in 1789 laid down at Loughborough cast-iron “edge rails,” raised above the ground so as to allow a flanged cast-iron wheel to run on them (fig. 2), This appears to have been the first system of rails laid on cast-iron chairs and on sleepers. The rails were pinned or bolted into the chairs.. A wrought-iron rail was patented by Birkenshaw in 1820, as the “fish-belly ” rail, similar in form and mode of support to Jessop’s rail, but rolled in

Fic, 2,—The edge rail, 1789. This form of rail grew into favour. It weighed 33 Ib per yard, and was laid in cast-iron chairs, spiked down to square stone blocks at 3-feet bearings (see

under side.

fig. 3). The edge rail and the flanged wheel consti- tute the basis of the whole system of a railway. The rails forming a line of way were placed to a gauge or dis- tance apart of 4 feet 84 inches, and two parallel lines of way were spaced with 6 feet between the inner rails of the ways. This interspace is popularly known as the “ six-foot.”

The benefits derived from the use of the tramway or railway for the transport of coal suggested to reflective persons the employment of it for the conveyance of general merchandise and of passengers. For the conveyance of heavy merchandise inland the canals little more than sixty years ago furnished the principal means. Though there were three such water-routes between Liverpool and Man- chester, they were sometimes so crowded that cotton took a month to pass from the seaport to the manufacturing towns in the interior; yet the whole of the merchandise passing between Liverpool and Manchester did not average more than 1200 tonsa day. The average rate of carriage was 18s. per ton, and the average time of transit on the 50 miles of canal was thirty-six hours, The conveyance of passengers by the improved coach-roads was comparatively rapid, but it was very costly. The first great movement to mend this state of things was the passing of the Act in 1821 for the construction of the Stockton and Darlington Railway. Colliery railways were in evidence to prove the benefits of railway communication by steam-power. The Hetton Railway, for instance, in the neighbourhood of N ewcastle, from the colliery to the river Wear, was 7 miles long, and trains of 60 tons net weight were taken over the line at a speed of 4$ miles per hour. On the Killingworth Rail- way an engine and tender weighing 10 tons drew a load of 40 tons at a speed of 6 miles per hour, consuming 50 ib of coal per mile run. Whilst animal-power only was at first relied on for working the Stockton and Darlington

Fria. 3.—The fish-belly rail, 1820-30.

RAILWAY

Railway, the Act provided for working with men and horses or " otherwise." By another Act applied for at the request of George Stephenson, who became engineer to the line, the company was empowered to work the railway with locomotive engines. The line, with three branches, was over 38 miles in length, and was at first laid as a single line, with passing places at intervals of a quarter of a mile, the way being constructed with wrought-iron fish- belly rails, weighing 28 tb per yard. It was opened in September 1825 by a train of thirty-four vehicles, making a gross load of about 90 tons, drawn by one engine driven by Stephenson, with a signalman on horseback in advance. The train moved off at the rate of from 10 to 12

miles an hour, and attained a speed of 15 miles per hour on favour- able parts of the line. A train weighing 92 tons could be drawn by one engine at the rate of 5 miles per hour, The principal business of the new railway was the conveyance of minerals and goods, but from the first passengers in- sisted upon being carried, and in October 1825 the com- pany began to run a daily coach, called the ' Experiment," to carry six inside, and from fifteen to twenty outside, making the journey from Darlington to Stockton and back in two hours. The fare was ls., and each passenger was allowed to take baggage not exceeding 14 tb weight. The rate for carriage of merchandise was reduced from 5d. to one-fifth of a penny per ton per mile, and that of minerals from 7d. to 14d. per tor per mile. The price of coals at Darlington fell from 18s, to 8s. 6d. per ton.*

The Monklands Railway in Scotland, opened in 1826, Earliest was the first to follow the example of the Stockton and lines.

Darlington line, and several other small lines—including the Canterbury and Whitstable, worked partly by fixed engines and partly by locomotives—quickly adopted steam- traction. But the inauguration of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway, opened in 1829, made the first great impression on the national mind that a revolution in the modes of travelling had really taken place. In 1838 a line was opened between London and Birmingham, and the first train accomplished the whole distance—112} miles—at an average speed of over 20 miles per hour. The London and Greenwich, the London and Southamp- ton, the Great Western, Birmingham and Derby, Bristol and Exeter, Eastern Counties, Manchester and Leeds, Grand Junction, Midland Counties, North Midland, South- Eastern, London and Brighton, Manchester and Birming- ham, and Edinburgh and Glasgow, together with many small Bills, were all passed within four years from the time of the passing of the London and Birmingham Bill. Thus in the course of four or five years the foundations were laid of most of the existing trunk lines of railway in Great Britain. The original Liverpool and Manchester line, 304 miles in length, now forms part of a network of lines, the property of one company, nearly 1800 miles in extent, representing a capital invested in railway works and plant of £100,000,000.

Meantime the construction of the way was the subject Kinds of of much consideration. The fish-belly form of wrought- “il

iron rail was troublesome to roll, and so the flat-bottom or flat-foot rail (fig. 4) was designed, combining a solid head with a flange base. This rail, with holes through the flange to hold the spikes, was used to some extent, and was laid on longi- tudinal timber sleepers, and also on transverse sleepers. The disadvantage was want of vertical stiffness of the system; and, if the rail was made higher, it was liable to rock on the sleeper and work loose on the spikes. This rail, known as the Vignoles rail, has been much improved in form and proportions and is extensively used. The bridge rail (fig. 5)—so called

Fia. 4.—The flat- bottomed rail.

ee a

larly

dcomo-

ives,

RATLWAY

because it was first laid on bridges—vwas that first used on the Great Western Railway, and i is of a shallow section, but wide, and possessed of lateral stiff- NK ness. The first line was a series of beech WY KX piles, 12 inches square, driven into the Fic. 5.—The teldae ground, to which were bolted at the sur- rail. face level cross balks of timber, one on each side of the pilehead on which they were shouldered. Longitudinal balks, 15 feet long, were laid on the cross balks. The longi- tudinals were covered with oak or elm planking screwed down to the surface. When the ballast was packed under the longitudinal balks, the surface of the oak planks was planed level, and the bridge rails screwed down on them, with felt between. It was supposed that there would: be no yielding whatever, but a very short time demonstrated that the piles formed a series of solid resistances, while the balks between sprang, and it was found necessary to cut away the piles.

Transoms were then framed into the longitudinals and secured by strap-bolts, and the whole resembled a long ladder laid on the ground. Eight different sections of rails were tried in succession ; one section measured 14 inches in height by 7 inches in width, weighing 44 tb per "yard 5 aud the last section 22 inches high by 6 inches wide, 'weighing 62 tb per yard. The screws which held down the rails were counter-sunk be- neath the wheel-flanges, and nut-headed on the other side (see fig. 6). In consequence of the want of depth in the rails, they bent longitudinally under the wheels, and the horizontal flanges curled up at the sides, while the holes Fig. 6.—Bridge rail on through them bent into angles. One Great Western Railway. remedy tried was to cross-board the longitudinal timbers on the surface, and thus the fibre was made less yielding.

The double-headed rail (fig. 7) was originated a: J oe Locke, and was first laid on the Grand Junction Railway. It also weighed 62 Ib per yard. The two tables were equal; the rail was more easily rolled than others, and, being reversible, it was in fact two rails in one. But as it was laid in cast-iron chairs the lower table was exposed to Fic. 7 —The damage under the hammering of the traffic; and double- many engineers were led to make the lower ee table of smaller size, as in fig. 8, merely as a , support, not as a surface to be used by the wheels. This rail, which acquired the title of " bull-headed," was, like the flat-foot and bridge rails, used as a prop supported on its base. There was a waste of metal in these early rails, both flat-foot and double-headed, owing to the excessive thickness of the vertical web, which has been corrected in recent designs. It was found, naturally, that rails would not rest in their chairs at the joints, but were loosened and bruised at the ends by the blows of the traffic. The fish-joint re ere was therefore devised in 1847 by Mr W. 4, pos 'rah (Bridges Adams, the intention being by "fishing " the joints to convert the rails into continuous beams. In the original design two chairs were placed, one under each rail, a few inches apart, as in fig. 9. The joint was thus suspended between the two chairs, and two keys of iron, called "fishes," fitting the side channels of the rails, were driven in on each side between the chairs and the rails. In subsequent modifications the fishes were, and they continue to be, bolted to and through the rails, the sleepers being placed further apart, and the joint sus- pended between them.

In the employment of steam-power for traction on rail-

‘Ways rapid progress was made in response to the demand

for power. The year 1829 is famous in the annals of rail- ways not only for the opening of the Liverpool and Man-

Fic. 9.—The original fish-joint, i W. Bridges Adams.

chester line but for the invention and construction of the first high-speed locomotive of the standard modern type. Robert Stephenson’s engine, the “Rocket,” was made under competition for the Liverpool and Manchester Rail- way, and it gained the prize for lightness, power, and speed awarded by the directors. The two steam-cylinders of the “Rocket” were 8 inches in diameter, with 164 inches of stroke, and the driving-wheels were 4 feet 84 inches in diameter. The engine weighed 4 tons 5 ewt., “the tender following it 3 tons 4 ewt., and two loaded carriages drawn by it on the trial 9 tons 11 ewt.: thus the weight drawn was 12 tons 15 cwt., and the gross total 17 tons. The pressure of steam in the boiler was 50 tb per square inch. An average speed of 14 miles per hour was attained, the greatest velocity being 29 miles per hour; and the boiler evaporated 18} cubic feet, or 114 gallons, of water per hour. The “ Rocket” possessed the three elements of effi- ciency of the modern locomotive,—the internal water- surrounded fire-box and the multitubular flue in the boiler, or a number of small tubes in place of one large tube; the blast-pipe, by which the waste steam of the engine was exhausted up the chimney; and the direct connexion of the two steam- cylinders, one on each side of the engine, with the driving or propelling wheels, on one axle. The subdivision of the single large flue, up to that time in general use in locomotives, into a number of small tubes greatly accelerated the generation of steam without adding to the size or weight of the boiler. But the evaporating tubes would have been of little avail practically had they not been supplemented by the blast-pipe, which, by ejecting the steam from the engine after it had done its work in the cylinder straight up the chimney, excited a strong draught through the boiler and caused a brisk and rapid combustion of fuel and generation of heat. The heat was absorbed with proportional rapidity through the newly applied

heat- ing-tubes. The blast-pipe, thus applied, in conjunction with the multitubular flue, vastly improved the capacity and usefulness of the locomotive. And, taking into account the direct connexion of the steam-cylinder with one axle and pair of wheels, the improvements were tantamount to a new and original machine. The " Rocket" subsequently drew an average gross load of 40 tons behind the tender at a speed of 13°3 miles per hour. The old Killingworth engine, one of the earlier type of locomotives constructed by George Stephenson, weighing with its tender 10 tons, could only work at a maximum of 6 miles per hour with 50 tons.

For many years engines belonged to two general classes. In one class there were six wheels, of which one pair was placed behind the boiler, typified in the engines of the day made by Robert Stephenson ; in the other class there were but four wheels, placed under the barrel of the boiler, leaving the fire-box overhung, typified in the engines made by Bury for the London and Birmingham Railway. Ex- perience demonstrated the disadvantage of an overhanging mass, with a very limited wheel-base, in the four-wheeled engine running at high speed; and now it is the general

practice to apply six wheels at least to all ordinary loco- motive stock. The earliest four-wheeled locomotive con- structed by Robert Stephenson and Co. as an article of regular manufacture weighed 9 tons in working order. The six-wheeled engines which followed weighed 11} tons. In the course of business locomotives of greater power and greater weight were constructed ; and there are loco- motives of the present time which weigh 474 tons in working order, and with the tender full of water and coal about 80 tons gross. There are other engines of special design with twelve wheels which weigh in working order, with fuel and water, 72 tons. The contrast is emphasized in the history of the old Garnkirk and Glasgow Railway, which was opened about the year 1829. The first engines of that line weighed from 8 to 9 tons. They had steam-cylinders 11 inches in diameter, and 4-feet wheels of cast-iron, with a working pressure in the boiler of 50 ib per

square inch. The "Garnkirk" engine used to take a train of three carriages, together weighing 7 tons gross, at the average speed of 16 miles per hour between Glasgow and Gartsherrie. When the old line, 8 miles in length, was merged in the Caledonian Railway, now comprising a system of nearly 1000 miles in length, the power of the engines was greatly increased, and at this day (1885) there are express passenger engines working over the same ground having large cylinders of 17 or 18 inches in diameter, and wheels of 7 and 8 feet in diameter, weighing from 35 to 45 tons. These engines, with steam of 120 ib pressure per square inch, take a gross load of 90 tons at a speed of from 40 to 50 miles per hour.

STATISTICS,

Length of Railways in the United Kingdom.—The length of rail- ways open for traffic at the end of the year 1854, twenty-five years after the opening of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway, was 8053 miles (of which nearly one-fourth was single line of way), cost- ing about £35,500 per mile. In 1874 that mileage was doubled (16,449 miles, nearly one-half being only single line), costing about £37,000 per mile. According to the latest published return the length of railways open for traffic at the end of 1883 amounted to 18,681 miles, and the proportion of single line had decreased, being under 46 per cent. Whilst the mileage open was increased at the rate of 420 miles a year during the earlier period (1854-74), it was only increased by 248 miles a year during the later period (1874-83). But many miles of way in multiple have been laid for

'the working of traffic concentrated on main lines,—127 miles of

triple line and 285 of quadruple. The largest share of multiple way belongs to the London and North-Western Railway Company, which owns 28 miles of triple way and no less than 114 of quad- ruple. The principal section of this railway, 80 miles in length, between London and Rugby, is entirely in quadruple,—two lines for goods and two for passenger traffic. Table I. shows the dis- tribution of the 18,681 miles of railway open at the end of 1883 :—

Double Line or wild)

Country. mane Single Line.

Miles. Per cent.| Miles. Per cent.) Miles.

England and Wales …..... 8,380 or 63°5 4,835 or 36°5 | 13,215

COMIBRE Sais cc macasss cor nis cate 1147 5, 39 LS1f 4,. BL 2,964 POMRG he os oc diedinnn sdece cise 5 ,, 28 1,924 ,, 77 23502 | Total

companies (206

The railways here represented were owned by 281 3 ut

in England and Wales, 31 in Scotland, and 44 in Ireland). the whole property is worked by 123 companies.? :

The longest mileage of railway worked by one eompany is that of the Great Western Railway, which at the end of 1883 was 2268 miles. Next to this ranks the London and North-Western (1793), then the North-Eastern (1534), the Midland (1381), the North- British (1006), and the Caledonian (877). The three longest mile- ages in Ireland owned each by one company are those of the Great Northern (503), the Great Southern and Western (478), and the Midland Great Western (425). The four largest English com- panies, taken together, work nearly 7000 miles of railway,—more

~ than half of the whole length of railways in England and Wales.

The two leading lines in Scotland, taken together, work nearly 1900, or two-thirds of the whole length of railways in Scotland. In

1 It would appear that less progress has been made in Ireland than in Great Britain in amalgamation and concentration of management.

RAILWAT

Ireland the three leading lines, taken together, work 1400,—more than half of the whole length of railways in Ireland.

Capital Invested, Expenditure per Mile, &c.—The capital raised Capital for the eonstruction of railways at the end of the year 1883 invested.

amounted to about £785,000,000, representing an expenditure of £42,000 per mile open. Some small portion of this eost belongs to lines in course of construction. The money has been raised in the following proportions :—

Ordinary share capital paid up ….£293,437,106 or 37°4 per cent.
Guaranteed stock 94,672,823 ,, 12°1 a

Preferential, SHOOK j.;<0 oie /ecereidis, eaxele 200,888,198 ,, 25°6 Bs AB GAINED) 28. [sfc ale xsayuyasdisiane ens oie Stok 36 ato 15,323,505 ,, 1:9 5 Webenture:stOeK occ. cocc eases 180,599,680 ,, 23°0 S

Total (say £785,000,000).... £784,921,312 ,, 100-0 a

In 1857 the ordinary stock was 57 per cent., as against 37°4 per cent. in 1883; and the guaranteed and preferential stock together were but one-third of the ordinary share capital, while in 1883 they equalled it. The English railway system, so far as capital is eon- cerned, has become adjusted to the rule of having rather less than 40 per cent. of the capital in "open stock." In 1845-46 the divi- dends of railways appear to have reached a maximum. The pre- cipitate influx of new lines during the four years from 1846 to 1850, contests before parliament, competition in various forms, and other causes then came in to depress dividends, and reduced the average proportion of net receipts in 1849 to 2°83 per cent. of the total capital and loans raised at that time. In 1857 the percentage of net receipts had risen again to 4°06 per cent. of the total capital and loans; and notwithstanding the accumulation of preference capital and loans, both taking precedence of ordinary capital, the available dividend on the latter increased from 1°88 per cent. to 3°6 per cent. Since that time the average dividend paid on ordinary capital has maintained its levcl at least, and it amounted for 1883 to 4°68 per cent. The average eost per mile open at the end of 1883, calculated on the amount of eapital raised, with that for 1857 added for comparison, was as follows (Table IJ.) :—

Per Mile | Per Mile |

1883. 1857.

England and Wales …..... 13,215 650,945,834 | £49,260 | £39,270
RCORAMA. A eercreysalcccactae me 2,964 98,531,315 33,240 28,230
MELB Feo. s-leeicins ok estes 2,502 35,444,163 14,170 15,660

18,681 784,921,312 42,020 34,950

The marked increase in capital expenditure per mile is due to per- Cost per manent improvements, station accommodation, reconstruction, and mile.

multiplication of lines. Of the great cost of English railways, independently of the permanent improvements already noticed, part has been incurred in parliamentary warfare, while much of it is due to great and costly termini, and to the character of the earlicr works of construction in England, where great expenditure was incurred for the sake of securing long levels and very easy gradi- ents, until Joseph Locke made a new departure, and constructed the Grand Junction Railway on economic principles by following in great part the contour of the surface. For this line and the London and Birmingham line, for which Robert Stephenson was the engineer, Acts were passed in the same year (1833). The latter line was expensively laid out with tunnels, viaducts, and heavy cuttings and-embankments, and cost in round numbers £53,600 per mile, as against £23,200 per mile for Locke's line. The cheaper line abounded in inclines of from 1 in 85 to 1 in 265, whilst the more expensive line was ruled by gradients not steeper than 1 in 330. Locke reckoned upon the sufficiency of the engine-power to take the trains up the inclines, and the famous Crewe engine was the outgrowth of the situation. The London and South-Western Rail- way, which cost £26,800 per mile, was laid out by Locke to a ruling gradient of 1 in 250. There are other instances of econo- mical construction by the same engineer in the original Caledonian and Scottish Central Railways—now amalgamated—the former of which was made with long gradients of 1 in 75, 1 in 80, 1 in 100, and other steep slopes. Besides these there are other cheaply made railways in Scotland ; but there is only one Scottish railway of the monumental class,—the Edinburgh and Glasgow, nearly dead level, with enormously expensive works. On the Metro- politan Railway system, 22 miles in length, upwards of £11,000,000 have been paid up, or about £500,000 per mile. The enormous cost of this line, as well as of

the Metropolitan District system (18 miles long, costing £374,000 per mile) and the North London system (12 miles long, costing £325,000 per mile), is sufficiently explained by the place and conditions. The original London and Blackwall Railway, built, like the North London, for the most part on arches, eost £311,912 per mile. The original Birkenhead, Cheshire, and, Lancashire Junction Railway, now vested in the neighbouring railway companies, cost upwards of £75,000 per mile, owing partly to the protracted eontests in which it had been involved with the neighbouring railways, and partly to the costly works of construction joining the railway to the docks at Birken- head. Of railways in England, the original Carlisle and Silloth

Railway, 13 miles long, has the honour of standing at the foot of the list, having cost £6474 per mile. Of the Scottish lines the Caledonian system stands at the head of the list, costing £45,500 per mile. The North British system cost £33,000 per mile. At the foot of the list stood the original East of Fife line, 7 miles

proportions of rolling stock for twenty-one leading British railways (31st December 1883) are exhibited in detail in Table IV., arranged in the order of the numerical proportions which the carrying stock for traffic bears to the locomotive stock :—

1

> Fa} te 2 : | e long, with a cost of £4351 per mile. But the cheapest lines of a Miles! 3 2 | ae Cd Carriage and considerable length are the Forth and Clyde line, costing £5525 HINA open.} SS) ES #8 | Waggon Stocks. per mile, and the Peebles line, costing £5545 per mile. Both E | oF = these lines have been taken into the North British system. In | |- = Ireland the Dublin and Kingstown Railway, 8 miles long, a suburban Miles,| En- Vehi- Vehi- | Vehi- a | eS railway, cost £53,000 per mile. The original Limerick and Foynes ENGLAND AND WALES. | 'gines.| cles. | cles. | cles. gine. open line, costing £5282 per mile, is probably the cheapest piece of | Metropelitem, edi… | 221 60] 241 59} 300; 5:0, 13°6 railway in the United Kingdom. Metropolitan District …..... 18 | 42 | 296 19) 315] 7-0)17-5 The

proportions of expenditure on capital account cannot in the | _ Tee as Sedscver | ies | eae 4 ph gan os absence of data be exactly determined. The following may be London and South-Western _..| 721 | 471 | 2467 | 6964| 9,431/ 20-0 | 13-1 accepted as an approximate analysis of the average cost of the rail- | |South-Hastern…..... | 370 | 325 | 2047 | 4,798] 6,845 | 21-1 | 18:5 ways, as it stood in 1871 :— London and North-Western .. 1793 | 2451 | 6092 | 47,518 | 53,610| 21-9 29-9 Z ae en | London, Brighton, and South aie ert & coat Oe 403 | 410 | 2817 | 7,078} 9,895] 24-1 | 24:5 é ; ae MED IDE S030 eonnonocooano ods 1049 | 615 | 2960 | 11,957 | 14,917 | 24:3 | 14-2 Land and compensations = 2000000000000007075 92008 oF BE | Great Wentern 22220000 sj, 2208 | 1807 | 4508 84,704 | 39,902] 249, 17°3 Works of construction and stations complete …..... 18,000 ,, 50. | sip ear Sheffield, and Lin-| . Locomotive and carrying stock …....0cccceessee 3,000 ,, 8 Te tN ett on oa no CoaBbabooods | 314 7 505 | (781 | 12,434 | 13,215 | 26:2 42°1 Interest on stock, discounts, bonuses, dividends from Tane ahi a Foe 168 | 733 | 2086 | 17,384 | 19,450 | 26-5 | 25°3 capital, contingencies, &. oo… eee ccc cece. 6,000 ily Bee CUO NOESSHEG.---| 404 | E840) aes 20,223 | 22,718 | 27°3 200 i 2 z 2 Gee Lil@leviGl SEER cee wen ae 1381 | 1629 | 3856 | 61,532 | 65,388 | 40:1 | 47-3 36,000 100 North-Eastern …..../ 1534 | 1462 | 2739 | 76,369 | 79,108 | 54°1 | 51°6 From this estimate it would appear that the net cost of construc- Reoreenn: | c tion and equipment was £21,000 per mile, or about 58 per cent. ea oe een "| aCe 290 ioe haoieee rr 2 ae Cost of of the entire cost. The capital cost of the working stock is given | | Caledonian eee Oe) ae oe 1030 43,253 | 44,883 Pree working by the London and North-Western Railway Company. Excluding aes stock. a considerable number of engines and carrying stock which had sidan ee dos igual aidan | ee he ' 5 & 11a) Teal WeSbEIN 2.2… , 7 z been constructed as duplicate stock charged to revenue, no doubt | | Great Southern wor western .., 478 | 160 | 344 | 3,345| 3689] 23-1) 7-9 —at 3lst December 1884 the quantities and costs were as follows :— Great Northern …..... , 503 | 127 | 468 | 2,807] 3,275 25-8 | 6°5

2 Sad LOCOMOLIMESE te steed eee einer 2 = ye I Gar sbeIndlersureesrerer erin =n eee j £3,574,284 (£1538 per engine).

3,463 passenger carriages…..... 2,116 horse-boxes, guards' vans, &¢.....

Here the number of vehicles varies from 5 per engine on the Metro-

; 1,496,212 (£268 per vehicle). politan Railway, 7 on the District Railway, and 11:7 on the North

51,817 waggon stock ….....s..0 000, 3,320,322(£64 ,,), London Railway — all of these specially ‘passenger lines of dense a traffic—to 54 per engine on the North-Eastern Railway, 59 on the Total …..... 00.00.00. £8,390,818 North British Railway, and 65 on the Caledonian Railway—all

It is to be explained with reference to these low rates of cost that the original cost of the early working stock stands unaltered in the books of the company, whilst the whole of the original working stock has been replaced at the charge of revenue by engines and vehicles of modern design and larger capacity. Divided by

these being specially lines of mineral traffic.

Train Miles Run, 1883.—The number of miles run by passenger Train and goods and mineral trains, and the number run by mixed trains, miles are as follows (Table V.) :— run,

a eeSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSSeSeEeee

the number of miles (1793) open at 31st December 1884, the total Passenger, Goode ae0 Mixed. | Total. charge for working stock is at the rate of £4680 per mile open. S| ee For new working stock manufactured by the same company dur- Country. Per Per Per Per ing the eighteen months ending 3lst December 1884 the following Train AYE! Train VE grain PVE] train | aver 5 “ 3 age | z age age 3 age average sums were charged ‘to capital :— Miles. [imile| Miles. | nile} Miles. | 2)]_| Miles. mile 31 locomotives with tenders or tank-engines ….... £1100 each. open open open! open 22opvcliicles carriaserstoek ….....08hele ocsccte css oeks. 385 ,, SL | ae | el 2Vo2wehicles, Wageon StOCK s… – sec. sonst cees cote sce cns 59 «Cy, a 7 : :

‘ : : ee ; < and Wales|117,406,242/ 8940 108,446,732] 8258) 498,415] 38 226,351,389 17,236 Rolling Working or Rolling Stock. —The working or

rolling stock of | jgtayar 18,243,827 4486| 15,933,637| 5397 |1,632,851| 553 | 30,810,315 10.436 stock. railways consists of locomotives with their tenders, passenger | reland .. 7,526,871 3030) 3,602,884) 1450| 605,777] 246 | 11,735,532, 4,726*

carriages, horse-boxes, carriage trucks, travelling post-oflices with Total …./138,176,940 7442 127,983, 253| 6893 |2,737,043| 147 208,897,236 14,482 their tenders and vans, goods waggons, covered goods waggons, | |Total, per cattle trucks, coke and coal waggons, timber trucks, ballast waggons, Cente) .. | 51-4 a 47°6 a 1:0 an 100 |

and goods brake vans. Table III. (below) shows that in England and Wales there is nearly one locomotive per mile of line open, or for the United Kingdom three engines for every 4 miles. The greatest waggon stock per mile open is to be found in Scotland—nearly thirty-one per mile. The proportions of vehicles for traffic of all classes for each locomotive averaged at the end of the year 1883 :— England and Wales…..... 31‘1 vehicles per engine.

The mixcd-train miles constitute just 1 per cent. of the total number, and the mileages run by passenger and goods trains are nearly equal. On an average each mile of way was traversed forty times a day. Taking the means of the numbers of engines for the end of 1882 and the end of 1883 as the average number during the year, the train miles run per locomotive are as follows (Table VI. yi

OO laa ee tts ess… <,c.ccrveia tee lye 7 35 1 5 " nooo cane Geesuedoon cnet poasoo ed” Average Nuinber | Train Miles per oe > 8 ae of Engines, Engine. (2 Lapere rere ence aeeRReen: 33°9 ra ie

: io ’ : i Yo England and Wales….....0… 11,996 18,863 The excessive proportion of fifty-two vehicles per engine in Scot- (2 _ ca ai rn 1,678 18,361 iand corresponds to the comparatively excessive number of train | | Ireland “1.12.2272777 7707720000000 626 18,747 miles with goods and minerals, which are 20 per cent. more than 5 Nie a Sg ee 14,300 : 18,805

the passenger-train miles, whilst in England they are 8 per cent.

less, and in Ireland more than 50 per cent. less. The various | An engine when actually on duty may accomplish 120 train miles

Taste II].—Summary of the Quantities of We orking Stock at the end of the Year 1883.

. Waggons and Total No. of

: Passenger ee Total Pass- ati for Live a su = e ne ae Other Vehicles, | Vehicles for

Locomotives. Caines res ed to enger-Train | Stock, Miner- } © Tl Maneeal: as Ballast Passengers, ges. assenger rene als, and Mer- | AUC "aveta' | wWaggons, &c. |Goods, Ballast Trains. Jnandi Train Stock. on d

Country. chandise. |

+ IRE ~ = Per @ Per Per = Per Per Per

*a mile as mnile ee mile os tnile = mile Nae mile Nugts nile ie mile : open. * | open. : open. * | open. * {open. * | open. ° open. * Jopen, England and Wales …...../ 12,144 92 | 27,274 | 2-06 | 10,133 '77 =| 37,407} 2°83 | 329,622 | 24-94 | 367,029 | 27-77 10,609 80 =| 377,638 | 28°57 COGAN 4. ov cnc ccc cces 1,693 '57 3,001} 1:21 1,269 *43 4,860] 1°64 91,444 | 30°85 | 96,304 | 32-49 1,166 *39 97,470 | 32°88 Hiroe UMM evs regi se0sisics o éeiciee ae 632 "25 1,439 cong 622 oorey 2,061 "$2 13,195 | 5:27! 15,256] 6-09 297 "12 15,553 | 6°21 Flip Gall Pertne Ses oaks 14,469 '77 =| 32,304) 1°73 | 12,024} -64 | 44,398] 2:37 434,261 | 23°24 478,589 | 25°61 | 12,072] +65 | 490,661 | 26-26*

228

per day, which would make upwards of 40,000 per annum. But at any moment half the engines may be taken as in reserve or under repair, which reduces the average performance per engine of the whole stock to some 20,000 miles per year, and the circum- stances of many lines do not admit of such high averages of mileage run. Taking the twenty-one leading lines in detail, following the selection already made to show the quantities of

working stock, the number of train miles run on the different lines in 1883 is shown in Table V1I. as follows :—

ae ro z Dw . oe 3 3) Train Miles run. ae z Railway. Sa |5 EE | Goods and & ASP ite az Passeuger. | Winners Total. = 3 ENGLAND AND WALES.

Metropolitan …. 22 58 1,443,401 8,794; 1,447,195 | 24,950

Metropolitan Dis-

LIC tReet «<< 16 39 1,191,966 | 5,719 | 1,197,685 | 30,710 North London ..| 12 87 | 1,705,749} 285,085} 1,990,834 | 22,880 London,Chatham,

aud Dover …./ 160 168 | 8,152,677 678,173 | 3,830,850 | 22,800 London and South-

Western …... 721 456 8,001,548} 3,045,365 11,046,913 | 24,220 South-Eastern 370 322 4,930,330 | 1,416,949| 6,347,279 | 19,710 LondonandNorth-

Western …... 1784 2424 | 18,931,111 | 19,395,461 | 38,326,572 | 15,810 London and

Brighton …... 130 404 6,521,451 | 1,427,306) 7,948,757 | 19,680 Great Eastern ..| 1032 608 8,486,358 | 5,334,027 | 13,820,385 | 22,730 | Great Western 2254 1565 | 14,298,157 | 16,047,939 | 30,346,096 | 19,390 Manchester, Shef-

field, and Lin-:

colnshire …... 314 496 4,507,290 | 5,065,879 | 9,573,169 | 19,300 Great Northern..| 770 726 | 8,091,256 8,238,177 | 16,329,433 | 22,490 Lancashire and :

Yorkshire 493 815 7,602,008 | 5,467,541 | 13,069,549 | 16,040 Modlandy 3 o.cecn 1378 1605 | 13,105,400 | 19,981, 855 | 33,087,255 | 20,620 North-Eastern ..} 1521 1462 9,681,906 | 14,763,232 | 24,445,138 | 16,720

ScoTLAND.

Glasgow and

South-Western 331 285 2,230,838 | 2,294,680 | 4,525,518 | 15,880 North British….| 1002 563 | 5,032,790 | 6,428,496 | 11,461,286 | 20,360 Caledonian …... 872 690 5,232,096 | 6,617,610 | 11,849,703 | 17,170

TRELAND. Midland Great

Western …... 425 100 1,104,971 682,651 | 1,787,622 | 17,880 Great Southern |

and Western ..| 478 160 1,678,691 | 1,164,993 | 2,843,684 | 17,7S0 Great Northern ..| 503 127 1,851,768 783,148 | 2,634,916 | 20,750

TABLE VIIT.—Duties performed by Engines of Manchester, Sheffield, and Lineolashire Railway.

RALLW Aw

small goods-train mileage, is partly explained by the fact that this eompany had 141 duplicate locomotives in 1883. Engines run many miles unavoidably "empty,"—that is, without a train, the proportion of the empty or unprofitable mileage depending on the traffic and the nature of the line. A Hine with locally heavy gradients must have "assistant" or " pilot" engines in readiness to assist the trains up the inclines, and such engines usually have to return empty to the depét ; and in cases of special trains empty engines are run to or from the train, as the case may happen, Engines, especially assistant engines, may have to stand 'in steam" or with the steam up and the fire in good order, in readi- ness to act when required. Some railway companies register the whole time the engines are in steam, also the assistant, ballasting, and empty mileage run, besides the time on active duty and the train milesrnn, The nature of the duty of goods engines, which is various, is also distinguished, so as, in short, to make a complete record of the work done. Thus for the Manchester, Shefficld, and Lincolnshire Railway Table VIII. (see above) gives the duties performed by the engines during the second half-years of 1857 and 1883. The times of engines assisting and running empty are included in the hours in steam with trains,—passenger and goods respectively. There were about 170 engines

employed in shunting and marshalling trains. The relative percentages of the hours the engines were in steam and of miles run on different duties in the second half-year of 1883 are given in Table IX. :—

‘ Service. | Hours in Steam. ‘Miles run.

Per cent. Per cent. RassSeneery (Ramis gu enicmyslan c.c6’s «ses hos eee 14°6 36°4

| Goods and mineral trains …..... 22°4 40°6

| Passenger, goods, and mineral trains…... 87-0 770 IB OUIASHRULAUES 6s accxcvsies etee arene ile? i15a SUUMGIN Gs note meters eitereaiaise Sertom ete eee 36°8 17°4

D.Ae included in pass- ,

| porting eee a oe cea ee if peg ana “Q

| IY coo ooecehounoe coescoonaSGOG tev eses mineral trains

MS tenner cers cose tern eared ow iar eerie 25°0 20

Total ee ccecce ee wei cs 100°0 100°0

The proportion of extra cngine mileage to the work done in hauling goods, minerals, and passengers varies very much on dif- ferent systems, according to the nature of the traffic, for by far the greater part of it arises in connexion with goods and minerals, which itself is a very varying quantity. The train mile, therefore, —that is, the revenue-produeing train mile— though it is the simplest and handiest unit of performance, is not an absolute measure of work done. The shunting or marshalling of trains is an item not indicated by train mileage, and yet it is hard work and occupies as many hours in steam as the train mileage. Again, the fuel consumed, reckoncd only on the train mileage run, amounts to

ete s P : 5 Half-year ending Half-year ending) | 5316 per mile run ; but, reckoned on the total mileage run by engines, | Bist Dec. 1857. | 31st Dec. 1883. | | in which the extra mileage, whether ballasting, shunting, or assist-

MO COMMOLIVES << vee cicae Stevens Saree 115 505 ing, is hard work, it amounts only to 41 Ib per mile Lp DOOR cc. nM se ae scenes a : 431 On the London and North-Western Railway in 1874 the total Bs of ow ih steam — oaaiie shunting time was 613,472 hours of one engine—about the same With Patan. en ree 95.397 J] 376.576 as on the Sheffield line in 1883—and on this work 171 engines With ballast trains 1112772217770) 19,746 were constantly employed, marshalling and classifying the trains SUCU UL CREE Santee mene reas oa 49,093 621,000 in the sidings. A like number, so employed on the Sheffield line, Standing... .. se. .seeeeeeceeeee eens 28,842 421,430 amount to-one-third of the total locomotive stock. _ __,. Total hours in steam ..... 173,272 1,685,426 Trafie.—Before the establishment of the railway from twenty Pass- Es miles run by engines— " 6 Sanees to thirty coaches ran daily between Manchester and Liverpool, enger ee ent yen nO bedicin CODEC pe pee whereas the railway carried 700,000 passengers during its first traffic. CCUUS oc co gg opeedonaeestandoconiee 360,243 eighteen months. Wherever railways were made the carriage of Cattle .....406. te seeee been e ees 8,772 passengers was found to be one of the most remunerative sources MIXER 5). s.c.5s atetelslohetsiotele/cieterelsisieieteisiiels 87,244 dete : : i i emcee aes. ac eit 947189 ae of traffic. Nearly fifty years ago Porter, in his Progress of the LONG)... enc caceen Ber eerie an csc: 162 : Nation (1836), estimated that in Great Britain 82,000 persons daily, Roel Scodwead wee... 550,610 2,614,546 or 30,000,000 per annum, travelled ~~by coach an average distance i of about 12 miles each, at an average cost of 5s. for each passenger, Total train miles …..... doce 1,244,531 4,958,235 or 5d. per mile, whereas in 1881 upwards of 600,000,000 pass~~ Ballast (8 niles per hour)..... eae 1,045 73,292 : : : 1 Shangins GmmleemeeWean. eal 11237249 engers travelled by railway at a cost, taking averages, of 103d. ASSISHINE oo). 5.05.0.0 ee Rocsuetor 84,250 83,304 cach, which at the average rate of say 14d. per mile travelled would BIOpWe t roar ceteanesene Ao Ouomceo oe 81,327 253,794 represent an average length of 84 miles, at one-fourth of the cost Total onetime tiles | aaee-uu. 4,361,153 6,441,867 and in one-third of the time required by coach. ; i ; ; Table X. shows the total number of passengers of each class Difference of engine miles and train conveyed in 1883 :— Bless ee ee a 116,622 1,483,682 y : Difference per cent. of train miles…. 9°37 29°9 Fuel consumed— Second | Third Class CRED nc acaeiea steer sean te eae .s..| 12,076°8 tons = Country. First Class.| "Cjasg

| and Parlia-} Total. Come coer etic. 1. Tee Ae 11,484°0 _,, 117,679 tons ‘ mentary. JEUNE WAI TON. Gone onocenuod ee nk: 42:4 ib 53°4 tb eS os | Sa a », engine milerun …..... eee 83°8 ib 40:9 tb England and Wales ….| 29,897,866 59,083,508 | 523,420,384 | 612,401,758 », hourin steam …..... Giiier.,’ 804°5 ib 156°5 Ib COUMEMGL «5. 5.s,0,s.s:cenaieiere 4,790,982 2,835,687 | 44,404,858 D2 0312 it Cost for fuel per train mile, at 6s. 5°42d. Merge caRNGL se ors etievolatatelicvareen ets 1,692,029 4,177,589 | 13,408,234 19,284,852 DOTALOUL in. serene). «eee : ia ae Pen ann Gn Gn = Ge ator Tel a eae an faba. tek | 86,887,877 | 66,006,784 | 581,233,476 | 683,718,137”) ra per hour in steam …..... 540d.

aa

In general the lines of preponderating passenger-train miles run the greater number of miles per engine. The small mileage per engine of the London and North-Western line, with a relatively

The proportions of passengers, independent of season-ticket holders, were as follows (Table XI.) :—

eee ee ee eo ee eee 1 Season-ticket holders in addition :—England and Wales, 570,686; Scotland, 37,924 ; Ireland, 23,440; total, 682,050.

RALL WAY

First Second Third Country. Class. Class. Class. | Totals. Per cent. | Per cent. Per cent. England and Wales…..... 4: 9° 85°4 100 SGOHMBUE 5.5 cece esse cous 252 5-4 85-4 100 NVGIORE cc nccietie tae cece 8-8 21°6 69°6 100 Ete eter ee rerci cic aasios 5:3 9°7 85°0 100

The number of passengers conveyed in the year 1883 per mile of the mean length of railway open during the year was, in England 46,340, in Scotland 17,550, and in Ireland 7710,

The receipts from passenger traffic in 1883 are given in Table XII. (see below). The decided preponderance of third-class traffic shown in this table is the outcome of the work of years. In 1854 npwards of 111 million passengers travelled by railway, of whom 13 per cent. travelled by first, 34

by second, and 53 by third class and _parlia- mentary carriages. In 1873, the year before the Midland Railway Company ceased to carry second-class passengers, upwards of 455 million passengers travelled by railway, of whom only 8} per cent. travelled by first, 15 by second, and 763 by third class carriages, In 1881 upwards of 623 million passengers travelled by railway, nearly six times as many as in 1854, Of these only 6 per cent. were first and 104 sccond class passengers, whilst the third-class and parliamentary passengers rose to 833. Finally, in 1883 (as already statcd_in Table XTI.), 85 per cent. of the passengers were third class. The same movement is exemplified in the receipts, the mass of receipts gravitating towards third class, as shown by the following abstract per mile open for the years already men- tioned (Table XIII.) :—

First Second Third

Year. Class. | Class. Class. 1854 £349 £416 £382

1873 274 250 737 1881 209 190 846 1883 178 913

These figures show that in 1854 first and second together made up two-thirds of the whole receipts but that they steadily declined in succeeding proportionally but absolutely, —th trary, exhibiting a rapid increase, they were exactly one-third of th amounted to more than two-thirds engers. The reaction in first-class able because the number of first- millions—was nearly trebled in 1 exactly the same as in 1881,—about 38 millions ; whilst in 1883 there were nearly 364 millions. The explanation is probably to be sought partly in the fact that first-class fares have been reduced in many cases and cxpress fares have been almost entirely abolished, and partly to the increased habit of taking third class for long journeys, so that first-class journeys, bei have become less remunerative to t third class is by far the most remu traffic of railways ; pursued by railway companies in France, of discouraging third- class traffic. On

class receipts from passengers, years, not only e third-class receipts, on the con- insomuch that, whereas in 1854 e whole receipts, in 1883 they of the whole receipts from pass- reccipts is all the more remark- class passengers in 1854—143 873; that of 1873 was almost

or third-class carriages are deterrently uncom- vel who travel by necessity, On the contrary, low fares and ; they may almost be said to een recognized by the more in- The high speed of express trains —from 45 to 50 miles and upwards per hour—is, of course, an On ccrtain lines there are only d third. The Caledonian Raii- opt, about thirty-five years ago,

TABLE XII.—Receipts Jrom Passenger Traffic in 1883.

| class carriages, at the same time readjusting and lowering the fares, —the revised rates being 14d. and ‘1d, respeetively per mile for first and third class. The result was that in 1875 272 inillion passengers travelled on this railway,—nearly 5 millions more than in 1873, before the change was made ; whilst in 1881 there were 29 million travellers, of whom 27 millions were third and only 2 millions first class passengers; and in 1883 upwards of 31 million passengers were carried, of whom 29% millions were of the third and a little over 1¢ millions of the first class. The gross receipts for passenger traffic on the Midland Railway were, in round num- bers, £1,660,000 in 1878, £1,787,000 in 1881, and £1,904,000 in 1883, whilst the percentage of working expenditure remained the same. On the whole, it appears from the results of this grand experiment that the change has succeeded financially, whilst there is no doubt that it has stimulated the provision for and develop- ment of third-elass travelling on other railways. The gravitation of traffic to the lowest level is unquestionable ; and it is aided by the fact that third-class carriages have been (1885) for some years run with nearly all trains, fast as well as slow, and that the largeness of the number of third-class passengers has forced upon the management of the companies improvements in the popular class of carriage. As the downward movement of the classes con- tinues the outcome will most likely be a general reduction of the number of classes to two,—nominally first and third, practically first and second. On 1st May 1885 seeond-class carriages were abolished on the branch lines of the Great Northern Railway ; and, if the experiment answers expectations, second-class carriages will be abolished on the entire Great Northern system.

close analysis of goods traffic. goods or general merchandise co (Table XIV.) :—

Lanner

nveyed in 1883 were as follows

Total A General Mer- per aver- Country. Minerals, clinnilise Total. age mile open. ee a Tons. Tons. Tons. Tons. England and Wales …... 160,522,029 | 65,387,354 | 295, 909,383 | 17,100 Seotland'...7… 27,767,095 8,692,433 36,459,528 | 12,300 Ireland yess ae ce 1,196,458 2,817,569 4,014,057 1,600 Serer | 189,485,612 | 76,897,356 | 266,382,968 | 14,260

The receipts from mineral and goods traflic in 1883 are given in

Table XV. :— Mer- Live ; Country. lage: aeneie Minerals. Total. England and Wales …... £18,028,587 | £787,642 | £14,057,188 | £32,873,417 Scoflandme semen ss. Us 2,267,685 175,996 | 2,062,223! 4,530,691 NTGIANGEEE So ccs cote ccna. 952,215 208,808 136,010 1,297,033 NOt ac. oo £21,248,487 | £1,172,446 | £16,255,421 | £38,701,3191 Total per mile open £1137 £63 £870 £2070 Proportion per cent. of Gib rere hci ose 55°0 3°0 42°0 100

These statistics of merchandise and mineral traffie show that upwards of 266 million tons were conveyed in 1883 in the United Kingdom, seven-tenths of which were minerals, In 1857 71 million tons were conveyed, of which only two-thirds consisted of minerals ; whence it appears that a more rapid development of mineral traffic than of general merchandise took place in the interval.

The whole of the receipts directly earned on the railwa 1883, with the miscellaneous reccipts derived from rents, tolls, navigation, steamboats, &c., are brought together in Table XVI. (see below). The receipts per train mile from passengers and from goods and mineral traffic are reckoned exclusive of the receipts on railways working mixed trains; but all the receipts per train mile for passengers and goods together are divided by the total mileage run by all trains. In the last column the gross receipts, including miscellaneous receipts, are divided by the total train mileage.

1 Including £24,965 from goods-traffic receipts not classified.

Receipts from Passengers. Soh oS Countr, Pero te ountry. — Eo 28 4 é Mails. Gross Total. ; Second , Season Bo amo First Class. Cia Third Class. | tickets. Total. a SoS Heladtend Wales' 5 .56.240-/-00 see.) ee £2,998,905 | £2,859,017 £14,702,697 | £1,498,554 | £22,059,173 £2,562,166 | £483,542 £25,104, 881 2 A050 Seno CO eR EIRENE bb See ocbco een aacc. 450,010 147,085 1,661,281 146,038 2,404,414 336,742 144,021 2,885,177 eM ees na ssineceesa. Soe 221,138 323,642 686,086 47,999 1,278,865 126,447 113,363 1,518,675 SlSitea Me aeraeteiAs cscs cies ata oe eee eee eee £3,670,053 £3,329,744 | £17,050,064 | £1,692,591 £25,742,452 | £3,025,355 £740,926 £29,508, 733 exverage DEN MUSOPEN 2… 0c s— +2ce

87°2

The returns to the Board of Trade do not supply material for Goods The quantities of minerals and traffic.

ys in Receipts.

230

RATLWAYT

TABLE XVI.—Statistics of Receipts earned in 1883.

: Merchandise and Passengers, Merchan- Mis- Total Receipts from Country. Passengers. Minerals. dise, and Minerals. cellaneous. all sources. Per train | 'Per train Per train Per train mile. mile. mile. | mile. £1 s. d. £1 | ies ide £ Se 3d £ £& Fes Bngland and WAlES oy sec cs asses eocccee aise «s| 29, LOE SSE 4 83°3 | 32,873,417 6 0°6 57,978,298 5 15 | 2,543,240 (60,521,538 5 42 BGOGIBNG Polis ses tecernnenianes's Hoar apoacG Gohoo ee | 2,885,177 4 00 4,530,869 5 58 7,416,046 4 9°8 269,447 7,685,493 4 11°9 PERCE occas. ale ees sa 5.0070 te Sea) go's ae 6 os waleel ahs 1,518,675 a 10:3 1,297,083 | 6 11°2 2,815,708 4 9°6 39,531 2,855,239 4 1074 Wer… A ohe.. se cececeess.| 29,508,733 | 4 27 |38,701,319 | 6 0-1 [68,210,052 | 5 0-9 | 2,852,218 [71,062,270 | 5 3°4 POtal per Maile OPEN:

Of the total receipts for passengers and goods, goods brought 56°8 per cent. and passengers 43°2. In 1857 the proportions were nearly the same,— 56 and 44 per cent. respectively. Vor the three king- doms separately the percentages for 1883 were (Table XVII.) :—

| : Minerals and | Passengers. Merchandise. Per cent. Per cent. Boglind and. Wales «csSEC. 2) 1 ie ee Sees ee ote sacacn cam mare o | 39°0 61°0 IRE a1, Re ICO Ue Gian oie nea ee ae ee | 54-2 45°8 TOtall .., .1iwt teh we ss eee | 43°2 56°8

The average traffic receipts per mile open in 1883 were distributed between the three kingdoms as shown in Table XVIII. :—

Per average Per Mile Mile open. per Week. Hnpland aed "Wales… 2. cccds. ccattoonnus £4415 £84°9 PCO UMMC etercyeisis ete sisicioe o octor-tsin- Ae tage 2509 48°2 IFEIIUO LS choice ere sc shieiee cise nes oe ae tpt 1134 21°8 Pleo IOs > fstogaliautisteveastsuctereeeaete £367 £70°6 DGtal, VEST criccescinessateme ys £2715 £52

These quantities for 1883 are proportionally for the three kingdoms as 4, 2}, 1. For the year 1857 the corresponding amounts were as 3, 2, 1, so that the growth of traffic in the interval has been greater in England than in Scotland, and greater in Scotland than in Ireland.

of expenditure of different kinds per mile open and per train mile run, and, in addition, the proportional expenditure of the different kinds in parts of the total working expenditure. The heads of expenditure are classified in this table in order to separate direct or really working expenditure from what may be called contingent or incidental expenditure not essential to the working of a railway, as rates, duty, compensation, &c. The direct or essential working ex- penditure is thus upwards of 32 millions sterling, or 86 per cent. of the whole sxpanelibare, The amount and proportion of the net receipts are shown by deducting the total working expenditure from the total receipts, as under :—

Per train mile.

Total receipts ….....£71,062,270, or 5s. 3°4d. or 100 per cent. Gross working expenditure…. 37,369,562 ,, 2s. 94d. ,, 526 i Net receipts …..... £33,692,708 ,, 28.6d. ,, 47-4

The net receipts available for payment of dividend are equal to

4°29 per cent. on the paid-up capital, and they were disposed for 1883 in the following fashion :—

On-ordinary capital …..... £13,725,933, equivalent to 4°68 per cent. On guaranteed and preferential CADMAD od ae eran Nelntiaya Banca 12,601,797 > 35 4:26 3 On bonus and debenture stock .. 8,254,643 BS 5 4°21 #4 Total payments …..... £34, 582,373 % 3 4-41 i Net available receipts …. £33,692,708 a ae 4°29

bed

The total distribution, it appears, exceeded the available net

receipts for the year by nearly £1,000,000. In explanation of the

TABLE X1X.—Statistics of Expenditure for the United Kingdom for 1883.

**

Table XIX. (below) contains a summary of the expenditure of the Working | railways of the United Kingdom for the year 1883, with the rate expenses,

8 ead Ba $ = – a 4 Contingent Working Expenditure. Ei eg o | oe) 24 a &® | ee = z = gg ne = O30! 6 : =| bar © a. .«|Ae ze | as "A nm, = 5 2 | a8 |oae/Ss2| & | 2 | 282) 2 |g |SesiS8elee| ase | 28] B45] £2 Country, | By | gS |S88|ES8| & | 5 | see] 22 | 2s ee /285 (282) Beh) ge | ene | az & Oo: B cn av ak ag be = So =SB= £2 | gs |#2p\ea=| g | & | S25 | $4 | 54 |AaE|EES G58] 858 32) See| 22 sv | ae | eee as | g | 8 | PA | & |B [bse eg isee| fae) se | gh) 2A 2 os a& | ge = 5 oS OSs Ses) & LED bell gl England Miles. £ £ | £ 2 i £ a I £ £ £ and Wales..| 13,133 [5,545,784 8,013,274 2,705,031, 9,705,382 1,384,598 /27,354,069 1,598,490 681,560 172,335|171, 237 314,13911,239, 878 338, 875 4,516,514 31,819,248 Scotland .,..| 2,952 | 774,038) 929,352*

471,806 1,096,011| 158,644) 3,429,851 181,047, 57,696 63,167) 19,883 45,657| 74,068 103,427| 544.945 3,974,796 Treland…. .| 2,484 ee 391,721, 130,909, 411,675} 80,595 1,439,876, 81,312 11,530) 6,821, 13,389} 11,010) 11,580 135,642) 1,575,518 Total ….1 18,569 16,743,798/9,334,347 3,307,746,11,213,068 1,623, 837|32,223, 796 1,860,849.739,256|247,032‘197,941 373,18511,324,956 453,882 5,197,101\37, 369,562 Working Expenditure per Mile open per Year. SE EE eee ee eee England Miles. | £ £ £ £ £ £ £ £ and Wales..) 13,133 422 610 206 739 105 2082 i 337 2423 Scotland ….| 2,952 262 314 160 371 54 1161 184 1345, Treland…...| 2,484 171 158 53 166 32 580 54 634 Total ….| 18,569 363 503 178 604 87 1735 my fl : | 280 2013

Total.

100 100 100

100

England / d. d. d. d. d. s. d. d, and Wales. ./226,351,389| 5°88 8°49 2-87 10°29 1:47 25 43 Scotland ….| 30,810,315] 6°03 7:24 3°68 8°54 1:24 2 28 44 Treland …... 11,735,532| 8-67 8-01 2°68 8-42 1°65 2 54 23 Total ….|268,897,236, 602 | 833 | 295 | 10°01 | 145 | 2 43 | ; 43 % Proportions of Working Expenses in parts of the Total Expenses. England per cent. per cent.|per cent.| per cent. Iper cent. | per cent. per cent. and Wales.. 17°4 25°2 8°5 30°5 44 860 : 14:0 Scotland …. 19°5 23°4 11-9 27°5 | 40 86°3 : 13-7 Ireland …... 26°9 24°9 8°3 26°2 5-1 91:4 8°6 Total …. 180 | 25-0 89 | 30-0 4°3 86-1 | | 13°9

1 Exclusive of receipts on railways in cases where the traffic is conveyed by mixed trains, 2 Exclusive of £51,335 received by the North London Company for working other lines.

mR ATL WwW A Y

apparent discrepancy it may be stated that some companies had invested a portion of thcir capital in the stocks and shares of other companies ; that interest is occasionally paid on the capital of com- panies whose lines are not open for traffic; and that interest on loan capital is not always paid out

of net earnings. The appropria- tion of the gross receipts to working expenditure and dividends, according to the tabulated statement of expenditure, is summarily as follows, in parts of the gross reccipts :—

Per cent. Maintenance of way, works, &. ..... 9°5 MEGEOMO MVE PAWEL 55. acs s eee scare 13°1 Maintenance of carriages and waggons …..... 4°6 pUTUMOTOMPENSES Me. ceo 2os +5. eens nec nee 15°8 General chances v4.0. sion. cen ee 223 Direct expenditure on working …..... 45°3 Contingent expenditure on working …... 73 Total working expenditure…..... 52°6 Payments of interest and dividends…..... 47°4 GYOSSIRECCUPES ns .5:0:6 04 sisvare ccisvenie vicisiow ve oles 100

tribution In 1842 the total receipts amounted to upwards of £4,250,000. In of traffic. 1852 they were nearly £16,000,000, and during the thirty-one years

following they are given at intervals as in Table XX. :—

- Ben #23 | PECs Average ‘ Receipts | S2 |3aee Year Miles open. | Total Receipts. per Mile. sae BBs me id S a ee | | =I Miles Per cent. 1853 7,488 £18,035,879 £2408 £46 ay

1856 8,523 23,165,493 2718 52

1859 9,772 25,743,502 2635 51 a

1862 11,208 29,128,558 2599 50 49 1865 13,039 35, 890,113 2752 54 48

1868 14,438 Ye oaks oad ae

1871 15,457 48,892,780 8162 61 47 1874 16,266 59,255,715 3643 70 55 1877 16,975 62,973,328 3709 71 54 1880 17,815 65,491,625 3677 71 51

1883 18,569 71,062,270 3804 1e 53

Thus the receipts were quadrupled during the thirty years from 1853 to 1883, whilst the mileage of railway open was increased by two and a half times. The receipts per mile increased notwith- standing their continual dilution by the accession of new lines. These results, taken together, indicate

the inherent elasticity of the railway and its seemingly inexhaustible resources.

Of the main trunk-lines, which constitute the foundation of the Tailway system, those which converge towards and terminate in London—the metropolitan lines—are more important than the provincial lines. London is the great heart of the country and is the chief centre of commerce ; moreover, the metropolitan railways, taken together, possess a greater variety of traffic than others ; hence they are selected for discussion illustrative of the growing magnitude and distribution of traffic. On the nine metropolitan railways, including the London and Blackwall and the North London, in operation in 1854-57, Table XXI. shows the receipts for these four years; and the receipts for the year 1883 derived from the twelve metropolitan companies then' in operation are added for comparison :—

— ee

: Receipts Average ° Receipts ot Year. Miles open. Total Receipts. per Mile, as | 1854 2579 £9, 354,425 £3627 £70 1855 2664 9,920,609 3724 iil

1856 2778 10,559,658 3801 73 1857 2834 10,743,118 3790 73 1883 8649 43,389,062 5017 96

In the early years—1856, for instance—the metropolitan rail- way mileage open constituted one-third of the total mileage open, whilst it produced nearly one-half of the total traffic receipts of the United Kingdom, insomuch that the receipts per metropolitan mile were two-fifths more than the average total reccipts per mile. Recently—in 1883—though the metropolitan mileage open was less than one-half of the total mileage open of the United Kingdom, it earned six-tenths of the total receipts; and the receipts per metropolitan mile were one-third more than the average total on the whole mileage of the country. Lastly, the increase of receipts of the metropolitan lines is greater than that of the entire system. Whether, therefore, the increase of receipts be compared with the total receipts or with the mileage open, the traffic of the metro- politan railways increases the most rapidly, and it is also of the greatest absolute magnitude. But, to bring out clearly the relative importance and progress of the traffic of different districts, let us separate what may be distinguished as the coast

lines to the south and east of the metropolis—the Great Eastern, and the railways south of the Thames—from the interior lines to the north and west,

the Great Northern, Midland, North-Western, Great Western, and the three local lines, the North London, Metropolitan, and District. The receipts may be correspondingly classified and compared with the reccipts in other parts of the United Kingdom (Table XXII.):— a ae ae

Year 1857, Year 1883. ange average | Recspts || average | Receipt Miles open. ip = Miles open.| Per Mule per Week. per Week. | Miles. Miles. | Metropolitan interior lines 1515 £86°5 6236 £95°9 Metropolitan coast lines .. 1319 56°5 2413 98°0 | Other English lines not in- cluded in the above 3616 51°5 4484 73°5 | Seottish railways …..... 1183 40°5 2952 50°1 | Wirish wanliwwaiyst 22) cence oe 1044 – 21°0 2484 22:1) This comparative statement shows some strong contrasts. In 1857

the densest traffic in England, averaging £86, 10s., over 1515 miles lay to the north and west of the metropolis ; the railway traffic of the country was very partially distributed ; and, taking London as the great focus, the traffic radiated and converged in all directions, with decreasing intensity as the distance from the centre increased. In the year 1883, on the contrary, whilst the metropolitan traffic continued to be the densest, the. traffic of the metropolitan coast lines per mile open had advanced so rapidly as even to surpass that of the interior metropolitan lines,—the receipts being £98 pcr mile per week against £96. The rapid development of the southern lines passenger traffic is, as will be shown, the cause of the great advance in receipts. Further insight into the comparative conditions of intcrior and coast lines may be got by taking four great inland lines (Great Northern, Great Western, Midland, and London and North-Western), which are lines of prepondcrating goods and mineral] traffic, and contrasting them with four great coast lines of preponderating passenger traffic (South-Eastern ; London, Brighton, and South Coast; London, Chatham, and Dover; and South- Western). In the annexed table (XXIIL) for 1883 the average fare per passenger is calculated on the assumption that the fares formed 80 per cent. of the whole receipts for passenger trains, and the average length of a

passenger's journey is got by taking 85 per cent. of the passengers as third class at 1d. a mile and 15 per cent. as first and second class at 12d. a mile.

OF SSS

*| Four Metropolitan | Four Metropolitan ' Interior Railways. Coast Railways. Per mile Per mile | open. open. | Average miles open …..... GASGn ie 1,381 a Passenger train milesrun ….} 54,425,924 | 8,799 22,606,006 | 16,370 Goods and mineral train miles MUU Feito ns cusseiuayeiere ce aereisiexs oe 63,663,432 10,291 6,567,793 4,756 Total train milesrun …..... 118,089,356 19,090 | 29,178,799} 21,126 | Number of passengers …..... 159,686,870 | 25,814 | 131,002,266 | 94,860 |Tons of goods and minerals CONVEVCU Mr. cia… tee ose 94,870,258 | 15,340} 10,365,093 7,505 | Receipts from passenger traffic | £11,234,047 | £1,816 | £5,755,000 | £4,167 | Proportion of total receipts | 386 per cent. oe 72°3 per cent ba Receipts per train mile….| 4s. 3-07d._ | 5s. 1°09d. Average receipt per passenger 1s. 4°88d. 10°05d. VASERAR CRTANG)ci mre ch cay. oie. Is. 1°50d. 811d, | Approximate average length of passenger journeys …... 12 miles eis 74 miles 56 , Receipts from goods, &c¢..... £17,831,467 | £2,882 | £2,202,137 | £1,595 Proportion of total receipts | 61°4 per cent. an 27-7 per cent 54 Receipts per train mile….| 5s. 7-21d. | 6s. 8°46d, Average receipt per ton …... 3s. 9°09d. a4 4s. 3°00d. oe otal Teeeiptsy.. cs… cee ee £29,065,514 | £4,698 | £7,957,137 | £5,762 Der urainprmniles ey… ete cab TIGNES |) NR 5s. 5°45d. 25 Direct working expenditure ..| £13,461,020 | £2,176 £3,621,907 | £2,623 | ECAR JT (eRe a Rees o 2s, 3°36d. ae 2s. 5°80d. Ba i Special net receipts …..... £15,604,494 | £2,522 | £4,335,230 | £3,139 | Per cent. of total receipts… 53°60 a 54°48 30 Receipts per train mile….] 2s. 7°70d. a 2s. 11°66d. es Gapital raised ….....6.0. £275,582,620 £44,550 | £94,983,202 | £68,776 | Net receipts per cent. of capital 5°66 * 4°56 re*

The coast lines, being freer from competition, gct higher rates both for goods and passengers; but the inland lines have the advantage in direct working expenditure per train mile, and a still greater advantage in the much smaller capital raised per mile of line open, so that, in spite of compctition and low rates, they earn 5% per cent. on their capital as against a little over 44 earned by the coast lincs. The greater capital outlay

on the coast railways seems to be due to the costliness of stations and carriage stock for a preponderating passenger traffic; and as this more than outwcighs the gains from higher rates the statistics support the generally accepted opinion that goods and mineral traftic on railways is profitable and should be encouraged and developed. Mr R. Price Williams, an accepted authority on railway statistics, supports this conclusion. Mr F. R. Conder, on the contrary, who has deeply studied the question, maintains that the heavy mineral traffic of railways should be rclegated to the canals, which, though slow, are low in their charges.

Limployés.—In 1856 Robert Stephenson estimated that 1 per Em- cent. of the population of the United Kingdom was maintained ployés.

232

by the railways then in operation, independently of the consider- able amount of labour employed on railways in course of construc- tion. On 31st March 1884 railway employés numbered in all 367,793 persons, or 19°69 per mile open, showing an increase of more than 50 per cent. on the proportion per mile in 1857, which was only 12°63. Table XXIV. gives details :—

| | Per Persons. Mile. |

Secretary s departmetile fo… 0. «cme: os owes or eee ne 4,199 “23 | General manager’s departments …..... 781 04 | Superintendent’s departments — Superintendents and assistant superintendents. . 143 Station-masters and clerks …....- ee Sensl aus 16,178 TEC ONG rj s aceciera Staessen 1 ‘cMseteale State ee 1,389 Guaads. 2.5.4 Saas «2 ae tas oe oe RR ely. 5,902 Signalmen and pointsmen …....:-..e0-2— 0: 19,012 WAGH CRC OME IORD an.ere Stevcareyarevsiny aes eres exenavet Siausseusieyaraitee 2,060 ea Shunters, porters, messengers, &c. .....25- 29,493 ays sie. | Goods manager’s departments— 74,177 | 3°97 | Goods and assistant managers …..... 113 ai ARCRUN ANGNCHET RS wit cf ciccte se selse sos oe wre es 17,058 IMBPEELOTO. ccs alas Becncs Hemeuaes ae acer oe 963 Guards and: PrAKeCSOON. gcse, 3% oiccereniare cre teres 0 Se 7,410 Shunters, porters, messengers, &c. ..... 44,169 mS ae Locomotive and carriage departments— 69,713 | 3°73

*Engineers and assistant engineers …..... 125 * ge AEDS 5.2758: 1092 16-79 veiele oeinede aauatsle io Pode 248 STV Spee gnden 60 paodnn ds cacse geo doo0us comidoe 2,013 Foremen, mechanics, and artisans …..... 47,130 Drivers and firemen 2.2. Jel. serdtmcres oO eens = 25,669 EEO RET 5 n;: siclavelal pis. $ eustsoigs 6 CPS slave ote Yemres Bic 43,141 |... =a Engineer's departments— 118,326 | 6°33 Engineers and assistant engineers …..... 201 be DP ramenbsmien Valen ace wee ss.cce sc Giamls as mores' aie 585 bo Clerics! Schrier. Sree ees toes is eee nalts Spo ee 782 $e MSOC ONE. rose mere Pate clahoe Clans slat cialis alae ©.ossuaua eta: 1,166 ae 58 POTOMIEN GWG (GABE o.oo oc ccrcyoinue'e 5 6s vin eserssees 8,020 a0 a0 Artisans and, MIGCHAMIER . ..ccccie ce cess cece cee: 10,539 oe "Fc Plate-layers, labourers, &c. ..... 59,316 s Ae 80,609 | 4:32 Storekeeper's departments …....000-0-eee- 2,820 15 Piles Geparrmaer es 5155.55.08 Ways sce ereracese whaisiecessiele «s 1,781 10 OAT OF. Seis elk Se Sse Dad eB ca ctuck daktae the esc 222 01 PELSOTA AN ad se oss iseee doe eels Seep es Fautlawtne 3,754 20 Canals, steamboats, docks, and piers …..... 8,004 43 Hotels, refreshment-rooms, and sundries…..... te 3,407 18 EB teal ate sae tager re weet Maa pors ete | 367,793 | 19-69*

From this table it may be estimated that there are now two drivers and two firemen for every 3 miles of line open. In 1857 there were only two drivers and two firemen for every 5 miles; and, though the train service has increased faster than the train mileage, the work of the drivers has sensibly diminished, each man on an average doing 20,950 miles as against 23,420 in 1857.

RAILWAY CONSTRUCTION.

The selection of lines of railway is mainly governed by the same principles as hold good for roads, but the cost of the rails renders it of greater importance to shorten the length of the route than to make slight savings in embankments and cuttings. The first step in the survey is to ascertain the positions of the watercourse and

watershed lines of the district to be passed through. The general | ©

direction having been selected by the help of an ordnance map, a sketeh-map, or a special reconnaissance survey, the river-crossings are to be examined and decided upon, and the points determined at which the watersheds are to be crossed and the approaches to bridges set out. Trial lines should be run between the points thus fixed, and the country should be carefully examined on each side of these before the route is finally decided on. Sharp curves and steep gradients are in themselves evils, involving special cost for maintenance and for working, although original outlay may be economized by the adoption of them. A straight and horizontal surface is assumed as the standard of perfection ; and the proper business of the engineer in laying out a railway is to harmonize the engineering and the financial conditions of the problem so as to yield the highest practicable return on the money expended, and to see that, whilst the railway may be neither quite straight nor quite level, it shall not be unduly costly in construction from ex- cessive cutting, tunnelling, and making of embankments, in order to obviate severe curves and gradients, nor excessively cheap from following the surface of the ground too closely and incurring heavy gradients and severe curves, and as a consequence heavy working expenditure.

Cuttings and Embankments.—Engineers endeavour so to plan the works of a railway that the quantity of earth to be excavated shall be equal to the quantity that goes to form the embankments. The earthwork is the foundation and support of the superstructure, and as such it must be uniformly firm, of hberal width, easy slopes, thorough drainage. Figs. 10 and 11 are type-sections of cuttings and embankments for a double line of way on the national gauge, showing the "formation" surface and the ballast on which the permanent way is supported, with the slopes, the side drains, and the feneing. Fig. 12 is a type-section of the permanent way on the national gauge, settled by Mr John Fowler for the South Wales Railway. Upon the formation level the ballast is deposited, 2 feet

in depth at the centre, dressed level, for about 22 feet in width for a double line of way. The sleepers and chairs are buried in tle

Fic. 10.—Type section of a cutting. ballast, and the rails partially also, these standing 2 or 3 inehes above the ballast. The intermediate space between the two lines of way is, as before stated, 6 feet, and, taking the lengths of the

Level of Rails

Fic. 11.—Type section of an embankment, sleepers at 9 feet, the total width for two lines of way over the

sleepers is 6 feet + 4 feet 84 inches + 24 inches x 2 (width of the rails) + 9 feet = 20 feet 14 inches; and it is seen that, as the

Fic. 12.—Type section of permanent way.

ballast is 22 feet wide at the upper surface, it extends to nearly 1 foot beyond the ends of the sleeper at each side and about 34 feet beyond the outer rails at each side.

The slopes of cuttings vary aecording to stratification, soil, direc- Cuttings.

tion of the vein, moisture. In gravel, sand, or common earth the slopes rise 1 foot for 1 to 14 or 2 feet of base'; in solid rock the slopes are nearly vertical. Cuttings are as deep as from 50 to 100 feet below the surface, and embankments as high above. The London and Birmingham Railway had upwards of 12 million enbic yards of excavation, and 104 millions of excavation in the original estimates, or above 100,000 cubic yards of earthwork per mile. The heaviest cutting on the line is at Tring, 24 miles long, averag- ing 40 feet deep, the greatest depth being 60. In the case of the great Blisworth cutting the strata were unequal in consistency. About halfway up the face of the eutting a stratum of limestone rock, 25 feet in thickness, was found, with loose strata below and above it, and it was necessary to prevent the lower stratum, con- sisting of wet clay, from being forced out under the superincum- bent mass by undersetting. A rubble wall, averaging 20 feet in

height, was built on each side underneath the rock, strengthened by buttresses at intervals of 20 feet, resting on inverted arches carried across

underneath the line.

A puddle-drain was formed

Fic. 13.—Blisworth cutting ; west end.

behind each wall, with a small drain through the wall to let off the water from behind. Fig. 13 is an elevation of the west end of the cutting where it is | _ about 40 feet deep, show- =. =

ing clearly the method = Ba of undersetting, and fig. ashe. 14 is a cross section of x= oe ae the side walls at the ~~ er, same place, where the ~ a – left-hand shows a sec- |=s- SSeS goss =. tion of the wall in the ~SS3== ita >”

i ies a ge Fic. 14.—Section of the same cutting. through a buttress, together with the invert and drains. One of

the walls is shown in front elevation in fig. 15. The New Cross cutting through the London clay, on the South-Eastern Railway, is 2 miles long, = 2c and is for some Z distance from= 80 to nearly 100 feet in depth. This cutting affords an example of the tendency of some soils to slip. The slopes of the cutting were finished at 2 horizontal to 1 vertical; and they remained as thus finished for

ee r n mi

Fia. 15.—Wall of the same cutting.

Tunnels.

RAILWAY

about two years, when, after continued bad weather, the slopes commenced slipping to such an extent that the line was rendered impassable for some weeks, and parts of the slopes were reduced to an inclination of 4 to 1, The Winchburgh cutting, on the Edin- burgh and Glasgow Railway, is 4 miles long and from 25 to 60 feet deep, through solid rock. It is succeeded by an embankment 13 miles long and 60 feet high, followed in immediate

succession by a stone viaduct half a mile long and 80 feet high. The Olive Mount eutting of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway is 2 miles long and at some places 100 feet deep.

Perhaps the most interesting case of embankment and cutting in combination is that of the crossing of Chat Moss, on the Liverpool and Manchester Railway. The moss was 44 miles across, and it varied in depth from 10 to 30 feet. Its general character was such that cattle could not stand on it, and a piece of iron would sink in it. The subsoil was composed principally of elay and sand, and the railway had to be carried over the moss on the level, requiring cutting and embanking for upwards of 4 miles. In forming 277,000 cubic yards of embankment 670,000 yards of raw peat were con- sumed, the difference being occasioned by the squeezing out of the water. Large quantities of embanking were sunk in the moss, and, when the engineer, Stephenson, after a month's vigorous operations, had made up his estimates, the apparent work done was sometimes less than at the beginning of the month. The railway ultimately was made to float on the bog. Where em- bankment was required drains about 5 yards apart were cut, and when the moss between them was dry it was used to form the embankment, Where the way was formed on the level drains were cut on each side of the intended line, and were intersected here and there by cross drains, by which the upper part of the moss became dry and firm. On this surface hurdles were placed, 4 feet broad and 9 long, covered with heath, upon which the ballast was laid.

Tunnels. —The relative costs of rock-cuttings and cuttings in clay do not greatly differ; for, not only does the vertical rock-

entting require less excavation than the wide yawning earth- eutting of the same depth, with extended slopes, but, when it is executed, the rock-cutting is not liable to the expensive slips which sometimes overtake the other, usually cheaper to tunnel. The tunnel (see fig. 16) under Callander ridge near Falkirk station, | on the Edinburgh and Glasgow Railway,

is a fair representation of

=

lway.

tunnels as usually constructed. It is lined with brick 18 inches thick, founded on stone footings of greater breadth, in order to throw the load securely upon the subsoil, as shown in the trans. verse section. The sides and roof of the tunnel are curved from footing to footing, so as effectually to resist the inevitable external pressure of the earth, to a span of 26 feet in width and a height of 22. The sectional view shows also the centering or timber framing employed in the building of the tunnel, which was braced diagonally and transversely to resist the unavoidable inequalities of pressure without alteration of form whilst the arch was in course of construction. Externally the entrances are built of stone, and the flank walls are 3 feet in thickness, with counterforts at inter- vals, This tunnel is not straight, but is formed on a curve of 1 mile radius, and is 830 yards, or nearly half a mile in length.

The Kilsby tunnel, on the London and Birmingham Railway, was rendered necessary by the opposition raised to the line passing through Northampton. It is driven 160 feet below the surface and is 2398 yards in length, 30 feet in width, and 30 feet high, constructed with two wide air-shafts 60 feet in diameter, not only to give air and ventilation but to admit light enough to enable the enginc-driver in passing through it with a train to see the rails

For depths excceding 60 feet it is |

|

233.

from end toend. The construction of the tunnel was let for the sum of £99,000, but, owing chiefly to the existence of unseen quicksands, the tunnel is stated to have actually cost nearly £300,000, or £125 per lineal yard.

The Box tunnel, on the Great Western Railway, between Bath and Chippenham, was another difficult and expensive work. It is about 70 feet below the surface, and is 3123 yards in length, or rather more than 12 miles ; the width is 30 and the height 25 feet. Where bricked, the sides are

constructed of seven and the arch of six rings of brick, and there is an invert of four rings. There are cleven air-shafts to this tunnel, generally 25 feet in diameter.

The tunnel under the Mound at Edinburgh (see fig. 17), on the Edinburgh and Glasgow Railway, of tunnels formed with inverts,— that is to say, inverted arches built under the rails. The figure is a transverse section, showing the truly circular arch of the tunnel, 28 feet in diameter and 20 high above the rails, built of brick 3 feet thick, stiffened with counterforts ex-

Sn a

Mound,

at Edinburgh.

Mound was a mass of loose earth and rubbish on a boggy soil, hence the necessity for the invert arch, on which the tunnel may be conceived to float.

The Shakespeare tunnel, or, more correctly, double tunnel, driven through the Shakespeare Cliff near Dover, on the South-Eastern Railway, is in fact two narrow tunnels, carrying each one line of rails (see fig. 18), 12 feet wide and 30 in extreme height, through

**

tYytighen GE.

|

OL I |

Fig. 18.—The Shakespeare tunnel, on the South-Eastern Railway.

the chalk, separated by a solid pier or wall of chalk 10 feet thick. The chalk is of variable quality, and the greater part of the tunnel is lined with brick, strengthened by counterforts at 12 feet intervals, which carry the weight of doubtful beds of chalk. The tunnel is 1430 yards, or upwards of three-

quarters of a mile in length, rising westward with an inclination of 1 in 264. The tunnd being within a short distance of the face of the cliff, the material excavated was discharged through galleries about 400 feet long, driven in from the face of the cliff, into the sea, —the first operation being to run a bench or roadway along the face of the cliff. There are seven vertical shafts from the surface, averaging 180 feet deep.

There were in 1857 about 70 miles of railway tunnelling in Great Britain, or 1 mile of tunnel for 130 miles of railway. There are now (1885) probably at least 100 miles of tunnelling. The cost of tunnelling has averaged £102 per mile. The longest tunnel is the Woodhead, at the summit of the Manchester, Shefficld, and Lincolnshire Railway, being 3 miles and 60 feet long. The tun- nelling on the Metropolitan Railway is noticed below, p. 239,

Bridges and Viaducts.—There are very few level crossings on Bridges.

English railways—that is, the crossing of one railway with another, or with a common road, at the same level—the chances of accidents having demanded, in general, the construction of bridges over or under the railway. The general appearance of an ordinary stone or brick bridge is represented by fig. 19, showing in elevation a bridge over or under the railway. The minimum height of a bridge over the railway is ruled by the elevation necessary to clear the top of the chimney of the locomotive. An excellent method of carrying roads over railways, where the height is limited and the span is moderate, consists in erecting flat-arched cast-iron beams over the railway, and throwing brick arches of small span between the beams upon their lower flanges, to carry the roadway. Thus the vertical depth from the soffit or crown of the main arch to the roadway above may but very little exceed the depth of the beam, which is apparent in the sectional view. This method of construction is, moreover, well adapted for skew-bridges, Cast-iron

a Ae, = %6

Viaducts.

Forth Bridge.

has, however, as a material for railway structures, been very gen- erally superseded by wrought-iron, forming plate girder bridges. Timber is now almost unheard of for railway bridges on account

a See eee TE a

—

poe

E E => Fic. 19.—Ordinary bridge over or under a railway. The left-hand side is for a cutting, and a bridge over the railway ; the right-hand side is for an embank- ment and a bridge under the railway ; the difference is in the foundations. of its want of durability and stiffness ; and such bridges as have formerly been built of timber in Great Britain are being rebuilt of stone, brick, or plate-iron. The longest viaduct in England is perhaps the Congleton, on the

RATLBWAT

Manchester and Birmingham Railway ; it is of stone, 1026 yards or more than half a mile in length and 106 feet high, and it cost £113,000, or £113 per yard run. The Dane viaduct, on the same line, is of brick, 572 yards long and 88 feet high, and it cost £54,000, or £96 per yard run, having 238 arches of 68 feet span. The Avon viaduct, on the Midland Railway, is of brick, 240 yards in length and 51 feet high, with 11 arches of 50 feet span ; it cost £14,000, or £60 per yard run. For comparison it may be stated that the Britannia Tubular Bridge across the Menai Straits, 616 yards long and 104 feet high, cost £600,000, or £974 per yard run. On the different lines entering London there are several miles of brick viaducts in the approaches to termini, and also at Manchester and other large cities and towns. Many interesting details might

be given as to bridges and viaducts of the larger kind, but we must- here confine ourselves to some account of the Forth Bridge, now in course of

construction at Queensferry, referring the reader for other examples to the article BrIDGEs.

LTP RE BEE EAT oe 5 7h ee

nee xX \ Se Bip ee &.

= a I. BO XK KOK ee <2 s

Fic. 20.—The Forth Bridge.

The Forth Bridge, designed by Mr John Fowler and Mr Benjamin Baker, is the largest and most remarkable railway bridge in the world. One of its spans is shown in elevation and plan in fig. 20. The bridge consists of 2 spans of 1700 feet each, 2 of 675 each, 15 of 168 each, and 5 of 25 each. Including the width of the piers, there is almost exactly 1 mile of main spans and half a mile of approaches by viaducts, making together about 14 miles of total length. 'The clear headway under the centre of the bridge is 150 feet above the level of high water, and the highest part of the bridge is 361 above the same level. Each of the three main piers consists of a group of four cylindrical piers of masonry and concrete, 49 feet in diameter at the top and from 60 to 70 in diameter at the bottom. The deepest pier is about 70 fect below low water, and the rise of the tide is 18 feet at ordinary spring tides. In the piers there are about 120,000 cubic yards of masonry and in the superstructure 44,500 tons of steel. The contract was let for the sum of £1,600,000, being at the rate of £645 per lineal yard. An impression of the magnitude of the bridge is derived from a comparison with the largest railway bridge in England, the Britannia Bridge, which has a span of 465 feet, the ratio of which to that of the Forth Bridge—1700 feet—is as 1 to 3°65. The site of the Forth Bridge is at Queensferry. At this place the Firth of Forth is divided by the island of Inchgarvie into two channels, which, being as much as 200 feet in depth, precluded the construction of intermediate piers. Hence the adoption of two large spans of 1700 feet each, between which the central pier is founded on the island midway across. The bridge is composed of three double lattice-work canti- levers, like scale-beams, 1360 feet in length, poised on three sub- structures, and connected at their extremities by ordinary girders 350 feet long, which complete the main spans. The bridge is taper in plan, varying from a width

of 120 feet—the distance apart of the lower members of the cantilevers at the piers—to a minimum of 314 at the ends, in order to confer a degree of stiffness laterally, for resisting irregular stresses, wind- pressure in particular. The columns above the piers, forming the basis of the cantilevers, are 12 feet in diameter. The lower booms, as well as the struts of the cantilevers, being the members in compression, are circular in cross section, this form of section having been selected as the most effective for resisting compressive stress. The lower boom is at the piers 12 feet in diameter, constructed of plates 1} inches in thickness. The size is gradually reduced towards the ends, where the diameter is 5 feet, made of plates three-eighths of an inch in thickness. Correspondingly the upper member of each cantilever is a tapering box-lattice girder, rectangular in section, 12 feet deep by 10 wide at the piers, and 5 feet by 3 at the ends. The central girders are 32 feet apart. The wind-pressure is assumed for calcu- lation at a maximum of 56 fb per superficial foot. It is calculated that the maximum possible stress on any member of the bridge is at the rate of 74 tons per square inch of section. The required ultimate strength of steel under compression is from 34 to 37 tons per square inch, and under tension from 30 to 33 tons. Between the two main girders the double line of way is to be carried on an

internal viaduct (see smaller figure in fig. 20), supported by trestles and cross girders. The way will consist of heavy bridge rails, Brunel section, laid on longitudinal sleepers bedded in four steel troughs, into which the wheels will drop in case of derailment, and then run on the sleepers.

Railway Stations.—Railway stations are either "' terminal" or Stations.

"intermediate." A terminal station embraces (1) the passenger station ; (2) the goods station ; (3) the locomotive, carriage, and waggon depéts, where the engines and the carrying stock are kept, cleaned, examined, and repaired. At many intermediate stations the same arrangements, on a smaller scale, are made ; in all of them there is at least accommodation for the passenger and the goods traffic. The stations for passengers and goods are generally in different and sometimes in distant positions, the place selected for each being that which is most convenient for the traffic. The passenger station abuts on the main line, or, at termini, forms the natural

terminus, at a place as near as can conveniently be obtained to the centre of the population which constitutes the passenger traffic. The goods station is approached by a siding or fork set off from the main line at a point short of the passenger station. Terminal branches of the railways—where, for example, there is a sharp incline—are sometimes worked by stationary engines and ropes to the point where the locomotive joins the tram. The loco- motive station is placed wherever the ground may most conveni- ently be obtained, at or near to the terminus; in some cases it is found at a distance of 3 or 4 miles. An abundant supply of good water and ample means of drainage are important at stations. There should be ample area of land to adinit of the greatest possible extension of accommodation, and the erection of buildings on land adjacent to the station grounds should be discouraged. Companies have been compelled to repurchase at greatly advanced cost land originally disposed of by them as "surplus," and generally with a view to building operations. When this course is adopted prudent managers should take care to secure in the conveyance power to repurchase the freehold at original prices, with allowance for out- lay in building or otherwise, by valuation.

In laying out the approaches and station-yard of passenger Arrange- stations ample width and space should be provided, with well- ment of defined means of ingress and egress to facilitate the circulation of termini.

vehicles, and the setting-down pavement should be as long as possible, to admit of several carriages discharging passengers and luggage at the same time. The pavement should be wide and sheltered from the weather by a roof, overhanging beyond the kerb, or spanning the roadway, but in all cases free from columns. The position of the main buildings relative to the direction of the lines of rails is the distinguishing feature in terminal stations. When space permits, the usual course is to place them on the departure side parallel to the platform, but they are frequently placed at the end of the station at right angles to the rails and platforms. Or these two systems are combined in a third arrangement, in which the offices are placed in a fork, between two or more series of lines and platforms. Of the metropolitan termini, the Great Northern

Plat- forms.

Roofs,

RAILWAY

passenger station, the Great Western, and the South-Western sta- tions are examples of the first class; the London Bridge, Cannon Street, Charing Cross, and Victoria stations (comprising the South- Eastern and the Brighton lines), and the Great Eastern and the Fenchurch Street stations (comprising the North London, Black- wall, North Woolwich, and Tilbury lines), are examples of the second class; and the London and North-Western station is an example of the third class. The first and usual class of stations commands the greatest length of setting-down pavement, ample space for booking and other offices, waiting-rooms, &e., and the shortest average distance for passengers and luggage from the offices to the outgoing trains. Nevertheless, where the traffic is various, involving the despatch of numerous trains to different 'points in quick succession, and necessarily with perfect regularity, the second system is the best. But where the frontage is limited, and where trains start at some distance from the entrance, there is inconvenience in the movement of luggage over a crowded platform. The third plan is probably the least commodious of the three ; but it has the advantage of affording two arrival platforms, with car- riage-roads alongside, the others having but one so situated. In all the classes, it may be observed, transverse lines are inserted with turn-tables, to place all the lines in compact communication for turning on or off spare carriages, loaded horse-boxes, or carriage- trucks. Independently of the turn-tables, the lines of rail are con- nected by switches or points converging towards the two main lines of rail, outgoing and incoming ; and thus the assortment and marshalling of trains may be effected by horse or engine power independently of the turn-tables. Each plan of station comprises one or more large turn-tables for reversing the engine with its tender together.

The correct arrangement and appropriation of the several lines of

railway in a terminal station materially affect the economical and efficient working of the traffic. It is essential that every traffic line, both in and out, should be provided with one or more spare sidings, in addition to those set apart for the break-vans, horse-boxes, and carriage-trucks, and for the locomotive department. All these lines should communicate with each other

by means of points and crossings, to allow of shunting with engine-power, and to reduce to the lowest limits the number of turn-tables or their substitutes. Curves ouglit never to have a radius of less than 800 feet.

The practice with regard to the height of platforms above the rails has varied cousiderably, the tendency being to raise them much higher than was usual at first ; 3 feet may be stated as the limit in this respect. Too much attention cannot be given to the necessity for obtaining the greatest possible width of platform. Where the platform is used on one side only, the width ought never to be less than 20 feet; and when both sides are required 30, or even 40, should be allowed. The best mode of constructing the platform is undoubtedly with stone slabs laid hollow upon longitudinal walls, so as to admit of carrying beneath it the water and gas pipes, telegraph or signal wires, and the general drainage, with free access to each. Cutting out for turn-tables and openings for cross lines of rails are frequently inevitable difficulties, which have given rise to various ingenious contrivances, as shifting-stages, drawbridges, &. By far the best substitute for the turn-table yet introduced is the traverser. If well made and carefully worked and attended to, the shifting of carriages from line to line can be per- formed without extra manual labour or interference cither with the rails or the platforms. The other objection is best met by the use of easy inclines, with crossings on the rail-level. Where the plat- forms do not exceed 2 feet in height and the surface is smooth, gradients of 1 in 10 are not too steep for luggage-barrows, nor are they dangerous in a crowd.

The carlier terminal railway stations were designed either with intermediate columns supporting the roof or with brick walls, vary- ing in number of spans from two to five or six. It often happens that in the course of a few years such stations have to be remodelled to meet the constantly increasing traffic ; and great difficulties are occasionally met with in the rearrangement of platforms which are wasted where lines of rails have been laid, whilst rails are wasted where platforms are placed, and where columns interfere. To allow engines and carriages to pass from one line of rails to another at the shortest possible intervals it becomes necessary to have diagonal crossings from one part of the station to another in many directions, while at the same time the free movements of pass- engers and luggage on the platforms must not be impeded. Thus there arose a system,

originated, it is believed, in the great Con- tinental termini, of constructing roofs in two spans, one covering the up lines of rails and the other the down lines. King's Cross passenger station is an example of this kind. The principle of wide spans for the roofs of railway stations, clear of intermediate walls or columns, was adopted in England probably for the first time in 1848-49, in covering Lime Street station, Liverpool, on the London and North-Western Railway, by one span of 153% feet. The extreme length of the roof was 374 feet. The new Lime Street station, it may be added, is covered by a roof of one span of 212 feet. Tythebarti Street station, Liverpool, on the Lancashire and

235

Yorkshire Railway, is covered by a roof in one span of 136 feet; there, as the traffic increased, the lines and platforms were changed so as to admit of treble the quantity of traffic being conducted, which would have been impossible if the roof had been built with sectional spans and columns. pany has been repaid the excessive cost of the single-span roof many times over in economy of working. The next single-span roof on a large scale appears to have been that of 212 feet covering the New Street station, Birmingham, in which five lines of way, belonging to different companies—the London and North-Western and others—meet and concentrate passenger and goods traffic of every description. The roof was 840 feet in length, with trusses or principals placed at intervals of 24 feet. of one arched plate-iron girder 15 inches deep, having a rise of 454 feet at the centre. bar 4 inches in diameter, from which the arch is strutted at inter- vals. This issaid to cover the largest area of any station in England. The Cannon Street station of the Charing Cross Railway is the Caunoa terminus of the City extension of that line, giving direct access to Street the City of London for the South-Eastern Railway, and linking the station.

It is averred that the railway com-

The principal consists

The ends of the arch are tied by a round tie-

Charing Cross station at the west end with the City. During the

year 1867—the first year the extension was open for traffic—about

8 million passengers used the Cannon Street station, of which nearly one-half were local passengers booked between Cannon Street and Charing Cross. The length of ground between the river Thames and Cannon Street is 855 feet, of which the fore-court occupies 90, the booking-offices 85, and the shed or covered portion of the station reaching to the river 680. The station is 201 feet 8 inches wide outside the walls and 187 feet inside. The whole of the station is built on a substructure of brick piers and arches, ex-cepting the booking-oftices and the part which is over Upper Thames Street. 'The ordinary piers are 5 feet thick with footings 8 feet wide, resting on a bed of concrete 10 feet in thickness, and the whole of the under structure is made available for storage and other purposes. The rails and platforms are carried across Upper Thames Street on wrought-iron girders 24 feet deep to 87 feet of span. The floor of this bridge is of creasoted Baltic planking 8 inches thick. The walls of the station are of brick-work, 45 feet high above the level of the platform. They are built in piers 6 feet 44 inches thick and panels 2 feet 74 inches thick. The roof is of one clear span of 190 feet 43 inches circular, having a rise or versed sine of 60 feet at the centre, composed of ribs constructed of plate- iron and angle-iron, and, like ordinary girders, 21 inches deep, each foot of each rib being ticd by a tie-bar of round wrought-iron 5y's_inches in diameter. The tie-bar rises 30 feet and the depth of the truss at the centre is 30 feet. One end or foot of the rib is fixed to the supporting wall and the other end is placed on rollers, by the aid of which the principal or truss is free to expand or to contract according to the variations of temperature. The trusses are placed at from 33} to 35 feet apart. The bookiug-offices, wait- ing-rooms, &c., are at the end of the station on the ground floor of the building, which above and below them forms the City Terminus Hotel. Parcels offices, stores, cellarage, &c., are provided in the basement, with hydraulic lifts worked by direct pressure from tanks in the towers at the south end. The used water is discharged into tanks about 9 feet above the level of the platform, whence it is again utilized for the general purposes of the station. There are nine lines of way in the station, of which eight run alongside five platforms, and one line is space for stock and for standing-room. The two outer platforms are employed for the short traffic to Greenwich and Mid-Kent and to Charing Cross, 184 feet wide by 522 and 486 feet long respectively. The general departure platform

is 665 fect long and 19 wide; and the two general arrival platforms, one on each side of the cab road, are 721 fect long by 124 wide. On this system there are two lines of rail to each platform, reckon- ing the general arrival platforms as one; accommodation is thus found for 4788 lineal feet of trains. These nine lines of way con- verge and merge in five lines of way over the bridge for a length of about 600 feet, constituting the station-yard. The first line, on the western or up-stream side, is exclusively for trains proceeding from Cannon Street to Charing Cross ; the second line is for trains approaching Cannon Street, whether from London Bridge, the country, or Charing Cross; the centre line is exclusively for trains from London Bridge or the country ; the fourth is the main down line ; the fifth, or east line, is for engines going to or from the engine depét at the far end of the bridge, or for engines wait- ing for their trains. The movements of the trains are regulated from the signal-bridge, which crosses the converged lines of way at a distance of about 140 feet from the south end of the station, by means of about forty pairs of points, with twenty-four sema- phore arms, eight of which are for trains outward and sixteen for trains inward. The signal-box on the bridge is 42 feet long and 9 wide, and contains sixty-seven levers, by thirty-seven of which signals on Saxby and Farmer's system are worked, and by thirty the points are worked. Several of the point-levers work the switches at both ends of cross-over lines. The signals lock the points and each other, so that no contradictory signals can be

given ; nor can ingress to or egress from a platform be given until the points are set accordingly. There are in the locking frame thirty-two slides and about a thousand locks, and an idea of the duty that falls on this apparatus may be formed from the fact

Jot eGo ee

The goods and mineral station at King's Cross may be selected as King's an example of such stations. It comprises coal depots and wharves, Cross potato-stores, engine-sheds, repairing sheds, stores, stables, and all goods the necessary offices, buildings, and appliances required for the station,

St Pan- eras.

that 775 trains have passed under the signal-bridge in a single working day (Whit-Monday), and that, each train being reversed here, a fresh engine has to be attached to it, the superseded engine being passed into a siding. In the course of thirty-five minutes one morning thirty-five trains were signalled and passed in or out of the station. The duty of signalling is performed by two men.

The cost of the works of the Cannon Street station, with the cost for Charing Cross station for comparison, is shown in Table XXV. (below). The substructure is reckoned to the forimation- level, inclusive of the public footway under Charing Cross station and the public roadway under Cannon Street station, but exclusive of the river abutment of the bridge. The superstructure includes the fore-court, booking-offices, fittings, towers, roof, gas and water mains, &c., excluding the permanent way.

The total cost of the works of the whole Charing Cross Railway, from London Bridge station to Cannon Street and Charing Cross, with the terminal stations, was £1,160,118. The cost of the land for the whole railway, after deducting the value of surplus land, Hungerford Bridge, pier tolls, &c., was £1,900,000, making a total for land and works of over £3,000,000. For this sum there are 44 miles of railway for double line, the cost being at the rate of £680,000 per mile. The works include two large bridges over the river Thames, a number of expensive bridges over streets, viaducts, and two large metropolitan termini. The cost for land at Cannon Street station was at the rate of £3, 15s. 7d. per square foot, and that at Charing Cross station was £2, 18s. 5d.

St Pancras passenger station of the Midland Railway is the most recently constructed metropolitan terminus. The approach to the land on which the station is built was crossed by the Regent's Canal, and in order to secure good gradients and suitable levels for metropolitan suburban stations the main passenger line is carried over the canal ; and, as a result, the level of St Pancras station is from 12 to 17 feet higher than that of the adjoining roads. The St Pancras branch, on the contrary, for effecting a junction with the Metropolitan Railway, leaving the main line some distance from the terminus, descends through a tunnel beneath the Regent's Canal and the

passenger station, as well as under a considerable length of the main line. The height of the rails above the ground- level admitted of the construction of a lower floor with direct access to the streets, built and arranged for Burton beer traffic. The floor of the station is supported on girders and columns extending from side to side and acting as a tie for the roof girders, which start from the ground-level and form the roof as a single arch. The ribs or girders forming the roof are laid to a clear span of 240 feet ; the walls built between the ribs are 2454 feet apart. The clear height of the ribs above the level of the platforms is 96 feet at the centre. The length of the station is 689 feet 4 inches. The lower floor contains 720 cast-iron columns set on brick piers, and 49 rows of principal girders across the station, with 15 rows longitudinally. Upon these intermediate girders are carried, and the whole is covered in with Mallett's buckled plates. The cost of the ironwork of the floor was £57,000, being at the rate of £3, 0s. 6d. per square yard. The roof girders, twenty-five in number, are placed at intervals of 29 feet 4 inches, except at the outer end, where the last two girders are only 14 feet 8 inches apart. The cost of the roof, including covering, with two gables and screens, amounted to £69,365, being at the rate of £40, 18s. per square of 100 square feet or 10 fcet square. If there had not been any floor-girders to act as roof-ties, the extra cost for ties at the level of the floor would have been about £1 per square.

Table XXVI. gives the spans and areas covered by the roofs of some of the principal London passenger termini :—

goods and mineral traffic of the company. Twelve lines of rail run into the goods-shed, with a platform at each side for the receipt and despatch of goods. On the outer side of the rails, within the building, space is reserved for the vans engaged in collecting and distributing the goods. The outer line of rails at the east side of the platform is used for unloading the waggons with the inward goods, and that on the west side for loading the outward goods. The inner lines nearest to these are used for the arrival of goods trains, for empty waggons, and for making up trains for departure. The waggons, after being unloaded, are taken by means of turn- tables and cross-roads to the departure side of the station, where the business of loading and despatching them is carried on. The platforms have each two rows of hydraulic cranes, of 1 and 2 tons lifting power alternately. The

receiving offices are on the plat- forms, but the general offices are adjacent to the main building.

| | Cannon Street. Charing Cross. The stables are under the platform ; the granary is at the south "Area, exclusive of fore-court ….| 152,632 square feet | 103,672square feet | | end of the goods-shed, through which it is approached by two lines Substructure… 6… cee ee ee | £74,962 fe £41,422 i) running through the middle of the shed,—two other lincs, one on

» per square foot…./ _.. 9s. 10d. 8s. each side of them, being reserved for full waggons. When emptied, oan eaeige | HE 208. 7a bee os sites the waggons are removed by two lines which run one on each outer

*. : —— es __*_| | side of the goods-shed. The shed and the granary are supplied*

Total ….....-.-0+- 2232, 224 vo £153,026 oy with water communication through tunnels under the roads to a

2 PO ee aca 29s. 7d. | | basin on the south, and thence to the Regent's Canal ; and lighters

can receive or discharge their freights directly under the buildings. On the west of the goods-shed are the coal depéts and staiths. The coal arriving at the station is discharged in some cases directly from the waggons into carts alongside ; in other cases it is dis- charged through hoppers on to weighing machines at a lower level, and thence filled into sacks. For this operation there is a frontage of 343 yards; and there is in addition a coal depét in Cambridge Street, adjoining the goods-yard, with a frontage of 196 yards. There is a coal and stone dock or basin connected with the Regent's Canal, where barges are loaded directly from the coal-waggons, either through doorways in the bottom of the waggons or by dis- charging the coal from the sides of the waggons into hoppers. There is also a hopper at the Cambridge Street depdt for the pur- pose of loading barges on the canal. Adjoining the canal basin there are numerous private wharves for bricks and other merchan- dise. To the north are the locomotive and carriage sheds for repair- ing the stock, also two engine-running sheds, one round and the other rectangular. The goods, mineral, and locomotive stations

cover an area of about 70 acres, and the total area covered by the goods and passenger stations and the running lines to Copenhagen tunnel is upwards of 90 acres. The principal goods-shed and granary is 300 feet long and 175 wide, and the area occupied by the goods-warehouses, potato-market, coal-offices, and other buildings amounts to 8? acres. In addition, 1 acre is covered by open sheds and 14 acres by the stables and the engineers' shops. The engine- sheds can hold eighty-four engines and tenders, and they, with the workshops, tanks, carriage-repairing shops, and sundry premises, cover 24 acres.! There are in the goods, mineral, and engine yards 284 miles of single line of way and more than 250 sets of switches, 200 turn-tables for waggons, and one for engines and tenders; of that length of line 11} miles of sidings are used for coal-waggons.

It is unnecessary to dwell at length on the arrangement of small terminal stations for branch lines. Where the line is single a single platform suffices, the trains being light and moving only in one direction at one time.

In fixing intermediate stations the first step should be to get a Inter- good map of all the places within the scope of the railway, and to mediate mark upon it the population of each place from the last parlia- stations.

meutary.census. The greater the number of stations, the more the travelling increases ; for quick and cheap transit creates traffic. Stations, especially important ones, should be on the surface rather than on an embankment or a viaduct or in a cutting. Facilities of access in all directions from the surrounding districts, with good roads in the case of passenger traffic, and good water and railway communication for goods depéts, are obviously indispensable. For safety and regularity there should be an uninterrupted view along the line of railway—no sharp curves or complication of over-bridges —in the vicinity of a large station. Intermediate and junction stations should be situated on dead levels, since, when a good

; ; Span |aoyereq| Cost per | Additional} | length of level can be had, with gradients falling from it both

Railway and Station. aol | Area. a Ms ey one ways, there is the greatest possible facility for working the traffic.

= Sa | sae) | Falling gradients towards a station are objectionable, but cannot

Feet. [Sq. yds.| £ s. d.| £5. a. in all cases be avoided. When the station is situated midway

London and North-Western, Euston, .. | 23,144 tees sees between towns of such extent as to cause an equal flow of traffic in

imation Te Ge ie Ae each direction, offices may be requisite on both sides of the line ; eat Northern, King's Cross …... Hs Or 22,808 sau bom v 5 5 di

Midland, St Pancras …..... +0… | g40 | 18,822] s11i°0 | 4°70 || but, where the bulk of the traffic teuds one way only, it will be

South-Eastern, Chanting (Crosse eee 166 hes 3400/60 0 desirable to concentrate it on that side which involves the larger

*annon Street…... 190 3,875 | 43 10 0 6 0 0 Py raiti eect ivcions, peta * | 98'807 tee = number of passengers and the greater extent of waiting space. Victoria Station, Great Western side| 120 ae 27:18 4 | with gable 1 The headquarters of the locomotive and carriage department are at Don-*

caster station.

Junction stations.

Midland building works,

RAILWAY

This rule, again, will be modified by the position of the town or the district whence the traffic is to be derived, especially if the railway lies on the natural surface and adjoins a public road, whether crossing on the level or otherwise. his last condition is the most frequent one ; and, as some portion at least of the traffic must be expected to depart from the platform opposite to the offices, provision must be made for crossing with the least amount of danger to the public. When the passengers are numerous in both directions, over-bridges, as before stated, are objectionable ; and in a surface-station

an archway under the line is frequently imprac- ticable. Some good authorities have adopted the plan of making the trains take up and set. down the passengers at one platform only, when the platform may be made rather more than double the length of a single train, having crossings in the centre to com- municate with both lines of rails, thus placing the trains when standing on the platform upon a loop-siding distinct from those lines. This system offers great convenience to the public when there is much first-class traffic and a large quantity of baggage ; and it is especially applicable when the station partakes of the character of a terminus, or is used asa receiver from branch or neighbouring lines, offering, as it does, great facilities for making up and receiving trains which may run over a portion only of the main lines, as well as for attaching and detaching the carriages intended or used for branch traffic.

The buildings and yards in junction stations may be placed in the fork between the two double lines of railway forming the junction, or beyond the point of jynction.

Locomotive stations comprise two departments,—the running and the constructing and repairing of engines and tenders. The chicf locomotive station of the Midland Railway at Derby may be taken as an example. It is contiguous to the passenger station, and is in communication with the main line by a number of sidings branching off at the north end of that station, near the bridge over the Derby Canal. The arca of ground enclosed is about 80 acres, of which 12 are covered by buildings. The walls of the erecting shops are 284 feet high ; those of the fitting and other shops are 20. The tools are 693 in number. The number of locomotives housed at Derby station (1885) is 289. There is room in the erecting shops for seventy-one locomotives. The workshops are capable of turning out 120 engines per year—say, thirty new engines with tenders, and ninety engines with new boilers, cylinders, and other working parts.

The carriage and waggon works of the Midland Railway at Derby are situated about half a mile south of the passenger station, with which they are connected by a double line of way branching out from the south end of the station. The works were built in 1875-76, on an enclosed piece of land 67 acres in extent, of which 193 are covered by buildings. There are 154

miles of single way within the enclosure. The workshops are built in blocks, separated by open spaces of at least 70 feet in width. They consist principally of seven large shops, of red brick, the walls being of a uniform height of 21 feet; four on the west side are devoted to the preparation of timber and the building and painting of carriages and waggons, and three on the east side to the manipulation of various metals, comprising the foundry and iron stores, the smithy and the machine and fitting shop. Each block of building is entirely surrounded by a 7-inch water-main continually charged with water at a pressure sufficient to throw a jet over the ridge of the roof of any of these buildings. Vehicular communication is carried on between the shops on the east and the west side of the works by means of traversing tables, the rails for which are laid the entire distance across the shops from north to south, and intersect the nine principal lines of sidings flanking the shops. Both steam-power and horse-power are used for moying the traversers.

The saw-mill is 320 feet long and 200 wide. In the cellar underneath all the main shafting, pulleys, and belting are placed. About a hundred loads of oak logs are converted into plank or scantling weekly. There are in all about a hundred machines for sawing and working wood. Outside the saw-mill are large cross- cutting saw-benches, with circular saws 6 feet in diameter, by which logs of deal are cut to the required length before being taken into the mill. The waggon-shop is 320 feet long and 200 wide. The carriage building and finishing shop is 384 by 200 feet wide. In the panel-shed fitted with louvre ventilators, mahogany panel boards, maple boards, &c., are stored for about two years, to be thoroughly dried and seasoned before being used in vehicles. The painting and trimming shop is 384 by 300 feet. It has seventeen lines of rails, each capable of holding ten ordinary vehicles. From the commencement to the finish, twenty-five distinct operations— pruning, filling up, rubbing down, painting, varnishing—are per- formed on a passenger carriage. Young girls and women—the children and widows of the company's servants who have lost their lives by accident in the service—are employed on the light work of sewing, stuffing of cushions and backs of carriages, french-polishing, washing and dyeing, cleaning and lacquering light brass-work and gilding.

The foundries, iron and brass, are 200 feet long by 90 wide. Two thousand tons of iron castings are turned out annually. There are the bar-iron stores 200 by 45 feet, the general stores 150 by 90 feet, and the mess-room 45 by 70 feet, providing accommodation for 500 workmen ; also two smiths' shops, one of them 225 by 200 feet, the other 140 by 200 feet ; the machine and fitting shop, 400 by 225 feet ; and the coal-waggon repairing shop, 350 by 300 feet. The carriage and waggon works just noticed are capable of turning out seven new carriages and eighty new waggons weekly. All the building of railway carriages for the Midland Railway is done at their works, and 80 per cent. of the new waggons are built here. Eighty per cent. of the carriages and 20 per cent. of the waggons are repaired here. The machinery of all kinds laid down for calry- ing on the business of the carriage and waggon works comprises 500 machine tools, 9 steam-engines, 1 gas-engine, 15 stationary boilers, 4 warming boilers, 8 steam traversers, 2 steam cranes, 2 steam travelling cranes, with a number of hydraulic cranes and overhead cranes.

One of the engine houses or sheds for engines on duty, at Gorton Engine-station, on the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire railway, is sheds.

shown in fig. 21. It is a rotunda of 150 feet in diameter inside,

Fic. 21.—Rotunda at Gorton locomotive station, to house the working engines,

and is capable of holding seventcen engines with their tenders, leaving the entrance and exit lines clear. The advantage of this atrangement over the ordinary polygonal engine-house is in the absence of pillars for supporting the roof, of which there are twelve for a twelve-sided polygon; in this building there is but one column, at the centre. To the left of the entrance is a furnace for holding live fuel, from which the engines are lighted ; and there are two lines of rail across the central turn-table, on one of which the engines enter and on the other depart. Between the rails of each radiating line a pit is constructed to afford access below the engines for inspection. The roof is of wrought-iron, surmounted by a louvre for ventilation, which is glazed to admit light freely. In the engine-shed of the North-Eastern Railway at Newcastle five ordi- nary engine-house rotundas have been replaced by a single rect- angular building 450 by 280 feet with five turn-

tables. This shed has berths for ninety engines, and the extra space enclosed by the rectangular building as against separate rotundas is used for executing minor repairs.

Station Fittings.—The use of switches and crossings is to form Switches.

a link of communication between one line of rails and another. They are either constructed with ordinary rails or with rails specially rolled, and are carried in cast-iron chairs spiked down to sleepers. The switch-rails are movable, and when worked inde- pendently are moved by rods to which heavy weights are attached, —the function of the weights being to retain the points in one position, and to act as a self-acting adjustment in restoring them to their normal position after they have been shifted for the passage of a vehicle or a train. When only one of the terminal rails is movable it is called a single switch and is used only on sidings or branch lines of rail. The double switches, being more perfect in

Faeing- points.

Turn- tables.

Traver- sers.

‘Water- eranes.

Signals.

238

action, are adopted on the main line; and, as a general rule, switches ou the main line are ordered to be laid with the points in the direction of the traffic, so that passing trains may run out of the points, and not into them. “ Facing-points,” as they are termed, are such as are laid on the main line, facing or pointing towards the regular advancing trains. Many accidents have been caused to trains by facing-points, improperly set or out of order, turning the train unexpectedly into a siding, when it was impossible to pull up in time to prevent a collision, or throwing the train off the rails altogether. So dangerous are facing-points felt to be, particularly on high-

speed lines, that on some railways they are absolutely forbidden at all except ct terminal stations and at intermediate stations where every train is ordered to stop. In some situations this rule can only be followed by sacrificing simplicity and increas- ing the number of backing-points ; but it no doubt diminishes the risk of accident.

Turn-tables are of two classes,—for turning carriages and waggons, aud for turning engines and tenders together. Those ordinarily used are of cast-iron, and carry two transverse lines of rails. They re- volve upon a central pivotand conical rollers near the circum- ference, which are upheld by and turn upon a cast-iron base bedded in ce- ment, or on a built foundation (see fig, 22). For turning engines and tenders to- gether turn- tables about 40 feet long are re- quired. A com- mon plan of table consists of two _ longitu- dinal balks of timber, to carry a line of rails, framed together with cast-iron |e beams in such aZZ way that the

Fic, 22.—Carriage turn-table for stations,

centre is supported on a pivot and the extremities on rollers. table revolves, in a pit about 4 feet deep, on a large circular race of cast-iron bedded on a firm foundation to carry the rollers, and

The

the motive force is applied by means of gearing. In situations where there is much traffic it is needful to extend the deck of the table laterally, like wings, to complete the circle, and so cover in the pit.

Traversers are a convenient substitute for turn-tables, particularly for working a number of parallel lines of rails. A traverser is-simply a low rectangular frame, made with two overhanging rails, to reccive carriages or waggons, and movable on rollers aeross the lines of rail, so as to receive the carriage from any one line of rail and deposit it on any other.

Water-cranes for delivering water to locomotives are too familiar to every one to need deseription.

Railway Signals.—The earliest passenger railways were opened without any fixed signals. Flags and disks, elevated on posts and pillars, were first employed, in various forms, and were worked on various codes. Sir Charles Hutton Gregory, about the year 1841, designed and erected at New Cross station, on the Croydon Rail- way, the semaphore signal, an adaptation of the old form of sema- phore used for telegraphing over short distances. This was the most important step ever taken in the development of railway signalling. The semaphore has been almost universally adopted for fixed signalling on railways. There are two arms, to the mght and to the left, to command trains arriving in either direction. The arm is turned out horizontally, in a position perpendicular to the post, to signal danger ; diagonally downwards at an angle of about 45° as a signal of caution; aud it is turned home, disappearing within the post, when the line is right for the approach of a train. But the general practice now (1885) is to work the semaphore in two positions only,—at danger and at caution. It is thus always in sight, and its position can be identified without hesitation. To make the signal system safe there must be clear definition and strict enforcement of the duties of the attendant ; good men must be seleeted at adequate pay, and they must have convenient, warm, well- fitted lodges, with ample window-space, within which they may keep a constant watch over the line without exposure to weather. At junctions and other important signal-stations the

lodges should be raised some height above the surface, to give perfect supervision in every direction and prevent distraction. At night the place of semaphores or disks is supplied by large and powerful lamps with reflectors, capable of showing lights of three colours,—a white light, a blue or green light, and a red light, signi- fying respectively safety, caution, danger ; or, as in general practice, two lights only are shown,—red and green.

Signalling has been a subject of much controversy, and has been divided into two main systems. In "negative" signalling the normal position is that of caution, or that of safety, as the praetice may be, and the signal is only turned on to danger when specially required for the protection of the station

on the line. On the other hand, the " positive" system presupposes the normal state of the signal to be that of danger, so that, if the signalman neglect his duty to lower the semaphore when the station is clear for the passage of an approaching train, the train is bound to stop. The positive system has long been in suceessful operation at all large and important junctions. In such a situation the use of a stringent code is manifestly conducive to the greatest degree of safety, as by the unavoidable intersections of the lines of rails there are many chances of collision. The positive system has been merged in

what is known as the block system of signalling,—that is to say, Bloek the positive system has been on most railways extended to every system,

station on the lines in combination with telegraphic signalling. The best, perhaps the only, safeguard against error on the part of the persons in charge of trains is to be found in the adoption of the absolute block system, and of means for enabling engine-drivers to observe signals well in advance. The absolute block system con- sists in dividing the line of railway into intervals of convenient lengths, and by means of telegraphic and fixed signals allowing only one train at a time on any single length of single way. The signalman at station A does not send a second train to station B until he receives a signal from station B that the first train has arrived there ; meantime the signal at A stands at danger until the man at B signals the arrival of the train at B. Under the " per- missive block" system it is simply permitted to signalman B to block signalman A in the event of anything occurring at station B that may render that course advisable. But, supposing that a train has just left station A, then the message from B comes too late to enable signalman A to prevent the train from running into the obstruction at B. The permissive system has been well tried on the principal railways, and is preferred on some lines because it admits of trains being passed on one after another with greater rapidity than on the absolute block system. But it does not afford much protection, and it is now generally preferred to work on the absolute block system, and, for the purpose of doing so effectually, to erect intermediate stations on lines of constant traffic, so as to taal shorter intervals for blockings and obviate the delay inci- ental to unduly long intervals. The average distance apart of passenger stations is, say, 3 miles, but the distance of signal-sta- tions,

whilst it seldom exceeds 4 niles, is frequently only a quarter of a mile, and the average interval may be taken as 14 miles. Dis- tant signals—that is, signals placed at a distance in advance of points of danger and worked by wire communication from the signal-box—were, it is believed, first introduced on the North British Railway at Meadowbank station near Edinburgh in 1846, after the opening of the Hawick branch. In 1852 the Great Northern Railway was completely fitted with distant signals of the semaphore type. Distant siguals are occasionally fixed at 1500 yards' distance ; but beyond 800 yards their action is uncertain, and it is checked by a repeater—electric or mechanical—by which, by way of confirmation, the signal is returned to the signalman. As railway junctions were multiplied it became apparent, not only that distant signals were to be provided for distinct lines, but that concerted action should be established between signals and switches. They are said to be connected when they are simply

coupled together and are moved simultaneously. They are said Inter- to be interlocked when the necessary movement of the switches is locking completed before that of the signal to safety is commenced ; and, system.

conversely, the movement of the signal to danger is completed before the movement of the switches can be commenced. This is the fundamental principle of the interlocking system of signalling now generally practised. By the combination of the absolute block system and the interlocking system the greatest possible number of trains are enabled to travel over one pair of rails in a given time. At Cannon Street station, at the busiest time of the day, eighteen trains arrive and eighteen depart within an hour; 108 operations of shifting switches and signals, by means of sixty-seven levers or handles, have to be performed in that time. On the North London Railway, at Liverpool Street station, 250 trains pass over the same rails in a day of nineteen hours, averaging only four minutes between trains ; frequently only two minutes elapse. The number of trains daily using Moorgate Street station on the Metro- politan Railway is more than 770, involving twice as many move- ments of engines—1540 movements—on four lines of way in nine- teen hours, and every movement is separately signalled. This, of course, could not be performed without the aid of electric instru-

RAILWAY

ments, to enable the signalmen to communicate with each other,

and to have a constant record on the faces of the instruments to show what is being done.

239

The side walls are three bricks backs of the walls are carried The arch was ordinarily built making 224 inches of thickness; but the reased occasionally to eight, nine, or ten The haunches of the arch are backed with concrete. The footings of the walls rest on concrete foundations 30 inches in thickness. A drain-pipe 18 inches in diameter is laid longitudinally along the middle of the tunnel. The whole of the tunnelling of the District Railway, of which Mr Fowler was the engineer, was put in with open cuttings. Two trenches 6 feet wide were sunk to receive the side walls, which were built up to a level 4 feet above the springing of the arch. As the construction of the walls pro-

ceeded the timbering was removed and replaced by concrete backing behind the walls. The earth in the middle, called the " dumpling "

or core, was excavated to such a level as to admit of the centering being put into position for the turning of the arch. When the arch was built and the centering removed, the dumpling, which had been utilized for transport, was excavated down to the floor-level from the ends, whence the stuff was conveyed away. By this economical method of procedure the only earth and gravel that required to be lifted was that which was excavated in forming the trenches for the side walls. It was raised by means of steam- cranes travelling on temporary rails laid by the sides of the the centering for the arch was supported on

mple and less costly than ordinary centering.

s shown in section in fig. 23. Inverts, or in-

were laid in across the bottom, between the footings. alls, where, from the nature of the soil or from excessive

high above the level of the rails.

or 27 inches in thickness, and the down vertically to the foundation. with five rings of bricks, number of rings was inc rings.

METROPOLITAN RAILWAYS.

Railways designed for the local service of large cities are neces-

sarily either sunk below or raised above the level of the streets. The late Mr Charles Pearson, solicitor to the City of London, was the originator of the system of intra-metropolitan railways. He

worked at the subject from the year 1837. 'The Metropolitan and

the Metropolitan District Railways in and around London are ex-

amples of the underground system. In 1854 the first Act of Parlia-

ment was passed; the works were commenced in 1860; the first

section of the line—Paddington to Farringdon Street—was opened

in January 1863, Mr John Fowler being the engineer. Several con-

secutive extensions into the City and towards Westminster and the

London Mansion House were made at different times, until the "inner inner _cirele" was completed in October 1884, thirty years after the passing arele. of the first Act, and twenty-four years after the commencement of the work of construction. The inner circle of railways as con- structed is the direct outcome of the recommendation of the Lords' Committee of 1863, that they should abut upon, if they did not actually join, nearly all the principal railway termini in the metro-

polis, completing the circle by a line on the north side of the Thames. The total length of the inner circle is 13 miles and 176

yards. About 2 miles of this length are laid with four lines of rails, and there are twenty-seven stations on the cirele at an average distance of half a mile apart. The combined length of the two systems, including the extensions beyond the inner circle, amounted in Deeember 18838 to 40 miles.

The cost of the Metropolitan Railway system, 22 miles in length,

in December 1883 has already been stated as £500,000 per mile,

and that of the Metropolitan District Railway system, 18 miles in length, as £374,000 per mile. In 1871, when the works had been completed and opened from Moorgate Street to Mansion House station, the capital expenditure by the District Railway Company for works and equipment of 74 miles of double-line railway was officially stated to be £5,147,000 ; and by the Metropolitan Railway Company £5, 856,000 on 104 miles, —subject to deduction in respeet

of surplus lands. The combined cost for 174 miles was at the rate

of £630,000 per mile—the greater cost per mile being, no doubt, due to the greater proportion of underground work. 'he cost of the 14 miles recently opened between Mansion House and Aldgate stations was about £450,000, or about £400,000 per mile. The longer axis of the inner circle is about 54 miles in length, east and west, and the shorter about 2 miles long at the widest part, north and south. The line runs at very various levels, traversing the sloping ground that stretches from the river Thames towards the heights of Hampstead and Highgate. Several natural sewers, formerly clear brooks or tidal channels, now covered, are traversed by the railway. They occasioned many difficulties and great out- lay, as they required to be conveyed across the line in specially con- structed conduits. The Ranelagh sewer, for instance, is carried under the Metropolitan Railway at Gloucester Terrace in a brick- built channel 9 feet wide by 8 high ; and over the District Railway at Sloane Square station im a cast-iron tube 9 feet in diameter, supported on wrought-iron girders of 70 feet span.~~. The Fleet Ditch had to be crossed five times. The average level of the rails of the~~

~~District Railway, which traverses the old bed of the river and the swamps of Pimlico and Bridge Creek, is 13 feet below Thames high~~ water mark ; whilst that of the northern part, on the Metropolitan Railway, is 60 feet above that datum, making 73 feet of difference of level, and giving rise to heavy works and steep gradients at the west and east ends of the circle, Cuttings 42 feet deep and a tunnel 421 yards in length are found at Campden Hill on the west; and cuttings 33 feet deep and a tunnel 728 yards in length at Clerken- well on the east, on gradients of 1 in 75 and 1 in 100 respectively. The works of construction consist of covered ways, tunnels, and open cuttings with retaining walls. The cost of property precluded the use of ordinary open cuttings with slopes. The covered ways were formed by making open cuttings in the first place and then building "open" or artificial tunnels, and covering them in, so as to restore the surface. The sides of the cuttings were made vertieal or nearly vertical, and they were supported by timber framing or poling boards till the masonry of the tunnel was completed. The line from Paddington to Moorgate was made in this way with a mixed gauge—that is, the 7 feet gauge and the 4 feet 84 inch gauge in combination—to take the traffic of the Great Western Railway as well as that of national gauge lines. The covered way was therefore made 284 fect wide and 17 high for the mixed gauge, and the arch is elliptical, built of seven "rings" or courses of brick, with side walls three bricks or 27 inches thick, on footings 4 feet wide. At the junction of a branch with the main line a " belt- mouth" or expanding arch was coustructed in which the span was gradually enlarged to 60 feet. The covered way on the extension, where the national gauge alone was laid, was 25 feet wide. The normal or standard type of arched covered way is 15 feet 9 inches

excavations. Again, the core, and was si The complete arch i verted arches, of the w

My NI

Fig. 24. Fic. 23.—Metropolitan District Railway. Type section of covered way; brick h

arch. Fic. 24.—Metropolitan District Railway. Type section of covered way.

lateral pressure, the floor was thought likely to rise. When there was not sufficient depth for a brick arched way the side walls were made, as shown in fig. 24, of briek and concrete, in bays 8 feet wide, of piers and recesses, spanned by cast-iron girders from 18 to 30 inches in depth, carrying jack-arches between them. The average cost of the arch-covered ways, 25 feet wide, was about £40 per lineal yard, as against £52 per yard for the girder-covered way.

On the inner circle there are three tunnels,—the Clerkenwell Inner tunnel, 728 yards long, of which the level of the rails was from eircle. 29 to 59 feet below the surface of the ground; the "widening " tunnel, 733 yards long, parallel to the Clerkenwell tunnel; and the tunnel under Campden Hill, 421 yards in length. Even when the utmost precantions y are taken, tunnelling through a town is a risky operation. Settle- ments may occur years | after the completion of the works ; water mains may be broken in the streets and in the houses ; stone staircases may fall down; and other un- pleasant symptoms of instability may show themselves. The cost of the tunnel of 25 feet in width was at the rate of £63 per lineal yard. Open cuttings are 284 feet in clear width on the original line of mixed gauge and 25 feet wide on the extensions. The

LOH}

SS

Sssst

— SSS

Covered ways, tunnels, &e.

Metropolitan District Railway. Type brick and concrete, in section of open cutting.

11 feet bays, consisting of piers 3 feet wide on the face, and recesses

between the piers 8 feet wide. They are inclined backwards with a batter of 14 inches to 1 foot. The foundations are 5 feet below the level of the rails,

and the thickness of the walls at the base is 40 per cent., or two-fifths of the height. Occasionally, where the depth is considerable, the thickness is less, and one or two rows of

cast-iron struts, according to the depth, are placed between the walls at the upper part to take the thrust. A section of open cutting with two rows of struts is shown in fig. 25. The cost of open cuttings 25 feet wide and 25 deep was, say, £67 per lineal yard, or with one row of cast-iron struts £55 per yard. With two rows of struts for a depth of 42 feet, the cost was £108 per lineal yard. It was the intention originally to make the stations as well as the railway strictly "underground," and those at Baker Street, Portland Road, and Gower Street were so constructed. At Baker Street a segmental arch of 45 fect span and 10 feet 4 inches of rise extends over the entire length of 300 feet of platform. The cost of such a station, including booking-offices, restorations, and other contingencies, amounted to £18,000. On the extensions the stations were, when the conditions admitted it, placed in open cuttings, roofed over, 300 feet long, with platforms 15 fect wide. The average cost exceeded that of the same length of ordinary covered way by from £14,000 to £22,000. Not only sewers but gas mains and water mains occasionally demanded very expensive diversions. In passing Broad Sanctuary 2000 feet of gas mains, ranging from 14 to 30 inches in diameter, were diverted ; and in simply crossing High Street, Kensington, 600 feet of pipes of from 3 to 30 inches bore were diverted. In passing a sound building on a good foundation the work was executed in short lengths, with carefully timbered trenches quickly followed up by the con- crete and brickwork of the retaining walls or covered way. Under the houses of Pembridge Square the side walls of the railway were constructed in short lengths, and to form the roof of the covered way main girders of 25 feet span were slipped between the walls of the houses at convenient places, between which jack-arches were built. At Park Crescent only a floor of old ship timber separates the kitchens from the railway. The permanent way originally consisted of wrought-iron flange rails with longitudinal sleepers and then of steel flange rails; but these have been gradually re-

\

ee

Glasgow City and District

Railway.

New York elevated railroad.

ERIE WIN : WS: \S

N |

y Yaw

Fig. 26.

placed by double-headed rails in chairs, Fig. 26 shows a section of the covered way under Queen Victoria Street, with the main sewer underneath and the galleries for pipes, &c., at the sides.

The Glasgow City and District Railway will supply important links of communication between the railways on the north side of the river Clyde. The line extends from College station, High Street, by George Street and Regent Street, crossing Dumbarton Road to the existing Stobcross line, over a length of nearly 25 miles, almost wholly underground. Of this length 1700 yards, or nearly 1 mile, are tunnelled and 1000 yards are covered way. The tunnels are arched with four rings of brick in cement, toa clear height of 183 feet at the crown and 27 feet in width, for two lines of way. The covered way is arched over with brick.

We may take the "clevated railroads" of New York as an instance of metropolitan railways for local service above ground. In 1867 the first attempt was made to improve existing means of transit between the residential and the business quarters of the city by the construction of an elevated railroad worked by a wire rope and astationary engine. The railroad passed into other hands in 1872, and the New York Elevated Railroad Company was formed. The lines of this and of the Metropolitan Elevated Railroad Company are now worked together by the Manhattan

Railway Company. From the southern terminus of the former railway at South Ferry diverge the lines by which the eastern and western sides of the city are traversed. ‘Junctions are made with the Grand Central Depét of the New York Central and other railroads, and with the New York City and Northern Railroad. In the beginning of 1880 the elevated system was worked over 344 miles of line; 165,000 passengers on an average were carried per day,—the largest number carried in one day being 274,000. The trains run every two minutes in the morning and evening, when the fares are 5 cents or 24d. for any distance ; and in the quieter hours of the day every four or five minutes for a general fare of 10 cents or 5d. The working charges

RALLWAT

amount to about 63 per cent. of the gross earnings. On the New York Elevated Railroad the railway is supported on square wrought- iron lattice-work columns let into cast-iron base blocks founded on brickwork and concrete, at distances of from 37 to 44 feet apart. Where the street traffic is crowded a N.¢ a, §

single row of ¢olumns is planted in Gazz a

the line of each curb, on om upper es ends of which a pair of longitudinal |

girders are fixed to carry a line of Za bit way, 224 feet high above the street level, as shown in fig. 27, at each side of the street. In other situations the two lines of way are supported at a height of 21 feet on longitudinal girders in the middle of the street, fixed to transverse girders, which span the street and are carried on columns at the curbs. A third ar- rangement is adopted where the columns are planted in the street at a distance transversely of 234 feet, as in fig. 28, each carrying a line of rails at a height of 18 feet, and con- nected at intervals by arched bracing to steady the structure. In this il- yn lustration the street is occupied by a double line of tramway. 'The rails are of the Vignoles pattern, of Bes- semer steel, weighing 50 tb per yard, spiked to cross timber sleepers, and guarded by two longitudinal timbers, one on each side of each rail. The sharpest curve on the main line has 90 feet of radius. The gradients con- form, for the most part, to those of the streets, and the steepest gradient is 1 in 50 for a length of 800 yards. The traffic is worked with outside cylinder, four- coupled wheel, bogie-truck locomotives, weighing in working order 194 tons. The driving-wheels are 34 feet in diameter, and the

———

QD

SZ

=sTSatsees

Fic. 27,—New York Elevated Rail- road, Square lattice-work column.

PARP

Fia. 28.—New York Elevated Railroad. Section.

cylinders 12 inches in diameter with a stroke of 16 inches, The cars are of the usual American type, entered from each end, 45 feet long and 8 wide,

with seats for forty-two passengers. They are placed on two bogie trucks, and weigh 12 tons. The trains are provided with continuous air-brakes. The stations are about one- third of a mile apart ; the platforms are 200 feet long and 13 wide. aa cost per mile of double way is given by Mr R. E. Johnston as ollows :—

Foundations, columns, girders, superstructure, and permanent way .. £57,696

ule SF We pee One ome mrigede gear dao Cl Onnnr rae Docaae Tan aa ares 12,

PIMC MMIC OR OEIN OS 71) cpcaiar ale sNoxeranarateiayes eeeloerelofs Gis mica svelaveGhesiesioikdlotaiesl« Bye 4,

AGRON CARS 5 5 dievs.sisvbte 6 Galan R40 Grater are ane eee: «ge a ahah «oun alee 1 Beals 7,680 AR OGAL ei WINS 5 A, oka tge = 4 @ satauacacaislons lata. +, gbialale, Seta yale espace £81,376

No payment has been made for way-leave along the streets, nor for compensation to frontagers, though it is known that in the residen- tial quarters traversed by the railroads rents have in many instances, at least, been depreciated to the extent of 50 per cent.

PERMANENT WAY.

The permanent way consists of rails, chairs, spikes, keys, and sleepers laid in a bed of ballast deposited on the formation. The sleepers or substructure should be bedded on broken stones, cinders, or gravel, at least 12 inches in depth under the sleepers, without

rat nw 2 OY

any clay or other material in it that might interfere with the

24]

Steel rails are now very generally used instead of iron ; and indeed Steel it may be affirmed that but for the introduction of that material rails.

Gauge. Gauge.—The measure of the standard or British national gauge | for rails and also for the wheel tires of locomotives the railway of railways is 4 feet 8} inches of width between the rails forming a | system would have broken down under the enormous growth of line of rails or a way. There are many other gauges in existence | traffic. Rails of wrought-iron on the early railways lasted about in different parts of the world. In England the gauge of 7 feet, | twenty-five years; those of later date have been worn out in from originally adopted on the Great Western Railway, was known as | five to ten years and in certain situations in twelve months, mainly the "'broad gauge" in contradistinction to the ordinary gauge of | owing to increased traffic, heavier loads on the engine-wheels, in- 4 feet 8} inches, which was for a long time known as the " narrow | creased speed, quicker stopping and quicker starting. Steel has gauge."' But the 7 fcet gauge has been to a great extent replaced |. come to the rescue both in the engine-wheels and in the rails. by the 4 feet 84 inch or national gauge, and it is being gradually | Loads of from 15 to 18 tons are now placed with impunity on the replaced altogether. The lengths of line now (1885) laid on the two | single wheels of engines as well as on coupled wheels, while it gauges on the Great Western Railway are as follows :— appears from the investigations of Mr R. Price Williams, a leading

Vittes. Yards. authority on permanent way, that a fully proportioned bull-headed Vee ot adc ete 6.006, 2 en al. 6 5 CN aes, 183 924 rail of steel outlasts fifteen or eighteen iron rails. Steel rails are PR ROC SACO o 3.0… 2's s7e. sieicieayeieisierem oeeteomiee prec ees oasis 243 1034 not merely stronger or harder but, owing to their texture, are worn 4 feet $3 inch we bed? thosieuiagh wenetaiok Be ges 594 away only by simple abrasion, whereas iron rails separate out into the Great Western mie. 84 946 strands as soon as the outer coating that binds them together is : — — worn off. Mr Alfred A. Langley laid down in 1874 samples of Total length of line …..... 0. sess eee teaser eens 2300 1738 permanent way near Stepney station on the Loudon and Blackwall The name of "narrow gauge" has now ceased to be applicable to | Railway, where upwards of 300 trains a day passed over a single line the standard gange, and is reserved for gauges of much less width, — of way. The weight of each train was on an average about 150 tons, the metre gauge and others of from 2 to 8 or 34 feet wide. Why a making a total of about 45,000 tons daily over one line of rails, fractional

measure of gauge should have been selected is a question | The rails are both of steel and of iron, weighing 80 Ib per lineal which has puzzled many people. The fact seems to be that the yard and keyed in cast-iron chairs on cross rectangular sleepers. track of the original carts or trains—5 feet wide outside the wheels— | The greater number of the wrought-iron rails had to be turned was takcn as a standard for the gauge of rails, which was measured | @fter one year and three-quarters, during which period they had outside also. The width of the single rail at the top being originally | Worn down about one-eighth of an inch ; but the necessity for re- 14 inches, the width for the two rails together is 34 inches, which | V€TSINg did not arise from the wear itself, but because they gave leaves 4 feet 8} inches for the inside measure or true gauge. There | Way in places, either bulging or splitting. The steel rails had are in the United Kingdom a few railways of gauge narrower than | Worn about one-sixteenth of an inch in the same period. About the standard gauge, of which instances occur in the following | 27,000,000 tons had passed over the line. lines :—Festiniog, 1 foot 114 inches; Talyllyn, 2 feet 6 inches; The rails generally, indeed almost universally, used for the way Kinds of Dinas and Snowdon, Southwold, Isle of Man, Manx Northern, | of railways are the double-headed, the bull-headed, and the flange rails, Ravenglass and Eskdale, Ballymena and Larne, each 3 feet. The | Ot Vignoles rails (in the United States, Germany, Canada, and following statement (Table XXVIL.) comprises the gauges of the | Mexico), the double-headed and the bull-headed rails being keyed principal railway systems in the world :— into cast-iron chairs spiked to sleepers, the flanged being laid upon : and fastened direct to the sleepers. The principal advantage of ane ft.in.| | the flange rail is the facility with which it can be attached to the Great Britain standard gauge| 4 84! Erowailinmeaeages {4 8}| | Sleeper with fastenings of a simple description. The disadvantages Ireland, standard gauge ….| 5 38 ; ita 4 91 | are that it cannot be turned or reversed when the head is worn, as Pena Pearess ErOVOlne 4 8} Unies rittsssss | 8 01) the double-headed rail may be, and that the rigid attachinent of Russia, standard gauge ….] 5 0 eee oe 3 0|| the rail to the sleeper causes a greater degree of disturbance of > re FA BSe NURS canesaneses 2 0] | the way and involves more labour for maintenance than in the case Se ieee 3 6 5 6 | | of the double-headed rail. The double-headed rail is made heavier a pel, etpertand , { 4 g}| | for the same class of traffic than the flange rail; but it is also Antwerp and Ghent

…..... ee | ee 4 2) | stronger and is easily bent to curves, although owing to the mode India, prevailing gauge ….| 5 6 3 6| | of attachment to the chairs by wooden keys there is a lability ” moe ee caer ot Ai ede (ee se 3 || to a slight longitudinal movement of the rails, known as ‘ creep- ” reonum and Conje- 5 6 ae pe cs Ih fediwsil the Ramana P te doabl veram Railway …. 7. re { 5 3|| ing.” The bull-headed rail possesses the a vantages of the double- “a 36/2 3 6| | headed rail, except that, like the flange rail, it is not reversible. EgyPt….0…seeece esse eee 4 8} oon ae lanes : &,| | The bull-headed rail is laid on most of the railway lines of England a ($ §| Fez South Wales’s] 4&4 | and Scofland ; the double-headed rail is also in use. In Ireland (3 61] ow Zealand c 3 | | the bull-headed and the flange rails are used. Double-headed and a a. a 3 6 || bull-headed rails in English practice are rolled toa weight of from ae 82 to 86 Ib per yard; the heads are made from 2% to 23 inches wide ; the webs are from five-eighths to thirteen-sixteenths of an The relative advantages of broad gauges and narrow gauges were | inch in thickness ; and the height of the rail varies from 5% to exhaustively discussed at the Institution of Civil Engineers (in | 5 inches. The rails are now made of steel, in bars for the most 1873), on the reading of Mr W. T. Thornton’s paper on ‘The | part 30 feet in length, with the advantage in comparison with Relative Advantages of the 5 feet 6 inch Gauge and of the Metre | shorter lengths of a more solid road, fewer joints, and less cost for Gauge for the State Railways of India.” The fallacy pervading the | maintenance. They are fixed into massive cast-iron chairs, weigh- Chairs. arguments for narrow gauges is that they take the width between | ing from 31 to 55 Ib each, by means of hard wood keys—oak. the rails as the basic unit of the system; whereas that is really | They are canted inwards in their seats at an angle usually of 1 in little more than an incident, and the dimensions of the railway | 20, the bettcr to resist lateral blows from wheels. The chairs are must in point of fact be governed by the size and weight of the | made of considerable width on the more heavily worked lines— vehicles which the traffic requires. Speaking generally, the | from 7 to 8 inches, against a minimum of 43 inches on other lines. national gauge of 4 feet 8} inches is at least as good as any | On some lines the seats of the chairs on which the rails rest are other for the purposes of general traffic. If the width of gauge | slightly rounded in the direction of the rail; this forms a com- were still an open question, it might be maintained that a gauge | pensation for slight deviations from thc level in the sleepers, but is*

of 5 feet would be rather more convenient in view of the increasing | mainly useful in preventing indentation of the rails by the con- size of the more powerful locomotives. cussions to which they are subject—a matter of importance with Rails. fails.—‘ The experience of the last twenty-five years,” said Mr | double-headed rails which are by and by to be reversed. In such*

drainage of water through the ballast to the formation.

George Parker Bidder, speaking in 1861, ‘“‘has shown that one system has been adopted almost universally—the double-headed rails, upon chairs with cross sleepers, a plan which has been materially improved by fishing the joints.” On the continent of Europe and in America, however, engineers have almost universally laid the flat-foot or flange rail ; and in France double-headed rails, keyed in chairs, have been replaced by flange rails. On the Metro- politan and Metropolitan District Railways, on the contrary, the flange rails have been taken up and replaced by double-headed rails in chairs. The case may be briefly stated in the following terms. The double-headed rail system with chairs is the best where sup- plies of material and labour for maintenance and repair are always ready and available. The single-headed flange rail system is the best when the main thing to attain is simplicity in construction.

cases Mr T. E. Harrison places cushions of hard wood in the chair to support the rails, which are thus effectually protected from indentation ; and, in addition, the trains run more smoothly.

The oak keys by which the rails are fastened in the chairs are Keys,

generally applied at the outer side of the rail, as the jar caused by the lateral percussion of the flangcs of wheels is then less than when the key is placed inside ; but on the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire Railway the key is put at the inner side of the rail, and there is this to be said in favour of the practice, that the rails are kept firmly to gauge and the key is less likely to shift. On some railways contrivances are employed to prevent the keys from shifting or creeping out of their proper position in the chair ; these will be noticed in their places. The rails are laid end to end, one-eighth or thrce-sixtecnths of an inch apart at ordinary

XX. — 31

Fish- plates.

Sleepers.

Double- headed rails.

242

temperatures, to allow for expansion in hot weather. The joints of the rails are united or fished with parallel stcel plates lodged within the side channels of the rails and fastened with four bolts and nuts passed through the web of the rails, and, in order that the fish-plates may take a solid and steady bearing, the entering faces of the upper and lower members of the rails are in most in- stances formed straight and steep,—at an angle of about 2 to 1. For the same purpose the fish-plates are hollow at their inner faces, so as not to be in contact with the vertical members or web of the rails, and are slightly elastic in consequence. Vertical stiffness, also, is of prime importance in fish-plates, which act as beams fixed at the ends and uniformly loaded, being required to sustain the loads of trains passing over the joints. On some lines, accordingly, the fish-plates are made of greater depth, extending downwards along the lower table of the rail, and are even turned under it, whence they are called clip fish-plates. The chairs are laid on transverse timber sleepers, ordinarily cut from Baltic redwood to a scantling of 10 inches wide and 5 deep, and 9 feet in length,— speaking precisely, only 8 feet 11 inches in length, to secure the timber from import duty. They are most commonly submitted to a preserving process by the injection of about 24 gallons of creasote into each sleeper. The chairs are fixed to the sleepers by iron spikes or oak trenails, or both, varying in number from two on the lines of lighter traffic to three or four on lines of heavier traffic. On the London and South-Western Railway and on the South-Eastern Railway a compound fastener is used,—a spike driven into a hollow trenail, after the latter is driven iuto the sleeper. There are usually eleven cross sleepers to each length of rails of 30 feet, making the average distance between the sleepers about 2 feet 9 inches from centre to centre. It is usual to space them apart more widely in the middle portion of the rail-bars (up to 3 feet) and more closely about the joints, with a view to

equalizing the vertical resistance of the rails to rolling loads, by supplying a greater degree of support from the sleepers near the joints.

The standard models of permanent way on the double-headed rail and chair system adopted by Mr John Fowler for the New South Wales railways have been already noticed. The rails are shown in section in figs. 29 and 85. The sleepers are of colonial hard woods, chiefly iron-bark timber. They are laid 2 feet 6 inches apart between centres at the joints of the rails, and 3 feet 1 inch apart elsewhere. The upper and lower tables of the rails are curved or rounded in section to a radius of 5} inches, the height of the rail. The entering or overhanging faces of the rail are inclined at

| Fig. 29.

Fic. 29.--- Double-headed rail ; New South Wales Railway. Fia. 30.— Chair; New South Wales Railway.

Fig. 30.

a slope of about 1 in 2, forming straight and equally inclined bearings to receive the fish-plates. The rails, while in course of manufacture, are tested by selecting a few rails of each day's make, from which a portion 4} feet in length is cut off and placed on iron supports 3} feet apart, and is subjected to three blows from a weight of 1 ton falling 12 feet each time. The rails are to deflect not less than 64 inches and not more than 73 under this test without showing any signs of fracture. The fish-bolts, as well as the spikes for fastening the chairs to the sleepers, are made of the finest quality of close fibrous iron. Fifty per cent. of the rails were ordered 24 feet in length, 40 per cent. 21, and 10 per cent. 18. The chairs (fig. 80) are 134 inches long at the sole, 41 wide, and 14 thick at the seat of the rail. Test bars of the metal used for the chairs are cast to a scantling of 2 inches by 1 inch and 84 feet long. They are placed on edge, on supports 3 fect apart, and are required to sustain a dead load of 30 cwt. suspended from the centre of the bar without fracture. The spikes are seven-eighths of an inch in diameter, tapered at the head to

fifteen-sixteenths, with hemispherical or cup-heads forged from the solid bar. The above-described way, as laid in New South Wales, is bedded in bal- last consisting of broken stone 12 inches in depth below the sleepers, broken to a gauge of 8 inches, boxed up with broken stone of a smaller size to a gauge of 2 inches for a depth of 8 inches. The total depth of the ballast from the crown of the formation is 22 inches. The surface of the formation below the ballast is rounded in cross-section, in order to drain off such water as penetrates through the bal- last. Grips or furrows are cut and drains laid in where necessary, so that no water is allowed to remain on the line or under the ballast.

The South-Eastern double-headed rail (fig. 31) is keyed into chairs 44 inches wide and 132 long at the sole. They are fixed to the seis by two spikes driven into two hollow oak trenails. The slecpers at the joints are laid 2 feet 4 inches ware ahwest centres, og ae The following are the quantities of material Railway. for 1 mile of way, single line :—

tons.

Steel rails, 82 fb per yard…... 8521 yards 128 17 3 14 Fis-plates: wns. .2 ee ces … 505 pairs 5 0 1 8 Fish bolts and nuts . -2020 ik 2 2 5 CCL ee een ac amtoriciich 4022 56 ll 0 21 COSTE SPIRES) og ie.g seis: jase 6 acer 8044 2 ary i) 8 (SG. aie cae aoe eaobid of ae 4022 Sleepers, creasoted …..... 2011 ARTEMIS occ theyciatats Mctae pie lsieiakesaselel 8044

These quantities are considerably less than those of the Midland Railway (which are stated below), as may naturally be the case for a line chiefly of passenger traffic in comparison with one of heavy goods and mineral traflic. The double-headed rails of the North- Eastern Railway, 82 tb per yard, are bedded on blocks or cushions of oak placed in the bottom of the chairs, the advantages of which have already been noticed.

The type section of way of the Midland Railway is shown in fig. Bull- The formation is inclined each way from the centre, making headed The ballast is of strong gravel rails.

‘ 1

two straight slopes for drainage.

i ‘ | ‘ i j i ‘ ;

pana jaca fs cj ‘ se

L i ~,

Fia. 32.—Type section of way of Midland Railway.

broken stone, and ashes or clinker,—chiefly gravel. It covers a width of 264 feet for two lines of way. It is laid to a depth of 16 inches at the middle of the six-foot, and is formed level with the upper sides of the sleepers between the rails in the four-foot, with a medium depth of 16 inches, or 11 inches beneath the slcepers. At the outer sides of the rails the ballast is heaped level with the tops of the chairs, or, more precisely, the tops of the keys, and is sloped down to the formation at each outer side. The upper and lower surfaces of the rail (see fig. 33) are curved to a radius equal to the height of it, and the planks are flat,—adapted for taking up lateral blows and mitigating wear. The chairs are remarkable for large dimensions, being 74 inches wide and 154 long at the sole, which is 1{ inches thick under the rail, and for their weight, 50 tb each. The cost of relaying 1 mile of single way on the Midland system just described, based on bogs s prices in 1884, amounts to £1572, 8s. 5d. Deduct- P

ing credit for old material to the amount Sa: Mita bene of £714, 8s. 3d., the net cost of relaying A

is £858, Os. 2d. The particulars of quantities, cost, and credit are given in the following statement, prepared by Mr Alfred A. Lang- ley, the enginecr of the railway :— i

Cost to relay 1 mile of Single Line with 30-feet Bull-headed Steel Rails, weighing 85 1b. per yard ; eleven Sleepers to each 30 feet length,

aE

Steel rails, 3520 yards at 85 ib=1834 tons, ab £5 …..... £667 10 9 Chairs, 3872 at 50 ib=86} tons, at £3 …....- 0c eee cree 259 110 0 Fish-plates (steel clip), 352 pairs at 40 ib=6} tons, at £8…. 50 0 0 Bolts and nuts, 1408 at 14 th=1 ton, at £9, 10s. ..... 910 0 Spikes, 7744, at 1} Ib=4} tons, at £7, 108…....----000— 3117 6 Trenails (solid oak), 7744, at £2, 10s. per thousand …..... 19 7 2 Keys (oak), 3872, at £4 per thousand…....~~..sseeeeeee 15 9 9 Sleepers (creasoted), 1936, at 45. ....~~. ses eee e eee e eee eeee 387 4 0 Labour, 1760 yards, at 1s. 6d. 1.1… cece eee eee ee eee eens 122 0 ©

Total cost of laying …....ccccesesessceceeeeees £1572 8 5

RAILWAY

Credits :—

Steel rails, 3520 yards at 80 ib=1252 tons, at £3, 15s. ..... 471 11-3 Chae, S812, a642 Th 72 tOnS, at £2 cecccialer ts secs ele eee 145 0 0 Fish-plates (clip), 352 pairs at 35 Ilb=5}3 tons, at £3, 10s….. is 5 © Wrought-iron serap, 2 tons, Ab BE .c.0. 564 «ce swcis crs oe vows 6 0 0 Sleepers, LOS; wb) OU. GAM oo 3.5. .o:c.c.6 ois cetereis oie en nsiineesciareaue 7212 ©

TE SUM CLOOMIS: & ccaavscctem sates Ate aseilale Aaa s aero s warcietey LT14 8 -8

INGE CORE OL VOIAV INE «5 over5:< axsseye cisis Closes ie cieped sore 8 £858 0 2

Not included in the above :—Ballast for 1 mile of single line, 4000 cubic yards, at 2s.=£400; ballast for 1 mile of double line, 7000 cubic yards, at 2s.= £700; ballast for a lift of about 3 inches, in relaying 1 mile of single line, 520 cubic yards, at 2s.=£52; engine hire, wages of ballast guards, use of waggons, &c., in relaying 1 mile of single line, £50. The lift of 3 inches signi- fies the wear and tear of ballast and the quantity required to be replaced.

The standard rail on the London and North-Western Railway is, like that of the Midland, bull-headed, but less high and wider at the head and the foot

and thicker in the web. The chairs have the peculiarity of being ribbed horizontally on the inner face against which the oak key is driven, in order to grip the key. The sleepers at the joints are placed 2 feet 3 inches apart between centres. The Great Northern Company's standard rail contrasts with the two immediately preceding rails in being less high than either, and having a thinner web and a larger head than the others. There are peculiarities in the disposition of the way. The first is that the joints of the rails are supported in a chair directly under each joint, to which the fishes are bolted; the second is that the two rails forming a line of way break joint with each other, the joints alternating from side to side, and that, as a consequence, all the sleepers are placed equally apart. On this system, it is argued, the way is of as nearly uniform strength as it is possible to make it. The keys for fixing the rails are of compressed fir.

The Great Western, the Metropolitan, and the Lancashire and Yorkshire rails are the heaviest of the bull-headed rails noticed in Table XXVIII. (see below),— weighing 86 tb per yard, having comparatively thin webs and great development of head (see fig. 34). In the Great Western chair the inner face of the jaw that holds the key is formed with an indenta- tion, to aid in keeping the key in place,—the key being likely to expand into the vacancy. In the Metropolitan way the chairs are fast- ened to the sleepers by two through bolts and nuts to each chair. The rails of the Fie. 34.—Bull-headed Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire Rail- dd Na a ' – y- way are placed in chairs of great length, 16} inches ; and, contrary to usual practice, the oak keys for securing the rails in the chairs are fixed on the inner side of the rail, the rail taking its bearing directly upon the jaw of the chair. Thus the lateral strokes of the wheels on the rails are resisted directly

by the jaw of the chair, and not through the medium of the key. There are twelve sleepers to each length of rail, averaging 2 feet 6 inches apart between centres, as against the usual number on other lines, eleven per rail-length of 30 feet. The sleepers, of Baltic redwood, are not creasoted nor preserved by any other pro- cess, except in one or two places where sand ballast is used.

The leading particulars of standard double-headed and bull- headed rails, with chairs and sleepers, are given in Table XXVIII. (see below).

Specimen standard flange rails are illustrated in figs. 35 and 36 Flange Leading particulars of flange rails are given in rails.

in cross section. Table XXIX. below.

In the case of the flange rail of the New South Wales Railway (fig. 35) the inward cant of the rails is provided for by planing out by machinery the beds of the rails at the upper sides of the slcepers to the angle 1 in 20; and that the rails may be kept in gauge the beds are notched into the surface by as much as the thickness of the flange of the rail. No holes of any kind, either punched or drilled, are made in the flanges of the rails; these are fastened to the sleepers by screws and spikes alternately, having projecting heads, by which the flange is clipped aud held down. In order to check the tendency to creeping of the rails as well as of the fish-plates, it is intended to flange the fish-plates and to cut a notch at each end of them, in each of which a dog-spike is to be

JIC A.

Fig. 35. Fig. 36. Fig. 37. Fic. 35.—Flange rail ; New South Wales Railway.

Fia. 36.—Flange rail; Midland Great Western Railway. Fic. 37.—Bridge rail; Great Western Railway.

driven into the sleepers. The Great Northern of Ireland rail is similar to Mr Fowler's on the New South Wales Railway, but heavier. The Midland Great Western rail (fig. 36) is peculiarly formed, with a web of taper section, being nine-sixteenths of an inch thick at the head, and thickened to 1 inch at the flange. The bridge rail of the Great Western Railway (fig. 37) is laid on the model originally adopted by Mr Brunel. The rails are only 3 inches high, and are aided in resisting vertical stress by the con- tinuous longitudinal sleepers of large scantling, 14 inches wide and 7 deep, on which they are laid, with pine packing 8 inches wide and 1 thick. The rails are laid so as to break joint with the

‘sleepers, which are in lengths of 25 feet, whilst the rails are from

18 to 32 feet inlength. The rails are fastened down by fang-bolts,

TABLE XXVIII.—Standard Double-headed and Bull-headed Rails, with Chairs and Sleepers.

*Dimensions of Rail. Chairs. Number of Sleepers. ree * | Fish- Or” li) aa a Railway. ail per Wid Thick- | | a | Sole fla . ‘ th of Length | plates ‘ Width of ‘ Tre- P Distance Yard. |Height.) “7 ness of i Weight. or Spikes. : Total.| Section. ; Head. Web of Bars, Sole. pitied. nails, apart. ee state as) ee. aes || Ee – Double-headed rails— tb. Inches., Inches. | Inch. | Feet. th. Inches. in.x in. | ft. in. New South Wales … 76 5 2h § | 21,24 | plain} 26 44 | flat 2 2 10 × 5 s) dl South-Eastern …..... 82 5 25 # 24 plain 814 44 flat aa 2 2 10 × 5 2 § Londonand §. -Western 82 5} 24 4 30 clip 40 64 | flat spiked trenails 3 10× 5 2 16 North-Hastern…..... 82 53 24 t 30 plain 40 8 | cushion 4 50 4 10× 5 2 9 Great N. of Scotland .. 72 4} 24 30 plain 35 5g | flat 3 3 10 × 44 2 98*

Bull-headed rails—

PU AE ores fora. a rapety ase 85 5g 28 3 30 clip 50 ves rounded 2 2 4 10× 5 3.0

London and N.-Western 84 5 2 qe 30 clip 45 (fs rounded 2 2 4 10 × 5 Sf

Great Northern …... 82 5 y’s 28 tt | 30 plain 40 |joints 7,7} flat or 3 3 10× 5 2. 8%

Great Western…..... 86 52s 23 +4 | 26, 29,32) plain be (f3 | rounded 2 33 2 12 × 6 2 9 Metropolitan …..... 86 55 24 te 24 clip 39 6 | flat bolts and nuts 2 12× 6 pa

Manchester, Sheffield,

and Lincolnshire 80 53 23 g 380 plain | 40, 51 6 flat 3 3 10×5 {2 6(as.) Lancashire and York-

(fe eenee BE GEO GOL 86 5} 28 full bare) 30 | Plain 55 7% flat 2 2 4 10× 5 2 % Great N. of Scotland .. 80 5 25 ¢ 30 ~~ plain 35 58 | flat 3 5 3 10 × 43 2 9 Great N. of Ireland .. 7 5} 25 H 26 clip te 64 flat 3 3 10× 5 3 0

TABLE XXIX.—Specimen Standard Flange Rails ; in Cross Section. Weight Dimensions of Rail. Sleepers. Railway. Rail. | of Rail Wi A ; Fish-plates. ‘ . idth | Width of | Thickness | Length F Distance per 7: | Meigne. of Sal Flange. | of Web. | of Bars. Gatton, apart. tb. | Inches. | Inches. | Inches. Inch. Feet. : Inches x inches.} Feet in,

Dr iNietw SOMBM WALGS) 5.10… 4 crise cle sieee sieiefols sis flange 714 43 24 43 Ee 24 plain 10 × 5 SF il Great Northern of Ireland ….....0000 % 79 43 2k 5 eet 26 plain flanged 10 × 5 8 0 Midlnna Great Westen . 2.00 sclimemleinseleieeie’s ” 79 4h8 2g 5 vs tol 23, 26% flanged 10 × 5 Great Southern and Western ….....6 000008. a 7 49, 23 5 ts. 24 As { r 7 4,

CBE NM as oF end to s6sccpnkauni iacd ener eislaxoie eraseieralo bridge 68 $ 23 64 2 webs, = 18 to “| joint-plate l Re at i continuous

Metallic perma- nent way.

244

which pass through their flanges and the sleeper together. At the joints they are fortified by square iron plates laid under the joints, through which fang-bolts are passed. The longitudinals are con- nected and kept to gauge by transoms or cross-ties at intervals.

The minimum weight of ordinary flange rails is about 45 tb per lineal yard. If the weight is less than this for main lines the upper bearing surface is objectionably narrow, and it is scarcely high enough above the sleepers. The maximum weight of flange rails is about 80 tb per lineal yard. Flange rails, like headed rails, are laid on transverse sleepers, to which thcy are fixed, most com- monly by means of screws, spikes, or flange bolts and nuts. In all cases it is preferable to effect the fastening of steel rails without piercing them in the flange, as they are materially weakened by such perforations.

*In the United States (also very largely in Germany, Canada, and Mexico) the Vignoles rail is universally used for railways, varying in weight from 67 or 70 Ib per yard on a few leading lines to 30 ib on narrow-gauge railways. No railroads with any considerable traffic are now laid down with rails of less weight than 60 Ib per yard. The Pennsylvania Railroad, laid to a gauge of 4 feet 9 inches, is constructed of flange rails of two sections, one of 60 Ib per yard 41 inches high, the other of 67 tb 44 inches high, in lengths of 30 feet. The fishes or splices are 2 feet in length, held by four bolts and nuts. The outer splice is formed with a horizontal flange or **tongue," which overhangs the flange of the rail and is spiked to the sleeper. Allowance for expansion when the rails are laid in winter is provided by laying the rails five-sixteenths of an inch apart, endwise ; in summer a space of only one-sixteenth of an inch in width is allowed. The cross sleepers are 8 inches wide by 7 deep, and are 8% feet in length ; they arc laid so closely that the maximum distance apart between centres does not exceed 2 feet. There are sixteen sleepers for each length of 30 feet, and the sleepers at the joints are laid with a clearance of over 10 inches between them. The rails are fastened by spikes to the sleepers at the inside and the outside. The width for the double line of way at the formation level is 81 feet 4 inches in cuttings; and on embankments the width of the formation is 24 feet 3 inches, sloping from the centre at the rate of 1 in 20. The ballast is laid to a depth of not less than 12 inches under the sleepers, and is filled in to the level of the upper surface of the sleepers. Where stone ballast is used it is broken uniformly to a gauge of 24 inches in diameter. For double lines of way large stones are placed in the bottom, at the centre, between the lines to provide for drainage ; but the stones are not placed under the ends of the sleepers; thus water is drained off rapidly.*

*Metallic Permanent Way.—Metallic permanent way, in which the sleepers are of iron, has been much employed in tropical countries, and is = now to some ex- tent adopted in France and in Ger- many. The oldest and most widely <4 used system of me- = tallic way is that of « Mr H. Greaves, who in 1846 introduced a spherical or bowl sleeper of cast-iron, having the chair for the rail cast on its summit (see fig. 38). Every second pair of sleepers are * = connected and held Fic. 38.—Greaves's cast-iron sleepers. to gauge by transverse tie-bars, which pass through and are bolted to them. 'The form of the sleeper is strong, it holds well in the ground, the chair is*

not liable to be detached, the whole bearing surface is directly beneath the road, the ballast is kept dry and elastic, and there is a simple means of packing the sleeper through holes in the top, with a pointed rammer from the surface, so that the sleeper and the rail can be forced upwards without dis- turbing the general bed of ballast. They may also be lowered by taking out a portion of ballast from the interior. Another system, Mr W. Bridges Adams's "suspended girder rail," is shown

in fig. 39. The rail . N is 7 inches deep, qe weighing 65 ib per "

lineal yard, and is Fie. 39.—Suspended girder,rail.

2

suspended by continuous angle-wires, or side wings bolted to it, and bedded in the ballast; and, as the bearing surface on the ballast was approximated to the bearing surface of the rail, a great degree of stability was anticipated. Wrought-iron trans- verse sleepers were first tried in Belgium in 1862, then in France and in Portugal, and afterwards in Germany. There are various systems, most of which were unsatisfactory, but the Vautherin sleeper, first tried in 1864 on the Lyons railway, has

Ra LLY AY

been successful. It is hollow in section, of the form

LocoMOTIVE POWER.

Locomotives may broadly be reduced to two classes, according Types of In the first class these engine.

to the situation of the working cylinders. are within the framing, under the boiler, with the main driving axle cranked at two points to receive the power from the two cylinders ; in the second class they are outside the framing, and connected, not to the axle, which is straight, but to crank-pins fixed between the spokes of the wheels, in connexion with the nave. From these distinguishing features the two types of engines are known respectively as "inside cylinder locomotives" and " out- side cylinder locomotives." In the

latter the general contour of the cylinders is usually visible at the fore-end of the machine. The tenders have six or four wheels, according to the taste of the designer, and they are supplied with powerful brakes, worked by screws, with blocks of wood placed against each wheel. A water- tank forms the upper part of the tender, namely, the two sides and the back, usually in the form of a horse-shoe, holding from 1000 to 3000 gallons ; and in the hollow of the shoe the fuel is deposited, of which a full charge may weigh from 30 ewt. to 34 tons. The engine and the tender are sustained on springs placed over the axle-bearings. Again, there is the general classification of locomotives into passenger engines and goods and mineral engines. As the power of the engine is brought into action through the grip of the driving wheels upon the rails, it is necessary, for the exertion of maximun1 pk in goods engines, to make two or more pairs of the wheels of one size, and transmit the driving force from the central pair of wheels to the front and back pairs by means of coupling-rods attached to crank-pins at the naves of the wheels. Such engines are called "six-coupled," and for them the most convenient combination is with inside cylinders. "When the cylinders are outside it is usual to couple only the hind pair of wheels to the driving wheels, making a "four-coupled" engine, the leading or front wheels being of smaller diameter than the driving-wheels, and so leaving room for the convenient placement of the cylinders. The six-coupled engine can take the heaviest train on a good straight railway,—that is, one free for the most part from curves ; but four-coupled engines work more economic- ally on lines with frequent curves, and may be made so as to take, in average practice, as great a load as six-coupled engines. Pass- enger locomotives have usually been constructed with a single pair of driving-wheels, for free running at high speeds; but as traffic became heavier four-coupled-wheel passenger engines came into vogue ; and express trains are now for the most part worked with four-coupled engines. In recent years the forepart of engines has in many cases been placed on a four-wheeled truck connected

Speed and

eugine power.

Express pass- enger locomo- tives,

RAILWAY

by a central bolt or pivot to the frame of the engine, so that the fore-wheels can swing to the curves of the line. On the Metro- politan, Metropolitan District, and North London Railways entirely, and on many large railway systems partially, where sharp curves are frequent, bogie-engines are employed, and with great advan- tage in facilitating traction. Another device for the same purpose is the use of radial axles,—that is, axles either at the forepart or the back of the engine, which by their axle-boxes slide laterally between circularly formed guides on entering and on leaving curved parts of the way, and so maintain a radial position at right angles to the line of rails.

American practice, many years since, arrived at two leading types of locomotive for passenger and for goods traffic. The passenger locomotive has eight wheels, of which four in front are framed in a bogie, and the four wheels behind are coupled drivers. This is the type to which English practice has been approximating. The tender is carried on eight wheels, disposed under two trucks or bogies, fore and aft. Goods locomotives are made with eight wheels and with ten wheels, of which, in each case, the leading pair of wheels are conuected with a swing bolster and radius bar, to conform laterally and radially to curves.

As the speed increases a more than proportional increase in the engine-power is necessary to draw a given train. Thus, if an engine and tender, weighing together 40 tons and exerting a given tractive force, takes, say, forty loaded carriages, weighing 360 tons, at 20 miles per hour on a level, the loads which it could take if it a the same tractive power at higher speeds would be only as ollows :—

At 20 miles per hour, <= carriages, weighing 360 tons,

” ” ” 3 ” ” 200 ” ” ” ” 21 ” ”? 144 » oF 50 ” ” 15 ” ” 106 ” ” 60 ” ” il ” bP 75 ”

The influence of gradients also is very important. If an engine and tender, weighing together 40 tons, is capable of drawing a maximum train of, say, forty-two loaded carriages, weighing 420 tons, at 20 miles per hour on a level, it would only draw the following loads at the same speed on the following inclines :—

Level 0… 2: 42 carriages, weighing 420 tons.

Incline 1 in 600, 34 9 a 340 ,, ” ” 3800, 27 ? ” 270 ” » 9 150,20 ,, ” 200 ,; ” ” 100, 15 ” ” 150 ” ? ”? 75, 12 ” te 120 ” ” ” 50, ” ” 90 ” ” ” 40, ” ” 65 2 ” ” 30, 5 ” ” 45 ” ” ” 20, 3 ” ” 24 ”

10, nil sy, o nil

This is the reason why the older railways were made nearly level at an enormous cost,—the elder Stephenson’s policy being to incur a large expenditure in construction in order to avoid otherwise heavy inclines and heavy expenses. The ruling gradient of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway was fixed at 1 in 900, excepting, of course, the inevitable inclines at Rainhill summit, for working which special provision was made ; that of the next great line, the London and Birmingham, was fixed at 1 in 330; on the Great Western Railway, one of the earliest made lines, the ruling inclina- tion is 1 in 1320 for the greater part of the way. Locke, as already explained, initiated the system of cheaply constructed railways, as the facilities for increasing the power of locomotives became better understood ; he constructed lines with long steep gradients, some of them 1 in 70, 1 in 75, 1 in 80. The Great Northern Railway, of comparatively recent origin, was constructed on a ruling gradient of 1 in 200; and, in general, the more recently made lines have the steepest gradients. Steep railways are generally also lines of frequent curves, which is another cause of loss of locomotive power. Moreover, the ruling speeds, as they may be called, have in the course of years increased. Thus in every way more powerful engines are now needed than in the early days of railways.

The fundamental characteristics of English practice are fairly represented by a few types of locomotives. ‘Take first an express passenger locomotive, which stands on a whecl base—the distance apart of the centres of the extreme axles—of 15 feet 4 inches. The cylinders are inside and are 16 inches in diameter, with a slide of 22 inches. The driving-wheels are 7 feet in diameter. The fire- grate has an area of 18 square feet, and the heating surface of the fire-box and flue-tubes taken together is 1339 square feet. The total weight of the engine in working order is 28 tons 6 cwt., of which nearly 12 tons are driving weight,—the weight at the driving- wheels. The

tender stands on three pairs of wheels and weighs about 16 tons, with, in addition, 1780 gallons or 8 tons of water when filled, and 3 tons of coal.

The " Lady of the Lake" is an express passenger locomotive, one of a class which was designed by Mr John Ramsbottom with special regard to the running of express trains on the northern division of the London and North-Western Railway. The cylinders are "outside" ; they are 16 inches in diameter, with 24 inches of stroke, and the driving-wheels are 7 fect 7 inches in diameter. The fire-grate has an area of 15 square feet, and there is over 1000 square

>

245

feet of heating surface. The engine weighs 27 tons in working order and the tender 174, together 444 tons. The tender is fitte with Mr Ramsbottom's apparatus for picking up feed-water whilst running: a scoop is let down from the bottom of the tender and dips into water contained in a long open trough laid between the rails, from which it is scooped up into the tanks. The minimum speed at which this operation can-be effected is 22 miles per hour. By the aid of the water-lifter this express engine has been enabled to run the whole distance from Holyhead to London—264 miles— in one continuous run, at an average speed of 42 miles per hour, taking a train of eight or nine carriages, and consuming 27 tb of coal as fuel per mile run.

An express passenger locomotive having 18-inch cylinders and four-coupled driving-wheels, 7 feet in diameter, with a four-wheel bogie in front under the smoke-box, was designed by Mr T. W. Johnson for the traffic of the Midland Railway. The engine stands on eight wheels, forming a base 214 fect long. It weighs about 42 tons in working order, and with the tender, including coal and water, about 68 tons. The average load taken by engines of this class is fourteen carriages at the time-bill speed of 50 miles per hour, over gradients of from 1 in 120 to 1 in 130, with a consump- tion of 28 Ib of coal per mile run. The engine can take as a maxi- mum load seventeen carriages between Manchester and Derby, over ruling gradients of 1 in 90 and 1 in 100 for 10 miles, at a speed up the inclines of 35 miles per hour, and on levels and falling gradients at 50 miles per hour. The carriages

weigh, with passengers, 11 tons each, making up a train of the gross weight of 187 tons.

The express passenger engines on the Great Northern Railway (fig. 40), designed by Mr Patrick Stirling, have outside cylinders, 18

Fic. 40.—Express locomotive ; Great Northern Railway.

inches in diameter, and a single pair of 8-feet driving-wheels. It is one of the most recent developments of the single-wheel engine. It is placed on eight wheels, of which the first four are framed in a bogie, or truck, pivoted on a centre under the smoke-box. The cylinders are placed outside, and between the wheels of the bogie at each side. They are 18 inches in diameter, with a stroke of 28 inches,—dimensions which, taken together, exceed in magni- tude those of any other engine for English passenger-traffic. The driving-wheels are 8 feet 1 inch in diameter and the bogie-wheels 3 feet 11 inches. The engine weighs 38 tons in working order, the distribution of the weight being as follows :—

Leading bogie-wheels 7 tons Hin a fe AS GOMS: cteene ont bis {2 re Morini ge wheels Nas. ssi. seed okt aocicln ooacemaaad 15 35 RIA MENON she SENS « Ss alwaniae ticle dealers adore e roe 8 “ss Total weight in working order ……..... 38 (yy

The pivot of the bogie is 6 inches nearer the hind than the front axle,—these being 64 feet apart. By this disposition the bogie appears to lead better than if the pivot were, as usual, equidistant between the axles. The working pressure in the boiler is 140 tb per square inch. There are 217 brass flue-tubes, 1,%, inches in diameter, presenting a heating surface for evaporation of upwards of 1000 square fect. There is in all 1165 square feet of surface, and there is 17°6 square feet of grate surface. Mr Stirling, on the question of single- wheel versus coupled wheels for passenger locomotives, states that he constructed two classes of engines,—one class with four 63-feet wheels coupled, the other with a single pair of 7-feet driving-wheels, The boilers of the two classes were alike ; also the cylinders, which were 17 inches in diameter, with 24 inches of stroke. The pressure in the boilers was 140 tb. With like trains the single-wheel engine had the better of it; in fact, it generally beat the ‘coupled engine in time, running from King’s Cross to

Potter's Bar, a distance of nearly 13 miles, nearly all uphill, the gradients varying from 1 in 105 for 2 miles to 1 in 200. + of the class of the 8-feet-wheel engine travel between King's Cross and Leeds or York. The steepest gradients on the route are met with on leaving Leeds, ascending 1 in 50, besides the gradient 1 in 105 leaving King's Cross. Trains of from sixteen to twenty- two carriages are taken from King's Cross station with ease; and on several occasions twenty-eight carriages have been taken, and time has been kept. On one occasion a distance of 15 miles in

twelve minutes was accomplished with a train of sixteen carriages, making a speed of 75 miles per hour. The engine has taken a train of thirty-three carriages full of passengers from Doncaster to Scarborough and back at an average speed of 45 miles per hour. It is capable of moving a gross weight, including engine, tender, and train, of 856 tons on a level ata speed of 45 miles per hour. The average results of the regular performance of seven engines of this class between Doncaster, Peterborough, and London for the third quarter of 1884 show that a train of twelve six-wheeled carriages weighing 13 tons each was taken at a speed of from 50 to 53 miles per hour, for a consumption of 254 Ib of eoal per mile run and five pints of oil per 100 miles run.

Four-coupled locomotives, having the cylinders inside, and four wheels coupled "in front," with a pair of hind or trailing wheels, are known as "mixed engines,"—that is to say, engines adapted for either passenger traffic or goods traffic,—a generally useful type. In one example the cylinders are 16 inches in diameter, with a stroke of 22 inches; the coupled wheels are 5 feet in diameter. The weight of the engine is 24} tons, of which 20 tons are driving weight.

The next engine to be noticed is a generally useful engine, four- coupled "behind," for passenger traffic, such, for instance, as that with inclined fire-grate and sloping fire-box designed by Mr J. J. Cudworth for service on the South-Eastern Railway. On a wheel- base of 15 feet the weight of the engine—304 tons—is so distributed that 104 tons fall at each pair of

driving-wheels and 94 tons at the leading wheels. The cylinders are inside, 16 inches in diameter, with 24 inches of stroke and 6-feet driving-wheels.

Another express passenger locomotive, having inside cylinders and four-coupled wheels behind, for service on the London and North-Western Railway, has cylinders 17 inches in diameter, with 24 inches of stroke, and 6 feet 7 inch driving wheels. The engine weighs 294 tons, of which 11 are at the middle wheels, 8? at the hind wheels, and 94 at the front; thus the driving weight amounts to two-thirds of the total weight. This engine can move a gross weight of 293 tons, comprising engine, tender, and train, on a level at a speed of 45 miles per hour, with a working pressure of 120 tb per square inch in the boiler. 'With trains averaging ten carriages the consumption of coal is 26} Ib per mile run.

A tank locomotive is an engine which carries its supply of fuel and water with it on its own frame, dispensing with the tender. Such engines are much used for short traffic, as well as for shunting and marshalling trains.

The four-coupled tank engine (fig. 41) used for the passenger

Fra. 41.—Tank locomotive ; Metropolitan Railway.

traffic of the Metropolitan Railway has four wheels coupled.behind and a bogie in front. This engine weighs in working order 454 tous, of which about 35 tons are utilized as driving weight, making 174 tons for one pair of wheels,—about the greatest load on one pair of wheels anywhere. The regular duty of this engine is to take a train of six carriages capable of holding in all 432 passengers, and weighing in themselves 13 tons each, at an average specd, including stoppages, of 18 miles per hour, consuming 37 Ib of Welsh coal per train mile run. Whilst passing through the tunnels or covered ways the exhaust steam from the engine is condensed in large tanks carried on the engine, filled with cold water. The quantity of condensing water consumed is 900 gallons for half the journey, or every 63 miles; it is raised to 200° Fahr. temperature.

The eight-wheeled tank engine (fig. 42) has been designed by Mr

Fic. 42,—Tank locomotive ; Great Eastern Railway.

T. W. Worsdell to work the heavy suburban metropolitan traffic of the Great Eastern Railway,—the ordinary trains in this service being composed of fifteen or twenty close-coupled carriages, taken over steep gradients and sharp curves. For this purpose the fore and

RATLWAYT

hind axles are radially mounted, as before explained, to take the

curves with facility, the engine running either end first. The engine weighs 52 tons in working order, and of these 30 tons are driving weight placed on the two pairs of coupled driving-wheels. With large cylinders 18 inches in diameter, and driving – wheels only 5 feet 4 inches in diameter, the engine is adapted for starting promptly, which it is required to do in order to keep time between closely placed stations. Every stop is made by the Westinghouse brake, with which the engine is fitted.

Locomotives for drawing heavy goods trains, though not heavier than the most powerful passenger locomotives, can take goods trains of great weight. Six-coupled goods engines, with 17-inch

cylinders and driving-wheels 5 feet in diameter, weighing 32 tons

in working order, can take a train weighing 360 tons on a level at

a speed of 25 miles per hour, consuming from 40 to 45 tb of eoal

per mile run with trains. The Fairlie engine (fig. 43) is placed on ESS 2s.

Fic. 43.—The Fairlie locomotive.

two bogies or swivelling trucks, the foremost of which carries the cylinders and propelling gear and the hindmost the tank and coal- boxes.

The longest distance run without stopping, eombined with the Rates of highest speed, is performed on the Great Northern Railway, between speed.

Grantham and King's Cross, 1054 miles, in 1 hour 58 minutes, at the rate of 534 miles per hour. The Great Western Company run from Paddington to

Swindon—77} miles—in 1 hour 27 minutes, being at the rate of 534 miles per hour, On the London and North-Western Railway the distance—77} miles—from Willesden to Rugby is run in 1 hour 28 minutes, at the rate of 523 miles per hour. 'The average rate of express and mail passenger trains on this line is 40 miles per hour or more. Parliamentary trains, call- ing at all stations, run at an average speed of from 19 to 28 miles per hour. Express goods trains attain a speed of from 20 to 25 miles per hour. The speed of coal trains is limited, as far as possible, to 15 miles per hour.

The coal trains on the London and North-Western, Midland, and Great Northern Railways generally consist of from thirty to thirty-five waggons, weighing from 5 to 54 tons each, and carry- ing a load of 8 tons of coal. At this rate the total load of coal for thirty-five waggons weighs 280 tons, and, adding the weight of the brake-van at the end of the train, 10 tons 17 cwt., the maximum gross weight of train is 483 tons 7 cwt., as on the Great Northern Railway. This train is taken by a goods engine with six-coupled wheels 5} feet in diameter, having two steam eylinders 174 inches in diameter, with a stroke of 26 inches, and a pressure of 140 Ib per square inch in the boiler. The loco- motive weighs in working order 36 tons 18 cwt., and the tender with fuel and water 30 tons 17 cwt., making together 67 tons 15 ewt. for the locomotive and tender. The gross weights are as

follows :— : ; . Tons. cwts. Train, thirty-five vehicles (waggons, load, and brake-van) ..483 7 Engine and tender, in full working order …….+2+ee00- 67 15 BupiMe, Tender, ANd TAM 2.6. tees es secs aces cteneese 551 2

These large coal trains are taken at a speed of 18 miles per hour, on ascending inclines of 1 in 178 at 10 miles per hour. The con- sumption of coal as fuel in the engine is at the rate of 45 Ib per mile run, including the coal consumed in getting up steam. Mr Patrick Stirling, the locomotive engineer of the Great Northern Railway, has also designed and constructed still more powerful engines, having six-coupled 5-feet wheels, with cylinders 19 inches in diameter and of 28 inches stroke. These engines are capable of taking a train of forty-nine loaded coal-waggons, weighing with brake-van 6724 tons. Including the weight of the engine and tender the total gross load is, say, 740 tons, taken with a consump- tion of 50 Ib of coal per

mile run. This is probably the most extraordinary example of a dead pull on an ascending incline of 1 in 178. It is equivalent to a gross weight of 1816 tons on a level. It was found that this train was too long for some of the sidings, besides fouling both the level crossings in the city of Lincoln ; hence the train was reduced in number to forty-five waggons. Six-coupled goods-engines of the usual proportions, working at full power, exert a tractive force of from 5 to 6 tons in the direction of the rails, equal to the movement of. a gross weight of engine, tender, and train of from 1240 to 1500 tons on a level straight line at a speed of 15 miles per hour, or to from 386 to 463 tons on a level

Coal trains,

net hw AY 247

straight line at a speed of 60 miles per hour. A tractive force of 10 or 12 Tb is capable of drawing 1 ton on a level at 10 miles per hour. At 60 miles per hour the required tractive force is about 45 ib for 1 ton of gross weight.

The long double-bogie passenger-car universally in use in the United United States, originally introduced by Ross Winans on the Balti- States more and Ohio Railroad, is distinguished essentially from the cars. carriages on British railways by the longitudinal passage in the centre of the body, reaching from end to end of the car, with seats at each side, and admitting of the free passage of the conductor throughout the train. The absence of doors at the sides permits of the enlargement of the body laterally. These cars are also dis- tinguished by the use of two four-wheeled bogies or trucks on which the body is carried, and to which it is pivoted, allowing the car to pass with facility over quick curves. There is generally but one class of travellers ; yet for the long journeys Pullman and other slecp- ing cars have come into use, at extra fares. From the Atlantic cities to the West there is a special "immigrant" class, as also over the Pacific railroads; and between the chief Western cities and the sea- board of late years a second-class system has been begun: passcngers are usually carried in smoking cars at rates but little lower than first- class fares, which on these lines are about 1d. per mile. Refresh- ment cars are also attached to trains. Ordinary passenger cars are 93 to 10 feet wide and 444 in length of body, or 49 feet over the extreme platforms. They are about 73 feet high

at the sides, inside the body, and nearly 10 feet high at the centre. The car is entered by steps at the ends. The middle passage is about 2 feet wide. On each side there are fourteen seats, placed transversely, each 38 inches wide and holding two persons. The backs of the seats, which do not rise more than 34 inches above the floor, are mounted on swivels, by which the seat is made reversible. A window is placed next each seat, having a movable glass and a venetian blind. The cars are heated by stoves or steam heaters, burning coal, and are lighted by oil-lamps or candles, on some lines by compressed coal-gas._ Each car is provided with a water-closet and a supply of iced water, and a vendor of books, papers, and cigars patrols the cars. There is a cord of communication with the engine-driver. The car, complete, weighs from 17 to 20 tons, and sleeping cars about one-half more.

The form of goods truck generally used for some years after the Goods opening of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway in 1829 was trucks, simply a platform about 10 feet long, on four wheels, with sides varying from 4 to 10 inches in height, weighing from 24 to 34 tons. Many such waggons were employed for transporting heavy rough goods of 2 tons weight. The general unfitness of this style of waggon led to the adoption of portable sides and ends, which consisted of open crib-rails dropped into staples; and to thesc was added the costly tarpauling or sheet to cover the goods and bind them down. The waggon thus appointed, 18 or 14 feet in length and weighing about 34 tons, was fit to carry 4 or 5 tons of ordinary goods. But loose or removable parts of waggons are liable to be lost or get out of order, and are costly to maintain, while a new tarpauling may be spoiled on the first day of using it by injury from projecting angles of goods under cover. Crib-rails and tarpaulings, therefore, have been to some extent superseded by built covered waggons from 14 to 16 feet long and 74 feet wide, with sliding or hinged doors and roofs, so that with the crane- chairs a bale of goods, however heavy, can be deposited at or moved from any part of the interior of the waggon, and the goods may be perfectly enclosed and protected from damage by fire, wind, or rain. Covered waggons weigh from 4 to 6% tons, and they can carry, according to their dimensions, from 6 to 8 tons of goods. The cost of maintenance of ordinary open waggons is said to amount to from 7 to 10 per cent of the first cost, whilst that of covered waggons is said to be only 4 per cent. It may be stated generally that

waggons if properly made will carry 60 per cent. more than their own weight of goods, but that ill- designed badly-made waggons will carry no more than their own weight of goods. The great demand for weight in waggons arose, as much as from anything else, from the absence of spring-buffers at the ends, which exposed them daily to rude and trying collisions, By and by buffing-springs were introduced at one' end of the waggon, the other being left "dead," and at length, cheap and convenient buffers having been devised, springs came to be placed at both ends of new stock. Waggons, as formerly made, were in long trains likewise subjected to violent shocks in starting into motion, and therefore the draw-bars also were placed upon springs. Some companies have gone further and placed the guard or side chains upon springs. 'Thus the waggon has come to be defended by springs at all points, and there is no doubt that the extra cost so incurred has been amply covered by savings on repairs and diminished breakages of goods. Spiral springs for buffing and drawing, made of round or of oval steel, fixed externally to the ends of waggons, have been much employed ; but laminated springs, placed under the floor, are taking their place. Broad-gauge (7-feet gauge) waggons have been constructed sufficiently strong to carry 20 tons of load on six wheels; but they were not generally made to carry more than 10 tons. Even 10 tons is considered in some quarters to be exccssive as a maximum waggon-load on the ordinary or 4 feet 83 inch gauge. On the Midland Railway, for instance, the standard coal-waggon is constructed to carry 8 tons, The

CARRIAGES AND WAGGONS.

Varieties The common varieties of vehicle employed in railway traffic are ofrail- as follows :—(1) Passenger-train stock : first-class carriage, second-way class carriage, third-class carriage, composite carriage, luggage vehicle. brake-van, horse-box, carriage-truck. To thcse may be added the mail-carriage or travelling post-office. (2) Goods-train stock: platform-waggon, open or box waggon, high-sided round-end wag- gon, covered goods-waggon, cattle-waggon, sheep-waggon, coal- waggon, coke-waggon, brake-van. Besides these there are other waggons specially designed for special traffic, as gunpowder, salt, and lime, also ballast-waggons, for the private use of the engineer's department. Carriages are usually made of the same external length, width, and height. The under works of the stock may

thus be identical in construction, and an economical uniformity of working and wearing parts is secured. Uniformity of waggons is still more important than in the case of carriages, as their total number and cost are much greater, and the supervision with which they are favoured is less minute ; besides, the cost of maintenance is less than where many varieties of waggon exist on the same line. But, whatever may be the upper works, the under works of the whole of the waggon stock should be entirely uniform. One of the greatest evils of railway engineering has been want of uniformity in stock, partly due to different companies not arranging to have stock suitable for joint use on each other's lines and partly to inevitable changes of plan to meet the growing wants of traffic. Another source of mischief was the separation of the duties of engine and of carriage and waggon superintendence. The carriage superintendent, aiming at the utmost economy of maintenance in his department, continually added to the quantity and weight of material employed in the construction of the carrying stock, as the remedy for the observed failure of weak parts ; and thus the stock, particularly waggons, was increased in strength rather by adding to the mass of matter than by studying to throw the same weight of timber and iron into superior combinations. Meantime the heavy trains, handed over to the locomotive department, led to the construction of heavier and more powerful locomotives, when the maximum was quickly reached, and strongly evinced by the damage done to the permanent way. It was found, moreover, that the older carriages suffered most in cases of collision ; hence there was an additional inducement to add to the size and weight of carriages. But this line of development has been mainly deter- – mined by the demands of the public for greater convenience, speed, and safety, and from the growth of traffic, involving greater length and weight of trains. Passen- The early first-class carriages weighed 3} tons, the bodies or ger car- upper parts being 15 feet long, 64 feet wide, and 4 feet 9 inches Tiages. high, divided into three compartments, to hold six passengers each, or eighteen in all. They now weigh from 8 to 13 tons each, and are from 20 to 30 feet in length and from 8 to 84 fcet wide. Carriages have until recent years been placed almost all on four wheels ; but six wheels on three axles are now generally in use. A modern first-class carriage, 28 to 80 feet long with four compart- ments, gives 7 to 74 feet of total length for each compartment, as against 5 feet in the early carriages. Second and third class carriages, in length from 28 to 81 feet, are divided into five com-

partments, each from 5 feet 7 inches to 6 feet 2 inches long. Saloon carriages are occasionally used, so called because two or more of the ordinary compartments are merged in one. Second- class carriages originally were destitute of cushioning, hard and square, on the nearly obsolete policy of making them uncomfort- able in the hope of inducing passengers to travel first class. The London, Brighton, and South Coast Railway Company in 1857-58 were the first to supply comfortably padded seats in their second- class carriages, and the receipts of that company were in~1858 materially augmented in consequence. Third-class carriages have been improved, under the stimulating example of the Midland Railway Company, who abandoned their second-class carriages, and raised their third-class stock to an equality with the second- class vehicles of other lincs. But there are yct lines of railway on which the third-class carriages are little better than obsolete first and second class carriages converted into third-class. Passenger luggage brake-vans are made open (for the most part) inside for passengers' luggage. They are fitted with a dog-box or small enclosure from side to side with doors at both ends, and with projecting sides, glazed, to accommodate the guard and afford a view of the train from end to end. A pair of doors are placed in each side for luggage. In some designs a separate compartment is partitioned off for the guard, in other cases a compartment of a passenger carriage is allotted for luggage and for the guard. The luggage van is fitted with a powerful brake; it should be fitted with three pairs of wheels. Horse-boxes are constructed to carry three horses.

Recent carriage stock.

Lighting.

248

heavier the load for which mineral vehicles are constructed, the greater is the tear and wear of the stock, insomuch that the waggons on that line which stood to their work best were the old 6-ton waggons.

Railway carriages are composed of two distinct parts, —the under- frame or substructure, and the body or superstructure. The under- frame has to carry the body and to resist the stress of work. It should be on axles placed

well apart, and should be firmly framed together, of hard wood, with iron tie-rods, brackets, knees, straps, bolts, and nuts. Powerful laminated springs are lodged within the frame to take the pull of the train through the central draw- bars and to intercept and absorb the thrusts of the buffers at the ends through the buffing-rods. On the Midland Railway four-

RATE Way

wheeled carriages are (1885) being gradually superseded by six- wheeled and long bogie carriages. Four varieties of bogie carriage and three varieties of six-wheeled carriage are constructed for the service. First-class compartments are constructed to seat six persons, three on each side; third-class compartments seat ten persons, five on each side. A uniform width of 8 feet outside, or 74 inside, is adopted for all carriages; and, as a rule, first-class compartments are 73 feet long between the partitions, and third-class compartments 6 feet loug. The roof is 7 feet 4 inches above the floor at the centre, and the clear height of the doorway is 6 fect. The wheels are 3 feet 74 inches in diameter. Leading par-

ticulars of the several kinds of carriage now constructed on tlic Midland Railway are given in Table XXX. as follows :—

Carriage. of Bey. Compartments. pnd Weight. Price Feet. Tons. cwt

6-wheeled bogie composite ….....eeeeeeeeeee 54 8 first class, 4 third class, 1 luggage=8 58 £1097 4-wheeled bogie composite ….....0..eeeceee 45 3 0 3 oA i 48 18 10 768 4-wheeled bogie third class ….....see+e-+-ee- 43 7 third class 70 1715 620 4-wheeled bogie composite ….....ese-eeeeee 40 2 first class, 3 third class, 1 luggage=6 42 17 5 654 G-wheeled finsivelass "22..6. oo. s ccc crc memecass as 30 4 first class 24 10.) «(138 516 Gawheeled: COMPOSIC . ce c oe creisie1ecrsisiicis comeisre sles 31 2 first class, 2 third class, 1 luggage=5 32 1 Ao 450 Gawihee lousy Meno Classics cterstes sloetesisieiect teeters 31 5 third class 50 10 7 390

Each of these carriages is fitted with a vacuum brake. In the beginning of 1885 there were 837 bogie carriages at work on the Midland Railway, inclusive of 34 Pullman cars. The bogie cars, in virtue of their ability to swing their bogies to the curves on the line, run more freely than ordinary

carriages, which have parallel axles. Six-wheeled carriages are enabled to run the more freely by an allowance of lateral play for the axle-boxes of the middle axle between the axle-guards, whereby the wheels adapt themselves freely to the rails on curves. The Pullman cars in use on the Midland Railway were sent from America. They are of two kinds, —the drawing-room for day service and the sleeping-car. The body of the cars is 514 feet in length externally and 8 feet 9 inches wide. Inside the body is 8 feet 2 inches wide, and 8 feet 64 inches high above the floor. The total length, including the gangways at the ends, is 58 feet. Each car is mounted on two four-wheeled bogies, There are seats for twenty-seven persons in the drawing- room car, with lavatories and heating apparatus, and twenty-two beds are made up in each sleeping-car. The cars weigh 214 tons and their cost is £2700 each.

The carriage stock of the Metropolitan Railway was designed to carry large numbers. The bodies of the carriages are 39} feet in length and 84 feet wide outside, running on eight wheels, of which the extreme axles radiate, or are movable laterally to suit the curves of the way. The first-class carriages are divided into six compartments, providing seats for forty-eight passengers. The second and third class carriages have eight compartments, hold- ing altogether eighty passengers in each. These carriages weigh 18 tons each.

The waggon stock of the Midland Railway is of several classes. All the standard goods and mineral waggons, as well as cattle- waggons, are constructed to carry 8 tons. Leading dimensions, weights, and prices are given below in Table XXXI. :—

External Di- mensions over | Internal Dimensions. Corner Pillars. Load | Weight N00) 0 fe ——— ee to jof Wag- | Price. Height |carry.| gon. Length.| Width.| Length.| Width.) above Floor. ft. in.| ft. in.| ft. in.| ft. in.| ft. in.} tons. jtns,cwt.| £ Covered goods ….{14 ll] 7 5 14 2 610 | 5 103) 8 5 3 72 High – sided for goods or (onlin cone 12 1h 5 le Gere OF} 2 10 S 25. 92 68 Low-sided..| 14 11] 7 5 | 14 6;7 0/1 9 8 4 14 61 Cattle wag- BONS. care 1 6 | 840 17 9 7 4 7 03) 8 6 0 86

The covered goods waggons are made with a doorway at each side, 5 feet wide and 5 high, and a sliding door to each door- way. The high-sided waggons are made with a doorway and hinged door in each side, and two

trap-doors in the bottom. In the low-sided waggons each side is a door for its whole length. The cattle-waggons are made with doorways in each side, to each of which there are two doors hinged to each doorpost, and a letting-down door hinged to the lower side-rail. All the waggons are fitted with transverse buffing and draw springs.

Lighting of Carriages. —The North London Railway Company, it is believed, were the first to use gas instead of oil for lighting carriage stock. Thirty gas-lights in a train are supplied from two reservoirs or gasholders in the brake-vans, which hold 200 cubic feet of ordinary coal-gas, supplied from the mains,—enough to serve the train for from two hours to two and a half hours. The gas is conducted by pipes over the roofs of the carriages, with a branch

to each compartment. Ordinary coal-gas has also been used on the metropolitan railways. Pintsch's system of lighting carriages by compressed oil-gas is extensively in use on Continental railways, where it has been in operation for upwards of ten years. In 1876-77 the system was tried successfully on the Metropolitan Railway, when it appeared that 1000 cubic feet of the compressed gas could do the work of 6500 cubic feet of coal-gas, at a cost of scarcely one farthing per burner per hour, against one-third of a penny for coal-gas lamps, and from $d. to #d. for oil-lamps. The gas is distilled from cheap oils, as the waste-products from the manufacture of paraffin, soft lignite, or shale. The gas is pumped from the gasholder into reservoirs, in which it is compressed to about one-tenth of its ordinary volume. From these it is drawn off into a reservoir stowed under each carriage at a pressure of six atmospheres, or 90 tb per square inch. The Pintsch system is in use on railways in England and Scotland on nearly 3000 vehicles, and is being extended to other stock ; the number of vehicles thus lighted in all the railways of Europe is about 18,000. Besides, the system is employed for the head-lights of locomotives.

Intercommunication signals for railway trains are provided Inter- between driver and guard, driver and passengers, or passengers coni- and guard. Electric means of communication have been proposed munica- and tried, but mechanical appliances are most commonly employed. tion There is the ordinary guard's cord, extending along the train out- signals.

side, placed so as to be accessible from the window; then there are the same cord, with an attachment coming inside the window, the English cord, connected with a bell in the driving cab, a line inside the carriage connected with the steam-whistle, and so on. The acoustic signals appear to belong to the last type; but none of these systems is comparable with the through middle passage of the American cars already noticed.

Continuous Brakes.—No department of railway practice has in Con- recent years received closer attention and more minute study than tinuons that of continuous brakes,—brakes applied to the several vehicles brakes.

in a train. With the amount of brake-power that had for many years been supplied to passenger trains—hand-brakes on tenders and guards' vans—a train running at from 45 to 50 miles per hour on a straight level line could not be pulled up within from 800 to 1200 yards ; and even that inadequate amount of brake-power was in the hands of several men. It was clear that the problem of arresting a train in the shortest distance could only be solved by bringing a power to bear on every part of the train in the shortest possible time. But the difficulty consisted in establishing con- tinuity of action, so that the engine-driver or the guard should be enabled to apply the brake-blocks on a series of vehicles in one operation. Mechanical means were first tried, in the systems of Fay and Newall, in which the brakes are worked by a continuous rod passed under the vehicles. These systems were found to be available only on sections of not more than four or five vehicles, and were not worked by the driver but by the guard. In September 1858 a circular was issued by the Board of Trade to the railway companies, calling attention to the advantages to be derived from having their trains controlled by a sufficient amount of brake-power. Subsequently many inventions were tried,—brakes worked by fluid pressure, others worked by chains ; but no practical solution of the problem appears to have been arrived at until Mr Westinghouse of Pittsburgh, U.S.A., invented a really continuous brake worked by compressed air, which was quickly adopted in the United States, and was tried a few years later on several railways in England. It is still (1885) employed exclusively on the Metropolitan District Railway.

Although the Westinghouse brake was greatly in advance of previously existing systems and answered ordinary requirements

RAILWAY

remarkably well, it became evident that for the worst types of acci- dents something more was wanted. The brake as first produced was non-automatic, being worked from the engine only, not by the guard. And, since the power had to travel from the engine along the whole length of the train, there was a loss of valuable seconds of time whilst the brake-blocks were being applied. Mr Westing- house therefore designed a system by which each vehicle was supplied with a complete brake apparatus, carrying its own store of power in the form of an auxiliary reservoir of compressed air, in addition to the brake cylinder already there. By the action of the "triple valve "—a later introduction—which is fitted to each smaller re- servoir on the branch by which it is connected to the main or brake- pipe, the brakes can be instantly applied. A store of compressed air is maintained throughout the train in the continuous pipe and auxiliary reservoirs ; and so long as the pressure in these is main- tained the brakes are kept off. By a reduction of the pressure in the pipe the triple valve is brought into action, and the com- pressed air in the reservoir flows into the brake-cylinder and applies the brake. The brake can be at once released by restoring the pressure in the brake-pipe, when the compressed air in the cylinder escapes into the atmosphere. In the event of a train being parted and the brake-pipe severed, the escape of air reduces the pressure in the pipe, and the brakes are instantly self-applied. They have thus become known as "automatic" brakes. The com- pressed air by the agency of which the Westinghouse automatic

Bie = Z i \ |

Fic. 44,—E, the brake-pipe, extends the whole length of the train, connected between the vehicles by a coupling E', with flexible pipes e', e; F, the triple valve at the end of the reservoir G@; H, the brake-cylinder, with pistons and rods connected with the brake-levers and the blocks suspended on frames; h, a branch pipe from the brake-pipe or main to the triple valve and reservoir 3 h', a branch pipe from the reservoir and triple valve to the brake-cylinder.

brake is worked is stored in a main reservoir on the engine, as well as in the local reservoirs under the carriages, at a pressure of from 70 to 80 tb per square inch. The air is compressed by means of a steam-pump attached to the engine and worked by steam from the boiler. The compressed air is supplied through the brake-pipe, which passes through the whole length of the train to the second- ary reservoirs. A brake-cylinder is fixed near each secondary re- servoir, and the charge enters the cylinder at the middle of its length between the pistons, which are driven apart, one towards each end of the cylinder, and act, through piston-rods and levers, upon the brake-blocks which are applied to the wheels. The pistons are maintained in their central positions in the brake-cylinder, when out of action, by spiral springs which abut on the ends of the cylinders ; and so the brake-blocks are kept clear of the wheels, The general arrangement of the brake-apparatus applied to a car- riage is shown in fig. 44; and the reservoir and brake-cylinder, with their connexions to each other and to the main pipe, and the intermediary triple valve in section, are shown on a larger scale in fig. 45. The triple valve, by means of which instant automatic ac- tion throughout the train is produced, consists of a piston in a short cylinder, carrying a slide valve,—the piston and the valve moving together. A vehicle out of order can be cut out of the system by turning a tap, and brakes which have been applied by the parting of a train can be released by opening a valve on the cylinder.

In 1874 a royal commission on railway accidents was appointed, and in June 1875 brake trials were made at Newark. On a level road a train, weighing 208°6 tons, running at a speed of 514 miles per hour, and fitted with the Westinghouse automatic pressure-

brake—there tested for the first time on an English railway—was brought to a stand in a distance of 825 fect in the course of 18 seconds,—the equivalent distance for an initial speed of 50 miles per hour being 777 feet. In trials on the North-Eastern Railway

i

Fig. 45.

in July 1879, a train, fitted with the Westinghouse brake, weighing 208 tons, and running at a speed of 51 miles per hour, was stopped in a distance of 621 feet in 142 seconds, —the equivalent distance

for a speed of 50 miles per hour being 594 feet. In August 1877 the Board of Trade urged the railway companies to united and harmonious action, and stated the requirements which in their opinion were essential in a good coutinuous brake: it should be— efficient in stopping trains; instantaneous in action and easily applied by engine-drivers or guards ; in case of accident instant- aneously self-acting ; capable of being put on or taken off with facility, on the engine, tender, and every vehicle of a train ; regu- larly used in daily working; and the materials employed easily maintained and kept in order. That a brake should be instant- aneous in action is evident on considering that at a speed of 50 miles per hour a train advances through 734 feet in a second of time. A striking example of the value of seconds under such cir- cumstances is quoted in the Report, contrasting the working of the Westinghouse compressed-air brake and the Westinghouse vacuum-brake. The rates of speed were nearly the same,—about 52 miles per hour, or 76 feet per second. The train with the former brake ran 825 feet, whilst that with the latter ran 1533 feet. Now, it took 7# seconds to put on the vacuum-brakes and 14 seconds to put on the pressure-brakes. The difference, 64 seconds, at 76 fect per second, makes a space of 475 feet traversed by the train before the brake came into action. In consequence of these steps taken by the Board of Trade all the large railway companics have now (1885) adopted continuous brakes, though some of these do not comply with the conditions of the Board of Trade. The principal question is not now that of automatic versus non-automatic, but of automatic pressure-brakes versus automatic vacuum-brakes. In the latter, as the name indicates, the work is done by the atmo- spheric pressure against the pressure of a comparative vacuum. At 31st December 1878 only 21 per cent. of the total carriage stock was fitted with brakes of some form, of which 12°8 per cent. were auto- matic ; whilst at 30th June 1884 of the total carriage stock 76 per cent. was fitted with continuous brakes, of which 58 per cent. were automatic. It appears that there are in the United Kingdom considerably more Westinghouse automatic brakes in operation than any other single system. The same brake is very largely used in America and on

the Continent, and at the end of 1884 it had been adopted to the extent of upwards of 15,000 sets for locomotives and 78,000 for carriages.

ELECTRICITY.

The employment of electricity in the working of railways has Signal- already been referred to in the application of block-signalling to ling.

the direction of the traffic, in the working of junctions, the protec- tion of stations and sidings, and the repetition of signals.

The first attempt to apply electric power for propulsion on rail- Propul- ways was made by Mr R. Davidson, who in September 1842 tried sion.

on the Edinburgh and Glasgow Railway an electro-magnetic loco- motive, running on four wheels and weighing 5 tons. A speed of 4 miles per hour was attained. Electric power was applied in 1881 by Messrs Siemens and Halske of Berlin on an electric railway, the Lichterfelde line, near Berlin; and since then they have con- structed an electric line 1} miles long, from Charlottenburg to the Spandauer Bock, and a short line in Costverloren Park near Am- sterdam. They also applied the system to a railway in the mines at Zankerode in Saxony. At the International Electric Exhibition in Paris (1881) an electric line was worked by Messrs Siemens Brothers which carried an average of over 13,000 passengers per week ; and in September 1883 a railway of 3 feet gauge, 6 miles in length, was opened between Portrush and Bushmills in the

Lighting.

Acci- dents.

north of Ireland. The gradients are very heavy, having a slope of 1 in 35 at many parts. The curves are very quick, following the line of the road. The conductor employed consists of a third rail, weighing 19 Tb to the yard, and

laid close to the fence. Elec- tricity is transmitted through the conductor, by means of steel brushes, to the Siemens motors by which the car is propelled. The dynamo-machines by which the electricity is generated are driven by the power of a natural waterfall of 26 feet in the river Bush. Two turbines are driven by the fall of water at a speed of 225 revolu- tions per minute ; each is capable of yielding 50 horse-power. The electric car can run on the level at the rate of 12 miles per hour.

Several large metropolitan and other stations are lighted by electricity. At the Waterloo station of the London and South- Western Railway, for example, the new main line suburban pass- enger station, about 13 acres in area, has been lighted by the Anglo-American Brush Light system since February 1881, sixteen arc- lamps of 2000 candle-power each being employed. The Windsor line station at the same terminus, about 14 acres in area, has been lighted by the Edison Company's system since January 1883 with 200 glow-lamps of 16 candle-power each. The large goods-yard on the same railway, about 18 acres in extent, at Nine Elms, has been lighted since January 1883 by fourteen arc-lamps of 4000 candle-power each. The lighting of railway trains by elec- tricity has been successfully effected on the Great Eastern Railway since October 1884. The power is derived from a dynamo-machine driven by a compact rotary engine, placed together in a small case on the top of the locomotive, and worked by steam from the boiler. Sixty electric lights are generated, each of them sufficient to light thoroughly a compartment of a carriage, and supply light for a train of at least twelve vehicles. Trains on other lines also are lighted by electricity.

ACCIDENTS.

Accidents on railways arise from three causes,—inattention of servants, defective material either in the works or the rolling stock, and excessive speed. But the adoption of the absolute block system, with the use of interlocked points and signals and continuous brakes, has led to an absolute diminution of the number of accidents, whilst the amount of traffic has been greatly increased. In 1883 the total number of train accidents on railways in the United Kingdom, reported on to the Board of Trade, was 94 on 18,681 miles open, against 241 accidents ten years earlier on 16,082

miles open. The increased efficiency of management is strikingly brought out by Table XXXII. :-—

Number of Class of Accident to Engines and Trains. Accidents.

1873. 1883.

1. Meeting with or leaving the rails in consequence of obstruction, or from defects in the way or works….| 24 12 2. Failure of boilers, axles, wheels, tires, &c….....4+ 23 it 8. Entering stations at too great speed …....-..~~eeee 5 2 4. Collisions between trains following on the same line of rails, except at junctions, stations, or sidings …... 18 3 5. Collisions at JUNCtiONS …....0..cccccccccnessssseseces 20 8 6. Collisions within fixed signals at stations or sidings 98 44 7. Collisions between engines or trains meeting in oppo~~ Saray Gbbieonles Np ge pdoomenondpe Sabodon) csonoauGaboouT 3 8. Collisions at level crossings of two railways …..... 3 9. Derailment of engines or trains wrongly run or turned; ~ into sidings, or otherwise through facing points …. 36 6 10. On inclines,—want of Control] .....eeeee ce eeee cece ll 2 Totaliot train 'accidents… ccc: : sss cece cence 241 94 11. Miscellaneous,—not train accidents …....- 6 7 UR) Sop do poaceaseD pNopacaAoauoUsdUneadodon 247 101

During the period 1873-1883 there was therefore a material improvement not only in the character of the way and works but also in that of the rolling stock. Accidents from entering statious at too great a speed have been augmented in number,—a result naturally arising from the greater speeds and volumes of traffic. Ten of these (for 1873 and 1883) were due to want of control of the trains, and seven others to want of continuous brakes. Collisions have been diminished to a marked extent ; and nearly all of those in 1883 took place at junctions, stations, and sidings, mostly within fixed signals. Many of these collisions could have been obviated if proper interlocking and block working had been in use, together with continuous brakes on the trains. Of the 94 investigated train accidents 75 took place on the lines of fifteen companies, working in the aggregate 12,850 miles, and having run upwards of 216 millions of miles with trains,—showing that one accident happened for every 171 miles of railway, or for every 3 millions nearly of miles run. One person in every 625 employed in the traffic—locomotive, carriage, engineers', and stores departments— in 1883 was

killed in the service. The employés who stand at the extremes of the scale of fatality are guards: of brakesmen and goods-guards 1 in 97 lost their lives, and of passenger-guards only 1 in 5902. Pointsmen and signalmen occupy a medium position in the scale, 1 in 800 losing their lives ; of engine-drivers 1 in 643 was killed, and of firemen 1 in 5383. Of persons other than pass-

RATE WaAe

engers or servants of railway companies who suffered in accidents, trespassers, including suicides, as usual form the largest number, —354 killed and 165 injured. Of passengers 125 were killed and 1416 were injured—together, 1541 persons, or 1 in about 444,000 of the total number of passengers in 1883.

Rai~way Law.

Parliament soon began to exercise control over railways by means Legisla- of standing orders; and in 1832 a passenger duty of 4d. per mile tive mea. for every four passengers carried was levied on railway companies. sures,

In 1842 a Government department was instituted whereby the Board of Trade was empowered to appoint inspectors of railways, to postpone the opening of railways, to disallow bye-laws, and to institute legal proceedings against companies for infringing the law. The Board of Trade was further empowered to direct cornpanies to make returns of accidents, of traflic, and of tolls levied. The passenger duty was fixed at 5 per cent. of the gross receipts from passengers. In 1846 the Commissioners of Railways, five in number, were appointed, to whom the jurisdiction of the Board of Trade was transferred, but in 1851 it was re-transferred to the Board of Trade. The Railway and Canal Traffic Act, 1854, requires railway companies to provide " reasonable facilities" for receiving, forward- ing, and delivering their own traffic and the traffic of other com- panies, and to abstain from "unreasonable" preference. It appears to have been of small practical utility until 1873. The Regulation of Railways Act, 1878, establishes a new tribunal, "The Railway Commissioners," not more than three in number, one to be of ex- perience in the law and one of experience in railway business. The principal duty of the commissioners is to enforce the

observance of the “reasonable facilities ” section of the Act of 1854. The com- missioners have power to enjoin the forwarding of through traffic at through rates, the power being set in motion by the companies only. The commissioners are empowered whenever there is a dis- pute between two companies that can be referred to arbitration to decide such dispute. The Employers’ Liability Act, 1880, provides that where personal injury is caused to a workman by reason of the negligence of any person in the service of the employer, who has the charge or control of any signal, points, locomotive engine, or train upon a railway, he or his representatives shall have the same right of compensation or remedy against the employer as if the workman had not been in the service of the employer nor engaged in his work. The amount of compensation is not to exceed three years’ earnings of the workman. (D. e7C3)

FoREIGN AND CONTINENTAL.

Europe.—A few unimportant tramways were opened in France in France,

1826-32. In 1833 the Government began a comprehensive system of surveys, and laid down the general plan of railway development for the whole country; and in 1842 Thiers devised a scheme by which the state was to furnish half the cost (about £10,000 per mile), while private companies were to lay the lincs at their own expense and equip and work them fora term of years. In 1857 six great companies were working their lines with profit ; but the state found it necessary (1859) to guarantee them the interest on the additional lines which were needed. By subsequent legislation the construction of local railways on a cheaper scale was encouraged, and in 1875-76 unsuccessful efforts were made by speculators to unite these local lines into systems which should compete with the old companies and break their monopoly. Since that date some have been absorbed by the great companies ; others have passed into the hands of the state. After more than one scheme for a comprehensive system of state railways had been formed by leading statesmen and then for one reason or another abandoned, in 1884 agreements were made by which some 7000 miles of railway were to be constructed in addition to the 17,000 miles then in operation, the money to be supplied by the six great companies and ultimately repaid by the state, which meanwhile guaranteed the

shareholders of each company a dividend equal to the average of recent years (in no case so low as 7 per cent.). The profitable system of monopoly has not been favourable to the development of enterprise in railway nianagement in France. Scarcely any of the so-called express trains run at as high a speed as 40 miles an hour. The time allowed for the despatch of goods is very long. The average rates (0°78d. per passenger-mile, 0°82d. per ton-mile) are somewhat higher than those of Germany. The long-distance traffic especially has received but little encouragement. On the other hand, many of the technical arrangements of the French lines are excellent. Although the state owns so few railroads, it has reserved extensive rights of regulation, both in matters of business and in cngineering ; there is a body of Government engineers organized with almost military precision.

Soon after 1830 plans were laid for a Belgian system to be owned Belgium.

and managed by the state, and work was actively begun in 1833. The Government lines were arranged in the form of a cross, the point of intersection being at Malines. By this means the Govern- ment was able to develop the traffic of Belgium itself, and at the same time to secure a large share of the transit trade between Ger-

Holland.

Germany.

Austria- Hungary.

RA TLWAY

many and England which had formerly gone wia Holland. Having obtained control of the main lines with a length of about 300 miles the Government left the rest to private enterprise. Between 1850 and 1870 the private lines had increased from less than 200 to 1400 miles and competition between the state and private railways soon became active, and for ten years after 1856 rates were in con- sequence reduced to the lowest possible point. The state railways, however, had certain advantages: they had been well laid out and economically constructed ; their organization was admirable and

the very keenness of private competition was sufficient to guard agaiust serious abuses. Nevertheless about 1870 the Government decided to purchase most of the competing lines, and by 1874 it owned more than half the railways of the country. It now (1885) owns three-quartcrs ; there is only one large private system which could by any possibility compete, and with this there is a joint- purse agreement. The charges in general have uot been raised as a result of the new policy, and they are still the lowest in Europe.

The first lines in Holland were constructed by private companies in 1840-56. In 1860 a state system was begun, which included at one time nearly two-thirds of the mileage of the kingdom. It was not, however, managed by the state directly, but leased to a private company. But the financial results were not satisfactory to either party, and the commission of 1881-82 reported strongly against the arrangement. The absence of connexions or of mutual accommoda- tion between the different systems elicited severe criticism.

The first German line was opened in 1835. While most of the states were too small to have a comprehensive policy, Prussia from the very outset encouraged railway development, giving pecuniary assistance, and in return reserving important rights of state con- trol. About 1848 the Government began to construct railways of its own, at the same time purchasing shares of stock in private companies. After 1870 the same policy, which had been for a time suspended, was again pushed forward in the direction of creating a German imperial system; but the jealousy of the smaller states

roved fatal to its success. The Prussian Government, however,

egan to extend its own system ona large scale. In 1878 it owned only 3000 miles of railroad and managed 2000 more, while 6000 were in the hands of private companies. Now (1885) there are 13,000 miles of state railways and only about 1000 in private hands, The prices paid by the Government were, as a rule, high (in one instance the sellers secured an income of more than 16 per cent.), but the lines are nevertheless managed with reasonable profit to the state. The passenger-train service is prompt and comfortable. The speed attained is greater than elsewhere in Continental Europe, the

maximum being about 45 miles. The passenger rates are low, averaging not quite 0°7d. per mile for all passengers carried. There are Oa aa et few accidents. The freight service is rather slow, and the charges are not relatively so low as those for pass- engers, On the other hand, they have for the most part avoided preferential rates ; something very like a system of equal mileage rates prevails, though not always quite consistently carried out. In addition to this rate there is a fixed terminal or "Grundsatz"; but it is put, almost purposely, too low, so as uot to interfere with the very short-distance traftic. The result is that the mileage rate is relatively too high, and for the long-distance traffic it reaches a very high figure. Down to 1880 this result was evaded by a system of special tariffs for export, import, or transit traffic, but during the last five years a strong effort has been made to do away with them. It has not been altogether successful, owing to the competition of water-routes.

In Austria a tramway line for general traffic was chartered in 1824 and opened in 1828. But until 1838 the Government positively discouraged the introduction of railways. The policy then adopted, however, guaranteed to each railway a monopoly in its own district during the (comparatively short) period for which its charter was to run. At the same time the state made lines of its own on a large scale. The revolution of 1848 led to financial straits; and in the years following most of the state railways, at least in Austria itself, were sold to private companies for about one-half their real value. But in Hungary the reality of a state railway system was more steadily maintained. The growth of the Austrian system was slow until after the war of 1866; then it began to develop rapidly. The railway speculation which ended in the crisis of 1873, being perhaps more recklessly carried on in Austria than any- where else in the world, resulted in very severe distress. Since 1876 there have been consistent efforts to increase the importance of the state railway system both by the purchase of old lines and the construction of new ones. At present there are in Austria 2000 miles of state-managed railroad, and not quite 6000 managed by private companies; while in Hungary there are 2000 miles of state railroad and 3000 in private hands. The policy of the state management has been to reduce rates, especially for passengers ; but they are still higher than in Germany. In 1883 the average receipt per mile for each passenger was 0°84d. ; while the average receipt per ton of freight was 109d. Per train-

mile the receipts were about 9s. ; but the traffic was so light in many parts of the country that the average profit on the investment was only 4% per cent.

251

The Austrian railways belong to the German Verein, and are like the German lines in most of their methods and principles of ad- ministration. They have carried the system of traffic agreements, even between the state and private companies, into the same de- tail; but they have not adopted the system of equal mileage rates in their tariffs ; on the contrary, they have (like Belgium) adopted a sliding scale, diminishing for longer distances. Probably no other country is so situated that it has to deal with such perplex- ing problems of railway tariff policy as Austria. Nearly all the Austrian railways are of standard gauge; but the problem of the economical construction and management of local lines has received most careful attention from the authorities ; and the law specially encourages the construction of cheap railways in mountainous dis- tricts or for purely local traffic. About fifty such railways were chartered between 1880 and 1883.

The first lines in Switzerland were merely local, and the summer Switzer: It was not until land.

passenger traffic formed a main source of income. Austria had completed two routes across the Alps and France one that the first Swiss route, the St Gotthard, was projected. It is, however, the greatest work of them all, the main tunnel being over 93 miles in length. In spite of the character of the country, the Swiss railways are nearly all of standard gauge. They are entirely owned by private companies, though many of them have received aid from the cantons. The rates for freight are somewhat high. There are now about 2000 miles in all.

After 1860 the railways of Italy developed rapidly. There were Italy.

four main systems—the upper Italian, the Roman, the Calabrian, and the southern system (along the Adriatic). Although this last had in many respects the least promising field, it was the most enterprising and the most successful. The other systems had been arranged more in accordance with the old political divisions than in accordance with the wants of trade. In spite of liberal subsidies from the Government they did not prosper. The lines of Calabria (and Sicily) were the most unfortunate ; and the Government in 1870 was compelled to take the railways of this section into its own hands. The gross receipts have been constantly less than the working expenses. In 1873 the Government contracted to purchase the Roman railways for the same general reasons. The financial difficultics were such that the contract was not carried out till 1880-82. Meantime similar contracts, though for very different reasons, had been made for the purchase of the other two systems. But a special commission, which thoroughly studied the question during 1878-81, reported that the Italian Government had better not undertake to work its lines, even though it virtually owned them. Eventually they were leased for a term of sixty years to two main companies, each controlling about 3000 miles of line, with a third, much smaller, in Sicily. The state is to receive about 274 per cent. of the gross receipts, the companies 62} per cent. ; the remainder is to be divided in a somewhat complicated system of reserve funds. On the whole, the railways of Italy leave much to be desired both in construction and equipment. The rates are reasonable, particularly for local traftic; but the service is always slow, and often quite inadequate to the wants of trade.

The first railway line in Spain was opened in 1848, and the period Spain.

of most rapid development was from 1855 to 1865. The Govern- ment encouraged railways by most liberal subsidics, which had the effect of bringing forward a number of purely speculative under- takings. The indirect results were bad; and for this, as well as other reasons, the years 1869-75 formed a time of most serious depression. Since then matters have improved greatly, on account both of changes in legislation made about 1870 and of the improve- ment in the country itself. There are now about 5000 miles of railway. One-fourth of the money spent has been advanced by

the Government ; and of late years the financial results have been reasonably good. The ratio of working expenses to gross earnings is about 45 per cent. The charges for passengers are rather low ; but those for freight are extremely high. The gauge is 54 feet.

The first Portuguese line was constructed by the state in 1853 Portugal.

or 1854. The Government now owns about half the roads of the country,—one system in the north and another in the south, each somewhat less than 200 miles long. The central lines are owned by a company, chartered in 1859, which has been for many years managed by a body of French directors, from whose control it has but recently been freed. The financial results have been far from satisfactory. The railways are built on a 5% feet gauge.

In Denmark and in Norway railway development has been slow. Scandi-
The greater part of the lines are owned and managed by Govern- navia.

ment. Most of the Norwegian lines are laid on a gauge of 34 feet. The running is slow and the traffic very light. Sweden possesses something over 4000 miles in all, of which the state owns about one-third. The capital averages less than £7000 per mile,—lower than in almost any other country of the world. The railways are in the hands of a number of local companies, which control on an average hardly 30 miles each.

In Russia a short railway—little more than an experiment—was Russia.

constructed in the neighbourhood of St Petersburg in 1835-37, The first line of any length was opened in 1851 between St Peters-

Turkey.

Canada.

Mexico..

Col- ombia.

Guate-

mala.

Brazil.

Chili.

252

burg and Moscow. This was built by the state, but afterwards sold toa private company. After the close of the Crimean War railway construction was more rapid. The lines were laid down by the Government surveyors, but were constructed and managed by private companies, receiving, however, much help from the Government. Of the 15,000 miles in operation hardly a tenth part belongs to the state, even including the 700 miles of state railway in Finland. Yet about half the capital employed in rail- way construction has been furnished by the state. Since 1880 the construction of railways in European Russia has moved slowly. Of greater importance has been the development of the Asiatic lines. The first of these, in the Caucasus, was opened in 1872 to a length of nearly 200 miles. The Trans-Caspian military railway was begun in 1880; the connexion between the Caspian and the Black Sea was completed in 1883. The Siberian railway is being pushed forward as rapidly as the finances of the empire will allow. The administration is in most respects modelled upon that adopted by Germany and Austria, The plan of the Russian railways has been dictated by military rather than industrial considerations. The gauge is 5 feet.

Isolated lines were constructed in Turkey in 1860 and 1866. The first general plan for a system of importance dates from 1869, and was modified in 1872. Foreign companies furnished the capital and received a subsidy from the Government. In return they were to make certain annual payments; but the clauses providing for this were so carelessly drawn that the companies seem to have had an interest in delaying the completion of the work. Some of the lines were lost in the cession of territory which followed the war of 1878. There are now open for traffic about 1000 miles of railway in European Turkey, and 200 more in Asia Minor.

There is a fairly developed system of railways (1000 miles or more) in Roumania, owned by the state; and there are a few lines in Servia.

Arrangements seem to be completed by which through communica- tion in these countries will soon be established on a large scale, if the authorities in Turkey and Bulgaria do not fail in their duty. The Government of Greece is also engaged in extending its railway system, which has hitherto amounted to nothing. (ASrE:)

America.—In the Dominion of Canada 9118 miles of railway and 6735 of tramway, together 15,848, were open in the end of 1888. The accounts show that the total outlay for construction amounted to about 73 millions sterling, being at the rate of £4610 per mile. The gross earnings for the year 1883 amounted to up- wards of 6 millions sterling, of which 72°3 per cent. was absorbed as working expenses, leaving £1,693,000 net earnings, which amounted to only 2°3 per cent. on the capital cost. The earlier railways were laid to gauges of 54 and 34 feet, but the inconveniences of break of gauge with the railways of the United States led to the relaying of all the lines to the standard gauge, except those of Newfoundland and Prince Edward's Island, which remain on the 33 feet gauge. The principal system is the Grand Trunk Railway, comprising the original Grand Trunk and the Great Western, which were consolid- ated in 1882, making a total length of 2358 miles of line. The first section of the system—Portland to Montreal—was opened in 18538, the first line opened in Canada. In June 1884 of the (esti- mated) 2899 miles of the Canadian Pacific Railway, connecting the Pacific with the Atlantic, 2105 miles were open and in operation.

In Mexico the first railway constructed and opened was the Mexi- can Railway, between Mexico city and Vera Cruz, 264 miles, with a branch 29 miles, the first section from Vera Cruz to Paso del Macho being opened in 1865. This railway, with one or more others in Mexico, was constructed to the 4 feet 84 inch gauge, but others, including the Mexican National Railway, 910 miles long, are laid to the 3 feet gauge. The Mexican Central Railroad, 1224 miles long, was completed in 1884.

The Panama Railroad, Colombia, between Aspinwall and Panama, 473 miles in length, was opened in January 1855. The rails are laid toa gauge of 5 feet. Railways were in progress in 1883-84 in scveral of the other states of Colombia, all of them to a gauge of 3 feet.

In Guatemala the first line of railway from San Jose to Esquintla, 13 miles in length, laid to a gauge of 3 feet, was opened in June 1880. A line from Champerico to Ritalhulca, 30 miles long, was opened in December 1883 ; and another from San José to the capi- tal, 69 miles long, is now finished.

In the empire of Brazil the Mana Railway was the first line opened, early in the decade 1850-60. It isa short line of single way, 11 miles long, between the head of the bay of Rio de Janeiro and the foot of the serra. It was laid toa gauge of 54 feet ; but other lines in Brazil are laid to a gauge of 5 feet 3 inches. The empire possessed in January 1884 railways of a total length of 3500 miles open for traffic, besides 1500 miles in course of construction. The state owns nine lines, having 1300 miles open, the principal of which is the Dom Pedro II., intended to connect the eastern and western provinces of the empire.

Chili was one of the first states in South America to initiate the construction of railways. The Copiapo Railway, laid to the 4 feet 84 inch gauge, was opened about 1850; and an Act was passed in 1852 authorizing the construction of a line to connect Santiago

RATLEWAYT

with Valparaiso, 114 miles distant. In 1855 the first 8 miles were opened for traffic, and in 1863 the line was opened throughout. It was constructed to a gauge of 54 feet. In 1883 the total length of lines open for traffic was 1378 miles.

In Peru a system of railways has been in course of construction Peru, since 1852, chiefly at the expense of the state. In 1878 there were open for traffic, or in course of construction, twenty-two lines belonging to the state and to private individuals, 2030 miles in length, representing a cost of about 36 millions sterling.

Africa.—The railways of Lower Egypt have been laid out pri- Egypt. marily to connect Alexandria, Cairo, and Suez, with branches to Mansurah and elsewhere in the Delta. The line first laid out, between Alexandria and Cairo, 130 miles long, was opened in January 1856. The junction line from Bennah to Suez is 101% miles in length ; the total length of railways open

for traffic in Egypt at the end of 1883 was 941 miles, laid to the 4 feet 84 inch gauge.

There are three systems of railway at the Cape of Good Hope,— Cape the Western from Cape Town, the Midland from Port Elizabeth, Colony, and the Eastern from East London. In January 1884 there were 1213 miles open for traffic.

In the colony of Natal there were at the end of 1883 105 miles Natal. of railway open, and 120 were then in course of construction.

In the Island of Mauritius there are two lines of railway laid Mau- to the 4 feet 83 inch gauge, with two branches, of a total length of ritius. 94 miles. The North line, starting from Port Louis, is 31 miles long, and was opened in 1864; the Midland line, passing through the centre of the island, is 35 miles long, and was opened iu 1865.

Asia.—In 1845 the East Indian and the Great Indian Peninsula India. Railway Companies were formed. Four years later the Government entered into arrangements with these two companies for the con- struction of railways in the presidencies of Bengal and Bombay, guaranteeing for ninety-nine years a dividend of from 44 to 5 per cent. upon the estimated cost of these and succeeding railways. They adopted one uniform gauge of 5 feet 6 inchcs. Down to 1869 this policy of guarantee and: uniform gauge was adhered to. But in 1869, under the rule of Lord Lawrence, the Government altered the standard gauge for new lines to one metre, or 3 feet 33 inches, and used the lightest rails and rolling-stock compatible with the requirements of Indian traffic. There are now five different railway gauges in India, namely, the 54 feet, the 3 feet 33 inch, the 4 feet, the 24 feet, and the 2 feet. The first piece of railway opened in India was a section of the Great Indian Peninsula Railway, 203 miles long, from Bombay to Tannah, in 1853. At the end of March 1884 there were 1288 miles of that railway open for traffic.

The East Indian Railway was opened for a length of 38 miles in 1854; there are now 1509 miles open. In 1869 this railway was transferred to Government, though it is still worked by the com- pany. Of the Madras Railway 65 miles were opened in 1856 ; there are now 861 open. The first

of the imperial state railways was opened (114 miles) in 1873. At the end of March 1884 the number of miles of line open for traffic was as follows (Table XX XIII.) :—

Miles open, | Cost per Mile, March 1884. | December 1883. West UNG RAM WANs «ccc cc ccseeice cecese 1,509 £22,400 Guaranteed Ta WAYS . 20. cece cave ccwecece 4,641 15,000 Darjiling- Assisted companies …....-..e00. 256 Himalayan

4,700

State railways—Imperial ….....000 2,649 10,200 PRO NAIC TD crepe siatalelstais) sieters 1,273 6,800 Native States…..... 504 5,600 Total for all railways …..... 10,832 £13,700

The number of passengers carried increased from 24,280,459 in 1874 to 65,098,953 in 1883.

In Ceylon the railways have been constructed by the Govern- Ceylon. ment. The main line, from Colombo to Kandy, 743 miles long, was opened for traffic in 1867; and the branch to Navalapitiya,

17 miles long, was opened in 1874. The Kalutara Railway, 273 niles long, was finally opened in 1879. There were 164 miles open at the end of 1884, and 16 in course of construction.

The only railway ever laid in China ran along a strip of land, China. about 9 miles long, between Shanghai and Woosung, opened in 1876. In October 1877 the line was removed and the traffic came to an end in consequence of official jealousy, although the railway was very popular with the natives.

The first railway that was opened in Japan was the Tokio-Yoko- Japan. hama line, 18 miles in length, commenced in 1869 and opened for traffic in 1872, laid to a gauge of 34 feet. At June 1884 there were open for traffic 236 miles of railway. .

Australia.—The four leading colonies of Australia have their capitals connected by railways, and each has its own gauge.

The railways of New South Wales are divided into three systems, New all of which take their departure from Sydney, the capital,—the South northern, the western, and the southern system. The first piece of Wales. line, 15 miles in length, was opened in 1855; and at the end of 1883 there were 1320 miles open for traffic, and 597 in course of

Victoria.

Queens- land.

South Aus- tralia.

Western Aus- tralia,

New Zea- land.

Con- struc- tion.

RATLWAY

construction. inches.

Victoria has a uniform gauge of 5 feet 8 inches. The railways all belong to the state. There were 1562 miles of railway open at the end of 1883, besides which 180 were in progress.

In Queensland a system of light substantial railways has been laid out on the 34 feet gauge, mainly from motives of economy and to moderate the difficulties of carrying the line over the main range to the tableland of the Darling Downs. The first section of the Southern and Western Railway was opened in 1867. At the end of 1883 there were 1038 miles of railway open for traffic, and 454 were in course of construction.

In South Australia a gauge of 5 feet 3 inches was at first adopted. The Adelaide and Port Adelaide Railway, 74 miles long, was opened in 1856, and the Adelaide and Kapunda Railway, connecting the capital with the chief copper mines, 503 miles long, was opened in 1857. At the same time railways on a 34 feet gauge were also con- structed ; the first of these, between Port Wakefield and Blyth, was partly opened in May 1867. The

Port Augusta and Port Darwin Railway, destined to connect the Indian Ocean with the Southern Ocean, will, when completed, be about 2000 miles in length. The colony had 991 miles of railway open for traffic at the end of 1888, with 225 in course of construction. In view of the inconveniences of a break of gauge, the progress of the broader gauge lines was stayed northwards, after the junctions had been effected, and new main lines into the interior are constructed on the 34 feet gauge.

In Western Australia there were only 55 miles of railway open for traffic at the end of 1883 and 68 in course of construction.

At the end of 1883 Tasmania had 167 miles of railway completed, and in 1884 207 miles in course of construction.

New Zealand.—The first railways in New Zealand were con- structed in the province of Canterbury: the Lyttelton and Christ- church Railway, connecting the port town with the capital of the province, 6 miles long, was commenced in 1860, and opened in 1867, laid to a gauge of 5 feet 3 inches. The Great Southern Rail- way, a portion of the trunk line to the south, of the same gauge, was opened, also in 1867, to the river Selwyn, distant 23 miles from Christchurch. A comprehensive system of railways connecting the chief towns of the colony was commenced at the expense of the Government in 1872, for which the 34 feet gauge was adopted as the standard. The first lines so constructed were the Wellington and Woodville Railway and the Napier and Manawatu Railway. At the end of 1883 there were 469 miles open for traffic in the North Island and 926 in the South Island, besides 91 of private lines, making in all 1486 miles. @i eC)

The lines are laid to a uniform gauge of 4 feet 84

United States.

Construction.—The low cost of American railways has been due largely to a close adaptation of the alignment to the natural surface by the use of grades and curves. The importance of saving in materials, labour, and cost has been very much greater than in Europe, because labour and nearly all materials but timber were much costlier, and especially because tlie interest on money was very much higher, —until about 1875, on the average

probably 9 or 10 percent. The use of the " truck " or " bogie " under locomotives and cars made it possible for the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, the first long line in a mountainous country, to be constructed with curves of 600 feet radius, and on temporary lines on the same rail- way with curves of 300 and 278 feet radius. Curves of 955 and even 716 feet radius are common through difficult country ; curves of 573 feet radius occur on some important lines; and 410 to 388 feet radii are not uncommon in mountainous regions. On the United States military railroads in 1864 an immense traffic passed safely over temporary lines with a curve of 50 feet radius. Early experi- ments as to the real power of the locomotive to surmount gradients led to the adoption of 110 and 116 feet per mile for ascents 17 miles long, and to the successful use on a temporary track over a tunnel (in 1852) of gradients of 1 in 10, over which a locomotive weighing 25 tons hauled regularly one-car trains weighing 584 tons, including its own weight. A gradient of 1 in 124, 7 miles long, in a mining branch in Colorado is now regularly worked. In the construction proper a noticeable peculiarity has been the frce use of open trestle- work of timber, to save both masonry and earth or rock excavation. Some of these timber structures have been of enormous proportions, as the Portage Viaduct (sce vol. iv. p. 328) over the Genesee River, 284 feet high and 800 feet long, in 50 feet spans, built in eighteen months (1858), at a cost of only $140,000, and containing 125,000 cubic feet of timber and 80 tons of bolts. Structures of timber exceeding 100 feet in height have been rare, but of all dimensions below that exccedingly common, the usual intent and practice hav- ing been to replace them as they became unserviccable with masonry embankments. Although their use has not unfrequently been abused by permitting them to become unsafe from decay, they have in the main been thoroughly solid and substantial. For bridge spans of 30 to 250 feet the wooden " Howe truss" bridge, a type peculiar to America, was early invented and almost universally

used where wrought-iron trusscs would be now used both in Europe and America. The piers and abutments for such trusses were usually of stone, but not unfrequently of timber also. These wooden trusses are now being rapidly replaced with iron, the lead- ing types being the Whipple, Post,

Fink, and Bollman trusses (see BrIpGEs, vol. iv. p. 822 sqg.). The sleepers (in America called ties or cross-ties) are usually of hard wood (white oak), hewn on top and bottom, with the natural surface of the tree on the sides. The usual dimeusions are 6 (sometimes 7) inches thick, 8 (sometimes 84 or 9) feet long, and 8 to 10 or even 12 inches face. The usual rule is to place them 2 feet or less apart, and 2640 to 2700 to the mile. The large bearing surface thus afforded has especially favoured the use of the flat-based or Vignoles rail, and it is in exclusive use throughout North and forthe most part South America. The rails now most largely rolled weigh from 56 to 65 Tb per yard. On the light-traffic lines of the south and west there are still many 50 Ib rails, and in the north and east rails of 70, 72, 75, and 80 Ib sections are in limited but increasing use. An average for the whole United States would now be somewhat under 60 Ib. The close propinquity of the sleepers gives much greater stiffness to the rail than com- parative weights alone would indicate, a 60 ib rail being fully equivalent in stiffness and strength to an 80 fb rail supported on chairs 3 feet between centres. The ballast and drainage of American railroads have often been very defective, with the view to effecting a large saving in first cost. Improvements in this as in other respects have taken place in recent years, and many thousand miles are now maintained at a high standard of excellence. Right of way, usually in a continuous strip 100 feet wide (wider where necessary, but never narrower), has been largely given, or purchased at very low rates. The widths of road-bed (almost always first graded for a single track) are usually 18 to 20 feet in excavation and 14 feet on embankments, with 14 to 1 slopes. Side slopes of 1 to 1 have been largely used in regions not exposed to frost. Parallel tracks are placed 13 feet between centres.

Railway development in the United States has had to adapt Develop- itself to the needs of a new and rapidly growing country, a large ment.

part of which was first made available for settlement by railways. Three locomotives were imported from England in 1829, and the first trial in America took place on 8th August 1829 at Honesdale, Pennsylvania. The first railway constructed to be worked by loco- motives was the South Carolina Railroad (1828-30), though trials of an experimental locomotive had been made before on the Balti- more and Ohio Railroad, which continued to be worked by horse power until 1832. The milcage of railway

construction about kept pace with that of the United Kingdom until 1850 ; at the beginning of 1885 it amounted to 125,379 miles. The mileage completed amounted to 40 miles at the end of 1830, to 3361 miles in 1841, and to 5206 miles in 1847, of which 1340 miles had been opened within six years. Then there was a sudden and great increase, the yearly additions for seven years being 1056 miles in 1848, 1048 in 1849, 1261 in 1850, 1274 in 1851, 2288 in 1852, 2170 in 1858, 3442 ntiles in 1854. The Civil War checked railway construction, only 3257 miles being opened during the five years ending with 1865, when the aggregate amounted to 32,996 miles. But during the seven years ae with 1872 the mileage of the country was nearly doubled, the yearly additions being 1403 miles in 1866, 2541 in 1867, 2468 in 1868, 4103 in 1869, 5658 in 1870, 6660 in 1871, 7439 in 1872, a total of 30,272 miles in seven years. At the close of this period of construction there was a mile of railway to every 666 inhabitants. It was followed by great financial disasters and in- dustrial stagnation, and by a period of comparative inactivity in railway extension, only 5217 miles being opened in 1873, and only 14,057 in the five years ending with 1878 (2428 in the last-named year). During the five years ending with 1883 40,000 miles were opened, of which 11,568 fell to 1882. At the end of 1884 the population per mile of railway was 458. There was no railway west of the Mississippi until 1853, and then only 38 miles; in 1860 there were 1930 miles (24,990 on the east), and in 1865 3007 miles (29,988 on the east). Since 1865 46,600 miles have been built west of the Mississippi. About one-half of the population of the United States isin the territory lying north of the Potomac and Ohio and east of the Mississippi, including sixteen States with an aggregate area of 418,495 square miles, 29,000,000 inhabitants, and 55,725 miles of railway. France and Germany together have nearly the same area (416,205 square miles), 83,000,000 inhabitants, and 40,682 miles of railway. The United States has one mile of railway to 7°5 square miles of territory and 520 inhabitants, and Europe 1 mile of railway to 10°2 square miles and 2040 inhabit- ants. The two States of New York and Pennsylvania, whose area is abont equal to that of Great Britain, have onc mile of railway to 6°2 square miles, against one to 5°9 in Great Britain; and Massa- chusetts and New Jersey, with one-third more area than Belgium (which has more railway in proportion to area than any other European country), have 4 square miles of area per mile of railway, while Belgium has 4°2. In the Southern States

the railways are much less numerous and have lighter traffic and earnings. The prevailing course of traffic in America is east and west, or rather

Cost. The railways having at first to serve a thinly peopled but rapidly | fluctuations in these rates, the figures being the number of cents growing country, American engineers devised methods of construc- | per 100 Ib of first-class (the highest class) freight :— tion and working which produced a line at very small cost, lacking : = very many of the appliances considered necessary in Europe, but 1869. | 1870. | 1871. | 1875. | 1882. | 1884. capable of being extended and developed as the country itself be- | | Fichest rate…...| 188 180 | 150 10 | %% 7 caine more settled and prosperous. At first many lines cost only | | Lowest rate …...| 25 50 | 30 30 30 40 £2000 per mile, and much better lines are now being built for |? —J—-aA__2AJ Be £3000 per mile or less. Even when fully developed they are still The rates which the railways have endeavoured to maintain on usually very much less costly than European railways. Some of | this traffic since 1877 have been, with but slight changes, 75 cents the large systems have cost, on the average, only from £7000 to | for first-class freight, 60 for second, 45 for third, 35 for fourth, £8000 per mile. The average reported cost in 1884 of the 125,000 | and 25 cents for fifth. The highest of these is at the rate of 1°644 miles of railway in the United States was £11,400 per mile ; but | cents per Amcrican ton per mile (=0-92d. per English ton per mile); the actual average cost is probably much less. the lowest is 0°548 cent (=0°307d.) The "basis rate" is that on Traftic. In the United States coal for fuel and timber for building and | grain and flour from Chicago to New York,—grain, flour, and meats other purposes are carried by railway 1500 miles or more from the | forming about four-fifths of the whole traffic eastwards. Twenty place of production. Cattle are carried 2000 miles and more, and | cents (=0°492 cent or 0°275d. per ton per mile) is considered a wheat and other grains worth but half as much per ton, in immense | remunerative rate. Another "basis rate" is that from Chicago quantities, 1500 to 1800 miles. 'This is possible only by rates | south-west to Kansas City, which governs rates from places about which in most countries would be thought ruinously low. But in | 500 miles from Chicago west and south-west. This rate is usually recently settled parts of the United States the population are often | nearly the same as that from Chicago north-west to St Paul, 400 dependent upon the railway for almost everything they consume ;

| miles, governing a large amount of traffic in that direction. Between and almost everything they produce, except their bread and meat, | the Missouri river and the Pacific coast is another territory with has to be carried by the same means. Thus the traffic per inhabit- | another basis ; and in the south, rates from the Atlantic ports to ant is very much larger than in most old countries. Hence too | inland towns are governed by one general rule, as also those from manufactured goods can often be carried 1000 or 1500 miles at a | places in the upper Mississippi valley (like St Louis, Chicago, cost very little more than that at the place of manufacture or | Cincinnati, and Louisville) to the same or other interior towns of importation. In one year the five eastern trunk lines received at | the south. 'Traffic is facilitated on the longer routes by organiza- their western termini (about 450 miles from New York) for trans- | tions known as " fast freight lines," whose cars run over several portation eastwards 8,200,000 tons of goods, equal to more than | connecting railways. When first established these lines were in- 26,000 tons daily. This has greatly promoted the formation of | dependent corporations, owning their cars, collecting the charges for large railway systems and the construction of branches and exten- | transportation, and paying dividends out of their profits. Now all sions by railway companies near unsettled districts. A company | but a few are simply co-operative agencies of the several associated with a line 500 miles long is induced to make extensions not only | railway companies, which contribute cars in certain agreed pro- by the profit to be made on the new line, which in a new country | portions, and share the expenses of the joint agencies, each com- may be almost nothing for several years, but also by the profit | pany receiving the earnings for the freight passing over its railway made by carrying the traffic of the new line over the 500 miles of | precisely as for any through freight. old railway. Comparing the traffic per inhabitant in the United The laws governing the formation of railway corporations and Corpor- States, Germany, and Austria-Hungary in 1883, we get (Table | authorizing railway construction differ in different States, but in ation XXXIV.) :— most it is open to any association of men with the necessary capital maage- – - to form a company and construct a railway anywhere. Generally ment. ce | Gemkay, | or the laws relating to raising and extending capital and the disposi- sey: _| | tion of income are very lax, and under them great abuses have Passenger-miles……..seee000- 158 99 39 occurred. All but a very small number of the railways have been De ee eee

eee ee 772 212 112 projected and constructed by private enterprise; but many com- panies have received aid from towns, cities, counties, or States, and Thus each American travels three-fifths more and has 34 times as | the Federal Government and the State of Texas (the only State much goods transportation done for him as the average German. owning the public land within its borders) have subsidized many Rates. The railways of America have enjoyed great liberty in fixing their | railways, mostly west of the Mississippi, by immense grants of

254

to and from the north-eastern Atlantic States north of the Potomac. The eastern " trunk lines," as they are called, extending from the west to the north-eastern seaports (and also to Canada), have a heavier goods traffic than any other lines of considerable length in the world. The companies owning these lines also own or con- trol in some way extensive systems reaching as far west as Chicago, and in several cases to the Mississippi at St Louis. T'wo great systems centre on the Pacific coast. Chicago is the chief traffic centre of the interior.

rates, which, however, have been somewhat restricted by new legisla- tion in several States since 1870, notably one limiting the New York Central to 2 cents (1d.) per mile for all classes of passengers. The average rates for goods have been reduced very much since the Civil War and even since 1875. Passenger rates have also been

reduced, but not nearly so much. Table XXXYV. shows, in pence, the average goods rates per ton on a few important railways :—

RAT LWAY

The classification of passengers is but little developed in America. For local journeys there are usually but one class and one rate of fare ; but on several important lines additional charges are made for certain special kinds of accommodation. Railway " wars" often bring down the through fares to a ridiculously low figure: for instance, the first-class fare for 960 miles, New York to Chicago, has been £2 or less, and the immigrant fare during the spring and summer of 1884 was 4s. The rates on goods are

innumerable and are often changed. Table XXXVII. gives examples of the great

public lands, in the aggregate amounting to 200,000,000 acres. The Federal Government also lent its bonds to the amount of £13,000,000 to aid in the construction of a few lines between the Missouri and the Pacific coast. Between 1830 and 1840 several States undertook to construct railways on their own account ; but most of these attempts ended in disaster, and the railways were completed by companies, if completed at all. There remain, how- ever, two State railways, one 138 miles long owned by Georgia,

Lake Shore | Chicago F hich it leases t tion f rorki New York Senn: 2 Sh g inion which it leases to a corporation for working, and the other b Year Central. | sylvania. —— — Pacific. | Massachusetts, mostly in the long Hoosac tunnel. Owing to tho pa | Se ee el oe — of raising capital for railway construction from 1867 1°540 0°167 ai 1°948 the sale of bonds, secured only by the property bought by the aes — — ane ah er proceeds, before the end of 1874 108 railway companies were in- 1880 0°490 0-491 0°423 0-831 1-055 solvent, and interest was unpaid on more than £100,000,000 1884 0-464 0-413 0-388 0°664 0°781 ($497,807,660) of mortgage bonds which they had issued. Indeed,

From the whole country the averages in 1884 were—rate per mile, 0°629d. ; per ton of goods, 0°502d. ; per passenger, 1°178d. This on the average goods rate from 1880 to 1884 was a reduction of 13 per cent., amounting to more than £13,000,000 on the traffic of 1884. The passenger rates of the above-named railways have been in pence per mile (Table XXXVI.) :—

Lake Shore

Chicago

of the total nominal railway capital of the United States very nearly one-half is represented by bonds. One great compan

which has paid dividends for many years has £9,500,000 of Stock to £20,000,000 of debt. The management of railway companies in the United States is often autocratic to the last degree. When once directors have been

elected by the vote of the majority of the shareholders, they take the most important steps without ever con- sulting the shareholders, and in their annual reports they give only

New Yor ~~— 2 Sh Grou such information as they please, subject to no examination by in~~

soe Central. agheat. para gg to org Pacific dependent auditors. This state of dics naturally leads to pare

S| | — | —_—_| | _____| | abuses, to directoral mismanagement and dishonest speculation in

1870 1-045 1-245 1-306 1°645 bonds and shares. In some cases, however, the authority of the

ld rie ee ie pt ca directors is limited by the charter or constitution of the company. 1984 0-970 1-214 1-085 1-190 1-485 There are very few, if any, lines which have trains whose speed Speed.

equals that of the fast English trains, the fastest being between

Work. ing,

RAI—RATI

New York and Philadelphia, 90 miles in 112 minutes. ‘The 440 miles from New York to Buffalo are run in 102 hours, and the 960 miles from New York to Chicago in 25 hours. A great obstacle to fast runuing is the original vice of construction with level highway and railway crossings. Only few lines are provided with the block signals and interlocking apparatus required with numerous fast trains ; but the use of continuous air-brakes is general. There has been more success in designing appliances to mitigate the effect of accidents than in inventions for avoiding them altogether. Acci- dents are very numerous, the casualties being more frequent in proportion to traffic than in the principal Europcan countries. The number of accidents to passengers, however, is insignificant when compared with that of accidents

to employés and persons walking over crossing-lines. In 1880 the numbers killed and injured were (Table XX XVIII.) :—

Pass- Em- Un- engers. ployés. Others. known.| Total. PESTO aie, ciciere se tiviy ye eiete 143 923 1472 3 2541 Digi decree wacsciesncte cre 544 3617 1451 62 5674 Montel. cise ee 687 4540 2923 65 8215

This gives one passenger killed for every 43,280,000 miles travelled, and one injured to every 11,375,000. In the United Kingdom there were one passenger killed for every 960,000 miles run by passenger trains, and one injured for every 254,000 miles.

Though American railways have steeper grades and sharper curves than in Europe, the loads carried in freight trains are some- times exceptionally large: trains of 45 or 50 eight-wheeled cars each loaded with nearly 18 tons are common. The average load on the principal lines has been doubled since 1870, largely by the adoption of heavier and more powerful locomotives and by the better management of trains, and to some extent by a better condition of permanent way. This has had much to do with the great reduction in the rates charged. The cost of working American railways is usually a larger proportion of the earnings than in Europe. An American railway which spends 60, 66%, or 75 per cent. of its earn- ings for working expenses would in England be called costly to work. The expense per ton per mile on several railways in recent years has been, in cents per ton of 2000 tb (Table XX XIX.) :—

Penn- Lake

New York A 1 wy, Illinois AN U.S. Central. Erie. sylvania. | Shore. | Wabash. | Central. 0:76 0°600 0°529 | 0-473 0-418 | 0-694 0-639

The expense per passenger mile, which is larger than in Europe,

is shown, in cents, in Table

ae the traffic is nearly all first-class, L. :—

New York : Penn- Lake | Illinois ANLU.S. Central. Erie sylvania. {| Shore. Wabash. Central. 1‘710 1°159 1372 1°733 1°166 1°804 1°075 Se ee eee eee ee

American railways also contrive to do their work with a very small number of men. In 1880 86,781 miles of railway were worked with a force of 418,957 men, or 4°7 men per mile, against 367,793 in the United Kingdom on 18,681 miles, or 19°7 per mile, and 316,570 in Germany, or 14°3 per mile. The greater thinness of traffic on American lines accounts for but part of this, for the number of train-miles per year per man employed in different countries is 929 in the United States, 350 in the United Kingdom, 476 in Germany, 395 in Austria-Hungary.

255

work done per man is the number of passenger and ton miles for each man employed (which cannot be given for the United Kingdom) ; this is shown in Table XLI. :—

Per Employé. United States. Germany. a Passenger-miles …..... 14,860 14,883 IVE TO DL TOnsmiles! oe cansecve css os 70,587 31,050 Sa ey,

Ee eS ee | The principal statistics of the railways of the United States in recent years are shown in Table XLII. :—

1884, 1883. 1882. 1880.

Miles of railway…... 125,152 120,552 114,461 87,801 Rolling Stock— No. of locoinotives . 24,587 23,823 22,114 17,412 No. of passenger car-| 17,993 16,889 15,551 12,330 riages Luggage, mail, and ex- 5,911 5,948 5,366 4,475 press cars Freight cars …..... 798,399 738,660 710,451 455,450 Trafic per mile of railway Train-miles—Passenger 1,825 1,757 1,728 1,575 Goods 2,958 3,274 3,186 2,860 Total .. 4,783 5,081 4,914 4,435 Passenger-miles…... 77,568 79,872 78,105 65,392 DONEMUES wee cos ccs 352,845 367,904 366,480 329,027 ; £ £ £ | £ CHITTY, 68 SoBe re 1,535, 279,811/1,495,578,156|1,403, 350,022 1,085,144, 512 Clit aga ee aie 1,384,910, 888|1,336, 951, 209|1,207,018, 029 1,036,489,161 Earnings from— g £ £ £ Passengers .. -+| 41,358,140 | 41,367,451 | 37,627,492)

28,820,342 Goods …..... -+| 100,573,982 | 108,901,966 | 97,155,664 | 83,229,152 Other Sources…....) 10,729,200 11,158,139 | 10,814,306, 4,040,625 Total …...../ 152,661,322 | 161,422,556 | 145,597,462 116,090,119 Working expenses se eeas 99,359,540 | 103,105,038 | 92,633,708; 70,560,024 Per cent. of earnings 65°21 63°78 63°61 60°78 Net earnings …...0.. 53,302,782 | 58,317,518 | 52,963,754 45,530,095 Perpassengertrain-mile—| 5 gq s. d. s. d. s. d. Gross earnings …... 4 2 4 7 4 9 4 11} HIKDENSES!- ciclo «cece ec 3 22 3 4 8 5} 3 2 Net earnings …..... 0 11} 1 3} 1 3} 1 94 Per goods train-mile— s. d. ala s. a. s. d, Gross earnings …... 6 3 6 6 6 7h 6 10} EXpenS@s .. 020i 2.000. 4 2} 4 4 4 54 4 1 Net earnings …..... 2 02 Pj me} | oD) 2 9} Per passenger mile— d. d. d. d. BECODUS | cree esas 1178 1-211 15257, 1°165 Expenditure …..... 0°912 0°881 0°914 0°839 PLORtmEr tyes e/< ow sreleer 0°266 0°330 0°343 0326 Per ton-mile— d. d. d. d. MRECEN DES, vciciesieciec a 0°629 0°692 0°692 0°722 Expenditure …..... 0°425 0°413 0°441 0°426 EOMUMME ey tf iarsie oeginae 0°204 0:279 0°251 0°296 Averuge No. of miles travelled— Passengers. .... +0040 26 274 253 23 (Coa aauesonsesns 1143 109 2

(A.M. W.—D. W. D.)

RAIMBACH, Azsrauam (177 6-1843), line-engraver, a Swiss by descent, was born in London in 1776. Educated at Archbishop Tenison's Library School, he was an appren- tice to J. Hall the engraver from 1789 to 1796. For nine years part of his working-time was devoted to the study of drawing in the Royal Academy and to executing occasional engravings for the booksellers, whilst his leisure hours were employed in painting portraits in miniature. Having formed an intimacy with Sir David Wilkie, Raim- bach in 1812 began to engrave some of that master's best pictures. The Village Politicians, the Rent-Day, the Cut Finger, Blind-Man's Buff, the Errand-Boy, Distraining for Rent, the Parish Beadle, and the Spanish Mother and Child raised him in the estimation of connoisseurs, the French especially holding him in great honour. It is said that he never employed any assistants, but executed the whole of his plates with his own hand. At his death, in 1843, he held a gold medal awarded to him for his Village Poli-

ticians at the Paris Exhibition of 1814. He was elected corresponding member of the Institute of France in 1835.

RAIMONDI, Marcantonio. See MARCANTONIO.

RAIN. See Merrzoronoey, vol. xvi. pp. 128, 150-4, 180, and Gxonoey, vol. x. p. 267 sq.

RAINBAND. Every transparent substance is perfectly opaque to some particular kinds of light. A certain shade of orange light is absorbed by the vapour of water, and, when sunlight which has traversed a stratum containing this vapour is decomposed in a spectroscope, the blank caused by the missing rays appears as a black band or group of fine lines. This is called the rainband, because from its intensity the amount of moisture in the atmo- sphere may be guessed at, and the occurrence of rain predicted with considerable certainty. It has long been known that the spectrum of sunlight shows lines of telluric as well as of solar origin. The former constitute

| the absorption-spectrum of the atmosphere (see SpEcTRO-

SCOPY); some are produced by the permanent gases, others by aqueous vapour, which is always present, though in variable amount. The absorption-spectrum of water- vapour has been minutely studied and carefully mapped by Janssen and by Cornu. In Angstrém's table of normal solar spectra there are numerous groups of lines which appeared most conspicuous when the sun was close to the horizon, and many of these are coincident with the absorp- tion-lines of water-vapour. They are found principally in the red and yellow, and the main group is seen a little to the red side of the D line. In small spectroscopes the water-vapour lines appear fused together into a band on the red side of D, or even as a mere widening of that line. There are several variable bands in the spectrum which come to a maximum of intensity when the sun is on the horizon. These are due to absorption by the permanent gases; the one which in a small instrument appears to separate the yellow from the green is frequently mistaken for the water-vapour band, and this is the cause of many incorrect '"'rainband predictions." In 1872 Professor Piazzi Smyth noticed a change in the water-vapour lines before and after a sirocco in Palermo, and the same phenomenon was brought before him very strikingly in France before great

rains in 1875 (Edin, Ast. Obs., vol. xiv.), when he named the main group of water-vapour lines the “ rainband.”

The rainband may be observed with any spectroscope, but direct- vision instruments of medium size are most convenient. It is im- portant that the spectroscope should have as great dispersion as possible and good definition, especially at the red end. To make au observation the slit, which must be kept perfectly clean, should be narrowed down uritil the spectral lines are sharp and clear. The instrument should be carefully focused to get the maximum absorp- tion effect; but all observers lay stress on noting whether the intensity of the band decreases rapidly or gradually as the altitude is increased. When a dark band is observed at the horizon and at the zenith, heavy rain is almost certain to follow immediately. It is of little importance whether the sky be clear or covered with high clouds at the point of observation ; low clouds or haze make the result untrustworthy by shortening the line of sight, thus reducing the strength of the band and equalizing it in all directions. The utility of the spectroscope in meteorology depends on its power of investigating the hygrometrical conditions of the whole slice of atmosphere looked through, and it affords a means of asccrtaining the difference of humidity in differeut directions. The hygrometer only indicates the state, as regards moisture, of the few yards of air surrounding it. The great difficulty in the way of obtainin accurate results with the rainband spectroscope has been the menta scale of comparison employed by most observers. Although some have found it easy to estimate the intensity of the band from 0 to 20, it is beyond the power of many to describe it in figures even from 0 to 5. Professor Piazzi Smyth noted its strength relatively to that of the dry-air band between the green and yellow. The fixed solar lines £, b, and F have been used as a closer approxi- mation to a scale in instruments not powerful enough to separate the rainband from the D line. This compound line appears to vary from something less intense than £ in very dry weather to something considerably darker than # when rain is imminent. Seven degrees can be discerned, and these may be represented by using the sign=to mean ‘of equal intensity with,” > to mean “darker than,” and < ‘less dark than,” as, H<), =0b,>bF. When the thin solar lines in the green are seen very distinctly there is less probability of rain falling than when they are indistinct or invisible.

The following table gives an idea of the intensities corresponding to rain-probabilities at Edinburgh.

Intensity of rainband with D. Temperature. Prediction. ***b< F (thin lines distinct). Below 60° Fahr. oe '5 >bobF, a9 Much rain.***

It appears that the average percentage of fulfilments of predictions of "rain" and "no rain," made for a period of twelve hours after one observation in the morning, which may be expected in Scotland is about 75. In less variable climates, such as those of the south of Europe and parts of the United States, a much higher degree of accuracy has been attained. The precise strength of rainband

RAI—RAL

which corresponds to the probability of a fall of rain within a definite time depends on the temperature and also on the place of observation ; in every case it must be determined by the observer for himself. Very dark rainbands are found to precede rain in more than 95 per cent. of the cases everywhere ; entire, or almost entire, absence of the band presages a dry day with equal prob- ability. With a spectroscope powerful enough to split D a mental numerical scale must be used in default of a suitable micrometer, aud by practice the observer will be able to draw up a table for its conversion into probabilities of rain.

The production of an artificial absorption-line the intensity of which could be varied by known degrees suggested itself to more than one observer as the principle for a rainband-micrometer.

The spectroscopic history of a thunderstorm observed on 9th June 1884 by Professor Cook is extremely interesting. During its approach the water-vapour line observed at 10° north of the zenith towards the storm was darker by ten degrees of the scale than that observed .10° south of the zenith, although to the eye the clouds presented exactly the same appearance at both places. On this occasion the strength of the line varied as follows :—

Hour. | At zenith.! At 30°. | At 20°. | At 10°. | – At horizon. S8a.m… 1183 21 32 43 45

2 14 23 34 44 46

10) 53 14 25 36 45 47

ie 15 27 37 46 48

11.45 a.m. 50 he Rain commenced 11.20.

12 noon 32 tas fea Boe feemeza Rain ceased 12.10.

12.45 p.m. £0a We oul exe » recommenced 12.20. CSUN 5 15 Rain ceasedatl. Totalrain-

fall, 1°6 inches in 14 hours.

Some relation has been traced between the variations of the rain- band and the appearance of aurore, but this matter is not yet fully investigated. (H. R. M.)

RAINBOW. See Licut, vol. xiv. p. 595 sq.

RAINGAUGE (PiuviomeTerR, HyrTomerer, UDpo- METER). 'The value of the measurement of rainfall (see Mergoroocy) has long been understood, although it is only within the last hundred years that trustworthy results have been obtained. Marriotte is claimed as the originator of the raingauge in 1677. The simplest form is an open vessel of uniform diameter exposed to the rain, in which the depth of water collected during any interval of time may be measured. In order to reduce evaporation the mouth of the gauge is usually a funnel of the same diameter as the vessel ; and some means, such as an external narrow glass tube graduated in inches and parts to show the | height of the water inside, or a float bearing a graduated rod, or, in more delicate forms, a movable scale which may be set by a vernier to the surface of the water, is adopted to facilitate measurement. Raingauges on this plan can- not be very accurate ; their one advantage is that the area of the collecting

surface does not require to be known. The disadvantages are that so much water is required to wet the sides of the vessel as to make the instrument read too low when a side tube is used, and the tube is liable to

*be broken in frost; when a float and rod are employed, the rod projecting above the funnel catches rain and the resulting reading is too high. Almost all raingauges now used have a circular funnel of known diameter, which con- ducts the rain-water to a receiver, from which it may be poured into a special narrow measuring-glass so graduated that what would cover a space of the area of the funnel to the depth of 1 inch fills a portion of the glass large enough to be easily graduated into 100 parts. The funnel may have any diameter from 3 to 24 inches without introduc- ing a greater discrepancy than 1 or 2 per cent. of the amount of rain collected, but 5 and 8 inches are the dia- meters usually employed, and the measuring-glasses are graduated accordingly. Advantage is sometimes taken of the fact that for a funnel 4°697 inches in diameter 1 fluid ounce of water collected represents one-tenth of an inch of rain, since the area is 17°33 square inches, and a fluid ounce at 60° Fahr. contains 1-733 cubic inches of water. The best form of instrument, Glaisher's rain and snow gauge recommended by the Royal Meteoro- logical Society, is a cylindrical copper vessel 8 inches in diameter and 18 inches high, in which the funnel is laced about halfway down (see fig. 1). he Scottish Meteorological Society largely employ Howard's raingauge,a | *. plain glass bottle holding about half |: a gallon and provided with a long é 5-inch copper funnel, which has a collar fitting over the neck of the bottle to prevent rain from being blown in laterally by the wind. In some forms the funnel leads to a long glass tube divided into inches, tenths, and hundredths of rainfall. Mr Symon's storm raingauge on this prin- ciple is intended to be read from a distance, and is only graduated into cee of an inch. The water = ected by a raingauge may be weighed S instead Of so at but the oes Fra. 2.—Graduated measuring process being much more simple is glass. always adopted, at a slight expense of accuracy, however, as the variation of volume with temperature is not taken into account. Precipitation and evaporation being complementary phenomena, an atmometer or evaporation-gauge ought, strictly speaking, to ac- company*

each raingauge. But none of the instruments yet devised ean be regarded as satisfactory, accordingly a number of devices have been introduced to calculate or to minimize the evaporation from raingauges. Dr Garnett in 1795 proposed to use two gauges of unequal size, and recently Prof. Michie Smith has introduced a simplification by making the area of one gauge exactly double that of the other. If the evaporation is the same from each, the difference between the readings of the two gauges gives the true rainfall in the smaller. If 4 be the area of the funnel in the smaller, 24 that of the funnel iu the larger, V a certain volume of water placed in each gauge, H the evaporation, and & the inches of rainfall, then V+ 2AR-H-(V+AR-E)=AR, however V and E may vary. The simplest and best method is to use a funnel terminating in a long straight tube, which reaches almost to the bottom of the receiving vessel. Gauges have been constructed for experimental purposes always to face the wind, and with openings capable of being fixed at any angle. For use at sea they may be swung on gimbals; but when so employed the record must be sup- plemented by the readings of a hydrometer so as to detect and allow for any admixture with sea-spray. Self-registering and self- recording raingauges, as frequently used in meteorological observa- tories, are constructed on two leading types. In Hermann's "hyetometrograph," 1789, a fixed funnel conducts the rain into one of twelve glasses placed on the circumference of a horizontal wheel, which is turned by clockwork so that each glass remains under the funnel for one hour. In Stutter's more recent instru- ment the receiving funnel delivers into a smaller funnel, which has a sloping tube and is carried round by clockwork so as to remain for one hour over each of twenty-four fixed glasses arranged in a circle. The second kind of self-registering instrument produces a continuous record of rainfall, indicating the hour of commencement and close of each shower, the amount of rain that has fallen, and the rate at which it fell. In Beckley's "pluviograph" a pencil, attached to a vessel which sinks as it receives the rain, describes a curve on a sheet of paper fixed round a rotating cylinder; when full the receiver empties itself by means of a siphon and the pencil is carried rapidly upwards, describing a straight vertieal line.

Fig. 1. Fig. 2. Fria. 1.—Glaisher's rain and snow gauge.

The higher a raingauge is placed above the ground, or rather above a broad flat surface, the smaller is the rainfall registered, as the following figures indicate :—

Height of funnel above ground in feet.. 0 1 10 20 40 200 Rain registered (average) ..... 1:07 1°00 0°93 0°90 0°70 0°58

When the mouth of the gauge is on or within a few inches of the ground the orm inte rg of raindrops increases the amount of water. Minute rain-spherules, which usually float in horizontal or oblique planes, are most numerous near the ground, where consequently they coalesce to form regular drops which fall into the funnel. The raindrops also increase slightly in size by condensing moisture as they fall. But the greatest effect is probably produced by wind, which forms eddies round high and isolated objects, thus more or less interfering with the fall of rain into the gauge. It is obvious that all raingauges intended for comparison should be fixed at the same height, and in Great Britain the standard distance of the mouth of the funnel from the ground or from a broad flat surface is one foot. The situation of a raingauge should be perfectly open, especially in the direction of the prevailing rainbringing winds. In measuring rain it is essential to see that the funnel is not indented or deformed in any way, and that the collecting vessel is inaccessible to air or rain except through the funnel. The temper- ature of rain as it falls should be observed whenever it is possible todo so. The amount of solid matter collected in the raingauge should be ascertained and recorded as bearing on Mr Aitken's theory of rain (see EVAPORATION), and it should be examined micro- scopically for volcanic and cosmic dust. (H. R, M.)

RAIPUR, a district of India, in the Chhatisgarh division of the Central Provinces, lying between 19° 48' and 21° 45' N. lat. and 80° 28' and 82° 38' E. long., with an area of 11,855 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by Bilaspur, on the E. by Sambalpur and Patna, on the W. by Balaghat, Bhandara, and Chanda, and on the 8. by Bastar and Jeypur. 'The district spreads out in a vast plateau closed in by ranges of hills branching from the great Vindhyan chain. It is drained by the Seonath and the Karun rivers, which subsequently unite and form the Mahanadi. Geologically

the country consists in the hilly tracts of gneiss and quartzite ; the sandstone rocks in the west are intersected with trap dykes. Iron ore is abun- dant, and red ochre of high repute is found. In the interior the principal strata are a soft sandstone slate (covered generally by a layer of laterite gravel) and blue limestone, which crops out in numerous places on the surface and is invariably found in the beds of the rivers. Throughout the plains the soil is generally fertile. The climate is generally good; the mean temperature is 78° and the average rainfall about 49 inches.

The population of Raipur in 1881 was 1,405,171 (males 696,242, females 708,929). By religion 856,492 were Hindus, 14,991 Moham- medans, and 821 Christians, The only town with a population exceeding 10,000 is Raipur (see below). Attached to the district are four feudatory states, viz., Chhuikhadan (with 32,979 inha- bitants), Kanker (63,610), Khairagarh (166,138), and Nandgaon (164,339). Their combined area is 2658 square miles.

Of the total area under British administration only 3636 square miles are cultivated, and of the portion lying waste 4337 acres are returned as cultivable. The staple crop is rice; other crops are ~ wheat, food-grains, oil-seeds, and cotton. The commerce of Raipur is of quite recent creation, for under the Mahrattas the transit dues that were levied prevented its development. The exports consist mainly of grain, cotton, and lac, while metals constitute the chief import. The gross revenue of the district for 1883-84 amounted to about £89,829, of which the land yielded £64,871.

Raipur was governed by the Haihai-Bansi dynasty of Ratanpur for many centuries until their deposition by the Mahrattas in 1741. The country was then already in a condition of decay, and soon afterwards it relapsed into absolute anarchy. In 1818 it was taken under British superintendence and made rapid progress. It fell with the rest of the Nagpur dominions to the British Government in 1854. Raipur suffered but little during the mutiny.

RAIPUR, chief town of the above district and head- quarters of the Chhatisgarh division of the Central Pro- vinces, is situated in 21° 15’ N. lat. and 81° 41’ E. long., on a plateau 950 feet above sea-level. In 1881 its

population amounted to 24,948 (12,447 males and 12,501 females). The modern town dates from 1830, and carries on a flour- ishing trade in grain, lac, cotton, é&c.

XX. — 33

258

RAIS, Ratz, or Retz, Gintus pr (d. 1440), marshal of France, seigneur of Hautpart and of many other lordships, who was hanged and burned at Nantes in 1440, has left a name connected directly with one of the most horrible stories in history, and indirectly with other curious matter. Not much is known of Rais before the trial which made his name infamous. He was of the noblest blood of the marches of Brittany, being on the father's side of the Laval branch of the ducal family of Montfort, and being connected through his mother and by marriage with the houses of Craon, Thouars, and others. His possessions in the district from which he took his name, and which borders the estuary of the Loire on the south, as well as along the river, were great, and his chief seat was at Champtocé. He had served in the English wars with the credit of a brave knight, had a rather special reputa- tion for devotion, had been marshal since 1429, and had held the alms-dish at the coronation of Charles VII. Suddenly he was arrested, tried, and, as above stated, executed on the evidence of accomplices and his own con- fession. The crimes with which he was charged extended over some fourteen years. During that period it was alleged that he had, through different agents, especially a woman called La Meffraie, kidnapped or enticed to his various abodes large numbers (Monstrelet says 160, others 140) of children. These children, after being sub- jected to every outrage of lust and cruelty, were sacrificed to the devil, their blood used for magical ceremonies, their bodies burned, and their bones buried in the precincts of Rais's castles. The ultimate purpose of this devil- worship was asserted to be the acquisition by Rais (who was assisted by divers sorcerers, especially an Italian im- ported for the purpose) of power and honours in the state. The depositions were very full and still exist, and on them and his confession Rais was executed. It is, however, somewhat suspicious that the bishop of Nantes, who pro- moted, and the duke of Brittany, who sanctioned the pro- ceedings, were

both bitter personal enemies of Rais, while the king, who was also concerned, had for a main part of his policy the putting down of feudal barons who, like Rais, held posts of vantage in the country. The two chief contemporary authors who mention the case, Monstrelet and Chastellain, speak of it with somewhat less horror than might, even allowing for possible political sympathies, have been expected. Monstrelet (who says that Rais was charged with the murder of pregnant women also) says that 'many ladies and damsels" begged his body of the duke, and that great part of the nobles of Brittany, not only his relations, had great sorrow and sadness for his death. Chastellain introduces the ghost of Rais in rather striking fashion in his Temple de Bocace as "followed by a multitude of little children crying 'Vengeance.'" The ~~*affair affected public imagination as much because of the rarity of a criminal of such rank being brought to justice as of the heinousness of the crimes attributed to him. Locally it took a very strong hold of the popu*~~ *lar mind, and a tradition not easy to trace connects it with the Bluebeard legend, which finally took shape in the hands of Perrault. This connexion, however, hardly bears examination. In the first place, there is no evidence that Rais ever was called Bluebeard, thongh a contemporary English adventurer who is mentioned by Holinshed was so called, and may have left a bad reputation in France. In the second, it is impossible to trace even the most superficial resemblance between the stories. In Bluebeard there are no children concerned, no unnatural crimes, no sorcery; it is merely one of the numerous stories of "punished curiosity" so fre- quent in folk-lore. As it stands the Rais story is too horrible to make much of a figure in literature; but it*

has attracted some students of causes célébres, notably Dumas jils in his Tristan le Roux.

For authorities besides the passages of Monstrelet and Chastellain above quoted, Michelet, Histoire de France, tnd Vallet de Viriville, Histoire de Charles VII., may be consulted. Meézeray's account, usually followed in books of reference, is loose ; he had evidently not seen the records, nor

even Monstrelet. But his assignment of a state crime against the duke as the real cause of death is very probable, though not formally correct.

RAISINS are the dried fruits of certain varieties of the grape vine, Vitis wnifera, which grow principally in the warm climate of the Mediterranean coasts and are com- paratively rich in sugar. The use of dried grapes or raisins as food is of great antiquity (Numb. vi. 3; 1 Sam. xxv. 18, xxx. 12). In medizval times raisins imported from Spain were a prized luxury in England, and to the pre- sent day Great Britain continues to be the best customer of the raisin-producing regions. 'Raisins of the sun" are obtained by letting the fruit continue on the vines after it has come to maturity, where there is sufficient sunshine and heat in the autumn, till the clusters dry on the stocks. Another plan is partially to sever the stalk before the grapes are quite ripe, thus stopping the flow of the sap, and in that condition to leave them on the vines till they are sufficiently dry. The more usual process, however, is to cut off the fully ripe clusters and expose them, spread out, for several days to the rays of the sun, taking care that they are not injured by rain. In unfavourable weather they may be dried in a heated chamber, but are then inferior in quality. In some parts of Spain and France it is common to dip the gathered clusters in boiling water, or In a strong potash lye, a practice which softens the skin, favours drying, and gives the raisins a clear glossy appearance. Again, in Asia Minor the fruit is dipped into hot water on the surface of which swims a layer of olive oil, which communicates a bright lustre and softness to the skin. Some superior varieties are treated with very great care, retained on their stalks, and sent into the market as clusters for table use; but the greater part are separated from the stalks in the process of drying and the stalks winnowed out of the fruit. Raisins come from numerous Mediterranean localities, and present at least three distinct varieties,—(1) ordinary or large raisins, (2) sultana seedless raisins, and (3) currants or Corinthian raisins (see vol. vi. p. 715). The greater proportion of the common large raisins of English commerce comes from the provinces of Malaga, Valencia, and Alicante in Spain ; these are known by the common name of Malaga raisins. Those of the finest quality, called Malaga clusters, are prepared from a variety of muscatel grape, and preserved on the stalks for table use. This variety, as well as Malaga layers, so called from the manner of packing, are

exclusively used as dessert fruit. Raisins of a somewhat inferior quality, known as '"lexias," from the same pro- vinces, are used for cooking and baking purposes. Smyrna raisins also come to some extent into the English market. The best quality, known as Elemé, is a large fruit, having a reddish yellow skin with a sweet pleasant flavour. Large-seeded dark-coloured raisins are produced in some of the islands of the Greek Archipelago and in Crete, but they are little seen in the British markets. In Italy the finest raisins are produced in Calabria, inferior qualities in central Italy and in Sicily. From the Lipari Islands a certain quantity of cluster raisins of good quality is sent to England. In the south of France raisins of high excellence—Provence raisins in clusters—are obtained at Roquevaire, Lunel, and Frontignan. Sultana seedless raisins are the produce of a small variety of yellow grape, cultivated exclusively in the neighbourhood of Smyrna. The vines are grown on a soil of decomposed hippurite limestone, on sloping ground rising to a height of 400 feet

above the sea, and all attempts to cultivate sultanas in other raisin-growing localities have failed, the grapes quickly reverting to a seed-bearing character. The dried frnit has a fine golden-yellow colour, with a thin, delicate, translucent skin and a sweet aromatic flavour. A very fine seedless oblong raisin of the sultana type with a brownish skin is cultivated in the neighbourhood of Damascus, but it is rarely seen in the Western markets.

Raisins are chiefly valuable on account of the large proportion of grape sugar and cream of tartar which they contain. In old dry raisins these substances are found in hard nodular masses. The seeds contain from 15 to 18 per cent. of a bland fixed oil and about 5 per cent. of tannin. The imports into the United Kingdom average in value about £1,000,000 yearly, the quantity imported in 1883 having been 588,309 cwt., valued at £1,057,934.

RAJA (English form Razan), Sanskrit nom. sing. of the stem rdjan (in modern Indian vernaculars rdjd, rdjah, rdja, rdjan, rdzu, irdsen, also the forms rdi, rdo, rdnd are trace- able to the sae stem) = king, prince, chief, from the root rdéj, to be resplendent. In the oldest times the headman of

any petty tribe was called raja from the fact of his being conspicuous for the number of golden ornaments with which he was decked out. Then raj4 became the com- mon designation for a king, whether of a small tribe or of a large state. The constitution of all states was monarch- ical, mostly hereditary, occasionally also electoral, but in no case absolute, for the people had a voice in the govern- ment. On the other-hand, the king was greatly hampered in his action by his duties towards the priestly caste. Even in that later stage of Indian civilization which we find portrayed in the code of Manu the king appears as subordinate to the priest, though his prerogative is in all other respects paramount, especially in the matter of revenue. Theoretically this system has been continued ever since; but practically the rdjé's powers have been gradually extended, some of them being distributed by him at his pleasure among various officials, who were rewarded, not by regular salaries, but by grants and the profits of oppression.! It thus appears that the title is, strictly speaking, only applicable to Hindu potentates, but in practice it is not unfrequently used to indicate a ruling chief irrespective of his nationality or creed.

The rights and privileges assigned to rdéjds by treaty and usage are manifold and varied. But all rajas are precluded from waging war against an external foe save with the permission of the British Government, and so none can be said to be independent in the fullest sense of the word. At the same time there are several princes in India who titularly hold that status, in so far, that is, as they possess the right to administer their kingdom according to their own notions of justice and equity ; but even in these instances, and they are few, British residents are attached to the various courts, charged to advise in the interests of good government and righteous dealing. Such officers seldom fail to secure a powerful influence, and it is not often that their counsel is disregarded or their representations pass unheeded. More than this, when flagrant injustice occurs the British Government is occasionally compelled to interfere, and instances are not wanting when a raja has been deposed, notwithstanding a clause in his treaty forbidding the intervention of the British Government in the affairs of his state. Such cases, which are not frequent, are justified by political necessity. In many instances native chiefs are allowed by treaty to maintain a military force, but at the present

time the troops principally serve to gratify the cravings of Eastern potentates for the outward and visible signs of power.

Rajas of lesser note retain a semblance of power so far

1 See for the Vedic period, H. Zimmer, Altindisches Leben, Berlin, 1879, p. 162 sq. ; for later times, M. Duncker, Geschichte des Alter- thums, iii. 152 sg., and Tod's Antiquities of Rajasthan, passim.

as concerns questions of minor importance, but in grave cases involving issues of life and death the officer attached to the court reviews and, should it be necessary, modifies or reverses the decrees which may be passed. Chieftains in this category do not even enjoy the appearance of inde- pendence, though in many instances they are allowed to keep a body of military retainers.

Other rajds are inerely large and wealthy landholders with no sovereign rights or privileges, resembling in many respects the territorial magnates of Great Britain; while in some instances the term is simply a title of distinction unconnected with the possession of land or power.

Scarcely less complex and varied are the conditions which regulate succession to the rajships of India: in some instances adoption is admitted, in other cases col- lateral succession is accepted, while again there are occa- sions when the customs of the family are a potent factor in the choice of an heir. It might have been supposed perhaps that the salute could be fairly taken as indicative of the status of the chief to whom it is assigned ; but in reality such an assumption would be most misleading, for not unfrequently the number of guns was fixed in bygone years, and the lapse of time has made numerous and essential changes in the status of the various chieftains. So much is this the case that it: has never been settled authoritatively what chiefs are entitled to claim the Western prefix of "highness."

RAJAMAHENDRI (Rajamahendravaram, Rajahmun- dry), a town of India, in the Godavari district, Madras presidency, situated on high

ground on the left bank of the Godavari river in 17° N. lat. and 81° 49’ E. long., and 365 miles north-east of Madras. Its population in 1881 numbered 24,555 (males 12,290, females 12,265). Rajamahendri was formerly the headquarters of a separate district of the same name, but is now incorporated with Godavari.

Tradition divides the merit of founding this city betwcen the Orissa and Chalukya princes. There appears little doubt that the city of the Vengi kings was identical with the site of the present town, and that this also was the seat of the Orissa power in the south. In 1471 Rajamahendri was wrested from Orissa by the Mohammedans, but early in the 16th century it was retaken by Krishna Raja and restored to Orissa. It continued under Hindu rule till 1572, when it yielded to the Moslems of the Deccan under Rafat Khan. For the next century and a half it was the scene of perpetual fighting, and at last fell to Golconda, and became one of the four nawabships of that government. Rajamahendri passed into the possession of the French in 1753, but they were driven out by the British under Colonel Forde in 1758. The French, however, recaptured it, but, finding that the treasure had been removed, they evacuated it almost immediately.

RAJPUTANA, an immense tract of country in India, consisting of twenty states, having each its own autonomy and separate chief, besides the small British division of Ajmere, which is situated almost in the centre of the province, These territories lie between 23° and 30° N. lat. and between 69 30’ and 78° 15’ E. long., and their combined area is approximately estimated at 130,000 square miles. Rajputéna extends from the province of Sind on the west to the North-Western Provinces on the east, skirting the Bombay presidency on the south, and stretching to the Punjab on the north. It is traversed from south-west to north-east by the Rajputana State Railway, and from the south to that railway at Ajmere by the Malwa Railway from Khandwa on the Great Indian Peninsula line through Indore. The country is divided by the Aravalli Mountains into two unequal parts (of which the north-western is much the larger), and consists to a great extent of sandy, arid, and unproductive wastes, but it improves gradually to comparatively habitable and fertile tracts towards the north-east. This division includes the Thur or great sandy desert of

northern India, covered everywhere by long parallel dunes, varying from 50 to 100

feet high, with few wells and streams, and almost destitute of vegetation. The south-eastern division is considerably more elevated and fertile, is diversified in character, and contains extensive hill-ranges and long stretches of rocky wold and woodland ; it is watered by the drainage of the Vindhyas, carried north-east by the Chambal and Banas rivers. In many parts there are wide vales, fertile plateaus, and great stretches of excellent soil, with forests and arti- ficial lakes ; but even in this division the surface, for the most part, is stony, rugged, under jungle, and infertile, except close to the river banks.

The chief rivers of Rajputana are the Loni, the Chainbal, and the Banas. The first of these, the only river of any consequence in the north-western division, flows for 200 miles from the Pukar valley, close to Ajmere, to the Runn of Cutch. In the south- eastern division the river system is important. The Chambal is by far the largest river in Rajputana, through which it flows for about one-third of its course, while it forms its boundary for another third. The source of the river is in the highlands of the Vindhyas, upwards of 2000 feet above the sea; it enters the province at Chaurasgarh in Mewar and soon becomes a considcrable stream, collecting in its course the waters of other rivers, and finally dis- charging itself into the Jumna after a course of 560 miles. Next in importance ranks the Banas, which riscs in the south-west near Kankraoli in Mewar. It collects nearly all the drainage of the Mewar plateau with that of the eastern slopes and hill-tracts of the Aravallis, and joins the Chambal a little beyond the north- eastern extremity of the Bundi state, after a course of about 300 miles, Other rivers are the W. Banas and the Sabarmati, which rise among the south-west hills of Mewar and take a south-westerly course. The river Mahi, which passes through the states of Partab- garh and Banswara, receiving the Som, drains the south-west corner of Rajputana through Gujrat into the gulfs of Cutch and Cambay. Rajputana possesses no natural freshwater lakes, but there are several important artificial lakes, all of which have been constructed with the

object of storing water. The only basin of any extent is the Sambhar salt lake, of about 50 miles in circuit.

Geologically considered the country may be divided into three regions,—a central, and the largest, Ss ee the whole width of the Aravalli system, formed of very old sub-metamorphie and gneissic rocks ; an eastern region, with sharply defined boundary, along which the most ancient formations are abruptly replaced by the great basin of the Vindhyan strata, or are overlaid by the still more extensive spread of the Deccan trap, forming the plateau of Malwa; and a western region, of very ill-defined margin, in which, besides some rocks of undetermined age, it is more or less known or suspected that Tertiary and Secondary strata stretch across from Sind, beneath the sands of the desert, towards the flanks of the Aravallis. Rajputana produces a variety of metals. Ore of cobalt is obtained in no other locality in India, and although zine blend has been found elsewhere it is known to have been extracted only in this province. Copper and lead are found in several parts of the Avavalli range and of the minor ridges in Ulwur and Shekha- wati, and iron ores abound in several states. Alum and blue vitriol (sulphate of copper) are manufactured from decomposed schists at Khetri in Shekhawati. Good building materials are obtained from many of the rocks of the country, amongst which the Raialo limestone (a fine-grained crystalline marble) and the Jaisalmir (Jeysulmere) limestone stand pre-eminent.

Rajpntana is of great archezologie interest, and possesses some fine religious buildings in ruins and others in excellent preserva- tion. Amongst the latter are the mosque at Ajmere and the temples on Abu. But the finest and most characteristic features of architecture in the country are shown in the forts and palaces of the chiefs and in their cenotaphs.

Herds of camels, horses, and sheep are found wherever there is pasturage, and in the desert and in the southern part of the country wild asses, nylghau, and antelopes, besides lions, leopards, tigers, wolves, hyznas, jackals, and foxes, are met with.

The climate throughout Rajputana is very dry and hot during summer ; while in the winter it is much colder in the north than in the lower districts, with hard frost and ice on the Bikanir borders. The rainfall is

very unequally distributed : in the western part, which comes near to the limits of the rainless region of Asia, it is very scanty, and scarcely averages more than 5 inches ; in the south-west the fall is more copious, sometimes exceeding 100 inches at Abu ; but, except in the south-west highlands of the Aravallis, rain is most abundant in the south-east. Notwith- standing all its drawbacks, Rajputana is reckoncd one of the healthiest countries in India, at least for the native inhabitants.

Population. —The census of 1881, which was the first general enumeration of population in Rajputana since England's connexion with India, gave a total number (including Ajmere division) of 10,729,114. Of these 166,343 were Bhils; but no accurate census

RATPUTAWA

could be taken of these people owing to their repugnance to be counted. Exclusive of Bhils, the population numbered 10,562,771 (5,710,337 males, 4,852,434 females). The following statement gives the area and population of the several statcs and of the British division of Ajmere :—

| Area in } Area in States. square o "tg States. square | Popula- miles. Es | miles. – Hon.

Ajmere-Mhair- | Kishengurh …. 724 112,633 | "wara (British) | 2,711] 460,722 || Kotah……... 8,797 | 517,275 Banswara …...| 1,500 152,045 || Lawa ……... 18 2,682

Bhurtpar' ..... 1,974 645,540 | Marwar or Jodh- Ish! een oases 22,340 509,021 | PROG Hole 37,000 | 1,750,408 BUDA 56515 cr0518 5 2,300 254,701 | MewarorUdaipur| 12,670] 1,494,220 WON Pies es os 1,200 249,657 | Partabgarh 1,460 79,568 Dungarpur 1,000 153,381 | Shahpura …... 400 51,750 airnur es. 14,465 | 2,534,357 || Sirohi……... 8,020] 142,908 Jaisalmir (Jey- BRO sp terete 2,509 338,029 sulmere) ..... 16,447 108,143 || Ulwur(Alwar)..| 3,024 682,926 | Jhalawar …... 2,694 340,488 |) an eee 2 Karauli …..... | 1,208) 148,670 | Total…) 132,461 | 10,729,114

The great mass of the people are Hindus, numbering in 1881 (excluding Bhils) 9,215,272, as against 919,556 Mohammedans and 3519 Christians.

Among the Hindus the paucity of Rajputs is remarkable. It is commonly supposed that, because nearly the whole country is ruled by Rajputs, therefore the population consists mainly of Rajput tribes ; but these are merely the dominant race, and the territory is called Rajputana because it is politically pos- sessed by Rajputs. The whole number of this race is roughly estimated at 700,000, and nowhere do they form a majority of the whole population in a state; but they are strongest, numerically, in the northern states and in Mewar. By rigid precedence the Brahmans occupy the first rank ; they are numerous and influential, and with them may be classed the pecnliar and important caste of Charans or Bhats, the keepers of secular tradition and of the genealogies. Next come the mercantile castes, mostly belonging to the Jaina sect of Hinduism ; these are followed by the powerful cultivating tribes, such as the Jats and Gujars, and then come the non-Hindu or so-called aboriginal tribes, chief of whom are the Minas, Bhils, and Mhairs.

The mass of the people are occupied in agriculture. In the large towns banking and commerce flourish to a degree beyond what would be expected for so backward a country. In the north the staple products for export are salt, grain, wool, and cotton, in the south opium and cotton ; while the imports consist of sugar, hard- ware, and piece goods. Rajputana is very poor in industrial pro- duction. 'The principal manufactures are salt, cotton, and woollen goods, carvings in ivory, and working in metals, &c., all of which handicrafts are chiefly carried on in the eastern states. The system of agriculture is very simple ; in the country west of the Aravallis only one crop is raised in the year, while in other parts south and east of the Aravallis two crops are raised annually, and various kinds of cereals, pulses, and fibres are grown.

History.—Only faint outlines can be traced of the condition of Rajputana previous to the invasion of Upper India by the Mohain- medans, and these indicate that the country was subject for the most part to two or three very powerful tribal dynasties. Chief of these were the Rahtors, who ruled at Kanauj; the Chauhans of Ajmere; the Solankhyas of Anhilwara, in Gujrat; the Gehlots with the Sesodia sept, still in Mewar or Udaipur; and the Kachwaha clan, still in Jaipur. These tribal dynasties of Rajputs were gradually supplanted by the Moslem invaders of the 11th century

and weakened by internal feuds. At the beginning of the 16th century the Rajput power began to revive, but only to be overthrown by Baber at Fatehpur Sikri in 1527. The clans were finally either conquered, overawed, or conciliated by Akbar—all except the distant Scsodia clan, which, however, submitted to Jahangir in 1616. From Akbar's accession to Aurangzeb's death, a period of 151 years, the mogul was India's master. Aurangzeb's death and the invasion of Nadir Shah led to a triple alliance among the three leading chiefs, which internal jealousy so weakened that the Mahrattas, having been called in by the Rahtors to aid them, took possession of Ajmere about 1756; thenceforward Rajputana became involved in the general disorganization of India. By 1803 nearly the whole of Rajputana had been virtually subdued by the Mahrattas. The victories of Generals Wellesley and Lake, how- ever, saved the Rajputs ; but on Wellington's departure from India the floodgates of anarchy were reopened for ten years. On the out- break of the Pindari War in 1817 the British Government offered its protection. The Pindaris were put down, Amir Khan sub- mitting and signing a treaty which constituted him the first ruler of the existing state of Tonk. By the end of 1818 similar treaties had been executed by the other Rajput states with the paramount power. Sindhia gave up the district of Ajmere to the British, and the pressure of the great Mahratta powers upon Rajputana was permanently withdrawn. Since then the political history of Rajputana has been comparatively uneventful. The great storm of the mutinies of 1857, though dangerous while it lasted, was

short. The capture of the town of Kotah, which had been held by the mutineers of that state, in March 1858, marked the extinction of armed rebellion in the province. (On 2, 18.)

RAJSHAHE! or Raseswaye, a district of India, in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, forming the south- western corner of the Rajshéhi with Kuch Behar division. It lies between 24° 3' and 24° 59' N. lat. and between 88° 21' and 89° 24' E. long., and is bounded on the N. by the districts of Dindjpur and Bogra, on the E. by Bogra and Pabna, on the S. by the Ganges and Nuddea district, and on the W. by Maldah and

Murshidabad. The area of 2359 square miles is one alluvial plain seamed with old river-beds and studded with marshes. The Ganges and the Mahananda are its principal rivers; the former con- stitutes a great natural boundary-line to the south and south-west, and the latter, which rises in the Himalayas, borders the district on the west for a few miles before joining the Ganges. Other rivers are the Narad and Baral, important offshoots of the Ganges; the Atrai, a channel of the Tista; and the Jamuna, a tributary of the Atrai. Both the Atrai and the Jamuna belong to the Brahmaputra system and are navigable throughout the year for small cargo boats. The drainage of Rajshahi is not carried off by means of its rivers, but through the chains of marshes and swamps, the most important of which is the Chalan "bil" or lake, which discharges itself into the Brahmaputra. The climate of Rajshahi does not differ from that of other districts of Lower Bengal ; its average rainfall for the five years ending 1882/83 equalled 68 inches. The Northern Bengal State Railway intersects the district from north to south.

Population.—The census of 1881 gave a population, almost en- tirely rural, of 1,338,688 (males 660,226, females 678,412). Of this number 288,749 were returned as Hindus, 1,049,700 as Moham- medans, and only 121 as Christians. The only town with over 10,000 inhabitants was Rampur Beauleah (19,228), which is the chief town and administrative headquarters of the district. This town is situated on the north bank of the Ganges in 24° 22' N. lat. and 88° 39' E. long. ; it is of modern growth and is built for the most part on river alluvia. It was formerly the seat of the Dutch and East India Company's factories, and is still a centre of the silk and indigo trade.

Rice is the staple crop of the district ; other cereal crops are wheat, barley, and Indian corn, which are grown to a small extent ; among miscellaneous crops are indigo, sugar-cane, mulberry, and tobacco. Ganja is also grown in a small tract to the north of the district. Silk spinning and weaving and the preparation of indigo are the chicf manufactures, but these are now both declining. The total revenue of Rajshaht in 1883-84 amounted to £123,098, towards which the land-tax contributed £88,584.

History.—When the East India Company took over the adminis- tration of Bengal in 1765 Rajshahi was one of the largest and most important districts in the province. It appears to have extended from Bhagulpur on the west to Dacca on the east, and to have in- cluded an important subdivision called Nij-Chakla Rajshahi on the south of the Ganges, which extended over a great portion of what now lies within the districts of Murshidabad, Nuddea, Jessore, Birbhum, and Burdwan. 'The total arca was estimated at 12,909 square miles, or more than five times the sizc of the present district. Having been found much too large to be effectually administered by one central authority, Rajshahi was stripped by Government in 1793 of a considerable portion of its outlying territory, and a natural boundary-line was drawn to the west, south, and east along the Ganges and Brahmaputra. Its north-western limits were reduced in 1813, when the present district of Maldah was constituted. The erection of Bogra into a separate jurisdiction in 1821 still further reduced jis area ; and in 1832 the limits of Rajshahi were finally fixed very much at their present lines by the constitution of Pabna into an independent jurisdiction.

RAKOCZY, the name of an old and wealthy family of upper Hungary. SicismuND was on 11th February 1607 elected prince of Transylvania, but in the following year abdicated in favour of Gabriel Bathori, to whom succeeded

1 The Rajshahi with Kuch Behar division comprises the seven dis- tricts of Dinajpur, Rajshaéhi, Rangpur, Bogra, Pabna, Darjiling, Jal- pdiguri, and the native state of Kuch Behar. Its total area is 18,735 square miles, and its population (1881) 8,336,399 (males 4,237,388, females 4,099,011).

Bethlen Gabor. Bethlen died in 1629, and Grorce I. (1591-1648), son of Sigismund, born in 1591, was, after the demission of Gabor's widow, Catherine of Brandenburg, 26th November 1631, elected prince of Transylvania by the estates. In 1645 he joined the Swedes in an attempt to deliver Hungary from the yoke of Austria and secure religious liberty to the Protestants, but when the emperor Ferdinand showed a disposition to enter into a treaty with him he became oblivious of the cause of which he

had been the professed champion. By the treaty of Linz he was formally recognized as prince of Transylvania. He died on 24th October 1648. GrorcE IT. (1615-1660), son of the preceding, was chosen by the estates to succeed him as prince of Transylvania. Having been disappointed in his hopes of the crown of Poland on the death of Casimir V., he entered into an alliance with John Casimir and invaded the country, but was completely defeated on 16th July 1657. His procedure against Poland provoked the hos- tility of the Turks, with whom he was engaged in continual war until his death at Grosswardein on 26th June 1660, from wounds received at the battle of Klausenburg. Francis I, (1642-1676), son of the preceding, did not succeed his father as prince of Transylvania. Having become connected with a plot for the overthrow of the Austrian Government, his life was only saved through the intervention of his mother, who was a Catholic, and he had to pay a fine of 400,000 florins. He edited a volume of prayers, which had an extensive circulation in Hungary. He died on 8th July 1676. Francis LEopotp (1676- 1735), son of the preceding, was at the age of twelve along with his mother made prisoner by the Austrians, and by them was educated in a Jesuit college in Bohemia. After his marriage with a princess of Hesse he returned to Hungary, where the greater portion of his estates was restored to him. On account of his connexion with a conspiracy of the malcontent party he was in 1701 arrested and brought to Vienna, but making his escape he went to Poland, where he spent several years in exile. In 1703 he headed a new insurrection, which had achieved consider- able success before the death of the emperor Leopold in the end of 1705. Owing to the milder attitude of Joseph I., matters for a time assumed a more peaceful appearance. In 1707 Rakéczy was elected prince of Transylvania, and on 3lst May of this year the independence of Hungary was proclaimed. From this time, however, the fortunes of the Hungarian cause began to decline, and Rakéczy finally in despair, having refused an amnesty and offers of pardon, retired to the frontiers of Poland, after which, on lst May 1711, peace was concluded at Szatmar. Rakdczy refused to own it, and retired to France and subsequently to Turkey, where he died at Rodosto on 8th April 1735. (See Huy- GARY, vol. xii. pp. 369-370.)

RALEIGH, a city of the United States, the capital of North Carolina and the seat of justice of Wake county, is situated in 35° 47’ N. lat. and 78° 48’

W. long., a little to the north-east of the geographical centre of the State, and occupies a kind of high ground in the upper valley of the Neuse, a river flowing south-east towards Pamlico Sound. It is the meeting-place of three railways—the Raleigh and Gaston, the Raleigh and Augusta, and the Richmond and Danville lines—and its railway distance from Portsmouth is 177 miles and from Washington 230. Raleigh is laid out round a park of 10 acres called Union Square and divided into four sections by four broad streets which strike out symmetrically from this centre; the fine old trees which were spared by the original settlers give it the sobriquet of "City of Oaks." Besides the State house or capitol (a substantial granite structure in Union Square), the public buildings coniprise the county court- house, the governor's mansion, the United States court-

house and post-office (1875), the State geological museum, a State insane asylum, institutions for the blind and the deaf and dumb, the penitentiary, and the Shaw institute for the higher education of coloured pupils. There are a normal school and a graded school system for both white and coloured pupils. Raleigh is a centre of the cotton and tobacco trades, has railway machine and car shops, and manufactures steam-engines, shuttle blocks and bob- bins, ice, cotton-seed oil, fertilizers, hosiery, clothing, agri- cultural implements, carriages, carpentry, cigars, marble wares, &c. The population was 4780 in 1860, 7790 (4094 coloured) in 1870, and 9265 (4354 coloured) in 1880. Raleigh was selected as the seat of government in 1788, was laid out in 1792, and made a city in 1794.

RALEIGH, Sm Watrter (1552-1618), admiral and courtier, was born at Hayes in Devonshire in 1552. After a short residence at Oriel College, Oxford, he took service in the autumn of 1569 with a body of volunteers serving in the French Huguenot army, and he probably did not return to England till 1576. During the course of these years he appears to have made himself master of seaman- ship, though no evidence of this is obtainable. In 1579 he was stopped by the council from taking part in a voyage planned by his half-brother Sir Humphrey Gilbert, and in 1580 he commanded an English company in Munster (Ireland). On 10th

November he took part in the massacre at Smerwick. He remained in Ireland till December 1581, distinguished for his vigour and ability as well as for his readiness to treat Irish rebels as mere wild beasts, who were to be pitilessly exterminated, and whose leaders might be smitten down if necessary by assassina- tion. In one way or another Raleigh's conduct gained the favourable notice of Elizabeth, especially as he had chosen to seek for the support of Leicester, in whose suite he is found at Antwerp in February 1582. For some years Raleigh shone as a courtier, receiving from time to time licences to export woollen cloths and to sell wine, after the system by which Elizabeth rewarded her favourites with- out expense to herself. In 1585 he became lord warden of the Stannaries, soon afterwards he was vice-admiral of Devon and Cornwall, and in 1587 was captain of the guard. But he was one of those who were dissatisfied unless they could pursue some public object in connexion with their chase after a private fortune. In 1583 he risked £2000 in the expedition in which Sir Humphrey Gilbert perished. In 1584 he obtained a charter of colonization, and sent Amadas and Barlow to examine the country which he named Virginia. In 1585 he despatched a fleet laden with colonists. They were, however, soon discouraged and were brought back to England by Drake in the following year. Shortly afterwards fifteen fresh colonists were landed, and another party in 1587. All these, however, perished, and, though Raleigh did all that was possible to succour them, the permanent colonizing of Virginia passed into other hands.

In 1584 Raleigh obtained a grant of an enormous tract of land in Munster, in one corner of which he introduced the cultivation of the potato. To people that land with English colonists was but the counterpart of the attempt to exterminate its original possessors. This view of the policy of England in Ireland was not confined to Raleigh, but it found in him its most eminent supporter. In his haste to be wealthy, his love of adventure, his practical in- sight into the difficulties of the world, and his unscrupulous- ness in dealing with peoples of different habits and beliefs from his own, Raleigh was a representative Elizabethan Englishman. He did his best, so far as a usually absentee landlord could do, to make his colonists prosperous and successful; but he underestimated the extraordinary vitality of the Irish race, and the resistance which was

awakened by the harsh system of whicli he was the con- stant adviser at Elizabeth's court. Elizabeth, too, was unable to support him with the necessary force, and his whole attempt ended in failure. Raleigh's efforts were at least made on behalf of a race whose own civilization and national independence were at stake. The Elizabethan men were driven to take large views of their difficulties, and it was impossible for Raleigh to separate the question whether English forms of life should prevail in Munster from the question whether they should be maintained in England. Two conceptions of politics and religion stood face to face from the Atlantic to the Carpathians, and every one of vigour took aside. The balancing intellects were silenced, or, like Elizabeth's, were drawn in the wake of the cham- pions of one party or the other. Wherever the strife was hottest Raleigh was sure to be found. If he could not succeed in Ireland he would fight it out with Spain. In 1588 he took an active part against the Armada, and is even supposed by some to have been the adviser of the successful tactics which avoided any attempt to board the Spanish galleons. In 1589 he shared in the unsuccessful expedition commanded by Drake and Norris, and for some time vessels fitted out by him were actively employed in making reprisals upon Spain.

Raleigh was a courtier as well as a soldier and a mariner, and as early as 1589 he was brought into collision with the young earl of Essex, who challenged him, though the duel was prevented. Some passing anger of the queen drove him in this year to visit Ireland, where he renewed his friendship with Spenser, and, as is told in poetic lan- guage in Colin Clout's come Home again, took the poet back with him to England, introduced him to Elizabeth, and persuaded him to proceed to the immediate publication of a portion of the Maerie Queen. If Raleigh could plead for a poet, he could also plead for a Puritan, and in 1591 he joined Essex in begging for mercy for Udall. In the end of 1591 or the beginning of 1592 Raleigh seduced and subsequently married Elizabeth Throckmorton, and was consequently thrown into the Tower by Elizabeth, who could not endure that the fantastic love-making to herself which she exacted from her courtiers should pass into real affection for a younger woman. Previously to his imprisonment Raleigh had been forbidden to

sail in command of a fleet of which a great part had been fitted out at his own cost for service against Spain. The ships, how- ever, sailed, and succeeded in capturing a prize of extra- ordinary value known at the time as the " Great Carrack." No one but Raleigh was capable of presiding over the work of securing the spoils. He was sent to Plymouth, still in the name of a prisoner, where his capacity for business and his power of winning the enthusiastic affection of his sub- ordinates were alike put to the test. The queen at last consented to restore him to complete liberty, though she tried to cheat him of his fair share of the booty.

Raleigh resolved to use his regained liberty on an en- terprise more romantic than the capture of a carrack. The fable of the existence of El Dorado was at that time fully believed in Spain, and in 1594 Raleigh sent out Captain Wheddon to acquire information about the lands near the Orinoco. In 1595 he sailed in person with five ships for Trinidad. On his arrival he found that the Spaniards, who had occupied a place called San Thomé at the junction of the Orinoco and the Caroni, had been obliged to abandon it. Raleigh ascended the river to the spot, heard more about El Dorado from the Indians, brought away some stones containing fragments of gold, and returned to England to prepare a more powerful ex- pedition for the following year. When he came back he published an account of his voyage. The hope of enrich- ing himself, and of giving to his country a source of wealth

which would strike the balance in its favour in the struggle with Spain, exercised a strong fascination over the imagi- native character of Raleigh. In the next year, 1596, how- ever, he was wanted nearer home, and was compelled to content himself with sending one of his followers, Captain Keymis, to extend his knowledge of Guiana. He was himself called on to take the command of a squadron in the expedition sent against Spain under Lord Howard of Effingham and the earl of Essex. It was Raleigh who, on the arrival of the fleet off Cadiz, persuaded Howard and Essex to begin by an attack on the Spanish fleet, and who himself led the van in sailing into the harbour. Before long the Spanish fleet was thoroughly beaten, and all of it, except two vessels which were captured, was

destroyed by the Spaniards themselves. Raleigh was wounded in the action, and the subsequent capture of Cadiz was carried out by others. In May 1597 Elizabeth, who was growing somewhat tired of the petulance of Essex, readmitted Raleigh to court. It was arranged that he should go as rear-admiral of a fleet, under the command of Essex, intended to cripple yet further the maritime power of Spain. The "island voyage," as it was called, was on the whole a failure, the only notable achievement being the capture of Fayal (Azores) by Raleigh in the absence of Essex. The generous nature of Essex was overmastered by vanity, and, falling under the sway of meaner men, he grew to regard Raleigh as a personal rival. He did not even mention the capture of Fayal in his official account of the voyage.

In 1598 Elizabeth, who was always ready to reward her courtiers at the expense of others, completed a bargain in Raleigh's favour. In 1591 he had obtained, through the queen's intervention, a lease for ninety-nine years of the manor of Sherborne from the bishop of Salisbury. In 1598 the see was vacant. Aspirants to the mitre were informed that only by converting the lease into a perpetual estate in Raleigh's favour could the object of their wishes be obtained. On these terms Dr Cotton became bishop of Salisbury and Raleigh possessor of Sherborne in full ownership. In 1600 Raleigh added to his other offices that of governor of Jersey. A temporary reconciliation between Raleigh and Essex was followed by a permanent estrangement when Essex was appointed to the govern- ment of Ireland, the personal feeling on both sides being probably strengthened by the divergence between their Irish policies,—Raleigh wishing to use force alone, whilst Essex wished to come to terms with Tyrone. When Essex rushed into his final act of rebellion he gave out as one of his reasons his fear of being murdered by Raleigh and Lord Cobham, who at this time were allied.

After the death of Essex the question of the succession assumed a pressing importance with the imminence of the close of Elizabeth's reign. Cecil, allying himself with the intriguing Lord Henry Howard, assured himself of James's favour, and poisoned his ear against Raleigh and Cobham. Into Raleigh's feelings at this time it is impossible to penetrate with certainty, but it can hardly be doubted that, though he professed

himself ready to support James's claim, he did not throw his whole heart into the cause of the Scottish king. Raleigh was the man of the struggle against Spain, self-reliant and unrelenting, eager to push on the reprisals on Spain till the Spanish monarchy was utterly beaten down. James was a lover of peace, anxious to live on good terms with all his neighbours, and under the belief that by fair dealing the Catholic powers and the pope himself might be brought to accept loyally the hand which he was ready to hold out. Raleigh, in short, wished to emphasize the differences which divided Christendom ; James wished to treat them as hardly existing at all. When James came to the throne, therefore, he was certain

to come into conflict with Raleigh, and not being able to see the advantage of keeping about him men of different tempers he dismissed him from the captaincy of the guard, compelled him to surrender the wardenship of the Stan- naries, suspended his patent of wine licences as a monopoly, and took from him the governorship of Jersey, though for this he gave him a pension to compensate for his loss. That which followed it is impossible to fathom to the bottom. Raleigh must have been very angry, and it is quite possible that he may have used violent language and have even spoken of a Spanish invasion as preferable to the rule of James, or have declared his preference of the title of Arabella Stuart to that of the existing sovereign. The main witness against him was Cobham, and Cobham made and retracted his charges with such levity that it is im- possible to trust to his evidence. Raleigh, however, was imprisoned, and, after attempting to commit suicide, was brought to trial at Winchester in November 1603, when he was condemned to death. The king, however, commuted his sentence upon the scaffold to one of imprisonment.

During his imprisonment in the Tower Raleigh devoted himself to chemical experiments and to literary work. It was here that he composed so much of the History of the World as was ever finished, and that he also issued pam- phlets on questions of passing politics. Here too he learned that misfortune continued to follow him, and that there was a flaw in the conveyance by which he had made over Sherborne to trustees to save it from the usual consequences of attainder, and that James had seized it for

his favourite Carr, though he gave in compensation £8000 and a pension of £400 a year for the lives of Lady Raleigh and her eldest son. ;

Raleigh's thoughts had often turned to Guiana. An offer made by him in 1612 to send Keymis to the gold mine which he believed to exist near the Orinoco was rejected, but in 1616 he was himself released at the intercession of Villiers, on the understanding that he was to go in person to Guiana, and was to visit the gold mine. As a security that he would not encroach upon the territory of Spain, he was to remain unpardoned, so that his life might be at the king's mercy if he broke his promise. It is probably not doing injustice to Raleigh to suppose that he had no intention of keeping it if it proved inconvenient. As far as was then known, indeed, the spot where the mine was supposed to be might be reached without passing a Spanish settlement, though he was aware that the Spaniards claimed the whole country as their own. To seize Spanish territory and to fight the Spaniards in every possible way was, however, regarded by him as altogether righteous as well as politic, and he had no respect for James's scruples, which arose partly from weakness, but partly also from a respect for international obligations, which in the case of Spain was foreign to Raleigh's mind. Most likely Raleigh thought that all would be well if he brought home sufficient evidence that the mine was worth possessing. Before he sailed he suggested to James that he should be allowed to attack Genoa, a city in dependence on Spain, and when this plan was rejected he entered into com- munication with the French ambassador and sent to the admiral of France to ask permission to bring into a French harbour all that he might gain on his voyage. The expedition turned out badly. His sailors would not ascend the Orinoco unless he remained at the mouth to keep off the Spaniards. Those who ascended found a Spanish village in the way, and after a sharp fight drove the Spaniards out and burned the place. The mine, if it really existed, they never reached, and Raleigh had to return to England with failure on his head. He was soon arrested and lodged in the Tower.

Whether James would have pardoned Raleigh if he had

brought home large quantities of gold cannot now be said. Coming home as he did, he had to bear the blame of the attack on the Spanish village, which he had done nothing to avert in his orders to the party going up the river. He was brought before a commission of the privy council. Notes taken of the proceedings have only partially been preserved, but it appears that there was strong evidence that after his failure he had attempted to induce his captains to seize Spanish prizes, or, in other words, to commit what James held to be an act of piracy, though Raleigh, with his views of the rightfulness of fighting Spain in America whatever the Governments in Europe might do, would doubtless have qualified it by another name. At last the commission decided against him, and he was sent to execution formally on his old sentence at Winchester, in reality for having allowed his men to shed Spanish blood after engaging that he would not do so. He was executed on 29th October 1618. His attitude against Spain gave him popularity at a time when the attempt of James to draw closer the bonds between Spain and England was repudiated by the great majority of the nation. (Ss. BR. G.)

RAMAH., See SaMvEL.

RAMAYANA. See Sanskrit LITERATURE.

RAMBAN. R. Mosuru Ben Nayman, or NACHMAN- IDES, was born before 1200 at Gerona, where he was rabbi and physician, and died between 1268 and 1270 in Pales- tine, probably at Acre. Although a Sepharadi in the later and larger sense of the word, he was the disciple of the greatest Provencal rabbis, and became the most celebrated Talmudist and cabbalist of his age in his own country.

1. Of his extant commentaries on the Bible that on the Penta- teuch is the most valuable. Three editions may be named. (1) Ed. prin., s. 1. e a., but certainly before 1480. According to oral tradition the compositors set the type in a waggon whilst travel- ling in Italy from place to place for the purpose of selling printed books. (2) Lisbon, 1489. (8) Naples, 1490. This book has been translated at least twice into Latin (Schiller-Szinessy, Catal., i. pp. 174-177). The authorship of the commentary on Job, ascribed to Nachmanides, has been questioned, but without good grounds

(op. cit,, pp. 211-213). The commentaries, however, generally ascribed to him on Canticles and Ruth are certainly not his.

2. Of his many works on Rabbinic literature we mention only : (1) MIWA, Strietures on MAIMONIDES'S (q.v.) Sepher Hammisvoth (Constantinople, 1510, 4to; Venice, 1550, folio,—the latter in Giustiniani's edition of Maimonides's Mishneh Torah. A cheap

edition came out at Warsaw in 1888). (2) 'N mindy, 4.0. Remarks against Rabbenu Zerahyah's Maor (both printed now with the Riph) and Hassaba (both in Temim De'im, §§ 225, 226). (3) NDI ADD, vindication of Al-Phasi against RABAD (q.v.—the third)

(Vienna, 1805). (4) mba, DVT, mpd, Deeisions, Novellxz, and Colleetanea ; these are spread over almost the whole Talmud. The Responsa ascribed to him are by his disciple Rashba. (5) MW, a sermon on the superiority of the Mosaic Law (best edition by Jellinek, Vienna, 1872, 8vo). (6) Letters (a) on the Maimonidean controversy (cheapest edition, Vilna, 1821, 8vo); (0) to his son, on conduct (Lisbon ed. of the Pent. com.) ; (c) Iggereth Hakkodesh, on the ethics of matrimony (latest edition, Berlin, 1793, 8vo) ; MSS. le in almost every public library in Europe, ¢.g., Cambridge. (7) DINA MN, on Sickness, Death, &e. (Constantinople, 1518, folio),—partly ascetic and contemplative, partly Rabbinic ordi-

nances ; its last chapter separately under the title of Syoan ley (Naples, 1490, 4to, and reprints). (8) His anti-Christian contro- versies are chiefly contained in his MD}, a Disputation with the convert Pablo Christiani, the teacher of Raymundus Martini, held before Jayme I., king of Aragon ; it is translated into Latin, and will be found, with a mutilated and otherwise corrupt text, in Wag- enseil's Tela ignea Satan (Altdorf, 1681, 4to), the best and cheapest edition of the text and of the explanation of Isa. lii. 18 to liii. 12 being that of Dr Steinschneider (Berlin, 1860, 8vo). (9) Cabbal- istic matter is contained in all Ramban's works (notably, however, in the Pentateuch ! and Job); he has also a commentary on the Sepher Yesirah (Mantua, 1562, 4to, and reprints). (10) Nachmanides was

1 Nachmanides's acuteness and honesty are a sufficient guarantee that the Bahir (Midrash, 15; Eney. Brit., xvi. p. 287), so often quoted in his

Pentateuch commentary as a bona fide old book, cannot be a composition of his own time, as some have of late asserted.

also a liturgical writer of eminence. There are extant by him a prose prayer for one going on a sea voyage (Yephe Noph, Venice, 1575, 4to), and a piece of religious poetry (Melo Chofnajim, Berlin, 1840, 8vo, pp. 39-41) for the Malkhiyyoth (first part of the additional service of New Year) ; the latter is a mostajab and betrays a perfect master both in kabbalah and poetry. For a specimen of Aramaic poetry see his introductory poem to AftIhamoth Adonai. (8. M. §.-8.)

RAMBOUILLET, chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Seine-et-Oise, France, 30 miles south- west of Paris on the line to Brest, is a small place of 5186 inhabitants, and derives its whole interest from the associa- tions connected with the ancient chdteau, which stands surrounded by a beautiful park of 2965 acres and a wide forest dating from the 14th century. A great machicolated tower and some apartments with good woodwork still remain. The gardens, partly in French, partly in English

style, are picturesque, and have an avenue of Louisiana

cypress unique in Europe. The park contains the national sheep-farm, where the first flock of merino sheep in France was raised last century. The school of sheep-farming is of recent foundation. Here, too, is the first military school erected for soldiers' children.

Originally a royal domain, the lands of Rambonillet passed in the 14th century to the D'Angennes family, who held them for 300 years and built the chateau. Francis I. died there in 1547 ; and Charles [X. and Catherine de' Medici found a refuge in the chateau in the wars of religion, as Henry III. did after them. The famous marquise de Rambouillet is separately noticed below. Created a duchy and peerage in favour of the duke of Toulouse, son of Louis XIV., Rambouillet was subsequently bought and em- bellished by Louis XVI., who erected a model farm, sheep establish- ment, and other buildings. The place was a hunting-seat of Napoleon I. and Charles X., and it was here that in 1830 the latter signed his abdication.

RAMBOUILLET, CatHErinE DE VivonnE, MARQUISE DE (1588-1665), a lady famous in the literary history of France, was born in 1588. She was the daughter and heiress of Jean de Vivonne, marquis of Pisani, and her mother Giulia was of the noble Roman family of Savelli. She was married at twelve years old to Charles d'Angennes, vidame of Le Mans, and afterwards marquis of Rambouillet. Her celebrity is due to the salon or literary meeting-place which she established as early as 1608 in the Hétel de Rambouillet,—or, to give it its proper name, the Hétel Pisani, for M. de Rambouillet had shortly before his marriage sold his family mansion. Madame de Ram- bouillet not merely endeavoured to refine the manners of her guests and gave special attention to literary conversa- tion, but also seems to have taken great trouble to arrange her house for purposes of reception, and is said to have been the first to devise suites of rooms through which visitors could move easily. The hétel was open for more than fifty years, and almost all the more remarkable person- ages in French society and French literature frequented it, especially during the second quarter of the century, when it was at the height of its reputation. The incidents con- nected with the salon of the "incomparable Arthénice" (an anagram for Catherine which is said to have taken two poets of renown, Malherbe and Racan, a whole afternoon to devise) are innumerable, and it would be impossible to recount them in any space here available. Among the more noteworthy are the sonnet war between the Uranistes and the Jobistes—partisans of two famous sonnets by Voiture and Benserade—and the composition by all the famous poets of the day of the Guirlande de Julie, a collec- tion of poems on different flowers, addressed to Julie d'Angennes, Madame de Rambouillet's eldest daughter. Even more important is the rise of the Précieuses, who owed their existence to Madame de Rambouillet's salon and influence. These ladies—who are usually represented in the memory of posterity by Moliére's avowed caricatures and by Mademoiselle de Scudéry, but whose name, it must be remembered, Madame de Sévigné herself was proud to

la een

bear—insisted on a ceremonious gallantry from their suitors | and friends (though it seems from Tallemant's account that practical jokes of a mild kind were by no means excluded from the Hétel de Rambouillet), and especially favoured an elaborate and quintessenced kind of colloquial and literary expression, such as at the end of the 16th and in the earlier part of the 17th century was fashionable throughout Europe. The immortal Précieuses Ridicules was no doubt directly levelled not at the Hétel de Ram- bouillet itself but at the numerous coteries which in the course of years (for the salon had been open for more than a generation when Moliére's piece, which was patronized by the real Précieuses themselves, appeared) had sprung up in imitation of it. But the satire did in truth touch the originators as well as the imitators,—the former more closely perhaps than they perceived. The Hétel de Ram- bouillet continued open till the death of its mistress, 27th December 1665, but latterly it lost its peculiar position. It had no doubt a very considerable influence in bringing about the classicizing of French during the 17th century, though the literary work with which it is chiefly identified was of an older school than that of the age of Louis XIV. proper.

The chief original authorities respecting Madame de Rambouillet and her set are Tallemant des Réaux in his Historicttes and Somaize in his Dictionnaire des Précicuses. Many recent writers have treated the subject, among whom MM. Cousin, Livet, and De Barthélemy deserve special mention.

RAMEAU, Jean Puiuipre! (1683-1764), musical theorist and composer, was born at Dijon, 25th September 1683. His musical education, partly in consequence of his father's desire to prepare him for the magistracy, still more through his own wayward disposition, was of a very desultory character; but his talent manifested itself at a very early age. In 1701 his father sent him to Milan to break off a foolish love-match. But he learned little in Italy, and soon returned, in company with a wandering theatrical manager, for whom he played the second violin. He next settled in Paris, where he published his Premier Livre de Piéces de Clavecin, in 1706. In 1717 he made an attempt to obtain the appointment of organist at the church of St Paul. Deeply annoyed at his unexpected failure, he retired for a time to Lille, whence, however, he soon removed to Clermont-

Ferrand, where he succeeded his brother as organist at the cathedral, and here it was that his true art-life began.

Burning with desire to remedy the imperfection of his early education, Rameau now diligently studied the writ- ings of Zarlino, Descartes, Mersenne, F. Kircher, and certain other well-known authors. He not only mastered their several theories but succeeded in demonstrating their weak points and substituting for them a system of his own, which, notwithstanding its manifest imperfection, was based upon firm natural principles, and ultimately led to discoveries of the utmost possible value to musical science. His keen insight into the constitution of certain chords, which in early life he had studied only by ear, enabled him to propound a series of hypotheses, many of which are now accepted as established facts; and, if, in his desire to carry out his system to a logical conclusion, he was sometimes tempted into palpable and dangerous error, it was only in obedience to the law which invariably renders the inventor of a new theory blind to the stubborn facts which militate against its universal application. His theory was based upon an instinctive anticipation of the discoveries of modern science. While the older con- trapuntists were perfectly satisfied with the laws which regulated the melodious involutions of their vocal and instrumental parts, Rameau demonstrated the possibility of building up a natural harmony upon a fundamental bass,

1 Not Jean Baptiste, as erroneously stated by Gerber.

and of using that harmony as an authority for the enact- ment of whatever laws might be considered necessary for the guidance either of the contrapuntist or the less ambi- tious general composer. And in this he first explained the distinction between two styles, which, in deference to the views expressed by a popular critic of the present day, have been called the "horizontal and vertical systems," the "horizontal system" being that by which the older contrapuntists regulated the onward motion of their several parts, and the "vertical system" that which constructs an entire passage out of a single harmony. From fundamental harmonies he passed to inverted chords, to which he was the first to call attention; and

the value of this discovery fully compensates for his erroneous theory concerning the chords of the eleventh and the great (Angl. “added ”) sixth.? Rameau first set forth his new theory in his Z’raité de ? Harmonie (Paris, 1722), and followed it up in his Vouveau Systeme (1726), Génération Harmonique (1737), Démonstra- tion (1750), and Nouvelles Réflexions (1752). But it was not only as a theorist that he became famous. Returning to Paris in 1722, he first attracted attention by composing some light dramatic pieces, and then showed his real powers in his first great opera, Zippolyte et Aricie, founded on Racine’s Phédre, and produced at the Académie in 1733. Though this work was violently opposed by the admirers of Lully, whose party spirit eventually stirred up the famous “ guerre des bouffons,” Rameau’s genius wag too brilliant to be trampled under foot by an ephemeral faction, and his ultimate triumph was assured. He afterwards produced more than twenty operas, the most successful of which were Dardanus, Castor et Pollux, Les Indes Gal- antes, and La Princesse de Navarre. Honours were now showered upon him. He was appointed conductor at the Opéra Comique, and the directors of the opera granted him a pension. King Louis XV. appointed him composer to the court in 1745, and in 1764 honoured him with a patent of nobility and the order of Saint Michael. But these last privileges were granted only on the eve of his death, which took place in Paris on 12th September 1764. RAMESES (Gen. xlvii. 11 ; Exod. xii. 37; Num. xxxiii. 3), or, with a slight change in the vowel points, RAAMsES (Exod. i. 11), the name of a district and town in Lower Egypt, is notable as affording the mainstay of the current theory that King Rameses II. was the pharaoh of the oppression and his successor Menptah the pharaoh of the exodus. The actual facts, however, hardly justify so large an inference. The first three passages cited above are all by the priestly (post-exile) author and go together. Jacob is settled by his son Joseph in the land of Rameses and from the same Rameses the exodus naturally takes_ place. The older narrative speaks not of the land of Rameses but of the land of Goshen; it seems probable, therefore, that the later author interprets an obsolete term by one current in his own day, just as the Septuagint in Gen. xlvi. 28 names instead of Goshen Heroopolis and the land of Rameses. Heroopolis lay on the canal connecting the Nile and the Red Sea, and not far from the head of the latter, so that the land of Rameses must be sought in Wady Tumilat near the line of the modern

freshwater canal. In Exod. i. 11, again, the store-cities or arsenals which the Hebrews built for Pharaoh are specified as Pithom and Raamses, to which LXX. adds Heliopolis. Pithom (the city of the god Tum) is probably the Patumus of Herod. ii. 158, which also lay on the canal, so here again Wady Tumilat is the district to which we are referred. But did the Israelites maintain a continuous recollection of the names of the cities on which they were forced to build, or were these names rather added by a writer who knew what fortified places were in his own time to be seen in Wady 2 For further information on this subject, see vol. xvii. p. 92.

Tumilat? The latter is far the more likely case, when we consider that the old form of the story of the Hebrews in Egypt is throughout deficient in precise geographical data, as might be expected in a history not committed to writing till the Israelites had resided for centuries in another and distant land. The post-exile or priestly author indeed gives a detailed route for the exodus (which is lacking in the older story), but he, we know, was a student of geo- graphy and might supplement tradition by what he could gather from traders as to the caravan routes.1_ And at all events to argue that, because the Hebrews worked at a city named after Rameses, they did so in the reign of the founder, is false reasoning, for the Hebrew expression might equally be used of repairs or new works of any kind.

It appears, however, from remains and inscriptions that Rameses Il. did build in Wady Tumilat, especially at Tell Maskhuta, which Lepsius therefore identified with the Raamses of Exodus. This identification is commemorated in the name of the adjacent rail- way station. But recent excavations on the spot have brought to light further inscriptions, on the ground of which Naville makes the ruins those of Pithom and further identifies Pithom with the later Heroopolis. The identity of Pithom and Heroopolis is also favoured by comparison of the LXX. and the Coptic of Gen. xlvi. 28. See E. Naville, The Store-city of Pithom and the Route of the Exodus, London, 1885.

RAMESWARAM, a small island situated between Ceylon and India, at the entrance of Palk Strait in the Gulf of Manaar, in 9° 18’ N. lat. and 79° 22’ E. long. It is about 14 miles long by 5 wide, is lowand sandy, and for the most part uncultivated. The estimated population of the island is about 14,000. It contains one of the most venerated Hindu shrines, founded, according to tradition, by Rama himself, which for centuries has been the resort of thousands of pilgrims from all parts of India. To the south of this great temple there is a freshwater lake about 3 miles in circumference. At the western extremity of the island is the small but busy port of Pambam, which gives its name to the channel between India and Ceylon.

Rameswaram island is the first link in the chain of islets and rocks forming Adam’s Bridge. Geological evidence shows that this gap was once bridged by a continuous isthmus, which, accord- ing to the temple records, was breached by a violent storm in 1480. Operations for removing the obstacles in the channel, and for deepening and widening it, were begun in 1838. The main channel has a minimum depth of 14 feet; its length is 4232 feet and its breadth 80 feet. A second channel to the south, called the Kilkarai oo 2100 feet long, 150 feet wide, and is dredged to a depth (e) 2 feet.

RAMMOHUN ROY. See Roy.

RAMPUR, a native state of India, in the Rohilkhand division of the North-Western Provinces, lying between 28° 26' and 29°10' N. lat. and between 78°54' and 79°33' E. long. It is bounded on the N. and W. by the British district of Murddabaéd, and on the N.E. and S.E. by the district of Bareli. The country is level and generally fertile ; it is well watered in the north by the rivers Kosila and Nahul and in the south by the Ramgangé. It adjoins the Tarai on the north, at the foot of the Himé- layas, and is exceedingly unhealthy. The total area of the state is 945 square miles, with a population (1881) of 541,914 (males 282,359, females 259,555), of whom 302,989 were Hindus and 238,925 Mohammedans.

The revenue of Rampur in 1883-84 was £167,031 and the ordinary annual expenditure £160,134. Rice, sugar, hides, and a kind of damask are the principal exports, and the imports comprise elephants, English cloth, and groceries and salt. During the mutiny of 1857 the nawab of Rampur rendered important services to the British, for which he received a grant of land assessed at £12,852 in perpetuity, besides other honours.

RAMPUR, capital of the above state, stands on the left bank of the Kosila in 28° 48' N. lat. and 79° 4' E. long. ; it is surrounded by a belt of bamboo trees and

1 From the position of the words it is even not unlikely that '¢Pithom and Raamses" may be the addition of a redactor, and that the first author of Exod. i. 11 only spoke generally of store-cities.

brushwood, with a low ruined parapet, and is the resi. dence of the nawab, who represents the Rohilla chieftains of Rohilkhand.

RAMPUR BEULEAH. See RAssHAui, supra, p. 261,

RAMSAY, Attan (1686-1758), author of the Gentle Shepherd, a pastoral drama in the Lowland Scotch dialect, was born in Lanarkshire in 1686.

An Edinburgh barber set agoing the literary movement in Scotland that cul- minated in the poetry of Burns. This peasant-poetry is often spoken of as if it were a spontaneous indigenous product, but the harvest that ripened towards the close of the 18th century had its seed-time earlier, and the seeds were imported from England. Allan Ramsay was a peasant by birth (although he claimed kinship with the noble family of Dalhousie) —the son of a manager of lead- mines in Lanarkshire ; but the country-bred lad was trans- planted to a town, being apprenticed at the age of fifteen to a barber in Edinburgh. In this calling he somehow made the acquaintance of a band of Jacobite young gentle- men of literary tastes, was admitted to the convivialities of their " Easy Club," and formally adjudged "a gentle- man." The basis of the club seems to have been literary, the members taking fancy names of celebrities, —Buchanan, Boece, Bickerstaff, and so forth. Ramsay's name was Bickerstaff, and the fact is of some importance as showing how he was brought into contact with the discussion of the theory of pastoral poetry among the London wits of the time. Ramsay's connexion with the Easy Club lay between 1712 and 1715, and in the course of that period occurred the dispute about pastoral poetry occasioned by the great publication of Pope's Windsor Forest (see Porx). The Guardian for 7th April 1713 (No. 23) contained a descrip- tion of a true pastoral poem, which was afterwards realized by Ramsay in the Gentle Shepherd with such scrupulous fidelity in every detail that the criticism might fairly be described as the recipe from which the poem was made. There is not a clearer case in literary history of the influ- ence of criticism on creation; Ramsay's great pastoral — and it well deserves the epithet—was the main outcome of the prolonged discussion of that kind of poetry by the Queen Anne wits. 'Paint the manners of actual rustic life," said the Guardian critic to the poet, 'not the manners of artificial shepherds and shepherdesses in a fictitious golden age; use actual rustic dialect ; instead of satyrs and fauns and nymphs introduce the supernatural creatures of modern superstition." These precepts Ramsay diligently observed, and the result was that his Gentle Shepherd not only attracted attention among the learned students of poetry as a literary curiosity, the first genuine pastoral after Theo- critus, but at once became a favourite and a living force among the peasantry in whose dialect it was written and for whose characters it furnished ideal models. 'There was hardly a farmhouse in

Scotland in which a copy of the poem was not to be found, and the moral force of the ideal exhibited in the hero Patie may be traced in the character of Burns and many another Scottish peasant-bard in whom ostentatious libertinism is not redeemed by the same genius. From a moral point of view a better exemplar than Ram- say's ideal hero might well have been desired. The poet- laureate of the Easy Club took his moral tone from the poets of the Restoration, with whom his Jacobite boon com- panions were in full sympathy; and thus through the genial, convivial, quick-witted, and slily humorous barber the spirit of the Restoration passed into the homes of the Scotch peasantry to do battle with the austere spirit of the kirk.

RAM—RAM

The Gentle Shepherd is the only production of Ramsay's that has much claim to remembrance. His lyrics for the most part are poor artificial imitations, adorned here and there with pretty fancies, but devoid of sincerity of feeling. He is happier in his humorous descriptions of character and occasional personal poems; "renowned Allan, canty callan," as his admirers loved to call him, had a quick sense of the ridiculous and a firm touch in the exhibition of what amused him. Once he had established a character as a poet he abandoned the trade of wig-making, set up as a bookseller, and was the first to start a circulating library in Scotland. From his shop in High Street opposite Niddry Street he issued his incidental poems in broadsheets, and made a volume of them in 1721, and another in 1728. The nucleus of the Gentle Shepherd was laid in separately issued pastoral dialogues ; round these the complete drama was built and published as a whole in 1725. As a col- lector, editor, imitator, and publisher of old Scottish poetry Ramsay gave an impetus to vernacular literature at least as great as that given by his principal original poem. His Tea-Table Miscellany, published in 1724, for which English as well as Scottish poets and moderns as well as ancients were laid under contribution, was extremely popular ; and his Evergreen (1724), a collection of poems written prior to 1600, was the precursor of Bishop Percy's Reliques in a similar field. A collection of ables, published complete in 1730, part original, part translated from La Motte and La Fontaine, was Ramsay's last literary work, but he lived to an advanced

age, dying in 1758, the year before the birth of Burns. One of the speculations of the enlightened and enterprising man of business was a theatre, which was opened in 1736, but soon shut up by the magistrates.

; eerie edition of Ramsay's poems was issued by A. Gardner m .

RAMSAY, Attan (1713-1784), portrait-painter, the eldest son of the author of The Gentle Shepherd, was born at Edinburgh about 1713.1 Ramsay manifested an aptitude for art from an early period, and at the age of twenty we find him in London studying under the Swedish painter Hans Huyssing, and at the St Martin's Lane Academy ; and in 1736 he left for Rome, where he worked for three years under Solimena and Imperiali (Fernandi). On his return he settled in Edinburgh ; and, having attracted attention by his head of Forbes of Culloden and his full-length of the duke of Argyll, he removed to London, where he was patronized by the duke of Bridgewater. His pleasant manners and varied culture, not less than his artistic skill, contributed to render him popular. In 1767 the Scotsman was appointed to succeed Shakelton as principal painter to His Majesty; and so fully employed was he on the royal portraits which the king was in the habit of presenting to ambassadors and colonial governors that he was forced to take advantage of the services of a host of assistants—of whom David Martin and Philip Reinagle are the best known—upon the minor portions of his works, and sometimes on the faces themselves. His life in London was varied by frequent visits to Italy, where he occupied himself more in literary and antiquarian research than with art. But at length this prosperous career came to an end. The painter's health was shattered by an accident, a dislocation of the right arm. With an unflinching pertinacity, which we can understand when we see the firm-set resolute mouth of his own portrait, he struggled till he had com- pleted a likeness of the king upon which he was engaged at the time, and then started for his beloved Italy, leaving ~ 1 There seems to be some dubiety as to the exact date: the brothers Redgrave, in their Century of Painters, give the date as 1709, while Samuel Redgrave, in his Dictionary of Painters of the English School states it as 1713, a year—probably the correct one—assumed by Cunningham in his Lives.

behind him a series of fifty royal portraits to be completed by his assistant Reinagle. For several years he lingered in the south, his constitution finally broken. He died at Dover on the 10th of August 1784.

In his art Ramsay paid the penalty of popularity: the quality of the work which bears his name suffered from his unremitting assiduity as a court-painter and from his unsparing employment of assistants. Among his most satisfactory productions are some of his earlier ones, such as the full-length of the duke of Argyll, and the numerous bust-portraits of Scottish gentlemen and their ladies which he executed before scttling in London. They are full of both grace and individuality ; the features show excellent draughtsmanship ; and the flesh- painting is firm and sound in method, though frequently tending a little to hardness and opacity. His full-length of Lady Mary Cokc is an especially elegant female portrait, remarkable for the skill and delicacy with which the white satin drapery is managed ; while in the portrait of his brown-eyed wife, the eldest daughter of Sir Alexander Lindsay of Evelick, in the Scottish National Gallery, we have a sweetncss and tenderness which shows the painter at his highest. This last-named work shows the influence of French art, an influence which helped greatly to form the practice of Ramsay, and which is even more elcarly visible in the large collection of his sketches in the pos- session of the Royal Scottish Academy and the Board of Trustees, Edinburgh.

RAMSAY, Anprew Micwart (1686-1743), commonly called the 'Chevalier Ramsay," who was born at Ayr, Scotland, on 9th January 1686, is noteworthy as having been among the few writers not of French birth who are admitted by French criticism to have written in French with purity and scholarship. Ramsay visited France com- paratively early and came under the influence of Fénelon, which made hin a convert to Roman Catholicism. He held several important tutorships in his adopted country, the chief of which was the charge of Prince Charles Edward and the future cardinal of York. His biographers mention with surprise the conferring of an honorary degree upon him by the university of Oxford. The claim was nominally his discipleship to Fénelon, but in reality beyond doubt his connexion with the Jacobite party. He died at St Germain-en-Laye (Seine-et-Oise) on 6th May 1743.

Ramsay's principal work was the J'ravels of Cyrus (London and Paris, 1727), a book composed in avowed imitation of T'élémaque. He also edited T'élémaque itself with an introduction, and wrote an Essai de Politique on the principles of his master and a Histoire de la Vie et des Ouvrages de Fénelon, besides a partial biography of Turenne, some poems in English, and other miscellaneous works.

RAMSAY, Davin (1749-1815), American physician and historian, was the son of an Irish emigrant, and was born in Lancaster county, Pennsylvania, on 2d April 1749. After graduating M.D. at Princeton College in 1765 he settled as a physician at Charleston, where he obtained an extensive practice. During the revolutionary war he served as a field-surgeon, and in 1776 he became a mem- ber of the South Carolina legislature. Having acted as one of the "council of safety" at Charleston, he was on the capture of that city on 27th August 1780 seized by the British as a hostage, and for nearly a year was kept in confinement at St Augustine. From 1782 to 1786 he was a member of Congress. His interest in the revolutionary struggle led him to devote his leisure to the preparation of several historical works on the subject, and in 1785 he published in two volumes LHistory of the Revolution in South Carolina, in 1789 in two volumes Z/tstory of the American Revolution, in 1801 a Life of Washington, and in 1809 in two volumes a History of South Carolina. He was also the author of several minor works. He died at Charleston on 8th May 1815 from a wound inflicted by a lunatic. His //istory of the United States in 3 vols. was published posthumously in 1816, and forms the first three volumes of his Universal History Americanized, published in 12 vols. in 1819.

RAMSDEN, Jesse (1735-1800), astronomical instru- ment maker, was born at Salterhebble near Halifax, York- shire, in 1735. He went to London in 1755, and was

shortly afterwards bound apprentice to a mathematical instrument maker. He afterwards started business on his own account and acquired great celebrity as an artist. He died on 5th November 1800.

Ramsden's speciality was divided circles, which began to super- sede the quadrants in observatories towards the end of the 18th century. His most celebrated work was a 5-feet vertical circle, which was finished in 1789 and was used by Piazzi at Palermo in constructing his well-known catalogue of stars. He was the first to carry out in practice a method of reading off angles (first suggested in 1768 by the duke of Chaulnes) by measuring the distance of the index from the nearest division line by means of a micrometer screw which mioves one or two fine threads placed in the focus of a micro- scope. Ramsden's transit instruments were the first which were illuminated through the hollow axis; the idea was suggested to him by Professor Ussher in Dublin.

RAMSGATE, a seaport and watering-place of England, in the Isle of Thanet, Kent, and a "vill" of the old Cinque Port of Sandwich, is finely situated between chalk cliffs at the northern extremity of Pegwell Bay, on the London, Chatham, and Dover Railway, 79 miles east-south-east of London. It possesses a fine stretch of sand, and is much frequented as a watering-place. It first rose into import- ance in the beginning of the 18th century through its trade with Russia. In 1749 it was selected as a harbour of refuge for the Downs, and the erection of a pier under the direc- tion of Smeaton was begun in 1787. The harbour has been improved at various periods, and now (1885) covers an area of 51 acres, enclosed by two piers, one about 1200 and the other about 1500 feet in length, accommodation being afforded for as many as 400 sail. The limits of the port were extended in 1882. A considerable shipping trade in coal and provisions is carried on, and there is also a fleet of 150 vessels engaged in the North Sea fishery. A fine promenade pier was erected in 1881. The town possesses a town-hall (1839), assembly rooms, and exten- sive bathing establishments. The church of St George was built in 1826. There is a small Roman Catholic cathedral, built by Welby Pugin. The neighbouring Peg- well Bay, famed for its shrimps, is supposed to have been the scene of the landing of Hengist and Horsa, and at Cliffs End (Ebbs Fleet) a monolithic cross marks the landing-place of St Augustine in 596. On the summit of Osengal Hill, about a mile to the west of the town, a graveyard of the early Saxon settlers was discovered during the cutting of the railway. Ramsgate was incorporated as a borough in 1884.

The population of the urban sanitary district (area 2278 acres) in 1871 was 19,640, and in 1881 22,683, or, including 638 fishermen at sea,

23,321.

RAMUS, Perer, or PrERRE DE LA Ramis (1515-1572), logician, was born at the village of Cuth in Picardy in the year 1515. He was descended from a noble family, which had fallen, however, into such poverty that his father earned his livelihood as a field-labourer. The early death of his father increased Ramus's difficulties in obtain- ing the education for which he thirsted. But at last his perseverance was rewarded by admission, in a menial capacity, to the college of Navarre. He worked with his hands by day and carried on his studies at night. The reaction against scholasticism was still in full tide; it was the transition time between the old and the new, when the eager and forward-looking spirits had first of all to do battle with scholastic Aristotelianism. In the domain of logic men like Laurentius Valla, Rudolphus Agricola, and Ludovicus Vives, imbued with the spirit of the Renais- sance, had already invoked Cicero against the barbarous Latinity of the scholastic compends ; and, following the same prototype, they had proposed various innovations which tended to assimilate logic to rhetoric. Ramus out- did his predecessors in the impetuosity of his revolt. He signalized himself on the occasion of taking his degree

(1536) by victoriously defending the daring thesis—Every- thing that Aristotle taught is false. This tour de force was followed up by the publication in 1543 of Aristotelice Animadversiones and Dialectice Partitiones, the former a criticism on the old logic and the latter a new text-book of the science. What are substantially fresh editions of the Partitiones appeared in 1547 as Institutiones Dialectice, and in 1548 as Scholx Dialectice ; his Dialectique, a French version of his system, is the earliest work on the subject in the French language. Meanwhile Ramus, as graduate of the university, had opened courses of lectures; but his audacities drew upon him the determined hostility of the conservative party in philosophy and theology. He was accused of undermining the foundations of philosophy and religion, and the matter was brought

before the parlement of Paris, and finally before the king. By him it was re- ferred to a commission of five, who found Ramus guilty of having "acted rashly, arrogantly, and impudently," and interdicted his lectures (1544). He withdrew from Paris, but soon afterwards returned, the decree against him being cancelled through the influence of the cardinal of Lorraine. In 1551 Henry IL. appointed him professor of philosophy and eloquence at the Collége de France, where for a considerable time he enjoyed free scope for his energies. His incessant literary activity is proved by the fifty works which he published in his lifetime, to which must be added nine that appeared after his death. In 1561, however, the slumbering enmity against Ramus was suddenly fanned into flame by his adoption of Protestant- ism. He had to flee from Paris for his life; and, though he found an asylum in the palace of Fontainebleau, his house was pillaged and his library burned in his absence. He resumed his chair after this for a time, but in 1568 the position of affairs was again so threatening that he found it advisable to ask permission to travel. He travelled mainly in Switzerland and Germany, residing some time in Basel, Heidelberg, Geneva, and Lausanne, and meeting everywhere with the most flattering reception. Returning to France, Ramus at last fell a victim to the inveterate hate of his opponents: he perished by the hands of hired assassins in the massacre of St Bartholomew (1572).

The logic of Ramus enjoyed a great celebrity for a time, and there existed a school of Ramists boasting numerous adherents in France, Germany, and Holland. As late as 1626 Burgersdyck divides the logicians of his day into the Aristotelians, the Ramists, and the Semi-Ramists, who endeavoured, like Goclenius of Mar- burg, to mediate between the contending parties. Ramus's works appear among the logical text-books of the Scottish universities, and he was not without his followers in England in the 17th cen- tury. There is even a little treatise from the hand of Milton, published two years before his death, called Artis Logice Plenior Institutio ad Petri Rami Methodum concinnata. It cannot be said, however, that Ramus's innovations mark any epoch in the history of logic ; and, though some of his additions have maintained their ground, he has made no contribution of fundamental importance to the science. His rhetorical leaning is seen in the definition of logic as the "ars disserendi" ; he maintains that the rules of logic may be bettcr learned from

observation of the way in which Ciccro persuaded his hearers than from a study of the Organon. The dis- tinction between natural and artificial logic, i.¢., between the im- plicit logic of daily speech and the same logic made explicit in a system, passed over into the logical handbooks. Logic falls, accord- ing to Ramus, into two parts—invention (treating of the notion and definition) and judgment (comprising the judgment proper, syllogism, and method). This division gave rise to the jocular designation of judgment or mother-wit as the "secunda Petri." He is, perhaps, most suggestive in his emendations of the syllogism. He admits only the first three figures, as in the original Aristotelian scheme, and in his later works he also attacks the validity of the third figure, following in this the precedent of Laurentius Valla. Ramus also set the modern fashion of deducing the figures from the position of the middle term in the premises, instead of basing them, as Aristotle does, upon the different relation of the middle to the so-called major and minor term. On the whole, however, though Ramus may be allowed to have advanced logical study by the wholesome fermentation of thought which he caused, we are

at a loss to see the grounds for his pretentious claim to supersede Aristotle by a new and independent system.

See Waddington-Kastus, De Petri Rami vita, scriptis, philosophia, Paris, 1848 ; Charles Desmaze, Petrus Ramus, professeur au Collége de France, sa vie, ses écrits, sa mort, Paris, 1864.

RAMUSIO. The noble family of Ramusio—the spelling adopted in the publication of the Vavigationz, though it is also written Ramnusio, Rhamnusio, Rannusio, &c.— was one of note for literary and official ability during at least four generations. Its original home was in Rimini, and the municipality of that city has within the last few years set up a tablet on the town-hall bearing an inscription which may be thus rendered: 'The municipality of Rimini here records the claim of their city to the family of the Ramusios, adorned during the 15th and 16th centuries by the illustrious jurist and man of letters Paolo the elder, who rendered the work of Valturius, our fellow-citizen, into the vernacular; by the physician Girolamo, a most successful student of Oriental tongues, and

the first to present Europe with a translation of Avicenna; and by Giovanni Battista, cosmographer to the Venetian republic and secretary to the Council of Ten, who bequeathed to the world that famous collection of voyages and travels, re- garded in his own day as a marvellous work, and still full of authority among all civilized nations."

PaoLo THE ELDER (c, 1443-1506), the first of those thus commemorated, migrated in 1458 from Rimini to Venice, where he obtained full citizenship, studied law, and became a member of the magistracy, filling the offices of vcario, of judicial assessor, and of criminal judge under various administrators of the Venetian provinces on the continent. He continued, however, to maintain relations with the Mala- testa princes of his native city, and in 1503 negotiated with them the cession of Rimini to the republic. The wife of Paolo, bearing the singular name of Tomyris Macachio, bore him three sons and four daughters. Paolo died at Bergamo on 19th August 1506 at the age of sixty-three, and was buried in 8. Agostino at Padua. Paolo was the author of a variety of legal treatises and the like, and also published at Verona in 1483 both a corrected edition and an Italian translation of a once famous book, Valturius, De re militar, dedicating both to Pandolfo Malatesta of Rimini.!

GrroLamo (1450-1486), younger brother of Paolo, had a notable history. After he had studied medicine at Padua public suspicion was roused against him in connexion with the death of a lady with whom he had had some love passages, and this ran so high that he was fain, by help of his brother Paolo, to whom he transferred his property, to make his escape (about 1481-83) to Syria and to take up his abode at Damascus. In 1486 he removed to Beyrout, and died the same year, killed, as the family chronicler re- lates, by a surfeit of "certain fruit that we call armellini and albicocche, but which in that country are known as mazza- Franchi," a title which English sailors in southern regions still give to apricots in the vernacular paraphrase of sill- johns. During his stay in Syria Girolamo studied Arabic and made a new translation of Avicenna, or rather, we may assume, of some part of that author's medical works (the Canon'). It was, however, by no means the first such trans- lation, as 1s erroneously alleged in the Rimini inscription, for the Canon had been

translated by Gerard of Cremona (d. 1187), and this version was frequently issued from the early press. Girolamo's translation was never printed, but was used by editors of versions published at Venice in 1579 and 1606. Other works of this questionable member of the house of Ramusio consisted of medical and philosophical tracts and Latin poems, some of which last were included in a collection published at Paris in 1791.?

1 Both works are in the British Museum. 2 "Ramusii Ariminensis Carmina," in Quingue Illustrium Poetarum . . Lusus in Venerem. Girolamo's are grossly erotic.

269

Gian Barista (1485-1557), the eldest son of Paolo Ramusio and Tomyris Macachio, was born at Treviso in 1485 (20th June). Having been educated at Venice and at Padua, at an early age he entered the public service (1505), becoming in 1515 secretary of the senate and in 1533 secretary of the Council of Ten. He also served the republic in various missions to foreign states, ¢.g., to Rome, to Switzerland, and to France, travelling over much of the latter country by special desire of the king, Louis XII. He also on several occasions filled the office of cancellier grande. In 1524 he married Franceschina, daughter of Francesco Navagero, a noble,—a papal dispensation being required on account of her being cousin to his mother Tomyris. By this lady he had one son, Paolo. In his old age Ramusio resigned the secretaryship and retired to the Villa Ramusia, a property on the river Masanga, in the province of Padua, which had been bestowed on his father in 1504 in recognition of his services in the acquisi- tion of Rimini the year before. The delights of this retreat are celebrated in the poems and letters of several of Gian Battista's friends. He also possessed a house at Padua in the Strada del Patriarcato, a mansion noted for its paintings and for its collection of ancient sculpture and inscriptions. These, too, are commemorated by various writers. A few days before his death Ramusio removed to this house in Padua, and there died, 10th July 1557, at the age of seventy-two. He was, by his own desire, buried at Venice, in the tomb which he had made for his mother, in Santa Maria dell' Orto. His wife's death had

occurred in 1536. In the work called Museum Mazzuchellianum (Venice, 1761, vol. i. pl. xiv. No. 6) there is represented a 16th-century medal of Ramusio, which looks a genuine likeness, and a bronze example of which, without the reverse,' is preserved in St Mark's Library. There was a portrait of him, represented as in conversation with Andrea Gradenigo, in the Sala del Maggior Consiglio, but in 1577 this perished in a fire, as did also a portrait of his father, Paolo. A professed portrait of Gian Battista by Francesco Grisellini, in the Sala dello Scudo, appears to be, like the companion portrait of Marco Polo, a work of fancy. A public nautical school at Rimini has within the last three years received from the Government the title of the Isti- tuto Ramusio.

Ramusio was evidently a general favourite, as he was free from pushing ambition, modest, and ingenuous, and, if it be safe to judge from some of the dissertations in his

Vavigatroni, must have been a delightful companion; both his friend Giunti and the historian Giustiniani speak of him with the strongest affection. He had also a great reputation for learning. Before he was thirty Aldus Manutius the elder dedicated to him his edition of Quin- tilian (1514); a few years later (1519) Francesco Ardano inscribed to him an edition of Livy, and in 1528 Bernardino Donati did the like with his edition of Macrobius and Censorinus. To Greek and Latin and the modern lan- guages of southern Europe he is said to have added a knowledge of " Oriental tongues," but there is no evidence how far this went, unless we accept as such a statement that he was selected in 1530 on account of this accom- plishment to investigate the case of one David, a Hebrew, who, claiming to be of the royal house of Judah, wished to establish himself at Venice outside of the Ghetto.5 But*

3 The reverse is an amorphous map. The book is.in the British Museum.

4 Rerum Venetarum .. . Historia, bk. xiv.

> Ramusio's report on this Hebrew is preserved in the diaries of Marcus Sanudo, and is printed by Cigogna. It is curious. David represented himself as a prince of the Bedouin Jews who haunt the caravan-road between Damascus and Medina; he claimed to be not only a great warrior

covered with wounds but great also in the law and in the cabala, and to have been inspired by God to conduct the

Ramusio had witnessed from his boyhood the unrolling of that great series of discoveries by Portugal and Spain in East and West, and the love of geography thus kindled in him made that branch of knowledge through life his chief study and delight. He is said, with the assistance of friends touched by the same flame, to have opened a school for geography in his house at Venice. And it appears from a letter addressed to him by his friend Andrea Navagero, that as early as 1523 the preparation of material for his great work had already begun. The task had been suggested and encouraged, as Ramusio him- self states in a dedicatory epistle to the famous Girolamo Fracastoro, by that scholar, his lifelong friend ; an address to the same personage indeed introduced each of the three volumes, and in the first the writer speaks of his desire to bequeath to posterity, along with his labours, "a testimony to the long and holy friendship that had existed between the two." They were contemporaries in the strictest sense (Ramusio 1485-1557, Fracastorius 1483-1553). His corre- spondence, which was often devoted to the collection of new material for his work, was immense, and embraced many distinguished men. Among those whose names have still an odour of celebrity were Fracastoro, just men- tioned, Cardinal Bembo, Damiano de Goez, and Sebastian Cabot; among lesser lights, Vettor Fausto, Daniel Barbaro, Paolo Manuzio, Andrea Navagero, the cardinals Gasparo Contarini and Gregorio Cortese, and the printer Tommaso Giunti, editor after Ramusio's death of the Navigation. Before speaking more particularly of this work we may conclude the history of the family.

Paoto (GrroLAMO GaspaRE)! (1532-1600) was the only child of Gian Battista, and was born on 4th July 1532. Like his father, he maintained a large correspondence with many persons of learning and note. In 1541 Francesco Contarini, procurator of St Mark's, brought from Brussels a MS. of Villehardouin's History of the Conquest of Con- stantinople, which he presented to the Councilof Ten. In 1556 they publicly ordered its translation into Latin, and gave the commission to Paolo Rannusio. His

father also seems to have taken much interest in the work, for a MS. vernacular translation by him exists in the Marciana. . Paolo's book was not completed till 1573, many years after the father's death, and was in fact a paraphrase enlarged from other sources, thus, according to Cigogna's questionable judgment, 'converting the dry story of Ville- hardouin into an elegant (fiortta) historical work." It was not published till 1609, nine years after Paolo's death ; nor was it ever really reprinted, though it became the subject of a singular and unintelligible forgery. For Jacopo Gaffarelli, who was sent to Venice to buy books for Richelieu, having apparently procured the "remainder " copies, removed the title and preliminary pages and sub- stituted a fresh title with the date 1634, and a dedication to his master the cardinal.?

GrroLaMo GIUSEPPE (1555-1611), the son of Paolo, was born at Venice in 1555. He entered the public service in 1577, and was employed in connexion with various foreign missions. In 1601 he published at Lyons the French text of Villehardouin ; and, besides an Italian translation of this old historian (who seems thus to have furnished occupation for three generations of Ramusios), he left behind him a Storia o Cronaca di Casa Ramusia, a folio

dispersed tribes to the Holy Land and to rebuild the temple. In this view he had visited Prester John and the Jews in his kingdom, and then various European countries. David was dark in complexion, "like an Abyssinian," lean, dry, and Arab-like, well dressed and well attended, full of pretensions to supernatural cabalistic knowledge, and with enthusiastic ideas about his mission, whilst the Jews regarded him as a veritable Messiah.

1 This person and his son affected the spelling Rannusio.

2 Tn the British Museum.

RAMUSLO

MS. still in St Mark's Library. He died at Padua in 1611, and his posterity did nothing to continue the reputa- tion of the family, official or literary.

We revert to the Navigationi e Viaggi. 'Two volumes only were published during the life of Gian Battista, vol. i. in 1550, vol. iii, in 1556; vol. ii. did not appear till 1559, two years after his death, delayed, as his friend and printer T. Giunti explains, not only by that event but by a fire in the printing-office (November 1557), which destroyed a part of the material which had been prepared. It had been Ramusio's intention to publish a fourth volume, containing, as he mentions himself, documents relating to the Andes, and, as appears from one of the prefaces of Giunti, others relating to explorations towards the Antarctic.2 Rainusio's collection was by no means the first of the kind, though it was, and we may say ou the whole continues to be, the best. Even before the invention of the press such collections were known, of which that made by a certain Long John of Ypres, abbot of St Bertin, in the latter half of the 14th century was most meritorious, and afforded in its transcription a splendid field for embellishment by the miniaturists, which was not disregarded. The best of the printed collections before Ramusio's was the Novus Orbis, edited at Bascl by Simon Gryneus in 1532, and reissued in 1537 and 1555. This, however, can boast of no disquisitions nor of much editorial judgment. Ramusio's collection is in these respects far superior, as well as in the variety and fulness of its matter. He spared no pains in ransacking Italy and the Spanish peninsula for coutributions, and in translating them when needful into the racy Italian of his day. Several of the pieces are very rare in any other shape than that exhibited in Ramusio's collection ; several besides of importance—e.g., the invaluable travels of Barbosa and Pigafetta's account of Magellan's voyage—were not publicly known in any complete form till the present century. Of two important articles at least the originals have never been otherwise printed or dis- covered ; one of these is the Summary of all the Kingdoms, Cities, and Nations from the Red Sea to China, a work translated from the Portuguese, and dating apparently from about 1535; the other, the remarkable Ramusian redaction of Marco Poto (q.v.). The Prefatione, Espositione, and Dichiarazione, which precede this ver- sion of Marco Polo's book, are the best and amplest examples of Ramusio's own style as an editor. They are full of good sense and of interesting remarks derived from his large reading and experi- ence, and few pictures in words were ever touched more delightfully than that in which he sketches the return of the Polo

family to their native city, as he had received it in the tradition of the Venetian elders.

There were several editions of the Navigationi e Viaggi, and as additions continued to be made to the several volumes a good deal of bibliographical interest attaches to these various modifications.4 The two volumes (i. and iii.) published in Ramusio's lifetime do not bear his name on the title-page, nor does it appear in the addresses to his friend Fracastorius with which these volumes begin (as does also the second and posthumous volume). The editions of vol. i. are as follows—1550, 1554, 1563, 1588, 1606, 1613.5 The edition of 1554 contains the following articles which are not in that of 1550,—(1) copious index ; (2) "Narr. di un Compagno di Barbosa" ; (3) "Informationi del Giapan"; (4) "Alli Lettori di Giov. de Barros"; (5) "Capitoli estratti da di Barros." The edition of 1563 adds to these a preliminary leaf concerning Ramusio, "'Tom- maso Giunti alli Lettori." After 1563 there is no change in the contents of this volume, only in the title-page. It should be added that in the edition of 1554 there are three double-page woodcut maps (Africa, India, and India extra Gangem), which do not exist in the edition of 1550, and which are replaced by copper- plate niaps in subsequent editions. These maps are often missing. The editions of vol. ii. are as follows—1559, 1574, 1583, 1606. There are important additions in the 1574 copy, and still further addi- tions in that of 1583. The additions made in 1574 were—(1) " Herberstein, Della Moscovia e della Russia"; (2) " Viaggio in Persia di Caterino Zeno" ; (3) "Scoprimento dell' Isola Frislanda, &c., per due fratelli Zeni" ; (4) "Viaggi in Tartaria per alcuni frati Minori" ; (5) " Viaggio del Beato Odorico" (two versions). Further additions made in 1583 were—(1) " Navigatione di Seb. Cabota"; (2) at the end 90 ff. with fresh pagination, containing ten articles on "Sarmatia, Polonia, Lithuania, Prussia, Livonia, Moscovia, and the Tartars by Aless. Guagnino and Matteo di Michcovo." The two latest "editions" of vol. ii. are identical, 7.e., from the same type, with a change of title-page only, and a reprint of the last leaf of the preface and of the last leaf of the book. But the last cir- cumstance does not apply to all copies. In one now before the

3 See in vol. iii. the end of Ramusio's Discorso on the conquest of Peru, and Giunti's " Alli Lettori"' in the 3d edition of the first volume.

4 Brunet's statements on the subject are borrowed, and not quite accurate. The detail in Cigogna seems to be accurate, but it is vague as to the deficiencies of the earlier editions.

5 All of these are in the British Museum.

RA N—

writer, whilst the title bears 1606, the colophon bears " Appresso i Giunti, 1583." Vol. iii. editions are of 1556, 1565, and 1606.1 There is no practical difference between the first two, but that of 1606 has forty-five pages of important new matter, which embraces the Travels of Cesare Fedrici or Federici in India, one of the most valuable narratives of the 16th century, and Three Voyages of the Hollanders and Zealanders to Nova Zembla and Groenland. Vol. iii. also contains (omitting maps and figures inserted in the text, or with type on the reverse) a two-page topographical view of Cuzco, a folding map of Terra Nova and Labrador, a two-page map of Brazil, a two-page map of Guinea, &c., a two-page map of Sumatra, a two-page pictorial plan of the town of Hochelaga in New France, and a general map of the New World in a hemisphere. Brunet's statement mentions issues of vol. ii. in 1564, and of vol. iii, in 1613; but these seem to have no existence. It would thus appear that a set of Ramusio, to be as complete as possible, should embrace—for vol. i., 1563 or any subsequent edition ; for vol. ii., 1588 or 1606; for vol. iii., 1606.

Besides the circumstances to be gathered from the Navigationi regarding the Ramusio family see the Iscrizioni Venete of Emanuele Cigogna. There is also in the British Museum Monografia letta il 14 Marzo 1883. . . by Guglielmo Carradori, Rimini, 1883 ; but hardly anything has been found in this except the inscription quoted at the beginning of this article. (08h

See

RANCE, ArmManp JEAN LE BoUTHILLIER DE. TRAPPISTS.

RANDERS, a town of Denmark, at the head of an amt in the province of North Jutland (Nérrejylland), on the Gudenaa, about 8 miles above its junction with Randers Fjord, an inlet of the Cattegat. It is situated on the railway that runs south by Aarhuus to Fredericia, and has a branch line (1875) to Grenaa on the coast. Though a place of considerable antiquity —being mentioned in 1086 as the meeting-place of insurgents against Knud, the saint —Randers has few remains of old buildings and bears the stamp of a compact modern manufacturing town that owes its importance to its distilleries, dye-works, carriage ~~fac~~ tories, salt-works, weaving-factories, tan-works, &c. St Morten's church dates from the 14th century, but has been frequently altered and enlarged down to 1869-70. Other buildings are the town-house (1778, restored 1858), the court-house (1860-62), the infirmary (1870), the alms- house (1868), the Jewish synagogue (1858), and the high school (1858 ; the institution founded by Christian ITI.). The population was 11,354 in 1870 and 13,457 in 1880.

Randers is best known in history as the scene of the assassina- tion of Count Geerts by Niels Ebbesoén in 1340. In the Middle Ages it had six churches and four monastic establishments—the oldest a Benedictine nunnery (1170). The Grey Friars' building was turned into a castle (Dronningborg) after the Reformation ; its church was burned down in 1698.

RANDOLPH, Joun (1773-1833), of Roanoke, American statesman, was descended from an influential and wealthy Virginian family, and was the third and youngest son of John Randolph of Cawsons, Chesterfield county, where he was born on 2d June 1773. His father having died in his infancy, his early years were passed under the care of his stepfather. He attended schools at Williamsburg and Princeton and for a short time studied at Columbia College, New York, but, although well read in modern works bear- ing on politics and philosophy, his own statement, "I am an ignorant man, sir," was in other respects not inaccurate. Both his religious and his political views were radical and extreme. At an early period he imbibed deistical opinions, which he promulgated with extreme eagerness. He was also so strongly opposed to the new constitution of the United States that he could not bear to hear Wash- ington take the oath to support it. In order to assist in asserting the right of resistance to national

laws, and to withstand the '"'encroachments of the administration upon the indisputable rights" of Virginia, he was in 1799 elected as a democrat to Congress, where he sat, with the exception of two terms, till 1825. After the election of Jefferson as president in 1801 Randolph was elected chair- man of the committee of ways and means. He took an active part in agitating for the reform of the judiciary, and

1 All of these are in the British Museum.

in 1804 moved the impeachment of Judge Chase. The part he took in this matter tended to widen his breach with Jefferson, from whom he finally separated in 1806. Pos- sessing considerable wit, great readiness, and a showy if somewhat bombastic eloquence, he would undoubtedly have risen to high influence but for his strong vein of eccentricity and his bitter and ungovernable temper. The championship of State rights was carried by him to an extreme utterly quixotic, inasmuch as he not only asserted the constitutional right of Virginia to interpose her protest against the usurpation of power at Washington but claimed that the protest should be supported by force. On account of his opposition to the war with England in 1812 he was not returned to Congress in 1813, but he was re-elected in 1815. In 1825 he was elected to the United States Senate, where he continued to sit till 1827. In 1830 he was for a short time minister to Russia. He was elected to Congress in 1832, but died of consumption at Philadelphia before he took his seat, 24th May 1833, His last will was disputed in the law courts, and the jury returned a verdict that in the later years of his life he was not of sane mind.

Among several biographies of Randolph mention may be made of that by Hugh A. Garland, New York, 1850 (11th ed., 1857), and that by Henry Adams, forming vol. i. of the series of American

» Statesmen, edited by J. T. Morse, junior, Boston, 1883.

RANDOLPH, Tuomas (1605-1634), an English poet, was born in Northamptonshire in 1605. He was educated at Westminster and Cambridge, and soon gave promise as a writer of comedy. Ben Jonson,

not an easily satisfied critic, adopted him as one of his "sons." The ease and melody of his verse and the quickness of his wit and fancy justify the favour with which the youth was received by the magnates of literature. Unhappily he died under thirty in 1634, before his powers had reached their matur- ity. His principal works are—Zhe Muses' Looking-Glass, a Comedy; Amyntas, or the Impossible Dowry, a pastoral acted before the king and queen ; Aristippus, or the Jovial Philosopher ; The Conceited Pedlar ; The Jealous Lovers, a Comedy; Hey for Honesty, down with Knavery, a Comedy; and several other poems. TIlis works have recently been edited by W. Carew Hazlitt.

RANGOON TOWN, a district in the Pegu division of the province of British Burmah, situated in 16° 47' N. lat. and 96° 13' E. long., on the left bank of the Hlaing or Rangoon river at its junction with the Pegu and Pu-zwon-doung streams, 21 miles from the sea. In 1880 the town was detached from the surrounding area of the old district of Rangoon and constituted a separate district, the remainder of the country being formed into a distinct jurisdiction under the title of Hanthawady. The soil of Rangoon in the mountains and elevated tracts is grey sandy clay, and in the plains it is mostly alluvial mixed with earth of reddish colour, well suited for the growth of rice, vegetables, and fruit trees.. The Rangoon river flows from the junction of the Panlaing and Hlaing rivers to the sea; from the sea to Rangoon it is navigable during the monsoons by vessels of the largest draught, and in the dry season by vessels of 1000 tons. Pu-zwon- doung creek empties itself into the Rangoon river at Battery Point. It is navigable during the spring tides of the south- west monsoon for cargo boats of 100 tons; near its junction with the Rangoon river is a small rock, dangerous to large vessels. The only lake of any importance is the Kandaugyi or Royal Lake within the Dalhousie Park. The chief products of the district are grains and pulses (principally rice), cotton, timber, and cutch (catechu) and gambier. Rangoon comprises an area of 22 square miles, with a population in 1881 of 134,176 (males 91,504, females 42,672); Hindus numbered 35,871, Mohammedans 21,169, Christians 9741, and Buddhists 67,131.

The town was first built in 1753 by Aloung-bhoora, the founder of the Burmese monarchy. On the outbreak of the first Burmese War, in 1824, it was taken by the British, but subsequently restored to the native power. It was eaptured a second time in 1852 and passed along with the province of Pegu into the hands of the British. The town was destroyed by fire in 1850, and serious conflagrations oceurred again in 1853 and 1855. Since the last devastation Rangoon has undergone eonsiderable improvements ; among the latest may be mentioned the construction of steam tramways in the prineipal thoroughfares and the establishment of a volunteer fire brigade.

RANGPUR, a district of British India, in the lieu- tenant-governorship of Bengal, lying between 25° 3' and 26° 19' N. lat. and 88° 47' and 89° 56' E. long., is bounded on the N. by Jalpdiguri district and Kuch Behar state, on the E. by the Brahmaputra, separating it from Goalpara and Maimansinh, on the 8. by Bogra, and on the W. by Dindjpur and Jalpaiguri. The district is one vast plain ; the greater part of it, particularly towards the east, is in- undated during the rains, and the remainder is traversed by a network of streams which frequently break through their sandy banks and plough for themselves new channels over the fields. Agricultural industry has taken full advantage of the natural fertility of the soil, which is composed of asandy loam. The river system is constituted by the Brahmaputra and its tributaries, chief of which are the Tista, Dharla, Sankos, and Dudhkumar. There are no embankmeuts or artificial canals in the district, nor does the alluvial soil produce any minerals. The climate of Rangpur is generally malarious owing to the numerous stagnant swamps and marshes filled with decaying vege- table matter. The average annual rainfall is 86°14 inches. The Northern Bengal State Railway cuts through the western half of the district from north to south, with a branch to Rangpur town.

In 1881 the population was 2,097,964 (males 1,067,701, females 1,030,263) ; Hindus numbered 816,532, Mohammedans 1,279,605, and Christians 86. The population is for the most part rural ; the only towns containing upwards of 10,000 inhabitants are RANGPUR, the eapital (q.v.), Barakhatta (11,393), Bhogdabari (10,892), and Dimlah (10,503). The distriet contains an area of 3486 square miles, about three-fourths

being under continuous cultivation. The staple crops are riee, wheat, and other grains, oil-seeds, and jute ; among the miseellaneous crops are indigo, sugar-cane, betel-leaf, betel-nut, and mulberry for silkworms. Spare land capable of eultivation can hardly be said to exist,—even the patches of waste land yield a valuable tribute of reeds and cane. Of industries the chief is the manufaeture of paper from jute fibre ; other produets are striped cotton earpets, silk cloth woven from the cocoon of a worm fed on the castor-oil plant, baskets and mats, brass-ware, and ornaments earved in ivory and buffalo horn. In 1883-84 the

gross revenue of Rangpur disttict was £165,165, of which the land- '

tax eontributed £102,248.

The traet eomprised within the district of Rangpur was formerly the western outpost of the ancient Hindu kingdom of Kamrup. The realm appears to have attained its greatest power and prosperity under Raja Nilambhar, who was treaeherously overthrown by Husain Shah, king of Bengal, at the close of the 15th century. On the conquest of the kingdom of Bengal about 1542 by the renowned Afghan Sher Shah, subsequently emperor of Delhi, Rangpur appears to have become incorporated with the empire. During the turbulent period which followed the death of Sher Shah it threw off allegiance to Delhi, but the country was re-annexed by Akbar in 1584, though it was not completely subjugated till the time of Aurangzeb, about 1661. Rangpur passed to the East India Company in 1765 under the firman of the emperor Shah Alam. Numerous changes have since taken place in the jurisdiction, in consequence of which the district area has been much diminished.

RANGPUR, principal town and administrative head- quarters of the above district, is situated on the north bank of the Ghaghat river in 25° 44' N. lat. and 89° 17' E. long., and contains a population (1881) of 13,320.

RANJIT SINGH (Rungeer SrncH). See Ponsa, above, p. 111.

RANKINE, Witt1am Jonn Macquorn (1820-1872), a descendant of old Scottish families, the Rankines of Carrick and the Cochranes of

Dundonald by the father's side, and the Grahames of Dougalston by the mother's,

RAN—RAWN

was born at Edinburgh in 1820, and completed his educa- tion in its university. He was trained as an engineer under Sir J. Macneill, working chiefly on surveys, harbours, and railroads, and was appointed in 1855 to the chair of civil engineering in Glasgow, vacant by the resignation of Lewis Gordon, whose work he had undertaken during the previous session.

He was a voluminous writer on subjects directly con- nected with his chair, and, besides contributing almost weekly to the technical journals, such as the Engineer, brought out a series of standard text-books on Civil Engineering, The Steam-Engine and other Prime Movers, Machinery and Millwork, and Applied Mechanics. These have passed through many editions, have done more for the advancement of their subjects than any works of modern date, and are still in the very highest rank of educational works. To these must be added his elaborate treatise on Shipbuilding, Theoretical and Practical. This, however, corresponded to but one phase of Rankine's immense energy and many-sided character. He was an enthusiastic and most useful leader of the volunteer move- ment from its commencement, and a writer, composer, and singer of humorous and patriotic songs, some of which, as "The Three Foot Rule" and "They never shall have Gibraltar," became well known far beyond the circle of his acquaintance. Rankine was the earliest of the three founders of the modern science of THERMODYNAMICS (q.v.) on the bases laid by Sadi Carnot and Joule respectively, and the author of the first formal treatise on the subject. His contributions to the theories of Elasticity and of Waves rank high among modern developments of mathematical physics, although they are mere units among the 150 scientific papers attached to his name in the Royal Society's Cata- logue. The more important of these have been collected and reprinted in a handsome volume (Rankine's Scientific Papers, London, 1881), which contains a memoir of the author, written by Professor Tait. Rankine died in 1872.

RANPUR, a native state of India, in the province of Orissa in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, situated on the western boundary of the British district of Puri, in about 20° N, lat. and 85° 20' E. long. The south- west part of the state is a region of hills, forest clad, and almost entirely uninhabited, which wall in its whole western side, except at a single point, where a pass leads into the adjoining state of Nayagarh. Its population in 1881 was 36,539 (18,382 males, 18,157 females). The only town is the raja's place of residence, which consists of one long and wide street.

RANUNCULUS. Familiarly known as " buttercups," the species of this genus form the type of the order Lanunculacee. The plants are herbs, sometimes with fleshy root-fibres, or with the base of the stem dilated into a kind of tuber (Z. bulbosus), They have tufted or alternate leaves, dilated into a sheath at the base and verv generally, but not universally, deeply divided above. The Jowers are solitary, or in loose cymes, and are remarkable for the num- ber and distinctness (freedom from union) of their parts. Thus there are five sepals, as many petals arranged in whorls, numcrous stamens, and numerous carpels arranged in spires. The petals have a little pit or gland at the base, which is interesting as foreshadowing the more fully developed tubular petals of the nearly allied genera Aconi-tum and Helleborus. The presence of all the floral organs in a free condition induced A. P. de Candolle to place Ranunculus at the head of the vegetable kingdom, but at the present time the reverse opinion holds good, and Ranunculus with its numerous separate parts is supposed to occupy a lower status than a flower in which a greater amount of consolidation and differentiation takes place. The genus is large as to number of species, which occur in

most temperate countries in the northern and southern hemispheres, and, while they extend into arctic and ant- arctic regions, they show little or no tendency to inhabit tropical countries except on the higher mountains. Several are natives of Great Britain, occurring in pastures, while the water-buttercups, denizens of pools and streams, vary greatly in the character of the foliage according as it is submersed, floating, or aerial,

and when submersed varying in accordance with the depth and strength of the current. The ranunculus of the florist is a cultivated form of 2. asiaticus, remarkable for the range of colour of the flowers (yellow to purplish black) and for the regularity with which the stamens and pistils are replaced by petals. The common or lesser celandine is the &. Ficaria of the botanist, remarkable for its tuberous root-fibres. The species are all more or less acrid.

RAOUL ROCHETTE, Déstr&t (1783-1854), French archeologist, was born in 1783 at St Amand in the depart- ment of Cher, and received his education at Bourges. In 1813 he was called to the chair of history in the Collége de Louis-le-Grand at Paris. About four years afterwards he was translated to the similar chair in the Sorbonne. The first result of his labours, published in 1815 under the title of Histoire Critique del' Etablissement des Colonies G'recques, in 4 vols. 8vo, was favourably received by the public. In 1819 he was appointed superintendent of antiquities in the Bibliothéque at Paris, an office which he held till 1848. To this was added in 1826 the pro- fessorship of archeology at the Bibliothéque, a result of which may be seen in his excellent Cours d'Archéologie (1828). In the following year (1829) appeared his Monu- ments Inédits, and if this great work is now less frequently referred to than in former years it is because the path which it indicated has been steadily followed out by others, and with more complete results than was possible in his day. A still valuable and interesting work is his Peintures Inédites (1836). So also his Peintures de Pompé (1844) remains a splendid monument of the enterprise with which he sought to render attractive the study of archeology. He was a frequent contributor to the Annali of the Roman Institute, the Journal des Savants, and the Académie des Inscriptions, and often engaged in disputes with his con- temporaries in matters on which time has for the most part proved him to have been right. At his death in 1854 Raoul Rochette was perpetual secretary of the Academy of Fine Arts and a corresponding member of most of the learned societies in Europe.

RAOUX, Jean, French painter, was born at Montpellier in 1677 and died at Paris in 1734. After the usual course of training he became a member of the Academy in 1717 as an historical painter. His reputation had been

previ- ously established by the credit of decorations executed during his three years in Italy on the palace of Giustiniani Solini at Venice, and by some. easel paintings, the Four Ages of Man (National Gallery), commissioned by the grand prior of Vendéme. To this latter class of subject Raoux devoted himself, nor did he even paint portraits except in character. The list of his works is a long series of sets of the Seasons, of the Hours, of the Elements, or of those scenes of amusement and gallantry in the representation of which he was immeasurably surpassed by his younger rival Watteau. After his stay in England (1720) he lived much in the Temple, where he decorated several rooms. His best pupils were Chevalier and Mont- didier. His works, of which there is a poor specimen in the Louvre, were much engraved by Poilly, Moyreau, Dupuis, «&e.

See Mariette, Abecedario Arch. del Art Francais ; Dussieux, Les Artistes Francais & 0 Etranger ; Soulié, Musée de Versailles; De Chennevitres, Peintres provinciaux.

273

RAPANUI, or Easter Isuann (Paascheylandt, Oster- insel, [le de Paques, &e.), the Warnu or Tart of Cook, an island in the eastern part of the South Pacific, lying in 27° 8' S. lat. and 109° 25' W. long., 1000 miles east of Pitcairn. It is rudely triangular in shape, with its hypo- tenuse 12 miles long running north-east and south-west, and its three angles marked by three volcanic peaks. The coasts have no natural harbours of any importance, and landing is difficult. There is no lack of fertile soil, and the climate is moist enough to make up for the absence of running water. At one time the island would appear to have been wooded, but it now presents only a few bushes (Edwardsia, Broussonetia, &c.), ferns, grasses, sedges, &c. The natives keep a few goats and a large stock of domestic fowls, and the French house which now owns a large part of the island feeds about 10,000 sheep.

It is doubtful whether Rapanui (7.¢., Great Rapa) was discovered by Davis in 1686, though it is sometimes marked Davis Island on our maps. Admiral Roggeveen reached it on 6th April 1722; in 1744 Captain Cook discovered it anew, and it has sinec been visited by La Pérouse (1776),

Kotzebue (1816), Beasby (1826), &c. At the time of Roggeveen's discovery the island probably contained from 1500 to 2000 inhabitants of Polynesian raee, who, according to their own tradition, came from Rapa Iti (Little Rapa) or Oparo, one of the Tibuai or Austral group.

The remarkable colossal statues which give a unique archexo- logical interest to Rapanui have been described under Potynesta, vol. xix. p. 428 ; figures of them will be found in Pinart's valuable paper in the Tour du Monde (1878, No. 927).

RAPE OIL. This important fatty oil, known also as "sweet oil," is obtained from seeds of cultivated varieties of the cruciferous genus Brassica, the parent form of the whole apparently being the wild navew, B. campestris (Lin.), the B. precor of De Candolle. From the same stock, it is generally assumed, have sprung the Swedish turnip and the common turnip; but the oil-yielding plants have developed in a special direction and are exclusively culti- vated for the oil they yield. Under the general name "rape oil" is included the produce of several plants having distinct and fairly constant characters, and one of these oils —COoLZzA (¢.v.)— is a very well-known commercial variety. In Germany, where the production of rape oil centres, three principal oil-seeds—colza (Kohlsaat), rape, and riibse: —are well recognized. Colza is the produce of the parent stock B. campestris and is the form principally cultivated in France and Germany. Rape seed, the variety produced by B. campestris, var. napus, and riibsen seed, yielded by 2. campestris, var. rapa, are extensively cultivated in the valley of the Danube and eastwards through Persia into India. These plants are principally distinguished from each other by the colour of their radicle leaves and the form of inflorescence, but also by the size and appear- ance of the small ovoid seeds. The seed of the colza is ruddy brown, rape is blue-black, and riibsen is almost black in colour. It has been found that 1000 seeds of colza weigh 29°3 grains, the same number of riibsen weighing 34:5 grains and of rape 71°75 grains. Each of these plants has summer and winter, or annual and biennial, varieties ; and as there are numerous intermediate forms in cultivation the varieties merge into each other.

The oil yielded by these seeds is, in physical and chemi- cal properties, practically the same, the range of fluctua- tions not being greater than would be found in the oil of any specific seed under similar varying conditions of pro- duction. Colza seed is, in general, the richest in oil, and the winter varieties of all the seeds are more productive than the summer varieties. In summer rape and riibsen the proportion of oil averages from 30 to 35 per cent., the winter seeds have from 35 to 40, and winter colza contains from 40 to 45 per cent. Newly pressed rape oil has a dark sherry colour with, at first, scarcely any perceptible smell; but after resting a short time the oil deposits an XX. —35

i

274

abundant mucilaginous slime, and by taking up oxygen it acquires a peculiar disagreeable odour and an acrid taste. Refined by the ordinary processes (see OrLs, vol. xvi. p. 743), the oil assumes a clear golden yellow colour. In specific gravity it ranges between 0°9112 and 0°9117 in the raw state, and from 0°9127 to 0°9136 when refined ; the solidifying point is from —2° to —10°C. Rape oil consists of a mixture of three simple fats or glycerides of fatty acids—the glyceride of oleic acid (olein), of stearic acid (stearin), and of brassic acid, the latter being a fat found hitherto only in oils from the Crucifere and from grape seeds. The olein of rape oil differs from ordinary olein in not yielding sebacylic acid on destructive distillation.

The principal uses of rape oil are for lubrication and lighting ; but since the introduction of mineral oils for both these purposes the importance of rape has considerably decreased. It is but little employed in soap-making, as it sapouifies with difficulty and yields only an indifferent product. In Germany it is very considerably used as a salad oil under the name of Schmalzél, being for that purpose frecd from its biting taste by being mixed with starch, heated till the starch is carbonized, and filtered after the oil has cooled. The offensive taste of rape oil may also be removed by treatment with a small proportion of sweet spirit of nitre (nitrous cther). In the East Indies rape oil and its equivalents, known under various names, are the most important of oils for native use. They are largely

consumed as food instead of ghi under the name of "mectah " or sweet oil, but for all other purposes the same sub- stance is known as " kurwah" or bitter oil. Most natives prefer it for the preparation of their curries and other hot dishes. Rape oil is the subject of extensive adulteration, principally with the cheaper hemp oil, rosin oil, and mineral oils. These sophistications can be most conveniently detected, first by taste and next by saponifica- tion, rosin oil and mineral oil remaining unsaponified, hemp oil giving a greenish soap, while rape oil yields a soap with a yellow tinge. With concentrated sulphuric acid, fuming nitric acid,

nitrous acid, and other reagents rape oil gives also characteristic colorations ; but these are modified according to the degree of purity of the oil itself. 'The presence of sulphur in rape and other cruciferous oils also affords a ready means for their identification. Lead plaster (emplastrwm lithargyrt) boiled in rape oil dissolves, and, sulphide of lead being formed, the oil becomes brown or black. Other lead compounds give the same black coloration from the formation of sulphide.

RAPHAEL (5×5, "God heals") first appears in litera- ture in the book of Tobit, where in human disguise and under the name of Azarias ("God helps") he accompanies Tobias in his adventurous journey and conquers the demon Asmodeus. He is said to be "one of the seven angels [archangels] who present the prayers of the saints and enter into the presence of the glory of the Holy One." In the book of Enoch Raphael is the angel of the spirits of man, and it is his business to gather the souls of the dead in the place where they are reserved till the day of judg- ment,—a conception which seems to imply a derivation from OND), "ghosts." In later Midrash Raphael appears as the angel commissioned to put down the evil spirits that vexed the sons of Noah with plagues and sicknesses after the flood, and he it was who taught men the use of simples and furnished materials for the 'Book of Noah," the earliest treatise on materia medica (Ronsch, Buch der Jubilden, p. 385 sq.).

RAPHAEL (1483-1520). RapHaet Sanzio was the son of Giovanni Santi, a painter of some repute in the ducal city of Urbino, situated among the Apennines on the borders of Tuscany and Umbria.! For many years both before and after the birth of Raphael the city of Urbino was one of the

chief centres in Italy of intellectual and artistic activity, thanks to its highly cultured rulers, Duke Federigo If. of Montefeltro and his son Guidobaldo, who succeeded him in 1482,2 the year before Raphael was born. The ducal

1 See Pungileoni, Elogio Storico di Raffaello, Urbino, 1829; for a valuable account of Raphael's family and his early life, see also Id., Vita di Giov. Santi, Urbino, 1822, and Campori, Notizie e Documenti per la Vita di Giov. Santi e di Raffaello, Modena, 1870. 2 See an interesting account of the court of Urbino by Delaborde, Etudes sur les B. Arts. . . en Italie, Paris, 1864, vol. i. p. 145.

residence of Urbino, built by Federigo II., even now one of the most magnificent palaces in Italy, was lavishly adorned with works of art of every class—frescos, panel- pictures, tapestries, tarsia-work, stucco-reliefs, and _sculp- ture—executed for the duke by some of the chief Italian artists of his time, and contained a collection of oil-paintings by the Van Eycks and other celebrated Flemish painters. Giovanni Santi was a welcome guest at this miniature but splendid court, and the rich treasures which the palace contained, familiar to Raphael from his earliest years, were a very important item among the various influences which formed and fostered his early love for art. It may not perhaps be purely fanciful to trace Raphael's boyish admiration of the oil-paintings of Jan Van Eyck and Justus of Ghent in the miniature-like care and delicacy with which some of his earliest works, such as the Knight's Dream, were executed.

Though Raphael lost his father at the age of eleven, yet to him he certainly owed a great part of that early training which enabled him to produce paintings of appa- rently mature beauty when he was scarcely twenty years of age. From his father, too, Raphael learned much of the religious sentiment and grace of motive which are specially conspicuous in his earlier paintings. The altar-piece painted by Giovanni for the church of Gradara, and a fresco, now preserved in the Santi house? at Urbino, are clearly prototypes of some of Raphael's most graceful paintings of the Madonna and Child. On the death of his father in 1494

young Raphael was left in the care of his stepmother (his own mother, Magia Ciarla, having died in 1491) and of his uncle, a priest called Bartolomeo.‘

First or Perugian Pertod.—In what year Raphael was apprenticed to Perugino and how the interval before that was spent are matters of doubt. Vasari’s statement that he was sent to Perugia during his father’s lifetime is cer- tainly a mistake. On the whole it appears most probable that he did not enter Perugino’s studio till the end of 1499, as during the four or five years before that Perugino was mostly absent from his native city.° As was the case with every one with whom Raphael came in contact, the Perugian master was fascinated by the charm of his manner and delighted by his precocious ability, and seems to have devoted special pains to his artistic education. The so-called Sketch Book of Raphael in the academy of Venice contains studies apparently from the cartoons of some of Perugino’s Sistine frescos, possibly done as practice in drawing.

This celebrated collection of thirty drawings, now framed or preserved in portfolios, bears signs of having once formed a bound book, and has been supposed to be a sketch-book filled by Raphacl during his Perugian apprenticeship. Many points, however, make this tempting hypothesis very improbable ; the fact that the draw- ings were not all originally on leaves of the same size, and the miscellaneous character of the sketches—varying much both in style and merit of execution—seem to show that it is a collection of studies by different hands, made and bound together by some

subsequent owner, aud may contain but very few drawings by Raphael himself. ®

Before long Raphael appears to have been admitted to take a share in the execution of paintings by his master ;

3 The house of Giovanni Santi, where Raphael was born, still exists at Urbino in the Contrada del Monte, and, being the property of the municipality, is now safe from destruction.

4 The administration of Giovanni Santi's will occasioned many painful family disputes and even appeals to law ; see Pungileoni, 47. Stor. di Raffaello.

5 Crowe and Cavalcaselle (Life of Raphael, vol. i., London, 1882) adopt the notion that Raphael went to Perugia in 1495, but the reasons with which they support this view appear insufficient.

6 See an excellent critical examination of the Sketch Book by Morelli, Italian Masters in German Galleries, translated by Mrs Richter, London, 1882; according to this able critic, only two draw- ings are by Raphael. See also Schmarsow, '¢Raphael's Skizzenbuch in Venedig," in Preussische Jahrbiicher, x\viti. pp. 122-149, Berlin, 1881, who takes the opposite view. Kahl, Das venezianische Skizzen- buch, Leipsic, 1882, follows Morelli's opinion.

and his touch can with more or less certainty be traced in some of Perugino's panels which were executed about 1502. Many of those who, like Messrs Crowe and Cavalcaselle, adopt the earlier date of Raphael's apprenticeship believe that his hand is visible in the execution of the beautiful series of frescos by Perugino in the Sala-del Cambio, dated 1500; as does also M. Miintz in his excellent Raphaél, sa Vie, Paris, 1881, in spite of his accepting the end of 1499 as the period of Raphael's first entering Perugino's studio, two statements almost impossible to reconcile. Considering that Raphael was barely seventeen when these frescos were painted, it is hardly reasonable to attribute the finest heads to his hand; nor did he at an early age master the difficulties of fresco buono. The Resurrection of Christ in the Vatican and the Diotalevi Madonna in the Berlin Museum are the principal pictures by Perugino in parts of which the touch of Raphael appears to be visible, though any real certainty on this point is unattainable.

About 1502 Raphael began to execute independent works; four pictures for churches at Citta di Castello were probably the earliest of these, and appear to have been painted in the years 1502-4. The first is a guild-banner painted on one side with the Trinity, and below, kneeling figures

of §. Sebastian and S. Rocco; on the reverse is a Creation of Eve, very like Perugino in style, but possessing more grace and breadth of treatment. These are still in the church of 8. Trinita.2 Also for Citta di Castello were the coronation of S. Niccolo Tolentino, now destroyed, though studies for it exist at Oxford and Lille (Gaz. d. B. Arts, 1878, i. p. 48), and the Crucifixion, now in the Dudley collection, painted for the church of S. Domenico, and signed RAPHAEL VRBINAS P. It is a panel 8 feet 6 inches high by 5 feet 5 inches wide, and contains noble figures of the Virgin, St John, St Jerome, and St Mary Magdalene. The fourth painting executed for this town, for the church of S. Francesco, is the exquisitely beautiful and highly finished Sposalizio, now in the Brera at Milan, signed and dated RAPHAEL VRBINAS MDI. This is closely copied both in com- position and detail from Perugino's painting of the same subject now at Caen, but is far superior to it in sweetness of expression and grace of attitude. The Temple of Jerusalem, a domed octagon with outer ambulatory in Perugino's picture, is reproduced with slight alterations by Raphael, and the attitudes and grouping of the figures are almost exactly the same in both. The Connestabile Madonna is one of Raphael's finest works, painted during his Perugian period ; it is a round panel; the motive, the Virgin reading a book of hours, is a favourite one with him, as it was with his father Giovanni. This lovely picture was lost to Perugia in 1871, when Count Connes- tabile sold it to the emperor of Russia for £13,200.

Second or Mlorentine Period, 1504-1508.—From 1504 to 1508 Raphael's life was very stirring and active. In the first half of 1504 he visited Urbino, where he painted two small panels for Duke Guidobaldo, the St George and the St Michael of the Louvre. His first and for him mo- mentous visit to Florence was made towards the end of 1504, when he presented himself with a warm letter of recommendation? from his patroness Joanna della Rovere

1 Parts of Perugino's beautiful triptych of the Madonna, with the archangels Raphael and Michael, painted for the Certosa near Pavia and now in the National Gallery of London, have been attributed to Raphael, but with little reason. Perugino's grand altar-piece at Florence of the Assumption of the Virgin shows that he was quite capable of painting

figures equal in beauty and delicacy to the St Michael of the Certosa triptych. See Frizzoni, LZ' Arte Italiana nella Gal. Nat. di Londra, Florence, 1880.

? For an account of processional banners painted by distinguished artists, see Mariotti, Lettere pittoriche Perugine, p. 76 sq.

3 This letter, which still exists, was sold in Paris in 1856, and is now in private hands.

to the gonfaloniere Pier Soderini. In Florence Raphael was kindly received, and, in spite of his youth (being barely of age), was welcomed as an equal by the majority of those great artists who at that time had raised Florence to a pitch of artistic celebrity far above all other cities of the world. At the time of his arrival the whole of artistic Italy was being excited to enthusiasm by the cartoons of the battle of Anghiari and the war with Pisa, on which Da Vinci and Michelangelo were then devoting their utmost energies (see LEoNARDO and MICHELANGELO). 'To describe the various influences under which Raphael came and the many sources from which he drank in stores of artistic knowledge would be to give a complete history of Florentine art in the 15th century. With astonishing rapidity he shook off the mannerisms of Perugino, and put one great artist after another under contribution for some special power of drawing, beauty of colour, or grace of composition in which each happened to excel. Nor was it from painters only that Raphael acquired his enlarged field of knowledge and rapidly growing powers. Sculptors like Ghiberti and Donatello must be numbered among those whose works helped to develop his new-born style. The Carmine frescos of Masaccio and Masolino taught this eager student long-remembered lessons of methods of dramatic expression.? Among his contemporaries it was especially Signorelli and Michelangelo who taught him the importance of precision of line and the necessity of a thorough knowledge of the human form.' From Da Vinci he learned subtleties of modelling and soft beauty of expression,' from Fra Bartolomeo nobility of composi- tion and skilful treatment of drapery in dignified folds.9 The friendship between Raphael and the last of these was very close and lasted for many years. The architect Baccio d'Agnolo was another of his special friends, at whose

house the young painter enjoyed social intercourse with a large circle of the chief artists of Florence, and probably learned from him much that was afterwards use- ful in his practice as an architect.

The transition in Raphael's style from his first or Perugian to his second or Florentine manner is well shown in the large picture of the Coronation of the Virgin painted for Maddalena degli Oddi, now in the Vatican, one of the most beautiful that he ever produced, and especially re- markable for its strong religious sentiment,—in this respect a great contrast to the paintings of his last or Roman manner which hang near it. The exquisite grace of the angel musicians and the beauty of the faces show signs of his short visit to Florence, while the general formality of the composition and certain details, such as the flutter- ing ribbands of the angels, recall peculiarities of Perugino and of Pinturicchio, with whose fine picture of the same subject hung close by it is interesting to compare it. Raphael's painting, though by far the more beautiful of the two, is yet inferior to that of Pinturicchio in the composition of the whole; an awkward horizontal line divides the upper group of the Coronation from that below, the apostles standing round the Virgin's tomb, filled with roses and lilies (Dante, Par., xxiii. 73), while the older Perugian has skilfully united the two groups by a less formal arrangement of the figures. The predella of this masterpiece of Raphael is also in the Vatican; some of

- *See Minghetti, "I Maestri di Raffaello," in the Nuova Antologia, 1st August 1881.*

® See his sketch of St George and the Dragén in the Uffizi, largely taken from Donatello's pedestal relief outside Or San Michele.

§ See his cartoon of St Paul preaching at Athens (South Kensington Museum).

7 See many of his life-studies, especially the one he sent to Albert Diirer, now at Vienna.

8 See the portrait of Maddalena Doni in the Pitti.

® See the Madonna del Baldacchino in the Pitti.

*its small paintings, especially that of the Annunciation to the Virgin, are interesting as showing his careful study of the rules of per- spective. Several preparatory sketches for this picture exist: fig. 1 shows a study, now at Lille, for the two principal figures, Christ setting the crown on Hismother's head (see fig. 2). It is drawn from two youths in the ordi- nary dress of the time; and it is in- teresting to compare it with his later studies from the nude, many of which *! are for figures which*

in the future picture

were to be draped,

made at a time when his developed style required a more careful rendering of the human form than was necessary for the simpler and more religious manner of Perugia. It was at Florence, as Vasari says, that Raphael began

G. 1.—Silver-point study for the main figures in the Coronation of the Virgin

(Vatican). In the Lille museum. Illus- trating Raphael's use of draped models during his early period.

Fig. 2.—The group for which fig. 1 is a study.

serious life studies, not only from nude models but also by making careful anatomical drawings from dissected corpses and from skeletons.

His first visit to Florence lasted only a few months; in 1505 he was again in Perugia painting his first fresco, the Trinity and Saints for the Camaldoli monks of San Severo, now a mere wreck from injury and restorations. The date MDV and the signature were added later, prob- ably in 1521. Part of this work was left incomplete by the painter, and the fresco was finished in 1521 (after his

: While at Florence he is said to have taught the science of per- spective to his friend Fra Bartolomeo, who certainly gave his young instructor valuable lessons on composition in return.

RAPHAEHESLS

death) by his old master Perugino.2 It was probably earlier than this that Raphael visited Siena and assisted Pinturicchio with sketches for his Piccolomini frescos.® The Madonna of §. Antonio was also finished in 1505, but was probably begun before the Florentine visit. A record of his visit to Siena exists in a sketch of the antique marble group of the Three Graces, then in the cathedral library, from which, not long afterwards, he painted the small panel of the same subject now in Lord Dudley's collection.*

In 1506 Raphael was again in Urbino, where he painted for the duke another picture of St George, which was sent to England asa present to Henry VII. The bearer of this and other gifts was Guidobaldo's ambassador, the accom- plished Baldassare CasTIGLIONE (q.v.), a friend of Raphael's, whose noble portrait of him is in the Louvre. At the

_ court of Duke Guidobaldo the painter's ideas appear to

have been led into a more secular direction, and to this stay in Urbino probably belong the Dudley Graces, the miniature Knight's Dream of Duty and Pleasure in the National Gallery (London),' and also the Apollo and

'Marsyas, sold in 1882 by Mr Morris Moore to the Louvre

for £10,000, a most lovely little panel, painted with almost Flemish minuteness, rich in colour, and graceful in arrangement.®

Towards the end of 1506 Raphael returned to Florence, and there (before 1508) produced a large number of his finest works, carefully finished, and for the most part wholly the work of his own hand. Several of these are signed and dated, but the date is frequently very doubtful, owing to his custom of using Roman numerals, introduced among the sham Arabic

embroidered on the borders of dresses, so that the I's after the V are not always dis- tinguishable from the straight lines of the ornament. The following is a list of some of ltis chief paintings of this period :—the Madonna del Gran Duca (Pitti); Madonna del Giardino, 1506 (Vienna); Holy Family with the Lamb, 1506 or 1507 (Madrid); the Ansidei Madonna, 1506 or 1507 (National Gallery); the Borghese Entombment, 1507 ; Lord Cowper's Madonna at Panshanger, 1508; La bella Giardiniera, 1508 (Louvre) ; the Eszterhazy Madonna, prob- ably the same year; as well as the Madonna del Cardellino (Uffizi), the Tempi Madonna (Munich), the Colonna Madonna (Berlin), the Bridgewater Madonna (Bridgewater House), and the Orleans Madonna (Duc d'Aumale's col- lection). The Ansidei Madonna was bought in 1884 for the National Gallery from the duke of Marlborough for. £70,000, more than three times the highest price ever before given for a picture." It was painted for the Ansidei

2 The fresco of the Last Supper, dated 1505, in the refectory of S. Onofrio at Florence is uot now claimed as a work of Raphael's, in spite of a signature partly introduced by the restorer.

3 Raphael probably had no hand in the actual execution of the paintings; see Schmarsow, Raphael und Pinturicchio in Siena, Stutt- gart, 1880, and Milanesi, in his edition of Vasari, iii. p. 515 sg., appendix to life of Pinturicchio.

4 This fine altar-piece, with many large figures, is now the property of the heirs of the duke of Ripalta, and is stored in the basement of the National Gallery, London.

5 This missal-like painting is about 7 inches square ; it was bought in 1847 for 1000 guineas. The National Gallery also possesses its cartoon, in brown ink, pricked for transference.

6 In spite of some adverse opinions, frequently expressed with ex treme virulence, the genuineness of this little gem can hardly be doubted by any one who carefully studies it without bias. Sketches for it at Venice and in the Uffizi also appear to bear the impress of Raphael's manner. See Delaborde, Etudes sur les B. Arts… en Italie, i. p. 236; Gruyer, Raphaél et

l' Antiquité, ii. p. 421; Hitelberger, Rafael's Apollo und Marsyas, Vienna, 1860; Batté, Le Raphaél de M. Moore, Paris, 1859 ; and also various pamphlets on it by its former owner, Mr Morris Moore.

7 It is engraved at p. 538, vol. ii., of Dohme, Kunst und Kiinstler des Mitielalters, Leipsic, 1878, a work which has many good reproductions of Raphael's paintings and sketches.

family of Perugia as an altar-piece in the church of 8. 'Fiorenzo, and is a work of the highest beauty in colour, well preserved, and very large in scale. The Virgin with veiled head is seated on a throne, supporting the Infant with one hand and holding a book in the other. Below stands 8. Niccolo da Tolentino, for whose altar it was painted; he holds a book and a crozier, and is clad in jewelled mitre and green cope, under which appear the alb and cassock. On the other side is the Baptist, in red mantle and camel's-hair tunic, holding a crystal cross. The rich jewellery in this picture is painted with Flemish- like minuteness. On the border of the Virgin's robe is a date, formerly read as MDV by Passavant and others; it really is MDVI or MDVIL If the later date is the true one, the picture was probably begun a year or two before. A favourite method of grouping his Holy Families is that seen in the Madonna del Cardellino and the Bella Giar- diniera, in which the main lines form a pyramid. This arrangement is also used in the Madonna del Giardino and in the larger group, including St Joseph and St Elizabeth, known as the Canigiani Holy Family, now at Munich, one of the least graceful of all Raphael's compositions. The Entombment of Christ, now in the Palazzo Borghese in Rome, was painted during a visit to Perugia in 1507 for Lady Atalanta Baglioni, in memory of the death of her brave and handsome but treacherous son Grifonetto, who was killed in 1500 by his enemies the Oddi party.1 The many studies and preliminary sketches? for this import- ant picture which exist in various collections show that it cost Raphael an unusual amount of thought and labour in its composition, and yet it is quite one of his least suc- cessful paintings, especially in colour. It is, however, much injured by scraping and repainting, and appears not to be wholly by his hand. The Madonna del Baldacchino, one of the finest

compositions of the Florentine period, owing much to Fra Bartolomeo, is also unsatisfactory in execution ; being left unfinished by Raphael, it was com- pleted by Ridolfo Ghirlandajo, by whom the ungraceful angels of the upper part and the canapy were wholly exe- cuted, and even designed. It was painted for the Dei family as an altar-piece for their chapel in 8. Spirito, Florence. The St Catherine of the National Gallery was probably painted in 1507; its cartoon, pricked for transference, isin the Louvre. In colouring it much resembles parts of the Borghese Entombment, being quiet and grey in tone. 'fo the Florentine period belong some of his finest portraits, .and it is especially in these that Da Vinci's influence appears. The portraits of Angelo Doni and his wife Maddalena (Pitti) are vivid and carefully executed paint- ings, and the unknown lady with hard features (now in the Uffizi) is a masterpiece of noble realism and conscien- tious finish. The Czartoriski portrait, a graceful effemi- nate-looking youth with long hair and tapering hands, now moved to Cracow, is probably a work of this period ; though worthy to rank with Raphael's finest portraits, its authenticity has been doubted. Very similar in style is the Herrenhausen portrait, once attributed to Giovanni Bellini, but an undoubted work of Raphael, in his second manner ; it also represents a young man with long hair, close shaven chin, a wide cloth hat and black dress, painted in half length. The so-called Portrait of Raphael by him- self at Hampton Court is a very beautiful work, glowing with hight and colour, which may possibly be a genuine picture of about 1506. It- represents a pleasant-looking

1 See Symonds, Sketches in Italy, the chapter on Perugia, mainly taken from the contemporary chronicle of Matarazzo.

2 These show that Raphael at first intended to paint a Deposition from the Cross, and afterwards altered his scheme into the Entomb- ment; an excess. of study and elaboration partly account for the shortcomings of this picture.

youth with turned-up nose, not bearing the remotest resemblance to Raphael, except the long hair and black cap common to nearly all the portraits of this time? A fine but much-restored portrait of Raphael by

himself, painted at Florence, exists in the Uffizi; it represents him at a very early age, and was probably painted during the early part of his stay in Florence.

Third or Roman Period, 1508-20.—In 1508 Raphael was painting several important pictures in Florence; in September of that year we find him settled in Rome, from a letter addressed in the warmest terms of affectionate admiration to Francia, to whom he sent a sketch for his Adoration of the Shepherds, and promised to send his own portrait in return for that which Francia had given him.' Raphael was invited to Rome by his fellow-citizen (not relation, as Vasari says) Bramante, who was then occupied in the erection of the new church of St Peter's, the founda- tion-stone of which had been laid by Julius II. on 18th April 1506. At this time the love of the popes for art had already attracted to Rome a number of the chief artists of Tuscany, Umbria, and North Italy, among whom were Michelangelo, Signorelli, Perugino, Pinturicchio, Lorenzo Lotto, Peruzzi, Sodoma, and many others, and it was among this brilliant assembly that Raphael, almost at once, took a leading positions Thanks to Bramante's friendly intervention, Julius II. (Della Rovere) soon became Raphael's most zealous patron and friend, as did also the rich bankers Agostino Chigi (the Rothschild of his time) and Bindo Altoviti, whose portrait, at the age of twenty, now at Munich, is one of the most beautiful that Raphael ever produced.

A series of rooms in the Vatican, over the Appartamenti Borgia, were already decorated with frescos by Bonfigli, Perugino, Piero della Francesca, Andrea del Castagno, Signorelli, and Sodoma; but so rapidly had the taste of the time changed that Julius II. decided to sweep them

COURT OF THE SISTINE

Fic. 3.—Plan showing position of Raphael's frescos in the stanze.

A. Stanza della Segnatura (1509-11): 1, Disputa; 2, School of Athens; 8, Justinian giving his code to Trebonian ; 4, Gregory IX. giving decretals to a jurist ; 5 (over the window), Three Virtues ; 6 (over the other window), Apollo and a group of poets on Mount Parnassus; vault with medallions of Poetry, Theology, Science, and Justice, and other paintings. B. Stanza

d'Eliodoro (1511-14): 7, Expulsion of Heliodorus from the Temple; 8, Mass of Bolsena 3 9, St Peter freed from prison; 10, Attila repulsed by Leo I. ; vault with scenes from Old Testament, by pupils. C. Stanza dell' Incendio (1517), nearly all painted by pupils: 11, Burning of the Borgo ; 12, Victory of Leo IV. over the Saracens at Ostia; 13, Coronation of Charlemagne by Leo III. in St Peter's ; 14, Oath of Leo III. before Charlemagne. D. Sala di Costantino, painted by pupils (1520-24): 15 and 16, oil-paintings of Comitas and Justitia attributed to Raphael; 17, 17, great fresco of the Defeat of Maxentius. KE EH. Part of Raphael's loggia, by his pupils. F. Chapel of Nicholas V., painted by Fra Angelico. G, Cortile of Bramante.

all away and re-cover the walls with paintings in the more developed but less truly decorative style of Raphael. It was not without regret that Raphael saw the destruction of this noble series of frescos. One vault, that of the

3 To judge of the authorship of a portrait from internal evidence is especially difficult, as in so many cases the strong individuality of the person represented obscures that of the painter.

4 Malvasia, Felsina pittrice, Bologna, 1678, was the first to publish this letter ; sce also Miintz, Raphaél, sa Vie, &c., p. 315, Paris, 1881. Minghetti (Wuova

5 Miintz, '" Michel-Ange et Raphaél 4 la cour de Rome," Gaz. des B. Arts, March and April 1882, and Les Arts a la cour des Papes, vol. lii., Paris, 1884.

Stanza dell' Incendio, painted by his master Perugino, he saved from obliteration ; it still exists, well preserved, a most skilful piece of decorative work ; and he also set his pupils to copy a number of portrait-heads in the frescos of Piero della Francesca before they were destroyed.} Fig. 3 shows the positions of Raphael's frescos in the stanze, which, both from their size and method of lighting, are very unsuited for the reception

of these large pictures. The two most important rooms (A and B) are small, and have an awkward cross light from opposite windows."

Stanza della Segnatura (papal signature room), painted in 1509-11 (A on fig. 3). The first painting executed by Raphael in the stanze was the so-called Disputa, finished in 1509. It is very unlike the later ones in style, showing the commencement of transition from his Florentine to his "Roman manner"; as a decorative work it is very superior to the other frescos ; the figures are much smaller in scale, as was suited to the very moderate size of the room, and the whole is arranged mainly on one plane, without those strong effects of perspective which are so unsuited to the decorative treat- ment of a wall-surface. In its religious sentiment too it far excels any of the later stanze paintings, retaining much of the sacred charac- ter of earlier Florentine and Umbrian art. As a scheme of decoration it appears to have been suggested by some of the early apsidal mosaics. Fig. 4 shows the disposition of its main masses, which seem to indicate the curved recess of an apse. Gold is largely used, with much richness of effect, while the later purely pictorial frescos have little or none. The subject of this magnificent paint- ing is the hierarchy of the church on earth and its glory in heaven. The angels in the upper tier and the nude cherubs who carry the books of the Gospels are among the most beautiful figures that Raphael ever painted.*

The painting on the vault of this room is the next in date, and shows further transition towards the "Roman manner." In his treatment of the whole Raphael has, with much advantage, been partly guided by the painting of Perugino's vault in the next room (C). Though not without faults, it is a very skilful piece of de- coration ; the pictures are kept subordinate to the lines of the vault, and their small scale adds greatly to the apparent size of the whole. A great part of the ground is gilt, marked with mosaic- like squares, a conimon practice with decorative painters,— not intended to deceive the eye, but simply to give a softer texture to the gilt surface by breaking up its otherwise monotonous glare. The principal medallions in each cell of this quadripartite vault are very graceful female figures, representing Theology, Science, Justice, and Poetry. Smaller subjects, some almost miniature-like in scale, are arranged in the intermediate spaces, and each has some special meaning in reference to

the medallion it adjoins ; some of these are painted in warm monochrome to suggest bas-reliefs. The fine painting of the Flaying of Marsyas is interesting as show- ing Raphael's study of antique sculpture: the figure of Marsyas is a copy of a Roman statue, of which several replicas exist. The very beautiful little picture of the Temptation of Eve recalls Albert Diirer's treatment of that subject, though only vaguely. Much mutual admiration existed between Raphael and Diirer: in 1515 Raphael sent the German artist a most masterly life study of two nude male figures (now at Vienna); on it is written in Albert Diirer's beautiful hand the date and a record of its being a gift from Raphael. It is executed in red chalk, and was a study for two figures in the Battle of Ostia (see below).

On the wall opposite the Disputa is the so-called School of Athens. In this and the succeeding frescos all notion of decora- tive treatment is thrown aside, and Raphael has simply painted a magnificent series of paintings, treated as easel pictures might have been, with but little reference to their architectural surround- ings. The subject of this noble fresco, in contrast to that opposite,*

1 How fine these portrait-heads probably were may be guessed from Piero's magnificent frescos at Arezzo, in the retro-choir of 8. Francesco.

2 See Brunn, Die Composition der Wandgemdlde Raphaels im Vatican, Berlin, and Gruyer, Les Fresques de Raphaél au Vatican, Paris, 1859.

3 It need hardly be said that the name Disputa is a misnomer ; there could be no dispute among the saints and doctors of the church about so well estab- lished a dogmia as the real presence: the monstrance with the Host below and the figure of Christ above indicate His double presence both on earth and in

heaven. Dr Braun, Springer, and Hagen have published monographs in Ger- ian on this painting.

4 See Trendelenburg, Ueber Rafael's Schule von Athen, Berlin, 1843, and Richter (same title), Heidelberg, 1882; the title "School of Athens" is com- paratively modern,

_ 5 He has shown great skill in the way in which he has fitted his end frescos into the awkward spaces cut into by the windows, but they are none the less treated in a purely pictorial manner.

Fic. 4.— Diagram to show main lines of the Disputa, suggest- ing an apse, with mosaic de- coration.

RAPHAEL

is Earthly Knowledge, represented by an assembly of those great philosophers, poets, and men of science of ancient Greece who were admitted by the church to have been not wholly without inspira- tion from Heaven, and by their labours to have prepared the way for the clearer light of Christianity. The central figures are Plato and Aristotle, while below and on each side are groups arranged with the most consummate skill, including the whole '" filosofica famiglia" of Dante (Jnfer., iv. 133-144), and a number of other leaders of thought, selected in a way that shows no slight acquaint- ance with the history of philosophy and science among the ancient Greeks. In this selection we may fairly suppose that Raphael was aided by Bembo, Ariosto,® Castiglione, Bibbiena, or others of the crowd of scholars who at this time thronged the papal court. Many interesting portraits are introduced—Bramante as the aged Archimedes, stooping over a geometrical diagram ; a beautiful fair- haired youth on the left is Francesco Maria della Rovere, duke of Urbino; and on the extreme right figures of Raphael himself and Perugino are introduced (see fig. 5, below). The stately building in which these groups are arranged is taken with modifications from Bramante's first design for St Peter's.

Over the window (No. 6 on fig. 3) isa group of poets and musicians on Mount Parnassus, round a central figure of Apollo ; it contains many heads of great beauty and fine portraits of Dante and Petrarch. The former, as a theologian, appears also in the Disputa. Over the opposite window (No. 5) are graceful figures of the three chief Virtues, and at one side (No. 4) Gregory IX. (a portrait of Julius II.) presenting his volume of decretals to a jurist ; beside him is a splendid portrait of Cardinal de' Medici (afterwards Leo X.) be- fore his face was spoiled by getting too stont. This painting shows the influence of Mclozzo da Forli.? On the

other side Justinian presents his code to Trebonianus (No. 8); this is inferior in exe- cution and appears to have been chiefly painted by pupils.

' The next room (B), called La Stanza @'Eliodoro, was painted in 1511-14 ;8 it is so called from the fresco (No. 7 in fig. 3) represent- ing the expulsion of Heliodorus from the Temple (2 Mace. iii.), an allusion to the struggles between Louis XII. of France and Julius II. The whole spirit of the subjects in this room is less broad and tolerant than in the first: no pagan ideas are admitted, and its chief motive is the glorification of the pontificate, with insistence on the temporal power. The main incident of this picture is the least successful part of it: the angel visitant on the horse is want- ing in dignity, and the animal is poorly drawn, as is also the case with the horses of Attila's army in the fresco opposite. The group of women and children on the left is, however, very beautiful, an

the figures of Julius II. and his attendants are most nobly designed and painted with great vigour. The tall standing figure of Mare Antonio Raimondi, as one of the pope's bearers, is a marvellous piece of portrait painting, as is also the next figure who bears his name on a scroll—IO . PETRO. DE. FOLIARIIS . CREMONEN. Behind, Giulio Romano is represented as another papal attendant. This picture was completed in 1512. Over the window (No. 8) is the scene of the Miracle at Bolsena of 1264, when the real presence was proved to a doubting priest by the appearance of blood-stains on the Corporal (see Orviero). Julius II. is introduced kneeling behind the altar; and the lower spaces on each side of the windows are filled with two groups, that on the left with women, that on the right with officers of the papal guard. The last group is one of the most masterly of all throughout the stanze: each face, a careful portrait, is a marvel of expression and power, and the technical skill with which the whole is painted to the utmost degree of finish, almost. without any tempera touches, is most wonderful. The next fresco in date (No. 10) is that of the Repul- sion of Attila from the walls of Rome by Leo I., miraculously aided by the apparitions of St Peter and St Paul; it contains another allusion to the papal quarrels with France. It was begun in the lifetime of Julius II., but was only half finished at the time of his death in 1513; thus it happens that the portrait of his successor, the Medici pope Leo X., appears twice over, first as a cardinal riding behind the pope,

painted before the death of Julius II., and again in the character of 8. Leo, instead of the portrait of Julius which Raphael was about to paint.¥ Attila with his savage-looking army is not the most successful part of the fresco: the horses are very wooden in appearance, and the tight-fitting scale armour, put on in some impossible way without any joints, gives a very unreal and theatrical look to the picture. Part is the work of pupils. In 1514 he painted the Deliverance of St Peter from Prison, with

6 Anosto visited Rome twice about this time, as ambassador from the duke of Ferrara to Julius II.,—the first time in 1509.

7 Compare his fresco of Sixtus IV., now in the picture-gallery of the Vatican.

8 The vault of this room is painted with scenes from the Old Testament on a harsh blue ground, much restored; they are probably the work of Giulio Romano, and in a decorative way are very unsuccessful,—a striking contrast to the beautiful vaults of Perugino and Raphael in rooms Cand A. The deep blue grounds so much used by Raphael's school are very liable to injury from damp, and in most cases have been coarsely restored. Those in the Villa Madama are untouched, and in parts the damp has changed the ultra- marine into emerald green.

9 A pen sketch in the Louvre by Raphael shows Julius II. in the place afterwards occupied by Leo X. ; another difference in this sketch is that the pope is borne in a chair, not on horseback as in the fresco.

a further political allusion (No. 9). It is very skilfully arranged to fit in the awkward space round the window, and is remarkable for an attempt, not much suited for fresco-painting, to combine and contrast the three different qualities of light coming from the moon, the glory round the angel, and the torches of the sentinels.

For rooin C Raphael designed and partly painted the Incendio del Borgo (No. 11), a fire in the Borgo or Leonine City, which was miraculously stopped by Leo IV. appearing and making the sign of the cross at a

window in the Vatican. In the background is shown the fagade of the old basilica of St Peter, not yet destroyed when this fresco was painted. Oue group on the left, in the fore- ground, is remarkable for its vigour and powerful drawing; the motive is taken from the burning of Troy; a fine nude figure of Afneas issues from the burning houses bearing on his back the old Anchises and leading the boy Ascanius by the hand. Some of the female figures are designed with much grace and dramatic power. Many studies for this picture exist. This is the last of the stanze frescos on which Raphael himself worked. Others designed by him and painted by Giulio Romano, Gianfrancesco Penni, and other pupils were the Battle of Ostia (No. 12), a very nobly composed picture, and the Oath of Leo III. before Charlemagne (No. 14). The other great picture in this room (No. 18), the Coronation of Charlemagne (a portrait of Francis I. of France), is so very inferior in composition that it is difficult to believe that Raphael even made a sketeh for it. The enormous fresco of the Defeat of Maxentius by Constantine (room D, No. 17) was painted by Giulio Romano, soon after Raphael's death, from a sketch by the latter ; it is even more harsh and disagreeable in colour than most of Giulio Romano's early frescos.1_ Among the other very inferior frescos in this great hall are two female figures (Nos. 15 and 16) representing Comitas and Justitia, painted on the wall in oil eolours, very harmonious and rich in tone; they are usually, though wrongly, attributed to Raphael himself.

made many studies, both nude and draped, for single figures and

i by), F BBA

Fic. 5.—Heads of Raphael and Perugino from the School of Athens, showing incised lines and " fresco edges."

groups, the painter made a small drawing of the whole composi- tion, which was enlarged by his pupils with the help of numbered squares, drawn all over it, to the full size required, on paper or canvas. Holes were then pricked along the outlines of the cartoon, and the design pounced through on to an undercoat of dry stucco on the wall, with pounded charcoal and a stiff brush. Over this,

1 See Montagnani, Sala di Costantino, Rome, 1834. Though he was hever a good colourist, the great frescos by Giulio Romano in the Palazzo del Té, Mantua, show some improvement as compared with his Roman work.

2 These three stages were usually distinguished as study, sketch, and cartoon.

early in the morning, a patch of wet stucco was laid, about enough to serve for the day's painting ; this of course obliterated the out- line on the wall, and the part covered by the patch was again sketched in by frechand, with a point on the wet stuceo, so as to be a guide for the outline traced with the brush and the subsequent painting. A line impressed on the wet stucco was easily smoothed out, but a touch of the brush full of pigment sank deeply into the moist stucco, and could not easily be efiaced. It will thus be seen that in fresco painting the only use of pouncing the whole design on to the wall was to keep the general positions of the figures right, and was no guide as to the drawing of each separate part. Fig. 5 shows the portrait-heads of himself and Perugino, at the extreme left of the School of Athens; on this are visible many of the impressed sketch-lines, and also part of the "fresco edge" of the ee on which this part is painted. The heads in this figure are ess than one day's work. It will be seen that there is no attempt at any accuracy of drawing in the impressed lines. Raphael, especi- ally in his later frescos, worked with wonderful rapidity: three life-sized busts, or half a full-length figure, more than life-size, was a not unusual day's work. In some of the frescos the edges of each day's patch of stucco can easily be traced, especially in the Incendio del Borgo, which has a strong side light. In the Disputa much use was made of tempera in the final touches, but less was used in the subsequent frescos, owing to his increasing mastery of the difficulties of the process.

The paintings in the stanze were only a small part of Raphael's work between 1509 and 1513. To this period belong the Madonna of Foligno (Vatican), painted in 1511 for Sigismondo Conti; it is one of his most beautiful compositions, full of the utmost grace and sweetness of expression, and appears to be wholly the work of his hand. It has suffered much from repainting. Of about the same date are the gem-like Garvagh

Madonna (National Gallery, bought for £9000; once in the possession of the Aldo- brandini family), the Diademed Virgin of the Louvre, and the Madonna del Pesce at Madrid. The last is a very

noble picture, but the design is more pleasing than the _ colour, which, like other paintings of Raphael's at Madrid,

suggests the inferior touch of a pupil; it was executed in 1513 for 8. Domenico in Naples. In addition to other easel pictures a number of his finest portraits belong to this period—that of Julius II. (Uffizi), of which a good replica or contemporary copy exists in the National Gallery, the so-called Fornarina in the Palazzo Barberini, the Bal- dassare Castiglione of the Louvre, and the unfinished por- trait of Federigo Gonzaga of Mantua.

When Giovanni de' Medici, at the age of thirty-eight, became pope as Leo X., a period of the most glowing splendour and reckless magnificence succeeded the sterner rule of Julius II. Agostino Chigi, the Sienese financier, was the chief of those whose lavish expenditure contributed to enrich Rome with countless works of art. For him Raphael painted, in 1513-14, the very beautiful fresco of the Triumph of Galatea in his new palace by the Tiber bank, the Villa Farnesina, and also made a large series of magnificent designs from Apuleius's romance of Cupid and Psyche, which were carried out by a number of his pupils. These cover the vault and lunettes of a large loggia (now closed in for protection) ; in colouring they are mostly harsh and gaudy,° as is usually the case with the works of his pupils, a great contrast to the fresco of the Galatea, the greater part of which is certainly the master's own work.® For the same patron he painted

3 A very fine ancient copy of this portrait is in the Pitti Palace ; certain peculiarities in its execution show it to be by some Venetian painter, as was pointed out to the present writer by Mr Fairfax Murray.

4 Chiefly by Giulio Romano, Gianfrancesco Penni, and Giovanni da Udine ; much injury has been done to these frescos by repainting, especially in the coarse blue of the ground.

5 These and other frescos by his pupils are much disfigured by the disagreeable hot tone of the flesh, very unlike the pearly tone of the flesh of Galatea.

§ Dorigny, Psychis et Amoris fabula a Raphaele, &e., Rome, 1698 ; and Gruner, Fresco Decorations in Italy, London, 1854, pls. 16-18. The group of the Triton and Nymph on the left of the composition was probably executed by Giulio Romano,

(also in 1513) his celebrated Sibyls in S. Maria della Pace, —figures of exquisite grace, arranged with perfect skill in an awkward space. It is not without reason that Vasari gives these the highest position among his fresco- paintings.! Agostino Chigi also employed Raphael to build for him a private chapel in 8. Maria del Popolo, and to make a series of cartoons to be executed in mosaic on the inner dome.? The central medallion has a figure of

God among clouds and angel boys, such as Raphael drew with unrivalled grace (fig. 6), and around are the eight

£

Fig. 6.—Mosaic of God creating the stars, from the Chigi chapel, in.

centre of dome, designed by Raphael. planets, each with its pagan deity and directing angel.' He has not hampered himself by any of the usual rules which should apply to the designing of mosaic; they are simply treated as pictures, with almost deceptive effects of perspective. The execution of these brilliant mosaics was carried out by the Venetian Luigi della Pace, whose signature is introduced on the torch of Cupid in the panel representing the star Venus (Ludovico della [~ , y Pace Veneziano fecit, 1516). These mosaics DP are still as perfect and brilliant as if they V were the work of yesterday. Probably in F 1516 the early years of Leo X.'s reign were painted the Madonna della Seggiola (Pitti), the 8. Cecilia at Bologna (not _com- pleted till 1516), the miniature Vision of Ezekiel (Pitti), and three important pictures at Madrid. The latest of these, known

as Lo Spasimo, from the church at Palermo, for which it was painted, is one of Raphael's finest com- positions, representing Christ bearing His Cross. It bears signs of Giulio Romano's hand in its heavy colouring with unpleasant purple tones. The Madonna called Della Perla has much changed from the darkening of the pigments ; in design it recalls Leonardo da Vinci.t The small Madonna della Rosa is the most perfect in colour of all the master's pictures in the Madrid Gallery, and is usually rather undervalued ; it is a most graceful little picture. The portrait of Leo X. with Cardinals de' Rossi and de' Medici, in the Pitti, is one of his finest portrait-pictures, especially as regards the figure of the pope. Little is

1 Thanks to Michelangelo's generous intervention, Raphael was paid the large sum for that time of 900 gold ducats for this fresco.

2 Gruner, Mosaici in S. Maria del Popolo, Rome, 1839.

3 Tn accordance with Dante's scheme in the Paradiso.

4 La Perla, "the pearl" of the Spanish royal collection, was origin- ally painted for Bishop Louis of Canossa ; it was sold by Cromwell with the greater part of Charles I.'s collection at Hampton Court. The com- position, though not the execution, of this picture belongs to Raphael's early years in Rome ; it is very remarkable for its delicacy of touch and high finish. ;

5 The magnificent portrait-heads of the Venetian scholars Navagero and Beazzano, now in the Doria Gallery in Rome, are worthy of Raphael

at his best, and have for long been attributed to him. There are good contemporary copies at Madrid,

known about the Madonna di S. Sisto, the glory of the Dresden Gallery; no studies or sketches for it exist. In style it much resembles the Madonna di Foligno; it is less injured by restoration than the latter.

Among the latest works of Raphael are the large St Michael and the Devil, in the Louvre, signed " Raphael Urbinas pingebat, MDxviml.," and the very beautiful por- trait of the Violin-player, in the Sciarra-Colonna

Palace in Rome, also dated 1518; this last bears much resemblance to the painter himself. The British Museum possesses one of Raphael's finest portraits, though only a chalk drawing, that of his friend the painter Timoteo della Vite, a masterpiece of expression and vigour; it is executed in black and red, and is but little inferior in chromatic effect to an oil-painting; it is life-size, and is executed with wonderful skill and evident keen interest in the subject.

The tapestry cartoons, seven of which are in the South Kensington Museum, were painted by pupils from Raphael's designs. They are part of a set of ten, with scenes from the Acts of the Apostles, intended, when copied in tapestry, to adorn the lower part of the walls of the Sistine chapel. The tapestries themselves, worked at Brussels, are now, after many vicissitudes, hung in a gallery in the Vatican ; the set is complete, thus preserving the design of the three lost cartoons. The existing seven, after being cut up into strips for use on the looms, were bought by Rubens for Charles 1.6 The tapestry copies are executed with wonder- ful skill, in spite of Raphael's having treated the subjects in a purely pictorial way, with little regard to the exi- gencies of textile work. The designs are reversed, and the colours far more brilliant than those of the cartoons, much gold and silver being introduced. The noble figure of Christ in the Delivery of the Keys to St Peter is in the tapestry much disfigured by the addition of a number oi large gold stars all over the drapery, which spoil the simple dignity of the folds. The rich framework round each pic- ture, designed by Raphael's pupils, probably by Penni and Giovanni da Udine, exists in the tapestries and adds greatly to their decorative effect. The cartoons were executed in 1515 and 1516, and the finished tapestries were first exhi- bited in their place in the Sistine chapel on 26th December 1519,—a very short time for the weaving of such large and elaborate pictures. The three of which the cartoons are lost represent the Martyrdom of St Stephen, the Con- version of St Paul, and St Paul in Prison at Philippi. Probably no pictures are better known or have been more often engraved and copied than these seven cartoons.'

The Transfiguration.-—In 1519 Cardinal Giuliano de' Medici (afterwards Clement VII.), as bishop of Narbonne, ordered two altar-pieces for his cathedral,—the one by Raphael, the other by Raphael's

Venetian rival Sebastiano del Piombo (see SzBasTIANO). That by the latter painter is the noble Resurrection of Lazarus, now in the National Gallery, in the drawing of which the Venetian received important aid from Michelangelo. Several studies for Raphael's picture exist, showing that he at first intended to paint a Resurrection of Christ as a pendant to Sebas- tiano's subject, but soon altered his scheme into the Trans- figuration. The eight or nine existing studies are scattered through the Oxford, Lille, Windsor, and some private

6 Fortunately they were not sold with the bulk of Charles's collec- tion, and remained at Hampton Court till a few yearsago. See Koch, Rafael's Tapeten im Vatican, Vienna, 1878, and Miintz, Hist. de la tapisserie Italienne, Paris, 1880.

7 The name "arazzi" given by Italians to these tapestries is derived from Arras, where they were erroneously thought to have been woven ; they were made at Brussels. It is much to be regretted that visitors to the Vatican are no longer allowed to see these priceless examples of textile work.

8 See Morgenstern, Ueber Rafael's Verklirung, Leipsic, 1822, and Justi, Die Verklérung Christi, Leipsic, 1870.

collections. A great part of the lower group was un- finished at the time of the painter's sudden death in 1520, and a good deal of the heavy colouring of Giulio Romano is visible in it. On the death of Raphael the picture be- came too precious to send out of Rome, and Cardinal de' Medici contented himself with sending the Resurrection of Lazarus to Narbonne. The Transfiguration was bequeathed by him to the monks of 8. Pietro in Montorio, in whose church it remained till it was stolen by Napoleon I. It

now hangs in the Vatican Gallery.

Architectural Work.1—Though he designed but few buildings, Raphael's great repute even in this branch of art is shown by the fact that Bramante, before his death in March 1514, specially requested that Raphael should be made his successor as chief archi- tect of St Peter's. To this most important post he was appointed by a brief of Leo X., dated 1st August 1514. The progress of St Peter's was, however, too slow for him to leave much mark on its design. Another work of Bramante's, completed by Raphael, was the graceful Cortile di S. Damaso in the Vatican, including the loggie, which were decorated with stucco-reliefs and paintings of sacred subjects by his pupils under his own supervision, but only very partially from his designs.? The Palazzo dell' Aquila, built for Giovanni Battista Branconio, and destroyed in the 17th century during the extension of St Peter's, was one of Raphael's chief works as an architect. He also designed the little cross church, domed at the intersection like a miniature St Peter's, called S. Eligio degli Orefici, which still exists near the Tiber, almost opposite the Farnesina gardens, a work of but little merit. According to M. Geymniiiller, whose valuable work, Raffaello come Architetto, Milan, 1883, has done so much to increase our knowledge of this subject, the Villa Farnesina of Agostino Chigi, usually attributed to Peruzzi, was, as well as its palace-like stables, designed by Raphael; but internal evidence makes this very difficult to believe. It has too much of the delicate and refined character of the 15th century for Raphael, whose taste seems to have been strongly inclined to the more developed classic style, of which Palladio afterwards became the chief exponent. The Palazzo Vidoni, near S. Andrea della Valle, also in Rome, is usually attributed to Raphael, but an original sketch for this in Pernzzi's own hand has recently been identified among the collection of drawings at Siena; this, how- ever, is not a certain proof that the design was not Raphael's. M. Geymiiller has, however, shown that the Villa Madama, on the slopes of Monte Mario above Rome, was really designed by him, though its actual carrying out, and the unrivalled stucco-reliefs which make its interior one of the most magnificent palaces in the world, are due to Ginlio Romano and Giovanni da Udine, as men- tioned in Vasari's life of the latter. The original design for this villa made by Raphael himself has been discovered by M. Gey- miiller. Another architectural work was the little Chigi chapel in S. Maria del Popolo, built in 1516, for the dome of which the above-mentioned mosaics were

designed (see fig. 6). At the time of his death he was preparing to build himself a handsome palace near the church of S. Eligio ; the deed for the purchase of its site was signed by him only a few days before his last short illness. Though not completed till 1530, the Palazzo Pandolfini at Florence was also designed by him ; it is a dull scholastic building without any special beauty either in proportion or treatment of the mass ; it is illustrated by Montigny and Famin, Architecture Toscane, Paris, 1815, pls. 33-36.

A sober criticism of Raphael's architectural works must force one to refuse him a high position in this branch of art. In the church of S. Eligio and the Chigi chapel he is merely a copyist of Bramante, and his more original works show but little power of invention or even mastery of the first principles of architectural design. His details are, however, often delicate and refined (especially in the Palazzo Pandolfini), and he was supremely successful in the decora- tive treatment of richly ornamented interiors when he did not, as in some of the Vatican stanze, sacrifice the room to the frescos on its walls.

Sculptwre.—That Vasari is right in attributing to him the model for the beautiful statue of Jonah in the Chigi chapel (fig. 7) is borne witness to by two important documents, which show that his almost universal talents led him to attempt with success the

1 See Ojetti, Discorso su Raffaello Architetto, Rome, 1883, but more especially Geymiiller's work mentioned below, and his Projets Primitifs pour la Bas. de S. Pierre, Paris, 1875-80.

2 See Mariani, La Bibbia nelle Loggie del Vaticano, Rome; Anon., Dipinti nelle Loggie del Vaticano, Rome, 1841; and Gruner, Fresco Decorations, London,

1854, pls. 1-5. Too great a share in the decoration of the loggie is usually given.

to Raphael; not only the harsh colour but also the feebleness of much of the drawing shows that he can have had but little to do with it.

3 See Gruner, Fresco Decorations, &c., London, 1854, pls. 6-12, and Raffaelle Santi, Ornati della Villa Madama, &c., Rome, 1875. Two other little known but very beautiful architectural works, executed under Raphael's influence by his pupils, are the bath-room of Cardinal Bibbiena in the Vatican and the bath-room of Clement VII. in the castle of S. Angelo, both richly decorated with delicate stucco-reliefs and paintings, treated after a classical model.

preliminary part of the sculptor's art, though there is no evidence to show that he ever worked on marble.4 One of these is a letter written to Michelangelo to warn him that Raphael had been in- vading his province as a sculptor by modelling a boy, which had been executed in marble by a pupil, and was a work of much beauty. Again, after his death his friend Baldassare Castiglione, in a letter dated 8th May 1528, asks his steward in Rome "if Giulio Romano still possesses a certain boy in marble by Raphael aud what lis lowest price for it would be," —"s'egli [Giulio Romano] ha pid quel puttino di marmo di mano di Raffaello e per quanto si daria all' ultimo." A group in marble of a Dead Boy on his Dolphin Playfellow, now in the St Petersburg Hermitage, has been erroneously supposed to be Raphael's "put- tino," which has also been identified with a statuette of a child till recently at Flor- ence in the possession of Signor Molini.é The statue of Jonah was executed in marble by Loren- zetto, a Florentine sculptor ; and it re- inained in his studio for many years after Raphael's death. The South Kensington Museum possesses a small clay sketch for this beautiful group, slightly different from the marble; it is probably the ori- ginal design by the master's own hand. The whole feeling of the group—a beauti- . ful youth seated on

a sea ~~monster — is purely classical, and the motive is prob~~

abl taken fr pint sihtoris ata Fic. 7.—Statue of Jonah in the Chigi chapel,

representing Arion designed by Raphael, sculptured by Loren- or Taras on a dol- Zetto; heroic size.

phin.® Being intended for a church it was necessary to give the figure a sacred name, and hence the very incongruous title that it received, There is no trace of Raphael's hand in the design of the other statue, an Elijah by Lorenzetto, though it also is ascribed to him by Vasari.

Lesser Arts practised by Raphael.—Like other great artists, Raphael did not disdain to practise the lesser branches of art: a design for a silver perfume-burner with female caryatids is preserved in an engraving by Marco da Ravenna; and he also designed two liandsome repoussé salvers for Agostino Chigi, drawings for which are now at Dresden. In designs for tarsia- work and wood ~~carv~~ ing he was especially skilful ; witness the magnificent doors and shutters of the stanze executed by his pupil Giovanni Barile of Siena.' The majolica designs attributed to him were by a name- sake and relation called Raffaello di Ciarla;® and, thongh many fine dishes and ewers of Urbino and other majolica are decorated with Raphael's designs, they are all taken from pictures or engrav- ings, not specially done by him for ceramic purposes. With the frivolity of his age Leo X. occasionally wasted Raphael's skill .on unworthy objects, such as the scenery of a temporary theatre ; and in 1516 the pope set him to paint in fresco the portrait life-size of a large dealans; the gift of the king of Portugal, after the

4 See note on p. 369, vol. iv., of Milanesi's edition of Vasari, Florence, 1879. To one branch of the sculptor's art, practised under Raphael's supervision, belong the elaborate and delicately executed stucco-reliefs of the loggie and elsewhere. Among these occur many panels with figare-oi tions, large in scale and important in composition; those executed during his lifetime arc free from the too pictorial character which is an obvious fault in the very magnificent reliefs of the Villa Madama.

5 See Appendix, p. 406, vol. iv., of Milanesi's edition of Vasari; Rembadi, Del putto . . . di Raffaello, Florence, 1872; Gennarelli, Sopra una

Scultwra di Raffaello, Florence, 1873. The evidence which would attribute this piece of sculpture to Raphael is almost worthless. See on the St Petersburg group, Guédéonoff, Ueber die dem Raphael zugeschr. Marmorgruppe, St Petersburg, 1872.

6 Compare this latter subject on reverses of the beautiful didrachms of Tarentum, c. 300 B.c.

7 The very beautiful and elaborate choir-stalls of the church of 8S. Pietro de' Casinensi at Perugia, with panels carved in relief, executed in 1535 by Stefano da Bergamo, are mainly adapted from Raphael's designs.

8 Campori, Notizie Stor, d. Maiolica di Ferrara, 3d ed., Pesaro, 1879, pp.

182-133.

animal was dead.!. This elephant is also introduced among the stucco reliefs of the Vatican loggie, with the poetaster Barrabal sitting in mock triumph on its back.

Though Raphacl himself does not appear to have practised the art of engraving, yet this formed one of the many branches of art which were carried on under his supervision. A large number of his designs were engraved by his pupils Marcantonio Raimondi (see vol. xv. p. 530) and Agostino Veneziano. These valuable engrav- ings are from Raphael's sketches, not from his finished pictures, and in some cases they show important alterations made in the execution of the picture. Raimondi's engraving of the 8. Cecilia of Bologna in design is very inferior to that of the actual painting. Several of Raphael's most important compositions are known to us only by these early engravings, ¢.g., the Massacre of the Innocents (engraved by Raimondi), which is one of his finest works, both for skilful composition and for masterly drawing of the nude. Another magnificent design is the Judgment of Paris, containing a large number of figures ; the nude figure of Minerva is a work of especial force and

beanty. A standing figure of Lucretia? about to stab herself is also one of his most lovely figures. Many of Raphacl's studies for Marcantonio's engravings still exist.

Archxology.—As an antiquary Raphacl deserves to take the highest rank. His report? to Leo X. in 1518 is an eloquent plea for the preservation of ancient buildings. In 1515 he had been appointed by Leo X. inspector of all excavations in Rome and within 10 miles round. His careful stndy of the antique, both statues and modes of decoration, is clearly shown in many of his frescos, and especially in the graceful stucco reliefs and painted grotteschi, of which he and his pupils made such skilful use in the decorations of the Vatican loggie, the Villa Madama, and elsewhere.4

Raphael's Fame.—When we consider the immense field over which his labours were spread and the strong personal individuality which appears in all these varied branches of art, together with the almost incredible number of paint- ings that issued from his studio, it will be seen that he must have laboured with an amount of unflagging industry which has perhaps never been surpassed, and that too in a time and in a city of which the social habits and luxurious splendour certainly threw every possible temptation in the way of steady application and regular work.

Among all the painters of the world none has been so universally popular as Raphael, or has so steadily main- tained his pre-eminent reputation throughout the many changes in taste which have taken place in the last three and a half centuries. Apart from his combined merits as a draughtsman, colourist, and master of graceful composi- tion, he owes the constancy of admiration which has been felt for him partly to the wide range of his subjects, but still more to the wonderful varieties of his style. If the authorship of his paintings were unknown, who would guess that the Sposalizio of the Brera, the Madonna del Baldacchino of the Pitti, and the Transfiguration could possibly be the work of one painter? In his earliest pic- tures he touches the highly spiritual and sacred art of the Perugian Fiorenzo di Lorenz. while in his latest Roman work he is fully embarked in che pagan spirit of the last development of the Renaissance, already on the brink of the most rapid decline. In the seventeen or eighteen years which composed his short working life he passed through

stages of development for which a century would not have seemed too long, while other painters lived through the same changeful time with but little alteration in their manner of work. Perugino, who outlived his wonderful pupil, completed in 1521 Raphael's San Severo fresco in a style differing but little from his paintings executed in the previous century.

In versatility of power Raphael (as a painter) remains almost without a rival; whether painting an altar-piece

1 Under it was inscribed—'" Raphael Urbinas quod natura abstu- lerat arte restituit."

2 On a pedestal is inscribed in Greek—" Better to die than live pasely."

3 Published by Visconti, Lettera di Raffaello a Leone X., Rome, 1840; see also Miintz, " Raphaél Archéologue," &c., Gaz. des B. Arts, October and November 1880.

4 See Gruyer, Raphaél et l Antiquité, Paris, 1864.

for a church, a large historical fresco, a portrait, or decor- ative scenes from classical mythology, he seems to excel equally in each; and the widely different methods of painting in tempera, oil, or fresco are employed by him with apparently equal facility. His range of scale is no less remarkable, varying from a miniature, finished like an illuminated MS., to colossal figures in fresco dashed in with inimitable breadth and vigour.

An additional glory is thrown round his memory by the personal beauty, charm of manner, and deep kindliness of heart which endeared him to all who knew him.' His sincere modesty was not diminished by his admission as an equal by the princes of the church, the distinguished scholars, and the world-famed nien of every class who formed the courts of Julius II. and Leo X. In accordance with the spirit of the age he lived with considerable dis- play and luxury, and was approached with the utmost deference by the ambassadors of foreign princes, whether their master desired a picture, or, as the duke of Ferrara did, sent to consult him on the best cure for smoky chimneys. To his pupils he was as a father, and

they were all, as Vasari says, “vinti dalla sua cortesia”; they formed round him a sort of royal retinue, numbering about fifty youths, each talented in some branch of the arts.® Giulio Romano and Gianfrancesco Penni, his two favourite pupils, lived with him in the Palazzo di Bramante, a house near St Peter’s, where he resided during the greater part of his life in Rome. This fine palace, designed by Bra- mante, was destroyed in the 17th century at the same time as Raphael’s Palazzo dell’ Aquila.

It is difficult to realize the furor of grief and enthusiasm excited by the master’s death on Good Friday 1520, at the age of thirty-seven exactly, after an attack of fever which lasted only ten days. His body was laid out in state in his studio, by the side of the unfinished Transfiguration, and all Rome flocked to the place for a last sight of the “divino pittore.” His property amounted to about £30,000; his drawings and MSS. he left to Giulio Romano and Gianfrancesco Penni; his newly bought land to Cardinal Bibbiena, the uncle of the lady to whom he had been betrothed; there were liberal bequests to his servants; and the rest was mostly divided among his relatives at Urbino. He desired to be buried in the Pan- theon, under the noble dome which he and Bramante had dreamed of rivalling. His body is laid beside an altar, which he endowed with an annual chantry, and on the wall over it is a plain slab, with an inscription written by his friend Cardinal Bembo. Happily his grave has as yet escaped the disfigurement of a pretentious monument such as those erected to Michelangelo, Dante, and other great Italians ; it has not, however, remained undisturbed: in 1833 it was opened and the bones examined.” In March

1883 a festival was held at Urbino, on the occasion of the’

4th centenary of his birth, and on this occasion many interesting articles on Raphael were published, especially one by Geymiiller, “Le IV™ Centenaire de la Naissance de Raphaél,” 1483-1883, in the Gaz. de Lausanne, March*

1883,

Literature.—Comolli, Vita inedita di Raffaello, 1790 ; Duppa, Life of Raphaci, London, 1816; Braun, Raphael . . . Leben und IVerke,

Wiesbaden, 1819; Fea, Raffaello. . . ed aleane di Ini Opere, Rome, 1822; Rehberg, Rafael Sanzio aus Urbino, Munich, 1824 ; Quatremere de Quincy, Vita ed Opere di Raffaello, trans. by Longhena, Milan, 1829 (a work marred by many inaccuracies) ; Rumohr, Ueber Raphacl und sein Verhédliniss, Berlin, 1831; Rio, Michelange et Raphaél, Paris, 1863 ; Gruyer, Raphaél et ? Antiquité

5 See the eloquent eulogy of his character at the end of Vasari's Life.

§ See Minghetti, "Gli Scolari di Raffaello," Nuova Antologia, June

1880.

7 See "Ritrovamento delle ossa di Raffaello," Soe. Virtuosi al Pan- teone, Rone, 1833 ; other pamphlets on this were published in the same year by Fea, Falconieri, and Odescalchi.

(Paris, 1864), Les Vierges de Raphaél (Paris, 1878), and Raphaél, Peintre de Portraits (Paris, 1880) ; Grimm, Das Leben Raphaels von Urbino, Berlin, 1872 (intended spccially to point out the crrors of Vasari and Passavant, and not written in a very fair spirit) ; Gher- ardi, Della Vita di Raffaello, Urbino, 1874; Springer, Rafael und Michelangelo, Leipsic, 1878 ; Perkins, Raphael and Michelangelo, Boston, 1878 ; Dohme, Kunst wad Kiinstler des Mittelalters, Leipsic, 1878 (vol. ii. of this valuable work, with many illustrations, is devoted entirely to Raphael and Michelangelo) ; Alippi, 17 Raffaello, Urbino, 1880 ; Clément, Michelange ct Raphaél, 5th ed. (improved), Paris, 1881; Kug. Miintz, Raphaél, sa Vie, sun Guvre, &e., Paris, 1881 (this is on the whole the best single work on Raphael, both from its text and its numerous well-chosen illustrations) ; Passavant, Rafael und sein Vater, Leipsic, 1839-58 (a valuable book, especially for its list of Raphael's works ; a uew edition translated by Guasti into Italian was published at Florence in 1882, but, though printed so recently, this edition is in no way superior to the French one of Lacroix, Paris, 1860, which, however, is a great advance on the original German text) ; Crowe and Cavalcaselle, Life and Works of Raphael, London, 1882-85; Eug. Miintz, Les Historiens et les Cri- tiques de Raphaél, Paris, 1883 (contains

a good bibliography of the subject). The student of Raphael owes a special debt of gratitude for the recent labours of MM. Miintz, Gruyer, and Geymiiller.

Teproductions of Raphael's Works.—From the time of Raimondi downwards no painter's works have been so frequently engraved. The Calcografia Camerale (now called Regia) of Rome possesses an enormous number of copper-plates of his pictures by a great many good (and bad) engravers of this and the last century. Elec- trotypes of the old coppers are still worked, and are published by the Stamperia at very moderate prices ; in the catalogue Nos. 736 to 894 are the works of Raphael, including several books of engrav- ings containing whole scts, such as the Vatican loggic, &c. A very complete collection of photographs from these and other en- gravings is published by Gutbier and Liibke, Léafael's Werke, simmt- liche Tafelbildcr und Fresken, Dresden, 1881-82, in three large volumes, divided into classes,—pictures of the Madonna, frescos, stanze of the Vatican, tapestry cartoons, &c. The descriptive text and life of Raphael are by Litbke. The Malcolm, Oxford, British Museum, Lille, Louvre, Dresden, and other collections of Raphael's drawings have mostly been published in photographic facsimile, and an enormous number of illustrated monographs on single pictures exists. Braun's autotypes of the stanze and Farncsina frescos are especially good. (J. H. M.) °

RAPIN, Pav pz (1661-1725), sieur of Thoyras, French historian, was the son of Jacques de Rapin, avocat at Castres (Tarn), where he was born on 25th March 1661. He was educated at the Protestant academy of Saumur, and in 1679 he became an advocate, but soon afterwards entered the army. The revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685 and the death of his father, which happened two months afterwards, led him to come to England; but, unable to find employment there, he crossed to Holland and enlisted in the company of French volun- teers at Utrecht commanded by Daniel de Rapin, his cousin-german. He accompanied the prince of Orange to England in 1688, and the following year Lord Kingston made him ensign in his regiment, with which he proceeded to Ireland. He took part in the siege of Carrickfergus and the battle of the Boyne, and was shot through the shoulder at the battle of Limerick. Soon

afterwards he was promoted captain ; but in 1693 he resigned in order to become tutor to the earl of Portland's son. His next change was to return to his family, which he had settled at The Hague, and there he continued some years. But, as he found his family increase, he resolved to retire to a more economical residence, and accordingly removed in 1707 to Wesel, where he commenced his great work P'Histowe @ Angleterre. Though he was of a strong con- stitution, the seventeen years' application entirely ruined his health. He died in 1725,

Rapin was also the author of a Dissertation sur les Whigs et les Torys, 1717. L' Histoire d Angleterre, embracing the period from the invasion of the Romans to the death of Charles I., was printed at The Hague in 1724 in 8 vols. It was translated into English, and improved with notes, by Tindal, in 2 vols. folio, 1725-31. Although the work of a foreigner, it is deservedly estecmed as one of the fullest and most impartial collections of English political transactions extant.

RASGRAD or Hesarcrap, a town of Bulgaria, with a station about 2 miles distant on the Varna and Rustchuk

Railway, is situated on the Byaly Lom, 970 feet above sea-level. It has increased in population during the last fifty years from 3000 to 10,000 inhabitants. In 1810 it was the scene of the defeat of the Turks by the Russians.

RASHBA (8'2¥) stands for three rabbins of various ages and various countries.

1. R. Sure'on Ben Ex'azar was a Mishnic teacher of the 2d century. ©

2, Rappenu SumtsHon Ben Asranam of Sens wrote commentaries on various Mishnic treatises (see MisNau, vol. xvi. p. 506).

3. R. SHeLomon Ben Azsranam (or Ben [Ibn] Add- ereth) was a disciple of Nachmanides, upon whom his master's mantle had fallen (see Rampan). He became chief rabbi of Barcelona. Here so many disciples from the neighbouring provinces flocked to him as to excite emulation among the Jews in the capital of Castile, who thereupon appointed the

German Rabbi Asher b. Yehiel (Rosh). At the same time religious questions poured in upon him from all Israel, so that it is a marvel how he could go through his mere clerical work.

His works extend over the whole Talmud, although not all of them are printed. But thousands of his Responsa have been printed, while many others lie in MS. at Cambridge (Add. 500). Of his other works, the enumeration of which would occupy columns, mention can be made only of his explanations of the Agadoth of the Babylonian Talmud, containing polemic against both Christians and Moslems (MS., Univ. Camb., Add. 1567, 1). On his part in the Maimonidcan controversy sce Schiller-Szinessy, Catalogue, i. 187 sq. (S. M. 8.-8.)

RASHBAM. Rassenv Suemven Ben Metr, commonly called, from his title and the initials of his own and his father's names, Rashbam, was born at Rameru (Ramerupt near Troyes, in France) about 1080. He was almost the greatest Talmudist of his time, the only two excelling him till 1105 being Rashi and later on his own younger brother, Rabbenu Ya'akob, better known as Rabbenu Tham. In Bible criticism and exegesis, however, he excelled all the men of the 11th and 12th centuries, even if we include R. Menahem b. Helbo, R. Yoseph Bekhor Shor, and R. Yoseph Kara of the Franco-Ashkenazic school, and Abraham Ibn 'Ezra of the Sepharadic school. Rashbam was the son of Yokhebed, second daughter of Rasur (g.v.); and of Rabbenu Meir of Rameru (b. Shemuel). He suc- ceeded his grandfather Rashi as head of the Rabbinical college, and probably also of the congregation, of Troyes. Later, however, we meet him at other places, ¢.g., Caen, Loudun. He died about 1160.

Of his works the following are known. (1) Commentaries on the Bible: («) his commentary on the Pentateuch, uncritically edited several times (ed. princeps, Berlin, 1705), and critically and most ably for the first time by Rosin of Breslau (1881, 8vo); (d) commentaries on most of the other books of the Bible, the greater part of which are now lost, but the existence of which is in early times fully testified to. Those on Ecclesiastes and Canticles} were published by Dr Jellinek at Leipsic (1855, 8vo); specimens of both books havc been translated into English by Dr Ginsburg (Song of Songs, London, 1857, and Coheleth, London, 1861).

(2) Com- mentaries on the Babylonian Talmud ; of these we now possess only his supplements on Pesahim (leaves 99b-121b), Baba Bathra (leaves 29a-176b), and Makkoth (leaves 19b sq.; sce the so-called

Ttashi on the Riph, in the Mishnah, iii. 5, catchword jptn Spy). Commentaries on five other treatises are distinctly referred to by old authorities,? but Rashi's commentaries so thoroughly eclipsed all those written before and after him that none of them hada chance of surviving, except in the shape of a supplement. (3) Additamenta or Tosaphoth ; sce Rabbinovicz (varia lectiones), i1.,

1 The present writer cannot share the opinion of those who, because of the Agadic explanations with which that commentary abounds, call Rashbam's authorship in question, Ibn 'Ezra himself, who was sober thinker enough, is compelled in Canticles to resort to the Rabbinic explanation, —a proceeding and a method in which every modern com- mentator must take refuge, unless he wishes to explain the book as a merely profane one.

2 See Berliner Magazin, &c., vii. 186, and Or Zaru'a, in several places (comp. Magazin, ii. p. 100).

284

Preface, p. 18, and Steinschneider, Hebr. Handsehr. in der kon. Bib. Berlin, p. 8. (4) Responsa ; see, for example, Raban (Prague, 1610, folio), leaves 143, col. 2, to 146b, col. 1, and elsewhere. (5) Of his controversies with Christians nothing is left except what is occasionally to be found in his commentary on the Pentateuch. (6) On his book on the calendar calculations sec Berliner Magazin, vil. p. 185. (7) On the true author of the commentary on Aboth, ascribed to Rashbam, see Taylor, Catal., No. 20. (8) Although the attack on his hemero-nyction theory (commentary on Gen. i. 4, 5) was made by Ibn 'Ezra (Jggereth Hasshabbath ; see Kerem Hemed, iv. pp. 159-178, and Mibhar Hammaamarim by Nathan b. Shemuel, printed at Leghorn in 1840, leaves 58a-66a) in Rash- bam's lifetime he scems not to have answercd it. (S. M.S.-S.) RASHI ('v), that is, RABBENU SHELOMOH YISHAKI (Solomon, son of Isaac), whence by Christian writers he is also called Isacides! (1040-1105), was the*

greatest rabbi of the Middle Ages. He is equally important for Biblical and Talmudic study, and in the former connexion as inter- esting to Christians as to Jews from the influence of is exegesis on Luther's Bible (through De Lyra; see vol. xi. p. 601) and on the English version of the Old Testament (mainly through Ibn 'Ezra, and still more through Kimhi). Rashi is the most eminent of the "sages" or '"' great men of Lothaire"? (39m, i.e, Lorraine) in whom culminated that movement of Jewish scholarship to which Charlemagne had given the first impulse. From the Jew Isaac, first in- terpreter and then ambassador in his famous mission to Harun ar-Rashid, Charlemagne had doubtless learned how superior in literary attainments the Jews of the East were to those of the West, and therefore he gave great privileges to the accomplished Makhirites ® who were introduced into the south of France, and spread Jewish culture and litera- ture there.t Later on he brought from Rome to Mainz the Kalonymites, a family of distinguished Talmudists, poets, &c., of Lucca;> and soon Spires, Worms, and Mainz (spoken of as Shum, 0'%v') became famous seats of Jewish learning ; their ordinances (Takkanoth Shum) were of norm- ative authority for centuries, and the study of the Hebrew Bible and the Babylonian Talmud steadily spread from southern Germany to northern France. Though Spires, Worms, and Mainz by the partition treaty of Verdun in 843 belonged to East Frankland, yet in Jewish literature Lothaire includes these cities; and all the greatest doctors of Jewish lore in the south of Germany or north of France belong to the " great men" or "'sages of Lothaire."® Rashi was born, in the year in which the last nominal gaon of Pumbaditha died, at Troyes, where his father Yishak was no doubt rabbi. R. Yishak was probably a disciple of R. Gershom ; certainly he was an eminent Talmudist.' His wife, Rashi's mother, was a sister of R. Shime'on hazzaken.® 1 The interpretation of the » of "W as meaning Yarchi (Jarchi), a.e., of Lunel, is not to be charged on Buxtorf, nor on Seb. Miinster, being already found in the text of the Pugio Fidei of Raymundus

Martini, written in the second half of the 13th century. 2 Lothaire never means Lhuitre (Luistre), as appears from the phrase

*smd mob, "realm of Lothaire." Instead of 77ND 7*Y in Rashi's*

so-called Siddur, ii. leaf 33a, must be read smd "TY, as will be easily seen from the context.

3 See Yohasin Hasshalem (London and Edinburgh, 1857, 8vo), p. 84.

4 Possibly also, like some princes of the 10th century, Charlemagne encouraged Jewish literature in order to keep at home the considerable sums which the Jews had been wont to send to the Babylonian geonim.

5 See 'Emek Habbakha, ed. Lettcris (Vienna, 1852, 12mo), p. 18, and Wiener's German translation (Leipsic, 1858, 8vo), p. 8. Reshal's Responsa, § xxix., is unfortunately corrupt in many places.

6 See Brit. Mus. MS. Add. 27200, leaf 24a.

7 This appears from an explanation quoted from him by his son

on a passage of 'Abodah Zarah (f. 75a, catchword pba by), This treatise was at that time scarcely studied, even by eminent rabbis, and the explanation is markedly superior to one which Rashi also gives from R. Ya'akob b. Yakar, hitherto regarded as the most eminent of his teachers.

8 Not to be confounded with his older contemporary, the poet and Halakhist, Shime'on b. Yishak haggadol. The epithets "hazzaken" and "haggadol" both mean "the elder," but the epithet is varicd to distinguish the persons.

at the age of eighteen.

RAS—RAS

Her name is unknown, as is also that of the wife whom

Rashi, according to Mishnic precept (Aboth, v. 21), married Soon after his marriage, and with his wife's consent, he left her to prosecute his studies in Germany, returning home only from time to time.® She bore him no sons, but three daughters.!®

Rashi had at least six teachers,—(1) his father ; (2) R. Ya‘akob b. Yakar (chief rabbi at Worms) for Bible and Talmud (Rashi on T. B., Pesahim, 111a), a disciple of R. Gershom (Rashbam, zbid., and Siddur, ii. leaf 10a) and friend of R. Eli‘ezer haggadol; (3) his successor, RK. Yishak Segan Leviyyah (T.B., Besah, 24b), a pupil of R. Eliezer haggadol ; (4) his mother's brother, already named (T.B., Shabbath, 85b); (5) R. Yishak b. Yehudah, also a pupil of R. Elitezer, and head of the community at Mainz (Pardes, xxi.); (6) R. Elyakim, head of the community at Spires (dbed., clix., clxxxi., cexc., cccvi.). Besides the oral instruction of his teachers, Rashi had and used copies of, and commentaries on, sundry parts of the Talmud written by these scholars themselves or by their teachers or disciples (T. B., Berakhoth, 39a, 57b; Shabbath, 10b; R. Hasshanah, 28a; Sukkah, 45b; Siddur, ii. leaf 10a). He had also before him all the Jewish literature existing and known at his time, as the Bible, part of the Apo crypha, all the Targums, sundry cabbalistic works (Sepher Yestrah, Hekhaloth, &c.), both Talmuds, the Midrashim, Sheeltoth, Halakhoth Gedoloth, Teshuboth Haggeonim, the works of R. Mosheh Haddarshan, the lexicographical works of Menahem b. Seruk and Donash b. Labrat, and, last but not least, the commentaries of R. Gershom, which he used largely, but mostly silently.!2 He also used the works of his own contemporaries, such as the ‘Arukh.!8 His studies completed, Rashi returned to his native town and opened a school for Bible and Talmud. His fame quickly rose ; disciples gathered round him from the whole north of France and south of Germany, and men in office, who had grown grey in study, addressed to him "religious ques- tions," his "answers" to which give us insight into his character, piety, and ability. He died on 13th (not 26th) July 1105,15 having already seen two of his grandsons " in-*

® See Hophes Matinonim, ed. Goldberg, p. 2 CNWINW INNS ann

pm2nd).

10 They married three of their father's disciples. The husband of the eldest was, according to Schiller-Szinessy (Camb. Cat., ii. 88 sq., note 1), R. Simhah of Vitry-le-Frangais (ob. 1105), reputed author of the Mahzor Vitri, which, if the other MSS. so called have no better title to the name

than that in the British Museum, Add. 27200-1, must now be regarded as lost (Taylor, Catal. MSS. of Aboth, &c., No. 20; Schiller-Szinessy, op. cit., ii. 61 sg.). The issue of this marriage was (1) R. Shema'‘yah of Soissons (see MIsHNAH, vol. xvi. p. 506); (2) R. Shemuel, who married his cousin, Rashbam's only sister. Rashi's second daughter, Yokhebed, married R. Meir of Raineru (b. Shemuel), a brother of R. Simhah. He was father of four sons,—(1) Ribam (R. Yishak b. Meir), whe died in his father's lifetime; (2) RasHBam (g.v.) ; (3) R. Tham or Rath; (4) R. Shelomoh (Br. Mus., Add. 27200, leaf 158b). The third daughter, Miryam, married R. Yehudah b, Nathan, who sup- plemented his father-in-law's commentary on Afakkoth, and wrote the commentary that goes by Rashi's name on T.B., Vazir, &c. Their son's name was R. Yom Tob (Sepher Hayyashar, Vienna, 1810, § 599).

ll See Rashi, T. B., Berakhoth, 51a; Hagigah, 13a; Sukkah, 45a ; and many other places. See also Siddur, ii. leaf 22b, col. 2 (on the reading of the Shema' in bed). Such passages as Kiddushin, 71a, do not, when rightly understood, testify to the contrary. Rashi's "they " refers not to his contemporary teachers, but to those of the Talmud who 'had not explained to us the Holy Names of the Twelve and Forty-two." It is therefore quite untrue that Rashi "knew nothing of kabbalah."

12 R. Gershom, "the light of the Diaspora" (see vol. xvi. p. 506), died in the year in which Rashi was born, and was the immediate teacher of his teachers. One of his commentaries is printed in the Shittah Mekubbeseth on Karethoth, Vienna, 1878, folio.

® See T.B., Shabbath, 13b, catchword D3INN.

14 See Hophes Matmonim, p. 8.

15 See MS. De-Rossi (Roy. Libr., Parma) 175 (Catal., p. 116), and MS. Luzzatto (Literaturbl. d. Orients, vii. p. 418). This precious MS., which subsequently belonged to Halberstam of Bielitz, is now the property of the master of St John's College, Cambridge.

RAS—RAS

terpreting' in his presence, and the budding intelligence of a third, who became the greatest Talmudist of his age.

Rashi, though not the originator of all that he teaches in his commentary on the Talmud, had so digested the whole literature bearing on that stupendous work that his teaching, even when it appears to be imitative, is really creative. In his Biblical com- mentaries he has not, of course, grammatical and_ philological knowledge of the modern type, but he had a very fine sense for linguistic points, which was not equalled, much less surpassed, by the greatest rabbis who followed him. He gave satisfaction, if not to all, at least to the best of his time, and, as the great German poet says, "he who has given satisfaction to the best of his time lives for all ages."

*Rasui's Works.—A. Bible Commentary (WND).—Rashi com- mented on the whole of the Hebrew Bible except Job, chaps. xl. 21 to the end, and the books of Chronicles.1. Kimhi's is the only Rabbinical commentary which can be said to have successfully approached this great work in its influence on Jewish scholarship ; and on the Pentateuch Rashi had no rival. For centuries too his was the text-book in boys' schools throughout the Jewish world—and in some countries it is so still, its depth and subtilty being com- bined with simplicity of exposition. Its currency is attested by more than a hundred supcrcommentaries, translations, extracts, and the like, of which there are about fifty in print. An eminent rabbi declares that Rashi may be substituted for the Targum "in the reading of the weekly pericope" (Reshal, Yam shel Shelomoh on Kiddushin, ii. $14). Rashi's influence on Christian scholars has already been alluded to. N. de Lyra copied him so closely as to be called his "ape."**

Translations.—The whole commentary was reudered into Latin by PELLICANUS (q.v.), but never printed, and again by Breithaupt (3 vols. 4to0, Gotha, 1710-14). This version includes the spurious commentary on Chronicles and is accompanied by notes. Of separate parts there are printed versions of Gen. i.-vi. (Scherzer, 1663), Gen. vi.-xi. (Abicht, 1705), Gen. xlix. (Loscani, 1710), Hosea (Mercier, 1621), Joel, Jonah (Leusden, 1656), Joel (Genebrard, 1563), Jonah, Zephaniah, Obadiah (Pontac,

1556), Obadiah (Crocius, 1673), Malachi (S. de Muis, 1618), Ps. xix. (Id., 1620), Proverbs (Giggeus, 1620), Canticles (Genebrard, 1570), Ruth (Carpzov, 1703), Esther (Aquinas, 1622). The Pentatcuch was translated into German by L. Dukes (Prague, 1833-38, 8vo); Genesis was done by L. Haymann (Bonn, 1833, 8vo). Editions, especially of the Pentateuch, are very numer- ous. Only some of the chief can here be named,—(a) on the whole Bible, with the sacred text—Venice, 1545, 1595, 1607 (all three in 4to) ; Cracow, 1610, 4to; Basel, 1618, folio; (b) Pentateuch with text (all sm. folio) —Bologna, 1482; Ixar, 1490; Lisbon and Naples, 1491; (e) Pentateuch without text—Reggio, 1475, folio (the first Hebrew book printed with date); s./. et a., but before 1480, 4to; Soncino, 1487, folio. MSS. of Rashi on the whole Bible are very rare, and even those which are supposed to be such turn out, on examination, to be either incomplete or defective, or both. There lies a precious MS. in Leyden (1 Scal.) ; but it is a trifle defective in Exodus. St John's College, Cambridge, possesses a still more ancient and precious MS. (A. 8; dated 1239) ; but it lacks the Penta- teuch and Kzra(-Nehemiah), and is defective in the end (though, it is true, only in Chronicles, which is not Rashi's, as mentioned before). But MSS. of Rashion the Pentateuch, both old and good, abound. There are few libraries in Kurope that have not one or two of this commentary. It is to be hoped, therefore, that Dr A. Berliner, who has already edited critically Rashi on the Pentateuch (Berlin, 1866, 8vo), although not on the faith of a sufficient number of MSS., will soon issue a second and superior edition.

B. Commentary on the Babylonian Talmud, D13\p.3— Rashi had not been dead a hundred ycars when it was felt in the learned world that no such master in the Talmud had ever existed before him, and that without his aid and especially his corrections of the text (then only embodied in his commentary), the sca of the Baby- lonian Talmud could not safely be sailed on. He became now the teacher even of the Jews in the East. He commented on the whole of the Talmud to which Gemara is attached (see Misunan), except on Nedarim from leaf 22b to the end, Nazir and Tamid from begin- ning to end, Baba Bathra from 29a to the end, and Makkoth from leaf 19b to the end. In commenting on the two last-named*

1 The supplement to the former is generally ascribed to R. Ya‘akob Nazir ; its relation to the author of the MS. commentary on Job (Camb. Univ. Lib., Dd. 8. 53) has still to be worked out. The commentary on Chronicles in which Rashi is three times cited by name (2 Chron. iii. 15, xxii. 11, and xxiii. 14) is the work of a German rabbi residing in Provence.

2 See J. H. Maius, Vita Reuehlini, 1687, Pref. The thanks of the present writer are due to the curators and librarian of the Bodleian for the loan of this book.

3 On this word see Schiller-Szinessy, Catalogue, i. p. 181, note.

4 His disciple, son-in-law, and continuator Rabbenu Yehudah b. Nathan writes: “ At the word ‘tahor’ (pure) the soul of our teacher went out in purity.”

285

massekhtoth death surprised him. Rashi on the Talmud has never been printed apart from the text, and so the first complete edition is that contained in the editio princeps of the Babylonian Talmud (Venice, 1520-23, folio). Portions had eome out before with parts of the Talmud (Soncino, 1483, and elsewhere later). There are MSS. containing Rashi on isolated Talmudic treatises in various libraries : the Cambridge University Library and British Muscum have six each, the Bodleian twelve, the Paris National Library seven.

C. The Leligiows Deeisions (DYPDD) given by Rashi are to be found in various works, principally in the so-called Siddur (i. and ii.) and Happardes (Warsaw, 1870, folio)—called Happardes Haggadol to distinguish it from the abridgment by R. Shemuel of Bamberg (138th century) called Likkute Happardes (Venice, 1519, 4to)—a work of which Rashi himsclf seems to have laid the foundation, though other literature on other subjects is now mixed up with it. Of the same nature are Haorah and WN) WON, MSS. of which lie at Munich (kindly lent to the writer by Merzbacher) and Oxford. Various halakhoth, &c., are also to be found in various malizorim (¢.g., the Cambridge MS. Add. 667, leaves 153-156,

and elsewhere), the Shibbole Halleket, ii. (by R. Sidkiyyahu b. Abraham Harophe, Cambridge MS. Add. 653).

D. Poems (D°O1D).—Rashi was no poet by profession and much less by genius; but he had a tenderly feeling heart, and saw the horrors of the first crusade; and he wrote Selihoth (propitiatory and penitential prayers), whicl are by no means without their value. One is cmbodicd in the additional service of the day of atonement and begins " Tannoth Saroth" (Reshal's Hesponsa, § Xxix.), and several more, which form the acrostic Shelomoh bar Yishak, are found in the collection of the Selihoth of the Ash- kenazic rite. It is not improbable also that the Aramaic Reshuth iv. to the Haphtarah in Targum (introduction to the prophetic portion as given in Yonathan b. 'Uzz'iel's Aramaic paraphrase), which is to be found in the Renchliuian Codex (De Lagarde, Prophet# echaldaice, Leipsic, 1872, 8vo, leaf 492), is his. It is much his style, and the acrostic is Shelomoh (and not fynw). It is also very probable that Reshuth v. is his. If so, he must have composed it when very young, as several expressions in it testify.

E. Le'azim co"ryS),—In his commentaries Rashi, like R. Gershom before him and others after him, often introduces French words (chiefly verbs and nouns) to give precision to his explanations. Of these Le'azim there are certainly more than 3000, and they are most valuable to the student of old French. Unfortunately copyists, notably in Italy, and printers subsequently, have often substituted their own vernacular for the original French; there are now even Russian words to be found in Rashi. Four hundred years ago explanations of some of these Le'azim and of those of Kimhi were offered by the author of Makre Dardeke (Naples, 1488). Other contributions have followed intermittingly down to the present time (Brothers Bondi in Or Esther, Dessau, 1812; Dormitzer and Landau in Marpe Lashon, Odessa, 1865, 12mo). The labours of M. Arséne Darmstetcr promise to be exhaustive, and are based on ex- tensive collations, see Romania, April 1872, p. 146 sq.

There is no satisfactory life of Rashi; most recent accounts rest on a Life by Zunz (1822), which has not been reprinted in his collected works. (S. M. 8.-S.)

RASHT (also Rascht, Rescht, Rashd, and Resht), a town in northern Persia, situated in 37° 18' N. lat. and 49° 37' E. long., capital of the richly wooded maritime pro- vince of Gilan, contains from 15,000 to 20,000 inhabitants. Eastwick, who was there in 1861, accepts the former estimate, but states that the place was four times as popu- lous before the plague of 1831. The distance from Enzelli, on the southern shores of the Caspian, the actual port of dis- embarkation for passengers and goods from Russia, is about 16 miles, of which 12 (to Pari Bazaar) are accomplished in an open boat, the last part by river, but for the most part over a widespread brackish lake or lagoon (murddb), abounding in wild fowl, surrounded by reeds, and separated from the sea by a narrow belt of sand. From Pari Bazaar to Rasht the road, piercing through forest and swamp, had for many long years been memorable only for its puddles and pools, its ruts and ruggedness, but it has more recently undergone great improvement. As for the town itself, the tiled houses in the streets, and the lanes, lined with hedge and cottage, in the environs, impart a cheer- fulness to the locality little in unison with the sickly and fever-stricken faces and forms of the inhabitants. Yet the beauty and hazel eyes of the children, with their "true English pink and white complexions" noticed by Eastwick, are not significant of inherited enervation.

Rasht is the residence of a Russian and an English

consul, and the seat of a local governor nominated by the shah. It is the centre of the silk trade, which once flourished so greatly in Persia as to show an annual export of nearly a million and a half pounds in weight, valued at £700,000. In 1882, however, the prevalence of disease among the silkworms caused many of the peasants of Gilan to abandon the culture of silk in favour of rice, which became largely exported to Russia. But the geographical position of Rasht gives it a world-wide reputation irre- spective of trade. If the roads by Trebizond, Erzeroum, and Tabriz on the one hand and by Poti, Tiflis, and Tabriz on the other can still be considered the two 'commercial highways" from Europe to Persia, the line of land and water communication by Astrakhan and the south-eastern shores of the Caspian has a good claim to be called. the true

modern highway for travellers and diplomatists moving in the same direction.

Rasht was visited in 1739 by "two English gentlemen from Petersburg," whose narrative, published three years later, contains much interesting information on the existing relations of Gilan with Russia. It is noteworthy, but not astonishing, to find that in those days the shah (Nadir Kuli) was himself 'in a manner the sole merchant or trader in all Persia." In 1744 Jonas Hanway came there also ; but no fuller account of tle capital of Gilan has perhaps ever been recorded than that of Samuel Gmelin in 1771, when Hidaiyat Khan ruled the province, and Karim Khan Zend was sovereign of Persia. Gmelin was reccived with extraordinary honours, as an imperial officcr of Russia, and every opportunity was afforded him of observing the country, its features and produce, and of acquainting himself with the manners and customs of the inhabitants. In 1882 a concession for the construction of a railway from Rasht to Teheran, via Kazvin, was granted to a M. Boital. It is probable that no more practical effect will be given to this scheme than to that of Baron de Reuter some ten years before.

See A Journey through Russia into Persia (London, 1742); Histoire des Décou- vertes, vol. ii. (Lausanne, 1784); Eastwick, Three Years' Residence in Persia (1864); Telegraph and Travel (1874); and published official Reports (182).

RASK, Rasmus Curist1aAN (1787-1832), an eminent scholar and philologist, was born at Bréndekilde in the Island of Fiinen or Fyen in Denmark in 1787. He studied at the university of Copenhagen, and early dis- tinguished himself by singular talent for the acquisition of languages. In the year 1808 he was appointed assistant keeper of the university library, and some years after wards made professor of literary history. In 1811 he published, in Danish, his Introduction to the Grammar of the Icelandic and other Ancient Northern Languages, from printed and MS. materials which had been accumulated by his predecessors in the same field of research. The reputation which Rask thus acquired recommended him to the Arna-Magnzan Institution, by which he was employed

as editor of the Icelandic Lexicon (1814) of Bjérn Haldor-_

son, which had long remained in manuscript. About the same time Rask paid a visit to Iceland, where he remained from 1813 to 1815, and made himself completely master of the language and familiarized himself with the litera- ture, manners, and customs of the natives. To the interest with which they inspired him may probably be attributed the establishment at Copenhagen, early in 1816, of the Icelandic Literary Society, which was mainly instituted by his exertions, and of which he was the first president. In October 1816 Rask left Denmark on a literary expedition, at the cost of the king, to prosecute inquiries into the languages of the East, and collect manuscripts for the university library at Copenhagen. He proceeded first to Sweden, where he remained two years, in the course of which he niade an excursion into Finland, for the purpose of studying the language of that country. Here he published, in Swedish, his Anglo-Saxon Grammar in 1817. In 1818 there appeared at Copenhagen, in Danish, an Essay on the Origin of the Ancient Scandi- navian or Icelandic Tongue, in which he traced the affinity of that idiom to the other European languages, particu- larly to the Latin and the Greek. In the same year he

brought out the first complete editions of Snorro's Hdda and Sezemund's #dda, in the original text, along with Swedish translations of both Hddas, the originals and the versions occupying each two volumes. From Stockholm he went in 1819 to St Petersburg, where he wrote, in German, a paper on "The Languages and Literature of Norway, Iceland, Sweden, and Finland," which was pub- lished in the sixth number of the Vienna Jahrbiicher. From Russia he proceeded through Tartary into Persia, and resided for some time at Tabriz, Teheran, Persepolis, and Shiraz. In about six weeks he made himself suffi- ciently master of the Persian to be able to converse freely in that language with the natives. In 1820 he embarked at Bushire for Bombay; and during his residence in the latter city he wrote, in English, " A Dissertation on the Authenticity of the Zend Language" (Trans. Lit. Soc. of Bombay, vol. iii., reprinted with corrections and addi- tions in Z'rans. R. As. Soc.). From Bombay he proceeded through India to Ceylon, where he arrived in 1822, and soon afterwards wrote, in English, " A Dissertation respect- ing the best Method of expressing the Sounds of the Indian Languages in European Characters," which was printed in the Z'ransactions of the Interary and Agricultural Society of Colombo. Rask returned to Copenhagen in May

1823, bringing with him a considerable nuniber of Oriental manuscripts, Persian, Zend, Pali, Singalese, and others, which now enrich the collections of the Danish capital. He died at Copenhagen on 14th November 1832.

During the period betwecn his return from the East and his death Rask published in his native language a Spanish Grammar (1824), a Frisie Grammar (1825), an Essay on Danish Orthography (1826), a T'reatise respecting the Ancient Egyptian Chronology and an Italian Grammar (1827), and the Ancient Jewish Chronology previous to Moses (1828). He likewise cdited an edition of Schneider's Danish Grammar for the use of Englishmen (1830), and super- intended the English translation of his valuable Anglo-Saxon Grammar by Thorpe (1830). Rask's services to comparative philology were very great. He was the first to point out the con- nexion between the ancient Northern and Gothic on the one hand, and of the Lithuanian, Sclavonic, Greek, and Latin on the other, and he also has the credit of being the real discoverer of the so- called "Grimm's Law" for the transmutation of consonants in the transition from the old Indo-European languages to Teutonic, although he only compared Teutonic and Greek, Sanskrit being at the time unknown to him. Rask's facility in the acquisition of languages was extraordinary ; in 1822 he was master of no less than twenty-five languages and dialects, and is stated to have studied twice as many. His numerous philological manuscripts were transferred to the king's library at Copenhagen. Rask's Anglo-Saxon, Danish, and Icelandic Grammars have been given to the English public by Thorpe, Repp, and Dasent respectively.

RASKOLNIKS. See Russia.

RASPBERRY. See Horticutturg, vol. xii. p. 276.

RASTATT, or Rastapt, a small town in Baden, is situated on the Murg, 4 miles above its junction with the Rhine and 12 miles south-west of Carlsruhe. It is a fortress of great strength, commanding the passage through the Black Forest. The only notable building is the old palace of the margraves of Baden, a large Renais- sance edifice in red sandstone, now partly used for military purposes and containing a collection of pictures, antiquities, and trophies from the Turkish wars. The industry of

Xastatt is almost confined to local needs, and the town may be said to live on the garrison, which forms nearly half of its population (1880) of 12,356. Two-thirds of the inhabitants are Roman Catholics. .

Previous to the close of the 17th century Rastatt was a place of no importance, but after its destruction by the French in 1689 it was rebuilt on a larger scale by Margrave Lewis, the well-known imperial general in the Turkish wars, and became the residence of the margraves of Baden down to 1771. In 1714 the preliminary articles of the peace between Austria and France, ending the War of the Spanish Succession, were signed here. The congress of Rastatt in 1797-99 had for its object the re-arrangement of the

map of Germany by providing compensation for those princes who had relinquished to France territory on the left bank of the Rhine.

|

RAS—RAT

It dispersed, however, without result, war having again broken out between France and Austria. As the French plenipotentiaries were leaving the town they were waylaid and assassinated by Hungarian hussars. The object and instigators of this deed have remained shrouded in mystery, but the balance of evidence seems to indicate that the Austrian authorities had ordered a violent seizure of the ambassadors' papers, to avoid damaging disclosures with regard to Austrian designs on Bavaria, and that the soldiers had simply exceeded their instructions. The Baden revolution of 1849 began at Rastatt with a military mutiny and ended here a few months later with the capture of the town by the Prussians. Rastatt is now a fortress of the German empire.

RASTELL, the name of two early English printers.

I, Jonn Rastett or RastTaLy, printer and author, was born at London towards the end of the 15th century. He was educated at Oxford, and married Elizabeth, the sister of Sir Thomas More. He was a man of considerable learning and, although not bred to the law like his son,

showed his devotion to legal studies by his writings. He went into the printing business about the year 1514, and produced Liber assisarum, with a preface by himself, His first dated publication was Abbreviamentum librorum legum Anglorum (1517). He also printed The Wydow Edyth (1525), A Dyaloge of Syr Thomas More (1529), and a number of other books. The last dated piece from his press was labyl's Ghoste (1533), a poem. He lived "at the sygne of the meremayd at Powlysgate." John Rastell, the Jesuit, who has been frequently confounded with him, was no relation. By his will, dated 20th April 1536, he appointed Henry VIII. one of his executors ; administra- tion was granted on the renunciation of the executorship by the king on 18th July 1536. It is a curious document, and contains a long account of the testator's religious belief. Rastell was occupied upon a concordance at the time of his death ; its publication was provided for by the will (see Arber's Registers of Comp. of Stationers, ii. 8, 9). He died at London, leaving two sons,—William, printer and judge (see below), and John, a justice of the peace.

Rastell's chief writings are the following. The Pastyme of People ; the Chronyeles of dywers Realmys and most speeyally of the Realme of Englonde (1529), now of extreme rarity ; a note in the catalogue of the British Museum says, "the only perfect copy known." It ranges from the earliest times to Richard III., and was edited by Dibdin in 1811 for the quarto series of English chronicles, A new Boke of Purgatory, 1530, being dialogues on the subject between "Comyngo au Almayne a Christen Man, and one Gyngemyn a Turke." This was answered by John Frith, pro- dueing Rastell's Apology against John Fryth, also answered by the latter. The controversy is said to have ended in Rastell's con- version to the Reformed religion. xposttioncs terminorum legum anglorum (in French, also translated into English, 1527 ; reprinted as recently as 1812 as Les Termes de la Ley). The Abbreviacion of Statutis (1520), the first abridgment of the statutes in English, with an interesting preface by Rastell, giving reasons for the in- novation ; down to 1625 fifteen editions appeared.

TI. Wi1iam Rasretz (c. 1508-1565), printer and judge, son of the above, was born in London about 1508. At the age of seventeen he went to the

university of Oxford, but did not take a degree, being probably called home to superintend his father's business. The first work which bears his own imprint was A Dyaloge of Sir Thomas More (1531), a reprint of the edition published by his father in 1529. He also brought out a few law books, some poetry, an edition of Fabyan's Cronycle (1533), and The Apologye (1533) and The Supplycacyon of Soulys of his uncle Sir Thomas More. His office was "in Fletestrete in saynt Brydys chyrche yarde." He became a student at Lincoln's Inn on 12th September 1532, and gave up the printing business two years later. In 1547 he was appointed reader. On account of his religion he left England for Louvain ; but upon the accession of Mary he returned, and was made sergeant-at-law in October 1555. He was one of the seven sergeants who gave the famous feast that year in the Inner Temple Hall (see Dugdale's Orig. Jurid., 1680, p. 128). His patent as judge of the Queen's Bench

was granted on 27th October 1558. One of his pre- decessors, John Boteler, had also been printer and judge. Rastell continued on the bench until 1562, when he retired to Louvain without the queen's licence. By virtue of a special commission issued by the barons of the Exchequer on the occasion an inventory of his goods and chattels was taken. It furnishes an excellent idea of the modest nature of the law library (consisting of twenty-four works) and of the chambers of an Elizabethan judge (see Law Magazine, February 1844). He died at Louvain on 27th August 1565.

It is difficult to distinguish between the books written by him and those by his father. The following are believed to be his: 4 Colleceion of all the Statutes (1557), A Table collected of the Yeares of the Kynges of Englande (1561), both frequently reprinted with con- tinuations, and A Colleecion of Entrees, of Declaracions, &c. (1566), also frequently reprinted. The entries are not of Rastell's own drawing, but have been selected from printed and MS. collections ; their "pointed brevity and precision" are commended by Story. He supplied tables or indexes to several law books, and edited La novel natura brevium de Monsiewr Anton. Fitzherbert and

The Workes of Sir T. More in the English Tonge (1557). He is also stated to have written a life of Sir T. More, but it has not come down to us.

See Bale, Scriptores maioris Brytannia, 1557-59; Pits, Relationes hist. de rebus Angl., 1619; Tanner, Bibliotheca, 1748; Ames, Typogr. Antig., by Dibdin, 1816, iii. pp. 81, 8370; Wood, Athens Oxonienses, 1813, i. pp. 100, 343; Dodd, Church History, 1739, ii. p. 149; Foss, Biographia Juridica, 1870; Reeves, History of the Engl. Law, 1869, iii. p. 482; Marvin, Legal Bibliography, 1847 ; Clarke, Biblio- theca Legum, 1819; Bridgman, Legal Bibliography, 1807; Catalogue of Books in the British Museum before 1640, 1884.

RASTRICK, an urban sanitary district in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on an acclivity near the Calder, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway 5 miles south-east of Halifax and 34 north of Huddersfield. It possesses woollen and silk manufactures, and there are stone quarries in the neighbourhood. The ancient chapel of St Matthew was replaced in 1798 by a church in the Grecian style, which was restored in 1879, A school was founded in 1701 by Mrs Mary Law, who also endowed a charity for poor widows. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 1371 acres) in 1871 was 5896, and in 1881 it was 8039.

RAT. Under the article Mouse (vol. xvii. p. 5) an account has been already given of the relationships and chief allies of the animals known as rats, and the present article is confined to the two species to which the name rat is most strictly applicable. These are the so-called old English black rat, Mus rattus, and the common brown or Norway rat, Jf. decumanus. The first of these is a com- paratively small 2 — and lightly built 2S animal, seldom 5 exceeding about © 7 inchesin length, with a slender head, large ears = = a (see fig., A), and 4 a long thin scaly , tail about 8 or 9 inches in length. Its colour is, at least in all tem- perate climates, a peculiar shining

bluish black,

rather lighter on

the belly, the B.

ears, feet, and A. Black Rat (Mus rattus).

tail being also B. Brown Rat (M. decumanus).

black ; but in tropical regions it is represented by a grey or rufous-backed and white-bellied race to which the name of Alexandrian rat (Jf. alexandrinus) has been applied, owing to its having been first discovered at Alexandria, but which cannot be considered to be really specifically distinct from the true black rat. Its disposi-

tion is milder and more tamable than that of M. decu- manus, and it is therefore the species to which the tame white and pied rats kept as pets commonly belong. It is said that in some parts of Germany ©. rattus has been lately reasserting itself and increasing at the expense of M. decumanus, but this seems very unlikely from the pre- vious history of the two animals (compare Movss, vol. xvil. p. 5).

The brown or Norway rat, Jf. decumanus, is a heavily built animal, growing to 8 or 9 inches in length, with a bluff rounded head, small ears (see fig., B), and a com- paratively short tail,—always shorter than the head and body combined, and generally not longer than the body alone. Its colour is a uniform greyish brown above, and white below, the ears, feet, and tail being flesh-coloured ; melanistic varieties are by no means rare, and these are often mistaken for true black rats, but the differences in size and proportions form a ready means of distinguishing the two. The brown rat is believed to be a native of western China, where a wild race has been recently dis- covered so like it as to be practically indistinguishable. The two species agree fully in their predaceous habits, omnivorous diet, and great fecundity. They bear four or five times in the year from four to ten blind and naked young, which are in their turn able to breed at an age of about six months. The time of gestation is about twenty days. (0. T.)

RATAFTIA is a term applied to a flavouring essence, the basis of which is the essential oil of bitter almonds. Peach kernels are properly the source of ratafia, but any of the other substances yielding bitter almond oil is

used. The name “ratafia” is also applied in France to a variety of liquors, and from Dantzic a special liqueur is sent out under the name of “ratafia” (see vol. xiv. p. 686).

RATEL. The animals known as Ratels or Honey- badgers are small clumsy-looking creatures of about the size and appearance of the true badgers, and belong to the same natural group of the Carnivora, namely, the subfamily Meline of the large family Mustelide, which contains the otters, badgers, stoats, weasels, &c. (see MAMMALIA, vol. xv. p. 440). Of the ratels two species are generally recognized, viz., the Indian Ratel (Mellivora indica), a

African Ratel (Mellivora ratel).

native of all the peninsula of India, and the African (JZ. ratel), which ranges over the whole of the African continent —although by some authors the West African race is con- sidered to represent a third distinct species, which has

been named WM. leuconota. All the ratels are of very much the same colour, namely, iron-grey on the upper parts of the head, body, and tail, and black below, a style of colora- tion rather rare among mammals, as the upper side of the body is in the great majority darker than the lower. Their body is stout and thickly built; the legs are short and strong, and armed, especially on the anterior pair, with long curved fossorial claws; the tail is short; and the ear-conches are reduced to mere rudiments. These modi- fications are all in relation to a burrowing mode of life, for which the ratels are among the best adapted of all carnivores. The skull is conical, stout, and heavy, and the teeth, although sharper and less rounded than those of their allies the badgers, are yet far less suited to a purely carnivorous diet than those of such typical Mustelidz as the stoats, weasels, and martens. The two species of ratel may be distinguished by the fact that the African has a distinct white line round the body at the junction of the grey of the upper side with the black of the lower, while in the Indian this line is absent; the teeth also of the former are on the whole decidedly larger, rounder, and heavier than those of the latter. In spite of

these dif- ferences, however, the two ratels are so nearly allied that they might almost be considered to be merely geographical races of a single widely spread species.

The following account of the Indian ratel is extracted from Dr Judson's Mammals of India:—"The Indian badger is found throughout the whole of India, from the extreme south to the foot of the Himalayas, chiefly in hilly districts, where it has greater facilities for constructing the holes and dens in which it lives ; but also in the north of India in alluvial plains, where the banks of large rivers afford equally suitable localities wherein to make its lair, It is stated to live usually in pairs, and to eat rats, birds, frogs, white ants, and varions insects, and in the north of India it is accused of digging out dead bodies, and is popularly known as the grave-digger. It doubtless also, like its Cape congener, occa- sionally partakes of honey. It is often very destructive to poultry, and I have known of several having been trapped and killed whilst committing such depredations in Central India and in the northern Circars. In confinement the Indian badger is quiet and will par- take of vegetable food, fruits, rice, &c." O;

RATHENOW, a small town of Prussia in the province of Brandenburg, lies on the right bank of the Havel, 44 miles to the west of Berlin. It is known for its " Rathenow stones," 7.¢., bricks made of the clay of the Havel, and for its spectacles and optical instruments, which are exported to various parts of the world. It contains no buildings of note. The population in 1880 was 11,394, including 174 Roman Catholics and 68 Jews.

Rathenow has enjoyed the apne of a town since 1217. In 1394 it was taken and partly destroyed by the archbishop of Magdeburg. During the Thirty Years' War it was repeatedly occupied by the opposing troops, and in 1675 it was cleverly snatched from the Swedish garrison by the Great Elector.

RATIBOR (Polish Raciborz), a town of Prussian Silesia in the department of Oppeln, is pleasantly situated on the left bank of the Oder at the point where the river becomes navigable, about 12 miles from the Austrian frontier. The most prominent buildings are the handsome court- house by Schinkel and the Modern Gothic church ; on the right bank of the Oder is

the old chateau of the dukes of Ratibor. The town is the seat of a diversified industry, the chief products of which are machinery and railway gear, iron wares, tobacco and cigars, paper, sugar, furni- ture, and glass. Trade is carried on in these articles and in agricultural produce, and hemp and vegetables are largely grown in the environs. The population in 1880 was 18,373, or, including the immediately adjacent villages, 27,100, five-sixths of whom are Roman Catholics. In the town itself, where there are only about 2500 Poles, German is chiefly spoken, but Polish and Czechish dialects are predominant in the neighbourhood.

Ratibor, which received municipal privileges at the close of the 13th century, was formerly the capital of an independent duchy,

380 square miles in extent, which existed as such from 1288 to 1532 and afterwards passed successively into the hands of Austria and Prussia (1742). In 1815 a small mediate principality was formed out of the old lordship of Ratibor and certain ecclesiastical domains, and was conferred upon the landgrave Amadeus of Hessen- Rothenburg as compensation for Rhenish territory absorbed by Prussia. The title of "duke of Ratibor" was revived for his suc- cessor in 1840.

RATIONALISM. In modern usage the term " rational- ism" is employed almost exclusively to denote a theological tendency, method, or system, and is then applied in a narrower and a wider sense. In its wider sense, which is most common in English theological literature, it is the name of that mode of thought generally which finds the final test of religious truth in the human understanding, conscience, or reason, and particularly in the understanding. In its narrower sense, which is almost the only sense it bears in Germany, it denotes a definite school, or rather phase of theological thought, and a phase of thought which has now been outlived. It is with rationalism in this limited sense and as a tendency of German theological thought that this article deals. Rationalism had as its antitheses on the one hand supernaturalism, and on the other naturalism or simple deism, The matter of the contention between the rationalists and these two classes of opponents was supernatural revelation—its necessity, its existence, its possibility. The naturalists denied revela- tion altogether ;

the supernaturalists maintained the fact of a supernatural revelation, possessing an authority above "reason," though capable of being proved by "reason." The rationalists did not deny the fact of a revelation, though in the end they ignored it and claimed the right to submit every supposed revelation to the judgment of the "reason" or the moral sense. The rationalists themselves are, however, divided by some German writers into two classes—relative and absolute—those who hold that the matter of revelation is identical with the truths of reason, but admit that of necessity, or as a matter of fact, re- velation anticipated reason, and those who really call in question the fact of a revelation, without going quite the length of the naturalists in the rejection of Christianity. Kant drew a distinction between the "rationalist" and the "pure rationalist," defining the former as one who maintains that natural religion alone is essential, and the latter as one who admits the fact of a supernatural revelation but denies that it is a part of religion to know and accept it.

German rationalism was a specific theological form of the general intellectual movement of the last century known as "illuminism" or Aufkldrung; but, while the illu- minati generally ended in rejecting Christianity, the ration- alists retained and defended it in a form approved by the logical understanding or the moral sense. While ration- alism, as a child of the general intellectual movement of the age in which it appeared, owed much to the philosophy, science, and humanism of the intellectual life of Europe, as a specially theological tendency it was powerfully influ- enced by English deistical writings. Both Lechler and Ritschl assign to these writings a great immediate effect on the development of German rationalism. Of German thinkers it was especially the philosopher Wolff—who threw into a compact and systematic form, suited for Ger- man students, the philosophy of Leibnitz —who initiated German theologians into the rationalistic habit and method, though Wolff himself was a supernaturalist. The condition of the German church and the state of theology also con- tributed to the creation of rationalism, The hard intellect- ual orthodoxy of Lutheranism had already done its part towards producing the pietistic movement, and, while pietism helped to free men's minds from bondage to the Lutheran creeds and once more directed attention to the

Bible, the cold intellectual habit of orthodoxy nurtured the same habit of rationalism while it failed to satisfy it, and so created a reaction against itself. Thus both orthodoxy and pietism were agents in calling forth rationalism, which was to prove the most dangerous opponent to both. More than one of the foremost rationalists had passed through the school of pietism.

Regarding rationalism as the opponent of supernatural- ism and naturalism, and as an opponent which appealed in the conflict almost exclusively to either the logical under- standing or the moral sense as the criterion of religious truth, it may be said to have existed in Germany for nearly a century (c. 1740-1836), and to have flourished about half that length of time (c. 1760-1810),—that is, it took its rise simultaneously with the publication of Wolff's writ- ings (1736-50) and the translation into German of the works of the English deists (Tindal's Christianity as Old as the Creation was translated in 1741), displayed its greatest strength in Semler's critical works (1760-73) and in Kant's philosophy (1781-93), began then to decline gradually under the influence of the works of Herder, Jacobi, Fichte (in his later period), and Hegel, and at last died out when Schleiermacher especially, in the department of theology proper, and Baur and Strauss, amongst others, in the de- partment of Biblical criticism, had given currency to ideas and issues which rendered its main contentions objectless and its criteria of religious truth invalid.

The English deists, the German illuminati, and the French philosophers had before the middle of the last century, with a vast array of argument, called in question the idea of a supernatural revelation, and had seriously attacked the supernatural origin of the Hebrew and Chris- tian Scriptures. Christian Wolff undertook the defence, and claimed to have demonstrated the supernatural reve- lation of the Bible. He made the old distinction between natural and revealed religion of fundamental importance, and maintained that demonstrable truths alone can be re- garded as part of natural religion. Revealed religion he drew solely from the Scriptures, and sought to prove by a chain of reasoning and historical evidence their divine ori- gin. Thus in reality the intellect alone was

constituted the faculty for ultimately determining the truth of revelation as well as for constructing a natural religion. The general adoption of the distinction between natural and revealed religion, of the appeal to logical and historical evidence and argument for proof of the truths of both, and of the supposition that the truths of natural religion could be demonstrated while those of revealed religion were above, if not contrary to reason, and rested solely on the authority of Scripture, naturally divided theologians into two hostile camps, and proved, contrary to Wolff's expectations, more favourable to the naturalists and rationalists than to the supernaturalists. If it was admitted by all that the appeal in the contention was to be to the understanding, and the religious nature and higher reason were left out of account, and if, moreover, the truths of natural religion —God, duty, immortality—were supposed by all to be demonstrable, supernatural revelation was certain in that age to be put to great disadvantage. The result of Wolff's philosophy was a natural theology, a utilitarian system of morals, without any religious fervour or Christian pro- fundity. Wolff's philosophy thus inaugurated in Germany a theological period corresponding, in its way, with the period in England between 1688 and 1750, when "Chris- tianity appeared to be made for nothing but to be 'proved,'" and the only test to be applied was "reason," which was simply the philosophy in vogue. In both cases religion was regarded as substantially a set of doctrines, revelation as the publication of them, and God as teaching them after the most anthropomorphic manner. No profound concep-

— 37

tion had been formed of either religion or revelation, and none at all of their relation to each other, while the idea of God was simply that of the deists.

It was in the application of its principles and method (thus brought into vogue) to Biblical studies that rational- ism won its greatest triumphs, and really accomplished its greatest measure of good work. Johann Salomo Semler (1725-1791), the father of modern Biblical criticism, as the Germans call him, was the greatest representative of the school in this

department. A pietist by education, with something of Gottfried Arnold's liking for heretics and all his dislike of ecclesiasticism, but with none of Arnold's mysticism, a man of immense learning, without any clear and systematic management of it, he was the first German to apply the strict principles of historical criticism, in conjunction with the rationalistic truths and errors of his day, to the study of the Scriptures and ecclesi-astical history, particularly the history of doctrines. He assailed with all the wealth of his learning the traditional view of the limits and authority of the Biblical canon especially, and having, as he held, demonstrated its human origin and fallibility, he proceeded to deal freely with the books composing it, as sharing the failings common to everything human. He found the Scriptures pervaded with "local ideas," and his Christianity was really limited to the "natural religion" of the deists and the moral truths taught by Christ. Asa man who had been under a pietistic training, he was, it is true, unwilling to refer to the understanding alone for evidence of the truths of Christianity, but his enlargement of the test is confined to the admission of an appeal to the measure of virtue and happiness produced. By this extended test he tries the matter of the Scriptures, assigning to his category of local ideas " whatever is not adapted to make men wise unto their true advantage." The supernatural origin of the Scriptures as writings and most of the miracles recorded in them he rejected; but, on the other hand, he was a vigorous opponent of the adversaries of Christianity and of the naturalists who denied revelation altogether, —Reim-

arus, for instance, the author of the Wolfenbiittel /rag-

mente, Other decided rationalists contemporaneous with Semler were Teller (1734-1804), Eberhard (1739-1809), and Steinbart (1738-1809), who all agreed in confounding religion with morality, and in reducing Christianity to a popularization of utilitarian morals.

Meanwhile the profounder spirits of the nation—Lessing, Herder, Hamann, and others—were conceiving truer ideas of the nature of religion, of the human conditions of revela- tion, and of the character of the Bible and the mission of Christianity. It was, however, Kant who produced the greatest immediate effect on the history of rationalism.

Himself a rationalist, regarding religion only as a form of morality, and revelation as at most a possible aid to the earlier propagation of moral principles, he nevertheless started doubts and ideas which sealed the doom of rational- ism in its first shallow form. There was an end of the demonstrable natural religion of Wolff when once Kant's criticism of the proofs of the existence of God and of the immortality of the soul met with even partial acceptance. The breath of lofty mysticism which inspired his grand ethical system was also fatal to the cold shallow reasoning and commonplace utilitarianism of previous rationalists. Yet, though Kant proclaimed principles which compelled rationalism to assume other positions, and which really contained within them the seeds of its destruction, he re- mained himself a rationalist, for the reason especially that he never advanced to a profound conception of the nature of either religion or revelation and the conditions and relations of both. His fruitful idea of the relation of revelation to a community rather than to an individual

he was unable to apply properly to the revelation contained in the Bible. Though his morality was something infinitely beyond 18th-century utilitarianism, it still constituted for him religion, and the only test he applied to a professed revelation was that it must contain the purest moral teach- ing. Fichte, accepting Kant's ethical principles, taught that a revelation—that is, proclamation of God as the moral lawgiver of the world—might be a necessity in the case of a degeneration of mankind to such an extent that the idea of goodness should be lost. On the other hand, Fries and Jacobi took up the position of Kant regarding the limitations of human knowledge of religious truth, and still further prepared for the advance beyond rationalism by claiming for man a special religious faculty, under the names of fazth, feeling, or a sense of the infinite. Fichte, in his later period, made an advance in the same direction, abandoning the abstract ethical position of Kant by an appeal to love as the supreme principle in God and man. He thus reached a position more suited for the apprelien- sion of the nature of religion, and he recognized in the workings of genius—with its incomprehensible light and movements—manifestations analogous to the phenomena of

revelation. Meantime, the rationalists amongst theo- logians continued their work of reducing the Bible, with its history, miracles, and doctrines, by one means or another, into harmony with their notions of a rational and useful moral revelation, though for the most part they did not acknowledge the claims of the Old Testament to be considered a revelation at all, or at most a revelation for the childhood of the race. The accounts of miracles in the Bible were either denied or explained away as natural occurrences, or as poetical and Oriental phraseology, while the doctrines of the Bible and the creeds were diluted into religious or moral commonplaces. As representative Bibli- cal scholars of this class J. G. Eichhorn (1752-1827) and H. E. G. Paulus may be mentioned, as representative theologians Henke (1752-1809), Wegscheider (1771-1849), and Rohr (1752-1848).

But early in the new century the triumph of a profounder philosophy of religion and of a worthier treatment of re- ligious systems and the records of revelation began rapidly to make itself felt. Schleiermacher once more carried religion from the confined and frigid regions of the under- standing and the distant heights of abstract morals into the vaster and yet nearer, warmer and yet clearer, world of feeling. Following Herder, he annihilated the rational- istic distinction between natural and revealed religion by claiming revelation for all religion and religions, and he mediated in the fruitless contention of rationalism versus supernaturalism by vindicating a supernatural element for the religious life and Christianity, while at the same time he justified rationalism in its rejection of any infraction of the laws of nature. He put an end to the conception of revelation as the communication of doctrine by sub- stituting for it the, at all events, profounder and truer view that it consists in a fundamental affection of the whole religious nature, giving it a new and special direction, the organs of it being historical personalities endowed with supreme religious genius. Hegel and Schelling contributed in other ways, particularly by substituting another idea of God and nature, to the decay of rationalism. Amongst Biblical critics De Wette, under the influence of Herder's poetic insight into early literatures and of Fries's religious philosophy, contributed largely to a truer appreciation of the Bible as literature and the record of revelation than such scholars as Eichhorn and Paulus had attained to. In the year 1828 Dr Pusey could inform

English theolo- gians that the school had had its day, and early in the third decade of the century Hase was able to sum up the work of the school, which was then practically defunct,

though some of its ablest representatives continued for some years to defend its positions. Hase's summary is, that rationalism failed to recognize the historical forces that condition all religious life and progress; that it necessarily issued in a barren religion of the intellect ; that in the last instance it drew its decisions, not from the depths of the soul, but from a shallow popular philosophy which overlooked the rights of religious feeling ; that on that account it kept its God of the outward universe as far removed from men's hearts and lives as possible ; but that, nevertheless, it was through it especially that a breach between modern culture and the church was avoided and the banner of free inquiry was kept waving. Even men as far removed from rationalism as Tholuck, Dorner, Ritschl, and Alexander Schweizer acknowledge that it was a means, however imperfect, of effectually upholding in the church the great principle that religious truth has an intimate affinity to man's nature and must be freely examined and intelligently appropriated. Tholuck pro- nounces it not an outward skin disease in the history of Protestantism, but an integral part of that history and a phase of its development, in some respects abnormal, in others normal and natural.

Literature.—Staudlin, Gesehiehte des Rationalismus und Supra-naturalismus, 1826; Amand Saintes, Hist. erit. du Rationalisne en Allemagne, 1841; H. J. Rose, The State of Protestantism in Germany deseribed, 2d ed. 1829; E. B. Pusey, Historieal Inquiry into the Causes of the Rationalist Charaeter lately predominant in the Theology of Germany, 1828; Tholuck, Vorgesehichte des Rat., 1858-61, and Geschichte des Rat., 1865; Hase, Theolog. Streit- sehriften, 1884 Hagenbach, Kirehengesehiehte des 18 und 19 Jahrh., 1856, 8d ed. ; Heinrich Lang, Hin Gang dureh die ehrist- liche Welt, 2d ed. 1870, p. 110 sg. ; Diestel, Gesehiehte des Alten Testaments in der christlichen Kirche, 1869, p. 672 sq.; Ritschl, Christ. Lehre von der Rechtfertigung, &c., 1870, vol. i. cc. vii.-ix. ;

the Histories of Protestant theology by Frank, Dorner, and Gass. (J. F. 8.)

RATISBON (German Regensburg), an ancient city of Bavaria, the seat of a bishop, and the capital of the Upper Palatinate, is pleasantly situated on the right bank of the Danube, opposite the influx of the Regen, from which it derives its German name. It lies almost exactly in the centre of the kingdom, about 65 miles to the north-east of Munich and 53 miles to the south-east of Nuremberg. On the other side of the river is the small town of Stadt-am- Hof, connected with Ratisbon by a long stone bridge of the 12th century, above and below which are the islands of the Obere and Untere Worth. In external appearance Ratisbon is quaint and romantic, presenting almost as faithful a picture of a town of the early Middle Ages as Nuremberg does of the later. Most of the streets are narrow and irregular, but spacious promenades have been laid out on the site of the old fortifications. One of the most characteristic features in its architecture is the number of strong loopholed towers attached to the more ancient dwellings, recalling a day when civic broils were of frequent recurrence. The interesting "street of the ambassadors" is so called because it contained the resi- dences of most of the ambassadors to the German diet, whose coats-of-arms may still be seen on many of the houses.

The cathedral of Ratisbon, though small in size, is a very interesting example of pure German Gothic, diverg- ing in several points from the type elaborated in France. It was founded in 1275 and completed in 1634, with the exception of the towers, which were added during a recent restoration. The details are very harmonious and pleasing, and the interior contains numerous interesting monuments, including one of Peter Vischer's masterpieces. Adjoining the cloisters are two chapels of earlier date than the cathe- dral itself, one of which, known as the "old cathedral," goes back perhaps to the 8th century. The Schotten-

kirche, a plain Romanesque basilica of the 12th century, derives its name from the monastery of Irish Benedictines ("'Scoti") to which it was attached; the principal door- way is covered with very singular grotesque

carvings, the meaning of which remains a mystery. The old parish church of St Ulrich is a good example of the Transition

Ratisbon.

1. Cathedral.

2. Schottenkirche. style of the 13th century. Other specimens of the Romanesque basilica style are the church of Obermiinster, dating from 1010, and the abbey church of St Emmeran, built in the 13th century and remarkable as one of the few German churches with a detached belfry. The beau- tiful cloisters of the ancient abbey, one of the oldest in Germany, are still in fair preservation. In 1809 the conventual buildings were converted into a palace for the prince of Thurn and Taxis, hereditary postmaster-general of the old German empire. The town-house, a somewhat gloomy pile, dating in part from the 14th century, contains the rooms occupied by the imperial diet of Germany from 1663 to 1806. An historical interest also attaches to the Golden Cross Inn, where Charles V. made the acquaintance of the fair Barbara Blumberger, the mother of Don John of Austria (b. 1547). The promenade is adorned with a bust of Kepler, who died at Ratisbon in 1630. Perhaps the most pleasing modern building in the city is the Gothic villa of the king of Bavaria on the bank of the Danube. Among the chief manufactures of Ratisbon are iron and steel wares, pottery, parquet flooring, and lead pencils. Boat-building is also prosecuted, and a brisk transit trade is carried on in salt, grain, and timber. In 1880 the town contained 34,516 inhabitants, of whom 27,844 were Roman Catholics, 5995 Protestants, and 675 Jews. Stadt-am- Hof, which practically forms a suburb of Ratisbon, con- tained 3392 inhabitants.

Near Ratisbon are two very handsome classical buildings erected by Louis I. of Bavaria, with the aid of the architect Klenze, as national monuments of German patriotism and greatness. The more imposing of the two is the Walhalla, a costly reproduction of the Parthenon, erected as a Teutonic ge of fame on a hill rising from the Danube at Donaustauf, 6 miles to the east. The massive substructions of the temple somewhat dwarf the building itself when seen from a distance, and the choice of a classic model for a German Pantheon seems somewhat incongruous, but after

these deductions are made it still remains a magnificent and imposing structure. The interior, which is as rich as coloured marbles, gilding, and sculptures can make it, contains the busts of more than a hundred German worthies. The second of King Louis's buildings is the Befreiungshalle at Kelheim, 14 miles above Ratisbon, a large circular building, which has for its aim the glorification of the heroes of the war of liberation in 1813.

8. St Emmeran's Church. 4. Thurn and Taxis Palace.

5. Town-house. 6. Golden Cross Inn.

292

The early Celtic settlement of Radespona was chosen by the Romans, who named it Castra Regina, as the centre of their power on the upper Danube, and it soon attained considerable importance. It afterwards became the seat of the dukes of Bavaria and one of the main bulwarks of the East Frankish monarchy ; and it was also the focus from whieh Christianity spread over southern Germany. St Emmeran founded an abbey here in the middle of the 7th century, and St Boniface established the bishop- ric abont a hundred years later. Ratisbon acquired the freedom of the empire in the 13th century and was for a time the most flourishing city in southern Germany. It became the chief seat of the trade with India and the Levant, and the boatmen of Ratisbon are frequently heard of as expediting the journeys of the crusaders. The city was loyally Ghibelline in its sympathies and was a favourite residence of the German emperors. Numerous diets were held here from time to time, and after 1663 it became the regular place of meeting of the German diet. The Reforma- tion found only temporary acceptance at Ratisbon and was met by a counter-reformation inspired by the Jesuits. Before this period the city had almost wholly lost its commercial importance, owing to the changes in the great highways of trade. Ratisbon had its due share in the Thirty Years' and other wars, and is said to have suffered in all no fewer than seventeen sieges. In 1807 the town and bishopric were assigned to the prince primate Dalberg and in 1810 they were ceded to Bavaria. After the battle of Eggmiih] (1809) the Austrians retired upon Ratisbon, and

the pursuing French defeated them again beneath its walls and reduced great part of the city to ashes.

RATLAM or Rurzam, a native state of India, in the Western Malwa Agency (Central India Agency), lying be- tween 23° 2' and 23° 36' N. lat. and_74° 42' and 75° 17' E. long., with an area of 729 square miles, and a popula- tion (1881) of 87,314 (males 45,779, females 41,535),— Hindus numbering 54,034, Mohammedans 9913, Jains 6038, Christians 19, and aboriginals 17,297. Its revenue from all sources in 1881-82 was estimated at £130,000. The Nimach State Railway connecting Indore with Nimach and Nasirabad passes by Ratlam town. This town, which is one of the principal seats of the opium trade of Malwa, is superior to most cities in Indore, and has good bazaars. Its population in 1881 amounted to 31,066 (16,544 males and 14,522 females).

Ratlam state is held as tributary to Sindhia; but in 1819 an arrangement was made by which the raja agreed to pay an annual tribute amounting to about £6600, while Sindhia engaged never to send any troops into the country or to interfere with the in- ternal administration. This tribute was assigned by the treaty of 1844 between the British Government and Sindhia in part

payment of the Gwalior contingent. It is now paid to the British Government.

RATNAGIRI or Rurnacuerry, a British district of India, in the Konkan division of the Bombay presidency, with an area of 3922 square miles. It lies between 15° 40' and 18° 5'N. lat. and 73° 5' and 73° 55' E. long., and is bounded on the N. by the Savitri river, separating it from the Janjira Agency, and by Kolaba district ; on the E. by the Western Ghats, dividing it from the districts of Satara and Belgaum and the native state of Kolhapur ; on the §., where it is reduced to a strip of sea-coast not more than 4 miles wide, by the Portuguese possessions of Goa; and on the W. by the Arabian Sea. The district forms a belt between the Ghats and the sea, and its general character is rocky and rugged; nearly all the fertile land lies on the banks of the streams which intersect the country. 'The coast, about 150 miles in length, is almost uniformly rocky and dangerous. At intervals of about 10 miles a river or bay opens, sufficiently

large to form a secure harbour for native craft, and the promontories at the river-mouths are almost invariably crowned with the ruins of an old fort. The rivers and creeks are generally navigable for about 20 miles, and afford great facilities for a coasting trade. The denudation of the forests has apparently tended to promote deposits of silt; but active measures have of late been taken to preserve and extend the forest area. 'Tigers, leopards, bears, bison, wild boar, sambhar deer, and hyenas are found in the forests on the

slopes and near the foot of the Sahyadri Hills. At the beginning of British rule there were no roads, and traffic was confined to places where there was water carriage; but a network of roads has now been made, and the open- ing of the Ghat roads to cart traffic has revolutionized the trade and concentrated it at Chiplun, Rajapur, and Vengurla, which form the gates of a considerable traffic to and from the Deccan. The exports are salt fish, shell- lime, and cocoa-nuts, and the imports comprise food grains, molasses, tobacco, chillies, ground nuts, turmeric, ghi, blankets, piece goods, and iron. The mean temper- ature, as registered at Ratnagiri station, is 78°°6, and the average annual rainfall is 103°58 inches.

In 1881 the population of Ratnagiri distriet was 997,090 (473,058 males and 524,037 females),—Hindus numbering 921,046, Moham- medaus 71,051, and Christians 3275. The district contains three towns with a population exceeding 10,000,—RATNAGIRI (see be- low), Malwan (15,565), and Chiplnn (12,065). Since it came under British rule the number of inhabitants has increased threefold ; all the land is occupied, and the population is greater than the land can feed. Food has in consequence to be imported, and the condition of the people would be deplorable were it not their custom to move in large numbers to Bombay in search of employment, where they earn good wages and return to spend it in their homes. The chief crops are grain and rice. The extent of arable land is small, but on the whole cultivation is good. Of 1,117,686 acres under actual cultivation in 1883-84, of which 38,865 were twice cropped, cereals occupied 1,020,583 and pulses 41,733 acres. There are no manufactures of any importance ; but the school of industry at

Ratnagiri possesses steam saw-mills, and undertakes wood and iron work ofall descriptions. The revenue of the district in 1883-84 amounted to £126,596, of which the land-tax contributed £91,429.

Ratnagiri formed part of the dominions of the peshwa, and was annexed by the British Government in 1818 on the overthrow of Baji Rao.

RATNAGIRI or RurnacuHerry, chief town of the above district, is situated on the Konkan coast in 16° 59' N. lat. and 73° 19' E. long., 136 miles south by east of Bombay. A leading industry connected with the town is the sardine fishery, which usually takes place in January and February, and engages fleets of canoes. A single net-caster will fill his canoe in the course of a morning. The lighthouse was erected in 1867; its light, visible 18 miles distant, is 250 feet above high water. The population of the town in 1881 numbered 12,616 (males 6418, females 6198).

RATRAMNUS, a theological controversialist of some mark, who flourished in the 9th century, was a monk of the Benedictine abbey of Corbie near Amiens, but beyond this fact almost nothing of his personal history has been preserved. He is now best known by his treatise on the Eucharist (De corpore et sanguine Domini liber), in which he controverted the doctrine of transubstantiation as taught ina similar work by his contemporary Radbertus Paschasius (see above, p. 210). In the controversy about election, when appealed to by Charles the Bald, he wrote two books De predestinatione Dei, in which he maintained the doctrine of a twofold predestination, nor did the fate of Gottschalk deter him from supporting the view of that un- fortunate theologian against Hincmar as to the orthodoxy of the expression "trina Deitas." Ratramnus perhaps won most glory in his own day by his Contra Grecorum opposita, in four books (868), a much valued contribution to the controversy between the Eastern and Western Churches which had been raised by the publication of the encyclical letter of Photius in 867.

RATTAN. See Caner and Pam.

RATTAZZI, Urpano (1808-1873), Italian statesman, was born on 29th June 1808 at Alessandria, and from 1838 practised with great success at the bar. In 1848 he was sent to the chamber of deputies in Turin as

representative of his native town. By his debating powers he contributed to the defeat of the Balbo ministry, and for a short time held the portfolio of minister of public instruction ; after-

wards, under Gioberti, he became minister of the interior, and on the retirement of the last-named in 1849 he be- came practically the head of the Government. The defeat at Novara compelled the resignation of Rattazzi in March 1849. His election as president of the chamber in 1852 was one of the earliest results of the so-called " connubio " with Cavour, and having become minister of justice in 1853 he in that and the next following years was able to carry a number of measures of reform of considerable importance, including that for the suppression of certain of the monastic orders. During a momentary reaction of public opinion he resigned office in 1858, but again entered the cabinet under La Marmora in 1859 as minister of the interior. In consequence of the cession of Nice and Savoy he again retired in January 1860. He was entrusted with the formation of a new ministry in March 1862, but in consequence of his policy of repression towards Garibaldi was driven from office in the following December. He was again prime minister in 1867, from April to October. His death took place at Frosinone on 5th June 1873. (See Iraty, vol. xiii. p. 488 sg.

RATTLESNAKE. Rattlesnakes are a small group of the family of Pit-vipers (Crotalidx), characterized by a tail which terminates in a chain of horny, loosely con- nected rings, the so-called "rattle." The "pit" by which the family is distinguished from the ordinary vipers is a deep depression in the integument of the sides of the snout, between the nostrils and the eye; its physiological function is unknown. The rattle is a complicated and highly specialized organ, developed from the simple conical seale or epidermal spine, which in the majority of snakes forms the termination of the general integument of the tail. The bone by which the root of the rattle is supported consists of the last caudal vertebrae, from three to eight in number, which are enlarged, dilated, compressed, and coalesced (fig. 1, a). This bone is covered with thick and

a

R=

:

Rattle of Rattlesnake (after Czermak).

Fig. 1.—Caudal vertebre, the last coalesced ina single bone a. Fig. 2.—End of tail (rattle removed); a, cuticular matrix covering terminal bone. Fig. 8.—Side view of a rattle; cand d the oldest, aand 6 the youngest joints. Fig. 4.—A rattle with joints disconnected ; « fits into b and is covered by it; 2 into d in like manner.

vascular cutis, transversely divided by two constrictions into three portions, of which the proximal is larger than the median, and the median much larger than the distal (fig. 2, a). This cuticular portion constitutes the matrix of a horny epidermoid covering which closely fits the shape of the underlying soft part and which is the first commencement of the rattle, as it appears in very young rattlesnakes before they have shed their skin for the first time. When the period of a renewal of the skin approaches anew covering of the extremity of the tail is formed below the old one, but the latter, instead of being cast off with the remainder of the epidermis, is retained by the posterior swelling of the end of the tail, forming now the first loose joint of the rattle. This process is repeated on succeeding

exuviations,—the new joints being always larger than the old ones as long as the snake grows (fig. 3). Perfect rattles therefore taper towards the point, but generally the oldest (terminal) joints wear away in time and are lost. As rattlesnakes shed their skins more than once every year, the number of joints of the rattle does not indicate the age of the animal but the number of exuvia- tions which it has undergone. The largest rattle in the British Museum has twenty-one joints. The rattle (fig. 4) consists thus of a variable number of dry, hard, horny cup-shaped joints, each of which loosely grasps a portion of the preceding, and all of which are capable of being shaken against each other. If the interspaces between the joints are filled with water, as often happens in wet weather, no noise can be

produced. The motor power lies in the lateral muscles of the tail, by which a vibratory motion is communicated to the rattle, the noise produced being similar to that of a weak child's rattle and percep- tible at a distance of from 10 to 20 yards.

The habit of violently and rapidly agitating the tail is by no means peculiar to the rattlesnake, but has been observed in other venomous as well as innocuous snakes with the ordinary termination of the tail, when under the influence of fear or anger. The special object for which the rattle has been developed in these snakes is unknown.

Rattlesnakes are entirely confined to the New World. North-American authors distinguish now a great number of different kinds, the most recent, Garman (/eptiles and Batrachians of North America, 1883, 4to), enumerating twelve distinct species and thirteen additional varieties ; but all these species or varieties fall into two groups, viz., one which has the upper side of the head covered with the ordinary nine dermal shields, and the other in which the shields between and behind the eyes are broken up or replaced by small scales. The former group consists of two species only, of comparatively small size, both North American, Crotalus miliarius being the more generally known. The second group comprises the more formidable kinds of South as well as North America, which are gener- ally described under the names of C. horridus and C. durissus. In the older standard works the former name was applied to the southern form, which extends from Paraguay and Chili through Brazil into Mexico, and the latter to the common North-American rattlesnake; in modern American works this nomenclature is reversed. C. horridus and C. durissus belong to the most danger- ous of poisonous snakes. If a person bitten by an adult rattlesnake escapes with life, protracted illness and the loss of or injury to the wounded limb are frequently the consequence. They inhabit localities to which the sun has free access, prairies, rough stony ground, &c. Specimens of 5 feet in length are not rare. Formerly common in the eastern parts of the United States, and still so in thinly inhabited districts of the western States, rattlesnakes, like the vipers of Europe, have gradually succumbed to the unceasing persecution of man. They vary much in colour : a common type of coloration is a brownish ground gpiour, sometimes yellowish, sometimes blackish. Series of large

dark spots, frequently edged with yellow, and of very variable shape, run along the back and sides. The head and neck are ornamented with dark or black longitudinal bands, or are marked by an almost uniform coloration.

RAU, Karu Hernricu (1792-1870), German political economist, was born at Erlangen on 23d November 1792. He pursued his studies, devoting himself principally to the (so-called) cameralistic sciences, from 1808 to 1812 at the university of his native place, where he afterwards remained as a privat-docent. In 1814 he obtained the prize offered by the academy of Gottingen for the best treatment

of the question, How the disadvantages arising from the abolition of trade guilds might be removed. His memoir, greatly enlarged, was published in 1816 under the title Ceber das Zunftwesen und die Folgen seiner Aufhebung. He was then favourable to the continued existence of trade corporations on a reformed basis, but afterwards abandoned this view. In the same year appeared his Prime linex histori politices. In 1818 he became professor at Erlan- gen. Hecompeted successfully in 1820 for a prize offered by the academy of Haarlem for the best essay on the causes of poverty ; and in the same year he published a transla- tion, characterized by Roscher as "free, but very good," of Storch's Cours d'Economie Politique, with notes and addi- tions of his own. In 1822 he was called to the chair of political economy at Heidelberg, where the rest of his life was spent, in the main, in teaching and research. He took some part, however, in public affairs: in 1837 he was nominated a member of the first chamber of the duchy of Baden, and did good service in that capacity ; and in 1851 he was one of the commissioners sent to England on the part of the Zollverein to study the Industrial Exhibition. A result of this mission was his account of the agricultural implements exhibited at London (Die landwirthschaftlichen Gertthe der Londoner Ausstellung, 1853). He was elected a corresponding member of the French Institute in 1856. After a useful and honourable career he died at Heidel- berg on 18th March 1870.

His principal work is the Lehrbuch der politisehen Ockonomie (1826-37), an encyclopedia of the economic knowledge of his time, written with a special view to the guidance of practical men. The doctrines are, in the main, those of Smith and Say; but they are treated in an independent manner, and the conclusions of his predecessors are modified, especially by. giving larger scope to the action of the state. The three volumes are respectively occupied with (1) political economy, properly so called, or the theory of wealth, (2) administrative science (Volkswirthschaftspolitik), and (3) finance. The two last he recognizes as necessarily admitting of variations in accordance with the special circumstances of different countries, whilst the first is more akin to the exact sciences, and is in many respects capable of being treated, or at least illustrated, mathematically. This threefold division marks his close relation to the older German cameralistic writers, with whose works he was familiarly acquainted. It isa consequence in part of his conformity to their method and his attention to administrative applications that his treatise was found peculiarly adapted for the use of the official class, and long maintained its position as their special text- book. He was the economic teacher, says Roscher, of the well- governed middle states of Germany from 1815 to 1848. The book has passed through many editions ; in that of 1870 by Adolf Wagner it was transformed into a new book.

In the earlier part of his scientific life Rau tended strongly towards the relative point of view and an historical method in economics. But, though in his great work he kept clear of the exaggeratcd abstraction of the Ricardians and rejected some of

their a priort assumptions, he never joined the historical school. –

To the end he occupied a somewhat indeterminate position with respect to that school ; on the whole, however, he more and more subordinated historical investigation to immediate practical in- terests, and in his economic politics moved in the direction of limiting rather than extending the sphere of state action. His general merits are thoroughness of treatment, accuracy of state- ment, and balance of judgment ; he shows much industry in the collection and skill in the utilization of statistical

facts; and his exposition is orderly and clear. Roscher finds in his earlier works a spirituel charm which disappears in the later.

Besides the publications already mentioned, he was author of the following :—Ueber den Luxus, 1817 ; Ansichten der Staatswirth- schaft mit besonderer Beziehung auf Deutschland, 1820; Malthus und Say tiber die Ursachen der jetzigen Handelsstockung, 1821 ; Grundriss der Kameralwissenschaft oder Wirthsehaftslehre, 1823 ; Ueber die Kameralwissensehaft, Eniwiekelung thres Wesens wnd threr Thetle, 1825; Ueber die Landwirthsehaft der Rheinpfalz, 1830; an academic oration De vi nature in rempublicam, 1831; and Gresehichte des Pfluges, 1845.

Rau founded in 1834 the Arehiv der politisehen Oekonomie wnd Polizetwissenschaft, in which he wrote a number of articles, after- wards issued in separate form: amongst them may be named those on the debt of Baden, on the accession of Baden to the Zollverein, on the crisis of the Zollverein in the summer of 1852, on the American banks, on the new English poor law, on List's national

hea

RAU

system of political economy, and on the minimum size of a peasant property. This enumeration will give an idea of the extent and variety of his researches.

RAUCH, Curistian Dantet (1777-1857), one of the most celebrated sculptors of modern times, was born at Arolsen in the principality of Waldeck on the 2d of January 1777. The opening career of the young artist was attended with considerable difficulty, his parents being poor and unable to place him under efficient masters. His first instructor taught him little else than the art of sculpturing grave-stones, and Professor Ruhl of Cassel could not give him much more. A wider field of improve- ment opened up before him when he removed to Berlin in 1797 ; but poverty still hampered all his efforts. He was obliged to earn a livelihood by becoming a royal lackey, and to reserve the prosecution of

his favourite art for his spare hours. The genius of Rauch, however, soon forced itself into notice and recommended him to several persons of influence who were able to give him assistance. Queen Louisa, surprising him one day in the act of modelling her features in wax, sent him to study at the Academy of Art. Not long afterwards, in 1804, Count Sandrecky gave him the means to complete his education at Rome, where William von Huniboldt, Canova, and Thorwaldsen be- friended him. Under such patronage the young sculptor made rapid progress. Among other works, he executed bas-reliefs of Hippolytus and Pheedra, Mars and Venus wounded by Diomede, and a Child praying. In 1811 Rauch entered upon the eminent part of his career, when he was commissioned to execute a monument for Queen Louisa of Prussia. The statue, representing the queen in a sleeping posture, was placed in a mausoleum in the grounds of Charlottenburg, and procured great fame for the artist. Commissions for portraits came pouring in upon him. The consummate tact with which he seized individual characteristics and the artistic manner in which he treated them at once established his reputation. The erection of nearly all public statues came to be entrusted to him. He began to execute that long series of representa- tions of great Germans in which his genius is exhibited to full advantage. In course of time almost every important town throughout the country possessed a bust of some eminent statesman, patriot, or man of genius from his chisel. There were, among others, Bliicher at Breslau, Maximilian at Munich, Francke at Halle, Diirer at Nurem- berg, Luther at Wittenberg, and the grand-duke Paul Frederick at Schwerin. At length, in 1830, he com- menced, along with Schinkel the architect, the models for a colossal monument at Berlin to Frederick the Great. This work was inaugurated with great pomp in May 1851, and has ever since been regarded as one of the masterpieces of modern sculpture. On a granite pedestal 25 feet in height stands the colossal equestrian statue of the king. His plain pinched features and his grotesque costume are given with historical exactness without impairing the artistic effect. An air of resistless majesty ennobles the mean countenance, and a bold and skilful treatment hides the absurdity of the garb. The excellence of his master- piece was recognized throughout the world. Princes de- corated him with honours. The academies of Europe enrolled him among their members. Especially did his own sovereign and countrymen regard him with proud affection and respect. A statue of Kant for Konigsberg

and a statue of Thaer for Berlin occupied his attention during some of his last years; and he had just finished a model of Moses praying between Aaron and Hur when he was attacked by his last illness. He died.on 3d December

1357.

RAUMER, Friepricu Lupwic Grore von (1781-1873), German historian, was born at Worlitz in Anhalt on 14th

RA U—

May 1781. His father (who died in 1822) was much esteemed in Anhalt, where, as "kammerdirector," he did excellent service to agriculture. Raumer was educated at the Joachimsthal Gymnasium,, Berlin, and at the universi- ties of Halle and Gottingen. In 1801 he began to practise as a lawyer in the Brandenburg chamber, and in the follow- ing year he was made assessor. From 1806 to 1808 he was connected with a department of the crown lands chamber at Wusterhausen near Berlin. Having been made a coun- cillor in 1809, he was called in 1810 to a post in the office for the national debt, and soon afterwards received an appointment in the bureau of the chancellor, Hardenberg. He was made a professor at the university of Breslau in 1811, and in 1819 he became professor of political science and history at Berlin. In 1815 he had carried on histori- cal investigations in Venice, and in the two following years he had travelled much in Germany, Switzerland, and Italy. At Berlin he was for some time a member of the Upper Board of Censors and secretary of the Academy of Sciences. The former office he resigned in 1831, the latter in 1847. His professorship at the Berlin university he did not give up until 1853, and even then he did not altogether cease to lecture. In 1848 he was elected a member of the national assembly at Frankfort, where he associated him- self with the right centre; and from Frankfort he was sent on a mission to Paris, At a later period he was a member of the first chamber of the Prussian parliament. He died at Berlin on 14th June 1873. Raumer made many contributions to history, in all of which he embodied the results of independent research and gave evidence of a sound and penetrating judgment. His style is direct, lucid, and vigorous,

and his best books have been as warmly appreciated by ordinary readers as by scholars.

His first work, published anonymously in 1806, was entitled Sechs Dialoge tiber Kricg und Handel. This was followed by Das britische Bestewerungssystem (1810), Handbueh merkwiirdiger Stellen aus den lateinisechen Gesehichtschreibern des AMMittelulters (1818), Herbstreise nach Venedig (1816), and other books. His most famous works are Geschichte der Hohenstaufen und threr Zeit (1823-25) and Gesehichte Europas seit dem Ende des 15ten Jahrhunderts (1832-50). In 1831 appeared Briefe aus Paris und Frankreich im Jahre 1830 and Briefe aus Paris zur Erléuterung der Geschichte des 16ten und 17ten Jahrhunderts. He went to England in 1835, to Italy in 18389, and to America in 1848, and these visits led to the publication of various works—England in 1835 (1836), Bettrdge zur neuern Gre- sehiechte aus dem Britischen Museum und Reichsarchive (1836-39), Italien, Beitrdége zur Kenntniss dieses Landes (1840), Die Vereinigten Staaten von Nordamerika (1845). Among his later books may be men- tioned Antiquarisehe Briefe (1851), Historisch-politische Briefe tiber die geselligen Verhdltnisse der Menschen (1860), Lebenserinnerungen und Briefweehsel (1861), and Handbuch zur Geschichte der Literatur (1864-66). In 1830 Raumer began the Historisehes Taschenbueh published by Brockhaus, which from 1871 was continued by Riehl.

RAUPACH, Ernst BensamMin Satomo (1784-1852), German dramatic writer, was born on the 21st of April 1784 at Straupitz, a village near Liegnitz in Silesia. He attended the gymnasium at Liegnitz and afterwards studied theology at Halle. He spent a good many years in Russia as a teacher, and in 1816 was made a professor in the university of St Petersburg. In 1822 he left Russia, and after travelling for some time in Italy settled as a writer for the stage in Berlin, where he remained during the rest of his life. He died at Berlin on the 18th of March 1852.

Raupach was not a man of imaginative genius, but he had re- markable skill in the invention of effective dramatic situations, and was master of a vigorous rhetorieal style. These qualities secured for hima prominent place among the most popular dramatic writers of his day. Ie wrote both

tragedies and comedies, and was the author of a series of dramas represcnting the great events of the

age of the Hohenstaufen. See P. Raupach, Raupach, eine biographische Skizze (1853).

RAVAILLAGC, Francois (1578-1610), the assassin of Henry IV. of France, was born near Angouléme in 1578. He was of humble origin, and began life as a valet de

iy WV 295

teacher of a school. He was not able, however, to keep clear of debt, and after having been imprisoned for some time by his creditors he sought admission to the recently founded order of Feuillants, but after a short probation was dis- missed as a visionary. An application for admission to the Society of Jesus was equally unsuccessful in 1606. His various disappointments tended to foster a violently fanatical temperament, and widely-spread rumours that the king was intending to make war upon the pope sug- gested to him the idea of assassination, which he deliber- ately and successfully carried out on 14th May 1610. In the course of his trial he was frequently put to the torture, but persistently (and it is now believed truly) denied that he had been prompted by any one or had any accomplices. Sentence of death was carried out with revolting barbarity on 27th May.

RAVEN (Anglo-Saxon Hrafn, Icelandic Hrafn, Danish Ravn, Dutch Raaf, German abe), the largest of the Birds of the Order Pusseves; and, as already shewn (OrnI- THOLOGY, vol, xviii. p. 49), probably the most highly developed of all Birds.

Quick-sighted, sagacious, and bold, it must have followed the prehistoric fisher and hunter, and generally without niolestation from them, to prey on the refuse of their spoils, just as it now waits, with the same intent, on the movements of their successors ; while it must have likewise attended the earliest herdsmen, who could not have regarded it with equal indifference, since its now notorious eharacter for attacking and putting to death a weakly animal was doubtless in those days manifested. Yet the

Raven is no mere dependant upon man, being always able to get a living for itself ; and moreover a sentiment of veneration or superstition has from very remote ages and among many races of men attached to it—a sentiment so strong as often to overcome the feeling of distrust not to say of hatred which its deeds inspired, and, though rapidly decreas- ing, even to survive in some places until the present day. There is no need to dwell on the association of this bird with well-known characters of history sacred or profane—Noah or Elijah, Odin or Flokki, the last of whom by its means diseovered Iceland. The Raven is even said to have played its part in the mythology of the Red Indian ; and none can wonder that all this should be so, since, wherever it occurs and more especially wherever it is numerous, as in ancient times and in thinly peopled countries it must have been, its size, appearance, and fearless habits would be sure to attract especial attention. Nor has this attention wholly ceased with the advance of enlightenment, for both in prose and verse, from the time of Shakespeare to that of Poe and Dickens, the Raven has often figured, and generally without the amount of misrepresenta- tion which is the fate of most animals which celebrated writers condescend to notice. Notwithstanding all this, however, the Raven has now fallen upon evil days. The superstitious reverence with which it was once regarded has all but vanished and has been very generally succeeded by persecution, which in many districts has produced actual extirpation, so that it is threatened with ex- tinction, save in the wildest and most unpeopled districts.!

The Raven breeds very early in the year, in England resorting to its nest, which is usually an ancient 1f not an ancestral structure, about the middle or towards the end of January. Therein are laid from five to seven eggs of the common Corvine coloration (see Crow, vol. vi. pp. 617, 618), and the young are hatched before the end of February. In more northern countries the breeding-season is naturally delayed, but everywhere this species is almost if not quite the earliest of birds to enter upon the business

1 That all lovers of nature should take what steps they ean to arrest this sad fate is a belief whieh the present writer fully holds. With- out attempting to deny the loss which in some eases is inflicted upon the

rearers of eattle by Ravens, it is an enormous mistake to suppose that the neighbourhood of a pair of these birds is invariably detri- mental. On this point he ean speak from experienee. For many years he had an intimate knowledge of a pair oceupying an inland locality surrounded by valuable floeks of sheep, and abounding in rabbits and game, and had ample opportunities, whieh he never negleeted, of repeatedly examining the pellets of bones and exuvie that these, like all other earnivorous birds, east up. He thus found that this pair of Ravens fed almost exelusively on moles. Soon after he moved from the neighbourhood in whieh they lived the unreasoning zeal of a gamekeeper (against, it is believed, the orders of his master) put an end to this interesting eouple—the last of their species which

chambre, but afterwards became a petty solicitor and also | mhabited the eounty.

296

of perpetuating its kind. The Raven measures about 26 inches in length, and has an expanse of wing considerably exceeding a yard. Its bill and feet are black, and the same may be said of its whole plumage, but the feathers of the upper parts as well as of the breast are very glossy, re- flecting a bright purple or steel-blue.! The species inhabits the whole of Europe, and the northern if not the central parts of Asia; but in the latter continent its southern range is not well determined. In America? it is, or used to be, found from the shores of the Polar Sea to Guatemala if not to Honduras, but is said hardly to be found of late years in the eastern part of the United States. In Africa its place is taken by three allied but well- differentiated species, two of which (Corvus umbrinus, readily distin- guished by its brown neck, and C. affinis,3 having its superior nasal bristles upturned vertically) also occur in South-Western Asia, while the third (C. leptonyx or C. tingitanus, a smaller species characterized by several slight differences) inhabits Barbary and the Atlantic Islands. Further to the southward in the Ethiopian Region three more species appear, whose plumage is varied with white —C. scapulatus, C. albicollis, and C. crassirostris—the first two of small size, but the last rivalling the real Raven in that respect. (A. N.)

RAVENNA, chief city of an Italian province of the same name, contained 18,571 inhabitants according to the census of 1881. It is situated in the north-east of Italy, in 44° 25’ N, lat. and 12° 12’ E. long., about 4 miles from the Adriatic, with which it is now connected by the Cor- sini Canal, the two small rivers Ronco and Montone no longer serving as means of communication between the city and the sea. A railway, 26 miles long, unites Ravenna with Castel Bolognese on the line from Bologna to Rimini.

Ravenna owes both its great historic importance in the past and its comparative dulness and obscurity in the present to the same cause,—its position in an alluvial plain, formed and continually extended by the deposits brought down by a number of small and rapid streams from the neighbouring Apennines. Any one who glances at a map of the north-western corner of the Adriatic will see at once the general character of the coast,—broad lagunes sometimes stretching far inland; flat alluvial plains intersected by endless dykes; numerous rivers (of which the Po is by far the largest and makes the most conspicuous delta) descending from the Apennines or the Alps; and, outside of all, a barrier of islands which have a continual tendency to become adherent to the shore through the new deposits which are brought down, and thus to be turned from islands into low hills. This de- scription suits Venice nearly as well as it suits Ravenna, and the chief difference between these two great historic cities is that the lagunes of Ravenna are about twenty centuries older than those of Venice.

The one transcendent interest of Ravenna to & modern traveller consists in its churches. No other city in the world offers so many and such striking examples of the ecclesiastical architecture of the centuries from the 4th to the 8th. The style is commonly called Byzantine, and no doubt from the close connexion of Ravenna with Constan- tinople considerable influence was exerted by the latter city on the former ; but some of the most striking features of the churches of Ravenna—the colonnades, the mosaics,

1 Pied examples are not at all uncommon in some localities and wholly white varieties are said to have been seen.

- *American birds have been described as forming a distinct species under the name of Corvus carnivorus or C. cacolotl.*

3 Mr Sharpe (Cat. B. Brit. Museum, iii. p. 45) separates C. affinis as forming a distinct genus Rhinocorax; but it is a hard task on any

reasonable ground to break up the genus Corvus as long accepted by systematists,

RAV—RAV

perhaps the cupolas—are not so much Byzantine as repre- sentative of early Christian art generally. It is truly said by Mr Freeman :

"The outside of a Ravennese basilica is an unadorned and un- attractive pile of brick. If it has any architectural grouping or outline about it, it owes it to the campanile which a later age has added. But if the churches of Ravenna are thus unattractive without, they are emphatically all glorious within. The eye dwells with genuine artistic delight on the long unbroken rows of pillars and arches, their marble shafts, their floriated capitals, sometimes the work of the Christian craftsman, sometimes the spoils of heathen- dom pressed into the service of the sanctuary. . . . The whole plan of these buildings allows a great field for void spaces ; but the void spaces thus left are filled up by these wonderful mosaic paint- ings which look down upon usas fresh as they were thirteen hundred years back."

Every traveller to Ravenna is impressed by the vivid- ness of these decorations, which were older when Giotto painted his first fresco than Giotto's frescos are now ; but we can here only allude to the subject, referring the reader to the article Mosaic (vol. xvi. p. 852 sq.).

The following are the most important churches of Ravenna, arranged in the order of the dates generally attributed to them :—

Church. | Builder. Date. } 1. Metropolitan Church, or Ecclesia Ur- USS UGE. coupeenos 370-390 (2) siana, and baptistery adjoining | 2. 8. Giovanni Evangelista …..... Galla Placidia …..... 495 Bete AGN Mme b

iy a see ens sees cc oe (NGeMROMUS |... ces cere cs about 430 4. §. Pier Crysologo (chapel) ..... '§. Peter Chrysologus..| about 450 5, S.Giovanni| Battista, 2.0… ..cc0ses | BadWaris …. cede sso a3 6. SS. Nazario e Celso ….....0…8! Galla Placidia …..... 5 7. S. Pier Maggiore (now S. Francesco)..| Bishop Neon ©) sees about 458 8. 8. Teodoro (now Santo Spirito)—A. ..) Theodoric(?).....| 493-526 9. S. Maria in Cosmodin (Arian bap- Wir A Mose sce " tistery)—A. 10. S. Martino in Coelo Aureo (now S. s 5 Apollinare Nuoyo)}—A. | La SVIGNG Ter… a HecINes sia cima wccecmienr es Julianus Argentarius..} about 530 | 12. S. MarlayWagcione . oc… cece es coun Bishop Ecclesius …. '5 13. 8. Apollinare in Classe…..... Julianus Argentarius..| about 535 (The churches marked A. were originally erected for the Arian worshi p-)

The cathedral (No. 1) has been so much modernized as to have lost its interest; but the baptistery adjoining it, decorated by Bishops Neon and Maximian in the 5th and 6th centuries, an octagonal building with mosaics of the apostles on the roof, is still unspoiled. SS. Nazario e Celso (No. 6) is a little building in the form of a Latin cross, and is better known as the mausoleum of Galla Placidia, whose tomb and those of three emperors, her hus- band, brother, and son, are deposited here. It is surmounted with a cupola surrounded with four semi-domes, on which are depicted figures of the Good Shepherd with His sheep, of evangelists, prophets, &c., and two stags drinking at a fountain. §S. Apollinare Nuovo (No. 10) has above the arches of the nave what is perhaps the greatest triumph of mosaic art, two processions of virgins and of martyrs marching, the former from the city of Classis, the latter from the palace of Theodoric, to the Saviour. In the former group Christ sits upon the lap of His mother, and the Magi are interposed between Him and the procession of virgins. In the latter He is en- throned in glory and guarded by four ministrant angels. S. Vitale (No. 11) is doubly interesting as having furnished the model after which Charles the Great built his impcrial minster at Aix-la-Chapelle and as containing full-length contemporary portraits in mosaic of Justinian and Theodora, surrounded by ecclesiastics, courtiers, and soldiers of the guard. It is surmounted bya dome, is circular in form, and has eight apsidal chapels all round it, ono of which, correspond- ing to the choir in an ordinary church, is prolonged to about four times the length of the other apses.

Unfortunately, only in this choir have the mosaics been preserved, but they are of the highest possible interest. §. Apollinare in Classe (No. 18), once the centre of a busy population of sailors, shopkeepers, and dock-labourers, now stands absolutely alone in a wide and desolate expanse 2 milcs from the sea. The decorations of the church have suffered from damp —thcre are frequently some inches of water on the pavement— but the twenty-four stately marble columns with Corinthian capitals form a magnificent prelude to an apse covered with mosaics, among which is conspicuous a te jewelled cross, symbolizing the Saviour on the Mount of Transfiguration ; Moses and Elias lean forth from the clouds on either side, and in the valley below the apostles wait, represented symbolically as sheep. Many mosaic portraits of bishops of Ravenna are on the walls of the church, and a mosaic picture, representing Constantine Pogonatus and his brothers be- stowing a privilegium on Bishop Reparatus about the year 670.

History.—Strabo mentions a tradition that Ravenna was founded by Thessalians, who afterwards, finding themselves pressed on by

the Etrurians, called in their Umbrian neighbours and eventually departed, leaving the city to their allies. Throughout the valley of the Po the Gauls took the place of the Etrurians as a conquer- ing power; but Ravenna may possibly have retained its Umbrian character until, about the year 191 B.c., by the conquest of the Boii the whole of this region passed definitely under the dominion of Rome. Either as a colonia or a municipium, Ravenna remained for more than two centuries an inconsiderable city of Gallia Cis- alpina, chiefly noticeable as the place to which Cesar during his ten years' cominand in Gaul frequently resorted in order to confer with his friends from Rome. At length under Augustus it suddenly rose into importance, when that emperor selected it as the station for his fieet on "the upper sea." Two hundred and fifty ships, said Dion (in a lost passage quoted by Jordanes), could ride at anchor in its harbour. Strabo, writing probably a few years after Ravenna had been thus selected as a naval arsenal, gives us-a description of its appearance which certainly corresponds more closely with modern Venice than with modern Ravenna. "It is the largest of all the cities built in the lagunes, but entirely com- posed of wooden houses, penetrated in all directions by canals, wherefore bridges and boats are needed for the wayfarer. At the flow of the tide a large part of the sea comes sweeping into it, and thus, while all the muddy deposit of the rivers is swept away, the malaria is at the sane time removed, and by this means the city cnjoys so good a sanitary reputation that the Government has fixed on it as a place for the reception and training of gladiators." On the other hand, good water was proverbially difficult to obtain at Ravenna,—dearer than wine, says Martial, who has two epigrams onthe subject. And Sidonius, writing in the 5th century, com- plains bitterly of the "feculent gruel " (cloacalis puls) which filled the canals of the city, and which gave forth fetid odours when stirred by the poles of the bargemen. The port of Ravenna, situated about 3 miles from the city, was named Classis. A long line of houses called Cesarea connected it with Ravenna, and in process of time there was such a continuous series of buildings that the three towns seemed like one.

The great historical importance of Ravenna begins early in the 5th century, when Honorius, alarmed by the progress of Alaric in the north of Italy, transferred his court to the city in the lagunes. From this date (¢. 402) to the fall of the Western empire in 476 Ravenna was, though not the exclusive, the chief residence of the Roman emperors and the centre of the elaborate machinery of the state. Here Stilicho was slain; here Honorius and his sister Placidia caressed and quarrelled ; here Valentinian III. spent the greater part of his useless life; here Majorian was proclaimed ; here the Little Romulus donned his purple robe ; here in the pine- wood! outside the city his uncle Paulus received his decisive defeat from Odoacer. Through all these changes Ravenna maintained its character as an impregnable "city in the sea," not easily to be attacked even by a naval power on account of the shallowness and devious nature of the channels by which it had to be approached. On becoming supreme ruler of Italy Odoacer, like the emperors who had gone before him, made Ravenna his chief place of residence, and here after thirteen years of kingship he shut himself up when Theodorie the Ostrogoth had invaded Italy and defeated him in two battles. Theodoric's siege of Ravenna lasted for three years (489-492) and was marked by one bloody encounter in the pine-wood on the east of it. The Ostrogoth collected a fleet and established a severe blockade, which at length caused Odoacer to surrender the city. The terms, arranged through the intervention of John, archbishop of Ravenna, were not observed by Theodoric, who, ten days after his entry into the city, slew his rival at a banquet in the palace of the Laurel Grove (15th March 493). tavenna was Theodoric's ehief place of residence, and the thirty- three years of the reign of the great Ostrogoth (493-526) may prob- ably be considered the time of its greatest splendour. 'In the eastern part of the city he built for himsclf a large palace, which probably occupied about a sixth of the space now enclosed within the city walls, or nearly the whole of the rectangle enclosed by Strada di Porta Alberoni on the south, Strada Nuova di Porta Serrata on the west, and the line of the city walls on the north and east. There still remains elose to the first-named street and fronting the Corso Garibaldi a high wall built of square Roman bricks, with pillars and arched recesses in the upper portion, which goes by the name of Palazzo di Teodorico. Freeman, on account of the Romanesque character of the architecture, thinks it probable that it really belongs to the time of the Lombard kings; but at

1 The great pine-wood to the east of the city, which, though injured by an unusually severe winter and threatened by a projected railway, is still one of the great glories of Ravenna, must therefore have been in existence already in the 5th century. Byron's description,

[The] immemorial wood Rooted where once the Adrian wave flowed o'er," is probably true ; but there is no evidence that it was in historic time that this change took place. Our conjecture is that the Pineta grew on a large peninsula somewhat resembling the Lido of Venice.

any rate it is of the very early medieval period, and it marks the spot where part of the Ostrogothie palace once stood. A more memorable and clearly authentic monument of Theodoric is fur- nished by his tomb, a massive mausoleum in the style of the tomb of Hadrian at Rome, which stands still perfect outside the walls near the north-east corner of the city. It is of circular shape and surmounted by an enormous monolith, brought from the quarries of Istria and weighing more than 300 tons. In this mausoleum Theodoric was buried, but his body was cast forth from it, perhaps during the troublous times of the siege of Ravenna by the imperial troops, and the Rotunda (as it is now generally called) was con- verted into a church dedicated to the Virgin.

Nine years after the death of Theodoric Justinian sent an army to Italy, nominally in order to avenge the mnrder of Theodoric's daughter Amalasuntha, but in fact to destroy the Gothic monarchy and restore Italy to the empire. Long after the Goths had lost Rome they still clung to Ravenna, till at length, weary of the feebleness and ill-success of their own king, Vitiges, and struck with admiration of their heroie eonqueror, they offered to transfer their allegiance to Belisarius on eondition of his assuming the diadem of the Western empire. Belisarius dallied with the pro- posal until he had obtained an entrance for himself and his troops within the walls of the eapital, and then threw off the mask and proclaimed his inviolable fidelity to Justinian. Thus in the year 540 was Ravenna re-united to the Roman empire. Its connexion with that empire —or, in other words, its dependence upon Con- stantinople—lasted for more than 200 years, during which period, under the rule of Narses and

his successors the exarchs, Ravenna was the seat of Byzantine dominion in Italy. In 728 the Lombard king Luitprand took the suburb Classis; about 752 the eity itself fell into the hands of his successor Aistulf, from whom a few years after it was wrested by Pippin, king of the Franks. By this time the former splendour of the city had probably in great measure departed ; the alteration of the coast-line and the filling up of the Jagunes which make it now practically an inland city had probably commenced, and no historical importance attaches to its subsequent fortunes. It formed part of the Frankish king's donation to the pope in the middle of the 8th century. It was an independent republic, generally taking the Guelf side in the 13th century, subject to rulers of the house of Polentani in the 14th, Venetian in the 15th (1441), and papal again in the 16th,—Pope Julius II. having succeeded in wresting it from the hands of the Venetians. From this time (1509) down to our own days, except for the inter- ruptions caused by the wars of the Freneh Revolution, Ravenna continued subject to the papal see and was governed by a eardinal legate. In 1859 it was one of the first cities to give its vote in favour of Italian unity, and it has since then formed a part of the kingdom of Italy.

At the beginning of the period thus rapidly sketched Charles the Great visited the city and carried off the brazen statue of Theodorie and the marble columns of his palace to his own new palace at Aix- la-Chapelle. More than five centuries later (1820) Dante became the guest of Guido Novello di Polenta, lord of Ravenna, and here he died on the 14th September of the following year. The marble urn eontaining the body of the poet still rests at Ravenna, where what Byron calls "a little cupola more neat than solemn" has been erected over it. In 1512 the French army under Gaston de Foix fought a fieree battle with the Spanish, Venetian, and papal troops on the banks of the Ronco about 2 miles from Ravenna. The French were victorious, but Gaston fell in the act of pursuing the enemy. His death is commemorated by the Colonna dei Francesi erccted on the spot where he fell. Lord Byron resided at Ravenna for eighteen months in 1820-21, attracted by the charms of the countess Guiccioli.

Literature.—The most important authority for the history of Ravenna is Bishop Aguellus, who wrote about 840, in very bad Latin, the Liber

Pontificalis Ecclesie Ravennatis. It is printed in vol. ii. of Muratori's Rer. Ital. Scriptores, but much tlic best edition is that by Holder-Egger in the Monumenta Germania Historica (1878). Rubeus (Hist. Ravennatwm Libri Decem, Venice, 1599) seems to have had access to some authorities besides Agnellus which are now lost. Ciampini (Vetera Monumenta, 1690-99, and Synopsis Historica, 1693) gives some fair representations of the mosaics, and Quast's Ravenna (Berlin, 1842) is a careful and well-illustrated monograph. Dr Ricci, in a popular guide, Ra- venna et swot Dintorni (1878), has included some of the results of a very careful study of the antiquities of his native city. Professor Freeman's essay The Goths at Ravenna is the best account in English of the city in its historical connexion, and Mr J. A. Symonds in his Sketches in Italy and Greece has gyace- fully touched on its picturesque qualities and literary associations. (T. H.)

RAVENSBURG, an industrial town of Wiirtemberg, is pleasantly situated amid vine-clad hills on the small river Schussen, 12 miles to the north of Friedrichshafen on the Lake of Constance. Its aspect is quaint and medieval, and above its houses rise nine picturesque towers, the most prominent of which, dating from the 15th century, is known as the '" Mehlsack" or sack of flour. The town-house is also a 15th-century building. The industrial products of Ravensburg are varied, includ-

ing linen, cotton, embroidered muslins, pottery, glass, and playing-cards. The fruit market is of considerable im- portance, and trade is also carried on in cattle, grain, and wood. The population in 1880 was 10,550, of whom 2620 were Protestants.

Ravensburg was founded in the 11th century by the Guelfs, one of whose ancestral castles lay on the Veitsberg, to the south of the town. In 1180 the town passed into the hands of the Hohenstaufens, and a century later it became a free town of the empire. Annexcd to Bavaria from 1803 to 1810, it was ceded to Wiirtemberg in the latter year.

RAWAL PINDf or Rawvt Prnves, a district of British India, in the division of the same name,! under the juris- diction of the lieutenant-governor of the Punjab, lying between 33° and 34° N. lat. and 71° 46' and 73° 41' E. long. It is situated on the southern slopes of the north- western extremities of the Himdlayas, and contains large mountain tracts, with rich valleys traversed by many moun- tain torrents. Its area is 4861 square miles; it is bounded on the N. by Hazara district, on the E. by the river Jhelum, on the 8. by Jhelum district, and on the W. by the Indus. From its north-eastern extremity to its western limits the district is traversed by hills more or less linked together, causing those peculiarities of surface and of climate by which it is distinguished. The eastern range, known locally as the Murree (Marri) Hills, from the sana- torium erected at the north-eastern extremity of the dis- trict, is a continuation of the great Himalayan system ; it descends in a southerly and westerly direction, and is clothed with magnificent forest trees and a rich under- growth of brushwood. Southward these hills follow the course of the Jhelum, decreasing in height, but gaining in picturesqueness what they lose in sublimity, until they subside into a comparatively level country. The mountains in the western half of the district belong to the trans-Indus system; the chief range, known as the Chitta Pahar or White Hills, is composed chiefly of nummulitic limestone. To the north lies the fertile valley of Chach, one of the rare oases which relieve the wildness of this savage waste. The Indus and the Jhelum are the chief rivers of Rawal Pindi. The former bounds the district along its whole western edge, where it is very picturesque, and in parts navigable for steamers; the latter, forming the eastern frontier, is equally picturesque though less important for navigation. Other chief rivers are the Sohan and the Haroh, both tributaries of the Indus. The climate of Rawal Pindi is noted for its salubrity; the mean annual temperature is 69°°4, and the average annual rainfall 33°15 inches. The Punjab Northern State Railway runs through its whole length, with a branch from Golra junction, north of the town of Rawal Pind{, to Khusalgari on the western frontier.

The population in 1881 was 820,512 (males 449,287, females 371,225), Hindus numbering 86,162, Mohammedans 711,546, Sikhs 17,780, Christian$S 3822, and "others" 202. The only town with a population exceeding 10,000 is the capital (sce below). The inhabitants are mostly

scattered in small hamlets over the surface of the country. The staple product is wheat in the spring and bajra in the autumn. Inferior grains are giving place to more valuable cereals, and to cotton and potatoes. Of the total area 1517 square miles are cultivated and 379 cultivable. Owing to the rugged nature of the country there is very little commerce, and that little is concentrated principally at the headquarters town. Imports consist of sugar, spices, cotton goods, and salt; while exports are confined to the raw materials of agriculture. The only manufacture of any importance is cotton-weaving. The total revenue of the district in 1882-83 was £105,316, of which the land- tax yielded £68,715.

Rawal Pindi with the rest of the Sikh dominions passed to the British in 1849, under whose administration it enjoyed compara- tive peace until the mutiny in 1857. The events of that year

1 Rawal Pindi division comprises the four districts of Rawal Pindi, Jhelum, Gujrat, and Shahpur, with a total area of 15,485 square

miles and a total population (1881) of 2,520,508 (males 1,346,578, females 1,173,985).

afforded an outlet for the smouldering passions engendered by ancestral feuds, and the Murree Hills became the scene of an attempted insurrection. The authorities, however, having been warned of this by a faithful native, took steps for defence, so that when the enemy arrived they were compelled to withdraw in dis- order, and they shortly afterwards disbanded themselves. Since then the district has remained comparatively tranquil. Among recent events is the great durbar held by the viceroy of India (Earl Dufferin) on 8th April 1885 in honour of the amir of Afghanistan (Abdur Rahman). The district abounds in objects of great anti- quarian interest, chief of which are those of Dehri Shahan (or Shah Dheri), a village situated in 33° 17’ N. lat.and 72° 49’ E. long. Dehri Shahan has been identified with the site of the ancient city of Taxila or Takshasila, which in the time of Alexander was ‘‘a large and wealthy city, the most populous between the Indus and Hydaspes” (Jhelum). The ruins of Taxila consist of several dis- tinct portions, and rank as the most

interesting, extensive, and best preserved memorials of antiquity in the Punjab province.

RAWAL PINDf or Rawvt Prxpes, principal town and administrative headquarters of the above district, lies in 33° 37’ N. lat. and 73° 6’ E. long. The present town is of modern origin ; it is well built and has an air of con- siderable prosperity ; its streets are broad and handsome, and several fine buildings add to its appearance. It is chiefly a grain mart. The population of the town in 1881 was 52,975 (35,985 males and 16,990 females).

RAWANDIS. See Monammepantsm, vol. xvi. p. 579.

RAWITSCH (Polish favicz), a small manufacturing town of Prussia in the province of Posen, lies near the Silesian frontier, 37 miles to the north of Breslau. It is regularly built and contains a handsome Protestant church and a substantial town-hall. The principal industry is the manufacture of snuff and cigars, for the first of which in particular it enjoys a considerable reputation. Trade is carried on in grain, wool, cattle, hides, and timber. The population in 1880 was 12,260, made up of 7587 Protestants, 3539 Roman Catholics, and 1123 Jews. Rawitsch is of comparatively modern origin, having been founded by Protestant refugees from Silesia during the Thirty Years’ War.

RAWMARSH, a large village and urban sanitary dis- trict in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on the ridge of a hill above the valley of the Don and on the Midland Railway, 2 miles north of Rotherham and 12 south-west of Doncaster. It possesses extensive iron-works and steel rolling-mills, and there are collieries in the neighbourhood. The church of St Lawrence was rebuilt in 1839 with the exception of the old Norman tower. There are several almshouses and other charities. At the

time of the Conquest the manor was granted to Walter

d’Eincourt, and in the 12th century it was divided among the three daughters of his subinfeudatory Paganus, who is supposed to have been the founder of the church. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 2578 acres) in 1871 was 6869, and in 1881 it was 10,179.

RAWTENSTALL, a town of east Lancashire, is situ- ated on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 8 miles north of Bury and 12 south-east of Blackburn. At the beginning of the century it contained only a few houses, but since the rise of the manufacturing industry it has steadily increased, till it is now a considerable town. The cotton and woollen mills are very extensive, and in the neighbourhood there are stone quarries. The church of St Mary, in the Gothic style, erected in 1837, has lately been restored ; and several of the denominational chapels are large and handsome buildings. The town has also good schools. There is a public cemetery, 15 acres in extent. Near the town is the Haslingden Union workhouse, erected in 1869. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 1667 acres) in 1871 was estimated at 11,307, and in 1881 it was 12,571. Now (1885) by the incorporation of Newchurch, Goodshaw, and Crawshaw Booth the popu- lation is over 30,000.

BR A ¥

RAY. The Rays (Batoide') together with the Sharks (Selachorder) form the suborder Plagiostomata of Cartila- ginous fishes, and are divided into six families, as already noticed in IcHTHYOLOGY, vol. xii. pp. 685, 686.

The first family contains only the Saw-fishes (Pristis), of which five species are known, from tropical and subtropical seas. Although saw-fishes possess all the essential characteristics of the rays proper, they retain the elongate form of the body of sharks, the tail being excessively muscular and the sole organ of locomotion. The "saw" (fig. 1) is a flat = protruding intestines. The and enormously devel- teeth proper, with which the oped prolongation of the '\;_ mouth is armed, are ex- snout, with an endo- += tremcly small and obtuse, skeleton which consists = and unsuitable for inflicting of from three to five carti- == wounds or seizing animals. laginous tubes; these are, © Saw-fishes are abundant in in fact, merely the rostral | thetropics; in their stomach processes of the cranial pieces of intestines and frag- cartilage and are found ments of cuttle-fish have in all rays, though they been found. They grow to are commonly much a large size, specimens with shorter. The integument saws 6 feet long and 1 foot of the saw is hard, covered broad at the base being of with shagreen; and a common. occurrence. series of strong teeth, sharp in

front, and flat behind, are embedded in it, in alveolar sockets, on each side. The saw isa most formidable weapon of offence, by means of which the fish tears pieces of flesh off the body of its victim, or rips open its abdomen to feed on the

|

—— *The rays of the second*

. family, Rhinobatide, bear a strong resemblance to the saw-fishes, but lack the saw. Their teeth are con- sequently more developed, flat, obtuse, and adapted for crushing hard-shelled mar- ine animals. There are about sixteen species, from . tropical seas.

Fig. 1.—Pristis perrotteti.

The third family, Torpedinidz, includes the Electric Rays. The peculiar organ (fig. 2) by which the electricity is produced has been described in vol. xii p. 650. The fish uses this power voluntarily either to defend itself or to stun or kill the smaller animals on which it feeds. To receive the shock the object must complete the galvanic circuit by communicating with the fish at two distinct a. either directly or through the medium of some conducting

ody. The electric currents created in these fishes exercise all the other known powers of electricity : they render the needle mag- netic, decompose chemical compounds, aud emit the spark. The dorsal surface of the electrie organ is positive, the ventral negative. Shocks accidentally given to persons are severely felt, and, if pro- ceeding from a large healthy fish, will temporarily paralyse the arms of a strong man. The species of the genus Torpedo, six or seven in number, are distributed over the coasts of the Atlantic and Indian Ocean, and two reach northwards to the coasts of Great Britain (7. marmorata and T. hebctans). They are said to attain to a weight of from 80 to 100 Ib, but fortunately such gigantic specimens are scarce, and prefer sandy ground at some distance from the shore, where they are not disturbed by the violent agita-

tion of the surface-water. Other genera, comprising species of smaller size, inhabit different parts of the tropical and subtropical

Fig. 2.—TZorpedo narce (Mediterranean). A portion of the skin on the left side has been removed to show the electric organ.

seas. All the rays of this family have, like electric fishes generally, a smooth and naked body.

The fourth family, Raiidex, comprises the Skates and Rays proper, or Raia. More than thirty species are known, chiefly from the temperate seas of both hemispheres, but much more numerously from the northern than the southern. A few species descend to a depth of nearly 600 fathoms, without, however, essentially differing from their surface congeners. Rays, as is sufficiently indicated by the shape of their body, are bottom-fishes, living on flat sandy ground, generally at no great distance from the coast or the surface. They lead a sedentary life, progressing, like the flat-fishes, by an undulatory motion of the greatly extended pectoral fins, the thin slender tail having entirely lost the function of an organ of locomotion, and acting merely as a rudder. They are carnivorous and feed exclusively on molluscs, crustaceans, and fishes. Some of the species possess a much larger and more pointed snout than the others, and are popularly distinguished as "skates." The follow- ing are known as inhabitants of the British seas :—(a) Short- snouted species : (1) the Thornback (&. elavata), (2) the Homelyn Ray (&. maculata), (3) the Starry Ray (R. radiata), (4) the Sandy Ray (&. circularis) ; (b) Long-snouted species, or Skates: (5) the Common Skate (2. batis), (6) the Flapper Skate (R. macrorhynchus), (7) the Burton Skate (2. marginata), (8) and (9) the Shagreen Skates (R. vomer and R. fullonica). A deep-sea species (R. hyper- borea) has recently been discovered near the Faroe Islands at 600 fathoms. Most of the skates and rays are eaten, except durin the breeding season ; and even the young of the former are esteeme as food. The skates attain to a much larger size than the rays, viz., to a width of 6 feet and a weight of 400 and 500 Ib.

The members of the fifth family, Trygonidx or Sting-rays, are distinguished from the rays proper by having the vertical fins replaced by a strong spine attached to the upper side of the tail. Some forty species are

known, which inhabit tropical more than temperate seas. The spine is barbed on the sides and is a most effective weapon of defence ; by lashing the tail in every direction the sting-rays can inflict dangerous or at least extremely painful wounds. The danger arises from the lacerated nature of the wound as well as from the poisonous property of the mucus inoculated. Generally only one or two spines are developed. Sting-rays attain to about the same size as the' skates and are eaten on the coasts of the Mediterranean and elsewhere. One species (7'rygon pastinaca) is not rarely found in the North Atlantic and extends northwards to the coasts of Ireland, England, and Norway.

300

The rays of the sixth and last family, M/yliobatidx, are popularly known under various names, such as " Devil-fishes," " Sea-devils,"' and "Eagle-rays." In them the dilatation of the body, or rather the development of the pectoral fins, is carried to an extreme, whilst the tail is very thin and sometimes long like a whip-cord (fig. 8), Caudal spines are generally present and similar to those

Fic, 8.—Aetobatis narinari (Indo-Pacific Ocean).

of the sting-rays ; but in the pectoral fin a portion is detached and forms a "'cephalic" lobe or pair of lobes in front of the snout. The dentition consists of perfectly flat molars, adapted for crushing hard substances. In some of the cagle-rays the molars are large and tessellated (fig. 4), in others extremely small. Of the twenty

Fic. 4.—Jaws of an Eagle-Ray, Myliobatis aquila.

species which are known, from tropical and temperate seas, the majority attain to a very large and some to an enormous size: one mentioned by Risso, which was taken at Messina, weighed 1250 fb. A fcetus taken from the uterus of the mother (all eagle-rays are viviparous), captured at Jamaica and prescrved in the British Museum, is 5 feet broad and weighed 20 Ib. The mother measured 15 fect in width and as many in length, and was between 3 and 4 feet thick. At Jamaica, where these rays are well known under the name of " devil-fishes," they are frequently

attacked for sport's sake, but their capture is uncertain and sometimes attended with danger. The eagle-ray of the Mediterranean (Afyliobatis aquila) has strayed as far northwards as the south coast of England. (A. C. G.) RAY or Wray (as he wrote his name till 1670), Jonn (1628-1705), sometimes called the father of English natural history, was the son of the blacksmith of Black Notley near Braintree in Essex. There he was born on 29th November 1628, or, according to other authorities, sonie months earlier. From Braintree school he was sent at the age of sixteen to Catherine Hall, Cambridge, whence he removed to Trinity College after about one year and three- quarters. His tutor at Trinity was Dr Duport, regius pro- fessor of Greek, and his intimate friend and fellow-pupil the celebrated Isaac Barrow. Ray was chosen minor fellow of Trinity in 1649, and in due course became a major fellow on proceeding to the master's degree. He held

ra

many college offices, becoming successively lecturer in Greek (1651), mathematics (1653), and humanity (1655), preelec- tor (1657), junior dean (1657), and college steward (1659 and 1660); and according to the habit of the time he was

accustomed to preach in his college chapel and also at

Great St Mary's before the university, long before he took holy orders. Among his sermons preached before his ordination, which was not till 23d December 1660, were the famous discourses on The Wisdom of God in the Crea- tion, and on the Chaos, Deluge, and Dissolution of the World. Ray's reputation was high also as a tutor; he communicated his own passion for natural history to several pupils, of whom Francis Willughby is by far the most famous.

Ray's quiet college life came to an abrupt close when he found himself unable to subscribe to the Act of Uni- formity of 1661, and was accordingly obliged to give up his fellowship in 1662, the year after Isaac Newton had entered the college. We are told by Dr Derham in his Infe of Ray that the reason of his refusal "was not (as some have imagined) his having taken the 'Solemn League and Covenant,' for that he never did,

and often declared that he ever thought it an unlawful oath; but he said he could not declare for those that had taken the oath that no obligation lay upon them, but feared there might." From this time onwards he seems to have depended chiefly on the bounty of his pupil Willughby, who made Ray his constant companion while he lived, and at his death left him £60 a year, with the charge of educating his two sons.

In the spring of 1663 Ray started together with Willughby and two other of his pupils on a Continental tour, from which he returned in March 1666, parting from Willughby at Montpellier, whence the latter continued his journey into Spain. He had previously in three different journeys (1658, 1661, 1662) travelled through the greater part of Great Britain, and selections from his private notes of these journeys were edited by George Scott in 1760, under the title of Mr Ray's Itineraries. Ray himself published an account of his foreign travel in 1673, entitled Observations topographical, moral, and physiological, made on a Journey through part of the Low Countries, Germany, Italy, and France. From this tour Ray and Willughby returned laden with collections, on which they meant to base complete systematic descriptions of the animal and vegetable kingdoms. Willughby under- took the former part, but, dying in 1672, left only an ornithology and ichthyology, in themselves vast, for Ray to edit ; while the latter used the botanical collections for the groundwork of his Methodus plantarum nova (1682), and his great Historia generalis plantarum (1685). The plants gathered on his British tours had already been described in his Catalogus plantarum Angle (1670), which work is the basis of all later English floras.

In 1667 Ray was elected a fellow of the Royal Society, and in 1669 he published in conjunction with Willughby his first paper in the Philosophical Transactions on '" Ex- periments concerning the Motion of Sap in Trees." They demonstrated the ascent of the sap through the wood of the tree, and supposed the sap to "precipitate a kind of white coagulum or jelly, which may be well conceived to be the part which every year between bark and tree turns to wood, and of which the leaves and fruits are made." Immediately after his admission into the Royal Society he was induced by Bishop Wilkins to translate his Real Character into Latin, and it seems he actually completed a translation, which, however, remained in

manuscript ; his Methodus plantarum nova was in fact undertaken as a part of Wilkins's great classificatory scheme.

In 1673 Ray married Margaret Oakley of Launton (Oxford); in 1676 he went to Sutton Coldfield, and in 1677

a & yo wy

to Falborne Hall in Essex. Finally, in 1679, he removed to Black Notley, where he afterwards remained. His life there was quiet and uneventful, but embittered by bodily weakness and chronic sores. He occupied himself in writ- ing books and in keeping up a very wide scientific corre- spondence, and lived, in spite of his infirmities, to the age of seventy-six, dying on 17th January 1705.

Ray's first book, the Catalogus plantarum cirea Cantabrigiam nascentiwm (1660, followed by appendices in 1663 and 1685), was written in conjunction with his " amicissimus et individuus comes," John Nid. The plants, 626 in number, are enumerated alphabetic- ally, but a system of elassification differing little from Caspar Bauhin's is sketched at the end of the book ; and the notes contain many curious references to other parts of uatural history. The stations of the plants are minutely described ; and Cambridge students still gather some of their rarer plants in the eopses or chalk-pits where he found them. The book shows signs of his indebtedness to Joachim Jung of Hamburg, who had died in 1657 leaving his writings unpublished ; but a MS. copy of some of then was sent to Ray by Hartlieb in 1660. Jung invented or gave precision to many technical terms that Ray and others at once made use of in their descriptions, and that are now classical ; and his notions of what constitutes a specifie distinction and what eliaracters are valueless as such seem to have been adopted with little change by Ray. The first two editions of the Catalogus plantarum Angliz (1670, 1677) were likewise arranged alphabetic- ally; but in the Synopsis stirpiwm Britannicarum (1690, 1696, also re-edited by Dillenius 1724, and by Hill 1760) Ray applied the scheme of elassification which he had by that time elaborated in the Methodus and the Historia plantarum. The Methodus plan- tarum nova (1682) was largely based on the works of Cesalpini and Jung, and still more on that of Morison of Oxford. The greatest merit of this book is the use of the number of

cotyledons as a basis of classification ; though it must be remembered that the difference between the monocotyledonous and dicotyledonous embryo was detected by Grew. After dividing plants into flowerless and flowering, Ray says, " Floriferas dividemus in Dicotyledones, quarum semina sata binis foliis anomalis, seminalibns dictis, que cotyledonorum usuin prestant, e terra exeunt, vel in binos saltem lobos dividuntur, quamvis eos supra terram foliorum specie non effernnt ; et Monocotyledones, que nec folia bina seminalia efferunt nee lobos binos condunt. Hee divisio ad arbores etiam extendi potest ; siquidem Palme et congeneres hoe respectu codem modo a reliquis arboribus differunt quo Monocotyledones a reliquis herbis." But a serious blemish was his persistent separation of trees from herbs, a distinction whose falsity had been exposed by Jung and others, but to which Ray tried to give scientific founda- tion by denying the existence of buds in the latter. At this time he based his classification, like Cesalpini, chiefly upon the fruit, and he distinguished several natural groups, such as the grasses, Labiate, Umbellifere, and Papilionacex. The elassification of the Methodus was extended and improved in the Historia plantarum, but was disfigured by a large class of Anomalz, to include forms that the other orders did not easily admit, and by the separation of the cereals from other grasses. The first volume of this vast book was published in 1685, the second in the next year, and the third in 1704 ; it enumerates and describes all the plants known to the author or described by his predecessors, to the number, according to Adanson, of 18,625 species. In the first volume a chapter "De plantis in genere" contains an account of all the anatomical and physiological knowledge of the time regarding plants, with the recent speculations and discoveries of Czsalpini, Grew, Malpighi, and Jung. And Cuvier and Dupetit Thouars, declaring that it was this chapter which gave acceptance and authority to these authors' works, say that " the best monument that could be erected to the memory of Ray would be the republica- tion of this part of his work separately." The Stirpiwm Europex- arum extra Britannias nascentinm Sylloge (1694) isa much amplified edition of the catalogue of plants colleeted on his own Continental tour. In the preface to this book he first elearly admitted the doctrine of the sexuality of plants, which, however, he had no share in establishing. Here also begins his long controversy with Rivinus, which chiefly turned upon Ray's indefensible separation of ligneons from

herbaceous plants, and also upon what he con- eeived to be the misleading reliance that Rivinus placed on the characters of the corolla. But in the second edition of his Afethodus (1703) he followed Rivinus and Tournefort in taking the flower instead of the fruit as his basis of classification: he was no longer a fructicist but a corollist.

Besides editing his friend Willughby's books, Ray wrote several zoological works of his own, including Synopses of Quadrupeds (1693), that is to say, both mammals and reptiles, of Birds, and of Fishes (1718) ; the last two were published posthumously, as was also the more important {Zistoria fnseetorwm (1710). – The History of Insects embodied a great mass of Willughby's notes, and the

Synopses of Birds and Fishes were mere abridgments of the " Ornithology " and " Ichthyology."

Most of Ray's minor works were the outcome of his faculty for laborious compiling and eataloguing ; for instance, his Collection of English Proverbs (1670), his Collection of out-of-the-way English Words (1674), his Collection of Curious Travels and Voyages (1693), and his Dietionariolum trilingue, or Nomenelator classieus (1675). The last was written for the use of Willughby's sons, his pupils ; it passed through many editions, and is still useful for its careful identifications of plants and animals mentioned by Greek and Latin writers. But Ray's permanent influence and reputation have probably depended most of all upon his two books entitled The Wisdom of God manifested in the Works of the Creation (1691), and Afiscellaneows Discourses concerning the Dissolution and Changes of the World (1692). The latter includes three essays, on "The Primitive Chaos and Creation of the World," "«The General Deluge, its Causes and Effects,' and "The Dissolu- tion of the World and Future Conflagrations." The germ of these works was contained in sermons preached long before in Cambridge. Both books obtained immediate popnlarity ; the former, at least, was translated into several languages ; and to this day their influ- ence is apparent. For, as Sir J. Smith says in his biography of Ray, "this book [The Wisdom of God, &c.] is the basis of all the labours of following divines, who have made the

book of nature a commentary on the Book of Revelation." In it Ray recites in- numerable examples of the perfection of organic mechanism, the multitude and variety of living ereatures, the minuteness and usefulness of their parts. Many, if not most, of the familiar proofs of purposive adaptation aud design in nature were suggested by Ray. The structure of the eye, the hollowness of the bones, the eamel's stomach, the hedgehog's armour, are anlong the thou- sand instances cited by him of immediate ereative interpositions. But, though his application of natural history to apologetic theo- logy has made his reputation peculiarly wide, it must be acknow- ledged that none of this scientific discoveries at all equal in value those of the physiological botanists who immediately preceded him, and that even in classificatory insight he was surpassed by several of his contemporaries.

Authorities.—Select Remains, Itineraries, and Life, by Dr Derham, edited by George Scott, 1740; notice by Sir J. E. Sinith in Ree's Cyclopedia; notice by Cuvier and A. Dupetit Thouars in the Biographie Universelle; all these were collected under the title Memorials of Ray, and edited (with the addition of a complete catalogue of his works) by Dr Edwin Lankester, 8vo (Ray Society), 1846 ; Correspondence (with Willughby, Martin Lister, Dr Robinson, Petiver, Derham, Sir Hans Sloane, and others), edited by Dr Derham, 1718; Selections, with additions, edited by Lankester Ray Society), 1848, For accounts of Ray's system of classification, see Cuvier, Legons Hist. s. Sci. Nat., p. 488; Sprengel, Gesch. d. Botanik, ii. p. 40; also Whewell, Hist. Ind. Sct., iil. p. 332 (ed. 1847), and Wood, art. " Classification" in Ree's Cyclopedia, (D. W. T.)

RAYMOND LULLY. See Lutty.

RAYMOND or Sasunpe: (Sebonde, Sebeyde, &c.) appears to have been born at Barcelona towards the end of the 14th century. He combined the training of a phy- sician and a theologian, and was professor of theology at Toulouse, seemingly from the year 1430 onwards. He published there in 1436 his chief work, Zheologia Naturalis, sive liber creaturarum. This book was reprinted pretty frequently during the next two centuries, and has recently been republished at Sulzbach (1852), but without the intro- duction, which, for some not very intelligible reason, was placed upon the

Jndex by the council of Trent. It was translated into French by Montaigne at the command of his father (see Montaigne, Hssazs, ii. 12). The six Dialogi de natura hominis are an extract from the larger work made by Raymond himself. Raymond is a scholastic of the period of decline. The chief thought of the Theologia Naturalis is the parallelism between the book of nature and the book of revelation. The second of these two books is more sacred on account of its supernatural character, but a foundation must be laid by the study of the first. Nature culminates in man, who alone of the creatures possesses all the four properties which mark off the different grades of existence (esse, vivere, sentire, intelligere). But man himself points forward to a self-existent unity in which individual differences disappear. Everything that we find in the creatures is present in God without lhmitation or negation, so that God's being is the universal being of all things. Hence it is true that God created the world out of nothing. Raymond endeavours to deduce the principal dogmas of the church by the natural light in a similar fashion. Man's own advantage and the glory of God are

the ultimate rules of conduct, and the coincidence of the iwo is maintained on the ground of the joys of knowledge. Knowledge has its natural consummation in the knowledge cf God; man's knowledge of God is at the same time the love and gratitude which he, as representative of the creatures and mediator between them and God, continually offers to the divine majesty. The fact that self-love and the love of God are at present often in conflict is traced by Raymond to the fall of the first human pair; and this gives him occasion to deduce the doctrine of the incarna- tion, almost in the words of Anselm's Cur Deus homo. RAYNAL, GuinLauMe THomas Francois (1713-1796), was born on 12th April 1713 in the province of Rouergue, and was educated at Pézenas by the Jesuits. He took orders, and, going to Paris, did parish work ; but he left the priesthood (being indeed deprived for misconduct) and betaking himself to literature soon became one of the minor members of the phalosophe coterie. He did not a little journalism and bookmaking of divers kinds; but his name would be entirely forgotten were it not for the Histoire philosophique et politique des Etablissements et du Commerce des

Européens dans les Deux Indes. This book is not, and indeed was not in its own day, of any substan- tive value as a book of reference on its nominal subject ; but it exercised considerable influence : it was exceedingly characteristic of the period and society which produced it, and passages of it are still worth reading. The secret of its merits and its faults is to be found in the manner of its composition. Raynal himself wrote but a small part of it, and he took not the slightest pains to make it a homo- geneous work. But he borrowed from books and he begged from his own friends all manner of diatribes against super- stition and tyranny, often illustrated by lively anecdotes and eloquent tirades. Grimm assigns a full third of the book to Diderot, which is probably an exaggeration, but that Diderot had a great hand in it no judge of style can doubt. It was published in 1772, and brought the author many compliments, even from men like Gibbon, who should have known better. A new edition in 1780 was even bolder. It was condemned and burned (29th May 1781), and the author had to fly the country. He returned just before the Revolution, but having apparently a natural tendency to opposition he became a strong Royalist. He died on 6th March 1796. No other work of Raynal's deserves notice here. The best account

in English of the Histoire des Indes will be found in Mr John Morley's Diderot, vol. ii. chap. xv.

RAZORBILL or Razor-BinteED AUK, known also on many parts of the British coasts as the Marrot, Murre, Scout, Tinker, or Willock—names which it, however, shares with the GuILLEMoT (vol. xi. p. 262), and to some extent with the PUFFIN (see above, p. 101)—a common sea-bird of the Northern Atlantic,' resorting in vast numbers to certain stations on rocky cliffs for the purpose of breeding, and, its object being accomplished, returning to deeper waters for the rest of the year. It is the Alca torda of Linneeus ? and most modern authors, congeneric with the GARE-FowWL (vol. x. p. 78), if not with the true Guillemots, between which two forms it is intermediate—differing from the former in its small size and retaining the power of flight,

1 Schlegel (Aus. des Pays-Bas, Urinatores, p. 14) records an example from Japan ; but this must be in error.

2 The word Alca is simply the Latinized form of this bird's common Teutonic name, Alk, of which Auk is the English modification. It must therefore be held to be the type of the Linnean genus Alca, though some systematists on indefensible grounds have removed it thence, making it the sole member of a genus named by Leach, after Aldrovandus (Ornithologia, bk. xix. chap. xlix.), Utamania—an ex- traordinary word, that seems to have originated in some mistake from the no less extraordinary Vuttamaria, given by Belon (Observations, i. c, xi.) as the Cretan name of some diving bird, which certainly could not have been the present species.

which that presumably extinct species has lost, and from the latter in its peculiarly-shaped bill, which is vertically enlarged, compressed, and deeply furrowed, as well as in its elongated, wedge-shaped tail. A fine white line, run- ning on each side from the base of the culmen to the eye, is in the adult bird in breeding-apparel (with a few very rare exceptions) a further obvious characteristic. Other- wise the appearance of all these birds may be briefly described in the same words—bhead, breast, and upper parts generally of a deep glossy black, and the lower parts and tip of the secondaries of a pure white, while the various changes of plumage dependent on age or season are alike in all. In habits the Razorbill closely agrees with the true Guillemots, laying its single egg (which is not, however, subject to the same amazing variety of coloration that is pre-eminently the Guillemot's own) on the ledges of the cliffs to which it repairs in the brecding- season, but it is said then as a rule to occupy higher eleva- tions, and when not breeding to keep further out to sea. On the east side of the Atlantic the Razorbill has its stations on convenient parts of the coast from the North Cape to Britanny, besides several in the Baltic, while in winter it passes much further to the southward, and is sometimes numerous in the Bay of Gibraltar, occasionally entering the Mediterranean but apparently never extending to the eastward of Sicily or Malta. On the west side of the Atlantic it breeds from 70° N. lat. on the eastern shore of Baffin's Bay to Cape Farewell, and again on the coast of America from Labrador and Newfoundland to the Bay of Fundy, while in winter it reaches Long Island. (4. N.)

RAZZI, GIANANTONIO. See SoDDoMA.

RE, Isue or, a long, low island 3 miles off the coast of the French department of Charente Inférieure, runs south-east and north-west with a breadth of about 3 miles and a length of 184 miles. The north-west point (Pointe des Baleines) has a lighthouse of the first class. The Pertuis Breton separates the island from the coast of La Vendée to the north, and the Pertuis d'Antioche from the Isle of Oléron to the south. With a surface of 18,259 acres, the Isle of Ré has 15,370 inhabitants, whose chief source of income is the salt marshes, producing annually 31,500 tons of salt. The island has also a vineyard and corn lands, and boasts of the excellence of its figs, pears, and cream. Apart from the orchards it is now woodless, though once covered with forests. Oysters are success- fully cultivated, the annual supply of these molluscs being 35,000,000. The coast facing the Atlantic is rocky and inhospitable, but there are numerous harbours on the land- ward side. The island seems once to have been united to the continent, with which it is still connected by a line of sunken rocks; its existence is not mentioned before the 8th century. Tradition says that the city of Antioche on the west coast was destroyed by the Atlantic storms, which still constantly threaten to cut the island in two at the isthmus (only 230 feet wide) formed by the gulf called Fier d'Ars. There are two cantons—St Martin and Ars-en-Ré—in the arrondissement of La Rochelle. St Martin, with a secure harbour, was fortified by Vauban, and is the depét for convicts on their way to New Caledonia.

READE, Cuarzezs (1814-1884), holds a high and dis- tinctive place among the English novelists of the third quarter of the 19th century. The son of an Oxfordshire squire, he was born at Ipsden in 1814, and was educated for the bar. He entered Magdalen College, Oxford, pro- ceeded B.A. in 1835, with a third class in classics, was elected Vinerian Reader in 1842, and was called to the bar (Lincoln's Inn) in 1843. It was comparatively late in his life that he made his first appearance as an author, but he showed at once that he had subjected himself to a laborious apprenticeship to the study of life and literature.

He began as a dramatist, and this his first ambition shaped and coloured his work to the end. It was his own wish that the word "dramatist" should stand first in the de- seription of his occupations on his tombstone. He was dramatist first and novelist afterwards, not merely chrono- logically but in his aims as an author, always having an eye to stage-effect in scene and situation as well as in dialogue. Grol, his first play (1850), was but a moderate success. He did not achieve popularity till 1856, when he produced Jt's Mever Too Late to Mend, a novel written with the purpose of reforming abuses in prison discipline and the treatment of criminals. The prosecution of his moral purpose carried him too far for most of his readers ; he described prison life with a minuteness and fidelity— the result of laborious studies of blue-books and newspapers and personal inquiries—which become at times tedious and revolting ; but the power of the descriptions was undeni- able, and the interest of the story, in spite of all over- elaboration of painful details, was profound and thrilling. The truth of some of his details was challenged, and the novelist showed himself a pungent controversialist. From first to last he defended himself with vigour and great strength of language against all attempts to rebut his con- tentions or damage his literary property. J¢'s Never Too Late to Mend was his first great success, but before this he had gained the respect of critics with two shorter novels, Pey Wofington (1852), a close study of life and character behind the scenes, and Christie Johnstone (1853), an equally close study of Scotch fisher folk, an extraordi- nary tour de force for the son of an English squire, whether we consider the dialect or the skill with which he enters into alien habits of thought. He had also established his position as a dramatist by writing (in combination with Mr Tom Taylor) a stage version of Pey Woffington under the title of Masks and Faces (1854), the most successful and the most frequently reproduced of his plays, besides three that were less successful, Zhe Courier of Lyons (a powerful melodrama), 7%vo Loves and a Life, and The King's Rivals (1854), From 1856 onwards he kept his position in the foremost rank of contemporary novelists. Five minor novels followed in quick succession, —The Course of True Love never did Run Smooth (1857), Jack of all Trades (1858), The Autobiography of a Thief (1858), Love Me Little, Love Me Long (1859), The Double Marriage, or White Lies (1860). Then appeared, in 1861, what most critics regard as his masterpiece, The Cloister and the Hearth. He had dealt with the subject two years before in

a short story in Once a Week, but, seeing its capabilities, he returned to it and expanded it into its present form. As a picture of manners it is broad and full; yet amply as the novelist illustrates the times he very rarely becomes tedious or allows the thrilling interest of the story to lapse. Returning from the 15th century to modern English life, he next produced another startling novel with a purpose, Hard Cash (1863), in which he strove to direct attention to the abuses of private lunatic asylums. Three more such novels, in two of which at least the moral purpose, though fully kept in view, was not allowed to obstruct the rapid flow of thrilling incident, were afterwards undertaken,— Foul Play (1869), in which he exposed the iniquities of ship-knackers, and paved the way for the labours of Mr Plimsoll ; Put Yourself in his Place (1870), in which he grappled with the tyrannous outrages of trades-unions ; and A Woman-Hater (1877), in which he gave a helping hand to the advocates of woman's rights. The Wandering Heir (1875), of which he also wrote a version for the stage, was suggested by the Tichborne trial. Outside the line of these moral and occasional works Reade produced three that might be classified as psychological, inasmuch as they were elaborate studies of character,—Grifith Gaunt (1866),

A Terrible Temptation (1871), A Simpleton (1873). Thea first of these was in his own opinion the best of his novels, and his own opinion was probably right. He was wrong, however, in his own conception of his powers as a dramatist. At intervals throughout his literary career he sought to gratify his dramatic ambition, hiring a theatre and en- gaging a company for the representation of his own plays. An example of his persistency was seen in the case of Foul Play. He wrote this in 1869 in combination with Mr Dion Boucicault with a view to stage adaptation. The play was more or less a failure; but he produced another ver- sion alone in 1877, under the title of A Scuttled Ship, and the failure was pronounced. His greatest success as a dramatist attended his last attempt —Drink—an adapta- tion of Zola's L'Assommoir, produced in 1879. At his death in 1884 (11th April) Reade left behind him a com- pleted novel, A Perilous Secret, which showed no falling off in the art of weaving a complicated plot and devising thrilling situations.

It was characteristic of Reade's open and combative nature that he admitted the public freely to the secrets of his method of com- Basen He spoke about his method in his prefaces ; he intro-

uced himself into one of his novels—"Dr Rolfe" in A Terrible Temptation ; and by his will he left his workshop and his ac: umu- lation of materials open for inspection for two years after his death. It appears that he had collected an enormous mass of materials for his study of human nature, from personal observation, from news- papers, books of travel, blue-books of commissions of inquiry, from miscellaneous reading. This vast collection of notes, cuttings, extracts, gathered together week by week and year by ycar, is classified and arranged in huge ledgers and note-books duly paged and indexed. He had planned a great work on " the wisdom and folly of nations," dealing with social, political, and domestic details, and it was c'uefly for this that his collection was destined, but in passing '.2 found the materials very uscful as a store of incidents and suggestions. A collector of the kind was bound to be systematic, otherwise his collection would have fallen into inextricable confusion, and Reade's collection contains many re- markable curiosities in classification and tabulation. On the value of this method for his art there has been much discussion, the prevalent opinion being that his imagination was overwhelmed and stifled by it. He himself strenuously maintaincd the contrary ; and it must be admitted that a priori critics have not rightly understood the use that he made of his laboriously collected facts. He did not merely shovel the contents of his note- books into his novels ; they served rather as an atmosphere of reality in which he worked, so that his novels were like pictures painted in the open air. His imagination worked freely among them and was quick- cned rather than impeded by their suggestions of things suited to the purpose in hand ; and it is probably to his close and constant contact with facts, acting on an imagination naturally fertile, that we owe his marvellous and unmatchable abundance of incident. Even in his novels of character there is no meditative and analytic stagnation ; the development of character is shown through a rapid unceasing progression of significant facts. This rapidity of move- ment was perhaps partly the result of his dramatic studies ; it was probably in writing for the stage that he learned the value of keep- ing the attention of his readers incessantly on the alert. The hankering after stage

effect, while it saved him from dulness, often betrayed him into rough exaggeration, especially in his comic scenes. But the gravest defect in his work is a defect of temper. His view of human life, especially of the life of women, is harsh, almost brutal ; his knowledge of frailtics and vices is obtruded with repel- lent force ; and he cannot, with all his skill and power as a story- teller, be numbered among the great artists who warm the heart and help to improve the conduct. But as a moral satirist and castigator, which was the function he professed over and above that of a story-teller, he undoubtedly did good service, both indirectly in his novels and directly in his own name. (W. M.)

READING, a market-town and ancient borough of Berk- shire, is pleasantly situated on slightly elevated ground on the banks of the Kennet, a short distance above its junc- tion with the Thames, and on branches of the Great Western, South-Eastern, and South-Western Railways, 28 miles south-south-east of Oxford and 354 west of London by rail. Besides the facilities on the Thames there is water communication by the Kennet to Newbury, and by the Kennet and Avon Canal to the Severn. The Thames is crossed by one bridge and the Kennet by three. The

town is well built, with wide and regular streets and many good villas in the suburbs. Of the magnificent Benedictine abbey founded in 1121 by King Henry L, originally one of the three wealthiest in England, all that now remains is a mass of ruins (with the exception of the gateway, which was restored in 1861 and is now carefully preserved), a portion of the great hall (in which several parliaments have been held), and the foundation of the Norman apsidal chapel. Henry I., who died at Rouen, was buried within its precincts; but his monument was destroyed in the time of Edward VI.; and John of Gaunt was married there to Blanche of Lancaster in 1359. By Henry VIII. it was converted into a palace, which formed the occasional residence of subsequent sovereigns until its destruction during the Cromwellian wars. Of other old ecclesiastical buildings of special interest the principal are Greyfriars' church, completed about 1311, formerly the church of Greyfriars' monastery, but after the dissolution used successively as a town-hall, a workhouse, and a

jail, until it was restored to its original use in 1864; St Mary's church, rebuilt, according to Camden, in 1551 from the ruins of a nunnery founded by Elfrida to expiate the murder of her stepson (Edward the Martyr); the church of St Lawrence, originally Norman, but rebuilt in the 15th century in the Early English style, containing some ~ interesting brasses; and the church of St Giles, of mixed architecture, which was severely damaged during the Cromwellian wars. At the free grammar-school, founded in 1445, Archbishop Laud received his education, and he afterwards became a generous benefactor to it. The school was removed in 1871 to new buildings surrounded by 12 acres of ground. Other educational foundations are the Kendrick schools (1624), the blue-coat school (1656), and the green-coat school for girls (1779). The various almshouses were consolidated into one building in 1865. Among the modern structures are the municipal buildings (in the Renaissance style, erected in 1875 and enlarged in 1882, containing a large concert-room, a free library, schools for science and art, and a museum), the corn exchange, the assize courts, the athenzeum, the royal Albert hall, the masonic hall, the workhouse, and the royal Berk- shire hospital. The town has a large trade in corn and agri- cultural produce ; and, in addition to an extensive biscuit manufactory which employs over 3000 hands, it possesses iron-works, iron-foundries, engine- works, and breweries. Adjoining the town are extensive seed nurseries covering about 10,000 acres. The population of the borough (area, 2186 acres) in 1871 was 32,324, and in 1881] it was 42,054.

The origin of the town is doubtful ; but Reading must have been aplace of some importance when the Danes in 871 brought their war-ships up the Thames as far as the Kennet and made the town for some time their headquarters. It was burned by Sweyn in 1006. In Domesday the name occurs as Radynges. A new and strong castle was erected here by Stephen, which was destroyed by Henry II. In 1209 the professors and students of Oxford made a temporary retreat to Reading, owing to a quarrel with King John. From the 138th to the 16th century parhaments were frequently held in the town, and in the Michaelmas term of 1625 the law courts were transferred to it on account of the prevalence of the plague in London. In 1643 it surrendered to the Parliamentary forces under the earl of Essex, and subsequently was more than once occupied

by the rival armies. It isa borough by prescription and received charters and grants from Henry III. and subsequent sovereigns. It has returned members to parhament from the 23d of Edward I. ; the number was reduced from two to one in 1885. By the Municipal Act of 1836 it was divided into three wards governed by a mayor, six alderinen, and eighteen councillors.

READING, a city of the United States, capital of Berks county, Pennsylvania, on the east bank of the Schuylkill river, and on the Schuylkill and Union Canals, 58 miles north-west of Philadelphia at the intersection of some fourteen railway lines, representing eight different companies. It occupies an elevated and healthy position

on a plain that gradually rises towards an amphitheatre of hills, including Penn's Mount on the east and Neversink Mountain on the south. The plan is extremely regular and the principal streets cross at Penn Square, the business centre of the city. An abundant supply of excellent water helps to keep the whole place sweet and clean. Conspicuous buildings are —the court-house, the city-hall, Trinity Church (Lutheran), Christ Church (Episcopal), the opera-house, Mishler's academy of music, and the railway station. Besides a very extensive and varied manufacture of iron and iron wares from steam-boilers down to nails, Reading carries on distilling, tanning, cotton-weaving, cigar-rolling, paper-making, and many other industries, and is the seat of extensive machine-shops of the Phil- adelphia and Reading Railroad. The population—2385 in 1800, 15,743 in 1850, 33,930 in 1870, and 43,278 in 1880—is largely of German origin ; and in 1883 one out of its five daily newspapers and six out of its eleven weeklies were in German.

Laid out in 1748 by Thomas and Richard Penn, Reading received incorporation as a borough in 1788, and was made a city in 1847.

REALEJO, a town and harbour on the Pacific coast of Nicaragua, situated in the neighbourhocd of 12° 28' N. lat. The harbour is spacious and well sheltered, and altogether the best which Nicaragua possesses on that coast ; it is protected by a peninsula and two considerable islands,

Cardon and Asserradores or Corinto. The town lies 9 miles inland, and as a port is now superseded by the new town of Corinto, founded about 1849, and since 1881 connected with Leon and the interior by a railway. Realejo was the terniinus adopted by Bedford Pim for his scheme of an interoceanic canal; but the route actually sanctioned reaches the coast of the Pacific at Brito, some distance to the south.

REAL ESTATE. The land law of England and of countries whose law is based upon that of England stands in a peculiar position, which can be understood only by an outline of its history.

History.—Such terms as "fee" or "homage" carry us far back into feudal times. Rights of common and dis- tress are based upon still older institutions, forming the very basis of primitive law. The conception of tenure is the most fundamental ground of distinction between real and personal estate, the former only being strictly en- titled to the name of estate (see EstatE). The division into real and personal is coincident to a great extent with that. into immovable and movable, generally used by systems of law founded on the Roman (see PERSONAL EstaTE), That it is not entirely coincident is due to the influence of the Roman law itself. The Greeks and the Romans of the republic were essentially nations of citizens; the Teutons were essentially a nation of land- folk; the Roman empire bridged the gulf between the two. It is probable that the English land law was produced by the action of the policy adopted in the lower empire, finally developed into feudalism, upon the previously ex- isting course of Teutonic custom (see FEUDALISM). It is sufficient to say here that the distinguishing features of the Teutonic system were enjoyment in common and the absence of private ownership, except to a limited extent, The history of the development of the old English land law before the Conquest will be found under ENGLAND and Lanp. Its principal features, stated as shortly as possible, were (1) liberty of alienation, either by will or inter vivos, of such land as could be alienated, chiefly, if not entirely, bocland, subject always to the limits fixed by the boc; (2) publicity of transfer by enrolment in the shire-book or church-book ; (3) equal partition of the estate of a deceased among the sons, and failing sons among the daughters ; (4) cultivation to a great extent by persons in various

Dee fee? A TE

degrees of serfdom, owing money or labour rents; (5) variety of custom, tending to become uniform, through the application of the same principles in the local courts ; (6) subjection of land to the trinoda necessitas, a burden imposed for the purpose of defence of the realm. The rudiments of the conceptions of tenure and of the crown as lord paramount were found in the old English system, and lenland was an anticipation of the limited interests which afterwards became of such importance.! The con- nexion of political privileges with the ownership of land is not peculiar to the pre-Conquest or any other period. It runs through the whole of English history. Originally all freeholders seem to have voted in the county court. Finally the Reform Acts of this century, however they may have lowered the qualification, still require (except in the case of the university vote) the vote to be derived from an interest in land. No amount of consols will give a vote at a parliamentary election. A qualification from land is also necessary in the case of sheriff, justices of the peace, and other public officials.

The elements of feudalism so far existed in England under the Anglo-Saxon and Danish kings as to make it easy to introduce it in full at the Norman Conquest. Feudalism was not so much a distinct and separate creation, developed at once in its maturity, as a collection of institu- tions whose origin was to be found in unconnected sources. What the Norman Conquest did was not to change all at once allodial into feudal tenure, but to complete the association of territorial with personal dependence in a state of society already prepared for it.2 "'Nulle terre sans seigneur" was one of the fundamental axioms of feudalism. There might be any number of infeudations and subin- feudations to mesne lords, but the chain of seigniory was complete, depending in the last resort upon the king as lord paramount. Land was not owned by free owners owing only necessary militia duties to the state, but was held of the king by military service of a far more onerous nature. he folkland became the king's land ; the soldier was a landowner instead of the landowner being a soldier. Free owners tended to become tenants of the lord, the township to be lost in the manor.? The common land became in law the waste of the manor, its enjoyment rest- ing upon a presumed grant by the lord. On the other

hand, the whole of England did not become manorial ; the conflict between the township and the manor resulted in a compromise, the result of which affects English tenure to this day. But it was a compromise much to the advantage of the privileged class, for in England more than in any other country the land law is the law of the nobility and not of the people. One reason of this is that, as England was never so completely feudalized as were some of the Continental states, the burden of feudalism was not so severely felt, and has led to less agitation for reform.

The land forfeited to the Conqueror was regranted by him to be held by military service due to the king, not to the mesne lord as in Continental feudalism. In 1086 at the council of Salisbury all the landholders swore fealty to the crown. In the full vigour of feudalism the inhabit- ants of England were either free or not free. The free inhabitants held their lands either by free tenure (Jiberum tenementum, franktenement) or by a tenure which was originally that of a non-free inhabitant, but attached to land in the possession of a free man. Franktenement was ; 1 The name has not remained as in Germany and Denmark. A fief is still Lehen in Germany, Lehn in Denmark.

2 "The relation of vassalage, originally personal, became annexed to the tenure of land" (Palgrave, Rise and Progress of the English Commonwealth, vol. i. p. 505).

It is a disputed point whether the manor organization existed

before the Conquest ; but its full development seems to have been later than that event.

either military tenure, called also tenure in knight service or chivalry (including barony, the highest tenure known to the law, grand serjeanty and the special forms of escuage, castle-guard, cornage, and others), or socage (including burgage and petit serjeanty), or frankalmoign (/ibera elee- mosyna) or divine service, by which ecclesiastical corpora- tions generally held their land.t The non-free inhabitants were in Domesday Book servi, cotarti, or bordarii, later nativi or villani, the last name being

applied to both free men and serfs. All these were in a more or less dependent condition. The free tenures all exist at the present day, though, as will appear later, the military tenures have shrunk into the unimportant and exceptional tenure of grand serjeanty. The non-free tenures are to a certain extent represented by CopyrHoxp (q¢.v.). The most im- portant difference between the military and socage tenures was the mode of descent. Whether or not a feudal benefice was originally hereditary, it had certainly become so at the time of the Conquest, and it descended to the eldest son. This applied at once in England to land held by military service as far as regarded the capital fief. The descent of socage lands or lands other than the capital fief for some time followed the old pre-Conquest rule of descent. Thus in the so-called " Laws of Henry I." the lands other than the capital fief, and in Glanvill, who wrote in the time of Henry II., socage lands, if anciently partible (antiquitus divisum), were divided among all the sons equally. But by the time of Bracton (Henry III.) the course of descent of lands held by military service had so far prevailed that, though it was a question of fact whether the land was partible or not, if there was no evidence either way descent to the eldest son was pre- sumed. Relics of the old custom still remain in the case of gavelkind (see below). The military tenant was sub- ject to the feudal incidents, from which the tenant in socage was exempt. These incidents, especially wardship and marriage, were often of a very oppressive nature. Alienation of lands by will, except in a few favoured districts, became impossible; alienation inter wivos was restrained in one direction in the interests of the heir, in another in the interests of the lord. At the time of Glan- vill a tenant had a greater power. of alienation over land which he had purchased (terra acqutetata) than over land which he had inherited. But by the time of Bracton the heir had ceased to have any interest in either kind of land. The lords were more successful. It was enacted by Magna Charta that a free man should not give or sell so much of his land as to leave an amount insufficient to perform his services to his lord. In spite of this provision, the rights of the lords were continually diminished by subinfeudation until the passing of the Statute of Quia Emptores. Aliena- tion by a tenant in chief of the crown without licence was a ground of forfeiture until 1 Edw. ITI. st. 2, c. 12, by which a fine was substituted. The modes of con- veyance at this time were only two, feoffment with livery of seisin for corporeal hereditaments, grant for

incorporeal hereditaments. Livery of seisin, though public, was not officially recorded like the old English transfer of property. The influence of local custom upon the land law must have become weakened after the circuits of the judges of the King's Court were established by Henry II. Jurisdiction over litigation touching the freehold was taken away from the lords' courts by 15 Ric. IT. c. 12.

The common law as far as it dealt with real estate had in the main assumed its present aspect by the reign of Henry III. The changes which have been made since that date have been chiefly due to the action of equity

4 Frankalmoign was not always regarded as a distinct tenure. Thus Littleton (§ 118) says that all that is not tenure in chivalry is tenure

in socage. XX. — 39

306

and legislation, the latter sometimes interpreted by the courts in a manner very different from the intention of parliament. The most important influence of equity has been exercised in MorT@acs (q.v.) and trusts (see TRUST), in the doctrine of specific performance of contracts concerning real estate, and in relief from forfeiture for breach of covenant. As to legislation, it is impossible in this place to do more than direct attention to the main provisions of the principal statutes among the mass of those which from Magna Charta downwards have dealt with real estate. History of Real Estate Legislation.—The reign of Edward J. is notable for three leading statutes which are still law, all passed in the interests of the superior lords. The Statute of Mortmain (7 Edw. I. st. 2, c. 13) is the first of a long series directed against the acquisition of land by religious and charitable corporations (see CHARITIES). The statute De Donis Conditionalibus (13 Edw. I. c. 1) forbade the alienation of estates granted to a man and the heirs of his body, which before the statute became on the birth of an heir at once alienable (except in the case of gifts in frankmarriage), and so the lord lost his escheat. For the mode in which the statute was practically defeated and estates tail in their modern form created see ENTAIL. The statute Quia Hmptores (18 Edw. I. c. 1)

preserved those rights of the lords which were up to that time sub- ject to be defeated by subinfeudation, by enacting that in any alienation of lands the alienee should hold them of the same lord of the fee as the alienor.! Since 1290 it has been impossible to create an estate in fee-simple to be held of a mesne lord, or to reserve a rent upon a grant of an estate in fee (unless in the form of a rent-charge), or to create a new manor. The statute, however, does not bind the crown. The practical effect of the statute was to make the transfer of land thenceforward more of a commercial and less of a feudal transaction. The writ of elegit was introduced by the Statute of Westminster IT. in 1285 as a creditor's remedy over real estate. It has, however, been considerably modified by subsequent legislation. From 1290 to the reign of Henry VIII. there is no statute of the first importance dealing with real estate. The reign of Henry VIIL, like the reign of Edward L,, is signalized by three Acts, the effects of which continue to this day. The one which has had the most lasting influence in law is the Statute of Uses, 27 Hen. VIII. c. 10 (see Convey- ANCING, Trust). The Statute of Uses was intended to provide against secrecy of sales of land, and as a necessary sequel to it an Act of the same year (27 Hen. VIII. c. 16) enacted that all bargains and sales of land should be duly enrolled (see Sate). Bargain and sale was a form of equi- table transfer which had for some purposes superseded the common law feoffment. It applied only to estates of inheritance and not to terms of years. The unforeseen effect of 27 Hen. VIII. c. 16 was to establish as the ordinary form of conveyance until 1841 the conveyance by lease and release? Uses having become legal estate by the Statute of Uses, and therefore no longer devis- able, 32 Hen. VIII. c. 1 (explained by 34 and 35 Hen. VIII. c. 5) was passed to remedy this inconvenience. It is still law as to wills made before 1838 (see WILL). In the reign of Elizabeth the Acts of 13 Eliz. c. 5 and 27 Eliz. c. 4 avoided fraudulent conveyances as against all parties and voluntary conveyances as against subse- quent purchasers for valuable consideration. arly in the reign of Charles II. the Act of 1661 (12 Car. II. c. 24) turned all the feudal tenures (with the exception

. / Tenants in chief of the crown were liable to a fine on alienation until 12 Car. II. c. 24.

2 From the reign of Edward IV. at latest up to the Fines and Re- coveries Act of 1833 fines and recoveries were also recognized as a means of conveyance. They are so regarded in the Statute of Uses.

Ea ES 2

of frankalmoign and grand serjeanty) into tenure by free and common socage and abolished the feudal incidents. The Statute of Frauds (29 Car. II. c. 3) contained pro- visions that certain leases and assignments, and that all agreements and trusts relating to land, should be in writing (see Fravp). The land registries of Middlesex and York- shire date from the reign of Anne (see REGISTRATION). Devises of land for charitable purposes were forbidden by the Mortmain Act (9 Geo. II c. 36). In the next reign the first general Inclosure Act was passed, 41 Geo. IIL c. 109 (see Commons). In the reign of William IV. were passed the Prescription, Limitation, and Tithe Commuta- tion Acts (see Prescription, Limiration, TrrHss) ; fines

and recoveries were abolished and simpler modes of con-

veyance substituted by 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 74; and the laws of inheritance and dower were amended by 3 and 4 Will, IV. ce. 105, 106 (see INHERITANCE, HUSBAND AND Wire). In the reign of Victoria there has been a vast mass of legislation dealing with real estate in almost every conceivable aspect. At the immediate beginning of the reign stands the Wills Act (see Witt). The transfer of real estate has been simplified by 8 and 9 Vict. c. 106 and by the Conveyancing Acts of 1881 and 1882 (see below). Additional powers of dealing with settled estates were given by the Settled Estates Act, 1856, later by the Settled Estates Act, 1877, and the Settled Land Act, 1882 (see SETTLEMENT). Succession duty was levied for the first time on freeholds in 1853. The strictness of the Mortmain Act has been relaxed in favour of gifts and sales to public institutions of various kinds, such as schools, parks, and museums. The period of limitation has been shortened for most purposes from twenty to twelve years by the Real Property Limitation Act, 1874 (see Limiration). Several Acts have been passed dealing with the enfranchisement and commutation of copyholds: and the preservation of commons and open spaces (see Com- MONS, CopYHoLD). The Naturalization Act, 1870 (33

and 34 Vict. c. 14), enables aliens to hold and transfer land in England. The Felony Act, 1870 (33 and 34 Vict. c. 23), abolished forfeiture of real estate on conviction for felony. The Agricultural Holdings Act, 1883 (46 and 47 Vict. ¢. 61), gives the tenant of a tenancy within the Act a general right to compensation for improvements, substitutes a year's notice to quit for the six months' notice previously necessary, enlarges the tenant's right to fixtures, and limits distress to a year's rent. By 47 and 48 Vict. c. 71 the law of escheat is extended to incorporeal hereditaments and equitable estates. Among other subjects which have been dealt with by recent legislation may be mentioned Rz- GISTRATION, MoRTGAGE, PARTITION, EXCAMBION, FIXTURES (qq.vv.), taking of land in execution, declaration of title, and apportionment. Not a year passes in which the land law is not altered to a greater or less degree. Bills have been introduced within recent years, but hitherto unsuccess- fully, for amending the law by the assimilation of the suc- cession to real and personal estate, and for the compulsory enfranchisement of leaseholds.

Real estate at the present day is either legal or equitable, a differ- ence resting mainly upon historical grounds (see Equiry, Trust). The following observations apply in general to both kinds of estate. The usual classification of interests in real estate regards either the extent, the time, or the mode of enjoyment. The division accord- ing to the extent is in the first instance Into corporeal and incorporeal hereditaments, a division based upon the Roman law division of res into corporates and incorporales, and open to the same objection, that it is unscientific as co-ordinating subjects of rights with the rights themsclves. Corporeal hereditaments, says Blackstone, 'consist of such as affect the senses, such as may be sceu and*

handled by the body ; incorporeal are not the objects of scnsation, can neither be secn nor handled, are creatures of the mind, and

3 In spite of this objection the division is adopted by the legislature ; see, for instance, 47 and 48 Vict. c. 71.

roel he Ta T

exist only in contemplation." Corporeal hereditaments are all necessarily freehold ;! an interest in land less than freehold, such as a term of years, is personalty only. There was no room for such an interest in the feudal gradation of teunre ; it was regarded as a mere personal contract and was incapable of the incidents of tenure. By the Conveyancing Act, 1881 (44 and 45 Vict. c. 41, s. 65), the residue of a long term of years may in certain cases be enlarged into the fee-simple. A copyhold is in strict law only a tenancy at the will of the lord (see CopyHoLp). Estates of freehold are either estates for life or in fee (called also estates of inheritance), the latter being in fee-tail or in fee-simple. An estate for life may be either for the life of the tenant or for the life of another person, the latter called an estate pwr autre vie. The former kind of estate includes estates of dower and curtesy (see HusBAND AND WIFE). An estate in fee is called a fee simply, an obvious sign of its feudal origin. Estates tail are either general or special, the latter being in tail male or (rarely) in tail female. There may also be a quasi-entail of an estate pwr awtre vie (see ENTAIL). An estate. in fee-simple is the largest estate known to English law. Its ordinary incidents are an oath of fealty (never exacted), EscueratT (q.v.), and (in a manor) suit of the court baron, and occasionally a small quit-rent and relief. All these are obviously relics of the once important feudal incidents. Incorporeal heredita- ments consist chiefly, if not wholly, of rights in alieno solo. They are divided by Mr Joshua Willianis (Real Property, pt. ii.) into (1) reversions, remainders, and executory interests, (2) hereditaments purely incorporeal, the last being either appendant, appurtenant, or in gross. Examples are profits a prendre (such as rights of common), easements (such as rights of way),? seigniories, advowsons, rents, tithes, titles of honour, offices, franchises. Before 1845 corporeal hereditaments were said to lie in livery, incorporeal in grant. But by 8 and 9 Vict. c. 106, s. 2, all corporeal hereditaments are, as regards the conveyance of the immediate freehold thereof, to be deemed to lie in grant as well as in livery. With regard to the time of cnjoyment, estates are either in possession or in expectancy, —that is, in reversion or remainder or executory interests (see REMAINDER). With regard to the mode of enjoyment, estates are either joint, in common, in coparcenary, or in severalty. Lxecptional Tenures.—It has been already stated that there are still to be found survivals of the old pre-Conquest customary law. They are found both in the tenure and in the conveyance of land. The only

customs of which judicial notice is taken are GAVELKIND (g.v.) and BoroucH-ENGLISH (q.v.). Any other local customs, as in manors, must be proved by evidence. The tenures of frankalmoign and grand serjeanty were specially preserved by 12 Car. II. c. 24. Tenure in frankalmoign is the nearest approach in English law to absolute ownership. An estate in frankalmoign has no incidents, as it is held simply by divine service and is not subject to escheat. All tenures in frankalmoign must (except where created by the crown) be older than Quia Emptores. The tenure of grand serjeanty

is the holding of lands by doing a personal service to the king, as .

carrying his banner or sword. Petit serjeanty consists in the pay- ment to the king yearly of a bow, sword, dagger, or such other small things belonging to war (Littleton, §159). Itisin effect socage.

Title—This is the name given to the mode of acquisition of rights over real estate. Title may arise either by alienation, voluntary or involuntary, or by succession. Voluntary alienation is either ¢nter vivos or by will. The former branch is practically synonymous with conveyance, whether by way of sale, settlement, mortgage, or otherwise. As a general rule alicnation of real estate inter vivos must be by deed since 8 and 9 Vict. c. 106. Since that Act a deed of grant has superseded the old forms of feoffment and lease and release. Considerable alterations in the direction of shortness and simplicity have been madc in the law of transfer of real estate by the Conveyancing Acts, 1881, 1882 (44 and 45 Vict. ce. 41, 45 and 46 Vict. c. 39). The word "grant" is no longer necessary for a conveyance, nor are the old words of limitation "heirs" and "heirs of the body." It is sufficient to use the words "in fee-simple," "in tail," 'in tail male," "in tail female." Many provisions usually inserted in deeds, such as covenants for title by a beneficial owner and powers of appointment of new trustees, obtain statutory sanction. Forms of mortgage, conveyance, and settlement are appended to the Act. The Solicitors' Remuneration Act, 1881 (44 and 45 Vict. c. 44), was passed as a necessary sequel to the Conveyancing Act, and tlie remuneration of solicitors now stands upon a different and more satisfactory basis. For acquisi- tion by will and succession, see WILL, INHERITANCE. Involuntary alienation is by

BANKRUPTCY (g.v.) and by other means of enforcing the rights of creditors over land, such as distress or execution. It may also arise by the exercise by the state of its right of eminent domain for public purposes, as under the Lands Clauses and other Acts.2 In sales of real estate title is generally traced in an abstract delivered by the vendor (see SALE).

1 In the category of corporeal hereditaments are also included certain acces- sories to corporeal hereditaments proper, such as growing crops, fixtures, title- deeds, &e.

2 It should be noticed that an easement in gross cannot exist.

3 The right of the state to contribution from land for revenue purposes and

Restraints on Alienation.—The alienation of real estate may be

subject to almost any conditions, provided that such conditions do not contravene the law. Asa general rule there can be no restric- tions upon the alienation of an estate in fee-simple ; the two ideas are incompatible. In the case, however, of a married woman a restraint on anticipation is allowed within certain limits. The power of imposing such a restraint is preserved by the Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 and 46 Vict. c. 75, s. 19), subject to the right of the court to bind the interest of the marricd woman where it would be for her benefit to do so (44 and 45 Vict. c. 41, s. 39). In another direction the imposition of a course of devolution upon property is forbidden by the law against perpetuities, under which no executory interest can be made to commence unless within the period of any fixed number of existing lives, and an additional period of twenty-one years (with a few months added, if necessary, for the period of gestation). Accumulation of income is forbidden (with a few exceptions) by the Thelusson Act (39 and 40 Geo. ITI. c. 98) for any longer term than the life of the grantor or settlor, or twenty-one years from his death, or during a pcriod of minority. Certain persons are by the general policy of the law disabled from exercising full proprietary rights, such as marricd women (see above), convicts, infants, and lunatics. Estates tail are in

general alicnable under the Fines and Recoveries Act (see ENTAIL). But in a few cases estates tail are settled inalienably by Act of Parliament, generally as a reward for public services. Estates are thus settled to go with the titles of Marlborough, Wellington, Abergavenny, and Shrewsbury.

*Exceptional Modes of Alicnation.—In some of these cases, like those of the exceptional tenures, the influence of the old customary law is to be traced. The transfer of copyholds especially depends to a great extent upon the custom of particular manors, but, subject to that, it usually takes place by surrender and admittance (see CopyHoLp). Gavelkind lands may be conveyed by feoffment by any infant above the age of fifteen. For mines in the Forest of Dean a peculiar mode of transfer is provided by 1 and 2 Vict. c. 43. In the Isle of Portland there seems to be a distinct survival of the pre-feudal conveyance. The vendor and purchascr meet in the parish church, where a deed is signed by the parties in the presence of two houscholders of the island. These deeds are called *‘church gifts.”*

Procedure.—In some cases rights attaching to real estate are pro- tected by peculiar remedies. At an early period it became more convenient to try the right to the possession of, rather than the right to the property in, real estate. Possessory tended to super- sede proprietary remedies, from their great simplicity and elasticity. The general mode of trying the right to both property and posses- sion was from the time of Henry II. the real action, the form called “writ of right” (after Magna Charta gradually confined to the Court of Common Pleas) being used to determine the property, that called “‘assise of novel disseisin” being the general means by which the possession was tried. About the reign of Elizabeth the action of ejectment became the ordinary form of possessory remedy. Real actions existed until 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 27, by which they were finally abolished, with the exception of writ of right of dower, writ of dower unde nihil habet, quare tmpedit, and ejectment. Of these QUARE IMPEDIT (q.v.) appears to be the only one now in use. The assise of novel disseisin, the action of ejectment in both its original and its reformed stage (see EJECTMENT), and finally the action for the recovery of land in use since the Judicature Acts are all historic- ally connected as gradual developments of the possessory action (see Possrsston). The action for the

recovery of land is still sub- ject to special provisions and is not quite in the same position as an ordinary action (see Rules of the Supreme Court, 1888, Ord. xii, rr. 25-29, Ord. xviii. r. 2, &c.). There are certain matters affecting real estate over which the Court of Chancery formerly had exclusive jurisdiction, in most cases because the principles on which the court acted had been the creation of equity. The Judicature Act, 1873 (86 and 87 Vict. c. 66, s. 34), assigns to the Chancery Division of the High Court of Justice all causes and matters for (inter alia) the redemption or foreclosure of mortgages, the raising of portions or other charges on land, the sale and distribution of the proceeds of property subject to any lien or charge, the specifie performance of contracts between vendors and purchasers of real estates, including contracts for leases, the partition or sale of real estates, and the wardship of infants and the care of infants' cstates.

In the case of rent a summary mode of remedy by act of the

creditor still exists (see DISTRESS, RENT).

For the economical aspect of the English law, see LAND. Fora list of the main points of difference between real and personal estate, see PERSONAL ESTATE.

Authorities.—Those cited at the end of Lanp, and in addition Digby, History of the Law of Real Property ; Elton, Tenures of Kent; Goodeve, Modern Law of Real Property ; Pollock, Land Laws; Stephen, Commentaries, vol. i. ; Seebohin, English Village Community ; Williams, teal Property; Wolstenholine and Turner, Conveyancing Acts. ' . '

Ireland.—The law of real estate in Ireland is the English law,

to stamp duties on deeds perhaps falls under this head. These iniposts are really involuntary alienations of part of the profit of the land.

308

which finally superseded the native law in James I.'s reign, as modified by subsequent legislation. 'The main difference is in the law of

LaNpLoRD AND TENANT (q.v.) and the operation of the Landed Estates Court, merged in the High Court of Justice in Ire- land by the Supreme Court of Judicature (Ireland) Act, 1877.

United States.—The law of real estate in the United States is the law of England modified to suit a different state of cireumstances. The main point of difference is that in the United States the occupiers of land are generally wholly or in part owners, not tenants, as in England. This is to a great extent the effect of the home- stead laws (see HomestEap). The traces of the feudal origin of the law are, as might be expected, considerably less prominent than in England. Thus estates tail are practically obsolete ; in some States they are specially forbidden by the State constitutions. The law of descent is the same in real and personal estate (see INHERIT- ANCE). Manors do not exist, except in the State of New York, where they were created by the crown in colonial days (Bouvier, Law Diet., Manor"). Registration of deeds is general (see REGISTRATION). In some States forms of deed are prescribed by statute. Conveyancing is for the most part simpler than in Eng- land. The holding of real estate by religious or eharitable corpora- tions is generally restricted by the Act ereating them rather than by anything like the English law of mortmain. In Pennsylvania such a eorporation cannot hold land without an Act of the legisla- ture, and in Territories of the United States it cannot hold real estate of a greater value than $50,000 (Act of Congress of ist July 1862, c. 126). Perpetuities are forbidden in most States. The right of eminent domain is at once acknowledged and limited by the constitution of the United States. By art. 5 of the Amendments private property is not to-be taken for public use without just com- pensation. A similar provision is found in many of the State con- stitutions. By an Act of Congress of 9th April 1866, e. 31, all citizens of the United States have the same right in every State and Territory as is enjoyed by white citizens thereof to inherit, purchase, lease, sell, hold, and convey real and personal property. In most States aliens may hold land; but in some States they cannot do so without becoming naturalized or at least filing in the specified manner a declaration of intention to become naturalized. For the State laws affecting the capacity of aliens to hold land, see Wash- burn, Real Property, vol. i. p. 64.

International Law.—The law of the place where real estate is situated (lex loet rei site) governs its tenure and transfer. The laws of England and of the United States are more strict on this point than the laws of most other countries. They require that the for- malities of the locus ret site must be observed, even if not necessary to be observed in the place where the contract was made. The lex loei rei site determines what is to be eonsidered real estate.

REALISM. See ScHoLAsricism.

REAUMUR, Rent Antone FercHautt DE (1683- 1757), the eldest son of a French nobleman, was born on 28th February 1683 at La Rochelle and received his early education there. He was taught philosophy in the Jesuits' college at Poitiers, and in 1699, when "hardly seventeen, but already possessed of the prudence of a grown man," went to Bourges to study civil law and mathematics under the charge of an uncle, canon of La Sainte Chapelle. In 1703 he came to Paris, where he continued the study of mathematics and physics. He soon made his presence felt in the highest circles, and in 1708, at the remarkably early age of twenty-four, was elected a member of the Académie des Sciences. From this time onwards for nearly half a century hardly a year passed in which the Mémozres de l' Académie did not contain at least one paper by Réaumur. At first his attention was occupied by mathematical studies, especially in geometry. In 1710 he was appointed to the charge of a great Government work—the official descrip- tion of the useful arts and manufactures—which led him to many practical researches that resulted in the establish-

ment of manufactures new to France and the revival of neglected industries. For discoveries regarding iron and steel the regent Orleans awarded him a pension of 12,000 livres ; but, being content with his ample private income, he requested that the money should be secured to the Académie des Sciences for the furtherance of experiments on improved industrial processes. In 1731 he became greatly interested in meteorology, and invented the thermo- meter which bears his name. In 1735 family arrange- ments obliged him to accept the post of commander and intendant of the royal and military order of Saint Louis ; he

discharged his duties in connexion with it with scru- pulous attention, but declined to receive any of the emoluments. Whatever his other occupations were, he always found time for the systematic study of natural history, in which he took great delight. He was a born naturalist, gifted with rare powers of observation and de- scription,—indeed his friends often called him the Pliny of the 18th century. He loved retirement and lived much at his country residences, at one of which, La Bermondiére (Maine), he met with an accident, a fall from horseback, the effects of which proved fatal on 17th October 1757. He bequeathed his manuscripts, which filled 138 port- folios, and his natural history collections to the Académie des Sciences.

Réaumur was a man of wide attainments and great industry. His writings, sometimes on trivial topics, were frequently diffuse, yet always interesting. His mind was original and intensely practical. As a rule he avoided theoretical questions, but when he took them up his manner of treatment was remarkably clear, chiefly on account of an ingenious use of metaphor, often expanding into allegory. His memory was retentive, his information immense, and his kindliness of disposition such that his knowledge and wealth seemed to be amassed only for the benefit of his friends. He always bore a high character, was a great favourite in society, and associated on terms of intimacy with the principal great men of the time in Europe.

Réaumur's scientific papers are too numerous to be recapitulated ; they deal with nearly all branches of science. His first paper, in 1708, was on a general problem in geomctry, his last, in 1756, on the forms of birds' nests. He proved experimentally the fact, afterwards demonstrated theoretically by Du Hamel, that the strength of a rope is less than the sum of the strengths of its separate strands. He examined and reported on the auriferous rivers, the turquoise mines, the forests, and the fossil beds of France. He devised the method of tinning iron that is still employed, and investigated the differences between iron and steel, correctly showing that the amount of combustible matter (sulphur in the language of the old chemistry) is greatest in cast iron, less in steel, and least in wrought iron. His book on this subject (1722) was translated into English and German. The thermo- meter by which he is now best remembered was constructed

on the principle of taking the freezing-point of water as 0°, and graduating the tube into degrees each of which was one-thousandth of the volume contained by the bulb and tube up to the zero mark. It was purely an accident dependent on the dilatability of the parti- cular quality of alcohol employed which made the boiling-point of water 80°; and mercurial thermometers the stems of which are graduated into eighty equal parts between the freezing and boiling points of water are not Réaumur thermometers in anything but name.

Réaumur wrote much on natural history. Early in life he described the locomotor system of the Echinodermata, and showed that the supposed vulgar error of Crustaceans replacing their lost limbs was an actual fact. In 1710 he wrote a paper on the possi- bility of spiders being used to produce silk, which was so celebrated at the time that the Chinese emperor Kang-he caused a translation of it to be made. He treated also of botanical and agricultural matters, and devised processes for preserving birds and eggs. He elaborated a system of artificial incubation, and made important observations on the digestion of carnivorous and graminivorous birds ; but his greatest work is the M/émotres pour servir a 0 Histoire des Inseetes, 6 vols., with 267 plates, Amsterdam, 1734-49. It describes the appearance, habits, and locality of all the known insects except the beetles, and is a marvel of patient and accurate observation. Amongst other important facts stated in this work are the experiments which enabled Réaumur to prove the correct- ness of Peyssonel's hypothesis, that corals were animals and not plants, as was previously supposed.

REBUS, an enigmatical representation of some name or thing, by using figures or pictures instead of words or

parts of words. Camden mentions an instance of this kind of wit in a gallant who expressed his love to a woman named Rose Hill by painting in the border of his gown a rose, a hill, an eye, a loaf, and a well; this, in the style of the rebus, reads " Rose Hill I love well." This kind of wit was long practised by the great, who took the pains to find devices for their names. It was, however, happily ridiculed by Ben Jonson in the humorous

description of Abel Drugger's device in the Alchenust and by the Spectator in the device of Jack of Newberry. The name is also applied to arrangements of words in which the position of the several vocables is to be taken into account in divining the meaning. Thus 'I understand you undertake to over- throw my undertaking" makes the rebus

stand take to I you throw

taking my ;

or in French

venir

pir vent Wun

un Vient

may be read "un soupir vient souvent d'un souvenir."

The original use of the word, which comes to us from.

France, was, however, wider: any equivoque or satirical pleasantry might be so named, and the origin of the term is ascribed by Ménage to the clerks of Picardy, who at carnival time used to put out satirical squibs called "De rebus que geruntur." ' Rebus," in heraldry, is a coat of arms which bears an allusion to the name of the person,— as three castles for Castleton, three cups for Butler, three conies for Coningsby.

RECAMIER, Mapame (whose maiden name was J EANNE Francoise JuLtie ADELAIDE BERNARD), was born on 4th December 1777 at Lyons, and died at Paris on 11th May 1849. She was married at fifteen to the banker Récamier, who was more than old enough to be her father. Beautiful, accomplished, with a real love for literature, she possessed at the same time a temperament which protected her from scandal, and from the early days of the consulate to almost the end of the July monarchy her salon was one of the chief resorts of literary and political society that pretended to fashion. For some time she was much under the in- fluence

of Madame de Staél, and it was partly through her that Madame Récamier became acquainted with Benjamin Constant, whose singular political tergiversations during the last days of the empire and the first of the restoration have been attributed to Madame Récamier. There is no doubt that she succeeded in inspiring a real and almost desperate passion in the heart of Constant, whose letters to her have had a singular fate, having been twice published in part, and twice interfered with by judicial proceedings on the part of the representatives of the parties concerned. In Madame Récamier's later days she lost most of the for- tune which, when she was the wife of a rich banker, had given her part of her consequence ; but she continued to receive visitors at the Abbaye-aux-Bois. Here Chateau- briand was a constant visitor, and in a manner master of the house; but Madame Récamier never even in old age, ill-health, and reduced circumstances lost her attraction. After her death Souvenirs et Correspondances tirés des Papiers de Madame Récameer were published. To compile, however, a real account of her would necessitate the ransack of all the memoirs, correspondence, and anecdotage con- cerning French political and literary life for the first half of this century.

RECANATI, a city of Italy, in the province of Macerata, 174 miles from Loreto, on the highway between Ancona and Rome, is built ona hill 910 feet above the sea, and still retains portions of its 15th-century walls and gateways. It is now perhaps best known as the birthplace of the poet Leopardi, whose monument adorns the principal piazza and whose family has collected in the town a very interesting

museum of Leopardiana; but it also contains fine old mansions of the Leopardi, Mazzagalli, Massucci, and Car- radori in the main street, a palazzo communale with a bronze representation of the removal of the Holy House to Loreto, and a Gothic cathedral, built towards the close of the 14th century and dedicated to St Flavianus, patriarch of Constantinople. The population in 1881 was 8864 in the town and port (3040) and 19,524 in the commune. 'Recanati appears as a strong castle in the 10th century or earlier. Round this gathered a community whose petty wars with Osimo (Auximum) called for the interference of Innocent

III. in 1198. From Frederick II. it obtained the right of having a port on the Adriatic ; and by Gregory IX. it was made a city and the seat of the bishopric transferred from Osimo. This oscillation between Guclf and Ghibelline continued characteristic of Recanati. Urban IV. abolished the "city"' and bishopric ; Nicholas IV. restored them. John XXII. again, in 1320, removed the bishopric and placed the city under interdict. The interdict was withdrawn in 1328 on payment of a heavy fine, but the bishopric remained in abeyance till 1357. Gregory XII., who on his deposition by the council of Constance was made papal legate of the sees of Macerata and Recanati, died in this city in 1417. The assistance rendered by Recanati to the popes in their struggles with the Sforza seems to have cxhausted its resources, and it began to decline. Considerable damage was done by the earthquake of 1741; and the French, who were twice in possession of the city in 1797, pillaged it in 1799.

RECHABITES, or Sons or RecHaB, in ancient Israel formed a sort of religious order in some respects analogous to the Nazarites, with whom they shared the rule of abstinence from wine. They went farther than the latter, however, in eschewing the luxuries and pursuits of settled life, living in tents and refusing to sow grain as well as to plant vineyards. Their origin must have been in northern Israel, for their "father" or founder, to whom they referred their rule of life, was that Jehonadab or Jonadab, son of Rechab, who lent his countenance to Jehu in the abolition of Tyrian Baal-worship (2 Kings x.). The order founded by Jehonadab must from its constitution have soon become a sort of hereditary clan, and as such the "house of Rechab" appears in Jer. xxxv., from which we learn that they had survived in Judah after the fall of the northern kingdom and continued to observe the ordi- nance of Jehonadab till the approach of Nebuchadnezzar drove them for protection into Jerusalem. Jeremiah pro- mised them as a reward of their obedience that they should never lack a man to represent them (as a priest) before Jehovah. This perhaps is the origin of the later Jewish tradition that the Rechabites intermarried with the Levites and so entered the temple service! Hegesippus in his account of the death of James the Just even speaks of Rechabite priests and makes one of them protest against the crime (Eus., H.Z., ii. 23).

RECIFE. See PERNAMBUCO.

RECOGNIZANCE, in law, is, in the words of Black- stone, "'an obligation of record, entered into before some court or magistrate duly authorized, whereby the party bound acknowledges that he owes to the king or a private plaintiff (as the case may be) a certain sum of money, with condition to be void if he shall do some particular act,— as if he shall appear at the assizes, keep the peace, pay a certain debt, or the like." The term itself means that the person bound recognizes the existence of a debt. Recog- nizance was at one time used as a security for money lent, something in the nature of a mortgage. In this sense it is practically obsolete, though it is alluded to in modern Acts of Parliament, ¢.g., 27 and 28 Vict. c. 112, by which a recognizance entered into after 29th July 1864 does not bind the land until actual delivery in execution. The principal use of recognizances at the present day is in chancery and criminal procedure. In chancery recogniz- ances are entered into as a form of security by certain

1 From the obscure passage 1 Chron. ii. 55 it would seem that in later times the Rechabites were regarded as Kenites.

persons appointed to positions of trust, such as guardians or receivers. In criminal practice they affect either suspected or accused persons, or witnesses. As early as 1360 the Act of 34 Edw. III. c. 1 empowered justices to take of all them that were not of good fame sufficient surety and mainprize of their good behaviour. The wide terms of this provision are not acted upon at the present day. The only recognizances of this kind practically enforced are those entered into as security for keeping the peace. Such recognizances are forfeited by any act tending to a breach of the peace. The Criminal Law Consolidation Acts of 1861 provide that any court may on the conviction of a person for an offence under any of the Acts require him in addition to or in lieu of other punishment to enter into his own recognizances for keeping the peace and being of good behaviour. The power to bind witnesses by recog- nizance was originally conferred by an Act of 1554, 1 Ph. and M. c. 13. Recognizances are now the usual means by which a court of summary jurisdiction or a coroner

binds over a prosecutor and his witnesses or an accused person and his witnesses to appear at the trial. The pro- cedure principally depends upon 7 Geo. IV. c. 64, 11 and 12 Vict. c. 42 (one of Jervis's Acts), 30 and 31 Vict. c. 35 (Russell Gurney's Act), 42 and 43 Vict. c. 49, s. 31 (the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879). In proceedings in error and in appeals from courts of summary jurisdiction to quarter sessions the prosecution of the appeal by the appellant is secured by recognizance. In certain cases police authorities have by recent statutes a limited authority to take the recognizance of accused persons. Failure to comply with the conditions of recognizances leads to their forfeiture. Additional facilities for the enforcing of re- cognizances were given by the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (see QUARTER Sesstons). When recognizances are forfeited they are estreated (i.e., extracted) from the records of the court to be enforced against the defaulter. An appeal against an order of a court of summary jurisdic- tion forfeiting recognizances lies to quarter sessions (3 Geo. IV.c. 46). By 28 and 29 Vict. c. 104 a recognizance does not bind the land in the hands of a bona fide purchaser for valuable consideration or a mortgagee unless actual execu- tion has issued and been registered in the name of the debtor at the central office of the Supreme Court of Judi- cature. Registered recognizances are among the encum- brances for which search is made on a purchase of land. By 45 and 46 Vict. c. 39 an official negative of the exist- ence of registered recognizances may be given by the proper officer on application. A discharge in bankruptcy does not release the debtor from a debt on a recognizance unless the Treasury certify in writing their consent to his discharge (46 and 47 Vict. c. 52, s. 30). Forgery of recog- nizances is a felony punishable by five years' penal servi- tude (24 and 25 Vict. c. 98, s. 32).

In Scotland the place of recognizances is filled by cautions ; a caution in law-burrows corresponds very nearly to a recognizance to keep the peace.

In the United States recognizances are used for much the same purposes as in England.

RECORDE, Ropert (c. 1500-1558), a physician and eminent mathematician, was descended from a respectable family at Tenby in Wales and was born about 1500. He was entered of the university of

Oxford about 1525, and was elected fellow of All Souls College in 1531. As he made physic his profession, he went to Cambridge, where he took the degree of M.D. in 1545. He afterwards re- turned to Oxford, where he publicly taught arithmetic and mathematics, as he had done prior to his going to Cam- bridge. It appears that he afterwards went to London, and acted as physician to Edward VI. and to Queen Mary, to whom some of his books are dedicated. He died in the

King's Bench prison, Southwark, where he was confined for debt, in 1558.

Recorde published several works upon mathematical subjects, chiefly in the form of dialogue between master and scholar, viz. :— The Grounde of Artes, teachinge the Worke and Practise of Arith- meticke, both in whole numbers and fractions, 1540, 8vo; The Path- way to Knowledge, containing the First Principles of Geometry . . . bothe for the usc of Instrumentes Geometricall and Astronomicall, and also for Projection of Plattcs, London, 1551, 4to; The Castle of Knowledge, containing the Explication of the Sphere both Celestiall and Materiall, &c., London, 1556, folio; The Whetstone of Witte, which is the second part of Arithmetike, containing the Extraction of Rootes, the Cossike Practice, with the Rules of Equation, and the Woorkes of Surde Numbers, London, 1557, 4to. This was the first English book on algebra. He wrote also a medical work, The Urinal of Physic, 1548, frequently reprinted. Sherburne states that Recorde also published Cosmographiz Isagoge, and that he wrote a book De Arte faciendt Horologiwm and another De Usu Globorum et de Statu Temporum. Recorde's chief contributions to the progress of algebra were in the way of systematizing its notation. He is said to have been the first to use the sign of equality (=) having the two parallel lines, as he says himself, because no two things could be more equal. The adaptation of the rule for extracting the square root of an integral number to the extrac- tion of the square root of an integral algebraical function is also said to be due to him.

RECORDER. See Courr and QUARTER SESSIONS.

RECORDS, Pustic. According to the definition of the Record Commissioners appointed at the commencement of this century to report upon the nature of the archives, the national muniments of England constitute four great classes. The first class consists of independent documents relating to various subjects, persons, and places, but making altogether one whole, such as, for instance, Domesday Book, or the Valor Ecclesiasticus of Henry VIII. The second class consists of the series of enrolments, including within one roll great varieties of distinct and separate entries classed according to their formal character, as, for instance, the close rolls and patent rolls, or classed according to their subject-matter, as are the Liberate and the Norman rolls. The third class embraces those records which contain entries of judicial proceedings and those where each subject has a distinct roll; whilst the last class comprises all separate documents, such as letters, inquisitions, privy seals, com-missions, and other various descriptions of formal instru- ments. Sir Edward Coke has given in his signification of the term "record" a briefer and less involved definition ; but according to his rendering many important documents would have to be excluded from the list of the national archives. Hence it was decreed, on the passing of the Public Records Act (1 and 2 Vict. c. 94), which created the master of the rolls the keeper of the archives, that the word "records" should be taken to mean "all rolls, records, writs, books, proceedings, decrees, bills, warrants, accounts, papers, and documents whatsoever, of a public nature belonging to Her Majesty."

The documents of the once styled Courts of Chancery, Queen's Bench, Exchequer, and Comnion Pleas contain the very essence of England's antiquarian wealth: they constitute most of its bulk, much of its legal importance, and nearly all its historical interest. 'The custom of recording documents on rolls of parchment," writes Sir Thomas Hardy, the late deputy-keeper of the public records, "though of very ancient date, commenced nevertheless at a period subsequent to the Conquest; for no vestige can be traced of such a system during the Anglo-Saxon dynasty. 'Apud Anglo-Saxones,' says Hickes, 'etiam mos erat leges regum latas in codicibus monasteriorum tanquam in tabulas publicas referendi.' It may be assumed that, had such a plan been then in operation, the same would have been adopted by the Conqueror to perpetuate the survey of the

kingdom which he caused to be made, and for the preserva- tion of which he evinced so mucli zeal and anxiety." As to the precise time when the use of rolls for the entry of

mmeCORDS

matters of business first began there is still considerable doubt. That no rolls of a date antecedent to that of the 3lst Henry I. are now in existence is certain. It may therefore be presumed that the practice of enrolling com- menced shortly after the Conquest.

Court of Chancery.—Owing to the vast quantity of documents of this court, only the salient points of the principal series of rolls can be dealt with. Among the most important enrolments belonging to this court is the extensive series of documents known as the close rolls or Rotuli Litterarum Clausarum. Upon their well-preserved parchment membranes the historian scans entries relating —to the privileges of peers and commoners in times gone by ; to measures employed for the raising of armies and the equipment of fleets; to orders for the observance of treaties, and for the fortification of castles; and to laws innumerable touching the power of the bench, the authority of the church, the extent of the civil jurisdiction, and the prerogatives of the crown. By the help of these rolls the lawyer and antiquary can learn how the coinage of the realm was regulated, how aids and imposts, toll- ages and subsidies, were raised, how riots and tumults were suppressed, how state prisoners were pardoned, how the writs ran for the summoning of parliaments, what deeds were enrolled between party and party, what facts were deemed worthy of record upon the birth, marriage, and death of royal and noble families; in short, there is little that concerns the naval and military, the civil and ecclesiastical, the legal and diplomatic affairs of the king- dom, which is not to be found upon the yards and yards of parchment which constitute the collection of the close rolls, The origin of the name "close" is due to the fact that the documents composing the series, being of a private nature, were despatched closed or sealed up, and were addressed to one or two persons only. The close rolls begin with the reign of John and continue without in- terruption to the present time. Since the days of Henry VIII. the entries on these rolls are mostly confined to the

enrolments of deeds of bargain and sale, wills of papists, recognizances, specifications of new inventions, and other instruments enrolled for safe custody by warrant from the lord chancellor or master of the rolls. Next in importance, and scarcely second in historical interest, is the series of muniments, dating also from King John to the present day, called the patent rolls. Nota subject connected with the history and government of the country but receives illustration from this magnificent collection. Is a castle besieged by the king, a papal interdict removed by royal supplication, a safe-conduct granted to an unpopular pre- late, credence allowed to some court witness, grace shown to a rebellious subject, church lands bestowed on begging clergy, negotiations entered into with foreign princes, powers of ambassadors regulated, lands, offices, and ward- ships granted to public bodies or private persons, titles of nobility created, charters confirmed, proclamations drawn up, licences to hold, sell, and marry, commands to do fealty and homage,—all, whether relating to political, social, ecclesiastical, or commercial life, are to be found recorded on the membranes of the "'litterz patentes." With the exception of a few gaps in the reigns of John and Henry III. the letters-patent extend without break or flaw from the year 1200 to our own day. Unlike the close rolls, they are unsealed and exposed to view, hence their name. 'The third great class of records belonging to the Court of Chancery consists of the " parliament rolls" ; these, however, are far from being a perfect collec- tion, as many of the documents containing the proceedings of various parliaments are hopelessly lost. The series begins with the 6th Edward I. and extends, though with frequent breaks, to Henry VIII. As the journals of the

oll

House of Lords do not commence till the reign of Henry VIII, it is only from the parliament rolls that proof can be obtained of a peer having sat in parliament previous to that period ; such proof is always requisite in claims to an ancient barony by writ. When complete these rolls contain entries of the various transactions which took place from the opening to the close of each parliament. Unfortunately many of the lost rolls belong to those parliaments which are of the greatest importance for the history of the con- stitution. The enrolments of Acts of Parliament, however, are

of considerable help in the investigation of English parliamentary history and constitute a most important sup- plement to the parliament rolls. They begin with Richard IMI. and continue to 1849, when enrolments ceased and Acts printed on vellum were substituted. Space forbids us to enter into details respecting the other important collections belonging to the Chancery records. We only allude briefly to the charter rolls, which consist of grants of privileges to religious houses and bodies corporate, and which extend from John to Henry VIIL., in which reign grants from the crown were entered on the patent rolls ; the coronation rolls, which contain the commissions and proceedings of the commissioners appointed to hear and determine claims of service to be performed at coronations, as well as the oaths taken by the king or queen when crowned,—this collection, with the exception of the coro- nation rolls of Charles I. and George III, which are wanting, is perfect from James I. to Victoria; the fine rolls, consisting of accounts of fines paid to the king for licences to alienate lands, for freedom from knight service, for pardons, wardships, and the like, which also begin with John and go down to Charles I. ; the French and Nor- man rolls, which relate to transactions in France whilst the English held part of that country; the oblata rolls, con- sisting of accounts of the offerings and free gifts to the sovereign from his subjects; and the valuable inquisitions post-mortem, frequently but erroneously referred to as escheat rolls, taken on the death of every tenant of the crown. 'Then in addition to these there are the hundred rolls, the decree rolls, the royal letters, the carte antique, the privy seals and signet bills, the subsidy rolls, the Irish, Scotch, and Welsh rolls, the Almain rolls, and numerous other classes of document which it is impossible to cata- logue or describe within the limits of a general review of the English archives. Suffice it to say that every class of records is carefully arranged for public inspection and that full and clear indices render research a matter of little difficulty.

Court of Queen's Bench.—As this court takes cognizance of both civil and criminal causes, the former on the crown side and the latter on the plea side of the court, the re- cords are arranged in the two sections, crown side and plea side. Of these records the most important are the judgment or plea rolls. From the time of Richard I. to the year 1702 they were united with the crown rolls, but at that date they were separated. The

plea rolls contain the general proceedings in causes, but the modern rolls are very defective owing to the neglect of attorneys in bringing the records in, The crown rolls are composed of indictments, informations, and other similar proceedings to which parties have pleaded. Another division of the judgment rolls contains the controlment rolls, which com- prise minutes of all the principal proceedings in crown causes, with numerical references to the judgment rolls, where the proceedings are entered at length. Apart from the plea rolls the remaining records of this court are of little general interest. Among their number we imay notice the attorney's oath roll, containing the oaths re- quired to be subscribed by attorneys on their admission, the '"'baga de secretis," containing proceedings on attainders

312

(of great interest to the historian), the contents of which have becn admirably reported upon by Sir Francis Palgrave, the enrolment of bails, proceedings in outlawry, the jail delivery rolls, and a mass of indictments, recognizances, and other similar documents. The prayer book known as the sealed copy of the "Book of Common Prayer" pursuant to statute 14 Charles IL. is also among the re- cords of the Court of Queen's Bench.

Court of Common Pleas.—This court contains a far richer collection than the Court of Queen's Bench, and from the nature of its jurisdiction the documents possess great interest for the genealogist and topographer. Foremost among them is the valuable collection of "feet of fines or final concords," which date from Henry II. to the year 1834, when fines and recoveries were abolished and "more simple modes of assurance substituted." "The utility of these records," says the Report of the House of Commons' committee on the state of the public records, "to all persons desirous of tracing property and pedigree is unquestionable." Fines contain the proceedings which have been adopted to convey estates and to free them from their entail to issue and from the dower of wives. Thus we are able to learn the name of the freeholder levying the fine, and if he was married the name of his wife and often of his children, the position and value of his estate, and not unfrequently something about his ancestors. Yet perhaps the chief value of this class of records is that they prove

marriages and their issue at a time when parochial registers were not in existence. Few documents show so unbroken a succession from so early a date as these " pedes finium." The king's Silver Office books are the chief in- dexes to the fines, but they suffered greatly from the fire at the king's Silver Office in the Temple in March 1838. The recovery rolls (since 1834 continued under the name of "disentailing assurances" on the close rolls) also con- stitute another important supplement to the study of the pedes finium. Next to the collection of fines may be classed the judgment rolls of this court, or, as they are more commonly designated, the "de banco" rolls. They formerly consisted of two parts, the "communia placita" or personal plea rolls, and the " placita terre" or pleas of lands and deeds enrolled ; but after the reign of Elizabeth the latter became distinct rolls, containing the king's silver and fines, assizes, deeds enrolled, and all real actions. The judgment rolls pass through three stages—first, they are plea rolls; then, when the parties join issue, issue rolls ; and lastly, when judgments are entered upon them, judg- ment rolls. The recording of the judgments has, however, been very much neglected, for many of the judgments, instead of being entered on the plea or issue rolls, have been entered on separate pieces of parchment, and thus have given rise to certain distinct bundles called "riders," in which such entries are contained.

Court of Exchequer.—This collection contains next to that of the Court of Chancery the most interesting and valu- able series of documents among the English public records. The most important and most prominent series is that of the great rolls of the Exchequer, otherwise called the pipe rolls.! As with the close and patent rolls, so with the rolls of the pipe, it is difficult to state what is and what is not entered upon their membranes. Everything which in former times went to swell the revenues of the crown — rents of various kinds, fines, amercements, profits of lands and tenements, and the like—is to be found enrolled upon them. The accounts of the ancient revenue of the crown, digested under the heads of the several counties and annually written out in order to the charging and dis-

1 In 1883 was founded the Pipe Roll Society, which has for its

object the printing of the entire series of pipe rolls from the reign of Henry I.

RECORDS

charging of the sheriffs and other accountants, are also to be seen upon their membranes. Ifa great man was outlawed, his goods seized, his daughter married or made a ward, the account thereof can be read in the pipe rolls. To the pedigree-hunter these records are particularly use- ful, since they contain the names of most men of property ; while to the county historian they are invaluable. Few of the English national archives boast a more uninterrupted succession than the great rolls of the Exchequer. Begin- ning in the second year of Henry II., they continue to the present time with but two gaps—the rolls of the first year of Henry III. and of the seventh year of Henry IV. Of the latter of these missing rolls the antigraph or roll made by the chancellor's scribe is still in existence and supplies the place of the lost roll. At the beginning of this series there is a roll which was long looked upon as that of the first year of Henry II., or by some antiquaries as belonging to the fifth year of Stephen; but recent criticism seems to establish the fact that it is a roll of the 31st year of Henry I.,—the earliest national document, save Domesday, of any extent that now exists. Another im- portant class of documents belonging to the Court of Ex- chequer and stored with a variety of information upon secular and religious matters is the memoranda rolls, which extend from Henry III. to the middle of the present century. These rolls contain enrolments of all the weighty business done in the offices of the queen's and lord trea- surer's remembrancer. Upon their membranes the in- quirer will read how writs ran for the recovery of debts due to the crown, how commissions were appointed to seize estates attainted or forfeited to the crown, how goods were seized in the various ports of England for the non- payment of customs, how the accounts of sheriffs and escheators were settled with the Exchequer, how cities and boroughs made claim to special privileges, and how the numerous proceedings in equity on English informations and bills were conducted. The "brevia regia" endorsed on the memoranda rolls are the most ancient writs of that description in the kingdom; in the earlier periods they assume the shape of letters and contain various wishes of the sovereigns. To the antiquary

and historian the collec- tion of archives called "originalia rolls," which extend from Henry III. to William IV., is of great service. They not only throw considerable light upon the manners and customs in vogue in the 13th and 14th centuries, but also record the descent of lands, questions relating to crown revenues and feudal tenures, the appointment of various commissions for different purposes of investigation, and other similar entries. The importance of the originalia rolls is also increased from the fact that they contain numer- ous extracts from early rolls now no longer in existence. Among the documents of the ancient Exchequer there is much to interest the purely ecclesiastical historian in the collection of ministers' accounts of the issues and profits of monastic lands in the hands of the crown; in the pensions granted to abbots and others upon the dis- solution of the monasteries, now enrolled among the records of the Augmentation Office ; in the accounts of monasteries contained in the chartularies, the account books of first- fruits and tenths; in the taxation rolls which regulated the taxes as well to the kings as to the popes until the survey of Henry VIII.; in the Valor Ecclesiasticus of Henry VIII., which contains surveys of archbishoprics, bishoprics, abbeys, monasteries, and the like throughout the kingdom ; in the visitations of religious houses ; and in the Wolsey books. To the antiquary pure and simple the collection in the Exchequer which records the history of knights' service is perhaps the most interesting. The number of knights' fees throughout the kingdom was 60,215, of which the clergy had 28,015 ; but, as in process

me CORDS

of time it became a doubtful question whether lands were held by knight's service or by some other tenure, inquisi- tions were held and each baron had to return to the king an account of what he held. Such accounts comprise the early history of landed property, with the names of the owners and the extent of the estates. For information on this subject the three great authorities are the Black and Red Books of the Exchequer, the scutage rolls, and the subsidy rolls; the Liber Niger Scaccarii, or Liber Niger Parvus as it is sometimes called, compiled by Gervase of Tilbury, nephew to Henry IT., in the twenty-second year of that king's reign, is the most ancient of these. It contains a list of knights' fees of the time of

Henry IL. and in many of the returns there appear family names and par- ticulars of the parents, children, wives, and occupiers of the land as well as of tenants im capite. In this book there are also various treaties of the same king, four bulls of Pope Alexander IIL, and the constitution of the royal household during the reign of Henry II. The Red Book is somewhat similar to the Liber Niger, and contains among other entries the oaths of the different officers of the Court of Exchequer; the Dialogus de Scaccario (for- merly ascribed to Gervase of Tilbury, but clearly proved by Madox to have been written by Richard FitzNigel, at one time treasurer of the Exchequer, who held the see of London from 1189 to 1198); numerous short memoranda, &c., for the instruction and use of the officials ; and collec- tions of knights' fees and serjeanties of the reigns of Henry IL, Richard L., John, and Henry III. Many of its entries are also in the Black Book. The scutage rolls, which begin in the reign of Edward I., contain the pecuniary satisfaction paid by each knight in lieu of the personal attendance upon his sovereign that was required of him. This satis- faction was called "'scutagium" or "servitium scuti" (service of the shield), and in Norman-French " escuage," from écz, a shield. The assessment was, however, so arbitrary that it was decreed by Magna Charta that no scutage should be imposed without consent of parliament. The subsidy rolls record the fifteenths and tenths, &c., granted by parliament to the crown. In addition to the above are the marshals' rolls, which contain an account of the military service due from great tenants to the king on the eve of a war, the "testa de Nevil," and the solitary roll called the constable's roll. Among the more important documents belonging to the ancient Exchequer collection, concerning which space forbids us to particularize, are the records of the Augmenta- tion Court, full of valuable matter to the church historian, the court rolls of manors possessed by the crown, the volu- minous series of bills and answers, the collection of special commissions, the golden bull of Clement VII. conferring the title of "Defender of the Faith" upon Henry VIIL, hearth-money accounts, the Jews' rolls, the vast collection of crown leases, the recusant rolls, and the very curious wardrobe accounts.

Obsolete Courts.—In addition to the various records which have been alluded to belonging to the Courts of Chancery, Queen's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer, there is a large class of documents which

appertain to obsolete courts, and many of which are of great historical value. The most important of this class are the archives belonging to the Star Chamber, the Court of Chivalry, the Court of Requests, the Court of Wards and Liveries, and the Marshals Court. The muniments of the duchy of Lancaster and also those of the abolished courts of the palatinate of Durham are now among the archives of the Record Office. An account of Domesday Book has already been given (see Domzespay Book). The amal- gamation of the State Paper Office in 1854 with the Record Office has been the means of rendering the series of the English national archives an almost complete collection.

313

With the exception of certain manuscripts in the British Museum and in a few public libraries, most of the public muniments of the realm are now placed in one repository and under the supervision of the master of the rolls.

Upon the subject of the public records Sir Francis. Palgrave, under whose auspices as deputy keeper the public muniments were brought together under one roof, writes as follows :—

"Whether we consider them in relation to antiquity, to con- tinuity, to variety, to extent, or to amplitude of facts and details they have uo equals in the civilized world. For the archives of France, the most perfect and complete in Continental Europe, do. not ascend higher than the reign of St Louis, and compared with ours are stinted and jejune ; whereas in England, taking up our title (so to speak) from Domesday, the documents placed under the custody of the master of the rolls contain the whole of the materials for the history of this country in every branch and under every aspect, civil, religious, political, social, moral, or material from the Norman Conquest to the present day."

History.—In consequence of the neglect and indifference from which the national arehives suffered before being housed in their: present quarters, it is as much a matter for wonder as for congra- tulation that any of them are still in existence. In the earlier periods the records of the courts were preserved in the palace of' the king ; but, when the law courts became

stationary and were held within the precincts of the royal palace, instead of following the sovereign from place to place, all legal documents remained in the custody of their respective courts. On the busiuess of the country increasing, the records began to assume such vast propor- tions that further accommodation had to be obtained. Gradually three warehouses for the custody of public documents came into: existence. The records of the King's Bench and Common Pleas were removed to the palace at Westminster, to the old chapter- house, and to the cloister of the abbey of Westminster, and thus laid the foundation of the well-known "chapter-house repository." Towards the end of the reign of Richard I. the Court of Chancery becoming separated from that of the Exchequer, the wardrobe in the Tower of London was used as the chief place of deposit for all Chancery documents, and thus the Record Office in the Tower sprang up. It had been the custom of the earlier masters of the rolls to keep the records of their courts in their private houses; but after the reign of Edward IV. these documents. were lodged in what is now styled the "chapel of the rolls," but which was then known as the "domus conversorum Judzorum," or the house for converted Jews and infidels, which had been annexed to the office of the master of the rolls in the reign of Edward IIL. ;, an office was subsequently attached to the chapel, and thus arose the record depository known as the "rolls chapel office." For many years these three places of deposit—the chaptcr-house, the Tower, and the rolls chapel office—constituted the chief repositories for: public records ; but, as the accommodation that these buildings offercd was limited, rooms in private houses, vacant vaults, and even stables had to be taken by the ministers of the day for the storing of the ever-increasing archives. Little care was, how- ever, paid to the preservation of the parchments. They were put into houses and forgotten ; their various removals were most care- lessly superintended ; and they were often left a prey to the pilfer- ings of the curious. Now and again a sovereign or a secretary of state turned his attention to the disgraceful condition in which the muniments of the kingdom were preserved and a sweeping reforni was announced ; but more important matters always appcar to: have shelved the subject. In 1567 Queen Elizabeth was informed of the confused and perilous state of the records of her parliament and her chancery, and orders were given for rooms to be prepared in the Tower for the reception of these parchments, Her Majesty declaring that "it was

not meet that the records of her chancery, which were accounted as a principal measure of the treasure belong- ing to herself and to her crown and realm, should remain in private: houses and places for doubt of such danger and spoil as theretofore had happened to the like records in the time of Richard II. and Henry VI." This order was, however, never executed. Ou the accession of Charles II., William Prynne, then keeper of the records in the Tower, implored the king "to preserve these ancient records not only from fire and sword, but watcr, moths, canker, dust, cob-webs, for your own and your kingdom's honour and service, they being such sacred reliques, such peerless jewels that your noble ancestors have estimated no places so fit to preserve them in as. consecrated chapels or royal treasuries and wardrobes where they lay up their sacred crowns, jewels, robes ; and that upon very good grounds, they being the principal evidences by which they held, supported, defended their crowns, kingdoms, revenucs, prerogatives, and their subjects, their respective lands, lives, liberties, properties, franchises, rights, laws." This earnest appeal was not urged before it was required. On his appointment to office Prynne made an inspection of the records under his custody. He found them

"buried together in one confused chaos, dust, and filth in the dark corners of Cesar's chapel in the White Tower." He employed soldiers and women to remove and cleanse them, " who soon grow- ing weary of this noisome work left them as foul, dusty, and nasty as they found them." He then begged the aid of the clerks of his department, but these officials, " being unwilling to touch the records for fear of fouling their fingers, spoiling their clothes, endangering their eyesight and healths by their cankerous dust and evil scent," declined the task. To the energetic Prynne the labour of methodizing the papers in his charge seemed hopeless ; he saw them in confused heaps hidden here and scattered there and destitute of anything approaching to an index. He lamented that it would require "Briareus his hundred hands, Argus his hundred eyes, and Nestor's centuries of years to marshal them into distinct files and make exact

alphabetical tables of the several things, names, places, comprised in them." Still nothing was done to remedy the evils complained of. Addresses were presented to parliament upon the subject; reports were drawn up and committecs frequently sat; but it was not until the beginning of this century that a com- plete and satisfactory investigation of the public records was entered 'nto. In the summer of 1800 a very able report upon the state of the archives was drawn up; and a commission was appointed " to methodize, regulate, and digest the records." But the commission directed its attention exclusively to the printing of antiquarian matter, and nothing was attempted for the better preservation of the archives. Dissatisfaction arose, and a select committee of the House of Commons was appointed to inquire into the working of the Record Commission. 'The result of its sittings was the passing of a special Act of Parliament, which placed the public records in the custody and under the superintendence of the master of the rolls for the time being, and directed the treasury forthwith to provide a suitable building. In 1851 the foundations of the present Record Repository were laid, and seven years afterwards the public records were removed from their different places of deposit and housed in their new quarters, where they are now most carefully preserved. The history of the custody of the state papers which run from Henry VIII. to the present time is but a repetition of the neglect -and ill-treatment which the public records had to endure. When they first began to be preserved they were locked up in chests, then confined in the larder of the privy scal, then lodged in the tower over the gateway of Whitehall Palace, then transferred to the upper floor of the lord chamberlain's lodgings, then despatched to an old house in Scotland Yard ; and it was not till 1833 that the State Paper Office in St James's Park was specially erected for their accommodation. Twenty years later it was deemed advisable by the Government of the day to amalgamate the state papers with the public records; the State Paper Office was therefore pulled down and its contents transferred to the repository in Fetter Lane. On making a careful examination of the state of the documents, it was found that many of them had " greatly suffered from vermin and wet," and that the list of those which had been stolen or had strayed from the collection was no small one. Theft and destruction for private ends appear to have becn the two chief agents of mis- chief. During the reign of Henry VIII. many of the despatches were appropriated by Lord St Albans and

Lord Cherbury, to whom they were entrusted. In the reign of Queen Elizabeth most of the private business papers of Her Majesty, especially her letters on matters of secret importance, came into the hands of the earl of Leicester and finally into the possession of his secretary and his descendants; and, "though they were ultimately recovered, a great part had perished by time and the distraction of the wars, &c. ; being left in England during the Rebellion, many had been abused to the meanest purposes." Upon the outbreak of the Civil War the king's papers from the time he was in the north till the surrender of Oxford were designedly burned ; whilst "a fair cabinet of the king's, full of papers of a very secret nature, which had been left by the king upon his retirement to the Scots, amongst which were thought to be all the queen's letters to the king and things of a very mystcrious nature," was also de- stroyed. In the turbulent days of the Commonwealth Bradshaw, in his capacity as president of the council, managed to obtain possession "of divers books, treaties, papers, and records of state," somne of which, in spite of all the efforts of Charles II., were not regained. At the Restoration 'all the papers of state during the time of the usurpation remained in Thurloe's hands, and Sir Samuel Morland advised a great minister to have them seized, being then privately in four great deal desks ; but for reasons left to be judged, that minister delayed to order it, and Thurloe had time to burn them that would have hanged a great many, and he certainly did burn them exeept some principal ones culled out by himself." During the reign of Charles II. various papers were sent out of the country to The Hague and Sweden for the convenience of ~~*ambassadors, many of which were never returned. Indeed so care*~~ *lessly did ministers watch their own documents that a treaty con- cluded with Holland in 1654 was bought at an auction, and the original treaty with Portugal in the same year was found on a stall in the street. Within almost a comparatively recent date there*

were instances of documents sent out of the State Paper Office which were never returned,—a fact which may account for many of the purely official papers to be found in the manuscript collec- tions of private individuals.

In spite, however, of past thefts and negligence, the state papers, like the public records, are a most wealthy and valuable collection. Their contents were considered so important that at one time it was a matter of the greatest difficulty for any outsider to obtain access to them. The keeper of the state papers was bound by oath "to let no man see anything in the office of His Majesty's papers without a warrant from the king." He was also "ticd by a strict oath and by His Majesty's commands to deliver nothing out of the office unless to the lords and others of the council." During the whole history of the State Paper Office the keepcr never had power to grant on his own authority leave to consult the papers; such permission could only be obtained from the sceretary of state, to whose office the docunients belonged. Among the persons fortunate enough to have this favour accorded them, we find that in 1670 Evelyn was lent several documents which related to Holland ; that in 1679 Dr Gilbert Burnet was permitted by warrant "from time to time to have the sight and use of such papers and books as he shall think may give him information and help in finishing his history of the Reformation of the Church of England"; and that in the same year Prince Rupert made a personal request to the king on behalf of Roger L'Estrange, who was writing a history of the Civil War in England. In later times permission was more freely given, though the "'library of MSS." was still most vigilantly guarded, and applications were more often refused than granted. As an instance of the strictness with which the state papers were preserved, we find that as late as 1775 Lord North, though he was then prime minister, had to beg the king's permission to have free access to all correspondence in the Paper Office; and that in 1780 it was necessary for the Ordnance Office to have permission to search the Paper Office for any documents that regarded their depart- ment. These restrictions have now been entirely removed, thanks to the late Lord Romilly ; when he was master of the rolls, the public records were thrown open to the public free of all the charges that were formerly demanded for investigation, whilst the saine liberal course has been pursued with regard to the state papers down to the year 1760. After that date special permission has to be obtained. Calendars and indexes of the public records are annually published in the appendices to the reports of the deputy- keeper of the public records. Large volumes—entitled Calendars of State Papers—consisting of condensations of the documents in the Public Record Office and

elsewhere from the days of Henry VIII. to the 18th century are now in course of publication.

See Sir T. D. Hardy, Introduction to the Close and Patent Rolls; Fine Rolls, ed. C. Roberts; Feet of Fincs, ed. Joseph Hunter; Thomas Madox, History and Antiquities of the Exchequer; Great Roll of the Pipe, ed, Joseph Hunter ; the Record Report of 1800; Noel Sainsbury, ‘“‘The State Paper Office,” in. the deputy-keeper’s Thirtieth Report (Appendix); A. C. Ewald, Our Public Records, (A. C. BL)

REDBREAST, the name of a bird which from its manners, no less familiar than engaging, has for a long while been so great a favourite among all classes in Great Britain as to have gained an almost sacred character. The pleasing colour of its plumage—-one striking feature of which is expressed by its ancient name—its sprightly air, full dark eye, enquiring and sagacious demeanour, added to the trust in man it often exhibits, but, above all, the cheerful sweetness of its song, even “when winter chills the day” and scarce another bird is heard—combine to produce the effects just mentioned, so that among many European nations it has earned some endearing name, though there is no country in which “ Robin Redbreast ” is held so highly in regard as England.! Well known as is its appearance and voice throughout the whole year in the British Islands, there are not many birds which to the attentive observer betray more unmistakably the influence of the migratory impulse ; but somewhat close scrutiny is needed to reveal this fact. In the months of July and August the hedgerows of the southern counties of Eng- land may be seen to be beset with Redbreasts, not in flocks as is the case with so many other species, but each indi-

1 English colonists in far distant lands have gladly applied the common nickname of the Redbreast to other birds that are not im- mediately allied to it. The ordinary “ Robin” of North America is a Thrush, Turdus migratorius (see FIELDFARE, vol. ix. p. 142), and one of the Bluebirds of the same continent, the Sialia sialis of most orni- thologists, is in ordinary speech the Blue “ Robin” ; while the same familiar name is given in the various communities of Australasia to several species of the genus Petraca, though some have no red breast.

vidual keeping its own distance from the next 1—all, how- ever, pressing forward on their way to cross the Channel. On the European continent the migration is still more marked, and the Redbreast on its autumnal and vernal passages is the object of hosts of bird-catchers, since its value as a delicacy for the table has long been recognized.? But even those Redbreasts which stay in Britain during the winter are subject to a migratory movement easily per- ceived by any one that will look out for it. Occupying during autumn their usual haunts in outlying woods or hedges, the first sharp frost at once makes them change their habitation, and a heavy fall of snow drives them towards the homesteads for such food as they may find there, while, should severe weather continue long and sustenance become more scarce, even these stranger birds disappear —most of them possibly to perish—leaving only the few that have already become almost domiciled among men. On the approach of spring the accustomed spots are revisited, but among the innumerable returning deni- zens Redbreasts are apt to be neglected, for their song not being powerful is drowned or lost, as Gilbert White well remarked, in the general chorus.

From its abundance, or from innumerable figures, the Redbreast is too well known to need description, yet there are very few representations of it which give a notion of its characteristic appearance or gestures—all so suggestive of intelligence. Its olive-brown back and reddish-orange breast, or their equivalents in black and white, may be easily imitated by the draughtsman; but the faculty of tracing a truthful outline or fixing the peculiar expression of this favourite bird has proved to be beyond the skill of almost every artist who has attempted its portraiture. The Redbreast exhibits a curious uncertainty of tempera- ment in regard to its nesting habits. At times it will place the utmost confidence in man, and again at times shew the greatest jealousy. The nest, though generally pretty, can seldom be called a work of art, and is usually built of moss and dead leaves, with a moderate lining of hair. In this are laid from five to seven white eggs, sprinkled or blotched with light red.

Besides the British Islands, the Redbreast (which is the JJota- cilla rubccula of Linneus and the Erithacus rubccula of modern authors) is generally dispersed over the continent of Europe, and is in winter found in the oases of the Sahara. Its eastern limits are not well determined. In Northern Persia it is replaced by a very nearly allied form, Erithacus hyrcanus, distinguishable by its more ruddy hues, while in Northern China and Japan another species, H. akahige, is found of which the sexes differ somewhat in plumage—the cock having a blackish band below his red breast, and greyish-black flanks, while the hen closcly resembles the familiar British species—but both cock and hen have the tail of chestnut-red. A beautiful bird supposed to inhabit Corea, the Sylvia komadori of Temminck, of which specimens are very scarce in collections, is placed by some writers in the genus Erithacus, but whether it has any very close affinity to the Redbreasts does not yet seem to be proved. It is of a bright orange-red above, and white beneath, the male, however, having the throat and breast black. (A. N.)

REDDITCH, a town of Worcestershire, is situated on an eminence near the Warwickshire border, 16 miles south- west of Birmingham by the Midland Railway. The church of St Stephen, a handsome building in the Decorated style, erected in 1854-55, contains some good stained-glass windows. A public cemetery was formed in 1854. Among the public buildings are the county court, where special sessions are held, and the literary and scientific institute. In the neighbourhood are the remains of Bordesley Abbey, founded by the Cistercians in 1138. The town is an important seat of the needle manufacture. The urban

1 Tt is a very old saying that Unum arbustum non alit duos Lirithacos—one bush does not harbour two Redbreasts.

? Of late years an additional impulse has been given to the capture of this species by the absurd fashion of using its skin for the trimming of ladies' dresses and " Christmas ecards."

sanitary district (area about 926 acres) had a population of about 7871 in 1871, and of 9961 in 1881.

REDEMPTORISTS or Lievortans. See Licvort, vol. xiv. p. 635.

RED RIVER. Three at least of the many Red Rivers of the world deserve to be mentioned,—(1) the Red River or Fleuve Rouge, the Songeoi or Thao of the Anamese, the Hoang-Kiang of the Chinese, which flows through the heart of Tonc-K1nG (¢.v.) ; (2) the Red River which rises in the Stake Plain in Texas (U.S.), passes through a magnificent caiion 100 miles long, and from 200 to 1000 feet deep, and furnishes a navigable channel of 1200 miles before it reaches the Mississippi (q.v.); (3) the Red River of the North, a somewhat smaller stream, which, rising in Elbow Lake (so called from its shape) in Minnesota (U.S.), not far from the sources of the Mississippi, crosses into Canada at Pembina, and falls into Lake Winnipeg, after a course of 565 miles (110 in Canada). The Red River of the Mississippi presents the physical geographer with a phenomenon nowhere reproduced on the same scale, —a great raft of timber and driftwood, which, in spite of the labours of Captain Shreve (1835-39) and General Williamson and Captain Linnard (1841-45), had by 1871 increased so as to block the channel for 45 miles between Spring Creek and Caroline Bluff. The Red River of the North is equally famous as the scene of some of the leading events in the history of the North-West.

Rep River SETTLEMENT.—In 1811 the fifth earl of Selkirk (1771-1820), who had devoted special attention to emigration as a means of providing for the surplus population of the Scottish Highlands, obtained from the Hudson's Bay Company a grant of land in what was then called the district of Ossiniboia (Assiniboia). In 1813 a settlement was founded by his agent, Mr Miles Macdonell, on the banks of the Red River, the first fort (Fort Daer) being at Pembina. By 1814 the settlers numbered 200. The North-West Fur-Traders of Manchester (a company which was the bitterest rival of the Hudson's Bay Company till the two amalgamated in 1821) did all they could by force and fraud to break up the colony, which, by 1816, had taken up its headquarters at Fort Douglas, on the site of the present town of Winnipeg. The French-Indian half-breeds (Bois-Brfilés) were incited agaiust it, and its mills and houses were burned. The earl of Selkirk, arriving on the scene, sueceeded in reorganizing the community, to which the name of Kildonan was now given, after Kildonan in

Helmsdale, Sutherland- shire. He found himself personally involved in a very network of hostile intrigue ; but the colony was saved, and after his prema- ture death it continued to be more or less supported by his heirs till 1824. In 1835 Lord Selkirk's territorial claims were trans- ferred to the Hudson's Bay Company, who undertook to pay the expenses ineurred by the family. At that date the population of the settlement consisted of about 5000 Highlanders, Bois-Britilés, English half-breeds, and retired company officials. At the transfer of territorial jurisdiction to the Canadian Government in 1869 the Bois-Brfilés, under a certain Louis Riel (son of a Frenchman who had built the first mill on the Red river), revolted and declared an independent republic. Colonel (now Lord) Wolseley was de- spateched with a foree of 1400 men, and without bloodshed took possession of Fort Garry on 24th August 1870. The only striking feature of the expedition was the remarkable energy with which the difficulties of transport were overcome. Riel in 1885 became the leader of another unsuccessful insurrection of half-breeds in the same region.

See Halkett, Statement respecting the Earl of Selkirk's Settlement wpon the Red River, London, 1817; G. Bryce, Manitoba, 1882 (which contains previously unpublished docunients); " Narrative of the Red River Expedition," in Black- wood's Magazine, vols. cviii. and cix. (1871).

REDRUTH, a market town of Cornwall, is pleasantly situated on the West Cornwall Railway, about 9 miles west of Truro. It is almost the centre of the mining district of West Cornwall, and, though many of the rich copper mines are now abandoned, others have proved rich in tin at greater depths, and new mines have also been opened, sufficient to render Redruth one of the most busy and important towns of the county. Within the last few years a post-office, a mining exchange, and a school of science and art have been built, as well as a new church. At the foot of Carn Brea, the unique Druidical hill, sur- mounted by masses of granite, with an ancient castle and

See Plate

V., vol. ii,

monument to Lord de Dunstanville, is the parish church dedicated to St Uny, with a fine old 15th-century tower and peal of bells. The industries include brewing, tin- smelting, making of safety fuses, and iron-founding. Be- sides the market-house, there are a granite town-hall, a masonic hall, and the public rooms with Druids' Hall. At the west end of the town is the West Cornwall Miners' Hospital (thirty beds), erected by Lord Robartes in 1863 and since added to by the same nobleman. The popula- tion of the urban sanitary district (area 4006 acres) in 1871 was 10,685, and in 1881 it was 9335.

RED SEA. The Red Sea runs north-north-west from the Gulf of Aden in the Indian Ocean for about 1200 miles, extending from 12° 40' to 30° N. lat. The Strait of Bab-el-Mandeb at the entrance to the Gulf of Aden is 13} miles across, and is divided by Perim Island into two channels, the north-eastern narrow and shallow, the south-western 10 miles wide, and deep. The sea widens rapidly to 140 miles in 16° N. lat., and more gradually to 205 miles off Kunfuda in 19° N. lat.; from this point it narrows to 115 miles in 24° N. lat., a breadth which is maintained up to 27° 45' N. lat., where the sea divides into two gulfs, those of Suez and 'Akaba. The Gulf of Suez continues in the north-north-west direction for 170 miles, with an average width of 30 miles; that of 'Akaba is narrower, and runs north-north-east for 97 miles. The Sinaitic peninsula between the two gulfs bounds the Red Sea to the north; on the east the Arabian coast and on the west the coasts of Egypt, Nubia, and Abyssinia form the boundaries.

The Arabian coast (see AraBra) is generally a narrow sandy plain backed by ranges of barren mountains abrupt in outline and of moderate height. Enormous coral reefs run along the coast in broken lines, parallel to the shore but not connected with it. They usually rise out of deep water to within a few feet of the surface ; and a navigable channel of from 2 to 3 miles in width, in which the water is always calm, extends between them and the land. The Farisan Archipelago in 17° N. lat. is the largest and most important of the island groups of the eastern reef. It is entirely of organic formation. The most important har- bours of Arabia on the Red

Sea are Mokha in 13° 30’ N. lat. (now nearly deserted for those of Aden and Hodeida, the port of San‘a), Lokeyyah about 200 miles farther north, Jiddah in 21° 20’ N. lat. (the only well protected harbour), and Yenbo in 24° N. lat. The western coast is flat and desert in the north, but gives place farther south to high tablelands rising at some distance from the shore, and then to the lofty Abyssinian mountains (see ABYSSINIA, Arrica, Ecypr). The parallel system of coral reefs is not so extensive as on the east coast, and being nearer the land the inshore channel is narrower. ‘The large and curiously shaped coral-rock island of Dahlak, lying off Annesley Bay, is the most important on the reef. There are seven or eight harbours, of which the best known are Massowah, a little to the north of Annesley Bay (the largest inlet on the sea), and the port of disembarkation of the British troops in the Abyssinian War of 1868, Khor Nowarat, which, though small, is the best bay in the Red Sea, and Sawakin (Suakim) in 19° 30’ N. lat., the chief port of the Soudan trade.*

The only islands of importance not already mentioned are those of the volcanic group in 14° N. lat., one of which, Jebel Zugur, 10 miles long and 7 wide, rises in a series of bare hills to the altitude of 2074 feet, and the islet Jebel Teir in 15° 30’ N. lat., on which a volcano has only recently become inactive. A dangerous reef named the Dedalus in 24° 26’ N. lat. lies right in the way of steamships traversing the sea; it is covered with a few feet of water or uncovered, according to the season, and, like most of the

reefs and islands on the usual track of vessels, is furnished with a lighthouse.

The Red Sea area is in a state of gradual upheaval, the former seaport of Adulis on Annesley Bay is now 4 miles from the shore, and at Suez the former limits of the sea can be traced for several miles northwards ; whereas the north coast of Egypt is undergoing gradual subsidence.

Tides.—The tides are imperceptible at many places on the Red Sea, and where observable they are extremely uncertain, varying both as to time and to amount of rise with the direction and force of the wind. At Suez,

where they are most regular, the rise varies from 7 feet at spring to 4 feet at neap tides. The surface-currents of the sea are also variable and perplexing ; they are chiefly pro- duced by the wind, and change in velocity and direction accordingly.

Trafic.—From the decline of the old_ Indian trade with Egypt till the formation of the Peninsular and Oriental Steam Navigation Company and the overland route to India in 1840, traffic m the Red Sea was almost entirely confined to small native vessels trading with grain and fruit between Egypt and Arabia, and carrying pil- grims to Jiddah, the port of Mecca. Since 1840 passenger traffic, and since the opening of the Suez Canal in 1869 trade of all kinds in European vessels, have greatly increased. A telegraphic cable was laid from Bombay to Suez in 1859.

Meteorology.—The climate of the Red Sea region is one of the hottest in the world. The altitude of the sun, the almost con- tinually cloudless skies, the arid rainless character of the shores, and the complete absence of rivers combine to make the mean temperature high. That of the air usually ranges from 70° to 94° Fahr., though it has been frequently observed as high as 105° in the shade on board ship, and in the northern part of the sea the clearness of the nights promotes radiation, so that by morning the thermometer may fall to the freezing-point on shore. 'The atmo- sphere over the land is very dry ; the ieence between the read- ings of the wet and dry bulb thermometers is frequently as much as 25°, and sometimes, during the prevalence of the desert wind, it rises to 40°. The evaporation from the Red Sea is naturally excess- ive; the humidity of the air over the water is always great in summer, and when the wind blows off the sea the atmosphere is frequently saturated on shore. From the direction of the prevail- ing winds, precipitation takes place chiefly on the mountains of Abyssinia. North-north-west winds prevail on shore all the year round with very slight exception; but in the middle of the sea they are only universal from June to September, and are confined to the northern half from October to May. During the latter season south-south-east winds prevail in the southern part of the sea, while a belt of calms and light variable breezes occupies a changing position near the centre. The southerly winds are often accompanied with rain squalls, and in September there are frequently calms and hazy weather. Hurricanes

and heavy storms seldom occur in the sea, but moderate gales are common and sandstorms not unusual. From the admiralty temperature charts it appears that the mean temper- ature of the surface-water at the four typical seasons of the year, taking all available data into account, is as follows :—

Gulf of About South Adjacent Suez. 20° N. lat. End. Indian Ocean. le OYlleiaviersctelelelelteloreratere 65° ior 78° ° IBGMG6 nooobenaproosn dS 76° 80° 87° 85° WAGs GE Peters eiciolsie.vleisie'= figs 85° eee 79° INGhGONE Gonaaboouane 76° 86° 82° 82°

The temperature of the water at the south end of the sea is usually in excess of that of the air, and it is on record that on four consecu- tive days the temperature of the surface-water was 100°, 106°, 100°, and 96°, while at the same time that of the air was 80°, 82°, 83°, and 82°. The surface-temperature varies from 70° to 90°, according to the position and the season. The winter mean of the northern part is about 71°, and this temperature continues to the bottom at that season. When the temperature on the surface is higher than 71° it gradually falls as the depth increases, uutil at about 200 fathoms it becomes uniform in all parts of the sea as 71°, a temperature which is maintaincd from that depth to the bottom all the year round. This is in consonance with all observations made on enclosed seas, the water below the point to which the barrier reaches being of uniform temperature. According to some authori- ties this is the isocheimal or mean winter temperature of the sur- face ; but the researches of the " Challenger" seem to indicate that the temperature of the external ocean at the summit of the barrier is that which extends to the bottom of the enclosed sea.

Physical Conditions—The greatest depth, which occurs in 21° N. lat., is about 1200 fathoms, and from this point the sea shoals toeach end. The general conformation of the bottom is that of a series of gradually sloping rounded elevations with rounded basins between them. 'The water is shallow in the Gulf of Suez and also at the Strait of Bab-el-Mandeb, where the depth in the centre of the large channel is a little under 200 fathoms. The Red Sea basin is cut off from the general oceanic circulation by a barrier rising

ie p>

to within 200 fathoms of the surface in a channel that has a much smaller average depth and is only 134 miles wide. As no rivers discharge into it and little rain falls, it must be viewed as a purely evaporational arca, and as such it is of extreme scientific interest. It reproduces and exaggerates all the special physical conditions of the Mediterranean ; but on account of the extremely trying nature of the climate it has not been so thoroughly investigated. The average amount of evaporation at Aden is variously estimated at from 0°25 to 0°75 inch per day, or from 8 to 23 feet per year; in the Red Sea generally it nust be at least equal to the smaller figure, and probably exceeds it. As the level of the Red Sea is not sub- ject. to any permanent change it is evident that water must flow in through the Strait of Bab-el-Mandeb—the slight current through the Suez Canal need not be eonsidered—to replace loss by evapora- tion. If there were no return eurrent it is estimated that the Red Sea would become a mass of solid salt in one or two thousand years. Although the salinity of the water is higher than that of the water of the ocean it does not appear to be on the increase. The density of Red Sea water at 60° Fahr. is about 1°030, corre- sponding to 4°0 per cent. of total salts, while that of average ocean water is 1°026, which corresponds to 3°5 per cent. of salts. In order to account for the constancy of salinity in the Red Sea it is necessary to assume the existence of strong undercurrents of salt water passing out of the sea, beneath the opposite entering current of fresher water. These undercurrents have not yet been ob- served, but there are indirect proofs of their existence. During the hottest months (July to September), when there is most eva- poration, the prevalence of northerly winds drives the water out of the Red Sea as a rapid surface-drift ; the south-west monsoon is blowing in the Indian Ocean at the same time, and the general level in the Red Sea is from 2 to 3 feet higher than during the cooler months, when evaporation is less, and when the north-east monsoon forces water into the funnel-shaped Gulf of Aden, and thence through the Strait of Bab-el-Mandeb. This is held by Dr W. B. Carpenter to be a proof of the existence of an undercurrent, for the north-east wind forms a head of water at the strait, which to equalize pressure over the area produces an under-return-current, and this greatly accelerates the flow of the regular undercurrent of the Red Sea, and so lowers the

general level. In summer the outflow of dense salt water is slower, and this more than neutralizes the effect of the outward surface-drift, which to some extent reduces the volume of the entering fresher water at that season. In the Red Sea there is a constant and regular sub-surface circulation of water due solely to evaporation ; the surface-drifts caused by wind, although they form rapid currents and render navigation dangerous at times, are minor agents in the system and modify it only toa slight extent. The Red Sea and the Persian Gulf serve as concen- tration areas for maintaining the salinity of the deep water in the Indian Ocean, in opposition to the currents of comparatively fresh water flowing northwards from the Antarctic Occan.

Deposits.—In a sea so nearly landlocked and so narrow the deposits which cover the bottom are naturally of the order classed as terrigenous. The large quantity of sand blown into the sea, the immense abundance of corals and other ealcareous organisms in the water, and the entire absence of rivers with their suspended sediments produce deposits more nearly resembling in some of their characteristics those of the open ocean than those of inland seas. But the sand and ooze from the bottom of the Red Sea have not yet been thoroughly examined.

Fawna.—Animal life in all its forms is extremely abundant in the Red Sea, which, however, cannot be said to have been any more completely surveyed from a biological than from a physical point of view, although sevcral eminent zoologists have studied special types. Great numbers of new species have been discovered by each investigator, and it has been ascertained that the Red Sea fauna differs considerably from that of the Mediterranean, not more than twenty species being common, it is stated, to both, thus indicating that the separation of the two seas must have taken place at a remote epoch, which appears from geological evi- dence to be the Eocene period. It exhibits affinities with the fauna of the Pacific, particularly with that of the eoast of Japan. Corals are more plentiful and more active in the Red Sea than in almost any other piece of water of its size, a result probably due equally to the high temperature, the great salinity of the water, and the abundance of food. (Gab a8 Jl)

REDSHANK, the usual name of a bird—the Scolopax calidris of Linnzus and Totanus calidris of modern authors —so called in English from the colour of the bare part of its legs, which, being also long, are conspicuous as it flies over its marshy haunts or runs nimbly beside the waters it affects. In suitable localities it is abundant throughout the greater part of Europe and Asia, from Iceland to China, mostly retiring to the southward for the winter, though a considerable number remain during that season

Am 2D 317

along the coasts and estuaries of some of the more northern countries. Before the great changes effected by drainage in England it was a common species in many districts, but at the present day there are very few to which it can resort for the purpose of reproduction. In such of them as remain, its lively actions, both on the ground and in the air, as well as its loud notes render the Redshank, during the breeding-season, one of the most observable inhabitants of what without its presence would often be a desolate spot, and invest it with a charm for the lover of wild nature. At other times the cries of this bird may be thought too shrill, but in spring the love-notes of the male form what may fairly be called a song, the constantly repeated refrain of which—leero, leero, leero (for so it may be syllabled)— rings musically around, as with many gesticulations he hovers in attendance on the flight of his mate; or, with a slight change to a different key, engages with a rival; or again, half angrily and half piteously complains of a human intruder on his chosen ground. The body of the Redshank is almost as big as a Snipe's, but its longer neck, wings, and legs make it appear a much larger bird. Above, the general colour is greyish-drab, freckled with black, except the lower part of the back and a conspicuous band on each wing, which are white, while the flight-quills are black, thus producing a very harmonious effect. In the breeding-season the back and breast are mottled with dark brown, but in winter the latter is white. The nest is generally concealed in a tuft of rushes or grass, a little removed from the wettest parts of the swamp whence the bird gets its sustenance, and contains four eggs, usually of a rather warmly tinted brown with blackish spots or blotches ; but no brief description can be given that would point out their differences from the eggs of other birds,

more or less akin, among which, those of the Lapwrne (vol. xiv. p. 308) especially, they are taken and find a ready sale.

The name Redshank, prefixed by some epithet as Black, Dusky, or Spotted, has also been applied to a larger but allied species— the T'otanus fuscus of ornithologists. This is a much less common bird, and in Great Britain as well as the greater part of Europe it only occurs on its passage to or from its breeding-grounds, which are usually found south of the Arctic Circle, and differ much from those of its congeners—the spot chosen for the nest being nearly always in the midst of forests and, though not in the thickest part of them, often with trees on all sides, generally where a fire has cleared the undergrowth, and mostly at some distance from water. This peculiar habit was first ascertained by Wolley in Lapland in 1858 and the following year. The breeding-dress this bird assumes is also very remarkable, and seems (as is suggested) to have some correlation with the burnt and blackened surface interspersed with white stones or tufts of lichen on which its nest is made—for the head, neck, shoulders, and lower parts are of a deep black, con- trasting vividly with the pure white of the back and rump, while the legs become of an intense crimson. At other times of the year the plumage is very similar to that of the common Redshank, and. the legs are of the same light orange-red. (A. N.)

REDSTART, a bird well known in Great Britain, in many parts of which it is called Firetail—a name of ~~al~~ most the same meaning, since "start" is from the Auglo- Saxon steort, a tail! This beautiful bird, the Luticidla pheenicurus of most ornithologists, returns to England about the middle or towards the end of April, and at once takes up its abode in gardens, orchards, and about old buildings, when its curious habit of flirting at nearly every change of position its brightly-coloured tail, together with the pure white forehead, the black throat, and bright bay breast of the cock, renders him conspicuous, even if attention be not drawn by his lively and pleasing though short and intermittent song. The hen is much more plainly attired ; but the characteristic colouring and action of the tail per-

1 On this point the articles "Stark-naked" and 'Start' in Prof. Skeat's Etymological Dictionary may be usefully consulted ; but the eonnexion between these words would be still more evident had this bird's habit of quickly moving its tail been known to the learned author.

ol8

tain to her equally as to her mate. The nest is almost always placed in a hole, whether of a tree or of a more or less ruined building, and contains from five to seven eggs of a delicate greenish-blue, occasionally sprinkled with faint red spots. The young on assuming their feathers present a great resemblance to those of the REDBREAST (supra, p. 314) at the same age; but the red tail, though of duller hue than in the adult, forms even at this early age an easy means of distinguishing them. The Redstart breeds regularly in all the counties of England and Wales; but, except in such localities as have been already named, it is seldom plentiful. It also reaches the extreme north of Scotland ; but in Ireland it is of very rare occurrence. It appears throughout the whole of Europe in summer, and is known to winter in the interior of Africa. To the east- ward its limits cannot yet be exactly defined, as several very nearly allied forms occur in Asia; and one, 2. aurorea, represents it in Japan.

A congeneric species which has received the name of Black Redstart,! Ruticilla titys,? is very common throughout the greater part of the Continent, where, from its partiality for gardens in towns and villages, it is often better known than the preceding species. It yearly occurs in certain parts of England, chiefly along or near the south coast, and curiously enough during the autumn and winter, since it is in central Europe only a summer visitor, and it has by no means the high northern range of 2. phenicurus. The males of the Black Redstart seem to be more than one year in acquiring their full plumage (a rare thing in Passerine birds), and since they have been known to breed in the intermediate stage this fact has led to such birds being accounted a distinct species under the name of &. cazrit, thereby perplexing ornithologists for a long while, though now almost all authorities agree that these birds are, in one sense, immature.

More than a dozen species of the genus Ruticilla have been described, and the greater number of them seem to belong to the Himalayan Sub-region or its confines. One very pretty and interesting form is the 2. moussieri of Barbary, which no doubt allies the Redstart to the SToNE-Cuats (9.v.), Pratincola, and of late some authors have included it in that genus. In an opposite direction the Bluethroats, apparently nearer to the Redstarts than to any other type, are by some authorities placed in the genus Ruticilla, by others considered to form a distinct genus Cyanecula, and by at least one recent writer referred to the genus Hrithacus (see REDBREAST). If we look upon them as constituting a separate genus we find it to contain two or three distinguishable forms :—(1) C. swecica, with a bright bay spot in the middle of its clear blue throat, breeding in Scandinavia, Northern Russia, and Siberia, and wintering in Abyssinia and India, though rarely appearing in the intermediate countries, to the wonder of all who have studied the mystery of the migration of birds; next there is (2) C. leucocyanea, with a white instead of a red gular spot, a more Western form, ranging from Barbary to Germany and Holland; and lastly (3) C. wolji, thought by some authorities (and not without reason) to be but an accidental variety of the preceding (2), with its throat wholly blue,—a form of comparatively rare occurrence. The first of these is a not unfrequent, though very irregular visitant to England, while the second has appeared there but seldom, and the third never, so far asis known. By

1 The author of a popular work on British birds has suggested for this species the name of " Blackstart,'"' thereby recording his ignorance of the meaning of the second syllable of the compound name as already explained, for the Black Redstart has a tail as red as that of the com-moner English bird.

2 The orthography of the specific term would seem to be titis (Ann. Nat. History, ser. 4, x. p. 227), a word possibly cognate with the first syllable of Titlark and Titmouse.

the ornithologist of tolerably wide views the Redstarts and Bluethroats must be regarded as forming with the Nieur- INGALE (vol. xvii. p. 498), Redbreast, Hedge-Sparrow, Wheatear, and Chats a single group of the

“Family” Sylviide, which has been usually called Savicoline, and is that which is most nearly allied to the Thrushes (see THRUSH).

In America the name Redstart has been not unfittingly bestowed upon a bird which has some curious outward resemblance, both in looks and manners, to that of the Old Country, though the two are in the opinion of some systematists nearly as widely separated from each other as truly Passerine birds well can be. The American Redstart is the Setophaga ruticilla of authors, belonging to the purely New-World family Mniotiltide, and to a genus which con- tains about a dozen species, ranging from Canada (in summer) to Bolivia. The wonderful likeness, coupled of course with many sharp distinctions, upon which it would be here impossible to dwell, between the birds of these two genera of perfectly distinct origin, is a matter that must compel every evolutionist to admit that we are as yet very far from penetrating the action of Creative Power, and that especially we are wholly ignorant of the causes which in some instances produce analogy. A. N.)

REDWING, Swedish Ridvinge, Danish Réddrossel, Ger- man Lothdrossel, Dutch Koperwiek, a species of THRUSH (q.v.), the Zurdus iliacus of authors, which is an abundant winter visitor to the British Islands, arriving in autumn generally about the same time as the FIELpraRE (vol. ix. p. 142) does. This bird has its common English name 3 from the sides of its body, its inner wing-coverts, and axil- laries being of a bright reddish-orange, of which colour, however, there 1s no appearance on the wing itself while the bird is at rest, and not much is ordinarily seen while it is in flight. In other respects it is very like a Song-Thrush, and indeed in France and some other countries it bears the name Mauvis or Mavis, often given to that species in some parts of Britain; but its coloration is much more vividly contrasted, and a conspicuous white, instead of a light brown, streak over the eye at once affords a ready diagnosis. The Redwing breeds in Iceland, in the sub- alpine and arctic districts of Norway, Sweden, and Finland, and thence across Northern Russia and Siberia, becoming scarce to the eastward of the Yenissei, and not extending beyond Lake Baikal. In winter it visits the whole of Europe and North Africa, occasionally reaching Madeira, while to the eastward it is found at that season in the north-western Himalayas and Kohat. Many

writers have praised the song of this bird, comparing it with that of the NIGHTINGALE (vol. xvii. p. 498); but herein they seem to have been as much mistaken-as in older times was Linneus, who, according to Nilsson (Orn. Svecica, i. p. 177, note), failed to distinguish in life this species from its commoner congener 7'. musicus. The notes of the Redwing are indeed pleasing in places where no better songster exists; but the present writer, who has many times heard them under very favourable circumstances, cannot but suppose that those who have called the Redwing the '" Nightingale" of Nor- way or of Sweden have attributed to it the credit that properly belongs to the Song-Thrush ; for to him it seems that the vocal utterances of the Redwing do not place it even in the second rank of feathered musicians. Its nest _

3 Many old writers assert that this bird used to be known in England as the "Swinepipe "; but, except in books, this name does not seem to survive to the present day. There is no reason, however, to doubt that it was once in vogue, and the only question is how it may have arisen. If it has not been corrupted from the German Weindrossel or some other similar name, it may refer to the soft inward whistle which the bird often utters, resembling the sound of the pipe used by the swineherds of old when collecting the animals under their charge, whether in the wide stubbles or the thick beech-woods ; but another form of the word (which may, however, be erroneous) is " Windpipe,"' and this might lead to a conclusion very different, if indeed to any conclusion at all, ' Whindle" and '" Wheenerd" have also been given as two other old English names of this bird (Harl. Miscellany, Ist ed., ii. p. 558), and these may be referred to the local German Weindrustle and Winsel.

and eggs a good deal resemble those of the Blackbird, and have none of the especial characters which distinguish those of the Song-Thrush. ALN.

RED WING, a city of the United States, capital of Goodhue county, Minnesota, occupies a commanding site on a plateau encircled by high bluffs (nearly 300 feet high), on the west bank of the Mississippi, 41 miles south of St Paul on the La Crosse division of the Chicago and St Paul Railroad ; it is also the eastern terminus of the Cannon Valley branch of

the same railway. Red Wing has an opera-house and a music-hall ; it trades in lumber, manufactures earthenware, waggons and carriages, furni- ture, flour, leather, and boots and shoes, and exports large quantities of wheat. The population was 4260 in 1870 and 5876 in 1880; in 1885 it was estimated at 8000, including 1050 employés in manufactories.

REDWOOD. See Sequoia.

REED, a term applied to several distinct species of large, water-loving grasses. The common or water reed, Phragmites communis, Trin. (Arundo phragmites, L.), oc- curs along the margins of lakes, fens, marshes, and placid streams, not only throughout Britain but over the Pale- arctic and Nearctic regions, and even in South Australia. Another very important species is Psamma arenaria, R. and S. (Ammophila or Arundo arundinacea, Host.), the sea-reed or marram grass, a native of the sandy shores of Europe and North Africa. Both species have been of notable geological importance, the former binding the soil and so impeding denudation, and actually converting swamp into dry land, largely by the aid of its tall (5 to 10 feet) close set stems, which not only break the currents of water around them, and so cause deposition of their sediment,

but furnish in themselves an important annual contribution

to the incipient soil. The latter species, of which the branching rootstocks may be traced 30 or even 40 feet, is of still greater importance in holding sand-dunes against the encroachments of the sea, and for this purpose has not only been long protected by law but has been extensively planted on the coasts of Norfolk, Holland, Gascony, &c. Other reeds are Calamagrostis (various species), Gynerium argenteum (pampas grass), Deyeuxia, &e., also Arundo Donax, the largest European grass (6 to 12 feet high), which is abundant in southern Europe. Reeds have been extensively used from the earliest times in thatching and in other branches of construction, and also for arrows,

the. pipes of musical instruments, &c. Reed pens are still used in the East (see PEN). Plants belonging to other orders occasionally share the name, especially the bur-reed (Sparganium) and the reed-mace (Z'ypha), both belonging to the natural order 7'yphacex. The bulrushes (Scirpus), belonging to the natural order Cyperacex, are also to be distinguished. See Grasses; also Sowerby's British Grasses, &e.

REED, in music. See Oxos, vol. xvii. p. 705; Har- MONIUM, vol. xi. p. 483 ; and OrGAN, vol. xvii. p. 828 sq.

REEVE, Criara (1725-1803), one of the imitators of Horace Walpole in Gothic romance, was born at Ipswich in 1725. She was an industrious woman of letters, and produced many works in prose and verse, including an interesting sketch of the Progress of Romance; but her only eminent success was the romance of Zhe Old English Baron (1777). In her theory about the use of the super- natural, as in chronological position, she stands midway between Walpole and Mrs Radcliffe. Though she owned Walpole as a master, she declined to follow as far as he went in supernatural incident; she admits a castle and a haunted wing and the ghost of a murdered man, but draws the line before statues dropping blood, pictures that groan and walk out of their frames, and suchlike improb- abilities. She was the daughter of a Suffolk clergyman, and died at Ipswich in 1803.

REFEREE, in law, is a person to whom a matter is delegated by a superior for report or decision. The prin- cipal use of the word occurs in the practice of the House of Commons and of the High Court of Justice. The Court of Referees is a court to which the House of Commons commits the decision of all questions of locus standt,—that is, the right of petitioners to be heard in opposition to private Bills. A referee is also associated with members of the House as a member of every committee on an opposed Bill, but may not vote. Under the Judicature Act, 1873, cases are submitted to either official or special referees for inquiry and report, or for trial. Inquiry and report may be directed in any case,—trial only by consent of the parties, or in any matter requiring any prolonged examination of documents or accounts, or any scientific or local

investiga- tion which cannot be tried in the ordinary way (36 and 37 Vict. c. 66, ss. 56, 57; Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, Ord. xxxvi.).

REFLEXION. See Lieut, vol. xiv. p. 586 sq.

REFORMATION

a lee period occupied by the great movement known

as the Protestant Reformation stands identified, for the most part, with the period which marks the transition from the medizval to the modern era in European history. Taken within its narrowest limits, it may be looked upon as commencing with the year 1517 and as finding a certain consummation with the year 1545. In the former year Luther's theses, published at Wittenberg,! represent the commencement of that direct and open renunciation of medizval doctrine which he initiated ; in the latter year the assembling of the council of Trent marks the renewed sanction and promulgation of that doctrine whereby an insuperable barrier was erected between the communion of Rome and the churches of Protestantism. From that time each communion possessed its distinctive organiza- tion and formulary of faith, and the struggles which subsequently took place between Romanism and Pro-

testantism represent, not attempts to bring about or to

1 Most of the details of the main facts connected with the German Reformation during Luther's lifetime are given under LUTHER.

resist reform (whether of discipline or of doctrine), but endeavours on the part of both communions to bring about, if possible, the extinction of the opposed form of faith.

But, although the contest which Luther initiated had, long before his death, resulted in complete and irreparable rupture between the contending parties, it is certain that in order to understand the true nature and origin of that contest we must go back to events long anterior to 1517 ; while in order fully to estimate its effects we must follow the history of events long after 1545. In Germany, for example, the Reformation can

hardly be regarded as find- ing even a formal consummation before the peace of Augs- burg (1555) ; in Switzerland the movement went on with iunportant modifications down to the death of Calvin in 1564 ; in France the onward progress was not materially checked before the massacre on the eve of St Bartholomew (1572); in Bohemia its independent and peculiar fortunes found a final solution only with the battle of the White Hill in 1620; while in England and in Scotland, in the Netherlands, in Scandinavia, in Italy and in Spain, the

Its three phases.

movement assumed so much variety of character, and was decided by circumstances of time and place of so different a kind, that its essential features often become merged and almost lost in their combination with other and altogether extraneous elements.

Nor are the considerations arising out of diversities of race, divergencies of political interests, and varied issues the only difficulties which attach to any attempt to treat the movement as a whole. We must also bear in mind the very different conceptions of the end to be attained which at successive stages of its history have modified its teaching and its organization, and eventually in a great measure determined its geographical limits. These conceptions may be distinguished as those involving (1) a reform of discipline, (2) a reform of doctrine, (3) a modifica- tion of the current dogmatic teaching. Of these three dis- tinet conceptions the first, taking its rise in the generally admitted corrupt practice of the Roman Church, aimed at little more than a restoration of discipline,—a reform of morals, that is to say, among the clergy and the mon- astic orders, and the abolition of those various abuses which had grown up under the lax administration and baneful examples of successive popes and of the Curia; the second, although demanding a reform of doctrine as well as of discipline, sought simply to restore what was believed to be the teaching of the primitive as opposed to the medizval church; while the third, guided in the first instance rather by an only half-conscious instinct than by any avowed standard of belief, sought eventually to establish the right of private judgment, to the almost entire

repudiation of authority, whether as expressed in the decrees of councils, in the confessions of the Reformed churches, or in the creed of Trent. And it is from this last point of view that the Reformation has gradually come to be regarded as a new commencement rather than as a restoration of belief,—as a point of departure towards a higher and more enlightened faith rather than as a return to an ancient, imperfectly ascertained, and possibly obsolete standard.

But, by whichever of these aims the movement in favour of reformation was guided, the dominant conception has not unfrequently operated quite independently of the other two. Demands for reform of discipline not unfrequently resulted in disunion where disagreement with respect to doctrine did not exist. The further definition of already accepted doctrine, again, even when made in connexion with some minor article of belief and involving but an almost imperceptible divergence of interpretation, often proved productive of a serious schism where in questions of discipline there was perfect unanimity. The right of private judgment, when urged in contravention of any of the newly formulated standards of discipline or belief, in- volved an equally decisive rupture with those who recog- nized only the traditional sources of doctrine. It is evident, therefore, that the Reformation, when regarded from a fairly comprehensive point of view, must appear as a highly complex movement carrying in itself the ele- ments of further controversy and conflict. Even the theory which would seem to afford the most satisfactory solution of its varied phenomena—that which teaches us to look upon it as a Teutonic revolt, intellectual no less than re- ligious, against the traditions which the Latin Church in the course of centuries had invented and imposed on the faith and habits of thought of Western Christendom— often fails us as a clue to its widely different manifesta- tions, and other disturbing causes seem to forbid the effort to refer them to any general principle. The character and policy of the reigning Roman pontiff, the jealousies and divergent interests of the several European states and the special aims of their several rulers, the spell which imperial

institutions and traditions long continued to exercise over the minds of all but the most advanced and independent thinkers, are all important factors in the movement. If, however, we endeavour to assign the causes which pre- vented the Reformation from being carried even to but partial success long prior to the 16th century, we can have no difficulty in deciding that foremost among them must be placed the manner in which the medieval mind was fettered by a servile regard for precedent. To the men of the Middle Ages, whether educated or uneducated, no measure of reform seemed defensible which appeared in the light of an innovation. Precedent was the standard whereby every authority, lay or clerical, was held to be bound ; and to this rule the only exceptions were a general council and the supreme pontiff. Even Gregory IX. or Clement V., when he assumed to promulgate additions to the existing code of the Universal Church, was understood to do so simply in his capacity of infallible expounder of essential and unalterable doctrine ; while no reform, how- ever seemingly expedient or however recommended by its abstract merits, was held to be justifiable if it could be shown to be in conflict with ancient and authoritative tradition. The Reformers themselves always maintained that the doctrines which they enforced rested on Scriptural precedent and primitive example. Their assertion was frequently challenged by their antagonists; and it 'may reasonably be doubted whether even Luther or Calvin could have commanded any considerable following had not their doctrinal teaching been combined with a demand for a reformation of discipline which rested on undeniable precedent, and to which the circumstances of the time imparted new and irresistible force,—a force, however, which had been long accumulating and had been derived in no small measure from the blind obstinacy of the Roman see in times long antecedent.

The existence long before the 16th century of a strong Desire desire to bring about a reformation of discipline within the for re-

church itself is attested by evidence which it will suffice

form of disci-

to pass by with little more than an allusion. Among the pline.

most notable instances are those afforded by the rise of the Dominican and Franciscan orders in the 13th century and of the Brethren of St Jerome (or the Brethren of the Common Life) in the 14th century,—efforts based upon general conviction, which resulted in spontaneous combina- tions. Similar in origin, though more strictly ecclesi- astical in character, were the designs of the great councils which successively assembled at Pisa (1409), at Constance (1414), and at Basel (1431). Among those who were dis- tinguished in these assemblies by their strenuous advocacy of reform, Pierre d'Ailly and his pupil Jean Charlier de Gerson, both successively chancellor of the university of Paris, and Nicholas de Clémenges, archdeacon of Bayeux, were especially conspicuous. Lach alike upheld in the plainest language the superiority of a general council to the pope, and the obligation that rested on such a body to address itself to the task of church reform whenever the necessity might arise, and the supreme pontiff himself be found either incapable of such a labour or unwilling to initiate it. Of the widespread necessity for such reform, as shown by the condition of the clergy and the monas- teries, the remarkable treatise by Nicholas de Clémenges,! De Corrupto Ecclesiz Statu, affords alone sufficient evidence. By Michelet? this powerful tractate has been compared, for its vigour and the effect which it produced, to the De Captivitate Ecclesie Babylonica of Luther; and it is a striking proof of the deep-rooted corruption of the whole church that such flagrant abuses should have continued to exist for another century with little or no abatement.

1 Or by Dietrich of Niem ; the authorship is disputed. 2 Hist. de France, bk. viii. c. 3.

Task of Re- formers.

REFORMATION

Clémenges deplores in the strongest terms the state of the church in his day,—a condition of appalling degeneracy, which he ascribes mainly to the increase in wealth and luxury that had followed upon the development of a worldly spirit in its midst. His strictures leave no order or degree of either the ecclesiastical or the monastic life untouched,—the overwhelming ostentation of the Curia ; the pride and rapacity of the

cardinals, their immorality and addiction to simony ; the prevalence of the same vices among the episcopal order, filled with beardless youths, who, scarcely liberated from the dread of the school- inaster's ferule, hastened to assume the pastoral office ; the lower clergy in general so sunk in vice and sloth that scarcely one in a thousand (" vix inter mille unus ") was to be found living a godly and sober life; the nunneries, which he declares were brothels rather than sanctuaries ("non dico Dei sanctuaria, sed Veneris execranda prostibula"). We can feel no surprise at finding that in the 16th century Clement VII. thought it necessary to place this burning diatribe by a great doctor of the church in the Index Ex-purgatorius. A few years later we find the evils to which Clémenges called attention emphasized by one of the most eminent ecclesiastics of the age, —the cardinal Julian Cesarini, when he was endeavouring to dissuade Pope Eugenius IV. from his design of dissolving the council of Basél (see Poprpon, vol. xix. p. 502). In this letter he affirms that so strongly is popular feeling stirred against the clergy by their neglect of their duties and scandalously immoral lives that there is reason to fear that, if some remedy be not devised, the whole fabric of the Roman Church may be overturned.!

The complete failure of these successive efforts to bring about any comprehensive measure of church reform is a familiar fact in European history. And not only were the evils which it was sought to abolish suffered to continue with but little abatement, but dissent even from the recog- nized discipline of the church was placed under a ban, and made, in common with dissent from doctrine, an offence punishable with the severest penalties. The medieval theory of the Roman hierarchy had indeed been reaffirmed by Eugenius IV. and his successors with a success which seemed almost to preclude the possibility of its ever being again challenged. But the main point here to be noted 1s that in none of these several efforts in the direction of reform, whether resulting from conciliar or popular action, was the doctrine of the church once called in question. The fate that overtook John Huss and Jerome of Prague appears to have been very generally regarded as a neces- sary example of just rigour in the suppression of heresy. We find, accordingly, that, when in the following century it was sought to associate the efforts of the reformers in the direction of doctrinal change with the efforts of a party within the

church itself in the direction of disciplinary reform, the defenders of the traditional Catholic faith challenged the assumed precedent and altogether denied the parallel. "It is," wrote Bossuet in the 17th century, "an obvious illusion; for among all the passages which they adduce there is not one in which those teachers have ever dreamed of changing the belief of the church, of amending its worship, which consisted chiefly in the sacrifice of the mass, or of overthrowing the authority of her prelates and especially that of the pope, all which was the primary design of this new reformation of which Luther was the architect."2 It is not easy to gainsay the reasonableness of Bossuet's criticism. It was the fundamental theory of the Reformation that it involved the setting aside of the

a all al ne

1 " Dissolutio cleri Alemannie, ex qua laici supra modum irritantur adversus statum ecclesiasticum .. . inclinatus est arbor ut cadat, nec potest diutius persistere." See Ain. Sylvius, Opera (ed. 1551), pp. 66, 70. 2 (fuvres (1865), ii. 303.

development given in medizval times to the doctrines and teaching of the early church, and proposed to substitute for these a totally different interpretation, which rejected the successive decisions of councils and popes as arbitrary and erroneous. Such a theory, however, necessarily im- posed on the Reformers the task of proving the validity of their own position, by showing that their repudiation of a practice and of precedents which had been accepted for so many centuries was justified by an appeal to yet more ancient and unquestionable authority. If indeed they failed in so doing, they must look forward to sinking in the estimation of Christendom to the level of heretics, and be prepared to stand before posterity in the same category as the Arians, the Albigenses, the Lollards, and the Hussites, and those other sects which, by their un- warranted assertion of the right of private interpretation, had provoked and incurred the formal condemnation of the church. It is not within the scope of this article to attempt to estimate the justice of the theological argu- ments by which the Reformers sought to vindicate their position ; but there is good reason for concluding that the argumentative powers and personal

influence of Luther and Calvin would have failed, just as the efforts of pre- ceding reformers had failed, in effecting the desired result, had not the conditions and circumstances of the age been such as to lend new force to the arguments which they urged in favour of a fundamental change in the standpoint of religious faith.

The most notable feature in connexion with traditional belief which challenges our attention at the commence- ment of the 16th century is the manner in which the popedom was becoming less and less in harmony with the spirit of the age, and with those new forces which were now developing in the midst of Teutonism. The intoler- ance of the church in the repression of heresy had become more pronounced and was pressing with increasing rigour on free thought, when, owing to the influences of the New Learning, that thought was everywhere on the point of seeking to break through the traditional trammels ; the corruption of the Curia and of both the regular and the secular clergy, the extension of the temporal power of the pontiffs in Italy, and the extortion of their emissaries in other countries had reached a climax just as, owing to the more independent spirit generated by the consolidation of the nationalities, the ruler and the people in each kingdom or principality were becoming increasingly impatient of the existence of such abuses. A brief consideration of these several features becomes, accordingly, quite indis- pensable, if we wish rightly to comprehend the forces at work in Europe at the time when the Reformers arose to combine them and give them more definite direction.

Not a few, and some very memorable, efforts had been Efforts

made before the 16th century to bring about a reformation of doctrine, but these had almost invariably been promptly visited with the censure of the church. Long after the " heresies" of the 4th century had died away and after the controversies of the turbulent 9th century—such as those on the Eucharist between Paschasius Radbertus and Ratramnus, and on predestination between John Scotus Erigena and Gottschalk—had been silenced by the decisions of the pontiffs, we find movements arising, which, how- ever much they differ in other characteristics, all attest the existence of a widespread desire among large sections of the community

to revert to a simpler form of religious belief and practice. The Paulicians (or Manichzans of the East), the Albigenses (or Manichzans of the West), the Waldenses, the Cathari, and the Leonists (or Poor Men of Lyons)— sects which made their appearance mainly in the 12th and 13th centuries, and for the most part in Switzerland, Languedoc, and northern France— the XX. — 4I

Lollards in England and the Hussites in Bohemia, may be looked upon as the ancestors in faith of the Huguenots and the Puritans of after-times, and were all more or less characterized by an aversion to the Roman ritual, to splendid churches, to crosses and crucifixes, combined with a more definite denial of such doctrines as that of baptismal regeneration, of transubstantiation, of masses for the dead, and of the obligation to observe Lent. The ultimate fate of these different sects was singularly similar. Of their earlier history, indeed, we have but few memo- rials, for their records, if any existed, have mostly perished ; and, as with their prototypes in the earlier Christian centuries, it became almost necessarily their policy to avoid all external demonstrations which would be likely to arrest the attention of the world. An inquisitor of the 13th century, when describing the Leonists (c. 1250), whom he speaks of as both the most ancient and the most widely spread of the sects then existing, represents them as by no means guilty, to all external appearance, of practices which could fairly be stigmatized as blasphemous, but as wearing a great semblance of piety, as being of good repute among their neighbours, and chiefly blamable as given to speaking against the Roman Church and its clergy and thus gaining, only too easily, the ears of the laity at large.!_ To such characteristics, however, the Albi- genses in the 12th century had presented a remarkable exception. At the commencement of the pontificate of Innocent III. (1198) his legates had found nearly the whole of the rich and prosperous territory extending from Carcassonne to Bordeaux dominated by this powerful heresy,—a form of doctrine associated, moreover, not with austerity but with voluptuousness of life, with a profound contempt for the priestly profession, and with a warm

admiration for the conceptions of chivalry and the poetry

Influence of poli- tical motives.

of the troubadour,—a heresy enriched by the devotion of its adherents to an extent which made it far wealthier than the church itself in those regions, and before which the representatives of the Roman orthodoxy seemed threatened almost with extinction. The suppression of this heresy by Simon de Montfort is a well-known episode, and would seem to have formed the point of departure for a new and more rigorous policy on the part of the church in its dealings with like manifestations of dis- obedience. In the year 1229 the statutes of the council of Toulouse formulated, as it were, the code of persecution, and, aided by the Inquisition, which probably took its rise about the same time, supplied a new machinery for the detection and suppression of heresy. To the terrorism thus established, after the sword of De Montfort had done its work, we may fairly refer the changed characteristics of the adherents of the heresies in France, as above de- scribed, in the middle of the 13th century.

But, the suspicions of the church having once been thoroughly roused and the secular power incited and guided to its task, external conformity and inoffensive life, the mountain hamlet and the secluded valley, proved alike unavailing to avert the cruelty of the persecutor. The Cathari in Italy did not long survive the fall of the Hohen- staufens, from whom they had received effective protection and support ; and it added not a little to the offence of the doctrines proclaimed by the Spiritual Franciscans, whose tenets were condemned by the council of Vienne in 1311, that, while the order had taken its rise in a spirit of protest against the corruptions of the Curia, its members were known to be ready to favour and aid by all the means in their power the restoration of the imperial ascendency in Italy. The Spiritual Franciscans were the forerunners of the Apostolic Brethren, one of the most widely spread of the new sects, and must also be looked

- *Max. Bibl. Patrum (1676), vol. xxv. p. 264.*

REO hee Tt 10 N

upon as the precursors of the Lollards. The intimate con- nexion between theological doctrine and political Opinion that existed among the latter sect is well known. We find, accordingly, that heresy, long before Reformation times, was regarded by the papal power as associated with hostile political interests, and that a new incentive to its rigorous suppression was thus supplied.

On the other hand, the popedom itself, during the long sojourn of the pontiffs at Avignon (1309-7 8), became involved in a political alliance, whereby it alienated the sympathies of Europe at large to an extent which it was never afterwards able to regain. During that long and humiliating episode in its history the office was filled almost exclusively by Frenchmen, whose policy was con- ceived in complete subservience to that of the reigning French monarch ; and the pontiff at Avignon thus came to be regarded both by the empire and in England as the pliant ally of a hostile power. During the following century it recovered much of its influence in Germany, where its pretensions were sometimes regarded not un- favourably by the electors as an equipoise to the too despotic sway of the emperor. Somewhat later we find it receiving the most efficient support from Spain. But it could never again command the same universal defer- ence in Western Christendom; and the apparently genuine devotion to its interests which may from time to time be discerned manifesting itself, now in one nation and now in another, was largely inspired by olitical considerations, and often dearly purchased at the expense of a corre- sponding hostility provoked among another people.

To the manner in which theological tenets, often purely speculative in their origin and innocuous in their bearing upon practice, thus came to be regarded as identified with secular questions of grave import and pressing for an immediate solution, we must partly attribute the jealousy with which the first symptoms of heresy were now watched for by Rome. Early in the 14th century the Fraticelli and the Apostolic Brethren, with other heretical sects, were anathematized. In the year 1324 Pope John XXII. demanded of the emperor the suppression of the Waldenses,? who had reappeared in Lombardy ; and, ably as Marsilius of Padua assailed the pretensions of the papacy, his pro- test seemed ineffectual amid the supreme humiliation of his patron, Louis of Bavaria. Driven alike from

Italy and from France, the persecuted sect took refuge in Savoy and in Switzerland, and in the year 1489 the 'papal legate reported that their numbers were not less than 50,000. Lollardism was suppressed with unsparing hand in England ; and John Sawtrey, the first of Wikliffe's followers to suffer martyrdom, was burnt to death in 1401, for refusing to worship the cross and for denial of the doctrine of transubstantiation. Fifteen years later John Huss and Jerome of Prague suffered the same fate at Constance, and the indignation excited among their fellow-countrymen, intensified as this feeling was by differences of race, gave rise to a memorable resistance, which eventually won religious freedom for the land. At the diet of Kutna Hora (Kuttenberg) in 1485 a truce was made between the Utraquists and the Catholics for thirty-two years, and the complete religious equality then established was made permanent at the diet of 1512. In England, on the other hand, the Lollard movement was almost completely extinguished. The political doctrines with which it had become associated made it the object of suspicion alike to the ecclesiastical and to the civil power; and Sir John

® They were not, however, known under this name; in the 15th and at the commencement of the 16th century they never so styled them- selves, and were rarely so styled by others. The name by which they were known among themselves was that of "The Brethren." See Ludwig Keller, Die Reformation und die dlteren Reformparteien (1885), p. 296.

'The New Learning,

HHP ORS ATION

Oldcastle, its chief leader, although he suffered martyrdom, altogether failed to win the popularity or the reverence which waited on the memories of the two Hussite leadcrs. The religious tenets of his followers were not, indeed, alto- gether suppressed, and continued to command a certain fol- lowing down to the 16th century. Asa tradition, however, they would seem to have survived in connexion with the early English Puritanism rather than with the Reformation ; while between the Hussite movement and the Reformation the connexion is unquestionable and was recognized by Luther himself.

During the very time that the Roman pontiffs were wielding thus effectually the weapons of bigotry and per- secution against all manifestations of independent religious thought, their influence and patronage were largely given to the fostering of other influences, which ultimately proved highly favourable to that very freedom of judgment and of philosophic speculation which the Roman see has invariably sought to suppress. The relations in which the "New Learning," as it was then called, is to be found successively standing to the representatives of orthodox belief constitute an interesting and instructive study. At one time Greek had been held in reverence as the official language of the Roman Church; but, from the period when the popes were first enabled to shake off the yoke of the Eastern emperor in Italy, the use of the Greek language had been discontinued, its literature placed under a ban, and the study of both systematically discouraged in Western Chris- tendom. Then came the Renaissance; and under the patronage of pontiffs like Nicholas V. (1447-1455), and cardinals like Julian and Bessarion, Greek became as much in favour at the Curia as it had before been discredited. At first it seemed not improbable that this literary re- volution might prove a powerful aid not only in promot- ing Christian culture but in diffusing a more genuinely Christian and catholic spirit. While eminent ecclesiastics sought to bring about the reconciliation of the churches of the East and West, original thinkers like Pius IT. and Maffeus Vegius put forth views on the whole subject of education which involved a decisive rupture with the traditions of medizevalism. It is unnecessary to describe the manner in which this promising future became over- clouded ; how learning in Italy became associated at once with scepticism and immorality ; and how men of letters like Politian and Poggio and Bembo and Beccadelli, under the favour of pontiffs like Leo X., at once scandalized the devout and amused the fancy of the polite scholar. "This fable of Christ has been to us a source of great gain," a cardinal at the Vatican was overheard to observe. Such a tone of feeling, however, was not consonant with the spirit of the persecutor, and if the religious spirit was shocked by profanity it was less disgraced by bigotry. Earnestness of conviction was derided and disbelieved in ; and the prevalent sentiments at the Curia at the outbreak of the Reformation were those of idle and careless security. Signs, however, were not wanting to prove to a later generation how little that false security was justifiable. Foremost among those who advocated

reform and a policy of reconciliation in the first half of the 15th century was Nicolas de Cusa, who, though German by birth, embraced with ardour the schemes projected for the regeneration of Italy and of the church at large. Neither Pius II. nor Nicholas V., who alike promoted him and honoured him, appears to have discerned the dangerous element that lurked in his bold spirit of inquiry. From Cusa, however, Laurentius Valla derived the guidance which led him on to his memorable attack on the fiction of the Donation of Constantine, and to that more general investigation of the claims of the popedom which marks the commencement of the historical scepticism which now began to develop

with such startling results. To Valla succeeded Gregory of Heimburg, who exposed the papal pretensions with equal vigour, and made it for the first time apparent how formidable a weapon the New Learning might prove in the defence of those imperial and popular rights in Germany which Rome at that time contemptuously ig- nored. The conflict between Heimburg and Eugenius TV. foreshadowed, indeed, the greater contest between the Teutonic and the Latin power, and Heimburg has more than once been designated the prototype of Ulrich von Hutten.

In the whole history of the Reformation, and of the Political period by which it was immediately preceded, the political aims of relations of the popedom to the other European powers }°

and more especially to Germany, constitute, in fact, elements of primary importance. In the latter part of the 15th century those relations were still further em- bittered by the personal character and aims of the reigning pontiffs. At the very time when the existence of the popedom as a temporal power was menaced by the rising spirit of innovation, the reverence and sympathy of Europe were still further alienated by the spectacle of the career of Alexander VI. and of his end,—the result, it was commonly reported, of the poison which he had designed for the de- struction of another. The character of lis successor, Julius II. (1503-1513), might well seem virtuous by comparison ; but at no period in the history of the pontificate does its religious character seem more completely lost sight of in purely secular interests. It had long before (see Poprpom) been the aim

of each more ambitious pope to become a great territorial prince and thus to lay the foundation of the private fortunes of his house. But Julius aimed at something more than this,—at the assertion of political supremacy throughout Italy and of the right to rank with the great powers of Europe as wielding at once material resources but little inferior to theirs, and as commanding a widespread organization to the like of which not one of them could aspire. Such were the objects to which his untiring energies were systematically directed. Within four years of his accession he had added Perugia and Bologna to the possessions of the church, and fron Piacenza to Terracina his sway extended over all the great strongholds and the most fertile territory ; even the great powers of France and Spain, notwithstanding their newly consolidated strength, could not but regard with jealousy and apprehension his genius and his policy. "Before," wrote Machiavelli, "there was no baron so petty as not to look with contempt on that popedom which now even a king of France regards with respect." The means by which this remarkable change was effected involved, however, a recourse to fiscal expedients which eventually proved eminently detrimental to the Roman see ;! while for nearly a quarter of a century we find the policy of the great powers in relation to Rome almost entirely determined by purely political considerations and Italy itself becoming the arena of their contending ambi- tions. In the year 1494 Charles VIII. of France effected his memorable passage of the Alps to grasp the crown of Naples. It was currently believed that he had been incited to the enterprise by Alexander VI. himself,—a cir- cumstance which alone suffices to explain the failure which attended that pontiff's efforts when he subsequently sought to prevail upon the invader to submit his claims to the arbitration of the holy see. In the year 1508 the invasion

1 Syb quibus" (de. Alexander VI. and Julius II.) "etiam in negotiatione prebendaria multe nove techn repertz sunt ad pecunias undique corradendas, et ab illis recepte sunt approbataque, magts fisci quam Christi rem agentibus." See the remarkable letter of Eubulus Cordatius to Montesius, prefixed to the reprints of the Treatises of Nicolas de Clémenges, ed. 1519.

Rela- tions of popedom with France ;

with Castile and Aragon ;

by the emperor Maximilian I. took place, with the object of re-establishing the imperial supremacy in Italy,—an expedition which was in some respects the counterpart of that of Charles, and to which Julius II. opposed a vacillat- ing policy not unlike that of his predecessor. To the expedition of Maximilian succeeded the league of Cambray, designed to humble the republic of Venice, and warmly supported by Julius II. as a means whereby to gratify his resentment at the resistance offered by that powerful state to the encroachments of the popedom. No sooner was Venice sufficiently humiliated than Julius proceeded to concert measures for carrying out the great object of his ambition,—the expulsion of the foreigner from Italy. Never before had the aims of the papacy seemed so completely in conflict with those of every European power.

In France, Louis XII., on appealing to the representa- tives of the Gallican Church (council of Tours, September 1510), soon found that national feeling entirely prevailed over Ultramontane sympathies, and that he might count on their effectual support. Notwithstanding, therefore, the remonstrances of his devout consort, Anne of Brittany, he resolved upon a vigorous anti-papal policy. In concert with the emperor Maximilian, he revived the long-dormant demand for a general council; and a mimic assembly, consisting of four cardinals, twenty Gallican prelates, cer- tain abbots and other dignitaries, was actually convened at Pisa in 1511. In this extremity Julius exhibited his usual fertility of resource by organizing the Holy League, and thus inducing Ferdinand of Aragon and the Venetians to combine with him in opposing the designs of schismatic France. The council, transferred to Milan, issued from thence in April 1512 an edict suspending Julius from all pontifical functions as a "notorious disturber of the council, the author of schism, contumacious, incorrigible, hardened" (Raynaldus, sub ann.). The pontiff thereupon excommunicated Louis XII., who rejoined by a formal protest and by causing coins to be struck and circulated bearing the arms of France and the ominous inscription Perdam Babylonis nomen. In the meantime the fifth Lateran council, the rival council convened by Julius, commenced

its sittings (May 1512), and forthwith de- clared the acts of the assembly held at Milan to be those of a schismatical body, while it proceeded to confirm the papal censure on the king of France. The expulsion of the French from Italy, after the fall of their heroic leader, Gaston de Foix, seemed to threaten only a further widening of the schism, when the death of Julius in 1513 opened the door for negotiation—an opportunity of which Louis eagerly availed himself—while the pliant disposition of the new pontiff, Leo X. (1513-1521), afforded additional facilities for arriving at an agreement. The French monarch now disavowed the proceedings of the council which he had before supported, and acknowledged the validity of the acts of the council at the Lateran. Other points were still under discussion when Louis died and was succeeded by Francis I., January 1515.

In the following year the» Catholic king Ferdinand of Aragon died. The relations of Spain to the papacy during his reign and before that time had been very far from representing a policy of complete subserviency. By a concordat made in the year 1482 Pope Sixtus IV. had conceded to the sovereigns of Castile and Aragon the right of nominating to the higher ecclesiastical offices, although he had reserved to himself a corresponding power in con- nexion with the inferior benefices,—a privilege which soon resulted in the customary abuses and rendered the papal supremacy for a time scarcely more popular in Spain than in Germany. At nearly the same time the institution of the Inquisition in the former country is generally supposed

to have first taken place (see InquisitTIon),—an event which must not, however, be construed into a proof of the ascendency of papal influence. In its earlier stage the Inquisition was quite as much a civil as an ecclesiastical tribunal, being especially directed against the exclusive privileges and immunities claimed by the hereditary nobility ; and, although under Cardinal Ximenes the re- pression of heresy became one of its chief functions, it was long regarded with no friendly feelings by Rome. The Roman doctrine and discipline were rigorously im- posed on the Spanish population, but Ferdinand himself showed little disposition to

submit to the dictation of the Roman pontiff. In the year 1508 he sharply rebuked his viceroy, the count of Rivarzoga, for allowing a papal bull to be promulgated in the provinces without having previously obtained his sanction, and declared that if the bull were not forthwith withdrawn he would withdraw the two crowns from the obedience of the holy see. Five years later Cardinal Ximenes, in a like spirit, openly denounced the abuses that accompanied the traffic in indulgences.

The tone that Germany at this period was able to with The several states and princi- Ger- palities, feebly protected by the imperial authority, which ™"Y-

assume was very different.

could no longer be asserted as of yore, yielded an easy prey to the extortion of the papal emissaries. The national clergy, perhaps more corrupt than in any other Teutonic country, showed themselves completely subservient to the worst malpractices of Rome. It was from the laity at large that the first warning came that either reform or revolution must before long ensue. In the year 1511 a notable document, purporting to emanate from the German people at large, was laid before the emperor. Drawn up in the form of a petition, it enumerated and described the various abuses associated with the prevailing ecclesiastical practice and suggested the remedies. Fore- most among the specified grievances it placed the utter want of good faith shown by successive pontiffs in the manner in which they were accustomed altogether to dis- regard (often at the instance of most unworthy favourites) the privileges and immunities solemnly granted by their predecessors. It complained of the frequent nullifying of the elections of prelates canonically elected by their respect- ive chapters, of a like disregard for such elections even in cases where large sums had been paid to the Curia by the chapters in order to secure the ratification of their choice, of the manner in which all the richest benefices were reserved for cardinals and proto-notaries, of the fre- quent anticipation of reversions (expectative gratie) and of the concentration of numerous benefices in the hands of single individuals, of the incessant lawsuits generated by these malpractices and the consequent waste of con- siderable sunis both on the lawsuits themselves and on the obtaining

of bulls which eventually proved inoperative, —"'so that," said the petitioners, 'it has become a common saying that, on obtaining a reversion from Rome, one ought to lay by one or two hundred gold pieces where- with to defend the actions to which the maintenance of one's rights will infallibly give rise." Other matters of complaint were the frequency with which annates were demanded; the bestowal of livings on those utterly in- competent for the discharge of their duties,—" fitter," in fact, "to be muleteers than to be the instructors of their fellow-men"; the frequent issuing of new indulgences and revocation of the old, notwithstanding the repeated re- monstrances of the laity ; the levying of tenths under pre- text of an expedition against the Turks when no such expedition was designed ; and the petition closed with the complaint, which had been rife almost ever since the days of Hilary of Arles, of the continual summoning of suits

to Rome which could be as satisfactorily and far more promptly decided before the national tribunals.1

Attitude While the popular feeling in Germany was being thus

of Ger- effectually alienated from the papal see, the learning of

eiiting. Germany was also pursuing that ominous track, first delineated by Gregory of Heimburg, which marks its com- plete divergence from the Italian humanism, The names of Johann von Goch (d. 1475), Johann Wessel (d. 1489), Johann Reuchlin (d. 1522), and Erasmus stand associated, although in different ways, with a great movement which, by attacking at once the doctrine and the discipline of the church, opened up the way for Luther. Goch and Wessel were among the first to give systematic form to the opposi- tion to the existing ecclesiastical system, and their criticism included both popes and councils as ultimate authorities in matters of faith. They inveighed with especial force against the doctrines of indulgences, veneration of saints, and purgatory, and they denied that confession, the Lord's Supper, and extreme unction were to be regarded as sacraments of divine institution. During the years 1511 to 1516 Reuchlin carried on a memorable struggle against the monks of

Cologne in defence of the New Learning and of improved canons of textual criticism. In the year 1516 Erasmus put forth the first edition of his Novum Instrumentum. Side by side with these more elaborate efforts there was going on another literary movement which in its influence on the popular mind was not less consider- able. Ever since the days of the early Lollards satire had been found a not altogether ineffectual weapon in assailing those abuses in the church which argument and remon- strance seemed powerless to reform. The Prazse of Molly, from the pen of Erasmus, which appeared in 1511, seconded the graver efforts of Reuchlin, and successfully held up to ridicule those monastic orders of whose greed and dull obstructive activity Germany was already so weary. But even this brilliant effort paled in its effects when compared with the Epistole Obscurorum Virorum, which appeared in 1515-16. These letters, of which Ulrich von Hutten and his friend Crotus Rubianus were the principal authors, were a series of broadly humorous fabrications, purporting to be written by members of the obscurantist party them- selves. A more skilful mode of exposing the ignorance and imbecility of thought which characterized the average intelligence 6f the monks'of those days could hardly have been devised; and the success of the artifice appeared complete when it became known that certain stolid monks had been led to approve the volume and even aid in its circulation as a genuine and valid defence of the views which they upheld.

These effective demonstrations, it is to be noted, were not merely the outcome of that widespread discontent above described, but resemble rather a series of sparks elicited by immediate contact between the German mind and Rome; and it is of no little interest to mark the effect produced on three of the most eminent representa- tives of the new movement by their visit, within a few years of each other, to the capital and by the contempla- tion of the splendour of the Curia and the moral degrada-

Visit to tion of its members. Of these three observers the first a was Erasmus, who visited the capital in 1506. His lively }gense of the incongruous was not a little excited by the spectacle of the warlike pontiff, Julius II., whom, in his Praise of Folly, written a few years later, he describes as

1 See "Gravamina Germanice Nationis cum Remediis et Avisa- mentis ad Cxsarem Maximilianum," in Freherus, Germanicarum Rerum Scriptores, ii. 318. The existence of such grievances and their non-redress may serve partly to explain the obduracy with which the subjects of the empire received the simultaneous proposals of Maxi- inilian in the direction of state-reform. See Janssen, Gesch. d.

deutschen Volkes, i. 557-561. Janssen, it may be observed, makes no reference to the document above cited.

subverting alike the laws, peace, and religion. But Erasmus himself does not appear to have been greatly scandalized. He affects, indeed, to be somewhat uncertain whether it is Germany that has copied Rome or whether Rome has not rather copied a certain class of German prelates, who seem to look upon the battlefield as the fitting place where to render up their souls to God. Somewhat later, writing in a graver mood, he declares that nothing will ever efface his more pleasing recollections of the great city,—its freedom of discourse, its intellectual illumination, its works of art, its libraries, and its scholars. Four years after Erasmus came an Augustinian monk from Erfurt, full of reverence for the traditions, the grandeur, and the sanctity of Rome. Martin Luther appears to have been less struck than was Erasmus by the unpriestly character of Julius II., who, as he admits, maintained order and watched over the sanitary condition of the Sacred City. But he was shocked beyond measure by the corruption, the profanity, and the immoral lives of the Roman clergy. The fond illusion of his monastic life was at an end ; and he returned to Germany not only prepared to counsel resistance to papal extortion but shaken in his whole allegiance to the holy see. A few months after Luther came Ulrich von Hutten. It would be difficult to select a better representative of the temper and feeling of the higher classes in Germany at that time. To pride o birth: and devotion to the New Learning he united a love of adventure which no physical suffering or misfortune seemed able to subdue, and a chivalrous spirit which could but impatiently brook the assertion of even legitimate authority. Already burning with resentment at the sys- tematic extortion to which his countrymen were subjected, his feelings were still further intensified as he listened to the contemptuous language and observed the supercilious

demeanour which marked the Roman estimate of those who bore the German name. He heard from an eye-wit- ness a description of Julius II. as that pontiff had presented himself to the world at the siege of Mirandola, with "wild eye, brazen front, and threatening mien." On his return to his fatherland Hutten condensed into epigrammatic Latin verse, beside the suppressed fury of which the polished satire of Erasmus seems to pale, a description of what he had seen and heard, and denounced with terrible effect the whole system of bulls, indulgences, and other devices whereby an avaricious prelate was wringing dis- honest gains from a long-suffering nation. Few literary assailants have ever possessed a greater power of irritating an antagonist than did Ulrich von Hutten, and considera- tions of generosity or expediency rarely deterred him. It was generally expected when Leo X. ascended the pontifical throne that he would be anxious to sheathe the sword which his predecessor had wielded so vigorously, and his countrymen already hailed him as the " restorer of peace." By that epithet Hutten too vouchsafed to address him, but it was in a dedication to the pontiff of a reprint of Laurentius Valla's Treatise on the Donation of Constantine, and the seeming act of homage was thus artfully appended to pages exceptionally calculated to wound the papal susceptibilities.

It nist, however, be admitted that the character of the German episcopate at this time was such that it scarcely appeared to advantage even when compared with that of the ecclesiastics of the Roman Curia. Its members were generally scions of princely houses, caring little for the spiritual interests of their dioceses, but delighting in field sports and martial exercises, given to building palaces for their own residence rather than to the erection of churches, and often without the slightest tincture of learning. Their primate at this time was Albert, brother of the elector of Brandenburg, archbishop of Mainz and Magde-

of Luther ;

of Ulrich von

Hutten. f

Char- acter of German episco- pate.

burg, a young and ambitious voluptuary, caring for little but pleasure and display. On the great prelates the ex- tortion of Rome sometimes fell not less heavily than on

of Ingoldstadt drew attention to the resemblance between Luther's the doctrines put forth in the theses and those of the relations Hussites, and at the mention of that undoubted heresy not With the

Tetzel's cam- paign.

the laity; and the archbishop, before he could receive his pallium, was called upon to pay the sum of 30,000 gulden into the papal exchequer. Leo X. was at that time intent on carrying out the great design of his predecessor, the rebuilding of St Peter's. It has been observed by Palla- vicino that the millions devoted to the erection of the material church were acquired at the cost of many more millions to the spiritual church. Leo proclaimed a fresh issue of indulgences, and the archbishop Albert was appointed his commissioner to carry out the sale in a large portion of Germany. He seized the occasion to prevail upon the pope to allow him to appropriate one half of the money collected for the indulgences in order to pay for his pallium. As his chief agent in the sale he imprudently selected one Tetzel, a Dominican friar, whose unscrupulous- ness in such work was so notorious that the papal collector at Mainz refused to employ him. In the course of his progress Tetzel came to Jiiterbogk, near Wittenberg, and his superstitious traffic and the impudent devices which he employed to cajole the people were thus brought directly under the notice of Luther. The young professor seized the opportunity of directing the attention of the university, where le was already highly popular, to the abuses associated with the sale of indulgences. He did not as yet impugn the doctrine of indulgences itself, and he expressed his conviction that their good father the pope must be altogether unaware of the extent to which such abuses were allowed to prevail. His celebrated theses were forwarded by himself to the archbishop, as well as to the elector of Saxony, his patron, and also the muni- ficent founder of the university.

The elector, who had seen with no slight dissatisfaction the manner in which his provinces were being plundered in order to pay for the extravagance of a neighbouring prelate, extended his protection to the courageous polemic, and Luther thus gained the all-precious interval of freedom from molesta- tion which enabled him to compose the memorable treatises whereby he produced such an immense effect on the minds and consciences of his countrymen. The nailing of his theses to the door of the chureh at Wittenberg, it is to be noted, was a very common method of procedure on the part of a university disputant ; and nearly a year passed away before the events which so deeply agitated Witten- berg were recognized in their full importance by the world at large. Luther himself, indeed, in his notable letter to Leo X., written in 1518, tells us} that, contrary to has wishes, his theses were translated into German, and circulated throughout the nation, and that his antagonists declared that he had set the world in flames, But in this language there is evidently something of exaggeration. Some two months after the appearance of Luther's theses Tetzel, by way of rejoinder, published at the university of Frankfort-on-the-Oder a hundred and six anti-theses, and these were subsequently burnt by the students of Wittenberg in the market-place. To Leo, however, the vague reports that reached Rome conveyed only the im- pression of a dispute between the two monastic orders of which Luther and Tetzel were respectively the representa- tives. He declared that Luther was a man of genius, and refused to interfere. Even Ulrich von Hutten, at that time residing not far from Wittenberg, seems to have shared in this misapprehension, and, writing to his patron, he expresses the hope that the two contending parties may eventually tear each other to pieces.

But in the course of a few months the importance of the struggle began to be more clearly apprehended. John Eck

1 Werke, ed. 1883, i. 528.

a few of Luther's supporters recoiled. His conduct was certainly not wanting in astuteness, however genuine his enthusiasm. In 1518 he republished his theses, with addi- tions and explanations, under the title of Solutions. Like Hutten, he selected the supreme pontiff himself as the person to whom he dedicated the treatise. In the letter of dedication (the

letter above referred to) he professes to make his unqualified submission to him whom he addresses, and at the same time endeavours to exculpate himself for thus republishing the theses. N otwithstanding the popular form, the vernacular language, in which they had already appeared, they were still so encumbered with the techni- calities of the schools that he could not conceive how they could be intelligible to the laity at large ("sic edite ut

mihi incredibile sit eas ab omnibus intelligi "). He was –

therefore anxious, with the pontiff's sanction and approval, to republish them in a form less liable to misinterpretation. If, however, that sanction were withheld, he could only bow to Leo's decision as to that of God's vicegerent on earth ("vocem tuam vocem Christi in te prasidentis et loquentis agnoscam"). While Luther was thus labouring under mis- apprehension, affected or real, with respect to the kind of doctrinal teaching that was likely to find favour in Rome, it would seem that Leo himself was very imperfectly in- formed regarding the state of feeling in Germany. The conditions which moulded his political action and his personal sympathies alike tended to distract his attention from the events which had recently been occurring in Saxony. The representative of a princely house, well versed in European affairs and in questions of statecraft, gifted with more than an ordinary share of Italian subtlety and powers of dissimulation, he was well qualified to cope with the difficulties by which he found himself surrounded. But his aims, chief among which was his desire to establish lis brother Julian on the throne of Naples, were directed more to family aggrandizement than to national unity. They ran strongly counter to the growth of Spanish influ- ence, while with that stern policy which guided. the rule of Ximenes, dictated by the desire to restore medieval doctrine and discipline and to suppress heresy, he had no sympathy. The ecclesiastic was almost lost in the patron of the arts, the urbane and polished scholar and voluptuary, the admirer of wit and epigram. In politics it was his main purpose to trim the balance between France and Spain ; in church matters it was chiefly to stifle contro- versy. So indifferent was he to German affairs, and so little cognizant of the state of feeling among the people, that at the very moment when irritation at the extortion of his emissaries was at its height, and the fraudulent

nature of that extortion had been thus ably exposed by Luther, he conceived it to be a suitable time for levying a contribution throughout the empire under pretext of an expedition against the Turks. The proposal roused a spirit of opposition even among the clergy themselves ; and one of their number, a prebendary at Wiirzburg, issued a mani- festo, in the form of a pampliet, in which he roundly de- clared that the true Turks were to be found in Italy. This pamphlet fell into Luther's hands, and with the instinct of genius he recognized the opportunity afforded by such a state of feeling for an appeal to a wider audience than he had hitherto addressed. He now took his stand as the de- nouncer both of abuses in the matter of discipline and of the extortion and oppression under which his countrymen laboured. And from that day to the day of his death he filled a place in their affection and esteem to which no other of their leaders could make pretence. The turning- point in his public career is marked by his appearance at

ope.

eer OnR MATION

Augsburg before the papal legate Cajetan and his subse- quent flight from the city. In the disputation at Leipsic he could go so far as to repudiate the divine institution of the papacy and even pronounce against the infallibility of councils. He was still further confirmed in his doctrinal divergence by the influence of Melanchthon, who now began to call in question the doctrine of transubstantiation ; and Valla's Treatise on the Donation of Constantine, with which he first became acquainted in February 1520, would seem to have dispelled the last vestige of doubt in his mind with respect to the essential falsity of the claims of the papacy to temporal power. The contrast now presented by the tone and language of his writings to that of his letter to Leo, written two years before, is startling. In the month of April 1520 appeared his discourse De Libertute Chris- tiena, inveighing against the abuses of the Curia and re- ferring to Leo himself in terms of open irony. To this succeeded in the following August his appeal, written in the vernacular German, "To the Christian nobility of the German nation," wherein he frankly confesses that his reliance is upon none of the ecclesiastical orders, but upon the newly-

elected young emperor and the nobles; and he reiterates his demand for a general council,—one that shall be really free, bound by no arbitrary canons, and holding its deliberations free from papal control, This again was succeeded in the ensuing October by his treatise on The Babylonian Captinty of the Church, wherein he examines, and for the most part repudiates, the sacramental theories of the medizeval church. The cause which he advocated now began to assume genuinely European proportions. From Nuremberg came an effective tribute from the youth- ful meistersinger Hans Sachs to the " Wittenberg Night- ingale," one of the earliest efforts of his genius. Ulrich von Hutten, at length perceiving the true character of the contest, followed up the address to the German nobility by translating into the vernacular his own treatise Z'o Germans of every Class, and owing to lis persuasions the powerful and chivalrous free knight Franz von Sickingen hastened to declare himself an uncompromising supporter of the Lutheran movement. 'Together they already dis- cussed plans which included nothing less than the estab- lishment of a national church altogether independent of Rome, with the archbishop of Mainz as its primate. The danger that menaced the Roman see could now no longer be disguised ; and in June 1520 Leo fulminated his bull of excommunication against Luther. On the 8th of the following July he addressed a letter to Frederick of Saxony in which he deplores that he can no longer speak of Luther asason. He feels certain that the elector will prove loyal to the church, although he does not disguise the fact that he has heard of his friendship for the heretical leader and that the latter relies on his support. He has ordered the bull to be circulated among the nobility of Saxony, and he feels equally assured that he may reckon on their assistance in extinguishing this "incendiary conflagration." As for Luther himself, he denounces him as one who is seeking to revive the heresies of the Waldenses, the Hussites, and the Bohemians, and who, by the manner in which he has con- demned the burning of heretics, has clearly shown that he sympathizes with the Turks and aims at the destruction of the true church.!

The bull of excommunication, along with numerous volumes of the decretals, was burnt by Luther himself at Wittenberg in the following December,—a proceeding by

1 Balan, Monumenta Reformationis Lutherane (1884), pp. 1-3. This letter, published for the first time in this collection, differs entirely from that given in the Jena edition of Luther's works; and Cardinal Balan in his preface (pp. 5-10) adduces satisfactory reasons for con- cluding that the letter which he prints from an original in the archives

of the Vatican is the true letter, and that the other, if not a forgery, is a reproduction from some untrustworthy source.

ad

which he formally intimated his repudiation of the decrees and canons of the church. Such a measure necessarily roused the opposition of those learned bodies by whom the canon law was taught and elaborated, and on 21st April 1521 the university of Paris condemned as "heretical, schismatical, impious, and blasphemous" more than a hun- dred propositions extracted from Luther's writings; while, skilfully following up the line of attack indicated by the supreme pontiff, they enlarged upon the view that Luther- anism was little more than a specious reproduction of errors long ago proscribed and exploded. The university at the same time decreed that Luther's writings should be burnt ; and the sentence was subsequently carried into effect in most of the capitals of Europe. In London the ceremony was performed at Paul's Cross on the 12th May, and Bishop Fisher in his sermon on the occasion declared that Luther by burning the decretals had made it clear that he would not lave hesitated to burn the pope himself had the latter been in his power.

The Reformation in England had, however, already com- Reforma- menced, and its origin must be looked upon as in a great tion in

measure independent of the Lutheran movement; as in Germany, it had been preceded by a kindred movement, an endeavour to bring about a reform of discipline. The nation was not compelled, as in Italy, to witness the cor- ruptions of the papal court, nor were the laity equally oppressed with the people of Germany by imposts and exactions of every kind. But the unsparing extortion practised by Wolsey's agents after his appointment as legatus a latere was severely resented, and appeared all the more grievous when contrasted with that immunity from arbitrary

taxation which it was the Englishman's special boast to inherit as his birthright ; and the arbitrary pro- cedure of the ecclesiastical courts and the licentious lives of the clergy were the subjects of loud and continual com- plaint. In the ycar 1514 the notable case of Richard Hunne roused popular indignation to the highest pitch. He had been so bold as to resist what he regarded as an unjust exaction of mortuary fees, by pleading in the eccle- siastical court that the action brought against him was un- lawful by the Statute of Preemunire,—a plea which virtually raised the whole question of benefit of clergy. Hunne was committed to the Lollards' Tower and was shortly after found dead,—murdered, as it was popularly believed, by the contrivance of the chaucellor of the bishop of London. The case gave rise to a fierce legal controversy, in which the authority of an Act of Parliament was opposed by the precedents established by a decretal of the church. It was followed by the memorable trial of Dr Standish (1515), by which the question of the royal supremacy was dis- tinctly raised, and Henry himself not improbably led to conceive that theory of his legitimate authority in matters ecclesiastical which was afterwards attended with such important results. The state of discipline among the clergy at large was but little, if any, better than in Ger- many, and their addiction to secular pursuits and plea- sures, their covetousness, ambition, and licentiousness are attested not only by satirists like Roy and Skelton, but by grave and temperate censors such as Dean Colet, Arch- bishop Warham, Bishop Fisher, and Sir Thomas More, and form the subject of their earnest remonstrance and appeals for reform. Wolsey himself, than whom no states- man more clearly discerned the tendencies of the age, was especially anxious to raise the reputation of the whole body for learning and exemplary lives, and it was with this view that he founded Cardinal College (afterwards Christ Church) at Oxford, and invited some of the most promising young scholars at Cambridge to become instruc- tors within its walls.

It is also in connexion with the two universities that

RG ORY Pion

The death of Leo X. in 1521 was coincident with an im- Eventsin portant crisis in Italian history. Milan had been wrested Italy,

we meet with the first indications of a reformation of doctrine. During the years 1511-14 Erasmus had filled

1521-26.

the post of Lady Margaret professor of divinity at Cam- bridge, and the publication of his Novum Instrumentum in 1516 was directly the outcome of his labours during that period. Thomas Bilney, the martyr, a member of Trinity Hall and one of the most eminent of the Reformers, expressly attributes his conversion to the influence of Erasmus's Vew Testament. Around Bilney there gathered a little band of Cambridge scholars,— Shaxton, Crome, Skip, Rogers, Lambert, Heynes, Taverner, Parker, and others. It was their custom to meet together at an inn known by the sign of the " White Horse." In the first instance, their attention was chiefly given to the Scriptures themselves, but subsequently to the writings of Luther. The inn then began to be styled "Germany " by their enemies ; and such would appear to be the first cominencement of the Reformation in England. That commencement was illustrated by an incident which not a little resembles the better-known incident associated with the career of Luther. On the appearance of the papal proclamation of indulgences in 1517 a copy had been affixed to the gate of the common schools in the university. The same night a young Norman student, of the name of Peter de Valence, wrote over the proclamation a few Latin words denouncing the theory of indulgences as a supersti- tion. He was forthwith summoned to appear before the vice-chancellor in order to account for his conduct, and on failing to do so was formally excommunicated.

and Charles V. in his nineteenth. The English monarch, at this time both zealous and devout, was eager to give some proof of his loyalty to the Catholic Church, and had he occupied the place of Charles the career of Luther would probably have been soon arrested. The great Reformer owed his safety at this critical period mainly to the armed chivalry of Germany, which rallied ominously to his support. On no occasion was its presence more sensibly felt than at the diet of Worms (May 1521). The memorable edict (see LuTHER), signed on the same day as that on which the pope and the young emperor concluded their compact for the

reconquest of Milan from the French, marks the crown- ing triumph of the policy of Leo and Alexander. But Charles, who looked upon Luther as a means of bringing pressure to bear upon the pontiff which might prove useful in a future emergency, was determined not to surrender the bold. professor, for the present, to his enemies. To Henry, who was influenced by no such secular considera- tions, Luther's contumacy appeared to call for authorita- tive rebuke in every land; and in July 1521 he produced, in reply to the treatise on The Babylonian Captivity, his Defence of the Sacraments. The book passed rapidly through several editions, was translated into German, and, to quote the expression of Cochleus, " filled the whole Christian world with joy and admiration." Such an effort from such a quarter called for distinguished recognition. Francis was already styled the eldest son of the church. The imperial dignity presupposed a not less conspicuous fidelity. The titles of " Most Christian " or ' Most Catho- lic" could not accordingly be vouchsafed to the English monarch, He was therefore rewarded with the newly- coined title of "' Defender of the Faith." Sir Thomas More and Bishop Fisher both imitated their royal master's example by also compiling a tractate in reply to Luther; but the Reformer, in his rejoinder to the royal polemic, called its author a fool and designated him the "Pharaoh of England."

from the French by the allied papal and imperial forces, and the realization of that scheme of national unity and independence for which he and his predecessor had laboured seemed no longer a dream of the future.' In the midst of his exultation—partly, it is said, as the result of it —Leo died, and seldom in the annals of the papacy had an elec- tion to the office been attended with equal interest and excitement. Wolsey eventually was out-manceuvred by the imperial party, and the emperor's former preceptor, the irreproachable, austere, and rigidly devout Adrian (VI.) of Utrecht (1522-1523) succeeded to'the papal chair. After a few months' tenure of the office he too gave place to another, and the house of Medici was again represented in the person of Clement VIT. (1523-1534). In this election Wolsey was again a candidate, and a second time he had reason to believe that he owed his defeat to the emperor, an injury which he never forgave. In not a few respects Clement was admirably qualified to cope with the diff- culties by which he found himself surrounded. He had been at once the most trusted and the ablest of Leo's

advisers ; his attainments and experience were such as in every way corresponded to the requirements of his office, for, while well versed in philosophy and theology, he had also mastered the political and ecclesiastical questions of the day, and his clear perception enabled him to grasp the essential features of his policy with remarkable skill and promptitude. His position, however, was one of extreme

Henry In the month of January 1519 the enrperor Maximilian I. | perplexity, alike in its diplomatic and its theological rela- VIll., died, and the imperial dignity, declined by Frederick of | tions. To no power had he and his house rendered greater Se Saxony, descended to Charles V. Of the three monarchs | services than to Spain; ever since, indeed, the pontificate Charles Who had aspired to this supreme honour Henry VIII. was | of Alexander VL, the papacy had, often without designing V. now in his twenty-ninth year, Francis I. in his twenty-sixth, | it, been the instrument of imperial aggrandizement. With

the accession of Clement, however, these relations are to be seen assuming a new phase. The election of Charles V. as emperor awoke in the proud representative of the great house of the Medici the sense of a new danger ; and the prospect of Milan, Naples, and the empire being concentrated in a single hand was one which no Italian potentate could be expected to contemplate with equa- nimity. The retreat of Bourbon from Italy, on the other hand, had caused the Curia to look with altered sentiments on the policy of France ; and if Clement's advice and good wishes could have availed aught the great disaster at Pavia would have been averted. The emperor was far from unaware how little he had throughout been indebted to Clement's good offices, and before he led his army into Italy had been heard to avow his intention of avenging himself 'on that poltroon the pope." "Some day or other," he added, "perhaps Martin Luther may become aman of worth." The battle of Pavia (February 1525) followed, and its results seemed to threaten the overthrow of that balance of power which it was the aim of the chief leaders of the new nationalities to maintain ; both Wolsey and Clement VII. alike now regarded with dismay the proportions which the power of Spain was assuming. "It is no trivial question, no single state, that is concerned in the coming contest," exclaimed Clement's minister; "this

war will decide the freedom or the eternal slavery of Italy." In July 1526 the papal troops had already entered Lombardy.

Such were the circumstances under which the Clement- ine League (22d May 1526) was formed, with the general assent of the Italian states, but with the usual disregard of the state of opinion north of the Alps. But it was hardly reasonable to expect that Ferdinand of Austria would be solicitous to uphold the papal interests in Germany when the imperial interests were being thus vigorously assailed in Italy. Three months before, the sanction of the

Charles V.'s in- vasion of Italy.

REFORMATION

emperor had been given to the publication of certain ' pro- visions" in matters of faith which had filled the Lutheran party with alarm. At Gotha and again at Torgau the Protestant leaders began to concert measures for actively repelling the policy of coercion which they anticipated would shortly be commenced. When, however, the diet assembled at Spires in June they found their apprehen- sions dispelled in an unexpected manner by the newly- aroused animosity towards the Roman pontiff and his policy. Never had the electors shown themselves more unanimous in counsel or submitted with better grace to the- contributions imposed upon them. It was even pro- posed that the recently issued provisions should be publicly burnt and the Bible adopted as the only rule of faith. However, it was finally resolved that the respective states should be declared to be at full liberty, in relation to all questions of belief raised by the edict of Worms (see Louruer), 'to conduct themselves as each should here- after be ready to answer for towards God and the emperor," —terms which virtually implied permission to proceed ac- cording to their own discretion. "Such an enactment," ob- serves Ranke, '"' containing as it does no mention whatever of the supreme pontiff, may be looked upon as the com- mencement of the Reformation properly so called, involving, in fact, the institution of a new church in Germany."

The effects of the concurrent action of religious and national sentiment thus brought about were soon to receive a memorable illustration in Italy.

The soldiers who made their way under the leadership of Frondsberg, Ferdinand's lieutenant, across the Alps, in the snows of November 1526, into the plains of Lombardy, and afterwards mingled with the Spanish forces which Bourbon led on to the assault on Rome, were almost entirely avowed supporters of Luther's cause and full of fierce hatred of popery. Fronds- berg himself loudly declared that as soon as he had taken Rome he would hang the pope. The Spaniards, notwith- standing their unshaken devotion to Catholicism, entered the city burning with the spirit of national antipathy, and eager to revenge the long series of wrongs and exactions which their countrymen had suffered at the hands of Italian ecclesiastics. Among the horrors which followed upon the capture of the capital (May 1527) nothing more completely shocked the sense of Latin Christendom than the savage contempt manifested by the German soldiery for everything that symbolized the Roman faith, their wanton destruction of relics and images, mock religious services, and especial brutality in the treatment of priests. Even their Spanish confederates, though equally merciless in their excesses, looked on with indignation as they saw them disguising themselves as cardinals and holding a mock consistory under the windows of St Angelo for the purpose of elect- ing Luther as pope. But even the impressions thus pro- duced were evanescent when compared with the constantly renewed and unavailing regret which filled the breast of the scholar and the churchman in after years, as he realized the irreparable losses inflicted upon art and learning, the destruction of unique manuscripts and ancient records. Nor can it be a matter of surprise that a sentiment of deep revenge should have arisen in Rome against the Lutheran destroyer, and that even the Swabian and the Spanish invader alike should have afterwards been solicit- ous in a manner to disguise their own responsibility, by professing to look upon the blow thus struck at the sanctity and inviolability of the sacred city as a direct judgment of God. For a time, though only for a few months, it was believed, even by politicians so shrewd and well informed as Wolsey, that the emperor himself was designing to aid the Reformation. The approach of the Turks, who had overrun Hungary, and the hostility of France demon- strated the urgent necessity of maintaining concord among

his subjects in the empire ; and it is possible that he may really have contemplated placing himself at the head of the Lutheran movement and keeping Clement VII. per- manently a prisoner at Gaeta. But his Spanish blood, his education under Adrian of Utrecht, and the traditions of the imperial dignity proved too powerful a counterpoise, and Charles eventually not only deigned to lay before the courts of Europe a partial explanation and apology for the tragedy at Rome, but in a treaty (26th November 1527) with the pontiff he entered upon an agreement for the adoption of a distinct anti-Reformation policy. It has been asserted that Clement also undertook on this occasion not to declare the marriage of Henry VIII. and Catherine illegal, but no such stipulation appears in the existing treaty.

In pursuance of his anti-imperial policy Wolsey did Wolsey's not fail to seek to turn to the best account the sensation Policy.

caused by the triumph of the imperial arms. He enjoined the observance of a three days' fast and the offering up of prayers in every church in England for the captive pontiff's deliverance. He could not, however, but be conscious that his policy was regarded with but little favour by the nation at large. The young emperor was highly popular among the citizens of London, and the ancient amicable relations with the house of Burgundy and the actual important commercial relations with Flan- ders combined to render Spain in the eyes of Englishmen their natural ally, while France they still regarded as their hereditary foe. An expedient to which he had recourse about this time only-served still further to fan this feeling. He had sought to render France, instead of the Low Countries, the main channel of the commerce between England and the Continent by making Calais the chief port for merchandise. The merchants of the Hanse towns took alarm; and, as it was in their vessels that Luther's writings, which were now eagerly purchased in England, even at exorbitant prices, chiefly found their way across the Channel, the preachers of the Reformation found no difficulty in representing to their countrymen that an Anglo-French alliance could not fail to prove inimical to the gospel. On the other hand, the Catholic party both in England and in Germany, as soon as the project of the divorce became noised abroad, could not but recognize in Catherine the representative of

the interests of the true church, while they looked upon the emperor as her champion, and upon Wolsey as a traitor to the cause of truth and justice. During the last five years the cardinal's efforts to reform the clergy and repress the Reformation in England had been strenuous and constant. In the year 1521 he had enjoined all the bishops "to take order that any books, written or printed, of Martin Luther's heresies and errors should be brought in to the bishop of each diocese."1 The movement at Cambridge continued, however, to progress, and in 1523 some of the bishops suggested the appointment of a visita- tion to the university "for trying who were the fautors of heresy there." This proposition was not acted upon by Wolsey, who probably in his heart sympathized with the genuine spirit of learning developing in the university, and the matter was subsequently made the ground of an accusation against him by his enemies.2_ We find, accord- ingly, George Stafford, a member of Pembroke Hall, venturing in the following year to adopt the example set by Luther, of taking the Scriptures themselves, instead of the Sentences of Peter Lombard (the theological text- book of the universities), as the 'basis of a course of divinity lectures. In the following year William Tyndal published at Antwerp the first edition of his translation 1 Strype, Memorials, i. 56. 2 Burnet, Hist. of the Reform., ed. Pocock, i. 70. XX. — 42

of the New Testament, and in 1526 we hear of its intro- duction into Oxford by Thomas Garret, and of the volume being burnt at Paul's Cross. On 27th November 1527 Bilney and Arthur were examined at the Chapter House at Westminster before Wolsey and other ecclesiastics, as to whether they had preached or taught to the people the opinions of Luther or any others condemned by the church. seaports and commercial towns of the eastern counties, such as Yarmouth, Harwich, and Norwich, the university would appear to have become familiarized with the Lutheran doctrines much sooner than Oxford. From 3d July to 20th September 1527 Wolsey was in France, intent on bringing about the marriage of

Princess Mary with the duke of Orleans, and on gaining the support of Francis in the matter of the royal divorce.

Henry himself had at this time fully resolved to carry the latter project into effect, and the doubts raised with respect to the validity of his marriage and the legitimacy of Mary cannot be regarded as anything more than official formalities, designed to give a veil of decency to his real purpose. While in France Wolsey learned from Flanders that the emperor had become apprised of Henry's real intentions, and he himself now proceeded (to quote his own words) to employ "all possible ways and practices for the obtaining of the pope's consent." Unfortunately for the success of his efforts, Henry at this juncture con- ceived the design of sending another agent to Rome, to act altogether independently of Wolsey, and charged to procure, not only the appointment of a commission em- powered to dissolve the marriage with Catherine, but also a dispensation removing all obstacles to the king's second marriage with Anne Boleyn. Clement was still a prisoner in the castle of St Angelo, but on the evening of the 9th December 1527, disguised in a blouse and carrying a basket and an empty sack on his back, he effected his escape, and with the assistance of a guide arrived the next morning at Orvieto. From that day his resolve was probably definitively taken, and, notwithstanding his previous promises and his subsequent apparent conces- sions, he would seem to have been firmly resolved not to grant his consent to a measure deeply humiliating to him- self and certain to expose him to the full brunt of the emperor's resentment. But at Orvieto Henry's delegate, Knight, although untrained and ill qualified for the task of a diplomatist, obtained both a commission and a dispensa- tion, which, however, on his reaching England, were both found to be worthless, owing to designed non- observance of the necessary technicalities. In the following year Foxe and Gardiner were despatched on a like errand. The latter was far better suited for the work than Knight; and he did not scruple to threaten the trembling pontiff with the complete withdrawal of Henry's support, and to predict as the inevitable consequence the collapse of the already tottering apostolic see,—a result which, he de- clared, "' would be attended by the applause and satisfac- tion of the whole world." By such menaces Clement was eventually induced again to grant a commission and a dispensation. A decretal bull, formally annulling Henry's first marriage,

was handed to Campeggio, which he was instructed to show to the king and then to destroy. But in the meantime the celebrated brief executed by Julius IT., in which the dispensation for Henry's first marriage was re-enacted in more precise and unqualified terms, was discovered in the Spanish archives. It was sought to show that the brief was a forgery, but to this view of the matter Clement altogether refused to assent. At length, however, in May 1529 the legate proceeded to open his court at Westminster. The courageous conduct of Catherine put honourable men to shame; and no

Owing to the proximity of Cambridge to the-

REFORMATION

slight impression was produced by Bishop Fisher's heroic declaration of his willingness to stake his life that her marriage with the king was perfectly valid. Campeggio, under various pretexts, still hesitated and delayed. In July the news of the peace of Cambray arrived, and it was known that the influence of the emperor would hence- forth be paramount in Italy, while it was believed that the projected marriage between the French monarch and the sister of the emperor augured a durable peace between the empire and France. Then the legate adjourned the court and the pontiff revoked the cause to Rome. All around Wolsey saw the plans which he had laid with so much toil and skill breaking up, and on him the royal displeasure vented itself. He died 30th November 1530, a victim to the wanton caprice of one whom he had served only too faithfully, and with him the ablest supporter of papal influence and the most formidable opponent of Reformation principles in England disappeared.

Henry would not condescend to appear before a Roman court, and as a last expedient it was proposed that the question of the legality of his first marriage should be submitted to the learned bodies, the universities and emi- nent canonists of Europe. This scheme had already been recommended by the episcopal bench, but to Cranmer's ingenuity is attributed the further suggestion that the opinion thus obtained should be carried into effect by a court convened in England. Commissioners, among whom Richard Croke appears as the most conspicuous and in-

defatigable, were accordingly despatched on the proposed errand. The means to which they had recourse in order to obtain opinions such as their royal employer desired are plainly described by a contemporary writer, who says that 'there was inestimable sums of money given to the famous clerks to choke them, and in especial to such as had the governance and custody of their universities' seals."1 The evidence more recently brought to light enables us to accept this statement as substantially correct.? The unpopularity of the divorce among the nation at large was especially shown at the two universities, where the junior members made demonstrations of the greatest dis- satisfaction, while their seniors were mostly bribed or in- timidated into acquiescence by the royal agents ; nor could the authorities at either Oxford or Cambridge disguise the fact that they found themselves at variance with the feeling of the country at large.

It is at this juncture that Cranmer assumes a foremost Cranmer.

place as a leader of the English Reformation. He had written in defence of the divorce, and had taken a part in embassies sent by Henry to treat on the question with the emperor and the pope; and Clement had shown his sense of the value of his influence by appointing him to the lucrative post of grand penitentiary for England, in the hope of winning him over to the papal interests. Cranmer's whole policy, however, had been directly opposed to that of Wolsey. He had used his best efforts to con- firm the commercial relations with the Netherlands, and had superintended the negotiation of a commercial treaty between that country and England. He had resided for some months in Germany, and while there had married Margaret, the daughter of Andrew Osiander, a distin- guished preacher and leader of the Lutheran party at Nuremberg. From Germany he was now summoned back to England to become the successor of Warham, the pri- mate, who had died in August 1532. As there had as yet been no formal rupture with the see of Rome, it became necessary for him to apply to Clement for the customary bull of consecration, and also for his pallium as metro-

1 Cavendish, Life of Wolsey, ed. Singer, p. 206. 2 See Croke's and other letters in Records of the Reformation, ed. Pocock, Nos. xcix.-cxxvi.,

exxviii.~~cxlvi., clvii.~~ eciii,

REFORMATION

politan, and on receiving these it was also requisite that he should take the oaths of canonical obedience and sub- jection to the Roman pontiff. His conduct in this dilemma has been generally regarded as indefensible. In order to

ool While such was the progress of events in England and in Political Germany there had been going on in Switzerland a corre- condi-

sponding movement, second only in importance to that tion of

initiated by Luther. 'The political relations of the Swiss py"

show that he disclaimed the right of the pontiff to nomi- nate to ecclesiastical offices in England, he surrendered the several bulls, eleven in number, into Henry's hands ; and, having done this, he took the usual oath of obedience to the see of Rome.! Before doing so, however, he made a protestation to the effect that he did not intend thereby to bind himself to do anything contrary to the laws of God, the king's prerogative, or the commonwealth and statutes of the kingdom. On 23d May 1533 he proceeded, as archbishop and legate of the apostolic see, to pronounce the king's marriage with Catherine of Aragon null and void ab initio, as contrary to the divine law; and five days later he gave judicial confirmation to the royal marriage with Anne Boleyn. In the following year (23d Mareli 1534) Clement rejoined by a manifesto declaring the validity of the first marriage, and calling upon Henry to take back his first wife and to observe "a perpetual silence" in relation to the question for the future.2 This decisive step was mainly the result of the parliamentary action that had in the meantime been going on. The parliament of 1529 had in various ways limited the privi- leges of the. clergy, and by the Act 21 Hen. VIII. c. 13 had deprived them of the power of holding pluralities by virtue of licences obtained from Rome for money. Fisher, from his place in the House of Lords, vainly sought to combat these reforms by declaring that Lutheranism was spreading in the nation and by reminding his audience of Germany and Bohemia and the miseries that had already

befallen those countries. The allusion to the Lutheran inovement appears to have been, indeed, singularly inju- dicious, and there can be no doubt that at this period it was the aim not only of the king but of the bishops to dissociate the Reformation movement in England from the movement that was in progress in Germany. As yet the repudiation of the papal supremacy and a reform in matters of discipline were all that was contemplated either hy the crown or the parliament. In 1531 appeared a pro- clamation making it penal to introduce bulls from Rome, and this was shortly followed by an Act visiting with severe penalties all who should be found going about the country for the purpose of carrying on the sale of indul- gences ; while under the famous Statute of Premunire the whole body of the clergy were convicted of having recog- nized the validity of Wolsey's acts as papal legate, and thereby placed both their liberties and their possessions at the mercy of the king. In April 1533 there followed the Act providing that all causes should henceforth be tried in the courts of the kingdom, and forbidding appeals to Rome under any circumstances whatever,—the body "now being usually called the English Church" being held "sufficient and meet of itself to declare and deter- mine all such doubts and duties as to their rooms [7.e., offices] spiritual doth appertain." These successive enact- nents had already paved the way for Henry's final rejoinder to Clement's demands,—the Act of Supremacy (November 1534), whereby the king was not only declared to be supreme head of the Church of England, but was at the same time invested with full power "to repress and amend all such errors and heresies as, by any manner of spiritual jurisdiction, might and ought to be lawfully reformed."

1 It should, however, be noted that Cranmer's oath as metropolitan contained the clause "salvo ordine meo," and this clause might prob- ably, in the judgment of canonists, render his subsequent reservation more defensible. See Sarum Pontifical in Camb. Univ. Lib. (Mm. iii. 21); Maskell, Afonumenta Ritualia, ii. 817; Strype, Memorials of Cranmer, App. No. VI.

2 Records of the Reformation, ii. 532.

confederation at this period exercised a very appreciable influence over the whole course of the Reformation. With the commencement of the century the cantons had already reached the nuinber of thirteen; and the confederates, in combination with the Leaguers, represented Italian as well as German interests. In great crises they were not incapable of presenting a combined front to the common foe; but more generally they were divided by political jealousies and differences, while the majority of the men in each canton were mere military adventurers, ready to serve under the banner of the empire, France, the pope, or the duke of Milan, according as the one or the other power seemed likely best to reward their services. An important change in the ecclesiastical relations of the cantons had recently brought them into closer connexion with Rome. 'The six bishoprics into which Switzerland was divided—Lausanne, Sion (Sitten), Como, Basel, Chur, and Constance—had formerly been severally subject to the metropolitan jurisdiction of Mainz, Besancon, and Milan. But this jurisdiction had been superseded by the creation of the nunciatures, whereby each bishopric was brought into direct connexion with the papal see. The nuncios often exercised a potent influence on the political relations of the confederates. They negotiated with large bodies of Switzers the conditions of military service under the pope; they directed the traffic in indulgences; and they watched with especial jealousy the first appearance of schism. 'The experience, however, of those of the confederates who accepted military service in Italy did not serve to increase their reverence for the Curia and its aims. They carried back with them to their homes a contempt for the whole administration of the Roman see and its dependencies which communicated itself to their country- men, and at no centres were opinions adverse to Catho- licism now spreading more rapidly than at Zurich, Bern, and Basel.

Born in the same year as his brother Reformer, Ulrich Zwingli.

Zwingli was scarcely less distinguished by commanding powers, devotion to study, and a yet more notable devo- tion to truth; but in the enlightened tolerance which marked his whole career we recognize the contrast between his early associations and those which nurtured the somewhat narrow though fervid patriotism of Luther. The latter, in the retirement of his monastic cell, had pondered over the profound speculations of

Augustine, the imaginative subtleties of De Lyra, and the mysticism of Tauler. The other, at the universities of Vienna and Basel, had become familiarized with classic models, and his genius had gained a brighter inspiration from converse with the masterpieces of antiquity. It was in connexion with the church at Glarus that Zwingli first assumed the discharge of pastoral duties. It was characteristic of his true and discerning patriotic feeling that he strongly dis- approved of the acceptance of mercenary service by lus countrymen, and more especially of the service of France, and his outspoken sentiments on the subject eventually rendered it necessary for him to quit Glarus for Einsiedeln. Here he was for a short time in receipt of a pension from the pope and was generally regarded as a supporter of Catholic institutions. In conjunction with the abbot of Einsiedeln he aimed, however, at the development of a less superstitious spirit among both the clergy and the laity, who resorted in great numbers to the monastery (a noted centre for pilgrimages). It was here that he formed the acquaintance of one of the most eminent of the Re- formers, Oswald Geisshiusler (better known as Myconius),

BBY and through his friend's influence received in 1518 an invitation to settle in Zurich as the parish priest of the cathedral in that city. Here he at once began to discard the traditional mode of exposition which limited the preacher to certain prescribed sections of the Bible, and commenced instead a connected series of lectures on the New Testament. In the course of four years he thus completed a course of sermons on the whole of that portion of the Bible. This innovation, peculiar to the Reformed Church, was never adopted by Luther, although followed by most of the theologians of Switzerland and the upper Rhineland. It was in the year 1519 that Zwingli first became acquainted with Luther's carly treatises ; but his own views appear to have been formed quite independently of these. Shortly after his arrival in Zurich the Fran- ciscan Bernardin Samson visited the city on a like mis- sion to that of Tetzel and encountered in Zwingli another Luther. The grossness of the system of indulgences was so ably exposed by Zwingli that he carried nearly all who heard him with him, and Samson was obliged to return to Italy before his mission was fully accomplished. Even Faber, afterwards the opponent of Zwingli, could not but express to the latter his satisfaction at the result.

Gradu- ally the voice of the Reformer was heard uplifted against other medieval superstitions and especially against Mari- olatry ; his fame as a preacher rapidly spread, and he became known as one of the chief leaders of opinion in Zurich. The state of morality in the city was, however, exceedingly low, and he not only had to encounter con- siderable opposition but was repeatedly exposed to charges of heresy. Nevertheless the conviction which he produced among the more influential citizens of the truth of the tenets which he advocated was such that in the year 1520 an order was issued by the city council to the effect that all ministers should in future ground their discourses on the New Testament, "and prove their doctrine from the Bible alone, discarding all innovations and human inven- tions." While meeting with opposition in one direction, he was compelled himself to oppose the zeal of fanaticism in another. As at Wittenberg, an iconoclastic spirit had begun to manifest itself, and the question of the lawfulness of images in churches was warmly debated. In the months of January and October 1523 two conferences of the clergy and laity assembled in Zurich, in the course of which Zwingli put forth sixty-seven propositions, involving con- clusions adverse to the teaching and practice of the medi- eval church. Among those who took part in the discus- sions were Faber, Meyer of Bern, Hofmeister, and Conrad Schmidt of Kiissnacht, Knight Commander of the Order of St John, a man of eminent character and ability. Schmidt endeavoured, although in a temperate and rational manner, to defend the custom of placing images in the churches, but after a warm discussion Zwingli ultimately decided for their abolition. In the yet more important discussion that followed, with respect to the true nature and significance of the mass, whether it was to be regarded as of the nature of a sacrifice or simply as a commemorative ordinance, he expressed himself in favour of the latter interpretation. The issues raised by the sixty-seven propositions extended considerably in their scope beyond all that Luther had as yet advanced ; and, as at Leipsic, it was soon discovered that the two contending parties were divided by an insuper- able difference with respect to the authority 'which they were disposed to accept as final,—the one party grounding their arguments solely on the Scriptures, the other on the councils and the fathers. It may be noted, as an illustra- tion of the extremely low status of the inferior clergy of the country at this period, that, in replying to

Zwingli's demand for an intelligent and systematic study of the Scriptures by all pastors, it was urged as an objection that

Re PORWR Tl. fs

many pastors might be unable to afford to purchase a copy

of the Bible for their own use! Another notable theory supported by Zwingli was that known at a later period as Erastianism, according to which the authorities of thechurch

were to be held to be ultimately amenable to the jurisdic-

tion of the civil power. At his instance the church at Zurich next proceeded to repudiate the control both of the bishop of Constance and of the papal nuncio, constituting itself (1524) a separate ecclesiastical body, the supreine authority over which was vested in the magistrates of the

city. In the public services the Latin liturgy and the Gregorian chant were set aside for a German prayer-book

and German singing. The rite of baptism was made more simple,—the ceremony of exorcism on which the Lutheran Church continued long after to insist being altogether dis- carded. In the year 1525 Zwingli published a more sys- tematic exposition of his tenets in his best-known work,

his Commentary on True and False Religion, which he dedicated to Francis I. His conception of the sacraments

and of original sin as here unfolded separates him still further from the doctrine of the medieval church, while

in his remarkable catholicity of belief in regard to salva-

tion he much resembles some of the early Greek fathers.

Like Clement and Origen, he believed in the final happi-

ness of the good and wise, including the good and wise of pagan antiquity; nor did he hesitate to express his con- viction that Socrates was a better and wiser man than any Dominican or Franciscan of his own day. On the other hand, he upheld the doctrine of predestination in its most

rigid form, that afterwards known as "supralapsarian"

(see PREDESTINATION).

In no country was the Reformation so closely associated Reforma- with political feeling as in Switzerland ; and its upholders, tion amid surrounding despotisms, were advocates of republican Sa institutions. Zwingli and his followers looked on with ~~ shame and sorrow as they saw their countrymen hastening

to cross the Alps to become the mercenaries of the pope. With no less sense of humiliation did they regard the venal spirit of their public officials stooping to become the pensioners of the French court. The progress of these

new opinions was, as is usually the case, much more rapid

in the large towns than in the more rural and moun- tainous regions. At Bern they were ably upheld by Anshelm, the historiographer of the city, and by Sebastian Meyer, and Haller; in the free city of Basel he had for

his followers Cicolampadius and William Farel; and already in 1527 Conrad Pellicanus, afterwards his zealous follower, had conceived that admiration of his character

and tenets which was attended by such important results. Wyttenbach, Zwingli's former preceptor, sustained his teaching in Biel, Joachim von Watt in St Gall, Biirgh, Blasius, and Dorfmann among the Grisons. In the cantons

of Schwyz, Uri, Unterwalden, Lucerne, and Zug, on the other hand, the new doctrines found strenuous opposition ;

and the simple mountaineers listened with unfeigned sorrow and indignation when they heard that it was pro- posed to abolish pilgrimages, such as those to the field of Morgarten and the chapel of Tell, and to dispense with those priestly virtues of celibacy and fasting which so greatly enhanced their filial reverence for their village pastor. Another and yet more serious obstacle, which Contro- threatened to place the whole movement in peril, was that versies presented by the differences of belief which now began to : rise among the Protestants themselves. Foremost among j these points of difference was that respecting the Eucharist, —the theory which Zwingli maintained being assailed with peculiar acrimony and vehemence by Luther. Political feeling added not a little to the animosity of that attack. Difficult as it may seem to associate the efforts of one who

did so much for intellectual freedom with tyranny and

coercion, it is certain that Luther's influence after the year 1523 was not favourable to the political liberties of his countrymen. In that year both Sickingen and Hutten were removed by death, the victims of a policy to which Luther was always strenuously opposed,—the endeavour to enforce the redress of political and ecclesiastical griev- ances by recourse to arms. The iconoclastic ardour of Karlstadt and the fanaticism of Miinzer alarmed him be- yond measure, and he regarded with the most genuine distrust the spread of their influence among the peasantry. The sequel justified his alarm. Ground between the exac- tions of the agents of the church on the one hand and the oppression of the nobles on the other, the peasants rose at last in fierce rebellion. No such insurrection, so wide-spread, so sanguinary, and so ruthless in its vengeance, had ever before disquieted Germany as that which marked the close of the year 1524. The part played by Luther in relation to that gloomy episode will always be a matter for dispute among critics of different schools. To some he appears as lending his great influence to crush the efforts of down-trodden classes driven to desperation by in- tolerable oppression, to others as the champion of law and order against lawless miscreants intent on revolutionizing both church and state. Luther himself considered that

loyalty to the emperor and to the civil authority was a primary duty, and that questions of religious reform should never be suffered to affect the citizen's fidelity to his politi- cal obligations. He probably held that his views were justified by the sequel ; but they were not shared by Ulrich von Hutten nor by Zwingli, who both maintained that the popedom and the empire were too closely associated to make it possible to attack the one without: also attacking the other.!_ The sacramental controversy runs parallel with the history of the Peasants' War, and it unfortunately hap- pened that the theory of the Eucharist maintained by Zwingli was the same as that upheld by Karlstadt, whose iconoclastic successes at Wittenberg .had made him an object of especial dislike to Luther. It was in vain, therefore, that G&colampadius and Martin Bucer sought to mediate between the two parties. Luther, to whose view the republican doctrines and the sacramental theory advocated by Zwingli appeared closely associated, believed he saw in the latter only a second Karlstadt ; and he was thus led to assail him and his followers with an amount of coarse ridicule altogether unbecoming both the subject and the occasion. Zwingli replied in much more temperate fashion, but he did not hesitate to assert that the doctrine which Luther maintained was identical with that taught by the Church of Rome.? To this Luther rephed in his tractate entitled Bekenntniss vom Abendmahl Christi (1528). This pamphlet warfare only served, however, to embitter the relations of the two parties ; and, although the reaction- ary sentiments evinced by several of the princes at the second diet of Spires (15th March 1529) gave significant warning of the necessity for union and concord among the whole body of the Reformers, it was distinctly foreseen that the conference convened at Marburg a month later was not likely to lead to any healing of the schism (LUTHER). The excellent intentions of the landgrave of Hesse in con- vening the conference were altogether frustrated. The moral effect was, however, distinctly favourable to Zwingli. His demeanour towards his opponent had throughout been conciliatory and fraternal, while that of Luther had been of a different character. Although fourteen articles, em- bracing the most important tenets of the Christian faith, had been agreed upon almost without discussion, he could not regard as a brother the man who differed from him on the obscure and doubtful doctrine embodied in the fifteenth 1 See Ranke's Deutsche Geschichte, iv. 107. 2 Deutsche Schriften, iii. 16.

article. This intolerance, a sinister omen for the future of the Reformation movement, produced an unfavourable impression on the iminds of not a few with respect to Luther's moderation, and caused them subsequently to espouse the side of Zwingli, among their number being the landgrave Philip and Francis Lambert. The former, indeed, did not altogether despair of yet bringing about an alliance between the two parties, and was especially desirous of prevailing upon the Evangelical party (as the Lutherans now began to be called) to adinit the congrega- tions at Ulm and Strasburg into their communion. With this design he caused the congress of Schmalkald to be convened on the 29th of November, an earlier date than that originally intended. His friendly purpose was, how- ever, again frustrated ; and it soon became evident that the elements of difference between Luther 4nd Zwingli— the reluctance of the former to engage in any line of action which might involve an appeal to arnis, and the patriotic spirit of the other, which led him to look upon the assertion of political freedom as itself a Christian duty. which it would be moral cowardice to evade—were such as it was hopeless to compose.

Such were the circumstances under which the einperor, Imperial temporarily freed from graver political anxieties by the policy.

treaty of Cambray, convened the diet of Augsburg; and on the 25th June 1530 the able and generally temperate ex- position of the Protestant faith drawn up by Melanchthon, known as the Confession of Augsburg, was read before the assembly and the people. The Catholic reply, composed by Eck and other theologians, was then presented, and finally the Reformers were called upon to renounce their distinctive tenets and return to their ancient faith. They were at the same time required to arrive at a formal decision within a stated period; and on the 13th of August the Evangelical princes notified to the emperor their inability

to comply with his command. On the 29th of the follow- League

ing March, at a third congress, convened at Schmalkald, they formed themselves into the memorable League, where- by each party to the compact pledged himself to the following agreement: 'As soon as any one

of them should be attacked for the gospel's sake, or on account of any matter resulting from adherence to the gospel, all should at once proceed to the rescue of the party thus assailed, and aid him to the utmost of their ability." It was like- wise resolved steadfastly to oppose the assembling of any council which was uot summoned independently of the pope or was not in its composition fairly representative of the whole church. In the meantime the efforts made further to define doctrine had been attended with the usual, it might be said the inevitable, results. The tenth article of the Augsburg Confession had been rigorously formulated so as not merely to exclude the Zwinglian theory of the Lord's Supper but also to involve in censure any interpretation that deviated, however slightly, from that laid down by Luther himself. A certain section of the Evangelicals declined, accordingly, to sign the Con- fession, and the four cities of Strasburg, Constance, Mem- mingen, and Lindau shortly after drew up and submitted to the diet another confession, known as the Confessio Tetrapolitana,—the coniposition mainly of Bucer and Hedio. In this the influence of the Zwinglian party so far prevailed that the adoration of images, a point on which the Augsburg Confession had been silent, was specifically condemned. The four cities were, however, admitted to the League of Schmalkald in 1531. Other circumstances temporarily strengthened the hands of the Leaguers. The emperor had formed the design of raising his brother Ferdinand, king of Bohemia and Hungary, to the dignity of "king of the Romans"; but the project roused the jealousy of the house of Bavaria, and the

Contest in Swit- zerland.

Progress in Ger- many.

304

reigning duke entered into a treaty with the Protestant League. 'Treaties were about the same time made with France and Denmark, and it was evident that the new confederation would be able to oppose a resistance which even the resources of the empire might not be able to overcome. At this juncture another circumstance formed an appreciable element in the imperial calculations. All attempts at arriving at an understanding with the Turks had proved without result, and Solyman's invasion of Hungary

was imminent. At the advice of his brother, Charles accordingly condescended to treat with the mem- bers of the League, and in July 1532 the religious peace of Nuremberg afforded a temporary compromise, which it was provided should remain in force until a general council, of the character demanded by the Lutherans, was con- vened, or until the assembling of a new diet of the states of the empire. In the meantime the Lutherans were to be free from molestation and to be permitted to preach and publish the doctrines of the Confession of Augsburg. They were also to be left in possession of such church property as they still retained, and the jurisdiction of the courts of the empire in ecclesiastical questions was to be suspended. In return for these concessions the Leaguers pledged themselves to be loyal to the emperor, and to render aid both with money and men in the event of an invasion by the Turks. They likewise undertook not to afford protection either to the Anabaptists or to the followers of Zwingli.

The great leader of the Reformation in Switzerland was at this time no more. In the year 1531 the feud between the Catholic and Protestant cantons had reached a climax; in the former the more bigoted section, aided by Ferdinand of Austria, had commenced an active persecution, and some of the Protestant preachers had been put to death. In order to repel these aggressions a league was formed between Zurich, Strasburg, and the landgrave of Hesse, and Zwingli strongly advised that a combined attack should forthwith be made on their opponents in Lucerne and Schwyz, and freedom of conscience obtained by an armed denionstration. Divided counsels, however, pre- vailed ; and eventually Zurich was left to bear the brunt of the contest almost entirely alone. At the battle of Cappel (11th October 1531) Zwingli fell, and his followers sustained a defeat which, although they carried on a war of fierce retaliation, they were unable to retrieve, and a decided reaction in favour of Catholicism now set in. The death of CEcolampadius took place soon after the battle of Cappel, and was followed in 1535 by that of Francis Kolb, the Bernese Reformer. The heroic end of AZwingli was a matter of exultation not only to his Catho- lic antagonists but even to Luther, who was ungenerous enough to class his brother Reformer with lawless fanatics like Miinzer,! and in a letter written in the following year even went so far as to warn

Duke Albert of Prussia not to tolerate the followers of Zwingli within his territories.?

In Germany, on the other hand, the Reformation con- tinued to progress. In 1533 Philip of Hesse, who was subsidized by France, inflicted a severe defeat on Ferdi- nand, and was able shortly after to reinstate Ulrich, duke of Wiirtemberg, in his dominions, The emperor at the peace of Kadan (29th June 1534) undertook to abstain from further interference in the ecclesiastical affairs of the duchy, and the understanding arrived at on that occasion is regarded by Ranke as marking the second important stage in the history of the Reformation in Germany. The Reformed faith was forthwith established throughout Wiirt- emberg, and soon after was introduced into Holstein, Pomerania, the Mark of Brandenburg, Upper Saxony,

1 De Wette, Letters, iv. Nos. 1429, 1430. 2 7b., No. 1445,

REP OR sR a2 TiO

Brunswick, and the Palatinate. The League of Schmal- kald was thus strengthened by numerous and powerful accessions ; among the number was King Francis himself, who, although he was repressing the Reformation move- ment with severity in his own dominions, saw his advan- tage in siding with the Protestant princes against lis chief enemy, the emperor. Henry VIII. declared himself also a supporter of the League. The city of Basel had already in 1534 put forth, independently, a new confession of faith, and this was followed in 1536 by a second, which received the approval of Luther and became known as the "first Helvetic confession." In order, however, still further to unite the Protestant party, with a view to a general council, Luther, in conjunction with other theologians from Saxony, Swabia, and Hesse, drew up and transmitted to the Lutheran representatives at Schmalkald in February 1537 another confession. In this the doctrines contained in the Confession of Augsburg were reiterated, but in a far more uncompromising form. Luther denounced the pope as Antichrist and the mass as an abomination. Melanchthon declared himself unable to concur in this language, and in an additional article expressed his readi- ness to yield submission to the

bishop of Rome as the highest dignitary in the church so soon as the latter should sanction really scriptural teaching.

As elsewhere, the history of the Reformation in France

Reforma-

is that of a twofold struggle,—an endeavour to bring about tion in

*a reform of discipline, and a contest which pointed in the direction of doctrinal change. The abuses that prevailed in the Gallican Church at this period were scarcely less glaring than those in Germany. The appointments to the higher benefices were dictated solely by the most sordid motives,—political ambition, court favouritism, and family interest. Pluralism largely prevailed ; and both bishoprics and abbeys were granted in commendam to such an extent that residence was almost unknown. Preferments were often bestowed upon laymen, and even upon females and children. Pierre de l'Estoile, writing of the middle of the 16th century, states that the majority of the benefices in France were then held by persons who were by the canon law disqualified for their office. But in no country was the movement, that aimed at the correction of abuses such as these, more completely dissociated from the religious revolution contemplated by the Protestant leaders. In the first instance, the doctrines of Luther*were favourably regarded by many of the nobility and of the episcopal order. The leader of the party which represented those doctrines was Lefévre d'Etaples, whose translation of the New Testament into French appeared in the year 1522. In the year 1521, having been singled out by the Sorbonne for special attack asa teacher of the tenets which the university had just so emphatically condemned, he deemed it prudent, notwithstanding the encouragement he received from Francis, to retire to Meaux. Here, under the pro- tection of Brigonnet, the eminent bishop of that diocese, he became the guiding genius of a movement which at one time seemed likely to transform Meaux into a second Wittenberg. This activity, however, was very early checked by the terrors of a commission. Lefévre and his disciple Farel fled to Strasburg, the latter subsequently to Geneva, where his efforts founded the famous school of theology associated with the name of Calvin (see CALVIN) ; Brigonnet, alarmed at the prospect of a schism which threatened to prove permanent, reverted to*

Catholicism, and even acquiesced in a policy of persecution in his own diocese. Both Francis I. and his sister Margaret, queen of Navarre, were at this time disposed to support the Reformation. When the Sorbonne condemned the Col- loqumes of Erasmus (May 1526) Francis gave orders that 24,000 copies should be printed and circulated throughout

France.

RHPrFOR MATION

the country ; he accepted with expressions of favour the dedication to himself by Zwingli of the latter's treatise On True and False Religion. His sister corresponded with Melanchthon and was openly assailed by the Sorbonne as a favourer of heresy, while, as the mother of Jeanne d'Albret, her memory was always cherished with peculiar regard by the great Huguenot party. But the loss of prestige which Francis incurred by his defeat at Pavia and his subsequent captivity inspired the Ultramontane party with greater confidence, and, in spite of his efforts, Louis de Berquin, a leader of the Reformers and one of the most eminent scholars in France, perished at the stake in 1529. The policy of Francis was indeed mainly dic- tated by one dominant motive—that of personal hostility to the emperor—and the apparent caprice with which he treated the Reformers was the result to no small extent of this feeling. It now became his aim to conciliate Pope Clement as an ally against his great rival, and with this view he took advantage of certain excesses committed by a few fanatics, after the example of Miinzer, to light the fires of persecution. At the same time, therefore, that he was supporting the League of Schmalkald he was burning heretics in his own dominions. On the death of Clement (September 1534), when he found the hopes which he had founded on an alliance with the Medici extinguished, since Paul III. proved less amenable to his plans, he again changed his tactics: he invited Melanchthon to come and take up his residence in France, and he set at liberty those who had been imprisoned for holding the Reformed doctrines. At the peace of Crespy (1544), again, he once more changed his policy, and sought to arrive at an agree- ment with Charles for the suppression of heresy and the restoration of discipline in the church.

At the period at which we have now arrived the main influences which guided the later history of the Reforma- tion may be discerned in full activity. Largely political almost from the commencement of the movement, they continued more and more to partake of that character or became mingled with elements not less secular. Foremost among these latter must be placed the appeal made to

_ baser motives both in Germany and in England, by the

Efforts at

manner in which the nobility of both countries were bribed to acquiesce in the suppression of the religious orders, by being allowed to become large sharers in the property and revenues of the monastic and conventual foundations. Among the lower classes, on the other hand, who were often painfully reminded of the loss they had sustained in the withdrawal of that charity which, amid all the de- generacy of the monasteries, had still been one of their recognized functions, a certain genuine sympathy with Catholicism and traditional regard for its institutions long continued to survive. But even among these classes men could not but be conscious that a higher standard of belief and practice had been introduced by the Reformation, while the superior ability shown by those who preached its doc- trines, in adapting their discourse to the comprehension and spiritual needs of the poor, invested them with a highly effective influence.

330

Dissatisfied with such a result, Charles next endeavoured to bring about an understanding by a series of conferences ; and Paul III. was induced to send his legate to attend a diet in Ratisbon (29th July 1541), where a project for reunion, known as the Ratisbon Interim, was brought under formal discussion. 'It resulted," says Gieseler, "as before at Augsburg: they quickly came together on merely specu- lative formulas ; but as soon as they touched upon the ex- ternal constitution and ordinances relating to the authority of the church the division remained." It was the last, perhaps the only occasion, on which an influential section on both sides (the party that followed Paul JII. and the party that followed

Melanchthon) was animated by a genu- ine desire for reconciliation. Their design was defeated by the ignoble political aims of Francis on the one hand, and by the theological illiberality of Luther and the elector of Saxony on the other. In the nieantime Protestantisni continued to advance: Hermann von Wied, elector of Cologne, became a supporter of its doctrines ; and Pomer- ania, Anhalt, Mecklenburg, and the imperial cities were added to the territories in which it became the dominant faith. It was at this juncture, when the Reformation in Germany may be considered to have advanced to its high- est point, that Paul ILI. brought forward a proposal for assembling a general council,—a proposition to which it was decided by the Protestant party at the diet of Worms (March 1545) not to accede, inasmuch as it would be a council convened by the pope. In the following December, however, the council (see TRENT, CoUNCIL oF) asseinbled, —the publication, in the meantime, of Luther's pamphlet Against the Popedom at Rome, founded by the Devil, having further contributed to foster theological rancour. The deliberations of this famous assembly resulted, as is well known, in the enactment of a series of canons condemna- tory of Protestant doctrine; and in this manner the hopes which down to this time had been cherished of bringing about a compromise with respect to those articles of faith on which agreement had before seemed not un- attainable were finally extinguished.

Two months after the first assembling of the council of Trent Luther died. His latter days had been embittered by the defection (as he regarded it) of Melanchthon to a hostile camp, in the espousal by the latter of the tenets maintained by Cicolampadius and Bucer. The doctrine of the church having now been once more defined by the Tridentine decisions, the emperor, in the confident belief that theological divergence might be expected soon to cease, next turned his attention to the removal of those abuses in matters of discipline which he held to be the chief obstacle to the return of Protestants to the church. With this view he brought about the acceptance of the Augsburg Interim (15th May 1548) by the diet, a com- promise which, while it roused the susceptibilitics of the pope, altogether failed to meet the conscientious scruples of the Protestant party. In its place Melanchthon and Duke Maurice of Saxony put forth the Leipsic Interim, a singular admixture of Lutheran doctrine and Roman ritual, which subsequently gave rise to the controversy with the

In Germany the policy of the emperor, nearly always | Adiaphorists. The imperial design, of thus bringing about compro- ambiguous, became complicated with new difficulties. | the extinction of Protestantism either by coercion or by i… ™ Charles himself, from political motives, appears at this | conciliatory measures, may be held to have been finally many, time to have been really desirous of bringing about a | defeated at the diet of Augsburg (1555), when it was

termination of the prevailing religious controversies, but his vice-chancellor, Held, on whom it devolved to carry out his intentions, pursued a singularly infelicitous line of action, which ultimately led to the formation of the League

decided not only that every ruler of a separate state should henceforth be at liberty to adopt either the Augsburg Confession (see supra) or the Catholic faith as his personal creed, but that his subjects should also be called upon to

conform to the profession of their temporal head. The Pro-

effects of this arrangement cannot be held to have been testant beneficial. Wherever, as was not seldom the case, the a ruler of one principality embraced a different doctrine ;

of Nuremberg (10th June 1538), whereby Ferdinand, the duke of Bavaria, Henry of Brunswick, Albert of Branden- burg, and George of Saxony entered into a combination for the purpose of opposing the League of Schmalkald.

Reforma-

tion in Scandi- navia.

336 Be FOR Mek TT OW

from that professed by a neighbouring potentate, the carrying out of such a law could scarcely fail to generate or intensify feelings of aversion and enmity between their respective subjects, while its complete failure as a

means of bringing about unanimity is shown in the rise of those numerous controversies which afterwards enabled the ad- herents of Romanism to launch so effective a taunt against the principles of Protestantism. Among these controversies were those of the Majorists (1551-1562), whose founder, Georg Major of Wittenberg, maintained the doctrine of the necessity of good works to salvation; of the Syner- gists (1555-1567), who held that men could not be saved unless the operations of the divine grace were seconded by the spiritual efforts of the individual soul; of the fol- lowers of Osiander (1549-1567), who supported a modified theory of the doctrine of justification; of the Crypto- Calvinists (1552-1574), who, led by Peucerus, the son-in- law of Melanchthon, maintained against Flacius Illyricus a theory of predestination differing from the Lutheran doctrine. In this last instance the feelings of enmity engendered by the controversy rose to such a pitch that the elector of Saxony was induced to send the leading Philippists to prison, while Flacius and his party celebrated the victory which they held to be theirs by a solemn service of thanksgiving and a commemorative medal. In the year 1580 an endeavour was made to bring about a reconciliation of the various contending parties by drawing up the celebrated Formula of Concord, but the design was attended with but little success. In the midst of this theological ferment, however, the divines of the university of Helmstidt, in the earlier part of the 17th century, were honourably distinguished by their systematic endeavours to allay the strife; and the career of Georg Calixtus, while affording a remarkable illustration of a gloomy chap- ter in the history of Protestantism, may be cited as a proof that a faithful adherence to the principles of the Reforma- tion was not incompatible with a regard for the right of private judgment and intellectual freedom.

In the Scandinavian kingdoms the Reformation was materially assisted by political motives ; the introduction of Lutheranism into Denmark by King Christian II. in 1520 was to a great extent the result of his desire to raise the lower classes with a view to the corresponding depression of the nobility and the more powerful eccle- siastics of the realm. He sanctioned the marriage of the clergy and caused the New Testament to be translated into Danish. These measures, however, owing in no slight degree to the motives by which they were held to be inspired, involved him in a struggle

with his subjects which eventually led to his deposition and to his passing the rest of his life in exile. But the new doctrines con- tinued to be effectively preached by John Tausen, who had been among Luther's pupils at Wittenberg; and the principles of the Reformation spread rapidly in Schleswig and Holstein. On the accession of Christian's successor, Christian III. (his cousin), the movement acquired fresh strength. The new monarch had been a witness of Luther's heroic conduct at Worms and had conceived the warmest admiration for the character of the great Reformer, and through his efforts the tenets of the Reformation were adopted in 1536, at a diet held at Copenhagen, as the religion of the state. In the following year the move- ment extended to Norway and shortly after that to Ice- land. In Sweden the Reformation was established concur- rently with the political revolution which placed Gustavus Vasa on the throne. It was, however, only too apparent that the patriot king was largely influenced by the expect- ation of replenishing his exhausted exchequer from the revenues of the church, and, as in Germany and in Eng- land, the assent of the nobility was gained by their

admission toa considerable share in the confiscated pro- perty. Among the powerful cities which represented the great Hanseatic confederacy, again, the acceptance of Lutheran doctrine turned largely on the keen commercial rivalry that then existed between that confederacy and Holland, and on the contests between the privileged and the unprivileged classes in the towns. In the prosecution of the former struggle the burghers of Liibeck appealed for assistance to Denmark, and, failing to gain the aid they sought, proceeded to organize an alliance with the object of restoring Christian II. to his throne ; at the same time, with the view of outbidding their opponents in popularity, they unwisely proclaimed revolutionary principles scarcely less subversive than those of Miinzer. In the civil war that ensued Christian III. ultimately triumphed over his enemies, and Wullenwever, the leader of the fanatical party, suffered death upon the scaffold. The Reformation was now firmly established, but in conjunction with the mon- archy reinforced by the power of the nobility, while the ecclesiastical constitution was remodelled ; and in the year 1539, at the diet of Odense, the new faith was proclaimed ; as the religion of the land. ;

In Bohemia the Hussite movement (see Huss and Bohemia. Hussirus) must be held to have become almost absorbed in the broader current of Lutheranism, although the Calix- tines (or moderate Utraquists) and the Taborites (or ex- treme party) long continued to“differ on questions of disci- pline. In the earlier part of the 17th century, however, the trained activity and energy of the Jesuits led to the almost entire expulsion of both parties, and Protestantism as a professed creed nearly ceased to survive.

In Poland Protestantism prevailed before the first Poland.

quarter of the 16th century closed. In Dantzic, Elbing, and Thorn it was established by overwhelming majorities. By the Pax Dissidentiwm, however, with a view to averting contests such as those that disturbed the peace of other lands, the principle of universal toleration was enunciated ; and the duke of Anjou (afterwards Henry III. of France), on being elected to the vacant throne of Poland in 1573, notwithstanding his own attachment to Catholicism, found himself compelled to swear that he would strictly protect the adherents of the opposed faith from persecution and aggression. But here again the influence of the Jesuits ultimately proved victorious. The nobles were gained over by their arts, and Catholicism reasserted its ascendency.

In the Netherlands, where the free spirit of the great The mercantile communities was in singular harmony with the Nether- movement, the progress was still more rapid. The details “ a of the heroic struggle waged against Charles V. and Philip II. must be regarded as belonging rather to secular than to theological history ; but it is to be noted, alike to the honour of the people and of the house of Orange, that the enact- ment of the principle of religious toleration followed upon the fierce and intolerant persecution to which the country had so long been exposed. Although the majority of the inhabitants professed the tenets of Calvinism, the Arminian party succeeded in bringing about a union of church and state, which, however, left the other communions almost entirely unrestricted in their religious freedom. The fol- lowers of Gomarus, indeed, early in the 17th century, seemed at one time likely to place this freedom in danger, not only by their assertion of more rigid Calvinistic doctrine, but also by their demand that the church should be

con- stituted independent of the state. But eventually (see Motley, Hust. of the United Netherlands, c. lii.) the party that favoured religious toleration triumphed; and the Dutch republic long continued to be an asylum for those whom the ascendency of the contrary principle in other lands drove into exile. The church organization was modelled on the political organization of the provinces, each province

Later stages in England.

Scotland.

RHPORMATION

being subdivided into classes, while the mode of government was nearly identical with that known as Presbyterian.

In England the reformation of doctrine made but little progress during the reign of Henry VIIL., for, although by the Ten Articles (1536) the royal assent was given to the adoption of the doctrine of justification by faith and to the recognition of the Bible and the three ancient creeds as the standard of belief, a marked reaction in favour of Catholic doctrine took place in the enactment of the Six Articles in 1539. For a brief period heresy became a statutable offence and death was inflicted under the new provisions. The anomalous position of the English Church became a scandal to Europe; for, while some men were burnt for denying the doctrine of transubstantiation or for refusing to admit the royal supremacy, others, as Barnes and Gerard, suffered at the stake for their profes- sion of Lutheran opinions, and even Cromwell must be regarded as in some measure a victim of his attachment to German Protestantism. During the reign of Edward VI. Somerset in conjunction with Cranmer pressed on the work of the Reformation apace. Chantries and hospitals were everywhere suppressed and their endowments confis- cated. The bishops were 'compelled to acknowledge their direct subordination to the crown by being required to take out licences for the exercise of their jurisdiction. In 1549 the first Book of Common Prayer was published, and the Act of Uniformity prescribed its use, while that of all other forms of devotion was forbidden under heavy penalties. The canon law was revised by a body of com- missioners specially appointed for the purpose, and the new code was completed for future use, although it never received the young king's signature. By these and other similar reforms, carried out in a great measure under Cranmer's direction, it was sought to make the Reforma- tion in England a complete rejoinder to the proceedings of the council assembled at Trent.

In Scotland the Reformation assumed a different char- acter from that of the movement in England. It was inspired directly and solely by Germany,

and may be regarded as commencing from the martyrdom of Patrick Hamilton in the year 1528, there being no evidence of any prior spontaneous efforts in the direction of doctrinal reform on the part of the people. Hamilton's designs were looked upon with the greatest disfavour by the clergy at large; and, as James V. was especially anxious to secure the support of that body in his conflict with his insub- ordinate nobility, he was altogether opposed to the adop- tion of the Lutheran tenets. He even aspired to succeed

to the title, which Henry had forfeited, of 'Defender of |

the Faith," and was encouraged to hope that he might succeed to the English crown. After his death (1542), however, under the regency of the earl of Arran, the Nteformed doctrines began to be regarded with greater favour at court, while the merciless policy of Cardinal Beaton and the cruel fate of Wishart gave rise to an out- burst of popular indignation against the bishops to which 3eaton himself fell a victim (1546). The country was now divided into two parties,—the bishops, the clergy at large, and the powerful-influence of France (as represented by the Guises) being on the side of Catholicism, while many of the chief nobles and the laity at large were inclined to favour Protestantism. The English influence, which, wisely exerted, might have operated powerfully on the same side, was, however, sacrificed by the injudicious policy of Somerset, who by his endeavour to enforce the marriage of Mary Stuart with the youthful Edward roused the national spirit. The sense of humiliation and resent- ment which followed upon the battle of Pinkie (1547), where the English were greeted by the Scottish soldiery With the cry of "heretics," produced a reaction in favour

of Catholicism which was not arrested until the return of John Knox in 1555 from the Continent (see Knox).

In Ireland the circumstances which favoured the intro- Ireland.

duction of Protestantism in England were altogether wanting. The Roman ritual was in harmony with the genius of the people, whereas the

aversion naturally inspired by a creed imposed at the dictation of the conqueror was in itself a formidable obstacle. The harsh and essentially un-Christian policy pursued by the constituted ecclesiastical authorities presented further difficulties. The Bible was not translated into the vernacular, and that idiom was equally ignored in the church services, where the choice lay between the Latin, hallowed in the minds of the people by immemorial usage, and the language of the oppressor. Notwithstanding, if the native population failed to attend the English Church services they were fined. Other abuses similar to those which had contributed so power- fully to render Germany Protestant,—non-residence on the part of the clergy, the bestowal of benefices on needy aliens, often altogether wanting in religious earnestness, and sometimes indifferent to the observance of ordinary morality,—still further intensified the feeling of alienation. Protestantism became odious in the eyes of the Irish people; and, when, after long years of oppression and neglect, it was sought to inaugurate a juster policy and to render the established church in some degree really national, the obstacles thus created could not be overcoine.

Authorities.—The. sources already named under Porrpom, Brza, CALVIN, ERAsmMus, Huss, Jesuits, Knox, LuruEr may be con- sulted. The Lchrbuch der Kirchengeschichtc of Gieseler (vol. iii. 2 pts.) gives a condensed and impartial summary of the main features of the movement throughout Europe, together with a valuable compendium of authorities. A translation has appeared in Clark's Foreign Theological Library, and has been republished in a revised form by Prof. Henry B. Sinith (New York, 1868), but in its latter form the valuable citations contained in the German work from the original authorities are not given in full. Other standard works are—Baur, Gesch. d. christlichen Kirche (18638); Guericke, Handbuch der Kirchengesch., vol. ii. (Leipsic, 1866), which treats the subject from the Lutheran standpoint ; Hagenbach, J7ist. of Lef. in Ger- many and Switecrland (Clark's For. Theol. Lib., 2 vols., 1879), written in sympathy with the Zwinglian movement; Déllinger, Die Reformation, 8 vols. (1851), treating solely of the Lutheran movement; Ranke, Deutsche Gesch. im Zeitalter d. Ref., 5 vols.; Maurenbrecher, Gesch. d.:kath. Ref., vol. i. (1517-84), 1880. The Annales Ecclesiasticti of Raynaldus, the continuator of Baronius, contains original documents.

See also Hausser's Gesch. d. Zeitalters der Ref. (1547-1648), 2d ed., by Oncken, 1879, in which the poli- tical relations of the movement are succinctly brought out (Eng. trans. by Mrs Sturge, 1878) ; Monwmenta Lcformationis Luthcrane, a selection from documents at the Vatican by Cardinal Balan (1883- 84); and Keller's Die Reformation und dic dltcren Licformpartcien (Leipsic, 1885). For the confessions successively adopted by the different Evangelical and Reformed churches consult Schaff's History of the Crecds (1878), chaps. v., vi., and vii. The series. known as Leben und ausgewihlite Schriften der Vater und Begriindcr der Lutherischen Kirchen, ed. Nitzsch, 8 vols. (1861-75), gives full biographies of the most eminent Evangelical teachers. The corre- sponding work for the Reformed Church is the Leben und ausgew. Schriften d. Véter u. Begr. d. ref. Kirchen, ed. Hagenbach, 10 vols. (1857-62). Other biographies of special interest are—Geiger, Johann Reuchlin, sein Leben u. seine Werke (Leipsic, 1871), and that of Ulrich von Hutten, by Strauss (trans. by Mrs Sturge, 1874). Hutten's Works (ed. EK. Bocking, 7 vols., Leipsic, 1871) and Das Chronikon dcs Konrad Pellican (ed. Riggenbach, Basel, 1877) may also be consulted. For the history of the subject in England, see Foxe's Acts and Monuments, ed. Cattley, 8 vols. (1841); Jer. Collier's Ecclesiastical History of Great Britain, ed. Barham, 9 vols. (1840-41); Burnet's History of the Reformation in England, ed. Pocock, 7 vols. (1865); and the criticisms contained in vol. iil. of S. R. Maitland's 7'racts (1842), and also his Essays on Subjects con- nected with the Reformation in England. The Records of the Rcforma- tion, by Pocock, 2 vols. (1870), contains important original docu- ments; to this work may be added Strype's Annals, 6 vols. (1822), and Memorials, 7 vols. (1824); the works of the Reformers published by the Parker Society (Cambridge, 1841-54), and the Ziirich Letters, 8 vols. (same society); J. H. Blunt's Reformation of the Church of England (1514-47), 2 vols., 1869-80; and Dixon's History of the Church of England from the Abolition of the Roman Jurisdiction (1529-48), 2 vols., 1877-80. (J. B. M.)

There exist two classes of schools for the reformation and industrial training of children in Great Britain and Ireland, both under state control when duly certified. Reformatory schools are for the better training of juvenile convicted offenders ; industrial schools, in which industrial training is provided, are chiefly for vagrant and neglected children and children not convicted of theft. These schools are of modern but gradual growth, the result in part of humane endeavours to rescue children from evil courses already embarked on or likely to be their lot, in part of the con- viction that, as a matter of social economy, the expendi- ture incurred in early restraint is less costly than the punishment of matured crime.

England and Scotland.—The Acts of Parliament relating to reformatory and industrial schools in Great Britain were consolidated and amended in 1866; and these Acts (29 and 30 Vict. cc. 117, 118), with local legislation and some ex- tension and amendment, govern the two classes of schools at the present time. Both reformatory and industrial schools are certified by the home secretary upon the appli- cation of the managers, and upon a satisfactory inspection and report, and subject to a yearly visit by inspectors. In both classes industrial training is an essential feature, so as to engender industrious habits in the inmates and give them the means of earning an honest livelihood. Not only local circumstances but reasonable individual inclina- tions are taken into consideration. In rural districts the cultivation of the soil and in urban districts local trades are obvious sources of employment ; the duties of a sailor are taught in training ships near the coast. Occupations that create a distaste for labour or that do not provide a permanent source of profitable labour for adults are avoided. The managers (often a committee of magistrates) make all necessary rules for the management and discipline of the schools, subject to the provisions of the legislature and the intervention of the secretary of state. They have the appointment of officers. Conformity to the rules and residence in the schools may be enforced by imprisonment, the application and limits of which vary somewhat in reformatory and industrial schools, ¢.g., such imprisonment for school offences is confined in industrial schools to children above ten, an age almost always exceeded in the inmates of reformatories. Attention is paid in both classes to religious convictions, and as far as possible a selection is made of a

school conducted in accordance with the creed professed by the child or its responsible guardians. Children after eighteen months' detention may be placed out on licence with trustworthy persons and with their own consent. The managers of a reformatory or of an in- dustrial school may decline to receive the youthful offender in the one case and in the other the child proposed to be sent; but the reception of a child operates as an under- taking by the managers to educate, clothe, lodge, and feed him (or her) until he (or she) can be legally discharged or is removed. Reformatory and industrial schools are, however, essentially distinct in character and governed by distinct Acts of Parliament: a school cannot at the same time be both a certified industrial school and a certified reformatory school, The Middlesex Industrial School for juvenile offenders, established under local Acts, and in part a certified industrial school, is, however, somewhat exceptional in blending the treatment of both classes.

Any offender under sixteen, convicted of an offence punishable with penal servitude or imprisonment and sentenced to be imprisoned for ten days or a longer term, may be sent to a certified reformatory school for not less than two and not more than five years. A youthful offender under ten cannot be sent to a reformatory school unless he has been previously charged with some crime

REF © 4B POR YF

or offence punishable with penal servitude or imprisonment, or is sentenced in England by a judge of assize or court of general or quarter sessions or in Scotland by a circuit court of justiciary or a sheriff. Youthful offenders receiving a conditional pardon may now be sent to a certified reforma- tory school. Certified industrial schools receive any child apparently under fourteen who is brought by any person before justices as answering to any of the following de- scriptions :—if found begging or receiving alms (whether actually or under the pretext of selling or offering for sale anything) or being in any street or public place for these purposes ; if found wandering and not having any home or settled place of abode, or proper guardianship, or visible means of subsistence; if found destitute, either being an orphan or having a

surviving parent who is undergoing penal servitude or imprisonment ; if it frequents the com- pany of reputed thieves ; if lodging, living, or residing with common or reputed prostitutes, or in a house resided in or frequented by prostitutes for the purpose of prostitution ; if it frequents the company of prostitutes (43 and 44 Vict. c. 15); where a parent 'or step-parent represents to the magistrates that he is unable to control a child and that he desires that the child be sent to an industrial school; where the guardians of the poor represent that a child maintained in a workhouse or pauper school or poor- house is refractory or the child of a parent convicted of a crime or offence punishable with penal servitude or im- prisonment, and that it is desirable that he be sent to an industrial school. To the above cases have to be added a child apparently under twelve who is charged with an offence punishable by imprisonment or a less punishment but has not been in England convicted of felony or in Scotland for theft; and the children of any woman con- victed of a crime after a previous conviction, and under her care and control at the time of conviction for the last of such crimes, who have no visible means of subsistence or who are without proper guardianship (Prevention of Crimes Act, 1871).

A prison authority (a term as regards industrial schools calculated to mislead, as the authority is in general the court of quarter sessions or school boards, and in Scotland commissioners of supply, magistrates of burghs, or county boards) may, with the approval of the secretary of state, establish or contribute towards the establisliment, building (including borrowing money), or management (and in England may not only contribute to but undertake these matters) of reformatory or industrial schools, or towards the support of the inmates, and such authority may con- tract with the managers for the reception and maintenance of offenders or children. The treasury contributes towards the custody and maintenance of offenders in reformatory _ and of children in industrial schools on the recommendation of the secretary of state, the sum being limited as regards children in industrial schools, on the application of their parents or guardians, to 2s. per head per week. The guard- ians of the poor or the board of management of district pauper schools or parochial boards of a parish or com- bination may, with the consent in England of the local government, and in Scotland of the board of

management, contribute towards the maintenance of children detained in industrial schools. A prison authority in England may contribute towards the ultimate disposal of an inmate of a certified industrial school. The parent or other person legally liable to maintain a youthful offender or child in a school is required (if able) to contribute not more than 5s. per week, recoverable summarily. The alleged want of diligent enforcement of this liability is a great source of complaint.

The introduction of a system of compulsory elementary educa- tion rendered it necessary to extend industrial schools. Under

various Acts passed since 1870 school boards have power, with the consent of the secretary of state, to contribute to or wholly to undertake the establishment, building, and maintenance of in- dustrial schools, and a power exists to transfer industrial schools from other authorities to school boards, but such schools are sub- ject to the jurisdiction of the secretary of state in the same manner as other certified industrial schools. The machinery for bringing children, the subjects of certified industrial schools, before the proper tribunal for making orders has been and is a vexed question. Legis- lative powers given to "any one" are apt to fall into abeyance or into the hands of the police. School boards have a discretionary power to appoint officers to bring children before justices to be sent to industrial schools (83 and 84 Vict. c. 75, s. 86). A school board or school attendance committee (as the local authority) is required, after due warning to the parents, to complain to a court of summary jurisdiction of the non-attendance of a child coming within the elementary education Acts, aud must so complain at the instance of any person. The court may then make an attend- ance order for the child at some certified efficient school, and, in case of non-compliance, may order the child to be sent to a certified day or other industrial school. The expenses of industrial schools, established by or contributed to by school boards, form part of the general expenses of the school fund. As in the case of other in- dustrial schools, parents are liable to contribution, and where a child is ordered upon complaint made by a school attendance com- mittee to be sent to a certified industrial school the council, guard-

lans, or sanitary authority appointing such committee have, on the recommendation of the committee, the same power of contri- buting towards the maintenance as if they were a school board (42 and 48 Vict. c. 48, s. 4).

In 1876 a fresh class of industrial schools was introduced called 'certified day industrial schools," in relation to which prison authorities and school boards have the same powers as in the case of industrial schools ; and towards the custody, industrial training, elementary education, and meals of children attending these schools parliament may contribute a sum limited to 1s. per head per week, on conditions recommended by the secretary of state, with a limited power over the contribution of parents. In certain cases of non- compliance with an attendance order the child is sent to a day industrial school rather than to an industrial school of the class described above (39 and 40 Vict. c. 79, s. 16). In large eities day industrial schools are calculated to be of great service in dealing with the class of poor neglected children. The children are found to be managed without much difficulty, and to respond to any efforts made on their behalf; they compare favourably with children kept for years in close confinement, and are often their superiors in spirit and intelligence (27th Report of inspector). Another de- scription of certified schools has sprung up in connexion with school boards,— truant schools." The few which at present are established in London and some large towns are on the whole doing a good work. The necessary adaptation of certified industrial schools to the school-board system must necessitate the placing of all reformatory and industrial schools on a clcarcr system of classi- fication. Crime must be distinguished from pauperism. However crime may arise from neglect of parents, it is neither desirable nor fair to compel as the price of poverty children unconvicted of crime to associate with juvenile delinquents even after the punishment of crime has ceased. On the other hand, the actual incarceration of boys and girls in a jail should be avoided as far as possible.*

The total number of schools under Government inspection at the close of 1883 was 200, viz., 61 reformatory and 139 industrial schiools, of which last 7 were specially certified as truant and 12 as day industrial schools. The number of children under detention ~ in 1883 in reformatory schools

in Great Britain was 6657, at a total school expenditure of £126,122, of which £85,635 was paid by the treasury, £6140 by parents, £23,183 by rates, and £4943 by sub- scriptions and lcgacies. In industrial schools the number was 18,780 and the expenditure £359,821, of which £176,733 was paid by the treasury, £17,596 by parents, £40,052 by rates, £65,542 by school boards, and £42,129 by subscriptions. The total admissious (excluding transfers) to reformatory schools to the end of 1883 ainounted to 42,669, viz., 34,640 boys and 8029 girls. The total discharges (excluding transfers) were 36,111, viz., 29,235 boys and

6876 girls. They were disposed of as follows :— | Boys. Girls. Total. Employment or service ……. 9,962 3814 13,776 Placed out through relatives ……... 9,663 > Ws) 11,778 HEEL C OW ro occiscy sieis «ove sis siensretelurerettes 2,317 148 2,465 pS ER OMS OG ae ayes acc. .a.a aise oa \e ain, o's cle oer 2 Aot) a 4,291 pT enCIMO BME ois sitio sieln Qaec as avs eres 693 a 693 Discharged from disease oh 374 181 555 | Diseharged as incorrigible … 213 91 304 Died sean eee 781 299 1,080 Absconded, and not recovered …..... 941 228 1,169 29,235 | 6876 36,111

The total admissions to industrial schools (excluding transfers)

to the end of 1883 were 61,260, viz., 48,959 boys and 12,301 girls,

The total discharges (excluding transfers) were 42,412, viz., 33,877 boys and 8535 girls. They were disposed of as follows :—

Loys Girls. Total. Employment or service ……. 12,513 5248 17,761 MINOT Rees xc -72.cisyste eter oie sveveie aiaiasa ce are chere 10,212 1995 12,207 SEAT PUA Gyr isrels jars a.c's\ 5 s.4s0.8 view aieie ele Be 737 130 86 MGRUALOUSO Barta «icici sievsisneetereisv alee cicteate aie 5,325 f 5,325 BETS GG Cltetetese rc clot .cssucictettels cele sve v.6ltle oversee 921 921 | Diseharged as diseased, or on special TOMAS eter e's s.0, 5 ausietsisis.e%0 4 .0;0/aieie\tiesg.e o.« 8 859 281 1,140 Comunitted to reformatories ……... 885 153 1,038 FSO ee ects ss sucyeniccs oc vclatete ea cercee 1,405 557 1,962 Absconded, and not recovered …..... 1,020 171 1,191

33,877 8535 42,412

Ireland.—Reformatory schools were established in Ireland in 1858, and ten years afterwards were placed mainly on their present footing (Irish Reformatory Schools Act, 1868); whilst the cstab- lishment and regulation of industrial schools were provided for by the Industrial Schools Act (Ireland), 1868, extending to Ireland, with certain modifications, the English Act of 1866. The differ- ences between the Acts applicable in Ireland and Great Britain relate chiefly to minor matters. The rule requiring a young offender ora child to be sent to a school under the same religions manage- ment is much more rigid in Ireland than in Great Britain, and the Irish Act does not limit the power of sending a child under ten toa reformatory school where the child has not been previously charged with an offenee punishable with penal servitude or im- prisonment. The power to contract with managers for the recep- tion and maintenance of young offenders is in general vested in grand jurics and in some town councils. The number of reforma- tory schools in Ireland at the close of 1883 was 9, viz., 5 for boys and 4 for girls, with 907 boys and 192 girls. Of industrial schools there were 62, viz., 17 for boys, 44 for girls, and 1 for young boys and girls, with a total of 2409 boys and 3759 girls. The disposal on discharge follows the lines given in the tables for Great Britain. Much the larger proportion of girls in industrial schools in Ireland, as might be anticipated, find their subsequent career in cmployment or service, or are placed out through friends. Emigra- tion also is absolutely far larger (and has been from the establish- ment of industrial schools) in the case of girls than of boys. The reported results of the training of girls discharged from reformatory schools are very satisfactory, and amoug the 1526 girls discharged during the three years 1880-82 there was only one conviction for crime during 1883. The total receipts for the maintenance of reformatory schools in 1888 were £28,116, of which £17,555 was contributed by the treasury vote and £7920 from local rates. The average cost per head for maintenance (including rent and dis- peau') was £23, 9s. for boys and £27, 2s, 2d. for girls. For in- dustrial schools the reeeipts in 1888 were £126,820, of which the treasury contributed £77,259 and rates £27,960. Parental con- tributions to reformatory and industrial schools were £1018.

United States.—The institutions in the United States and of other civilized countries, having for their object or effort the reclamation of the young,

are too closely connected with the educa- tion of poor and destitute children generally to allow of examination here, or of useful comparison with the reformatory and industrial schools of Great Britain under state control.

In 1882 a royal commission was issued to inquire into the management generally of all certified reformatories and industrial schools in the United Kingdom, The commission, in the following year, suggested a simplification of the law and the removal of some anomalies and defects, including the vexed question as to the treatment of boys and girls in relation to imprisonment, and the distinctions already ad- verted to. The commissioners expressed their opinion that these schools were having a salutary effect in reducing the amount both of juvenile and of adult crime. The memor- anda of the earl of Dalhousie and Lord Norton attached to the Leport are worthy of special attention. (J. B. D.)

REFORMED CHURCHES, the designation of those Protestant bodies who adopted the tenets of Zwingli (and later of Calvin), as distinguished from those of the Lutheran or Evangelical divines. Compare PRESBYTERIANISM, RE-

FORMATION, and GERMANY, vol. x. p. 469.

REFORMED CHURCH IN AMERICA (Dvrtcn), formerly the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church, a reli- gious denomination which arose in Holland in the 16th century. See PresBYTERIANISM, vol, xix. p. 698 sq.

REFRACTION. See Ligut and Oprics.

REFRIGERATION. See Ick and Preservep Foon.

REGALIA, insignia of royalty used at the coronation of the sovereign and other great state ceremonials. The regalia of England were in very early times deposited for security in some religious house dependent on the crown, | most generally in the treasury of the Temple. The first | mention of their being deposited in the Tower of London | is in the reign of Henry

IIJ., who on his return from France in 1230 commanded the bishop of Carlisle to replace the jewels in the Tower as they had been before. From his time down to the present the regalia (with the exception of the ancient crown of Edward the Confessor, long retained in Westminster Abbey) have been generally in the Tower under the care of a keeper, but both Henry III. and several of his successors, when in money difficulties, had recourse to the expedient of pawning the crown jewels toraisea loan. Originally the keeper was appointed | by letters patent at a stated salary of £50 per annum, which was so largely increased by perquisites that in the time of Henry VIII. it amounted to about £1500. The office had attached to it important privileges, and was frequently held by persons of distinction. At the Restora- tion many of the perquisites were abolished, and since that period the duties have been merged in those of the lord chamberlain, who appoints a person to have charge of the regalia in the Tower. To make up for the decrease in the perquisites of the office, the regalia were first in the reign of Charles II. allowed to be exhibited in public, the profits accruing being given to the person appointed by the lord chamberlain to have charge of the regalia. They were originally kept in a small building in the south side of the White Tower, till the reign of Charles I., when they were transferred to a strong chamber in the Martin Tower, afterwards called the Jewel Tower. During the Civil War they were nearly all carried off by the Puritans and destroyed, and in 1671 an attempt made to steal the new regalia by Colonel Bioop (q.v.) was nearly successful. During the fire of 1841 they were removed for safety to the house of the governor, and afterwards a new room within the Wakefield Tower was constructed for their reception. 'The regalia now contained in this room include St Edward's crown, made for the coronation of Charles II. to replace the one broken up and sold during the Civil War; the new state crown made for the coronation of Queen Victoria ; the prince of Wales's crown ; the queen consort's crown ; the queen's diadem or circlet of gold made for the coronation of Marie d'Este, consort of James IL. ; St Edward's staff of beaten gold; the royal sceptre or sceptre with the cross; the rod of equity or sceptre with the dove; the queen's sceptre with the cross; the queen's ivory sceptre, made for Marie d'Este ; an ancient sceptre supposed to have been made for Queen Mary, consort of William III.; the orb; the queen's orb; the Koh-i-Noor diamond ; the sword of mercy or curtana ; the sword of justice ; the armille or coronation

bracelets ; the royal spurs ; the ampulla for the holy oil; the gold coronation spoon (supposed to be the only relic of the ancient regalia now remaining) ; the golden salt cellar; the baptismal font ; and the silver wine fountain presented to Charles II. by the corporation of Plymouth.

The regalia of Scotland, of which there is a very complete account in Papers relative to the Regalia of Scotland published by the Bannatyne Club (1829), consist of the crown, the sceptre, and the sword of state. The ancient regalia were carried off or destroyed by Edward I. of England in 1296, and Robert Bruce was crowned at Scone with a temporary crownlet, which also shortly afterwards fell into the hands of the English. The present crown, from the character of a portion of its workmanship, is supposed to be that made by the orders of Robert Bruce and first used at the coronation of David II. in 1329. Two concentric circles were added to it in the reign of James V., surmounted at the point of intersection with a mound of gold enamelled and a large cross patée, upon which are the characters J. R. V. The sceptre was made in the reign of |

James V., and the sword of state was presented to King James IV. in 1507 by Pope Julius 1I. When Cromwell invaded Scotland the regalia were removed for greater security by the earl marischal

| from the crown room in Edinburgh Castle to his castle of Dunnottar,

one of the strongest fortresses in Scotland. During its siege by Cromwell they were carried from it by a stratagem devised by the wife of the governor and the wife of the minister of Kinneff, and buried under the flagstones in Kinneff church, where they remained till the Restoration. From the Restoration till the Union they were deposited in the crown room of Edinburgh Castle. After the Union they lay locked in a chest until 1818, when they were first publicly exhibited. See also the articles Coronation, CRowN, and SCEPTRE.

REGENSBURG. See Ratisson.

REGENT. The position of a regent as an administrator of the realm during the minority or incapacity of the king is one unknown tothe common law. “In judgment of law the king, as king, cannot be said to be

a minor, for when the royal body politic of the king doth meet with the natural capacity in one person the whole body shall have the quality of the royal politic, which is the greater and more worthy and wherein is no minority. For omne majus continet in se minus" (Coke upon Littleton, 43a). For reasons of necessity a regency, however anomalous it may be in strict law, has frequently been constituted both in England and Scotland. There are fifteen instances in English history, the earliest of which is the appointment of the earl of Pembroke with the assent of the loyal barons on the accession of Henry JJJ. Whether or not the sanction of parliament is necessary for the appointment is a question which has been much discussed. Lord Coke recommends that the office should depend on the will of parliament (Znst., vol. iv. p. 58), and it is certain that in modern times provision for a regency has always been made by Act of Parliament. In Scotland the appointment of regents was always either by the assent of a council or of parliament. Thus in 1315 the earl of Moray was appointed regent by Robert I. in a council. At a later period appointment by statute was the universal form. Thus by 1542 c. 1 the earl of Arran was declared regent during the minority of Mary. By 1567 c. 1 the appointment by Mary of the earl of Moray as regent was confirmed. As late as 1704 c. 3 provision was made for a regency after the death of Anne. The earliest regency in England resting upon an express statute was that created by 28 Hen. VIII. c. 17, under which the king appointed his executors to exercise the authority of the crown till the successor to the crown should attain the age of eighteen if a male or sixteen if a female. They delegated their rights to the protector Somerset, with the assent of the lords spiritual and temporal. No other example of a statutory provi- sion for a regency occurs till 1751. In that year the Act of 24 Geo. IL c. 24 constituted the princess dowager of Wales regent of the kingdom in case the crown should descend to any of her children before such child attained the age of eighteen. A council called the council of regency was appointed to assist the princess. A prescribed oath was to be taken by the regent and members of the council. Their consent was necessary for the marriage of a successor to the crown during minority. It was declared to be unlawful for the regent to make war or peace, or ratify any treaty with any foreign power, or prorogue, adjourn, or dissolve any parliament without the consent of the majority of the council of regency, or give her assent to any bill for repealing or varying the Act of Settlement, the Act of Uniformity,

or the Act of the Scottish parlia- ment for securing the Protestant religion and Presbyterian church government in Scotland (1707 c. 6). The last is an invariable provision, and occurs in all subsequent Regency Acts. The reign of George III. affords examples of provision for a regency during both the infancy and incapacity of a king. The Act of 5 Geo. HI.c. 27 vested

i

in the king power to appoint a regent under the sign manual, such regent to be one of certain named members of the royal family. The remaining provisions closely followed those of the Act of George II. In 1788 the insanity of the king led to the introduction of a Regency Bill. In the course of the debate in the House of Lords the duke of York disclaimed on behalf of the prince of Wales any right to assume the regency without the consent of parliament. The necessity for the authority of parlia- ment in the particular circumstances was much discussed, as a reference to the parliamentary history of the time will show. Owing to the king's recovery the bill ultimately dropped. Ona return of the malady in 1810 the Act of 51 Geo. III. c. 1 was passed, appointing the prince of Wales regent during the king's incapacity. The royal assent was given by commission authorized by resolution of both Houses. By this Act no council of regency was appointed. There was no restriction on the regent's authority over treaties, peace and war, or parliament, as in the previous Acts, but his power of granting peerages, offices, and pensions was limited. At the accession of William IV. the duchess of Kent was, by 1 Will. IV. c. 2, appointed regent, if necessary, until the Princess Victoria should attain the age of eighteen. No council of regency was appointed. By 1 Vict. c. 72 lords justices were nomin- ated as a kind of regency council without a regent in case the successor to the crown should be out of the realm at the queen's death. They were restricted from granting peerages, and from dissolving parliament without directions from the successor. The last Regency Act was passed after the marriage of the queen. By 3 & 4 Vict. c. 52 Prince Albert was appointed regent in case any of the queen's children should succeed to the crown under the age of eighteen. The only restraint

on his authority was the usual prohibition to assent to any bill repealing the Act of Settlement, &c. By 10 Geo. IV. c. 7 the office of regent of the United Kingdom cannot be held by a Roman Catholic. A similar disability is imposed in niost, if not all, Regency Acts.

REGGIO DI CALABRIA, a city of Italy, in the pro- vince of its own name, formerly Calabria Ulteriore Prima, is admirably situated on the Strait of Messina some miles farther south than the city of Messina on the other side. It is the terminus of the railway round the south-east coast from Bari; a scheme for a line along the west coast to Naples received legislative sanction in 1879. The luxuriant gardens and orchards of Reggio have been cele- brated for centuries, and the climate is so warm that even the date-palm occasionally ripens its fruit. The old city was in great part destroyed by the earthquake of 1783, and it is now built on a regular plan, with broad streets run- ning north and south and cross streets climbing the hill from the seaside. Besides the cathedral (rebuilt since thie earthquake), the principal edifices are the chamber of com- merce, the new comizio agrario, the castle on the height, the Renaissance Palazzo Musitano Guerrera, and the Gothic Villa Leo. Local manufactures are essences, scented waters, silks, and byssus gloves, caps, and shoes. Extensive improvements have since 1870 been made on the port of Reggio both by the niunicipality and the Government ; in 1883 787 vessels (209,717 tons) entered and 713 (207,179) cleared. Oil, lemons, and similar fruits, essences, silk, and grain are the staple exports. The population of Reggio was, in 1881, 23,853 in the city, or including the various suburban villages—Sbarre (3622), Santa Catarina (1147), &c.— 35,437, and in the commune

39,296.

A colony, mainly of Chaleidians, partly of Messenians from the

Peloponnesus, settled at Rhegium (Regium) in the 8th century B.c. About 494 B.c. Anaxilas, a member of the Messenian party, made

himself inaster both of Regium and Zancle (Messina). In 427 it joined the Athenians against Syracuse, but in 415 it remained neutral. An attack which it made on Dionysins of Syracuse in 399 was the beginning of a great struggle which in 387 re- sulted in its complete destruction and the dispersion of its in- habitants as slaves. Restored by the younger Dionysius under the name of Pheebids, the eolony soon recovered its prosperity and resumed its original designation. In 280, when Pyrrhus in- vaded Italy, the Regines admitted within their walls a Roman garrison of Campanian troops; these mercenaries revolted, massacred the male eitizens, and held possession of the city till in 270 they were besieged and destroyed by the Roman eonsul Genucius. Though one of the cities promised by the triumvirs to the veterans, Regium escaped through the favour of Octavius (hence Regium Julium). Alaric (410 a.p.), Totila (549), and Robert Guiscard (1060) all occupied the city. It was at Reggio that Joseph Bonaparte received the title of king of the Two Sicilies. In 1860 the Bourbon garrison surrendered to the Garibaldians. REGGIO NELL' EMILIA, a city and episcopal see of Italy, in the province of Reggio nell' Emilia (up till 1859 part of the duchy of Modena), is situated on the line of the old Via AEmilia, 17 miles by rail south-east of Parma. It is a large, well-built, and flourishing place with a population in 1881 of 18,634 (commune 56,031) within the circuit of its walls. Among the points of principal interest are the Piazza Maggiore, with the statue of the river Crostolo ; the cathedral, which was founded in 857 a.p. but dates mainly from the 15th century ; the co- cathedral basilica of San Prospero, with its six old Lom- bard lions in front; the public library, which contains the published and unpublished works of Spallanzani; the museum, in which are preserved the same uaturalist's collections ; the large municipal theatre, famous for its operas throughout Italy ; and the municipal " palace," with the statue of Cecilius Metellus. In the neighbourhood of the city there is an extensive model lunatic asylum as well as a large poorhouse. The house in which Ariosto was born in the Corso della Ghiara is now municipal property. Horse-races are held at Reggio every year. Regium Lepidi or Regium Lepidium was probably founded by Amilius Lepidus at the time of the eonstruction of the milian Way. It was during the Roman period a flourishing municipium, but never beeame a colony ; and, though the name is frequently mentioned in the course of the eivil war, it is associated with no event more interesting than the

assassination of M. Brutus, the father of Ceesar's friend and foe. The bishoprie dates from 450 A.D. Under the Lombards the town was the seat of dukes and counts ; in the 12th and 13th centuries it formed a flourishing republie, busied in surrounding itself with walls (1209), controlling the Crostolo and constructing navigable canals to the Po, coining money of its own, and establishing prosperous schools. About 1290 it first passed into the hands of Obizzo d'Este, and the authority of the same family was after many vieissitudes more formally reeognized in 1409. In the contest for liberty which began in 1796 and elosed with annexation to Piedmont in 1859 Reggio took vigorous part. Besides Ariosto, the city has given birth to Secchi the astronomer and Prospero Clementi the sculptor; and the poet Boiardo was governor of Reggio for many years before his death in 1494. REGIOMONTANUS (1436-1476). The real name of this astronomer was JoHANN MU.ier, but from his birth- place, Kénigsberg, a small town in Franconia, he called himself Jou. pe Monterecio. The name Regiomontanus occur for the first time on the title page of his Scripta, pub- lished in 1544, but he has since become best known by it. He was born in June 1436 and became the pupil of Purbach at the university of Vienna, and jointly with him endea- voured, with such imperfect instruments as they could construct, to test the accuracy of the Alphonsine tables of the motions of the planets. After Purbach's death Regiomontanus finished and_ published his Epitome in Ptolemei Almagestum, but, having in the meantime become

acquainted with Cardinal Bessarion, who was anxious to

spread the knowledge of the Greek literature among the Western nations, he proceeded with him to Italy in 1462, and for the following eight years devoted a great deal of time to the study of the Greek language and to collecting

Greek manuscripts. He returned from Italy in 1471 and settled at Nuremberg, at that time one of the chief centres of German industry and literary life. Here he became associated with Bernhard Walther (1430-1504), a wealthy patrician and an enthusiastic astronomer. An observatory was erected, and the finest instruments the skilful artisans of

Nuremberg could make were regularly used by the two friends for observing the heavens. Clocks driven by weights were here used for the first time for scientific purposes, the influence of refraction in altering the apparent places of the stars better appreciated, Venus substituted for the moon as a connecting link between observations of the sun and of stars, and other improve- ments introduced in practical astronomy. Regiomontanus also published a number of calendars and ephemerides, which induced Pope Sixtus IV. to summon him to Rome to assist in reforming the confused calendar. He died very shortly after his arrival in Rome, July 6, 1476.

In 1464 Regiomontanus finished a work on trigonometry, which science had made considerable progress among the Arabians but had to be reinvented in Europe. 'The work was, however, never printed till 1533 (De Triangulis libri quinque), probably because the author, aftcr introducing the use of tangents, had wished to re-write his book, but was prevented from doing so by his early death. In his Tabule Directionwm (Nuremberg, 1475) there is a table of tangents (tabula fecunda). His instruments and obser- vations at Nuremberg are described in a posthumous work, — Seripta clarissimt mathematici Joh. Regiomontant (Nuremberg, 1544). The ephemerides and calendars were published partly in German (Magister Johann von Kunsperk's teutscher Kalender), partly in Latin (Ephemerides Astronomiew, Nuremberg, 1473 or 1475, for the years 1475-1506 ; Kalendarium Novum, Nuremberg 1474, re- issued many times and translated into German and Italian). The German geographer Martin Behem made these calendars known among the Spanish and Portuguese navigators, and they became of the greatest importance in guiding Columbus, Diaz, Vasco da Gama, and many others over the trackless ocean. The life of Regiomontanus was written by Gassendi (The Hague, 1654) ; among modern works see Regiomontanus, ein geistiger Vorliufer des Copernicus, by Zeigler (Dresden, 1874), Die Vorgeschichte der Gregorianisehen Kalenderreform, by Kaltenbrunner (Vienna, 1876), and Rudolph Wolf's Geschichte der Astronomie (Munich, 1877).

REGISTRATION. In all systems of law the registra- tion of certain legal facts has been regarded as necessary, chiefly for the purpose of ensuring publicity and simplify- ing evidence. Registers, when made in

performance of a public duty, are as a general rule admissible in evidence merely on the production from the proper custody of the registers themselves or (in most cases) of examined or cer- tified copies. The extent to which registration is carried varies very much in different countries. For obvious reasons judicial decisions are registered in all countries alike. In other matters no general rule can be laid down, except perhaps that on the whole registration is not as fully enforced in the United Kingdom and the United States as in Continental states. The most important uses of registration occur in the case of judicial proceedings, land, ships, bills of sale, births, marriages, and deaths, companies, friendly and other societies, newspapers, copy- rights, patents, designs, trade marks, and professions and occupations. The registration of qualified voters in par- liamentary elections in the United Kingdom is treated in a separate section below.

Judicial Proceedings.—In England registrars are attached to the privy council, the Supreme Court, and the county courts. In the Queen's Bench Division (except in its bankruptcy jurisdiction) the duty of registrars is performed by the masters. Besides exercising limited judicial authority, registrars are responsible for the drawing up and recording of various stages of the. proceedings from the

petition, writ, or plaint to the final decision.' With them are filed affidavits, depositions, pleadings, &c., when such filing is

1 The antiquity of registration of this kind is proved by the age of the Registrum Brevium, or register of writs, called by Lord Coke "a most ancient book of the Common Law" (Coke upon Littleton, 159a).

necessary. The difference between filing and registration is that the documents filed are filed without alteration, while only an epitome is usually registered. The Judicature Act, 1878, created district registries in the chief towns, the district registrar having an authority similar to that of a registrar of the Supreme Court. In the Admiralty Division cases of account are usually referred to the registrar and merchants. The registration in the central office of the supreine court of judgments affecting lands, writs of exccution, recognizances, and lites pendentes in England, and the registration in Scotland of abbreyiates of adjudications

and of inhibitions, are governed by special legislation. All these are among the incumn- brances for which search is made on investigating a title. Their satisfaction and discharge is also registered. The Conveyancing Act, 1882, provides for a certificate by the proper officer of the existence or non-existence of entries of judgments, deeds, and other matters or documents made in the central office: The certificate is conclusive in favour of a purchaser. Decisions of criminal courts are said to be recorded, not registered, except in the case of courts of summary jurisdiction, in which, by the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879, a register of convictions is kept. Probates of wills and letters of administration, which are really judicial decisions, are registered in the principal or district registries of the Probate Division. In Scotland registration is used for giving a summary remedy on obligations without action by means of the fiction ofa judicial decision having been given establishing the obligation. A clause of registration is introduced in deeds importing obliga- tion. The various registers available for this kind of registraton will be found in Watson, Law Diet., s.v. " Registration."

Land. —Registration in its relation to land is either of title or of assurances. A register of title bears on the face of it the name and description of a plot of land with more or less particularity, the name of the owner, and the charges and easements to which the land is subject. Noone can go behind the entry except in case of fraud. A register of assurances or deeds contains only a copy of documents affecting title, or a memorial or other epitome of such documents, without any authentication of the title as such. Thus a register of title would show that A was owner subject to a mortgage to B, and the purchaser would purchase such a title. A register of assurances would show in the same circumstances that a conveyance had been made to A, and that subsequently A had mortgaged to B, but the purchaser would have to make sure for himself that A and B had the right to convey and mortgage. It will be obvious that the object of registration of deeds is quite different from that of registration of title. The former aims at facilitating the search for incumbrances, the latter at abolishing search by making it unnecessary. The requisites of a registry of title are thus stated by Sir H. Maine (Zarly Law and Custom, 353) :—

“The land registries which have the highest commendation from judicial writers are those of ecrtain small Teutonic communities, e.g., the state of Hesse- Darmstadt and the Swiss eanton of Zurieh. JI ean here give but a brief deserip- tion of the mechanism. The land of the community is divided into a number of eireumseriptions of no greatarea. For each of these a central office is established, with a staff of functionaries who are to some extent experts, and at each office a register is opened in whieh separate portions or groups of pages are appropriated to separate masses of land… When the register hus onee been opened, the legal history of every pareel of every area is thenecforward recorded in it, and every transfer or mortgage must be registered in it, under pain of invalidity. Whether a person wishing to sell or mortgage has the right to do so, it is the business of the staff of experts to asecrtain, It is absolutely essential to the system that the register should be easily accessible, and the formalities of registration simple and cheap.”

It will appear on referring to Reau Estrare that before the Conquest publicity of transfer was secured by a system of record in the shire-book or church-book. After the Conquest this pub- licity, continued for a time in the Domesday survey, from various causes gradually gave way to that secrecy of transfer which is now one of the peculiar features of English law. Publicity was to a certain extent sccurcd by the court rolls in the case of copyhold lands, by the local statutes mentioned below, and by the Act enforcing the registration of rent charges and annuities charged on land (18 Vict. c. 15). There was a tendency in the same direction in those statutes which made the enrolment of deeds necessary for their validity. Such are the Statute of Enrolments, 27 Henry VIII. c. 16, the Mortmain Act, 9 Geo. II. ¢. 36, the Fines and Recoveries Act, 8& 4 Will. IV. ¢. 74, under which an estate tail may be barred by an enrolled deed, and Acts affecting Queen Anne’s Bounty, 1 Geo. I., st. 2, c. 10, and the Charity Commissioners, 18 & 19 Vict. e.124. No general registry has as yet been established in England, though many attempts have been made in that direction. The question was debated as far back as the Long Parliament. General Ludlow mentions the characteristic incident “that upon the debate of ‘registering deeds in each county for want of which, within a certain time fixed after the sale, such sales should be void, and, being so regarded, that lands should not be subject to any incuin- brance,’ this

word incumbrance was so managed that it took up three months' time before it could be ascertained by the com- mittee" (Afemoirs, i. 486). In the reign of Charles II. a registry of deeds was established for the Bedford Level by 15 Car. II. c. 17. In the reign of Anne registries of deeds and wills were established

Ria its TF RAVE FON

for the county of Middlesex (7 Anne e. 20), for the West Riding of Yorkshire (2 & 3 Anne c. 4), and for the East Riding and Kingston-upon-Hull (6 Anne c. 35). Similar provisions were not applied to the North Riding until 8 Geo. II. c. 6. The Yorkshire Acts were cousolidated and amended by the Yorkshire Registries Act, 1884. "Under these Acts, all deeds are to be adjudged fraudulent and void against any subsequent purchaser or mort- gagee for valuable consideration, unless a memorial of such deeds be duly registered before the registering of the memorial of the deed under which such subsequent purchaser or mortgagee shall claim" (Williams, Real Property, pt. i. ch. x.). Priority thus depends upon the date of registration. The Acts do not extend to copyholds, to leaseholds for a term not excecding twenty-one years, or to chambers in an Inn of Court. The full operation of the Registry Acts has been to a certain extent affected by the doctrines of equity that an equitable mortgage by deposit of deeds is valid without registration, and that notice of a prior unregistered deed is within limits equivalent to registration. "It shall only be in cases where the notice is so clearly proved as to make it fraudu- leut in the purchaser to take and register a conveyance in pre- judice to the known title of another that we will suffer the registered deed to be affected" (Sir William Grant in Wyatt v. Barwell, 19 Vesey's Reports, 438). On this subject the Yorkshire Registries Act, 1884, provides by § 14 that "all priorities given by this Act shall have full effect in all cases except in cases of actual fraud, and all persons claiming thereunder any legal or equitable interests shall be entitled to corresponding priorities, and no such person shall lose any such priority merely in consequence of his having been affected with actual or constructive notice, except in cases of actual fraud." The Act provides for an official search of the same nature as that introduced by the Conveyancing Act, 1882, and for the entry of a caveat against registration by any person interested. Passing to general

registration, a general registry of deeds was recommended by the real property commissioners in 1830. The royal commission of 1854 reported in 1857 in favour of general registration of title. In pursuance of this report the Land Registry Act, 1862 (“Lord Westbury’s Act”), was passed. It provided for the optional registration of such titles to freeholds and leaseholds in freeholds as a court of equity should hold to be marketable. It was of little importance in practice on account of its making a marketable title (7.¢., such a title as the court would compel an unwilling purchaser to accept) and a definition of boundaries necessary, and of its not giving an indefeasible title in effect, though it does so in name, until there had been dealing with the land for valuable consideration subsequent to registration. The Act is still law as to titles registered under it and not re- registered under the Act of 1875, On the same day as the Laud Registry Act was passed the Declaration of Title Act, 1862, under which power is given to any person entitled to apply for the registration of an indefeasible title under the Land Registry Act to apply to the Court of Chancery for a declaration of title, and the court, on proof of a marketable title, is to issue a certificate of title under the seal of the court. The Land Registry Act was con- demned by the report of a royal commission in 1870. In 1875 some of the recommendations of the commission were adopted in the Land Transfer Act, 1875 (“Lord Cairns’s Act”), the latest general enactment on the subject. The Act of 1875 allows the optional registration of a title less than marketable, and the land certificate delivered to the proprietor is to state whether his title be absolute, qualified, or possessory. T’wo or more persons may be registered as joint proprietors. No notice of any trust is to appear on the register. To be registered land must be either freehold or leasehold for an unexpired term of at least twenty-one years. Land in Middlesex or Yorkshire registered under the Act ceases to be within the jurisdiction of the local registries. A caution against registration may be lodged by any person interested. The Act established an office of land registry under a registrar appointed by the lord chancellor. registries, if necessary. The Act, like its predecessor, has becn very little used. A compulsory system of registration of title in England has been so universally recognized as expedient that its adoption cau only be a question of time. The chief difficulties in the way ofa reform are the objection of the landowners to pub- licity of transactions in land, the expense, greater than in other

countries or in the colonies, arising from the complexity of the English law of real property, and, not least, the conservative instincts of the legal profession. One effect of registration will be to much diminish the importance of the legal doctrines of Possession and LimiraTion (q.v.). "It is a grave question whether the establishment of titles by long possession is consistent with a complete and efficient system of registration. In Scotland, where there is such a system, there is nothing answering to our Statute of Limitations as regards land" (Pollock, Zand Laws, 169).1

1 § 21 of the Aet of 1875 in fact provides that "a title to any land adverse to or in derogation of the title of the registered proprietor shall not be aequired by any length of possession," with an exception in favour of an adverse claim where the registered title is possessory only.

There was also a power of creating district.

|

O43

Another effect will be the recurrence to the primitive legal con- ception of the transfer of land as a matter of public notoriety. In Ireland a registry of assurances was established by 6 Anne ec. 2 (Ir.). 28 & 29 Vict. e. 88 constitutes a limited registry of title in the record of title to land which has been the subject of conveyance or declaration by the Landed Estates Court. In Scotland the present system of registration of assurances has existed since the reign of James VI. The Act 1617 c. 16 created a pnblic register for registering within three-score days instruments of sasine as well as reversions and other writs affecting heritable property. The Act established a general register of sasines at Edinburgh and local registers, The latter were abolished by 31 & 32 Vict. c. 64. Modern Acts commencing in 1845 and consolidated in 1868 by 31 & 32 Vict. c. 101 dispense with sasinc and the instrument of sasine. The recording of a conveyance with a warrant of registration indorsed now constitutes infeftment. Either the whole or part of a deed inay be registered. Probative leases of thirty-one or more years may be registered under 20 & 21 Vict. ce. 26. As to entails see Enrain. Writs affecting land held in burgage before 1874 must be registered in the burgh register of sasines

(37 & 38 Vict. c. 94, § 25). The lord clerk register's duties under the Act of 1617 were transferred to the deputy clerk register by 42 & 43 Vict. c. 44 (see Watson, Law Dict., s.vv. "Deeds," " Registration"). In most of the British colonies land registration of some kind exists. The Indian Registration Act, 1866, steers a niiddle course between compulsory and optional registration. The registration of some assurances is compulsory, of others optional. In Australia a system of compulsory registration of title was introduced by Sir R. R. Torrens, and, after having been first adopted by the legislature of South Australia in 1858, has been generally applied by the other Australian colonies since that time. Under the South Australian Act a certificate of title is cancelled and regranted on transfer. Instrumentsare not effectual until registra- tion and indorsement according to statutory forms. Mortgages have priority according to the date of registration, irrespective of notice. The registrar nay demand the deposit of a map. In the United States registration of assurances is universal, but registration cf title is not so generally adopted. At the date of writing, a bill for the compulsory registration of title is before the New York legislature. For the purpose of dealing with public lands of the United States a register of the land office is appointed in each land district. Returns from each land office are made to the general land office.

Ships.—The registration of ships in the British empire (other than fishing boats, the registration of which is governed by special legislation) now depends upon the Merchant Shipping Acts. The register is open only to British ships, and not more than sixty-four persons can be registered as owners of any ship. One registered owner may, however, represent the beneficial title of any number of persons. No notice of a trust can be entered on the register. Mortgages must be registered in the statutory form in order to be good against registered transferees and mortgagees. The registrar is generally in the United Kingdom the principal officer of customs for any port, abroad such person as may be nanied by order in council. The Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, established a " general register and record of seamen " under a registrar-general of seamen. The Merchant Shipping Act, 1872, extended both the name and authority of this officer. Since that Act he has been called the registrar-general of shipping and seamen. Returns of shipping and seamen are transmitted to

him by the local registrars. In the United States the registration of ships depends upon a series of Acts of Congress beginning in 1792. See Hevised Statutes, § 4131. A register of seamen is kept by the shipping commissioner (Act of 7th June 1872, c. 322).

Bills of Sale.—By the Bills of Sale Acts, 1878 and 1882, every bill of sale is to be registered within seven clear days after the execution thereof, or, if it is executed in any place out of England, then within seven clear days after the time at which it would in the ordinary course of post arrive in England if posted immediately after execution. A bill must be re-registered every five years, if still existing. An affidavit of the time of its execution, of its due execution and attestation, and containing a description of the residence and occupation of the person making the bill and of every attesting witness, must be filed with the registrar within seven days. A transfer or assignment of a registered bill of sale need not be registered. The duties of registrar are performed by a master of the Supreme Court attached to the Queen's Bench Division of the High Court of Justice. Provision is made for the trausmis- sion of bills of sale made by persons or affecting goods outside the London bankruptcy district to the registrars of the proper county courts. The register may be searched by any person on payment of a fee of one shilling. Similar provisions are contained in the Irish Acts of 1879 and 18838. Bills of sale are unknown in Scotland.

Births, Baptisms, Marriages, Deaths, Burials.—The registration of baptisms, marriages, and burials is said to have been first intro- duced by Thomas Cromwell when vicar-gencral in 1522, but it is

J44 KE Gale @

only in comparatively modern times that the registration lias been fully carried out. The registration of births, &c., in the United Kingdom depends upon a large body of statutory law. Baptisms, mazriages, and burials are usually registered at the time of their occurrence, births and deaths within a certain time afterwards. The English Act 35 & 36 Vict. c. 36 forbids the charging of any fee for registration of baptism. The law of registration of births and deaths is consolidated for England by 37 & 38 Vict. c. 88, for Ireland by 43 & 44 Vict. c. 13. In Scotland it depends upon

17 & 18 Vict. c. 80, as amended by later Acts. The registration of marriages in England depends chiefly 'upon 4 Geo. IV. ¢. 76, and 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 85; in Ireland upon 7 & 8 Vict. c. 81 (as to Protestants), 26 & 27 Vict. c. 90 (as to Roman Catholics); in Scotland upon 17 & 18 Vict. c. 80. The chief official charged with the administration of the Acts is the registrar-general of births, deaths, and marriages; in Scotland the office is held by the deputy clerk-registcr. In the United States the registration of births, marriages, and deaths is, with a few exceptions such as births and deaths at sea and marriages abroad, the subject of State and not United States legislation. Burials are regulated in England by the Burial Acts, especially the Registration of Burials Act, 1864, in Scotland by 18 & 19 Vict. c. 68. Chapels belonging to nonconformist bodies may be certified to the registrar-general (see NoNconFormitTy). There are few enactments dealing with the subject of this paragraph which extend to the United Kingdom. Those which do so are of a special nature, such as Acts aflecting friendly societies and officers and soldiers abroad. A Registration Act embracing the United Kingdom is much needed.

Companics.—Under the Companies Act, 1862, and subsequent Companies Acts {inost of which apply to the United Kingdom), commercial companies as distinguished from associations of other kinds must be registered. Any company requiring to be registered and not registered is an illegal association, and its members cannot take advantage of the limitation of liability and other benefits conferred by the Acts. The register is under the charge of the registrar-general of joint stock companies or such other registrar as the Board of Trade may appoint. The register must contain (1) the emorandum of association, including the name and objects of the proposed company and the place where its registered office is situate ; (2) the articles of association ; (3) a list of members and shareholders (or directors where there are no shareholders), and a statement of the amount held by each shareholder, and other particulars ; (4) any order of court confirming the reduction of the capital of a company ; (5) any contract duly made in writing by which a share is issued otherwise than for cash ; (6) proceedings in winding up. No trust is to appear on the register in the case of companies registered in England or Ireland. Every company must keep at its registered office a register of its members, and, if a company not divided into shares, a

register of its directors or managers, and, in addition, if a limited company, a register of mortgages and charges affecting the property of the company.

Fricndly Socicties. —A friendly society consisting of seven members at least may be registered under the Friendly Societies Act, 1875. The name of the society and of its secretary, and of every trustee or other officer authorized to sue or to be sued in the name of the society, and also a copy of its rules, are entered on the register. There is a chief registrar of friendly societies with assist- ant registrars for Scotland and Ireland. Every registered society is to have a registered office. In the same registry are now registercd building societies, industrial and provident societies, aud trade unions.

Newspapers.—By the Newspapers Libel and Registration Act, 1881, the registrar of joint stock companies is to kcep a register of the titles of newspapers and the names of their proprietors (sce Newspapers, Press Laws).

Copyrights, Patents, Designs, Trade Marks.—See Copyntcnt, –

PATENTS, TRADE MARK.

Professions and Occupations. —The effect of recent legislation has been that solicitors, medical men, dentists, veterinary surgeons, chemists and druggists, seamen, lodging-house keepers, cow keepers, milk retailers, aud others must be registered in accordance with various statutory provisions. Unless duly registered they cannot as a rule recover for their services. In certain other cases registra-

tion is not in name necessary, but it is practically enforced by the |

law regarding the entry in certain official books and documents as prima facie evidence of qualification. Thus the roll of the House of Lords is evidence that a person appearing upon it is a peer, the army list that a name contained in it is that of an officer.

Among other matters of less importance which are registered are crown debts, acknowledgnients by married women, colonial stock under 40 & 41 Vict. ec. 59, schemes under the Regulation of Railways Act, 1867, hospitals where lunatics are received, and (in Scotland) lunatics confined in asylums. In this place may be mentioned the peculiar privilege enjoyed by the Channel Islands : orders in council or Acts of Parliament in which they are not named do not become law in those islands until after registration in the royal courts. (J. Wt.)

keaT?io

PARLIAMENTARY REGISTRATION. England. —Prior to 1832 the right of parliamentary electors was

| determined at the moment of the tender of the vote at the election,

or, in the event of a petition against the return, by a scrutiny, a committee of the House of Commous striking otf those whose qualification was held to be insufficient, and, on the other hand, adding those who, having tendcred their votes at the poll, with a good title to do so, were rejected at the time. A conspicuous feature of the Reform Act of that year was the introduction of a new mode of ascertaining the rights of electors by means of an entirely new system of published lists, subject to claims and objections, and after due inquiry and revision forming a register of voters. In forming a register the services of overseers, already existing in every parish, were called into requisition. As regards clectors in counties, principally freeholders and long-lease-holders and £50 tenant farmers, under the Chandos clause, overseers have no official knowledge of the persons qualified to vote. Their duty towards providing a register of county electors consisted in giving public notice, receiving claims and objections, and making out lists of them and forwarding them to the clerk of the peace. In boroughs their primary duty was to make out lists, their rate Looks as overseers giving tllem the knowledge of persons entitled under the Reform Act to vote as £10 rated occupiers, to which subsequent claims were added or objections made. In old boroughs where freemen were entitled, independently of the then new occupation franchise, tlle town clerk prepared the lists. Barristers were appointed to revise the lists,

which eventually formed the register of voters for the ensuing year for counties and boroughs.

This procedure still forms the basis of registration, but subject to important alterations since made. Although the Act of 1832 was most carefully drawn, its provisions minutely indicating every step to be taken for the formation of a register, accompanied by precise forms, it was found insufficient in practice ; and accord- ingly a Registration Act was passed in 1848 (6 & 7 Vict. c. 15), by which forms of precept were issued by clerks of the peace and town clerks to overseers, telling them in a compendious form what they were to do, and providing them with the necessary forms for all cases. The Representation of the People Act in 1867 introduced very important changes in the franchise,—in counties by introduc- ing an occupation qualification distinct from any previous descrip- tion of franchise either in county or borough, but having somewhat closer affinity to the £10 occupation in boroughs under the Reform Act of 1882 than to the £50 tenant occupation in counties under that Act. This county franchise was an occupation as owner or tenant of lands or tenements of the rateable value of £12, with the concomitants of rating to the poor rates and payment of rates; but the £12 occupation practically merged within it a large proportion of £50 tenaut occupiers. The alterations effected by the Act of 1867 in the borough franchise were much more extensive. In the

first place, the franchise was given to every inhabitant occupier as-

owner or tenaut of any dwelling house within the borough; but rating and payment of poor rates were made essential conditions of this franchise : part of a house occupied as a separate dwelling, if separately rated, was a sufficient dwelling house to confer the franchise. Notwithstanding the apparent effect of the general enfranchisement of inhabitant occupiers, a very considerable body still depended on the former £10 franchise in consequence of the distinction between residence and inhabitancy. Secondly, the Act gave the franchise to occupiers of lodgings of a yearly value (irre- spective of furniture) of £10. A Registration Act of the following year was in several important respects defective. With respect to two of the three new classes enfranchised in 1867 many doubts were

indeed removed by it. The overseers were required to make out a list of £12 occupiers in counties; on the other hand lodgers in boroughs were required under the Act of 1867 to claim to be registered. But with respect to the third class, the most numerous of all—the inhabitant occupiers in boroughs—the Act contained no direction. Notwithstanding attempts to meet these and various other defects, several years elapsed without any alteration being effected. In the meantime important electoral changes occurred. The alterations effected by the Act of 1867, besides those of qualifi- cation, the redistribution of seats, and the representation of minorities, followed by the Ballot Act of 1872, were succeeded by the innovation of mixing up regulations for the exercise of parlia- mentary with the municipal franchise, and led up to the fusion of the registration of the two franchises and the Parliamentary and Municipal Registration Act of 1878, introducing important changes both as regards the definition of the franchise in boroughs and the procedure in relation to registration. As regards the latter the changes recognized the combination of borough registration for the double purpose of parliamentary and municipal registration, and also the more ready preparation of accurate registers irrespective of the combination.

The legislation of 1884 and 1885 in relation to registration next requires noticc. The Representation of the Pcople Act, 1884,

riGeist & a rTion

enacted that a uniform household franchise and a uniform lodger franchise at elections shall be established in all counties and boroughs throughout the United Kingdom, aud every man pos- sessed of a household qualification or a lodger qualification shall, if the qualifying premises be situated in a county in England or Scot- land, be entitled to be registered as a voter, and, when registered, to vote at an election for such county, and, if the qualifying pre- mises be situated in a county or borough in Ireland, be entitled to be registercd as a voter and, when registered, to vote at an election for such county or borough.

A wain practical effect of the Act of 1884 was to extend to eounties the franchise previously confined to boroughs in respect of inhabitant occupiers of dwelling houses, and in respect of the occupation of

lodgings. At the same time the franchise in respect of occupation of lands and tenements (other than a household franchise) was assimilated in boroughs and counties and fixed at £10 a year. Independently of this extension to counties and assimilation of the household and lodger franchise, provision was made for extending the franchise to many cases of the inhabitancy of houses by persons who, in consequence of filling offices or serving others or of the tenure of the house, were deprived of the franchise, not being in law occupiers. This is commonly spoken of as the service franchise. On the other hand restrictions were placed on faggot votes in respect of rent charges. Moreover, a man is not entitled by virtue of the Act to be registered as a county voter in respect of the occupation of any dwelling house, land, or tenement situate in a borough. This Act was shortly followed by the Registration Act, 1885, assimilating the registration law applicable to the borough and county occupation franchises.

The procedure for the formation of the register, as well in counties as in boroughs, is still very complicated. In counties there are two classes of persons entitled to be registered—the one ownership voters, the other occupation voters. General but detailed instructions are sent by the clerk of the peace to overseers, accompanied by forms and copies of the existing register. On or before the 20th June the overseers publish the ownership portion of the then existing register for the parish, at the same time giving

notice in a prescribed form that all persons entitled to be registered |

in counties in respect of the ownership of property within the parish and not upon the register, or whose qualification or address has changed, who are desirous of having their names inserted in the register, must give notice to the overseers in a prescribed published form by the 20th July. A list of such ownership claimants is pub- lished by the end of July. The occupation voters now entitled in counties to be on the register comprise a £10 occupation qualifica- tion and principally a household qualification, and also a lodger qualification. 'The occupation list other than that of lodgers is made out and published by the overseers. They are required to get the information, and as this information cannot be gathered in many vases from the rate books, they may require rated persons to supply them

with the names of all inhabitaut occupiers of their dwelling houses so that such persons (including chiefly the ser- vice franchise already mentioned) may be entered in a separate column of the rate book. The lodger list is made out by the overseers from an existing list, if there be one (for in counties there can be no existing list before 1886), and by claims. In cities and boroughs the franchises (where there are no freemen) are chiefly occupation franchises, and the same general system of registration prevails as in counties in relation to the registration or occupation franchises.

With the exception of the provisions relating to the so-called service franchise already noticed, registration procedure has not been much changed by the legislation of 1884 and 1885, and in counties as well as in boroughs it mainly rests still on the Regis- tration Act of 1848. Overseers receive their precepts in boroughs from the town clerk, as they do in counties from the clerks of the peace, and the town clerk deals with the lists of freemen where that description of franchise exists. As the household occupation and lodger franchises were introduced into boroughs in 1867, the pre- paration and publication of lists as to occupation franchises rests principally on the same procedure in counties and boroughs.

Ample facilities are given for fresh and amended claims and for objections made (by any one on the register) to the overseers by the 20th August and published by them in lists; and, where payment of poor rates is essential, not necessarily by the voter, but by some one (as in some occupation franchises it is), a list of persons dis- qualified is-made out and open to inspection. While the actual exercise of the franchise is governed by the duration of the register (which in the absence of special legislation, as adopted for 1868 and for 1885, is in force for the ordinary year, viz., from 1st January), every period of qualification is computed by reference to the 15th July; the qualification must be complete on that day, whether or not it comprises a possession or occupation for a previous definite fixed period. When payment of poor rates is part of a qualification, payment before the 15th July of rates payable to the 15th January is sufficient. Disqualifications generally refcr to their existence at

months of the 15th July disqualifies. Even with regard to dis-qualification by office, which may be transitory and disconnected with the qualifying franchise, the existence of the disqualification on the 15th July isa bar to registration. Where a man is registered by virtue of one qualification he cannot be also registered to vote by reason of another in respect of the same property, and a qualification franchise under the Representation of the People Act, 1884, gene- rally overrides another description of qualification ; but fine distinc- tions sometimes exist between inhabitancy and residence in relation to different qualifications affecting the right to be on the register in respect of one description of occupation franchise rather than another. Ina borough divided under the Redistribution of Scats

. Act, 1885, a person cannot be registered in more than one division.

The duties of overseers in reference to registration extend froin spring toautumn. By the 25th of August the lists are delivered by them to the clerk of the peace in counties, and in boroughs to the town clerk. Barristers are appointed to revise the lists and hold courts for that purpose (and also for revising the municipal franchise) between the 15th September and 31st October, giving notice to the clerks of the peace in counties and town clerks of boroughs, who publish notice of the sittings appointed and attend and deliver the lists, the overseers also attending. They hold open courts (the localities including all polling places in counties) on appointed 'days, with evening sittings in populous places, with general powers of adjournment. Aright of appeal exists from a revising barrister's decision on the points of law, by a claimant or objector, to judges of the High Court of Justice. Whether the right of appeal is exercised or not, the lists, as settled and signed by the barrister, are transmitted by him to the clerk of the peace or town clerk as the case may be. The lists are copied and printed in such manner and form that the list of voters for every parish appeais separately and with reference to polling places. By the end of December the printed lists signed by the clerk of the peace are delivered to the sheriff of the county, and signed borough lists are delivered by the town clerk to the returning officer. The

register is thus completed, and the book constitutes the register of persons entitled to vote for the county or borough to which it relates at any election which takes place during the year commenc- ing on the Ist January next after such register is made.

For some years after the passing of the Reform Act, 1832, an elector was allowed, previous to voting, to be interrogated as to the possession of the qualification for which his name was inserted on the register; but since 1843 no inquiry is permitted at the time of polling as to the right of any person to vote, except as to his identity with the name appearing on the register and as to his having already voted ; he may be required to give his answers on oath, but without an oath a false answer wilfully made is an indictable misdemeanour. With this exception it is unlawful to require any voter to take an oath in proof of his qualification or right to vote, or to reject any vote tendered by any person whose name is upon the register ; and no scrutiny is allowed by or before any returning officer with regard to any vote given or tendered at an election. A great effort, partially successful, was made in 1885 to transfer the cost of forming the register from local to imperial funds. A part of the cost is now borne by the state. The remuneration of revising barristers is paid by the treasury.

Scotland.—In Scotland as in England a system of registration was established in 1832 (2 & 3 Will. IV. c. 65), and, passing over amendments on the extension and assimilation of county and burgh franchises by the Representation of the People Act, 1884, establishing a general household qualification in the United Kingdom, the principles of registration adopted in England by the Registration Act, 1885, were applied with some modifications to Scotland by the Registration Amendment (Scotland) Act, 1885. An annual revision of the register (founded on the valuation roll) is made by appointed officers, with the publication of lists and of names of parties interested making claims and objections. Instead, however, of the duties of publication and primary correction being in the hands of the parish officers, as in England, those duties devolve as before on assessors (aided in burghs by the town clerks), who make up the register. The duties of final revision: devolve on the sheriff, who authenticates the register, and it is delivered to the sheriff clerk with the names duly arranged. The

principal expenses of registration are provided from local or county sources, with a contribution from imperial funds.

Treland.—In Ireland also the registration of voters was a feature of the reform in parliament effected in 1832, and the same general features as to the formation and amendment of the register prevail as in England. The extension and assimilation of the franchise by the Representation of the People Act, 1884, is carried out by the Parliamentary Registration (Ireland) Act, 1885, on the same lines as before, only adapted to peculiar exigencies. Clerks of poor-law unions have still many of the dutics of parochial officers in England. Prominent among recent divergencies is the proviso that temporary eviction for non-payment of rent followed by

the same date. As regards parochial relief, any relief within twelve | reinstalment does not disqualify a claim to occupation franchise.

Revision is made at spécial sessions before assistant barristcrs, or, in counties, before the chairman. The register, when com- pleted, is placed in the hands of the sheriff in countics and of the returning officer in boroughs. The expenses of registration a —o from local sources, with a contribution from imperial unds.

Universities. —The Reform Act of 1832 made no change in the university representation. Special provisions affect the electoral roll of universities returning members of parliament.

London Freemen.—There are also special provisions as to the registration of freemen in the City of London. (J. E. D.)

REGNARD, Jean Francois (1656-1709), who in general estimation ranks next to Moliére among French comic dramatists, was born at Paris in 1656, and during at least the earlier part of his life had a singularly adven- turous career considering his time, station, and couutry. His father was a rich shopkeeper, who educated his son carefully, and died

when he was about twenty, leaving Regnard master of what was for the time a considerable fortune. Regnard, who was apparently beyond his day in affection for travelling, set off at once for Italy and there gambled perseveringly. A young tradesman's son in such circumstances ought, according to precedent and poetical justice, to have been fleeced to his last penny; but Regnard, according to the story, increased his fortune by ten thousand crowns. In Italy (on his second visit accord- ing to some authorities) he met and fell in love witha young married lady of Provengal birth. With her and her husband (it is difficult not to believe that biographers have taken the facts of a short autobiographical romance which Regnard wrote, under the title of La Provencale, rather literally) he set out for France on board an English frigate. This was attacked by two Algerian rovers; the captain and the crew were cut to pieces, and the passengers taken to Algiers and sold. Regnard, who, being skilful in cookery, was a valuable slave, is said to have been taken by his master to Constantinople, but after about two years' cap- tivity he was ransomed with his lady love for twelve thousand livres. The husband was supposed to be dead, and Regnard was preparing to marry the widow when a proper time of mourning had elapsed, but the husband reappeared and the lover was disappointed. The disappointment set him once more on a roving life, and he journeyed by Holland, Denmark, and Sweden to Lapland, and thence by Poland, Turkey, Hungary, and Germany back to France, having commemorated what was then the somewhat extra- ordinary feat of visiting the head of the Gulf of Bothnia by a Latin inscription on the rocks, which was visible thirty years later. He returned to Parisat the end of 1683. He now appears to have entirely exhausted his roving inclina- tions, and for the second half of his life (for this date of December 1683 nearly bisects it) his existence, if not exactly sedentary, was divided between luxury and letters. He bought the place of treasurer of France in the Paris district; he had a house at Paris in the Rue Richelieu; and he acquired the small estate of Grillon near Dourdan (about equidistant between Rambouillet and Fontainebleau), where he hunted, feasted, and wrote comedies. This latter amusement he began in 1688 with a piece called Le Divorce, which was performed at the Thédtre Italien, and followed it up with many other small pieces, which are not, however, his titles to fame. He gained access to the Théatre Frangais in 1694 with a slight piece called Attendez- mot sous Orme, and two years

later produced there the masterly comedy of Le Joueur, in reference to which his ally Dufresny attempted to make out a charge of plagiar- ism. Le Distrait (1697), Le Retour Imprévu (1700), Les Folies Amoureuses (1704), Les Menéchmes (1705), a clever following of Plautus, and, lastly, his masterpiece, Le Légataire Universel (1708), with one or two less meritorious pieces, were also produced at the Frangais.

Regnard's death, after a quarter of a century of quiet

living, renews the doubtful and romantic circumstances of his earlier life. Some hint at poison; there is a wild and wonderful story of his having deliberately made up a pre- scription of horse medicine for himself and taken it with fatal consequences ; while other more prosaic accounts give as the cause of death his having gone out hunting while under an ordinary course of treatment, and on his return, when much heated, having swallowed a large quantity of iced water. At any rate he died on the 4th September 1702. z

Besides the plays noticed above and others, Regnard wrote a cer- tain number of miscellaneous poems, the above-mentioned novel of La Provencale, and several short accounts in prose of his travels. He quarrelled with Boileau and was reconciled with him, owing to which fact the expressions of that critic concerning Regnard's literary merit were not wholly consistent, The saying, however, which is attributed to him when some one, thinking to curry favour, remarked that Regnard was only a mediocre poet, "Il n'est pas médiocrement gai," is both true and very appropriate. Regnard's verse is not particularly good (in his non-dramatic work it is some- times positively bad), and his French style, especially in his purely prose works, is not considered faultless. He is often unoriginal in his plots, and, whether Dufresny was or was not justified in his com- plaint about Le Joueur, it seems likely that Regnard owed not a little to him and to others; but he had a thorough grasp of comic situation and incident and a most amusing faculty of dialogue. He is often not far from the verge of farce, but he certainly might plead Moliére's cxainple in this respect. There is no trace in him of Moliére's ethical value, and he is seldom a serious critic of society and life, while in point of refinement of

incident and language his drama is a distinct relapse from his master's. But there are few things in artificial comedy more amusing and more dexterously managed than the series of devices whereby the miserly uncle of Le Légataire Universel is brought to make his nephew rich and happy.

The first edition of Regnard's complete works was published in 1731 (6 vols., Paris), one of the last in 1854 (2 vols.). There is a good selection of almost every- thing important in the Colleetion Didot.

REGNAULT, Henri (1843-1871), French painter, born at Paris on the 3lst October 1843, was the son of Henri Victor Regnault (noticed below). On leaving school he successively entered the studios of Montfort, Lamothe, and Cabanel, was beaten for the Great Prize (1863) by Layraud and Montchablon, and in 1864 exhibited two portraits in no wise remarkable at the Salon. Nothing, in short, produced by Regnault up to 1866 led men to suspect the brilliancy of his endowments, but in that year he made a mark, carrying off the Great Prize with a work of unusual force and distinction—Thetis bringing the Arms forged by Vulcan to Achilles (School of the Fine Arts). The past and the works of the past in Italy did not touch him, but his illustrations to Wey's Rome show how observant he was of actual life and manners; even his Automedon (School of Fine Arts), executed in obedience to Academical regulations, was but a lively recollection of a carnival horse race. At Rome, moreover, Regnault came into contact with the modern Hispano-Italian school, a school highly materialistic in its aims and tendencies, and inclined to regard even the human subject only as one amongst many sources whence to obtain amusement for the eye. The vital, if narrow, energy of this school told on Regnault with ever-increasing force during the few remaining years of his life. In 1868 he had sent to the Salon a life-size portrait of a lady in which he had made one of the first attempts to render the actual character of fashionable modern life, and, on his return from a visit to the exhibition, he seized the opportunity of making a tour in Spain. There he saw Prim pass at the head of his troops, and received that lively image of a military demagogue which he afterwards put on canvas somewhat to the displeasure of his subject. But this work made an appeal to the imagination of the public, whilst all the later productions of Regnault were addressed exclusively to the eye. After a further flight to

Africa, abridged by the necessities of his position as a pensioner of the school of Rome, he painted Judith, then (1870) Salome, and, as

RE G—

a work due from the Roman school, despatched from Tangiers the large canvas, Execution without Hearing under the Moorish Kings, in which the painter had played with the blood of the victim as were he a jeweller toying with rubies. The war arose, and found Regnault foremost in the devoted ranks of Buzenval, where he fell on January Bo, 1871.

See Correspondance de H. Regnault; Dupare, H. Regnault, sa vie et son euvre; Cazalis, H. Regnault, 1843-1871; Bailliere, Les artistes

de mon temps; ©. Blanc, H. Regnault; P. Mantz, Gazetie du Beaux Arts, 1872.

REGNAULT, Henri Victor (1811-1878), was born on July 21, 1811, at Aix-la-Chapelle. His early life was a struggle with poverty. When a boy he went to Paris, and after a time succeeded in obtaining a situation in a large drapery establishment, where he remained, occupying every spare hour in study, until he was in his twentieth year. 'Then he entered the Ecole Polytechnique, and, after making the best use of his increased opportunities, passed in 1832 to the Hcole des Mines, where he developed an aptitude for experimental chemistry.

A few years later he was appointed to a professorship of chemistry at Lyons, and devoted himself to research amongst organic compounds. He paid little attention to theories and cared only for facts; but, by his unequivocal proof of the substitution of chlorine for hydrogen in hydro-carbons, he greatly assisted his countrymen Laurent and Dumas in establishing the type-theory of organic com- pounds. Regnault's most important chemical work was a series of researches, commenced in 1835, on the haloid and other derivatives of unsaturated hydrocarbons. This made him the discoverer of the vinyl group of compounds, car- bon tetrachloride (CCl,), and of perchlorether (C,Cl,,0). He studied many of the natural alkaloids and organic acids, introduced a classification of the metals according to the facility with which they or their sulphides are

oxidized by steam at high temperatures, and effected a comparison of the chemical composition of atmospheric air from all parts of the world. .

In 1840 Regnault was recalled to Paris by his appoint- ment to the chair of chemistry in the Ecole Polytechnique ; at the same time he was elected a member of the Academie des Sciences, in the chemical section, in room of M. Robiquet ; and in the following year he became professor of physics in the Collége de France, there succeeding Dulong, his old master, and in many respects his model. From this time Regnault devoted almost all his attention to practical physics ; but in 1847 he published a four-volume treatise on Chemistry which was highly esteemed and has been translated into many languages.

Regnault is perhaps best known by his careful redeter- mination of the specific heats of all the elements obtainable, and of many compounds—solids, liquids, and gases—by which he was enabled to correct the values obtained by Dulong and Petit, and to reduce the number of exceptions to their law that the specific heat of an element varies inversely as its atomic weight, and of a compound as tts molecular weight. He investigated the expansibility of gases by heat, determined the coefficient for air as 003663, and showed that, contrary to previous opinion, no two gases had precisely the same rate of expansion. By numerous delicate experiments he proved Boyle's law that the volume of a gas ts inversely as the pressure it supports to be only approximately true, and that those gases which are most readily liquefied diverge most widely from obedience to the law. Regnault studied the whole subject of thermometry critically; he introduced the use of an accurate air-ther- mometer, and compared its indications with those of a mercurial thermometer, determining the absolute dilatation of mercury by heat as a step in the process. He also paid

attention to hygrometry and devised a hygrometer in which a cooled metal surface is used for the deposition of moisture.

In 1854 he was appointed to succeed Ebelnian as director of the celebrated porcelain manufactory at Sévres. He carried on the great

research on the expansion of gases in the laboratory at Sévres, but all the results of his latest work were destroyed during the Franco-German War, in which also his son Henri (noticed above) was killed. Regnault never recovered the double blow, and, although he lived until January 19, 1878, his scientific labours ended in 1872. He wrote more than eighty papers on scientific subjects, and he made fine researches, many of them of importance, in conjunction with other workers. His greatest work, bearing on the practical treatment of steam-engines, forms vol. xxi. of the Mémotres de Académie des Sciences.

Regnault was great as a laborious worker ; in all his researches he overeame every difficulty by his determined perseverance, his un- usual natural ingenuity in devising apparatus, and his rare power of manipulation. Although few discoveries are associated with his name, the mass of physical constants which he determined with the utmost aceuracy constitutes a powerful instrument of further advance, and the thorough training which he gave his students has provided many painstaking and exact workers in the field of physics.

REGNAULT, Jean Baptiste, French painter, was born at Paris on 9th October 1754, and died in the same city on November 12, 1829. He began life at sea in a mer- chant vessel, but at the age of fifteen his talent attracted attention and he was sent to Italy by M. de Monval under the care of Bardin. After his return to Paris, Regnault, in 1776, obtained the Great Prize, and in 1783 he was elected Academician. His diploma picture, the Education of Achilles by Chiron, is now in the Louvre, as also the Christ taken down from the Cross, originally executed for the royal chapel at Fontainebleau, and two minor works— the Origin of Painting and Pygmalion praying Venus to give Life to his Statue. Besides various small pictures and allegorical subjects, Regnault was also the author of many large historical paintings; and his school, which reckoned amongst its chief attendants Guérin, Crepin, Lafitte, Blondel, Robert Lefevre, and Menjaud, was for a long while the rival in influence of that of David.

REGNIER, Matuorin (1573-1613), the greatest satirist of France, was born at Chartres on the 21st December 1573. His father, Jacques Regnier, was a bourgeois of good means and position; his mother, Simonne

Desportes, was the sister of the poetical Abbé Desportes, one of the most distinguished of the disciples of Ronsard. Desportes, who was richly beneficed and in great favour at court, seems to have been regarded at once as Mathurin Regnier's natural protector and patron, and the boy himself, with a view to his following in his uncle's steps, was tonsured at nine years old. It appears that Jacques Regnier, at any rate for a time, encouraged his son to imitate his uncle in poetry also, though he afterwards changed his views. The boy was somewhat early introduced to general society of the jovial kind, for his father built a tennis court at the end of his garden which became semi- public and was much frequented. The poet's enemies said that his father had been a common gaming-house keeper, and that the court was built with the ruins of some church property ; but this seems to be mere scandal. Little is known of his youth, and it is chiefly conjecture which fixes the date of his visit to Italy in the suite of the Cardinal de Joyeuse in 1586. Others give 1583 and 1593, but the former date is certainly too early, and the latter pro- bably too late. Indeed the greatest uncertainty exists as to the dates and incidents of Regnier's short life, and his biographers hitherto have chiefly busied themselves in

upsetting each others' facts without supplying fresh details of an authentic character. It is commonly said that the poet, finding Joyeuse an inactive or unwilling patron, trans- ferred his services to Philippe de Bethune, Sully's brother, who went as ambassador to Rome in 1601; but this seems doubtful, for one of the very few positive documents con- cerning Regnier speaks of him as still in Joyeuse's service a year later. What is generally certain is that during the greater part of his youth he lived partly in Paris and partly in Italy, after a somewhat idle and very dissipated fashion. He early began the practice of satirical writing, and the enmity which existed between his uncle Desportes and the poet Malherbe gave him occasion to attack the latter in some of his very best verses. It has been generally said that Regnier obtained full possession of a canonry at Chartres, to the reversion of which he had been appointed when a child, in 1604, and a singular legend is told of the immediate circumstances ; but the formal registry of admission signed by himself is

extant, and is dated 1609, a further instance of the uncertainty which prevails respecting him. In 1606 Desportes died, leaving nothing to Regnier, though they seem to have been on excellent terms to the last. The poet was even disappointed of the succession to Desportes's abbacies, but he obtained a pension (the amount as usual variously stated at 2000 and 6000 livres) chargeable upon one of them, by the influence of the Marquis de Coeuvres, afterwards Maréchal d'Estrées, the brother of Henry IV.'s Gabrielle. He also became a great favourite with his bishop, Philippe Hurault, at whose abbacy of Royaumont Regnier spent much time in the later years of his life. On the other hand the death of Henry IV. deprived him

of his last hope of great preferments, and appears to have |

considerably soured his temper. He did not long survive the king. His life had always been one of dissipation, or, to speak frankly, debauchery, and in the autumn of 1613 he went to Rouen to put himself under the care of a quack doctor. An apparent cure was followed by a feast at which the patient drank his physician's health too freely in strong Spanish wine, and died of pleurisy or fever at his hotel, the Ecu d'Orléans, on the 13th October. His body was disembowelled and the entrails deposited in the parish church, that of St Marie Mineure, the other remains being carried to Royaumont and buried there.

Such is the meagre amount of positive knowledge respecting one of the greatest poets of France. Nor can it be said that Regnicr's literary history is quite aecurately ascertained, though it is less dubious than his personal. The period immediatcly preceding and following his dcath was a period of numerous collections of licentious and satirical poems, some published, some still remaining in manuscript. Gathered from these therc has been a floating mass of epigrams, &c., attributed to Regnier, few of which are certainly authentic, and most of which do no particular credit to his memory. On these editors of his works have cxercised freely the right of acceptance or rejection, so that it is very rare to find two editions of Regnier which exactly agree in contents. His acknowledged or undoubted work, however, is that on which his fame rests, and it falls into three classes :—regular satires in alexandrine couplets, serious poems in

various metres, and satirical or jocular epigrams and light pieces, which oftcn, if not always, exhibit considerable licence of language. This latter class is, however, much the least important in every way. The real greatness of Regnier consists in

the vigour and polish of his satires, contrasted and heightened as | that vigour is with the exquisite feeling and melancholy music of | In the latter Regnier is a disciple of |

some of his minor poems. Ronsard (whom he defended brilliantly against Malherbe), without the occasional pedautry, the affectation, or the undue fluency of the Pléiade, but in the satires he had hardly any master (Vauquelin de la Fresnaye and Agrippa d'Aubigné, who preceded him in point of composition, did not publish their satires until later) except the ancients. He has sometimes followed Horace closely, but always in an entirely original spirit. His vocabulary is varied and picturesque, but is not marred by the maladroit classicism of somc of the Ronsardists. His verse is extraordinarily forcible and nervous, but what distinguishes him especially from most satirists is the way in which he gets the bettcr of what may be called the commonplaces of satire, and to a great extent at any

rate avoids the tendency of all French poetry to run into types. His keen and accurate knowledge of human nature and even his purely literary qualities extorted the admiration of Boileau— usually the severest of critics iu regard to all poets of the preeeding age except Malherbe. Rcgnier, moreover, in respect of Malherbe has himself displayed remarkable independence and acuteness of literary criticism, and the famous passage in which he satirizcs the poet of Caen contains the best denunciation of the merely " correct" theory of poetry that has ever been written. Lastly, Regnier had a most unusual descriptive faculty, and the vividness of what may be called his narrative satires was not approaclicd in France for at least two centuries after his death. All his merits are displayed in the masterpiece entitled Macetie ow Ul Hypocrisic déconcertée, but hardly any one of the sixteen satires which he has left falls below even a very high standard. In general it may be said that

Regnier is the last poet who shows the poetic faculties of the French tongue before the classical reforms of the 17th century had cramped and curtailed them, and that he shows these faculties in something like perfection.

The first edition of Regnier's satires appeared in 1608 published by Gabriel Buon. There was another in 1609, and another in 1612. The author had also eontributed to two collections—Les Muses Gaillardes in 1609 and Le Temple @'Apolion in 1611. In the year of his death (1613) a eompleter collection appeared, and another in 1616. The chief editions of the 18th eentury are that of Brossette (1729), which supplies the standard eommentary on Regnier, and that of Lenglet Dufresnoy (1733). Recently the poet has been frequently and carefully reprinted. The editions of Prosper Poitevin in 1860, of M. de Barthélemy in 1862, and of M. Courbet in 1875 may be specially mentioned. The last, printed after the originals in italie type, and well edited, is perhaps the best, as M. de Barthélemy's is the fullest, of recent eopies.

REGULUS, Marcus Atitius, was consul for the second time in the ninth year of the First Punic War (256 3.c.), and so was one of the commanders in the great naval expedi- tion which shattered the Carthaginian fleet and success- fully landed an army on Carthaginian territory at Clupea. At first the invaders had such success that half the army and the other consul Manlius could be recalled to Rome, and yet leave good hope that Regulus with the insurgent Numidian subjects of the Phcenicians would finish the war in the second canipaign. But Carthage, which had found an able general in the Spartan Xanthippus, used the winter to such good account that in the spring of 255 Regulus was decidedly inferior in strength, and, hazarding a pitched battle on ground favourable to the enemy, had his army cut to pieces and was himself taken captive. Regulus perished in captivity, and was supposed at Rome to have been done to death : according to the common story he was sent to Rome on parole to negotiate a peace or ex- change of prisoners, but on his arrival strongly urged the senate to refuse both proposals, and returning to Carthage was slain with horrid tortures. This is the story so elo- quently told by Horace (Carm. iii. 5), and which made Regulus to the later Romans the type of

heroic endurance in misfortune ; but most critical historians regard it as insufficiently attested, Polybius being silent.

REICHA, Anton JosepH (1770-1836), musical theorist and teacher of composition, was born at Prague, February 27, 1770, and educated chiefly by his uncle, Joseph Reicha (1746-1795), a clever violoncellist, who first received him into his house at Wallerstein in Bohemia, and afterwards carried him to Bonn. He studied hard, and began to compose at a very early age,— producing, during the course of a long and active life, a vast quantity of church music, five operas, a number of symphonies, oratorios, and many miscellaneous works. Though clever and ingenious, his compositions are more remarkable for their novelty than for the beauty of the ideas upon which they are based, and display but little of the divine fire which alone can render works of art immortal. His fame is, indeed, more securely based upon his didactic works than upon the results of his theories as exemplified in his own productions. His Traité de Mélodie (Paris, 1814), Cours de Composition Musicale (Paris, 1818), Traité de Haute Composition Musicale (Paris, 1824— 1826), and Art du Compositeur Dramatique (Paris, 1833) are valuable and instructive essays, containing much that is new and interesting ; and, though many of the theories they

set forth are now condemned as erroneous, they can scarcely be read without profit to the student.

Reicha first visited Paris in 1799. In 1802 he removed to Vienna, where he spent some happy years in close intercourse with Beethoven, and the veteran Haydn. His permanent settlement at Paris took place in 1808. In 1817 he succeeded Méhul as professor of counterpoint at the Conservatoire. In 1831 he was made a knight of the Legion of Honour; and in 1835 he was admitted as a member of the Institute in the place of Boieldieu. He died at Paris, May 28, 1836.

REICHENAU, a picturesque island in the Untersee or western arm of the lake of Constance, is 3 miles in length by 1 in breadth, and is connected with the east bank by a causeway three quarters of a mile long. It belongs to the duchy of Baden, and comprises the three parishes of Ober- zell, Mittelzell, and Unterzell, with a joint population of 1463 in 1880. The soil is very fertile, and excellent wine is produced in sufficient quantity for exportation. The Benedictine abbey of Reichenau, founded in 724, was long celebrated for its wealth and for the services rendered by its monks to the cause of learning. In 1538 the abbey, which had previously been independent, was subordinated to the see of Constance, and in 1799 it was secularized. The abbey church, dating in part from the 9th century, contains the tomb of Charles the Fat, who retired to this island in 887, after losing the empire of Charlemagne. It now serves as the parish church of Mittelzell, and the churches of Oberzell and Unterzell are also interesting buildings of the Carlovingian era.

REICHENBACH, a manufacturing town of Saxony, in the province of Zwickau, lies in the hilly district known as the Voigtland, 50 miles to the south of Leipsic. The chief industrial products are woollen cloth, merino, cashmere, flannel, and shawls. Its importance is of recent origin, and the population, amounting to 16,509 in 1880, has trebled itself within the last fifty years. The earliest notice of the town occurs in a document of 1212, and it acquired municipal rights in 1367.

REICHENBACH, a cotton-manufacturing town of Prus- sian Silesia, with 7225 inhabitants (1880) and an old castle, lies 30 miles to the south-south-west of Breslau, and demands mention chiefly from its connexion with several important historical events. In 1762 Frederick the Great gained a victory here over the Austrians ; by the Reichen- bach convention of 1790 England and the other powers guaranteed the subsistence of the Turkish empire; and in 1813 a treaty, afterwards ratified at Prague, was con- cluded here between Austria and the allies.

REICHENBACH, Grore von (1772-1826), astrono- mical instrument maker, was born at Durlach in Baden on August 24, 1772. He first served as an officer of artillery, and afterwards held several civil appointments in Bavaria, Already from 1796 he was occupied with the construction of a

dividing engine; in 1804 he founded, with Liebherr and Utzschneider, an instrument- making business in Munich; and in 1809 he established, with Fraunhofer and Utzschneider, equally important optical works at Benedictbeuern, which were moved to Munich in 1823. He withdrew from both enterprises in 1814, and founded with Ertel a new optical business, from which also he retired in 1820. He died at Munich on May 21, 1826.

Reichenbach's principal merit is his having introduced into observatories the meridian or transit eircle, eombining the transit instrument and the mural circle into one instrument. This had already been done by Roemer about 1704, but the idea had not been adopted by any one else, the only exception being the transit circle constructed by Troughton for Groombridge in 1806. The trausit eirele in the form given it by Reichenbaeh had one finely- divided eirele attached to one end of the horizontal axis and read

by four verniers on an " Alhidade Circle," the unaltered position of which was tested bya spirit level. The instrument came almost at once into universal use on the Continent (the first one was made for Bessel in 1819), but in England the mural eircle and transit instrument were not superseded for many years.

REICHENBERG (Bohem. Zzberec), a town of Bohemia, with an independent jurisdiction, lies on the Neisse, about 50 miles to the north-east of Prague and not far from the Saxon and Prussian frontiers. It is the centre of the important cloth manufacture of northern Bohemia, and is the third town of Bohemia in size and the second in industrial importance. Its cloth factories employ about 7000 workpeople and produce goods to the annual value of upwards of a million sterling, while weaving is also extensively prosecuted as a domestic industry. Other important manufactures are cotton, yarn, machinery, and liqueur. 'Trade is carried on in the raw materials and finished products of the various industries. The most prominent buildings are the town-house, of 1601; the chateau of Count Clam Gallas; the Dekanalkirche, of the 16th century; the Protestant church, a handsome modern Romanesque edifice

; the hall of the cloth-workers ; the new law courts; the new theatre; and the weaving school. The population in 1880 was 28,090.

Reichenberg is first mentioned in a document of 1348, and from 1622 to 1634 was among the possessions of the great Wallenstein, since whose death it has belonged to the Gallas and Clam Gallas families. The woollen industry was introduced about the middle of the 16th century. In 1866 Reichenberg was the headquarters of Prinee Charles Frederick of Prussia.

REICHENHALL, a small town and watering-place of Upper Bavaria, is finely situated in an amphitheatre of lofty mountains, on the river Saale or Saalach, 1570 feet above the level of the sea and 9 miles to the south-west of Salzburg. As indicated by its name, in which the syllable hall corresponds, according to a well-known linguistic law, to the Latin sal, Reichenhall possesses several copious saline springs, producing upwards of 11,500 tons of salt per annum. The water of some of the springs, the sources of which are 50 feet below the surface of the soil, is so strongly saturated with salt (up to 24 per cent.) that it is at once conducted to the boiling houses, while that of the others is first submitted to a process of evaporation. Reichenhall is the centre of the four chief Bavarian salt-works, which are connected with each other by brine con- duits having an aggregate length of 60 miles. The surplus brine of Berchtesgaden is conducted to Reichenhall, and thence, in increased volume, to Traunstein and Rosenheim, which possess larger supplies of timber for use as fuel in the process of boiling. Since 1846 Reichenhall has become one of the most fashionable spas in Germany, and it is now visited annually by about five thousand patients, besides many thousand passing tourists. The resident population in 1880 was 3271, almost all Roman Catholics. The saline springs are used both for drinking and bathing, and are said to be efficacious in scrofula and incipient tuberculosis. In addition to numerous large hotels, the most' prominent edifices are the Romanesque church, recently restored, and the handsome and extensive build- ings of the salt-works.

The brine springs of Reichenhall are mentioned in a document of the 8th century, and were perhaps known to the Romans ; but almost all trace of

the antiquity of the town was destroyed by a conflagration in 1834. The brine conduit to Traunstein dates

from 1618. The environs abound in numerous eharming Alpine exeursions.

REICHSTADT, Duke or. See Napoteon II. (vol. xvii. p. 226). The title is derived from the little town of Reichstadt in northern Bohemia.

REID, Mayne (1818-1883), captain in the United States army, was in his generation one of the most popular of writers of stories of adventure. His own early life was

as adventurous as any boy reader of his novels could desire. He was a native of Ulster, born in 1818, and was educated for the church, but, disliking the prospect of a regular pro- fession, went to America at the age of twenty in search of excitement and fortune. Among other experiences he made trading excursions on the Red River, and studied the ways of the retiring red man and the white pioneer on the spot. He made acquaintance with the Missouri in the same prac- tical manner, and roved about through all the States of the Union. When the war with Mexico broke out in 1845 he obtained a commission, was present at the siege and capture of Vera Cruz, and leda forlorn hope at Chapultepec. In one of his novels he says that he believed theoretically in the military value of untrained troops, and that he had found his theories confirmed in actual warfare. But, though he saw a good deal of service in America, he was disappointed in his plans for taking part in a conflict with the regular troops of a European country. An enthusiastic republican, he offered his services to the Hungarian insurgents in 1849, raised a body of volunteers, and sailed for Europe, but arrived too late. Thereafter he settled in England, and began his career of a novelist in 1849 with the Rifle Rangers. This was followed next year by the Scalp Hunters. He never surpassed his first productions, except perhaps in Zhe White Chief (1855) and The Quadroon (1856); but he continued to produce tales of self-reliant enterprise and exciting adventure with great fertility. Simplicity of plot and easy variety of exciting incident are among the merits that

contribute to his popularity with boys. His reflexions are not profound, but are frequently more sensible than might be presumed at first sight from his aggressive manner of expressing them. He died in London, October 22, 1883.

REID, Tuomas (1710-1796), the chief founder of what is generally designated the Scottish school of philo- sophy, was born at Strachan in Kincardineshire, about 20 miles from Aberdeen, on the 26th April 1710. His father was minister of the place for fifty years, and traced his descent from a long line of Presbyterian ministers on Deeside. His mother belonged to the brilliant family of the Gregorys, which gave so many representatives to literature and science in Scotland last century. After two years at the parish school of Kincardine, Thomas Reid entered Marischal College, Aberdeen, in 1722. He was instructed in philosophy by Dr George Turnbull, in his day a voluminous and versatile writer, but now almost entirely forgotten. Turnbull's teaching would appear, from the account given of it by M'Cosh, to have antici- pated and suggested certain characteristics of Reid's sub- sequent theory. Reid graduated in 1726 at the early age of sixteen, but remained in Aberdeen as librarian to the university for ten years longer. This may be looked upon as his real student-time, and it seems to have been largely devoted to mathematical reading. In 1737 he was pre- sented to the living of Newmachar near Aberdeen. The parishioners, being violently excited at the time about the law of patronage, received Reid with open hostility ; and tradition asserts that, during the preaching of his first sermon, an uncle who lived near defended him on the pulpit stair with a drawn sword. But before he left the parish he was completely successful in winning the affections of his people. He was, however, nowise dis- tinguished as a preacher, being accustomed "from a dis- trust in his own powers," as Stewart puts it, "to preach the sermons of Dr Tillotson and of Dr Evans." The greater part of his time was given to study; and, insti- gated by the publication of Hume's treatise, he now turned his chief attention to philosophy, and in particular to the theory of external perception. His first publica- tion, however, which dealt with a question of philosophical

ID

method suggested by the reading of Hutcheson, was more nearly allied to his mathematical studies. The '" Essay on Quantity, occasioned by reading a Treatise in which Simple and Compound Ratios are applied to Virtue and Merit," denies that a mathematical treatment of moral subjects is possible. The essay appeared in the 7'ransac- tions of the Royal Society for the year 1748. Before this, in 1740, Reid had married a cousin of his own, the daughter of a London physician. In 1752 the professors of King's College, Aberdeen, elected him to the chair of philosophy, which he held for the next twelve years. The foundation of the Aberdeen Philosophical Society, which numbered among its members Canipbell, Beattie, Gerard, and Dr John Gregory, was mainly owing to the exertions of Reid, who was secretary for the first year (1758). Many of the subjects of discussion were drawn from Hume's speculations ; and during the last years of his stay in Aberdeen Reid propounded his new point of view in several papers read before the society. Thus we find from the minutes that on the 13th and 26th of July 1758 Mr Reid "handled" the following questions :— "Are the objects of the human mind properly divided into impressions and ideas? And must every idea be a copy of a preceding impression?" The reply to Hume which these titles foreshadow was embodied by Reid in his Enguiry into the Human Mind on the Principles of Common Sense, published in 1764. The Enquiry does not go beyond an analysis of sense perception, and is therefore more limited in its scope than the later Essays; but if the latter are sometimes more mature, there is more freshness about the earlier work. The same year saw Reid's removal from Aberdeen to the professorship of moral philosophy in the university of Glasgow, where he succeeded Adam Smith. This position he continued to hold till 1781, when he resigned his chair in order to give his undivided energies to completing a systematic exposition of his philosophy. As a public teacher, Reid did not possess the eloquence and charm of manner which afterwards characterized both Stewart and Brown. Stewart's account of his lecturing, which may be pre- sumed to be favourable, mentions only the "silent and respectful attention" which was accorded to "the sim- plicity and perspicuity of his style" and "the gravity and authority of his character." Reid's philosophical influence was mainly exerted through his writings, and, at second hand, through the eloquent treatment which his doctrines received at the hands of Dugald Stewart, and the learning which Hamilton subsequently devoted to their

elucidation. The Essays on the Intellectual Powers of Man appeared in 1785, and their ethical complement, the Lssays on the Active Powers of the Human Mind, in 1788. These, with an account of Aristotle's Logic appended to Lord Kames's Sketches of the History of Man (1774), conclude the list of works published in Reid's life- time. Hamilton's edition of Reid also contains an account of the university of Glasgow and a selection of Reid's letters, chiefly addressed to his Aberdeen friends the Skenes, to Lord Kames, and to Dr James Gregory. .With the two last-named he discusses the materialism of Priestley and the theory of necessitarianism. He reverted in his old age to the mathematical pursuits of his earlier years, and his ardour for knowledge of every kind remained fresh to the last. But in 1792 the serenity which marked the concluding years of his life was clouded by the death of his wife. All the children of their marriage except one daughter had died many years before. In other respects Reid's life pursued its equable and uneventful course till within a few weeks of his death, which took place on the 7th October 1796.

The key to Reid's whole philosophy is to be found in

REID

his revulsion from the sceptical conclusions of Hume. In several passages of his writings he expressly dates his philosophical awakening from the appearance of the Treatise of Human Nature. "1 acknowledge," he says in the dedication of the Znquiry, "that I never thought of calling in question the principles commonly received with regard to the human understanding until the Treatise of Human Nature was published in the year 1739. The ingenious author of that treatise upon the principles of Locke—who was no sceptic—hath built a system of scepticism which leaves no ground to believe any one thing rather than its contrary. His reasoning appeared to me to be just; there was, therefore, a necessity to call in question the principles upon which it was founded, or to admit the conclusion." Reid thus takes Hume's scepticism as, on its own showing, a reductio ad impossibile of accepted philosophical principles, and refuses, accordingly, to separate Hume from his intellec- tual progenitors. From its origin in Descartes and onwards through Locke and Berkeley, modern philosophy carried with it, Reid contends, the germ of scepticism. That

scepticism, “inlaid in it and reared along with it,” Hume did but bring to light. Embracing the whole philosophic movement under the name of “ the Cartesian system,” Reid detects its mp@rov Weddos in the unproved assumption shared by these thinkers “that all the objects of my knowledge are ideas in my own mind.” ‘This doctrine or hypothesis he usually speaks of as “the ideal system 2 or “the theory of ideas”; and to it he opposes his own analysis of the act of perception. In view of the results of this analysis, Reid’s theory (and the theory of Scottish philosophy generally) has been dubbed natural realism or natural dualism in contrast to theories like subjective idealism and materialism or to the cosmothetic idealism or hypothetical dualism of the majority of philosophers. But this is unduly to narrow the scope of Scottish philosophy, which does not exhaust itself, as it is sometimes supposed to do, in uncritically reasserting the independent existence of matter and its immediate presence to mind. The real significance of Reid’s doctrine lies in its attack upon the principles which Hume explicitly lays down as the alpha and the omega of his system, viz., the principles that all our perceptions are distinct existences, and that the mind never perceives any real connexion among distinct exist- ences (cf. Appendix to the third volume of the Treatise, 1740). It is here that the danger of “the ideal system 4 really lies—in its reduction of reality to “particular perceptions,” momentary or “ perishing ” existences essen- tially unconnected with each other. If the ultimate elements of experience are unrelated units or sense- atoms, called impressions, then it only remains to be shown, as Hume attempts to show, how the «dlusion of supposed necessary connexion arises. But Reid meets this scepticism by combating the principle on which it is based. In logical language, he denies the actuality of the abstract particular: unrelated impressionsand ideasnowhere exist. The unit of knowledge is not an isolated impression but a judgment; and in such a judgment is contained, even initially, the reference both to a permanent subject and to a permanent world of thought, and, implied in these, such judgments, for example, as those of existence, substance, cause and effect. Such principles are not derived from sensation, but are “suggested ” on occasion of sensation, in such a way as to constitute the necessary conditions of our having perceptive experience at all. Thus we do not start with “ideas,” and afterwards refer them to objects; we are never restricted to our own minds, but are from the first immediately

related to a permanent world. Reid has a variety of names for the principles which, by their presence, lift us out of subjec-

ool

tivity into perception. He calls them "natural judgments," "natural suggestions," "judgments of nature," "judg- ments immediately inspired by our constitution," " prin- ciples of our nature," "first principles," "principles of common sense." The last designation, which became the current one, was undoubtedly unfortunate, and hasconveyed to many a false impression of Scottish philosophy. It has been understood as if Reid had merely appealed from the reasoned conclusions of philosophers to the unreasoned beliefs of common life. The tirades of men like Beattie and Oswald, and many unguarded utterances of Reid himself, lent countenance to this notion. But Reid's actions are better than his words; his real mode of procedure is to redargue Hume's conclusions by a refutation of the premises inherited by him from his predecessors. For the rest, as regards the question of nomenclature, Reid everywhere unites common sense and reason, making the former "only another name for one branch or degree of reason." Reason, as judging of things self-evident, is called common-sense to distinguish it from ratiocination or reasoning. And in regard to Reid's favourite proof of the principles in question by reference to "the consent of ages and nations, of the learned and unlearned," it is only fair to observe that this argument assumes a much more scientific form in the Hssays, where it is almost identified with an appeal to "the structure and grammar of all languages." "The structure of all languages," he says, "is grounded upon common sense." To take but one example, "the distinction between sen- sible qualities and the substance to which they belong, and between thought and the mind that thinks, is not the invention of philosophers ; it is found in the structure of all languages, and therefore must be common to all men who speak with understanding " (Hamilton's feid, pp. 229 and

454).

The principles which Reid insists upon as everywhere present in experience evidently correspond pretty closely to the Kantian categories and the unity of apperception. Similarly, Reid's assertion of the essential

distinction between space or extension and feeling or any succession of feelings may be compared with Kant's doctrine in the Zisthetic. Space," he says, "whether tangible or visible, is not so properly an object [Kant's "matter"] as a neces- sary concomitant of the objects both of sight and touch," Like Kant, too, Reid finds in space the source of a necessity which sense, as sense, cannot give (Hamilton's Reid, 323). In the substance of their answer to Hume, the two philosophers have therefore much in common. But Reid lacked the art to give due impressiveness to the important advance which his positions really contain. Although at times he states his principles with a wonder- ful degree of breadth and insight, he mars the total effect by frequent looseness of statement, and by the amount of irrelevant psychological matter with which they are overlaid. And, if Kant was overridden by a love of formal completeness and symmetry, Reid's extreme indifference to form and system is an even more danger- ous defect in a phildsopher. It has also to be admitted that the principles frequently appear in Reid more as matter of assertion than as demonstrated necessities for the constitution of experience. The transcendental deduc- tion, or proof from the possibility of experience in general, which forms the vital centre of the Kantian schenie, is wanting in Reid; or, at all events, if the spirit of the proof is occasionally present, it is nowhere adequately stated andemphasized. But, when these defects are acknowledged, Reid's insistence on judgment as the unit of knowledge and his sharp distinction between sensation and perception must still be recognized as philosophical results of the highest importance. They embody the only possible answer to

Hume's sceptical dissolution of knowledge. Reid's theory of sensation, indeed, deserves more attention than has been generally bestowed upon it. According to this theory, sensations are not the objects of our perception, not even, as Kant maintained, the "matter" of our perceptions on which the "form" is superinduced ; they are merely the "signs" which introduce us to the knowledge of real objects. The latter "are presented to the mind" by means of, or on occasion of, certain corresponding sensa- tions ; but the sensation and the perception "appear upon accurate reflexion not only to be different things, but as unlike as pain is to the point of a sword"

(Hamilton's Reid, 122). Sensation, it might be expressed, is the condition of perception, but there is no sort of community between the two. They are distinct in kind, and therefore the possibility of deriving the one from the other— of melting down the real world into subjective sensations —is once for all shut out. Reid's position here enables him to escape also from the phenomenalism of the Kantian theory. Inasmuch as the permanent objects presented to us in perception are not in any sense a manipulation of

subjective sensations, there is not even an apparent |

warrant for branding them as "merely" phenomenal. They are real in the full sense of the word; we know the world as it really exists.

The relativism or phenomenalism which Hamilton afterwards adopted from Kant and sought to engraft upon Scottish philosophy is thus wholly absent from the original Scottish doctrine. One or two passages may certainly be quoted from Reid in which he asserts that we know only properties of things and are ignorant of their essence. But the exact meaning which he attaches to such expressions is not quite clear; and they occur, moreover, only incidentally and with the air of current phrases mechanically repeated. In Dugald Stewart, however, the merely qualitative nature of our knowledge is consciously emphasized, and made the foundation of philosophical arguments ; so that Stewart in this respect paves the way for the more thoroughgoing philosophy of nescience elaborated by Hamilton. But since Hamilton's time the most typical Scottish thinkers have repudiated his relativistic doctrine, and returned to the original tradition of the school.

Authorities.—For the life, the Memoir by Dugald Stewart, prefixcd to Hamilton's edition of Reid's works, may be consulted, along with the account given by Dr M'Cosh in his Scottish Philo- sophy (1875). The complete edition of the works by Sir William Hamilton, published in two volumes with notes and supplement- ary dissertations by the editor (6th ed. 1863), has superseded all others. (A. SE.)

REID, Sir Witti1am (1797-1858), administrator and man of science, was born in 1797 at the manse of Kin- glassie, Fifeshire, Scotland, and

entered the army in 1809 as a lieutenant of royal engineers. He saw active service in the Peninsula under Wellington, and afterwards took part in the bombardment of Algiers in 1816. It was while governor of Bermuda that in 1838 he published the work by which he is now known, Zhe Law of Storms, which obtained a wide popularity and did good service in furthering the progress of this department of meteorology. In 1851 he was chairman of the executive committee of the Great Exhibition; on the completion of the work he was made a K.C.B. and appointed governor of Malta. He died in October 1858, shortly after his return to England.

REIGATE, a market town and municipal borough of Surrey, is situated at the head of the long valley of Holms- dale Hollow, on three railway lines, 23 miles south of London. It consists principally of one long street, with surrounding houses and villas inhabited chiefly by persons having their occupations in London. Of the old castle, supposed to have been built before the Conquest, to com-

mand the pass through the valley, there only remains the entrance to a cave beneath, 150 feet long and from 10 to 12 feet high, excavated in the sand, which the barons used as a guardroom. The grounds have been laid out as a public garden. Near the market house is the site of an ancient chapel dedicated to Thomas & Becket. In the chancel of the parish church of St Mary, a building rang- ing from Transition Norman to Perpendicular, which dates from the beginning of the reign of Henry VIL., were buried Archbishop Ussher and Lord Howard, the commander of the English navy against the Spanish Armada. Above the vestry there is a library containing some choice manu- scripts and rare books. The grammar school was founded in 1675. Among the other public buildings are the town- hall, the public hall, the market-hall, and the working nien's institute. The town has some agricultural trade, and in the neighbourhood are quarries for freestone, hearth- stone, and white sand. The area of the municipal borough is 6015 acres, with a population in 1871 of 15,916, and in 1881 of 18,662.

In Domesday the town was called " Churchfelle," or '' the church in the field," and afterwards it was called Churchfield in Reigate, the earlier

reading of the latter name being " Ridgegate." The castle was taken by Louis the Dauphin in the reign of John. In the time of the Confessor the manor belonged to his queen Edith. A market was granted by Edward III. The town returned two members to parliament from the reign of Edward I. to the reign of William IV., and one from 1832 to 1867, when it was disfranchised for corrupt practices.

REIMARUS, Hermann Samuer (1694-1768), known to history chiefly as the author of the Wolfenbiittel Fragments, was born at Hamburg, December 22, 1694. His father, the son of a clergyman and married into a patrician family of that city, was one of the masters in the Johanneum college, a good scholar and excellent teacher. Until his twelfth year the son received his education almost entirely from his father. He passed from his father's tuition into the class of the famous scholar Johann Albrecht Fabricius, whose son-in-law he subsequently became. In his twentieth year he entered the university of Jena, where he studied theology, ancient languages, and philosophy. After making a tour in Holland and England (1720), he became privat-docent in the university of Wittenberg ; and in 1723 he accepted the post of rector of the high. school at Wismar in Mecklen- burg, which he exchanged four years afterwards for that of professor of Hebrew and Oriental languages in the high school of his native city. This post he held till his death, though offers of more lucrative and distinguished positions were at various times made to him. His professional duties were but light, and he employed his ample leisure in the study of philology, mathematics, philosophy, history, political economy, natural science, and natural history, for which he made expensive collections. Philo- sophy and theology, however, became with his advancing years the chief subjects of pursuit. From 1744 to 1768 he had in hand the theological work from which Lessing published the notorious Fragments in1774-78. Reimarus was held by his contemporaries in the highest esteem as a scholar, a thinker, an author, and a man. His house was the centre of the highest culture of Hamburg, and a monument of his influence in that city still remains in the Haus der patriotischen Gesellschaft, where the learned and artistic societies partly founded by him still meet. His wife bore him seven children, three only of whom lived to grow up, namely his only surviving son—the distinguished physician Johann Albrecht Heinrich—and two daughters, one of them

being Elise, Lessing's friend and correspondent. Ten days before his death he invited a select number of friends to dine with him, and, with his wonted cheerfulness and amiability, declared to them solemnly that this was his

farewell meal with them. 'Three days after he was taken seriously ill, and died March 1, 1768.

Reimarus's reputation as a classical and historical scholar rests on the valuable edition of Dio Cassius (1750-52) which he prepared from the materials collected by his father-in-law, J. A. Fabricius. In the department of philosophy he published a work on logic (Vernunftlehre als Anweisung zum richtigen Gebrauche der Vernunft, 1756, fifth edition 1790), and two very popular books bearing on the great religious questions of the day. The first of these works was a collection of essays on the principal truths of natural religion (Abhandlungen von den vornehmst- en Wahrheiten der natiirlichen Religion, 1754, 6th ed. 1791); the second (Betrachtungen tiber die Kunsttriebe der There, 1762, 4th ed. 1798) dealt with one particular branch of the same subject. In these works he appears as a powerful opponent of French materialism and Spinoza's pantheism, a zealous teleologist and able wielder of the argument from design. His philosophical position is essentially that of Christian Wolff. But it is the work (carefully kept back during his lifetime, strangely enough) fron which Lessing published certain chapters after the author's death with which his name is most widely asso- ciated. Lessing's relation to this work has been stated in the article Lzssinc. Its title in the MS. is Apologie oder Schuteschrift fiir die verniinftigen Verehrer Gottes. The original MS. isin the Hamburg town library; a copy was made for the university library of Gottingen, 1814, and other copies are known to exist. In addition to the seven fragments published by Lessing, a second portion of the work was issued in 1787 by C. A. E. Schmidt (a pseudo- nym), under the title Uebrige noch ungedruckte Werke des Wolfenbiittelschen Fragmentisten, and a further portion by D. W. Klose in Mtedner's Zeitschrift fiir historische Theo- logie, 1850-52. Two of the five books of the first part and the whole of the second part, as well as appendices on

the canon, remain still, and will probably always remain, unprinted. But D. F. Strauss has given an exhaustive analysis of the whole work in his book on Reimarus.

The standpoint of Reimarus in his Apologie is that of pure natu- ralistic deism. Miracles and mysteries are denied, and natural religion is put forward as the absolute contradiction of revealed. The essential truths of the former are the existence of a wise aud good Creator and the doctrine of the immortality of the soul. These truths are discoverable by reason, and are such as can constitute the basis of a universal and rational religion. A revealed religion could never obtain universality, as it could never be made intelligible and credible to all men. Even supposing its possibility, the Bible does not present such a revelation. It abounds in error as to matters of fact, contradicts human experience, reason, and morals, and is one tissue of folly, deceit, enthusiasm, selfishness, and crime. Moreover, it is not a doctrinal compendium, or catechism, which a revelation would have tobe. What the Old Testament says of the worship of God is little, and that little worthless, while its writers are unacquainted with the second fundamental truth of religion, the immortality of the soul. The design of the writers of the New Testament, as well as that of Jesus, was not to teach true rational religion, but to serve their own selfish ambitions, in pro- moting which Reimarus makes them exhibit an inconceivable combination of conscious frand and enthusiasm. With all his acuteness as a rationalistic critic, and the destructive force of his attack upon the old orthodox conception of the nature of the Bible and revelation, Reimarus must be regarded simply as the classical representative of rationalism in its absolute inability to form any remotely just conception of God, religion, revelation, the Bible, and Christianity. His Apologie is the historical monument to the in- capacity of rationalism with regard to philosophy, religion, and true historical and literary criticism. By the higher and profounder ideas and historical insight of Lessing, Herder, Semler, Kant, and Schleiermacher, his entire position was rendered antiquated, and the permanently valid portions of his criticism of the Bible are of value ouly as destructive of a theory, now outlived, of it and religion. But as a learned, acute, and logical assailant of that theory he

must be honoured with a place amougst the pioneers of truer views of both.

See the " Fragments" as published by Lessing, reprinted in vol. xv. of Les- sing's Werke, Hempel's edition; D. F. Strauss, Hermann Samuel Reimarus und seine Schutzschrift fiir die verniinftigen Verehrer Gottes, 1861, 2d. ed. 1877; Rev.

303

Charles Voysey, Fragments from Iietmarus, London, 1879 (a translation of the life of Reimarus by Strauss, with the second part of the seventh fragment, on the " Object of Jesus and his Disciples"); the Zives of Lessing by Danzel and G. E. Guhrauer, Sime, and Zimmern ; Kuno Fischer, Geschichte der neuern Philosophie, vol. ii. pp. 759-772, 2d ed. 1867; Zeller, Geschichte der deutschen Philosophie, 2d ed. 1875, pp. 243-6.

REIMS. See RHErms.

REINAUD, JosErx Toussaint (1795-1867), a distin- guished French Orientalist, was born in 1795 at Lambese, Bouches du Rhéne, and began to study for the church, but, being drawn towards Eastern learning, he came to Paris in 1815 and became a pupil of Silvestrede Sacy. In 1818 and the following year he was at Rome as an attaché to the French minister, and studied under the Maronites of the Propaganda, but gave special attention to Mohammedan coins. In 1824 he entered the department of Oriental MSS. in the Royal Library at Paris, and in 1838, on the death of De Sacy, he succeeded to his chair in the school of living Oriental languages. In 1847 he became presi- dent of the Société Asiatique, and in 1858 conservator of Oriental MSS. in the Imperial Library. In all these func- tions Reinaud maintained the great reputation of the French Oriental school, and he also did good service with his pen. His first important work was his classical descrip- tion of the collections of the Duc de Blacas (1828). To history he contributed an essay on the Arab invasions of France, Savoy, Piedmont, and Switzerland (1836), and various collections for the period of the crusades; he edited (1840) and in part translated (1848) the geography of Abulfeda; to him too is due a

useful edition of the very curious records of early Arabic intercourse with China of which Renaudot had given but an imperfect translation (Relation des Voyages, &c., 1845) and various other essays illustrating the ancient and medieval geography of the East. His chief quality was indefatigable industry.

REINDEER. See DEER.

REINEKE VOS. See German LITERATURE, vol. x. pp. 522, 527, and RoMANCE.

REINHOLD, Kart Leronwarp (1758-1823), who played a considerable part in the early spread and develop- ment of the Kantian philosophy, was born at Vienna in 1758. At the age of fourteen he entered the Jesuit College of St Anna with the intention of becoming a priest of the order. The order was dissolved by the pope in the following year; but young Reinhold, being full of Catholic and monastic zeal, joined a similar college of the order of St Barnabas in 1774. There he remained nine years, before the end of which his scientific and philosophic studies had completely estranged him from the life and aims of the cloister. In 1783 he fled to North Germany, and settled in Weimar, where he became Wieland's col- laborateur on the German Mercury, and eventually his son-in-law. In the German Mercury he published, in the years 1786-87, his Briefe tiber die Kantische Philosophie, which, by their clear and eloquent exposition were most important in making Kant known to a wider circle of readers. Reinhold himself had read the Critique five times without a single ray of light; in the end it was the ethical side of the system by which he found him- self attracted and convinced. As a result of the Letters, Reinhold at once received a call to the neighbouring university of Jena, where he taught from 1787 to 1794, and largely contributed to make Jena, after Kénigsberg, the second home of the Kantian philosophy. In 1789 he published his chief work, the Versuch einer neuen Theorie des menschlichen Vorstellungsvermigens, in which he attempted to simplify the Kantian theory and make it more of a unity. In 1794 he accepted a call to Kiel, but his departure from Jena marks the zenith of his reputa- tion. He taught at Kiel till his death in 1823, but his independent activity was at an end. His essentially

receptive and impressible nature yielded first to the XX. —- 45

oot

powerful impulse of Fichte, and then gravitated, on grounds of religious feeling, towards Jacobi, whom he in turn deserted for the so-called "rational idealism" of Bardili.

Reinhold's historical importance belongs entirely to his earlier activity. The development of the Kantian standpoint contained in the New Theory of the Human Faculty of Ideas (1789), and in the Fundament des philosophischen Wissens (1791), was called by its author "Elemeutarphilosophie." Endeavouring to build up the system out of simpler elements, Reinhold starts from the mere fact of consciousness of the existence of mental states (" Vorstel- lungen" or ideas). Every idea carries with it the reference to a subject, whose idea it is, and to an object, of which it is the idca. This double reference explains why every idea consists, as Kant inaintained, of "form" and "matter." In its "form" lies the reference to the subject, in its "inatter" the reference to an object. Hence, too, we see why the thing-in-itself, though neces- sarily existent, is at the same time necessarily unknowable, seeing that all knowledge implies a subject-derived element. 'The rest of Reinhold's emendations to Kant are little more than suggested improvements in terminology.

REISKE, Jonann Jacop (1716-1774), scholar and physician, was born 25th December 1716, in the little town of Zérbig in Electoral Saxony. From the Waisen- haus at Halle he passed in 1733 to the university of Leipsic, and there spent five years. He lived alone with- out teacher or friend, heard no lectures, but studied con- tinually without order or aim. He tried to find his own way in Greek literature, to which Gernian schools then gave little attention; but, as he had not mastered the grammar, he soon found this a sore task and took up Arabic. He was very poor, having almost nothing beyond his allowance, which for the five years was only two hundred thalers. But everything of which he could cheat his appetite was spent on Arabic books, and when he had read all that was then printed he thirsted for manuscripts, and in March 1738 started on foot for Hamburg, joyous though totally unprovided, on his way to Leyden and the treasures of the Warnerianum. At Hamburg he got

some money and letters of recommendation from the Hebraist Wolf, and took ship to Amsterdam. Here D'Orville, to whom he had an introduction, proposed to retain him as his amanuensis at a salary of six hundred guilders. Reiske refused, though he thought the offer very generous ; he did not want money, he wanted manuscripts. But when he reached Leyden (6th June 1738) he found that the lectures were over for the term and that the MSS. were not open to him. His money too was gone, and he passed a miserable summer. By and by things mended: D'Orville and A. Schultens helped him to private teaching and reading for the press, by which he was able to live, and his great power of work enabled him still to find time enough for his own studies. He heard the lectures of A. Schultens, and practised himself in Arabic with his son J. J. Schultens. Through Schultens too he got at Arabic MSS., and was even allowed sub rosa to take them home with him. Ultimately he seems to have got free access to the collec- tion, which he recatalogued—the work of almost a whole summer, for which the curators rewarded him with nine guilders.

In spite of his hardships Reiske's first years in Leyden were not unhappy, till he got into serious trouble by intro- ducing divers emendations of his own into the second edition of Burmann's Petronius, which he had to see through the press. His patrons withdrew from him, and his chance of perhaps becoming professor was gone. D'Orville indeed soon came round, for he could not do without Reiske, who did work of which his patron, after dressing it up in his own style, took the credit. But A. Schultens was never the same as before to him; Reiske indeed was too independent, and hurt him by his open criticisms of his master's way of making Arabic mainly a handinaid of Hebrew. Reiske, however, himself admits that

Schultens, though he had reason to complain of his scholar's want of respect towards him, always behaved honourably to him. In 1742 by Schultens's advice Reiske took up medicine as a study by which he might hope to live if he could not do so by philology, and at medicine he worked hard for four years, still continuing the tasks that brought him bread as well as his Greek and Arabic studies. In 1746 he graduated as M.D., the

fees being remitted at Schultens's intercession. It was Schultens too who con- quered the difficulties opposed to his graduation at the last moment by the faculty of theology on the ground that some of his theses had a materialistic ring. On June 10, 1746, he left Holland and settled in Leipsic, where he hoped to get medical practice.

But his shy proud nature was not fitted to gain patients, and the Leipsic doctors would not recommend one who was not a Leipsic graduate. In 1747 an Arabic dedication to the electoral prince of Saxony got him the title of professor, but did not better his circumstances. Neither the faculty of arts nor that of medicine was willing to admit him among them, and he never delivered a course of lectures. He had still to go on doing literary task-work, but his labour was much worse paid in Leipsic than in Leyden. Still he could have lived and sent his old mother, as his custom was, a yearly present of a piece of leather to be sold in retail if he had been a better manager. But, carc- less for the morrow, he was always printing at his own cost great books which found no buyers. And so for many years he lived in such misery that he often did not know where to find bread to still his hunger. His academical colleagues were hostile; and Ernesti, under a show of friend- ship, secretly hindered his promotion. His slashing and unsparing reviews made bad blood with the pillars of the university.

At length in 1758 the magistrates of Leipsic rescued him from his misery by giving him the rectorate of St Nicolai, and, though he still made no way with the leading men of the university and suffered from the hostility of men like Ruhnken and J. D. Michaelis, he was compensated for this by the esteem of Frederick the Great, of Lessing, Karsten Niebuhr, and many foreign scholars. The last decade of his life was made cheerful by his marriage with Ernestine Miller, who shared all his interests and learned Greek to help him with collations. In proof of his gratitude her portrait stands beside his in the first volume of the Oratores Grect. Reiske died August 14, 1774, and his MS. remains passed, through Lessing's mediation, to the Danish minister Suhm, and are now in the Copen- hagen library.

Reiske certainly surpassed all his predecessors in the range and quality of his knowledge of Arabic literature. It was the history, the realia of the literature, that always interested him ; he did not care for Arabic poetry as such, and the then much praised Hariri seemed to him a grammatical pedant. He read the poets for their bearing on history, and cared less for their verses than for such scholia as supplied historical notices. Thus for example the scholia on Jarir furnished him with a remarkable notice of the prevalence of Buddhist doctrine and asceticism in 'Irak under the Omayyads. In the Adnotationes Historice to his Abulfeda (Abulf. Annales Moslemici, 5 vols., Copenhagen, 1789-91) he collected a veritable treasure of sound and original research ; he knew the Byzantine writers as thoroughly as the Arabic authors, and was alike at home in modern works of travel in all languages and in ancient and medieval authorities. He was interested too in numismatics, and his letters on Arabic coinage (in Eichhorn's Nepertorium, vols. ix.—xi.) form, according to De Sacy, the basis of that branch of study. To comprehensive knowledge and very wide reading he added a sound historical judgment. He was not, like Schultens, deceived by the pretended antiquity of the Yemenite Kasidas.1_ Errors no doubt he inade, as in the attempt to ascertain the date of the breach of the dam of Marib.

Though Abulfeda as a late epitomator did not afford a starting-

1 « Animadvers. erities in Hamze hist. regni Joctanidarum," in Eichhorn's Afon. Ant. Hist. Ar., 1775.

point for methodical study of the sources, Reiske's edition with his version and notes certainly laid the foundation for research in Arabie history. The foundation of Arabie philology, however, was laid not by him but by De Saey. Reiske's linguistic knowledge was great, but he used it only to understand his authors ; he had no feeling for form, for language as language, or for metre. He was diligent in lexieographie eolleetions, but cared nothing for etymology or for any speculations that transeended the historical data before him. This narrowness of interest was the eounterpart of his hatred for pedantry and strong love of reality. His

greed for historieal facets made his studies a sort of vast foray in Arabic literature, but with this he is not to be reproached.

In Leipsie Reiske worked mainly at Greek, though he continued to draw on his Arabie stores accumulated in Leyden. Yet his merit as an Arabist was sooner recognized than the value of his Greek work, partly perhaps beeause his talents were really at their best in dealing with a literature whieh suffers little injustice through laek of interest in its form, but mainly because his eon- temporaries in Greek learning were narrow and had not the judg- ment to appreeiate him. Reiske the Greek seholar has been rightly valued only in reeent years, and it is now reeognized that he was the first German sinee Sylburg who had a living knowledge of the Greek tongue. His reputation does not rest on his uumer- ous editions, often hasty or even made to booksellers' orders. The text was never his main eoneern, and he often let received readings stand against his own judgment. The valuable matter lies in his remarks, especially his eonjectures. He himself designates the Animadversationes in Seriptores Greecos as flos ingenit swt, and in truth these thin booklets outweigh his big editions. Closely following the author's thought he removes obstaeles whenever he meets them, but he is so steeped in the language and thinks so truly like a Greek that the diffieulties he feels often seem to us to lie in mere points of style. His eritieism is empirical and uumethodie, based on immense and careful reading, and applied only when he feels a diffieulty ; and he is most sueeessful when he has a large mass of tolerably homogeneous literature to lean on, whilst on isolated points he is often at a loss. Phoneties, dialeets, orthography were indifferent to him; metre he did not understand. His eorreetions are often hasty and false, but a surprisingly large proportion of them have sinee received eonfirmation from MSS. And, though his merits as a Greeian lie mainly in his eonjeetures, his realism is felt in this sphere also; his German translations especially show more freedom and practical insight, more feeling for aetual life, than is eommon with the seholars of that age.}

Reiske was essentially a pioneer, who neither left any eomplete performanee behind him nor marked out for others a sharply defined niethod of researeh. This was partly due to his unhappy eireumstanees, but mainly to his passionate interest in all history and all letters, whieh

never allowed him to linger in any one field. The son of the Zérbig tanner, driven by a natural instinet to Arabic lore, devoured by eager desire to view the unknown treasures of distant ages and lands, is an attraetive figure amidst the pedants of learned Germany as it then was. Reiske was not amiable, but he was a real character—a eharaeter, too, sustained by genuine piety when the deep waters threatened to close over his head.

For a list of Reiske's writings see Meusel, xi. 192 sg. His chief Arabie works (all posthumous) have been mentioned above. In Greek letters his chief works are Constantint Porphyrogeniti libri II. de ceremoniis aule Byzant., vols. i. i1., Leipsic, 1751-66, vol. iii., Bunn, 1829; Animadv. ad Grexcos auctores,5 vols., Leipsie, 1751-66 (the rest lies unprinted at Copenhagen); Oratorum Gree, que supersunt, 8 vols., Leipsic, 1770-73; App. crit. ad Demosthenem, 3 vols., tb., 1774-75; Maximus Tyr., ib., 1774; Plutarchus,11 vols, ib., 1774-79; Dionys Italic., 6 vols., tb., 1774-77; Libanius, 4 vols., Altenburg, 1784-97. Various reviews in the Acta Eruditorum and Zuverl. Nachrichten are characteristic and worth reading.

Compare D. Johann Jacob Reiskens von thm selbst aufgesetzte Lebensbeschreibung, Leipsic, 1783. (J. WE.)

RELAND, Aprian, a meritorious Dutch Orientalist, was born at Ryp, July 17, 1676, studied at Utrecht and Leyden and successively professed Oriental languages with great success at Harderwijk (1699) and Utrecht (1701). In the latter chair, from which he also lectured on sacred antiquities, he remained till he died of small-pox February oy 17 ie:

Reland's most important work is Palestina ex veteribus monu- mentis tllustrata, Utreeht, 1714, an admirable eolleetion whieh is still the most valuable book on the historieal geography of the Holy Land. His Antiquitates saere veterum Hebreorum, learned, elear, and eompact, is also a most useful book; and his other writings and eolleetions—for he reprinted many eurious and useful traets of other seholars on Biblieal and Rabbinieal topics—all show judg- ment as well as knowledge. His works are enumerated by Burman, Traj. Erud., p. 296 sq.

RELICS. Relics, in what may be called their merely human and historic aspect, appeal to many of the most

1 For this estimate of Reiske as a Greek seholar the writer is indebted to Prof. U. v. Wilamowitz-Moellendorff.

obvious and most deeply seated principles of human nature —to that power of connexion with the past which has been justly called one of the divinest elements of our being, to the law of association, and to that love of something like ocular testimony which so notoriously affects the mind more forcibly than "the hearing of the ear." The Russian general Suwaroff, "albeit unused to the melting mood," is reported to have been deeply touched by the relics of departed greatness laid bare by the discovery of a palace in the Crimea which had been built by Mithradates. Many of those who were present at the opening of the tomb of Robert the Bruce at Dunfermline were quite unmanned at the sight of the skull that had toiled for Scot- land's weal, and the arm that had struck down Sir Henry de Bohun on the eve of the battle of Bannockburn ; and at the funeral of the duke of Wellington, in 1852, the pathetic part of the processional ceremonial was found to lie in the riderless charger, bearing relics of the deceased warrior. In 1802 Napoleon Bonaparte, while making his preparations at Boulogne for the invasion of England, pro- fessed to have found a coin of Julius Ceesar and a weapon which had belonged to one of the soldiers of William the Conqueror. Napoleon had a profound belief in the power of the imagination. It is needless to dwell upon his object in ostentatiously announcing these discoveries.

It is obvious, however, that, apart from designs such as that of Napoleon, pretended relics, sometimes associated with real sometimes with legendary events, would be sure to spring from human credulity, from love of the marvel- lous, and from hopes of gain. Perhaps all settled Govern- nients exhibit relics, such as regalia and the like, of which many are perfectly authentic, while: some would not bear close examination. The same may be said of family treasures. We read of ancient Romans exhibiting curiosi- ties, such as fragments of the ship "Argo." Again, relics are apt to gather round a great name. The town of Lutterworth possessed an

ancient chair and a piece of a cope. Each became, despite of want of evidence, and indeed against evidence, associated with the name of Wickliffe.

It would be strange indeed if religion (which, alike in its good features and in its abuses, penetrates more deeply than anything else into the human heart) were found to be dissociated from relics. Probably all the more widely spread creeds claim some such material links with the past. Let it suffice to mention here the Ka'ba at Mecca, and the tooth of Buddha exhibited in Ceylon.

We turn to the pre-Christian and Christian dispensa- tions. The Old Testament contains allusions to relics too numerous to mention. We may refer to the language of the epistle to the Hebrews, which speaks of the holy of holies as containing the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant, wherein were the golden pot that had manna and Aaron's rod that budded and the tables of the covenant (Heb. ix. 4, 9; Exod. xxv. 10, 16; Num. xvii. 10). These were believed to have been lost at the destruction of the temple by Nebuchadnezzar. We also read of the sword of Goliath being preserved as something sacred (1 Sam. xxi. 9).

Certainly, however, in one respect, perhaps in two (though of seemingly opposite tendencies), Judaism stands in this matter distinguished from contemporary religions. Nowhere else should we read of a valued and most interest- ing relic being destroyed by a devout ruler because it was found to have been abused and to have led to idolatry, as was done to the brazen serpent by Hezekiah (2 Kings xviu. 4). But it may also be questioned whether the records of any other people contain an account of a miracle wrought by the relics of a deceased prophet. We may indeed read of a miracle wrqught in heathendom for the defence of

Sri10)

innocence unjustly accused, and we also find the possession of the bones of a departed hero made the condition of a successful war.! But the second book of Kings relates the revival of a dead man by the bones of Elisha,—a narrative rendered the more remarkable by the fact that, as a

rule, the contact with a corpse, a bone, or a grave made a man unclean for seven days (Num. xix. 11-22).

The New Testament does not relate any case precisely similar to that of Elisha. The remains of the protomartyr Stephen are simply committed to the tomb, with much lamentation by devout men (Acts viii. 2); and of the funeral of the first martyred apostle, James, we have no record. It is not, however, to be denied that the book of Acts tells of miracles of healing resembling that of her who was cured by the touch of our Lord's garment (Matt. ix. 20-22). Even the shadow of Peter, it is implied, may have healed the sick; and handkerchiefs or aprons which had been worn by Paul relieved not only the diseased but the possessed (Acts v. 15; xix. 12).

To a great extent the homage paid to the tombs and the remains of patriot, sage, or bard was transferred, at an early period in the history of the Christian church, to those of its own heroes, more especially to those of martyrs. Sucha result was natural, and almost inevitable. The intercession of the departed on behalf of the living was everywhere recognized, and that of martyrs naturally believed to be especially powerful. But it was further inferred from the instance of Elisha and from the passages of the book of Acts already cited that it might please the Alinighty to repeat similar manifestations of miraculous power. Whether the fathers who maintain this view would have written so freely if they could have foreseen the abuses which were to arise may perhaps be doubted.? 3ut three or four features in the history of early Christen- dom conspired to spread the cultus of relics. These were the heathen persecutions, the rise of Gnosticism, the strong and exaggerated feeling about possession and witchcraft, -———to which may probably be added the sense of a sort of education connected with visible and tangible links of connexion with the past.

The way in which these elements of the case would operate is tolerably obvious. If, as at Lyons and Vienne, pagan persecutors burnt the ashes of the martyrs, and threw them into the Rhone, exulting in the idea that they were disproving one of the most important articles of the Christian creed, the resurrection of the body, with still more fervid zeal would the faithful seize every opportunity of honouring those remains which their opponents

sought to vilify. Then, again, the other great foe of early Christen- dom, the heresy of Gnosticism (often denounced as a more subtle and dangerous evil than the open hostility of heathendom), amidst all its varied forms was consistent in representing matter as something essentially evil. The counter teaching, implied in the central doctrine of the

1 We allude to the miracle claimed by two poets, Ovid (Fast., iv. 310) and Propertius (Hleg., iv. 14, 51), as also by Livy, Cicero, and Pliny, to have been wrought by Cybele on behalf of the Vestal Claudia, and to the oracular injunction from Delphi to the Spartans to find and carry with them the bones of Orestes as a condition of success against the men of Tegea (Herodotus, i. 67-68).

2 A set of passages is given by Petavius (De Dogmatibus Theologicis, "De Incarnatione," xiv. 11). It certainly includes most of the leading post-Nicene patristic names,—such as Eusebius and many fathers commonly honoured with the prefix of saint, as Gregory of Nazianzus, Gregory of Nyssa, Chrysostom, both the Cyrils, Ambrose, Jerome, and others. Of these St Jerome is the most extreme and vehement ; but this is accounted for, not only by the author's temperament, but by the fact of his writing against an opponent whom he specially dis- liked on personal as well as theological grounds (Contra Vigilantium liber unus). Later writers on the same side with Vigilantius are Claudius of Turin and Agobard of Lyons, but our limits forbid us to diseuss their views. Some sectaries (e.g., the Novatianists) appear to have been as anxious as their opponents to collect relics.

ren iL fs

Christian faith, the mystery of the incarnation, and in the sacraments, might seem to gain some aid from the venera- tion shown to what was regarded as another form of hallowed matter, the bodies of the saints or the material instruments of Christ's passion. And, thirdly, the dread of possession found some alleviation in the check to satanic malice which relics were believed to effect.

It is also conceivable that the interest created by such memorials might have its share in that education of the earlier Middle Ages which was so powerfully assisted by pilgrimages and by biographies. Guizot, in a well-known chapter of his Civilisation en France has dwelt largely on the value of even the legends of this period. He main- tains that, in a world full of violence, disorder, and oppression, the legends of the saints found food for some of the most powerful instincts and invincible needs of the human mind—that exaggeration of details, or even failure in material truth, did not prevent them from being a moral relief and a protest on behalf of many of the rights of man. Material memorials, or even supposed memorials, would certainly help to impress such stories upon the mind, as is the case with the facts and the legends of secular history. Leibnitz, among the large concessions in his Systema Theo- logicum to the Roman Catholic view of these questions, in some degree anticipates the language of Guizot concerning pious legends.

In any case, alike for good and for evil,—and it will be necessary to speak presently of the sadder aspects of the question,—relics from the 4th to the 16th century occupied a large space in the mind of Christendom. The word relics (reliquix, deiiyava) became almost restricted, in theological language, to the bodies (or parts of the bodies) of saints, or, as has been intimated, to memorials of Christ's passion, or instruments which had been used in the torture and execution of martyrs. Inquiries con- nected with their genuineness are, as is well known to students of ecclesiastical history, conspicuous in the life of the mother of Constantine, St Helena, who claimed to have discovered the true cross on which our Lord suffered, and in the career of St Ambrose at Milan. Once at least a really glorious series of campaigns, those of the emperor Heraclius against the

barbarian Avars and the Persians (622-628), is connected with a successful en- deavour to regain the cross (see Persia, vol. xviii. pp. 614-615). It is remarkable that the Persians are reported to have kept the cross in its case with the seals unbroken.

Thus far relics have been regarded as evidencing two marks of a very powerful element of life, namely, the capacity of evoking enthusiasm and of influencing even bystanders or opponents. But it is time to turn to the more painful features of their history in connexion with Christian thought and practice. It must not be supposed that the recognition of such phases is by any means a purely Protestant sentiment, although it is no doubt a pro- minent feature in the Reformation of the 16th century. Thus, for example, one of the most credulous biographies of a saint of the 4th century, that of St Martin by Sulpicius Severus, mentions (chap. viii.) an instance where the supernatural insight of Martin was exerted in the way of repression of such homage. The country people were exhibiting veneration at the tomb of a supposed saint, but it was revealed to the bishop of Tours that it was that of a robber executed for his crimes. St Augustine, in his severe and satiric tractate against certain unworthy monks who made their profession a mere cloak for idleness, clearly insinuates the sale of questionable relics as one of their faults. "Alii membra martyrum, si tamen martyrum, venditant." The traffic in relics became part of the recog- nized commerce of Christendom and was countenanced by sovereigns of undoubted excellence. Thus Athelstan was

wii 1C 8s

a great donor of relics to the monastery at Exeter. A list occupying more than three columns is given in the Leofric inissal. It includes fragments of the candle which the angel of the Lord lit in the tomb of Christ, of the burning bush whence Jehovah spoke to Moses, and of one of the stones which slew the protomartyr Stephen. Edward the Confessor and Louis IX. of France may be named among the saintly patrons of a commerce which they at least con- sidered meritorious.

The mention of this last name involves a reference to an event which, above all others of the Middle Ages, spread, fostered, and ultimately injured the veneration of relics. The crusades created a profound

excitement in this matter. Pilgrims had already thought it a default to return from Palestine without some such evidence that they had actually visited the Holy Land. Relics, at first probably bought and sold in good faith, became multi- plied ; and rival possessions of most sacred memorials (as, for instance, the crown of thorns, exhibited both by the abbey of St Denys and by St Louis) were by no means uncommon. Even the crime of theft seems to have been condoned when a relic was in question, and mutilation of a saint's body to have been hardly thought irreverent. To swear by these relics became the most binding of oaths, as will be remembered by those who have read the life of King Robert IL of France, and the ruse practised on Harold by William, duke of Normandy. Marauding campaigns between monastery and monastery were by no means uncommon ; but these sink into insignificance com- pared with the spoliation exercised by the crusaders from the West who captured and sacked Constantinople in 1203-4. The shameful behaviour of the conquering army is admitted by the Latins themselves ; but the condemna- tion freely uttered against licence, brutality, and profane irreverence seems generally (though not quite universally) hushed when the spoliation concerns treasure in the way of relics. The fact of their abundance shows an agree- ment on this point, amidst their differences, between the Latin and Greek Churches ; but Constantinople must have been greatly impoverished by the immense supply of relics "that were scattered by this revolution over the churches of Europe."?

The next two centuries saw no diminution of such zeal, and there grew up, it can hardly be doubted, an increase of lower motives and of fraud. By the time of the Reformation the condition of matters was such as in many respects to offer a mark for all assailants of the existing state of things, and a practical admission on the part of those in authority that it was to a large extent simply indefensible. Erasmus, on this as on so many other kindred subjects, is found leading the van of satirists. One of his Colloquia, entitled Peregrinatio Religioms Ergo, contains within some thirty pages a mass of sarcasm against the abuses of the age. The discharge of vows through an agent, the localism of particular favours, the earthly (and sometimes evil) character of the petitions offered to saints and specially to the Virgin Mother, the strange character of the relics, one of the most common and abundant being the "celeste lac beats Virginis,"

the enormous amount of wealth lying idle at the shrine of St Thomas & Becket—these and similar topics are treated in this author's caustic and elegant Latinity. The Colloquia were published in 1522, and from this date a mass of similar literature in the vernacular tongue of various countries, of a coarser kind and more adapted to the popular taste, seems to have been circulated freely throughout Europe.

1 Gibbon, Decline and Fall, chap. 1x. sub jin.; comp. Milman, Latin Christianity, bk. ix. chap. vii. Milman quotes from Gunther's words concerning the abbot Martin, one of the spoilers: " Indignum ducens sacrilegium, nisi in re sacra, committere."

oot

The reaction against the homage paid to relics was immense. A practice which has not only been extensively abused, but which appears from its very nature to involve a fatal facility of abuse, can never stand quite where it did after such an exposure as that to which reference has been made. Yet it seems doubtful whether the Reformers in all cases intended to do more than check the prominent abuses connected with relics. Those who claimed Holy Scripture as the sole authority could not deny that it might please the Almighty to convey blessings through the instrumentality of such material things, as in the cases already referred to in the second book of Kings and the Acts of the Apostles. Even Luther seems rather to denounce mistakes concerning particular relics than the respect paid to recognized ones. In like manner the English Church, while using severe and contemptuous language in the Homelies with reference to such practices as those satirized by Erasmus, has preserved in its calendar, among minor festivals, the days respect- ively chosen by the earlier medizeval church for the discovery of the cross by St Helena (May 3rd) and its recovery by Heraclius (September 14th). Mosheim and other learned foreign Protestants also speak gently on such themes. Thus the devout Lutheran Neander, while mentioning in his Church History some cases of deliberate fraud, and holding that the superstition concerning saints and relics bordered nearly on paganism, is yet unable to approve of the extreme reaction which in some quarters arose out of it.

As regards the Church of Rome, although in theory the events of the 16th century may have left its teaching untouched, yet it can hardly be questioned but that this is one of the many departments of religious life in which that great commotion, as De Maistre calls it, has in his words, even among Roman Catholics, operé une révolution trés sensible. The council of Trent, which must be regarded as, from its own point of view, a reforming council, treated the subject of relics in its twenty-fifth session, held in December 1563. It expressed its earnest desire for the removal of abuses, for the abolition of unworthy gain in the veneration of relics, and of revelry on oscasion of their visitation. It forbade the acceptance by any church of new relics, without the approbation of the bishop, given after consultation with theologians and other devout men, and referred grave and difficult questions concerning the extirpation of abuses to the judgment of local councils, of metropolitans, and ulti- mately to the Roman see itself.

By these steps a great change has been effected. We hear nothing more of the sale of relics (which had indeed been forbidden by the fourth Lateran council in 1215), of theft or of war in connexion with them. Some of those most strange memorials to which a passing allusion has been made above have seemingly disappeared from history. And, although leading writers of the Roman obedience in France and Italy do not often make concessions, the Freiburg Encyclopxdia admits the non-authenticity of num- bers of relics brought home from the crusades and from the conquest of Constantinople; and Addis and Arnold (Roman Catholic Dictionary, 1884) say that "abuses no doubt have occurred in all ages with regard to relics." No shock less great than that caused by the Reformation would probably have effected so much as has been done.

Still, however, the Church of Rome stands alone, we believe, in considering the possession of relics an indis- pensable condition of the performance of the highest acts of public Christian worship. Every altar used for the celebration of mass must, according to Roman Catholic rule, contain some authorized relics. These are inserted | into a cavity prepared for their reception, called "the tomb,"

by the bishop of the diocese, and sealed up with the epis- copal seal.

A uthorities.—Many of the leading authorities have already been named. Tothesemay be added on the Roman Catholic side Perrone, Prelectiones Theologice, vol. ii. "De Cultu Sanctorum," cap. iv. (ed. Paris, 1863), and Martigny, Dictionnaire des Antiquités Chre- tiennes (s. v. "Reliques"). On the other side the followers of Calvin (on this as on so many other topics) are usually more fiercely anti-Roman than those of Luther. Among Anglican divines those who have published treatises on the Thirty-nine Articles are necessarily brought across the subject. The work of the bishop of Winchester (Dr Harold Browne) will here be found the fullest and most able as well as the most candid and temperate. Compare also Bp. Pearson, Minor Works, vol. ii. (J. G. C.)

RELIEF. See Scurrrurs.

RELIGIONS. Religions, by which are meant the modes of divine worship proper to different tribes, nations, or communities, and based on the belief held in common by the members of them severally, were not before the present century the subject of original scientific research and comparative study. With the exception of a few good books containing useful information on some ancient religions and on the religious customs of uncivilized nations, nothing written on this subject in former cen- turies can be said to possess any scientific value. It is not that the old books are antiquated, as all works of learning must become with the lapse of time: they were worth nothing even when published. There were huge collec- tions, containing descriptions of all the religions in the world, so far as they were known, laboriously compiled, but without any critical acumen, and without the least suspicion that unbiblical religions are not mere curiosities. There was a philosophy of religion, but it was all but purely speculative, and it could not be otherwise, as then it had but scanty means to work with, and was obliged to draw the facts it required from very troubled and insuffi- cient sources. Attempts were made to explain the mytho- logies of the Greeks and the Romans, and even of some Oriental nations, but for the same reason they could not but fail. Then there was the theological bias, which caused all religions except one to be regarded as utterly false ; the philosophical bias, which caused all

religions, except the arbitrary abstraction then called natural religion, to be decried as mere superstitions, invented by shrewd priests and tyrants for selfish ends; and, finally, the total lack of a sound method in historical investigation, which was one of the prominent characteristics of the 18th century. It was only after the brilliant discoveries which marked the end of that century and the first half of this, and after the not less brilliant researches to which they gave rise; after the sacred writings of the Chinese, the Indians, the Persians, and some other ancient nations could be studied in the original ; after the finding of the key to the Egyptian hieroglyphics and the Assyrian and Babylonian cuneiform writing had lifted the veil which for many centuries had covered the history of these most ancient civilizations—it was then only that a history of religion could be thought of and that something like a science of religion could be aimed at, if not yet founded.

The comparative historical study of religions is one of the means indispensable to the solution of the difficult problem What is religion?—the other being a psychological study of man. It is one of the pillars on which not a merely speculative and fantastic, and therefore worth- less, but a sound scientific philosophy of religion should test. Still, like every department of study, it has its aim in itself. This aim is not to satisfy a vain curiosity, but to understand and explain one of the mightiest motors in the history of mankind, which formed as well as tore asunder nations, united as well as divided empires, which

sanctioned the most atrocious and barbarous deeds, the most cruel and libidinous customs, and inspired the most admirable acts of heroism, self-renunciation, and devotion, which occasioned the most sanguinary wars, rebellions, and persecutions, as well as brought about the freedom, happiness, and peace of nations—at one time a partisan of tyranny, at another breaking its chains, now calling into existence and fostering a new and brilliant civilization, then the deadly foe to progress, science, and art. Religions, like living organisms, have a history, and therefore this is to be studied first, so far as it can be known,—how they rise and spread, grow and fade away ; how far they are the creations of individual genius,

and how far of the genius of nations and communities 3 by what laws, if it is possible to discover them, their development is ruled; what are their relations to philosophy, science, and art, to the state, to society, and above all to ethics 3 what is their mutual historical relation, that is, if one of them sprang from another, or if a whole group are to be derived from a common parent, or if they only borrowed from one another and were subject to one another's influence ; lastly, what place is to be assigned to each of those groups or single religions in the universal history of religion. The first result of this historical inquiry must be an attempt at a genealogical classification of religions, in which they are grouped after their proved or probable descent and affinity. However, like every genuine scientific study, historical investigations, if they are to bear fruit, must be compara- tive. Not only has every religion as a whole, and every religious group, to be compared with others, that we may know in what particular qualities it agrees with or — differs from them, and that we may ~~*determine its special characteristics, but, before this can be done, compara*~~ *tive study on a much larger scale must precede. Every religion has two prominent constituent elements, the one theoretical, the other practical—religious ideas and religious acts, The ideas may be vague conceptions, concrete myths, precise dogmas, either handed over by tradition or recorded in sacred books, combined or not into systems of mythology and dogmatics, summarized or not in a creed or symbol, but there is no living religion without some- thing like a doctrine. On the other hand, a doctrine, however elaborate, does not constitute a religion. Scarcely less than by its leading ideas a religion is characterized by its rites and institutions, including in the higher phases of development moral precepts, in the highest phases ethical principles. It happens but very seldom, if ever, that those two elements balance each other. In different religions they are commonly found in very different proportions, some faiths being pre-eminently doctrinal or dogmatic, others pre-eminently ritualistic or ethical but where one of them is wanting entirely religion no longer exists. Not that dogma and ritual are religion ; they are only its necessary manifestations, the embodi- ment of what must be considered as its very life and essence, of that which as an inner conviction must be dis- tinguished from a doctrine or creed—a belief. But we cannot get a knowledge of the belief which lies at the base of a particular doctrine and which prompts peculiar rites and acts, without*

studying the mythical and dogmatical conceptions and the ritual or ethical institutions in which it takes its shape, and without comparing these with others. This then is the task of what is called compara- tive theology in its widest sense, of which comparative mythology is only a branch, and in which more space and attention should be given to the hitherto much neglected comparative study of religious worship and of ethics in their relation to religion. It is then only that we can proceed to characterize and mutually compare religions themselves, regarded as a whole, and that we may come

Aryan,

EMoLGlONS

to what must be the final result of this historical as well | primitive Ozp-Arvaw! religion.

as comparative study, a morphological classification of religions. Here the study of religions reaches its goal, and the task of the philosophy of religion, the other main branch of the so-called science of religion or general theology, begins.

It need scarcely be said that the basis of the compara- tive historical study of religions must be a patient and critical examination of the sources from which the know- ledge of the various religions of the world is to be drawn, viz., written documents and traditions, monunients and works of art, sacred writings and heretical books, and, when we wish to inquire into the religions of the uncivi- lized tribes that have no history at all, an impartial weighing of the evidence brought by travellers and settlers from different parts of the globe,—in short, an unbiassed ascertaining of facts.

Genealogical Classification.—There is no difficulty in determining the descent and relationship of religions which have taken rise in historical times, such as Con-

fucianism, Buddhism, Judaism, Christianity, Mohamme- |

danism, and some others of minor importance. But the great majority of ancient religions had their origin in pre- historic times, of which neither documents nor trustworthy traditions are extant. In that case their mutual relation has to be established by reasoning from the myths, ideas,

o09

That the same name of the highest heaven-god, Dyaus, Zeus, Ju(piter), Zio ('T'y), is met with among Indians, Greeks, Italiotes, Germans, and Norsemen, however great the difference of the attri- butes and dignity ascribed by each of them to the god thus named may be, is a fact now generally known. Where this name has been lost, as is the case with the Persians, the Slavs, and the Celts, there are otlier divine names which they have in common with their kindred nations. Still more important is the fact that most Aryans show a tendency to call their supreme god "father," as is proved by the very common forms Dyaus pitar, Zeds warnp, Jupiter, Diespiter, Marspiter, Alfsdr. The supreme god in the Avesta, Aluramazda, is often called father. Moreover many divine names used by different Aryan nations, though varying in form, are derived from the same root,—which proves the original unity of their conception. Take as examples the root di (div), '"'to shine," and its derivatives Dyaus, Deva, and their family, Diti, Aditi, Dione, Pandion, Dionysos, Diovis, Dianus (Janus), Diana, Juno ; or the root man, "to think" (perhaps equally signifying originally "to shine"), and its

derivatives Manu, Minos, Minerva, (Juno) Moneta ; or the | roots sur (svar), sar, mar, vas.

Especially startling is the

'use of the same general word for "god" aniong several

rites, and characteristics common to them. Professor Max |

Miiller (Lectures on the Science of Religion, pp. 154 sq.) suggests that, whatever classification has been found most useful in the science of language ought to prove equally useful in the science of religion. Now it may be true in general, at least for the most ancient times, that where the

languages of a group of nations are proved to belong to one family their religions too most probably "hold together by the same relationship." But this hypothesis requires proof, and that proof is not to be obtained otherwise than by the comparative study of the religions themselves. Only when the religions of two independent nations agree in doctrine and mode of wor- ship, above all in the notion of the relation between God and man, between the divine and the human, to such a

be accounted for by the universal aspirations and wants of

Aryan nations, viz., Skr. deva, Iran. daeva, Lat. deus, Litth. déwas (deiwys), Old Norse tivar (plur.), to which

_belong perhaps also Greek eds, Irish dia, Cymr. dew.

| be original.

Daeva and deiwys are used in a bad sense, but this cannot So too the word asura (ahura), which, though it too was used by the Indians in relatively modern times in a bad sense, was the name which the East-Aryans gave to their highest gods, and the Norse asa, pl. exsir (orig. ans), are both to be derived from the root as, anh. If we add to this the remarkable conformity of the myths and customs in all Aryan religions,—if, above all, by com- paring them with those of other races, especially of the Semites, we find that the leading idea embodied in these Aryan myths and rites is everywhere the same, however different the peculiar character of each religion may be,

namely, the close relation between God and man, the real degree and in such a manner that this agreement cannot

human nature, then only may we feel sure that the one of |

these religions is the parent of the other, or that both have come from a common stock. If not only two but several religions agree in like manner, or nearly so, we get a family of religions. At present we can go no farther. The mutual relations of the different families cannot be determined yet; the probleni is too difficult and too com- plicated to be solved in the

present state of science. That religions belonging to different families have borrowed myths and customs from one another and have been sub- jected to one another's influence may easily be proved. But whether the families themselves are branches of one and the same old tree is an open question to which a satisfactory answer cannot be given now.

It would be equally premature to venture on drawing up acomplete genealogical table of religions. For some families of religions such a classification may be sketched with tolerable certainty; the genealogy of by far the greater number of them can be given in mere outlines only, leaving the fixing of details for further inquiry. We start from what may be held the most certain.

Aryan or Indo-Germanie Family.—Comparative mytho- logy and the history of religion leave no doubt that all the religions of the Aryan or Indo-Germanic nations, viz., Eastern Aryans (or Indians, Persians, and Phrygians) and Western Aryans (or Greeks, Romans, Germans, Norsemen, Letto-Slavs, and Celts), are the common offspring of one

unity between the divine and the human economy,' so that we may call them the "theanthropic" religions,—if we remember this, there can be no doubt that all of them

have sprung from one primitive Ozp-Aryaw religion.

|

However, the degree in which the Aryan religions are mutually related is not always the same. None of them came directly from the Ozp-Arvyawreligion. They consist of five pairs, each of which must have been first a unity :— the Indo-Persian, the Graeco-Roman, the Letto-Slavic, the Norse-Teutonic, and the Gaelo-Cymric. The fact that the members of those pairs are more closely allied with one another than with the other members of the family obliges us to assume five prehistoric Aryan religions :—the Ozp EAsT-ARVAN, the OtD PELASGIC,3 the OLp Winpic, the Oxtp German, and the Ozp Czxrric religions, forming so many links between those historical religions and the common parent of all,—the primeval Arya worship.

Space forbids us to give the complete proof of this con- clusion. We only mention that the Indian and Iranian religions have many gods incommon, unknown tothe Western Aryans, and therefore probably such as arose after the eastern and western branch of the family had separated, ¢.g., Mitra—Mithra, Aryaman—Airyaman, Bhaga—Bagha— Baga (comp. also Aramati—Armaiti, Sarasvati— Hara-

1 This special type indicates prehistoric religions.

2 This is why they call the Godhead " father," or even " brother, friend, companion." Compare the names Mitra—Mithra, " friend," Aryaman—Airyaman, "companion," &c.

3 The name is not exact. It is only chosen as the most convenient,

Genealogical Table of the Aryan Religions.

; PAMAVATIE. © |. s.i.ccsscseaecsseseecasteace covsensveteeeeee eae Buddhism | Makovane. | |

*: a Cvetimbara 3 '2 : E = | Jainism: { Digambara. (BE ' lag f.2 r= Anke SIS cere ree tanener entcrerecnercecoccorerarn codenacr reson = of) (E | £ (Vishnuitic(Krishnaitic)) ; > = iierien (a5 J sects: | Modern a 6 5 ro 2 | Re "4 re | Civaistic sects. i sects, | BO g * { So ee \ Brahmanism……. { Purva Mima;nsa. | 3 \Brahmanic sects (?). Gree 3 = J (ee eee J 3 a eae |be8 il "1 2 2s Aa | bh eee s&s io | asks lars q t mos fa | eS ee EE : Song 2|\3\238e S228) (Zendiks. os B/E ata ges S254! 5 oa Ug Nc Fer | EE Da : ae. ogs a 3 a Ss (Miia BASSI ec. at =) a, eee Modern Parsism in Kirman and India,) 7 | te B 2 RED aS} is s oy ae 4 = @ .20 o [ees ; So 2 (2 B 8 | Ci nceereee J a taat =| { Manicheism (mixed with Christian and Buddhistic 2 o \ the Achemenides be | eee). Phrygian religion (?). Mithra and Anéahita worship spread to the West. o) # (& (Grecian religions of) Hellenic rel., mixed (Homeric rel. : a Ales | Asia Minorand Crete. with Phry ygian, ; Hesiodic rel. teoonnowsanaed : iS = | &) Achean rel, Lycian, and Phos} Aplin (Delphic) rel. : | © | Pelasgic rel. nician elements. (Athenian rel. : <3 faa 3 = a*

= 2/5 : :

*z—|—& 4 * : <4 2 | 3 " be Hn | id feu} |. (Latin = pu 2 cn et Becca —Old Roman rel.——Roman rel. as reformed by the a a lal fe= Sanniitt ‘ Tarquinii and more and nore |- SPREAD OF BUDDHISM. 5 2 s LE Etrurian (?)—* mixed with Greek rites. eee ee i) rg Southern Buddhism. Northern Buddhism. 2 Ceylon. Indian Peninsula in Arvakan. the Middle Ages, 5 ‘ Burmah. now driven out. a Siam. Kashmir. _88 { Cymric branch (Welsh, Gauls). of Nepal. a 3 Gadhelic branch (Irish, Scotch). 8 Bactria. ae China—Japan, &p = a a Tibet. a Mongols. 3 Tartar tribes and Si- be ith $ eria. a Es = | Kamboja. Leal 3d ao | . . oss 3) | Indian Archipelago. I (Ze oe Odhin, Thor. > me | ° 4 \ Vanir: Njordh, Frey, Freya. ae io) PA “a 3 = a 3 es me cas z a By ies t=] o l2 q (High German branch: Tio highest, Wuotan. oa oe? z = a Low Germans: Woden, Goden. * £2 \ Low German branch < Frisians: Wéda*

Anglo-Saxon : Vuoden (?)

|

**OLD WINDIC RELIGION.*

(Religion of the Baltic Slavs or Wends proper. a) < | Old-Russian or Eastern branch (Svarog, Dajbog, Ogonii). B & { Religion of the Poles and Czechs, all but unknown. 7) B | ation of the Servians and their nearest relations, not much better known.

1 Prehistoric religions are marked with an asterisk (*),

Semitic.

RELIGIONS

qaiti, &c.), and that the Soma—Haoma sacrifice, equally unknown in Europe, at least in that form, was the prin- cipal sacrifice as well in India as in Iran. The close relation of the Teutonic and Norse religions, and of the mythology and rites of the Greeks and Romans, even if we carefully except all that the latter took from the former in historical times, is

sufficiently proved. It is not so evident, but still highly probable, that the religions of the north-western and the south-eastern Celts, though differing from one another in historical times, are daughters of one ancient Czz7ic religion. When we presuppose such a common parent, an ancient Wywpc religion, for the Letto-Slavic religions, we do so by way of an hypothesis, based on the analogy with the other branches of the family. What we know about these and about the Celtic forms of worship is so defective that we cannot speak more positively. As for the Phrygian religion, it seems to belong to the Iranian stock, and to form the transition from the Persian to the Greek or Pelasgic worship.

There may have been some other intermediate stages,

besides those which we have been compelled by the facts

to assume, between the historical Aryan religions and the prehistoric Ozp-Arvyaw. Thus, ¢.g., the Vedic religion as well as the Zarathustric cannot be considered as having sprung directly from the Zas7-Aryay. The Rig-Veda appears to be far less primitive than has been generally thought until now. It contains ancient elements, but it is itself the product of relatively modern speculations, and belongs to a period in which a complicated and mystical sacrificial theory was upheld by priests of various func- tions and ranks. On the other hand it cannot be denied that the Zarathustric dogmas are pure old Aryan myths in a new shape—this is what M. Jas. Darmesteter has proved —but it was doubtless a reformer, or, if Zarathustra was no historical person, a body of reformers, who called the Zarathustric religion into existence. Therefore, between the Vedic and Zarathustric religions and their common ancestor the Las7-ArYAN, there must have existed an Oxp Ivvraw and an OLp-/RANIAN religion.

This may suffice to justify the genealogical table of the Aryan religions given on last page.

Semitic Feligions—Though there is so much wanting in our knowledge of the Semitic religions, especially as regards those of the pre-Christian Arameans, of the pre- Islamic Arabs, and of the old Hebrews, all we know about them tends to prove that they too must have descended

from a common source. When we find that the same divinities were worshipped by several North-Semitic nations it might be contended that they were borrowed from one of them, as trade and conquest had brought them from ancient times into close contact with one another. But no such relation existed till the very last centuries of the Assyrian empire between the Northern Semites and the various tribes of the Arabian desert. Therefore gods and religious ideas and customs prevailing alike among the northern and the southern or Arabic branch of the race may be safely regarded as the primeval property of the whole family. Such are the general name for the godhead, Tlu, El, [ah (in Allah), and the gods Serakh or Sherag (3¢paxos, Assyr., Arab., Cypr.), Keivan (Kaivanu, Babyl., Assyr., Arab., ¢f. Amos v. 26), Al-Lat, the moon-goddess (Babyl., Assyr., Arab.), as one of three different forms, of which another, the Al-'Uzza of the Arabs, is met with as "Uza or 'Aza in Phoenician inscriptions, while the corresponding male god Aziz is found among the Arameans, and the third, Manat, corresponds to Meni, the "minor Fortune," the planet Venus of the Hebrews, perhaps also with the Babylonian Manu. The myth of the dying and reviving Thammuz, Dumuzi, common to all Northern Semites, seems not to have been current among the ancient Arabs, though some scholars (Krehl, "Lenor- mant) think there are traces of it left in their traditions and rites. Tree worship and stone worship have been pretty general in prehistoric times, and not a few remains of both have survived in all ancient faiths and modern superstitions ; but the latter was particularly developed among both Northern and pee Semites, which is proved by the use of Betyles (°8"N'2), by the black stone in the Ka'ba, the stone at Bethel, that in the temple of the great goddess of Cyprus at Paphos, at Edessa, and elsewhere, by the seven black stones representing the planet-gods at Erech (Uruk) in Chaldxa, &c. Holy mountains too are very frequent among the Semites, alike in Arabia (Kaci, Dhu-l-shera, Horeb, Sinai—the two last-named still worshipped by the Saracens in the 6th century of our era) and in Canaan (Hermon, Tabor, comp. the Tabyrios and Zeus Atabyrios in Cyprus, Karmél, Peniél, Sion, Moriah, ¢.¢, Gerizim), in Syria (Lebanon, Anti-Libanus, Amanus; comp. the istirdt, the heights of modern Syria), and in Mesopotamia, where the zigurrats or terrace towers represent the holy

mountains as the abodes of the gods. Finally, all Semitic religions without a single

*Genealogical Table of the Semitic Religions. *OLD 06h RELIGION. ae ee? ee*

*Southern Branch. *OLD ARABIC RELIGION.*

eee ee Religions of the Sabean or Him-

Northern Branch.

~——) Eastern Branch, Babylonian rel.,

Western Branch.

North of yaritic rel., per- Hebrew religion. i) a2) Q os) > probably mixed Arabia. haps not free 5 5 8 3 with foreign from — ota- Old- Israelitic z= = =e B Bs B elements. mian elements. rel, S =o a. = - g a Oe gE a ae I Mosaic reform, = o etree tecaae gy OB. &. Assyrian rel, 2 - Se £ £ a ¢ Beoe £ & & Rel. of Rel. of 2 A. eB. g e a Israel. Judah 68 ; Pees i i —-—-— B a =o S Reform of the 8 it an & = Prophets & SB SF F phets. a : 5 @e: 8 Se eres eri eee et Judaism. &. So & [og. tert Preaching 8 OW Mohammed See CRD eee e eens ee ere ere tee eee eaecer res ose tesecs ses of the # E 8 5 Islam, gospel. Ss Primitive a ee Christianity. PoP

1 Prehistoric religions are marked with an asterisk (*).

XX. — 46

African.

362

exception understand the relation between God and man as one between the supreme lord and king (El the mighty, Ba‘al, Bel, Adon, Malik, Sar) and his subject or slave (‘Abd, ‘Obed, Bod), his client or protected one (Jar, Gér). They are eminently theocratic, and show a marked tendency to

monotheism, which, both in Israel and in Arabia, is the last word of their religious development,

It is not so easy to determine the grade of relationship between the different Semitic religions as it is to show that they all descend from a common parent. Moreover the question is complicated by another problem—Whether the Babylonians and Assyrians borrowed the greater part of their religious conceptions and institutions from a foreign, non-Semitic people, the primitive inhabitants of their country, and if this be the case what they then have of their own and what is due to the influence of that ancient civilization. Whatever may be the final solution of this question, we shall not go far wrong if we distin- guish the Semitic religions into two principal groups—the one comprising the southern or Arabic, with perhaps the most ancient Hebrew, the other all the Northern Semitic religions from the Tigris to the Mediterranean,—leaving it undecided whether the undeniable relationship between the north-eastern and the north-western Semitic religions be that of parent and children or that of sisters—in other words, whether it be due to the influence of the superior culture of the former or to the fact that they all have radiated from a common centre. This only is beyond doubt, that the Assyrian religion is a daughter of the Babylonian, and that the Canaanitic and Pheenician modes of worship are closely allied.

What we give on last page is no more than a rough genealogical table of the Semitic religions.

A detailed and accurate genealogical classification of the religions which do not belong to either of those two principal families is out of the question. Their mutual relation can be fixed only in a general way.

African Feligions.—The first problem to be solved is the classification of the Egyptian religion. It is neither Semitic and theocratic nor Aryan and theanthropic. But it has many elements that belong to the former, and also a few elements that belong to the latter category, which might lead to the supposition that it represents a stage in the development of the great Mediterranean, commonly called the Caucasian, race, anterior to the separation of the Aryan family from the Semitic. But this is no more than a supposition, as the existence of such a Mediterranean race, embracing

the so-called Hamites, Semites, and Japhetites or Aryans, is itself a pure hypothesis. All we know is that the Egyptians themselves mention a people called Punt (the Phut of the Bible), with whom they had commercial rela- tions and whose religion was akin to their own, so much so that they called the country of Punt, on the western Arabian and on the opposite African coast, the Holy Land (ta neter). The same may be said of the Cushites, the southern neighbours of Egypt, the ancient pre-Semitic Ethiopians ; and a pre-Semitic population also may have lived in Canaan, allied to the Egyptians and ethnologically or genealogically combined with them, with Cush, and with Phut in the tenth chapter of Genesis. But, as we know next to nothing about their religions, a Hamitic family of religions, including these four, is still purely hypothetical.

That the primitive religion of southern Mesopotamia, commonly called Accadian or Sumerian, was related to the Egyptian, is also a mere conjecture, which does not seem to be favoured by the newly discovered facts. Finally, the scanty remains of the pre-Islamic religion of the Imoshagh or Berbers, the ancestors of the Libyans (in Egyptian Ribu), the Geetulians, the Mauretanians, and the Numidians resemble in some degree Egyptian customs

mG TO Ws

and notions; but, whether they point to genealogical relationship or are due to early Egyptian influence, it is hard to say.

This, however, cannot be denied, that there are to be found in the Egyptian religion a great many magical rites and animistic customs, closely resembling those which prevail throughout the whole African continent. If then, as is generally supposed,! the dominant race sprang from Asiatic settlers and conquerors, who long before the dawn of history invaded the country, subjugated the dark- coloured inhabitants, and mixed with them, and if it is to these foreigners that the more elevated elements in the Egyptian religion are due, the basis of this religion is of a purely Nigritian character.

All we can say about the other original religions of the dark continent is that they resemble one another in many respects. We may distinguish four

principal groups :—(1) the Cushite, inhabiting the north-eastern coast region south of Egypt; (2) the Nigritian proper, including all the Negro tribes of inner Africa and the west coast ; (3) the Bantu or Kaffrarian (Kafir) ; and (4) the Khoi-Khoin or Hottentot, including the Bushmen, in South Africa. Before we can come to decision with regard to the first-named group, we must receive better and more certain information than we now possess. The prominent char- acteristic of the second group of religions, those of the Negroes proper, is their unlimited fetichism, combined as usual with tree worship, animal worship, especially that of serpents, with a strong belief in sorcery and with the most abject superstitions, which even Islim and Chris- tianity are not able to overcome. They have next to no mythology, at all events a very poor one, which may be one of the causes of what is called euphemistically their ten- dency to monotheism. A theistic tendency, as Dr Tylor calls it, cannot be denied to them. Almost all tribes believe in some supreme god, without always worshipping him, generally a heaven- and rain-god, sometimes, as among the Cameroons and in Dahomey, a sun-god. But the most widely spread worship among Negroes and Negroids, from west to north-east and south to Loango, is that of the moon, combined with a great veneration for the cow.

Among the Abantu or Kafirarians (Ama-Khosa, Ama- Zulu, Be-Chuana, Ova-Herero), which form the third group, fetichism is not so exuberant. Their religion is rather a religion of spirits. The spirits they worship, not sharply distinguished from the souls of the departed ancestors (Imi-shologu, Barimi), are conjured up by a caste of sorcerers and magicians, Isintonga (Isinyanga, Nyaka), and are all subordinate to a ruling spirit, re- garded as the ancestor of the race, the highest lawgiver who taught them their religious rites, but who seems to have been originally a moon-god as the lord of heaven. The four tribes give him different names—the Ghost (Mu- kuro), the very High (Mo-limo), the Great-great (Unku-lunkulu) or grandfather ; but that the Bantu religions are four branches of one and the same faith cannot be doubted. They agree in many respects with those of the Negroes, but differ from them in others, especially in the cardinal characteristic of the latter, their fetichism. Possibly the difference is for the greater part due to the influence of the Hottentots, to whom the country now inhabited by the Abantu formerly belonged, and

who seem to have been at the time of the invasion more civilized than the latter.

The Khoi-Khoin or Hottentots, who are not black but brown, and who now live in and near the Cape Colony,

1 Even Rob. Hartmann, Die Nigritier, Berlin, 1876, pp. 192 sz., who denies the existence of a Hamitic race, and considers the Egyptians as Nubian Cushites, separated from the others in early times, ascribes their higher civilization to their intercourse with Semitic settlers.

Mon- golian,

KELIGIONS

also have a supreme deity, called Tsui- or Tsuni-Koab (the | wounded knee) by the colonial Hottentots, Heitsi-eibib (wooden face) by the Namaqua. He, too, like the highest god of the Bantu, is the ancestor of the race and the chief of souls and spirits. But the primitive myth current about him shows that he was originally a moon-god, con- tending with the spirit of darkness. 'The altars intended for sacrifices to this god are now called his graves, and the | Bantu, who do not use them, call them chiefs' graves. The great ditference between the religions of the Khoi- Khoin and the other Nigritians is the total absence of animal worship and of fetichism by which it is character- ized. Even sorcery and magic are still very primitive among them. 'Therefore they must be considered as a distinct family among the African tribes, only allied to the so-called Bushmen (Ba-tua, Ba-roa, or Soaqua, Sonqua),

who seem to be a degraded race, sunk to the lowest degree of savagery, but who likewise worship a highest god and by whom likewise fetichism is not practised.

The Chinese Religions, and their Relation to the Mongolic and Ural-Altaic.—This is perhaps the most knotty point in the genealogical classification of religions. There are ethnologists (as Oscar Peschel) who bring not only the Chinese, with their nearest relatives the Japanese and Coreans,—all Ural-Altaic or Turanian nations,—but also the whole

Malay race, including the Polynesians and Micronesians, and even the aboriginal Americans, from the Eskimo to the Patagonians and Fuegians, under one and the same vast Mongoloid family. There is indeed some similarity in the religious customs of the Americans and of the so-called Turanians ; and even in the Polynesian religions some points of contact with those of the former might be discovered. Still, such conformities are but few and not very important, and do not justify our going so far! Other ethnologists, like Friedrich Miiller, do not admit the Americans, including the Hyperboreans of North America and the north-west of Asia, nor the Malayans and the Polynesians as members of the Mongol- ian race. 'This, according to them, only comprises the Chinese and their relatives in Tibet and the Transgangetic

peninsula, the Japanese and Coreans, and the Ural-Altaic or Turanian nations. Now Prof. Max Miiller? tries to show that the religions of all those groups of nations—let us say, of this Mongolian race—are also bound together by a close relationship, because not only their character is fundamentally the same, but even the same name of the highest god, Tien, Tengre, Tangara, &c., is met with among most of them. Putting aside the argument taken from the common name of the supreme deity, which is all but general among the members of this ethnical family and seems to have come from the Chinese to some of the Mongolians,? we cannot deny the fact that not only in the Ural-Altaic and Japanese but also in the highly-developed Chinese religions the relation between the divine powers and man is purely patriarchal. Just as the chief of the horde—nay, even the son of heaven, the Chinese emperor— is regarded as the father of all his subjects, whom they are bound to obey and to venerate, so are the gods to their worshippers. The only difference is that the Chinese heaven-god Tien is an emperor like his earthly representa- tive, ruling over the other spirits of heaven and earth as does the latter over the dukes of the empire and their subjects, while the Ural-Altaic heaven-god is indeed the most powerful being, invoked in the greatest difficulties, when he only is able to save, but no supreme ruler,—not

1 They are enumerated by Waitz, Anthropologie der Naturvilker, lii., 56 sq. 2 Lectures on the Science of Religion, 190 sq.

3 The resemblance of the Mongolian Tengre, Tangara, to the Sumerian or Accadian Dingira appears to be equally fortuitous as that of the Polynesian Tangaroa (Taaroa) to the Melanesian Ndengei.

anything more than a primus inter pares, every other god being absolute lord and master in his own domain. Now this difference is not one of character but of progress, and answers fully to the difference of the political institutions of which it. is the reflex.

The high veneration for the spirits of the deceased fathers, which are devoutly worshipped among all the members of this religious family, is a necessary conse- quence of its patriarchal type. But this feature is not less predominant among nations belonging to wholly different races. Another striking characteristic of the Mongolic religions is their extensive magic and sorcery (Shamanism). One might say that even the gods and the heroes of epic poetry are sorcerers, and that what their worshippers value above all are the magical powers they possess. Shamans are most highly honoured. One of the Chinese religions, and in fact that which contains the most ancient elements, we mean Taoism, involves the most implicit belief in sorcery, and even Buddhism, as it was adopted by the Mongols and the Chinese, has degenerated to all but pure Shamanism.

We are thus fully justified in assuming a Mongolian or patriarchal family of religions, of which the following are the principal subdivisions :—

1. Chinese Religions, being (a) the Awcrznr NATIONAL Chinese.

religion, now superseded partly by (6) Confucianism and (c) Taoism, partly, though only several centuries later, by Chinese Buddhism. What the ancient national religion was can only be gathered from its survivals in the still existing faiths. Confucianism claims to be a restoration of the old and pure institutions of the fathers, though it may just as well be said to be a thorough reform, and Taoism is, according to some European scholars, the original Chinese religion in its latest development—we should say, in its most miserable degradation. At all events, in some form or another, it is much older than Lao-tsze (6th century B.c., see Lao-

rszE), though it has availed itself of his mystical treatise Z'ao-té-King as a sacred buok. There may be some truth in both these conflicting assertions. Without venturing to speculate on the origin of the Chinese nationality, which according to some is a mixture of autochthons with more civilized foreign invaders (the Hundred Families), nor on the possibility that this ethnic dualism may be the source of the two streanis of religious development in China, we have some ground to hold Con- fucius's reform as the renewal of a much older reform (Chowkung's or even earlier), limited to the learned and the greater part of the upper classes,—Taoism on the con- trary being a revival of the ancient popular Chinese religion, to which the 7'ao-té-King had to give the appear- ance of a philosophical basis. Chinese Buddhism does not differ much from the latter, and is now equally despised.

2. Japanese Religions, where we have again the same Japanese.

triad, nearly parallel to the Chinese: (a) the old national religion Kami- no-madsu (the way, 7.e., the worship, of the gods), called frequently Sin- to (Chinese Shin-tao, the way or worship of the spirits), with the mikado as its spiritual head, just as Chinese Taoism had its popes; (0) Confucianism, imported from China in the 7th century; and © Buddhism, imported from Corea and nearly ex- terminated in the 6th century, but reviving, and at last, in the beginning of the 7th century, triumphant.

3. The /%nnic branch of the Ural-Altaic religions, all recog- Finnic.

nizing the same heaven-god Num, Yum, Yummal, Yubmel, Yumala, as supreme. The primitive unity of this sub- division has been demonstrated by Castrén, the highest authority upon it. By far the best known of this family are its North-European members, the religions of the Lapps, the Esthonians, and the Finns, but the two last named are not pure specimens of Ural-Altaic worship, as

Eskimo.

Other

Ameri- can re- ligions,

they borrowed much from the Germanic, especially from the Scandinavian, mythology.

It is highly probable that the other branches of the same ethnic family, the Mongolian and the Turkish, and the other members of the same branch, e.g., the Magyars, originally did not differ much from the Finnic in religious ideas and customs. Unfortunately we are here able to judge only by analogy, partly because we are but imper- fectly informed, partly because most of these nations have long been converted to Buddhism, Mohammedanism, and Christianity. Nor do we know in how far the Tibetans, Burmese, Siamese, and other peoples nearly related to the Chinese had originally a similar worship, as all of them are now faithful Buddhists.

The question whether the religion of the primitive inhabitants of Mesopotamia (Sumér-Akkad) has any genea- logical relation to that of the Chinese and the Ural-Altaic family, as some scholars now try to prove, is not yet ripe for solution.

The Aboriginal Religions of America.—The religions of the Eskimo (Esquimantsic, Ashkimeg, as their Redskin neighbours call them) or Innuyt (7. "men," as they call themselves) should be clearly distinguished from those of the other American nations. Though some of their cus- toms and notions resemble those of the latter, there are others, and it would seem the most important, which are of the same character as those prevailing among the Ural- Altaians and Mongols. Now, as they belong ethnically to the Hyperborzean or Arctic nations, who inhabit not only the extreme north of America from east to west, but also the islands between the two continents and besides a part of the east of Siberia, and as these Hyperborzans are physically akin to the Mongolian race, we might suppose that the American elements in the Eskimo religion have been borrowed, and that it must be considered to have been originally a member of the Ural-Altaic family. Their division of the world of spirits into those of the sea, the fire, the mountains, and the winds, with Torngarsuk (chief of spirits), the heaven-god, as the highest, and their belief in the magical power of their sorcerers, the Angekoks, do not differ

from those which characterize the Ural-Altaic religions. At any rate the religion of the Eskimo is the connecting link between the latter and those of the American aborigines.

That all the other religions of North and South America are most closely allied is generally admitted, and is indeed beyond doubt. Several myths, like those of the sun-hero, of the moon-goddess, of the four brothers (the winds),! are found in their characteristic American form among the most distant tribes of both continents. Some religious customs, scarcely less characteristic, such as the sweating bath, intended to cause a state of ecstasy, the ball-play, a kind of ordeal, the sorcery by means of the rattle, are all but generally practised. Fetichism and idolatry are much less developed among the Americans than among other uncivilized and semi-civilized races, but a marked tendency to gloomy rites and bloody self-torture is common to all.

subordinate ; also the hero myth which has sprung from that belief, and the so-called totemism, 7.¢., the adoption of a special tutelar genius, usually in animal form, for every individual family. (2) Those of the Aztec race, comprising the Aztecs, Toltecs, and Nahuas, who are spread from Vancouver's Island to Nicaragua. To this branch belongs that strange mixture of more elevated religious ideas and barbarous rites which was the state worship of the Mexican empire, but which for its purer elements was indebted to the conquered race, the Mayas (see Mexico). (3) Those of the original inhabitants of the Antilles, to whom the Mayas in Yucatan and the Natchez between the Red River and the Mississippi seem to be nearly related. They are one of the most gifted nations of the American race, with an interesting mythology and highly-developed religious ideas, but perhaps weakened by civilization and therefore unable to withstand the more warlike barbarous tribes, by whom they were finally sub-jugated. (4) That of the Muyscas (Chibchas) in South. America. Originally they seem to have had the same worship as the Nicaraguans. At least the Nicaraguan god Fomagazdad, the creator of mankind and the consort of the moon-goddess, acts a part in the principal myth of the Muyscas, under the name of Fomagata. But-after the latter had reached a

higher stage of civilization they adored the god Bochika as its principal founder, and Fomagata became a dethroned tyrant, while the moon. goddess, now an evil deity, tried to spoil the beneficent works of Bochika. There is some likeness between their hierarchical political institutions and those of Peru, but they were never subjected to the power of the Incas, and it is not proved that they borrowed their culture from them. (5) Those of the Quichua, Aymara, and their rela- tives, which culminated in the sun worship of the Incas in Peru, spread by them throughout all the countries they conquered, and even reformed by some of them to a toler- ably pure and elevated theism (not monotheism, as Dr Brinton contends). This most interesting religion ranks highest among all the faiths of the two American con- tinents, those of Central America not excepted. This remarkable progress is not to be derived from the influence of foreign settlers, come from Asia or Europe, but is here, _ as well as in Central America, the product of natural growth favoured by happy circumstances. (6) Those of the warlike Caribs and Arowaks, extending along the whole of the north coast of South America, who subjugated the peaceful inhabitants of the Antilles to their rule.

The Brazilian aborigines (Tupi-guaranos, Indios mansos), who form a distinct group, and the south-eastern and southern tribes (Abipones, Pampas Indians, Puelches, Pata- gonians or Tehuelches, Fuegians) have religious notions and customs quite in accordance with the low degree of their civilization. Only the Araucanians, though ethnic- ally the nearest relations of the Fuegians and perhaps of the Pampas Indians, have a somewhat advanced sun wor- ship, but seem to have been influenced by the ascendency of Peruvian culture.

The American family of religions may be divided into the following principal groups. (1) Those of the Redskins of North America, from Canada to the Gulf of Mexico, all

Lastly we come to the Malayo-Polynesian family of Malayo- religions. The primitive ethnic unity of this widely Poly- scattered race, which, including the Micronesians and 2°S!4™

of whom have in common the worship of the great spirit (Kitche Manitoo, Michabo, Wahcon[da], Anduagni, Oki) who is the ghost of heaven, the

highest wind-god, to whom all other spirits, even those of the sun and the moon, are

1 The myth of the four brothers is met with, ¢g., among the Algonkins, the Mayas in Yucatan, the Tzendal branch of the Maya race, the Tarascos in Michoacan near Mexico, the Aztecs, by whom it is combined with that of Quetzalcoatl, all through North America, ae os in Peru. See Brinton, Hero Myths, pp. 44, 162, 216, 208,

3, 179.

|

Melanesians, inhabits the islands in the Great Pacific from Easter Island to the Pelew Archipelago, the East Indian Archipelago, and the Malay Peninsula, and to which belong the Hovas of Madagascar, has been established on sufficient evidence. As to their primitive religious unity we cannot be equally positive. The original religions of the Malay archipelago have given place first to Brahmanism and Buddhism, afterwards to Mohammedanism, lastly, though only sporadically, to Christianity. But, so far as we can

judge from what has still survived of the aboriginal

Classi- fication of re-

ligions,

Piha Gil ons

worship and from what is known of the religious customs of the Malagasy, especially the Hovas, the ancient Malay religions did not differ more from the Polynesian and the Melanesian than do the languages. There is one institu- tion especially which, though in principle and to a certain degree common to all ancient religions, has nowhere acquired that importance and that peculiar development which it has grown to in the Polynesian and the Melane- sian religions, the institution of the taboo, a kind of interdict laid on objects and persons, by which they are

made sacred and inviolable. Now this taboo, which more than anything else characterizes these religions, was equally important in Madagascar before Radama's reforms, and exists also among the Malays, who call it Pamali, nay, even among the Australians, who call it Kuinyunda. There are some other customs common to all these nations, as the particular worship of the ghosts of the deceased, some ordeals, &c., but this is of minor importance. The general observance of such a peculiar custom as the taboo by all the peoples belonging to this ethnic family, a custom which rules their whole religion, gives us the right to speak of a Malayo-Polynesian family of religions.

One distinct branch of this family is the Polynesian, which has everywhere the same myths with only local varieties, and the same supreme god Taaroa or Tangaroa. The Micronesian branch is only a subdivision of it. The Melanesian branch differs more widely, but agrees in the main, and the supreme god Ndengei, whether original or borrowed, is evidently the same as Tangaroa. That the Malay branch had its marked subdivisions is very pro- bable; but the settlement of this difficult question must be left to further research. According to ethnologists the Australians and the now extinct Tasmanians do not belong to the Malayo-Polynesian race. But, as their religion shows the same prominent characteristic as the Polynesian, and, moreover, agrees with it in other respects, they must be in some way related.

These are the rough outlines of a genealogical classifica- tion of religions. It embraces nearly all of them. Only afew have been purposely left out, such as those of the Dravidas, the Munda tribes, and the Sinhalese in India, partly for want of trustworthy information, partly because it is not yet certain what belongs to them originally and what is due to Hindu influence. At any rate we cannot consider their religions as allied to the Ural-Altaic. We have also omitted the religions of the Basque or Euscal- dunac, of which nothing particular is known, and for obvious reasons the Etrurian. Even if the intricate pro- blem with regard to their language could be solved, the Etrurians borrowed so much from the Greek mythology that it would be next to impossible to state what kind of religion they originally had as their own.

Morphological Classification of Religions.—In his Lec- tures on the Science of Religion, pp. 123-143, Prof. Max Miller, who has done so much to raise the comparative study of religions to the rank of a science, criticizes the most usual modes of classification applied to religions, viz., (1) that into true and false, (2) that into revealed and natural, (3) that into national and individual, (4) that into polytheistic, dualistic, and monotheistic, and dis- misses each and all of them as useless and impracticable. In this we cannot but acquiesce in his opinion and hold his judgment as decisive. The only exception we should like to take refers to the classification under (3), which, as we shall presently show, contains more truth than he is dis- posed to admit. And when he winds up his argument with the assertion that "the only scientific and truly genetic classification of religions is the same as the classi- fication of languages" we must dissent from him. Even

36d

run parallel with that of languages. Prof. Max Miiller says that, " particularly in the early history of the human intellect, there exists the most intimate relationship between language, religion, and nationality." This may be generally true; we do not deny it. But the farther history advances the more does religion become inde- pendent of both language and nationality. And that the stage of development a religion has attained to—the one thing to be considered for a morphological classification—has nothing to do with the language of its adherents is obvious. Now for a really scientific study of religions such a morphological classification is absolutely necessary, and therefore we are bound by our subject to give our opinion with regard to the truly scientific principle on which it ought to be based.

First let us see what has already been done to this effect by one of the best authorities. Prof. W. D. Whitney, in an interesting article "On the so-called Science of Religion," declares for the well-known classifica- tion of religions into national and individual. To quote his own words, "There is no more marked distinction among religions than the one we are called upon to make between a race religion—which, like a language, is the collective product of the wisdom of a community, the unconscious growth

of generations—and a religion pro- ceeding from an individual founder, who, as leading repre- sentative of the better insight and feeling of his time (for otherwise he would meet with no success), makes head against formality and superstition, and recalls his fellow- men to sincere and intelligent faith in a new body of doctrines, of specially moral aspect, to which he himself gives shape and coherence. Of this origin are Zoroas- trianism, Mohammedanism, Buddhism; and, from the point of view of the general historian of religions, what- ever difference of character and authority he may recognize in its founder, Christianity belongs in the same class with them, as being an individual and universal religion, grow- ing out of one that was limited to a race." We hardly think that this reasoning can be unconditionally assented to. At any rate we must put it in another way. Before the American scholar's essay was published, it had already been judiciously observed by Prof. Max Miiller that, though neither a Brahman, nor a Greek, nor a Roman could name the name of the founder of his religion, we discover even there the influence of individual minds or schools or climates. So he thinks that this classification is useful for certain purposes, but fails as soon as we attempt to apply it in a more scientific spirit. This is partially true. What is the wisdom of a community but the wisdom of its more enlightened members, that is, of individuals? Religions of which the origin and history lies in the dark may be called the unconscious growth of generations, but in a figurative sense only. If they have a mythology and a ritual of their own, it may be the result of something like natural selection ; but every myth meant to explain natural phenomena, every rite meant to still the wrath or to win the favour of the higher powers and accepted as an integral part of their faith and worship, perhaps first by some more advanced members of a tribe or nation or community only, afterwards by all of them, was originally the creation of one single human mind. On the other hand, if founders of higher religions are themselves "the leading representatives of the better insight and feeling of their time," then here too there is only growth ; they are at the head of their contemporaries, because the better insight and feeling of the latter culmin- ate in them, and because they are able to lend them a shape which makes the more advanced ideas and senti- ments agreeable to the minds and hearts of the many ;

the genealogical classification of religions does not always | but they meet with success only when that which they

preach lies hidden and lives unspoken in the minds and | gods, but even subordinated to them. If some individuals—

hearts of their generation. It is clear then, that on both sides of the line of demarcation between the two categories of religions there are individuals at work, and that on both sides there is growth. The only remaining difference is, that on this side there is consciousness, on that side there is not. But this too cannot serve us. Much in the growth of the so-called race religions was unconscious and therefore anonymous and forgotten; much, however, was not so. We know of many changes for better or worse in national religions, either reforms or reactions, made with full consciousness, because intentionally ; and we know the names of the kings or tyrants or other individuals who made them. Who knows if the same was not the case when these religions were born—if what now seems to be the collective product of the wisdom of the community was not simply the product of a tyrant's, a mighty chief- tain's bon plaisir, or of a renowned magician's influence ? Finally, if by "founder of a religion" is meant he whom the professors of that religion revere as a heaven-born messenger of the truth or as the greatest of prophets, or adore as the son of God, the incarnation of the highest, —then what Prof, Whitney says they all did, namely, " give shape and coherence to a body of doctrines of specially moral aspect," does not apply to the most of them. The new body of doctrines in its coherence was never shaped by them, but by the leaders of the community to which their preaching gave rise. We call them founders of a new religion, not because they always intended to found one, but because, perhaps involuntarily, they laid the foundations of it in the new and pregnant principles they revealed to the world by their word and life.

Still, whatever we may have to criticize in Prof. Whitney's proposition, there is indeed no more marked distinction among religions than the one

he makes between what he calls race religions and religions proceeding from an individual founder, and no other than this should be the basis of a morphological classification. For between those two great categories or orders to one or other of ‘ ° oo. oe

which all known religions belong and every religion must belong there is a difference not only of degree but of an essential kind, a difference of principle, the one great all- important difference. The principle of the one category is nature, that of the other ethics.

In the nature religions the supreme gods are the mighty powers of nature, be they demons, spirits, or man-like beings, and ever so highly exalted. There are great mutual differences between these religions, though they belong to the same order,—eg., a great difference between the Finnic Ukko and the Norse Odin, between the thunder- god of the Brazilian aborigines and the Vedic Indra or the Olympian Zeus, but it is only a difference of degree; fundamentally they are the same. Nobody denies that one nature religion stands on a much higher level than another. Not only are they either uncon- sciously and by the drift of public opinion or consciously and intentionally altered, enriched, combined with foreign modes of worship, but in some of them a constant and remarkable progress is also to be noticed. Gods are more and more anthropomorphized, rites humanized. For they are not by any means inaccessible to the influence of moral progress. Frem an early period moral ideas are com- bined with religious doctrines, and the old mythology is modified by them. Ethical attributes are ascribed to the gods, especially to the highest. Nay, ethical as well as intellectual abstractions are personified and worshipped as divine beings. But as arule this happens only in the most advanced stages of nature worship; and, moreover, these ethical personifications are simply incorporated in the old system, and not only not distinguished from the nature

J

philosophers, sages, prophets—have risen to the conscious- ness that the moral ought to have predominance over the natural, yet nature religion, though strongly mixed with ethical elements, does not recognize this, and those who are called to represent and defend it abhor such inde- pendent

thinkers and persecute them as dangerous enenties to the faith of the fathers. Nature religions cannot do otherwise, at least if they do not choose to die at once. They can for a long time bear the introduction—let us say, infiltration—of moral, as well as esthetic, scientific, and philosophical notions into their mythology; they suffer from it, indeed, and this is instinctively felt by the headstrong defenders of the pure old tradition; but they are unable to shut them out, and if they did so they would be left behind and lose their hold on the minds and the hearts of the leading classes amoung more civilized nations. So they are obliged to let them in, were it only for self-preservation. But the reform must not exceed certain limits. If the ethical elements acquire the upper hand, so that they become the predominating principle, then the old forms break in twain by the too heavy burden of new ideas, and the old rites become obsolete as being useless. If the majority has at last outgrown the traditional worship and mythology—if it comes to the conclusion, which was already the conviction of philosophers, that the old nwmina are only nomina, Zeus, Hera, Hestia only names for the sky, the ether, the fire,! to which moral attributes can be ascribed only in a tropical sense—then nature religion inevitably dies of inanition. No political power, no mighty priesthood, no poetry, no mysticism like that of the Neo-Platonists, no romanticism like that of Julian, not even an attempt to imitate the organization and the rites of an ethical religion, can save it any longer from utter decay.

When this culminating point has been reached, the way is prepared for the preaching of an ethical religious doctrine. Ethical religions do not exclude the old naturistic elements altogether, but subordinate them to the ethical principle and lend them something of an ethical tinge, that they may be more in accordance with the now prevailing system. The old nature-gods, at least the most important among them, survive, and, though first neglected and thrown into the background by the new ideal or abstract divine beings, come again to the front, but only as serving spirits, ministers, angels (dyyeAo., yazatas, &c), or even saints, as all nature now stands under the control of one supernatural ruler in whom the supremacy of moral law is personified. Now the prominent characteristics of ethical religions are just the reverse of that which characterizes the naturistic. Nature religions are polyde- monistic or

polytheistic ; under favourable circumstances they may rise at best to monolatry. Ethical religions, on the other hand, though not all of them strictly monotheistic or pantheistic, all tend to monotheism and are at least monarchic. In nature religions, though they are not exempt from the control of individuals, and even have in part received from them their particular shape or been reformed by them, the ethical or national aspect prevails over the individual, spontaneous growth over conscious speculation, imagination over reflexion. Ethical religions on the contrary are communities brought together, not by the common belief in national traditions, but by the common belief in a doctrine of salvation, and organized

1 This conclusion as such is utterly false. The gods are no mere nomina. They are not the natural phenomena themselves, but spirits, lords, ruling them. The fact is that their worshippers at last become conscious of the naturistic basis of their religion and then reject it.

practising that doctrine. So they are founded by indi- viduals—founded, not instituted or organized, for that as a rule is done by the generation which follows that of the founder—and not always by one single person, but in some cases by a body of priests or teachers. This funda- mental doctrine and the system based on it are considered by the adherents to be a divine revelation, and he who first revealed it, or is thought to have revealed it, is con- sidered as an inspired prophet or a son of God. Nay, even if the primitive teaching had an atheistic tendency, as in the case of Buddhism, it is this real or mythical teacher whom they not only revere, but worship as their supreme deity.

We now come to the subdivisions of each of the two principal categories. And here we cannot silently pass by the classification of the least advanced religions proposed by Prof. Pfleiderer (Religionsphilosophie auf geschichtlicher Grundlage, 2d ed. 1884, vol. ii.), which supersedes the complete classification of religions given by him in an earlier work (Dre Religion, thr Wesen und ihre Geschichte). The latter was based on his conception of religion as the fusion of dependence and liberty, but has now been aban- doned by the author.

According to Pfleiderer the original religion must have been a kind of indistinct, chaotic naturism, being an adoration of the natural phenomena as living powers ; and, as primitive man cannot have had consciousness of his superiority over the animals, nor of his personality and his spiritual nature, he could not conceive these divine powers as personal, or spiritual, or anthropomorphic, but only as living beings.

Then from this primitive naturism sprang :—(1) anthro- pomorphic polytheism, which is decidedly an advance on mythopceic naturism, as it brings the personal gods into relation with the moral life of man, but at the same time has its drawback since it attributes all human passions, faults, and sins to the gods; (2) spiritism (animism), combined with a primitive idolatry, fetichism, each of them not an advance but rather a depravation of religion, caused by the decadence of civilization, which inevitably followed the dispersion and isolation of tribes previously united; (3) henotheism, not the henotheism of Max Miller, or of Hartmann, or of Asmus, but a practical henotheism, 7.¢., the adoration of one God above others as the specific tribal god or as the lord over a particular people, a national or relative monotheism, like that of the ancient Israelites, the worship of an absolute sovereign who exacts passive obedience. This practical monotheism is totally different from the theoretical monotheism, to which the Aryans, with their monistic speculative idea of the godhead, are much nearer.

Passing by the primitive naturism, which is only a matter of speculation, we are bound to admit the real exist- ence of the other three classes specified by Pfleiderer. Only the order in which they are arranged must be changed. For, if spiritism or animism sprang from a primitive not yet animistic naturism, at the same time with, though under different circumstances from, anthropomorphic poly- theism and henotheism, how then shall we explain so many traces and remains of a previous animistic belief in each of the latter religious developments? They too must have gone through an animistic stage. And, on the other hand, some traces even of anthropomorphic mythology are not totally wanting in the animistic religions of uncivilized tribes and barbarous nations,—though, of course, in this mythology manlike beings still stand on the same level as, if not much lower than, those having the shape of animals,

The different stages of religious development have been characterized by C. P. Tiele (Outlines of the History of

Religion, § 3) as follows :—(a) a period in which animism generally prevailed, still represented by the so-called nature religions (in the narrower sense), or rather by the polydex- monistic magical tribal religions ; (6) polytheistic national religions resting on a traditional doctrine; (c) nomistic (or, as Prof. Carlo Puini proposes to call them, nomothetic) religions, or religious communities founded on a law or sacred writing and subduing polytheism more or less com- pletely by pantheism or monotheism; (d) universal or world-religions, which start from principles and maxims. Though in general maintaining this division, at least for practical use, if we wish to draw up a morphological classi- fication of religions, we shall have to modify and to com- plete it, and to arrange the different stages under the two principal categories of nature religions and ethical religions.

Nature Religions.—1. To the philosophy of religion we Nature leave the solution of the difficult problem,—What may religions.

have been the state of religion before the oldest religion known to us sprang into being, and even before that animistic stage of development which we know only by its survivals in the higher and its ruins in the still existing lower religions? Certain it is that the oldest religions must have contained the germs of all the later growth, and, though perhaps more thoroughly naturistic than the most naturistic now known, must have shown some faint traces at least of awakening moral feelings. Man, we think, in that primitive stage, must have regarded the natural phenomena on which his life and welfare depend as living beings, endowed with superhuman magical power; and his imagination, as yet uncontrolled by observation and reasoning, must frequently have given them the shape of frightful animals, monsters, portentous mythical beings, some of which still survive in the later mythologies. Perhaps the best name for this first stage of religious development might be the “ polyzoic” stage.

2. The following naturistic stages are to be classified under three distinct heads :—(a) polydemonistic magical religions under the influence of animism; (0) purified magical religions, in which animistic ideas still play a prominent part, but which have grown up to a therian- thropic polytheism ; (c) religions in which the powers of nature are worshipped as manlike though superhuman and semi-ethical beings, or anthropomorphic polytheism.

3. Animism, which exercises a prominent influence on Animism

the religions of the first stage (a) mentioned above, is a system by which man, having become conscious of the superiority of the spirit over the body and of its relative independence, tries to account for the phenomena of nature, which he, not having the slightest scientific knowledge either of nature or of mind, is unable to explain otherwise. It is not itself a religion, but a sort of primitive philosophy, which not only controls religion, but rules the whole life of man in the childhood of the world. All things living and moving, or startling him by something strange and extraordinary, and of which he does not know the natural causes, he ascribes to the working of mighty spirits, moving freely through earth and air, and, now of their own accord now under com- pulsion, taking up their abode either temporarily or permanently in some living or some lifeless object. Only the powerful among these spirits, "those on which man feels himself dependent, and before which he stands in awe, acquire the rank of divine beings," and either as invisible or as embodied spirits become objects of worship (spiritism and fetichism). As the principal characteristics of those religions we have to consider—(1) a confused and indeterminate polydzemonistic mythology, though some spirits, especially those directing heavenly pheno- mena, are held to be more powerful than the others, and the supreme spirit of heaven is generally the mightiest of

all; (2) an implicit belief in the power of magic, which | returning phenomena, but, in accordance with the manlike

accounts for the high veneration in which sorcerers and fetich-priests are held ; (3) the predomination of fear over all other feelings, and the performance of religious acts mostly for selfish ends. For a somewhat more copious exposition of the character and the development of religions under the control of animism we must refer to Outlines of the History of Religion, S§ 7-17, and the works there cited. Theri- 4, Purified magical religions (6) are the connecting link anthropic between the polydemonistic magic religions (a) and the cl anthropomorphic polytheistic ©, and ought to be distin- "guished from each. The gods, though sometimes repre- sented in a human form, more frequently in that of an animal, are really spiritual beings, embodying themselves in all kinds of things, but principally in animals. Most images of the gods are either human bodies with heads of animals or the bodies of animals with human heads. It is therefore we call these religions therianthropic. The worship of animals is one of the principal characteristics of most of them. Ina subsequent stage, though surviving sporadically, it is much more restricted. The same may be said of the widespread worship paid to the souls of the departed, which is one of the most important constituent elements of the religions in this stage of development, though it survives in the next stage as well. It is frequently combined, as, ¢.g., in Egypt, with an elaborate eschatology. Magic and sorcery, though forbidden and even entailing prosecution if exercised by private sorcerers, are still held in high esteem when in the hands of the lawful priests. They are now organized as a traditional ritual and gradually developed into a boundless mysticism. Some of the ancient nature myths have already become legends and supposed primeval history. As might be expected, some of the religions belonging to the therian- thropic stage stand nearer to the primitive animism, whilst others draw very nigh to the anthropomorphic stage; and so it would seem that we ought to make a distinction between such therianthropic religions as belong to federations and such as belong to united empires—let us say, the unorganized and the organized. In the latter there is a strong tendency to monotheism anda kind of theocracy, the king being regarded as the living representa- tive of the supreme deity, both of which characteristics are not so prominent in the former.

5. In the anthropomorphic polytheism of the highest nature religions © there are, as in all subsequent stages, many survivals of what was

common in the preceding, but so far as this could be done they have been adapted to the new system and disguised under new names or by means of new explanations. We call this polytheism anthropomorphic because the gods are now all of them superhuman but manlike beings, lords over the powers of nature and reigning over its departments, workers of good and of evil. As manlike beings they show more ethical tendencies and attributes than those of the – previous periods. But, being indeed the old nature gods themselves, only remodelled and humanized, and their myths being originally fantastic and even animistic descriptions of natural phenomena, represented as wars and wooings, quarrels and revelries, robberies and tricks of the giant powers of nature, their mythology is full of disgusting narratives, and they are frequently represented as indulging the lowest passions and performing the most degrading acts. Pious poets and grave philosophers felt shocked by such myths, and either tried to mend them or boldly denied them; but they constituted nevertheless the faith of the majority till the fall of nature religion. Only, though essentially nature myths and still felt to be so, they are now no longer considered as an explanation of ever-

Anthro- pomor- phic poly- theism.

character of the gods, as a kind of divine history, nay, are worked out into what may be called an imposing epic, beginning with the origin of life and ending only with the fall of the present cosmic econonly. The gods them- selves are no longer represented as animals or trees or stones; these have now become their symbols and attributes, and are only looked upon as being sacred to them. Of the power they possessed, in their old quality of spirits, to assume all shapes at will the myths of their metamorphoses still bear witness, myths now told by elegant poets for the amusement of their readers, but despised by serious philo- sophers. The real therianthropic beings of the old mytho- logy, monsters like centaurs, harpies, fauns, satyrs, and others which could not be banished from ancient lore, now represent a lower order and are suffered to act only as followers or ministers or even as enemies of the gods. Not one of the religions in the polytheistic stage was able to elevate itself to the purely ethical standpoint ; but, as moral consciousness went on increasing, deeper and more ethical religious ideas gathered round the persons of the

most humane gods, the beloved son or daughter of the supreme deity, and gave rise to purer modes of worship which seemed to be forebodings of a time to come.

Ethical Religions.—1. With regard to the ethical religions Ethical the question has been mooted—and a rather puzzling religions. question it is —What right have we to divide them into nomistic or nomothetic communities, founded on a law or Holy Scripture, and universal or world religions, which start from principles and maxims, the latter being only three—Buddhism, Christianity, and Mohammedanism ? The division has been adopted, among others by Prof. Kuenen, in his Hibbert Lectures, though with the import- ant restriction that Islam, as being essentially par- ticularistic, ought to be excluded from the class of univer- salistic religions. In an interesting paper (in the Leyden Theol. Tijdschrift, 1885, No. 1) Prof. Rauwenhoff rejects the whole class and particularly disapproves of the term "world religions," for which he substitutes that of "world churches." The question deserves to be discussed thoroughly, but for that this is not the place. Here we can only state the results to which a conscientious review of our own opinion and an impartial consideration of our opponents' arguments have led us.

2. We now think that the term " world religions " must be sacrificed, though indeed " world churches" would do no better, perhaps even worse. Without serving longer to determine the character of certain religions, the term " world religions" might still be retained for practical use, to distinguish the three religions which have found their way to different races and peoples and all of which profess the intention to conquer the world, from such communities as are generally limited to a single race or nation, and, where they have extended farther, have done so only in the train of, and in connexion with, a superior civilization. Strictly speaking, there can be no more than one universal or world religion, and if one of the existing religions is so potentially it has not yet reached its goal. This is a matter of belief which lies beyond the limits of scientific classification.

3. Still there is a real difference between two at least of the three above named, which are still contending with one another for supremacy over

the nations of the globe, and the other religious communities which no longer try to make proselytes—between Buddhism and Christianity on the one hand, and Confucianism, Brahmanism, Jainism, Mazdaism, and Judaism on the other. And this difference, which ought to be maintained, is indeed one of principle, not of fact only. If the latter, after having been adopted by a nation, have remained stationary for centuries and

even are continuously fading away, while the former now embrace many millions of adherents belonging to various nations and races, and ever go on increasing more or less rapidly, this cannot be due to some fortuitous or external circumstances only, but must have its principal cause in the very nature of each sort of religions.

4. When we call the one particularistic the others universalistic (not universal), the one national the other human, when we describe the one as bound to special doctrines and rites, the others, though equally embodying themselves in doctrines and rites wherever they were organized into churches or state religions, as nevertheless really free from them and starting from principles and maxims, we possibly use words apt to be misunderstood and perhaps wanting some qualification, but the meaning of them on the whole is sufficiently clear. In calling nomistic religions, like Judaism and Mazdaism, particular- istic or national, we do not mean to say that they are exclusive in character and that they have not tried to spread beyond the boundaries of the race and the nation to which they belonged originally. They have done so indeed ; they hoped to extend their dominion, but they succeeded only where they could impose the nationality or the civilization with which they had grown together, like the Chinese in Corea and Japan, or the Brahmans in several parts of India ; and it is known that the proselytes of Judaism always ranked below the born sons of Abraham.

Now Buddhism, Islam, and Christianity were neither national nor particularistic. All of them were the repre- sentatives of ideas surpassing so to say the national horizon ; all of them had in view, not the special religious wants of the nation, but more general aspirations of the human heart and mind. Two of them, therefore, were rejected, after a shorter or

longer struggle, by the peoples to which their founders belonged by birth; and it isa well-known fact that Mohammedanism, though founded by an Arab, took its fundamental ideas from Judaism and Christianity, and that not the Arabs, but foreign nations, especially the Persians, raised it to the high position which it would not have occupied in the world without them. The national form of the Buddhistic idea was Jainism, that of the Christian idea Ebionitism, and perhaps the Wahhabites may be considered as the national reformers of Mohammedanism ; and it is only natural that none of these sects found adherents except among the peoples in the midst of which they arose. Nor were Buddhism, Islim, and Christianity particularistic. Bud- dhism "looks for the man ; the miseries of existence beset all alike, and its law is a law of grace for all."—So too in its way does Islim; in the beginning it spreads by con- quest, but the faithful of every nationality, whether converted by the force of arms or by the preaching of missionaries, acquire the same rights and dignity as the Arabs. The universalism of Christianity needs no proof. Here, however, the difference begins. We class these three religions under one head, because they reseinble one another in so many respects, and because they differ from the other religious communities founded by individuals precisely in that in which they are mutually alike. But we are far from placing them on the same level. Isldm, é.g., 18 not original, not a ripe fruit, but rather a wild offshoot of Judaism and Christianity. Buddhism, though the most widely spread, has never been victorious except where it had to contend with religions standing on no very high degree of development. For a short time it had a footing in Persian countries, but there its influence was neither deep nor durable, and in China it was not even able to overcome Confucianism and Taoism ; it seems to have been driven from India by Brahmanism, without being actually persecuted. Both Islam and Buddhism, if

not national, are only relatively universalistic, and show the one-sidedness, the one of the Semitic, the other of the Aryan race. The former represents an important religious idea—the absolute sovereignty of the one God, towards whom man, being nothing himself, has only one duty, that of tacit obedience; it exalts the divine, not com- bining it with, but

opposing it to, the human, which it despises, and therefore neglects the development of ethics. Buddhism on the contrary neglects the divine, preaches the final salvation of man from the miseries of existence through the power of his own self-renunciation; and therefore, as it is atheistic in its origin, it very soon becomes infected by the most fantastic mythology and the most childish superstitions. If religion really is the synthesis of dependence and liberty, we might say that Islam represents the former, Buddhism the latter element only, while Christianity does full justice to both of them. Christianity, the pure and unalloyed at least, has fused dependence and liberty, the divine and the human, religion and ethics into an indivisible unity.

5. There are still some other points of difference. Thus, to mention one point only, Mohammedanism in its external features is little better than an extended Judaism. Spread over many countries, adopted by various nations differing in culture, speech, and race, nevertheless it has its holy language, its unvarying rites, its central sanctuary round which the pilgrims from every part of the Mohammedan world assemble every year. Not so with Buddhism and Christianity. If Christian crusaders tried to reconquer their Holy Land from the infidels, and in fact possessed it for a time, if medizeval Buddhist pilgrims desired to see, and some Christian pilgrims even now visit, the places where the cradle of their faiths once stood, all this makes no longer an integral part of their worship, which is not necessarily bound to place or time. The divisions of Buddhism and Christianity are mutually much more in- dependent than those of Mohammedanism. Still, though in this respect Buddhism comes nearer to Christianity, this alone preaches a worship in spirit and in truth; and in that which Rothe called its greatest excellence, in its variety, its changeableness, its power of adapting itself to the religious wants of various generations, peoples, and individuals, in a word, in its elasticity, which is the natural result of its purely spiritual character, Christianity ranks incommensurably high above both its rivals! But we cannot pursue this matter any further.

We now give the following sketch of a morphological classification of religions :—

I. NaruRE RELIGIONS. (a) Polydemonistic Magical Religions under the coutrol of Animism.

To this class belong the religions of the so-called savages or uncivilized peoples, but they are only degraded renimants of what they once must have been.

(b) Purified or organized Magical Religions. Therianthropic Polytheism. 1. Unorganized. 2. Organized. — Japanese Kami-no-madsu. The semi-civilized religions of

The non-Aryan (Dravidian) reli-| America: Maya, Natchez, gions of India, principally in| Toltecs-Aztecs, Muyscas, Incas the Deccan. in Peru.

The ancient religion of the

Religion of the Finns and Ehsts. : Chinese cmpire.

The old Arabic religions. : Old Pelasgic religion. Ancient Babylonian (Chaldean) Old Italiote religions. religion. Etruscan religion before its ad-| Religion of Egypt.

mixture with Greek elements (?) The old Slavonic religions.

1 To prevent misconstruction, it is perhaps not superfluous to state that we are giving here neither a confession of faith nor an apology, but that we have here to treat Christianity simply as a subject of comparative study, from a scientific, not from a religious point of

view. XX. — 47

History

and.

spread of « religions,

d70

(c) Worship of manlike but superhuman and scmi-ethical Lcings. Anthropomorphic Polytheism.

The ancient Vaidic religion (India).

The pre-Zarathustrian Iranic religion (Bactria, Media, Persia).

The younger Babylouian and Assyrian religion.

The religions of the other civilized Semites (Phcenicia, Canaan, Arama, Sabseans in South Arabia).

The Celtic, Germanic, Hellenic, and Greco-Roman religions.

II. Ernicat RELIGIONS. (a) National Nomistic (Nomothetic) religious communitics. Taoism and Confucianism in China. Brahinanism, with its various ancient and modern sects. Jainism and primitive Buddhism. Mazdaism (Zarathustrianism), with its sects. Mosaism. Judaism. (6) Universalistic religious communities. Islam, Buddhism, Christianity.

We conclude with a few remarks on the history and spread of religions. Between the history of religions and that of religion in general there is no real difference. A history of religions must be something other and more than a collection of the histories of the principal religions, arranged after a chronological or an ethnological scheme. The connecting links and historical relations between them must be kept in view. It ought to be shown how every religion coming to the front on the stage of history is

rooted in the past, has been fostered so to speak by one |

or more of its predecessors, and cannot be maintained without taking up and assimilating the still living elements of the old faith. Special attention must be paid to the spread and intermixture of religions and systems, myths and rites, the cause of so many changes, of thorough reforms as well as of corruption and decay. Thus, even undesignedly the history of religions exhibits the progress of the religious idea in the history of mankind.

The oldest historical documents, contemporaneous with the facts they record, are undoubtedly those of ancient Egypt and Babylonia; perhaps the latter may in the end prove the more ancient of the two. Be this as it may, documentary history begins in western Asia and north- eastern Africa. And it is remarkable that even in that remote past we find the religions both of ancient Babylonia and of Egypt in anything but a primitive state—remark- able, but only natural, as civilization must have reached a rather elevated standpoint to produce such written docu- ments and works of art. Many centuries, at all events a long period, of religious evolution must have preceded the dawn of religious history. Even then and there, just as elsewhere, that which lies behind can only be conjectured, but conjecture may be raised to a high degree of probability by comparing the myths and rites surviving in the historical religions, though they really belong to a former state of development, with those still prevailing among uncivilized tribes. For several centuries these two religions, whatever may have been their genealogical relation, were developed independently, and the task of the historian is, by studying the most ancient records, to give a notion of their earliest state and to point out the faint traces of their internal changes which are still extant. There are some vague allusions to an early Babylonian conquest of western Asia, which might account for the agreement of some ancient modes of worship in the Western countries with those of Babylonia; but before the XVIIIth Dynasty of Egypt (15th or 16th century B.c.) the empires on the banks of the Euphrates and Tigris and that on the banks of the Nile seem not yet to have come into contact. From that time, at least during the rule of the XIXth Dynasty, not a few Semitic deities were admitted into the Egyptian pantheon. In a well-known

Semitic Ba‘al as well as to the national god Mentu. On the other hand, but much later, some Egyptian religious emblems find their way into Assyria, and several Egyptian gods with Egyptian modes of worship into Pheenicia, Assyrian religion, being an early offshoot of the Babylonian, and with the lapse of time more and more imbued with younger Babylonian elements, spreads westwards with the extension of the Assyrian empire, penetrates into Asia Minor and Syria, and finds

followers even among the kings of Judah. But there the prophets, true to their national god Jahveh, and reforming his worship on purely ethical principles, wrestle with unbending perseverance against those foreign idolatrous customs and lay the foundations of that monotheistic community which sur- vives the Babylonian exile, and, having been organized as Judaism, becomes the cradle of Christianity.

Did space permit we would fain pursue the rapid historical sketch, which tends to show how even in ancient times there was a continuous interchange of ideas and rites between the leading religions, those even which are commonly considered as being purely national—that is, so entirely fused with the social and political life of a nation that they seem unfit for adoption by peoples widely different. But a general survey of the history of religions cannot be given here. All that can be done is to indicate in a few words its further course, not without hinting that the same interchange as we have observed in western Asia and Egypt is to be found everywhere.

In eastern Asia the dominating religions are those of China and of India. They too have been developed inde- pendently, each radiating from its centre, China proper and Hindustan, so far as either the vast Chinese empire or the Aryan dominion over the Indian peninsula extended. The Chinese civilization seems to be much older than the Indian. But the sources from which a knowledge of the ancient Chinese religion might be drawn have come down to us thoroughly revised and expurgated either by Con- fucius himself or by some of his followers. The ancient religious literature of India is very extensive, and in it three or four stages of religious thought may without difficulty be found ; but the real ancient history of Indian religion is not to be gathered from it. Neither Chinese nor Indian religions have exercised any influence on the pro- gress of religion in the west of Asia or in Europe. They form a world apart. The Chinese religion was adopted by some Mongolian tribes and was introduced into Corea and Japan ; Indian settlers, Vaishnavas, Qaivas, or Bauddhas, carried Indian thought and Indian worship with them to some parts of Further India and of the Indian archipelago, but this happened in relatively recent times. For ages and ages they lived quite isolated and self-sufficient—the Chinese either with Lao-tsze seeking the veritable Tao

in the highest ideal of absolute isolation, or with Confucius amiably moralizing on the duties of "the perfect man"; the Indian dreaming his monotonous and fantastic dreams and longing for absorption in the eternal Brahm; neither of them suspecting that without them, among what they would have called Western barbarians if they had known of their existence, the world's history was going on as a mighty stream of which they did not even hear the distant roar. It was not until Darius the son of Hystaspes, but chiefly Alexander the Great, had opened the gates of India to Western civilization that an Indian sovereign, converted to Buddhism, could think of benefiting foreign nations by

-the message of salvation from the miseries of existence,

and that Buddhist missionaries went out to nearly every part of Asia.

Meanwhile Medo-Persian supremacy had supplanted the Assyrian and Neo-Babylonian, and with it the Zarathus-

hymn the victorious Egyptian king is compared to the | trian religion (Mazdaism) had come in contact with those

RELIGIONS

of western Asia. This too had its distinct place in the general history of religion. For though it seems not to have spread much farther than the Iranian languages, and the attempts of Mazdayacnan missionaries to convert certain Tartar or Mongolish tribes were not crowned with extraordinary success, its tenets deeply influenced the post-exilian angelology and demonology of the Jews, and through it the belief on these subjects current among medizval Christians. Moreover, not indeed the whole system, but still some of its semi-spurious offshoots, remnants of the Ozp Lasr Aryan mythology, neglected by the Zarathustrian reformers, but afterwards revived and mixed up with Semitic elements, the worship of Mithra and Anahita, wandered from Asia Minor through Greece and Italy to Germany and found adherents everywhere.

The final and, if we except that of Mosaism, the most interesting chapter of the ancient history of religions is that which narrates the growth, the

transformations and vicissitudes, the decline and corruption of the worship belonging to Greece and Rome. Its importance to general history needs no exposition. But its real purport is in the main not realized, or at least misunderstood. It is indeed the history of the spread of that rich and composite mythological system which is called Hellenic religion over the whole civilized world of Europe and part of Asia and Africa, and of the total transformation of the ancient Roman religion by its influence. But, studied in the true historical, that is, genetic and comparative, spirit— not with the jealous narrow-mindedness of the old classi- cal school, whose idol, the self-sufficient and self-educated Greek, has already been broken to pieces, nor with the one-sidedness of some comparative mythologists, who have substituted the self-sufficient Aryan for that imaginary Greek— Hellenic religion appears to be rooted, not only in the old national worship, but also, and even deeper, in the religions of some Eastern peoples, as is the case with Hellenic art and all the other branches of that splendid civilization. It would never have risen so high above the level of old Pelasgic faith and worship, never have spread over so wide an area, never have reigned with ever increasing authority in Etruria and in Rome, had not the deeper religious ideas of Semitic and other Eastern nations, which prevailed in the Phcenician colonies on the islands and coasts of the Mediterranean, and above all in that focus of all kinds of worship, Asia Minor, become assimi- lated with it, and—for this too must be acknowledged— had it not after all impressed those ideas with the stamp of Aryan fancy and Hellenic taste, the stamp of its own genius. The great stream of religious development which had its sources in Egypt, in Babylon, and in Iran, and many less important affluents, finishes its course in the Greco-Roman religion. With this the old world dies away. But then the preaching of the gospel had already laid the foundations of a newand higher world of religious life, which no more belongs to ancient history.

Modern history of religions is chiefly the history of Buddhism, Christianity, and Islam, and of their wrestling with the ancient faiths and primitive modes of worship, which slowly fade away before their encroachments, and which, where they still survive in some parts of the world and do not reform themselves after the model of the dominant religion, draw nearer and nearer to extinction.

But the subject is too vast to be treated of in detail here. It has been our object only to show, even for the ancient history of religions, the continuity and coherence which nobody will deny with regard to the modern. In both ancient and modern times, religions spread (1) by the influence of superior civilization, (2) by conquest, (3) by colonization or commerce, (4) by missions. Examples are too numerous and too well known to require mention here.

371

Literature.—The numerous monographs on special religions, as well as treatises on the philosophy of religion, on mythology, on comparative mythology even, must be excluded from this notice. Only the most important collections of historical monographs, and those philosephical works which are not purely or principally speculative, but are based on the conrparative study of the religions themselves, will be mentioned.

For the so-called science of religion in general see Benjamin Constant, De la Religion considérée dans sa source, ses formes, et ses développements, 5 vols., Paris, 1824-31; E. Spiess, De religio- num indagationts comparative vi ac dignitate theologica, Jena, 1871; F. Max Miller, Chips from a German Workshop, vol. i., London, 1867; Id., Introduction to the Science of Religion, London, 1873; Emile Burnouf, La Science des Religions, 4th ed., Paris, 1885; Daniel G. Brinton, The Religious Sentiment, its Source and Aim, New York, 1876; A. Réville, Prolégomeénes de 1' Histoire des Re- ligions, Paris, 1881; W. D. Whitney, "On the so-called Science of Religion," in the Princeton Review ; Id., Oriental and Linguistic Studies, 1st and 2d series, New York, 1873-74; L. Vézes, De la Religion et des Religions, Montauban, s.a.

A more or less complete history of religions (narrative and de- scriptive) was attempted by Meiners, Allg. kritische Geschichte der Religionen, 2 vols., Hanover, 1806-7; A. v. Colln, Lehrbuch der vorchristl. Teligionsgcesehichte, Lemgo, 1855; J. H. Scholten, Gesehie- denis der yodsdienst en wijsbegeerte, 3d ed., Leyden, 1863; J. Gardner, The Keligions of the World, London, 1872; C. P. Tiele, Outlines of the History of Religion to the spread of the Universal Religions, transl. by J. E. Carpenter, London, 1877 (a totally re-written Dutch edition is in

preparation). The history of the principal religions of the world is described in the series of monographs published at Haarlem entitled De Voornaamste Godsdiensten (Islamism, by Dozy, 1863; Pdrsism, by Tiele, 1864; Buddhism, by Kern, 1883-84; Greek Religion, by Van Oordt, 1864; Norse Religion, by Meyboom, 1868; Isracl, 2 vols., by Kuenen, 1869-70; Roman Catholicism, by Pierson, 4 vols., 1868-74 ; Protestantism, by Rauwenhoff, 2 vols., 1865-71). See, too, C. P. Tiele, Hist. comparée des religions de l Egypte et des peuples Sémitiques, trans. by G. Collins, Paris, 1882; A. Réville, Lcs religions des peuples non-civilisés, Paris, 1888 ; Id., Les religions du Mexique, de l Amér. centrale, et du Pérou, Paris, 1885 (compare the Hibbert Lectures for 1884). Of another series, under the title Oricntal Religions and their relation to Universal Religion, by Samuel Johnson, three volumes only are published (Jndia, 2d ed., London, 1873; China, Boston, 1877; Persia, 1885). P. D. Chantepie de la Saussaye published four popular sketches of the religions of Confucius, Lao-tsze, Zarathustra, and Buddha, but with copious notes and references, Utrecht, 1883. Equally popular is G. Rawlinson's Religions of the Ancient World, London, s.a.

To the comparative study of religions and to the philosophy of the history of religions belong O. Pfleiderer, Die Religion, thr Wesen und thre Geschichte, Berlin, 1869 ; Id., Religionsphilosophie auf geschichtlicher Grundlage, 1878 (2d ed. revised and enlarged, in 2 vols., 1883-84); E. Renan, Htudes d'histoire religicuse, 2d ed., Paris, 1857 ; Jas. Freeman Clarke, Ten Great Religions, an Essay in Comparative Theology, Boston, 1871 (called by Prof. Whitney an industrious collector and an impartial reporter) ; E. F. Langhans, Das Christenthum und scine Mission im Lichte der Weltgeschichte, Zurich, 1875; A. M. Fairbairn, Studies in the Philosophy of Religion and History, 1876; Chas. Newton Scott, The Foregleams of Christianity, London, 1877 ; J. Stuart Blackie, The Natural History of Atheism, London, 1877; C. Puini, Saggi di storia della Religione, Florence, 1882; E. von Hartmann, Das relig. Bewusstsein der Menschheit im Stufengange sciner Entwickelung, Berlin, 1882; Jul. Happel, Das Christenthum und die heutige ver- giciehende Religionsgeschichte, Leipsic, 1882. See, too, the Hibbert Lectures of F. Max Miller, 1878, and of A. Kuenen, National Religions and Universal Religions, 1882. The connexion between religion on the one side and state

and society on the other is discussed by J. C. Bliintschli, Altasiatische Gottes- und Weltideen, Nordlingen, 1866; C. Twesten, Die religiés., polit., wnd soctalen Ideen der asiat. Culturvilker und der Aeqypter, 2 vols., Berlin, 1872 (ed. by M. Lazarus) ; Gilliot, Etudes histor. et crit. sur les religions ct institutions comparées, Paris, 1883. E. Wippermann's Altorient. Religionsstaaten, Marburg, 1851, is now antiquated.

The views of the present writer on various subjects relating to the science of religion have been expounded iu several volumes of the Theol. Tijdschrift and De Gids. Only a few of these papers have been translated into German or French. See, ¢.g., Revuc politique et littéraire, 12th August 1876 and 12th January 1878. In the Theol. Tijdschrift are to be found some articles on cognate sub- jects by Profs. Kuenen and Rauwenhoff and by Dr A. Bruining. Valuable contributions to the history of religions are given by the Revue de I' Histoire des Religions, edited by Vernes, 1880-84, and by Jean Réville, 1885. Prof. Max Miiller is rendering an im- portant service to the comparative study of religions by his col- lection of translations entitled Sacred Books of the East, of which some twenty-four volumes have appeared, and which is still in course of publication. (Om Te, HN)

d72 REMAINDER, REVERSION. In the view of English

law a remainder or reversion is classed either as an incorporeal hereditament or, with greater correctness, as an estate in expectancy (see Ruan Estate). That is to say, it is a present interest subject to an existing estate in possession called the particular estate, which must determine before the estate in expectancy can become an estate in possession. A remainder or reversion is in strictness confined to real estate, whether legal or equitable, though a similar interest may exist in personalty. The particular estate and the remainder or reversion together make up the whole estate over which the granter has power of disposition.1 Accordingly a remainder or reversion limited on an estate in fee simple is void. The difference between a remainder and a reversion, stated as simply as possible, is that the latter is that undisposed-of part of the estate which after the determination of the particular estate will fall into the possession of the original grantor or his representative, while a remainder

is that part of the estate which under the same circumstances will fall into the possession of a person other than the original grantor or his representative. A reversion in fact is a special instance of a remainder, distinguishable from it in two important respects :—(1) a reversion arises by opera- tion of law on every grant of an estate where the whole interest is not parted with, whereas a remainder is created by express words ; (2) tenure exists between the reversioner and the tenant of the particular estate, but not between the latter and the remainderman. Accordingly rent service is said to be an incident of a reversion but not of a remainder, and a reversioner could distrain for it at common law (see Rent). A reversion may be limited upon any number of remainders, each of them as it falls into possession becoming itself a particular estate. Thus A may grant an estate for life or for years to B, with remainder to OC, with remainder to D, with a reversion or ultimate remainder to himself. A remainder or reversion may be alienated either by deed or by will. A conveyance by the tenant of a particular estate to the remainderman or reversioner is called a surrender ; a conveyance by the remainderman or reversioner to the tenant is a release. Remainder.—Remainders are cither vested or contingent. "An estate is vested in interest when there is a present fixed right of future enjoyment. An estate is contingent when a right of enjoy- ment is to accrue on an event which is dubious and uncertain.

' Compare the life-rent and fee of Seotch law. : 2 A eontingent remainder amounting to a freehold cannot be limited on a partieular estate less than a freehold.

REMAINDER

determination had not happened. The case of determination by any other means is met by 40 & 41 Vict. c. 38. The Act provides that a contingent remainder which would have been valid as a springing or shifting use or executory devise or other liniitation had it not had a sufficient estate to support it as a contingent remaindcr is, in the event of the particular estate determining before the contingent remainder vests, to be capable of taking effect as though the contingent remainder had originally been created as a springing or shifting use or executory devise or othcr executory limitation. It will accordingly only be good if the springing use,

&c. (for which see TRUST), would be good. If the springing use be void as a breach of the rule against perpetuities (see REAL Esrars), the remainder will likewise be void. It may be noticed that, apart from this Act, there is some uncertainty as to the applieation . of the rule against perpetuities to remainders. The better opinion is that it applies to equitable remainders and to legal remainders expectant upon an cstate for life limited to an unborn person. In the latter case the rule as applied to contingent remiainders is somewhat different from that affecting exeeutory interests. The period is different, the remainder allowing the tying up of property for a longer time than the executory interest. There is also the further difference that the rule does not affect a contingent remainder if it become vested before the determination of the particular estate. An executory interest is void if it may trans- gress the rule, even though it do not actually do so. The subject of remainders would not be complete without a reference to the fainous rule in "Shelley's Case" (1 Coke's Reports, 93 b). The rule is that when the ancestor by any gift or conveyance takes an estate of freehold, and in the same gift or conveyance an estate is limited, either mediately or inimediately, to his heirs or the heirs of his body, in such a case the word "heirs" is a word of limitation and not of purchase ; that is to say, the estate of the ancestor is not a life or other freehold estate with remainder to the heirs or heirs of the body, but an estate in fee or an estate tail according to circum- stances. The rule isa highly technical one, and has led to niuch

'litigation and in many cases without a doubt to the defeat of a

testator's intentions. It is said to have had its origin in the wish of the law to preserve to the lords their right of wardship, whieh would have been ousted by the heir taking as purchaser and not as successor.

The State laws of the United States affecting remainders will be found in Washburn, Real Property, vol. ii. bk. ii. ch. iv. § 7. As a general rule contingent remainders have been rendered of little practical importance by enactments that they shall take effect as executory devises or shall not determine on determination of the particular estate. The rule in "Shelley's Case" is the common law where it is not repealed by statute. The prevailing spirit of legislation in the States is unfavourable to its continuance.

Reversion.—Unlike remainders, all reversions are present or vested estates. The law of reversion, like that of remainder, has been considerably modified by statute. It was formerly considered that on the grant of the reversion the tenant should have the opportunity of objecting to the substitution of a new landlord. It was therefore necessary that he should attorn tenant to the purchaser. Without such attornment the grant was void, unless indeed attornment were compelled by levying a fine. The neces- sity of attornment was abolished by 4&5 Annec, 16. Its only use at present seems to be in the case of mortgage. A mortgagor in possession sometimes attorns tenant to the mortgagee in order that the latter may treat him as his tenant and distrain for his interest as rent. The legal view that rent was incident to the reversion led at common law to a destruction of the rent by de- struction of the reversion. This would of course chiefly happen in the case of an under-tenant and his immediate reversioner, if the intermediate became merged in the superior reversion. To obviate this difficulty it was provided by 8 & 9 Vict. c. 106, § 9, that, on surrender or merger of a reversion expectant on a lease, the rights under it should subsist to the reversion conferring the next vested right. The question as to what covenants run with the reversion is one of the most difficult in law. The rule of common law seems to have been that covenants ran with the land but not with the reversion, that is to say, the benefit of them survived to a new tenant but not to a new landlord. The effect of the Act of 32 Hen. VIII. c. 34, and of the Conveyancing Act, 1881 (44 & 45 Vict. c. 41, §$ 10, 11, 58), has been to annex to the reversion as a general rule the benefit of the rent and the lessee's covenants and the burden of the lessor's covenants. Merely collateral covenants, however, do not run with the reversion, but are regarded as per- sonal contracts between lessor and

lessee. At common law on the severance of a reversion a grantce of part of the reversion could not take advantage of any eondition for re-entry, on the ground that the condition was entire and not sevcrable. This doctrine was abolished by one of Lord St Leonard's Acts in 1859. The Con- veyancing Act, 1881, § 12, now provides in wider terms than those of the Aet of 1859 that on severance of the reversion every eon- dition capable of apportionment is to be apportioned. In order to guard against fraudulent concealment of the death of a cestui que

vie, or person for whose life any lands are held by another, it was provided by 6 Anne c. 18 that on application to the Court of Chancery by the person entitled in remainder, reversion, or expect- ancy, the cestui que vie should be produced to the court or its com- missioners, or in default should be taken to be dead. The purchase of a reversionary interest might formerly have been set aside in a court of equity on the ground of inadequacy of price. This rule of equity no longer exists. It was enacted by 31 Vict. c. 4 (which extends to the United Kingdom) that no purchase made bona fide of a reversionary interest in real or personal estate shall be set aside merely on the ground of under-valne. The Act does not affect those cases in which the courts relicve against such purchases on the ground of fraud or duress—the cases, for instance, of exorbit- -ant bargains made by money-lenders with expectant heirs. In Scotland reversion is generally used in a sense approaching that of the equity of redemption of English law. REGISTRATION).

In the United States the Act of 82 Hen. VIII. c. 384 "is held to be in force in Massachusetts, Pennsylvania, Illinois, and Con- necticut, but was never in force in New York till re-enacted " (Washburn, Real Property, vol. i. 482). (J. Wt.)

REMBRANDT (1607-1669). RemBpranpt HaRMENS van Run, the chief of the Dutch school of painting and one of the greatest painters the world has seen, was born in Leyden on the 15th July 1607.! It is only within the past thirty years that we have come to know anything of the real history of the man. Up to that time we had but a tissue of fables connected with his name and representing him as ignorant, boorish, and avaricious. These

fictions, resting on the loose assertions of Houbraken (De Groote Schouburgh, 1718), have been cleared away by the untiring researches of Scheltema and other Dutchmen, notably by C. Vosmaer, whose elaborate work (Hembrandt, sa Vie et ses Guvres, 1868, 2d ed. 1877) will remain as the basis of our knowledge of the man and of the chronological development of the artist.2, Rembrandt's high position in European art rests on the originality of his mind, the power of his imagination, his profound sympathy with his subjects, the boldness of his system of light and shade, the thorough- ness of his modelling, his subtle colour, and above all on the intense humanity of the man. He was great in con- ception and in execution, a poet as well as a painter, an idealist and alsoa realist; and this rare union is the secret of his power. From his dramatic action and mastery of expression Rembrandt has been well called "the Shakespeare of Holland." To understand aright his position in art, we must consider rapidly his sur- roundings and note the influences which affected him ; we shall thus find what he had in common with his time and understand better how far he was really a new power, an original genius.

It must be borne in mind that in the beginning of the 17th century Holland had risen to great power. Though not yet formally free from the Spanish yoke, she had broken the fetters by the heroic efforts of the former generation, and had entered on her grand career of national enterprise. Science and literature flourished in her universities, poetry and the stage were favoured by her citizens, and art found a home not only in the capital but in the provincial towns. It was a time also of new ideas. Old conventional forms in religion, philosophy, and art had fallen away, and liberty was inspiring new conceptions. It is with those of art that we have to deal. Here there were no church influences at work to fetter the painter in the choice and treatment of his subject, no academies to prescribe rules.

1 This is now generally accepted as the year of his birth, though soine hold it should be 1606 or 1608.

- *Vosmaer's first volume, on the precursors and apprenticeship of Rembrandt, was published in 1863. New light has since been thrown*

on important points by Dr Bode (Lolliéndische Malerei, 1888), De Roever, De Vries, and others.

373

Left to himself, therefore, the artist painted the life of the people among whom he lived and the subjects which interested them. It was thus a living history that he painted,—scenes from the everyday life and amusements of the people, often mean and vulgar it must be confessed, the civic rulers, the regents of the hospitals and the heads of the guilds, and the civic guards who defended their towns. So also with the religious pictures which were produced under the influence of these environments. The dogmas and legends of the Church of Rome were no longer of interest to such a nation; but the Bible was read and studied with avidity, and from its page the artist drew directly the scenes of the simple narrative. The Old and New Testaments and the Apocrypha were the sources from which, without any interference of Jesuit inquisitors, he drew his inspiration. This change had been coming on steadily since the Reformation, a change that implied a growing freedom from trammels and a larger and more human view of the subjects treated. Perhaps the earliest trace of this new aspect of Bible story is to be found in the pictures painted in Rome about the beginning of the 17th century by Adam Elsheimer of Frankfort, who had undoubtedly a great influence on the Dutch painters studying in Italy. These in their turn carried back to Holland the simplicity and the picturesque effect which they found in Elsheimer's work. Among these, the precursors of Rembrandt, may be mentioned Moeyaert, Ravesteyn, Lastman, Pinas, Honthorst, and Bramer. Influenced doubt- less by these painters, Rembrandt determined to work out his own ideas of art on Dutch soil, resisting apparently every inducement to visit Italy. Though an admirer of the great Italian masters, he yet maintained his own individuality in the most marked manner. It is strange that we have no evidence that he ever met his greatest Dutch rival, the brillant Frans Hals, his senior by some fifteen years.

Rembrandt was born in the house No. 3 Weddesteg, on the rampart at Leyden overlooking the Rhine. The house belonged to his father Gerrit Harmen van Rijn, a well-to-do miller, and still exists, but the windmill is

no more. He was the fourth son, and, as the older boys had been sent to trade, his parents resolved that he should enter a learned profession, With this view he was sent to the High School at Leyden; but the boy soon mani- fested his dislike of the prospect and determined to be a painter. Accordingly he was placed for three years under Swanenburch, a connexion of the Van Rijn family. This master was a painter of no great merit, but he enjoyed some reputation from his having studied in Italy. His next master was Lastman of Amsterdam, a painter of very considerable power. In Lastman's works we can trace the germs of the colour and sentiment of his greater pupil, though his direct influence cannot have been great, as it is said by Orlers that Rembrandt remained with him only six months, after which time he returned to Leyden, about 1623, During the early years of his life at Leyden Rembrandt seems to have devoted himself entirely to studies, painting and etching the people around him, the beggars and cripples, every picturesque face and form he could get hold of. Life, character, and above all light were the aims of these studies. His mother was a fre- quent model, and we can trace in her features the strong likeness to her son, especially in the portraits of himself at an advanced age. So far as we know there is no likeness of his father, who died about 1632. The last portrait of his mother is that of the Belvidere Gallery of Vienna, painted the year before her death in 1640. One of his sisters also frequently sat to him, and Bode suggests that she must have accompanied him to Amsterdam and kept house for him till he married. This conjecture rests

on the number of portraits of the same young woman painted in the early years of his stay in Amsterdam and before he met his bride. Then, again, in the many portraits of himself painted in his early life we can see with what zeal he set himself to master every form of expression, now grave now gay, at one time with a smile at another with a frown,—how thoroughly he learned to model the human face not from the outside but from the inner man. Careful in detail and thorough in work, these studies were the foundation of his later triumphs. Dr Bode gives fifty as the number of the portraits of himself, most of them painted in youth and in old age, the times when he had leisure for such work.

Rembrandt's earliest pictures were painted in the last four years of his stay at Leyden, from 1627 to 1631. Bode mentions about nine pictures as known to belong to these years, chiefly paintings of single figures, as St Paul in Prison and St Jerome ; but now and then compositions of several, as Samson in Prison and Presentations in the Temple. The prevailing tone of all these pictures is a greenish-grey, the effect being somewhat cold and heavy. The gallery at Cassel gives usa typical example of his studies of the heads of old men, firm and hard in workmanship and full of detail, the effects of light and shade being carefully thought ont. His work was now attracting the attention of the lovers of art in the great city of Amster-dam ; and, urged by their calls, he removed about 1631 to live and die there. His life has few incidents and these only personal, for he lived among the simple burgher citizens, moving in an excellent circle of men of science, divines, poets, artists, and friends of art. At one bound he leaped into the position of the first portrait painter of the city, and received numerous commissions. During the early years of his residence there are at least forty known portraits from his hand, firm and solid in manner and staid in expression. It has been remarked that the fantasy in which he indulged through life was reserved only for the portraits of himself and his immediate connexions. The excellent painter Thomas De Keyser was then in the height of his power, and his influence is to be traced in some of Rembrandt's smaller portraits. Pupils also now flocked to his house in the Bloemgracht, among them Gerard Douw, who was nearly of his ownage. The first important work executed by Rembrandt in Amsterdam is Simeon in the Temple, of the Hague Museum, a fine early example of his treatment of light and shade and of his subtle colour. The concentrated light falls on the principal figure, his favourite way of arresting attention, while the background is full of mystery. The surface is sooth and enamelled, and all the details are carefully wrought out, while the action of light on the mantle of Simeon shows how soon he had felt the magical effect of the play of colour. Between the small Simeon of 1631 and the life-sized Lesson in Anatomy of 1632 there isa great difference. In the latter we have the first of the great portrait subjects, —Tulp the anatomist, the early friend of Rembrandt, dis- coursing to his seven associates, who are ranged with eager heads round the foreshortened body. The subject was not new, for it had been treated in former years by the Mierevelds, A. Pietersen, and others, for the Hall of the Surgeons. But

it was reserved for Rembrandt to make it a great picture by the grouping of the expressive portraits and by the completeness of the conception. The colour is quiet and the handling of the brush timid and pre- cise, while the light and shade are somewhat harsh and abrupt. But it isa marvellous picture for a young man of twenty-five, and it is generally accepted as the first milestone in the career of the painter, and as marking a new departure.

In the forty long years of Rembrandt's incessant activity

as an artist about seven hundred pictures are known to have come from his own hand. It is therefore clearly impossible within the space at our disposal to notice more than the prominent works in their order. Besides the Pellicorne family portraits of 1632, we have the caligra- phist Coppenol of the Cassel Gallery, interesting in the first place as an early example of Rembrandt's method of giving permanent interest to a portrait by converting it into a picture. He invests it with a sense of life by a momen- tary expression as Coppenol raises his head towards the spectator while he is mending a quill. The same motive is to be found in the Shipbuilder, 1633 (of Buckingham Palace), who looks up from his work with a sense of interruption at the approach of his wife. But the worthy Coppenol, "the Phcenix of the Pen," has another charm for us ; he was one of Rembrandt's earliest friends in his new abode and remained true to the end, being painted thrice and etched twice by the artist, the last of whose portrait etchings (1661) was the Coppenol of large size. The two small pictures of the Philosopher of the Louvre date from 1633, delicate in execution and full of mysterious effect. The year 1634 is especially remarkable as that of his marriage with Saskia van Ulenburgh, a beautiful, fair-haired Frisian maiden of good connexions. 'Till her death in 1642 she was the centre of his life and art, and lives for us in many a canvas as well as in her own portraits. On her the painter lavished his magical power, painting her as the Queen Artemisia or Bathsheba, and as the wife of Samson,—always proud of her long fair locks, and covering her with pearls and gold as precious in their play of colour as those of the Indies. A joyous pair as we see them in the Dresden Gallery,

Saskia sitting on his knee while he laughs gaily, or promenading together in a fine picture of 1636, or putting the last touches of ornament to her toilette, for thus Bode interprets the so-called Burgo- master Pancras and his Wife. These were his happy days when he painted himself in his exuberant fantasy, and adorned himself, at least in his portraits, in scarfs and feathers and gold chains. Saskia brought him a marriage portion of forty thousand guilders, a large sum for those times, and she brought him also a large circle of good friends in Amsterdam. She bore him four children, Rum- bartus and two girls successively named Cornelia after his beloved mother, all.of whom died in infancy, and Titus, nanied after Titia a sister of Saskia. We have several noble portraits of Saskia, a good type of the beauty of Holland, all painted with the utmost love and care, at Cassel (1633), at Dresden (1641), and a posthumous one (1643) at Berlin. But the greatest in workmanship and most pathetic in expression seems to us, though it is decried by Bode, that of Antwerp (1641), in which it is impossible not to trace declining health and to find a melancholy pre-sage of her death, which took place in 1642. Then truly went out the light of Rembrandt's life.

Returning to Rembrandt's work, we find one of the greatest portraits of 1634 to be the superb full length portrait of Martin Daey, which with that of Madame Daey, painted according to Vosmaer some years later, formed one of the ornaments of the Van Loon collection at Amsterdam. Both now belong to Baron Gustave de Rothschild. From the firm detailed execution of this portrait one turns with wonder to the broader handling of the Old Woman, aged eighty-three, in the National Gallery, of the same year, remarkable for the effect of reflected light and still more for the sympathetic rendering of character.

The life of Samson supplied many subjects in these early days. The so-called Count of Gueldres Threatening his Father-in-law of the Berlin Gallery has been restored to its proper signification by M. Kolloff, who finds it to be Samson. It is forced and violent in its action. But the

REMGeE AT YT

greatest of this series, and one of the prominent pictures of Rembrandt's work, is the Marriage of Samson of the Dresden Gallery, painted in 1638.

Here Rembrandt gives the rein to his imagination and makes the scene live before us. Except the bride (Saskia), who sits calm and grand on a dais in the centre of the feast, with the full light again playing on her flowing locks and wealth of jewels, all is animated and full of bustle. Samson, evidently a Rembrandt of fantasy, leans over a chair pro-pounding his riddle to the Philistine lords. In execution it is a great advance on former subject pictures; it is bolder in manner, and we have here signs of his ap- proaching love of warmer tones of red and yellow. It is also a fine example of his magic play of colour.

The story of Susannah also occupied him in these early years, and he returned to the subject in 1641 and 1653. The Bather of the National Gallery may also be another interpretation of the same theme. In all of these pictures the woman is coarse in type and lumpy in form, though the modelling is soft and round, the effect which Rembrandt always strove to gain. Beauty of form was outside his art. But the so-called Danae (1636) at St Petersburg is a sufficient reply to those who decry his nude female forms. As flesh painting it glows with colour and life, and the blood seems to pulsate under the warm skin. In the picturesque story of Tobit Rembrandt found much to interest him, as we see in the beautiful small picture of the Arenberg collection at Brussels. Sight is being restored to the aged Tobias, while with infinite tenderness his wife holds the old man's hand caressingly. The momentary action is complete, and the picture goes straight to the heart. In the Berlin Gallery he paints the anxiety of the parents as they wait the return of their son. In 1637 he painted the fine picture now in the Louvre of the Flight of the Angel; and the same subject is grandly treated by him, apparently about 1645, in the picture exhibited in the winter exhibition at Burlington House in 1885. Reverence and awe are shown in every attitude of the Tobit family. A similar lofty treatment is to be found in the Christ as the Gardener appearing to Mary of 1638 (Buckingham Palace).

We have now arrived at the year 1640, the threshold of his second manner, which extended to 1654, the middle age of Rembrandt. During the latter part of the previous decade we find the shadows more transparent and the blending of light and shade more perfect. There is a growing power in every part of his art. The coldness of his first manner

had disappeared, and the tones were gradually changing into golden-brown. He had _ passed through what Bode calls his "Sturm-und-Drang" period of exaggerated expression, as in the Berlin Samson, and had attained to a truer, calmer form of dramatic expression, of which the Manoah of Dresden is a good example (1641). Whether it was that he was getting tired of painting commissioned portraits, that he was independent of them, or that he aimed at higher flights, it is certain that these portraits painted "to order" became more rare about this time, and that those which we have are chiefly friends of his circle, such as the Mennonite Preacher (C. C. Ansloo) and the Gilder (Le Doreur), a fine example of his golden tone, formerly in the Morny collection and now in America. His own splendid portrait (1640) in the National Gallery illustrates the change in his work. It describes the man well,—strong and robust, with powerful head, firm and compressed lips and determined chin, with heavy eye-brows, separated by a deep vertical furrow, and with eyes of keen penetrating glance,—altogether a self- reliant man that would carry out his own ideas, careless whether his popularity waxed or waned. The fantastic

rendering of himself has disappeared; he seems more |

O19

conscious of his dignity and position. He has now many friends and pupils, and numerous commissions, even fron the stadtholder; he has bought a large house in the Breedstraat, in which during the next sixteen years of his life he gathered his large collection of paintings, engravings, armour, and costume which figure afterwards in his inventory. His taste was wide and his purchases large, for he was joint owner with picture dealers of paintings by Giorgione and Palma Vecchio, while for a high-priced Marc- antonio Raimondi print he gave in exchange a fine impression of his Christ Healing the Sick, which has since been known as the Hundred Guilder Print. The stadt- holder was not a prompt payer, and an interesting corre- spondence took place between Rembrandt and Constantin Huygens, the poet and secretary of the prince. The Rembrandt letters which have come down to us are few, and these are therefore of importance. Rembrandt puts a high value on the picture, which he says

had been painted "with much care and zeal," but he is willing to take what the prince thinks proper; while to Huygens he sends a large picture as a present for his trouble in carrying through the business. There is here no sign of the grasping greed with which he has been charged, while his unselfish conduct is seen in the settlement of the family affairs at the death of his mother in 1640.

The year 1642 is remarkable for the great picture formerly known as the Night Watch, but now more correctly as the Sortie of the Banning Cock Company, another of the landmarks of Rembrandt's career, in which twenty-nine life-sized civic guards are introduced issuing pell-mell from their club house. Such guilds of arque- busiers had been painted admirably before by Ravesteyn and notably by Frans Hals, but Rembrandt determined to throw life and animation into the scene, which is full of bustle and movement. One can almost hear the beating of the drum and the barking of the dog. The dominant colour is the citron yellow uniform of the lieutenant, wearing a blue sash, while a Titian-like red dress of a musketeer, the black velvet dress of the captain, and the varied green of the girl and drummer, all produce arich and harmonious effect. The background has become dark and heavy by accident or neglect, and the scutcheon on which the names are painted is scarcely to be seen.

But this year of great achievement was also the year of his great loss, for Saskia died in 1642, leaving Rembrandt her sole trustee for her son Titus, but with full use of the money till he should marry again or till the marriage of Titus. The words of the will express her love for her husband and her confidence in him. With her death his life was changed. Bode has remarked that there is a pathetic sadness in his pictures of the Holy Family,—a favourite subject at this period of his life. All of these he treats with the naive simplicity of Reformed Holland, giving us the real carpenter's shop and the mother watching over the Infant reverently and lovingly, with a fine union of realism and idealism. It is true indeed that the circumstances of his time and country made it impos- sible for him to attempt to realize the ancient forms of Hebrew life, or to revive the bye-past race of Judea. He was content, as the old Italians were, with the types around him. The street in which he lived swarmed with Dutch and

Portuguese Jews, and many a Jewish rabbi sat to him. He accepted their turbans and local dress as character- istic of the people. But in his religious pictures it is not the costume we look at; what strikes us is the pro- found perception of the sentiment of the story, making them true to all time and independent of local circum- stance. A notable example of this feeling is to be found in the Woman Taken in Adultery of the National Gallery, painted in 1644 in the manner of the Simeon of the Hague.

376

Beyond the ordinary claims of art, it commands our atten- tion from the grand conception of the painter who here as in other pictures and etchings has invested Christ with a majestic dignity which recalls Leonardo and no other. A similar lofty ideal is to be found in his various renderings of the Pilgrims at Emmaus, notably in the Louvre picture of 1648, in which, as Mrs Jameson says, "'he returns to those first spiritual principles which were always the dowry of ancient art. Here we have before us a countenance pale and tender, meek and lowly of heart, adorned only with holiness and a glorified life." From the same year we have the Good Samaritan of the Louvre, the story being told with intense pathos. The helpless suffering of the wounded man, the curiosity of the boy on tiptoe, the excited faces at the upper window, are all conveyed with masterly skill. In these two last pictures we find a broader touch and freer handling, while the tones pass into a dull yellow and brown with a marked predilection for deep rich red. Whether it was that this scheme of colour found no favour with the Amsterdamers, who, as Hoogstraten tells us, could not understand the Sortie, it seems certain that Rembrandt was not invited to take any leading part in the celebration of the congress of Westphalia of this year (1648), a year famous in Dutch history for the European declaration of the independence of Holland, and in Dutch art as the subject of Terburg's picture in the National Gallery and of Van der Helst's famous Banquet of the Civic Guard at Amsterdam.

Rembrandt touched no side of art without setting his mark on it, whether in still life, as in his dead birds or the Slaughtered Ox of the Louvre, or in his drawings of elephants and lions, all of which are instinct with life. But

at this period of his career we come upon a branch of his art on which he left, both in etching and in painting, the stamp of his genius, viz., landscape. Roeland Roghman, but ten years his senior, evidently influenced his style, for the resemblance between their works is so great that, as at Cassel, there has been confusion of authorship. Hercules Seghers also was much appreciated by Rembrandt, for at his sale eight pictures by this master figure in the inven- tory, and Vosmaer discovered that Rembrandt had worked on a plate by Seghers and had added figures to an etched Flight into Egypt. The earliest pure landscape known to us from Rembrandt's hand is the Winter Scene of Cassel (1646), silvery and delicate. As a rule in his painted landscape he aims at grandeur and poetical effect, as in the Repose of the Holy Family of 1647 (till recently called the Gipsies), a moonlight effect, clear even in the shadows. The Canal of Lord Lansdowne, and the Mountain Landscape with the Approaching Storm, the sun shining out behind the heavy clouds, are both conceived and executed in this spirit. A similar poetical vein runs through the Castle on the Hill of Cassel, in which the beams of the setting sun strike on the castle while the valley is sunk in the shades of approaching night. More powerful still is the weird effect of Lord Lansdowne's Windmill, with its glow of light and darkening shadows. In all these pictures light with its magical influences is the theme of the poet-painter. From the number of landscapes by himself in the inventory of his sale, it would appear that these grand works were not appreciated by his contemporaries. The last of the landscape series dates from 1655 or 1656, the close of the middle age or manhood of Rembrandt, a period of splendid power. In the Joseph Accused by Potiphar's Wife of 1654 we have great dramatic vigour and perfect mastery of expression, while the brilliant colour and glowing effect of light and shade attest his strength. To this period also belongs the great portrait of himself in the Fitzwilliam Museum at Cambridge.

But evil days were at hand. The long-continued wars

ke a cea DT

and civil troubles had worn out the country. Trade and commerce languished, and in Amsterdam hundreds of houses were empty.

Rembrandt's brothers had suffered, and money was scarce. His own and doubtless Saskia's means were tied up in his house and in his large collection of valuable pictures, and we find Rembrandt borrowing considerable sums of money on the security of his house to keep things going. Perhaps, as Bode suggests, this was the reason of his extraordinary activity at this time. Then, unfortunately, in this year of 1654, we find Rembrandt involved in the scandal of having a child by his servant Hendrickie Jaghers or Stoffels, as appears by the books of the Reformed Church at Amsterdam. He recognized the child and gave it the name of Cornelia after his much- loved mother, but there is no proof that he married the mother, and the probability is against such a marriage, as the provisions of Saskia's will would in that case have come into force, and her fortune would have passed at once to her son Titus. Hendrickie seems to have continued to live with him, for we find her claiming a chest as her property at his sale in 1658. Doubtless she is the peasant girl of Rasdorf to whom Houbraken says Rembrandt was married. Sad as the story is, Hendrickie has an interest for us. Bode asserts that in his art there was always a woman in close relationship to Rembrandt and appearing in his work—his mother, his sister, and then Saskia. Are there any traces of Hendrickie? Whatif the little servant maid of ten years, painted about 1645 (Dulwich Gallery), and again in the Demidoff picture of the same year, in which the girl is painted in the red dress of a Dutch orphan, in both cases smiling and leaning over a window, were the maidservant of his house in 1654? The ages would correspond. Bode suggests that the beautiful por- trait of the Lady in the Salon Carré of the Louvre and the Amor and Cupid of the same gallery may represent Hendrickie and her child. Both pictures belong to this date, and by their treatment are removed from the category of Rembrandt's usual portraits. But if this is conjecture, we get nearer to fact when we look at the picture exhibited at Burlington House in 1883 to which tradition has attached the name of " Rembrandt's Mistress." At a glance one can see that it is not the mere head of a model, as she lies in bed raising herself to put aside a curtain as if she heard a well-known footstep. It is clearly a woman in whom Rembrandt had a_ personal interest. The date is clearly 165 , the fourth figure being illegible ; but the brilliant carnations and masterly touch connect it with the Potiphar's Wife of 1654 and the Jaghers period. It is painful to turn from this attempt to trace the life of Rembrandt in his

work to the sadder side of the story. In 1656 his financial affairs became more involved, and the Orphans' Chamber transferred the house and ground to Titus, though Rembrandt was still allowed to take charge of Saskia's estate. Nothing, how- ever, could avert the ruin of the painter, who was declared bankrupt in July 1656, an inventory of all his property being ordered by the Insolvency Chamber. The first sale took place in 1657 in the Keizerskroon hotel, Thomas Jacobz Haring, a well-known name in connexion with Rembrandt's art, being auctioneer; and the second, at which the larger part of the etchings and drawings were disposed of, in 1658—" collected by Rembrandt himself with much love and care," says the catalogue. The sum realized, under 5000 guilders, was but a fraction of their value. The time was unfavourable over the whole of Europe for such sales, the renowned collection of Charles I. of England having brought but a comparatively small sum in 1653. Driven thus from his house, stripped of everything he possessed even to his table linen, Rembrandt took a modest lodging in the same Keizerskroon hostelry

(the amounts of his bills are in record), apparently without friends and thrown entirely on himself. But there was no failure here, for this dark year of 1656 stands out pro- minently as one in which some of his greatest works were produced, as, for example, John the Baptist Preaching in the Wilderness, belonging to Lord Dudley, and Jacob Blessing the Sons of Joseph, of the Cassel Gallery. It is impossible not to respect the man who, amid the utter ruin of his affairs, could calmly conceive and carry out such noble work. Yet even in his art one can see that the tone of his mind was sombre. Instead of the brilliancy of 1654 we have for two or three years a preference for dull yellows, reds, and greys, with a certain measure of uniformity of tone. The handling is broad and rapid, as if to give utterance to the ideas which crowded on his mind. There is less caressing of colour for its own sake, even less straining after vigorous effect of light and shade. Still the two pictures just named are among the greatest works of the master. To the same year belongs the Lesson in Anatomy of Johann Deyman, another of the many men of science with whom Rembrandt was closely associated. The subject is similar to the great Tulp of 1632, but his manner and power of colour had advanced so

much that Sir Joshua Reynolds, in his visit to Holland in 1781, was reminded by it of Michelangelo and Titian.1 Vosmaer ascribes to the same year, though Bode places it later, the famous portrait of Jan Six, the future burgo- master, consummate in its ease and character, as Six descends the steps of his house drawing on his glove. The connexion between Rembrandt and the great family of Six was long and close, and is honourable to both. Jan married a daughter of Tulp the anatomist, one of Rembrandt's earliest friends. In 1641 the mother of Six, Anna Wymer, had been painted with consummate skill by Rembrandt, who also executed in 1647 the beautiful etching of Six standing by a window reading his tragedy of " Medea," afterwards illustrated by his friend. Now he paints his portrait in the prime of manhood, and in the same year of gloom paints for him the masterly John the Baptist. Six, if he could not avert the disaster of Rembrandt's life, at least stood by him in the darkest hour, when certainly the creative energy of Rembrandt was in full play. The same period gives us the Master of the Vineyard, and the Adoration of the Magi of Bucking- ham Palace.

After the sale of the house in the Breedstraat Rembrandt retired to the Rosengracht, an obscure quarter at the west end of the city. Vosmaer thinks he has traced the very house, but some doubts have been thrown on this dis- covery by De Roever. We are now drawing to the splendid close of his career in his third manner, in which his touch became broader, his impasto more solid, and his knowledge more complete. Hastening on by quicker steps, we may mention the Old Man with the Grey Beard of the National Gallery (1657), and the Bruyningh, the Secretary of the Insolvents' Chamber, of Cassel (1658), both leading up to the great portraits of the Syndics of the Cloth Hall of 1661. Nearly thirty years separate us from the Lesson in Anatomy, years of long-continued observation and labour. The knowledge thus gathered, the problems solved, the mastery attained, are shown here in abundance. Rembrandt returns to the simplest gamut of colour, but shows his skill in the use of it, leaving on the spectator an

1 This picture has had a strange history. It had suffered by fire and was sold to a Mr Chaplin of London in 1841, was exhibited in Leeds in 1868, and again disappeared, ultimately to be found in the magazines of the

South Kensington Museum as a doubtful Rembrandt. The patriotism of some Dutch lovers of art restored it to its native country ; and it now hangs, a magnificent fragment, in the Museum of Amsterdam.

O77

impression of absolute enjoyment of the result, unconscious of the means, The plain burghers dealing with the simple concerns of their guild arrest our attention as if they were the makers of history. They live for ever.

In his old age Rembrandt continued to paint his own portrait as assiduously as in his youthful and happy days. About twenty of these portraits are known, a typical one being found in the National Gallery. All show the same self reliant expression, though broken down indeed by age and the cares of a hard life. There isin Stockholm a large and unfinished picture which, if painted by Rembrandt, belongs to the late years of his life (etched by Waltner, Gaz. des Beaux-Arts, Nov. 1874). It is catalogued as the Oath of John Ziska, certainly a strange subject for Rem- brandt. Bode accepts the more natural interpretation of Prof. Anton Springer, viz., the Feast of Judas Maccabzeus, and ascribes the picture to an earlier date than that given by Vosmaer. Havard, however, after careful examination, attributes the work to Carel Fabritius.

About the year 1663 Rembrandt painted the (so-called) Jewish Bride of the Van der Hoop Gallery and the Family Group of Brunswick, the last and perhaps the most brilliant works of his life, bold and rapid in execution and marvel- lous in the subtle mixture and play of colours in which he seems to revel. The woman and children are painted with such love that the impression is conveyed that they repre- sent a fancy family group of the painter in his old age. This idea received some confirmation from the supposed dis- covery that he left a widow Catherine Van Wyck and two children, but this theory falls to the ground, for De Roever has shown (Oud Holland, 1883) that Catherine was the widow of a marine painter Theunisz Blanckerhoff, who died about the same time as Rembrandt. The mistake arose from a miscopying of the register. The subject of these pictures is thus more mysterious than ever.

In 1668 Titus, the only son of Rembrandt, died, leaving one child, and on 8th October 1669 the great painter him- self passed away, leaving two children, and was buried in the Wester Kerk. He had outlived his popularity, for his manner of painting, as we know from contemporaries, was no longer in favour with a people who preferred the smooth trivialities of Van der Werff and the younger Mieris, the leaders of an expiring school.

We must give but a short notice of Rembrandt's achievements in etching. Here he stands out by universal confession as first, excelling all by his unrivalled technical skill, his mastery of expression, and the lofty conceptions of many of his great pieces, as in the Death of the Virgin, the Christ Preaching, the Christ Healing the Sick (the Hundred Guilder Print), the Presentation to the People, the Crucifixion, and others. So great is his skill simply as an etcher that one is apt to overlook the nobleness of the etcher's ideas and the depth of his nature, and this tendency has been doubtless confirmed by the enormous difference in money value between "states" of the same plate, rarity giving in many cases a fictitious worth in the eyes of collectors. The points of difference between these states arise from the additions aie changes made by Rembrandt on the plate ; and the prints taken off by him have been subjected to the closest inspection by Bartsch, Gersaint, Wilson, Daulby, De Claussin, C. Blanc, Willshire, Seymour Haden, Middleton, and others, who have described them at great length and to whoimn the reader is referred. The classification of Rembrandt's etchings adopted till lately was the artificial one of treating them according to the subject, as Biblical, portrait, landscape, and so on; and to Vosmaer must be ascribed the credit of being the first to view Rembrandt's etched work, as he has done his work in painting, in the more scientific and interesting line of chronology. This method has been developed by Mr Seymour Haden and Mr Middleton, and is now universally accepted. But even so recently as 1873 M. C. Blanc, in his fine work L'Giwvre complet de Rembrandt, still adheres to the older and less intelligent arrangement, resting his preference on the frequent absence of dates on the etchings and more strangely still on the equality of the work. Mr Scymour Haden's reply is conclusive, "that the more important etchings which may be taken as types arc dated, and that, the style of the etchings at different periods of

Rembrandt's carecr being fully as marked as that of his paintings, no more difficulty attends the classification

of one than of the other." Indced M. Vosmaer points out in his life of Rembrandt that there is a marked parallelism between Rembrandt's painted and etched work, his early work in both cases being timid and tentative, while he gradually gains strength and character both with the brush and the graver's tools. M. Vosmaer's scheme of chronological order has doubtless been challenged in some respects, but it gave the deathblow to the older system. Mr Seymour Haden has started the theory that many of the etchings ascribed to Rembrandt up to 1640 were the work of his pupils, and seems to make out his case, though it may be carried too far. He argues (in his monograph on the Hitched Work of Rembrandt, 1877) that Rembrandt's real work in etching began after Saskia's death, when he assumes that Rembrandt betook him- self to Elsbroek, the country house of his "powerful friend" Jan Six. But it must be remembered that the future burgomaster was then but a young student of twenty-four, a member of a great family it is true, but unmarried and taking as yet no share in public life. That Rembrandt was a frequent visitor at Elsbroek, and that the Three Trees and other etchings may have been pro- duced there, may be admitted without requiring us to believe that he had left Amsterdam as his place of abode. The great period of

his etching lies between 1639 and 1661, after which the old painter |

seems to have renounced the needle. In these twenty years were produced his greatest works in portraiture, landscape, and Bible story. They bear the impress of the genius of the man.

In addition to the authors named, the reader is referred to W. Biirger (the nom de plume of Th. Thoré), Musées de la Hollande, 1858-1860; E. Fromentin, Maitres dautrefois; H. Havard, L'Ecole Hollandaise; Scheltema, Rembrand, Discours sur sa Vie, 1866; Ath. Cocquerel fils, Rembrandt, son individualisme dans Tart, Paris, 1869.—Since the

foregoing was put in type, anew and valuable work on Rembrandt, chiefly as the etcher, has appeared from the penof M. Eugene Dutuit (Z'@uvre complet de Rembrandt, Paris, 1885). M. Dutuit rejects the classification of M. C. Blane as dubious and unwarranted, dismisses the chrono- logical arrangement proposed by M. Vosmaer and adopted by Mr Seymour Haden ani Mr Middleton as open to discussion and lacking in possibility of proof, and reverts to the order established by Gersaint, ranging his materials under twelve heads:—Portraits (real and supposed), Old Testament and New

Testament subjects, histories, landscapes, &c. (J. F. W.)

REMIGIUS (or Remepivus, as the name is spelt in Fredegarius and elsewhere), or REm1, was born of noble parents and, according to a later tradition, in the district of Laon. In one of his own letters, written apparently about 512 a.p., Remigius speaks of himself as having been a bishop for fifty-three years. This throws back his election to about 459; and, as all his earlier biographers agree in making him twenty-one years of age on his appointment to this office, the date of his birth may be fixed at somewhere about the year 438. The bishop- ric was forced upon the young recluse by the townspeople of Rheims, who in this century had not yet lost the right of electing their own pastor. For the next thirty-seven years of Remigius's life we have no clue excepting one, or at most two, allusions in the letters of Sidonius Apollin- aris (Ep, viii. 14 ; ix. 7,8),—both of which epistles M. Baret has assigned to from 472 to 474. It is true that Fredegarius (Du Chesne, i. 728), writing about 658, and the later biographers associate the name of Remigius with that of Clovis in the story of the famous vase of Sois- sons. But the earlier account of Gregory (c. 590) lends no sanction to this association; and it is not till 496 that Remigius figures definitely in history. On the Christmas day of this year he baptized Clovis at Rheims with the greatest pomp. "Bow thy head meekly, O Sicambrian," were his words to the royal convert ; "adore what thou hast burnt and burn what thou hast adored." Two of the king's sisters were baptized about the same time ; and on the death of one of these, Albofledis, Remi- gius wrote Clovis a letter of consolation that is still pre- served (Dom. Boug. iv. 51). The traditions and perhaps the documents of Hincmar's time enumerated the immense possessions

conferred by Clovis upon his favourite pre- late. Remigius, in his turn, does not seem to have been slack in urging the orthodox king to undertake the deliverance of his fellow believers who in southern Gaul reluctantly submitted to the yoke of the Aryan Burgun- dians and Visigoths. His intrigues with the discontented bishops of Burgundy are said to have paved the way for Clovis's invasion (500). Hinemar has preserved the tradition that Remigius blessed Clovis before he set out

on his war against the Visigoths (507); and we still have the letter in which he recommends the king to be merciful in his new conquests (Bouquet, iv. 52; see, however, Junghans's remarks on the probable date of this letter).

It is not, however, solely as a statesman or as the mentor of a barbarian king that Remigius claims atten- tion. In Hincmar's time he was recognized as the second founder of the church of Rheims, to whose influence that see owed the greater part of its possessions; and in such a matter the popular tradition can hardly have been entirely wrong. One of his few remaining letters is directed in the most vigorous terms against the encroach- ments of a neighbouring bishop, Falco of Maestricht (Bougq., iv. 53). Heis said to have established a bishopric at Laon, his native place. So great was his fame that it reached the ears of Alaric and his Gothic counsellors at Toulouse, and that, at last, Pope Hormisdas or one of his immediate predecessors appointed him his vicar throughout the Frankish domains. Of Remigius's writ- ings only a few verses and the letters alluded to above have been preserved; but his credit for learning and eloquence is amply attested by Sidonius Apollinaris and Gregory of Tours. The former, writing to Remigius (c. 472), declares him to be unsurpassed by any living orator.

Gregory has also preserved the tradition that Remigius was bishop of Rheims for more than seventy years (De Gloria Conf., 89), a fact which inclines us to lay some confidence on the more detailed statement of Hincmar that he died on January 13, in the ninety-sixth year of his age, after an episcopate of seventy-four years. Hence we may fix upon 533 as the date of his decease, more especially as this conclusion coincides well

enough with the little that is known as to the chronology of his two immediate successors (Ste Marthe, ix. 10-13). In 882, when the Northmen were threatening a descent upon the un- walled city of Rheims, Hincmar had the body of St Remi removed from its first resting-place in the little church of St Christopher to Epernay. Next year it was brought back to Rheims, but it was not restored to its original home till some years later. We learn from Gregory of Tours that, even so early as the reign of Childebert II. (575-596) the first of October was held sacred to the memory of the saint. During the Carlovingian times this day became one of the great feasts of the year, its observance being sanctioned by the council of Mainz in 813 and a capitulary of Louis le Debonnaire in 821 (Dessailly). In 1049 Pope Leo IX. assisted at the removal of the relics and issued a decree for the observation of the féte.

The authorities for the life of St Remi are very meagre. An almost contemporary Vita Remigii, written in the popular Latin of the period (cothurno Gallicano), and known to Gregory of Tours, was, according to Hinemar, almost entirely destroyed in the troubled times of Charles Martel, but not before it had been abbreviated and stripped of nearly all historic value by Fortunatus between the years 565 and 590. This abridgment, which still exists, formed the basis of the Vita Remigit written by Hincmar, archbishop of Rheims from 845 to 882, who, however, professes to incorporate with his work some fragments of the orginal Vita and other ancient documents, as he has most certainly incorporated the living traditions of his own age. In the course of the next century Flodoard, a canon of Rheims (0d. 966), compiled his account of St Remi, by making a very free use of his predecessors' labours, with, however, some traditional information of hisown. The above works are all in Migne's Patrologia, vols. 1xxxviii., exxv., &c. See also Fredegarius and Gregory of Tours, whose authority is only second to that of Fortunatus. The scattered documents of the Merovingian period are to be found in the great collections of A. Du Chesne, Bouquet, and Labbé. Le Cointe's Annales Ecelesiastici, vol. i.; Mabillon's Annales Ordinis Bened., vol. i.; Ste Marthe's Gallia Christiana, vol. ix.; and the Acta Sanctorum (October 1), which contains the best modern life of St Remi, may be consulted with advantage. Of French lives see that by the

prior Armand. The so-called Testamentuwm Remigit, which has been preserved in a longer and shorter form by Flodoard and

Hincmar, has lately found an able champion of its authenticity in the Abbé Dessailly. For Remigius's connexion with Vedastus (who assisted in the conversion of Clovis), St Medard, St Eleutherius, &c., see the Bollandist Vita Remigti alluded to above and the Acta Sanctorum for Feburary 6, June 8, and February 20.

REMIREMONT, the chief town of an arrondissement of the department of the Vosges, France, 17 miles south- south-east of Epinal by rail, on the banks of the Moselle where it is joined by the Moselotte. It is a pretty and well-built town picturesquely surrounded by forest-clad mountains, and commanded by Fort Parmont, one of the line of defensive works along the Moselle. Besides a great cotton spinning-mill (30,000 spindles) brought from Miilhausen after the war of 1870, it possesses tanneries, weaving-factories, and saw-mills; and it trades in timber, cattle, cheese, coopers' wares, &c. The more interesting buildings belong to the ancient abbey, to which the town owes most of its fame. The abbey church was consecrated to Pope Leo IX. in person in 1051. The abbatial resi- dence (which now contains the mairie, the court-house, and the public library) has been twice rebuilt in modern times (in 1750, and again after the fire of 1871), but the original plan and style have been preserved in the imposing front, the vestibule, and the grand staircase. The popula- tion of the town was 6212 in 1871, and 7857 in 1881; that of the commune 6510 and 8126.

Remiremont has its name from St Romaric, one of the com- panions of St Columban of Luxeuil, who founded a monastery and a convent on the hills above the site where the town now stands. On the destruction of these establishments by the Hungarians in 910 a.D. the nuns took refuge at Remiremont, and their new convent became famous under an abbess who " carried not a crosier but a sceptre." Enriched by dukes of Lorraine, kings of France, and emperors of Gcrmany, the ladies of Remiremont ultimately attained to great power. The abbess was a princess of the empire, and received consecration at the hands of the pope at Rome. The canoncsses (fifty in number) were selected only from those

who could give proof of noble descent. Their property comprised fifty- two signiories and twenty-two petty lordships. On Whitsun Mon- day the neighbouring parishes paid homage to the chapter in a ceremony called the " Kyrioles"; and on their accession dukes of Lorraine had to come to Remiremont with great pomp to swear to continue their protection. The " War of the Scutcheons" (Panon- ceaux) in 1566 between the duke and the abbess ended in favour of the duke ; and the abbess never recovered her former position. The townsfolk took advantage of this and similar contests to extend their municipal privileges. In the 17th century the ladics of Remiremont fell away so much from the original monastic rule as to take the title of countesses, renounce their vows, and marry. The town was attacked by the French in 1638, and ruined by the earthquake of 1682. With the rest of Lorraine it was joined to France in 1766. The monastery on the hill (Mont de Romeric or Saint Mont) and the nunnery in the town were both suppressed in the Revolution.

REMONSTRANTS meant originally those Dutch Pro- testants who, after the death of ARMINIUS (g.v.), continued to maintain the views associated with his name, and in 1610 presented to the states of Holland and Friesland a "remonstrance " in five articles formulating their points of departure from stricter Calvinism. Their adversaries met them with a "counter remonstrance," and so were known as the Counter Remonstrants. The conflict continued to rage till 1618-19, when the synod of Dort (see Dort, Synop oF) established the victory of the stricter school. The judgment of the synod was enforced by the deposition and in some cases the banishment of Remonstrant ministers; but the Government soon became convinced that their party was not dangerous to the state, and in 1630 they were formally allowed liberty to reside in all parts of Holland and build churches and schools. In 1621 they had also received liberty to make a settlement in Schleswig, where they built themselves the town of Friedrichstadt. This colony still exists. embodied in 1621 in a confessio written by Episcopius (q.v.), their great theologian, while Wytenbogaert gave them a catechism and regulated their churchly order. The

The doctrine of the Remonstrayts was |

Remonstrants adopted a simple synodical constitution ; but their importance was henceforth more theological than ecclesiastical. Their seminary in Amsterdam has boasted of many distinguished names—Curcelleus, Limborch, Wetstein, Le Clerc; and their liberal school of theology, which naturally grew more liberal and even rationalistic, reacted powerfully on the state church. The Remon- strants are now a small body (see HoLLann, vol. xii. p. 66), but respected for their traditions of scholarship and liberal thought.

REMSCHEID, a manufacturing town of Rhenish Prussia, in the district of Diisseldorf, sometimes dignified with the title of the " Rhenish Sheffield," is situated about 20 miles to the north-east of Cologne, at a height of 1120 feet above the sea. It is the centre of the German hard-ware industry, and large quantities of tools, scythes, skates, and other small articles in iron, steel, and brass are annually made here for exportation to all parts of Europe, the East, and North and South America. In 1880 the commune contained 30,029 inhabitants (26,844 Pro- testants), of whom 11,000 belonged to Remscheid proper and the rest to the manufacturing villages with which it is grouped. The name of Remscheid occurs in a document of 1132, and the town received the first impulse to its industrial importance through the immigration of Pro-testant refugees from France and Holland.

REMUSAT, Aset (1788-1832), a distinguished Chinese scholar, was born at Paris, 5th September 1788. His father, a surgeon, superintended his early education in person and designed him for the medical profession. Jean Pierre Abel Rémusat graduated with distinction as M.D. in 1813, and for a short time held a hospital appointment, but his heart had long been in other studies. A Chinese herbal in the collection of the Abbé Tersan had attracted his attention when he was still a lad; he taught himself to read by great perseverance and with very imperfect helps, and at the end of five years' study he produced in 1811 an Essai sur la langue et la littérature Chinoises, and a paper on foreign languages among the Chinese, which procured him the patronage of De Sacy. In 1814 a chair of Chinese was founded at the Collége de France, and Rémusat was placed in it. From this time he gave himself wholly to the languages of the Extreme East, and published a long series of useful works, among which

his contributions from Chinese sources to the history of the Tartar nations claim special notice. Rémusat became an editor of the Journal de Savants in 1818, and founder and first secretary of the Paris Asiatic Society in 1822; he held also in the course of his life various honourable and lucrative Government appointments. He married in 1830, but had no children. He died at Paris, 4th June 1832, and his éloge was written by De Sacy.

REMUSAT, Cyartes Frangors Marin, ComTe DE (1797-1875), French politician and man of letters, was born at Paris on the 13th March 1797. His father, also Comte de Rémusat, of a good though not very distinguished family in the district of Toulouse, was a man of considerable literary taste, of much administrative ability, and of moderate Liberal views in politics. He was chamberlain to Napoleon, but disapproved of the emperor's absolutist government and aggressive policy, and after the restoration became prefect first of the Haute Garonne and then of the Nord. His wife (mother of Charles) was a still more remarkable person, whose full abilities have only recently been made known. Her maiden name was Claire Elisabeth Jeanne Gravier de Vergennes. She was born in 1780, and was early introduced to the salons, which reopened after the cessation of the Terror. She married the Comte de Rémusat when she was very young, and was long attached to the service of Josephine, to whom she was

finally dame du palais. Talleyrand was a particular admirer of hers, and she was generally recognized as a woman of great intellectual capacity as well as of much personal grace and charm. After her death (1824) an Essai sur VEducation des Femmes was published and received an academic couronne. But it was not till 1879, when her grandson M. Paul de Rémusat published her memoirs, which have since been followed by some correspondence with her son, that justice could be generally done to her literary talent. The light thrown on the Napoleonic court by this remarkable book was great, and Madame de Rémusat appeared as hardly the inferior of the best memoir and letter writers of the previous century.

The same documents contained much information on the youth and education of her son Charles. He very early developed political views more decidedly Liberal than those of his parents, and, being bred to the bar, published in 1820 a short pamphlet on jury trial. He was also an active journalist, showing in philosophy and literature the special influence of Cousin. He was, however, at the same time a thorough man of the world, and is said to have furnished to no small extent the original of Balzac's brilliant egoist Henri de Marsay. He took no active part in politics till the revolution of July, when he signed the journalists' protest against the Ordinances, and in the following October was elected deputy for Toulouse. He then ranked himself with the "doctrinaires," and supported (being a speaker of no small power) most of those measures of restriction on popular liberty which rapidly made the July monarchy unpopular with French Radicals. In 1836 he became under-secretary of state for the interior, but did not hold the post long. He then became an ally of Thiers, and in 1840 held the ministry of the interior for a short time. In the same year he became an Academician.

REN—REN

For the rest of Louis Philippe's reign he was in opposition till he joined Thiers in his brief and hopeless attempt at a ministry in the spring of 1848. During this time Rémusat constantly spoke in the chamber, but was still more active in literature, especially on philosophical subjects,—the most remarkable of his works being his book on Abélard (1845), In 1848 he was elected, and in 1849 re-elected, for the department of Haute Garonne and sat on the Conservative side. But he would not support Louis Napoleon, and had to leave France after the coup d'état ; nor did he re-enter political life at all during the second empire, though his son M. Paul de Rémusat stood for the Haute Garonne, and was very nearly elected, in 1869. Nor would he at first accept the advances made him after the establishment of the third republic. In 1871 he was appointed minister of foreign affairs and accepted the post. Although minister he was not a deputy, and on standing for Paris in September 1873 he was beaten by M. Barodet. A month later he was elected (having already resigned with Thiers) for the Haute Garonne by a very great majority. He died at Paris on the 6th April 1875.

During his long abstention from political life Rémusat continued to write on his favourite subjects of philosophical history and especially English philosophical history. Saint Ansclme de Cantor- béry appeared in 1854; L' Angleterre aw XVILIeme siecle in 1856 (2d ed. enlarged, 1865); Bacon, sa vie, son temps, dc., in 1858; Channing, sa vie ct ses wuvres, in 1862; John Wesley in 1870; Lord Herbert of Cherbury in 1874; Histoire de la philosophie cn Angleterre depuis Bacon jusqu'a Locke, in 1875; besides other and minor works. The impression derived from these and from the political records of his life is that he was on the whole one of those men whose performances are unequal to their powers. He wrote well, was a forcible speaker, and au acute critic ; but his adoption of the indeterminate eclecticism of Cousin in philosophy and of the somewhat similarly indeterminate liberalism of Thiers in politics probably had a bad effect on him, though both no doubt accorded with his critical and unenthusiastic turn of mind.

RENAISSANCE

oe AISSANCE is a term which has recently come into use to indicate a well-known but indefinite space

sance and Of time and a certain phase in the development of the

Revival

European races. On the onc hand it denotes the transi-

of Learn- tion from that period of history which we call the Middle

ing,

Ages to that which we call Modern. On the other hand it implies those changes in the intellectual and moral attitude of the Western nations by which the transition was characterized. If we insist upon the literal meaning of the word, the Renaissance was a re-birth; and it is needful to inquire of what it was the re-birth. The metaphor of Renaissance may signify the entrance of the European nations upon a fresh stage of vital energy in general, implying a fuller consciousness and a freer exercise of

faculties than had belonged to the medieval period. Or it may mean the resuscitation of simply intellectual activi- ties, stimulated by the revival of antique learning and its application to the arts and literatures of modern peoples. Upon our choice between these two interpretations of the word depend important differences in any treatment of the subject. The former has the disadvantage of making it difficult to separate the Renaissance from other historical phases—the Reformation, for example—with which it ought not to be confounded. 'The latter has the merit of assign- ing a specific name to a limited series of events and group of facts, which can be distinguished for the purpose of analysis from other events and facts with which they are intimately but not indissolubly connected. In other words, the one definition of Renaissance makes it denote the whole change which came over Europe at the close of the Middle Ages. The other confines it to what was known by our ancestors as the Revival of Learning. Yet,

when we concentrate attention on the recovery of antique culture, we become aware that this was only one pheno- menon or symptom of a far wider and more comprehen- sive alteration in the conditions of the European races. We find it needful to retain both terms, Renaissance and Nevival of Learning, and to show the relations between the series of events and facts which they severally imply. The Revival of Learning must be regarded as a function of that vital energy, an organ of that mental evolution, which brought the modern world, with its new conceptions of philosophy and religion, its re-awakened arts and sciences, its firmer grasp on the realities of human nature and the world, its manifold inventions and discoveries, its altered political systems, its expansive and progressive forces, into being. Important as the Revival of Learning undoubtedly was, there are essential factors in the com- plex called the Renaissance with which it can but remotely be connected. When we analyse the whole group of pheno- mena which have to be considered, we perceive that some of the most essential have nothing or little to do with the recovery of the classics. These are, briefly speaking, the decay of those great fabrics, church and empire, which ruled the Middle Ages both as ideas and as realities; the appearance of full-formed nationalities and languages ; the enfeeblement of the feudal system throughout Europe ; the invention and application of paper, the mariner's compass,

gunpowder, and printing; the exploration of continents beyond the ocean ; and the substitution of the Copernican for the Ptolemaic system of astronomy. Europe in fact had been prepared for a thorough-going metamorphosis before that uew ideal of human life and culture which the Revival of Learning brought to light had been made

RENAISSANCE

manifest, It had recovered from the confusion conse- quent upon the dissolution of the ancient Roman empire. The Teutonic tribes had been Christianized, civilized, and assimilated to the previously Latinized races over whom they exercised the authority of conquerors. Compara- tive tranquillity and material comfort had succeeded to discord and rough living. Modern nationalities, defined as separate factors in a common system, were ready to cooperate upon the basis of European federation. The ideas of universal monarchy and of indivisible Christendom, incorporated in the Holy Roman Empire and the Roman

|

dsl

the history of Europe in the 16th century of our era came to be written with the brevity with which we write the history of Europe in the 6th century B.c., it would be difficult at the distance of time implied by that supposition to dis- tinguish the Italian movement of the Renaissance in its origin from the German movement of the Reformation. Both would be seen to have a common starting-point in the reaction against long dominant ideas which were becoming obsolete, and also in the excitation of faculties which had during the same period been accumulating energy.

The Renaissance, if we try to regard it as a period, Chrono- was essentially the transition from one historical stage to logical another. It cannot therefore be confined within strict limits.

Church, had so far lost their hold that scope was offered for the introduction of new theories both of state and church

Method of treat- ment.

which would have seemed visionary or impious to the medizval mind, It is therefore obvious that some term, wider than Revival of Learning, descriptive of the change which began to pass over Europe in the 14th and 15th centuries, has to be adopted. That of Renaissance, Ninascimento, or Renascence is sufficient for the purpose, though we have to guard against the tyranny of what is after all a metaphor. We must not suffer it to lead us into rhetoric about the deadness and the darkness of the Middle Ages, or hamper our inquiry with preconceived assumptions that the re-birth in question was in any true sense a return to the irrecoverable pagan past. Nor must we imagine that there was any abrupt break with the Middle Ages. On the contrary, the Renaissance was rather the last stage of the Middle Ages, emerging from ecclesiastical and feudal despotism, developing what was original in medizeval ideas by the light of classic arts and letters, holding in itself the promise of the modern world. It was therefore a period and a process of transition, fusion, preparation, tentative endeavour. And just at this point the real importance of the revival of learning may be indicated. That rediscovery of the classic past restored the confidence in their own faculties to men striving after spiritual freedom ; revealed the continuity of history and the identity of human nature in spite of diverse creeds and different customs; held up for emula- tion master-works of literature, philosophy, and art; provoked inquiry; encouraged criticism; shattered the narrow mental barriers imposed by medizval orthodoxy. Humanism, a word which will often recur in the ensuing paragraphs, denotes a specific bias which the forces liberated in the Renaissance took from contact with the ancient world,—the particular form assumed by human self-esteem at that epoch,—the ideal of life and civilization evolved by the modern nations. It indicates the endeavour of man to reconstitute himself as a free being, not as the thrall of theological despotism, and the peculiar assistance he derived in this effort from Greek and Roman literature, the littere humaniores, letters leaning rather to the side of man than of divinity.

It is now apparent in what sense the Renaissance has to be treated in this article. It will be considered as implying a comprehensive movement of the European intellect and will toward self-emancipation, toward re-

assertion of the natural rights of the reason and the senses, toward the conquest of this planet as a place of human occupation, and toward the formation of regula- tive theories both for states and individuals differing from those of medizeval times. The revival of learning will be treated as a decisive factor in this process of evolution on anew plan. To exclude the Reformation and the Counter- Reformation wholly from the survey is impossible, as will appear inore plainly in the sequel. These terms indicate moments in the whole process of modern history which were opposed, each to the other, and both to the Renais- sance ; and it is needful to bear in mind that they have, scientifically speaking, a quite separate existence.

Yet if | of cosmopolitan importance.

chronological limits. This indecision inherent in the nature of a process which involved neither a political revolution nor the promulgation of a new religious creed, but was a gradual metamorphosis of the intellectual and moral state of Europe, is further augmented by the different epochs at which the several nations were prepared to bear their share in it. England, for example, was still feudal and medieval when Italy had socially and mentally entered on the modern stadium. A brother of the Black Prince banqueted with Petrarch in the palace of Galeazzo Visconti. Thatis to say, the founder of Italian humanism, the representative of Italian despotic state-craft, and the companion of Froissart's heroes met together at a marriage feast. The memories which these names evoke prove how impossible it is to fix boundaries in time for a movement which in 1368 had reached nearly the same point in Italy as it afterwards attained at the close of the 16th century in England. The Renaissance must indeed be viewed mainly as an internal process whereby spiritual energies latent in the Middle Ages were developed into actuality and formed a mental habit for the modern world. The pro- cess began in Italy, and gradually extended to the utmost bounds of Europe, producing similar results in every nation, and establishing a common civilization.

There is one date, however, which may be remembered The date with advantage as the starting-point in time of the 1453.

Renaissance, after the departure from the Middle Ages had been definitely and consciously made by the Italians. This is the year 1453,

when Constantinople, chosen for his capital by the first Christian emperor of Rome, fell into the hands of the Turk. One of the survivals of the old world, the shadow of what had been the Eastern empire, now passed suddenly away. Almost at the same date that visionary revival of the Western empire, which had imposed for six centuries upon the imagination of medieval Europe, hampering Italy and impeding the consolidation of Germany, ceased to reckon among political actualities ; while its more robust rival, the Roman Church, seemed likely to sink into the rank of a petty Italian principality. Three lights of medizval Christendom, the Eastern empire, the Holy Roman empire, and the papacy, at this point of time severally suffered extinction, mortal enfeeblement, and profound internal transformation. It was demonstrated by the destruction of the Eastern and the dotage of the Western empire, and by the new papal policy which Nicholas V. inaugurated, that the old order of society was about to be superseded. Nothing remained to check those centrifugal forces in state and church which substituted a confederation of rival European powers for the earlier ideal of universal monarchy, and separate religious constitutions for the previous Catholic unity. At the same time the new learning introduced by the earlier humanists awakened free thought, encouraged curiosity, and prepared the best minds of Europe for speculative audacities from which the schoolmen would have shrunk, and which soon expressed themselves in acts The new learning had been

Dates If we look a little forward to the years 1492-1500, we | of imitating the Augusti also in the sphere of letters. He 1492- obtain a second date of great importance. In these years | caused a scheme of humanistic education to be formulated, 1500 the expedition of Charles VIII. to Naples opened Italy to | and gave employment at his court to rhetoricians, of whom side French, Spanish, and German interference. The leading | Alcuin was the most considerable. But very little came of nations of Europe began to compete for the prize of the | the revival of learning which Charles is supposed to have peninsula, and learned meanwhile that culture which the | encouraged ; and the empire he restored was accepted by Italians had perfected. In these years the secularization | the medieval intellect in a crudely theological and vaguely of the papacy was carried to its final point by Alexander | mystical spirit. We should, however, here

remember VL, and the Reformation became inevitable. The same | that the study of Roman law, which was one important period was marked by the discovery of America, the | precursory symptom of the Renaissance, owed much to exploration of the Indian seas, and the consolidation of | medizval respect for the empire as a divine institution. the Spanish nationality. It also witnessed the application | This, together with the municipal Italian intolerance of of printing to the diffusion of knowledge, the revolution | the Lombard and Frankish codes, kept alive the practice effected in military operations by the use of gunpowder, | and revived the science of Latin jurisprudence at an early and the revolution in cosmology which resulted from the | period. Copernican discovery. Thus, speaking roughly, the half Philosophy attempted to free itself from the trammels Specula- century between 1450 and 1500 may be termed the | of theological orthodoxy in the hardy speculations of tion and culminating point of the Renaissance. The transition | some schoolmen, notably of Scotus Erigena and Abelard. ae from the medizval to the modern order was now secured | These innovators found, however, small support, and were Ages. if not accomplished, and a Rubicon had been crossed | defeated by opponents who used the same logical weapons from which no retrogression to the past was possible. | with authority to back them. Nor were the rationalistic Looking yet a little farther, to the years 1527 and 1530, a opinions of the Averroists without their value, though the third decisive date is reached. In the first of these years | church condemned these deviators from her discipline as happened the sack of Rome, in the second the pacification | heretics. Such medieval materialists, moreover, had of Italy by Charles V. under a Spanish hegemony. The | but feeble hold upon the substance of real knowledge. age of the Renaissance was now closed for the land which Imperfect acquaintance with authors whom they studied gave it birth. The Reformation had taken firm hold on | in Latin translations made by Jews from Arabic com- northern Europe. The Counter-Reformation was already | mentaries on Qreck texts, together with almost total imminent. ignorance of natural laws, condemned them to sterility. Piseur- It must not be imagined that so great a change as that | Like the other schiomachists of their epoch, they fought sors of implied by the Renaissance was accomplished without pre- | with phantoms in a visionary realm. A_ similar judg- the Re- monitory symptoms and previous endeavours. In the | ment may be passed upon

those Paulician, Albigensian, maussance- main we mean by it the recovery of freedom for the human Paterine, and Epicurean dissenters from the Catholic spirit after a long period of bondage to oppressive ecclesias- | creed who opposed the phalanxes of orthodoxy with frail tical and political orthodoxy,—a return to the liberal and imaginative weapons, and alarmed established orders in practical conceptions of the world which the nations of

382

received gladly. Its vast significance was hardly under- stood. Both secular and spiritual potentates delighted in the beauty and fascination of those eloquent words which scholars, poets, and critics uttered— words indeed, but words which drew armed hosts behind them !"*

antiquity had enjoyed, but upon a new and enlarged plat- form. This being so, it was inevitable that the finally suc- cessful efforts after self-emancipation should have been anticipated from time to time by strivings within the ages that are known as dark and medieval. It is therefore part of the present inquiry to pass in review some of the claim- ants to be considered precursors of the Renaissance. First of all must be named the Frank in whose lifetime the dual conception of universal empireand universal church, divinely appointed, sacred, and inviolable, began to control the order of European society. Charles the Great lent his forces to the plan of resuscitating the Roman empire at a moment when his own power made him the arbiter of western Europe, when the papacy needed his alliance, and when the Eastern empire had passed under the usurped regency of a female. He modelled a spurious Roman empire, which was surnamed "Holy," in consequence of the diplomatic contract struck by him with the bishop of Rome, and in obedience to the prevailing theological beliefs of Latin Christianity. The Holy so-called Roman but essentially Teutonic empire owed such substance as the fabric possessed to Frankish armies and the sinews of the German people. As a struc- ture composed of divers ill-connected parts it fell to pieces at its builder's death, leaving little but the incubus of a memory, the fascination of a mighty name, to dominate the mind of medieval Europe. As an idea, the empire grew in visionary power, and remained one of the chief obstacles

in the way of both Italian and German national coherence. Real force was not in it, but rather in that

RENAISSANCE

counterpart to its unlimited pretensions, the church, which had evolved it from barbarian night, and which used her own more vital energies for undermining the rival of her creation. Charles the Great, having proclaimed himself successor of the Czesars, was obscurely ambitious

the state by the audacity of their communistic opinions. Physical science struggled into feeble life in the cells of Gerbert and Roger Bacon. But these men were accounted magicians by the vulgar; and, while the one eventually assumed the tiara, the other was incarcerated in a dungeon. The schools meanwhile resounded still to the interminable dispute upon abstractions. Are only universals real, or has each name a corresponding entity? From the midst of the Franciscans who had persecuted Roger Bacon because he presumed to know more than was consistent with human humility arose John of Parma, adopting and popularizing the mystic prophecy of Joachim of Flora. The reign of the Father is past; the reign of the Son is passing ; the reign of the Spirit is at hand. Such was the formula of the Eternal Gospel, which, as an unconscious forecast of the Renaissance, has attracted retrospective students by its felicity of adaptation to their historical method. Yet we must remember that this bold intuition of the abbot Joachim indicated a monastic reaction against the tyrannies and corruptions of the church, rather than a fertile philosophical conception. The Fraticelli spiritualists, and similar sects who fed their imagination with his doctrine, expired in the flames to which Fra Dolcino, Longino, and Margharita were consigned. To what extent the accusations of profligate morals brought against these reforming sectarians were justified remains doubtful; and the same uncertainty rests upon the alleged iniquities of the Templars. It is only certain that at this epoch the fabric of Catholic faith was threatened with various forms of prophetic and Oriental

Natural- ism in medixval life and literature.

Goliardic poetry,

mysticism, symptomatic of a widespread desire to grasp at something simpler, purer, and less rigid than Latin theology afforded. Devoid of criticism, devoid of sound learning, devoid of a firm hold on the realities of life, these heresies passed away without solid results and were forgotten.

We are too apt to take for granted that the men of the Middle Ages were immersed in meditations on the other world, and that their intellectual exercises were confined to abstractions of the schools, hallucinations of the fancy, allegories, visions. This assumption applies indeed in a broad sense to that period which was dominated by intolerant theology and deprived of positive knowledge. Yet there are abundant signs that the native human instincts, the natural human appetites, remained unaltered and alive beneath the crust of orthodoxy. In the person of a pope like Boniface VIII. those ineradicable forces of the natural man assumed, if we may trust the depositions of ecclesiastics well acquainted with his life, a form of brutal atheistic cynicism. In the person of an emperor, Frederick IL, they emerged under the more agreeable garb of liberal culture and Epicurean scepticism. Frederick dreamed of remodelling society upon a mundane type, which anticipated the large toleration and cosmopolitan enlightenment of the actual Renaissance. But his efforts were defeated by the unrelenting hostility of the church, and by the incapacity of his contemporaries to understand his aims. After being forced in his lifetime to submit to authority, he was consigned by Dante to hell. Frederick's ideal of civilization was derived in a large measure from Provence, where a beautiful culture had prematurely bloomed, filling southern Europe with the perfume of poetry and gentle living. Here, if anywhere, it seemed as though the ecclesiastical and feudal fetters of the Middle Ages might be broken, and humanity might enter on a new stage of joyous unimpeded evolution. This was, however, not to be. The church preached Simon de Montfort's crusade, and organized Dominic's Inquisition; what Quinet calls the '"' Renaissance sociale par V Amour " was extirpated by sword, fire, famine, and pesti- lence. Meanwhile the Provengal poets had developed their modern language with incomparable richness and dexterity, creating forms of verse and modes of emotional

expression which determined the latest medizval phase of literature in Europe. The naturalism of which we have been speaking found free utterance now in the fabliaux of jongleurs, lyrics of minnesingers, tales of trouvéres, romances of Arthur and his knights,—compositions varied in type and tone, but in all of which sincere passion and real enjoyment of life pierce through the thin veil of chivalrous mysticism or of allegory with which they were sometimes conventionally draped. The tales of Lancelot and Tristram, the lives of the troubadours and the Wachtlieder of the minnesingers, sufficiently prove with what sensual freedom a knight loved the lady whom custom and art made him profess to worship as a saint. We do not need to be reminded that Beatrice's adorer had a wife and children, or that Laura's poet owned a son and daughter by a concubine, in order to perceive that the mystic passion of chivalry was compatible in the Middle Ages with commonplace matrimony or vulgar illegitimate connexions. But perhaps the most con- vincing testimony to the presence of this ineradicable naturalism is afforded by the Latin songs of wandering students, known as Carmina Burana, written by the self-styled Goliardi. In these compositions, remarkable for their facile handling of medizval Latin rhymes and rhythins, the allegorizing mysticism which envelops chival- rous poetry is discarded. Love is treated from a frankly carnal point of view. Bacchus and Venus go hand in

hand, as in the ancient ante-Christian age. The open- air enjoyments of the wood, the field, the dance upon the village green, are sung with juvenile lightheartedness. No grave note, warning us that the pleasures of this earth are fleeting, that the visible world is but a symbol of the invisible, that human life is a probation for the life beyond, interrupts the tinkling music as of castanets and tripping feet which gives a novel charm to these unique relics of the 13th century. Goliardic poetry is further curious as showing how the classics even at that early period were a fountainhead of pagan inspiration. In the taverns and low places of amusement haunted by those lettered songsters, on the open road and in the forests trodden by their vagrant feet, the deities of Greece and Rome were not in exile, but at home within the hearts of living men. Thus, while Christendom was still preoccupied with the crusades, two main forces of

the Renaissance, naturalism and enthusiasm for antique modes of feeling, already brought their latent potency to light, prematurely indeed and precociously, yet with a promise that was destined to be kept.

When due regard is paid to these miscellaneous evi- Medizval dences of intellectual and sensual freedom during the attitude

Middle Ages, it will be seen that there were by no means lacking elements of native vigour ready to burst forth. What was wanting was not vitality and licence, not audacity of speculation, not lawless instinct or rebellious impulse. It was rather the right touch on life, the right feeling for human independence, the right way of approach- ing the materials of philosophy, religion, scholarship, and literature, that failed. The courage that is born of knowledge, the calm strength begotten by a positive attitude of mind, face to face with the dominant over- shadowing Sphinx of theology, were lacking. We may fairly say that natural and untaught people had more of the just intuition that was needed than learned folk trained in the schools. But these people were rendered licentious in revolt or impotent for salutary action by ignorance, by terror, by uneasy dread of the doom declared for heretics and rebels. The massive vengeance of the church hung over them, like a heavy sword suspended in the cloudy air. Superstition and stupidity hedged them in on every side, so that sorcery and magic seemed the only means of winning power over nature or insight into mysteries surrounding human life. The path from dark- ness to light was lost; thought was involved in alle- gory; the study of nature had been perverted into an inept system of grotesque and pious parable-mongering ; the pursuit of truth had become a game of wordy dialectics. The other world with its imagined heaven and hell haunted the conscience like a nightmare. How- ever sweet this world seemed, however fair the flesh, both world and flesh were theoretically given over to the devil. It was not worth while to master and economize the resources of this earth, to utilize the goods and ameliorate the evils of this life, while every one agreed, in theory at any rate, that the present was but a bad prelude to an infinitely worse or infinitely better future. To escape from these preoccupations and prejudices except upon the path of conscious and deliberate sin was impossible for all but minds of rarest quality and courage; and these were too often reduced to the recantation of their

supposed errors no less by some secret clinging sense of guilt than by the church's iron hand. Man and the actual universe kept on reasserting their rights and claims, announcing their goodliness and delightfulness, in one way or another ; but they were always being thrust back again into Cimmerian regions of abstractions, fictions, visions, spectral hopes and fears, in the midst of which the intellect somnambulistically moved upon an unknown way.

Ttaly— It is just at this point that the Revival of Learning inter- thought, and conscience in the future. This conviction

me re vened to determine the course of the Renaissance. Medi- | made young men leave their loves and pleasures, grave men

ee zeval students possessed a considerable portion of the Latin quit their counting-houses, churchmen desert their missals, g.

classics, though Greek had become in the fullest sense of the phrase a dead language. But what they retained of

ancient literature they could not comprehend in the right

spirit. Between them and the text of poet or historian hung a veil of mysticism, a vapour of misapprehension. The odour of unsanctity clung around those relics of the pagan past. Men bred in the cloister and the lecture- room of the logicians, trained in scholastic disputations, versed in allegorical interpretations of the plainest words and most apparent facts, could not find the key which might unlock those stores of wisdom and of beauty. Petrarch first opened a new method in scholarship, and re- vealed what we denote as humanism. In his teaching lay the twofold discovery of man and of the world. For human- ism, which was the vitalelement in the Revival of Learning, consists mainly of a just perception of the dignity of man as a rational, volitional, and sentient being, born upon this earth with a right to use it and enjoy it. Humanism implied the rejection of

those visions of a future and imagined state of souls as the only absolute reality, which had fascinated the imagination of the Middle Ages. It involved a vivid recognition of the goodliness of man and nature, displayed in the great monuments of human power recovered from the past. It stimulated the curiosity of latent sensibilities, provoked fresh inquisition into the groundwork of existence, and strengthened man's self- esteem by knowledge of what men had thought and felt and done in ages when Christianity was not. It roused a desire to reappropriate the whole abandoned provinces of mundane energy, and a hope to emulate antiquity in works of living loveliness and vigour. The Italians of the 14th century, more precocious than the other European races, were ripe for this emancipation of enslaved intelligence. In the classics they found the food which was required to nourish the new spirit; and a variety of circum- stances, among which must be reckoned the pride of a nation boasting of its descent from the Populus Romanus, rendered them apt to fling aside the obstacles that had impeded the free action of the mind through many cen- turies. Petrarch not only set his countrymen upon the

divined the importance of recovering a knowledge of Greek literature. he was followed by numerous Italian enthusiasts, who visited Byzantium before its fall as the sacred city of a new revelation. The next step was to collect MSS., to hunt

To this task Boccaccio addressed himself; and |

to crowd the lecture rooms of philologers and rhetoricians. When Greek had been acquired, MSS. accumulated, libraries and museums formed, came the age of printers and expositors. Aldus Manutius in Italy, Froben in Basel, the Etiennes in Paris, committed to the press what the investigators had recovered. Nor were there wanting at the same time men who dedicated their powers to Hebrew and Oriental erudition, laying, together with the Grecians, a basis for those Biblical studies which advanced the Reformation. Meanwhile the languages of Greece and Rome had been so thoroughly appropriated that a final race of scholars, headed by Politian, Pontano, Valla, handled once again in verse and prose both antique dialects, and thrilled the ears of Europe with new-made pagan melodies. The church itself at this epoch lent its influence to

the prevalent enthusiasm. Nicholas V. and Leo X., not to mention intervening popes who showed themselves tolerant of humanistic culture, were heroes of the classical revival. Scholarship became the surest path of advancement to ecclesiastical and political honours. Italy was one great school of the new learning at the moment when the Ger- man, French, and Spanish nations were invited to her feast.

It will be well to describe briefly, but in detail, what Nature of this meeting of the modern with the ancient mind effected Italian

over the whole field of intellectual interests. In doing so, we must be careful to remember that the study of the classics did but give a special impulse to pent-up energies which were bound in one way or another to assert their independence. Without the Revival of Learning the direc- tion of those forces would have been different ; but that novel intuition into the nature of the world and man which constitutes what we describe as Renaissance must have emerged. As the facts, however, stand before us, it is impossible to dissociate the rejection of the other world as the sole reality, the joyous acceptance of this world as a place to live and act in, the conviction that "the proper study of mankind is man," from humanism. Humanism, as it actually appeared in Italy, was positive in its con-

| ception of the problems to be solved, pagan in its con- right method of studying the Latin classics, but he also |

tempt for medizval mysticism, invigorated for sensuous enjoyment by contact with antiquity, yet holding in itself the germ of new religious aspirations, profounder science, and sterner probings of the mysteries of life than had been attempted even by the ancients. The operation of this humanistic spirit has now to be traced.

human- sm.

ism

out, copy, and preserve the precious relics of the past. In this work of accumulation Guarino and Filelfo, Aurispa and Poggio, took the chief

part, aided by the wealth of Italian patricians, merchant-princes, and despots, who were inspired by the sacred thirst for learning. Learning was then no mere pursuit of a special and recluse class. It was fashionable and it was passionate, pervading all society

It is obvious that Italian literature owed little at the Relation outset to the revival of learning. The Divine Comedy, of Dante, the Canzoniere, and the Decameron were works of monu- pea mental art, deriving neither form nor inspiration imme- sna diately from the classics, but applying the originality of Villani to Italian genius to matter drawn from previous medieval the

; : : : . rival of sources. Dante showed both in his epic poem and in his se earning.

with the fervour of romance. For a generation nursed in decadent scholasticism and stereotyped theological formule it was the fountain of renascent youth, beauty, and freedom, the shape in which the Helen of art and poetry appeared to the ravished eyes of medizeval Faustus. It was the resurrection of the mightiest spirits of the past. "I go," said Cyriac of Ancona, the indefatigable though uncritical explorer of antiquities, "I go to awake the dead!" This was the enthusiasm, this the vitalizing faith, which made the work of scholarship in the 15th century so highly strung and ardent. The men who followed it knew that they were restoring humanity to its birthright after the expatriation of ten centuries. They were instinc- tively aware that the effort was for liberty of action,

lyrics that he had not abandoned the sphere of contem- porary thought. Allegory and theology, the vision and the symbol, still determine the form of masterpieces which for perfection of workmanship and for emancipated force of in- tellect rank among the highest products of the human mind. Yet they are not medizval in the same sense as the song of Roland or the Arthurian cycle. They proved that, though Italy came late into the realm of literature, her action was destined to be decisive and alterative by the introduction of a new spirit, a firmer and more positive grasp on life and art. These qualities she owed to her material prosperity, to her freedom from feudalism, to her secularized church, her

commercial nobility, her political independence in a federation of small states. Petrarch

Relation of hum-

anism to

scholar-

RBEWATSSsS ANCE

and Boccaccio, though they both held the medizval doctrine that literature should teach some abstruse truth beneath a veil of fiction, differed from Dante in this that their poetry and prose in the vernacular abandoned both alle- gory and symbol. In their practice they ignored their theory. Petrarch's lyrics continue the Provengal tradition as it had been reformed in Tuscany, with a subtler and more modern analysis of emotion, a purer and more chastened style, than his masters could boast. Boccaccio's tales, in like manner, continue the tradition of the fabliaux, raising that literary species to the rank of finished art, enriching it with humour, and strengthening its substance by keen insight into all varieties of character. The Canzomere and the Decameron distinguish themselves from medizval literature, not by any return to classical precedents, but by free self-conscious handling of human nature. So much had to be premised in order to make it clear in what relation humanism stood to the Renais-sance, since the Italian work of Dante, Petrarch, and Boccaccio is sufficient to indicate the re-birth of the spirit after ages of apparent deadness. Had the Revival of Learning not intervened it is probable that the vigorous efforts of these writers alone would have inaugurated a new age of European culture. Yet, while noting this reserva- tion of judgment, it must also be remarked that all three felt themselves under some peculiar obligation to the classics. Dante, mediseval as his temper seems to us, chose Virgil for his guide, and ascribed his mastery of style to the study of Virgilian poetry. Petrarch and Boccaccio were, as we have seen, the pioneers of the new learning. They held their writings in the vernacular cheap, and initiated that contempt for the mother tongue which was a note of the earlier Renaissance. It may further be observed that Hiovanni Villani, the first chronicler who used Italian for the

compilation of a methodical history, tells us how he was impelled to write by musing on the ruins of Rome and thinking of the vanished greatness of the Latin race. We have therefore to recognize this fact that the four greatest writers of the 14th century, while the Revival of Learning was yet in its cradle, each after his own fashion acknowledged the vivifying touch upon their spirit of the antique genius. They seem to have been conscious that they could not give the desired impulse to modern literature and art without contact with the classics; and, in spite of the splendour of their achievements in Italian, they found no immediate followers upon that path.

The fascination of pure study was so powerful, the Italians at that epoch were so eager to recover the past, that during the 15th century we have before our eyes

ship ana the spectacle of this great nation deviating from the course

litera- ture ;

of development begun in poetry by Dante and Petrarch, in prose by Boccaccio and Villani, into the channels of scholar- ship and antiquarian research. The language of the Canzoniere and Decameron was abandoned for revived Latin and discovered Greek. Acquisition supplanted invention ; imitation of classical authors suppressed originality of style. The energies of the Italian people were devoted to transcribing codices, settling texts, translating Greek books into Latin, compiling grammars, commentaries, encyclopeedias, dictionaries, epitomes, and ephemerides. During this century the best histories—Bruno's and Poggio's annals of Florence, for example—were composed in Latin after the manner of Livy. The best dissertations, Landino's Camaldunenses, Valla's De Voluptate, were laboured imitations of Cicero's Z'usculans. The best verses,

Pontano's elegies, Politian's hexameters, were in like manner |

Latin; public orations upon ceremonial occasions were delivered in the Latin tongue ; correspondence, official and familiar, was carried on in

the same language; even the fabliaux received, in Poggio's acetix, a dress of elegant

385

Latinity. The noticeable barrenness of Italian literature at this period is referable to the fact that men of genius and talent devoted themselves to erudition and struggled to express their thoughts and feelings in a speech which was not natural. Yet they were engaged ina work of incalculable importance. At the close of the century the knowledge of Greece and Rome had been reappro- priated and placed beyond the possibility of destruction ; the chasm between the old and new world had been bridged ; medizeval modes of thinking and discussing had been superseded ; the staple of education, the common culture which has brought all Europe into intellectual agreement, was already in existence. Humanism was now an actuality. Owing to the uncritical veneration for

antiquity which then prevailed, it had received a strong tincture of pedantry. Its professors, in their revolt against the Middle Ages, made light of Christianity and paraded paganism. What was even worse from an artistic point of view, they had contracted puerilities of style, vanities of rhetoric, stupidities of wearisome citation. Still, at the opening of the 16th century, it became manifest what fruits of noble quality the Revival of Letters was about to bring forth for modern literature. Two great scholars, Lorenzo de' Medici and Politian, had already returned to the practice of Italian poetry. Their work is the first absolutely inodern work, —modern in the sense of having absorbed the stores of classic learning and reproduced those treasures in forms of simple, natural, native beauty. Boiardo occupies a similar position by the fusion of classic mythology with chivalrous romance in his Orlando Innamorato. But the victor's laurels were reserved for Ariosto, whose Orlando Furioso is the purest and most perfect extant example of Renaissance poetry. It was not merely in what they had acquired and assimilated from the classics that these poets showed the transformation effected in the field of literature by humanism. The whole method and spirit of medizeval art had been abandoned. That of the Cinque Cento is positive, defined, mundane. The deity, if deity there be, that rules in it, is beauty. Interest is confined to the

actions, passions, sufferings, and joys of human life, to its pathetic, tragic, humorous, and sentimental incidents. Of the state of souls beyond the grave we hear and are supposed to care nothing. In the drama the pedantry of the Revival, which had not injured romantic literature, made itself perniciously felt. Rules were collected from Horace and Aristotle. Seneca was chosen as the model of tragedy; Plautus and Terence supplied the groundwork of comedy. Thus in the plays of Rucellai, Trissino, Sperone, and other tragic poets, the nobler elements of humanism, considered as a revelation of the world and man, obtained no free development. Even the comedies of the best authors are too observant of Latin

| precedents, although some pieces of Machiavelli, Ariosto, Aretino, Cecchi, and Gelli are admirable for vivid delinea-

tion of contemporary manners.

poetry. Cimabue started with work which owed nothing directly to antiquity. At about the same time Niccola Pisano studied the style of sculpture in fragments of Greeco- Roman marbles. His manner influenced Giotto, who set painting on a forward path. Fortunately for the unim- peded expansion of Italian art, little was brought to light of antique workmanship during the 14th and 15th centuries. The classical stimulus came to painters, sculptors, and architects chiefly through literature. There- fore there was narrow scope for imitation, and the right spirit of humanism displayed itself in a passionate study of perspective, nature, and the nude. Yet we find in the

| writings of Ghiberti and Alberti, we notice in the master- XX. – 49

The relation of the plastic arts to the revival of learning to the is similar to that which has been sketched in the case of fine arts ;

to science and philo- sophy ;

pieces of these men and their compeers Bruncllesch i and Donatello, how even in the 15th century the minds of artists were fascinated by what survived of classic grace and science. Gradually, as the race became penetrated

with antique thought, the earlier Christian motives of the |

arts yielded to pagan subjects. Gothic architecture, which had always flourished feebly on Italian soil, was supplanted by a hybrid Roman style. The study of Vitruvius gave strong support to that pseudo-classic manner which, when it had reached its final point in Palladio's work, overspread the whole of Europe and dominated taste during two centuries. But the perfect plastic art of Italy, the pure art of the Cinque Cento, the painting of Raphael, Da Vinci, Titian, and Correggio, the sculpture of Donatello, Michelaugelo, and Sansovino, the architecture of Bra- mante, Omodeo, and the Venetian Lombardi, however much imbued with the spirit of the classical revival, takes rank beside the poetry of Ariosto as a free intelligent product of the Renaissance. That is to say, it is not so much an outcome of studies in antiquity as an exhibition of emancipated modern genius fired and illuminated by the masterpieces of the past. It indicates a separation from the Middle Ages, inasmucli as it is permanently natural. Its religion is joyous, sensuous, dramatic, terrible, but in each and all of its many-sided manifestations strictly human. Its tauch on classical mythology is original, rarely imitative or pedantic. The art of the Renaissance was an apocalypse of the beauty of the world and man in unaffected spontaneity, without side thoughts for piety or erudition, inspired by pure delight in loveliness and harmony for their own sakes.

In the fields of science and philosophy humanism wrought similar important changes. Petrarch began by waging re- lentless war against the logicians and materialists of his own day. With the advance made in Greek studies scholastic methods of thinking fell into contemptuous oblivion. The newly aroused curiosity for nature encouraged men like Alberti, Da Vinci, Toscanelli, and Da Porta to make prac- tical experiments, penetrate the working of physical forces, and invent scientific instruments. Anatomy began to be

studied, and the time was not far distant when Titian:

should lend his pencil to the epoch-making treatise of Vesalius. The Middle Ages had been satisfied with absurd and visionary notions about the world around them, while the body of man was regarded with too much suspicion to be studied. Now the right method of interrogating nature with patience and loving admiration was instituted. At the same time the texts of ancient authors supplied hints which led to discoveries so far-reaching in their results as those of Copernicus, Columbus, and Galileo. In philosophy, properly so-called, the humanistic scorn for medieval dulness and obscurity swept away theological metaphysics as valueless. But at first little beyond empty rhetoric and clumsy compilation was substituted. The ethical treatises of the scholars are deficient in substance, while Ficino's attempt to revive Platonism betrays an uncritical conception of his master's drift. It was some- thing, however, to have shaken off the shackles of ecclesi- astical authority ; and, even if a new authority, that of the ancicnts, was accepted in its stead, still progress was being made toward sounder methods of analysis. This is notice-

nun areas a CE

proving that the emancipation of the will had been accom- plished. It must be added that their writings, like every other product of the Renaissance, except its purest poetry

and art, exhibit a hybrid between medizeval and modern ten-

dencies. Childish ineptitudes are mingled with intuitions of maturest wisdom, and seeds of future thought germinate in the decaying refuse of past systems.

Humanism in its earliest stages was uncritical. absorbed the relics of antiquity with omnivorous appetite, and with very imperfect sense of the distinction between worse and better work. Yet it led in process of time to criticism. The critique of literature began in the lccture room of Politian, in the printing-house of Aldus, and in the school of Vittorino. The critique of Roman law started, under Politian's auspices, upon a more liberal course than that which had beeu followed by the powerful but narrow- sighted glossators of Bologna. Finally, in the court of Naples arose that most formidable of all critical engines, the critique of

established ecclesiastical traditions and spurious historical documents. Valla by one vigorous effort destroyed the False Decretals and exposed the Dona- tion of Constantine to ridicule, paving the way for the polemic carried on against the dubious pretensions of the papal throne by scholars of the Reformation. A similar criticism, conducted less on lines of erudition than of persiflage and irony, ransacked the moral abuses of the church and played around the very foundations of Chris- tianity. This was tolerated with approval by men who repeated Leo X.'s witty epigram: "What profit has not that fable of Christ brought us!" The same critical and philosophic spirit working on the materials of history produced a new science, the honours of which belong to Machiavelli. He showed, on the one side, how the history of a people can be written with a recognition of fixed prin- ciples, and at the same time with an artistic feeling for personal and dramatic episodes. On the other side, he addressed himself to the analysis of man considered as a political being, to the anatomy of constitutions and the classification of governments, to the study of motives under- lying public action, the secrets of success and the causes of failure in the conduct of affairs. The unscrupulous rigour with which he applied his scientific method, and the

| sinister deductions he thought himself justified in drawing

able in Pomponazzo's system of materialism, based on the |

interpretation of Aristotle, but revealing a virile spirit of disinterested and unprejudiced research. The thinkers of southern Italy, Telesio, Bruno, and Campanella, at last opened the two clief lines on which modern speculation has since moved. 'Telesio and Campanella may be termed the predecessors of Bacon. Bruno was the precursor of the idealistic schools. All three alike strove to discngage their minds from classical as well as ecclesiastieal authority,

from the results it yielded, excited terror and repulsion. Nevertheless, a department had been added to the intellec- tual empire of mankind, in which fellow-workers, like Guicciardini at Florence, and subsequently Sarpi at Venice, were not slow to follow the path traced by Machiavelli. The object of the foregoing paragraphs has bcen to show in what way the positive, inquisitive, secular, explor- atory spirit of the Renaissance, when

toned and controlled by humanism, penetrated the regions of literature, art, philosophy, and science. It becomes at this point of much moment to consider how social manners in Italy were modified by the same causes, since the type developed there was in large measure communicated together with the new culture to the rest of Europe. The first subject to be noticed under this heading is education. What has come to be called a classical education was the immediate product of the Italian Renaissance. The universities of Bologna, Padua, and Salerno had been famous through the Middle Ages for the study of law, physics, and medicine ;

and during the 15th and 16th centuries the two first still

enjoyed celebrity in those faculties. But at this period no

_ lecture-rooms were so crowded as those in which professors _ of antique literature and language read passages from the

_no defined place for the new learning of the Revival, which

poets and orators, taught Greek, and cominented upon the systenis of philosophers. The medieval curriculum offered

had indeed no recognized name. Chairs had therefore to

It to criti-

cism;

|

to educa- tion ;

rin arse ran CE

be founded under the title of rhetoric, from which men like Chrysoloras and Guarino, Filelfo and Politian, expounded orally to hundreds of eager students from every town of Italy and every nation in Europe their accumu- lated knowledge of antiquity. One mass of Greek and Roman erudition, including history and metaphysics, law and science, civic

institutions and the art of war, mythology and magistracies, metrical systems and oratory, agriculture and astronomy, domestic manners and religious rites, grammar and philology, biography and numismatics, formed the miscellaneous subject matter of this so-styled rhetoric. Notes taken at these lectures supplied young scholars with hints for further exploration ; and a certain tradition of treating antique authors for the display of general learning, as well as for the elucidation of their

archeology, taking for his models of conduct the great men of antiquity rather than the saints of the church. He was also expected to prove himself an adept in physica] exercises and in the courteous observances which survived from chivalry. The type is set before us by Castiglione in that book upon the courtier which went the round of Europe in the 16th century. It is further einphasized in a famous passage of the Orlando Innamorato where Boiardo compares the Italian ideal of an accomplished gentleman with the coarser type admired by nations of the north. To this point the awakened intelligence of the Renaissance, instructed by humanism, polished by the fine arts, expanding in genial conditions of diffused wealth, had brought the Italians at a period when the rest of Europe was comparatively barbarous.

texts, came into vogue, which has determined the method of scholarship for the last three centuries in Europe. The lack of printed books in the first period of the Revival, and

This picture has undoubtedly a darker side. Human- The moral ism, in its revolt against the Middle Ages, was, as we defects of have seen already, mundane, pagan, irreligious, positive. the Italian

the comparative rarity of Greek erudition among students, combined with the intense enthusiasm aroused for the new gospel of the classics, gave special value to the personal teaching of these professors. They journeyed from city to city, attracted by promises of higher pay, and allured by ever-growing laurels of popular fame. Each large town established its public study, academy, or university, similar institutions under varying designations, for the exposition of the littere humaniores. The humanists,

or professors of that branch of kuowledge, became a class of the highest dignity. They were found in the chanceries of the republics, in the papal curia, in the council chambers of princes, at the headquarters of condottieri, wherever business had to be transacted, speeches to be made, and the work of secretaries to be performed. Furthermore, they undertook the charge of private education, opening schools which displaced the medizval system of instruction, and taking engagements as tutors in the families of despots, noblemen, and wealthy merchants. The academy established by Vittorino da Feltre at Mantua under the protection of Gian Francesco Gonzaga for the training of pupils of both sexes, might be chosen as the type of this Italian method. His scholars, who were lodged in appro- priate buildings, met daily to hear the master read and comment on the classics. They learned portions of the best authors by heart, exercised themselves in translation from one language to another, and practised composition in prose and verse. It was Vittorino's care to see that, while their memories were duly stored with words and facts, their judgment should be formed by critical analysis, attention to style, and comparison of the authors of a decadent age with those who were acknowledged classics. During the hours of recreation suitable physical exercises, as fencing, riding, and gymnastics, were conducted under qualified trainers. From this sketch it will be seen how closely the educational system which came into England during the reigns of the Tudors, and which has prevailed until the present time, was modelled upon the Italian type. English youths who spend their time at Eton between athletic sports and Latin verses, and who take an Ireland with a first class in "Greats" at Oxford, are pursuing the same course of physical and mental discipline as the princes of Gonzaga or Montefeltro in the 15th century.

The Renaissance can, after all, be regarded only as a period of transition, in which much of the good of the past was sacrificed while some of the evil was retained, and neither the bad nor the good of the future was brought clearly into fact. Beneath the surface of brilliant social culture lurked gross appetites and savage passions, unrestrained by medieval piety, untutored by modern experience. Italian society exhibited an almost unex- ampled spectacle of literary, artistic, and courtly refinement crossed by brutalities of lust, treasons, poisonings, assas- sinations, violence. A

succession of worldly pontifis brought the church into flagrant discord with the principles of Christianity. Steeped in pagan learning, emulous of imitating the manners of the ancients, used to think and feel in harmony with Ovid and Theocritus, and at the same time rendered cynical by the corruption of papal Rome, the educated classes lost their grasp upon morality. Political honesty ceased almost to have a name in Italy. The Christian virtues were scorned by the foremost actors and the ablest thinkers of the time, while the antique virtues were themes for rhetoric rather than moving- springs of conduct. This is apparent to all students of Machiavelli and Guicciardini, the profoundest analysts of their age, the bitterest satirists of its vices, but themselves infected with its incapacity for moral goodness. Not only were the Italians vitiated ; but they had also become impotent for action and resistance. At the height of the Renaissance the five great powers in the peninsula formed a confederation of independent but mutually attractive and repellent states. Equilibrium was maintained by diplomacy, in which the humanists played a foremost part, casting a network of intrigue over the nation which helped in no small measure to stimulate intelligence and create a common medium of culture, but which accustomed statesmen to believe that everything could be achieved by wire-pulling. Wars were conducted on a showy system by means of mercenaries, who played a safe game in the field and developed a system of bloodless campaigns. Meanwhile the people grew up unused to arms. When Italy between the years 1494 and 1530 became the battle- field of French, German, and Spanish forces, it was seen to what a point of helplessness the political, moral, and social conditions of the Renaissance had brought the nation.

Renais- sance,

Tt was needful to study at some length the main pheno- Diffusion mena of the Renaissance in Italy, because the history of of the that phase of evolution in the other Western races turns ae

. . . . . earning almost entirely upon points in which they either adhered 4), to or diverged from the type established there. Speaking Italy broadly, what France, Germany, Spain, and England through- assimilated from

Italy at this epoch was in the first place + the new learning, as it was then called. This implied the

tosocial' The humanists effected a deeply penetrating change manners. jn social manners. Through their influence as tutors, professors, orators, and courtiers, society was permeated by a fresh ideal of culture. To bea gentleman in Italy meant at this epoch to be a man acquainted with the rudiments at least of scholarship, refined in diction, capable of corresponding or of speaking in choice phrases,

open to the beauty of the arts, intelligently interested in Europe.

388

new conception of human life, the new interest in the material universe, the new method of education, and the new manners, which we have seen to be inseparable from Italian humanism. Under these forms of intellectual enlightenment and polite culture the renascence of the human spirit had appeared in Italy, where it was more than elsewhere connected with the study of classical antiquity. But that audacious exploratory energy which formed the motive force of the Renaissance as distinguished from the Revival of Learning took, as we shall see, very different directions in the several nations who now were sending the flower of their youth to study at the feet of Italian rhetoricians.

The Renaissance ran its course in Italy with strange indifference to consequences. The five great powers, held in equilibrium by Lorenzo de' Medici, dreamed that the peninsula could be maintained in statu quo by diplomacy. The church saw no danger in encouraging a pseudo- pagan ideal of life, violating its own principle of existence by assuming the policy of an aggrandizing secular state, and outraging Christendom openly by its acts and utterances. Society at large was hardly aware that an intellectual force of stupendous magnitude and incalculable explosive power had been created by the new learning. Why should not established institutions proceed upon the customary and convenient methods of routine, while the delights of existence were augmented, manners polished, arts developed, and a golden age of epicurean ease made decent by a state religion which no one cared to break with because no one was

left to regard it seriously? This was the attitude of the Italians when the Renaissance, which they had initiated as a thing of beauty, began to operate as a thing of power beyond the Alps.

REN AGswpaNCE

| fication of Gothic architecture by pseudo-Roman elements

of style was incomplete. What Germany aftcrwards took of the Palladian manner was destined to reach it on a circuitous route from France. In like manner the new learning failed to penetrate all classes of society with the rapidity of its expansion in Italy, nor was the new ideal of life and customs so easily substituted for the medieval. The German aristocracy, as Aineas Sylvius had noticed, remained for the most part barbarous, addicted to gross pleasures, contemptuous of culture. The German dialects were too rough to receive that artistic elabora- tion under antique influences which had been so facile in Tuscany. The doctors of the universities were too wedded to their antiquated manuals and methods, too satisfied with dulness, too proud of titles and diplomas, too anxious to preserve ecclesiastical discipline and to repress mental activity, for a genial spirit of human- ism to spread freely. Not in Cologne or Tiibingen but in Padua and Florence did the German pioneers of the Renaissance acquire their sense of liberal studies. And when they returned home they found themselves encumbered with stupidities, jealousies, and rancours. Moreover, the temper of these more enlightened men was itself opposed to Italian indifference and immor- ality; it was pugnacious and polemical, eager to beat down the arrogance of monks and theologians rather than to pursue an ideal of esthetical self-culture. Toa student of the origins of German humanism it is clear that something very different from the Renaissance of Lorenzo de' Medici and Leo X. was in preparation from the first upon Teutonic soil. Far less plastic and form- loving than the Italian, the German intelligence was more penetrative, earnest, disputative, occupicd with sub-

Revival Germany was already provided with universities, seven | stantial problems. Starting with theological criticism, of Learn- of which had been founded between 1348 and 1409. | proceeding to the stage of solid studies

in the three Gegiaty In these haunts of learning the new studies took root | learned languages, German humanism occupied the atten-

after the year 1440, chiefly through the influence of tra- velling professors, Peter Luder and Samuel Karoch. Gerinan scholars made their way to Lombard and Tuscan lecture-rooms, bringing back the methods of the humanists. Greek, Latin, and Hebrew erudition soon found itself at home on Teutonic soil. Like Italian men of letters,

tion of a widely scattered sect of erudite scholars; but it did not arouse the interest of the whole nation until it was forced into a violently militant attitude by Pfefferkorn's attack on Reuchlin. That attempt to extinguish honest thought prepared the Reformation; and humanism after 1518 was absorbed in politico-religious warfare.

*The point of contact between humanism and the Reforma- Relation tion in Germany has to be insisted on; for it is just here humanism that the relation of the Reformation to the Renaissance in *? the*

5 : German general makes itself apparent. As the Renaissance had potorma- its precursory movements in the medieval period, so the tion.

these pioneers of humanism gave a classic turn to their patronymics; unfaniiliar names, Crotus Rubeanus and Pierius Grecus, Capnion and Lupambulus Ganymedes, C&colampadius and Melanchthon, resounded on the Rhine. A few of the German princes, among whom Maximilian,

the prince cardinal Albert of Mainz, Frederick the Wise of Saxony, and Eberhard of Wiirtemberg deserve mention, exercised a not insignificant influence on letters by the foundation of new universities and the patronage of learned men. The cities of Strasburg, Nuremberg, Augs- burg, Basel, became centres of learned coteries, which gathered round scholars like Wimpheling, Brant, Peutinger, Schedel, and Pirckheimer, artists like Diirer and Holbein, printers of the eminence of Froben. Academies in imitation of Italian institutions came into existence, the two most conspicuous, named after the Rhine and Danube, holding their headquarters respectively at Heidelberg and Vienna. Crowned poets, of whom the most eminent was Conrad Celtes Protucius (Pickel!), emulated

the fame of Politian and Pontano. Yet, though the Renaissance was thus widely communicated to the centres of German intelligence, it displayed a different character from that which it assumed in Italy. Gothic art, which was indi- genous in Germany, yielded but little to southern influ- ences. Such work as that of Diirer, Vischer, Cranach, Schéngauer, Holbein, consummate as it was in technical excellence, did not assume Italian forms of loveliness, did not display the paganism of the Latin races. The modi-

German Reformation was preceded by Wickliffe and Huss, by the discontents of the Great Schism, and by the councils of Constance and Basel. These two main streams of modern progress had been proceeding upon different tracks to diverse issues, but they touched in the studies stimulated by the Revival, and they had a common origin in the struggle of the spirit after self-emancipation. Johann Reuchlin, who entered the lecture-room of Argyro- poulos at Rome in 1482, Erasmus of Rotterdam, who once dwelt at Venice as the house guest of the Aldi, applied their critical knowledge of Hebrew and of Greek to the elucidation and diffusion of the Bible. To the Germans, as to all nations of that epoch, the Bible came as a new book, because they now read it for the first time with eyes opened by humanism. The touch of the new spirit which had evolved literature, art, and culture in Italy sufficed in Germany to recreate Christianity. This new spirit in Italy emancipated human intelligence by the classics ; in Germany it emancipated the human conscience by the Bible. The indignation excited by Leo X.'s sale of indulgences, the moral rage stirred in Northern hearts by papal abominations in Rome, were external causes which precipitated the schism between Teutonic and

The Catholic revival in Italy.

roNALS Yaw ch

Latin Christianity. The Reformation, inspired by the same energy of resuscitated life as the Renaissance, assisted by the same engines of the printing-press and paper, using the same apparatus of scholarship, criticism, literary skill, being in truth another manifestation of the same world-movement under a diverse form, now posed itself as an irreconcilable antagonist to Renaissance Italy. It would be difficult to

draw any comparison between German and Italian humanists to the disparagement of the former. Reuchlin was no less learned than Pico; Melanchthon no less humane than Ficino ; Erasmus no less witty, and far more trenchant, than Petrarch; Ulrich von Hutten no less humorous than Folengo; Paracelsus no less fantastically learned than Cardano. But the cause in which German intellect and will were enlisted was so different that it is difficult not to make a formal separation between that movement which evolved culture in Italy and that which restored religion in Germany, establishing the freedom of intelligence in the one sphere and the freedom of the conscience in the other. The truth is that the Reformation was the Teutonic Renaissance. It was the emancipation of the reason on a line neglected by the Italians, more important indeed in its political consequences, more weighty in its bearing on rationalistic developments than the Italian Renaissance, but none the less an outcome of the same ground-influences. We have already in this century reached a point at which, in spite of stubborn Protestant dogmatism and bitter Catholic reaction, we can perceive how the ultimate affranchisement of man will be the work of both.

The German Reformation was incapable of propagating itself in Italy, chiefly for the reason that the intellectual forces which it represented and employed had already found specific outlet in that country. It was not in the nature of the Italians, sceptical and paganized by the Revival, to be keenly interested about questions which seemed to revive the scholastic disputes of the Middle Ages. It was not in their external conditions, suffering as they were from invasions, enthralled by despots, to use the Reformation as a lever for political revolution. Yet when a tumultuary army of so-called Lutherans sacked Rome in 1527 no sober thinker doubted that a new agent had appeared in Europe which would alter the destinies of the peninsula. The Renaissance was virtually closed, so far as it concerned Italy, when Clement VII. and Charles V. struck their compact at Bologna in 1530. This compact proclaimed the principle of monarchical absolutism, sup- ported by papal authority, itself monarchically absolute, which influenced Europe until the outbreak of the Revolu- tion. A reaction immediately set in both against the Renaissance and the Reformation. The council of Trent, opened in 1545 and closed in 1563, decreed a formal pur- gation of the church, affirmed

the fundamental doctrines of Catholicism, strengthened the papal supremacy, and inaugurated that movement of resistance which is known as the Counter-Reformation. The complex onward effort of the modern nations, expressing itself in Italy as Renais- sance, in Germany as Reformation, had aroused the forces of conservatism. The four main instruments of the reac- tion were the papacy, which had done so much by its sym- pathy with the revival to promote the humanistic spirit it now dreaded, the strength of Spain, and two Spanish institutions planted on Roman soil—the Inquisition and the Order of Jesus. The principle contended for and estab- lished by this reaction was absolutism as opposed to freedom—monarchical absolutism, papal absolutism, the suppression of energies liberated by the Renaissance and Reformation. The partial triumph of this principle was secure, inasmuch as the majority of established powers in

opinions afloat in Europe. Renaissance and Reformation were, moreover, already at strife. Both too were spiritual and elastic tendencies toward progress, ideals rather than solid organisins.

The part played by Spain in this period of history was Spain in the Re- . naissance

determined in large measure by external circumstance The Spaniards became one nation by the conquest o

Granada and the union of the crowns of Castile and apts ana The war of national aggrandizement, being in letters.

Aragon. its nature a crusade, inflamed the religious enthusiasm of the people. It was followed by the expulsion of Jews and Moors, and by the establishment of the Inquisition on a solid basis, with powers formidable to the freedom of all Spaniards from the peasant to the throne. These facts explain the decisive action of the Spanish nation on the side of Catholic conservatism, and help us to understand why their brilliant achievements in the field of culture during the 16th century were speedily followed by stag- nation. It will be well, in dealing with the Renaissance

in Spain, to touch first upon the arts and literature, and then to consider those qualities of character in action whereby the nation most distinguished itself from the rest of Europe. Architecture in Spain, emerging from the Gothic stage, developed an Early Renaissance style of bewildering richness by adopting elements of Arabic and Moorish decoration. Sculpture exhibited realistic vigour of indubitably native stamp; and the minor plastic crafts were cultivated with success on lines of striking originality. Painting grew from a homely stock, until the work of Velazquez showed that Spanish masters in this branch were fully abreast of their Italian compeers and contemporaries. To dwell here upon the Italianizing versifiers, moralists, and pastoral romancers who attempted to refine the vernacular of the Romancero would be superfluous. They are mainly noticeable as proving that certain coteries in Spain were willing to accept the Italian Renaissance. But the real force of the people was not in this courtly literary style. It expressed itself at last in the monumental work of Don Quixote, which places Cervantes beside Rabelais, Ariosto, and Shakespeare as one of the four supreme exponents of the Renaissance. The affectations of decadent chivalry disappeared before its humour; the lineaments of a noble nation, animated by the youth of modern Europe emerging from the Middle Ages, were portrayed in its enduring pic- tures of human experience. The Spanish drama, mean- while, untrammelled by those false canons of pseudo- classic taste which fettered the theatre in Italy and afterwards in France, rose to an eminence in the hands of Lope de Vega and Calderon which only the English, and the English only in the masterpieces of three or four play-wrights, can rival. Camoens, in the Zusiad, if we may here group Portugal with Spain, was the first modern poet to compose an epic on a purely modern theme, vying with Virgil, but not bending to pedantic rules, and breathing the spirit of the age of heroic adventures and almost fabu-lous discoveries into his melodious numbers. What has chiefly to be noted regarding the achievements of the Spanish race in arts and letters at this epoch is their potent national originality. The revival of learning pro-duced in Spain no slavish imitation as it did in Italy, no formal humanism, and, it may be added, very little of fruitful scholarship. The Renaissance here, as in England, displayed essential qualities of intellectual freedom, delight in life, exultation over rediscovered earth and man. The note of Renaissance work in Germany was still Gothic.

This we feel in the penetrative earnestness of Diirer, in the homeliness of Hans Sachs, in the grotesque humour of Hulenspregel and the Narrenschif, the sombre pregnancy of the Faust legend, the almost stolid mastery of Holbein.

church and state felt threatened bv the revolutionary | It lay not in the German genius to escape from the pre-

occupations and the limitations of the Middle Ages, for this reason mainly that what we call medizval was to a very large extent Teutonic. But on the Spanish peninsula, in the masterpieces of Velazquez, Cervantes, Camoens, Calderon, we emerge into an atmosphere of art, definitely national, distinctly modern, where solid natural forms stand before us realistically modelled, with light and shadow on their rounded outlines, and where the airiest creatures of the fancy take shape aud weave a dance of rhythmic, light, incomparable intricacy. The Spanish Renaissance would in itself suftice, if other witnesses were wanting, to prove how inaccurate is the thcory that limits this movement to the revival of learning. Touched by Italian influences, enriched and fortified by the new learning, Spanish genius walked firmly forward en its own path. It was only crushed by forces generated in thie nation that produced it, by the Inquisition and by despotic Catholic absolutism.

In the history of the Renaissance, Spain and Portugal represent the exploration of the ocean and the colonization of the other hemisphere. The voyages of Columbus and Vespucci to America, the rounding of the Cape by Diaz and the discovery of the sea road to India by Vasco da Gama, Cortes's conquest of Mexico and Pizarro's conquest of Peru, marked a new era for the human race and inaugurated the modern age more decisively than any other series of events has done. It has recently been maintained that modern Kuropean history is chiefly an affair of competition between confederated states for the possession of lands revealed by Columbus and Da Gama. Without challenging or adopt- ing this speculation, it may be safely affirmed that nothing

Explora- tion of the ocean,

RERDAPESP ANCE

so pregnant of results has happened as this exploration of |

the globe. in politics and commerce, substituting the ocean for the Mediterranean, dethroning Italy from her seat of central

To say that it displaced the centre of gravity | | Verona back with him to France, and founded a school of architee-

importance in traffic, depressing the eastern and elevating | the western powers of Europe, opening a path for Anglo- |

Saxon expansiveness, forcing philosophers and statesmen to regard the Occidental nations as a single group in counter- poise to other groups of nations, the European community as one unit correlated to other units of humanity upon this planet, is truth enough to vindicate the vast signi- ficance of these discoveries. The Renaissance, far from being the re-birth of antiquity with its civilization confined to the Mediterranean, with its Hercules' Pillars beyond which lay Cimmerian darkness, was thus effectively the entrance upon a quite incalculably wider stage of life, in which mankind at large has since enacted one great drama. Dogmatic While Spanish navies were exploring the ocean, and Catholi- Spanish paladins were overturning empires, Charles V. cism. headed the reaction of Catholicism against reform. Stronger as king of Spain than as emperor, for the empire was little but a name, he lent the weight of his authority to that system of coercion and repression which enslaved Italy, desolated Germany with war, and drowned the Low Countries in blood. Philip II., with full approval of the Spanish nation, pursued the same policy in an even stricter spirit. He was powerfully assisted by two institu- tions, in which the national character of Spain expressed itself, the Inquisition and the Society of Jesus. Of the former it is not needful to speak here. But we have to observe that the last great phenomenon of the Spanish Renaissance was Ignatius Loyola, who organized the militia by means of which the church worked her Counter-Reformation. His motto, Perinde ac cadaver, expressed that recognition of absolutism which papacy and monarchy demanded for their consolidation. The logical order of an essay which attempts to show how Renaissance was correlated

to Reformation and Counter-Reformation has necessitated the treatment of

_ business, captains, and artists.

| that externally they remained ruder and less polished.

Italy, Germany, and Spain iu succession ; for these three France in nations were the three main agents in the triple process to the Re- be analysed. It was due to their specific qualities, and to — the diverse circumstances of their external development," =~ that the re-birth of Europe took this form of duplex action

on the lines of intellectual and moral progress, followed by reaction against mental freedom. We have now to speak

of France, which earliest absorbed the influence of the Italian revival, and of England, which received it latest.

The Renaissance may be said to have begun in France

with Charles VITI.'s expedition to Naples, and to have con- tinued until the extinction of the house of Valois. Louis

XII. and Francis I. spent a considerable portion of their reigns in the attempt to secure possession of the Italian provinces they claimed. Henry II.'s queen was Catherine

of the Medicean family ; and her children, Charles IX. and Henry IIL, were Italianated Frenchmen. Thus the con- nexion between France and Italy during the period 1494—

1589 was continuous. The French passed to and fro across the Alps on military and peaceful expeditions. Italians came to France as courtiers, ambassadors, men of French society assumed

a strong Italian colouring, nor were the manners of the court very different from those of an Italian city, except

The relation between the crown and its great feudatories, the military bias of the aristocracy, and the marked distinction between classes which survived from the Middle Ages, rendered France in many vital points unlike Italy. Yet the annals of that age, and the anecdotes retailed by Brantéme, prove that the royalty and nobility of France had been largely Italianized. It is said that Louis XII. brought Fra Giocondo of French

*architects. But we need not have recourse to this legend '**

for the explanation of such Italian influences as were already noticeable in the Renaissance buildings on the Loire. Without determining the French style, Italian intercourse helped to stimulate its formation and development. There are students of the 15th century in France who resent this intrusion of the Italian Renaissance. But they forget that France was bound by inexorable laws of human evolution to obey the impulse which communicated itself to every form of art in Europe. In the school of Fontainebleau, uuder the patronage of Francis I., that Italian influence } made itself distinctly felt ; yet a true French manner had been already formed, which, when it was subsequently applied at Paris, preserved a marked national quality. The characteristic of the style developed by Bullant, De VYOrme, and Lescot, in the royal or princely palaces of Chenonceaux, Chambord, Anet, Ecouen, Fontainebleau, the Louvre, and elsewhere, is a blending of capricious fancy and inventive richness of decoration with purity of outline and a large sense of the beauty of extended masses. Beginning with the older castles of Touraiue, and passing onward to the Tuileries, we trace the passage from the medieval fortress to the modern pleasure house, and note how architecture obeyed the special demands of that new phenomenon of Renaissance civilization, the court. In the general distribution of parts these monumental buildings express the peculiar conditions which French society assumed under the influence of Francis I. and Diane de Poitiers. In details of execution and harmonic combina- tions they illustrate the precision, logic, lucidity, and cheerful spirit of the national genius. Here, as in Lombardy, a feeling for serene beauty derived from study of the antique has not interrupted the evolution of a style indigenous to France and eminently characteristic of the French temperament.

During the reign of Francis I. several Italian painters

French painting and sculpture,

French literature.

EER ATSB ANCE a9

of eminence visited France. Among these Del Rosso, Primaticcio, Del Sarto, and Da Vinci are the most famous. But their example was not productive of a really great school of French painting. It was left for the Poussins and Claude Lorraine in the next century, acting under mingled Italian and Flemish infiuences, to embody the still active spirit of the classical revival. These three masters were the contemporaries of Corneille, and do not belong to the Renaissance period. Sculpture, on the contrary, in which art, as in architecture, the medieval French had been surpassed by no other people of Europe, was practised with originality and power in the reigns of Henry II. and Francis I. Ponzio and Cellini. who quitted Italy for France, found themselves outrivalled in their own sphere by Jean Goujon, Cousin, and Pilon. The decorative sculpture of this epoch, whether combined with architec- ture or isolated in monumental statuary, ranks for grace and suavity with the best of Sansovino's. At the same time it is unmistakably inspired by a sense of beauty dif- ferent from the Italian—more piquant and pointed, less languorous, more mannered perhaps, but with less of empty rhythmical effect. All this while, the minor arts of enamelling, miniature, glass-painting, goldsmith's work, jewellery, engraving, tapestry, wood-carving, pottery, &c., were cultivated with a spontaneity and freedom which proved that France, in the middle point between Flanders and Italy, was able to use both influences without a sacrifice of native taste. It may indeed be said in general that what is true of France is likewise true of all countries which felt the artistic impulses of the Renaissance. Whether we regard Spain, the Netherlands, or Germany at this epoch, we find a national impress stamped upon the products of the plastic and the decorative arts, notwith- standing the prevalence of certain forms derived from the antique and Italy. It was only at a later period that the formalism of pseudo-classic pedantry reduced natural and national originality to a dead unanimity.

French literature was quick to respond to Renaissance influences. De Comines, the historian of Charles VIII.'s expedition to Naples, differs from the earlier French chroniclers in his way of regarding the world of men and affairs. He has the perspicuity and analytical penetration of a Venetian ambassador. Villon, his contemporary, may rather be ranked, so far as artistic form and use of knowledge are concerned, with poets of the Middle Ages, and in particular with the Goliardi. But he is essentially modern in the vividness of his self-portraiture, and in what we are wont to call realism. Both De Comines and Villon indicate the entrance of a new quality into litera- ture. The Rhetoriqueurs, while protracting medieval traditions by their use of allegory and complicated metrical systems, sought to improve the French language by introducing Latinisms. Thus the Revival of Learning began to affect the vernacular in the last years of the 15th century. Marot and his school reacted against this pedantry. The Renaissance displayed itself in their effort to purify the form and diction of poetry. But the decisive revolution was effected by Ronsard and his comrades of the Pléiade. It was their professed object to raise French to a level with the classics, and to acclimatize Italian species of verse. The humanistic movement led these learned writers to engraft the graces of the antique upon their native literature, and to refine it by emulating the lucidity of Petrarch. The result of their endeavour was immediately apparent in the new force added to French rhythm, the new pomp, richness, colouring, and polish con- ferred upon poetic diction. French style gradually attained to fixity, and the alexandrine came to be recognized as the standard line in poetry. D'Aubigneé's invective and Regnier's satire, at the close of the 16th century, are as

modern as Voltaire's. Meanwhile the drama was emerging from the medieval mysteries; and the classical type, niade popular by Garnier's genius, was elaborated, as in Italy, upon the model of Seneca and the canons of the three unities. The tradition thus formed was continued and fortified by the illustrious playwrights of the 17th century. Translation from Greek and Latin into French progressed rapidly at the commencement of this period. It was a marked characteristic of the Renaissance in France to appropriate the spoils of Greece and Rome for the profit of the mother tongue. Amyot's Plutarch and his Daphnis and Chloe rank among the most exquisite examples of beautiful French prose.

Prose had now the charm of simplicity combined with grace. To mention Brantéme is to mention the most entertaining of gossips. To speak of Montaigne is to speak of the best as well as the first of essayists. In all the literary work which has been mentioned, the originality and freshness of the French genius are no less conspicuous than its saturation with the new learning and with Italian studies. But the greatest name of the epoch, the name which is synonymous with the Renaissance in France, has yet to be uttered. That, of course, is Rabelais. His incommensurable and indescrib- able masterpiece of mingled humour, wisdom, satire, erudi- tion, indecency, profundity, levity, imagination, realism, reflects the whole age in its mirror of hyper-Aristophanic farce. What Ariosto is for Italy, Cervantes for Spain, Erasmus for Holland, Luther for Germany, Shakespeare for England, that is Rabelais for France. The Renaissance cannot be comprehended in its true character without familiarity with these six representatives of its manifold and many-sided inspiration.

The French Renaissance, so rich on the side of arts and French letters, was hardly less rich on the side of classical studies, scholar- The revival of learning has a noble muster-roll of names ae in France: Turntbe, the patriarch of Hellenistic studies ; sha. the Etiennes of Paris, equalling in numbers, industry, and tion in learning their Venetian rivals ; the two Scaligers ; impas- France. sioned Dolet; eloquent Muret; learned Cujas; terrible Calvin; Ramus, the intrepid antagonist of Aristotle ; De Thou and De Béze; ponderous Casaubon; brilliant young Saumaise. The distinguishing characteristics of French humanism are vivid intelligence, critical audacity and polemical acumen, perspicuity of exposition, learning directed in its applications by logical sense rather than by artistic ideals of taste. Some of tlie names just mentioned remind us that in France, as in Germany and Holland, the Reformation was closely connected with the revival of learning. Humanism has never been in the narrow sense of that term Protestant; still less has it been strictly Catholic. In Italy it fostered a temper of mind decidedly averse to theological speculation and religious earnestness. In Holland and Germany, with Erasmus, Reuchlin, and Melanchthon, it developed types of character, urbane, reflective, pointedly or gently critical, which, left to themselves, would not have plunged the north of Europe into the whirlpool of belligerent reform. Yet none the less was the new learning,

through the open spirit of inquiry it nourished, its vindication of the private reason, its enthusiasm for republican antiquity, and its proud assertion of the rights of human independence, linked by a strong and subtle chain to that turbid revolt of the individual consciousness against spiritual despotism draped in fallacies and throned upon abuses. To this rebellion we give the name of Reformation. But, while the necessities of antagonism to papal Rome made it assume at first the form of narrow and sectarian opposition, it marked in fact a vital struggle of the intellect towards truth and freedom, involving future results of scepticism and rationalistic audacity from which its earlier champions

would have shrunk. It marked, moreover, in the con- dition of armed resistance against established authority which was forced upon it by the Counter-Reformation, a firm resolve to assert political liberty, leading in the course of time to a revolution with which the rebellious spirit of the Revival was sympathetic. This being the rela- tion of humanism in general to reform, French learning in particular displayed such innovating boldness as threw many of its most conspicuous professors into the camp at war with Rome. Calvin, a French student of Picard origin, created the type of Protestantism to which the majority of French Huguenots adhered. This too was a moment at which philosophical seclusion was hardly possible. In a nation so tumultuously agitated one side or the other had to be adopted. Those of the French humanists who did not proclaim Huguenot opinions, found themselves obliged with Muretus to lend their talents to the Counter-Reforma- tion, or to suffer persecution for heterodoxy, like Dolet. The church, terrified and infuriated by the progress of reform, suspected learning on its own account. To be an eminent scholar was to be accused of immorality, heresy, and atheism in a single indictment; and the defence of weaker minds lay in joining the Jesuits, as Heinsius was fain to do. France had already absorbed the earlier Re- naissance in an Italianizing spirit before the Reformation made itself felt as a political actuality. This fact, together

with the strong Italian bias of the Valois, serves to explain in some degree the reason why the Counter-Reformation entailed those fierce entangled civil wars, massacres of St Bartholomew, murders of the Guises, regicides, treasons, and empoisonments that terminated with the compromise of Henry IV. It is no part of the present subject to analyse the political, religious, and social interests of that struggle. The upshot was the triumph of the Counter-Reformation, and the establishment of its principle, absolutism, as the basis of French government. It was a French king who, when the nation had been reduced to order, uttered the famous word of absolutism, " L'Etat, c'est moi."

The Renaissance in the Low Countries, as elsewhere, had its brilliant age of arts and letters. During the Middle Ages the wealthy free towns of Flanders flourished under conditions not dissimilar to those of the Italian republics.

They raised miracles of architectural beauty, which were |

modified in the 15th and 16th centuries by characteristic elements of the new style. The Van Eycks, followed by Memling, Metsys, Mabuse, Lucas van Leyden, struck out a new path in the revival of painting and taught Europe the secret of oil-colouring. But it was reserved for the 17th century to witness the flower and fruit time of this powerful art in the work of Porbus, Rubens, and Vandyck, in the Dutch schools of landscape and home-life, and in the unique masterpieces of Rembrandt. We have a right to connect this later period with the Renaissance, because

the distracted state of the Netherlands during the 16th |

century suspended, while it could not extinguish, their wsthetic development. century, moreover, are animated with the Renaissance spirit no less surely than the Florentine school of the 15th or the Venetian of the 16th. The animal vigour and

carnal enjoyment of Rubens, the refined Italianizing |

beauty of Vandyck, the mystery of light and gloom on Rembrandt's panels, the love of nature in Ruysdael, Cuyp, and Van Hooghe, with their

luminously misty skies, silvery daylight, and broad expanse of landscape, the interest in common life displayed by Terburg, Van Steen, Douw, Ostade, and Teniers, the instinct for the beauty of animals in Potter, the vast sea spaces of Vanderveldt, the grasp on reality, the acute intuition into character in portraits, the scientific study of the world and man, the robust sympathy with natural appetites, which distinguish

The various schools of the 17th |

REWAds &A WC

the whole art of the Low Countries, are a direct emanation from the Renaissance. .

The vernacular in the Netherlands profited at first but little by the impulse which raised Italian, Spanish, French, and English to the rank of classic languages. But humanism, first of all in its protagonist Erasmus, afterwards in the long list of critical scholars and editors, Lipsius, Heinsius, and Grotius, in the printers Elzevir and Plantin, developed itself from the centre of the Leyden university with massive energy, and proved that it was still a motive force of intellectual progress. In the fields of classical learning the students of the Low Countries broke new ground chiefly by methodical collection, classi- fication, and comprehensive criticism of previously accumu- lated stores. Their works were solid and substantial edifices, forming the substratum for future scholarship. In addition to this they brought philosophy and scientific thoroughness to bear on studies which had been pursued in amore literary spirit. It would, however, be uncritical to pursue this subject further ; for the encyclopedic labours of the Dutch philologers belong to a period when the Re- naissance was overpast. For the same reason it is inadmis- sible to do more than mention the name of Spinoza here.

The Netherlands became the battlefield of Reformation and Counter-Reformation in even a stricter sense than France. Here the antagonistic principles were

posed in the course of a struggle against foreign despotism. | The conflict ended in the assertion of political independence as opposed to absolute

dominion. Europe in large measure owes the modern ideal of political liberty to that spirit of stubborn resistance which broke the power of Spain. Recent history, and in particular the history of democracy, claims for its province the several stages whereby this principle was developed in England and America, and its outburst in the frenzy of the French Revolution. It is enough here to have alluded to the part played by the Low Countries in the genesis of a motive force which may be described as the last manifestation of the Renaissance striving after self-emancipation.

The insular position of England, combined with the nature of the English people, has allowed us to feel the vibration of European movements later and with less of shock than any of the Continental nations. Before a wave of progress has reached our shores we have had the opportunity of watching it as spectators, and of consider- ing how we shall receive it. Revolutions have passed from the tumultuous stages of their origin into some settled and recognizable state before we have been called upon to cope with them. It was thus that England took the influences of the Renaissance and Reformation simul- taneously, and almost at the same time found herself engaged in that struggle with the Counter-Reformation which, crowned by the defeat of the Spanish Armada, stimulated the sense of nationality and developed the naval forces of the race. Both Renaissance and Reforma- tion had been anticipated by at least a century in England. Chaucer's poetry, which owed so much to Italian examples, gave an early foretaste of the former. Wickliffe's teaching was a vital moment in the latter. But the French wars, the Wars of the Roses, and the persecution of the Lollards deferred the coming of the new age; and the year 1536, when Henry VIII. passed the Act of Supremacy through | Parliament, may be fixed as the date when England entered definitively upon a career of intellectual develop- ment abreast with the foremost nations of the Continent. The circumstances just now insisted on explain the specific character of the English Renaissance. The Reformation had been adopted by consent of the king, lords, and

commons ; and this change in the state religion, though it | Was not confirmed without reaction, agitation, and blood-

Flemish and Dutch scholar- ship.

Dutch

wars of

independ-

1

plainly ¢ nee

England in the Renais- sance

Combined influences of Renais- sance and Reforma- tion.

Arts,

letters, and the drama.

RENAISSANCE

shed, cost the nation comparatively little disturbance. | Humanism, before it affected the bulk of the 'English

people, had already permeated Italian and French litera- ture. Classical erudition had been adapted to the needs of modern thought. The hard work of collecting, print- ing, annotating, and translating Greek and Latin authors had been accomplished. The masterpieces of antiquity had been interpreted and made intelligible. Much of the learning popularized by our poets and dramatists was | derived at second hand from modern literature. This | does not mean that England was deficient in ripe and | sound scholars. More, Colet, Ascham, Cheke, Camden | were men whose familiarity with the classics was both. intimate and easy. Public schools and universities con- | formed to the modern methods of study ; nor were there wanting opportunities for youths of humble origin to obtain an education which placed them on a level with Italian scholars. The single case of Ben Jonson suff- ciently proves this. Yet learning did not at this epoch | become a marked speciality in England. There was no class corresponding to the humanists. It should also be | remembered that the best works of Italian literature were introduced into Great Britain

together with the classics. Phaer's Virgil, Chapman's Homer, Ilarrington's Orlando, Marlowe's Hero and Leander, Fairfax's Jerusalem Delivered, North's Plutarch, Hoby's Courtier—to mention only a few | examples—placed English readers simultaneously in pos- session of the most eminent and representative works of Greece, Rome, and Italy. At the same time Spanish | influences reached them through the imitators of Guevara and the dramatists; French influences in the versions of romances ; German influences in popular translations of | the Faust legend, FZulenspiegel, and similar productions. | The authorized version of the Bible had also been recently

given to the people,—so that almost at the same period of

time England obtained in the vernacular an extensive

library of ancient and modern authors. This was a privi-

lege enjoyed in like measure by no other nation. It suffi. | ciently accounts for the richness and variety of Elizabethan literature, and for the enthusiasm with which the English language was cultivated.

Speaking strictly, England borrowed little in the region | of the arts from other nations, and developed still less that was original. What is called Jacobean architecture marks | indeed an interesting stage in the transition from the Gothic style. But, compared with Italian, French, Spanish, German, and Flemish work of a like period, it is both | timid and dry. Sculpture was represented in London for a brief space by Torrigiani ; painting by Holbein and Antonio More; music by Italians and Frenchmen of the Chapel Royal. But no Englishmen rose to European eminence in these departments. With literature the case was very different. Wyat and Surrey began by engrafting | the forms and graces of Italian poetry upon the native | stock. They introduced the sonnet and blank verse. Sidney followed with the sestine and terza rima and with | various experiments in classic metres, none of which took root on English soil. The translators handled the octave stanza. Marlowe gave new vigour to the couplet. The first period of the English Renaissance was one of imita- tion and assimilation. Academies after the Italian type were founded. Tragedies in the style of Seneca, rivalling Italian and French

dramas of the epoch, were produced, Attempts to Latinize ancestral rhythms, similar to those which had failed in Italy and France, were made. Tenta-_ tive essays in criticism and dissertations on the art of : poetry abounded. It seemed as though the Renaissance ran a risk of being throttled in its cradle by superfluity of | foreign and pedantic nutriment. But the natural vigour |

of the English genius resisted influences alien to itself, |

_and Spain, the mysteries

indefinite period of time. – possible upon the lines laid down at the outset, where it was explained why the term Renaissance cannot now be sance.

393

and showed a robust capacity for digesting the varied diet offered to it. As there was nothing despotic in the temper of the ruling classes, nothing oppressive in English culture, the literature of that age evolved itself freely from the people. It was under these conditions that Spenser gave his romantic-epic to the world, a poem which derived its allegory from the Middle Ages, its decorative richness from the Italian Renaissance, its sweetness, purity, har- mony, and imaginative splendour from the most poetic nation of the modern world. Under the same conditions the Elizabethan drama, which in its totality is the real exponent of the English Renaissance, came into existence. This drama very early freed itself from the pseudo-classic mannerism which imposed on taste in Italy arid France. Depicting feudalism in the vivid colours of an age at war with feudal institutions, breathing into antique histories the breath of actual life, embracing the romance of Italy of German legend, the fictions of poetic fancy and the facts of daily life, humours of the moment and abstractions of philosophical speculation, in one homogeneous amalgam instinct with intense vitality, this extraordinary birth of time, with Shakespeare for the master of all ages, left a monument of the Renaissance unrivalled for pure creative power by any other product of that epoch. To complete the sketch, we must set Bacon, the expositor of modern scientific method, beside Spenser and Shakespeare, as the third

representative of the Renaissance in England. Nor should Raleigh, Drake, Hawkins, the semi-buccaneer explorers of the ocean, be

omitted. They, following the lead of Portuguese and English Spaniards, combating the Counter-Reformation on the seas, Teaction

opened for England her career of colonization and planta-

tion. All this while the political policy of Tudors and cism, Stewarts tended towards monarchical absolutism, while monarch- the Reformation in England, modified by contact with ical ab- the Low Countries during their struggles, was narrowing eaten, Puritanism indicated Renais. a revolt of the religious conscience of the nation against sance the arts and manners of the Renaissance, against the culture.

into strict reactionary intolerance.

encroachments of belligerent Catholicism, against the corrupt and Italianated court of James I. against the absolutist pretensions of his son Charles. In its final manifestation during the Commonwealth, Puritanism won a transient victory over the mundane forces of both Reformation and Renaissance, as these had taken shape in England. It also secured the eventual triumph of con- stitutional independence. Milton, the greatest humanistic poet of the English race, lent his pen and moral energies during the best years of his life to securing that principle on which modern political systems at present rest. Thus the geographical isolation of England, and the comparatively

_ late adoption by the English of matured Italian and Cer-

man influences, give peculiar complexity to the phenomena of Reformation and Renaissance simultaneously developed on our island. The period of our history between 1536 and 1642 shows how difficult it is to separate these two factors

| in the re-birth of Europe, both of which contributed so

powerfully to the formation of modern English nationality.

It has been impossible to avoid an air of superficiality, New and the repetition of facts known to every schoolboy, in political this sketch of so complicated a subject as the Renaissance,— Télations

embracing many nations, a great variety of topics, and an Yet no other treatment was

confined to the Revival of Learning and the effect of antique

studies upon literary and artistic ideals. The purpose of

this article has been to show that, while the Renaissance

implied a new way of regarding the material world and

human nature, a new conception of man's destiny and XX. — 50

duties on this planet, a new culture and new intellectual perceptions penetrating every sphere of thought and energy, it also involved new reciprocal relations between the mem- bers of the European group of nations. The Renaissance closed the Middle Ages and opened the modern era,—not merely because the mental and moral ideas which then sprang into activity and owed their force in large measure to the revival of classical learning were opposed to medizval modes of thinking and feeling, but also because the politi-

cal and international relations specific to it as an age |

were at variance with fundamental theories of the past. Instead of empire and church, the sun and moon of the medizeval system, a federation of peoples, separate in type and divergent in interests, yet bound together by common tendencies, common culture, and common efforts, caine into existence. For obedience to central authority was substituted balance of power. Henceforth the hegemony of Europe attached to no crown imperial or papal, but to the nation which was capable of winning it, in

the spiritual region by mental ascendency, and in the temporal by force. Conservae That this is the right way of regarding the subject

eae. appears from the events of the first two decades of the S- sive

parties attained its highest point in Italy. Luther published his in modern theses in 1517, sixty-four years after the fall of Constanti- Europe. nople, twenty-three years after the expedition of Charles VIII. to Naples, ten years before the sack of Rome, at a moment when France, Spain, and England had only felt the influences of Italian culture but feebly. From that date forward two parties wrestled for supremacy in Europe, to which may be given the familiar names of Liberalism and Conservatism, the party of progress and the party of established institutions. The triumph of the former was most signal among the Teutonic peoples. The Latin races, championed by Spain and supported by the Papacy, fought the battle of the latter, and succeeded for a time in rolling

16th century, those years in which the humanistic revival |

back the tide of revolutionary conquest. Meanwhile that liberal culture which had been created for Europe by the Italians before the contest of the Reformation began con- tinued to spread, although it was stifled in Italy and Spain, retarded in France and the Low Countries, well nigh extir- pated by wars in Germany, and diverted from its course in England by the counter-movement of Puritanism. The auto da fés of Seville and Madrid, the flames to which Bruno, Dolet, and Paleario were flung, the dungeon of Campanella and the seclusion of Galileo, the massacre of St Bartholomew and the faggots of Smithfield, the desolated — plains of Germany and the cruelties of Alva in the Nether- lands, disillusioned Europe of those golden dreams which had arisen in the earlier days of humanism, and which had been so pleasantly indulged by Rabelais. In truth the Re- naissance was ruled by no Astrea redux, but rather by a severe spirit which brought not peace but a sword, remind- ing men of sternest duties, testing what of moral force and tenacity was in them, compelling them to strike for the old order or the new, suffering no lukewarm halting between two opinions. 'That, in spite of retardation and retro- gression, the old order of ideas should have yielded to the new all over Europe,—that science should have won firm standing-ground, and

political liberty should have struggled through those birth-throes of its origin,—was in the nature of things. Had this not been, the Renaissance or re-birth of Europe would be a term without a meaning.

Literature.—The special articles on the several arts and the | literatures of modern Europe, and on the biographies of great men mentioned in this essay, will give details of necessity here omitted. | It may be useful to indicate a few works upon the Renaissance in ‘ general, Burekhardt’s Die Cultur der Renaissanee in Italien, | Michelet’s ‘Renaissance ” (7th vol. of Histoire de Franee), Voigt’s Wiederbelebung des Classisechen Alterthums ; Symonds’s Renaissance in Italy, Mare Monnier’s Renaissanee de Dante & Luther, Miintz’s Précurseurs de la Renaissaneeand Renaissance en Italie et en Franee, and Geiger’s Humanismus und Renaissanee in Italien und Deutseh- land are among the most comprchensive. (otk. 82)

RENAIX, a manufacturing town of Belgium, in the province of East Flanders, eight miles by rail south of Oudenarde, with a communal population of 14,089 in 1876. It contains the ruins of a castle built in 1638 by Count John of Nassau-Siegen, and a church with the tomb of St Hermes, to whom it is dedicated.

RENAUDOT, Evskpe (1646-1720), theologian and

Orientalist, was born in Paris in 1646, and was educated |

for the church. Notwithstanding his taste for theology and his title of abbé, he never took orders, and much of his life was spent at the French court, where he attracted the notice of Colbert and was often employed in con- fidential affairs. The unusual learning in Eastern tongues which he had acquired in his youth and continued to maintain amidst the distractions of court life did not bear fruit till he was sixty-two years old. His best-known books, which are still valuable, are the Historia Patri- archarum Alexandrinorum (Paris, 1713), and the collection of Eastern liturgies (2 vols., 1715-16). The latter work was designed to supply proofs of the “perpetuity of the faith” of the church on the subject of the sacraments, the topic about which most of his theological writings turned, and which was then, in consequence of the controversies attaching to Arnauld’s Perpétuité de la Foi, a burning one between French Catholics

and Protestants. Rénaudot was not a very fair controversialist, but his learning and industry are unquestionable, and his piety shone the more

brightly that it did not withdraw itself from contact with |

the world. Hc died in 1720. RENDSBURG, a town of Prussia, in the province of

sandy district, 20 miles to the west of Kiel. It consists of three parts:—the crowded Altstadt, on an island in the Eider ; the Neuwerk, on the south bank of the river; and the Kronwerk, on the north bank. Rendsburg is the chief _ place in the basin of the Hider, and when in the possession of Denmark was maintained as a strong fortress, guarding the approach to the Cimbric peninsula. Its present import- ance, however, rests on the commercial facilities afforded by its connexion with the North Sea and the Baltic through the Eider and the Eider Canal, by which a brisk transit trade is carried on in grain, timber, Swedish iron, and coals. The principal industries are cotton-weaving, tanning, and the manufacture of artificial manures; and there isa large iron foundry in the immediate neighbourhood. 'The popu- lation in 1880 was 12,776, including a strong garrison.

The town of Rendsburg came into existenee under the shelter of a castle founded by the Danes about the year 1100 on an island of the Eider, and was at first an object of dispute between the Danish kings and the counts of Holstein. In 1252 it was finally adjudged to the latter, and it has since shared their fortunes. The town was surrounded with ramparts in 1539, but the important fortifications of the Kronwerk were not constructed till the end of the 17th century. During the Thirty Years' War Rendsburg was taken both by the Imperialists and the Swedes, but_in 1645 it suecessfully resisted a seeond siege by the latter. The war of 1848-50 began with the capture of Rendsburg by the Holsteiners by a coup de main, and it formed the centre of the German opera- tions. On the departure of the German troops in 1852 the Danes at ouce set to work to demolish the fortifications.

RENE I. (1409-1480), duke of Anjou, count of Provence, and titular king of Naples, was the second son of Louis II. of Aragon, king of Naples, and

Yolande,

Schleswig-Holstein, is situated on the Eider, in a flat and | daughter of John L of Aragon, and was born 16th

REN—REN

Although his father was crowned king of | the county, and follows a general north-easterly course to its junc-

January 1409. Naples at Avignon by Pope Clement VII. in 1384, he was unable to make good his claims. After his death Louis III., the elder son, assumed the title, and in 1423 was adopted by Johanna II. of Naples, and obtained possession of the throne. Dying 15th November 1434, he left his claims'to his brother René, who was also appointed heir by Johanna II. at her death in the following year. Meantime René had been imprisoned by the count of Vaudemont for contesting his claims to the dukedom of Lorraine, and therefore appointed his wife Isabella regent in his stead. In 1437 he procured his freedom and the acknowledgment of his right to Lorraine for 400,000 florins, and in the following year landed at Naples and rejoined Isabella. Finding, however, that the task of conquering the kingdom from Alphonso of Aragon was beyond his power, he returned in 1442 to Lorraine, which he afterwards gave over to his son John, titular duke of Calabria. In 1444 he took part at Tours in the peace negotiations between England and France; and, to cement the alliance, Henry VI. espoused his daughter Margaret of Anjou. Subsequently he ceased to concern himself with politics, and devoted his chief attention to literature. He also took a special interest in painting and sculpture, although there appears to have been no foundation for the statement that he practised either of these arts. His closing years were spent in the company of his daughter the exiled queen. He died 10th July 1480.

His @uvres Completes, with a biography and notes by the count of Quatrebarbes, were published at Paris, 4 vols., 1844-46. See also De Villencuve-Bargemont, Histoire de René d' Anjou, 8 vols., Paris, 1825 ; Renouvier, Les peintres et les enlumineurs du rot René, 1851; and Lecoy de la Marche, Le roi René, 2 vols., Paris, 1875.

RENFREW, a county of Scotland, skirting the Firth of Clyde, lies between 55° 40’ 34” and 55° 57’ 45” N. lat, and between 4° 13’ and 4° 54’ W. long., and is bounded N. by the Clyde, N.E. by Dumbarton and by Lanark, E. by Lanark, 8. by Ayr, and W. by the Firth of Clyde. Its greatest length from west-north-west to east-south-east is 304 miles, and its greatest breadth at right angles to this 13} miles. The area is 253°793 square miles or 162,427°958 acres, of which 2021:179 acres are foreshore and 3621°342 are water. Except a small portion opposite the burgh of Renfrew, the whole county lies to the south of the Clyde. Twenty-seventh among the Scottish counties as regards extent, it is fifth in point of population, and Midlothian alone is as densely populated, the number of inhabitants to the square mile in 1881 having been 1075 in both. For local purposes the county is divided into an upper and a lower ward, the former embracing the two-thirds lying to the east, and having its district centre at Paisley, while the latter contains the parishes of Innerkip, Greenock, Port Glasgow, and Kilmalcolm, and has its dis- trict centre at Greenock. The southern border and western part of the county are hilly, but none of the heights rise very much above sea-level, the highest points being Misty Law (1663), East Girt Hill (1673), Hill of Stake (1711), and Burnt Hill (1572), all along the border of Ayrshire. The central part is undulating and, as much of the higher portion of it is well wooded, the scenery is in some places picturesque. Along the greater part of the northern border is a flat tract of clayey carse-land known locally as the “laich lands,” and very fertile in favourable seasons.

The principal river is the Clyde, which forms a considerable portion of the northern boundary ; and the other chief streams are the White Cart, Black Cart, and Gryfe. The first has its chief sources in the extreme south-east of the county, and flows north- ward—forming for most of the way the boundary with Lanarkshire— to Catheart, south of Glasgow, whence it has a westerly course to Paisley, and then again a northerly course till it joins the Clyde a

mile north-west of the burgh of Renfrew. The Black Cart issues from Castle Semple Loch near the centre of the southern border of

tion with the White Cart at Inchinnan church a mile west of the burgh of Renfrew. Its most important headwater is the river Calder, which, with smaller streams flowing to it, drains a con- siderable portion of the southern border and flows into Castle Semple Loch at Lochwinnoch. The Gryfe, which, with a large number of streams flowing to it, drains nearly all the western half of the county, risesat Gryfe Reservoir, 24 miles south of Greenock, and has a winding easterly course to its junction with the Black Cart at Walkinshaw, 2 miles north-west of Paisley. A number of smaller streams flow direct to the Clyde, the most important being the Kip and the Kelly Burn in the west of the county. The principal lochs are Loch Thom and Gryfe Reservoir, 24 miles south of Greenock; Castle Semple Loch, near the centre of the southern border ; Loug Loch and Loch Goin, farther east near the same border; and Balgray and Glen Reservoirs, connected with the Glasgow water supply near the centre of the eastern part of the county. The Glasgow, Paisley, and Johnstone Canal, which for- merly united these three towns, has since 1882 been laid dry along ine greater part of its course and the bed converted into a railway ine.

The rocks throughout the county are Carbonifcrous, and almost the whole of the Lower Carboniferous or Calciferous Sandstone series is here represented by a thick set of volcanic deposits. The oldest beds are the red sandstones, cornstones, and conglomerates which oceupy the extreme west corner between Innerkip and Loch Thom. Overlying these is the upper portion of the Lower Car- boniferous—the cement-stone group—which runs from the hills behind Greenock on the west, south-eastward by the high ground south of Paisley, and so on to the south-east corner of the county and thence into Lanarkshire. The cement-stones form the under- lying deposits over nearly two-thirds of the county to the south. west and west ; but, though the base of this subdivision here con- sists of the usual white sandstones and cement-stones, yet the great mass of the rocks are contemporancous lava-flows—basalts, mela- phyres, and porphyrites—with interbedded tuffs and volcanic agglomerates which have all issued from a line of vents the posi- tions of which may still be traced by the volcanic necks which remain at several points. In the south-east there are intercalated beds of sandstone, shale, and impure limestone. In some places this series of beds passes conformably up into

the overlying Car- boniferous Limestone series, which occupies a basin covering nearly one-third of the county to the north-east ; but the two subdivisions are oftener brought into contact by faults, a double line of which along the valley of the Black Cart brings a narrow tract of the limestones right across the volcanic beds just described. The base of the Carboniferous Limestone subdivision cousists of limestones, the middle portion of a series of valuable scams of coal and iron- stone, which are extensively worked, and the upper part of lime- stones. Masses of intrusive voleanie rocks occur to the south of Johnstone and the north-east of Paisley, and to the north of John- stone and north-west of Paisley are oil-producing shales, which are worked at Clippens and Walkinshaw. Near Pollokshields, at Thornliebank, and to the east of Barrhead there are small outliers of millstone grit consisting of yellow sandstones ; and along the extreme north-east corner of the county to the south of Glasgow the true Coal Measures of the great Lanarkshire and Stirlingshire basin are brought in by a fault which throws them down against the Carboniferous Limestone series. Volcanic dykes of Tertiary age run across the older rocks at various points, some very well marked examples occurring near the centre of the southern border. The Glacial deposits are well marked and interesting, the clays at Jordanhill to the north of the Clyde and near Paisley having yielded numerous species of Foraminifera and arctic shells. The beds of economic value are all extensively worked. In 1882 the eighteen collieries within the county produced 114,324 tons of coal out of a total of 20,515,134 tons for all Scotland, 164,523 tons of ironstone out of a total of 2,404,177 tons, 90,804 tons of cil-shale out of a total of 994,487 tons, and 22,554 tons of fireclay out of a total of 435,457 tons. Limestones are also quarricd in large quantities for smelting purposes and for the manufacture of lime, — one thin but valuable Dee at Orchard, 4 miles south of Glasgow, producing a cement that "sets" under water. Copperas is obtained from the iron pyrites got in the shale, and at one time alum-shale was worked at Hurlet in the north-east and copper in the voleanic rocks about Lochwinnoch. ;

Farming operations do not differ in detail from those carried _on in the adjoining middle and lower wards of Lanarkshire. The climate is very variable ; and, as the prevailing west and south-west winds come in from the Atlantic warm and full of moisture, con- tact with the colder land

causes very heavy rains, and the western part of Renfrewshire is one of the wettest districts in Scotland, the mean annual rainfall amounting to over 60 inehes. The mean annual temperature is about 48°. The hilly district has a good deal of moss and moorland, but the soil, which is a light earth, is also over considerable areas deep enough to produce good pasture. In the undulating middle district the soilis generally deeper and

396

better, particularly along the streams, where there are tracts of good |

haughland, but it is also in many places thin and poor. There is a considerable amount of pasture, and the principal crops are oats and barley. On the flat lands adjoining the Clyde the soil is a

rich alluvium which, except when soured by excessive rain, pro-—

| 60 Azresand under.} 50 to 100 Acres. | | No. Acres.

299 329

No, Acres.

300 326

No. Acres.

1875 1880

45,298

23,094 50,830

25,078

688 581

10,633 8,904

According to the agricultural returns for 1884 the total area under crops was 95,353, a percentage of 60°8 (57°3 in 1874). The area under corn crops in 1884 was 17,502 acres; under green crops, 6,683 acres; under rotation of grasses, 22,997 acres ; under permanent pasture, 47,880 acres; orchards and market-gardens, 158 acres ; and woodland, 5424. Of the corn land more than four-fifths was under oats, which occupied 14,182 acres, while 2229 were under wheat, and only 178 under barley. Potatoes were grown on 4351 acres, and turnips and swedes on 2332; while under beans, rye, vetches, &c., there are about 1300 acres annually. The total number of horses in 1884 was 3331; the number of cattle to every 100 acres under cultivation was 28°8, the average for Scotland being 23°6. The large towns in the county and neighbourhood account for a great number of cattle being kept for dairy and feeding purposes. The number of sheep to every 100 acres under cultivation was 33°1, the average for Scotland being 145°1. The number of pigs was 1952. According to the Miscellaneous Statistics of the United Kingdom (1879) 5735 proprietors owned 155,321 acres with an estimated gross rental of £990,898. Sir M. R. Shaw Stewart possessed 24,951 acres, Allan Gilmour of Eaglesham 16,516, A, A. Spiers of Elderslie 11,259, H. Lee Harvey of Castlesemple 6500, Sir W. Stirling Maxwell 4778, Lord Blantyre 4449, Duncan Darroch of Gourock 4248, and W. Mure of Caldwell 3624.

Besides the coal, iron, and oil industries already mentioned, the county has extensive, varied, and valuable manufactures, of which the chicf are noticed in the separate articles on Greenock and Paisley. Elsewhere there are chemical works, engineering works, foundries, and bleaching, dyeing, and weaving works. 'here are throughout the shire a large tt ar of excellent roads; and numer- ous lines and branches of the Caledonian and the Glasgowand South- Western systems afford ample railway communication along the centre, north, and west fdr both general traffic and minerals. The population has risen from 78,501 in 1801 to 216,947 in 1871 and to 263,374 in 1881 (126,743 males, 136,631 females), more than 100,000 of the inercase having taken place between 1851 and 1881. Of the whole number 49,681 men Enel 21,734 women were engaged in industrial handicrafts or dealt in manufactured substances, and of these 7741 men and 15,547 women were connected with the making of textile

fabrics, while 7986 men and 172 women were connected with the working of mineral substanccs.

The Redistribution Act passed in 1885 extended the parliament- ary representation of the county from one totwo members, The only royal burgh is Renfrew, which is separately noticed, ag are also the parliamentary burghs of Greenock and Paisley. The county also contains part of the south side of Glasgow and its suburbs, the ptt SE burgh of Port Glasgow, the police burghs of Pollokshaws, Gourock, and Johnstone, and a number of small towns and villages.

Historically Renfrewshire first appears as part of the territory of the Damnonii, and thcreafter it was part of the British kingdom of Strathclyde. The western part, then known as Strathgryfe, was granted by David I. to Walter, the first high steward of Scotland, and the Stewarts had long a local connexion with it. Somerled, Lord of the Isles, was defeated and slain in the neighbourhood of the burgh of Renfrew in 1164 ; and Marjory Bruce is said to have been killed by a fall from her horse at Knock Hill between Paisley and Renfrew in 1316. In 1404 the county, which had previously formed part of Lanark, was erected into a separate jurisdiction by Robert III., who created his son James baron of Renfrew, a title still held by the eldest son of the reigning sovereign. In the end of the 17th century the district was famous for its witches ; and in 1685, after the failure of the earl of Argyll's ill-conducted enter- et the carl himself was taken prisoner on the bank of the

White Cart opposite Inchinnan church, at the spot marked by the " Argyll Stone," now within the policics of Blythswood House.

Sce Crawfurd, Description of the Shire of Renfrew (17 10); Hamilton of Wishaw, Description of the Sheriffdom of Lanark and Renfrew (Maitland Club, 1831); Hector, Selections from the Judicial Records of Renfrewshire (1876-78); and A History of the Witches of Renfrewshire (Paisley, 1809 and 1877).

RENFREW, a royal and parliamentary burgh and the county town of the above county, is situated in the north- east near the south bank of the

Clyde, connected with which isa small harbour. The main part of the town is gathered round four streets branching out from an open

RE N—

100 to 300 Acres. | 300 to 500 Acres.

hE a

duces very heavy crops, a large extent being unde: wheat. Although mincral workings have injured agriculture in several localities, the

large towns in the connty and neighbourhood have stimulated im-

provements, and the arable area has steadily increased. The follow-

ing table gives a classification of holdings in 1875 and 1880 :—

500 to 1000 Acres. Total,

Above 1000 Acres.

Acres. No.

anc, © 1311

1031 1254

Space called the cross. The town-hall, erected in 1871-73, and restored after partial destruction by fire in 1878, has a massive square tower rising to a height of 105 feet. The railway station is 6 miles west of Glasgow. The industries are connected with two shipbuilding yards, a chemical work, a forge, a dyework, and weaving. Popula- tion in 1881, 5115.

The town, which is spoken of as a burgh in 1160, scems to have been in the 16th and carly in the 17th century the principal port on the Clyde, one branch of whicli ran in a channel, now silted up, close behind the houses on the north side of High Street. The original castle of the Stewards seems to have stood on the island called " The King's Inch," between the

two channels of the river. Renfrew is one of the Kilmarnock group of parliamentary burghs,

RENI, Gurpo (1575-1642), a prime master in the Bolognese school of painting, and one of the most admired artists of the period of incipient decadence in Italy, was born at Calvenzano near Bologna on 4th November 1575. He is most usually named Guido. His father was a musician of repute, a player on the flageolet; he wished to bring the lad up to perform on the harpsichord. Ata very childish age, however, Guido displayed a determined bent towards the art of form, scribbling some attempt at a drawing here, there, and everywhere. He was only nine years of age when Denis Calvart took notice of him, received him into his academy of design by the father's permission, and rapidly brought him forward, so that by the age of thirteen Guido had already attained marked proficiency. Albani and Domenichino became soon after- wards pupils in the same academy. With Albani Guido was very intimate up to the earlier period of manhood, but they afterwards became rivals, both as painters and as heads of ateliers, with a good deal of asperity on Albani's part ; Domenichino was also pitted against Reni by the policy of Annibale Caracci. Guido was still in the academy of Calvart when he began frequenting the opposi- tion school kept by Lodovico Caracci, whose style, far in advance of that of the Flemish painter, he dallied with. This exasperated Calvart. Him Guido, not yet twenty years of age, cheerfully quitted, transferring himself openly to the Caracci academy, in which he soon became prominent, being equally skilful and ambitious. He had not been a year with the Caracci when a work of his excited the wonder of Agostino and the jealousy of Annibale. Lodovico cherished him, and frequently painted him as an angel, for the youthful Reni was extremely handsome. After a while, however, Lodovico also felt himself nettled, and he patronized the competing talents of Guercino, On one occasion Guido had made a copy of Annibale's Descent from the Cross; Annibale was asked to retouch it, and, finding nothing to do, exclaimed pettishly, "He knows more than enough" ("Costui ne sa troppo"). On another occasion Lodovico, consulted as umpire, lowered a price which Reni asked for an early picture. This slight determined the young man to bea pupil no more. He left the Caracci, and started on his own account as a competitor in the

race for patronage and fame. A renowned work, the story of Callisto and Diana, had been completed before he left.

Guido was faithful to the eclectic principle of the Bolognese school of painting. He had appropriated some-

thing from Calvart, much more from Lodovico Caracci ; he studied with much zest after Albert Diirer ; he adopted the massive, sombre, and partly uncouth manner of Caravaggio. One day Annibale Caracci made the remark that a style might be formed reversing that of Caravaggio in such matters as the ponderous shadows and the gross common forms; this observation germinated in Guido's mind, and he endeavoured after some such style, aiming constantly at suavity. Towards 1602 he went to Rome with Albani, and Rome remained his headquarters for twenty years. Here, in the pontificate of Paul V. (Borghese), he was greatly noted and distinguished. In the garden-house of the Rospigliosi Palace he painted the vast fresco which is justly regarded as his masterpiece— Pheebus and the Hours preceded by Aurora. This exhibits his second manner, in which he had deviated far indeed from the promptings of Caravaggio. He founded now chiefly upon the antique, more especially the Niobe group and the Venus de' Medici, modified by suggestions from Raphael, Correggio, Parmigiano, and Paul Veronese. Of this last painter, although on the whole he did not get much from him, Guido was a particular admirer; he used to say that he would rather have been Paul Veronese than any other master—Paul was more nature than art. The Aurora is beyond doubt a work of pre-eminent beauty and attainment; it is stamped with pleasurable dignity, and, without being effeminate, has a more uniform aim after graceful selectness than can readily be traced in previous painters, greatly superior though some of them had been in impulse and personal fervour of genius. The pontifical chapel of Montecavallo was assigned to Reni to paint ; but, being straitened in payments by the ministers, the artist made off to Bologna. He was fetched back by Paul V. with ceremonious éclat, and lodging, living, and equipage were supplied to him. At another time he migrated from Rome to Naples, having received a commis- sion to paint the chapel of S. Gennaro. The

notorious cabal of three painters resident in Naples—-Corenzio, Caracciolo, and Ribera—offered, however, as stiff an opposition to Guido as to some other interlopers who preceded and succeeded him. They gave his servant a beating by the hands of two unknown bullies, and sent by him a message to his master to depart or prepare for death ; Guido waited for no second warning, and departed. He now returned to Rome; but he finally left that city abruptly, in the pontificate of Urban VIII., in consequence of an offensive reprimand administered to him by Cardinal Spinola. He had received an advance of 400 scudi on account of an altarpiece for St Peter's, but after some lapse of years had made no beginning with the work. A broad reminder from the cardinal put Reni on his mettle; he re- turned the 400 scudi, quitted Rome within a few days, and steadily resisted all attempts at recall. He now resettled in Bologna. He had taught as well as painted in Rome, and he left pupils behind him; but on the whole he did not stamp any great mark upon the Roman school of painting, apart from his own numerous works in the papal city.

In Bologna Guido lived in great splendour, and estab- lished a celebrated school, numbering more than two hundred scholars. He himself drew in it, even down to his latest years. On first returning to this city, he charged about £21 for a full-length figure (mere portraits are not here in question), half this sum for a half-length, and £5 for a head. These prices must be regarded as handsome, when we consider that Domenichino about the same time received only £10, 10s. for his very large and celebrated picture, the Last Communion of St Jerome. But Guido's reputation was still on the increase, and in process of time he quintupled his prices. He now left Bologna hardly at all; in one instance, however, he went

off to Ravenna, and, along with three pupils, he painted the chapel in the cathedral with his admired picture of the Israelites Gathering Manna. His shining prosperity was not to last till the end. Guido was dissipated, generously but indiscriminately profuse, and an inveterate gambler. The gambling propensity had been his from youth, but until he became elderly it did not noticeably damage his fortunes. It grew upon him, and in a

couple of evenings he lost the enormous sum of 14,400 scudi. The vice told still more ruinously on his art than on his character. In his decline he sold his time at so much per hour to certain picture dealers; one of them, the Shylock of his craft, would stand by, watch in hand, and see him work. Half-heartedness, half-performance, blighted his product : self-repetition and mere mannerism, with affecta- tion for sentiment and vapidity for beauty, became the art of Guido. Some of these trade-works, heads or half- figures, were turned out in three hours or even less. It is said that, tardily wise, Reni left off gambling for nearly two years ; at last he relapsed, and his relapse was followed not long afterwards by his death, caused by malignant fever. This event took place in Bologna on 18th August 1642 ; he died in debt, but was buried with great pomp in the church of 8. Domenico,

Guido was personally modest, although he valued himself on his position in the art, and would tolerate no slight in that relation ; he was extremely upright, temperate in diet, niece in his person and his dress. He was fond of stately houses, but could feel also the eharm of solitude. In his temper there was a large amount of suspiciousness; and the jealousy which his abilities and his sueeesses exeited, now from the Caraeci, now from Albani, now from the monopolizing league of Neapolitan painters, may naturally have kept this feeling in aetive exercise. Of his numerous scholars, Simone Contarini, named I] Pesarese, counts as the most distin-guished ; he pas an admirable head of Reni, now in the Bolognese Gallery. The portrait inthe Uffizi Gallery of Florence is from Reni's own hand. Two other good seholars were Giacomo Semenza and Francesco Gessi.

The eharacter of Guido's art is so well known as hardly to call for detailed analysis, beyond what we have already intimated. His most eharaeteristie style exhibits a prepense ideal, of form rather than character, with a slight mode of handling, and silvery, some- what'cold, colour. In working from the nude he aimed at perfec- tion of form, especially marked in the hands and feet. But he was far from always going to choice nature for his model; he trans- muted ad libitwm, and painted, it is averred, a Magdalene of demonstrative eharms from a vulgar-looking colour-grinder. His best works have beauty, great amenity,

artistie feeling, and high aecomplishment of manner, all alloyed hy a eertain core of eommon- plaee ; in the worst pietures the eommonplace swamps everything, and Guido has flooded European galleries with trashy and empty pretentiousness, all the more noxious in that its apparent grace of sentiment and form misleads the unwary into approval, and the dilettante dabbler into eheap raptures. Both in Rome and where-ever else he worked he introdueed inereased softness of style, which was then designated as the modern method. His pictures are mostly Seriptural or mythologie in subjeet, and between two and three hundred of them are to be found in various European eolleetions—more than a hundred of these containing life-sized figures. The portraits which he executed are few, —those of Sixtus V., Cardinal Spada, and the so-ealled Beatriee Cenei being among the most noticeable. The identity of the last-named portrait is very dubious; it certainly cannot have been painted direet from Beatrice, who had been exeeuted in Rome before Guido ever resided there. Many etehings are attributed to him—some from his own works, and some after other masters ; they are spirited, but rather negligent. .

Of other works not already noticed, the following should be named :—in Rome (the Vatiean), the Crucifixion of St Peter, an example of the painter's earlier manner ; in Forli, the Coneeption; in Bologna, the Alms of St Roch (early), the Massacre of the Innoeents, and the Pieta, or Lament over the Body of Christ (in the chureh of the Mendicanti), whieh is by many regarded as Guido's prime exeeutive work; in the Dresden Gallery, an Eece Homo ; in Milan (Brera Gallery), Saints Peter and Paul ; in Genoa (chureh of S. Ambrogio), the Assumption of the Virgin; in the Berlin Gallery, St Paul the Hermit and St Anthony in the Wilderness. The celebrated picture of Fortune (in the Capitol) is one of Reni's finest treatments of female form; as a speciinen of male form, the Samson Drinking from the Jawbone of an Ass (Turin Gallery) might be named beside it. One of his latest works of mark is the

Ariadne, which used to be in the Gallery of the Capitol. The Louvre contains twenty of his pictures, the National Gallery of London seven, and others were once there, now removed to other public collections. The

most interesting of the seven is the small Coronation of the Virgin, painted on copper, an elegantly finished work, more pretty than beautiful. It was probably painted before the master quitted Bologna for Rome.

Vor the life and works of Reni, see Passeri, Vite de' Pitiori, and Malvasia, Felsina Pittrice ; also Lanzi, Storia Pittorica. CW. M. R

RENNELL, James (1742-1830), probably the most celebrated of English geographers, was born on 3d Decem- ber 1742, near Chudleigh in Devonshire, where his father John Rennell, a man apparently of gentle blood, was the owner of a small farm called Waddon.! The register of Chudleigh records the baptism of James Rennell on 21st December. John Rennell, who had married Ann Clark in 1738, seems to have fallen into embarrassed circumstances, and to have taken service in the artillery, with which he served in the duke of Cumberland's campaign in Flanders of 1747-48. The date of his death is uncertain, but he appears never to have rejoined his family. Asa boy the son James found a valuable friend in the then vicar of Chudleigh, Gilbert Burrington, by whose advice and assistance he entered the navy in the beginning of 1756. Throughout his Indian career Rennell kept up a regular correspondence with Mr Burrington, and always regarded him with affection and gratitude.

The earliest of Rennell's existing letters show him, in March 1758, as an acting midshipman on board the " Bril- liant," 36, Captain Parker, afterwards the famous Admiral Sir Hyde Parker, the elder of two of that name. When attached to the "Brilliant" James Rennell was present at several of those desultory expeditions against the French coast and shipping on which so much strength was squan- dered in the wars with France. Among these was a landing directed against the works and ships at Cherbourg (August 1758), and two other expeditions to the vicinity of St Malo, which were more futile, and the last of which ended somewhat disastrously. A MS. plan of the Bay of St Cast, where the re-embarkation took place (September 11, 1758), executed by James Rennell at the age of sixteen, and probably his first attempt at topographical work, is now before us. It bears the inscription " Plan of St Cas Bay, J. Rennel fect. 1758. To the Rt. Honble. Lord Howe this plan is dedicated by his obedient humble servant, J. Rennel."?

In 1760 Captain Parker, leaving the " Brilliant," took the "Norfolk" to India, and Rennell was to have gone with him, but through some accident misséd his ship and went out in the "America," 50, Captain Haldane. On reaching India he rejoined Captain Parker, now in com- mand of the "Grafton," 58, with the fleet engaged in the blockade of Pondicherry, which Coote was besieging on the landward side.

The Annual Register for 1830, ina sketch of Rennell's career, gives an anecdote for which we cannot vouch, finding no allusion to it in his letters. It is to the effect

1 There were several branches of the family round Chudleigh, and the name occurs on several monuments in Chudleigh church. Four generations of Thomas Rennells, clergymen of some note, were reckoned as relations by James Rennell :—(1) T. Rennell, fellow of Exeter College, Oxford, M.A. of 1699, rector of Bishop's Leighton ; (2) T. R., rector of Barnack, called "a very profound scholar… with a rich library ;" (8) T. R., of King's College, Cambridge, master of the Temple, and dean of Winchester; (4) T. R., editor of the British Critic, Christian advocate at Cambridge, vicar of Kensington. As Rennell calls the second his cousin, the first was probably his grandfather's brother ; he eould hardly have been his father's brother on account of the dates,

2 He writes the name indifferently Rennel and Rennell till February 2, 1760, when he says to Mr Burrington :—'"' You desired that in future I would write my name with a double Z. I shall in the future, but am inclined to think it will be of little use to me."' There is,

we believe, here some reference to the clerical relations, whom he at that time thought neglectful.

that, some sloops of war belonging to the enemy being moored in shallow water, Rennell asked the use of a boat. Accompanied by one sailor he reconnoitred the sloops, and ascertained what he had surmised to be true, viz. that owing to an unusually high tide it was possible to reach those vessels. This information was acted on with com- plete success. Whatever

amount of truth there may be in this anecdote, we know, at least, from his letters that he took part in the cutting out of the "Baleine" and "Hermione," the former a 40-gun frigate, the latter an armed Indiaman, both at anchor before Pondicherry, within a half musket-shot of the place, and that he was a volunteer in one of the boat divisions which attacked the "Baleine." This vessel had no sails bent, and the captors, being exposed for an hour to a very heavy fire from the ramparts, lost severely.

We do not know what good guidance had first turned the lad's attention to surveying, but his letters show that he went to India provided with useful books and instru- ments, and they contain from time to time notices of various surveys executed by him, eg., of the harbour of Trinconomalé (or Trincomalee, as we now call it), and of the bay and roads of Diego Rayes,? whither the East Indian fleet had gone as the rendezvous of an intended attack on Mauritius, which did not come off.

Captain Parker appears to have been friendly to Rennell, but had little hope of obtaining promotion in the navy for him, and counselled him to try his fortune in the Company's service. Rennell acquiesced, and in the summer of 1762 went, apparently as a surveyor, on board a Company's vessel which was despatched on a reconnais- sance to Manila and the neighbouring islands. The only trace we have been able to find of this voyage consists in sundry charts and coast-views published by Alexander Dalrymple, a friend of Rennell's in after days. Such are the Bay of Camorta in the Nicobar Islands, 1762; View of Quedah; Chart of Sambeelan Islands in the Straits of Malacca, 1763 ; View of Malacca, July, 1762; Chart of Abai Harbour, on north-west of Borneo, 1762.

Of the expedition we have no particulars, but we gather that Rennell looked back on his treatment and service on board with dissatisfaction, though his performance of the duties assigned him recommended him as a man of merit to the authorities at Fort St George. He had missed a great chance in the navy, for during his absence orders came for the expedition against Manila, which ended in the capture of that place in 1762,—an expedition in which Captain Parkcr took the "Santissima Trinidad," a prize of enormous value. Rennell, however, made many friends at

Madras, and had several offers of employment, though he did not think himself at liberty to accept any till the return of Captain Parker and his final discharge from the "Grafton's" books (July 1763). ° He now obtained the command of a vessel in the Government service, but whilst she lay off Madras, shortly afterwards, a cyclone destroyed every ship save one in the roads, and Rennell's among them. Fortunately he was on shore when the gale came on; but he lost everything.

The city of Madura was then being besieged by a British force in combination with one sent by the naw4b of the Carnatic ; and Mr Palk, governor of Fort St George, employed Rennell to superintend the landing of troops and stores for that operation. For his conduct of this service he received the thanks of the Government and a handsome present. Apparently about this time*

3 From Rennell's notice of its size and position this is evidently the island now called Rodriguez, about 350 miles north-east of Mauritius.

*4 This siege of Madura belongs to an obseure passage of Indian history, an account of which must be sought in Nelson's Afanual of Madura (Madras, 1868), and Bishop Caldwell's History of Tinneveily (Madras, 1881). Mohammed Yusuf Khan, a man of great ability, who had been *' commander of all the Company's sepoys" (at Madras), and afterwards governor of Madura for the nawab and the Company, threw off his allegiance in the beginning of 1768. A joint expedition was sent against him, and for a long time had indifferent sueeess. Eventually Marehand, the chief of a French contingent in Yusuf's service, betrayed him to the English commandant, and in the latter part of 1764 it is said that he was hanged, whether by order of the Fort St George Government or of the nawab is doubtful.*

RENNELL

also he made surveys of the coast about Cape Calymere, and of the Paumben Passage. Shortly afterwards, having gone to Calcutta, he found in Captain Tinker, the officer eommanding the king's squadron there, a gentleman with whom he had been slightly acquainted in the navy. There was evidently something very eugaging in Rennell's manner, aspect, and

character, for others as well as Captain Tinker immediately endeavoured to interest in his fortunes the governor of the presidency. This was Heury Vansittart, the successor of Clive, and father of Nicolas Vansittart, who was so long chaneellor of the exehequer (1812- 1823), and died Lord Bexley. The result was the appointment of Rennell as surveyor of the E. I. Company's dominions in Bengal, '"before," as he writes, "I was scarcely apprised of the matter." A few days later he received a commission "for practitioner engineer in the citadel erecting at Caleutta near Fort William '— the fortress, in fact, now so well known by the latter name,

Rennell, in a letter announcing his appointment, calls it that of "surveyor-general," but this term is not used in the official record, dated April 9, 1764.1! The date of his commission in the eorps of engineers, as ensign (or "' practitioner engincer," as the junior rank was termed), is the same. The eorps of Bengal Engineers, which after a ereditable existence of just about a eentury was amalgamated with the Royal Engineers in 1862, was then in its infaney. Only four officers appcar as having had commissions earlier than James Rennell, though the subsequent introduction of several officers with higher rank eventually placed more than this number over his head.

Practically, though he was sometimes engaged in works of con- struction or demolition,? Rennell's-work as a surveyor oecupied the whole of his Indian service, which extended to thirteen years only. In the eourse of this employment he reduced to order and substantial accuracy the map of Bengal, and accumulated a great part of the material which he afterwards utilized in the determina- tion of all the important points embraced in the first approxi- mately correct map of India. His merits were highly appreciated, and his rise was rapid. In January 1767 his position was raised to that of surveyor-general, and at the same time he was promoted to captain.

In their letter to the court of directors, reporting this promotion, the council at Fort William say :—

"We have appointed Captain Rennell, a young man of distinguished merit in this branch, surveyor-general, and directed him to form one general chart from those alrcady made, and such as are now on hand, as they can

be collected in. This, though attended with great labour, does not prevent his prosecuting his own surveys, the fatigue of which, with the desperate wounds he has lately received in one of them, have already left him but a shattered constitution.“3

This passage refers to a memorable passage in Rennell’s career, which had nearly proved its tragical termination. Bengal proper was in those early days of the Compauy’s administration very far from being the tranquil country that we have known it for so many years (except indced during its partial share in the agitations of 1857, from the mutiny of several regiments within its bound- arics). And it was about a year before the promotion just mentioned that Rennell, on one of his surveying campaigns in northern Bengal, met with the adventure in question.

The distriets in that quarter (Purniah, Dinajpur, Rangpur, &e.) were at that time habitually ravaged by bodies of marauders, who had their headquarters in the forest-tracts at the foot of the Himalayas, and beyond British jurisdiction. From these forests they used to issue annually in large bands, plundering and levying exactions far and wide, and returning to their jungle-asylum when threatened with pursuit. A few ycars before (1763) a large body of them had plundered the city of Daeca. They professed to belong to a religious fraternity and were commonly known as the Sanydsis, a name under which they are frequently mentioned in the corre- spondence of Warren Hastings, sometimes as Fakirs, The affair took place in the semi-independent state of Kuch Behar, near the border of Bhutan. Hearing that a party of native soldiers had been sent to put down one of those bands, which had just taken and plundered the capital of the state, Rennell hastened to join the detachment with his own small eseort, and came up with it just after the banditti had received a beating. The next day (21st February 1766) was spent in pursuit of the enemy, and in the afternoon Rennell and two other officers, who had gone forward to reconnoitre, found themselves in presence of a large body of the Sanyasis. Their small escort of native horse rode off, and the officers were surrounded. Rennell’s Armenian assistant was killed, his engineer subaltern fought his way clear with a slight wound,

SSNS

1 Extract from Bengal Public Consultations of that date (Records in India Office). "Mr Hugh Cameron, who was employed on this establishment as surveyor of the new lands, being deceased 16th ultimo, it is agreed to appoint Mr James Renall (séc) in his room, who is recommended to us as a capable person, and by specimens of some surveys made by him which the President now lays before the Board, promises to be a very useful servant."

2 One of his exceptional employments (July 1768) was the demolition of for- tifications round Chandernagore, which the Freneh had commenced "expressly contrary to the treaty of Paris."

be Printed in Long's Hxtracts from the Fort William Records, p. 487 (Caleutta,

1869).

399

Rennell himself retreated fighting to the detachment, and was put in a palankin, eovered with sabre-wounds. One blow had cut into his right shoulder blade and through several ribs; his left arm was severely cut in three places, and he had other wounds besides. or surgical help he had to be sent to Dacca, 300 miles off, in an open boat, which he had to direct himself, as he lay on his face, whilst the natives applied onions as a cataplasm to his shoulder. He was long given up, but, under the tender care of his friend Dr Russell, he reeovered, though his health was long affected by the loss of blood and severity of the injuries.

Ou two later oceasions Rennell's letters spcak of his being attacked or waylaid whilst on survey, in one case by irregulars in the employment of the "jemitdars," i.¢., "zemindars," in districts remote from Calcutta, and on another occasion by the " Bootcse,"' or Bhutias, as we now call them. Ina letter dated 30th October 1770 he says in his brief way :-—

*“*T must not forget to tell you that about a month ago a large leopard jumped at me, and I was fortunate enough to kill him by thrusting my bayonet down his throat. Five of my men were wounded by him, four of them very danger- ously. You sce J am a lucky fellow at all times.”*

We gather from this passage that it was common in those days for officers to earry bayoncts,—a circumstance which is also set forth in one of the best known portraits of General Wolfe.

Shortly aftcr this last adventure Rennell was allowed to carry out, with a force under his command, a project that he had formed for the suppression of the banditti in the north. Writing on the 3d March 1771, he speaks of having returned successful from this expedition, after marching 320 miles in fifteen days, which he justly observes was “pretty good travelling in that climate, especially for soldiers.” ‘This did not, however, put au end to the Sanyasis, for they are spoken of by Hastings as still a pest in 1773 and 1774.

Rennell’s usual residence was at Dacca, though his visits to Calcutta were atleast annual. On one of thesc he married (October 15, 1772) Miss Jane Thackeray, one of the sixteen children of Archdeacon Thackeray, who had been headmaster of Harrow from 1746 to his death in 1760, and who has been called by Dr Butler the “seeond founder” of the school.4 Among Dr Thackeray’s descendants are to be counted many distinguished Anglo-Indians ; and William Makepeace Thackeray of the Civil Service, the grandfather of the great writer who has made that combination of names familiar and illustrious, was a friend of Renncll’s and the brother of his wife.

Indian careers were not in those days generally prolonged. Fortunes were reaped more rapidly than in later years, and death likewise mowed with swifter strokcs. In the list of Bengal engineers there are thirteen, including Rennell, who received eom- missions prior to 1770, the earliest in 1761. Of these thirteen, before 1780, six were dead, four had resigned, one had been dis- missed, and two only in the year named remained in the service.

Rennell's health had been remarkably good up to his encounter with the Sanyasis, but from that time it became permanently deteriorated, and in 1777 he resigned, having attained the rank of major two years earlier (January 1775). In those days no regular pension-system existed ; but, when permission for Rennell's retire- ment was given, in December 1776, by the governor and council, it was accompanied by the grant of a pension of 500 rupees a month from the Calcutta treasury, till the court's pleasure should be known. In passing this resolution the board remark that they "' think fit to adopt this mode as most satisfactory to Major Rennell, whose fortune will not permit him to leave India without some certainty of support in the decline of life."® It is impossible, in reading this last phrase, to withhold a smile at the proverbial longevity of pensioners, when we remember that the illustrious subject of the resolution drew the allowance for fifty-three years after his retirement. The court of directors, after his arrival in England, conferred a pension of £600 a year in licu of the Calcutta one.

Major Rennell and his wife, with a daughter born at St Helena during a stoppage on the way home, reached England, 12th February 1778. For the rest of his long life he lived in London, and for much the greater part of the time in Nassau Strect (formerly ealled Suffolk Street) near the Middlesex Hospital, a quarter then inhabited by gentlefolks, though now quite deserted by fashion.

When applying in 1776 for permission to retire, Rennell had written—"T desire not to eat the bread of idleness, but rather to make myself as useful as possible, even after my return to England," and went on to submit a scheme for the utilization of the large mass of geographical material laid up and perishing in the India House.§ He cannot have been long in England before he buckled to this task. He is said to have been offered employment of a considerable character and to have declined it. Of this we know no more DUG apparently he had laid out his own course of life, in devoting him-

4 Rennell, in announeing his marriage to Mr Burrington, speaks of his wife as the "daughter of the late Mr Thackeray who kept Harrow School." 5 MS. Records in the India Office. § India Offiee Records.

self to the laborious literary elucidation of geography, and to that enjoyment of the society of his friends to which he often refers in his correspondence as the chief happiness to which he looked for- ward in his retirement.

His first publication after his return was A Chart of the Banks and Currents at the Lagullas in South Africa (1778), accompanied by a memoir. In the same year appeared 4 Description of the Boads in Bengal and Bahar, &c., printed by order of the Court of Directors. 'This is a small 12mo, and only a book of routes. In 1781 came out his Bengal Atlas, containing Maps of the Theatre of War and Commerce on that side of Hindustan, compiled from the original Surveys, with Tables of Routes and Distances from Calcutta, through the principal Internal Navigations. This is in folio, and contains twenty-one maps, a work leaving far behind everything in Indian cartography published up to that date. In the same year Rennell read before the Royal Society, to which he had been elected March 8, " An Account of the Ganges and Burrampootur Rivers. a

These were preliminary flights. His great work on Indian geography was the Memoir of a Map of Hindustan ; and even this was of gradual growth. In its first form, as published in 1788, it contained only pp. xiv and 132. A second edition in 1785 had con- siderable additions. In 1788 a Afemoir was issued altogether en- larged in scope, and of this again a second edition appeared in 1792, and a third, still enlarged, in 1798, which contains pp. cxli+428 +51, pp. 620in all. The work, which thus went through five de- velopments in all, was that which especially established Rennell's reputation, —though his knowledge and ability were appreciated in London from an early date after his return to Europe, and the con- tinued series of works which he issued from time to time during some five and thirty years spread and augmented his fame as a geo- grapher. After a brief interval of extreme old age, the series was resumed in the publication of valuable posthumous works.

But, to return to earlier days, Rennell speedily found a place in the most intelligent circles of society, counting among his friends, as years passed on, not only men of science and literature like Sir Joseph Banks, Sir

Everard Home, Bishop Horsley, Sir George Staunton, Dr Robertson the historian, Dean Vincent, Mr Alexander Dalrymple, Mr William Marsden, &c., but also such men as Lord Mornington (afterwards the famous Marquis Wellesley), Lord Spencer (first lord of the Admiralty 1794-1801), and Lord Holland. His closest friends appear to have been Sir Joseph Banks, Lord Spencer, and Dr Gillies the historian, and in later years Captain (afterwards Sir Francis) Beaufort.

In 1791 he received from the Royal Society, at the hands of the president Sir Joseph Banks, the Copley medal, assigned hin for his geographical labours, and especially for his paper "On the Camel's Rate, as applied to Geographical Purposes." The follow- ing passage, perhaps not quite free from exaggeration, occurs in the president's address on this occasion :—

"J should rejoice could I say that Britons . . . eould boast a general map of their island as well exeeuted as the Major's delineation of Bengal and Bahar, a traet of countries considerably larger in extent than the whole of Great Britain and Ireland; but it would be injustice to the Major's industry, were I not here to state that the distriets he has perambulated and planned exceed probably in extent the whole tract of surveyed country to be found in the maps of the European kingdoms put together; while the aecuracy of his particular surveys stands yet unrivalled by the most laborious performanee of the best eounty maps this nation has hitherto been able to produce."

In 1792 Rennell published The Marches of the British Army in the Peninsula of India during the Campaign of 1790-91, illustrated and explained by a map and other plates; and in 1794 an 8vo pamphlet entitled War with France the only seewrity of Britain, by an" Old Englishman." Some years before this time Rennell had also turned his attention to African geography, in connexion with the African Association, of which he was one of the earliest members. Of this body, which was the progenitor, though not the immediate parent, of the Royal Geographical Society, an account may be read in Mr Clements Markham's most interesting record of the fifty years' work of that society. The association was established in 1788, and sent out several travellers of note. Maps and geographical mentoirs from Rennell's pen were issued on

various occasions ; and especially were his African labours associated with the name and first journey of Mungo Park. Rennell published in all some five or six dissertations on African geography. And this branch of his work may account, after a fashion, for an odd confusion made in a public report of Livingstone's burial in Westminster Abbey.?

The Philosophical Transactions, whose atmosphere in those days was not confined to the same rarefied altitudes as at present, con- tain occasional papers from Rennell's hand. We have mentioned the paper on "Camel's Rate" in 1791; in 1793 we have " Observations on a Current that often prevails to the westward of Scilly, and endangers the safety of ships" (the current in question has since been known by Rennell's name), in 1809 " On the Effect of Westerly Winds in raising the Level of the British Channel." In the

1 There was an intermediate body called the Raleigh Club, founded in 1826-27, which aetually developed into the R.G. 8. Rennell's great age doubtless pre- vented his joining the elub. The society was founded the month after his death.

2 " At Livingstone's feet lies the head of Major Reynell (sic), himself a noted African traveller."'— Times, April 20, 1874.

Archeologia we find the following:—in vol. xvii. 242, "Observations on the Topography of Ancient Babylon," and in vol. xxi. three dissertations: —(1) p. 92, "On the Voyage and Place of Shipwreck of St Paul"; (2) p. 188, "Concerning the Identity of the Remains at Jerash, whether they arc those of Gerasa or Pella" ; (8) p- 501, read May 1826, when the venerable author was in his eighty-fourth year, "Concerning the place where Julius Cesar landed in Britain." This does not, we believe, exhaust the list of his occasional writings, and he gave much incidental help to other writers who touched his own subjects, e.g., to Dean Vincent in his well-known work on the Commerce and Navigation of the Ancients. The detail of these minor works has carried us away from the chronological order of his productions. That which added most largely to the reputation acquired as the geographer of India was his book on the Geographical System of

Herodotus, 4to, with eleven maps (1800). Another great task undertaken by him was a T'reatise on the Comparative Geography of Western Asia. On this field he had formed a most comprehensive project, too vast indeed for the time of life at which he undertook it, when probably he had already reached threescore. Of this project his Herodotus was indeed itself a portion, and others were his separate publications of a Dis- sertation on the Topography of the Plain of Troy (4to, 1811), and of the Illustrations of the Eapeditions of Cyrus and the Retreat of the Ten Thousand, and an additional mass of matter, prepared with many years' labour, and left beliind him in a very perfect state of transcription, was published after his death by his daughter, in 2 vols. 8vo, with an atlas (1831),

Another posthumous work was An Investigation of the Currents of the Atlantic Ocean, and of those which prevatl between the Indian Ocean and the Atlantic. For this work Rennell had examined and collated the logs of a vast number of the ships of war and Indiamen which had traversed those seas during thirty or forty years, re-com- puting observations, and reducing them to one general system. The results of this toil were left ready for the press, and were published in large charts, with a thin volume of text, under the editorship of Mr John Purdy, in 18382. The first contributions to the scientific knowledge of currents had been Rennell's papers on the Lagullas, and on the Scilly Currents, and the present work contained nearly all that existed in the generalization of such data till more than twenty years after his death.?

'Major Rennell," says an account of him, in a work privately printed by a member of his wife's family, "was of Taal size, well proportioned, with a grave yet swect expression on his coun- tenance, which is said to have conciliated the regard of all he spoke with."*

The existence of this happy faculty we have already noticed as deducible from his earlier history in India. The sweet gravity of which the writer speaks is very recognizable in his portraits, alike in middle life and in extreme old age.> A contemporary, quoted in the work just referred to, said of him :—"In his intercourse with his friends he possesses a remarkable flow of spirits, and abounds with interesting subjects of

conversation ; at the same time, as to what relates to himself, he is one of the most diffident, unassuming men in the world."

One of the obituary notices at the time of his death says that Rennell's "' political and religious feelings arc said to have operated in causing him to decline the acceptance of an invitation to become a member of the French National Institute." This can hardly have had any basis of fact. Rennell, in politics, was always attached to what would be called, in present language, the Liberal party; though his Liberalism, as we may gather from the title of his pamphlet of 1794, and from expressions used in the dedication to Earl Spencer of his Herodotus, had nothing of that character which loves to dis- parage those who are jealous for the greatness of England. As a matter of fact he was elected a foreign associate of the Institute during the peace of Amiens, in 1802, and accepted the honour with unmistakable cordiality and satisfaction, as his reply, which we have scen, testifies. In his eighty-third year a gold medal was awarded to Rennell by the Royal Society of Literature ; and, as his infirmities prevented his attendance at their place of mecting, a deputation, headed by the president, visited him forthe purpose of presenting it at his own house in Nassau Street.

When more than eighty-seven years of age Major Rennell slipped from a chair, and broke his thigh. He hardly ever left his bed afterwards, and died 29th March 1830. He was buried in the nave of Westminster Abbey on the 6th April. A tablet to his memory, with a bust, stands in the north-west angle of the nave.

Mrs Rennell had died in 1810. Three children of the marriage

3 See Mr A. G. Findlay in the Jour. Roy. Geog. Soc., vol. xxiii.

4 Memorials of the Thackeray Family, by the late Mrs Bayne.

5 Among portraits we may mention one engraved by Cardon from a drawing by Scott, of which impressions were published in the European Magazine for 1802, and in both the posthumous editions of the Herodotus, There is another profile, engraved by Daniel after Dance, in a collection of portraits by these artists, and a medallion in poreelain

executed at Paris, probably after his death, and showing him in old age. There is also the bust by Baily in Westminster Abbey; and an admirable wax relief of him in old age is in the possession of Major Rodd, his grandson.

grew up. Of these, Thomas, the second, died in 1846; William, the third, went to India in the Civil Service, and died some years before his father (1819) ;? Jane, the eldest, married Captain Rodd, afterwards Vice-Admiral Sir John Tremayne Rodd, K.C.B., and survived both her brothers, dying in 1863. 1t was through Lady Rodd's active filial zeal that Rennell's posthumous works were pub- lished, including, besides the two already named, a second edition of the Herodotus.

What has been said in the cnumeration of his writings sufficiently shows how laboriously he worked. But to this great industry were joined in all his works sagacity, excellent judgment, and a love of truth which made him never ashamed to confess a difficulty, and always ready to do justice to other writers. The man whom we find already at fourteen serving as a midshipman in time of war could have grown up with little instruction but what he sought, and found for himself, in the course of his career. On many of the sub- jects on which he wrote, fresh light has been so abundant that the value of his works as guides has in great measure passed away, yet even now no one can deal with Herodotus or Xenophon without cou- sulting Rennell's views, directly or indirectly. Obliged to depend, as regards the former, for his text on the inaccurate translation of Beloe, it has been shown that Rennell's sagacity often discerned the true meaning of the historian when his interpreter had gone astray. What he did for the geography of India, not by his own surveys merely, but by his labour on the often remoulded Memoir, in coordinating the information gathered during forty ycars, may be best appreciated by a comparison of the celebrated D'Anville's

claircissemens Géographiques sur la Carte de UV Inde (1753) with the final edition of the Memoir (1793). Putting aside the great additions to positive knowledge which favoured the later writer, we are mistaken if the perusal of both works will not leave the im- pression that, in most of the

qualities of a geographer, Rennell's place is not in any respect behind that of the famous Frenchman, for whom he himself always entertained and expressed the deepest respect.

We conclude with an extract from a tribute to his memory which appeared in the Times of the day after his funeral in the Abbey:—

"" Another characteristic of this amiable philosopher was the gencrous facility with which he imparted his stores of learning in conversation, A memory remarkably tenacious, and so well arranged as to be equally ready for the recep- tion or for the distribution of knowledge, made him a depository of facts to which few ever applied in vain; adapting himself to the level of all who consulted him, he had the happy art of correcting their errors without hurting their feelings, and of leading them to truth without convicting them of ignorance."

Till Rennell's time it could hardly be said that England could boast of any geographer of the first class. His pre-eminence in that character is still undisputed, like that of D'Anville in France, and of Ritter in Germany.

In this sketch of Rennell's career, use has been made of a mass of letters addressed, during his service in the navy and in India, to the Rev. G. Burrington, kindly lent by Mr C. Langley of Chudleigh ; of papers courteously communicated by Rennell's descendants; of the " Memorials" quoted above; and of India Office records; supplemented by a good deal of other research. (H. Y.)

RENNES, a town of France, formerly the capital of Brittany and now the chief town of the department of Ille-et-Vilaine, is situated at the meeting of the Ille and the Vilaine and at the junction of several lines of railway connecting it with Paris (232 miles east-north-east), St Malo (51 miles north), Brest (147 west-north-west), dc. It is the seat of an archbishop and the headquarters of the 10th corps d'armée (with a large arsenal and bar- racks). For the most part rebuilt on a regular plan since the seven days' fire of 1720, the town is rendered more monotonous by the houses being of dark-coloured granite and nearly all after the same type. Of trade and industry there is little trace in the dull and de- serted streets. The main portion of the old town occu- pies a hill which looks down on the

confluence of the streams. Along the north side flows the Vilaine in a deep hollow bordered with quays and crossed by four bridges leading to the new town near the railway station. The canalized Ile forms the first section of the Ile and Rance Canal which unites St Malo to Rennes, and then descends the Vilaine to Redon, and the canal from Nantes to Brest. The cathedral of Rennes is rebuilt in a pseudo-Ionic style on the site of two churches dating originally from the 4th century. The archbishop's palace occupies in part the site of the abbey of St Melaine, whose church is the sole specinien in the town of 11-13th century architec-

1 There is in the B. Af. Catalogue 'Experimental Philosophy, or

the Effects of Chemistry ; A Play in Three Acts, by William Rennell, Calcutta, 1807-8."

ture. A colossal statue of the Virgin was placed above the dome of this church in 1867. In the palace is pre- served the old altar screen from the cathedral, perhaps the finest in all France. The Mordelaise Gate, by which the dukes and bishops used to make their state entry into the town, is a curious example of 15th century architecture, and accidentally preserves a Latin inscription of the 3d century, a dedication by the Redones to the emperor Gordianus. Architecturally the finest building in the town is the old parliament house (now the court-house), designed by Jacques Debrosse in the 17th century, and decorated with statues of legal celebrities, carved work, and paintings by Coypel and Jouvenet. The town-house was erected in the first half of the 18th century by Gabriel, the architect of the Place de la Concorde in Paris. In the modern building occupied by the faculties of law, science, and literature there are scientific collections of various kinds, and one of the finest picture galleries out-side of Paris, with pieces by Paul Veronese, Tintoretto, Vandyck, Rembrandt, Rubens, &c., and sketches by Michelangelo, Titian, and other great masters. The town library contains 50,000 volumes and 220 MSS.; and the municipal archives are of primary importance for the history of Brittany. The Promenade du Thabor, with a statue of Duguesclin, the adjoining botanic gardens, the Promenade de la Motte a little lower down, and the Mail, a fine avenue planted in 1657 by the duke of Chaulnes, add

greatly to the beauty of Rennes. About 2 miles from the town is the castle of La Prévalaye. The local industries are varied but not extensive. The population of the town in 1881 numbered 57,430; that of the com- mune 60,974.

Rennes, the chief city of the Redones, was formerly (like some other places in Gaul) called Condate (hence Condat, Condé), pro- bably from its position at the confluence of two streams. Under the Roman empire it was included in Lugdunensis Tertia, and became the centre of various Roman roads still recognizable in the vicinity. The name Urbs Rubra given to it in the oldest chroniclers is explained by the bands of red brick still found in the foundations of its first circuit of walls. In 843 a.p. Nomenoé, Charles the Bald's lieutenant, declared himself independent and took the title of king of the Bretons; but the country was afterwards torn to pieces by the struggles of the various counts who wished to make themselves masters of it and by the invasions of the Normans. About the close of the 10th century Conan le Tort, count of Rennes, subdued the whole province, and it was his son and successor Geoffrey who first took the title duke of Britrany (q.v.). It wasat Rennes the dukes were crowned, and before entering the city by the Mordelaise Gate they had to swear to preserve the privileges of the church, the nobles, and the commons of Brittany. During the War of Succession the city was captured by Jean de Montfort in 1341, by Charles of Blois in 1342, and again by Jean de Montfort. During the troubles of the League the duke of Merccenr attempted to make himself independent at Rennes (1589), but his scheme was defeated by the loyalty of the local parliament. Henry. IV. entered the city in state on May 9, 1598. An insurrection at Rennes caused by the taxes imposed by Louis XIV., in spite of the advice of the parliament, was cruelly suppressed by the duke of Chaulnes, governor of the province. The parliament was banished to Vannes till 1689, and the inhabitants crushed with forfeits and in great numbers put to death. The fire of 1720 which destroyed eight hundred houses completed the ruin of the town. During the last year of the monarchy Rennes more than once resisted the imposition of taxes not authorized by the states of Brittany. 1n1765 the cclebrated procureur-général La Chalotais was imprisoned, and in 1788 the parliament was suspended from May to October. At the commencement of the Revolution Rennes was again the scene of

bloodshed caused by the discussion about doubling the third estate for the convocation of the states-general. On January 26, 1789, the students, with Moreau (afterwards general) at their head, broke into the hall where the nobles sat in council in defiance of the decree of suspension issued against them by the Government. During the Reign of Terror Rennes suffered less than Nantes, partly through the courage and uprightness of the mayor Leperdit. It was soon afterwards the centre of the operations of the republican army against La Vendée. After the 10th of Brumaire it was accused of royalism and put to ransom by Brune. Besides La Chalotais, Gerbier the advocate and Admiral De la Motte-Picquct were born at Rennes.

XX. — 51

402

RENNIE, Joun (1761-1821), engineer and architect, was the son of a farmer, and was born at Phantassie, East Lothian, 7th June 1761. While attending the parish school of East Linton he had to pass the workshop of Andrew Meikle, the inventor of the thrashing niachine, and evinced such a strong interest in the operations there in progress that the workmen were in the habit of lending him their tools and teaching him their various uses. In his twelfth year he left school and placed him- self under Meikle, but at the end of two years he went to a school at Dunbar, in order to obtain a more thorough knowledge of mathematics and mechanical drawing. After- wards he occasionally assisted Meikle, but before his eighteenth year he had erected several corn mills. on his own account, while in the winter months he visited Edin- burgh to attend the classes of physical science at the university. By Prof. Robison of Edinburgh he was intro- duced to Messrs Boulton & Watt of Soho near Birming- ham, for whom in 1786 he superintended the construction of the Albion flour mills near Blackfriars Bridge, London. It is believed that the difficulties which occurred at the Albion mills in regard to the ebb and flow of the tide first led Rennie to the study of that branch of civil engineering connected with hydraulics and hydrodynamics, in which he became so celebrated as to have no rival after the death of Smeaton. Immediately after the completion of the Albion mills Rennie's reputation

was so firmly established in everything connected with mill work that he found himself in a very extensive line of business. In the con- struction of sugar mills in Jamaica and the other West Indian Islands he soon had almost a monopoly, and among other mills constructed by him in England mention may be made of the powder mill at Tunbridge, the great flour mill at Wandsworth, and the rolling and triturating mills at the Mint on Tower Hill. Wherever the machinery of his mills was impelled by steam, the engines of his friends Messrs Boulton & Watt supplied the motive power. It is, however, on his achievements as an architect and civil engineer that the fame of Rennie chiefly rests. Of the bridges connecting the banks of the Thames at London, three have been built from his designs,—Southwark Bridge, in the construction of which he introduced a method of employing cast iron which formed a new epoch in the history of bridge-building ; Waterloo Bridge, which then had no parallel for its magnitude, elegance, and solidity ; and London Bridge, on the model of Waterloo Bridge. Bridges at Leeds, Musselburgh, Kelso, Newton-Stewart, Bosten, New Galloway, and numerous other places bear similar testimony to his skill and taste. His earliest canal project was that of the Crinan Canal, and following it was the Lancaster Canal, which besides other difficulties pre- sented that of an aqueduct over the Lune. His execution of these works so established his reputation that his opinion and assistance were required from all quarters in regard to similar undertakings, among others the construction of the Great Western Canal in Somersetshire, the Polbrook Canal in Cornwall, the Portsmouth Canal, and the Avon and Kennet Canal. But more important than these were his works in connexion with docks and harbours, his designs embracing the London Docks, the East and West India Docks at Blackwall, and docks at Hull, Greenock, Leith, Liverpool, and Dublin. The harbours of Queens-ferry, Berwick, Howth, Holyhead, Kingstown, Newhaven, and several others owe their security and convenience to his labours. But even these works must yield to what he executed in connexion with the Government dockyards at Portsmouth, Chatham, Sheerness, and Plymouth. One other effort of his genius falls to be mentioned, the drain- age of that vast tract of marsh-land bordering upon the rivers Trent, Witham, Welland, and Ouse which for cen-

turies had baftled the skill of some of the ablest men in that department of civil engineering. Rennie's industry was very extraordinary ; though fond of the society of his select friends and of rational conversation, he never suffered amusement of any kind to interfere with his business, which seldom engaged him less than twelve hours and frequently fifteen in the day. His conversation was always amusing and instructive. In person he was of great stature and strength; and his noble bust by Chantrey, when exhibited in Somerset House, obtained the name of Jupiter Tonans. He died 16th October 1821.

His son Sir Jonn Rennie (born August 30, 1794, died Sept. 1874) succeeded him as engineer to the Admiralty, and acquired a high reputation in the same line of business as his father. On the completion of the London Bridge from his father's designs in 1831, he received the honour of knighthood. He was the author of The Theory, Formation, and Construction of British and Foreign Harbours, 4 vols., 1851-54.

RENT is classed in English law as an incorporeal heredi- tament, that is, a profit issuing out of a corporeal heredi- tament (see Ruat EstarTE). A rent issuing but of an incorporeal hereditament can only be possessed by the crown, or by a subject under statutory authority. Rent is said to lie in render, as distinguished from profits & prendre in general, which are said to lie in prender. At the present day rent is generally a sum of money paid for the occupa- tion of land. It is important to notice that this concep- tion of rent is attained at a comparatively late period of history. The earliest rent seems to have been a form of personal service, generally labour on the land, and was at the same time fixed by custom. The exaction of a com- petition or rack rent beyond that limited by custom was, if one may judge from the old Brehon law of Ireland, due to the presence upon the land of strangers in blood, probably at first outcasts from some other group.! The strict feudal theory of rent admitted labour on the lord's land as a lower form, and at the same time developed the military service due to the crown or a lord as ahigher form. Rent service is at once the oldest and the most dignified kind of existing rent. It is the only one to which the power of distress attaches at common law, giving the landlord a preferential right over other creditors exercisable without judicial authority (see Distress). In course of time the increasing importance of

socage tenure, arising in part from the convenience of paying a certain amount, whether in money or kind, rather than comparatively uncertain ser- vices, led to the gradual evolution of the modern view of rent as a sum due by contract between two independent persons. At the same time the primitive feeling which regarded the position of landlord and tenant from a social rather than a commercial point of view is still of importance.

Rents as they now exist in England are divided into three great classes—rent service, rent charge, and rent seck. A rent service is socalled because by it a tenure by means of service is created between the landlord and- the tenant. The service is now represented by fealty, and is nothing more than nominal. Rent service is said to be incident to the reversion, that is, a grant of the reversion carries the rent with it (see RumarnpER).

1 "The three rents, viz., rack rent from a person of a strange tribe, a fair rent from one of the tribe, end the stipulated rent which is paid equally by the tribe and the strange tribe."—Senchus Mor, p. 159, cited by Maine, Village Communities, p. 180.

REN T

Such power must liave been given him by the instrument creating the rent charge. The Statute of Uses, 27 Hen. VIIL c. 10, gave a power of distress for a rent charge created under the statute. The Conveyancing Act, 1881 ; 44 & 45 Vict. c. 41, § 44, now gives a power of distress for a sum due on any rent charge which is twenty-one days in arrear. By § 45 a power of redemption of certain perpetual rents in the nature of rent charges is given to the owner of the land out of which the rent issues. Rent charges granted since April 26, 1855, otherwise than by marriage settlement or will for a life or lives or for any estate determinable on a life or lives must, in order to bind lands against purchasers, mortgagees, or creditors, be registered in the central office of the Supreme Court (18 & 19 Vict. c. 15). In certain other cases it is also hecessary to register rent charges, for instance, under the Improvement of Land Act, 1864, and the Land Transfer Act, 1875. Forms of rent charge of special interest are tithe rent charge (see TrrHEs), ground rents, and the rent charges for the purpose of conferring votes usually called "faggot votes." Ground rents are rent

charges in fee simple issuing out of land sold for building purposes. The lessee erects buildings according to the terms of the lease, making his profit by subletting either at a rack rent or on the terms of a fine on entrance into possession, with an annual rent slightly larger than the ground rent. In the latter case the rent is called an improved ground rent. Ground rents are regarded as particularly eligible investments owing to the extent of the security afforded. Rent charges of the annual value of 40s. for the purpose of creating votes are now rendered ineffective by the tepresentation of the People Act, 1884, 48 Vict. c. 3, § 4, which enacts (subject to a saving for existing rights and an exception in favour of owners of tithe rent charge) that a man shall not be entitled to be registered as a voter in respect of the ownership of any rent charge. A rent seck (redditus siccus) is a rent charge reserved without power of distress. But, as power of distress for rent seck was given by 4 Geo. II. c. 28, the legal effect of such rent has been since the Act the same as that of a rent charge. There are varieties of these main divisions of rent to which special names are given. Rents of assize or quit rents are a relic of the old customary rents. They are pre- sumed to have been established by usage, and cannot be increased or diminished. They are found only in manors. Those paid by the freeholders are also called chief rents. Fee farm rents are rents reserved on grants in fee. Accord- ing to some authorities they must be at least one-fourth of the value of the lands. They, like quit rents, now occur only in manors, unless existing before the Statute of Quia Limptores or created by the crown (see REAL Estate). A rent which is equivalent or nearly equivalent in amount to the full annual value of the land is a rack rent. A dead rent is a fixed annual sum paid by a person working a mine or quarry, in addition to royalties varying accord- ing to the amount of minerals taken. Rents in kind still exist to a limited extent; thus the corporation of London is tenant of some lands in Shropshire by payment to the crown of an annual rent of a faggot. All pepper-corn or nominal rents seem to fall under this head. Services rendered in lieu of payment by tenants in grand and petit serjeanty may also be regarded as examples of rents in kind. Labour rents are represented by those cases, not unfrequent in agricultural leases, where the tenant is bound to render the landlord a certain amount of team work or other labour as a part of his rent. It was held in the Queen's Bench in 1845 that tenants who occupied houses on the terms of sweeping the parish church and of

ringing the church bell paid rent within the meaning of the Limitation Act of 3 & 4 Will. IV., ¢. 27.

403

Apportionment.—In regard to estate a rent scrvice is apportion- able at common law, as well as under certain Acts of Parliament, such as the Land Clauses Act. A rent eharge was formerly not apportionable, for it issued out of every part of the land and was at the same time in contemplation of law against common right as not being incident to tenure. The legal effect of this was that (with some exceptions) a release of part of the land out of which a rent charge issued was a release of the whole. It was provided by 22 & 23 Vict. c. 35, § 10, that the release from a rent charge of part of the hereditaments charged does not extinguish the whole rent charge, but operates only to bar the right to recover any part of the rent charge out of the hereditaments released. In regard to time, at common law no kind of rent was apportionable. The effect of this was that if the person entitled to the rent died between rent days no rent was due to the succeeding reversioner for the inter- mediate period. This was remedied by 11 Geo. II. c. 19, and other Acts, which are now practically superseded by the Apportionment Act, 1870, 33 & 84 Vict. c. 35. By this Act all rents are, in the absence of stipulation to the contrary, to be considered as accruing from day to day, and apportionable in respect of time accordingly.

FKemedies.—Rent is due in the morning of the day appointed for payment, but is not in arrear until after midnight. It should be demanded just before sunset. The landlord has besides distress his ordinary remedy by action. In addition special statutory remedies are given in the case of tenants holding over after the expiration of their tenancy. By 11 Geo. II. ¢. 19 any tenant giving notice to quit and holding over is liable to pay double rent for such time as he continues in possession. By 1 & 2 Vict. c. 74 a tenant at a rent not exceeding £20 per annum who fails to deliver up possession after his interest has ended may be ejected by summary pro- ceedings before justices. By 19 & 20 Vict. c. 108 a similar remedy is given in the county court whcre the rent does not exceed £50 per annum. Analogous provisions are contained in Acts dealing with the metropolitan

distriet. It should be noticed that, since the writing of the article Disrress, the landlord's power of distress has been considerably limited in the case of agricultural tenancies falling within the Agricultural Holdings Act, 1883, 46 & 47 Vict. c. 61. § 44 confines the right of distress to one year's arrears of rent instead of six ycars' arrears, which could be distrained for before the Act. An extension of time is allowed in cases where in the ordinary course of dealing between landlord and tenant the payment of rent has been allowed to be deferred for a quarter or half year after the rent became legally due. By § 45 live stock belonging to another person and taken in by a tenant to be fed has a qualified privilege from distress ; that is, it is not distrainable where there is other sufficient distress to be found. If so distrained for want of other sufficient distress, it may be redeemed by the owner on payment of any sum due for the feeding. Agricultural or other machinery on the premises of the tenant for hire or use and live stock on the premises solely for breeding pur- poses are absolutely privileged from distress. The Act further makes appraisement before sale unnecessary, and enacts that bailiffs to levy distress are to be appointed by county court judges. For other provisions of the Act dealing with procedure, see REPLEVIN.

Lreland.—The main differences between Irish and English law have been caused by legislation (see LANDLORD AND TENANT), One of the most noticeable is the power of ejectment for non-payment of rent given by 28 & 24 Vict. c. 154. In England such a power can only be conferred by express agrcement.

Scotland.—Rent is properly the payment made by tenant to landlord for the use of lands held under lease. The rent paid by vassal to superior is called feu-duty (see Fru). Its nearest English equivalent is the fee farm rent. Rents are recovered by an action of maills and duties in the Sheriff Court or the Court of Session, and in non-agricultural tenancies by hypothec. The right of hypothec over land exceeding 2 acres in extent let for agriculture or pasture has been abolished as from November 11, 1881 (see HyPpo- THEC). The Agricultural Holdings (Scotland) Act, 1883, 46 & 47 Vict, c. 62, provides by § 27 that when six months' rent of the holding is due and unpaid the landlord may raise an action of removing before the sheriff against the tenant, concluding for his removal at the

term of Whitsunday or Martinmas next ensuing ; and, unless the arrears are paid or caution is found, the sheriff may decern the tenant to remove. The tenant so removed has the rights of an outgoing tenant. Labour or service rents were at one time very frequent in Scotland. The events of 1715 and 1745 showed the vast influence over the tenantry that the great proprietors ac- quired by such means. Accordingly the Acts of 1 Geo. I., sess. 2, c. 54, and 20 Geo. II. c. 50, provided for the commutation of services into money rents. Such services may still be created by agreement, subject to the summary power of commutation by the sheriff given by the Conveyancing Act, 1874, 37 & 38 Vict. c. 94, §§ 20, 21. "In the more remote parts of Scotland it is understood that there still exist customary returns in produce of various kinds, which being regulated by the usage of the district or of the barony or estate cannot be comprehended under any general rule" (Hunter, Landlord and Tenant, vol. ii. 298). Up to within forty

years ago existed steelbow lcases, by which the landlord stocked the farm with corn, cattle, implements, &c., the tenant returning similar articles at the expiration of his tenancy and paying in addition to the ordinary rent a steelbow rent of 5 per cent. on the value of the stock.

United States.—Agricultural rents are, from the different position of the cultivators of the land, of less importance than in England. The law is in general accordance with that of England. The tendency of modern State legislation is unfavourable to the continuance of distress as a remedy. In some States, such as Ohio and Tennessee, it never existed. Fee farm rents exist in some States, like Pennsylvania, which have not adopted the Statute of Quia Emptores as a part of their common law. (J. Wt.)

REPLEVIN. Since the article Distress (g.v.) was written the Agricultural Holdings Act, 1883, has made some changes in the law of replevin in England. The period of five days during which the tenant or owner of goods may replevy by 2 Will. & Maryc. 5, § 1, is extended in the case of holdings within the Act to fifteen days, on the tenant or owner making a request in writing to that effect and giving security for additional costs. A summary remedy in the nature of replevin is given, a court of summary

jurisdiction having a jurisdiction concurrent with that of the county court conferred upon it in the case of distress on a holding within the Act.

REPORTING. The curious among those who seek to trace political developments may, without any great strain on the imagination, find an intimate relation between the growth of newspaper reporting and the growth of demo- cratic institutions; at any rate the two have always been found together. The history of reporting in Great Britain brings out the relationship with much clearness. There was no truly systematic reporting until the beginning of this century, and not until many years afterwards did it grow to be a most important, if not the most important, feature in newspapers. There was parliamentary reporting of a kind almost from the time when parliaments began. Single speeches, and even some consecutive account of particular proceedings in parliament, were prepared. But long after newspapers were commonly published no effort had been made to give reports either of the proceedings of parliament or of those of any other assembly dealing with the public interests. The first attempts at parliamen- tary reporting, in the sense of seeking to make known to the public what was done and said in parliament, began in a pamphlet published monthly in Queen Anne's time called The Political State. Its reports were mere indica- tions of speeches. Later, the Gentleman's Magazine began to publish reports of parliamentary debates. Access to the Houses of Parliament was obtained by Cave, the publisher of the magazine, and some of his friends, and they took surreptitiously what notes they could. These were subsequently transcribed and brought into shape for publication by another hand. There was a strict prohibi- tion of all public reporting ; but the Gentleman's Magazine appears to have continued its reports for some time without attracting the attention or rousing the jealousy of the House of Commons. The publisher, encouraged by immunity from prosecution by parliament, grew bolder, and began in his reports to give the names of the speakers. Then he was called to account. The latest standing order on the subject at that time was one passed in 1728, which declared "that it is an indignity to, and a breach of, the privilege of this House for any person to presume to give, in written or printed newspapers, any account or minute of the debates or other proceedings; that upon discovery of the authors, printers, or publishers of any such newspaper this House will proceed against the

offenders with the utmost severity." Under this and other standing orders, Cave's reports were challenged, as were those of other publishers in other magazines. They were denounced by resolution ; and threats of prosecution were made, with the result that

the reports appeared still, but without the proper names of the speakers, and under the guise of "Debates in the Senate of Lilliput" or some other like title. Long afterwards, in the latter half of the century, the newspapers began to report. parliamentary debates more fully, with the result that, in 1771, several printers, including those of the Morning Chronicle and the London Evening Post, were ordered into custody for publishing debates of the House of Commons. A long and bitter struggle 'between the House and the public ensued. John Wilkes took part in it. The lord mayor of London and an alderman were sent to the Tower for refusing to recognize the Speaker's warrant for the arrest _ of certain printers of parliamentary reports. But the House of Commons was beaten. In 1772 the newspapers published the reports as usual ; and their right to do so has never since been really questioned. Both Houses of Parliament, indeed, now show as much anxiety to have their debates' fully re- ported as aforetime they showed resentment at the intrusion of the reporter. Provision has been made in the House of Lords and in the House of Commons for reporters. 'There are galleries in which they may take notes, and writing rooms in which those notes may be extended. In short, reporting is now one of the best marked of parliamentary institutions.

But parliamentary reporting is only a small part of such work in newspapers. The newspapers in the be- ginning of this century rarely contained more than the barest outline of any speech or public address' delivered in or in the neighbourhood of the towns where they were published. As parliamentary reporting began to grow, so did local reporting. After the peace of 1815 a period of much political fermentation set in, and the newspapers began to report the speeches of public men at greater length. All the attempts that were made from time to time to repress public meetings and demonstrations of dissatisfaction with the existing order of things did but increase the demand for reporting. It grew

as the fetters were struck off public institutions. With the Reform Act of 1832 it got a great start forward; and the Municipal Reform Acts gave it a still stronger impulse. Then the proceedings of town councils could be reported, and every local newspaper took care that this was done. It was not, however, until well into what may be called the railway era that any frequent effort was made by newspapers to go out of their own district for the work of reporting. The London newspapers had before this led the way. In London alone were there daily newspapers. The proprietors of these papers had been compelled by the requirements of the public to make provision for the systematic reporting of the proceedings of parliament. For many years after the right to report those proceedings had been practically established, the work was done ina dilatory and clumsy fashion. Early in the present century, however, greater freedom of access to both Houses was given, and the manager' of the Morning Chronicle established a staff of reporters. They began the system which with improvements has continued to this time. Each reporter took his " turn" —that is, he took notes of the proceedings for a certain time, and then gave place to a colleague. The reporter who was relieved at once extended his notes, and thus prompt publication of the debates was made possible. Reporters had been found to supply the demand, and it had become the habit of the proprietors of the London newspapers to employ these men, out of the session of parliament, in reporting the speeches of public men in the country. The practice grew until there was a good deal of competition among the papers as to which should first issue a report of any speech of note. Railways were not ; and reporters had frequently to ride long distances in post chaises, doing their best as they jolted along the*

roads to transcribe their' notes, so that they might be ready for the printer on arrival at their.destination. Charles Dickens used to tell several stories of his adventures of this kind while he held an engagement on the Jlorning Chronicle. He.was, indeed, perhaps the best reporter of his time, and he was most successful in outstripping many of his rivals. One result of the efforts thus made was that the provincial newspapers were stimulated to greater efforts. Reporters were rapidly trained, and in all direc- tions reporting grew. There were none but weekly news- papers; but they devoted much of their space to report- ing, and public men became more ready to speak as they found that what they said would be more widely made known. As railways were extended, the newspapers were able to extend the sphere of their work of this kind, and reporting spread apace. Then, with changes in the fiscal policy of the country, daily newspapers sprang up in all directions ; the electric telegraph was being improved and developed so that greater facilities were given for report- ing; and in a few years the old supremacy of the London journals in this department of newspaper work had well- nigh disappeared. The country newspapers did more reporting of speeches and public meetings than the metro- politan papers. No public man made a speech but it was faithfully reproduced in print. Local governing bodies, charitable institutions, political associations, public com- panies—all these came in a short time to furnish work for the reporter, and had full attention paid tothem. Curiously enough, while the country newspapers have thus cultivated reporting, and have made it one of their chief features, the London newspapers, for reasons into which this article need not enter, have fallen behind, and have for some years past given little attention to the work of which they were the originators. This fact explains a development of reporting which may be more fully described.

When the second half of this century began, par- liamentary reporting was a leading feature of the Lon- don newspapers. They had a monopoly of it. All the reporting arrangements in the House of Lords and in the House of Commons were made with sole regard to their requirements. There had indeed been a long battle between the Times and some of the

other London news- papers as to which should have the best parliamentary report, and the Zwmes had established its supremacy, which has never been shaken. But, while its reporting was fuller than that of other London daily newspapers, they did not neglect the work, and they gave in shorter compass admirable digests of the proceedings, with full reports of the most important speeches. The provincial newspapers were in the main obliged to copy the reports thus provided, and rarely made any attempt to get reports of their own. When the electric telegraph came into use for commercial purposes a change began. . The company which first carried wires from London to the principal towns in the country started a reporting service for the country newspapers. It gathered up scraps of news and sent them to the journals that subscribed for the service. In addition, it procured admission to the parliamentary galleries for reporters in its employ- ment, and began to send short accounts of the debates to the newspapers in the country. These newspapers were thus enabled to publish in the morning some account of the parliamentary proceedings of the previous night, instead of having to take like reports a day later from the London journals. The effect was greatly to stimulate the appetite of the provincial public for parlia- mentary reporting. The telegraph companies for a long time could or would do no more than they had begun by doing ; and they offered no inducements to the provincial newspapers to telegraph speeches. The public meanwhile

wanted to know more fully what their representatives were saying in parliament, and gradually the leading pro- vincial newspapers adopted the practice of employing reporters in the service of the London journals to report debates on subjects of special interest in localities; and

these reports, forwarded by train or by post, were printed

in full, but of course a day late. 'The London papers paid little attention to such debates, and thus the provincial papers had parliamentary reporting which was not to be found elsewhere. Bit by bit this feature was developed. It was greatly accelerated by a movement which the Scotsman was the first to bring about. The telegraph companies had increased in number, but they had not given more facilities for newspaper reporting.

About 1865, however, a new company having come into existence, it was agreed that wires from London should be put at the disposal of such newspapers as desired them. Each newspaper was to have the use of a wire—of course on payment of a large subscription—from six o'clock at night till three o'clock in the morning. This was the beginning of the "special wire" which now plays so important a part in the production of almost all newspapers. The arrangement was first made by the Scotsman and by other newspapers in Scotland. The immediate result was that the parlia- mentary reporting in these papers was greatly increased, and was no longer confined to debates on local affairs. The special wires were used to their utniost capacity to con- vey reports of the speeches of leading statesmen and politicians ; and, instead of bare summaries of what had been done, the newspapers contained pretty full reports. When the telegraphs were taken over by the state, the facilities for reporting were increased in every direction. But now, as to parliamentary reporting, a new difficulty arose. The London papers, with the exception of the Times, had given less and less attention to parliamentary debates. There were, indeed, fairly long reports in one or two other newspapers in London, but the tendency was to shorten them, while on the other hand several of the provincial newspapers were giving more space than ever to the debates. These newspapers had to get their reports as best they could. The demand for such report- ing had led, on the passing of the telegraphs into the hands of the state, to the formation of news agencies which undertook to supply the provincial papers. These agencies were admitted to the reporters' galleries in the Houses of Parliament, and they provided longer or shorter reports of the debates, to meet the wishes of their clients. But the reports which any agency supplied were identical; that is to say, all the newspapers taking a particular class of report had exactly the same material supplied to them— the reporter producing the number of copies required by means of manifold copying paper. It is easy to see that, though this might serve the purpose of most of them, it could not meet the requirements of all; and accordingly attempts were made to get separate reports by engaging the services of some of the reporters employed by the London papers. Nothing else indeed was possible. The "gallery" was shut to all, save the London papers and the news agencies. The Scotsman sought in vain to break through this exclusiveness. The line, it was said, must be drawn somewhere, and the proper place to draw it was at the

London press. Once that line was departed from every newspaper in the kingdom must have admission. But in 1880 a select committee of the House of Commons was appointed to consider the question. It took evidence, and it reported in favour of the extension of the gallery and of the admission of provincial papers. The result was that some of the papers entered into combinations to procure reports ; that is to say, three or four papers which would be satisfied with the same report joined in providing

the necessary reporting staff. In other cases individual newspapers put themselves on the same footing as the London newspapers by engaging separate staffs of reporters. This is the arrangement now. Parliamentary reporting is much fuller in the leading provincial newspapers than it is in most of the London papers, though the reports for the former have in all cases to be telegraphed to them.

The mode in which parliamentary reporting is carried out deserves some description. It has been said that the manager of the Morning Chronicle early in the century laid the foundation of the present system when he divided the work of reporting debates among a staff of reporters. That is exactly what is done now. The " gallery," as it is familiarly called, is arranged with boxes for note-takers overlooking the floor of the House, and with seats behind for other note-takers who are waiting to take their turn. The Zimes has three of the front boxes—one for the chief of its staff of reporters, one for a summary writer, and one for the note-taker engaged in the full report. Most of the other London papers have each two boxes—one for a summary writer, the other for a reporter. ach of the press agencies has two boxes. Hansard has one. The rest are occupied by provincial newspapers or by combina- tions of those newspapers. The staff of reporters attached to each paper or combination of papers numbers from six to sixteen shorthand writers. If, for the purpose of describing the work of parliamentary reporting, a staff of eight be assumed, the process can be made clear. One other preliminary point should be kept in mind: an expert and intelligent reporter can transcribe from his notes as much matter as that contained in a column of the Times in rather less than an hour and a half. The staff of eight men may have

*turns of a quarter of an hour or of half an hour, or of any other length of time that may be agreed upon. The House of Commons begins its ordinary sitting at a quarter to four. At that time reporter No. 1 takes his place in the box and notes all that passes in the House. At four, assuming quarter hour turns, No. 2 relieves him; at a quarter past four No. 8 relieves No. 2, and at half past four No. 4 relieves No. 3. It will thus be seen that the eight reporters will cover a period of two hours, and that each of them has an * hour and three quarters in which to extend his notes. If he has had a quarter of an hour's note-taking of an important speaker he will have about three-quarters of a column of matter to write, and this he can do easily and have some time for rest before he has to take another "turn." In the case of an important debate extending far into the night, or into the morning, the "turns" are shortened. Instead of a quarter of an hour, each reporter takes ten minutes, or five, or even three. The reporters go from the box to a writing room and there transcribe their notes, their "copy" being gathered by messengers attached, to their paper, and carried by them to the printers. In the case of the provincial newspapers, the "copy" has to 'be telegraphed over the "special" or other wires, before it can reach the hands of sub-editors or compositors. That, however, is no affair of the reporter's. He has to produce his report with as much rapidity as he can. In the case of the 7%mes his efforts are seconded by what is in practice an annihilation of the space between the House of Commons and the office of the paper. The reporter reads out from his notes to an operator on a telephonic wire, who speaks what he hears through that wire to the office of the paper. When it is received there it is spoken off again to a compositor at a composing machine; and thus it is most commonly in type and ready for printing long before the reporter's "copy" could have been received from the House of Parliament. The telephone is also used in a similar way by*

REP OR@® rn ¢€

some of the newspapers which have special wires. The latest parts of the report of a night's sitting are spoken through the telephone to the point from which the special wire starts, and they are promptly telegraphed to the newspaper for which they are intended. Thus it often happens that the finishing passages of a report of a late sitting in the House of Commons

are actually in type in a newspaper office 400 miles away, before the members who have taken part in the proceedings have got on their greatcoats for their walk home.

Parliamentary reporting, important as it is, yet forms a small part of the reporting which is done by the news- papers. All the public expositions of our complicated and busy social and national system are reported with a fulness, and on the whole with an amount of accuracy, that are surprising. Every newspaper of importance in the provinces has a more or less numerous staff of reporters at its command. In some cases, papers have separate staffs in different parts of the country. It is the business of these gentlemen to report all that is worth reporting for their journal. In the case of a long and important speech or meeting they will take turns in the reporting of it in the same way as turns are taken in the Houses of Parliament. But no newspaper is able to confine its reporting to events in its own neighbourhood. It must give to the public full accounts of speeches of prominent public men, no matter where they are delivered. Sometimes a reporter is sent far away to do this work. In such a case he usually joins for the occasion the staff of one of the newspapers of the neighbourhood ; or he and other reporters from a distance make up a staff to do the work. Again the system of turns comes in. But, for the most part, speeches of statesmen in different parts of the country are reported for newspapers at a distance by one or other of the news agencies, which send down staffs of reporters for the work. In some cases, all these modes of working are seen together—there are representatives of individual newspapers from far and near, and there are the staffs of the news agencies. During Mr Gladstone's Midlothian campaign he had seldom fewer than seventy reporters in his train.

As a rule, reporters are shorthand writers. That became a necessity when the demand for reporting greatly in- creased, and when the very words of a speaker had to be given. But what is spoken of as verbatim reporting is in no sense the best. It is a necessity, but to a great extent is merely mechanical, The reporter has acquired dexterity in shorthand writing, and he can read his notes fluently. Far more is required for that better reporting which conveys to the public the full sense of what a speaker has said without giving all his superfluous words. This is an art which is not

universally acquired by reporters. They have learned to depend so much upon their notes that they do not learn to exercise their brains. There is much report- ing which shortens speeches by wholesale excisions rather than by judicious and intelligent compression. It would, however, be unjust to pass over the many proofs of high intelligence which the reporting in our newspapers contains. The task of the reporter is often not easy. He has, to use a familiar adage, to make many silk purses out of sows' ears; and he does it patiently and well—so welk that the author of the material operated upon is often inclined to take all the credit to himself.

So far, the reporting which has been spoken of is that by which speeches and debates arc produced in print for the public informa- tion. But there is another kind of reporting which ought not to be passed over. What is commonly called "descriptive reporting " has in some cascs nearly shouldered the reporting of speeches out of newspapers. Is there a royal progress, or a military display, or a pageant of any kind—the descriptive reporter is called into requisition. He has to describe as best he can all that happens.

REP—RE P

It is a simple statement of fact to say that newspapers have on many occasions had word pictures from their descriptive reporters which have never been surpassed in prose writing for elegance and vividness and force. The special correspondent is a " descriptive reporter." He goes to war to describe what he sees. The electric telegraph has made a great change in the manner and perhaps in the character of his work ; but he is still among those who help in newspaper reporting.

Mention has been made of the connexion of the electric telegraph with reporting; and it has been said that, since the telegraphs have been extended and telegraphing has been cheapened, the sphere of reporting has been widened and the demand for it has increased. No daily newspaper now confines its reporting to the affairs of the part of the country in which it is published. The electric telegraph brings the most distant places within easy reach of every newspaper. It has also made the work of the reporter more arduous and his responsibility greater. He

cannot postpone the transcription of his notes toanother day. The speech that is not finished in Manchester at midnight must be printed in full in the London newspaper which goes to press before three o'clock in the morning. The meeting which does not finish at Wick till midnight must be reported in the next day's papers in Edinburgh. All this means that the reporter must work under

REPROD

I. AnimaL REPRODUCTION, § 1. ASEXUAL REPRODUCTION.

AS a general account of this process has already been

given (see Bronoey, vol. iii. p. 686), and the details of its occurrence in the various groups are described in the articles devoted to them (see Protozoa, Hyprozoa, TaPeworm, &c.), it suffices here to recall the very broadest aspect of the phenomena,—that asexual reproduction is simply discontinuous growth, and that, as we make an ascending survey of the Metazoa, that simple form of discontinuous growth which we term asexual reproduction becomes niore and more subordinated to, and at last wholly replaced by, that more differentiated or "sexual" form of reproduction characterized by the union of two hetero- geneous cell-elements—never to reappear save in degenerate forms. See SEX,

§ 2. SEXUAL REPRODUCTION.

In the lowest forms of animal life the process of sexual reproduction is found in its simplest imaginable expression unassociated with any of those complexities which arise among the higher animals and plants. All that is to be observed is the growth of the reproductive organs, the maturation of their products, and the passive liberation of these,—the fecundation of the ovum and the fate of the embryo being entirely left to the circumstances of the environment. In higher forms, however, not only does this process of maturation become more complex and of far more marked influence over the other functions of the organism, but the attraction of the sexes becomes distinct and leads to new specializations of function and structure.

Maturation.—The maturation of the sexes acquires, as has been said, increasing definiteness in the higher forms, where it is associated with various characteristic accom- paniments. The profound reaction of reproductive maturity upon the whole system is best marked in Birds and Mammals,-and perhaps most of all in Man.

Thus in a young male Bird the circulation in the testes is greatly increased, and these organs. increase greatly in size and weight and commence to develop spermatozoa. Meanwhile the "secondary sexual characters" of the adult—gayer plumage for alluring the female, or weapons for contest with other males—make their appearance, the voice and note may alter, and a marked increase of strength and courage may appear. Among Mammals the changes are of similar order, the secondary sexual char-

407

great pressure, and that he must exercise the greatest care in extending his notes. He has no time for revision, no opportunity of amending any doubtful passage. When these drawbacks are considered, it will most likely be felt that the work of reporting is not easy. Yet its importance could not well be overrated. Re- porting is the feature in the journalism of to-day which the public could least afford to lose. The editor of a newspaper may influence public opinion, but the reporter furnishes the material for its for- mation. Fair reporting is indeed a great security for freedom and for moderation. It enables all who can read to see the arguments for and against any proposal; it shows how public bodics dis- charge their duties ; it indicates the wants and wishes, the hopes and fears of the public; it puts within easy reach the mcans of combating wild and foolish propositions, however superficially attractive they may be; in short, it makes the whole country an open council on all questions affecting the souls and bodies, the education and the government, of the people. It is but fair to add that reporting is done as a rule with great ability and fairness, The reporter rarely carries his likes or his dislikes into his work. He is scrupulously just, and as scrupulously impartial, though it may be that this is not always the opinion of some men who make speeches of which little is scen in the shape of reporting. (C. CO.)

REPOUSSE. See Mrrat-Worx and PLATE.

UOD Lory

acters of course differing in detail. The minor changes at puberty in Man associated with the commencement of spermatogenesis are (besides the reflex excitation of erec- tion due to distension of the seminal vesicles, and the more or less periodic expulsion of their contents during sleep) the growth of hair on the pubic region and later on the lower part of the face, and the rapid modification of the laryngeal cartilages and the lengthening of the vocal chords, so rendering the voice harsh and broken during the change and ultimately deepening it by about an octave. The marked strengthening of bones and muscles and the profound psychical changes which accompany the whole series of processes are also familiar. See SEx.

The local and cellular activity within the ovary, which is the fundamental part of maturation in the female, is not less remarkable than that in the testes. That even in lower Invertebrates the enlargement and escape of the ova are part of a normal cellular rhythm is interestingly shown by their not unfrequent relapse to the amceboid state, or by the fatty degeneration and death of ova which have not accomplished their destiny. The escape of ripe ova in the Vertebrate ovary is especially remarkable: each Graafian follicle, as it ripens, bursts, expelling its ovum ; its cavity contracts ; it is filled up by blood, of which the white cor- puscles form a framework resembling connective tissue, in which the solids and corpuscles of the serum with colour- ing matter derived from the hemoglobin of the latter are retained ; and the whole constitutes the "corpus luteum," which, should pregnancy occur, may persist and undergo further retrogressive changes, or otherwise gradually dis- appear.

The direct causes of this process of ovulation have been sometimes ascribed to the congestion of the blood-vessels of the ovary and to its own internal turgidity, or to the existence of a slight contractility of its stroma; it seems, however, rather to depend upon the growth and turgescence of the individual follicle. The question of the relation of ovulation to the process of copulation in the higher animals has also been much

discussed. Though we certainly know that ovulation is of regular occurrence whether fecundation takes place or not, it seems that in many cases copulation is speedily followed by the libera- tion of an ovum; nor is it difficult to see how the profound nervous and circulatory excitement associated with the former process might accelerate the bursting of a follicle. Leopold has conclusively shown, however, that ovulation may also long precede impregnation.

In many forms it is not easy to see how the ova once liberated into the body-cavity find their way safely into the small opening of the discontinuous oviduct. In the Frog, however, tracts of the peritoneal epithelium become ciliated, so propelling the ova in the right direction. In Reptiles, Birds, and Mammals the open end of the oviduct is widened and fringed, and lies close to or even touching the ovary; muscular fibres too are present, and more or less active movements of this dilated end over the ovarian surface have been alleged to occur. The oviduct once reached, the downward progress of the ovum is ensured by the cilia of the epithelial lining, and probably also by peristaltic movements of its muscular coat. (1)

Menstruation.—The process of menstruation (menses, catamenia), although from the earliest times the subject of medical inquiry, is by no means yet clearly understood. It occurs usually at intervals of a lunar month in all women during their period of potential fertility (fecundity), and, so far from being confined to the human species, has been observed at the period of "heat" in a large number of Mammals. Though thus clearly a normal physiological process, it yet evidently lies on the borders of pathological change, as is evidenced not only by the pain which so fre- quently accompanies it, and the local and constitutional disorders which so frequently arise in this connexion, but by the general systemic disturbance and local histological changes of which the discharge is merely the outward expression and result. The histological facts are briefly as follows. The mucous lining of the uterus consists of a loose vascular connective tissue covered by ciliated epithe- lium and containing numerous glands of clear alkaline secretion. This mucous lining before

the outset of men- struation becomes loose and cedematous, its lymphatics being greatly distended; it thus thickens considerably, pressing against the cervix of the uterus. An extrava- sation of blood from the capillaries next takes place over the whole surface of the mucous layer, and the discharge is thus set up. This consists at first of blood largely diluted with the secretion of the uterine glands, but soon becomes mixed with detritus from the disintegration of the mucous coat, of which not only the general epithelial cells but those of the neck of the glands, and even part of the subjacent connective tissue, undergo fatty degeneration and fall off, occasionally even ina mass. After from three to six days the blood ceases to appear, and the lost epithe- lium is rapidly replaced, apparently by proliferation from the necks of the glands. By the ninth or tenth day the mucous coat is fully healed and the beginnings of the next menstrual process recommence.

The age at which the process commences varies with race and climate, with nutrition and growth, with habit of life (e.g., with differences between town and country life), and with mental and moral characteristics. Of these, however, climate seems most important; thus, while in northern Europe the average age is reckoned at the begin- ning of the fifteenth year, in the tropics it seems to commence in the ninth or tenth. The cessation of men- struation usually takes place between the age of forty-five and fifty, and, somewhat as tlie secondary characteristics of female puberty coincide with its appearance, a less distinct reduction of these is associated with its close; in many cases secondary resemblances to the masculine type may supervene.

The old theories of menstruation were that it served to rid the system of impure blood, that it simply corre- sponded to the period of "heat" observed in lower animals, or, later, that it was associated with ovulation, — which indeed seems broadly to correspond with the end of

1 These numbers refer to the bibliography at p. 422.

UC Bele N

the menstrual period. At present there may be said to be two rival theories. According to the first of these the pro- cess is viewed as a kind of surgical

“freshening” of the uterus for the reception of the ovum, whereby the latter during the healing process can be attached safely to the uterine wall. The other view is exactly the reverse of this. Its upholders regard the growth of the mucous coat before the commencement of the flow as a preparation for the reception of an ovum, if duly fertilized, and the menstrual process itself as the expression of the failure of these pre- parations, in short as a consequence of the non-occurrence of pregnancy.

Comparative Anatomy of the Reproductive Organs. —The multicellular animals afford a remarkable series of grada- tions from the simplest imaginable case in which certain cells, independently of accessory organs, and even isolated from each other, develop into ova and spermatozoa, In the vast majority of cases, however, definite groups of cells are set apart as the essential reproductive glands—the ovary and the testis. The contents of these may simply break loose, but definite excretory ducts are very frequently present, and upon these very varied complications may arise. To the male ducts a seminal reservoir may be added. More or less specialized glandular regions may contribute their secretion to the seminal fluid, and a more or less complicated copulatory apparatus may also be superadded.

The female accessory organs are equally simple in prin- ciple and complex in detail. Nutritive material may be furnished to the ova by special yolk glands, or by the walls of the oviduct; this too may supply special enve- lopes, and may exhibit dilatations for the preservation or development of the ova (uterus), for the reception of the male copulatory organ (vagina), or for the temporary storage of the seminal fluid thus introduced (receptaculum seminis). It is necessary therefore briefly to outline the most important facts of the comparative anatomy and physiology of these organs in the various groups.

Passing over the little-understood Orthonectida and Dicyemida (see PARASITISM, Vol. xviil. p. 259), the Sponges present the very simplest case above referred to. Here and there throughout the mesoderm a cell may be observed enlarging to form an ovum, or segmenting to form a mass of spermatozoa, but no definite reproductive glands, much less any duct or accessory organ, are present, and at most the ovum forms for

itself a kind of nest among the sur- ~ rounding cells, an approach towards the epithelial follicle of higher forms being thus presented.

Coelentera.—In Anthozoa the generative organs are developed as ridges on the gastric septa, their products passing out by the mouth; and in the Ctenophora each radial canal bears an ovarian ridge on one side and a testicular on the other. Keen controversy has raged over the state of matters in the Hydromeduse. Kleinenberg derived both ovum and sperms in Lfydra from the ecto- derm, while Van Beneden endeavoured to prove the invariable origin of the ovarian tract from the endoderm and that of the testicular from the ectoderm; but sub- sequent observers, so far from confirming the constancy of this arrangement, have affirmed in many forms the ecto- dermic and in others the endodermic origin in both cases.

[ANIMAL.

| Weismann and De Varenne have recently very completely

demonstrated the more remarkable fact that in a great number of forms the generative elements do not arise in the so-called generative buds or gonophores at all, but actually migrate thither from the parenchyma (ccenen- chyma) of the nutritive polyp or trophosome—the latter observer indeed going so far as to allege the primitive origin by ova and spermatozoa in all cases from the endo-

ANIMAL. |

derm of the nutritive polyp. These conclusions not only invalidate Van Beneden's attractive theory, but tend to overthrow the ordinary view of the alternation of genera- tions in the Hydromeduse.

Vermes.—The incipient ovary and testis are seen in their simplest expression in such a case as that of the hermaphrodite Bryozoa, or even better in the low Cheto- pod Worm Yomopteris (fig. 1), in which a patch of cells of the lining membrane of: the «© celom proliferate and enlarge into ova, or divide into sperma- tozoa, fall off, and become ex- truded. In higher Worms (e.g., Lumbricus) the glands become localized in definite segments, he Rice deaeas ee. and excretory ducts, apparently nating from

the lining epithelium specialized segmental organs, ap- of a parapodinm of Zomopterts. pear. Among the Platyhelminthes, on the other hand, the most extraordinary specializations occur. The generative apparatus reaches a complexity which in some respects even excels that of the higher Vertebrates, and which, since it occurs not only among the parasitic forms but also in their less modified free-living allies (if not ancestors), the Turbellarians, must be regarded, not as any mere adapta- tion to parasitic life, but as an important factor in explaining (by the peculiar advantage which such increased reproductive efficiency affords; see Parasitism) the wide prevalence of parasitism in the Platyhelminthes.

Lichinodermata.—Here the reproductive organs are of extreme simplicity —mere lobed glands usually provided with a duct or pore, or sometimes merely bursting into the body-cavity.

Arthropoda.—The essential organs never exceed one pair,—a simple median germ-gland being probably, as Gegenbaur suggests, the primitive condition. The acces- sory organs, however, reach great complexity, especially among the higher Znsecta.

Mollusca.—The lower Lamellibranchs have paired herm- aphrodite glands opening in relation to the excretory organs ; in the hermaphrodite Gasteropoda, however, high complexity of the accessory organs occurs (¢.g., Helix). In the dicecious Cephalopoda the oviduct is single, and there are remarkable accessory female glands, while in the male the formation of the spermatophores and the curious modi- fication of an arm for copulatory purposes are noteworthy.

Tunicata,—In this group (so frequently hermaphrodite) the reproductive apparatus is again greatly reduced, the paired or. single sexual glands being sometimes even duct- less, while accessory organs are absent.

Vertebrata.—Starting again, in the lowest Vertebrates, with organs of an exceedingly simple and primitive kind, we find the series presenting all gradations up to a very high complexity. Thus in Amphioxus the reproductive glands are little modified patches of the lining epithelium of the ccelom, and arise in a paired series,—an arrange- ment recalling that of the simpler segmented Worms. In other Vertebrates, however, the

essential organs are most distinctly localized in origin, never exceeding a single pair, and are also much more evolved in structure. In its earliest recognizable state the generative gland is a slight thickening of the peritoneal epithelium and the subjacent connective tissue on each side of the mesentery, lying near and parallel to the incipient renal apparatus.

Leaving the histological details of the process by which this " germinal epithelium," with the subjacent connective tissue of the "genital ridges," develops into ovary and testis with their characteristic products to the sections dealing with oogenesis and spermatogenesis respectively, and confining ourselves to the gross anatomy of these essential organs, we may note their very simple character

in the Marsipobranchii, where in the Lampreys they extend for a great length along the ccelom, and exhibit a number of tolerably regular lamellar folds, recalling the segmental arrangement of lower forms. In the remain- ing Vertebrates these organs are usually less elongated and relatively smaller and more compact, though it is interesting to note that some Amphibians (notably many Cexcilre) exhibit traces of a more or less discontinuous, perhaps serial, arrangement.

In Plagiostome Fishes the sexual glands arise along only a portion of the genital ridge, the remainder having its stroma mainly enlarged, and forming the so-called epigonal gland. In many of the higher Amphibians accessory organs of unknown function, the so-called fatty bodies or corpora adiposa, are attached to the ovaries and testes ; and in the Toad and other Anwra another organ in close relation to the testis, and in histological structure resembling a rudi- mentary ovary, has also been described.

A considerable tendency towards loss of symmetry appears in the essential organs, particularly the ovaries, of many Vertebrates. Thus in Myzxine neither ovary nor testis is present on the left side, and in many Sharks and Dogfish the left ovary is rudimentary. In Snakes the left ovary is smaller

than the right and usually lies behind it, while in Birds the left ovary is alone functional, that of the right side becoming so completely atrophied at an early stage of development that traces of it in the adult are only found surviving in a few forms, especially some of the diurnal birds of prey. Among Mammals symmetrical development is the rule, yet in the curiously Bird-like Ornithorhynchus the left ovary is much smaller than the right.

The relative size of the ovaries varies greatly throughout the Vertebrate series, in relation partly to the relative proportion of stroma to germinal tissue in the histological structure of the organ, to the fecundity of the species, and to the number of ova produced, partly also to the presence or absence of a food yolk, and the consequent size of the ova. In many forms a great increase of size takes place at breeding-time.

In the majority of Vertebrates, as in lower forms, the essential organs remain throughout life in the position in which they develop, or at most depend into the ccelom supported by a mesenteric fold. In most Mammals, how- ever, a certain change of position takes place, the ovaries usually shifting more or less backwards towards the pelvis. The testes too in the Monotremata leave their embryonic position at the inner edge of the primitive kidneys and travel backwards. In Edentates, Hyrax, Elephants, and Cetaceans they remain near or a little below the kidneys, but they usually reach the abdominal wall, which they may more or less completely pass through in the inguinal region (as in many of the lower Rodents and Carnivores), or even descend into a more or less distinct diverticulum or hernial protrusion of the integuments of the abdominal wall, the scrotum. This protrusion arises usually at the posterior margin of the primitive urinogenital opening, but, by exception, in Marsupials in front of it. The cavity of the scrotal pouch may remain throughont life in con- tinuity with that of the abdomen, so enabling the testes to pass backwards and forwards at each breeding season (Marsupials, Rodents, Jnsectivora, Bats, &c.), while in the higher forms, ¢g., Ungulates, Primates, &c., the scrotum retains the testes permanently shut off from the abdominal cavity.

The origin and homologies of the genital ducts in Vertebrates, and the accessory organs in relation to them, may now, after a very great amount of anatomical and embryological inquiry, be considered as tolerably settled, at least in their main outlines.

XX. — 52

410

In Jlyxine and the Lampreys no ducts are present, but the generative organs void their contents into the ccelom, whence they pass out by the abdominal pore; some Teleosteans too (Salmonidz) and at least one Elasmobranch (Lemargus) exhibit the same primeval simplicity of structure and function. Even here the exit of the sexual products is hardly independent of the aid of the excretory system, since there is reason to regard the abdominal pores as the least modified survivals of segmental organs; and in all higher forms the definite efferent ducts which are present in more or less close relation to the essential generative organs develop in the closest relation to, and in fact at the expense of, the renal excretory apparatus. For an account of the complex details of this process in the higher Vertebrates, however, the reader must consult the classical monographs of Balfour and Semper, or the larger manuals. (2)

Copulation.—We have noted above the importance of the copulatory process to secure fertilization of the ovum, and can thus readily understand its occurrence in the higher members of all the more complex animal groups. Though the result is in all cases the same, the process presents curious variations in principle as well as detail. Thus (¢. g.) the hermaphrodite Earthworms become firmly attached by their characteristic thickened band of fused rings (clitellum). Among the higher Crustaceans the sper- matozoa are conducted to the ova along the grooves of a modified pair of the appendages of the male, while in In- sects the modifications of the posterior abdominal segments and their limbs for copulatory purposes are often extra- ordinarily complex and varied. In Spiders, again, the spermatic fluid is passed into a receptacle in the chela, and thence pushed into the cloaca. In the higher J/ollusca, the complex copulatory apparatus of the Common Snail and the process of hectocotylization among the Cephalo- pods, so curiously analogous to the

process in Spiders, are too familiar to need more than mention (see Moxtusca, Cortie-Fiso). In many Fishes no copulatory process exists ; thus in any of our Salmon rivers the male fish can be seen voiding the milt upon the ova after their deposi- tion. In many Elasmobranchs a portion of the posterior pair of limbs,! presenting very peculiar cartilaginous and glandular structures, though known as '" claspers," seems to be introduced into the cloaca during fertilization. But it is among Amphibians that we find the earliest trace of a true penis; a portion of the cloaca is distinctly ever- sible in Ceecilians; in Snakes and Lizards paired eversible processes arise from the posterior cloacal wall, while in Chelonians, Crocodiles, and most Birds it is the anterior wall which bears these processes. In Monotremes, too, the organ is distinctly double; in higher Mammals it is single ; but the function is in all cases essentially the same. The nervous, muscular, and circulatory mechanisms of the pro- cess are described in works on human physiology. (8)

Gestation and Birth—While in the majority of lower forms the offspring leaves the parent as an unfertilized ovum, we have seen even among Sponges the impregna- tion and development of the embryo in its primitive position, and thus almost from the outset of an ascending zoological survey we can recognize the passage from Oviparous to viviparous forms. The Invertebrates, how- ever, are mainly oviparous, despite a few exceptions, of which perhaps the most surprising and aberrant are that of LEntoconcha mirabilis, which exhibits an ordinary Molluscan development within the body of its Holothurian host, and that in what resembles a special ovarian tube, but is really the body of its utterly degenerate parasitic parent. Among

1 In the curious Holocephalous Fish Callorhynchus, Jeffery Parker has recently adduced arguments for regarding the claspers as the surviving rudiments of a third pair of limbs.

Insects a certain degree of viviparous development may be reached; and this goes curiously far in the Dipterous Insect Cecidomyia, in which

larvee develop within the body of their parents (themselves at the larval stage), the cavity of which they destroy and burst in order to become free. Thus within the same species there comes about exactly the state of things in which the ova of a parasite develop at the expense of its host.

Among Fishes viviparous birth occurs more commonly : in some Teleosteans the young develop within the ovaries ; in many Sharks and Dogfish the development takes place within the oviduct, and in one case (J/ustelus lxvis) an actual placenta is formed by the interdigitation of folds of the yolk sac with those of the oviduct. Even the terres- trial Amphibians usually lay their eggs in water, yet in some‘ types, notably the Alpine Salamander (Salamandra atra), development takes place within the oviduct. That this is a clear case of adaptation to the eminently terrestrial environment has indeed been well shown by experiments in which the young larve taken from the parent and trans- ferred to pond water developed like ordinary Newts. To all such forms, viviparous in the sense of bringing forth their young alive, the somewhat confusing term “ ovovivi- parous” is often applied. Birds, and also Reptiles, with few exceptions, of which the Jchthyosauria seem to have presented a striking case, are oviparous ; so too, as has been recently established by Caldwell, is the in all respects so curiously Bird-like Mammal Echidna. Its congener Orni- thorhynchus probably agrees in this; but in Marsupials the embryo is not born until it has reached a comparatively advanced state of development, when it is transferred to the brood pouch or marsupium, where the process is com- pleted. In the remaining Mamma/ia intra-uterine develop- ment goes much farther, the nutrition of the embryo being, in absence of the abundant food yolk of lower forms, effected by the aid of a placenta analogous but not homolo- gous to that of JZustelus, since developed, not from the yolk- sac, but from the allantois (see ANaTomy and MamMMatta).

The physiological processes of birth show a similar rise in complexity,— due chiefly to the increasing strain upon the parental organization which this progress in the nutrition and protection of the embryo during its develop- ment involves; for, while an ovum can be extruded by simple ciliary action, or at most by the gentle contractions of the oviduct, the expulsion of the relatively enormous Mammalian foetus involves

mechanical difficulties of the most serious kind. And, besides these stresses and strains upon the pelvic basin itself or the muscular and connective tissues of the uterus, vagina, and its outlet, the inevitable rending asunder of the large closely interwoven and highly vascular placenta must evidently occasion an additional physiological disturbance. (4)

Parental Care.—Not-to mention cases of mere conceal- ment of the ova or construction of egg cases, the lowest forms exhibiting such parental care are probably certain Holothurians and Starfishes described by Sir Wyville Thomson during the voyage of the " Challenger," in which the developing young are borne upon the dorsal surface of the parent. Many Crustaceans carry about their ova during development, and an Amphipod has been described as fol- lowed by its newly-hatched young like a hen by its chickens. The female Spider too, though ferocious towards the male, frequently spins a nest and shows some maternal solicitude ; but such cases are far commoner among even the lower Vertebrates than the highest Invertebrates. Thus among Fishes the case of the nest-building Stickleback is especially familiar; some Siluroids and Lophobranchs (and usually the males) carry about their young,—the latter in ventral pouches, the former in the mouth.

But the quaintest examples of care of offspring are those

ANIMAL. |

presented by some of the Amphibians, notably by the Frog Alytes obstetricans, where the male winds the string of ova as laid round his body, sits in concealment until their

Fig. 2 (after Sir Wyville Thomson, and Murray, ' Challenger" Narrative),—Sea- urchin (Hemiaster cavernosus, Kerguelen Islands) and Sea eueumber (Clado- dactyla rosea, Falkland Islands), bearing their young.*

development is sufficiently advanced, and then takes to

the water, or in the grotesque Surinain Toad (Pipa suri-

namensis), where the male places the ova one by one in hollows in the loose skin of the back of the female, where they accomplish their development. Reptiles rarely show any care beyond at most burying their ova, but in Birds the evolution of parental care (no doubt associated with the need of high temperature for development) approaches its highest and most general evolution. The case of Mam- mala is also too familiar to need any description; but there is evidently good ground for the idea (of late ably popularized by Miss Buckley) that the marked success of

Birds and Mammals in the struggle for existence is to be

attributed perhaps not less to their peculiar care of offspring

than to any advance in organization. (5)

The Spermatozoon,

History.—In 1677 Leeuwenhoek's attention was drawn by Hamm, one of his pupils, to the active moving con- stituents of the seminal fluid, and he described these as ammalcula spermatica or spermatozoa (oréppa, seed ; Léov, animal), Although known to be of constant occurrence, they were long regarded as parasites, and classified as Helminthes or as Infusoria (see also article ' Zoophytes," Encyclopedia Britannica, 8th ed.), even Von Baer main- taining this view as late as 1835, Soon after this date R. Wagner demonstrated their constant presence in fertile males and their absence in infertile bastards. Von Siebold discovered them in many Vertebrates, while KoOlliker recognized them as definite histological elements arising within the testes. The old name, however, has persisted despite various proposals to replace it (¢9., spermatozords, Von Siebold ; jila spermatica, Kolliker). (6)

Anatomy and Physiology of Spermatozoa.—Without attempting completeness it is necessary to note a few of the best marked forms of spermatozoa. The familiar type, that of a small more or less ovoid "head," with delicate thread-like cilium or "tail," is of the commonest occurrence throughout the animal kingdom ; it is seen with specific modifications in 1-4 and 12~16 in fig. 3. Much less differentiated forms, however, occur, especially among the Branchiate Arthropods, of which some exhibit

almost amoeboid forms, as in the Daphnoid Moina, or in Crabs (7 in fig. 3); others are rigid, with radiating processes, as in the Lobster (8 in fig. 3). That of Ascaris is a small nucleated cell without tail or process, but bearing a cap of protoplasm ;

this, like the lateral process in the spermatozoon of the Cheetopod Cleta (4 in fig. 3), is not, as might at first appear, an additional or accessory portion, but a mere persistent

Fic. 3.—Forms of Spermatozoa. 1, Sponge; 2, Medusa; 38, Bothriocephalus; 4, Cleta (Cheetopod); 5, Ascaris; 6, Motna (Daphnid); 7, Crab; 8, Lobster; (9-11), Plagiostomum forms with elongated nucleus; 12, Salamander; 13, Ray; 14, Man; 15, Coditis; 16, Mole.

embryonic structure, as will be understood from the out-

line of the facts of development given below. In a large

number the nucleus is more or less drawn out to form either a continuous rod or a series of fine granules, the protoplasm in such cases forming a delicate film with lateral fringes, which may also be produced on one or both ends into a filament. This form is seen in many Planarians

(compare 9-11 in fig. 3). In the Newt the head is elon-

gated, and the tail bears a vibratile membrane. In Man

a middle piece separates the peculiarly shaped head from

the tail, and this seems to end in a still finer filament (14

in fig. 3). Miescher and others describe their minute struc-

ture with yet greater detail, distinguishing in the head a

wall enclosing peculiarly differentiated contents, in the

middle piece a similar structure, and even an axial fila- ment in the tail.

The movements of spermatozoa have attracted consider- able attention, their action being mechanically comparable to that of cilia, and being affected similarly by reagents. Their great activity and prolonged vitality are note- worthy ; thus not only do they remain in movement for many hours—indeed until the onset of putrefaction—after their ejaculation from the body, but in many of the higher animals they may remain active in the oviducal passages for weeks. In the Bat the spermatozoa lie in the uterus awaiting the ovum from autumn till spring; while a queen Bee may go on laying the fertilized eggs (from which workers arise) for swarm after swarm for three years after her first and only fertilization, without entirely exhausting the supply of active and mobile spermatozoa in the, receptaculum, and such cases forcibly suggest that the spermatozoon has not only a vast intrinsic store of energy, but must also absorb nutritive matter from the environing tissues or secretions, much in fact as would an Infusorian parasite. (6)

The chemical analysis of spermatozoa, though as yet but rude, yields results of interest. Thus, not only is the proportion of solid matter to water extremely high, but the small quantity of ordinary albumens and the high percentage of ethereal extractives are to be noted, the whole composition being more analogous to that of brain and nerve than of any other tissues. In round numbers, nearly 50 per cent. of the Salmon milt is nuclein, more than 25 per cent. is protamin, 10 per cent. is a mixture of ordinary albumens, and less than 5 per cent. is fat; while 74 per cent. of lecithin, 24 per cent. of cholesterin, with traces of other products of metabolism, make up the reat. (7)

Development of Spermatozoa (Spermatogenesis).—Probably no subjeet within the whole range of histology (at least if we exeept that of the strueture of striped muscular tissue) presents so many difficulties, or has been the sulject of more prolonged

research and eontroversy; and it is thus essential to elearness to recapitulate the history of the inquiry in some detail. The modern

period of investigation, despite a few observations by Wagner and others, practically opens with K@lliker's fundamental observation (1841) that the head of each spermatozoon arose from the meta- morphosis of a seminal cell.

In 1844 Haeckel described in Helix the cells destined to become spermatozoa as arising on the surface of an epithelial cell of the germ follicle. In amore elaborate paper (7. W. Z., 1856) Kolliker compared the process of spermatogenesis in the Bull, Dog, and Rabbit with considerable detail, distinguishing in all cases the lining of the tubule into two kinds of cells,—the outer having large nuclei and nucleoli, and undergoing rapid multiplication, while the thick inner layer of smaller cells was becoming differentiated into the true sperm-cells, which might be either unicellular or multicellular "cysts." He also described the origin of the head of the sperma- tozoon (and indeed also that of its tail) from the nucleus of this parent cell, and the breaking loose of the spermatozoon from its parent.

, Henle (1865) showed that the tail was developed from a portion of the protoplasm, thus preparing for the comparison with ciliated epithelial cells soon afterwards instituted by Schweigger-Seidel. Sertoli (1865) described certain "ramified cells" in the seminal tubules, and Merkel (1871) regarded these as forming a framework (Stiitzzellen) for other cells from which the spermatozoa developed. In the same year, however, appeared the important researches of Von Ebner, whose views will be understood by the aid of fig. 4. He described the large cells just mentioned as provided with a large and well-defined nucleus and nucleolus, and as being con- fluent at their base with each other, so forming a protoplasmic layer (Keimnetz), but stretching forwards into the lumen of the duct as irregular prolongations ; these become lobed or fingered, each lobe independently developing a nucleus, the large primitive nucleus remaining unchanged. To the whole prolongation with its lobes he applies the term spermatoblast. From.each lobe a spermatozoon develops, the nucleus lengthening to form the main portion of the head, while a thin

film of the protoplasm elongates into the cilium or tail. The young spermatozoa at first press

I. IIL. IV. ive Fic. 4.—Spermatogenesis (after Landois), I., cross seetion through a seminal tubule; IJ., unripe spermatoblast, with blunt rounded lappets, the young sperms; III., spermatoblast with ripe eiliated heads; IV., spermatoblast after separation of sperms.

downwards into the body of the spermatoblast, so as to form bundles, but, when ultimately liberated, curl themselves up to roll down the seminal tubule, the more or less branched stump of the spermatoblast alone remaining along with the smaller cells of the tubules, which, according to him, take no part in the process, but merely perform nutritive or mechanical functions. '

A vigorous controversy at once arose, but Merkel claimed these spermatoblasts as being simply his "Stiitzzellen," and described the spermatozoa as arising from the small round cells, and as being only secondarily received into cavities of the former, a view which Henle also adopted. Sertoli also regarded Ebner's spermato- blasts as his "ramified cells," and ascribed all spermatogenetic functions to the round cells, which he distinguished in their youngest state as "germinative," and later as "seminiferous" cells, which then divided to form "nematoblasts," these directly developing into spermatozoa. Blumberg (1873) attempted to reconcile the disputants by ascribing spermatogenetic functions both to the spermatoblasts and to the round cells. Neumann, while supporting Von Ebner in the main, describes his spermato- blasts as not processes of the nutritive network ("Keimnetz"), but as nodified from the ordinary epithelium of the seminal tubule, and disputed the existence of Merkel's framework altogether ; and this essential confirmation of Von Ebner's view was supported by Mihalkovicz, Landois, and others. In a later paper he attempted to show that the lobes of Von Ebner's spermatoblasts might become separated off as the small round cells, and might then either break up or develop into spermatozoa. Krause (1876), while otherwise supporting Von Ebner, graphically described the sperma- toblasts as ciliated cells with ramified and even anastomosing processes, so doing

away with any connective-tissue system altogether. Sertoli, however, continued to support his own view with greater elaborateness than ever.

Semper's well-known researches (1875) on the urinogenital system of Elasmobranchs included an important contribution on

REPRODUCTION

j spermatogenesis.

[ANIMAL.

He described an invagination of the germinal epithelium or of the primitive ova into the subjacent stroma, where they form a primitive follicle, which again comes into relation with the incipient tubule. The central cell of the follicle undergoes mucous degeneration and becomes absorbed, leaving a cavity lined by a single layer of epithelial cells, which divide rapidly, becoming cylindrical, with large round nuclei. These divide into a " cover- cell" and a "mother-cell"; the nucleus of the latter divides repeatedly until about sixty sperm nuclei are formed, which elongate to form the heads of the spermatozoa. As these develop they come to lie ina bunch, lying into the cavity of the follicle, their expulsion being effected by the swelling of the nucleus of the cover-cell.

An important series of researches by Von La Valette St George on spermatogenesis among Vertebrates was meanwhile in progress. In his final paper (1878) he describes the seminal tubules as con- taining two distinct types of cell. One kind, resembling young ovules, which he terms primitive seminal cells or spermatogonia, divide into a mass or spermatogemma of small cells (sperina- toeytes). These spermatocytes may either (a) all develop into spermatozoa (Mammals), or (b) a single spermatocyte may become modified as a basilar cell (Plagiostome Fishes), or (¢) a number may form an envelope or cyst around the others (Amphibians and Fishes). The second kind of primitive cells he terms "follicle- cells," and regards as non-essential ; these are united into a loose tissue and envelop the spermatogonia and spermatogemma.

In this view we have a inarked divergence from both preceding theories, as the author does not hesitate to point out. He regards Von Ebner's "Keimnetz" and "spermatoblasts" as confounding both his follicle cells with their included spermatogemme, and interprets Neumann's figures confirmatory of Von Ebner in the same way. Merkel's "Stiitzzellen" he identifies as his " follicle- cells" altered by reagents.

The subsequent researches of Helman (1880), Krause, and Nussbaum among Vertebrates need only be mentioned as essenti- ally confirmatory of the observations of La Valette. Meyer's careful observations (1880) also led him to the same general view, with the important difference, suggested by one of the preceding authors, that the " follicle cells" of La Valette were not inert as he supposed, but the earliest stages of his spermatogonia and spermatogemme. Klein's views (1881) have perhaps most relation to those of Sertoli.

Some important work was meanwhile being done among Inverte- brates. In 1877 F. E. Schultze described spermatogenesis in the Sponge Halisarea,—a germinal cell, analogous to that which gives rise to an ovum, becoming covered by an epithelium, and divid- ing into a multitude of segments, each of which becomes drawn out into a spermatozoon. In 1844 Meckel had described the sper- matozoa of the Snail as arising superticially from a mother-cell, and this view had been confirmed by various authors. In 1879 Duval described in the same animal the spermatocytes as arising by the endogenous division of a mother-cell, and subsequently coming to its surface, aud Hallez described an essentially similar process in some Planarians. Graff, however, found in other species that no remnant survived, but that the whoie of the spermatogonia became converted into spermatocytes. In 1880 Blomfield investi- gated the processin the Earthworm, his results resembling rather those of Von Ebner (fig. 4) than those of La Valette. Strongly em- phasizing, however, the importance of the nutritive basal cell or spermatoblast of Von Ebner, he proposed yet another nomenclature. In a subsequent paper (1882) he describes the process in the Snail and the Frog. The former agrees substantially with the Worm, but in the Frog a hollow spermatogemma arises; each of its cells elongates to form a spermatozoon ; these while still immature arrange them- selves in bundles round one of the more

superficial cells, which "become blastophoral corpuscles,"—a view which recalls Merkel's explanation of Ven Ebner's spermatoblasts, mentioned above, viz., that the spermatozoa only became temporarily lodged in their recesses after completing their development.

In this respect the view of Renson (1882) is especially interesting. He describes the follicular cells of La Valette as segmenting into

Fie. 5 (after Renson.)—1, follieular cells; 2, spermatogemma; 3-8, separate nematoblasts developing into spermatozoa; 9, nematoblasts grouped on sup- porting eell; 10-11, successive stages of the penetration of the young sper- matozoa, ,

"multinuclear cysts" (spermatogemme), of which the constituent

"nematoblasts " develop into young spermatozoa. These immature

nematoblasts group themselves round the extremity of certain long projecting epithelial cells, the supporting cells (or "cellules de soutien," obviously the spermatoblasts of Von Ebner), and actually sink into their protoplasm to complete their development. When fully developed, the heads of the young spermatozoa have attained the base of the supporting cell, but this now elongates and bears them anew to the lumen of the duct, where new nematoblasts are by this time waiting to take their place (fig. 5).

The researches of Hermann (1882) in Elasmobranchs are broadly confirmatory of those of Semper, while those of Jensen and of Swaen and Masquelin (1883) are especially corroborative of the views of La Valette. The latter are, however, of importance as tend- ing towards reconciliation. The primitive ampulle being formed, the "male ovules" and the follicular cells are henceforth distinct: the former segment into spermatogemme ; the latter (at first form- ing incomplete envelopes to the male ovule) mostly disappear, save one which travels downwards until it lies between the wall of the ampulla and the spermatogemma, thus constituting its "basilar cell." The spermatogemma meanwhile is developing a central

cavity (“loge caudale”), from which the tails of the incipient spermatozoa or “nematoblasts” project into the lumen of the duct. he basilar cell has also been enlarging, and fusing with the intercellular substance of the spermatogemma; the nematoblasts thus come to be plunged into the basilar cell, and sink downwards towards its nucleus ; but this again elongates to expel them. In the Salamander these follicular cells form a complete envelope to the male ovules during their whole segmenta- tion and subsequent evolution. In Mammals the male ovule divides into an active and a temporarily inert portion (follicular cell of La Valette, germinative cell of Sertoli and Renson) ; the former segments into the spermatogemma, of which the resultant nematoblasts plunge into the basilar cells, much as described by Renson. They compare the intercellular substance of the sper- matogemma to the blastophor described by Blomfield in Worms, and regard the follicular cells as a secondary addition peculiar to Vertebrates, and homologous with the follicular cells of their ova.

The first step towards any understanding of the process of spermatogenesis amid this maze of controversy is to collate the various observations ; hence the present attempt to summarize the main observations ou the subject, and afford a key to the nomencla- ture. But how shall we reconcile the different theories ? Each author formulates his own view of spermatogenesis, and sometimes even admits only asingle method (e.g., Von Ebner, Blomfield, &c.); yet, unless we attach considerably greater weight to the observations of at least a majority of all these workers than they sometimes incline to grant to those of each other, the literature and iconography of histology become of little worth. Since La Valette, however,

most observers have admitted the existence of several methods ;

ae ODRy £ BOARD, {XO o ™ ron.0′ +9 Cagaad?

OA c D

B

Ragdec :

IA AG ro onOM |

Fig. 6.—Hypothetical comparison of oogenesis and spermatogenesis. The forms of ovum segmentation on the upper line represent in very diagrammatic form —(A) complete equal segmentation, (B) total but unequal segmentation, (C) centrolecithal, (D) partial, with the blastoderm cells distinctly marked off from the yolk, (E) partial, with the blastoderm eells indistinetly marked off, (F) in- cipient epibolie gastrula form. The lower line of figures represent in similar diagrammatie form different modes of spermatogenesis—(A') spermatogemma or spermosphere, (B') spermatogonium of La Valette, with large nutritive sperm-yolk or blastophor, (C') spermatoblasts round central mass in Weliz, (D') spermatoblasts distinctly separated off from supporting eell, (E') spermato- blast of Von Ebner, (F') spermatogenesis as described by Semper in Elasmo- braneh; these may be termed respectively (A') regular sperm morula, (B') with large yolk cell, (C') centrolecithal form, (D') and (E') sperm-blastoderm, (F') sperm-obgastrula (invagination of preeeding inverted).

the homology—indced the primordial identity of the primitive germinal cells—of male ovule with female ovule has been often pointed out, and the general resemblance of the process of spermatogenesis to that of segmentation has been noted, and even accented by the use of terms like sperm-morula, sperm-blastula, &c. But it is not enough to make such a comparison in general terms ; it must be either susceptible of definite refutation or con- firmation by appeal to details; and the present writer has hence elsewhere attempted to compare the various modes of eee: genesis with the corresponding modes of segmentation of the ovum, and so reconcile the conflict of testimony and opinion upon the subject. (8)

Ontogeny of the Spermatozoon.—The origin of the spermatozoon from the spermatocyte is, as we have seen above, a phenomenon of considerable complexity. It has long been known to arise from the nucleus and the tail from the protoplasm, and Flemming in 1880 gave further precision to our knowledge by tracing the head of the

REPRODUCTION

spermatozoon of Salamandra from the chromatin of the nucleus. Various observers had also noted, besides the nucleus, the appear- ance of a small denser mass of protoplasm within the spermatocyte, the " accessory corpuscle" (Nebenkern, corpuscle précurseur), but its origin and fate have scarcely yet been settled with complete clear- ness. It appears, however, to arise from the nucleus, the remaining portion of the nucleus going to form the main portion of the head, while a film of superjacent protoplasm stretches over it, thickens somewhat to form the middle piece, and becomes drawn out into the filamentous tail, which frees itself from the remains of its sper- matocyte and swims away (8 to 8 in fig. 5). Von Brunn has recently described in Birds the origin of this accessory corpuscle with especial clearness by the division of the nucleus of the developing spermato- zoon. In Mammalia the "cap" of the young spermatozoon is de- scribed by Renson as nucleus, and by others as protoplasm, and it has been compared by many authors to the polar vesicle of the ovum. In Plagiostome Fishes Semper describes, and others con- firm, the existence of an additional nucleus, or " problematic body," which appears to correspond to the sum of the accessory corpuscles of all the spermatozoa, and this, after their escape, has been shown by Swaen and Masquelin to fuse with the nucleus of the basilar cell. The resemblance of this embryonic and transi- tory structure to the permanent post-nuclear segment of the curious almost amceboid spermatozoon of Ascaris is closely sugges- tive of their homology, and it is also interesting to note, in figures of the developing spermatozoa of Seclachians, their considerable resemblance to the fringed adult spermatozoa of many Platyhel- minthes, (8)

The Ovum.

History.—From the earliest times naturalists have of course been familiar with the form and function of the ova of a great'number of animals; the only seriously disput- able question (excepting that of spontaneous generation) has been that of the like origin of the embryo in Mammals. The history of the discovery is a curious one. Galen had described the human ovaries as testes muliebres, but the term ovary is due to Steno

(1664), who like our most modern investigators started in his comparisons from the corresponding organs in Sharks and Rays. In 1672 Regner de Graaf, in a remarkable work upon the structure of the ovary and its accessory organs, not only described in the ovary in Birds and Mammals the follicles which now bear his name, and which he regarded as the ova, but made the generalization of the universal occurrence of ova through- out the animal kingdom, and even observed the ovum in the oviduct of the Rabbit. His opinion, however, was overborne by the authority of his more famous countryman Leeuwenhoek, who regarded not the oviduct but the ovary, and more precisely the corpus lutewm, as the seat of de- velopment of the embryo. The observation of De Graaf was repeated at the end of last century by Cruikshank, and again by Prévost and Dumas. The definite establishment of our present knowledge of the Mammalian ovum dates only from 1827, when Von Baer clearly traced the ovum from the uterus back to its earliest appearance in the ovi- duct, and thence to its origin within the Graafian follicle. Piirkinje had meanwhile (1825) described the '" germinal vesicle" in the Chick, Coste showed its occurrence in the Mammalian ovum, and Wagner discovered (1836) the "germinal spot" in Mammalian and other ova. (9)

Mass and Chemical Composition of the Ovum.—The absence of any extensive measurements of the ovum in the various groups, either absolutely or in comparison with the bulk of the parent, renders it impossible to generalize with any great degree of definiteness. While from some comparisons it is at once apparent that the higher the organization the larger the ovum, many inde- pendently variable factors affect this, e.g., the size, organi- zation, or maturity of the parent, the duration of stay in the oviduct, and the climate and other surroundings. Examples of such variation are readily seen; it is natural that self-supporting larval forms should start with smaller food-yolk than those which develop before leaving the egg, and among placental Mammals that the continuous supply of nutriment from the parental resources should

supersede what would otherwise require to be a gigantic store of yolk.

Our as yet crude analyses of ova of course reveal the presence of numerous highly nutritive substances, both albuminous and fatty—none, however, characteristic of the ovum alone. The general analysis of the Fowl's yolk is quoted by Hensen as follows :—water 47:2 per cent., albumin stuffs 15-6, ethereal extracts 31:4, alcoholic extract 4°8, ash 1 =100,—these results of course covering an unknown degree of complexity. Thus numerous more or less distinct albuminoid substances have been described by different authors—vitellin, ichthin, ichthidin, emydin, &ec., while nuclein seems to be of special importance ; the ethereal extract yields very distinct fats, not only non- nitrogenous, but nitrogenous (e.g., lecithin); cholesterin and many other complex products of anabolic and kata- bolic change are also present ; and so on. The subject is at present peculiarly unfit for profitable summarization, and details must be sought from the bibliography. (10)

Oogenesis.—Since the different modes of origin of the ova in the various groups are at once less complicated and in general outline less debateable than the corresponding process of spermatogenesis, in regard to which the state of opinion is so unsettled, a much less detailed account must here suffice, especially since a review of the different processes in any detail would involve an unwieldy com- pression of the available summaries of Balfour and others. Ouly a few of the more interesting and suggestive examples can be here mentioned.

The origin of the ova within the mesoderm of the Sponge, which has been already referred to, is obviously one of the simplest cases, recalling the occurrence of reproductive cells in such a sub- Metazoan form as Volvow. In regard to the Celentera the con- troversy over Van Beneden's hypothesis of the endodermic origin of the ova has been already mentioned; and in connexion with this Weismann's theory may be noted, according to which in most Hydroids the reproductive cells are only differentiated late in life, so that the actual germinal substance or mother-protoplasm is not present from the first in cellular form but in molecule groups, scattered among the somatic cells and spread perhaps over various asexual generations, to be gathered up at some favourable epoch and in the most convenient situation in the definite form of ova.

In the group of Vermes the general history is that some favour- ably situated cells of the epithelial lining of' the coelom proliferate, enlarge, assume the characters of ova, and fall off into the body- cavity. A simple instance of this in Tomopteris has been already referred to (fig. 1).

Sagitta furnishes a very suggestive illustration of oogenesis—where one half of the primitive reproductive cell goes to form the ovary and the other half the testis. In Bonellia we find a beautiful exainple of the very frequent subordination of several reproductive cells to the perfecting of one. Iu each mass of possible ova (which arise from the division of primitive germinal cells situated round the ventral vessel just above the nerve cord) only one—adjoining the stalk and therefore near the source of nutrition—becomes a differentiated ovum, while the others atrophy. In Platyhclminthes the later stages of oogenesis are especially interesting, because the nutritive equipment of the ovarian ova is in many cases partially furnished by the direet absorption of some of the cells of the yolk- gland or vitellarium, which is itself probably a degenerate portion of the ovarian tract in which over-nutrition has checked repro- duction. Thus the ovum comes to be the result of a number of cells. Weismann's interesting observations on the winter-eges of some Crustaceans afford beautiful illustration of the subordination of a large number of germinal cells to the nutrition of a few, while in Mollusca this nutrition of the ovum is otherwise effected by the direet passage of food-material from the ordinary epithelial cells of the ovarian pouches.

The oogenesis of Insects, which has been the subject of so much discussion, is chiefly characterized by the very frequent presence in

° fr 'a a eof,

ee e %O:° 8

© 7 @ ene Pod ®e90°% ~eeeo®

Fic, 7.—Formation of follicular nuclei (after Will). A, B, division of nucleus in morula fashion; C, nuclef have travelled to periphery; D, germinal vesicle formed from residue of division.

the ovarian tube of a large number of germinal cells which are wholly nutritive, and which serve to equip the minority of truly reproductive cells. Such cases inevitably raise the long-standing dispute as to the unicellular character of the ovum,—some authors

REPEREODTC TIO

[ANIMAL.

(c.g., Brandt) describing the ovum as a cell of the second order, formed from a complex of the primitive nuclei or "ooblasts," which are combined in the terminal chamber of the ovarian tube, and which unite to form on the one hand the germinal vesicle of the ovum with enveloping protoplasm, and on the other the surrounding folli- culareells. One of the most recent discussions of Insect oogenesis is that of Will, who maintains the origin of the follicular nuclei from a multiple division of the original primitive nucleus or ooblast, the residue forming the germinal vesicle, a mode of origin previously maintained by other investigators both of oogenesis and spermato- genesis (fig. 7). In some Lchinodermata, and in other groups, it has been repeatedly observed that the undifferentiated germinal cells form the elements of the follicular epithelium round the ova.

A debateable but suggestive theory of oogenesis has been pro- pounded, especially by Nussbaum and Weismann, who maintain that in many cases the reproductive cells do not arise as differentia- tions of somatic cells, but are marked off from the first, in some cases even before the formation of the germ-layers. According to this ingenious hypothesis,—supported, however, by little direct observation—the reproductive elements would form a continuous immortal chain connecting the highest forms with their Protozoan aneestry, whose direet protoplasmic continuity has been of late also strongly insisted upon (see Protozoa), |

Dispute has also arisen as to the origin of the follicular cells of the Tunicata, some deriving them from external juxtaposition of germinal cells, and others from migration of nuclei from within outwards, as in some Insecta ; and a similar uncertainty prevails as to the nature and

origin of certain cell-like bodics (“ test-cells ”) which appear within the yolk.

In the Craniata the ova appear in the germinal epithelium of the ovarian ridge, which is always in contact with the stroma, They differ from the surrounding cells at first mainly in their greater size, being possessed of abundant protoplasm and a large granular nucleus. asin in number by division or by con- tinued differentiation of other epithelial cells, the primitive ova usually form into masses, as the result of which some atrophy and others predominate. The permanent ova once formed and defined are surrounded by a special follicle, probably resulting in most cases from superjacent epithelial cells.

None of the disputes above referred to can be said to invalidate the general view of the essentially unicellular nature of the ovum (see below); and a discussion of the numerous speculations on the more fundamental problem of the stages of sexual differentiation is deferred to the article Sex. (11)

Structure of the Ovum.—While the structure of a sufti- ciently young ovum is simply that of an ordinary embry- onic cell, its protoplasm being naked and often amoeboid, and provided with a nucleus and nucleolus, the developed ovum has usually a quite characteristic appearance. Not only have its parts usually undergone considerable enlarge- ment in size, but also in details of minute structure ; the nucleus and nucleolus are, however, still recognizable as the germinal vesicle and germinal spot, while the protoplasm has usually become modified by the presence of a more or less considerable quantity of food-yolk, and by the de- velopment of an external membrane.

The young amoeboid phase of so many (perhaps all) ova was first well described in the egg of Hydra (fig. 8, 6), in which the nucleus and nucleolus, the lobed pseudopodial processes of the protoplasm, and the abundant yolk spherules can be well made out. A somewhat later phase of development is well shown in the next figure of the egg of a Sea-Urchin, in which the process of encystment has begun, and the protoplasm is seen with its amceboid processes radiating through the incipient egg-membrane, while in fig. 8, d the protoplasm has no longer an amceboid

Fig. 8.—a, diagram of ovum showing granular protoplasm, nucleus (germinal vesicle), and nucleolus (germinal spot); 6, amceboid oyum of Hydra (from Balfour—after Kleinenberg) ; ¢, early ovum of Toxopneustes variegatus, with pseudopodia-like processes (from Balfour after Selenka) ; d, ovum of Toxo- bneustes lividus, more nearly ripe (from Balfour—after Hertwig.)

character—the investing membrane or zona radiata is regularly perforated by radiating canals, of which the

pseudopodial origin and the nutritive function are equally obvious. 'The resemblance of such stages to definite Protozoan types is not a little remarkable; thus, while, in fig. 8, b is perfectly amceboid, the resemblance of ¢ to a Heliozoon or of d to a Gregarine is almost equally striking.

The ovum is rarely destitute of egg-membranes, but these may be of very various kinds: thus we may have a vitelline membrane proper, formed by the protoplasm of the ovum, or a chorion formed by the cells of the follicle ; or secondary membranes may be present (alone or in addi- tion to the primary membrane) like the shell of a Bird's egg, which is formed by the walls of the oviduct, or the shell of many Trematode ova, which is secreted by a special gland.

Any or all of these membranes may be provided with a special aperture, the micropyle, first discovered by Keber, but this is by no means universally present, as he supposed. This may correspond to the point of attachment of the immature ovum, or may arise elsewhere ; in the first case its function is obviously nutritive, though later it may also serve for the entrance of the spermatozoon.

The identification of the ovum as a cell, and of its germinal vesicle and spot as nucleus and nucleolus, although a result only established after prolonged contro- versy, and of capital importance, is sufficiently familiar. The invaluable labours of the older generation of embryo- logists from Von Baer to Allen Thomson, and even the still classical

monographs of such recent workers as Waldeyer or Ludwig (1874), can only be alluded to; this department of the subject is, however, of peculiarly easy access, thanks to the exceptionally excellent state of its bibliography, and to the recent discussions of Balfour, Hensen, and others. Much, however, remains to be ascer- tained respecting the finer histology of the ovum, and many investigations are at present in active progress, along the lines of that more general inquiry into the minute structure of cells in general which has of recent years been again becoming of paramount interest in morpho- logical research.

The protoplasm of the ovum may, as has been said, acquire a very varying quantity of food yolk,—may become, that is to say, more or less closely packed with highly refracting spherules of modified protoplasm (see egg of Hydra, fig. 8, 6), which may again present various morphological differentiations, as in Ascaris (fig. 11). And, as explained below under segmentation, it is with regard to the presence, amount, and position of the food- yolk that the important varieties of that process are to be understood.

The great differentiation both of protoplasm and of yolk in the animal series, as might be expected, appears to exhibit all gradations from the most simple amceboid state of a more or less granulated or semi-fluid mass to the most problematical complexity. Of this the best known instance is probably that of the egg of Ascaris, described by Van Beneden (vide infra, pp. 416 sg.). Not only has a protoplasmic network been frequently described in both holoblastic and meroblastic ova, but a radiate struc- ture as well,—the former evidently corresponding to the stroma first described by Frommann and Heitzmann and subsequently by so many authors in both animal and vegetable cells, while the latter appearance recalls the striated appearance of the ectoplasm of certain ameeboid organisms described by Strasburger. The concentric differentiation of the ovum has also often been described, and is lately well discussed by Flemming, Brass, and others. Thus Pfliiger, in the half-ripe ovum of the Cat, describes the central mass as clear, the cortical layer as rich in granules; Van Beneden in the egg of the Bat

enumerates two similar layers surrounded by an almost granular cortical layer; while Flemming himself, in the ovum of the Rabbit, describes a coarsely granular region around the nucleus, a clearer central region finely granular and with a reticulated structure, and a coarsely granular cortical region. We have still, however, to learn how far such differentiations in structure—reticulate, radial, and concentric—are constant for individual or general cases, and how far they may be permanent or merely incidental to certain phases of development.

In these regards the recent publications of Carnoy and Brass are of special interest—the former on account of its minuteness of micrographic detail, the latter in its attempt at physiological interpretation. 'The results of the former will be best understood from his own figures (fig. 9).

Fic. 9 (after Carnoy).—A, two cells from the leaf pareneliyma of Allium Cepa, showing on the right the nucleus uninjured, with its nuclear network and two nucleoli, and on the left a nucleus in which the razor has unrolled or dragged away the eoiled filament of nuclein, but left a protoplasmie reticulum with nucleolus; B, intestinal epithelium eell of an Insect, showing in the proto- plasm a radiating reticulum with granular semifluid contents, and in the nucleus a similar structure, but with a convoluted nuclein filament which has shrunk together; C, cell of the larval genital gland of a parasitie Fly, show- ing various forms of protoplasmic network formed in different cells, and in the nucleus the same distinctness of its finely granular protoplasmie reticulum and its eontained striated nuelcin filament; D, yonng ovum of beetle, in whieh nuelvin filament has broken down into spherules.

Brass, starting from the familiar structure of an amoeba, with its clear and granular ectoplasm, from which the pseudopodia are emitted, its semi-fluid and highly granular endoplasm around the nucleus, and the less granular intermediate zone, assigns to these definite physiological functions,—to the first that of contractility (Bewegungs- plasma), to the second that of nutrition (Lrnahrungs- plasma), and to the third that mainly of respiration (Athmungsplasma, Nahrungsschicht). He holds that some such concentric disposition of the protoplasm is a normal and

constant fact of cell-structure, and insists upon it with special reference to the ovum. From his somewhat vague and diffuse development of these views, it must suffice here to note his opinion that the chromatin of the nucleus, as well as the protoplasmic reticulum, and in fact all the former constituents of the cell, are of quite secondary importance to the colourless protoplasm. 'The former is to him in fact no more than reserve material, while to the latter he assigns all active functions,—thus substantially reviving the view so long and energetically maintained by Beale. The recent observations of Wielowiejski may also be noted in this connexion, as he not only brings his con- tribution to the ontogeny of the ovum, but to some extent also distinguishes a regional adaptation of its protoplasmic structure to its functions.

From the rapid succession of new contributions to the solution of the problem of egg and cell structure might be gathered many other points of interest, morphological and physiological, empirical and speculative. Thus, for in- stance, Sabatier describes senile degeneration in Ascidian ova, an observation of wide suggestiveness ; while, again, on the important problem of the relation of nucleus to protoplasm there are many recent discussions, ¢g., from

Flemming and Strasburger, Pfliiger and Hertwig; the solution, however, is not complete. Again, can we recognize in the ovum any indication of the position of the future embryo—any fixed points, anterior and pos- terior, lateral or even polar—further, of course, than the obvious distinction due to the presence of yolk? After the old theory of "evolution" of the embryo, according to which the egg contained the complete organism in miniature, had been finally replaced by that of epigenesis, the wholly undifferentiated form of the ovum seems to have become tacitly assumed. Recent observers, ¢., Van Beneden (see below), have, however, been so far reviving the old view in that they endeavour to distin- guish, even in the unfertilized ovum, the position of the ends and sides of the embryo; others dispute this, and an interesting controversy is in progress. The specula- tion that a more or less considerable share in the differen- tiation of the ovum might be due to the separation of its

various constituents according to their different specific gravities—at first apparently emitted by Jiger,—has also reappeared in this regard. Pfliiger has observed the segmentation of Frogs' ova fixed in various positions, and describes the plane of first segmentation as constantly vertical, whatever might be its angle to the morphological axis of the ovum, uniting black and white poles. Devel- opment too was usually normal, save that when the upper hemisphere was entirely white abnormality and death followed, and even if inversion was less complete segmenta- tion often stopped. Further experiments led him to the conclusion that the nervous system, and correspondingly other organs, may develop from any portion of the egg- substance—that the egg in short is "isotropic." Certain limitations, however, appeared: the blastopore never arose on the upper hemisphere, nor (like the nervous system) ever on the black region, but both always at the intersec- tion of the white area with the third equatorial plane of segmentation. This he terms the point of crystallization of the specialized organism, and goes on to speculate as to the molecular structure of the ovum.

These results have, however, been the subject of keen criticism. Thus Roux showed that the specific gravity of the black pole is distinctly less than that of the white, and found that on eliminating the action of gravity by the use of a centrifugal machine the development remained normal, and on repeating Pfliiger's own fundamental observations described the axis of segmentation as coincid- ing with that of the ovum. After similarly eliminating light, heat, and earth-magnetism, he sums up in precisely opposite terms to Pfliiger, who had laid all stress on the influence of the forces of the environment, and regards development as purely a process of self-differentiation. O. Hertwig also maintains that the influence of gravity is only a secondary one, the plane of division being for him determined by the position of the axis of the dividing nucleus, and this again having a definite relation to the form and state of differentiation of the surrounding proto- plasm. He admits, however, the indirect importance of gravity on eggs having a yolk, and so leaves the question still to a considerable extent open. In another paper he adopts Pfliiger's conception of the isotropy of the ovum, holding that the yolk is not so organized that from any definite region of it a definite organ arises, but that the nucleus is the sole centre of activity and control. It is thus evident

that a reinvestigation is needed which would embrace the whole question of geotropism. See Paysio- LoGY (VEGETABLE). (12)

Maturation of the Ovum.—Polar Bodies.—The period of development and nutrition of the ovum may be regarded as complete when the full size and complex structure above described have been reached, and in this state it

REPEODOGTION

[ANIMAL,

most frequently leaves the body of the parent. In the majority of cases at least, new changes have still to be gone through before fertilization takes place, still more development ; and a series of important structural modi- fications, doubtless the expression of extensive functional rearrangements, takes place. To this new and obscure phase of the life- history of the ovum the term maturation has conveniently been applied.

Although some of these phenomena have long been familiar to embryologists, the classical investigations are the comparatively recent ones of Biitschli, Oscar Hertwig, and especially Fol (1877); more lately those of Sabatier, of Flemming, and above all of Van Beneden. If we postpone details, the main facts of the process as until recently understood can be most readily grasped from Fol's figures of the ovum of the Starfish, of which the most important are copied in fig. 10. In the new-laid egg the germinal

Fia, 10.—A, ripe ovum of Asterias glactalis, with excentric germinal vesicle and spot; B-E, gradual metamorphosis of germinal vesicle and spot; F, de- tachment of first polar body and withdrawal of remaining part of nuclear spindle within the ovum; G, portion of living ovum with first polar body; H, formation of second polar body; I, after formation of do., showing the remaining internal half of the spindle in the form of two clear vesicles; K, ovum with two polar bodies and radial strie round female pronuctleus; L, expulsion of polar body. (A-K after Fol; L after Hertwig.)

vesicle is at first a clearly defined sphere, with well- marked membrane, reticulum, and germinal spot. It begins, however, to become irregular and changeful in form, its membrane and reticulum meanwhile disappear- ing, with the apparent dissolution of a portion of its con- tents in the yolk. The germinal spot also vanishes, and two ill-defined clear spots are alone distinguishable in the yolk. Treatment with reagents shows these clear spots to correspond to two star-like figures like those of a certain stage of the division of nucleus of an ordinary cell, while in a somewhat later stage a nuclear spindle is shown near the surface of the egg. The upper portion of this is segmented off (surrounded by very little of the protoplasm of the ovum) as a polar body, while the lower portion of the body remains as the "female pronucleus," and may be seen surrounded by radial striz. Two or even more polar bodies may be formed, but they never take any part in the subsequent life-history of the ovum, and sooner or later disappear.

In view of the profound theoretic importance of this subject, it is necessary to summarize some of the most important recent observations. Thus Balbiani and Weismann (1882) describe the occurrence of polar vesicles in the ova of Insects, in which they had long been supposed not to occur, and Flemming (1885) repre- sents a nuclear figure whieh he regards as corresponding to at any rate the first stage of the formation of a polar vesicle, in the ova of Mammals, at the period of bursting of the Graafian follicle. Such researches practically complete the chain of evidence for the generalization that the process of maturation of the ovum is essentially similar in all classes of Metazoa, and this not only in its initial stages of internal rearrangement or modification, but even in its later stage of polar vesiele formation. The absence of polar vesicles in parthenogenetic ova (predicted on theoretic grounds) om, however, possible in some cases, but is by no means certain in all.

Our knowledge of the process of maturation has been much extended and modified by the recent elaborate monograph of E. Van Beneden (1883). He finds the egg of Ascaris to show not only two definite poles-—a "pole of impregnation" and an opposite "neutral pole "»—but some indication of the anterior and posterior regions and consequently of the right and

left sides of the embryo. The substance of the ovum is also remarkably differentiated, —that

ANIMAL. |

of the "polar disk" alone exhibiting a vertical striation, and differentiating into two layers, superficial and subjacent (termed achromophilous and chromophilous respectively). The subjacent vitellus is distinguished into several layers, (central, intermediate, and cortical), and contains yolk elements of three distinct kinds, while the enveloping protoplasm has a distinctly reticulated and fibrillar structure, like the stroma of so many animal and vegetable cells, The germinal vesicle is practically homogeneous save that the portion surrounding its eccentric germinal spot is distinguished into an investing portion or spherical envelope, the " prothyalo- soma," and an "accessory portion," which usually contains one or two "pseudo-nucleoli." In the ripe egg Van Bencden describes new complexities within the germinal spot; this consists of two juxtaposed quadrilateral disks, each containing four chromatin globules, united by a substance having less affinity for colouring matter. Radiating from these two -disks, achromatin threads arise in the prothyalosoma, but stress is laid on the fact that no grouping of the chromatin elements into a star-like figure takes place. The spherical shape of the germinal spot is now modified by the intrusion on each side of a large homogeneous droplet from the vitellus into the prothyalosoma, so that in optical section it comes to have a T-shape, the accessory portion being mainly compressed to form the stalk of the T. At this stage the spermatozoon usually commences to work its way into the ovum, but does not yet affect the germinal vesicle or germinal spot, which proceed to the formation of polar globules. The T-shaped gradually passes into the " ypsiliform " figure, so called from its resemblance to the Greek Y. Its steadily diverging branches, which are formed from the prothyalosoma, move upwards till they reach the surface of the vitellus, their fibrillar structure already noted meanwhile becoming well marked. Each bundle bears one of the two groups of four chromatin globules which compose the germinal spot.

Bo

f=

1 ae Fins ae \ ike?) VAL See \ fe. Ngee | Fre. 11.—Fecundation of ovum (after Van Beneden), A, ovum before entrance of spermatozoon (showing complexity of structure); B, deformation of ger- minal vesicle on penetration of spermatozoon s; C, prothyalosoma with two chromatin disks and axial fibres; D, E, F, later stages of the ypsiliform figure;

- ee pseudo-karyokinctic figure; li, I, J, K, expulsion of first polar globole.

Next the vertical branch of the ypsiliform figure swings upwards to the surface, and a new branch is formed as a continuation of the same line; the whole figure is thus cross-shaped, with the prothyalosoma in the centre, but this cross soon disappears, leaving the prothyalosoma with its two chromatin groups. These are now divided, by a plane tangential to the surface of the vitellus, into two equal parts, and the upper of these, containing of course half the prothyalosoma with half of each of the two chromatin disks, becomes the first polar globule. Van Beneden lays great stress on the fact that this plane of division is not transverse to the oblique spindle formed by the diverging branches of the Y, as was to be expected from the views of all previous observers, but on the contrary is parallel to it.

The remaining portion of the prothyalosoma with its two chromatin disks, together with the surrounding protoplasm, now proceeds to the separation of the second polar vesicle. Despite differences in detail, the essential facts are the same: a spindle with a star-like figure at each end is formed; this at first lies radially in the vitellus, but afterwards becomes superficial, and its division takes place as before by an axial not an equatorial plane.

A still later and also elaborate discussion is due to Sabatier (1884), While combating the peculiar views suggested by

Weismann and others as to the polar globules of Insects (as that they re- enter the ovum to form the rudiments of the future repro- ductive organs), he admits that they may be emitted at both poles of the ovum, and may either break up, be reabsorbed, or even in some cases form peculiar structures surrounding the ovum (e.g., the follicular cells of Ascidians). He describes in Buccinum, &c., the extrusion of somewhat amceboid masses of om

clear protoplasm at several distinct points and frequently without the appearance of any nuclear spindle; and these may even re- peatedly divide. He holds that the centri- fugal extrusion of elements from ova is much more general than is usually recognized, and Fic. 12 (after Sabatier).— distinguishes these into three kinds :—(1) Ov¥™ of Buccinumunda- 'globules précoces," which usually go to form the elements of the follicle ; (2) " glob- ules tardifs," which appear later; and (3) true polar vesicles, which alone are associated with karyokinetic changes of the nucleus.

Like Van Beneden, he notes that polar vesicle formation is not strictly comparable to ordinary cell-division in being not trans- verse but longitudinal to the nuclear spindle.

From this point little advance has been made, though careful reviews of the subject are due to Flemming, J. T. Cunningham, and others. (13)

Fertilization or Impregnation.of the Ovum.—The funda- mental generalization now so familiar—that the process of fertilization for plant and animal alike lies in the material union of both sexual products—although said to have been propounded by Alemzon (580 B.c.), and even described by Hartsoeker (1750), is pointed out by Hensen to be essentially due in the first place to the experimental re- searches on plant hybridization of Kélreuter (1761). Jacobi soon afterwards artificially fertilized the eggs of Trout and Salmon, but the most important and really convincing work was that of Spallanzani (1780), who experimented on the Frog, Tortoise, and Bitch. He unfortunately, however, concluded that spermatozoa might be absent without pre- venting fertilization, and ascribed all fertilizing powers to their fluid medium, so establishing an error which required for its elimination many successive researches.

Prévost and Dumas (1824) showed that filtration really deprived the seminal fluid of its powers. Martin Barry (1843) actually observed spermatozoa within the zona pellucida of the Rabbit's ovum ; Leuckart (1849) repeated both pre- ceding observations in the Frog; Nelson (1852) observed the entrance of the spermatozoa into the ovum of Ascaris; while Keber (1853) discovered the micropyle in the ovum of the Mussel, and watched the passage of the spermatozoon through it into the yolk. It only remained for these results to be confirmed by the high authority of Bischoff and Allen Thomson (1854); and the knowledge of the subject thus reached its second stage, where it practically remained for nearly twenty years.

Aided by the advance of histological technique, a new plane was reached (1875-76) by the brilliant researches of Van Beneden on the ovum of the Rabbit, and of O. Hertwig and Fol on Echinoderm ova. The spermato-zoon! was thus shown not to disappear into the yolk, but to form from its head or nucleus the "male pronucleus," which meets and fuses with the "female pronucleus," as the germinal vesicle is termed, after the extrusion of the polar body. This new " conjugation-nucleus" soon ex-hibits karyokinetic changes and divides, and the segmenta- tion of the ovum rapidly progresses. |

As a full account of these and other papers up to 1880 is given by Balfour (Zmbryology, vol. i.), it will suffice to note the more important subsequent researches, especially as those, though with

tum, showing extrusion of polar globules and the associated elevation of clear protoplasm.

1 That, though more than one spermatozoon may pass through the vitelline membrane, only one normally enters the vitellus and becomes a male pronucleus has been well made out by Hertwig, Fol, and others. In the rare cases where more spermatozoa than one force an entrance, Fol has observed the monstrous double segmentation of the ovum, and argues forcibly for the hypothesis that we have to look in this process of "polyspermy " for the explanation of numer- ous teratological and pathological changes.

XX. — 53

418

BRB Sooo Oo BEneees Oe ses,

0290.5 930

= LORE CORON” A

= ay My =e

Fig. 13 (after Fol).—A, spermatozoa in mucilaginous coat of ovum of Asterias glacialis, a prominence rising from surface of ovum towards a spermatozoon; in B they have all but met, and in C they have met; D, spermatozoon enters ovum through distinct opening; H, ovum showing polar vesicles, and approach of male and female pronuclei; E, F, G, later stages in coalescence of the two nuclei,

Oscar Hertwig had clearly enunciated in 1875 that “ fertilization depends upon the conjugation of two sexually differentiated nuclei.” This view has, however, lately (1888) been controverted by A. Schneider, who regards the radii whieh are seen in the ovum about the pronuclei as arising from the substance of the germinal vesicle alone, and who maintains the origin of the male pronucleus independently of the spermatozoon, which he believes to disappear. As Van Beneden, Nussbauin, and Flemming have since, however, successively controverted these views, Hertwig’s aceount of the process may safely be retained, at any rate with the slight modi- fication insisted on by Flemming, who prefers to describe the con- jugation-nueleus as arising from the union of “the chromatin of a male with that of a female nuclear body.”

In Van Beneden’s work on the fecundation of Ascaris the penetration of a single spermatozoon into the vitellus and its transmutation into the male pronucleus are copiously figured and deseribed. Most important, however, is perhaps his account of the formation and segmentation of the conjugation-nucleus. The female pronucleus undergoes changes resembling those preceding ordinary nuclear division; so also does the

male; and the ehromatin of each breaks up from the state of a single eontinuous and convoluted fibril into two V-shaped loops. The two pro-nuclear membranes now fuse ; and the resultant conjugation-nucleus thus contains four loops of chromatin, of which two are male and two female. Each loop now undergoes longitudinal division ; a nuclear spindle is meanwhile forming from the achromatin substance of the segmentation-nucleus, and this now proceeds to divide, but in such wise that each of the two daughter nuclei receives two of its four half loops of chromatin from the female and two from the male pronucleus. A circular furrow appears, dividing the ovum equatorially ; a cell plate like that of a vegetable cell arises in the same plane; and the two first blastomeres are soon completely formed, and proceed to redivide in the same way.

The results of Nussbaum are essentially similar so far as they go; Strasburger's recent work summarized below contains a thorough confirmation of these accounts of the process of fecunda- tion so far as plants are concerned ; while most recently (1885) 0? Hertwig has re-stated his original theorem with a discussion of its physiological aspects and consequences. (14)

Segmentation of the Ovum.—The process of segmenta- tion has already been repeatedly mentioned. As with the other histological problems presented by the ovum, our knowledge of its minute details is in a somewhat unsettled yet rapidly advancing state, due to the pro- gress of the wider inquiry into cell structure and cell division in general. The essential correspondence of the changes to be observed in the conjugation-nucleus and yolk with those of ordinary cell-division (see PRoTozoa, vol. xix. p. 833, fig. 1) has been worked out by many

Fic. 14—Regular segmentation of ovum (after Gegenbaur).

observers, and Van Beneden's more minute account of the process is sunimarized above. Our knowledge of its external features is of much older date, and has been com- paratively recently brought together by Balfour (Zmbryo- 'logy, i., chap. iii.); the present limits permit only the briefest summary.

In the simplest case—that of small ova destitute of food-yolk,—the ovum divides by a vertical plane into two segments or blastomeres, each of these again into two, and

EMreopvut Ton

| AMIMAL.

so on, and a mass of 4, 8, 16, 32, 64, &e., cells is thus formed, but in the resultant mulberry-mass or morula the cells are all equal and similar. Such segmentation is termed regular; commonly, however, the regularity and equality of ordinary cell-division is more or less interfered with by the presence of food-yolk. In this regard Balfour enunciates the valuable general law "that the velocity of segmentation in any part of the ovum is, roughly speak- ing, proportional to the concentration of the protoplasm there, and that the size of the segments is inversely pro- portional to the concentration of the protoplasm." Bear- ing this in mind, the varieties of segmentation are intelli- gible enough ; thus the unequal segnientation of the Frog's ovum (fig. 15) needs no further explanation. These two

Fria. 15.—Unequal segmentation of Freg's egg, (From Balfour—after Ecker.)

preceding types, in which segmentation is complete, were distinguished by Remak as "holoblastic," and were long looked upon as wholly distinct from '" meroblastic" ova like that of Fowls or most Fishes, in which segmentation is partial, .e., confined to a small area of the surface of the yolk. ° Balfour's law, how- ever, explains these cases as only an ex- aggeration of the pre- ceding case, due to the greater accumula- tion of food-yolk, and the consequent check to segmenta- tion at the lower or vegetative pole. Another form of partial segmentatien is presented by many Arthropods, in which the yolk occupies a central position within the ovum, and three varieties of this "centrolecithal" process are dis- tinguished—equal, unequal, and superficial.

While the ontogenetic process of segmentation in general and of regular segmentation in particular is usu- ally regarded as being a recapitulation of the phylogenetic development of the primitive Metazoon from its

Protozoan ancestor, the vast nutritive importance of the food-yolk, and the consequent high variability of its quantity in relation to the habits and circumstances both of parent and offspring, render its wide variations in detail a totally unsafe guide to affinities. A single genus may, in fact, exhibit extreme forms. (11)

Fig. 16 (after Balfour).—A, section of developing ovum of an Elasmobranch, showing meroblastic segmentation; B, optical section of centrolect- thal Crustacean ovum.

§ 3. SYSTEMATIC AND GENERAL EMBRYOLOGY.

While it is impossible to compress within the limits of the present article the subject-matter of a full treatise on embryology, an attempt must be made to touch in turn upon (1) the empirical facts, (2) the concrete inductions, and (3) the abstract generalizations of development.

1. A sketch of the history of this branch of the science is given under Empryoxoey (g.v.), while for detailed infor- mation as to the division and differentiation of the ovum in each group, and as to the more or less marked changes by which the resulting embryonic forms assume the adult organization, the reader must be referred to the separate articles (SponcEs, Hyprozoa, Motiusca, é&ec.), as well as to the classical work of Balfour. The more important empirical facts need thus only the briefest outline.

Protozoa, —Since the young Protozoon, whatever its mode of origin from the parent form may be, rarely differs from the latter

ANIMAL, |

except in size and phase of cell-life, there is little to be noted here in regard to the development of the group, except in such cases as Katallacta and Volvocineex, where a primitive attempt towards a more or less temporary multicellular form affords us a first hint of the Metazoan segmentation of the ovum.

Dicyemida.—In this degenerate and still somewhat problematical intermediate group the asexually produced ovum segments to form an embryo of great simplicity, where a few outer (ectodermal) cells cluster round a single inner (endodermal) one, and where we thus find the first differentiation of the embryo into the cell-layers constantly exhibited in the succeeding groups, though it is unsettled whether this represent the incipient or the degenerate Metazoan type.

CD oetea. —In a calcareous Sponge, such as Sycandra, the fertilized

ameeboid ovum segments within the parent to form a hollow blastosphere, most of the cells of which are clear and ciliated, and partially cover a number of larger granular cells,—the future endoderm and ectoderm respectively. In the free-swimming embryo the latter nutritive cells increase rapidly in size, and, growing ultimately over the locomotor and respiratory ciliated cells, cause them to become invaginated to form the endoderm. This invagination resulting in the obliteration of the ‘‘segmen- tation cavity” and the formation of the-“gastrula” stage is perfected as the young Sponge settles down and becomes fixed by processes from the amceboid ectoderm cells. The cilia of the endoderm disappear; the blastopore is obliterated ; between ectoderm and endoderm there appears a third germinal layer or mesoderm, and in it the calcareous spicules of the Sponge are developed. A perforation at the top of the inverted gastrula forms the exhalent aperture ; peripheral inhalent pores also arise ; and this renewed exposure of the endoderm cells to direct contact with the water is followed by their return to the ciliated form. See SPoNnGcEs. :

Celentera.—The generally equal segmentation of the ovum re- sults as usual in a solid or hollow morula. The formation of the two layers, as in some other groups, may occur either by invagina- tion, as above described, or by a process of separation of inner from outer, termed delamination. In most Celeniera the tissues which in higher groups are strictly mesodermal originate from the direct differentiation of the two primary layers. The larval form most constant in the Celentera is the planula (see Hyprozoa, vol. xii. p- 557). It is ciliated, two-layered, almost cylindrical, with a rudi- mentary digestive cavity, generally closed. For

discussion of the alternation of generations so characteristic of many Ccelenterates see Hyprozoa and Sex.

Vermes.—The development of the unjointed Worms is too varied to admit of general summary. In some we find illustration of that mode of gastrula formation (epibolic), so common in higher groups, where, owing to the large size of the food-packed endoderm cells, an actual invagination is impossible, but the ectoderm cells grow round the others and thus come to enclose them as in the more primitive process. In such a typical higher Worm as Lumbricus, the segmentation, which varies in regularity according to the species, results in the formation of a blastosphere with readily distinguishable ectoderm and endoderm ; the invagination of the latter results in a somewhat cylindrical gastrula. The blasto- pore narrows anteriorly to form the permanent mouth, while in some other Chetopods a similar narrowing in the opposite direction forms not the mouth but the anus. The mesoderm appears very early in the form of posteriorly situated cells on each side of the middle line, and soon two mesoblastic bands are formed extend- ing to the mouth. These are subsequently divided into blocks or somites, the anterior and posterior walls of two adjacent blocks uniting to form the cross partitions of the adult Worm, while the outer and inner walls form respectively the somatic and splanchnic layers. The ventral nerve cord results from the sinking in and union of two epiblastic thickenings, developed one on each side of a ventral furrow, while the supra-cesophageal ganglion has a distinct origin from a dorsal thickening. The somewhat isolated Sagitta affords good illustration of the formation of the body- cavity from two lateral lobes of the archenteron. The simple enteric cavity normally formed exhibits anteriorly a division into a middle lobe and two side pouches uniting behind in the single cavity. The middle lobe is separated off from lateral and posterior cavities as a blind tube which afterwards forms the alimentary canal; the side pouches form the body-cavity (sce TAPEWORMS, PLANARIANS, NEMERTINES, ANNELIDA, &c.).

Echinodermata.—The generally uniform segmentation results in a blastosphere, usually elongated in the direction of the axis of invagination.

of the archenteron, and the water-vascnlar vesicle which comes to lie round the oesophagus has a similar origin. For an outline of the nature of the larval forms and the passage of the embryonic organs into those of the adult the reader is referred to EoHINo- DERMATA.

Arthropoda.—The interesting Peripatus (see MyRiapopDa, vol. xvii. p. 116) exhibits in its development phenomena, sueh as that of the elongated blastopore gradually closing from the middle, so as to leave month and anus, and that of the surrounding nerve cord, which suggest affinities through the whole animal kingdom from Celentera on the one hand to Vertebrata on the 'other; but of these discussion is still far from ended. The development of the Insect ovum illustrates what is termed centrolecithal segmentation, where a single uniform layer of superficial cells encloses a nucleated but undivided central yolk mass. The blastoderm becomes thickened ventrally; and along the middle line of the ventral plate there appears a groove which is the seat of the mesoderm formation. The development of the Vertebrate amnion is recalled by the formation of two enveloping membranes from folds of the blastoderm, whieh arch over and coalesce over the ventral plate, and at the same time spread upwards to cover the dorsal integument from which they are eventually separated. Both disappear through absorption or rupture either before or during hatching. The inesoderm is divided into two lateral bands, and these into hollow somites, which together form the perivisceral cavity. As usual the outer layer of mesoderm follows the ecto- derm, the inner the endoderm, which probably arises from a secondary segmentation of the yolk. The ventral plate extends to a slight extent dorsally both before and behind, and on it the appendages appear as hollow outgrowths of ectoderm and endo- derm. The ventral nerve cord arises from two sunken thickenings of ectoderm, the trachee as invaginations of the same. The middle section of the alimentary tract is formed from endoderm, the anterior and posterior portions from ectodermic invaginations. For an account of larval metamorphosis, &c., see INsxcTs.

Crustacea.—In these the segmentation is usually centrolecithal, and results in a uniform blastoderm enelosing a eentral yolk mass without traces of division. The gastrula stage is represented by an invagination of a patch of the blastoderm, which forms the endoderm, and from which the mesodermic cells seem also to arise. A ventral thickening of ectoderm continnous with the invaginated portion forms the ventral plate on which the embryo is mapped out. Along it the nerve cord appears as a median thickening, and the sense organs have as usual a similar ectodermic origin. The mesoderm appears to form the nsual tissues (muscles, heart, &c.), but has apparently less definiteness of arrangement into layers and somites than is usually the case. The original invagination forms the mesenteron, and the lining endoderm cells absorb the yolk The antcrior and posterior portions of the alimentary tract are formed as usual by subsequent independent invaginations. Much less proportionally is known of the organogeny than of the very interesting and suggestive larval forms, for which see CrusTACEA.

Mollusca.—The typical Molluscan segmentation is markedly unequal, the disproportion between ectoderm and endoderm cells varying according to the proportion of food-yolk. The gastrula stage is more frequently reached by the growth of the ectoderm cells over the larger and fewer endoderm cells than by any actual invagination. The blastopore may close apparently towards either the oral or the anal extremity, forming mouth or anus or neither. In Cephalopoda the segmentation is confined toa germinal disk of formative material as in partially segmenting Vertebrate ova, though there are besides cells from the yolk which underlie the germinal region of the blastoderm and also accompany it in its growth round the yolk, forming the inner blastodermic layer or yolk membrane. 'The mesoderm appears at the lips of the blasto- pore, or in an equivalent position ; it forms a complete layer between ectoderm and endoderm, and within it the body cavity is formed usually by a definite splitting into two layers. The invaginated endoderm forms the mesenteron ; and the history of the formation of the anterior and posterior portions of the tract varies with the fate of the blastopore. In the Cephalopoda at least, the nervous system appears not as usual from the ectoderm but from the meso- derm. 'The characteristic larval organs, the shell gland and the foot, are ectodermic in origin—the former arising as a thickened invagination on

the posterior and dorsal side of the embryo, and the latter as a ventral protuberance. Further details and larval changes are thoroughly treated under Motiusca.

Lunicata.—The complete and generally quite equal segmenta- tion results in the formation of a blastosphere with a large seementa- tion cavity. 'The cavity is obliterated by a normal invagination, and a typical gastrula isformed. In the formation of the nerve cord from the elosure of a medullary groove and of the notochord from a cord of cells on the dorsal wall of the arehenteron, in. the appear- ance of respiratory slits in the anterior portion of the enteric cavity and of a cerebral eye, and in fact in all the cssential features of their development they present the amplest evidence of their Vertebrate affinities and degenerate origin (scc TUNICATA).

Vertebrata. —The segmentation is total and equal in Amphioxus, total and not markedly unequal in Mammalia, total and uncqual in Amphibia, Acipenser, Petronyyzon, partial in Birds and Reptiles, Teleostcans and Elasmobranchs, but the limits between these types are not sharply defined, being mainly determined by the store of food-yolk. In Amphioxus there is no interference with the forma- tion of the typical gastrula, and this form is also readily recogniz- able in the Amphibia, Acipenser, and Petromyzon, where, however, the process of formation is less simple. Ata point corresponding to the future lind end of the embryo a true invagination takes place, forming, however, only the dorsal wall of the archenteron, at the same time the ectoderm cells have been growing round the yolk, and the floor of the enteric cavity is formed from yolk-cells. The blastopore is eventually closed, but a communication between the archenteron and the neural canal persists for some time as the neurenteric canal. In the Elasmobranchs and Teleosteans, though there is no true invagination nor recognizable gastrula form, there are not wanting hints of its ancestral occurrenee and of homologies with the typical form. The comparison of the different Ichthyop- sidan gastrule with the typical form and with that of the Sawrop- sida, and such problems as the occurrence of an epibolic gastrula in Mammalia are still

under discussion. The most important stages in the further Vertebrate development, the formation of the medullary groove and canal, the appearanee of the notochord as an axial differentiation of hypoblast, the origin of the body- cavity from paired outgrowths from the archenteron, the occur- rence of gill-pouches opening externally from the throat, the ex- pansion of the medullary cord anteriorly to form the vesicles of the brain, the outpushing of a cerebral eye, and so on, are described in all text-books. (11)

2. But it is not enough empirically to record the ob- served phenomena of reproduction in the various groups, primarily essential though such labours are; it is further necessary to generalize them. We should ascertain, that is to say, from a comprehensive and a comparative sur- vey, what degree of unity of structure is discovered actually to prevail within and among the various groups. Were this knowledge once definitely reached and incor- porated with the results of comparative anatomy and paleontology, that complete conspectus of the animal kingdom which is the goal to which all morphological inquiries converge would come clearly into view. Such an exposition of the contributions of the study of de velopment to morphological knowledge may evidently pro- ceed in either of two ways,—either by starting from the later and more superficial similarities which are expressed in the classification of the different groups, and working downwards towards earlier and deeper unities in the various organs and tissues; or by starting from the most primitive homology, and working upwards, so demonstrat- ing the unities which are observed to obtain in the suc- cessive stages, from segmentation and layer differentiation onwards. For our present purpose, it is more convenient to follow the latter course, and to note the main concrete generalizations of development in ascending order from the deepest and most general to the more superficial and specific.

1. Ovum Theory.—The most fundamental unity upon which all the others really depend is the familiar fact that all organisms, plant and animal alike, develop from a single germinal cell or ovian essentially comparable with any ordinary cell. The import- ance of these results may be best expressed by a quotation from Agassiz's once famous Essay on Classification :—Von Baer " thus showed for the first time that there is

no essential difference in the mode of reproduction of the so-called viviparous and oviparous animals, and that Man himself developed in the same manner as animals. It was indeed a gigantic step to demonstrate such an identity in the material basis of the development of all animals, when their anatomical structure was already known to exhibit such radically different forms, The universal presence of eggs in all animals, and the unity of their structure, which was soon after- wards fully ascertained, constitute in my opinion the greatest discovery in the natural science of modern times." The ovum has long ceased to be regarded as a mysterious 1nicroorganism, and, while in some cases a number of cells unite to nourish and perfect it, the generalization remains unshaken, that the ovum of every organism is a simple. cell. The minute structure of the ovum, its differentiations and variations, its fertilization and development, must be expressible in terms of the morphology

and physiology of the ordinary cell. The elucidation will be obviously mutual, for the analysis of the phenomena observed in the case of the highly differentiated reproductive cells, with their consequent greater physiological simplicity, will shed light on analogous phenomena in ordinary cellular and Protistan life where, with less differentiation, there is greater physiological complexity, — while such problems as the origin and import of polar globule extrusion, fertilization, &c., receive some elucidation from sugges- tive analogies among the Protozoa. See Sex. (11)

2. Segmentation.—The segmentation of the ovum of the Metazoa varies in regularity and completeness throughout the gronps, but the different types are not sharply defined from one another and are, aS has been already noted, partially at least explicable as mechanically conditioned by the quantity of nutritive as opposed to formative material. Segmentation being only a special case of ordinary cell-multiplication (to which in behaviour of nuclei, &c., it fully corresponds), it awaits whatever elucidation may arise out of the present conflict of speculation as to the physical and physio- logical causes of division in general. It has further to be compared on the one hand with such cases of multiple division as are

observed in spermatogenesis, and on the other hand, and more especially, with the earliest attempts to form cell aggregates and so effect the passage from Protozoa to Metazoa. (11)

3. Gastrea Theory.—We lave seen in the development of © the various groups how the result of segmentation is not a mere aggregate of cells but an integrated two-layered individual with a distinct enteric cavity. In 1872 Hacckel emphasized the import- ance of this form,"and in 1875 heelaborated his "gastrea" theory, according to which all animals pass through a gastrula stage which, in its typical form, resembles the ancestral Afetazoon. He showed how the variously modified quasi-gastrula forms of the higher groups might be derived from the normal type, and corroborated his theory by reference to the persistence of the gastrula stage in certain Porifera, as well as in those Celentera and Vermes where the adult animal is not far above the level of the gastrula organi- zation. The occurrence of the planula and the delamination pro-cess in some cases alongside of the invaginate gastrula is a difli- culty in the way of his theory so far as it defines the primitive Metazoan ancestor, and this has given rise to Lankester's rival planula theory. The case on either side is fairly stated in Balfour's Embryology (vol. ii, chap. xiii.). (Recent researches on Hydrozoa seem to show that delamination is an extreme form of immigra- tion, which is itself a modified invagination.) The passage from Protozoa to Afetazoa was, according to Biitschli, effected neither by planulan nor gastrula but by a disk-like "placula." The ingenious 'coelom theory" of the Hertwigs is an attempt to divide all the Metazoa with three germinal layers into two distinct groups characterized by different modes of formation of body-cavity and mesoderm, and by other minor differences. In the Enterocela, which include the Chetopoda, Gephyrea, Brachiopoda, Nematoda, Arthropoda, Echinodermata, Enteropneusta, and Chordata, the body- cavity is formed in the fashion noted in the case of Sagitta by two ingrowths from the archenteron, the bulk of the mesoderm arising from the differentiation of the epithelium of these diverticula, though sometimes partially also from amceboid cells budded off into the gelatinous tissue between ectoderm and endoderm. In the smaller group of Pseudocela, including the Mollusca, Polyzoa, Rotifera, and Platyhelminthes, the mesoderin originates in the second of these ways, and the body-cavity is formed by a

split in this "mesen- chyme." This theory has been criticized by Balfour (Hmbr., ii. 18), and more recently ably defended by Haeckel and others ; further detailed studies are at least needed before it can claim full con- firmation. (15)

4. Unity of Tissuesand Homology of Layers.—Since it is impos- sible that all the cells resulting from segmentation can continue to occupy the same position, a certain lamination or layer formation with consequent division of labour and structural modification invariably occurs, finding its first expression in the two-layered gastrula stage to which we have referred. Just as in the embryo of the higher plants there arise an outer dermatogen, an inner plerome, and a middle layer or periblem, so in the animal embryo there constantly occur three germ layers, the ectoderm, the endo- derm, and the intermediate layer formed from them—the meso- derm. As early as 1768 Wolff scems to have had a definite presentiment of the formation of the different systems from distinct germ layers; in 1817 Pander distinguished in the embryo chick the outer or "serous" from the inner or "mucous" layer, aud Von Baer in 1828 yet more definitely distinguished them as animal and vegetative respectively. A great step towards the recognition of the full significance of these germ layers was due to the brilliant insight of Huxley (1859) in comparing them to the ectoderm and endoderm which he had demonstrated in Cwlentera. The researches of Remak, Rathke, Kowalevsky, and others led to their general recognition throughout the Aetazoa. Modern progress is marked by the demonstration of the general homology of all the three germ layers and consequently of the systems of organs which arise from them. While much uncertainty still obtains as to the

origin of the mesoderm, and while the different layers undoubtedly exhibit in some cases the possibility of differentiation into tissues different from those to which they usually give origin, yet the general homology of the layers is now indisputable. The ectoderm, which is indeed the primitive sensory and protective organ, forms the epidermis, sense organs, and nervous system of the adult ; the nutritive endoderm lines the enteric cavity, &c.; and from the mesoderm are derived the muscular, vascular,

and lymphatic systems and the greater part of the connective tissue, as also the excretory and generally also the generative system. Not only then is the occurrence of these three layers constant, but, with few exceptions, so is the differentiation of each into definite systems of organs. This correspondence, which is of high—in most cases of final—importance in determining homologies, may be termed homodermic. See MorpHotocy. (15)

5. Unity of Anatomical Structure.—The study of development leads, however, to the recognition of a more detailed and specific unity than the general one of homodermy. For, just as the development of the flower reveals the original resemblance of organs which become subsequently widely differentiated, so organs which in their adult modification seem hardly comparable are seen to be moulded from one pattern when compared in their embryonic simplicity. The same holds good obviously of the comparison of organs in different animals ; organogeny is the necessary foundation of comparative anatomy. Thus of late years it has been demon- strated that the nervous system and sense organs, throughout at any rate the vast majority of Metazoan forms, not only constantly arise from the ectoderm—that is to say, are homodermic—but their development exhibits correspondences even in detail. Recent studies of the development of the Vertebrate skeleton, and more especially of the skull, afford vivid instances of that fundamental unity of structure of which, in another department, the final unravelment of the complex problem of the structure of the urinogenital organs of Vertebrates through the researches of Balfour and Semper is one of the most recent and admirable instances. (11)

6. Unity of Type.—It has been the general history of classifica- tion both of plants and animals that arrangements based on super- ficial resemblance were superseded by those founded on internal organization, while the latter have been in turn either corroborated or amended by the relationships revealed by the study of develop- ment, as from the preceding generalizations must indeed be obvious. Just as the separation of the Monocotyledons and Dicotyledons into two great alliances was anatomically recognized by Ray, and en- bryologically corroborated by De Jussieu, so the developmental studies of Von Baer led him independently

to the establishment of the four great types which had been previously distinguished by the anatomical labours of Cuvier. And, apart from the recognition of the morphological unities of the greater groups, it is familiarly known how in the case of problematical forms, such, for instance, as Cirripedes or Ascidians, where the adult organization is obscured by degeneration, the detection of the true relationship is due to em- bryology. In proportion, too, as the recapitulation during develop- ment of adult structure becomes shortened and effaced, so does the determination of their real affinities become difficult ; hence the relatively slow progress of the botanist towards a knowledge of the deeper affinities of his " natural orders." (11)

As the preceding outline of embryological detail is being rapidly filled up, and the resultant concrete gene- ralizations are being more and more clearly defined, and also united with those of comparative anatomy and palz- ontology, the embryologist is rapidly approximating that tolerably adequate knowledge of the morphological rela- tions of plants and animals alike which finds its graphic expression in the "family tree" of the Organisata. While, for instance, the discrepant speculations of Semper, Hubrecht, Sedgwick, and others, as to the ancestral form of the Chordata, afford illustration of how far we are from being able to construct a thoroughly definite genea- logical tree, on the other hand no better evidence alike of the rapid stages by which our knowledge has advanced and of the utility of such a method of graphic nota- tion can be obtained than by comparing the necessarily vague and hypothetical tree sketched by Haeckel only twenty years ago with any of its numerous and shortlived successors. (16

3. The result of the study of development is not, how- ever, merely to establish the existence of such concrete structural unities as those just indicated, but leads further to the recognition of certain abstract generalizations, ex- pressive of the most comprehensive conclusions which can

be drawn from the observed succession of developmental phenomena.

(a) Heredity.—It is an every-day observation that the offspring of any organism repeats the organization of the parent; and the very familiarity

of the fact is apt to conceal the marvellousness of the process in which every egg cell develops, either directly or indirectly, into a form which not only resembles the parent in general and specific characters, but may even repeat those individual character- istics which arose by so-called spontaneous variation, or which were even impressed upon the parent by the direct influence of the external environment. The difficulty of analysing the factors which give rise to this result,—that is, of understanding how the history of the developing ovum is determined by its constitution—the uncertainty as to the degree in which acquired parental characteristics can be said to be transmitted, the absence in fact of any established causal explanation of the resemblance between offspring and parent, in specific and individual characters, does not of course affect the fact. Although, in analysing the popular generalization that "like begets like," it may eventually be shown how much of that likeness may be due to the hammering of the same environmental forces which formerly played upon the parent, a mysterious transmission of properties has still to be accounted for, and interpreted in terms of the physiological and niorphological, the chemical and physical, composition and properties of the germinal matter of parent and offspring. To explain this mystery, various "theories of heredity" have been from time to time propounded ; from the present purely morpho- logical point of view it suffices here, however, to note the fact of heredity, leaving the discussion of its rationale to its more natural place at the outset of the article Varia- TION AND SELECTION. (6)

(0) Von Baers Law.—In comparing the degree of organization attained by different forms, we are accustomed to distinguish the general morphological ground-plan con- stant throughout the group from the detailed histological differentiation or elaboration of the various organs. Great histological simplicity may co-exist with a high general morphological plan, and vice versa. A survey of the animal and vegetable kingdom reveals a branching and ascending series of increasingly complex ground-plans, while, in any of the groups determined by these, similar branching series more and more highly differentiated in detail are to be distinguished. Von Baer (1828) was the first to discern the embryological aspect of this law of pro- gress, and to show that, in the development alike of the organism and of its component parts, there was a

progress from the simple to the complex, from the general to the special. Thus, in the development of one of the higher Mammalia, those characters which are common to the low- est Vertebrates are at first alone distinguishable. Thence the embryo passes through stages resembling those of successively higher forms, till the general Mammalian type is reached, this again passing through higher and less general stages till the specific characters finally make their appearance; and this progressive differentiation from gene- ral to special holds equally of the histological differentia- tion of the organs. Von Baer guarded against the error involved in many popular versions of his generalization, by maintaining that the developing embryo resembled, not the adults, but merely the embryos of lower forms; and, although he narrowed his proposition to the limits of the great groups, denying, for example, any resemblance between Vertebrate embryos and those of any Invertebrate type, this must be admitted a thoroughly legitimate reserve when we consider the actual state and practical possibilities of embryological research at the time. The real value and import of Von Baer's law, however, could

not be appreciated until the parallel between this developmental progress and the advance of anatomical type which had been exposed by Cuvier received its rational explanation at the hands of Darwin. (17) ~

(c) Haeckel's "'Biogenetic Law."—While Von Baer was the first to appreciate the value of embryology in its relation to classification and comparative anatomy, we are indebted to Haeckel for the detailed application of the Darwinian theory to the phenomena of embryology and the conse- quent restatement of Von Baer's law in its developed form. In his Generelle Morphologie (1866) he formulates the "fundamental law of development" (biogenetisches Grund- gesetz). Introducing the term "ontogeny" to denote the development of the individual organism, and " phylogeny " to express the historic evolution of the " phylon" or tribe, he affirms that "ontogeny is an epitome of phylogeny," or, more explicitly, "the organism recapitulates in the short and rapid course of its individual development the most important of those form-modifications undergone by the successive ancestors of the species, in the course of their long and

slow historic evolution, and the causal relation of the two histories is to be explained in terms of heredity and adaptation. When these are thoroughly analysed, it will be possible to say that the phylogeny is the mechanical cause of the ontogeny."

Much as Von Baer had distinguished the general morphological ground-plan from the more detailed differ- entiations of the organs, Haeckel analysed ontogeny into (a) the "palingenetic " process, in which the truly ancestral characters conserved by heredity are reproduced in de-velopment, and (0) the "kenogenetic" process, or modified evolution, to which are due those non-primitive characters which have resulted in consequence of a secondary adapta- tion of the embryo to the peculiar conditions of its own environment. The true recapitulation is constantly liable to be disguised, not only by the frequent occurrence of that abbreviated and more direct ontogeny which the need for economy tends alike to originate and to conserve, but by the action of these kenogenetic processes. Hence the corollary that ""'the ontogenetic recapitulation of the phylogeny is the more perfect the more the palingenetic process is conserved by heredity, and the more imperfect in proportion as the later modified evolution (kenogenesis) is introduced by adaptation."

While this distinction between adaptive characters and underlying morphological type is not only legitimate but indispensable, it must not, however, be forgotten that the difference between these is nowhere absolute,—the deepest morphological characters being but the most ancient results of adaptation (cf MorpHonoey, vol. xvi. p. 845). Yet it is only by the careful application of this principle that the embryologist can unravel the perplexing entanglement of primitive and adaptive characters pre- sented by so many larval forms, or solve the scarcely less difficult problems of organogeny. In this regard Balfour's dissertation on the origin and affinities of larval forms is especially valuable, while a vivid illustration of the em- ployment of the biogenetic law, in one of the most diffi- cult departments of ontogeny, may be borrowed from Prof. Parker. Reviewing the development of the skull in the Chick, he says—

" Whilst at work I seemed to myself to have been endeavouring to decipher a palimpsest, and that not erased and written upon again just

once, but five or six times over.

“Having erased, as it were, the charaeters of the culminating type—those of the gaudy Indian Bird—I seemed to be amongst the sombre Grouse, and then, towards ineubation, the eharaeters of the Sand-Grouse and Hemipod stood out before me. Rubbing these away, in my downward walk, the form of the Tinamou looked me in the face; then the aberrant Ostrich scemed to be

deseribed in large arehaie eharacters; a little while and these faded into what could just be read off as pertaining to the Sea Turtle ;

REPROD UGTION

[ANIMAL.

whilst, underlying the whole, the Fish in its simplest Myxinoid form eould be traeed in morphologieal hieroglyphies.” (17)

(d) Spencer on Development.—The most generalized treatment of embryology is that of Spencer, who, after carefully distinguishing mere growth in bulk from de- velopment of structure, points out that development takes place primarily around a central point, as in the lowest and chiefly unicellular organisms. Central development is either unicentral or multicentral, while, according as the insubordination to a single centre, implied in the latter case, is more. or less thorough, the organism is of irregular form (eg., many Alge), and so may readily even become discontinuous. From central we pass insensibly to axial development, and this may be uniaxial or multiaxial. Here, too, development may be continuous or discontinuous, familiar instances of both being furnished by many animals and plants. The fundamental importance of these simple conceptions to the adequate treatment alike of the pro- blems of individuality (cf. MorpHotoey) and of the nature of the reproductive process is justly to be insisted upon, for the definition of reproduction as but a discontinuous growth and development finds here its origin and justi- fication.

Spencer, moreover, expresses Von Baer's essential law in yet more general phrase :—"' Development is a change from an incoherent indefinite homogeneity to a coherent definite heterogeneity." The relation of ontogeny to phylogeny is not overlooked, and a yet farther parallel advance in dif- ferentiation of the organism from its environment is illus- trated alike in structure aud form, in chemical composition and specific gravity, in temperature and self-mobility. The deductive interpretation of these laws is also cautiously suggested. (17)

Bibliography.—Without any attempt to deal with the very copious literature of the subject, it is sufficient to name some of the more important general and special works, from whieh full details ean in turn be obtained. From the time of Haller perhaps no eminent anatomist or physiologist has omitted a more or less general treatment of the subjeet, and sueh discussions as those to be found in the well-known works of Johannes Miiller, Milne- Edwards, Owen, or Carpenter are still valuable, especially as embodying the past development of the subject. More recent dis- eussions are to be found in the leading text-books, alike morpho- logieal (Huxley, Gegenbauer, Claus) and physiological (Hermann, Foster, Landois, &e.). The embryologieal movement ean be followed by the aid of the article Empryonocy, and the valuable systematie treatise of Balfour, while the most generalized treat- ment of the subjeet must at first be sought in the works of Spencer and Haeekel. For almost all purposes, however, the reeent careful monograph of Hensen (Physiologie d. Zeugung, forming the second part of vol. vi. of Hermann's Handbuch d. Physiologie, Leipsie, 1881), although, of eourse, by no means eompletely satisfactory, will be found not merely servieeable but indispensable to the student. The various Jahresberichte must be also, of course, eon- stantly appealed to, especially for progress in detail. The present state of the theory of reproduetion is discussed in Hensen, op. cit.

(1) cf. Hensen, op. cit., general manuals, and gynecological works, eg., Williams, "On the Structure of the Mucous Membrane of the Uterus," Odstetr. Journ., 1875; Barnes, System of Midwifery, 1885; Lusk, Sci. and Art, of Mid- wifery, 1882. (2) Huxley, Anat. of Invert. Animals, 1879; Gegenbaur, Comp. Anat., London, 1882; Wicdersheim, Lehrb. d. Comp. Anat. d. Wirbelthiere, Jena, 1883; Semper, D. Urinogenital Syst. d.

Plagiostomen, in his Arbdeiten, vol. ii.; Balfour, Comp. Embryology, 1882. (8) Hensen, op. cit.; Foster's and Landois's manuals of physiology. (4) Werth, " Physiologie d. Geburt," in chap. xiii, of Hensen, op. cit.; Spiegelberg, Lehrb. d. Geburtshiilfe, Lahr, 1878. (5) Milne-Edwards, Lecons s. la Phystologte, and later manuals. (6) Hensen, op. cit. (7) Gamgee, Physiol. Chem. of Anim. Body, 1880, and Hensen, op. cit. (8) V. La Valette, "Ucb. d. Genese d. Samenk6rper," Archiv f. Mikr. Anat., xv.; Blom- field, Quart. Journ. Micro, Sci., 1880; Renson, Arch. d@. Biol,, 1882; Swaen and Masquelin, Arch, d. Biol., 1888 ; Geddes and Arthur Thomson, ' On the Iistory and Theory of Spcrmatogenesis," Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., 1885-86. (9) Sec EMBRYOLOGY, and article "Ovum" (by Allen Thomson), in Todd's Cyclop. of Anat. and Physiol. (10) Gamgee, op. ctt.; Hensen, op. cté. (11) Balfour, op. cit., and manuals. (12) Balfour, op. cit.; Flemming, Zel/substanz, &c., Leipsic, 1882; Strasburger, Zellbildung, &c., Leipsic, 1882, and Neue Untersuch., &c., 1884 ; Carnoy, Biologie Cellulaire, Louvain, 1885; Brass, Betts. z. Zellphysiologie, Leipsic, 1885; Hertwig, Jena. Zeitschr., xviii., Heft 2, 1885. (18) Balfour, op. cit.; V. Beneden, Arch. d. Biol., 1883 (also summarics in Q. J. Af. S., and Biol. Central- Blatt for 1885, by Cunningham and Flemming respectively); Sabaticr, Conts7b. aU étude d. globules polaires, Montpellicr, 1884. (14) Works above cited and Hertwig, Jena, Zetischr., 1885. (15) Balfour, op. cit.; Waeckel, " Ursprung u. Ent- wick, d. thier. Gewebe," Jena. Zeitschr., xviii., 1885, (16) Hacckel, Gen. Morphol., 1866; Herdman, Phylogeny of Animal Kingdom, Liverpool, 1885. (17) Spencer, Princ. of Byol., 1880; Waeckel, Gen. Morphol., 1866; Parker, Aforphology of the Skull, 1877. (P. GE.)

VEGETABLE. |

IL. REPRODUCTION oF PLANTS.

The various modes by which plants are reproduced may be conveniently classified in two groups, namely, vege- tative multiplication and true reproduction, the distinction between them being this, that, whereas in the former the production of the new individual may be effected by organs of the most various kinds, in the latter it is always effected by means of a

specialized reproductive cell. This distinction will become apparent in the following discus- sion,

nrProepyucrTrion

bulbils or " starch-stars" of Chara stelligera, which are Bulbils.

423

underground nodes, and the branches with naked base and the pro- embryome branches found by Pringsheim on old nodes of Chara fragilis. In the Mosses small tuberous bulbils frequently occur on the rhizoids, and in many instances (Bryum annotinum, Aulacomnion androgynum, Tetraphis pellucida, &c.) stalked fusiform or lenticular

multicellular bodies containing chlorophyll, termed gemmez, Gemme.

are produced on the shoots, either in the axils of the leaves or in special receptacles at the summit of the stem. Gemme of this kind are produced in vast numbers in

Multi- Vegetative Multiplication.—The simplest case of vege- | Marchantia and Lunularia among the Liverworts. plication tative multiplication is afforded by unicellular plants. | Similar gemmez are also produced by the prothallia of of uni- When the cell which constitutes the body of the plant has | Ferns. In some Ferns (eg., Nephrolepis tuberosa and N. cellular é ¢ nee AP ns ae : ; : : c

plants, by 4ttained its limit of size, it gives rise to two, either by | undulata) the buds borne on the leaves or in their axils division; division or gemmation ; the two cells then grow, and at | become swollen and filled with nutritive materials, con-

the same time become separated from each other, so that eventually two new distinct individuals are produced, each of which precisely resembles the original organism. A good example of this is to be found in the gemmation of the Yeast plant. This mode of multiplication is simply

stituting bulbils which fall off and give rise to new plants. This conversion of buds into bulbils which subserve vegetative multiplication occurs also occasionally among Phanerogams, as, for instance, in Lilium bulbiferum. But many other adaptations of the same kind occur among

the result of the ordinary processes of growth, All plant- cells thus grow and divide at some time of their life; but, whereas in a multicellular plant the products of

Phanerogams, notably among annuals. Bulbous plants, Bulbs, for instance, produce each year at least one bulb or corm corms, from which a new plant is produced in the succeeding }',...,

of higher

division remain coherent, and add to the number of the cells of which the plant consists, ina unicellular plant they separate and constitute new individuals. In more highly

plants, by organized plants vegetative multiplication may be effected

year. In other cases, as in the case of the Potato, tubers are developed from subterranean shoots, each of which in the following year gives rise to a new individual, In other cases, again, as in Dahlia, Thladiantha dubia, &c.,

ken of _ bY the separation of the different parts of the body from | tuberous swellings are found on the roots, from each of ion of : ; Matin é members, cach other, each such part subsequently developing the | which a new individual may spring. missing members and thus constituting a new individual. True Reproduction.—It was mentioned above that the Structure This takes place spontaneously, and in a marked manner | true reproduction of plants is effected by specialized cells ; of spores. in Mosses. The main stem gradually dies away from be- | these cells may be generally designated spores. The hind forwards ; the lateral branches thus become isolated, | structure of a spore is essentially this: it consists of a and constitute new individuals. nucleated mass of protoplasm, enclosing starch or oil as Vege- The remarkable regenerative capacity of plant-

members | reserve nutritive material, usually enclosed by a cell-wall. tative is largely made use of for the artificial propagation of | In those cases in which the spore is capable of germinating eerodne- plants. A branch removed from a parent-plant will, | immediately on its development the cell-wall is a single tings. under appropriate conditions, develop roots, and so con- | delicate membrane consisting of cellulose; but in those stitute a new plant; this is the theory of propagation by | cases in which the spore may or must pass through a "cuttings." A portion of a root will similarly develop | period of quiescence before germination the wall becomes one or more shoots, and thus give rise to a new plant. | thickened and may consist of two layers, an inner, the An isolated leaf will, in many cases, produce a shoot and | endospore, which is delicate and consists of cellulose, and a root, in a word, a new plant; it is in this way that | an outer, the ewospore, which is thick and rigid, frequently Begonias, for instance, are propagated. The production | darkly coloured and beset externally with spines or bosses, of new plants from the leaves occurs also in nature, as, for | and which consists of cutin. In some few cases among Vivi- instance, in the so-called " viviparous" plants, of which | the Fungi multicellular spores are produced; these Parous = Bryophyllum calycinum (Crassulacee) and many Ferns | approximate somewhat to the gemmzx mentioned above as _. (Nephrodium [Lastrea] Filix-mas, Asplenium | Athyrium] | highly specialized organs for vegetative multiplication. Filix-foemina, and other species of Asplenium) are | In some cases, particularly among the Alge and also in examples. An interesting case of the vegetative develop- | some Fungi (Peronosporee, Saprolegniee, Myxomycetes, ment of new individuals from other plant-organs is afforded | Chytridiacez), spores are produced which are for a time by Strasburger's observations on Cclebogyne ilicifolia, | destitute of any cell-wall, and are further peculiar in that Funkia, Mothoscordum fragrans, and Citrus; he found, | they are motile, and are therefore termed zoospores ; they Zoospores. Embryos namely, that in these plants, an adventitious formation of | move, sometimes in an amoeboid manner by the protrusion

formed by embryos takes place by budding from the tissue of the

budding.

nucellus bounding the embryo-sac. But it is in the Mosses, of all plants, that the capacity for vegetative propagation is most widely diffused. Any part of a moss, whether it be the stem, the leaves, the rhizoids, or the sporogonium, is capable, under appropriate conditions, of giving rise to filamentous protonema on which new moss- plants are then developed as lateral buds.

of pseudopodia, but more frequently they are provided with one, two, or many, delicate vibratile protoplasmic filaments, termed cilia, by the lashing of which the spore is propelled through the water. The zoospore eventually comes to rest, withdraws its cilia, surrounds itself with a cell-wall, and then germinates.

Spores are developed in various ways, and a prefix is in many cases added to the word "spore" to indicate the

In a large number of plants we find that provision is

made for vegetative multiplication by the development of

Soredia of more or less highly specialized organs. In Lichens, for Kichens. instance, there are the soredia, which are minute buds of the thallus containing both algal and fungal elements ;

these are set free on the surface in large numbers, and

each grows into a thallus. In the Characec there are the

nature of the process of development. Leaving details for spores subsequent discussion, we will now confine our attention formed to the main fact that all spores are developed in one or other ¢ither

of two ways, either asexually or sexually. In the fornier geal case a single reproductive organ gives rise to cells which asexually. are capable, each by itself, of developing into a new

organism ; such an organ is an asexual reproductive organ,

Asexual and. sexual organs.

and such cells are asexually produced spores. In the latter case the reproductive organs are such that they do not singly give rise to cells capable, each by itself, of developing into a new organism. These are sexual repro- ductive organs. In some instances the sexual organ does not give rise to reproductive cells at all until it has received into itself more or less of the protoplasmic contents of another different, at least physiologically, sexual organ; and the cells which it then produces are capable, each by itself, of developing into a new organism. In others the sexual organ produces reproductive cells without any such previous fusion of protoplasm, but the cells thus produced are incapable, each by itself, of developing into a new organism. Such cells are sexual reproductive cells. It is only by the fusion of two such cells, physiologically different, that a reproductive cell is formed which is capable of developing into a new organism. The fusion either of the protoplasmic contents of two different sexual organs or of two different sexual cells constitutes the sexual process. It may take place, according to circumstances, either within the organs or, in those cases in which sexual cells are produced and are set free, externally to them. The resulting cells are sexually produced spores.

In some exceptional cases the normal production, sexual or

asexual, of spores does not take place, but the new organism is developed vegetatively from the parent. When the sexual

Apogamy production of sporcs is suppressed, the case is one of apogamy ;

*and when the asexual production of spores is suppressed, the case is one | With a cell-wall; stylospores are spores which are developed, *P°‘s: apospory. of apospory. The following are instances of apogamy: in certain | not in sporangia, but by abstriction as mentioned above ; Ferns (Pteris erctiea, Aspidium Saleatum) the prothallium produces tetraspores is the name given to the spores of the Floridez no sexual organs, but the fern-plant rises vegetatively as a bud upon it. Apospory has been observed to occur in Mosses and in | tO denote the fact that four spores are produced by the some Ferns (Athyrium Filia-femina, Polystichwm angulare): in |*

division of the mother-cell. The wredospores of the Mosses a new plant may be developed vegetatively from the | Uredines are those which are produced during the tissue of the sporogonium ; in Athyrium the sporangium, instead | symmer, whereas the teleutospores of these plants are those of producing spores, develops into a fern-prothallium. In the . : . : Characex apospory appears to be the rule. Apogamy and apospory | Which are formed in the autumn, at the end of the period will be more fully discussed subsequently in connexion with the | of growth. It was the custom, at one time, to speak of subject of alternation of generations. the spores of Fungi as conidia; and at the present time the Asexual Reproduction.—Reproduction by means of | macrospores and the microspores of Phanerogams are better asexually produced spores is common to nearly all | known as embryo-sacs and pollen-grains respectively. families of plants. It is wanting, among the Algw, in The organs which give rise to the asexually produced the Conjugate, the Fucaces, and the Characex ; among | spores are usually not confined to a particular part of the the Fungi, in a few Peronsporee (Pythiwm vexans, Arto- | plant in the Thallophytes. Instances of this do, however, trogus), in Ancylostes Closterti, in Aplanes Brawnii, among | occur among the Ascomycetous Fungi—namely, in the the Saprolegniew ; and, among the Ascomycetes, in Ere- Pyrenomycetes. Here the production of the stylospores Pyenidia, mascus, Sordaria (Hypocopra),

reproductive organ of the nature of a sporangiwm. In more highly organized plants special organs are differen- tiated for the production of spores. In the majority of

REPRODUCTION

[VEGETABLE.

the Ferns, Equisetacex, and Lycopodiaces the sporangium is multicellular, but simple in structure. This is true also in the Rhizocarpe and in the Ligulate (Selaginella, Isoetes), but in these plants there is this peculiarity that there are sporangia of two kinds,—some, namely, which produce one, or a few, large spores, macrospores, and are hence termed macrosporangia, and others which give rise to a large number of small spores, microspores, and are hence termed microsporangia, The

Phanerogams also bear two kinds of sporangia, which have received special names :— the macrosporangium, which produces only one mature spore, is termed the ovwle; the microsporangium, which produces a large number of microspores, is termed the pollen-sac.

formed by abstriction. This occurs in some Mucorini, such as Cheetocladium, in the Ustilaginex, the Entomoph- thorew, the Peronosporer, the Ascomycetes, the Rusts (Uredinese), and the Basidiomycetes.

These asexually produced reproductive cells are com monly spoken of simply as spores, but in many cases some addition has been made to the word, or an altogether different name is applied to them, in order to mark some peculiarity in their mode of origin, to indicate their order of development, or to assign them without periphrasis to

a particular group of plants. Thus, as has been mentioned, Termin- zoospores are motile spores unprovided, for a time at least, ology of

aggregated together, and such an aggregate of sporangi- ferous leaves constitutes a flower.

Seaual KReproduction.—In nearly all classes of plants No sexual

Tn some cases among the Fungi the spores are Forma- not produced in the interior of a sporangium, but are tion of

cases the special organ is a sporangium, that is, a hollow

above the Protophyta spores are formed by a sexual reproduc- capsule in the interior of which the spores are developed.

process ; aud in those in which no such process can be Hon i Proto-

In the Thallophytes the sporangium is a single cell. In the Muscinez it is a multicellular capsule; in Riccia, in which the structure of the capsule is simple, the whole of the internal cells give rise by division to spores; in other Liverworts, and in the Mosses, in which the structure of the capsule

becomes progressively more and more complex, a portion only of the internal cells give rise to spores. In

detected its absence is due, not, as in the Protophyta, to the fact that sexuality has not yet been developed, but to its gradual disappearance. The phenomena of sexual reproduction will be most intelligibly stated by tracing them in the different main divisions of the Vegetable Kingdom— the Alge, the Fungi, the Archegoniata, and the Phanerogams.

VEGETABLE. |

Sexual The protophytic Alge are reproduced by asexually developed reproduc- spores, but in some forms an indication is already given of the tion of differentiation of these spores into sexual reproductive cells which Alge. takes place in the higher forms of the group. In Protococcus, for instance, zoospores are produced, but the zoospores are not all precisely similar. In some cases the protoplasm of the cell divides only once or twice, the result being the formation of two or four relatively large zoospores, macrozoospores; in other cases the protoplasm divides a greater number of times so that a considerable number of relatively small zoospores, microzoospores, are pro- duced. Functionally these zoospores are alikc; they all come to rest, and form new Protococci. Amongst the Confervoide, which are more highly organized plants than the protophytic Alge, we find forms, of which Ulothrix may be taken as the type, which likewise produce macrozoosporcs and microzoospores in their Conjuga- cells. The macrozoospores of Ulothrix simply come to rest and tion of germinate; they are distinctly asexual spores. The microzoospores plano- may also do this, but not unfrequently they coalesce in pairs; the gametes. product of fusion, the zygospore, as it is termed, then develops into a Ulothrix filament. This fusion of two similar reproductive cells— this conjugation, as it is termed—is one of the simplest forms of the sexual process ; the zygospore is then a sexually produced spore, and the two cells which conjugate to form it are spoken of as gemetcs — planogamcetes when thcy possess cilia, aplanogametes when they do not.

Comparing Ulothrix with Protococcus, we see that in both the macrozoospores are asexual reproductive cells, whereas the micro- zoospores of Ulothrix exhibit an imperfect sexuality, inasmuch as they

may germinate without previous conjugation. The plano- gametcs of Ulothrix are, however, to be directly connected with the microzoospores of Protococcus; that is to say, the gametes are to be traced back to asexual spores. This isa point of fundamental importance.

Similarly, in Botrydium, one of the Siphonce, there are two kinds of zoospores, some of which are asexual and others sexual ; the visible difference between them is, in this case, not one of size, but the gametes have two cilia and the zoospores only one.

In the conjugation which takes place in the above-mentioned plants the gametes are quite similar in form and size, and take an equal part in the formation of the zygospore. The first indication

Differen- of the differentiation of sexual gametes is afforded by Lceto- tiation of carpus siliculosus and Scytosiphon, belonging to the Pheosporee. sexual The zoospores of these plants arc produced in well- defined sporangia, gametes. some of which are multilocular and others unilocular. Inasmuch as only the zoospores developed in the multilocular sporangia have been observed to conjugate, that is, to be gametes, those developed in the unilocular sporangia are probably asexual. This being so, the multilocular sporangia are to be regarded, not as mere sporangia, but as sexual organs (Gamctangia) producing sexual reproductive cells. The process of conjugation of the gametes is, according to Berthold, as follows :—the gametes are at first quite similar in every respect; some of them, however, soon withdraw their cilia and come to rest, whereas others remain actively motile ; one of the still motile gametes then coalesces with one which has come to rest to form a zygospore. The gametes in this case behave differently in the proccss of conjugation: the one is passive, the other active; the former is to be regarded as the female, and the latter as the male reproductive ccll. But even in this case the gametes, if they fail to conjugate, can germinate independently.

In Cutleria the sexual differcntiation of the reproductive cells is more marked ; the male and female cells are developed in distinct sporangia, which may be termed respectively antheridia and oogonia, two male cells being formed in cach antheridium, and one female ccll in each oogonium; the female cell is considerably larger than the male, but they

are both planogametes, that is, conjugating cells which swim by means of cilia; the female cell, however, soon withdraws its cilia and comes to rest, and then conjugation takes place, with the formation of a zygospore, much in the same way as in Ectocarpus described above.

The next stage in the sexual differentiation of the Alge is to be found in such forms as Volvox, Vaucheria, @idogonium, Fucus, and the Characee. In these plants, as in Cutleria, the reproductive cells are entirely incapable of independent germination ; they have lost altogether that characteristic property of spores ; asin Cutleria also they are developed in two kinds of sporangia—antheridia and oogonia—and they are very different from each other in thcir form, size, and behaviour. In most cascs the oogonium gives rise to a single relatively large cell, the oosphcre, which is at no time provided with cilia, and is not set free from the oogonium ; in some of the Fucacex, there may, however, be two (Pelvetia), four (Ozothallia [Ascophyllum]), or eight (Fucus) oosphcres produced in each oogonium, and in all the Fucacez the oospheres are set frec from the oogonium, The antheridium gives rise to a large number of small ciliated cells, the antherozvids, one of which subsequently fuses with the oosphere. The coalescence of two such highly differen- tiated sexual cells is termed fertilization, to distinguish it from

Fertili- zation

rire opwc Tron 425

the conjugation of similar sexual cells, and the product of fertiliza- tion is termed an oospore, to distinguish it from the product of conjugation, the zygospore. In these plants the antherozoids still retain the essential characters of planogametes, whereas the Sa a have lost them.

ut it is not in all Alge that sexual reproduction is cffected by Sexual the fusion of well-defined sexual cells. In the Floridex the sexual reproduc- reproductive organs are well differentiated. The male organ is an tion of antheridium which produces antherozoids ; but these antherozoids Floridex. are peculiar in that they have no cilia, and are surrounded by a cell-wall ; they are frequently, on this account, termed spermatia. The female organ is termed a procarpiuwm or carpogoniwm ; it may consist of

one or many cells, but in all cases it consists of a pro- jecting filament, the trichogyne, and a more expanded basal portion, It is peculiar in that no well-defined oosphere exists within it. Fertilization is effected by the antherozoid (spermatium) being passively brought into contact with the trichogyne ; complete fusion then takes place, the contents of the spermatium passing into the trichogyne; the trichogyne now withers, and changes take place in the basal portion of the procarpium, one or more of the cells termed carpogenous cells divide, and by a process of budding give rise to a cluster of cells which are capable of germinating, and pro- duce new plants; these are termed carpospores. At the same time the cluster of spores frequently becomes surrounded by an up- growth of tissue ; the mature fructification is termed a cystocarp. From the female organ of the Floridex there are, then, formed, in consequence of fertilization, a number of reproductive cells, the carpospores, each of which corresponds to the oospore of plants like Fucus, Vaucheria, &c. A more detailed comparison with Fucus makes this correspondence at once apparent. In Fucus the contents of the female organ (oogoniuin), which is a single cell, divide into eight oospheres, which are subsequently fertilized ; in the Floridee there is, before fertilization, no differentiated oosphere, but the organ, as a whole, is fertilized by the spermatium, and it is in this case after, and not before, fertilization, as in the case of Fucus, that a process of cell-formation takes place in the female organ ; hence the reproductive cells formed by the fertilized female organ of the Floridex are at once fertile, and correspond to the fertilized oospheres (oospores) of Fucus.

The peculiarities of the sexual reproduction of some of the Floridee are of sufficient gcncral interest to be mentioned here.

In the Corallinex, according to Solms-Laubach, the procarpia are produced several together in a conceptacle ; it is, however, only the central procarpia of the group which are capable of being fertilized, and the peripheral procarpia which produce carpospores.

After the fertilization of the central procarpia, the carpogenous

cells of the whole of the procarpia fuse together to form one large

en the periphery of which the carpospores are produced by udding.

TAS Shiysiblopieal division of labour is more marked in Dud- resnaya, and a few other Floridee. In these plants some of the procarpia are destitute of a trichogync, whereas others possess that organ. The spermatia fertilize those procarpia which posscss a trichogyne, but these procarpia do not produce carpospores ; but there grow out from them filaments which fertilize the procarpia destitute of a trichogyne, and these then give risc to carpospores.

The development of the carpospores in the Bangiacee (Bangia, Porphyra) is peculiar. The carpogenons cell does not in this case, as in other Floridex, produce spores by budding, but its proto- plasm divides into eight portions; these are set free as naked masses of protoplasm, which move about for a time in an ameeboid manner and then come to rest and surround themselves with a ccll- wall.

In some of the higher Alge, namely, in the Sphacelariew and in No sexual the Laminariex, families belonging to the Phxosporex, no sexual process process has been observed as yet; but, as our knowledge of the observed life-history of these plants is imperfect, it cannot be definitcly in some stated at present that they are entirely asexual. Algee.

In the somewhat aberrant group of the Conjugate the scxual Con-

process is peculiar. In the Desmidiex and the Mesocarpee it is jugate. effected in this way, that two adjacent cells, belonging usually to different filaments, throw out corresponding latcral protuberances which mect, and, the intervening walls being absorbed, form a canal placing the cavities of the two cells in direct communication ; the protoplasm of each cell contracts, forming an aplanogamete, and travels into the canal, where the two masses meet and fuse. This is clearly a process of conjugation, similar to that of plano- gametes, and the product is likewise a single cell which is termed a zygospore. In the Zygnemes, of which Spirogyra is a familiar example, the process is slightly different. Here the protoplasm of one of the two conjugating organs contracts first and passes over into the cavity of the other, there to fuse with its protoplasm.

Turning now to the Fungi, we find that in the simplest forms Fungi. (Schizomycetes, Saccharomycetes) there is no trace of sexual reproduction, whereas in the higher forms, with some exceptions, sexual reproductive organs are present, though they are in many cases functionless.

XX, — 54

426

The lowest Fungi in which a sexual process has been observed are the Chytridiacese (Polyphagus Euglenz), the Mucorini, and the Entomophthoree. In these, when it occurs, it takes the form of conjugation, with the production of zygospores. Conjugation is here effected in essentially the same manner as that described above for the conjugation among the Algw, by the fusion of two similar sexual organs. Conjugation of planogametes has been observed by Sorokin in Tetrachytrium and in Haplocystis, pro- bably belonging to the Chytridiaces, a fact of some interest as it is the only case of this form of the sexual process known in the Fungi.

ey Protomyces and the Ustilaginex a process takes place which appears to be of a sexual nature, resembling the conjugation of the Mucorini. Certain reproductive cells of an elongated form, termed sporidia, are produced, which become connected by a transverse canal so that they then resemble the letter H. No zygospore is formed, but the conjugated sporidia are its equivalent. The question of the sexual nature of this process is still under discus- sion, but it is made highly probable by the fact that, in all fully investigated cases, the sporidia are incapable of independent germination.

In the allied groups of the Peronosporee and Saprolegnice two

REPROVEeTIOWN

[VEGETABLE,

paraphyscs, which lie amongst the asci, whereas others form an investing wall. The result is the formation of a fructification, termed an apothcctum. Within each ascus eight spores are formed.

In those Ascomycetes which have spermatia fertilization is effected, as in the Floridee among the Alge, by the fusion of a spermatium with the trichogyne. The result is the same as in Pyronema : the fertilized ascogonium gives rise to hyphe which bear asci, and these, together with sterile hyphe, form a fructi- fication.

It is of interest to note the similarity between the products of fertilization in these Ascomycetes and in the Floridee. In both cases the female organ produces no differentiated oosphere, and in both cases the product of its fertilization is a many-spored frncti- fication. It was pointed ont, in speaking of the Floridex, that each carpospore is the equivalent of a fertilized oosphere (oospore) ; this holds good also with regard to the carpospores (ascospores) of the Ascomycetes.

It may be that a similar sexual process takes place in the other forms mentioned above, viz., the Erysiphew, Penicillium, Sordaria, &c., but it has not been observed ; in any case, the ascogonium in all these plants gives rise to asci and ascospores, and a more or less

complex fructification is produced. But there is also some ground Sexual for believing that in some at least of these cases the sexual organs, degenera- though morphologically differentiated, are functionless. For there tion in are clear indications of sexual degeneration in the Ascomycetes, Ascomy- In some cases, for instance (e.g., Chetomium, Melanospora), no cetes. antheridium can be distinguished, but the ascogonium eventually produces asci nevertheless. In others (¢.g., Xylaria, as far as

kinds of sexual organs are present, male and female, which corre- spond to the autheridia and oogonia of the Alge. The female organ is here also termed an oogonium, and, like that of the Alge, it may produce one oosphere (Peronosporese) or many (most Saprolegniez). The male organ is also usually termed an anthe- ridium, but it is sometimes spoken of as a

pollinodiwm on account of the mode in which it effects the fertilization of the oosphere.

In one of the plants allied to these groups—namely, in Monoble- pharis spherica, according to Cornu—the protoplasm of the antheridium becomes differentiated into motile antherozoids ; this is the only case of the kind known among the Fungi. In the other members of these groups in which fertilization takes place the antheridium lies in contact with the oogonium, and produces at its apex a delicate tubular outgrowth, which bores its way through the wall of the oogonium and comesinto contact with an oosphere ; the tube then opens, and protoplasm from the antheridium passes

known at present) no male organ is produced, but there is an ascogonium which does not, however, give rise to asci; the asci, as well as the rest of the fructification, arise from the vegetative hyphex. In others, again (¢.g., Claviceps, Cordiceps, Pleospora), all trace of the sexual organs has disappeared, but a fructification containing ascospores is produced, as in Xylaria, from the vegeta- tive hyphe. In others, finally, no ascospores are known, the only reproductive cells being the characteristic asexually produced stylospores.

through into the oosphere and fuses with it to form an oospore. In the remaining groups of Fungi, the Uredinee and the Basidio- Fungi in

Sexual In the Ascomycetes sexual organs are very commonly present, | mycetes, no sexual reproduction is known, In the Basidiomycetes which organs of but it is only in a few cases that a scxual process has been observed | no kind of sexual organ has been discovered. In the Uredinex sexual Ascomy- actually to take place. The sexual organs differ considerably in | spermatia are commonly produced, as in the Ascomycetes mentioned reproduc- cetes. their form in the different genera. In some (e.g., Gymnoascus, | above, but no female organ is known ; however, fructifications tion is un- Eremascus, Eurotium, Penicillium) the sexual organs are similar; | termed acidia are in some cases developed. These resemble known, they are unicellular or multiccllular hyphe, but in some the | somewhat those of the Ascomycetes, but differ in that here the female organ, termed in the Ascomycetes the

ascogoniwm or carpo- | spores (zcidiospores) are formed by abstriction, and not in asci as goniwm, may be distinguished from the male organ, which is a | in the Ascomycetes. pollinodial antheridium like that of the Peronosporex, in that it It may be suggested that the ascospores of the asexual Ascomy- is wound into a close spiral. In others (¢.g., Erysiphex, Ascobolus, | cetes and the xcidiospores of the Uredinex should not be included Pyronema [Peziza] confluens) the sexual organs are readily dis- | in an account of the sexual reproduction of the Fungi. It is true tinguishable. In the Erysiphew and in Pyronema the asecogonium | that these spores are asexually produced, but their evident homo- is a single relatively large ovoid cell ; that of Pyronema produces | logy with the sexually produced spores makes it inconvenient to a delicate tubular outgrowth, the trichogyne; the antheridium | treat of them apart. They differ from the sexually produced spores also is unicellular, but it is more slender. In Ascobolus the | in that they are developed apogamously. ascogonium consists of a row of five or six relatively large cells ; Under the name Archegoniata we may conveniently group Arche- the antheridium is a slender multicellular hypha. In all these | together the Muscinee and the Vascular Cryptogams (Plerido- goniata. cases the sexual organs are developed in such close proximity to | phyta). The sexual organs, as also the process of fertilization, are each other that they come into contact. In other Ascomycetes | essentially the same throughout. The female organ produces a belonging to the Discomycetons Lichens (Collema, Synechoblastus, | single oosphere, and is termed an archegoniwm ; it is essentially Leptogium, Physma), aud to the Pyrcnomycetcs (Polystigma), the | similar to the oogonium of the Thallophytes, the only difference antheridial filaments, termed sterigmata, are developed at a dis- | being that, whereas the archegonium is multicellnlar, the oogonium tance from the female organ in separate receptacles, spermogonia. | is unicellular. The male organ, here also termed the antheridium, In this case the formation of male cells isa necessity. Accordingly | is likewise multicellular, and gives risc to a larger or smaller cells, termed spermatia, are produced from the sterigmata by | number of motile antherozoids. Fertilization is effected by the abstriction, which resemble the male cells of the Floridex in that | fusion of an antherozoid with the oosphere, which then clothes they are non-motile and have a cell-wall. itself with a cell-wall and becomes an oospore.

With regard to the process of fertilization, it must be premised In the Phanerogams the sexual organs are essentially of the Phanero- that in no Ascomycete is the protoplasm of the ascogonium ever | nature of archegonia and of antheridia, but they are somewhat gams. differentiated into an oosphere. When the sexual organs are | modified and are called by other names. The female organ of the ascogonia and pollinodial antheridia, fertilization takes place by | Gymnosperms, termed a corpusculwm, closely resembles the arche- the fusion of the undifferentiated protoplasmic contents of the two | gonium of the Archegoniata, and produces a single oosphere. In organs, a mode of fertilization which recalls the conjugation in the | the Angiosperms, the female organ is much reduced, consisting Mucorini, and in the Conjugate among the Alge. This has only | only of three cells, one of which is the oosphere, the other two been observed to take place in Eremascus and in Pyronema; in | being the synergidx which assist in the process of fertilization ; the latter the antheridium applies its apex to the trichogyne of | the organ is termed the egg-apparatus. The male organ in the the ascogonium, the intervening walls are absorbed, and the pro- | Phanerogams is a unicellular filament termed the pollen-tube ; its toplasm of the two organs coalesces. Although this process of | protoplasm does not undergo differentiation into antherozoids, fertilization resembles the conjugation occurring in the Mucorini, | The sexual organs of tle Phanerogams recall those of the Perono- the product is very different. The product of conjugation iu the | sporee and the Saprolegniex ; in both cases the female organ pro- Mucorini is a single cell, the zygospore ; the product of fertiliza- | duces an oosphere, and in neither does the protoplasm of the

Asco- tion in the Ascomycetes is a .umber of cells, termed ascospores or | antheridium produce antherozoids. The process of fertilization

spores carpospores. Thus in Eremascus the product of fertilization is a | will be described subsequently.

we a ie ae picid the ascus, in which eight ascospores are Physiology of Reproduction.—From the fact that in uct of formed. In Pyronema the fertilized ascogonium enlarges and : : : :

fertiliza- gives rise to a ries Bat of outgrowths which produce rs ep ime | the most highly organized plants ie isolated portion

tion. same time a number of hyphe grow up from below around the of one member is capable of producing, not merely a

developing asci, some of which produce delicate filaments, termed

member like itself, but other members also, so that a new

VEGETABLE. |

individual is constituted, it is clear that the protoplasm of plants is imperfectly differentiated physiologically. Never- theless all plants produce cells to which the work of repro- duction is especially assigned. It is of interest to recall the fact that a suppression of spore-formation, either asexual or

rer nroewvuc TIC N

427

would appear that the former are in some way incomplete, that something is lacking to them which the latter possess, and that this lack is supplied in the sexual process. In

many cases facts have been observed in connexion with the development of the sexual cells which indicate that

sexual, may occur, and vegetative multiplication be reverted to, as in aposporous and some apogamous plants.

they are thus incomplete. In Acetabularia the whole of Difference the protoplasm of the gametangium is not used up in the between

Tt has been shown above that the reproductive cells of | formation of the gametes, and in the Peronosporez only a 8%"! plants are of two kinds— thcse, namely, which are indivi- | portion of the protoplasm of the oogonium forms the asexual dually capable, and those which are

individually incapable, | oosphere ; the remainder is simply the periplasm. In cells.

of giving rise to a new organism; the former are the asexual, the latter the sexual reproductive cells. It has also been indicated that the latter are to be regarded as derivatives of the former, a point which may now be somewhat more fully established. It was pointed out, namely, that the gametes of Ulothrix will, if they fail to conjugate, germinate independently; the sexual differen- tiation of these gametes is clearly imperfect, and they differ but little from asexual zoospores. The same thing has been observed in Botrydium, and this is a specially interesting case inasmuch as it throws some light upon the conditions which determine sexual differentiation of the reproductive cells in these lowly organized plants. It has been ascertained that the nature of the cells produced from the resting-spore, in the manner described above, depends upon the age of the spore producing them: when the spore is young, the cells produced by it are sexual gametes ; if they fail to conjugate they perish ; when the spore is old, the cells produced by it are entirely asexual zoospores ; they never conjugate, but each by itself gives rise to a new indi- vidual. The imperfect sexual differentiation of the gametes has also been observed in Ectocarpus; if they fail to con- jugate they germinate independently. The occurrence of this in Ectocarpus is rather surprising when it is remem- bered that the gametes of this plant are to some extent sexually differentiated as male and female (see above). From these cases in which the typically sexual repro- ductive cells still possess the properties of asexual spores we pass to others, like Acetabularia, in which they have entirely lost these properties. The planogametes of this plant are definitely sexual; but they are quite similar, as far as external appearance goes, to each other ; there is no perceptible distinction between male and female cells. This is the case also in the Mesocarpex and the Desmidiez among the Conjugate; here the non-ciliated conjugating masses of protoplasm (aplanogametes) are externally similar Differen- and take an equal part in the sexual process. In Cutleria lation of the planogametes, and in the Zygnemee the aplanogametes,

Sexnal cells derived from asexual.

ee give indications of further sexual differentiations ; in Cut- cells, leria the female gamete is much larger than the male and comes sooner to rest ; in the Zygnemez the one aplanoga- mete passes over into the cell producing the other aplano- gamete and fuses with it; the former is to be regarded as male, the latter as female. Finally, in the oosporous Alge, in the Muscinez, and in the Pteridophyta the two cells are quite distinct in form, size, and behaviour; the male cell (antherozoid) alone retains the character of a planogamete, the female (oosphere) is non-motile and is many times larger than the antherozoid. In this series the gradual differentiation of the highly differentiated sexual cells from asexual cells can be clearly traced. Sexual If the sexual reproductive cells are to be traced back to an asexual spores, then the organs which produce the sexual Bom reproductive cells are also to be traced back to those which spor- produce the asexual spores, namely, the sporangia; the angia, most highly differentiated sexual organ—the antheridium,

the oogonium, the archegonium, the carpogonium—is derived from the sporangium.

The question now arises as to the nature of the differ- ence between sexual and asexual reproductive cells. It

Vaucheria and other Algee a mass of protoplasm escapes from the oogonium when it opens. In other cases a pro- cess of cell-division has been observed to accompany the formation of the oosphere which recalls the production of the " polar bodies" in the developing eggs of animals. In the Archegoniata the central cell of the archegonium does not directly give rise to the egg, but a portion, the ventral canal-cell, is first cut off; this takes place also in the cor- pusculum of most Gymnosperms. Similarly in the develop- ment of antherozoids, the whole of the protoplasm of the mother-cell is never used up in their formation.

In the germinating microspore of most of the Heterosporous Vascular Cryptogams and of the Phanerogams a process of cell- division takes place which Strasburger interprets as the formation of a polar body. The protoplasm of the microspore undergoes division so that two cells are formed, which may be distinguished as the vegetative and the generative, the former being much smaller than the latter in the Vascular Cryptogams

and in the Gymno- sperms, whereas in the Angiosperms the converse is the case; usually the separation of the two cells is permanent, but in most Angiosperms it is transitory, the only permanent indieation of the cell-division being the presence of two nuelci in the pollen-grain; in some Gymnosperms two or three more vegetative cells may be cut off from the generative ccll. The antheridinm is in all cases formed from the generative cell. These vegetative cells Stras- burger regards as of the nature of polar bodies. The nucleus of the generative cell undergoes division, to form in the Heterosporous Vaseular Cryptogams the nuclei of the mother-cells of the anthero- zoids, and in the Phanerogams the nuclei which take part in the sexual process, as will be more fully described below.

The assumption of the incompleteness of the sexual, cells may be extended to those sexual reproductive organs which, like the procarpia of the Floridex, the pollinodial antheridia of the Peronosporez, the ascogonium and pol- linodial antheridia of the sexual Ascomycetes, do not give rise to differentiated sexual cells.

There is reason to believe that the sexual reproductive cells are spores which, by the loss of certain of their con- stituents, have undergone sexual differentiation, and that those sexual organs which directly take part in the sexual process without the intervention of reproductive cells are sporangia which have undergone sexual differentiation in the same way. 'This is finally proved by the fact that in cases in which the normal phenomena of sexual differen-

tiation do not take place the reproductive cells can ger- Partheno- minate without fertilization, and the female sexual organ genesis.

can produce, without fertilization, cells capable of germina- tion. These cases are examples of that form of apogamy which is known as parthenogenesis. Parthenogenesis in plants producing differentiated sexual cells has been observed in the Mucorini, the Entomophthorex, and the Saproleg- nieze among the Fungi, and in Chara crinita among the Alge. In some Mucorini (occasionally in Absidia septata, A, capillata, Muco fusiger, Sporodinia, always in Jucor tenuis) and in some Entomophthorez, namely, the conjugat- ing hyphee remained closed, and

the protoplasmic contents of each surrounds itself with a cell-wall, the cells thus pro- duced being quite similar to the normal zygospore ; these cells are termed azygospores. In the Saprolegnies and in Chara crinita the oospheres behave like oospores and germinate in the same manner. The details of the development of these asexual sexual reproductive cells has been fully investigated by De Bary in the case of the

oospheres of the Saprolegniex. In this case that differen- tiation of the protoplasm of the oogonium into ooplasm and periplasm which has been described above as occurring in the closely allied and completely sexual Peronosporee does not take place, but the whole is used in the formation of the oospheres. It is quite clear also that in the Sapro- legniez no sexual process takes place. In some species of Saprolegnia the antheridia are altogether absent, in others they are rudimentary, and even in those Saprolegnice (some species of Saprolegnia, Achlya, Aphanomyces) in which the antheridia are well-developed they remained closed. No case is known of male parthenogenesis, that is, of the development of an individual from a male repro- ductive cell, among plants in which the sexual differentia- tion of the reproductive cells is well-marked, but there are instances of the kind in more lowly organized plants. Thus in the Mucorini, mentioned above, one of the azygo- spores produced may be regarded as belonging to a male organ; again, in Ectocarpus the male planogamete germi- nates independently as well as the female. Among plants the sexual organs of which do not produce specialized re- productive cells instances of parthenogenesis also occur. Thus the spores (ascospores) which are produced by the female organ (ascogonium) of those Ascomycetes, such as the Erysiphez, Penicillium, Melanospora, Xylaria, in which the male organ is functionless or absent can only be regarded

the two nuclei were found to differ qualitatively, inasmuch as the generative nucleus stained readily when treated with carmine, picro-carmine, methyl-green, &c., whereas tle vegetative nucleus stained imperfectly or not at all. On the formation of the pollen- tube, the generative nucleus, and sometimes the vegetative nucleus also, is carried down into it, and the former then undergoes division into two; occasionally one of the new nuclei divides again. The pollen-tube grows down the style, enters the ovary, and is directed to the micropyle of an ovule. In the ovule the egg-apparatus lies at the mieropylar end of the embryo-sac, and the delicate wall of the embryo-sac covering it undergoes absorption. In its further growth the pollen-tube comes into contact with the synergide ; in some cases its growth now stops, and a portion of its protoplasm, with one or both of the generative nuclei, passes through the mucilaginous wall at the apex of the tube, without leaving any opening behind it, and travels to the oosphere ; in other cases the pollen-tube grows between the synergids to the oosphere, and at once pours a portion of its protoplasm with a generative nucleus into it. This is followed by the appearance of a second nucleus in the oosphere (the male pronucleus), which is the generative nucleus derived from the pollen-tube, which now travels towards the nucleus of the oosphere (female pronucleus) and fuses with it ; when the two pronuclei have each a nucleolus these also eventually fuse. Fertilization is now complete.

The synergide take no direct share in the process of fertilization, but become disorganized; their disorganization usually begins when the pollen-tube first comes into contact with them. They serve merely to direct the pollen-tube or its escaped contents to the oosphere and to provide nourishnient for them.

‘he fusion of the male and female pronuclei has been observed also in the oosphere of the Gymnosperms, and in the conjugation of Spirogyra.

as being parthenogenetically produced. Since plants are so commonly able to reproduce vege- Signifi-

Admitting, then, that sexual differ from asexual | tatively, the question arises as to the necessity of the joe of reproductive cells in the lack of

something which the | production, either sexually or asexually, of spores. The gicion

Cause of sexuality.

Sexual process

in Angio- generative cell, and a larger, the vegetative cell.

sperms.

latter possess, and which was thrown off either from the former or from the organs which produce them, we may go on to inquire what this something may be. Our in- formation on this point is very scanty, but Strasburger's views throw some light upon it. He considers, namely, that the formative processes of the cell are regulated by the hyaline plasma of the nucleus—the nucleo-idioplasma, as he terms it; the richer the nucleus is in this substance the more capable is the cell of producing new cells. The asexual reproductive cells are then cells the nuclei of which are especially rich in this substance. He considers that the differences between asexual and sexual reproductive cells is quantitative and not qualitative—that the nuclei of the former are rich in nucleo-idioplasma, those of the latter poor, either originally or by the throwing off of part of their substance in the mode described above. In en- deavouring to account for the further differentiation of sexual reproductive cells into male and female, it seems natural to suggest that the respective nuclei have under- gone a qualitative differentiation, and that in the sexual process the qualitative, as well as the quantitative, incompleteness of each is made good. Strasburger is, however, strongly of opinion that this is not so, but that the difference is purely quantitative. But it must be pointed out that, according to this view, there is no reason why a sexual process should not take place, either between two male cells or organs, or between two female cells or organs, a possibility which is never. realized, nor is it possible to account for the fact to be subsequently dis- cussed that in many cases a sexual process cannot take place between sexual cells or organs of a closely-allied origin.

The nature of the sexual process will be better under- stood by a detailed description of it in some particular case. Strasburger's observations on the process of fertilization in Angiosperms.

At the period of the dehiscence of the anther, the protoplasm of the pollen-grain undergoes division into two cells—a smaller, the At the time of pollination, when the pollen-grain is mature, it is usually the

case that the only persisting indication of the previous cell-division is the presence of two nuclei in the protoplasm. In many cases

The following isa brief account of the results of |

biological importance of these cells is very great. They are capable, namely, of retaining their vitality under external conditions, such as long drought, absence of food, extremes of heat and cold, which would prove fatal to the plant, and they therefore are essential to the maintenance of the species. F'urther they are of importance in the distribution of the species; they are light, readily transportable by wind or water, in some cases themselves actively motile. In this way they serve to prevent that close aggregation of individuals of the same species which would result from a continued vegetative multiplication, and would prove in- jurious to the species. In the case of Phanerogams, in which the macrospore is not set free from its sporangium, the same ends are obtained by the production of seeds.

The further question now arises as to the importance of the sexual process.

It appears that, if any given species, at least among Import- of ance of d sexuality,

the higher plants, is reproduced through a long series generations in a non-sexual manner, the individuals ten to degenerate, and the original well-developed form can only be reattained by the formation of a sexually produced spore. This result is to some extent realized by the fusion of two sexual cells or organs belonging to the same indi- vidual—that is, by self-fertilization—but more completely when the fusion takes place between

sexual cells or organs belonging to distinct individuals—that is, by cross-fertiliza-

tion. In some plants, as in the Peronospores and in those Cross fer-sexual Ascomycetes which have pollinodial antheridia, self- tilization.

fertilization alone is possible ; this is also the case in certain Phanerogams in which the arrangements are such (notably in cleistogamous flowers) that only pollen from its own anthers can reach the stigma of the flower. In most cases, however, the conditions under which the sexual process is carried on, such as the formation of free-swimming gametes

-and antherozoids, and of spermatia and pollen-grains which

can be readily conveyed from place to place, are such as to favour the occurrence of cross-fertilization. are special arrangements for the attainment of this end, the most general of which is diecism, that is, the produc- tion of the male and female organs by distinct organisms. Thus in certain Fucacee (Fucus vesiculosus, I'. nodosus,

In some there Diceism.

Forma- tion of fruit.

VEGETABLE. |

F. serratus, Himanthalia lorea) some individuals bear only antheridia, and others only oogonia; among the Muscinex the plants are frequently either male or female; in the Isosporous Vascular Cryptogams the prothallia are usually hermaphrodite ; but exclusively male and female prothallia occur not unfrequently in the Filices and asa rule in the Equisetacese. In the Heterosporous Vascular Cryptogams dicecism is brought about in a somewhat different manner: these plants have, as mentioned above, two kinds of spores, macrospores and microspores; the former on germination always give rise to a female (archegoniate) prothallium, the latter to a male (antheridial) prothallium; hence the male and female organs are necessarily borne on distinct organ- isms. In some

Phanerogams even the two kinds of spores are produced by separate individuals, the flowers of the one producing pollen-grains (microspores) but no embryo-sacs, those of the other producing embryo-sacs (macrospores) but no pollen-grains. More special arrangements are to be found in the flowers of Phanerogams for ensuring cross-fertiliza- tion, and preventing self-fertilization, e.g., the development of highly-coloured perianth-leaves and the secretion of nectar to attract insects, dichogamy, heterostylism, &c. ; but it is impossible to do more than mention these here.

But besides these obvious structural arrangements for ensuring cross-fertilization and preventing self-fertilization there are in some cases imperceptible physiological con- ditions which even more certainly lead to the same results. It appears, namely, that in such cases no sexual process can take place between reproductive cells or organs of closely-allied origin. Thus, among the Algz, in Ecto- carpus and in Acetabularia, conjugation only takes place between planogametes derived from distinct gametangia, and in Dasycladus it only takes place between plano-gametes derived from gametangia borne by different indi- viduals. Again, in many Phanerogams, as Darwin has shown, the pollen of one flower is quite incapable of fertilizing the oospheres of its own ovules, and the pollen- grains from another flower borne by the same plant is but slightly, if at all, more potent. The pollen from the flower of another individual of the same species is potent, and this the more so the wider the difference between the individuals; the pollen from an individual of a different variety is more potent than that from an indi- vidual of the same variety.

The effect of the sexual process is not necessarily con- fined to the cells or organs which directly take part in it ; not infrequently it makes itself felt in adjoining organs, stimulating them to active growth, giving rise to the formation of a fruit or fructification. Thus in the Mu- corini an outgrowth of filaments, forming an incomplete or complete (Mortierella) investment to the zygospore, takes place from the sexual organs after conjugation; in Coleochzte the oogonium becomes surrounded, after the fertilization of the oosphere, by an investment formed by outgrowths from the adjacent vegetative cells; a cellular investment is formed in the same way round the fertilized procarpium in most Floridex, and round the

fertilized ascogonium in the Ascomycetes. The most familiar case of fruit-formation is that occurring in the Phanerogams ; here in many instances the carpels, in some the floral leaves of the perianth, and in some the floral receptacle (torus) grow actively after the fertilization of the oospheres has taken place, giving rise to a mass of succulent parenchymatous tissue. In the Orchidex the develop- ment of the ovules does not take place at all until the flower has been pollinated.

Germination of the Spores and Alternation of Generations. —tThe spores of plants may either germinate immediately on their production, or they may undergo a. longer or shorter period of quiescence ; those which are destined for

immediate germination have, as described above, a thin cell-wall, whereas those which are capable of undergoing a period of quiescence have a thick cell-wall. In some cases the spores are incapable of immediate germination, notably sexually produced spores; for instance, among the Algz, immediate germination is only known to take place in the case of the zygospores of Botrydium and Ectocarpus, and of the oospore of Fucus; among the Fungi the zygospores of the Mucorini and the oospores of the Peronosporez and Saprolegniez pass through a period of quiescence.

The mode of germination is not always the same.

either by protruding one or more filamentous outgrowths, or by the division of its protoplasm to form the tissue of the embryo. In some cases the spore behaves like a reproductive organ; from its protoplasm are formed a larger or smaller number of cells, either motile or non- motile, which are set free. In Acetabularia, and under certain circumstances in Botrydium, the asexually pro- duced spore behaves like a sexual reproductive organ (gametangium), giving rise to a number of planogametes ; similarly the spore of Protomyces produces within itself a number of conjugating sporidia. In some Peronospores (always in

Cystopus; occasionally, according to circum- stances, in Pythium, Phytophthora, and Peronospora) the asexually produced spore behaves like a sporangium, and gives rise to a number of zoospores from each of which a new individual is developed. This happens occasionally also in sexually produced spores. Among the Fungi, the formation of zoospores in the oospore occurs in various species of Peronosporez and Saprolegnies. Among the Algze, zoospores are formed in the zygospores of Pandorina and Ulothrix, and in the oospores of Cidogonium and Spheroplea. Cases of a similar kind are known also in the Phanerogams ; thus in some Coniferze, and notably in the Gnetaceous Ephedra altissima, a process of cell-forma-

tion goes on in the oospore, resulting in the formation of a Polyem- a larger or smaller number of cells from each of which an bryony.

embryo plant is developed. These cases, in which, namely, the spore, whether sexually or asexually produced, gives rise to a number of cells, each of which is capable, by itself, of developing into a new individual, are instances of what is known as polyembryony.

In some cases the cells formed in the sexually produced spore do not each give rise to a new individual; this obtains in the Hydro- dictyeer. In Hydrodictyon utriculatum the protoplasm of the zygospore gives rise to two or four large zoospores which cventu- ally come to rest and remain quiescent for several months ; these resting spores are termed, on account of their form, polyhedra. Ou germination, the protoplasm of the polyhedron gives rise to a number of small zoospores, the endospore protruding asa delicate vesicle, within which the zoospores are in active movement ; the zoospores eventually come to rest, without escaping from the en- dospore, and arrange themselves so as to form the meshes of a small sac-like net, which is a young Hydrodictyon ; the endospore is then disorganized, and the young net is set free as an independ- ent ccenobium.

Occasionally it happens that a portion only of the spore gives rise to the embryo. 'This is the case in the sexnally produced spores (oospores) of the Charace, and in those of the Conifer ; in Selaginella and in the Angiospermous Phanerogams one-half of the oospore gives rise to a

filamentous structure, the suspensor, the other half to the main body of the embryo.

It is very commonly the case that the spore, on germina- tion, gives rise to an organism unlike that by which the spore was produced.

sporogonium, consisting typically of a longer or shorter stalk, the seta, bearing a capsule (theca) which produces the spores. When one of these spores germinates, it does not give rise to another sporogonium, but to an incon- spicuous, usually filamentous, structure, the protonema,

In Germina-

most cases the spore gives rise directly to a new organism, tion of spores.

In a Moss, for example, the asexu- Alterna-

ally produced spores are developed by an organism, the tion of genera-

tions

Forma- tion of seed.

430

upon which are developed, as lateral buds, moss-plants consisting of stem and leaves and bearing the sexual reproductive organs. Similarly, when the oospore has been formed by fertilization in the archegonium, it does not give rise to the sexual moss-plant, but to the asexual sporogonium. There is thus in the life-history of a Moss a regular alternation of a sexual with an asexual genera- tion; the former may be conveniently termed the oophore, the latter the sporophore; the asexually produced spore always gives rise to the oophore (moss-plant), the sexually produced spore (oospore) of the moss-plant always gives rise to the sporophore (sporogonium).

This kind of life-history is not peculiar to the Muscines, but it can be traced, more or less clearly, in all the vascular plants (Pteridophyta, Phanerogams). In the Isosporous Vascular plants, those, namely, which

produced spores of one kind only (Filices, Equisetaceze, Lycopo- diacez), the asexually produced spore gives rise, on germination, to a small inconspicuous organism consisting entirely of cellular tissue, termed the prothallium, on which the sexual reproductive organs, the antheridia and archegonia, are borne; the oospore produced by fertiliza- tion in the archegonium gives rise to the well-developed plant, consisting of stem, root, and leaves, which produces the sporangia and spores. The prothallium, derived from the asexually produced spore, is clearly the sexual genera- tion or oophore; the fully-developed plant derived from the sexually produced spore is the asexual generation or sporophore. In the Heterosporous Vascular plants, those, namely, which produce spores of two kinds (Rhizocarpe, Ligulatse, Phanerogams), the spores likewise give rise to prothallia, though they may be rudimentary. The micro- spore gives rise to a prothallium which is reduced to a single antheridium, and which, with the exception of Salvinia among the Rhizocarps, and of the Phanerogams, does not project from the spore; in Salvinia and in the Phanerogams it projects from the spore in the form of a closed tube, which is known in the Phanerogams as the pollen-tube. Similarly the macrospore of these plants gives rise to a small cellular prothallium bearing one or more archegonia, which in the Rhizocarps extends beyond the limits of the spore, but does not become free from it ; in the Ligulate (Selaginella and Isoetes) the prothallium is only partially exposed by the rupture of the coats of the spore, and in the Phanerogams, where it is termed the endosperm, it remains permanently and completely enclosed within the spore (embryo-sac). In the Heterosporous Vascular plants, then, as in the Isosporous, the asexual generation or sporophore is that which is termed the plant, which is highly differentiated morphologically and histolo- gically, and which produces the sporangia and the spores ; the sexual generation or oophore is here represented by two prothallia, the one exclusively male, the other exclu- sively female, derived respectively from the microspores and the macrospores.

Such a life-history can be stated generally in the follow- ing manner :— twice in its course the individual consists of a single cell, the spore, which in the one case has been produced asexually, in the other sexually; the sexual generation (oophore) springs from the asexually produced spore, and gives rise to the sexually produced spore (oospore) from which the

asexual generation (sporophore) is developed. It is of interest to note that in most cases the organism developed from the sexually produced spore is much more highly organized than that developed from the asexually produced spore.

A peculiarity of the macrospores of the Phanerogams is worthy of mention here, as it leads to the production of that structure, the seed, which is characteristic of Phanerogams; the production of a seed constitutes, in fact, the only real and constant distinction betwecn Phanerogams and Cryptogams.

REPRODUCTION

[VEGETABLE.

Asa rule the asexually produced spores of plants become free from the sporangium in which they have been formed. In Phanerogams this is true only of the microspores (pollen-grains), the macrospores (embryo-sacs) remaining permanently enclosed in the sporangia (mucellus) producing them. This being the case, their germination, 7.¢., the formation of endosperm, must take place within them whilst enclosed in the sporangium ; and, further, the formation of the female reproductive organs and the development of the embryo must take place under these circumstances also. The result is the production of a seed. In a typical secd three generations of the plant are represented ; they are as follows : — sporangial tissue belonging to the parent sporophore=perispcrm ; tissue belonging to the oophore =cndosperm ; the new sporophore =embryo.

In the seed the development of the new asexual plant procecds to a certain limit. When this is reached the development ceases, and it is only when the seed is placed under favourable conditions that the further development of the embryo, ¢.¢., the germination of the seed, can take place.

It has now been shown that in the life-history of the Muscineze and in plants above them in the vegetable kingdom there is a regular alternation of generations, and the question now arises as to how far this is true of

the life-history of plants lower than the Mosses, that is, in the Thallophytes. It is clear that no such alternation can take place in the life-history of those which are known to reproduce only either sexually or asexually, nor in that of those individuals which produce spores both sexually and asexually, either simultaneously or at different times.

The following are instances of the above-mentioned possible cases :—

Thallophytes reproduced only by asexually produced spores :—

Algxw: Cyanophycee or Phycochromacee ; Protococcacee ; Sphacelarie and Laminaries so far as known at prescnt.

Fungi: Schizomycetcs ; Saccharomycetes ; Myxomycetes ; some Chytridiee ; probably many Mucorini; a few Peronosporee (probably Phytophthora infestans and Pythiwm intermedium) ; some Ascomycetes and Ure-

dine ; Basidiomycetes.

Thallophytes reproduecd only by secually produced spores :—

Alge: Conjugate ; Fucacee ; Spheroplee. The case of the Characex will be subsequently discussed.

Fungi: afew Peronosporee (Pythiwm vexans, Artotrogus) ; Aneylistes Clostertt ; Aplanes Brawnit among the Sapro- leeniex ; some Ascomycetes, Eremascus, Sordaria (Hypocopra), Ascobolus furfuraccus, Pyronema confluens, Gymnoascus, Collemacce and other Lichen-Fungi ; some Uredinex in which only ecidiospores are known.

Thallophytes in which the same form produces spores both asexually and sexually :—

Algz: Vaucheria, Hydrodictyon, Ulothrix, CGidogonium, some Floridesx (¢.g., Polysiphonia vartegata).

Fungi: Mucorini; most Peronosporee and Saprolegniese ; Monoblepharis ; among the Ascomycetes, the Erysi- phee, Eurotium, Penicillium,

Nectria; some Uredince (Uromyces appendiculatus, U. Behenis, U. Serophulariz, U. Cestri, Puceinia Berberidis).

In some of the Alge, as in the Volvocineze, in the life- history of which distinct sexual and asexual forms occur, no alternation of generations can be traced, since there is no certainty as to the nature of the form arising from any given spore; the form developed from the asexually pro- duced spore is not, as in the typical life-listory of the Moss, necessarily sexual, nor is the individual produced from the sexually produced spore necessarily asexual. But in the life-history of some others an alternation of genera- tions istraceable. Thus in the Siphonaceous Acetabularia the plant produces spores; these, as mentioned above, behave on germination as gametangia; the gametes con- jugate to form a zygospore, and from the zygospore the asexual Acetabularia springs. Here there is a distinct and regular alternation of generations; the Acetabularia- plant is the asexual generation (sporophore), the gamet- angia alone representing the sexual generation (oophore). The life-history of Botrydium, another Siphonaceous Alga, is essentially the samé as that of Acetabularia, but it is frequently less regular ; thus the resting-spores, instead of producing gametes, may directly germinate to form a

Alterna- tion of genera- tions in Thallo- phytes;

in Alge;

rrr Rh OD

Botrydium-plant, a process which is clearly a case of apogamy; and, further, the Botrydium-plant does not necessarily produce resting-spores, but may produce zoospores by which it is directly reproduced. In Coleo- cheete, too, alternation of generations is indicated. The oospore produces by division a small individual which is always asexual, giving rise to zoospores which likewise produce asexual individuals; this asexual reproduction may continue through a number of generations until eventually a sexual individual is developed. In Coleo- cheete it is only in the case of the sexually produced spore that the nature of the resulting organism is known; it always gives rise to an asexual form, whereas the asexually produced spores give rise to an individual which may be either sexual or asexual. In the Characesw the oospore always gives rise to an imperfectly developed form, the proembryo, which is to be regarded as the sporophore ;

VEGETABLE. |

Sc TION 431

Polystigma (Ascomycete), the ascospore gives rise to a promycelium which bears sporidia, and these sporidia give rise to the sexual form. In Endophyllum (Uredinez) the life-history is precisely the same as that of Polystigma: the promycelium is the sporophore generation, the myce- lium developed from the sporidium the oophore. In other Uredinew the life-history is slightly modified in that asexually produced spores of at least two kinds make their appearance. The sexually produced spore (xecidiospore) gives rise to a mycelium which, in Gymno- sporangium and Hemipuccinia, bears asexually produced spores, teleutospores ; in Puccinia Graminis the formation of teleutospores is preceded by that of somewhat different spores, the uredospores; in any case the teleutospore gives rise, on germination, to a second asexual generation, the

promycelium, which bears sporidia; from these the sexual cecidium-bearing generation is developed.

The rule that, in the alternation of generations, the alter- Alterna- nate generations are developed from spores produced either tion of sexually or asexually is not, however, without exceptions, bee for in some instances the one generation may spring Vege- sorfered tatively from the other without the intervention of a spore. with by This is brought about by the suppression either of the apogamy

sexually produced spore or of the asexually produced spore ; ° ®PS-

however, it never produces spores, but gives rise to the sexual Chara-plant (oophore) vegetatively by budding. in The study of the life-history of the Fungi is attended Fungi. with considerable difficulty, partly on account of the fact that in many cases the development of the sexual organs is dependent upon a combination of external circumstances which may but rarely present itself, and partly on account

of there being frequently a great difference in habit between the sexual and asexual forms of the same plant, a difference which is sometimes accentuated, in parasitic Fungi, by the occurrence of the two forms on different plants as hosts (heterecism). But there are Fungi in the life-history of which alternation of generations has been ascertained. Before entering upon an account of these, it must be stated that the term "sexually produced spore" will be applied not only to those the formation of which is known to be preceded by a sexual process, but also to those which are formed probably or actually without a sexual process—in a word, apogamously—but which may be considered, as pointed out above, to be homologous with those which are actually sexually produced.

In Mucor Mucedo and Phycomyces nitens among the Mucorini, for instance, the zygospore gives rise on germination to an imperfectly developed individual (pro- mycelium) which is entirely asexual and produces spores; one of these spores, in turn, gives rise to an individual which produces spores asexually but may also bear sexual reproductive organs. Essentially the same life-history may be traced in certain Peronosporex (Phytophthora omnivora, Pythium proliferum). In these

cases the form developed from the sexually produced spore is always asexual, where- as that derived from the asexually produced spore may be sexual, but it always produces spores asexually; hence there is not a strict alternation of an asexual and a sexual generation. In others the alternation is complete. In the Ustilagineze, for instance, the asexually produced spore gives rise to an imperfectly developed mycelium (promycelium), which is the sexual generation; it produces the sporidia, which conjugate in pairs, and from the product of conjugation springs the mycelium, which bears asexually produced spores.

Essentially the same life-history has been traced in some Ascomycetes and Uredinexw. In Claviceps (Ascomy- cete) the sexually produced spore (ascospore) gives rise to an asexual form, long regarded as a distinct genus under the name of Sphacelia, from the spores of whick the sexual form is reproduced. In Sclerotunia (Pexiza) Fuckeliana (Ascomycete), a similar regular alternation of generations occasionally but not always occurs; the ascospore may give rise to an asexual form, long known as Botrytis cinerea, and when it does so the alternation of generations is complete ; but it may give rise to another sexual genera- tion, in which case no alternation takes place. In

the former is an instance of apogamy, the latter of apospory.

Thus in the apogamous Ferns mentioned above, the asexual generation (sporophore) is developed as a bud upon the sexual generation (oophore); and in Botrydium the gametangium which is the representative of the sexual generation may, instead of producing gametes, produce zoospores, in which case the new asexual individual is not developed from a sexually produced zygospore, but from an asexually produced zoospore. Similarly, in the apo- sporous Ferns and Mosses and in the Characee the oophore is developed as a bud from the sporophore.

The alternation of generations may be also interfered with by a combination of apogamy and apospory. This is the case, namely, when one generation gives rise to its like by vegetative budding, sporophore to sporophore, oophore to oophore. For instance, when, as in the Phanerogams mentioned above (Cclebogyne, Funkia, Nothoscordum, Citrus), embryos are produced vegetatively from the tissue of the nucellus,

that is, sporophore from sporophore, the typically intervening formation of spores, first, by the asexual method and, secondly, by the sexual method is suppressed. This is necessarily always the case among Phanerogams when one plant is produced vegetatively from another. A striking instance of the same thing has been observed by Goebel in some species of Isoetes, in which an Isoetes plant was produced on the leaf in place of a sporangium. Similarly when oophore springs vegetatively from oophore, the typically intervening formation, first, of the sexually produced spore and, secondly, of the asexu- ally produced spore, is suppressed. This occurs when, as mentioned above, a Moss-plant gives rise by budding or by means of gemmz to another Moss-plant, and when a Fern- prothallium gives rise to another by means of gemme.

BiptiogRaPuy. —General: Sachs, Yext-book, 2d English edition, 1882; Goebel, Grundziige der Systematik, 1882; Vines, " Alternation of Gencrations in Thallophytes," Journal of Botany, 1879; Pringsheim, "Ueber den Generationswechsel bei den Thallophyten," Jahrb. f. Wiss. Bot., xi., 1877. Algw: Falkenberg, in Schenk's Handbuch der Botanik, ti., 1882; Vines, "The Pro-embryo of Chara," Journal of Botany, 1878. Fungi: De Bary, Vergleichende Morphologie und Biologie der Pilze, 1884. Ferns: Cramer, " Ueber die geschlechtslose Vermehrung des Farn-prothaliums," in Denk- schriften der Schweitz. naturforsch. Gesellschaft, xxviii., 1880; Bower, "On Apospory in Ferns," Jour. Linn. Soc., Botany, vol. xxi., 1885. Afosses: Pringsheim, Monatsbericht d. Akad. d. Wiss. in Berlin, 1876; Stahl, Botanische Zeitung, 1876. Phystology : Strasburger, Ueber Befruchtung wnd Zellthetlung, 1878, and Neue Untersuchungen tiber den Befruchtungsvorgang bet den Phanero- gamen, 1884. (SH. V.)

REPSOLD, a family of German instrument makers. JOHANN GeEoRG Repsotp (1771-1830), was born at Wremen in Hanover on September 23, 1771, became an engineer and afterwards chief of the fire brigade in Hamburg, where he started business as an instrument maker early in the present century. He was killed by the fall of a wall during a fire on January 14, 1830. The busi- ness has been continued by his sons Georg and Adolf and his grandsons Johannes and Oscar.

REPT

NTELINN SAN writers comprised the animals which popularly are known as Tortoises and Turtles, Croco- diles, Lizards and Snakes, Frogs and Toads, Newts and Sala- manders, under the name of Oviparous Quadrupeds or four- limbed animals which lay eggs. Linnzus, desirous of giving expression to the extraordinary fact that many of these animals pass part of their life in the water and part on land,! substituted the name of Amphibia for the ancient term. Subsequent French naturalists (Lyonnet? and Brisson') considered that the creeping mode of locomotion was a more general characteristic of the class than their amphibious habits, and consequently proposed the scarcely more appropriate name of Leptiles.

As naturalists gradually comprehended the wide gap existing between Frogs, Toads, &c., on the one hand, and the other Oviparous Quadrupeds on the other, they either adopted the name of Batrachia for the former and that of Amphibia for the latter, or they restricted the term Amphibia to Batrachians, calling the remainder of these creatures Reptiles. Thus the term Amphibia, as used by various authors, may apply (1) to all the various animals mentioned, or (2) to Batrachians only—and thus it has been used in the article AmMpuipia in the present work. The term Reptiles is used (1) by some for all the animals mentioned above, and (2) by others, as in the present article, for the same assemblage of animals after the ex- clusion of Batrachians. Other terms more or less synony- mous with Amphibians and Reptiles in their different senses have been used by the various systematists, as we shall see hereafter.

Equally varying are the limits of the term "Saurians," which occurs so frequently in every herpetological treatise. At first it comprised living Crocodiles and Lizards only, with which a number of fossil forms were gradually associ- ated. As the characters and affinities of the latter became better known, some of them were withdrawn from the Sau- rians, and at present it is best to abandon the term alto- gether.

History AND LITERATURE. a. The General Subject.

By some feature of their organization or some peculiarity in their economy Reptiles have always forced themselves upon the observation of man or excited his imagination, so that certain kinds are mentioned in the earliest written records or have found a place among the fragments of the oldest relics of human art. Such evidences of a popular knowledge of Reptiles, however, form no part of a succinct review of the literature of the subject such as it is proposed to give here. We distinguish in it five periods :—(1) the Aristotelian; (2) the Linnean (formation of a class Amphibia, in which Reptiles and Batrachians are mixed) ; (3) the period of the elimination of Batrachians as one of

1 " Polymorpha in his amphibiis natura duplicem vitam plerisque concessit."

2 Théologie des Insectes de Lesser (Paris, 1745), i. 91, note 5.

3 Regne animal divisé en neuf classes (Paris, 1756).

J. G. Repsold introduced essential improvements in the meridian eircles by substituting mieroseopes (on Ramsden's plan) for the ver- niers to read the ecireles, and by making the various parts perfeetly symmetrical. For a nuniber of years the firm was foremost in this special braneh and furnished meridian cireles to the observatories at Hamburg, Konigsberg, Pulkova, &e.; later on the aetivity in this direction declined, while Pistor and Martins of Berlin rose to emi- nenee in the manufacturing of transit circles. But after the diseon- tinuanee of this firm that of Repsold has again come to the front, not only in the construction of transit circles, but also of equatorial mountings and more especially of heliomcters (see M1CROMETER).

ILES

the Reptilian orders (Brongniart) ; (4) that of the separa- tion of Reptiles and Batrachians as distinct subclasses ; (5) that of the recognition of a class Reptilia as part of the Sauropsida (Huxley).

1. The Aristotelian Period.—As in other branches of Aristotle.

zoology, we have to start with ARISTOTLE, who was the first to deal with the Reptiles known to him as members of a distinct portion of the animal kingdom, and to point out the characteristics by which they resemble each other and differ from other vertebrate and invertebrate animals. As the plan of his work, however, was rather that of a comparative treatise of the anatomical and physiological characters of animals than their systematic arrangement and definition, his ideas about the various groups of Reptiles are not distinctly expressed, but must be gleaned from the terms which he employs. And even when we make due allowance for the fact that we are in posses- sion of only a part of his writings, we cannot but per- ceive that he paid less attention to the study of Reptiles than to that of other classes; this is probably due to the limited number of kinds with which he could be ac- quainted from the fauna of his own country, and to which only very few extra-European forms, like the Crocodile, were added from other sources. And, whilst we find in some respects a most remarkable accuracy of knowledge, there is sufficient evidence that he neglected every-day op- portunities of information, as if Reptiles had not been a favourite study. Thus, he has not a single word about the metamorphoses of Batrachians, which he treats of in connexion with Reptiles.

Aristotle makes a clear distinction between the scute or scale of a Reptile, which he describes as qoAis, and that of a Fish, which he designates as Aemis. He mentions Reptiles (1) as oviparous quadrupeds with scutes, viz., Saurians and Chelonians; (2) as oviparous apodals, viz., Snakes ; (3) as oviparous quadrupeds without scutes, viz., Batrachians. He consideted the first and second of these three groups as much more nearly related to each other than to the third. He says :—

"The genus of Snakes resembles that of Lizards, nearly all the charaeters being common to both, if the Lizard be conceived of as prolonged and without legs. They possess seutes, and are similar to Lizards above and below, but they lack testicles; and, like Fishes, they possess two excretory duets which coalesce, and the uterus is large and bipartite. In other respects their internal parts are like those of Lizards, save that all the intestines are long and narrow. The tongue is narrow, long, black, and very exsertile. It is a peculiarity of Snakes and Lizards that they possess a

bifid tongue ; but the points of the tongue of Snakes are fine like hairs. All Snakes are "careharodont" (have acute teeth) ; they have as many ribs as there are days in the month, viz., 30. Some say that Snakes recover the loss of an eye ; the tail is reproduced in Lizards and Snakes when eut off," &c.

Thus accurate statements and descriptions are sadly mixed with errors and stories of, to our eyes, the most absurd and fabulous kind. The most complete accounts are those of the Crocodile (chiefly borrowed from Herodo- tus) and of the Chameleon, which Aristotle evidently knew from personal observation, and which he had dis-

sected himself. The other Lizards mentioned by him are the common Lizards (cavpa), the common Seps (xadkiés or fuyvis), and the Gecko (doxadkaBdrys or KopOvAos). Of Snakes (of which he generally speaks as édus) he knew the Vipers (éxus or éidva), the common Snake (#8pos),

of Reptiles mentioned in his work. But it may be estimated at about fifty, not including some marine fishes and fabulous creatures. He figures (or rather reproduces the figures of) about forty,—some species being represented by several figures.

and the Blindworm (rvpdivys dsdis), which he regards as a Snake; he further mentions the Egyptian Cobra and Dragons (dpéxwv)—North-African Serpents of fabulous size.

2. Linnean Period: Formation of a Class Amphibia,— Precur- Within the century which succeeded these compilatory sors of works (1650-1750) fall the labours which prepared the Lim#us.

John- ston.

f Chelonians he describes in a perfectly recognizable manner Land Tortoises (yeAdvy), Freshwater Turtles (€uvs), and Marine Turtles (yeAdvy 4 Oadarria).

Passing over eighteen centuries we find the knowledge of Reptiles to have remained as stationary as other branches of natural history, perhaps even more so. The Reptile fauna of Europe was not extensive enough to attract the energy of a Belon or Rondelet; popular prejudice and the difficulty of preserving these animals deterred from their study ; nor was the mind of man sufficiently educated not to give implicit credence to the fabulous tales with which every account of Reptiles in the 15th and 16th centuries was replete. The art of healing, however, was developing into a science based upon rational principles, and consequently not only those Reptiles which formed part of the materia medica but also the venomous Snakes became objects of study to the physician. Snakes, and especially the Viper, were treated of in distinct divisions of general works, or in separate monographs. It is true that these treatises were written less with the view of elucidating the natural history of the animals than with that of describing their poisonous nature and indicating the manner in which they should be used as medicaments, the majority of the writers being ignorant of the structure of the venom-apparatus, and of the distinction between non-venomous and venomous Snakes.

Nothing can show more clearly the small advance made by herpetology in this long post-Aristotelian period than a glance at the celebrated work, De Differentiis Animalium Libri decem (Paris, 1552), by Epwarp Worron (1492- 1555). Wotton treats of the Reptiles which he designates as Quadrupedes ovipare et Serpentes in the sixth book of his work. 'They form the second division of the Quadrupedes que sangunem habent, and are subdivided in the following " genera " :—

Crocodilus et scineus (cap. ev.) ; Testudinum genera (cvi.); Ran- arum gencra (cvii.); Lacerte (cviii.); Salamandra et seps quad- rupes (cix.); Stellio (cx.); Chameleo (cxi.) ; Serpentes (cxii.), a general account, the following being different kinds of Serpents: —Hydrus et alii quidam serpentes aquatiles (cxiii.) ; Serpentes berrestres et primo aspidum genera (cxiv.); Vipera, dipsas, cer- astes, ct hammodytes (cxv.); Hemorrhus,

sepedon, seps, cenchris, ct cenchrites (cxvi.); Basiliscus ct alii quidam serpentes quorum vencnum remedio caret (cxvii.) ; Draco, amphisbzna, et alii quidam serpentes quorum morsus minus affert periculi (cxviii.).

As regards the treatment of the subject, Wotton's work might with propriety be termed " Aristoteles redivivus." The plan is the same, and the observations of the Greek naturalist are faithfully, sometimes literally, reproduced. It is surprising that even the Reptiles of his native country were most imperfectly known to the author.

A new impetus for the cultivation of the study of natural history was given through the observations and writings of travellers in India, Africa, and America. With the enlargement of geographical knowledge that of Reptiles was also advanced, as is sufficiently apparent from the large encyclopzedic works of GEsNER, ALDROVANDI, and Jounston. The last-named author especially, who published the various portions of his natural history in the middle of the 17th century, was able to embody in his compila- tions notices of numerous Reptiles observed by Francisco Hernandez in Mexico and by Marcgrave and Piso in Brazil. As the author had no definite idea of the Ray-Linnzan term species," it is not possible to give the exact number

way for and exerted the greatest influence on Ray and Linneus. Although original researches in the field of herpetology were limited in extent and in number, the authors had freed themselves from the purely literary or scholastic tendency. Men were no longer satisfied with reproducing and commenting on the writings of their pre- decessors ; the pen was superseded by the eye, the micro- scope, and the knife, and statements were tested by experiment, This spirit of the age manifested itself, so far as the Reptiles are concerned, in CHARA's and Repr's admirable observations on the Viper, in Masor's and VaL- LISNIERI'S detailed accounts of the anatomy of the Chame- leon, in the researches of JacoBmus into the metamor- phoses of the Batrachians and the structure of Lizards, in Duray's history of the development of the Salamander (for Batrachians are invariably associated with Reptiles proper); in Tyson's description of the anatomy of the Rattlesnake, &c. The natural history collections formed by institutions and wealthy individuals now contained

not merely skins of Crocodiles or Serpents stuffed and transformed into a shape to correspond with the fabulous descriptions of the ancient dragons; but, with the discovery of alcohol as a means of preserving animals, Reptiles entire or dissected were exhibited for study ; and no opportunity was lost of obtaining them from travellers or residents in foreign countries. Fossils also were now acknowledged to be re- mains of animals which had lived before the flood, and some of them were recognized as those of Reptiles.

The contributions to a positive knowledge of the animal kingdom became so numerous as to render the need of a methodical arrangement of the abundance of new facts more and more pressing. Of the two principal systematic attempts made in this period the first ranks as one of the most remarkable steps of the progress of natural history, whilst the second can only be designated as a signal failure, which ought to have been a warning to all those who in after years classified animals in what is called an "artificial sys- tem." As the latter attempt, originating with Kier (1685 — 1759), did not exercise any further influence on herpeto- logy, it will be sufficient to have merely mentioned it. Joun Ray (1628-1705) had recognized the necessity of in- troducing exact definitions for the several categories into which the animals had to be divided, and he maintained that these categories ought to be characterized by the structure of animals, and that all zoological knowledge had to start from the "species" as its basis. His defini- tion of Reptiles as " animalia sanguinea pulmone respirantia cor unico tantum ventriculo instructum habentia ovipara" fixed the class in a manner which was adopted by the naturalists of the succeeding hundred and fifty years. Nevertheless, Ray was not a herpetologist; he never made these animals his special study, as is evident from the way in which he subdivides the class, as well as from his imperfect treatment of the species. His knowledge of Reptiles is chiefly derived from the researches of others, from whose accounts, however, everything not based upon reliable demonstration is critically excluded. He begins with a chapter treating of Frogs (Rana, with two species), Toads (Bufo, with one species), and Tortoises!

1 In associating Tortoises with Toads Ray could not disengage him- self from the general popular view as to the nature of these animals, which

found expression in the German Schildkréte (“ Shield-toad ”).

XX. — 55

Ray.

Linnezeus,

Laurenti.

434

(Testudo, with fourteen species). The second group com- prises the Lacert#, twenty-five in number, and includes the Salamander and Newts; and the third the Serpentes, nine species, among which the Limbless Lizards are enumerated.

Except in so far as he made known and briefly char- acterized a number of Reptiles, our knowledge of this class was not advanced by Linnaius. His notions as to the relation of the various types among themselves and to the other vertebrates were the same as those of Ray, and the progress made by herpetology in the various editions of the Systema Nature is therefore of a merely formal character. That Linneeus associated in the 12th edition cartilaginous and other Fishes with the Reptiles under the name of Amphibia Nantes was the result of some misunderstanding of an observation by Garden, and is not to be taken as a premonitory token of the recent discoveries of the relation between Batrachians and Fishes. Linnzeus places Reptiles, which he calls Amphibia, as the third class of the animal kingdom; he divides the genera thus :—

ORDER 1. Reprites.—Testudo (15 species); Rana (17 sp.); Draco (2 sp.) ; Lacerta (48 sp., including 6 Batrachians).

ORDER 2. SERPENTES.—Crotalus (5 species); Boa (10 sp.) ; ae (96 sp.); Anguwis (15 sp.); Amphisbena (2 sp.) ; Cecilia

Sp.).

None of the naturalists who under the direction or influence of Linneeus visited foreign countries possessed any special knowledge of or predilection for the study of Reptiles; all, however, contributed to our acquaintance with tropical forms, or transmitted well-preserved specimens to the collections at home, so that GMELIN, in the 13th edition of the Systema Nature, was able to enumerate three hundred and seventy-one species.

The man who, with the advantage of the Linnzan method, first treated of Reptiles monographically, was Laurent. In a small book! he proposed a new division of these animals, of which some ideas and terms have survived into our times, characterizing the orders, genera, and species in a much more precise manner than Linnzeus, giving, for his time, excellent descriptions and figures of the species of his native country. Laurenti might have become for herpetology what Artedi was for ichthyology, but his resources were extremely limited. He himself complains that he had no literary intercourse with foreign naturalists, and access to but a few works (he especially mentions Seba's Thesaurus) and one collection only,

The circumstance that Chelonians are entirely omitted from his Synopsis seems due rather to the main object with which he engaged in the study of herpetology, viz., that of examining and distinguishing Reptiles reputed to be poisonous, and to want of material, than to his convic- tion that Tortoises should be relegated to another class. He divides then the class into three orders :—

1. SALIENTIA, with the genera Pipa, Bufo, Rana, Tyla, and one species of " Proteus," viz., the larva of Pseudis paradoxa.

GRADIENTIA, the three first genera of which are Tailed Batrach-

ians, viz., two species of Proteus (one being the P. anguinus), Triton, and Salamandra; followed by true Saurians— Caudiverbcra, Gecko, Chameleo, Iguana, Basiliscus, Draco, Cordylus, Crocodilus, Scincus, Stellio, Seps.

3. SERPENTIA, among which he continues to keep Amphisbana, Cecilia, and Angwis, but the large Linnean genus Coluber is divided into twelve,

chiefly from the scutellation of the head and form of the body.

The work concludes with an account of the experiments made by Laurenti to prove the poisonous or innocuous nature of those Reptiles of which he could obtain living specimens,

u Specimen medicum exhibens Synopsin Reptilium emendatam cum experimentis circa venena et antidota Reptilium Austriacorum, Vienna, 1768 (8vo, pp. 214, with 5 plates).

REP Pines

The next general work on Reptiles is by LAc#PEDE. Lacépéde.

[11sTORY.

It appeared in the years 1788 and 1790 under the title Tlistoire Naturelle des Quadrupédes Ovipares et des Serpens (Paris, 2 vols. 4to). Although as regards treatment of details and amount of information this work far surpasses the modest attempt of Laurenti, it shows no advance towards a more natural division and arrangement of the genera. The author depends entirely on conspicuous external characters, and classifies the Reptiles into (1) oviparous quadrupeds with a tail, (2) oviparous quad- rupeds without a tail, (3) oviparous bipeds (CAzrotes and Pseudopus), (4) Serpents,—an arrangement in which the old confusion of Batrachians and Reptiles and the imper- fect definition of Lizards and Snakes are continued, and which it is worthy of remark we find also adopted in Cuvier's Tableau Elémentaire de UV Histoire Naturelle des Animaua (1798), and nearly so by LATREILLE in his Histoire Naturelle des Reptiles (Paris, 1801, 4 vols. 12mo). Lacépéde's monograph, however, remained for many years deservedly the standard work on Reptiles, on account of the ability with which the author collected all reliable information on the various species, and on account of the facilities which it afforded for determining them. The numerous plates with which the work is illustrated are, for the time, well drawn, and the majority readily recog- nizable.

3. The Period of Elimination of Batrachians as one of the Brong- Reptilian Orders.—A new period for herpetology com- niart.

mences with ALEX. Bronentart,? who in 1799 first recog- nized the characters by which Batrachians differ from the other Reptiles, and by which they form a natural passage to the class of Fishes. Cecilia (as also Langaha and Acrochordus) is left by Brongniart with hesitation in the order of Snakes, but Newts and Salamanders henceforth are no more classed with Lizards. He leaves the Batra- chians, however, in the class of Reptiles as the fourth order. The first order comprises the Chelonians, the second the Saurians (including Crocodiles and Lizards), the third the Ophidians—terms which have been adopted by all succeeding naturalists. Here, however, Brongniart's merit on the classification of Reptiles ends, the definition and disposition of the genera remaining much the same as in the works of his predecessors.

The activity in France in the field of natural science Daudin,

was at this period, in spite of the political disturbances, so great that only a few years after Lacépéde's work another, almost identical in scope and of the same extent, appeared, viz., the Histoire Naturelle Générale et Parti- culiére des Reptiles of F. M. Davpin (Paris, 1802-3, 8 vols. 8vo). Written and illustrated with less care than that by Lacépéde, it is of greater importance to the herpetologists of the present day, as it contains a consider- able number of generic and specific forms described for the first time. Indeed, at the end of the work, the author states that he has examined more than eleven hundred specimens, belonging to five hundred and seventeen species, all of which he has described from nature. The system adopted is that of Brongniart, giving to the work a character by which the modern herpetologist is most favourably impressed. The genera are well defined, but ill arranged; it is, however, noteworthy that Cexcidea takes now its place at the end of the Ophidians, and nearest to the succeeding order of Batrachians.

The next step in the development of the herpeto- logical system was the natural arrangement of the genera. This involved a stupendous amount of labour; by a careful thorough examination of all the types of Reptiles

then known, reliable characters had to be discovered, and by means of the principle of the subordination of

2 Bull. Acad. Sci., 1800, Nos. 35, 36.

Dumeéril, Oppel, and Cuvier.

hE R FT

characters the genera had to be grouped into families within Brongniart's orders. Although many isolated con- tributions were made by various workers, this task could be successfully undertaken and completed in the Paris Museum only, in which, besides Seba's and Lacépéde's collections, many other herpetological treasures from other museums had been deposited by the victorious generals of the empire, and to which through Cuvier's reputation objects from every part of the world were attracted ina more peaceful and voluntary manner. The men who devoted themselves to this task were A. M. C. DumERIL, OppEL, aud Cuvier himself. It is the duty of the bio- grapher rather than the historian to ascertain what share of the merit in building up the new system should be allotted to each of these three. Oppel was a German who, during his visit to Paris (1807-8), attended the lectures of Duméril and Cuvier, and at the same time studied the materials to which access was given to him by the latter in the most liberal manner. Duméril} main- tains that Oppel's ideas and information were entirely derived from his lectures, and that Oppel himself avows this to be the case. The passage,? however, to which he refers is somewhat ambiguous; and it is certain that there is the greatest possible difference between the arrange- ment published by Duméril in 1806 (Zoologie Analytique, Paris, 8vo) and that proposed by Oppel in his Ordnun- gen, Lamilien, und Gattungen der Reptilien (Munich, 1811, 4to). There is no doubt that Oppel profited largely by the teaching of Duméril; but, on the other hand, there is sufficient internal evidence in the works of both authors, not only that Oppel worked independently, but also that Duméril and Cuvier owed much to their younger fellow- labourer, as Cuvier himself indeed acknowledges more than once.

Oppel's classification may be shortly indicated thus :—

Orprr 1, TESTUDINATA orn CHELONIENS.

HISTORY. |

Fam. 1. Cnenonii (gen. Mydas, Coriacea). Fam. 2. AMyD& (gen. Trionyx, Chelys, Testudo, Emys). ORDER 2. SQUAMATA. Sect. A. SAURII. Fam. 1. Crocopinini (gen. Crocodilus, Gavialis, Alligator). Fam. 2. Grckorpxs (gen. Gecko, Stellio, Agama). Fam. 3. IevANorpes (gen. Camexleo, Draco, Iguana, Basiliscus, Lophyrus, Anolis). Fam. 4. Lacerrini (gen. Zupinambis, Dracena, Lacerta, Tachy- dromus). Fam, 5, SciNcoIDES (gen. Seincus, Seps, Scheltopusik, Anguwis). Fam, 6. Cuaucipicl (gen. Chalcides, Bimanus, Dipes, Ophi- SQUurTUs). Sect. B. Opnip11. Fam. 1. ANGUIFORMES (gen. Tortrix, Amphisbena, Typhlops). Tam. 2. ConstTRICTORES (gen. Boa, Eryx). Fam. 3. Hypri (gen. Platurus, Hydrophis). Fam. 4, PsEUDO-VIPER& (gen. Acrochordus, Erpeton). Fam. 5. CRoTauini (gen. Crotalus, Trigonoccphalus). Fam. 6. VIPERINI (gen. Vipera, Pseudoboa). Fam, 7. CoLuBRINI (gen. Coluber, Bungarus).

Orpver 3. NUDA or BATRACII.

In this classification we notice three points, which indicate a decided progress towards a natural system. (1) The four orders proposed by Brongniart are no more considered cosubordinate in the class, but the Saurians and Ophidians are associated as sections of the same order, a view held by Aristotle but abandoned by all following naturalists. The distinction between Lizards

1 Erpét. génér., i. p. 259.

2 "Ware es nicht die Ermunterung . . . dieser Freunde gewesen, so wiirde ich uiberzeugt von den Miangeln, denen eine solche Arbeit bei aller méglichen Vorsicht doch unterworfen ist, es nie gewagt haben, meine Eintheilung bekannt zu machen, obwohl selbe Herr Duméril in seinen Lectionen vom Jahre 1809 schon vorgetragen, und die Thiere im Cabinet darnach bezeichnet hat" (preface, p. viii), A few lines further on he emphatically declares that the classification is based upon his own researches.

and Snakes is carried out in so precise a manner that one genus only, Amphisbena, is wrongly placed. (2) The true Reptiles have now been entirely divested of all heterogeneous elements by relegating positively Caxcilia to the Batrachians, a view for which Oppel had been fully prepared by Duméril, who pointed out in 1807 that "les cécilies se rapprochent considerablement des batraciens auxquels elles semblent lier ordre entier des serpens."? (3) An attempt is made at arranging the genera into families, some of which are still retained at the present day.

In thus giving a well-merited prominence to Oppel's labours, we are far from wishing to detract from the influence exercised by the master spirit of this period, Cuvier. Without his guidance Oppel probably never would have found a place among the promoters of herpetological science. But Cuvier's principal researches on Reptiles were incidental or formed part of some more general plan ; Oppel concentrated his on this class only. The latter acquired a more correct view as regards the higher divisions, while Cuvier was enabled by a more detailed study of the genera to define certain families more precisely and arrange them in a more natural manner, and to add not a few to the generic forms. Cuvier adopts the four orders of Reptiles proposed by Brongniart as equivalent elements of the class, and restores the Blind- worms and allied Lizards, and, what is worse, also the Ceecilias, to the Ophidians. The Chameleons and Geckos are placed in separate groups, and the mode of dividing the latter has been retained to the present day. Also a natural division of the Snakes, although the foreign ele- ments mentioned are admitted into the order, is sufficiently indicated by his arrangement of the 'vrais serpens proprement dits" as (1) non-venomous Snakes, (2) venomous Snakes with several maxillary teeth, and (3) venomous Snakes with isolated poison-fangs. Without entering into those long descriptions of the species which continue to be the bane of modern zoology, he distinguishes the species of Reptiles with a precision not attained in any previous work, critically examining the literature and adding the principal references.

Cuvier's researches into the osteology of Reptiles had not only the object of forming the basis for their arrange- ment, but also of discovering the

means of understanding the fossil remains which now claimed the attention of French, English, and German naturalists. Extinct Clelo- nian and Crocodilian remains, Pterodactylus, Mosasaurus, Iguanodon, Ichthyosaurus, Teleosaurus, became the subjects of Cuvier's classical treatises which form the contents of the 5th volume (part 2) of his Recherches sur les Ossemens Lossiles, ot Von rétablit les caractéres des plusieurs animaux dont les révolutions du globe ont détrut les espéces (new ed., Paris, 1824, 4to).

All the succeeding herpetologists adopted either Oppel's or Cuvier's view as to the number of orders of Reptiles, or as to the position Batrachians ought to take in their relation to Reptiles proper, with the single exception of D. pg Buarnvitte. He divided the ' oviparous subtype" of Vertebrates into four classes, Birds, Reptiles, Amphi- bians, and Fishes,' a modification of the system which is all the more significant as he designates the Reptiles "Squammiferes Ornithoides, écailleux," and the Amphibians " Nudipelliféres, Ichthyoides nus." In these terms we perceive clear indications of the relations which exist to the class of Birds on the one hand, and to that of Fishes on the other; they are signs which cast their shadow before them, but, unfortunately, Blainville himself did not follow

*3 Mémoires de Zoologie et d' Anatomie Comparée, Paris, 1807, 8vo, p. 45. * Bull. Sci. Soc. Philomat., July 1816.*

Merrem.

Latreille.

Gray.

Wagler.

up the ideas thus expressed, and abandoned even the terms in a later edition of his systematic tables.

The direct or indirect influence of the work of French anatomists manifested itself in the systems of the other herpetologists of this period. The Crocodiles, especially, which hitherto (strange to say, even in Cuvier's classifica- tion) had been placed as one of the families of Saurians, now commence to be separated from them. MERREM (Versuch eines Systems der Amphibien, Marburg, 1820, 8vo) distinguishes two classes of "Amphibians," Dho- lidota and Batrachia.

The Pholidota (or Reptiles) arc divided into three orders, dis- tinguished chiefly by osteological and splanchnological characters:—

1. TESTUDINATA ; 2. LoricaTa (=Crocodiles) ; 3. SquaMATA (=Oppel's Sguamata, excluding Crocodiles).

Merrem's subdivision of the Squamata into (1) Gradientia (=limbed Lacertilia), (2) Repentia (=limbless Lacertilia), (3) Serpentia (=Snakes and Amphisbena), (4) Inccdentia (= Chirotes), and (5) Predentia (=Chamzleons) was based chicfly on the modifications of the limbs, and not adopted by his successors. The greater part of his work is occupied with a synopsis of all the species of Reptiles known, each being shortly characterized by a diagnosis ; but, as only a small proportion (about one hundred and seventy) were known to him from autopsy, this synopsis has all the faults of a compilation.

LATREILLE, who commenced the study of Reptiles as early as 1801, had kept pace with the progress of science when he published, in 1825, his Mamlles Naturelles du Régne Animal (Paris, 1825, 8vo). He separated the Batrachians as a class from the Reptiles, and the latter he divides into two sections only, Cataphracta and Squamosa,— in the former Crocodiles being associated with the Che- lonians. He bases this view on the development of a carapace in both, on the structure of the feet, on the fixed quadrate bone, on the single organ of copulation. None of the succeeding herpetologists adopted a combination founded on such important characters except J. E. Gray, who, however, destroyed Latreille's idea of Cataphracta by adding the Amphisbzenians! as a third order.

Cuvier's account of the genera and species of Reptiles in the Regne Animal was too succinct, and Merrem's bore too much the character of acompilatory list, to furnish efficient aid in the arrangement of the mass of new materials which began to accumulate from all parts of the world in European museums. Among others, Spix had brought from his travels in Brazil a rich spoil to the Munich Museum, and the Bavarian Academy charged Jon. WAGLER, who was engaged in working out these materials, to pre- pare a general system of Reptiles and Batrachians. His work,? the result of ten years' labour, is a simple but lasting monument to a young naturalist,? who, endowed with an ardent imagination, only too frequently misin- terpreted the evidence of facts, or forced it into the service of preconceived ideas. Cuvier had drawn attention to certain resemblances in some parts of the osseous structure of Ichthyosaurus and Pterodactylus to Dolphins, Birds, Crocodiles, &c. Wagler, seizing upon such ana- logical resemblances, separated those extinct Saurians from the class of Reptiles, and formed of them and the Monotremes a distinct class of Vertebrates, intermediate between Mammals and Birds, which he called Gryphi. When we consider that the discovery of the mode of pro- pagation of the Monotremes is probably reserved for the present decennium, and that the propagation of those extinct Reptiles may remain an unsolved mystery, we must

1 Catalogue of the Tortoises, Crocodiles, and Amphisbenians in the Collection of the British Museum, London, 1844, 16mo, p. 2.

2 Natiirliches System der Amphibien mit vorangehender Classifica- tion der Stiugethiere und Végel,—ein Beitrag zur vergleichenden Zoologie, Munich, 1830, 8vo.

3 Wagler was accidentally killed three years after the publication of his System.

) es

admit that Wagler has made free use of his imagination by defining his class of Gryphi as "vertebrates with lungs lying free in the pectoral cavity; oviparous ; development of the embryo (within or) without the parent; the

young fed (or suckled !) by the parents." By the last character this Waglerian class is distinguished from. the Reptiles.

Reptiles (in which Wagler includes Batrachians) are divided into eight orders :—Testudines, Crocodili, Lacertex, Serpentes, Angues, Cecilix, Rane, and Ichthyodi. He has great merit in having employed, for the subdivision of the families of Lizards, the structure of the tongue and the mode of insertion of the teeth in the jaws. On the other hand, however well the genera of Snakes are defined by him—and their number has been increased to ninety-six— Wagler has entirely failed in arranging them in natural families, venomous and non-venomous types being mixed in the majority of his groups.

[HISTORY.

L. Frrzmncer was Wagler's contemporary; his first Fitzinger.

work' preceded Wagler's system by four years. As he says in the preface, his object was to arrange the Reptiles in "anatural system, a system in which the objects are arranged in accordance with their greatest similarity, with their natural affinities. Such a system is a faithful image of the gradual progress of nature, expressed in words." Unfortunately, in order to attain this object, Fitzinger paid regard to the most superficial points of resemblance; and in the tabula affinitatum generum which he constructed to demonstrate "the progress of nature" he has been much more successful in placing closely allied generic forms in contiguity than in tracing the relationships of the higher groups. That table is prepared in the form of a genealogical tree, but Fitzinger wished to express thereby merely the amount of morphological resemblance, and there is no evidence whatever in the text that he had a clear idea of genetic affinity. The Batrachiansare placed at the bottom of the scheme, leading through Hyla to the Geckos (clearly on account of the digital dilatations) and through Cecilia to Amphisbena. At the top Draco leads through Ptero-dactylus to the Bats (Pteropus), Ichthyosaurus to the Cetaceans (Delphinus), Emys to the Monotremes, T'estudo to Manis, and the Marine Turtles to the Divers and Penguins.

In Fitzinger's system the higher groups are, in fact, identical with those proposed by Merrem, while greater originality is shown in the subdivision of the orders. He differed also widely from Wagler in his views as to the relations of the extinct forms. The order of Loricata consists of two families, the Jchthyosawroidea and Crocodiloidca, the former comprising Jgwanodon, Plesiosawrus, Saurocephalus, and Ichthyosaurus. In the order Syuamata Lacer- tilians and Ophidians are combined and divided into twenty-two families, almost all based on the most conspicuous external characters : the first two, viz., the Geckos and Chameleons, are natural enough, but in the three following Iguanoids and Agamoids are sadly mixed, Pterodactyles and Draco forming one family ; Megalosaurus, Mosasawrus, Varanus, Tejus, &c., are associated In another named Ameivoidea; the Amphisbenide are correctly defined ; the Colwbroidea are a heterogenous assemblage of thirty genera; but with his family of Bungaroidea Fitzinger makes an attempt to separate at least a part of the venomous Colubrine Snakes from the Viperines, which again arc differentiated from the last family, that of Crotaloidca.

There is sufficient evidence in this early publication that Fitzinger had at that time a good eye for seizing upon those characters by which the creation of small groups, such as genera, is regulated, and if this little work had been his only performance in the field of herpetology his name would have been honourably mentioned among his fellow-workers. But the promise of his early labours was not justified by his later work, and if we take notice of the latter here it is only because his name has become attached to many a Reptile through the pedantic rules of

4 Neue Classification der Reptilien nach ihren natiirlichen Ver- wandtschaften, Vienna, 1826, 4to.

!

‘

|

Dumeéril and Bibron,

zoological nomenclature. The labours of Wiegmann, Miiller, Duméril, and Bibron exercised no influence on him, and when he commenced to publish a new system of Reptiles in 1843,! of which fortunately one fasciculus only appeared, he exhibited a classification in which morphological facts are entirely superseded by fanciful ideas of the vaguest kind of physiosophy, each class of vertebrates being divided into five "sense" series, and each series into three orders, one comprising forms of superior, the second of medium, and the third of inferior development. In the generic arrangement of the species, to which Fitzinger devoted himself especially in this work, he equally failed to advance science. From a superficial study of such species as were accessible to him, but chiefly from the descriptions of other authors, he selected any characters for the establishment of genera, and, abandoning entirely the value of a genus as a systematic category, he introduced a number of names, under the cloak of which he hid the superficiality of his work ; many were adopted by his suc- cessors, who, however, had to substantiate their validity by a deeper study of the taxonomic characters.

We have now arrived at a period distinguished by the appearance of a work which, by the ability of its authors, by the comprehensiveness of its scope, by the treatment of the general subject as well as of the details, superseded all its predecessors, which formed the basis for the labours of many succeeding years, and which will always remain one of the classical monuments of descriptive zoology,— the Erpétologie Générale ou Histoire Naturelle compléte des Reptiles of A. M. C. Dumurit and G. Brsron (Paris, 8vo). The first volume appeared in 1834, and the ninth and last in 1854, No naturalist of that time could have been better qualified for the tremendous undertaking than C. Duméril, who almost from the first year of half a century's con- nexion with the then largest collection of Reptilia had chiefly devoted himself to their study. The task would have been too great for the energy of a single man; it was, therefore, fortunate for Duméril that he found a most devoted fellow-labourer in one of his assistants, G. Bibron, whose abilities equalled those of the master, but who, to the great loss of science, died (in 1848) before the completion of the work. Duméril had the full benefit of Bibron's knowledge for the

volumes containing the Snakes, but the last volume, which treats of the Tailed Batrachians, had to be prepared by Duméril alone.

The work is the first which gives a comprehensive scientific account of Reptiles generally, their structure, physiology, and literature. Nearly the whole of the first volume is devoted to these chapters. And again each of the four orders admitted by the authors is introduced by a similar general account. In the body of the work 121 Chelonians, 468 Saurians, 586 Ophidians, and 218 Batra- chians are described in detail and with the greatest pre- cision, Ou the principles of arrangement of the various orders we shall have to speak subsequently, and we men- tion here only that, singularly enough, the authors revert to Brongniart's arrangement, in which the Batrachians are co-ordinate with the other three orders of Reptiles.? This must appear all the more strange as Von Baer? in 1828, and J. Miiller in 1831, had urged, besides other essential differences, the important fact that no Batrachian*

HISTORY, |

1 Systema Reptilium, Vienna, 1843, 8vo.

2 The author of the article AmMpHipia in the present work (vol. i. p. 750) states that Gtinther, like Dum@¢ril and Bibron, in his Catalogue, in substance, adopts Brongniart's " arrangement." There isno founda- tion whatever for this statement, the relation of the Batrachians to the class of Reptiles not being even alluded to in that work. In a later division of the Reptilia by Giinther (Phil. Trans., 1867) the Batrachians are likewise excluded.

3 Entwicklungsgeschichte der Thiere, p. 262.

4 Tiedemann's Zeitschrift fiir Phystologie, vol. iv. p. 200.

TITLES 437

embryo possesses either an amnion or an allantois, like a Reptile.

4, Period of the Separation of Reptiles and Batrachians as Distinct Classes or Subclasses.—In the chronological order which we have adopted for these historical notes, we had to refer in their proper places to two herpetologists, Blainville and Latreille, who advocated a deeper than merely ordinal separation of Reptiles from Batrachians, and who were followed by F. 8. Leuckart. But thi view only now began to find more general acceptance. MULier and Srannivus were guided in their classification entirely by anatomical characters, and consequently recog- nized the wide gap which separates the Batrachians from the Reptiles; yet they considered them merely as sub- classes of the class Amphibia. The former directed his attention particularly to those forms which seemed to occupy an intermediate position between Lacertilians and Ophidians, and definitely relegated Anguis, Pseudopus, Acontias to the former, and Typhlops, Rhinophis, Tortriz, but also the Amphisbenoids to the latter. Stannius interpreted the characteristics of the Amphisbzenoids dif- ferently, as will be seen from the following abstract of his classification ® :—

Suse.assis : AMPHIBIA MONOPNOA (Leuckart).

Sect. 1. STREPTOSTYLICA (Stann.). Quadrate bone arti- culated to the skull; copulatory organs paired, placed out- side the cloacal cavity.

Orpo 1. OPHIDIA.

Subordo 1. EurystromMaTa or Macrostomata (Miill.). The facial bones are loosely connected to admit of great extension of the wide mouth.

Subordo 2. ANGIOSTOMATA or MicrosromaATA (Miill.). Mouth narrow, not extensile; quadrate bone attached to the skull and not to a mastoid.

Orpvo 2. SAURIA.

Subordo 1. AMPHISBHNOIDEA.

Subordo 2, Kronocrania (Stann.)= Lizards.

Subordo 8. CIAMZLEONIDEA.

Sect. 2. MONIMOSTYLICA (Stann.). Quadrate bone suturally united with the skull; copulatory organ simple, placed within the cloaca.

Orpo 1. CHELONIA. Orpdo 2. CROCODILIA.

This classification received the addition of a fifth Rep- tilian order which with many Lacertilian characters com- bined important Crocodilian affinities, and in certain other respects differed from both, viz., the New Zealand Hatteria, which by its first describers had been placed to the Agamoid Lizards. GwUnrHxr,® who pointed out the characteristics of this Reptile, considered it to be coordi- nate with the other four orders of Reptiles, and charac- terizes it thus :—

Eehynchocephalia.—Quadrate bone suturally and immov- ably united with the skull and pterygoid; columella present. Rami of the mandible united as in Lacertilians. Temporal region with two horizontal bars. Vertebre amphiceelian. Copulatory organs none.

5. Pertod of the Recognition of a Class of Reptilia as part of the Sauwropsida.—Although so far the discovery of every new morphological and developmental fact had pre- pared naturalists for a class separation of Reptiles and Batrachians, it was left to T. H. Huxley to demonstrate, not merely that the weight of facts demanded such a class separation, but that the Reptiles hold the same relation to Birds as the Batrachians to Fishes. In his Hunterian Lectures (1863) he divided the vertebrates into Mammals, Sauroids, and Ichthyoids, subsequently substituting for the last two the terms Sauropsida and Ichthyopsida." The

5 Siebold and Stannius, JZandbuch der Zootomie—Zootomie der Amphibien, 2d ed. Berlin, 1856, 8vo.

6 "Contribution to the Anatomy of Hatteria (Rhynchocephalus, Owen), in Phil. Trans., 1867, part ii.

7 An Introduction to the Classification of Animals, London, 1869, 8vo, pp. 104 sq.

J.J. Miiller

Owen.

438 ree ae

Sauropsida contain the two classes of Birds and Reptiles, the Ichthyopsida those of Batrachians and Fishes. The position thus assigned to Reptiles in the system is now adopted by the majority of zoologists.

R. Owen, while fully appreciating the value of the osteological characters on which Huxley based his division, yet admitted into his consideration those taken from. the organs of circulation and respiration, and reverted to Latreille's division of warm- and cold-blooded (hzemato- thermal and hematocryal) vertebrates, thus approximat- ing the Batrachians to Reptiles, and separating them from Birds. He says!—

'Although the Aves and Mammalia agree as hot-blooded vertebrates in their higher cerebral development and in the more complex heart and lungs, Birds, by genetie and developmental characters as well as by the general plan of their organization, are more intimately and naturally allied to the Oviparous Saurians than to the Viviparous Mammals. In their generation and development modern Batrachians differ from other cold-blooded air-breathers, and agree with Fishes. Present knowledge of extinet forms more clearly exposes the artificial nature of the primary groups of the oviparous vertebrates. An important link, the Pterosawria, or Flying Reptiles, with wings and air-saes, more closely connecting Birds with the actual remnant of the Reptilian class, has passed away. Other extinet orders (Ganocephala and Labyrinthodontia) have demonstrated the artificial nature of the distinction between Fishes and Reptiles, and the close transitions that connect together all the cold-blooded Vertebrates."

The Reptiles (or fonopnoa, Leuck.), then, form the high- est of the five sub-classes into which, after several previous classifications, Owen? finally divides the Zematocrya, The sub-class is composed of the following nine orders :—

a, IcHTITYOPTERYGIA (extinct)—Ichthyosaurus.

b, SAUROPTERYGIA (extinet)—Plesiosaurus, Pliosawrus, Notho-

saurus, Placodus.

C eee (extinct) —Dicynodon, Rhynchosaurus, Ouden-

oaon,.

. CHELONIA.

. LACERTILIA (with the extinct Mosasawrus).

. OPIIDIA.

: oo (with the extinct Teleosaurus and Streptospon- dylus).

h. aria (extinet)—Iguanodon, Seclidosaurus, and Mcgalo-

SAHULUS,

7 Prerosaunia (extinet)— Dimorphodon, Rhamphorhynchus,

and Pterodactylus.

As this ordinal arrangement deals in a uniform measure with extinct as well as living Reptiles, it is more complete than, and marks as great a progress in the history of herpetology as, any of the classifications recorded hitherto.

The study of fossil Reptiles had been continued after Cuvier by many workers, as Goldfuss, E. Geoffroy St Hilaire, Harlan, Mantell, G. F. Jiiger, Phillips, Leidy, Falconer, Cautley, Alton, Bronn, Kaup, Quenstedt, and especially H. von Meyer, who devoted the whole of his extra-official time to drawing with his own hand-numerous treasures preserved in Continental collections. But none contributed more to the knowledge of fossil Reptiles than Owen himself. Indefatigable in collecting materials, and able to bring to bear upon the subject an unsurpassed knowledge

ranging over' the whole field of comparative anatomy, he was unrivalled in elucidating the affinities of fossil remains as well as in the production of graphic descriptions. He showed that the number of living Rep- tilian types bears but asmall proportion to that of extinct forms, and, therefore, that a systematic arrangement of the entire class must be chiefly based upon dental and osteo- logical characters.

In this he was followed by Huxitey and Copr who, however, have restricted still more the selection of classi- ficatory characters by relying for the purposes of arrange- ment on a few parts of the skeleton only. This is a matter of necessity in dealing with fossil remains, but a

ema

1 Anatomy of Vertebrates, London, 1866, 8vo, vol. i. p. 6. 2 (OV, Bilog, 1s WE.

TILES

tendency has thereby been fostered in our times of apply-

ing the same principles in the subdivision of living

Reptiles to the greater or less exclusion of the considera-

tion of other parts of their organization.

Huxley and Cope attempted a further grouping of the orders which in Owen's system were merely serially enumerated as cosubordinate groups. Huxley used for Huxley, this purpose almost exclusively the position and character of the rib-articulations to the vertebral centre, the orders themselves being the same as in Owen's system :—

A. PLEUROSPONDYLITIA. Dorsal vertebrae devoid of transverse processes and uot movable upon one another, nor are the ribs movable upon the vertebre. Aplastron. Order 1, CHELONIA.

B. The dorsal vertebrae (which have either complete or rudiment- ary transverse processes) are movable upon one another, and the ribs upon

them. No plastron. :

a. The dorsal vertebre have transverse processes which are either entire or very imperfectly divided into terminal facets (ERPETOSPONDYLIA).

a, Transverse processes long ; limbs well developed, pad- dles; sternum and sternal ribs absent or rudiment- ary. Order 2, PLESIOSAURIA (=Sauropterygia, Ow.).

B. Transverse processes short.

[HISTORY.

aa. A pectoral arch and urinary bladder. Order 8, LACERTILIA.

bb. No pectoral arch and no urinary bladder. Order 4, OPHIDIA.

b. The dorsal vertebrae have double tubercles in place of trans- verse processes (PEROSPONDYLIA). Limbs paddle-shaped. Order 5, IcHTHYoSAURIA (=Jchthyopterygia, Ow.).

e. The anterior dorsal vertebra have elongated and divided transverse processes, the tubercular being longer than the capitular division (SUCHOSPONDYLIA).

a. Only two vertebra in the sacrum. DILIA. 8. More than two vertebre in the sacrum. aa. Manus without a prolonged ulnar digit. aa. Hind-limb Saurian. Order 7, DicyNonon- TIA (= Anomodontia, Ow.). 8B. Hind-limb Ornithie. Order 8, Ornitio- SCELIDA (= Dinosauria, Ow.). bb. Manus with an extremely long ulnar digit. Order 9, PTEROSAURIA.

Finally, Cope,? by combining the modifications of the Cope. quadrate and supporting bones with the characters used by Huxley further developed Owen's classification, separat- ing the Pythonomorpha and Rhynchocephalia as distinct orders from the Lacertilia. Whenever practicable he was guided in his nomenclature by priority. The following is an abstract of his classification :—

Order 6, Croco-

I. Extremities beyond proximal segment not differentiated to form. Order 1. IclITHYOPTERYG1A (Ow.). {I. Extremities differentiated. A. STREPTOSTYLICA (Stann.). Order 2. LACERTILIA. Order 3. PyrHonoMonrpuA (Cope). Order 4. OPHIDIA. B. S¥NAPTOSAURIA (Cope). Order 5, RiurynconocEPHALIA (Gthr.). Order 6. TESTUDINATA. Order 7. SAUROPTERYGI1A (Ow.). C. ARCHOSAURIA (Cope). Order 8, ANOMODONTIA (Ow.). Order 9. Dinosauria (Ow.). Order 10. CRrocopiLia (Ow.). Order 11, ORNITHOSAURIA (Fitz.).

The most recent general work on Reptiles is from the Hoff- pen of Dr C. K. Horrmann, and appears since the year mann. 1879 in Brown's Klassen und Ordnungen des Thierretchs.

The author treats with predilection the parts which relate to the anatomy of Reptiles, and which will prove to be of the greatest help to the student; each chapter is pre- ceded by a list of the most important publications. The systematic part is composed with less critical discernment, and its usefulness for scientific purposes will scarcely be

3 Proce. Amer. Assoc. for the Advancement of Science, 19th mecting, Cambridge, 1871, 8vo, pp. 2380 sq.

Works on

Croco- dilians and Lacer- tilians ;

LITERATURE. |

comniensurate with the amount of labour bestowed on its compilation.

b. Special Systematic Works.

After having followed the general history of herpetology to the present period, we have to mention the works by which our knowledge of certain orders or of the various Reptilian faunze has been specially advanced.

Crocodilia and Lacertilia.—We have already shown that the animals of these two orders were by the earlier authors thrown together in one group, of which a natural subdivi- sion into families was attempted by Oppel and Cuvier, that Merrem (1820) was the first to recognize in the Cro- codiles a separate group for which he proposed the name of Loricata, being followed therein by Blainville, who named the group Lmydo-sauriens, and that Latreille actually recog- nized their affinities to the Chelonians, uniting them under the name of Cataphracta. In Wagler's and Fitzinger's systems a distinct advance is manifested by the employ- ment of the tongue and also of the dentition as important characters. These, combined with the scutellation, the form of the toes, and the entire habitus, were also the characters on which the subsequent classifications by Wiegmann, Duméril and Bibron, Gray, and Stannius were based, the classifications varying according to the manner in which those characters are subordinated to one another. But, while the German and English herpetologists assign to the Amphisbeenians, Chameleons, and Crocodiles a rank more or less above, and distant from, the Lacertilian families, Duméril and Bibron take a singularly retrograde step in dividing Lizards into eight equivalent families, of which the first comprises the Crocodiles, and the second the Chamz- leons, the Amphisbenians forming part of the family Chalcidide. narrow-mouthed Snakes such as Uyphlops and Rhinophis among Lizards.

In the two most recent classifications of the families of

Lizards osteological (or rather craniological) characters |

supersede almost entirely those previously employed. Copz,! who had led the way in this direction, still allows subordinal value to the dentition as well as to the form of the tongue, as may be seen from the following scheme :—

Suborder 1. Rurproerossa. Fam. 1. Chamexleontide. Suborder 2. PACHYGLOSSA. Fam. 2. Agamide. Suborder 3. NycrisaAuRA. Fam. 3. Gecconide. Suborder 4. PLEURODONTA, a. Iguania. Fam. 4, Anolide; 5, Iquanidex. b. Diploglossa. Fam. 6, Anguidw; 7, Gerrhonotide ; 8, Xenosauridx; 9, Helodermidez. ce. Thecaglossa. Fam. 10. Varanide. d. Leptoglossa. Fam. 11, Zecide ; 12, Lacertide ; 18, Zonuridx ; 14, Chal-

eididx ; 15, Seineidxe; 16, Sepside. e. Typhlophthalini. Fam. 17, Anelytropidx ; 18, Acontiide ; 19, Aniellidez. Suborder 5, OPHIOSAURI. Fam. 20, Amphisbentde ; 21, Trogonophide.

Finally, whilst adopting in principle Cope's classification, G. A. BouLeNncEr,? partly by extending his examination on types not seen by Cope, partly by differently valuing the various craniological characters, introduced considerable modifications :—

1 Proc, Acad. Nat. Set. Philadelphia, 1864, pp. 224 sq., and Proe. Amer. Assoe. for the Advaneement of Seience, 1870 (1871), pp. 236 sq.

2 For an outline of his classification consult Ann. and Afag. Nat. Tfist., Aug. 1884, or Catalogue of Lizards, vol. i., 1885, p. 1.

bkEerTiLnies

Gray was the last who dared to place the-

439

Suborder 1. LACERTILIA VERA.

A. Tongue smooth or with villose papille ; clavicle dilated, loop-shaped proximally; no postorbital or postfrouto- squamosal arches.

Fam. 1, Geekonide ; 2, Hublepharide.

B. Tongue smooth or with villose papille ; clavicle not dilated proximally.

Fam. 3, Uroplatide; 4, Pygopodide ; 5, Agamidx; 6, Iguanide; 7, Xenosauride; 8, Zonuride; 9, Anguide ; 10, Antellide; 11, IHelodermatide ; 12, Varanide.

C. Tongue covered with imbricate, scale-like papille or with oblique plice; clavicle dilated proximally, frequently loop-shaped.

Yam. 18, Xantusiide ; 14, Tetide ; 15, Amphisbenide ; 16, Laeertide; 17, Gerrhosauride ; 18, Seineide ; 19, Anelytropidx ; 20, Dibamide.

Suborder 2. RHIPTOGLOSSA. Fam. 21. Chameleontide.

The principal works to be consulted by the student of recent Crocodilians are the following :—

Cuvier, Ossemens fossiles, vol. v. part 2 (1824); Geoffroy St Hilaire, " Descriptions des Crocodiles du Nil," in Mém. del' Institut d' Egypte (1818); Duméril and Bibron, Zrpétologie générale, Paris, 8vo, vols. ii, ili. (1835-36) ; Huxley, "On the dermal armour of Jacare and Caiman, with notes on the generic and specific characters of recent Croeodilia," in Jour. Proe. Linn. Soe., Zoology, vol. iv. pp. 1-28 (1860) ; Brithl, Das Skelett der Krokodiliner, dargestellt in 20 Tafein (1862); Strauch, "Synopsis der gegenwartig lebenden Crocodiliden," in Afém. Acad. St Petersburg, vol. x. (1866) ; Rathke, Untersuehungen iiber die Entwiekelung und den Korperbaw der Croeodile, Brunswick, 4to (1866); Gray, Catalogue of Shield- Reptiles in the Collection of the British Musewm,—part ii., Emydo- saurians, Rhynchocephalia, and Amphisbenians, London, 4to (1872) ; Parker, On the Structure and Development of the Skull in the Crocodiles, London, 4to (1888).

The principal special works to be consulted by the student of recent Lacertilians are the following :—

Wiegmann, Herpetologia mexieana,—Pars 1, Sawrorum speeies amplectens, Berlin, fol. (1834); Duméril and Bibron, Z7rpétologie générale, Paris, 8vo, vols. 2-5 (1836-39) ; Gray, Catalogue of the Speeimens of Lizards in the Colleetion of the British Musewm, London, 16mo (1845); Briicke, Betérdge zur vergleiehenden Ana- tomte und Physiologie des Gefdss-Systems der Amphibien, Vienna, 4to (1852); Rathke, Ueber den Baw und die Entwicklung des Brustbeins der Saurier (1854); Fritsch, Zur vergleichenden Ana- tomie des Amphibien-Herzens, Berlin, 8vo (1869) ; Fiirbringer, Die Knochen und Muskeln der Extremitdten bet den sehlangendhintiehen Sauriern, Leipsic, 4to (1870); Braun, Das Urogenitalsystem der einheimisehen Reptilien, Wirzburg, 8vo (1877); Parker, On the Strueture and Development of the Skull in the Lacertilia, (1879) ; Boulenger, Catalogue of the Lizards in the British Museum, 2d edition, London, 8vo (vol. i. in progress, 1885).

In a short sketch like the present it would be impossible to refer even to a small part only of the immense number of contributions by which our knowledge of Lizards has been advanced within the last forty years, either by adding to that of species previously imperfectly known, or by de- scribing new generic and specific forms. But an idea of this increase may be formed by a comparison of Gray's and Boulenger's catalogues ; whilst the former enumerated 186 species out of the families Geckonide and Agamide, Boulenger describes not less than 490 belonging to the same groups.

Ophidia.—We have already mentioned that in Oppel's system (1811) the first step is taken towards a natural classification of Snakes. Neither C. Duméril nor Merrem, Fitzinger nor Wagler, indicated the way towards a more natural arrangement; it seemed almost as if with the increase of the number of distinct genera their arrange- ment became more and more hopeless. In the meantime the Rijks Museum of Leyden had enriched itself under the able direction of Temminck, through the efforts of traveller- naturalists like Reinwardt, Kuhl, Van Hasselt, Boie, and Siebold from the Dutch colonies in the East. and West Indies, with materials fairly rivalling those accumulated in Paris. They were at first studied by the brothers Friederich Boie and Heinrich Boie, who well characterized

on Ophi- dians ;

a number of genera but failed in the attempt to arrange them in a natural or logical system. All the more remark- able, therefore, is the production by H. ScHLEGEL of an Essai sur la Physionomie des Serpens (Leyden, 1837 ; 2 vols. 8vo, with atlas in fol.). In this classical work the whole of the subject is treated throughout in a scientific manner ; the Species are described with a clear discernment of really dis- tinctive characters, the description being generally accom- panied with a faithful outline figure of the head, and with a critical examination of the literature. Schlegel, besides, has the merit of having recognized the great importance of exactness with regard to localities, and of giving a general account of the geographical distribution of Snakes. The principle of classification adopted by Schlegel, indeed, is not one which will be recognized as final

or even as legitimate at the present time, but it is one which is pre- ferable to that employed by Miller, Duméril, and Bibron, which led, as we shall see presently, to the most artificial grouping of species. He divided the Snakes into families according to their " physiognomy," that is '" impression totale que fait sur nous ensemble d'un étre quelconque, impression que lon peut sentir, mais qu'il est impossible de rendre au moyen de paroles; elle est le résultat de Vharmonie de toutes les parties isolées, dont on embrasse la confirmation d'un coup d'oeil, et dans leurs rapports mutuels." Schlegel had no training in, or knowledge of, anatomy; he, therefore, ignored Miiller's researches which appeared a few years before his work; yet it is note- worthy that his classification stands in the main, and has not yet been superseded. He divides Snakes as follows :—

I. Non-venomous Snakes.

Fam. 1. Burrowing. Gen. Tortrix. Fam. 2. Worm-like. Gen. Calumaria, Fam. 3. Terrestrial. Gen. Coronella, Xenodon, Heterodon, Lycodon, Coluber, Herpetodryas, Psammophis. Fam. 4. Arboreal. Gen. Dendrophis, Dryophis, Dipsas. Fam. 5. Freshwater. Gen. Tropidonotus, Homealopsis. Fam. 6. Boas. Gen. Boa, Python, Acrochordus. Venomous Snakes. Fam. 7. Colubriform. Gen. Hlaps, Bungarus, Naja. Fam. 8. Marine. Gen. Hydrophis. Fam. 9. Venomous Snakes proper. Gen. Trigonocephalus, Crotalus, Vipera.

Already in 1832 J. Mttier had proposed "a natural classification of Snakes on anatomical principles,"+ in which he paid particular attention to the osteology of the hitherto dubious forms of Ophidians, but in the end based his arrangement entirely on the structure of the jaws and on the dentition. As he did not extend his examination into other parts of the organization of the various genera, it may suffice here to state that he divided all Snakes into two sections, the first of which (Ophidia microstomata) comprised the four families Amphisbenoidea, Typhlopina, Uropeltacea, and Tortricina, and the second (Ophidia macrostomata) all the other Snakes, which he referred to seven families.

The direction thus indicated by Miller was followed by DuMERIL and Brsron, who, however, by their much more detailed knowledge of Snakes,

were enabled to subdivide the unwieldy categories formed by Miiller; also the genera which in Schlegel's system comprised Snakes with very different dentition had to be subdivided, and were defined with greater precision than had been done by any

If.

1 Tiedemann's Zeitschr. f. Physiologie, vol. iv. p. 268 sq.

previous herpetologist. They divide Snakes into five

equivalent sections ?:—

1. OpoTERoponTEs. Teeth in one of the jaws only: 2 families and 8 genera.

2, AGLYPHODONTES. and 86 genera.

3. OPISTHOGLYPHES. and 37 genera.

4. ProTérocLypurs, Anterior maxillary tooth grooved and fol- lowed by other smooth teeth : 2 families and 16 genera.

5. SoLfnociypues. Anterior maxillary teeth perforated and iso- lated : 2 families and 13 genera.

The progress made in ophiology from the time of the appearance of this work down to the present period consists rather in the increase of our knowledge of the great variety of species and genera than in the further development of the system. Gray, Reinhardt, Peters, Giinther, Cope, Bocage, Jan, Krefft, and others described a large number of forms, so that the number of those known to Duméril and Bibron has now been perhaps trebled or quadrupled. Unfortunately, no general work corresponding to the present state of science exists. But two works

published subsequently to the Lrpétologie générale are indispensable to the student.

The first is the Catalogue of the Specimens of Snakes in the Collection of the British Museum, of which the first part, containing the Viperine Snakes, Water-Snakes, and Boas, by J. E. Gray, appeared in 1849, and the second, containing the Colubrines, by A. GUNTHER in 1858. The classification, which was much behind its time, was fixed by the former of the two authors, so that the latter had to accommodate the arrangement of his part to that of his predecessor. However, he strongly opposed the application of the character of grooved posterior teeth to the formation of large sections, and generally adopted the principle advocated by Schlegel, whose generic groups were raised into families. A great number of Snakes unknown to Duméril are described in these catalogues, whilst others which happened not to be represented in the British Museum are omitted.

G. JAN in his Hlenco sistematico degli Ofidi descritti e disegnati per ? Iconograyia generale (Milan, 1863, 8vo) gene- rally adopts the families created by Giinther, but institutes under each two divisions, Aglyphodonta and Glyphodonta. Jan's great merit is the publication of his Iconographie générale des Ophidiens (Milan, 1860-763), in which he figures all species which were in the Milan Museum or lent to him by other institutions, and which thus forms an invaluable aid in the determination of species. The author died during the progress of the work, but it was continued by his artist, Sordelli. No descriptive letter- press worthy of the name accompanies this work.

The anatomy of Ophidiaus has hitherto received less attention than that of the other Reptilian orders. Be- sides the information contained in general works, we refer here only to two important special treatises :—

Rathke, Hntwicklungsgeschichte der Natter, Konigsberg, 1839, 4to; and Parker, On the Structure and Development of the Skull in the Common Snake (Tropidonotus natrix), London, 1879, 4to.

Chelonans.—Of ante-Cuvierian authors who paid special attention to this suborder the following deserve special mention :—J. G. Warpaum, J. G.*

ScHNeIDER,® J. D. Scoorpr,® and A. F. ScoweiccEr.' Five or six

2 Duméril changed the nomenclature adopted in his sixth volume when, eight years afterwards, he published the seventh after the death of Bibron. We give here the revised nomenclature.

3 The latest, parts were issued without date between 1876 and 1882. Pe aoe oder Beschreibung einiger Schildkréten, Liibeck, i 0.

® Allgemeine Naturgeschichte der Sehildkréten, Leipsic, 1788, 8vo.

8 Historia Testudinum tconibus illustrata, Erlangen, 1792-1801, 4to (left incomplete by the death of the author),

7 Prodromi Monographie Cheloniorum sect. 1a et 2a, Konigsberg, 1814, 8vo.

Teeth in both jaws, none grooved: 12 families

Posterior maxillary teeth grooved: 6 families

on Che- loniaus.

Reptilian faunas.

LITERATURE. |

distinct types of Chelonians were soon recognized, and appear also in Cuvier's Hégne Animal, viz., Testudo, Emys, Chelys, Trionyx, Chelonia with Sphargis. These types were at first recognized as genera, and raised by the sub- sequent authors to the rank of families, in which many more genera were distinguished, the arrangements merely differing in the various methods of subordination of the different families.

The anatomy of Tortoises was investigated chiefly by C. Perrault, who gave a detailed description of one of the Gigantic Land Tortoises in Mém. Ac. Sc. Paris, iii. (1666- 69); by Cuvier in the Ossemens fossiles; by Wiedemann in Arch. f. Zool. und Zoot., 1802 ; by Geoffroy St Hilaire in Ann. Mus., xiv.; and especially by L. H. Bojanus,! who published an

anatomical monograph of Hmys europea, in which all parts are illustrated in detail, the plates being accompanied by an explanatory text. H. Rathke? studied their development, and L. Agassiz? and W. K. Parker4 that of the Turtles.

The most complete systematic and descriptive work is that by J. E. Gray. He engaged in the study of Tortoises at various times, subdividing the principal groups, as the materials grew under his hands, at first principally on the ground of external characters, and afterwards of such craniological features as seemed to him of generic value.® ALEXANDER STRAUCH contributed two painstaking me- moirs,® the second of which is especially valuable as it contains a collection of all the published facts concerning the distribution of Tortoises over the globe. The authors mentioned associated Sphargis with Chelonia, the later ones generally as the type of a distinct family, all the marine Turtles being comprised in a section Pinnata or Huereta (Stannius) ; and it was only Cope who recognized in the want of specialization of the skeleton of the Leathery Turtle sufficient grounds for separating it into a distinct section, Athecex.

c. Faunistic Works.

In noticing the principal faunistic works, we omit the majority of the older and antiquated publications, and almost all treatises which appeared in periodicals, as their existence can be readily ascertained by reference to works of more modern date or of a more general scope.

Europe.—(1) T. Bell, A History of British Reptiles; 2d ed., London, 1849, 8vo. (2) 8S. Nilsson, Scandinavisk Fauna, pt. iii. ; Amfibicrne, 2d ed., London, 1860, 8vo. (3) A. Strauch, " Die Schlangen des Russischen Reichs," A/ém. Ac. Sc. St Pétersburg, xxi. 1873, 4to. (4) H. Schlegel, De Dieren van Nederland: Kruipende Diercn, Waarlem, 1862, 8vo. (5) F. Leydig, Die in Deutschland icbenden Arten der Saurter, Tiibingen, 1872, 4to; and Ueber die cinheimischen Schlangen, Frankfort, 1888, 8vo. (6) E. Schreiber, Herpetologia Huropxa, Brunswick, 1875, 8vo. (7) V. Fatio, Fawne des Vertebres de la Swisse, vol. iii. of Hist. nat. des Reptiles et des Batraciens, Geneva, 1872, 8vo. (8) C. L. Bonaparte, Jconografia della Fauna ttalica, vol. ii., "Amfibi," Rome, 1832-41, fol. (9) E. de Betta, Hrpetologia delle provincie Venete e del Tirolo meridional, Verona, 1857,

8vo. (10) A. Strauch, “ Essai d’une Erpétologie de lAlgérie,” Mém. Acad. Sct. St Pétersburg, 1862, 4to. (11) F. Latastc, Essai d’une Faune Herpétologique de la Gironde, Bordeaux, 1876, 8vo. (12) J. von Bedriaga, Die Amphibien und Reptilien Griechenlands, Moscow, 1882, 8vo.

Persia.—W. T. Blanford, Eastern Persia, vol. ii., London, 1876, 8vo.

1 Anatome Testudinis europe, Vilna, 1819-21, fol.

2 Ueber die Entwicklung der Schildkréten, Brunswick, 1848, 4to.

3 “Embryology of the Turtle,” in Contributions to the Natural History of the United States of America, vol. i., Boston, 1857, 4to.

4 “The Development of the Green Turtle,” in Voy. “Challenger,” Zoology, vol. i., London, 1880, 4to.

5 Catalogue of Shield-Reptiles in the Collection of the British Museum,—part 1, Testudinata, London, 1855, 4to; followed by Supplement to the Catalogue, dc., 1870, and by Appendix to the Catalogue, dic., 1872.

8 “Chelonologische Studien” and “Die Verbreitung der Schild- kroten iiber den Erdball,” in Afémoires de 1’ Acad. de St Pétersb., 1862 and 1865.

Be PEPTIDES

441

Japan.—H. Schlegel, Fauna Japonica—Reptiles, Leyden, fol.

ast Indics.—(1) P. Russel, Account of Indian Serpents, collccted on the coast of Coromandel, containing Descriptions and Drawings of each Specics, London, 1796, fol., and A Continuation of an Account of Indian Serpents, London, 1801-3, fol. (2) H. Schlegel, Abbildungen neuer oder wnvolistindig bekannter Amphibien, Diisseldorf, 1837-44, text 8vo, atlas fol. (3) J. E. Gray and Hardwicke, Jllustrations of Indian Zoology, London, 1830-32, fol. (4) T. Cantor, Catalogue of Reptiles inhabiting the Malayan Peninsula and Islands, Calcutta, 1847, 8vo. (5) A. Giinther,

Reptiles of British India, London, 1864, fol. (6) W. Theobald, Catalogue of the Reptiles of British India, Calcutta, 1876, 8vo. (7) J. Fayrer, The V'hanatophidia of India, London, 1874, fol. (8) J. Anderson, Anatomical and Zoological Researches, comprising an account of the Zoological Results of the two Expeditions to Western Yunnan, London, 1878, 4to.

Africa.—(1) Description de VEgypte—Histoire naturelle—Reptiles, Paris, fol., 1809, &c. (2) A. Smith, Jdlwstrations of the Zoology of South Africa, London, 8vo, 1849. (8) W. Peters, Naturwissen- schafiliche Reise nach Mossambique—Zoologie, iii., " Amphibien," Berlin, 1882, 4to.

North America.—(1) R. Harlan, American Herpetology, or Genera of the North American Reptilia, with a Synopsis of the Species, Philadelphia, 1827, 8vo. (2) J. E. Holbrook, North American Her- petology, or a Description of the Reptiles inhabiting the United States, 5 vols., with numerous col. plates, Philadelphia, 1836-48, 4to. (3) D. H. Storer, " Report on the Reptiles of Massachusetts," in Boston Jour, Nat. Hist., iii., 1841, pp. 1-65. (4) J. E. De Kay, Zoology of New York, vol. iii., " Reptiles and Amphibia," Albany, 1842, 4to. (5) 8. F. Baird and 8. Girard, Catalogue of North American Reptiles in the Museum of the Smithsonian Institution, pt. i. ' Serpents," Washington, 1858, 8vo. (6) Id., Reports upon Reptiles in Reports of Explorations for a Railroad from the Mississippi to the Pacific Ocean, Washington, 1859, 4to. (7) L. Agassiz, Contributions to the Natural History of the United States of America, vol. ii., ' North American TZestudinata," Boston, 1857, 4to. (8) S. Garman, "On the Reptiles and Batrachians," Afem. Mus. Comp. Zool., Cambridge, 1883, 4to. (9) H. C. Yarrow, Check-List of the North American Licptiles and Batrachians, with Catalogue of the Specimens in the U. §. National Museum, Washington, 1883, 8vo. (10) E. D. Cope is the author of numerous memoirs and papers in the various North American periodicals.*

Tropical America. —(1) Prince Maximilian von Wied, Abbildungen zur Naturgeschichte Brasiliens, Weimar, 1822-81, fol., and Beitrdge zur Naturgeschichte von Brasilien, i. " Amphibien," Weimar, 1825, 8vo. (2) J. B. Spix, Serpentum Brasiliensium species nove, Munich, 1824, fol.; Id., Ranw et Testudinis Brasiliensis species nove, Munich, 1825, fol.; Id.,

Animalia nova sine species nove Lacertarum quas in itinere per Brasiliam annis 1817-20, jussw et auspiciis Maximiliani Josephi I., Bavarizx regis, suscepto collegit et descripsit, d&c., Munich, 1825, fol. (8) A. F. A. Wiegmann, Zerpcto- logia mexicana, pars i., Saurorum species amplectens, Berlin, 1834, fol. (4) J.J.v. Tschudi, Untersuchungen tiber die Fauna peruana auf einer Reise in Peru wihrend der Jahre 1888-42, St Gall, 1846, fol. (5) Guichenot, in C. Gay's Historia fisica y politica de Chile, ii., " Reptiles," Paris, 1848, 8vo, atlas fol. (6) Cocteau and Bibron, in Ramon de la Sagra's Histoire physique, politique, et naturelle de Pile de Cuba—Reptiles, Paris, text 8vo, atlas fol. (7) F. de Castelnau's Expédition dans les parties centrales de Amérique du Sud—Zoologie—Reptiles, by A. Guichenot, Paris, 1855, 4to. (8) C. Girard, Reptiles (from Chili) in U. S. Naval Astronomical Expedition to the Southern Hemisphere, vol. ii., Washington, 1855, 4to. (9) S. F. Baird, U. S. Exploring Expedition, vol. xx., " Herpetology," Philadelphia, 1858, atlas fol. (10) Duméril and Bocourt, fission scientifique au Mexique et dans l Amérique Centrale—Etudes sur les Licptiles et les Batraciens, Paris, 1870, 4to (in progress), (11) A. Giinther, in Salvin and Godman's Biologia Centrali-Americana— Reptiles, London, 1885, 4to (in progress). (12) E. D. Cope, numerous papers in the various North American periodicals.

Australia.—(1) J. E. Gray and A. Giinther treat of the Lizards in Zoology of the Voyage of H. M.S. " Erebus" and " Terror," London, 1844, 1875, 4to. (2) G. Krefft, The Snakes of Australia, Sydney, 1869, 4to. (8) W. Peters and J. Doria, in Ann. Mus. Genov., xiii., 1878, 8vo.

GENERAL CHARACTERS OF THE CLASS AEPTILIA.

Reptiles are vertebrate animals, the skin of which is covered with horny or bony plates (scales or scutes). The heart has two auricles, but with the ventricular chamber generally incompletely divided ; two arterial trunks emerge from the right portion of the ventricle; the blood of the arterial and venous systems mixes either in the heart or at the origin of the aortic arches. Respiration takes place by lungs, never by bronchi ; portions of the lungs are simple without minute subdivision of the cavity ; and the. respira-

tory movements are slow and irregular. In consequence, Reptiles are cold-blooded animals. Their blood-corpuscles are red and nucleated. The thoracic and abdominal viscera are never separated by a complete diaphragm. The intestinal tract and the urogenital organs open into a common cloaca; the oviducts are developed from the Miillerian ducts, and dilated in their lower course for the reception of the ova; all Reptiles are oviparous or ovoviviparous.

The vertebral column articulates with the skull almost invariably by means of a single convex occipital condyle. The mandible consists of several distinct pieces, of which the articular bone articulates with a quadrate bone, interposed between skull and mandible. When the appendicular parts of the skeleton are present, the sternum is never replaced by membrane bone, and the posterior sternal ribs are attached to a median prolongation of the sternum. The ilia are prolonged farther behind the acetabulum than in front of it; the pubic bones directed downward and forward, and, like the ischia, forming a median symphysis. The metatarsal bones are not anchylosed among them- selves or with the distal tarsal bones.

As in Birds and Mammals, the foetus of Reptiles is enclosed in an amnion and allantois (Ammniota), and nourished from the vitellus of the egg.

In some of the most important characters mentioned above Reptiles agree with Birds, as in the. presence of a single occipital condyle, a complex lower jaw articulated to the skull by a quadrate bone, and nucleated blood-cor- puscles. The majority of naturalists, therefore, consider the two classes to constitute one of the main divisions of Vertebrates, the Sauropsida, At the present epoch, indeed, Birds are strikingly differentiated from Reptiles, but the discoveries within recent years of a number of extinct Birds with Reptilian characters offer ample evidence that Birds are the descendants of some branch or branches of the Reptilian type, in which the power of flight was developed, and with it other anatomical peculiarities by which Birds are now distinguished from living Reptiles.

ne OES EEE ale E

REPTILES

[CLASSIFICATION.

THE DIVISION OF AREPTILIA INTO ORDERS.

Of the various modifications that have been proposed in the classification of Reptiles the more important are mentioned in the historical part of this article. We adopt here a serial arrangement of those orders which seem to be well established, having already referred to the attempts that have been made to arrange these orders into higher groups.

‘Order 1, [onTHyoprerycria (extinct). Marine Reptiles with a Cetacean-like naked body and with four limbs formed into paddles, the parts of which after the humerus are not differentiated as to form or function. Tail long. Vertebrae numerous, biconcave; no sacrum. Dorsal vertebrae with double tubercles ; ribs movable, the anterior with bifurcate heads. Head large, with long powerful snout, joined to the trunk without neck. Quadrate bone immovably articulated to squamosal. A foramen parietale is present. Orbits ~~very~~ large with a circle of sclerotic

Fic. 1.—Skeleton of Iguanodon bernissartensis (after Dollo).

plates. A pair of clavicles rest upon an interclavicle and pass laterally to the scapule ; a pair of broad not over- lapping coracoids form the posterior part of the pectoral arch. A sternum is replaced by a series of abdominal splints.

Fam. a. Sawranodontide. Edentulous. Genus: Sawranodon, from the Jurassic formations of the Rocky Mountain region.

Fam. 0. Ichthyosauridw. Teeth numerous, implanted in a com- mon alveolar groove. Genus: Tchthyosaurus, from Mesozoic strata up to the Chalk.

Order 2. AnomoponvtA (extinct). Lacertiform Reptiles, the skull and four limbs of which are Lacertilian in most of their characters. Vertebra biconcave, four or five of them anchylosed together and forming a sacrum. The tubercular and capitular articulations are separated, the former and longer being on the diapophysis, the latter and shorter on the centrum; ribs movable, the anterior with a bifurcate head. Os quadratum suturally connected with the skull. A foramen parietale is present. Jaws Chelonian and probably cased in horny sheaths; either

edentulous or each maxillary bone was armed with a long evergrowing tusk, which sometimes was accompanied by other smaller teeth. The pectoral arch consisted of scapula and coracoid, but a clavicle seems to have been absent. Pelvis very strong, with continuous ischio-pubic symphysis.

Genera: Dicynodon, Galesaurus.

Order 3. Drnosaurta (extinct), This comprises Reptiles of a great diversity of form and size, some adapted for a terrestrial, others for an aquatic life, some carnivorous, the majority herbivorous, but all distinguished by charac. ters leading more or less closely from the Reptilian up to the Avian "type. The majority of trunk vertebre have flat or slightly concave articular ends, sometimes a few of the anterior are convex in front ; cervical vertebrae numer- ous; a sacrum is formed by more than two coalesced vertebree. Neural arches united to the centra by sutures. Thoracic ribs movable, with a bifurcate head; cervical ribs united to the vertebra either by suture or anchylosed.

CLASSIFICATION. |

Os quadratum suturally connected with the skull. The premaxillary bones are separate, and the rami of the lower jaw united in front by cartilage only. Form of the teeth variable ; they are not anchylosed to the bone. Two pairs of limbs are present, of which the hinder pair is the longer and larger, and generally ambulatory. The struc- ture of the pelvis and hind limbs partly Ornithic ; the pelvic bones are not coalesced with each other or with the sacrum ; the pubis enters into the formation of the ace- tabulum, and the ilium is prolonged forwards in front of the acetabulum;

ischia united in a median ventral symphysis. The head of the femur is placed at a right angle to the condyles; tibia with a procnemial crest, and a ridge for the fibula, which is complete. The proximal row of tarsals is formed by the astragalus and caleaneum only, and the former sometimes anchylosed with the tibia, thus forming the upper portion of the ankle-joint.t

1 Tn the case of no other group of Reptiles has knowledge, within the last few years, advanced so much as in that of Dinosaurians. It has supplied, on the part of the Reptilian type, the remarkable forms by which the chasm between living Birds and Reptiles is bridged over. Huxley's interpretation as to the affinities of these fossils, which was at first based on very imperfect materials, but on sufficient evidence to lead him to substitute the name of Ornithoscelida for the older one of Dinosauria, has been fully verified by the astonishing discoveries of most perfect remains at Bernissart in Belgium and in Jurassic formations of the United States. Compared with these recent, dis- coveries, the materials upon which Von Meyer, Owen, Leidy, Hulke, and Sceley based their researches must appear very fragmentary. The specimens found in the Wealden of Bernissart were those of different species of Jyuanodon, the skeletons of which were almost complete, the bones being preserved in their natural position and connexion ; they have formed the subject of a series of memoirs by L. Dollo (Bull. Mus. R. d' Hist. Nat. Belg., 1882-84). But these materials are far surpassed, as regards number and diversity of forms, by the discoveries in America, which have been made kuown by Cope and especially by O. C. Marsh.

All the Dinosaurian remains known at present belong to the Mesozoic age; they appear first in the Triassic, but the majority from these formations are so fragmentary that their classification is subject to much uncertainty. Some at least of the celebrated three-toed foot- prints which were discovered some fifty years ago in the United States, and about the origin of which much uncertainty existed, are evidently those of Dinosaurs. In the Jurassic these Reptiles attained their greatest development, Marsh distinguishing among the fossils of this period four orders with numerous families, The largest exceeded any other land animal in size, and measured from 50 to 80 feet. Dinosaurs continued to

the end of the Cretaceous period, and some genera became highly specialized, although none attained to the same large size as some of the Jurassic forms.

The disproportion in length and strength between the fore and hind limbs clearly shows that the mode of progression differed widely from that of ordinary Reptiles, and was bipedal at least in some of the genera. In assuming an erect position, their long tail assisted them in balanc- ing the body. Some possessed a dermal armour, the scutes being sometimes produced into enormous spines; others were provided with defensive weapons in the shape of spines attached to the fore-feet. The teeth vary exceedingly : in some of the carnivorous genera they are sharp, pointed, serrated, and recurved, in others flat, in others broad and molar-like ; in some the premaxille are toothed, in others toothless and beak-like.

Marsh compares the Dinosaurs, as regards diversity of form, with the Marsupials, and thinks that, like these latter, they should take the rank of a subclass rather than order. The following is an abstract of his latest classification of the proposed subclass Dino- sauria :—

Order 1. Savropopa. Feet plantigrade, ungulate; five digits in manus and pes; second row of tarsals and carpals unossified. Pubes united distally by cartilage; no post-pubis. Anterior vertebra opisthoceelian. Presacral vertebrae hollow. Fore and hind limbs nearly equal; limb bones solid. Sternal bones paired. Premaxillaries with teeth. Anterior nares at top of the skull.—Herbivorous.

Fam. a. Atlantosaurid#. Ischia directed downwards, with ex- panded extremities meeting ou median line. Anterior caudal verte- bre with lateral cavities. Genera: Atlantosaurus, Apatosaurus, Bronto- saurus. Gigantic Dinosaurians from Upper Jurassic deposits of Colorado, species of the first genns having attained to the enormous length of 80 feet. They are the least specialized forms of the subclass, and approach in some respects Mesozoic Crocodilians,

Fam. b. Diplodocide. Ischia with a straight shaft, not expanded distally, directed downward and backward, with the ends meeting in the median line. Caudal vertebre deeply excavated below.—One genus:

reryrees

443

Order 4. OrnitTHosaurta (extinct). Reptiles with the fore limb adapted to support a flying membrane, and

Diplodocus, from the same formation as the preceding, with very weak dentition, limited to the fore part of the jaws.

Fam. c. Morosauride. Ischia slender, with twisted shaft, directed backward, and with the sides meeting in the median line. Anterior caudal vertebrae solid. Genera, occurring in Europe as well as America : Bothriospondylus, Cetiosaurus, Chondrosteosaurus, Euca- merotus, Ornithopsis, Pelorosaurus.

Order 2, SteGosaurRra, Feet plantigrade, ungulate ; five digits in manus and pes ; second row of carpals unossified, Post-pubis present. Fore limbs very small ; locomotion mainly on hind limbs. Vertebree and limb bones solid. An osseous dermal armour.—Herbivorons.

Fain. a. Stegosauride. Vertebre biconcave. Ischia directed back- ward, with the sides meeting iu the median line. Astragalus coalesced with tibia. Metatarsal short. Genera: Stegosaurus (Hypsirhophus), some 30 feet long, from the Jurassic beds of the Rocky Mountain region, well armed with enormous bucklers, some of which bore spines ; Diracodon; Amosaurus, from British formations (Kimme- ridge Clay).

Fam. 6. Scelidosauridz. Astragalus not coalesced with tibia ; metatarsals elongate. Genera European: Scelidosaurus, from the Lias ; Acanthopholis, from the Chalk ; Oratwomus ; ITylwosaurus, from the Wealden ; and Polacanthus. é

Order 3. OrnITHOPODA. Feet digitigrade with five functional digits in manus and three or four in pes. Post-pubis present. Vertebre solid. Fore limbs small; hind-lintbs hollow. Premaxil- laries edentulous in front. — Herbivorous.

Fam, a. Hadrosaurid#. Several series of teeth, forming with use a tessellated grinding surface. Anterior vertebre opisthoccelous. Genera Americau: Madrosaurus, Agathaumas (?), Cionodon,

Fam. 6. Hypsilophodontide. A single series of teeth. Four functional digits in pes, A single rhomboidal sternal ossification. Genus : Hypsilophodon, from the Wealden of the Isle of Wight.

Fam. c. [guanodontidw. A single row of teeth. Three functional digits in pes. Two symmetrical sternal ossifications. Two genera from Europe : Jguanodon and Vectisaurus ; and three comparatively small forms from the Dinosaurian deposits in North America: Camptonotus, Laosaurus, Nanosaurus. Of these Zguanodon is the one which was first discovered (1825), and of which skeletons have been obtained as complete as we can ever hope to see of these creatures. The remains occur in formations from the Kimmeridge Clay to the Upper Greensand, and have been referred to three species, varying in size from 10 to 385 feet in length. They most probably were aquatic in their habits, using their powerful tail as a propelling organ, like the Crocodiles; but they differed from them in their mode of locomotion on shore, walking on their hind legs like a Struthious Bird. (See fig. 1.)

Order 4. THEROPODA. Feet digitigrade; digits with prehensile claws. Pubes distally coalesced. Vertebra more or less cavernous, Fore limbs very small; limb bones hollow. Premaxillaries with teeth.—Carnivorous, 'This order, although on the whole comprising less gigantic fossils than the preceding, includes some very large forms which are believed to have preyed upon the weaker herbivorous members of Dinosaurians.

Fam. a. Megalosauride. Vertebre biconcave. Pubes slender and united distally. Astragalus with ascending process. Five digits in inauus and four in pes. Genera: Alegalosaurus (Huropean) ; Allosaurus, Celosaurus, Creosaurus, Dryptosaurus (Lelaps) (American).

Fam. 6. Zanclodontidy. Vertebree biconcave. Pubes broad, elongate plates with anterior margins united. Astragalus without ascending process, Five digits in manns aud pes. Genera: Zanclodon, Teratosaurus (?) from the European Trias.

Fam. c. Amphisauridx#. Vertebre biconcave. Pubes rod-like ; five digits in manus and three in pes. Genera: Amphisaurus (Mega- dactylus), Bathygnathus (?), Clepsysawrus(?) (American), Palwosaurus and Thecodontosaurus, European Trias,

Fam. d. Labrosauride. Anterior vertebre opisthocelous and cavernous. Metatarsals much elongated. Pubes slender, with anterior margins united. Genus: Labrosawrus, from America.

Fam. ¢. (or suborder) Celuria. Bones pneumatic or hollow. Anterior cervical vertebre opisthoceelous, the other biconcave. Metatarsals very long and slender. Genus: Caldurus, from America. Very imperfectly known; the remains indicate animals not larger than a wolf, and possibly of arboreal habits.

Fam, f. (or suborder) Compsognatha. Anterior vertebre opis- thoceelous. Three functional digits in manus and pes. Ischia with a long symphysis in the median line. One genus: Compsognathus, froni Solenhofen ; a small form, with long neck, lightly built head, strongly toothed jaws, small fore and very long hind limbs; its femur was shorter than the tibia.

Order 5. HALLovopa. Feet digitigrade, unguiculate ; three digits in pes; metatarsals much elongate; caleaneum much produced backwards. Fore limbs very small; vertebrs and limb bones hollow ; vertebre biconcave. Genus: Z/allopus. Its pertinence to the Dino- saurians is doubtful. The hind feet were adapted for leaping.

with the remainder of the skeleton secondarily modified for aerial progression. Vertebre not numerous, proccel- ous; from three to six forming a sacrum; cervical vertebrae exceeding in size the others. No neuro-central suture. Anterior ribs with bifurcate heads. Skull large, bird-like, with long jaws. Os quadratum suturally con- nected with the skull. Orbits very large, with a ring of sclerotic plates. Sternum broad, completely ossified, with a median crest anteriorly. Scapula and coracoid slender, Bird-like; no clavicle. Phalanges of the ulnar digit exceedingly

elongate. Pelvis weak; hind limb smaller than fore limb. Bones generally hollow, many with pneumatic foramina.

Fam. a. Pterosauria. Jaws toothed; scapula and coracoid separate. Genera; Pterodactylus, Rhamphorhynehus, Dimorphodon, from Jurassic formations of Europe ; of small or moderate size.

Fam. 6. Pteranodontia. Edentulous; scapula and coracoid solidly united, the former articulating with the common neural spine of the vertebre. Genus: Pteranodon, from Cretaceous strata of Kansas ; specimens with a spread of wing of some 20 feet.

Order 5. Crocopit1a. Reptiles with Lizard-like body,

and long powerful tail adapted for swimming. Limbs short, especially the anterior; five digits in manus and four in pes; only three of the digits are clawed. A dermal armour, consisting of flattened bony scutes, covers the Teeth in a single Nostrils generally at

back, and in some genera the abdomen. row, implanted in distinct sockets,

ILLES

or near the end of the snout. Vertebrae with the neuro- central suture persistent. Two sacral vertebree only. The majority of the cervical and trunk ribs double-headed, attached to the diapophysis and centrum of the vertebre. From seven to nine of the anterior dorsal ribs are united with the sternum by sternal ribs. Bones of the skull very solid, firmly united by sutures, as is also the quadrate bone. Heart with a double ventricle. Copulatory organ single, situated in the cloaca. .

Fam. a. (or suborder) Procelia, With proccelous vertebrae. All

living genera and the extinct forms down to the Chalk belong to this division.

Fam. 6. (or suborder) Amphieelia. With amphiccelous vertebre. All the genera are pre-Cretaceous: Teleosaurus, Goniopholis, Strep- tospondylus,

Steganolepis, Galesawrus (?), Belodon.

Order 6. SAURopreRyGIA (extinct). Marine Reptiles with long neck, small head, long tail, natatory limbs, and a naked skin. Hind and fore limbs identical in structure and form, transformed into Cetacean-like paddles with five digits, which were composed of numerous phalanges and enclosed ina common skin. Teeth in a single row in both jaws, implanted in distinct sockets. Vertebrae amphiccel- ous, with the neuro-central suture persistent; single- headed ribs are attached to the long diapophyses of the dorsal vertebre. Sacral vertebra two. Quadrate bone suturally united with the skull. A parietal foramen. No sclerotic ring. Neither sternal ribs nor sternum are

Fig. 2,—Skeleton of Clidastes (after Cope).

present; but a system of free abdominal ribs is developed. The pectoral arch consists of a pair of large coracoids, meeting in the median line, and clavicular elements extending from one scapula to the other. Pelvis large, with the ilia, pubes, and ischia not coalesced, and all sharing in the formation of the acetabulum.

These characters may not fully apply to all the genera which have been referred to this order, as some are known from their skulls or other fragments only.

The best known are the PLEsIOsAURIANS (q.v.) proper :—Neusti-cosawrus, from the Trias, with paddles in front and ordinary limbs behind ; gigantic forms from the Trias, as Nothosaurus, Stmo- saurus, Pistosawrus, or post-Triassic, as Plesiosawrus, and Plio- saurus, Polycotylus, and Hlasmosaurus (or Discosaurus) from the Lias and Chalk.

Order 7. RayNcnocerHatia. Lacertiform Reptiles, with four limbs. Vertebra with flat ends; two in the sacrum; the tubercular and articular surfaces are united ; ribs single-headed. Os quadratum suturally united with the skull and pterygoid; an osseous infra-temporal bar. Foramen

parietale present. Sternum and a system of abdominal ribs well developed. Copulatory organs absent; urinary bladder present.

One recent genus: Hatteria. Represented in the Upper Cretaceous

- *It is very doubtful whether Placodus, originally described as a Fish, belongs to this order.*

and Lower Eocene by Champsosawrus, in the Trias by Rhyncho- saurus, Hyperodapedon, and in the Permian by Proterosawrus, Sphenosaurus, Telerpeton (2), Sawrosternwm (2).

Order 8, Lacerrimia. Lizards. Vertebre generally proccelous, with short or rudimentary transverse processes ; sacral vertebree not exceeding two; ribs single-headed. Os quadratum articulated with the skull. Parts of the ali- and orbito-sphenoid regions fibro-cartilaginous. Temporal region without, or with only one, osseous bar. Limbs four, two, or absent ; when they are present, a sternum with sternal ribs and a pelvis are developed. Copulatory

organs paired; urinary bladder present. Integuments with horny or sometimes bony scutes. For the numerous recent genera see Lizarps. Distinguishable

representatives of the order appear first in Jurassic formations and thence downward to our period: Acrosaurus, Ardeosaurus, Pleuro- sawrus, Saphiosaurus, Atoposaurus, and Homeosaurus from the Oolite; Nuthetes, Saurtilus, Maeellodon from the Wealden; Dolicho- saurus, Aeteosaurus, Coniosaurus, Rhaphiosaurus from the Chalk. From Tertiary formations in Europe numerous small remains are known, whilst those described from Australia belonged to much larger forms, showing more or less affinities to the Lizards of the present Australian fauna,

A distinct division of this order includes the extinct Mosasaurians, which are, in fact, the Pinnipedes among Lacertilians. Their limbs, of which they had two pairs, are transformed into paddles; by their long Snake-like

me FT

body and large size the marine Reptiles form the nearest approach in nature to the modern creature of imagination, the "Sea-Snake." There is no question that they deviate more from the Lacertilian type than any of the other fossil forms mentioned above, especially in some of their cranial characters, which are more Ophidian. Hence Cope placed them into a distinct order of Reptiles, Pythonomorpha, Their body was covered with osseous scutes,

Besides Afosasawrus, remains of which have been known and described since the year 1766, a number of other genera from Cretaceous rocks of Europe and North America have been distin- guished by Owen, Cope, Marsh, and Dollo: Liodon, Clidastes (fig. 2), Sironectes, Platccarpus, Baptosaurus, Diplotomodon, Edestosawrus, Holosaurus, Lestosaurus, Tylosaurus, Pterycollasaurus, Plioplate- carpus,

Order 9. Opnipia. Snakes. Vertebre proccelous, extremely numerous; no sacrum ; ribs single-headed. No chevron bones on any of the vertebrae. Not only the quadrate bone is movably articulated to the skull, but also the suspensorium and the bones of the palatal maxillary apparatus are movable; brain capsule entirely osseous. No quadrato-jugal arch. No foramen parietale. Rami of the mandible united by ligament. No trace of anterior extremities, and posterior only sometimes rudi- mentally indicated. Copulatory organs paired ; urinary bladder absent. Integuments folded into regularly ar- ranged scales.

For the numerous recent genera see SNAKES. Fossil forms are searce, and do not appear before the Eocene (Laophis, Palwophis, Paleryx).

Order 10. Cuetonta. Tortoises and Turtles. Cervical and dorsal vertebrae not numerous. The dorsal vertebrz and expanded ribs (with the exception of Sphargis) are united into a carapace, the elements of which are immov- able, and which is completed ventrally by a number of dermal bones, a true sternum being absent and replaced by a plastron. All the bones of the skull are suturally united, with the exception of the mandible and hyoid ; the dentary portion of the mandible consists of one bone only. Pectoral arch consisting of the scapula, with which the precoracoid is united, and the coracoid. Clavicles are represented by the antericr elements of the plastron. The pelvis consists of the usual bones, but is not attached to a

sacrum. ‘Two pairs of limbs. No teeth, these being replaced by horny sheaths of the jaws. Copulatory organ single. Integuments consisting of horny scutes covering the carapace, and of scales and tubercles on the soft parts.

ANATOMY. |

For the numerous living genera see TortTorsEs. Remains of extinct Tortoises are found from the Trias downwards, but they do not show any approximation to some other Reptilian type, or indicate a successive development. The most generalized type, Sphargis, is not older (according to present evidence) than some of the more specialized genera, its earliest representative being the remarkable Protostega from North-American Cretacean formations. Some of the Tertiary fossils excceded in size the largest of living forms, such as the Himalayan Oolossochelys, the German Macrochelys, the North-American Adlantochelys. (A. C. G.)

Tue ANATOMY OF REPTILES.

As the principal features known of the anatomy of extinct Reptiles have been sufficiently noticed in the several separate articles devoted to them, this chapter will deal almost exclusively with the general structure of living forms.

Inasmuch as the class of Reptiles is one of the classes which make up that great primary zoological division known as “vertebrate animals,” they of course possess all those structural characters which are common to that division (see VERTEBRATA). They also possess in common a certain number of structures which they share with

iLais 445

*Birds (see SavRopsiDA), and which will be indicated in our General notice of the different sets, or systems, of organs which char- compose the bodies of the animals of which this article *”-*

treats.

Every Reptile has a body made up of a head, a trunk, and a tail, though, as in some Lacertilia and many Ophidia, these regions are not marked off one from another by any constriction or noticeable alteration of diameter. The posterior aperture of the alimentary tube always marks the termination of the trunk and the commencement of the tail. In some kinds of Reptiles—as, ¢e.g., in the genera Anguis and Amphisbena amongst the Lacertilia, and in such forms as Typhlops and Uropeltis amongst the Ophidia —the whole body consists of little more than a very elon- gated trunk with a small head at one end and a short or even quite rudimentary tail at the other. A neck may be interposed between the head and the trunk; this, how- ever, is generally short, as in the Lacertilia and Crocodilia, but may be more or much elongated, as in the Chelonia. It was extraordinarily long in the extinct Sawropterygia— like that of a Swan.

The head may be very large, as in the Crocodilia and extinct Ichthyopterygia, or small, as in the Sawropterygia, or very small indeed, as in 7'yphlops and Uropeltis. It always contains the organs of taste, smell, hearing, and sight, but there may be, as in many Lizards and all Snakes, no external indication of an ear, and the eyes are almost hidden by the skin in Snakes such as Z'yphlops, and certain Lizards such as Amphisbeenians and some Skinks. The mouth may be very large, as in the Crocodiles, or very small, as in Z'yphlops.

The trunk may be exceedingly elongated, as in the instances just above referred to, or relatively very short and broad, as in the Chelonia.

The tail may vary in development from its rudimen- tary condition in Z'yphlops to a length which exceeds that of the body several times, as in not a few Lacertilia. Its distal end may be prehensile and form an important grasping organ, as in almost all Chameleons.

Besides these regions, there are generally two pairs of limbs,—one pectoral, the other pelvic,—though these may be altogether wanting as far as regards any external mani- festation, as in all Ophidians and certain Lacertilians like Anguis and Ophisaurus. Internal rudiments of limbs may, however, be present when there is no external indication of them, as will be pointed out when describing the appen- dicular skeleton.

There may be but one pair of limbs, and these pectoral, as in the Lizard Czrotes; or there may be but one pair, which are pelvic, as in the Lizards Pseudopus, Lvalis, and Ophiodes.

The pectoral and pelvic limbs are, as a rule, pretty equal in development, and they may be very much so, as in Chelonians and the Sauropterygia. Both may be exceedingly small, as in many Lizards, such as a number of the Scincidx, or both may be relatively large, as in Cheloni- ans. In no existing Reptile with four limbs does either pair very greatly exceed the other in length and size, but in extinct Dinosauria the pelvic limbs were greatly in excess, while the reverse was the case with the extinct Ornithosauria.

The extremities never terminate in more than five distinct digits, and the number may be reduced to one in front, as in Zhodona, or one behind, as in Dibamus. The extremities may end bluntly and be undivided, as in land and marine Chelonians, and as in the extinct Ichthyop- terygia and Sauropterygia. The pectoral and pelvic limbs are generally not very divergent in form and structure, and they may be wonderfully alike, as in the existing Tortoises and in the extinct Ichthyopterygia and Sauro-

pterygia. 'They were, on the contrary, extremely divergent in certain Dinosauria, and still more in the Ornithosauria.

Every Reptile has a body composed of organs of nutrition, circulation, respiration, secretion, reproduction, sensation, and motion, supported internally by a solid framework, the internal skeleton or endoskeleton, and enclosed in a firm investment, constituting the external skeleton or exoskeleton.

The External Skeleton.

The external investment of the body consists of two layers. The outer of these, the epidermal layer, or epidermis, is of an epithelial horny nature and never becomes bony. The deeper or dermal layer, the dermis, is a

fibrous structure which may become bony. Neither hairs nor feathers are developed.

The exoskeleton is characterized in this class of animals by being composed of distinct superficial thickenings placed side by side and separated one from another by thinner interspaces. According to the size and form of these thickenings they are known by different names. If they are very small and rounded they are called "tubercles," and such we see on the body of the Chameleons and Geckos. If they are large, flat, and not overlapping, they are called shields, and such we see, eg., on the head of the true Lizards. If the hinder part of each thickening is more or less prolonged over the anterior part of one or more next behind it, structures of this kind are called scales, such as we find dorsally clothing the bodies of most Lizards and many Serpents. If the median part of each such scale is still more thickened longitudinally, then such a scale is said to be carinate. In most of these cases the epidermis itself is also more or less thickened locally, as well as the subjacent dermis, remaining thin in the folds or interspaces. The dermis may be ossified, forming dense bony plates, or scutes, beneath the epidermal investment. The whole body may be thus clothed, as in the Lizard Cyclodus and others, or the bony plates may be confined to parts of the back, as in some Crocodilians. The development of the exo- skeleton is carried to the highest degree in Chelonians, when large osseous plates form, in the Land Tortoises and Terrapins, a complete and continuous bony case for the body, invested externally by a rich corneous epidermis, and becoming internally anchylosed with the endoskeleton itself,

*Exoskele- In most Ophidians the body is clothed with scales ton of above and with large transversely elongated shields beneath ri cet (single or double beneath the tail), though the body may * be entirely invested by small scales except the head, as in Typhlops, or by tubercles, as in Acrochordus.*

Sometimes, as in Cerastes and the River Jack, two horny appendages are erectly developed over the nose and sometimes, as in Herpeton tentaculatum, cutaneous appendages project from the snout, or the snout may be exceptionally produced. The skin of the side of the body just

behind the head may form a distensible fold, as in Naja, and there may be, as in Python, a claw on each side of the vent, which claw is a rudiment of the pelvic limb, as will be explained in describing the appendicular skeleton. A peculiar cutaneous depression exists between the nostril and the eye in Crotalus and the other Pit-Vipers. For full details on these subjects see the separate articles on the orders.

ofLacer- In the Lacertilia we find a number of different tilians; cutaneous conditions which have been already noticed in describing the various groups systematically. It will then suffice here to remind the reader that the Amphis- beenians have quadrate shields over the entire body except the head, arranged in transverse rings, and that in such forms as Chalets the scales are also verticillate, while in

the Scincoidea and Anguide they are imbricate, and on the Chameleons granulate. The head may be covered with large shields, as in the Lacertidx, or with small scales like those of the body, as in the Monitors, and there are often long sharp spines on the head and body, as in Grammatophora, Phrynosoma, and Moloch, The in- tegument may also extend out from the body along the back and tail, as in Basiliscus and Lophura, or from beneath the throat, as in Jguana, or largely across the neck, as in Chlamydosaurus, or on either side of the tail, as in Ptychozoon, or from each side of the body so as to be distensible and to serve as a parachute, as in Draco; while in the Ornithosauria it passed from the elongated hand to the body and leg as in the wing of the existing Bats. It has also been before stated that in certain cases different genera are distinguished by pores, 7.¢., the apertures of small cutaneous sacs placed on the inner side of each thigh or in front of the cloacal aperture. Folds of skin may invest the digits and constitute webbed feet, as in some Geckos, as well as in Crocodiles and Terrapins, or may bind the digits in two opposite bundles, as in each ex- tremity of the Chameleons. Normally each digit is ter- minated by a claw.

In Crocodilia the epidermal thickenings do not overlap as in some Lizards, but form conspicuous prominences in the dorsal region, which serve as specific characters, and which have bony plates beneath,—which plates may, as in Alligators, exist on the belly as well as the back, and may

form continuous rings round the tail, those of each anterior row overlapping those of the row next behind. Not all the digits are provided with claws. The feet are webbed.

of Croco-

dilians ;

The Chelonca present considerable differences as to the of Che- exoskeleton. The Mud Tortoises, Trionyx, have a soft lonians.

epidermis, and Sphargis has a coriaceous outer layer of

Fie, 3.—A portion of the osseous plates of the earapace of Sphargis coriacea, showing three large keeled plates of one of the longitudinal ridges of the carapace, with a number of the small irregular plates on either side of them. (From nature.)

integument covering a carapace divided into small sub- hexagonal shields. In the other Chelonians there are large epidermal shields, which may overlap, as in the Tortoise- shell Turtle (C. imbricata) and others, or may be conter- minous, as in Zestudo and Emys. These shields form a mid-dorsal series and two lateral rows on either side, while there are two longitudinal series on the ventral side of the body.

Beneath the epidermal layer of the integument osseous plates are found, which plates do not coincide either in

Skeleton of the trunk ;

SKELETON. |

number, size, or shape with the epidermal shields which (save in T'rionyx and Sphargis) cover them. Their condition in Sphargis is quite peculiar. In the skin of its back there are imbedded a great number of small plates flexibly united in a mosaic-like pattern, Seven longitudinal rows of these plates (one median, six lateral) differ from the rest by their large size and raised surfaces. On the ventral surface of the body there is one large thin

median plate—the epister- num, together with other very slender ossificatious forming a very imperfect bony framework. All these latter bony plates, however, are very imperfectly ossified, with numerous vacuities. In the Land Tortoises and Terrapins, on the other hand, we have the exoskeleton in its greatest perfec- tion. On the back there is a series of ten median plates, the first one of which is called nuchal and the last one pygal. On each side of these series and suturally connected therewith is a series of large lateral plates also suturally united together and with the median plates. Finally, a series of marginal plates suturally connected together and with the foregoing complete a bony investment of the back which is complete and continuous, and which is known as the carapace. On the ventral surface of the body nine other bony plates form another continuous shield termed the plastron. The most anterior pair correspond with the bones known as clavicles in Man and many other animals. The azygous plate between and behind them answers to the episternum of many animals. The carapace and plastron are united at the sides of the body, but are separated medianly in front and behind to allow the protrusion and retraction of the head and the four limbs and tail. In Chelonia similar plates exist, but they are less developed, and merely form an imperfect species of investment, with many vacuities between the plates. The same is the case in 7'rionyx, wherein the marginal plates are also wanting.

The skin of the neck and limbs is covered with scales. The skin of the neck may develop fimbriated processes and caruncles, as in Chelys, and the nose may be produced into a short proboscis, as in Z'rionyx, True claws may be absent, as in Sphargis, or there may be but one on each foot, as in Chelone, or two, as in Caretta, or three, as in T'rionyz, or four or five, as in Z'estudo and Hmys. The claws may approximate in form to hoofs in some of the large Land Tortoises. There may be a web between the digits, as in Emys, or the whole extremity may be united into a solid paddle, as in Chelone.

In all cases the skin of the jaws is found thickened and condensed so as to form a horny beak with a cutting edge.

In many Chelonians there are two pairs of glands on each side just in front of the junction of the plastron and carapace, while in the Mud Tortoises, 7rionyx, there is yet another gland on each side in front of the margin of the plastron.

The Internal Skeleton.

The endoskeleton of Reptiles, as of most Vertebrate animals, consists of parts which are divisible into two categories :—(a) those which form the skeleton of the head and trunk, t.¢, the azial skeleton; (b) the parts which form the skeleton of the limbs, 7.e, the appendt- cular skeleton.

Tue AxtaL SKELETON.—In describing the axial skeleton it will be well to begin with that part of it which belongs to the trunk, leaving the more complex skeleton of the head, a.¢., the skull, for subsequent consideration.

Skeleton of the Trunk.—The backbone, spinal column, or spine consists in all adult Reptiles of a series of ossi- fied vertebrae, many, almost all, of which are separate and not anchylosed one to another. Nevertheless the

spinal or vertebral column varies in its structure much more in the class of Reptiles than even in the Jfamma, lia, and very much more than in the class of Birds, with which the Reptiles are so much allied. This variation consists in differences not only as regards the number of regions or vertebral categories and the extent and struc- ture of each region, but also as regards the form of the individual vertebre and notably the form of the vertebral centra.

There may or may not be distinct cervical vertebra with or without movable ribs. The first two vertebra are differentiated as axis and atlas, and in front of the latter there may be a rudiment of another vertebra, which has been distinguished as the proatlas.! There are always dorsal vertebrae, some of the ribs of which may not, but more generally do, join

a sternum. These dorsal ribs are generally movable, aud may be, as in Serpents, organs of locomotion. They may, on the contrary, be firmly fixed by suture one to another as in Chelonians. There may or may not be lumbar vertebree, and two or more (in some extinct forms many) vertebrse may unite to form a sacrum. There are always caudal vertebre, and these generally have chevron bones beneath them. Sometimes vertebree which are not sacral become anchylosed together, as in the dorsal vertebrae of Chelonians. Articular processes always connect together adjacent vertebrze which are not thus anchylosed, and there may be accessory articular processes peculiar to the class, and which will be shortly described later. As to the form of the vertebral centra, they may be flat in front and behind, or biconcave (amphiccelous), or biconvex, or with a ball behind and a cup in front (pro- ccelous), or with a ball in front and a cup behind (opistho- coelous).

In the Crocodilia all the above-mentioned regions are in Croco- distinct, there being usually 9 cervical, 11 to 12 dorsal, 2 dilians;

to 3 sacral, and about 40 caudal vertebrae. In existing species all the vertebree are proccelous except the atlas, axis, sacral, and first caudal vertebrae. The adjacent sur- faces of the centra of the sacral vertebre are flat, and the centruin of the first caudal is biconvex. The atlas consists of five pieces,? and the odontoid bone is not anchylosed to the axis. The caudal vertebree are elongated and com- pressed, and, except the most anterior and posterior, support chevron bones. Ribs are very generally present. Those attached to the atlas and axis are single in origin. Hach rib of the other cervical vertebree bifurcates at its upper end into a tubercular and a capitular process, which respec- tively articulate with the neural arch and centrum of their supporting vertebra, and the interval thus left in the succeeding vertebrze forms a canalis centralis. The ribs of the middle five cervical vertebrae so expand distally as to impede the lateral flexion of the neck. The neural arches articulate by suture with the vertebral bodies. The dorsal ribs become attached to processes which pass out from each vertebra to the tubercular and capitular processes of the ribs respectively, and their situation with respect to the neuro-central suture changes by degrees, through the vertebral series, till in the twelfth dorsal one long trans- verse process, passing out above the neural central

suture, supports both processes. Thence backwards these arti- culating surfaces approximate till at last there is but a single articular surface between each rib and its sup- porting vertebra, as was the case in those of the atlas and axis.

The dorsal ribs consist of two pieces—the distal piece remaining cartilaginous ; and most ribs support an imper- fectly ossified processus uncinatus, nearly as in Birds, which extends backwards from the distal portion of its ossified

1 Discovered by Prof. Paul Albrecht. 2 In front of it a rudimentary proatlas has been found.

in Hat- teria;

piece (fig 4). From seven to nine of these ribs have ossified sternal ribs which serve to connect them with the sternum. The lumbar vertebree have only ns ngs ng

long transverse processes which i arise above the neuro-central suture. The sacral vertebrz support very stout transverse processes, each of which includes a rib element and becomes anchylosed to the centra only at a late period of life, as do @< the comparatively long and slender caudal _— transverse processes. Inferior sé hans: hyp 7 Fra. 4.—Lateral sateen of three thoraeic vertebra

physes, which are of Crocodilus vulgaris (from nature). c, cup on the azygous, descend one sneror surface of centrum; cp, expitul of bss from beneath the ribs; Uy uncinate processes ; vr, vertebral ribs. centrum of each of the more posterior cervical and anterior dorsal vertebree.

The sternum consists of an ossified rhomboidal plate, with the hinder side of which two pairs of costal cartilages articulate. A narrower piece extends backwards from this plate (connected with it by ligament), and ends in two diverging processes. With this the other sternal ribs articulate.

A long slender bone, the interclavicle, or episternum, lies in a median groove of the sternal plate, and extends forwards beyond it.

There is a so-called abdominal sternum made up of a series of seven or eight slender bones which lie in the aponeurosis of the external oblique muscle of the abdomen behind the true sternum and in front of the pelvis. It lies at a lower level than the sternum, and has no direct connexion with the vertebral column.

In Hatteria, the only living member of the order Rhynchocephalia, as well as in the extinct species, the vertebral bodies have flat or concave surfaces in front and behind. There are 8 cervical, 14 dorsal, 3 lumbar, 2 sacral, and 36 caudal vertebre. There is no persistent neuro- central suture in //atteria, though there may be in some extinct forms of the order. Rudiments of the proatlas are sometimes present. The atlas consists but of three pieces, and the odontoid bone is anchylosed with the atlas, and is concave anteriorly. An autogenous hypapophysis is wedged into the inferior interspace between the centrum of the axis and the third vertebra, and similar parts are developed thence backwards to beneath the seventh and eighth vertebre. Hatteria has the faculty of reproducing its tail after mutilation. When the tail is broken the fracture takes place in the middle of one of its centra and not between two adjacent centra. This is owing to the fact that each caudal vertebra is divided into an anterior and a posterior part (fig. 5), and is weakest at this line of Kg junction which passes behind =tmc the transverse process.

The first rib is attached to the fourth vertebra. Those Fie. 5—Vertical section of four (7th of the ninth and the following oie tae of og the vertebre attain the sternum. middle of centrum. (After Giinther.) The more posterior ribs become connected with the abdo- minal sternum. All the ribs are single at their proximal ends, a bifurcation being scarcely indicated even at the most anterior one. Processus uncinati are fully developed.

The sternum is a rhomboidal, semi-cartilaginous plate, with a medianly situated long and slender episternum which unites with a pair of clavicles. An abdominal sternum is

more fully developed than in any other living Reptile. It consists of about twenty-five transverse rods, each of which is composed of three pieces. These rods are con- nected and disconnected with the ribs in an alternate manner, every other rod being suspended from a pair of the true ribs.

Lacertilia.—In this extensive order of living Reptiles, in Lacey. the vertebrae are proccelous except in the Geckotide and tiliaus ; Uropeltide, where they are biconcave. There may or may not be distinct cervical, lumbar, and sacral regions, and the number of vertebra, generally considerable, may be very large. 'The distinctness of the vertebral regions depends on the development of the anterior and posterior limbs.

When a cervical region can be distinguished, there are never more than nine such vertebrae. Only in rare instances are there distinct lumbar vertebrae. The sacral vertebree are never more than two. The neural arch is always anchylosed to the centrum in adults. The atlas consists of three parts, and the axis may or may not have the odontoid bone anchylosed to it and convex in front. Ribs are attached to most of the cervical as well as to the dorsal vertebrae ; but the former are not expanded distally as in the Crocodile, and thus the latter do not support uncinate processes. The more anterior ribs show two proximal articular surfaces, but these never diverge into distinct capitular and tubercular processes as in the Croco- diles, nor, as in the latter, do any of the dorsal vertebrae develop double, superimposed transverse processes. The | more anterior (usually the first three or four) dorsal ribs | are connected with the sternum by sternal cartilages. | Those behind may be similarly connected with the diverg- '

ing backward prolongations of the sternum, or may be

directly connected with their fellows of the opposite side,

as in the Chameleon, a median cartilage being joined on

either side by the sternal cartilage continuous with an

ossified rib. In Acontias and other limbless Lacertilians

which have but a rudimentary sternum, or none, the corre-

sponding ribs of the right and left sides are connected

across the mid-ventral line as they are in Chameleo. In : Draco the more posterior ribs are greatly prolonged, and their distal cartilages are bent backwards. This is to enable them to support the wing-like membrane which extends from either side of the body to serve as a parachute. In those Lizards which have a lumbar region, transverse processes are there developed. The caudal vertebrae (except the most anterior and the small posterior ones) have chevron bones, which are not generally anchy- losed to the vertebrae which support them.

In addition to the ordinary articular processes, there are in Iguana certain accessory articulating structures such as are commonly found in the vertebree of Serpents; these will be described in the next section.

The sternum consists of a rhomboidal semi-ossified or cartilaginous plate, which is sometimes continued back- wards into a pair of long diverging processes. There is generally an episternum, which is often T-shaped, but it may be absent, as in Chameleons. In the limbless Lizards the sternum is cartilaginous, and there is none whatever in some forms, as, ¢.g., in Amphisbena and T'yphline. /

In many Lizards, notably in the commonest English . Lizard, the tail if broken off can be reproduced. In them the centra of the caudal vertebrae have a vertical median division similar to that already described in Hatteria.

In Ophidians the number of vertebre is generally very in Ophi- large, and may exceed four hundred. They are all proccel- dians ; ous, and the ball behind each is nearly hemispherical. There is no distinction of cervical, lumbar, or sacral vertebra ; but all the vertebree after the atlas may be considered as either dorsal or caudal. The mode of articulation between the vertebree is more complex than in almost any Lizards.

in Che- Jonians.

SKELETON. |

In addition to the ordinary articular processes (or zygapo- physes), which are here broad and flattened, often with an accessory process, there are two noteworthy structures. The first of these is called the zygosphene, and consists of a wedge-shaped process with two articular surfaces, which projects forward from the anterior surface of each neural arch. The other is called the zyg- antrum, and is a corresponding excavation with two articular sur- faces on the hinder side of the neural arch, and receives the zygo- sphene of the vertebra next behind it. It was structures such as these that were referred to in the last paragraph as existing so exception- allyamongst Lacertilians inJgwana.

The atlas and axis have a form similar to that already described as existing in the Lacertilia. Long azygous hypapophyses nearly always depend from the centre of the anterior trunk vertebrae, or even from the whole of them, being especially large and numerous in some of the most poisonous Serpents, ¢g., Crotalus and Naja. In Dasypeltis scaber some of these processes in the ante- rior dorsal region are made to minister to alimentation,—their tips being coated with tooth sub- ic, 7 poses saps stance, and penetrating within the nature), a, articular processes; alimentary canal, as will be again aithunes na neural evel: me mentioned further on. neural spine; ¢, transverse pro-

*The ribs assume the function of °°} *% 77santrum. locomotion, and are therefore very movably articulated to short transverse processes. Hach has two proximal articu- lar surfaces, but they are close to- gether, there being no diverging articular and tubercular processes. Each rib terminates in a short car- tilage. The caudal vertebrae may, in rare instances, be very few, and they may be very numerous—from five to two hundred. They do not Fie. 8.—Anterior aspeet of a possess chevron bones, but bifold La cr, 8 rom depending hypapophyses, and they «<, cup on the surface of the have transverse processes which also [Ctvalspiner £ transverse pre, are generally bent downwards. cess ; 26, Zygosphene, ”*

Sometimes, at the limit between the body and the tail, the transverse process, or the rib, as the case may be, bifurcates or develops an ascending process, as, ¢.g., in Boa, Naja, and Echidna.

No Ophidian has any sternum.

Chelonia.—The Tortoises and Turtles present a spinal structure remarkably divergent from that of all other Reptiles, and especially divergent from that of Ophidians. Nevertheless the Chelonia agree with the Ophidia in having no sternum, and in having at least a portion of the vertebral column formed for extreme mobility, in spite of the excessive rigidity and immobility of the trunk. Only in Sphargis do we find a structure generally resembling that of other Reptiles and diverging from that common to other Chelonians. With the exception of Sphargis, the structure of the vertebral column of which will be sub- sequently noticed, the Chelonians present the following characters. The endoskeleton of the dorsal region is intimately united with those ossified exoskeletal plates which have been already described (supra, p. 447) as investing both dorsally and ventrally the entire trunk. The median series of plates are united with the neural spines and arches, and the lateral plates are similarly

Fig. 6.—Lateral aspeet of two trunk vertebra of Python(from nature), a. artieular processes; na, neural arehes; ms, neural spines; ¢, transverse processes; z8, zygosphene.

united with the ribs, so that the carapace is formed both of endoskeletal and exoskeletal elements intimately united. The constancy of the number of vertebra is very excep- tional, as is also the very small number of those of the body. There are always 8 cervical, 12 dorsal, and 2 sacral vertebrae. The number of caudal vertebre varies, but is never great. The cervical vertebree have very small processes, whereby they are better fitted for great mobility. They vary greatly.as to the form of their centra, some being opisthoccelous, others proccelous, others biconvex, while one at least is flattened both in front and behind— the arrangement differing even in differént species of the same genus. The atlas consists of three pieces, and the os odontoideum is separate. The neuro-central suture per- sists. The centra of the first ten dorsal vertebrae are amphiccelous, and but loosely connected with twin neural arches, each neural arch being superimposed over the posterior half of one vertebra and the anterior half of the

vertebra next behind. The sacral vertebrae have either stout ribs suturally attached or transverse processes anchy- losed to the vertebrae. The caudal vertebrée are proccelous, and generally have a pair of separate descending processes, which may (as in Chelydra) unite distally and form chevron bones.

In Sphargis the endoskeleton is quite distinct from the exoskeleton. Its neural arches are very loosely united to the centra, so that they can be separated with the greatest ease. The trans- verse processes of the caudal vertebrze also remain unan- chylosed to their , centra. The dorsal (/ vertebrae pass so gradually into the caudal that the boundary can only

be determined by Fic. 9.—Three vertebrae of Sphargis coriacea (from the somewhat in- nature). ¢, vertebral centra; 2, neural arches; r, ribs.

creased thickness of the transverse process of the two sacral vertebree. The summits of the neural arches are somewhat dilated (as if from superincumbent pressure) or obtusely keeled. The ribs are not much expanded, their heads fitting into a hollow formed by the centra of two vertebrae together with the neural arch superimposed upon the two. They become shorter and narrower behind, that of the tenth dorsal vertebra being even smaller than the sacral ribs.

\ –

The Skull.—The anterior portion of the axial skeleton, The or cranium, differs markedly from that of every other skull ;

class of Vertebrates, while it presents a much greater diversity of structure than does the cranium of Mammals or of Birds. It differs from the cranium of the lower Vertebrate classes by its more complete ossification and by a greater prolongation backwards of the nasal cavity, which causes a greater expanse and density of the palatal structure. The skull, however, is not so much ossified as in Mammals, and the bones do not become anchylosed together so quickly and certainly as in Birds. The occipital region always consists of four occipital elements, and there is an ossified basisphenoid in front of a well- developed basioccipital. The skull almost always arti- culates with the atlas by a single occipital condyle.

The lower jaw is always suspended to the skull by the inter- vention of a quadrate bone with which the os articulare of the mandible articulates. Besides the last-mentioned bone the mandible consists of as many bones as in Fishes, with the addition of a supra-angular and a complementary bone.

The bones of the cranium may form a very solid and

XX. — 57

in Croco- dilians ;

in Hat- teria ;

450

hE Pvt 1 Lees

[ANATOMY.

very continuous open case, with no mobility save that of | Crocodiles, of two outstanding " parotic processes," made the lower jaw; or it may consist of bones several of | up of the exoccipital, prootic, and opisthotic bones,—

which are so conditioned as to allow much mobility to | beneath which is the

several other parts. In all cases, however, the side wall

of the anterior part of the cranial cavity is very imperfectly | pterygoids.

ossified.

The skull of the Crocodilia is distinguished from that of all other Reptiles by its very extensive bony palate, which exceeds in completeness that of even any Mammal save the Anteaters and Cetaceans, for not only the maxilla and palatines but also the pterygoids—all as expanded bony plates suturally united—concur in its com- position in all existing

Crocodilians (though not in the extinct Z'eleosaurus or Belodon), and the pterygoids sur- round the posterior nares. The skull forms a solid whole composed of bones united by suture except at the antero- lateral and median boundaries of the cranial cavity, where it is cartilaginous or membranous. There isan interorbital septum. The quadrate bone is immovably fixed and of large size, and unites with the pterygoid, but by its upper and inner surface only. 'The alisphenoid is a large broad bone. The tympanic cavity is completely enclosed by the prootic and opisthotic (the latter being united with the exoccipital), the squamosal, the postfrontal, and the basioc- cipital and basisphenoid. It opens into the mouth by three apertures, one niedian and two lateral,! which terminate complex canals having communications among each other. There are two lateral, quasi-zygomatic arches to the skull —an upper one formed by the postfrontal and squamosal, and a lower one by the maxilla, jugal, quadrato-jugal, and quadrate. There is no foramen in the parietal region of the skull, and there is an azygous parietal bone and frontal. On either side of the hinder region of the skull the periotic and exoccipital bones form large parotic processes. There is a distinct perforated lachrymal. There are two vomers, which are generally hidden in the palate by the junction of the extensive maxillze and palatines. There are a pair of nasal bones. Various cranial bones are pneumatic, including the os articulare of the mandible. The hyoid is very simple, and consists only of a broad cartilaginous or partly osseous basihyal, with two bony cornua, not directly connected with the skull. There is a very small carti- laginous stylohyal on the upper hinder part of the quad- rate.

Hatteria.—The skull of this living type of an extinct order resembles that of the Crocodilia in that there is a lower zygomatic arcade formed by the quadrato-jugal bone interposed between the malar and the quadrate, as well as a superior zygomatic arcade formed by the squamosal and postfrontal, and in that the quadrate bone is immov- ably fixed between the pterygoid, squamosal, and quadrato- jugal. The palate is pretty complete with wide plate-like ossifications, still it is much less so than in the Crocodiles ; but the posterior nares are much more anteriorly situated —very near the anterior end of the palate—and are on each side, being each bounded by the premaxilla in front, the vomer internally, the maxilla externally, and the palatine behind. At the side of the skull we find a bone

distin- guished as the "columella," which passes upwards from above the suture between the pterygoid and quadrate to the parietal, to which it is attached by a slip of cartilage. It is a flattened bone, somewhat expanded above and below, and constricted towards its middle. The lateral wall of the skull at the part which in the Crocodile is occupied by the alisphenoid, and in front of that part is not osseous but fibro-cartilaginous. There is an interorbital septum. The postero-lateral region of the skull consists, as in the

1 For a full description with good figures of this very complex structure, see Owen, Phil. Trans., February 28, 1850, vol. ex). p. 521, pls. 40-42.

"columella auris." The basi- sphenoid sends down two processes to abut against the The parietal is perforated by a small median

ad Fig, 10,—Skull of Hatterta (after Gtinther). 1, ventral aspect; 2, lateral aspect;

sp

8, latcral aspect of mandible. ar, articular; 60, basioccipital; 6s, basi-sphenoid; ¢, coronoid; ca, columella auris; @, dentary; j, jugal; m, max-illa; n, nasal; pa, parietal; pl, palatine; pm, premaxilla; pr, prefrontal; ps, postfrontal ; pt, pterygoid; g, quadrate; gj, quadrato-jugal ; s, squamosal; sp, splenial ; v, vomer. fontanelle. The premaxille are separate, and together form a sort of beak, their large teeth becoming thoroughly anchylosed and united with the bones supporting them. The nasals are double, and each sends forth a process (some-

what as in Birds) from its outer anterior angle.

The Lacertilian skull is formed mainly upon one of two in Lacer-

diverging types of structure—(1) that of ordinary Lizards, and (2) that of Chamzleons. In both the quadrate bone is almost always movable and the inferior zygomatic arcade is wanting, though generally represented by a ligament ; the palate is incompletely ossified, and the rather anteriorly situated posterior nares bounded internally by the bifold vomers. In the

ordinary Lizard type the skull has the appearance of consisting of a system of osseous bars con- necting the solid occipital parts (with its pair of parotic processes) with a flattened cranial roof and the more or less well ossified snout. The skull has an interorbital septum. The lateral walls of the cranium are, as in /Zatteria, fibro-cartilaginous, though they may contain some insig- nificant ossifications; and a "columella," as in Hatteria, generally ascends from the pterygoid to the parietal. The last-named bone sends a backward prolongation to the parotic process and squamosal, and is movably united to the occipital ; and thus, through the imperfect ossifica- tion of the cranial parietes, the facial part of the skull is capable of more or less flexion upon the occipital part.

KEP TT

There is generally a superior zygomatic arcade formed by the junction of the postfrontal with the squamosal ; and, very generally, the orbit is enclosed posteriorly by a junction of this postfrontal with the malar. The basi- sphenoid sends down (as in Hatteria) two processes to abut against the pterygoids, which again join the quadrate bones. An os transversum unites the pterygoid, palatine, and maxilla of either side. The maxilla is thus a fixed bone ; the premaxilla is generally single, and sends a median

SKULL. |

process backwards. The nasals, frontals, and pariectals may be single or double. There is generally a parietal fontanelle.

By very rare exception, as in Monopeltis, there may be two occipital condyles, that (median) portion which is formed from the basioccipital aborting.

Fig. 11.—Skull of Monopeltis sphenorhynchus (from nature). 1, dorsal aspect 5 2, ventral aspect; 3, lateral aspect; 4, posterior aspect. ar, articular; bs, basisphenoid ; d, dentary ; f, frontal; m, maxilla; m, nasal; oc, uc, occipital condyles; of, occipital foramen; pal, palatine; pa, parietal; pm, premaxilla; ptg, pterygoid; g, quadrate ; so, supraoccipital; sq, squamosal; v, vomer.

The hyoid consists of two pairs of cornua, whereof the anterior is generally the longer, attached to a median portion from which azygous a bifold process may proceed both anteriorly and _poste- riorly.

*In the Amphisbenians the skull is more solidly and con- tinuously ossified than is usual in Lizards, though there is no columella and though the { low ali- and orbito-sphenoidal regions are membranous. The parietal is not movably arti- culated to the exoccipital, and the facial part is solidly ossi- fied and not movable upon the hinder portion of the skull. The orbits are not enclosed *¢ So ‘ behind, and there is no superior Fic. 12.—Dorsal aspect of skull of Helo-*

aes dermahorridum. f,frontal; J, jugal ; zygomatic arcade. 7, lachrymal ; m, maxilla; n, nasal;

The skull of ‘Helodermaca 24: pareuls ya, premasilis; pr,

i. j prefrontal ; ps, postfrontal ; pé, ptery- very remarkable in thatit has goid; g, quadrate ; s, squamosal ; so, no zygomatic arch whatever, ‘“P™occ!pital

and in that the pre- and postfrontal bones unite and exclude

the frontal bone from the margin of the orbit.

The skull of the Chameleons has even more the aspect of an osseous scaffolding than has that of ordinary Lizards in spite of the absence of a columella, This is owing to the presence of a long supraoccipital arcade formed by

ILES 451

a long posteriorly and inwardly extending process of the squamosal, which joins the adjacent side of the singularly prolonged and upwardly and backwardly extending pro- cess of the parietal, which itself is solid- ly united to an up- wardly extending p2 process of the supra- occipital. Thus the facial part of the skull is not movable upon its occipital portion. The orbits are enclosed by bone, and there is a superior zygomatic arcade, the frontal joining the squamosal behind and the malar in front. The frontal savamosal.

bone is small and single. There are a pair of narrow nasals, but these do not form the boundary of any part of the an- terior nares, but are excluded therefrom by the junction of the prefrontals with the maxilla, and these two bones may be prolonged so as to form great horn-like processes. The pterygoids do not articulate with the quadrates, and there is no interorbital septum. The hyoid has its posterior cornua much the longer, and a bony median basihyal. ,

The Ophidians, like the Lizards, have skulls which are formed on more than one type:—(1) those of the ordinary wide-mouthed Serpents; and (2) those of the Serpents with a very narrow gape, such as we find, e.g., in Typhlops and Uropeltis.

The wide-mouthed Serpents, or Hurystomata, have a skull which in some respects is much less completely ossified and more movable than in ordinary Lizards, while in other respects it is more ossified and less movable. Thus the lateral walls of the anterior parts of the cranial

"J ag J post- Fig. 13,—Skull of Chameeon vulgaris (from nature), ag, angular; ar, articular; 6s, basisphenoid; d, dentary ; 7, Jugal; m, maxilla; me, median eth- moid; pl and p2, parietals; p/, palatine; pr, prefrontal; ps, postfrontal, pt, pterygoid; q, quadrate; sg, surangular; so, supraoccipital; sq,

Fic, 14.—Skull of Python seb (from nature). ar, artierlar; ca, columella auris, d, dentary; jf, fiontal; m, maxilla; p, parietal; pm, premaxilla; po, prootic; pr, prefrontal; ps, postfrontal; pt, pterygoid; g, quadrate; s, squamosal ; ¢, transversum ; 70, turbinal.

cavity are well ossified, so that the anterior part of the skull is no longer movable on the occipital segment, while on the contrary the total absence of both zygomatic arcades, the non-union directly of the palatine with the vomer, the laxity of union of the premaxilla and maxilla, and especially the movable condition not only of the quadrate but also of the squamosal (often an elongated bone) from which it is suspended, all give an excessive mobility to the facial part of the skull. To this it may be added that, at the symphysis, the rami of the mandible are only united by soft, very extensible tissue. There is usually but one premaxilla, and that is edentulous. The palatines are usually connected with the maxilla by transverse bones, while the pterygoids connect them with the quadrate bones. There is no interorbital septum, and

in Che- jonians.

no fontanelle in the cranial roof. The basisphenoid is prolonged forwards into a long bony rostrum, on the upper surface of which thecartilaginous " rods (the per- @ sistent trabecu- le cranit) ex- tend forwards to blend with the median cartilage of the ethmoi- dalregion. The supraoccipital is excluded from the margin of Frq. 15.—Skull of Vipera nasicornis (from nature). ar, the foramen articular; ca, columella auris; d, dentary; J, frontal ; magnura by the frais ps pahontal; pe perteelal g guakeaes 6 exoccipital. The squamosal; é, transversum.

frontal bones descend laterally to the dorsum of this basi- sphenoidal rostrum and then turn inwards to meet together in the median lines on the floor of the cranial cavity. The parietals also descend laterally but unite with the basi- sphenoid by suture. There are a pair of nasals, and also lachrymals and postfrontals, but there is no jugal or quad- rate jugal. The palatines do not bound the posterior nares behind. They are widely separated, and their long axes are longitudinal. The maxille may be long and may support a number of teeth,as in most non-venomous Snakes, or may be very short and support a single large fang, as, e.g., in Vipers.

The small-mouthed Serpents, or Angiostomata, have the pterygoids separated from the quadrates. The squamosal is small or absent, the quadrate being attached directly to the cranium. They have no postfrontal and no transverse bone, while the palatine bones have their long axis trans- verse, and meet, or nearly meet, on the under surface of the skull. The two rami of the mandible are also closely united together. In other details of cranial structure they agree generally with ; the Lurystomata.

The hyoid is rudi- mentary, and only consists of a pair of cartilaginous threads, medianly united and lying side by side be- neath the trachea.

In the Chelonians the skull presents cer- tain resemblances to that of the Crocodil- ians. Thus the qua- drate is immovably? fixed and its upper | part is joined by the pterygoid, and there is a quadrato-jugal bone. The pterygoids and palatines unite

by suture and form : £0

horizontal plates be- Fic. 16.—Dorsal aspeet of skull of Testudo tabu- ° .. lata(from nature). an, anterior nares; f, frontal, neath the basis crant. on either side of whieh are the orbits, bounded

behind by ps, the postfrontal ; 0, basioecipital ; Nevertheless these ep, epiotic; $0, supraocecipital ; q, quadrate ; s, bones differ widely squamosal; pa, parietal ; po, periotic bones.

from their homologues in the Crocodiles inasmuch as the posterior nares open in front of the pterygoids and are bounded by the palatines and the azygous vomer. The epiotic bone is generally quite distinct from the exoccipital. There are large parietals, which send down a process that serves the purpose of the absent alisphenoid. In front of this, the sides and front of the cranial cavity are unossified.

REPTILES

[ANATOMY.

There are a pair of frontals, and in front of them a pair of bones which bound the anterior nares above. There may

Fra. 17.—Side view of skull of Testudo tabulata (from nature). an, angular; ar, articular; d, dentary; 7, frontal; j, jugal; m, mandible; n, naso-prefrontal ; pa, parietal; pl, palatine ; ps, postfrontal; q, quadrate ; gj, quadrato-jugal.

be one or two premaxille. Sometimes, as ¢.g.,in Chelone, the parietal, post- frontal, jugal, and squamosal send out plate-like processes which unite and form a sort of false outer skull covering in 'the temporal fossa, and quite ex- ternal to the real outer wall of the cranial cavity. Thus the cranium of these Reptiles is, as it were, at the opposite extreme tothatof the Serpents as regards massiveness, solid- ity, and the immov- ability of its several parts one on another. It may be excessively flat and depressed,

as Nn Chelydra. Fra. 18.— Ventral surfaee of skull of Testudo tabu-

The dentary bone Jata (from nature), bo, basioecipital ; bs, basisphe- : 5 noid ; ep, epiotic; m, maxilla; pl, palatine; pm, of the mandible is premaxilla; pt, pterygoid ; g, quadrate ; g/, quad-

azygous, as in Birds, %2t0-Jugal ; so, supraoceipital. The hyoid consists of two pairs of cornua, whereof the

pir

bo Fic. 19.—Dorsal aspect of skull of Chelys matamata (from nature). 0, pasioccipital; eo, exoeeipital; 7, frontal; J, jugal; m, maxilla; pm, premaxilla; pa, parietal; pr, prefrontal ; ps, postfrontal ; pé, pterygoid; ¢, quadrate; s, squamosal; so, supraoecipital.

anterior may or may not be the larger, attached to a

Limb girdles and limbs.

of limb skeleton, as in Amphisbena.

SKELETON. |

broad, more or less cartilaginous, or variously ossified median portion. ;

Toe APPENDICULAR SKELETON.—The appendicular skeleton of Reptiles, like that of Vertebrates generally,

AQY

Fic. 20.—Lateral aspect of skull of Chelys matamata (trom nature), an, angular; ar, articular; bo, basioccipital; d, dentary; ep, epiotic; m, maxilla; pa, parietal ; pm, premaxilla; pr, prefrontal; ps, postfrontal; pt, pterygoid; q, quadrate; s, squamosal; sg, surangular.

consists of a pair of limb girdles (pectoral and pelvic), with a pair of skeletal appendages proceeding from either girdle. Each such skeletal appendage has also, normally, the typical differentiation into (1) a single upper limb bone, (2) a pair of lower limb bones, (3) a group of small foot-

root bones or cartilages (carpus or tarsus), (4) a series of middle foot bones (metacarpus or metatarsus), and (5)

Fic. 21.—Ventral aspect of skull of Chelys matamata (from nature). bo, basioccipital ; 6s, basisphenoid; mdi, mandible; oh, opisthotic ; pl, palatine ; pm, premaxilla; po, prootic; pi, pterygoid ; 9g, quadrate; s, squamosal,

a group of small bones (phalanges) arranged in_ series according to the number of digits, but the number in each digit varying in different digits and in different groups of Reptiles.

Every trace of an appendicular skeleton may, however, be wanting, as is the case in most Ophidians.

There may be a pectoral limb girdle without any rudi- ment of a fore-limb skeleton, as in Angwis, Acontias, and Amphisbena, There may be a pelvic girdle without any rudiment of a hind-limb skeleton, as in at least some, if not all, Zyphlopide. Very rarely there may be both rudimentary pectoral and pelvic girdles without any trace Thus, of the two categories, (1) limb girdles, and (2) girdle appendages or limbs, the former is the more constant, as we never find rudimentary extremities and limbs without any trace of a girdle, while the contrary we do find here and there.'

The Limb Girdles. —Each girdle consists of two lateral halves, and each such lateral half further consists of two

1 This is interesting because it is probable that genetically the limb is prior to the limb girdle, which was an ingrowth from the former. See Trans. Zool. Soc., 1879, vol. x. p. 439.

divisions which diverge from the articular surface offered to the limb by such lateral half. From that articular surface one division descends dorsally and does not con- nect itself with its fellow of the opposite side.

The other ventral division passes inwards and somewhat downwards and normally does connect itself, directly or indirectly, with its fellow of the opposite side. The dorsal ascending division is generally single, and consists of two parts in serial succession. The ventral division consists normally of two or more parts, which, though diverging, pass ven- trally side by side, or one in front of the other. Hach girdle normally connects itself with the axial skeleton either towards the dorsal or ventral aspect of the latter.

The Pectoral Girdle.—This girdle only becomes con- Pectoral nected (except in Chelonians) with the ventral part of the sivdle.

appendicular skeleton,—to wit, where it abuts against either side of the sternum. In its most complex condition —that found in some Saurians, e.g., Jgwana—the dorsal division consists of a scapula (with a forwardly extending

Fic. 22.—Sternum and shoulder girdle of Amblyrhynchus subcristatus (after Stein. dachner). cl, clavicle; co, coracoid; h, humerus; ic, interclavicle ; mc, meso- coracoid; ms, mesoscapula; pc, precoracoid; s, scapula; sé, sternum,

process—the mesoscapular), and is continued upwards into

a suprascapular ; while the ventral division consists of a

coracoid, which abuts against the sternum, and from which \y ¢/ Sy ~ three parts (the precoracoid, 2 a

the epicoracoid, and the meso- Fic, 23.—Rudiments of pectoral arch— coracoid) diverge forwards 1, of Acontias meleagris; 2, of Typhic- and inwar ds, and also of a saurus aurantiacus (after Ftirbinger). clavicle, between which and its fellow of the opposite side an interclavicle is interposed. This girdle normally in Reptiles, as in all other Vertebrates, embraces more or less of the axial skeleton externally ; only in adult Chelonians it becomes drawn in within the circuit of the ribs.

In the Ophidia, as has been said, there is no pectoral girdle.

In certain Sauria it is in its simplest possible form, as, é.g., in Acontias and T'yphlosawrus, where each lateral half consists of a minute ossification representing the clavicle and coracoid, which is not connected with its fellow of the opposite side by any hard structure, as both sternum and interclavicle are wanting. It is also quite rudimentary m Amphisbena, but it is fairly developed in Chirotes. Its most complex condition in Saurians has been already described. The Chameleons have a simple girdle consist- ing of a long and narrow scapula with suprascapula and a long and narrow coracoid, the anterior part of which

envelops (or is overlapped by) its fellow of the opposite side, while its hinder part joins the sternum. There is no clavicle or interclavicle.

Hatteria has both a scapula with a mesoscapular pro- cess and a cartilaginous suprascapula, also a coracoid with a large cartilaginous epicoracoid. There is an inter- clavicle, the diverging anterior arms of which, as clavicles, are connected by ligament with the scapula.

The Crocodilia have a simple girdle, consisting only of a scapula with a cartilaginous suprascapula and a cora- coid without processes or epicoracoid, nor are there any clavicles but only a median anteroposteriorly directed interclavicle.

In the Chelonia the girdle lies between the dorsal and ventral shields. The dorsal division is a columnar scapula, which ascends to be connected by ligament or cartilage, which sometimes contains points of ossification, with the transverse process of the first thoracic vertebra. Of the bifold ventral division, the anterior bone is a direct con- tinuation of the scapula, and connects itself with the inter- clavicle of the plastron, whilst the posterior bone is a coracoid and ends freely (there being no sternum). In Sphargis the end of the right coracoid underlies that of the left. coracoid. .

The Pele Girdle.—-This girdle only becomes connected with the dorsal part of the appendicular skeleton—to wit, where it abuts against the sacral vertebre.

In general each of its halves consists of a dorsal divi- sion more or less simple and columnar, the ilium, united to the vertebral column by cartilage, and of a bifold ventral division, the parts of which, pubis and ischium, unite in the middle line by the intervention of a median 'longi- tudinal cartilage or ligament, a process extending forwards from the front margin of the more anterior part—the pubis—while an azygous bone, the os cloace, extends back- wards from behind the symphysis formed by the junction of the more posterior part, the ischium, with its fellow of the opposite side. The ilium, pubis, and ischium form the acetabulum.

Although it has been elsewhere already described, it may be well again to mention here that in certain ex- tinct Reptiles not only is the ilium greatly expanded above antero-posteriorly but the pubis sends back a long slender post-pubis nearly parallel with the ischium and closely resembling the so-called pubis of Birds.

In the Ophidia the pelvic girdle is generally entirely absent, and, when a rudiment is present, that rudiment is never united with the axial skeleton. It may consist merely of a pair of subparallel slender pubic spicules or cartilages, as in T'yphlops, or of a rudimentary ilium, pubis, and ischium on each side, as in Cylindrophis, Hysia, Stenostoma, and Boa. A rudimentary pelvis also exists in Python, Eryx, and Tortrix.

In Saurians the girdle may also be detached from the axial skeleton and most rudimentary, as in Lepidosternon, where it consists of no il more than in Zyph- ip. lops, and in Anguis, x \ "a a) where each half of it / consists of an elon- ip gated ossicle with three @ processes correspond- Fic. 24.—Rudiments of pelvie limb—1. of Lialis

° Bartonit; 2, of Anguis fra,ilts; 3, of Amphis- ing to the three nor- dna fuliginosa. f femur: il, ilium;

Jt pectineum; p, pnbis; ¢, tibia. may be even more simple and yet attached to the verte- bral column, as in Acontias, Pseudopus, and Ophisaurus.

1 See especially a paper by Professor Marsh in Amer. Jour. of Sci. and Arts, vol. xvii. (January 1879), pl. 8, and one by Dollo in the Bull. Mus. Roy. d' Hist. Bot. de Belgique, vol. ii, 1888, " Troisiéme note sur les Dinosaurs, plas: :

ILES

In all Saurians with ordinary hind limbs the pelvic girdle is fully developed.

The Chelonians have long ilia nearly vertical in posi- tion and with a cartila- ginous margin. The pubis and ischium form an acute angle, and are only connected with their fellows of the opposite side by liga- ment. There is no og cloacee.

fatteria has a la- certilian pelvis. The Fro. 25.—1, Rudimentary pelvis and limb of pubis has a small for- Siosoris macelpt 2, The ame pars wardly extending pro- itium; ép, bone called "iliopectineum " by cess, and the ischium Fiirbinger; p, pubis; ¢, tibia,

a much more prominent backwardly extending one.

In the Crocodilia the acetabulum is formed by the ilium and ischium only, and is imperfectly ossified inter- nally. The two ischia are united by synchondrosis, and each develops a forwardly extending process contributing to close the acetabulum, from which the pubic bone extends forwards, downwards, and inwards. The two pubic bones are only united together by membrane.

The Chelonia have the pelvic girdle, like the pectoral one, enclosed between the carapace and plastron. In most forms it is not united with either shield, the ilium being merely attached to the transverse processes of the sacral vertebra. In some forms, however, as in Chelys, Chelodina, Pelomedusa, and others, the ilia firmly unite with the posterior plates of the carapace, while the ischia and pubes unite with the plastron. The three bones concur to form the acetabulum, and the two pubes and the two ischia respectively unite in ventral symphyses. The space be- tween the pubis and ischium of either side, the obturator foramen, is in Chelone

and Sphargis separated from that of the other side by a ligament only, which proceeds from the ischiatic symphysis forwards to the pubic symphysis. In the Land Tortoises, however, the pubes and ischia so expand ventrally that the obturator foramen is (on each side) enclosed by the junction of the pubis and ischium of either side at their distal ends, Each pubis has ordinarily a downwardly bent spinous process at its anterior margin, and the ischium often has a process projecting from its hinder margin. The pubes are generally widely expanded bones, very much larger than either the ischia or the ilia.

[ANATOMY.

The Pectoral Limb.—The skeleton of this limb in its full Pectoral and normal differentiation resembles in its main features limb.

that of Mammals; it may, however, be simplified toa greater extent than in any other air-breathing Vertebrate class, and this according to two modes of simplification. Thus it may be a relatively minute member ending in what is (at least practically) but a single digit, asin Rhodona.2 It may, on the contrary, be simplified by being made up of parts all so exceedingly similar that the typical differentiation of the limb can be with difficulty traced, while the digital elements seem to indicate more than pentadactylism, as in the extinct Ichthyosauri.

A peculiar complexity and extreme differentiation of this limb, however, exists, as is well known, in another extinct group, the Pterodactyles, wherein the outermost or ulnar digit is enormously elongated so as to support the wing membrane as do the four digits of existing Bats.

The following are the main conditions of the limb met with in the existing Reptilian orders. In most Lacertilia there is an elongated humerus, the proximal end of which is compressed and furnished with two tuberosities. Of the

2 See Gray, Ann. Nat. Hist., ii. 385; and Ginther, Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., 1867, xx. p. 46.

Pelvic limb.

RFE?

lower arn: bones, the ulna is stronger than the radius, and its olecranon forms a short projection. The carpus consists of nine bones, one at the end of each lower limb, one at the base of each metacarpal, one—the os centrale—between these five and the two at the end of the midlimb bones, and one—the pisiforme—outside these latter two. There are five metacarpals and five digits, the latter composed of pha- langes, which for the most part number two for the inner- most digit or pollex, three for the next or index, four for the third digit, five for the fourth (generally the longest) digit, and three for the outermost or ulnar digit. In the Chameleons the five proximal carpals coalesce with the metacarpals, and the phalanges are 2, 3, 4, 4, and 3 respectively; the digits, moreover, are very exceptionally disposed, the three inner or radial digits being opposed to the two outer or ulnar ones. The digits may be but four in number, as in Sawrophis, Gymnophthalmus, Tetradactylus, and others ; or but three, as in Chalcis, Seps, and others ; or but two, as in [[eteromeles, Chelomeles, and others; or, finally, but one, as in Rhodona, &c., as we have already seen. The limb may be entirely wanting, as in Pygopus, Delma, Lialis, Anguis, Acontias, and others.

In the Ophidia the pectoral limb is entirely absent, not even a rudiment of it being found.

In Hatteria the limb is Lacertilian in form but has ten carpals.

The Crocodilia have the long limb bones well developed. The carpus has two large long ossicles articulated with the radius and ulna respectively, and a pisiforme; and an oblong bone and disk of cartilage lie between the large carpals aud the five metacarpals. The third digit is the longest, and the number of phalanges of the digit from within out- wards (as before) is 2, 3, 4, 4, 3.

In the Chelonia the humerus may be nearly straight, as in Chelone, or very much curved, as in Z'estudo. The radius and ulna, which, though susceptible of very little motion, are generally distinct, may become anchylosed to- gether towards their distal ends, as in Chelone. The carpus has generally nine ossicles. The pisiforme may be very large, as in

Chelone. There are always five digits, which —botli their metacarpals and phalanges—may be very long, as in Chelone, or exceedingly short, as in Z'estudo. The number of the phalanges may be but two to each digit, as in Testudo, but generally it is 2, 3, 3, 3, 2, from pollex to the ulnar digit.

The Pelvic Limb.—The skeleton of this limb, like that of the pectoral one, is in its main features normally con- ditioned as is that of Mammals, save as to the mobility of the tarsus, as will be shortly explained. It may, however, be simplified in two ways like the pectoral limb—namely, by the great similarity and want of differentiation of its numerous parts, as in Ichthyosaurus, or by excessive reduc- tion in the number of its parts, as in certain Ophidians, and in Saurians such as Pseudopus and Lialis.

Its resemblance to the pectoral limb, which, as we have seen, is so exceedingly close in Zchthyosaurus and Plesio- saurus, may be, in other conditions, hardly less complete in some Chelonians, such, ¢.g., as Chelydra. When all four limbs are fairly developed, the pelvic ones are in no existing forms so inferior in size to the pelvic ones as in the extinct Ornithosauria, or so superior in size to the latter as in some of the extinct Dinosauria, as, eg., in Compsognathus.

Amongst existing Reptiles the Lacertilians present us with very varied conditions. Generally there is an elon- gated femur furnished proximally with a trochanter on its inner side. Of the lower limb bones the tibia is larger than the fibula. A knee-pan bone, or patella, is placed in front of the junction of the upper and lower limb bones. The tarsus consists of a proximal segment made up of

two large ossicles more or less firmly and immovably united by fibrous tissue to the tibia and fibula and of a distal segment, which consists of a cuboid bone and which is capable of motion upon the proximal segment, while it is firmly connected with the five metatarsals. Thus the flexion of the foot upon the leg takes place, not as in Mammals between the whole tarsus and the leg-bone, but between the distal and proximal segments of

the tarsus itself. The outermost or peroneal metatarsal is more or less bent toward its proximal end. The fourth digit is the longest, and the number of the phalanges of the digits, from within outwards, is 2, 3,4, 5,4. In the Chameleons the distal tarsals coalesce with the meta- tarsals, and two inner or tibial digits are opposed to the three outer or peroneal ones. The foot may have but four digits, as in Campsodactylus, Tetradactylus, and others ; or but three digits, as in Seps, [eteromeles, and others; or only two, as in Chelomeles, Rhodona, and others; or but a single one, as in Chalcis. There may be but a very small and slender femur, to which a still smaller tibia unites a rudiment of a tarsal ossicle at its distal end, as in Lialis, or but a rudiment of a femur and tibia only, as in Pseudo- pus; or the limb may be entirely wanting, as in Angus, Acontias, Chirotes, Amphisbena, and Lepidosternon.

In the Ophidia the limb is generally wanting, and there is never any rudiment of the tarsus or digits, but there may be a rudiment of a femur, as in Stenostoma, or of a tibia as well as a femur, the tibia ending in a hooked pro- cess, as in Oylindrophis, Ilysia, and Boa.

In Hatteria the limb is as it normally is in Lacertilians.

In the Crocodilia there is a well-developed femur, and also a tibiaanda fibula. The tarsus has two proximal bones (less closely united than in Lizards), whereof that adjoining the fibula has a large calcaneal process. The distal seg- ment of the tarsus consists of two rounded ossicles on the peroneal side and a thin plate of cartilage on the tibial side. There are four long tibial metatarsals supporting digits and a rudimentary fifth one to which no rudiment of a digit is attached. Of the four digits the third is generally the longest, and, like the fourth digit, has four phalanges. The second digit has three, and the inner- most, or hallux, but two.

In Chelonians the femur has a strong, rounded articular head, which forms a marked angle with the body of the bone. Sometimes, as in Amys and T'rionyz, there are two troch- anters separated by a groove. The lower limb bones are always distinct. They are longest in the Land Tortoises, and shortest in the Marine Turtles. There is no patella. The tarsal bones vary by coalescence from eight to six in number. They are exceptionally flattened in Chelone. In Testudo the metatarsals are short,

but are longer than are the metacarpals, whereas the reverse is the case in Chelone. There are always five digits, except in Testudo, where the fifth is only represented by a rudimentary metatarsal. The metatarsals are shortest in TZ'estudo and its allies, though they are not so short as are the digits of the hand. They are longest in the aquatic forms, though they are not so long in Chelone as are the digits of its hand. The number of phalanges, counting from within outwards, may be 2, 2, 2, 2, as in Zestudo, or 2,3 3 3, 2, as in Trionyx, or 2, 3, 3, 3, 3, as in Chelone.

Myology.

The muscles of four-footed Reptiles other than the Muscles.

Chelonians are arranged in a general way on the same fundamental plan as in the Mammals, though the deter- mination of the true homology of many of them is more or less difficult if not impossible now to deterniine. The muscular masses are thus arranged in a similar longitudinal manner on the dorsum of the trunk, and expand into large

Muscles of trunk and tail;

456 ie iy eT

continuous horizontal sheets of fibres in the ventral region, while for a greater or less extent longitudinal bundles of fibres underlie the vertebral bodies in different parts of the neck and trunk, and prolongations backwards of the dorsal and ventral: muscles clothe the skeleton of the caudal region. Muscles like the temporal, masseter, pterygoid, and digastric of Mammals help to open and shut the jaws of Reptiles. Others descend from the dorsal region of the spine to the pectoral and pelvic girdles and to the limb bones, which latter are furnished with flexors and exten- sors, abductors and adductors, in essentially the same way as are the limbs of birds.

There are two special deviations from this more normal type of structure. We find one of these in the Serpents, which, being limbless and without a neck, and requiring an extraordinary mobility in the ~~parts of the axial skele~~ ton, have the muscles which clothe the trunk raised to their highest

degree of multiplication and differentiation. The other exceptional type is furnished us by the Chelonians, which, having a perfectly rigid body and long neck and limbs singularly situated, have the muscles of the trunk atrophied to an extreme degree, the neck richly supplied with muscles, and also the limbs, while the limb muscles are so strangely different, in either origin or inser- tion, from those of other animals that their true nature and correct designations do not szem as yet to admit of precise and accurate determination.

The Muscles of the Trunk and Tail,—In Saurians the caudal muscles often take the form of a series of hollow cones successively enclosed one within the other, while their continuations forward in the trunk become the longissiinus dorsi, sacro-lnmbalis, spinalis, levatores costarum, and the other muscles familiar to anatomists. Subvertebral continuations form muscles which proceed from the vertebral bodies to the inner surfaces of the ribs, which they tend to pull back—retrahentes costarum—and further forwards, such muscles as answer to the longus colli, rectus capitis, &c., of Mammals. Ventral muscles take the form of the two obliques and transversalis, but the differentiation may be greater than in Mammals, as ¢.g., in Jguwana, where the obliquus externus consists of three distinct layers. Tendinous or harder structures may produce a segmentation in the abdominal muscles, which, under special names, are prolonged to the hyoidian cornna and mandible.

In Serpents the dorsal muscles are essentially the same as in Lizards, but are more developed, while small superficial muscles run from the ribs to the inside of the abdominal shields which are agents of locomotion. The limbless Serpent is practically some- what like a Centipede, aud moves by the successive protrusion and retraction of cach pair of ribs, which serve as two feet. For each pair is attached to a ventral shield the edge of which is applied to and removed from the ground by the ribs attached to it, according as these are protrnded or retracted—the shields thns serving as a number of small levers to propel the body along. The subvertebral muscle nay also be very recia developed, as in Naja and Crotalus, the long hypapophyses of which have been already noted, and which serve for the attachment of such muscles. By their contraction the force of the downward flow of the poison fangs is greatly increased. That subvertebral

series already mentioned as the retrahentes costarum is very extensively developed in the Ophidia.

In the Croeodilia the arrangement is substantially as in Saurians, but the so-called abdominal ribs induce certain differences. Some muscles lie above, some below, and some between these "ribs." Subvertebral mnscles extend beneath the cervical and anterior dorsal vertebrx, and farther back there arc retrahentes costarum.

Hatteria has special muscles inserted into the distal expansions of its ribs, which may sometimes aid its motions in a very subordi- nate co as those of Serpents are so helped in the highest degree.

In the Chelonians the dorsal niuscles are well developed in the neck and tail. Bifold muscles pass from within the hindmost lateral plates of the carapace to the dorsum of the caudal vertebrae. Other muscles extend between the articular and transverse pro- cesses of the caudal vertebree. Dorsal muscles are entirely wanting in the thorax of Testudo, but in Emys and Chelydra a longitndinal muscle lies upon the transverse processes of the trunk vertebra. In the neck there are a number of mnscles extending with various degrees of complexity between the transverse and articular pro- cesses. The neck is retracted partly by a muscle passing from it to the procoracoid and partly by a long muscle passing to the

- *See Phil. Trans., pt. ti. for 1867, p. 17.*

ILES

head and neck from a greater or less number of the spines and neural arches of the more posterior trunk vertebre. Pyramidal muscles pass from the pelvis to the plastron, and oblique muscles arise from inside the costal marginal plates of the carapace and pass to the pelvis and plastron, and a transversalis extends from within the costal plates and also passes to the plastron. A dia- phragm springs from the bodies of certain dorsal vertebre and one or niore ribs, and invests the surface of the lungs.

The Muscles of the Head.—In ordinary Saurians, the temporal inuscle is embraced by the upper (in them the only) zygomatic arch, and descends

from the side of the head to the coronoid process of the mandible. The niasseter takes origin from the quadrate and columella. Of the two pterygoid muscles one arises from the upper surface of the pterygoid bone and the other from the os transversuin. The digastric descends from the hinder part of the cranium to the posterior end of the mandible.

In the Ophidia the muscular apparatus is much more complex, as might be predicted from the great mobility of theirjaws. There are on each side three elevators aud several depressors of the lower

of head ;

jaw, and sometimes, as, ¢.g., in Trigonocephalus, a muscular belly °

connected with one of the elevators is so arranged as to be able to compress the poison gland. In poisonous Serpents also a tendon gocs from the external pterygoid to the short maxilla, so that the latter can be erected by its intervention. The suspensorium is drawn upwards and backwards by a muscle arising from the neural spines of the anterior trunk vertebre, and downwards and forwards by another arising from the basisphenoid. Four other mnscles on

either sidc of the head are devoted to moving the palatine apparatus. °

The Crocodilia have a temporalis, an internal and external pterygoid, and a digastric. There are also a pair of sternomandi- bular muscles, and of hyomandibulars (from the cornua of the hyoid), a pair of genioglossi, and a superficial mylohyoid.

The Chelonia have only an internal pterygoid, besides the temporal and digastric. But they have also a geniohyoid and genioglossus as Well as a inylohyoid.

The Museles of the Peetoral Girdle and Limb.—In ordinary

of pee-

Saurians and in Crocodiles the scapula is drawn forwards and toral upwards by a trapezius and levator, and there are also a serratus girdle magnus and a sternoscapular muscle, a cleidomastoid or sterno- and

mastoid, and generally an omohyoid. shoulder-girdle museles are very reduced and peculiar, and no muscle draws it towards the skull, but a muscle arises from the sides of the cervical vertebre and is inserted into the scapula. Another (smaller) passes from the second dorsal transverse pro- cess and the part of the carapace therewith connected to the scapula, which it draws backwards. Another muscle goes from the coracoid to the hyoid, and yet another-—a sort of sternomastoid— from the plastron to the skull.

Lacertilians have an ordinary pcctoralis and generally a subjacent small muscle passing from the coracoid to the great tuberosity of the humerus. There is a latissimus dorsi going to the lesser tuberosity and a large subscapularis. A triceps ends by a tendon inserted into the olecranon, often containing an ossicle analogous to a patella. There is also a biceps, coracobrachialis and brachialis, anticus, with other Mammalian muscles, flexors, and extensors of the digits, with even lumbrical muscles, but not with that perfeet arrangement of perforating and perforated tendons which character- izes the highest class.

The muscles of the pectoral limb of Crocodiles, though showing many minor differences from those of Saurians, yet present a fundamental general resemblance to the latter.

It is otherwise with Chelonians. In them the pectoralis major is represented by two muscles, one a muscle extending from the median plastron plate and external border of the carapace to the inner of the two tuberosities of the humerus, and another musele inserted beside the former and taking rise from the most anterior plate of the plastron. There is also a superior pectoralis, which arises from the coracoid and coracoacromial ligaments, and which is partly inserted into the same tuberosity and partly extends beyond it. 'There are also a coracobrachialis and a deltoid, bnt no suprascapular. All the muscles which arise from the scapula are inserted into the external tuberosity of the humerus. There is a muscle which represents the latissimus dorsi. It arises beneath the most

anterior plate of the carapace, and is inserted into the external tuberosity. The muscles of the forearm and extremity are less exceptional.

In the Chelonia the limb ;

Museles of the Pelvic Girdle and Limb.—In Lacertilians there are of pelvic several hind-limb muscles which have a subeaudal origin; some of girdle

these end at the thigh, while others extend to the feet. numerous flexors of the leg. tail, and is inserted by a broad tendon into the femur. From the inferior margin of that tendon another slender tendon arises, sometinies ending (as, ¢.g., In Zywana) in the interarticular cartilage of the knee-joint. The muscles of the thigh, leg, and foot have a general similarity to those of Mammals generally, as have those of the arm and hand, but those which represent the ham-string muscles have generally much eomplexity and intricacy of arrangement of

There are and A powerful muscle arises beneath the limb.

wy

REPT

their tendons and much connexion with other muscles in the popliteal space.

The Crocodilia have an adductor femoris, which arises from beneath the transverse processes of the lumbar region and is inserted by a broad tendon into the femur. An iliacus arises from the inner side of the ilium and ischium, and goes to the inner side of the femur. Several adductors proceed to the femur from the isehium. A loug muscle arises from the chevron bones and transverse pro- cesses of the anterior third of the tail, and is inserted by a strong tendon into the trochanter ; thence descends another tendon along the flexor side of the femur to join the‘tendon of origin of the gastrocnemius, which springs from the external condyle.

The Chelonia possess an abductor femoris, which passes from beneath the transverse processes of the thoracic vertebra, and also a sort of psoas extending from their transverse processes to the ilium. Another muscle goes from the hiudmost thoracic transverse processes to the femur. A muscle, attrahens pelvim, arises from within the plastron and goes to the outer process of the pubis. Another muscle which antagonizes this, the retrahens pelvim, springs from the

_hindermost part of the plastron and goes to the pubis. Other retractors pass from the caudal chevron bones to the front border of the obturator foramen, and another muscle with a similar origin is inserted into the ischial symphysis. The muscles of the more fe part of the limb are less peculiar, and need not be described nere.

MUSCLES. |

The Alimentary System.

Ali- .—Alll Reptiles agree in having an alimentary tract which mentary begins with jaws armed mostly with teeth, rarely with horny system— sheaths, but never in existing Reptiles with both, though (as has been elsewhere described) such a combination is found in some fossil forms. Moreover, teeth are mostly found not only at the margins of the jaws but also on the palate.

Almost always there is a tongue, and glandular structures around the mouth pour their secretion into that cavity, which communicates, by tubular prolongation, with the ears, the eyes, and the nostrils. The mouth opens posteriorly into the commencement of a more or less prolonged ali- mentary canal, the anterior part of which is not, while the greater and less posterior part is, embraced by the peri- toneum. At its hinder end this canal opens into a chamber called the cloaca, into which the urinary and generative ducts also open, and which itself opens beneath the hinder part of the trunk by a roundish longitudinal or transversely extended aperture. Two accessory glands aid digestion by the products they pour into the canal. These are the pancreas and the liver, and the latter is always provided with a gall-bladder. A spleen is also always found in the vicinity of the stomach or specially digestive dilatation of the alimentary canal

towards its anterior end and separated from the mouth only by the cesophagus.

The several main groups of existing Reptiles present the following characters :—

The Ophidia all possess teeth, mostly well developed and anchylosed to the bones which support them. By rare excep- tion, as in Dasypeltis scaber, the teeth may be quite minute,—the hypapophyses of the antcrior trunk vertebr penetrating the dorsal wall of the alimentary canal and being tipped with tooth substance, and taking the place of teeth, as already mentioned in describ- ing the axial skeleton. Teeth generally exist on the palatines and pterygoids as well as on the maxille and mandible, and in Python and Yortriz in the premaxilla. They may be absent from the palate, as in Uropeltis. But the varions conditions as to the dis- position of the teeth have already been given in the systematic part of this article.

In the majority of Serpents the teeth are solid or have but their pulp cavity, but in some harmless ones one or more of the hind- most teeth which are set on the maxilla are longitudinally grooved along their convex side. In poisonous Serpents each maxilla supports a poison fang or tooth so deeply grooved that the margins of the groove meet and so convert the grooved tract into a canal, down which the duct of a poison gland passes. This fang may be the only functional maxillary tooth, as in Crotalus and Vipera, or there may be other teeth behind it, also grooved, as in Naja, or entire, as in Bungarus. Almost all Ophidians have a row of small

labial salivary glands along either margin of each jaw, their secretion escaping into the mouth by numerous small apertures. In addition to this, some apparently innocuous snakes with grooved teeth have an additional glandular mass connected with the upper labial gland and pouring its secretion by a duct into the dental groove. The truly poisonous Serpents possess a gland placed above the maxilla

>

in Ophi- dians ;

and os transversum and beneath and behind the ball of the eyc, and of different size and extent in different genera. In Naja it may extend for about one-sixth the length of the body, but in Callophis}

'it may be yet greater and extend throughout nearly half the length

of the entire body of the animal. The poison gland has a fibrous investment, which is often contractile from the presence in it of muscular fibres, and often jaw muscles are so arranged (as already mentioned) as to exert pressure on the gland by their contraction. A nasal gland and a lachrymal gland also convey their secretion into the mouth.

The tongue is long, bifurcated anteriorly, and extremely mobile, being capable of protrusion from and retraction into a membranous sheath, placed on the floor of the mouth beneath the ventral wall of the larynx.

The cesophagus is long. The stomach begins by a well-defined limit beside the liver, and may or may not form a curve, but is always simple. A valve at its pyloric end marks the commencement of the duodenum. The small intestine varies much as to the number of its convolutions, which are connected by bands of fibrous tissue and are not followed by foldings'of the mesentery. A circular protuber- ance gencrally marks its junction with the shorter large intestine, and sometimes there is a cecum, as in Lyphlops, Tortrix, Python, aud others, The large intestine may be simple, and its internal cavity may be augmented by valves or partial partitions. The cloaca opens externally by a transverse aperture. The liver is not sub- divided into conspicuous lobes. he gall-bladder lies separate from the liver and posterior to it. The ductus choledochus passes through the pancreas, which lies behind the pylorus at the right side of the duodenum and is pyramidal (or rounded), or compact, or in scparate parts, as in Hydrophis. The spleen lies immediately behind the pancreas. It is rounded, small, and generally entire, not lobed.

The Lacertilia all possess teeth along the margins of the jaws in Lacer- aud very often in the palatines also; but it is only by rare tilians ; exception, as, ¢.g., in Jguana, that the pterygoids bear teeth. In the

Chameleons the teeth are very rudimentary, little more than an enamelled dentated ridge on the margin of cither jaw. The teeth of most Saurians are either acrodont, ¢.c., anchylosed to the free margins of the jaws (as, ¢g., in Psammosawrus), or pleuro- dont, t.e., anchylosed to the inner side of the jaws, their crowns projecting above the margin (as, ¢.g., in Iguana). Generally more or less conical, the teeth may be acutely pointed, or cxtremely obtuse, as the hinder teeth of Cyclodus, Sometimes, as, ¢.g., in Igwana, the teeth may be compressed with a median external vertical ridge and a serrated margin. By rare exception, as, ¢g., in Chlamydosaurus, the teeth of cither jaw may be much dif- ferentiated. Here we have a simulation, or antieipation, of that division of the teeth into incisors, canines, and molars which is so general in the class Mammalia.? In the genus Heloderma the teeth are vertically grooved so as to remind us of their structure in Serpents. The teeth indeed are more grooved than in them, for one vertical groove passes down on the antero-inner side and another on the postcro-outer side of each tooth. Labial salivary glands generally exist, but are small. In Heloderma, however, and in no other known Lizard, there is a very large salivary gland on either side of the lower jaw. The quality of its saliva is distinctly poisonous, small animals bitten by Heloderma in our zoological gardens dying as if bitten by a venomous Serpent. No other such case is known to exist amongst the Lacertilia.

The tongue presents a number of variations of form which have been already referred to as diagnostic characters in the systematic part of this article. It will suffice here to remind the reader that it may be broad and flat without any sheath, and with a pair of anterior and of posterior processes, as in Amphisbena ; or short, broad, and slightly notched in front, as in Gecko; or short with a slight bifurcation in front and two long processes behind, as in Chalcis ; or with a sheath, and much like that of Serpents, as in Psammosaurus; or cylindrical and wonderfully extensile, as in Chameeleo,

The cesophagus passes into a stomach, which is generally elon- gated and curved. The small intestine may be hardly at all convoluted (as in Amphisbena) or very much so, but if so the mesentery here follows its folds. Similarly the large intestine may be short and straight, or long and

with internal folds. There may be a caecum, as, ¢.g., in Amphisbena and some Chameleons. The cloaca opens externally by a transverse aperture.

The liver is but little lobed, and its gall-bladder lies in a fissure on its left side. The pancreas and spleen usually lie between the folds of the mesentery at the junction of the small intestine with the stomach. There is generally a pair of anal glands,

In Hatteria the large teeth in the premaxille become completely in Hat- anchylosed with those bones, reminding us of the extinct Rhyncho- teria 2 saurus and Hyperodapedon. Most of the teeth which lie along the

*1 See A. B. Meyer, Monatsb. der Akad. d. Wissen. z. Berlin, 1869. * This fact thus affords an interesting illustration of the independent origin of similar structures. DX ane 58*

margin of the jaws and the palatines soon wear down to form mere enamelled cutting edges to the bones, with which they become immediately anchylosed. The extinct Dicynodonts, with their large

pancreas between the folds of the duodenum. The various viscera of the abdominal eavity lie, as in Birds, in separate serous sacs.?

In the Chelonia there arc horny sheaths to the jaws but no teeth, in Che- though numerous rudiments of teeth have been found in_ the lonians. embryo of Trionyx.? The tongue is not extensible, but is differ- ently conditioned in different genera. There appears to be only a sublingual salivary gland, though the palate of the Land Tortoise exhibits the apertures of numerous cutaneous follicles.

The cesophagus leads to the left part of the transversely placed stomach. The extent of both the small and the large intestine varies; the latter is at its shortest in Z'rionyx. The cloaca opens externally by a somewhat rounded aperture.

The liver is mostly large, and in two lobes connected by one or more transverse bands of its substance. The gall-bladder lies on its right and may be sunk within its substance. The pancreas has often several excretory ducts, and the spleen is generally of large size.

[ANATOMY.

The Respiratory System.

All the Reptilia breathe air from the first moment of Respi- their separate existence, and are never furnished with ratory anything in the shape of gills. The apparatus by which system

in Croeo- dilians ;

Fig. 26.—Skull of Chiamydosaurus kingti (01d male, from nature), showing much differentiated teeth. 1, ventral aspect; 2, posterior; 3; profile, showing tho enormous process at the hinder end of the lower jaw.

canine-like teeth, growing from permanent pulps, behind the edentulous beak-like front part of the mouth, and those Ornitho- sauria which similarly have an edentulous beak in front of the toothed parts of their Jaws, may but have carried out further and more completely « that process of tooth reduction which we & find to be effected with age in Hatteria. The liver consists of two lateral lobes. There is a pair of anal glands.

The Crocodilia have teeth in the max- ille, premaxille, and mandible, but none in the palatines or pterygoids. They are implanted in distinct alveoli. The tongue is so flat and closely attached to the floor of the mouth that it can hardly be con- sidered as having a distinct existence. A transverse fold of membrane extends along its hinder border and another similar fold descends in front of the posterior nares. There are no salivary glands. mase tooth, showing a very

The cesophagus is wide, and the stomach _ faint longitudinal groove. nearly circular and gizzard-like, having thick muscular walls formed of fibres radiating from central tendons. The small intestine con- sists of two

parts,—an anterior part much convoluted, thin-walled, and lined with villi, which is succeeded by a thicker-walled part with internal zig-zag folds. Thereis no cecum, but a circular pro- minence marks the commencement of the large intestine, which is short and wide with a smooth lining. It is funnel-shaped, and opens by a very narrow aperture into a very clongated cloaca, the external opening of which is rather longitudinal.

The liver, like that of Hatteria, is in two lobes, and the gall- bladder is beside the right lobe. The spleen lies behind the

Fig. 27.—Two aspects of a tooth of Heloderma hor- ridum (after Bocourt). 1, antero-internal aspect ofthe tooth, showing a very deep longitudinal groove ; 2, pos- tero-external aspect of the

their respiration is effected is always a pair of sacs or lungs —whereof one sometimes aborts—into and from which air is introduced and removed by the intervention of an azygous tube, the trachea, which, passing forwards ventrally to the cesophagus, or beside it, opens in the floor of the mouth behind the tongue. The more or less dilated most anterior portion of the azygous tube is the larynx, which may become a vocal organ.

In the Lacertilia the external opening of the larynx may, by in Lacer- rare exception, as in Phrynosoma, be placed in front of the hind- tilians;

most margin of the tongue, so that the larynx scems to per- forate that organ, but is in fact merely enclosed by the posterior, exterior, and median junction of two lingual processes. A mem- branous or cartilaginous epiglottis may protect the entrance to the larynx as in Mammals. The larynx may be composed of one cartilage, which is produced anteriorly into two arytenoid processes, but generally these latter are distinct cartilages. Folds of membrane or vocal cords may exist, as in the Geckos and Chameleons, and the latter have also a wide membranous sac connected with the larynx. The trachea is generally short, but may be long, as in Amphisbena and Lepidosternon. It is never convoluted, and its cartilages may or may not form complete rings. It ends posteriorly by dividing into two bronchi, which are anal very short, but may be of

moderate length, as in Psammosaurus. . The lungs are generally of about equal size, but in the Snake-like Lizards the right lung is the longer, and sometimes, as in Z'yphline and Acontias, the left lung may be quite rudimentary. The lungs may be simple bags or may give out lateral processes or pouches of varying extent. In the Chameleons their hinder halves are

rolonged into narrow tubular processes.

Each lung is enclosed in a fold of peritoneum.

The Ophidia have the opening of the larynx behind the tongue in Ophi- The nature dians ;

rather prominent, with only a rudimentary epiglottis. of their prey and their mode of eating do not readily expose them to the danger of small particles of food finding their way into the trachea. The cartilaginous framework of the larynx is very elongated. The trachea has its more anterior cartilages in the form of complete rings. The lungs are unsymmetrical in all the genera, but much moreso in some than in others —one lung entirely abort- ing in Z'yphlops, Acrochordus, and Vipera amongst others. The two lungs are both of tolerable size in Python, Boa, and Eryz, which have the bronchi leading from the trachea to the two pulmonary sacs. These sacs may or may not be divided into subordinate cells towards the hinder end of each. Sometimes part of the trachea itself may be dilated dorsally into cellular promin- ences like an accessory lung, as in Hydrophis, or ventrally, as in Acrochordus. A pulmonary sac may extend not only far back- wards but also forwards to the hyoidean region, as in Heterodon.

In the Chelonia the opening of the larynx or glottis is longi- in Che- It may be furnished with a membranous cpiglottis, or lonians ;

tudinal. may have none, asin Yestudo. There may becricoid and arytenoid cartilages in addition to main cartilages, but the details of structure differ in different genera. There are no vocal cords. The trachea and bronchi vary in length, the former being long in most forms, the latter in Zestudo. In Cinixys the trachea and bronchi are contorted. The lungs are invested

anteriorly and on their ventral side by peritoneum, and also by the diaphragm as they lie between it and the carapace, and therefore they do not project freely into the abdominal cavity.

1 Stannius pointed out emphatically, as long ago as 1856, the resem- blanee which exists in many points between Crocodilesand Birds. Sce his Amphibien, p. 193, note 1. 2 See Owen, Odontog., p. 179.

in Croco- dilians.

Vascular system.

a Sm mame

VASCULAR SYSTEM, |

The Crocodilia have no epiglottis, but the larynx is attaclied by tendinous fibres to the front part of the shield-like basihyal. The larynx consists of a ring-shaped principal cartilage and arytenoid cartilages. There are folds which serve for vocal cords. The trachea is long, with two short bronchi. The former is gcnerally straight, but may be contorted. The more anterior tracheal eartilages are incomplete dorsally ; those of the hinder part and of the bronchi are gencrally complete. Each lung consists of pouches or cells, the cavities of which open into each other, and com- municate with the cavity of the bronchus by the lateral openings just mentioned. The lungs are enclosed in pouches of peritoneum, and lie, freely suspended, in the body cavity.

The Vascular System.

The vascular system of Reptiles consists of a sanguine- ous and a lymphatic system, and the former is further subdivided into an arterial and a venous system, as in the higher Vertebrates, though the latter two are less completely differentiated. In all there is a heart, which consists of at least three distinct cavities, namely, two auricles (which are almost always distinct) and a ventricle, which latter may or may not be completely subdivided into two dis- tinct chambers, a right and a left ventricle. Reptiles differ from the higher Vertebrates in the heart always

giving rise to at least two great vessels, which ultimately join to form a single vessel, and from these all the arteries are given off. Most of the blood of the hind limbs and tail passes either through a portal system in the liver, or else in the kidney, on its road to the heart. That which goes to the liver goes to it for the most part through the anterior abdominal veins or vein. The venous blood is conveyed to the right ventricle through a rhythmically contractile sinus venosus. The lymphatic system is well developed, with large reservoirs, and communicates freely with the venous system by a pair of rhythmically contractile so- called 'lymphatic hearts."

| Heartand The Heart and Arterial System.—In all the existing Reptiles

arteries,

except the Crocodilia—that is to say, in the Rhynchocephalia, Lacertilia, Ophidia, and Chelonia—the two auricles are divided by a complete septum (except in some Chelonians), but the ventricle is only imperfectly divided into aright and left chamber. Of these the latter is the narrower, the more dorsal in position, and mostly has thicker walls, and communicates directly with the lcft auricle. The right chamber of the ventricle is broader, more ventral, and posterior, and mostly with thinner walls, and communicates directly with the right auricle. No arteries proceed from the left chamber, but three proceed from the right chamber, one of which, the pulmonary artery, goes to the lungs, and the other two con- stitute the trunk roots of the whole systenric set of arteries or the two aorte. Between the mouths of their trunk root and that of the pulmonary artery a muscular ridge or valve extends, which imperfectly divides the right chambcr of the ventricle into two cavities, which, during the latter part of the ventricle's contrac- tion, become completely divided by it so as to shut off the con- tained blood from any further access to the pulmonary artery. These great arterial vessels thus leaving the heart are at first closely connected together and are invested with the pericardium, and sometimes, in Chelonians, their investment has been observed to contain striated muscular fibres, thus reminding us of the '"bulbus arteriosus" of Amphibians. Afterwards the grcat arteries proceed in diverging and opposite dircctions, one aorta arching over to the right and the other to

the left, and then meeting and uniting on the dorsal side of the heart to form by their junction the single great dorsal aorta.

Amongst the Laecertilia, the Monitors are remarkable for the almost complete septum between their ventricular chambers. In many Lizards the great arteries going to the head may be so con- nected with the two primitive arterial roots as to form two arches ealled aortic arches on either side, but in the Monitors, Chameleons, and Amphisbena these complications are wanting, there being but a single aortic arch on cither side. Generally the right trunk root, or right fundamental aortic arch, after supplying small arteries to the heart itself, gives off a common carotid artery, which divides into a right and a left carotid, and these subdivide to supply the head and neck. It also gives off the subclavian arteries for the fore Hmbs and arteries to the trunk. 'The left trunk root, or left fundamental aortic arch, gives off arteries to the viscera, and then anastomoses with the right trunk root, the two anastomosing to form the single dorsal aorta, which passes backwards bencath the bodies of the vertebre, and gives off branches to the stomach and the viscera, and to the kidneys, sexual glands, hind limbs, and tail.

riPrPPTrrees

.the great arterial trunks.

459

In the Ophidia the heart is elongated and very distant from the head, and there are of course no limb arteries given off from the aorte.

The heart is also distant from the head in the Chelonia, but it is broad in shape and lies above the coracoids. Striated muscular fibres invest the aortic roots in mys.

In the Crocodilia the ventricle is subdivided by a complete septum into two thoroughly distinct chambers, and a trunk root or fundamental aorta proceeds forth from cach,—the left aorta and the pulmonary artery procecding from the right chamber, and the right aorta from the left ventricle. Nevertheless, though there is here no communication between

the chambers whence these two aorte arise, there is a communication between these two aorte themsclves, and that not only when they anastomose after arching different ways, as in all other Reptiles, but also by a direct com- munication between them. When they cross one another, as the aorta from the right chamber arches to the left and that from the left chamber arches to the right, a small aperture places their cavities in communication just outside the heart and close to their respective origins.

Lhe Venous System.—The systemic veins arising in all parts of Veins.

the body collect together and anastomose till their three finally formed trunks open into a more or less capacious contractile cavity, the sinus venosus, which communicates with the right auricle. The anterior two of these three final trunks are called vene anonyme, and the single posterior one is called the vena cava. The former are formed by the gradual junction of the veins of the head, neck, fore limbs, and vertebral region (jugular veins, sub- clavian azygous veins, &c.), and the vena cava is formed by the junction of the iliac veins or those of the hind limbs, together with the veins of the rest of the body.

The veins of the alimentary canal, splecn, and pancreas, and the abdominal veins (running between the peritoneum and the abdominal muscles) or vein—there being one in the Ophidia— commonly collect and unite to enter the liver to form a portal system.

In the Ophidia the veins of the alimentary canal, generative organs, fatty appendages, pancreas, and spleen thus unite, while the caudal vein with some veins of the generative organs and intestine go to form a subordinate secondary circulation in the kidney or reni-portal system. In the Lacertilia the veins of the hind limbs collect in part to form a reni-portal system, and also communicate with the abdominal veins, which join the ordinary visceral veins to form the true portal system. In the Chelonia the veins of the tail and hind limbs join the abdominal] veins above the plastron, and there with others from the bladder and viscera go to form the portal system, while small branches from the abdominal veins join others from the generative organs and vertebral veins to form a reni-portal system. In the Crocodilia the caudal vein divides on entering the trunk and joins the posterior limb and body veins, and goes on to form,

with the visceral veins, a portal system, giving off in this way veins to the kidneys to forin the reni-portal system.

In all Reptiles the veins of the lungs collect together and empty themselves into the left auricle as thcy do in all other air-breathing Vertebrates.

The Lymphatic System and Vascular Glands.—In Reptilia Lym- gencrally there is a pair of lymphatic hearts placed over the phatic transverse processes of the vertebra at the junction of the tail with system.

the trunk. Each usually opens with a small vein which communi- cates with the iliac vein. Besides these bodies, more or less considerable lymphatic canals follow the course of the great arterial trunks in the body and tail, and, when there are limbs, comimuni- cate with the iliac veins. Other canals accompany the aortic arches and approach and open into the vene anonyme, and others extend backwards towards these from the head and. anterior limbs.

A pair of bodics which answer to the thymus gland of Mammals lie close to the jugular veins and lymphatics at the anterior part of the thoracic cavity. They are elongated in Ophidians and roundish in other Reptiles, and they are much larger in young than in old individuals.

A thyroid exists in front of the pericardium on the ventral side of It is bilobed in the Crocodiles.

The supra-renal capsules are yellowish bodies which lie more in connexion with the generative glands than the kidneys. They are very elongated in the Ophidia, flattened in the Chelonia, and roundish in the Crocodilia.

The Nervous System and Organs of Sense.

Reptiles, in common with other Vertebrates, have a Nervous nervous system divisible into an axial portion or neural system.

axis made up of brain and spinal marrow, and a peri- pheral portion made.up of the multitude of nerves which proceed from or are connected with this, and one portion of which is more or less distinctly separable and known as

Axial portion.

460

the sympathetic system. Reptiles also generally possess three distinct organs of sense—(1) ears, (2) eyes, and (3) nasal organs—though one or more of them may be excep- tionally rudimentary and defective.

The Neural Axis,—The spinal marrow extends through nearly the whole length of the neural canal of the skeleton in the form of a long nervous cylinder with a small central cavity, with a deep furrow along the middle of its dorsal and a shallow one on the middle of its ventral aspect. It becomes more or less augmented in volume about the region of the shoulders and loins, where the nerves of the limbs are given off from it. Even where most enlarged, however, the tracts on either side of the dorsal furrow do not diverge and leave a space or sinus as they do in the lumbar enlargement of Birds. Where the spinal marrow comes to join the brain it enlarges considerably. At the medulla oblongata it is bent down at a marked angle with the more posterior part of the neural axis. The two halves of its dorsal portion also diverge so as to expose the dorsal surface of the more ventral portion in a space which is known as the fourth ventricle or ventricle of the medulla. This medulla advances forward, expanding and becoming locally differentiated to form the brain, its ventricle being continued on into a more anterior and more completely enclosed cavity known as the third ven- tricle. The nervous roof of the hinder part of this latter ventricle is produced into two smooth prominences placed side by side and called the optic globes or corpora bigemina (which may themselves contain a cavity), immediately behind which is an azygous nervous structure, the cerebel- lum, which more or less roofs over the hindmost or fourth ventricle. In front of the optic lobes are the larger rounded smooth neural masses—the cerebral hemispheres, each of which contains a cavity—the lateral or first and second ventricles, which both communicate with the anterior end of the third ventricle

through an aperture termed the foramen of Munro. Between the hinder ends of these hemispheres an azygous structure projects upwards—the pineal gland—while from beneath the floor of the third ventricle another azygous structure projects downwards— the pituitary body. In front of the hemispheres are the other rounded and smaller neural masses, the olfactory lobes, which are generally elongated and contain cavities that are continuations forwards of the lateral ventricles. Three transverse bands of nervous tissue connect the struc- tures which bound the third ventricle laterally; the first ,, of these, placed just behind the lamina terminalis or the front boun- 2 opl

dary of that ven-__E- is SS

*tricle, is called -——“”** aN ‘ee =e.*

the anterior com- ni \ 3 4 es missure, and the es << om

nervous masses it py

joins are the cor- Fie. 28.—Brain of, Lacerta agilis (atter Leydig). 1,

o Dorsal aspect; 2, vertical longitudinal section. cb,

pora striata. An- cerebellum; ch, cerebral hemisphere; m, medulla

other more pos- oblongata; olf, serge gered : on, vie a op

; ° optic lobes; p, pineal gland; py, base of pituitary y. teriorly situated

band is called the soft commissure ; and the third, a little farther back still, is the posterior commissure. The masses joined by those last two commissures are called the optic thalami. The brain is invested with membranes in the same general way as it is in Mammals.

In the Lacertilia the cerebellum is a thin very small body projecting rather upwards, and may be transversely segmented, as in Platydaetylus. In the Chameleons the optic lobes and

hemispheres are of nearly equal size, and the olfactory lobes are neither separated off nor hollow. In the Ophidia the cerebellum

RIJEiPCE LUES

[ANATOMY.

nearly covers the fourth ventricle, the hemispheres are of consider- able size, and the olfactory lobes may be immediately annexed to them. In the Chelonia the cerebellum is rather large, but it is only in the Crocodilia that it is marked by transverse grooves, as is the central part of the cerebellum or dermis in Mammals; the hemispheres also are of considerable volume.

In some extinct Reptilia, e.g., in the Dinosaurian Stegosawrus, the brain was exceedingly small, probably weighing but the hundredth part of that of the Alligator compared with the weight of the bodies of the-two animals. Moreover, the cerebral hemi- spheres but little exceeded the optic lobes in size, while the transverse diameter of these lobes only slightly exceeded that of the medulla. The cerebellum also was very small. In the Ornithosauria, how- ever, the optic lobes were unlike in their situation those of any existing Reptiles, they being depressed and placed laterally instead 4 a the dorsum of the brain, thus resembling the optic lobes of

irds.

The Peripheral System.—As in the higher Maminals, so Peri- also in Reptiles, the neural axis gives off a series of special pheral nerves, which in a general way correspond in number with PTO”

the vertebrae they pass out between. Lach also arises by a superior and inferior root, whereof the former is furnished with a ganglion. After the junction of these two roots the whole nerve thus formed divides into ascending and descending branches—the latter, in the trunk, running between the internal oblique and transverse muscles.

The cranial nerve which comes forth from the brain nearest the spinal marrow is the hypoglossal. It passes out through a condy- loid foramen in the occipital bone, and goes to the tongue, hyoid, and larynx.

In the Chelonia the spinal accessory may take origin as far back as the root of the fourth cervical nerve. The pneumogastrie and glosso-pharyngeal pass out from the skull separately as in Saurians, and not through one foramen as in Ophidians and Crocodilians.

Those spinal nerves which continue to supply the limbs form certain more or less complex unions with each other termed plexuses, and from each plexus the nerves of the fore or hind limbs, as the case may be, proceed. The plexus which supplies the nerves of the fore limb is called the brachial plexus. It is formed by the blending of about the sixth, seventh, eighth, and ninth spinal nerves in the Turtle and Crocodile, and the nerves it gives forth are the axillary, ulnar, radial, musculo-spiral, and median as in Mammals. Certain of the more posterior nerves unite to form a crural plexus and others just behind the former blend to form a sacral plexus, and from these the nerves of the leg and pelvic region proceed. Amongst these nerves are the crural, obturator, and especially the great sciatie nerve, which passes to the back of the thigh and divides into the tibial nerves.

As to the particular spinal nerves which go to form these plexuses respectively, and as to the mode of their interlacement and mode of giving origin to the limb nerves, thereis not only diversity between different genera of the same order and species of the same genus, but also between different individuals of the same genus, and even between the two sides of the same individual Reptile.

The Sympathetie Nervous System—nerves which copiously Sym- supply the viscera—is least marked in the Ophidia, in which pathetic this system is not distinct, in the greater part of the body, system.

from the spinal nerves. Essentially the system consists of two antero-posteriorly extending nervous cords, which run on either side of the axial skeleton in its ventral aspect. Each of these two cords is joined by fibres

from the spinal and cranial nerves adjacent to it except the nerves of the nose, eye, and car. At the points of

q

junction between the spinal nerves and the sympathetic cords there are ganglia, and from these sympathetic nerves proceed to the viscera, the heart, and the various blood-vessels.

Lhe Har.—The auditory organ may consist of three parts—the external, median, and internal ear. The ex- ternal ear, however, hardly exists in Reptiles, for there is

no external fold of skin representing the external ear of

Mammals in any save in the Crocodiles, and in them it is little more than a rudiment.

The true internal ear always exists, and is composed of

two parts—(1) a membranous labyrinth, containing fluid,

enclosed in (2) a bony labyrinth, which has also fluid con- tents. The former consists of three membranous semi- circular canals which open into a membranous sac, the

vestibule, which is connected with a tubular structure, the membranous cochlea. It is to these parts that the ultimate fibres of the auditory nerve are distributed. The bony labyrinth is formed of the otic bones (prootic, epiotic,

and opisthotic), which enclose it completely save at the

points where openings are left called the fenestra ovalis

and the fenestra rotunda. The latter is entirely sur- rounded by the opisthotic. The fenestra ovalis is partly

enclosed by the prootic and partly by the opisthotic. The prootic specially protects and shelters the anterior vertical

semicircular canal of the membranous labyrinth, and cor-

respondingly constitutes that of the bony labyrinth. The posterior vertical semicircular canal is similarly related to the epiotic, and the external horizontal semicircular canal is sheltered by the prootic and opisthotic. The membranous cochlea helps to almost divide the bony chamber in which it lies into two parts called scale, which communicate at the apex of the cavity.

Such being the innermost ear of Reptiles and an outer- most ear existing only in rudiment in Crocodiles, there is also a median ear which may or may not exist in this class of animals. This median ear is the tympanic cavity or chamber. It is into this cavity when present that the fenestra ovalis looks, while the fenestra rotunda looks into the cochlea. Both fenestra are closed with membrane, so that the fluid in which the membranous labyrinth. is suspended cannot escape through them. 'The fenestra ovalis has fitted to the outer side of its closing membrane a small ossicle of similar shape to itself, which generally has projecting from its outer side a more or less elongated and slender ossicle, the stapes or columella auris. This rod may be wanting, however, as in Z'yphlops, Ihinophis, and Yortrim. When a middle or tympanic cavity exists, the stapes traverses it from the ossicle, closing the fenestra ovalis to become attached to a membrane, the tympanic membrane, which forms part of the external wall of the tympanum. Where there is no tympanic cavity, the stapes simply extends outwards amongst the muscles which lie external to the internal ear. In the Ophidia and Amphis- beenians and some other Snake-like Lacertilians there is no tympanic cavity, and there is none in Hatteria. Its pres- ence is sometimes inconstant in those Lizards; thus in the Slow Worm, Anguis fragilis, it may exist in some in- dividuals and not in others. When it exists, it may not show any external indication of its presence as in the Chameleons and some Chelonians. Generally, however, the tympanic membrane is covered by a scale of correspond- ing size, so that its presence is plainly marked externally.

The tympanic cavity communicates with the back of the mouth by a wide opening in Lacertilians; but in Chelonians this communication is contracted into a arrow passage, the Eustachian tube, which opens (one from each tympanum) by a separate aperture on the roof of the mouth. In the Crocodilia these passages become further complicated and connected so that, in addition to the aperture on either side of the mouth, there is also a

median aperture which is connected with both the Eustachian tubes, that of the right ear and that of the left,

The Kye.—All Reptiles have eyes, although in some Eye.

forms they are quite rudimentary and hidden beneath the skin, which is not at all or but very slightly modified in structure where it passes over them, as, eg., in Z'yphlops and Zyphline.

The eye consists of the same parts as in other Verte- brates, namely, of a nervous expansion at the back (the retina) derived from the optic nerve, a coloured lining (the choroid), a transparent medium (the vitreous humour) separated from one more anterior (the aqueous humour) by a sort of diaphragm (the iris), and a solid, transparent body (the crystalline lens), whilst the whole structure is enclosed by a fibrous membrane, the sclerotic, to form the "ball of the eye," a superficial part of the sclerotic being transparent and distinguished as the cornea.

The ball may have the skin which invests it externally separated in front of it into two folds, the eyelids. When the skin is not so separated, then a closed sac of delicate transparent membrane, the conjunctiva, lies over the cornea between it and the skin, and when the skin is divided into folds or eyelids then the conjunctiva is divided also, one layer lying as before next to the cornea, and the

other layer being reflected from the outer margin of the

cornea into the inside of the eyelids which it lines. There is often a third eyelid, which can be drawn obliquely over the eye, and is called the nictitating membrane. A glandular structure, the lacrymal gland, lies on the outer side of the front of the eyeball, its secretion passing into the mouth by the lacrymal canal; another gland, the Harderian gland, may lie on the inner side of the eyeball. The sclerotic may be strengthened by bony plates being formed within it. A vascular coloured membrane, thie pecten, may project into the vitreous humour from near the entrance of the optic nerve. The ball of the eye is moved by four straight and two oblique muscles, and may also be suspended by a funnel-shaped muscular sheath, the choanoid muscle. There are also special muscles of the eyelids.

In the Ophidia the eye is generally rather large, but very small in the Typhlopide and Uropeltide. Iu no Ophidians is the skin over the eyes divided into eyelids, so that the sac of the con- junctiva beneath it is never subdivided. In the Eurystomatous Ophidians, however, the skin, when it passes over the eyeball, is transparent. The outer (or epidermal) layer of the skin is cast with the rest of the skin of the body. The lacrymal canal is wide, but opens into the mouth by a narrow aperture on the inner side of the palatine bone. In some Trigonocephali the lacrymal gland extends almost all round the eyeball. 'he sclerotic never develops bony plates in any Serpcut.

Amongst the Lacertilia, many, such as the Amphisbenians, the Geckos, and many Skinks, have the eyelids undivided, as they arc in Ophidians. Most Lizards, however, have an upper and an under eyelid, and also a nictitating membrane, and there may be a cartilaginous or bony disk in the lower eyclid. Many Skinks have the lower eyelid more or less transparent. The eye of the Chameleon is most peculiar. The larger eyclids have but a minute aperture, and the two eyeballs can be rotated independently, so that their axes may be differently directed simultaneously. There is a rudiment of a third eyelid, and there is a bony plate in the lower part of the large eyelid. The Harderian gland is large, but the lacrymal is small. The lacrymal canal opens below in the outer wall of the posterior nares. In most Lacertilians there are overlapping bony plates in the sclerotic, but these are wanting in Chameleons and

Geckos. There is mostly a pecten. In some species the lacrymal gland appears to be wanting. The nictitat- ing or third eyclid is drawn over the eye by the simultaneous action of two curiously arranged structures. One of these is a muscle which takes origin from the postero-inner orbital wall and ends by forming a fibrous loop. The other is a tendon which passes throngh the loop to be attached at one end to the nictitating membrane, and at the other to the inner wall of the orbit.

In Hatteria there are cyelids—the lower with a cartilaginous disk—and a nictitating membrane. The sclerotic contains osseous lamella, and there is no pecten.

The Crocodilia have three eyelids, and no bony plate in any part

Nasal organ.

Urinary system.

462

of the eyc. A muscle arises from the surface of the sclerotic on its inner side and ends in a tendon which passes backwards and down- wards over the optie nerve to attach itself to the margin of the nictitating membrane. There is a rudimentary pecten.

In the Chelonia the sclerotic is furnished with bony plates. The Harderian gland is small, but the lacrymal is considerable. There are three eyelids, and the nictitating one has the muscle which moves it combined with the elevator muscle of the eyelids. Both arise from the inner side of the sclerotic. One arches over the optic nerve and goes to the third eyelid, and the other goes from the outer angle of the eye to the lower eyelid. The fibres of these two muscles are elosely interrelated at their origin.

The Olfactory Organ.—There are two olfactory organs in every Reptile, consisting of tracts or foldings of mucous membrane richly supplied with nerves and supported and protected by cartilaginous or bony structures. In existing Reptiles they always lie at, and extend near to, the anterior end of the muzzle, though in the Ichthyosauri and Plesiosaurt they opened

anteriorly far back and near the orbits. The olfactory membranes are always enclosed or supported by carti- lages which proceed out from an azygous septum which divides them one from the other. Each nasal organ has an anterior and posterior opening, though the anterior openings may so meet as to form but one superficial aperture, as in the Crocodilia, and the two posterior apertures may open, not directly into the mouth, but into an azygous forwardly-extending diverticulum from it, the posterior opening of which diverticulum forms practi- cally a common posterior termination for both the organs of smell. The nasal passages are short in all existing Reptiles save the Crocodilia, and open posteriorly far forwards —as has been already noticed in describing the skull, when the prolongation backwards of the posterior nares in the Crocodiles was also described. In the Chelonia the anterior external apertures of the nostrils are distinct though near together. Sometimes, as in Chelys and Trionyz, they are tubular, and open externally at the end of a short proboscis.

A structure called the nasal gland exists and is well- developed in the Ophidia. It is a peculiar rather soft body, often shaped like a mushroom with a very short stalk. It lies immediately beneath the floor of the nasal capsule, and the membranous wall of the cavity on which it lies is covered and protected by a bone, commonly called the "turbinal," which extends out from the median nasal septum to the maxilla. These cavities open on the palate by narrow apertures placed in front of the posterior nares.

In the Chelonians we find a soft, egg-shaped, whitish, azygous body (without any internal cavity), also placed in front of the posterior nares in the skin of the palate, behind the palatine part of the premaxille. It is supplied with palatine nerves.

The Urogenital System.

In Reptiles the urinary and generative systems are distinct, save as regards the approximation of their pos- terior terminations, thus agreeing with higher Vertebrates and differing from Amphibians, in which the renal and secreting organs generally continue throughout life more or less connected.

The Urinary System.—The urinary system of the Rep- tilia always consists of a pair of renal glands or kidneys, with excretory ducts which pass down to the cloaca. There may or may not be a urinary bladder, also opening into the cloaca. Besides these parts there are also a pair of Wolffian bodies, which are more or less aborted remnants of large organs which are always developed during embryonic life.

The Kidneys—The kidneys are more or less symnuetrically placed on the dorsal side of the peritoneum, in the hinder half of the trunk. Each consists of a mass of cecal tubules into the distal end of which a tuft of minute vessels projects, thus forming what is called a glomerulus or Malpighian body.

ie Pr Pins

[ANATOMY.

In the Ophidia the kidneys are least symmetrical, the right one extending the farthest forwards. They are elongated and lobed, and sometimes in such a way as to appear spirally twisted. Each ter- minates behind considerably in front of the cloaca. The duct of each ureter begins at the anterior end of the kidney and thence proceeds along its inner border, and accessory ducts open into it from the interspaces of the lobes of the kidneys. The two ureters open into the sides of the cloaca, In the males each opens upon a papilla in close proximity to the opening of the male sexual duct or vas deferens. In the females the ureter opens beside the mouth of the female sexual duct or oviduct. There is never any urinary bladder.

In Lacertilians the kidneys are more posteriorly placed than in Serpents. They lie at the hindmost part of the body cavity above the cloaca, and they generally much approximate together. They are also more symmctrically placed; only in the Amphisbenians the right kidney extends the more forward, thus resembling Ophidians. There is always a urinary bladder, which is a ventral diverticulum of the cloaca. The kidneys are usually transversely furrowed. The ureters run along the inner side of the kidneys, and open into the sides of the cloaca, not into the bladder.

In Chelonians the kidneys lie near the cloaca in the cavity of the pelvis. They are rather short and thick, and more or less trihedral. Their surface is marked with many shallow meandering grooves and fewer deeper furrows. The urcters proceed as usnal along the inner sides of the kidneys, and several large canals successively open from them into the urcters, which extend backwards, but to a trifling extent, beyond the kidneys. They open rather anteriorly into the eloaca close to the neck of the urinary bladder, which vessel is always present and voluminous, and is often two-horned.

The Crocodilia also have posteriorly situated pelvic kidneys, but they have no urinary bladder. The kidney is concave dorsally and flatter ventrally. Its surface has meandering convolutions separated by furrows. The ureters for the greater part of their length run deeply sunk in the substance of the kidneys. The ureters leave the hinder ends of the kidneys and run freely for a short distance to the cloaea, which they enter close behind the rectum.

The Wolffian Bodies.—These bodies lie one on each side on the dorsum of the body cavity, and each consists of a series of cecal tubes with vascular balls or glomeruli like those of the kidney, the various tubes always opening at first into a common excretory duct which leads towards the cloaca. In adults they are but small organs. Ina Python 10 feet long they measure but aboutan inch. In Serpents generally they are slender and lobed bodies which lie close to the veins in front of the kidneys.

The Generative Organs.—Reptiles, like all the higher Vertebrates, have the sexes divided, with two sets of organs which respectively characterize male and female indivi- duals. In both sexes, as in Birds, there is a pair of sexual glands, each furnished with a passage for the exit of its product, together with, almost always, external organs destined to effect and facilitate impregnation. Unlike Mammals, however, all Reptiles have the sexual glands placed within the abdominal cavity, and, also unlike Mam- mals, the male external organ or agent for copulation may be either azygous or bifold according to the group to which any Reptile may belong. Unlike the more inferior Verte- brates, however, Reptiles, with the

solitary exception of Hatteria, always possess such a copulating organ, and im- pregnation is invariably effected internally.

The male organs consist of a pair of glands, the testes, with their ducts, the vasa deferentia, and the external organs, penis or penes. The female organs consist of a pair of glands, the ovaries, with their ducts, the oviducts, to- gether with rudimentary representatives of the extérnal sexual organs of the males.

The Testes and Vasa Deferentia.—These are two compact and rather small glands, consisting of a mass of excal convoluted tubes, lying in the dorsal region of the abdominal cavity and completely invested by peritoneum, and with a dense albugineal coat of their own. From the mass of tubules a certain variable number of efferent tubes, vasa efferentia, come forth and soon unite in the single excretory duct of the gland, the vas deferens.

In the Ophidia the testes are not symmetrically placed, the right one being somewhat more voluminous and also in front of the other. Consequently the right vas deferens is larger than the left one. Each testis lies in front of the kidney of its own side, aud is more or less elongated in form. The vas deferens proceeds

along the inner margin of the testicle, and is a convoluted tube which narrows as it proceeds backwards. The opening into the

vy

REPT

cloaca is somewhat oblique, and is situated in a somewhat funnel- shaped depression beside the opening of the ureter.

In the Lacertilia the testes are spheroidal and almost symmetri- cally placed. The vasa efferentia come forth from their inner side and pass into a canal lying in a fold of peritoneum. This canal, the vas deferens, begins cxcally much in front of the union of the vasa efferentia with it, and this anterior portion runs along the ventral side of the kidney in a fold of

peritoneum and has the appearance of a knot of tubuli or of a body transversely convoluted. The vas deferens passes backwards in numerous close-set convolu- tions, and often dilates towards its hinder end. It ultimately narrows, and opens on the cloaca, beside the ureter, on a small papilla.

The Chelonia have testes which lie somewhat external to the kidneys as well as behind them. The vas deferens terminates upon a small papilla in the cloaca, but its proximal end—anterior to the junction with it of the vasa efferentia—is wide, aud consists of a very complicated mass of tubes, and it may have (as in Chelodina) five or six short cecal diverticula.

The testes of the Crocodilia are of an elongated oval form, and lie partly in front of and partly on the inner side of the kidneys. The testis may be divided into two portions connected together dorsally. The vasa efferentia pass from the outer border of the testis to a vas deferens, which has rather thick walls with a marked dilatation towards its hinder end. It lies above the peritoneum, and opens at its distal end into a groove at the base of the penis.

The Ovaries and Oviducts.—The ovaries are, as in the class Mammals, the glands which correspond with the testes, but which, unlike the latter, are not composed of a mass of tubules, while each does not discharge its product into a tube directly continuous with it (as does the testis into the vas deferens) but into a tube, the oviduct, the distal end of which is open and discontinuous with the ovary save for a broad fold of peritoneum which connects them. The ovaries always lie in the dorsal part of the abdominal cavity enclosed in peritoneum.

In the Ophidia the ovaries are, like the testes, elongated and placed one in advance of the other. The right ovary is more voluminous, and the right oviduct is, of course, the longer one. The ova are so arranged within them as to form a longitudinal series. The proximal end of each oviduct shows a transversely expanded wide opening. The oviduct passes backwards in con- volutions which are often spirally arranged, and itis very extensible, being lined with numerous close-set effaceable folds. The oviducts open into the cloaca by a crescentic fissure behind the opening of the rectum.

In the Lacertilia, cme the Amphisbenians and probably some other Serpentiform Lizards, the ovaries have not their contained ova serially arranged. They may or may not be symmetrically disposed. The oviducts are usually broad and spirally disposed. Unstriated muscular fibres often exist in the folds of membrane which support their convolutions.

The Chelonia have ovaries symmetrically placed, often of a broad and flattened shape. The oviduct varies much in capacity in different parts of its course. The ovaries of the Crocodilia are com- pact in structure and somewhat more advanced in position than in most Reptiles, The oviduct is more uniform in diameter than in the Chelonia.

The External Generative Organs.—As has been already mentioned, all Reptiles have such external organs with the exception of Hatieria. In the rest of the class we always find such organs connected with the cloaca, and capable of being everted for use or retracted and hidden within or behind that chamber. The whole class is thus divisible into two groups according to the bifold or azygous condition of these parts. é

In the Lacertilia and Ophidia | they are bifold, and consist in {| the males of two hollow, inver- \S tible, imperforate, cutaneous cones placed one on each side of the cloaca, containing erectile tissue and capable of being pro- truded or retracted by appro- priate muscles. The lining of each cone is continuous both with the external skin of the adjacent parts and also with the mucous lining of the cloaca. A tortuous groove which begins within the cloaca, at the aperture of the vas deferens, is continued on to the apex of the cone. When erected for use the lining membrane of the cones, with its grooves, becomes the external coat of each copulatory organ. In the females there are rudimentary

UROGENITAL SYSTEM. |

Fig. 29.—Male copulatory organs of Lacer- taagtlis (after Leydig). 1, po, organs of right and left sides—between them is the anal aperture; pp, preanal plate.

-corresponding rudimentary structure exists in the females.

but quite similar organs, just as in Mammals the clitoris of the female is present as the rudimentary representative of the penis of the male. In the Ophidia these hollow penes may or may not bifurcate distally, and if they bifurcate then the groove bifurcates also. "The lining membrane of the cone may be smooth, as in Python, or spiny, asin Trigonocephalus and Crotalus, or may have transverse rows of soft lamelle, asin Boa marina. The Lacertilia, like the Ophidia, may have each pénis single to its apex or bifur- cating distally with various other minor modifications as to relative size, the form of the apex, and the appendages borne upon it. The cones are exceptionally short in the Chameleons.

The male Chelonia and Crocodilia have an azygous penis, and a This organ lies at the ventral wall of the cloaca; it is not hollow or evertible, but purely distensible and so erectile. It is therefore its external coat which is continuous with the lining of the cloaca. Muscles proceeding from beneath the hinder trunk vertebre are inserted into it. The penis is imperforate, but two ridges are continued on to it from the wall of the cloaca, and so form a groove, and during erection a temporary canal, which passes along it from root to apex. At its distal end there is a prominence which, though imperforate, may remind us of the "glans" of the Mam- malian penis. The whole body of the organ, including this distal prominence, contains erectile tissue. In the Chclonia the penis may divide distally, and if so the groove it bears divides also. In Chelodina it has an undivided distal end and two lateral pro- cesses. In 7rionyx it subdivides distally into four terminal parts. The penis of the Crocodile has a deep groove which reaches to the extreme end of the penis, a quasi-glans projecting freely beneath it.

A few Reptiles have secondary sexual characters—notably the Chameleons, the males of which alone have the horns and other cephalic appendages which characterize certain species. In most Reptiles, however, the two sexes have hardly any distinctive external characters.

Embryology.

Most of the Reptilia are oviparous, but certain of the Lacertilians and many Ophidians, notably Vipers and Sea-Snakes, hatch their eggs before they are laid ; that is, they are ovoviviparous. The oviduct supplies the ovum during its exit with an albuminous investment, the white of the egg, and with a shell, or testa, which may be thin and flexible, as in the Lacertilia and Ophidia, or hard and calcareous, as in the Crocodilia and Chelonia, the eggs of which animals much resemble those of Birds.

_The embryo Reptile closely resembles in its general features the embryo Bird, and, as the process of develop- ment of the chick (which can be so conveniently studied) is now comparatively thoroughly well known (see REPRo- DUCTION), we cannot here make more than a cursory mention of the leading structural changes. Inasmuch as embryonic Reptiles thus resemble embryonic Birds, it of course follows that they present all those features which embryonic Birds share with Vertebrate animals generally, such as the segmentation of the yolk, the resulting forma- tion on its surface of the blastoderm, and its division into the three germinal layers. As in Birds, the yolk segmen- tation is meroblastic.

The blastoderm spreads rapidly over the yolk, but before it has half enclosed it a pyriform patch, the embryonic shield, or area pellucida, appears at its centre. The head of the embyro is formed at the broader end of the pyriform patch. Towards its hinder end a streak of the epiblast is formed, the primitive groove,! and then in front of it another longitudinal indentation, the " medullary groove," the walls of which are the "medullary plates"; and it is: this groove and plates with the parts immediately sub- jacent which lay the foundation of the developing body. The lining of the medullary groove becomes the cerebro- spinal axis, while a longitudinal cellular rod which is formed beneath it, and which is called the notochord, lays the foundation of the future axial skeleton as far forward as the hinder margin of the cranial support of the pituitary body of the brain. The anterior end of the medullary

a ee a ee ee 1 Supposed to be an indication of a form of invagination of the germinal layers characteristic of lower forms.

groove shows serial enlargements corresponding with the successive portions of the adult brain, while the medullary plates close over the medullary groove and convert it into a canal which ultimately persists as the central canal of the spinal cord and the ventricles into which that canal opens anteriorly. The eyes arise as outgrowths from the brain aided and modified by ingrowths from the surface of the embryo. The ears and nasal organs arise mainly from superficial ingrowths. From the tissue on either side of the notochord and medullary groove are gradually formed the axial skeleton of the trunk and the muscles and other structures adjacent to it. The sides of the medullary plates bend down on either side and form the ventral laminze which split longitudinally, or they descend —the inner layer joining with its fellow of the opposite side to form the alimentary tube. The two outer layers form the lateral walls of the trunk, the space between the two inner and the two outer layers constituting the first condition of what is subsequently the first peritoneal cavity.

The limbs first appear as outgrowths from the external layers of the ventral laminz, but no rudiment of the limbs seems ever to be developed in the apodal Ophidians. On each side of that region which subsequently becomes the head and neck a series of perforations successively appear, and for the most part disappear, known as the visceral clefts, while their intervals are known as the visceral arches. The only visceral cleft which ever per- sists in the Heptilia is that which becomes the passage from the inner end of the Eustachian tube to the outer surface of the tympanic cavity. The foundations of the skull are laid in a cartilaginous investment of the anterior end of the notochord and of the incipient membranous labyrinth, whence two columnar prolongations, the tra- becul, pass forwards on either side of the support of the pituitary body. We have seen the persistent nature of these trabeculze in the cranium of Ophidians. The central part of the facial region of the skull is formed by a car- tilaginous ethmoidal process at the anterior end of the trabecules. Hence and from the side of the auditory cartilage cartilaginous processes go forth which lay the foundation of the jaws, palatine structures, and hyoid apparatus. The circulating system in its earliest condition is very different from that which ultimately exists. At first the heart is not a tubular structure, but it gradually folds and subdivides itself. The arteries proceeding from it (and the veins converging to it) at first follow the general course of the arteries

(and veins) of Fishes and aquatic breathing Amphibians. The arteries ascend within the visceral arches to meet in a dorsal aorta, as they must needs do in the animals just mentioned, seeing that in them it is the visceral arches which become the gill-bearing structures wherein alone the blood is aerated.

The urinary organs are at first represented by Wolffian bodies only, which are formed from beneath the dorsal region of the body cavity, but subsequently, as has been mentioned, they become replaced by the two kidneys. The sexual glands themselves arise in connexion with the Wolffian bodies.

At a very early stage of development the embryo as it were sinks into the surface of the ovum, while a membrane arises on all sides of it meeting dorsally over it, consti- tuting the embryonic envelope known as the amnion. From the hind part of the abdominal region of the embryo there also grows forth a vesicle which, becoming greatly enlarged and richly supplied with blood-vessels, spreads itself out on all sides just within the egg shell, and serves as the organ of respiration for the embryo. This directly respiratory structure is the allantois. The ventral surface of the embryo remains long open and connected with the ever-diminishing remains of the food yolk. As this

KEP? LT ors

| ANATOMY.

ventral surface closes in, the remains of the yolk or vitellus become connected with the alimentary canal, but by a very narrow tube called the vitelline duct. Before the process of development is complete, however, the last remains of the yolk become absorbed and taken up, and the abdominal wall is finally closed.

Space does not here allow of more than this brief indication of some of the leading facts of bodily development. We cannot attempt to describe the complex processes of ossification by which the first foundations of the skeleton, and especially of the skull, become differentiated into its manifold component bones. For an account of this process, and of all the

other details of embryonic development, the reader is referred to the valuable treatises to be found enuinerated in the following list of herpetological works.

GENERAL WoRKS ON THE ANATOMY OF REPTILES.—Cuvier, Lecons d' Anat. Comp., 2d ed., Paris, 1835; Meekel, System d. Vergl. Anat., Halle, 1821; Duméril and Bibron, Erpétologie Générale, Paris, 1884-54; Joh, Miiller, " Beitrige zur Anat. u. Naturgesch. d. Amphibien," in Ztschr. f. Phystologie, vol. iv. pt. 2, 1832; Rymer Jones, art. " Reptilia," in Zodd's Cyclopxdia, vol. iv., 1852; Stannius, Amphibien, Berlin, 1856; Owen, Anatomy of Vertebrates, vol. i., 1866; Huxley, Anatomy of Vertebrate Animals, 1871; C.K. Hoffmann, in Bronn's 7hierreich, vol, vi., div. 8; Gegenbaur, Grundriss d. Vergl. Anat., 2d ed., 1877 (Eng. tr., Elements of Comparative Anatomy, 1878).

OsTEOLOGY.—Cuvier, Ossemens Fossiles, 4th ed., Paris, 1834; De Blainville, Osteographie—Crocodilus, &¢., 1855; E. Hallmann, Vergl. Osteolog. des Schld- Jenbeins, 1837; Rostlin, Der Bau des knéchernen Kopfes, Stuttgart, 1844; Giebel, "Skelet d. Krokodile," in iebel's Ztsch. f. d. Ges. Naturw., 1877; Klein, "Skull of Crocodile," in Jahreshefte d. Vereins fiir Vaterl. Naturk. in Wirttemberg, 19ter Jahrg.; Parker, Shoulder Girdle of Vertebrates, Ray Society, 1868 ; Id., '' Skull of Laeertilia," Phil. Trans., vol. elxx., 1879; 1d., ''Skutl of Snake," PAd. Trans., vol, elxix., pt. 2, 1878; 1d., 'Skull of Turtle," Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxviii., 1879, and Challenger Reports, vol. i., 1880; 1d., "Skull of Chameleo," Zrans. Zool. Soc., vol. xi., 1880; B. Balfour, ''Skull of Meeistops," Proc. Zool. Soc., 1857, p.57, pl. 25; C. Gegenbaur, Untersuch. z. Vergl. Anat. d. Wirbelthiere (1 l1ft., '' Carpus und Tarsus," 1864; 2 Hft., ''Sehultergiirtel," 1865); Id., '"' Gliedmassen d. Wirbel-thiere," in Morph. Jahrb., ii., p. 897, 1876; M. Fiirbringer, D. Knochen u. Muskeln v. d. schlangendhnlichen Sauriern, Leipsie, 1870; Id., Morph. Jahrb., i. p. 631, 1876; Gorski, Ueber das Becken der Saurier, Dorpat, 1852; C. H. Brtihl, Skelet der Krokodiliner dargestellt in 20 Tafeln, 1862; C. Born, "Carpus und Tarsus d. Saurier," in Morphol. Jahrb., ii.,

p. 1, 1876; H. Steeker, ‘‘Carpus und Tarsus v. Chameleon,” in Sitzb. d, Kaiserl. Akad, d. Wis- sensch, Wien, 1xxv., 1 Abth., 1877; P. Albreeht, “ Dinosauria,” in Bull. du Mus. Roy. Hist. Nat, de Belgique, 1883-84; P. Gervais, “ Ostéol. du Sphargis,” in Nouv. Archives du Mus., 1872, viii.; C. K. Hoffmann, “ Beitrige z. Kenntniss d. Beekens bei den Reptilicn,” in Wiederl. Archiv f. Zool., iii, 1876; H. Rathke, Ueber d. Bau u. Entwickl. d. Brustbeins d. Saurier, 1854; W. Peters, ‘©On the Ear Bones,” in Monatsh. d. Kénigl. Preuss, Akad, d. Wissench. 2. Berlin, 1868-69-70-74;, Huxley, “Ear Bones,” in Proc. Zool. Soc., 1869, p. 891; 1d., “ Dinosauria,” in Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc., July 1870; Id., “ Arehzeopteryx,” Proc. Roy. Soc., No. 98,186 ; Id., “‘Malleus and Ineus,” Proc. Geol. Soc., 1869, 391; Owen, A History of British Fossil Reptiles, 1849; 1d., “Carapace and Plastron of Chelonians,” Phil. Trans., 1849, pt. 1; 1d., Pterodactyles (volume of Palzonto- graphieal Soeiety for 1869); Id., Catalogue of Fossil Reptilia of S. Africa in Brit, Mus,, 1876; 1d., ‘* Tympanum and Palate of Crocodilia,” Phil. Trans., 1850 ; 1d., * Archseopteryx,” Phil. Trans., 1863 ; 1d., “ Permian Theriodonts,” Quart. Jour. Geol, Soc., August 1876; “ Mosasauride,” ibid., Noy. 1877 ; Id., “‘ Cynodraeo,” ibid,, May 1876 ; 1d., “Dinosaurian Vertebree,” idid., July 1876; U1. Seeley, ‘ Limb of Ophthalmosaurus,” Quart. Jour, Geol, Soc., Dee. 1874; Id., ‘* Plesiosaurian Peetoral Areh,’ tbid., Nov. 1874; Id., “ Chelonians,” Ann, and Mag. Nat. Hist., Oct, 1871; Id., “On Dimorphodon,” tbid., Oct. 1871; A. Gaudry, “ Permian Reptiles,” in Bull. Soc. Géol. France, 3 ser., vil. p. 62, 1878; Cope, ‘ Extinct Reptilia,” Trans. Amer, Phil. Soc., 1868-69; Id., “ Homologies of Cranial Bones of Reptilia,” B. Nat. HHist., p. 194; Vogt, “ Archsopteryx,” Rev. Sci., ser. 2, ix. p. 241, 1879; O. C. Marsh, “Mosasauroid Reptiles,” Amer. Jour, Sci. and Art, vol. iii,, 1872, and vol. xix., Jan. 1880, 1d., “ Ptcrosauria,” 7¢d., April 1872 ; Id., “ Dinosaurs,” ibid., vol. xvi., Nov. 1878, vol. xvii., Jan, 1879, vol, xix., Mareh and May 1880, and vol. xxi., July 1881.

Myotocy.—H. Buttmann, De Musculis Crocodili (Diss. Inaug.), Halle, 1826 ; S. Haughton, “ Muscles of Crocodile,” Proc. Roy. Irish Acad., vol. ix., 18663 G. Rolleston, ‘Shoulder Muscles,” Trans, Linn. Soc., vol. xxvi. p. 609, 1868; N. Yiirbringer, D. Knochen u, Muskeln v, d. schlangendhnlichen Sauriern, Leipsic, 1870; Id., Aforph. Jahrb., i. p.

681, 1876; Hans Gadow, ‘“ Bauchmuskeln d. Krokodile,” Morphol. Jahrb., vii. p. 57; Gorski, Ueber das Becken der Saurier, Dorpat, 1852 ; St G. Mivart, “ Muscles of Iguana,” in Proc. Zool. Soc., 1867, p. 766; 1d., “Museles of Chameleo,” in Proc. Zool. Soc., 1870, p. 850; A. Sanders, ‘“ Museles of Platydactylus,” in Proc. Zool. Soc., 1870, p. 418; 14., ‘“Museles of Liolepis,” in Proc, Zool. Soc., 1872, p. 154; 1d., “ Museles of Pteryo-~ saura,” Proc. Zool, Soc,, 1874, p. 71; Humphrey, “ Muscles of Pseudopus,” in Jour. of Anat. and Physiol., vol. vi., 1872.*

ViSCERAL ANATOMY.—llulke, “ Retina of Reptiles,” Jour. Anat. and Physiol., vol, i., 1867; C. Stewart, “ Laerymal Gland of Turtle,” Monthly Microsc. Jour., 1877, p. 241; M. Braun, ‘ Urogenital System d. einheimisehen Reptilien,” in Arbeiten und Zool. Jour. Inst. Wurzburg, iv. 1138-228, 1877; Briicke, “ Me- chanik d. Kreislaufes b. d. Schildkréten,” Sitzb. der Kaiserl. Akad. d, Wissensch, Wien, 416, 1850; Id., Denkschrift d. Wiener Akad., iii, 1852, p. 3385; G. Fritseh, “ Amphibienherzen,” in Reichert und Dubois Reymond’s Archiv, p. 654, 1869; Jaequart, “ Coeur de la Tortue,” Ann. des Sc. Nat., 4th ser., vol. xvi. p. 3038, 1861, J. Miiller, ‘Die Lymphherzen der Sehildkréten,” in Abhandl. d. Kénigl. Akad, d. Wissensch, z. Berlin, 1839, p. 831; M. Braun, “ Bau u. Entwiek. d. Nebennieren b. Reptilien,” in A7b. a. d. Zool. Zoot. Institut. in Wireburg, v. p. 1, 1879 ; H. Rathke, “Luftréhre und Speiseréhre y. Sphargis,” in A/dller’s Archiv, 1826, p. 292; Id., “ Aortenwérzeln d. Saurier,” in Denkschr. Wiener Akad,, 18673, Tiedemann, ‘ Blinddarm d. Amphibien,” in Meckel’s Archiv f. Physiol. ; P. Gervais, “ Dents de l’Helodermes et des Ophidiens,” in Archives d. Zool. Experim., 18738, pl. 6; Cl. 8. Minot, ‘Studies on the Tongue of Reptiles and Birds,” in Annivers. Mem. Boston Soc. Nat. Hist., 1880; Bisehoff, “ Bau des Croeodilherzens,” in Miller’s Archiv, 1886; G. Fritsch, “Vergleieh. Anat. d. Amphibienherzen,” in Reichert und Dubois Reymond’s Archiv, 1869; C. 8. Tomes, “ Development of Teeth in Reptiles,” Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxiii. p. 93 ; Id., Phil. Trans., vol. clxv., pt. 1; 1d., dbid., vol. elxvi., pt. 2.

Nervous SYSTEM AND ORGANS OF SENSE.—R. Riiekherd, “ Centralnerven- system d. Alligators,” in Ztsch. f. Wissensch. Zool., xxx. p. 386, 1878; C. Vogt, “Neurologie d. Reptilien,” in Neue Denkschr. ad, Aligem. Schweiz. Gesellsch, f. da. Gesammten Wissenschaften, xiv.,

Neuchatel, 1840; J. G. Fiselier, Gehirnnerven d. Saurier, Wamburg, 1852; St G. Mivart and R. Clarke, ' Sacralplexus of Lizards," &e., in Trans. Linn. Soc., 2d ser., Zool., vol. i., 18775*

Carbon- iferous forms.

Permian,

Mesozoic.

Triassic.

DISTRIBUTION IN TIME.

Deiters, "'Gehérorgan d. Amphibien," in Archiv f. Anat. und Physiol., 1862; Kuhn, "Hantige Labyrinth d. Reptilien,' Archiv f. Mikroskop. Anat., xx., p. 271, 1881; Bb. Solger, "Nasen-Wandung u. Nasen-Muscheln d. Reptilien," in Morphol. Jahrd., i, p. 467, 1876; E. Clason, " Morphol. d, Gehdérorgans. 4d. Eidechsen,"' in C, Hasse's Anat. Studien, p. 390, 1879; C. Hasse, in his Anat. Studien, p. 679, 1873.

EmpryoLoey.—F, Balfour, Comparative Embryology, vol. ii. pp. 167-176; 14., "Development of Lacertilia," Quart, Jour. Micr. Sci., vol. xix., 1879; Eimer, "Unters. d. Eier der Reptilien"? Archiv f. Mikros. Anat., viii., 1872; Kupffer and Benecke, " Die Erste Entwicklung am Ei d. Reptilien, Kénigsberg, 1878; Emmert and Hochstetter, " Unters. tib. d. Entwick. d. Eidechsen," Rez!'s Archiv, vol. x., 1811; Lereboullet, "Embryologie du Lézard," Ann. Sc. Nat., ser. 4, vol. xxvii,, 1862; H. Rathke, Entwickl. d. Natter, Konigsberg, 1839; 14., Veber d, Entwickelung d. Schildkroten, Brunswick, 1848; Id., Veber d. Entwickelung d. Krokodile, Brunswick, 1866 ; 1d., Die Entwickelung u. Kérperbau d. Crocodile, Brunswick, 1866; L. Agassiz, "Embryology of the Turtle," in Contrid. Nat. Mist. United States, vol. ii., 1857.

MonoGrapus,—Bojanys, Anatome Testudinis Europee, 1819; Ticdemann, Anat. u, Naturgesch. des Drachens, Nuremberg, 1811; Giinther, " Hatteria," Phil. Trans,, 1847, pt. 2; 1d., 'Gigantic Land Tortoises," Phil. Trans., clxv., pt. 1; Id., Gigantic Land Tortoises in British Museum, 1877;

A, Fritsch, “ Anat. d. Elephanten-Schildkréte,” in Abhand. d. Kénigl, Béhm, Gesellsch. d. Wissen- schafien; M. Salverda, Vergel. Ontleedk. Aanteekeningen over Calotes, 1863; J. H. Troschel, “ Heloderma horridum,” in Archiv f. Naturg., Jahrg. 19, 1853, p. 294; Yeters, De Serpentum Familia Uropeltaceorum, Berlin, 1361, (ST G. M.)

DISTRIBUTION OF REPTILES IN TIME.

The first appearance of Reptiles on the surface of the globe is indicated by very fragmentary remains. Speci- mens of deeply biconcave vertebre of Carboniferous age from Nova Scotia are believed to be those of a marine Saurian (Hosaurus acadianus); if this view is correct, this oldest of Reptiles would bear the stamp of one of the most Fish-like of the class.

Formations of Permian age in North America as well as in Europe contain fossils with undoubtedly Reptilian characters ; they are still associated with true Labyrintho- donts, and with remains which are too fragmentary to be assigned with certainty either to Labyrinthodonts or Reptiles. The vertebrae of all are amphiccelous. These Reptiles are Rhynchocephalians,—the oldest and best preserved being Proterosaurus from the Copper-Slate of Thuringia, a Reptile about six feet in length, with a com- paratively long neck (which, however, was composed of seven or nine vertebra only), with numerous abdominal splints, a long tail, and well developed and differentiated limbs.

In the Mesozoic times the Reptilian type appears in such variety and in such a high state of development that this era has been distinguished as the “ Reptilian age.” Yet we know chiefly such forms only as possessed bones of a size and solidity sufficient to ensure their preservation. Of small Reptiles, animals under or scarcely exceeding two feet in length, comparatively few have been discovered, although they too must have existed in abundance. In the Trias there appear first of the marine Saurians large Sauropterygians with narrow ossifications between the vacuities of the skull, such as Simosaurus, Nothosaurus, and Pistosaurus from the German Muschelkalk. The highly interesting genus Meusticosaurus, the smallest of the group, with the four limbs modified into paddles, but with the hind limbs retaining the structure of those of a terrestrial animal, seems to afford evidence of this order having been

developed from a terrestrial type. Fragments of true Plesrosaurus and Ichthyosaurus begin to appear in the Rheetic bone beds of England. Also the Placodonts, the systematic affinities of which are not yet satisfactorily understood, are contemporaries of these early Enalio- saurians. The precursors of our Crocodiles were two genera, Lelodon and Steganolepis, with dorsal scutes, but with amphiccelian vertebra and anterior choane, neither palatines nor pterygoids being dilated into the osseous palate which is characteristic of later Crocodiles. Another order, the Anomodontva, flourished and died in this epoch ; some fifteen genera have been distinguished, all from the South-African Trias; however, this type is probably also represented in Russian formations of the same age. Rhynchocephalians continue in several genera in Euro- pean and American strata. But the largest of terrestrial

Reptiles belonged to the Dinosaurs, whose presence in numerous species belonging to distinct groups, some with three, others with five toes to the hind feet, is testified by their osseous remains as well as by the tracks of their hind feet, which they left during their bipedal progression over stiff mud. These Triassic Dinosaurs were chiefly herbi- vorous, and already much more numerous in North America than in Europe (Zanclodon).

This Reptilian fauna continued to flourish in the Jurassic Jurassic.

period ; the types of the Trias increased in variety ; still more gigantic forms were developed ; and new orders which were absent in the preceding period were added. Of the marine Saurians alone some fifty species are known from European formations: the Jchthyosawri inhabited chiefly the northern seas of the eastern hemisphere, and were re- placed in the western by Reptiles of similar structure and size, but without teeth (Sawranodon); the Sauropterygians have considerably advanced beyond their Triassic precursors in having more solidly ossified skulls, and are also repre- sented by a greater number of genera in America as well as Europe; of Plesiosaurus alone some twelve species are known from the Lias and seven from the Oolite. Ptero- dactyles make

their first appearance. Crocodilians have developed into the " Mesosuchian" type, their palatine bones being prolonged, pushing the choanz backwards to the middle of the under surface of their skull, but their vertebre are still amphiccelian ; they appear in numerous genera (Z'eleosaurus) and species. Terrestrial Reptiles keep pace in development with the marine and freshwater types ; the giants of the order of Dinosaurs have left their remains in a more or less perfect condition in the Jurassic strata of both hemispheres (Cetiosaurus, Atlantosaurus, Iguan- odon, Morosaurus, Apatosaurus) ; forms with three toes on the hind feet lived simultaneously with four- or five-toed ones ; carnivorous types (AMegalosaurus, Creosaurus, &c.) represent in habit as well as relative size Mammalian Carni- vora; they preyed upon the gigantic but weaker members of the order. The Dinosaurian type extended also into the southern hemisphere, as is testified by the West-Australian genus Deuterosaurus. The Chelonians, which appear first in the Upper Keuper, are in the Lias of highly advanced types, and not essentially different from recent families ; they occur in many localities of Europe as Freshwater Turtles, chiefly Chelydide ; but Emydide are also repre- sented, showing, however, a less solid ossification of the carapace than the recent forms. No distinct evidence of the presence of Marine Turtles and Zrionyx has been found hitherto in Jurassic formations.

This abundance of Reptilian life not only continues in Creta- the Cretaceous period, but is still more increased in ceous

variety and reaches its highest point of culmination. Ich- thyopterygians and Sauropterygians reached an enormous size; Discosawrus, with a neck 22 feet long and composed of sixty vertebra, must have been the most formidable enemy to the Fishes of the sea. Moreover these large Saurians which survived from the preceding period were – now joined by a new type of marine monsters with a Snake-like body and very short extremities, the Mosa- saurians, which attained to a length of from 10 to 80 feet and veritably filled the place of Sea-Serpents. Although their skull exhibits not a few Ophidian characters, their genetic relation to that order is not by any means proved. They were most numerous in the western hemisphere, some forty American species referable to many genera having been described by North-American authors; in Europe they are

comparatively scarce. On the other hand no less than fifteen species of Pterodactyles are known from European formations, all armed with formidable teeth, whilst the gigantic Pterodactyles of North America

are, with one exception, toothless. Together with the sur- XX. — 59

Tertiary.

466

viving Mesosuchian Crocodiles of the Jurassic period Gavial-like forms existed, and genera with posterior choanz and proccelous vertebrae (Eusuchians),—among them a true Crocodile from the Cambridge Upper Greensand. The western hemisphere exceeded the eastern as regards the abundance of Dinosaurians in this period still more than in the preceding, although it should be remembered that of the latter part of the globe in fact only a small portion has been opened up, and that the little we know of the geology of Central Asia and western China points to the probability of vast paleontological treasures being reserved for the study of future generations. Rhynchoce- phalian genera continue in considerable variety, whilst other small-sized forms are referred to the Lacertilians. The types of Freshwater Turtles which lived in the Jurassic period pass into the Cretaceous. They appear now also in North-American strata: Chelydidex first, ac- companied or immediately followed by Hmydidx, a few Trionyx and Chelonia, and the remarkable Protostega, a precursor of Sphargis. Towards the end of the Cretaceous period its abundant Reptilian life is swept away, and not only every species but almost every Mesozoic genus dis- appears, a wide gap being left in our knowledge of the succession of Reptilian life between this period and the Tertiary era.

In the lowermost strata of Tertiary age a few isolated remains remind us still of the extinct Mesozoic fauna ; such are one or two genera allied to the Dinosaurians (Agathau- mas) from the Laramic beds of North America. In other respects the Tertiary Reptiles bear already the character of the present fauna; although families or genera which are distinct from the living predominate in the Eocene, from the Miocene Reptiles gradually approach more and more the specific forms of our

time. True Crocodiles (of which one species occurred already in the Cretaceous period), Gavials, Alligators have now entirely superseded the '" Mesosuchian" type. The remains of Lacertilians are fragmentary and generally indistinct, so as to offer a wide field for generic distinctions. Anguide have been distinctly traced back to the Miocene of North America. With a single exception, that of a poisonous Serpent, apparently a Vipera, the remains of which have been found in Miocene deposits at Sansan (south of France), Snakes do not appear before the Eocene, in England as well as North America; they are mostly large species, with un- certain affinities, but all innocuous (Palxophis, Dinophis, Boavus, Lithophis). Their remains are scarce, and even those of the later Tertiary formations show a greater resemblance to genera which are now-a-days locally far removed than to those living in the same geographical district. Chelonian remains are numerous throughout, probably on account of the resistance which their solid carapaces offered to destructive agencies. Chelydidz, Emydidx, and Trionycide and also Marine Turtles con- tinue to exist in an almost uninterrupted series, and approach so much the modern genera that, for instance, in Trionyx, if specific distinctions existed between Miocene and recent species, they cannot be determined in those parts of their skeleton which have been preserved. A peculiar type intermediate between the Marine Turtles and Emys existed in the English Eocene (Chelone). Land Tortoises, the most specialized type of the order, probably did not appear before the Miocene. A number of smaller forms are referable to the genus Testudo, but gigantic forms existed then as now in isolated localities, and exceeded in size the living, like the Colossochelys of the Siwalik Hills, with a carapace computed to be 20 feet long, and the smaller Jfacrochelys from the German Molasse. It is extremely singular that the existence of these colossal Chelonians would seem to coincide with the

wErerrons

[GEOGRAPHICAL

period of the first appearance of the type of Land Tor- .

toises.

Of the first appearance of most of the families of the recent fauna, and of their distribution in the Quaternary period,! we know next to nothing. With few exceptions the Reptilian type had dwindled to forms of such small size that their remains, if preserved, escape observation or are too indistinct for determination.

THE DISTRIBUTION OF EXISTING REPTILES OVER THE Earti's SURFACE.

Serious obstacles present themselves at the present time to a satisfactory treatment of the geographical distribution of Reptiles. We have mentioned at the end of the preceding section that the geological record is much too incomplete to permit a comparison to be drawn between their distribution in the present and next preceding periods, and that we are therefore ignorant as to the modes in which their dispersal was brought about, and unable to account otherwise than hypothetically for the numerous instances of apparently anomalous distribution. And, when we limit ourselves merely to the task of describ- ing the facts of their distribution at the present day, it is necessary for such an attempt that the whole class should have previously undergone a thorough rearrangement in accordance with the present state of science, and that the scattered contributions to the various faunz should have been critically examined and treated by the same uniform method. This is unfortunately not the case with the class of Reptilia. The systems and lists of Lacertilia and Ophidia which formed the bases for the treatises on the geographi- cal distribution of these orders by Schlegel, Giinther, and Wallace are buried under an accumulation of an immense number of additions of very different value, which require a uniform critical revision before they can be used in an inquiry of a general biological scope.?

In the following notes we have been able to include the majority of the genera of Chelonians and Ophidians, with an approximate estimate of the specics of each that are known at present. As regards the former Strauch? has done much to clear the way, although the small amount of materials known to him from autopsy interfered much with his critical judgment. Not many additions have bcen made to this order since the time of the publication of his memoirs. Of the numerous Ophidian gencra and

species we have climinated all which are based on trivial distinctions, or are named by authors without special acquaintance with the subject. We have not entered into a full consideration of Laccrtilian genera, as this would have been useless at a time when they are undergoing a revision, but have restricted ourselves to the families recently proposed by Boulenger.

One of the most important results obtained by this inquiry is that the same arrangement of the so-called primary zoological regions is not applicable to all orders of Reptiles, and that the differences in their distribution are so fundamental that they can be accounted for only on the assumption of the various orders and families having appeared and spread over the globe at very distant periods, when land and water were differently distributed over the surface of the globe. At the end of this section we shall show in a short résumé the mutual relations between the various regions with respect to the several orders of Reptiles.

The means of dispersal of Reptiles are very limited.

1 An important memoir on Indian Chelonia is published whilst this

_ article is passing through the press, "Siwalik and Narbada Chelonia,"

by R. Lydekker, in Palgontol. Ind., vol. iii. ser. x., 1885.

2 Whilst this article is being written, the Zacertilia are undergoing the much-needed arrangement by Boulenger (as mentioned at p. 439), who also has recently published preliminary notes on the distribution of the families of Lacertilians, which have been of great use to the present writer (Anz. and Mag. Nat. HWist., August 1885, p. 77).

3 "Chelonologische Studien," and "Die Verbreitung der Schild- kréten tiber den Erdball," in Afémoires de ? Acad. de St Pétersb., 1862 and 1865.

Quater-

nary.

Geo-

graphical distribu-

tion.

Marine forms.

Marine Turtles.

Indian region. Che- lonians.

‘DISTRIBUTION. |

They are much specialized in their mode of life and pro- pagation, and ill adapted to accommodate themselves to a change of external conditions. As air-breathing cold- blooded animals they are unable to withstand prolonged cold ; they are therefore entirely absent in the arctic and antarctic zones ; and such as escape the effect of the winter months in temperate zones by passing them in a torpid condition in well-sheltered places are not peculiarly organized forms, but offshoots from those inhabiting warmer climes. The tropical and subtropical zones are the real home of the Reptilian type, which there has reached its greatest development as regards size and variety of forms. In the north Chelonians advance only to 50° lat. in the western and to 56° in the eastern hemisphere, Lizards to about 56° in British Columbia, and close to the Arctic Circle in Europe, whilst Snakes disappear some degrees before the Lizards. Also in the south Lizards extend into higher latitudes than Snakes, viz., to the Straits of Ma- gellan, whilst the latter do not seem to have advanced beyond 40° §. lat. and Chelonians only to 36°.

We exclude from our account of the distribution of terrestrial Reptiles those few forms which pass almost the whole of their life in the sea, and therefore belong to the marine fauns, viz., the Marine Turtles and Sea-Snakes.

1. The shores of the continents and islands of the equatorial zone arc the home of the Marine Turtles. Endowed with a wonderful power of

locomotion, the several species are now distri- buted over the greater part of this zone, occurring in the Atlantic as well as the Indo-Pacific ; and, although some of them are common in certain districts and scarcer or even absent in others, it is pro- bable that in the course of time their distribution will be still more general and uniform, as far as other conditions (such as access toa suitable locality for the successful propagation of their kind) will permit. Frequently Marine Turtles stray far into the temperate zones, and it thus happens that one and the same species (Sphargis cortacca) has been found on the south coast of England, near Cape Cod in North America, and on the coast of Chili. In short the geographical distribution of these Reptiles is that of pelagic animals generally, although by their mode of pro- pagation they are compelled to sojourn near land during a certain period of the year.

2. The Sea-Snakes are restricted to, and highly characteristic of, the fauna of the tropical Indo-Pacific Ocean, and more especially of parts between Arabia and North Australia. They prefer the vicinity of land, but never leave the water, with, perhaps, the single exception of Platurus. Their distribution is not erratic; only one species, Pelamys bicolor, a Sea-Snake which more than any other is organized for a marine life, has spread far beyond the original home of its kindred, viz., westwards to the coasts of Madagascar and south-eastern Africa, and eastwards to the further- most limits of the region, viz., to the coasts of ceutral and northern South America.

All other Reptiles! are terrestrial, and, as they are chiefly developed in the tropics, we begin our account with the regions? of the equatorial zone. The scope of this article does not allow us to enter into an examination of the subregions which have been proposed by various authors.

1. Lhe Indian Region.—Of the four principal groups of terrestrial Chelonians, the Emydide and Trionycide (Freshwater Tortoises and Freshwater Turtles) predomi- nate over the Z'estwdinidx, which are scarce and restricted, the fourth (Chelydide) being absent altogether. We know fifty-seven species from this region :—

"TastQbdloy,. gabptanchaneaubtasemsacede nseotonsn aida nonobe 4 species 4 NC EDO TORIES Ran sao peacnEnennbE ane mac

soanooodanhovouncone le CISTUMONIC MOLE), cccec see ~~caccesuects soso. aerate oF 35 Biys WAL AtSESUIDOOMETA, ...~~..ucersenasees ess 30 ,,, HRaleat rs GeM MALIN SM ainteiteistajae'- «os ewseaesseinemieneenasan 5 Ha "PN OSUSG54 dne ne aR ORB AER aaBRaR Ener Rata auG He soneansuccbuC . DERLAM aise .oenagencrestseeile seierihagethitie gts aes 8 Ap Me

1 The fact that Oreocephalus enters the sea habitually and Cher- sydrus frequently does not entitle these Reptiles to be classed among marine animals ; they pass the greater part of their life on land, and never leave its close vicinity.

? As regards the general boundaries of the zoo-geographical regions we refer to Wallace's Geographical Distribution of Animals (London, 1870, 4to) or to the article IcHTHyYOLOGY (vol. xii. pp. 668 sq.).

KEP writin s

467

Three of these genera are peculiar to the region, viz., Manouria,3 Platysternum, and Emyda. Characteristic is the scanty repre- sentation of Testudo. One species which is common in the Indian peninsula (7'. stel/ata) is so similar to an African species as to have been considered identical with it; the Burmese Tortoise is also closely allied to it, and the two others extend far into western Central Asia. Thus this type is to be considered rather an immi- grant from its present headquarters, Africa, than a survivor of the Indian Tertiary fauna, which comprised the most extraordinary forms of Land Tortoises. Wallace's line marks the eastern bound- ary of Trionyx; species of this genus are common in Java and Boruco, and occur likewise in the Philippine Islands, but are not found in Celebes, Amboyna, or any of the other islands east of Wallace's line. 4

Of Crocodilide true Crocodiles are represented by four, Croco-

and Gavials by two species. Alligators are absent.

Although the region is characterized by numerous highly Lacer- specialized genera of Lacertilia, not one of the families is tilians.

peculiar to it.

Agamide are exceedingly numerous, and are represented chiefly by arboreal forms ; terrestrial forms, like Agama and Uromastiz, inhabit the hot and sandy plains in the north-west, and pass unin- terruptedly into the fauna of western Central Asia and Africa. The Geckonidx, Scincide, and Varanidez are likewise well repre- sented, but without giving a charactcristic feature to the region by special modification of the leading forms, The Lacertidz are repre- sented by one characteristic genus, T'achydromus,—Ophiops and Cabrita being more developed beyond the limits assigned to this region, Finally, the Hublepharide and Anguidz, families whose living representatives are probably the scattered remains of once widely and more generally distributed types, have retained respec- tively two species in western India, and one in Khassia (Khasi Hills), whilst the presence of a single species of Chameleon in Southern India antl Ceylon reminds us again of the relations of this part of the fauna to that of Africa.

The Indian region excels all the other equatorial regions Ophi- in the great variety of generic types and number of dians.

species of Snakes. The Jatter amount to no less than four hundred and fifty, which is nearly one-third of the total number of species known. They are referable to about one hundred genera, of which the majority do not range beyond the limits of the region. Of higher groups (termed families for the sake of convenience), the Xenopeltidz, Rhinophidx, Oligodontide, Xenodermidex, and Acrochordide are peculiar to, and characteristic of, this fauna,—but not more so than a number of genera which will be mentioned presently.

Of Typhiopidx more than twenty species are known.

Of Tortricidx, the genus Cylindrophis is spread over several of the subregions.

The Calamartide are represented by a whole string of genera, of which thirteen are peculiar to the region. The most characteristic and geographically most important types are Calamaria, with twenty-four species, spread over the archipelago and the eastern parts of the continent, and Aspidura and Haplocercus, with four species, which are limited to Ceylon and southern India.

Species of those generalized forms which are termed Coronedlidz and Colubridw are likewise numerous (sixty-six species), and referable to seventeen genera, of which ten are limited to this region. In the north-western and northern parts the genus Zamenis, which is one of the most characteristic types of the warmer parts of the Europo-Asiatic fauna, is represented by six species.

Freshwater Snakes are abundant in genera, species, and indivi- duals. Of 7'ropidonotus alone some forty very distinct species have been described, besides three others which arc sufficiently differen- tiated to deserve generic separation. Of the so-called Homalopside all the genera, twelve in number, are peculiar, and the great development of these Snakes is, therefore, one of the most striking features of this region.

Besides two species of Psammophis allied to African forms, a dis- tinct genus Psammodynastcs has a wide range over the eastern parts of the continent and the archipelago.

Tree Snakes are represented by eight genera and twenty-six species, mostly characteristic forms.

3 Its existence in Australia is extremely doubtful.

4 The statement that specimens of Trionyx had been obtained by Ida Pfeiffer in Amboyna rests upon a misunderstanding, like that of the discovery of a Barbel by the same traveller in the same island. Dr Jentink also informs us that none of the Freshwater Turtles in the Leyden Museuni came from islands east of Java and Borneo.

Reptiles of Japan.

African region.

Che- lonians,

Croeo- dilians,

Lacer- tilians,

468

Dipsadide are more numerous (eighteen species) than in the other equatorial regions.

Elachistodon and Hologerrhwm may be mentioned as remarkable types not found elsewhere, but with a very local distribution. _

The development of Lycodonts India has in common with Africa ; but the genera, six in number, are distinct.

Also the presence of gigantic Snakes of the genus Python is a feature which India shares with Africa.

Of Erycide three species are Indian, Gongylophis and Cursoria being peculiar to the region. ; ;

Poisonous Snakes are numerous, the proportion to innocuous Snakes being as 1:10, Out of forty-six species, only two belong to the family of true Vipers, and they are restricted to the Indian peninsula with Ceylon, one (Zchis) being even specifically identical with the African species, and the other (Daboiw) having its ouly congener in the Mediterranean district. The remainder of the poisonous Snakes belong to the Hlapide and Crotalide or Pit Vipers. The former are represented by six genera, of which no less than five are highly characteristic of the region, whilst the Cobras (Naja) are equally distributed over Africa. Of Pit Vipers five genera have been distinguished, the most characteristic being an arboreal form, Trimeresurus, with seventeen species. Also the other five genera are peculiar to India, with the exception of the genus Halys which is Central-Asiatic.

The relations of the Indian region to the others will be considered as we proceed with the accounts of those faunas. Japan, with regard to its Reptilian fauna as a whole, must be referred to this regiou. This is clearly shown by the presence of species of Ophites, Callophis, Trimeresurus, Tachydromus,—characteristically Indian forms, with which species of Clemmys, Trionyx, Gecko, Halys, and some Colubrines closely allied to Chinese or Oentral-Asiatic species are associated. The few Reptiles inhabiting the northern part of Japan are probably Palearctic species.

2. The African Region.—Owing to its strictly continental character and diminished variety of physical features, this region is inhabited by a much smaller number of Reptiles than one might be led to expect from the large extent of its geographical area. There are but few small outlying islands, furnishing a small number of interesting additions to this fauna. Madagascar, indeed, would supply a con- siderable contingent of distinct forms, but it is questionable whether this large island should be united with the African region, as we shall see hereafter.

The African region is characterized by the development of three of the four principal divisions of terrestrial Chelonians, viz., Zestudinide, Chelydide, and Trionycide ; the Hmydidex are absent, being represented by one species only, in the north-western corner of the region (mys

platyceps). The thirty-seven species are distributed thus :— pela iiisnie sausages age eAaION OTe Ee ORE with 16 species CLUS UNG) anerneeanna careanennemnnocssanancnbocd , i ages EAVERAISS Breccia tnetaraa ne snes oe a4 lea a (CUTTS Tae esc vs ccicsies'vna essed ce dane ee meee ne EO) Mes BE yon sis eh basis gl ov caves cesnshae eee Pe ee 1 AE Ne PLES cart iis eannnt-cnessd Oe oes 5° lee SECPNOPMOT US) .,..sc0ceescssesnneasstenssaneere .5. See) Be MOCO cnicvciesaresccesavcintine nee neee a es Bg ABN ce asc secs on oawaa ee oyeec neem sy. ME os 6 MOVE OND yan «stid.en's a viecee sa dvieeoetannnee rae eeig

The majority of the genera are peculiar, viz., Chersine, Pyais, Cinyxis, Dumerilia, Sternotherus, Pelomedusa, and Oycloderma ; and no other region shows a similar development of Land Tortoises, This last type has not only diverged into four genera, but is also represented by several of

those gigantic forms which survived into geologically recent times. In the African region they inhabited only the neighbouring oceanic islands, viz., the Aldabra group, Mauritius, and Rodriguez; out of the eight species, which have been recognized chiefly from their osseous remains, one only sur- vives at the present day. Also in Madagascar fossil remains of gigantic species, which must have been contemporaries of Zipyornis, have been discovered by Grandidier ; but on the continent no trace of these large creatures has been found hitherto. The Chelonians of the eastern and western halves of the continent do not essenti- ally differ from each other, but Trionyx does notextend southwards

beyond the tropic.

Of Crocodilidx, Crocodilus is represented by three or four species. Alligators are absent.

Of the families of Lizards inhabiting Africa the majority occur in the southern portion. Agamide are numerous,

and represented chiefly by terrestrial forms. The Gecko- nidx, Scincide, Lacertidx, and Varanide are likewise well represented ; Hublepharide by a single genus and species in West Africa. The presence of several genera of Amphisbenide, some of which are even identical with South-American, is highly suggestive. G'errhosauride, Zonuride, and Anelytropide are peculiar to tropical Africa ; but the most important feature of this Lacertilian fauna is the almost universal distribution of Chameleons in numerous and highly specialized species.

Leaving aside, for the present, the island of Madagascar, Ophi- we estimate that the number of species of African Snakes dians.

does not exceed two hundred, which are referable to about seventy genera, of which no less than fifty do not range beyond the limits of the region. On the whole the east coast genera are different from those of the

west coast, but in the southern parts no such differentiation can be shown. Very little is known as regards the range of the species and genera towards the central districts. As regards higher groups only two families, the Dasypeltide and Dinophidz, are peculiar to Africa; and, although they have a wide range over the region, they consist of very few species only. Other families show a greater variety of genera and spécies here than in any other part of the globe. The almost entire absence of the genus Z'rogi- donotus and the scanty representation of Colubers are very noticeable features. Poisonous Snakes are numerous, all the various families being well represented, with the exception of the Pit Vipers; singularly enough innocuous Colubrine Snakes with facial pits occur (Dothrophthalmus, Bothrolycus).

Of Typhlopide nearly forty species have been described, and, besides, the Stenostomatide are represented by seven species.

Hight out of ten Calamaroid genera are peculiar to this fauna, and remarkable is the frequency with which among them tle sub-caudal shields coalesce into a single series.

The Caronellide are represented by some twenty species, but no true Coluber occurs, the four species which approach this type most closely belonging to distinct genera (Scaphiophis, Xenwrophis, Herpctathiops).

Almost entire absence of Tropidonotus isa characteristic feature of this fauna. Also of other Freshwater Snakes only six genera with seven species are known.

The small family of Psammophidx is well represented by three genera and nine species, of whicli six belong to Psammophis.

Of Tree-Snakes there are six genera, of which Ahetulla (Philo- thamnus) is most generally distributed, in twelve species,

Of Dipsadideg there are five genera and ten species, four of which belong to Dipsas proper. :

The Lycodonts are as well developed as in India, by seven genera and fourtcen species ; all the genera are peculiar to Africa, and some of them are modified for an arboreal mode of life.

Of Pythons three species are distinguishable ; but, besides, a mem- ber of the Booid family (Pelophilus fordit) occurs on the west coast.

Two species of Lryx occur.

Poisonous Snakes are extremely numerous, the proportion to innocuous Snakes being as 1:5. Of Hlapidx four genera occur, among which Naja figures with at least two species; besides this . family the Dinophidx are a remarkable and characteristic type, having assumed entirely the appearance and mode of life of Tree Snakes. The

The Reptilian fauna of Madagascar is a most remarkable mixture Mada- of types belonging to different regions, which cannot be accounted gasear for in the present state of our knowledge of the geological changes Reptiles.

that have taken place whilst the present fauna was already in existence.

The Chelonians? offer a marked point of distinction from those of

1 The Chelonians of Madagascar require a thorough eritieal examina- tion ; some of the species whieh are reeorded as having been brought from that island have been evidently introduced from the Afriean continent. Others, as also certain species of Snakes, are certainly not natives of Madagascar.

Rela- tions of

Africa to

India.

Tropical Pacific region, Clie- lonians.

DISTRIBUTION. | ‘i EP T

Africa: no Trionyx occurs in Madagascar. On the other hand species are found of Z'estudo, Chersine, Sternothcrus, and Pelomedusa, whieh are spread also over a greater or lesser area of the eontinent. Two Chelonians, Pyxis and Dumerilia, are peeuliar to Madagasear, the latter nearly allied to the South-Ameriean Peltocephalus. The Madagasear Croeodile is elosely allied to the eommon African speeies ; and its presenee in the island ean be easily aecounted for.

Among the Lizards we find a distinetly South-American element in two Iguanoid genera, Hoplurws and Chalarodon, replaeing the Old World Agamidx. The absenee of Varanide, Lacertide, and Amphisbenide removes Madagasear from Africa, whilst the extra- ordinary development of Chamezlconidx (more than twenty species) and the presenee of Gerrhosauride and Zonuride are important features eonlmon to both. Avery small family (Uroplatide) is peeuliar to Madagascar. No special relation to the Indian region is shown by this Laeertilian fauna.

With regard to Ophidians, Madagascar has hardly anything in eommon with Africa. The Afriean fauna is characterized by the great development of Lycodonts,—they are absent in Madagascar ; and of the four families of African poisonous Snakes Madagasear does not possess a single one. When we analyse the affinities of the twenty-seven species known at present from Madagascar, we arrive at the following eonclusions :—

1. Snakes without distinet relations to any particular region :— Typhlops (six speeies), Ablabes (one species), Ithycyphus (one species), Dipsadoboa (one species).

2. Snakes with affinities to the African fauna :—J/imophis (one species), Pelophilus (one species).

3. Snakes with affinities to the Indian fanna:—Ptyas (one speeies), Langaha (one species).

4, Snakes with affinities to the South-Ameriean fauna :—Liophis (one species), Zachymenis (one species), Pseudoxyrhopus (two speeies), Heterodon (two species), Dromicus (one speeies), Herpeto- dryas (one

species), Philodryas (one species), Dipsas (two species), Xiphosoma (one species).

Africa shows affinities to all the three other equatorial regions, but chiefly to the Indian. No sharply defined boundary exists between the two regions, the intervening parts of Asia being inhabited by a desert fauna which penetrates into districts of similar nature in Africa as well as in India. Certain genera and species belonging to this desert fauna are therefore common to both regions. But there are, besides, other points of affinity of deeper signifi- cance, such as the development in both of a distinct Trionycoid genus, besides the typical Trionyzx, the general distribution of Agamoids and Varanidz,! the presence of the remarkable family of Lycodonts, which do not occur anywhere else, of the large forms of Python with con- comitant absence of Booids, and of the Zlapide, of which one genus (aja) extends from the west coast of Africa to Borneo. But these resemblances are fully counterbalanced by great differences in other portions of the Reptilian fauna: the Indian Emydoids are replaced by Chelydidx in Africa, a type which it has in common with Australia and South America, whereas India possesses no Amphisbenide, no Chameleons. With regard to Ophidians, the number of forms generally is greatly diminished in Africa, but the proportion of poisonous Snakes is doubled. The Pit Vipers of India are wholly absent, and are replaced by true Vipers. In the Indian region arboreal Agamoid Lizards prevail; in Africa the Snakes show a greater tendency towards a modification of the habitus and structure for arboreal life. The Freshwater Snakes and Colubers which are so numerous in India are much reduced in numbers in Africa, Tropidonoti being almost entirely absent. ;*

3. The Tropical Pacific Region.—So far as Reptiles are concerned, Tasmania has to be included in this region. No Trionyx or E'mys goes eastwards beyond Wallace's line. In fact, the Chelonian type disappears in the islands between this line and the Australian continent— with two exceptions. A species of Zestudo (J. forstenii) occurs in, and is limited to, the island of Gilolo; and

1 Both these Lacertilian families extend into the Australian region ; in fact they replace the Iguanoids of the western hemisphere and

Madagascar.

2 With the single exception mentioned above.

ibs 469

Cuora ambownensis, the most common Tortoise of Malaya, occurs in many of the eastern islands, but it has probably been imported by man, and by the same means may be still extending its range. On the continent of Australia Chelydide only occur, viz., eight species of Chelemys and five of Chelodina. In Tasmania, again, Chelonians are absent.

Besides the common Indian Crocodilus porosus, which Croco- may be considered an immigrant into this region, one or dilians. two other species of the same genus inhabit the fresh waters of the truly tropical parts, and are peculiar to Australia,

- The bulk of the Lacertilian fauna is composed of Skinks, Lacer- Geckos, Agamoids, and Varanidx, with the addition of a tilians. small family which is peculiar to the region, the Pygo- podide. A peculiar type, Dibamus, has been found in New Guinea; and, finally, a single Iguanoid, Brachylophus, is common in the Fiji Islands; how it came there, or how it survived its severance from the American stock, is a mystery. The Skinks are in this region more highly developed and more specialized than in any other part of the world; they exceed in numbers the Geckos, which generally accompany the Skinks in their range over the smaller islands of the Pacific; in these islands members of these two families represent the whole of the Lacer- tilian fauna. The Australian Agamoids are chiefly peculiar and partly much differentiated forms, but some have distinct affinities to, or are even identical with, Indian genera. The Varanidz are also closely allied to Indian species,

The total number of Snakes amount to ninety species, Ophi- of which twelve are Zyphlops, eight other innocuous dians. Colubrines, fifty Zlapidex, one Erycine, fourteen Pythonide, and five Boidez. The number of poisonous Snakes, there- fore, exceeds that of innocuous, a proportion quite un- paralleled in any other part of the world. The few innocuous Colubrine Snakes belong to Indian genera, and evidently have spread from that region; but all the genera of Hlapide (twelve), Erycide (one), Pythonide (five), and Bovde (three) are peculiar to this region.

In Australia we meet, therefore, with the interesting

fact' that, whilst it is closely allied to South America, but totally distinct from India, by its Chelonians, its Lizards and Colubrine Snakes connect it with this latter region. With regard to the other Ophidians, they, although peculiar genera, have their nearest allies partly in India partly in South America; and the character of the Australian Snake fauna consists chiefly in its peculiar composition, differing thereby more from the other

equatorial regions than these do among themselves. Wallace's line marks the boundary between India and Australia only as far as Chelonians are concerned, but it is quite effaced by the distribution of Lizards and Snakes. Thus in New Guinea Lizards of the Indian region are mixed with Pygopodide, and an island as far east as Timorlaut is inhabited by six Snakes, three of which are peculiarly Indian, whilst the other three are as decidedly Australian. The islands north of New Guinea and of Melanesia are not yet occupied by the Ophidian type, and only species of Hnygrus have penetrated eastwards as far as the Low Archipelago, whilst the Fiji Islands and the larger islands of Melanesia have sufficiently long been raised above the level of the sea to develop quite peculiar genera of Snakes. Tasmania is tenanted by poisonous Snakes only.

4, The Tropical American Region.—An examination of Tropical the distribution of Chelonians in the New World leads to American a different division of its regions from that of the other (°.°™ Reptiles. Central America and the West Indies, with ope regard to Chelonians, cannot be united with the Southern

Croco- dilians.

Lacer- tilians,

Ophi- dians.

470

continent. The Chelonians of South America proper are the following (forty-three species) :—

PGS UU LO We tte csyacece stain sy cucercaesesnaed ess see with 8 species 8 UTI, S aume en Og ca ey sic oese saa eyneak son aN a a eee 6 Winostenmumiecn wecceceeccacssmicsceapecess sys fh fel oss

MO WOCOTMGNIG 65. ses scce.rieaenenssac casa bans el oe al ROU OCIETINISMM ey ovens sy cicasi oaeseuessaonnaies sco! aes

NE PlEGeMMy Spence cette = cc che cchistevcaeaerss ace ss Ge 29 nV CGIMGMUISAM . sce cacwcieereerace.aeer ey oosoes ae 1D! 55

(Glaallel, ae stee. a cntengw po cheertene mer csnortnne ie Re.

The Chelydide thus predominate to the exclusion of the Eimydidex. They belong to five distinct genera, of which one, Chelys, is the most specialized of the family. They do not extend to the western side of the Andes, and cease in the south with the system of the Plate River. Northwards they penetrate to Trinidad, but become scarcer in the degree in which their place is occupied by the Lmydidew, which have spread from Central America over the northern parts of this region. One, Emys d'orbignit, following the course of the Uruguay, has penetrated southwards to the mouth of the Plate River.

Land Tortoises (Zestudo) are at the present day almost extinct in this region, two species only (Zestudo tabulata or carbonaria and 7. argentina) being found on the continent of South America. The six other species belong to the Occanic Island Tortoises of gigantic size, and inhabit or inhabited the Galapagos group.

Trionyx is entirely absent.

The Crocodilian order is more developed in this region than in any other. Besides at least three species of Crocodilus, six Alligators occur. The former occupy Central America, with Mexico, the coast of Florida, the West Indies, Ecuador, and the system of the Orinoco ; the latter extend much farther southwards, throughout the system of the Plate River, whilst in North America this genus is represented by a distinct species, A. méssis- sippensis.! Alligators found in some of the West Indian islands are believed to be immigrants from the continent.

The Lacertilian fauna connects Central with South America,—all the six families found in the latter area, viz., Geckonide, Anguide, Amphisbenide, Tefidx, Igua- mdx, and Scincidx, being represented in Central America. But Central America possesses, besides, five other families, small in species and restricted in range (some belonging to the fauna of great elevations), but highly interesting types. These are the Hublepharidx,

Xenosauridx, Aniel- lide, Helodermatidx, and Lepidophymatidx. Their locali- zation and differentiation can be accounted for on the hypothesis that they are the remains of the fauna of the various islands into which Central America was broken up at a former period.

By far the larger number of Lizards of the Tropical American region are Jguanidzx, a family which in the New World repeats the Old-World Agamidz. They are spread over the whole of the region, having adapted themselves in their mode of life and structure to every variety of ground. One species (Liolaemus magellanicus) ranges to the Straits of Magellan. The largest Iguanoids inhabit the Galapagos Islands, where they live on the rocks of the shore, one species (Oreocephalus cristatus) entering sea-water and feeding on sea-weeds. The next numerous family is the Tejide, the New-World representatives of the Old-World Lacertide ; Geckonidx, Scincidx, Amphisbenidx, and Anguidx are less numerous, but have also a wide range over the region. The Lacertilian fauna of the West Indies is wholly South-American ; it does not comprise any peculiar family, and only a few character- istic genera, of which Anolis is, perhaps, the most highly specialized and the one which is composed of the greatest number of species ; this genus, however, is also well represented on the continent, especially in Central America.

With regard to Ophidians the Tropical American region approaches the Indian in the number of species, which amounts to about four hundred, but it exhibits a com- paratively less variety of generic and peculiar forms 5 Ol the eighty genera only about fifty do not range beyond its limits. However, a boundary line which would separate the Ophidian fauna of South America from that of the north does not exist. In Central America and

1 We may mention here, in anticipation, that a species of Alligator has recently been discovered in China.

FE Pe? PF ieess

[GEOGRAPHICAL

Mexico the generic types of the south and north are intermingled, and as the climate, in accordance with latitude and altitude, assumes a more temperate character the specifically tropical Snakes disappear and are in part replaced by those of North America. This mixture of the two faunz and the great variety of physical conditions within a small area account for the relatively very large number of Snakes of Central America. About one hundred and fifty out of the four hundred species attri- buted to the whole region belong to this district. The West- Indian Ophidians belong to the Tropical American fauna ; many continental generic forms of the latter occur in the islands, and such genera as are peculiar to the West Indies do not exhibit a common feature, or are founded on slight characters. The exact limits to which Snakes extend southwards are not known ; they seem to be very scarce on the southern confines of the Argentine Republic. Quite recently a Crotaline Snake, Rhinocerophis, has been discovered in eastern Patagonia.?

Of families peculiar to or highly characteristic of this fauna we can mention one only, viz. the small family Scytalidx, which replaces the Lycodonts of the Old World. The Boidx are likewise a prominent feature, although not exclusively confined to South America; of eleven genera eight are Tropical American, and three Australian. The true Boas include the most gigantic of Snakes, and replace the Old-World Pythons.

In this fauna a peculiar and highly ornamental pattern of coloration, which consists of more or less regularly alternate rings of black, red, and yellow, seems to be the more worthy of notice, as it occurs in very distinct families, viz. the Calamariidex, Coronellide, Natricidx, Leptognath- idx, Scytalide, Tortricide, Elapide.

Of Typhlopide more than twenty species have been described, and, besides, the Stcnostomatidex are represented by seven species.

Of Tortricidx one species occurs.

The Calamariid# ave represented by thirteen genera, of which ten are peculiar. The most characteristic and geographically important are Elapomorphus with ten, Hamalocraniwm with sixteen, Minia with four

species. The Indian genus Geophis is represented in Tropical America by twenty-five species.

Coronellide are extremely numerous (sixty-six species referable to thirteen genera). Of these Xenodon with twelve species, Lio- phis with sixteen, Hrythrolamprus, and Pliocercus deserve special mention.

Of Colubers forms with elongate compressed body, approaching arboreal forms (Spilotcs), are not scarce.

Freshwater Snakes are not abundant, but a genus peculiar to the region, Helicops, occurs in eight species. ropidonotus might be regarded ag absent, but for three or four species which occur north of the Isthmus of Panama and in the West Indies ; also the allied genus Tretanorhinus is confined to Central America and the West Indies.

Tree Snakes are extreinely abundant—some seventy species refer- able to six genera, of which Dromicus, Philodryas, and Herpetodryas are very characteristic forms. Of Ahextulla some seventeen species are known.

Of Dipsas and allied genera only four species occur, but of the peculiarly South-American Leptognathide# some twenty-five specics have been distinguished.

In Central America there occur two extremely singular forms which, however, are imperfectly known and seem to be restricted to a very lmited area. One, Loxocemus, is considered a represcnta- tive of the family Pythonidx, and the other, Notopsis, is stated to be the type of a distinct family allied to the Indian Xcnodermidz.

Of the twenty species of Boidw the West Indian contingent amounts to no less than eight or nine, a fact which clearly demonstrates the pertinence of the West Indies to this region.

Erycide are absent.

Poisonous Snakes are numcrous, the proportion to innocnons Snakes being as 1: 8. Besides the singular occurrence in Venezuela ofa member

of the Atractaspididx, Dinodipsas, the Colubriform poisonous Snakes are represented by one genus only, Elaps, which, however, shows numerous varieties or species, and is extremely common and widely spread over the region. Viperidex are absent; but the largest forms of Pit Vipers (Crotalide) are developed in this

- *There is reason to believe that Ewophrys, which has been plaeed among the Psammophidz, is likewise a Patagonian form.*

Relations of South America to other regiuns,

North- Ameri- can

region.

Che- lonians.

DISTRIBUTION. |

region, and represented by five genera, which, if not peculiar to Tropical America, are at least confined to the New World, like Cenchris and Crotalus.

The Reptilian fauna of tropical America thus shows relations to the other equatorial regions in three of its constituent parts only, viz., in the Chelydidx, Amphis- benide, and Crotalide. It has the former type in common with Africa and Australia; but, whilst the presence of Z'rionyx on the African continent forms an important distinctive feature, the resemblance of South America to Madagascar is as great as, or even greater than, that to Australia, which lacks J'estudo.

On the other hand the Lacertilian fauna is essentially distinct from that of the Old World, with the exception of Amphisbenide (and of species of Hublepharide), whose presence in South America and Africa is a most remark- able fact, and very strong evidence of the former existence of intervening land. The Skinks and Geckos, which are generally distributed over the warmer parts of the globe, cannot come into consideration.

The Snakes of Tropical America differ also much more from those of the Old-World regions than certain other portions of its fauna, as, for instance, its Batrachians and Freshwater Fishes. A distinct affinity with India is expressed only by the development of the family of Pit Vipers,—the presence in both regions of numerous Tree Snakes, of species of the genus Geophis, of the family Tortricide, &c., being less significant points of resemblance. But these resemblances are more than counterbalanced by the absence in South America of Lycodonts, Z'ropidonoti, Pythomdx, Erycidx. The African Ophidian fauna! is still further removed by Crrotalide being entirely wanting and replaced by Vipertdx ; only a few genera, like Steno- stoma, Coronella, Leptodira, Dipsas, Ahzxtulla, are examples in which species are found in both regions. In both Troyrdonotus is almost absent. ;

As all the innocuous Colubrine Snakes of Australia are derived from the Indian region, they form no part ina comparison between the Australian and South-American faune. Of the other Ophidian types these regions have not a single genus in common, nor a family which would not be represented also either in Africa or India or both.

5. The North-American Region.—While the Chelonians of the North-American or Nearctic region (in which, so far as this Reptilian order is concerned, Central America and the West Indies have to be included) are essentially different from those of South America, the Lizards and Snakes of both belong to the same family types, and pass in an unbroken series from the northern to the southern parts of the New World.

In this region the Hmydidz have attained to as great a development as in the Indian, and are associated with a few representatives of Z'estudo and T'rionyx. The species, which are altogether about fifty in number, and of which a few are common to the Central-American and North-

American sections, are distributed as follows :—

Central America,

including Mexico, N+ America.?

MSS UI ORN:. .cncsmusen scoesteemantee 1 CUM O cis vcsuacernserevens ar ecegeees 1 1 Ollensiot hy ecancaanseeemransedecaiaca. 13 10 IDETMMATCHINVS ua asies stiesv sacs elinnesl 1 0 HET OCLOMMGNYS) nis onsleettertectecist 0 1 lralyamary. ...2.- scence cs semernecs 2 1 IE OUG TIS cs cies ec essansaawernan 3 0 EAMOMMOC MEV Geena aasaneneaeremnene 0 2 (Ching si BAU Ts neoagsnosondnanoconer 10 3 MOMMY. sa ecedeeneciseeueetommenies 0 2

30 21

1 Of the relations existing between the Snakes of South America and Madagascar we have spoken above, p. 469. 2 Ina Check-list published by the U.S. National Museum in 1883

®eP PI Les

471

It may be seen from this list that no Chelydoid passes northward beyond the Isthmus of Panama ; the Chelonians of Central Aierica belong exclusively to the Emydidzx, which arc represented by some thirty species ; the majority do not extend cither into South or North America; two of the genera, Dermatemys and Staurotypus are peculiar to it, and Cinosternwm has its headquarters in this section. Neither Trionyx nor Testudo ocenrs. Procecding beyond the Mexican boundary, we find still the Lmydidx predominating, a few of the species of Central America ranging northwards into the United States ; distinct species of Clemmys,? Cinosternum, Chelydra, &c., appear, with the wonderful genus Macroclemmys. An instance of the isolated occurrence of a Testudo (7. polyphemus) is met with here ; and from the lower part of the Mississippi northward one of the most charactcristic features of the North-Amcrican fauna makes its appearance, viz., two species of Z'rionyx, of which one at least follows the ramifications of that river northward and has found its way into Lake Winnipeg (51°N. Iat.). West of the Rocky Mountains Tortoises are scarce and of distinct species.

In the West Indies the following species have been found :— 1, Testudo tabulata ; 2, Podocnemis dumeriliana; 8, Emys concinna ; 4, H. decussata; 5, H. rugosa. Of these the first two are identical with South-American, and the third with a North-American specics, and, therefore, may be regarded as strangers which in compara- tively recent times have been introduced into the West Indies. On the other hand the last two are species peculiar to the islands, and, as they belong to a North-American generic type, clearly prove the pertinence of this island district to the northern continent, so far as Tortoises are concerned.

The south-eastern parts of North America are inhabited by an Alligator which is specifically distinct and locally separated from the southern species.

The tropical Lacertilian and Ophidian faunz gradually merge into that of the temperate north, and any boundary line drawn between the north and south is more or less arbitrary. As a matter of fact so many truly tropical forms advance north of the tropic of Cancer (which by many authors is taken as the boundary line) that we are inclined to restrict the limits of this region to the district about the Rio Grande, whilst, on the other hand, the northern fauna extends to a lower latitude on the plateau of Mexico. Thus restricted, the North-American fauna includes about fifty species of Lizards, belonging to genera which with very few exceptions are already represented in Central America, or éven farther southwards. By far the greatest number are Jguanidex; the Scincide, Anguide, and Tejule are represented by several, the Geckonidle by fewer species, whilst single species occur of the Amphisbanide, Aniellide, Lepidophymide, and LHeloder- matidx,—all Central-American types. In fact, North America does not possess one family of Lizards peculiar to it.

It is worthy of notice that Lizards do not extend so far north- wards in the western as in the eastern hemisphere; one spccics (Gerrhonotus cweruleus) ranges into British Columbia, another into Minnesota (Humeces septentrionalis), and a third into Massachusetts (Humeces fasciatus).

Of Snakes about one hundred# species could be enumerated, with a proportion of 1:14 of poisonous to innocuous Snakes. All the families

represented in this fauna occur also in tropical America, and there is a great agreement of the genera with those of the Cen- tral-American district, so that less than one-half can be considered as peculiar to this region, viz., Conocephalus, Carphophis, Contia, Cemophora, Hypsiglena, Chersodromus, Rhinochilus, Pituophis, Ischnognathus, Charina, Wenona, Lichanura. Calamariide and

a much larger number of " North-American" terrestrial Chelonians is given, viz., forty-three. This is partly due to the southern boundary of " North America" being extended to the tropic of Cancer, partly to the fact that species are admitted in a diffcrent sense from those of the herpetologists of the Old World. By adopting these species a very erroneous impression would be created as regards the comparative numbers of the groups in the several regions. That check-list includes three species of Testudo, three of Cistudo, twenty-one of imys and its subgenera, five of Cinosternum, two of Aromochelys, one each of Macroclemmys and Chelydra, and six of Trionyz.

3 Emys blandingii may be erased from the list of species ; we have recently examined a specimen ; it is identical with mys lutaria, and has evidently been introduced from Europe.

4 One hundred and eighty, according to some authors, who include a great part of Mexico, and adopt every variation to which a binomial term has been applied.

Croco- dilians.

Lacer-

tilians

and Ophi-

ans,

Europo- Asiatic region,

Che- lonians,

Croco- dilians,

Lacer- tilians.

Ophi- dians.

472

Coroncllide are numerous; so are Colubers, of which Piiwophis is the most characteristic. Freshwater Snakes abound, especially of the genus Zropidonotus. Of Tortricide three genera have been distinguished. No true Vipers occur, but Pit Vipers are represented by three genera, of which two are Rattlesnakes.

After what has been stated already, the affinities of this to other regions can be summed up in a few words. The Reptilian fauna of North and South America forms, with the exception of the Chelonians, a homogeneous whole by which the Neogean division proposed by Sclater for Passerine Birds is well characterized. On the other hand, the Chelonian fauna of North America is entirely distinct from that of South America, and most closely allied to that of India.

6. The Europo-Asiatic Region.—Whilst the north of the western hemisphere has at least one order of Reptiles, the Chelonians, by which it is distinguished from the south, the temperate region of the eastern hemisphere possesses no important distinguishing type of Reptile. Its Reptilian fauna is merely an offshoot of those of the two adjoining tropical regions; and, if we were to add the genera most characteristic of the Palearctic fauna to either Africa or India, the character of neither would be modified or changed. Thus, so far as Reptiles are concerned, a Pala- arctic region does not deserve to rank with the other primary regions.

The Chelonians are represented by nine species only, viz. :—

Tesi, sicierevicdaeeiee ie eee eee 4 species LOOT) BReseceechrenccceccede caer eaaeeiatoec ache cobra os000: (Bie ae TION ERS res siereereccnctseiteeienenetets BEonoonHGHCOGInoADAdONES 2

d9

—types which are only specifically distinct from those of the two southern tropical regions. The Land Tortoises are confined to the warmer districts of the western portion, penetrating into the centre of the Siberian sub-region, and entirely absent in the northern and eastern parts; of Hmys one species (#. lutaria) is still found in north-castern Germany as far north as 54° N. lat.!; and probably some other species will be found in similar latitudes in the little explored Amur country, where also a species of Trionyx (7. maacktt) occurs. The second species of this latter genus which is referable to this region inhabits the Euphrates and Tigris.

The recent discovery of an Alligator in central China is a highly interesting fact, but not surprising, when we remember the occur- rence in China of not a few North-American types of Batrachians and Freshwater Fishes. The common African Crocodile still lingers in the Mediterranean district,—its presence in Syria having been placed beyond doubt, and its occurrence in Sicily having been asscrted on very good authority.

The Lacertilians include the only family type which this region has not derived from either Africa or India, viz., the Anguidw. Two genera of this family, Anguis and Psewdopus,? are widely spread in Europe, and closely allied, the former to the South-American Ophiodcs, and the latter to the North-American Ophiosaurus. Lacertide are abundant as in Africa, and Amphisbenide and Chameleontide represented at least in the Mediterranean district. Towards the central parts of Asia the terrestrial Agamide are con- tinued from north-western Africa, partly with but slight modifica- tions, Phrynocephatus being a specifically Central-Asiatic genus. In the Manchurian sub-region these African types are replaced by some Indian forms, such as Geeko and Tachydromus. The northern range of Lizards in this region extends as far as Lapland (Lacerta vivipara and Anguts fragilis).

The most characteristic Ophidian genus of the region is Zamenis, a Colubrine form which is very widely spread, and includes more species (eleven) than any other Palearctic genus. This genus extends over Arabia, and even into the island of Socotra, without being associated there so far as is known at present with Snakes of an either peculiarly African or Indian type. The total nuinber of Palearctic Snakes amounts to sixty, of which twelve are poisonous Snakes, viz., nine Viperines and three Halys. The majority inhabit the Mediterranean district and western Asia.

Four Typhlops and a single Stenostoma have been found in the Mediterranean district and Persia.

Of the small number of Calamariid# and Coronellide, Lhyncho- en aces See ee ok a a

1 Emys lutaria is one of the Tortoises the range of which has become much restricted in post-Glacial times, its remains having been found in peat beds in Norfolk, Belgium, Denmark, and Sweden, where it is now completely extinct.

2 The isolated occurrence of a species of Pseudopus in Khassia has been mentioned above.

RE P-T TEES

[DIsSTRIBUTION.

calamus, Psilosoma, Lytorhynchus, and Ditypophis (Socotra) are genera not found beyond this region.

Colubride are comparatively numerous, and show less affinity to African than Indian forms. Besides Zamenis, Coluber and Elaphis occur in four species each, and Rhinechis and Acontiophis (Afghanistan) are peculiar genera.

Three or four species of Z'ropidonotus represent the groups of Freshwater Snakes.

The Psammophide are well developed; besides two species of Psammophis, Taphrometopon and Celopeltis are peculiar genera, but not extending into eastern Asia.

There is one species of Lryax.

One species of Naja reaches the Caspian.

The three species of Halys are Central-Asiatic.?

Of the nine species of Viperines six belong to Vipera and Cevastes. Daboia and Echis may be considered to have their head- quarters in this region, but they extend into southern India, and Echis has spread east and west along the barren plains or deserts of North Africa and north-western India.

7. New Zealand.—The southernmost parts of South New America, Africa, and Australia are not inhabited by a Zealand.

sufficiently differentiated fauna to be separated from the tropical regions of which they are the continuation. None of the small oceanic islands south of 40° or Tierra del Fuego possess any Reptiles. On the other hand New Zealand is by the possession of //atteria, the sole living remnant of the extinct order Rhynchocephalia (not to mention other scarcely less important parts of its fauna), so much distinguished from the other regions that it can- not be associated with any of them. Although the climate and other physical conditions seem to be well adapted for the existence of the Chelonian and Ophidian types, neither is represented ; and of Lizards only representatives of the ubiquitous Skinks and Geckos have reached its shores ; but some of the latter must have inhabited New Zealand for a long period, as they belong to a distinct genus, Naultinus, which is peculiar to this group of islands.

At the conclusion of this section it will be useful first Résumé to recapitulate the principal features of the Reptilian of Rep-

faunze for each of the primary regions into which the land of the globe has been divided by zoologists, and which nearly coincide with the

geographical divisions, and secondly to arrange the regions according to the natural relations as expressed by this class of animals. A division into zones comprising the corresponding parts of both hemispheres cannot be maintained for Reptiles, since the greater portion of the faunze of the temperate are merely the offshoots of tropical faunz, no peculiar types of a higher than generic rank being developed in them.

1. The INDIAN ReG@Ion is characterized by Trionycide and Emydidx, but few Testudinide. Crocodilidx, with Gavials. Lacer- tilians and Ophidians very numerous. Agamide chiefly arboreal (Draco), and Varanidx. Pythonide and Lycodontide. Ground Snakes, Colubers, Tree Snakes, and Freshwater Snakes abundant in genera. T'ropidowotus, Poisonous Snakes in the proportion of species as 1:10, and comprising Crotalidx and Elapidex, but only two Viperidx.

2. The AFRICAN REGION (exclusive of Madagascar) is characterized by Land Tortoises, Trionycidex, and Chelydidw. Species of Crocodt- dus only. Lacertilians and Ophidians rather numerous. Agamide chiefly terrestrial; Lacertide and Varanidew are well represented. Amphisbenidx, Gerrhosauride, and Zonuride are peculiar to the region. Chamezlcontide. Pythonide and Lycodontide. True Colubers and T'ropidonotus almost absent. Psammophide. Poison- ous Snakes in the proportion of 1:5, comprising Viperide and numerous venomous Colubrines.

3. The Evropo-AsIATIc REGION is composed of a mixture of Indian and African generic and family types; and only a few peculiar genera have their centre of distribution in this part, such as Anguis, Pseudopus, Phrynocephalus, Vromastyx, Stenodactylus, Also- phylax, Ceramodactylus, Scincus, Zamenis, Celopeltis, Taphrometo- pon, Daboia, Echis, Halys. The majority inhabit the sub-tropical

'and warmer parts abutting upon the neighbouring tropical regions,

and are rapidly reduced in number in the more temperate portion. 4. The Tropica Pactric ReGIon possesses one of the terrestrial Chelonian types, Chelydidw, and species of Orocodilus only.

3 Viperine and Crotaline Snakes meet in the centre of the Siberian sub region (Peters, Afonatsder. Berl, Ak., 1877, p. 736).

RE Q—

Besides Skinks and Geckos, terrestrial Agamide and Varanide are well represented ; Pygopodidx. Eryeide, Pythonidx, and Boidz are autochthonous, whilst a small number of innocuous Colubrines are iminigrants from the East Indies. The poisonous Snakes sur- pass in number the non-poisonous, and belong to the Elapide.

5. MADAGASCAR possesses Chelydidx and Testudinide without Trionyx, like South America.

6. The Troprcan AMERICAN REGION is characterized by the full developinent of Testudinidex and Chelydid# and absence of Trionyz ; Emydoids are immigrants from the north. Crocodiles and Alli- gators. Lacertilians numerous in familics and species, the majority being Iguanide# ; the Old-World Lacertidz replaced by Zejidz. Other families, Anguidx, Amphisbunide, Eublepharide, Heloder- pnatid#, &c., well represented. Snakes numerous: Botde and Seytalid# ; Ground Snakes, Colubers, and Tree Snakes abundant, less so Freshwater Snakes ; Z'vopidonotus almost abscnt. Poison- ous Snakes in the proportion of species as 1: 8, and comprising Crotalide and Elaps.

7. The NorrH-AMeERIcAN Recton differs from the Tropical in possessing the Hmydide# in their full development and Trionyz ; only one Testudo. One Alligator. As regards Lacertilians and Ophidians this region occupies the same relation to tropical South America as the Palearctic region does to Africa and India.

8. New ZeEALanpd is characterized by the possession of the Rhynchocephalian type, without any other Reptile with the

exception of certain Skinks and Geckos.

Arranging these primary divisions of the globe in ." accordance with the distribution of the several orders of Che Reptiles, we find that with regard

to CHELONIANS the lonians ; Tegions stand in the following relation to each other :—

I, Emydide fully developed. A. Trionycide fully developed. 1. Testudinide in small numbers or immigrants : a. Indian-Palwaretic regions, and 6. WNorth- American region (including Central America). II. Chelydide fully daveleelt A. Trionycide fully developed. 1. Testudinide fully developed: African region. B. Trionycide absent. 1. Testudinide fully developed: a. Tropical American region, and 6. Madagascar. 2. Testudinide absent: Tropical Pacific region. III. Chelonians entirely absent: New Zealand,

Relations

as to The types of Crocopmt1An and RHYNCHOCEPHALIAN a orders are too few in number and either very widely or ians ;

very locally distributed, so that no general division of the globe's surface can be based upon them alone.

The two large Lacertmtan families Gleckonide and Scincide are generally distributed over the warmer parts of the globe, and therefore not well adapted for the distinc-

RES 473

tion of the primary regions. Nevertheless, in a more detailed account many of the genera would have to come into consideration, being confined to more or less limited areas. Both families are represented in great variety in Australja, but scantily in South America. With regard to other families the regions can be arranged thus :—

I. Agamide and Varanide fully developed.

A. Chameleontide, Lacertide, and Amphisbenide: African region (including as sub-region the Western Palearctie portion, characterized by Anguide).

B. Amphisbenide and Chameleons (except one species) absent; Lacertide few: Indian region with Manchurian sub-region,

C. Pygopodide : Tropical Pacifie region.

II. Iguanide fully developed.

A. Chameleontide : Madagasear.

B. Tejide, Amphishenide, and Anguide : South-American and North-American regions.

ITI. Skinks and Geckos only : Mew Zealand.

Of the families of Opnrm1ans the Pythonide and as to Boidx, the Crotalidz and Viperidex, the Lycodontide and Ophi- Scytalidx replace each other in their distribution, and are, U"- therefore, best adapted for determining the relations of the zoological regions. Although the first two are so far as we know at present the geologically oldest types, and therefore might be employed in the first instance in the arrangement of the regions, their distribution is limited to the equatorial zone, and fails to show the close relations existing between the temperate and equatorial parts of the Old World on the one hand and those of the New on the other. The relations of Madagascar to Tropical America are in the following scheme less distinctly expressed than they are in nature.*

I, Viperide fully developed.

A. Pythonide and Lycodontide : African region.

B. Tropidonoti and true Colubers: western portion of the Europo-Asiatie region.

II. Crotalide fully developed. A. Pythonide and Lycodontide in the tropical parts ; Tropidonoti and true Colubers ; none of the Crotalines with rattles : Indian region (including Manchuria). RB. Tropidonoti and true Colubers; some of the Crotalines with rattles; intermediate between the Manchurian sub-region and tropical America: North-American region.

C. Boidw and Scytalide: Tropical-American region III. Colubrine venomous Snakes only.

A. Pythonide and Boide: Tropical Pacific region. IV. Venomous Snakes entirely absent.

A. Boidee : Madagascar.

V. Snakes entirely absent : New Zealand. (AC3Gs)

REQUENA, a town of Spain, in the province of Valencia, 41 miles to the west of that city on the road to Cuenca, occupies a strong position near the river Oleana in the rocky mountainous district called Las Cabrillas separating Valencia from Castile. It is commanded by a castle, and still has traces of the walls that anciently en- eircled it. The tower of the church of San Salvador is the only other feature of architectural interest. The principal industries are those connected with the culture of grain, fruit, wine, saffron, and silk. The population of the muni- eipality in 1877 was 13,527.

RESERVOIR. See WaTrERWwoRKS.

RESHAL, ae. RaBBeNU SHELoMoH Lorta (or Luria, vulgo Lurye), was one of the famous "Five! Sages" (Rabbis) of the 16th century. His father's name was

1 The other four were—(1) R. Mosheh Isserls of Cracow (the

celebrated " Rema') ; (2) R. Lewa b. Besaleel (the great Halakhist and

Cabbalist), chief rabbi of Prague; (8) R. Mordekhai Yaphe (the

author of the Lebushim), chief rabbi of Posen, &c. ; and (4), last but

| not least, R. Yoseph Caro, principal of the academy of Safed in } Palestine, and compiler of the normative Shulhan 'Arukh,

R. Yehiel of Ostroff (8. W. Russia), a descendant of Rasar? (q.v.). He is also known under the name of Rashal, or Maharshal (7.e., Morenu

Harab R. Shelomoh Loria). He himself was chief rabbi of Lublin, where he died in 1573. His works are of importance on account of the numerous, though only incidental, notices they contain in connexion with the history of Jewish literature, We name six of these works—one edition of each :-—

(1) Hokhmath Shelomoh, discussions on the Babylonian Talmud, Rashi, the Tosaphoth, &c. This work is now an integral part of the Talniud editions. (2) Yam shel Shelomoh:—(a) on Yomtob (or Besah), Lublin, 1636, and reprints ; (6)on Yebamoth, Altona, 1739 ; (c) on Kethuboth (first four perakim), Stettin, 1862 ; (d) on Kiddu- shin, Berlin, 1766 ; (¢) on Gittin, Berlin, 1761, and reprint ; (f) on Bobo Kammo, Prague, 1616, and reprint ; (g) on Hullin, Cracow, 1646, and reprints. All these arein folio. (8) Yerc'oth Shelomoh, supercommentary on Rashi on the Pentateuch, with special refer- ence to Mizrahi's supercommentary, Prague, 1608, 4to. (4)'Atereth Shelomoh, on the Iilieita et Licita of R. Yishak of Diiren, Bascl, 1599, and reprint, folio. (5) "Ammaude Shelomoh, on the Sepher Hammigvoth of R. Mosheh of Coucy, Basel, 1599, 4to. (6) Re- sponse, Lublin, 1574, 4to, and reprints in folio. (S. M. 8.-8.)

2 Yam shel Shelomoh, on Yebamoth, iv. 33.

RESHD. See Rasur.

RESINA, a town of Italy, 6 miles south-east of Naples and practically a southern continuation of Portici, is well known as the usual starting place for tourists on their way up Vesuvius, and as the nearest town to the buried city of Herculaneum. It had 13,626 inhabitants in 1881 (commune 15,593).

RESINS. A resin is a secretion formed in special resin canals or passages of plants, from many of which, such as, for example, coniferous trees, it exudes in soft tears hardening into solid masses in the air. Otherwise it

may be obtained by making incisions in the bark or wood of the secreting plant. Resin can also be extracted from almost all plants by treatment of the tissue with alcohol, and it is formed by the oxidation of essential oils, many authorities being of opinion that all true resins, which are in chemical composition oxidized hydrocarbons, result primarily from the action of oxygen on essential oils. Resinous substances are further produced by the dry distillation of numerous organic compounds and by the drying of fatty drying oils. Certain resins are obtained in a fossilized condition, amber being the most notable instance of this class, and African copal and the kaurie gum of New Zealand are also procured in a semi-fossil condi- tion. The resins which are obtained as natural exudations are in general compound bodies containing more than one simple resin and varying proportions of essential oil. These compounds when soft are known as oleo-resins, and when imperfectly fluid they are called balsams, Other resinous products are in their natural condition mixed with gum or mucilaginous substances and known as gum-resins. Vary- ing in constitution as these bodies do, they also differ widely in physical properties ; but the general conception of a resin is a noncrystalline body, insoluble in water, mostly soluble in alcohol, essential oils, ether, and hot fatty oils, combining with alkalies to form resin soap, soften- ing and melting under the influence of heat, not capable of sublimation, and burning with a bright but smoky flame. A typical resin is a transparent or translucent mass, with a vitreous fracture and a faintly yellow or brown colour, inodorous or having only a slight turpentine odour and taste. Many compound resins, however, from their admixture with essential oils, are possessed of distinct and characteristic odours. A series of gradations among resins may be traced from the hard glassy transparent copals through soft elemis and oleo-resins, semi-fluid balsams and fluid wood oils, to the most limpid essential oils. The hard transparent resins are principally used for varnishes

and cement, while the softer odoriferous oleo-resins and gum-resins containing essential oils are'more largely used for pharmaceutical purposes and incense. No systematic classification of resins has yet been attempted, and there is much uncertainty as to the botanical source of

some well-known commercial varieties, while the chemical con- stitution and relations of many still require elucidation. The following list embraces the principal resins of commerce, and particulars regarding the more important of these will be found under their respective headings. See also Rosin, Gum, and Basa.

I. Copailline or Varnish Resins :—African Copal or Gum Animé (see CopaL, vol. vi. p. 842); Mexican Copal, from Hymenea sp. ; Brazilian Copal, from Hymeneasp. and Trachylobinm Martianwm ; Piney Resin, or White Dammar, Vateria indica and V. acuminata ; Sal Damimar, Shorea robusta and other species; Dammar of Hopea robusta; Black Dammar, from Canarium strictwm; Mastic, Pistaeia Lentiseus (vol. xv. p. 621); Lac (vol. xiv. p. 181); East Indian Dammar (sce DAMMAR, vol. vi. p. 795); Kaurie or Coudie Resin, Dammara australis (see TURPENTINE) ; Sandarach, from Callitris quadrivalvis (see SANDARACH) ; Dragon's Blood (vol. vii. p. 389).

II. Soft or Oleo-Resins :—Manila Elemi, from Canariam com-. mune (see ELEMI, vol. vill. p. 122); Mexican Elemi, Amyris elemi- fera; Brazilian Elemi, Jcica Icicariba and other sp.; Tacamahac (American), Laphrinm tomentosum; Tacamahac (Kast Indian), Calophyllim Inophyllum; Wood Oil, Dipterocarpus turbinatus ; Chian Turpentine, Pistacia Terebinthus; Turpentine, Common Frankincense, and Thus from various Coniferx (see FRANKINCENSE, TURPENTINE, and Rosin) ; Balsam of Canada, Abies canadensis (see BALSAM).

Ill. #ragrant Oleo-Resins and Cum-Resins :—Myrrh, Balsamo- dendron Myrrha (vol. xvii. p. 121); Bdellium or Googul, Balsamo- dendron Roxburghit; Balsam of Gilead or Mecca Balsam, Balsamo- dendron Berryt; Olibanum or Frankincense, Boswellia Carteri, &c. (see FRANKINCENSE, vol. ix. p. 709); Benzoin, Styrax Benzoin and Balsamodendron Mukul (vol. tii. p. 581); Solid Styrax, Styrax officinalis (see StorAX); Liquid Storax, Ligqauidambar orientalis (see SToRAX); Balsam of Peru, Syrospermum perniferum (see BatsaM); Balsam of Tolu, Alyrospermum toluiferum; Labdanum or Ladanum, Cistns ereticus, var. labdaniferus.

IV. Fetid Gum Resins :—Ammoniacum, Dorema anmmoniacun (vol. i. p. 742); Asafoetida, Fernla Narthex and F. Scorodosma (vol. ii. p. 675) ; Galbanum, Fernla galbaniflua and F. rubricaulis (vol. x. p. 22); Opoponax, Opoponax Chironium ; Sagapenum, Ferula sp. ; Sarcocol.

V. Medicinal Resins :—Gamboge, Garcinia sp. (vol. x. p. 60) ; Guaiacum, Guatacwm officinale (vol. xi. p. 230); Euphorbium, Luphorbia resinifera ; Balsam of Copaiba, Copaifera officinalis (sce BALSAM).

VI. £xtract Resins forma class of products principally important from a medicinal point of view. They embrace Scammony from Convolvuins Scammonia, Jalap Resin from Jpomea Jalapa, Podo- phyllum Resin from Podophylium peltatum, Churrus from Indian Hemp (Cannabis sativa), Cubeb Resin from Cubeba officinalis; and many other medicinal products owe their virtues to resinous bodies present in them.

RESPIRATION

jl pe continued existence of an amoeba in a pool of water,

or of a white blood-cell in the liguor sanguinis, de- pends upon a continual interchange of substances between the organism and the surrounding medium. The substances in question pass from the medium into the organism in a certain chemical form; they pass from the organism into the surrounding medium with their chemical form modi- fied. Regarding merely the initial and final stages of this reconstitution of chemical form, we may speak of it as being of the nature of an oxidation. This view does not profess to be comprehensive ; nevertheless, it is true that the metabolic and anabolic processes of cells, taken as a whole, resemble combustion at least to this extent that oxygen and oxidizable carbon take part in them, and that carbon dioxide results from them. Partly as a matter of tradition, and partly as a matter of convenience, physio- logists have described the introduction of oxygen into the

organism and the emission of carbon dioxide from it as the complemental portions of one process of respiration. Although such a combined consideration is not strictly

‘philosophical, inasmuch as it leaves out of view the intro-

duction of the carbon into the organism, yet it is extremely convenient. because the two processes referred to do, in all classes of the animal kingdom from the highest to the lowest, involve the same organs and tissues in their per- formance. Respiration may therefore be defined as the ageregate of those processes which are concerned in the introduction of oxygen into the system and the escape of carbon dioxide from it.

Respiration in such an organism as an amceba is ex- tremely simple. The medium surrounding it contains a practically unlimited supply of oxygen, and is so vast that the carbon dioxide put out into the medium is quickly removed from the neighbourhood of the organism. The

interchange of oxygen and carbon dioxide takes place at the surface of the organism, so far as we know, continu- ously. In the higher animals, constituted as they are of a vast number of structural units accurately packed together, each resembling more or less in its physiological instincts the unicellular amceba, respiration presents a much more intricate problem. The fine interstices which exist between the structural elements do indeed contain a small quantity of a fluid medium which serves the function of the water bathing the amceba ; but the store of oxygen in the medium would speedily become exhausted, and the emitted carbon dioxide would quickly accumulate to a dangerous degree, if the medium were not continually restored to its original purity. This revival is effected by the circulating blood which is brought by its capillaries into the neighbour- hood of the remotest cells of the body. But even the mass of the blood is small compared with that of the cells it nourishes ; unless it be itself purified and restored in turn the interstitial juices which depend upon it for their purification must soon fail to support the respiration of the cells. Such restoration of the blood takes place in certain organs called lungs or gills, where the blood acquires a fresh store of oxygen and parts with its excess of carbon dioxide.

Respiration in the higher animals may therefore be divided into (1) internal respiration, or the interchange of oxygen and carbon dioxide

between the cells of the body and the fluid drenching them, and (2) external respiration, or the gaseous interchange taking place in the special re- spiratory organs (lungs, gills). The first is really a part of Nutrition (¢.v.) ; the second, or respiration proper, is the subject of the present article.

It will be evident on reflection that the process of respiration naturally falls to be described under two divisions, the first of which is concerned with the move- ments of the chest in inspiration and expiration and the manner in which they are brought about, and the second with the interchange of gases which takes place between the blood and the air in the lungs.

THE MovEMENTS oF RESPIRATION.

Structure of the Organs of Respiration.

In order to understand the movements it is necessary first to know the structure of the air passages and thorax.

Anatomy of the Air Passages.—The essential organs of respira- tion consist of an air tube called the trachea, communicating at its upper end with the mouth and bifurcating below into two bronchi, one on the right hand and one on the left. Each bronchus divides and subdivides, diminishing in calibre at every division until a diameter of about 1 mm. is attained ; such a diminutive bronchial tube is called a bronchiole. Every bronchiole is a cylindrical tube which divides dichotomously and rapidly several times, and finally terminates in irregular alveolar passages. The sides of the alveolar passages, and of the subdividing bronchioles in less abundance, are studded with hemispherical dilatations called air cells or alveoli. The terminal portion of au alveolar passage, with its air cells, is sometimes spoken of as an infundibulum—a term we may wisely forget at once, since it points to a distinction where no essential difference exists. The alveoli cluster in great abundanee about the alveolar passages, and, although we have spoken of them as hemispherical, they are in reality made polygonal by mutual com- pression. They are surrounded by connective tissue of a very elastic quality, which gives to their delicate walls a firm support, and is so disposed about them that all the alveoli

derived from one bronchiole are more closely knit together than they are bound to those of a neighbouring bronchiole; hence we may speak of a bronchiole with the assemblage of its members as a dobule, a term of peculiar importance since it will be evident on reflection that each lobule contains all the essential parts of a lung—is in fact a lung in miniature. By connecting tissue the lobules are compacted to form lobes, of whieh two on the left side and three on the right go to make up the respective lungs.

The trachea and larger bronchi are composed of a series of super- posed crescentic pieces or imperfect rings of hyaline eartilage which with a tough fibrous and elastic membrane form a tube ; in the trachea the incomplete cartilage-rings are so placed that their hiatuses are at the back. In the bronchial tubes, especially the

smaller ones, the cartilages are fewer, and less regular in shape, being in fact mere nodules in the bronchial walls. In the bronchioles there is no cartilage. There is an external fibrous and elastic layer investing the trachea and bronchi; and stretching from tip to tip of the imperfect cartilaginous rings are bands of involuntary muscular fibres. The function of the cartilages is doubtless to maintain the patency of the primary air passages by resisting external compression ; that of the mnscular fibres is pro- bably to resist unusual distension of the tubes, as in the strain of coughing, &c. The mucows membrane of the trachea consists of a mucosa, of fine connective tissue, mixed with some tissue of the ade- noid sort, and with elastic fibres, disposed in longitudinal bundles. Beneath the mucosa is the slight swbmucosa, which supports large blood-vessels, lymphatics, and mucous glands, and unites the mucosa to the eartilages. Above the mucosa lies the basement membrane, supporting a stratified epithelium, the upper cells of which are columnar and ciliated and may include amongst them the well-known goblet-cells, while the deeper layers are squamous and capable of regenerating the upper stratum if this be lost. The epithelium is pierced by the ducts of glands. Blood-capillaries, lymphatics, and fine nerves have all been shown to exist in the tracheal mucosa.

The same structural elements as are found in the trachea con- tinue to be found in all the series of bronehial tubes above 1 mm. in diameter ; they are arranged in mueh the same order, save that the muscular fibres are relatively increased and that they surround the whole tube (within the zone occupied by the cartilaginous nodules) somewhat like the tunica media of an artery. The mucous membrane is still ciliated, but its surface-cells are squat. On the other hand the bronchioles and alveolar passages have a different structure: cartilage and glands are no longer found ; the epithelium is flat and ciliated; and the muscular fibres gradually thin out on the walls of the alveolar passages.

It is, however, the air-cells which have most interest for the physiologist. They are about 74th inch in diameter, and their walls are made up of a delicate film-like basement membrane, on the outside of which are numerous elastic fibres. Elastic connective tissue intervenes between neighbouring alveoli, and mingled with it are not a few involuntary muscular fibres, The alveoli are lined with flat cells in a single layer, some cells being large, clear, and polygonal, while others are small and granular, and are found singly or in groups of two or three inserted between the edges of the clear sort. The cells are united together by cement in which fine holes are sometiines to be scen ; through these holes, or pseudo- stomata, migratory leucocytes can make their way into and out of the alveoli,

lenyy f Gey BGO

Col SiO

Fria, 1.—Histology of the lung-vesicles. V,V, blood-vessels bordering on the alveoli; c, c, blood capillaries of an alveolus; J, f, alveolar epithelium shown separately; E,E, relative position of alveolar epithelium and blood-capillartes ; e, é, elastic texture of lung-substance. (From Wermann's Handbuch der Physiologie.)

The blood-vessels of the lung are of two sorts, nutritive and funetional, z.e., eoncerned in the function of the organs. The former are ealled bronchial, and arise from the aorta or intercostal arteries. 'They serve to nourish the tissues of the lung, and the blood they contain finds its way,

in part into the bronchial veins and thence into the vena azygos, intercostal vein, or superior vena cava, and in part into veins of the functional system. The latter system of vessels consists of the pulmonary arteries, which arise in the

right ventricle and run through the lung substance part passu with the bronchial tubes to the lobules. Here they branch into a dense network of capillaries which spread over the outside of the alveoli, enineshing them so tightly as to indent their walls. From the capillaries the blood flows into pulmonary venules which run together to form the large pulmonary veins, which open into the left auricle. The pulmonary venules may anastomose freely, but the arteries never do so. The veins possess no valves.

The lymphatic vessels of the lung abound in all parts, but are usually described as having a threefold distribution,—(a) in the layer of tissue beneath the membrane investing the whole lung, (0) in the perivascular tissue, and (e) in the peribronchial tissue. When fine carbon particles are introduced into the alveoli of the lung they find their way with the greatest ease into the inter- alveolar tissues, and finally come to lie in the three positions just referred to, as may be demonstrated in the lung of any coal miner. The lymphatics of the membrane investing the lung communicate with the free surface of that membrane by means of openings not unlike the stomata of leaves.

The lungs, with the heart and great vessels, are the chief organs contained in the thorax, or that division of the great body cavity which lies above the diaphragm. Each lung is invested with a membrane called pleura, which plays a most important part in the mechanism of respiration.

The Pleural Membrane.—Let ts imagine a bag shaped like an hour glass, and let us suppose one half of this bag to be ana up small and pushed through the constricted portion of the hour glass into the interior of the other half. We should then have a bag shaped like one half of an hour glass but provided with double walls —a more or less globular double-

walled bag with a narrow opening into it. Iffurther we imagine the interior of this double-walled bag (not the interior of the hour glass) to be entirely filled with one lung, we shall have an exact conception of the relationship of the lung to the pleura. The lung so covered is placed in its proper half of the thorax, which in circumstances of health it accurately fills. The outer layer of the double-walled bag is closely glued to the inner wall of the thorax. The inner layer is as firmly adherent to the surface of the lung. The space between the double walls, i.¢., the interior of the original hour glass, is called the plewral eavity ; it is vacuous in health, being moistened by a mere trace of fluid. The substance of the pleural membrane is mainly connective tissue ; and the interior of the pleural cavity is lined with a single layer of flat epithelial cells exhibiting the stomata already referred to.

Lhe Thorax.—The chest or thorax is formed by the dorsal section of the spinal column behind, with the ribs that spring from it on each side, and the sternwm, which lies between the ends of the ribs, in front. The dorsal spine is bowed, so that its concavity looks forward, The ribs, speaking generally, are bowed with their con- cavity turned towards the interior of the chest ; and if we consider the plane of each rib, ¢.¢., that plane in which the arched rib would (approximately) lie flat, we shall find that it declines from the hori- zontal in a twofold manner—first the rib-plane slopes from behind downwards and forwards, and secondly it slopes on each side from the mesial plane of the body downwards and outwards. The ribs 1-7 are connected with the sternum by means of pieces of cartilage which really form the anterior portion of each rib arch ; these ribs are called " true" ; the eighth, ninth, and tenth ribs are united by cartilage, not to the sternum, but to the cartilages of the seventh, eighth, and ninth ribs respectively ; these ribs are called "false" ; the eleventh and twelfth ribs are called 'floating " because they are unattached anteriorly. Hach rib has a head, by which it is joined to the vertebral bodies constituting the spinal column; a tuberele or shoulder at a little distance away from the head, by which in all cases, except those of the tenth and eleventh ribs, it is joined to the transverse process of a vertebra; an angle or rough line a little beyond the tubercle, where the rib, rather suddenly, begins to sweep forwards ; and a neck, the part intervening between the head and tubercle. The space between the ribs is filled u by

two layers of muscles called intereostal—an outer or superficial ew whose fibres

run from above downwards and forwards, and _a deeper or internal .

layer, whose fibres cross those of the former. The outer layer is not found between the costal cartilages in front, nor the inner layer between the costal necks behind. The upper opening of the thorax is filled by the windpipe blood-vessels and other structures pass- 8 into or out of the thorax. The floor of the thorax is formed

y

The Diaphragm.—tThis consists of a thin arched muscular partition, whose fibres spring from the edge of the lower opening of the thorax and converge towards a sheet of tendon in the centre, which is shaped somewhat like a trefoil leaf. We may group the muscular fibres of the diaphragm according to the quadrant from which they spring :— (1) a vertebral portion, whose fibres stretch down to be attached in two well-marked columns or pillars to the bodies of some of the lumber vertebre and by tendinous arches to the transverse processes of the first lumbar vertebra and the twelfth rib ; (2) asternal portion, which springs from the back of the tip of the sternum, and from the sheath of the rectus abdominis muscles below it; (3) and (4) two

lateral or costal portions, which spring from the lower edge of the thorax all round from the tip of the twelfth rib to the junction between the sixth and seventh costal cartilage where the sternal portion begins. The whole diaphragm forms a dome or cu- pola projecting so far into the thorax that the lateral vertical portions of the dome lie in close apposition to the walls of the thorax, as is shown in fig. 2. The top of the dome is somewhat flat and the right moiety of the top is on a higher level than the left, the highest point corresponding with the level of the junction of the right fifth rib with the sternum.

Other Museles of Re- spiration.—The ribs are movable in the sense that each rib plane, which has been described as declining in two ways from the horizontal plane, may be made to approach the horizontal, and ! may

afterwards re- Fig, 2.—Section through tip of 12th rib. turn to its original (From Hermann.) position, To accomplish these movements various muscles are provided, the exact position of which need not be very fully de- scribed. Suffice it to say that in-general they arise from the verte- bral axis, or from some extra-thoracic fixed point, and take hold of the movable parts of the thorax in such a manner that they can pull them up or pull them down. Such muscles are the following (enumerated without reference to their function as inspiratory or expiratory muscles; particular descriptions of them must be sought in the article ANATomMyY) :—levatores costarum ; the three scalene muscles ; the sterno-cleidomastoid ; serratus posticus superior ; parts of the great erector spine muscle ; possibly serratus magnus ; pectoralis minor and major in certain positions of the arm; obli- quus externus ; obliquus internus ; transversalis abdominis ; trian- gularis sterni; serratus posticus inferior; quadratus lumbormn. In addition to these muscles many others may lend occasional aid in respiration by fixing points, such as the scapula, otherwise too freely movable to act as a point d'apput ; such are trapezius, latis- simus dorsi, rhomboidei, and levator anguli scapuli.

Dimensions of the Thorax.—The circumference of the chest just below the level of the arms is about 344 inches in men, and 32 inches in women. At the level of the tip of the sternum it is 82 aud 804 inches respectively. The measurement from clavicle to lower edge of thorax varies very much in different cases. The transverse diameter above the nipple is about 10 to 104 inches in men, and about 94 to 92 inches in women. 'The antero-posterior diameter, measured from the spines of the vertebre behind to the surface of the chest in front is in the upper part of the chest about 64 inches, and in the lower 74 inches. The right half of the chest is generally somewhat larger than the left, because its muscles are usually better developed. Instruments for measuring the exact circumference of the chest ata given level are called cyrtometers ; the best of these is a strip of lead which can be laid along the side of the chest from the spine round to the sternum, and which is pliable enough to follow the incqualities of the chest wall, yet resistent enough to keep the shape imparted to it.

For other figures illustrating the structure of thorax and lungs, see ANATOMY.

The Physiological Actions of the Respiratory Organs.

The organs above described perform during the whole of life certain movements. The commonest are the move- ments of ordinary quiet respiration, but we must include under the head of physiological actions, as distinguished from those provoked by disease, other movements, viz., forced respiration, such as accompanies strenuous muscular exertion, and those modifications of the respiratory act called coughing, hawking, sneezing, snoring, crying, sigh- ing, laughing, yawning, and hiccoughing.

RESPIRATION 477

Normal Resprration.—If the naked body of a person asleep or in perfect inactivity be carefully watched, it will be found that the anterior and lateral walls of the chest move rhythmically up and down, while air passes into and out of the nostrils (and mouth also if this be open) in correspondence with the movement. If we look more closely we shall find that with every uprising of the chest walls the membranous intercostal portions sink slightly as if sucked in, while at the same time the flexible walls of the abdomen bulge as if protruded by some internal force. If respiration be in the slightest degree hurried these motions become so marked as to escape the attention of no one. The elevation of the chest walls is called inspira- tion, their depression expiration. Inspiration is slightly shorter than expiration, and usually there is a slight pause or momentary inaction of the chest between expiration and the following inspiration. Apparatuses for measuring the excursion of a given point of the chest wall during respiration are called thoracometers or stethometers. Appa- ratuses for recording the movements of the chest are called stethographs or pneumographs.

Frequency of Respiration.—The frequency of respiration during perfect rest of the body is 16 to 24 per minute, the pulse rate being usually four times the rate of respiration ; but the respiratory rhythm varies in various conditions of life. The following are the means of many observations ~~made by Quetelet: at the age of one year the number of respirations is 44 per minute; at 5 years, 26; from 15 to 20 years, 20; from 25 to 30, 16; from 30 to 50, 18°1. Muscular exertion always increases the frequency of respira~~ tion. The higher the temperature of the environment the more

frequent is the respiration. Bert has shown that with higher atmospheric pressures than the normal the frequency of respiration is diminished while the depth of each inspira- tion is increased. The frequency of respiration diminishes until dinner time, reaches its maximum within an hour of feeding, and thereafter falls again ; if dinner is omitted, no rise of frequency occurs. The respiratory act can be inter- rupted at any stage, reversed, quickened, slowed, and vari- ously modified at will, so long as respiration is not stopped entirely for more than a short space of time; beyond this limit the will is incapable of suppressing respiration.

Depth of Respiration.—The depth of respiration is measured by the quantity of air inspired or expired in the act ; but the deepest expiration possible does not suffice to expel all the air the lungs contain. The following measure- ments have been ascertained, and are here classified accord- ing to the convenient terminology proposed by Hutchinson. (1) Restdual air, the volume of air remaining in the chest after the most complete expiratory effort, ranges from 100 to 130 cubic inches. (2) Reserve or supplemental air, the volume of air which can be expelled from the chest after an ordinary quiet expiration, measures about 100 cubic inches. (3) 7%dal air, the volume of air taken in and given out at each ordinary respiration may be stated at about 20 cubic inches. (4) Complemental air, the volume of air that can be forcibly inspired over and above what is taken in at a normal inspiration, ranges from about 100 to 130 cubic inches. By wtal capacity, which once had an exaggerated importance attached to it, is meant the quantity of air which can be expelled from the lungs by the deepest possible expiration after the deepest possible inspiration ; it obviously includes the complemental, tidal, and reserve airs, and measures about 230 cubic inches in the Englishman of average height, ze. 5 feet 8 inches (Hutchinson). It varies according to the height, body weight, age, sex, position of the body, and condition as to health of the subject of observation.

Vital eapaeity is estimated by means of a spirometer, a grad- uated gasometer into whieh air may be blown from the lungs.

The residual air, which for obvious reasons eannot be actually measured, may be estimated in the following way (Harless, Gréhant). At the end of

ordinary expiration, apply the mouth to a mouth-pieee eommunieating with a vessel filled with pure hydrogen, and breathe into and out of this vessel half a dozen times—until, in faet, there is reason to suppose that the air in the lungs at the time of the experiment has beeome evenly mixed with hydrogen. Then ascertain by analysis the proportion of hydrogen to expired air in the vessel and estimate the amount of the air whieh the lungs contained by the following formula :—

v: V+v=p: 100; v(100-p) , Vv rs 3

where V =volume of air in the lungs at the time of experiment, v= volume of the vessel eontaining hydrogen, p=proportion of air to hydrogen in the vessel at the end of the experiment. V, then, is the volume of air in the lungs after an ordinary expiration; that is, it ineludes the residual and the reserve air; if we subtract from this the amount of reserve air ascertained by direet measurement, we obtain the 100-180 eubie inches which Hutehinson arrived at by a study of the dead body.

Volume of Respiration.—It is clear that the ventilation of the lungs in ordinary breathing does not merely depend on the quantity of air inspired at each breath, but also on the number of inspirations in a given time. If these two values be multiplied together we get what might be called the volume of respiration (Athmungsgrésse, Rosenthal) in contra- distinction to depth of respiration and frequency of respira- tion. Various instruments have been devised to measure the volume of respiration, all more or less faulty for the reason that they compel respiration under somewhat ab-normal conditions (Rosenthal, Gad, Panum, Hering). From the data obtained we may conclude that the respiratory volume per minute in man is about 366 cubic inches (6000 cubic centim.). In connexion with this subject it may be stated that, after a single ordinary inspiration of hydrogen gas, 6-10 respirations of ordinary air must occur before the expired air ceases to contain some trace of hydrogen.

Types of Respiration.—The visible characters of respira- tion in man vary considerably according to age and sex. In men, while there is a moderate degree of upheaval of the chest, there is a considerable although not preponderating degree of excursion of the abdominal walls. In women the chest movements are decidedly most marked, the excur- sion of the

abdominal walls being comparatively small. Hence we may distinguish two types of respiration, the costal and the abdominal, according to the preponderance of movement of one or the other part of the body wall. In forced respiration the type is costal in both sexes, and so it is also insleep. The cause of this difference between men and women has been variously ascribed (a) to con- striction of the chest by corsets in women, (6) to a natural adaptation to the needs of childbearing in women, and © to the greater relative flexibility of the ribs in women per- mitting a wider displacement under the action of he inspiratory muscles.

Certain Concomitants of Normal Respiration.—If the ear be placed against the chest wall during ordinary respiration we can hear with every inspiration a sighing or rustling sound, called "vesicular," which is _pro- bably caused by the expansion of the air vesicles; and with every expiration a sound of a much softer sighing character. In children the inspiratory rustle is sharper and more pronounced than in adults. If a stethoscope be placed over the trachea, bronchi, or larynx, so that the sounds generated there may be separately communicated to the ear, there is heard a harsh to-and-fro sound dur- ing inspiration and expiration which has received the name of " bronchial."

In healthy breathing the mouth should be closed and the ingoing current should all pass through the nose. When this happens the nostrils become slightly expanded with each inspiration, probably by the action of the M.

dilatatores naris. In some people this movement is hardly perceptible unless breathing be heavy or laboured. As the air passes at the back of the throat behind the soft palate it causes the velum to wave very gently in the current; this is a purely passive movement. If we look at the glottis or opening into the larynx during respira- tion, as we may readily do with the help of a small mirror held at the back of the throat, we may notice that the glottis is wide open during inspiration and that it becomes narrower by the approximation of the vocal chords during expiration. This alteration is produced by the action of the laryngeal muscles. Like the movements of the nostril, those of the larynx are almost imperceptible

in some people during ordinary breathing, but are very well marked in all during forced respiration. The Mechanics of Respiration.

In the description of the anatomy of the thorax it has been shown that the thorax is practically a closed box entirely filled by the lungs, heart, and other, structures contained within it. If we were to freeze a dead body until all its tissues were rigid, and then were to remove a portion of the chest wall, we should observe that every corner of the thorax is accurately filled by some portion or other of its contents. If we were to perform the same operation of removing a part of the chest wall in a body not first frozen we should find, on the other hand, that the contents of the thorax are not by any means in such circumstances bulky enough to fill up the space provided for them. If we were to measure the organs carefully we should find that those which are hollow and whose cavities communicate with the regions outside the thorax are all larger in the frozen corpse than in that which was not frozen. In other words, the organs in the thorax are distended somewhat in order that they may completely fill the chest cavity ; and the nature of this curious and important condition may best be illustrated by the simple diagrams, figs. 3 and 4 (from Hermann's Physiologie des

Fig. 3 Fig. 4. Menschen),—where t is the trachea, / the lung, v the auricle of the heart, & the ventricle, 7 an intercostal space with its flexible membranous covering. When the interior of the vessel is rendered vacuous by exhaustion through the tube 0, the walls of the lungs and heart are expanded until the limits of the containing vessel are accurately filled, while all flexible portions of the walls of the vessel (corre- sponding to the intercostal membranes and the diaphragm of the thorax) are sucked inwards.

From this description it follows that the lungs, even when the thorax is most contracted, are constantly over-

distended, and that, when the cause of this over-distension is removed, the lungs, being elastic, collapse. It further follows that if the thorax is dilated, the flexible hollow organs it contains must perforce be still more distended, —a distension which in the case of the lungs is followed by an indrawing of air through the trachea in all cases where the trachea is

open. Thus, as the act of respiration is primarily a dilatation of the thorax, the part played by the lungs is, as Galen knew, a purely passive one.

How is dilatation of the thorax effected? It has been pointed out that the rib-planes decline from the horizontal in two directions, viz., from behind forwards, and from the antero-posterior mesial plane outwards; a glance at fig. 5 will make this double sloping clear to the reader. It has, moreover, been explained that the diaphragm arches upwards into the thorax in such a manner that the lateral parts of the arch are vertical and in contact with the inner face of the tho- racic walls (see fig. 2), This being the structure of the thorax, the enlargement of its : cavityis broughtabout (1) by raising the rib- planes until they ap- proach the horizontal, and (2) by depressing the diaphragm and making its rounded dome more cone-likein outline. A moment's consideration willshow how these actions en- large the boundaries of the thorax. (a) When the postero-an- terior slope of the rib- planes is diminished by the raising of the anterior ends of the ribs, the whole ster- num is thrust upwards and forwards, and the antero- posterior diameter of the thorax is increased. (6) When the lateral slope of the rib-planes is diminished by the ribs being moved upwards about an axis passing through their sternal and vertebral extremities, it is evident that the lateral diameter of the thorax must be increased. (c) When the muscular portion of the diaphragm contracts, the curves of its dome-like shape are straightened, the whole diaphragm comes to look more conical on section, and the apposition of its lateral parts to the inner surface of the thorax is destroyed ; the two apposed surfaces are drawn apart much as the leaves of a book might be, and a space is formed between them, into which some portion of the lung slips. (d) When the diaphragm descends it draws with it the whole contents of the thorax; inasmuch as the contents as a whole are conical in shape with the apex upward and are fitted into the conical space of the thoracic cavity, it is clear that the descent of the contents will tend to create a space between them and the thoracic walls ; for each stratum of lung, &c., which is adapted to fit a eertain level of thorax, will thereby be brought into a lower and (as the thorax is conical) a more spacious level. Hence the descent of the diaphragm causes a much greater enlargement of the thorax than is measured by the mere elongation of the vertical diameter.

In this manner the thorax is distended and air is drawn into the lungs. The contraction of the thorax in expiration is brought about by the return of the ribs and diaphragm to their original position of rest. }

Fie. 5.—Showing slope of ribs. (From Hermann's Handbuch.)

RESPIRATION

We must now explain how the respiratory muscles effect these movements.

How the Inspiratory Movements are Produced.—The Rib Movements.—These are caused by the contraction of muscles which are fixed either to the central axis of the body (including under that term the head and vertebral column) or to some point rendered sufficiently stable for the pur- pose by the action of other adjuvant muscles. Thus the M. levatores costarum arise from the transverse processes of the 7th cervical and eleven upper dorsal vertebrae, and are attached to the ribs below in series; the M. scaleni spring from the cervical vertebre, and are attached to the anterior parts of the first and second ribs; he M. sterno- cleido-mastoidei arise from the side and back of the skull, and are inserted into the upper part of the sternum and the

clavicle ; the M. pectoralis minor arises from the coracoid process of the scapula, and is inserted into the anterior ends of some of the ribs; the M. serratus posticus superior arises from certain of the cervical and dorsal vertebree, and is inserted into the posterior part of certain of the ribs; the M. cervicalis ascendens (part of the M. erector spinz) arises from certain of the cervical vertebra, and is inserted into the posterior part of certain ribs) The M. serratus magnus and the M. pectoralis major, which are affixed on the one hand to the upper arm and to the scapula respec- tively and on the other to the ribs and to the sternum respectively, may in certain elevated positions of the arm and shoulder act as in- spiratory muscles. When all these muscles contract, A the ribs are raised in the twofold way already de- scribed, some pulling up the anterior ends of the ribs, and others causing the arched ribs to rotate p about an axis passing through their vertebral and sternal joints.

In addition to the muscles just enumerated the M. in- tereostales externi are undoubtedly inspiratory muscles, Every ex- ternal intercostal muscular fibre between a pair of ribs must, when it contracts, of necessity raise both ribs, as is clearly shown by the accompanying diagram (fig. 6). Here a'd' must be shorter than ad, for if BAa=2, then

ab? = AB? + (Bb — Aa)?

+2AB (Bb- Aa) cos x; hence ab will be larger the smaller the angle x, for the cosine increases as the angle diminishes.

By a similar geometrical treatment of the question it may be shown that the in- ternal intercostal muscles when they contract must of necessity depress both the ribs to which they are attached. angle BAe' =z (fig. 7), then

ed? = AB? + (Ae' — Bd')? – 2A B(Ae' — Ba') cos x ; hence e'd' will be larger the larger the angle a.

The case, however, is not so clear with reference to the anterior portions of the internal intercostals which lie between the carti- lages; for it is evident that these fibres have the same direction with regard to the sternum as an axis as the external intercostals have with regard to the vertebral column as an axis; that is to say, the geometrical diagrain in fig. 6 applies to the intercartilaginous internal intercostals as perfectly as it does to the interosseous parts of the external intercostals, the inference being that the inter- cartilaginous internal intercostals tend to elevate the pair of ribs between which they stretch. The geometrical argument is, how- ever, overborne by physiological experiment: Martin and Hartwell have observed in the dog and the cat that the internal intercostals

If the

throughout their whole extent contract (not synchronously) but alternately with the diaphragm; hence we must conclude that their

funetion throughout is not inspiratory like that of the diaphragm, but expiratory.

The Movements of the Diaphragm.—The muscular fibres of the diaphragm are arranged in a radial manner, or more strictly speaking in a manner like the lines of longitude on a terrestrial globe. The central tendon of the diaphragm corresponds to the pole of such a globe. The contraction of the fibres is expended on straightening the longitudinal curves rather than on pulling down the central tendon to a lower level ; in fact the central tendon moves very little in ordinary respiration.

How the Expiratory Movements are Produced.—The action of inspiration disturbs many organs from the position of rest into which gravity and their own physical properties have thrown them. The ribs and sternum are raised from the position of lowest level; the elastic costal cartilages are twisted; the elastic lungs are put upon the stretch; the abdominal organs, themselves elastic, are compressed and thrust against the elastic walls of the belly, causing these to bulge outwards. In short the very act of inspira- tion stores up, as it were, in sundry ways the forces which make for expiration, As soon as the inspiratory muscles cease to act these forces come into play, and the position of rest or equilibrium is regained. It is very doubtful whether any special expiratory muscles are called into action during ordinary respiration. The internal intercos- tals may in man be exercised in ordinary expiration (al- though they are certainly not so exercised in the dog and the cat); but in laboured expiration many muscles assist in the expulsive effort. The muscles forming the belly walls contract and force the abdominal contents against the relaxed diaphragm in such a manner as to drive it farther and farther into the thorax. At the same time by their attachment to the lower edge of the thorax these same muscles pull down the ribs and sternum. The M. triangu- laris sterni, which arises from the back or thoracic aspect of the sternum and lower costal cartilages and is inserted into the costal cartilages higher up, can obviously depress the ribs. So also can the M. serratus posticus inferior, which arises from the thick fascia of the loins and is in- serted into the last four ribs. So also can the M. quadratus lumborum, which springs from the pelvis and is attached to the last rib. Indeed there is hardly a muscle of the body but may be called into play during extremely laboured

respiration, either because it acts on the chest, or because it serves to steady some part and give a better purchase for the action of direct respiratory muscles.

Certain Abnormal Forms of Respiration.

Coughing. —There is first a deep inspiration followed by closure of the glottis. Then follows a violent expiratory effort which bursts open the glottis and drives the air out of the lungs in a blast which carries away any light irritating matter it may meet with. The act is commonly involuntary, bunt may be imitated exactly by a voluntary effort.

Hawking, or Clearing the Throat.—In this act a current of air is driven from the lungs and forced through the narrow space between the root of the tongue and the depressed soft palate. This action ean only be caused voluntarily.

Sneezing. —There is first an inspiration which is often nnusually rapid ; then follows a sudden expiration and the blast is directed through the nose. The glottis remains open all the time. 'Ihe act is generally involuntary, but may be more or less successfully imitated by a voluntary effort.

Snoring is caused by unnsually steady and prolonged inspirations and expirations through the open mouth, —the soft palate and uvula being set vibrating by the currents of air.

Crying consists of short deep inspirations and prolonged expira- tions with the glottis partially closed. Long-continued erying leads to sobbing, in which sudden spasmodic contractions of the diaphragm cause sudden inspirations and inspiratory sounds generated in larynx and pharynx.

Sighing is a sudden and prolonged inspiration following an unusually long pause after the last expiration.

Laughing is caused by a series of short expiratory blasts which provoke a clear sound from the vocal chords kept tense for the purpose, and at the same time other inarticulate but very character- istic sounds from the vibrating structures of the larynx and pharynx. The face has a characteristic expression. This act is essentially involuntary, and often is beyond control; it can only be imitated very imperfectly.

Yawning is a long deep inspiration followed by a shorter expiration, the mouth, fauces, and glottis being kept open in a characteristic fashion. It is involuntary, but may be imitated.

Hiccough is really an inspiration suddenly checked by closure of the glottis; the inspiration is due to a spasmodic contraction of the diaphragm. The closure of the glottis generally leads to a characteristic sound.

Innervation of the Respiratory Movements.

The respiratory actions are seen from the above description to be very complicated: their regular performance depends upon the coordination of a great number of factors ; and, inasmuch as the respiratory movements do not happen invariably after one stereo- typed pattern, but admit of various modifications, such as sighing, hiccoughing, &c., we must infer that the coordination is such as to admit of corresponding variations. The coordination of the inspiratory and expiratory movements is brought about through the nervous system, the connexion of which with the organs of respiration already described must now be stated.

Speaking very generally, there is a nervous centre in the cerebro-spinal axis from which certain nerve fibres proceed to the muscles of respiration ; these are called the efferent or centrifugal fibres. There are other fibres which run from the peripheral parts of the body towards the same centre and exert a control over it ; these are called afferent or centripetal. The impulses to movement start from the centre and travel down the efferent fibres to the muscles, while impressions arising in the periphery of the body are carried along the afferent fibres to the centre and modify its action.

The Respiratory Centre.—There is a portion of the medulla oblongata destruction of which causes immediate and permanent cessation of all respiratory movements. This spot has been found to lie in the grey substance near the tip or nib of the calamus scriptorius; it extends on both sides of the middle line, and has re- ceived the name of "le nceud vital" (Flourens). If the spinal cord be severed immediately below the spot, all respiratory movements in the parts of the body below the level of section cease at once, while movements of respiration in parts situated above the level (e.g., in the face) continue momentarily. If the severance be made above the vital knot, the facial movements of respiration cease, while those of the trunk continue. The nervous centre is bilateral, each half serving its proper side of the body; if the medulla oblongata be split longitudinally in the middle line, through the noeud vital, respiration goes on unchecked ; but if one lateral half of the vital area be destroyed, respiration at once ceases on the same side of the body.

While the above hypothesis of a respiratory centre in the medulla presiding over the movements of respiration is in all probability substantially correct, it must be stated that, in certain circum- stances of experiment (¢.g., when the animal is young and has been poisoned with strychnia, or is kept in a warm chamber), respira- tory movements do occur even when the medulla oblongata with the noeud vital has been removed. That is to say, there are centres in the cord of a lower order than the medullary respiratory centre which are under ordinary circumstances dependent on the main centre but which may act independently.

The respiratory centre must be regarded as the seat of origin of the impulses which cause the muscular movements of inspiration and expiration. During the whole of intra-utcrine life the centre is inactive, but almost immediately after the child is born, or the placental circulation is interrupted by compression of the umbilical blood-vessels, the centre becomes quickened, and fails not to yield the appropriate stimulus at short intervals during the whole after- period of life. Itis impossible to resist the conclusion that the immediate cause of the activity of the respiratory centre is the impure and impoverished state of the blood, which it is the function of respiration toremedy. So long as the placenta performs the function of purifying the blood of the fetus and supplying it

with oxygen the respiratory centre is quiescent; the moment the placenta becomes incapable of purifying the foetal blood, as, for example, when the mother is suffocated or asphyxiated, the respiratory centre prepares to act and respiratory movements follow.

If it is true that the presence of impure or venous blood in the respiratory centre is the cause of the first respiratory act of an animal, it is also true that the presence of highly arterialized blood is sufficient to render the centre absolutely inactive again. If air or oxygen gas be driven through the lungs of an animal and allowed to escape through holes made in the chest walls, the blood becomes so rapidly and perfectly purified that the whole vascular system is filled with the pure blood which is commonly found in the arteries only. In this casc the movements of respira-

tion cease until such time as the blood has again lost its purity, when respiration begins, as one might say, da capo. There is no doubt that the essential cause of the inactivity of the respiratory centre in this experiment is the presence in excess of oxygen gas, and that the absence of a certain proportion of oxygen in the blood circulating in the body endows the blood with a power of stimulat- ing directly or indirectly the respiratory centre. To this subject we shall return.

The Efferent Fibres.—The fibres proceeding from the respiratory centre run down the spinal chord and emerge for the most part in the cervical and dorsal region. Some fibres are collected into a nerve trunk which takes its rise in the third, fourth, and fifth cervical nerves; this is the phrenic nerve, which supplies that half of the diaphragm lying on the corresponding side of the body. Section of one phrenic nerve causes paralysis of the corresponding half of the diaphragm. Other fibres run in the tntercostal nerves for the supply of the intercostal muscles, levatores costarum, &c.; others again run in the cervical nerves for the supply of the sterno- mastoid, scaleni, &c. Section of these nerves leads to paralysis of the muscles supplied by them. The facial muscles of respiration are supplied by efferent fibres from the seventh cranial nerve, and the laryngeal muscles by the laryngeal branches of the vagus.

In addition to the nerves which supply the respiratory muscles, there are efferent fibres which run in the course of the vagus to the muscles supplying the larynx and the bronchial tubes. The vagi (also called the pneumogastric nerves) are two important trunks which arise from the medulla oblongata, and, after receiving communications for neighbouring nerves, run down by the side of the windpipe to reach the thorax and abdomen. By means of appropriate apparatus, of which several varieties have been devised, contraction of the small bronchial tubes may be readily made sensible and even graphically recorded. A study of the experi- mental results obtained after electrical stimuiation of the pneumo- gastric nerves leaves no doubt that these nerves contain motor fibres for the bronchial tubes. The exact distribution of the superior and inferior laryngeal branches of the vagus to the muscles of the larynx is described under ANATOMY.

The Afferent Fibres.—Many nerve fibres have been ascertained by physiological experiment to have communication with the respira- tory centre. For example, the nerves of the skin of the chest, when stimulated by the application of cold water, cause a gasping inspiration ; the nerves of the skin of the sides of the body and of the soles of the feet, when stimulated by tickling, cause that peculiar series of spasms of the diaphragm which constitute laugh- ing; and soon. But the vagus nerve is that which contains the afferent fibres of chief importance to the respiratory movements. The vagus fibres proceeding from larynx, trachea, lung, and stomach certainly, and possibly also those proceeding from other organs of the abdomen, are all capable of influencing the activity of the main respiratory centre. If the trunk of the vagus nerve on each side of the neck be laid bare and divided in an animal such as a rabbit, the respiratory movements become much less frequent but at the same time deeper. Ifthe end of the nerve above the point of section be carefully stimulated by a weak electric current, respiration again becomes quicker and proportionately shallow until in fact the natural type is restored. If the strength of stimulus be still further increased, the rapidity and the shallowness of breath- ing become still more remarkable, until a degree of stimulation is reached when there is no longer any rhythmical character in respiration, which is reduced to a feeble inspiratory spasm. These facts are conveniently grouped and explained by the following

hypothetical statement. The vagus nerve contains fibres running up to the respiratory centre which have the function of modifying the native tendencies of the centre in such a manner as to accelerate its explosions of activity and at the same time render them less formidable. These fibres are constantly in action during healthy life ; hence, on dividing the vagus trunk including these fibres, the respiratory centre reverts to its natural type of slow and deep action. On stimulating these fibres artificially they may be brought to spur on the centre once more, or even carry the accelerating process to the point of producing continuous inspiration.

Experiment has, however, shown that the influence of the vagus nerve is not so simple as is here supposed. There are other fibres in the vagus which seem to arise in the larynx and run in the trunk of the two laryngeal (but chiefly in the superior laryngeal) branches of the nerve ; these have powers exactly opposed to those ascribed to the main-trunk fibres. If the superior laryngeal nerve be divided and the higher end at the point of division be stimu- lated, respiration becomes less frequent and more powerful. These fibres of opposite tendencies run side by side in the vagus trunk, and must be alike excited when an electrical stimulus is thrown into the nerve. The fact that the total result of stimulation is in favour of the first-described accelerating nerves may be hypothetically explained by supposing the accelerating fibres to be more numerous, or more potent with the given stimulus, than the slowing fibres.

Nature of the Activity of the Respiratory Centre. —Various interest-

|

—

SaaS

ing questions arise as to the exact mode of action of the respiratory centre. Is there an expiratory centre apart from the inspiratory ? In ordinary quiet breathing expiration is not a muscular act in the sense that inspiration is ; but in laboured breathing many muscles are coordinated

to help in the act; we may therefore assume that there is an expiratory coordinating mechanism as well as an inspira- tory. Another inquiry touches the question of the stimulation of the respiratory centre. We have arrived at the conclusion that a certain impoverished or impure state of the blood is the cause of the activity of the respiratory centres. Is it by a direct action of the blood on the nerve centre, or is it by an action of the blood upon the end-organs of nerves in the peripheral parts of the body which indirectly induce the respiratory centre to act? In other words, would the respiratory centre act under the stimulus of a certain degree of impurity of its blood if it were cut off absolutely from its afferent fibres? This is not a question which admits of an absolutely decisive experimental answer ; but this may be said in reference to it, that, if the cerebrum be extirpated, the pneumo- gastric nerves divided, and the spinal chord severed at a poiut below that from which the main respiratory efferent nerves

emerge, notwithstanding that the respiratory centre is thus-

separated from by far the greater number of the sensory nerves of the body, respiration still goeson. Further, if the spinal axis is divided at a level immediately above that of the respiratory centre, respiration goes on in the lower parts of the body but ceases in the upper—that is, the facial movements cease ; while, if the division be carried through a point immediately below the level of the respiratory centre, although chest movement ceases and respiration may in strictness be said to be permanently stopped, yet the facial movements, which are just as essential to the complete idea of respiration, and which are innervated from the common respiratory centre, continue to be performed so long as any life remains in the mutilated animal. There is therefore a very strong presumption that the respiratory centre is automatic, that is, that it has within itself the spring of its own activity, and that the impurity of the blood which sets the respiratory mechanism agoing does so by acting upon the respiratory nervous centre directly, However started, the inspiratory stimulus is discharged rhythmically down the efferent respiratory nerve during healthy life. The rhythm is capable of wide variation, both by the exercise of the will and by the operation of external conditions, such as heat and muscular exercise of the body, which

accelerate respiration independently of the will. The question why the dis- charge is rhythmical js one of the deeper problems of physiology, and touches the essential nature of nervous actions in general. It is customary in physiological treatises to illustrate it by supposing a mechanism which offers a resistance to the discharges of its own energy ; when the energy reaches a certain degree of tension resistance is overcome and the discharge takes place, but a certain time must elapse before energy can again accuinulate to the extent of ovcrcoming resistance. lt is further supposed that resistance is capable of being varied by external agencies ; when it is increased the discharges oceur at longer intervals, because more energy must be accumulated before resistance can be over- borne, but at the same time they are more violent; when resistance is diminished, the discharges are more rapid but less powerful, until, when resistance becomes nil, the discharge is continuous. Such illustrations are, however, of very doubtful value ; they impart a sense of clearness to our views of nervous action by turning attention from the problem we wish elucidated to another and altogether different problem. There is in fact no probability whatever, so far as facts yet go, that nervous rhyth- niical action is brought about in any such way.

CHEMISTRY OF RESPIRATION.

The mechanism which has just been described has for its object an interchange of substances between the body and the external medium. Certain substances pass out of the body at the lungs, and others are taken into the body. The discussion of this interchange pertains to what is called the Chemistry of Respiration.

Comparison of Inspired and Expired Air.—No incon- siderable knowledge of this exchange of matters may be obtained at once by a simple comparison of inspired and expired air. The air we breathe varies somewhat accord- ing to the various circumstances of season, time of day, height above sea level, prevailing wind, &c.; but all samples of pure atmospheric air have substantially the following composition :—

1. Gases :— 0}. A pecisies aetna 20°84 to 20°92 vols. p.c. DNPIGRO SEM «cx cseco nisinemsieaertie vel 79:00 to 79°05, Garhow dioxide ….....02 Whee vesees 0-04 =a,

2, Aqueous vapour.—The absolute amount of this ingredient varies very much, and must be distinguished carefully from the relative or sensible moisture, which depends more upon the temperature of the air than upon the absolute quantity of watery vapour it contains,

Air which is expired from the lungs has approximately the following composition :—

1. Gases :— aT ayy sc vn4sksevaxeases Pucrnengeeee 16°03 vols. p.c. Nitrogen …... eerie on ae cere con desoeatec (oL02

Carbommdioxtds ~ .....eseas 3°3 to 5:5 An

Probably there is an — ceedingly small excess of nitrogen in expired air as compared with inspired air.

2. Aqueous vapour.—The absolute amount is always such as to saturate the air at the temperature which it has on expiration, 1.€., 86°:3 C,

3, Organic matter of uncertain composition but hurtful when reinhaled. ;

On an average (subject, however, to cousiderable varia- tions) it appears that the body takes up in respiration oxygen gas to the amount of 4°78 vols. per cent. of the air inhaled, and it gives off carbon dioxide to the average amount of 4°38 vols. per cent., besides traces of nitrogen, ammonia, hydrogen, and light carburetted hydrogen. Leaving out of calculation the minute traces of the latter bodies, it will be observed that the volume of oxygen taken into the body is larger than the volume of carbon dioxide given off; and, since, under like conditions of pressure and temperature, equal volumes of oxygen gas and carbon dioxide gas contain the same quantity of oxygen, it is clear that more oxygen enters the body at the lungs than escapes from it; therefore the whole of the oxygen taken into the body does not leave it as carbonic acid or expired air. The ratio of CO, expired to O absorbed is called the "respiratory quotient"—

oe ae

70,2 47839 916.

Composition of Air in the Air Cells—The whole of the air of the lungs is not expelled at each breath, some remain- ing in the depths as residual air lodged in the alveoli or air cells. Hence we cannot assume, from an examination of expired air, that we know the constitution of the air in the recesses of the lungs where it comes most intimately into contact with the blood. To attain such knowledge it is necessary to examine the deeper air directly, and the air is obtained for such purposes by means of a lung catheter.1 In this way it has been ascertained that the alveolar air of a dog's lung contained about 3°8 per cent. of CO, at a time when the expired air contained about 2°8 per cent. As to the amount of O we may safely assume that the alveolar air never in ordinary circumstances contains less than 10 per cent. when the expired air contains 16 per cent.

Daily Quantity of Substances Exchanged.—During 24 hours an average person would take in about 10,000 grains of oxygen in respiration, and give out about 12,000 grains of carbon dioxide, corresponding to 3300 grains of carbon; at the same time about 9 oz. of water would be exhaled. These quantities vary, however, within wide limits according to the conditions of age, sex, atmospheric pressure, and the like. Thus, for example, in young per- sons the O absorbed is relatively greater than the CO, given off, and a child gives off twice as much CO, in relation to its body weight as an adult. Again, males

1 This is a flexible tube so thin as to pass readily into a small bronchial tube. It is provided with an india-rubber collar, which is capable of inflation. 'The apparatus is passed (with the collar col- lapsed) through a hole in the trachea and guided into one of the finer bronchial tubes; the collar is then inflated, and serves to fix the catheter hermetically in the bronchial tube and to place that tube with its tributary tubes and alveoli in direct communication with the outer air through the fine catheter. Breathing is unimpeded ; and air may be collected from the recesses of the lung for analysis.

PO

after the first few years of life give off more CO, than females. When the external temperature is so low as to depress the body temperature, less CO, is given off ; if it is so high ag to raise the body temperature, the CO, is increased. If, however, the surrounding medium is cooler than the body but not cold enough to lower the body temperature, more O is taken in, and more CO, is given out; and wee versa. Muscular exercise also increases considerably the CO, given off; and more COQ, is given off a short time after a meal than during fasting, especially when the meal includes substances rich in carbon. Speak- ing generally, alcohols, ethers, tea, &c., diminish the CO, ; but the results are not constant. Again, while the number and depth of the respirations do not influence the formation of CO, in the body, they affect the removal of that which is already formed. Increased rate of respira- tion and increased depth of respiration both cause an absolute increase in the quantity of CO, expired, although with reference to the total amount of air which passes into and out of the lungs during such laboured breathing the CO, is relatively diminished. Lastly, when the atmo- spheric pressure is diminished, as in ballooning, respira- tion becomes difficult, CO, is imperfectly removed from the body, and the blood contains less O. When pressure is increased, respiration is easy and slow (2-4 per minute), the capacity of the lungs increases, the activities of the tissues are marked, and as a result of this more O is absorbed and more CO, is excreted.

The Blood in Respiration.

Having ascertained the nature and quantity of the materials exchanged in the lungs, we may now ask con- cerning the method of the exchange. There is no difficulty in understanding how the cold air introduced into the lungs is warmed and saturated with moisture by contact with the moist walls of the air passages and bronchi. As to the gaseous substances which appear in traces in the expired air nothing definite is known; they may in part arise in the decomposition of the solid organic impurities of expired air, and may in part escape from the blood itself. The origin of the solid poisonous organic substances, which are of such vital interest from a sanitary point of view, is alsoa matter of great obscurity. Some portions of it doubtless consist of effete particles of tissue from the walls of the bronchial tubes and cavity of the mouth and nose; for example, epithelial

scales may be discovered in the condensed moisture of the air expired into an ice-cold globe, and so also may the organized bacilli of tubercle when the subject of experiment happens to be phthisical. Other portions may spring directly from the blood. The chief inquiry, however, centres about the origin of the carbon dioxide and the absorption of the oxygen, for the understanding of which a knowledge of the blood is necessary.

The Blood.—This, as it circulates in the vessels of man and vertebrates generally, isa viscous and to the naked eye homogeneous liquid of red colour,—the blood of the pulmonary veins, of the left side of the heart, and of the systemic arteries being normally of a bright scarlet hue, and the blood of the right side of the heart, of the systemic veins, and of the pulmonary artery being of a brownish-red colour. In other words the blood enters the capillaries of the lungs of a brownish-red colour, and leaves them bright scarlet in hue; it enters the general capillaries of the body as a bright scarlet fluid and leaves them as a brownish-red fluid. Although homogeneous to the naked eye, the blood is found on Microscopic examina- tion to consist of a colourless fluid, called liquor sanguinis or plasma, holding in suspension large numbers of solid

bodies, the corpuscles of the blood; the more numerous of |

BESPIRAT TO ®

these are red, the others are colourless and are commonly spoken of as white. The specific gravity of blood probably varies between 1045 and 1075. Fresh blood is feebly alkaline in reaction.

When blood is shed it remains for a minute or two as fluid as it is in the blood-vessels; but in 2—6 minutes it begins to pass into the state of a soft red jelly, which gradually acquires greater consistence, and by the contrac- tion of one of its constituents at length expresses a fluid ; the contracted jelly is called the clot, or crassamentum ; the expressed fluid is the serwm; and the whole process is denominated coagulation. Contraction of the clot may go on for 10-48 hours. This process of coagulation is due to the separation from the plasma of a body called fibrin, which entangles in its meshes the corpuscles of the blood. When coagulation is delayed for several minutes (as it

always is in horse's blood, and as it usually is in the blood

of men suffering from inflammatory diseases), the blood corpuscles, being specifically heavier than the plasma, have time to subside a little way before coagulation commences. Hence the uppermost layers of such blood become nearly free from coloured corpuscles ; and subsequently, when the blood coagulates, the clot exhibits the phenomenon of the buffy coat,—that is, the upper part of the clot is of a yellowish colour. If, instead of allowing blood to coagulate undisturbed, it be stirred or whipped with twigs, the fibrin does not entangle the corpuscles but separates as a stringy mass which adheres to the twigs; the corpuscles remain in the serum and constitute defibrinated blood. Coagula- tion is promoted (a) by exposure to a temperature slightly higher than that of the living body ; (0) by contact with foreign matter; (c) by the addition of minute quantities of common salt or other neutral salts. It is delayed or suspended (a) by exposure to an ice-cold temperature ; (0) by contact with the living blood-vessels; (c) by the addi- tion of a sufficient quantity of sodium chloride, sodium sulphate, or some other neutral salts.

Reviewing all the facts which have been ascertained respecting coagulation, it would appear that the process is dependent upon the presence in the liquor sanguinis of a proteid body called fibrinogen, which under favourable circumstances undergoes conversion, or perhaps decomposi- tion, into fibrin. This conversion, when it occurs outside the body, appears to be connected with the action of a ferment produced in the colourless corpuscles, and pro- bably only set free when they break down.

The red corpuscles of man and the Mammalia gener- ally, except the Camelidz, are biconcave disks, possessing neither skin nor nucleus or interior body. In birds, reptiles, and most fishes they are nucleated, elliptical, and biconvex. In the camel the red corpuscles are oval. The average diameter of the disk in man is 3,),5 inch and the thickness about 315, inch.

The substance of which the red disks is composed is elastic ; the disks may therefore be squeezed through fine chinks smaller than their own diameter and may after- wards regain their original shape. When in the

blood- vessels the red corpuscles are hurried along indiscrimately in the blood current, but when the blood stands the red corpuscles cling together in rows like piles of coin, which are technically called rowleaux; this is a physical pheno- menon entirely due to the shape of the corpuscles. The white or colourless corpuscles are globular masses of granular protoplasm, provided with one or more interior bodies called nuclei, but destitute of a skin. They have the power of independent movement, which the red cells have not, resembling in this respect the amoeba. They can send out processes, change their outline, and move from place to place by laying hold on resistent objects by means of a projected process and dragging their bodies

RESPIRATION

along. They have a diameter of 54,5 inch when at rest |

and globular. They are far less numerous than the red corpuscles ; the proportion of white and red corpuscles in various conditions is shown in the following table :—

In the morning fasting state…..... eto tss0S elles SLE vests 1: 716 Malt an; out Arter DVCAKTARE, 6.5.06 em rwnarncisee «need me sacnmens 1:347 Thives hours after broakfagt/.....00:scsesesesessoedeseeee 1:1514 Ter thie eploniie Veli. tapagt Feac vd teunneat det Soyeuse eede tes 1:60 Pie NEG Gpleaie BOI oii gen peee des thyeyenagiynae sds iows s 1 : 2260 In the hepatic vein,..... uke ining hoes SAW Aen nati 7170 ee en ee ere 1:740

In addition to typical white and red corpuscles there are others, provisionally called intermediate corpuscles, red granular corpuscles, or hematoblasts, which are granular and nucleated. Probably these corpuscles are involved in a special manner in the development of the fibrin-ferment. It has been calculated that one cubic millimetre (7c. a cube whose side measures about =; inch) contains five million corpuscles of all kinds.

The chief constituents of the blood may now be dis- cussed seriatim :—

Constituents of the Liquor Sanguinis.

Fibrin.—When fresh this is an elastic substance belonging to the group of proteid bodies ; it is insoluble in pure water, but

Fre. 8.— Blood corpyscles, A, Moderately magnified ; red corpuscles in roul- eaux; white corpuscles at a, a. B, CO, D, Red corpuscles more highly magnified. , Red corpuscle swollen to a sphere by imbibition of water. F, White corpuscle, magnified same as B; G, the same, throwing out blunt processes ; K, the same, treated with acetic acid, and showing nucleus magnified same as D. 4H, J, Red corpuscles puckered or crenate —Z/, all over, J, at edge only. (From Huxley's Elementary Physiology.)

is soluble in solutions of common salt and in dilute hydrochloric

"aba at the temperature of the body. Human venous blood yields

rom 2'2 to 2°8 parts per

thousand of fibrin. So far ad Se .

as we know, fibrin does

not exist as such in the plasma hefore it is coagu-

lated; but there does exist 1

a body, fibrinogen, which

is the precursor of fibrin.

{ bel WH itil i MANE

483

posed that fibrin arises in the union of the two bodies fibrinogen and para-globulin.

Serum-albumin.—This is a proteid body which coagulates on heating.

Certain extractive matters.—These include neutral fats, lecithin, and cholesterin ; sugar; urea, uric acid, creatine, creatinine, &c. ; and a yellow pigment.

Inorganic Salts.—These are the chlorides, phosphates, and sulphates of sodium, potassium, calcium, and magnesium ; sodium and chlorides are the main constituents.

Gases. —Especially CO, ; but see below.

Constituents of the Red Corpuscles.

Oxryhxmoglobin.—This interesting substance has the general chemical composition of an albuminous body with the addition of the element iron: —C, 54:00; H, 7°25; N, 16°25; Fe, 0°42; S, 0°63; O, 21°45=100°00.

It is the cause of the red colour of the corpuscles. It may be obtained in the form of beautiful crystals by a variety of methods, which all have the following steps in common :—(1) to effect the solution of the oxy- hemoglobin of the red corpuscles in the serum or in water, and (2) to effect the crystallization of it from solution either by adding alcohol, or by cold, or by both combined. The forms of the crystals differ in different animals ; the chief forms are given in fiz. 9. Oxy- hemoglobin has the property of giving up a portion of its oxygen on very slight provocation, C.4s5 when treated with easily oxidizable sub- stances, or when sub- mitted to moderate heat in a vacuum. The resulting sub- stance is called re- duced hemoglobin or, shortly, hzemo- globin ; it is capable of reproducing the original oxyhemo- globin on simple ex- posure to oxygen or toair. This property is of the highest im- portance in the func- tion of respiration, as will be explained in the section on the gascs of the blood.

Solutions of oxyhemoglobin of moderate strength have the fine scarlet hue of arterial blood. When interposed between the sun and a spectroscope they cause the absorption of definite portions

£6 i G ei

It may be separated from plasma by diluting the 9 plasma freely with water

i

4

Hi GE ea ad

at an ice-cold tempera- ture, and passing for a long time a stream of CO, 4 through it; or by adding common salt to plasma until the plasma contains 12 to 16 per cent. of salt the fibrinogen is precipitated in a flaky form. Besides fibrinogen, liquor sanguinis contains another proteid body intimately concerned in the formation of fibrin; this is serwm-globulin or para-globulin. It also may be precipitated from diluted plasma by a stream of CO,; but it may be much more perfectly eliminated by adding magnesium sulphate until the plasma is saturated. It is a body the presence of which greatly facilitates or promotes the develop- ment of fibrin from fibrinogen ; indeed some observers have sup-

| RUMAH Athi ait

| Hi} Ht i

| a Hy NN Hi

| ALLURE

Fig. 10.—1, 2, Spectra of solutions,—1 containing less than 0-01 per cent. and 2 containing 0:37 per cent. of oxyhamoglobin ; 8, spectrum of solution containing about 0°2 per cent. of haemoglobin.

1s ae Eee |] a

of the spectrum, and give a characteristic appearance to it. After the solution has been reduced (as it may be very readily by means of an alkaline solution of a ferrous salt, in which precipitation of ferrous hydrate is prevented by the presence of tartaric or citric acid), it assumes a brownish colour and the absorption spectrum becomes changed. The

spectra of oxyhemoglobin and of reduced hemoglobin when the solutions are of moderate strength are given in fig. 10.

484

It has been determined that 1 gramme of hemoglobin can link to itself 1°671 cc. of oxygen gas (at 0° C. and 760 mm. pressure) in the above-described loose manner,—that is, in such a manner that when admitted to a vacuous space at a moderate temperature the two become again dissociated. {

When blood or a solution of oxyhemoglobin is shaken up with carbon monoxide, the "dissociable" or "respiratory" oxygen is displaced, and a new compound of CO and hemoglobin is formed which has a spectrum very like that of oxyhemoglobin, but is incapable of reduction by the means which are sufficient to reduce oxyhemoglobin. In like manner (with certain precautions) a com- pound of hemoglobin with NO may be formed. _ ;

Various products of the destructive decomposition of hemoglobin are known, possessing characteristic spectra and properties ; these need not be further described.

Proteid Substances.—Besides oxyhemoglobin, the red corpuscles contain other proteid substances, probably for the most part para- globulin.

Lecithin.

Cholesterin.

Inorganic Salts:—Potassium and phosphates are the main con- stituent ; sodium, calcium, and magnesium are also found as chlorides and sulphates.

Gases. —See halo.

Constituents of the White Corpuscles.

Proteid Substances.—Several varieties have been separated. Lecithin.

Certain extractives, including glycogen.

Inorganic Salts,—Kspecially potassium and phosphates.

The Gases of the Blood.

The blood when admitted into a vacuous space readily gives up more than half its volume of mixed gases, consisting of oxygen, carbon dioxide, and nitrogen. The oxygen is present in much larger quantities than could be held in simple solution by the water of the blood ; it is in fact mainly held in feeble combination by the hemoglobin of the coloured corpuscles ; only a trace of it is, under ordinary circumstances, held in true solution. The carbon dioxide, whilst not existing in larger quantity in blood than would be possible if it were simply dissolved by the water of that fluid, is

TUNA

RUN

TTT

I

MMMM

=

r=]

Fig. 11.—Pump for extracting gases of the blood. a, filling-globe; 6, barometer bulb ; d, three-way stopcock (B C D, the same enlarged, A, its plug); e, gas- delivery tube; 7, mercurial gauge; g, drying apparatus, containing sulphuric acid ; , froth-chamber ; 7, bulb in which the blood is boiled.

nevertheless to a small extent in a state of loose chemical combina- tion in which both plasma and corpuscles share. The nitrogen is held in a state of simple solution in the liquor sanguinis. These gases are yielded in

different proportions by arterial and venous blood, as is shown in the following table :—

RESPIRATION

From 100 vols. of Blood.

0. | CO;; N. ATteriellse saa: coro d 22 vols. 85 vols. 1-2 vols. WenOmls), ce sen sac soxcacss 8-12 vols. 40-50 vols. 1-2 vols.

The method of extracting the gases of the blood which has been found to be most convenicnt is one in which the blood is introduced into the Torricellian vacuum existing above the column of mercury in a barometer. Blood is collected over mercury in such a way as to avoid all access of air; it is then introduced by an appropriate mechanism into the space above the barometric mercury. At once the gases froth up and fill the space ; the aqueous vapour which at the same time arises is absorbed by a special drying apparatus com- municating with the vacuum. Means exist of warming the vacu- ous space up to about 45° C., which is a temperature sufficient to cause the escape of nearly all the gases of the blood ; the last por- tions of carbonic acid are, however, more rapidly evolved by allowing a small volume of a thoroughly boiled-out solution of phosphoric acid to enter the blood receptacle near the close of the operation.

How the Gaseous Exchanges are Effected in Respiration.

For the purposes of description, and in reference exclusively to its respiratory function, the blood may be looked upon as a watery solution of certain substances having respectively a slight chemical attraction for oxygen and for carbon dioxide. The chief of these substances is haemoglobin, which is concerned solely with the oxygen ; others, less perfectly known, are concerned with the carbon dioxide, and include certain saline constituents of the plasma (NaHCO,)! and perhaps also certain constituents of the corpuscles. The affinity of these substances for oxygen and carbon dioxide respectively is of so slight a nature that the mere exposure of the substances to a vacuum at a certain moderate temperature is sufficient to overcome the affinity, and dissociate the

captive gases. Granted such a solution in the blood-vessels of the lungs, separated from the air of the air cells by the thin moist membranes of the alveolar walls, how are the gaseous exchanges of respiration brought about? In the first place we must premise certain physical relationships which exist between gases and fluids in contact with one another. If a definite quantity of pure water be exposed to the air it will at a given temperature dissolve a definite volume of air. If the air be compressed to one-half (or one-quarter) of its original bulk the water will still absorb the same volume of it, albeit that volume now contains twice (or four times) the former quantity of gas. If the pressure be diminished again the air will escape from the water exactly in proportion to the diminished pressure. This is a con- crete example of Dalton's law that the quantity ofa gas dissolved by a liquid varies directly as the pressure of the gas at the surface of the liquid. What is true of the air is true of its constituents. In the above example the quantity of the constituent oxygen absorbed after the compression of the air is twice (or four times) the quantity absorbed before compression. But the quantity which is absorbed of any constituent of a gaseous mixture depends, not upon the total pressure exerted on the liquid by all the gases of the mixture in contact with its surface, but by the partial pressure, or fraction of the total pressure, exerted by the constituent in question. To take an ex- ample, let us suppose that a solution of oxygen in water made at a certain definite pressure is exposed to an atmo- sphere of pure nitrogen exerting as great a pressure, or even a greater, on the surface of the liquid ; notwithstand- ing this pressure the oxygen would escape from solution as readily asif the solution had been placed in a perfectly vacuous space. If water be exposed in a certain space of air (which is, roughly, a mixture of nitrogen and oxygen), the oxygen which it is capable of absorbing would be

1 In a vacuum 2HNaCO, splits up into N a,CO; + CO, + H,0.

nes Pai RAE TO N

equally well absorbed if all the nitrogen were removed from the space and the oxygen alone left to fill it. These remarks are equally true of a liquid separated from a gas by moist membranes. In short, the blood of the pulmonary vessels, regarded as a simple liquid capable of absorbing O

and CO,, and apart from the remarkable chemical bodies contained in it, obeys Dalton's law like any other liquid.

The blood is, however, not a simple fluid, but contains substances having a peculiar affinity for certain of the gases of the atmosphere ; especially does it contain hamo- globin. It has been stated that the "dissociable" or "respiratory" oxygen of oxyhemoglobin is all yielded to a vacuum at the temperature of the body. his yield differs from the yield of a gas simply dissolved in a liquid (which also is perfect in a vacuum) in not proceeding pari passu as the pressure approaches ni/. On the contrary in the case of solutions of hemoglobin, as the oxygen pres- sure is diminished at the surface of the solution, no changes occur in the oxyhemoglobin until the oxygen pressure reaches 25 mm. (about 1 inch) of mercury ; then the oxyhemoglobin yields up_ its respiratory oxygen. If the steps are retraced, and oxygen is gradually read- mitted to exercise pressure upon the hsemoglobin solution, the latter takes up oxygen once more as soon as the oxygen pressure reaches or exceeds 25 mm, of inercury.

We may now consider the actual physical conditions of the blood in the lungs. Venous blood is hurried into the capillaries surrounding the air cells; much of its hemo- globin has been "reduced " (or deprived of its dissociable oxygen), and further it is rich in carbon dioxide, which it has obtained from the active tissues in distant organs. In the alveolar walls it comes into relationship with the air of the alveoli ; probably these are filled with air which never contains less than 10 per cent. of oxygen, and which (in the dog, be it remembered) contains 3:8 per cent. of CoO; at a time when the expired air contains 2-8 per cent. Are these conditions such that, owing to the physical laws described, oxygen must pass into the blood, and carbon dioxide out of it? First, as regards the oxygen, An atmosphere containing 10 per cent. of oxygen implies a partial O-pressure of 76 mm. of mercury (10 per cent. of 760 mm.); as this is far above the dissocia- tion point (25 mm.) of oxyhemoglobin, it is clear that any reduced hemoglobin present would greedily absorb oxygen from such an atmosphere. When the air breathed is much rarefied, the case is different ; the partial O-pres- sure in the alveoli may be so far reduced that the absorp- tion of O by the blood becomes most difficult or impos- sible. As regards the carbon dioxide the matter is not so clear ; but, inasmuch as

air drawn from the depth of the lung by means of a catheter contains (in a dog) 3-8 per cent. of CO,, while at the same time the venous blood of the right side of the heart possesses a CO, tension of approximately the same percentage, we may assume that CO, escapes from the pulmonary capillaries into the alveoli until equilibrium ensues. It is, however, conceivable that the epithelium of the air cells may assist the elimination of CO, from the blood by a process of true excretion independently of the above merely physical considerations.

So-called Internal Respiration.

Venous blood yields up its carbon dioxide and takes up oxygen in the capillaries of the lungs; arterial blood passes to the general capillaries of the tissues and there yields up its oxygen and receives carbon dioxide. To this act, which in its issues is complementary to the inter- changes of pulmonary respiration, the term internal respira- tion, or respiration of the tissues, has been applied. With as much propriety we might speak of internal urination in reference to the nitrogenous effete matters which the tissues

cast into the blood. We are in fact not ina position to form any clear picture of the interchanges which occur between the blood and the tissues other than that which is sketched under Nurririon (vol. xvii. pp. 678-682). Muscle is the tissue whose metabolic processes are most clearly understood. Living muscle yields no oxygen to a vacuum, although it gives up carbon dioxide freely ; there- fore it is presumably itself in a condition to take up oxy- gen from arterial blood and to give up carbon dioxide to it. But the absorption of oxygen is not immediately necessary to the escape, or the formation, of the carbon dioxide, how- ever much it is so in the last instance. In other words, the oxygen passes into the tissue and is at once combined into some intermediate compound which only at a later stage decomposes and yields carbon dioxide. Whenever an organ is active its blood-vessels dilate and permit a more copious flow of blood through it than when it is at rest. In the salivary glands the blood may even pulsate in the veins and look like true arterial blood in colour. After

passing through active muscles the blood contains both more CO, and less O than after passing through resting muscle.

Dyspnoca and Asphyxia.

When the entrance of air to the lungs is entirely pre- vented the phenomena of dyspnoea and asphyxia begin to appear. At first respiration is deeper and more frequent than usual (dyspnoea), the extraordinary muscles being called into play in both inspiration and expiration; the heart beats more quickly at first, but afterwards more slowly ; this is the first stage. It is succeeded by the second stage, in which the violence of respiration is less marked, although the coordination of the act is more irregular ; indeed towards the end of the stage respiratory movements merge in general convulsions of the whole body. Throughout this stage expiration is more marked than inspiration, and the pressure of the blood in the blood- vessels is very great. The third stage is one of exhaustion, which supervenes suddenly, and is marked by loss of con- sciousness, dilated pupils, and absence of the powers of reflex action. The animal seems dead, except that at long intervals feeble inspiratory gasps occur. Finally there comes one great inspiratory effort: the mouth is fixed wide open, the head thrown back, the body arched back- wards, the nostrils dilated, and the pulse after a second or two is indistinguishable (asphyxia). The whole series of events lasts from three to five minutes if the interruption to the entrance of air has been absolute. After death the right side of the heart, with the vessels immediately open- ing into it, viz., the venz cavee and veins of the neck and the pulmonary artery, are engorged with black blood con- taining little or no oxyhemoglobin. The left side of the heart and the systemic arteries are contracted and empty. All these phenomena are best explained by the known power of venous blood to stimulate the nervous centres. As the blood becomes more and more venous it stimulates more powerfully the great nerve-centres of the medulla oblongata. The respiratory centre is stimulated, especially its expiratory portion; and, finally, the whole muscular centres of the spinal system are excited, causing general convulsions. The vaso-motor centre is stimulated, causing the rise of blood pressure in the early stage. The slowing of the heart during the close of the first and second stages is due to stimulation of the vagus cardio-inhibitory centre in the medulla.

Finally the centres become exhausted from the impurity of the blood bathing them, and their activity fails altogether.

Stemulation of the Respiratory Centre.

It remains to ask what property of venous blood confers upon it the power of stimulating nerve centres. Venous

blood differs from arterial blood chiefly in the relative amounts of O and CO, it contains. Which of these substances is it whose deviation from the arterial standard causes stimulation? It so happens that we can experi- mentally separate the two factors. If an animal be placed in a chamber of some inert gas, such as nitrogen, the escape of CO, from the lungs is unimpeded and no accumu- lation of CO, in the blood is brought about ; nevertheless dyspnoea and asphyxia follow as if the entrance of air to the windpipe had been interrupted. Here there is no accumulation of CO, in the blood, but total deficiency of O. On the other hand, if an animal be placed in a chamber containing a large excess of CO, beyond the standard of expired air, but at the same time a superabundant supply of O, no dyspnoea supervenes, and no asphyxia threatens. The animal may suffer from drowsiness (for CO, is narcotic in its effects), but true dyspnoea never occurs so long as the supply of O is sufficient. There is little doubt there- fore that the absence of O from venous blood is the essen- tial condition of its stimulating property.

Diversity of Modes in which the Function is Carried cn.

Respiration, if we assume the essential fact of that process to be the absorption of O and the elimination of CO, by the animal body, is coextensive with the whole

RESTIF, Nicotas Epmxz (1734-1806), called RestrF DE LA BRETONNE (the form Rerir, though occasionally used by the author himself, and adopted by M. Monselet, has the less authority), was born at Sacy in the present department of the Yonne, France, on 23d October 1734. His father was a farmer of not the lowest rank, and the vanity of Restif has

preserved or invented an extraordinary genealogy (supposed to date from his grandfather's time) in which the family is traced to the Roman emperor Pertinax. This Restif did not take very seriously, but he is himself almost the only authority for the details of his own career, which he has voluminously recorded, and these details are in part so incredible, in part so obviously dis- torted by various motives, that it is very hard to do more than discover the general outline of his life. He was well educated—partly if not chiefly by his own devotion to books—he was apprenticed to a printer at Auxerre, and, having served his time, went to Paris. Here he worked as a journeyman printer for some time (indeed he con- tinued his manual work for the greater part of his life), and in 1760 he married Anne or Agnes Lebégue, a relation of his former master at Auxerre. He soon tired of her, and has left the most unfavourable pictures of her morals and temper. In the early years of their married life they were but little together, and for the last twenty they never saw each other; but Restif's own account is sufficient to show that certainly not all, and pro- bably very few, of the faults were on the wife's side. It was not till five or six years after his marriage that Restif, who by his own account had written voluminously from his earliest youth but had published nothing, appeared as an author, and from that time to his death on February 2, 1806, he produced a bewildering multitude of books (amounting to something like two hundred volumes, and many of them printed with his own hand) on almost every conceivable variety of subject. The most noteworthy are Le Pied de Fanchette, a novel (1769); Le Pornographe (same date), a plan for regulating prostitution which is said to have been actually carried out by the emperor Joseph IL, while not a few detached hints have been adopted by Continental nations; Ze Paysan Perverti (1774), a novel in which much of his own experience is worked in;

animal kingdom. It is not, however, in every case served by special air- containing organs or lungs. Indeed the essential interchange of respiration goes on wherever the blood comes into sufficiently close contact with oxygen. For example, the air which happens to be swallowed with our food is so closely in contact with the blood of the intestinal vessels that an interchange of gases occurs, con- stituting a true intestinal

respiration. The J/ammalza all possess true lungs. In birds also there are lungs, but the mechanism of respiration is unlike that of man, since the diaphragm is wanting. There are, in birds, besides lungs, "air sacs" lying among the viscera and communicating with cavities in the bones, these sacs being supplied with air from the lungs. Reptiles and some amphibians breathe by lungs, other amphibians breathe by gills, as also do the young of some of the air-breathing Amphibia (frogs). Fishes breathe by gills, using the O dissolved in water. Many invertebrates respire in air, which is carried into the midst of their tissues in trachee or air-tubes branched like a tree; other invertebrates breathe by gills in water ; others again have lungs. In some the oxygenized water is carried into the body along a series of tubes—the water-vascular system; and in still simpler animals the general surface of the body seems to serve the respiratory function. (awa.)*

La Vie de Mon Pere (1779), a really remarkable monu- ment of filial piety ; Les Contemporaines (42 vols., 1780-85), a vast collection of short stories showing at once Restif's fertility of invention, his narrative faculty, and his accurate observation of the manners of Paris; Ingénue Saxancour, also a novel (1789) ; and, lastly, the extraordinary autobio- graphy of Monsieur Nicolas (16 vols., 1794-97; the last two are practically a separate and much less interesting work), in which at the age of sixty he has set down voluminously his remembrances, his notions on ethical and social points, his hatreds, and above all his numerous or innumerable loves real and fancied. The original editions of these, and indeed of all his books, have long been bibliographical curiosities owing to their rarity, the beautiful and curious illustrations which many of them contain, and the quaint typographic system in which most are composed. The author's life during this long period was a singular mixture of hard work and perpetual falling in love. He seems to have really seen society of the most varied kind, though in this as in all other matters he certainly exaggerates and perhaps invents in a way which makes it impossible to dis- cern the exact truth. Some of his books sold well, and, as has been said, he was always industrious as an author or a printer and sometimes as both. But he had repeated losses, and though never in actual want was never in easy circumstances. He was arrested once during the Revolu- tion but had no difficulty in getting off ; indeed he seems to have been a convinced

republican. In 1795 he received a gratuity of 2000 francs from the Government, and just before his death Napoleon gave him a place in the ministry of police, which he did not live to take up. After his death Cubiéres Palmeaux, a gentleman literary-hack of the day, wrote his life.

Restif de la Bretonne undoubtedly holds a remarkable place in French literature, though the rarity and curious character of his books have sometimes induced his editors and commentators to take too high a view of his merits. He was inordinately vain, of extremely relaxed morals, and perhaps not entirely sane. His books were written with such haste and in such bulk that they can only be praised with great allowance. Their licence of subject and language renders some if not most of them quite unfit for general perusal. But when every deduction is made there will remain on a just estimate the facts that Restif had a singular and profound knowledge of the human heart 'the second title of his Monsieur

Nicolas is Le Ceur Humain Dévoilé), that among his random and often chimerical speculations on social, ethical, and political matters thoughts of extraordinary justness now and then occur, that his observation of manners was keen, and that his narrative faculty, at least in short tales and detached passages, was exception- ally good.

Original editions of Restif are, as has been said, bibliographical curiosities, The works of Ch. Monselet (1853) and P. Lacroix (1875), Assézat's selection from the Contemporaines, with excellent introductions (3 vols., 1875), and the valuable reprint of Afonsieur Nicolas (14 vols., 1883-84), will be sufficient to enable even curious readers to form a judgment of him. The selection from the Contem- poraines preserves Restif's curious printing and spelling.

RESTOUT, Jean (1692-1768), French painter, born at Rouen, March 26, 1692, was the son of Jean Restout, the first of that name, and of Marie M. Jouvenet, sister and pupil of the well-known Jean Jouvenet. Jean Restout's father died young, and his son was placed at Paris with his uncle Jean Jouvenet. In 1717, the Royal Academy having elected him a member on the work which he had executed for the Great Prize, he

remained in Paris, instead of proceeding to Italy, exhibited at all the salons, and filled successively every post of academical distinction. He died on January 1,1768. He left several pupils, none of whom were of great distinction. His works, chiefly of vast size—altarpieces (Louvre Museum), ceilings, designs for Gobelin tapestries—were much engraved by Cochin, Drevet, and others; his diploma picture may still be seen at St Cloud.

RESTOUT, JEAN Bernarp, son of the above, was born at Paris, February 22, 1732, and died in the same city on July 18, 1797. In 1758 he won the Great Prize, and on his return from Italy was received into the Academy ; but his refusal to comply with rules led to a quarrel with that body which alienated him from his profession. Roland brought him into notice by appointing him keeper of the Garde Meuble, but this piece of favour nearly cost him his life during the Terror: he was cast into prison and was only saved from the guillotine by the reaction of Thermidor. The St Bruno painted by him at Rome is in the Louvre.

RETFORD, East, a market town and borough of Nottinghamshire, is situated on the Idle and on the Great Northern and Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire Railways, 36 miles north-east of Nottingham by rail, and eight south-west of Gainsborough. The church of St Swithin, a large cruciform structure with a square em- battled tower, dates from the 13th century, but was rebuilt in 1658 by a brief granted by Richard Cromwell. Among the modern buildings are the town-hall, the corn exchange, the court-house, and the covered markets. There is a large trade in corn, cheese, and hops, and the town possesses iron foundries, paper and corn mills, and india-rubber works. The population of the municipal borough in 1871 was 3194, but in 1878 the area was extended to 4532 acres, and in 1881 the population was 9748.

The town derives its name from an ancient ford over the Idle. In Domesday it is written Redeford, and early in the 13th century it is called Hste Reddfurthe. It is a borough by prescription, and was granted in 1279 to the burgesses by Edward I. at a fee farm rent of £10, with the right of choosing a bailiff. Its rights were confirmed and extended by Edward III., Henry IV., and James I. It sent two members to parliament in the reign of

Edward I., but the privilege was dormant from 1380 to 1571. The parliamentary borough, which was largely rural, having been extended in 1829 to include the whole wapentake of Bassetlaw, and comprising 207,906 acres in 1881, ceased to exist as a borough in 1885. The municipal borough is divided into threc wards, and is governed by a mayor,-six aldermen, and eighteen councillors.

RETHEL, Atrrep (1816-1859), historical painter, was born at Aix-la-Chapelle in 1816. He very early showed an interest in art, and at the age of thirteen he executed a drawing which procured his admission to the academy of Diisseldorf. Here he studied for several years, and pro- duced, among other works, a figure of St Boniface which attracted much attention. At the age of twenty he removed to Frankfort where he studied under Philip Veit ;

and, having, in common with so many of the German artists of the period, manifested an aptitude for fresco-paint- ing, he was selected to decorate the walls of the imperial hall at Romer with figures of famous men. At the same period he produced a series of designs illustrative of Old Testament history. Four years later he was the successful competitor for the work of ornamenting the restored council house of his native city with frescos depicting prominent events in the career of Charlemagne, but various discussions and delays prevented the execution of this work for some six years. Meanwhile Rethel occupied himself with the production of easel pictures, and of drawings ; and in 1842 he began a most striking and important series of designs dealing with the Crossing of the Alps by Hannibal, in which the weird power which animates his later art becomes first apparent. In 1844 Rethel visited Rome, occupying his time both in study and in production, and executing, along with other subjects, an altarpiece for one of the churches of his native land. In 1846 he returned to Aix, and commenced his Charlemagne frescos, But the strain of production, aggravated by a lack of sympathy, and by vexatious delays and interferences, produced a most injurious effect upon both the health and the spirits of the artist. Symptoms of mental derangement, remotely attri- butable, it is believed, to an accident from which he suffered in childhood, began to manifest themselves in strange and groundless suspicions against his friends and brother artists. While he hovered

between madness and sanity, “ with a mind ”—as Mr Ruskin has said in reference to the very parallel case of William Blake—“disturbed, but not deceived, by its sickness, nay, partly exalted by it,” Rethel produced some of the most striking, individual, and impressive of his works. Strange legends are told of the effect produced by some of his weird subjects. He painted Nemesis pursuing a Murderer—a flat stretch of landscape, with a slaughtered body relieved against the flushing evening sky, while in front is the assassin speeding away into the darkness, clutching his blood-stained knife, thorns and thistles springing up around his path, and above, hover- ing over his head, with unhasting but ceaseless flight, an angel of vengeance, holding an hour-glass from which the last sands are escaping, and a sword which is slowly descending upon the fated head. The picture, so the story goes, was won in a lottery at Frankfort by a personage of high rank, who had been guilty of an undiscovered crime, and the contemplation of lis prize drove him to distraction, and he became a lunatic. Another design which Rethel executed was Death the Avenger, a skeleton appearing at a masked ball, scraping daintily, like a violinist, upon two human bones. The drawing haunted the memory of his artist friends and disturbed their dreams; and, in expia- tion, he produced his pathetic design of Death the Friend, a skeleton draped in long monk’s robes, tolling solemnly the passing bell in a church tower, while beside the open window, lit by the last sunset radiance, sits an old sexton, with the peaceful face of a quiet departure. Rethel also executed a powerful series of drawings—the Dance of Death—suggested by the Belgian insurrections of 1848. It is by such designs as these, executed in a technique founded upon that of Diirer, and animated by an imagina- tion akin to that of the elder master, that Rethel is most widely known. Certainly his fame can rest very securely upon such works as Death the Avenger and Death the Friend,—those “inexpressibly noble and pathetic wood- cut grotesques,” as Mr Ruskin has so justly styled them. Rethel died at Diisseldorf on December 1, 1859.

His picture of Peter and John at the Beautiful Gate of the Temple, is preserved in the Leipsic Museum, and his St Boniface and several of his cartoons for the frescos at Aix in the Berlin

National Gallery. His life by Wolfgang Miiller von Konigswinter has been published. See also Art Journal, November 1865.

488

RETZ, Jean Francois PavL DE GONDI, CARDINAL DE (1614-1679), was born at Montmirail in 1614. The family was one of those which had been introduced into France by Catherine de' Medici, but it had acquired great estates in Brittany and had been connected with the noblest houses of the kingdom. It may be added that Retz himself always spelt his designation " Rais," and the spelling is not inconvenient for foreigners. He was the third son, and according to Tallemant des Réaux was made a knight of Malta on the very day of his birth. The death of his second brother, however, destined him for a closer connexion with the church. The family of Retz had military traditions, for the cardinal's father, Philippe Emmanuel, was general of the galleys, and his grandfather Albert was marshal of France. But it had also much church influence, Retz's uncle being archbishop of Paris, and, despite the very unclerical leanings of the future cardinal, which were not corrected by the teachings of St Vincent de Paul, who was his tutor, the intentions of his family never varied respecting him. It was in vain that, as he has recounted with some vanity in his famous memoirs, he flirted, fought duels, and endeavoured in every way to show that he had no vocation. His friends night have some excuse for doubting his aptitude for a more active career despite his vivacious temperament, for by unanimous consent his physical appearance was not that of a soldier. He was short, near-sighted, ugly (though his ugliness had much in common with that of Wilkes), and exceptionally awkward of hand and gesture. Retz, however, despite the little inclination which he felt towards clerical life, was not a man to leave any kind of career to which he had access untried. He entered into the disputes of the Sorbonne with vigour, and when he was scarcely eighteen wrote the remarkable Conjuration de Fiesque, a little historical essay of which he drew the material from the Italian of Mascardi, but which is all his own in the negligent vigour of the style and the audacious insinuation, if nothing more, of revolutionary principles. It is said, though the anecdotes of this time are always suspicious, that Richelieu's verdict after reading the pamphlet was '" voila un homme dangereux." However this

may be, Retz received no preferment of importance during Richeliew's life, and even after the minister's death, though he was presented to Louis XIII. and well received (the king offered him a bishopric), he found a difficulty in attaining the object of his wishes, that is to say, the coadjutorship with reversion of the archbishopric of Paris. But almost immediately after the king's death Anne of Austria appointed him to the coveted post on All Saints' Eve, 1643. Retz, who had according to some accounts already plotted against Richelieu, set himself to work to make the utimost political capital out of his position. His uncle, who was old, indolent, and absurdly proud, had lived in great seclusion; Retz, on the contrary, by assiduously cultivating the parish cwrés and distributing large sums in alms, gradually acquired a very great influ- ence with the populace of the city. This influence he gradually turned against Mazarin —partly from the general dislike which the French nobles had to that low-born adventurer, but partly also, it would appear, because he himself was not in Mazarin's place. No one had more to do than Retz with the outbreak of the Fronde in October 1648, and his history for the next four years is the history of that confused and, as a rule, much misunderstood movement. Of the two parties who, sometinies in union and sometimes at variance with each other, opposed the system of absolute monarchy carried on by an omnipotent minister, Retz could only depend on the bourgeoisie, not on the nobles, and even in the case of the bourgeoisie he had little influence out of Paris. The fact, more-

over, that although he had some speculative tendencies in favour of popular liberties, and even perhaps of re- publicanism, he represented no real political principle, as the parliament of Paris did and as did great nobles like La Rochefoucauld, inevitably weakened his position. His adroitness of intrigue and his boldness in action (which was even shown on the field of battle) served him little in the long run, and when the break up of the Fronde came he was left in the lurch, having more than once in the meanwhile been in no small danger from his own party. One stroke of luck, however, fell to him before his down- fall. He was made cardinal almost by accident, and under a misapprehension on the pope's part. Then, in 1652, he was arrested and imprisoned, first at Vincennes, then at

Nantes ; he escaped, however, after two years' captivity, and for some time wandered about in England and else- where. He made his appearance at Rome more than once, and had no small influence in the election of Alexander VII. He was at last, in 1662, received back again into favour by Louis XIV. and on more than one occasion formally served as envoy to Rome,—commissions which have left abundant records in the shape of official documents. Retz, however, was too shrewd, and perhaps too weary of political intrigue to attempt any interference with the new order of things at home, and he was glad in making his peace to resign his claims to the archbishopric of Paris. The terms were, among other things, his appointment to the rich abbacy of St Denis and his restoration to his other benefices with the payment of arrears. .

The last seventeen years of Retz's life were compara- tively quiet, and were passed partly in -his diplomatic duties (he was again in Rome at the papal election of 1668), partly at Paris, partly at his estate of Commercy, but latterly at St Mihiel in Lorraine. His retirement to this place was made under circumstances which were unusual for the age. His debts were as enormous as his revenues were large, and, as the latter were almost entirely derived from ecclesiastical appointments, his creditors had no remedy. In 1675 he resolved to make over to them all his income except twenty thousand livres, and, as he said, to "live for his creditors." This plan he carried out, though he did not succeed in living very long, for he died at Paris on the 24th August 1679. One of the chief authorities for the last years of Retz is Madame de Sévigné, whose connexion he was by marriage. Great friendship existed between them, and the cardinal was especially devoted to Madame de Grignan, who seems to have treated him with her usual selfish indifference.

Retz and La Rochefoucauld, the greatest of the Frondeurs in literary genius, were personal and political enemies, and each has left a portrait of the other. La Rochefou- cauld's character of the cardinal is on the whole harsh but scarcely unjust, and one of its sentences formulates, though in a manner which has a certain recoil upon the writer, the great defect of Retz's conduct,—" I a suscité les plus grands désordres dans |'état sans avoir un dessein formé de s'en prévaloir." The last two words indicate but too clearly the self-seeking which was the bane of the Fronde

and of the French noblesse generally. But it is perfectly true that no general design of benefiting either himself or his country, or even any party or order in his country, can be traced in Retz's conduct, and that he seems to have kindled the fires of civil war in pure gaiety of heart. He would have been less, and certainly less favourably, remembered if it had not been for his Afemozrs, which, with Madame de Sévigné's notices, give a rather high idea of the amiability of his character at the same time that they confirm its levity, and above all prove his possession of remarkable literary faculty. They were

certainly not written till the last ten years of his life, and they do not go further than the year 1655. They are addressed in the form of narrative to a lady who is not known, though guesses have been made at her identity. In the beginning there are some gaps. They display, in a rather irregular style and with some oddities of dialect and phrase, extraordinary narrative skill and a high degree of ability in that special art of the 17th century—the drawing of verbal portraits or characters. Few things of the kind are superior to the sketch of the early barri- cade of the Fronde in which the writer had so great a share, the hesitations of the court, the bold adventure of the coadjutor himself into the palace, and the final trmmph of the insurgents. Dumas, who has drawn

from this passage one of his very best scenes in Vingt

Ans aprés, has done little but throw Retz into dialogue and amplify his language and incidents. Besides these memoirs and the very striking youthful essay of the Conjuration de Fiesque, Retz has left diplomatic papers,

sermons, Mazarinades, and correspondence in some con-

siderable quantity.

The Memoirs of the Cardinal de Retz were first published in a very imperfect condition in 1717 at Nancy. The first satisfactory

edition was that which appeared in the twenty-fourth volume of

the collection of Michaud and Poujoulat (Paris, 1836). They were then re-edited from the autograph manuscript by Géruzez (Paris, 1844), and by Champollion-Figeac with the Mazarinades, &c. (Paris, 1859). In 1870 a complete edition of the works of Retz was begun by M. Feillet in the collection of Grands Eerivains. The editor dying, this passed into the hands of M. Gourdault and then into those of M. Chantelauze, who had already published studies on the connexion of St Vincent de Paul with the Gond1 family, &c. The edition is still incomplete, and the critical biography of Retz which it may be expected to contain is much wanted. (G. SA.)

REUBEN (13‘8), ‘Pov, ‘PovBir), eldest son of Jacob and of Leah (Gen. xxix. 32). Reuben plays no great part in the patriarchal legend ; in the Elohistic version of the story of Joseph he appears in a somewhat favourable light, but in Gen. xxxv. 22 he is charged with a grave offence, which in Gen. xlix. 4 is given as a reason why the tribe which called him father did not take in Hebrew history the place proper to its seniority. The Reubenites settled east of the Jordan on the Moabite border. In Judges v. they are described as a pastoral tribe which took no share in the patriotic movement under Barak and Deborah. The Moabites soon proved too strong for them (comp. Moas, vol, xvi. p. 534) and overspread their country (comp. Isa, chap. xv. sg. with Josh, xiii. 16 sg.); in Deut. xxxiii. 6 the tribe appears as threatened with extinction. Dathan and Abiram (Num. xvi., Deut. xi. 6), whom the earth swal- lowed up for rebellion against Moses, were Reubenites. After this time only the book of Chronicles has any- thing considerable to relate of the tribe (@hion:¥) Lasg., 18 sq.).

REUCHLIN, Jon (1455-1522), the first great German humanist and the restorer of Hebrew and in large measure also of Greek letters among his countrymen, was born February 22, 1455, at Pforzheim in the Black Forest, where his father was intendant of the Dominican monastery. In the pedantic taste of his time the name was Grecized by his Italian friends into Capnion, a form which Reuchlin himself uses as a sort of transparent mask when he introduces himself as an interlocutor in the De

Verbo Mirifico. Yor his native place Reuchlin always retained an affection ; he constantly writes himself Phorcensis, and in the De Verbo, when he tells how he had sojourned at Paris and almost all the great schools of France and Germany, as well as at several Italian seats of learning and finally at Rome, the "caput studiorum," he does not forget to ascribe to Pforzheim his first disposition to letters. Here he began his Latin studies in the monastery school, and, though in 1470 he was a short time in Freiburg,

that university seems to have taught him little. Reuchlin's career as a scholar appears to have turned almost on an accident; his fine voice gained him a place in the household of the margrave of Baden, and by and by, having already some reputation as a Latinist, he was chosen to accompany to the university of Paris the third son of the prince, a lad some years his junior, who was destined for an ecclesiastical career, This new connexion lasted but a year or so, but it determined the course of Reuchlin's life. He now began to learn Greek, which had been taught in the French capital since 1470, and he also attached himself to the leader of the Paris realists, John a Lapide, a really worthy and learned man, whom he presently followed to the vigorous young university of Basel (1474). At Basel Reuchlin took his master's degree (1477), and began to lecture with success, teaching a more classical Latin than was then common in German schools, and also explaining Aristotle in Greek. His studies in this language had been continued at Basel under Andronicus Contoblacas, and here too he formed the acquaintance of the bookseller Amorbach, for whom he prepared a Latin lexicon (Vocabularius Breviloguus, 1st ed. 1475-76), which did good service in its time and ran through many editions. This first publication and Reuchlin's account of his teaching at Basel in a letter to Cardinal Hadrian, February 1518, show that he had already found the work which in a larger sphere occupied his whole life. He was no original genius, but a born teacher. He had neither brilliant literary power like Erasmus nor epoch-making ideas like Luther, but he was the great master of all Germany, guiding his countrymen to sound learning, first in Latin and then in Greek and in Hebrew. But this work of teaching was not to be done mainly from the

professor's chair. Reuchlin soon left Basel to seek further Greek training with George Hieronymus at Paris, and learn to write a fair Greek hand that he might support himself by copying MSS. And now he felt that he must choose a profession. His choice fell on law, and he was thus led to the great school of Orleans (1478), and finally to Poitiers, where he became licentiate in July 1481, and so could look forward to honourable office in his native country, where he could pursue his scholarly tastes in an independent position, From Poitiers Reuchlin came in December 1481 to Tiibingen. There he found friends to recommend him to Count Eberhard of Wiirtemberg, who was about to journey to Italy and required an interpreter. Reuchlin was selected, and in February 1482 left Stuttgart for Florence and Rome. The journey lasted but a few months, but it brought the German scholar into contact with several learned Italians, and his connexion with the count became permanent. On his return to Stuttgart he was named Geheimrath, and soon after he became doctor of laws and assessor in the high court. About this time he appears to have married, but little is known of his married life. He left no children; but in later years his sister's grandson Melanchthon was almost as a son to him till the Reformation estranged them. Reuchlin's life at Stuttgart was often broken by important missions, and in 1490 he was again in Italy. Here he saw Pico, to whose Cabbalistic doctrines he afterwards became heir, and also made the friendship of the pope's privy secretary, Questemberg, which was of service to him in his later troubles. Again in 1492 he was employed on an embassy to the emperor at Linz, and here he began to read Hebrew with the kaiser's Jewish physician Loans. He knew something of this language before, but Loans's instruction laid the basis of that thorough knowledge which he afterwards improved on his third visit to Rome in 1498 by the instruction of Obadiah Sforno of Cesena. XX. — 62

490 ie eae

In 1496 Count Eberhard died, and enemies of Reuchlin had the ear of the new prince. He was glad therefore hastily to follow the invitation of John of Dalburg the scholarly bishop of Worms, and flee to Heidelberg, which was then the seat of the '" Rhenish Society," a lively and active circle of humanists under Dalburg's presidency, equally zealous in the service of

Apollo and Bacchus. In this court of letters Reuchlin's appointed function was to make translations from the Greek authors, in which his reading was already extremely wide. Many of these versions were never printed, but a considerable number of pieces were given to the press at intervals down to the year 1519, and formed an important element in his efforts to spread a knowledge of Greek. For, though Reuchlin had no public office as teacher, and even at Heidelberg was prevented from lecturing openly, he was during a great part of his life the real centre of all Greek teaching as well as of all Hebrew teaching in Germany. No young man of promise who came to him for help was rejected ; he taught many and found teachers for others, or gave direction and solution of difficulties to more advanced scholars. Thus he was a sort of unofficial general director of the studies of Germany, and to carry out this work he found it necessary to provide a series of helps for beginners and others. He never published a Greek grammar, though he had one in MS. for use with his pupils, but he put out several little elemen- tary Greek books; and these with the series of transla- tions were in fact the text books of the German youth. Reuchlin, it may be noted, pronounced Greek as his native teachers had taught him to do, 7.¢., in the modern Greek fashion. This pronunciation, which he defends in Dza- logus de Recta Lat. Grecique Serm. Pron., 1519, came to be known, in contrast to that used by Erasmus, as the Reuchlinian.

At Heidelberg Reuchlin had many private pupils, among whom Franz von Sickingen is the best known name ; and all his relations, except with the monks who stopped his attempt to lecture on Hebrew, were very pleasant. With the monks he had never been well; at Stuttgart also his great enemy was the Augustinian Holzinger. On this man he took a scholar's revenge in his first Latin comedy Sergius, a satire on worthless monks and false relics which his young Heidelberg friends were eager to act. But, Dalburg thinking this unsafe, he wrote for them a new piece, Scenica Progymnasmata or Henno, based on the old French play of Maitre Pathelin, which is not without humour and sparkle of language, and much better constructed than the French piece.

Through Dalburg, Reuchlin came into contact with Philip of the Pfalz, who employed him to direct his son's studies, and in 1498 gave him the

mission to Rome which has been already noticed as fruitful for Reuchlin's progress in Hebrew. He came back laden with Hebrew books, and found when he reached Heidelberg that a change of Government had opened the way for his return to Stuttgart. His wife had remained there all along; so that we may assume that he never looked on his exile as more than temporary. His friends were the party of order and good government, who could not long remain powerless. They had now again the upper hand, and knew Reuchlin's value. In 1500, or perhaps in 1502, he was named "triumvir of Swabia," a very high judicial office in the Swabian League, which he held till 1512, when he retired to a small estate near Stuttgart. By this time the long conflict which gives Reuchlin's life its chief interest had already begun.

For many years Reuchlin had been increasingly absorbed in Hebrew studies, which had for him more than a mere philological interest. Though he was always a

tt; TN

good Catholic, and even took the habit of an Augustinian monk when he felt that his death was near, he was too thorough a humanist to be a blind Catholic. He knew the abuses of monkish religion, and was interested in the reform of preaching (De Arte Predicandi, 1503—a book which became a sort of preacher's manual); but above all as a scholar he was eager that the Bible should be better known, and could not tie himself to the authority of the Vulgate. To him the Old Testament Scriptures meant the Hebrew text, and this he was determined to study with an independent love for truth: "I honour St Jerome as an angel; I value Lira as a master; but I worship truth as my God." The key to the //ebrea veritas was the grammatical and exegetical tradition of the medieval rabbins, especially of Kimhi, and when he had mastered this himself he was resolved to open it to others. In 1506 appeared his Rudimenta Hebraica—grammar and lexicon—mainly after Kimhi, yet not a mere copy of one man's teaching. The edition was costly and sold slowly. In 1510 he was glad to offer Amorbach seven hundred and fifty copies at the reduced price of a florin for three copies. Even then Amorbach could hardly find purchasers, but Reuchlin bade him be patient, "for if I hve Hebrew must with God's help

come to the front." One great difficulty was that the wars of Maximilian in Italy pre- vented Hebrew Bibles coming into Germany. But for this also Reuchlin found help by printing the Penitential Psalms with grammatical explanations (1512), and other helps followed from time to time. But Reuchlin had yet another interest in Hebrew letters. His Greek studies had interested him in philosophy, and not least in those fantastical and mystical systems of later times with which the Cabbala has no small affinity. Following Pico, he seemed to find in the Cabbala a profound theosophy which might be of the greatest service for the defence of Christianity and the reconciliation of science with the mysteries of faith—an unhappy delusion indeed, but one not surprising in that strange time of ferment, when the old and the new intellectual life had not yet clearly dis- criminated themselves, and when men of progress sought less to free themselves from mere tradition than to find an ancient tradition of truth which had been lost in the darkness of medieval ignorance. Reuchlin's mystico- cabbalistic ideas and objects were expounded in the De Verbo Mirifico, 1494, and finally in the De Arte Cabba- listica, 1517. We see therefore that not only the philo- logical tradition but the most esoteric wisdom of the rabbins was in his eyes of the greatest value.

Unhappily many of his contemporaries held other views, and thought that the first step to the conversion of the Jews was to conquer their obstinacy by taking from them their books. This view had for its chief advocate the bigoted John Pfefferkorn, himself a baptized Hebrew. Pfefferkorn's plans were backed by the Dominicans of Cologne ; and in 1509 he got from the emperor authority to confiscate all Jewish books directed against the Christian faith. Armed with this mandate, he visited Stuttgart and asked Reuchlin's help as a jurist and expert in putting it into execution. Reuchlin evaded this demand, mainly because the mandate lacked certain formalities, but he could not long remain neutral. The execution of Pfeffer- korn's schemes led to difficulties and to a new appeal to Maximilian. It was resolved to call in the opinion of experts, and in 1510 Reuchlin was summoned in the name of the emperor to give his formal opinion on the suppres- sion of the Jewish books. His answer is dated from Stuttgart, November 6, 1510; in it he divides the books into six classes—apart from the Bible which no one pro- posed to destroy—and,

going through each class, he shows that the books openly insulting to Christianity are very

few and viewed as worthless by most Jews themselves, while the others are either works necessary to the Jewish worship, which was licensed by papal as well as imperial law, or contain matter of value and scholarly interest which ought not to be sacrificed because they are con- nected with another faith than that of the Christians. Instead of destroying a whole literature, which was what Pfefferkorn proposed, he proposed that the emperor should decree that for ten years there be two Hebrew chairs at every German university for which the Jews should furnish books. The other experts and all the universities consulted, except Heidelberg, proposed that all books except Bibles should be taken from the Jews to be investi- gated by a commission ; and, as the emperor still hesitated, the bigots threw on Reuchlin the whole blame of their ill success. Pfefferkorn circulated at the Frankfort fair of 1511 a gross libel (the Handspiegel) declaring that Reuchlin had been bribed; and Reuchlin, burning with the indigation of a man of unsullied integrity, retorted as warmly in the Augenspiegel (1511). His adversary's next move was to declare the Augensmegel a dangerous book ; the Cologne faculty, with their dean the grand inquisitor Hochstraten, took up this cry, and, encouraged perhaps by some signs of timidity in letters from Reuchlin to two of the Cologne theologians, they called on him to recant not a few dangerous utterances and misapplications of Scripture. Reuchlin was timid, but he was honesty itself. He was willing to receive corrections in theology, which was not his subject, but he could not unsay what he had said; and as his enemies tried to press him into a corner he at length turned and met them with open defiance in a Defensio contra Calumniatores, 1513. The universities were now appealed to for opinions, and were all against Reuchlin. Even Paris (August 1514) condemned the Augenspiegel, and called on Reuchlin to recant. Meantime a formal process had begun at Mainz before the grand inquisitor, but Reuchlin by an appeal succeeded in trans- ferring the question to Rome. It is needless to follow the long windings of ecclesiastical process; judgment was not finally given till July 1516 ; and then, though the decision was really for Reuchlin, the trial was simply

quashed, The result had cost Reuchlin years of trouble and no small part of his modest fortune, but it was worth the sacrifice. For far above the direct importance of the issue was the great stirring of public opinion which had gone forward. All who loved learning and progress were banded together as they had never been before against the bigots and the stupid universities; and all humanists felt that the victory was theirs. And if the obscurantists escaped easily at Rome, with only a half condemnation, they received a crushing blow in Germany. No party could survive the ridicule that was poured on them in the Epistole Obscurorum Virorum. Reuchlin did not long enjoy his victory in peace. In 1519 Stuttgart was visited by famine, civil war, and pestilence. From November of this year to the spring of 1521 the veteran statesman, whom the universal respect felt for his scholarship could not secure against the dangers involved in his political relations, sought refuge in Ingolstadt and taught there for a year as professor of Greek and Hebrew. It was forty-one years since at Poitiers he had last spoken from a public chair; but the old man of sixty-five had not lost his gift of teaching, and hundreds of scholars crowded round him. This gleam of autumn sunshine was again broken by the plague ; but now he was called to Tiibingen and again spent the winter of 1521-22 teaching in his own system- atic solid way. But he was now in shaken health; in the spring he found it necessary to visit the baths of Liebenzell, and here he was seized with jaundice, of which he died 30th June 1522, leaving in the history of the new learning

49]

a name only second to that of his younger contemporary Erasmus.

The authorities for Reuchlin's life are enumerated in L. Geiger, Johann Reuchlin, 1871, which is the standard biography. 'The controversy about the books of the Jews is well sketched by Strauss, Ulrich von Hutten. Some interesting details about Reuchlin are given in the autobiography of PELLICANUS (q.v.), which was not published when Geiger's book appeared. (W. R. S$.)

REUNION, formerly Bourzon, an island in the Indian Ocean, belonging to France and considered one of her more important colonies. St Denis, the capital, stands on the north side in 20° 51'S. lat. and 53° 9' E. long.

Physi- cally it may be described as the southmost subaerial summit of the great submarine ridge which, running north-east by Mauritius, Albatross Island, &c., and curving round by the Seychelles, connects with the platform of Mada- gascar at its north-eastern extremity. The great submarine valley which is thus enclosed between Madagascar and the Mascarene-Seychelles ridge has a depth of from 2000 to 2400 fathoms. In a straight line Réunion lies 115 miles from the east coast of Madagascar; and Mauritius, with which it communicates by optic signalling since 1882, is 115 miles to the north-east. The island has an area of 721,314 acres or 1127 square miles. It is usual to regard it as divided into a windward and a leeward district by a line, practically the watershed, running in the direction of the greater axis. The whole island is the result of a

Island of Réunion.

double volcanic action. First there arose from the sea a mountain whose summit is approximately represented by Piton des Neiges (10,069 feet), and at a later date another crater opened towards the east, which, piling up the mountain mass of Le Volcan, turned what was till then a circle into an ellipse 44 miles by 31. In the older upheaval the most striking features are now three areas of subsidence—the cirques of Salazie, Riviere des Galets, and Cilaos—which lie north-west and south of the Piton des Neiges and form the gathering grounds respectively of the Riviere du Mat, the Riviére des Galets, and the Riviére de St Etienne. The first, which may be taken as typical, is surrounded by high almost perpendicular walls of basaltic lava, and its surface is rendered irregular by hills and hillocks of debris fallen from the heights. Towards the south lies the vast stratum of rocks (150 to 200 feet deep) which, on the 26th November 1875, suddenly sweeping down from the Piton des Neiges and the Gros Morne, buried the little village of Grand Sable and nearly a hundred of its in- habitants. A considerable piece of ground, with its trees,

crops, and houses practically intact, along with the pro- prietor, who was seated at his own door, was carried a distance of nearly 14 miles. Along the whole eastern side of the cirque between the village of Salazie and

Hellbourg is a series of waterfalls issuing at a great height from above a vast bank of lava. They are probably the overflow of a subterranean basin connected, it may be, with the sources, on the other side of the wall, of the Rivi¢re du Bras de Caverne. At the source of the Riviere du Mat, which escapes from the cirque by a narrow and precipitous gorge, is a magnificent sheaf of basaltic columns boldly curving out over the bed of the torrent. Having climbed up the eastern side of the cirque, the traveller reaches the well-wooded plain of the Salazes ; farther east, and separated from it by ridges of rock is the Plaine des Caffres at a height of 5250 feet above the sea, and by a descent of 1500 feet this dips north-eastward into the Plaine des Palmistes. The eastern summit or Piton de Fournaise is cut off from the rest of the island by two curious enclosures, each about 500 or 600 feet deep. The traveller approaching the present craters from the west has consequently to descend upwards of 1000 feet by two abrupt stages before he begins the ascent of the cones. The outer "enclosure" runs across the island in a north and south direction; but the inner forms a rude kind of parabola with its arms (Rempart du Tremblet on the south and Rempart du Bois Blanc on the north) stretching eastwards to the sea and embracing not only the volcano proper but also the great eastward slope known as the Grand Brfilé. There are two principal craters, each on an elevated cone,—the more westerly, now extinct, known as the Bory Crater after Bory de St Vincent, the eminent geologist, and the more easterly, simply called the Burning Crater or Fournaise. The latter is partially surrounded by an "enclosure" on a small scale with precipices 200 feet high. Eruptions, though not in- frequent (thirty were registered between 1735 and 1860) are seldom serious; the more noteworthy are those of 1745, 1778, 1791, 1812, 1860, 1870, 1881. Basaltic or vitreous lavas rich in chrysolite are the usual products, and it is hardly possible to conceive of a discharge sufficient in volume to overflow the "ramparts" and carry destruction to the rest of the island! Besides the Piton des Neiges (10,069 feet high), the Bory Peak (8612 feet), and the Burn- ing Peak (8294), the principal summits in Réunion are the Grand Bénard (9490), Morne L'Angevin (7845), and Cim- andef (7300). The streams which radiate out in all direc- tions from the central highlands are for the most part com- paratively small except during the rainy season, when they become impetuous and destructive torrents. Hot mineral springs are found in various parts of the island: the Source de Salazie (discovered in

1831) lies 2860 feet above sea- level, has a temperature of 90°, and discharges 200 to 220 gallons per hour of water impregnated with bicarbonate of soda, and carbonates of magnesium and lime, iron, &c.; that of Cilaos (discovered in 1826) is 3650 feet above the sea with a temperature of 100°; and that of Mafate 2238 feet and 87°. At the first there are a military hospital and a group of dwelling houses and villas.

‘ Vertically Réunion may be divided into five zones. The first or maritime zone contains all the towns and most of the villages, built on the limited areas of level alluviumoccurring at intervals round the coast (128 miles). In the second, which lies between 2600 and 4000 feet, the sugar planta-

1 The geology and volcanoes of Réunion were the object of elaborate study by Bory de St Vincent in 1801 and 1802 (Voyages dans les quatre principales tles des Mers d’ Afrique, Paris, 1804), and have recently been examined by Drasche (see Bericht K.~~K. Geol. Reich~~ sanstalt, Vienna, 1875-76) and Velain (thesis presented to the Faculté des Sciences, Paris, 1878).

tions make a green belt round the island and country houses abound. ‘The third zone is that of the forests ; the fourth that of the plateaus, where European vegetables can be cultivated ; and above this extends the region of the mountains, which occupies more space than any of the others.

The following statements in regard to climate refer more particu- Climate.

larly to the lower zones. The year divides into two seasons—that of heat and rain from November to April, that of dry and more bracing weather from May to October.

According to observations taken at St Denis between 1863 and 1870, and reduced to sea-level, the mean monthly temperature varies as follows:— January, 80°°36; February, 80°°36; March, 80°-12; April, 78°62; May, 75°°30; June, 72°53; July, 71°‘22; August, 70°°59; September, 71°°6; October, 73°°43 ; November, 76°62; December, 78°°92; and the rainfall

was distributed thus :— January, 8‘2 inches; February, 10°9; March, 5°17; April, 4°78 ; May 2°9; June, 6:1; July, 0°27; August, 1°7; September, 0°80 ; October, 1°67; November, 8°09; December, 5°25; making an annual average of 45°57 inches, falling in 79°7 days. The prevailing winds are from the south-east, sometimes veering round to the south, and more frequently to the north-east ; the west winds are not so steady (three hundred and seven days of east to fifty-cight of west in the course of the year). Itis seldom calm during the day, but there is usually a period of complete repose before the land wind begins in the evening. Several years sometimes pass without a cyclone visiting the island ; at other times they occur more than once in a single “winter.” From April till Octobcr there is little fear of them. That of March 1879 was particularly destructive. The raz de marée occasionally does great damage. On the leeward side of the island the temperature is higher than at St Denis. The winds are generally from the west and south-west, and bring little rain. Mist hangs almost all day on the tops of the mountains, but usually clears off at night. The mean annual temperature at Salazie is 66° and at the Plaine des Palmistes 61°-7.

The fauna of Réunion is not very rich in variety of species ; it Animals.

lies midway between the Indian and the African type. The mam- mals are a brown maki (Lemur mongoz, Linn.) from Madagascar, Pteropus edwardsti now nearly extinct, several bats, a wild cat, the tang or tamec (Centetes setosus, Denn.), several rats, the hare, and the goat. Among the more familiar birds are the “oiseau de la vierge” (Muscipeta borbonica), the tec-tec (Pratincola sybilla), Certhia borbonica, the cardinal (Foudia madagascariensis), various swallows, ducks, &c. The visitants from Madagascar, Mauritius, and even India, are very numerous. Lizards and frogs of more than one species are common, but there is only one snake known in the island. Various species of Gobius, a native species of mullet, Nestis cyprinoides, Osphronamus olfax, and Doules rupestris are ainong the freshwater fishes.

In the forest region of the island there is a belt, 4500-5000 feet Vegeta- above the sea, characterized by the prevalence of Bambusa alpina ; tion.

and above that is a similar belt of Acacia heterophylla. Besides this last the best timber-trees are Casuarina laterifolia, Fotida mauritiana, Imbricaria petiolaris, Elwodendron orientale, Calo- phyllum spurium (red tacamahac), Terminalia borbonica, Parkia speciosa. The gardens of the coast districts display a marvellous wealth of flowers and shrubs, partly indigenous and largely gathered from all parts of the world. Fruits grown in the island are—the banana, the cocoa-nut, bread-fruit, and jack-fruit, the bilimbi, the carambola, the guava, the litchi, the Japanese medlar, the mango- steen, the tamarind, the Abelmoschus esculentus, the chirimoya, the papaya, &c.

Sugar, introduced in 1711 by Pierre Parat, is now the staple crop In- in Réunion, a greater proportion of the soil being devoted to it dustries.

than to all other objects of cultivation. The methods employed in growing and manufacturing are not up to the Mauritius standard, and since 1878 the ravages of the phylloxera have ruined many of the plantations. In the 18th century the first place belonged to coflee (introduced from Arabia in 1715) and to the clove tree, brought from the Dutch Indies by Poivre at the risk of his life. Both are now cultivated on a very limited scale. Vanilla, intro- duced in 1818, though it occupies only about 1500 acres, some- times produces acrop worth from £40,000 to £65,000. The average produce of the sugar crop in the five years 1873-77 was 35,493 tons of sugar with 777,710 gallons of syrup and treacle ; from 1878 to 1883 the averages were 35,580 tons (40,176 in 1883) and 816,455 gallons, Rum is largely distilled, and is the favourite drink of all classes.

While potatoes, beans, manioc, sweet potatoes, and yams of Imports.

local growth furnish a considerable amount of food, the far more important article rice has to be imported from.India and Madagascar. India also sends castor-oil, wheat, and lard ; Australia, flour and wheat ; England, coals; the Cape and Muscat, salt fish ; Buenos Ayres and Montevideo, mules and horses; the United States petroleum (largely used throughout the island), lard, pork, and pitch-pine.

Harbour.

Aailway.

Com- munes.

Popula- i tion.

‘of 18,000 since 1837.

RE U—

The complete absence of natural harbours has all along been a great hindrance to the commercial development of Réunion. Whenever a storm is observed to be brewing an alarm gun is fired, and the vessels in the roadstcads make off from the dangerous coast. Since 1848 an artificial harbour capable of containing forty vessels has been constructed at Pointe des Galets at the north- west corner of the island. The port is connected by rail with La Possession on the one hand and with the Riviére des Galets on the other, and thus communicates with the railway which was com- pleted in 1881 round the coast from St Picrre, by St Paul, St Denis, &c., to St Benoit, a distance of 83} miles. This line is carried through a tunnel nearly 64 miles long between La Possession and St Denis.

The windward arrondissement or division of Réunion comprises the eight communes of St Denis, Ste Marie, Ste Suzanne, St André, St Benoit, Salazie, Ste Rose, and Plaine des Palmistes; and the leeward division the six communes of St Paul, St Leu, St Louis, St Pierre, St Joseph, and St Philippe. St Denis, the capital of the island, lies on the north coast. Itis built in the form of an amphitheatre and presents a most attractive appearance from the sea, Covering as a commune an area of 37,065 acres, it has a population of 30,835 according to the census of 1881, an increase It has an abundant supply of pure water. Though the harbour is only an open roadstead, it has hitherto been the most frequented in the island. St Pierre, the chief town of the leeward arrondissement, has a communal area of 98,190 acres and a population of 27,748. Its artificial harbour, commenced in 1854 but afterwards interrupted, and resumed in 1881, has room for five or six vessels besides coasting craft.

The population was 185,179 in 1872, 183,529 in 1878, and 170,734 in 1882. The males are largely in excess of the females (97,961 to 72,773 in 1882), owing to the number of agricultural labourers introduced from abroad for a term of years. Among the whites born on the island an infusion of alien blood is so com- mon that in Mauritius the phrase Bourbon white is applied to linen of doubtful cleanness; the original settlers frequently married Malagasy wives. The name Petits Blancs is in Réunion given to a class of small farmers who lead an independent kind of life in the upper districts, supporting themselves by their garden-plots and hunting. By the beginning of the 18th century the number of Negro slaves in the island was 64,000, four times that of their masters ; they were all (to the number of 20,000) emancipated in 1848, and have gradually acquired a large measure of social equality with the creoles. Various elements have been added to the popu- lation since the middle of the century—coolies from India in large numbers, Africans from the east coast, Chinese and Anamites, Malays, &c. The immigration of the Indian coolies is controlled by a convention between the British and French Governments of date July 1, 1881.

Réunion is usually said to have been first discovered in April 1518 by Mascarenhas, whose name is still applied to the archipelago of which it forms a part; but it scems probable that it must be identified with the island of Santa Apollonia discovered by Diego Fernandes Pereira on February 9, 1507. When in 1638 the island was taken possession of by Captain Gaubert or Gobert of Dieppe, it was still uninhabited ; a more formal annexation in the name of Louis XIII. was effected in 1643 by Pronis, agent of the "Compagnie des Indes" in Madagascar; and in 1649 Flacourt, Pronis's more emi- nent successor, repeated the ceremony at La Possession, and changed the name from Mascarenhas to Bourbon. By decree of the Con- vention in 1798, Bourbon in turn gave place to Réunion, and, though during the empire this was discarded in favour of fle Bonaparte, and at the Restoration people naturally went back to Bourbon, it has remained the official designation since 1848. Between July 8, 1810, and April 6, 1815, the island was in the possession of England. It is now practically almost a department of France, sends a representative to the chamber of deputies, is governed by means of laws and not of decrees, and possesses a council-general and municipal

councils elected by universal suf- frage. In the general budget for 1881 the expenditure amounted to 6,866,272 francs, including 1,916,143 contributed by the home Government; in 1888 the total was 7,468,426, npwards of 3,420,000 being for communal expenses.

See, besides the works already mentioned, Demanet, Nouv. hist. de VAfrique Frangaise, 1767; 'Thomas, Essai de statistique de Vile Bourbon, 1828; Dejean de la Batie, Wotice sur l'tle Bourbon, 1847; J. Mauran, Impressions dans un voy. de Parts & Bourbon, 1850; Maillard, Notes sur ile de la Réunion, 1862; Azéma, Hist. de Vile Bourbon, 1862; Roussin, Album de Vile de la Réunion, 1867-69, and 1879; an claborate article in Encyclopédie des Sciences Meédicales ; Bionne, 'La

Réunion," in Exploration, 1879. Most maps are based on Maillard's; one by Paul Lepervanche in four sheets was published in 1885 by Dufrenoy. (H.A. W.)

REUS, a town of Spain, in the province of Tarragona, is situated at the foot of a chain of hills in a fertile plain about four miles from the sea. It is connected by rail

with Tarragona, 94 miles to the east, and with Lerida,

541 miles to the north-west. It consists of two parts, the old and the new, separated by the boulevard-like Calle

Arrabal, which occupies the site of the old wall, some vestiges of which still remain: the old town centres in the Plaza del Mercado, from which narrow and tortuous lanes radiate in various directions; the new dates from about the middle of the 18th century, and its streets are wide and straight. The public buildings have no special archi- tectural or historical interest, but the view from the tower of the church of San Pedro is exceptionally fine. Réus, next to Barcelona itself, is the most flourishing manufac- turing centre in Catalonia, the staples being silk and cotton ; imitations of French wines are also extensively made, and the miscellaneous industries include tanning, distilling, and the like. The

cotton factories exceed eighty in number, and one of them employs upwards of six hundred hands. Most of the traffic of Réus passes through the comparatively sheltered port of Salou, four miles distant. The population of Réus in 1877 was

27,595.

The earliest records of Réus date from about the middle of the 18th century. Its modern prosperity is traced to about the year 1750, when a colony of English settled there and established a trade in woollens, leather, wine, and spirits. The principal incidents in its political history arose out of the occurrences of 1843, in con-

nexion with which the "villa" became a "ciudad" and Generals Zurbano and Prim each received the title of count of Réus.

REUSS is the name of two small sovereign principali- ties of the German empire, with a joint area of 440 square miles, forming part of the complex of Thuringian states, and consisting, roughly speaking, of two principal masses of territory, separated by the Neustadt district of the duchy of Saxe-Weimar. The more southerly and much the larger of the two portions belongs to the bleak moun- tainous region of the Frankenwald and the Voigtland, while the northern portion is hilly but fertile. The chief rivers are the Elster and Saale. About 37 per cent. of the total surface is occupied by forests, while 40 per cent. is under tillage and 19 per cent. in meadow and pasture. Since 1616 the lands of Reuss have been divided between an elder and a younger line (Reuss dlterer Linie and Reuss jiingerer Linie) of the ancient princely house. The male members of both branches of the family all bear the name of Henry (Heinrich), the individuals being distinguished by numerals. In the older line the enumeration begins again when the number one hundred is reached, while in the younger house it opens and closes with the century. Thus the reigning prince of Reuss jiingerer Linie, born in 1832, is styled Henry XIV., and he succeeded his father Henry LXVII., born in 1789. The princes of Reuss are very wealthy, and their private domains comprise great part of the territory over which they rule. In the event of the extinction of either line, its possessions fall to the other. The troops of

Reuss furnish a few companies to the seventh regiment of Thuringian infantry.

ReEvss-GREIZ, or REUSS ALTERER LINIE, with an area of 122 square miles, belongs to the larger of the two main divisions above mentioned, within which it consists of three large and several smaller parcels of land, bordering on Saxony, Reuss jiingerer Linie, Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt, and the Prussian exclave of Ranis. The soil is on the whole little favourable for agriculture, but cattle-rearing is carried on with some success. No less than 63 per cent. of the inhabitants are supported by industrial pursuits, the chief products of which are the woollen fabrics of Greiz, the capital, and the stockings of Zeulen- roda, both largely exported. The population of the prin- cipality in 1880 was 50,782, of whom only 450 were Roman Catholics and 60 Jews. The constitution of Reuss-Greiz dates from 1867, and provides for a repre- sentative chamber of twelve members, of whom three are appointed by the prince, while two are elected by the nobles, three by the towns, and four by the rural districts.

The revenue and expenditure for 1885 were each estimated at £36,254, while the public debt in 1884 was £46,886.

Revss-ScHLe1z, or REUSS JUNGERER LInIE, with an area of 318 square miles, includes part of the southern and the whole of the northern of the two main divisions above indicated, touching Bavaria on the south and Prussian Saxony on the north. The former portion is known as the Oberland, the latter as the Unterland. Owing to the fertility of the Unterland, agriculture is carried on here with greater success than in Reuss-Greiz, fully one quarter of the population being supported by tillage and cattle- breeding. The industrial activity is, however, also large, supporting one-half of the population. The principal pro- duct consists, as in Reuss-Greiz, of woollen goods, and the manufacture centres in the capital, Gera, a busy town with 27,118 inhabitants. A considerable trade is carried on in the products of the manufactories, and in timber, cattle, and slate. The iron mining of the Oberland is limited by the want of sufficient railway communication. Large quantities of salt are yielded by the brine springs of Heinrichshall. In 1880 Reuss-Schleiz contained 101,330 inhabitants, including 442 Roman Catholics and 69 Jews. The annual revenue and expenditure for 1885-1886 were calculated at £66,060; the public debt in 1884 was £61,780.

The history of Reuss stretches back to the times when the Ger- man emperors appointed voigts, or bailiffs, to represent them in lands conquered froin the Sorbs or other Slavonic races. The forefathers of the present princes of Reuss appear in this capacity at an early period, and the historical head of the family is generally recognized in Henry, voigt of Weida, who flourished about the middle of the 12th century. The name of Reuss came to be applied to the territory ruled over by his descendants from the sobriquet of "Der Russe," or the Russian, which one of them acquired about 1280 from the nationality of his mother. The district embraced by the name was at one time much more extensive than at present, taking in the Bavarian town of Hof and the whole of the Saxon Voigtland. Of the numerous lines and sub-lines into which the family was divided nearly all became sooner or later extinct, till in 1616 none were left except the two that still subsist. Since 1616 numerous subdivisions have again taken place within these families, and it was not till 1848 that Reuss jiingerer Linie became again a united whole. The rulers of Reuss were created counts of the German empire in 1671 and sovereign princes

in 1778. In 1807 both principalities joined the Confederation of the Rhine, and in 1866 Reuss-Greiz had to atone for its active sympathy with Austria by the payment of afine. Since 1871 both principalities have been members of the German empire, each sending one member to the fedcral council and one representative to the Reichstag.

REUTER, Frirz (1810-1874), the greatest writer in Platt Deutsch, was born on the 7th November 1810, at Stavenhagen, in Mecklenburg-Schwerin, a small country town which had few means of communication with the rest of the world. His father was burgomaster and sheriff (Stadtrichter), and in addition to his official duties carried on the work of a farmer. Until his fourteenth year Reuter was educated at home by private tutors. He was then sent to the gymnasium at Friedland, in Mecklenburg- Strelitz, and afterwards he passed through the higher classes of the gymnasium at Parchim. He had a con- siderable talent for drawing, and wished to become an artist; but, as his father decided that he should be a lawyer, he began in 1831 to attend lectures on juris-prudence at the university of Rostock. In the following year he went to the university of Jena. The German Governments, alarmed by the revolutionary agitation of 1830, were on the alert to detect symptoms of popular discontent ; and a formidable riot at Frankfort in 1833 gave them an excuse for treating the universities with great harshness. Reuter, as a member of the Burschen- schaft " Germania" at Jena, was arrested by the Prussian Government ; and, although the only charge which could be proved against him was that he had been seen wearing the German colours, he was condemned to death for high

treason. This monstrous sentence was commuted by King Frederick William ITI. of Prussia to imprisonment for thirty years ina Prussian fortress. Reuter accepted his fate calmly, and he had need of all his courage, for during the next few years he was taken from one Prussian fortress to another, in each of which he was kept in close confine- ment. In 1838, through the personal intervention of the grand-duke of Mecklenburg, he was delivered over to the authorities of his native state, but on condition that he should still be a prisoner. The next two years he

spent in the fortress of Domitz. In 1840 to his great joy he was set free, an amnesty having been proclaimed after the accession of Frederick William IV. to the Prussian throne.

Although Reuter was now thirty years of age, he went to Heidelberg to resume his legal studies; but he soon found it necessary to return to Stavenhagen, where he aided in the management of his father's farm. During his imprisonment he had studied many works on agricul- ture and on the sciences related to it, and he was able to make good use of the knowledge he had thus obtained. After his father's death, however, he was compelled by want of capital to abandon farming, and in 1850 he settled as a private tutor at the little town of Treptow in Pomerania. Here he married Luise Kunze, the daughter of a Mecklenburg pastor. They had been betrothed when Reuter was at Stavenhagen, and their union proved to be one of uninterrupted happiness.

At Treptow he had to work hard as a private tutor for small pay, but in the evenings he found time to amuse himself by writing, in Platt Deutsch, in prose and verse, a number of tales and anecdotes. This collection of mis- cellanies was published in 1853 in a volume entitled Léuschen und Riemels. The book contains many lively sketches of manners in North Germany, and it was received with so much favour that Reuter was encouraged to make new ventures in literature. Fortunately he decided to go on writing in Platt Deutsch. There are so many abstract terms in High German that few writers succeed in the attempt to use it as a vehicle for the powerful utterance of simple and natural feeling. Platt Deutsch, on the contrary, although limited in its range, is fresh and vigorous, and in direct contact with the motives which give unfading charm to old popular songs and ballads. All the resources of this strong and expressive dialect were at Reuter's service. He thought in Platt Deutsch, and in his greatest efforts was always able to find the right word for that exquisite blending of humour and pathos which is one of the most characteristic notes of his writings.

The work which succeeded Lduschen wnd Riemels was Polterabendgedichte, and in the same year (1855) appeared De Reis nach Belligen, a humorous poem describing the adventures of some

Mecklenburg peasants who resolve to go to Belgium (which they never reach) to learn the secrets of an advanced civilization. These writings attracted much attention, and Reuter was so confident of success that in 1856 he left Treptow and established him- self at Neubrandenburg, resolving to devote his whole time to literary work. His next book (published in 1858) was Kein Hrisung, a poem in which he presents with great force and vividness some of the least attractive aspects of village life in Mecklenburg. This was followed, in 1859, by Hanne Niite un de liitte Pudel, the best of the works written by Reuter in verse. The qualities of those who have a part to play in the story are brought out with remarkable distinctness, and the action provides the poet with many opportunities of giving free expression to his ardent love of nature.

In 1861 Reuter's popularity was largely increased by Schurr-Murr, a collection of tales, some of which are in

High German, but this work is of slight importance in comparison with the series of stories which he had already begun, and by which he was to establish his fame as one of the foremost writers of his age. To this series he gave the general title Olle Kamellen. The first volume, Zwei Lustige Geschichte, published in 1860, contained Woans tk tau ne Fru kamm and Ut de Franzosentid. Ut mine Lestungstid (1861) formed the second volume ; Ut Mine Stromtid (1864) the third, fourth, and fifth volumes ; and Dorchléuchting (1866) the sixth volume. Woans ik tay 'ne Fru kamm is a bright little tale, in which Reuter tells, in a half serious half bantering tone, how he wooed the lady who became his wife. In Ui de Lranzosentid he undertook a more difficult task, which enabled him for the first time to do full justice to his genius. The scene is laid in and near Stavenhagen (Platt Deutsch, Stemhagen) in the year 1813, and the principal complica- tions spring from the disappearance of a Frenchman, which gives rise to suspicions of foul play. In this powerful tale the characters are depicted by means of a few bold and rapid strokes, and our interest in them is heightened by the fact that their personal fortunes are associated with the great events which at the beginning of the 19th century stirred the heart of Germany: to its depths. Ut mine Festungstid is of less general interest

than Ut de Franzosentid, but it is not less vigorous either in conception or in style It contains a narrative of Reuter's hardships during the term of his imprisonment, and it awakens sympathy all the more effectually because it is brightened by many a gleam of kindly and humorous feeling. Ut mine Stromtid is by far the greatest of Reuter's writings, and ranks with the most famous master- pieces of modern fiction. He records few incidents which might not happen in the lives of ordinary men and women, yet he never loses his hold over the imagination of his readers, so full of vitality are the characters of his story, and so deep is his insight into the enduring facts of human nature. The most original character in the book is Brisig, an eccentric old bachelor, fond of gossip and apt to interfere too much in the affairs of his neighbours, but huniorous, loyal to the core, and coming out most brightly when his good qualities are put to the severest test. There is a touch of romance, too, in this simple and genial nature, for he retains to the last his love for the woman who had fascinated him in his youth, and is always at hand to serve her when she needs his help. Another powerfully conceived character is Havermann, a man of solid and serious judgment, calm and undemonstra- tive, of sterling rectitude, and revealing at the great crises of life infinite depths of love and pity. Equally attractive in their own way are the good pastor and his wife, who bring up Havermann's daughter, Louise, in their quiet parsonage; and we come to know intimately every member of the pleasant household in which Havermann's frank and comely sister (whom Brasig secretly loves) is the central figure. In this great book Reuter displays imaginative power of the highest order in the expression of every mood and passion within the proper range of his art; and he fails, or at least does not perfectly succeed, only when he deals with characters belonging to classes he had never had an opportunity of studying closely. As in Ut de Franzosentid he describes the deep national impulse in obedience to which Germany rose against Napoleon, so in Ut mine Stromtid he presents many aspects of the revolutionary movement of 1848. He shows little sym- pathy with some of the most characteristic aspirations of the period, but in many passages he indicates by slight but significant touches the strength of the forces which had-begun to make for social as distinguished from merely political reorganization,

In 1863 Reuter transferred his residence from Neubran- denburg to Hisenach; and here he died on the 12th June 1874. In the works produced at Eisenach he did not maintain the high level of his earlier writings, Dérchléuchting, although it contains some striking passages, lacks the freshness and spontaneity of the other tales of the series to which it belongs ; and admirers of his genius found little to interest them in Die Montecht und Capuleti in Konstantinopel, which he wrote after a visit to the Turkish capital.

Reuter is the most realistic of the great German writers. To the dreamers of the romantic school he has not the faintest resem- blance, nor does he ever attempt to describe ideally perfect vharacters. The men and women of his stories are the men and women he knew in the villages and farmhouses of Mecklenburg, and the circumstances in which he places them are the circum- stances by which they were surrounded in actual life. His fidelity to facts is as exact as that of the Dutch school of painters, and, like them, he thinks nothing too minute for his use, if by smal] details he can give variety and animation to his pictures. But he docs not merely glide over the surface of life ; he penetrates to the inmost springs of feeling, and in simple peasant folk finds char- acteristics which in his hands become types of universal qualities. The sources of tears and the sources of laughter he touches with equal ease; but, while his humour js sometimes rather extra- vagant, his pathetic passages are always marked by perfect truth and delicacy. His description of the death of the old pastor in Ut mine Stromtid is one of the gems of modern literature, and the scene in which Brasig dies, holding the hand of the woman he has loved all his life, is in a different way not less impressive. Reuter's only serious defect as an artist is that he fails to main- tain the due proportion between the different parts of his stories. If an idea attracts him, he cannot resist the temptation to unfold its full significance, whether or not it is in organic relation with his scheme as a whole. To some extent, however, the reader is compensated for these interruptions by happy strokes of humour which would have been rendered impossible had Reuter forced himself to adopt a more rigid method.

Reuter's Sdmmtliche Werke in thirteen volumes (edited by Ad. Wildbrandt) were published in 1863-68. To these were added in 1875 two

volumes of Vach- gelassene Schriften, with a biography; and in 1878 a comedy, De dret Langhénse. See Glagau, Fritz Reuter und Seine Dichtungen, 1866; Ebert, Fritz Reuter, 1874; and Zeil, " Fritz Reuter," in Unsere Zeit, 1875, (J. 8

REUTLINGEN, a manufacturing town of Wiirtemberg, situated in a fertile and pretty district on the Echatz, an affluent of the Neckar, near the base of the Achalin, and 20 miles to the south of Stuttgart. It is a quaint but well-built town, with numerous picturesque houses and a fine Gothic church of the 13th and 14th centuries, overtopped by a lofty spire. The tanneries of Reutlingen are extensive, producing large quantities of leather ; and its other industrial products are very niultifarious, including cotton, woollen, and knitted goods, lace, ribbons, hats, shoes, paper, machinery, hardware, and lime. To fruit- growers Reutlingen is interesting as the seat of a celebrated pomological institute, while the Christian-socialist refuges of Pastor Werner are widely known in philanthropic circles. In 1880 the town contained 16,609 inhabitants, of whom 809 were Roman Catholics and 44 Jews,

Reutlingen was made a free imperial town by Frederick II. in 1240, and was unflinching in its loyalty to the emperors of his Hine. It successfully resisted a siege by Heinrich Raspe, the rival of Conrad IV., and in 1377 its citizens defeated Count Ulrich of Wiirtemberg at the Achalm. Ata later period Reutlingen became a member of the Swabian League, and it was among the first Swabian towns to embrace the Reformation. It was annexed to Wiirtemberg in 1802.

REVAL, or Reve (Russian Revel, formerly Kolywaa ; Esthonian Tallina), a seaport of Russia, capital of Esthonia, is situated in a bay on the southern coast of the Gulf of Finland, in 59° 27'N. lat. and 24° 45' EB. long., 230 miles west of St Petersburg by rail. The city consists of two parts—the "Domberg" or "Dom," which occupies a hill, and the lower town on the beach—and is surrounded by pleasant suburban houses with gardens. The "Dom" contains the castle, where the provincial administration has its seat, and the slopes of the hill are covered with the well-built houses of the German aristocracy. It has

its own administration, separate from that of the lower town. This last retains a medieval character, with narrow tortuous streets and high tile-roofed houses often enclosing large storehouses within their thick walls. Reval has more interesting antiquities than any other town of the Russian Baltic provinces. The old church of St Nicholas, built in 1317, contains many antiquities of the old Catholic times and old German paintings, of which a Dance of Death is especially worthy of notice. It contains also the graves of Holstein Beck and of the Duc de Croy, who was denied burial for his debts, and whose mummy, dressed in velvet and fine lace, was exposed until 1862. The "Domkirche" contains many interest- ing shields, as also the graves of the circumnavigator Krusenstern, of Pontus-de-la-Gardie, Henry Matthias, Karl Horn, &c. The church of St Olai, first erected in 1240, and often rebuilt, was completed in 1840 in Gothic style ; it has a bell tower 429 feet high. The oldest church is the Esthonian, built in 1219, Water is brought from Lake Jarvikyla by an aqueduct. The pleasant situation of the town, surrounded by beautiful parks, attracts in summer thousands of people for sea-bathing.

The population of Reval has increased rapidly since it has been connected by rail with St Petersburg and with Baltic Port, 30 miles distant ; it reached 50,490 in 1881, against 27,325 in 1867, of whom one-third are Germans, the re- mainder Esthonians, with afew Russians and Jews. Nearly 15,000 inhabitants belong to the Greek Church. The manufactures are not important, but trade grows steadily. In 1882 the exports (grain, spirits, dc.) were £1,746,244, the imports (coal, iron, chemicals, &c.) £6,858,247. In 1882 Reval was visited by 589 foreign ships (291,450 tons), mostly English, German, and Scandinavian, and by 802 coasters (103,000 tons). It has regular steam com- munication with St Petersburg, Helsingfors, Konigsberg, &e.

The high Silurian crag now known as Domberg was early occupied by an Esthonian fort, Lindanissa. In 1219 or 1233 the Danish king Waldemar II. erected there a strong castle and founded the first church of the Holy Ghost. In 1228 the castle was taken by the Livonian knights, but nine years later it returned to the Danes. About the same time Liibeck and Bremen merchants settled there under the protection of the castle, and their settlement soon became an important seaport of the Hanseatic

League. It was fortified early in the 14th century, and in 1343 sustained the siege of the revolted Esthonians. Waldemar ITI. sold Reval and Esthonia to the Livonian knighthood for 19,000 silver marks, and the town belonged to the knighthood till its dis- solution in 1561, when Esthonia and Reval surrendered to the Swedish king Erik XVI. A great conflagration in 1433, the pesti- lence of 1532, the bombardment by the Danes in 1569, and still more the Russo-Livonian War, broke down its formerly wealthy trade. The Russians not only devastated the neighbouring country but also besieged Reval twice, in 1570 and 1577. It was still, however, an important fortress, the forts and walls having been enlarged and fortified by the Swedes. In 1710 the commander Patkull surrendered it to Peter I., who immediately began there the erection of a military port for his Baltic fleet. The successors of Peter I. continued to fortify the access to Reval from the sea, large works being undertaken especially in the first part of the present century. During the Crimean War the suburb Reperbahn, situated on a low slip of coast, was destroyed in view of a possible landing of the allies.

REVELATION, Boox or. The book of the New Testa- ment called " Revelation of John" (Azoxddviis "Iwdvvov) so long passed for the most obscure and difficult document of early Christianity that scholars hesitated to apply to it the historico-critical method of investigation. Since this hesitation has been overcome, it appears that the matter of the book is neither obscure nor mysterious, although many special points still remain to be cleared up. With- out being paradoxical we may affirm that the Apocalypse is the most intelligible book in the New Testament, because its author had not the individuality and originality of Paul or of the author of the Fourth Gospel, and because

historically we can trace and comprehend its author's posi-~

tion much better than we can, for instance, the theology of Paul. But all interpretations not strictly historical must be excluded. The ethico-spiritualistic, rationalistic, and dogmatic explanations, such as were first attempted by the Alexandrine theologians, are fatal to the understanding of the book, as are also the explanations drawn from church history which were first put forward by medieval sects. To see with Hengstenberg

“demagogy” in “Gog and Magog” (xx. 8), to identify ‘“Apollyon” (ix. 11) with “Napoleon,” or in antichrist to detect the emperor or the pope or Mohammed or Luther or Calvin—these interpretations are not a bit worse than those which turn the book into a compendium of morality or dogma wherein is set forth by means of imagery and allegories the triumph of virtue over vice or of orthodoxy over heterodoxy. The justification of the interpretation which explains the book entirely in the light of the historical circumstances attend- ing its origin and of the views current amongst primitive Christians follows, above all, from observing that as a literary production the Revelation of John is by no means unique, but belongs to a class of literature (comp. ApocaLyptic LirEraTurE, vol. ii. p. 174) which then had a very wide currency amongst the Jews, and the numerous remains of which even the most orthodox theologians do not hesitate to interpret by the help of the history of the time. Theapocalyptic literature, in the strict sense of the word, began with the Jews in the 2d century B.c. ; in fact it developed as an aftergrowth of the prophetical literature, from which it differs less in kind than in degree. For more than three centuries it had sought to revive the drooping spirit of the people by revelations of a near future when, after one last dreadful onset of a hostile world, Jahveh would appear in the person of His Messiah to con- quer the nations of the world and to set up the kingdom of glory for Israel. Every time the political situation cul- minated ina crisis for the people of God the apocalypses appeared, stirring up the believers. In spirit, form, plan, and execution they closely resembled each other. Their differences sprang only from the difference of the times, for every apocalyptic writer painted the final catastrophe after the model of the catastrophes of his day, only on a vaster scale and with deepened shadows. They all spoke in riddles; that is, by means of images, symbols, mystic numbers, forms of animals, &c., they half concealed what they meant to reveal, The reasons for this procedure are not far to seek :— (1) clearness and distinctness would have been too profane— only the mysterious appears divine ; (2) it was often danger- ous to be too distinct. The apocalyptic writers in their works supplied revelations on all possible questions, but their principal achievement was regularly a revelation of the history of mankind in general and of the people of Israel in particular; in their most essential features the apocalypses are political manifestos. It is characteristic of all apocalypses that they pass under

false names, being attributed to the most celebrated persons of the Old Testament; thus we still possess apocalypses under the names of Daniel, Baruch, Ezra, Moses, and Enoch. These old heroes are represented in the respective works as speaking in the first person, and exhorting their readers to await with hope and patience the coming of the Messiah. Usually the apocalypse contains a brief summary of history, beginning with the time of the nominal and ending with that of the actual author, in order that the reader, perceiving how much of the prophecy has already been fulfilled to the letter, may look with assured con- fidence for the fulfilment of the rest. Lastly, the particular features in the descriptions as well as the images and metaphors are usually borrowed in great measure from the books of the old prophets, but they are painted in

=

heightened colours on an ampler canvas. "The imagery is alive with the burning breath of the East; a luxuriant fancy sacrifices beauty to boldness and sets proportion at defiance ; all that is sweet and human yields to all that is monstrous and repulsive.

As Jesus Christ had promised to come again, the Jewish expectations of a Messiah who should be revealed continued unabated among many of His disciples; that which as Jews they had hoped from the first and only advent they now deferred till the second. True, the kingdom of God which He had promised did not tally with the materialistic hopes of the people, but on the other hand He had not infrequently Himself employed the figurative language of the prophets and apocalyptic writers; and, after He had left the earth, many sayings borrowed from the Jewish apocalypses were put in His mouth by a vitiated tradition! In the expectations of Christians of the Ist century spiritual and material elements were strangely blent. Hence not only were the Jewish apocalypses, the genuineness of which no one doubted, read in the Christian communities and transmitted to the Gentile converts, but soon there appeared new apocalypses written by Christians. We cannot wonder at this, for all conditions favourable to the production of such writings were to be found in the churches also; above all, men were conscious of possessing the

spirit of prophecy in a far fuller measure than ever before, and this spirit necessarily manifested itself not only in signs and wonders but also in revelations and predictions. Of the Christian apocalypses written between 70 and 170 a.p. only a very small portion is known to us; for the later church viewed them as dangerous and got rid of them. Even of the apocalypse of Peter, written in the lst century and regarded as canonical in some provinces as late as the 3d, only a very few fragments have come down to us.2_ But the great Apocalypse which bears the name of John has been preserved. It is to its reception into the canon that we owe the preservation of this precious, indeed unique, monument of the earliest Christian times.

form, Contents, and Purpose.—If we leave out of view chapters 1. to ill. the Apocalypse of John does not differ very materially in form from the Jewish apocalypses; but undoubtedly its arrangement is better, and its execution simpler and grander, and therefore more tasteful.? In its contents, however, the distinction between this Christian apocalypse and its Jewish fellows is marked; for, while the latter have not and could not have any actual know- ledge of the Messiah whom they promise, the Apocalypse of John centres round the crucified and risen Jesus, the Lamb that was slain. The author knows whom he and the Christian community have to expect; to him Jesus Christ is the alpha and the omega, the first and the last ; he is the Lord of the world and of history. And this faith

1 .g., the saying of Jesus handed down by Papias in Iren. v. 38 ; conipare with it Apoc. Baruch, 29. In the eschatological speeches of Jesus reported by the synoptical writers there is no doubt that sayings are introduced which are derived not from Jesus but from the Jewish apocalyptic writers. See the discussions in Weiffenbach, Der Wiederkunftsgedanke Jesu, 1873.

2 See Hilgenfeld, Nov. Test. extra Can. recept., fasc. iv.

3 The literary value of the Apocalypse of John is much higher than that of any of the Jewish apocalypses. The author possessed the art of keeping his readers enthralled and excited from first to last ; by a suitable

arrangement he has really reduced his motley material to order, and by skilful description he has contrived to make even the repulsive endurable,

gives to the Apocalypse of John a tone of assured con- fidence and hope such as is not to be found in the Jewish apocalypses. On the other hand, however firm and sure the Christian faith of the author appears, he was still com- pletely hide-bound in the old forms; it is really a case of new wine in old bottles. But this very circumstance gives to the book its peculiar charm, for in no other early Christian writing are new and old to be found so com- pletely mingled as in this. The author's attitude towards the world and the state is still entirely the Jewish attitude of surly hate—this disciple of the gospel has not yet learned that we are bound to love our enemies; but his attitude towards God and his view of the value of a man's own works show no longer the Jewish but the new Christian belief, for he sees God in Christ, he has accepted the doctrine of the forgiveness of sins through the blood of the Lamb, and regards himself as a priest and king before God. Hence too he lives and moves no longer in the law but in the prophets and the psalms. From them, especially from the prophets Ezekiel, Zechariah, and Daniel, he borrowed most of his imagery and symbols. What he has done in his book is to create a great apoca- lyptic painting or rather a drama worked out. in different acts. Impatient longing for the end, a deep abhorrence of the heathen state, a firm faith in Christ and His second coming, a minute and painstaking study of the old prophecies—these are the sources from which the descrip- tion of the future are drawn. The purpose is the same as that of all apocalypses—to confirm and strengthen the little family of believers in their patience, their courage, and their confidence, by pointing out that the sufferings of the time will last but a brief span and that the present troubles are already the beginning of that end when sorrow and suffering will in a moment be transformed into glory unspeakable.#

The revelation proper begins with iv. 1,—the first three chapters forming an introduction (the seven letters to the seven churches of Asia Minor, which are prefixed, are marked by poeti- cal beauty and power of language). 'he future is written in a book with seven scals, which the Lamb opens onc after the other (iv., v.). The opening of each scal brings a plague upon the carth (vi.). Before the seventh scal is opencd, the church

of the latter days is itself sealcd that it may be preserved harmless from the assaults of the powers of hell (vii.). At the opening of the seventh seal seven angels with trumpets ae on the scene, each of whom blows a trumpet-blast as a prelude to new horrors on the carth (viii., ix.) With the sixth trumpet the preliminary judg- ments are at an end (lence the episode, ch. x.). The judgment proper begins with the fall of Jerusalem (xi.). Then the seventh trumpet sounds as the signal for the last dread horrors and for the final judgment of the world and of all wickcdness. This is preceded, however, by a description of the preservation of the church of the latter days (xii.), forming one of those pauses in the narrative which give the reader breathing time and relieve the horror of the description by the introduction of scenes of peace and words of comfort. The power of the world that opposes Christ (the Roman empire) is described along with all its devilish accomplices (xiii.), and (xiv.) its destruction is by anticipation set forth in figures. The seven angels follow with the seven vials of wrath, which are poured forth and represent the beginning of the final catastrophe (xv., xvi.). This final catastrophe, involving the imperial city, the antichristian emperor, his governors, and, last of all, the devil himself, is described in xvii.~~xx. 3,—xix. 11 sq. forming the climax, when Christ himself appears on a white horse and vanquishes all his foes. The devil is chained in the bottom~~ less pit for a thousand years; during this time the saints of the latter days—not all believers—reign with Christ. After the devil

4 The way in which the author has given expression to this practical purpose by means of scenes and images reveals the great artist.

5 This idea, germs of which are to be found in the Jewish apo- calypses, is easily explained when we remember that two different views of the resurrection and of the future kingdoin prevailed amongst the Jews. According to the one view only favoured persons, accord- ing to the other every one would rise from the dead; according to the one view the future kingdom would have only a limited duration, according to the other it would be eternal. Inthe Revelation of John the two suppositions are combined.

7 ea

has becn released once more and has made war on the holy city he is for ever overthrown and the last judgment follows (xx.). In xxi.-xxii. 5 the glory of the heavenly and eternal Jerusalem is set forth. In xxii, 6-21 several epilogues ay be detected.

Unity and Integrity.—The above analysis will have shown the essential unity of the book. The more atten- tively we scan the connexion of the descriptions with each other the more clearly do we perceive the unity, the artistic and systematic arrangement, of the book. This is completely overlooked by those who fancy that in the seven seals, the seven trumpets, the seven vials of wrath, the whole course of the judgment is simply repeated in ever new imagery. Leaving all other objections out of account, this supposition is refuted by the simple observa- tion that the author has not merely placed the different scenes side by side but has linked them together in such a way that each scene follows as a consequence from the scene before. A correct perception of the plan of the book further negatives the opinion of older scholars and of Vélter in modern times (Die Entstehung der Apokalypse, 1882) that the book consists of different parts by different authors. But it is probable enough that the work has been interpolated and touched up in various places (certainly in i. 1-3); and several verses of the epilogue (xxii. 6-21) are not by the author of the book, as indeed the language itself is sufficient to prove. Unless we are utterly deceived, the book underwent systematic if not very radical revisions even before the middle of the 2d century.? To the additions then made belong, amongst others, the famous words (xix. 13) kat KéxAnrau 76 dvopna airov 6 Adyos Tod Geo, which do not fit into the passage. An exact investigation of the extent of the alterations and additions would be a very useful work.®

Language.—The language is more Hebraic than that of any other New Testament book. The author thought in Hebrew and wrote in Greek. But the gross violations of Greek grammar are not to be explained from ignorance. "Tn the language of the Apocalypse there is nothing of the bungling and happy-go-lucky style of a beginner; indeed it bears the stamp of consistency and purpose." The author writes, ¢.g, xdpis kal

eipyvy ad 6 dy Kal 6 A Kal 6 €pxopevos kal ard TO éxrTa Tvevpatwv … Kal dard "Incod Xpurrod, 6 waptus, 6 murrds (i. 4, 5), although he has shown in a hundred passages that he knew very well the rules which he has here broken. He must have deliberately intended to break them in order to give to the words of his greeting a certain elevation and solemnity. Of course only to a foreigner could it have occurred to employ those means for this end.

Author's Standpoint.—That the book is not written by a disciple of the apostle Paul, that its author is filled with Jewish hatred and abhorrence of the heathen state, that in other ways traces of the Jewish spirit crop up here and there in the Apocalypse, is beyond question. But many critics, especially the so-called Tiibingen school, as well as Renan, Mommsen, and others, have gone still farther ; the author of the Apocalypse, say they, was an Ebionite and a decided opponent of the apostle Paul. In support of this hypothesis, which they put forward as if it were an

1 See Theol. Lit.-Zeitung, 1882, No. 24.

2 The redaction of the Apocalypse took place long before Irenzus (before 185 a.D.), for it can be shown that the orovdata rat apy aia avadypaba to which he appeals already exhibited the Apocalypse in the form in which we now read it (Iren., v. 30).

3 The state of the text is much more uncertain than in most of the New Testament books, because there are far fewer uncial MSS. of our book than of the Gospels and Epistles ; infact there are only five, of which only three are complete. The best MSS. are the Sinaitic, the Alexandrine, and the Ephraemi Parisiensis (incomplete). The so- called textus recepius of the Apocalypse is especially bad, owing to causes which Delitzsch was the first to point out (Handsehriftliche Funde, 1861-62).

REY ei, ser Pe N

established truth, they appeal chiefly to the following observations :—(1) in ch. vii. only 144,000 Jews are sealed, therefore the author regarded only born Jews as full members of the Messiali's kingdom ; consequently (ver. 9 sq.) the multitude which is not numbered forms a wider circle, viz.,

the proselytes, who are not counted and also not sealed, and are therefore of lower rank; (2) in ii.—iii. the author displays the greatest abhorrence of those who eat meat which has been offered to idols and who practise "fornication"; by these none but disciples of Paul can be meant; (3) in xxi. 14 the author speaks only of twelve apostles, and thereby undoubtedly excludes Paul; (4) the author praises (ii. 2) the Ephesians because they have found the false apostles to be liars and have rejected them, but by these false apostles only Paul could be meant; (5) the author cannot conceive (xi. 1, 2) that the temple at Jerusalem should ever be destroyed, and proves by this how much he himself still clung to the temple worship.

The point in dispute is of the highest importance for the proper understanding of the history of primitive Christianity. If the Tiibingen school is right, the Pauline epoch was followed in Asia Minor by an Ebionitic epoch, and in this case catholicism may very well be the product of a compromise between Paulinism and Jewish Christianity. But on this very point it can be clearly shown that the Tiibingen school is in the wrong; for the

above arguments amount to nothing.

(1) The 12× 12,000 (vii. 4 sg.) can only, like James i. 1, be in- terpreted allegorically and referred to Christians generally without respect of nationality ; the twelve tribes are the Christians, This interpretation is the only possible one, because (@) in xiv. 8 it is said of the 144,000 that they are bought from the earth, and because (b) besides the 144,000 who are sealed no one survives the horrors of the last tine. We must not overlook the fact that in ch. vii. two entirely different visions are presented, which are not to be fused into a single vision: the 144,000 are on earth, the unnumbered multitude (ver. 9 sq.) are not a supplement of these 144,000, but are already in heaven and represent the sum of all the children of God from the beginning. Thus, if the 144,000 were exclusively Jews, in the last time there would be no Christian at all from among the heathen ; that is, no heathen would be saved. But that this is the author's meaning not even the Tiibingen critics can maintain. Thus the "twelve tribes" are to be understood allegori- cally. As Abrahain is the father of all believers, so all believers make up the nation of the twelve tribes. (2) The polemic

against the eating of meat offered to idols and against " fornication " is not peculiar to the author, but is to be found in several early Christian writings. It is not a polemic against Paul ; at most it is a polemic against lax disciples of Paul ; further it is no sign of Ebionitism, for very many Gentile Christian writers of the 2d century (¢.g., Justin) combated the eating of meat offered to idols. The rule mentioned in Acts xv. 29 may really have been made between 58 and 70 a.p., and may have been a condition of intercourse betwecu Jewish and Gentile Christians. Aftcr that time 1t gradually prevailed all over Christendom. (38) In the ideal description of the new Jerusalem it would have been impossible for the author to speak of thirteen apostles. (4) The plural dréoroAo: (ii. 2) shows that Paul is not ineant, and the comparison with ii. 9 and iii, 9 makes it probable that Jewish emissaries are intended. But, apart from this, we see better than heretofore by the newly discovered Zeaching of the Apostles that the name "apostle" was not confined to the twelve apostles and Paul. Ifthe author had wished to express abhorrence of Paul he could not have done it more obscurely than he has done it init. 2, (5) The author says expressly (xxi. 22) that he saw no temple in the new Jerusalem, " for the Lord is her temple and the Lamb"; hence he felt that the temple worship was no longer needed to satisfy his religious wants; in excepting the temple buildings from the universal destruction (xi. 1) he follows a Jewish notion, to which in his heart he has already risen superior.

The arguments to prove the Ebionitism of the Apoca- lypse are therefore insufficient; rather, we should say, the Apocalypse shows us a Christianity free from the law, free from national prejudices, universal, and yet a Christianity which is quite independent of Paul. It is this that consti- tutes the high importance of the book. The author speaks not at all of the law— the word does not occur in his work; he looks for salvation from the power and grace of God and

. io ver AY TO N 499

Christ alone, and knows that to be clean a man must wash his robes in the blood of the Lamb; nowhere has he made a distinction between Gentile and Jewish Christians; in this respect he is even more liberal than Paul, for Paul believes in a continued preference accorded to the people

of Israel, while our author knows of no such thing; in his view preference is given only to the martyrs and confessors of the latter days; they alone shall reign with Christ a thousand years ;! the people of Israel, so far as it has rejected Christ, is to our author simply a "synagogue of Satan" (ii. 9; iii. 9). In this respect it clearly appears that the author of the Apocalypse has cast aside all national religious prejudices. Accordingly to him Jesus is not the Messiah of the Jews—of this there is no mention in the book—but the Saviour of the world, the Lord of heaven and of earth, the disposer and director of history. The Christology of the Apocalypse is nowhere Ebionitic ; rather it stands midway between that of Paul and that of the Fourth Gospel, and is more elevated than the former: Christ is made almost equal with God and has the same predicates and names as God.°

The Apocalypse teaches us that even in the apostolic age the conceptions of Paulinism and Ebionitism do not explain everything; it is neither Pauline nor Ebionitic. It shows us that at the close of the apostolic age there was a Christianity which was free from the law and universal, and yet continued to adhere to Jewish modes of expres- sion; it shows us that it was possible to think and feel like a Jew in politics, and yet in religious thoughts and feelings to be evangelical and superior to all earthly limitations. These, however, are glaring contradictions which could not last. But the fact that in the Apocalypse we possess a document exhibiting these contradictions imparts to the book its high importance. From Paul's epistles we can only learn how a great mind has worked its way from the letter of the law up to freedom; from the Apocalypse we can learn how from the Jewish fusion of religion, nation- ality, and politics thousands were gradually led upwards to the gospel, and we can further learn that the step from the premises to the conclusion is one of the hardest to take. The author of the Apocalypse has in many points not yet drawn the conclusions.

Date and Historical Position.—All impartial scholars are now agreed that in chapters xiii, and xviii. of the Apocalypse we must look for the key to the comprehension of the book as well as to the question of the date of its composition. That the beast (xiii. 1 sg.; xvii. 3 sg.) is the Roman empire, that the seven heads are seven

emperors, that the woman (xvii. 3-9) is the city of |

Rome, that the ten horns (xiii. 1; xvii. 3, 12 sq.) are imperial governors—all this is now beyond dispute. Also it is settled that a Roman emperor will be the antichrist, and that the author abhorred nothing so much as the worship of the emperor. Hence it is very probable, and has been maintained by Mommsen especially on good grounds, that the second beast (xiii. 11) is meant to describe the imperial representatives in the provinces, especially the Roman governors in the Asiatic continent. Finally, almost every one regards the year 64 as the terminus a quo of the composition of the book, inasmuch as the bloody persecution of the Christians in Rome (xiii.*

1 Observe that in his brief description of the millenium (ch. xx.) the author neither speaks of the Jewish people nor introduces any grossly material conception. This is the strongest proof that he was not an Ebionite.

2 Compare also xi. 8, where Jerusalem is called "Sodom and

on br) is Christological conceptions and formulas which occur in the book are not always consistent. This is not, however, in itself a proof

of interpolation. 4 Diisterdieck alone regards the ten horns as emperors.

7; xvil. 6; xviii, 20-24) is presupposed in the narra- tive.®

'But, while scholars are at one on these points, they still differ on the question of the person of antichrist. The one side affirm that the author regarded Nero returned from the grave as antichrist (so Ewald, Liicke, De Wette, Credner, Reuss, Volckmar, Mommsen, Renan, &c.); the other side deny this (so Weiss, Diisterdieck, Bruston, &c.), and try to identify antichrist either with Domitian or with an emperor not defined. But the grounds on which they conibat the former hypothesis are of little moment. That the antichrist of the Apocalypse is Nero returned to life results from the following considerations :—

(1) In ch. xiii. 3 it is said that one of the heads of the beast received a deadly wound bnt was afterwards healed to the astonish- ment of the world. Now ifit is scttled that the beast is the Roman empire, and that by the heads are designated the emperors, the statement is only applicable to Nero, in whose death it is well known that the people did not believe, many persons expecting that he would return from the East.6 (2) In xvii. 8, 11 one head is identified with the whole animal, and of the animal it is said that "'it was and is not and will come again," meaning that the eighth head is not a new one but one of the seven. From this it necessarily follows that in the author's view the antichrist will be an emperor who has reigned once already and who represents the whole wickedness of the empire (the beast) concentrated and embodied in himself; but this can only be Nero, for of no other emperor was the report current in the empire that he wonld come again, and no empcror but Nero had instituted a persecution of the Christians. (3) In xiii, 18 it is said that the number of the beast —that is, according to the Hebrew art of Gematria, the sum of the numerical values of the letters of his name—is the number of a man, and is 666. Down to 1835 this saying was a riddle which no man could read, though Ireneus (v. 30) had attempted an explana- tion: he thought of Tcitan, Evanthcs, Lateinos. But in 1835 Fritzsche, Benary, Reuss, and Hitzig discovered simultaneously that the numerical values of the words $302 DP ("Emperor Neron ")=100 + 60 + 200 + 50 + 200+6+50=666. The old variant 616 must be regarded as a confirmation of this explanation, for 616 is=11) IDP (" Emperor Nero"). It may certainly appear strange that the calculation is made according to the numerical value of the Hebrew letters, while the book is written in Greek ; but, as there is no doubt that the author has thought as a Semite from first to last, it is not surprising that he has set forth his great secret in Hebrew lettcrs (comp. 'Apuayedév, xvi. 16). (4) Down to the 5th century it was belicved by Western Christians that Nero would come again and be the antichrist or his precursor.' In the East also this belief can be shown (see the Sibyllinc oracles) to have still existed in the 2d century.

For these four reasons it is certain that the author of

the Apocalypse believed that Nero would come again, and regarded him as the antichrist. He wrote under the impression of the story current in

the East that Nero had gone to the Parthians and would return with them to reclaim his empire.

Hence the Apocalypse was written after the summer of 68 a.p.,® but the question still remains whether it was written under Gadba or Vespasian or Domitian. Most of the scholars who accept the right explanation of the antichrist suppose it to have been written under Galba ; the beginning of Vespasian's reign is preferred by Liicke (whose earlier opinion was different), Bleek, Béhmer, and also Diisterdieck and Weiss ; Mommsen upholds the later years of Vespasian ; but the old tradition of the church

> The statement of Epiphanius (J/@r., li. 12) that the Apocalypse was written under Clandius is untenable.

6 Bruston refers the wounded head to Cesar; but what could have induced the author to niention and put in the foreground an event which had taken place about one hundred years before ?

7 See the Carm. Apolog. of Commodian; the commentary of Victorinns on the Apocalypse; Lactantius, De Mort. Persec., 2; Martin of Tours in Sulp. Severus, Dial., ii. 14 ; Sulp. Sev., Chron., ie2S, 20, rece

8 Against Bruston, who supposes that it was written between 64 and 68 a.D., by reckoning the eniperors (xvii. 10) from Cesar, and hence taking the reigning emperor to be Nero. But Bruston is thus compelled to reject the explanation that the returned Nero is the antichrist, and he cannot account for the mention in the Apocalypse of numerous martyrs at Rome,

represents the work as written under Domitian and even towards the close of his reign. This tradition rests on very ancient testimony, that of Irenzeus,) but has met with no approval from critics of the present century ; only the traditionalists who reject the historical interpreta- tion accept it. It is the only case in the whole range of the New Testament where criticism assigns to a writing a higher antiquity than is allowed it by tradition, Whether criticism has not been too hasty in setting aside the statement of Irenzeus will appear in the sequel.

In support of the supposition that the Apocalypse was written before August 70 a.p., the chief argument adduced is that ch. xi. assumes that Jerusalem and the temple are still uninjured. Mommsen (6m. Gesch., v. 521) has not succeeded in satisfactorily disposing of this argument. The Apocalypse is cognizant of the flight of the Jewish Christians into the country beyond Jordan towards Pella (ch. xii.) ; it expects the partial destruction of Jerusalem in the immediate future.2 But this very expectation as well as the confidence that the temple would remain uninjured shows that at that time city and temple were still standing. Hence, as ch. xi. was written before August 70, most critics, assuming that the whole book dates from one and the same time, conclude that it was composed under Galba,—that is, between autumn 68 and spring 69. In their view the five emperors who have fallen are Augustus, Tiberius, Claudius, Caligula, and Nero, therefore the reigning emperor is Galba,® and the reason why the author does not make antichrist (the returning Nero) immediately succeed Galba is a wish to carry on the number seven, and because "even a prophet owes some consideration to the powers that be"; but he allows this unknown successor only a short reign, and then comes the returned Nero and the end of the world.4 Lastly, these critics point to the fact that a false Nero appeared immediately after the death of the real Nero (Tacitus, /Zist., 11. 8, 9). This position is very strong, but there are two objections to it,—in the first place, it is uncertain whether Galba should be included in the list of emperors at all—so eminent an authority as Mommsen is against including him, and reckons Vespasian as the sixth, and, secondly, the author of the Apocalypse thinks of a false Nero who will ally himself with the Parthians (see ch. ix. and elsewhere). Therefore his false Nero appears not to be that of Tacitus, but the one who in the last years of Vespasian found a following in the Euphrates district and was acknowledged in the reign of Titus by King Artabanus, who prepared to restore him at Rome by force of arms, but was at last surrendered by the Parthians, about 88, to Domitian (so Mommsen ; compare Persia, vol. xviii. p. 603). On this view the Apocalypse was written about 75-79, Thus we see that we have here two discrepant calculations (autumn 68 to spring 69; about 75-79); each has much in favour of it, but also at least one strong argument against it :—against the first calculation there is the argument that the false Nero who best suits the case did not appear till about 75, while against the second cal-

culation there is the argument that according to ch. xi. the destruction of Jerusalem had not yet taken place.> In these

- *Tren, v. 80, 8: 4 dmoxdavwis ob mpd wordod xpdvov Ewpadn, GAAG oxeddy em) ris Huetépas yeveas, mpds TE TEAEL THs AomiTiavod apx7s.*

? The three and a half years in xi. 2, xii. 14, xiii. 5 are taken ie the Apocalypse of Daniel, and no deeper ineaning is to be sought in them.

3 Hildebrand regards the sixth as Vitellins (Zisch. f. wiss. Theol., 1874, p. 76 sq.).

- *So Reuss, Volckmar, Credner, De Wette, also Renan (Antechrist), but the last-mentioned, though he put the Apocalypse in the reign of Galba, begins the enumeration of the heads with Julius Cesar, and hence gets into difficulties.*

5 The view that the Apocalypse was written between the spring of

circumstances it appears perhaps best to assume that the Apocalypse was written under Galba, that is, that the con- ception and the first draught of it date from this time, but that the seventeenth chapter was afterwards revised in the last years of the reign of Vespasian, about 75- 79. Now it is to be remembered that Ireneus asserts most explicitly that it was revealed in the last years of Domitian. Such a statement is not to be simply set aside, especially when it seems to make a writing later, and not earlier, and when there is internal evidence that the book underwent revisions. Further exact investigation of the details of the Apocalypse will perhaps supply positive proofs ; at present the following can be put forward merely as an hypothesis, for which only a certain probability is claimed :—the Apocalypse was written under Galba, but afterwards underwent revisions under Vespasian, about 75-79, and perhaps in Domitian's reign of terror, about 93-96 (compare what has been said above on the unity and integrity).

Place of Composition—A uthorship.—That the Apocalypse was written at some place on the west coast of Asia Minor has never, so far as known to the present writer, been doubted by any critic of note.

The tradition of the church ascribes the Apocalypse to the apostle John,® and the Tiibingen school has felt bound in this case to agree with tradition, Within the last twenty years or so the question has been much complicated by being mixed up with the question of the origin of the Fourth Gospel; all, however, agree that the book was written by a born Jew. At present the following views are maintained :—(1) the Gospel and the Apocalypse of John are by the apostle John (Ebrard, Hengstenberg and his school, Hofmann and his school, Kliefoth) ; (2) the Gospel is by an unknown autlior, the Apocalypse is by the apostle John (Baur, Schwegler, Kostlin, Hilgenfeld); (3) the Gospel is by the apostle John, the Apocalypse is by a man called John, the otherwise known presbyter, who had no wish to be taken for the apostle (Liicke, Bleek, Ewald, Credner, De Wette, Neander, Reuss, Diisterdieck, Keim, Holtzmann, &c.) ;7 (4) the Apocalypse is by another John, one of the apostle's disciples, who afterwards received the tacit approval of the apostle, so that the Revelation passed in the church as a work of the apostle (Renan); (5) the Apocalypse was foisted on the apostle John without his knowledge (Volckmar, &c.). Of these views the first and fourth may be summarily dismissed, the latter because Renan has not brought forward even the shadow of a proof, the former because the differences between the Apocalypse and the Gospel in language and opinions are too great to allow us to suppose that the books are by the same author.® It is true that on the other hand both writings have much in common, nay, even that there is a profound aftinity between them, but this only proves that their authors lived in tle same country, and were to some extent subject to the same intellectual influences. Even Hase, who formerly thought it possible to refer Gospel and Apocalypse to the apostle John (see his work, Die Tiibinger Schule, 1855), has renounced this view. But what is to prevent us from ascribing at least the Apocalypse to the apostle 69 and August 70, hence in the beginning of Vespasian's reign, has least to recommend it. Some of the critics who have maintained it are much biased. Thus Diisterdieck regards the sixth emperor (xvii. 10) as Vespasian, the seventh, who is to remain for only a short time, as Titus, and the eighth as

Nero. But, as the book was written, according to Diisterdieck, shortly before 70, it follows that ' we have here a prophecy which definitely announces certain historical events beforehand." Thus the claim of the Apocalypse to be an actual prophecy is justified, though only in one verse.*

® So Justin; see Dial. c. Tryph., 81.

7 Some of these scholars also deny that the Gospel is by John.

8 This was observed by Dionysius of Alexandria (in Euseb., HW. Z., vii. 27).

na Ve RR BW 501

John? Certainly the external testimony is very good,! the doubts entertained by the Alexandrians, by Eusebius, and by Byzantine theologians as to the apostolic authorship of the book have not much weight, the book being little to their mind, and the substance of the Revelation would in

many respects suit John Boanerges. But the following

considerations speak against the apostle John as author :— (1) the so-called " Alogi" (Epiph., Hzr., li.) denied that the work was by the apostle, and declared that it came from Corinth and hence was a forgery; but the Alogi

were in Asia Minor about 160 and their negative, if

not their positive, evidence has therefore great weight ;? (2) the author of the Apocalypse does not style himself an

apostle, and nowhere does he designate himself as a per- sonal disciple of Jesus or as an eye-witness; (3) the author speaks (xxi. 14) in such an objective way of the twelve apostles of the Lamb that it is scarcely credible that he himself belonged to them; (4) the descriptions of

Christ in the Apocalypse are:~~psychologically scarcely intel~~

ligible on the assumption that they were written by a per- sonal disciple of the Lord. On these grounds we must say that, though not quite impossible, it is very improbable that the apostle Jolin was the author of the Apocalypse. But uot less improbable is the supposition that the real author

wished to pass for the apostle John and fathered the work on him. It is true that amongst the Jews apocalypses were fathered by their authors on famous men ; but the fraud is always very patent. But in this case the name of John occurs only four times (i. 1, 4, 9; xxii. 8), and in the whole book there is nothing that reveals the author's intention to pass for the apostle John. And we have further to remember that, according to trustworthy evi- dence, the apostle John was still living at the time in Asia Minor. It is at least improbable that another dweller in Asia Minor should have fathered a book on hii under his very eyes. ;

In these circumstances only one hypothesis seems left —that started by the Alexandrians in order to get rid of the inconvenient authority of the Apocalypse—that the book is from the pen of another John in Asia Minor, uamely, the presbyter. But, though this hypothesis has had much acceptance in our time, it is far from probable ; for—and here Zahn and Renan are right—the existence of a conspicuous presbyter John in distinction from the apostle is very uncertain. The Apocalypse, as the tradi- tional text of the first chapter now runs, is certainly not the work of any ordinary person of the name of John: itis by a John who enjoyed the highest consideration in the churches (see i. 1, 4). If besides the apostle John there

was no second John who possessed such authority in Asia |

Minor in the Ist century, and if it is impossible that the Apocalypse can be the work either of the apostle John or of a literary forger, the only supposition left is that the name of John was interpolated in the last revision (after the death of the apostle John). Observe once more that this name occurs only in the first verses of the first chapter, and in a verse of the last. No hypothesis solves the pro- blem so well as this. Whether originally a different name appeared in i. 9, and how ch. i. gradually arose, are ques- tions into which we cannot enter here. In this difficult

sub- ject absolute certainty is unattainable, but the supposition that the Revelation was written by an unknown Christian of Asia Minor, and that the name of John is a later addition

1 Appeal, however, must not be made to the fact that according to tradition the apostle John was banished to Patmos, and that the author of the Apocalypse says of himself (i. 9), "I was in the isle that is called Patinos for the word of God," for the tradition is based on the Apocalypse, and, what is more, on a misunderstanding of it.

? From Eusebius, WZ. Z., iti. 28, 1 many have assumed that the Roman presbyter Caius (about 200 a.D.) was of the same opinion as the Alogi, but this is improbable.

in order to ascribe the Revelation to the apostle John, labours under fewer difficulties than any other that has hitherto been started. That, thus introduced, John is not expressly designated as apostle need not surprise us, for at the beginning of the 2d century every one in Asia Minor knew who "John the servant of God" was. The epistles also with the heading "the elder" are meant to be regarded as written by the apostle John, although they do not contain the title apostle.®

Authority in the Church.—The Apocalypse, which as early as the time of Justin and Papias enjoyed a high re- putation as the work of the apostle John, was admitted into the canon of the New Testament (see Murat. fragm., Treneus, Tertullian), In the West it has always been retained in the canon, but in the East it was discredited through Montanism, and the spiritualistic Alexandrians who gave the tone threw more and more doubts upon it, so that towards the end of the 3d century it began to be omitted from the New Testament. For nearly a thousand years the Apocalypse was not recognized by the majority of the Greek Church as a canonical book (and hence it is that we possess so few ancient Greek MSS. of the Apocalypse), but, as no formal condemnation was pronounced against it, the book was never suppressed, and regained its footing towards the end of the Middle Ages, the Greek Church following the example of the Latin. At present the Apocalypse forms part of the New Testament all over Christendom, and rightly so, for it is one of the most instructive documents of early Christianity. Narrow or dogmatic spirits, it

is true, will never be able to value it aright, and will therefore either reject it or seek to correct it by false interpretations.

Literature.—Liicke, Versuch einer vollstindigen Kinleitung in die Offend. Joh., 2d ed., 1852; comp. the introductions to the New Testament by Reuss, Credner, Bleck-Mangold, Hilgenfeld, Davidson, &. ; Gebhardt, Der Lehrbegriff der Apok., 1873 ; Renan, L' Antechrist, 1873; Mommsen, Rém. Geschichte, v. p. 520 sq. Commentaries by Ewald, 1828, 1862; De Wette, 1848, 1862 ; Nengstenberg, 1861, 1863; Ebrard, 1859; Diisterdieck, 1865 ; Volckinar, 1862; Bleek, 1862; Lange, 1871; Fiiller, 1874; Klicfoth, 1874-75; Bisping, 1876. Schneckenburger, De Falsa Neronis Fama, 1846; Weiss, " Apokal. Studien," in Studien und Kritiken, 1869, i.; Bruston, Le ehiffre 666 et UVhypothése du retour de Néron, 1880; Bochmer, Verfasser wu. Abfassungszeit der Joh. Apoc., 1855; Hilgenfeld, "Nero der Antichrist," in Zedt- schrift f. wissensch. Theol., 1869, iv. ; Hildebrandt, "Das rom. Antichristenthum zur Zeit der Offenb. Joh.," in Zeitschr. J. wiss. Theol., 1874, i.; Ronsch, "Gematrisches zu Apoc. xii. 18," in Zeitschr. f. wiss. Theol., 1873, p- 258 sq.; Vtibing. Theol. Quartalschr., 1872, i. ; Hausrath in Schenkel's Bibelleatcon, i. p- 153 sq. (A. HA.)

REVERSION. See Remarnper.

REVIVAL OF LEARNING. See RENAISSANCE.

REWAH, the principal native state in Baghelkhand, under the political superintendence of the Baghelkhand and Central India Agencies. It has an area of about 10,000 square miles, and lies between 22° 39' and 25° 12" N. lat., and between 80° 46' and 82° 51' E. long.; it is bounded on the N. by the British districts of Banda, Allahabad, and Mirzapur in the North-Western Provinces ; on the E. by Mirzapur district and by native states in Chutia-Nagpur ; on the S. by the districts of Chhatisgarh, Mandla, and Jabalpur in the Central Provinces; and on the W. by other native states of Bhagelkhand. Rewah state is divided into two well-defined portions. The northern and smaller division is the plateau lying between the Kaimur range of hills and that portion of the Vindhyas

3 The view here put forward as to the author of the Apocalypse ig further recommended by its agreement with the general history of early Christian literature in the church. Originally writings derived their authority from the nature of their contents, afterwards from their author, When writings by obscure persons were intended to attract attention, it was necessary to pass them off under the names of celebri- ties ; sce Harnack, Die Lehre der 12 Apostel, p. 106 sq.

502

known as Biujh, which overlook the valley of the Ganges. This plateau is for the most part cultivated and well peopled; the soil varies from a rich black loam to a sandy laterite; but in the greater part of this area good land predominates, and rich harvests both of kharif and rabi crops are generally obtained. Water is plentiful, and the country is full of large tanks and reservoirs, which, however, are not used for irrigation purposes; the only system of wet cultivation which has any favour with the villagers is that of bandhs, or mounds of earth raised at the lower ends of sloping fields to retain the rain water for some time after the monsoon rains cease. The Rewah plateau is reported to possess every natural advantage, and the whole of its area could be brought under rich culti- vation. 'The country to the south of the Kaimur Hills comprises by far the largest portion of the state; but here cultivation is restricted to the valley between the hills and the Sone river, and to a few isolated patches in scattered parts of the wild and magnificent forest wastes. Rewah is rich in minerals and forests. Operations lately undertaken to determine the extent of its coal fields have proved highly successful. Until very recently Rewah possessed no roads to speak of or means of internal com- munication ; but good progress is now being made, and by this means it is anticipated that the state will soon develop its rich resources. The principal river is the Sone, which, receiving the Mahanadi from the south, flows through the state in a north and north-easterly directiqn into Mirzapur district; another important river is the Tons; but none of the rivers are navigable. The average rainfall at Rewah is about 574 inches.

The population of the state in 1881 was 1,305,124 (654,182 males, 650,942 females); Hindus in the same year numbered 971,788,

Mohammedans 31,107, and aboriginals 302,107. The inhabitants of Rewah are reported to be a singularly simple, pleasant, and well-disposed raee, and they greatly appreeiate the efforts which are now being made to benefit them. The revenue of the state in 1882-83 amounted to £110,946, of which the land contributed £71,798. The ehief town is Rewah, situated in 24° 31' 30" N. Jat. and 81° 20' E. long., and containing in 1881 a population of 22,016.

The state came under British influence in 1812, when the first formal treaty was made with Jai Sinh Deo, by which he was acknowledged as ruler of his dominions and was brought under the proteetion of the British Government. The raja, however, failed to fulfil his obligations, and a second treaty was made eon- firming the first and defining more clearly his relations with the 3ritish Government. The administration of Rewah is now entirely in the hands of the British owing to the death of the maharaja Raghuraj Sinh and the suceession of his infant son.

REYNOLDS, Sir Josnua (1723-1792), English por- trait-painter, was born at Plympton Earl, in Devon- shire, on July 16, 1723. He was educated by his father, a clergyman and the master of the free grammar school of the place, who designed his son for the medical profession. But the boy showed a distinct preference for painting. He was constantly copying the plates in Dryden's Plutarch and Cat's Emblems, and poring over Jonathan HNichardson's Treatise on Art. At the age of eight, aided by the instructions in Zhe Jesuit's Perspective, he made a sufficiently correct drawing of the Plympton schoolhouse, which greatly astonished his father. It was at length decided that the lad should devote himself to art, and in October 1741 he proceeded to London to study under Thomas Hudson, a mediocre artist, a native of Devon- shire, who was popular in the metropolis as a portrait painter. Reynolds remained with Hudson for only two years, acquiring with uncommon aptitude the technicalities of the craft, and in 1743 he returned to Devonshire, where, settling at Plymouth Dock, he employed himself in portrait painting. By the end of 1744 he was again in

London. He was well received by his old master, from.

whom he appears previously to have parted with some cold-

ness on both sides. Hudson introduced him to the artists' club that met in Old Slaughters, St Martin's Lane, and gave him much advice as to his work. Reynolds now painted his portraits of Captain Hamilton, father of the marquis of Abercorn, of Mrs Field, of Alderman Tracey, now in the Plymouth Atheneum, and of the notorious Miss Chudleigh, afterwards duchess of Kingston. To this period, or per- haps to one slightly later, is referable the artist's excellent oval bust portrait of himself, which was included in the Grosvenor Gallery Exhibition of 1884. At Christmas 1746 he was recalled to Plympton to attend the last hours of his father, after whose death he again established him- self, now with two of his sisters, at Plymouth Dock, where he painted portraits, and, as he has himself recorded, derived much instruction from an examination of some works by William Gandy of Exeter, whose broad and forcible execution must have been an excellent corrective to the example of Hudson's dry and hard method.

Meanwhile the pleasant urbanity of manner which dis- tinguished Reynolds throughout life had been winning for him friends. He had made the acquaintance of Lord Edgcumbe, and by him was introduced to Captain (after- wards Viscount Keppel), who was to play an important and helpful part in the career of the young painter. Keppel was soon made aware of Reynolds's ardent desire to visit Italy ; and, as he had just been appointed to the command of the Mediterranean squadron, he gracefully invited the artist to accompany him in his own ship, the "Centurion." The offer was gladly accepted. While Keppel was conducting his tedious negotiations with the dey of Algiers, relative to the piracy with which that potentate was charged, Reynolds resided at Port Mahon, the guest of the governor of Minorca, painting portraits of the principal inhabitants ; and, in December 1749, he sailed for Leghorn, and thence, with all eagerness, made his way to Rome.

He has confessed that his first sight of the works of Raphael was a grievous disappointment, and that it required lengthened study before he could appreciate the correctness and grace of the master. By the dignity and imagination of Michelangelo he was deeply impressed ; to the end of

life the great Florentine remained for Reynolds the supreme figure in art; his name was con- stantly upon his lips, and, as he had wished, it was the last that he pronounced to the students of the Royal Academy. Of the influence of Correggio, of his sweetness of expression, of his method of chiaroscuro, we find frequent traces in the works of Sir Joshua, especially in his paintings of children ; but after all it was from the Venetians that the Inglish painter learned most. His own strongest instincts were towards richness and splendour of colour, and in these qualities he found unsurpassable examples in the produc- tions of Titian and Veronese. :

While in Rome he avoided, as far as possible, the temptation to spend his time in copying specific pictures, which he considered "a delusive kind of industry," by which " the student satisfies himself with an appearance of doing something, and falls into the dangerous habit of imitating. without selecting." His method of becoming acquainted with the old masters, and of assimilating their excellences, was by diligent examination and comparison, aided by studies of general effect and of individual parts. His knowledge of the Roman art treasures was dearly purchased, While working in the corridors of the Vatican he caught a severe cold, which resulted in the deafness that clung to him for the rest of his life, and rendered necessary the ear-trumpet which he used in conversation.

. – After a residence of two years in Rome, Reynolds, in

the spring of 1752, spent four months in visiting Parma, Florence, Venice, and other important cities of Italy; and, after a brief stay in Devonshire, he established himself as

=

a

a portrait painter in St Martin's Lane, London, whience he afterwards removed to Great Newport Street, and finally, in 1760, to Leicester Square, where he continued

to paint till his death.

His first reception on his return was hardly a favourable one. Hudson called to see his productions and told him, " Reynolds, you don't paint so well as when you left England." Ellis, another accepted portrait painter

of the time, who had studied under Kneller, exclainied,

"This will never answer. Why, you don't paint in the least like Sir Godfrey,"—adding, as he abruptly left the room, "Shakespeare in poetry, Kneller in painting." The verdict of the public, however, was all on the side of the young innovator. Lord Edgcumbe played the part of the generous patron, and exerted himself to obtain com- missions for his protégé, of whose ability the portraits

which he now produced—of the duchess of Hamilton,

the countess of Coventry, Lord Holderness, and especially of his old friend Keppel—were sufficient guarantee. The artist's painting-room was thronged with the wealth and fashion of London, " with women who wished to be trans- mitted as angels, and with men who wished to appear as

heroes and philosophers" ; and he was already afloat upon

that tide of prosperity which never ebbed till the day of

his death. Various other artists contested with lim for popular applause. First the Swiss Liotard had his moment of popularity; and at a later period there was

Opie, and the more formidable and sustained rivalry of

Gainsborough and of Romney; but in the midst of all, then as now, Reynolds niaintained an admitted supremacy. And, if the magic of his brush brought him crowds of sitters, his charm of manner gathered round him numerous friends. During the first year of his residence in London he had made the acquaintance of Dr Johnson, which, diverse as the two

men were, became a friendship for life. To him Burke and Goldsmith, Garrick, Sterne, Bishop Percy, and, it seems, Hogarth, were before long added. At the hospitable dinner table of Reynolds such distin- guished men enjoyed the freest and most unconstrained companionship, and most of them were members of the » Literary Club," established, at the painter's suggestion, in 1764,

In 1760 the London world of art was greatly interested by the novel proposal of the Society of Artists to exhibit their works to the public. The hall of the society was at their disposal for the purpose; and in the month of April an exceedingly successful exhibition was opened, the pre- cursor of many that followed. To this display Reynolds contributed four portraits. In 1765 the association obtained a royal charter, and became known as "The Iucorporated Society of Artists"; but much rivalry and jealousy was occasioned by the management of the various exhibitions, and an influential body of painters withdrew from the society, and proceeded to consider the steps that should be taken in order that their corporate existence might be recognized. They had access to the young king, George IIL, who promised his patronage and help. In December 1768 the Royal Academy was founded, and Reynolds was elected, by acclamation, its first president, an honour which more than compensated for his failure to obtain the appointment of king's painter, which, the pre- vious year, had been bestowed on Allan Ramsay, a more courtly but more commonplace artist. In a few months the king signified his approval of the election by knighting the new president, and intimating that the queen and himself would honour him with sittings for portraits to be presented to the Academy.

Reynolds was fitted for his new position no less by his urbane and courteous manner and by his wide general culture than by his eminence as an artist. With unwearied

assiduity, with unfailing tact, he devoted himself to furthering the interests of the new Academy. It was at his suggestion that the annual banquet was instituted. To the specified duties of his post he added the delivery of a presidential address at the distribution of the prizes, and his speeches on these occasions form the well-known "discourses" of Sir

Joshua. Expressed as they are with simple elegance and_perspicuous directness, these discourses alone would be sufficient to entitle their author to literary distinction; indeed, when they were first delivered, it was thought impossible that they could be the production of a painter, and Johnson and Burke have been credited with their composition, in' spite of the specific denials of both, and of Dr Johnson's indignant exclamation —" Sir Joshua, sir, would as soon get me to paint for him as to write for him!"

In the unwearied pursuit of his art, and in the calm enjoyment of his varied friendships, Sir Joshua's life flowed on peacefully and happily enough. He was too prosperous and successful an artist altogether to escape the jealousy of his less fortunate and less capable brethren, and he suffered in this way sometimes, especially from the attacks of Barry, a painter who lived long enough to regret and, so far as he was able, to rectify his fault. In 1784, on the death of Ramsay, Reynolds was appointed painter to the king, Two years previously he had suffered from a paralytic attack; but, after a month of rest, he was able to resume his painting with unabated energy and power. In the summer of 1789 his sight began to fail; he was affected by the gutta serena, but the progress of the malady was gradual, and he continued occasionally to practise his art till about the end of 1790. His last years were embittered by a most unfortunate disagreement with the Royal Academy, relative to the appointment of a professor of perspective. Under the impression that there was a conspiracy against him among the various members, he signified his intention of leaving the presidential chair, a resignation which he was after- wards induced to withdraw, and his final discourse was delivered on the 10th December 1790. He was still able to enjoy the companionship of his friends, and he exerted himself in an effort to raise funds for the erection of a monument in St Paul's to Dr Jolinson, who had died in 1784. Towards the end of 1791 it was evident to the friends of Reynolds that he was gradually sinking. Fora few months he suffered from extreme depression of spirits, the result of a severe form of liver complaint, and on the 23d February 1792 this great artist and blameless gentle- man passed peacefully away.

Reynolds's first discourse deals with the establishment of an academy for the finc arts, and of its value as being a repository of the traditions of the best of bygone practice, of 'the principles which many artists have spent their lives in ascertaining." In the sccond lecture the study of the painter is divided into three stages, —in the first of which he is busied with processes and technicalities, with the grammar of art, while in the second he examines what has been done by other artists, and in the last compares these results with nature herself. In the third discourse Reynolds treats of "the great and leading principles of the grand style"; and succeeding addresses are devoted to such subjects as " Moderation," "Taste," "Genius," and "Sculpture." The fourteenth has an especial interest as containing an appreciative but discriminating notice of Gainsborough, who had died shortly before its delivery ; while the concluding discourse is mainly occupied with a panegyric on Michelangelo.

The other literary works of the president eomprise his three essays in Lhe Idler for 1759-60 (" On the Grand Style in Painting," and "On the True Idca of Beauty "), his notes to Du Fresnoy's Art of Painting, his Remarks on the Art of the Low Countrics, his bricf notes in Johnson's Shakespeare, and two singularly witty and brilliant fragments, imaginary conversations with J ohnson, which were never intended by their author for publication, but, found among his papers after his death, were given to the world by his niece, the marehioness of Thomond.

But the literary works of Reynolds, exeellent as these are, were

the occupation of his mere bye hours and times of leisure. The main effort of his life was directed to painting, a pursuit which, as he was never weary of impressing on younger artists, was enough to occupy a man's whole time, even were it longer than it is, and to call forth his utmost energy. The unceasing application, perseverance, and assiduity which form the recurrent burden of Reynold's discourses found the most complete illustration in his own career. He laid it down as a distinct principle that each fresh portrait to which he set his hand should exeel the last, and no effort was wanting to realize this aim. In his search for perfeetion he would paint and repaint a subject ; when a visitor asked

how a certain portion of the infant Hereules had been executed, he replied, " How can 1 tell! There are ten pictures below this, some better, some worse." A method like this contrasts curiously with the swift certainty of Gainsborough's practiee, but it must be confessed that the produc- tions of Reynolds have an abiding charm that is wanting in the exquisite but slighter and more mannered work of his great rival. In range, too, of subject, as well as of method, the art of Sir Joshua has by far the wider reach. "How various the man is," said Gainsborough once, after he had been examining the president's portraits hung in an Academy exhibition ; and the remark gains an added poiut and emphasis when we compare the paintings of Reynolds with Gainsborough's own.

In the work which the painter produced shortly after his return from Italy —in the Lady Cathcart and her Daughter of 1755, the Lady Elizabeth Montague and the George, Earl of Warwick, of 1756, and the Countess of Hyndford of 1757—we find a certain dignity and elegance of pose and arrangement which bears witness to his foreign studies, joined to some coldness of colour, hardness of execution, and insistance on definiteness of outline, which con- trasts with the sweet felicity and tenderness of his fully developed manner, with its perfect colour, and its form which is lost and found again in an exquisite mystery. But soon all that is tenta- tive and immature disappears from his works. In 1758 we have the gracious and winning full-length of Elizabeth Gunning, Duchess of Hamilton, and the stately Duke of Cumberland, followed in 1760 by the Kitty Fisher, and a host of admirable portraits in which the men and women and children of the time live still before our eyes, each possessed with a nameless dignity, or grace, or sweetuess. As the artist advanced towards old age his hand only gained in power, his colour in richness and splendour; his works show no decadence till the day when he finally laid aside his brush. We have nothing finer from his hand than the Mrs Nesbitt as Circe of 1781, the Mrs Siddons as The Tragic Muse of 1784, the Duchess of Devonshire and her Child of 1786, and the Infant Hereules and the Miss Gawtkin as Simplicity of 1788.

In the midst of his constant practice as a portrait-painter Reynolds was true to his early admiration of "the grand style," to his veneration for the old masters of Italy, to his belief that the imaginative paths which these

men pursued were the highest ways of art. At the conclusion of his last Academy discourse, while speaking of Michelangelo, he breaks forth with uncontrollable emotion, " Were I now to begin the world again, I would tread in the steps of that great master ; to kiss the hem of his garment, to catch the slightest of his perfections, would be glory and dis- tinction enough for an ambitious man."

From the Italians Reynolds conveyed into his own portrait- subjects a dignity and a grace, along with a power of colour, which were previously unknown in English art ; but he essayed also to follow them into their own exalted and imaginative paths, to paint Holy Families and Nativities, to picture the cardinal virtues, and to realize the conceptions of the poets. But tle English portrait- painter wanted the visionary power necessary for such tasks ; his productions of this class form the least interesting portion of his

work. They arc most successful when the symbolism and the

allegory in them are of the slightest, when the human element is the main attraction, when he paints as cherub faces five different views of the countenance of one living English girl, or titles as "Simplicity " his portrait of Offy Gawtkin or as "Hebe" his portrait of Miss Meyer. His series of "The Virtues," designed for the window of New College, Oxford, show simply studies of grace- ful women, lightly draped, and pleasantly posed. His Macbeth and his Cardinal Beaufort have no real impressiveness, no true terror ; and the finest of the subjects that he painted for Boydell's Shakespeare is the Puck, in which the artist's inspiration was eaught, not from the realms of imagination or fancy, but from observation of the child nature which he knew and loved.

Much has been said regarding the recklessness and want of care for permanency which characterized the technical methods of Sir Joshua. While he insisted that his pupils should follow only such ways of work as were well known and had been tested by time, he was himself most varying and unsettled in his praetice. In his earnest desire for excellence he tried all known processes, and made all kinds of fantastic experiments. He was firmly convinced that the old inasters were possessed of technical seerets which had been lost in later times, and he even scraped the

surfaces from portions of valuable works by Titian and Rubens in the vain attempt to

RH A—

RH At

probe the mystery. In his efforts to attain the utmost possible power and brilliancy of hue he made use of pigments which are admittedly the reverse of stable and permanent, he worked with dangerous vehicles, he employed both colours and varnishes which in combination are antagonistic. Orpiment was mingled with white lead ; wax-medium, egg-varnish, and asphaltum were freely used ; and, when we read the aceount of his strangely hap-hazard methods, we are ready to echo Haydon's exclamation—" The wonder is that the picture did not crack beneath the brush!" and are prepared for such a sight of the vanishing ghosts of master- pieces as was afforded by so many works in the Reynolds Exhibition at the Grosvenor Gallery in 1884. Our only consolation lies in the truth expressed by Sir George Beaumont, when his recommen- dation of Sir Joshua for the execution of a certain work was met by the objection that his colours faded, that he "made his pictures die before the man." "Never mind," said Sir George, "a faded portrait by Reynolds is better than a fresh one by anybody else. :

See Malone, Zhe Works of Sir Joshua Reynolds, Knight (3 vols., 1798); North- cote, Memoirs of Sir Joshua Reynolds, Knight, &c. (1813); Farrington, Memoirs of the Life of Sir Joshua Reynolds (1819); Beechy, Literary Works of Sir Joshua Reynolds (1835); Cotton, Sir Joshua Reynolds and his Works (edited by Burnct, 1856); Leslie and Taylor, Life and Times of Sir Joshua Reynolds (2 vols. 1865); and Redgrave, A Century of English Painters, vol. i. (1866). (J. M. G.)

RHADAMANTHUS, in Greek mythology, a son of Zeus and Europa and brother of Minos, king of Crete. At first he helped his brother to rule his island empire. His justice earned him the admiration of his subjects and the jealousy of his brother, wherefore he fled to Beeotia, where he wedded Alemene. On account of his inflexible integrity he was made one of the judges of the dead in the other world. According to Plato, Rhadamanthus

judged the souls of Asiatics, while AZacus judged those of Europeans, and when they could not agree Minos had a casting vote.

RHATIA was the name given in ancient times to a province of the Roman empire, which included a consider- able tract of the Alpine regions that separated the great valleys of the Po and the Danube, comprising the districts occupied in modern times by the Grisons and the Austrian province of Tyrol. Before their subjugation by Rome the Rheetians are described as one of the most powerful and warlike of the Alpine tribes; but little or nothing is known as to their origin and history. It is indeed stated distinctly by Livy (v. 33) that they were of Etruscan origin, and a tradition reported by Justin (xx. 5) and Pliny (7.W,, iii. 24, 133) affirmed that they were a portion of that people who had been settled in the plains of the Po and were driven into the mountains by the irruption of the Gauls, when they assumed the name of Rhetians from a leader of the name of Rhetus. Very little value can, however, be attached to such traditions, and the attempts of some modern writers to support them by philological researches have led to no satisfactory result. But the ethnical connexion of the Rhetians with the Etruscans has been accepted by Niebuhr, aud its general reception by the Romans would seem to prove that they were a distinct race from their neighbours the Ligurians as well as from the Gauls and Germans.

The name of the Rhetians is first mentioned by 'Polybius, but merely incidentally, and they played no part in Roman history till after the fall of the republic. It is certain, however, that they continued virtually independent until Augustus undertook their subjugation, in common with that of the neighbouring Alpine tribes bordering upon Italy. The importance he attached to this task is shown by his having deputed its execution to his two step-sons, Drusus and Tiberius, who ina single campaign reduced them all to subjection (15 B.c.), so that their territory was shortly after incorporated as a province in the Roman empire and their name never again appears in history. The exploits of the imperial youths on this occasion have been immortalized in two well-known odes of Horace (Od., iv. 4and 14). Inthe time of Strabo their territory was considered as extending from the Lakes of Como and Garda to that of Constance (the Lacus Brigantinus), while the

| allied people of the Vindelici, who had shared in their

ee

_ was considered equal to any of those grown in Italy itself.

RH A—RHE

name it is said to have borne among the aboriginal inhabitants of Brazil, where the Portuguese settlers called

contest against the Roman arms, as well as in their final subjugation, extended down the northern slope of the Alps as far as the Danube. By far the greater part of this extensive region was occupied by rugged mountains, the inhabitants of which, when compelled to abandon their predatory habits, subsisted principally upon the produce of their flocks, Some of the valleys, however, which extended on the south side down to the plains of Italy, were rich and fertile, and produced excellent wine, which

The most important of these valleys was that of the Adige, which descends from the high Alps adjoining the Brenner to Verona; of this the upper portions were held by the }reuni, whose name is still perpetuated in that of the Brenner, while the lower and more fertile region was occupied by the Tridentini, whose chief town of Tridentum was the same as the now celebrated city of Trent. The next people towards the west were the Triumpilini, in the valley still known as Val Trompia; the Camuni in Val Camonica; the Orobii, who appear to have occupied the Val Tellina and adjoining districts ; and the Lepontii, between the Lago Maggiore and the Pennine Alps. The tribes in the interior and heart of the mountain ranges cannot be for the most part assigned to definite localities. The Genauni, mentioned by Horace as well as by Strabo, are supposed to have occupied the Val di Non, and the Vennones or Venostes the lofty ranges near the source of the Adige.

The boundaries of the Roman province were repeatedly changed. At first it appears to have comprised all Vinde- licia, so as to have extended to the Danube from its sources to its confluence with the Inn, which constituted

its eastern boundary on the side of Noricum. But at a later period this northern tract was separated from the central mountain region, and the two were named Rhetia Prima and Rheetia Secunda, in which form they appear in the Wotitia. At the same time the southern valleys were gradually incorporated with Italy and assigned to the territory of the neighbouring municipal towns. Thus Tridentum, which was originally a Rhetian town, came to be included in Venetia, and is assigned by Pliny to the tenth region of Italy. The only important town in the northern part of the province was the Roman colony of Augusta Vindelicorum, which still retains the name of Augsburg. The same is the case with Curia, now Chur or Coire, the capital of the Grisons, and Brigantia (Bregenz), which gave namein ancient times to the lake now called the Lake of Constance.

The province of Rhetia was traversed by two great lines of Roman roads, —the one leading from Verona and Tridentum (Trent) across the pass of the Brenner to Inns- bruck (Pons (Eni), and thence to Augsburg (Augusta Vin- delicorum), and the other from Bregenz on the Lake of Constance, by Coire and Chiavenna, to Como and Milan,

RHAPSODIST. See Homer, vol. xii. p. 109 sg.

RHAZES. See Mepicrnz, vol. xv. p. 805.

RHEA, the name given in 1752 by Méhring! to a South-American bird which, though long before known and described by the earlier writers—Nieremberg, Marcgrave, and Piso (the last of whom has a recognizable but rude figure of it)—had been without any distinctive scientific appellation. Adopted a few years later by Brisson, the name has since passed into general use, especially among English authors, for what their predecessors had called the American Ostrich; but on the European continent the bird is commonly called Vandu,? a word corrupted from a

? What prompted his bestowal of this name, so well known in classical mythology, is not apparent.

2 The name Touyou, also of South-American origin, was applied to it by Brisson and others, but erroneously, as Cuvier shews, since by that name, or something like it, the JaBrru (vol. xiii. p. 529) is properly meant.

it Zma (cf. Emxv, vol. vii. p. 171). The reseniblance of

the Rhea to the Osrricu (vol. xviii. p. 62) was at once perceived, but the differences between them were scarcely less soon noticed, for some of them are very evident. The former, for instance, has three instead of two toes on each foot, it has no apparent tail nor the showy wing-plumes of

the latter, and its head and neck are clothed with feathers, while internal distinctions of still deeper significance have since been dwelt upon by Prof. Huxley (Proc. Zool. Society, 1867, pp. 420-422) and the late Mr W. A. Forbes (op. cit., 1881, pp. 784-787), thus justifying the separation of these two forms more widely even than as Families 1 and there can be little doubt that they should be regarded as types of as many Orders—Struthiones and Rhex—of

Rhea,

the Subclass Ratitx.? Structural characters no less im- portant separate the Rheas from the Emens, and, apart from their very different physiognomy, the former can be readily recognized by the rounded form of their contour-feathers, which want the hyporrhachis or after-shaft that in the Emeus and Cassowaries is so long as to equal the main shaft, and contributes to give these latter groups the appearance of being covered with shaggy hair. Though the Rhea is not decked with the graceful plumes which adorn the Ostrich, its feathers have yet a considerable market value, and for the purpose of trade in them it is annually killed by thousands, so that it has been already extirpated from much of the country it formerly inhabited,4 and its total

3 Ann. Nat. History, ser. 4, xx. p. 500.

4 Mr Harting, in his and Mr De Mosenthal's Ostriches and Ostrich Farming, from which the woodcut here introduced is by permission copied, gives (pp. 67-72) some portentous statistics of the destruction of Rheas for the sake of their feathers, which, he says, are known in the trade as " Vautour " to distinguish them from those of the African bird.

extinction as a wild animal is probably only a question of time. Its breeding habits are precisely those which have been already described in the case of other Ratite birds. Like most of them it is polygamous, and the male performs the duty of incubation, brooding more than a score of eggs, the produce of several females—facts known to Nieremberg more than two hundred and fifty years since, but hardly accepted by naturalists until recently. From causes which, if explicable, do not here concern us, no examples of this bird seem to have been brought to Europe before the beginning of the present century, and accordingly the descriptions previously given of it by systematic writers were taken at second hand and were mostly defective if not misleading. In 1803 Latham issued a wretched figure of the species from a half-grown specimen in the Leverian Museum, and twenty years later said he had seen only one other, and that still younger, in Bullock’s collection (Gen. Hist. Birds, viii. p. 379). A bird living in confinement at Strasburg in 1806 was, however, described and figured by Hammer in 1808 (Ann. du Muséum, xii. pp. 427-433, pl. 39), and, though lhe does not expressly say so, we may infer from his account that it had been a captive for some years. In England the Report of the Zoological Society for 1833 announced the Rhea as having been exhibited for the first time in its gardens during the preceding twelvemonth. Since then many other living examples have been introduced, and it has bred both there and elsewhere in Britain, but the young do not seem to be very easily reared.”

Though considerably smaller than the Ostrich, and, as before stated, wanting its fine plumes, the Rhea in general aspect far more resembles that bird than the other Ratitex. The feathers of the head and neck, except on the crown and nape, where they are dark brown, are dingy white, and those of the body ash-coloured tinged with brown, while on the breast they are brownish-black, and on the belly and thighs white. In the course of the memorable voyage of the “Beagle,” Darwin came to hear of another kind of Rhea, called by his informants Avestruz petise, and at Port Desire on the east coast of Patagonia he obtained an example of it,

the imperfect skin of which enabled Mr Gould to describe it (Proc. Zool. Society, 1837, p. 35) as a second species of the genus, naming it after its discoverer. Rhea darwini differs in several well-marked characters from the earlier known &. americana. Its bill is shorter than its head ; its tarsi are reticulated instead of scutellated in front, with the upper part feathered instead of being bare ; and the plumage of its body and wings is very different, each feather being tipped with a distinct whitish band, while that of the head and neck is greyish-brown. A further distinction is also asserted to be shewn by the egas—those of #. americana being of a yellowish-white, while those of . darwini have a bluish tinge. Some years afterwards Mr Sclater described (op. cit., 1860, p. 207) a third and smaller species, more closely resembling the RF. americana, but having apparently a longer bill, whence he named it A. macrorhyncha, more slender tarsi, and shorter toes, while its general colour is very much darker, the body and wings being of a brownish-grey mixed with black. The precise geographical range of these three species is still undetermined. While &. americana is known to extend from Paraguay and southern Brazil through the state of La Plata to an uncertain distance in Patagonia, #. darwint seems to be the proper inhabitant of the country last named, though

1 The ninth edition of the Companion to this collection (1810, p. 121) states that the specimen "was brought alive" [? to England].

2? Interesting accounts of the breeding of this bird in confinement are given, with much other valuable matter, by Mr Harting in the work already cited.

EKA

M. Claraz asserts (op. cit., 1885, p. 324) that it is occasion- ally found to the northward of the Rio Negro, which had formerly been regarded as its limit, and, moreover, that flocks of the two species commingled may be very frequently seen in the district between that river and the Rio Colorado. On the "'pampas" &. americana is said to associate with herds of deer (Cariacus campestris), and f. darwint to be the constant companion of guanacos (Lama huanaco)—just as in Africa the Ostrich seeks the society of zebras and antelopes. As for R. macrorhyncha, it was

found by Forbes (Jdis, 1881, pp. 360, 361) to inhabit the dry and open "sertoés" of north-eastern Brazil, a discovery the more interesting since it was in that part of the country that Marcgrave and Piso became acquainted with a bird of this kind, though the existence of any species of Rhea in the district had been long overlooked by or unknown to succeeding travellers.

Besides the works above named and those of other recognized authorities on the ornithology of South America such as Azara, Prince Max of Wicd, Prof. Burmeister, and others, more or less valu- able information on the subject is to be found in Darwin's Voyage ; Dr Bocking's " Monographie des Nandu" in (Wiegmann's) Archiv fiir Naturgeschichte (1868, i. pp. 218-241); Prof. R. O. Cunning- ham's Natural History of the Strait of Magellan and paper in the Zoological Society's Proceedings for 1871 (pp. 105-110), as well as Dr Gadow's still more important anatomical contributions in the saine journal for 1885 (pp. 808 sq.). (A. .)

RHEA (or Ruega) FIBRE is a textile material yielded by one or more species of Béhmeria (nat. ord. Urticaceex), plants found over a wide range in India, China, the Malay Peninsula and islands, and Japan. Rhea is also capable of being grown in temperate latitudes, and has been experi- mentally introduced into the south of France and Algeria. The most important source of rhea fibre, known also very inappropriately as China grass, or by its Malay name Ramie, is B. nivea. It is a shrubby plant growing to the height of from 5 to 8 feet with foliage and inflorescence like the common nettle, but destitute of stinging hairs. Some authorities consider the variety cultivated in China to be specifically distinct from the Indian plant. An allied plant called Pooah or Puya, B. Puya, found growing wild in the north of India, is also a source of rhea fibre. Among the Chinese much care is bestowed on the cultiva- tion of Chu or Tchou Ma, as rhea is called by them, and they prepare the fibre by a tedious and costly process of selection and manual labour. The plant thrives in hot, moist, shaded situations; propagated from slips or root cuttings, it throws up from three to five crops of stems in the course of a season, although not more than three crops are commonly reckoned on. Each such crop may yield about 250 Ib of marketable fibre per acre, that total output being exceeded only by the jute crop. The stems when ripe are

cut down, stripped of leaves and branchlets, and, either split or whole, are freed from their cortical layers till the bast layer isexposed. In this state they are made up in small bundles and placed where they receive strong sunlight by day and dews by night for several days, after which the fibrous bast layer is peeled with ease off the woody core, and the separated fibres are thereafter treated with boiling water to remove as far as possible adherent gummy and resinous matter in which the fibres are em- bedded in the stalks. The fibre so obtained is usually bleached by exposure on the grass, and it comes into the market as brilliant white filaments with a fine silky gloss, having a strength, lustre, and smoothness unequalled by any other vegetable fibre.

The fibre first appeared in the European market in 1810, and a cord then spun from it was found to sustain a weight of 252 fh, while a similar cord of Russian hemp was estimated by Admiralty test not to bear more than 87 tb. A fibre possessed of such strength and beauty immediately attracted great attention, and throughout the early half of the century numerous efforts were made by the Kast India Company to introduce it as a textile staple. But many diffi-

eulties have been encountered in its working, some of which are not yet overcome. The fibre itself is very difficult of extraction owing to the large amount of adhesive matter in which it is embedded, and it is proportionately so expensive that it practically comes into competition only with silk and wool. Further, rhea is hard and in- elastic, and on the machinery adapted for spinning other textiles it can only be spun into a rough, harsh, and hairy yarn, while fabrics into which it is woven are rigid, and show permanent creases at every fold. In the form of cordage, moreover, it cuts and gives way at sharp knots and twists. Notwithstanding all disappoint- ments and drawbacks, the Indian Government considered the fibre of such importance that in 1869 two prizes of £5000 and £2000 and again in 1877 prizes of £5000 and £1000 were offered for maehinery or processes by which the fibre could be prepared at such a cost per ton as would render its introduction into the market prac- ticable. Competitive trials were made at Saharanpur in 1872 and 1879, but no machine was

*found to satisfy the conditions of success, although in 1872 a reward of £1500 was granted to Mr John Greig, jun., of Edinburgh, and in 1879 £500 and £100 respectively were paid to two of the competitors. The extraction of rhea continues to attract attention, and quite recently (1885) it has been announced that Prof. Frémy of Paris, assisted by M. Urbain, has success- fully overcome all difficulties. The raw material used by Prof. Fremy is obtained by a process devised by M. Fevier, which consists in submitting the newly cut stems to low-pressure steam for twenty minutes, after which the whole rind is separated in ribands from its woody core with the utmost ease. These ribands are then dried, and on them Prof. Frémy operates with alkaline solutions which are varied in strength according to the appearance of the material dealt with, and a pure fibre in fine working condition is thus obtained. Rhea has yet to establish its position among Euro- pean textiles, but in the East its valuc is well recognized. It is extensively used for cordage, fishing nets, &c. ; and it is very little affected by water. The Chinese prepare an exceedingly fine * grass cloth" from single filaments of rhea, knotted or gummed end to eud in the way they employ the finest filaments of Manila hemp for making " Pina" gauze.*

RHEGIUM. See Recaro.

RHEIMS, a city of France, chief town of an arrondisse- ment of the department of Marne, lies 81 miles east-north- east of Paris (99 miles by rail) on the right bank of the Vesle, a tributary of the Aisne, and on the canal which connects the Aisne with the Marne. To the south and west rise the "montagne de Rheims" and the vine-clad hills where the wine is grown which constitutes the chief object of the industry and commerce of the town. Rheims has been, since the last Franco-Prussian War, surrounded with detached forts that render it a great entrenched camp, and it still preserves eleven of the gates of its old enceinte, that of Paris, constructed on occasion of the coronation of Louis XVI, being specially noticeable. Beyond the boulevards the town spreads out in several suburbs—the faubourgs of St Anne on the south, Vesle on the west, Laon on the north-west, and Cérés on the north- east. The town is well planned and built, and its streets are traversed by tramways.

The spinning and weaving of wool is carried on in seventy factories, employs 10,000 hands, and annually turns £3,500,000 worth of the raw material into flannels, merinoes, cloth, blankets, &c. Dyeing and " dressing " are carried on in the outskirts of the town. Fifty firms with 2000 workmen are employed in the champagne manufacture ; the cellars are vast excavations in the chalk rock. Rheims is also famous for its biscuits, ginger- bread, and dried pears. Machinery, chemical products, candles, soap, stained glass, common glass, and paper are also manufactured. In respect of population (93,683 in 1881) Rheims ranks as the eleventh city of France.

The oldest monument in Rheims is the Mars Gate (so called from a temple to Mars in the neighbourhood), a triumphal arch 108 feet in length by 43 in height erected by the Remi in honour of Cesar and Augustus when Agrippa made the great roads ter- minating at the town. In its vicinity a curious mosaic measuring 35 feet by 26, with thirty-five medallions representing animals and gladiators, was discovered in 1861. But by far the most interesting architectural feature of the town is the cathedral of Notre Dame, where the kings of France used to be crowned. It replaced an older church burned in 1211, which had been built on the site of the basilica where Clovis was baptized by St Remigius.

The whole cathedral, with the exception of the facade, was com- pleted by 1231 ; but it has undergone numerous alterations. The present fagade was erected in the 14th century after 13th-century designs, —the nave having in the meantime been lengthened so as to afford room for the vast crowds that attended the coronations. In 1481 a terrible fire destroyed the roof and also the spires, which have never been restored to their original state. In 1875 the National Assembly voted £80,000 for repairs of the facade and balustrades. This facade is the finest portion of the building, and one of the most perfect masterpieces of the Middle Ages. The portals and the rose window are laden with statues and statuettes ; the "gallery of the kings " above has the baptism of Clovis in the centre, and also has statues of Charlemagne and his father Pippin the Short. The towers, 267 feet high, were originally designed to rise 394 feet ; that on the south contains two great bells, one of which, named by Cardinal de Lorraine in 1570, weighs more than 11 tons. The transepts are also decorated with

sculptures,—that on the north with statues of the principal bishops of Rheims, a representation of the last judgment, and a. figure of Christ, while that on the south side has a beautiful rose window with the

=] i=} q ial Lo] di > Ww

0 4

a tel °

2

é e\ \ | \e / ee ee ar

Plan of Rheims.

prophets and apostles. Of the four towers which formerly flanked the transepts nothing remains above the height of the roof since the fire of 1481. Above the choir rises an elegant bell-tower in timber and lead, 59 feet high, reconstructed in the 15th century. The interior of the cathedral is 455 feet long, 984 feet wide in the nave, and 125 feet high in the centre. It has a profusion of statues similar to those of the outside, and is further adorned with stained glass of the 13th eentury and with tapestries. The rose window over the main portal and the gallery beneath are of rare magnificence. Forty pieces of tapestry bestowed in 1530 by Robert de Lenoncourt, and devoted to the history of the Virgin, are remarkable for the richness of colour and the variety of costume they display. Of six pieces presented by Cardinal de Lorraine in 1570, only three have been preserved ; one of them representing the coronation of Clovis and the battle of Soissons affords valuable evidence relating to the military costumes of the 16th century. Archbishop Henry of Lorraine also presented seventeen large pieces of tapestry representing the life of Christ, in 1633 ; they are called Pepersack's tapestries after the maker, a celebrated tapestry

weaver of Charleville. Thc Canticles tapestries, four pieces repre- senting scenes in Louis XIV.'s youth, originally belonged to the castle of Hanteville. In the right transcpt are two great Gobelins tapestries executed after Raphael's designs, and dealing with the life of St Paul. The left transept contains a fine organ in flamboyant Gothic with 3516 pipes and 53 stops. The choir clock is ornamented with curious mechanieal devices. Several paintings, by Titian, Tintoretto, Nicolas Poussin, and others, and 'the carved woodwork and the railings of the choir, also deserve to be mentioned; and among the numerous objects of antiquarian interest in the cathedral "treasury " is the reliquary of the sacred plial which contained the oil used in anointing the kings, but was broken during the Revolution. The archiepiscopal palace, built between 1498 and 1509, and in part rebuilt in 1675, was oceupied by the kings on the occasion of their coronation. The saloon chamber, where the royal banquet was held, hasan immense stone chimney of the 15th century, medallions of the archbishops of Rheims, and portraits of fourteen kings crowned in the city. Among the other rooms of the royal suite, all of which are of great beauty and richness, is that now used for the meetings of the Rheims Academy ; the building also contains a library of 16,000 volumes. The chapel of the archiepiscopal palace consists of two stories, the upper of which still serves as a place of worship, while the lower is occupied by an antiquarian museum, in which is pre- served the marble cenotaph (almost entire) of the consul Jovinus, who in the 4th century led his fellow-townsmen at Rheims to embrace Christianity. After the cathedral the most celebrated church is that of St Remi, built in the 11th and 12th centuries on the site of an older place of worship. The valuable monuments with which it was at one time filled were pillaged during the Revolution, and even the tomb of the saint is a modern piece of work ; but there still remain the 18th-century glass windows of the apse and tapestries representing the history of St Remigius. The churches of St Jacques, St Maurice (partly rebuilt in 1867), St André, and St Thomas (erected in 1847, under the patronage of Cardinal Gousset, now buried within its walls), as well as the chapels of the lycée and of several monasteries, are all more or less interesting. There are also in the city two Protestant churches and a synagogue.

The town-house, erected in the 17th century and enlarged in 1880, has a pediment with an cquestrian statue of Louis XV. and a tall and clegant campanile. It contains a picture gallery, a natural history museuin, and a library of 60,000 volumes and 1500 MSS. Of the many curious old houses which still exist in the town it is enough to mention the House of the Musicians, so called from the seated figures of musicians which decorate the front. Rheims is the seat of an academy of science, arts, and literature, founded in 1841 and composed of forty-five members, a preparatory school of medicine and pharmacy, several hospitals, and a modern theatre. It is the headquarters of one of the divisions of the 6th corps d'armée (Chalons). Colbert's statue adorns the Cours; Louis XV.'s (in bronze) stands in the centre of the handsome Place Royale ; and Marshal Drouet d'Erlon's is in another of the public squares.

History.—Rheims (Duroeortorum), an important town in the time of Cesar, made voluntary submission to the Romans and by its fidelity throughout the various Gallic insurrections secured the special favour of its conquerors. Christianity was introduced about the middle of the 4th century. Jovinus, already mentioned as an influential supporter of the new faith, repnlsed the barbarians who invaded Champagne in 836; but the Vandals captured the town in 406 and slew St Nicasus, and Attila afterwards put everything to fire and sword. Clovis, after his victory at Soissons (486), was baptized at Rheims in 496 by St Remrcivus (q.v.). From this period the see acquired new lustre. The kings of the second and third dynasties desired to be consccrated at Rheims with the oil of the sacred phial which was believed to have been brought from heaven by a dove for the baptism of Clovis and was preserved in the abbey of St Remi. Historical meetings of Pope Stephen III. with Pippin the Short, and of Leo III. with Charlemagne, took place at Rheims ; and there Louis the Debonnaire was crowned by Stephen IV. Inthe 10th century Rheims had become a centre of intellec- tual culture, Archbishop Adalberon, seconded by the monk Gerbert (Sylvester II.), having founded schools where the "liberal arts" were taught. Adalberon was also one of the prime authors of the revolu- tion which put the Capet house in the place of the Carlovingians. The archbishops of Rheims held the temporal lordship of the city and coined money till the close of the 14th century. But their most important prerogative was the consecration of the king,—a privilege

which was regularly exercised from the time of Philip Augustus to that of Charles X. Louis VII. granted the town a communal eharter in 1189. Councils met within its walls in 1119 and 1148. The treaty of Troyes (1420) ceded it to the English, who had made a futile attempt to take it by siege in 1360; but they were expelled on the approach of Joan of Arc, who in 1429 caused Charles VII. to be duly conseerated in the cathedral. A revolt at Rheims cansed by the salt tax in 1461 was cruclly repressed by

Louis XI. The town sided with the League (1585), but submitted to Henry IV. after the battle of Ivry. In the foreign invasions of 1814 it was captured and recaptured ; in 1870-71 it was made by the Germans the seat of a governor-general and impoverished by heavy requisitions.

RHEINGAU. See RHINE.

RHENANUS, Beats (c. 1485-1547), German human- ist, was born about 1485 at Schlettstadt in Alsace, where his father, a native of Rheinau, was a prosperous butcher. He received his early education in Schlettstadt, and afterwards (1503) went to Paris, where he came under the influence of Faber Stapulensis; here, among his other learned pursuits, we must include that of correcting the press for Henry Estienne. In 1511 he removed to Basel, where he became intimate with Erasmus, and took an active share in the publishing enterprises of Frobenius. Some time after 1520 he became a comparatively wealthy man through the death of his father; returning to Schlettstadt he devoted himself to a life of learned leisure, enlivened with free epistolary and personal intercourse with Erasmus, Reuchlin, Pirckheimer, Lasky, and many other scholars of his time. He died at Strasburg, while returning from Baden in Switzerland, whither he had gone for his health, in 1547, leaving behind him a high reputa- tion not only for sound learning but also for singular gentleness, modesty, and simplicity.

His earliest publication was a life of Geiler of Strasburg (1510). Of his subsequent works the principal are Rerum Germanicarum Libri IIT,

(1581), and editions of Velleius Paterculus (ed. princeps, from a MS. discovered by himself, 1520) ; Tacitus (1538, exclusive a ae li ; Livy (1535); and Erasmus (with a life, 9 vols. fol.,

RHENISH PRUSSIA. See Prussia, RuEntsu.

RHETICUS, or RuztTIcvs, a surname given to GEORGE Joacumm (1514-1576) from his birth at Feldkirch in that part of Tyrol which was anciently the territory of the Rheti. Born in 1514, he was appointed professor of mathematics at Wittenberg in 1537. His first appearance before the public was in the character of an enthusiastic convert to the newly broached opinions of Copernicus. No sooner had he adopted these opinions than, resigning his chair, he repaired to Frauenberg to sit at the feet of their great promulgator. All his energy was forthwith devoted to the new system, and, as has been mentioned under CoPEr- NIcUS, it was he who superintended the printing of the De Orbiwm Revolutione. Rheticus now commenced his great treatise, Opus Palatinum-de Triangulis, and continued to work at it while he occupied his old chair at Wittenberg, while he taught mathematics at Leipsic, while he travelled over different parts of the Continent, and indeed up to his death in Hungary in 1576. The Opus Palatinum of Rheticus was published by Otho in 1596. It gives tables of sines and cosines, tangents, &c., for every 10 seconds, calculated to ten places. He had projected a table of the same kind to fifteen places, but did not live to complete it. The sine table, however, was afterwards published on this scale under the name of Thesaurus Mathematicus (Frankfort, 1613) by Pitiscus, who himself carried the calculation of a few of the earlier sines to twenty-two places.

RHETORIC. A lost work of Aristotle is quoted by Diogenes Laertius (viii. 57) as saying that Empedocles "invented " (eipetv) rhetoric ; Zeno, dialectic. This is cer- tainly not to be understood as meaning that Empedocles composed the first "art" of rhetoric. It is rather to be explained by Aristotle's own remark, cited by Laertius from another lost treatise, that Empedocles was "a master of expression and skilled in the use of metaphor "—quali- ties which may have found scope in his political oratory, when, after the fall of Thrasydzeus in 472 3B.c., he opposed the restoration of a tyranny at Agrigentum. The founder of

rhetoric as an art was Corax of Syracuse (c 466 B.c.). In 466 Thrasybulus the despot of Syracuse was

Early Greek rhetoric —={ Olonth ey

The topic of eixds.

Tisias,

Gorgias.

Anti- phon.

RHET

overthrown, and a democracy was established. One of the immediate consequences was a mass of litigation on claims to property, urged by democratic exiles who had been dispossessed by Thrasybulus, Hiero, or Gelo. If, twenty years after the Cromwellian settlement of Ireland, an opportunity had been afforded to aggrieved persons for contesting every possession taken under that settlement in the ten counties, such persons being required to plead by their own mouths, the demand for an "art" of forensic rhetoric in Ireland would have been similar to that which existed in Sicily at the moment when Corax appeared. If we would understand the history of Greek rhetoric before Aristotle, we must always remember these circum- stances of its origin. The new "art" was primarily intended to help the plain citizen who had to speak before a court of law. "Ten years ago," a Syracusan might urge, "' Hieron banished me from Syracuse because I was suspected of popular sympathies, and gave my house on the Epipole to his favourite Agathocles, who still enjoys it. I now ask the people to restore it." Claims of this type would be frequent. Such a claim, going many years back, would often require that a complicated series of details should be stated and arranged. It would also, in many instances, lack documentary support, and_ rely chiefly on inferential reasoning. The facts known as to the "art" of Corax perfectly agree with these conditions. He gave rules for arrangement, dividing the speech into five parts,—proem, narrative, arguments (dydves), sub- sidiary remarks (apéxGacus), and peroration. Next he illustrated the topic of general

probability (cixds), showing its two-edged use: ¢.g., if a puny man is accused of assault- ing a stronger, he can say, "Is it likely that I should have attacked him?" If vice versa, the strong man can argue, "Is it likely that I should have committed an assault where the presumption was sure to be against me?" This topic of eikdés, in its manifold forms, was in fact the great weapon of the earliest Greek rhetoric. It was further developed by Tisias, the pupil of Corax, as we see from Plato's Phedrus, inan "art" of rhetoric which antiquity possessed, but of which we know little else. Aristotle gives the «ixés a place among the topics of the fallacious enthymeme which he enumerates in [het. ii. 24, remarking that it was the very essence of the treatise of Corax, and points out the fallacy of omitting to distin- guish between abstract and particular probability, quoting the verses of Agatho,—" Perhaps one might call this very thing a probability, that many improbable things will happen to men." Gorgias of Leontini, who visited Athens as an envoy from his fellow-citizens in 427 B.o., captivated the Athenians by his oratory, which, so far as the only considerable fragment warrants a judgment, was characterized by florid antithesis. But he has no definite place in the development of rhetoric as a system. It is doubtful whether he left a written "art"; and his mode of teaching was based on learning prepared passages by heart,—diction (Aé£is), not invention or arrangement, being his great object.

The first extant Greek author who combined the theory with the practice of rhetoric is the Athenian Antiphon, the first on the list of the Attic orators. His works belong to the period from 421 to 411 Bo Among them are the three "tetralogies." Each tetralogy is a group of four speeches, supposed to be spoken in a trial for homicide. Antiphon was the earliest repre- sentative at Athens of a new profession created by the new art of rhetoric—that of the Aoyoypados or writer of forensic speeches for other men to speak in court. The plain man who had not mastered the newly invented weapons of speech was glad to have the aid of an expert. The tetralogies show us the art of rhetoric in its transi-

tion from the technical to the practical stage, from the school to the law-court and the assembly. The four skeleton speeches of each tetralogy are

ordered as follows: —A, the accuser states his charge; B, the accused makes his defence ; C, the accuser replies ; D, the accused rejoins to the reply. The imaginary case is in each instance sketched as slightly as possible; all details are omitted ; only the framework for discussion is supplied. The organic lines of the rhetorical pleader's thought stand out in bold relief, and we are enabled to form a clear notion of the logographer's method. We find a striking illustra- tion of the fact noticed above, that the topic of "pro- bability," so largely used by Corax and Tisias, is the staple of this early forensic rhetoric. Viewed generally, the works of Antiphon are of great interest for the history of Attic prose, as marking how far it had then been influ- enced by a theory of style. The movement of Antiphon's prose has a certain grave dignity, "impressing by its weight and grandeur," as a Greek critic in the Augustan age says, "not charming by its life and flow." Verbal antithesis is used, not in a diffuse or florid way, but with a certain sledge-hammer force, as sometimes in the speeches of Thucydides. The imagery, too, though bold, is not florid. The structure of the periods is still crude; and the general effect of the whole, though often powerful and impressive, is somewhat rigid.

As Antiphon represents what was afterwards named the "austere" or "rugged" style (atorypa dppovia), so Lysias was the model of an artistic and versatile sim- plicity. But the tetralogies give Antiphon a place in the history of rhetoric as an art, while Lysias, with all his more attractive gifts, belongs only to the history of oratory. Ancient writers quote an "art" of rhetoric by Isocrates, but its authenticity was questioned. It is

certain, however, that Isocrates taught the art as such, Isocrates.

He is said to have defined rhetoric "as the science of persuasion" (émornunv meots, Sextus Empir., Adv. Mathem., ii. § 62, p. 301 sg.) Many of his particular precepts, both on arrangement and on diction, are cited, but do not suffice to give us a complete view of his method. The drocodia, or "theory of culture," which Iso- crates expounds in his discourses " Against the Sophists " and on the " Antidosis," was in fact rhetoric applied to politics. First came technical expositions: the pupil was introduced to all the artificial resources which prose com- position employs (ras id€as dmdcas als 6 Adyos Tuyydver xpomevos, Antid., §

183). The same term (idéac) is also used by Isocrates in a narrower sense, with reference to the "figures" of rhetoric, properly called oynpara (Panath., § 2); sometimes, again, in a sense still more general, to the several branches or styles of literary com- position (Antid., § 11). When the technical elements of the subject had been learned, the pupil was required to apply abstract rules in actual composition, and his essay was revised by the inaster. Isocrates was unquestionably successful in forming speakers and writers. This is proved by the renown of his school during a period of some fifty years, from about 390 to 340 Bc. Among the states- men whom it could claim were Timotheus, Leodamas of Acharne, Lycurgus, and Hyperides. Among the philosophers or rhetoricians were Speusippus, Plato's suc- cessor in the Academy, and Iseeus ; among the historians, Ephorus and Theopompus.

In the persou of Isocrates the art of rhetoric is thus thoroughly established, not merely as a technical method, but also as a practical discipline of life. If Plato's mildly ironical reference in the Huthydemus to a critic "on the borderland between philosophy and statesmanship " was meant, as is probable, for Isocrates, at least there was a wide difference between the measure of acceptance

accorded to the earlier Sophists, such as Protagoras, and the influence which the school of Isocrates exerted through the men whom it had trained. Rhetoric had won its place in education. It kept that place, through varying for- tunes, to the fall of the Roman empire, and resumed it, for a while, at the revival of learning.

Aristotle's Rhetoric belongs to the generation after Isocrates, having been composed between 330 and 322 p.c. Ag controversial allusions sometimes hint, it holds Isocrates for one of the foremost exponents of the subject. From a merely literary point of view, Aristotle's Rhetoric (with the partial exception of book iii.) is one of the driest works in the world. From the

historical or scientific point of view, it is one of the most curious and the most interesting. If we would seize the true significance of the treatise, it is better to compare rhetoric with grammar than with its obvious analogue, logic. A method of grammar was the conception of the Alexandrian age, which had lying before it the standard masterpieces of Greek literature, and deduced the "rules" of grammar from the actual practice of the best writers. Aristotle, in the latter years of the 4th century B.c., held the same position relatively to the monuments of Greek oratory which the Alexandrian methodizers of grammar held rela- tively to Greek literature at large. Abundant materials lay before him, illustrating, in the greatest variety of forms, how speakers had been able to persuade the reason or to move the feelings. From this mass of material, said Aristotle, let us try to generalize. Let us deduce rules, by applying which a speaker shall always be able to per- suade the reason or to move the feelings. And, when we have got our rules, let us digest them into an intelligent method, and so construct a true art. Aristotle's practical purpose was undoubtedly real. If we are to make persua- sive speakers, he believed, this is the only sound way to set about it. But, for us moderns, the enduring interest of his Rhetoric is mainly retrospective. It attracts us as a feat in analysis by an acute mind—a feat highly character- istic of that mind itself, and at the same time strikingly illustrative of the field over which the materials have been gathered.

Rhetoric is properly an art. This is the proposition from which Aristotle sets out. It is so because, when a speaker persuades, it is possible to find out why he succeeds in doing so. Rhetoric is, in fact, the popular branch of logic. Now hitherto, Aristotle says, the essence of rhetoric has been neglected for the accidents. Writers on rhetoric have hitherto concerned themselves mainly with "the exciting of prejudice, of pity, of anger, and such- like emotions of the soul." All this is very well, but "it has nothing to do with the matter in hand; it has regard to the judge." The true aim should be to prove your point, or seem to prove it.

Here we may venture to interpolate a comment which has a gencral bearing on Aristotle's Rhetoric. It is quite true that, if we start from the conception of rhetoric as a branch of logic, the phantom of logic in rhetoric claims precedence over appeals to passion. But Aristotle does not

sufficiently regard the question— What, as a matter of experience, is most persuasive? The phantom of logic may be more persuasive with the more select hearers of rhetoric; but rhetoric is not for the more select; it is for the many, and with the many appeals to passion will sometimes, perhaps usually, be more effective than the semblance of the syllogism. And here we seem to touch the basis of the whole practical vice—it was not strictly a theoretical vice—in the old world's view of rhetoric, which, after Aristotle's day, was ultimately Aristotelian. No formulation of rhetoric can corre- spond with fact which does not leave it absolutely to the genius of the speaker whether reasoning (or its phantom) is to be what Aristotle calls it, the "body of proof" (c@ua rlerews), or whether the stress of persuading effort should not be rather addressed to the emotions of the hearers. This is a matter of tact, of instinct, of oratorical genius.

But we can entirely agree with Aristotle in his next remark, which is historical in its nature. The deliberative branch of rhe- toric had hitherto been postponed, he observes, to the forensic. We have already seen the primary cause of this, namely, that the very origin of rhetoric in Hellas was forensic. The most

urgent need which the citizen felt for this art was not when he had to discuss the interests of the city, but when he had to defend (perhaps) his own property or his own life. The relative subordination of deliberative rhetoric, however unscientific, had thus been human. Aristotle's next statement, that the master of logic will be the master of rhetoric, is a truism if we conccde the essential primacy of the logical element in rhetoric. Otherwise it is a paradox; andit is not in accord with experience, which teaches that speakers incapable of showing even the ghost of an argument have sometimes been the most completely successful in carrying great audiences along with them. Aristotle never assumes that the hearers of his rhetorician are as of yaplevres, the cultivated few; on the other hand, he is apt to assume tacitly—and here his individual bent comes out—that these hearers are not the great surging crowd, the xaos, but a body of persons with a decided, though imperfectly developed, preference for sound logic.

What is the use of an art of rhetoric? It is fourfold, Aristotle replies. Rhetoric is useful, first of all, because truth and justice are naturally stronger than their opposites. When awards are not duly given, truth and justice must have been worsted by their own fault. This is worth correcting. Rhetoric is then (1) corrective. Next, it is (2) instructive, as a popular vehicle of persuasion for persons who could not be reached by the severer methods of strict logic. Then it is (8) suggestive. Logic and rhetoric are the two impartial arts; that is to say, it is a matter of indifference to them, as arts, whether the conclusion which they draw in any given case is aflirmative or negative. Suppose that I am going to plead a cause, and have a sincere conviction that I am on the right side. The art of rhetoric will suggest to me what might be urged on the other side; and this will give me a stronger grasp of the whole situation. Lastly, rhetoric is (4) defensive. Mental effort is more distinctive of man than bodily effort; and "it would be absurd that, while incapacity for physical self-defence is a reproach, incapacity for mental defence should be no reproach." Rhetoric, then, is corrective, instructive, suggestive, defensive. But what if it be urged that this art may be abused? The objection, Aristotle answers, applies to all good things, except virtue, and especially to the most useful things. Men may abuse strength, health, wealth, generalship. Ea

The function of the medical art is not necessarily to cure, but to make such progress towards a cure as each case may admit. Similarly it would be inaccurate to say that the function of rhetoric was to persuade. Rather must rhetoric be defined as "the faculty of discerning in every case the available means of persuasion." Suppose that among these means of persuasion is some process of reasoning which the rhetorician himself knows to be unsound, That belongs to the province of rhetoric all the same. Iu relation to logic, a man is called a "sophist" with regard to his moral purpose (mpoalpeois), 7.¢., if he knowingly uses a fallacious syllogism. But rhetoric takes no account of the moral purpose. It takes account simply of the faculty (Sdvapis) —the faculty of discovering any means of persuasion.

The "available means of persuasion," universally considered, may be brought under two classes. (1) First, there are the proofs external to the

art,—not furnished by rhetoric,—the “ inartificial proofs” (&rexvoi lores). Such are the depositions made by witnesses, documents, and the like. (2) Secondly, there are the proofs, z.e., the agents of persuasion, which the art of rhetoric itself provides, the “artificial proofs” (yrexvot miorets). These are of three kinds :—(a) logical (Aoyix} wlorts)—demonstration, or seeming demonstration, by argument ; (0) ethical (761 wioris), when the speaker succeeds in conveying such an impression of his own character as may lead the hearers to put trust in him; (c) emotional (ranrix} riots), When the speaker works persuasively on the feelings of the hearers. It follows that, besides logical skill, the rhetorician should possess the power of analysing character, in order to present himself in the ethical light which will be most effective with his audience. He must also under- stand the sources of the emotions, and the means of producing them. Hence rhetoric has a double relationship. While in one aspect—the most important to it as an art—it may be regarded as popular logic, in another aspect it is related to ethics. And hence, says Aristotle, political science (modrtixh) being a branch of ethical, as the citizen is one aspect of the man, “rhetoric and its professors slip into the garb of political science (émoddera: rd oxXiua 7d THs woATixys), either through want of education, or from pretentiousness, or from other human causes.”

Uses of rhetoric.

Rhetoric defined.

The wloTels classified.

Aristotle now proceeds to analyse the first of the "artificial The

proofs," the logical (Aoyinh wlotis). syllogism of logic, rhetoric has its popular syllogism, to which Aristotle gives the name of "enthymeme" (év@dunpa). This term (from the verb évéuuetoba, 'to revolve in the mind"), means properly "aconsideration" or "reflection." It occurs first in Isocrates, who uses it simply of the " thoughts" or "sentiments"' with which a rhetorician embellishes his work (rots évO@uphuact aperdyrws brov Toy Aéyoy KaramoitAa, Or., xiii. § 16). Whether the technical sense was or was not known before Aristotle, it is to

Answering to the strict logical

proof.

—

e

The enthy- meme.

Suppres- sion of one pre- miss not essential.

The example,

The

TOTO,

RHETORIC

him at least that the first extant definition is due. He defines the enthymeme as a species of syllogism, namely, as "a syllogism from probabilities and signs" (é eixérwy kad onuelwv). The "probability " (eixés) is a general proposition, expressing that which usually happens, as, 'wise men are usually just." The 'sign " (onuetov) is a particular proposition, as, " Socrates is just." The "sign" may be fallible or infallible. If we say, " wise men are just ; for Socrates was wise and just," this is an enthymeme from a fallible 'sign," the implied syllogism being " Socrates was wise ; Socrates was just (anpetov); .. all wise men are just a: and here the "sign" is, in Aristotle's phrase, "as a particular to a universal," because from the one case of Socrates we draw an inference about all men. If, again, we say,—" Here is a sign that he is ill—he is feverish" ; our enthymeme is using an infallible sign, the syllogism being, " All who are feverish are ill; he is feverish (onuetoy); .. he is ill." Here, again, the "sign" is "as a particular to a universal." When the "sign"' is thus infallible, it is properly called tekmerion (rexuhptov), the matter having been demonstrated and concluded (aemepacudvoy)—"for tekmar and peras mean the same thing ('limit') in the old language." Sometimes, again, the fallible sign is "as universal to particular," e.g., ' Here is a sign that he has a fever —he breathes quick," the syllogism being, " Feverish men breathe quick ; he breathes quick (onuetov) ; .. he has a fever," where a particular cause is unsoundly inferred from an effect (the " universal") which might have other causes.*

When Aristotle thus describes the enthymeme, or rhetorical syllogism, as dealing with ' probabilities" and ' signs," he is describing its ordinary or characteristic materials, qua rhetorical syllogism. He does not mean to say that rhetoric cannot use syllogisms formed with other material. It would be hardly need- ful to point this out, were it not that, in spite of his own clear words, his meaning has sometimes been misunderstood. " The premises of rhetorical syllogisms," he says, "seldom belong to the class of necessary facts. The subject matter of judgments and deliberations is usually contingent; for it is about their actions that men debate and take thought ; but actions are all contingent, no one of them, so to say, being necessary. And results which are merely usual and contingent must be deduced from premises of the same kind, as necessary results from uccessary premises. It follows that the propositions from which

*enthymemes are taken will be sometimes necessarily true, but more often only contin- gently true." Among the materials of the enthymeme, the *" sign" which is infallible (the onwetov which is also a Texunptoy) is so because it is to some necessary truth as part to whole.*

*Aristotle did not regard the suppression of one premiss in the statement as essential to the enthymeme. Thesyllogism, of which the enthymeme is mercly a kind, was regarded by him "not in re- lation to the expression" (od xpds roy Zéw Adyov), but to the process in the mind (4AAa mpbs roy év TH WuxH Adyov, Anal. Post., i. 10). As Sir W. Hamilton has justly said, he could not then have intended to distinguish a class of syllogisms by a verbal accident. The distinction of the rhetorical syllogism, in Aristotle's view, was in its matter, not in its form. This is, indeed, made sufficiently clear by his own remark that the enthymeme may "often" be more conciscly stated than the full, or normal, syllogism (Rhet., i. 2). There is obviously no reason why the rhetorical reasoner should not state both his premisses, if he finds it convenient or cffective to do so. Since, however, one of the premisses is often left to be mentally supplied, some of the later writers on rhetoric came to treat this as part of the essence,of the enthymeme. It was then that the word areajs was interpolated after ovadoyiopds in Aristotle, Analyt. Prior., ii. 27, where the enthymeme is defined as ovAdoytouds € eixdtwy Kal onuelwy.! Hence Quintilian says of the enthymeme (v. 10), "alii rhetoricum syllogismum, alii imperfectum syllogismum vocant " ;. hence, too, Juvenal's **curtum enthymema."*

The other branch of the "logical proof" in rhetoric corresponds to the induction of strict logic, and consists in giving the semblance of inductive reasoning by the use of one or two well-known examples. As Aristotle calls the enthymeme a rhetorical syllo- gism, so he calls the example (zapdSecyua) 'a rhetorical induction." Thus if a man has asked for a body-guard, and the speaker wishes to show that the aim is a tyranny, he may quote the " examples " of Dionysius and Pisistratus.

Aristotle next distinguishes the " universal " from the " special " topics, or commonplaces of rhetoric. The word rézos, ' place," means in this context "that place in which a proposition of a given kind is to be sought." The rézo., then, are classifications of propositions and

arguments which rhetorie makes beforehand, with a view to readiness in debate. Cicero well illustrates the phrase—“ As it is easy to find hidden things when the placc has been pointed out and marked, so, when we want to track out an argument, we ought to know the places, as Aristotle has called these seats, abodes, as it were, from which arguments are drawn.

1 On this interpolation, sce Sir W. Hamilton’s Discussions, p. 154.

oll

So a commouplace, or topic, may be defined as the abode of an argument (Zicet definire locum esse argumenti sedem ; Cic., Topica, ii, 7). So elsewhere he describes the réxot of rhetoric as “regiones intra quas venere et pervestiges quod queras”— ‘“‘haunts in which one may hunt and track out the object of quest ” (De Orat., ii. 34). témot) are general heads of argument applicable to all subjects and

whatsoever—as, ¢.g., on the “possibility ” or ‘‘impossibility ” of special.

anything. The special commonplaces (rémot rév €iday, Tthet., ii. 22, more briefly called ef) arc those which are drawn froin special branches of knowledge, as from politics, ethics, &c. Here Aristotle observes that the more a rhetorician enters on the subject-matter of any particular science the more will he tend to pass out of the domain which properly belongs to the art of rhetoric.

In that domain three provinces are distinguished.

it keeps in view, or its standard—is advantage (or detriment) to the persons addressed. Forensic rhetoric (Sicavixh) is concerned with accusation or defence, and with time past; its standard is justice or injustice. Epideictic rhetoric—the ornamental rhetoric of “display” (émiSetrieh)—is concerned with praise or blame, and usually with time present ; its standard is honour or shame.

1. Let us begin with deliberative rhetoric, says Aristotle, and see Delibera. The subjects tive,

what things a deliberative speaker ought to know. with which, in a public assembly, he will have to deal are mainly these five :—(1) finance, (2) foreign war, (8) home defence, (4) commerce, (5) legislation. Under all these heads, he ought to be provided with some e¥$, or special commonplaces. F urther, all his suasion or dissuasion has reference to the happiness of those whom he addresses. Hence he must be acquainted with the popular notious of happiness which are actually prevalent. Here Aristotle gives a series of popular definitions of happiness, and a list of the elements which are generally regarded as constituting it. A similar analysis of " good" (dya0éy) follows.

The scientific spirit of the rhetoric is strongly accentuated by the unscientific character of these and subsequent analyses. Aristotle never forgets that his rhetorician wants to know, not what a thing is, but what it is generally thought to be. There is nothing of cynicism or sarcasm in all this. He is simply going through his prescribed task. He is making rhetoric, as such, into a method. But suppose the question arises—"Of two good things which is the better?' Our deliberative speaker must be able to treat the 'funiversal commonplace" of degree (uaAAov xa ntrov). Then, he must also know something about the chief forms of government, — democracy, oligarchy, aristocracy, monarchy,—not as they are or should be, but as they are popularly conceived.

2. The ornamental rhetoric (émiSemrich), which is taken next, Epideic-

is somewhat briefly dismissed. It might be conjectured, in ex- tic. planation of its place in the treatment—we should have expected it to come third—that Aristotle was the first writer who recog- nizcd it as an independent kind, and that he viewed it as an off- shoot froin the deliberative branch. The epideictic speaker must know what most men think " honour" or "shame," 'virtue " or "vice." At this point a verbal distinction of some interest occurs :—praise (&ravos) implics moral approbation ; but an "en- comium"' (€yx@utov) is given to "achievements" (Zpya) as such. The most generally useful "topic" for the ornamental speaker is a'inots (magnifying),—as the rhetorical induction (mapdSeryua) most helps the deliberative speaker, and the rhetorical syllogism (€v@vunua) is most useful to the forensic,

3. In forensic rhetoric, we must begin by analysing injustice. Forensic.

And first, “ What are the inotives and aims of wrong-doing ?” Actions are either voluntary from habit, reason, anger, lust, or in- voluntary from chance, nature, force. In reference to the voluntary actions, it is needful to know the popular conception of pleasure. Secondly, “What is the character which disposes a man to do wrong, or which exposes him to suffering it ?” These topics must be familiar, in a popular way, to the forensic speaker. He must also know the general grounds on which actions are classcd as just or unjust. Actions must be considered, first, in reference to law, which is either special (760s), whether written or unwritten, the law of particular places and communities, or else universal (xowdés), the law of nature. The second question about an “unjust” action is whether it hurts an individual or the community. “The definition of “being wronged” (43:efo Oa) is, ‘to be unjustly treated by a voluntary agent.” Further, the definition of a particular offence (éxlypauua) sometimes raises a legal issue. A man may admit an act, and deny that it corresponds to the description given of it by the accuser, It is needful, then, to know the definitions of the principal crimes. It may be noticed that Aristotle here anticipates a topic which played a large part in the later rhetoric. The contested issues which he calls aupisBnrhoets The (Rhet., iii. 16) were the ordcets (constitutiones or status) of later «« days. Thus the issue as to the proper definition of an offence, to

which he refers here (Rhct., i. 18), coincides with the later

The “ universal commonplaces” (korvol universal

Deliber- The three ative rhetoric (cvuBovdeuvtixh) is concerned with exhortation or kinds of dissuasion, and with future time; its ‘end ” (réAos)-———that which rhetoric.

RHETORTC

the “logical proof” giveu in bk. i. ch. 2. The ‘“‘example,” or “The ex. rhetorical induetion, had been rather cursorily treated there, and ample” is now illustrated more fully (ii. 20). There are two kinds of con- “example ”—the historical (rd mpdyuara A€yerv) and the artificial

tinued. (rd abtov mwowety). The artificial example, again, has two species —

ol2

otdaots épixh. The distinction between justice and equity (76 dixaov and 7d émenés) is noticed. Equity is "a kind of justice, but goes beyond the written law," as in the Zthies (v. 10) equity is said to be a corrective of the law, where the latter fails through generality,—7.e., through the lawmaker's inability to

The The analysis of the three branches of rhetoric—deliberative, | of the horse who asked the man to help him against a deer. If arexvo. epideictic, forensic—is now finished. In the elosing chapter of | you have no arguments of a logical kind (enthymemes), says mlores. his first book, Aristotle briefly considers and dismisses the "inarti- | Aristotle, the "example" must do duty as proof; if you have ficial proofs,"—the means of persuasion, that is, which arise from | enthymemes, it can serve as illustration. ; inatters external to the art itself, though the artuses them. These, The use of yv@ua:, or general moral sentiments, next claims The use having regard to the actual circumstances of his time and country, | attention (cli. 21). These are of two elasscs—those which are self- of yv@uan. he declares to be five: (1) laws; (2) witnesses ; (3) cvidence given | evident, and those which, not being so obviously true, require 'under torture—Sdoavos; (4) documents; (5) oaths, meaning | some confirmatory comment (émiAcyos), as when Medea says that chiefly treaties between states. With regard to (3) it may be re- | no sensible man should allow his childven to be exquisitely marked that the rhetorieal theory of torture in the ancient world | educated, because it makes them fastidious and unpopular. Such was, that a person under torture will tcll the truth because it is | maxims with an ''epilogue" are, in fact, virtually enthymemes. his interest to do so. This is stated, ¢g., in the Mhetorica ad | Apropos of yyéua:, Aristotle remarks that spurious generalization Alexandrum, xv. § 1. Among the Attic orators, Iseus gives his | is particularly useful in the utterance of bitter complaint (¢.g., emphatic adhesion to this view (Or., viii. § 12). On the other | "frailty, thy name is woman"), Then it is often effective to land, the common-sense view of the

matter is very well put by | controvert received maxims, ¢g., "It is not well to 'know another Attic orator, Antiphon, in his speech De Cade Herodis | oneself' ; for if this man had known himself, he would uever have ($$ 81-88), when he remarks that "in the torturers is the hope | become a general" (ch. 21). of the tortured." "So long, then," Antiphon proceeds, "as the Some precepts on the enthymeme follow. The rhetorical reasoner On the slave felt that his prospects in slandering were hopeful, he was | must not have too many links in the chain of his argument; and use of obstinate in the calumny ; but, when he saw that he was to die, | he must omit those propositions which his hearers can easily the enthy- heu at last he told the truth, and said that he had beeu per- | supply. Also, it is highly important to know the special topics meme, suaded by the persecutors to slander me." It would have been | (ef) from which enthymemes can be drawn in each subject. The interesting if Aristotle had given some indication of his view on | enthymeme is either (1) deccT:xdv, demonstrative, establishing a this, his third, &rexvos wioris ; but he simply accepts it as a fact | point, or (2) éreyerixdy, refutative, destroying a position by a of his day, and, taking it along with the rest, gives a number of | comparison of conflicting statements (7d rd dvouodoyobmeva ovvd- general arguments which may be used on either side, according as | yew). Aristotle now gives (ii. 23) an enumeration of classes or the particnlar &rexvos mioris is for us or against us. Here the | heads of argument (év@vunuatixod rém01) from which enthymemes first book ends. can be constructed. These apply nominally to all three branches Book If. At the beginning of the second book, Aristotle returns to the | of rhetoric, but in fact chiefly to the deliberative and the forensic. "artificial proofs" (yrexvor mioreis)—those which rhetoric itself | The demonstrative enthymeme is almost exclusively treated, since srovides. Of these, the logical proof has already been in part | the refutative form ean, of course, be inferred from the other. A The iscussed (i. 2). He therefore turns to the "ethical" proof. The | chapter (24), answering to the treatise on fallacies in logic (rept 40K) speaker's character may be so indicated by his speech as to pre- | cogiorindv éréyxwy), is devoted to the fallacious (paivduevov) miorts. possess the hearers; and this result depends chiefly on three | enthymeme, of which ten "topics" ave explained and illustrated. things. He should make them feel that he possesses (1) gpdvnois | Another chapter is given to the two general types of Avows, or —intelligence ; (2)

dperq—virtue ; and (83) e%yor—good-will to | refutation (ch. 25), viz., (1) direct counter-argument-(7d ayticva- them. Aristotle then proceeds to furnish the speaker with the | AoylCec@a:), opposing one enthymeme to another ; (2) objection to materials for seeming intelligent and good, referring for these to | a particular point in the adversary's ease (7d evlotacda). The lis previous analysis of the virtues (i. 9). As to the means of | second book then concludes with 'some supplementary remarks, seeming friendly, these will be furnished by an analysis of the | meant, seemingly, to correct crrors made by previous writers on affections (md@n). Here we are already on the boundary line | rhetoric (ch. 26). between the "ethical proof" and the third of the évrexvor mioreis, In his first two books Aristotle has thus dealt with invention Book IIT. The the 'emotional proof." In regard to each affection (wd@os), we | (efpeo1s)—the discovery of means of persuasion. In the third book madyrixh have to see (1) what it is; (2) what things predispose men to it; | he deals with expression and arrangement (A¢é:s and rdfis). The wtotts. (3) the objects and conditions of its manifestation. The next ten subject is prepared by some remarks on the art of delivery (éméipicis), Delivery. ehapters of the second book (2-11) are accordingly devoted to an | which Aristotle defines as the management of the voice. "It is analysis of those emotions which it is most important for the | the art of knowing how to use the voice for the expression of each rhetorician to understand :—viz. (1) anger, and its opposite, mild- feeling, of knowing when it should be loud, low, or moderate, of ness ; (2) love and hatred ; (3) fear and boldness ; (4) compassion, managing its pitch—shrill, deep, or middle—and of adapting the envy, emulation; (5) shame and shamelessness; (6) gratitude | cadences to the theme." Aristotle says nothing on gesture or play (xdpis) ; (7) righteous indignation (véueots). But, in appealing to | of feature, which Cicero and Quintilian recognize as important. these various emotions, the speaker must have regard to the general | He includes them by implication, however, in saying that the art eharacter of his audience, according, ¢.g., as they are young or | of delivery, whenever it is reduced to method, "will perform the old, rich or poor, &¢c. Hence it is necessary to know the character- | function of the actor's art," adding that "the dramatic faculty is istics of the various periods and conditions of life. Aristotle | less a matter of art than of nature." therefore delineates the chief traits of the young, of the old, and But verbal expression, at least, is

clearly in the province of art, of men in their prime; of the well-born, the rich, and the power- | and to that he now turns. He deals first with diction (Aéés) in Djetion. ful. With regard to the well-born, he makes a remark which seems | the proper sense, as eoncerned with the choice of words and phrases. equally true of the rich: "the possessor of good birth is the more | The first excellence of diction is clearness (caphveta), which is ambitious ; for all men, when they have got anything, are wont | attained by using words in their proper sense (xvpia). Next, the to add to the heap" (ch. 12-17). The analysis of the "ethical" | diction must be "neither too low nor too grand, but suitable to the and the " emotional" proof is now finished. subject." In prose (éy tots WiAots Adyots) there is less seope for After a concise retrospect, Aristotle passes to the treatment ofa | ornament than in poetry, though in the latter, too, much depends The subject barely indicated in the first book (ch. 2). The xouvo? témot, | on the speaker or the theme. And here Aristotle remarks that kool or "'universal commonplaces," applicable to all materials, are Euripides was the first poet who produeed a happy illusion by taking témot. mainly four:—{1) 7d duvardy and 7d &ddvarov—possibility and | his words from the language of daily life (éx rijs ciwOvlas SiadeKTov).

frame a general rule which should precisely fit the circumstances of every particular case. True to his conception of a method, Aristotle next applies "the topic of degrce" to injustice,—as, in an earlier chapter (Rhet., i. 7) he had applied it to the idca of tt good, 3

impossibility ; (2) 7d yeyovds and +4 wéAAoyv—past and future ; (3) 7d abfew kad wetody (or uéyeOos and mixporns)—great and small ; (4) 7d waAAov kal Hrrov—greater and less. Aristotle means that all subjects whatsoever admit of arguments into which these idcas enter. The first comes into play when we argue, "since this is possible, that must be so also"; the second, when we say, "if this has been, that has been also," or 'if this is to happen, that will happen also." For the third and fourth of the so.vo) TOTol, magnitude and degree, we are referred back to bk. i. ch. 7 and 8, where they have already been handled. The second book is ecom-pleted by a sort of appendix, intended to supplement the sketch of

—(1) eomparison, rapaBoAh,—as when Socrates said that magis- trates ought not to be chosen by lot, for this is like choosing athletes by lot, rather than for athletic power; (2) fiction, or fable in the special sense—Ad-yo: ; as when Stesichorus warned the people of Himera against establishing a despot by telling them the fable

With a view to adorning prose, and giving it "distinction" (the term which best represents Aristotle's phrase &¢voy or kevirdy mroteiv), nothing is more important than the judicious use of metaphor. Aristotle admits that "the art of metaphor eannot be taught" ; but he gives some sensible hints on the subject, and on the use of epithets. The poet Simonides, he tells us, when the winner of a mule race offered him a small fee, declined to write an ode on "half- asses," but, when the price was raised, sang " Hail, daughters of windswift steeds." The perceptions which made the best Greek prose so good are illustrated by Aristotle's next chapter (iii. 3) on Wuxpd, "frigidities," "faults of style." He traces these to four

Meta- "proportional" metaphor mentioned here requires a passing com- | rhetoric, on the other hand, is like drawing in light and shade phor, ment. Aristotle used the term "metaphor" (ueragopd) in a larger | (without colours), gKiaypapdta—like scene-painting, we should sense than ours. He meant by it "any transference of a word to | rather say, ¢.¢., it is meant to produce its effects at a distance, asense different from its proper sense." Thus he can distinguish | and will not bear looking at too closely. (Poet., c. 21) four classes of metaphor:—(1) "from genus to From expression we now pass to the other subject announced at Arrange- species," as when "vessel" means "ship"; (2) from species to | the opening of the third book, arrangement (rdis), which occupies ment. genus, as when "the lilies of the field" stand for "flowers" | the last seven chapters (18-19). The received system, which had generally. These two kinds are not what we call "metaphors," | been popularized, if not originated, by Isocrates, recognised four but are examples of the figure which was afterwards named "synec- | divisions of a speech: (1) exordium (or proem), smpooluiov ; (2) doche." Aristotle's third class of metaphor is (3) "from species | narrative, d:fynots ; (3) proof, lores ; (4) peroration, émlroyos. to species," under which head come almost all familiar metaphors, | Aristotle adopts this fourfold partition as his basis,—with the as to "scent

a plot,”—the generic notion, “ find out,” being common preliminary remark, howevcr, that only two elements are neces- to the special terms, “scent” and “detect”; (4) then lastly there sarily present in every case, viz. “statement” of one’s subject, is the “proportional” metaphor (4 évdAoyov), when A is not’simply | rpdeo1s, and ‘fargument”’ in its support, rloreis. He then takes compared with B (on the strength of something obviously common | the four divisions in order. The contents of the proem usually 1. Proem. to both), but A’s relation to C is compared with B’s relation to D. | come under one of two heads—(1) exciting or allaying prejudice ; To call old age “the evening of life ” implies that old age is to life | (2) amplifying or detracting. In epideictic rhetoric the connexion as the evening to theday. Obviously a “proportion” of this kind | of proem with sequel may be comparatively loose ; it is like a flute- is implicit in the metaphors of Aristotle’s third class; but in the player’s prelude (xpoadvaiov), which he deftly links on to the key- fourth class proportion is expressly indicated by the mention of | note (ev3dcmmoy) of his prineipal theme. The forensic proem, on the seeond term (“life” in our example). the other hand, may be likened to the prologue of an epie or a The first four ehapters having thus dealt with expression in the | tragedy (ch. 14, 15). Narrative is least needed in deliberative 2. Narra- narrower sense of diction (Aéés proper), Aristotle devotes the next | speaking, since this deals chiefly with the future. In forensic nar- tive, Compo- cight (iii, 5~12) to composition, which would be properly called | rative, the object must be to bring out clearly the issues on which sition, o¥vGeos. After remarks on the first requisites—grammatical cor- | accuser or accused relies, with an effective colouring of ethos and rectness, and purity of idiom (rd rh eel ee have some hints | pathos. In the epideictic branch, the narrative should not form a on “dignity” of style (8yxos). “ Propriety” (rd xpémov) is defined | continuous whole, but should be divided and varied by comments as depending chiefly on three qualities :—(1) expression of the feel- | (eh. 16), The rhetorician’s proofs (lores) will, in the forensic 3. Proof. ings which it is desired to move in the hearer; (2) fitness to the | branch, be relevant to one of four issues :—(1) fact : was the alleged character and position of the speaker; and (8) congruity with the | aet done, or not? (2) damage: if done, was it hurtful? (3) crimin- level of the subject. A certain “rhythm ” (fv@uds), or harmonions | ality: if hurtful, was the hurt justifiable ? (4) quantity or degree, movement, should be

*sought in prose ; but this must not be so pre- | Aristotle's four "issues " (augpiaBynrhoes) here correspond with the Prose cise as to give the effeet of metre. The elements of rhythm are | ordoeis, "' positions" or " questions," usually three, of later legists thythm. "times," ¢.e., in writing, long or short syllables, the short syllable | and rhetoricians: (1) ordois oroxacrixh, status conjecturalis, the being the unit. Here, following the early writers on music (comp. | question of fact; (2) ordots épixh, status definitivus, nomen, or Plato, Rep., 400 B), Aristotle recognizes three "rhythms": (1) the | initio, the question of legal definition ; (8) ordois moidryros "heroic" or dactylic, —~~, which is in the ratio of equality, | status qualitatis or jurtdicialis, the question of justice or injustice. since — = ~~, or 1:1; (2) the iambic or trochaic (~— or | Thus Cicero says, "res (controversiam facit) aut de vero (1), aut — ~~), which has the ratio of 2 to 1; (8) the peonic, —-v, | de recto (3), aut de nomine" (2), Orat,, xxxiv. 121. In delibera. which has the ratio of 83:2. Of these, the heroic is too grand for | tive rhetoric, the four "'issues" can be applied to the future, since, prose ; the iambic is too commonplace, being the very eadence | if. speaker anticipates certain results from a course of a policy, his of ordinary talk (airh éorw 4 Adkis roy woAAay); the trochee is | adversary can deny their (1) probability, (2) expediency, (3) justice, too comic. The peon remains. It is the best rhythm for prose, | or (4) importance. The enthymeme is most useful in the delibcra- since it will not, by itself, produce a metrical effect (u@aaov | tive branch, as the '*example," or rhetorical induction, is most AavOdve:). The "first" paon (—— ~~) is most suitable to the | useful in the forensic. The 'ethical" proof from the speaker's beginning of sentences, the "fourth" pwon(\—) to the | indicated character is always a most important adjunct to the close. Rhythm having been attained, a framework is supplied by | logical proof (ch. 17), A chapter is now given to one special re- The the period (mepfodos). A "compact" or periodic style (kareorpay- | source by which a proof can often be enforeed, viz., interrogation periodic wévy Ags) is so called in contrast with that " running " style | of the adversary (épéryois), which has usually one of two objects— | style. (eipouévn A€tis) which simply strings clause to clause, "having | (1) redwctio ad absurdum, or (2) to entrap him into a fatal admis- no necessary end until the thought is finished," and is unpleasing | sion (ch. 18). The last chapter of the book, and of the treatise, 4. Epi- because it is unlimited ; "for all men wish to*

descry the end.” | deals with the peroration or “ epilogue” (értAoyos). This aims logue. The periodie style pleases for the opposite reason, because the | usually at one of four things :—(1) to conciliate the hearers ; nearer always fancies that he has grasped something and has got | (2) to magnify or lower the importance of topics already treated ; something defined. The period may consist of several parts or | (3) to excite emotion in the hearers ; (4) to refresh their memories members (xAa), or it may be “simple,” forming a unit (4pea4s, | by a short recapitulation. Reinarking that asyndeton gives force sovéxwdos). The rhetorical use of antithesis is then noticed in | to the close of an epilogue, Aristotle ends his rhetoric with the its application to the period. Two kindred figures arc also men- | last words (not quite aceurately quoted) of the great speech in which tioned, —parisosis, a parallelism of structure between clauses of | Lysias denouneed Eratosthenes—ratooua: xatyyopav. akynkdare, equal leugth, —and paromoiosis, a resemblance in sound, when the | éwpdxare, wemdvOare, xere, dindCere. ee Oe clause has an echo, asit were, in the same Aristotle’s Rhetoric is incomparably the most scientific Vivaeity. i Two chapters (10, 11) are nowgiven to the sources of vivacity in work which exists on the subject. It may also be regarded speaking. Those “smart sayings” (r& doreia) which win applause | a8 having determined the main lines on which the subject “must be invented by the clever or practised man ; the business of | was treated by nearly all subsequent writers. The extant ee me Gy eee ag) i oahu oe ate GAA : treatise on rhetoric entitled ‘Pyropuxh mpds “AXéEavSpov metaphor antithesis, a1 vividness—7.¢., . : 7 De cribed « Ness the eyes of the hearer” (rd apd Bama moteiy), | Was undoubtedly by Anaximenes of Lampsacus, and was = fe This is called by Aristotle évépyeo, ‘actuality ” (which must be | probably composed about 340-330 B.c., a few years before ae carefully distinguished from évdpyeso, another term for ‘“‘vivid-) Aristotle’s work. The introductory letter prefixed to it is ness”’), since things are represented not merely in their potentiality | » late forgery. If the treatise of Anaximenes is compared cotnoanell (3évayis), but as living and moving. One of the most effective | +44 41 a4 of Aristotle the distinctive place of the latter with Aris- kinds of point (says Aristotle) is “a metaphor with a surprise, ; ; ; ivoule fois: z.¢e., with the disclosure of a likeness not perceived before, the | 10 this field becomes clearer. Anaximenes, who knew the source of the pleasure being the same as in riddles. treatise of

Isocrates, and could profit by all the preceding The . The whole subject of expression is concluded by a chapter on the | Gyeek «“ arts,” is, for us, the sole representative of technical general general types of style, in their relation to the three branclies of rhetoric before Aristotle, and probably represents it at its types of rhetoric (ch. 12). There is a literary style (ypadieh Aétis) and a ‘ca ‘th es 1 iP ee i : style. style suited to oral contest or debate (dywvori«h). The literary | best. We miss the intellectual power, the grasp o

RHE T

chief sources,—the use of tawdry or ungainly compounds (3:raa évépuara), the use of rare or obsolete words (yAérrat), and infelicity of epithet or metaphor.

A simile (eiéy) is a metaphor with an explanation (Aéyos): ¢.9., in speaking of Achilles, “he sprang on them like a lion ” is simile; “the lion sprang on them” is metaphor. Simile is less available than metaphor for prose, being more poetical. The

style is that which admits of the highest finish (axp:Beordrn), and

ORIC 513

is best suited to the epideictic branch of rhetorie, since the latter is properly addressed to readers. The other, or “agonistic,” style is best adapted to delivery (Smoxpitixwrdrn). It is so mainly through two things —adaptation to the character of speaker and hearer, and skilful appeals to feeling. Forensic and deliberative rhetoric both use it; but the forensic branch admits of higher finish, and so far approximates to the literary style. Deliberative

principles, and the subtle discrimination which belong to

XX. — 65

514

the work of Aristotle. On the other hand, the practical character is more strongly marked. It might, indeed, be said of Aristotle's treatise that it is rather a Philosophy of Rhetoric than a Rhetoric proper. It is a body of abstract principles and general rules. These will enable the student to dissect a good speech ; but, by themselves, they will not go far towards enabling him to make one. Aristotle's purpose was to annex rhetoric to the realm of science. He succeeded, as far as success was possible. But the new province was somewhat of a Poland. The rigid system which was found necessary for holding the unruly dependency did not leave much scope for spon- taneous vigour or native exuberance.

Rin & ® O mm TeC

made a complete digest of the scholastic rhetoric from the time of Hermagoras of Temnos (110 B.c.). It is contained in five extant treatises, which are remarkable for clearness and acuteness, and still more remarkable as having been completed before the age of twenty-five. Hermogenes continued for nearly a century and a half to be one of the chief authorities in the schools.

extant; and the more celebrated treatise On Sublematy (rept tous), if not his work, is at least of the same period. About 315 a.p. Aphthonius composed the " exercises " (rpoyvpvdcpara) which superseded thework of Hermogenes. At the revival of letters the treatise of Aphthonius once

Longinus Other (c. 260 A.D.) published an Art of Rhetoric which is still writers.

The During the three centuries from the age of Alexander to | more became a standard text-book. Much popularity was period that of Augustus the fortunes of rhetoric were governed | enjoyed also by the exercises of Adlius Theon (380 a.p.). ae ace by the new conditions of Hellenism. Aristotle's scientific | Space would fail if we attempted to enumerate the writers to Angus- method lived on in the Peripatetic school. Meanwhile, how- | on rhetoric who, during these centuries, attained to more tus. ever, the fashion of florid declamation or strained conceits | or less repute. In the editions of the Rhetores Greci by prevailed in the rhetorical schools of Asia, where, amid | Spengel and by Walz the

fecundity of the literature can mixed populations, the pure traditions of the best Greek | be seen. taste had been dissociated from the use of the Greek lan- The theory of rhetoric engaged this industry, because the guage. The " Asianism" of style which thus came to be | practice of the art was in greater vogue than ever before contrasted with "Atticism" found imitators at Rome, | or since. During the first four centuries of the empire Practice among whom must be reckoned the orator Hortensius (c. | several causes contributed to this result. First, there was of the- Herma- 95 8.¢.). Hermagoras of Temnos in Aolis (c. 110 B.c.) | a general dearth of the higher intellectual interests ; politics oe goras. claims mention as having done much to revive a higher con- | gave no scope to energy; philosophy was stagnant, and aad ception. Using both the practical rhetoric of the time before | literature, as a rule, either arid or frivolous. Then the Aristotle and Aristotle's philosophical rhetoric, he worked | Greek schools had poured their rhctoricians into Rome, up the results of both in a new system,—following the | where the same tastes which revelled in coarse luxury philosophers so far as to give the chief prominence to | welcomed tawdry declamation. The law-courts of the "invention." He thus became the founder of a rhetoric | Roman provinces further created a continual demand for which, as distinguished from the practical and the philo- | forensic speaking. Asia, Gaul, and Africa are now the sophical, may be called the scholastic. Through the | regions which supply the largest proportion of successful influence of his school, Hermagoras did for Roman elo- | orators. The passion for rhetoric was everywhere. " Thule quence very much what the school of Isocrates had done for | talks of engaging an orator," says Juvenal. "You call Athens. Above all, he counteracted the view of "Asian- | a man a thief," says Persius; "he answers you with ism," that oratory is a mere knack founded on practice, | finished tropes." Athens, Smyrna, Rhodes, Tarsus, and recalled attention to the study of it as an art.! Antioch, Alexandria, Massilia, and many other cities had Cicero. Cicero's rhetorical works are to some extent based on the | seats of learning at which rhetoric was taught by pro- technical system to which he had been introduced by | fessors who enjoyed the highest consideration. The public Molon at Rhodes, and by other contemporary teachers. | teacher of rhetoric was called "sophist," which was now The " so- : But Cicero further made an independent use of the best | an academic title, similar to "professor" or "

doctor." Phists." among the earlier Greek writers, as Isocrates, Aristotle, and | In the 4th century B.c. Isocrates had taken pride in Theophrastus. Lastly, he could draw, at least in the later | the name of coduorys, which, indced, had at no time of his treatises, on a vast fund of reflection and experience. | wholly lost the good, or neutral, sense which originally Indeed, the distinctive interest of his contributions to the | belonged to it. The academic meaning which it acquired theory of rhetoric consists in the fact that his theory can | under the early empire lasted into the Middle Ages (see be compared with his practice. The result of such a com- | Ducange, s.v., who quotes from Baldricus, " Egregius parison is certainly to suggest how much less he owed to | Doctor magnusque Sophista Geraldus"). While the his art than to his genius. Some consciousness of this is | word rhetor still denoted the -faculty, the word sophistes perhaps implied in the idea which pervades much of his | denoted the office or rank to which the rhetor might hope writing on oratory, that the perfect orator is the perfect | to rise. So in Lucian's piece (160 a.p.), the "Teacher of oh. man. The same thought is present to Quintilian, in whose | Rhetoricians" says (§ 1),—" You ask, young man, how lian, great work, De Instituteone Oratoria, the scholastic you are to become a rhetor, and attain in your turn rhetoric receives its most complete expression (c. 90 a.D.). | to the repute of that most impressive and illustrious title, Quintilian treats oratory as the end to which the entire | sophist." mental. and moral development of the student is to be Vespasian (70-79 a.p.), according to Suetonius, was the directed. Thus he devotes his first book to an early | first emperor who gave a public endowment to the teach- discipline which should precede the orator's first studies, | ing of rhetoric. But it was under Hadrian and the aes ie i pi to : discipline of the whole man which Antonines (117-180 A.D.) _ that the public chairs of Chairs of yon em. Some notion of his comprehensive | rhetoric were raised to an importance which made them rhetoric. method may be derived from the circumstance that, | objects of the highest ambition. The complete constitu- in connexion with precepts for storing the speaker's | tion of the schools at Athens was due to Marcus Aurelius. aa he introduces a succinct estimate of the chief | ThePhilosophical School had four chairs (@pévor),—Platonic, pices (ee © jer of ay kind, from Homer | Stoic, Peripatetic, Epicurean. The Rhetorical School had eS os – i. – — the next | two chairs, one for "sophistic," the other for "political". ae. Sl cal. iowa.

6 ai signalized in the history of | rhetoric. By “sophistic” was meant the academic teach- genes, a Os a wlio about 170 «.p. | ing of rhetoric as an art, in distinction from its “ politi-

1 See Professor Jebb’s Attic Orators, vol. ii. p. 445.

cal” application to the law-courts. The “sophistical ” chair was superior to the “political” in dignity as in

Declama- scholastic declamations were chiefly of two classes. (1) | “declamations” served the same purpose. tions. The swasorix were usually on historical or legendary The fortunes of rhetoric in the modern world, as briefly Modern subjects, in which some course of action was commended | sketched above, may suffice to suggest why few modern writers on or censured; thus Juvenal, alluding to his school-days, | writers of ability have given their attention to the subject. thetoric. cries— Perhaps one of the most notable modern contributions to “T, too, have counselled Sulla to resign, the art is the collection of commonplaces framed (in Latin) And taste those joys for which dictators pine.” by Bacon, “to be so many spools from which the threads These swasoriz belonged to deliberative rhetoric (the | °” be drawn out as occasion serves,’ a truly curious Bovdevrixdy yévos, deliberativum genus). (2) The contro- works of that acute and fertile mind. He called them versie turned especially on legal issues, and represented Antitheta.” A specimen is subjoined :— the forensic rhetoric (diKxavxdy yévos, judiciale genus). Uxor ev LIBert. But it was the general characteristic of this period that abn. Against, all subjects, though formally “deliberative ” or “ forensic,” “Attachment to the state} “He who marries, and has were treated in the style and spirit of that third branch | begins from the family.” a has given hostages to pe Aristotle distinguished, the rhetoric of erideigis Or} «<-wite and children area dis-| “The immortality of brutes is isplay.” The oratory produced by the age of the | oijine in humanity. Bachelors | in their progeny ; of men, in academic sophists can be estimated from a large extant | are morose and austere.” their fame, services, and institu- literature. It is shown under various aspects, and pre- , __ | tons.” an sumably at its best, by such writers as Dion Chrysostom | , De oe pon plileg of eeli- a Regard be igh ae at the end of the Ist century, Atlius

Aristides in the eeu? eae alae — aiid 2d, Themistius, Himerius, and Libanius in the 4th. Tite Secs Ab ouamiilinot Aecetotlcs tates, le It would be unjust to deny that, amid much which is tawdry – = ae ant rae Ties tecinwaidte imcute ant or vapid, these writings occasionally present passages of Se AN sie no ae hs areata jen true literary beauty, while they constantly offer matter of ae oa a ee ey, I —_ : hs ene the highest interest to the student of the past. i us Phil omar y — il – eee ae Medieval In the medieval system of academic studies, grammar, Ber ee ts i . cee y ps Si eit ie a ie AN study of logic, and rhetoric were the subjects of the trivium, or CC eau 8 Die eeceeoL, Map epee rhetoric. though often marred by an imperfect comprehension of

R SE DT .CPitad ©

emolument, and its occupant was invested with a jurisdic- tion over the youth of Athens similar to that of the vice- chancellor in a modern university. Thus it is said of Theodotus, the first holder of the chair of sophistic as constituted by Marcus Aurelius, tpo¢ory 8¢ Kal tis Trav "AOyvaiwy vedrytos mp@ros (Philostr., Vit. Soph., I. ii. p. 566). The Antonines further encouraged rhetoric by granting immunities to its teachers. Three '"sophists " in each of the smaller towns, and five in the larger, were exempted from taxation (Dig., xxvii. 1, 6, § 2). The wealthier sophists affected much personal splendour. One of them, Polemon (c. 130 a.D.), was attended on his journeys by an enormous retinue—slaves, beasts of burden, horses, and hounds—while he himself drove in a costly equipage. Another, Adrianof Tyre (c. 170 4,p.), was drawn to his lectures by horses '" with silver bits," wore the richest attire and the rarest jewels, and en- deared himself to the Athenian students by the entertain- inents which he provided for them. In all this foppery there was calculation, The aim of the sophist was to impress the multitude. Popular applause was the breath of life to him. His whole stock in trade was style, and this was directed to astonishing by tours de force. The

course followed during the four years of undergraduateship. Music, arithmetic, geometry, and astronomy constituted the quadrivium, or course for the three years from the B.A. to the M.A. degree. These were theseven liberalarts. Accord- ing to Hallam (Zit. Lur., vol.i.), the idea of a

trivium and quadrivium dates from the 6th century. The well-known memorial couplet can be traced to ¢. 1420 a.p. :-—

Gram. loquitur, Dia. vera docet, Rhet. verba colorat : Mus. canit, Ar. numerat. Geo. ponderat, As. colit astra.

A shorter formula was—"' lingua, tropus, ratio; numerus, tonus, angulus, astra." In the Middle Ages the chief authorities on rhetoric were the latest Latin epitomists, such as Martianus Capella (5th century), Cassiodorus (5th century), or Isidorus (7th century).

After the revival of learning, the better Roman and Greek writers gradually returned into use. Some new treatises were also produced. Leonard Cox (died 1549) wrote Zhe Art or Craft of Rhetoryke, partly compiled, partly original, which was reprinted in Latin at Cracow.

old

The Art of Ehetorique by Thomas Wilson (1553), after- wards secretary of state, embodied rules chiefly from Aristotle, with help from Cicero and Quintilian. About the same time, treatises on rhetoric were published in France by Tonquelin (1555) and Courcelles (1557). The general aim at this period was to revive and popularize the best teaching of the ancients on rhetoric. was regularly taught at the universities, and was, indeed, important. At Cambridge in 1570 the study of rhetoric was based on Quintilian, Hermogenes, and the speeches of Cicero viewed as works of art. An Oxford statute of 1588 shows that the same books were used there. In 1620 George Herbert was delivering lectures on rhetoric at Cam- bridge, where he held the office of public orator. The decay of rhetoric as a formal study at the universities set in during the 18th century. In 1712 Steele regrets that Oxford and Cambridge have "grown dumb in the study of eloquence." The function of the rhetoric lecturer passed over into that of correcting written themes; but his title remained long after his office had lost its primary meaning If the theory of rhetoric fell into neglect, the practice however, was encouraged by the public exercises ("acts' and '"'opponencies") in the schools. The college prizes fo

logic. But undoubtedly the best modern book on the subject is Whately's Elements of Rhetoric. Aristotle's view, that rhetoric is "an offshoot from logic," Whately treats it as the art of "argumentative composi- tion." He considers it under four heads :—(1) the address to the understanding (= Aristotle's Aoyuxy riots) ; (2) the address to the will, or persuasion (= Aristotle's 70c«y and raQyrixi) miotis); (3) style; (4) elocution, or delivery. At the outset he makes some judicious remarks on the popular objections to the art. "It has been truly observed that 'genius begins where rules end.' But to infer from this, as some seem disposed to do, that, in any depart- ment wherein genius can be displayed, rules must be useless, or useless to those who possess genius, is a very rash conclusion. What I have observed elsewhere con- cerning logic, that 'a knowledge of it serves to save a waste of ingenuity,' holds good in many other depart- ments also." 'A drayman, we are told, will taunt a comrade by saying, 'you're a pretty fellow,' without

The subject Rhetoric

Starting from Whately.

516

having learnt that he is employing the figure called irony." But when it is thus urged that—

- *All a rhetorician's rules "But teach him how to name his tools,"*

the assumption is tacitly made that an accurate nomen- clature and classification of these tools must be devoid of practical use. The conditions of modern life, and especially the invention of printing, have diminished the importance which belonged in antiquity to the art of speaking. But few would deny that a large measure of value may still be claimed for rhetoric in the more comprehensive sense which Whately gives to it, as the art of argumentative coniposition. His treatise, the work of an able and also witty man, will be found instructive and entertaining even by those who do not go to it fora discipline. Nor can it fail to suggest a further remark. While abounding in fresh thought and modern

illustration, it constantly reminds us that, in almost all essentials, the art of rhetoric must be regarded as the creation of Aristotle. (R. 0. J.)

RHEUMATISM, a constitutional disease having for its chief manifestations inflammatory affections of the fibrous textures of joints and other parts, together with a liability to various complications. Two forms of rheumatism are recognized, and will be now briefly described, namely, the acute and the chronic, the latter either resulting from the former or arising independently. In addition to these, a disease which has received the name of chronic rheumatic (or rheumatoid) arthritis, and which presents many resem- blances to chronic rheumatism, although the relation between them is questionable, may be noticed here.

Acute Ruervmatism, frequently called RuEUMATIO Fever, is mainly characterized by inflammation affecting various joints, with a tendency to spread in an erratic manner, and accompanied with much pain, febrile disturb- ance, and perspiration.

The nature of this disease has been extensively discussed by pathologists and physicians; but, although numerous, and many of them ingenious, theories have been advanced and supported by evidence drawn from experimentation as well as clinical observation, it cannot yet be said that any one of them has gained general acceptance. It has been held that rheumatism is produced by an excess of lactic acid in the system in connexion with morbid states of the nutritive functions. Support to this view was given experimentally by Dr Richardson, but experiments by others have led to a different conclusion. Again, it has been held that the disease is a textural inflammation due to chill acting upon the parts, either locally through the circulation or through the agency of the nervous system, whereby the nutrition of the joints and other structures is lowered. Another view regards it as arising primarily in a profound disturb- ance of the heat-regulating mechanism of the body by chill, which specially affects the muscular system, causing heat to be generated without work, one of the consequences being that impressions of pain are conveyed to the brain by the articular nerves instead of those of work performed (see ParHonocy). The view has been held, too, that

rheumatism is to be referred to a germ or parasite, or a miasm analogous to the poison of malaria.

Without attempting to discuss the relative probability of these and other theories, it may be stated that those which point in the direction of a nutritional change in the

special tissues affected (the fibrous) as the result of chill |

or other depressing cause operating through the agency of the nervous system appear more consonant with the pathological evidences of the disease itself than those which would refer the morbid process to the influence of any poison circulating in the blood.

There are certain points of importance in connexion with the causation of this form of the disease which are

generally agreed upon. Thus an hereditary tendency is recognized as among the causes predisposing to acute rheumatism. The extent of this has been variously esti- mated, but it would appear to be well established that it shows itself in about one-fourth of the cases, Age is another important predisposing condition, the acute form of rheumatism being much more a disease of youth than of later life. The period of adolescence, from sixteen to twenty, is that in which probably the greater number of the cases occur; but even in early childhood the disease may manifest itself, or at any period of life, although it is rarely observed in old age. Persons much exposed to all kinds of weather are specially liable to suffer, and hence the disease is more common among the poorer classes. Any depressing cause acting upon the general health, such as overwork or anxiety, or any habitual drain upon the system, such as overlactation, in like manner has a similar effect. Climate, too, is a factor of great importance, for, although not unfrequently met with in temperate or even warni climates, the disease is unquestionably of more com- mon occurrence in cold and damp regions. Attacks of acute rheumatism are brought on in most instances by exposure to cold, by getting wet through, sometimes also by excessive fatigue such as in walking long distances,

especially if in addition there have been overheating of the body and subsequent chill. Persons who have once suffered from this disease are very liable to a recurrence on a renewal of the exciting cause, and even apparently independently of this from such causes as digestive disturbances,

An attack of acute rheumatism is usually ushered in by chilliness or rigors followed with feverishness and a feeling of stiffness or pain in one or more joints, generally those of larger or medium size, such as the knees, ankles, wrists, shoulders, &c., which soon becomes intense, and is accom- panied with severe constitutional disturbance and prostra- tion. The patient lies helpless in bed, restless, but afraid to move or to be touched, and unable to bear even the weight of the bed-clothes. The face is flushed, and the whole body bathed in perspiration, which has a highly acid reaction anda sour disagreeable odour. The tempera- ture is markedly elevated (103° to 105°), the pulse rapid, full, and soft; the tongue is coated with a yellow fur; and there are thirst, loss of appetite, and constipation. The urine is diminished in quantity, highly acid, and loaded with urates. At first the pain is confined to only one or two joints, but soon others become affected, and there is often a tendency to symmetry in the manner in which they suffer, the inflammation in one joint being shortly followed by that of the same joint in the opposite limb. The affected joints are red, swollen, hot, and ex- cessively tender. The inflammation seldom continues long in one articulation, but it may return to those formerly affected. In severe cases scarcely a joint large or small escapes, and the pain, restlessness, and fever render the patient's condition extremely miserable.

An attack of acute rheumatism is of variable duration, sometimes passing away in the course of a few days, but more frequently lasting for many weeks. Occasionally, when the disease appears to have subsided, relapses occur which bring back all the former symptoms and prolong the case, it may be for months. Again, after all acute symp- toms have disappeared, the joints may remain swollen, stiff, and painful on movement, and the rheumatic condition thus becomes chronic.

After an attack of rheumatism, the patient is much reduced in strength and pale-looking for a considerable time, but should no conplication have arisen there may be complete recovery, although doubtless there remains a liability to subsequent attacks. This disease derives much of its serious import from certain accompaniments

or complications which are apt to attend its progress. Among these may be mentioned excessive fever (hyper- pyrexia), which is sometimes developed in a sudden and alarming manner, the temperature rising quickly to 108°-110° or more, and thus endangering life. Indeed in most of such instances death speedily follows unless prompt treatment be resorted to. Another danger is the occurrence of serious head symptoms in the form of delirium or excitement, which may exist in conjunction with hyperpyrexia or independently. Chorea or St Vitus's dance is also an occasional accompaniment of acute rheumatism. Besides these, other complications pertaining to the respiratory organs, such as pleurisy, pneumonia, bronchitis, é&c., sometimes arise in the course of the disease, as well as certain disorders of the skin. But the most frequent and important of all are those affecting the heart. These cardiac affections are regarded by some as an integral part of the rheumatic disease rather than as results of it, especially as it would seem that occasionally they are the only local manifestation of the attack.

Pericarditis (inflammation of the investing membrane of the heart) and endocarditis (inflammation of the lining membrane of the heart) are the two most common forms which these heart complications assume, and it is the latter which is specially important as tending to lay the foundation for valvular heart disease (see Heart). It is the liability to these inflammatory heart affections that causes special anxiety during the earlier stages of an attack of acute rheumatism, when it would appear they are more apt to occur. The risk of cardiac complications seems to be greater the younger the patient, and doubt- less the foundation of organic heart disease is often laid in early childhood, when, as is now well known, rheumatism is by no means uncommon. ;

The name subacute rheumatism is sometimes applied to attacks of the disease of less severe type than that now described, but where yet the symptoms exist in a well- marked degree. Cases of this kind may be of even longer duration and more intractable than the more acute variety, although probably the danger to the heart is less.

Curonic RHEUMATISM appears occasionally to be deve- loped as the result of the acute form, but is more frequently an independent constitutional affection, and is usually a complaint of later life. The causes associated with its occurrence are habitual exposure to cold and damp; hence its frequency among outdoor workers. It is also apt to arise in persons debilitated by overwork or privation. Certain poisons introduced into the system are often attended with symptoms of chronic rheumatism, ¢.9., lead, syphilis, &c. This disease is often hereditary. It differs from acute rheumatism in being less frequently attended with fever and constitutional disturbance and less liable to dangerous complications, but on the other hand it is much more apt to produce permanent alterations in the joints and parts affected. The joints tend to become swollen both from effusion of fluid and from chronic inflammatory thickening of the textures, and the result is stiffness and sometimes complete immobility. But in addition the

sheaths of muscles and of nerves are apt to be affected by

chronic rheumatisni, causing much suffering. This form of rheumatism is less migratory in its progress than the acute, and tends to remain fixed in a few joints, often in those which are specially exposed to atmospheric influences or tooverwork. The chief symptoms are pain and stiffness in movement, more particularly when the efforts begin to be made, becoming less after the limbs and body have been in exercise. . Creaking or crackling noises accompany the movements. The pain is apt to be increased during the night, and is besides markedly influenced by the state of the atmosphere, cold and damp aggravating it.

This form of rheumatism, although not directly danger- ous to life, tends to lower the health and render the patient more vulnerable to other morbid influences. Besides this, by long continuance it may lead to great

deformity and disablement of the frame, in some instances resulting in a condition of utter helplessness.

Treatment.—Few diseases have had so many remedies recommended for their alleviation, and vaunted as specifics, as rheumatism; and, when it is remembered how many are the theories of the nature of the malady, it is obvious that even as regards principles the methods proposed must be numerous and diverse. Nevertheless, there are certain well-recognized systems of treatment which in most instances will be found to be of benefit. The treatment differs in the two forms of the disease. As regards acute rheumatism the general management of the case from the outset requires attention. The patient should be placed in bed between blankets, and should wear a flannel shirt, the front and arms of which should be opened to admit of the examination of the heart and of the joints. Movements of all kinds should be as far as possible avoided. The affected joints should be enveloped in cotton wool, kept in position by a light bandage. Sometimes the bathing of these parts with warm water containing opium or other sedative affords relief. The local application of blisters in the neighbourhood of the painful joints, as pro- posed by Dr Herbert Davies, is in some instances followed with benefit, but is obviously applicable only where the rheumatism is limited in its extent. The same may be said of the local application of electricity to the joints. Constitutional remedies are of undoubted value in this disease, and the number of available agents for this purpose is so large that mention can only be briefly made of some of the more approved. For long the alkalis, especially the salts of potassium, were the chief remedies resorted to, and for them it was claimed that they shortened the attack, relieved pain, and prevented heart complications. They are certainly very valuable in many instances. Of late a new series of substances has been tried with great success, namely salicin (first suggested for acute rheumatism by Dr T. J. Maclagan), salicylic acid, and salicylate of soda. These remedies, which are known to have a powerful effect in reducing febrile temperatures, appear to exercise a special influence in acute rheumatism, not merely by lowering the fever, but by relieving pain and cutting short the attack, thereby lessening the risk of complications. From 20 to 30 grains of these drugs every two hours require to be given for about twenty-four hours in order to produce the desired effect, and the quantity is reduced as the acute symptoms subside.

Although they do not succeed in all cases, and sometimes give rise to symptoms (delirium, sickness, &e.) which necessitate their suspension, it will be admitted by most physicians that cases which appeared likely to be of a severe character have under this treatment been cut short in a few days, and that even where this result was not attained the pain and other distressing symptoms were materially alleviated. Tonics, such as iron and quinine, have also been employed in acute rheumatism, but their advantage is more apparent in the convalescence, when there are anemia and debility, rather than in the height of the disease. The pain and sleeplessness may render necessary the administration of opiates, but in many instances both are completely overcome by the remedies previously mentioned. In the dangerous complication of hyperpyrexia the cold bath (in which the water is quickly cooled down from 94° to 68°) has frequently been suc- cessful in speedily lowering the temperature and saving life. Persons who have suffered from acute rheumatism should ever afterwards be careful to avoid exposure to

o18

damp and chill, and to protect the skin by suitable under- clothing.

In chronic rheumatism the remedies are innumerable. This form of the disease is less under the power of medicinal agents than the acute, although much may be done to alleviate the suffering produced by it as well as to limit its extension. Salicin and the salicylates so useful in acute rheumatism are not found asa rule to be of much service, while on the other hand alkalis in combination with sulphur, iodine, arsenic, and tonics, such as iron, quinine, cod-liver oil, &c., are the most serviceable remedies. Turpen- tine is also recommended. Friction of the affected parts with stimulating or soothing liniments, counter-irritation with blisters, iodine, or the button cautery are useful local applications, as is also galvanism. Hot baths or Turkish baths may occasionally be used with advantage. The mineral waters, and baths of various well-known resorts are of undoubted benefit, especially those of Buxton, Bath, Strathpeffer, or Harrogate in Great Britain, or those of Aix- les-Bains, Wiesbaden, Homburg, Ems, Wildbad, Aix-la- Chapelle, and many others on the Continent. Changes to warmer climates during the colder season where

practicable are also to be recommended, as well as every other measure calculated to improve the general health.

RHEUMATOID ARTHRITIS.—This term (syn. chronic rheu- matic arthritis, arthritis deformans) is employed to desig- uate a chronic inflammatory affection of joints, involving specially the synovial membranes and articular cartilages, of slow development and progressive character, resulting in stiffening and deformity of the parts.

This disease is held by some to partake of the nature of both rheumatism and gout (hence occasionally termed rheumatic gout); others regard it as simply a variety of chronic rheumatism; while in the opinion of several eminent authorities it is an independent constitutional affection occurring in persons with a strumous or tubercular tendency. It does not appear to be hereditary. It is more common in women than in men, and occurs at all ages. It is closely connected with conditions of ill health ; and hence its frequent occurrence among those whose blood is impoverished by insufficient food, by hardship, or by any drain upon the system. It occasionally follows an attack of acute rheumatism ; hence the supposed connexion.

The disease in most cases is slowly developed, and shows itself first by pain and swelling in one joint (knee, wrist, finger, &c.), which soon subside and may remain absent for a considerable time. Sooner or later, however, another attack occurs either in the joint formerly affected or in some other, and it is noticed that the affected articulation does not now regain its normal size but remains somewhat swollen. The attacks recur with increasing frequency, gradually involving more joints, until, in course of time (for its progress is very chronic), scarcely an articulation in the body is free from the disease. Thickening of the textures, with stiffness, is the result, and often considerable deformity from the joints being fixed in certain positions, The muscles of the affected limbs undergo atrophy and contrast strikingly with the abnormally enlarged joints. Painful inflammatory attacks often occur in the affected joints, and the patient is much reduced in strength by the constant irritation of the disease. In the young the hands are very liable to suffer, and the disease gradually extends to involve other parts; while in old persons it is

apt to fasten upon one joint, often the hip, and is not so apt to spread. The chief changes in the joints are (1) in the synovial membrane, which is at first simply inflamed and contains fluid, but ultimately becomes much thickened, and (2) in the articular cartilage, which tends to split up and become gradually absorbed, leaving the articular ends of the bone exposed. The osseous surfaces thus brought into

contact become hard and polished by friction. These changes and others affecting the ligaments are apt to produce partial dislocation as well as stiffening of the joint, rendering it deformed and useless. This disease often lasts for many years, sometimes continuing for a lengthened period without much change, but tending gradually to progress and to render the patient more and more helpless. It is not attended with the complications of rheumatism, and is not inconsistent with long life, but its weakening effects upon the system and the ill health with which it is usually associated render the subject of it more liable to the inroads of other diseases. Rheumatoid arthritis is less amenable to treatment than rheumatism, the remedies for which are not found to be of much value in this disease. Most success is obtained if it is recognized early and measures are taken to strengthen the patient's general health. The best medicinal agents are iron, quinine, cod- liver oil, arsenic. Chalybeate mineral waters, such as those of Schwalbach, Spa, Pyrmont, &c., are often of service. Locally blisters or milder counter-irritation to the affected joints, as well as the employment of galvanism, may be advantageously resorted to. J. 0. A.)

RHEYDT, a manufacturing town of Rhenish Prussia, is situated on the Niers, 14 miles to the west of Diissel- dorf. The principal products of its numerous factories are silk, cotton, woollen, and mixed fabrics, iron goods, machinery, lamp wicks, and roofing pasteboard. Dyeing and finishing are also carried on. The most prominent buildings are the old parish church and a new one erected in 1866. Rheydt is an ancient place, but its industrial importance is of very recent growth. At the beginning of the present century it did not contain more than 2000 to 3000 inhabitants,

whereas in 1880 the population of the municipal commune was 19,087, two-thirds of whom were Protestants.

RHIN, Havr-, a department of France before 1871. See FRaNcg, vol. ix. p. 508.

RHINE (Lat. Rhenus, Germ. Rhein, Fr. Rhin, Dutch Rhijn), the chief river of Germany and one of the most important in Europe, is about 800 miles in length and drains an area of 75,000 square miles.1 The distance in a direct line between its source in the Alps and its mouth in the German ocean is 460 miles. Its general course is north-north-west, but it makes numerous deflexions and at one point is found running in a diametrically opposite direction. About 250 miles of its length are in Switzer- land, 450 in Germany, and 100 in Holland; but the German half is in every respect so much the more import- ant that it 1s no misnomer to call the Rhine a German river, even if the word German be confined to its modern political signification, The name Rhine, which is apparently of Celtic origin, is of uncertain import, but has been supposed to mean "flowing" or "clear." The sources of the Rhine are found in the Swiss canton of Grisons, where the drainage of at least 150 glaciers unites to form its headwaters. Among these streams, all of which are termed Rhin in the Ladine dialect of the district, two are generally recognized as the main sources of the river, viz., the Vorder Rhein and the Hinter Rhein. The chief feeder of the former rises in the small Lake of Toma, situated on the south-east slope of the St Gotthard,? at a height of 7690 feet above the sea and at no great distance from the source of the Rhone, which rises on the west side of the same mountain mass. It first flows to the east, receiving the waters of the Medelser Rhein and several other glacier streams, and after a course of about

1 This is the current estimate, but Strelbitzki, the latest authority, does not allow the Rhine a length of more than 710 miles.

*2 "*Reticarum Alpium inaccesso ac precipiti vertice," says Tacitus.*

RHIiN &

45 miles unites with the Hinter Rhein at Reichenau. As far as Ilanz the Vorder Rhein is simply a mountain torrent, descending 1200 feet in the first 12 miles of its course. At Disentis, where it is joined by the Medelser Rhein, it is 15 feet wide, and at Ilanz it is about thrice as large. The Hinter Rhein has its cradle in the Rheinwald glacier, near the St Bernardino Pass, 7270 feet above the sea and 40 miles south of Reichenau. The Vorder Rhein con- tributes the greater volume of water to the joint stream, but the Hinter Rhein belongs to a more developed system.

Beyond Reichenau the united stream, 150 feet in width, bears the name of Rhine without any qualifying epithet. It is now navigable for rafts, and small boats begin to be seen a little further on, at Coire, where it turns to the north. On reaching the Lake of Constance the Rhine deposits the debris that it has brought down from its mountain sources, and the stream that emerges from the west end of the Untersee is of a clear deep green colour. Between the Lake of Constance and Basel the Rhine flows towards the west and practically forms the boundary be- tween Germany and Switzerland, At Schaffhausen, in penetrating the barrier of the Jura, it forms the imposing falls of the Rhine, where it is precipitated over a ledge of rock in three leaps 50 or 60 feet in height. Near Lauter- burg, where the river encounters the gneiss of the Black Forest, is a series of formidable cataracts, and about 15 miles lower down are the rapids of Rheinfelden. At Basel, which it reaches aftcr a tortuous course of 250 miles, though it is only about a third of that distance from its source in a direct line, the Rhine turns once more to the north and enters Germany. Its breadth here is between 550 and 600 feet, while its surface now lies not more than 800 feet above the sea, showing that the river has made a descent of 6900 feet by the time it has traversed a third of its course. From Basel to Mainz the Rhine flows through a wide and shallow valley, bordered on the east and west by the parallel ranges of the Black Forest and the Vosges. Its banks are low and flat, and numerous islands occur. The tendency to divide into parallel branches has been curbed in the interests of navigation, and many windings have been cut off by leading the water into straight and regular channels. At Mannheim the river is nearly 1500 feet in width, and at Mainz, where it is diverted to the west by the barrier of the Taunus, it is still wider. It follows the new direction for

about 20 miles, but at Bingen it again turns to the north and begins a completely new stage of its career, entering a narrow valley in which the enclosing rocky hills abut so closely on the river as often barely to leave room for the road and railway on the bank. This is the most beautiful part of the whole course of the river, abounding in the ruined castles, the romantic crags, the sunny vineyards, and the picturesque lateral ravines that have combined to make the Rhine so favourite a resort of lovers of natural beauty. At Coblentz the valley widens and the river is 1200 feet broad, but the hills close in again at Andernach, and this ravine-like part of its course cannot be considered as ending till below the Seven Mountains, where the river once more expands to a width of 1300-1600 feet. Beyond Bonn and Cologne the banks are again flat and the valley wide, though the hills on the right bank do not completely disappear till the neighbour- hood of Diisseldorf. Further on the country traversed by the Rhine is perfectly level, and the current becomes more and more sluggish. On entering Holland, which it does below Emmerich, its course is again deflectcd to the west. Within Holland the banks are so low as to require at places to be protected by embankments against inundations. The river now loses its individuality in a number of separate branches, and the name of Rhine has often arbi- trarily clung to the smaller arm after a bifurcation. Almost

ol9

immediately after entering Holland the stream divides into two arms, the larger of which, carrying off about two-thirds of the water, diverges to the west, is called the Waal, and soon unites with the Maas. The smaller branch to the right retains the name of Rhine and sends off another arm, called the Yssel, to the Zuyder Zee. The Rhine now pursues a westerly course almost parallel with that of the Waal. At Wijk another bifurcation takes place, the broad Lek diverging on the left to jom the Maas, while the "Kromme Rhijn" to the right is com- paratively insignificant. Beyond Utrecht, where it is again diminished by the divergence of the Vecht to the Zuyder Zee, the river under the name of the " Oude Rhijn" or Old Rhine degenerates into a sluggish and almost stagnant stream, which requires the artificial aid of a canal and sluices in finding its way to the sea. In Roman times the Rhine at this part of its course seems to have been a full

and flowing river, but by the 9th century it had lost itself in the sands of Katwijk, and it was not until the beginning of the 19th century that its way to the sea was re-opened. Though the name Rhine thus at last attaches to a very insignificant stream, the entire district between the Waal on one side and the Yssel on the other, the Znsula Batavorum of Czesar, in reality belongs to the delta of the famous river! See vol. xii. Plate I.

The Rhine is said to receive, dircctly or indirectly, the waters of upwards of 12,000 tributaries of all sizes. Leaving out of account the innumerable glacier streams that swell its volume above the Lake of Constance, the most important affluents to its upper course are the Wutach, the Alb, and the Wiese, descending on the right from the Black Forest, and the Aar, draining several Swiss cantons on the left. In the Upper Rhenish basin, between Basel and Mainz, the tributaries, though numerous, are mostly short and unimportant. The Ill and the Nahe on the left and the Neckar and the Main on the right are, however, notable exceptions. Before joining the Rhine the Ill runs almost parallel with it and at no great distance for upwards of 50 miles. In the narrow part of the valley, between Bingen and Cologne, the Rhine receives the waters of the Lahn and the Sieg on the right, and those of the Moselle? (bringing with it the Saar) and the Ahr on the left. Still lower down, but before the Dutch frontier is reached, come the Ruhr and the Lippe on the right, and the Erft on the left. The numerous arms into which the Rhine branches in Holland have already been noticed.

The Rhine connects the highest Alps with the mud banks of Holland, and touches in its course the most varied geological periods ; but the river valley itself is, geologically speaking, of comparatively recent formation. Rising amid the ancient gneiss rocks of the St Gotthard, the Rhine finds its way down to the Lake of Constance between layers of Triassic and Jurassic formation; and between that lake and Basel it penetrates the chalk barrier of thie Jura. The upper Rhenish valley is evidently the bed of an ancient lake, the shores of which were formed by the gneiss and granite

of the Black Forest on the one side and the granite and sandstone of the Vosges on the other. Within the valley all the alluvial

1 The nomenclature of the Rhine branches in the Netherlands is, according to Mr J. Dirks, a singular but historie system, by which the rivers are chopped up, as it were, into longitudinal pieces.

2 The Moselle rises in France, in the canton of Ramonchamp, at a height of 2379 feet above the sea, on the west side of the Vosges. Its length is 315 miles (of which 190 are in France), but the direct line from souree to confluence is only about 170 miles. At Hpinal (1040 feet) the Moselle passes out of the rocky mountain-glen where its course has hitherto been. It enters the Lorraine plateau, but the sides of the valley still remain high and steep. Below Metz (550 feet) the bottom-lands spread out to a considerable width ; in the section between Sierck and Coblentz the hills again close in upon the river. Rafts can generally be floated from Arches down to Frouard, and there, by the junction of the Meurthe (itself navigable, though with difficulty, from Nancy), the depth becomes sufficient for boats. Since 1840 steamboats have plied between Treves and Coblentz.

deposits are recent. Between Bingen and Bonn the Rhine forces its way through a hilly and rocky district belonging to the Devonian formation. The contorted strata of slate and greywacke rock must have been formed at a period vastly anterior to that in which the lake of the upper valley managed to force an ontlet through the enclosing barriers. Probably this section may be looked upon as the oldest portion of the river course proper, con- necting the upper Rhenish lake with the primeval ocean at Bonn. In this district too, as has already been remarked, is the finest scenery of the Rhine, a faet due in great part to the grotesque shapes of the quartzose roeks, left denuded of the less durable slate aud sandstone. All the strata intersected by the Rhine between Bingen and Bonn contain fossils of the same classes. The deposits of the actual valley here, belonging to the Miocene group of the Tertiary system, are older than the deposits either farther up or farther down the river; but they are contemporaneous with the basalts of the Rhine, which at Coblentz and in the peaks of the Seven Mountains also contribute to the scenic charm of the river. The very extensive pumice deposits at Neuwied and the lava and

other voleanic rocks belong toa more recent epoch. Below Bingen the formations belong almost entirely to the Post-Tertiary period.. Numerous extinct voleanoes rise near Neuwied. In the flatter parts of the valley occur large beds of loam and rubble, sometimes in terraces parallel with, but several hundred feet above, the river, —proving by their disposition and appearance that the valley has been formed by the action of water.

The Rhine has been one of the chief waterways of Europe from the earliest times; and, as its channel is not exposed to the danger of silting up like those of the Elbe and the Oder, it has always been comparatively easy to keep it open. The Romans exerted them- selves to improve the lower navigation of the river, and appointed prefects of the Rhine to superintend the shipping and to exact the moderate dues imposed to keep the channel in repair. The Franks continued the same policy and retained a system of river-dues. Afterwards as the banks became parcelled out among a host of petty princelings, each of whom arrogated the right of laying a tax on pene vessels, the imposts became so prejudicial as seriously to 1amper the development of the shipping. Many of the riparian potentates derived the bulk of their revenue from this source, and it is calculated that in the,18th century the Rhine yielded a total revenue of £200,000, in spite of the comparatively insignificant amount of the shipping. The first proposal for a free Rhine was mooted by the French at the congress of Rastatt (1797-1799), but Holland, commanding the mouth of the river, placed every obstacle in the way of the suggestion. In 1831, on the separation of Holland and Belgium, the former had become more amenable to reason ; and a system was agreed upon which practically gave free navigation to the vessels of the riverine states, while imposing a moderate tariff upon foreign ships. 1t was not, however, till 1869 that the last vestige of a toll disappeared and the river was thrown open without any restriction. he management of the channel and navigation is now vested in a Central Commission, mecting at Mannheim. The channel has been greatly improved and in many places made more direct since the beginning of the present century,—large sums being annually spent in keeping it in order. Capacious river harbours have been formed at various points, about twenty-five of these being in Germany and eight or ten more in Holland. The total weight of the goods forwarded each year on the Rhine has of late amounted to nearly 1,000,000 tons, the chief articles

being timber, coal, iron, agricultural produce, and manufactured goods of various kinds. The position of the river is highly favourable for the development of its trade. It flows through the most populous regions of the continent of Europe, to discharge into one of the most frequented seas opposite Great Britain, and, besides serving as a natural outlet for Germany, Belgium, and Holland, is connected with a great part of central and southern France by the Rhine-Rhone and the Rhine- ea Canals, and with the basin of the Danube by the Ludwigs-

anal,

The introduction of steam has greatly increased the shipping on the Rhine; and small steamers ply also on the Main, the Neckar, the Maas, and the Mosclle. The first Rhine steamer was launched in 1817 ; and now the river is regularly traversed by upwards of a hundred, from the small tug up to the passenger saloon-steamer. The steamboat traffic has especially eneouraged the influx of tourists, and the number of passing travellers may now be reckoned as between one and two millions annually. The river is navigable without interruption from Basel to its mouth, a distanee of 550 miles, of which 450 lie within Germany. Above Spires, how- ever, the river craft are comparatively small, but lower down vessels of 500 and 600 tons burden find no diffieulty in plying. Betwecn Basel and Strasburg the depth of water is sometimes not more than 8 feet; between Strasburg and Mainz it varies from 5 to 25 feet ; while below Mainz it is never less than 9 or 10 feet. The deepest point is opposite the Lurlei Rock near St Goar, where it is 75 feet in depth ; at Diisseldorf the depth is about 50 feet. One of the most interesting features of the Rhine navigation is

Rol WN i

afforded by the huge rafts of timber that are floated down the river. Single tree trunks sent down to the Rhine by the various tributaries are united into small rafts as they reach the main stream ; and these again are fastened together to form one large raft about Andernach. Though not so large as formerly, these timber-rafts are still sometimes 400 or 500 feet in length, and are navigated by 200 to 400 men, who live in little huts on the raft, forming actual floating villages. On reaching Dort the rafts are

broken up and sold, a single raft sometimes producing as much as £30,000, The voyage from Bingen to Dort takes from one to six weeks, and the huge unwieldy struetures require to be navigated with great care. The commerce carried on by-the river itself is supplemented by the numerous railways, which skirt its banks and converge to its principal towns. Before the introduction of railways there were no permanent bridges across the Rhine below Basel ; but now trains cross it at about a dozen different points in Germany and Holland.

The salmon fisheries of the Rhine, lying mainly between Bach- arach and St Goar, have long been famous; but their produce has been seriously diminished since the advent of the steamer. Pike, carp, and other white fish are also caught.

The long array of ancient and flourishing towns along its banks bear witness to the great importance of the river. These are most frequent in the upper Rhenish basin and again below Bonn, the places in the narrower part of the valley being generally more remarkable for their picturesque situation than for their commercial or political influence. Beyond the borders of Germany the only large towns on the Rhine are Basel in Switzerland, and Arnheim, Utrecht, and Leyden in Holland. Within Germany, as we trace the course of the river form south to north, we come successively to Spires, Mannheim, Mainz, Coblentz, Bonn, Cologne, Diisseldorf, and Wesel. Worms, which was formerly washed by the Rhine, lies about $ mile distant from the present course ; and Strasburg, which hes on the II], 2 miles from the Rhine, may also be reckoned as one of its towns.

Politically the Rhine has always played a great part; and it would require no great straining to write a history of this majestic river which would also be a history of the western half of conti- nental Europe. The whole valley seems to have been originally occupied by Celtic tribes, who have left traces of their presence on the contents of tombs and in the forms of names (Moguntiacum or Mainz, Borbetomagus or Worms, &c.); but at the beginning of the historical period we find the Celts everywhere in retreat before the advancing Teutons. Probably the Teutonic pressure began as early as the 4th century before Christ, and the history of the next

few hundred years may be summed up as the gradual substitution of a Germanic for a Celtic population along the banks of the Rhine. Its second historical period begins with the advent of the Romans, who stemmed the advancing Teutonic tide. Augustus and his successors took good care to fortify the Rhine carefully, and a large proportion of the Roman legions were con- stantly in garrison here. For two hundred years the Rhine formed the boundary between the Roman empire and the Teutonic hordes ; and during that period the left or Roman bank made prodigious strides in eivilization and culture. The wonderful Roman re- mains at Treves and elsewhere, the Roman roads, bridges, and aqueducts, are convincing proofs of what the Rhine gained from Roman domination. This Roman civilization was, however, des- tined to be swamped by the current of Teutonic immigration, whieh finally broke down the barriers of the Roman cmpire and overwhelmed the whole of the Rhenish district. Under Charle- magne, whose principal residence was in Aix-la-Chapelle, the cul- ture of the Rhine valley again began to flourish, its results being still to be traced in the important architectural remains of this period. At the partition of the domains of Charlemagne in 848 a.p. the Rhine formed the boundary between Germany and the middle kingdom of Lotharingia ; but by 870 it lay wholly within the former realm. Fornearly eight hundred years it continued in this position, the frontier of the German empire coinciding more or less with the line of the Rhone. During the early Middle Ages the bank of the Rhine formed the most cultured part of Germany, basing its civilization on its Roman past. The Thirty Years' War exercised

a most prejudicial effect upon the district of the Rhine; and the pence of Westphalia gave France a footing ou the left bank of the itherto exclusively German river by the acquisition of Alsace. The violent seizure of Strasburg by France in 1681 was ratified by the peace of Ryswick in 1697, which recognized the Rhine as the boundary between Germany and France from Bascl to about Germersheim. It was an easy inference for the French mind that the Rhine should be the boundary throughout and the Gaul of Cesar restored. This ideal was realized in 1801, when the whole of the left bank of the Rhine was formally ceded to France. The

congress of Vienna (1815) restored the lower part of the Rhenish valley to Germany, but it was not till the war of 1870-71 that the recovery of Alsace and Lorraine made the Rhine once more "Germany's river, not Germany's frontier." In the military history of all these centuries constant allusion is made to the Rhine, its passages, and its fortresses. Every general who has fought in its neighbourhood has at onc time or another had to provide for a crossing of the Rhine, from Julius Cesar, who crossed it twice, down to our own time. The wars carried on here by his Most Christian Majesty Louis XIV. are still remembered in

the Rhine district, where the devastations of his generals were of

the most appalling description ; and scarcely a village or town but has a tale to tell of the murder and rapine of this period.

The Rhine has always exercised a peculiar sort of fascination over the German mind, in a measure and in a manuer not easily paralleled by the case of any other river. "Father Rhine" is the centre of the German's patriotism and the symbol of his country. In his literature it has played a prominent part from the Wibelungenlied to the present day; and its weird and romantic legends have been alternately the awe and the delight of his childhood. The Rhine was the classic river of the Middle Ages ; and probably the Tiber alone is of equal historical interest among European rivers. Victor Hugo has perhaps best described the mingled feelings which the Rhine awakens. "Le Rhin," he says, "réunit tout. Le Rhin est rapide comme le Rhine, large comme la Loire, encaissé comme la Meuse, tortueux comme la Seine, limpide et vert comme la Somme, historique comme le Tibre, royal comme le Danube, mystérieux comme le Nil, pailleté d'or comine un fleuve d'Amérique, couvert de fables et de fantémes comme un flenve d' Asie." (J. F. M.).

RHINOCEROS, a name applied by the ancients to an animal the most striking external peculiarity of which is certainly the horn growing above its nose (f.vdKepus, nose-horn),

The various existing and extinct species are grouped into a family, Rhinocerotidx, which is a division of the Perissodactyle (odd-toed) section of the great order of Ungulata or hoofed mammals, of which section the

tapirs and horses are the only other surviving members (see MamMatta, vol. xv. p. 428),

The following are the general characters applicable to all the members of the family.

First, as regards dentition. Incisors variable, generally reduced in number and often quite rudimentary, and early deciduous. Canines, in existing species, absent. Molar series, consisting of the full number of four premolars and three molars above and below, all in contact and closely resembling each other, except the first, which is

Fig, 1.—Grinding surface of a moderately worn right upper second molar of Rhinoceros. A, Rhinoceros unicornis; B, Rhinoceros sondaicus. I, anterior surface ; 2, posterior surface ; 3, internal surface: 4, external surface (wall or dorsum); 5, antero-internal pillar or cusp; 6, postero-internal pillar or cusp; 7, anterior sinus; 8, median sinus; 9, posterior sinus; 10, accessory sinus or valley ; 11, crista (anterior combing plate); 12, crochet (posterior combing

plate). much smaller than the rest and often deciduous. The others gradually increasing in size up to the penultimate. The upper molars have a very characteristic pattern of crown, having a much-developed flat or more or less

sinuous outer wall, and two transverse ridges running

o21

obliquely inwards and backwards from it, terminating internally in conical eminences or columns, and enclosing a deep (middle) sinus between. The posterior sinus is formed behind the posterior transverse ridge, and is bounded externally by a backward continuation of the outer wall and behind by the cingulum. The anterior sinus is formed in the same manner, but is much smaller,

‘The middle sinus is often intersected by vertical laminz

("combing plates ") projecting into it from the anterior sur- ' face of the posterior transverse ridge or from the wall, the development of which is a useful guide in discriminating the species, especially those no longer existing and known only by the teeth and bones. The depressions between the ridges are not filled up with cernentum as in the horse. The lower molars have the crown formed by a pair of crescents ; the last has no third lobe or talon.

Head large, skull elongated, elevated posteriorly into a transverse occipital crest. No post-orbital processes or any separation between orbits and temporal fossa. Nasal bones large and stout, co-ossified, and standing out freely above the premaxille, from which they are separated by a deep and wide fissure ; the latter small, generally not meeting in the middle line in front, often quite rudimen- tary. Tympanics small, not forming a bulla. Brain cavity very small for the size of the skull. Vertebree :— cervical, 7; dorsal, 19-20 ; lumbar, 3; sacral, 4; caudal, about 22. Limbs stout, and of moderate length. Three completely developed toes, with distinct broad rounded hoofs on each foot.1 Mammze two, inguinal. Eyes small. Ears of moderate size, oval, erect, prominent, placed near the occiput. Skin very thick, in many species thrown into massive folds. Hairy covering scanty. All existing species have one or two median horns on the face. When one is present it is situated over the conjoined nasal bones ; when two, the hinder one is over the frontals. These horns, which are of a more or less conical form and usually recurved, and often grow to a great length (three or even four feet), are composed of a solid mass of hardened epidermic cells growing from a cluster of long dermal papilla. The cells formed on each papilla consti- tute a distinct horny fibre, like a thick hair, and the whole are cemented together by an intermediate mass of cells which grow up from the interspaces between the papille. It results from this that the horn has the appearance of a mass of agglutinated hairs, which, in the newly growing part at the base, readily fray out on destruction of the softer intermediate substance ; but the fibres differ from true hairs in growing from a free papilla of the derm, and not within a follicular involution of the same.

The Ahinocerotidex are all animals of large size, but of little intelligence, generally timid in disposition, though ferocious when attacked and

brought to bay, using the nasal horns as weapons, by which they strike and toss their assailant. Their sight is dull, but their hearing and scent are remarkably acute. They feed on herbage, shrubs, and leaves of trees, and, like so many other large animals which inhabit hot countries, sleep the greater part of the day, being most active in the cool of the evening or even during the night. They are fond of bathing and wallowing in water or mud. None of the species have been domesti- cated. Animals of the group have existed in both the Old and New Worlds since the beginning of the Miocene period. In America they all became extinct before the end of the Pliocene period. In the Old World their distribution has become greatly restricted, being no longer found in Europe and North Asia, but only in Africa and in portions of the Indian and Indo-Malayan regions.

1Tn some extinct species a small outer toe is present on the

forefoot. XX. — 66

522 RHINOCEROS

The existing species of rhinoceros are naturally grouped into three sections, which some zoologists consider of generic value.

I. Rhinoceros proper. The adults with a single large compressed incisor above on each side, and occasionally a small lateral one; below, a very small median, and a very large, procumbent, pointed lateral incisor. Nasal bones pointed in front. A single nasal horn. Skin very thick, and raised into strong, definitely arranged ridges or folds.

There are two well-marked species of one-horned rhino- ceroses. (1) The Indian Rhinoceros, &. wnicornis of Lin- neeus,! the largest and best known, from being the most frequently exhibited alive in England, is at present only

Fra, 2,—Indian Rhinoceros (Rhinoceros unicornis). This and the following woodcuts are reduced from drawings by J. Wolf, from animals living in the London Zoological Society's Gardens.

met with in a wild state in the terai region of Nepal and Bhutan, and in the upper valley of the Brahmaputra or province of Assam, though it formerly had a wider range.

Fra, 3.—Javan Rhinoceros (Rhinoceros sondaicus).

The first rhinoceros seen alive in Europe since the time when they, in common with nearly all the large remarkable

1 Many authors use Cuvier's name, 2. indicus, in preference to this, on the ground that there are more than one species with one horn, forgetting that the name substituted is equally inconvenient, as more than one species live in India. The fact of a specific name being applicable to several members of a genus is no objection to its restriction to the first to which it was applied ; otherwise changes in old and well-received names would constantly have to be made in consequence of new discoveries.

Roman shows, was of this species. It was sent from India to Emmanuel, king of Portugal, in 1513 ; and from a sketch of it, taken in Lisbon, Albert Diirer composed his cele- brated but rather fanciful engraving, which was repro- duced in so many old books on natural history. (2) The Javan Rhinoceros, R. sondaicus, Cuvier, is distinguished by smaller size, special characters of the teeth and skull, and different arrangement of the plications of the skin (as seen in the figures) ; the horn in the female appears to be very little developed, if not altogether absent. This has a more extensive geographical range, being found in the Bengal Sunderbans near Calcutta, Burmah, the Malay Peninsula, Java, Sumatra, and probably Borneo.

Il. Ceratorhinus. The adults with a moderate-sized compressed incisor above, and a laterally placed, pointed, procumbent incisor below, which is sometimes lost in old animals. Nasal bones narrow and pointed anteriorly. A well-developed nasal, and a small frontal horn separated by an interval. The skin thrown into folds, but these not so strongly marked as in the former section. The smallest living member of the family, the Sumatran Rhinoceros, R. sumatrensis, Cuv., belongs to this «group. Its geo- graphical range is nearly the same as that of the Javan species, though not extending into Bengal; but it has been found in Assam, Chittagong,

Burmah, the Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, and Borneo. It is possible that more than one species have been confounded under this designation, as two animals now living in the London Zoological Gardens present considerable differences of form and colour. QOne of them, from Chittagong, has been named by Sclater 2. lastotis, the Hairy-Eared Rhinoceros, but until an opportunity is afforded for anatomical ex- amination, it is difficult to pronounce upon the value of the distinction.

IIL. Atelodus. In the adults, the incisors are quite rudi- mentary or entirely wanting. Nasal bones thick, rounded and truncated in front. Well-developed anterior and pos- terior horns in close contact. Skin without any definite permanent folds.

The two well-marked existing species are peculiar to the African continent.

1. The common Two-Horned Rhinoceros, FR. bicornis, Linn., is the smaller of the two, with a pointed prehensile upper lip, and a narrow compressed deep symphysis of the

Fic. 4.—Common African Rhinoceros (Rhinoceros bicornis).

lower jaw. It ranges through the wooded and watered districts of Africa, from Abyssinia in the north to the Cape Colony, but its numbers are yearly diminishing, owing to

hk H O—

the inroads of European civilization, and especially of English sportsmen. It feeds exclusively upon leaves and branches of bushes and small trees, and chiefly frequents the sides of wood-clad rugged hills. Specimens in which the posterior horn has attained a length as great as or greater than the anterior have been separated under the name of ft. keitloa, but the characters of these appendages are too variable to found specific distinctions upon. The two- horned African rhinoceros is far more rarely seen in mena- geries in Europe than either of the three Indian species, but one has lived in the gardens of the London Zoological Society since 1868. Excellent figures from life of this and the other species are

published in the ninth volume of the "Transactions of the society, from which the accompanying woodcuts are reduced.

2. Burchell's or the Square-Mouthed Rhinoceros (2. simus), sometimes called the White Rhinoceros, though the colour (dark-slate) is not materially different from that of the last species, is the largest of the whole group, and differs from all the others in having a square truncated upper lip and a wide, shallow, spatulate symphysis to the lower jaw. In conformity with the structure of the mouth, this species lives entirely by browsing on grass, and is therefore more partial to open countries or districts where there are broad grassy valleys between the tracts of bush. It is only found in Africa south of the Zambesi, and of late years has become extremely scarce, owing to the persecutions of sportsmen; indeed, the time of its complete extinction cannot be far off. No specimen of this species has ever been brought alive to Europe. Mr F.C. Selous gives the following description of its habits from extensive personal observation :—

"The square-mouthed rhinoceros is a huge ungainly-looking beast, with a disproportionately large head, a large male standing 6 feet 6 inches at the shoulder. Like elephants and buffaloes they lie asleep during the heat of the day, and feed during the night and in the cool hours of early morning and evening. Their sight is very bad ; but they are quick of hearing, and their scent is very keen; they arc, too, often accompanied by rhinoceros birds, which, by running about their heads, flapping their wings, and screeching at the same time, frequently give them notice of the approach of danger. Whien disturbed they go off at a swift trot, which soon leaves all pursuit from a man on foot far behind ; but if chased by a horseman they break into a gallop, which they can keep up for some distance. However, although they run very swiftly, when their size and heavy build is considered, they are no match for an average good horse. They are, as a rule, very easy to shoot on horseback, as, if one gallops a little in front of aud on one side of them, they will hold their couse, and come sailing past, offering a magnificent broadside shot, while under similar circumstances a prehensile-lipped rhinoceros will usually swerve away in such a manner as only to present his hiud-quarters for a shot. When either walking or running, the square-mouthed rhinoceros holds its head very low, its nose nearly touching the ground. When a small calf

accompanies its mother, it always runs in front and she appears to guide it by holding the point of her horn upon the little animal's rump; and it is perfectly wonderful to note how in all sudden changes of pace, from a trot to a gallop or vice versa, the same position is always exactly main- tained. During the autumn and winter months (i.e., from March to August) the square-mouthed rhinoccros is usually very fat; and its meat is then inost excellent, being something like beef, but yet having a peculiar flavour of its own. The part in greatest favour among hunters is the hump, which, if cut off whole and roasted just as it is in the skin, in a hole dug in the ground, would, I think, be difficult to match either for juiciness or flavour."—Prvoe. Zool, Soc., 1881, p. 726

Extinct Species of Rhinoceros. —The family once contained many more species, which were far more widely distributed than at present. As in similar cases, our knowledge of them is as yet but fragmentary, though constantly augmenting, especially by dis- coveries made in the Tertiary deposits of North America, a region in which they all died out long ago, though, judging from the evidence at present available, this was the locality in which they first made their appearance. In the Eocene formations of the Rocky Mountains are found the remains of numerous niodifications of the primitive Perissodactyle type, from which the rhinoceroses nay have originated. In the Lower Miocene a form called Hyracodon by Leidy already presented many of the

characteristics of the family, though, especially as regards the dentition, in a very generalized condition. The next stage of specialization is represented by Accratherium, found in the Miocene of both Europe and America, which still, like the last, shows no sign of having possessed a nasal horn. It differed from the existing species also in having four toes on the anterior limb, instead of only three. At the same period forms occurred (Dicera- therium, Marsh) which show a pair of lateral tubercles on the nasal bones, apparently supporting horns side by side. These, how- ever, soon disappeared and gave way in the Old World to species with one or two horus in the median line, a stage of development which apparently was never reached in America. In the Pliocene and Pleistocene of Europe

and Asia numerous modifications of the existing types have been found. The present African two-horned type was represented in the Early Pliocene of Greece by R. pachy- grathus, the skeleton of which is described by Gaudryas intermediate between the existing R. bicornis and R. simus. As many as three species were inhabitants of the British Isles, of which the best known is the Tichorhine or Woolly Rhinoceros, R. antiquitatis of Blumenbach, nearly whole carcases of which, with the thick woolly external covering, have been discovered associated with those of the mammoth, preserved in the frozen soil of the north of Siberia, and which, in common with some other extinct species, had a solid incdian wall of bouc supporting the nasals, from which it is in- ferred that the horns were of a size and weight surpassing that of the modern species. The one-horned Indian type was well repre- sented under several modifications (R. sivalensis, paleindicus, &e.), in the Pliocene deposits of the sub-Himalayan region, and forms more allied to the African bicorn species have also been found in India. &. schleirmachert of the late European Miocenes was in some respects allied to the existing Sumatran rhinoceros, possessing incisor teeth and two horns. (We, BS)

RHODE ISLAND, one of the six New England States, and the smallest in extent of all the States, is one of the original thirteen which formed the American Union. It has an actual land area of only 1054°6 square miles, the waters of Narragansett Bay, its chief physical feature, comprising an additional area of not far from 360 square miles. It lies between 41° 18 and 42° 3' N. lat., and 71° 6' and 71° 55' W. long,, its greatest length from north to south being about 48 miles, and its greatest width from east to west about 35 miles. It is shut in on the east and north by Massachusetts, and on the west by Connecticut, while its southern shores are washed by the Atlantic Ocean. |

Physwal Characteristics—The geological formation of the western portion of the State is chiefly that of the Montalban gneiss, which characterizes a great part of southern New England (see geological sketch map of New England, in article New Hampsuirg, vol. xvii. p. 391), but under the bay and to the east of it is an extensive coal-bearing formation, from which at different times upwards of 750,000 tons of coal have been taken. The only other important deposit is one of magnetic

oxide of iron. The climate of Rhode Island, though variable, differs from that of the exposed coast of Massachusetts Bay in the absence of harassing east winds; while the proximity of the southern parts of the State (Newport and vicinity) to the Gulf Stream results in an atmosphere of unusual warmth and moisture, and at the same time comparatively equable. No great extremes, either of heat or of cold, are experienced in the State.

+ Population.—The earliest authentic estimate of population is that of 7181 in 1708. The War of Independence (1775-88) had the effect of reducing it from 59,707 in 1774 to 52,347 in 1782. The subsequent United States censuses show stcady gains, as follows :—1790, 68,825; 1800, 69,122; 1810, 77,031; 1820,

83,059 ; 1830, 97,210; 1840, 108,830; 1850, 147,545; 1860,

174,620 ; 1870, 217,353 ; 1880, 276,531 (143,501 males, 133,030 females); while a State census in 1885 (advance returns) gives 304,419. The census of 1880 showed Rhode Island to be surpassed in aggregate population by all except Colorado, Oregon, Delaware, and Nevada, but in density it was surpassed by none (254°9 per square mile, the average for the whole United States being 13°92). By the same census the number of persons of foreign birth was 73,993, or 26°8 per cent., no State cast of Lake Michigan showing

1 The town of New Shoreham, which lies on an island 10 miles from shore, is beyond this limit.

a higher percentage; of these 30,973 (over 41 per cent.) were natives of the United Kingdom or its colonies. About 100,000 of the population are Roman Catholics; of the remainder, the Baptists (who have been in Rhode Island from its earliest settle- ment) are most numerous, while the eommunicants of the Protest- ant Episcopal church, with the Congregationalists and Methodists, have also a large representation. ;

Industries.—No portion of the State can be described as excep- tionally fertile; and only 8 per cent. of the population are engaged in agriculture. The favourable sitnation of Newport and Provi- dence, at the two extremitics of Narragansett Bay, led_to the development in the last century of a flourishing trade. This was long ago greatly reduced, and the tonnage of these ports is now chiefly that of a coasting trade. With the final cheek given to foreign commeree in the war of 1812-14, manufaetures gained at once that prominence in the local industries of the State whieh they have ever since held. The census of 1880 returned the total number of persons in Rhode Island engaged in " gainful and reputable " occupations as 116,979, of whoni 66,160, or more than 55 per cent., were classed under the heading " manufactures, mechanics, and mining."! From Samuel Slater's efforts at Providence and Pawtucket Falls, in 1790-98, may in fact be dated the real development of the cotton manufacturing industry in America, Slater, who had served an apprenticeship in England with a partner of Arkwright, having then been able from memory to set up in Rhode Island the whole set of recently improved spinning machinery. In 1791 only 5858 yards of cotton cloth were made in Providence and vicinity, but in 1810 in Rhode Island 735,319 were made. Two years later, in 1812, there were fifty-three eotton mills within a radius of 30 miles of Providence, nearly three-fifths of them being in Rhode Island. The number of cotton mills in Rhode Island was 33 in 1812, 116 in 1831, and 139 in 1870. Owing to the widespread depression in business the number was greatly reduced throughout the country during the next decade, but even in 1880 the number in Rhode Island was sur- passed by that of no other State except Massachusetts. Accord- ing to the census of 1880, the amount of capital invested in the manufacture of cotton goods was $24,609,461; woollen goods $15,410,450; dyeing and finishing textiles, $6,874,254 ; foundry and machine-shop products, $6,231,707 ; worsted goods, $6,177,754 ; jewellery, $5,650,133 ; slaughtering and meat-packing, $3,876,740 ; mixed textiles, $2,718,822; rubber and elastic goods, $2,217,000. Thus Rhode Island is second to but one other State—Massa- chusetts—in its aggregate production of cotton goods; and in the total amount of capital invested in all manufactures it ranks ninth. In each of the five following industries—cotton, woollen, worsted, mixed textiles, and dyeing and finishing—it stands at the head of all the States in amount of production

per head of population. In jewellery the yearly product of a single city, Pro- vidence, exceeds that of every other city in the country ($5,444,092 in 1880). The same city ranks ninth in the value of its foundry and machine-shop products, $4,522,179; Pawtucket, closely ad- joining, adds about $1,600,000.

Wealth and Finances.—The assessed valuation of the State was—in 1850, $80,508,794; in 1860, $135,337,588 ; in 1870, $296, 965,646 ; and in 1880, upwards of $420,000,000—a gain of 500 per cent. in thirty years. In aggregate valuation it was sur- passed in 1880 by twenty-four States (its population in the same year being exceeded by that of thirty-two States), but in valuation per head it ranked third ($1518°82 in 1880). Notwithstanding the large foreign-born population, the number of persons classed as paupers is very small,—only 553 in 1880, as compared with 15,217 in New York. In 1884 thirty-eight savings banks contained deposits to the amount of $51,079,160°66, with 115,752 depositors (more than 40 per cent. of the entire population). The number of other banks in the State was, in 1883, scventy-three, with a capital of $22,330,579°00. The State tax in 1880 amounted to $383,489 °23 ; and in the same year the rate of taxation per head for all purposes ($9°74) was exceeded only by that of Massachusetts, New York, and California. The debt of the State, held in bonds issued during the war of 1861-65, has for the last few years been steadily diminishing. In 1880 it stood at $2,534,500, and in 1884 at $1,372,000.

Cities and Towns.—The five counties into which Rhode Island is divided contain in all thirty-six towns and cities, of which six lie ou the narrow strip bordering the eastern shore of the bay, five ou islands in the bay and ocean, and the remaining twenty-five on the mainland, to the west and north-west of the bay. By the State census of 1885 six cities and towns had a population exceed- ing 10,000 :—Providence, 117,607 ; Pawtucket, 22,873 ; Newport, 20,339 ; Lincoln, 17,262 ; Woonsocket, 16,005 ; Warwick, 13,281. Only two of these places, Providence and Newport, have hitherto been organized as cities; but a third, Pawtucket (the largest in the country under a town government), is also now (1885) about to be organized under a city eharter. The quaint old city of Newport, situated at the southern end of the island (Rhode

1 Mining has long been unrepresented among Rhode Island industries.

ls ta N D

Island) from which the State receives its name," has for many years been nearly stationary as regards the development of its population and industries, but is well known on both sides of the Atlantic for its social attractions. In 1880 the "urban" population of Rhode Island constituted 77 per cent. of the total—a percentage surpassed only in the District of Columbia. Yet the growth of manufaeturing industries in the State has resulted in building up compact settlements (in not a_ few instances almost continuous), with little regard to town lines and boundaries. On the Blackstone river are sixteen of these "villages" situated within five different towns; on the Woonas- quatueket river twelve, in four cities and towns; and on the Pawtuxet river and its branches thirty-two, in five towns. In 1875 there were 186 " villages."

Education.—It was not until 1828 that the present public school system was established ; but, owing largely to the excep- tional organizing ability of the first commissioner of public schools, Henry Barnard, a most efficient system was securely built up. From various causes (including the presence of a large foreign- born element), illiteracy is a serious problem in this State, —the percentage unable to write (11°2) being in 1880 higher than in any other Northern State. Imperfect attendance is also a serions difficulty in the manufacturing villages. While the number of children registered by the school census of 1880 as of " school age" was 52,273, only 338,504 of these were actually enrolled as pupils in the public schools. Even after counting those who attend private and parochial schools, those "not attending any school" comprise so large a number as 12,279. Under the operation of a newly enacted compulsory law encouraging progress has been made. The public school funds in 1884 amounted to $659,585 °50. Educa- tional institutions, other than public, include Brown University, the Friends' School, and various others at Providence. Brown University was founded in 1764, under the name of Rhode Island College, and was the seventh college established in America.

Libraries, —The Redwood Library, at Newport, still in existence, incorporated in 1747, was the fourth public library founded in New England. The Providence Library was founded only a few years later, and is still perpetuated in the Providence Atheneum, an – admirably conducted shareholders' library (43,656 volumes in 1884). The Brown University Library, founded 1772, had in June 1885 more than 62,000 volumes, including several spccial collec- tions of great rarity and value. There were, moreover, in the same year thirty-two "public libraries" in the State (free to all readers), with a total of about 100,000 volumes. The largest of these (31,650 volumes in 1885) is the Providence Publie Library.

History and Constitution. —The planting of the three scattered and independent settlements (Providence, 1636; Portsmouth, 1638 ; Newport, 1639) by Roger Williams and others whose views of chnrch polity and doctrine had been found unpalatable to the Massaehusetts Puritans, was not in the outset a movement for the establishment of a colony. The need of mutual protection, however, led to their combination; and the first general union of these three towns (together with a fourth, Warwick), was secured in 1647, under the charter of March 14, 1643-44. The union effected by this instrument was of the very loosest description, but under the pressure of causes which threatened the very existence of the colony a new and much more comprehensive charter was obtained in 1668. This extraordinarily liberal instrument consti- tuted the fundamental law of Rhode Island for the next hundred and eighty years, through a succession of remarkable vicissitudes. The charters of Massachusetts and other American colonies were withdrawn in 1686, but the efforts of the royal agent were frus- trated in Connecticut and Rhode Island; and in this colony the government was siniply committed temporarily to the separate towns which had constituted the colony, the charter government being peacefully resumed three years later, in 1689. Rhode Island was hardly free, during the next seventy years, from some form of conflict with the mother country over the question of charter rights; and in thie steps which served to precipitate the War of Independence (1775-83), as well as in the war itself, it was among the foremost. In the military operations of this war Nathanael Greene, a Rhode Island officer, ranks easily second to Washington in generalship. Reluctant as Rhode Island was to

acknowledge other authority than that of its own colonial charter, even after the close of the war, it did not accede to the constitution of the United States until June 1790, more than a twelvemonth after the new government had gone into operation under Washington as president. Nor did iteven then follow the example of the other States in framing a State constitution for the govern- ment of its local affairs, but retained its colonial charter of 1663 until almost the middle of the present century. In 1841 and 1842 the dissatisfaction with this mode of government culminated in a series of revolutionary movements; and a convention called by citizens of the State adopted what was known as the " people's

2 The official name of the State is "the State of Rhode Island and Providence

- Plantations."

constitution," under whose provisions it was elaimed that Thomas Wilson Dorr was chosen governor. Later in the year 1842 a eonvention ealled by the regularly constituted authorities adopted the present constitution, under whose provisions the State government was organized in 1843. The governor (chosen annu- ally) has no veto power. The legislative body, known as the General Assembly, comprises a senate and a house of representa- tives, each one of the thirty-six cities and towns ehoosing a single senator. The General Assembly begins its annual sessions in May at Newport, adjourning, after a few days, fora much more extended session at Providence. beginning in the following January. The judicial body consists of one supreme eourt, with subordinate courts for the respeetive counties, the justices being chosen by vote of the General Assembly. The suffrage is a lHmited one, a property qualification being required in certain instanecs, The State is represented in the national Congress by two senators and two representatives. In the quadrennial election of president, Rhode Island has four votes in the "electoral eollege." In the Civil War of 1861-65 Rhode Island took an active part, furnishing for

the defence of the Union 24,042 men. (W. E, F.)

RHODES, an island in the Aigean Sea, belonging to the Turkish empire, lying off the south-west coast of Asia

Minor, between 35° 52’ and 36° 28’ N. lat. and 27° 40’ and 28° 15’ KE. long., about 10 miles south of Cape Alepo. Its length is about 45 miles from north-east to south-west, its greatest breadth 22 miles, and its area nearly 424 square miles.

The island is diversified in its surface, and is traversed from north to south by an elevated mountain range, the highest point of which, named in ancient times Atabyris or Atabyrium, and still called Atairo, rises to an elevation of 4560 feet. It commands a view of the elevated coast of Asia Minor towards the north, and of the Archipelago, studded with its numerous islands, on the north-west ; while on the south-west is seen Mount Ida in Crete, often veiled in clouds, and on the south and south-east the vast expanse of waters which wash the African shore. The rest of the island is occupied in great part by ranges of moderately elevated hills, on which are found extensive woods of ancient pines, planted by the hand of nature. These forests were formerly very thick, but they are now greatly thinned by the Turks, who cut them down and take no care to plant others in their place. Beneath these hills the surface of the island falls lower, and several hills in the form of amphitheatres extend their bases as far as the sea, —

Rhodes was famed in ancient times for its delightful climate, and it still maintains its former reputation. The air is pure and salubrious, and it is said that there is hardly a day throughout the year in which the sun is not visible. The winds are liable to little variation ; they blow from the west, often with great violence, for nine months in the year, and at other times from the north ; and they moderate the summer heats, which are chiefly felt during the months of July and August, when the hot winds blow from the coast of Anatolia.

Rhodes, in addition to its fine climate, is blessed with a fertile soil, and produces a variety of the finest fruits and vegetables. Numerous streams and rivulets, which take their rise in the central range, water the surround- ing plains and valleys of the island. The inhabitants have a

great taste for gardens; and around the villages are extensive cultivated fields and orchards, containing

§, pomegranate, and orange trees. On the sloping hills carob-trees, and others both useful and agreeable, still grow abundantly ; the vine also holds its place, and produces a species of wine which was highly valued by the ancients, though it seems to have degenerated greatly in modern times. The valleys afford rich pastures, and the plains produce every species of grain; the wheat is of an excel- lent quality ; and, but for the extortions of its barbarian rulers, the island might be the seat of agriculture as well as comnierce, and might export large quantities of corn,

The commerce of the island has been of late years in- creasing at a rapid rate. Many British manufactures are imported by indirect routes, through Smyrna, Constanti- nople, Beyrout, and other places. Cotton stufis, calicoes, and grey linen are among the goods most in demand. It is not so much, however, the peasantry of the island who use these British goods, for they prefer their own home- made stuffs; but they are exported to the neighbouring coast of Anatolia, between Budrum and Adalia, and thence conveyed into the interior. The expansion of the trade has been very much owing to the establishment of steam navigation direct to the island, which is now visited regu- larly by French and Austrian steamers, as well as by some from England to Smyrna.

The only town of any importance in the island is the capital, Rhodes, which stands at the north-east extremity. It rises in an imposing manner from the sea, on a gentle slope in the form of an amphitheatre. It is surrounded with walls and towers, and defended by a large moated castle of great strength. These fortifications are all the work of the Knights of St John. Above them rise the domes and minarets of the mosques, and the tufted stems of the palm trees, which adorn this like most other Oriental towns. The interior of the city does not correspond to its outward appearance. No trace exists of the splendour of the ancient city, with its regular streets, well-ordered plan, and numerous public buildings. The modern city of Rhodes is in general the work of the Knights of St J ohn, and has altogether a medixval aspect, the strects being for the most part

narrow and winding, though the houses, as well as the public edifices, are in general solidly built of stone, and present at almost every step some memorial of the past in the escutcheons and coats of arms with which they are adorned. The picturesque fortifications also by which the city is surrounded remain almost unaltered as they were in the 15th century, and it has been remarked by numerous travellers that scarcely any city of western Europe has preserved its medieval aspect so unchanged as this last refuge of European civilization in the East. The principal buildings which remain are the church of St John, which is become the principal mosque ; the hospital, whence the charity of the knights was liberally dispensed to the faithful from all quarters of the world, and which has been transformed into public granaries ; the palace of the grand master, now the resi- dence of the pasha; and the senate-house, which still contains some marbles and ancient columns. Of the streets, the best and widest is a long street which is still called the Street of the Knights. It is perfectly straight, and formed of old houses, on which remain the armorial bearings of the members of the order. On some of these buildings are still seen the arms of the popes and of some of the royal and noble houses of Europe.

The only relics of classical antiquity are the numerous inscribed altars and bases of statues, as well as architectural fragments, which are found scattered in the courtyards and gardens of the houses in the extensive suburbs which now surround the town, the whole of which were comprised within the limits of the ancient city. The foundations also of the moles that separate the harbours are of Hellenic work, though the existing moles were erected by the Knights of St John.

Rhodes has at present two harbours. The least of these lies towards the east, and its entrance is obstructed by a barrier of rocks, so as to admit the entrance of but one ship atatime. It is sufficiently sheltered, but by the negligence of the Turks the sand has been suffered to accumulate until it has been gradually almost choked up. The other harbour is larger, and also in a bad condition ; here frigates of thirty guns may anchor, and are sheltered from the west

winds, though they are exposed to the north and north-east winds. The two harbours are separated by a mole which runs obliquely into the sea. At the eastern entrance is the fort of St Elmo, with a lighthouse; but the light is very feeble, and visible only a few miles.

History.—The numerous poetical legends current among the Greeks with respeet to Rhodes bear testimony to the importanee whieh it attained in very early times. Of these the most familiar is that celebrated by Pindar in one of the most beautiful of his odes (Ol. vii.), according to which the island was raised from the depths of the sea by Helios, the god of the sun, who always eon- tinued to be its tutclary deity, and whose image is found upon all its coins. The poet as usual derives its name from a nymph Rhoda, but there is no doubt that it was really derived from

dor, a rosc, the symbol that invariably accompanies the head of

Helios on its coins. Another set of legends connected it with the Telchines, a mythical people celebrated for their skill as workers in bronze and other metals, while another version of the same tale represented these Telehines as themselves expelled by the Heliade, who became the first introducers of civilization. It is not improbable that both traditions had some reference to the Pheenicians, who may well have been the first to establish settle- ments in an island that lay so directly on their way to the A'gean. But the first reeord that can claim anything like an_ historical eharaeter is that of the occupation of the island by a body of Doric

emigrants from the Peloponnesus, who founded the three eities of

Lindus, Ialysus, and Camirus, which long continued to divide the island among them, and together with those of Cos, Cnidus, and Halicarnassus formed the Doric Hexapolis or league of six cities. These cities, like the more important Ionie confederacy, had a common sanctuary on the Triopian Promontory near Cuidus, but they do not appear to have formed a political union, though the distinct predominance in them all of the Doric element would naturally lead to a community of interest as well as of feeling. Nothing is known of their history for several centuries, during which they appear to have developed a remarkable amount of mari- time power and enterprise, and became the founders of numerous colonies in

distant parts of the Mediterranean, including Gela in Sieily, as well as Rhoda on the coast of Spain, and Salapia on the Adriatic coast of Italy. Towards the east also they were the recog- nized founders of Corydalla and Phaselis in Lycia and Soli in Cilicia.

Notwithstanding these evidences of early prosperity and power, we meet with very scanty notices of the Rhodian cities in the first period of Greek history. After the Persian War they appear to have passed into the condition of tributaries to Athens, and were compelled as sueh to join in the Athenian expedition to Sicily, but in 412 n.c. they deserted the Athenian cause and joined that of the Pelopormesians. It was shortly after this (in 408) that they adopted a resolution which became the foundation of their future greatness, the inhabitants of the three cities having agreed to abaudon their homes and found a new city on the site which has ever since con- tinued to be the capital of the island.

The architect was Hippodamus of Miletus, who had planned and embellished the Pireus at Athens ; and the new city soon became one of the most splendid in the world, adorned with magnificent buildings and exquisite works of art. When Conon and his fleet restored the Athenian power by his victory off Cnidus (394 B.c.), Rhodes again embraced the victorious cause ; but her fidelity during the subsequent contests was not very great. Sparta afterwards reeeived the allegiance of the island; and in the Social War (3857-5) it joined the alliance against Athens, and, with the assistance of the Carian monarch Mausolus, succeeded in achieving independ- ence. But, finding the power of that king dangerous to their liberties, the Rhodians once more sued for the Athenian protection, which they obtained through the eloquence of Demosthenes. But neither they nor the rest of Greece could resist the overwhelming power of Macedonia, though Memnon, a Rhodian, was one of the ablest generals under the last Persian king, and attempted to check the carcer of Alexander. Rhodes received a Macedonian garrison ; but it was expelled after the death of Alexander, and a resolute resistance was begun to the Maccdonian power. This formed one of the most illustrious periods in the history of the island. The capital was besieged in 304 B.c. by Demetrius Poliorcetes, with a large army and a eomplete train of the artillery of that age. Although a breach was effeeted in the walls, the desperate valour of the

defenders foiled all the attempts to carry it by assault, and cost the besiegers the lives of some of their generals and a great number of their soldiers. This heroic resistance obtained for the Rhodians great renown ; and the period which followed was one of the most brilliant in the history of the city. They enjoyed the friendship of Rome, and obtained possession of some of the adjacent islands and coasts, including a eonsiderable distriet on the main- land which was known as the Rhodian Perea. For arts as well as arms the island was then renowned ; the Rhodian laws, especially on maritime affairs, were reckoned the best in antiquity, and

many of them adopted into the Roman code. ischines, who had contended in eloquence with the greatest of orators, opened a school of rhetoric here, which became the parent of a new school of oratory, regarded by the ancients as possessing a Greeco-Asiatic character. Protogenes embellished the city with his paintings, and Chares of Lindus with the celebrated colossal statue. The Colossus, erroneously supposed to have oecupied a position striding over the entrance to the harbour, stood for fifty-six years, till an earthquake prostrated it in 224 n.c. Its enormous fragments con- tinued to excite wonder in the time of Pliny, and were not removed till 656 A.p., when Rhodes was conquered by the Saracens, who sold the remains for old metal to a dealer who employed nine hundred camels to carry them away. Besides this not less than three thousand statues are said to have adorncd the eity, which was said by Strabo to surpass all others in beauty and ornainental character. Being the sovereigns of the seas, the Rhodians by thcir fleets ren- dered good service to Rome, with whom they were in alliance, and retained their independence for a long time. The severest blow they suffered was from Cassius in 42 B.c., who plundered the island even to the bare temple walls in the nominal cause of liberty, for it had embraced the side of Cwsar. . Under the empire the liberty of Rhodes was repeatedly permitted and withdrawn according to the capriee of the sovereign ; but ultimately it became a part of the Roman empire, and, after its partition, of the Eastern, till 616 A.D., When Chosroes the Persian obtained possession of it for a short time. It was subsequently conquered by Moawiyah, one of Othman's generals ; but, recovered by the Byzantine empire, it proved the

last of their Asiatic possessions that succumbed to the infidel. In 1808 it was granted by the emperor Emmanuel to the Knights of St John, who soon after resisted a siege by the sultan Othman. They strengthened the natural advantages of the place by skilful fortifications, and by discipline and equipments made themselves nearly a match for the superior numbers of the Turks. Nor did the knights restrict their efforts to self-defence ; they conquered Smyrna, and established an outpost there in 1344, and at a later period formed a league against the common enemy of Christendom. But in 1401 Smyrna was takeu by Timur; in 1480 Mohammed II. besieged Rhodes with a vast train of artillery ; and, though then averted by the courage of its few defenders, the downfall of the place eould not long be delayed. The last and most famous siege of Rhodes took place in 1522, when, after a desperate resistance for four months to the overwhelming numbers of the Ottomans, the knights, being left unassisted by all the European powers, capitulated on honourable terms, and evacuated the island. On the first day of 1528 Villiers de Lisle Adam, the grandmaster, embarked the last of the small band, carrying away all the property of the order, and leaving the ruins of their city to the enemy. The knights subsequently settled in Malta, where they also gained great renown. Rhodes has since been in the pos- session of the Turks, and is now the residence of the pasha of the Archipelago. The sites of Lindus, Ialysus, and Camirus, which in the most ancient times were the principal towns of the island, are clearly marked, and the first of the three is still oeeupied by a small town with a medieval castle, both of them dating from the time of the knights, though the castle occupies the site of the ancient acropolis, of the walls of which considerable remains are still visible. There are no ruins of any importance on the site of either Ialysus or Camirus, but excavations at the latter place have produced valuable and interesting results in the way of ancicnt vases and other antiquitics, which are now in the British Museum.

The population of the island is estimated at about 27,000, of whom 6000 are Turks, 3000 Jews, and the remainder Greeks. Of these nearly 20,000 are contained in the city and its suburbs ; the rest of the island is very thinly peopled, though numerous small villages are scattered over its whole extent.

A large mass of matter relating to the ancient history and institutions of Rhodes are collected by Meursius in his dissertation (Opera, vol. iii.); the present eon- dition of the island, and the objects of interest still visible there, are fully deseribed by Ross (Reisen auf den Griechischen Inseln, vol. iii., Stuttgart, 1840) and Newton (Travels and Discoveries in the Levant, vol. i., London, 1865). The inscriptions that have becn discovered there, which are very numerous, have un- fortunately been published in a very irregular manner, and are seattered through a number of works, many of them not easy of access. By far the most com- plete collection of all that relates to the ancient condition of the island, as well as its history and antiquities, will be found ina treatise by Mr C. Torr, entitled

Rhodes in Ancient Times, which is passing through the Cambridge University Press while this artiele has been in preparation. (E. H. B.

RHODIUM. See PLatinum.

RHODODENDRON. Classical writers, such as Dios- corides and Pliny, seem, from what can be ascertained, to have called the oleander (Werium Oleander) by this name, but in modern usage it is applied to a large genus of shrubs and trees belonging to the order of heaths (Ericacee). No adequate distinction can be drawn be- tween this genus and Azalea,—the proposed marks of dis- tinction, however applicable in particular cases, breaking down when tested more generally. The rhododendrons,

——

then, are trees or shrubs, never herbs, with simple, ever- green or deciduous leaves, and flowers in terminal clusters surrounded in the bud by bud-scales but not as a rule by true leaves. The flowers are remarkable for the frequent absence or reduced condition of the calyx. The funnel- or bell-shaped corolla, on the other hand, with its five or more lobes, is usually conspicuous, and in some species so much so as to render these plants greatly prized in gardens. The free stamens are usually ten, with slender filaments and anthers opening by pores at the top. The ovary is five-or many-celled, ripening into a long woody pod which splits from top

to bottom by a number of valves, which break away from the central placenta and liberate a large number of small bran-like seeds provided with a mem- branous wing-like appendage at each end. The spccies are for the most part natives of the mountainous regions of the northern hemisphere, extending as far south as the Malay Archipelago and New Guinea, but not hitherto found in South America or Australia. None are natives of Britain. They vary greatly in stature, some of the alpine species being mere pigmies with minute leaves and tiny blossonis, while some of the Himalayan species are moderate sized trees with superb flowers. Some are epi- phytal, growing on the branches of other trees, but not deriving their sustenance from them. The varieties grown in gardens are mostly derived from the Pontic species (JR. ponticum) and the Virginian 2. catawbiense. These are mostly hardy in England. The common Pontic variety is excellent for game-covert from its hardiness, the shelter it affords, and the fact that hares and rabbits rarely eat it. Variety of colour has been infused by crossing or hybridiz- ing the species first-named, or their derivatives, with some of the more gorgeously-coloured Indian varieties. In many instances this has been done without sacrifice of hardihood, but even where the infusion of Indian blood has brought about a tenderness of constitution the magnificence of the bloom amply repays the very slight shelter which is re- quisite in winter.

What arc termed greenhouse rliododendrons are derivatives from certain Malayan and Javanese species, and are consequently much more tender. They are characterized by the possession of a cylindrical (not funnel-shaped) flower-tube and other marks of dis- tinction. Azaleas now referred to Rhododendron are derived from Chinese and Japanese specics chiefly. The "Indian" azaleas, so- called, have nearly evergreen foliage like a rhododendron, but with stiff hairs on the under surface of the leaf, and the flower-buds comprise leaves and not bud-seales only as in true rhododendrons. Rhododendron (Azalea) indicwm is truly a native of China and Japan, but not of India. What are called in gardens Ghent azalcas are hardy varieties with deciduous gummy foliage and tufts of fragrant, brilliantly-coloured flowers. These are derivatives from A. calendulacea, A. viscosa, and other north-east American species. Another group of garden azaleas are derivatives from Rhododendron (Azalea) sinense (of which BR. mollis is a form). These are scarcely less hardy

than the preceding. Azalea amena of gardens is a dwarf form of #. indicwm, remarkable for having "hose in hose" flowers, a state of things brought about by the fact that the calyx in this variety becomes petaloid like the corolla. The foliage of rhododendrons contains much tannin, and has been used medicin- ally. Whether the honey mentioned by Xenophon as poisonous was really derived from plants of this genus as alleged is still an open question.

RHONE (Fr. Rhéne), the largest European river flow- ing directly into the Mediterranean, rises in the Swiss canton of Valais, passes through the Lake of Geneva, strikes

across the line of the Jura, and turning southward through

France falls into the Gulf of Lyons. It has a length of 447 miles according to Strelbitzky (505 according to other authorities), and its principal affluent the Sadne has a length of 268 miles above the confluence, which is 200 miles inland. The drainage area of the whole river- system is 38,000 square miles, and the mean discharge at the river mouth is 60,000 cubic feet per second, the maxi- mum being 428,840 cubic feet and the minimum 19,426.

The natives give the name of source of the Rhone (locally Rotten or Rodden) to three warm springs that rise in a circular stone basin near the Hétel du Glacier du Rhéne ; but the real beginning of the river is the well-known glacier. According to M. Gosset,! a Swiss engineer, the Rhone glacier, which at present measures about 9 miles in length by about 3200 feet in width, is proved to have retreated 3028 feet between 1856 and 1881 and sunk upwards of 300 feet. In geological time the Rhone glacier filled the whole valley to a depth of 4800 feet and spread out over the Swiss plain now partly occupied by the Lake of Geneva. Obstructed by the Jura, it divided into two branches, one of which found its way (as the river does still) by the "écluse" between the Jura and the western Alps to deposit its erratic blocks on the heights in the neighbourhood of Lyons, while the other branch, bending northward, widened out so as to distribute its burden at Freiburg, Bern, Soleure, and even Aarburg.?

In the first 30 miles from the foot of the glacier (5751 feet) to Brieg (2214 feet) the stream has a fall of 1 in 46; in the next 70 miles to Villeneuve it descends at the rate of 1 in 378.3 It passes between the Bernese and the Pennine Alps, receiving the tribute of 260 glaciers, of which the Aletsch is one of the most important. At Martigny, where it is joined by the Drance (a glacier-fed stream memorable for the terrible inundation of 1818 caused by the sudden bursting of the ice barrier by which its waters had been dainmed back), the Rhone turns suddenly north- west, and below the defile of St Maurice (about 90 miles from its source) it enters the wide alluvial plain formerly occupied by the south-eastern arm of the Lake of Genrva (7.v.), Which has now retreated about 12 miles northward. The limpid character of the Rhone water as it issues from the south-western end of this great settling vat has become a commonplace of geographical illustration, and equally well-known is the contrast afforded at the confluence about a mile below Geneva between the current of the main river and that of its turbulent affluent the Arve, which has found no resting place in its 2000 feet descent by a course of 60 miles from the valley of Chamouni and the glaciers of Mont Blanc. It is the Arve that is mainly responsible for the dangerous inundations of the Rhone valley farther down ; while its volume is sometimes not more than 1235 per second,‘ at other times it pours into the Rhone (whose maximum at this point is 2000 cubic feet) no less than 24,700 cubic feet, sometimes causing the river to flow backwards towards the Lake of Geneva.> To obviate the evils of their irregularity it has been proposed to divert the lower course of the Arve into the Lake of Geneva. The annual maximum of the Rhone at Geneva, according to observations between 1806 and 1880, occurs on the 7th of August. Since 1862 there has been an increase of high levels owing to the dyking of the river and the destruction of forests (see Plantamour, “Obs. limnimétriques,” in Mém. de la Soc. de Genéve, 1880). The defile or “écluse” by which the Rhone passes between Grand Credo, the terminal bastion of the Jura, and Mont Vouache, one of the Alps of Savoy, is com- manded by one of the great frontier fortresses of France,

1 A sketch of M. Gosset’s remarkable labours is given in the Alpine Journal, 1878-80.

? See Falsan and Chantre, Monographie géologique des anciens glaciers et du terrain erratique de la partie moyenne du bassin du Rhé6ne, 1880. See also the map illustrating Auguste Jaccard's paper in Bull. de la Soc. Vaudoise, Feb. 1885.

3 A large-scale profile of the upper Rhone accompanies Gerlach's paper " Die Penninischen Alpen" in dfém. de la Soc. Helv., 1869.

4 Professors Paul Chaix and Plantamour, on one occasion in March, found the volume of the Arve as lowas 812 cubic feet per second, and that of the Rhone 1612.

> See the. annual Observations hydrométriques suisses sur le bassin du Rhéne issued by the Bureau fédéral des travaux publics.

Fort de |'Ecluse. About 5} miles farther down occurs the famous Perte du Rhone, a partially subterranean passage,

now considerably modified by blasting.

"The rocks forming the funnel come so close at one place that there is only a distance of about two feet from bank to bank, and a man of moderate height could stand with one foot on the Freneh

side and the other on the Savoy side and see between the beautiful river trembling as it were with rage and hastening to escape from the defile through which it is doomed to pass. A little way farther down the river has hollowed outa passage about 30 feet wide, which retains this width fora depth of from 30 to 85 feet, when it con- tracts considerably. At this depth a stratum of harder rock has resisted the action of the water, which, however, has scooped out beneath it almost as much as above it. Along each side of the ravine the harder rock projects for eight or ten feet like a cornice. At first the water is seen through the opening down the middle ; but farther on great masses of rock from the walls of the ravine lave fallen down, and, resting on the double cornice, conceal the river for a distance of some 60 paces."?

During the summer floods the water filled the ravine far above the level of the fallen blocks, and the Perte du Rhéne was no longer visible.2 The rocks through which the "perte" is cut belong to the Urgonian sub-division of the Cretaceous system,—the stratum which has been hollowed out being described as calcaire gris. Just below the ravine the Rhone is joined by the Valserine, whith a little above Bellegarde passes through a " perte" of a similar character. Since 1871 the motive power of the main river has been utilized for the industries of Belle- garde; a large tunnel 20 feet high and more than half a kilometre long brings the water from the south side of the perte to turbine wheels placed in the bed of the Valserine, and wire ropes transmit the power to the Bellegarde workshops on the plateau 400 feet above.' Below Belle- garde the river is deflected southwards by the western chain of the Jura. It receives from the left the Usses, the Fiar (which drains the lake of Annecy), and the emissary of the Lake of Bourget, the largest of the purely French lakes, and then at the junction of the Guiers (from the Grande Chartreuse) it turns north-west round the southern end of the Jura. The Ain (118 miles long), which joins it from the right, is navigable in the direction of the current, and in its upper waters has a "perte" of some interest. Farther down the main river meanders for a time with shifting channels in a bed about two miles broad, but it. gathers into a single stream before its junction with the Sadne. This important confluent (the ancient Arar, which according to Cesar flows "incredibili lenitate") has its source at Vioménil in the Vosges

1300 feet above the sea, and has been joined by the Doubs, which, rising in the district. between the Jura and the Vosges, is famous for the beauty of its upper gorges and for the waterfall (70 feet) known as the Saut du Doubs.4 Southwards from Lyons, where it is 530 feet above the sea, the united river continues to be still the "arrowy Rhone"; in the 61 miles from the Sadne mouth to the Isére it falls 180 feet, in the 18 from the Isére to the Drome 56 feet, in the 38 from the Drome to the Ardéche 164, and in the 34 from the Ardéche to the Durance 883. Those affluents, all except the last from the Savoy and Maritime Alps, are in general of little importance, but at times become formidable torrents. The same is true of the much shorter streams which bring down the waters from the eastern slopes of the Cevennes. During the inundation of the 10th September 1857, which has been frequently exceeded, the three streams the Doux,

1 De Saussure, Voyage dans les Alpes (1780-1796), ii. 90 sq.

2 See the elaborate papers, with maps and sections, by Renevier in AMém. dela Soc. Helvétique, 1855 (" Mém. Geol. sur la Perte du Rhéne et et ae ») and in Bull. de la Soe. Géologique, 1874-5, 3d ser. vol. iii.

3 See Reclus, Vouv. Geogr. Univ., "La France," p. 215.

4 See "La Saut du Doubs," in Tour du Monde, 1880.

the Erieux, and the Ardéche poured into the Rlrone 49,000 cubic feet per second. At Fourques d'Arles, 25 miles from the sea, the river begins to forin its delta, breaking up into two main branches, the Grand Rhone passing from Arles south-east towards the Gulf of Fos, and the Petit Rhéne south-west towards the Little Cam- argue. With all its rapidity of current and mass of waters it is not able to keep a clear passage to the sea through its own alluvium, which, according to M. Reclus's estimate, has since the Gallo-Roman period added from 75 to 100

square miles to the area of its delta.

From the time that Marius caused his soldiers to excavate the Fosse Marianse which have left the name of Fos to the bay already mentioned the endeavour to maintain a navigable channel inland from the sea has perplexed successive generations. Vauban himsclf declared " Les embouchures du Rhéne sont incorrigibles." The method of contracting and embanking a principal channel right out to sea failed, either because the embankments were not carried out far enough, or more probably because the tides of the Mediterranean are not sufficiently strong to aid in removing the alluvium. A canal constructed in 1802-1832 from Arles to Bouc (on the east side of the Gulf of Fos) proved too shallow for the new steam traffic. At length in 1863 a scheme brought forward by Hippolyte Peut in 1846 was adopted for the making of a canal, 11,480 feet long, 210 fect wide and 19} fect deep at low tide, from Tour St Louis on the left bank of the Grand Rhone to the Anse de Repos in the Gulf of Fos. The canal was completed in 1871, and the quays of the port of St Louis by the close of 1878, at a cost of 26,000,000 francs. Hostile critics main- tain that it will be possible to keep this channel open at the seaward end only by continual and costly dredging, but hitherto their fears seem exaggerated. The new port has 'been very success- ful, 1261 vessels (318,745 tons) entering in 1881 and 2317 vessels (448,757 tons) in 1882. The regulation of the river itself is still a problem. 'The rapidity of the current from Lyons downwards, the extremely shifting character of the channel, and the varia- tions that take place in the volume of water are the great obstacles to be overcome. Two months of the year are lost for navigation through floods or lack of water or fogs orice. At present (1885) a scheme combining the two systems of regularization and canaliza- tion is being carried out for the purpose of securing everywhere at low water a depth of 5 feet 3 inches.

In the beginning of the preseut century even passenger boats used to be hauled up the river by towing ropes, and when steam was introduced it was found that the vessels had to be specially constructed to make head against the current. The laying of a continuous chain all the way from Lyons to Arles is impracticable through the shifting character of the bed; but several methods have been adopted to overcome the difficulties of the ascent. Thus some boats advance by means of long jointed levers which catch into the ground. Or a stcel wire cable with one of its ends fixed at a

given spot is unwound asa steam tug descends the stream and then the tug with its convoy of boats makes its way up again by simply winding in. Or two tugs are employed, the first going in advance of the other so far that the cable which it pays out takes a sufficient hold of the bottom to enable the second to haul by it. Or, lastly, Dupuy de Lome's system is adopted, by which the boat grips the river bottom by means of two continuous chains perpetually sunk in front and emerging behind. The Saéne is much more easily dealt with than the Rhone. It is navigable as far up as Port-sur-Sadne, and a system of movable dams and sluices has been established to secure a depth of 6 to 7 feet at low water.

The basin of the Rhone communicates with the Loire by the Canal du Centre (joining the Sadne at Chalons), with the Seine by the Burgundy Canal (joining the Saéne at St Jean de Losne), with the Rhine by a canal (1783-1834) which passes from the Sadne at Saint Symphorien to the Doubs, and finally ends at Strasburg, and with the Meuse and the Belgian system by a canal (Canal de 1'Est)

constructed since 1875 from the Saéne to the Moselle.

See Boissel, Voy. pitt. et navigation exécutée sur une partie du Rhone reputée non-navigable, 1795, and works on the river by Hippolyte Peut (1846), Surell (1847), Desjardins (1866), Adrian German (1872), and De la Rochette. Also Lentheric, Les villes mortes du Golfe de Lyon, 1875, and a paper in Mev. des Deux Mondes, 1880; Blerzy, Torrents, fleuves, et canausx de la France, 1878. (H. A.W.)

RHONE, a department of south-eastern France, deriv- ing its name from the great river on which Lyons, its chief town, is situated, was formed in 1793 from the eastern por- tion of the department Rhéne-et-Loire, comprising parts of Lyonnais and Beaujolais. It is bounded on the N. by Sadne-et-Loire, on the E. by Ain and by Isére, on the 8. and W. by Loire, and lies between 45° 27' and 46° 18' N. lat. and 4° 15' and 4° 53' E.long. The Sadne and the Rhone, each for a distance of 26 miles, form its natural

boundary on the east. The department . belongs almost

entirely to the basin of the Rhone, to which it sends its

waters by the Sadne and its tributary the Azergues, and by the Gier. The watershed between the Rhone and the Loire rises to the west of the department, and from north to south forms four successive groups—the Beaujolais Mountains, the highest peak of which is 3320 feet ; the Tarare group ; the Lyonnais Mountains (nearly 3000 feet) ; and Mont Pilat, the highest peak of which belongs to the department of Loire. The lowest point of the department, where it is left by the Rhone, is 460 feet above the level of the sea. The meteorological conditions vary greatly with the elevation and exposure. Snow sometimes lies in the mountains from November to April, whilst at Lyons and in the valleys the mean temperature in winter is 36° Fahr., and in summer 70°, the annual mean being 53°. The average rainfall is somewhat higher than is general over France owing to the amount of the precipitation on the hilly region.

Of a total arca of 689,545 acres, 286,000 are arable, 120,000 are pasture meadow land, 79,000 under vines, 79,000 wood, and 66,000 moorland. From 1874 to 1883 the average annual harvests yielded 253,869 quarters of wheat, 7509 of meslin, 114,468 of rye, 3035 of barley, and 98,808 of oats. In 1883 there were pro- duced 5,390,000 bushels of potatocs, 106,650 bushels of buck- wheat, 41,320 tons of beetroot, 12 of hemp seed, and 838 of hemp. Between 1874 and 1883 the average annual yield of the vines was 16,533,956 gallons of wine; in 1883 it was only 11,918,084. In 1881 the live stock numbered 12,350 horses, 2000 asses, 600 mules, 9000 oxen or bulls, 65,000 cows, 12,500 calves, 49,000 sheep (pro- ducing 110 tons of wool), 16,000 pigs, 36,000 goats, 8000 bec- hives (producing 48 tons of honey and 16 tons of wax); 78 cwts. of cocoons were produced in 1882, while in 1883 there were only 47 ewts. The soil of the department is for the most part stony and only moderately fertile. Fruit trees, such as peaches, apricots, walnuts, and chestnuts, grow well, but the wood in general is little more than copse and brushwood. The wealth of the department is mainly derived from its industries. Its transactions with the Bank of France at Lyons in 1882 amounted to £30,398, 960—a figure only exceeded by the departments Seine and Nord. The popula- tion is

principally engaged in the manufacture of chemicals, of machinery, and of silk. In 1881 324 factories, with 18,500 spindles, 700 power-looms, and 43,000 hand-looms, were employed in the spinning and weaving of silk; 58 works, with 35,800 hack- ling and reeling machines, in the preparation of the raw material ; 7 works, with 450 spindles, 230 power-looms, and 1250 hand-looms, in the manufacture of mixed goods, and 800 looms in the manufacture of lace ; 80 dyeworks employ 4000 workmen. In 1879 it was calculated that the turnover for silk articles amounted to £15,000,000 (£5,000,000 for labour and £10,000,000 for the raw material). Lyons (q.v.) is the centre for the silk manufacture and Tarare for that of muslins, velvets, plush, calicoes, and prints, there being 26 factories, with 33, 000 spindles, 540 power-looms, 4800 hand- looms ; 2000 workmen are also employed in the manufacture of counterpanes. In 1882 88,115 tons of iron were produced. The chief workshops for repairing the locomotivesof the Paris, Lyons, and Mediterranean line are in this department. There are also foundries of copper, bronze, and bell-metal, as also gold, silver, and steel wire works. The manufacture of gold and silver plate and jewellery has an annual turnover of £320,000, that of edible pastes amounts to £480,000, and that of paper to £54,000. The manufacture of wall papers is only second to that of Paris. In addition there are 15 chemical works, 8 glass works employing 1000 workmen with a turnover of £190,000 in 1879, 9 candle works (£268,800), 12 soap works (£102,200), and 700 mills. In 1881 there were in the department 1448 industrial establishments, employing 1558 steam engines with an aggregate horse power of 13,077. Coal and anthracite are found (36,169 tons in 1882), as well as argentiferous lead, manganese, and copper pyrites; there are also large stone quarries. The cold mineral spring of Charbonnieére, containing bicarbonates, iron, and sulphur, is 19 miles west of Lyons. The means of communication include 76 miles of navigable river, 5 of canal (the canal of Givors), 141 miles of Government road, 8685 miles of other-roads, and 165 miles of railway connecting, Lyons with Paris, with Roanne by Tarare, with Montbrison, St Etienne, Nimes, Marseilles, Grenoble, Chambéry, Geneva, Bourg, and Trévoux, Beaujeu with Belleville (on the Lyons and Macon line), and Thizy with Cours (two manufacturing towns in the neighbour- hood of Tarare on the line from Lyons to Roanne). The popula- tion, which owing to the development of industries has doubled since 1801, was 741,470 in 1881—

266 per square kilometre, the average in France being 71. There are two arrondissements, Lyons

and Villefranche, 29 cantons, and 264 communes. Rhénc belongs to the diocese of Lyons, is under the jurisdiction of the superior court of Lyons, and is divided between the corps d'armée of Clermont and of Grenoble. The chief towns are Lyons (q.v.); Tarare (13,352); Villeurbane (11,176); Caluire-et-Cuire (9740) and Oullins (7536), suburbs of Lyons ; Givors (11,470), a stirring town on the Rhone at the junction of the canal by which coal ig brought from St Etienne to the Rhone, with glass works, blast furnaces, foundries, brick and tile works, and potteries ; Amplepius (7118) ; and Cours (6929).

RHUBARB, This name is applied both to a drug and to a vegetable.

1. The drug has been used in medicine from very early times, being described in the Chinese herbal Pen-king, which is believed to date from 2700 B.c, The name seems to be a corruption of Rhewm barbarum or Reu barbarum, a designation applied to the drug as early as the middle of the 6th century, and apparently identical with the pHov or pa of Dioscorides, described by him as a root brought from beyond the Bosphorus. Rha is said by Ammianus Mar- cellinus to take its name from the river Rha (Volga), on the banks of which a species of Rheum (Ze. Rhaponticum) grows. It is not, however, known whether the root of this species was the article used under the name of Rha ponticum or Rha barbarum, or whether these names were applied to the drug brought overland from China by way of the Caspian Sea. It is, however, certain that in the early part of the 11th century Chinese rhubarb was dis- tinguished as superior to the Rha barbarum. In the 14th century rhubarb appears to have found its way to Europe by way of the Indus and Persian Gulf to the Red Sea and Alexandria, and was therefore described as "Rast Indian" rhubarb. Some also came by way of Persia and the Caspian to Syria and Asia Minor, and reached Europe from the ports of Aleppo and Smyrna, and became known as "Turkey" rhubarb. Subsequently to the year 1653, when China first permitted Russia to trade on her fron- tiers, Chinese rhubarb reached Europe chiefly by way of Moscow ; and in 1704 the rhubarb trade became a mono- poly of the Russian Government, in

consequence of which the term “Russian” or “crown” rhubarb came to be applied to it. Urga was the great depdt for the rhubarb trade in 1719, but in 1728 the depdt was transferred to Kiachta. All rhubarb brought to the depdt passed through the hands of the Government inspector, acting under the instructions of the Russian minister of war, and all pieces except those of good quality were rejected. Hence Russian rhubarb was invariably good and obtained a remarkably high price. This severe supervision naturally led, as soon as the northern Chinese ports were thrown open to European trade, to a new outlet being sought; and the increased demand for the drug at these ports resulted in less care being exercised by the Chinese in the collection and curing of the root, so that the rhubarb of good quality offered at Kiachta rapidly dwindled in quantity, and after 1860 Russian rhubarb ceased to appear in European commerce. The drug from that date became known as Chinese rhubarb, although the older names still con- tinue in domestic use in England. Owing to the expense of carrying the drug across the whole breadth of Asia and the difficulty of preserving it from the attacks of insects, thubarb was formerly one of the most costly of drugs. In 1542 it was sold in France for ten times the price of cin- namon and four times that of saffron, and in an English price list bearing date of 1657 it is quoted at 16s, per fh, opium being at that time only 6s. and scammony 12s.

er Ib. : Rhubarb is used in medicine as a mild purgative and cholagogue, promoting digestion and improving the appe- tite when given in small doses, probably by stimulating the intestinal secretions. It has a subsequent astringent effect due to the rheotannic acid it contains but this can XX. — 67

530

be counteracted by giving it with alkaline preparations. It is especially valuable in the treatment of duodenal catarrh or catarrh of the biliary ducts with jaundice ; and in certain skin diseases it has proved to be a valuable medicine, the results obtained being probably due to the chrysophan contained in it.

The botanical source of Chincse rhubarb cannot be said to have been as yet definitely cleared up by actual identification of plants observed to be

used for the purpose. Rheum palmatum, R. officinale, R. palmatum (var. tanguticum), R. colinianum, and R. Franzenbachii have been variously stated to be the source of it, but the roots produced by these species under cultivation in Europe do not present the characteristic network of white veins exhibited by the best specimens of the Chinese drug (sce Goebel and Kunze, pt. ii, pl. i. figs. 20, 30).

Chemistry.—The chief chemical constituents of Chinese rhubarb are chrysophan (Cy;H,)0,), rheotannic acid (CyyEH5,0,4), emodin (C,;H,,0,), 2 neutral eolourless crystalline substance having the formula C,)H,.0,, a white and a dark brown crystalline resin; it also contains mucilage in the proportion of 11 to 17 per cent., and a considerable quantity of oxalate of lime. An albuminoid principle coutaining nitrogen and sulphur is also found in the root, which, in the presence of water, as recently shown by Kubli decomposes the chrysophan into chrysophanic acid and glucose, and apparently exerts a similar action on rheotannic acid, giving rise tothe formation of rheumic acid (CoH 4,0.) and a fermentable sugar. Rheumic acid is a reddish-brown powder, sparingly soluble in cold water. The albuminoid principle is in- soluble in rectified spirit of wine ; consequently a preparation of the root made with that menstruum contains the active principles of the drug in the natural state, whilst an aqueous extract contains them in an altered condition.

Production and Commerce.—Rhubarb is produced in the four northern provinces of China proper (Chih-li, Shan-se, Shen-se, and Ho-nan), in the north-west provinces of Kan-suh formerly included in Shen-se, but now extending across the desert of Gobi to the frontier of Tibet, in the Mongolian province of Tsing-hai, including the salt lake Koko-nor, and the districts of Tangut, Sifan, and Turfan, and in the mountains of the western provinces of Sze-chuen. According to Richthofen the best rhubarb is collected exclusively from wild plants in the high mountains of western Sze-chuen between the sources of the Hoang-ho and the rivers Ya-lung Keang and Min-keang, and comes into trade under the name of Shen-se rhubarb.2_ Two of the most important centres of the trade are Sining-fu in the province of Kan-suh and Kwan- hien in Sze-chuen. From Shen-se, Kan-suh, and Sze-chuen the rhubarb is forwarded to Hankow, and thence carried to Shanghai, whence it is spt pe to Europe.

Lesser quantitics are shipped from Tien-tsin, and occasionally the drug is exported from Canton, Amoy, Fuh-chow, and Ning-po.

Very little is known concerning the mode of preparing the drug for the market. According to Mr Bell, who on a journey from St Petersburg to Peking had the opportunity of observing the plant in a growing state, the root is not considered to be mature until it is six years old. It is then dug up, usuallyin the autumn, and deprived of its cortieal portion and smaller branches, and the larger pieces are divided in half longitudinally ; these pieces are bored with holes aud strung up on cords to dry, in some cases being previously subjected to a preliminary drying on stone slabs heated by fire underneath. In Bhutan the root is said to be hung up in a kind of drying room, in which a moderate heat is regularly maintained. The effect produced by the two drying processes is very different ; when dried by artificial heat, the exterior of the pieces becomes hardened before the interior has entirely lost its moisture, and consequently the pieces decay in the centre, although the surface may show no change. These two varieties are technically known as kiln-dried and sun-dried ; and it was on account of this difference in quality that the Russian officer at Kiachta had every piece examined by boring a hole to its centre. The best rhubarb occurs in pieces of a yellowish colour externally, more or less marked with a network of whitish veins, the surface being convex and smooth. Internally it presents no signs of decay, but is eompact, marbled with reddish-brown and white, mixed sometimes with iron grey. The smaller cylindrical sections of the root which have not been divided longitudinally are technically known as "rounds," and have usually a hole with a piece of string left in it; the flat pieces are more rarely pierced. Inferior qualities are

1 Jour. Pharm, Soc., [8], vi. p. 65.

2 Aeeording to Mr F. Neweombe, Alea. Press and Circ., August 2, 1882, the Chinese esteem the Shen-se rhubarb as the best, that coming from Kanchow being the most prized of all; Sze-ehuen rhubarb has a rougher surfaee and little flavour, and brings only about half the priee ; Chung-chi rhubarb also is greatly valued, while the Chi- ehuang, Tai-huang, and Shan-huang varieties are eonsidered worthless.

shrunken aud shrivelled on the surface, and externally of a prowuish tint, showing traccs of the darker bark, and when broken open are frequently decayed in the centre.

European Rhubarb. —As early as 1608 Prosper Alpinus of Padua cultivated as the true rhubarb a plant which is now known as Rheum Rhaponticum, L., a native of southern Siberia and the basin of the Volga. This plant was introduced into England through Sir Matthew Lister, physician to Charles L., who gave seed obtained by him in Italy to the botanist Parkinson. The culture of this rhubarb for the sake of the root was commenced in 1777 at Banbury in Oxfordshire, by an apothecary named Hayward, the plants being raised from seed sent from Russia in 1762, and with such success that the Society of Arts awarded him a silver medal in 1789 and a gold one in 1794. The cultivation subsequently ex- tended to Somersetshire, Yorkshire, and Middlesex, but is now chiefly carried on at Banbury. English rhubarb root is sold at a cheaper rate than the Chinese rhubarb, and forms a con- siderable article of export to America, and is said to be used in Britain in the form of powder which is of a finer yellow colour than that of Chinese rhubarb. The Banbury rhubarb appears to be a hybrid between R. Rhaponticum and R. undulatwm,—the root, according to E. Colin, not presenting the typical niicroscopic structure of the former. During the last few years very good rhubarb has been grown at Banbury from Rheum officinale, but these two varieties are not equal in medicinal strength to the Chinese article, yielding less extract,—Chinese rhubarb affording, according to H. Seier, 58 per cent., English rhubarb 21 per cent., and R. officinale 17 per cent. In France the cultivation of rhubarb was commenced in the latter half of the last century,—J. com- pactum, R. palmatum, R. Rhaponticum, and R&R. wndulatum, L., being the species grown. The cultivation has, however, now nearly ceased, small quantities only being prepared at Avignon and a few other localities.

The culture of Rhewm compactwm was begun in Moravia in the beginning of the present century by Prikyl, an apothecary in Austerlitz, and until twenty-five or thirty years ago the root was largely exported to

Lyons and Milan, where it was used for dyeing silk, As a medicine 5 parts are stated to be equal to 4 of Chinese rhubarb, Rhubarb root is also grown at Auspitz in Moravia and at Ilmitz, Kremnitz, and Frauenkirchen in Hungary; 2. Hmodi is said to be cultivated for the same purpose in Silesia.

The cultivation of Rhewm palmatum, var. tanguticum, has been begun within the last few years in the United States.

Rhubarb is also prepared for use in medicine from wild species in the Himalayas and Java.

2. The rhubarb used as a vegetable consists of the leaf stalks of several hybrids between the species A. rhaponticum, R. undulatum, R. palmatum. The petioles of R. officinale have also been proved to be edible; but that plant is grown more frequently on account of its ornamental foliage (see Horricunrurr, vol. xii. p. 287). (E. M. B.)

RHYL, a watering-place of North Wales, in the county of Flint, is situated near the mouth of the Clwyd, 30 miles north-west of Chester and 10 north-north-west of Denbigh, a railway line to which here joins that from Chester to Holyhead. Only recently it was a small fishing village. Its chief advantages as a watering-place are the pure air and extensive firm sands. Although the situation of the town was formerly bare and cheerless, much has been done to improve it. There are many handsome houses, and the neighbouring country is interesting both from its scenery and from its castles and other ancient buildings. The town possesses a town-hall, extensive winter gardens, racquet courts, lawn-tennis grounds, and other attractions. The east and west parades face the sea, and the pier, constructed of iron, is 700 feet in length. There is daily communication by steamer with Liverpool, Llandudno, Bangor, &c. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 600 acres) in 1871 was 4500, and in 1881 it was 6029.

RHYMER, Tuomas rox. See THomas or ERCELDOUNE.

RHYMNEY, an urban sanitary district of Monmouth- shire, on the borders of Glamorganshire, is situated in the valley of the Rumney river,

20 miles west of Abergavenny, and 22 north of Cardiff. It owes its importance to the neighbouring coal mines and to its iron and steel works, which employ nearly the whole population. The works of the Rhymney Iron Company, including blast furnaces and

rolling mills, are among the largest of the kind in England. The town consists chiefly of plain houses inhabited by workpeople, the principal building being the church, a handsome structure in the Doric style erected in 1842, The population of the urban sanitary district (area 2890 acres) in 1871 was 8138, and in 1881 it was 8663.

RIAZAN, See Ryazan,

RIBAULT, or Ripavt, JEAN (c. 1520-1565), a French navigator rendered famous by his connexion with the early settlement of Frorma (q.v.), was born at Dieppe, probably about 1520. Appointed by Coligny to the command of a colonizing expedition (from which the admiral was not deterred by the failure of Nicolas Durand de Villegagnon on a similar mission), Ribault sailed on 18th February 1562 with two vessels, and on Ist May landed at St John's river, or, as he called it, Riviére de Mai. Having settled his colonists at Port Royal Harbour and built Fort Charles for their protection, he returned to France to find the country in the throes of the civil war. In 1563 he appears to have been in England and to have issued The whole and true discoverie of Terra Florida. In April 1564 Coligny was in a position to despatch another expedition under Laudonniére; but meanwhile Ribault's colony had come to an untimely end, the unfortunate adventurers, destitute of supplies from home, having revolted against their governor and attempted to make their way back to Europe in a boat which was happily picked up, when they were in the last extremities, by an English vessel. In 1565 Ribault was again sent out to satisfy the admiral as to Laudonniére's management of his new settlement, Fort Caroline, on the Riviére de Mai. While he was still there the Spaniards under Menendez de Avila, though their country was at peace with France, attacked the French ships at the mouth of the river. Ribault set out to retaliate on the Spanish fleet, but his vessels were wrecked by a storm near Cape Caiiaveral and he had to attempt to return

to Fort Caroline byland. The fort had by this time fallen into the hands of the Spaniards, who had slaughtered all the colonists except a few who got off with two ships under Ribault's son. Induced to sur- render by false assurances of safeguard, Ribault and his men were also put to the sword in October 1565. The massacre was avenged in kind by Dominique de Gourgues two years later.

See Haag, La France Protestante, s.v. ; French, Hist. Collections of Louisiana and Florida; Parkman, Pioneers of France in the New World.

RIBBON-FISHES (Zrachypteride), a family of marine fishes readily recognized by their long, compressed tape- like body, short head, narrow mouth, and feeble denti-

deviates in its direction from the longitudinal axis of the body. The pectoral fins are small, the ventrals composed of several rays, or of one long ray only. Ribbon-fishes possess all the characteristics of fishes living at very great depths. They are extremely fragile when found floating on the surface or thrown ashore, and rarely in an uninjured condition ; the rays of their fins especially, and the mem- brane connecting them, are of a very delicate and brittle structure. In young ribbon-fishes some of the fin-rays are prolonged in an extraordinary degree, and sometimes provided with appendages (see fig. 2). The largest of

Fic, 2.—Young Trachypterus.

ribbon-fishes are the species of Regalecus (see OaRr-Fisn), of which specimens some 20 feet long by 12 inches in depth of body and 2 inches in thickness have been found. Like all deep sea fishes they occur in all seas. The most common of the British seas is the Vagmaer or Deal-Fish (Trachypterus arcticus) from 3 to 5 feet long, of which almost every year after the equinoctial gales specimens are picked up on the coasts of North Britain, of the Orkneys, Scandinavia, and Iceland (see also IcuTHyYoLoey, vol. xii. pp. 684, 691).

RIBBONS. By this name are designated narrow webs, properly of silk, not exceeding nine inches in width, used primarily for binding and tying in connexion with dress, but also now applied for innumerable useful,

ornamental, and symbolical purposes. Along with that of tapes, fringes, and other smallwares, the manufacture of ribbons forms a special department of the textile industries. It is obvious that the weaving of very narrow fabrics, piece by piece, on separate looms would be a tedious and expensive process ; yet for ages such was the only method of making ribbons. The essential feature of a ribbon loom is the simultaneous weaving in one loom frame of two or more webs, going up to as many as forty narrow fabrics in modern looms. To effect the conjoined throwing of all the shuttles and the various other movements of the loom the automatic action of the power-loom is necessary ; and it is a remarkable fact that the self-acting ribbon loom was known and extensively used more than a century before the famous invention of Cartwright. A loom in which several narrow webs could be woven at one time is men- tioned as having been working in Dantzic towards the end of the 16th century. Similar looms were at work in Leyden in 1620, where their use gave rise to so much dis- content and rioting on the part of the weavers that the states general had to prohibit their use. The prohibition was renewed at various intervals throughout the century, and in the same interval the use of the ribbon loom was interdicted in most of the principal industrial centres of Europe. About 1676, under the name of the Dutch loom or engine loom, it was brought to London ; and, although its introduction there caused some disturbance, it does not appear to have been prohibited. In 1745 the celebrated John Kay, the inventor of the fly-shuttle, obtained, con-

Fia. 1.—TZrachypterus tenia.

tion. A high dorsal fin occupies the whole length of the back ; an anal is absent, and the caudal, if present,

jointly with Joseph Stell, a patent for improvements in the ribbon loom; and since that period it has benefited by the inventions applied to weaving machinery generally.

Ribbon weaving is known to have been established near St Titienne (dep. Loire) so early as the 11th century, and that town to the present day

continues to be the headquarters of the industry. In the time of Louis XIV. the ribbon trade there gave employment to about 6000 persons ; now about 17,000 looms are in operation in the district, 1500 of which are power-looms 1D factories. Statistics compiled in 1881 give the annual value of the trade at 63,400,000 francs, of which 45,000,000 francs was the value of ribbons proper, the remainder being represented by scarfs, trimmings, elastic web, chenille, &c. During the Huguenot troubles, ribbon weavers from St Etienne settled at Basel and there established an industry which now rivals that of the original seat of the trade. In the Basel district the looms number 8000 ; but one-half of these are power-looms in factories, which have a much greater productive capacity than the domestic looms. Crefeld is the centre of the German ribbon industry, the manufac- ture of black velvet ribbon being there a specialty. In Vienna about 2000 looms are employed. Next to St Etienne and Basel, Coventry is the most important seat of ribbon making, and to some extent the industry is also prosecuted at Norwich and Leicester. The average annual value of the ribbon trade of western Europe and America is £16,000,000. A large proportion of the ribbons now made are mixed fabrics of silk and cotton.

RIBERA, Juszpz, or, in Italian, GIUSEPPE (1588~ 1656), commonly called Lo SpAGNoLETTo, or the Little Spaniard, a leading painter of the Neapolitan or partly of the Spanish school, was born near Valencia in Spain, at Xativa, now named S. Felipe, on 12th January L586. His parents intended him for a literary or learned career ; but, having an innate tendency to design, he neglected the regular studies, and entered the school of the Spanish painter Francisco Ribalta, Fired with a longing to study art in its Italian headquarters, he somehow, while still quite a youth, made his way to Rome, worked vehemently, and struggled with hunger and destitution. Early in the 17th century a cardinal noticed him in the streets of Rome drawing from the frescos on a palace fagade ; he took up the ragged stripling and housed him in his mansion. Artists had then already bestowed upon the alien student, who was perpetually copying all sorts of objects in art and in nature, the nickname of Lo Spagno- letto. In the cardinal's household Ribera was comfortable but dissatisfied; he found his studies in abeyance, and one day he decamped. He then betook himself to the famous painter Michelangelo da

Caravaggio, the head of the naturalist school, called also the school of the Tene- brosi, or shadow-painters, owing to the excessive contrasts of light and shade which marked their style. In this method of art Ribera, though not claiming the first place as initiator, was destined to rank as hardly second to Caravaggio himself. The Italian master gave every encouragement to the Spaniard, but not for long, as he died in 1609. Ribera, who had in the first instance studied chiefly from Raphael and the Caracci, had by this time acquired so much mastery over the tenebroso style that his performances were barely distinguishable from Caravaggio's own. He now went to Parma, and worked after the frescos of Correggio with great zeal and efficiency ; in the museum of Madrid is his Jacob's Ladder, which is regarded as his chef-d'auvre in the Correggesque manner. From Parma Spagnoletto returned to Rome, where he resumed the style of Caravaggio, which was doubtless more conformable to his natural bent, and shortly afterwards he migrated to Naples, which became his per- manent home.

Ribera was as yet still poor and inconspicuous, but a rich picture-dealer in Naples soon discerned in him all the stuff of a successful painter, and gave him his daughter in marriage. This was the turning point in the Spaniard's fortunes. He painted a Martyrdom of St Bartholomew, which the father-in-law exhibited from his balcony to a

rapidly increasing and admiring crowd. The popular excitement grew to so noisy a height as to attract the attention of the Spanish viceroy the Count de Monterey. From this nobleman and from the king of Spain, Philip IV., commissions now flowed in upon Ribera. Various professional honours followed; he painted with incessant vigour; his house became a centre of fashionable concourse ; and he made vast sums of money. In the streets he only appeared in his carriage—then a sure criterion of affluence. After a while he found it necessary to curb his own and his patrons' appetite for work, and he limited himself to six hours in the day, ending towards noon. With pro- sperity came grasping and jealous selfishness, Spagno- letto, chief in a triumvirate of greed, his abettors being a Greek painter, Belisario Corenzio, and a Neapolitan, Giambattista

Caracciolo, determined that Naples should be an artistic monopoly; by intrigue, terrorizing, and personal violence on occasion they kept aloof all com- petitors. Annibale Caracci, the Cavalier d'Arpino, Guido, Domenichino, all of them successively invited to work in Naples, found the place too hot to hold them. Domeni- chino was so persecuted and victimized that his life was probably abridged by these truly '"'tenebrous" machina- tions, The cabal ended at the time of Caracciolo's death in 1641.

The close of Ribera's triumphant career has been variously related. If we are to believe Dominici, the historian of Neapolitan art, he totally disappeared from Naples in 1648 and was no more heard of,—this being the sequel of the abduction, by Don John of Austria, son of Philip IV., of the painter's beautiful only daughter Maria Rosa. Dominici indeed will not even allow that Ribera was a Spaniard by birth: he alleges that the painter, though of Spanish descent, was born at Gallipoli, in the province of Lecce, kingdom of Naples. But these as- sertions have not availed to displace the earlier and well- authenticated statement that Ribera, a genuine Spaniard in the fullest sense, died peaceably and wealthy in Naples in 1656. His own signature on his pictures is constantly "Jusepe de Ribera, Espafiol." His daughter, so far from being disgraced by an abduction, married a Spanish noble- man who became a minister of the viceroy.

The pictorial style of Spagnoletto is extremely powerful ; or one might bettcr define its special quality as immensely forcible,

equally sustaining the test of a distant and general or of a close and scrutinizing view. In his earlier style, founded (as we have seen) sometimes on Caravaggio and sometimes on the wholly diverse method of Correggio, the study of Spanish and Venetian masters can likewise be traced. Along with his massive and predominat- ing shadows, he retained from first to last great strength of local colouring. His forms, though ordinary and partly gross, are cor- rect; the impression of his works gloomy and startling. He delighted in subjects of horror: an agonizing martyrdom—the grid- iron of Lawrence, the flaying knife of Bartholomew, or the vulture of Prometheus—had for him no repulsion

but a grim fascination, He had many imitators, his influence extending from Naples to other parts of Italy, and also to his native Spain. Salvator Rosa and Luca Giordano were his most distinguished pupils ; also Giovanni Do, Enrico Fiammingo, Michelangelo Fracanzani, and Aniello Falcone, who was the first considerable painter of battle-pieces. Among Ribera's principal works should be named St Januarius Emerging from the Furnace, in the cathedral of Naples ; the Descent from the Cross, in the Neapolitan Certosa, generally regarded as his masterpiece ; the Adoration of the Shepherds (a late work, 1650), now in the Louvre; the Martyrdom of St Bartholomew, in the museum of Madrid; the Pieta in the sacristy of S. Martino, Naples. His mythologic subjects are generally unpleasant—such as the Silenus, in the Studi Gallery of Naples, and Venus Lamenting over Adonis, in the Corsini Gallery of Rome. The Louvre contains alto- gether twenty-five of his paintings ; the London National Gallery two—one of them, a Pieta, being an excellent though not exactly a leading specimen. He executed several fine male portraits ; among others his own likeness, now in the collection at Alton Towers. He also produced twenty-six etchings, ably treated. For the use of his pupils, he drew a number of elementary designs, which in 1650 were ctched by Francisco Fernandez, and which continued much in

vogue for a long while among Spanish and French painters and students.

Besides the work of Dominici already referred to (1840-46), the Diccionario Historico of Cean Bermudez isa principal authority regarding Ribera and his works. (W. M. RB.)

RIBES. See Currant and GooseBerry.

RICARDO, Davip (1772-1823), a celebrated political economist, was born at London 19th April 1772. He was the third son of his father, a Jewish gentleman of Dutch birth, whose family, it is said, had formerly resided in Portugal. The elder Ricardo bore an honourable character, and was a successful member of the Stock Exchange. The son was placed for two years at a com- mercial school in Holland, and at the age of fourteen entered his father's office, where he showed much aptitude for business.

About the time when he attained his majority he abandoned the Hebrew faith, and conformed to the Anglican Church, a change which seems to have been connected with his marriage to Miss Wilkinson, which took place in 1793. In consequence of the step thus taken he was separated from his family and thrown on his own resources. His ability and uprightness were known, and he at once entered on such a successful career in the profession to which he had been brought up that at the age of twenty-five, we are told, he was already rich. He now began to occupy himself with scientific pursuits, and gave some attention to mathematics as well as to chemistry and mineralogy ; but, having met with Adam Smith's great work in 1799 at Bath, whither he had gone for his wife's health, he threw himself with ardour into the study of political economy.

His first publication (1809) was The High Price of Bullion a Proof of the Depreciation of Bank Notes. 'This tract was an expansion of a series of articles which the author had contributed to the Morning Chronicle. It gave a fresh stimulus to the controversy, which had for some time been discontinued, respecting the resumption of cash payments, Ricardo argued that the premium on bul- lion and the unfavourable state of the exchanges could only be explained by the depreciation of the inconvertible paper money then in circulation, which had fallen 25 per cent. below the value of specie in consequence of its over-issue. A committee to consider the whole question, commonly known as the Bullion Committee, was nominated by the House of Commons in February 1810. Amongst the members were Francis Horner, who was appointed chair- man, Alexander Baring (afterwards Lord Ashburton), William Huskisson, and Henry Thornton, author of the well known Inquiry into the Nature and Effects of the Paper Credit of Great Britain (1802). The report, which was presented to parliament in June of the same year, was the joint production of Horner, Huskisson, and Thornton. It asserted the same views which Ricardo had put forward, and recommended the repeal of the Bank Restriction Act. Notwithstanding this, the House of Commons of the fol- lowing year, on the motion of Mr Vansittart (afterwards Lord Bexley), declared in the teeth of the facts that paper had undergone no depreciation, and negatived Horner's resolutions founded on the report of the committee. One of the strongest opponents of Ricardo's opinions was Mr Bosanquet; he published in 1811

a pamphlet entitled Practical Observations on the Report of the Bullion Committee, and this drew forth from Ricardo an elaborate reply. Both this tract and its predecessor attracted much attention. They propound no new economic principles, but are based on the doctrines of Smith. They do not give such a systematic and complete view of the subject as Huskisson's well-known tract (Zhe Question respecting the Depreciation of the Currency Stated and Examined, 1810), but they are well reasoned, and, as to their main conclusions, convincing. It has, however, been maintained

that there were features of the case which Ricardo did not sufficiently take into account, especially the demand for bullion created by the necessity of meeting the foreign payments of England, which, in consequence of the Con- tinental system, could not be otherwise discharged.

In 1811 he made the acquaintance of James Mill, whose introduction to him arose out of the publication of Mill's tract entitled Commerce Defended. The conversation of Ricardo's new friend seems to have largely influenced his views ; Bentham indeed declared him to be Mill's intel- lectual child ; but, whilst Mill doubtless largely affected his political ideas, he was, on his side, under obligations to Ricardo in the purely economic field ; Mill said in 1823 that he himself and J. R. M'Culloch were Ricardo's disciples, and, he added, his only genuine ones.

In 1815, when the Corn Laws were under discussion, he published his Hssay on the Influence of a Low Price of Corn on the Profits of Stock. This was directed against a recent tract by Malthus entitled Grownds of an Opinion on the Policy of Restraining the Free Importation of Foreign Corn. The reasonings of the essay are based on the theory of rent which has often been called by the name of Ricardo ; but the author distinctly states that it was not due to him. "In all that I have said concerning the origin and progress of rent I have briefly repeated, and endeavoured to elucidate, the principles which Malthus has so ably laid down on the same subject in his Inquiry into the Nature and Progress of Rent." We now know that the theory had been fully stated, before the time of Malthus, by Anderson ; it is in any case clear that it was no discovery of Ricardo. Even the conception of the soils of a country as comparable to a series of

machines of different original powers, though capable of improvement by the application of capital, is quoted from Malthus. Ricardo states in this essay a set of propositions, most of them deductions from the theory of rent, which are in substance the same as those afterwards embodied in the Principles, and regarded as characteristic of his system, such as that increase of wages does not raise prices; that profits can be raised only by a fall in wages and diminished only by a rise in wages; and that profits, in the whole progress of society, are determined by the cost of the pro- duction of the food which is raised at the greatest expense. It does not appear that, excepting the theory of foreign trade, anything of the nature of fundamental doctrine, as distinct from the special subjects of banking and taxation, is laid down in the Principles which does not already appear in this tract. We find in it, too, the same exclu- sive regard to the interest of the capitalist class, and the same identification of their interest with that of the whole nation, which are generally characteristic of his writings. "Rent," he says, "is in all cases a portion of the profits previously obtained on the land," a proposition by which, for the sake, it is to be feared, of creating a political prejudice, he obscures his own doctrine that true rent can never be a part of profit; and he alleges what is in a sense true, but has a most invidious effect,—that "the interest of the landlord is always opposed to the interest of every other class in the community," though the existence of a distinct landlord class is by no means a necessity, and the owner of rent, which somebody must own, could not, even by entirely remitting it, alter the price of food, or increase the profits of the capitalist, except by presenting him with a gift to which he has no economic claim. At the close of the tract he endeavours to show in opposition to Malthus that the danger of dependence on foreign supply for a large part of our food, and the losses on invested capital which would result from a legislative change, could not be so serious as to counter- balance the advantages arising from a free importation.

534

Both parts of this proposition are probably true ; but he does not establish the first in a very satisfactory manner.

In the Proposals for an Economical and Secure Currency (1816) he first disposes of the chimera of a currency without a specific standard, and pronounces in favour of a single metal, with a preference for silver, as the standard. He then puts forward a scheme which had been already briefly indicated in the appendix to the 4th edition (1811) of his High Price of Bullion. This was that the bank should be obliged to deliver on demand, not coin, but uncoined bullion or gold standard bars, in exchange for its notes, whenever the notes presented together for payment reached a moderate fixed amount. The con- sequence would be that, all the smaller payments being made in the cheap medium, paper, the country would enjoy the profit derivable from the metallic currency used as a capital; the wear of the coinage, too, would be pre- vented, and a saving thus effected. By this method the public would secure itself against any variations in the value of the currency beyond those to which the standard itself is necessarily subject; and, at the same time, the circulation would be carried on in the least expensive way. Thus, whilst the use of the precious metals as the medium of exchange was, in the earlier stages of social life, one of the most important steps towards the improvement of commerce and the advancement of civilization, it is pro- posed to us, and on grounds which it is difficult to gain- say, to banish them once more from such employment in almost all the internal transactions of a country. A kindred revolution, tending to the further elimination of metallic money, Jevons has spoken of as "a return to barter"; but that expression is misleading, for in the modern system of settlement by writing off liabilities against each other a metallic standard is always supposed, and lies at' the basis of every transaction, whereas in the primitive method of dealing commodities were directly compared. Ricardo's plan was in operation for some time, but was then given up on the ground, urged by the bank, of the frequent forgery of one pound notes, and the consequent necessity of replacing them with coin—a very insufficient reason, as experience demonstrates, though a good argument in favour of such an improved manu- facture of notes as would effectually defeat fraudulent imi- tation. Ina later tract (Plan for a National Bank) Ricardo proposes that one pound notes should be confined to the country districts. The general plan has been objected to on the ground that it would not provide for a sufficient inetallic reserve to meet sudden emergencies arising from the necessity of foreign payments.

Ricardo's chief work, Principles of Political Economy and Taxation, appeared in 1817. A full account of the general theory expounded in this treatise has been given under Potrricat Economy ; a very brief statement must here suffice. The fundamental doctrine is that, on the hypothesis of free competition, exchange value is deter- mined by the labour expended in production,—a proposi- tion not new, nor, except with considerable limitation and explanation, true, and of little practical use, as " amount of labour" is ayague expression, and the thing intended is incapable of exact estimation. Ricardo's theory of dis- tribution has been briefly enunciated as follows :—" (1) the demand for food determines the margin of cultivation ; (2) this margin determines rent ; (3) the amount necessary to maintain the labourer determines wages ; (4) the dif- ference between the amount produced by a given quantity of labour at the margin and the wages of that labour determines profit." These theorems are too absolutely stated, and require much modification to adapt them to real life. His theory of foreign trade has been em- bodied in the two propositions—'" (1) international values

RECARDS/

are not determined in the same way as domestic values ; (2) the medium of exchange is distributed so as to bring trade to the condition it would be in if it were conducted by barter." His views on currency and banking will be gathered from the present article.

A considerable portion of the work is devoted to a study of taxation, which requires to be considered as a part of the problem of distribution. A tax is not always paid by those on whom it is imposed; it is therefore necessary to determine the ultimate, as distinguished from the immediate, incidence of every form of taxation. Smith had already dealt with this question; Ricardo develops and criticizes his results. The conclusions at which he arrives are deduced from the theory of rent and from the assumptions of a uniform rate of profits and of a rate of wages coincident with the necessary subsistence of the labourer. They are in the main as follows :— a tax on raw produce falls on the consumer, but will also diminish profits; a tax on rents on the landlord ; taxes on houses will be divided between the occupier and the ground land- lord; taxes on profits will be paid by

the consumer, and taxes on wages by the capitalist. These propositions of course participate in the infirmity of the premises from which they are deduced, or must at least be taken with limitations corresponding to those to which the premises are subject. Ricardo adopts and even extols as a " golden maxim" the shallow dictum of Say, that "the very best of all plans of finance is to spend little, and the best of all taxes is that which is of least amount."

In 1819 Ricardo, having retired from business and become a landed proprietor, entered parliament as member for Portarlington. He was at first diffident and embarrassed in speaking, but gradually overcame these difficulties, and was heard with much attention and deference, especially when he addressed the house on economic questions. He probably contributed in a considerable degree to bringing about the change of opinion on the question of free trade which ultimately led to the legislation of Sir Robert Peel on that subject.

In 1820 he contributed to the supplement of the Hncy- clopedia Britannica (6th ed.) an Essay on the Funding System. In this, besides giving an historical account (founded on Dr Robert Hamilton's valuable work On the National Debt, 1813, 3d ed., 1818) of the several succes- sive forms of the sinking fund, he urges that nations should defray their expenses, whether ordinary or extra- ordinary, at the time when they are incurred, instead of providing for them by loans ; and, not believing that the system of a sinking fund would ever be consistently and perseveringly carried out, he maintains that the national debt should be paid off by a tax on property—an operation which he thought might be completed in two or three years during peace. Thus, by a single effort we might, he says, get rid of those great sources of demoralization, the customs and the excise, and our commerce would be freed from "all the vexatious delays and interruptions which our present artificial system imposes upon it. "i

In 1822 he published a tract On Protection to Agricul- ture, which is an able application to controversy of the general principles laid down in his systematic work. Its arguments and conclusions are therefore subject to the same limitations which those fundamental principles re- quire. He does not advocate an absolutely free importa- tion of corn, but proposes,

in consideration of the special burdens on agriculture, to impose on the foreign commodity a duty equivalent to the exclusive taxes imposed on home growers, as well as to allow a drawback on exportation equal to the duty. The only point of much interest in the tract, apart from the question of protection, is the assertion of the doctrine that a high rate of interest is

beneficial to a country—a view curiously opposed to that held by Child and others in the 17th century. ‘ Profits and interest,” he says, “cannot be too high. Nothing contributes so much to the prosperity and happiness of a country as high profits.” It seems to follow that, the pro- ductiveness of labour being given, wages cannot be too low, which can only be true on the supposition,} tacitly assumed by Ricardo in many places, that wages coincide with the cost of the labourer’s maintenance. The proposition, too, appears to lead to economic pessimism, for, according to his own doctrines, the rate of profits must inevitably decline in the course of the history of any society.

In his Plan for the Establishment of a National Bank, published posthumously in 1824, he proposes that the issue of the paper currency should be taken out of the hands of the Bank of England, and vested in commissioners appointed by the Government, but not removable except on an address from one or both Houses of Parliament. These functionaries should in no case lend money to the ministers of the crown, who, when they wanted it, should raise it by taxation or have recourse to the general market. The commissioners would act as bankers to all the public departments, but would be precluded from fulfilling the same office for any corporation or individual whatever. Their great business would be to regulate the issue of paper by the price of bullion, so as to keep the value of the former equal to that of the coins it would represent. The tract describes in detail the measures to be adopted for the introduction and working of the new system. A certain step towards realizing the objects of this scheme, though on different lines from Ricardo’s, was taken in Sir Robert Peel’s Act of 1844, by which the discount business of the bank was separated from the issue department.

Ricardo died on the 11th September 1823, at his seat (Gatcomb Park) in Gloucestershire. He was only fifty- one years of age, and there had been nothing in his general health to give rise to apprehension; the cause of death was a cerebral affection resulting from disease of the ear. He was much regretted, as he had been highly esteemed, both in public and private life. His character is represented in very favourable colours by those who knew him best. He is described as modest, candid, and ever open to conviction,—as affectionate in his family, steady in his friendships, and generous and kind in his wider per- sonal relations. James Mill, who was intimately acquainted with him, says (in a letter to N apier of November 1818) that he knew not a better man, and on the occasion of his death published a highly eulogistic notice of him in the Morning Chronicle. —A lectureship on political economy, to exist for ten years, was founded in commemoration of him, M'Culloch being chosen to fill it.

In forming a general judgment respecting Ricardo, we must have in view not so much the minor writings, to which this article has been in great part devoted, as the Principles, in which his economic system is expounded as a whole. Bya study of this work we are led to the conclusion that he was an economist only, not at alla social philosopher in the wider sense, like Adam Smith or John Mill. He had great acuteness, but little breadth. For any large treatment of moral and political questions he seems to have been alike by nature and preparation unfitted ; and there is no evidence of his having had any but the most ordinary and narrow views of the great social problems. His whole conception of human society is material and mechanical, the selfish principle being regarded, after the manner of the Benthamites, as omnipotent, not merely in practical economy, but, as appears from his speech on the ballot and his tract on reform, in the whole extent of the social field. Roscher calls him "ein tiefer Menschenkenner " ; it would be diffi- cult to characterize him more inaptly. The same writer remarks on his "capitalistic " tone, which, he says, becomes "mammonistic " —_ SS ee eee

1 The same assumption had been previously made by the Physio- crats. Turgot says, "En tout genre de travail, il doit arriver et il arrive que le

salaire de l'ouvrier se borne a ce qui est nécessaire pour se procurer sa subsistance."

O85

in some of his followers; but the latter spirit is already felt as the pervading atmosphere of Ricardo's works. He shows no trace of that hearty sympathy with the working classes which breaks out in several passages of the Wealth of Nations ; We ought, perhaps, with Held, to regard it as a merit in Ricardo that he does not cover with fine phrases his deficiency in warmth of social sentiment. The idea of the active capitalist having any duties towards his employés never seems to occur to him ; the labourer is, in fact, merely an instru- ment in the hands of the capitalist, a pawn in the game he plays, His principal work is the ultimate expression of what Comte calls "'Vignoble métaphysique qui prétend étudier les lois générales de lordre matériel en l'isolant de tout autre," Against such a picture of industrial life as a mere sordid struggle of conflicting interests contemporary socialism is the necessary, though formidable, pro- test ; and the leaders of that movement have eagerly seized his one- sided doctrines and used them for their own ends.

He first introduced into economics ona great scale the method of deduction from a priori assumptions. The conclusions so arrived at have often been treated as if they were directly applicable to real life, and indeed to the economic phenomena of all times and places. But the truth of Ricardo's theorems is now by his warmest admirers admitted to be hypothetical only, and they are stated as applying, at most, to the existing highly-developed condition of European, and especially of English, commerce. Bagehot, however, seems right in believing that Ricardo himself had no consciousness of the limitations to which his doctrines are subject. Be this as it may, we now see that the only basis ou which these doctrines could be allowed to stand as a permanent part of economic science is that on which they are placed by Roschcr, namely, as a stage in the preparatory work of the economist, who, beginning with such abstractions, afterwards turns from them, not in practice merely, but in the completed theory, to real life and men as they actually are or have been. But it may well be doubted whether it is not better to discard them

altogether, and begin, as we end, with an historical method, which, it may be added, will of necessity lead to the introduction of those moral and social considerations which would otherwise be almost certainly overlooked.

The criticisms to which Ricardo's general economic scheme js open do not hold with respect to his treatment of the subjects of cur- rency and banking. These form precisely that branch of economics into which moral ideas (beyond the plain prescriptions of honesty) can scarcely be said to enter, and where the operation of purely mer- cantile principles is most immediate and invariable. They were, besides, the departments of the study to which Ricardo's early train- ing and practical habits led him to give special attention ; and they

have a lasting value independent of his systematic construction.

Ricardo's collected works were published, with a notice of his life and writings, by J. R. M'Culloch in 1846, A French translation of the Principles by Constancio, with notes by Say, appeared in 1818; the whole works, translated by Constancio and Fonteyraud, form vol. xiii.(1847) of the Collection des Principaux Economistes, where they are accompanicd by the notes of Say, Malthus, Sismondi, Rossi, &c. The Princtples was first "naturalized " in Germany, says Roscher (though another version by Von Schmid had previously appeared), by Edward Baumstark in his David Ricardo's Grundgesetze der Volkswirthschaft und der Bestewerung iibersetzt und erldutert (1837), which Roscher highly commends, not only for the excellence of the rendering, but for the value of the explanations and criticisms which are added.

(J. KL

RICCATI, James, Count (167 6-1754), a lohienicad Italian mathematician, was born at Venice, May 8, 1676, and died at Treviso, April 15, 1754. He studied at the university of Padua, where he graduated in 1696. Riccati was deeply read in history, belles lettres, architecture, and poetry—ain fact, was a highly cultivated man; his favourite pursuits, however, were scientific, and his authority on all questions of practical science was referred to by the senate of Venice. He corresponded with

many of the European savants of his day, and contributed largely to the Acta Eruditorum of Leipsic. He was offered the pre- sidency of the academy of science of St Petersburg ; but this high distinction he declined, preferring the leisure and independence of life in Italy. Riccati's name is best known and will be preserved by mathematicians in con- nexion with his celebrated problem called Riccati's equa- tion, published in the Acta Eruditorum, September 1724. A very valuable and complete account of this equation and its various transformations has been recently given by Mr J. W. L. Glaisher, F.R.S., in the Z'ransactions of the Royal Society (1881, pp. 759-829),

After Riccati's death his works were collected by his sons and published in four volumes. His sons, Vincenzo (1707-1775) and Giordano (1709-1790), inherited his talents. The former was professor of mathematics at Bologna, and published, among other works, a large treatise on the calculus. Giordano was distinguished both as a mathematician and an architect.

536

RICCI, Marreo (1552-1610), is eminent as practically the founder of Christian missions in modern China.

He was born of a noble family at Macerata in the March of Ancona on 7th October 1552, two months before Francis Xavier, burning with the desire to carry his message into China, died at its gates. After some education at a Jesuit college in his native town, Ricci, at the age of sixteen, was sent by his father to study law at Rome. But the youth had already contemplated entering the Jesuit Company, and this purpose he accomplished about 1571, without informing his father, of whose opposition he was aware, until the step had beer taken. The father instantly started for Rome, but was stopped by illness, and abandoned opposition.

In 1577 Ricci and several other Italian students of

noble birth offered themselves for the East Indian mis-

sions; and Ricci, without visiting his family to take leave, proceeded to Portugal. His comrades were Rudolfo Acquaviva, Nicolas Spinola, Francesco Pasio, and Michele Ruggieri, all afterwards, like Ricci himself, famous in the Jesuit annals. They arrived at Goa in September 1578. After four years spent in India, Ricci was summoned to the task of opening China to evangelization.

Several attempts had been made by Xavier, and since his death, to introduce the church into China,—as by Melchior Nunes of the Jesuit society operating from Sanchian! in 1555; by Gaspar da Cruz, a Dominican, in that or the following year; by the Augustinians under Martin Herrada, 1575; and in 1579 by the Franciscans led by Pedro d'Alfaro; but all these attempts proved abortive. In 1571 a house of the Jesuits had been set up at Macao (where the Portuguese were established in 1557), but their attention was then occupied with Japan, and it was not till the arrival at Macao of Alessandro Valignani on a visitation in 1582 that work in China was really taken up. For this object he had obtained the services first of M. Ruggieri and then of Ricci. After various disappointments they found access to Chau-king- fu on the Si-Kiang or West River of Canton, where the viceroy of the two provinces of Kwang-tung and Kwang-si then had his residence, and by favour of this personage they were enabled to establish themselves, and there spent several years. 'Their proceedings were very cautious and tentative; they excited the curiosity and interest of even the more intelligent Chinese by their clocks, their globes and maps, their books of European engravings, and by Ricci's knowledge of mathematics, including dialling and the like, and the projection of maps. They conciliated some influential friends, and their reputation spread pretty widely in China. This was facilitated by the Chinese system of transfer of public officers from one province of the empire to another, and in the later movements of the missionaries they frequently met with one and another of their old acquaintances in office, who were more or less well disposed. Eventually troubles arose at Chau-king which compelled them to seek a new locality; and in 1589, with the viceroy's sanction, they migrated to Chang- chau in the northern part of Kwang-tung, not far from the well known Meiling Pass.

During his stay here Ricci was convinced that a mistake had been made in adopting a dress resembling that of the bonzes, thus identifying the missionaries with a class who were the objects either of superstition or of contempt. With the sanction of the visitor it was ordered that in future the missionaries should adopt the costumes of Chinese literates. And, in fact, they before long adopted Chinese manners altogether.

1 'The island (properly Shang-chuan) on which the Portuguese had a

oes settlement before they got Macao, and on which F, Xavier ied.

Ra € Ca

Chang-chau, as a station, did not prove a happy selec- tion, but it was not till 1595 that an opportunity occurred of travelling northward. We cannot follow Ricci's move- ments in detail, or the vicissitudes of favour and trouble which attended his plans. The latter were, on the whole, never very grave. For some time his residence was at Nan-chang-fu, the capital of Kiang-si; but in 1598 he was enabled to proceed under favourable conditions to Nan- king, and thence, for the first time, to Peking, which had all along been the goal of his missionary ambition. But circumstances were not then propitious, and the party had to return to Nanking. The fame of the presents which they carried had, however, reached the court, and the Jesuits were summoned north again, and on the 24th January 1601 they entered the capital. Wan-lieh, the emperor of the Ming dynasty, in those days lived in seclu- sion, and saw no one but his women and the eunuchs. But the missionaries were summoned to the palace ; their presents were immensely admired ; and the emperor had the curiosity to send for portraits of the fathers them- selves.

They obtained a settlement, with an allowance for sub- sistence, in Peking, and from this time to the end of his life Ricci's estimation among the Chinese was constantly increasing, as was at the same time the amount of his labours. Visitors, who were never turned away, thronged the mission residence incessantly ; inquiries coming to him from all parts of the empire, from strangers as well as acquaint- ances, respecting the doctrines which he taught, or the numerous Chinese publications which he issued, had to be answered. This in itself was a great burden, as

Chinese composition, if wrong impressions are to be avoided, demands extreme care and accuracy. As head of the mission, which now had four stations in China, he also devoted much time to answering the letters of the priests under him, a matter on which he spared no pains or detail. The new converts had to be attended to—always welcomed, and never hustled away. Besides these came the composi- tion of his Chinese books, the teaching of his people, and the maintenance of the record of the mission history which had been enjoined upon him by the general of the order, and which he kept up to the most recent dates. Thus his labours were wearing and incessant. In May 1610 he proke down, and after an illness of eight days died on the 11th of that month, aged fifty-eight. His coadjutor Pantoja applied to the emperor for a burying-place outside the city. This, after due consideration by the boards concerned, was granted, with the most honourable official testimonies to the reputation and character of Ricci ; and

a large building in the vicinity of the city was at the

game time bestowed upon the mission for their residence.

Ricci's character, his acquirements, and the use he made of them were certainly worthy of all honour. We do not know what amount of success in conversion had rewarded his labours during his life, but some eminent and creditable converts there were, and his work was the foundation of the considcrable spread which the Roman Catholic Church has since attained in China. When the missionaries of other Roman Catholic orders made their way into China, some twenty years after the death of Ricci, they found great fault with the manner in which ccrtain Chinese practices had been dealt with by the Jesuits, a matter in which Ricci's action and policy had given the tonc to the mission in China,—though in fact that tone was rather inherent in the Jesuit system than the outcome of individual character, for controversics of an exactly parallel nature arosc two generations later in southern India, between the Jesuits and Capuchins, regarding what were called "Malabar rites." The controversy thus kindled in China burned for considerably more than a century with great fierceness," and we can here, in connexion with the carecr of Ricci, but indicate its existence. The chief points of controversy were (1)

the lawfulness and expediency of certain terms employed by the i nr RRS i we ee

2 The list of the literature of this controversy occupies forty-one columns in M. Cordier's excellent Bibliographie de la Chine.

Jesuits in naming God Almighty, such as Tien, " Heaven," and Shang-tt, "Supreme Ruler" or "Emperor," instead of Tien-Chu, "Lord of Heaven,' and in particular the erection of inscribed tablets in the churehes, on which these terms were made use of ;! (2) in respect to the ceremonial offerings made in honour of Confucius, and of personal ancestors, which Ricci had recognized as merely "civil"' observances; (3) the erection of tablets in honour of ancestors in private houses; and (4), more generally, sanetion and favour accorded to ancient Chinese sacred books and philosophical doctrine, as not really trespassing on Christian faith.

Probably no European name of past centuries is so well known in China as that of Zi-ma-teu, the form in which the name of our missionary (Ri-cci Mfat-teo) was adapted to Chinese usage, and by whieh he appears in Chinese records." The works which he composed in Chinese are numerous; a list of them (apparently by no means complete, however) will be found in Kircher's China Illustrata, and also in Abel Rémusat's Nowveaux Mélanges Astatiques (ii. pp. 218-215). They are said to display an aptitude for clothing ideas in a Chinese dress very rare and remarkable in a foreigner. One of the first which attracted attention and re- putation among Chinese readers was a Treatise upon Friendship, in the form of a dialogue containing short and pithy paragraphs ; this is stated in the De EHxpeditione to have been suggested during Ricci's stay at Nan-chang by a conversation with the prince of Kien-ngan, who asked questions regarding the laws of friendship in the West.

In the early part of his residence at Peking, when enjoying con- stant intereourse with scholars of high position, Ricci brought out the 7°icn-chu shih-t, or " Veritable doctrine of the Lord of Heaven," which deals with the divine character and attributes under eight heads. "'This work," says Mr A. Wylie, "contains some acute reasoning in support of the

propositions laid down, but the doctrine of faith in Christ is very slightly touched upon. The teachings of Buddhism are vigorously attacked, whilst the author tries to draw a parallel between Christianity and the teachings of the Chinese literati."

In 1604 Ricci completed the Hrh-shih-wu yen, a series of short artieles of moral bearing, but exhibiting little of the essential doctrines of Christianity. Chi-jén shih pien is another of his pro- ductions, completed in 1608, and consisting of a record of ten con- versations held with Chinese of high position. The subjects are :— (1) Years past no longer ours; (2) Man a sojourner on earth ; (8) Advantage of frequent contemplation of eternity; (4) Prepara- tion for judgment by such contemplation ; (5) The good man not desirous of talking; (6) Abstinence, and its distinction from the prohibition to take life; (7) Self-examination and self-reproof inconsistent with inaction; (8) Future reward and punishment ; (9) Prying into futurity hastens calamity; (10) Wealth with covetousness more wretched than poverty with contentment. To this work is appended a translation of eight Huropean hymns, with elucidations, written in 1609.

Some of the characteristics briefly indicated here may have suggested, though probably they are far from justifying, the bitterness of attacks made upon Ricei's theology, long after he had been in his grave, by some of the opponents of the Jesuits in the eontroversies to whieh we have referred. An example of these is found in the work called Anecdotes sur ? Etat de Religion dans la Chine, Paris, 1788-85, the author of which (Abbé Villers) speaks of the 7'ien-chu shih-i in this fashion—" The Jesuit was also so ill versed in the particulars of the faith that, as the holy bishop of Conon, Monsgr. Maigrot, says of him, one need merely read his book on the true religion to convince oneself that he had never imbibed the first elements of theology". ... The writer goes on to say other things even mueh more bitter.

Ricci's pointed attacks on Buddhism, and the wide eirculation of his books, called forth the opposition of the Buddhist clergy.

1 Compare Browning, The Ring and the Book, x., The Pope,

1589-1608.

2 The name eomes forward prominently in the mouth of the emperor Kang-hi, in a dialogue which took place between him and Monsgr. Maigrot, the leader of the anti-Jesuit movement (mentioned in Browning's lines referred to above), at the summer residence in Tar- tary, August 1706,—a dialogue whieh the Jesuits have reported

with not a little maliee :—

"' Emperor, 'Tell me why do the people call me Van-sui (10,000 years).' The Most Reverend (i.e., Maigrot), 'To express their desire for your Majesty's long life.' mp. 'Good. You see, then, Chinese words are not always to be taken literally. We pay cult to Confucius and to the dead to express our respect for them. How is that inconsistent with your religion? When did it begin to be so? Is it since Ly-Mattheu'stime? Hast thou ever read Ly-Mattheu? The Most Reverend, turning to P. Parenin, whispers, " Who's he?" and learning that it was P. Matteo Ricci,... answered the emperor: 'I have not read that book.' Zmp. ' Ly-Mattheu and his fellows came hither some two centuries ago; and before their time China never heard anything of the Incarnation, any- thing of Tien-chu, who had not become incarnate in this part of the world. Why then, if it was lawful to call God Tien before Ly-Mattheu's time, should it be improper now?"—Zpistola de Eventu Apostolice Legationis, seripia a PP. Misstonariis . . . ad Prepositum Generalem S. J., An. 1706, 1 Novembris,

One of the ablest who took their part was Chu-hang, a priest of Hang-chau, who had abandoned the literary status for the Bud- dhist cloister. He wrote three articles against the doctrine of the missionaries. These were brought to Ricci's notice in an ostensible tone of candour by Yu-ehun-he, a high mandarin at the capital. This letter, with Ricci's reply, the three Buddhist declamations, and Ricci's confutation, were published in a collected form by the Christian Sen-Kwang-K'e.

Another work of Ricci's which attracted attention was the Hsi-kuo fa, or ' Art of Memory as practised in the West." Ricci was himself a great expert in memoria technica, and astonished the Chinese by his performances in this line. He also wrote or edited various Chinese works*

on geography, the celestial and terrestrial spheres, geometry, and arithmetic.? And the detailed history of the mission was drawn out by him, which after his death was brought home by P. Nicolas Trigault, and published at Augsburg, and in a complete form at Lyons a year later under the name De Hxupeditione Christiana apud Sinas Suscepta, ab Soc. Jesu, Ex P. Mat. Ricci ejusdem Societatis Commentarits, in which Tri- gault himself added a large amount of interesting matter respecting China and the Chinese.

Among the scientific works of his time whieh Ricci took with him into China, there was a fine set of maps, which at first created great interest, but disgust afterwards when the Chinese came to perceive the insignificant place assigned therein to the "Middle Kingdom," thrust, as it seemed, into a corner, instead of being set in the centre of the world like the gem inaring. Ricci, seeing their dissatisfaction, set about eonstructing a map of the hemisphere on a great scale, so adjusted that China, with its subject states, filled the eentral area, and, without deviating from truth of projection, occupied a large space in proportion to the other kingdoms gathered round it. All the names were then entered in Chinese calligraphy. This map obtained immense favour, and was immediately engraved at the expense of the viceroy, and widely circulated.

In the accompanying cut we have endeavoured to realize this Jesuitical map, as we fear it must be called. The projection we have adopted is a perspective of the hemisphere, as viewed from a point at the distance of one diameter from the surface, and situated on the production of the radius which passes through the intersec- tion of 115° EK. long. (Green- wich) with 30°

f "UY near this must have been Li- ma-teu's projec- tion. With a vertex much more distant the desired effect would be impaired, and with one nearer neither of the poles would be seen, whilst the exaggeration of China would have been too gross for a professed representation of the hemisphere.

The chief facts of Ricci's career are derived from Trigault ; some contemporary works on the rites controversy have also been consulted; in the notice of Ricci's Chinese writings valuable matter has been derived

from Notes on Chinese Litera- ture by Mr A. Wylie,4 an indefatigable scholar, and perhaps our only contem- porary who can speak of these from actual examination. 'The projection of the sphere by the present writer appeared in the (now defunct) Geographical Magazine for July 1874. A number of Ricci's letters are extant in the possession of the family, and access to them was afforded to Giuseppe La Farina, author of the work called Za China, consideraia neila sua Storia, &c., Florence, 1843, by the Marchese Amico Ricci of Macerata, living at Bologna (see vol. i. p. 112 sq.). La Farina's quotations contain nothing of interest. There is a curious Chincse

account of Ricci published by Dr Breitschneider in the China Review, iv. 391 sq. (sa)

RICCIARELLI, Danrerz (1509-1566), Italian artist, generally called, from the place of his birth, DANIELE Da

Hy M fj

Hip

:

3 In the eatalogue of the London Mission Library, Shanghai, 1857, we find the following entries :—"197. Chi'ho yian pén, Elements of Geometry (MS.). This is the first six books of Euelid, translated by Matthew Rieei and his disciple Sen-Kwang-K'e, 1607." '198. Tung-wen suan-ehth. Guide to Arithmetie, 9 vols. incomplete; this treatise was drawn up by Ricci, with the aid of his disciple Le-Che- tsaou, and published in 1613." "199. Chigén shih pien" (see above).

4 Shanghai and London, 1867.

VoLTERRA, was born in 1509, and studied painting under Razzi and Peruzzi. 'The young artist, settling in Rome, strove most unweariedly to attain eminence in his profes- sion. No efforts were spared on his pictures. He pro- ceeded with a careful slowness, attempting to reach his ideal by a close imitation of Michelangelo. It is even said that he sometimes in a difficulty had recourse to the more direct aid of that great master's own hand. The result of this earnest labour was that Ricciarelli obtained abund- ant encouragement. His constant friend, Michelangelo, recommended him on all possible occasions. He had the honour to beautify with works of art a chapel in the church of the Trinitd, to paint in the Farnese Palace, to execute certain decorations in the Palazzo de' Medici at Navona, and to begin the stucco work and the pictures in the Hall of the Kings. Nor was he less highly patronized when, towards the close of his life, he turned his atten- tion to statuary. His last work was a bronze horse intended for an equestrian statue of Henry II. of France. He died in 1566. 'The principal extant works of Ric- ciarelli are at Rome. These are a St John the Baptist in the picture gallery of the Capitol, a Saviour bearing the Cross in the Palazzo Rospigliosi, and a Descent from the Cross, his masterpiece, in the church of Trinita de Monti. There is also an Elijah at Volterra.

RICCOBONI, Mapamz (1714-1792), whose maiden name was Marie Jeanne Laboras de Méziéres, and who married and was deserted by an actor and author of little merit, was born at Paris in 1714. She herself was an actress, but did not succeed on the stage. She then took to novel writing and deserves a considerable place in the history of the sentimental novel. Her first work was the remarkable Histoire du Marquis de Cressy (1758). This was followed by Milady Catesby, Fanny Butler (both of them, as indeed are almost all her books, in letter form), Ernestine (sometimes thought her masterpiece), three series of Lettres in the names of Adelaide de Dammartin (often quoted as Madame de Sancerre), Elizabeth Sophie de Valliére, Milord Rivers, and others. These books were much admired, but brought their author little money. She obtained, however, a small pension from the crown, but the Revolution deprived her of it, and she died in 1792 in great indigence. Besides the works named she translated Fielding's Amelia, and tried a continuation (but not the conclusion

sometimes erroneously ascribed to her) of Marivaux's unfinished Marianne.

All Madame Riccoboni's work is very clever, and there is real pathos init. But it is among the most eminent examples of the "sensibility" novel, of which no examples but Sterne's have kept their place in England, and that not in virtue of their sensibility. A still nearer parallel may.be found in the work of Mackenzie. Madame Riccoboni is an especial offender in the use of mechanical aids to impressiveness—italics, dashes, rows of points, and the like. The principal edition of her complete works is that of Paris,

1818. The chief novels appear in a volume of Garnier's Bzblio- theque Amusante, Paris, 1865.

RICE. According to Roxburgh the cultivated rice with all its numerous varieties has originated from a wild plant called in India Newaree or Nivara (Oryza sativa). It is said to grow on the borders of lakes in the Circars and elsewhere in India, and is also native in tropical Australia. The rice plant is an annual grass with long linear glabrous leaves, each provided with a long sharply- pointed ligule. The spikelets are borne on a compound or branched spike, erect at first but afterwards bent down- wards. Each spikelet contains a solitary flower with two outer small glumes and two inner, larger and folded lengthwise, the outer one of the two rather larger and sometimes provided with an awn. Within these are six stamens, a hairy ovary surmounted by two feathery styles which ripens into the fruit (grain), and which is invested

'Persians.

RIC—RIC

by the husk formed by the persistent glumes. The culti- vated varieties are extremely numerous, some kinds being adapted for marshy land, others for growth on the hill-sides. The cultivators make two principal divisions according as the sorts are early or late. Other subdivisions depend upon the habit of the plant, the presence or absence of an awn, the colour of the grain, and other particulars. Rice has been cultivated from time

immemorial in tropical countries. According to Stanislas Julien a ceremonial ordinance was established in China by the emperor Chin-nung 2800 years B.c., in accordance with which the emperor sows the rice himself while the seeds of four other kinds may be sown by the princes of his family. This fact, joined to other considerations, induced Alphonse de Candolle to consider rice as a native of China. It was very early culti-vated in India, in some partsof which country, as in tro- pical Australia, it is, as we have seen, indigenous. It is not mentioned in the Bible, but its culture is alluded to in the Talmud. |/|/ There is no evi- }// dence of the exist- ||| ence of rice in Egyptian remains, nor is there any trace of it as a native plantamong the Greeks, Ro- mans, or ancient There is proof of its culture in the Euphrates

valley and in

Syriafour hundred

years before Christ.

*Crawfurd on phi- *

lological grounds SS |

*considers that rice NY *

*was _ introduced *

into Persia from N

southern India. Rice (Oryza sativa).

The Arabs carried A, spikelet (enlarged); B, bearded variety ; the plan . wate C, spikelet of B (enlarged).

Spain under the name "aruz," the arros of the Spanish, the rizo of the Italian, whence our word rice. Rice was first cultivated in Italy near Pisa in 1468. It was

not introduced into Carolina until 1700, and then, as it is said, by accident, although at one time the southern United States furnished a large proportion of the rice introduced into commerce. Rice, says Crawfurd, sports into far more varieties than any of the corns familiar to Europeans, for some varieties grow in the water and some on dry land; some come to maturity in three months, while others take four and six months to do so. The Hindus, however, are not content with such broad distinctions as might be derived from these obvious sources, but have names for varieties the distinctions between which are unappreciable by Europeans ; besides terms for this corn founded on variety, on season, and on mode of culture, the grain itself bears one name in the straw, another when threshed, one name in the husk and another when freed from it, and a fifth when cooked. A similar abundance of terms is found in the languages of the Malay and Philippine Islands. Such minute nomen-

— a

clatures seem to point to a great antiquity in the culture of this cereal.

Rice constitutes one of the most important articles of food in all tropical and subtropical countries, and is one of the most prolific of all crops. The rice yields best on low lands subject to occasional inundations, and thus enriched by alluvial deposits, An abundant rainfall during the growing season is also a desideratum. Rice is sown broadcast, and in some districts is transplanted after a fort- night or.three weeks. No special rotation is followed ; indecd the soil best suited for rice is ill adapted for any other crop. In some cases little manure is employed, but in others abundance of manure is used. No special tillage is required, but weeding and irrigation are requisite. Rice in the husk is known as "paddy." On cut- ting across a grain of rice and examining it under the microscope, first the flattened and dried cells of the husk are seen, and then one or two layers of cells elongated in a direction parallel to the length of the seed, which contain the gluten or nitrogenous matter. Within these, and forming by far the largest part of the seed, are large polygonal cells filled with very numerous and very minute angular starch grains. Rice is not so valuable

as a food as some other cereals, inasmuch as the proportion of nitrogenous matter (gluten) is less. Payen gives only 7 per cent. of gluten in rice as compared with 22 per cent. in the finest wheat, 14 in oats, and 12 in maize. The percentage of potash in the ash is as 18 to 23 in wheat. The fatty matter is also less in proportion than in other cereals. Rice, therefore, is chiefly a farinaccous food, and requires to be combined with fatty and nitrogenous sub- stances, such as milk or meat gravy, to satisfy the requirements of the system.

The imports of rice into the United Kingdom range from 7,000,000 cwt. to 8,000,000 cwt. annually, having an estimatcd value of from £8,000,000 to £3,500,000. Nearly the whole of this comes from British Burmah and Bengal.

RICE PAPER. The substance which has received this name in Europe, through the mistaken notion that it is made from rice, consists of the pith of a small tree Aralia papyrifera cut into thin slices) The tree grows in the swampy forests of Formosa and apparently nowhere else, and large quantities of the stems are conveyed to Chin- chew, where the snow-white delicate pith is carefully sliced by spiral cuts into uniform sheets of a fine ivory-like texture. It is dyed various colours, and extensively used for the preparation of artificial flowers, while the white sheets are employed by native artists for water-colour drawings.

RICH, Cuaupius Jamzs (1787-1821), Eastern traveller and scholar, was born near Dijon, March 28, 1787. While still an infant he was taken to Bristol, where he spent his youth. At a very early age he developed a wonderful capacity for the acquisition of languages, soon becoming familiar not only with Latin and Greek but also with Hebrew, Syriac, Persian, Turkish, and other Eastern tongues. His unusual intelligence and extraordi- nary acquirements in Oriental languages procured for him in 1803 a nomination to a writership in the Bombay establishment of the East India Company. In 1804 Rich proceeded to Constantinople, where, and at Smyrna, he stayed a considerable time, perfecting himself in the Turkish language. Proceeding to Alexandria as assistant to the British consul-general there, he devoted himself to Arabic and its various dialects, and made himself master of Eastern manners and usages. On

leaving Egypt he proceeded by land to the Persian Gulf, disguised as a Mameluke, visiting Damascus, and entering the great mosque undetected. At Bombay, which he reached in September 1807, he was the guest of Sir James Mack- intosh, whose eldest daughter he married in January 1808, proceeding soon after to Baghdad as resident. While gaining the respect of Turks of all classes, as well as of Europeans, he now began his investiga- tions into the geography, history, and antiquities of the vastly interesting region in the midst of which he was

placed, the results of which give him a high place among Eastern students. He made collections of all kinds, visited and examined the remains of Babylon, and projected a geographical and statistical account of the pashalic of Baghdad. The results of his investigations at Babylon appeared first in the Vienna serial the Mines de UOrient, and in 1811 in England, under the title Narra- tive of a Journey to the Site of Babylon in 1811. In 1839 this was republished by his widow, with Major Rennell's remarks upon it, and a second memoir by Rich in reference to these remarks, together with the narrative of a journey to Persepolis. In 1813-14 Rich spent some time in Europe, and on his return to Baghdad paid special atten- tion to the geography of Asia Minor, and collected much information in Syrian and Chaldean convents concerning the Yezzidis. He continued, too, to collect manuscripts of all kinds, his collections being probably the most extensive and valuable brought together by any private person up to that time. His collection of coins—Greek, Parthian, Sasanian, and Moslem—as well as of gems and engraved stones, was much enlarged. During this period he made a second excursion to Babylon, and in 1820 he undertook an extensive tour to Kurdistan—from Baghdad north to Sulimania, eastward to Sinna, then west to Nineveh, and thence down the Tigris to Baghdad. The narrative of this journey, which for the first time furnished accurate know- ledge (from scientific observation) regarding the topography and geography of the region traversed, was published by bis widow in 1836. It abounds with information on the country and the people, their history and traditions, the ruins and inscriptions met with, characterized by the pro- fundity and thoroughness of the real scholar and trained observer. He visited many of the ancient Christian churches in Chaldeea, adding largely to his stock of manu- scripts, including ancient Syrian and Chaldzan versions of the

Scriptures. In 1821 Rich went to Basora, whence he made an excursion to Shiraz, visiting the ruins of Per- sepolis and the other remains of antiquity in the neighbour- hood. An account of these excursions is given in the post- humous publication referred to, which also contains many notes on Rich's collections and minor excursions as well as a brief memoir. At Shiraz he was struck down by cholera on October 5, 1821. His early death was a vast loss to Oriental investigation. The work he did accomplish was of great value for Eastern archeology and history.
RICHARD I. (1157-1199), king of England, called even before his death 'the Lion" or " Coeur de Lion," was the third son of Henry IL. and Eleanor of Aquitaine. He was born, probably at Oxford, on September 8, 1157. When little more than eleven years old he was invested with the duchy of Aquitaine, and imbibed in southern France the spirit of the adventurer and the troubadour which characterized him through life. In 1173 he joined the league against Henry II., but when the rebellion was suppressed in 1174 he was pardoned by his father. Shortly afterwards he was affianced to Alice, the daughter of Louis VII. The death of his brother Henry in 1184 made Richard heir to the throne. From this time he was the centre of the disturbances which troubled the last five years of Henry II.'s reign. The pretext for his quarrel with his father was the refusal of the latter to allow the barons to do fealty to Richard as heir, and Henry's wish to transfer Aquitaine to his younger son John. War was for some time averted by the preparations for the third crusade, and Richard himself took the cross (1187). Next year, however, a quarrel between Richard and his neighbour the count of Toulouse led to the final breach. Vhilip, king of France, took advantage of this quarrel to invade Berri, whence he was driven out again by Richard, who so far was acting in concert with his father. A truce

o+0

opportunity to separate Henry from his son. In November 1188 Richard did homage to Philip for his French pro- vinces, and the latter demanded that Henry should acknowledge him as heir. Henry hesitated, and Richard openly joined Philip. In the spring of 1189 the allies overran Maine and Touraine, and forced Henry, in a meeting at Colombiéres, to

submit to their demands. Two days later Henry died at Chinon (July 6, 1189), and Richard became king of England.

Richard's reign falls into two equal divisions—the one comprising his crusade and captivity, the other his wars against Philip in France. On his father's death he was at once acknowledged as duke of Normandy and count of Anjou. On September 3, 1189, he was crowned with great pomp at Westminster. This is the first English corona- tion of which we have a full account, and the formalities then adopted have been followed with little alteration ever since. Richard at once set to work to collect funds for the crusade. He sold ecclesiastical and temporal offices, released the king of Scotland from the vassalage to which Henry II. had subjected him ; and, having by these means and by taxation collected a large sum of money, he crossed to Calais on December 12. Soon afterwards he met Philip at St Remy and made a treaty with him for a joint crusade. On June 27, 1190, the two armies assembled at Vezelai, whence they marched together as far as Lyons. There Philip took the route to Genoa, while Richard went by Marseilles. Visiting Naples on the way, he landed at Messina on September 23, where he found the French army and his own fleet awaiting him. The two kings remained in Sicily during the winter. William II., king of Sicily, husband of Richard's sister Joanna, had died shortly before, and Tancred, nephew of William, had seized the throne. During the negotiations for the recovery of Joanna and her dowry, disturbances broke out which ended in Richard's forcing his way into Messina at the head of his army. His real enemy was, however, not Tancred, but Philip. The natural jealousy of the two kings grew into mutual hatred during their stay in Sicily, and Tancred informed Richard of French intrigues. In March 1191 Richard made a treaty with Tancred, and recognized him as king of Sicily. At the same time he repudiated Alice, Philip's sister, and betrothed himself to Berengaria of Navarre. Philip was the first to leave Sicily. He arrived at Acre early in April. On April 10 Richard set sail, and a month later reached Cyprus, where he married Berengaria (May 12). He then proceeded to conquer Cyprus, took Isaac Comnenus and his daughter prisoners, and set out again for the Holy Land, reaching Acre on June 8. Guy of Lusignan, who claimed the throne of Jerusalem, had besieged that fortress since 1189, but the Christian army was itself hemmed in by the forces of Saladin. NRichard's

arrival encouraged the besiegers, and on July 11 Acre surrendered. The two kings now settled the dispute between Guy of Lusignan and Conrad of Montferrat about the throne of Jerusalem and on August: 3 Philip left the Holy Land. Saladin having failed to fulfil the terms on which Acre had surrendered, Richard ordered the massacre in cold blood of some three thousand Mohammedan prisoners. Soon afterwards he set out for Jaffa, and on the way thither won the battle of Arsuf. Having rebuilt Jaffa, he started for Jerusalem. About Christmas 1191 he arrived at Beit-ntiba, within sight of the Holy City, but, owing to the reluctance or desertion of his French allies, he found it impossible to besiege it, and therefore withdrew to the coast. In April 1192, at the instance of his followers, he recognized Conrad as king of Jerusalem, indemnifying Guy with the crown of Cyprus. The murder of Conrad immediately afterwards

was made between the two kings, and Philip used the.

was laid, probably without sufficient ground, to the charge of Richard, who conferred the vacant throne on Henry, count of Champagne. Bad news from England now made him anxious to go home, but he resolved on one more attempt to save Jerusalem. He set out on June 4, arrived again within sight of the city, and again retired without venturing to attack. Jaffa, which had been taken by Saladin, was retaken on August 1. This was Richard's last exploit in the East. On September 1 he made a three years' truce with Saladin, on the basis of the status guo; and on October 9 he sailed for home, leaving behind him a name long remembered by the Saracens, but, beyond the capture of Acre, having accomplished none of the objects with which he set out.

Fearing to go through France, Richard sailed up the Adriatic, and made his way on foot, as a pilgrim and almost alone, to Erdburg near Vienna. Here he was dis- covered (December 21, 1192) by Leopold, duke of Austria, of whom, while at Ascalon, he had made a bitter enemy. After being confined for some time at Diirrenstein on the Danube, he was surrendered in March 1193 to the emperor Henry VI., who imprisoned him first at Trifels and afterwards at Worms. Legend was already rife about him, but the story of his discovery by Blondel only dates from the

following century, and is of French origin. In order to liberate himself, Richard resigned his crown to Henry VI. as overlord of Christendom, promised to pay a yearly tribute, and received back the crown as a vassal of the emperor. At Easter a diet was held at Spires, at which Richard was charged with various misdoings,—the recognition of Tancred, the conquest of Cyprus, the murder of Conrad, even with the betrayal of the Holy Land to Saladin. He defended himself eloquently, and the charges were dropped. Shortly afterwards a treaty was made at Worms (July 29) for Richard's release on payment of a ransom of 150,000 marks, with other condi- tions. Great efforts were made in England to collect the money, two-thirds of which was paid over to Henry, hostages being given for the rest. Philip and John were able, however, by offers of money and other means, to induce the emperor to detain Richard till the following spring. At length he was liberated. On March 18, 1194, he set foot again in England. He found his dominions in great confusion owing to the intrigues of Philip and John. He rapidly made himself master of the castles which held out for John, and on April 17, 1194, he was crowned a second time. He then collected more money from the impoverished country for the rest of his ransom and for an expedition to France, and on May 12 left England again never to return. Philip retired before him; John submitted and was pardoned. For the remaining five years of his reign Richard kept up an intermittent struggle with Philip, a struggle marked by no great battles, and interrupted only by fruitless negotiations and truces which were never kept. Neither party was strong enough to inflict a severe blow upon the other. In the autumn of 1198 the war went decidedly against Philip, but in January 1199 a peace for five years was made, each side retaining what it held. Shortly afterwards Richard, while besieging the castle of Chaluz near Limoges, which was held against him by one of his vassals, was wounded by an arrow. He died on April 6, 1199, and was buried at Fontevraud. His brother John succeeded him.

In person Richard was tall, muscular, ruddy, with light brown hair. He was lavish, generous, and fearless; a skilful commander, but incapable of extensive combina- tions or far-reaching plans; more religious than his father or brothers, but equally vicious ; a bad husband and a bad son, with much of the ferocity that characterized his race ;

in fact, a typical representative of the faults as well as the virtues of the chivalry of his day. His reign was sig- nalized by no great legal or administrative reform, and England owes him nothing but barren fame.

Chief Authoritics.—Hoveden, Chronica; Ralph de Diceto, Imagines Historiarum; Gervase of Canterbury, Chronica, &c. ; Chronicles and Memortals of the Reign of Richard I. ; Gesta Regis Henrici IT,, &c. (ascribed to Benedict of Peterborough) ; all the above have been edited, with most valuable prefaces, by Dr Stubbs for the Rolls Series ; also William of Newburgh, Historia Rerwm Anglicarwm, edited for the Engl. Hist. Society by H. C. Hamil- ton, and for the Rolls Series by R. Howlett; Richard of Devizes, Chronicon, &c., edited for the Engl. Hist. Society by J. Stevenson ; Pauli, Geschichte von England, vol. iii.; Stubbs, Harly Plantagencts ; Lingard, History of England, vol. ii. (Cau i5 125)

RICHARD II. (1366-1400), king of England, the only son of Edward the Black Prince and Joan of Kent, was born at Bordeaux, April 13, 1366. He succeeded to the throne on the death of his grandfather Edward III., on June 21, 1377. He was crowned on July 16. During the first eleven years of his reign, Richard was in a position of tutelage. His uncles, John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, and Thomas, duke of Gloucester, were the most influential persons in the kingdom. The evils naturally inherent in a minority were intensified by war abroad, religious and social troubles at home, the existence of a turbulent nobility, and the intrigues and rivalries which broke up the royal house. Under the incapable rule of Lancaster, the southern coasts were ravaged by French fleets, the northern frontier was harried by the Scots, and the taxes collected for national purposes were wasted or embezzled. The weakness and unpopularity of the Government pro- duced a ferment among the lower classes, which, aggravated by the heavy taxation of 1379 and 1380, culminated in the Peasants' Revolt of June 1381. This revolt gave Richard, then a lad of fifteen, his first opportunity of dis- tinguishing himself. On June 14 he met the rebels at Mile End, and, by promising the abolition of villenage, induced the Essex contingent to return home. Next day he met the Kentish men at Smithfield. In the parley which followed, their leader, Wat

Tyler, was killed. The mob were about to avenge his death when the young king, riding forward alone, calmed their irritation and induced them to follow him to Islington. Here a body of troops came to the king's aid, but Richard prevented a conflict, and persuaded the rioters to disperse. His presence of mind, extraordinary in one so young, not only saved his own life but averted a general disaster. In January 1382 he married Anne of Bohemia, daughter of the emperor Charles IV. Meanwhile the influence exerted by John of Gaunt was becoming more and more irksome to him. Charges of conspiracy brought against his uncle in 1384, though denied by Lancaster, so worked upon Richard that he attempted to seize him, but a reconciliation was soon afterwards effected. In 1385 the king led an expedition to Scotland. His refusal to allow the army to penetrate beyond Edinburgh is said to have caused another quarrel with the duke of Lancaster. The efforts made by Richard to form a party of personal adherents, in opposition to his uncles, are to be seen in the elevation of De Vere to the marquisate of Dublin and of De la Pole, the chancellor, to the earldom of Suffolk. After John of Gaunt's departure to Portugal (July 1386) the quarrel between the king's party and the opposition headed by Gloucester came to a head. Gloucester, supported by a strong majority in parliament, demanded the dismissal of the chancellor and the treasurer, to which Richard was obliged reluctantly to consent. The blow was followed up by the appointment of a committee of government which, like the baronial committee of 1258, practically superseded the monarchy. Richard submitted, but immediately set about making plans for the recovery of his authority. In November 1387 he

ot]

came to London in order to overthrow the committee, but was anticipated by Gloucester, who, with Henry of Derby and three others, "appealed," or impeached the king's chief adherents of high treason. The party in power always found it easy to manipulate the elections, and the parliament which met in February 1388 was altogether on the side of the "appellants." The leaders of the king's party were executed, banished, or imprisoned, and Glou- cester won a complete triumph. He failed, however, to establish his power on a firm basis, and in May 1389 Richard

threw off the yoke. On the ground that he was now of full age, he suddenly informed his council that he intended to rule alone. Gloucester made no resistance} the nation acquiesced; and Richard was at last really king.

Richard did not for some time abuse his power. The 'fappellants" were not punished, and even remained members of the council. William of Wykeham, however, became chancellor, and it was apparently by his advice and that of John of Gaunt, who returned to England in 1389, that Richard regulated his conduct. For eight years he ruled constitutionally. The country was at peace at home and abroad. In June 1394 the queen died. In October of the same year Richard went to Ireland and received the submission of some of the chiefs. He remained in Ireland till May 1395. Next year he concluded a twenty-five years' truce with France, and engaged to marry Isabella, the French king's daughter. In September 1396 he went to Calais and returned with his bride, a child of eight years old. This alliance seems to have encouraged Richard to carry out a stroke of policy which he had probably long contemplated. In July 1397 he suddenly seized the "appellants," Warwick, Arundel, and Gloucester. The parliament, which met in September, repealed the acts of 1386, and declared the "appellants" guilty of high treason. Arundel was executed, Warwick imprisoned Gloucester died, probably by violence, in prison. Next year the parliament conferred on Richard tonnage and poundage for life, and delegated their authority to a committee of eighteen, practically chosen by the king, thus making him an absolute monarch. A treasonable conversation between Hereford and Norfolk, reported by the former, gave a pretext for the banishment of both. In February 1399 John of Gaunt died, and Richard seized the Lancaster estates, thus reducing Hereford to desperation. The latter at once began to prepare to recover his inheritance, and Richard, apparently ignor- ant of the danger, went over to Ireland (May 29), thus leaving the kingdom open to his rival. Henry landed in Yorkshire early in July, and rapidly collected an over-powering force. Richard returned to find Henry in possession of power and himself deserted by the nation. He surrendered to Henry at Flint (August 19) and was conveyed to London. On September 29 he executed a deed by which he resigned the crown. Next day the deed was read in parliament. Formal sentence of deposition was pronounced, and Henry

claimed and received the crown. A month afterwards the late king was sentenced to perpetual imprisonment, and was removed to Pontefract. The conspiracy against Henry IV., which was discovered in January 1400, sealed Richard's fate. The manner of his death is unknown, but there can be little doubt that he died by violence. He is said to have been buried at Langley, February 14, 1400.

In person Richard was slight, fair-haired, beardless, with rounded face and elegant but rather feminine features. His character, a strange mixture of strength and weakness, courage and irresolution, indolence and energy, remains an enigma to the historian. He protected Wickliffe, encouraged Chaucer, and made a serious attempt to establish an absolute monarchy. His reign, whether we regard it from

the religious, the political, or the social point of view, is one of very great importance, and its history has as yet been by no means fully elucidated.

Chief Anthorities. Knighton, De Eventibus Angliz, ed. Twysden in the Decem Scriptores, 1652; Walsingham, Historia Anglicana, ed. Riley (Rolls Series) ; Adam de Usk, Chronicon, ed. Thompson, 1876 ; Chronicon Angliw, by a monk of St Albans, ed. Thompson (Rolls Series); Historia Vite et Regni Ricardi IT., by a monk of Evesham, ed. Hearne, 1729; Cronieque de la traison et mort de Richart deux, &c., ed. Williams (Engl. Hist. Society); Histoire du Roi @ Angleterre Richard, ed. Webb, in Archeol. Brit., vol. xx.; Froissart, Chronicles; Stubbs, Constitutional History, vol. ii. ; Pauli, Geschichte von England, vol. iv. (G. W. P.)

RICHARD III. (1452-1485), king of England, third son of Richard, duke of York, and Cicely Nevil, was born at Fotheringay on October 2, 1452. Having been sent out of England for safety on the death of his father in 1460, he was recalled next year by his brother Edward IV., who created him duke of Gloucester and appointed him lord high admiral. He remained faithful to his brother during the latter's reign, sharing in his flight in 1470, and aiding him on his return in the victories of Barnet and Tewkesbury. In 1474 he married Anne, daughter of the earl of Warwick and widow of Prince Edward. In 1482 he led an army into Scotland to aid

the duke of Albany against James III., occupied Edin- burgh and captured Berwick. On the death of Edward IV. (April 9, 1483) Richard at once made himself master of the situation by seizing Prince Edward, his nephew. Having assumed the title of Protector, he rapidly deve- loped his plans for securing the crown. Under the pre- text of a plot against his life, he seized and beheaded Hastings, Grey, and others (June 13), forced the queen mother to give up her younger son Richard, and, on June 26, 1483, assumed the crown. The children of Edward IV. were set aside on the plea that their father was illegitimate. On July 6 Richard was crowned king. Shortly afterwards it was publicly reported that the sons of Edward IV. were dead; their actual fate is to the present day unknown. In October 1483 the rebellion of the duke of Buckingham was put down; the duke himself was executed on November 2: A parliament which met in January 1484 acknowledged Richard as king, in return for which he assented to an Act abolishing benevolences. His only legitimate son, Edward, died on April 9, 1484, and in March 1485 the boy was followed by his mother. To strengthen his position Richard had made treaties with Scotland and Brittany (1484), and he now proposed to marry his niece Elizabeth. From this course, however, he was dissuaded. His short reign was mainly occupied in preparing to resist the invasion of Henry of Richmond. Unable to prevent Henry's landing (August 7, 1485), Richard met his rival in battle at Bosworth (August 22), and at the same moment lost his crown and his life.

Tradition is divided as to Richard's personal appear- ance, and the story of his deformity is possibly derived from Lancastrian malignity and from a misunderstanding of his nickname Crouchback. His courage, energy, and ability would have made a great and honoured name had not those qualities been matched by extreme ferocity and unscrupulousness, and perverted to an evil use by the tur- bulence of the time and his own nearness to the throne.

Chief Authorities. —Fabyan, Concordance of Histories, ed. Ellis, 1811; Historia Croylandensis, ed. Fell, Quinque Scriptores, 1687 ; Ross, Historia Regum Angliz ; Paston Letters, ed. Gairdner, 1875 ; Letters and Papers illustrative of the reigns of Richard ITI. and Henry VII, ed. Gairdner (Rolls Series) ; Sir T. More, Histories of Edward V. and Richard

ITT, 1556; H. Walpole, [Historie Doubts on Richard ITI., 1768 ; Gairdner, Life and Reign of Richard LII., 1878. (G. W. P.)

RICHARD, earl of Cornwall and king of the Romans (1209-1272), second son of John, king of England, and Isabella, was born at Winchester, January 5, 1209. In

RICHARD

1225 he undertook the government of Gascony. In 1240 he went on a crusade, returning in 1241, after concluding a treaty with the sultan of Egypt. In 1242 he accompanied his brother on his unsuccessful expedition to Poitou. In 1244 and 1246 we find him heading the parliamentary opposition against Henry IIL. and a few years afterwards he befriended Simon de Montfort against his accusers. When Henry went to France in 1253, Richard, together with the queen, acted as regent. He had already (1252) declined the pope's offer of the kingdom of Sicily, but in January 1257 he was elected emperor by a majority of the electors, and soon afterwards was crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle. In 1259 he returned to England and swore to observe the Provisions of Oxford. Next year he acted as peace- maker between Henry and the barons, and, after spending another year in Germany, he returned to England in 1263. It was largely owing to his mediation that the two parties submitted to the arbitration of Louis IX., but on the renewal of the civil war he took his brother's side. Taken prisoner at the battle of Lewes, he was kept in confinement by De Montfort for a year, but released after the battle of Evesham. One of his last known acts was his mediation between the earl of Gloucester and the king. In 1269 he went to Germany again for a short time, and returned to England to die at Kirkham in 1272. He was thrice married—(1) to Isabella, sister of the earl of Pembroke ; (2) to Sancia, daughter of Raymond, count of Provence; (3) to Beatrice of Falkenstein.

For authorities, see under Henry III. (G. W. P.)

RICHARD, duke of Normandy. See Normanpy, vol. xvii. p. 541 sq.

RICHARD or Bury. See AUNGERVYLE, RICHARD.

RICHARD or Crrencester (1335-1401), historical writer, was a member of the Benedictine abbey at West- minster, and his name ('Circestre") first appears on the chamberlain's list of the monks of that foundation drawn up in the year 1355. In the year 1391 he obtained a licence from the abbot to go to Rome, his design being to visit limina Apostolorum, and in this licence the abbot gives his testimony to Richard's perfect and sincere ob- servance of religion for upwards of thirty years. In 1400 Richard was in the infirmary of the abbey, where his death took place in the following year. His only known extant work is Speculum Historiale de Gestis Regum Anglhx, 447-1066. The manuscript of this is in the university library at Cambridge, and has been edited for the Master of the Rolls by Professor John E. B. Mayor (2 vols., 1863-1869). It is in four books, and at the con- clusion of the fourth book Richard expresses his intention of continuing his narrative from the accession of William I., and incorporating a sketch of the Conqueror's career from his birth. This design he does not, however, appear to have carried into effect. The value of the Speculum as a contribution to our historical knowledge is but slight, for it is mainly a compilation from Rodger Wendover, Geoffrey of Monmouth, William of Malmesbury, Florence, Asser, Henry of Huntingdon, and other writers; while even in transcribing these the compiler is guilty of great carelessness. He gives, however, numerous charters relat- ing to Westminster Abbey, and also a very complete account of the saints whose tombs were in the abbey church, and especially of Edward the Confessor, with whose reign the fourth book is entirely occupied. The work was, notwithstanding, largely used by historians and antiquaries, until, with the rise of a more critical spirit, its value became more accurately estimated. Besides the Speculum Richard also wrote, according to the statement of William Woodford in his Answer to Wickliffe (Brown, Fasciculus Rerum expetendarum, p. 193), a treatise De Oficus ; and there was formerly in the cathedral library

at Peterborough another tractate from his pen, entitled Super Symbolum. Of neither of these works, however, does any known copy now exist.

Of the Speculum the main value may be said to be of a negative character, in that it affords the most conclusive proof of the spuriousness of another work attributed to Richard and long accepted by the learned world as his. This was the De Situ Britanmex, an elaborate forgery relating to the antiquities of Roman Britain which first appeared at Copenhagen in the year 1758. It was printed along with the works of Gildas and Nennius, under the editorship of Charles Julius Bertram, professor of English in the academy of Copenhagen in the middle of the last century, with the following special title :—" Richardi

Corinensis monachi Westmonasteriensis de situ Britanniz.

libri duo. E Codici MS. descripsit, Notisque et Indice adornavit Carolus Bertram."

This forgery was accepted as genuine by a well-known antiquary of the last century, Dr William Stukeley, and under the sanction of his authority continued for a long time to be regarded in the same light by numerous scholars and antiquaries. Among their number were Gibbon, John Whitaker, Richard Gough, and Lingard. On the other hand, critics of a later date, such as J. J. Conybeare, Dr Guest, Wex, Raine, and Woodward, from time to time gave expression, on various grounds, to a contrary conclusion. All doubt on the subject may, however, be held to have been effectually set at rest by the masterly and exhaustive exposure of the whole fraud drawn up by Professor Mayor in the preface to the edition above referred to of the Speculwm. He has there not only demonstrated, from the external and internal evidence alike, the spuriousness of the whole treatise, but in a collation (extending to nearly a hundred pages) of numerous passages with corresponding passages in classical medieval anthorities, has also traced out the various sources from whence Bertram derived the terminology and the facts which he reproduced in the De Situ. "To say nothing," says Professor Mayor, " of antiquaries whose canons of criticism are so lax that they cite a supposed monk of 1400 a.p. as authority for events of 1000 B.c., we find a forger alike contemptible as penman, Latinist, historian, geographer, critic, imposing upon members of the Royal and Antiquarian Societies, and of the two ancient universities, of the youthful Society D. U. K., on the writers of Germany

and Denmark, of England, and of Scotland,—the last bribed by the invention of Vespasiana."' J. B. M.)

RICHARD oF Sr Victor (0b. c. 1173), a sseby by birth, was subprior of his convent in 1159 and prior in 1162, and was a friend of St Bernard, to whom some of his books are dedicated. The tendency of his mysticism has been characterized in vol. xvii. p. 132. Of his works, which embrace exegesis, moral and dogmatic subjects, and mystical contemplation, the first edition appeared at Paris in 1528, the best at Rouen in 1650.

RICHARDSON, Sir Jonn (1787-1865), naturalist, was born at Dumfries on November 5, 1787, and died near Grasmere on June 5, 1865. He became a surgeon in the navy in 1807, and is known by his share in the arctic explorations of Parry and Franklin, 1819-22 and 1825-26 (see Pouar ReEGions, vol. xix. p. 319), and in the Franklin search expedition of 1848-49 (2b., p. 321), but especially by his Fauna Boreali-Americana (1829-37, 4 vols. 4to). He also wrote Arctic Searching Expedition (1851), and other works on the zoology of the Arctic regions. He was knighted in 1846.

RICHARDSON, Samvet (1689-1761), as the inventor or the accidental discoverer of a new literary form, the modern novel of domestic life and manners, is entitled toa more prominent place in history than his powers, whether of thought or style, would justify. He stumbled on novel writing by accident and late in life. The son of a Derby- shire joiner (born in 1689), he had been apprenticed at the age of seventeen to a London printer (Wilde of Stationers' Hall), had spent some years as a press reader or proof corrector—not a bad position for acquiring some know- ledge of literature—had married his master's daughter, and acquired an extensive business, trying his hand occasionally in composition as a writer of prefaces and

043

dedications to the books that he printed. When he was near the age of fifty some bookseller friends of his, struck perhaps by the excellence of his letters, had suggested to him that he should compose a "familiar letter-writer "— "a little volume of letters, in common style, on such sub- jects

as might be of use to those country readers who were unable to indite for themselves." Richardson improved upon the suggestion. As it happened, he had had a singular experience in the way of writing letters for others. When he was a boy of thirteen three young women who could not write had employed him to conduct their correspondence with their sweethearts, which he did, he tells us, much to the satisfaction of his employers and without betraying their confidence. It occurred to him, turning over the project of the booksellers in his mind, and reverting to this early experience, that he might tell a story in a series of letters which would serve equally well as models for letter-writing and at the same time cultivate the principles of virtue and religion in the minds of the youth of both sexes. Accordingly, the publication being for country readers, he chose a country girl, Pamela, in the service of a young squire Mr B. (Fielding after- wards expanded the initial to "' Booby"), and made her relate in letters to her friends her experiences from day to day and week to week in very trying circumstances. Friends write to advise Pamela in her difficulties, and so the story is carried on with circumstantial minuteness, Pamela describing with the most careful elaboration every particular of what happens to her, and adding her own reflexions, surmises, and appeals for approbation and counsel, The natural effect of this method is that, if we have any sympathy with the heroine, we get intensely interested in her perplexities,—the very fulness of the details and the close truth to nature with which the novelist follows every turn in the girl's thoughts com- pelling us to read on. This effect was fully realized in days when the voluminous moralizing was more in har- mony with the general taste than it is now, and the kind of thing was new and fresh. The success of Pamela was immediate and widespread, and extended at once far beyond the circle of country cousins for whom it was designed. It is said that ladies at Ranelagh Gardens were to be seen holding up one to another their copies of Pamela to show that they had in their possession the most popular book of the day. The industrious antiquary has cast doubt upon this anecdote, pointing out that Ranelagh Gardens were not open to the public till eighteen months after Pamela had begun to run through many editions. Vauxhall, however, was open if Ranelagh was not, and the incident may have been observed there, At any rate the fact expressed by the anecdote is true enough, that the novel was at once and universally popular. Pamela, the first of one long line of novels, was published in November

1740. In January 1741 the following appeared in the Gentleman's Magazine :—' Several encomiums on a series of Familiar Letters, published but last month, entitled Pamela, or Virtue Rewarded, came too late for this magazine, and we believe there will be little occasion for inserting them in our next, because a second edition will then come out to supply the demands of the country, it being judged in town as great a sign of want of curiosity not to have read Pamela as not to have seen the Wrench and Jtalian Dancers." This testimony is hardly less quaint and significant than the accredited anecdote.

It was thus that this industrious prosperous printer, a stout, rosy, vain, precise little man, carrying himself with sensitive dignity, not at all the kind of man that might have been expected to be a fashionable novelist, stumbled in the natural course of his business upon a new species of composition for which he had an unsuspected genius.

o44

The fame of Pamela made him a great personal favourite, especially with women, of whose hearts and fancies he had shown a knowledge so intimate. Several ladies of quality made a pet of him, deluged him with questions and con- fidences, and urged him to write more. Under this flatter- ing encouragement, the sedate author, still keeping his head and following his own plans amidst a multitude of counsellors, produced Clarissa Harlowe (1749), a model of every virtue in higher life, and Sir Charles Grandison (1753), his ideal of a perfect gentleman. Clarissa is universally acknowledged to be his masterpiece. An anec- dote was given by Macaulay which shows how entrancing the story may become to readers once fairly caught by the current of it. He took the whole eight volumes with him, when he was in India, to a hill station during the hot sea- son, and one day lent the first volume to the governor's wife. She read it and lent it to the governor's secretary, and went to Macaulay for the second. Thus all the eight volumes passed from hand to hand, and for a week or more the whole station was in a ferment over the fortunes of Clarissa, the readers anxiously waiting their turn for the successive volumes. Richardson is long-winded and prolix to a degree; but that, in spite of all his faults, he had the art of interesting his own generation was

abun- dantly proved, and apparently his greatest novel is still capable in favourable circumstances of exerting its spell. Richardson has long received the honour of being regarded as the founder of the English novel, but of late it has been customary to go a little farther back and trace the beginnings of the novel in the papers of Addison and Steele in the Tatler and the Spectator. The novel, it is said, was developed, not created, by Richardson. Now this is hardly fair to the ingenious printer, if it is meant to deny him any of the credit generally given to originators of new forms in literature. It is true that the novel was developed and not ereated, but it is not more true of Richardson's novel than of any other new species of composition, such as Marlowe's tragedy, or Scott's romantic tale, or Byron's personal epic. All alike are not created but developed in this sense that they have strongly marked affinities with kinds of writing immediately anterior to them. Thus in the novel of manners there are two elements—there is description of ordinary character, and there is plot-interest, 7.¢., there is astory. Both of these elements are found in the genera- tion before Richardson. But not in combination. 1t was he that combined them in his novel of manners, and therefore he is entitled to the praise of being the father of a new species of composition. There is abundance of description of manners in the Spectator and there are many delicate studies of character. And the general reader in the days of Queen Anne and of George I. had abundance of stories to choose from—tales of scandal, of crime, of high-flown romance. But it had not occurred to anybody before Richardson to make a heroine out of such a character as Jenny Simper, or a hero out of her baronet Sir Anthony Love, or a story out of incidents within the probabilities of ordinary life. The epistolary form in which his stories were cast, and which remains as a memorial of their first suggestion, was abandoned by Richardson's first great follower and satirist, Fielding; but it was Richardson that led the way into the new field of literature. He lived long enough to see many imitators. Within twelve years of the publication of Pamela, the Monthly Review began to complain of the labour of reading the multitude of novels submitted to its judgment, and the master- pieces of Fielding, Smollett, and Sterne were produced before his death in 1761. His correspondence was published in six volumes in 1804. (W. M.) RICHELIEU, Armanp bu Puesssis, CARDINAL DE (1585-1642), the greatest French statesman of the 17th century. As the chief

events of his life have been recorded in connexion with the sketch of his political career in the article FraNcE (vol. ix. pp. 567-570), it only remains briefly to mention here some matters of second- ary importance. In the early days of his courtiership when he retired for a time to Avignon Richelieu wrote two religious works which attained to considerable popu- larity—Principaua points de la foy deffendus contre Pescrit adressé au roy par les quatre ministres de Charenton (1617), and La méthode la plus facile et assurée de convertir ceux gut sont séparés de l Hglise (Paris, 1651). After he became master of France, his desire for distinction as a

man of letters and especially as a dramatic author led him to resort to various devices that were as undignified and ludicrous as they were high-handed and arbitrary. In the life of Corneille it has already been told how he employed " five poets" to "wash his dirty linen" (as Voltaire described the similar service he rendered to Frederick the Great), and how he attempted to revenge himself on Corneille, the greatest of the five, by causing the French Academy to pass a hostile verdict on the Cid. Even this high treason against art may perhaps be for- given in consideration of the practical services the cardinal rendered to the cause of literature. Les Thuileries, La Grande Pastorale, Mirame, and the other plays, over whose fate he trembled as over the result of an embassy or a campaign, have long been forgotten; but a permanent interest attaches to his MMJémoires and correspondence (though owing to his way of working with substitutes and assistants it has been a difficult task to settle how much of what passes under his name is authentic) :—Jfémoire d'Armand du Plessis de Richelieu, évéque de Lucon écrit de sa main, Vannée 1607 ou 1610, alors qwil méditait de paraitre &@ la cour, edited by Armand Baschet, 1880; LI' Histoire de la Mére et du Fils, (v.e., of Mary de' Medici and Louis XIII), Amsterdam, 1730, extending from 1610 to 1624, frequently attributed to Mézeray ; Mémoires from 1624-1638, published in Petitot's collection (Paris, 1823) ; Journal de M. le Cardinal de Richelieu, 1630- 1631 (Amsterdam, 1664, 2 vols.); Zestament politique du Cardinal de Richelieu (Paris, 1764); Les lettres, instruc- tions diplomatiques, et papiers Wétat du Cardinal de fichelieu, collected and

edited by M. Avenel, and forming five volumes of the Collection de documents inédits sur Vhistoire de France (Paris, 1853-56).

Besides the older works of Aubery (1660) and Leclerc (1694) see A. Jay, Hist. du ministere de Richeliew, 1815 ; Capefigue, Richelieu, Mazarin, la Fronde, &c., 1844; Caillet, L'administration en France sous Richelicu, 1860; Martineau, Le Cardinal de Richelicu, 1865; Topin, Louis XIII, et Richelicu, 1877 ; Sainte-Beauve, Causeries du lundi, vol. vii.

RICHELIEU, Lovis Francors ARMAND DU PLEssis, Duc pE, marshal of France and grand-nephew of Cardinal Richelieu, was born in Paris, 13th March 1696, and died in the same city 8th August 1788. Besides his reputation as the most scandalous Lovelace of a scandalous age, he attained, in spite of a deplorably defec- tive education, distinction as a diplomatist and general. As ambassador to Vienna (1725-1729) he settled in 1727 the preliminaries of peace; in 1745 he helped to gain the victory of Fontenoy; three years afterwards he made a brilliant defence of Genoa; in 1756 he expelled the English from Minorca by the capture of the San Felipe fortress; and in 1757-1758 he closed his military career by those pillaging campaigns in Hanover which pro- cured him the sobriquet of Petit Pére de la Maraude. In his early days he was thrice imprisoned in the Bastille,— in 1711 at the instance of his stepfather, in 1716 in consequence of a duel, and in 1719 for his share in Alberoni's conspiracy against the Regent. He was thrice married : first, against his will, at the age of fourteen to Mademoiselle de Noailles; secondly, in 1734, by the in- trigues (according to the witty Frenchman's own account) of Voltaire, to Mademoiselle de Guise ; and thirdly, when he was eighty-four years old, to an Irish lady. Marshal Richelieu's Jlémoires published by Soulavie in nine volumes (1790) are partially spurious.

RICHELIEU, Armanp EMMANUEL pu Ptessis, Duc DE (born 25th September 1766, died 17th May 1822), grandson of the marshal, is remembered mainly as the enlightened and heroic governor of Odessa (1803-1813) who guided the city through the terrible years of the plague, and as the minister of foreign affairs under Louis

XVIII. to whom it fell to sign the treaty of 1815. A pension of 50,000 francs, voted to him by the two chambers, he bestowed on the public charities of Bor- deaux.

RICHERUS, a chronicler of the 10th century, son of Rodulf, a trusty councillor and captain of Louis IV., studied at Rheims under Gerbert, afterwards Pope Silvester IJ. His intimacy with this famous man gave him many opportunities of knowing the history of his time, and when Gerbert became archbishop of Rheims he charged Richerus with the task of writing a history of the Gauls. This history in four books begins with Charles the Fat and Eudes, and goes down to the year 995. From 969 onwards Richerus had no earlier history before him, and his work is the chief source for the period when the Capets superseded the Carlovingians. It was first edited in Pertz's Monumenta Germaniz, vol. iii., and there have since been several separate editions.

RICHMOND), a town of Surrey, is situated on the south bank of the Thames, here crossed by a stone bridge of five arches, 84 miles west of Hyde Park Corner by road, and 9? from the Waterloo station of the South-Western Rail- way. The town, anciently called Syenes and afterwards Schene and Sheen, until the name was in 1500 changed to Richmond by command of Henry VIL, grew up round the royal manor house, which became a frequent residence of different sovereigns, but of which nothing more than a gateway now remains. Edward I. received the Scotch commissioners at his manor of Sheen in 1300. The palace was rebuilt by Edward III., who died there in 1377. It was frequently resided in by Richard II., and here his wife Anne of Bohemia died, upon which he cursed the place and "caused it to be thrown down and defaced." By Henry V. it was, however, rebuilt, and a great tourna- ment was held at it in 1492 by Henry VIL, who after its destruction by fire in 1499 restored it and named it Rich- mond. Henry VIII. gave it to Wolsey to reside in, after the latter presented him with the new palace of Hampton Court. James I. settled it on his son Henry, prince of Wales, who restored and embellished it at great expense. Charles I. added to it the new deer park generally known as Richmond Park, 2253 acres in extent, which is sur- rounded by a wall 11 miles in length. After the execu- tion of the king, the parliament presented the park to the citizens of London, who again presented it to

Charles IT. at the Restoration. Though partly dismantled, the palace was the residence of the queen dowager till 1665, and by James II. it was used as a nursery for the young prince ; but, gradually falling into decay, it was, about 1720, parcelled into tenements. In the old deer park extending northwards from the site of the palace towards Kew an observatory was erected in 1769, occupying the site of a Carthusian convent founded by Henry V., and a dwelling house in which Swift for some time resided. To the south-east of the town, at the entrance to Richmond Park, is Richmond Hill, from which is the famous view of the Thames with the surrounding country to the west. The White Lodge in Richmond Park is usually the residence of some inember of the royal family. The town itself is without special interest, and consists chiefly of one long and irregular street running north and south. The church of St Mary Magdalen is of considerable antiquity, but has been almost entirely rebuilt; it contains a large number of monuments to celebrated persons. The theatre, first established in 1719, was during his later years leased by Edmund Kean. The town has a Wesleyan theological college founded in 1834, a free public library, and public baths. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1210 acres) in 1871 was 15,113, and in 1881 it was

19,066.

O45

RICHMOND, a borough in the North Riding of Yorkshire, is finely situated on the Swale, at the terminus of the Richmond branch of the North-Eastern Railway, 44 miles north-west of York and 15 south-west of Darlington. The interest of the town centres in the castle, said to have been founded by Alan Rufus, son of Hoel, count of Bretagne, who is also said to have rebuilt the town on his obtaining the estates of the Saxon Earl Edwin, embracing two hundred manors of Richmond and extending over nearly a third of the North Riding. When Henry VII. came to the throne these possessions reverted to the crown. Henry VIII. gave it to his son Henry by a daughter of Sir John Blount, and Charles II. bestowed the title of duke of Richmond on his son by the duchess of Portsmouth. The castle is situated on a perpendicular rock rising about 100 feet above the Swale, and from its great strength was con- sidered inaccessible.

Originallyit covered an area of 5 acres, but the only portions of it now remaining are the Norman keep, with pinnacled tower and walls 100 feet high by 11 feet thick, and some other smaller towers. A portion of it is now occupied by the North York Rifles militia. The old church of St Mary, chiefly in the Gothic style, though with some traces of Norman, has been restored under the direction of Sir Gilbert Scott. For the free grammar school founded by Elizabeth a Gothic building was erected in 1850, in memory of the Rev. James Tate, a former master. The tower of the Franciscan abbey founded in 1258 still remains. The chief modern buildings are the town-hall, the masonic hall, and the workmen's hall. The principal trade is in agricultural produce, but there are a paper mill and an iron and brass foundry. The town received its first charter from Elizabeth. Under the Municipal Corporations Act it is governed by a mayor, four aldermen, and twelve councillors. Up to 1885, when it ceased to be separately represented, Richmond was a parliamentary borough, returning two members till 1868, and one after that date. The population of the municipal borough (area 2520 acres) in 1871 was 4443, and in 1881 it was 4502.

RICHMOND, a city of the United States, the county seat of Wayne county, Indiana, is situated in a fine agricultural region on the east branch of the White Water River (a sub-tributary of the Ohio), 68 miles east of Indianapolis. It is an important railway junction, has a city park 135 acres in extent, manufactures machinery, agricultural implements, &c., and contains a public library (15,000 volumes), a museum, two theatres, and two edu- cational institutions (Earlham College, 1859) belonging to the Society of Friends, which is strongly represented in the city. The population was 9445 in 1870, and 12,742 in 1880. The city obtained its charter in 1845.

RICHMOND, a city of the United States, the capital of Virginia, is situated in Henrico county, on the north side of the James River, at the point where the lower falls (100 feet in 6 miles) mark the limit of the tide ascending from Chesapeake Bay. On the other side of the river, and in the county of Chesterfield, but connected with Richmond by bridges, is Manchester. By rail the city is 116 miles south-south-west of Washington. At mean high tides vessels drawing 14 feet of water can come up to

Rocketts, as the lower district is called. The town proper occupies a group of hills—Gamble's Hill, Shockoe Hill, Church Hill, &e.—and looks down over the river, from which it is separated by a strip of flat ground. Main Street is a typical street after the old Southern style, the large portion burned in 1865 having been rebuilt in keeping with the remnant that escaped. By far the most conspicuous edifice in the city is» the Capitol, on the summit of Shockoe Hill, designed by Thomas Jefferson, after the Maison Carrée of Nimes. Beneath the dome of

the central hall stands Houdon's marble life-size statue of Washington in the uniform of a pre-Revolutionary Ameri- can general, and in the esplanade near the west gates of Capitol Square is Crawford's famous bronze equestrian statue of the same hero (1858), surrounded by bronze figures of Patrick Henry, Thomas Jefferson, John Marshall, George Mason, Thomas Nelson, and Andrew Lewis. North of the Capitol stands Foley's bronze statue of General "Stonewall" Jackson, the gift of English ad- mirers of that great Confederate leader. A governor's house, a State penitentiary, a custom-house and post office, a city-hall and almshouse, and two market-houses are among the principal public buildings. Libby prison, in which thousands of Federal prisoners were confined during the Civil War, was originally a disused tobacco factory, and is now scarcely distinguishable from the other dilapidated brick warehouses in its vicinity. St John's Episcopal church on Church Hill was, in 1775, the meeting-place of the Virginia convention to which Patrick Henry addressed his famous "Give me liberty or give me death," and in 1788 of another convention summoned to discuss the ratification of the Federal Constitution. Monumental Church (Episcopal) commemorates the disas- trous burning in 1811 of the theatre which then occupied the site. The State Library, the Virginia Historical Society, Southern Historical Society, Richmond College, and the Medical College (1838) are institutions of note. Holywood Cemetery, occupying a district of great natural beauty to the west of the city, contains the graves of thousands of Confederate

soldiers and the monuments of President Monroe and General J. E. B. Stuart, and the Confederate soldiers' monument. Previous to the Civil

War Richmond was the commercial capital of the South |

and a great entrepdt for the produce of the Southern States, Cuba, South America, and Great Britain. Its clipper ships made fast voyages to the Pacific for tea, silk, and other Eastern wares. Its auction sales (monthly or even fortnightly) drew buyers from every part of the Union, even from the northern cities which now supply it with the very commodities they then visited it to pur- chase. When the war was over Richmond was without ships, merchants, or capital. The tea trade had gone to London, the South-American to New York and Boston, In recent years, however, a new period of commercial pro- sperity appears to have set in, and, while several of the old sources of wealth have disappeared, the city still remains the natural centre of some of the principal trades of the Sonth. Before the war more tobacco was sold in Rich- mond than perhaps in any city of the Union (fifty-six manufacturers were numbered in 1857), and this still remains an important staple. The flour trade is also of great extent. There are a large number of iron works, including those of the Tredegar Company; and granite quarries are worked in the vicinity of the city. In 1857 the real estate of Richmond was assessed at $18,259,816, and the personal property at $10,287,278. By 1885 the corresponding figures were $34,502,903 and $15,000,000. The city is the owner of both gas and water works. The population, which was only 5737 in the beginning of the century, has increased as follows :—9785 in 1810; 12,067 in 1820; 16,060 in 1830; 20,153 in 1840; 27,570 in 1850; 37,910 in 1860; 51,038 in 1870; 63,600 in 1880 (27,832 coloured).

The first settlement on part of the site of Richmond is said to date from 1609 ; and Fort Charles was erected as a defence against the Indians in 1644-45. But the real origin of the town, which was incorporated in 1745, was Byrd's warehouse, erected by Colonel William Byrd in the close of the 17th century. It was still a small village when in 1779 it was made the capital of the State of

Virginia. From May 1861 till April 1865, when it was occupied by the Federal army, Richmond was the seat of government of the

Confederate States. On the capture of Petersburg by General Grant the Confederate leaders thought it impossible to hold the city, in spite of the strength of its fortifications ; and Ewell, who com- manded the rear-guard of the retreating army, set the great tobacco factories and flour-mills and the arsenal on fire; the conflagra- tion lasted till the evening of the following day. In September 1870 part of the city was laid under water by the floods of the James river.

RICHMOND, Leen (1772-1827), writer of tracts, was born 29th January 1772 at Liverpool, where his father was a physician. He was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1794 and M.A. in 1797. In 1798 he was appointed to the joint curacies of Brading and Yaverland in the Isle of Wight. Through the petusal of Wilberforce's Practical View an evangeli- cal bias was given to his mind, which led him to devote himself with great earnestness to the reclamation of the masses. He took a prominent interest in the British and Foreign Bible Society, the Church Missionary Society, and various other institutions of a similar kind. In 1805 he became chaplain to the Lock Hospi- tal, London, and in the same year was presented to the rectory of Turvey, Bedfordshire, where he remained till his death, 8th May 1827. He was also appointed chaplain to the duke of Kent. The best known of the tracts of Legh Richmond is the Dairyman's Daughter, of which as many as four millions in nineteen languages were circulated before 1849. A collected edition of his tracts was first published in 1814 under the title of Annals of the Poor. He was also the author of Domestic Portraiture, and Memoirs of his Three Children; and he edited a series of the Fathers of the English Church.

See Memoirs by Grimshawe, 1828 ; Life by Bedell, 1829.

RICHTER, Ernst Frieprich Epuarp (1808-1879), writer on musical theory and composition, was born at Grosschénau in Saxony, on October 24, 1808. He first studied music at Zittau, and afterwards at Leipsic, where he attained so high a reputation that in 1843 he was appointed professor of harmony and counterpoint at the conservatorium of music, then newly founded by Men- delssohn. On the death of Hauptmann, January 3, 1868, he was elected cantor of the Thomasschule, which office

he retained until his death, April 9, 1879. He is best known by three theoretical works — Lehrbuch der Harmonie, Lehre vom Contrapunct, and Lehre von der Fuge—originally written for the use of his pupils at the Conservatorium, but now everywhere accepted as valuable text-books, and well known to English students through the excellent translation by Mr Franklin Taylor.

RICHTER, Joann Pav Frieprich (1763-1825), usually called Jean PavL, the greatest German humorist, was born at Wunsiedel, in Bavaria, on the 21st March 1763. His father was a schoolmaster and organist at Wunsiedel, but in 1765 he became a pastor at Joditz, and in 1776 at Schwarzenbach, where he died in 1779. Having attended the gymnasium at Hof for two years, Richter went in 1780 to the university of Leipsic. His original intention was to enter his father's profession, but theology did not interest him, and he soon devoted himself wholly to the study of literature. Unable to maintain himself at Leipsic, he secretly left it in 1784 and lived with his mother at Hof. From 1787 to 1789 he served as a tutor at Tépen, a village near Hof; and afterwards he taught the children of several families at Schwarzenbach. During all these years he had to struggle with extreme poverty,

but he never lost the buoyancy of his temper, nor did he

doubt for a moment that his genius would in the end be generally recognized. His hardships left no trace of bitterness on his frank and manly spirit.

Richter began his career as a man of letters by writing the Grinldndische Processe and Auswahl aus des Teufels

Papieren, the former of which was issued in 1783-84, the | reader, and forgot nothing that had ever touched his fancy or

latter in 1789. These works were not received with much favour, and in later life Richter himself had little sympathy with their satirical tone. His next book, Die Unsichtbare Loge, a romance, published in 1793, had all the qualities which were soon to make him famous, and its power was immediately recognized by some of the best critics of the day. Soon after the appearance of this book he abandoned his work at Schwarzenbach, and lived again with his mother at Hof, occasionally paying long visits to a friend at Baireuth. Encouraged by the reception of Die Unsicht- bare Loge, he sent forth in rapid succession Jfesperus (1794), Biographische Belustigungen unter der Gehirnschale einer Riesin (1796), Leben des Quintus Fixlein (1796), Blumen-, Frucht-, und Dornenstiicke, oder Ehestand, Tod, und Hochzeit des Armenadvocaten Siebenkds (1796-97), Der Jubelsenior (1797), and Das Kampaner Thal (1798). This series of writings secured for Richter a great place in German literature, and during the rest of his life every work he produced was welcomed by a wide circle of admirers.

After his mother's death he went in 1797 to Leipsic, and in the following year to Weimar, where he had much pleasant intercourse with Herder, by whom he was warmly appreciated. He did not become intimate with Goethe and Schiller, to both of whom his literary methods were repugnant ; but in Weimar as elsewhere his remarkable conversational powers and his genial manners made him a favourite in general society. He was especially liked by women, and Frau von Kalb, who has also a place in the biography of Schiller, even offered to obtain a divorce in order to marry him. In 1801, however, he married Caroline Mayer, a bright, accomplished, and amiable lady whom he met in Berlin in 1800. They lived first at Meiningen, then at Coburg; and finally, in 1804, they settled at Baireuth. Here Richter spent a quiet, simple, and happy life, constantly occupied with his work as a writer. In 1808 he was fortunately delivered from anxiety as to outward necessities by the kindness of the prince primate, who gave him a pension of a thousand florins. Before settling at

Baireuth, Richter had published Das heimliche Klaglied der jetzigen Mcnner (1801), and Titan (1800-3) ; and these were followed by Flegeljahre (1804-5). Titan and Flegeljahre he regarded as his masterpieces, and this judgment has been confirmed by posterity. His later imaginative works were Dr Katzen- berger's Badereise (1809), Des Leldpredigers Schmelze [Reise nach Fldtz (1809), Leben Fibels (1812), and Der Komet, oder Nikolaus Marggraf (1820-22). In Vorschule der Aesthetik (1804) he expounded 'his ideas on art; he discussed the principles of education in JLevana, oder Eraehungslehre (1807); and the opinions suggested by current events he set forth in I'riedenspredigt (1808), Démmerungen fiir Deutschland (1809), Mars und Phébus Lhronwechsel im J. 1814 (1814), and Politische Fasten- predigten (1817). In his last years he began Wahrheit aus Jean Paul's Leben, to which additions from his papers and other sources were made after his death by C. Otto and E. Forster. In 1821 Richter lost his only son, a youth of the highest promise ; and he never quite recovered from this shock. He died of dropsy on the 14th November 1825.

Schiller said of Richter that he would have been worthy of admiration 'if he had made as good use of his riches as other men made of their poverty." And it is true that in the form of his writings he never did full justice to his great powers. In working out lis conceptions he found it impossible to restrain the expres- sion of any powerful feeling by which he might happen to be moved. He was equally unable to resist the temptation to bring in strange facts or notions which occurred to him ; and of such facts and notions he had a vast store, for he was an omnivorous

awakened his sympathies. Hence every one of his works is irregular in structure, and in some of them it is hard to detect the governing idea by which the relation of the parts to the whole is supposed to be controlled. His style, too, lacks directness, precision, and grace. With the main idea of a sentence he almost invariably associates a crowd of subordinate ideas ; and they are often grouped in an order so capricious and so fantastic that the meaning can be made out only by the closest study. The splendour of Richter's genius, however, makes it easy for the class of readers to whom he appeals to forgive even these grave defects. His

imagination was one of extraordinary fertility, and he had a surprising powcr of suggesting great thoughts by means of the simplest incidents and relations. No German prose writer has presented more fascinating pictures of childhood and youth, of friendship and love; nor has any one shown more fincly how sordid circumstances may evoke the noblest qualities of loyal and generous minds. The love of nature was one of Richter's deepest pleasures, and he communicates his own delight in its beauty by many a description glowing with all the colour and the radiance of the real world. His expressions of religious feelings are also marked by a truly poctic spirit, for to Richter visible things were but the symbols of the invisible, and in the unseen realities alone he found clements which seemed to him to give significance and dignity to human life. His humour, the most distinctive of his qualities, cannot be dissociated from the other characteristics of his writings. Itmingled with all his thoughts, and to some extcut determined the form in which he embodied even his most serious reflections. That it is sometimes extravagant and grotesque cannot be disputed, but it is never harsh nor vulgar, and generally it springs naturally from the perception of the incongruity between ordinary facts and ideal laws. 'here are works of imaginative genius which we may read and enjoy without necessarily thinking of the author. The writer may reflect nature with so much fidelity that at first sight no element may scem to be imported into his conceptions from his personal peculiarities. But we appear always to sce Richter's face and to hear his voice behind the printed page ; and his creations are true and suggestive only in so far as they are manifestations of his own inward life. This means, of course, that his genius was not in any important sense dramatic, and that he was much more closely akin to the romantic than to the classic school ; but it does not imply that his works produce a monotonous impression. Richter's personality was so deep and many-sided that in every new book he had some fresh secret to disclose. And the more he is known through his unconscious self- revelation the more he is loved and honoured; for we soon learn that with all his wilfulness and eccentricity he was a man of a pure and sensitive spirit, with a passionate scorn for pretence and an

ardent enthusiasm for truth and goodness.

1n 1826-38 a complete edition of Richtcr's works was published in sixty-five volumes, including several posthumous works. The second edition (1840-42) was in thirty-three volumes, the third (1860-63) in thirty-four. There are also a good many volumes of Richter's correspondence, Sce Déring, Leben und Charakteristik Richter's (1826); Kunz, Jean Paul Friedrich Richter (1839); and Nerrlich, Jean Paul und seine Zeitgenossen (1876), There are two admirable articles on Richter in Carlyle''s Miscellanies.

RICIMER, created "comes" of the empire under Valentinian III., was the son ofa chief of the Suevi, who had married a daughter of Wallia king of the Visigoths. He was brought up at Valentinian's court, and served with distinction under Aetius. In 456 a decisive naval victory over the Vandals off Corsica, followed soon after- wards by the defeat of their land forces near Agrigentum, earned for him the title of ''Deliverer of Italy" and brought him within sight of the goal of his ambition. Having vanquished and deposed the emperor Avitus in October of that year, he for some time exercised every function of sovereignty over Italy under the title of "patrician," which he received from Leo in February 457. Precluded by his barbarian origin from aspiring to the imperial title, he consented to the elevation of Majorian in April 457, but, encouraged by the misfortunes of that brave but simple-minded soldier, he was equally ready to force his deposition four years afterwards (August 461). The puppet on whom the imperial dignity was now bestowed was Libius Severus, but Ricimer continued to command armies, negotiate alliances, and wield an inde- pendent and despotic authority over the Italian peninsula, although his power throughout the rest of the Western empire was practically neutralized by the influence of Marcellinus in Dalmatia and Aigidius in Gaul. When Anthemius, invested with the purple by Leo, arrived at

Rome in 467, Ricimer was politic enough to acquiesce with a good grace, and was rewarded by being made the son-in-law of the new emperor; but subsequently a quarrel with his father-in-law occasioned his withdrawal to Milan, whence he marched at the head of an army upon Rome, which he besieged and sacked, Anthemius being among the slain (July 11, 472).

Olybrius was next made emperor at the instance of the Roman "kingmaker," who died of a malignant fever on August

18, 472.

RICKETS, a disease of childhood characterized chiefly by a softened condition of the bones and by other evidences of perverted nutrition. As regards its nature and causa- tion rickets has been so fully considered under PATHOLOGY that all that appears now necessary is to give a few details as to its chief manifestations, and to refer briefly fo some points in relation to its prevention and treatment.

Although, as already indicated, rickets may have its origin (at least in some instances) during intra-uterine life, it is seldom that it can be recognized until several months after birth, and it most commonly attracts atten- tion at about the end of the first year. The symptoms which precede the outward manifestation of the disease are marked disorders of the digestive and alimentary functions. The child's appetite is diminished, and there is frequent vomiting together with diarrhcea or irregularity of the bowels, the evacuations being clay-coloured and unhealthy. Along with this there is a falling away in flesh. Import- ance is to be attached, as pointed out by Sir William Jenner, to certain other symptoms present in the early stages, namely, profuse sweating of the head and upper parts of the body, particularly during sleep, with at the same time dry heat of the lower parts and a tendency in the child to kick off all coverings and expose the limbs. At the same time there is great tenderness of the bones, as shown by the pain produced on moving or handling the child. The urine contains a large amount of calcareous salts. Gradually the changes in the shape of the bones become visible, at first chiefly noticed at the ends of the long bones, as in those of the arm, causing enlargements at the wrists, or in the ribs, producing a knobbed appear- ance at the junction of their ends with the costal carti- lages. The bones also from their softened condition tend to become distorted and misshapen, both by the action of the muscles and by the superincumbent weight of the body. Those of the limbs are bent outwards and forwards, and the child becomes "' bow-legged " or "in-kneed " often to an extreme degree. The trunk of the body likewise shows various alterations and deformities

owing to curvatures of the spine, the flattening of the lateral curves of the ribs, and the projection forwards of the sternum. The cavity of the chest may thus be contracted and the development of the thoracic organs interfered with as well as their func- tions more or less embarrassed. The pelvis undergoes dis- tortion, which may reduce its capacity to a degree that in the female may afterwards lead to serious difficulties in parturition. The head of the rickety child is large-looking in its upper part, the individual bones of the cranium sometimes remaining long ununited, while the face is small and ill-developed, and the teeth appear late and fall out or decay early. The constitutional conditions of ill-health continue, and the nutrition and development of the child are greatly retarded.

The disease may terminate in recovery, with more or less of deformity and dwarfing, the bones although altered in shape becoming firmly ossified, and this is the common result in the majority of instances. On the other hand, during the progress of the disease, various intercurrent ailments are apt to arise which may cause death, such as the infectious fevers, bronchitis and other pulmonary affec-

tions, chronic hydrocephalus, convulsions, laryngismus stri- dulus, &c.

An acute form of rickets of rare occurrence has been described by writers on diseases of children, in which all the symptoms are of more rapid development and progress, the result in many instances being fatal.

The treatment of rickets is necessarily more hygienic than medi- cinal, and includes such preventive measures as may be exercised by strict attention to personal health and nutrition on the part of mothers, especially where there appears to be any tendency to a rickety development inany members of the family. Very important also is the avoidance of too prolonged nursing, which not only tends directly to favour the development of rickets in the infant nursed, but by its weakening effects upon the mother's health is calculated to engender the disease in any succeeding children. At the same time it must be admitted that, when the mother is healthy, her milk abundant, aud nursing

discontinued before the lapse of the first year, there is no better means of preventing the occurrence of rickets than this method of feeding an infant, the disease, as is well known, being far more frequently met with in children brought up by hand. The management of the child exhibiting any tendency to rickets is of great importance, but can only be alluded to in general terms. 'The digestive disorders characteristic of the setting in of the disease render necessary the greatest care and watch- fulness as to diet. Any one system of feeding the infant may at times be found to disagree, and may require to be changed or modified in some particulars. Thus, if the child be not nursed but fed artificially, milk, either fresh or condensed, should be almost the only article of diet for at least the first year, and the chief element for the next. When not digested well, as may at times be shown by its appearance as a curd in the evacuations, it may be diluted with water or lime water, or else discontinued for a short time, carefully-made gruel or barley water being sub- stituted. Many of the so-called "infant's foods" which are now so extensively used appear to be well adapted for their purpose, but when employed too abundantly and to the exclusion of the due amount of milk are often productive of digestive and in- testinal disorders, probably from their containing a greater amount of starchy matter than can be utilized. From the end of the first year light animal soups may occasionally be given with advantage. The medicinal remedies most to be relied on are those which improve the digestive functions and minister to nutrition, and include such agents as the preparations of iron, quinine, and especially cod-liver oil. The administration of lime salts in large quantity has been proposed by some physicians under the idea that in this way the deficient earthy matter might be supplied to the bones. M. Piorry recommended for this purpose powdered fresh bones which contain a large amount of phosphate of lime. No great success can be claimed for this plan, and it is generally recognized that the most useful method of treatment is that which is directed to the feeble assimilative powers, and seeks to supply food of a kind which will be at once readily digested and nutritious. Of no less importance, however, are abundance of fresh air, cleanliness, warm clothing, and attention to the general hygiene of the child and to regularity in all its functions.

When the disease is showing evidence of advancing, it is desir- able to restrain the child from walking, as far as possible. But this precaution may be to some extent rendered unnecessary by the use of splints and other apparatus as supports for the limbs and body, enabling the child to move about without the risk of bending and deformity of the bones which otherwise would probably be the result. (J. O. A.)

RICKMAN, Tuomas (1776-1841), architect and writer on the styles of the Middle Ages, was born in 1776 at Maidenhead, Berkshire, where his father practised as a surgeon, and was brought up as a member of the Society of Friends. In 1797 he was apprenticed to a London druggist as a step towards entering his father's profession, but finding the work distasteful he gave it up, and for several years tried one employment after another with little success. He married early, and lost his wife, who was his cousin, in 1808. At that time he was a partner in a corn-factor's business in London, but he afterwards went to live in Liverpool as assistant to an insurance broker, and was soon led to take a very keen interest in the study of ancient buildings, especially churches. All his spare time was spent in sketching and making careful measured drawings, till he gained a knowledge which was very remarkable at a time when but little taste existed for the beauties of the Gothic styles. In this way Rickman

was led to make designs of his own, founded upon his study of old examples ; and, when a large grant of money was made by the Government to build new churches, he sent ina design of his own which was successful in an open competition; thus he was fairly launched upon the profession of an architect, for which his natural gifts strongly fitted him. Rickman then moved to Birmingham, and at first worked at his new profession with Mr H. Hutchinson as managing clerk ; and when he died in 1830 Rickman entered into partnership with Mr Hussey, having become one of the most successful architects of his time. He built an immense number of churches, chapels, and other buildings, among which some of the chief are churches at Hampton Lucy, Ombersley, and Stretton-on- Dunsmore, St George's at Birmingham, St Philip's and St

Matthew's both in Bristol, two in Carlisle, St Peter's and St Paul's at Preston, St David's in Glasgow, Grey Friars at Coventry, and many others. He also designed the new court of St John's College, Cambridge, a palace for the bishop of Carlisle, and several large country houses. These are all in the Gothic style, but, though superior perhaps to the buildings of his predecessors, they show more know- ledge of the outward form of the medizval style than any real acquaintance with its spirit, and are little better than dull copies of old work, disfigured by much poverty of detail. Rickmann nevertheless was an important stage in the revival of taste for medievalism, perhaps in that respect only second to Pugin. His book entitled An Attempt to Discriminate the Styles of Architecture in England is a work which deserves great credit for its painstaking research ; a great many editions of it were published, and it was eventually much improved and enlarged. Rickman died in 1841.

RIDDLES are probably the oldest extant form of humour, They spring from man's earliest perception that there are such things as analogies in nature. Man observes an example of analogy, puts his observations in the form of a question, and there is the riddle ready made. Some Beeotian humorist, for example, detected the ana- logy between the life of humanity—the child on all fours, the man erect on two legs, old age with its staff—on one side, and on the other the conception of an animal with a varying number of limbs. Put this ina question, and it is the riddle of the Sphinx. Another instance is the ques- tion—" What we caught we threw away, what we could not catch we kept." Homer is said to have died of vexation at not being able to discover the answer to this riddle, still current on the coast of Brittany, in Germany, and in Gascony. After inventing the riddle, men began to use it in a kind of game; bets were staked on the answer, and sides were made, each side backing its champion. These sports in Marriner's time were common in Tonga ; they are no less popular among the African Woloffs. The example of Samson's riddle set to the Philistines is an instance of the sport in a Semitic country. In mahrchen and ballads, the hero's chance of winning his beloved, or of escaping threatened punishment, is often made to turn on his power of answering riddles. It follows from the artless and primitive character of the riddle that regular popular riddles (Devinettes) are widely distributed, like popular tales, popular songs, and popular customs. The Woloffs ask,

“ What flies for ever and rests never?” Answer, The Wind. The Basutos put this riddle—“‘ What is wing- less and legless, yet flies fast and cannot be imprisoned 1” Answer, The Voice. The German riddle runs—“ What can go in face of the sun yet leave no shadow 1” Answer, The Wind. In riddles may perhaps be noticed the ani- mistic or personalizing tendency of early human thought, just beginning to be conscious of itself. The person who asked these riddles had the old sense of wind, for example,

o4+9

as a person, yet probably, unlike the Bushmen, he would never expect to see the personal wind. He knew the distinction between the personal and impersonal well enough to be sure that his enigma would present some difficulty. The riddle, to be brief, is an interrogatory

form of the fable, and like the fable originates among

rude people, and is perpetuated in the folklore of peasantry.

Probably the best book on the riddle (a subject less frequently studied than the mahrchen or the myth) is Eugene Rolland, Devinettes ou Enigmes Populaires, with a preface by M. Gaston Paris. The power of answering riddles among the people who invented the legend of Solomon and the queen of Sheba seems to have been regarded as a proof of great sagacity. The riddle proper is all’ but extinct outside folklore and savage life, and has been replaced by the conundrum, which is a pun in the interrogative form.

RIDING. See Horsemansuip, vol. xii. p. 195.

RIDLEY, Nicuouas (c. 1500-1555), bishop of London, and a martyr to the Reformation, was descended from a family long seated in Northumberland. The second son of Nicholas Ridley of Unthank near Willimoteswick in that county, he was born in the beginning of the 16th cen- tury. From the grammar school of Newcastle-upon-Tyne he was sent to Pembroke College, Cambridge, about 1518, being supported there by his uncle, Dr Robert Ridley, fellow of Queen’s College. At the university he specially distin- guished himself in Greek. He proceeded B.A. 1522-23,

became a fellow of his college, and, having taken orders, was sent about 1527 at the expense of his uncle to study on the Continent, first at the Sorbonne, Paris, and afterwards at Louvain. On his return to Cambridge he was in 1530 chosen under-treasurer of the university ; and in 1534 he was senior proctor, when along with the vice-chancellor and the other proctor Richard Wilkes he signed the decree of the university against the jurisdiction of the pope in England. About this time he began to distinguish himself as an orator and disputant, and was chosen chaplain of the university, and "Magister Glo- merie,"—an office in which most probably (for its duties have been much disputed) he had to instruct the university entrants in Latin, Cranmer, archbishop of Canterbury, after Ridley had proceeded B.D. in 15387, appointed him one of his chaplains, and in April 1538 collated him to the vicarage of Herne, Kent, where he began to preach the doctrines of the Reformation. In 1540, having commenced doctor of divinity, he was made king's chaplain; and in the same year he was elected master of his college in Cambridge. Soon after he was appointed a canon of Canterbury. At the instigation of Bishop Gardiner he was accused in the bishop's court of preaching against the doctrine of the Six Articles, but after the matter had been referred to commissioners specially appointed by the king he was acquitted. In 1545 he renounced the doctrine of tran- substantiation, and was made a canon of Westminster. In 1547 he was presented by the fellows of Pembroke Hall to the living of Soham, Cambridgeshire, and the same year was consecrated bishop of Rochester. In 1550 he was one of the commissioners for examining Bishops Gardiner and Bonner. He concurred in their deprivation, and succeeded the latter in the see of London. In 1552, returning from Cambridge, he paid a visit to the princess, afterwards Queen Mary, at Hunsdon, Hertfordshire. On account of her unqualified condemnation of the Reformed doctrines, he from this time concurred in the proposals to exclude her from the throne, and he signed the will of Edward VI. settling the crown on Lady Jane Grey. On the death of the king, he, in a sermon at St Paul's Cross, 16th July

1553, affirmed that Mary was illegitimate, and predicted that her accession would be disastrous to the religious interests of England. After

the proclamation of Mary he set out for Framlingham to confess his offences against her, but was met with a warrant for his arrest and was committed to the Tower. In March 1554 he was sent down, along with Cranmer and Latimer, to Oxford to be tried before a committee of convocation. He was convicted of heresy, and after refusing to recant was sentenced to death. The trial having been declared irregular, he was, in September 1555, along with Cranmer and Latimer, tried by special commissioners, and on the 16th October he, in company with Latimer, was burnt at the stake at Oxford.

The collected edition of the works of Ridley, published in 1841 with a biographical notice by Rev. Henry Christmas, includes 4 Treatise concerning Images in Churches ; A brief Declaration of the Lord's Supper ; Certain godly and comfortable Conferences between Bishop Ridley and Mr Hugh Latimer during their imprisonment ; A Comparison between the comfortable Doctrine of the Gospel and the Lraditions of the Popish Religion; and a variety of other pamphlets. His life by his relative Dr Gloucester Ridley appeared in 1763. See also Foxe's Adets and Monuments ; Strype's Cranmer ; Burnet's History of the Reformation; Wood's Athenze Oxon.; Cooper's Athenz Cantab. ; and Froude's History of England.

RIEMANN, Gore Frizprich Brernnarp (1826- 1866), mathematician, was born on the 17th September 1826, at Breselenz, near Dannenberg in Hanover. His father Friedrich Bernhard Riemann came from Mecklenburg, had served in the war of freedom, and had finally settled as pastor in Quickborn. Here with his five brothers and sisters Riemann spent his boyhood and received, chiefly from his father, the elements of his education. He showed at an early age well-marked mathematical powers, and his progress was so rapid in arithmetic and geometry that he was soon beyond the guidance not only of his father but of schoolmaster Schulz, who assisted in the mathematical department of his training.

In 1840 he went to live with his grandmother at fanover, where he attended the lyceum. After her death, two years later, he entered the Johanneum at Liineburg, where he finished in four years more his gymnasial educa- tion. Notwithstanding some disadvantages due to

defects in his earlier training, and more particularly to shyness arising from his rustic upbringing, he speedily distinguished himself in all the branches of the gymnasial course, and was already known by the school authorities as a mathe- matician of great promise. The director, Schmalfuss, encouraged him in his mathematical studies by lending him books (among them Euler's works and Legendre's Theory of Numbers), and readily understood that he had no ordinary schoolboy to deal with when he found that works of such profoundity were read, mastered, and returned within a few days. In 1846, in his twentieth year, Riemann entered himself asa student of philology and theology in the university of Gottingen. This choice of a university career was dictated more by the natural desire of his father to see his son enter his own profession, and by the poverty of his family, which rendered the speedy earning of his living a matter of importance, than by his own preference. He sacrificed so far to the bent of his genius as to attend lectures on the numerical solution of equations and on definite integrals by Stern, on terrestrial magnetism by Goldschmidt, and on the method of least squares by Gauss. It soon became evident that his mathematical studies, undertaken at first probably as a relaxation, were destined to be the chief business of his life; and he obtained his father's permis- sion to devote himself entirely to a scientific career. By this time he had exhausted the resources of Gottingen in the shape of mathematical lectures ; and he proceeded in the beginning of 1847 to Berlin, attracted thither by that brilliant constellation of mathematical genius whose prin-

cipal stars were Dirichlet, Jacobi, Steiner, and Eisenstein. He appears to have attended Dirichlet's lectures on theory of numbers, theory of definite integrals, and partial dif- ferential equations, and Jacobi's on analytical mechanics and higher algebra. It was during this period that he first formed those ideas on the theory of functions of a complex variable which led to most of his great discoveries. One stirring social incident at least marked this part of his life, for, during the revolutionary insurrection in

March 1848, the young mathematician, as a member of a company of student volunteers, kept guard in the royal palace from 9 o'clock on the morning of the 24th March till 1 o'clock on the afternoon of the following day.

In 1850 he returned to Gottingen and began to prepare his doctor's dissertation, busying himself meanwhile with "Naturphilosophie" and experimental physics. In pur- suit of the latter he entered the mathematical and physical seminary, then newly started by Weber, Ulrich, Stern, and Listing. This double cultivation of his scientific powers, doubtless due more to the influence of Gottingen as represented by Gauss than to Berlin, had the happiest effect on his subsequent work; for the greatest achieve- ments of Riemann were effected by the application in pure mathematics generally of a method (theory of potential) which had up to this time been used solely in the solution of certain problems that arise in mathematical pliysics.

In November 1851 he obtained his doctorate, the thesis being " Grundlagen fiir eine allgemeine Theorie der Functionen einer veriinderlichen complexen Grésse." This memoir excited the admiration of Gauss, and at once marked its author's rank as a mathematician. The funda- mental method of research which Riemann employed has just been alluded to; the results will be best indicated in his own words :—

'The methods in use hitherto for treating functions of a complex variable always started from an expression for the function as its definition, whereby its value was given for every value of the argument; by our investigation it has been shown that, in consequence of the general character of a function of a complex variable, in a definition of this sort one part of the determining conditions is a consequence of the rest, and the extent of the deter- mining conditions has been reduced to what is necessary to effect the determination. This essentially simplifies the treatment of such functions. Hitherto, in order to prove the equality of two expressions for the same function, it was necessary to transform the oue into the other, .¢., to show that both expressions agreed for every value of the variable ; now it is sufficient to prove their agreement to a far less extent" [merely in certain critical points and at certain boundaries].

The time between his promotion to the doctorate and his habilitation as privat-docent was occupied by re- searches undertaken for his MHabilitationsschrift, by " Naturphilosophie," and by experimental work partly as Weber's assistant in the mathematical physical seminary, and partly as collaborateur with Weber and Kohlrausch in special researches on electricity. In connexion with the results of Kohlrausch regarding the residual discharge of condensers, Riemann worked out a theory of this pheno- menon which he intended to have published in Poggen- dorf's Annalen. For some reason not fully explained it was not published at all during his lifetime, and its place in the Annalen was taken by an elegant little paper on Nobili's rings.

The subject he had chosen for his Habilitationsschrift was the " Representation of a Function by means of a Trigono- metrical Series," a subject which Dirichlet had made his own by a now well-known series of researches. It was fortunate no doubt for Riemann that he had the kind advice and encouragement of Dirichlet himself, who was then on a visit at Géttingen during the preparation of his essay ; but the result was a memoir of such originality and refinement as showed that the pupil was fully the equal of the master. Of the customary three themes which he

suggested for his trial lecture, that "On the Hypo- theses which form the Foundation of Geometry" was chosen at the instance of Gauss, who was curious to hear what so young a man had to say on this difficult subject, on which he himself had in private speculated so _pro- foundly (see PaRraLuELs, vol. xviii. p. 254). Dedekind tells us that Riemann's lecture, which surpassed his utmost expectation, filled him with the greatest astonish- ment, and that on the way back from the faculty meeting he spoke to Wilhelm Weber with the highest apprecia- tion, and with an excitement rare with him, regarding the depth of the thoughts to which Riemann had given utterance.

In .1855 Gauss died and was succeeded by Dirichlet, who along with others made an effort to obtain Riemann's nomination as extraordinary professor. In this they were not successful; but a Government stipendium of 200 thalers was given him, and even this miserable pittance was of

great importance, so straitened were his circum- stances. But this small beginning of good fortune was embittered by the deaths of his father and his eldest sister, and by the breaking up of the home at Quickborn, where he had so often found solace when ill and dejected. Meantime he was lecturing and writing the great memoir (Borchardt's Journal, vol. liv., 1857) in which he applied the theory developed in his doctor's dissertation to the Abelian functions. It is amusing to find him speaking jubilantly of the unexpectedly large audience of eight which assembled to hear his first lecture (in 1854) on partial differential equations and their application to physical problems. The rustic shyness which had troubled his schoolboyhood seems still to have haunted him ; for he says, speaking of these lectures, " The nervousness which I had at first has pretty well subsided, and I accustom my- self to think more of my hearers than of myself, and to read in their faces whether I may go on, or whether the matter requires further explanation."

Riemann's health had never been strong. Even in his boyhood he had shown symptoms of consumption, the disease that was working such havoc in his family; and now under the strain of work he broke down altogether, and had to retire to the Harz with his friends Ritter aud Dedekind, where he gave himself up to excursions and " Naturphilosophie." After his return to Géttingen (November 1857) he was made extraordinary professor, and his salary raised to three hundred thalers. As usual with him, misfortune followed close behind ; for he lost in quick succession his brother Wilhelm and another sister. In 1859 he lost his friend Dirichlet ; but his reputation was now so well established that he was at once appointed to succeed him. It now seemed for a little as if the world was to go smoothly with him. Well-merited honours began to reach him; and in 1860 he visited Paris, and met with a warm reception there. He married, and married happily, Fraulein Elise Koch in June 1862, but the following month he had an attack of pleurisy which proved the beginning of a long illness that ended only with his death. His physician recommended a sojourn in Italy, for the benefit of his health, and Weber and Sartorius von Waltershausen obtained from the Government leave of absence and means to defray the cost of the journey. At first it seemed that he would recover ; but on his return in June 1863 he caught cold on the Spltigen Pass, and in August of the same year had

to go back to Italy. In November 1865 he returned again to Géttingen, but, although he was able to live through the winter, and even to work a few hours every day, it became clear to his friends, and clearest of all to himself, that he was dying. He was very desirous to finish some of the many investi- gations which had presented themselves to him, and

ool

eagerly asked his doctors to tell him how long he might reasonably expect to live, so that he might take up what he had most chance of finishing. In order to husband his few remaining days he resolved in June 1866 to return once more to Italy. Thither he journeyed through the confusion of the first days of the Austro-Prussian war, and settled in a villa at Selasca near Intra on Lago Maggiore. Here his strength rapidly ebbed away, but his mental faculties remained brilliant to the last. On the 19th of July 1866, attended by his wife, he lay under a fig-tree greatly enjoying the beautiful landscape and working at his last unfinished investigation on the mechanism of the ear. The day following he died.

There are few more pathetic stories than the life of Riemann, few finer instances of victory gained by inborn genius over a host of adverse circumstances. Few as were the years of work allotted to him, and few as are the printed pages covered by the record of his researches, his name is, and will remain, a household word among mathe- maticians. Most of his memoirs are masterpieces—full of original methods, profound ideas, and far-reaching imagina- tion. Few sources, we imagine, have been fuller of inspira- tion for the younger mathematicians of our day than the octavo volume of five hundred pages or so that contains his works ; and many an advance in mathematical science will yet be made, with increase of reputation to the maker, by carrying out his suggestions.

The collected works of Riemann were published by H. Weber assisted by R. Dedekind (8vo, Leipsic, 1876). At the end of this volume there is a touching account of his life by the latter, from which the above sketch is almost entirely taken. (G. CH.)

RIENZI, Cota pr (1313-1354). See Rome.

RIESENER, Juan Henri (1725-1806), the celebrated cabinet-maker of Louis XVI, was born at Gladbeck near Cologne in 1725. He was employed by Jean Francois Oeben in the arsenal, and in 1769 married Oeben's widow, by whom he had one son.

RIESENGEBIRGE (Bohemian Arkonose), or Giant Mountains, a lofty and rugged group on the common boundary of Silesia and Bohemia, between the upper courses of the Elbe and the Oder. They form the highest portion of the Sudetic system, which separates south-east Prussia from the Austrian empire, and finds its natural continuation towards the north-west in the Erzgebirge, the Thuringian Forest, and the Harz Mountains. Adjoining the Isergebirge and the Lausitzergebirge on the west, and the Eulengebirge and the Adlergebirge on the east and

south-east, the Riesengebirge proper run south-east and north-west between the sources of the Zacken and the Bober, for a distance of 23 miles, with a breadth of 14 miles. They cover an area of about 425 square miles, three- fourths of which is in Austrian and the remainder in Prussian territory. The boundary line follows the crest of the principal chain or ridge (Riesenkamm), with the highest summits, which stretches along the northern side of the group, with an average height of over 4000 feet. Its principal peaks are the Reiftrager (4430 feet), the Hohe Rad (4968 feet), the Great Sturmhaube (4862 feet), the Little Sturmhaube (4646 feet), and, near the east extremity, the Schneekoppe or Riesenkoppe (5266 feet), the loftiest mountain in northern or central Germany. Roughly parallel to this northern ridge, and separated from it by a long narrow valley known as the Sieben- griinde, there extends on the south a second and lower chain, of broad massive "saddles," with comparatively few peaks. The chief heights here are the Kesselkoppe (4708 feet), the Krkonose (4849 feet), the Ziegenriicken, and the Brunnenberg (5072 feet). From both ridges spurs of greater or less length are sent off at various angles,—those from the Bohemian ridge being longer, broader, and less abrupt than those from the Riesenkamm. On its northern side this mountain group rises ruggedly and precipitously from the Hirscliberg valley ; but on its southern side its slope towards Bohemia is very much

more gradual. The scenery is in general bold and wild,— the projecting crags and deep rocky gorges and precipices often presenting striking, sometimes even sublime, land- scapes. The Bohemian ridge is cleft about the middle by a deep gorge through which pour the headwaters of the river Elbe, which finds its source in the Siebengriinde. The Iser, Bober, Aupa, Zacken, Queiss, and a great number of smaller streams also rise among these mountains or on their skirts; and small lakes and tarns are not unfrequent in the valleys. The Great and Little Schneegruben,—two deep rocky gorge-like valleys in which snow remains all the year round—lie to the north of the Hohe Rad. Nearly the whole of the Riesenkamm and the western portion of the southern chain are granite; the eastern extremity of the main ridge and several mountains to the south-east are formed of a species of gneiss ; and the greater part of thie Bohemian chain, especially its summits, consists of mica-slate. Blocks of these minerals lie scattered on the sides and ridges of the mountains and in the beds of the streams; and extensive turf moors occupy many of the mountain slopes and valleys. The lower parts of the Riesengebirge are clad with forests of oak, beech, pine, and fir; above 1600 feet only the last two kinds of trees are found, and beyond about 3950 feet only the dwarf pine (Pinus Pumilio). Various alpine plants are found on the Iiiesengebirge,—some having been artificially introduced on the Schneekoppe. Wheat is grown at an elevation of 1800 feet above the sea-level, and oats as high as 2700 feet. The inhabitants of this mountain region, who are tolerably numerous, especially on the Bohemian side, live for the most part, not in villages, but in scattered huts called '"Bauden." They support themselves by the rearing of cattle, tillage, glass-making, and linen-weaving. Mining is carried on only to a small extent for arsenic, although there are traces of former more extensive workings for other metals. Several spots in the Riesengebirge are a good deal frequented as summer resorts; and the Schnee- koppe and other summits are annually visited by a con- siderable number of travellers, who find shelter in the Bauden. The Riesengebirge is the legendary home of Number Nip (Riibezahl), a half-mischievous half-friendly goblin of German folklore; and various localities in the group are more or less directly associated with his name.

RIKE—

RIE

RIETI, a city of Italy, in the province of Perugia, 184 miles south-east of Terni, which is 69 miles by rail from Rome. It occupies a fine position 1396 feet above the sea on the right bank of the Velino (a torrent sub-tributary to the Tiber), which at this point issues from the limestone plateau ; the old town occupies the declivity and the new town spreads out on the level. While with its quaint red- roofed houses, its old town walls (restored about 1250), its castle, its cathedral (13th and 15th centuries), its episcopal palace (1283, Andrea Pisano), and its various churches and convents Rieti has no small amount of mediaeval pictur- esqueness, it also displays a good deal of modern activity in wine-growing, cattle-breeding, and sugar-boiling. The fertility of the neighbourhood is celebrated both by Virgil and by Cicero. A Roman bridge over the Velino, Thorwaldsen's monument to Isabella Alfani, and a statue of St Barbara by Berdini, both in the cathedral, and the Palazzo Vincentini by Vignola deserve to be mentioned. The population was 7875 in 1871, and 9618 (with suburbs, 13,679 ; in the commune, 16,822) in 1881.

According to Terentius Varro (himself perhaps of Reatine birth) and others who have followed him, the people who founded Cures, and afterwards settled on the Palatine at Rome, were natives of the Reatine territory; but this is of somewhat the same questionable character as the other story about the companion of Hercules who was buried at this point near the Via Salaria. About the Via Salaria itself, there is no doubt it led from the sea to Reate and onwards towards Ancona, and was from a very early date the great route for the conveyance of salt to the Sabine country. While hardly mentioned in connexion with the Punic or Civil Wars, Reate is described by Strabo as exhausted by those long contests. Its inhabitants received the Roman franchise at the same time with the rest of the Sabines (290 3.c.), but it appears as a prefectura and not as a municipium down to the beginning of the empire. It was never made a colonia, though veterans of the Pretorian and of the legions Octava and Decima Augusta were settled there by Vespasian, who belonged to a Reatine family and was born in the neighbourhood. For the contests of the Reatines with the people of Interamna see Terni. About the middle of the 12th century the town was besieged and captured by Roger I. of Sicily. In the struggle

between church and empire it always held with the former; and it defied the forces of Frederick II. and Otho IV. Pope Nicholas IV. long resided at Reati, and it was there he crowned Charles II. of Anjou king of the Two Sicilies. In the 14th century Robert, and afterwards Joanna, of Naples managed to keep possession of Reati for many years, but it returned to the States of the Church under Gregory IX. About the year 1500 the liberties of the town, long defended against the encroachments of the popes, were entirely abolished. An carthquake in 1785 was in 1799 followed by the much more disastrous pillage of Reati by the papal troops for a space of fourteen days.

See Aldus Manutius, " Dissert. epistolica de Reati," in Nov. Thes. Antig. Rom., i.; Angelotti, Descrizione, 1635; Schenardi, Antiche lapidi, 1820; and Michaeli, Note per la storia di Riett, 1868, 1870.

RIETSCHEL, Ernst Frrepricn Aucusr (1804-1861), one of the most distinguished of modern German sculp- tors. Born at Pulsnitz in Saxony in 1804, at an early age he became an art student at Dresden, and subsequently a pupil of Rauch in Berlin. Ne there gained an art studentship, and studied in Rome in 1827-28. After returning to Saxony he soon brought himself into notice by a colossal statue of Frederick Augustus, king of Saxony, was elected a member of the academy of Dres- den, and thenceforth became one of the chief sculptors of his country. In 1832 he was elected to the Dresden professorship of sculpture, and had many foreign orders of merit conferred on him by the Governments of different countries. His death occurred at Dresden in

1861.

Rietschcl's style was very varied; he produced works imbued with much religious feeling, and to some extent occupied the same place as a sculptor that Overbeck did in painting. Other import- ant works by Rietschel were purely classical in style. He was specially famed for his portrait figures of eminent men, treated with much idealism and dramatic vigour ; among the latter class his chief works were colossal statues of Goethe and Schiller for the town of Weimar, of Weber for Dresden, and of Lessing for Bruns-

wick. He also designed the memorial statue of Luther for Worms, but died before he could carry it out. The principal among Rietschel's religious pieces of sculpture are the well-known Christ- Angel, and a life-sized Pieta, executed for the king of Prussia. He also worked a great deal in rilievo, and produced many grace- ful pieces, especially a fine series of bas-reliefs representing Night and Morning, Noon and Twilight, designed vis much poetical feeling and imagination.

For a good biography of Rietschel and account of his works see Appermann, Ernst Rietschel, Leipsic, 1863. (J. H. M.)

RIFLE. See Gunmaxine, vol. xi. p. 281-5.

RIFLEMAN-BIRD, or Ririz-Birp, names given by the English in Australia to a very beautiful inhabitant of that country,! probably because in coloration it resembled the well-known uniform of the rifle-regiments of the British army, while in its long and projecting hypochondriac plumes and short tail a further likeness might be traced to the hanging pelisse and the jacket formerly worn by the members of those corps. Be that as it may, the cock bird is clothed in velvety-black generally glossed with rich purple, but having each feather of the abdomen broadly tipped with a chevron of green bronze, while the crown of the head is covered with scale-like feathers of glittering green, and on the throat gleams a triangular patch of brilliant bluish emerald, a colour that reappears on the whole upper surface of the middle pair of tail-quills. The hen is greyish-brown above, the crown striated with dull white; the chin, throat, and a streak behind the eye are pale ochreous, and the lower parts deep buff, each feather bearing a black chevron. According to James Wilson (J//. Zoology, pl. xi.), specimens of both sexes were obtained by Sir T. Brisbane at Port Macquarie, whence, in August 1823, they were sent to the Edinburgh Museum, where they arrived the following year; but the species was first described by Swainson in January 1825 (Zool. Journal, i. p. 481) as the type of a new genus Ptiloris, more pro- perly written Ptidorrhis,? and it is generally known in orni- thology as P. paradisea. It inhabits the northern part of New South Wales and southern part of

Queensland as far as Wide Bay, beyond which its place is taken by a kindred species, the P. victorix of Gould, which was found by John

Macgillivray on the shores and islets of Rockingham Bay. |

Further to the north, in York Peninsula, occurs what is considered a third species, P. alberti, very closely allied to and by some authorities thought to be identical with the P. magnifica (Vieillot) of New Guinea—the " Promerops " of many writers. From that country a fifth species, P. wilsoni, has also been described by Mr Ogden (Proce. Acad. Philadelphia, 1875, p. 451, pl. 25). Little is known of the habits of any of them, but the Rifleman-bird proper is said to get its food by thrusting its somewhat long bill under the loose bark on the boles or boughs of trees, along the latter of which it runs swiftly, or by search- ing for it on the ground beneath. During the pairing- season the males mount to the higher branches and there display and trim their brilliant plumage in the morning sun, or fly from tree to tree uttering a note which is syllabled " yass" greatly prolonged, but at the same time making, apparently with their wings, an extraordinary noise like that caused by the shaking of a piece of stiff silk stuff. Verreaux informed Mr Elliot that he believed they breed in the holes of trees and lay white eggs; but on that score nothing is really known. The genus Pédorrhis, thought by Gould to be allied to Climacteris, has been generally placed near Hpimachus, which is now considered,

1 Curiously enough its English name seems to be first mentioned in ornithological literature by Frenchmen—Lesson and Garnot—in 1828, who say (Voy. " Coquille," Zoologie, p. 669) that it was applied "pour rappeler que ce fut un soldat de la garnison [of New South Wales] qui le tua le premier," —which seems to be an insufficient reason, though the statement as to the bird's first murderer may be true.

2 Some writers have amended Swainson's faulty name in the form Ptilornis, but that is a mistake.

| village opposite.

with Drepanornis and Seleucides, to belong to the Para- diserdz, or Birds-of-Paradise, and in his Monograph of that Family all the species then known are beautifully figured by Mr Elliot. ALN, RIGA (Esth. Ria-Lin), a seaport of Russia, in 56° 57' N. lat. and 24° 6' E. long., 375 miles south-west of St Petersburg, is in population the fifth city of the empire, while in foreign trade it ranks next to St Petersburg and Odessa. It is the seat of the governor-general of the Russian Baltic provinces, and also the capital of the province of Livonia. The Gulf of Riga, 115 miles long ~ and 100 miles in width, with shallow waters of inconsider- able salinity (greatest depth 27 fathoms), freezes to some extent every year. The town is situated at the southern extremity of the gulf, 8 miles above the mouth of the Diina (Dwina), which brings Riga into water communication with an extensive region, as also with the basins of the Dnieper and Volga. Below the town the Diina, from 580 to 2300

yards in breadth, divides into several branches, among islands and sand banks, receiving before it enters the sea the Bolderaa river, and expanding towards the east into wider lacustrine basins.

At its sea entrance the water a O

eS

NS

Sot PAN Plan of Riga,

on the bar has an average depth of only 14 feet, and the entrance of the river is protected by the fortress of Diina- miinde, connected by rail with Riga, while another line on the right bank connects the city with the Miihlgraben As the Diina freezes at Riga for an average of 127 days annually, the port remains closed for navigation from December to March. The roadstead at the mouth of the river, though now protected by a mole, is still too much exposed, so that only such vessels as cannot pass the bar remain there, the others discharging part of their cargo at Bolderaa or Miihlgraben and then entering the Diina, which also they leave only partially laden. Improvements designed to obviate these incon-

veniences are now going on both at the outer harbour and at the new one, the " Zollhafen."

Riga consists of four parts—the old town and the St Petersburg and the Moscow suburbs standing on the right bank of the Diina, and the Mitau suburb on the left bank, connected by a floating bridge which is removed in winter, and by a viaduct, 820 feet long, resting on light piers of solid stone, and leaving a passage for ships. The old town still preserves its Hanseatic features—high storehouses, with spacious granaries and cellars, lining the narrow, winding, and busy streets. The only open spaces are the market-place and two other squares, one of which, facing the citadel, is ornamented by a granite column erected in commemoration of the defeat of Napoleon I. The old

city is so limited that its population increases very slowly. The so-called suburbs on the other hand, with their broad and quiet boulevards on the site of the former fortifications, are steadily growing and undergoing new improvements. The St Petersburg suburb, connected with the city by an avenue of trees, is the seat of the wealthy German aristocracy and merchant community. The rich ' poly- technicum" and the new theatre are situated there.

Few antiquities of the medieval town still remain. The oldest church, the " Domkirche," founded in 1204, was burned in 1547, and the present building dates from the second half of the 16th century. Its organ, with a gas-engine of 4-horse power, and 6826 pipes—dating from 1883—is said to be the largest in the world. St Peter's church, with a beautiful tower 440 feet high, was erected in 1406. The castle, built in 1494-1515 by the master of the Knights of the Sword, Walter von Pletten- berg—a spacious building often rebuilt—is now the seat of the governor-general and the Russian authorities. The "House of the Black Heads" (opposite the elegant new town-house), which was the seat of a military corpora- tion founded in 1232, and subsequently became the meet- ing place of the wealthier youth of the place, has some valuable contents. Of the recent

erections, the poly- technic, the exchange, the municipal picture gallery, the monument of Herder, who lived at Riga towards the end of the last century, the gymnasiums of Lomonossoff and Alexander I., and the large bonded warehouse are worthy of notice. The esplanade (where a Greek cathedral now stands), the quiet Wéhrmann's Park, and the well- shaded " Kaiserliche" Park are much visited. The environs of Riga are undergoing constant improvement, and some of them, such as Dubbeln and the sea-bathing resorts of Bilder- lingshof and Majorenhof, have numerous visitors in summer,

In 1867 Riga had a population of 102,590 (city, 18,246; St Petersburg suburb, 27,155; Moscow suburb, 41,318; Mitau suburb, 15,871). On December 25, 1881 it had 168,728 inhabi- tants, the suburbs alone showing an incrcase of 64,263 (city, 20,091; suburb of St Petersburg, 45,3845; of Moscow, 73,705 ; and of Mitau, 29,587). "About one half of the population is German, the remainder being Russian and Lettish in nearly equal proportions, with some 2000 Ksthonians and nearly 5000 foreigners. 'The life of the city has a German character throughout, but the Russians (many of whom were serfs until 1861), and still more the Letts and Esthonians, also display a steadily progressive intellectual life. Both are seeking to counteract the German influence by increasing the number of their educational institutions, the Letts also by the stage and the press. The larger commerce is wholly in German and (to a less extent) English hands. Owing to its communication by water and rail with the forests of White Russia and Volhynia, Riga is a great mart for timber, which in value stands third among the exports. Flax and linseed occupy the first place, Riga being the chief Russian port for the extensive flax-producing region of north-west Russia. Owing to the great rail- way which crosses the country from Riga to Smolensk, afterwards dividing into two branches, to Orenburg and Tsaritsyn on the lower Volga respectively, Riga is also the great storehouse and place of export for hemp coming by rail from west central Russia, and for corn, Riga merchants sending their buyers as far east as Tamboff. Oats, in particular, are extensively exported to Eng- land from the central provinces. Tallow, leather, tobacco, rugs, feathers, and other minor items add considerably to the total value of the exports. The competition of the port of Libau (with exports amounting in 1882 to 31,473,590 roubles) is

counter- balanced by the steady development of the Russian railway system, so that the exports of Riga, which in 1851-1860 averaged 17,737,000 roubles, and were 23,964,000 in 1866, amounted in 1882 to 64,159,076 roubles or £6,415,900 (food stuffs, £1,706,300 ; raw produce, £4,690,170, including timber, £1,295,520; and manu- factured wares, £19,436). The imports, consisting chiefly of salt, fish, wine, and cotton, with metals, machinery, coal, oils, fruits, tobacco, and other minor articles, are also rapidly increasing (4,876,000 roubles in 1851-1860, 6,751,000 roubles in 1866, and 34,304,100 roubles in 1882). The food stuffs (salt, fish, tobacco, wine, oils, &c.) reached £514,847 ; raw produce (chiefly cotton, coal, and metal), £2,043,804 ; and manufactured wares, €871,132. In 1882 the port was visited by 2347 foreign vessels of 906,200 tons burden ; of these 537 (367,110 tons) were from Great Britain ;

RIG—

ie PG

161 vessels of 89,990 tons, engaged in the coasting trade, also entered the port. Riga is in railway communication with Libau (via Mitau), and with St Petersburg (va Diinaburg), Warsaw, and central Russia ; the traffic is very active,—no less than 11,247,000 ewts. of various wares having been brought to Riga by rail, and 844,000 cwts. shipped on the Duna.

The manufactures of the town and neighbourhood are yearly developing ; the chief items are woollen cloth, cottons, machinery, metal wares, cigars, corks, glass, and paper.

The educational institutions include, besides the polytechnic, a Greek seminary, four gymnasiums, some ten private schools for secondary education of boys and girls, and a comparatively large number of primary schools. The municipal library contains very interesting materials relating to the history of the Baltic provinces. The book trade is rapidly extending.

History.—Riga was founded in 1158, as a storehouse at the mouth of the Diina, by a few Bremen merchants. Its name is supposed to be derived from Righ-6, an island formerly separated from the mainland by a branch of the Dina. About 1190 the Augustinian monk Meinhard erected a

monastery there, and in 1199-1201 Bishop Albert I. of Livonia obtained from Innocent II. permission for German merchants to land at the new settlement, and chose it for his seat, exercising his power over the neighbour- ing district in connexion with the Teutonic Knights. As early as the first half of the 13th century the young city obtained the right of electing its own magistracy, and enlarged the walls crected during Albert I.'s time. It joined the Hanseatic League, and from 1253 refused to recognize the rights of the bishop and the knights. Karly in the 14th century Riga repelled the attack of the Kuron ruler Lamehinas, and during the next century it had to contend with the knights. In 1420 it fell once more under the rule of the bishop, who maintained his authority until 1566, when it was abolished in consequence of the Reformation. Sigismund III., king of Poland, took Riga in 1547, and in 1558 the Russian commander Prince Serebryanyi reached the town, burned its suburbs and many ships on the Diina, and remained for three days under the walls of the fort. In 1561 Gotthard Kettler publicly abdicated his master- ship of the order of Knights of the Sword, and Riga, together with southern Livonia, became a Polish possession ; after some unsuccess- ful attempts to reintroduce Roman Catholicism, Stephen Batory recognized the religious freedom of the Protestant population. Throughout the 17th century Riga—which for nearly three centuries had been a wealthy centre of the commerce of the whole region, and was at this time visited by from three to five hundred ships annually—became a bone of contention between Sweden, Poland, and Russia. In 1621 Gustavus Adolphus took it from Poland, and held it against the Poles and the Russians who besieged itin 1656. Duringthe Northern War it was courageously defended, but after the battle of Poltava it succumbed, and was taken in July 1710 by Sheremetyeff. In 1781 it was made by Russia the capital of the Riga viceroyalty, but fiftcen years later, the viceroyalty having been abolished, it was made and still remains the capital of Livonia. In 1812, the approach of the French being apprehended, the sub- urbs were burnt. Riga still maintains many of its old municipal institutions. The "magistrate" of Riga exercises patrimonial rights over a district comprising several communcs around the city. (PA…)

RIGAUD, Hyacintue (1659-1743), French painter, born at Perpignan 20th July 1659, was the descendant of a line of painters. Having early lost

his father, he was sent by his mother to Montpellier, where he studied under Pezet and was helped by Rane, then to Lyons, and in 1681 to Paris. There, whilst following the regular course of academical instruction, Rigaud produced a great number of portraits so good that Lebrun advised him to give up going to Rome and to devote himself wholly to this class of work. Rigaud, although he had obtained the Great Prize, followed this advice, and for sixty-two years painted at the rate of thirty to forty portraits a year, all carried through with infinite care by his own hand. He had a magnificent emphatic manner appropriate to the rendering of the pompous types of the age, but, although some of his most famous works belong to the class of official portraiture, his talent showed to even greater advantage in the painting of subjects whose life and position admitted of less formal treatment. His portraits of himself, of the sculptor Des- jardins (Louvre), of Mignard, and of Lebrun (Louvre) may be cited as triumphs of a still more attractive, if less impos- ing, character than that displayed in his grand repre- sentations of Bossuet (Louvre) and Louis XIV. (Louvre), while his beautiful portraits of his mother, Marie Serre

(Louvre), must for ever remain amongst the masterpieces of French art. Rigaud, although the great successes to which he owed his fame were won without exception in portrait painting, persisted in pressing the Academy to admit him as an historical painter. This delayed his reception, and it was not until January 2, 1700, that he succeeded in obtaining his desire. He presented as his diploma works a St Andrew (Louvre) and the portrait of Desjardins already mentioned, exhibited at the salon of 1704, and filled in turn all the various posts of academical distinction. Having attained a professional position of unsurpassed eminence, Rigaud died at the age of eighty- four on 27th December 1743, having never recovered from the shock of losing his wife in the year previous. He had many pupils, and his numerous works had the good fortune to be reproduced by the greatest of French engravers — Edelinck, Drevet, Wille, Audran, and others.

RIGGING. See SEAMANSHIP.

RIGHT, Petition or. See Petition, vol. xviii. p. 705.

RIGHTS, Britt or. On the 13th February 1688-89 the Declaration of Right was delivered by the Lords and Commons to the prince and princess of Orange. In October 1689 the rights claimed by the declaration were enacted with some alterations by the Bill of Rights, 1 Will. and M., sess. 2, c. 2, next to Magna Charta the greatest landmark in the constitutional history of England and the nearest approach to the written constitutions of other countries. The Act (the full name of which is "An Act declaring the Rights and Liberties of the Subject, and settling the Succession of the Crown"), after reciting the unconstitutional proceedings of James II. the abdication

of that king, the consequent vacancy of the crown, and |

the summons of the convention parliament, declared, on the part of the Lords and Commons, "for the vindicating and asserting their ancient rights and liberties—

*'*1, That the pretended power of suspending of laws or the execu- tion of laws by regal authority without consent of parliament is illegal. 2. That the pretended power of dispensing with laws or the execu- tion of laws by regal authority, as it hath becn assumed and exer- cised of late, is illegal. 8. That the commission for erecting the late court of commissioners for ecclesiastical causes, and all other commissions and courts of like nature, are illegal and pernicious. 4. That levying money for or to the use of the crown, by pretence of prerogative, without grant of parliament, for longer time or in other manner than the same is or shall be granted, is illegal. 5. That it is the right of the subjects to petition the king, and all commitments and prosecutions for such petitioning are illegal. 6. That the raising or keeping a standing army within the kingdom in time of peace, unless it be with consent of parliament, is against law. 7. That the subjects which are Protestants may have arms for their defence suitable to their conditions, and as allowed by law. 8. That elections of members of parliament ought to be free. 9. That the freedom of speech, and debates or proceedings in parlia- ment, ought not to be impeached or questioned in any court or place out of parliament. 10. That excessive bail ought not to be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punish-*

ments inflicted. 11. That jurors ought to be duly impanelled and returned, and jurors which pass upon men in trials for high treason onght to be freeholders. 12. That all grants and promises of fines and forfeitures of particular persons before conviction are illegal and void. 18. And that for redress of all grievances, and for the amending, strengthening, and preserving of the laws, parliament ought to be held frequently. And they do claim, demand, and insist upon all and singular the premises, as their undoubted rights and liberties. ”

The further provisions of the Act were concerned with the settlement of the crown upon the prince and princess of Orange, with the exception of § 12, which negatived the right of dispensation by zon obstante to or of any statute or any part thereof, unless a dispensation be allowed in the statute itself or by bill or bills to be passed during the then session of parliament. An example of an Act giving a dispensing power is 7 & 8 Will. IIL, c. 37, by which the crown is empowered to grant licences to hold in mortmain non obstante the Mortmain Acts,

559

It is to be noticed that the Declaration of Right and the Bill of Rights introduced no new principle into the English constitution. In the words of Lord Macaulay, “the Declaration of Right, though it made nothing law which had not been law before, contained the germ of every good law which has been passed during more than a century and a half, of every good law which may hereafter in the course of ages be found necessary to promote the public weal, and to satisfy the demands of public opinion” (story of Lingland, vol. ii. p. 396). In the United States, the main provisions of the Bill of Rights, so far as they are applicable, have been adopted both in the constitution of the United States and in the State constitutions.

RIMINI. The city of Rimini is bounded on three sides by water. It faces the Adriatic to the north, has the torrent Aprusa, now called Ausa, on the east, and has the river Marecchia, the Arimnum of the ancients and later known as the Ariminum, on the west. It stands in a fertile plain, which on the southern side soon swells into pleasant slopes backed by the jagged peaks of the Umbrian Apennines. The foremost foothill of the range is the

steep crag of Mons Titanus crowned by the towers of San Marino. This oldest and smallest of republics com- mands a prospect of almost unrivalled beauty over hill and plain—to Ravenna on one side, Pesaro on the other, the mountains of Montefeltro, Rimini and its rivers, and across the Adriatic to the Dalmatian coast.

Of the foundation of Rimini nothing certain is known. It was first inhabited by the Umbrians, then by the Etruscans for many centuries. In the 4th century B.c. it was invaded by the Senones, who advanced as far as Sinigaglia. Brennus established himself in Rimini, and marched thence upon Rome, which he destroyed by fire in 390 B.c. After more than a century of dominion the Senones were expelled by the Romans, who founded a military colony in Rimini and made it the seat of the pretor governing the province designated as Ariminum or Gallia Togata. Owing to its position, Rimini rose to increased importance under its new masters. The Romans reopened the mint formerly established by the Gauls, which had issued the "es grave," the heaviest Italic coin that has been preserved. Rimini was the starting point of the Flaminian Way leading to Rome, and of the Emilian Way to Piacenza. Later, 134 B.c., the Popilian Way lead- ing as far as Venice was made. In 82 B.c. Rimini was withdrawn from the province of Gaul and included in Italy, of which the frontier was now extended from the Esino to the Rubicon, about ten miles from Rimini near Cesena. This added to the city's importance. We find continual mention of it in the wars of Marius and Sulla, and by the latter it was afterwards sacked. In 49 B.c. Julius Cesar crossed the Rubicon with the 13th legion, entered Rimini, and harangued his troops in the great square that still bears his name. A _ pillar marks the spot on which, according to tradition, he delivered his address! From Rimini, after having assembled the tri- bunes of the people aud summoned the other legions, he went forth on the great expedition that was to lead to the battle of Pharsalia and ultimately to the foundation of the empire.

Rimini was highly favoured under Augustus. That emperor restored the Flaminian Way, and the senate decreed the erection in his honour of the famous arch that is still one of the grandest of ancient monuments. It seems that this arch was originally crowned by a statue of Augustus mounted on a triumphal car (quadriga).

1 A stone originally stood there, mentioned by 15th-century writers as "the big stone (wetronc), on which he (Cesar) stood to make his speech." But this stone, vetustate collapswm was replaced in 1555 by the existing column.

But in the Middle Ages this was removed and replaced by the turrets which remain still. Contemporaneously with the arch was built the beautiful bridge over the Marecchia, the only other ancient monument to be found in Rimini, since of the amphitheatre scarcely a stone is left.

During the Middle Ages the history of Rimini has no importance. Alternately captured by Byzantines and Goths, it was rigorously besieged by the latter in 538 A.D. They were, however, compelled to retreat before the reinforcements sent by Belisarius and Narses; thus the Byzantines, after various vicissitudes, became masters of the town, appointed a duke as its governor, and included 'tin the exarchate of Ravenna. It afterwards fell into the power of the Longobards, and then of the Franks, who yielded it to the pope, for whom it was governed by counts to the end of the 10th century. Soon after this period the imperial power became dominant in Rimini. In 1157 Frederick I. gave it, by imperial patent, the privilege of coining money and the right of self-govern- ment; and in the 13th century we find Rimini an inde- pendent commune waging war on the neighbouring cities. But throughout these times the main feature of its history is its alternate subjection to pope and emperor. And, weak as the sway of either was, it was strong enough to pre- vent any genuine local prosperity. During the continued struggle between church and empire, the withdrawal of the one was the signal for the other to advance, and these speedy mutations gave the commune no chance of achieving independence. This state of things went on until the rise of the despots, who, for similar reasons, were powerless to establish themselves on a firm and inde- pendent footing. Such indeed was the fate of nearly every city of Romagna excepting Bologna.

In the year 1216 Rimini, being worsted by Cesena, adopted the desperate plan of granting citizenship to two members of the powerful Malatesta tribe, Giovanni and Malatesta, for the sake of their aid and that of their

vassals in the defence of the state and the conduct of the war. This family quickly struck root in the town and gave birth to future tyrants; for in 1237 Giovanni was named podesta, and this office was the first step towards the sovereign power afterwards assumed by his descendants. Meanwhile Rimini was torn by the feuds of Guelf and Ghibelline. The latter were the dominant party in the days of Frederick I1., although very unpopular on account of the grievous taxes imposed by the empire. Accordingly the majority of the urban nobles joined the Guelfs and were driven into exile. But before long, as the Swabian power declined in Italy, the Guelf party was again pre- dominant.

Then followed a long period of confusion in which, by means of conspiracies and crimes of every kind, the Malatesta succeeded in becoming masters and _ tyrants of Rimini. And, albeit this string of events is of no historic value, it may serve nevertheless to give an idea of what was occurring throughout Romagna at that time. Giovanni Malatesta had died in 1247 and been succeeded by his son Malatesta, born in 1212, and surnamed Malatesta da Verrucchio. This chieftain, who lived to be a hundred years old, had ample time to mature his ambitious designs, and was the real founder of his house. Seizing the first suitable moment, he placed himself at the head of the exiled Guelfs and restored them to Rimini. Then, as the empire acquired fresh strength in Italy, he quietly bided his time and, on the descent of the _ Angevins, again assumed the leadership of the Guelfs, who

now had the upper hand for a long time. Being re- peatedly elected podesta for lengthy terms of office, he at last became the virtual master of Rimini. Nor was he

RIMINI

checked by Rome. of the rights and traditional pretensions of the Holy See,

Pope Boniface VITI. was fully aware

but preferred to keep on good terms with one who had

so largely contributed to the triumph of the Guelfs in

Romagna. Accordingly he not only left Malatesta un- molested, but in 1299 conferred on him fresh honours and estates, so that his power went on increasing to the

day of his death in 1312.

Four sons had been born to Malatesta—Malatestino, Giovanni the Lame, Paolo the Handsome, and Pandolfo ; but only the oldest and youngest survived him. Giovanni the Lame (Sciancato), a man of a daring impetuosity only equalled by his ugliness, had proved so useful a general to Giovanni da Polenta of Ravenna as to win in reward the hand of that potentate's beautiful daughter, known to history as Francesca da Rimini. But her heart had been won by the handsome Paolo, her brother-in-law ; and the two lovers, being surprised by Giovanni, were murdered by him on the spot (1285). This episode of the story of the Malatesta has been immortalized in Dante's Inferno. Giovanni died in 1304. Thus in 1312 Malatestino became lord of Rimini, and on his decease in 1317 bequeathed the power to his brother Pandolfo. Even in his father's lifetime the new lord had helped to extend the dominions of his house in Pesaro, Fano, Sinigaglia, and Fossombrone. He quickly perceived that, however willing Boniface VIII. might have been to tolerate the increased power of a chief who, like Malatesta da Verrucchio, had rendered such excellent service to the Holy See, it could not be expected that the papacy would really sanction the estab- lishment of a strong and independent state in Romagna. He accordingly turned to the empire, and, siding with Louis the Bavarian, won that monarch's favour for him- self and his sons, who in 1342 were appointed imperial vicars.

Pandolfo died in 1326, leaving two heirs, Malatesta and Galeotto. The former was nicknamed CGuastafamiglia, because, although at first willing to let his brother share his power, he rid himself by violence and treachery of other kinsmen who claimed their just rights to a portion of the state. His intent was to become sole lord and to aggrandize | his tiny principality. But the reigning pope Innocent NL, despatched the terrible Cardinal Albornoz to Romagna and it was speedily reduced by fire and sword. In 1355 the Malatesta shared the fate of the other potentates of the

land. Nevertheless it was the cardinal's policy to let existing Governments stand, provided they promised to act in subordination to the papal see. Thus, he granted the Malatesta brothers the investiture of Rimini, Pesaro, Fano, and Fossombrone, and they arranged a division of the state. Guastafamiglia took Pesaro, which was held by his descendants down to the brothers Carlo and Galeazzo. The former of these, who died in 1439, was father to the Parisina beheaded in Ferrara, whose tragic love story has been sung by Byron. 'The latter won the title of "VTnetto" (the Incapable) by the foolish sale of his rights over Pesaro to the Sforza in 1447.

Galeotto, on the other hand, retained the lordship of Rimini, ruling tranquilly and on good terms with the popes, who allowed him to add Cervia, Cesena, and Bertinoro to his states. Dying in 1385 at the age of eighty, he left two sons—Carlo, who became lord of Rimini, and Pandolfo, who had Fano for his share. Carlo (1364-1429) was energetic, valiant, and a friend of the popes, who named him vicar of the church in Romagna. He was a patron of letters and the arts, and during his reign his court began to be renowned for its splendour. As he left no issue, his inheritance was added to that of his brother Pandolfo, and Fano was once more united to Rimini. Pandolfo (1370-1427) had led the life of a

kim iW i

condottiere, taking a prominent part in the Lombard wars following on the death of Galeazzo Maria Visconti, and held rule for some time in Brescia and Bergamo. He left three natural sons, who were declared legitimate by Pope Martin V. The eldest, Galeotto (1411-32), was an ascetic, gave little or no attention to public business, and, dying early, bequeathed the state to his brother Sigismondo Pandolfo. The third son, Novello Malatesta (1418-65), ruled over Cesena.

Sigismondo (1417-68) is the personage to whom Rimini owes its renown during the Renaissance, of which indeed he was one of the strangest and most original representa- tives. He was born in Brescia, and when called to the succession, at the age of fifteen, had already given proofs of valour in the field. Of a robust and handsome person, he was a daring soldier and an astute politician. His knowledge of antiquity was so profound as to

excite the admiration of all the learned men with whom he discoursed, even when, as in the case of Pius II., they chanced to be his personal enemies. A captain of renown and a skilful military engineer, he was also a generous patron of the fine arts and of letters. To him is due the erection of the church of St Francis, or temple of the Malatesta, one of the rarest gems of the Renaissance and the greatest of Rimini's treasures. Sigismondo devoted enormous sums of money and much time and care to this building, giving it so original a stamp and one so thoroughly expressive of his own mind and character that, to a great extent, it may be considered his work. But he too was a man devoid of all faith and conscience, of all respect human or divine. Of so dissolute a life that, although married, he had children by several mistresses at the same time, he gave vent to all his passions with a ferocity that was bestial rather than human. And—as the crowning con- tradiction of his strange nature—from his youth to the day of his death he remained the devoted lover of the woman for whose sake he became a poet, whom he finally made his wife, and whom he exalted in every way, even to the point of rendering her almost divine honours. Yet this love never availed to check his excesses. The blood in his veins resembled that of the Borgia; and of him, as of that iniquitous race, tradition has added much to the evil recorded by history, and truth and false- hood have been so subtly mingled that it is often diffi- cult, sometimes impossible, to distinguish the one from the other.

On assuming power in 1432 Sigismondo was already affianced to the daughter of Count Carmagnola, but when that famous leader was arraigned as a traitor by the Venetians, and ignominiously put to death, he promptly withdrew from his engagement, under the pretext that it was impossible to marry the child of a criminal. In fact he aimed at a higher alliance, for he espoused Ginevra d'Este, daughter of the duke of Ferrara, and his entry into Rimini with his bride in 1434 was celebrated by splendid festivities. In 1437 a son was born to him, but died within the year, and in 1440 the young mother followed it to the grave. Every one declared that she died by poison administered by her husband. This, however, was never proved. The duke of Ferrara remained his friend, nor is it known what motive Sigismondo could have for wishing to get rid of his wife. Two years afterwards he married Polissena, daughter of the

famous condottiere Francesco Sforza, who in 1443 bore him a son named Galeotto Roberto. But by this time he was already madly in love with Isotta degli Atti, and this was the passion that endured to his death. The lady succeeded in gaining an absolute ascendency over him, which increased with time. She bore him several children, but this did not prevent his having others by different concubines. Nor

07

was this the sum of his excesses. He presently conceived a frantic passion for a German lady, the wife of a certain Borbona, who repulsed his advances. Thereupon he planned an ambuscade on the road to Fano in order to seize her by force. The lady arrived escorted by armed men, but Sigismondo attacked her so furiously that she was killed in the struggle, and it is said that he then wreaked his lust on her corpse (19th December 1448). Such being the nature of the man, it is not astonishing that, as his ardour for Isotta increased, he should have little scruple in ridding himself of his second wife. On the Ist June 1450 Polissena died by strangling, and on the 30th of the same month Isotta's offspring were legitimated by Nicholas V.

It is only just to record that, although Malatesta's intrigue with Isotta had long been notorious to all, and he had never sought to conceal it, no one ever accused her of either direct or indirect complicity in her lover's crimes. Isotta's history, however, is a strange one, and opens up many curious questions. She was of noble birth and seems to have attracted Sigismondo's notice as early as 1438, for at the age of twenty he produced verses of some merit in praise of her charms. She was indeed widely celebrated for her beauty and intellect, culture, firmness, and prudence ; and even Pope Pius II. proclaimed her worthy to be greatly loved. When Sigismondo was absent she governed Rimini wisely and well, and proved herself a match for the statesmen with whom she had to deal. The leading poets of the court dedicated to her a collection of verses entitled Jsottx:, styled her their mistress and the chosen of Apollo. Artists of renown perpetuated her features on canvas, on marble, and on many exquisite medals, one of which has a closed book graven on the reverse, with the inscription "Elegie" in allusion to poems she was said to have written.

Never- theless M. Yriarte, in his well-known book on the Malatesta and Rimini, asserts that there is documentary evidence to prove that Isotta was unable to sign her own name. He has arrived at this couclusion on the strength of certain documents found in the archives of Siena. These consist mainly of two letters addressed to Malatesta in 1454, when he was encamped near Siena, and both written and signed by the same hand. The first, signed Isotta, gives him news of his children, affectionately reproaches him with having betrayed her for the daughter of one Messer Galeazzo, and winds up by saying that she cannot be happy until he fulfils his often renewed promise, z.e., to make her his wife. The second, bearing the same date, is signed with the initials of another woman: "De la V. S. serva" (Your Highness's servant) "8S. de M."— probably one of the Malatesta. This correspondent says that she had already written to him that day, by command of Isotta, who had gone with her to see Messer Galeazzo's daughter, and freely vented her just indignation. Therefore M. Yriarte maintains that, had Isotta been able to write herself, she would not have employed another to speak of her love and jealousy and of the desired marriage. He feels assured that Isotta must have been altogether illiterate, since even the signature was written by another.! But, as the second letter proves that Isotta went with her confidant to vent her rage on her rival, it is plain that she had no secrets from that friend. It is also possible that S. de M. (particularly if a Malatesta) had

1 The two letters are dated respectively 20th and 21st December ; but this must be an error, inasmuch as the second begins thus— "To-day Madonna Isotta made me write to you." The year is not given, but it must have been 1454, since it was then, as we shall presently see, that the Sienese seized the papers of their general Malatesta, who, after betraying them, had hastily fled from the camp.

Thus these letters, and other Malatestian documents, came to be pre-served among the archives of Siena where they are still to be seen.

been charged by Sigismondo to watch over Isotta, and therefore not only acted as her amanuensis, but also wrote privately to explain or confirm that which she had already written to him by Isotta's wish. For the tyrant

of Rimini was of a brutally jealous nature. At any rate the second letter solves the doubts suggested by the first. Nor is it at all surprising that Isotta should have her letters written and signed by another hand, when such was by no means an uncommon practice among the princes and nobilities of her day. lLucrezia Borgia, for instance, frequently did the same. It is besides simply incredible that a woman of the Italian Renaissance, of Isotta's birth, standing, and reputation, should have been unable to write.

Her marriage with Malatesta did not take place until 1456; but of the ardent affection that had long bound them together there are stronger proofs than the lover's juvenile verses, or than even the children Isotta had borne to him. For, more than all else, the temple of St Francis has served to transmit to posterity the history of their loves. Malatesta decided on building this remarkable church as a thankoffering for his safety during a danger- ous campaign undertaken for Pope Eugenius IV. about the year 1445.

The first stone was laid in 1446, and the work was carried on with so much alacrity that inass was performed init by the close of 1450. Sigismondo entrusted the execution of his plans to L. B. Alberti, who had to encase in a shell of classic architecture a 18th-century Franciscan church. The original edifice being left intact, it was a difficult question low to deal with the windows and the Gothic arches of the interior. Alberti solved the problem with marvel- lous skill, blending the old architecture with the new style of the pe om and giving it variety without destroying its unity of efiect. :

Being eager to adorn his temple with the most precious marbles, Sigismondo's veneration for antiquity did not prevent him from pillaging many valuable classical remains in Rimini, Ravenna, and even in Greece. Such was the zeal with which Alberti pursued his task that the exterior of the little Rimini church is one of the finest and purest achievements of the Renaissance, and surpasses in beauty and elegance all the rest of his works. But it is much to be deplored that he should have left the upper part of the facade unfinished. Alberti came to Rimini, made his design, saw the work begun, and then left it to be carried out by very skilful

artists, on whom he impressed the necessity of faithfully preserv- ing its general character so as "not to spoil that music."

The internal decorations, especially the enormous quantity of wall ornaments, consisting chiefly of scrolls.and bas-reliefs, were executed by different sculptors undcr the personal direction of Malatesta, who, even when engaged in war, sent continual instruc- tions about their work. It is difficult to give an exact idea of this extraordinary church to those who have no personal acquaint- ance with it. The vault was never finished, and still shows its rough beams and rafters. The eight side chapels alone are com- plete, and their pointed arches spring -from Renaissance pilasters planted on black marble elephants, the Malatesta emblems, or on baskets of fruit held by children. The surface of the pilasters is divided into compartments encrusted with bas-reliefs of various subjects and styles. Everywhere—on the balustrades closing the chapels, round the base of the pilasters, along the walls, beneath the cornice of both the exterior and the interior of the church—there is one ornament that is perpetually repeated, the interwoven initials of Sigismondo and Isotta. This monogram is alternated with the portrait and arms of Malatesta; and these designs are enwreathed by festoons linked together by the tyrant's second emblem, the rose. The most singular and characteristic feature of this edifice is the almost total absence of every sacred emblem. Rather than to St Francis and the God of the Christians it was dedicated—and that while Sigismondo's second wife still lived— to the glorification of an unhallowed attachment. Nature, science, and antiquity were summoned to celebrate the tyrant's love for Isotta. he bas-reliefs of one of the chapels represent Jupiter, Venus, Saturn, Mars, and Diana, together with the signs of the zodiac. And these subjects are derived, it appears, from a poem in which Sigismondo had invoked the gods and the signs of the zodiac to soften Isotta's heart and win her to his arms. The pageants of Mars and Diana seem to have been suggested by the Trionfi of Petrarch. Elsewhere we see prophets and sibyls, per- sonifications of the theological virtues and of the sciences. The delicate bas-reliefs of botany and medicine, history and astronomy, have been judged by some writers to be Grecian, on account of the

ancient appearance of their marble, their inscriptions in Greek and Latin, and others that have never been deciphered. Buta moment's examination of the sculptures is enough to destroy this hypothesis. Besides, some of the inscriptions are very easily read and record " Apollo Ariminzus" and " Jupiter Ariminzus."'

*In the first chapel on the left is the family tomb of the Malatesta, with sculptured records of their triumphs and of their alleged descent from Scipio Africanus. Better worthy of notice is the third chapel to the right, known as that of the Angels, on account of the angels and children carved on its pillars. It isnominally dedicated to the archangel Michael, whose statue is enshrined in it ; but the figure has the face of Isotta, the ruling deity of this portion of the church. For here is the splendid and fantastic tomb erected to this lady, during her life and previous to the death of Sigismondo's second wife. No monument, be it remarked, is raised over the burial-place of Ginevra and Polissena. The urn of Isotta's sarco- phagus is supported by two elephants, and bears the inscription, **T). Isotte Ariminensi B. M. Sacrum, MCCCCL." The " D." has been generally interpreted as " Dive" and the "B. M." as "Beate Memorie." But some, unwilling to credit such profanity, allege that the letters stand for " Bones Memorie." Nevertheless all who have seen the church must admit the improbability of simi- lar scruples.*

The numerous artists employed on the interior of the church were under the direction of the proto-maestro Matteo de Pasti, the celebrated medallist. And indeed the peculiar and fantastic character of the sculptures in this chapel frequently recalls the designs of his famous works. All this devoration is in strange con- trast with the grandly austere simplicity of the fagade and outer walls of the church. There no ornament disturbs the harmony of the lines. The frieze beneath the cornice, reproducing the lovers' initials and the Malatestian ensigns, is in such very low relief that it only enhances the perfection of "'that music" produced by the marvellous skill of Leo Battista Alberti. Also the colour of the stone, a soft creamy white, adds to the general beauty of effect. And everything both within and without contributes to the profane and pagan character which it was Sigismondo's purpose to impress on the Christian church. On each of its outer walls are seven arched recesses, intended to

contain the ashes of the first literati and scientists of his court. In the first, to the right, is the urn of the poet Basinio, one of his pensioners, in the second that of Giusto de' Conti, author of some rhymes on the Bella Mano, while the third bore the more famous name of Gemisthus Pletho. This well- known Byzantine philosopher was the diffuser of Platonism in Florence during the time of Cosimo de' Medici, and had faith in the revival of paganism. Returning to his own people, he had died in tho Morea. Sigismondo, having gone there in command of the Venetian expedition against the Turks, exhumed the philo- sopher's bones as holy relics, and brought them to Rimini for worthy sepulture in his Christian pantheon. All this is solemnly recorded in the inscription, which is dated 1465. The fourth sarcophagus was that of Roberto Valturio, the engineer, author of De Ke Militari, who had been Sigismondo's minister and had aided him in the construction of the castle of Rimini. The other urns on this side were placed by Malatesta's successors, and the arches on the left wall remained untenanted. ;

Sigismondo understood the science of fortification. He was also the first to discard the use of wooden bomb shells, and substitute others cast in bronze. As a soldier his numerous campaigns had shown him to be possessed of all the best qualities and worst defects of the free captains of his time. He began his military career in 1432 in the service of Eugenius IV.; but, when this pope doubted his good faith and transferred the command to another, he sided with the Venetians against him, though at a later date he again served under him. On the decease of Filippo Maria Visconti in 1447, he joined the Aragonese against Venice and Florence, but, presently changing his flag, fought valiantly against Alphonso of Aragon and forced him to raise the siege of Piombino. In 1454 he accepted a command from the Sienese, but suddenly, after his usual fashion, he made peace with the enemies of the republic, and had to save himself by flight from arrest for his perfidy. It was then that the letters from Isotta were confiscated. After this he began scheming to hasten the coming of the Angevins, and took part in new and more hazardous campaigns against adversaries such as the duke of Urbino, Sforza of Milan, Piccinino, and, worst of all, the Sienese pope, Pius IL, his declared and mortal foe. This time Sigismondo had blundered; for the cause of Anjou was hopelessly ruined in Italy. He

was therefore driven to make his submission to the pope but, again rebelling, was summoned to trial in Rome (1460) before a tribunal of hostile cardinals. All the old charges against him were now revived and eagerly confirmed. He was pronounced guilty of rapine, incendiarism, incest, assassination, and heresy. The murder and violation of Borbona's wife was brought up; he was accused of having tortured his former preceptor, in revenge for punishments received in his youth, and of having killed three wives— although it seems that he had only two besides his ever- beloved Isotta, who survived him. He was also severely blamed for the erection of a temple which, as the pope justly remarked, was better adapted for the worship of pagan demons than of the Christian God. Nor was it forgotten how, when Pius IL had proclaimed a crusade against the infidels at the assembly at Mantua, Sigismondo had secretly invited the Grand Turk to make a descent upon Italy. Consequently he was sentenced to the depriva- tion of his state (which was probably the main object of the trial), and to be burnt alive as a heretic.

This sentence, however, could not easily be executed, and Sigismondo was only burnt in effigy. But the pope marked the intensity of his hatred by causing the dummy to be carved and dressed with such life-like resemblance that he was almost able to persuade himself that his hated enemy was really consumed in the flames. Malatesta could afford to laugh at this farce, but he nevertheless prepared in haste for a desperate defence (1462). He knew that the bishop Vitelleschi, together with the duke of Urbino and his own brother Novello Malatesta, lord of Cesena, were advancing against him in force; and, being defeated by them at Pian di Marotta, he was driven to Rome in 1463 to again make submission to the pope. This time he was stripped of all his possessions excepting the city of Rimini and a neighbouring castle, but the sentence of excommunication was withdrawn. For, now that Malatesta's power was crushed, the object of the war was attained. Its continuance would have been inex- pedient, and might have too suddenly roused the fears of the other potentates of Romagna, who were all destined, sooner or later, to share the same fate. The once mighty tyrant of Rimini found himself reduced to penury with a state chiefly composed of a single town. He

there- fore took service with the Venetians, and in 1464 had the command of an expedition to the Morea. Here his movements were so hampered by the interference of the commissioners of the republic that, with all his valour, he could achieve no decisive success. In 1466 he was able to return to Rimini, for Pius II. was dead, and the new pope, Paul IL, was less hostile to him. Indeed the latter offered to give him Spoleto and Foligno, taking Rimini in exchange ; but Malatesta was so enraged by the proposal that he went to Rome with a dagger concealed on his person, on purpose to kill the pope. But, being forewarned, Paul received him with great ceremony, and surrounded by cardinals prepared for defence ; whereupon Sigismondo changed his mind, fell on his knees and im- plored forgiveness. His star had now set for ever. For sheer subsistence he had to hire his sword to the pope and quell petty rebellions with a handful of men. At last, his health failing, he returned to his family, and died in Rimini on the 7th October 1468, aged fifty-one years.

‘ He was succeeded, according to his desire, by Isotta and his son Sallustio. But there was an illegitimate elder son by another mother, named Roberto Malatesta, a valiant and unscrupulous soldier. Befriended by the pope, this man undertook to conquer Rimini for the Holy See, but came there to further his own ends instead (20th October 1469), and, while feigning a desire to share the government with Isotta and her son, resolved, sooner

oo9

or later, to seize it for himself. This aroused the pope’s wrath, and Roberto instantly prepared for defence. Find- ing an ally in the duke of Urbino, whose eyes were now opened to the aggressive policy of the church, he was able to repulse its forces. Paul II. died soon after, and was succeeded by Sixtus IV. Roberto’s position was now more secure, and in order to strengthen his recent allianee he betrothed himself to the daughter of the duke of Urbino. The next step was to dispose of his rival kindred. On the 8th August 1470 Isotta’s son was found murdered in a well belonging to the Marcheselli family; and a blood- stained sword, placed in their courtyard by Roberto, made it appear as though they had been guilty of the crime. Towards the end of the same year Isotta died also, apparently

of a slow fever, but really, it was believed, by poison. Another of her sous, Valerio, born in 1453, still lived, but he was openly put to death by Roberto on a trumped-up charge of treason. In 1475 the new tyrant celebrated his nuptials with the duke of Urbino's daughter, and, being again taken into favour by the pope, valiantly defended him in Rome against the attacks of the duke of Calabria, and died there in 1482 of the hardships endured in the war. His widow was left regent during the minority of his son Pandolfo, who was nicknamed Pandolfaccio on account of his evil nature. Directly he was of age, he seized the reins of government by killing some relations who had plotted against him, and crushed another conspiracy in the same way. A daring soldier, he distinguished himself at the battle of the Taro against the French ; but his tyranny made him hated by his subjects. In 1500, when Cesare Borgia fell on Romagna with violence and fraud, this Malatesta shared the fate of other petty tyrants and had to fly for his life. After the fall of the Borgia he returned, but, being bitterly detested by his people, decided to sell his rights to the Venetians, who had long desired to possess Rimini, and who gave him in exchange the town of Cittadella, some ready money, and a pension for life.

This arrangement was naturally disapproved by Rome, and especially by Julius II, who had already repeatedly vowed that, unless Venice restored the cities she had so unjustly seized—Cervia, Ravenna, and Rimini—he would turn the world upside down to regain them. And he kept his word. For he contrived the league of Cambray on purpose to ruin the Venetians, who were crushingly defeated in 1509. Thereupon the pope, having accom- plished his own ends, made alliance with the Venetiarts, who were now prostrate at his feet, and, with them, the Spaniards, and the Swiss, fought against the French at Ravenna in 1512. Here the French were victors, but owing to their heavy losses and the death of their renowned leader, Gaston de Foix, were compelled to retreat. Thus Julius became master of Rimini and the other coveted lands. Malatesta made more than one attempt to win back his city, but always in vain, for his subjects preferred the papal rule. He returned there for the last time while Marshal Bourbon was laying siege to Rome; but in 1528 Pope Clenient VII. became definitive master of the town. Thus, after two hundred and fifty years, the sway of the Malatesta came to an end, and Pandolfo was

reduced to beggary. In fact, we find him petitioning the duke of Fer- rara for the gift of a couple of crowns and promising to ask for no more. He died in 1534, leaving a daughter and two sons in great poverty. The elder, Sigismondo, after various military adventures, died at Reggio d'Emilia in 1543; and Malatesta, the younger, went to fight in the Scotch and English wars, and was never heard of again. Sigismondo had left male heirs who made another attempt to regain Rimini in 1555, but Pope Paul IV. declared them deposed in perpetuity in punishment of Pandolfaccio's misdeeds.

Egyptian rings.

Cylin- ders.

560

From that time the Malatesta became citizens of Venice ; their names were inscribed in the Golden Book, and they were admitted to the grand council. With the death, in 1716, of Christina Malatesta, the wife of Niccolo Boldu, the Rimini branch of the family became extinct. The descendants of Giovanni, brother of Malatesta da Verrucchio, who married one of the Sogliano, were known as the Sogliano-Malatesta. The representatives of this branch settled in Rome.

The history of Rimini practically ends with its inde- pendence. It fell into obscurity under the rule of the popes, and was not again mentioned in history until, in 1831 and 1845, it took a prominent part in the revolu- tionary movements against papal despotism and in favour of Italian independence. Although Rimini, like many other cities of Romagna, is now harassed by republican and socialistic sects, it is a thriving town and enjoys increasing prosperity. It had in 1881 a population of 37,248 souls, being the centre of a district containing 88,110 inhabi- tants, and is part of the province of Forli, which, divided into the three districts of Cesena, Forli, and Rimini, has a total population of 252,883 souls. Many small manufac- tures are carried on at Rimini, but agriculture is its principal resource, and its produce in corn and wine is considerably in excess of the local consumption. Its sea- bathing establishment attracts many visitors during the summer months, and conduces to the prosperity of the

town. Rimini also boasts a good public library of 28,000 volumes, inclusive of 850 MSS.; and it has a record office containing several thousand ancient MSS.

Authorities. —Moroni, Dizionario di erudizione storico-ecclesi- astica (vol. lvii., s.v. "Rimini"); Ch. Yriarte, Rimini: Un Con- dotticre au XV. Siecle: Etudes sur les lettres et les arts a la cour

des Malatesta (Paris, 1882); Tonini, Storia di Rimini (Rimini, 1848-82). (P. V.)

RINDERPEST. See Murramy, vol. xvii. p. 59.

RING (Gr. daxrvAcos, Lat. annulus).1 At an early period, when the art of writing was known to but very few, it was commonly the custom for men to wear rings on which some distinguishing sign or badge was engraved (éricnpov), so that by using it as a seal the owner could give a proof of authenticity to letters or other documents. Thus, when some royal personage wished to delegate his power to one of his officials, it was not unusual for him to hand over his signet ring, by means of which the full royal authority could be given to the written commands of the subordinate. The enlarged part of a ring on which the device is engraved is called the " bezel," the rest of it being the " hoop."

The earliest existing rings are naturally those found in the tombs of ancient Egypt. The finest examples date from about the 18th to the 20th dynasty ; they are of pure gold, simple in design, very heavy and massive, and have usually the name and titles of the owner deeply sunk in hieroglyphic characters on an oblong gold bezel. Rings worn in Egypt by the poorer classes were made of less costly materials, such as silver, bronze, glass, or pottery covered with a siliceous glaze and coloured brilliant blue or green with various copper oxides. Some of these had hieroglyphic inscriptions impressed while the clay was moist. Other examples have been found made of ivory, amber, and hard stones, such as carnelian. Another form of ring used under the later dynasties of Egypt had a scarab in place of the bezel, and was mounted on a gold hoop which passed through the hole in the scarab and allowed it to revolve.

In ancient Babylonia and Assyria finger rings do not appear to have been used. In those countries the signet took a different form, namely, that of a cylinder cut in

1 Compare Gums, vol. x. p. 186.

crystal or other hard stone, and perforated from end to end. A cord was passed through it, and it was worn on the wrist like a bracelet. This way of wearing the signet is more than once alluded to in the Old Testament (Gen. xxxviii. 18, Revised Version, and Cant. vili. 6).

The Etruscans used very largely the gold swivel ring mounted with a scarab, a form of signet probably intro- duced from Egypt. Some found in Etruscan tombs have real Egyptian scarabs with legible hieroglyphs; others, probably the work of Phoenician or native engravers, have rude copies of hieroglyphs, either quite or partially illegible. A third and more numerous class of Etruscan signet rings have scarabs, cut usually in sard or carnelian, which are a link between the art of Egypt and that of Greece, the design cut on the flat side being Hellenic in style, while the back is shaped like the ordinary Egyptian scarabeeus beetle.

Among the Greeks signet rings were very largely worn, and were usually set with engraved gems. In Sparta a sumptuary law was passed at an early time to forbid any substance more valuable than iron to be used for signet rings; but in other parts of the Hellenic world there appears to have been no restriction of this sort. In some of the numerous tombs of Etruria and Kertch (Panti- capseum) in the Cimmerian Bosphorus gold rings of great magnificence have been discovered, apparently of the finest Greek workmanship. One from Etruria, now in the British Museum, is formed by two minutely modelled lions whose bodies form the hoop, while their paws hold the bezel, a scarab engraved with a lion of heraldic char- acter. Many other examples of this design have been found, some of which are among the finest existing speci- mens of Hellenic or Greeco-Etruscan jewellery. Another remarkable specimen from an Etruscan tomb is of Etrusco- Latin work. The hoop of the ring is formed by two minute gold figures of Hercules and Juno Sospita, the stone being set between their

heads. Many of the Greek rings are of thin repoussé gold, so as to make the most show for the least cost ; one fine example, early in date, has its hoop formed of two dolphins, holding a plain white stone.

The Romans appear to have imitated the simplicity of Lacedemonia. Throughout the republic none but iron rings were worn by the bulk of the citizens. Ambassadors were the first who were privileged to wear gold rings, and then only while performing some public duty. Next senators, consuls, equites, and all the chief officers of state received the jus annuli aurei. One early Roman ring of the highest historical interest still exists; it belonged to Cornelius Scipio Barbatus, consul in 298 B.c., in whose sarcophagus, now in the Vatican, it was found in 1780.? It is of plain rudely hammered gold, and is set with an intaglio on sard of a figure of Victory, purely Roman in style, dating before 300 B.c. In the Augustan age many valuable collections of antique rings were made, and were frequently offered as gifts in the temples of Rome. One of the largest and most valuable of the dactyliothece was dedicated in the temple of Apollo Palatinus by Augustus's nephew Marcellus, who had formed the collection (Pliny, H. N., xxxvii. 5). The temple of Concord in the Forum contained another; among this latter collection was the celebrated ring of Polycrates, king of Samos, the story of which is told by Herodotus (see vol. xix. p. 417); Pliny, however, doubts the authenticity of this relic (#/. W., mateevil. 2),

Different laws as to the wearing of rings existed during the empire: Tiberius made a large property qualification necessary for the wearing of gold rings; Severus conceded the right to all Roman soldiers; and later still all free citizens possessed the jus annuli aurei, silver rings being

2 This ring afterwards passed into the Beverley collection.

Etrusean

rings,

Greek rings.

Roman rings.

Celtic rings.

Episco- pal rings,

Rl

worn by freedmen and iron by slaves. Under Justinian even these restrictions passed away.

In the 3d and 4th centuries Roman rings were made engraved with Christian symbols. Fig. 1 shows two silver rings of the latter part of the 4th century, which were found in 1881 concealed in a hole in the pavement of a Roman villa at (Fifehead Neville, Dorset, together with some coins of the same period. Both have the monogram of Christ, and one has a dove within an olive wreath rudely cut on the silver bezel. These rings are of special interest, as Roman objects with any Christian device have very rarely been found in Britain.

Large numbers of gold rings have been found in many parts of Europe in the tombs of early Celtic races. They are usually of very pure gold, often penannular in form—with a slight break, that is, in the hoop so as to form a spring. They are often of gold wire formed into a sort of rope, or else a simple bar twisted in an ornamental way. Some of

Fia. 1.—-Roman silver rings.

the quite plain penannular rings were used in the place.

of coined money.

Throughout the Middle Ages the signet ring was a thing of great importance in religious, legal, commercial, and private matters.

The episcopal ring! was solemnly conferred upon the newly made bishop together with his crozier, a special formula for this being inserted in the Pontifical. In the time of Innocent II]. (1194) this was ordered to be of pure gold mounted with a stone that was not engraved ; but this rule appears not to have been strictly kept. Owing to the custom of burying the

episcopal ring in its owner's coffin a great many fine examples still exist. Among the splendid collection of rings formed by the distinguished naturalist Edmund Waterton, and now in the South Kensington Museum, is a fine gold episcopal ring decorated with niello, and inscribed with the name of Alhstan, bishop of Sherborne from 824 to 867 (see fig. 2).2 In many cases an antique gem was mounted in the : bishop's ring, and often an inscrip- tion was added in the gold setting of the gem to give a Christian name to the pagan figure. The monks of Durham, for example, made an intaglio of Jupiter Serapis into a portrait of St Oswald by adding the legend capvT s. oswaLpI. In other cases the engraved gem appears to have been merely regarded as an ornament without meaning, as, for example, a magnificent gold ring found in the coffin of Seffrid, bishop of Chichester (1125- 1151), in which is mounted a Gnos- tic intaglio. Another in the Water- ton collection bears a Roman cameo in plasma of a female head in high relief ; the gold ring itself is of the 12th century. More commonly the episcopal ring was set with a large sapphire, ruby, or other stone cut ~~ en cabochon, that is, without ee 'Ss and very magnificent in effect (see Fre. 3.—13th-century episco- fig. 3). is was worn over the bishop's. Youn, of den a coal gloves, usually on the fore- finger of — # Sapplure en cabochon. the right hand ; and this accounts for the large size of the hoop of these rings. In the 15th and 16th centuries bishops often wore three or four rings on the right hand

Alhstan.

1 See a paper by Edm. Waterton, in Arch. Jour., xx. p. 224. 2 See NIELLO (vol. xvii. p. 494) for a cut of. another specimen of au early ring decorated in a similar way.

NG O61

in addition toa large jewel which was fixed to the back of each glove.

Cramp rings were much worn during the Middle Ages Cramp as a preservative against cramp. They derived their rings. virtue from being blessed by the king; a special form of service was used for this, and a large number of rings were consecrated at one time, usually when the sovereign touched patients for the king's evil.

Decade rings were not uncommon, especially in the 15th Decade

century; these were so called from their having ten rings. knobs along the hoop of the ring, and were used, after the manner of rosaries, to say nine aves and a paternoster. In some cases there are only nine knobs, the bezel of the ring being counted in, and taking the place of the gaude ina rosary. The bezel of these rings is usually engraved with a sacred monogram or word.

Gemel or gimmel rings, from the Latin gemedlus, a twin, Gemel were made with two hoops fitted together, and could be rings. worn either together or singly ; they were common in the 16th and 17th centuries, and were much used as betrothal rings.

Posy rings, so called from the "poesy" or rhyme en- posy graved on them, were specially common in the same cen- rings. turies, The name posy ring does not occur earlier than the 16th century. ZHCAIC, XAIPE, KAAH, or votis meis Claudia vivas. In the Middle Ages many rings were inscribed with words of cabal- istic power, such as anam zapta, or Caspar, Melchior, and Balthasar, the supposed names of the Magi. In the 17th century they were largely used as wedding rings, with such phrases as "love and obaye," "fear God and love me," or "mulier viro subjecta esto."*

In the same century memorial rings with a name and jemorial date of death were frequently made of very elaborate rings. form, enamelled in black and white ; a not unusual design was two skeletons bent along the hoop, and holding a coffin which formed the bezel.

In the 15th and 16th centuries signet rings engraved Mer. with a badge or trademark were much used by merchants chants' and others; these were not only used to form seals, but Tings. the ring itself was often sent by a trusty bearer as the proof of the genuineness of a bill of demand. At the same time private gentlemen used massive rings wholly of gold with their initials cut on the bezel, and a graceful knot of flowers twining round the letters. Of this kind is Shakespeare's ring, now in the British Museum, which was found near the church of Stratford; on it is cut a cord arranged in loops between the letters Wand S. Other fine gold rings of this period have coats of arms or crests with graceful lambrequins.*

Poison rings with a hollow bezel were used in classical Poison times; as, for example, that by which Hannibal killed rings. himself, and the poison ring of Demosthenes. Pliny records that, after Crassus had stolen the gold treasure from under the throne of Capitoline Jupiter, the guardian of the shrine, to escape torture, " broke the gem of his ring in his mouth and died imniediately.". The medizval anello della morte, supposed to be a Venetian invention, was actually used as an easy method of murder. Among the elaborate ornaments of the bezel a hollow point made to work with a spring was concealed ; it communicated with a receptacle for poison in a cavity behind, in such a

3 See Waterton, in Arch. Jour., xvi. p. 307.

4 The celebrated ring given to Essex by Queen Elizabeth was meant to be used for a similar purpose. It is set with a fine cameo por- trait of Elizabeth cut in sardonyx, of Italian workmanship.

XX —71

Papal

rings.

Hebrew rings.

Thumb rings.

562

way that the murderer could give the fatal scratch while shaking hands with his enemy. This device was probably suggested by the poison fang of a snake.

The so-called papal rings, of which many exist dating from the 15th to the 17th centuries, appear to have been given by the popes to new-made cardinals. They are very large thumb rings, usually of gilt bronze coarsely worked, and set with a foiled piece of glass or crystal. On the hoop is usually engraved the name and arms of the reigning pope, the bezel being

without a device. They are of little intrinsic value, but magnificent in appearance. —

Another very large and elaborate form of ring is that used during the Jewish marriage service. Fine examples of the 16th and 17th centuries exist. In the place of the bezel is a model, minutely worked in gold or base metal, of a building with high gabled roofs, and frequently movable weathercocks on the apex. This is a conven- tional representation of the temple at Jerusalem.

Perhaps the most magnificent rings from the beauty of the workmanship of the hoop are those of which Benvenuto Cellini produced the finest examples. They are of gold, richly chased and modelled with caryatides or grotesque figures, and are decorated with coloured enamels in a very skilful and elaborate way. Very fine jewels are sometimes set in these magnificent pieces of 16th-century jewellery.

Thumb rings were commonly worn from the 14th to the 17th century. Falstaff boasts that in his youth he was slender enough to "creep into any alderman's thumb ring" (Shakes., Hen. IV., Pt. I, act ii. sc. 4).

The finest collections of rings formed in Britain have been those of Lord Londesborough, Edmund Waterton (now in the South Kensington Museum), and those still in the possession of Mr A. W. Franks and Mr Drury Fortnum.

See Gorleus, Dactyliotheca, Lyons, 1601; King, Antique Gems and Rings, 1872; Jones, Finger-Rings, 1878; Edwards, History of Rings, New York, 1875 ; and various articles by Waterton and others in the Archeological Journal. (J. H. M.)

RINGWORM. See ParasitisM, vol. xviii. p. 269, and Sxin DIsHAsEs.

RIOBAMBA, or RoyaBamsBa, a town in the South- American republic of Ecuador, situated on the road from Guayaquil to Quito in "a sand valley or plain of the great central highland of the Andes—Chimborazo, Car- guairazo, Tunguragua, and Altar all being visible from its plaza." The town has occupied its present site only since the close of the 18th century;

in 1797 the old town, which lay about 12 miles to the west at Cajabamba, was com- pletely destroyed by a vast landslip (still recognizable) from Mount Cicalfa in one of the most terrific convulsions recorded even in that region of volcanic activity. Ruins still remain to show that Riobamba was a much larger and finer place then than at the present day. Though said to have 16,000 inhabitants, and to manufacture woollen gloves, sacking, and coverlets, the town is poorly built and comparatively lifeless.

RIO DE JANEIRO (in full form Sao Sepastido po Rio DE JANEIRO, and colloquially shortened to Rro), the capital of Brazil, and one of the principal seaports of South America, is situated on the western side of one of the finest natural harbours in the world in 25° 54' 23" S. lat. and 43° 8' 34" W. long. (the position of the observatory). Along with its environs it is separated from the province of Rio de Janeiro (whose chief town is Nitherohi) and constitutes an independent municipality (municipio neutro), with an area of about 540 square miles, divided into nineteen (formerly sixteen) parishes or frequezias. Most of the streets are narrow and mean- looking; even the fashionable Rua do Ouvidor, which is

lined on both sides with handsome shops, is a mere alley. The Rua Direita, or, as it is now called officially, Rua Primeiro de Marco, is the principal business street, and is wide and pleasant. It runs from the gate of the royal palace (a building of small preten- sions) to the con- vent of Sao Bento, and contains the exchange, the post office, and _ the custom-house, as well as the impe- rial chapel (1761) and several other churches. The churches and mo- nastic buildings of Rio de Janeiro number upwards of fifty, mostly built in the "Jesuit" style, but striking from their size and the barbaric mag- nificence of their decorations, as well as on account of their well-chosen sites. La Candellaria (17th century) is conspicuous from the height of its towers, and La Gloria crowns a beautiful eminence on the bay. The monastery of Sao Bento is reputed to be the wealthiest in the empire, with large possessions in land and mines; and its chapel is not unworthy of that reputation. Besides the famous

Harbour of Rio de Janeiro.

Cobras eRatl

<

ROL) een ta ay WF i

- *GS*

:

Rio de Janeiro and its Environs,

hospital of Dom Pedro IL, better known as La Miseri- cordia, because built (1841) on ground belonging to the fraternity of that name, there are several smaller institu- tions of the same class in the city ; and a large and hand- some lunatic asylum, founded in 1841 with funds obtained by selling titles of nobility at a fixed tariff, occupies a good position in the Botafogo suburb. The military hospital is also an extensive establishment. Among the literary and scientific institutions of the city, the College Dom Pedro

RIO—RIO

II. (which is well organized), national museum, institute of history, geography, and ethnology (1838), polytechnic institute, national educational museum, polytechnic school, military, naval, and normal schools, lyceum of arts, musical conservatory, geographical society, and astronomical and meteorological observatory deserve special mention. The great national library owes its foundation to the bequest of Joao VI., and now numbers upwards of 120,000 volumes open to the public daily (see Liprariss, vol. xiv. p. 530, where the lesser libraries are also mentioned). One of the pleasant features of the city is the abundant supply of excellent water distributed to numerous stately fountains in the streets and public squares. The chief aqueduct, begun in the middle of the 17th century, starts at Tijuca, about 12 miles distant, and crosses the valley (740 feet wide and 90 feet deep) between Monte de Santa Theresa

and Monte de Santo Antonio by a beautiful double tier of arches (erected in 1750), which form a striking feature in some of the finest views of the city. Its entire length being covered in with stone work, the water is kept remark- ably cool. As the city has extended, other aqueducts of less architectural pretensions have had to be constructed ; and a good deal has been done by an English company in recent years to provide a proper system of sewers. The bay of Rio de Janeiro has been the subject of poetic panegyric ever since it was discovered ; and the traveller who comes to it after a voyage round the world seems as susceptible to its charm as if it were his first tropical experience.! The actual entrance, between Fort St Juan and Fort Santa Cruz, is 1700 yards wide. Within there are fifty square miles of anchorage, or even more for vessels of light draught, the bay having a width varying from 2 to 7 miles and stretching inland from the sea for 16 miles. Its coast-line, neglecting minor indentations, measures 60 miles. Such a sheet of water would be beautiful anywhere ; but, when on all sides it is surrounded by hills of the most varied contour, the beauty is enhanced a thousandfold. Its surface is broken by a large num- ber of islands—from the Ilha do Governador (6 miles long and 2 broad ; population 2500) down to the little cluster of the Jerubahibas.

Rio is the seat of the principal arsenal in the empire, and most of the Brazilian cruisers have been built in its dockyards. The roadstead for vessels of war is between Villegagnon Island, with its fort, and the islands at the north-east angle of the town called respectively Ilha das Cobras (Snake Island) and Ilha dos Ratos (Rat Island). On the north side of Ilha das Cobras is the naval arsenal with two large docks. On Ilha das Enchadas (Coaling Island) there is a fine commercial dock 385 feet long, on keel blocks, 45 feet wide at the entrance and 28 feet deep. Between 1846 and 1855 the average number of vessels that cleared from the port of Rio was over 680 with an average total burden of 221,280 tons. In 1867 1811 vessels (522,407 tons) entered and 1032 (596,663 tons) cleared ; in 1883 1218 (1,220,330 tons) entered and 1067 cleared, while, besides, the coasting trade was represented by 1414 vessels (454,739) entering. England has the greatest share of the foreign shipping trade, Germany ranking next, and France third. How completely (in spite of the fact that Santos and Rio Grande have become more independent) Rio de Janeiro is the commercial as well as the political capital of Brazil is evident from the

fact that the exports from Rio are on the average fully equal in value to those from the rest of Brazil; for instance, the value of the exports from the capital in 1859-60 was £5,938,850 out of £11,826,121 from the empire, in 1879-80 £10, 566, 800 out of £18,928,635, and in 1881-82 £7,550,966 out of

1 "This bay," says Mr Gallenga, "is the very gate to a tropical paradise. There is nowhere so bold a eoast, such a pieturesque eluster of mountains, sueh a maze of inlets and outlets, such a burst of all-pervading vegetation. The city itself is like Lima or Buenos Ayres, a mere chess-board of shabby narrow streets. But the environs all round—the Botafogo Bay, the vale of Larangerias, the height of Tejuea, San Cristoval, Santa Teresa, and others… . may well challenge comparison with any of the loveliest localities of either hemisphere. You are bidden drive out to the Botanic Gardens (at Botafogo), but the whole road inland or along the water is nothing but a continuous garden."

£18,522,050. To this large total coffee has long contributed 40-50 per cent., and in 1880-81 (an exceptional year) the ratio rose to 86 per cent. Though the cofiee plant was not introduced till 1770, Brazil is the greatest eoffce-producing country in the world, and Rio de Janeiro is consequently the largest coffee-exporting city. The other exports of moment are brandy (in decreasing quantities), sugar, hides, diamonds, tapioca (mainly to France), tobacco and cigars, medicinal herbs, gold dust, and jacaranda, rosewood, and other timbers. The imports comprise cotton goods, machinery, pitch pine, and petroleum. Among the comparatively few local industries are the weaving of eoloured buckskins (by a German firm) and other woollen and half woollen stuffs, the extensive manufacture of artificial mineral waters and liquors, brewing, carriage-building, and hat-making. Rio de Janeiro is the terminus of the Dom Pedro II. Railway, and thus of nearly the whole railway system of the country ; and it communicates regularly by steamer with Nitherohi on the other side of the bay, which is the terminus of another line. The population of the municipality of Rio de Janeiro was in 1850 stated at 266,466, of which 205,906 were in the town proper; but this, like most of

the earlier figures, appears to be an exaggeration, as the census in 1872 gave only 274,972, of which about 190,000 were in the town and suburbs, the slaves numbering 48,939 and the foreigners (mainly Germans, French, and Italians) 84,279. The Italian element has been rapidly increasing. 'The bulk of the population is Portuguese with a mixture of Negro blood. The native Indian races are scarcely represented.

The annual rainfall at Rio de Janeiro is about 60 inches, the greatest precipitation taking place in February (12 inches), and the least in August (under 1 inch). The monthly ranges of tein- perature for 1882 were—January 97°-68° , February 95°-68°; March 95°-69°; April 87°-64°; May 84°-60°; June 82°-59°; July 85° 59°; August 98°-54°; September 80°-50°; October 92°-59°; No- vember 97°-59° ; December 96°-62°.

The bay of Rio de Janeiro, the Nitherohi or " Hidden Water" of the natives, was first observed on 1st January (hence the name) by Alphonso de Souza, who supposed, as the Rio indicates, that he had discovered the mouth of a large river. How Villegagnon in 1558 took possession of the island which now bears his name but was then called after his patron Coligny, and how his colony was destroyed by the Portuguese, has been told in the article Braziu (vol. iv. p. 229). The eity of Rio de Janeiro did not become the capital of the viceroyalty till 1763, when José I. chose it in preference to Bahia because it was a better centre for defensive operations against the Spaniards. In 1711 it had been captured by Duguay-Trouin, who exacted 70,000 eruzados as ransom. It became the residence of the Portuguese royal family in 1808; in the same year its port was declared free to foreign trade ; and in the course of a short time it was made by Doin Joo VI. the seat of so many important institutions that Portugal became jealous at finding the relation between mother country and colony practically reversed. When Jofio VI. returned to Portugal and Pedro was declared emperor of Brazil in 1822, Rio de Janeiro naturally remained the capital of the new state. LEcclesiastically the city was at first (from the foundation of the church of Sio Sebastifo by Mendo de Sa in 1567) subject to the diocese of Bahia (San Salvador). It was made a suffragan bishoprie of Bahia by papal bull of 19th July 1576; and when Bahia was by the bull of 16th November 1676 created the metropolitan

archbishopric of. Brazil, Rio de Janeiro was (along with Pernambuco) declared a bishopric, the bishop's authority extending over the province of Espirito Santo northwards and southwards to the Rio de la Plata (Rio da Prata). The first bishop relinquished his dignity without taking possession ; and the second did not reach his diocese till 1682, when he made the church of St Sebastian on the Castle Hill his cathedral. This distinction was in 1734 transfcrred to the Church of the Cross and in 1788 to that of the Rosary. A new cathedral was begun in 1749 by D. Frei Antonio do Desterro, but the works were discontinued on his death, and in 1840 the materials served for the military academy.

See Milliet de Saint-Adolphe, Diccionario… . do Imp. do Brazil, Paris, 1846; G. Gardiner, Travels in the Interior of Brazil, 1846; Burmeister, Reise nach

Brasilien, Berlin, 1853 ; llerbert H. Smith, Brazil, 1880; C.F. van Delden Laerne, Brazil and Java, 1885. i eAS W.)

RIO GRANDE (that is, " Great River " in both Spanish and Portuguese), a descriptive epithet which in a vast number of cases has become a proper name. (1) Rio GranbDE (or Rio Bravo) pEL Norrs, which rises in the Rocky Mountains between the La Plata and San Juan ranges in the south-west of Colorado, has a total course of about 1800 miles, and forms for 1100 miles the boundary between the United States and Mexico, but owing to the shallowness of its ordinary current is navigable for steamers only to Kingsbury's Rapids, 450 miles from the sea. (2) Rio GRANDE DO Norte, or Potengi, or Potingi,

pot

which gives its Portuguese name to a northern province of Brazil, rises in the Serra dos Cairiris-Novos, passes Natal, the capital of the province, and falls into the sea to the south of Sao Roque. (3) Rio GRANDE Do SUL, the out- let of the Lagda dos Patos, wrongly supposed by the early explorers to be the mouth of a great river, gives its name to a city and province of Brazil (see below). (4) Rio GRANDE, a river of Western Africa, enters the sea opposite the Bissagos Archipelago (see SENEGAMBIA).

RIO GRANDE DO SUL, or in full Sio PepRo po Rio GRANDE Do SUL, a city of Brazil, in the province of the same name, near the mouth of the estuary of Rio Grande. Including the suburbs it is a place of from 30,000 to 35,000 inhabitants (1880), with a considerable trade and various manufactures. The bar at the mouth of the "Rio" does not admit vessels of full 10-feet draught ; but dredging operations undertaken by the Government in 1882 are considerably increasing the depth. In 1881-84 a railway was constructed from Rio Grande do Sul to Bage, 125 miles inland, The average annual value of the imports in the six official years ending June 30, 1882, was about £589,043, reckoning the milreis at 2s. In 1881 651 vessels (133,779 tons) crossed the bar inwards, and 555 (133,276) outwards. Among the foreign vessels the British are most numerous. The imports are very various, to supply the colonies of Germans, Italians, &c., settled throughout the province ; the exports on the other hand are mainly hides, skins, bones, hair, tallow, &c.

Rio Grande do Sul was a long time the chief town of the captaincy of El Rei (which included both the present province of Rio Grande do Sul and that of Santa Catharina). It was first founded as an encampment of Portuguese troops in 1737 on the south side of the RioGrande. The settlement was removed to its present site by Gomes Freire d'Andrade in 1745. The Spaniards occupied this part of the country from 1763 to 1776. In 1807 the two districts of Sio Pedro and Santa Catharina were united and erected into a province with Sio José de Porto Alegre for its chief town ; and, though Rio Grande was declared a city in 1809, Porto Alegre retained its position even after the separation into two comarcas in 1812. The name of the province has been rendered familiar in Europe through the remarkable success which has attended the establishment of German and Italian agricultural colonies. In 1872 there were 36,458 foreigners in the province to 330,564 free- born Brazilians and 67,791 slaves; and by 1882 it was estimated that the German population alone amounted to 102,000, while the Italians, who began to immigrate in 1875, were rapidly approaching 50,000. The first German settlement was that of So Leopoldo on the Rio do Sino, founded by Dom Pedro I. in 1825. By 1830 the inhabitants numbered 5000, and in 1854 the town was made a municipium. Others of the same nationality are Novo Mundo (1850), Nova Petropolis (1858), Santa Maria da Soledade, Marato, Sao

Benedicto, Sdo Salvador, Montenegro, Feliz, Teutonia (1858), Estrella (1856), Santa Cruz (1849), Mont Alverne, Germania, Sao Lorenzo (1858), Santa Clara, Sao Silvano, Domingos, &c. The principal Italian colonies are Caxias, Conde d'Eu, Douna Isabel, and Silviera Martins, which in 1884 had respectively 13,680, 6287, 9595, and 6000 inhabitauts. The success of these colonies is one of the most important elements in the development of the Brazilian empire. eae aes ea nh, ee osteo the Italian colonies, Breitenbach's paper in Globus (1885) ; and, for the Lagéa dos Patos, Ihering in Deutsche geogr. Bldtter (Bremen, 1885),

RIOM, a town of France, with 9590 inhabitants, at the head of an arrondissement in the department of Puy-de- Déme, 8 miles north of Clermont-Ferrand on the railway to Paris, occupies an eminence on the left bank of the Ambéne (a left-hand tributary of the Allier) rising above the fertile plain of Limagne. It is surrounded with boule- vards and has wide streets, but the houses, being built of black lava, have a rather sombre appearance. Some date from the 15th and 16th centuries, with turrets and ancient carved work, The church of St Amable goes back to the 12th century, but has suffered by repeated restorations. The old ducal palace (now occupied by the court of appeal, &c.) has a collection of portraits of Auvergne celebrities. A feature in the town is the fountains, of which some are

of the Renaissance period. Riom trades in the products of Limagne—grain, wine, hemp, preserved fruits, and especially a conserve of apricots—and has a tobacco manu- factory.

Riom (Ricomagus or Ricomwm of the Romans) was long the rival of Clermont. Along with Auvergne it was seized for the crown by Philip Augustus, and it was the capital of this province under the dukcs of Berri and Bourbon. During the religious wars it long held with the League. Its courts of law, always famous, are associated with the memory of D'Aguesseau.

RIONERO IN VOLTURE, a city of Italy, in the pro- vince of Potenza, 4 miles from Atella, is pleasantly situated at the foot of Monte Volture, has the repute of being the best built and best kept of the towns of the Basilicata, and has long been distinguished by the industrious character of its inhabitants (11,383 in 1881). It does not seem to be older than the first half of the 17th century. In 1851 it suffered severely from the earthquake. .

RIOT is "an unlawful assembly which has actually begun to execute the purpose for which it assembled by a breach of the peace and to the terror of the public. A lawful assembly may become a riot if the persons

assembled form and proceed to execute an unlawful purpose to the terror of the people, although they had not that purpose when they assembled" (Stephen, Digest of the Criminal Law, art. 73). The above is the definition of a riot at common law in England. The offence is the most grave kind of breach of the peace known to the law, short of treason. In its previous stages it may be an affray, an un- lawful assembly, or a riot, according to circumstances, and it may, if carried far enough, become treason. An affray is the fighting of two or more persons in the public street. An unlawful assembly is an assembly of three or more persons with intent to commit a crime by force or carry out a common purpose, lawful or unlawful, in such a way as to give reasonable grounds for fearing a breach of the peace. A rout is an unlawful assembly which has made a motion towards the execution of its common purpose. If the unlawful assembly should begin to demolish a particular inclosure, that would be a riot; if it should proceed to pull down all inclosures, that would be treason. It was considered as early as the 14th century that the common law gave an insufficient remedy against riot. In 1360 the statute of 34 Edw. III. c. 1 gave jurisdiction to justices to restrain, arrest, and imprison rioters. In 1393 the statute of 17 Ric. IT. c. 8 conferred similar powers on the sheriff and posse comitatus. Numerous other Acts extend- ing the common law were passed, especially in the Tudor reigns (see Stephen, History of the Criminal Law, vol. i. p. 202). The effect of existing legislation is to constitute certain statutory offences similar to riot at common law. The earliest Act now in force is one commonly called the Riot Act, 1 Geo. I. st. 2,¢.5. That Act makes it the duty of a justice, sheriff, mayor, or other authority, wherever twelve persons or more are unlawfully, riotously, and tumultuously assembled together to the disturbance of the public peace, to resort to the place of such assembly and read the following proclamation :—" Our Sovereign Lady the Queen chargeth and commandeth all persons being assembled immediately to disperse themselves, and peaceably to depart to their habitations or to their lawful business, upon the pains contained in the Act made in the first year of King George for preventing tumultuous and riotous assemblies. God save the Queen." It is a felony punishable with penal servitude for life to obstruct the reading of the proclamation or to remain or continue together unlawfully, riotously, and tumultuously for one hour after the proclamation was made or for one hour after it would have been

made but for being hindered. The Act requires the justices to seize and apprehend all persons continuing after the hour, and indemnifies them

RIP—RIP

and those who act under their authority from liability for injuries caused thereby. Any prosecution for an offence against the Act must be commenced within twelve months after the offence.

By 24 & 25 Vict. c. 97, § 11, it isa felony punishable with penal servitude for life for persons riotously and tumultuously assembled together to the disturbance of the public peace to unlawfully and with force demolish or begin to demolish or pull down or destroy any building, public building, machinery, or mining plant. By § 12 it is a misdemeanour punishable with seven years' penal ser- vitude to injure or damage such building, &c. A riotous assembly of three or more seamen unlawfully and with force preventing, hindering, or obstructing the loading or unloading or the sailing or navigation of any vessel, or unlawfully and with force boarding any vessel with intent to do so, constitutes a misdemeanour punishable with twelve months' hard labour, 33 Geo. ITI. c. 67. In addi- tion to these Acts, there are others aimed at crimes of a somewhat similar nature, such as assembly for the purpose of smuggling, going armed in pursuit of game by night, forcible entry and detainer, political meetings in the city of Westminster, tumultuous petitioning, and unlawful drilling. For these offences see Stephen, Digest of the Criminal Law, art. 76-82.

It is the duty of a magistrate at the time of a riot to assemble subjects of the realm, whether civil or military, for the purpose of quelling ariot. In this duty heis aided by the common law, under which all subjects of the realm are bound to assist on reasonable warning, and by various enaetments enabling the authorities to call out the auxiliary and reserve forces for the suppression of riot, and to close public houses where a riot isapprehended. It is his duty to keep the peace ; if the peace be broken, honesty of intention will not avail him if he has been guilty of neglect of duty. The question is whether he did all that he knew was in his power and which could be expected from a man of ordinary prudence, firm- ness, and activity. The law as thus stated is gathered from the opinions of the judges on the trials of the lord mayor of London and the mayor of

Bristol on indictments for neglect of duty at the time of the Gordon riots of 1780 and the Bristol riots in 1831.!_ In addition to his liability to an indictment at common law, a defaulting magistrate is subject under the provisions of 18 Hen. IV. c. 7 and 2 Hen. V. st. 1, c. 8, to a penalty of £100 for every default, the default to be inquired of by commission under the great seal. A matter of interest is the extent of the protection afforded by the Riot Act to soldiers acting under the eommands of their officers. The soldier is at the same time a citizen, and the mere fact of his being a soldier is not sufficient to exonerate him from all responsibility. No case in which the question has called for decision seems to have arisen. It is the opinion of Mr Justice Stephen that a soldier would be protected by orders for which he might reasonably believe his superior officer to have good grounds (History of the Criminal Law, vol. i. 206). On the other hand, he would probably not be protected by an order plainly unnecessary, such as an order to fire into a crowd of women and children when no violence was observable.

The civil remedy given to those whose property has suffered by riot is of an exceptional charaeter. The action is brought against the hundred in which the riot took place. This liability of the hundred is a survival of the pre-Conquest obligation of the huudred and tithing to pursue and do justice on the thief: the hundred is supposed to guarantee the orderly conduct of its inhabitants, and is liable to damages for its failure to preserve order. The liability of the hundred in case of robbery was enacted as early as the Statute of Winchester, 13 Edw. I. st. 2. That and subsequent Acts were repealed by 7 & 8 Geo. IV. c. 27, and their provisions were consolidated and amended by 7 & 8 Geo. IV. c. 81. The Act gives a remedy against the hundred in the ease of any church, chapel, house, machinery, &c., being "feloniously demolished, pulled down, or destroyed, wholly or in part, by any persons riotously and tumultuously assembled together." A summary remedy is given for damage not exceeding £30. The remedy is extended to injury to threshing machines by 2 & 3 Will. IV. c. 72. It has becn held that damage to a house will not entitle the owner to compensation from the hundred unless the intention of the riotcrs was to totally destroy the house.

The Riot Act does not extend toIreland. But similar provisions are contained in the Act of the Irish Parliament of 27 Geo. III. c.

‘ Reports of these trials will be found in Carrington and Payne’s Reports, vol. v., p. 254.

069

15, as amended by 5 & 6 Vict. c. 28. An offence peculiar to Ireland and punishable with penal servitude for life under the provisions of the Aets above mentioned is the sending of a notice, letter, or message exciting or tending to exeite a riot. The Prevention of Crimes Act, 1882, enabled summary proeeedings to be taken against rioters. The Act was temporary only, expiring with the session of Parliament 1885.

In Scotland a riot may be either rioting and mobbing or rioting and breach of the peace. The first is much the same as the riot of English law. “ Mobbing consists in the assembling of a number of people and their combining against order and peace to the alarm of the lieges” (Macdonald, Criminal Law, 180). The second offence occurs where concourse or a common purpose are wanting. Numerous Acts against riot and unlawful convoeation were passed by the Scottish parliament at different times, beginning as early as 1457. The Riot Aet (1 Geo. I.) applies to Seotland. The liability of the county or burgh for destruction of property by riot is pro- vided for by the Riot Act and by several Acts of Parliament of the reign of George III.

In the United States the law is based upon that of England. In some States there is a statutory proelamation for the dispersion of rioters in words almost identieal with those of the British Riot Act. The city, town, or county, according to circumstances, is liable for the damage caused by rioters. In some cases a remedy over against the rioters is given by legislation. (J. Wt.)

RIPARIAN LAWS. By the law of England the property in the bed and water of a tidal river as high as the tide ebbs and flows at a medium spring tide is pre- sumed to be in the crown or a grantee of the crown, generally the lord of a manor, and the bed and water of a non-tidal river

are presumed to belong to the person through whose land it flows, or, if it divide two properties, to the riparian proprietors, the rights of each extending to mid- stream (ad medium filum aque). In order to give riparian rights, the river must flow in a defined channel, or at least above ground. The diminution of underground water collected by percolation does not give a cause of action to the owner of the land in which it collects, though he is entitled to have it unpolluted unless a right of pollution be gained against him by prescription. Asa general rule a riparian proprietor, whether on a tidal or a non-tidal river, has full rights of user of his property. The most important limitations of these rights will be found under the headings FisHEertes and Navigation Laws. In both these cases the rights of the riparian proprietors are subject to the intervening rights of other persons. These rights vary according as the river is navigable or not, or tidal or not. For instance, all the riparian proprietors might combine to divert a non-navigable river, though one alone could not do so as against the others, but no combination of riparian proprietors could defeat the right of the public to have a navigable river maintained undiverted. It is proposed in this place to consider shortly the rights enjoyed by, and the limitations imposed upon, riparian proprietors, in addition to those falling under the head of fishery or navigation. In these matters English law is in substantial accordance with the law of other countries, most of the rules being deduced from Roman law. Perhaps the main difference is that running water is in Roman law a res communis, like the air and the sea. In England, owing to the greater value of river water for manufacturing and other purposes, it cannot be said to be common property, even though it may be used for navigation. The effect of this difference is that certain rights, public in Roman law, such as mooring and unloading cargo, bathing and towing, are only acquirable by prescription or custom in England. A hut might lawfully be built on the shore of a tidal river by Roman law; in England such a building would be a mere trespass.

The principal rights enjoyed by riparian owners as such are the right of increase of property by means of alluvion and the right of use of the water.

Alluvion is the gradual and imperceptible increase of land by deposit; a sudden and violent changing of the course of a streain by a flood does not change the property. The addition to property

566

by alluvion is occasionally of considerable practical importance. In the reign of Charles I. the estate of Lord Berkeley was increased by 300 acres left dry by the Severn. The land was claimed for the crown, but judgment was given in favour of Lord Berkeley. Ifan island be formed in the stream, it belongs to the proprietor to whose land it is nearest; if it be exactly in mid-stream, it belongs to the riparian proprietors equally. The right of use of the water of a natural stream cannot be better described than in the words of Lord Kingsdown :—" By the general law applicable to running streams, every riparian proprietor has a right to what may be ealled the ordinary use of water flowing past his land,—for instance, to the reasonable use of the water for domestic purposes and for his cattle, and this without regard to the effect which such use may have in case of a deficiency upon proprietors lower down the stream. But, further, he has a right to the use ofit for any purpose, or what may be deemed the extraordinary use of it, provided he does not thereby interfere with the rights of other proprietors, either above or below him. Subject to this condition, he may dain up a stream for the purposes of a mill, or divert the water for the purpose of irrigation. But he has no right to intercept the regular flow of the stream, if he thereby interferes with the lawful use of the water by other proprietors, and inflicts upon them a sensible injury," (Miner v. Gilmour, 12 Moore's Privy Council Cases, 156). The rights of riparian proprietors where the flow of water is artificial rest on a different principle. As the artificial streain is made by a person for his own benefit, any right of another person asa riparian proprietor does not arise at common law, as in the case of a natural stream, but must be established by grant or prescription. The rights of a person nota riparian proprietor who uses land abutting on a river by the licence or grant of the riparian proprietor are uot as full as though he were a riparian proprietor, for he cannot be imposed as a riparian proprietor upon the other proprietors without their consent. The effect of this appears to be that he is not

entitled to sensibly affect their rights, even by the ordinary as distinguished from the extraordinary use of the water.

The limitations to which the right of the riparian proprietor is subject may be divided into those existing by common right, those imposed for public purposes, and those established against him by crown graut or by eustom or prescription. Under the first head eomes the public right of navigation, of anchorage and fishery from boats (in tidal waters), and of taking shell-fish (and probably other fish except royal fish) on the shore of tidal waters as far as any right of several fishery docs not intervene. Under the second head would fall the right of eminent domain by which the state takes riparian rights for public purposes, compensating the proprietor, the restrictions upon the fishery rights of the proprietor, as by Acts forbidding the taking of fish in close time, and the restrictions on the ground of public health, as by the Rivers Pollution Act, 1876. The jurisdiction of the state over rivers in England may be exer- cised by officers of the crown, as by commissioners of sewers or by the Board of Trade under the Crown Lands Act, 1866. PRESCRIPTION). Among such rights are the right to bathe, to land, to discharge cargo, to tow, to dry nets, to beach boats, to take sand, shingle, or water, to have a sea-wall main- tained, to pollute the water (subject to the Rivers Pollution Act). In some cases the validity of local riparian customs has been re- cognized by the legislature. The right to enter on lands adjoining tidal waters for the purpose of watching for and landing herrings, pilchards, and other sea-fish was confirmed to the fishermen of Somerset, Devon, and Cornwall by 1 Jac. I. c. 28. The digging of sand on the shore of tidal waters for use as manure on the land was granted to the inhabitants of Devon and Cornwall by 7 Jae. I. c. 18, The public right of taking or killing rabbits in the day- time on any sea bank or river bank in the county of Lincoln, so far as the tide extends, or within one furlong of such bank, was pre- served by 24 & 25 Vict. c. 96, §17. It should be noticed that rights of the public may be subject to private rights. Where the river is navigable, although the right of navigation is common to the subjects of the realm, it may be connected with a right to exclusive access to riparian land, the invasion of which may form the ground for legal proceedings by the riparian proprietor (see eae hes, Fishmongers' Company, Law Reports—Appeal Cases, vol. i., :

A freshwater lake appears to be governed by the same law as a non-tidal river. The preponderance of authority is in favour of the right of the riparian proprietors as against the erown.

Unlawful and malicious injury to sea and river banks, towing

RIP—RIP

paths, sluices, floodgates, milldams, &c., or poisoning fish is a crime under 24 & 25-Vict. c. 97.

Scotland. —The law of Scotland is in general accordance with that of England. One of the principal differences is that in Scotland, if a charter state that the sea is the boundary of a grant, the fore- shore is included in the grant, subject to the burden of crown rights for publie purposes. Persons engaged in the herring fishery off the coast of Scotland have, by 11 Geo. III. ¢. 31, the right to use the shore for 100 yards from high-water mark for landing and drying nets, erecting huts, and curing fish. Similar powers were given to those engaged in any white fish fishery by 29 Geo. II. c. 23 ; but the section of the Act giving these powers was repealed by the Sea Fisheries Act, 1868.

United States.—1n the United States the common law of England was originally adopted, the State succeeding to the right of the crown. This was no doubt sufficient in the thirteen original States, where rivers of the largest size do not occur, but was not generally followed in later times when it had become obvious that English law was insufficient to meet the case of the vast rivers and lakes of North America. "In Pennsylvania, North Carolina, South Carolina, Iowa, Mississippi, and Alabama, it has been determined that the common law does not prevail, and that the ownership of the bed or soil of all rivers navigable for any useful purpose of trade or agriculture, whether tidal or fresh water, is in the State" (Bouvier, Law Dict., s.v. "River"), The supreme court of the United States in 1857 declared constitutional an Act of Congress of 1845, extending the admiralty jurisdiction of the United States to all publie navigable rivers and lakes where commerce is carried on between different States or with foreign nations (The Propeller Genesee Chief v, Fitzhugh, 12 Howard's Reports, 443). The right of eminent domain has been exercised to a much

greater extent than in England in the acquisition of sites for mills under the powers of State legislation in encouragement of trade. Snch a course has never been necessary in England (see Angell, Law of Watercourses, § 478). The law as to subterranean water seems to be still unsettled. Some State decisions have recognized a public right to moor vessels and place cargo on the shore. (J. Wt.)

RIPH (59 or 48”), ¢.¢, RABBENU YISHAK B. YA‘AKOB HaAxKKoHEN! At-pHasiI or AL-FEZI, after the death of his teachers the greatest rabbi of Africa, and subsequently of the Peninsula, in the 11th and 12th centuries, was born in 1013 at Kal‘at-Ibn-Hammad near Fez, and died at Lucena in 1103. His teachers were the great rabbins Rabbenu Nissim and Rabbenu Hananeel, both of Kairawan (ob. 1055). What Rasui (q.v.) was to the Ashkenazic Riph was for the Sepharadic Jews,? not only a teacher of the deepest learning, but also one who made new paths altogether for the students of the Talmud. Otherwise these two great men differed widely from one another in their activity. Rashi left the Babylonian Talmud, correc- tions of the text excepted (which he, however, confined to his own commentary, and by which his own disciples and publishers corrected the Talmud text), in its old state. Al-phasi, however, first separated from it the Agadah, which he cast aside almost entirely, and then he sifted the Hala- khah® thoroughly, retaining only the practical part of it. Thus either title his book has received is correct, the Lvttle Talmud or the Decisions of Rab Al-phez. Late in the 12th century and in the 13th a host of rabbins respectively attacked and defended Al-phasi (see Rasap III, and RamBan), whilst others commented on him (see below). One of the commentaries accompanying the Riph is by Rashi. This commentary, however, which is now an integral part of the book, was not written for it by Rashi himself, who could scarcely have known of Riph’s exist- ence, and much less of his work.. The fact is the enter- prising publisher of the second edition (Venice, 1521-22, fol.), the famous Daniel Bombergi, had one of the three recensions which Rashi had made on the Talmud excerpted and applied to corresponding parts of the Riph which has the very wording of the Talmud, or something near it. Where no Rashi was to be found in the passages of the

1 That Riph was a Kohen, or Aaronite, will be seen from the epitaph given in Haggahoth Hariph in the collection Tummath Yesharim (Venice, 1622, fol.).

2 On these names see MAHzOR, vol. xv. p. 293.

3 On these terms see Miprasu, vol. xvi. p. 285, and MISHNAK, p.

503.

RIP—

Talmud (see Rasui) Rasrpam (q.v.) was utilized. Riph was not only a great Talmudist, but also a man of the greatest magnanimity and highest morality, as may be seen from the following two facts. When R. Yishak Ibn Albalia, who had been his bitterest enemy, lay at the point of death, he recommended his son to Riph, who received him with the greatest kindness, and at once adopted him as son.! Again, when Riph himself was at the point of death he recommended to the congregation of Lucena for successor, not his own learned and virtuous son Ya'akob, but the yet more learned, though not more virtuous, R. Yoseph Ibn Migash,? who became the teacher of the teachers of MAIMoNIDES (q.v.).

Although Riph's works which are known are only two, the editions of onc of these and the commentaries thereon are very numerous ; we can only mention a few of them.

I. Hilekhoth Rab Al-phez. (1) With the Novellw of Rabbenu Nissim b. Reuben, the Decisions of R. Mordekhai b. Hillel (see Rosu), the Novellxw of one of the disciples of Rabbenu Yonah, the com- mentaries of R. Yehonathan Hakkohen of Lunel and R. Yoseph Habibo (Constantinople, 1509, fol.). (2) The second edition we have already mentioned. (8) With the Strictures by R. Zerahvah Hallevi (author of the Maor) and Nachmanides's defence called Milhamoth Adonai (see RAMBAN), &c. (Venice, 1552, fol.) Each subsequent edition contains additional matter.

II. Responsa, originally some, if not all of them, written in Arabic (Leghorn, 1781, and reprint, Vienna 1794, both in 4to).

For more literature by andon Riph see Zemim De‘im in the collection Tum- math Yesharim, (8S. M. 8.-S.)

RIPLEY, a well-built market town of Derbyshire, situ- ated near the river Derwent and the Cromford Canal, and on a branch line of the Midland Railway 10 miles north of Derby and 10 south of Chesterfield. The principal public building is the market-hall erected in 1880. In the neighbourhood there are extensive collieries, and coke is largely manufactured. Besides the large concern of the Butterley Iron Company, which includes foundries, blast furnaces, and boiler works, the town possesses silk and cotton mills. The charter for the market was granted by Henry III. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1211 acres) in 1871 was 5639, and in 1881 it was 6087.

RIPLEY, GEORGE (1802-1880), critic and man of letters, was born at Greenfield, in western Massachusetts, on October 3, 1802. He was educated at local schools and at Harvard College, where he took his degree in 1823, ranking first in his class, and then studying theology was in 1826 ordained pastor of a Unitarian church in Boston. Here his success as a thoughtful preacher was marked ; but in 1840 he resigned his charge, and he subsequently retired from the active ministry altogether.

It was during those years that there grew up in New England that form of thought or philosophy known as Transcendentalism—a name, as Emerson said, “ given no- body knows by whom, or when it was applied.” Its growth was part of what Dr Holmes has termed the “‘in- tellectual or, if we may call it so, spiritual revival ” which during the period from 1820 to 1840 was so strongly marked in the New England “churches, in politics, in philanthropy, in literature.” Ripley was prominent, if not the leader, in all practical manifestations of the movement; and it was by his earnestness and practical energy that certain of its more tangible results were directed. The first meeting of the Transcendental Club was held at his house in September 1836. He was a founder and a chief supporter of the famous magazine The Dial, which was the organ of the school from 1840 to 1844. Most important of all, however, he was the originator and

conductor of an experiment which was the most interesting practical result of the thought and ten-

1 See Sepher Hakkabbalah of RaBan II. (q.v.). 2 See Hemdah Genuzah (Koenigsberg, 1856, 8vo), leaf 30a.

dencies of the time,—the foundation of "The Brook Farm Association for Education and Agriculture." This project, in the words of its originator, was intended 'to insure a more natural union between intellectual and manual labour than now exists; to combine the thinker and the worker, as far as possible, in the same individual; to guarantee the highest mental freedom by providing all with labour adapted to their tastes and talents, and securing to them the fruits of their industry; to do away with the necessity of menial services by opening the benefits of education and the profits of labour to all; and thus to prepare a society of liberal, intelligent, and cultivated persons whose relations with each other would permit a more simple and wholesome life than can be led amidst the pressure of our competitive institutions." In short, its aim was to bring about the best conditions for an ideal civilization, reducing to a minimum the labour necessary for mere existence, and by this and by the simplicity of its social machinery saving the maximum of time for mental and spiritual education and development. At a time when Emerson could write to Carlyle, 'We are all a little wild here with numberless projects of social reform; not a reading man but has a draft of a new community in his waistcoat pocket,"—the Brook Farm project certainly did not appear as impossible a scheme as many others that were in the air. At all events it enlisted the co-operation of men whose subse- quent careers show them to have been something more than visionaries. The association bought a tract of land in West Roxbury, some ten miles from Boston, and with about twenty members actually began its enterprise in the summer of 1841.

For three years the undertaking went on quietly and simply, subject to few outward troubles other than financial difficulties, the number of associates increasing to seventy oreighty. Pictures of the life they led have been preserved by many hands. It was during this period that Haw-

thorne had his short experience of Brook Farm, of which so many suggestions appear in the Blithedale Romanee, though his preface to later editions effectually disposed of the idea-—which gave him great pain—that he had either drawn his characters from persons there, or had meant to give any actual description of the colony. Emerson, though he refused in a kind and characteristic letter to join in the undertaking, and though he afterwards wrote of Brook Farm with not uncharitable humour as ‘‘a per- petual picnic, a French Revolution in small, an age of reason in a patty-pan,” yet spoke of the design as “noble and generous,” and among its founders were many of his near friends.

In 1844 the growing need of a more scientific organiza- tion, and the influence which Fourier’s doctrines had gained in the minds of Ripley and many of his associates, combined to change the whole plan of the community. It was transformed, with the strong approval of all its chief members and the consent of the rest, into a Fourierist “phalanx” in 1845. There was an accession of new members, a momentary increase of prosperity, a brilliant new undertaking in the publication of a journal, The LHar- binger, in which Ripley, Charles A. Dana, Francis G. Shaw, and John Dwight were the chief writers, and to which Lowell, Whittier, George William Curtis, Parke Godwin, Story, Channing, Higginson, Horace Greeley, and many more now and then contributed. But the individu- ality of the old Brook Farm was gone. The association was not rescued even from financial troubles by the change. With increasing difficulty it kept on till the spring of 1846, when a fire which destroyed its building or “phalanstery” brought losses which caused, or certainly gave the final ostensible reason for, its dissolution. Its failure left Ripley poor and feeling keenly the defeat of

his project ; but the event forced him at last to devote himself to that career of literary labour in which the real success of his life was achieved. He wrote for The [Har- binger during the year of its continuance, but in 1849 he joined the staff of Zhe Tribune, founded eight years before by Horace Greeley in New York, and in a short time became its literary editor. This position, which, through his steadiness, scholarly

conservatism, and freedom from caprice as a critic, soon became one of great influence, he held until his death on July 4, 1880.

During the greater part of the time of his connexion with The Tribune, Ripley was also the adviser of a leading publishing house, an oecasional contributor to the magazines, and a co-operator in several literary undertakings. The chief of these, and the most lasting work that bears his name, was the American Cyclopedia. Begun under the editorship of Ripley and Charles A. Dana in 1857, the first edition was finished in 1862, under the title of the New American Cyclopedia—distinguishing it from its only import- aut Amcrican predecessor in the field, the small Encyclopedia Americana of many years before, which Dr Francis Lieber had edited, and which had been largely an adaptation of Brockhaus's Conversations-Lexikon. The new undertaking was upon a much larger seale, and enlisted a great number of well-known contribu- tors. It proved exceedingly popular; and its commercial success led the publishers to undertake a complete revision of it ten years later—still under the same editors—the result of which, with the dropping of the word "new" from the title, was the American Cyclopedia now before the public.

Ripley's Life, written by the Rey. O. B. Frothingham, forms one of the volumes of the series American Men of Letters. (E, L. B.)

RIPON, a cathedral city and borough in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated at the confluence of the Ure with the Laver and the Skell, and on the Great Northern Railway, 22 miles north-west of York and 11 north of Harrogate. The Ure is crossed by a fine bridge of 9 arches. The streets are for the most part narrow and irregular, and, although most of the houses are compara- tively modern, some of them still retain the picturesque gables characteristic of earlier times. In the spacious market-place there is a modern cross, erected in 1781. The cathedral, although not ranking among those of the first class, is celebrated for its fine proportions, and is of great interest from the various styles of architecture which it includes. Its entire length from east to west is 266 feet, the length of the transepts 130 feet, and the width of the nave and aisles 87 feet. Besides a large square central tower, there are two western towers. The cathedral was founded on the ruins of St Wilfrid's abbey about 680 a.p. in the reign of

Egfrid, but of this Saxon building nothing now remains except the crypt, called St Wilfrid's Needle. The present building was begun by Archbishop Roger (1154-81), and to this Transition period belong the tran- septs and portions of the choir. The western front and towers, fine specimens of Early English, were probably the work of Archbishop Gray (1215-55), and about the close of the century the eastern portion of the choir was rebuilt in the Decorated style. The nave and portions of the central tower were rebuilt towards the close of the 15th century in the Perpendicular style. The whole building underwent renovation under the direction of Sir G. G. Scott from 1862 to 1876 at a cost of £40,000. There are a number of monuments of historical and antiquarian interest. The bishop's palace, a modern building in the Tudor style, is situated in extensive grounds about a mile from the town. The principal secular buildings are the town-hall, the public rooms, and the mechanics' institution. There are several old charities, including the hospital of St John the Baptist founded by the archbishop of York in 1109, the hospital of St Mary Magdalene for women founded by the archbishop of York in 1341, and the hospital of St Anne founded about the time of Edward IV. by an unknown benefactor. From an early period till the 16th century Ripon was celebrated for its manufactures of woollen cloth. After this industry declined the town

became so well known for its spurs that "as true steel as Ripon rowels" became a current phrase; and both Ben Jonson and Davenant refer to Ripon spurs in their verses. This manufacture, with those of buttons and various kinds of hardware, continued to prosper till the beginning of the present century, when the rise of the mechanical industries in the large towns caused it to decline. The population of the borough (area 1580 acres) in 1871 was 6806, and in 1881 it was 7390.

The city is first mentioned under the name of Jnhrypum in con- nexion with the establishment of a monastery in 660 by Abbot Eata of Melrose. A few years after it was bestowed on St Wilfrid, who was elevated to the see of Northumbria. After the division of the bishopric in 678, a see was erected at Ripon. 'The city suffered severely in connexion with the incursions of the Danes and the invasion of William the Conqueror, and

was burut by Robert Bruce in 1819 and 1323. During the Civil War it was for a time oecu- pied by the Parliamentary forces, but it was retaken by the Royalists in 1643. It was first represented in parliament in the reign of Edward I. It lost one of its two members in 1868, and ceased to be separately represented in 1885. Surrounding the town is an extensive district called the liberty of Ripon, over which the areh- bishop of York at one time exercised spccial jurisdiction, not yet altogether annulled.

RIPPERDA, Jonn Witt1am, Baron (1680-1737), a political adventurer, was born of noble parents in the province of Groningen in the Netherlands, in 1680, and was educated in the college of the Jesuits at Cologne. Shortly after leaving the college he married a Protestant, and assumed the Protestant creed. In 1715 he was sent by the states on an embassy to Spain. Having gained the favour of Philip V., he resigned the office of Dutch ambassador, became a penitent convert to the Catholic faith, and took up his permanent residence in Madrid. He made use of every influence to advance himself to the first position at court, and if possible to supplant Alberoni, who, provoked by his intrigues, deprived him of his pension and estate. After the fall of Alberoni he suc- ceeded in ingratiating himself with the queen, Elizabeth of Parma. Returning from an embassy to Vienna in 1725, he pretended to the queen that he had effected her favourite scheme of betrothing her son Don Carlos to the eldest archduchess. His immediate elevation to a duke- dom and to the office of prime minister compelled him to persist in this imposture. Lie was backed up by lie ; the nation was impoverished to furnish him with hush- money ; and he continued to try every bungling shift until, in May 1726, he was deprived of his offices, and sent a prisoner to Segovia. Making his escape after two years' imprisonment, he went to England. His hopes of in- fluence there having been overthrown by the treaty of Seville in 1729, he finally collected his property and set sail for Holland, arriving at The Hague in November 1731. Thence he sailed to Morocco, where he was welcomed by the emperor Muley Abdallah, and, becoming a Moham- medan, was placed at the head of the administration of the country. But his royal patron was soon driven from the throne, and he himself was glad to escape with his head to Tetuan, where he could find no better employment for his restless spirit than that of asserting himself

to be the last and greatest of the prophets. He died at Tetuan towards the end of 1737.

Sce Mattér, Historia del Duque de Riperdd (2d ed., Madrid, 1796); Memoirs of the Duke de Ripperda (2d ed., London, 1740); Moore, Lives of Cardinal Alberoni, the Duke of Ripperda, and Marquis of Pombal (2d ed., London, 1814),

RIPUARIAN LAW. See Saric Law.

RIST, Jonann (1607-1667), German hymn-writer, was born at Ottensen in Holstein on March 8, 1607, and edu- cated at Hamburg, Bremen, Leyden, Utrecht, and Leipsic. In 1635 he became a preacher at Wedel on the Elbe, and there he died on 31st August 1667 (see Hymns, vol. xii. pp. 586-7).

ees

hits © HL 069

RITSCHL, Frreprich Witnetm (1806-1876), an eminent German scholar, was born in 1806 in Thuringia. His family, in which culture and poverty were hereditary, were Protestants who had immigrated several generations earlier from Bohemia. Ritschl was fortunate in his school training, at a time when the great reform in the higher schools of Prussia had not yet been thoroughly carried out. His chief teacher, Spitzner, a pupil of Gottfried Hermann, divined the boy's genius and allowed it free growth, applying only so much either of stimulus or of restraint as was absolutely needful. After a wasted year at the university of Leipsic, where Hermann stood at the zenith of his fame, Ritschl passed in 1826 to Halle. Here he came under the powerful influence of Reisig, a young '""Hermannianer" with exceptional talent, a fascinating personality, and a rare gift for instilling into his pupils his own ardour for classical study. The great controversy between the '"Realists" and the " Verbalists" was then at its height, and Ritschl naturally sided with Hermann against Boeckh. The early death of Reisig in 1828 did not sever Ritschl from Halle, where he brilliantly attained the doctorate, and in 1829 became privat-docent, in 1832 an extraordinary professor. He began his

professorial career with a great reputation and brilliant success, but soon hearers fell away, and the pinch of poverty compelled his removal to Breslau, where he reached the rank of "ordinary " professor in 1834, and held other offices. The great event of Ritschl's life was a sojourn of nearly a year in Italy (1836-37), spent in libraries and museums, and more particularly in the laborious examination of the Ambrosian palimpsest of Plautus at Milan. From this journey Ritschl's whole temperament and intellect received a new and richer colouring, and the remainder of his life was largely occupied in working out the material then gathered and the ideas then conceived. Bonn, whither he removed on his marriage in 1839, and where he remained for twenty-six years, was the great scene of his activity both as scholar and as teacher. The philological seminary which he controlled, although nominally only joint director with Welcker, became a veritable officina Litterarum, a kind of Isocratean school of classical study ; in it were trained many of the foremost scholars of the last forty years. The names of Georg Curtius, Ihne, Schleicher, Bernays, Ribbeck, Lorenz, Vahlen, Hiibner, Biicheler, Hel- big, Benndorf, Riese, Windisch, Brugmann, who were his pupils either at Bonn or at Leipsic, attest his fame and power as a teacher. In 1854 Otto Jahn took the place of the venerable Welcker at Bonn, and after a time suc- ceeded in dividing with Ritschl the empire over the philo- logical school there. The two had been friends, but after gradual estrangement a violent dispute arose between them in 1865, which for many months divided into two hostile forces the universities and the press of Germany. Both sides were steeped in fault, but Ritschl undoubtedly received harsh treatment from the Prussian Government, and pressed his resignation. He renounced not only Bonn but Prussia, though strongly attached to his country, which he had often refused to leave when plied with advantageous offers. He accepted a call to Leipsic, where he died in harness in 1876,

Ritschl's character was strongly marked. The spirited element in him was powerful, and to some at times he seemed overbearing, but his nature was noble at the core; and, though intolerant of inefficieney and stupidity, he never asserted his personal claims in any mean or petty way. He was warmly attached to family and friends, and yearned continually after sympathy, yet he established real intimacy with only a few. Both at Breslau and at Bonn he complained of isolation, which (though he was

himself unconscious of the fact) was in part the natural fruit of his own superiority. The interests of his pupils were at all times dear, perhaps even too

dear, in his eyes. He was far from being a dreamy scholar ; his talent for practical affairs would have secured him eminence in

almost any walk of life, and he was credited with diplomatic finesse. That Ritsch] had a great faculty for organization is shown by his administration of the university library at Bonn, and by the eight years of labour which carried to success a work of infinite complexity, the famous Priscx Latinitatis Monuwmenta Epigraphica (Bonn, 1862). This volume presents in admirable facsimile, with prefatory notices and indexes, the Latin inscriptions from the earliest times to the end of the republic. It forms an intro- ductory volume to the Berlin Corpus Inscriptionum Latinarum, the excellence of which is largely due to the precept and example of Ritschl, though he had no hand in the later volumes.

In all that he did Ritschl exhibited rare genius combined with a precision unsurpassed. But to bring out to the full his great powers the zest of discovery was indispensable. When he was on the track of a new idea, he worked with a fiery energy which triumphed over his almost life-long physical weakness, and left him no peace till every difficulty was cleared away. But the toil of carrying his discoveries to their consequences he was only too apt to leave to feebler hands than his own. He was fertile in great projects, and struck out the main ideas which should guide them, but one only did he pursue to absolute completion, the Prisce Latinitatis Monumenta,—precisely because, from the nature of this work, he was buoyed up from first to last by the occurrence or thie expectation of novelty. The results of Ritschl's life are mainly gathered up in a long series of monographs, for the most part of the highest finish, and rich in ideas which have leavened the scholarship of the time.

As a scholar, Ritschl was of the lineage of Bentley, to whom he looked up, like Hermann, with fervent admiration. His best efforts were spent in studying the languages and literatures of Greece and Rome, rather than the life of the Greeks and Romans. He was sometimes, but most unjustly, charged with taking a narrow view of "Philologie." That he keenly

appreciated the importance of aucient institutions and ancient art both his published papers and the records of his lectures amply testify. He had in reality no prejudice against any department of learning. He was ever anxious to discern precisely the work for which each pupil was fitted, and he despatched many explorers into fields where he could not labour himself. Ritschl for the most part devoted himself to the study of ancient poetry, and in particular of the early Latin drama, This formed the centre from which his investigations radiated. Starting from this he ranged over the whole remains of pre-Ciceronian Latin, and not only analysed but augmented the sources from which our knowledge of it must come. Before Ritschl the acquaintance of scholars with early Latin was so dim and restricted that it would perhaps be hardly an exaggeration to call him its real discoverer.

To the world in general Ritsch] was best known as a student of Plautus. When he began his studies, the text of that author was like some ancient picture, defaced alike by time and by much repainting. He cleared away the accretions of ages, and by efforts of that real genius which goes hand in hand with labour, brought to light many of the true features of the original. It is infinitely to be regretted that Ritschl's results were never combined to form that monumental edition of Plautus of which he dreamed in his earlier life. For one such palace from the master buildcr's hand we could well have sacrificed some of the abundant material which he left for punier architects to handle. Ritschl's examination of the Plautine MSS. was both laborious and brilliant, and greatly extended the knowledge of Plautus and of the ancient Latin drama. Of this two striking examples may be cited. By the aid of the Ambrosian palimpsest he recovered the name T. Maccius Plautus, for the vulgate M. Accius, and proved it correct by strong extrancous arguments. On the margin of the Palatine MSS. the marks C and DV continually recur, and had been variously explained. Ritsch proved that they meant " Canticum" and " Diverbium," and hence showed thatin the Roman comedy only the conversations in iambic senarii were not intended for the singing voice. Thus was brought into strong relief a fact without which there can be no true appre- ciation of Plautus, viz., that his plays were comie operas rather than comic dramas.

In conjectural criticism Ritsch] was inferior not only to his great predecessors but to some of his contemporaries. His emendations do not often present that perfect wedding of art and fortune which we see in the best work of Madvig or Cobet. His imagination was in this field (but in this field only) hampered by erudition, and his judgment was unconsciously warped by the desire to find in his text illustrations of his discoverics. His remedies were often need- lessly violent. But still a fair proportion of his textual labours has stood the test of time, and he forged the weapons which are destined to conquer for us the true text of Plautus, so far as an envious fate permits. Ritschl rendered immense service by his study of Plautine metres, a field in which little advance had been made since the time of Bentley. In this matter Ritschl was aided by an accomplishment rare (as he himsclf lamented) in Germany—the art of writing Latin verse.

In spite of the incompleteness, on many sides, of his work,

Ritschl must be assigned a place in the history of learning among a very select few. His studies are presented principally in his Opuscula collected partly before and partly since his death. The Trinummus (twice edited) was the only specimen of his contem- plated edition of Plautus which he completed. The edition has been continued by some of his pupils—Goetz, Loewe, and others— aud is still (1885) in progress.

The facts of Ritschi's life may be best learncd from the elaborate biography by Otto Ribbeck (Leipsic, 1879). An interesting and discriminating estimate of Ritschl's work is that by Lucian Mueller (Berlin, 1877). (J. S. R.)

RITSON, Josepu (1752-1803), was the most militant and ill-tempered, and at the same time one of the most learned and accurate, of the antiquaries of the 18th century. Born at Stockton-on-Tees, of a Westmoreland yeoman family, in 1752, he was bred to the law, and settled in London as a conveyancer at the age of twenty-two. Already he had

shown eccentricity of temper, had become a fierce apostle of vegetarianism, and a zealous student of anti- quities. His first notable publication was in 1782, an attack on Warton's History of English Poetry. The fierce and insulting tone of his Observations, in which Warton was treated as a showy pretender, and charged with cheating and lying to cover his ignorance, made a great sensation in literary circles. In nearly all the small points with which he dealt Ritson was in the right, and his corrections have since been adopted, but the unjustly bitter language of his criticisms roused great anger at the time, much, it would appear, to Ritson's delight. In the following year Johnson and Steevens were assailed in the same uncere- monious fashion for their text of Shakespeare. Bishop Percy was next subjected to a furious onslaught in the preface to a collection of Ancient Songs (printed 1787, dated 1790, published 1792). The only thing that can be said in extenuation of Ritson's unmatchable acrimony is that he spared no pains himself to ensure accuracy in the texts of old songs, ballads, and metrical romances that he edited. His collection of the Robin Hood ballads is perhaps his greatest single achievement. Scott, who admired his industry and accuracy in spite of his temper, was almost the only man who could get on with him. On one occasion, when he called in Scott's absence, he spoke so rudely to Mrs Scott that Leyden, who was present, threatened to "thraw his neck" and throw him out of the window. Spelling was one of his eccentricities, his own name being an example: Ritson is short pronunciation for Richardson. He died in 1803.

RITTENHOUSE, Davin (1732-1796), astronomer, was born at Germantown, Pennsylvania, on April 8, 1732. First a watchmaker, he afterwards became treasurer of Pennsylvania and (from 1792) master of the United States mint ; he was largely occupied in settling the boundaries of several of the States. As an astronomer, Rittenhouse's principal merit is that he introduced the use of spider lines in the focus of a transit instrument. His priority with regard to this useful invention was acknowledged by Troughton, who brought spider lines into universal use in astronomical instruments (see Von Zach's Monatliche Cor- respondenz, vol. ii. p. 215), but Felice Fontana (1730- 1805) had already anticipated the invention, though no doubt this fact was unknown to Rittenhouse. He died on 26th June 1796.

RITTER, Cart (1779-1859), the greatest geographer of modern times, was born at Quedlinburg on August 7th, 1779, and died in Berlin, September 29th, 1859. His father, a physician of some local eminence, having died, leaving his family in somewhat straitened circumstances, Carl, along with an elder brother and a young man, Johann Gutsmuths, who had been his private tutor, was re- ceived into the Schnepfenthal institution then just founded by Salzmann for the purpose of putting his educational theories to the test of experience. Gutsmuths, who had continued to teach his pupils without remuneration after

their father's death, remained their special guardian and instructor at Schnepfenthal, and in his letters to their mother every little detail of their mental development is affectionately recorded. The Salzmann system was practi- cally that of Rousseau: conformity to natural law and en- lightenment were its watchwords; great attention was given to practical life ; and the modern languages were carefully taught to the complete exclusion of Latin and Greek. In 1787 Gutsmuths reports about Carl that, "while not much of a hand at making money [trading with counters for coin was a regular branch of the Schnepfenthal education], he draws better maps than the biggest boys, and is making great strides towards becoming a professor of geography." When his school days were drawing to a close his future course was determined in a curious way by an introduction to Bethmann Hollweg, a banker in Frankfort. It was arranged that Ritter should become tutor to Hollweg's children, but that in the meantime he should attend the university at his patron's expense. In October 1796 he accordingly bade adieu to Schnepfenthal, and his next two winters were spent at Halle, where he resided in the house of Professor Niemayer, then at the height of his fame, and attended the lectures of Riidiger on statistics and science, . Sprengel on European history, Meinert on scientific agri- culture, &c. His duties as tutor in the Hollweg family began at Frankfort in 1798 and continued for the next fifteen years. In one matter he went directly counter to the Salzmann theory: he gave a large place to the study of the ancient classics, of which he had grown passionately fond. The years 1814—1819, which he spent at Géttingen in order still to watch over the welfare of his pupils, were

those in which he began to devote himself exclusively to geographical inquiries. In accordance with a promise exacted by Pestalozzi (with whom he had become acquainted at Yverdun on one of his many tutorial tours) he had several years previously drawn up a manual of physical geography in which many features of his later work are to be traced, but the book was not published. He now brought out his first masterpiece, Die Lrdkunde im Verhdltniss zur Natur und zur Geschichte des Menschen (Berlin, 2 vols., 1817-1818). In 1820 he was called to be professor extraordinarius of history at Berlin, where shortly afterwards he began also to lecture on statistics at the military college. He remained in this position till his death.

The service reudered to geography by Ritter was mainly tlirec- fold. His personal influence, due largely to the moral character of the man and partly to the skill of the teacher, was unusually potent on those who came within its range during the long years that he acted as a professor. Had he done nothing inore than use this influence in disseminating the geographical ideas of his time he would have stood high with his own generation. But, secondly, his investigations and teaching were informed by a fresh concep- tion of his subject which imparted life to what had been its dry bones and dust. Geography was, to use his own expression, a kind of physiology and comparative anatomy of the earth: rivers, moun- tains, glaciers, &c., wereso many distinct kinds of organs, each with its own appropriate functions ; and, as his physical frame is the basis of the man, determinative to a large extent of his life, so the structure of each country is a leading element in the historic pro- gress of the nation. This naturally led him to attach great import- ance to the vertical as distinguished from the horizontal develop- ment of the earth's surface, and also to give perhaps quite as much attention to the history of civilization and of the individual animals and plants by which civilization has been affected as to questions of purely physical geography. And, thirdly, he was a scientific compiler of the firstrank. Such portions of his universal geography as he completed remain each the standard thesaurus for its territory. This is especially the case with the sections devoted to Palestine and to Central Asia. Among Ritter's minor works may be mentioned Vorhalle europiiseher Volkergeschichten vor Herodot (Berlin, 1820); Die Stupas. . . . an der indobaktrischen Kénigsstrasse u. d. Kolosse

von Bamiyan (1888) ; Hinlettung zur allgemeinen vergleiehenden Geographie (Berlin, 1852); “ Bemerk- ungen tiber Veranschaulichungsmiittel rdumlicher Verhaltnisse bei graphischen Darstellungen durch Form u. Zahl,” in the Trans. of the Berlin Academy, 1828. After his death Danicl published selec-

tions from his lectures under the titles Geschichte der Erdkwnde (1851), Allgemeine Frdkunde (1862), and Europa (1863). Several of his works (e¢.g., the “Palestine” volumes of his Erdkunde) have been translated into English.

See Kramer, Carl Ritter, ein Lebensbild (1864 and 1870, 2d ed. 1875); Gage,

The Life of Carl Ritter (Edinburgh, 1867); Guyot, Carl Ritter, an address to the-

American Geogr. and Stat. Soc. (Princeton, 1860); F. Marthe, “ Was bedeutet Carl Ritter fiir die Geographie,” in Zettsch. der Ges. f. Erdk., Berlin, 1879.

RIVAROL, Antone DE (1753-1801), was born at Bagnols in Languedoc on the 26th June 1753, and died at Berlin on the 13th April 1801. It seems to be undisputed that his father was an innkeeper, but no researches have thrown any certain light on the question of his origin; later he assumed the title of Comte de Rivarol, and attributed hiniself to a noble family of Italian origin. His enemies declared that the family name was really Riverot, and that, whether Italian or not, it had nothing whatever to do with countship. It is certain that he bore several names, and that when he was among the foremost defenders of aristocracy his claim to share in it was by no means allowed by his associates. He was well educated, and is said to have been admitted by the bishop of Uzés to a theological seminary, then to have held a tutorship at Lyons under the name of Longchamps, then to have appeared in Paris under the further travesty of Chevalier de Parcieux with no better reason than that his mother was related to a man of science of that name. All this, however, is of very little

consequence ; it is sufficient that he appeared in Paris in 1780 (just when the operation of liberal ideas was throwing society most freely open to men of letters), with youth, good address, fair knowledge, and a very unusual stock of wit and literary ability. After competing for and sometimes winning several of the aca- demic prizes then in greatest vogue, Rivarol distinguished himself in the year 1784 by a treatise Sur l'universalité de la langue Francaise (which shows, if not much learning, the utmost critical acumen and a very happy faculty of expres- sion), and by a translation of the Inferno, very free but of no small merit. The year before the Revolution broke out he, with some assistance from a man of similar but lesser talent, Champcenetz, compiled a lampoon entitled Petzt Almanach de nos grands Hommes pour 1788, in which some writers of actual or future talent and a great many nobodies were ridiculed in the most pitiless manner. It made him many enemies, but scarcely more than his speeches in society had made. When the Revolution developed the importance of the press, Rivarol at once took up arms on the royalist side. The Journal Politique of Sabatier de Castres and the Actes des Apétres of Peltier were the chief papers in which he wrote. But he emigrated early in June 1792, and established himself at Brussels, whence he removed successively to London, Hamburg, and Berlin. For ten years he occupied himself not too strenuously with political pamphlets and literary projects, receiving pensions for his services to the royalist cause. He had married an Englishwoman, but had quarrelled with her, and during his later years had for his companion a pretty but totally uneducated girl named Manette, to whom he addressed certain often-quoted verses which are nearly poetry. Rivarol's genius, however, was essentially a genius of prose, though not a prosaic genius. No single work of his of any length has very great merit, and he is accordingly only known to posterity by volumes of " beauties" and selec- tions, composed of epigrammatic remarks, short passages of criticism, and the like. Rivarol could not tell an anecdote with quite the point of his contemporary and rival Cham- fort; but he has had no rival in France except Piron, and none in England except Sydney Smith, in sharp isolated conversational sayings. These were mostly ill-natured, and in some cases the full appreciation of them demands a more considerable acquaintance with the facts and men of the time than most readers possess. 'The brilliancy of Rivarol's

O71 phrase, however, can escape no one. Burke was hyperboli- cal, and not altogether happily hyperbolical, in calling him the Tacitus of the Revolution, because the description sug- gests a power of historical portrait painting which Rivarol did not possess. But the expression no doubt really re- ferred to the detached phrases which are so striking in Tacitus, and which Rivarol did in truth sometimes equal.

The works of Rivarol were published in five volumes by his friend Chéncdollé (who has reported much remarkable conversation of his in his last days) and Fayolle (Paris, 1805); but thcir perusal as a whole can only be recommended to the student of literature. Selections are frequent: that published by Dc la Hays (Paris, 1858), with introductory matter by Sainte-Beuve and others, and that edited in 1862 by M. de Lescure, may be specified. The last- named editor published, in 1883, a study on Jtivarol et la Société Francaise, which is the fullest treatment of the subject.

RIVE DE GIER, a town of France, in the department of Loire, situated 13 miles to the east-north-east of St Ktienne, on the Lyons Railway at the head of the canal of Givors on the Gier. The town, which is constantly enveloped in a dense cloud of smoke, and presents a dirty and unattractive appearance, is principally dependent on the coal industry, there being fifty pits in the basin of the Gier, with an annual output of over 19,000,000 bushels. There are twenty-two coke and lamp black furnaces, and five glass works, the products of which—coloured glass and so-called Nuremberg mirrors—are celebrated, on account of the fineness and purity of the sand found on the banks of the Rhone and the Sadne. Mining machinery, railway plant, and coarse ironmongery are also manufactured, and there are iron and steel works. A large number of persons are also employed in winding and spinning silk and in tape-weaving. The population in 1881 was 15,760.

Rive de Gier is a place of some antiquity, as appears from remains of Gallo-Roman buildings, and mosaics and coins found at various times. In the 11th century the canons of Lyons were its superiors. At a later period the town was surrounded by a wall and protected by a fortress, of which, however, but few traces arc visible. In the time of Henry IV. the working

of the mines had already given to the locality a measure of importance which has steadily increased. At one time it was feared that the coal basin, which was considered distinct from that of St Etienne, would soon be exhausted, but it has now been proved that the two are in reality one, and that they have a long future before them.

RIVER. See Gronocy, vol. x. p. 272-278.

RIVER ENGINEERING. 'The improvement of rivers Plate V.

may be considered under two aspects, for rivers form the natural channels for conveying the surplus rainfall from the districts through which they pass to the sea, and they can also be utilized for the purposes of inland navigation. If a river, owing to the small section of its channel, or the slight inclination of its bed, is incapable of discharging the whole volume of water which drains into it in rainy seasons, the lands along its banks become flooded, frequently to the great detriment of the crops, and sometimes with disastrous results to life and property. If, on the other hand, a river is impeded by rapids, by shoals, or by a bar at its mouth, it is prevented from serving as a natural highway for the traffic of the district through which it flows. Accordingly the mitigation of floods and the regulation of rivers are the problems which have to be grappled with in the engineering of rivers. The first aims at remedying an existing evil, and the second deals with the development of the resources and trade of a country by the improve- ment of its water communications.

Floods.—Floods are of two kinds, according to the nature Two

of the country traversed by the rivers producing them. Tor- rential rivers, flowing over impermeable strata and having a rapid fall, rise rapidly after a heavy rainfall, and produce a high flood which quickly subsides. Gently flowing rivers on the contrary rise slowly, and do not attain the same height as torrential rivers; but their floods subside slowly, and consequently, though less high, remain longer

Winter and summer floods.

Causes of floods.

Extent of pre- vention.

Methods of pre- vention.

o7t2

on the land than torrential floods. The valleys, moreover, of torrential rivers are steeper and less fertile than the alluvial plains of gently flowing rivers ; and, consequently, the high short floods of the former are less injurious than the long continuing lower floods of the latter. The long duration of a flood is also the more prejudicial, as some- times a flood remains long enough on the land for a second flood to come down before the first has subsided, thereby producing an increased rise.

Floods are generally largest in the winter monthis, for, owing to the absence of evaporation, a much larger pro- portion of rainfall finds its way into the rivers at that period ; and the greatest floods occur when rain falls on melting snow. High floods, however, sometimes occur in the summer after an exceptionally heavy rainfall; and they are necessarily far more injurious at that time of the year, devastating the crops on the land which they inundate.

Floods are due to the inadequacy of the river channel to carry off the water poured into it within a given period. The bed of a river, being formed and maintained by its stream, is merely adequate to carry the ordinary dis- charge. Large floods octur at too distant intervals to scour a sufficient channel for their passage, and conse- quently they overflow the banks and inundate the adjacent districts. Other causes, moreover, tend to aggravate this evil.

A river carries down a large amount of solid matter which has been either ground from the mountain rocks by glaciers, washed from the land by the inflowing streams, or thrown into it as refuse from towns and manufactories. This material tends to settle in the channel wherever the current is checked, and consequently raises its bed and impedes the flow of the stream. Moreover, a river flow- ing through a plain gradually increases its serpentine course, thereby diminishing its fall and reducing its velo- city. Accordingly the tendency of rivers is to deteriorate when left

to themselves; and the discharging capacity of their channels becomes less, whilst the extension of subsoil drainage causes the rain to flow more rapidly and com- pletely into the river upon whose basin it falls.

The available fall of the river is frequently diminished by the erection of fixed weirs across the channel, at various places, for the purpose of forming a head of water for mills, or of providing still-water navigation. These weirs are generally constructed with high sills, and of inadequate width ; and where flood openings closed by draw-doors are adopted the doors are frequently not fully raised till a flood has actually arrived. These weirs consequently not merely reduce the discharging capacity of the channel by diminishing the available fall of the water surface, but also actually restrict the section of the channel. The result is that floods occur more frequently, rise higher, and remain on the land for a longer period.

Prevention of Floods.—The entire prevention of floods

would entail a larger expenditure than the results would

justify. In most cases, the prevention of summer floods and the mitigation of winter floods would suffice; for, whilst summer floods are always very injurious, winter floods prove sometimes beneficial in depositing the mud which they bring down, provided they do not remain very long upon the land. Occasionally, however, where large tracts of low-lying country are exposed to inundation, and especially where portions of towns are below the flood level, it is necessary to extend the protection so as to ensure entire immunity from floods.

There are three methods by which floods may be pre- vented or mitigated, namely,—(1) improvement of channel ; (2) embankment of channel ; (3) pumping.

(1) Improvement of Channel.—The discharging capacity

of a river may be increased by enlarging the section of its channel ; by the formation of straight cuts, which reduce its length, and consequently increase its fall; by dredging away shoals, and thus rendering the fall of its bed more uniform ; and by removing obstacles to its flow at weirs.

The channels of the English Fen rivers have been enlarged and straightened, and additional straight drains have been excavated for the more effectual drainage of the low-lying Fen country. Catchwater drains have also been formed to collect the rainfall of the higher lands and convey it into the river lower down, thus gaining a better fall than could be obtained if the upland waters were allowed to flow down to the low lands, besides relieving the low lands of this additional discharge.

Straight cuts are very useful when the fall is slight and the velocity of flow is consequently small; but they are not so suitable for more rapid streams, and, besides modifying the flow, and thus tending to produce shoals below, their straight course is liable to be altered by the irregularities of the current, especially if joining a sharp bend above.

The banks in such cases need protection against erosion,

which adds considerably to the cost of the works. The improvement of the upper Mississippi by cut-offs has not proved satisfactory ; and it has been found preferable to train the river by brushwood mattresses and dykes.

Solid weirs across a river form serious impediments to its flow; and draw-door or movable weirs should be pro- vided with adequate waterways, and sills level with the bed of the river. Old bridges, also, with wide piers and narrow arches retard the discharge of a river, and their rebuilding with wide openings would afford considerable relief. All obstacles in the river bed, such as weeds, fallen trees, and refuse, should be periodically removed, and fish-traps at weirs should be discarded, as they collect floating leaves and rubbish in their meshes and thus soon become entirely blocked up.

(2) Embankment of Channel.—When it is essential that the lands bordering a river should be absolutely protected from inundation, the enlargement of a river bed to an adequate extent for discharging the

greatest floods would be too costly, especially when the fall is small; and it becomes necessary to resort to the expedient of increasing the channel, above the surface of the ground, by forming embankments along each side. By making the banks with material excavated from the channel, the earthwork serves the double purpose of enlarging the river bed and forming a bank. A flood channel of considerable dimensions can. be readily obtained by placing the embankments some distance back from the margin of the river, thus greatly enlarging the section when the waters rise above the level of the land, whilst leaving the natural river bed unaltered for the ordinary flow. In some cases merely low embank-

'ments are constructed, which retain small floods but are

submerged when large floods come down. Embankments, however, formed to secure the surrounding country from inundation must be high enough to exceed the highest flood level of the river, strong enough to resist the pres- sure of the water at that level, and perfectly watertight. If water can percolate through the bank, a breach is readily formed ; and if a high bank is overtopped by the river, the rush of the stream over it soon destroys a portion of the embankment and produces a disastrous inundation from the large volume of water suddenly liberated. The Fens of Lincolnshire, a large portion of Holland, the valley of the Po, and large tracts of low-lying land bordering the Mississippi are protected by embankments.

The defects in the system of embanking rivers are—that weak points in the banks are liable to be breached ; that the banks are liable to be overtopped by unusually high floods ; and that the muddy waters of the river in flood

Flood storage reser- Voirs.

Canaliza- tion of a river,

RIVER ENGINEERING

deposit their sediment in the bed of the river, instead of spreading it over the adjacent land, and thus gradually raise the river bed and consequently

the height of the floods. The remedies for these defects are strong high banks made of the best materials, and a periodical cleans- ing of the river bed. Neglect of these precautions has led to serious disasters. Large tracts in the Fens have been occasionally flooded by the bursting or overtopping of badly constructed banks. Numerous breaches have occurred in the embankments of the Po, resulting in the devastation of its valley; and the flood level of the Po has been so much raised that it has been decided not to heighten the embankments for fear of occasioning still greater disasters. The gradual silting up of the river Theiss, near Szegedin, produced a rise in its flood level which led to the overtopping of the protecting embank- ment in 1879, and the formation of a breach; and the water thus set free destroyed a portion of Szegedin, and inundated a tract of 200 square miles. The rise of the bed of some rivers in Japan, from the deposit of silt, has been followed up by the gradual raising of the embank- ments ; and this system has been carried out to such a degree, and the accumulated deposit is so great, that some of these embanked rivers have their beds as much as forty feet above the level of the plains over which they flow. These high embankments necessarily require constant attention ; and any failure is attended with serious in- undations. They serve as a warning against the extensive raising of embankments to counteract the silting up of a river.

(3) Pumping.—When lands are very flat and low, lying sometimes actually below the general drainage level of the district and the waterlevel of the streams, it is impossible for rivers to perform their ordinary function of draining the land by gravitation. It is necessary in such cases to create an artificial fall by pumping the drainage waters up so as to be discharged into the adjacent streams. This method has the advantage of ensuring the effectual drain- age of the lands, provided adequate pumping power is supplied ; but it forms an additional tax on the land, as steam has to be applied to do what is under ordinary con- ditions effected by nature, and the land has also to be surrounded by banks,

This system has been adopted for the drainage of the Haarlem Meer reclamation, and also for the lands re- claimed from Lake Y in the construction of the Amster- dam ship canal. instances, supplemented by

pumping; and a portion of the Witham basin has been secured against floods by this means.

The formation of large reservoirs in river valleys has been proposed for storing the surplus waters till a flood has subsided. A reservoir has indeed been formed, by constructing a high masonry dam across a narrow gorge of the Furens valley, which both supplies the town of St Etienne with water and preserves it from inundation. It is also proposed to prevent.the floods of the river Chagres from interfering with the Panama Canal, by impounding its flood waters in an extensive reservoir to be formed by building a high dam across a suitable point of its valley. In these cases, however, the deep valleys with their narrow gorges are peculiarly well adapted for the forma- tion of reservoirs having a considerable capacity, whereas most river valleys are unsuitable for reservoirs, and the construction of the long lengths of the banks that would be required would entail a very large expenditure, so that this system could only have a very restricted application.

Improvements of the Upper Portions of Rivers.—Most rivers are not suitable by nature for navigation in their non-tidal portion, or, in the case of tideless rivers, at

The drainage of the Fens is, in several |

O73

a considerable distance from their mouths, as the fall of their bed increases towards their source, and they gene- rally present irregularities in depth and flow, with occa- sional sharp bends. Even where the depth is adequate, an irregular or rapid flow offers a great obstacle to up-stream traffic. Moreover, the fall of the waterlevel in dry seasons would often make a river too shallow for navigation. Accordingly, whilst improving the worst bends and remov- ing shoals, it is frequently necessary to retain the water, when the flow is small, so as to maintain a sufficient depth. This is accomplished by dividing the river into a series of sections or reaches, and pounding up the water at the end of each reach by means of a dam or weir.

Formerly rivers used to be penned in by a series of stanches near shoal places, which held up the water, and, when several boats were collected in the pool above a stanch, it was suddenly opened, and the sudden rush of water floated the boats over the shallows below. This primitive method of navigation, termed flashing, was formerly practised on the Thames and the Severn, and also on some of the rapidly flowing rivers in France, such as the Yonne. The stanches on the Severn were removed in 1842; but a few still exist across the Thames above Oxford, where the barge navigation follows a lateral canal. These stanches, consisting of beams swung across the river and supporting a series of spars and paddles, were easily removed in flood time or for the passage of boats. The stanches on the Yonne, which were more recently erected, were of a more elaborate description, known as needle weirs, and are still retained as weirs for holding up the water, though the process of flashing has been discon- tinued.

As the demands of navigation increased, these primitive methods proved inadequate, and, moreover, they were quite unsuited for up-stream traffic. Accordingly weirs were substituted for stanches, to hold up the water in each reach ; and locks were constructed, in suitable side channels, for enabling vessels to be passed from one reach to the next with little loss of water, and with equal facility either up or down. Rivers have been thus converted into still-water navigations, with level reaches forming a series of steps, having a fall at each lock, in place of the natural inclination of the river bed; so that the up-river traffic is in a great measure relieved from the serious hindrance of an opposing current. In order that the water held back by the weir may be retained within the channel, it is necessary to raise the banks on each side for some distance above the weir; and, as the gradual rise in the river bed towards the upper end of the reach reduces the depth, it is necessary to deepen the river along the upper portion of the reach to secure a uniform draught of water. A river is thus practically converted into a canal, with this sole difference that it has still to discharge the drainage waters of its basin. This primary object of rivers, to which indeed they owe their existence, was in many instances somewhat overlooked when rivers were utilized for naviga- tion ; and weirs appear to have been often regarded merely as dams for retaining the water, rather than as regulators of its flow.

Weirs.—Loeks have been already considered in the article on CANALS (q.v.); so that it will suffice here to describe briefly the different forms of weirs, whieh are essentially river works.

Weirs have been divided into three elasses, namely, overfall weirs, draw-door weirs, and movable weirs.}

Overfall Weirs.—An overfall weir is a solid barrier placed aeross a stream for the purpose of raising the waterlevel (Plate V. fig. 1°), and only affords an outlet for the discharge of the river when the

water rises above its crest. The waterlevel of the river is thus per-manently raised, not merely in dry seasons, but also in flood time,

1 L. F. Vernon-Harcourt, Rivers and Canals, p. 112. 2 The fig. references in the present article all indicate Plate V.

Stanches,

Introduc-

tion of

locks and

weirs,

Overfall

weirs.

Draw- door weirs.

Tedding- ton weir.

Free rollers to draw- doors.

Movable weirs.

Frame weir,

o74

and its fall is correspondingly reduced. Accordingly, the dis- charging capacity of a riveris materially diminished by the erection of overfall weirs; and this is only partially remedied by the deepening of the channel for navigation, espeeially as deposit more readily accumulates in the lower part of a reaeh, owing to the reduction in velocity of the current by the conversion of the river into level reaches. Endeavours have been made to alleviate this defect by placing the weir in a wide place ou the river, and at an angle to the cross scetion of the channel, thereby increasing the length of its sill, and consequently the discharge over it for any definite height of the river (fig. 2). The gain in length of an oblique weir is somewhat neutralized by the weir not being at right angles to the direction of the eurrent ; and, cven if the cross section of the channel above the sill of the weir is as large as the average seetion of the river bed, the change in shape, and the small hydraulic radius of the section over the weir, check the discharge of the stream.

Draw-door Weirs.—In order to afford a freer flow than is attain- able with the best-designed overfall weir, draw-door weirs are sometimes adopted, which serve equally well to retain the water above during dry weather, and provide a large opening for the discharge of the stream in floods. Draw-door weirs eonsist of a row of doors, or sluice gates, sliding vertically in grooves formed at the sides of frames, piles, or piers, which are shut down when the flow is small, but are raiscd to admit the passage of flood waters. These weirs generally serve to supplement an ordinary overfall weir ; and, whilst the overfall weir regulates the flow in dry weather, the draw-door weir provides for its more rapid discharge in flood time. The relief, however, afforded by draw-door weirs depends eutirely on the opening they furnish ; they are rarely, if ever, made eqnal in section to the river channel, and their sills are usually raised some feet above the bed of the river; but, nevertheless, they are much superior to overfall weirs in respect of drainage, especially when the river has a small fall and low banks.

A large oblique overfall and draw-door weir has been erected across the Thames, by Mr Leach, at the limit of its tidal flow at 'Teddington, having a total length of 480 feet. This weir is divided into four bays, the two side bays being overfalls, whilst the two central bays, 1724 feet and 693 feet wide respectively, are closed by large iron draw-doors sliding in grooves at the sides of strong iron frames supporting a foot bridge from which the doors are raised. The frames rest upon piles, and on the top of a rubble mound raised about a foot above low-tide level.}

The friction of large draw-doors against the grooves, in being lifted, is considerable when there is a head of water on one side ; but this has been much reduced by Mr F. Stoney, in a large weir in Brazil, by making the doors, 20 feet in width, bear on each side against a row of free rollers suspended in the grooves.?

Movable Weirs.—Although draw-door weirs afford a much freer diseharge for a river than overfall weirs, the vertical frames or piers in which the doors slide offer more or less impediment to the flow. This defect is avoided by movable weirs, which, whilst equally efficient in retaining the water when raised, can be entirely lowered or removed so as to leave the channel quite open in flood- time.

There are three types of iovable weirs which have been regularly adopted abroad, whilst other forms have been occasionally tried. The two types most extensively used are the frame or needle weir and the shutter weir, whereas the drum weir has been only erected on the Marne.

The frame weir consists of a series of movable iron frames, placed at intervals across the ehanncl of a river end on to the current, carrying a foot bridge at the top, and supporting a wooden water- tight barrier which forms the actual weir. Till recently the barrier was always composed of a series of long square wooden spars, or needles, placed close together and nearly vertical, resting against a sill at the bottom and against a horizontal bar con- necting the frames near the top (fig. 3). This type of weir has, aceordingly, been very commonly called a needle weir (barrage & aiguilles) ; but this term would not now include every form of the frame weir. The first needle weir was erected across the Yonne in 1834 ; and till 1881 all the weirs on the Seine below Paris were of this form. The needle

weir is opened by lifting each needle successively from the foot bridge; one of the end frames is then disconnected from the rest by unfastening and withdrawing the connecting bars, the corresponding portion of the foot bridge is taken up, and the frame, which is hinged at the bottom, is lowered by chains on to the apron of the weir, and the whole of the frames are similarly lowered in succession, leaving the passage quite

clear. The weir is closed again by a precisely reverse series of operations.

As the weight of the needle, which should be readily lifted by

one man, imposes a limit to the height of the weir, the large frame weir recently erected at Port-Villez near Vernon, having a height

i L, F. Vernon-Harcourt, op. cit., plate iv. figs. 9 and 10. ~ Minutes of Proceedings Inst. C. H., vol. 1x. p. 88.

of 18 feet, has been closed by a sort of wooden hinged shutter which spans the interval of 34 feet between each frame, and can be rolled up from the bottom and removed when the weir is to be opened.

'a serics of similar hinged shutters are designed to close donble intervals between the frames, about 7 feet wide, of the frame weir in progress at Poses, the next weir above Martot weir which is at the boundary ofthe tidal Seine above Rouen. Poses weir has a form quite distinct from all frame weirs hitherto constructed, for its vertical frames are suspended from an overhead girder, and rest against a sill at the bottom when down, but cau be raiscd entirely out of water into a horizontal position when the weir is open. The girders carry a foot bridge, from which the frames and hinged shutters are raised and lowered, and rest on masonry piers dividing the river into seven bays, the two navigable passes being 1064 feet and the five shallower passes 99 feet wide. The girders spanning the two navigable passes leave a clear headway of 174 feet above the navigable high water, whilst the rest of the girders are merely placed above flood level. The fall at the weir is 18 feet. The system is costly, with its girders and piers, but it secures all the movable parts of the weir from

injury in flood, and enables the weir to be worked with perfect ease and safety.

Sliding panels have been adopted for closing the frame weir across the Rhone at Mulatiére, near Lyons, erected in 1882; and a comparison is being made of the relative durability of sliding panels and hinged shutters by placing the two systems side by side at Suresnes weir just below Paris.

The earliest form of shatter weir consisted of a gate, or shutter, turning on a horizontal axis at the bottom, supported by a prop when raised against the stream, and falling flat on the apron of the weir when the prop was withdrawn. As considerable force would be required to raise such a shutter against a strong stream, a second up-stream gate is usually provided, which, rising with the stream and being retained by chains, relieves the pressure on the down-stream gate, and enables it to be readily raised and propped up. The waterlevel is then equalized on both sides of the upper gate, which is then lowered ; and the lower gate forms the actual weir, which can be opened by merely releasing the prop. In India, where this form of shutter weir has been adopted on a large scale, the strain on the retaining chains was so great, when the upper shutter was raised in a strong current to shut off the river from the irrigation canals, that hydraulic brakes have been substituted, by Mr Fouracres, for controlling the motion of the up-streain shutters. A closed cylinder full of water is fixed on the apron of the weir above the upper shutter, in which a piston, attached to the upper side of the shutter, is fitted. Directly the current tends to lift the shutter, the piston is drawn against the cushion of water in the cylinder, which controls its motion. The pressure of the piston forces the water gradually out of some small orifices along the side of the cylinder, so that the piston is enabled to travel slowly along the cylinder. In its progress, however, it passes by some of the orifices, whereby the rate of efflux of the remaining water is reduced, and a greater resistance offered to the motion of the piston. Whilst therefore the shutter in rising presents a greater surface to the stream, and consequently exerts a greater pull upon the piston, the retarding force is similarly increased, and the shutter is thus gradually raised without any jar.

At Brulée Island weir, on the Yonne, the up-stream shutter has been dispensed with; and the shutter forming the weir is raised against the stream by a piston working in a hydraulic press (fig. 4), the water pressure being supplied from an accumulator which is charged by means of a turbine worked by the fall of water at the weir. The weir is closcd by seven shutters, 114 feet long and 6 feet high, which can be raised in five minutes ; and the power for damming up the stream is actually obtained from the stream itself.

The form of shutter weir most commonly adopted in France is shown in fig. 5, representing a section of the largest and most recent weir of this type, erected at Port-a-l'Anglais weir on the Seine, two or three miles above Paris; and weirs on the same systen1 have been erected across the Great Kanawha river in the United States. The shutter revolves upon a horizontal axis placed just above the centre of pressure on the down-stream side of the shutter. The axis is fastened on an iron tressel hinged to the apron of the weir; and the shutter and tressel are supported in position by a wrought-iron prop resting against a cast-iron shoe fixed on the apron. When the weir is closed, the shutter butts against a sill at the bottom, as is shown on fig. 5. The weir can be more or less opened, from the foot bridge, by means of chains fastened to the top and bottom of the shutter; and it can be completely lowered in flood time by releasing the prop from its shoe, when the prop, tressel, and shutter fall flat upon the apron, their fall being regulated by aid of the chains; the frames also supporting the foot bridge, being hinged to the apron, can be lowered as in the ordinary frame weir. The weir is raised by first reinstating the foot bridge, and then raising the shutters, with the connected tressels and props, by means of the chains. Each

Shutter

weir.

Drum weir,

Waru- ings of floods.

RIVER ENGINEERING

shutter of the navigable pass at Port-a-l'Anglais is 3} feet wide, and rises 12% feet above the sill of the weir. Smaller shutter weirs, of a similar form, are placed on the top of overfalls to regulate the discharge, being so adjusted that the shutters dip when the water attains a certain height above them. Sometimes the regulation of the flow is effected through the large shutters by means of sinall shutters fixed in their upper panels, called butterfly valves, which open spontaneously when the water rises above the required height. The smaller shutters on the overfalls are entirely lowered in flood-time, like the large shutters, but, being un-provided with a foot-bridge, they are raised by aid of boats on the approach of the dry season. The earlier shutters crected across the navigable passes were similarly raiscd; but, though a foot bridge adds considerably to the cost of a shutter weir, it greatly facilitates its working.

The navigable passes in French rivers, which are always closed elther by frame or shutter weirs, serve for the passage of vessels during floods when the locks are submerged.

With thie exception of the primitive movable stanchcs, there is only one exainple of a movable weir in England. This self-acting shutter weir has been erected across the Irwell at Thostlenest near Manchester; and a section of it is given in fig. 6. The weir consists of a series of shutters turning on a central horizontal axis. When the weir is closed, each shutter is inclined at an angle of 35° to the vertical, as shown in fig. 6, and revolves to a horizontal position for opening the weir. It resembles in fact the Freuch shutter weirs, except that the shutters and their supports are not renioved from the channel, so that the waterway at Thostlenest is not so uninipeded as in the French system. The shutters are so adjusted that they open when the river rises 23 feet above its ordi- nary level; but, lest the rush of water, which would result from their sudden opening, should injure the river bed, an arrangement has been made for opening any of the shutters by means of a set of chaius worked by crabs from eacli bank, so as to release the pent-up waters more gradually." This weir, designed by Mr Wiswall, consists of fourteen shutters, each 10 feet wide above the axis and 9 feet below, and 12 feet long. The actual height of the weir above the floor is only 10 feet, owing to the inclination of the shutters, so

that it presents a surface of 1400 square feet to the stream when closed, which is reduced to 293 feet when open.

The drwm weir, which has been adopted in several instances on the river Marne, consists of an upper and an under iron paddle capable of making a quarter of a revolution round a horizontal central axis. The upper paddle forms the weir, and the under one revolves in a closed recess, shaped like the quadrant of a cylinder, laid below the sill of the weir, from which the term drwim is derived (fig. 7). The under paddle and the drum are so formed that a space is left between the upper face of the paddle and the top of the drum when the paddles are horizontal ; and a similar space exists between the down-stream face of the paddle and the vertical wall of the drum when the paddles are vertical, as represented in fig. 7. These spaces serve as sluiceways by which water can be admitted into the series of drums on the upper or under side of the under paddles. The weir is closed by placing the upper sluiceway in communication with the upper pool, when the pressure of water on the upper faces of the under paddles overcomes the pressure of the stream upon the upper paddles, causing them to rise, and closing the weir against the stream. The weir is readily opened by shutting off communication between the upper pool and the upper sluiceway, aud opening communication with the lower pool ; the stream then depresses the upper paddles, or the action can be quickened by opening communication between the upper pool and lower sluiceway. The pressure on either side of the under paddles can be easily adjusted with the utmost precision, enabling the paddles to be placed at any angle, so that the most absolute control is obtained over the discharge at the weir. The largest example of this type of weiris at Joinville, on the Marne, only a few miles above Paris. The weir is formed by forty-two paddles, 34 feet high and 4% feet wide, which are worked with great ease by meats of sluice gates on the left bank, being opened or closed in three or four minutes by one man. This type of weir has the defect of not being suited for navigable passes, owing to the depth of the foundations for the drum below the floor of the weir having to exceed the height of the actual weir.

Movable weirs possess the great merit over other forms of weirs of offering little or no impediment to the passage of floods ; and this advantage is still further enhanced by the system of warnings, organized

for the Seine, the Loire, and other French rivers, whereby timely information of the approach of a flood is telegraphed to the various weir keepers, so that they may fully open the weirs before its arrival, and thus aid in facilitating its descent. By telegraphic intimation of the rise in the upper tributaries, and of the rainfall in the basin, it is possible to predict with remarkable accuracy the probable rise of the river at places lower down, and to afford valu- able warning of a coming flood to the riparian proprietors.

1 The Engineer, Sept. 1, 1882.

O75

Tidal and Tideless Rivers.

Rivers may be broadly divided into two classes in respect of the lower portion of their course, for the tide is propagated up some rivers to a considerable distance from their mouth, commingling with the fresh water and pro- ducing an ebb and flow far into the interior; whilst rivers flowing into tideless seas descend with an unimpeded current to their outlet. Tidal and tideless rivers, possess- ing very distinct physical characteristics, necessarily pre- sent different features and require different methods of improvement, and will be therefore separately considered. Tidal rivers are the more numerous, owing to the greater extent of tidal seas. The great differences also in the tidal rise introduce numerous variations in the tidal influ- ence on rivers, and the rise of the river bed determines the distance to which the tidal flow extends. Accord- ingly, tidal rivers exhibit a greater diversity in their natural condition than tideless rivers, which are only affected by the volume of their fresh-water discharge, the amount of sediment carried in suspension, and the inclina- tion of their bed. These latter conditions affect also the state of tidal rivers, but their influence is greatly modified by the ebb and flow of a large volume of tidal waters. The effect of the tidal ebb and flow is most readily per- ceived in contrasting the mouths of tidal and tideless rivers. The mouths of the Mississippi, the Nile, the Danube, and the Rhone present very marked differences to the outlets of the St Lawrence, the Seine, the Thames, and the Severn. 'Tideless rivers divide into a number of mouths, whereas tidal rivers are confined to a single out- let; and the

effect of tidal influence on this difference is still further confirmed by the instance of the Maas, which, with a very slight tidal range, exhibits a tendency to deteriorate into the dispersion of mouths of a tideless river. The value of tidal flow in maintaining a river is fully manifested by comparing the navigable condition of the Thames or of the muddy Humber with the delta of the Nile or the Rhone, though the latter rivers possess a much larger fresh-water discharge. The tidal rise also frequently allows of the access of vessels to a river whose entrance is barred at low water.

The general improvements of the upper portions of both tidal and tideless rivers may be carried out on similar principles, though on approaching their mouths they need a totally different treatment. To give a river a uniform depth, its channel and flow require regulation. Hard shoals may be permanently removed by dredging; but silty shoals, even when dredged away, will re-form unless the channel is contracted. Formerly rivers were regulated by building out jetties at intervals at right angles to the banks, especially in wide shoal places, in order to contract the channel and concentrate the stream, so as to scour a deeper central channel. These cross jetties, however, whilst effecting a deepening in front of their extremities, caused irregularities in the flow of the current in the intervals between them, thus producing differences in depth. Continuous longitudinal jetties, or training banks, though more costly, are much more efficient in regulating

'a river, and are now generally adopted for procuring a

uniform width, and, consequently, a regular depth. Where the fall alters, a corresponding variation must be made in the section of the channel ; and, in the case of tidal rivers, the section should gradually increase as it approaches the sea, so as to admit the increasing volume of sea water which enters but does not pass far up the estuary whose upper portion has been filled by the earlier flow. Most rivers, whether tidal or tideless, are more or less impeded for navigation by a bar at their mouth. A bar | is a ridge or shoal extending across the navigable channel,

Regula- tion of Tivers.

Causes of

bars.

over which there is a less depth than either above or below it. The lowering of such a bar forms one of the main objects of river improvement, as upon the depth that can be obtained over the bar depend the class of vessels that can enter the river, and, in tidal rivers, the period of time during which the entrance can be navigated. A bar may result from the action of the sea, which tends to form a continuous beach across any inlet, and would obliterate the mouths of rivers if the channels were not maintained by the ebb and flow of the tide and the fresh-water dis-charge; or it may be formed by the conflict of the sea and river water, which checks the current at the mouth and causes the river to deposit the sediment which it held in suspension. The bars at the mouths of the Mersey, the Liffey, and the Adour are due to the first cause ; whilst the bars at the mouths of tideless rivers, such as the Missis- sippi, the Danube, and the Rhone, are mainly due to the second. Improvement of Tidal Rivers.

Tidal rivers differ greatly in their natural character- istics, owing to the variety in the different conditions

tions of Which affect them. 'Thus the Mersey, with an extreme

tidal rise of 30 feet at its mouth, is only tidal for 46 miles, whilst the Seine, with a rise of 22 feet, is tidal for 91 miles, and the Scheldt, with a rise of only 13} feet, is tidal up to Ghent, a distance of 105 miles. These differ-ences are mainly due to the different falls of the river- beds, but they are also affected by the facility of entry afforded to the flood tide, and the form of the channel up which it flows. The tidal capacity of a river depends on the rise of the tide and the configuration of the banks. The tidal flow into the Mersey amounts to 710,000,000 cubic yards at a high spring tide, whilst the flow into the Scheldt at Flushing, with less than half the tidal rise, reaches 475,000,000 cubic yards. The tidal capacity of the Seine, together with its estuary, formerly exceeded that of the Mersey,

but it has been greatly reduced by the training works which have been carried out on it since

1848.

ENGINEERING

water discharge, which, being penned up during the flood tide, reinforces the ebb and preserves an equilibrium.

The fresh-water discharge of a river, depending upon Value of

the area of the basin and the available rainfall, naturally !resh- water dis-

charge,

varies greatly in different rivers—being, for instance, greater in the Tyne and the Clyde than in the Mersey, though these rivers have little more than one-thirteenth of the tidal capacity of the Mersey. The Seine, with a drainage area of 30,500 square miles, nearly six times the size of the Thames basin, has a discharge of 28,000,000 cubic yards, on the average, each tide (about twenty-eight times that of the Mersey), though this volume sinks into insigni- ficance when compared with the flow of the Danube with a basin of ten times the size, or still more of the Missis- sippi with a basin forty times as large. A large fresh- water discharge is of great value to the maintenance of an estuary, especially when, as in the case of the Seine, it carries little silt in suspension; whilst a small discharge in proportion to the size of an estuary, of which the Mersey is a notable instance, renders the state of the estuary very delicate, and necessitates great vigilance in maintaining its tidal capacity, to which its existence is almost wholly due.

The silt brought down by tidal rivers, instead of being carried to their mouths and there deposited, is met by the incoming tide at points varying daily with the states of the tides; and, moreover, except during slack tide, it is maiutained in constant motion up and down the estuary, till at length it gets to the sea. Accordingly, though the sediment of tidal rivers is more or less deposited wherever the velocity of the current is checked, it does

not tend to accumulate in one particular part, as in the case of tideless rivers, and therefore the formation of a bar at the mouth is mainly due to the drift by waves along the beach. A flood also, though more largely charged with silt, by giving additional power to the ebb, scours the channel and lowers the bar. 'The Humber, whose waters are densely burdened with mud which is readily deposited in still water, is nevertheless free from a bar.

The best form of estuary for a tidal river is when it Forms of

enlarges gradually as it approaches the sea, thus affording estuaries. an increasing capacity for the admission of the tide, and The estuaries approximating to

Influence The tidal ebb and flow passing and returning through of tides, the entrance channels of a river twice a day exercise a

very important influence on its maintenance. The effect of tidal scour is manifested in the history of the harbours of Calais and Ostend,! which in old times possessed deep outlet channels, but were injured by reclamation, and in the deterioration of the outfalls of the Fen rivers as soon as the tidal flow was curtailed by the erection of sluices. The power of the tidal scour necessarily varies with the volume of water producing it, and therefore one of the first principles of tidal river improvement is that the tide should be admitted as far up a river as possible, and all obstructions to its flow removed. If, however, the main- tenance of an estuary depended solely upon the tidal ebb and flow, the estuary would gradually silt up, for the flood tide brings in matter in suspension which it washes from the adjacent shores and sandbanks, especially during rough weather, when the waves stir up the sand and silt. The impetus of the tide running up the rising bed of an estuary is gradually checked, till at last slack water occurs, and the silt begins to deposit, which the ebb tide, enfeebled by the friction of the tidal water in its passage up and down the estuary, would of itself be unable com- pletely to remove. The erection of any obstructions to

promoting a regular flow. such a form are generally free from bars—as, for instance, the Thames, the Severn, and the Scheldt. When, how- ever, a

river expands abruptly into a wide estuary on a sandy coast, it winds through the enlarged estuary in an unstable shallow channel, owing to the reduced velocity of the ebb in expanding out, and the checking of the flood tide on reaching the head of the wide estuary. Thus the Seine, with a deep stable channel from Rouen to La Mailleraye, had formerly a shallow shifting dangerous channel from thence to the sea; the Ribble, with a good depth at Preston, has a shoal irregular channel towards its mouth; and the Dee, with a moderate channel at Chester, is almost barred to vessels, except at high tide, below Connah's Quay. These estuaries do not possess a well-defined bar, but their long shallow winding channels offer a still more serious impediment to navigation. The worst form is a very irregular estuary with abrupt expan- sions and contractions, of which the Mersey is a pro- minent example, for, in spite of its large rise of tide, it possesses a shallow, irregular, and shifting channel above Liverpool, and is encumbered by a wide bar below.

There are three obstructions to which tidal rivers are Methods subject, namely, a bar, a shifting channel, and inadequacy of im- of depth ; and there are three general methods which may ee be resorted to for their improvement, namely, jetties, : training walls, and dredging, in addition to the regulation of their upper portion by longitudinal jetties, or banks, as previously mentioned.

the tidal flow, such as sluices and weirs, increases the period of slack tide, and consequently not only reduces the volume of ebb and flow but also promotes the deposit of silt, to the further detriment of the estuary. The main- tenance of estuaries is secured by the aid of their fresh-

1 L. F, Vernon-Harcourt, Zarbouwrs and Docks, pp. 149 and 155.

Jetties.

Forms of

jetties.

RIVER ENGINEERING

Jetties. —A bar being caused by the littoral drift, and by the impotence of the expanded current to scour the channel over it to the same depth as elsewhere, it is neces- sary either to arrest the drift or to concentrate the current across the bar. 'he drift, which comes from the direction of the prevalent winds, might be temporarily arrested by projecting a groyne, or jetty, from the shore on the wind- ward side of the outlet. The material, however, carried along the coast would accumulate against the jetty, and eventually form a bar beyond, or, sweeping round the end of the jetty, deposit in the channel under its shelter. Accordingly a second jetty is added, on the opposite side of the outlet, to direct and concentrate the current over the bar, and thus increase the depth of the channel, and also to drive into deep water any material that may be carried round the windward jetty, or convey it within the influence of any littoral current farther out. The jetties are either made parallel, or slightly diverging, so as to form a sort of continuation of the banks of the river across the beach, or they are commenced far apart and made to converge towards their extremities, so as to admit a larger volume of tidal water and concentrate the flow into a narrow channel over the bar. The parallel jetty system has been adopted for the new outlet of the Maas (fig. 13), the mouth of the Adour near Bayonne (fig. 16), and the mouths of the Wear at Sunderland, the Yare at Yarmouth, and the Ouse at Newhaven; whilst the con- verging jetty system has been carried out at Charleston (figs. 17 and 18) and Aberdeen, and at the mouths of the Liffey, the Tyne (fig. 8), and the Tees.

The ordinary form of jetty is a timber pier resting upon a base of rubble stone, like the jetties of the North Sea jetty harbours of Calais, Dunkirk, and Ostend, so that the solid lower portion may concentrate the ebb, whilst the open upper portion permits the passage of the littoral currents in order that a rapid advance of the foreshore may be pre- vented. Such structures, however, simply delay, and do not stop, the advance of the foreshore, as manifested at Newhaven and Dunkirk, where the accumulation of shingle in the one case and of sand in the other brought low- water mark out to the extremities of their western jetties. The solid northern jetties of the Wear and the Yare have naturally produced a similar advance of their northern beaches, both being exposed to a north-easterly drift.

A special form of jetty has been constructed at the mouth of the Adour to combine the advantages of open and closed jetties. These jetties consist of a row of cylindrical columns placed at intervals and carrying iron girders on the top. Grooves are formed at the sides of the columns, down which panels can be lowered from the roadway above to confine the issuing current, whilst when the panels are open the spaces between the columns admit the flood tide and the passage of the currents. Nevertheless there are indications of an advance of the foreshore; the sand passing through the spaces in the northern jetty has encroached upon the channel, and the depths are reduced beyond the end of the jetties (fig. 16);

The most important examples of training jetties, includ- ing converging jetties, have been made solid, though sometimes they have not been raised to high-water level at their outer ends, in order to provide for the freer admis- sion of the flood tide. The converging jetties, or walls, at the mouth of the Liffey consist of mounds of rubble stone, and the outer portion cf the northern jetty is only raised to half-tide level. The jetties at the mouth of the Maas (figs. 13 and 15) are formed of fascine mattresses ; and the Charleston jetties (figs. 17 and 18) are similar in construction ; in both these cases the outer portions have not been raised above half-tide level. The converging jetties or piers at Aberdeen, the Tyne (fig. 8), and the

ol7 Tees are in reality breakwaters,! though they serve the same purpose of protecting the entrance channels from the littoral drift, and promoting scour over the bar, as the less solid structures at Dublin and Charleston, The Tees breakwaters are random mounds of slag; the Aber- deen breakwaters at the mouth of the Dee are upright walls of concrete; and the Tynemouth piers are masonry and concrete-block walls upon a rubble foundation. The breakwaters afford a much better shelter for vessels and for dredging operations, but the lower fascine-work jetties at the mouth of the Maas are equally effective in directing the current.

Training Walls.—The wandering shallow channel of a river through a wide sandy estuary may be improved by training the channel, in a suitable direction, by means o longitudinal mounds of rubble stone, commonly termed training walls. These walls fix the channel and prevent the current

eroding the sandbanks and thus changing its course. Moreover, by guiding the channel into a more direct line, making the ebb and flow follow the same course, and concentrating the current, the scouring capa- city of the stream is increased and the channel is deepened. The flood tide ascends the trained channel more readily, and therefore is able to extend its influence farther up ; whilst the ebb tide flows out of the improved and deepened channel earlier, and thus lowers the low-water line and increases the tidal capacity in the channel.

Object of

training

f walls.

The trained channel must be gradually widened out and Form of carried into deep water, otherwise the abrupt expansion training

which occurs beyond the ends of the training walls would so enfeeble the ebbing current that a shallow shifting channel would be formed only a short distance below. Training walls which stop in the middle of a wide sandy estuary, like the walls carried out on the Seine (fig. 10) and the Ribble, can be only regarded as incomplete works, which sooner or later will have to be extended if the full benefit of a trained channel is to be realized. When the channel is to follow close along one shore of the estuary, a single training wall on the outer side is suffi- cient; and a single wall is sometimes adequate for main- taining a channel in the middle of an estuary, when placed along the concave side of a bend.

The proper width between the training walls depends upon the fall, the tidal range, and the fresh-water dis- charge, and should gradually increase down stream so as to admit as much tidal water as possible with a steady flow. As the scour of the fresh-water discharge is greater with a contracted channel, the tendency is to place the training walls too close together, which, though improving the depth in the channel between the walls, reduces the volume of tidal water that can get up the channel and thus compromises the maintenance of the outlet beyond the walls. The training walls on the Scine and on the Ribble, whilst improving the

trained channels, have been preju- dicial to the channels beyond; and an extension of the works has been authorized on the Ribble. The widths also adopted between these walls are not compatible with an adequate widening out towards their outlet for the free admission of the flood tide, so that these estuaries will eventually be deficient in tidal capacity.

The training of a wandering channel is always beneficial to the maintenance and depth of the channel. wanderings, however, of the channel, which are thus arrested, though very prejudicial to navigation, are advan- tageous in preventing the silting up of an estuary by the constant erosion and stirring up of the sandbanks which they effect in shifting their position, and which they carry by gradual stages throughout the whole of the

1 |, F. Vernon-Harcourt, Harbours and Docks, pp. 200, 817, 3841. | XX, — 73

walls.

Iiffects of The training

walls.

estuary. The scouring current predominates at one time in one part and at another time elsewhere, so that slack water is never permanent in any part of the estuary, and accretion cannot progress for a long period without dis- turbance. When, however, a channel is permanently fixed by training walls, the condition of the estuary is com- pletely transformed. The flood tide, indeed, comes in with its burden of silt as before, rising sooner up the improved channel, and therefore dispersing with a somewhat gentler flow over the rest of the estuary. The ebb tide, however, is mainly concentrated along the trained channel, especi- ally when it attains its maximum scouring efficiency towards low water. Accordingly, whilst the flow in the trained channel is increased, stagnation occurs more or less over the rest of the estuary, and silting-up inevitably occurs, resulting eventually ina large reduction of tidal capacity. The accretion,

moreover, is not confined to the portion of the estuary behind the training walls, but gradually creeps down, on each side of the estuary, for a considerable distance beyond the ends of the walls. Low training walls hardly rising above the adjacent sandbanks have been tried with the object of preventing this accre- tion, but the improved flow in the trained channel and the reduced velocity elsewhere still promote accretion behind the low walls, and the deposit, rising first along the shores of the estuary, gradually attains high-water level over a great portion of the area at the back of the training walls, and from thence slopes down to the top of the walls on each side of the channel. Though the pro- cess of accretion is less rapid with low training walls, the ultimate result is only delayed and not prevented, as clearly manifested by observations on the Seine and other rivers, so that the view formerly entertained by some engineers, that if training walls were kept down to the level of the existing sandbanks no accretion would take place, has been proved to be erroneous by the results of experience ; and it may be accepted as a general law that training walls, whether high or low, inevitably lead to accretion if the flood tide is charged with silt.

Remarks The most careful consideration should be given to all

on trait- the conditions of an estuary before training works are

ing

walls, commenced, for when once begun they niust be eventually carried out to deep water; and, if ports exist along the shores of the estuary, they are liable to be injured by the accretion resulting from the works unless the trained channel can be led close along them. The training works of the Seine estuary, though very advantageous to the inland port of Rouen, are compromising the approach channels to Honfleur and Havre, and have silted up the port of Harfleur, so that the extension of the training walls to Honfleur has been urged in the interests of that port, whilst large works have been executed to preserve its entrance, and a new direct channel into the sea is being proposed for Havre. Though the training works on the Dee have not been carried out hitherto in a judicious direction, having been formed mainly with a view to land reclamation, it would be advantageous for the ports of Chester and Connah's Quay to

extend these works towards the sea, as there are no ports below the present limits of the training walls to be injured by the effects of their pro- longation, and the navigable channel would be much improved, provided the works were carried out to deep water. The training walls in the Ribble estuary must eventually be extended, even beyond the limits at present authorized, if a good navigable channel is to be secured to Preston, but these works will produce an entire trans- formation in the estuary, of which large portions have been already reclaimed as a consequence of the works already accomplished. The Mersey estuary would need a very comprehensive scheme for its improvement, owing to

the very defective natural condition of the estuary, and the situation of the ports along its banks. The mere training of the channel in the upper estuary, for the bene- fit of the up-river ports, would result in the reclamation of the wide estuary between Runcorn and Liverpool, and thus deprive the channels between Liverpool and the sea of their natural scouring reservoir of tidal water; whilst the training of a channel below Liverpool out to the bar would necessitate very extensive works in deep water and in an exposed situation.

Dredging.—The improvements effected within recent Dredging,

years in the ordinary dredging machinery, and the intro- duction of the sand-pump dredger, have facilitated and cheapened dredging operations to such an extent that some of the most remarkable river improvements have been effected by dredging. The great increase in depth realized on the Tyne and the Clyde has been effected by means of steam bucket-dredgers aided by hopper barges, whilst the maintenance of the entrance channel to St Nazaire on the Loire, and the deepening of the approaches to Dunkirk and Calais, have been accomplished by sand pumps, which have the advantage of being able to work when exposed to moderate waves. Dredging merely con- sists in removing material from the river bed and thus enlarging and deepening it; and the extent to which this method of improvement may be carried simply depends upon the economical consideration as to how far the improvement of the traffic on the river by an increase of depth will afford an adequate return for the outlay. Dredging, however, furnishes a cheap method of excava- tion owing to

the small cost of carriage by water. Dredg- ing, being a purely artificial means of improvement, generally necessitates regular maintenance; whereas the improvement from scour effected by jetties and training walls is permanent, being realized by natural means. Frequently, however, training walls and jetties are supple- mented by dredging, for the walls and jetties render the deepening by dredging easier and more permanent ; whilst, on the other hand, dredging enables a greater depth to be attained, and even maintained, than could have been effected by scour alone.

The improvements on the Tyne and on the Clyde have mainly resulted from very extensive dredging operations, but they have been aided by training walls on the Clyde, and by the Tynemouth piers on the Tyne, which protect the entrance channel from drift and the dredgers from waves, and concentrate the scour over the bar. The three methods of improvement described above have been re- sorted to on the Tees: for training walls have been formed through the wide estuary below Middlesborough for fixing the channel ; converging jetties are being constructed for sheltering the channel from wave-borne sand, and for directing the scour over the bar; and dredging is being employed for deepening the trained and sheltered channel. On the Maas also, and at Charleston, dredging is being used for attaining a depth for navigation which the jetties alone were unable to produce.

River Tyne Improvement Works.

The Tyne has a drainage area of 1053 square miles ; its tidal Plate V. flow extends 18 miles from its mouth, and the range of spring figs. 8, 9.

tides at its outlet is 143 feet. Being by nature a small winding irregular river, with little tidal capacity and no estuary, its depth was small and variable, and a bar existed atits mouth, which opens directly on to the sea-coast. The first improvement works, com- menced in 1848, consisted in training the river by cross jetties, subsequently connected by low training walls, so as to regulate the width and consequently the depth of the river. As, however, the volume of water in the river was small, the scour was not adequate to effect a great improvement in the depth ; the bed of the river between Neweastlc and the sea, in 1860, was in many places above low-water level ; and the depth on the bar at low tide was only 6 feet (fig. 9). The picrs at the mouth were commenced in 1856,

BiYVYER

for the purpose of facilitating the removal of the bar and for sheltering vessels entering the river, and were originally designed to terminate in a depth of 13 feet at low water ; but eventually a larger sclleme was adopted for forming a refuge harbour in com- bination with the improvement of the river, and the piers, which are still in progress, are to extend into a depth of 30 feet. In 1861 extensive dredging opcrations were commenced for improving the depth of the river, and a maximum of 3,515,000 cubic yards was removed in 1866 ; the work has been regularly continued, and the totalamount dredged since the commencement, in 1838, reached 49,668,000 cubic yards in 1884, being an average of nearly 2,000,000 cubic yards aunually since 1861, when systematic dredging operations were begun. The iniprovement in depth that was effected between 1860 and 1884 is shown on the longitudinal section of the river (fig. 9); and the deepening of the river between Newcastle and Hedwin Streams, a distance of 84 miles, isin progress, being carried on by six dredgers. The river has also been regulated by making a straight cut across Lemington Point, and widening the channel from 150 feet to 400 feet opposite Blaydon ; the obstruction offered to the Tyne by the old Newcastle Bridge has been removed by rebuilding the bridge with larger openings ; and a sharp bend in the river has been eased by removing the high projecting rock at Bill

Point (fig. 8). The tidal capacity of the river has been in- creased by 14,000,000 cubic yards; the bar has becn lowered 14 fect since 1860; and the least depth at low watcr up to Newcastle is 20 fect, and 18 feet for 3 miles above. The deepening of the channel has produced a very beneficial lowering of the flood line in the river, thereby preserving the adjacent lands from inundation. The improvement of the river has led to a great increase in the tonnage of the vessels frequenting it, and a large development of its trade. The average tonnage of the vessels, which was 163 tons in 1863, had risen to 396 tons in 1883; and the total tonnage of the vessels entcring and clearing the Tyne ports rose from 4,382,000 tons in 1868 to 13,043,000 tons in 1883.

River Clyde Improvement Works.

The Clyde is a small river, with a drainage area of only 945 square iniles, and a tidal flow of about 20 miles ; it opens, however, into a deep well-sheltered estuary, or arm of the sea, called the Firth of Clyde, and is free from a bar. The rise of spring tides at its mouth is about 10 feet. The Clyde was by nature an insignificant stream, with numerous hard gravel shoals, and a ford 12 miles below Glasgow which could be crossed on foot. The regulation of the river by cross jetties, and the removal of hard shoals, was commenced in 1778. Early in the present century the jetties were made more uniform, others were added, and their ends were eventually connected by low training walls which were gradually raised as deposits formed behind. The river had to be subsequently widened to accommodate the increasing trade and a larger size of vessels. As scour alone could only produce a very moderate depth, systematic dredging operations were conimenced in 1844, and reached a total of 28,648,000 cubic yards by the middle of 1884, the maximum accomplished in a single year (1878-79) reaching 1,502,000 cubic yards. Dredging is still being continued with six dredgers in order to maintain as well as deepen the river; for the channel up to Glasgow has been deepened so far beyond its natural limit that any matter in suspension which enters the river is readily deposited. Of the 1,041,000 cubic yards dredged in 1883-84, as mueli as 703,000 cubic yards consisted of deposit, or more than two-thirds of the whole quantity removed. The river has a depth of 24 feet at high water from Glasgow to Port Glasgow, and from 13 to 15 fect at low water.

The tide falls 8 feet lower at Glasgow than it did before any works were begun, which not merely adds to the tidal capacity of the river, but also prevents the fresh-water floods which formerly inundated the low-lying portions of Glasgow. The improved depth has caused the average tonnage of the vessels frequenting the port of Glasgow to rise from 199 tons in 1863 to 315 tons in 1883 ; whilst the total tonnage entered and cleared has increased from 1,757,000 tons in 1863 to 5,544,000 tons in 1883.

River Tees Improvement Works.

The Tees was formerly a very irregular winding river between Stockton and Middlesborough, and after passing that town it opens out into a wide sandy estuary about 6 miles long and 8 miles across at its widest part. It is tidal for about 17 miles, and the rise of spring tides at its mouth is 15 feet. The improvement of the river between Stockton and the estuary was commenced in 1810 by making a straight cut near Stockton ; another cut was made in 1830, and the river was also regulated by cross jetties. These works provided a more direct channel, and increased the depth by about from 2 to 5 feet. The ehannel, however, between the jetties was irregular in depth; and the navigable channel through the estuary was shallow and variable, with a rocky shoal across it, and a bar at the mouth of the river. Accordingly, in 1853 training walls were cominenced, both for connecting the ends of the cross

1 Pp, J. Messent, C.E., River Tyne Improvement, 1882.

jetties, and also for guiding the channel through the estuary. Dredging was commenced in 1854 for removing shoals and deepen- ing the channel; and the ridge of rock across the estuary channel has been removed by blasting. The total amount dredged up to Oct. 31, 1884, reached 13,145,000 cubic yards, and a maximum of 1,220,000 cubic yards was dredged in 1883-84. Vessels of 3000 tons, drawing 21 feet of water, can leave Middlesborough fully laden ; the average tonnage of vessels frequcnting the Tees has risen from 169 tons in 1873 to 803 tons in 1883;

and the total ton- nage entered and cleared lias increased from 1,212,000 tons in 1873 to 2,528,000 tons in 1883. Itis proposed at present to deepen the channel by dredging, so as to obtain a depth at low water of 12 feet up to Middlesborough, and 10 feet from thence up to Stock- ton; and it is hoped that eventually 2 feet additional depth may be attained by the same means. Two breakwaters have been designed, starting from opposite sides of the estuary and con- verging over the bar, in order to protect the entrance, to facilitate dredging, and to keep out drifting sand. The southern break- water has been completed, and the northern breakwater is in pro- gress. The breakwaters and the training walls are constructed of slag obtained free of charge from the neighbouring iron-works.

Training Walls on the Tidal Seine.

The Seine has a very winding course between Rouen and the sea, Plate V. as well as in its upper portion, but it possesses a good natural figs, 10, depth between Rouen and La Mailleraye, a distance of about 87 11, 12.

miles. Below this point, however, the natural condition of the river was very unsatisfactory, for tlie channel through the estuary was constantly shifting, and high shoals existed at Aizier and Villequier with a depth over them of only 10 feet at spring tides, so that. vessels of from 100 to 200 tons found the passage difficult, and even dangerous at times. Training walls, formed of mounds of chalk obtained from the neighbouring clitis, were commenced in 1848, and were gradually cxtended along both sides of the channel, as shown in fig. 10, and were tcrminated at Berville in 1869, a further extension of the northern wall for 1} miles having been refused in 1870 for fear of endangering Havre. These works have effected a remarkable increase in depth in the channel between the walls, as shown by a comparison of the longi- tudinal sections of the river in 1824 and 1875 (fig. 11); for dredging has only been used for deepening the worst shoals. The improvement, however, ccascs beyond the terminatiou of the works; and the channel betwecn Berville and the sea is still changeable and shallow. High walls were for the most part adopted down to Tancarville on the right bank and to La Roque on the left bank. These walls, however, produced sueh rapid accretion behind them that low walls, raised only from 3 to 5 feet above low water of spring tides, were

adopted below these points. This precaution, however, has not arrested the accretion in the estuary, which is still proceeding, though sixteen years have elapsed since the works were stopped. The accretion resulting from the training works had reduced the tidal capacity of the estuary by 274,000,000 cubic yards in 1875; and a survey in 1880 showed that a still further loss of over 40,000,000 cubic yards had occurred between 1875 and 1880. More than 28,000 acres of land have been reclaimed in the upper part of the estuary, as shown by cross lines on the plan; whilst large tracts have been raised to high-water level, as indicated by dotted lines, extending as much as 84 miles below the ends of the training walls. The walls werc originally merely rubble chalk mounds; but the bore and the currents injured the mounds, so that the walls are being strength- ened by pitching or concrete on the river slope, with an apron of concrete, and piling at the toe (fig. 12). The regulation of the river, by bringing deep water about 25 miles nearer the sea, enables vessels of about 2000 tons, and drawing about 20 feet, to pass the shallow estuary between the sea and Berville at high tide and thus reach Rouen. The prolongation of the training walls has been frequently urged; but the fear of injuring Havre, and the difficulty of devising a suitable channel which would effectually serve both Honfleur and Havre on opposite sides of the estuary, have hitherto prevented the continuation of the work. The Tancarville Canal is in progress for connecting Havre with the Seine at Tancarville (fig. 10), so as to enable river craft to avoid the dangers of the lower estuary; and the canal is being made so as to be capable of being readily converted into a ship-canal if the growing accretions should impede access between Berville and, the sea. Works at the Mouth of the Maas.

The Scheur branch of the Maas, which forms the most direct Plate V. channel to Rotterdam, gradually silted up at its outlet, so that figs. 18, The 14, 15.

vessels had to seek more southern and circuitous channels. length of the deepest channel was shortened in 1829 by the eonstruction of the Voorne Canal, but even this course became inadequate for the increasing draught of vessels. Accordingly, in 1862 works were commenced for providing a new direct outlet for the Scheur branch of the river by a straight cut

across the Hook of Holland, with fascine-work jetties for training and maintaining

14).

580

the channel across the sandy beach into deep water (fig. 18). The cut, three miles long, was only partially excavated, its completion being effected by damming up the old channel and directing the fresh-water discharge and tidal current through the new cut. The scour soon deepened the narrow cut; but some of the sand washed from the cut settled in the wider channel formed by the jetties. The cut also, being scoured deeper than the adjacent channel above and below, was not adequately widened, and consequently impedes the entry of the flood tide up the river (figs. 18 and The desired depth of 23 feet at high water not having been attained as anticipated from the works, dredging has been resorted to for deepening the outlet ; and the widening out of the cut to the proper full width would improve the tidal influx. The jetties consist of faseine mattresses secured by piles and stakes and weighted with stone (fig. 15); and their outer portions have been

RIVER SNGINERPRING

off the other three outlets and extended into the sea at its mouth, the increased discharge brought down the whole sediment of the river, and a bar formed again farther out. Accordingly the St Louis Canal was formed, between 1863 and 1873, going from the head of the delta into the Bay of Foz beyond the limits of the delta. A similar plan was proposed for the Mississippi, but was abandoned in favour of the jetty system. The canal constructed by the emperor Claudius for connecting the Tiber with the harbour of Ostia proved a failure, as its outlet at Ostia was not sufficiently removed from the delta, so that it gradually silted up and is now 2 miles from the coast.

The success of the jetty system depends upon the exist- Require- ence of a littoral current to carry away the sediment in the ments of stream conveyed by aid of the jetties into deep water, or Jetty

kept down to half-tide level to promote the freer admission of the flood tide, whilst serving equally to concentrate the latter part of the ebb.

Charleston Jetties. th al 1 0 Reid system. Plate V. The largest jetty works in the world for lowering a bar in front sis . eos P rolongation of the jetties to keep pees figs. 17, of a tidal estuary are being constructed at the entrance to Charles- with the progression of the delta. The outlets of the 18- ton harbour (fig. 17). The jetties are being formed after the | Danube and the Mississippi have both been improved by type of the Maas jetties, with log and fascine mattresses weighted | training one of their minor delta channels into deep water ; with rubble stone (fig. 18). They start from the shore about and hitherto the depth the' i 0 ' 2} miles apart and converge to a width of about 2000 feet over | 7 itherto the depth over the bars has been a d. the bar, which stretches across the entrance to the harbour at 1 In the case of the Danube, the southerly current sweeping miles from the shore. The object of the works is to concentrate the | across the outlet carries away a portion of the issuing tidal and fresh-water current from the land-locked estuary, having | sediment. The Mississippi jetties direct the discharge into an area of 15 square miles, into which the Ashley and Cooper | ouch q rat death ln veliact ' rivers flow, and whose mouth forms the entrance to Charleston ee a ene Ve aay, that i ey harbour. 'The northern jetty, which was commenced in 1878, be premature to decide to what extent the maintenance of attained the present length of 14,860 feet in 1881; and the the depth may be due to a westerly current in the gulf; southern jetty had been carried out 14,130 feet towards the end of | but hitherto from one cause or the other, or probably from 1883. The outer portions, lying in the direction of the flood cur- | poth combined. the bar h t f a Sancdiap rent, are to be raised ; but the inner portions are to be kept low, in ny ae ae ee ene Mee) Sagem front of order to interfere as little as possible with the littoral drift and the jetties. thus avoid an advance of the foreshore, and also in order to admit Sulina Piers of the Danube Delta. freely the flood tide. Though scour has already commenced, it will The delta of the Danube commences about 45 miles from the Plate V. ie yom i = ES by Se ae in order to attain a depth of 21 | Black Sea, and has anarea of 1000 square miles. The river divides figs. 19, place of the former depth of 114 feet. se ie ete ior the northern or Kilia branch conveys more 20, 21. om : — than three-fifths of the*

discharge, but it forms an independent delta ; oe Improvement of Tideless Rivers. near its outlet and is consequently unsuitable for improvement (fig. Deltas. Tideless rivers on entering the sea have their velocity | 19). The southern or St George branch is the next largest, and checked, and consequently deposit the silt which they gee oe ee Ot “ i near its outlet into two srevrouale darned & . : ~ | channels, which are both barred. he central or Sulina branch, I y carried Pore 2 I In process of time this though narrower and less good than the St George branch, and accumulated deposit forms a tract of low-lying land | conveying less than one-thirteenth of the total discharge, possessed protruding into the. sea, through which the river flows in | the only navigable outlet in 1858, and was therefore selected for several shallow channels to the sea owing to the impedi- the provisional improvement works begun in that year. The works ments offered to its flow by the sediment which it deposits. ee a fi Oe e pt cl vat EO a The form which these diverging channels assume has led diem ‘seucio0, Moir TaNd lake Men, thie Canale ame ics to the term delta being applied to the mouths of tideless | (fig. 20). The piers were at first constructed of rubble mounds rivers and the tract of land which they- create (figs. 19 | With piles carrying a platform strengthened at intervals by timber and 22). These deltas are always advancing, and con- cribs; but subsequently they were; consolidated with concrete sequently reducing the ver ll fall of i h ; blocks (fig. 21). These piers serve to concentrate the discharge of ery small tall of the channels | across the bar, and increased the least depth at the outlet from 9 through them by prolonging their course. The rate of | feet in 1857 to 20 feet in 1872, a year after the final completion advance varies with the amount of sediment brought down, of the works ; and this depth has been since maintained. The the depth of the sea in front, and the extent to which the es ota ee Sete all ag oe were a i of the southern littoral current, which, diverting a portion of the sine pes out. The Rhone delta has at present a | deposit, has reduced the rate of advance of the Sulina delta from yearly average progression of 140 feet ; the Kilia mouths | 94 feet to 44 feet ina year. This progression, however, will event- of the Danube delta have been estimated to advance 200 | ually necessitate the extension of the piers. har ee ns tear Mississippi delta, extending 220 The Mississippi Jetties. othe Gull of Mexico, is supposed to have taken | Though the Gulf of Mexico is in communication with the Plate V. four thousand four hundred years in forming, which would

Atlantic Ocean, it is almost tideless, for the average rise of tide in figs. 22, a. equivalent to an average annual advance of 264 feet, On oe Hee. die ae is only 14 He and Cae is only 23. the resent advance G D907 . r, ay. 1e ISSISS1P Pl, accordingly, 1S a tideless river, si nthe pe ae Ot | — ws 207 feet in a year. , and forms a delta which has an area of 12,300 square miles, and s The y method of improving the outlet of a tideless | has three main channels, or passes, leading the discharge of the : : : of gs river is to concentrate the current flowing through one of | river into the gulf (fig. 22). The general features of the delta the channels, and to prolong the banks of the regulated have been already described, and the various schemes for improving channel into deep water by means of parallel jetties the outlet referred to (see Misstssipp1). In flood time the river . — The only other aapot texaasietiay" vc" Tal : — brings down in suspension 2800 cubic feet of solid matter per ot ying t impediments to | second ; and before the jetties were commenced the annual advance

navigation at the mouths of tideless rivers is by avoiding the delta channels altogether, and constructing a canal connecting the deep river above the delta with the sea at some suitable place beyond the influence of the river alluvium. This expedient has been resorted to for the trade of the Rhone ; for, though the discharge of the river was concentrated into a single outlet by forming embank- ments on each side, between 1852 and 1857, which shut

of the bars at the mouths of the passes was 300 feet at the South- rai Pass, 260 feet at Pass 4 l'Outre, and 110 feet at the South

ass.

1n 1874 Mr Eads offered to make and maintain a channel 28 feet deep across the bar of the South-West Pass, which had only 18 feet of water over it. The South Pass is narrower, having a width of from 600 to 800 feet ; it conveys only about a tenth of the total dis- charge of the river ; it was impeded by a shoal at the head of the pass with a depth of only 15 feet over it ; and the depth on the bar at its mouth, where it expanded to 2 miles in width, was only 8

Conclud- ing re- marks.

RLY =

feet. The South Pass, however, was selected by Congress for improvement, partly on account of the smaller cost of the works required, and partly because it was the pass which had been pre- ferred by a previous commission. The depth of the South Pass through the delta, a distance of about 13 miles, was 30 feet; so that the obstructions to be removed were restricted to the head and mouth of the pass. Dredging had been tried for deepening the outlet of the South-West Pass, and had necessarily failed in pro- ducing any permanent improvement, for sediment soon filled up again the portion of the channel which had been enlarged beyond its natural limits of maintenance. The object aimed at in the South Pass was to contract the width of the channel at the head and outlet, so that the current might be forced to regain its required section of channel by scouring out in depth what it lost in width. At the mouth of the South Pass this result could be effected by concentrating the current over the bar with parallel jetties, thus prolonging the banks of the pass artificially into deep water, and contracting the current sufficiently to ensure the requisite depth. At the head, however, of the South Pass, the conditions were more complicated ; for, as soon as the entrance channel there was contracted, a portion of the discharge tended to desert the impeded pass for the other more open passes, and the head works by themselves would therefore have deprived the South Pass of a portion of its natural flow, which would have necessarily led to a reduction of the channel below the head. Accordingly the entrances to the other passes had to be correspondingly reduced, so as not to absorb more than their former proportion of the dis- charge and thus leave the discharge through the South Pass un- diminished.

The works consist mainly of willow mattresses, which are specially suitable where osiers are abundant, and where settlement on the. soft alluvial bottom is inevitable. The funnel-shaped entrance at the head of the South Pass was contracted across the shoal into a uniform channel, 800 feet wide, by means of mattress dykes ; and mattress sills, 30 to 40 feet wide, 60 to 70 feet long, and 2 feet thick, were laid right across the entrances to the other two passes to restrict the volume of their discharge to its normal amount.

The parallel jetties on cach side of the mouth of the South Pass consist of tiers of willow mattresses, 100 feet long, from 20 to 50 feet wide, and about 2 feet thick, consolidated with rubble stone, and capped at the outer ends with concrete blocks to secure them against waves (fig. 23). They have been raised to flood-tide level to within 1000 feet of their extremities. The east jetty is 23 miles long, and the west jetty 14 miles; they terminate at the same distance out, in a depth of thirty feet. They are placed about 1000 feet apart, and are curved slightly towards their extremitics, so as to bring the channel at right angles to the westerly littoral enrrent in the gulf. The jetty chaunel has been contracted to a width of 700 feet by mattress spurs, in order to promote the scour in the central channel, which was lessened at first by leakage through the mattresses owing to their want of consolidation from difficulties in the supply of stone. +

The works were commenced in 1875, and completed in 1879. The channel was to be made, according to the terms of the con- tract, 26 feet deep and 200 fect wide, with a central depth of 30 fect. According toa survey made in May 1884, the least central depth through the jetty channel is 33 feet, and the width of the 26-foot channel is 290 feet ; and beyond the jetties the least central depth is 31°8 feet, and the least width of the 30-foot channel is 70 feet. At the head of the South Pass there now cxists a straight channel with a minimum central depth of 35 feet ; and the 30-foot channel has a minimum width of 275 feet. There is now a depth of 80 feet right through the South Pass.

The latest surveys indicate only a slight shoaling beyond the outlet, showing that hitherto the accelerated current, being pro- truded into deep water and aided by the littoral current, has not created a fresh bar by the deposit of its sediment. As the littoral current caunot be expected to convey away more than a portion of the sediment brought down, the material must be accumulating beyond the outlet, and after having filled up the deep places in front, will gradually rise beyond the ends of the jetties, where the dispersed river current will be unable to carry it away. This shoaling, however, may be delayed for a considerable time by the distance to which the velocity of the trained current carries the sediment, and the depth in which the sediment is deposited ; and when it becomes

prejudicial to navigation, it can be readily removed by an extension of the jetties.

The method of lowering a bar at the mouths of rivers by means of jetties has been applied, as indicated above, to both tidal and tideless rivers ; but the systems employed for each type of river are based on different principles which must not be confounded together. A tideless river ig maintained solely by its discharge, and therefore the more its channel is contracted the greater is the depth

RJ iE 581

attained. As, however, a tidal river depends largely for its maintenance on its tidal flow, a contraction at its mouth checks the entrance of the flood tide and reduces the tidal flow. The contracted width between the Adour jetties (fig. 16) has reduced the tidal rise at Bayonne in spite of the openings formed in them for the admission of the tide; and the narrow width of the cut at the Maas outlet (figs. 13 and 14), whilst affording an improved depth in the cut, is prejudicial to the depth elsewhere. A parallel channel with high jetties is suitable for tideless river mouths; but a slightly diverging channel, with the outer ends of the jetties below high-water level, is expe- dient for tidal rivers. Converging jetties, like those of Dublin and Charleston (fig. 17), would be perfectly use- less at tideless outlets; but these jetties, by not being unduly contracted at their extremities, and by being kept low towards their ends, freely admit the tidal flow, whilst the increased capacity obtained by their enlarged form increases the tidal scour at the outlet. The comparatively small improvement in depth over Charleston bar, as com- pared with the magnitude of the works, may be due to the want of concentration of tidal scour, owing to the small elevation of the inner portions of the jetties, which allows of the dispersion of part of the ebb.

The greatest difficulty in training tidal rivers is so to adjust the width of channel that the free admission of the flood tide may be secured whilst affording adequate scouring power for the current. If the influx of the tide is checked by a sufficient reduction of width to ensure improvement in depth by scour, the capacity of the estuary is eventually reduced, and a portion of the scouring power is lost, as in the case of the Seine. It is

better, therefore, to regulate the width so as to ensure a free admission of the tide, and to provide for any deficiency in scour and depth by dredging. Deepening by dredging can be easily and economically effected to any desired extent, as shown by the Tyne and Clyde improvements ; whereas tidal capacity in an estuary, when once lost, can never be regained.

For further information about the works described, reference may be made to Rivers and Canals, by L. F. Vernon-Harcourt ; Liver Tyne Improvements, by P. J. Messent; 'The River Clyde," by James Deas, Proc. Inst. OC. H., vol. xxxvi.; " The Delta of the Danube," by Sir Charles Hartley, Proc. Inst. C. #., vols. xxi. and xxxvi.; A History of the Jettics at the Mouth of the Mississippi River, by E. L. Corthell. (i> BY V.-E) RIVIERA or Genoa. See Iraty, vol. xiii, p. 437. It is customary to speak of the Eastern and Western Riviera (Riviera di Levante and Riviera di Ponente), which meet at Genoa.

RIXDORF, a large village to the south-east of Berlin, and practically an outlying suburb of that city, with which it is connected by tramway, is chiefly interesting as a foundation of Moravian Brethren from Bohemia, who settled here in 1737, under the protection of King Frederick William I. German Rixdorf, which is now united with Bohemian Rixdorf, was a much more ancient place, and appears as Richardsdorf in 1630 and as Riegenstorp in 1435. The inhabitants of the united community (who numbered 18,729 in 1880, though only 3421 in 1852) are engaged chiefly in weaving, in the manufacture of india- rubber goods, and in the various industries of the neigh- bouring capital.

RIZZIO, Davip, a servant of Mary, queen of Scots, was, according to Buchanan, a native of Turin, and came to Scotland in 1561 in the train of the Piedmontese ambassador. He entered the queen's service as a musician in 1564, and was also employed by her as private foreign secretary. He was murdered in 1566, as has been related in the article Mary (vol. xv. p. 596).

RJEV. See RZHEFF.

Roman roads.

ROACH (Leuciscus rutilus), a fish of the family of Carps (Cyprinide) and of the genus Leuciscus, which comprises also the Rudd, Chub, and Dace. It is one of the most common freshwater fishes of Europe north of the Alps, and extends northwards as far as Lapland. Its pharyngeal teeth are in a single series, five or six on each side. The body is generally rather deep, its greatest depth being about one-third of the total length, the caudal fin not included. The scales are large, from forty-two to forty- four along the lateral line, seven or eight series being above it, and three between the lateral line and ventral fin. The first dorsal rays are inserted vertically above, but not in advance of the root of the ventral fin. The anal fin is supported by from twelve to fourteen rays. The general colour is silvery, in adult fishes with a red tinge about the lower fins, Roach spawn from April to May, and frequently produce hybrids with other allied fishes, such as the rudd and the bream. They never attain to a large size, a roach of 1} ib being considered an unusually large fish. As a food-fish this species is not held in esteem ; but by the pleasure it affords to a large class of humble anglers it rivals any of the freshwater fishes which give more pretentious sport, and has properly been made the subject of a special work, Zhe Book of the Roach, by Greville Fennell (London, 1870).

ROADS anp STREETS. 'The earliest roads about which anything definite is known are those of ancient Rome, one of the oldest of which and the most celebrated for the grandeur of its works—the Appian Way—was com- menced in 312B.c, Roman roads are remarkable for pre- serving a straight course from point to point regardless of obstacles which might have been easily avoided. They appear to have been often laid out in a line with some pro- minent landmark, and their general straightness is perhaps due to convenience in setting them out. In solidity of construction they have never been excelled, and many of them still remain, often forming the foundation of a more modern road, and in some instances constituting the road surface now used. It is consequently possible, with the help of allusions of ancient writers, to follow the mode of construction. T'wo parallel trenches were first cut to mark the breadth of the road; loose earth was removed until a solid foundation was reached; and it was replaced by proper material consolidated by ramming,

or other means were taken to form a solid foundation for the body of the road, This appears as a rule to have been composed of four layers, generally of local materials, though sometimes they were brought from considerable distances. The lowest layer consisted of two or three courses of flat stones, or, when these were not obtainable, of other stones, generally laid in mortar; the second layer was composed of rubble masonry of smaller stones, or a coarse concrete; the third of a finer concrete, on which was laid a pavement of poly- gonal blocks of hard stone jointed with the greatest nicety. The four layers are found to be often 3 feet or more in thickness, but the two lowest were dispensed with on rock. The paved part of a great road appears to have been about 16 feet wide, and on either side, and separated from it by raised stone causeways, were unpaved side-ways, each of half the width of the paved road. Where, as on many roads, the surface was not paved, it was made of hard concrete, or pebbles or flints set in mortar. Sometimes clay and marl were used instead of mortar, and it would seem that where inferior materials were used the road was made higher above the ground and rounder in cross section. Streets were paved with large polygonal blocks laid as above described and footways with rectangular slabs. Specimens are still to be seen in Rome and Pompeii. There are no traces of Roman influence in the later roads in England, but in France the Roman method appears to

have been followed to some extent when new roads were constructed about the beginning of the 18th century. A foundation of stones on the flat was laid, and over that two layers of considerable thickness, of larger and smaller stones, bordered by large stones on edge, which appeared on the surface of the road. In 1764 Tresaguet set the foundation-stones on edge and reduced the thickness of the upper layers, and his method was generally followed until the influence of Macadam began to be felt. A French chaussée with accotements still retains some resemblance to the old Roman roads.

The almost incredibly bad state of the roads in England

English

towards the latter part of the 17th century appears from T@ds,

the accounts cited by Macaulay (Hist. c. iii.). It was due chiefly to the state of the law, which compelled each parish to maintain its own roads by statute labour, but the estab- lishment of turnpike trusts and the maintenance of roads by tolls do not appear to have effected any great improve- ment. At the time of Arthur Young's six months' tour in 1770 the roads would seem to have been almost as bad as ever, and it is doubtful if there was much improvement up to the beginning of the present century. The turnpike roads were generally managed by ignorant and incompetent men until Telford and Macadam brought scientific prin- ciples and regular system to their construction and repair. The name of Telford is associated with a pitched foundation, which he did not always use, but which closely resembled that which had been long in use in France, and the name of Macadam often characterizes roads on which all his precepts are disregarded, Both insisted on thorough drainage and on the use of carefully prepared materials, and adopted a uniform cross section of moderate curvature instead of the exaggerated roundness given before; but, while Telford paid particular attention toa foundation for the broken stone, Macadam disregarded it, contending that the subsoil, however bad, would carry any weight if made dry by drainage and kept dry by an impervious covering. Macadam was engaged more with the repair of old roads than with the construction of new ones, and, though it is not possible to agree with all his doctrines, the improve- ment which he effected in road management and main- tenance was great and lasting.

Construction of Roads.—A road should be as short as possible between two points to be connected, but straightness must often be sacrificed to avoid difficulties and expense and to secure good gradients. The latter should be as easy as practicable, having re- gard to the country to be traverscd, and it is desirable that there should be a ruling gradient than which none should be steeper. On a level macadamized road in ordinary repair the force which the horse has to put forth to draw a load may be taken as onc- thirtieth of the load. But in going uphill the horse has also to lift the load, and the additional force to be put forth on this account is

very nearly equal to the load drawn divided by the rate of gradient. Thus on a gradient of 1 in 80 the force spent in lifting is one-thirtieth of the load, and in ascending a horse has to exert twice the force required to draw the load ona level. In de- scending, on the other hand, on such a gradient, the vehicle, when once started, would just move of itself without pressing on the horse. A horse can without difficulty exert twice his usual force for a time, and can therefore ascend gradients of 1 in 30 on a mac- adamized surface without sensible diminution of speed, and can trot freely down them. These considerations have led to 1 in 80 being generally considered as the ruling gradient to be aimed at on first- class roads, though 1 in 40 has been advocated. Telford adopted 1 in 80 as the ruling gradient on the Holyhead road through North Wales, and there are only two gradients steeper, in places where they were unavoidable. All unnecessary rises and falls should be avoided, but a dead level is unfavourable for drainage, and ou this account 1 in 100 to 1 in 150 is the flattcst gradient that is desirable. Such slight rises and falls are probably rather favourable than other- wise to ease of draught by horses.

In transverse section, roads in the United Kingdom generally

18th century.

Con- STRUC- TION OF ROADS. Gradient.

Cross

comprise the carriage-way, a space on each side, on one or both of section.

which there may be a footpath, then the fences, and outside all the ditches. The width of the carriage-way may be from 15 feet, which allows of the easy passage of two vehicles, to 30 or 50 feet

Thick- ness,

Binding.

Rolling.

for roads of importance near towns. The side spaces may be from 4 or 5 to 8 or 10 fect wide ; wide sides give the sun and air access to the road, and tend to keep it dry, and also atford space for the deposit of road imaterials and scrapings. In cuttings or on em- bankments the transverse section has of course to be modified. The road surface should have just enough convexity to throw the wet off freely, and a very moderate amount is sufficient when a good surface is maintained. On a too convex road the traffic keeps to the middle, and wears ruts which retain the water, so that the surface is not so dry as with a flatter section which allows the traffic to distribute itself over the whole width. Telford used a cross section differing slightly from an arc of a circle in being more convex in the middle than at the sides. Walker recommended two straight lines joined in the middle of the road by a curve, and inclined about 1 in 24 towards the sides, the objection to which is that the flat sides are liable to wear hollow. An arc of a circle is often used, and is a.good form, but on the whole a curve more convex at the centre than towards the sides is the best. The rise in the curve from the sides to the centre need not exceed one- fortieth of the width, and one-sixtieth is generally enough on well-kept roads, and if seven-eighths of the total rise are given at one-fourth the distance from the centre to the sides and five-eighths at half that distance a curve of suitable form will be obtained. It is generally best to obtain the requisite convexity by rounding the formation surface or seat of the road and giving a uniform thickness to the coating of stone. When there is not a kerb there should be a " shouldering" of sods and earth on each side to keep the road materials in place, and to form with the finished surface the water tables or side channels in which the surface drainage is collected, to be conveyed by outlets at frequent intervals to the side ditches. The outlets are open cuts through the sides or drains beneath the footpaths. The side ditches should be deep enough to thoroughly drain the foundation of the road, and cross or mitre drains under the road communicating with the side ditches may be required in wet soil. A thorough drainage of the subsoil is of the greatest importance, and it is economical in the end to go to considerable expense to secure it. In a cutting, or where there are no side ditches, the surface water may be taken off by gratings and under drains beneath the side channels.

The thickness to be given to a road made altogether of broken stone will depend on the traffic it isintended for. On a good well- drained soil a thickness of 6 inches will make an excellent road for ordinary traffic, and Macadam's opinion that 10 inches of well-con- solidated material was sufficient to carry the heaviest traffic on any substratum if properly drained has proved to be generally correct. In a new road the loss of thickness during consolidation must be allowed for, and the materials should be laid about one-half thicker than the coating is intended to be. When the materials are not rolled, a thickness of 8 to 6 inches should be laid first, and when that has partly consolidated under the traffic other coats may be added to make up the full thickness, There is great wear and waste of the matcrials in consolidating if they are laid too thickly at once. Inferior material is sometimes used in the lower part of the road coating, especially when the surface is to be of granite or other hard expensive stone. Thus flints or gravel may be used for the lower 5 or 6 inches of a road to be coated with 8 or 4 inches of granite. Telford covered the broken stone of new roads with 14 inches of gravel to act as a binding material. Macadam absolutely inter- dicted the use of any binding matcrial, leaving the broken stone to work in and unite by its own angles under the traffic. An un- sound road may be made by the improper use of a binding material, but there is no doubt that broken stone consolidates more quickly, and without losing its angular form, when binding is moderately used. About one half the volume of broken stone is void space, and, as the results of examinations into the composition of the coat- ings of roads when thoroughly consolidated prove that a very large proportion must necessarily be small stones and detritus, it is much better to give some portion of this at first rather than to obtain it by the crushing and grinding of the materials by the traffic. The binding material—fine gravel, sand, or road scrapings— should be spread over the surface after the broken stone is laid and not be mixed with it. Uniform consolidation is much aided by raking.

Whenever it is possible a new road should be finished with a roller. The materials are consolidated with less waste, and wear and tear of vchicles and horses is saved. MHorse-rollers, if heavy enough to be eflicicnt, require a number of horses to draw them and are cumbersome to use. A ton or a ton and a half weight per foot of width is desirable, and to obtain

it a roller 4 feet wide must be loaded to 5 or 6 tons, and will require as many horses to draw it. In Great Britain horse-rollers have to a great extent been super- seded by steam road rollers in consequence of the superiority and economy in the work done. A 15-ton roller, 7 feet wide, giving upwards of 2 tons weight per foot, can thoroughly consolidate 1000 to 2000 square yards of newly-laid materials per day. The materials should be formed to the proper section, and not more than 4 or 5 inches in thickness ; if a greater thickness is required

(583

it is better to roll two coats separately. After several passages of the roller any hollows must be filled up with small materials, and the rolling must be continued until it causes no motion among the stones. When this result has been attained the binding material may be added. It should be spread dry and uniformly in moderate quantities and should be rolled into the interstices with the aid of watering and sweeping. Provided that all the interstices in the upper stratum of stones are filled after the stones are thoroughly consolidated, the less binding that is used the better. By using binding in larger quantity, and before the stone is thoroughly con- solidated, the amount of rolling required is lessened, but at the expense of durability in the road. Watering is necessary from the commencement of the rolling unless the weather is wet, but excessive watering, especially in the earlier stages, tends to soften the foundation.

A pitched foundation like that used by Telford is always desir- Founda- It consists of flat tion.

able for a road that is subject to heavy traffic. stones carefully set on edge in courses across the road with the broadest edges downwards. The upper edges should not exceed 4 inches in breadth, to hold the broken stone well. All inequalities must be knocked off, and small stones and chips must be firmly pinned into the interstices with a hammer, so as to form a regular convex surface, with every stone firmly fixed in place. The thick- ness of the pitching is generally 6 or 7 inches; it should not be less than 4, and it may generally be thicker without any sensible increase of cost. At least 4 inches of broken stone are required over the pitched foundation, and, when consolidated, 6 are always suffi- cient.

The qualities required in a good road stoue are hardness, tough- Materials,

ness, and ability to resist the action of the weather, and these are not always found together in the same stone. Limestones possess another quality, that of furnishing a mortar-like detritus which binds the stone together, and enables it to wear better than a harder material that does not bind. For heavy traffic the best materials are traps, basalts, greenstones, and syenite ; quartzose grits and cherty sandstones are also excellent materials. Yor moderate traffic the harder limestones are sufficiently durable and make the smoothest and plcasantest roads. Coefficients of quality for various road materials have been obtained by the engineers of the French " Administration des Ponts et Chaussees." The quality was assumed to be in inverse proportion to the quantity consumed on a length of road with the same traffic, and measurements of traffic and wear were systematically made to arrive at correct results. These processes requiring great care and considerable time, direct experiments on resistance to crushing and to rubbing and collision have also been made on 673 samples of road materials of all kinds. The coefficients obtained by these experiments, which were found to agree fairly well with those arrived at by actual wear in the roads, are summarized in the following table. The coefficient 20 is equiva- lent to "excellent," 10 to "sufficiently good," and 5 to "bad."'

| Materials. Coefficient of Wear. | Coefficient of Crushing. SESeilition.arofeteroovers eletercrets craters 12°35 to 24°2 12°1 to 16 TWO? ponnnnonosanoone 14°1 ,, 22°9 8°38 ,, 16°3 Ginsk,| Aaah densspemnceenear 10°3 ,, 19 13-4 ,, 14°8 GATE Ve cresseectas «carsaia eri « 78 oy tls WG py, aes} S\Sinlts. Boo annanbonognan WINIGs Fy Lee 12°4 ,, 18 SIE? BBS cagnp hac ace ere 14°5 ,, 15°3 PO) gy, aaicil CUMAMEZULCUN crete yeiaciaessiaisscsters 13°8 ,, 30 TPA) gy PALS) Quartzose sandstone …... 14°3 ,, 26:2 99 ,, 16°6 GUIDE UZirsiate ecsiarsyerssajeusjessialsre eras Wee) Ay dats) 12°38 ,, 18°2 Siler ee as 98 ,, 21:3 14:2 |, 17°6 Clalaflints: 9… o:cesc cen 3°5 ,, 16°S 17°8 ,, 25°5 NEITME RD OMCs rire enter 1s eleieiere s 6:6), Los 6°5 ,, 18°5

Stone for a new road should be evenly broken to a size that will pass every way through a ring 24 inches in diameter. For repairs, especially when the material is.tough, a gauge of 2} or 2 inches may be used with advantage, as the stone covers a larger surface, consolidates sooner, and makes a smoother surface. Stone is best broken by hand, but stone-breaking machines have been introduced which supersede hand-breaking to some extent, especially wherc large quantities of hard stone are to be broken. There is always a certain amount of crushing in breaking by a machine, from which softer stones suffer more, and machine-broken stone is never nearly so cubical, uniform in size, or durable as stone well broken by hand. Broken road material contains about 55 per cent. of solid stone to 45 of void space. Ina well-consolidated road the void is filled up by small fragments, detritus, and mud, the result of wear, and specimens of good road surfaces weigh from 93 to 95 per cent. of the weight of the solid stone of which they are made. In the

coating of a well-maintained road the proportion of stones of various sizes varies, but generally from one-third to one-half is found to consist of detritus under three-eighths of an inch in diameter, and there is a very constant proportion of about one-fifth of mud and detritus under one-thirtieth of an inch in diameter. This appears to be the amount necessary to fill the voids between the fragments of stone when compacted together. In an ill-kept road, from which the mud is not removed, the proportion of detritus is much higher, and mud may constitute nearly one-half of the coatmg. — In pro- portion as the detritus and mud are kept down to the minimum by constant removal from the surface, so will the road be able to resist the action of wet and frost and the wear of the traffic.

already described) is essential, and it is generally desirable to loosen the old surface to ensure the incorporation of the new coating with it. Scraping and attention are required between one coating and another and also slight repairs to the surface, as, however well the materials may be laid and rolled, the wear of the ordinary traffic will search out places

which have escaped the full pressure of the roller and produce inequalities.

Besides a regular application of new materials to replace wear, there must be in road maintenance on proper principles a systematic removal of the detritus by scraping or sweeping, which must be regarded as keeping the whole coating in proper condition, and not as mere surface cleansing. The wear should also be reduced as far

Wear. The wear of materials, resulting in their gradual reduction to | as possible by providing sufficient thickness to carry the traffic, by detritus, is due to the joint action of the traffic and the weather, | keeping an even surface on which water can never stand and soak, which cause surface wear, wear arising from cross breaking, and and by good drainage both of surface and subsoil. An adequate from rubbing of the stones together. When there is no movement | amount of skilled manual labour is necessary for economy of main- in the body of the road, and the wear is confined to the crushing | tenance, and this and the constant attention which is required to and grinding at the surface, it is the least possible ; but, when a | keep a road in good order are best secured by putting a man in road is weak from insufficient thickness or solidity on a yielding | permanent charge of a defined length. In the autumn and winter, foundation, bending and cross breaking of the coating take place when more labour is wanted, extra men should work under the under passing loads in addition to the surface wear, and the effects | directions of the permanent road labourer, whose knowledge of his are aggravated by the softening action of water finding its way into length ofroad will enable him to employ them to the best advantage. the road through cracks formed in the surface and by the disinte- Concrete macadam, formed by grouting with lime or cement Conerete grating action of frost. The wear and waste are thus far larger than | mortar a coat of broken stone laid over a bed of stone previously and tar on roads of sufficient strength, properly maintained. The destruc- | well rolled, has been tried as an improvement on an ordinary mae-

tive effect of wheels is greater as the diameter is less, and to a much greater degree as the tire is narrower. On hard and strong roads no

greater width of wheel than 44 inches is useful, as a wider tire does not bear evenly, but on yielding roads a greater width is of some advantage, though it does not prevent damage from bending and cross breaking of the whole coating under excessive loads. A good deal of attention has been given by French engineers to the measurement of traffic, wear, and the consumption of road materials. Without a knowledge of the amount of traffic accurate comparisons of wear are impossible, and an account of the traffic on the roads of France is taken periodically in "collars" or horses drawing loads, and in the weight drawn. 'Traffic as measured by weight drawn has of late been observed in some of the streets of London and Liverpool, and has been reduced for comparison to the weight per foot or yard of width of the carriage-way. Wear may be measured by loss of thickness in the coating; but the loss of stone in proportion to detritus must also be ascertained before all the effects of wear can be determined. The accurate measurement

macadamized surface, but not hitherto with much success. cleanliness is of importance, and great durability is not required, tar macadam or bituminous concrete may be usefully employed. It is sometimes made by first spreading a coating of broken stone and consolidating it by a roller, and then pouring over it a mixture of coal-tar, pitch, and creasote oil, upon which a layer of smaller stone is spread and rolled in, and the surface finished with stone chippings rolled in. More usually the broken stone and bituminous mixture are well incorporated together before they are spread, the stone sometimes being previously heated. The lower layer, about 4 inches thick, may be of stone broken to 24 inches gauge, and the next layer, about 2 inches thick, may be of smaller stone. Each layer must be well rolled, and when perfectly solid a thin coating of fine stone or granite chippings is spread over the surface and rolled in. Hard limestone is found to be more suitable than sili- cious or igneous rocks for this material. A road surface well made in this manner will last several years under light traffic without any repairs, and it can easily be patched when necessary.

of wear as practised by the French engineers is a complicated process, Stone Pavements.—Early pitched roadways consisted of pebbles Stone and it must suffice here to state that measured by thickness the | or

rounded boulders, bedded in the natural surface or in sand or Pavr- wear is seldom found to exceed half an inch, or on the most fre- | gravel. The next step in advance was to employ roughly-squared Mznts. quented roads of France one inch, of consolidated surface per year, | blocks; but the wide and irregular joints admitted the water to and that about 100 cubic yards of good materials per mile per year | the subsoil, and the mud worked up and the stones sank irregu- are considered as the average consumption under 100 collars of traffic | larly under the traffic. Telford, who was called upon to report on per day. Observations in the United Kingdom on roads well and | the street pavements of the parish of Hanover Square in 1824, saw systematically maintained have confirmed these results. the necessity of cutting off all connexion between the subsoil and Mainte- ~The new materials may be added to the road either in thin coats | the paving stones. He recommended a bed of about 6 inches of Founda- nance. and small patches year by year or in a thick coat consolidated by | clean river ballast, rendered compact by being travelled upon for tion.

rolling. The first method, by which the wear is replaced annually and the traffic is depended on to work the materials into the road, can be followed with excellent results, and at no great inconveni- ence to the public under proper managemeut when the traffic is not excessive. Considerable care in the use of matcrials is required that none may be unnecessarily applied. The annual employment of one-fifth or one-sixth the quantity which it would take to cover the whole surface one stone in thickness is often sufficient to replace wear, and it will then take five or six years to coat every part of the road if it is covered regularly. It is therefore important to apply the new materials only where they are needed, and not to use them where the road is already sufficiently thick. The irregularity of wear and of thickness enables a good roadman to judge where new materials must be applied, and he will apply them in small quanti- ties wherever weak places appear. 'To facilitate this the materials should be placed in heaps by the roadside in the summer, and they should be carefully spread in the autumn and attended to after- wards to ensure consolidation without waste. By good manage- ment a large quantity of materials may be incorporated in a road before the middle of the winter without harassing the traffic, and the strength may not only be

maintained but increased. On a hard strong road consolidation may be aided by loosening the sur- face with a pick; generally only the margin of a patch need be picked up. Butif the road is soft or weak it is better not to disturb the surface at all. Binding may sometimes be used to aid con- solidation, but it is seldom necessary if the materials are properly laid and attended to, as the coating already contains dctritus enough. In the second method a coating of materials is laid on at once sufficient to endure the wear of several years with such slight repairs as may be necessary to keep a good surface, and, when the wear has gone as far as it can be safely allowed to go, the process is repeated. Unless the wear is very considerable there is no economy in this method, though the convenience to the public, especially in towns, is undeniable. Consolidation by rolling (after the manner

some time before the paving was laid, but he subsequently con- sidered that nothing short of 12 inches of broken stone, put on in layers 4 inches thick and completely consolidated by carriages passing over them, would answer the purpose. He recommended paving stones of considerable depth and of from 44 to 6 or 74% inches in breadth for the greatest thoroughfares, and he pointed out the importance of working the stones flat on the face and square on all sides, so as to joint close and preserve the bed or base as nearly as possible of the same size as the face, and of carefully placing together in the same course stones of equal breadth. Many pavements thus laid with stones of considerable breadth still re- inain, but experience proved that it was a mistake to suppose that broad stones having a larger base would support better the weight and shocks of heavy traffic ; on the contrary, a wide stone has a tendency to rock on its bed, and also to wear round on the top and become slippery. 'To obtain an evener surface and a better foot- hold for the horses the stones were reduced in width, and in 1840 a granite pavement was laid by Walker on Blackfriars Bridge, which may be considered the first of modern set pavements. The stones were 8 inches broad and 9 deep; they were laid on a bed of concrete 1 foot thick aud were jointed with mortar. The reduc- tion of breadth to about 8 inches was generally followed, but it is only of late years that a concrete foundation has been employed to any great extent, the frequent breaking up to which streets are subject having prevented it. In London a foundation of broken stone has been continued

in the chief thoroughfarcs, the sets being evenly bedded in gravel upon it and rammed with a heavy wooden rammer. Hard core—a mixture of broken stone, clinker, brick rubbish, and old building materials—has also been largely used to form a foundation. In the northern towns of England cinders have been employed, and where the traffic is exceptionally heavy a pitched foundation of stones on edge has been laid when the sets were not paved upon an old macadamized surface. The con- crete for a foundation to a paved street should be made with the

When adam.

Materials.

ROADS

best Portland cement, thoroughly mixed in proper proportions with the sand and gravel or other materials used, water being added as sparingly as possible. A thickness of 6 inches of well- made cement concrete is sufficient for the heaviest traffic, and it can be cut out in slabs for pipe-laying or repairs and can be relaid and cemented in its place. To obtain the best result a new foundation should not be paved upon for a week. A foundation of bituminous concrete is sometimes used where only a thin bed ean be laid, in consequence of there being an old foundation which it is undesirable to disturb. It is made by pouring a composition of coal-tar, pitch, and creasote oil while hot over broken stone levelled and rolled to the proper form, and then spreading a thin layer of smaller broken stone over the surface and rolling it in. It has the advantage that it can be paved upon a few hours after it has been laid.

The best materials for pavement sets are the hard igneous and metamorphic rocks, though millstone grit and other hard sedi- mentary rocks of the same nature are used when the traffic is com- paratively light. Excessively hard stone which wears smooth and slippery is objectionable in spite of its durability. Penmaen-Mawr stone, which is much used in many of the large Lancashire towns, is of this character, and its use was discontinued in London in

the joints have for many years past been made by first filling them with clean gravel, well shaken in by ramming, and then pouring in a composition of coal-tar, pitch, and creasote oil. The Manchester pavements are good examples of this system of trusting to impervious jointing to prevent unequal settlement. The founda- tion, where there is not already an old road surface, is a bed of cinders about 1 foot thick, over which are laid 3 inches of gravel, which are thoroughly consolidated by allowing the traffic to pass over them. The sets are evenly bedded and well rammed after the joints have been filled with clean gravel, ramming and gravel- ling being repeated till the joints are full of gravel. The mixture of coal-tar, pitch, and creasote oil, well boiled, is then poured over the surface and allowed to percolate and fill up all interstices in the joints, and the pavement is finished by covering it with small gravel. Joints so formed are impervious to wet and have a certain amount of elasticity ; the foundation is kept dry ; and the pavement keeps its form well for many years. The objection is made that in hot weather the composition runs from the joints and makes tlc streets unpleasant for foot-passengers. This sort of jointing is used in Liverpool and some other large towns, where the sets are laid on a concrete foundation. The elasticity diminishes vibration and noise, and pavements so jointed arc said to wear better than others.

A curve like that before described, flattening gradually towards Cross the sides, and having a rise equal to one-sixtieth of the width of section, the carriage- way, is a common cross section for a paved street. Sometimes the rise is even less.

A pavement consisting of broad, smooth, well-jointed blocks of Granite grauite for the whcel tracks, and pitching between for the horse tramway.

consequence of its slipperiness and noise. Guernsey granite (syenite) and Mount Sorrel granite (syenite) have the same nature in a less degree, and in London Aberdeen blue granite is preferred, as, though it wears faster, it keeps a rough surface. Walker's observations on the wear of tram stones showed that Aberdeen granite wore three and a quarter times as fast as Guernsey granite, and in the

Jointing.

*set pavement of Blackfriars Bridge it was found that after thirteen and a half years' wear the Aberdeen stone had worn 14 inches, while the Guernsey granite had only worn one-fourth of an inch (equal to '11 and *019 inch per year respectively), or that the foriner had worn six times as fast as the latter. Observations made by Mr Haywood showed the general rate of wear of Aberdeen granite under heavy traffic in the City of London pavements to have been from '14 to '23 inch per year. The rate of wear of Penmaen- Mawr and odiateremshite sets in Liverpool under the greatest traffic is stated to be seldom more than °02 inch per year. A certain proportion between the depth and the length and breadth of sets is required for stability. A shallow stone is more easily tilted up by a heavy weight coming on one edge, and a nar- row stone has a tendency to turn over sideways. The length, measured across the street, must be sufficient to break joint pro- perly, as two or inore joints nearly in a line lead to the formation of grooves. For the softer stones a breadth of 4 or 5 inches may be adopted, but for sets of granite or other hard material, with which the joints must be depended on for foothold, the breadth should not much exceed 3 inches. The depth should not be less than twice the breadth, and, as deeper scts weigh more and cost more than shallower ones and the loss by wear is but slight, there is some reason for not exceeding the minimum depth. Where, however, the speedy relaying of a street pavement is of more im- portance than a saving in first cost, deeper sets are used, and when they have become so worn as to be uneven the strcet is relaid with new sets and the old ones are removed to be redressed for use in other streets, the sets being used again and again in less important streets as their depth is reduced. In London sets 8 inches wide, 10 to 15 long, and originally 9 deep are used in this manner. In Liverpool sets 4 to 14 inches wide, to average with the joints, 5 to 7 inches long, and 6 to 74 deep according to the traffic are used. In Manchester the sets are 8 to 34 inches wide, 5 to 7 long, and 5 to 6 deep, or 7 in exceptional situations. Sets should be well squared and not taper from the face downwards ; both joints and face should be free from irregular projections. On a concrete foundation sets are generally bedded on a thin layer of sand or fine gravel ; sometimes they are laid in a bed of fine cement concrete, enough of which is spread over the concrete foundation to be covered while fresh by the sets, which are put in place and smartly tapped, and the joints are grouted at once with cement grout. To allow the cement to become*

thoroughly set it is desirable that traffic over the pavement should not be allowed for a fortnight, if that can be arranged. 'The courses of sets are laid square across the street, no advantage arising from a slanting direction, which makes the wear more irregular. At junctions of streets the courses are laid meeting at an angle at the centre line of the narrower street, so that the courses may not run in the direction of the traffic. On steep inclines the sets are sometimes slightly tilted on their beds, forming a serrated surface to give foothold, and slate has been in- serted in the joints for the same purpose. The water channels are formed by two or tliree courses of sets laid parallel to the kerb. Joints simply filled in with gravel are of course pervious to water, and a grout of lime or cement does not make a permanently water- tight joint, as it becomes disintegrated under the vibration of the traffic. Grouted joints, however, make a good pavement when there is a foundation of concrete or broken stone or hard core. Where there is not a regular foundation iniperviousness in the joints is of great importance. In some of the Lancashire towns

track, was laid by Walker in Commercial Road (London) for the heavy traffic to the West India Docks in 1825, and similar pavements have been successfully used elsewhere, principally for heavy traffic, in streets only wide enough for one vehicle. In Milan, Turin, and other towns of northern Italy tramways of the same sort are ex- tensively used for the ordinary street traffic. 'The tractive force required is small, while the foothold on the horse track is good ; but the train-stones are slippery for horses to pass over. The rigid- ity of the roadway renders it more suitable for slow heavy traffic than for light quick vehicles, and the improvement in other pave- ments has limited the application of this one in ordinary streets.

Wood Paving.—Wood pavements were introduced in England in Woop Hexagonal blocks of fir, 6 to 8 inches across and 4 to 6 PAVING.

1839.

deep, were bedded in gravel laid on a foundation previously levelled and beaten. The blocks were either bevelled off at the edges or grooved across the face to afford foothold. Other wood pave- meuts were tricd in London about the same time, but they soon got out of order from unequal

settlement of the blocks, and most of them lasted but a few years. The best of these was Carey's, which consisted of blocks 64 to 74 inches wide, 18 to 15 long, and 8 or 9 deep, the sides and ends having projecting and re-entering angles locking the blocks together with the view of preventing unequal settlement. Pavements on this system were laid in Minc- ing Lane in 1841 and in Gracechurch Street in 1842. In the latter street the blocks appear to have been relaid every three or four years and to have been entirely removed about every eleven years, until the pavement was removed in 1871, to be superseded by asphalt. Experience led to a reduction in the width of the blocks to 4 inches and in the depth to 5 or 6, and the salient and re-entering angles disappeared from the sides. With these modifications Carey's pavement remained in use froin 1841 until after the introduction of more modern systems in recent years. The "improved wood pavement" was first used in London in 1871. After the foundation was forined to the proper cross section a bed of sand 4 inches deep was laid, upon which came two layers of inch deal boards saturated with boiling tar, one layer across the other. The wooden blocks were 3 inches wide, 5 deep, and 9 long; they were dipped in tar and laid on the boards with the ends close together, but transversely the courses were spaccd by fillets of wood three-fourths of an inch wide nailed to the floor and to the blocks, The joints were filled up with clean pebbles rammed in and were run with a composition of pitch and tar, the surface being dressed with boiling tar and strewed with small sharp gravel and sand. In this pavement a somewhat elastic foundation was pro- vided in the boards, which were also intended to prevent unequal settlement of the blocks; but the solidity of the pavement depended upon its water-tightness, for, when the surface water reached the sand, as it did sooner or later, settlement and dislocation of the blocks under the traffic arose. Pavements on this system were laid between 1872 and 1876, and were kept in repair and relaid from time to time, but about 1877 the plank foundation was abandoned for a foundation of cement concrete.

A concrete foundation for a wood pavement appears to have been Founda- first employed in a pavenient laid in 1872 in Gracechurch Street by tion.

the Ligno-Mineral Company. The concrete was of blue lias lime 4 inches thick formed to the curve of the road. The blocks were of beech, mineralized by a special process, 34 inches wide, 44 deep, and 7% long, with the ends cut to an angle of 60°, so that each block might derive support from the next one. They were laid with the

ends inclining in opposite directions in alternate courses. The upper edges of the blocks were chamfered, and there was a cham- fered groove near the bottom. Ina few years this form of block was abandoned for rectangular blocks, and mineralized fir was sub- stituted for beech. The blocks were bedded in Portland cement and laid with joints one-fourth of au inch wide, partly filled with asphalt and then grouted with mortar. 'The adoption of a bed of concrete as the weight-bearing foundation of the road marks a new departure, and in all the more recent systems of wood pave- ment a substantial foundation of concrete is an essential feature. In Norwich, however, a large quantity of wood pavement has been laid on the old street foundation, the blocks being bedded in gravel and sand and rammed, and the joints grouted with lime and sand. The experience of from four to seven years has proved the pavements to be snecessful, but the foundation is exceptionally dry and hard and the traffic not very heavy. With a concrete foundation there is no reason for complicated shapes and contrivances for locking the blocks together ; and wood pavements in their modern form consist of rectangular blocks (obtained by cutting off the end ofa deal plank), bedded on the concrete with the fibres of the wood vertical, thus constituting a slightly elastic wearing surface on a rigid foundation, by which the weight of the traffic is borne. There is, however, considerable variation in the method of bedding and jointing the blocks. The Asphaltic Wood Pavement Company laid half an inch of asphalt upon the concrete, and formed the lower part of the joint of asphalt and the upper part of a grout of Port- land cement and gravel, the advantage claimed being a slightly elastic bed for the blocks and water-tight joints. The blocks have been laid in unset cement over the concrete and rammed to an cven surface; but the ramming is

liable to split the blocks, and the indentations formed in the cement surface of the foundation have to be removed when the time comes for renewing the blocks. It is now more usual to bed the blocks directly on the concrete, a smooth surface being formed either with the concrete itself or by a floating of cement, and to fill the joints with a grout of cement and gravel, A cement joint adheres to the blocks, resists wet, and does not wear down too much below the surface of the wood, and so form a receptacle for mud. In Henson's system, which has been largely used, the blocks are bedded and jointed with ordinary roofing felt, a strip of which, cut to a width equal to the depth of the blocks, is placed between every two courses. The joint is made as close as possible by driving up the blocks as every eight or ten courses are laid with heavy mallets,—a plank being laid along the face of the work. A perfectly close and slightly elastic joint is thus formed. A continuous layer of felt is likewise laid over the concrete foundation to give a slightly elastic bed to the blocks. A V-shaped groove along the centre of every fourth block was at first considered necessary for foothold, but its use has been dis- continued except on gradients steeper than 1 in 30. The surface of the pavement is dressed over with a hot bituminous compound, and covered with fine clean grit. This method of laying a wood pavement, although somewhat more expensive, is probably the best that has hitherto been devised for smoothness and durability. The blocks are laid in courses across the streets, any change in the direction of the latter being accommodated by shorter courses ending with wedge-shaped blocks. At street junctions the courses are laid diagonally, or meeting at right angles. Two or three courses are laid parallel with the kerb to form a water channel. The blocks may be laid close end to end across the street if some allowance be made for expansion by wet, without which the kerb- stones and footways will be displaced, or the courses will be bent in reversed curves. To afford relief the joints of the courses parallel to the kerb may be left open, or the course next the kerb may be left out until expansion has ceased, the space being temporarily filled in with sand. In the direction of the traffic joints more or less wide are generally thought necessary for foothold. A wide joint allows the fibres of the wood to spread and give way at the upper corner of the blocks for want of lateral support, and it also forms a receptacle for mud aud wet. Experience has shown that the space of three-fourths of an inch or one inch, once thought necessary for foothold,

may safely be reduced to one-fourth or three-eighths of an inch. For spacing the courses to form the joints strips of wood of the proper thickness may be laid in and removed before the joints are filled, or they may be nailed to the lower part of the blocks. Two fillets have been nailed on, or three cast-iron studs fixed in the sides of each block to keep them steady in place until the joints are filled and thoroughly set. The latter method secures more uniformity in the width of the joints.

There is some difference of opinion as to the best material fora wood pavement. Pitch pine and the harder red and yellow deals arc the most durable, but they are less elastic than the softer woods, and are apt to wear slippery. Soft white woods have been recom- mended for the sake of a more elastic surface ; but on the whole either Memel or Swedish yellow deal is generally considered the best material. Whatever wood is used, it should be sound, close-grained, even in quality, free from knots and sap, and from the blue tinge which is a sign of incipient decay. After the blocks are cut, all

Henson pave- ment.

Materials.

ROADS

those that are unsound, knotty, or badly shaped should be care- fully rejected, as defective blocks soon cause holes in the surface and must be replaced, or the adjoining blocks will suffer undue wear and the surface become irregular. The breadth of the blocks never now exceeds 4 inches, and it is generally 3, the length being determined by the breadth of the deal or batten from which they are cut. The depth is usually 5 or 6 inches; 5 inches are con- sidered by many to be enough to give sufficient depth for as long as the pavement will retain a sufliciently good surface without renewing the wood, and blocks of that depth have been laid in many London streets. It is doubtful if any advantage is derived from creasoting or from dipping the blocks in creasote oil or coal tar. Dipping affords a cover for the use of defective or inferior wood, and thorough creasoting, though it preserves the wood from decay, has little or no influence on the wear, which in almost all cases determines the life of the blocks.

With a curved cross section like that already described a rise Cross from the mean level of the channels to the crown of the road equal section, to one-sixtieth or one-seventieth of the width of the carriage-way is enough. The necessary profile must be accurately given to the concrete foundation when wet. Wooden moulds or templates are fixed across the street 10 or 12 feet apart, over which a straight batten is worked to give the concrete the required form and a smooth surface. The moulds are removed when the concrete is partially set and the spaces are made good with cement mortar. In a level street provision should be made in the foundation for a Founda- fall in the side channels towards the gullies of not less than 1 in tion. 150, and the necessary modifications of cross section at the inter-section of streets must also be provided for. Every care should be taken to ensure a good homogeneous concrete for the foundation, as upon that the strength of the road depends. With a well-made Portland cement concrete a thickness of 6 inches is sufficient. It should be allowed to set thoroughly before the blocks are laid, and traffic should not be allowed to pass over it fora week. The finished pavement should be covered with a thin layer of sharp grit, which is forced into the wood by the traffic and forms a hard face. Several applications of grit are desirable at first, and from time to time afterwards, both as a protection to the wood and to prevent slipperiness. Systematic cleansing is required to prevent slipperiness and foul smells, and to preserve the pavement. Cleans- ing may be aided by washing, and when it is thoroughly carried out but little watering is required to keep down the dust. A wood pavement is the quietest for the residents, pleasant to travel over, and favourable to the wear of vehicles. Traction on it is easy and foothold good, so that it may be laid on gradients as steep as 1 in 20.

The wear of wood pavements in London is stated by Mr Stayton to be from ‘065 inch per year in Sloane Street, with a traffic of 279 tons per yard of width per day, to 456 inch per year in Fleet Street, with a traffic of 1360 tons per yard of width per day. Reduced to a standard of traffic of 750 tons per yard per day, the comparative annual wear becomes ‘175 in the former and ‘251 in the latter street. In Parliament Street, Westminster, blocks removed after four years in places where patching was required had lost 14 to 14 inches in thickness, equal to one-third of an inch per year under traffic stated to be 1106 tons per yard of width per day. From

information afforded by Mr Haywood it appears that in the City of London under traffic of from 300 to 660 vehicles per yard of width per day of 12 hours the wear is from ‘2 to ‘8 inch per year, and that in King William Street, London Bridge, under a tratiic of about 1200 vehicles per yard of width in 12 hours the wear was found to be 25 inches in 34 years in the middle of the road, or 81 inch per year. This is the heaviest traffic to which wood pavement has been sub- jected. The wear is generally considered to be as much due to the horses’ feet as to the whecls, and the action of the former is more destructive on steep gradients. Towards the end of the life of the blocks the wear is more rapid than at first. Few wood pavements retain a sufficiently good surface after about six years’ wear without extensive repairs, and it is probably not advantageous to lay blocks of a greater depth than will provide for a duration of seven years ; 5 inches are almost always sufficient for this.

Wood pavements of plain blocks on a cement conercte bed are Cost. now (1885) laid at from 10s. 6d. to 12s. 6d. per square yard, a con- siderable reduction ou the prices paid for patented systems a few years ago. Of the above prices 2s. 8d. to 8s. 9d. is the cost of the foundation, which does not require renewal like the blocks. As- suming the average life of the latter to be seven years, Mr Stayton estimates the annual cost of wood paving in Chelsea with a traffic of 500 to 750 tons per yard of width per day to be 1s. 9d. per square yard, which includes the cost of original construction, repairs and renewals, and interest, spread over fifteen years. Cleansing and sanding are estimated to cost 5d. per square yard in addition.

Asphalt Paving.—Asphalt was first used for street paving in ASPHALT Paris in 1854. It was introduced in London in 1869, when Thread- pavine. needle Street was paved by the Val de Travers Asphalt Company, and since then it has been extensively used for paving both strects and footways. The material is a hard limestone impregnated with bitumen in the proportion of from 6 to 8 per cent. in the Seyssel

Com- parative cost.

ROADS

rock, and from 10 to 12 in that from Val de Travers. Asphalts con- taining less than the former proportion have not sufficient coher- euce for street pavements, and those containing more than the lattcr proportion soften from heat in the summer. Asphalt is employed either as a mastic or compressed. The mastic is pre- viously prepared in cakes and is melted for use in caldrons with a small quantity of bitumen, and for a street pavement is thoroughly wixed with sand or grit. It is spread in one thickness on a concrete foundation, covered with sand, and beaten to an even surface. This material has not proved so successful for street surfaces as com- pressed asphalt. To produce this the rock asphalt, previously reduced to a fine powder by mechanical means, is heated in revolv- ing ovens to from 220° to 250°, spread while still hot, and compressed into a solid mass by hot disk-shaped rammers, and afterwards smoothed with irons heated to a dull redness, The original rock is thus as it were reconstructed by taking advantage of the power of coherence of the molecules under- pressure when hot. In heating the powder the moisture combined in the limestone must be driven off without reducing the proportion of the bitumen more than is unavoidable. The powder cools very slowly and nay be conveyed long distances from the ovens; it may even be kept till the next day before use. When laid it should still retain a temperature of from 150° to 200°. It is spread evenly with a rake by skilled workmen for the whole width of the strect to a thickness about two-fifths greater than the finished coating is intended to be. Ramming is commeuced with light blows to ensure equality of compression throughout and is eoutinucd with increased force until the whole is solidified. The ramming follows up the spreading, so that a joint is required only when the work is interrupted at the end of a day, or from some other cause. Ina few hours after it has been laid an asphalt pavement may be used for traffic. When finished, its thickness may be from 14 to 2} inches, according to the traffic; a greater thickness than the latter eannot be evenly compressed with certainty. The asphalt loses thickness by com- pression under the traffic for a long time and to the extent, it is said, of one-fifth or one-fourth, but the wear appears to be very small. A pavement in Paris which had lost more than one-fourth of its thickness was found to have lost ouly 5 per cent. of its weight after sixteen years' wear. The pavement in Cheapside, after four- teen years under exceptionally heavy traffic, has becn reduced, where not repaired,

from its original thickness of 24 to about 13 inches. The wear-resisting power of the asphalt is due to its elasticity ; tracks are made by the wheels at first, but when thoroughly compressed by the traffic the surface retains little or no trace of the heaviest loads. Repairs are easily and quickly made by cut- ting out defective places and ramming in fresh heated powder, which can be done in the early morning without stopping the traffic. An unyielding foundation is indispensable ; it should be of the best Portland cement concrete, 6 inches in thickness, which must be well set and perfectly dry throughout before the asphalt is laid, or the steam generated on the application of the hot powder will prevent coherence and lead to cracks and holes in the asphalt, which quickly enlarge under the traffic. For the same reason the asphalt should be laid in dry weather. The concrete foundation must be carefully formed to the proper profile, with an inelination towards the sides of not more than 1 in 50, which is sufficient with so smooth a surface. About 1 in 50 is the steepest gradient at which an asphalt pavement can be safely laid. When either dry or wet it affords good foothold for horses, but when beginning to get wet, or drying, it is often extremely slippery. This is said to be due to dirt on the surface, and not to the nature of the material. Sand is strewed over the surface to remedy the slip- periness ; it tends, however, to wear out the asphalt, and great cleanliness is the best preventive. An asphalt pavement can be kept cleaner than any other, is impervious to moisture, and dries quickly. It is noiseless, except from the clatter of horses' feet on it; it is the pleasantest pavement to travel upon, but it has the drawback of imperfect foothold and slipperiness at times. The cost of a compressed asphalt pavement 2 to 24 inches thick on a Portland cement concrete foundation 6 inches thick is from 18s. to 16s. a square yard, and the maintenauce is usually undertaken for a period of seventeen years by the company laying the pave- ment, the first two years frce and at 3d. to 1s. 6d. per square yard, according to the traffic, in succeeding years.

Comparison of Street Surfaces.—The comparative cost of various street surfaces in Liverpool, including interest on first cost, sinking fund, maintenance, and scavenging, wheu reduced to a uniform standard traffic of 100,000 tons per annum for each yard in width of the carriage-way, is given by Mr Deacon as follows :-—

Per square yard per year, Set: pavement of hard granites ….....6.θ-2e 0s lldd. softer granites

Bituminous concrete ….....ceccecceceeueecceneces 1s. 104d. Vi OCG OEE podoooansocebonGDoadooEmonanoDOD OD 2s. 24d. Macadam, on hand-pitched foundation …..... Qs, 113d.

Taking the standard of traffic at 40,000 tons per annum for each yard in width, the cost for the last three pavements is :—

587

UB IPMMNINOMSRCOMCLECE Ms «scree clere wie aie re eitcace else ses winnie. 015 YGOCM DANONE UNlig farsi sisccreiere sieves oeversGiarmteietern sine cols ots 1s. Sid. ICANN «(Sats <1o/01<) ete e/a{sie'inse, oni daeenoereiere ole arouse tects 1s. 11}d.

Asphalt paving may be placed between wood and bituminous con- erete in the above order. These comparisons show the high cost of a macadamized surface in a street where the traffic is great. However well it may be maintained, a macadamized strect must be dirtier and dustier than any paveinent, though it is superior to them all in safety and to set pavements in the matter of noise. Bituminous concrete or asphalt macadain is eheaper, cleaner, and quieter than ordinary maeadam and is sufficiently durable when the traffic is not heavy. For heavy traffie no pavement is so econo- mical as granite sets; but for the sake of quiet and cleanliness a wood or asphalt pavement is often preferable. Asphalt can be kept cleaner than any other pavement and is the pleasautest to travel over; wood, on the other hand, is quicter for the residents, less slippery, and can be laid on steeper gradients.

The comparative ease of draught on various surfaces is largely Dranght.

influenced by the amount of foothold afforded, and it may be doubted if dynamometer experiments, however carefully made, are altogether conclusive. The tractive force is influeneed by the gradient, the diameter of the wheels, the friction of the wheel axles, and the speed, as well as by the resistance of the road surface, and these must be all taken into

account to obtain accurate results. Some recent experiments made, under the direction of Sir J. W. Bazalgette, with Easton and Anderson's horse dynamometer ou London strect surfaces gave the following mean results : —

Tractive force on the level.

EASTOIGULG! © ceeiasstavestereter si cisieeie esate crereave ono 89°0 „ 39°82 5 BOA ar eens 5: s'esete gic; save vatevovassie eters ste clot 83°62 „ 36°63 – (GIAEMIGETSCUS Te ecajersielete's clalere veers reeteinh stecsrelere 2Gr2„ 12770 '

The gross load was 4 tons, drawn at a speed of from 2 to 6 miles an hour. It is remarkable that the tractive force on asphalt is so high ; but the other results are consistent with former experiments by Morin, Macneill and others.

The comparative safety of granite, wood, and asphalt pavements Safety.

in the City of London was the subject of careful observations, which were fully reported on by Mr W. Haywood in 1873. The pavements selected were granite sets 3 inches wide, ligno-mineral pavement of beech blocks 34 inches wide, improved wood pavement of fir blocks 3 inches wide, and Val de Travers compressed asphalt pavement. On known lengths of these the traffic, the accidents to horses, the weather, and other circumstances were observed for fifty days, and when the distance traversed was taken into account it was found that as a mean result a horse might be expeeted to travel 132 miles on granite without falling, 191 on asphalt, and 446 on the im- proved wood pavement. The condition of the weather had consider- able effect: on the granite when dry a horse might be expected to travel 78 miles without falling, when damp 168, and when wet 537 ; on wood when damp 193 miles, when wet 432, and when dry 646 ; on asphalt when damp 125 miles, when wet 192, and when dry 228. It thus appeared that wood pavement was less slippery than either granite or asphalt in a marked degree, it being only more slippery than granite when both pavements were wet. About 85 per cent. of the falls on the wood pavement were falls on the knees, which are less likely to injure the horses and are less incon- venient to the traffic than other falls. On the granite the falls

were falls on the knees or complete falls in about equal proportions, with about 7 per cent. of falls on the haunches. On the asphalt 43 per cent. were complete falls and 24 per cent. falls on the haunches.

Watering.—On macadamized roads in Great Britain watering is Water- only good for the road itself when the materials are of a very sili- ing.

cious nature and in dry weather. With other materials the effect is to soften the road and increase wear. In and near towns water- ing is required for the comfort of the inhabitants, but it should not be more than enough to lay the dust without softening the road, and the amount required for this may be greatly reduced by keeping the surface free from mud, and by sweeping off the dust when slightly wetted. Pavements are watered to cleanse them as well as to lay the dust, but it must be remembered that both wood and asphalt are more slippery when wet, and that therefore watering should be obviated as far as possible by thorough cleans- ing. Hydrostatic vans, by improvements in the distributing pipes and regulating valves, water a wide track uniformly with an amount of water which can be regulated at pleasure. Where hydrants exist in connexion with a water supply at high pressure, street watering ean be effected by a movable hose and jet, a method much more effective in cleansing the surface, but using a much larger quantity of water. Anotler method which has been tried, but not much used, is to lay perforated pipes at the back of the kerb on each side of the road, from which jets are thrown upon the surface. The first cost is considerable, and the openings for the jets are liable to choke and get out of order. Deliquescent salts have been used for street watering, by which the surface is kept moist, but at the expense of the moisture in the air. Sea water has the same effect in a less degree.

Cleans- jng.

Foot- ways.

588

Cleansing. —The principal streets of a town are generally cleansed daily, either by hand-sweeping and hand-scraping or by machines. Whitworth's

machine consists of a series of revolving brooms on an endless chain, whereby the mud or dust is swept up an incline into the cart. A less costly and cumbersome machine consists of a revolving brush mounted obliquely, which sweeps a track 6 feet wide and leaves the dust or mud on one side to be gathered up by

hand. A horse scraping- machine which delivers the mud at the.

side is also used, the blades of the scrapers being mounted obliquely and covering a width of 6 feet. For general use, more especially in the country, scraping machines worked by a man from side to side of the road, and scraping a width of about 4 feet, are more convenient.

All street surfaces suffer from the constant breaking up and dis- turbance to which they are subjected for the purpose of laying and repairing gas and water pipes. Subways, cither under the middle of the road or near the kerbs, in which the pipes may be laid and be always accessible, have often been advocated, and in a few instances have been constructed; but they have not hitherto found general favour.

Footways.—Gravel is the most suitable material for country or suburban footways ; it should be bottomed with a coarser material, well drained, and should be laid with a roller. An inclination towards the kerb of about half an inch in a foot may be given, or the surface may be rounded, to throw off the wet. Where greatcr cleanliness is desirable and the traffic is not too great a coal-tar concrete similar to that already described, but of smaller materials, makes a good and economical footway. The coating should be 24 or 3 inches thick, composed of two or three layers each well rolled, the lower layer of materials of about 1} inches gauge, and the upper of a half or a quarter of an inch gauge, with Derbyshire spar, or fine granite chippings over all. Concrete footways require to be care- fully made and must be allowed to set thoroughly before they are used. Concrete has a tendency to crack from contraction, especially when in a thin layer, and it is better to lay a footway in sections, with joints at intervals of about 2 yards. Concrete slabs, especially when silicated and constituting artificial stone, make an excellent footway. The material is composed of crushed granite, gravel, or other suitable material, mixed with Portland cement and cast in moulds, and when set saturated with

silicate of soda. This paving has proved more durable than York stone flagging, but it is more slippery, especially when made with granite. York stone makes a good and pleasant foot pavement, but is somewhat expensive con- sidering its durability ; it is apt to wear unevenly and to scale off when the stone is not of the best quality. It should not be laid of a less thickness than 2 inches; 24 or 3 inches are more usual. The flags should be square jointed, not under-cut at the edges, and should be well bedded and jointed with mortar. Caithness flag is

_ much more durable than York stone and wears more evenly ; it is

Kerbing.

Side channels.

impervious to wet and dries quickly by evaporation. The edges are sawn, and the hardness of the stone renders it difficult to cut it to irregular shapes or to fit openings. Staffordshire blue bricks and bricks made of scoria from iron furnaces aré both very durable, though somewhat brittle. Asphalt either laid as mastic or com- pressed is extensively used for footways ; the former is considered inferior in durability to York stone and the latter superior to it. Asphalt should not be laid less than three-fourths of an inch thick on 4 inches of cement concrete, aud 1 inch of asphalt is desirable where there is great traffic. :

Footways in a street must be retained by a kerbing of granite, York stone, Purbeck, or other stone sufficiently strong to stand the blows from wheels to which it is subjected. It should be at least 4 inches wide and 9 deep and in lengths of not less than 3 feet. A granite kerb is usually about 12 by 6 inches, either placed on edge or laid on the flat. When set on edge a kerb is generally bedded on gravel with a mall; when laid on the flat a concrete bed is desirable.

In a macadamized street pitched or paved water channels are required, to prevent the wash of the surface water from under- inining the kerb. The pitching consists of cubical blocks of hard stone about 4 inches deep, bedded on sand or mortar, or preferably on a bed of concrete. A paved channel consists of flat stones about 1 foot wide inclining slightly towards

the kerb. Moulded bricks and artificial stone are also used both for side channelling and for kerbing. Such an inclination must be given to the channel as will bring the surface water to gullies placed at proper intervals, and the level of the kerbing and consequently of the footway will depend to some extent on the surface drainage as well as on the levels of adjacent houses. To lay out a street satisfactorily the longitudinal and transverse sections must be considered in ee to these matters as well as to the levels of intersecting

reets,

For fuller information on the subject see Sir Henry Parnell, A Treatise on Roads ; Thomas Codrington, The Maintenance of Maratea Roads : Debauve, Manuel de VInégnieur des Ponts et Chaussées; Annales des Ponts et Chaussées ; Minutes of Proc. Inst. Civ. Eng., "Street Pavements," vol. lviii. p. 1, and

Wood Pavements," vol. xxviii. p. 240; Reports by W. Haywood, engineer to the commissioners of sewers of the City of London. (fr. C.)

reo

FeO" ap

ROANNE, a town of France, at the head of an arron- dissement in the department of the Loire, lies on the left bank of the Loire in 46° 2' 26" N. lat. at a height of 912 feet above the sea. It is now the point of juncticn for the railway from Paris (262 miles north-north-west) to Lyons (50 miles south-east), a Tarare, with the line from Paris to St Etienne (50 miles south-south-east), and a branch connecting Roanne with Paray le Monial ; and as the terminus of the Roanne-Digoin Canal (1832-38) the town is the real starting-point of the Loire navigation. Besides the modern town-house (1868-73), it is enough to mention the ruins of a castle with a tower dating from the llth century, and a fine bridge of seven arches con-necting Roanne with the industrial suburb of Le Céteau on the right bank of the river. Cotton is the staple manufacture, employing 1200 hands. Hosiery, hats, woollen yarn, weaving looms, chemicals, and paper are also produced ; and, as the town stands in the centre of the Loire and

Rhone coal-field (output 4224 tons in 1884) and in the neighbourhood of the St Etienne coal-field, it has a considerable trade in coal and coke. In 1881 Roanne had a population of 24,992.

Roanne (Rodomna, Ptolemy; Roidomna, Tab. Peut.) was an ancient city of the Segusiani and a station on the great Roman road from Lyons to the ocean. The absence of coins later than the time of Constantius II. among the numerous local relics of the Roman period seems to show that the town was sacked by the barbarians in the 4th century. In 1447 the lordship of Roanne became the property of the celebrated banker Jacques Coeur. A favourite scheme of his was to make the town a great industrial centre by regulating the course of the Renaison, an affluent from the Monts de la Madeleine which joins the river a little higher up ;

his death prevented its execution, but the subject has since been frequently revived.

ROBBERY. See THeErr.

ROBBIA, Detua, the name of a family of great dis- tinction in the annals of Florentine art. Its members are enumerated in chronological order below.!

I. Luca petua Ropzra (1399 or 14002-1482) was the son of a Florentine named Simone di Marco della Robbia. According to Vasari, whose account of Luca's early life is little to be trusted, he was apprenticed to the silversmith Leonardo di Ser Giovanni, who from 1355 to 1371 was working on the grand silver altar frontal for the cathedral at Pistora (q.v.) ; this, however, appears doubtful from the great age which it would give to Leonardo, and it is more probable that Luca was a pupil of Ghiberti. During the early part of his life Luca executed many important and exceedingly beautiful pieces of sculpture in marble and bronze. In technical skill he was quite the equal of Ghiberti, and, while possessing all Donatello's vigour, dramatic power, and originality, he very frequently ex- celled him in grace of attitude and soft beauty of expres- sion. No sculptured work of the great 15th century ever surpassed the singing gallery which Luca made for the cathedral at Florence between 1431 and 1440, with its ten magnificent panels of singing angels and dancing boys,

far exceeding in beauty those which Donatello in 1433 sculptured for the opposite gallery in the same choir. This magnificent work now lies scattered in various parts of the

1 Genealogical tree of Della Robbia sculptors :— Simone di Marco.

|

Marco. Luca

(1400-1482).

Andrea

(1435-1525).

. | | Girolamo Luca Paolo Giovanni Marco

(1488-1566), (1475-15507), (1470- 2), (1469-1529 2), (1468- %,

worked mostly worked in Dominican worked mainly Dominican in France. Florence monk. in Florence. monk. and Rome.

2 Not 1388, as Vasari says. teggio Inedito, i. pp. 182-186.

See a document printed by Gaye, Car-

ROBBIA

Bargello. The general effect of the whole can best be seen at the South Kensington Museum, where a complete cast is fixed to the wall. The same museuni possesses a study in gesso duro for one of the panels, which appears to be the original sketch by Luca's own hand.

In May 1437 Luca received a commission from the signoria of Florence to execute five reliefs for the north side of the campanile, to complete the series begun by Giotto and Andrea Pisano. These panels are so much in the earlier style of Giotto that we must conclude that he had left drawings from which Luca worked. They have representative figures chosen to

typify grammar, logic, philosophy, music, and geometry,—the last represented by Euclid and Ptolemy. In 1438 Luca received an order for two marble altars for chapels in the cathedral, a third being ordered from Donatello. The reliefs from one of Luca's—St Peter's Deliverance from Prison and his Cruci- fixion—are now in the Bargello. It is probable that these altars were never finished. A tabernacle for the host, made by Luca in 1442, is now at Peretola in the church of S. Maria. A document in the archives of 8. Maria Nuova at Florence shows that he received for this 700 florins 1 lira 16 soldi (about £1400 of modern money). In 1437 Donatello received a commission to cast a bronze door for one of the sacristies of the cathedral; but, as he delayed to execute this order, the work was handed over to Luca on 28th February 1446, with Michelozzo and Maso di Bartolomeo as his assistants. Part of this wonder- ful door was cast in 1448, and the last two panels were finished by Luca in 1467, with bronze which was supplied to him by Verrocchio.2. The door is divided into ten

square panels, with small heads in the style of Ghiberti projecting from the framing. The two top subjects are the Madonna and Child and the Baptist, next come the four Evangelists, and below are the four Latin Doctors,

Fic. 1.—Bronze relief of one of the Latin Doctors, from the sacristy door in the cathedral of Florence, by Luca.

each subject with attendant angels. The whole is modelled with the most perfect grace and dignified simplicity ; the heads throughout are full of life, and the treatment of the drapery in broad simple folds is worthy of a Greek sculptor of the best period of Hellenic art. These exquisite reliefs

1 Vasari is not quite right in his account of these reliefs: he speaks

of Euclid and Ptolemy as being in different panels. 2 See Cavallucci, S. Maria del Fiore, pt. ii. p. 137.

are perfect models of plastic art, and are quite free from the over-elaboration and too pictorial style of Ghiberti. Fig. 1 shows one of the panels. A terra-cotta relief at Berlin and another in the South Kensington Museum are probably original studies by Luca for two of the panels of the doctors.

The most important existing work in marble by Luca

-(executed in 1457-58)3 is the tomb of Benozzo Federighi,

bishop of Fiesole, originally placed in the church of S. Pancrazio at Florence, but now in 8. Francesco di Paola on the Bello Sguardo road outside the city. A very beautiful effigy of the bishop in a restful pose lies on a sarcophagus sculptured with graceful reliefs of angels holding a wreath, which contains the inscription. Above are three-quarter- length figures of Christ between St John and the Virgin, delicately carved in low relief. The whole is surrounded by a rectangular frame formed of painted majolica tiles of the most exquisite beauty, far surpassing any other exist-ing work of the same sort. On each tile is painted, with enamel pigments, a bunch of flowers and fruit in brilliant realistic colours, the loveliness of which is very hard to describe The perfect mean between truth to nature and decorative treatment has never been more thoroughly obtained than, in these wonderful tile pictures, each of which is worthy of the most careful study ; and they are also of special interest as being among the earliest ex- amples of Italian majolica. Though the bunch of flowers on each is painted on one slab, the ground of each tile is formed of separate pieces, fitted together like a kind of mosaic, probably because the pigment of the ground required a different degree of heat in firing from that needed for the enamel painting of the centre. The few other works of this class which exist do not approach the beauty of this early essay in majolica painting, on which Luca evidently put forth his utmost skill and patience.

In the latter part of his life Luca was mainly occupied with the production of terra-cotta reliefs covered with enamel,—a process which he improved upon, but did not invent, as Vasari asserts. The secret of this process was to cover the clay relief with an enamel formed of the ordi- nary ingredients of glass (marzacotto) made an opaque white by oxide of tin,—

*a method practised with great success in the 13th century in Persia * (see PorrEry, vol. xix. pp. 620, 628). Though Luca was not the inventor of the process, yet his genius so improved and extended its application that it is not unnaturally known now as Della Robbia ware ; it must, however, be remembered that by far the majority of these reliefs which in Italy and else- where are ascribed to Luca are really the work of some of the younger members of the family. Comparatively few exist which can with certainty be ascribed to Luca himself. Among the earliest of these are medallions of the four Evangelists in the vault of Brunelleschi's Pazzi chapel in S. Croce. These fine reliefs are coloured with various metallic oxides in different shades of blue, green, purple, yellow, and black. It has often been asserted that the very polychromatic reliefs belong to Andrea or his sons, and that Luca's were all in pure white; this, however, is not the case: colours were used more freely by Luca than by his successors. A relief in the South Kensington Museum furnishes a striking example and is of especial value from its great size, and also because its date is known. 'This is an enormous medallion containing the arms of René of Anjou and other heraldic devices; it is*

3 Gaye, Carteggio Inedito, i. p. 183.

4 It is described by Theophilus, Diversarum Artium Schedula (11th century), and by Pietro del Bono in his Margarita preciosa (1330). An example earlier than any of Luca's exists at Florence over the door of 8. Egidio (in S. Maria Nuova). It is a relief of the Coronation of the Virgin executed by Lorenzo de' Bicci in 1424; see Milanesi, Archivio Storico Italiano, 1860, pp. 182-183. Contemporary writers call this enamelled clay "terra invetriata,"

surrounded by a splendidly modelled wreath of fruit and flowers, especially apples, lemons, oranges, and fir cones, all of which are brilliantly coloured. This medallion was set up on the facade of the Pazzi Palace to commemorate René's visit to Florence in 1442. Another early relief by Luca, also highly polychromatic, is that of the Ascension in the tympanum of one of the sacristy doors in the cathedral, executed between 1446 and 1450, as is recorded in a document published by Rumohr

(Jtalien. Forsch., ii. pp. 364-365). Other existing works of Luca in Florence are the tympanum reliefs of the Madonna between two Angels in the Via dell' Agnolo, a work of exquisite beauty, and another over the door of §. Pierino del Mercato Vecchio. The only existing statues by Luca are two lovely enamelled figures of Kneeling Angels holding candlesticks, now in the canons' sacristy.!. A very fine work by Luca, executed between 1449 and 1452, is the tympanum relief of the Madonna and four Monastic Saints over the door of 8. Domenico at Urbino.2 Luca also made the four coloured medallions of the Virtues set in the vault over the tomb of the young cardinal-prince of Portugal in a side chapel of S. Miniato in Florence (see RossELiino). By Luca also are reliefs of the Madonna and various medallions outside Or San Michele. One of his chief decorative works which no longer exists was a small library or study for Piero de' Medici, wholly lined with painted majolica plaques and reliefs.3 The South Kensington Museum pos- sesses twelve circular plaques of majolica ware painted in blue and white with the Occupations of the Months ; these have been attributed to Luca, but have no resem- blance to any known works of his. Their provenance is unknown.

In 1471 Luca was elected president of the Florentine artists' guild, but he refused this great honour on account of his age and infirmity. It shows, however, the very high estimation in which he was held by his contemporaries. He died on 20th February 1482, leaving his property to his nephews Andrea and Simone. His chief pupil was his nephew Andrea, and probably also Agostino di Duccio, who executed many pieces of sculpture at Rimini, and the graceful but mannered marble reliefs of angels on the facade of 8. Bernardino at Perugia.' Vasari calls this aya Luca's brother, but he was not related to him at all.*

I]. ANDREA DELLA Ropsia (1435-1525), the nephew and pupil of Luca, carried on the production of the enamelled reliefs on a much larger scale than his uncle had ever done ; he also extended its application to various architectural uses, such as friezes and to the making of lavabos (lavatories), fountains, and large retables. The result of this was that, though the finest reliefs from the workshop of Andrea were but little if at all inferior to those from the hand of Luca, yet some of them, turned out by pupils and assistants, reached only a lower stand- ard of merit. Only

one work in marble by Andrea is known, namely, an altar in §. Maria delle Grazie near Arezzo, mentioned by Vasari (ed. Milanesi, ii. p. 179), and still well preserved.

One variety of method was introduced by Andrea in his enamelled work; sometimes he omitted the enamel

3 The South Kensington Museum possesses what seem to be fine replicas of these statues. ; ? The document in which the order for this and the price paid for it = recorded is published by Yriarte, Gaz. d. Beaux Arts, xxiv. p. 143.

" It is fully described by Filarete in his Trattato dell' Architectura, written in 1464, and therefore was finished before that date ; see also bine ee wi Florence, 1880, ii. p. 174.

is will, dated 19th Februar i i

Ind. tp, TSB, y 1471, is published by Gaye, Cart.

: In the works of Perkins and others on Italian sculpture these Perugian reliefs are wrongly stated to be of enamelled clay.

ROBBIA

on the face and hands (nude parts) of his figures, especi- ally in those cases where he had treated the heads in a realistic manner ; as, for example, in the noble tympanum relief of the meeting of St Domenic and St Francis in the loggia of the Florentine hospital of S. Paolo,—a design suggested by a fresco of Fra Angelico's in the cloister of St Mark's. One of the most remarkable works by Andrea is the series of medallions with reliefs of Infants in white on a blue ground set on the front of the found- ling hospital at Florence. These lovely child-figures are modelled with wonderful skill and variety, no two being alike. Andrea produced, for guilds and private persons, a large number of reliefs of the Madonna and Child varied with much invention, and all of extreme beauty of pose and sweetness of expression. These are frequently framed with realistic and yet very decorative garlands of fruit and flowers, all painted with enamel

colours, while the main relief is left white. Fig. 2 shows a good example of these

Fic. 2.—Enamelled clay relief of Virgin and Child, by Andrea,

The hospital of S. Paolo, near S. Maria Novella, has also a number of fine medallions with reliefs of saints, two of Christ Healing the Sick, and two fine portraits, under which are white plaques inscribed—"dall' aiio 1451 all' ano 1495"; the first of these dates is the year when the hospital was rebuilt owing to a papal brief

smaller works.

sent to the archbishop of Florence. Arezzo possesses a number of fine enamelled works by Andrea and his sons —a, retable in the cathedral with God holding the Crucified Christ, surrounded by angels, and below, kneeling figures of 8. Donato and 8. Bernardino ; also in the cathedral is a fine relief of the Madonna and Child with four saints at the sides. In S. Maria in Grado is a very noble retable with angels holding a crown over a standing figure of the Madonna; a number of small figures of worshippers take refuge in the folds of the Virgin's mantle, a favourite motive for sculpture dedicated by guilds or other corporate

ROBBIA

bodies. Perhaps the finest collection of works of this class is at La Verna, not far from Arezzo (see Vasari, ed. Milanesi, ii. p. 179). The best of these, three large retables with representations of the Annunciation, the Crucifixion, and the Madonna giving her Girdle to St Thomas, are probably the work of Andrea himself; the others being by his sons. In 1489 Andrea made a beauti- ful relief of the Virgin and two Angels, now over the archive room door in the Florentine Opera del Duomo; for this he was paid twenty gold florins (see Cavallucci, S. Maria del Fiore). In the same year he modelled the fine tympanum relief over a door of Prato cathedral, with a half-length figure of the Madonna between St Stephen and St Lawrence, surrounded by a frame of angels' heads.

In 1491 Andrea was still working at Prato, where many of his best reliefs still exist. One of his finest works is a large retable at Volterra in the church of 8. Girolamo, dated 1501; it represents the Last Judgment, and is re- markable for the fine modelling of the figures, especially that of the archangel Michael, and a nude kneeling figure of a youth who has just risen from his tomb. Other late works of known date are a Resurrection of Christ, made in 1501 for S. Frediano at Florence (the lower half of this only exists, in the court of the Casa Mozzi), and a medal- lion of the Virgin in Glory, surrounded by angels, made in 1505 for Pistoia cathedral.t Andrea's last known relief is a Nativity, made in 1515 for S. Maria in Pian di Mugnone at Florence."

TIl., IV. Five of Andrea's seven sons worked with their father, and after his death carried on the Robbia fabrique ; the dates of their birth are shown in the table on p. 588 above. Early in life two of them came under the influ- ence of Savonarola, and took monastic orders at his Domi- nican convent ; these were Marco, who adopted the name of Fra Luca, and Paoto, called Fra Ambrogio. One relief by the latter, a Nativity with four life-sized figures of rather poor work, is in the Cappella degli Spagnuoli in the Sieuese convent of 8. Spirito; a MS. in the convent archives records that it was made in 1504.

V. The chief existing work known to be by the second son Luca is the very rich and beautiful tile pavement in the uppermost story of Raphael's loggie at the Vatican, finely designed and painted in harmonious majolica colours. This was made by Luca at Raphael's request and under his supervision in 1518.° It is still in very fine preservation.

VI. GriovANNI DELLA Roppra (1469-15291) during a great part of his life worked as assistant to his father, Andrea, and in many cases the enamelled sculpture of the two cannot be distinguished. Some of Giovanni's independ- ent works are of great merit, especially the earlier ones ; during the latter part of his life his reliefs deteriorated in style, owing mainly to the universal decadence of the time. A very large number of pieces of Robbia ware which are attributed to Andrea, and even to the elder Luca, were really by the hand of Giovanni. One of his finest works, quite equal in beauty to anything of his father's, from whom the design of

the figures was probably taken, is the washing- fountain in the sacristy of S. Maria Novella at Florence, made in 1497.4 It is a large arched recess with a view of the seashore, not very decorative in style, painted on majolica tiles at the back. There are also two very beauti- ful painted majolica panels of fruit-trees let into the lower part. In the tympanum of the arch isa very lovely white

1 See Gualandi, Memorie risguardanti le Belle Arti, Bologna, 1845, vi. pp. 33-35, where original documents are printed recording the dates and prices paid for these and other works of Andrea.

2 See a document printed by Milanesi in his Vasari, ii. p. 180.

3 It is illustrated by Gruner, Fresco Decorations of Italy, London, 1854, pl. iv.; see also Miintz, Raphaél, sa Vie, &c., Paris, 1881, p. 452, note i., and Vasari, ed. Milanesi, ii. p. 182.

4° See a document printed by Milanesi in his Vasari, ii. p. 193.

relief of the Madonna between two Adoring Angels (see fig. Long coloured garlands of fruit and flowers are held

3).

Fig. 3.—Relief of Madonna and Angels in the tympanum of the lavabo (8S. Maria Novella, Florence), by Giovanni.

by nude boys reclining on the top of the arch. All this part is of enamelled clay, but the basin of the fountain is of white marble. Neither Luca nor Andrea was in the habit of signing his work, but Giovanni often did so, usually adding the date, probably because other potters had begun to imitate the Robbia ware.®

Giovanni lacked the original talent of Luca and Andrea, and so he not only copied their work but even reproduced in clay the marble sculpture of Pollaiuolo, Da Settignano, Verrocchio, and others. A relief by him,

evidently taken from Mino da Fiesole, exists in the Palazzo Castracane Staccoli. Among the very numerous other works of Gio- vanni are the large retable in the Castellani chapel of 8. Croce, a relief in the wall of a convent in the Via Nazionale at Florence, and two reliefs in the Bargello dated 1521 and 1522. The latter is a many-coloured relief of the Nativity, and was taken from the church of S. Girolamo in Florence ; it is a too pictorial work, marred by the use of many different planes. Its predella has a small relief of the Adoration of the Magi, and is inscribed "Hoc opus fecit Joanes Andree de Robia, ac posuit hoc in tempore die ultima lulii afio, Di. mpxxi." At Pisa in the church of §. Silvestro is a relief in Giovanni's later and poorer manner dated 1520; it is a Madonna surrounded by angels, with saints below—the whole overcrowded with figures and ornaments. Giovanni's largest and perhaps finest work is the polychromatic frieze on the outside of the Del Ceppo Hospital at Pistoia, for which he received various sums of money between 1525 and 1529, as is recorded in documents which still exist among the archives of the hospital. The subjects of this frieze are the Seven Works of Mercy, forming a continuous band of sculpture in high relief, well modelled and designed in a very broad sculpturesque way, but a little injured perhaps by the crudeness of some of its colouring. Six of these reliefs. are by Giovanni, namely, Clothing the Naked, Washing the Feet of Pilgrims, Visiting the Sick, Visiting Prisoners, Burying the Dead, and Feeding the Hungry. The seventh,

5 Examples of these imitations are a retable in 8. Lucchese near Poggibonsi dated 1514, another of the Madonna and Saints at Monte San Savino of 1525, and a third in the Capuchin church of Arceria. near Sinigaglia ; they are all inferior to the best works of the Robbia family.

8 The hospital itself was begun in 1514.

Giving Drink to the Thirsty, was made by Filippo Pala- dini of Pistoia in 1585; this last is of terra-cotta, not enamelled, but simply painted with oil colours. Giovanni also executed the medallions in the spandrels of the arches under this frieze, with reliefs of the Annunciation, the Visitation, and the Coronation of the Virgin.

A large octagonal font of enamelled clay, with pilasters at the angles and panels between them with scenes from the life of the Baptist, in the church of S. Leonardo at Cerreto Guidi, isa work of the school of Giovanni; the reliefs are pictorial in style and coarse in execution. Giovanni's chief pupil was a man named Santi, who was at first apprenticed to Buglioni,! and when the latter died in 1521 he went into Giovanni's bottega. His work is very inferior to that of his master.

VII. Grroramo DELLA Rosptra (1488-1566), another of Andrea's sons, was an architect and a sculptor in marble and bronze as well as in enamelled clay. During the first part of his life he, like his brothers, worked with his father, but in 1528 he went to France and spent nearly forty years in the service of the French royal family. Francis I. employed him to build a palace in the Bois de Boulogne called the Chateau de Madrid. This was a large well- designed building, four stories high, two of them having open loggie in the Italian fashion. Girolamo decorated it richly with terra-cotta medallions, friezes, and other archi- tectural features.2. For this purpose he set up kilns at Suresnes. Though the palace itself has been destroyed, drawings of it exist.®

The best collections of Robbia ware are in the Florentine Bargello and Accademia, the South Kensington Museum (the finest out of Italy), the Louvre, the Cluny, and the Berlin Museums. Many fine specimens exist in Paris in the private collections of M. Alphonse de Rothschild, M. Gavel, and M. Dreyfus. The greater part of the Robbia work still remains in the churches and other buildings of Italy, especially in Florence, Fiesole, Arezzo, La Verna, Volterra, Barga, Montepulciano, Lucca, Pistoia, Prato, and Siena. The best accounts of the Della Robbia family are those given by De Jouy, Les Della Robbia, Paris, 1855; Bode, Die Kinstlerfamilie Della Lobdbia, Leipsic, 1878; and Cavallucci and Molinier, Les Della Rodbia, Paris, 1884, an ably-written and well-illustrated work. See also Vasari, ed. Milanesi, Florence, 1880, ii. p. 167 sg., and various works on Italian sculpture. (J. HM)

ROBERT I., king of France, son and successor of Hugh Capet, was born at Orleans in 971 and died at Melun in 1031. See Francs, vol. ix. p. 536. He is sometimes cited as Robert IJ., Robert I. being then taken to mean

Robert, duke of France (0b. 923), the second son of Robert "the Strong" (ob. 866) ; comp. Francg, vol. ix. p. 535.

ROBERT, called Tue Bruce (1274-1329), king of Scotland, was the son of the seventh Robert de Bruce, lord of Annandale in his own right and earl of Carrick in right of his wife Marjory, daughter of Neil, second earl, and thus was of mingled Norman ® and Celtic blood. His*

1 Benedetto Buglioni (1461-1521) appears to have produced ena- melled ware independently of the Robbia family. In 1484 he made arelief of the Harrowing of Hell for the Servite monks at Florence; see Baldinucci, Notizie de' Professori del Disegno, Milan, 1811, vi. p. 18.

2 The Sevres Museum possesses some fraginents of these decorations.

3 See Laborde, Chateau de Madrid, Paris, 1853, and Comptes des Batiments du Rot, Paris, 1877-80, in which a full account is given of Girolamo's work in connexion with this palace.

- *For Rosert II. (1816-1390) and Roperr III. (ad. 1406) of Scotland, see SCOTLAND.*

® The first Robert de Bruce, a follower of William the Conqueror, was rewarded by the gift of many manors, chiefly in Yorkshire, of which Skelton was the principal. His son, the second Robert, received from David I., his comrade at the court of Henry I., a grant of the lordship of Annandale, and his grandson, the third Robert, siding with David against Stephen at the battle of the Standard, became a Scottish instead of an English baron. The fourth Robert married Isobel, natural daughter of William the Lion, and their son, the fifth Robert, married Isabella, second daughter of David, earl of Hunting- don, niece of the same Scottish king. Thus royal kin made natural the ambition to gain a crown,—an object not beyond the ambition of a powerful noble in feudal times.

grandfather, the sixth Robert de Bruce, claimed the crown of Scotland as son of Isabella, second daughter of David, earl of Huntingdon ; but

Baliol, grandson of Margaret, the eldest daughter, was preferred by the commissioners of Edward I. The birthplace of the Bruce—perhaps Turn- berry, his mother's castle, on the coast of Ayr—is not cer- tainly known. His youth is said by an English chronicle to have been passed at the court of Edward I. At an age when the mind is quick to receive the impressions which give the bent to life he must have watched the pro- gress of the great suit for the crown of Scotland. Its issue in favour of Baliol led to the resignation of Annan- dale by Bruce the competitor to his son, the Bruce's father, who, either then or after the death of the aged competitor in 1295, assumed the title of lord of Annandale. Two years before he had resigned, on the death of his wife, the earldom of Carrick to Robert the Bruce, who presented the deed of resignation to Baliol at Stirling on 3d August 1293, and offered the homage which his father, like his

grandfather, was unwilling to render. Feudal law required

that the king should take sasine of the earldom before regranting it and receiving the homage, and the sheriff of Ayr was directed to take it on Baliol's behalf. As the disputes between Edward and Baliol, which ended in Baliol losing the kingdom, commenced in this year it is doubtful whether Bruce ever rendered homage; but he is henceforth known as earl of Carrick, though in a few instances this title is still given to his father. Both father and son sided with Edward against Baliol. Towards the end of 1292 the elder Robert had a safe-conduct from Edward to visit Norway with a daughter, Isabella, who married Erik, king of Norway, the widower of Margaret of Scotland,—a fact marking the high standing of the family of Bruce. On 20th April 1294 the younger Robert, earl of Carrick, had a similar safe-conduct or permission to visit Ireland till Michaelmas and a year following, and a further mark of Edward's favour by a respite for the same period of all debts due by him to the exchequer. His father, having done homage to Edward, was entrusted in October 1295 with the custody of the castle of Carlisle by a patent in which he is styled lord of Annandale; and Baliol retaliated by seizing Annandale, which he conferred on John Comyn, earl of Buchan. On 28th August 1296 Robert de Bruce "le vieil" and Robert de Bruce "le jeune," earl of Carrick, swore fealty to Edward at Berwick; but (according to Hemingford), in breach of this oath, renewed at Carlisle on the Gospels and the sword of Thomas a

Becket, the young earl joined Wallace, who had raised the standard of Scottish independence in the name of Baliol after that weak king had himself surrendered his kingdom to Edward. Urgent letters were sent ordering Bruce to sup- port Warenne, Edward's general, in the summer of 1297; but, instead of complying, he, along with the bishop of Glasgow and the steward of Scotland, laid waste the lands of those who adhered to Edward. On 7th July Percy forced Bruce and his friends to make terms by the treaty called the Capitulation of Irvine. The Scottish lords were not to serve beyond the sea against their will and were pardoned for their recent violence, while in return they owned allegiance to Edward. The bishop of Glasgow, the steward, and Sir Alexander Lindesay became sureties for Bruce until he delivered his daughter Marjory as a hostage. Wallace almost alone maintained the struggle for freedom which the nobles as well as Baliol had given up, and Bruce had no part in the honour of Stirling Bridge or the reverse of Falkirk, where in the following year Edward in person recovered what his generals had lost and drove Wallace into exile. Shortly afterwards Bruce appears again to have sided with his countrymen; Annandale was wasted and Lochmaben taken by Clifford, while Bruce (according

ROBERT

to Hemingford), '"'when he heard of the king's coming, fled from his face and burnt the castle of Ayr which he held." Yet, when Edward was forced by home affairs to quit Scotland, Annandale and certain earldoms, including Carrick, were excepted from the districts he assigned to his followers,—Bruce and the other earls being treated as waverers whose allegiance might still be retained. In 1299 a regency was appointed in Scotland in name of Baliol, and a letter of Baliol mentions Robert Bruce, lord of Carrick, as regent, along with William of Lamberton, bishop of St Andrews, and John Comyn the younger,— a strange conbination, Lamberton the friend of Wallace, Comyn the enemy of Bruce, and Bruce a regent in name of Baliol. Comyn in his own interest as Baliol's heir was the active regent ; the insertion of the name of Bruce was an attempt to secure his co-operation. For the next four years he kept studiously in the background waiting his time. A statement of Langtoft that he was at the parlia- ment of Lincoln in 1301, when the English barons repudi- ated the

claim of the pope to the suzerainty of Scotland, is not to be credited, though his father may have been there. In the campaign of 1304, when Edward renewed his attempt on Scotland and reduced Stirling, Bruce sup- ported the English king, who in one of his letters to him says, "If you complete that which you have begun we shall hold the war ended by your deed and all the land of Scotland gained." But, while apparently aiding Edward, Bruce had taken a step which bound him to the patriotic cause. On 11th June, a month before the fall of Stirling, he met Lamberton at Cambuskenneth and entered into a secret bond by which they were to support each other against all adversaries and undertake nothing without consulting together. The death of his father in this year may have determined his course and led him to prefer the chance of the Scottish crown to his English estates and the friendship of Edward.

This determination closes the first chapter of his life ; –

the second, from 1304 to 1314, is occupied by his contest for the kingdom, which was really won at Bannockburn, though disputed till the treaty of Northampton in 1328 ; the last, from 1314 to his death in 1329, was the period of the establishment of his government and dynasty by an administration as skilful as his generalship. It is to the second of these that historians, attracted by its brilliancy even amongst the many romances of history and_ its importance to Scottish history, have directed most of their attention, and it is during it that his personal character, tried by adversity and prosperity, gradually unfolds itself. But all three periods require to be kept in view to form a just estimate of Bruce. That which terminated in 1304, though unfortunately few characteristics, personal or indi- vidual, have been preserved, shows him by his conduct to have been the normal Scottish noble of the time. A con- 'flict of interest and of bias led to contradictory action, and this conflict was increased in his case by his father's residence in England, his own upbringing at the English court, his family feud with Baliol and the Comyns, and the jealousy common to his class of Wallace, the mere knight, who had rallied the commons against the invader and taught the nobles what was required in a leader of the people. The merit of Bruce is that he did not despise the lesson. Prompted alike by patriotism and ambition, at the prime of manhood he chose the cause of national independence with all its perils,

and stood by it with a constancy which never wavered until he secured its triumph. Though it is crowded with incidents, the main facts in the central decade of Bruce's life may be rapidly told. The fall of Stirling was followed by the capture and execution of Wallace at London on 24th August 1305. Edward hoped still to conciliate the nobles and gain Scotland by a

policy of clemency to all who did not dispute his authority. A parliament in London (16th September), to which Scottish representatives were summoned, agreed to an ordinance for the government of Scotland, which, though on the model of those for Wales and Ireland, treating Scotland as a third subject province under an English lieutenant, John de Bretagne, was in other respects not severe. Bruce is reputed to have been one of the advisers who assisted in framing it ; but a provision that his castle of Kildrummy was to be placed in charge of a person for whom he should answer shows that Edward not without reason suspected his fidelity. Challenged by the king with the bond between him and Lamberton (according to one account discovered by the treachery of John Comyn, with whom a similar engagement had been made or attempted), Bruce secretly quitted London, and on 10th February 1306 met by appointment, in the church of the Friars Minor at Dumfries, Comyn, whom he slew at the high altar for refusing to join in his plans. So much is certain, though the precise incidents of the interview were variously told. It was not their first encounter, for a letter of 1299 to Edward from Scotland describes Comyn as having seized Bruce by the throat at a meeting at Peebles, when they were with difficulty reconciled by the joint regency.

The bond with Lamberton was now sealed by blood and the confederates lost no time in putting it into execution. Within little more than six weeks Bruce, collecting his adherents in the south-west, passed from Lochmaben to Glasgow and thence to Scone, where he was crowned by the bishop of St Andrews on 25th March, the bishops of Glasgow and Moray, with the earls of Lennox, Athole, and Errol, being present. Two days later Isabella, countess of Buchan, claimed the right of her family the Macduffs, earls of Fife, to place the Scottish king on his throne, and the ceremony was repeated with an addition flattering to the Celtic race. Though a king, Bruce had not yet a king- dom, and his efforts to obtain it were till the death of Edward I. disastrous failures. In June he was defeated at Methven by Pembroke, and on 11th August he was sur- prised in Strathfillan, where he had taken refuge, by Lord Lorn. The ladies of his family were sent to Kildrummy in January, and Bruce, almost without a follower, fled to Rathlin, an island off Antrim (Ireland). Edward, though suffering from his last illness, came to the north in the following spring. On his way he granted the Scottish estates of Bruce and his adherents to his own followers, Annandale falling to the earl of Hereford. At Carlisle there was published a bull excommunicating Bruce, along with another absolving Edward from the oath he had taken to observe Magna Charta and the other charters on which the English constitution rests. Elizabeth the wife, Marjory the daughter, Christina the sister of Bruce, were captured in a sanctuary at Tain and sent prisoners to England. The countess of Buchan was confined in a cage at Berwick and another of Bruce's sisters, Mary, in a cage at Roxburgh. The bishops of St Andrews and Glasgow and the abbot of Scone were suspended from their bene- fices and sent as prisoners to the south of England. Nigel Bruce, his youngest brother, was beheaded at Berwick, Christopher Seton, his brother-in-law, at Dumfries. The earl of Athole was sent to London and hanged on a gallows 30 feet higher than the pole on which the head of Wallace still stood. Two other brothers of Bruce, Thomas and Alexander (dean of Glasgow), met the same fate at Carlisle. There were many minor victims, but the chronicler of Lanercost notes that the number of those who wished Bruce to be confirmed in the kingdom increased daily. While thus wreaking his vengeance Edward himself was summoned by death at Burgh-on-the-Sands, on the Solway,

on 7th June 1307. By his dying wish the inscription "Fdwardus Primus, Scotorum Malleus, Pactum Serva" was put on his tomb, In a moment all was changed. Instead of being opposed to the greatest, Bruce now had as his antagonist the feeblest of the Plantagenets. Quitting Rathlin (after a short stay in Arran), Bruce had before Edward's death attempted to take Turnberry and Ayr, but had failed, though he defeated Pembroke at Loudoun Hill. No sooner was his father dead than Edward I. recalled his banished favourite Gaveston. After wasting the critical moment of the war in the diversions of a youthful court, the new king made an inglorious march to Cumnock and back without striking a blow, and then returned south to celebrate his marriage with Isabella of France, leaving the war to a succession of generals. Bruce, with the insight of military genius, seized his opportunity. Leaving Edward, now his only brother in blood and almost his equal in arms, in Galloway, he suddenly trans- ferred his own operations to Aberdeenshire. In the end of 1307 and again in May 1308 he overran Buchan, where at Inverury on 22d May he defeated its earl, one of his chief Scottish opponents. Then crossing to Argyll he surprised Lord Lorn in the Pass of Brander and took Dunstaffnage. In 1309 a truce, scarcely kept, was effected by the pope and Philip of France, and in 1310, in a general council at Dundee, the clergy of Scotland—all the bishops being present—recognized Bruce as king. The support given him by the national church in spite of his excom- munication must have been of great importance in that age, and was probably due to the example of Lamberton. The next three years were signalized by the reduction one by one of the strong places the English still held,—Lin- lithgow in the end of 1310, Dumbarton in October 1311, Perth by Bruce himself in January 1312. Encouraged by these successes, he made a raid into the north of England, and on his return reduced Butel (in Galloway), Dumfries, and Dalswinton, and threatened Berwick. In March 1313 Sir James Douglas surprised Roxburgh, and Randolph surprised Berwick. In May Bruce was again in England, and, though he failed to take Carlisle, he subdued the Isle of Man. Edward Bruce about the same time took Ruther- glen and laid siege to Stirling, whose governor, Mowbray, agreed to capitulate if

not relieved before 24th June 1314. Bruce's rapidity of movement was one cause of his success. His sieges, the most difficult part of medizeval warfare, though won sometimes by stratagem, prove that he and his followers had benefited from their early training in the wars of Edward I. We know that he had been specially employed by that king to prepare the siege-train for his attack on Stirling. By the close of 1813 Berwick and Stirling alone remained English. Edward IT. felt that if Scotland was not to be lost a great effort must be made. With the whole available feudal levy of England, a con- tingent from Ireland, and recruits even out of jails —for murderers were pardoned on condition of joining the army —he advanced from Berwick to Falkirk, which he reached n 22d June. After a preliminary skirmish on Sunday the 23d, in which Bruce distinguished himself by a per- sonal combat with Henry de Bohun, whom he felled by a single blow of his axe, the battle of Bannockburn was fought on Monday the 24th; and the complete rout of the English determined the independence of Scotland and confirmed the title of Bruce. The details of the day, memorable in the history of war as well as of Scotland, have been singularly well preserved, and redound to the credit of Bruce, who had studied in the school of Wallace as well as in that of Edward I. He had chosen and knew his ground,—the New Park between St Ninian's and the Bannock, a petty burn, yet sufficient to produce marshes dangerous to heavily-armed horsemen, while from

the rising ground on his right the enemy's advance was seen. His troops were in four divisions; his brother com- manded the right, Randolph the centre, Douglas the left. Bruce with the reserve planted his standard at the Bore Stone, whence there is the best view of the field. His camp-followers on the Gillies' Hill appeared over its crest at the critical, moment which comes in all battles. The plain on the right of the marshes was prepared with pits and spikes. But what more than any other point of strategy made the fight famous was that the Scots fought on foot in battalions with their spears outwards, in a cir- cular formation serving the same purpose as the modern square. A momentary success of the English archers was quickly reversed by a flank movement of Sir Robert Keith. The Scottish bowmen followed up his advantage, and the fight became

general ; the English horse, crowded into too narrow a space, were met by the steady resist- ance of the Scottish pikemen, who knew Bruce told them truly that they fought for their country, their wives, their children, and all that freemen hold dear. The English rear was unable to come up in the narrow space or got entangled in the broken ranks of the van. The first re- pulse soon passed into a rout, and from a rout into a headlong flight, in which Edward himself barely escaped. Like Courtrai and Morgarten, Bannockburn marked the momentous change from medieval to modern warfare. The armed knights gave place to the common soldiers led by skilful generals as the arbiters of the destiny of nations. In the career of Bruce it was the turning-point. The enthusiasm of the nation he had saved forgot his late adhesion to the popular cause, and at the parliament of Ayr on 25th April 1315 the succession was settled by a unanimous voice on him, and, failing males of his body, on his brother Edward and his heirs male, failing whom on his daughter Marjory and her heirs, if she married with his consent. Soon after she married Walter the Steward.

The last part of Bruce's life, from 1315 to 1329, began with an attempt which was the most striking testimony that could have been given to the effect of Bannockburn, and which, had it succeeded, might have altered the future of the British Isles. This was no less than the rising of the whole Celtic race, who had felt the galling yoke of Edward I. and envied the freedom the Scots had won. In 1315 Edward Bruce crossed to Ireland on the invita- tion of the natives, and in the following year the Welsh became his allies. In autumn Robert came to his brother, and they together traversed Ireland to Limerick. Dublin was saved by its inhabitants committing it to the flames, and, though nineteen victories were won, of which that at Slane in Louth by Robert was counted the chief, the success was too rapid to be permanent. The brothers retreated to Ulster, and, Robert having left Ireland to protect his own borders, Edward was defeated and killed at Dundalk in October 1318. On his return Bruce ad- dressed himself to the siege of Berwick, a standing menace to Scotland. While preparing for it two cardinals arrived in England with a mission from Pope John XXII. to effect a truce, or, failing that, to renew the excommunication of Bruce. The cardinals did not trust themselves across the border; their messengers, however, were courteously received by Bruce, but with a firm refusal to admit the bulls

into his kingdom because not addressed to him as king, Another attempt by Newton, guardian of the Friars Minor at Berwick, had a more ignominious result. Bruce admitted Newton to his presence at Aldcamus, where he might see the works for the siege going on by night and day, and was informed that Bruce would not receive the bulls until his title was acknowledged and he had taken Berwick. On his return Newton was waylaid and his papers seized, not without suspicion of Bruce's connivance.

ROB

In March 1318 first the town and then the castle of Berwick capitulated, and Bruce wasted the English border as far as Ripon. In December he held a parliament at Scone, where he displayed the same wisdom asa legislator which he had shown as a general. The death of his brother and his daughter rendered a resettlement of the crown advisable, which was made in the same order as before, with a provision as to the regency in case of a minor heir in favour of Randolph, and failing him Douglas. The defence of the country was next cared for by regula- tions for the arming of the whole nation, down to every one who owned the value of a cow,—a measure far in ad- vance of the old feudal levy. Exports during war and of arms at any time were prohibited. Internal justice was regulated, and it was declared that it was to be done to poor and rich alike. Leasing-making—a Scottish term for seditious language—was to be sternly punished. The nobles were exhorted not to oppress the commons. Reforms were also made in the tedious technicalities of the feudal law. In 1319 an attempt to recover Berwick was repelled by Walter the Steward, and Bruce took occasion of a visit to compliment his son-in-law and raise the walls 10 feet.

His position was now so strong that foreign states began to testify their respect. Bruges and Ypres rejected a request of Edward to cut off the Scottish trade with Flanders. The pope, who had excommunicated Bruce, was addressed by the parliament of Arbroath in 1320 in a letter which compared Bruce to a Joshua or Judas Maccabzeus, who had wrought the salvation of his people, and declared they fought 'not for glory, truth, or honour, but for that liberty which no virtuous man will survive." Moved

by this language and conscious of the weakness of Edward, the pope exhorted him to make peace with Scotland, and three years later Randolph at last procured the recognition of Bruce as king from the papal see by promising aid in a crusade. Jn 1326 the French king made a similar acknowledgment by the treaty of Corbeil. Meantime hostilities more or less constant continued with England, but, though in 1322 Edward made an incursion as far as Edinburgh, the fatal internal weakness of his government prevented his gaining any real success. Some of his chief nobles—Lancaster in 1321 and Sir Andrew Hartcla in 1322—entered into correspondence with the Scots, and, though Hartcla's treason was detected and punished by his death, Edward was forced to make a treaty for a long truce of thirteen years at Newcastle on 30th May, which Bruce ratified at Berwick. The intrigue of the queen with Roger Mortimer led to the end of the ignominious reign by Edward's deposition and murder in 1327; and one of the first acts of the new reign, after a narrow escape of the young king from capture by Randolph, was the treaty of York, ratified at Northampton in April 1328, by which it was agreed that "Scotland, according to its ancient bounds in the days of Alexander JIL. should remain to Robert, king of Scots, and his heirs free and divided from England, without any subjection, servitude, claim or demand whatsoever." Johanna, Edward's sister, was to be given in marriage to David, the infant son of Bruce, and the ceremony was celebrated at Berwick on 12th July.

The chief author of Scottish independence barely survived his work. His last years had been spent chiefly at the castle of Cardross on the Clyde, which he acquired in 1326, and the conduct of war, as well as the negotiations for peace, had been left to the young leaders Randolph and Douglas, whose training was one of Bruce's services to his country. Ever active, he employed himself in the narrower sphere of repairing the castle and improving its domains and gardens, in shipbuilding on the Clyde, and in the exercise of the royal virtues of hospitality and charity. The reli-

gious feeling, which had not been absent even during the struggles of manhood, deepened in old age, and took the form the piety of the times

prescribed. He made careful provision for his funeral, his tomb, and masses for his soul. He procured from the pope a bull authorizing his confessor to absolve him even at the moment of death. He died from leprosy, contracted in the hardships of earlier life, on 7th June 1329, and was buried at Dunfermline beside his second wife, Elizabeth de Burgh, whom he had married about 1304, and who bore him late his only son, David, who succeeded him, Of two surviving daughters, Matilda married Thomas Ysaak, a simple esquire, and Margaret became the wife of William, earl of Sutherland. Marjory, an only child by his first wife, Isabella of Mar, had pre- deceased him. Several children not born in wedlock have been traced in the records, but none of them became in

any way famous.

In fulfilment of a vow to visit the Holy Sepulchre, which he could not accomplish in person, Bruce requested Douglas to carry his heart there, but his faithful follower perished on the way, fight- ing in Spain against the Moors, and the heart of Bruce, recovered by Sir William Keith, found its resting-place at Melrose. When his corpse was disinterred in 1819 the breast-bone was found severed to admit of the removal of the heart, thus confirming the story pre- served in the verses of Barbour. That national poet collected in the earliest Scottish poem, written in the reign of Bruce's grandson, the copious traditions which clustered round his memory. It is a panegyric ; but history has not refused to accept it asa genuine representation of the character of the great king, in spirit, if not in every detail. Its dominant note is freedom—the liberty of the nation from foreign bondage, and of the individual from oppression. It is the same note which Tacitus cmbodied in the speech of Galgacus at the dawn of Scottish history. Often as it fe been heard before and since in the course of history, seldom has it had a more illustrious champion than Robert the Bruce. (45. M.)

ROBERT, the name of two dukes of Normandy. See NorMANDY, vol. xvii. p..542 for Ropert I. (d. 1035) and p. 544 for Ropert JI. (d. 1134); see also ENGLAND, vol. vill. p. 301,

ROBERT, Huzert (1753-1808), born at Paris in 1753, deserves to be remembered not so much for his skill as a painter as for the liveliness and

point with which he treated the subjects he painted. The contrast between the ruins of ancient Rome and the life of his time excited his keenest interest ; and, although he had started for Italy on his own responsibility, the credit he there acquired procured him the protection of the minister Marigny and an official allowance. His incessant activity as an artist, his daring character, his many adventures, attracted general sympathy and admiration. In the fourth canto of his Z' Imagination Delille celebrated Robert's miraculous escape when lost in the catacombs ; later in life, when imprisoned during the Terror and marked for the guillotine, by a fatal accident another died in his place and Robert lived. The quantity of his work is immense; the Louvre alone contains nine paintings by his hand and specimens are frequently to be met with in provincial museums and private collections. In spite of a certain naturalness in details which was wanting to his predecessor Panini, all Robert's work has more or less of that scenic character which justified the taste of Voltaire when he selected him to paint the decora- tions of his theatre at Ferney. Robert fell, struck by apoplexy, on 15th April 1808. His brush was in his hand; he had painted till the last moment. He was much en- graved by the abbé Le Non, with whom he had visited Naples in the company of Fragonard during his early days ; in Italy his work has also been frequently reproduced by Chatelain, Liénard, Le Veau, and others.

See C. Blanc, Hist. des Peintres; Villot, Notice des Tableauzx du Louvre ; Julius Meyer, Gesch. mod. fr. Maleret.

ROBERT, Louis L&opotp (1794-1835), French painter, was born at Chaux de Fonds (Neufchatel) in Switzerland on 13th May 1794, but left his native place with the en-

graver Girardet at the age of sixteen for Paris. He was on the eve of obtaining the great prize for engraving when the events of 1815 blasted his hopes, for Neufchatel was restored to Prussia and Robert was struck off the list of competitors as a foreigner. Having fortunately whilst continuing his studies under Girardet never ceased to frequent the studio of David, he now determined to be- come a painter, and only returned to his native country when his master himself was exiled. At Neufchatel he

had the good fortune to attract the notice of Roullet de Mezerac, who enabled him by a timely loan to proceed to Rome. At Rome Robert soon struck the vein of subject destined to render his talent celebrated. In depicting the customs and life of the people, of southern Italy especially, he showed peculiar feeling for the historical characteristics of their race, All his work of this class was distinguished by an individual style: the actors bore themselves with an air of distinction and something of gravity which witnessed to their ancient lincage, and the rhythmical play of line which characterized all these compositions had a peculiar affinity to the nature of the types which figured in them. The charm of choice in these types, the beauty of this play of line, and the plastic restraint and measure which also marked Robert's treatment of his favourite subjects were the points to which he owed the wide recognition of his talent, for his command of his own powers was anything but ready and his difficulty in bringing out what he desired to produce shackled him, and especially so because paint- ing requires a sure and ready hand if its means are to be used with brilliant effect. After executing many detached studies of Italian life Robert conceived the idea of paint- ing four great works which should represent at one and thc same time the four seasons in Italy and the four lead- ing races of its people. In the Return from the Féte of the Madonna dell' Arco (Louvre) he depicted the Neapol- itans and the spring. This picture, exhibited at the Salon of 1827, achieved undoubted success and was bought for the Luxembourg by Charles X.; but the work which ap- peared in 1831——the Summer Reapers arriving in the Pontine Marshes (Louvre), which became the property of Louis Philippe — established the artist's reputation, an' Robert found himself with all his hopes of honour fulfilled and reckoned as one of the leading masters of his day. Florence and her autumn vineyards should now have furnished him with his third subject. He attempted to begin it, but, unable to conquer his unhappy passion for Princess Charlotte Napoleon (then mourning the violent death of her husband, Robert's devoted friend), he threw up his work and went to Venice, where he began and carried through the fourth of the series, the Fishers of the Adriatic. This work was not equal to the Reapers. Worn by the vicissitudes of painful feeling and bitterly discouraged, Robert committed suicide before his easel, 20th March 1835, on the tenth anniversary of the melan- choly suicide of a brother to whom he had been much attached.

See Villot, Notice des Tableau dw Louvre; C. Blanc, Hist. des Peintres; Feuillet de Conches, Correspondance de L. L. Robert; Julius Meyer, Gesch. mod. fr. Maleret.

ROBERT or GroucestEr, an English antiquary and historical writer, who lived in the second half of the 13th century, was a monk of the abbey at Gloucester, and is supposed by Hearne, the editor of his Chronicle, to have been sent to preside over the foundation at Oxford (after- wards Worcester College), where the younger members of the abbey were partly educated. This, however, is mere conjecture. The evidence which establishes his claim to be the author of the Chronicle (by which he is best known) is also extremely slight. In the Harleian MS. 201 (from which Hearne printed his edition) there occurs (fol. 159b

ROB

place on 11th August 1297.

oy to 160) an account of the battle of Evesham. The narra- tion implies that the writer was living at that time (1265),

for he describes the dark and dismal weather that pre vailed on the day of the battle, adding, "This isci Roberd,

That verst this boc made,"—a passage, however, which may possibly have reference not to the versifier but to the original compiler of the Chronicle! The period at which the Chronicle was composed was evidently late in the 13th or early in the 14th century, as it contains a reference to the canonization of St Louis, king of France, which took From an historical point of view, however, the Chronicle is of but little value. The

internal evidence shows it to have been a translation from

the French and the original in turn to have been a mere compilation. The narrative commences with a description of Britain, taken from Henry of Huntingdon; the material is next derived mainly from Geoffrey of Monmouth, and then, again, from William of Malmesbury, special

informa- tion being supplied, here and there, from Henry of Hunt-ingdon, Ailred of Rievaulx, and the Annals of Winchester.

On the other hand, the value of the Chronicle as an illustration of the versification and language of the period is considerable. As a writer of English verse Robert comes first in order, being prior

to both Robert of Brunne and Laurence Minot, and he has accord-

ingly been styled the Ennius of English literature. His diction, again, affords many interesting points of comparison with that

known as Old English on the one hand and the language of

Chaucer and William Tyndale on the other. In his verses we first find the term "Saxons" used in opposition to Normans (Hcarne, p. 363), although " English" is the term by which, throughout the Chronicle, the original population is more generally designated. Of the English tongue itself, however, he says (zb., p. 125) that "(te Saxones speche it was, and porw hem ycome yt ys." Many

of the most noteworthy peculiarities of his diction will be found pointed out in Mr. Kingdon Oliphant's Old and Middle English, pp. 430-439.

Other compositions attributed to Robert of Gloucester are—a Life of St Alban in verse (MS. Ashmole, 43), a Life of St Patrick, also in verse (MS. Tanner, 17), a Life of St Bridget (MS. C. C.C. Camb., 145), and a Life of St Alphege (MS. Cott. Julius, Dax.)

The only complete edition of the Chronicle is that edited by Thomas Hearne – (Oxford, 1724), 2 vols. 8vo, partly from the Harleian MS. 201, and partly from the Cottonian MS. Calig. A. xi., and reprinted at London in 1810, 2 vols. 8vo. This, however, is extremely defective, Hearne's collation of the important MS. in the library of the college of Arms being very imperfect. For further fre aia see llardy's Descriptive Catalogue of MSS., ill. 181-189, i. 25, 68,

ROBERT GUISCARD (c. 1015-1085), duke of Apulia and Calabria, sixth of the twelve sons of Tancred de Hauteville, was born at Hauteville near Coutances in Normandy about the year 1015. At an early age he followed into Apulia his three elder brothers William Bras- defer, Drogo, and Humphrey, who had established a foot- ing there as military adventurers ; and in 1053 he took a prominent part in the battle of Civitella, which resulted in the defeat and captivity of Pope Leo IX. On the death of Humphrey in 1057 Robert, who already had earned the sobriquet of "Guiscard" ("Sagacious" or Cunning"), sueceeded to the chief command of the Norman troops, and, already designated by them duke of Apulia and Calabria, was confirmed in that title in 1059 by Pope Nicholas II., who at the same time named him gonfalonier of the church. For the next one-and-twenty years he was continually engaged, along with his youngest brother Roger, in warlike operations against the Greeks and Saracens in the south of the Italian peninsula and in Sicily, the principal events being the capture of Bari in 1070, that of Palermo in the following year, and that of Salerno in 1077. In 1081 he felt himself strong enough to carry his arms abroad against Alexius Commenus, ostensibly on behalf of the deposed emperor Michael Ducas, the father-in-law of his daughter. The defeat of Alexius under the walls of Durazzo in October 1081 was followed by the capture of that place in February 1082, Mb, ee ee eee

1 There were others known by the same name; see Hearne, Pref., p. 58.

and by a victorious march towards Constantinople. But before Robert had reached the capital he was summoned back by Gregory VII, his suzerain, to rescue him from the emperor Henry IV., by whom he was being besieged in Rome. After capturing and sacking the city in May 1084 and conducting Gregory to a place of safety in Salerno, Guiscard resumed his operations against Alexius, defeating the united Greek and Venetian fleets, and raising the siege of Corfu in November 1084. While still engaged in active warfare he died of pestilence at Cephalonia on 17th July 1085. He was succeeded in the dukedom by his younger son Roger Bursa, whose son William died without issue in 1127. Guiscard's eldest son was Marc , BOHEMOND (¢..).

ROBERTS, Davip (1796-1864), landscape painter, was

born at Stockbridge, Edinburgh, on 24th October 1796. At an early age he manifested a great love for art; but his father, a shoemaker, wished him to follow the same trade. He was, however, apprenticed for seven years to a painter and house-decorator ; and during this time he employed is evenings in the earnest study of art. For the next few years his time was divided between work as a house-painter and as a scene-painter, and he even appeared occasionally on the boards as an actor in panto- mimes. In 1820 he formed the acquaintance of Clarkson Stanfield, then painting at the Pantheon, Edinburgh, by whose advice and example he greatly profited and at whose suggestion he began his career as an exhibitor, sending three pictures in 1822 to the "Exhibition of Works by Living Artists," held in Edinburgh. In the same year he removed to London, where he worked for the Coburg Theatre, and was afterwards employed, along with Stanfield, at Drury Lane. In 1824 he exhibited at the British Institution a view of Dryburgh Abbey, and sent two works to the first exhibition of the Society of British Artists, which he had joined, and of which he was elected president in 1831. ' In the same autumn he visited Normandy, and the works which were the results of this excursion began to lay the foundation of the artist's reputation,—one of them, a view of Rouen Cathedral, being sold for eighty guineas. By his scenes for an opera entitled The Seraglio, executed two years later, he won much contemporary praise, and these, along with the scenery for a pantomime dealing with the naval victory of Navarino, and two panoramas executed jointly by him and Stanfield, were among his last work for the theatres. In 1829 he exhibited his imposing subject the Departure of the Israelites from Egypt, a commission from Lord Northwick, in which the style of the painter first becomes clearly apparent ; and three years afterwards he travelled in Spain, and passed over to Tangiers, return- ing in the end of 1833 with a supply of effective sketches, which were speedily elaborated into attractive and popular paintings. His Interior of Seville Cathedral was exhibited in the British Institution in 1834, and sold for £300 ; and he executed a fine series of Spanish illustrations for the Landscape Annual of 1836, a publication to which he con- tributed for four years; while in 1837 a selection of his Picturesque Sketches in Spain was reproduced by

litho- graphy, many of the subjects being carefully retouched on the stone by the artist's own hand.

In 1838 Roberts made a long tour in the East, sailing up the Nile, visiting Luxor and Karnak, and afterwards mnaking his way to the Holy Land. He thus accumulated a vast collection of sketches of a class of scenery which had hitherto been hardly touched by British artists, and which appealed to the public with all the charm of novelty. The next ten years of his life were mainly spent in elaborat- ing these materials. Many Eastern subjects were painted, and an extensive series of drawings was lithographed by Louis Haghe in the superb work, Sketches in the Holy

Land and Syria, 1842-49. In 1851, and again in 1853, Roberts visited Italy, painting the Ducal Palace, Venice, bought by Lord Londesborough, the interior of the Basi- lica of St Peter's, Rome, Christmas Day, 1853, and Rome from the Convent of St Onofrio, presented to the Royal Scottish Academy. His last volume of illustrations, Jtaly, Classical, Historical, and Picturesque, was published in 1859. He also executed, by command of the queen, a picture of the opening of the Great Exhibition of 1851, a laborious and rather uncongenial task. In 1839 he was elected an associate, and in 1841 a full member of the Royal Academy ; and in 1858 he was presented with the freedom of the city of Edinburgh. The last years of his life were occupied with a series of views of London from the Thames. He had executed six of these and was at work upon a picture of St Paul's Cathedral, when on 25th November 1864 he was seized with an attack of apoplexy and expired the same evening.

The quality of Roberts's work is exceedingly equal and uniform during his whole career. The architecture, which is so prominent a feature in his paintings, is introduced with great picturesqueness and an easy command of its salient points, but with little care for the minutie of detail. His art was conventional, essentially scenic and spectacular in character, showing effective composition and an unerring instinct for broad general effect, but destitute of that close adherence to nature, that delicacy and truth of tone and colour, which are becoming increasingly characteristic of the productions of the English school. Something of the scenc-painter

appears in all his works, and his certainty and speed of execution were un- doubtedly founded upon his carly practice for the stage.

A Life of Roberts, compiled from his journals and other sources by James Ballantine, with etchings and pen-and-ink sketches by the artist, appeared in Edinburgh in 1866.

ROBERTSON, Freperick Wittram (1816-1853), one of the most brilliant and influential preachers of modern times, was born in London, on 3d February 1816. The first five years of his life were passed at Leith Fort, where his father, a captain in the Royal Artillery, was then resi- dent. The impressions made upon the child in those early years were never effaced ; the military spirit entered into his blood, and throughout life he was characterized by the qualities of the ideal soldier,—courage, self-devotion, sense of duty, hatred of cruelty and meanness, chivalrous defence of the weak. In 1821 Captain Robertson retired to Beverley, where the boy was educated first at home, then at the grammar-school. At the age of fourteen he spent a year at Tours, from which he returned to Scotland and continued his education at the Edinburgh Academy and university. His father, who had remarked and fostered his singular nobility of character, his passion for purity and truthfulness, and his deepening religious feeling, now proposed that he should choose the church as his profes- sion, but received the decisive answer, "Anything but that ; I am not fit for it." At the age of eighteen he was accordingly articled to a solicitor in Bury St Edmunds, but the uncongenial and sedentary employment broke down his health in a year's time. It was then resolved to yield to his deep-rooted craving for a military career: his name was placed upon the list of the 3d Dragoons then serving in India, and for two years he devoted himself with ardour to the work of preparing for the army. But, by a singular conjuncture of circumstances and at the sacrifice of his own natural bent to his father's wish, he matriculated at Braze- nose College, Oxford, just two weeks before his commis- sion was put into his hands. Oxford he did not find wholly congenial to his intensely earnest spirit, but he read hard, and, as he afterwards said, 'Plato, Aristotle, Butler, Thucydides, Sterne, Jonathan Edwards, passed like the iron atoms of the blood into my mental constitution." At the same time he made a careful study of the Bible, committing to memory the

entire New Testament both in English and in Greek. The Tractarian movement had no attraction for him, although he admired some of its

ROest kT s 0 N

full, vivid, and penetrating mind. He was not, indecd, a scientific theologian ; but his insight into the principles of the spiritual life is unrivalled ; and for men approaching the truth from the same side as himself he is an invaluable guide. His own lonely and in- dependent struggle had taught him where foothold was secure, and had enabled him to throw light on many a forgotten stepping-stone of truth. As his biographer says, thousands have found in his sermons "a living source of impulse, a practical direction of thought, a key to many of the problems of theology, and above all a path to spiritual freedom." In his hands spiritual facts assume an aspect of reasonableness which is irresistible. Religion is felt to be no longer a mystery for the cxercise of professional minds, nor an extravagance suitable for enthusiastic temperaments, but an essen- tial of life for all, and in line with the order of things in which we now are. For his sermons obtained their large circulation partly because they were new in kind. They marked the transition from the period in which religion was treated as a series of propositions

598

leaders. He was at this time a moderate Calvinist in doc- trine and enthusiastically evangelical. Ordained in July 1840 by the bishop of Winchester, he at once entered on ministerial work in that city, and during his ministry there and under the influence of Martyn and Brainerd, whose lives he affectionately studied, he carried devotional asceticism to an injurious length, rising early, refraining from meat, subduing his nature by self-imposed austerities, and binding himself to a system of prayer. In less than a year he was compelled to seek relaxation; and going to Switzerland he there met and married Helen, third daughter of Sir George William Denys, Bart. Early in 1842, after a few months' rest, he accepted a curacy in

Cheltenham, which he retained for upwards of four years. "Tt was during this period that the basis of his theological science was entirely changed;

his principles of thought attained, but not as yet systematized ; his system of inter- preting the Bible reduced to order ; his whole view of the relation of God to man and man to God built up into a new temple on the ruins of the old." The questioning spirit was first aroused in him by the disappointing fruit of evangelical doctrine which he found in Cheltenham, as well as by intimacy with men of varied reading. But, if we are to judge from his own statement, the doubts which now actively assailed him had long been latent in his mind: "a man who had read theological and philosophical controversy long before with painful interest—a man who at different times had lived in the atmosphere of thought in which Jonathan Edwards, Plato, Lucretius, Thomas Brown, Carlyle, Emerson, and Fichte lived—who has steeped his soul and memory in Byron's strongest feel- ings—who has walked with Newman years ago to the brink of an awful precipice, and chosen rather to look upon it calmly, and know the worst of the secrets of the darkness, than recoil with Newman, in fear and tender- ness, back to the infallibility of Romanism—such a man is not likely to have been influenced by a few casual state- ments of difficulties which he had read of a thousand times before." This was written from Heidelberg in 1846. The crisis of his mental conflict had just been passed in Tyrol, and he was now beginning to let his creed grow again from the one fixed point which nothing had availed to shift: "the one great certainty to which, in the midst of the darkest doubt, I never ceased to cling —the entire symmetry and loveliness and the unequalled nobleness of the humanity of the Son of Man." After this mental revolution he felt unable to return to Cheltenham, but after doing duty for two months at St Ebbe's, Oxford, he entered in August 1847 on his famous ministry at Trinity Chapel, Brighton. Here he stepped at once into the foremost rank asa preacher. His church was thronged with thoughtful men of all classes in society and of all shades of religious belief, with those also who relished brilliant and sometimes impassioned oratory, and with those who felt their need of sympathetic and helpful teach- ing. But his closing years were full of sadness. His sensi- tive nature was subjected to extreme suffering, partly from the misconstruction and hatred of the society in which he lived, partly from his inability to accomplish the heavy work of his position. He was crippled by incipient disease of the brain, which at first inflicted unconquerable lassitude and depression, and latterly agonizing pam. On

the 5th June 1853 he preached for the last time; and on the 15th August of the same year, at the age of thirty-seven, he found relief in death.

The causes of his success as a preacher are obvious. His fine ap- pearance, his flexible and sympathetic voice, his manifest sincerity, the perfect lucidity and artistic symmetry of his address, and the brilliance with which he illustrated his points would have attracted hearers even had he had little to say. But he had much to say. No sermons were ever more compact. They were the utterance of a

to that in which it is presented as an essence penetrating the whole of human life. The accusations of heretical and dangerous teaching

which were persistently brought against him, though possibly not so malignant as he himself supposed, were certainly more mis-

chievous than the teaching against which they were levelled. Few men have ever more perfectly understood the spirit of Christ, and

few have so fully made that spirit their own.

Robertson's literary remains include five volumes of sermons, two volumes of expository lectures, on Genesis and on the Epistles to the Corinthians, a volume of miscellaneous addresses, and a Key to 'In Memoriam. Robertson's Life has been written by Stopford A. Brooke. (M. D.)

ROBERTSON, THomas Witt1am (1829-1871), English dramatist, was born on 9th January 1829. Asa dramatist he had a brief but very brilliant career. It is not too much to say that he was the most successful and distin- guished writer of plays in his generation. The son of a provincial actor and manager, chief of a "circuit" that ranged from Bristol to Cambridge, Robertson was familiar with the stage from his childhood ; but it was not till the last seven years of his life that he made his mark. He was never, as he admitted himself, very successful as an actor. He tried his hand also at writing plays, and a farcical comedy by him, A Wight's Adventure, was produced at the Olympic under Farren's management as early as 1851. But this did not make good his footing, and he remained

for some years longer in the provinces, varying his work as an actor with miscellaneous contributions to newspapers. In 1860 he went to London with the inten- tion, it is said, of making his living by journalism and light literature. He edited a mining journal and con- tributed to it a novel afterwards dramatized with the title Shadow Tree Shaft. He wrote a farce entitled A Cantad, which was played at the Strand in 1861. Then, in 1864, came his first marked success, David Garrick, produced at the Haymarket with Sothern in the principal character. It was not, however, till the production of Society at the Prince of Wales Theatre in 1865, under the management of Miss Marie Wilton, afterwards Mrs Bancroft, that the originality and cleverness of the dramatist were fully recognized. Play-writer and company were exactly suited one to another; the plays and the acting together—the small size of the playhouse being also in their favour —were at once recognized as a new thing, and, while some critics sneered at the "cup-and-saucer comedy," voted it absurdly realistic, said there was nothing in it but commonplace life represented without a trace of Sheridanian wit and sparkle, all London flocked to the little house in Totten- ham Street, and the stage was at once inundated with imi- tations of the new style of acting and the new kind of play.

Robertson, although his health was already undermined, followed up Society in quick succession with the series of characteristic plays which made the reputation of himself, the company, and the theatre. Ours was produced in 1866, Caste in 1867, Play in 1868, School in 1869, U.P. in 1870. For twenty years there probably has not been a week, hardly a night, in which some one of Robertson's plays has not been produced somewhere in Great Britain,

ROBERTS @N

and still they show no sign of abating popularity. The masterly stage-craft is undoubtedly one of the elements in this remarkable conquest of the play-going public; the purity and generous morality of the plays another; the dialogue—which is always bright and clever, without any straining after or indeed much attaining to wit—a third ; the humour, distinctness, and typical representativeness of the characters a fourth. That there is more art and individuality in the plays than critics at first were willing to

admit is clear from the fact that none of Robertson's numerous imitators have succeeded in catching his happy knack. Another proof of something like genius—dramatic genius if not literary genius—is the skill with which he repeats the same idea with such variations that each time it 1s as fresh as if it were new. Again and again his situations owe their point to the contrast between generous kindness of heart and sordid worldliness, or between the ardent trustful affections of youth and the cynicism of disenchanted middle age. Pleasant sunny brightness and ingenuity within a narrow range constitute Robertson's distinction rather than breadth or fertility or striking bril- liancy of wit. He knew his powers and worked steadily within them, not striving to go beyond. With the excep- tion of David Garrick and Home, written for the Hay- market, and Dreams for the Gaiety, all his well-known plays were written for the Prince of Wales Theatre, with which his distinctive style of comedy is identified. Un- happily he did not live long to enjoy his success, but died in London in February 1871.

ROBERTSON, Wituiam (1721-1793), an eminent Scottish historian, born at Borthwick, Midlothian, on the 19th September 1721, was the eldest son of the Rev. William Robertson and of Eleanor Pitcairn. He received his early education at the school of Dalkeith,—at that time one of the best in Scotland; but at the age of twelve he was removed to the university of Edinburgh, where he soon manifested that sustained ardour in the pursuit of knowledge which he preserved throughout his long life. On his commonplace books, written when he was a mere youth, he always inscribed the motto: Vita sine literis mors est. He was from the first intended for the ministry; when twe.icy-two years old he was presented to the living of Gladsmuir in East Lothian, and almost immediately afterwards he lost both his father and his mother, who died within a few hours of each other. The support and education of a younger brother and six sisters then de- volved upon him, and, though his income was only £100 a year, he sheltered them all in his house and "continued to educate his sisters under his own roof till they were settled respectably in the world" (Stewart). Robertson's inclination for study was never allowed to interfere with his duties as a parish minister, which he rather increased than diminished: "it was his custom during the summer months to convene on Sunday morning the youth of the parish of Gladsmuir half an

hour before the commence- ment of the regular service of the church, and to employ that time in explaining to them the doctrines of the Catechism." His attention to his pastoral duties and his power and distinction as a preacher had made him a local celebrity while still a young man.

His energy and decision of character were brought out vividly by the rebellion of 1745. When Edinburgh seemed in danger of falling into the hands of the rebels he laid aside the pacific habits of his profession and joined the volunteers in the capital, When the city was surrendered he was one of the small band who repaired to Haddington and offered their services to the com- mander of the royal forces. Such a man could not remain in obscurity, and in the year 1751, when not quite thirty years of age, we find him already taking a prominent part

in the business of the General Assembly. On the first occasion when he spoke (in seconding a motion by John Home for the suspension of certain presbyters who had refused to take part in an unpopular settlement) he was listened to with great attention, but his words had so little immediate effect on the assembly that on a division he was left in a minority of eleven against two hundred. A young man might well have been daunted by such a defeat, but his energy and self-reliance refused to yield. His great oratorical power, at once lucid, cogent, and per- suasive, had made an impression on men's minds, and within so short a period as one year, when he again advocated his principles in connexion with what is known as the Inverkeithing case, he carried the house completely with him, and with the deposition of Thomas Gillespie secured a triumph for the policy he had adopted. From that moment his influence in the councils of the Scottish Church as leader of the "moderate party " was for many years nearly supreme (compare PRESBYTERIANISM, vol. xix. p. 685). The production of Home's tragedy of Douglas on the Edinburgh stage (1757) afforded Robertson another occasion for displaying that union of courage and caution which formed a marked feature of his character. Al- though the influence of moderatism was now visibly in the ascendant, there was still enough of the older spirit of Scottish Puritanism left to take alarm and raise an outcry against a stage play written by a minister and

witnessed by many clergymen who were the author's friends. One of these, the famous Dr Alexander Carlyle, was prosecuted before the synod for having gone to the theatre, and he tells us in his Autobiography that he purposely contrived to exclude Robertson from the post of moderator because "his speaking would be of more consequence if not in the chair." This testimony is the more noteworthy as Carlyle shows throughout his memoirs a grudging and unfriendly tone when speaking of Robertson. The latter, indeed, was able to render his incriminated colleague great service on this occasion, not only by his talent as a speaker, but by reason of the detached and unassailable position which his customary prudence had led him to take up. He never went to the play himself, he said, but that was not because he thought it wrong but because he had given a solemn promise to his father never to do so. He could not there- fore join in censuring other clergymen who were held by no such vow as he had made: "it was sacred to him, but not obligatory on them." Carlyle was acquitted and Robertson had the credit—which he perhaps somewhat too constantly aimed at and generally secured—of standing well with all parties, of advocating the claims of culture and liberal sentiment without giving ground to their opponents for attacking his personal conduct and character.

But during all this period of prominent activity in the public life of Edinburgh Robertson was busy with those historical labours which have given him a permanent place in British literature. He had conceived the plan of his History of Scotland as early as the year 1753; in July 1757 he had proceeded as far as the Gowrie conspiracy, and in November of the following year David Hume, then residing in London, was receiving the proof-sheets from Strahan and making friendly but searching criticisms on the work in letters to the author, Till he had finished his book Robertson had never left his native country ; but the publication of his history necessitated a journey to London, and he passed the early months of the year 1758 partly in the capital and partly in leisurely rambles in the counties of England. Hereturned on horseback in company with Alexander Carlyle and other Scotsmen, riding all the way from London to Edinburgh in about eighteen days.

The success of the Listory of Scotland was immediate and splendid, and within a month a second edition was

called for. Before the end of the author's life the book had reached its fourteenth edition; and in the opinion of some it remains Robertson's greatest work. It soon brought him other rewards than literary fame. In 1759 he was appointed chaplain of Stirling Castle, in 1761 one of His Majesty's chaplains in ordinary, and in 1762 he was chosen principal of the university of Edinburgh. Two years latcr the office of king's historiographer was revived in his favour with a salary of £200 a year. His income greatly surpassed the revenue of any Presbyterian minister before him and at least equalled that of some of the bishops when Episcopacy was established in Scotland. It is the more surprising therefore that this moment of exceptional prosperity should have been chosen by some of his most valued friends to advise him to forsake the Scottish for the English Church and try for preferment south of the Tweed; and the surprise becomes wonder when we learn that those friends were Sir Gilbert Elliot and David Hume. The imprudence, to say nothing of the questionable morality, of such a step would seem too glaring to allow of its recommendation by any honourable well-wishers. Perhaps no man was more fitted than Robertson to measure and reject such injudicious advice, and he probably never gave the matter a second thought. He remained at home among his own people.

The rest of Robertson's life was uneventful to a degree even surpassing the proverbial uneventfulness of the lives of scholars. He was casting about for another historical subject in the very year in which his first work appeared, and he was wont to consult his friends on the choice of a period with a naiveté which shows how little the arduous- ness of historical research was then understood. Hume advised him to write a history of Greece or else lives in the manner of Plutarch. Dr John Blair urged him to write a complete history of England, while Horace Wal- pole suggested a history of learning. It must be recorded to Robertson's credit that he showed a preference from the first for the subject which he ultimately selected, 7'he History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles the

Fifth. He took uncommon pains with the work and devoted to it ten consecutive years of labour. It appeared in three volumes quaito in 1769. In 1777 he published his Z/istory of America and in 1791 his Disqwisition concerning the Knowledge which the Ancients had of India, which concluded his historical labours and appeared only two years before his death, which occurred near Edinburgh on the I1th June 1793. His fame had long been European, and he left no rival in the field of historical composition save Gibbon alone.

For an adequate appreciation of Robertson's position in British literature, and more especially of his rank as an historian, we have to consider the country and the age in which he was born and his own personal qualities and limits.

Considering the small size and poverty of the country, Scotland had made a more than creditable figure in litera- ture in the great age of the Reformation and the Renais- sance. Its scholars, civilians, and professors of logic and philosophy were welcomed wherever learning flourished, except, perhaps, in England. All Europe could not show a more brilliant writer and publicist than Buchanan, and "the best romance that ever was written" (the words are Cowper's) was produced by a Scottish contemporary of Shakespeare, viz., the once famous Argenis of John Barclay. But the early triumphs of Scottish genius were all won in a foreign if familiar idiom, the common language of the learned; and when Latin retreated before the growing importance of modern tongues the Scots had no literary vernacular on which to fall back. For a century and a half (1600-1750) a Scottish writer to be read was forced to

needful.

rORnERT SOW

use a foreign language,—Latin, English, and even occasion- ally French. As Burton! has well remarked, this alone was sufficient to account in a large measure for the hterary barrenness of the country. There was unquestionably another cause at work,—the fervent religious zeal with which the principles of the Reformation had been em- braced: neither science, literature, nor art could obtaim much attention from men who

regarded them all as " de- ceitful vanities," leading the mind away from the one thing In a small and sparsely peopled country, with- out wealth, commerce, or even politics in the larger sense, theology became a too absorbing and unique mental stimu- lus. This was, we may say, proved by the fact that as soon as the union with England opened a wider scope for Scottish energy and enterprise the theological temperature immediately fell,—a change witnessed with natural alarm by the more zealous clergy. "The rise of our too great fondness for trade," writes the Rev. Robert Wodrow in 1709, "to the neglect of our more valuable interests, I humbly think, will be written on our judgment" (Buckle, vol. ii, p. 301). The growth of wealth stimulated the

growth of the other great factor of civilization, that of knowledge, and by the middle of the 18th century, just

at the time when Robertson was planning his History of Scotland, a wide spirit of inquiry was abroad. Scottish intellect had risen from the tomb in which it had lain entranced for more than a hundred years. The Scottish contribution to British literature in the last half of the century is distinctly superior to that produced in the southern portion of the island. In philosophy and political

and economic science the balance is immensely in favour

of Scotland. Robertson was therefore no inexplicable prodigy—an "obscure Scotch parson" writing "hike a

minister of state," as it pleased Walpole and the London fops to regard him. He lived in a society far more pro- pitious to high literary work than could be found in London

or the English universities.

The connexion between philosophy and history is closer than appears at first sight. The study of man and his faculties, even ontological speculations as to the nature and origin of the universe, lead by a logical sequence to a consideration of human evolution in time, that is, to history. The coincidence of philosophical speculation with historical achievement

so repeatedly manifested can- not be accidental. The topic cannot be developed here ; but from the days of the Attic historians, who lived in an atmosphere electric with speculation, to the Hegelian historical school of Germany, the higher planes of history are found in near proximity to loftier peaks of philosophy. Hume, wonderful in all things, was perhaps most wonder- ful in this, that in him the two characters of the philo- sopher and the historian were completely united. He did not only, like Kant and Hegel, speculate about history ; he wrote it. Again, we must admire the peculiar fortune of Robertson : he lived during many years in close contact and intimacy with the greatest philosophic genius of his age, perhaps of modern times.

Of the three great British historians of the 18th century two were Scotsmen. The exact place of Robertson with regard to his two friends Hume and Gibbon, and to such historians as the rest of Europe had to offer, presents a question of some nicety, because it is complicated by extraneous considerations, so to speak, which should not weigh in an abstract estimate, but cannot be excluded in a concrete and practical one. If we regard only Robert- son's potential historic power, the question is not so much whether he was equal to either of his two friends as whether he was not superior to both. The man who wrote the review of the state of Europe prefixed to the

Y Wist. of Scotland, vol, viii. p. 544. J

History of Charles V., or even the first book of the History of Scotland, showed that he had a wider and more synthetic conception of history than either the author of the Decline and Fall or the author of the History of England. These two portions of Robertson's work, with all their short- comings in the eye of modern criticism, have a distinctive value which time cannot take away. He was one of the first to see the importance of general ideas in history. He saw that the immediate narrative of events with which he was occupied needed a background of broad and con- nected generalizations, referring to the social state of which the detailed history formed a part. But he did more than this. In the appendix to the view of Europe called "Proofs and Illustrations" he enters into the

difficult and obscure question of land tenure in Frankish times, and of the origin of the feudal system, with a sagacity and knowledge which distinctly advanced the comprehension of this period beyond the point at which it had been left by Du Bos, Montesquieu, and Mably. He was fully acquainted with the original documents,—many of them, we may conjecture, not easy to procure in Scotland. It must have been a genuine aptitude for historical research of a scientific kind which led Robertson to undertake the labour of these austere disquisitions of which there were not many in his day who saw the importance. Gibbon, so superior to him for wide reading and scholarship, has pointedly avoided them. It need hardly be said that many, perhaps the majority, of Robertson's views on this thorny topic are out of date now. But he deserves the honour of a pioneer in one of the most obscure if also important lines of inquiry connected with European history. On the other hand, it must be admitted that he showed himself only too tame a follower of Voltaire in his general appreciation of the Middle Ages, which he regarded with the mingled ignorance and prejudice common in the 18th century. In this particular he was not at all in advance of his age.

The neglect and gradual oblivion which are now over- taking the greater part of Robertson's historical work are owing to no fault of his. He had not and could not have the requisite materials: they were not published or access- ible. Justice requires that we should estimate his per- formance in view of the means at his command, and few critics would hesitate to subscribe to the verdict of Buckle, "that what he effected with his materials was wonderful." His style, whether of narrative or disquisition, is singularly clear, harmonious, and persuasive. The most serious re- proach made against it is that it is correct to a fault and lacks idiomatic vigour, and the charge is not without foundation. But there can be no doubt that, if Robertson's writings are less read than they formerly were, the fact is to be attributed to no defects of style but to the growth of knowledge and to the immense extension of historical research which has inevitably superseded his initiatory and meritorious labours. (gs. ©. MO.)

ROBERVAL, GiiiEs PERSONNE DE (1602-1675), French mathematician, was born at the village of Roberval near Beauvais in 1602. His name was originally Gilles Per- sonne, that of Roberval, by

which he is known, being taken from the place of his birth. Like Descartes, he was present at the siege of La Rochelle in 1627. In the same year le went to Paris, where he was appointed to the chair of philosophy in the Gervais College in 1631, and after- wards to the chair of mathematics in the Royal College of France. A condition of tenure attached to this chair was that the holder should propose mathematical questions for solution, and should resign in favour of any person who solved them better than himself; but, notwithstanding this, Roberval was able to keep the chair till his death, which occurred at Paris in 1675.

601

Roberval was one of those mathematicians who, just before the invention of the calculus, occupied their attention with problems which are only soluble, or can be most easily solved, by some method involving limits or infinitesimals, and in the solution of which accordingly the calculus is always now employed. Thus he devoted some attention to the quadrature of curves and the cuba- ture of surfaces, which- he accomplished, in some of the simpler cases, by a method of his own, called by himself the " Method of Indivisibles" ; but he lost much of the credit of the discovery as he kept his method for his own use, while Cavalieri published a similar method of his own. Another of Roberval's discoveries was a very general method of drawing tangents, by considering a curve as described by a moving point whose motion is the resultant of several simpler motions. His own description of his method may be translated as follows :—" General rule. By means of the specific properties of the curve, which will be given, examine the different motions of the tracing point at the place where you wish to draw the tangent; the direction of the tangent is that of the resultant of these motions." He also discovered a method of deriving one curve from another, by means of which finite areas can be obtained equal to the areas between certain curves and their asymptotes. To these curves, which were also applied to effect some quadratures, Torricelli gave the name of Robervallian lines. Between Roberval and Descartes there existed a feeling of ill-will, owing to the jealousy aroused in the mind of the former by the criticism which Descartes offered to some of the methods employed by him and by Fermat ; and this led him to criticize and oppose the new geometry which Descartes introduced about this time.

As results of Roberval's labours outside the department of pure mathematics may be noted a work on the system of the universe, in which he supports the Copernican system and attributes a mutual attraction to all par- ticles of matter; and also the invention of a special kind of balance which goes by his name (see BALANCE, vol. ili. p. 266).

ROBESPIERRE, Maximiren Marre Istpore (1758- 1794), the most fanatical and most famous of the repub- lican leaders of the French Revolution, was born at Arras on 6th May 1758. His family was of Irish descent, having emigrated from Ireland at the time of the Reformation on account of religion, and his direct ancestors in the male line had been notaries at the little village of Carvin near Arras from the beginning of the 17th century. His grand- father, being more ambitious, established himself at Arras as an avocat; and his father followed the same profession, marrying Mademoiselle Josephine Carraut, daughter of a brewer in the same city, in 1757. Of this marriage four children were born, two sons and two daughters, of whom Maximilien was the eldest ; but in 1767 Madame Derobes- pierre, as the name was then spelt, died, and the discon- solate widower at once left Arras and wandered about Europe until his death at Munich in 1769. The children were taken charge of by their maternal grandfather and aunts, and Maximilien was sent to the college of Arras, whence he was nominated in 1770 by the bishop of his native town to a bursarship at the Collége Louis-le-Grand at Paris. Here he had for fellow-pupils Camille Des- moulins and Stanislas Fréron. Completing his law studies with distinction, and having been admitted an avocat in 1781, Robespierre returned to his native city to seek for practice, and to struggle against poverty. His reputa- tion had already preceded him, and the bishop of Arras, M. de Conzié, appointed him criminal judge in the diocese of Arras in March 1782. This appointment, which he soon resigned, to avoid pronouncing a sentence of death, did not prevent his practising at the bar, and he speedily became known as a careful and painstaking advocate. His argument in the question of the legality of paraton- nerres or lightning-conductors, which was widely reported and translated into both English and German, raised his fame as an advocate to its height, and with this success his struggles against poverty were over. He now turned to the pleasures of literature and society and came to be esteemed as one of the best writers and most popular

dandies of Arras. In December 1783 he was elected a member of the academy of Arras, whose meetings he attended regularly ; and, like all other young Frenchmen with literary proclivities, he began to compete for the

prizes offered by various provincial academies. In 1784 he obtained a medal from the academy of Metz for his essay on the question whether the relatives of a condemned criminal should also be punished; but the prize was awarded to Lacretelle atné, an avocat and journalist at Paris, who triumphed again over his provincial antagonist in the Parisian press, and who in after days when Robes- pierre was all-powerful was surprised that he was not sent to the guillotine. An éloge on Gresset, the author of Vert-Vert and Le Méchant, written for the academy of Amiens in 1785, was not more successful; but Robespierre was compensated for these failures by his great popularity – in the society of the Rosati at Arras,—a little society whose members prided themselves on being men of fashion and wit, and spent one evening a week in conviviality and in read- ing poems, epigrams, and vers de société. There the sympa- thetic quality of Robespierre's voice, which afterwards did him such good service in the Jacobin Club, always caused his indifferent verses to be loudly applauded by his friends.

Such had been the life of the future republican leader up to 1788, when he took part in the discussion as to the way in which the states-general should be elected, showing clearly and forcibly in his Adresse & la Nation Artésienne that, if the former mode of election by the members of the provincial estates was again adopted, the new states- general would not represent the people of France. Necker also perceived this, and therefore determined to make the old royal bailliages and séné-chaussées the units of election. Under this plan the city of Arras was to return twenty- four members to the assembly of the bailliage of Artois, which was to elect the deputies. The corporation claimed the right to a preponderating influence in these city elec- tions, and Robespierre headed the opposition, making him- self very conspicuous and drawing up the cahier or table of

complaints and grievances, for the guild of the cobblers. Although the leading members of the corporation were elected, their chief opponent succeeded in getting elected with them. In the assembly of the bailliage rivalry ran still higher, but Robespierre had already made his mark in politics ; by the Avis aux Habitants de Campagne (Arras, 1789), which is almost certainly by him, he secured the support of the country electors, and, though but thirty years of age, poor, and without influence, he was elected fifth deputy of the tiers état of Artois to the states-general.

When the states-general met at Versailles on 5th May 1789, the young deputy of Artois already possessed the one faculty which was to lead him to supremacy : he was a fanatic. As Mirabeau said, "That young man believes what he says; he will go far." Without the courage and wide tolerance which make a statesman, without the greatest qualities of an orator, without the belief in himself which marks a great man, nervous, timid, and suspicious, Robespierre yet believed in the doctrines of Rousseau with all his heart, and would have gone to death for them; and in the belief that they would eventually succeed and regenerate France and mankind he was ready to work with unwearied patience. While the constituent assembly occupied itself in drawing up an unworkable constitu- tion as the grand panacea, Robespierre turned from the assembly of provincial avocats and wealthy bourgeois to the people of Paris. However, he spoke frequently in the constituent assembly, and often with great success, and was eventually recognized as second only to Pétion de Villeneuve—if second to him—asa leader of the small body of the extreme left,—the thirty voices, as Mirabeau con- temptuously called them. It is hardly necessary to exa- mine minutely Robespierre's speeches and behaviour before Li 91, when the death of Mirabeau left the way clear for the influence of his party; but what is noteworthy, as proving the religious cast of his mind and his belief in the

necessity of a religion, is that he spoke several times in favour of the lower clergy and laboured to get their pensions increased. When he instinctively felt that his doctrines would have no success in the assembly, he turned to the Jacobin Club, which had consisted originally of the

Breton deputies only, but which, after the assembly moved to Paris, began to admit among its members various leaders of the Parisian bourgeoisie. As time went on, many of the more intelligent artisans and petits commergants became members of the club, and among such men Robespierre found the hearers he sought. They did more than listen to him: they idolized him ; the fanatical leader had found fanatics to follow him, and their ultimate supremacy be- came merely a question of time. As the wealthier bour- geois of Paris and deputies of a more moderate type seceded to the club of '89 the influence of the old leaders of the Jacobins (Barnave, Duport, Charles de Lameth) diminished ; and, when they themselves, alarmed at the progress of the Revolution, founded the club of the Feuillants in 1791, the followers of Robespierre dominated the Jacobin Club. The death of Mirabeau strengthened Robespierre's influence in the assembly; but in May 1791 he proved his lack of statesmanlike insight and his jealous suspicion of his colleagues by proposing and carrying the motion that no deputies who sat in the constituent could sit in the succeeding assembly. The flight of the king on 21st June and his arrest at Varennes excited Robespierre's suspicions, and made him declare himself at the Jacobin Club to be "ni monarchiste ni republicain." But the vigorous conduct of Lafayette and the National Guard on the Champ de Mars on 17th July 1791 terrified him, for he believed that he was a predestined victim, until he was succoured by Duplay, a cabinetmaker in the Rue St Honoré, and an ardent admirer of his, in whose house he lived (with but two short intervals) till his death. At last came his day of triumph, when on 30th September, on the dissolution of the constituent assembly, the people of Paris crowned Pétion and himself as the two incorrupt- ible patriots.

On the dissolution of the assembly he returned for a short visit to Arras, where he met with a triumphant re- ception. In November he returned to Paris, and on 18th December made a speech which marks a new epoch in his life. Brissot, the dme politique of the Girondin party which had been formed in the legislative assembly, urged vehemently that war should be declared against Austria, and the queen was equally urgent in the hope that a vic- torious army might restore the old absolutism of the Bour- bons. Two men opposed the projects of the queen and the Girondins,—Marat and Robespierre: Marat opposed them for statesmanlike reasons

(see Marat), and Robes- pierre on humanitary grounds and because as a follower of Rousseau he disliked war. This opposition from those whom they had expected to aid them irritated the Giron- dins greatly, and from that moment began the struggle which ended in the coups @état of 31st May and 2d June 1793. Guadet accused Robespierre of superstition in be- lieving in a providence, and declared that, as the people's idol, he ought to ostracize himself for the good of his country. Robespierre persisted in his opposition to the war, and the Girondins, especially Brissot, attacked him so violently that in April 1792 he resigned the post of public prosecutor at the tribunal of Paris, which he had held since February, and started a journal, Le Defenseur de la Constitution, in his own defence. It is noteworthy that during the summer months of 1792, in which the fate of the Bourbon dynasty was being sealed, neither the Girondins in the legislative assembly nor Robespierre took any active part in overthrowing it. Stronger men with practical instincts of statesmanship, like Danton and

k OBES PIER RR &

PBillaud-Varenne, who were not afraid of blood, and who dared to look facts in the face and take the responsibility of doing while others were talking, were the men who made the 10th of August and took the Tuileries. The Girondins, however, were quite ready to take advantage of the accomplished fact ; and Robespierre, likewise, though shocked at the shedding of blood, was willing to take his seat on the commune of Paris, which had overthrown Louis XVI., and might check the Girondins. The strong men of the commune were glad to have Robespierre's assistance, not because they cared for him or believed in him, but because of the help got from his popularity, his reputation for virtue, and his influence over the Jacobin Club and its branches, which spread all over France. He it was who presented the petition of the commune of Paris on 16th August to the legislative assembly, demand- ing the establishment of a revolutionary tribunal and the summons of a convention. The massacres of September in the prisons, which Robespierre in vain attempted to stop, showed that the commune had more confidence in Billaud than in him. Yet, as a proof of his personal popularity, he was a few days later elected first deputy for Paris to the national convention.

On the meeting of the convention the Girondins im- mediately attacked Robespierre ; they were jealous of his popularity and knew that his single-hearted fanaticism would never forgive their intrigues with the king at the end of July, and would always be opposed to their plans for raising the duke of Orleans to the throne. As early as 26th September the Girondin Lasource accused him of aiming at the dictatorship ; afterwards he was informed that Marat, Danton, and himself were plotting to become triumvirs ; and eventually on 29th October Louvet attacked him in a studied and declamatory harangue, abounding in ridiculous falsehoods and obviously concocted in Madame Roland's boudoir. But Robespierre had no difficulty in rebutting this attack (5th November). All personal dis-putes, however, gave way by the month of December 1792 before the great question of the king's trial, and here Robespierre took up a position which is at least easily understood. These are his words spoken on 3d December: "This is no trial; Louis is not a prisoner at the bar; you are not judges; you are—you cannot but be statesmen, and the representatives of the nation. You have not to pass 'sentence for or against a single man, but you have to take a resolution on a question of the public safety, and to decide a question of national foresight. It is with regret that I pronounce the fatal truth ; Louis ought to perish rather than a hundred thousand virtuous citizens; Louis must die, that the country may live." This great question settled by the king's execution, the struggle between Robespierre and the Girondins entered upon a more acute stage, and the want of statesmanship among the latter threw upon the side of the fanatical Robespierre Danton and all those strong practical men who cared little for personal questions, and whose only desire was the victory of France in her great struggle with Europe. Had it been at all possible to act with that group of men of genius whom history calls the Girondins, Danton, Carnot, Robert Lindet, and even Billaud-Varenne would have sooner thrown in their lot with them than with Robespierre, whom they thoroughly understood ; but the Girondins, spurred on by Madame Roland, refused to have anything to do with Danton. Government became impossible; the federalist idea, which would have broken France to pieces in the very face of the enemy, grew and flourished, and the men of action had to take a decided part. In the month of May 1793 Camille Desmoulins, acting under the inspiration of Robespierre and Danton, published his Histoire des Brissotins and Brissot dévoilé ;

Isnard declared that Paris must be destroyed; Robespierre preached insurrection at the Jacobin Club; and on 31st May and 2d June the commune of Paris destroyed the Girondin party. For a moment it seemed as if France would avenge them; but patriotism was stronger than federalism. The defence of Lyons only exasperated the men who were working for France, and the armies who were fighting for her, and on 27th July 1793, when the struggle was practically decided, the convention elected Robespierre to the committee of public safety.

This election marks an important epoch, not only in the life of Robespierre, but in the history of the Revolution. Danton and the men of action had throughout the last two years of the crisis, as Mirabeau had in the first two years, seen that the one great need of France, if she was to see the end of her troubles without the interference of foreign armies, was the existence of a strong executive government. The means for establishing the much-needed strong executive were found in the committee of public safety. The success of this committee in suppressing the Norman insurrection had confirmed the majority of the convention in the expediency of strengthening its powers, and the committee of general security which sat beside it was also strengthened and given the entire management of the internal police of the country. When Danton, who had been a member of the committee from April to 10th July 1793, left it Robespierre was elected ; and it was not until then that he became one of the actual rulers of France. Indeed the committee was not finally constituted until the 13th of September, when the last two of the "great" twelve who held office until July 1794 were elected. Of these twelve at least seven, Carnot, Billaud-Varenne, Collot d'Herbois, Prieur (of the Marne), Prieur (of the Céte d'Or), Jean Bon Saint-André, and Robert Lindet, were essentially men of action, all of whom despised rather than feared Robespierre owing to his sup- posed timidity, and were entirely free from his influence. Of the other four Hérault de Séchelles was a professed adherent of Danton; Barére was an eloquent Provengal, who was ready to be the spokesman to the convention of any view which the majority of the committee might adopt; and only Couthon and Saint-Just shared Robes- pierre's political enthusiasm for the regeneration of

France by the gospel of Rousseau. It is necessary to dwell upon the fact that Robespierre was always in a minority in the great committee in order to absolve him from the blame of being the inventor of the enormities of the Terror, as well as to deprive him of the glory of the gallant stand made against Europe in arms.

After this examination of Robespierre's position it is not necessary to investigate closely every act of the great committee during the year which was pre-eminently the year of the Terror; the biographer is rather called upon to examine his personal position with regard to the estab- lishment of the Terror and the fall of the Hébertists and Dantonists, and then to dwell upon the last three months in which he stood almost alone trying to work up an effective counterbalance to the power of the majority of the great committee. The Terror was the embodiment of the idea of Danton, that it was necessary to have resort to extreme measures to keep France united and strong at home in order to meet successfully her enemies upon the frontier. This idea was systematized by the committee of public safety, or rather by two members of it acting for the majority, Billaud-Varenne and Collot d'Herbois, with- out much consideration as to who were to be the victims. With the actual organization of the Terror Robespierre had little or nothing to do; its two great engines, the revolu- tionary tribunal and the absolute power in the provinces of the representatives on mission, were in existence before he

joined the committee of public safety, and the laws of the maximum and of the suspects were by no means of his creation. The reason why he is almost universally regarded as its creator and the dominant spirit in the committee of public safety is not hard to discover. Men like Carnot and Billaud-Varenne were not conspicuous speakers in the convention, nor were they the idols of any section of the populace; but Robespierre had a fanatical following among the Jacobins and was admittedly the most popular orator in the: convention. His panegyrics on the system of revolutionary government and his praise of virtue led his hearers to believe that the system of-the Terror, instead of being monstrous, was absolutely laudable ; his pure life and admitted incorruptibility threw a

lustre on the com- mittee of which he was a member; and his colleagues offered no opposition to his posing as their representative and reflecting some of his personal popularity upon them so long as he did not interfere with their work. Moreover, he alone never left Paris, whilst all the others, except Barére, were constantly engaged on missions to the armies, the navy, and the provinces. It has been asserted that Robespierre, Couthon, and Saint-Just took upon them- selves the direction of "la haute politique," while the other members acted only in subordinate capacities; un- doubtedly it would have suited Robespierre to have had this believed, but as a matter of fact he was in no way especially trusted in matters of supreme importance.

After this explanation it may be said at once that Robespierre was not the author of the overthrow of the Dantonists and the Hébertists, though he thoroughly agreed with the majority and had no desire to save them, the principles of both parties being obnoxious to him. The Hébertists were communists in the true meaning of the word. They held that each commune should be self- governing, and, while admitting the right of a central authority to levy men and money for the purposes of the state, they believed that in purely internal matters, as well as in determining the mode in which men and money were to be raised, the local government ought to be supreme. This position of the Hébertists was of course obnoxious to the great committee, who believed that suc- cess could only be won by their retention of absolute power; and in the winter of 1794-95 it became obvious that the Hébertist party must perish, or its opposition to the committee would grow too formidable owing to its paramount influence in the commune of Paris. Robes- pierre shared his colleagues' fear of the Hébertist opinions, and he had a personal reason for disliking that party of atheists and sansculottes, since he believed in the necessity of religious faith, and was too much of a gentleman not to detest their imitation of the grossness that belongs to the lowest class of the populace. In 1792 he had indig- nantly thrown from him the cap of liberty which an ardent admirer had placed upon his head ; he had never pandered to the depraved tastes of the mob by using their language; and to the last day of his life he wore knee-breeches and silk stockings and wore his hair powdered. His position towards the Dantonist party was of a different character. After having seen established the strong executive he had

laboured for, and having moved the resolutions which finally consolidated the power of the committee of public safety in September 1793, Danton retired to his country house to enjoy the pleasures of domestic life. But to his retreat came the news of the means the committee used to maintain their supremacy. Danton was not a man who scrupled to shed blood when necessary, but he did not see that this continuous series of sacrifices on the guillotine was necessary ; hence he inspired Camille Desmoulins to protest against the Terror in the Vieux Cordelier, the noblest expression of revolutionary thought. Where is

this system of terror to end? what is the good of a tyranny comparable only to that. of the: Roman emperors as described by Tacitus? Such were the questions which Camille Desmoulins asked under Danton's inspiration. This "moderantism," as it was called, was as objectionable to the members of the great committee as the doctrines of the Hébertists. Both parties must' be crushed. Before the blows at the leaders of those two parties were struck, Robespierre retired for a month (from 13th February to 13th March 1794) from active business in the convention and the committee, apparently to consider his position ; but he came to the conclusion that the cessation of the Reign of Terror would mean the loss of that supremacy by which he hoped to establish the ideal of Rousseau, for Danton, he knew, was essentially a practical statesman and laughed at his ideas. He must have considered too that the result of his siding with Danton would probably have been fatal to himself. The result of his deliberations was that he abandoned Danton and co-operated in the attacks of the committee on the two parties. On the 15th of March he reappeared in the convention; on the 19th Hébert and his friends were arrested ; and on the 24th they were guillotined. On the 30th of March Danton, Camille Desmoulins, and their friends were arrested, and on the. 5th of April they too were guillotined.

It was not until after the execution of Danton that Robespierre began to develop a policy distinct from that of his colleagues in the great committee, an opposition which ended in his downfall. He began by using his influ- ence over the Jacobin Club to dominate the commune of Paris

through his devoted adherents, two of whom, Fleuriot- Lescot and Payan, were elected respectively mayor and pro- cureur of the commune. He also attempted to usurp the influence of the other members of the great committee over the armies by getting his young adherent, Saint-Just, sent on a mission to the frontier. In Paris Robespierre de- termined to increase the pressure of the Terror: no one should accuse him of moderantism ; through the increased efficiency of the revolutionary tribunal Paris should tremble before him as the chief member of the great committee ; and the convention should pass whatever measures he might dictate. To secure his aims, Couthon, his other ally in the committee, proposed and carried on the 10th of June the outrageous law of 22d Prairial, by which even the appear- ance of justice was taken from the tribunal, which, as no witnesses were allowed, became a simple court of condemna- tion. The result of this law was that between the 12th of June and the 28th of July, the day of Robespierre's death, no less than 1285 victims perished on the guillotine at Paris. But before this there had taken place in Robes- pierre's life an episode of supreme importance as illustrat- ing his character and his political aims: on the 7th of May he secured a decree from the convention recognizing the existence of the Supreme Being. In His honour a great féte was held on the 8th of June; Robespierre, as presi- dent of the convention, walked first and delivered his harangue, and as he looked around him he may well have believed that his position was secured and that he was at last within reach of a supreme power which should enable him to impose his belief on all France, and so ensure its happiness. The majority of the great committee found his popularity—or rather his ascendency, for as that in- creased his personal popularity diminished—useful to them, since by increasing the stringency of the Terror he strengthened the position of the committee, whilst attract- ing to himself, as occupying the most prominent position in it, any latent feeling of dissatisfaction at such stringency. Of the issue of a struggle between themselves and Robes- pierre they had little fear: they controlled the committee of general security through their alliance with its leaders,

Amar and Vadier; they were certain of obtaining a majority in the convention, for they knew that the chief deputies on the left or the

Mountain were Dantonists, who burned to avenge Danton's death ; while they felt sure also that the mass of the deputies of the centre or the Marsh could be hounded on against Robespierre if they were to accuse him of aiming at the dictatorship and pour on him the obloquy of having increased the Terror; and they knew finally that his actual adherents, though devoted to him, were few in number. The devotion of these admirers had been further excited by the news that a half-witted girl, named Cécile Renault, had been found wandering near his house, with a knife in her possession, intending to play the part of Charlotte Corday. She was executed on the 17th of June, on the very day that Vadier raised a laugh at Robespierre's expense in the convention by his report on the conspiracy of Catherine Théot, a mad woman, who had asserted that Robespierre was a divinity.

For a statesman to be laughed at in France is fatal to his power, and Robespierre himself felt that he must strike his blow now or never. Yet he was not sufficiently audacious to strike at once, as Payan and Coffinhal, the ablest of his adherents, would have had him do, but re- tired from the convention for some weeks, as he had done before the overthrow of the Hébertists and the Dantonists, to prepare his plan of action, This retirement seemed ominous to the majority of the great committee, and they too prepared for the struggle by communicating with the deputies of the Mountain, who were either friends of Danton or men of proved energy like Barras, Fréron, and Tallien. These weeks, the last of his life, Robespierre passed very peacefully, according to his wont all through the Revolution. He continued to live with the Duplays, with whose daughter Eléonore he had fallen in love, and used to wander with her and his favourite dog, a great Danish hound, named Bruant, in the Champs Elysées during the long summer evenings. At last, on the 26th of July, Robespierre appeared for the first time for more than four weeks in the convention and delivered a carefully studied harangue, which lasted for more than four hours, in which he declared that the Terror ought to be ended, that certain deputies who had acted unjustly and exceeded their powers ought to be punished, and that the committees of public safety and general security ought to be renewed. Great was the excitement in the convention : all wondered who were the deputies destined to be punished ; all were surprised that the Terror should be imputed as a fault to the very

comniittee of which Robespierre had been a member. The majority of the great committee determined to act promptly. The convention, moved by Robespierre's eloquence, at first passed his motions ; but he was replied to by Cambon the financier, Billaud-Varenne, Amar, and Vadier, and the convention rescinded their decrees and referred Robespierre's question to their committees. On the following day, the 27th of July, or in the revolution- ary calendar the 9th Thermidor, Saint-Just commenced to speak on behalf of the motions of Robespierre, when violent interruptions showed the temper of the conven- tion. Tallien, Billaud-Varenne, and Vadier again attacked Robespierre ; cries of "Down with the tyrant!" were raised ; and, when Robespierre hesitated in his speech in answer to these attacks, the words '"'C'est le sang de Dan- ton qui t'étouffe" showed what was uppermost in the minds of the Mountain. The excitement increased, and at five in the afternoon Robespierre, Couthon, and Saint-Just, with two young deputies, Augustin Robespierre and Lebas, the only men in all the convention who supported them, were ordered to be arrested. Yet all hope for Robes- pierre was not gone; he was speedily rescued from his prison with the other deputies by the troops of the com-

mune and brought to the Hotel de Ville. There he was surrounded by his faithful adherents, led by Payan and Coffinhal, but the day was past when the commune could overawe the convention ; for now the men of action were hostile to the commune, and its chief was not a master of coups détat. On the news of the release of Robespierre, the convention had again met, and declared the members of the commune and the released deputies hors de la lov. The national guards under the command of Barras had little difficulty in making their way to the Hotel de Ville ; Robespierre was shot in the lower jaw by a young gen- darme named Merda while signing an appeal to one of the sections of Paris to take up arms for him, though the wound was afterwards believed to have been inflicted by himself; and all the released deputies were again arrested. After a night of agony Robespierre was the next day taken before the tribunal, where his identity as an outlaw was proved, and without further trial he was executed with Couthon and Saint-Just and nineteen others of

his adherents on the Place de la Révolution on the 10th Ther- inidor (28th July) 1794.

The character of Robespierre when looked upon simply in the light of his actions and his authenticated speeches, and apart from the innumerable legends which have grown up about it, is not a difficult one to understand.

The great authority for Robespierre's life is Ernest Hamel's elaborate Vie de Robespierre, 3 vols., Paris, 1865-67, in which every fact regarding hiin is care- fully sifted ; it is indeed an unqualified defence and eulogy throughout, but, without adopting his particular views, Hamel's biography is the only one of any value. Consult also for his early life M. Paris's La Jewnesse de Robespierre.

The Mémoires de Robespierre and the Mémoires de Charlotte Robespierre are both worthless forgeries. 8.)

ROBIN HOOD. The oldest mention of Robin Hood at present known occurs in the second edition—what is called the B text—of Piers the Plowman, the date of which is about 1377. In passus v. of that poem the figure of Sloth is represented as saying :

'T can nou3te perfitly my pater-noster, as the prest it syngeth :

But I can rymes of Robyn Hood and Randolf Erle of Chesterer." He is next mentioned by Wyntown in his Scottesh Chron- icle, written about 1420:

'¢ Lytel Jhon and Robyne Hude Waythmen ware commendyd gude ; In Yngilwode and Barnysdale Thai oysyd all this time [c. 1283] thare trawale " ;

next by Bower in his additions to Fordun's Scotichronicon about 1450:

'Hoc in tempore [1266] de exheredatis et bannitis surrexit et caput crexit ille famosissimus sicarius Robertus Hode et Littill Johanne cum eorum complicibus, de quibus stolidum vulgus hianter

in comeediis et trageediis pruricnter festum faciunt et super ceteras romancias, mimos, et bardanos cantitare delectantur."

Of his popularity in the latter half of the 15th and in the 16th centuries there are many signs. Just one pass- age must be quoted as of special importance because closely followed by Grafton, Stow, and Camden. It is from Mair's Historia Majoris Britanniz tam Anglie quam Scotix, which appeared in 1521.

'Circa hee tempora [Ricardi Primi], ut auguror, Robertus Hudus Anglus et Parvus Joannes latrones famatissimi in nemoribus latuerunt, solum opulentorum virorum bona deripientes. Nullum nisi eos invadentem vel resistentem pro suarum rerum tuitione occiderunt. Centum sagittarios ad pugnam aptissimos Robertus latrociniis aluit, quos 400 viri fortissimi invadere non audebant. Rebus hujus Roberti gestis tota Britannia in cantibus utitwr. Feminam nullam opprimi permisit nec pauperum bona surripuit, verum eos ex abbatum bonis sublatis opipare pavit. Viri rapinam improbo, sed latronum omnium humanissimus et princeps erat."

Tn the Elizabethan era and afterwards mentions abound ; see the works of Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Drayton, Warner, Munday, Camden, Stow, Braithwaite, Fuller, &c.

Of the ballads themselves, Robin [food and the Monk is possibly as old as the reign of Edward II. ; Robin Mood and the Potter and Robyn and Gandelyn are certainly not later than the 15th century. Most important of all is A Lytell Geste of Robyn IHode, which perhaps was first printed about 1490, although the earliest extant complete copy belongs to about 1520. This is evidently founded on older ballads; we read in Zhe Seconde Fytte, ll. 176 and ie

'¢ He wente hym forthe full mery syngynge, As men have told in tale." In fact it does for the Robin Hood cycle what a few years before Sir Thomas Malory had done for the Arthurian romances,—what in the 6th century B.c. Pisistratus is said to have done for the Homeric poems.

These are the facts about him and his balladry. Of conjectures there is no end. He has been represented as the last of the Saxons,—as a Saxon holding out against the Norman conquerors so late as the end of the 12th century (see Thierry's Norman Conquest, and compare Ivanhoe). Others maintain that he was a follower of Simon de Montfort. A third theory associates him with the earl of Lancaster of Edward II.'s time : Hunter believed that he could identify him with a certain Robin Hood mentioned in the Exchequer accounts of this reign.

For our part, we are not disinclined to believe that the Robin Hood story has some historical basis, however fanci- ful and romantic the superstructure. We parallel it with the Arthurian story, and hold that, just as there was probably a real Arthur, however different from the hero of the trouveres, so there was a real Hood, however now enlarged and disguised by the accretions of legend. That Charlemagne and Richard I. of England became the sub- jects of romances does not prevent our believing in their existence ; nor need Hood's mythical life deprive him of his natural one. Sloth in Langland's poem couples him, as we have seen, with Randle, earl of Chester; and no one doubts this nobleman's existence because he had '"'rymes" made about him. We believe him to have been the third Randle (see Bishop Percy's Folio MS., ed. Hales and Furnivall, i. 260). And possibly enough Hood was contemporary with that earl, who "flourished" in the reigns of Richard [L., John, and Henry III. Wyntown and Major, as we have seen, assign him to that period. It is impossible to believe with Hunter that he lived so late as Edward IT.'s reign. This would leave no time for the growth of his myth; and his myth was, as is evident from what we have already said and quoted, full grown in the first half of the 14th century.

But, whether he lived or not, and whenever he lived, it is certain that many mythical elements are contained in

Oe EN "EPOrO D

his story. Both his name and his exploits remind us of the woodland spirit Robin Goodfellow and his merry pranks. He is fond of disguising himself, and devoted to fun and practical jokes. And the connexion of the May games with him points to a fusion with some older memory, —with some

sun-god. In fact, the outlaw would seem to have become a centre around which gathered and settled older traditions of men and of spirits and of gods. Folk- lore that was rapidly perishing thus gave itself a new consistency and life. The name Robin (a French form from Rob, which is of course a short form for Robert) would serve both for "the shrewd and knavish sprite"—the German Knecht Ruprecht (see Grimm's Zeut. JLyth., p. 504, trans. Stallybrass)—and for the bandit (see "Roberdes Knaues" in the Prologue of Piers the Plowman, |. 44 and the note in Warton's Hist. of Eng. Poet., ii. 95, ed. 1840). The name Hood is still a common enough surname, of which the earlier shape is Odo (see " Houdart," &c., in Larchey's Dict. des Noms); notice too the name Hudson. But it also reminds one of the German familiar spirit Hudekin, or possibly of the German Witikind (see Wright's Essays on the Middle Ages, ii. 207). How certain it is that the Robin Hood story attracted to it and appropriated other elements is illustrated by its subsequent history,—its history after the 14th century. Thus later on we find it connected with the Morris dance; but the Morris dance was not known in England before the 16th century, or late in the 15th. And the form of the story was greatly modified in the beginning of the 17th century to suit the ideas of the age. It was then that a peer was imported into it, and the yeoman of the older version was meta- morphosed into the earl of Huntingdon, for whom in the following century Stukeley discovered a satisfactory pedi- grec! At last, with the change of times, the myth ceased growing. Its rise and development and decay deserve a more thorough study than they have yet received.

What perhaps is its greatest interest as we first see it is its expression of the popular mind about the close of the Middle Ages. Robin Hood is at that time the people's ideal as Arthur is that of the upper classes. He is the ideal yeoman as Arthur is the ideal knight. He readjusts the distribution of property: he robs the rich and endows the poor. He is an earnest worshipper of the Virgin, but a bold and vigorous hater of monks and abbots. He is the great sportsman, the incomparable archer, the lover of the greenwood and of a free life, brave, adventurous, jocular, open-handed, a protector of women. Observe his instructions to Little John :—

' Loke ye do no housbonde harme*

That tylleth with his plough.

No more ye shall no good yeman That walketh by grene wode shawe,

Ne no knyght ne no squyer That wolde be a good felawe.

These bysshoppes and thyse archebysshoppcs Ye shall them bete and bynde ;

The hye sheryfe of Notynghame Hym holde in your mynde."'

And we are told

- *Robin loved our dere lady For doute of dedely synne ; Wolde he never do company harme That ony woman was ynne." See also Drayton's Polyolbion, Song xxvi. The story is localized in Barnsdale and Sherwood, 7.¢., between Don- caster and Nottingham.*

The best collections of the Robin Hood poems are those of Ritson (8vo, 1795) and Gutch (2d ed., 1847), and of Professor Child in the 5th volume of his invaluable English and Scotch Ballads. The versions in the Percy Folio MS. are unhappily mutilated; but they should be consulted, for they are all more or less unique, and that on " Robin Hoode his death" is of singular interest. The literary and artistic value of the Robin Hood ballads cannot be pronounced consider-

ROB—ROB

able; their value is great, but it is in other respects. There is, however, real vigour and force in this fragment on the hero's death. The earliest "Garland" was printed in 1670. (J. W. H.)

ROBIN REDBREAST. See REDBREAST.

ROBINS, Bensamin (1707-1751), an English natural philosopher, was born at Bath in 1707. His parents were Quakers in poor circumstances, and gave him very little education. Aided solely by his own talent for exact science, he made considerable progress, and attracted so much notice that he was introduced to Pemberton, who befriended and encouraged him.

For a time he maintained himself by teaching mathematics, but soon devoted him- self to more congenial work. In particular he carried out an extensive series of experiments in gunnery, the results of which were afterwards embodied in his famous treatise on New Principles in Gunnery (8vo, London, 1742). In this treatise is described the ballistic pendulum, an instru- ment which has become classical in the history of dynamics, and which bears the name of its inventor. Robins also made a number of very important experiments on the resistance of the air to the motion of projectiles, and on the force of gunpowder, with computation of the velocities thereby communicated to military projectiles. He com- pared the results of his theory with experimental deter- minations of the ranges of mortars and cannon, and gave practical maxims for the management of artillery. He also made observations on the flight of rockets and wrote on the advantages of rifled barrels. So great was his fame as a scientific artillerist that Euler translated his work on gunnery into German and added to it a critical comment- ary of his own. Of less interest nowadays are Robins's more purely mathematical writings, such as his Dzscourse concerning the Nature and Certainty of Sir Isaac Newton's Methods of Fluaions and of Prime and Ultimate Ratios (8vo, London, 1735), "A Demonstration of the Eleventh Proposition of Sir Isaac Newton's Treatise of Quadratures " (Phil. Trans., 1727), and similar works. Besides his scien- tific labours Robins took an active part in politics. He wrote pamphlets in support of the opposition to Sir Robert Walpole, and was secretary of a committee appointed by the House of Commons to inquire into the conduct of that minister. He also wrote a preface to the Report on the Proceedings of the Board of General Officers on their Haa- mination into the Oonduct of Lieutenant-General Sir John Cope, in which he gave an apology for the affair at Preston- pans. In 1750 he was appointed engineer-general to the East India Company, and went out to superintend the re- construction of their forts. The climate, however, dis- agreed with him, and he died on 29th July 1751. His works were published in two volumes 8vo in 1761.

ROBINSON, Epwarp (1794-1863), author of the Biblical Researches, a son of the Rev. William Robinson, of Puritan ancestry, was born at Southington, Connecticut, United States, on 10th April 1794. He was educated at Hamilton College, New York, where he graduated in 1816. He

served as a tutor at the college during 1817-18, and then engaged in private study of the Greek classics until 1821, when he went to Andover, Massachusetts, in order to publish an edition of the Jliad. There he became a pupil of Moses Stuart, the enthusiastic professor of Biblical studies in the theological seminary, and was made in- structor of Hebrew there in 1823. In 1826 he resigned his position at Andover and went to Europe, where he studied Hebrew under Gesenius at Halle, and also history at Berlin under Neander, remaining in Europe until 1830. In 1828 he married Therese Albertine Luise von Jakob, daughter of an eminent professor of philosophy at Halle. This highly cultured lady was already well known as an authoress under the pseudonym of " Talvj." She became of great assistance to her husband in his learned pur-

suits. In 1830 he was again called to Andover as pro- fessor extraordinary of Biblical literature, and entered with enthusiasm upon the work of instruction and the publication of scholarly works upon the Bible. In 1831 he founded the Biblical Lepository, a theological review which introduced a new era in theological periodicals in America, and which subsequently passed over into the Bibliotheca Sacra. In the same year he received the degree of D.D. from Dartmouth College. In 1832 he published a revised edition of Taylor's translation of Calmet's Dictionary of the Lrble, and in the ensuing year a popular Dictionary of the Bible and a translation of Buttmann's Greek Grammar (3d ed., 1851). Such severe literary work deprived him of his health and he was compelled to resign his professorship. He now devoted himself entirely to literary pursuits for some years. In 1834 he published a revised edition of Newcome's Greek ilarmony of the Gospels. In 1836 he issued a translation of Gesenius's Hebrew Lexicon and in the same year a Greek and English Lexicon of the New Testament. These lexicons have been the companions of Biblical students until the present time, having passcd through a series of revisions. The /7Zebrew Lexicon reached a fifth edition in 1854, the Greek Lexicon a second edition in 1847. They are both now (1885) passing through another revision by his pupils. In 1837 Robinson was called to the professorship of Biblical literature in the Union Theo- logical Seminary, New York, in which position he re-

mained until his death, giving it the reputation of his scholarship and the benefits of his great experience in Biblical study and practical skill in instruction. In his letter of acceptance he gave an outline of the field of Biblical study which showed his mastery of the subject and his forecast of its future in America. He accepted this position with the understanding that he should receive leave of absence for some years in order to explore the lands of the Bible. He spent a considerable portion of the year 1838 in these explorations and became the pioneer and father of modern Biblical geography. He published his Biblical Researches in 1841 in three volumes, simultaneously in Berlin and Boston. His services were recognized by a gold medal from the Royal Geographical Society of London in 1842, the degree of D.D. from the university of Halle in 1842, and the degree of LL.D. from Yale College in 1844. In 1852 he made a second visit to Palestine and published its results in the supplemental volume to the second edition of his Biblical Researches in 1856. The third edition of the whole work appeared in 1867 in three volumes. Robinson regarded these researches as preliminary to a systematic work on the geography of the Bible; but he was spared only to complete a mere fragment, which was published posthumously under the title of Physical Geography of the Holy Land in 1865. In 1845 Robinson also issued a Greek Harmony of the Gospels and in 1846 an English Harmony, both of which have passed through many editions and have remained the standard text-books in America until the present day. The Greek Harmony has renewed its life in a revised edition by Professor Riddle in 1885, Besides these more important works he published from time to time a vast number of articles in periodicals, and in 1859 a Memoir of the Rev. William Robinson, his father. Robinson was an ordained minister of the Presbyterian Church, but his voice was seldom heard in the pulpit or in ecclesiastical bodies. In his declining years he was afflicted with an incurable disease of the eyes and other maladies. He died in New York City on 27th January 1863.

Robinson's work in Biblical geography was both fundamental

and monumental. Dean Stanley once said, " Dr Robinson was the first man who saw Palestine with his eyes open to what he ought

to see"; and Ritter recognizes the "union of the acutest observa- tion of topographical and local conditions with much preparatory study." He was gifted with great practical sense and unusual accuracy of observation ; but he was extreme in his criticism of the local legends of the Holy Land, and not sufficiently skilled in historic criticism. Although great progress has becn made in Biblical geography in the last quarter of this century, yct the work of Robinson is still classical.

See The Life, Writings, and Character of Edward Robinson, by Henry B. Smith and Boswell D. Hitchcock (New York, 1863), and Services in Adam Chapel at the Dedication of the New Buildings of Union Theological Seminary (New York, 1885).

ROBINSON, Joun (1575-1625), one of the founders of Independency in England (see vol. xii. p. 725), was born most probably near Scrooby in Nottinghamshire in 1575. He was entered of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, in 1592, and graduated in ordinary course, becoming a fellow in 1599. Having taken orders he officiated for some time in the neighbourhood of Norwich, but his Puritan leanings soon caused his suspension by the bishop. After having ministered for some time to a congregation of sympathizers in Norwich he resigned his fellowship in 1604, and, pro- ceeding to Gainsborough in Lincolnshire, he there joined a company who had bound themselves by covenant before God "to walk in all His ways made known or to be made known unto them, according to their best endeavours, whatever it should cost them." In 1606 he became minister at Scrooby, but the increasing hostility of the authorities towards nonconformity soon forced him and his people to think of flight, and, not without difficulty, they succeeded in making their escape in detachments to Hol- land. Robinson settled in Amsterdam in 1608, but in the following year removed to Leyden, and ministered there to members of his former congregation. In 1620 a consider- able minority of these sailed for England in the '" Speed- well," and ultimately crossed the Atlantic in the '" May- flower" ; it was Robinson's intention to follow as soon as practicable along with the rest of his flock, but he died before the plan could be carried out, on Ist March 1625.

Besides preaching to his congregation, and, during his later years, corresponding with those of his people who had settled in New England, Robinson devoted himself to theological study, and be- came a member of the university of Leyden. Amongst his other publications may be mentioned Justification of Separation from the Chureh (1610), Apologia Brownistarwm (1619), A Defence of the Doctrine propounded by the Synod of Dort (1624), and a volume of Essays, or Observations Divine and Moral, printed in 1628. His

Works, with a memoir by R. Ashton, were reprinted in 3 vols. in 1851.

ROBINSON, Joun Toomas Romnzy (1792-1882), the inventor of the cup-anemometer, was born in Dublin on 23d April 1792. He studied at Trinity College and ob- tained a fellowship in 1814; for some years he was deputy professor of natural philosophy, until he relinquished his fellowship in 1821 on obtaining the college living of Enniskillen, In 1823 he was appointed astronomer of the Armagh observatory (see OBsERVAToRY), with which he (from 1824) combined the living of Carrickmacross, but he always resided at the observatory, engaged in re- searches connected with astronomy and physics, until his death on 28th February 1882.

Robinson wrote a number of papers in scientific journals and transactions, and the Armagh catalogue of stars (Places of 5345 Stars observed from 1828 to 1854 at the Armagh Observatory, Dublin, 1859), but he is best known as the inventor of the cup-anemometer for registering the velocity of the wind. This instrument (which he erected at the Armagh observatory in 1846 and which has since come into general use) consists of four light arms forming a hori- zontal cross, carrying four hemispherical cups and turning freely about a vertical axis. By an endless screw attached to the axis a system of wheelwork is set going, and the velocity of the wind is indicated by one or more dials, or it may be registered continuously by a pencil drawn by clockwork along'a dial-or drum turned by the anemometer, or (as in the modification now generally used) by a metallic screw of only one thread, which leaves a tracing on a sheet of metallic paper folded round a drum revolving by clockwork. It nas been found by elaborate experiments by Dr Robinson (Trans. Lt. Irish Academy, vol. xxii. ; Phil. Trans., 1878 and 1880) and

ROB—

. Justice.

R @ 3 others that the centre of each cup moves with a velocity very nearly equal to one-third of that of the wind.

ROB ROY (c. 1660-1734), the popular designation of a famous Highland outlaw whose prowess is the theme of one of Sir Walter Scott's novels, was by descent a Macgregor, being the younger son of Donald Macgregor of Glengyle, who had attained the rank of lieutenant-colonel in the army of James II., by his wife, a daughter of William Campbell of Glenfalloch. He received the name Roy from the red hair which clustered in thick curls over his brow, and latterly adopted Campbell as his surname on account of the Acts proscribing the name of his clan. Though in stature not much above the middle height, he was so muscular and thickly set that few were his equals in feats of strength, while the unusual length of his arms gave him an extraordinary advantage in the use of the sword. His eyes were remarkably keen and piercing, and his whole expression indicated a mental prowess forming: an appropriate complement to his powerful physical frame. He inherited a small property on the Braes of Balquhidder, and at first devoted himself to the rearing of cattle. Hav- ing formed a band of armed clansmen, he obtained, after the accession of William III., a commission from James II. to levy war on all who refused to acknowledge him as king, and in the autumn of 1691 made a descent on Stirlingshire to carry off the cattle of Lord Livingstone, when, being opposed by the villagers of Kippen, he also seized the cattle from all the byres of the village. Shortly afterwards he married Mary, daughter of Macgregor of Comar. On the death of Gregor Macgregor, the chief of the clan, in 1693 he managed, though not the nearest heir, to get himself acknowledged chief, obtaining control of the lands stretching from the Braes of Balquhidder to the shores of Loch Lomond, and situated between the posses- sions of Argyll and those of Montrose. To assist in carry- ing on his trade as cattle-dealer he borrowed money from the duke of Montrose, and, being on account of losses un- able to repay it, he was in 1712 evicted from his property and declared an outlaw. 'Taking refuge in the more in- accessible Highlands, Rob Roy from this time forward

sup- ported himself chiefly by depredations committed in the most daring manner on the duke and his tenants, all attempts to capture him being unsuccessful. During the rebellion of 1715, though nominally siding with the Pre- tender, he did not take an active part in the battle of Sheriffmuir except in plundering the dead on both sides. He was included in the Act of Attainder; but, having for some time enjoyed the friendship of the duke of Arygll, he obtained, on making his submission at Inveraray, a promise of protection. He now established his residence at Craigroyston near Loch Lomond, whence for some time he levied black mail as formerly upon Montrose, escaping by his wonderful address and activity every effort of the English garrison stationed at Inversnaid to bring him to In his later years he was, through the mediation of Argyll, reconciled to Montrose. According to a notice in the Caledoman Mercury he died at Balquhidder on 28th December 1734. He was buried in Balquhidder churchyard.

K. Macleay, Historical Memoirs of Rob Roy (1818 ; new ed. 1881); oan Scott, Highland Clans; A. H. Miller, Story of Rob Roy

ROBUSTI, Jacoro (1518-1594), commonly called In TINTORETTO or TINTORET, one of the greatest painters of the Venetian or of any school, was born in Venice in 1518, though most accounts say in 1512. His father, Battista Robusti, was a dyer, or "tintore"; hence the son got the nickname of '"Tintoretto," little dyer, or dyer's boy. In childhood Jacopo, a born painter, began daubing on the dyer's walls; his father, noticing his bent, took him round, still in boyhood, to the studio of Titian,

kOBUST I

to see how far he could be trained as an artist. We may suppose this to have been towards 1533, when Titian was already fifty-six years of age. Ridolfi is our authority for saying that Tintoret had only been ten days in the studio when Titian sent him home once and for all. The reason, according to the same writer, is that the great master ob- served some very spirited drawings, which he learned to be the production of Tintoret; and it is inferred that he became at once jealous of so promising a scholar. This, however, is mere conjecture ; and perhaps it may be fairer to suppose that the drawings exhibited so much independ- ence of manner that Titian judged that young Robusti, although he might become a

painter, would never be pro- perly a pupil. From this time forward the two always remained upon distant terms,—Robusti being indeed a pro- fessed and ardent admirer of Titian, but never a friend, and Titian and his adherents turning the cold shoulder to Robusti. Active disparagement also was not wanting, but it passed disdainfully unnoticed by Tintoret. The latter sought for no further teaching, but studied on his own account with laborious zeal; he lived poorly, collecting casts, bas-reliefs, &c., and practising by their aid. His noble conception of art and his high personal ambition were evidenced in the inscription which he placed over his studio,— Il disegno di Michelangelo ed il colorito di Tiziano" (Michelangelo's design and Titian's colour), He studied more especially from models of Buonarroti's Dawn, Noon, Twilight, and Night, and became expert in modelling in wax and clay,—a method (practised likewise by Titian) which afterwards stood him in good stead in working out the arrangement of his pictures. The models were sometimes taken from dead subjects dissected or studied in anatomy schools; some were draped, others nude, and Robusti was wont to suspend them in a wooden or cardboard box, with an aperture for a candle. Now and afterwards he very frequently worked by night as well as by day. The young™painter Schiavone, four years Robusti's junior, was much in his company. 'Tintoret helped Schiavone gratis in wall-paintings; and in many subsequent instances he worked also for nothing, and thus succeeded in obtaining commissions. The two earliest mural paintings of Robusti—done, like others, for next to no pay—are said to have been Belshazzar's Feast and a Cavalry Fight, both long since perished. Such, indeed, may be said to have been the fate of all his frescos, early or later. The first work of his which attracted some considerable notice was a portrait-group of himself and his brother—the latter playing a guitar—with a nocturnal effect ; this also is lost. It was followed by some historical subject, which Titian was candid enough to praise. One of Tintoret's early pictures still extant is in the church of the Carmine in Venice, the Presentation of Jesus in the Temple; also in 8. Benedetto are the Annunciation and Christ with the Woman of Samaria. For the Scuola della Trinita (the scuole or schools of Venice were more in the nature of hospitals or charitable foundations than of educational in- stitutions) he painted four subjects from Genesis. Two of these, now in the Venetian Academy, are Adam and Eve and the Death of Abel, both noble works of high mastery, which leave

us in no doubt that Robusti was by this time a consummate painter,—one of the few who have attained to the highest eminence by dire study of their own, un- seconded by any training from some senior proficient. Towards 1546 Robusti painted for the church of §. Maria dell' Orto three of his leading works—the Worship of the Golden Calf, the Presentation of the Virgin in the Temple, and the Last Judgment—now shamefully re-painted ; and he settled down in a house hard by the church. It is a Gothic edifice, looking over the lagoon of Murano to the Alps, built in the Fondamenta de' Mori,

still standing, but let out cheap to artisans. In 1548 he was commissioned for four pictures in the Scuola di §8. Marco—the Finding of the Body of St Mark in Alexandria (now in the church of the Angeli, Murano), the Saint's Body brought to Venice, a Votary of the Saint delivered by invoking him from an Unclean Spirit (these two are in the library of the royal palace, Venice), and the highly and justly celebrated Miracle of the Slave. This last, which forms at present one of the chief glories of the Venetian Academy, represents the legend of a Christian slave or captive who was to be tortured as a punishment for some acts of devotion to the evangelist, but was saved by the miraculous intervention of the latter, who shattered the bone-breaking and blinding implements which were about to be applied. These four works were greeted with signal and general applause, including that of Titian's intimate, the too potent Pietro Aretino, with whom Tintoret, one of the few men who scorned to curry favour with him, was mostly in disrepute. It is said, however, that Tintoret at one time painted a ceiling in Pietro's house; at another time, being invited to do his portrait, he attended, and at once proceeded to take his sitter's measure with a pistol (or else a stiletto), as a significant hint that he was not exactly the man to be trifled with. The painter having now executed the four works in the Scuola di S. Marco, his straits and obscure endurances were over. He married Faustina de' Vescovi, daughter of a Venetian nobleman. She appears to have been a careful housewife, and one who both would and could have her way with her not too tract- able husband. Faustina bore him several children, prob- ably two sons and five daughters.

The next conspicuous event in the professional life of Tintoret is his enormous labour and profuse self-develop- ment on the walls and ceilings of the Scuola di 8. Rocco, a building which may now almost be regarded as a shrine reared by Robusti to his own genius. The building had been begun in 1525 by the Lombardi, and was very defi- cient in light, so as to be particularly ill-suited for any great scheme of pictorial adornment. The painting of its interior was commenced in 1560. In that year five prin- cipal painters, including Tintoret and Paul Veronese, were invited to send in trial-designs for the centre-piece in the smaller hall, named Sala dell' Albergo, the subject being S. Rocco received into Heaven. 'Tintoret produced not a sketch but a picture, and got it inserted into its oval. The competitors remonstrated, not unnaturally; but the artist, who knew how to play his own game, made a free gift of the picture to the saint, and, asa bye-law of the foundation prohibited the rejection of any gift, it was re- tained in situ,—Tintoret furnishing gratis the other decora- tions of the same ceiling. In 1565 he resumed work at the scuola, painting the magnificent Crucifixion, for which a sum of 250 ducats was paid. In 1576 he presented gratis another centre-piece,—that for the ceiling of the great hall, representing the Plague of Serpents; and in the following year he completed this ceiling with pictures of the Paschal Feast and Moses striking the Rock,—accepting whatever pittance the confraternity chose to pay. Robusti next launched out into the painting of the entire scuola and of the adjacent church of S. Rocco. He offered in November 1577 to execute the works at the rate of 100 ducats per annum, three pictures being due in each year. This proposal was accepted and was punctually fulfilled, the painter's death alone preventing the execution of some of the ceiling-subjects. The whole sum paid for the scuola throughout was 2447 ducats. Disregarding some minor performances, the scuola and church contain fifty-two memorable paintings, which may be described as vast sug- gestive sketches, with the mastery, but not the deliberate precision, of finished pictures, and adapted for being

looked at in a dusky half-light. Adam and Eve, the Visitation, the Adoration of the Magi, the Massacre of the Innocents, the Agony in the Garden, Christ before Pilate, Christ carrying His Cross, and (this alone having been marred by restoration) the Assumption of the Virgin are leading examples in the scuola; in the church, Christ curing the Paralytic.

It was probably in 1560, the same year when he began working in the Scuola di S. Rocco, that Tintoret commenced also his numerous paintings in the ducal palace ; he then executed there a portrait of the doge, Girolamo Priuli. Other works which were destroyed in the great fire of 1577 succeeded,—the Excommunication of Frederick Bar- barossa by Pope Alexander III. and the Victory of Lepanto. After the fire Tintoret started afresh, Paul Veronese being his colleague; their works have for the most part been disastrously and disgracefully retouched of late years, and some of the finest monuments of pic- torial power ever produced are thus degraded to com- parative unimportance. In the Sala dello Scrutinio Robusti painted the Capture of Zara from the Hungarians in 1346 amid a hurricane of missiles; in the hall of the senate, Venice, Queen of the Sea ; in the hall of the college, the Espousal of St Catherine to Jesus ; in the Sala dell' Anticollegio, four extraordinary masterpieces—Bacchus, with Ariadne crowned by Venus, the Three Graces and Mercury, Minerva discarding Mars, and the Forge of Vulcan—which were painted for fifty ducats each, besides naterials, towards 1578; in the Antichiesetta, St George and St Nicholas, with St Margaret (the female figure is sometimes termed the princess whom St George rescued from the dragon), and St Jerome and St Andrew ; in the hall of the great council, nine large compositions, chiefly battle-pieces. We here reach the crowning production of Robusti's life, the last picture of any considerable import- ance which he executed, the vast Paradise, in size 74 feet by 30, reputed to be the largest painting ever done upon canvas. It is a work so stupendous in scale, so colossal in the sweep of its power, so reckless of ordinary standards of conception or method, so pure an inspiration of a soul burning with passionate visual imagining, and a hand magical to work in shape and colour, that it has defied the connoisseurship of three centuries, and has generally (though not with its first Venetian contemporaries) passed for an eccentric failure; while to a few eyes

(including those of the present writer) it seems to be so transcendent a monument of human faculty applied to the art pictorial as not to be viewed without awe nor thought of without ainazement. While the commission for this huge work was yet pending and unassigned Robusti was wont to tell the senators that he had prayed to God that he might be commissioned for it, so that paradise itself might perchance be his recompense after death. Upon eventually receiving the commission in 1588 he set up his canvas in the Scuola della Misericordia and worked indefatigably at the task, making many alterations and doing various heads and costumes direct from nature. When the picture had been brought well forward he took it to its proper place and there finished it, assisted by his son Domenico for details of drapery, é&c. All Venice applauded the superb achieve- ment, which has in more recent times suffered from neglect, but fortunately hardly at all from restoration. Robusti was asked to name his own price, but this he left to the authorities. They tendered a handsome amount ; Robusti is said to have abated something from it, which 1s even a more curious instance of ungreediness for pelf than earlier cases which we have cited where he worked for nothing at all.

After the completion of the Paradise Robusti rested for a while, and he never undertook any other work of

nO bts FT

importance, though there is no reason to suppose that his energies were exhausted, had his days been a little pro- longed. He was seized with an attack in the stomach, complicated with fever, which prevented him from sleeping and almost from eating for a fortnight, and on 3lst May 1594 he died. A contemporary record states his age to have been seventy-five years and fifteen days. If this is accurate, 16th May 1519 must have been the day of his birth ; but we prefer the authority of the register of deaths in S. Marciliano, which states that Tintoret died of fever, aged seventy-five years, eight months, and fifteen days,— thus bringing us to 16th September 1518 as the true date of his birth. He was buried in the church of S. Maria dell' Orto by the side of his favourite daughter Marietta, who had died in 1590, aged thirty ; there is a well-known tradition that as she

lay dead the heart-stricken father painted her portrait. Marietta had herself been a por- trait-painter of considerable skill, as well as a musician, vocal and instrumental; but few of her works are now traceable. It is said that up to the age of fifteen she used to accompany and assist her father at his work, dressed as a boy ; eventually she married a jeweller, Mario Augusta. In 1866 the grave of the Vescovi and Robusti was opened, and the remains of nine members of the joint families were found in it; a different locality, the chapel on the right of the choir, was then assigned to the grave. Tintoret painted his own portrait at least twice, one of the heads being in the Uffizi Gallery of Florence and the other, done when his age was advanced, in the Louvre. It is a very serious face, somewhat blunt and rugged, but yet refined without the varnish of elegance—concentrated and resolute, its native ardours of frankness and energy welded down into lifelong laboriousness, with a pent look as of smouldering fire. The eyes are large, dark, and round; the grizzled hair close and compact. The face has been held to bear some resemblance to that of Michel- angelo, but this does not go very far. Robusti appears also as one of the figures in the two vast pictures by Paul Veronese,—the Marriage in Cana and the Feast in the House of Levi.

Audacious and intrepid, though not constantly correct, as a draughtsman, majestically great as a colourist, prodigious as an executant, Tintoret was as absolute a type of the born painter as the history of art registers or enables us to conceive. hatever he did was imaginative—sometimes beautiful and suave (and he was eminently capable of painting a lovely female countenance or an heroic man), often imposing and romantic, fully as often tur- bulent and reckless, sometimes trivial, never unpainter-like or prosaic. When he chose—which was not always—he painted his entire personages characteristically ; but, like the other highest masters of Venice, he conceded and attendcd little to the expression of his faces as evincing incidental emotion. In several of his works —as especially the great Crucifixion in 8. Rocco—there is powerful central thought, as well as inventive detail ; but his imagination is always concrete: it is essentially that of a painter to whom the means of art—the form, colour, chiaroscuro, manipulation, scale, distribution—are the typical and neccssitated realities. What he imagines is always a visual integer, a

picture—never a treatise, however thoughtfully planned or ingeniously detailed. Something that one could see—that is his ideal, not something that one could narrate, still less that one could deduce and demonstrate. In his treatment of action or gesture the most constant peculiarity is the sway and swerve of his figures: thcy bend like saplings or rock like forest-boughs in a gale; stiffness or immobility was entirely foreign to his style, which has therefore little of the monu- mental or severe character. Perhaps he felt that there was no other way for combining "the colour of Titian with the design of Michelangelo." The knitted strength and the transcendent fervour of energy of the supreme Florentine might to some extent be emulated ; but, if they were to be united with the glowing fusion of hue of the supreme Venetian, this could only be attained by a process of relaxing the excessive tension and modifying muscular into elastic force. In this respect he was a decided innovator ; but he had many imitators,—comparatively feeble, if we except Paul Veronese.

Tintoret scarcely ever travelled out of Venice. He loved all the arts, played in youth the lute and various instruments, some of

ROC—ROC

them of his own invention, and designed theatrical costumes and

_ properties, was versed in mechanics and mechanical devices, and was a very agreeable companion. For the sake of his work he lived in a most retired fashion, and even when not painting was wont to remain in his working room surrounded by casts. Here he hardly admitted any, even intimate friends, and he kept his modes of work secret, save as regards his assistants. He aboundcd in pleasant witty sayings whether to great personages or to others, but no smile hovered on his lips. Out of doors his wife made him wear the robe of a Venetian citizen ; if it rained she tried to indue him with an outer garment, but this he resisted. She would also when he left the house wrap up moncy for him in a handkerchief, and on his return expected an account of it; Tintoret's accustomed reply was that he had spent it in alms to the poor or to prisoners. In 1574 he obtained the reversion of the first vacant broker's patent in a fondaco, with power to bequeath it,—an advantage grantcd from time to time to pre-eminent painters. For his phenomenal energy in painting he was termed "J]

Furioso." An agrecment is extant showing that he undertook to finish in two months two historical pictures each containing twenty figures, seven being portraits. The nuinber of his portraits is enormous; their merit is unequal, but the really fine ones cannot be surpassed. Sebastian del Piombo remarked that Robusti could paint in two days as much as himself in two years ; Annibale Caracci that Tintoret was in many pictures equal to Titian, in others inferior to Tintoret. This was the general opinion of the Venctians, who said that he had three pencils—one of gold, the second of silver, and the third of iron. The only pictures (if we except his own portrait) on which he in- scribed his name are the Miracle of Cana in the church of the Salute (painted originally for the brotherhood of the Crociferi), the Miracle of the Slave, and the Crucifixion in the Scuola di S. Rocco; the last was engraved in 1589 by Agostino Caracci. Generally he painted at once on to the canvas without any preliminary. Some of his dicta on art have been recorded as follows by Ridolfi :—" the art of painting remains increasingly difficult"; " painters in youth should adhere to the best masters, these being Michelangelo and Titian, and should be strict in representing the natural forms" ; 'the first glance at a picture is the crucial one"; "black and white, as developing form, are the best of colours" ; "drawing is the foundation of a painter's work, but drawing from life in the nude should only be essayed by well-practised men, as the real is often wanting in beauty."

Of pupils Robusti had very few; his two sons and Martin de Vos of Antwerp were among them. Domenico Robusti (1562-1637), whom we have already had occasion to mention, frequently assisted his father in the groundwork of great pictures. He himself painted a multitude of works, many of them ona very large scale; they would at best be mediocre, and, coming from the son of Tintoret, arc exasperating ; still, he must be regarded as a considerable sort of pictorial practitioner in his way.

We conclude by naming a few of the more striking of Tintoret's very numerous works not already specified in the course of the article. In Venice—(S. Giorgio Maggiore), a series of his later works, the Gathcring of the Manna, Last Supper, Descent from the Cross, Resurrection, Martyrdom of St Stephen, Coronation of the Virgin, Martyrdom of St

Damian ; (S. Francesco della Vigna) the Entombment ; (the Frari) the Massacre of the Innocents ; (S. Cassiano) a Crucifixion, the figures seen from behind along the hill slope; (St Mark's) a mosaic of the Baptism of Christ, —the oil-painting of this composition is in Verona. In Milan (the Brera), St Helena and other saints. In Florence (Pitti Gallery), Venus, Vulcan, and Cupid. In Cologne (Wallraff-Richarts Museum), Ovid and Corinna. In Augsburg (the town-hall), some historical pictures, which biographers and tourists alike have unaccountably neglected,—one of the siege of a fortified town is astonishingly fine. In England—(Hampton Court), Esther and Ahasuerus, and the Nine Muses ; (the National Gallery) Christ washing Peter's Feet, a grand piece of colour and execution, not greatly interesting in other respects, also a spirited smallish work, St George and the Dragon.

The writer who has done by far the most to establish the fame of Tintoret at the height which it ought to occupy is Professor Ruskin in his Stones of Venice and other books; the depth and scope of the master's power had never before been adequately brought out, although his extraordinarily and somewhat arbitrarily used executive gift was acknowledged. Ridolfi (Meraviglie dell' Arte) gives interesting personal details; the article by Dr Janitschek in Kunst und Kiinstler (1876) is a solid account. For an English reader the most handy narrative is thatof Mr W. R. Osler (Tintoretto, 1879), in the series entitled " The Great Artists." Here the biographical facts are clearly presented ; the sesthetic criticism is enthusiastic but not perspicuous. (W. M. R.)

ROG, or more correctly Ruxu, a fabulous bird of enormous size which carries off elephants to feed its young. The legend of the roc, familiar to every one from the Arabian Nights, was widely spread in the East; and in later times the home of the monster was sought in the direction of Madagascar, whence gigantic fronds of the Raphia palm very like a quill in form appear to have been brought under the name of roc's feathers (see Yule's

Marco Polo, bk. iii. ch. 33, and Academy, 1884, No. 620). Such a feather was brought to the Great Khan, and we read also of a gigantic stump of a

roc's quill being brought to Spain by a merchant from the China seas (Abu Hamid of Spain, in Damiri, s.v.). The roc is hardly different from the Arabian 'ankd, already mentioned under PHanIx ; it is also identified with the Persian simurgh, the bird which figures in Firdausi's epic as the foster-father of the hero Zal, father of Rustam. When we go farther back into Persian antiquity we find an immortal bird, amrwu, or (in the Minéi-khiradh) sinamrt, which shakes the ripe fruit from the mythical tree that bears the seed of all useful

things. Sinamri and simurgh seem to be the same word, In Indian legend the garuda on which Vishnu

rides is the king of birds (Benfey, Pantschatantra, ii. 98). In the Pahlavi translation of the Indian story as repre- sented by the Syrian Kalilay and Damnag (ed. Bickell, 1876), the simurgh takes the place of the garuda, while Ibn al-Mokaffat (Calila et Dimna, ed. De Sacy, p. 126) speaks instead of the 'anka. The later Syriac, curiously enough, has bekmoth,—apparently the behemoth of Job transformed into a bird.

For a collection of legends about the roc, see Lane's Arabian Nights, chap. xx. notes 22, 62, and Yule, wt supra. Also see Bochart, Hieroz., bk. vi. ch. xiv.; Damiri, i. 414, ii. 177 sq; Kazwint, i. 419 sq.; Ibn Batiuta, iv. 305 sg.; Spiegel, Lran. Alterthumsk., Wh, WG.

ROCH, Sr (Lat. Rochus; Ital. Rocco; Span. Rogue ; Fr. Roch or Roque), according to the Roman Breviary, was a native of Montpellier, France. The name of his father was John and that of his mother Franca or Libera. He was born with the mark of a red cross upon his person, and this was at once interpreted as signifying his future eminence. In his twelfth year he began to manifest strict asceticism and great devoutness, and on the death of his parents in his twentieth year he gave all his substance to the poor and joined the Franciscan Tertiaries. Coming to Italy during an epidemic of plague, he was very diligent in tending the sick in the public hospitals dt Aquapendente, Cesena, and Rome, and effected many miraculous cures by prayer and simple contact. After similar ministries at Piacenza he himself fell ill, and would have perished as he passed through the forest had not the dog of a certain nobleman daily supplied him with bread. On his return to Montpellier he was

arrested as a spy and thrown into prison, where he died, having previously obtained from God this favour, that all plague-stricken persons invoking him should be healed. The date of his death was 16th August 1327, in the thirty-second year of his age. During the sittings of the council of Constance in 1414, when the city was visited with the plague, the efficacy of St Roch's intercession was 'most manifestly" experienced. His remains were removed in 1385 to Venice, where they now lie. He is commemorated, chiefly in Italy and France, as the patron of the sick, and especially of the plague-stricken.

ROCHDALE, a municipal and parliamentary borough of south-east Lancashire, is situated on the river Roch and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire railway, 11 miles north-north-east of Manchester and 12 east of Bolton. By means of the Rochdale Canal, extending from the duke of Bridgewater's canal, Manchester, to the Calder and Hebble navigation at Sowerby Bridge, it has water communication with the most important towns in the north of England. Within recent years the town has largely increased. Though inhabited chiefly by the working classes, the streets generally are spacious and regular, The sanitary arrangements are very satisfactory, the main drainage having been executed on a very large scale. The gas- works and waterworks are in the hands of the corporation, which also erected public baths in 1868. There is a public cemetery belonging to the corporation, and also a public

park 12 acres in extent. The parish church of St Chad, occupying the high grounds overlooking the town, is built on the site of a church which was erected in the 12th century. The town-hall is a very extensive and elaborate structure in the Decorated Gothic style, and had originally a tower surmounted by a gilded spire 140 feet in height, which was destroyed by fire in 1883, The building, com- pleted in 1871 at a cost of £150,000, includes a large hall for public meetings and various municipal rooms. For the free public library, with about 40,000 volumes, a new building was opened in 1884. Of the educational charities the principal are the Archbishop Parker free grammar-school, founded in 1565, and the free English school, Among the other public institutions are the infir-

mary (lately much enlarged), the literary and scientific society, and the art society. The staple manufactures are those of woollens and cottons. There are, besides, foundries, iron-works, and machine-factories. Coal and stone are obtained extensively in the neighbourhood of the town. Rochdale was the birthplace of the co-operative movement. The town was first incorporated in 1856 and divided into three wards, but when the area of the muni- cipal borough was extended and made coextensive with the parliamentary borough it was divided into ten wards, governed by a mayor, ten aldermen, and thirty councilmen. tochdale has returned one member to the House of Com- mons since the Reform Act of 1832. The population of the borough (area, 4172 acres) in 1871 was 63,485, and in 1881 it was 68,866.

In early times Roehdale was situated entirely in the township of Castleton, where at one time stood the castle which gave its name to the township. Near the town are the remains of a Roman road leading over the Blackstone Edge Hills, which separate Lancashire and Yorkshire. The name Rochdale appears in Domesday Book as liecedam, and it was subsequent to the Norman Conquest that the town began to spread into the valley of the Roch. From the time of William the Conqueror the manor and estates were held by the De Lacys, but after some centuries they beeame merged in the erown. By Elizabeth they were bestowed on Sir John Byron, and in 1823 they were sold by Lord Byron the poct to James Dearden, in whose family they now remain, The town obtained a charter for a market in the veign of Riehard I. ; this charter was con-

firmed by Henry III., who added the privilege of holding an annual fair.

ROCHEFORT, a town of France, the chef-lieu of an arrondissement of the department of Charente Inférieure and of the fourth maritime prefecture, lies on the right bank of the Charente, 9 miles from the Atlantic, and is built partly on the side of a rocky hill and partly on old marshland, which renders the position unhealthy. The town is laid out with great regularity in chess-board fashion, The fortifications are sufficient merely to prevent it being taken by surprise. By rail it is connected with La Rochelle (18 miles north-north-west), Niort, and Saintes. There are both a naval and a commercial harbour. The former

has the advantage of deep anchorage well pro- tected by batteries at the mouth of the river, and the roadstead is perfectly safe. The windings of the channel, however, between Rochefort and the sea, and the bar at the entrance render navigation dangerous. 'This harbour and arsenal, which are separated from the town by a line of fortifications with three gates, contain large covered building yards (where eighteen vessels of the first class may be upon the stocks at once), eleven slips, three repair- ing docks, and on the right bank of the Charente in the Gardette meadows a large timber basin capable of floating 1,766,000 cubic feet of timber. Besides the various estab. lishments implied in the name, the arsenal is the seat of a ropewalk dating from 1666, a school of navigation and pilotage, a signal-tower 98 feet high (once attached to a church), the offices of the maritime prefecture, the navy commissariat, a park of artillery, and various boards of direction connected with the navy. About 5000 or 6000

men are usually employed in the arsenal. Other Govern- ment establishments at Rochefort are barracks for infantry, artillery, and marines, a provision factory, and the naval hospital (800 beds) and school of medicine. In the grounds of this last institution is an artesian well, sunk in 1862-66 to a depth of 2800 feet and yielding water at a temperature of 107° Fahr. The commercial harbour, higher up the river than the naval harbour, has two basins with an aggregate area of 5 acres and 3400 feet of quays, and a third basin is being constructed (1885) 25 acres in extent with 3800 feet of quays, capable of admit- ting large vessels on every day of the year. The town has good public and botanic gardens, and the Place Col- bert contains an allegorical group representing the ocean and the Charente mingling their waters. Besides ship- building, which forms the staple industry of Rochefort, sailcloth and furniture are the local manufactures, and hemp for cordage is grown in the vicinity. Along with Tonnay-Charente, 4 miles higher up, Rochefort has a trade in brandies, salt, grain, flour, cattle, horses, fish, colonial wares, timber, and coal. There is regular steamboat com- munication with the United Kingdom. In 1882 285 vessels (128,570 tons) entered and 270

(123,501) cleared. The population of the town was 26,022 in 1881 (27,854 in the commune).

The lordship of Rochefort, held by powerful nobles as early as the 11th century, was united to the French crown by Philip the Fair in 1303; but it was alternately seized in the course of the Hundred Years' War by the English and the French, and in the wars of religion by the Catholics and Protestants. Colbert having in 1665 chosen Rochefort as the seat of a repairing port between Brest and the Gironde, the town rapidly increased in importance : by 1674 it had 20,000 inhabitants; and, when the Dutch admiral Tromp appeared at the mouth of the river with seventy-two vessels for the purpose of destroying the new arsenal, he found the ap- proaches so well defended that he gave up his cnterprise. It was at Rochefort that the naval school now transferred to Brest was originally founded. The town continued to flourish in the later part of the 17th century. In 1690 and in 1703 it escaped from the attempts made by the English to destroy it. Its fleet under the command of La Galissonniére, a native of the place, did dis- tinguished service in the wars of American independence, the re- public, and the empire. But the destruction of the French fleet by the English in 1809 in the roadstead of Ile d'Aix, the preference accorded to the harbours of Brest and Toulon, and the unhealthiness of its climate have seriously interfered with the prosperity of the place. The convict establishment founded at Rochefort in 1777 was suppressed in 1852.

ROCHEFOUCAULD. See La Rocurroucautp.

ROCHELLE, La, a town and seaport of France, the chef- lieu of the department of Charente-Inférieure, is situated on the Atlantic coast in 46° 9' N. lat., 296 miles by rail south-west of Paris. Its fortifications, which were con- structed by Vauban, have a circuit of 34 miles with seven gates. In population (20,028 in 1881; 22.464 in the commune) it ranks after Rochefort. The harbour, one of the safest and most accessible on the coast, comprises an

outer harbour, a tidal basin, a wet dock, and a graving

dock. The outer harbour is still protected by the dry stone mole, about a mile long, constructed by Richelieu. The wet dock (7 acres) is capable of receiving ships of 1000 tons. Behind these is the Maubec basin, the water of which along with that of the Niort Canal helps to scour the port and navigable channel. On the fortifications towards the sea are three towers, of which the oldest (1384) is that of St Nicholas. The apartment in the first story was formerly used as a chapel. The chain tower (1476) was at one time connected with that of St Nicholas by a great pointed arch. The lantern tower (1475-76), seven stories high, affords a fine view of the town, the roadstead, and the surrounding islands, and at present is used asa military prison. Of the ancient gateways only one has been preserved in its entirety, that of the " grosse_hor- loge," a huge square tower of the 14th or 15th century,*

the corner turrets of which have been surmounted with trophies since 1746. The cathedral of La Rochelle (St Louis or St Bartholomew) is a heavy Grecian building (1742-1862) with a dome above the transept, erected on the site of the old church of St Bartholomew, destroyed in the 16th century and now represented by a solitary tower dating from the 14th century. Externally the town-house (1486-1607) has the appearance of a fortress in the Gothic style and internally that of a Renaissance palace. The belfries are beautifully decorated with carved work, and the council-chamber, where the mayor Guiton presided during the siege, is now adorned by his statue. Tn the old episcopal palace (which was in turn the resid- ence of Sully, the prince of Condé, Louis XIIJ., and Anne of Austria, and the scene of the marriage of Alphonso VI. of Portugal with a princess of Savoy) accommodation has been provided for a library of 25,000 volumes, a collection of records going back to the 13th century, and a museum founded in 1842 by the society of the Friends of the Arts. Other buildings of note are an arsenal, an artillery museum, a large hospital, a special Protestant hospital, a military hospital, and a lunatic asylum for the department. In the public gardens there is a museum of natural history. Medizeval and Renaissance houses still give a peculiar character to certain districts of the town: several have French, Latin, or Greek inscriptions of a moral or religious turn and in general of

Protestant origin. Of these old houses the most interesting is that of Henry IJ. or Diana of Poitiers. The parade-ground, which forms the principal public square, occupies the site of the castle, demolished in 1590. Some of the streets have side-arcades ; the public wells are fed from a large reservoir in the Champ de Mars ; and among the promenades are the Cours des Daimes with the statue of Admiral Duperré (1869), and, outside, the tree-planted ramparts and the Mail, a beautiful piece of greensward. In this direction are the sea-bathing estab- lishments. La Rochelle, besides a celebrated manufactory of barrels, contains saw-mills, copper and iron foundries, and factories for patent fuel made out of coal dross. In 1882 465 vessels (225,449 tons) entered and 431 (215,820) cleared. Coals from England and iron-ore from Spain are among the staple imports. In the neighbourhood the principal industries are getting salt from the marshes and rearing oysters and mussels,

La Rochelle existed at the close of the 10th century under the name of Rupella. In 1199 it received a communal charter from Eleanor, duchess of Guienne, and it was in its harbour that John Lackland disembarked when he came to try to recover the domains seized by Philip Augustus. Captured by Louis VII. in 1224, it was restored to the English in 1360 by the treaty of Brétigny, but it shook off the yoke of the foreigner when Duguesclin recovered Saintonge. During the 14th, 15th, and 16th centuries La Rochelle, then an almost independent commune, was one of the great maritime cities of France. From its harbour in 1402 Jean de Bethencourt set out for the conquest of the Canarics, and its seamen were the first to turn to account the discovery of the New World. The salt- tax provoked a rebellion at Rochelle which Francis I. had to come to repress in person; in 1568 the town secured exemption by the payment of a largesum. At the Reformation La lochelle early became one of the chief centres of Calvinism, and during the reli- gious wars it armed privateers which preyed on Catholic vessels in the Channel and the high seas. In 1571 a synod of the Protestant churches of France was held within its walls under the presidency of Beza for the purpose of drawing up a confession of faith. After the massacre of St Bartholomew, La Rochelle held out for six and a half months against the Catholic army, which was ultimately obliged to raise the siege after losing more than 20,000 men. The peace of 24th June 1573, signed by the people of La Rochelle in the

name of all the Protestant party, granted the Calvinists full liberty of worship in several places of safety. Under Henry AV, the town remained quiet, but under Louis XIII. it putitself again at the head of the Huguenot party. Its vessels blockaded the mouth of the Gironde and stopped the commerce of Bordeaux, and also seized the islands of Ré and Oléron and several vesscls of the royal fleet. It was then that Richelieu resolved to subdue the town once for all. In spite of the assistance rendered by the English

troops under Buckingham and in spite of the fierce energy of their mayor Guiton, the people of La Rochelle were obliged to capitulate after eight months' siege (October 1628). During this investment Richelieu raised the celebrated mole which cut off the town from the open sea. La Rochelle then became the principal port for the trade between the mother-country of France and the colony of Canada. But the revocation of the Edict of Nantes deprived it of 3000 of its most industrious inhabitants, and the loss of Canada by France completed the ruin of its commerce. Its privateers, however, still maintained a vigorous struggle with the English during the republic and the empire.

Among the men of mark born at La Rochelle may be mentioned Jean Guiton, T'allemant des Réaux, Réaumur the physicist, Admiral Duperré, Bonpland the botanist, and the painters Fromentin and Bouguereau. |

ROCHELLE SALT. See Tarraric Acrp.

ROCHESTER, an episcopal city and municipal and parliamentary borough of Mid-Kent, is situated on the Medway, on the Medway Canal, and on the London, Chat- ham, and Dover and the South-Eastern railway lines, 33 miles east of London, contiguous to Chatham and Strood. Here the river is crossed by a railway bridge and by an iron swing bridge for carriage traffic, erected to take the place of a stone bridge destroyed in 1856. The present bridge occupies the site of that which spanned the Medway before the Conquest. On the eminence overlooking the right bank of the river and commanding a wide view of the surround- ing country are the extensive remains of the Norman castle which is generally

supposed to have been built by Gun- dulph, bishop of Rochester, towards the close of the 11th century, and which was besieged by King John, by Simon de Montfort in the reign of Henry IIL, and in the reign of Richard II. by a party of rebels during the insurrection of Wat Tyler. It was repaired by Edward IV., but soon afterwards fell into decay, although the massive keep is still in good preservation. The cathedral was originally founded by Augustine in 604, but was partially destroyed by the Danes, and was rebuilt by Bishop Gundulph in the beginning of the 12th century. Though a comparatively small building, being only 310 feet in length and 68 in breadth at the nave, it is of considerable architectural interest, the most remarkable feature being the Norman west front with a richly sculptured door. There is a large number of monuments of great antiquity. In the garden of the deanery there are portions of the wall of St Andrew's priory, founded about the same time as the cathedral. Among the principal public buildings of a secular character are the town-hall (1687), the corn exchange (1871), the county court offices (1862), the working men's institute (1880), and the Richard Watts's almshouses, in the Tudor style. Besides these almshouses there are a number of other charities. The principal schools are the cathedral grammar-school, founded in the reign of Henry VIIL., and the Williamson mathematical school, formerly for the sons of freemen, but now open to all. The oyster fishing is of some importance, and there is a considerable shipping trade, a quay and landing-place having been erected by the corporation at great expense. In 1883 the number of vessels that entered the port was 5969 of 855,019 tons burden, and the number that cleared 5496 of 709,040 tons. There is a large steam-engine manufactory. Rochester returned two members to parliament down to 1885, when it was deprived of one. The population of the borough (area,! 2909 acres) in 1871 was 18,352, and in 1881 it was 21,307; this includes 5395 persons in the town of Strood, situated on the opposite side of the Medway.

Rochester was the Durobrivx of the Romans, and was intersected by the Roman Watling Street from Canterbury. It was formerly surrounded with walls, of which there are still a few remains. It was the foundation of the cathedral by Ethelbert that first raised

it to importance. By the Saxons it was named Jrofe-ccastre, which was gradually corrupted into the present name. In 676 it

“1 The parliamentary borough also includes 11,768 acres of tidal water and foreshore along the river Medway.

was plundered by Ethelred, king of Mercia, and subsequently it suffered severely from the ravages of the Danes. About 930, when three mints were established there by Athelstan, it had grown to be one of the principal ports of the kingdom. William the Con- queror granted the town to his half-brother Odo, bishop of Bayeux, who, on account of his connexion in the conspiracy in favour of Robert, duke of Normandy, was besieged in the castle and deprived of his possessions. In 1180 and again in 1137 the city was nearly destroyed by fire. A grand tournament was held at the castle by Henry III. in 1251. The city was visited in 1522 by Henry VIII. accompanied by the emperor Charles V., and in 1573 Elizabeth remained there five days. Charles II. passed through it on his way to London at the Restoration, and at the Revolution James II. embarked at the port on his way to France. The bishop’s see was founded in 600, and the city received its first charter of incorpora- tion from Henry II. in 1165. It has returned members to parlia- ment since the 23d of Edward I.

ROCHESTER, a city of the United States, capital of Monroe county, New York, lies 229 miles to the west of Albany (43° 9° 22’°44 N. lat. and 77° 36’ 50’-97 W. long.), in arich agricultural region, upon a plateau on both banks of the Genesee river, 7 miles from its mouth at Lake Ontario and 263 feet above the lake level. There are three falls in the river of 96, 26, and 83 feet respectively within the city limits, the banks below the first fall vary- ing in height from 100 to 210 feet. To this abundant water-power of the Genesee, supplemented by the trans- portation facilities afforded by the Erie Canal and the various railway connexions, Rochester mainly owes its progress and prosperity. The streets of the city are gen- erally wide, and well paved and lighted (partly by elec- tricity), and trees and flowering plants are abundant. Rochester is an important railway centre. The New York

Central Railroad, with elevated tracks through the city, has two lines east to Syracuse, two west to Buffalo and Niagara Falls respectively, and one north to Charlotte, where connexion is made with the Rome,. Watertown, and Ogdensburg line; a branch of the New York, Lake Erie, and Western Railway connects with the main line at Corning and with the Buffalo branch at Avon; the Roch-

o SSX pC tino SSK

SHUR

ay oe Vie il

OU 5 ha 1 Se ee ee N/ 7 ae ry Plan of Rochester.

ester and Pittsburgh Railway runs south to Salamanca, and the Genesee Valley Railway to Olean, crossing the West Shore Railway a short distance south of the city line ; and there are also railway lines to Irondequoit Bay and Windsor beach, and about 30 miles of street railway, radiating from the centre in all directions. The manu- factures of Rochester are numerous and varied. Though no longer at the head of the flour industry, it still possesses twenty mills, capable of producing 2900 barrels daily. The principal manufacture is that of ready-made clothing, the sales reaching $9,000,000 annually. In its boot and

ROCHESTER

shoe trade the city ranks fourth in the country (5000 hands ; annual sales, $6,500,000). There are also sixteen breweries and ten malt-houses; some eighty or ninety cigar-makers and tobacconists have a total output of about 2,000,000 ib of tobacco, 18,000,000 cigars, and 140,000,000 cigarettes; while furniture-making employs 1000 hands. The lumber business is extensive; and of late years the city has been one of the principal centres for the distribution of the anthracite and bituminous coal of Pennsylvania. Its numerous nurseries are a peculiar feature of the place ; and there is a great variety of other industries. The main supply of water is brought in iron conduits (147 miles of pipe) from Hemlock Lake, 29 miles to the south ; an additional supply for subsidiary purposes is

drawn from the Genesee river (114 miles of pipe). The total cost of the works has been $3,744,749. The princi- pal cemetery, Mount Hope, with an area of 200 acres, is exceedingly picturesque and well cared for. Rochester has two State institutions, the Western House of Refuge and the Western New York Institution for Deaf Mutes. The former, opened in 1849, is a substantial structure of brick, with accommodation for 600 inmates, built at a cost of $373,000; it receives juvenile delinquents com- mitted by magistrates ; they are instructed in trades and labour upon the farm belonging to the refuge. The insti- tution for deaf mutes (1875) instructs about 160 pupils annually. Among the eleemosynary institutions of the city are the Rochester city hospital, St Mary's hospital, the Rochester, St Patrick's, St Mary's, St Joseph's, and the Jewish orphan asylums, the home for the friendless, the industrial school, the church home, the home of in- dustry, and the home for truant children. There are 75 churches, including the Roman Catholic cathedral, 6 Baptist, 10 Methodist Episcopal, 10 Protestant Episcopal, 11 Presbyterian, 5 Lutheran, and 11 Roman Catholic churches, and 5 Jewish synagogues. The public school system of Rochester includes a free academy (cost $125,000) and thirty grammar-schools (with classes in the orphan asylums), in which 200 teachers are engaged and 10,000 pupils taught. There are also thirty private institutions, academies, seminaries, and parochial schools. The univer- sity of Rochester was established in 1850, under Baptist auspices ; its faculty consists of a president and ten pro- fessors, and the annual attendance of students is about 160. It has two buildings,—Anderson Hall and Sible Hall. The Rochester theological seminary (Baptist), founded in 1850 and housed in two commodious buildings—Trevor and Rockefeller Halls—has eight professors and about seventy students, besides a German department. Other public libraries in addition to those of the university and the theological seminary are the central and Reynolds. There are four English and two German daily newspapers, and twelve weekly and nine monthly publications. Among edifices not already mentioned are the city-hall, the United States Government building, the court-house, the Warner astronomical observatory, the Rochester and East Side savings banks, the Powers buildings, with their famous art gallery, and the Warner and Kimball factories. The population (89,366 in 1880) was estimated at 115,000 in 1885; the area of the city, which is divided into sixteen wards, is 4 square

miles. The assessed valuation of real and personal property in 1885 was $40,952,070, and the debt was $5,249,000.

Rochester derives its name from Nathaniel Rochester, who pro- jected a settlement here in 1810; the first house was built in 1812; and the incorporation of the city dates from 1834.

ROCHESTER, Joun Witmort, Ear or (1647-1680), born in Oxfordshire in 1647, was one of the unworthics of the reign of the "merry monarch, scandalous and poor,"

"Who never said a foolish thing Nor ever did a wise one."

ROC—ROC

Rochester is the author of both these imperishable descrip- tions of Charles II., and by them and his poem "' Upon Nothing," and his death-bed conversation with Bishop Burnet he is now chiefly known. His poetry has hardly had a fair chance against that of his contemporaries, for owing to his scandalous character, which was probably worse than the time only in respect of his ostentatious defiance of proprieties, all kinds of indecencies were fathered upon him and inserted in unauthorized editions of his works. This has ensured his exclusion from decent libraries, an edition issued in 1691 by friends careful of his memory having been pushed out of sight by these mnore piquant publications. His letters to his wife and his son show that the real man was much better than the public estimate of him, which he invited by his occasional daring breaches of decorum and morality. Some of his lyrics are very pretty, full of ingenious fancy and musical rhythm, but wit and intellect are more marked in his writing than the free flow of lyrical sentiment. For wit, versatility, and intense vitality of intellect this strangely wasted life stood high above the level of its age. In his youth Rochester distinguished himself in the Dutch wars by acts of signal personal bravery ; his alleged cowardice afterwards in street brawls and personal quarrels looks rather like daringly contemptuous cynicism. had a taste for the humours of low life, and is said to have haunted the low quarters of the town in various disguises, on one occasion personating a mountebank on Tower Hill. He died on 26th

July 1680, at the early age of thirty-three, and the common account is that his constitution was undermined and exhausted by profligate excesses.

ROCHE-SUR-YON, La, a town of France, the chief town of the department of La Vendée, lies 278 miles south- west of Paris by the railway to Sables d'Olonne, on an eminence 164 feet above the sea on the right bank of the Yon, a little tributary of the Lay, itself an affluent of the Pertuis Breton. In 1881 the population of the town was 9965, of the commune 10,634. The castle of La Roche- sur-Yon, which probably existed before the time of the crusades, and which was frequently attacked or taken in the Hundred Years' War and in the wars of religion, was finally dismantled under Louis XIII. ; and when Napoleon in 1805 made this place the chief town of a department the stones from its ruins were employed in the erection of the administrative buildings, which, being all produced at once after a regular plan, have a monotonous effect. The equestrian statue of Napoleon I. in an immense square over- looking the rest of the town ; the statue of General Travot, who was engaged in the " pacification" of La Vendée ; the museum, with several paintings by P. Baudry, a living native artist of note, are the only objects of interest. The dog fairs of Roche-sur-Yon are important. Napoleon- Vendée and Bourbon-Vendée, the names borne by the town according to the dominance of either dynasty, gave place to the original unpolitical name after the revolution of 1870.

ROCKET. See AmmuNITION and PyrorecHny ; for the use of rockets to rescue the shipwrecked see LirEBoat, vol. xiv. p. 572.

ROCKFORD, a city of the United States, the county seat of Winnebago county, Illinois, on both banks of the Rock river, which, rising in Wisconsin, falls into the Mis- sissippi after a course of 350 miles. By rail it lies 92 miles north-west of Chicago and is a junction of the Chicago and North-Western, the Chicago, Milwaukee, and St Paul, and the Chicago, Burlington, and Quincy Rail- roads. Abundant water-power was secured by a dam 800 feet long constructed across the river in 1844. The chief objects of industry of Rockford, one of the largest manu- facturing centres in the Mississippi valley, are agricultural

implements, furniture, watches, silver-plated ware, cutlery, tacks and nails, bolts, wire-cloth, netting, woollen and cotton goods, paper, flour, oatmeal, glucose. Waterworks on the Holly system (1874) are capable of pumping 5,500,000 gallons through the mains in twenty-four hours. The city stands in a fine agricultural district, is handsomely built and well shaded, and has a public library, a public high school, and ten other public school buildings, a seminary for girls (1849), five banks, and twenty-one churches. The population was 6976 in 1860, 11,049 in 1870, and 13,129 in 1880 (township, 14,525). Rockford was settled about 1836 ; in 1852 it received incorporation as a city. ROCKHAMPTON, a town of Queensland, is situated some 40 miles up the Fitzroy river, nearly on the Tropic of Capricorn. The streets are well formed and kept, bordered by trees, with ever-flowing water down the channels. Em- bosomed in hills, it has a climate, in spite of heat, of singular salubrity, the death-rate being only about half that of London. 'The population in 1884 was about 11,000. Rockhampton is the gateway to a fine pastoral interior and is a port of export for wool. The hills in its neighbourhood are rich in metallic wealth ; and Mount Morgan, 30 miles from Rockhampton, seems likely to eclipse the production of Victoria and New South Wales. If anything be needed to complete the prospective im- portance of Rockhampton, it is the growing development of sugar plantations at no great distance from the town. ROCKINGHAM, Cxartes Watson WENTWORTH, SECOND Marquis or (1730-1782), twice prime minister of England, was the only

son of Thomas Watson Wentworth, whose father had inherited the great Wentworth estates in Yorkshire on the death of William Wentworth, fourth earl of Strafford, and who had himself succeeded his second cousin as sixth Lord Rockingham in 1746 and been created marquis of Rockingham in the same year. Charles Watson Wentworth was born in 1730 on the 19th of March (Albe- marle), or the 13th of May (Collins), and was educated at Eton. He showed his spirit as a boy by riding across from Wentworth to Carlisle in 1745 with but one servant, to join the duke of Cumberland in his pursuit of the Young Pretender. He was created earl of Malton in the peerage of Ireland on 4th September 1750, and succeeded his father as second marquis of Rockingham on 14th December in the same year. In 1751 he became lord-lieutenant of the North and West Ridings of Yorkshire and a lord of the bedchamber, and in 1760 was made a knight of the Garter. After George III. had begun his policy of divid- ing the great Whig families, those Whig noblemen and gentlemen who did not choose to join the sections headed by the Grenvilles, the duke of Bedford, or any other great nobleman, selected as their chief the young marquis of Rockingham. In May 1762 the king's favourite, the earl of Bute, became first lord of the treasury, and the marquis of Rockingham was amongst those who in the following year were dismissed from their lord-lieutenancies. The opposition now grew so strong that Lord Bute resigned in April 1763 and the king, true to his policy, appointed George Grenville to be his successor. But Grenville's section of the Whig party was not strong enough to main- tain him in power long, and on 12th July 1765 Lord Rockingham formed his first administration with General Conway and the duke of Grafton as secretaries of state. The cabinet seemed stronger than it really was, for it was divided by intestine quarrels, and the earl of Chatham refused to have anything to do with it. Nevertheless Rockingham recovered his lord-lieutenancies and won reputation as a good administrator. In May 1766 the duke of Grafton, a far abler man than Rockingham, though neither so conciliatory in his manners nor so generally popular, seceded from the Government, and in August

1766 he succeeded his former chief as first lord of the treasury and prime minister. Then followed many years of fruitless opposition to the king's personal authority as exhibited through his ministers, but at last, on 27th March 1782, Lord Rockingham again became prime minister with Fox and Shelburne as secretaries of state. This time he enjoyed office for but a few weeks, for he died on Ist July 1782.

See Memoirs of the Marquis of Rockingham and his Contemporaries by George Thomas, Earl of Albemarle, 2 vols., 1852, and such bio- graphical works as Macknight's Life of Burke, Lord E. Fitzmaurice's Life of Lord Shelburne, &c.

ROCK ISLAND, a city of the United States, the capital of Rock Island county, Illinois, is situated opposite Davenport on the left bank of the Mississippi, about 3 miles above the mouth of the Rock river and at the foot of the Upper Rapids, which extend for about 16 miles. Distant by rail 181 miles west of Chicago and 247 miles north of St Louis, Rock Island is one of the great centres of railroad and river traflic. With Davenport (in Iowa) it is connected by a two-story road and railway bridge constructed by the Government in 1870. Among the public buildings are a large public library and St Augus- tana College, founded by the Swedish Lutherans. Glass- works, a plough factory, a distillery, flour-mills, and a stove factory are the principal industrial establishments. The city, however, is best known from the great national arsenal situated on the island from which it derives its name. This island is a ridge of limestone rock about 3 miles long and with an area of 960 acres. As the site of Fort Armstrong it became known in the Black Hawk War ; the prison was used for the detention of Confederate prisoners during the Civil War; and since that date the Government has constructed the present extensive works, intended to be the central United States armoury. There are ten vast stone workshops, each with a stone house in the rear, as well as officers' quarters, offices, &c. The population of Rock Island city was 5130 in 1860, 7890 in 1870, and 11,659 in 1880. Its charter dates from 1849,

ROCKLAND, a city and seaport of the United States, county town of Knox county, Maine, is situated 60 miles by rail east-north-east of Portland on Owl's Head Bay, an inlet of Ponobscot Bay. It was

incorporated in 1854, has an area of 7000 acres and a sea frontage of about 44 miles, and numbered 7599 inhabitants in 1880 (in 1870 7074). Lime-burning is the staple trade (1,000,000 barrels per annum). The adjacent islands—Dix Island, Hurricane Island, &c.—are known by their granite quarries. Water for the city is obtained from Lake Chickawaukie,

ROCKY MOUNTAINS. See Untrep Srarss,

_ROCROI, a town of France, the chef-lieu of an arron- dissement in the department of Ardennes, lies 15 miles in a straight line northnorth-west of Méziéres and within 2 miles of the Belgian frontier, at a height of 1083 feet above the sea. As a fortified place it commands the Ardennes plateau between the valley of the Meuse and the headwaters of the Oise. The present fortifications were constructed by Vauban. In 1881 the population was 1649 (commune 2977).

This spot, originally called Croix-de-Rau or Rau Croix, was fortified in the 16th century and besieged by the imperialists in 1555. Invested by the Spaniards in 1648, it was relieved by the

young duke of Enghien (afterwards the Great Condé) after a brilliant

victory. Captured in 1658 by the same duke, then in the Spanish service, it was not restored to France till the treaty of the Pyrences in 1659. In 1815 Rocroi was besieged for a month by the allies.

RODBERTUS, Kart JoHann (1805-1875), by some considered to be the founder of scientific socialism, was born at Greifswald on 12th August 1805, his father being a professor at the university there. He studied law at Gottingen and Berlin, thereafter engaging in various legal occupations ; and, after travelling for some time, he bought the estate of Jagetzow in Pomerania, whence his name of Rodbertus-Jagetzow. In 1836 he settled on this estate, and henceforward devoted his life chiefly to economic and other learned studies, taking also some interest in local and provincial affairs. After the revolution of March 1848 Rodbertus was elected member of the Prussian national assembly, in which body he belonged to

the left centre ; and for fourteen days he filled the post of minister of public worship and education. He sat for Berlin in the second chamber of 1849, and moved the adoption of the Frankfort imperial constitution, which was carried. When the system of dividing the Prussian electorate into three classes was adopted, Rodbertus recommended abstention from voting. His only subsequent appearance in public life was his candidature for the first North German diet, in which he was defeated. His correspondence with Lassalle was an interesting feature of his life. At one time Rodbertus had some intention of forming a "social party" with the help of the conservative socialist Rudolf Meyer and of Hasenclever, a prominent follower of Lassalle ; but no progress was made in this. Rodbertus was neither disposed nor qualified to be an agitator, being a man of a quiet and critical temperament, who believed that society could not be improved by violent changes, but by a long and gradual course of development. He warned the work- ing men of Germany against connecting themselves with any political party, enjoining them to be a "social party " pure and simple. He died on 8th December 1875.

The general position of Rodbertus was 'social, monarchical, and national." With his entire soul he held the purely economic part of the.creed of the German social-democratic party, but he did not agree with their methods, and had no liking for the productive associations with state help of Lassalle. He regarded a socialistic republic as a possible thing, but he cordially accepted the monarchic institution in his own country and hoped that a German emperor might undertake the réle of a social emperor. He was also a true patriot and was proud and hopeful of the career that lay before the regencrated empire of Germany. The basis of the economic teach- ing of Rodbertus is the principle laid down by Adam Smith and Ricardo and insisted on by all the later socialists, that labour is the source and measure of value. In connexion with this he developed the position that rent, profit, and wages are all parts of a national income produced by the united organic labour of the workers of the community. Conscquently there can be no talk of the wages of labour being paid out of capital; wages is only that part of the national income which is received by the workmen, of a national income which they have themselves entirely produced. The wages fund theory is thus summarily disposed of. But the most important result of the theory is his position that

the possession of land and capital enables the landholders and capitalists to compel the workmen to divide the product of their labour with those non- working classes, and in such a proportion that the workers only obtain as much as can support them in life. Thus the iron law of wages is established. Hence also Rodbertus deduces his theory of commercial crises and of pauperism, and in the following way.' In spite of the increasing productivity of labour, the workers obtain in general only sufficient to support their class, and therefore a smaller relative share of the national income. But the producers form also the large mass of consumers, and, with the decline of their relative share in the national income, must decline the relative purchasing power of this large class of the people. The growing production is not met by a correspondingly growing consumption ; expansion is succeeded by contraction of production, by a scarcity of employ- ment, and a further decline in purchasing power on the part of the workers. Thus we have a commercial crisis bringing with it pau- perism as a necessary result. In the meantime the purchasing power of the non-producing capitalists and landholders continues relatively to increase ; but, as they have already had cnough to buy

all the comforts of life, they spend the more in the purchase of luxuries, the production of which increases.

A fundamental part of the teaching of Rodbertus is his theory of social development. He recognized three stages in the economic progress of mankind: (1) the ancient heathen period in which property in human beings was the rule; (2) the period of private property in land and capital; (3) the period, still remote, of pro- perty as dependent on service or desert. The goal of the hnman race is to be one society organized on a communistic basis; only in that way can the principle that every man be rewarded accord- ing to his work be realized. In this communistic or socialistic state of the future land and capital will be national property, and the entire national production will be under national control ; and means will be taken so to estimate the labour of each citizen that he shall be rewarded according to its precise amount. An immense staff of state

officials will be required for this function. As we have already said, Rodbertus believed that this stage of social develop- ment is yet far distant ; he thonght that five centuries will need to pass away before the ethical force of the people can be equal to it.

From temperament, culture, and social position Rodbertus was averse to agitation as a means of hastening the new era; and, in the measures which he recommends for making the transition towards it he showed a scrupulous regard for the existing interests of the capitalists and landholders. He proposed that those two classes should be left in full possession of their present share of the national income, but that the workers shonld reap the benefit of the increasing production. To secnre them this increment of pro- duction he proposed that the state should fix a 'normal working day " for the various trades, a normal day's work, and a legal wage, the amount of which should be revised periodically, and raised according to the increase of production, the better workman receiv- ing a better wage. By measures such as these carried out by the state in order to correct the evils of competition wonld Rodbertus seek to make the transition into the socialistic era.

The economic work of Rodbertus is therefore an attempt made in a temperate and scientific spirit to elucidate the evil tendencies inherent in the competitive system, especially as exemplified in the operation of the iron law of wages. The remedy he proposes is a state management of production and distribution, which shall extend more and more, till we arrive at a complete and universal socialism,—and. all based on the principle that as labour is the source of value so to the labourer should all wealth belong. It is therefore an attempt to place socialism on a scientific basis; and he is certainly entitled to be regarded as one of the founders of " scientific socialism " (see SOCIALISM).

*The following are the most important works of Rodbertus :—Zur Erkenntniss unserer staatswirthschaftlichen Zustdnde (1842); Sociale Briefe an von Kirchmann (1850); Creditnoth des Grundbesitzes (2d ed., 1876); '*Der Normal-Arbeitstag," in Tib. Zeitschrift (1878) 5 Letters to A. Wagner, &c., Tiib. Zeitschrift (1878-79) ; Letters to Rudolf Meyer (1882). Within recent years Rodbertus has received great attention in Germany,*

especially from Adolf Wagner (ib. Zeitschrift, 1878); see also Kozak's work on Rodbertus (1882), and an excellent, monograph by G. Adler (Leipsic, 1884).

RODERICK. See Sparn.

RODEZ, a town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Aveyron and the see of a bishop, 412 miles south of Paris by the railway which continues to Béziers, is built at a height of 2077 feet on a promontory surrounded by the Aveyron, a sub-tributary of the Garonne by the Tam. In population—14,425 inhabitants (15,333in the commune) in 1881—it ranks next to the industrial town of Millau. The cathedral was built between 1277 and 1535. A great flamboyant rose window and a gallery in the same style are the chief features of the principal facade. Each tran- sept has a fine Gothic doorway. At the north side of the building rises a tower (erected in the beginning of the 16th century) which ranks by its height as one of the wonders of the south of France, and bears aloft a colossal statue of the Virgin surrounded by the four evangelists. The interior has a fine rood loft and several interesting tombs. The episcopal palace with its collection of sculp- tured stones; the church of St Amans, in the Romanesque style, but entirely restored externally in the 18th century ; and several curious old houses of the 13th, 15th, and 16th centuries, such as the Hétel d'Armagnac, on the site of the old palace of the counts, also deserve to be mentioned. The ruins of a Roman amphitheatre still exist, and the town is supplied with water by the old Roman aqueduct recently restored.

Rodez, called Segodunum under the Gauls and Ruthena under the

Romans, was the capital of a tribe allied to the Arvernians. In the 4th century it adopted the Christian faith and St Amans, its

first bishop, was elected in 401. During the Middle Ages con- tests were rife between the bishops in the "city" and the counts in the "bourg." The Albigenses were defeated near Rodez in 1210. The countship of Rodez depended in succession on the count of Toulonse, on the king of France,

and from the close of the 13th century on the count of Armagnac. From 1360 to 1368 the English held the town. After the confiscation of the estates of the Armagnacs in 1473 it passed to the dukes of Alencon and then to the D'Albrets. Henry IV. finally annexed it to the crown of France. Neither the Protestants nor the Leaguers any more than in earlier days the Albigenses were able to make themselves masters of Rodez.

RODNEY, Grorce Brypeus Ropnuy, Baron (1718- 1792), English admiral, second son of Henry Rodney of Walton-on-Thames, was born there on 19th February 1718. His father had served in Spain under the earl of Peter- borough, and on quitting the army obtained command of the king's yacht. George was sent to Harrow when quite young, and on leaving entered the navy. By warrant dated 21st June 1732 he was appointed as volunteer on board the "Sunderland," a fourth-rate. While serving on the Mediterranean station under Admiral Haddock he was made lieutenant in the "Dolphin," his promotion dating 15th February 1739. In 1742 he attained the rank of post-captain, having been appointed to the " Plymouth," 9th November. After minor services of an active charac- ter in home waters, he obtained command of the " Eagle," sixty guns, and in this ship took part in Hawke's victory off Ushant, 14th October 1747, over the French fleet under L'Etanduére. On that day Rodney gained his first laurels for gallantry, under a chief to whom he was in a measure indebted for subsequent success. On 9th May 1749 he was appointed governor and commander-in-chief of New- foundland, with the rank of commodore, it being usual at that time to appoint a naval officer, chiefly on account of the fishery interests. Returning home, he was elected M.P. for Saltash in May 1751, and married his first wife, Jane Compton, sister to the earl of Northampton, 3d February 1753. During the Seven Years' War Rodney rendered important service. In 1757 he had a share in the expedi- tion against Rochefort, commanding the "Dublin," seventy- four. Next year, in the same ship, he served under Admiral Boscawen at the taking of Louisburg (Cape Breton). On 19th May 1759 Rodney became a rear- admiral and was shortly after given command of a small squadron intended to destroy a large number of flat- bottomed boats and stores which were being collected at Havre for an invasion of the English coasts. He bom- barded the town for two days and nights without

ceasing, and inflicted great loss of war-material on the enemy. In July 1760, with another small squadron, he succeeded in taking many more of the enemy's flat-bottomed boats and in blockading the coast as far as Dieppe. Elected M.P. for Penryn in 1761, he was in October of that year appointed commander-in-chief of the Leeward Islands station, and within the first three months of 1762 had reduced the important island of Martinique, while both St Lucia and Grenada had surrendered to his squadron. During the siege of Fort Royal his seamen and marines rendered splendid service on shore. At the peace of 1763 Admiral Rodney returned home, having been during his absence made vice-admiral of the Blue and voted the thanks of both Houses of Parliament.

In 1764 Rodney was created a baronet by patent of 21st January, and the same year he married Henrietta, daughter of John Clies of Lisbon. From 1765 to 1770 he was governor of Greenwich Hospital, and on the dissolution of parliament in 1768 he successfully contested Northamp- ton at a ruinous cost. When appointed commander-in-chief of the Jamaica station in 1771 he lost his Greenwich post, but a few months later received the office of rear-admiral of Great Britain. Till 1774 he held the Jamaica com-

mand, and during a period of quiet was active in improv- ing the naval yards on his station. Sir George struck his flag with a feeling of disappointment at not obtaining the governorship of Jamaica, and was shortly after forced to settle in Paris. Election expenses and losses at play in fashionable circles had shattered his fortune and now broke up his family till the eve of war with France. In February 1778, having just been promoted admiral of the White, he used every possible exertion to obtain a com- mand from the Admiralty, to free himself from his money difficulties. By May he had, through the splendid gener- osity of his Parisian friend Maréchal Biron, effected the latter task, and accordingly he returned to London with his children. Sir George was enabled to remit at once to his benefactor the full loan, and it is worthy of record that the English Government in later years awarded pensions to the maréchal's

daughters in recognition of their father's chivalrous act.! That an attempt was made by the French ministry during the war crisis to seduce Rodney into accepting high rank in the French navy is undeniable from the evidence we possess, but the details of the com- mon version must be accepted with reserve, excepting the undoubted instant rejection of the offer. To the English cabinet the honour of both Rodney and Biron remained untarnished, if we may judge of the former by his letters, public and private, and of the latter by the pension awarded to his relatives."

Sir George was appointed once more commander-in-chief of the Leeward Islands, 1st October 1779, but did not sail till 29th December. He captured a Spanish convoy bound to Cadiz on 8th January 1780, and eight days later defeated the Spanish admiral Don Juan de Langara off Cape St Vincent, taking or destroying seven ships. On 17th April an action, which, owing to the carelessness of some of Rodney's captains, was indecisive, was fought off Martinique with the French admiral Guichen. Rodney, acting under orders, captured the valuable entrepdt of St Eustatius, and by his strong measures for stopping illegal and contra- band trade evoked an attempt at censure on the part of his political opponents. After a few months in England, recruiting his health and defending himself in parliament, Sir George returned to his command in February 1782, and a running engagement with the French fleet on 9th April led up to his crowning victory off Dominica, when on 12th April with thirty-five sail of the line he defeated Comte de Grasse, who had thirty-three sail. The French inferiority in numbers was more than counterbalanced by the greater size and superior sailing qualities of their ships, yet five were taken and one sunk, after eleven hours' fight- ing. This important battle saved Jamaica and ruined French naval prestige, while it enabled Rodney to write— 'Within two little years I have taken two Spanish, one French, and one Dutch admirals." A long and wearisome controversy exists as to the originator of the manceuvre of "breaking the line" in this battle, but the merits of the victory have never seriously been affected by any differ- ence of opinion on the question. A shift of wind broke the French line of battle, and advantage was taken of this by the English ships in two places.

Rodney arrived home in August to receive unbounded honour from his country. He had already been created Baron Rodney of Rodney Stoke,

Somerset, by patent of 19th June 1782, and the House of Commons had voted him a pension of £2000 a year. From this time he led a a a ee Se

1 See Barrow's Life of Anson, pp. 328-329,

*; * See Naval Chronicle, 1799, i. 369-370; Mundy, Life of Rodney, i. 183 3 United Service Journal, 1830, pt. ii. pp. 37-38, for diver- gent evidence about the French offer of service, See also Academy,*

4th October 1884, for the identification of a letter which perhaps bears upon Sir G. Rodney's prospects in 1778.

quiet country life till his death, which occurred on 24th May 1792, in London, while on a visit to his son. Next to Nelson we may fairly place Rodney, not only because of his well-merited successes, but for masterly decision and confident boldness in grappling with fleets of the three chief maritime states of Europe while in the plenitude of their power. He fought his equals in naval science, but conquered by superior practical skill.

See General Mundy, Life and Correspondence of Admiral Lord Rodney, 2 vols., 1830; Rodney letters in 9th Report of Hist. MSS. Com., pt. ili. ; "Memoirs" in Naval Chronicle i. 353-393; and Charnock, Biographia Navalis v. 204-228, Lord Rodney published in his lifetime (probably 1789) Letters to His Majesty's Ministers, d&c., relative to St Eustatius, &c., of which there is a copy in the British Museum. Most of these letters are printed in Mundy's Life, vol. ii, though with many variant readings. (G. F. H.)

RODOSTO, a town of European Turkey, in the sandjak of Tekfur Daghi or Rodosto in the vilayet of Adrianople (Edirne), is situated on the coast of the Sea of Marmora about midway between Gallipoli and Constantinople. Its picturesque bay is enclosed by the great promontory of Combos, a spur about 2000 feet in height from the hilly plateau to the north, and round about the town are stately cypress groves. 'The church of Panagia Rhevmatocratissa contains the graves, with long Latin inscriptions, of the Hungarian exiles of 1696. Rodosto has long been a

great depot for the produce of the Adrianople district, but its trade has suffered considerably since Dedeagatch became the terminus of the railway up the Maritza. In 1880 the value of exports and imports was £230,824. The popula- tion, formerly about 30,000, was in 1840 about 10,000, and at present (1885) may be estimated at 17,000, about half Turks, a quarter Armenians, and the remainder Greeks, Jews, and Latins.

Rodosto is the ancient Rhedestus or Bisanthe, said to have been founded by Samians. In Xenophon's Anabasis it is mentioned as in the kingdom of the Thracian prince Seuthes. Its restoration by Justinian is chronicled by Procopius. In 813 and again in 1206 it was destroyed by the Bulgarians, but it continues to appear

as a place of considerable note in later Byzantine history, being captured and recaptured in successive wars.

RODRIGUEZ, an island in the Indian Ocean in 19° 41'S, lat. and 63° 23' E. long., which, after the Seychelles, forms since 1814 the most important dependency of the British colony of Mauritius, from which it is distant 344 nautical miles. It is the easternmost of all the islands con- sidered as belonging to Africa. With a length of 13 miles east and west and a breadth of 3 to 6 north and south it has an area estimated at 424 square miles. On all sides it is surrounded by a coral reef, which on the north and south forms a large flat area partly dry at low water. The island proper was long believed to consist of granite overlaid with limestone and other modern formations, and thus it was regarded as a striking exception to the rule that all mid-ocean islands are of volcanic origin, and served in the hands of Peschel and others as a proof of the fermer exist-

ence in the Indian Ocean of the hypothetical continent of

Lemuria. The investigations of the Transit of Venus Ex- pedition have shown that it is built up of " doleritic lavas which have been poured out at a considerable number of orifices," now difficult to identify, at successive periods of uncertain date. The lavas are rich in olivine. In some places, as in the Cascade Valley, the disintegration of the rocks has produced beds of earthy clays varying in colour from a dull brick red to a liver brown, and forming a prominent feature in the landscape. A central ridge of

considerable elevation (Grande Montagne, 1140 feet) runs through the island from east to west, sending off a variety of spurs (Le Piton, 1160 feet). Deep-cut river valleys, often interrupted by cascades, run down in all directions to the sea. On the south-west there is a large plain of coralline limestone, remarkable for the caves of all sizes (some beautifully stalactitic) with which it is riddled,

Along the north and west coast there are on the reef a number of islands of volcanic origin ; those on the south- east are all of coralline limestone or sand. There are only two passages through the reef available for large vessels, —these leading respectively to Port Mathurin and to Port South-East. Rodriguez is comparatively arid; and the streams are as short-lived for the most part as they are beautiful. The climate is like that of Mauritius, but more subject to hurricanes during the north-west monsoon (November to April).

About 1845 the population of Rodriguez was about 250 persons. The original nucleus consisted of slaves from Mauritius, and recruits arrived from Madagascar and the African continent. By 1871 they had increased to 1108 and by 1881 to 1436. The island is governed by a civil commissioner, who is also a police magistrate. Capitalists from Mauritius are beginning to pay attention to the natural advantages of the island. A carriage road has been constructed from Mathurin to Gabriel, the only other village, where the Roman Catholic priests have their chapel and residence.

When originally discovered and down into the 17th century Rodriguez was clothed with fine timber trees; but goats, cattle, and bushi-fires have combined to destroy the great bulk of the old vegetation, and the indigenous plants have in many cases been ousted by intrusive foreigners. When the island was in French possession many settlers cultivated large estates, and fortunes were realized ; but with the liberation of the slaves the area of cultiva- tion decreased, and it is now of very limited extent. The staple crop is the sweet potato ; and manioc, maize, millet, and rice grow well, but are not much cultivated. Wheat is seldom seen, mainly because of the parakeets and the Java sparrows. Beans (Phaseolus

lunatus), lentils, gram (Cicer arietinum), dholl (Cajanus indicus), and ground-nuts are all grown to a certain extent in spite of the ravages of the rats (Balfour). Mangoes, bananas, guavas, pine-apples, custard- apples, and especially oranges, citrons, and limes, are the fruits that flourish best. Of the timber trees the most common are Eleoden- dron orientale, much used in carpentry and for pirogues, and Latania Verschafeltt (Leguat's plantane). At least two species of screw- pine (Pandanus heterocarpus, Balf. fil. and P. tenutfolius) occur freely throughout the island. The total number of known species, according to Professor I. B. Balfour, is 470, belonging to 85 families and 293 genera; and of these 297 are phanerogamous and 173 cryptogamous. The families represented by the greatest number of species are G'raminewx (21 indigenous, 6 introduced), Leguminose (14 ind., 15 intr.), Convoluulacee (11 ind., 4 intr.), Malvaceex (9 ind.), Rubiaces (8 ind.), Cyperacce (8 ind.), Huphorbiacex (8 ind.), Liliacese (6 ind.), Compositz (5 ind., 6intr.). Mathurina pendulifiora (Tur- neraece) is interesting, as its nearest congener is in Central America, and the family has not hitherto been found in the Mascarenes. Of 33 species of mosses 17 are peculiar. Variability of species and heterophylly are characteristic of the flora to quite an unusual degree. To the naturalist Rodriguez is as interesting as it is to the botanist. At present the only indigenous mammal is a species of fruit-eating bat (Pteropus rodericensis), and the introduced species are such familiar creatures as the pig, rabbit, rat, mouse, &c. ; but down toa recent period the island was the home ofa very large land-tortoise (Testudo Vosmaert or rodericensis), and its limestone caves have yielded a large number of skeletons of the dodo-like solitaire (Pezophaps solitarius), which still built its mound-like nest in the island in the close of the 17th century, but is now extinct (see vol. iii. p. 732). Of indigenous birds 13 species have been registered. The guinea-fowl (introduced) has become exceedingly abundant, partly owing to a protective game-law ; and a francolin (F. ponticerianus), popularly a " partridge," is also common. The marine fish-fauna does not differ from that of Mauritius, and the freshwater species, with the exccption of Mugil rodericensis and Myxus cecuticus, are common to all the Mascarenes. Thirty-five species of crustaceans are known. 'The insects (probably very im- perfectly registered) comprise 60 specics of Coleoptera, 15 Hymeno- plera, 21 Lepidoptera, 15 Orthoptera, and 20 Hemiptera. Forty- nine species of

coral have been collected, showing a close affinity to those of Mauritius, Madagascar, and the Seychelles.

Rodriguez or Diego Ruy's Island was discovered by the Portu- guese in 1645. In 1690 Duquesne prevailed on the Dutch Govern- ment to send a body of French refugecs to the Island of Bourbon, at that time, he believed, abandoned by the French authorities. As the refugees, however, found the French in possession they pro- ceeded to Rodriguez, and there eight of their number were landed on 30th April 1691 with a promise that they should be visited by their compatriots within two years. The two years were spent

without misadventure, but, instead of waiting for the arrival of their friends, the seven colonists (for one had meanwhile died) rashly left the island on 8th May 1693 and made their way to Mauritius, where they were treated with great cruelty by the governor. The account of the enterprise left us by Francis Leguat— Voyages et Aventures (London, 1708), or, as it is called in the English trans- lation, 4 New Voyage to the East Indies (London, 1708)—is a most garrulous and amusing narrative, and was for a long time almost the only source of information about Rodriguez. His description of the solitaire is of course unique.

See Charles Grant, Hist. of Mauritius and the Neighbouring Islands, 1801 ; Higgin, in Jour. R. G. Soc., London, 1849; the Reports of the results of the Transit of Venus Expedition, 1874-75, published as an extra volume of The Philosophical Transactions (clxviii.), London 1879 (Botany, by I. B. Balfour ; Petrology, by N. 8. Maskelyne, &c.); Behm, in Petermann's Mittheilungen, 1880; Colonial Office List, 1884, 1885.

ROE. See Duzer, vol. vii. p. 24.

ROE or Row, Sir THomas (156871644), an eminent political agent of the reigns of James I. and Charles L., was born in 1568 (?) at Low Leyton near Wanstead in Essex (being a grandson of Sir Thomas Roe, a well-known lord mayor of London). He was entered as a commoner at Magdalen College, Oxford, in 1593, but shortly after- wards he left the

university and, having read for the bar, became esquire of the body to Queen Elizabeth. From James I, he received the honour of knighthood in 1604, and in 1609 he was sent by Prince Henry on a mission to the West Indies, during which he visited Guiana and the river Amazons, As member of parliament in 1614 he supported the principles of Sandys and Whitelocke. His permanent reputation was mainly secured by the success which attended his embassy in 1615-18 to the court at Agra of the Great Mogul (Jahangir, son of Akbar), whose importance had been made known by Sir John Hawkins, —the principal object of the mission being to obtain the protection of an English factory at Surat. Sir Thomas Roe's Journal, reprinted in a more or less complete shape in the collections of Purchas, Pinkerton, and Kerr, forms one of tlie leading authorities for the reign of Jahangir. Appointed ambassador to the Porte in 1621, he filled this difficult position under Osman, Mustapha, and Amurat ; and after his return from the East he continued to be em- ployed on various political missions to Poland, Denmark, and other European courts, till in 1641 he was sent by Charles I. to the diet of Ratisbon. Roe died in 1644.

The Society for the Encouragement of Learning proposed to pub- lish a whole series of Roe's papers, but owing to lack of funds only one of the five volumes, edited by Samuel Richardson, ever saw the light—The Negotiations of Sir Thomas Roe in his Embassy to the Ottoman Porte, 1621-1628 (London, 1740). In regard to his minor publications and manuscript remains see Wood's Athenx Oxontenses ; Allibone's Dictionary of British … Authors; and Notes and Queries, vli., viii., ix., and xi. (2d ser.).

ROEBLING, Jonn Avucusrus (1806-1869), civil en- gineer, was born at Miihlhausen, Prussia, 6th June 1806. Soon after his graduation from the polytechnic school at Berlin he removed to the United States, and in 1831 entered on the practice of his profession in western Penn- sylvania. He established at Pittsburgh a manufactory of wire rope, and in May 1845 completed his first important structure, the suspended aqueduct of the Pennsylvania Canal across the Monongahela river. This was followed by the Monongahela suspension bridge at Pittsburgh and several suspended aqueducts on the Delaware and Hudson Canal. Removing his wire manufactory to Trenton, New Jersey, he began, in 1851, the erection at

Niagara Falls of a long span wire suspension bridge with double roadway, for railway and carriage use (see Bripcx, vol. iv. pp. 338-339), which was completed in 1855. Owing to the novelty of its design, the most eminent engineers, including Stevenson, regarded this bridge as foredoomed to failure ; but, with its complete success, demonstrated by long use, the number of suspension bridges rapidly multiplied, the use of wire-ropes instead of chain-cables becoming all but universal, The completion, in 1867, of the still more

remarkable suspension bridge over the Ohio river at Cincinnati, with a clear span of 1057 feet (see CINCINNATI, vol. v. p. 782), added to Roebling's reputation, and his de- sign for the great bridge spanning the East River between New York and Brooklyn was accepted.' While personally engaged in laying out the towers for the bridge, Roebling received an accidental injury, which resulted in his death, at Brooklyn, from tetanus, 22d July 1869.

At the time of his death Roebling's work on Long and Short Span Bridges (New York, 1869) was in the press. It is devoted to an exposition of his belief that "the principle of suspension will of necessity become the main feature in our future long span railway bridges," and was intended as the initial volume of a series relating to his general theory of bridge construction, with detailed plans and descriptions of the larger works erected by him.

ROEMER, O xz (Latinized Otavs) (1644-1710), Danish astronomer, was born at Aarhuus in Jutland, 25th Septem- ber 1644. He studied mathematics at the university of Copenhagen until 1671, when he assisted Picard in de- termining the geographical position of Tycho Brahe's observatory (Uranienburg on the island of Huen). In 1672 he accompanied Picard to Paris, where he remained nine years, occupied with observations at the new royal observatory and hydraulic works at Versailles and Marly. In 1675 he read a paper before the Academy on the suc- cessive propagation of light as revealed by a certain in- equality in the motion of the first of Jupiter's satellites (see PARALLAX, vol. xviii. p. 251). In 1681 he returned to Copenhagen, where he spent the remainder

of his days as professor of astronomy, but his great ability and prac- tical talents were made use of in several other public employments. He died on 23d September 1710.

Roemer's name is now best known by his discovery of the finite velocity of light. Most of his contemporaries doubted the reality of this discovery, chiefly because the eclipses of the three outer satellites of Jupiter did not show similar irregularities to those exhibited by the first satellite. This is not surprising, as the mutual attraction of the satellites makes their motions far more complicated than astronomers imagined before the development of the theory of gravitation, and it should perhaps be chiefly ascribed to chance that Roemer brought forward his theory, which Bradley's discovery of the aberration of light about fifty years later proved to be a true one. Roemer's ingenuity has, however, appeared very pro- minently in the important improvements which he carried out in the construction of astronomical instruments. The large ' armil- lary spheres," first constructed by the astronomers of Alexandria and also used by Tycho Brahe, had been superseded by the meridian or mural quadrant for measuring meridian zenith distances, and by the sextant for measuring distances between stars in order to find their difference of right ascension by solving the spherical triangle between the pole and the two stars. Both these instruments were introduced by Tycho Brahe. Roemer, however, saw that Tycho's idea of making the rotating earth itself an astronomical instrument by observing the transits of stars across the meridian could be carried out better by fixing a telescope at right angles to a hori- zontal axis plaeed exactly east and west, so that the telescope could only move in the meridian. The first transit instrument was con- structed in 1689 and erected in Roemer's house in 1690. In the same year hie erected in the university observatory an instrument with altitude and azimuth circles (for observing equal altitudes on both sides of the meridian) and an equatorial instrament, In 1704 he constructed a private observatory at Vridlésemagle, a few miles west of Copenhagen, and mounted a meridian circle (the transit instrument and vertical circle combined) and a transit instrument moving in the prime vertical. Roemer may thus be considered the inventor of nearly all our modern instruments of precision, and it is much to be regretted that his ideas were not adopted by astro- nomers until about a century later. All the results of his observa-

tions were destroyed in a great conflagration in 1728, except three days' work, which has been discussed by Galle (0. Roemer triduum observationwm astronomicarum a. 1706 tinstitutarwm, Berlin, 1845). His disciple Horrebow has left us a very detailed description of Roemer's instruments and ideas in his Opera mathematieo-physiea (3 vols., Copenhagen, 1740-41). Grant's History of Physieal Astro- nomy (London, 1852) gives a very correct account of Roemer and his Inventions. About his life see also an article by Philipsen in Nordisk Universitets Tidsskrift, vol. v., 1860.

1 For description of this the largest wire

suspension bridge in the world, see New Yorx City, vol. xvii. p. 465 – =

ROE—ROG

ROERMOND or RorErMonne (i.e., "'Roer-Mouth"), a town of the Netherlands in the province of Limburg (formerly Guelderland), on the right bank of the Maas (Meuse) at the mouth of the Roer, which separates it from the suburb of St Jacob. It is 294 miles from Maestricht by the railway to Venlo (opened 1865). The old forti- fications were dismantled in 1819 and have been partly turned into promenades. At this point the Maas is crossed by a bridge erected in 1866-67, and the Roer by one dating from 1771 and replacing the older structure destroyed in 1764, The finest building in the town is the Romanesque minster church, begun in 1218, and dedicated by Arch- bishop Engelbert of Cologne. In the middle of the nave is the tomb of Count Gerhard III. of Guelderland and his wife Margaret. The cathedral of St Christopher is also of note; on the top of the tower (246 feet) is a copper statue of the saint and the interior is adorned with paint- ings by Rubens, Jacob de Wit, &c. The Reformed church was once the chapel of the monastery of the Minorites. The old bishop's palace is now the court-house, and the old Jesuits' monastery with its fine gardens is now occu- pied as a higher burgher school. Woollen, cotton, silk, and mixed stuffs, paper, flour, and beer are manufactured at Roermond. The population of the town was 5712 in 1840 and 8797 in 1870; and that of the commune has increased from 6005 in 1840 to 10,470 in 1879,

Till the 13th century Roermond was only a village with a hunt- ing lodge known as Pot. The erection of the monastic church in 1218 was followed by the building of town walls in 1231 by Count Otho II. In 1543 Roermond was occupied by the troops of Charles V., and in the course of the Kighty Years' War few places more frequently changed hands. The peace of Miinster (1648) left it in the Spanish Netherlands ; but between 1702 and 1716 it was held by the forces of the United Provinces.

ROGATION DAYS, the Monday, Tuesday, and Wednes- day before Ascension Day. The week in which they occur is sometimes called Rogation Week. See Lirany, vol. xiv. pp. 695-696.

ROGER I, "grand count" of Sicily, the twelfth and youngest son of Tancred de Hauteville in Normandy, was born about 1031. – He joined his brother Roprrtr GuiscarD (q.v.) in Italy in 1058, and after taking part with him in his conquests on the mainland passed over to Sicily in 1061. There such success attended his arms that in 1071 he took the title of count ; in 1089 he became " grand count" and in 1098 received from the pope for himself and his suc- cessors the title of "legate apostolical " in Sicily. He died in 1101, See Srcity.

ROGER IL, count of Sicily, son of the preceding, was born about 1093 and died in 1154. He obtained from the antipope Anacletus II. the title of king of Sicily in 1130, and was crowned in the same year. The title was afterwards confirmed in 1139 by Innocent II. See Sicrty.

ROGER or Hovepon. See Hovenoy, vol. xii. p. 319.

ROGER oF Wenpover, who was a monk in the abbey of St Albans, and who died prior of Belvoir in 1237, was long regarded as the sole author of .a Latin chronicle entitled Flores Historiarum, being a history of the world from the creation down to the year 1235. Recent investi- gation, however, has disclosed that only the portion from 1189 onwards is from his pen, and that the remainder must be attributed to John de Cella, who was abbot of St Albans from 1195 to 1214. See vol. xv. p. 634.

ROGERS, Joun (c. 1500-1555), editor of the English Bible known as Matthew's. See vol. viii. p. 386.

ROGERS, Samurn (1763-1855), the 'melodious Rogers" of Byron, the ""memory Rogers" of the general reader, has a unique reputation among English men of letters. Not only was he a poet of sufficient mark to be hailed by Byron—with perverse but sincere admiration— as one of the few men of genuine weight in an age of

ROGERS

scribblers, but he was also for fifty years the most cele- brated entertainer of celebrities in London. From 1803, when he removed from his chambers in the Temple, till the last year of his long life, his house, 22 St James's Place, was the common meeting-ground of men of distinc- tion in every walk of life. Hence, though his poems are no longer read except by the student, his name is kept alive in the letters and diaries of associates whose works are more permanent than his own,—kept alive, too, not merely as that of a cultured Amphitryon but as that of a conversational wit whose tart sayings are worthy of record.

He was born at Newington Green (London) on 30th July 1763, the son of a wealthy London banker, and re- lated on the mother's side to the celebrated Noncon- formist divines Philip and Matthew Henry. Dr Price, the Unitarian, Burke's antagonist, was the family pastor and a frequent visitor at his father's house. The influ- ence of this writer's philosophy can be traced in Rogers's poems. Rogers was educated at the famous Nonconformist academy at Newington Green, where Defoe had been a pupil a hundred years before. Attention to English studies had been a distinct object in this school from its founda- tion, and Rogers, his youthful ambition awakened, rushed into print as an essayist in the Gentleman's Magazine at the age of eighteen. His main desire then was to be a preacher like Dr Price; but he yielded to his father's advice and entered the paternal bank. But he was far from abandoning his love for literature. He read Gray and Goldsmith on his way to the bank, and in 1786 proved his admiration for these exemplars in a volume containing some pretty imitations of Goldsmith and a wildly apostrophic Ode to Superstition after the manner of Gray. This volume contains one of the few passages of his that are often quoted—

'There 's such a charm in melancholy, I would not, if I could, be gay."

Following Gray's example, the youthful poet took great pains with his verses, and, after nine years' maturing, published in 1792 a more elaborate and more successful bid for poetic laurels, The Pleasures of Memory. This poem may be regarded as the last blaze of the poetic diction of the 18th century before its final extinction. We see here carried to the extremest pitch the theory of elevating and refining familiar themes by abstract treat- ment and noble imagery. So simple an act as that of trying to remember a half-forgotten fact or fancy is elabo- rately and beautifully compared to the search of an im- patient mother for a child lost in a forest. The common organ-grinder becomes "the blithe son of Savoy," and as such is presented in a most romantic situation as an object for refined sympathy. The good familiar creature memory itself is transfigured into a gracious personifica- tion of most benignant and wide-reaching power. In this art of "raising a subject," as the 18th century phrase was, the Pleasures of Memory is much more perfect than Campbell's Pleasures of Hope, published a few years later in imitation. Byron's criticism is complete,—" there is not a vulgar line in the poem." This is the acme of positive praise for the fashionable serious poetry of the 18th century: when this can be said of a poet, he has reached the perfection of its ideal of poetic diction. In this poem the characters of the school can be analysed in cold blood, for there is not much excitement in laboured reflexions on the pleasures of memory. Human interest is at a minimum in such frigid exercises; it is almost entirely an affair of diction. The chief feeling excited is astonishment at the pains taken by the poet to provide thick and showy wrappages for such starveling little children of thought.

It was six years before Rogers was ready with another

of his elaborate poems,—An Epistle to a Friend (1798). This has at least the advantage of some personal interest. It describes the poet's ideal of a comfortable life, and may be put side by side with Pomfret's Choice for literary comparison, and with the poet's own life for fifty years afterwards. Although for conventional poetic reasons Rogers establishes his ideal house in the country instead of in St James's Place, still the

principles of living are the same which afterwards regulated his real life and were carried out with easy steady perseverance. "It is the design of this Epistle to illustrate the virtue of True Taste; and to show how little she requires to secure not only the comforts but even the elegancies of life. True Taste is an excellent Economist." Rogers illustrated this maxim in proceeding to surround himself with rare and beautiful works of art and letters, and to make his house the centre for all that was most distinguished and agreeable in London society. Many persons in his time spent ten times as much in the pursuit of a similar object without one-tenth of the success. 'I believe," Mrs Norton wrote, '""no man ever was so much attended to and thought of who had so slender a fortune and such calm abilities. His God was Harmony ; and over his life Harmony presided sitting on a lukewarm cloud." When he moved to St James's Place in 1803 he withdrew from active concern in the bank, contenting himself with a moderate income as a sleeping partner; and so careful a manager was he of this income that he was able not only to entertain and to buy choice things—his collection, which seems to have contained hardly a particle of rubbish, fetching £50,000 when sold after his death—but also to extend generous help to struggling men of letters. It was Rogers who came to Sheridan's relief in his last days when he was deserted by his titled friends; Moore and Campbell received help in need from him, as munificent as it was delicately offered ; and he was always ready to befriend much less distinguished merit in distress. It was perhaps character- istic of a man so cautious, equable, and dispassionate that his wit had a depreciating turn and was often exercised with calm insolence at the expense of fussy pretence. But that the man was on the whole of a kindly and lovable nature was shown by an incident late in his life. His popularity was put to the test of misfortune by the robbery of his bank. Most of the money was recovered, but upon the news of the misfortune several men of wealth and title came forward with large offers of assistance.

Although the laureateship was pressed upon Rogers by the prince consort on Wordsworth's death in 1850, he had not been a prolific poet during his long life of cultured leisure and social enjoyment. He continued his practice of writing little and writing slowly. Fourteen years in- tervened between the Lpistle and the publication of the Voyage of Columbus in

1812. In method this poem was a compromise between the old school of reflective poetry and the new school of narrative. The story of Columbus was the theme, but the story was not told: it was only indicated in a series of reflexions on its most striking moments. The experiment helped forward the literary movement ; the new school through Byron took the hint, and The Giaour, though interpenetrated with a more vigorous life, was avowedly written on the model of Columbus, and dedicated to Rogers. In his next poem, Jacqueline, which was published in the same volume with Byron's Lara in 1814, much to the benefit of the wits of the time, Rogers may be said to have gone over to the new school, adopting their four-accent measure and show- ing his skill, which was considerable, in pure narrative. His reflective poem on H/uman Lrfe, though published in 1819, can hardly be described as a reversion, for he had been engaged on it off and on for twelve years. It is

much the best of his meditative poems, as elegant and finished in diction as the Afemory, and much more incisive in thought and touching in sentiment. His last, longest, and most interesting published work was Italy, the first instalment of which was published in 1821 and the last in 1834. It is said that, when the publisher complained that the public would not buy Jéaly, Rogers affirmed that he "would make them buy it"; and, calling in the aid of Turner and Stothard, he produced the sumptuous illus- trated edition at a cost of £15,000. Apart from these adventitious charms Jtaly has much greater general interest than any other of Rogers's poems, and is likely to be read for long, if only as a traveller's companion. 'The style is studiously simple; the blank verse has quite an Eliza- bethan flavour, and abounds in happy lines ; the reflexions have a keen point; and the incidental stories are told with admirable brevity and effect. Passages of prose are inter- spersed, wrought with the same care as the verses, and the notes are models of interesting detail concisely put. For the last five years of his life Rogers, who had been extremely active till his eighty-eighth year, was confined to his chair in consequence of a fall in the street. He died in London on 18th December 1855, in his ninety-third year. Only very fragmentary records are preserved of the brilliant gatherings at breakfast and dinner in his house. Fragments are

to be gleaned in the diaries of Byron, Moore, Sydney Smith, and others. Recollections of his table-talk were published in 1856, and a volume of his Recollections of celebrities in 1857. A complete Life is understood (1885) to be in preparation, with Mr P. W. Clayden as editor. Mr Hayward's essay is the most complete account of Rogers hitherto published. (w. M.) ROHAN, Henrt px (1579-1638), a general and writer of eminence and one of the last and best representatives of the independent French noblesse, was born at the chateau of Bleins in Brittany on 21st August 1579. His father was René IL, count of Rohan, and head of a family which had hardly a superior in France for antiquity and distinction, and which was connected with most of the reigning houses of Europe. Rohan was by birth the second son, but his elder brother René dying young he becaine the heir of the name. He appeared at court and in the army at the age of sixteen, and was a special favourite with Henry IV., after whom, failing the house of Condé, he might be said to be the natural chief of the French Protestants. Having served till the peace of Vervins, he travelled for a considerable time over Europe, including England and Scotland, in the first of which countries he received the not unique honour of being called by Elizabeth her knight, while in the second he was godfather at Charles I's christening. On his return to France he was made duke and peer at the age of twenty-four and married Marguerite de Béthune, Sully's daughter, receiving lucrative appointments. After the assassination of Henry IV.,, which was a great blow to him, Rohan fought with success at the siege of Jiilich. But from this time onwards he was for the greater part of many years either in active warfare against the Government of his country, or in active though peaceable opposition to it. Fora time, however, he abstained from actual insurrection, and he endeavoured to keep on terms with Marie de' Medici ; he even, despite his dislike of De Luynes, the favourite of Louis XIII. , Te- appeared in the army and fought in Lorraine and Piedmont, It was not till the decree for the restitution of church property in the south threw the Bearnese and Glascons into open revolt that Rohan appeared as a rebel, His authority and military skill were very formidable to the royalists, forced them among other checks to raise the Slege of Montauban, and brought about the treaty of Montpellier (1623), But Rohan did not escape the re-

sults of the incurable factiousness which showed itself more strongly perhaps among the French Huguenots than among any other of the numerous armed oppositions of the 17th century. He was accused of lukewarmness and treachery, though he did not hesitate to renew the war when the compact of Montpellier was broken. Again a hollow peace was patched up, but it lasted hardly any time, and Rohan undertook a third war, the first the events of which are recounted in his celebrated Memoirs. This last war (famous for the siege of La Rochelle, in which, however, Rohan's brother Soubise, not Rohan himself, was principally concerned) was one of considerable danger for Rohan: he was condemned to death, and a great reward was offered for him dead or alive. Nor at the close of the war did he think it best to remain in France, but made his way to Venice. Here he lived quietly for some time and is said to have received from the Porte the offer of the sovereignty of Cyprus. It is more certain that his hosts of Venice wished to make him their general-in-chief, a design not executed owing to the peace of Cherasco (1631). Soon afterwards Rohan was again called to serve his lawful sovereign. Richelieu had had experience, though not friendly experience, of his abilities, and when France began once more to take a vigorous part in the Thirty Years' War Rohan was appointed to the task of occupying the Valtelline, and thus cutting off the communication between Germany and Italy. He was entirely successful and re- peatedly beat both the imperialists and the Spaniards. But, despite this service, Rohan was still thought dangerous to the peace of France owing to his influence with the Huguenots, and objection was even made to his residence in Geneva. He therefore joined Bernhard of Saxe-Weimar, and was serving in his army when he met with the wound which caused his death at Rheinfelden on 14th March 1638. His body was buried at Geneva and his arms solemnly bequeathed to and accepted by the Venetian re- public. Rohan's wife was a woman of talent and energy, though she did not escape scandal. His younger brother Benjamin, generally known as Soubise, was, like him, a famous Huguenot leader. His daughter and only re- cognized surviving child, named Marguerite, carried the honours of Rohan into the Chabot family.

What has chiefly preserved Rohan's memory is not his military achievements, though they were remarkable, nor his political posi- tion, though it was high, but his admirable A/emoirs. These cover the civil wars in three books, while a fourth contains the narrative of the Valtclline campaigns ; and they rank among the best products of the singular talent for memoir-writing which the French aristo- cracy of the 16th and 17th centuries possessed. Alike in style, in clearness of matter, and in shrewdness of thought they deserve very high praise. The first three books appeared in 1644, that on the Valtelline War not till 1758. Some suspicions were thrown on the genuineness of this latter, but it would seem groundlessly. Rohan also wrote Le Parfait Capitaine, an adaptation of the military pre- cepts and examples of Cesar to modern warfare ; an account of his travels ; a political tract, L'Intérét des Etats et des Prinees de la Chrétienté, &c. The Memoirs, which alone have continued to be reprinted, may be conveniently found in the collection of Michaud and Poujoulat, vol. xix.

ROHAN, Louis Reni Epovarp, CARDINAL DE (1734- 1803), prince de Rohan-Guéménée, archbishop of Stras- burg, the hero of the scandal of the diamond necklace, and a cadet of the great family of Rohan (which traced its origin to the kings of Brittany, and was granted the precedence and rank of a foreign princely family by Louis XIV.), was born at Paris on 25th September 1734. Members of the Rohan family had filled the office of arch- bishop of Strasburg from 1704,—an office which made them princes of the empire and the compeers rather of the German prince-bishops than of the French ecclesiastics. For this high office Louis de Rohan was destined from his birth, and soon after taking orders, in 1760, he was nominated coadjutor to his uncle, Constantine de Rohan-

Rochefort, who then held the archbishopric, and he was also consecrated bishop of Canopus. But he preferred the elegant life and the gaiety of Paris to his clerical duties, and had also an ambition to make a figure in politics. He joined the party opposed to the Austrian alliance, which had been cemented by the marriage of the arch- duchess Marie Antoinette to the dauphin. This party was headed by the duc d'Aiguillon, who in 1771

sent Prince Louis on a special embassy to Vienna to find out what was being done there with regard to the partition of Poland. Rohan arrived at Vienna in January 1772, and made a great noise with his lavish fétes. But the empress Maria Theresa was implacably hostile to him; not only did he attempt to thwart her policy, but he spread scandals about her daughter Marie Antoinette, laughed at herself, and shocked her ideas of propriety by his dis- sipation and luxury. On the death of Louis XV., in 1774, Rohan was recalled from Vienna, and coldly received at Paris; but the influence of his family was too great for him to be neglected, and in 1777 he was made grand almoner, and in 1778 abbot of St Vaast. In 1778 he was made a cardinal on the nomination of Stanislaus Ponia- towski, king of Poland, and in the following year succeeded his uncle as archbishop of Strasburg and became abbot of Noirmoutiers and Chaise-Dieu. His various preferments brought him in an income of two and a half millions of livres ; yet the cardinal was restless and unhappy until he should be reinstated in favour at court and had appeased the animosity which Marie Antoinette felt against him. Though a man of some ability, he became infatuated with the notorious charlatan Cagliostro in 1780, and lodged him in his palace, and in 1782 he made the acquaint- ance of Madame de Lamotte-Valois, a descendant of an illegitimate branch of the Valois, but a poor adventuress, and married to an adventurer. These people, having ac- quired great influence over Rohan, determined to turn his excessive desire to become reconciled to the queen to their own advantage. They persuaded him that Marie Antoi- nette wished him well, and contrived an interview between him and a girl named Oliva, who greatly resembled the queen, in the gardens of Versailles in August 1784, so skilfully that he believed he had seen the queen herself and that she had given himarose. The adventuress then persuaded him that the queen would be much gratified by the present of an extremely valuable diamond necklace which she had refused in 1778 and 1781, and on 26th January 1785 the cardinal purchased it for 1,600,000 franes, to be paid in three instalments, and handed it over to a pretended valet of the queen on receipt of a forged letter of thanks signed "Marie Antoinette of France." The comte de Lamotte-Valois at once started for London, and, after breaking up the necklace, began to sell the diamonds separately. The plot soon came to light, and the king sent the cardinal to the Bastille. This arrest of a great nobleman and an archbishop excited the wrath of both the nobility and

the bishops, and the large party opposed to the Austrian alliance regarded him as a martyr. In this feeling the old courtiers and the judges of the parlement of Paris participated, for they hated the queen for her abolition of strict etiquette and for her extrava- gance and frivolity. The people, who had also been taught by pamphleteers to hate her and to regard her as the cause of all their ills, shared the feeling of their superiors in education ; and, when the parlement of Paris solemnly absolved the cardinal of all blame on 3lst May 1786, his acquittal was received with universal enthusiasm, and regarded as a victory over the court and the queen. Though acquitted by the parlement of Paris, the cardinal was deprived of his office as grand almoner and exiled to his abbey of Chaise-Dieu. He was soon allowed to return

to Strasburg, and his popularity was shown by his election in 1789 to the states-general by the clergy of the bailliages of Haguenau and Weissenburg. He at first declined to sit, but the states-general, when it became the national assembly, insisted on validating his election. But as a prince of the church in January 1791 he refused to take the oath to the constitution, and went to Ettenheim, in the German part of his diocese. In exile his character improved, and he spent what wealth remained to him in providing for the poor clergy of his diocese who had been obliged to leave France; and in 1801 he resigned his nominal rank as archbishop of Strasburg. On 17th February 1803 he died at Ettenheim.

For the affair of the diamond necklace and the life of the cardinal see the Mémoires of his seeretary, the Abbé Georgel, of the baroness d'Oberkirch, of Beugnot, and of Madame Campan; the Ifémoires inédits du Comte de Lamotte-Valois, ed. Louis Lacour, 1858, in which Rohan is ably defended and Marie Antoinette stigmatized ; Marie Antoinette et le Procts dw Collier, by Emile Campardon, 1863 ; and Carlyle's "The Diamond Necklace," in Fraser's Maga- zine (1837), republished in his Zssays.

ROHILKHAND or Routcunn, a division or commis- sionership in the North-Western Provinces of India, lying between 27° 35' and 30° 1' N. lat. and between 78° 1' and 80° 26' E. long. It comprises the six districts

of Bijnaur (Bijnor), Murddabad, Buddun, Bareli (Bareilly), Shahjahdnpur, and Pilibhit, together containing an area of 10,885 square miles, with a population (1881) of 5,122,557 (males 2,728,761, females 2,393,796). By religion, Hindus numbered 3,921,989, Mohammedans 1,192,263, and Christ- ians 6304. In the same year there were 11,327 towns and villages in the division and 639,604 occupied houses. Of the total area 6446 square miles were returned as culti- vated and 2516 as cultivable. In 1883-84 Rohilkhand division had 2592 miles of road and 163 miles of railway ; in the same year its gross revenue amounted to £980,682, of which the land-tax contributed £695,181.

ROHTAK, a British district of India, in the Hissar division, under the lieutenant-governorship of the Punjab, lying between 28° 19' and 29° 17' N. lat. and between 76° 17' and 77° 30'E. long. It contains an area of 1811 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by Karnal, on the E. by Delhi, on the 8. by Gurgaon, and on the W. by Hissar and the native state of Jhind. Rohtak district is situated in the midst cf the level tableland separating the Jumna and the Sutlej valleys; it is one unbroken plain, consisting of a hard clay copiously interspersed with light yellow sand, and covered in its wild state by a jungle of scrubby brushwood. It possesses no grand scenery, but on the whole the features of the district are more diversi- fied than many of the plain districts of the Punjab. The only natural reservoir for its drainage is the Najafgarh Jhil, a marshy lake lying within the boundaries of Delhi. The Sahibi, a small stream from the Ajmere hills, traverses a corner of the district, and the northern portions are watered by the Rohtak and Butana branches of the Western Jumna Canal, but the greater portion of the central plain, comprising about two-thirds of the district area, is entirely dependent upon the uncertain rainfall. The climate, though severe in point of heat, is generally healthy; the average rainfall is about 194 inches. Rohtak has no railway ; it is, however, well provided with roads, which cross it in every direction, and telegraphic com- munication is now under construction.

In 1881 the population of Rohtak distriet numbered 553,609 (296,224 males and 257,385 females). By religion Hindus numbered 468,905, or nearly 85 per eent. of the total population, and Moham- medans 79,510. There are only two towns in the district with inhabitants exceeding

10,000, namely, RouTax (see below) and Jhajjar with 11,650. Rohtak is a purely agrieultural distriet, but its produce hardly more than suffices for its home consuinption. Of the total area of 1811 square miles, 1416 were in 1883-84 re- turned as cultivated and 269 as cultivable. The chief products

are food grains, pulses, cotton, and sugar-cane. There are no manufactures of more than local importance excepting ornamental turbans at Rohtak and saddlery at Kalanar. Pretty pottery is made at Jhajjar, and cotton cloth for home use is woven in large quan- tities. The gross revenue of the district in 1883-84 was £78,346, of which £65,440 was derived from the land-tax.

Rohtak was formerly included within the region known as Hariana, which in 1718 was granted by the emperor Faroksher to his minister Rukhan-ad-Daula, who in his turn made over the greater part of it to a Baluch noble, Faujdar Khan, afterwards created nawab of Farakhnagar. The district, together with the other possessions of Scindia west of the Jumna, passed to the East India Company in 1803. Until 1832 Rohtak was under the ad- ministration of a political agent, resident at Delhi, but in that year it was brought under the general regulations and annexed to the North-Western Provinces. The outbreak of the mutiny in 1857 led to the abandonment, for a time, of the district by the British, when the mutineers attacked and plundered the civil station of Rohtak, destroying every record of administration. It was not until after the fall of Dclhi that the authority of the British Government was permanently restored. The constitution of the present district was then taken in hand, and Rohtak was trans- ferred to the Punjab Goverument.

ROHTAK, municipal town and headquarters of the above district, lying in 28° 54’ N, lat and 76° 38’ E. long., with a population in 1881 of 15,699 (males 8155, females 7544). It is situated 44 miles to the north-west of Delhi on the road to Hissar, and, viewed from the sandhills to the south, forms with its white mosque in the centre and the fort standing out boldly to the east a striking and picturesque object. Rohtak is a town of great

antiquity, but beyond the fact that it became the headquarters of a British district in 1824 it is of no considerable importance.

ROJAS-ZORILLA, Francisco pz, Spanish dramatist, a contemporary of Lope de Vega and Calderon, was born about the beginning of the 17th century. Of his personal history hardly anything has been recorded, but we know that he lived at Madrid, and about the year 1641 he seems to have become a knight of Santiago. Of his dramatic compositions some thirty still survive, which can be read in the 54th volume of the Biblioteca de Autores Espaitoles (1861); the best by general consent is held to be that entitled Del Key abajo Ninguno, otherwise known by the name of its hero as Garcia de Castafar. Of the others, apart from their intrinsic merit, a double literary in- terest attaches to the Vo hay Padre siendo Rey, which was borrowed by Rotrou for his Venceslas, to the Donde hay Agravios no hay Zelos and the Amo criado, which were imitated by Scarron in his Jodelet Souffleté and Mattre Valet, and to the Entre Bobos anda el Juego, to which Thomas Corneille has acknowledged his obligations for his Bertrand de Cigarral. The Garcia de Castafiar, Donde hay Agravios, and Entre Bobos anda el Juego are given by Ochoa in his Vesoro del Teatro Espaiol.

ROKITANSKY, Carn von Roxrransky, FREIHERR von (1804-1878), the founder of the Vienna school of pathological anatomy, was born in 1804 at Konigegratz in Bohemia. He got his schooling in his native town as well as at the gymnasium of Leitmeritz, after which he became a student of medicine at Prague. He finished his medical studies at Vienna, graduating there in 1828. Soon after he became assistant to Wagner, the professor of patho- logical anatomy, and succeeded him in 1834 as prosector, being at the same time made extraordinary professor. It was not until ten years later (1844) that he reached the rank of full professor. To his duties as a teacher he added in 1847 the onerous office of medico-legal anatomist to the city, and in 1863 an influential office in the ministry of education and public worship, wherein he had to advise on all routine matters of medical teaching, including patron- age. A seat in the upper house of the reichsrath rewarded i ae labours in 1867, and on his retirement from all

ces in 1874 he was made a commander of the Order of Leopold. He joined the Imperial Academy of

-franche near Lyons in 1732.

ROH—ROL

Sciences as a member in 1848, and became its president in 1869. He was president also of the medical society of the Austrian capital and an honorary member of many foreign societies. On his retirement at the age of seventy his colleagues celebrated the occasion by a function in the aula of the university, where his bust was unveiled. In his leave-taking speech he said that work had always been a pleasure to him and pleasures mostly a toil. His death in 1878 elicited many genuine expressions of affection and of esteem for his upright character. Two of his sons be- came professors at Vienna, one of astronomy and another of medicine, while a third gained distinction on the lyric

stage.

With Rokitansky's name is associated the second great period of the medical school of Vienna, its first success having been identified with the liberal patronage of it by Maria Theresa and with the fame of Van Swieten, whom the empress had attracted thither from Leyden. The basis of its second reputation was morbid anatomy, together with the precision of clinical diagnosis dependent thereon, and associated with the labours of Rokitansky's lifelong friend Skoda. The anatomical vogue had begun under Wagner while Rokitansky was still a student; but it reached its highest point while the latter was assistant in the dead-house and afterwards prosector and professor. The enthusiasm for the post-mortem study of disease brought one very serious consequence at the outset, in the enorinous increase of the death-rate from puerperal fever in the lying- in wards of the general hospital. A comparison between the slight mortality in the wards that were afterwards reserved for the train- ing of midwives and the excessive mortality in those set apart for the training of students proved that the cause was the conveyance of cadaveric poison from the dead-house by the hands of the latter. The precautions introduced after 1847 succeeded in removing that grave reproach from the study of morbid

anatomy. Another and more lasting consequence of the assiduous pursuit of post-mortem study, counterbalancing somewhat the advantage of a more precise and localized diagnosis, was the loss of faith in the power of drugs to remedy the textural changes—the so-called " nihilism" of the Vienna school. The immediate outcome of Rokitansky's close application to the work of the dead-house was his Handbuch der pathologischen Anatomie (1842-46), in 8 vols., of which the first was published last. The value of the work lies in the second and third volumes, containing succinct descriptions of the visible changes and abnormalities in the several organs and parts of the body. Whenever Rokitansky touched the vital problems of general pathology, as he did in the postponed first volume, he revealed a metaphysical bent, which was strong in him behind all his un- doubted powers of outward observation and accurate description. Being a few years too soon to profit by the microscopic movement which led to the cellular pathology, he endeavoured to reconcile the old humoral doctrine with his anatomical observations, and to read a new meaning into the doctrine of the various dyscrasias. The third and last edition of his Handbuch was published from 1855 to 1861. In 1862 he entered into possession of a new patho- logical institute, in which he found means, for the first time, to dis- play his extensive collection of specimens ina museum. Although he had no direct share in the newer developments of pathology, he was far from indifferent or reactionary towards them ; indeed the laboratories and chairs for microscopic and experimental pathology and for pathological chemistry were warmly encouraged and aidéd by him.

Rent to his Handbuch, of which the Syd. Soc. published an English trans- lation in 4 vols., 1849-52, his most important writings were four memoirs in the Denkschriften of the Vienna Academy of Sciences (on the Anatomy of Goitre, Cysts, Diseases of Arteries, and Defects in the Septa of the Heart), the last as late as 1875. Other papers of less importance brought up the total of his writings to thirty-eight, including three addresses of a philosophical turn, on

"'Freedoin of Inquiry " (1862), "The Independent Value of Knowledge" (1867), and "The Solidarity of Animal Life" (1869).

ROLAND. Jean Mariz RoLanD DE LA PLATRIERE (1732-1793), who, along with his wife. Manon JEANNE Pauipon (1754-1793), played a prominent part in the his- tory of the French Revolution, in connexion chiefly with the policy and fortunes of the Girondists, was born at Ville- He received a good educa- tion, and early formed the studious habits which remained with him through life. Proposing to seek his fortune abroad, he went on foot to Nantes, but was there pros- trated by an illness so severe that all thoughts of emigra- tion were perforce abandoned. For some years he was employed as a clerk; thereafter he joined a relative who was inspector of manufactures at Amiens, and he himself speedily rose to the position of inspector, To these two

nao Ip Ash D

employments may be ascribed those qualities of assiduity and accuracy, and that familiarity with the commerce of the country, which distinguished his public career. In 1781 he married Manon Jeanne Phlipon, who was his junior by twenty-two years. She was the daughter of Gratien Phlipon, a Paris engraver, who was ambitious, speculative, and nearly always poor. From her early years she showed great aptitude for study, an ardent and enthu- siastic spirit, and unquestionable talent. She was to a considerable extent self-taught ; and her love of reading made her acquainted first with Plutarch—a passion for which author she continued to cherish throughout her life —thereafter with Bossuet, Massillon, and authors of a like stamp, and finally with Montesquieu, Voltaire, and Rousseau. These studies marked stages of her develop- ment ; and as her mind matured she abandoned the idea of a convent which for a year or two she had entertained, and added to the enthusiasm for a republic which she had imbibed from her earlier studies not a little of the cynicism and the daring which the later authors inspired. She almost equalled her husband in knowledge and infinitely excelled him in talent and in tact. Through and with him she exercised a singularly powerful influence over the destinies of France from the outbreak of the Revolution till her death.

For four years after their marriage Roland lived at Amiens, he being still an inspector of manufactures ; but his knowledge of commercial affairs

enabled him to con- tribute articles to the Encyclopédie Nouvelle, in which, as in all his literary work, he was assisted by his wife. On their removal to Lyons the influence of both became wider and more powerful. Their fervent political aspirations could not be concealed, and from the beginning of the Revolution they threw in their lot with the party of advance. The Courrier de Lyon contained articles the success of which reached even to the capital and attracted the attention of the Parisian press. They were from the pen of Madame Roland and were signed by her husband. A correspondence sprang up with Brissot and other friends of the Revolution at headquarters. In Lyons their views were publicly known; Roland was elected a member of the municipality, and when the depression of trade in the

south demanded representation in Paris he was deputed'

by the council of Lyons to defend the interests of the city before the constituent assembly. Accompanied by his wife, he appeared in the capital in February 1791.

They had made many and influential friends in advance, and Madame Roland's salon soon became the rendezvous of Brissot, Pétion, Robespierre, and other leaders of the popular movement. In person Madame Roland was attract- ive though not beautiful; her ideas were clear and far- reaching, her manner calm, and her power of observation extremely acute. It was almost inevitable that she should find herself in the centre of political aspirations and pre- siding over a company of the most talented men of pro- gress. Her resolve was fixed, and gradually she impressed it upon all: the France of 1791 was a France of transi- tion; a republic alone was its destiny, was the ideal of philosophy, the expression of liberty, the goal of history. This was the constant aim of her influence and her speech ; it was accompanied with a petty animosity, almost hatred, towards the king and queen; but it found a ready echo in the minds of those leaders who willingly admired her calm and learned reasoning. The royal flight in June and the ignominious return lent impetus to these ideas ; a journal entitled The Republican appeared in Paris, but at its second number was suppressed. Madame Roland had a hand.

In September 1791, Roland's mission being executed, they returned to Lyons.

In its organization |

Meanwhile the inspectorships .

625

of manufactures had been abolished; he was thus free; and they could no longer remain absent from the centre of affairs. In December they again reached Paris. Roland became a member of the Jacobin Club. The rupture had not yet been made evident between the Girondist party and that section still more extreme, that of the Mountain. For a time the whole left united in forcing the resig- nation of the ministers. When the crisis came the Giron- dists were ready, and in March 1792 Roland found him- self appointed minister of the interior. As a minister of the crown Roland exhibited a remarkable combination of political prejudice with administrative ability. While his wife's influence could not increase the latter it was success- fully exerted to foment and embitter the former. He was ex officio excluded from the legislative assembly, and his declarations of policy were thus in writing,—that is, in the form in which she could most readily exert her power. A great occasion was invented. The decrees against the emigrants and the non-juring clergy still remained under the veto of the king. A letter was penned by Madame Roland and addressed by her husband to Louis. It remained unanswered. Thereupon, in full council and in the king's presence, Roland read his letter aloud. It con- tained many and terrible truths as to the royal refusal to sanction the decrees and as to the king's position in the state ; but it was inconsistent with a minister's position, disrespectful if not insolent in tone, disloyal in spirit, and grossly disfigured by repeated threats of violence on the part of the people. It was meant, and it was used, simply as a lecture to the king's face and as an accusation behind his back. Roland's dismissal followed. Then he com- pleted the plan: he read the letter to the assembly ; it was ordered to be printed, became the manifesto of dis- affection, and was circulated everywhere. In the demand for the reinstatement of the dismissed ministers were found the means of humiliation, and the prelude to the dethronement, of the king.

After the abolition of royalty on the 10th of August, Roland was recalled to power, one of his colleagues being Danton. To his dismay he found that the passions which he had lent his aid in evoking he was powerless to allay, and that the party of the Mountain was, on the contrary, utilizing these passions for purposes of incredible excess. From this moment, though too late, the conduct of Roland, his wife, and the whole Gironde became heroic. They fearlessly denounced the massacres of September, Roland writing boldly to the assembly on the subject. Both husband and wife became the butt of calumny and the object of increasing dislike on the part of the ultra-re- volutionists,—Robespierre shunning them, Danton de- nouncing them, and Marat in his journal heaping upon them the foulest falsehoods. Still the Girondists, from Vergniaud downwards, banded themselves bravely on their side; but on 22d January 1793 Roland sent in his resigna- tion. It was the day after the execution of the king.

Still they remained in Paris, unflinchingly, but with ever less and less success, attempting to regulate and elevate the Revolution. Calumny continued. Once Madame Roland appeared personally in the assembly to repel the falsehoods of an accuser, and her ease and dignity evoked enthusiasm and compelled acquittal. But violence suc- ceeded violence, and early on the morning of the Ist of June she was arrested and thrown into the prison of the Abbaye. Roland himself escaped secretly to shelter in Rouen. Released for an hour from the Abbaye, she was again arrested and thrown among the horrors of Sainte Pélagie. Finally she was transferred to the Conciergerie. In prison she won the affections of the guards, and was allowed the privilege of writing materials and the occa- sional visits of devoted friends. She there wrote her

Appeal to an Impartial Posterity, those memoirs which display a strange alternation between self-laudation and patriotism, between the trivial and the sublime. On 8th November 1793 she was conveyed to the guillotine. Before yielding her head to the block, she bowed before the clay statue of Liberty erected in the Place de la Revolution, uttering her famous apostrophe—'" O Liberty! what crimes are committed in thy name!" One

week later Roland, having heard of his wife's death, wandered some miles from his refuge in Rouen ; maddened by despair and grief, he wrote a few words expressive of his horror at those massacres which could only be inspired by the enemies of France, protesting that "from the moment when I learned that they had murdered my wife I would no longer remain in a world stained with enemies." He affixed the paper to his breast, and unsheathing a sword-stick fell upon the weapon, which pierced his heart, on 15th November 1793. (T. 8.) ROLAND, Lrcenp or. The main incident of this legend is founded upon an undoubted historical event, —the Spanish expedition of Charlemagne .(778). The Frankish king, having crossed the Pyrenees and captured Pamplona, was beaten back from the walls of Saragossa.! On his return the " Gascons" (Basques) surprised his rear- guard, and, according to the testimony of Eginhard, cut it off to a man (Vet. Car., c. i.),—" In which battle were slain Eggihard, provost of the royal table . . . and Hruod- landus, prefect of the Britannic march." 'This account is supported by other evidence more or less contemporary, as, for example, the Vita Hludowici.2 From this work we gather that at the time of its composition (c. 840) the Roncesvalles disaster was already the subject of popular tradition ; for its author, speaking of the Frankish chiefs slain in this battle, says, "quorum, quia vulgata sunt, nomina dicere supersedi." Yet in its earliest extant form the legend has already worked in the names and traditions of a later age, eg., the traitor Ganelon, who probably, as Leibnitz has suggested, represents Wenelon, archbishop of Sens, accused of treason towards Charles the Bald in 859.3 It is interesting to note that during the last few-years Diimmler (Romania, ii, 146-148) has discovered what appears to be the epitaph of the above-mentioned Eggihard. This, as G. Paris remarks, renders it highly probable that the similar elegiac verses quoted in the Pseudo-Turpin (cc. 24, 25), which make Roland thirty-eight years old at the time of his death, are also genuine survivals from the Carolingian era. According to Diimmler's discovery, the battle of Roncesvalles was fought on 15th August. ELarhest Hutant Forms.—The legend of Roland makes its first appearance in (a) the so-called History of Archbishop Turpin and (b) the Chanson de Roland. The former, according to Paris, may be divided into two parts ; of these the first (cc. 1-5), written about 1050, deals with Charle- magne's conquest of Spain, but contains no allusion to Roland. The latter section, written by a monk of Vienne between 1109 and 1119,

gives the main outlines of the familiar legend: Marsilius and Baligant appear (c. Dis Roland fights with the giant Ferracute, Ariosto's Ferrat (Orl. Fur. c. 1); then follow the narrative of Ganelon's treachery (c. 21) and punishment (c. 26), the episode of Roland's horn, Roland's address to his sword (c. 22), his last prayer, his death (c. 23), and Charles's vengeance on the Saracens (c. 26).4 The Chanson de Roland, in its extant version probably composed in England between 1066 and 1095, looks like the expansion of an earlier poem written towards the beginning of the same century. = 5 ee ee re ee

is Annales Eyinhardi, 778, with which comp. Dozy, Hist. des Muss. d' Espagne, i. 376-380. 2 Ap. Pertz, ii. 608.

3 Ann. Imperti, ed. Pertz, i. 77.

4 Turp. Hist., ed. Castets, 1880.

ROO Less 2

It gives the legend in much the same form as the Pseudo- Turpin, but with far more detail and poetic fire. There are, however, a few striking differences between the two accounts. Such deal with the causes and method of Ganelon's treachery, the personality of Baldwin, and the fate of Archbishop Turpin. Above all, the Latin prose- writer has no second hero in Oliver and knows nothing of Roland's love for Aude.

Additions to the Early Legend.—The name of Roland was soon transplanted from its native soil in the gestes of Roncesvalles into almost the whole cycle of later Charlemagne romance; and by weaving these notices of him together we may construct the legendary story of his life. Thus the Enfanees Roland (c. 1200) tells of his parents' disgrace and his infant valour; in the Chanson @ Aspremont (late 12th century) we read how he became possessed of his famous sword Durendal; Girars de Viane (e. 1200) recounts his great fight with Oliver and his love for that hero's sister Aude. Roland plays scarce less prominent a part in Renaud de Montauban (13th century) and figures in Mierabras (12th century), Otinel (e. 1250), and the Voyage & Jerusalem (e. 1180). Nicholas of Padua's Lintrée en Espagne (e. 1820) makes Roland quarrel with Charles

and fly to Persia, whence he only returns to aid in the siege of Pam- plona and to perish at Roncesvalles.

Diffusion of the Roland Legend in Literatwre.—The immense popularity of the Chanson de Roland and the Pseudo-Turpin may be measured by the influence they have exercised on the literature of nearly every country of western Europe. To the original Chanson de Loland a poet of perhaps the reign of Philip Augustus added a new ending of some 2000 lines. From this full version are descended the Remaniements or Roncevaux, of which so many French MSS. remain. During the 12th century a Swabian priest, Conrad, translated the Chanson into rhymed German verse. This Rolandslied forms the basis of the Stricker's Karl (ec. 1230), in its turn the foundation for the Roncesvalles section of the so-called Karl Meinet (early 14th century). In England Taillefer's singing of a "cantilena Rollandi" prefaced the first Norman charge at Hastings ;° but, curiously enough, the English Roland of the 14th century in some places seems to look back for its original to the Psewdo- Turpin rather than to the Chanson de Roland, which received its final shape in England.6 It was probably from that country that the Roland legend passed to Scandinavia and Iceland. There the battle of Roncesvalles forms the eighth section of the great Karlamagnus Saga (13th century), which is of critical import- ance, as it preserves some details not to be found in the Chanson de Ltoland as we now have it. Translated into Danish, this work took the form of the Kejser Karl Magnus (15th century), to this day a popular book in Denmark. The legend penctrated eastward into Hungary and Bohemia; while in the west Roland appears in the Welsh Mabinogion and the tales of Ireland. M. Bormans has published Flemish fragments of the Roncesvalles story ; and these,

'which belong to the 13th and the 14th century, are based on the

Chanson. In the 16th century the same legend circulated through- out the Low Countries in one of the most popular books of the day. In the 13th century the Spanish "fabule histrionum," of which Roderic of Toledo speaks (d. 1247), and which may, on one hypo- thesis, have been the sources whence the Pseudo-Turpin drew his materials, gave way to a new and more patriotic legend, in which Bernard del Carpio takes the leading

place; but three centuries later (1528) Nicolas di Piamonte revived the purer Frankish tradi- tion in the still popular Karlo Magno.

It is, however, on the literature of Italy that the Roland legend has exercised its widest influence. Here the songs, chanted by the carly French jongleurs, towards the end of the 12th century made place for the Italianized Remaniements, till the epoch of Nicholas of Padua (e. 1320), whose gigantic Entrée en Espagne (with its sup- plement the Prise de Pampelune), though but a mosaic of earlier materials, formed the groundwork of the Tuscan poem, the Spagna

(1850-1380), on which the Rotta di Roneisvalle in its turn is founded.

Somewhat later than the verse Spagna came the Spagna in prose ; and the extraordinary popularity of the legend in its new guise made the names of Charlemagne's paladins familiar down to the age of the Renaissance. We have now reached the era of the great Italian poets Pulci (Morgante Maggiore, 1481), Boiardo (Orlando Innamorato, 1486), Ariosto (Orlando Furioso, 1516), and Berni (1541), whose poems, however, with the exception of Pulci's, are indebted to those of their predecessors for little more than the names of their chief characters and their general plan.

Roland in Medieval Art.—The earliest remaining statue of ees ee eaaee ay aek opemtgl Ol age a a

5 Will. of Malmes., Gest. Reg. Angl., iii. 242 ; Wace, ed. Andresen, hi. 1. 8035-40,

§ Still more applicable is this remark to Roland and Vernagou (e. 1330), and the death of Roland in Caxton's Charles the Grete. All

three works have been edited for the Early English Text Society by Mr Herrtage.

Roland seems to be the 12th-century statue in the church of San Zeno at Verona.! The whole history of Roncesvalles is blazoned in the 13th-century window in Chartres cathedral.? A similar window existed formerly in the abbey church of St Denis. M. Vétault (Hist. de Ch., p. 496) has also figured a Carolingian coin which bears the names of both Roland and Charles. The so-called Roland statues of Germany are most probably symbolical of the judicial and other rights once possessed by the people of those towns where they are to be found. In some cases at least the name seems to have been transferred to what were originally meant to be representations of the first Othos (10th century). The earlicst known allusion to a "statua Rolandi" under this name occurs in a privilegium granted by Henry V. to the town of Bremen (1111). The word "Rolandssiule" is perhaps a piece of folk-ctymology for an earlier " Rothland-siule" or red-land-pillar, 7.¢., the before- mentioned figure or pillar, which significd that the state in which it stood had the power of life and death,—in other words, was a Blutgerichtstatte. Grimm suspects a connexion between the Roland statues and those old Teutonic pillars of which the Irminsul de- stroyed by Charlemagne is the best-known example.? These Roland statues are sometimes in the open air, as at Bremen and Magdeburg ; or against the town-house, as at Halbcrstadt ; or in the church, as formerly at Gottingen. Sometimes they ride on horseback, as at Haldensleben near Magdeburg ; but more gencrally they are to be found standing upright. They always bear a sword in their right hand and very frequently a shield in their left. They are usually armoured, as at Magdeburg, but are occasionally dressed in more peaceful robes, as at Halle (on the Saale), or both cloaked and armoured, as at Wedel in Holstein and at Bremen. Sometimes they are crowned, as at Wedel and Nordhausen. The heads of the statues differ extremely,—being long-bearded at Erfurt, short-bearded at Wedel, and absolutely smooth-faced at Bremen. At Brandenburg the Roland was ornamented with silver and perhaps with gold. The statues are often of colossal height, that of Belgern (Merseburg) being over 9 ells high, exclusive of its pedestal. Perhaps the most famous Roland pillar still remaining is that of Bremen.

For further information on this subject see Leibnitz, Annales Imperit, i. 478, &e.; the treatises of Gryphiander (ed. 1666) Eggelingius (1700), B, Carpzov (1742), J. H. Hartmann (1735), and Nicholas Meyer, De

Wicbildis (1789); and Zoeptil's exhaustive account in vol. iii. of his Alterthiimer des deutschen Reichs. Yor the Roland legend generally consult Léon Gautier's Epopées Frangaises, iii., and Chanson de Roland, edd. 1870 and 1881. Besides these, see the various romances of the Charlemagne cycle edited for the series of Anciens Poétes de France, the various volumes of Romania, and the late editions of the several 1 kegs alluded to in the foregoing article. For the relationship of the Roland

egend to the Italian poets see the works of P. Rajna. (T. A. A.)

ROLLER, a very beautiful bird so called from its way of occasionally rolling or turning over in its flight,4 some- what after the fashion of a Tumbler-Pigeon. It is the Coracias garrulus of ornithology, and is widely though not very numerously spread over Europe and Western Asia in summer, breeding so far to the northward as the middle of Sweden, but retiring to winter in Africa. It occurs almost every year in some part or other of the British Islands, from Cornwall to the Shetlands, while it has visited Ireland several times, and is even recorded from St. Kilda, But it is only as a wanderer that it comes hither, since there is no evidence of its having ever attempted to breed in Great Britain ; and indeed its conspicuous appear- ance—for it is nearly as big as a Daw and very brightly coloured—would forbid its being ever allowed to escape the gun of the always ready murderers of stray birds. Except the back, scapulars, and tertials, which are bright reddish-brown, the plumage of both sexes is almost entirely blue—of various shades, from pale turquoise to dark ultra- marine—tinted in parts with green. The bird seems to be purely insectivorous. The genus Coracias, for a long while placed by systematists among the Crows, has really no affinity whatever to them, and is now properly considered to belong to the heterogeneous group of Birds in this work called Picarix (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 41), in which

1 Figured in Gautier's Chanson, ed. 1881, p. 88.

- *Figured in Vétault's Wist. de Charlemagne, pp. 74, 545.*

3 Poeta Saxo, ap. Jaffé, 64-68; see Grimm's Teut. Myth. (Stally- brass), i, 119.

4 Gesner in 1555 said that the bird was thus called, and for this reason, near Strasburg, but the name seems not to be generally used in Germany, where the bird is commonly called Rake, apparently from its harsh note. The French have kept the name Rollier. It is a eurious fact that the Roller, notwithstanding its occurrence in the Levant, cannot be identified with any species mentioned by Aristotle.

627

it forms the type of the Family Coractide; and its alliance to the Bee-eaters, Jeropide, and KING-FISHERS (vol. xiv. p. 81), Alcedinidx, is very evident. Some eight other species of the genus have been recognized, one of which, C. leuco- cephalus or C'. abyssinus, is said to have occurred in Scotland. India has two species, C. indicus and C. affinis, of which thousands upon thousands are annually destroyed to supply the demand for gaudy feathers to bedizen ladies' dresses, One species, C. temmincki, seems to be peculiar to Celebes and the neighbouring islands, but otherwise the rest are natives of the Ethiopian or Indian Regions. Allied to Coracias is the genus Lurystomus with some half dozen species, of similar distribution, but one of them, EZ. pacificus, has a wider range, for it inhabits Australia and reaches Tasmania. Madagascar has four or five very remarkable forms which have often been considered to belong to the Family Coraciidx ; and, according to Professor A. Milne- Edwards, no doubt should exist on that point. Yet if any may be entertained it is in regard to one of them, Lepto- somus discolor, which on account of its zygodactylous feet some authorities place among the Cuculidx, while others have considered it the type of a distinct Family Lepto- somatide. The genera Brachypteracias and Atelornis pre- sent fewer structural differences from the Rollers, and perhaps may be rightly placed with them ; but the species of the latter have long tarsi, and are believed to be of terrestrial habit, which Rollers generally certainly are not. These very curious and in some respects very interesting forms, which are peculiar to Madagascar, are admirably described and illustrated by a series of twenty plates in the great work of MM. Grandidier and A. Milne-Edwards on that island (Ozseaux, pp. 223-250), while the whole Family Coracudx is the subject of a monograph by Mr Dresser, as 4 companion volume to his monograph on the Meropide. (A. N.)

ROLLER MILL. See Frovur, vol. ix. pp. 345, 346.

ROLLIN, Cuaruzs (1661-1741), was born at Paris on 30th January 1661. He was the son of a tradesman, but distinguished himself at school, and at the age of twenty- two was made a master in the Collége du Plessis. He was successively promoted to various other posts of the same kind. In 1694 he was rector of the university of Paris. He held that post for two years instead of one, and was then appointed principal of the Collége de Beau- vais. He was of Jansenist principles, and in the later years of his life was for this cause deprived of his appoint- ments and disqualified for the rectorship, to which in 1719 he had been re-elected. It is said that the same reason prevented his election to the French Academy, though he was a member of the Academy of Inscriptions. He was concerned in the affair of the deacon Paris, and shortly before his death (14th December 1741) protested publicly against the acceptance of the bull Unigenitus.

Rollin's literary work dates chiefly from the later years of his life, when he had been forbidden to teach. His once famous Ancient History (Paris, 1730-38) and the less generally read Roman History which followed it were avowed compilations, and compila- tions which were not only far from critical but even somewhat in- accurate. But they have had the merit not merely of instructing but of interesting generation after generation almost to the pre- sent day. A more original and really important work, though less generally known out of France, was his Z'raité des Htudes (Paris, 1726-31). It contains asummary of what was cven then a reformed and innovating system of education, including a more frequent and extensive use of the vulgar tongue and discarding the medieval traditions that had lingered in France. It had very considerable influence. Rollin's style is good and his personal character was irreproachable.

ROLLING MILL. See Iron, vol. xiii. p. 328 sq.

ROLLO, Rotr, or Rov, Scandinavian rover, born ec. 860, died 932. He made himself independent of Harold of Norway, visited Scotland, England, and Flanders in pirating expeditions, and about 912 established himself

on the Seine and laid the foundation of the duchy of NorMANDy (see vol. xvii. p. 539).

ROLLOCK, Roperr (1555-1599), the first principal of the university of Edinburgh, was the son of David Rollock of Powis near Stirling, and was born in 1555, He received his early education at the school of Stirling from Thomas Buchanan, a nephew of George Buchanan, and after graduating at St Andrews became regent of philosophy there in 1580. In 1583 he was appointed by the Edin- burgh town council sole "regent" of the 'town's college " ("Academia Jacobi Sexti"), and three years later he received from the same source the title of " principal or first master," and also, with consent of the presbytery, professor of theology. From 1587 he also preached regularly to large audiences every Sunday morning at 7 A.M., and ultimately, yielding to urgent entreaties, he accepted 'the full burden of one of the eight ministers of the city." He took a prominent part in the somewhat troubled church politics of the day, and distinguished himself among his compeers by gentleness and tact, as well as ability. In 1593 he was appointed, along with some others, by parliament to confer with the popish lords, and in 1597 it was through his mediation with the king that the ministers of Edinburgh, banished in consequence of a "tumult" in December 1596, were permitted to return. For his eminent services he was chosen moderator of the General Assembly held at Dundee in May 1597. His death took place at Edinburgh on 8th February 1599.

Rollock published in Latin a commentary On the Epistle to the Ephesians (1590), a similar work On Daniel (1591), a Logical Analysis of the Epistle to the Romans (1594), Questions and Answers on the Covenant of God (1596), a treatise On Hfectual Calling (1597), and commentaries on Thessalonians (1598), fifteen selected Psalms (1599), and the Gospel of St. John (1599). Soon after his death eleven Sermons were published from notes taken by his students, and his Select Works by the Wodrow Society in 1849.

ROLLS, Masrer or tHE, is the third member of the Supreme Court of Judicature in England, the lord chancel- lor, president of the Chancery Division, being the first and the lord chief justice, president of the

Queen's Bench Division, being the second. At first he was the principal clerk of the Chancery and as such had charge of the records of the court, especially of the register of original writs and of all patents and grants under the great seal. Until the end of the 15th century he was called either the clerk or the keeper of the rolls, and he is still formally designated as the master or keeper of the rolls. The carliest mention of him as master of the rolls is in 11 Hen. VII. c. 18; and in 11 Hen. VIL. c. 24 he is again described as clerk of the rolls, showing that his official designation still remained unsettled. About the same period, however, the chief clerks of the Chancery came to be called masters in Chancery and the clerk, master, or keeper of the rolls was always the first among them whichever name they bore. In course of time, from causes which are not very easy to trace, lis original functions as keeper of the records passed away from him and he gradually assumed a juris- diction in the Court of Chancery second only to that of the lord chancellor himself. In the beginning he only heard causes in conjunction with the other masters in Chancery and his decrees were invalid until they had been approved and signed by the lord chancellor, But later on he heard causes without assistance and his decrees held good until they were reversed on petition either to the lord chancellor or afterwards to the lords justices of appeal (15 and 16 Vict. c. 83). Before any judge with the formal title of vice-chancellor was appointed the master of the rolls was often spoken of as vice-chancellor, By 1 and 2 Vict. c. 94 the custody of the records was restored to him, and he is chairman of the State Papers and Historical Manuscripts Commissions, Under 38 and 39

Vict. c. 77 and 39 and 40 Vict. c. 59 he now always sits with the lords justices in the Court of Appeal, whose decisions can be questioned only in the House of Lords. The master of the rolls was formerly eligible to a scat in the House of Commons,—a privilege enjoyed by no other member of the judicial bench; but he was deprived of it by the Supreme Court of Judicature Act of 1873 (36 and 37 Vict. c. 66), which provides that all judges of the High Court of Justice and the Court of Appeal shall be incap- able of being elected to or sitting in the House of Com- mons. The master of the rolls is always sworn of the privy council,

ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH, the name generally given to that very numerous body of Christians who ac- knowledge the pope, or bishop of Rome, as head of their church. This name also signifies that the Roman Catholic Church is " Roman in its centre and catholic in its cireum- ference." The number of Catholics throughout the world is variously estimated, some statisticians placing it as low as 152,000,000, others at 213,518,000, and others at 218,000,000. The author of the Katholischer Missions- Atlas (Rev. O. Werner, §.J.), largely furnished with Pro- paganda returns, distributes them as follows :—in Europe, 150,684,050; in Asia, 8,311,800; in Africa, 2,656,205 ; in both Americas, 51,422,566; in Australia and adjacent islands, 443,442; total, 213,518,063. But he considers that this calculation gives less than the whole number of Catholics throughout the world, and adds nearly a million more, making the total 214,370,000. Dr Hugo Franz Brachelli, superior of the Austrian Statistical Department,

'in Die Staaten Europa's for 1884, gives the number of

Catholics in Europe as 155,900,000, distributed mainly as follows :—

US ms RMN ais lo ghe a via fn ncneau woke nadauiont 20,229, 825

PrtissianandeGermnean Stabes! s.cheseewsicseessascnee 16, 229,498 Great Britain and Ireland …….....cecceeeeees 6,000,000 EA GC Gamrener on tere se crete ccietren hte: ae csaeae sts 35,387,708 Tee ee eer kee 26,658, 679 Boel meee fas acs as nice agit ous ei ua natn 8,500, 000 Scandinavia: Sweden (1870), Norway (1875),

IDiepaamaaniks (CUSSION) Aapnanontnencnpacddnsor snsosabenctoc 4,075 ENC HC TIAN SP kiriisectnes vnc vet saistseetieaneeimoaes 1,439, 137 UGisemnll uae nee weneeresyete seis avs coaaeinemenntees) ova ner 207,782 Belem (Op. BeolOS44)) ...cceetegeseaeactarses «es 5,501,844 Liechtenstein, Monaco, &c., almost entirely.

Spain and Portugal (pop. 21,164,380) ..... 21,148,880 Greece and Montenegro, over……....sssseccssee .. 124,000 NE EN REE ne ae ig MEO ee cae ect ate reunite 218, 254 BOSiia ANU EEVZCROVINA ccc. cenveceecsesseves aves ane 209,391

The supreme pontiff, who traces his succession from St Peter (see Popepom), is regarded by Catholics as "vicar of Christ, head of the bishops, and supreme governor of the whole Catholic Church, of whom the whole world is the territory or diocese." He is also patriarch of the West, bishop of Rome and its district, and temporal prince over the states of the church known as the Pontifical States—though the exercise of the last prerogative has been in abeyance since the events of 1859 and 1870. The pope has a primacy or supremacy, not only of honour but of power, authority, and immediate jurisdiction, over the universal church. When he is canonically elected, and has given his consent to the election, he possesses, without any other confirmation, authority over the whole church, even though at his election he"may not have been either bishop, priest, deacon, or subdeacon, but a simple layman. In the early ages of the church subdeacons were occasionally elected, deacons more frequently, and bishops rarely. In the 11th century Gregory VIL, previously known as the deacon Hildebrand, was ordained priest after his election and consecrated bishop later. The first pope invested with the episcopal dignity prior to his election to the pontificate was Formosus, bishop of Porto, elected

oma CARIPOLIC CHURCH

891. From the end of the 13th century it was the ordi- nary custom to choose the pope from the bishops; and from 1592 to 1775 only three were elected who had not been bishops previously. Clement XIV., Pius V., and Gregory XVI. were simple priests when elected to the papacy. The cardinals, to whom the election of the pontiff is reserved, generally select one of their own body for this important position. The privilege of consecrating the pope is reserved to the cardinal bishop of Ostia. From the moment of election the pope may perform all acts appertaining to his jurisdiction, such as granting indul- gences, issuing censures, giving dispensations, canonizing saints, instituting bishops, creating cardinals, and suchlike. The powers inherent in the priesthood and episcopate, such as the remission of sins, the administration of the sacraments of confirmation, holy orders, &c., he cannot exercise unless he be ordained and consecrated. Hence the office of sovereign pontiff is a dignity not of order but of jurisdiction. His pronouncements are regarded as in- fallible

when he defines a doctrine regarding faith and morals to be held by the whole church.

The office of pope is elective (see ConcLAVE), and lasts during the life of the occupant, although he may renounce his dignity. When the election has taken place the fact is made known by the cardinal dean. Many ceremonies follow, such as coronation and taking possession of the cathedral church of Rome, St John Lateran. This latter ceremony is not strictly necessary, for after his coronation the pope enjoys the papal power in all its plenitude ; but its object is his enthronization as bishop of the city and diocese of Rome and patriarch of the West. The cardinals are the princes and senators of the church, counsellors of the pontiff, co-operators with him, and vicars in the func- tions of the pontificate (see CaRDINAL). To Pope Evaris- tus, fifth successor of St Peter, is attributed the creation of the first ¢des or parishes of Rome, the occupants of which were afterwards known as cardinals. At the begin- ning of the 3d century twenty-five of these titles existed. In the course of time they were increased to fifty and after- wards to seventy. Inthe Gerarchia Cattolica the titles are thus divided : suburban sees (cardinal bishops), 6 ; titular churches (cardinal priests), 52; and diaconates (cardinal deacons), 16; making a total of 74. The cardinalate, in the sense at present attached to it, is different from what it was in earlier ages, being now the highest dignity after the papacy. The greater part of the administration of the church—the chief subject of this article—is directed by the cardinals who are members of congregations, which correspond, in a certain measure, to the political ministries in modern states. These congregations are established in Rome by the sovereign pontiff, and their objects are to inquire into, discuss, and decide the important affairs of the whole church and of the temporal dominions of the holy see. The cardinals are assisted by consultors or prelates, by distinguished ecclesiastics secular and regular, and by other officials appointed by the pope.

The head of every congregation is a cardinal prefect, though some congregations have the pope as prefect, ¢.9., the holy office, the apostolic visit, and the consistory. The secretary is ordinarily a prelate; in the holy office he is a cardinal. The acts, decrees, rescripts, and letters issued in the name of a congregation are subscribed gener- ally by the prefect, and

always by the secretary. These two officials chiefly regulate the affairs of the congregation and submit to the pope, at periodical audiences, the matters which require his approval. The following are the more important congregations :—inquisition, consistorial, apo- stolic visit, bishops and regulars, council, residence of bishops, state of regulars, ecclesiastical immunities, propa- ganda fide, propaganda fide for Oriental affairs, commission

for correction of books of the Oriental Church, index, sacred rites, ceremonial, regular discipline, indulgences and relics, examination of bishops, fabbrica of St Peter's, extra- ordinary ecclesiastical affairs and studies. The congrega- tion of the Holy Roman Inquisition or Holy Office (see In- QUISITION) occupies the first place in regard to the quality of the matters of which it treats, as well as from its an- tiquity. Its object is the extirpation of heresies. It was formally established by Innocent III. (1198-1216), on the suggestion of St Dominic. The following class of cases falls within its judgment :—crimes of heresy and heretical blasphemy, simultaneous polygamy, robbery of the sacred particles accompanied by insult offered to the same, soli- citations ad turpia with abuse of sacramental confession, affected sanctity, contempt of sacred images, divination and sorcery, retention and reading of heretical books, &c. This congregation also proceeds against any one who, having been baptized, returns to paganism ; against any one who celebrates mass or hears confessions, not being a priest ; against false witnesses who depose in causes of faith, &c. Its authority extends, in matters of faith, over every person of whatsoever grade, condition, or dignity, whether bishops, magistrates, or communities, and no local or personal privilege exempts from its jurisdiction. Bishops, according to the council of Trent, being subject to the pope only, the Inquisition may institute inquiries, but may not pronounce sentence, this being reserved to the pontiff. Consistorial, instituted by Sixtus V., 1587, considers and judges on matters appertaining to the erec- tion of new metropolitan or cathedral churches, or their limits ; instances of bishops who desire to resign their churches ; matters relating to chapters and the confirma- tion or exclusion of subjects elected by them to metro- politan, episcopal, or monastic dignities

; the examination of coadjutors ; presentations or nominations of bishops made by sovereign princes and republics ; concession of rights to the pallium; retention of dignities and major benefices inconipatible with episcopal rights, and suchlike. The Apostolic Vist insists on the observance of that decree of the council of Trent which enjoins, as a duty, that every bishop shall visit in person or by means of a dcle- gate the churches, pious institutions, &c., in his diocese. Bishops and Regulars: this congregation has to do chiefly with the government of monasteries and with complaints from the inmates of these against bishops. It examines new institutions and their constitution ; the founding of new monasteries for both sexes, and the removal of sub- jects from one monastery to another ; questions regarding the alienation of the ecclesiastical property of regulars ; differences between ordinaries, parish priests, and regulars ; and a variety of questions of a similar nature. The Council: the fathers of the council of Trent, anticipating – that doubts might arise concerning the interpretation of the doctrines and decrees published therein, besought Pius IV. to provide in the most fitting manner for such contingencies. This the pontiff did in approving and solemnly confirming the council in the bull Benedictus Deus (1563), interdicting, under severe penalties, any person whatsoever, secular or ecclesiastic, from publishing commentaries, glosses, &c., or any interpretation whatso- ever, upon the decrees of the council of Trent, it being enacted that all controversies, questions, and doubts should be submitted to the congregation of the council. The object of this congregation, therefore, is the interpret- ation of these doctrines and decrees. The congregation of Resrdence of Bishops may be considered as auxiliary to that of the council. It treats of the questions which con- cern the bishops' obligation to reside in their own dioceses, —a most important matter treated of in the council of Trent. Even in 1352 Innocent VI. ordered, under pain

of excommunication, that bishops and other beneficiaries having care of souls should reside in their respective dioceses. Innocent X. forbade cardinals to depart from Rome or its district—that is, a radius of 40 nules —with- out licence from the pope. The State of Regulars was instituted for enforcing on religious orders and congrega- tions the observance of

their special rules and constitu- tions. Kcclesiastical Immunities treats of controversies concerning the liberty and independence of ecclesiastical jurisdiction and its violations, and prescribes that the im- munities due to churches be respected. This congrega- tion receives appeals of causes which in the first instance were brought before the episcopal courts. The various concordats entered into between Governments and the holy see have diminished the number of causes which come under the judgment of this congregation. For Pro- paganda Fide, see PropacanDa. Propaganda Fide for Oriental Affairs, which provides for the affairs of the Eastern Church, was created by Pius IX. in a brief dated 6th January 1862. It depends upon the cardinal prefect of Propaganda, but has its own secretary, consultors, and officials. The Commission for the Correction of Books of the Oriental Church took its origin from a report made by Philip IV. of Spain to Urban VIII. in 1631, to the effect that the United Greeks inhabiting the Spanish dominions, especially Sicily, complained that schismatics had printed an Luchologium, or liturgy of the mass, filled with errors, and he begged the pontiff to provide a remedy for the evil and its consequences. The correction of the L'ucholo- gvum was decreed, and a special congregation—now called commission—composed of five cardinals, assisted by bishops and ecclesiastics of the Oriental Church, was appointed to correct the books of the Oriental Church, and to publish a correct Huchologium. The office of the congregation of the Zndex is to examine printed books and works contrary to faith or morals, and to compile an index or list, which is published at intervals, of the works the reading of which is prohibited. The method now followed in the examina- tion and condemnation of books, especially by Catholic authors, was fixed by Benedict XIV. A consultor examines the suspected work, and reports at a meeting of the con- gregation what it contains contrary to faith, good morals, ecclesiastical jurisdiction, &c. An examination of these passages is made, and it is determined by vote—the car- dinals having the decisive vote—whether the book shall be prohibited or corrected. The congregation of Sacred Kites was instituted by Sixtus V. in 1587, in order that in all the churches of Rome and the world, and in the pontifical chapel, in masses, divine offices, and everything clse regarding divine worship, the ancient ceremonies may be rigorously followed; that if any primitive rite have fallen into disuse it may be restored to its ancient splendour or reformed ; that the pontificals, rituals, ceremonials, and all

books of sacred rites may be emended and renewed ; and that the divine offices of the saints may be examined. Particular attention is likewise given by this congregation to all things concerning the canonization of saints, the celebration of their feasts, so that all may be done in an orderly manner, correctly, and according to the traditions of the fathers. Hence this congregation decides contro- versies on all these and on cognate matters. Its most serious work consists in processes for the beatification and canonization of the servants of God, the honours paid to saints, and the recognition of martyrdoms suffered for the Catholic faith. Its first cause in this line was that of the twenty-three minor observants martyred in Japan in the pontificate of Urban VIII. One of the rules established by this pope for the recognition of saints enjoins that, ex- cept by licence of the congregation, no one can proceed to any act of canonization, beatification, or declaration of

martyrdom until fifty years after the death of the subject. The congregation of Ceremonial investigates and watches over the exact fulfilment of the sacred liturgy, and regu- lates and decides questions and doubts regarding for- malities, pre-eminence amongst cardinals, prelates, and others, as well as certain sacred ceremonies in pontifical functions.

The work of the church in the world is directed im- mediately by the bishops, who receive their jurisdiction from the pope. The power inherent in the episcopal character and order is received from God directly and immediately. When established in a diocese by the pope, the bishop, in virtue of his title, receives the power of governing and of taking cognizance of all spiritual causes which regard his flock, whether laymen or ecclesiastics, with the exception of what is specially reserved to the head of the church, and he possesses and exercises these prerogatives under the jurisdiction of and in dependence on the pope. The bishops in the Catholic Church at the present time are (Gerarchia Cattolica, March 1885) thus divided: (a) patriarchal sees, of the Latin rite, 7; of the Oriental rite, 5; (>) archiepiscopal sees, of the Latin rite, immediately subject to the holy see, 14; with ecclesiastical provinces, 137; Oriental rite, with ecclesiastical provinces, 3; subject to patriarchates, 21; (c)

episcopal sees, Latin rite, immediately subject to the holy see, 86; suffragans in ecclesiastical provinces, 579 ; Oriental rite, immediately subject to the holy see, 2; suffragans in ecclesiastical pro- vinces, 8; subject to patriarchates, 41; (d) sees nullius dvceceseos, 17. The titles dependent on the sacred congre- gation of Propaganda are—apostolic delegations, 7; vicari- ates apostolic, 123; prefectures apostolic, 35. The total of these hierarchical titles amounts to 1085, and, including the 74 cardinalitial titles, to 1159. The vacant titles of all kinds amount to 107, and thus the whole hierarchy of the Catholic Church in March 1885 reached the total of 1266. Priests, placed in the second degree of the ecclesi- astical hierarchy, who are generally divided into parish priests and curates or assistants, are immediately under the direction of the bishops and administer directly to the people. Their primary office is the offering of the sacrifice of the mass. They also preach, bless, and administer bap- tism, penance, communion, and extrenie unction. Their functions are numerous and important, and they constitute the working force of the church in its direct relations with its members throughout the world. Priests of religious orders exercise like functions, save those properly parochial.

The Oriental churches in communion with the holy see, holding the same belief and the same principle of authority as the Latin Church, have their own special rites, discipline, and liturgical language. These are chiefly the Greek, Melchite, Bulgarian, Ruthenian, Maronite, Syro-Chaldaic, Coptic, Armenian, and Roumanian rites. The Greek Ori- ental rite is admitted by the pure Greeks, the Slavs (in the Slav language), the Melchites of Syria (in Arabic), the Roumanians (in the Roumanian tongue), and the Georgians (in their own language). The Georgian Greek rite has no hierarchy, and many Georgians in Russia have passed to the Latin or Armenian rites. The Greek and Slav languages are approved by the church as ritual lan- guages ; Arabic is only tolerated.

Greeks in Communion.—These are found at present in Constanti- nople, in the mission of Malgara in Thrace, and consist of about sixty families, having one bishop and about ten priests. In this rite marriage is permitted to clerics previous to the reception of sacred orders ; but there is a tendency to abolish the practice. In Greece nearly 30,000 Greeks have

followed the Latin rite, and these have seven bishops and about a hundred priests. The mass of St Basil is celebrated by the Greeks ten times a year, —on the three vigils of Christmas, the Epiphany, Easter, Holy Thursday, the Feast of St Basil, and the first five Sundays of Lent. After St Basil, St John Chrysostom abbreviated this mass and gave it the

Greek language ; and after the schism in the 5th century the liturgy became Coptic, as the patriarchs were Copts. liturgies in use at present— that of St Basil, that of St Gregory

form which has existed down to the present time amongst all the Orientals who follow the Greek rite.

Melehites.—The Melchites (see MEucitirEs) have the Greek rite in the Arab language. They are found scattered throughout Syria, Palestine, and Egypt, and have one patriarch and ten bishops ruling over from 70,000 to 80,000 souls. Their clergy are, for the mnost part, regular, following the rule of St Basil, and are divided into three congregations, — that of San Salvatore near Saida (Sidon) in Lebanon, with about 300 persons who mostly have the care of souls ; the second, of St John the Baptist, is at Scieur in Lebanon, with thirty members ; and the third is the congregation of Aleppo, at St George in Lebanon, with forty members between priests and brothers. A small group of secular clergy is attached to the patri- archate. Besides these there are about forty secular married priests throughout the dioceses, The patriarchal residence is Damascus, which has two bishops-vicars,—one in Damascus, the other in Kgypt. The ten dioceses are Tyre, Hauran, Saida or Sidon, Ptolemais, Beyrotit, Zakle, Baalbec, Emessa, Aleppo, and Tripoli. Thus there are twelve bishops in all.

Bulgarians.—The United Bulgarians have the same Greek rite, with the mass in the Slav language. Their origin dates from 1860, when many prelates and people passed over to the Catholic Chureh. At present (1885) their numbers are somewhat diminished, amounting to about 9000 souls. They have one archbishop, who resides in Constantinople, a vicar-apostolic for Thrace, who resides in Adrianople, and another vicar-

apostolic for Macedonia, who resides in Salonica, The Turkish Government officially recognizes them as Catholics. They are spread amongst the villages in Turkey and especially in Macedonia. Besides these there are in the diocese of Philippopolis about 15,000 Bulgarian Catholics who have em- braced the Latin rite. These are administered by a vicar-apostolic of the order of Capuchins.

Liuthenians.—The Ruthenians attribute their conversion to Chris- tianity to St Methodius (860) and his brother St Cyril. The Ruthenian rite is Greek in the vicinity of Greece and Latin in the countries of western Europe. The Slav is the language used in both rites. The Ruthenians are numerous in eastern and western Galicia, in Poland, and in Hungary. In Russia they have two dioceses. In Galicia they number about 2,600,000 with 2000 priests ; in Hungary the two dioceses of Eperies and Munkacs count half a million of Catholics. In Galicia they have one metro- politan (Lemberg) and two bishops, in Hungary two bishops, and in Crisio one, with about 200 priests in these three dioceses. They have a Greek Ruthenian college at Rome and another in Vienna.

Maronites.—The greater number of the MARonirss (g.v.) are in Lebanon, where the patriarch resides ; others are in Syria, in Egypt, and in Cyprus. The patriarchal title is Antioch ; the archbishops are those of Aleppo, Archis, Berito, Damascus, Tyre and Sidon, and Tripoli; the bishops of Cyprus, Heliopolis, and Gibail and Botti. The Maronites of Alexandria are administered by a procurator of the patriarch. The population of these dioceses is nearly 400,000. The number of regular priests is about 1200, of secular priests about 600. In Mount Lebanon there are seventy-five convents of men and women. Five colleges or seminaries depend upon the patriarch and four others on the archbishops. In these seminaries the clerics learn Arabic, Syriac, Latin, French, and Italian, The language used in the mass and in the offices of the church is Syriac, that spoken by the people is Arabic.

Syro-Chaldeans.—The Oriental Syrians are called, ecclesiastically, Chaldeans. This name comprises, not only the inhabitants of Chaldea, but also those of Assyria, Mesopotamia, and a part of Persia, To distinguish them from those having other rites equally Syrian, they were exclusively

termed Chaldeans by Pope Eugenius IV, (1431-1447). Previous to the council of Florence (1438) they were called Orientals or Syro-Orientals. The Catholic Chaldeans have a patriarch who for a long period has had his residence at Mosul (Mesopotamia), and has the title of patriarch of Babylonia with archiepiscopal jurisdiction over the city of Baghdad. There are five archdioceses—Amida or Diarbekir in Mesopotamia, Secrt in Assyria, Salmas and Adorbigana in Persia, Kerkuk (Carcha) in Parthic Assyria, and Amadia in Kurdistan, The dioceses are Mardin and Gezira in Mesopotamia, Zaku in Assyria-Media, Sena in Persia, Bassorah on the Persian Gulf, and Acri and Zebari in the mountains of Kurdistan. The number of secular clergy in the patriarchate, archdioceses, and dioceses approximatcs 200. There 1s a congregation of Antonian monks, having the title of 8S. Hor- misdas, who have an abbot-gencral, five houses or convents, forty priests, and a hundred monks. The other religious houses bear the names of Mother of God, St George, St Abraham, and St James. The largest number of Catholics is in the diocese of Mosul with

Baghdad, 25,000. In all there are over 90,000 Catholics. The language of the mass and church office is Syro-Chaldaic. ab one

Copts.—The Coptic rite prevails throughout all Egypt. time there was a liturgy of Lower and another of Upper Egypt. In the former the Memphitic dialect was in use and the Theban dialect in the latter. Butas the patriarchs of Alexandria were Greeks they, followed by several churches in Egypt, changcd the liturgy into the

andria.

‘(protopapas), and by 1561 priests.

651

There are three

Nazianzen, and that of St Mark, rearranged by St Cyril of Alex- The Theban dialect is no longer psed ; but the Memphitic still prevails, and in it the offices of the church are recited. The Catholic population is only

about 6000, with twenty-two priests, one bishop, and a vicar-apostolic, whose residence is at Cairo.

Armenians.—The Armenians (see ARMENIAN CuURCH) regard St Gregory the Illuminator as their apostle. Pope Benedict XIV. instituted the patriarchate of Cilicia in 1742, and Pius VIII. in 1830 instituted the Armenian Catholic primacy in Constantinople. In 1867 Pius IX, united Cilicia with the primacy of Constantinople, so that the patriarch now bears the title of Cilicia and has his residence in Constantinople. Turkcy, Russia, Asia Minor, Armenia (Greater and Lesser), Mesopotamia, Syria, and Egypt have Armenian Catholics, who altogether number 100,000 at the present time (1885). There are ten archbishops and bishops and over 350 pricsts. They also possess religious orders, the Mechitarists of Venice and of Vienna, and have an Armenian college at Rome and an Armenian seminary at Bzommar in Mount Lebanon. The liturgical language is literary Armenian, and they have a special rite and liturgy. The people speak vulgar Armenian and Turkish. There is an institute of Armenian sisters of the Immaculate Conception at Constantinople to attend to the education of young girls, especially those newly converted,

Lioumanians, —As early as the council of Florence the Roumanian metropolitan of Moldavia subscribed the decree of union ; but the time had not yet come for an actual union with Rome. In 1700, under the metropolitan Theophilus and his successor Athanasius L., the great national synod of Alba Julia (Fogaras) was held, in which the bishop, the arehpriests, and all the clergy of the Roumanian Church of Transylvania " freely and spontaneously by the impulse of God" concluded a union with the Roman Catholic Church. This declaration was signed by the metropolitan, by fifty-four archpriests Historians say that 200,000 families were united to Rome on that day. Some afterwards again fell away, but there is at present a great movement prevailing amongst these towards union. The United Catholics are chiefly in Transylvania and Hungary and number about a million and a half, with from 1500 to 1600 priests. In 1854 Pius IX. erected into an ecclesiastical province the United Roumanian Church with an arch- bishoprie, Alba Julia (Fogaras), and threc bishoprics. To the diocese of Grosswardein in Hungary was added that of Lugos in the Banat and that of Armenopolis (Samos-Ujvar), which

constitute a flourish- ing ecclesiastical province. For the education of the clergy four places for students were given by Pius IX. in the Greek college at Rome, and they have sixteen places in the central seminary of Budapest. They have two seminaries, one in the metropolitan diocese with fifty and another at Armenopolis with sixty students. In the diocese of Armenopolis the number of souls is 647,666, with 486 parishes and a monastery. In the archdiocese of Alba Julia the number is 361,000, with 729 parishes and 706 priests. At Grosswardein and Lugos the number of Catholics is less. The rite in use is the Greek, but the language is the Roumanian. This is the only rite which employs the vulgar tongue. Ce Cy)

English Law relating to Roman Catholics,

The history of the old penal laws against Roman Catholics in the United Kingdom has been sketched in the articles ENGLAND and IrELAND.! The principal English Acts directed against "popish recusants "?2 will be found in the list given in the Acts repealing them (7 and 8 Vict. ce. 102; 9 and 10 Vict. c. 59). The principal Scottish Act was 1700, c. 3; the principal Irish Act, 2 Anne ec. 3. Numerous decisions illustrating the practical operation of the old law in Ireland are collected in Howard's Cases on the Popery Laws, 1775, The Roman Catholic Emancipa- tion Act, 1829 (10 Geo. IV. ¢. 7), although it gave Roman Catholic citizens in the main complete civil and religious liberty, at the same time left them under certain disabilities, trifling in comparison with those under which they laboured before 1829. Nor did the Act affect in any way the long series of old statutes directed against the assumption of authority by the Roman see in England. The earliest of these which is still law is the Statute of Provisors of 1351 (25 Edw. III. st. 4). Most of what has been already stated

1 See also Stephen's History of the Criminal Lav, vol. ii. p. 483 ; Anstey, The Law affecting Roman Catholics, 1842.

A recusant signified a person who refused to duly attend his parish church.

under NonconrorMIty (q.v.) as to the legal position of nonconformity may be applied to the Roman Catholic faith. The effect of 2 and 3 Will. IV. ¢. 115 is to place Roman Catholic schools, places of worship and education, and charities, and the property held therewith, under the laws applying to Protestant nonconformists. The Tolera- tion Act does not apply to Roman Catholics, but legisla- tion of a similar kind, especially the Relief Act of 1791 (31 Geo. IIL ¢. 32), exempts the priest from parochial offices, such as those of churchwarden and constable, and from serving in the militia or on a jury, and enables all Roman Catholics scrupling the oaths of office to exercise the office of churchwarden and some other offices by de- puty. The priest is, unlike the nonconformist minister, regarded as being in holy orders. He cannot, therefore, sit in the House of Commons, but there is nothing to pre- vent a peer who is a priest from sitting and voting in the House of Lords. If a priest becomes a convert to the Church of England he need not be re-ordained. The remaining law affecting Roman Catholics may be classed

under the following five heads.

(1) Office. There are certain offices still closed to Roman Catholics. By the Act of Settlement a Papist or the husband or wife of a Papist cannot be king or queen. The Act of 1829 provides that nothing therein contained is to enable a Roman Catholic to hold the office of guardian and justice of the United Kingdom, or of regent of the United Kingdom; of lord chancellor, lord keeper, or lord commissioner of the great seal of Great Britain or Ireland or lord heutenant of Ireland ; of high commissioner to the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, or of any office in the Church of England or Scotland, the ecclesiastical courts, cathedral founda- tions, and certain colleges. The disability in the case of the lord chancellor of Ireland was removed by statute in 1867, with neces- sary limitations as to ecclesiastical patronage, and the office has been held twice since that date by the late Lord O'Hagan. The Act of 1829 preserved the liability of Roman Catholics to take cer- tain oaths of office, but these have been modified by later legisla- tion (see 29 and 30 Vict. c. 19; 80 and 31 Viet. c. 75; 31 and 382 Vict. c. 72). Legislation has been in the direction of omitting words which might be supposed to give offence to Roman Catholics. (2) Title. The Act of 1829 forbids the assumption by

any person, other than the person authorized by law, of the name, style, or title of an archbishop, bishop, or dean of the Church of England. The Ecclesiastical Titles Act, 1851, went further and forbade the as- sumption by an unauthorized person of a title from any place in the United Kingdom, whether or not such place were the seat of an archbishopric, bishopric, or deanery. This Act was, however, repealed in 1867, but the provisions of the Act of 1829 are still in force. (3) Lcligious Orders. It was enacted by the Act of 1829 that "every Jesuit and every member of any other religious order, eom- munity, or society of the Church of Rome bound by monastic or religious vows" was, within six months after the commencement of the Act, to deliver to the clerk of the peace of the county in which he should reside a notice or statement in the form given to the schedule to the Act, and that every Jesuit or member of such religious order coming into the realm after the commence- ment of the Act should be guilty of a misdemeanour and should be banished from the United Kingdom for life (with an exception in

favour of natural-born subjects duly registered). A secretary of state, being a Protestant, was empowered to grant licences to Jesuits, &c., to come into the United Kingdom and remain there for a period not' exceeding six months. An account of these licences was to be laid annually before parliament. The admission of any person as a regular ecclesiastic by any such Jesuit, &c., was made a misdemeanour, and the person so admitted was to be ban- ished for life. Nothing in the Act was to extend to religious orders of females. These provisions exist 7m posse only, and have, it is believed, never been put into force. (4) Superstitious Uses. Gifts to superstitious uses are void both at common law and by statute. It is not easy to determine what gifts are to be regarded as gifts to superstitious uses. Like contracts contrary to public policy, they depend to a great extcnt for their illegality upon the discretion of the court in the particular casc. The Act of 23 Hen. VIII. ec. 10 makes void any assurance of lands to the use (to have obits per- petual) or the continual service of a priest for ever or for threescore or fourscore years. The Act of 1 Edw. VI. c. 14 (specially direeted to the suppression of chantries) vests in the crown all money paid by corporations and all lands appointed to the finding or

maintenance of any priest or any anniversary or obit or other like thing, or of any light or lamp in any church or chapel maintained within five years before 1547. The Act may still be of value in the construc- tion of old grants, and in affording examples of what the legislature regarded as superstitious uses. Gifts which the courts have held void on the analogy of those mentioned in the Acts of Henry VIII. and Edward VI. area devise for the good of the soul of the testator, a bequest to certain Roman Catholic priests that the testator may have the benefit of their prayers and masses, a bequest in trust to apply a fund to cireulate a book teaching the supremacy of the pope in matters of faith, a bequest to maintain a taper for evermore before the image of Our Lady. The court may compel discovery of a secret trust for superstitious uses. Since 2 and 3 Will. IV. c. 115 gifts for the propagation of the Roman Catholic faith are not void as made to superstitious uses. It should be noticed that the doctrine of superstitious uses is not confined to the Roman Catholic religion, though the question has generally arisen in the case of gifts made by persons of that religion. The Roman Catholic Charities Act, 1860, enables the court to separate a lawful charit- able trust from any part of the estate subject to any trust or provision deemted to be superstitious. It also provides that in the absence of any written document the usage of twenty years is to be conclusive evidence of the application of charitable trusts. (5) Patronage. A Roman Catholic eannot present to a benefice, pre- bend, or other ecclesiastical living, or collate or nominate to any free school, hospital, or donative (3 Jac. I. c. 5). Such patronage is by the Act vested in the universities, Oxford taking the city of London and twenty-five counties in England and Wakes mostly south of the Trent, Cambridge the remaining twenty-seven. The principle is affirmed in subsequent Acts (1 Will. and Mary, sess. 1, c. 26; 12 Anne, st. 2, c. 14; 11 Geo. II. e. 17). If the right of presentation to an ecclesiastical benefice belongs to any office under the crown, and that office is held by a Roman Catholic, the archbishop of Canterbury exercises the right for the time being (10 Geo. IV. c. 7,8. 17) No Roman Catholic may advise the erown as to the exercise of its ecclesiastical patronage (7b., s. 18). A Roman Catholic, if a member of a lay corporation, cannot vote in any ecclesiastical appointment (7b., s. 15). Grants and devises of advowsons, &c., by Roman Catholics are void, unless for valuable consideration to a Protestant purchaser (11 Geo. II. e. 17, s. 5). Where a quare impedit is pending before any court, the court

may compel the patron to take an oath that there is no secret trust for the bencfit of a Roman Cathohe. Sce Quarn Impepit. (J. Wt.)

ROMANCE

OMANCE!? in its widest sense includes the entire literature of fiction, as well as the early narrations

in which fact and legend were blended in historical form, before the simple minds of the people had acquired a clear conception of their distinctness. There are, however, certain ill-defined limitations in the analysis of fiction which enable us to assign distinct places to the legend, the ballad, the epic, the fable, the tale, the romance, and the novel. As usual in all attempts at precise classifica- tion, we find that the lines of demarcation cannot be re ke

1 In the 9th century the Romana or Romance language made its first appearance in writing. For many centuries, however, it was only used to embody the tales and ballads of each country in which ae other form of the speech was vernacular, so that the word 'romance" became finally appropriated to the compositions which were the staple literature of the Lingua Romana or Romance,

drawn with rigid exactness, and that many works may be referred to more than one division. But the general con- ception of romance is the one which will here be followed, and which roughly divides the subject into (i.) Romances of Chivalry—chiefly their prose forms—and (ii.) the Liomances of Love and Adventure, which follow them. Romance, as a distinct branch of the literature of fiction, belongs essentially to the Middle Ages and to Europe.

The romance of chivalry, as it is called, prevailed during Romance

the four centuries of knighthood, and there can be little of

doubt that the institutions of chivalry were considerably chivalry.

influenced by the works of the early romancers. The establishment of the orders of St John and the Temple was based upon an exalted conception of duty and devo- tion, which the hard test of experience soon modified, and which would have perished utterly but for the em-

ROMANCE

The characters of Galaad and the original Perceval represent types of unattainable perfection, and were therefore models which, although commanding reverence, failed to excite as

bodiment of its ideal in the Round Table romances.

deep an interest as did the second Perceval, Sir Lancelot, Sir Tristan, and Sir Gawain. In.these the noblest qualities

were blemished by human frailties, and, as a necessary

consequence, the knights miscarried a little below the summit of perfect achievement. Walter Map cannot be sufficiently eulogized for the tact and skill with which he drew the two first-named personages. Galaad is brought

npon the stage for but a very short time, and is then dis-

inissed in a blaze of saintly glory, while Perceval, although adapted from the French writer's purer knight of that name, is allowed a much larger space upon the canvas, at the cost of a few minor sins which suffice to ensure his failure and to prove hima man. The other knights are brave, generous, self-sacrificing, and devout, but the indis- pensable virtue of chastity is absent from their lives, and they are foredoomed to misfortune. The perfect ideal, however, underlies the description of all their acts and motives, and the reader or hearer was never allowed to forget it amid the more powerful attractions of the story. The real prototype of the chivalric romance was the ancient epic: the Greek and Latin poems upon the win- ning of the Golden Fleece, the siege of Troy, the wander- ings of Ulysses and of Adneas, furnish the truest parallel Classical to the medizval romances of knighthood. The tales Tomances.which are usually dignified

with the name of "classical romances" have really no claim to that rank; they were produced in the age of decadence and correspond much more closely to the medieval fabliau and the 17th-century novel than to the romance proper. As a matter of course every nation had its legends and popular tales, co-exist- ent with literary works of greater importance ; but the Greeks at least, and the Romans following their example, never condescended during their ages of intellectual vigour to put such figments into written form, so that even the famous Milesian tales are now quite lost. It was not until the Greeks became a widely dispersed, a subject and deteriorated race, and not till the strength and manhood of Rome were buried in the slough of imperial corruption, that sophists and rhetoricians began to construct those artificial tales which we call Greek and Latin romances. They form, however, an epoch, as the earliest prose works of imagination in a European language, and cannot there- fore remain unnoticed here. They were succeeded in time by Christian narratives, usually woven into the lives of saints or used as illustrations in the sermons of great preachers ; these latter formed a transition to the semi-religious story of the Grail, a bowl or goblet confounded with the chalice used at the Last Supper, with the cup used to collect the precious blood of our Lord, and sym- bolically with the Holy Sepulchre itself. The achievers of the Grail-quest, or kings of the Grail, were typified in the Knights Templars and the Knights of St John; thus the true school of romance arose in intimate connexion with the changes in European life and manners which were brought about by the crusades.

The chansons de geste, which constituted a poetical intro- duction to the romances of chivalry in France, were fol- lowed by the fabliaux, metrical novelettes which furnished material to the Italian writers of prose tales in the 14th and 15th centuries,—a form of composition which was not acclimatized elsewhere than in Italy till the 16th century, and which then became the remote prototype of the modern novel. The older and nobler knighthood blossomed in France for the last time in Bayard, in England in Sir Philip Sidney; but the genuine literature of chivalric romance may be said to have come to an end with the

Fabliaux.

15th century. The knightly romances produced in the 16th century were belated and artificial examples of their class ; and, although the effects of the conquest of Granada and the discovery of America did not wholly put an end to the lingering romantic spirit in Spain, it hardly sur- vived them for half a century. Hence the inferior char- acter of most of the libros de caballerias, which chiefly date from the 16th century. Out of them grew the fictions known as 16th and 17th century romance in Spain, France, and England,—monstrous and uninviting examples of per- verted ingenuity, utterly dissonant from the literature of pure romance as we conceive it in the chivalrous fictions of the 12th, 13th, and 14th centuries. A more practical and utilitarian spirit set in with the latter half of the 17th century, in which readers found themselves out of sympathy with the imaginative and mysterious atmosphere of romance. Accordingly the modern novel arose, a form of composition in which the manners and customs of everyday life were more or less faithfully depicted, and which has remained in undiminished popularity to the present time.

The subject will be dealt with in the following order :— I. Greek and Latin romance, under the subdivisions—(a) classical and _post-classical prose fictions and (6) pseudo- classical works. II. Medieval romance, embracing—(a) the Arthurian cycle, (b) the Charlemagne cycle, (c) the Spanish cycle, (d) Teutonic and Anglo-Danish, and (e) unaffiliated. III. Modern romance to the 17th century.

I.—GREEK AND LATIN RoMANCE.

(a) Classical and Post-Classical Prose Fictions.

Although the distance in manner is immense between Prose. the Ass of Lucian and the Amadis de Gaula, and again between the latter and Ivanhoe or Eugénie Grandet, there are few varieties of modern fiction which are not faintly shadowed forth in the literatures of Greece and Rome (including in this denomination the post-classical periods of Italy and Byzantium): fables and tales, historical, philosophical, and religious novels, love-stories and narra- tives of adventure, marvellous voyages, collections of fic- titious letters—all forms are represented. As even the

Andaman Islander and the Bushman have their stories, it is reasonable to suppose that the Greek, who attained a high state of civilization at an extremely remote period, had long been familiar with this method of intellectual gratification. Artistic form was first given to the higher class of such narrations by the Jonians of the Asiatic colonies, when they sang the deeds of gods and heroes in epic poetry and put together the story of Troy now current under the name of Homer. From the Attic Greeks belong- ing to the same stock came the drama in its highest de- velopment,—a fresh step in the representation of events in oral shape. Greek romance is a double misnomer. First, the word " romance" is wrongly applied to the tales we shall shortly discuss ; and secondly, we have no right to call anything in art or literature Greek unless it was produced before the time of Alexander the Great, either in Hellas or Ionia or Sicily, or, say, between 800 and 300 B.c. After the defeat of the Greeks at Cheronea, Mace- donia became the ruling centre, and the free 'political life of the Greek cities passed away. The conquests of Alex- ander, a Greeco-Albanian monarch, spread Greek civiliza- tion throughout the known world, but crushed Greece proper out of existence. This civilization (see GREECE, vol. xi. p. 136 sg.), influencing peoples foreign to the Greek race, is designated Hellenistic as opposed to the Hellenic, and the chief note of Hellenistic literature is that of imitation. The original springs of Hellenic poetry were dried up, and from the 3d century B.c. the newly

Milesian tales.

we find first represented by Iamblichus.

634

affiliated peoples, whose centre was Alexandria, expressed their fancies in novels rather than in epics. _

When, about the 1st century of the Christian era, verse gave place in general favour to rhetorical prose the greater ease of the style lent itself to more detailed nar- ratives than the eclogue and love-poem ; and the sophist who might formerly have devoted his attention to poetry became in the decadence of Greek literature a writer of novels. From this period to the 10th century were pub- lished the works it is now proposed to analyse. The Greek novel being a late, and it must be confessed an inferior, kind of prose, it would be well if one could trace its rise, progress, and development. This is, however, im- possible here ; it is sufficient to refer in passing to the fables of primitive invention, the tales inserted by histo- rians, the Atlantis of Plato, the Cyropxdia of Xenophon, the forged histories of Alexander, the fictitious lives of eminent men, the fabulous voyages,! and the apocryphal sacred books of Christians and Jews, as supplying in turn material for building up the highly artificial novel which One element may, however, be spoken of specially, although it is rather a forerunner of the tale as distinct from the novel or romance. The Ionic Greeks, living under an Asiatic sky and corrupted by Oriental luxury, were the first to culti- vate to any extent that kind of literature which, without demanding any intellectual labour, tickles the fancy by voluptuous pictures told in a brief and witty manner. Miletus was especially famous for such tales; hence they were usually known as Milesian (MiAnoiaxé). What was their exact shape it is difficult to say, as they have entirely perished, leaving only the reputation of the universal favour they enjoyed. Perhaps the story of the Ephesian niatron told by Petronius in the Satirx, and (though less likely) that of Cupid and Psyche in the Asinus of Apuleius, are more closely allied to them than anything we now possess. They must be considered as a natural growth of the imagination, although some may have been contributed by Orientals or Egyptians ; and, while forming a portion of the materials upon which the later Hellenistic novel was constructed, they differed widely from it in

form and matter. Ovid cannot be considered as a person easily shocked, yet in two passages of the 7'ristia he says—

- *Junxit Aristides Milesia crimina secum" (7 rist., ii, 418). '* Vertit Aristiden Sisenna, nec obfuit illi Historie turpes inseruisse jocos" (1b., 443-444), Plutarch (Crassus, 32) refers to the fact of a copy of this very translation by L. Cornelius Sisenna (a contem- porary of Sulla) having been found in the baggage of a Roman officer, which gave occasion for Surenas to anim- advert upon the Romans carrying with them infamous books during war time. This testimony gives sufficient indication of the nature of the Milesian tales. They must have been short and witty anecdotes, turning chiefly upon the subject of love in its grosser form, and may be regarded as the prototypes of the Italian novelle and the Provengal and French fabliawr. All that remains to us consists of the names of a few writers and some imita- tions and translations. The best-known writer whose fame has reached us is Aristides of Miletus, though we are ignorant of his life and even of the age in which he lived. A more recent author of the same class was Clodius Albinus, the rival of Septimius Severus. We also hear of Ephesian, Cyprian, and Sybaritic tales, the last almost as*

? Strabo considered all those who had written about India down to his time as mere fictionists, and at their head he placed Daimachus and Megasthenes. From the analysis furnished by Diodorus Siculus (ii, 55-60) of the Fortunate Island of Iambulus we are led to believe that the writer, who lived before the Ist century, intended the work as a kind of social utopia similar to the Ailantis,—tfnll of marvels and surprises like all the other imaginary voyages,

mk OM AN OT

famous as those of Miletus. Aristophanes (as well as Ovid) specially refers to them. Yet after all they exercised but little influence upon the Hellenistic novel beyond perhaps furnishing the more indecent incidents. The lost '"Epwrixd of Clearchus of Soli, a pupil of Aristotle, may have been more closely connected with that branch of our subject. The love-stories (Ilept epwrixdv raPnpdrwv) of Parthenius of Nicwa are also

different. They consist of thirty-six brief tales ending in an unfortunate manner, and were dedicated to Cornelius Gallus as forming subjects for poet- ical treatment. The author carefully indicates the sources whence lie took them, thus giving a special value to his collection. He informs us that some were derived from "the Milesian adventures" of Hegesippus, and also men- tions Naxian, Pallenian, Lydian, Trojan, and Bithynian tales. Like Parthenius, Conon was of the Augustan age, and compiled a collection of fifty narratives (Auyijoess) of heroic times, relating chiefly to the foundation of colonies. They are analysed by Photius. Cervantes has used one of them in Don Quixote.

The first we hear of the Greek or Hellenistic novel is in Greek the time of Trajan (c. 110), when Iamblichus, a Syrian by ovels.

descent and a freeman, born and educated at Babylon, wrote in Greek his Babylonica, which is known from Suidas, Photius, and a scholium discovered by Henry Estienne on an ancient MS. of the latter writer. A complete codex existed in 1671; and a considerable fragment has been reprinted by Mai (Nova Coll. Script. Vet., ii. 349, &c.). Suidas states that the Babylonica consisted of thirty-nine books, but Photius, who gives a full abstract (Bibliotheca, cod. 94), only mentions seventeen. The story is that of Sinonis and Rhodanes, 'married lovers, persecuted by Garmus, king of Babylon, who is fascinated by Sinonis. They fly, and are pursued by the royal eunuchs, who give them no peace through many adventurous scenes. A remarkable resemblance between the fugitives and another couple, Euphrates and Mesopotamia, is the chief subject of the plot. We now meet, incorporated in the works of writers whose dignity might be supposed above the sus- picion of story-telling, short tales of a didactic nature, such as those given by Plutarch under the title "On the Virtues of Women." Dion Chrysostom, the most eminent of the rhetoricians and sophists, has also left among his orations a short novel called The Hunter. The narrator is supposed to have been wrecked on the shores of Eubcea and meets a hunter who tells him his history. Two married couples (the hunter and his wife being one) were living in friendly solitude, when one day a stranger came, and asking for money received all the recluses were able to give in the shape of two deerskins. The hunter goes to the city with the traveller, and his first impressions are happily told. He is frightened

by the bustle and excitement, and debates with an idler upon the comparative advantages of town and country life. The return home is very delicately drawn. Lucian of Samosata, one of the chief essay-writers of the post-Christian age, has left two romances, Lucius or the Ass and the True History, both of which have been briefly analysed in the article Luctan (vol. xv. p. 48). The former was considered by Photius (cod. 129) to have been taken from a fable by Lucius of Patrae and to have thus had a common origin with the Asinus of Apuleius; others consider Lucian himself to have been the original inventor of the story. The True History has been drawn on by Rabelais, Cyrano de Bergerac, Swift, and the author of Baron Munchausen. Like the productions of more modern satirists, it loses much of its point and meaning when the allusions upon which the chief interest is based can no longer be understood. Rather of the nature of the fictitious voyage was The Wonders beyond Thule of Antonius Diogenes, only known from the account given by Photius

Erotic

ROMANCE

(cod. 166), who was of opinion that he belonged to a remote age, shortly after Alexander, and that he served as model to all subsequent writers of romance, including Lucius.

romances.from a lost Greek original, and therefore claims a place

here, as representing one of the earliest love-stories we can assign to that literature. It may date from the 3d or 4th century, and was perhaps translated into Latin verse in the 5th century. What we now possess (beyond the Anglo-Saxon version mentioned below) is a second Latin prose translation made in the 12th or 13th century. The first mention of the work is ina list of books belonging to Wando, abbot of Fontanelle (742), in the diocese of Rouen. The story runs that Antiochus, king of Syria, entertaining an undue affection for his daughter Tarsia, keeps off suitors by an unsolvable riddle. But Apollonius, king of Tyre, discovers the answer, is obliged to fly, and (as well as Tarsia) undergoes many trials from pirates and other persecutors. An abridgment is included in the Gesta Komanorum. An ancient Anglo-Saxon translation was printed by

Thorpe in 1834. Gower derived his adapta- tion in the Confessio Amantis (bk. viii.) from the rhymed redaction of Godfrey of Viterbo (1185). This formed the foundation of Shakespeare's Pericles (1609). The earliest English version (1510) is made from the French Appollyn, Roy de Thire.

The author of the Cyropxdia has already been alluded to. Suidas mentions other writers of fictions of the name of Xenophon,—a native of Antioch, who wrote Babylonica like Iamblichus; a native of Cyprus, who composed a similar book under the title of Cypriaca ; and Xenophon of Ephesus, of whom alone we possess anything. This last is the author of the romance Hphesiaca, or the Loves of Anthia and Abrocomas, of which the Monte Cassino MS. (first published in 1726) is the only one extant. His age is unknown: by Locella, one of his editors, he is placed in the time of the Antonines ; Peerlkamp, another editor, considers him to be the oldest of the romancers writing in Greek, and that similar writers imitate him closely. Some go so far as to regard him as an imitator of Achilles Tatius and of Heliodorus, and bring him down to the 5th or 6th century. The story runs that Anthia and Abrocomas are married, and, being forbidden by an oracle to travel, of course do so, and are captured by pirates, who take them to Tyre, where Manto, daughter of the chief, falls in love with Abrocomas. Repelled by him, she marries Mceris and accuses Abrocomas of an attempt to violate her. Moeris in his turn pays improper attentions to Anthia. The great beauty of the hero and heroine causes them many trials at the hands of pirates, brigands, and other stock ornaments of the Greek novel. The local names of the tales of Iamblichus and Xenophon were probably suggested by the MtAnowaxe collected by the earlier writers Dionysius and

Aristides of Miletus. This is the weakest of the class we have under review ; its only merit lies in a simple and natural style. By far the best of the romances is the ithiopica of Hetioporus of Emesa (¢.v.). From its first appearance and throughout the whole Byzantine period this work enjoyed a reputation which it has not entirely lost. Within recent times three Frenchmen of mark have praised it,—Amyot, who translated it; Racine, with whom it was a favourite ; and Boileau, who compared it with the

Zélémaque of Fénelon. It influenced consider- ably the French romance-writers of the 17th century, D'Urfé, Gomberville, and Mademoiselle de Scudéry. The dénofiment is imitated in the Pastor Fido of Guarini; Tasso drew from it the early life of Clorinda in Geru- salemme Liberata; and Raphael painted scenes from it. It was first brought to light in modern times in a MS. from the library of Matthias Corvinus, found at the sack of Buda (Ofen) in 1526, and printed at Basel in 1534. Other codices have since been discovered. The title is taken from the fact that the action of the beginning and end of the story takes place in Athiopia. The daughter of Persine, wife of Hydaspes, king of AZthiopia, was born white through the effect of the sight of a marble statue upon the queen during pregnancy. Fearing an accusation of adultery, the mother gives the babe to the care of Sisi- mithras, a gymnosophist, who carries her to Egypt and places her in charge of Charicles, a Pythian priest. The child is taken to Delphi, and made a priestess of Apollo under the name of Chariclea. Theagenes, a noble Thes- salian, comes to Delphi and the two fall in love with each other. He carries off the priestess with the help of Calasiris, an Egyptian, employed by Persine to seek for her daughter. Then follow many perils from sea-rovers and others, but the chief personages ultimately meet at Meroe at the very moment when Chariclea is about to be sacrificed to the gods by her own father. Her birth is made known, and the lovers are happily married. The rapid succession of events, the variety of the characters, the graphic descriptions of manners and of natural scenery, the simplicity and elegance of the style, give the thiopica great charm. Its chaste tone compares favourably with many of the other works of the same class.

Perhaps the most widely known is the delightful pastoral of Daphnis and Chloe (or AeoBuaxd), generally attributed to Longus, a Greek sophist, who is supposed to have lived in the 4th or the early part of the 5th century. Longus shows traces of an imitation of the ZWthiopica of Heliodorus, with whom he may be placed in the first rank of such writers. His work formed the model of the Streine of Honoré d'Urfé, the Diana of Montemayor, the Amunta of Tasso, and the Grentle Shepherd of Allan Ramsay, and has been translated into every European language. The trans- lation of Amyot, afterwards revised by P. L. Courier, has made it extremely popular in France, where the subject has frequently been made

use of by Gérard and other painters. The celebrated Paul et Virginie is an echo of the saine story. Daphnis and Chloe, two children found by shepherds, grow up together, nourishing a mutual love which neither suspects. The development of this simple passion forms the chief interest, and there are few incidents. Chloe is carried off by the inevitable pirate, and ultimately regains her family. A few rivals alarm the peace of mind of Daphnis; but the two lovers are recognized by their parents, and return to a married and happy life in the country. The picture of rural felicity and the innocent affection of the children make the charm of a book which comes nearer perhaps in spirit to the modern novel than any other of its class. Unfortunately there are details here and there which shock modern ideas of decent propriety. Achilles Tatius or Statius, an Alexandrian rhetorician of

Early

- Chris-

tian ro- mances,

636

the latter half of the 5th or beginning of the 6th century, wrote The Adventures of Leucippe and Cleitophon, upon the model of Heliodorus; though an ingenious story, it does not reach the standard of the work it imitates. Like his predecessor, Achilles uses the marvellous with discretion, but the accumulation of difficulties is very tedious. Leucippe and Cleitophon fall in love and fly to escape parental anger. They suffer shipwreck, are seized by brigands, and separated. Cleitophon first believes that Leucippe is dead, then finds her, to lose her once more, and again to meet her, a slave, at the very time he is going to marry her mistress, Melitta, a rich Ephesian widow. It so happens that the husband of the latter is not dead but returns to persecute with his love and jealousy both Leucippe and Cleitophon. The descriptions are the best part, the incidents being either tiresome or repulsive and the character of the hero pitiable. Most of the book is written with taste and judgment, but the digressions are too frequent.

Achilles Tatius is the last of these authors who can be said to have the slightest merit. Of the romances which followed his one of the least bad is perhaps Chereas and Callirhoe, by one who called himself Chariton of Aphro- disias, placed by various authorities between the 5th and the 9th century. Here the two lovers are already married, and as usual are of superhuman beauty. Unfortunately Cheereas possesses a somewhat irritable temper, and on a jealous suspicion gives his lovely wife a terrible kick in the stomach. She is considered dead and is carried to her grave. But during the night brigands carry her away to Ionia, where her purchaser, Dionysius, falls in love with her. The wife remains faithful to her husband, but, as she is enceinte, consents to marry Dionysius in order that her child may have a father. Meanwhile Chereas, having learned the ravishment of the supposed corpse, starts in pursuit of lis wife. He also is captured by pirates and taken to Caria. The two finally come together, when Callirhoe forsakes Dionysius and her son and returns to Sicily with her first husband.

Equally frigid was The Loves of Hysmine and IHysminias by Eustathius or Eumathius, probably a Byzantine, who is placed by Wolf as late as the 12th century, but who may have lived six hundred years earlier. Only a few more remain to be mentioned. Philip of Amphipolis wrote 'Poduaxa (specially referred to by Suidas for its obscenity), Qacvaxé, and other works, all lost. Severus of Alexandria, a man of fortune with a large library, living in the latter part of the 5th century, has left a few short stories after the style of Parthenius. Photius (cod. 130) also preserves the titles of some works by a certain Damascius, such as Incredible Fictions, Tales of Demons, Marvellous Stories of Appearances from the Dead, &c. The same authority tells us (cod. 188) of a writer of the name of Alexander who compiled a book of marvels. The credit of having written the worst of the Greek romances may be claimed either by Theodorus Prodromus, a monk of the early part of the 12th century, for his metrical history, in nine books, of Rhod- anthe and Dosicles, or by Nicetas Eugenianus, who lived somewhat later, for his iambic poem LMistory of the Lives of Drusilla and Charicles, imitated from the former work. Constantinus Manasses (also 12th century) composed a poetical romance on the loves of Aristander and Callisthia, fragments of which were first printed by Villoison (Anecdota Greca, 1781),

Under Bartaam anp Josapuar (vol. iii. p. 37 5) will be found the origin and development of the story by St John of Damascus, which belongs rather to religious apologues than to romances, Its origin is entirely Eastern, from India. The early Christians eagerly seized upon fiction as affording them a vehicle for spreading their views.

a OR BR NO TE

'Their contributions to our subject have a strong family

likeness, and usually either close with a martyrdom or are written in praise of a monastic life. To the former class belong the Clementine Recognitions (2d century), Paul and Thekla (3d century), and Cyprian and Justina, which con- tains the germs of the episode of Faust and Gretchen. The ascetic novels include Xenophon and his Sons, Huphrosyne, Zosimus and Mary, Thais, ke. Christian imaginary travels are represented by the Voyage of Macarius to Paradise and comic tales by Agape, Irene, and Chionia.

Besides the forged letters attributed to men of mark, we have from the Greek sophists collections of fictitious letters serving the same purpose as the epistolary novels of Rousseau and Richardson. The best known of those writers were Alciphron, Aristzenetus, and Theophylactus Simocatta. Alciphron, the most eminent, of whom we possess 116 Letters in three books, lived in the 3d or 4th century. Many of the letters are written by courtezans and supply curious information on contemporary life and manners. The fifty Hrotic Epistles of Aristeenetus form a much less entertaining series than those of Alciphron. Theophylactus Simocatta, an Egyptian by birth, died at Constantinople about the year 640. He wrote eighty-five Letters, divided into moral, rustic, and amatory. They are little else than brief moral treatises mingled with stories,

The review of the origines of the Greek novel shows that it arose with the decay of old Greek literature and carried on a feeble existence down to the 12th century. Two facts make themselves apparent. First, the romance (or novel) proper came late into the field, where it remained in a secondary place; and secondly, it invariably turned upon a hackneyed circle of incidents and never attained anything of the highly artistic

development reached by modern examples. The sameness observable in Greek romance arises from the fact that it was the product of literary decrepitude and impotence. The writers were in- capable of rivalling the glories of the old Hellenic litera- ture, and they endeavoured to supply originality with reminiscences more or less disguised. The literary and social surroundings in which these authors passed their lives gave them few fresh subjects for investigation, and the characters they describe are mere names. Human nature and the human heart have little meaning for them ; but, as with the Western writers of fiction who closely follow them in point of date, incident is crowded upon incident to the verge of satiety, in order that the attention of the reader may never flag.

Fictitious letters.

of Greek

' Review | romance, :

The contributions of Roman literature are limited to Roman productions by two writers, Petronius and Apuleius and Tomances.

one story by Martianus Capella, of more recent date and less typical nature. In the comic romance of PETRoNIUS ARBITER (q.v.), the tale of the matron of Ephesus first appears among Western popular fictions. This was un- doubtedly one of the Ephesian tales already referred to. We find it reproduced in the Seven Wise Masters, in the French fabliaux, and in Brantéme. It is also to be found in the Chinese. The opening words of the Golden Ass of Apuleius indicate that his romance and the Ass of Lucian were both inspired from the same source, per- haps through the medium of Lucius of Patra mentioned by Photius. Lucian seems to have reproduced the story in a condensed form; the Latin writer paraphrased and embellished it with other tales, among which the best known is that of Cupid and Psyche,—an antique gem in an unworthy setting. The hero, punished for his curiosity by being turned into an ass, passes through adventures similar in kind to those depicted in the Greek romance. The story ends with a fine description of the mysteries of Isis, into which the hero is initiated and through

which he becomes purified. The first two books of the cyclopzedia of the 5th century, the Satyrica of Martianus Capella, known as De Nuptis Philologix et Mercurn, form a kind of philosophico-allegorical romance in prose mingled with verse. Mercury, wishing to marry, goes, accompanied by Virtue, to Apollo on Parnassus and finds him occupied in taking from four urns the elements of all things. Apollo proposes that Mercury should marry Philology, but the consent of Jupiter must be asked. Jove hesitates and assembles a council of the gods to decide the ques- tion. The request is granted and Philosophy transcribes a decree permitting mortals of superior merit to be ad- mitted amoung the gods. The second book is devoted to the marriage. At first Philology has fears as to its ad- visability, and the Muses form a chorus by whom she is admonished. She is visited by Prudence, Justice, Tem- perance, and the three Graces. At last the bride goes to Mercury's house and all set out for the palace of Jupiter, who receives them surrounded by the gods and many deified mortals.

Of these three works the last does not comply with all our conditions, and of the first two Apuleius is after all merely a translator. The Satire of Petronius is thus the sole genuine representative of Latin prose romance. When compared with the Greek compositions it will be found to offer a remarkable variation. In the Satire we at once cone in contact with contemporary scenery and habits; the characters have well-marked individuality ; and the book is full of life. It must not, however, be considered merely as a novel; its chief object was to satirize the manners of the time. The same tendency to draw a strongly marked picture of the vices and follies of the hour appears also in the Asimus. In the qualities of vigour, interest, and originality of form and substance Apuleius and Petronius are far beyond their Greek rivals.

The texts of the Seriptores Erotict Greet have been edited by C. W. Mitscherlich (Zweibriicken, 1792-94, 3 vols. in four parts) ; by F. Passow (Leipsic, 1824-33, 2 vols. 8vo) ; in Didot's collection, the most complete (Paris, 1856, la. 8vo) ; and by R. Hercher (Leipsic, 1858-59, 2 vols. 12mo). The texts of many of the fictitious historians and biographers are

*given in Fragmenta Historicorum Grecorum (Paris, 1841-51, 4 vols. la. 8vo), and Seriptores de Rebus Alexand. AM. (ib., 1846, 8vo). Photius (Bibliotheca, Berlin, 1824, 2 vols. 4to) has. analysed a great many writings now lost. Early biographical information (not always trustworthy) is supplied by Suidas, and latterly and more perfectly by Fabricius (Biblioth. Greea). Trans- lations into Tanck are contained in Bibliotheque des romans grecs, tr. en francois (Paris, 1797, 12 vols. 18mo); Collection de romans grees, tr. avec des notes par Courier, Larcher, de., précédée d'an essat sur les romans grecs par M. Villemain (Paris, 1822, 12 vols. 18mo, unfinished) ; Romans grees, tr. en fran. par Ch. Zevort, précédés d'une introduction sur le roman chez les grees (Paris, 1856, 2 vols. sm. 8vo). In Italian we have LHrotiet greci (Florence, 1814-17, 6 vols. 8vo), and in English, Greek Romances, by C. Smith (1855, sm. 8vo). The general authorities are referred to under GREECE (vol. xi. p. 147). The following are special treatises on the subject :—J. C. F. Manso, "Ueber den griech. Roman," in his Verm. Schriften (Leipsic, 1801) ; F. Jacobs, " Conjecture de locis nonnullis Achillis Tatii," &c., in Wolf's Litt. Analecten (Berlin, 1820); Wiedemann, " Der gr. Roman," in Arb. dev kurldnd. Ges., 1848, hft. 3; R. Hercher, "Zur Litt. d. gr. Erotiker," in Jahrb. f. class. Phil., 1858, vol. 1xxvi. ; O. Jahn, " Eine antike Dorfgeschichte," in Aus d. Alterthumsw. ; H. Peter, "Der Roman bei den Griechen," in Newces Schweiz, 1866; A. Nicolai, Ueber Entstehung uw. Wesen d. gr. Romans (Berlin, 1867, 8vo); B. Erdmannsdorffer, " Das Zeitalter der Novelle in Hellas," in Preus. Jahrb., vol. xxv.; C. Hartung, "Die byzantinische Novelle," in Arehiv f. d. Stud. d. n. Spr., 1872; TH. Usener, * Zur Gesch, des gr. Romans," in Rhein. Afus., 1878, vol. xxviii. (N. F.); K. Rohde, "Ueber gr. Novellendichtung," in Versamvml. deutscher Philologen, 1875; Id., Der gr. Roman u. seine Vorléufer (Leipsic, 1876, 8vo); J. Wimmer, " Der gr. Roman," in Blédtter f. d. bayer. Gymn., 1877) ; "Greek Romances," in For. Quar. Rev., Nov. 1829 ; 'Early Greek Romances," in Blackwood's Mag., July 18438; S. Baring Gould, " Early Christian Greek Romances," in Contemp. Rev., Oct. 1877; Chardon de la Rochette, " Notice sur les romans grecs," in Mélanges (Paris, 1812, vol. ii.); Struve, "Romans et nouvelles chez les grees," in Jowrnal gén. de PInsir, Publ., 13th Aug., 17th Sept., 1885 ; V. Chauvin, Les romaneters grees et latins*

(1864, sm. 8vo); A. Chassang, Hist. du roman dans l'antiq. grec. et lat. (1862, sm. 8vo); P. D. Huet, De orig. fab. rom. (Hague, 1682); P. Paciaudi, De Libris Eroticis Antiquorum (Leipsic, 1808, 8vo); H. Paldamus, Rémische Erotik (Greifswald, 1838, 8vo).

(6) Pseudo-Classical Works.

The literature of the Middle Ages recognized three great epic cycles, distinctly defined by Jean Bodel (13th century) in his Chanson des Saisnes (t.e., Saxons) :

' Ne sont que troi materes, a nul homme entendant—*

De France, de Bretaigne, et de Rome la Grant ;

Et de ces troi materes n'i a nule semblant." Under "Rome la Grant" were comprehended the stories of Troy and the Trojans, A'neas, Alexander the Great, Julius Czesar, Judas Maccabeeus, &e., from Latin sources, —that is to say, the whole ancient world seen through the language of Rome.

The romances derived from antiquity may be arranged in three classes—(1) those which were believed to be direct reproductions, such as Hneas, Thebes, César, and the Roman de Trove, whose authors acknowledged indebted- ness, after their fashion, to Virgil, Statius, Dares Phrygius, Dictys Cretensis, &e.; (2) those based upon ancient histories not previously versified,—for example, the legend of Alexander from Quintus Curtius and the Pseudo-Cal- listhenes ; (3) those which merely reproduce the names of antiquity and nothing else, such as Aths et Profilias, Ypomédon, and Protésilaus,

1. The chief of the first class was the Homan de Trove, Legend which exercised greater influence in its day and for cen- of Troy.

turies after its appearance than any other work of the same order. Just as the chansons de geste of the 10th century were the direct ancestors of the prose romances which afterwards spread throughout Europe, so, even

before the novels of Heliodorus and Achilles Tatius, there were quasi-histories which reproduced in prose, with more or less exactness, the narratives of epic poetry. Among these nothing has ever equalled in vitality the tale of the two sieges and capture of Troy, and the subsequent destinies of the Trojan and Greek heroes, "It would require a large volume," says Grote (History of Greece, 1. p. 386), "to convey any tolerable idea of the vast extent and expansion of this interesting fable, first handled by so many poets, epic, lyric, and tragic, with their endless addi- tions, transformations, and contradictions, then purged and recast by historical inquirers, who, under colour of setting aside the exaggeration of the poets, introduced a new vein of prosaic invention." Long previous to the "Hpwixds of Philostratus (2d century) the Trojan War had been the subject of many a prose fiction dignified with the title of history ; but to remodel the whole story almost in the shape of annals, and to give a minute personal description of the persons and characters of the principal actors, were ideas which belonged to an artificial stage of literature. This task was commenced by PHILosTRATUS (g.v.), whose "Hpwixds bears ample traces of having been compiled from a number of current figments. Philostratus, however, only pictures several characters and a few isolated scenes. His method was subsequently followed in a more complete fashion by two anonymous writers, who either borrowed from him or from a more ancient source common to all three. A spurious history, professing to give the chief incidents of the siege, and said to have been written by | Dictys of Crete, a follower of Idomeneus, was known as early as the time of lian, and has been largely quoted by the Byzantine chroniclers. This was translated into Latin prose at an early period under the title of Dactyos Cretensis de Bello Trojano libri VI. With Dictys is always associated Dares, a pseudo-historian of more recent date. Old Greek writers mention an account of the destruction of the city earlier than the Homeric poems, and also in

the time of Aulian this Iliad of Dares, priest of Hepheestus at Troy, was believed to exist. Nothing has since been heard of it; but an unknown Latin writer living between 400 and 600 took advantage of the tradition to compile what he styled Daretis Phrygit de Excidio Trojx Hustoria. It is in

prose, and professes to be translated from an old Greek manuscript. Of the two works that of Dares is the later, and is inferior to Dictys. The matter-of-fact form of narration recalls the poem of Quintus Smyrnzeus. Both compilations lack literary merit ; the gods and every- thing supernatural are suppressed; even the heroes are degraded. The long success, however, of the two works distinguishes them above all apocryphal writings, and they occupy an important position in literary history on account of the impetus they gave to the diffusion of the Troy legend throughout western Europe. The Byzantine writers from the 7th to the 12th century exalted Dictys as a first- class authority, with whom Homer was only to be con- trasted as an inventor of fables. Western people preferred Dares, because his history was shorter, and because, favour- ing the Trojans, he flattered the vanity of those who be- lieved that people to have been their ancestors. Many MSS. of both writers were contained in old libraries ; and they were translated into nearly every language and turned into verse. In 1272 a monk of Corbie translated "sans rime L'Estotre de Trotens et de Troie [de Dares] du Latin en Roumans mot & mot" because the Roman de T'roie (to be mentioned lower down) was too long. Geoffrey of Waterford put Dares into French prose; and the British Museum possesses three Welsh MS. translations of the same author,—works indeed of a much later period.

We know that the taste for Greek letters was never entirely lost in western Europe. Eginhard tells how Charlemagne understood Greek and how he encouraged the study. Alcuin states, with pardonable pride, that the library at York contained "Grecia vel quidquid trans- misit clara Latinis," which may, however, simply refer to Latin translations. Under any circumstances, however, this knowledge must have been confined to a few. It was through Latin that the Middle Ages knew the ancient world, and in that language read the Pseudo-Dares and Dictys, the Fables of sop, and the Iliad of Homer.} Through these translations came many of the traces of Greek literature which occur in the fabliaux and romances. How numerous these traces were in the Arthurian cycle will be pointed out. The tale of the Dog of Montargis, familiar to readers of Milles et Amys (Carolingian cycle), is derived from Plutarch. Cerberus may be found in the Chanson @Antioche ; the story of Tarquin in the chanson de

geste Momage Guillaume; the judgment of Paris in Foulkes de Candie; and Cupid and Psyche in the romance of Parten- opex of Blois.

For a thousand years the myth of descent from the dis- persed heroes of the conquered Trojan race was a: sacred literary tradition throughout western Europe, of which a possible survival still remains in the popular phrase which speaks of a generous and courageous fellow as a Trojan. The classical traditions of extensive colonization subsequent to the Trojan War were adopted by Western nations at a very early date. The first Franco-Latin chroniclers con- sidered it a patriotic duty to trace their history to the same origin as that of Rome, as told by the Latin poets of the Augustan era; and in the middle of the 7th century Fredegarius Scholasticus (Rer. Gall. Script., ii. 461) relates how one party of the Trojans settled between the Rhine,

; 1 The name of Homer never ceased to be held in honour; but he is invariably placed in company with the Latin poets. Few of those who praised him had read him except in the Latin redaction in 1100 verses which passed under the name of Pindar. It supplied the chief

incidents of the Iliad with tolerable exactness and was taught in schools,

the Danube, and the sea. In a charter of Dagobert occurs the statement, ‘ex nobilissimo et antiquo Trojanorum reliquiarum sanguine nati.” The fact is repeated by chroniclers and panegyrical writers, who also considered the History of Troy by Dares to be the first of national books. Succeeding kings imitated their predecessors in giving official sanction to their legendary origin : Charles the Bald, in a charter, uses almost the same words as Dagobert—‘“‘ex preclaro et antiquo Trojanorum sanguine nati.” In England a similar tradition had been early formulated, as appears from the Pseudo-Nennius (put together between the 7th and 9th centuries) and Geoffrey of Monmouth. Otto Frisingensis (12th century) and other German chroniclers repeat the myth, and the apocryphal hypothesis is echoed in Scandinavian sagas.

In the 11th century the tale of Troy became the theme of Neo-Latin verse. About 1050 a monk named Bernard wrote De Excidio Troje, and in the middle of the 12th century Simon Chevre d'Or followed with another poem on the fall of the city and the adventures of Alneas, blend- ing the Homeric and Virgilian records. We now come to a work on the same subject in a modern language, which in its own day and for centuries afterwards exercised an extraordinary influence throughout Europe.

England, under the eyes of Henry II., about the year 1184 a poem in 30,000 lines entitled Roman de T'roie. It forms a true Trojan cycle and embraces the entire heroic history of Hellas, The introduction relates the story of the Argo- nauts, and the last 2680 verses are devoted to the return of the Greek chiefs and the wanderings of Ulysses. With no fear of chronological discrepancy before his eyes, Benoit reproduces the manners of his own times, and builds up a complete museum of the 12th century,—its arts, costumes, manufactures, architecture, arms, and even religious terms. Women are repeatedly introduced in unwarranted situa- tions ; they are spectators of all combats. The idea of personal beauty is different from that of the old Greeks ; by Benoit good-humour, as well as health and strength, is held to be one of its chief characteristics. The love- pictures are another addition of the modern writer. We find traces of the Odyssey of Homer and the trilogy of Aischylus? as well as of Ovid and Virgil. The author speaks enthusiastically of Homer, but his chief source of information was the pseudo-annals of Dictys and Dares, more especially the latter, augmented by his own imagina- tion and the spirit of the age. It is to Benott alone that the honour of poetic invention is due, and in spite of its obligation for a groundwork to Dictys and Dares we may justly consider the Roman de Troie as an original work. From this source subsequent writers drew their notions of Troy, mostly without naming their authority and generally without even knowing his name. This is the chef d'ccuvre of the pseudo-classical cycle of romances: it shows the most lofty conception, and in it poetical imagination has the freest and most lively play. The Roman de Troie was extremely popular. When Benoit, by reason of his lengthi- ness, failed to please, the Latin version of Guido revived general interest. The story passed through every country of Europe, first in verse and then as a prose fiction, and portions

of it furnished matter for the genius of Boccaccio, Chaucer, and Shakespeare.

The first work inspired by the success of the Roman de Imita-

Troie was the De bello Trojano of Joseph of Exeter, in six books, a genuine poem of no little merit, written soon after Benoit's work or about the years 1187-88. It was directly

2 The Middle Ages had their Latin Oresteia, see Orestis Tragadia, carmen epicum seculo post Christum natum sexto compositum, ed. S. Schenkl, Prague, 1867, 8vo.

Benoit de Benoit's Sainte- More, the Anglo-Norman trouvére who wrote in Roman verse Chroniques des Ducs de Normandie, composed in @ 770

rOomAN CE

drawn from the pseudo-annalists, but the influence of Benoit was considerable. Another was the Z'roalus of Albert of Stade (1249), a version of Dares, in verse, brought back to all its severity and affected realism. But these Latin works can only be associated indirectly with Benoit, who had closer imitators in Germany at an early period. Herbort von Fritslar reproduced the French text in his Lied von Troye (early 13th century), as did also

toires, &c., in which the Middle Ages studied antiquity. {t reappeared in the religious dramas called Mysteries. Jacques Millet, who produced La Destruction de Trove la Grande between 1452 and 1454, merely added vulgar real- ism to the original. Writers of chap-books borrowed the story, which is again found on the stage in Antoine de Montchrestien's tragedy of Hector (1603)—a last echo of the influence of Benoit.

Although the Troie reveals the greatest power of imagination, Adapta- and was the most influential and important, of these adaptations tions of of ancient classical stories, it was not the earliest of them. It other

Konrad von Wiirtzburg (d. 1287) in his Buch von Troye of 40,000 verses. To the like source may be traced a poem of 30,000 verses on the same subject by Wolfram

von Eschenbach, still unpublished. The Low Countries were not behind Germany.

In Italy Guido delle Colonne, a Sicilian, commenced in 1270 and finished in 1287 a prose Mrstoria Trojana. Although Guido knew some Greek, he did not translate Dictys and Dares, as some MSS. affirm, but reproduced the Roman de Troie of Benoit, and so closely as to copy the errors of the latter and to give the name of Peleus to Pelias, Jason's uncle. As the debt was entirely un- acknowledged, Benoft at last came to be considered the imitator of Guido, The original is generally abridged, and the vivacity and poetry of the Anglo-Norman trouvére disappear in a dry version. The immense popularity of Guido's work is shown by the large number of exist- ing MSS. The French Bibliothéque Nationale possesses eighteen codices of Guido to thirteen of Benoit, while at the British Museum the proportion is ten to two. Guido's History was translated into German about 1392 by Hans Mair of Nérdlingen. Two Italian translations, by Antonio Cessi (1324) and by Bellebuoni (1333), are still preserved in MS. at Florence. The book passed the seas, and in the 14th and the comniencement of the 15th century four ver- sions appeared in England and Scotland. The best known

was preceded by a Roman d' Eneas, written, like the Roman de Troie, Roman

by an Anglo Norman at the court of Henry II., a contemporary of Giraldus Cambrensis and John of Salisbury. There is, indeed, every reason to believe that the author was Benoit de Sainte-More himself. The work is a tolerably close reproduction of the 4neid, some passages being faithfully translated and others elaborated. But the religious character of Virgil's work is wanting, as well as the spirit of Roman greatness shadowed forth in the ancient epie. Long extracts from the Hneas have been published by M. Pey (Paris, 1856), but it has not yet been printed in full. Soon after its appearance it was translated with great fidelity into German by Heinrich von Veldeke. The Roman de Thebes is an imitation

of the Thebais of Statius, with the saine general characteristics as the Eneas. In eacli case the trouvére found a Latin model on which to superimpose an elaborate structure of his own. In each case also the original is abridged, while all polish is effaced, and the pagan marvels replaced by others more familiar to contemporary readers. The change is specially visible in matters of religion. Lydgate translated the Thebes, and Chaucer used the romance in his Canterbury Tales. It was composed after the Troie by another pen than that of Benoit. Lucan's Pharsalia was the last of the great Roman epics to be appropriated. Li Ronwnz de Julius Cesar by Jacques de Forez, of which only one MS. exists, dated 1280, is from this source. It adheres to Lucan's text with more fidelity than the other adaptations ; but the general intention is changed. While the classic poem ends in the middle of the 10th book, Jacques de Forez conducts Cesar back to Rome. These romances—Lneas, Thebes, and J. Ceswr—are mere translations, and are, indeed, our first renderings of Virgil, Statius, and Lucan in modern dialects. But the trouveres rearranged and transformed their originals. Fairies, magic, and enchanters, the novel position of women, the sentiments of Christianity, and the spirit of chivalry are strangely at variance with the stories familiar to us in the language of im- perial Rome. The influence of new ideas derived from the crusades and the East is plainly visible. Some of the marvels are found in William of Malmesbury, which indicates that they were of popular acceptation.

is the Troy Book of Lydgate, who had both French and Latin texts before him. An earlier and anonymous render- ing exists at Oxford. There is the Gest Historiale of the

lt is a remarkable fact that, while the origines of the pseudo- Second- classical romances are earlier than any of the others, the prose re- ary re- compositions are of later construction than almost all those we are produc- about to consider. The Reeweil des Histoires de Troyes, Herewle, tions.

Destruction of Troy (Early Eng. Text Soc., 1869), also an earlier Scottish version by Barbour. The invention of printing gave fresh impetus to the spread of Guido's work. The first book printed in English was a

translation by Caxton from the French of Raoul Lefévre, issued by the foreign press of Caxton about 1474. Lefévre's own version appeared from the same press about the same time and was the first book printed in the French language. There were also translations into Italian, Spanish, High German, Low Saxon, Dutch, and Danish; Guido had even a Flemish and a Bohemian dress. But not one of these translators even suspected that the writer was only a feeble repre- sentative of an old trouvere.

Thus far we have only considered works more or less closely imitated from the original. Boccaccio, passing by the earlier tales, took one original incident from Benoit, the love of Troilus and the treachery of Briseida, and com- posed Filostrato, a touching story. This was borrowed by Chaucer about 1360 for his Boke of Troilus and Cresside, and also by Shakespeare for his Z'rotlus and Cressida (1609). One reason why the Round Table stories of the 12th and 13th centuries had a never-ceasing charm for readers of the two following centuries was that they were constantly being re-edited to suit the changing taste. The Roman de Trote experienced the same fate. By the 13th century it was translated into prose and worked up in those enormous compilations, such as the Jer des His-

Jason, Gdipus, Alexandre, Virgilius, &c., belong to the second half of the 15th century. They have little interest and intrinsic merit, but their immediate originals exercised an extraordinary in- flueuce on the literature of the Middle Ages, an influence which appears even in the romances of other cycles and in those composed in prose at an earlier date than those we are now discussing.

Reeucil des Histoires de Troyes was "composé par venérable homme Raoul le Feure prestre chappellain de mon tres redoubté seigneur monseigneur le duc Phelippe de Bourgoingne en l'an de grace 1464," but probably printed in 1474 by Caxton or Colard Mansion at Bruges. It is in three books, of which the first deals with the story of Jupiter and Saturn, the origin of the Trojans, the feats of Perseus, and the first achievements of Hercules; the second book is wholly taken up with the "prouesses du fort Herculez"'; the third, "traictant de la generalle destruction de Troyes qui vint a l'ocasion du rauissement de dame Helaine," is little else than a

translation of that portion of Guido delle Colonne which relates to Priam and his sons. Two MSS. of the Recwedd in the Bibliothéque Nationale wrongly attribute the work to Guillaume Fillastre, a voluminous author, aud predecessor of Lefevre as secre- tary to the duke. Another codex in the same library, Histoire aneienne de Thebes et de Troyes, is partly taken from Orosius. The Bibliotheque Nationale possesses an unpublished Histoire des Troyens et des Thébains jusqud la mort de Turnus, @Maprées Orose, Ovide et Raoul Lefebre (early 16th century), and the British Museuni a Latin history of Troy dated 1408.

Hereules.—The cnd of the first and the whole of the second book of the Recweil are reproduced in Les prowesses et vaillances du preux Hercule (Paris, 1500), with the addition of a prologue and the genealogy of the champion. The character and adventures of Hercules were of a nature to attract the fancy of a romancist. His labours are represented as having been performed in honour of a Beotian princess ; Pluto isa king dwelling in a dismal castle; the

Histories of Alex- ander.

640

Fates are duennas watching Proserpine ; the entrance to Pluto's castle is watched by the giant Cerberus. Hercules conquers Spain and takes Merida from Geryon. The book is translated into English as Hereiles of Greece (n.d.). The marquis de Villena took from the same source his prose Libro de Jos Trabajos de Hercules (Zamora, 1498), and Fernandez de Heredia wrote Trabajos de Hereules (1682), also in prose. Le Fatiche d'Ereole (1475) is a romance in poetic prose by Pietro Bassi, and the Dodeci Travagli di Ereole (1544), a poem by J. Perillos. ; Jason.—Les fais et prowesses du noble et vaillant chevalier Jason was composed in the middle of the 15th century by Lefevre on the basis of Benoit, and presented to Philip of Burgundy, founder of the order of the Toison d'Or. Jason is shown as a foremost figure in tournaments, overthrowing all competitors at one held by the king of Beeotia to celebrate the knighting of his son Hereules. The two become staunch friends and attend the marriage eeremony of Hippodamia, Centaurs interrupt and are exterminated by Jason. He performs other knightly exploits, and on his

return is malici- ously sent by his uncle Peleus (Pelias) on the Argonautic expedition.

The narrative of the jonrney to Lemnos and Colchos, the love of

Medea, and the episode of the Golden Fleece follows the elassical traditions. When Jason rcturns to the country of the Myrmidons, Medea by enchantment restores the old king to youth and brings about the death of Peleus. For this last good deed Medea is banished, with Jason's consent, and is carried off by four dragons. She soars long over Greece before she is able to find her lover ; at length she discovers that he is going to wed the princess of Corinth. She descends amid thunder and lightning, kills the two children she bore to Jason, and allows her attendant dragons to destroy with fire Corinth and all its inhabitants, She then inveigles the old Egeus, king of Athens, into marriage, but is banished upon suspicion of attempting to poison her new son-in-law Theseus. Meeting with Jason, who had escaped the burning of Corinth, she becomes reconciled to him, and, abjuring magic, on the death of Eson becomes a good wife and queen. The manners and senti- ments of the 15th century are made to harmonize with the classical legends after the fashion of the Italian pre-Raphaelite painters, who equipped Jewish warriors with knightly lance and armour. The story is well told; the digressions are few; and there are many touches of domestic life and natural sympathy. The first edition is believed to have been printed at Bruges in 1474; the type is the same as that used in the first edition of the Recueil. Caxton translated the book at the command of the duchess of Burgundy. A Dutch translation appeared at Haarlem in 1495. M. Paulin Paris doubts whether the romance was written by Lefévre, whose authorship is distinctly asserted by Caxton. Montfaucon refers to a MS. by Guido delle Colonne, Historia Medex et Jasonis (unpublished). There is a Histoire de la Thotson d'Or (1516) by Guillaume Fillastre, written about 1440-50.

Gidipus.—A kind of introduction to the Reeuetl is Le Roman ad' Gdipus, Fils de Layus (n.d.), written in the 15th century by an unknown pen. The story follows the fable told by the Greek poets, adapted, of course, to the

taste and habits of later times. The sphinx is drawn as a giant of great subtlety and ferocity.

2. The wonders revealed through the Asiatic expedition of Alexander gave rise to a remarkable development of the marvellous in historical composition. The histories of Onesicritus, Aristobulus, and Clitarchus, themselves mem- bers of the expedition, were so full of unheard-of things that they soon fell into disrepute. Callisthenes, another companion of Alexander, also wrote an account, which is lost, but his name remains connected with a spurious work in which were crystallized all the fabulous tales of the con- queror. The life of Alexander had every quality to. appeal to the imagination. His marvellous career, his genius as a soldier and ruler, the beauty of his person, his early death, were subjects for legend almost in his own day ; and a cloud of mythical story soon floated round his memory. Quintus Curtius, who drew from some of these suspicious sources, is a more critical authority, though he allowed rhetorical fancy to embellish his narration. It is a great fall from the Latin historian to the Pseudo- Callisthenes. The work we possess under the latter title represents the second stage of the Alexander myth. Some of the MSS. attribute it to Aristotle, Ptolemy, and Alsop, as well as to Callisthenes,—all with equal verisimilitude. To reconstruct the true from the spurious work is an im- possible task after the increased vogue given to the latter by the re-opening of the East to Europe by the Romans, when all the traditions became remoulded in the form they

now possess. Among the histories separate from Pseudo- Callisthenes and subsequent to Quintus Curtius is an Ltinerarium Alexandrt, in Latin, but of Greek origin, which is little else than an amplification of the apocryphal letter of Alexander to Aristotle. It is dedicated to Con- stans, son of the emperor Constantine. Similarities be- tween the Jtineraritwm and the Latin version of Pseudo- Callisthenes prove that the stories were current in the 4th century, and may have emanated from the same source ; but, while the Zénerarium is inferior in authority to Quintus Curtius, it is less a collection of mere fables than is Callisthenes. The Greek text of the latter is supposed to have been written in Alexandria at the

commencement of the third century, and to have been translated into Latin by Julius Valerius before 340. The translation was abridged in Latin some time before the 9th century. Much of the work is a running travesty of the true history of the conqueror. The first book deals with his birth and early exploits. The trace of Alexandrian influence is to be found in the pretence that his actual father was Nec- tanebus, a fugitive king of Egypt. The latter was a great magician, able, by operating upon waxen figures of the armies and ships of lis enemies, to obtain complete power over their real actions, He was obliged, however, to fly to Pella, where he established himself as a doctor and was visited by Queen Olympias to get advice upon her con- tinued sterility. He promised that Jupiter Ammon should perform the cure in the shape of a dragon. To make quite sure Nectanebus himself took the place of the animal, and nine months afterwards Philip became the father of the future Alexander. At first there was some unpleasant- ness, but a reappearance of the dragon convinced every- body that the infant really was the son of a god, so that the putative father could no longer object. Alexander was small and somewhat deformed, but of great courage and intelligence. He was educated under the supervision of Nectanebus, who at last died through a fall into a pit, into which he had been playfully pushed by his royal pupil. The second book continues the various conquests, and the third contains the victory over Porus, the relations with the Brahmans, the letter to Aristotle on the wonders of India, the histories of Candaces and the Amazons, the letter to Olympias on the marvels of Further Asia, and lastly the account of Alexander's death in Babylon.

Callisthenes was translated into Syriac and Armenian in the 5th century. A second Latin abridgment is known as LHistoria de Preliis. The letter from Alexander to Aristotle on the marvels of India, the correspondence between the king and the wise Brahman Dindimus, and De Gentibus Indix, ascribed to Palladius, are different parts of the same legend. The myth had a wider circulation than any of the others we have yet dealt with, and the East contributed its share as well as the West. Persians and Arabs told the deeds of Iskander ; and Firdousi made use of the story in the Shah-Namah. Another early Persian poet, Nizami, made the story specially his own. The crusaders brought back fresh developments ; Gog and Magog (partly Arab and partly Greek) and some Jewish stories were

then added. In the 11th century Simeon Seth, protovestiarius at the Byzantine court, translated the fabulous history from the Persian back into Greek. In the following century was built up the Geste d' Alexandre by the successive labours of Lambert le Cort, Alexandre Bernai, Jehan le Nevelais, Gautier de Cambrai, Pierre de Saint-Cloud, Brisebarre, &c. Alexander becomes then a knightly king, surrounded by his twelve paladins. Bernai says that the foundation was Latin (? Valerius or some other Latin version of Pseudo-Callisthenes) :

"Un clere de Casteldun, Lambert li Cors l'escrit, Qui del Latin le traist, et en Roman le mit."

Coulogne (1534). The Bible as well as the classics was laid under contribution. Gaultier de Belleperche wrote a metrical Homan de Judas Machabée about the year 1240, of which a prose reproduction is Les chroniques du prince Judas Machabeus, Vun des neufs preux, et aussi de ses quatres fréres (Paris, 1514).

The Enchanter Virgil.—After turning the heroes of antiquity The en- into knights-errant, it was a simple task to transform ancient poets chanter and philosophers into necromancers ; and Virgil and Aristotle be- Virgil.

The same origin is to be sought for the Alexander myths found in Renart le Bestourné and the Speculum Historiale of Vincentius Bellovacensis. Quintus Curtius was largely used for the Alewandreis (c. 1176-1202) of Gaultier de Chatillon.! It was the theme of poetry in all European languages: six or seven German poets dealt with the subject, and it may be read in English, Spanish, Danish, Swedish, Icelandic, Flemish, and Bohemian.

Towards the close of the 15th century an anonymous writer worked up the subject into a prose romance, L'hvs- toire du noble et vaillant roy Alixandre le Grant (1506), in which the Historia de Preliis is followed with tolerable exactness. After an account of the ancient history of Macedonia and of the intrigue of Nectanebus we are told how Philip dies, and how Alexander subdues Rome and re- ceives tribute from all

European nations. He then makes his Persian expedition; the Indian campaign gives occasion to descriptions of all kinds of wonders. The conqueror visits a cannibal. kingdom and finds many marvels in the palace of Porus, among them a vine with golden branches, emerald leaves, and fruit of other precious stones. In one country he meets with women, who, after burial in the winter, become alive again in the spring full of youth and beauty. Having reached the ends of the earth and conquered all nations, he aspires to the dominion of the air. He obtains a magic glass cage, yoked with eight griffins, flies through the clouds, and, thanks to enchanters knowing the language of birds, gets information as to their manners and customs, and ultimately receives their submission. The excessive heat of the upper regions compels him to descend, and he next visits the bottom of the sea ina kind of diving-bell. The fish crowd round him and pay hom- age. Alexander returns to Babylon, is crowned with much pomp, and mass is celebrated. He dies by poison soon afterwards,

The Vawe du Paon and Restor du Paon are chansons de geste attached to the Alexander cycle, to which also belongs Florimont, a poem by Aimé de Varennes, said to have been written in 1188. Florimont was a son of the duke of Albania and father of Philip of Macedon by the heiress of the latter country. This poem gave rise to two prose romances—La conqueste de Grece faicte par Philippe de Madien, by Perrinet du Pin, first printed in 1527, and Histoire du rot Florimond (1528).

came popularly famous, not for poetry and science, but for their supposed knowledge of the black art. One of the earliest references to the magical skill of Virgil? occurs in a letter of the chancellor Conrad (1194), reproduced by Arnold of Liibeck in the continua- tion of the Chronicon Slavorwm of Helmold. John of Salisbury alludes to the brazen fly fabricated by Virgil ; Hélinand (d. 1227) speaks of similar marvels in a work from which Vincentius Bello- vacensis has borrowed ; and Gervase of Tilbury, in his Otéa Im- perialia (1212), and Alexander Neckham (d. 1217), in De Natura Rerum, have reproduced these traditions, with additions. German and French poets did not overlook this accessory to their réper- toire. The Roman de Cléomades of Adenez (12th century) and the Invage du Mondc, an encyclopedic poem of Gauthier de Metz (18th

century), contain numerous refercnces to the prodigies of the en- chanter. Reynard the Fox informs King Lion that he had from the wise Virgil a quantity of valuable receipts. He also plays a considerable part in the popular folk-tale The Seven Wise Masters, aud appears in the @csta Romanorwm and that curious guide- book for ee the Airabilia Rome. He is to be found in Gower's Confessio Amantis aud in Lydgate's Bochas. A Spanish romance, Vergilios, is included by E. de Ochoa in his Zesoro (Paris, 1838), and Juan Ruiz, arclipriest of Hita (d. 1851), has also written a poem on the subject. Many of the tales of magic throughout Europe were referred to Virgil, and gradually developed into a completely new life, strangely different from that of the real hero. They were collected in French under the title of Les Faitz Mer- vetlleux de Virgille (c. 1499), a quarto chapbook of ten pages, which became extremely popular, and was printed, with more or less additional matter, in all languages. We are told how Virgil be- guiled the devil at a very early age, in the same fashion as the fisherman used the jinn in the Arabian Nights when he got him to re-enter Solomon's casket. Another reproduction of a widely spread tale was that of the lady who kept Virgil suspended in a basket. To revenge the affront the magician extinguished all the fires in the city, and no one could rekindle them without subject- ing the lady to an ordeal highly offensive to her modesty. Virgil made for the emperor a castle in which he could see and hear every- thing done or said in Rome, an ever-blooming orchard, statues to preserve the safety of the city, and a lamp to supply light to it. He abducted the soldan's daughter, and built for her the city of Naples upon a secure foundation of eggs. At last, having performed

Rp- 3. We now come to the third order of romances in- | many extraordinary things, he knew that his time was come. In

: ¢é " : order to escape the common lot he placed all his treasures in a a cluded in the cycle of "Rome la Grant, : pt 'ane castle defended by images unceasingly wielding iron flails, and merely wetely reproduce the names of antiquity. e enchanter | directed his confidential servant to hew him in pieces, which he classieal Virgil is the most famous of those who have given rise to | was to salt and place in a barrel in the ccllar, under which a

names. prose works, and what passes under his name is less a | lamp was to be kept burning. The servant was assured that after

romance than a collection of popular tales, many of Eastern derivation. Among romances in verse we have LHraclés, Anseys de Carthage, Cléomadeés, Athis et Profilias, Proté- silaus, and Ypomédon. The first part of Athis et Profilias, by Alexandre de Bernai (latter part of 12th century), is adapted from the tale of the two merchants in the Descr- plina Clericalis of Pedro Alfonso, and is the source of Boccaccio's "Tito e Gisippo" (Decam., x. 8). In Ypomé- don, written by Hue of Rotelande about 1185, most of the characters are named from the 7hebais. As early as the year 1210 we find a rhymed translation of Ovid's Metamorphoses in German by Albrecht von Halberstadt. From Ovid is taken the story of Pyramus and Thisbe in Chaucer's Legend of Good Women, which is the subject of a prose work in Italian, Piramo e Tisbe (Milan, s.a.). The episode of Orpheus and Eurydice furnished the plot of the poetical Histoire d'Orphée of Guillaume de Machault (d. 1370) and the English Sir Orphes. The tale of Theseus was handled by Boccaccio and supplied the title and names to the prose romance /fistoire du chevalier Theseus de

1 The author of the much-quoted line, "Incidis in Seillam eupiens vitare Charybdim." The twelve-syllabie verse known as alexandrine is supposed to have taken its name from being first used in the French Geste d' Alexandre.

seven days his master would revive a young man. The directions were carried out; but the emperor, missing his medicine- man, forced the servant to divulge the secret and to quiet the whirling flails. The emperor and his retinue entered the castle and at last found the mangled corpse. In his wrath he slew the servant, whereupon a little naked child ran thrice round the barrel, crying,

'Cursed be the hour that ye ever came here," and vanished. Literature.— On the subject generally, see A. Chassang, Histoire du roman dans Vantiquité, 1862; P. Paris, Les MSS. Francois de la Bibl. du Roi, Paris, 1835-48, 7 vols.; H. L. D. Ward, Cat. of Romances in the Dep. of MSS., British Museum, 1883; E. Du Meéril, Preface to Flore et Blancheflor, 1856; Egger, Héllen- isme en France, 1869. The Troy legend is dealt with

in the elaborate work of A. Joly, Benoit de Sainte-More et le Roman de Troie, 1870-71, 2 vols.; G. Korting, Der alifranz. Roman de Troie, 1883; F. Settegast, Benoit de Ste-More, Breslau, 1876; Frommann, Herbort v. Fritzlar u. Benoit de Ste-More, Stuttgart, 1857; R. Jackel, Dares Phrygius u. Benoit de Ste-More, Breslau, 1875; HK. Juste, Sur Vorigine, des poémes attrib. & Homére et sur les cycles épiques de Vantig. et du Moyen-Age, Brussels, 1849; J. A. Fuchs, De varietate fabularum Trotcarum questiones, Cologne, 18830; H. Dunger, Die Sage vom trojan. Kriege, Leipsic, 1869; G. Korting, Dictys wu. Dares, Halle, 1874; H. Dunger, Dictys Septimius, Dresden, 1878 ; L. Havet, "Sur la date du Dictys de Septimius" (Rev. de Philol., 1878); F. Meister, "Zur Ephem. belli Troiani von Dictys" (Philologus, 1879); T. Mommsen, "' Zu Dictys" (Hermes, 1876); E. Rohde, " Zu Dictys Cretensis"' (Philologus, 1873); R. Barth, Guido de Columna, Leipsic, 1877; A. Mussafia, "Sulle versione Italiane della Storia Troiana" (Sitz. d. k. Akad. Wien, 1871, vol. lxvii.), and " Ueber d. Span. Versionen" (ib., 1871, vol. lxix.); Pey, Essat sur lt romans d'Eneas, 1856. The Alexander legend is treated by J. Zacher, Pseudo-Callisthenes, Halle, 1867 ; J. Berger de Xivrey, "'Sur Pseudo-Callisthenes" (Notices et Extracts, xiii., 1888); A. Westermann, De Callisthéne, 1838-42, 4 parts ; E. Talbot, Sur la légende d' Alexandre dans les romans francais, 1850; Florian

2 The Irish apostle to Carinthia, St Virgilius, bishop of Salzburg (d. 784), who held original views on the subjeet of antipodes, may have been the real eponym of the legend. Naples was a eentre for pseudo-Virgilian stories.

Frocheur, 'Histoire romanesque d'Alexandre" (Messager des Se. Hist., Ghent, 1847); H. Michelant, Introduction to Li Romans ad' Alexandre, Stuttgart, 1846 ; J. Maehly, '"'Zur Alexandersage" (Z. f. deutsche Philol., iii., 1871) ; Romheld, Die Alexandersage, Hersfeld, 1873; W. Wackernagel, "Zur Alexandersage" (Z. f, deutsche Phil., i., 1869); Dem. P. de Gobdelas, Hist. d' Alexandre suivant les écrits orientaux, Warsaw, 1822; F. Spiegel, Die Alexandersage bet den Oricntalen, Leipsic, 1851; L.

Donath, Die Alexandersage im Talmud Us Midrash, Fulda, 1873. For the Virgil myth see D. Comparetti, Virgilio nel Medio Evo, Leghorn, 1872, 2 vols.; W. J. Thoms, Early Eng. Prose Romances, 1853, 3 vols. ; G. Brunet, Les faite merveilleux de Virgile, Geneva, 1867 ; E. Dumeéril, "' Virgile enchanteur (Mélanges Arch., 1850); Gervase of Tilbury, Otia Imper., ed. Liebrecht, 1856 ; Pp. Schwubbe, Virgilius per mediam etatem, Paderborn, 1852 ; Siebenhauer, De fabulis que media wtate de Virgilio circumy., Berlin, 1837 ; J. G. T. Graesse, Beitrage zur Litt. u. Sage des Mittelalters, 1850; Bartsch, "Gedicht auf d. Zaub. Virgil (Pfeiffer's Germania, iv., 1859); F. Liebrecht, " Der Zauberer Virgilius (id. xe 1865); K. L. Roth, "' Ueber d. Zaub. Virgilius (ib., iv., 1859); W. Victor, " Der Ursprung der Virgilsage " (Zeit. f. rom. Phil., i., 1877). For Ovid see K. Bartsch, Albrecht v. Halberstadt u. Ovid im Mittelalter, Quedlinburg, 1861.

ROMANCE

and the neid exhibits that pseudo-tradition in its most permanent and powerful embodiment. A similar desire affected the Romanized Britons, and we may confidently assume that before the end of the 3d century a poetical form had been given to the story of the Trojan Brutus who founded the kingdom of Britain, blended with some- thing of the real traditions of the Celtic race. No such form survives at present, but we may discern its traces and results in Nennius (sec. viii.-x.), Geoffrey of Monmouth (d. 1154), and in all the subsequent chronicles.

In the 11th century the Anglo-Saxons of England had Ethno-

their old Germanic stories of Beowulf, Sigfrid, and the ee Nibelungen ; the Britons of the west enjoyed their Celtic 2°me's

: : 9 : +7, in Brits and Britanno-Celtic myths ; the Saxonized Britons of Wilt- ain, 11th shire and elsewhere combined the legends of both the century.

Il.—Mepi2zvaL RoMANCE. (a) Arthurian Cycle.

Origines.

The oldest and certainly the most important of the cycles of medieval romance is that which passes under the name of King Arthur, or of the Round Table. The names, characters, and actions of its heroes have permeated modern literature throughout Europe; yet so little do we know concerning the origines and the first authors of the tales which form the body of Arthurian romance that there are few subjects in literary history.more obscure and undefined. It can only be said with assurance that from about the year 1150 several poems! were composed by minstrels (a class of men recruited from all ranks of society) upon incidents and personages familiar to readers of what is called the Morte Arthur, a compilation of the second half of the 13th century. The Morte Arthur was not originally so called, and it was not a direct compilation from the ballads of the 12th century, but seems rather to have been a mere unskilful reduction into a single corpus of some five or six prose romances which had already grown out of the poems, and each of which professed to relate the adventures of nearly the same set of heroes. The first appearance of these stories in prose compositions is here our chief concern ; and it is, unfortunately, likewise our chief difficulty. The sources of information upon the subject are defective and vitiated to a singular degree; and the light thrown by the investigations of recent writers is frequently of the nature of cross-lights. The following attempt at constructing a brief literary history of the Arthurian romances is not offered as a complete analysis of the work which has been done, but as a sum- mary of facts and probabilities.

The Roman conquests in Spain, Gaul, and Britain im- posed upon a large portion of the conquered peoples the necessity of using the Latin language, which thereby be- came, and for centuries remained, the medium of educated intercourse and the language of the towns and the centres of government in those countries. In common speech, naturally, it became depraved in course of time, and the pure lingua Latina of the high officials and the clergy existed side by side with the corrupt lingua Romana of the Romanized people. The latter was, however, ignored by polite literature, and probably never appeared in a written form till it was used for political purposes on the occasion of the celebrated partition of Charlemagne's empire among his grandsons. We may say that the literature of romance begins with popular poetry of the 10th or 11th

century ; but, as its subject-matter was derived to some extent from the more respectable lingua Latina, we must go back a few centuries earlier to find the origines. When the people of Rome became acquainted with the civilization and literature of Greece they framed a fabu- lous history to connect themselves with the superior race,

é Chansons de geste, or ballads of knightly adventure, produced by wandering minstrels called in northern France and England trowvéres,

in southern France, Spain, and northern Italy trobadors (troubadours),

in Germany minnesinger, and intended for recitation with more or less musical accompaniment,

others; and the best educated men amongst the clergy had an acquaintance with Virgil, Ovid, and Statius. Here was a rich material for the imagination, and the invasion of the Normans brought a fructifying element. In France, Roman, Franco-German, Celto-Breton, and Scandinavian traditions were already intermingled ; and the reintroduc- tion into Saxonized England, from the south, of Celtic myths nearly identical with those which the Anglo-Normans found in Wales before the end of the 11th century gave to the latter a fresh life and a distinct predominance over all the other traditions of the composite people. Hence arose the British cycle of romance, accepted partly as history, partly as fiction by the new people of Norman England. Bretons, Britons, Normans and French, the Saxonized Britons, the Franco-Gallicized Scandinavians, and the Dano-Saxons all found a common basis of amalga- mation, and it is no mere metaphor to say that the publi- cation of Geoffrey of Monmouth's fabulous chronicle formed a momentous era in the history of England.

When the Saxons entered Britain in the 5th century they found in the middle and the south a Romanized kingdom ruled by a monarch with a British or Cymric name. The vernacular tongue of Britain was then and for centuries afterwards much nearer in form to the Gaelic of Ireland and of western and northern Scotland, the Pictish of Scotland, and the Gaulish of France than the Cymric of Wales is now or was then. It was a long time before the Saxon conquests extended so far as to leave the

Cymry or Welsh the sole distinct people of the original inhabitants of the country. In the meantime there had been con- flicts with the Pictish kings of the north, the Gaelic or Cambro-Gaelic kings of Strathclyde, and the princes of North and South Wales. Amongst their opposers the most successful and the most memorable was a prince or chief of Strathclyde, who is called by Nennius " Arthur dux bellorum," by the English "King Arthur," by the Welsh "the Emperor Arthur." After the departure of the Romans there were several independent monarchies or principalities in the island—that of the Romanized Britons occupying the centre, south, and south-east of the country ; two Cymric principalities in Wales (North and South) ; the Cambro-Gaelic kingdom of Strathclyde, extending from the Clyde to Chester; the unmixed Gaels in the north-west of Scotland ; the Pictish kingdom in the north- east; and a Scandinavian population between the Firth of Forth and Norwich. It is now settled by scholars that the Pictish speech was a dialect, like Gallic, Gaelic, and Cymric, of the common Celtic language; and in the early centuries of the Christian era the radical unity of all these tongues had not yet been effaced by the action of local varieties of pronunciation and arbitrary rules of orthography ; consequently there was no such sentiment of national or racial distinction between the divisions of the Celtic race as is nowadays produced by political frontiers. The real Arthur, whoever he was, has been claimed by the

Welsh as their own man, a champion of the beaten Celts retirmg westward to the mountain-fastnesses before the victorious Saxons. They have lost sight of the fact that there were always Cymry in Wales, who must have re- garded their brothers in Loegria (England) much in the sanie way as they did those of Strathclyde, namely, as kinsmen and allies sometimes, as fair game for attack and plunder more frequently. The struggle between the Celtic and Germanic race was a long one, and it can only have been after the power of the Romanized Britons of Loegria and of the men of Strathclyde was broken, in the battles to which we may attach the name of Arthur, that the tide of war reached Wales along with the British fugitives who crowded thither and to Brittany; hence the appearance of Roman names among the British warriors. It may be surmised that Arthur is not

a name but a title given to a Strathclyde warrior, corresponding to the Latin ¢mperator.}

The traces of Roman occupation and of Roman culture were not wholly effaced for many centuries in the west of England, and, besides the Latin quasi-historical writings attributed to Gildas and Nennius, there must have been something like a British Livy and a British Virgil in existence between the time of Constantine and that of the pseudo-classical compositions of Geoffrey of Monmouth and Joseph of Exeter, It is quite certain that the work we call by the name of Nennius did not furnish all the sub- ject-matter of Geoffrey's Historia, and the mysterious old volume which his friend William of Wallingford brought to him from Brittany about 1130 must have contained poetic legends as well as prose pseudo-history. Another mysterious volume is the 'Latin book" in the nionas- tery at Salisbury, to which the romancists of 1160-1220 professed to have resorted for their narratives. In Geof- frey's Historva, compiled, as he says, from William of Wallingford's book, we find three elements blended —(1) the epic of Brutus (which must have been written in Britain before 300); (2) a record of British kings down to the Saxon invasion (probably a corrupt version of. the same real history that appears distorted and truncated in Nennius); (3) the lives of Arthur, Guenhumara, and Merlin (old British popular legends, wrought into union with a later Cymric tradition in which the British or Gadelic Arth-vaur, Art-vor, or Ard-tur had been converted into a Welsh king Arthur).

The Round Table romances had their starting-point in Origin of Geoffrey's Historia, first published in 1138-39, revised and . republished in its present form in 1147.2 Yet there is no romances, Mention in Geoffrey of Lancelot and Tristan, two heroes

of much greater importance in the romances than Arthur himself. It does not seem to have been observed before that there is a curious set of resemblances between the personages of the romances and those of the Homeric siege of Troy. The names of Arthur and Uter suggest Atrides (Menelaus and Agamemnon rolled into one); Mark, again, is Menelaus; Guenhuinara and Yseult are

1 The name Arthur is found for the first time in Nennius (where the hero is said not to be a king but only duz bellorwm). He explains it as meaning either the "dreadful bear" or the "iron hammer." Now, although the former may refer equally well to Cymric and to Gaelic, ¢.e., arth-vaur or art-vor, the alternative sense is better sought in Gaelic, ord, a hammer, being a known word in that language, while there is no trace of it in Cymric. The second syllable of ord- dur is common to both languages, equivalent to the Latin durus, and has assumed in Welsh the meaning of "steel." It probably also meant "iron." This observation shows that Nennius did not know whether the name was a Gaelic or a Cymric one, and the mere uncertainty is in itself an argument that Arthur was distinctly not Cambrian. If it were permissible to seek a purely Gaelic etymology for Arthur we should find it in ard-tur=altus dux, high chief or generalissimo. In the two early authorities Gildas and Bede the British champion of the 5th century is named Ambrosius Aurelius, a man of Roman family.

2 His poem on the Life and Prophecies of Merlin was a separate work, published in 1136-37 and again in 1149.

like Helen, Guenhumara also resembling Chryseis and Briseis ; Lancelot and Tristan are like Achilles and Paris. Lancelot becomes for a time the enemy of his king (Arthur = Atrides) and stands aloof from him ; he is un- successful in his quest of the Grail, as Achilles dies before Troy is taken ; his son Galaad, like the Achilleid Neo- ptolemus, achieves the father's unfinished task. Lancelot (lanc-e-loc= child of the lake) is 'brought up in conceal- ment by the Lady of the Lake, just as Thetis (the goddess of the sea) brings up her son Achilles, disguised as a girl, in obscurity. Chiron, to whose care the young Achilles is at first entrusted by Thetis, resembles Merlin, the friend or lover of the Lady of the Lake, in his half divine, half human nature.? Again, not only does Galaad by his name remind us of the hero of the Achilleidos (it must have been as usual to give this genitive name to the poem of Statius as that of Hneydos to Virgil's), but there are other curious similitudes. The name of King Perles or Pelles, by whose daughter Lancelot becomes the father of Galaad, is suggestive of, or may have been suggested by, the Greco-Latin appellation of Achilles, Pelides son of Peleus. One of the meanings that has been

suggested for the name of Lancelot is /'ancelot=the serving man, in reference to one of the incidents of his story. Although a dif- ferent origin is hinted at above, it would not be inappro- priate to designate Achilles in his female disguise at Delos Pancillet (=the male damsel, in attendance on Deidamia). As in the old Greek poems we have Atrides and Pelides contesting for Briseis, and the minor Atrides, Menelaus, similarly contending with Paris the ravisher of Helen, so in the romances we find Guenhumara the object of mutual strife between her lover Lancelot and her husband Arthur, son of Uter Pendragon, and Yseult the cause of war between King Mark and Tristan. Again, a resemblance is to be found in the incidents of fabulous birth between Arthur and Hercules, Arthur and Alexander the Great.

These observations are not intended to contradict the claims of the Cymric people to have furnished the romances with much of their material; for it would be difficult to resist the evidence of such names as Tristan and Yseult, which indicate sufficiently their British or Breton origin, and even Lancelot might have been, as first suggested above, a Welsh or British translation of an epithet which would apply to Achilles in connexion with the following words from Statius.t Thetis says (as the Lady of the Lake might have said of Lancelot) —

- *Seepe ipsa (nefas!) sub inania natum Tartara et ad Stygios iterum fero mergere fontes ;"*

while her son's guardian, Chiron, is named in the same place " Carpathius vates," which at once reminds us of the "'Caledonius vates" (Merlin) of Geoffrey of Monmouth. At the same time the name of Guenhumara (Guinevere) makes one think of Thetis, the white-footed lady of the sea. As the name Guenhumara certainly preceded in date all the Anglo-French romances and is undoubtedly an old one, we may as well say at once that the intention is here to suggest an hypothesis that Britain produced Latin poets during the time of the Roman occupation, who wrote works not only on the fable of a British descent from the Trojans through Brutus, a fabled kinsman of Aineas, but also on the various subjects of classic mythology, the stories of Thebes, Troy, the Golden Fleece, and Alexander.® This

3 The names of several beings of this mixed nature in the early romances begin with the same word, mer, merh], or mel, as Merlin, Melusine, Melior, Melion.

4 Hugh of Rutland's poem of Zpomedon (written in 1185) evinces by the names of its personages such an acquaintance with the Thebais of Statius as the maker of the Lancelot seems to have had with the Achilleis of the same poet. He usually calls his King Arthur Atreus.

> Yeuerne, the name of Arthur's mother, was perhaps akin in its original British sense (although in Cymric it means " the true" or "the

hypothesis, which requires to be associated with the corol- lary that British translations or adaptations were formed when the Roman influence began to wane, would account for the curious circumstance that some of the Greek and Oriental fictions are found in Anglo-Saxon versions of much greater antiquity than any that have survived in the other vernaculars of Europe. Direct transference of such works from classical codices can hardly be presumed to have been the custom of a rough and semi-barbarous nation of Teutonic invaders ; the medium must have been the existence of Brito-Latin and British poems among the conquered people.

The success of Geoffrey of Monmouth's Historza and of his Werlin brought indignant comment from some of the Anglo-Norman historians, but it inflamed the minds of other writers already excited by the extraordinary events of the period. The result was the genesis of modern fiction. Within a few years after Geoffrey's publication the Norman Wace translated the Historia Britonum into French verse (1155), making some additions ; and in his

1270-75 to unify or harmonize in a single compilation the scattered Arthurian romances, and it is considered probable that the result was the French prose original of the exist- ing Morte Arthur. But it is also certain

that there exist prose Arthurian romances in MSS. at least as old as 1270, and that they were copies of yet older ones. Rusticien's work must have been simply one of compression and com- bination. We know from the MSS. of two different prose translations of a totally different romantic chronicle (the Pseudo-Turpin's Chronicle of Charlemagne), written in and about 1200, that metrical narrative was losing credit and that French prose composition had already set in. This statement, which refers to the French kingdom, is likely to be yet more applicable to England, where metrical suc- cess would naturally be more difficult to achieve than in the true home of French speech. As prose was current in France before 1200, it is not rash to assume that it had an earlier and less limited currency in England. Reckon- ing thus we may assume that the Lancelot and the Tristan were written in prose before 1190.

work entitled Roman de Brut we find the words— " King Ertur made the Round Table Of which Bretons tell many a fable "— from which we may infer that the Round Table stories, which led to the construction of the French romances,

The Round Table and the Grail are so closely connected Early that it is difficult to regard them as having had each a Round separate origin. The mention of the former by Wace ale proves the existence of stories of a Round Table current ¢,ai before 1155. The Round Table as it appears in the current stories.

were derived directly from Brittany, just as Geoffrey de- clares his Htstoria to have been. Wace, as a Jersey man, could have made no confusion between the Waleis of Cambria and the Bretun of Armorica.

Recapitulating what has been already said, we may chronologically tabulate the first elements of Arthurian story thus—I. Arthur, Guinevere, Merlin (in Geoffrey), 1136-49 ; IL. the Round Table (as shown by Wace), before 1155; II. Lancelot ; IV. the Grail; and V. Tristan.

texts of the romances is simply an important portion of the furniture of the narratives: it does not represent a cycle of incidents or even a number of special episodes. One might suppose from the form of Wace's phrase that the word was with him, as it is now, a general epithet to designate

Arthurian stories, rather than merely the name of a material object, as it is in the romances. But we cannot assume the fact for lack of specific information. The first and also the chief instance which we have of the

Gast's The original Zristan was earlier than the Lancelot, and appearance of the Round Table (beyond Wace's allusion) Tristan was presumably a French poem (or prose work ?), written | is in the existing Lancelot, which we may refer to about ae about 1160 by Luc de Gast, a trouvére of English birth | 1190. In the epilogue of the Tristan, Hélie de Borron am who lived near Salisbury, and is said to have had access } speaks of Luc de Gast's original work on that hero as the

to the book of stories referred to in a previous paragraph. The poem (?) and the book have perished, and the Tristan story was written under the name of Le Bret (=the Breton), to distinguish it from Le Brut (=the Briton) of Wace, at a later date, with so much additional matter that it must be placed after the Lancelot. Walter Map (g.v.) of Here- ford, who died archdeacon of Oxford in the year 1210, was a man of Welsh origin or kindred. In 1185 Hue de Rote- lande of Credenhill near Hereford wrote a French romantic poem, in which the names of the characters are all derived from the Thebais of Statius, but the incidents are wholly imaginative or derived from other sources. In it he speaks, in deprecation of any blame for his falsification of the truth of history, of Walter Map as being quite as great a romancer as himself. In connexion with statements fre- quently repeated in the early MSS. of the romances, this remark suffices to prove that before 1185 Walter Map had already published his Lancelot. We may fairly put the date before 1175, say about 1170; and it would be prob- ably correct to assume that the Lancelot was a French poem (or prose work ?) composed while the author was still young (1165-70). It has perished, like Luc de Gast's Tristan, and we can only conjecture that it had some similar connexion with the Achilles of Statius to that of Hue de Rotelande's poem with the Thebais. It was, how- ever, reduced to or rewritten in prose and amplified before 1200 in the form in which we now find it in several old MSS. (none earlier than the 13th century). It is certain that Rustighello or Rusticien of Pisa was employed about

faithful”) to “ Alemena,” and may have meant “ manly,” “ roueme

Arthur proves his fitness

for kingship by the perf r – ful feats like the labours — ene ae

of Hercules.

first of “les grans livres de la tauble roonde.” There is no reason to imagine that this phrase was written after the year 1200; and it indicates sufficiently that several books were collectively styled “Romances of the Round Table” between 1155 and the end of the century. One of these books was Joseph of Arimathea, or the History of the Holy Graal, written about 1170-80 by Robert de Borron or Robert of Bouron, a trouvére born near Meaux. This narrative seems to have taken at least two forms before it was incorporated in the prose Lancelot, and the alterations were sO numerous and important that some writers con- sider the Grand Graal to have been a rewriting effected in collaboration by Walter Map and Robert de Borron. The earher portion of the History of the Graal was but lightly treated on its incorporation in the Lancelot, and the form in which we have it in the separate romance of the Graal is of more modern compilation. The later portion of the Grail story—namely, the Queste du Graal, which was utilized by Map (or his recompiler) in the Lancelot—differs from that of the French writer in making Galaad the achiever, while Perceval was the hero of the quest in Robert de Borron’s work and its recompilations, as well as in the separate prose romance of Perceval and the separate Histoire du Graal. We may conclude that the older works (the original Lancelot, Merlin, and Tristan) had nothing of the Grail in them, and that the publication in French of the Tristan by Luc de Gast and the Lancelot by Walter Map (produced in this succession between 1160 and 1180) were accidentally contemporaneous with Robert de Borron’s poem (or prose work) on the grail (=chalice) or cup of Christ’s passion and the table of the Last Supper, based upon an old legend (connected in some way with the

ROMANCE

ancient popular Gospel of Nicodemus), according to which Joseph of Arimathea brought Christianity to Britain in the time of Vespasian. Then Robert de Borron continued his story in another work which represented the quest or re- discovery of the Grail in Avalon, Brittany, or Britain, by Perceval, the grand-nephew of Joseph of Arimathea ; and Walter Map appropriated so much of De Borron's Histoire and Queste as suited him, working it up in a continuation of his story on Arthur, Guinevere, and Lancelot, whilst adding to and altering the incidents of the narrative very considerably. Finally, Hélie de Borron (about 1190) re- wrote the Zristan in something like its existent form, weaving it by enlargement into connexion with the other tales, and probably soon after 1200 united for the first time in one enormous and unharmonized corpus the full set of Arthurian stories. One reason why we cannot assign this first combination to a later date (as those do who hold the work of Rusticien of Pisa to have been something more than a mere compression) is that the Guiron, written by Hélie de Borron (probably soon after 1200), is not in-corporated in the Jforte Arthur, which it would assuredly have been if Rusticien (about 1270-75) had been employed to unite a number of detached stories rather than to re-edit an already existing compilation. Of Hélie de Borron we only know that he was a relative of Robert; that he was the virtual author of the Bret or Tristan, in which he incorporated the substance of tales written by Luc de Gast and Gasse li Blont; that he also wrote Palamedes in two parts (Meliadus and Guiron le Courtois); and that his work was done at the request of a king of England, alleged to have been Henry II. or Henry III. Of the other early writers of Arthurian stories the chief were the trouvére Chrestien de Troyes (about 1180-90), who com- posed a poem upon an episode of Map's Lancelot story, and another upon the Perceval (in which he may have combined Robert de Borron and Map), and Guyot de Provins (about 1190-95), who wrote a romance of Perceval, now lost, and only known through the German translation of Wolfram von Eschenbach (about 1205). As for the Welsh stories in the Mabinogion and the Welsh Seint Greal, there is really no evidence to show their anteriority to the English Morte Arthur, except the fact that two of the tales (Geraint and the Lady of the Fountain) are of similar substance to the poems of Chrestien de Troyes, Erec et Enide and Le Chevalier au Lyon,—narratives of Arthurian personages but not embodied in the French prose romances, Even the Welsh chronicles

which are supposed to have furnished the original text of Geoffrey of Monmouth's Historia have been ascertained to be merely translations from the Latin version. It is a safe con- clusion to say that anything in Welsh literature corre- sponding with portions or incidents of the French romances was simply a translation made in the 13th or 14th century from a French original. This refers, of course, to what is now extant, for there can be little question that Breton and Cymric legend furnished the earlier romancists with names and legends in plenty. Returning to the consideration of names, it is obvious that when Lawnselot dy Lak appears in Welsh it is simply a corruption of the Franco-English Lancelot, and that the Cymric writer had no idea of its above-suggested origin in a British lanc-e-loc (a conjecture which is fortified by the pleonasm of du-lak or del-lak) or in a French l'ancillet. Consequently the original Lancelot story has left no trace in purely Welsh literature. With Perceval we may think differently ; the Welsh name Pere- dur, under which he is known, is a sufficient warrant for supposing that portions of the Welsh tale are at least as ancient as Walter Map. The very form Pered-ur, like that of Arth-ur, is archaic, and with the latter it requires a different interpretation from that which Welsh scholars

have given it. Here it may be observed that the terminal ur, whatever may have been its true sense, is remarkable for its frequent use in the names of Pictish princes. As for Perceval, wherever Robert de Borron got the name (see below), Walter Map, in adopting it for the hero of the story that belongs to Peredur, made the two names thenceforward identical.

Analysis of the Arthurian Romances.

I. Il. Arthur and the Round Table had no separate romanee, or else it has perished. It exists now substantially as part of Laneelot (111.).

I. Merlin.—Most of his story appears in Geoffrey of Monmouth Merlin.

and in Wace, from whom it was probably worked up into a French poem (or prose work) by Robert de Borron about 1160-70. The Freneh prose composition, embracing his life and, as an appendix, his propheeies

(Latin by Geoffrey), was apparently written about 1200 (by Hélie de Borron) in the form in which it exists in certain MSS., and nearly as it appears in printed books. Merlin, the son of an incubus, rescued at his birth by sudden baptism from the malignant destiny for which his diabolical parent had begotten him, is always described as amagician. He is ealled by the Welsh Myrddin, a form which betrays the posteriority of the existing Cambrian legends not only to the date of Geoffrey but also to the French romances ; in one of the earliest incidents of his story, however, he himself gives his name as Ambrosins.!_ He is repre- sented as living apparently at the time of the Saxon invasion of England. He was not a friend of Vortigern ; this king, whom we know from English sources to have been attached more to the Saxons than to his countrymen, was represented in the old Merlin story as a usurper reigning in an interval between Moines, son of Constans, and the two brothers of Moines, Uter and Pendragon. After the suceessive deaths of Vortigern and Pendragon (on whose fall Uter adds his brother's name to his own) Merlin continues to be the friend and counsellor of King Uter Pendragon. In that eapacity he helps the king to assume the shape of Gorlais, duke of Tintagel, and thereby to beget Arthur upon the Duchess Ygnerne. (The name Pendragon and the action remind ns of the fabulous birth of Alexander the Great ; the name Uter, in connexion with the go-between Merlin, and the probable Celtic meaning of Yguerne remind us of Jupiter, Mercury, and Alemena.) The result is the birth of a hero who resembles both Hercules and Alexander. He grows up and is held to be merely the son of Gorlais, in spite of the fact that he was born after Yguerne (already a widow) had married Uter Pendragon ; but he proves his right to royal place after the king's death by performing some extraordinary feats. In these he has Merlin's aid, as well as in the eonduct of his sub- sequent wars with the Gauls and the Saxons. Merlin has a lover or mistress in Viviane, the Lady of the Lake, to whom in an un- lueky moment (as Samson to Delilah) he betrays a certain spell. She uses it to try her power, without having learned the converse eharm, and poor Merlin vanishes into the midst of a thornbush, whenee his voiee can be heard ; but he is seen no more. Here the romance ends,—one of the most interesting, as well as one of the best-constructed and most simply told of the Arthurian series. The name and deeds of the enchanter have found their way into most modern literatures. One of Merlin's actions was to institute a round

table at Carduel, at which room was made for King Arthur and fifty of his nobles, with a vacant place for the Holy Grail. This was a ceremony to be performed once every year, and it was on the first of these occasions that Gorlais brought his wife Yguerne with him to court, and that King Arthur fell in love with her (as David with Bathsheba). This cireumstance, although of later date than the original Merlin, leads us to the next romanee in the cyele.

IV. 1. The Holy Grail.—The Grail romance began with Borron's Holy An old tradi- Grail.

poem (or prose narrative) on Joseph of Arimathea. tion maintained that Joseph of Arimathea (confounded in some respects with the centurion at the erucifixion and with Josephus the historian) brought the gospel to Britain or to Gaul in the first eentury of our era. The French romance on this subject, whichever of its existent early forms in verse and prose was the earlier, relates the story thus :—Pilate allowed Joseph to take down the body of Christ from the cross, and gave Him also son vaissewl, by which was evidently meant the chalice of His passion, or the eup used at the Last Supper. Of all the numerous interpretations suggested for the word "grail" or "graal"' the only tenable one is that of 'Ceup," whieh plainly refers to the words "son vaisseul." In that eup Joseph colleeted the preeious blood of his Saviour. He loses it when pnt in prison by the Jews, but it is restored to him in

1 When we remember that the Ambrosius Aurelius of Gildas was probably the Arthur of Nennius and the romances, and that Merlin was called Ambrosius Merlinus, we are drawn to believe in the Romano- Briton origin of the stories, and to conclude that " Arthur" and " Mer- lin" are two explicative or distinguishing epithets attached to the older names.

Perceval.

646

his cell by Christ Himself. Vespasian, son of the emperor Titus, falls ill, hears of Christ, frees Joseph from his prison, becomes a Christian, and reduces the Jews to slavery. Joseph takes leave of Vespasian, goes forth

with those who had joined him and his brother-in-law Bron. After a while the adherents suffer privation for having sinned secretly, and Joseph is directed by the voice of Jesus speaking from the vaisseul (graal) to establish a test of righteousness and sin by meaus of the holy blood, calling to re- membrance His own words about Judas, that " he who shall betray Me is eating and drinking with Me." The place of the rejected Judas should be filled, not at the table of the Last Supper, but at another table which Joseph should make in token of it,—a square one, and not until Bron's grandson (the third man of Joseph's lineage) should be fit to take it. The table was constructed, a repast prepared, one place left empty, and the Graal put upon the board, with some fish which had been caught by Bron for the occa- sion. Those who could find a place at the board felt a sense of satisfaction and were known to be righteous; those who could find no place were recognized as the sinners whose secret licentiousness had caused the distress among them. Then the name of graal was given to the vaissewl, because of its gracious and delightful? influence. A hypocrite named Moyse who attempts to sit at the table without avowing his sins is swallowed up in the earth. Alan, the son of Bron, grows up to be head of the line, and is en- trusted with the knowledge of all things that Joseph could teach and a sight of the Grail, He leads his kinsmen to the far West, to the vale of Avaron or Avalon, whither the disciple Petrus or Perron precedes them with a letter given him by Joseph, after he has seen the latter transfer to Bron the custody of the vaisseul. The son of Alan is in due time to grow to manhood, to read Peter's letter, and again to see the Grail—a boon which is as it were to renew the covenant of the Saviour with the family and followers of Joseph of Arimathea—to expose and expel the false, and to bring celestial happiness upon all the true. The race is now settled in Britain, and Perceval, the son of Alan, is the third man who is to see the Grail, after having passed through a perilous quest. Up to this point the mystic and pious romance of the Grail was derived by Robert de Borron from sources other than those which furnished the Arthurian stories; but the new realm of fiction was open (it was about 1160-70), and the Franco-British tales coming to his knowledge must have supplied him with the incidents of his third man's quest and even the very name of Perceval. It is diffi- cult to assign the exact proportion of give and take among the early romances; but at this point there 1sa new departure in which several writers took various parts.

IV. 2. Perceval.—The original story of the knight Perceval, before he takes up the quest, is simply that of an inexperienced youth who knows nothing of arms and chivalry, but whose rustic retirement with his mother has not deteriorated the instincts of his noble birth. After some amusing incidents, in which his youthful

1 This simply indicates a defective knowledge of etymology in the 12th

century. Robert de Borron supposed the word came from gratus or agréer, not knowing that it was a Gallicization of the low Latin cratella=a cup.

awkwardness is playfully depicted, he exhibits so much courage and skill as to become a doughty champion, the vanquisher of bullies and the protector of ladies ; and, when he reaches the court of King Arthur, knighthood is offered him. Chrestien de Troyes related the tale in verse (before 1191), but he probably had it from the (prose or poetic) narrative woven (about 1170-75) by Walter Map into his work which we call Lancelot. The agreement, so far, of those writers and the text of the Mabinogi of Peredur on the same subject leads to a supposition that the latter represents a Cambrian story older than Walter Map; but the introduction of the cup and the lance into it invalidates the theory that its existent Welsh form is the original. Robert de Borron continued his Graal, by relating the quest of the holy vessel—still in the hands of Bron, le Roi Pécheour, but hidden from all save the predestined per- fect knight —pursued by Bron's grandson Perceval, the only man who, by his origin, had a right to search for and find it so as to fill the vacant place at the table. Robert de Borron must have written his story more than once, and the result was that he also introduced his hero to Arthur's court, where Merlin had founded a round table. This round table, probably an independent element in the Breton legends, must have caught Robert de Borron's fancy as lending a further symbol of trinity (being the third table) to his own conception of the third descendant of Joseph of Arimathea. In his relation of the quest Perceval (whom he in no way identifies with the rustic Perceval or Peredur mentioned above) starts from Arthur's court, and after various adventures sees his grandfather, the Grail, the lance, and the broken sword without knowing with whom

he is or making inquiry. Ina second attempt he is more successful. Bron reveals himself, explains all the signs (the lance is that which pierced the Saviour's side), and communicates the precious truths which Joseph of Arimathea had ordered to be told only to the third of his lineage. Then the fisher-king dies; all the enchantments of Britain pass away (we presume the reign of idolatry is meant); and Perceval is left as the custodian of the Grail. This version of the Pereeval and the preceding Saint Graal, both by Robert de Borron, have only been printed of late years (the former as a supplement to the latter) from rare and little known MSS., and differ enormously from the old printed Grail and Perceval, and most of the MSS. which contain them. The introduction, however slightly, of Arthur, Merlin, and Gawain into Robert de Borron's Perceval simply shows that he had made acquaintance with Walter Map's Lancelot ; yet the large use made by Map of the Frenchinan's Grail and Perceval implies that they wrote contem- poraneously, but that De Borron's second part preceded Map's second part. In the latter the young rustic is represented as the youngest son of King Pellinore, brought by an elder brother out of his retirement and presented for an inferior class of knighthood at Arthur's court. He then meets all the other companions of the Round Table, to whom, as well as to Arthur and Guinevere, he makes himself very dear. He becomes one of the knights who undertake the quest of the Grail, a task which is proposed for accomplishment by him who is the best knight in the world. According to the Lancelot fiction he fails because of having slightly

PEDIGREE OF THE RouND-TABLE HEROES.

/ineas.

| \ Ascanius. |

| Silvius.

Joseph of — His brother-

—s Roman-Breton | Atimathea. eae Woy or Loegrian or Leithan R sayit SPREE Oe sources. ila Constans, king Alan. of Britain. "iy | Leodegran, MERLIN, m. Viviane, King Pellinore. Eyrawe, Scottish king. the en- Lady

of prince of Moines. Pendragon. UTER Vortigern, chanter the Lake, North PENDRAGON. usurper of Britain. = Country. bring up son of Ban j ee — ee | (king of Benoic or Perceval le Galeis. Peredur. PERCEVAL, Wife of Loth, king © Morgan, m. Urien, king ARTHUR ™ GUINEVERE ie, re of Orkney. the Fay of Rheged' (retires to a _LANCELOT (fails in PERCEVAL (Cumberland). nunnery after West, and retires to (of the Lancelot ; Gawain, Owen, or Twain Morprep Agee . a monastery after fails in quest, and retires to a monastery, Gualganus, (not associated with supposed neph ew death). Arthur's death.) where he dies).

or Gwalchmai quest ; end un- of Arthur, but

(fails in quest, known). really his son by

dies from wounds ~~ his half-sister, the

ina fight with Cambrian sources, wife of King Loth Lancelot). (rebels ; killed at Camlan).

.

Strathelydian or Albanian sources.

Fair Ysectr of Ireland m. Mark, king of Cornwall. fonns an adulterous union with Tristan. |

Ysaie.

GALAAD Cambro-Breton sources. (achieves quest, and

dies).

ers

Meliadus, or Tallwch m. sister of King Mark. king of Leonnais, Cornwall.

| TRISTRAM or TRIsTAN 1 m. Yseult of Brittany. (dies in despair of seeing fair Yseult).

Cornish-British sources.

1 In the second Arthurian compilation Tristan is annexed to the knights of the Round Table, and joins the quest, but the original story is quite independent.

Lancelot.

mt OMAN C E

infringed a vow, and the labour is achieved by one even purer than himself among the Round Table heroes, namely, Galaad, the son of Lancelot. All this is of Map's own invention, and much of it must have been posterior to Chrestien's poem, in which (although based partly on Map and partly on Robert de Borron) Perceval remained the achiever of the quest.!_ The Borronesque view of Perceval as one of a line of successive Grail-custodians or Grail-kings impressed the imagination of Guyot de Provins, and led him to regard with contempt the pleasant episodes of Perceval's youth as told by Chrestien. In Wolfram von Eschenbach's poem there is a long succession of Grail-kings, beginning with Titurel, and ending with Partzifal (Perceval)? ; the scene of their rule is shifted to Anjou and Spain ; the story is said to draw its origin from a book found at Toledo; several Moorish and Catalan names are found in it; and finally the Grail-kings and their people are confounded with the Templars, struggling against the heathens. The romance of Perceval le Gallois, such as we have it since its first appearance in print in 1530, is a prose compilation derived from the poem begun by Chrestien de Troyes about 1180 and finished by Manessier about 1230.

III. ZLancclot.—This hero, like Perceval, lias furnished an addi- tion to European nomenclature. In this romance, which there is so much evidence for ascribing to the celebrated Walter Map (see above), the substance of Geoffrey's Arthur, Guinevere, and Merlin was used as the introduction to a powerful fiction in which a new hero, Lancelot of the Lake, carries on an adulterous amour with Queen Guinevere, while at the same time he reveres and loves King Arthur and performs deeds of heroic daring under the influ- ence of the most generous feelings. The tale, although lengthy end overladen with a crowd of adventures which have

no bearing on the direct development of the plot, and notwithstanding the unpleasant nature of the chief subject, is one of extraordinary interest. The character of Lancelot remains unaltered throughout the course of the story, and is drawn with a masterly hand. Although his love is criminal, and he frequently does pious penance for his sins, yet his utter self-sacrificing devotion to the queen weakens by its exquisite fidelity the reader's sense of his treachery towards the king, whom he never ceases to regard with a feeling of the deepest affection and reverence. His faults are such that he recognizes his own incompetence to become the achiever of the quest ; but he begets, upon Elaine, the daughter of King Pelles, a son Galaad, to whom the glory of winning the Grail and redeeming his father's sins is reserved. Even here the romancer takes care to show that he was not untrue to Guinevere, his senses having been deceived by a spell (used by Elaine's maid to gratify her mistress's longing), which makes him imagine that his bedfellow is the queen. Nemesis begins to work when, upon a second use of the spell, Guinevere, after having waited for him in vain, finds him in the arms of King Pelles's daughter. She reproaches him bitterly and drives him from her presence with such cruel words that he becomes insane and wanders about the woods and fields like Nebuchadnezzar. Some years elapse before he is recognized by Elaine, when chance takes him to the castle of Corbin, in which King Pelles has custody of the Grail. She cures him by means of the sacred vessel ; but it is not long before he quits her again and finds his way to Camelot. Arthur and the queen and his fellow-knights are rejoiced to see the lost Lancelot again, and the usual round of tournaments begins. We now come to the episode of Galaad. On the eve of Pentecost an old man dressed in white brings a youth to Arthur's court. When all the knights are assembled at the ensuing banquet every seat is filled save that which was always left vacant for the Holy Grail, so that there is no place for young Galaad. Certain wondrous signs are pointed out by the old man which indicate that the "seat perilous" is meant to be filled by the young hero, who at once accomplishes another test which has foiled Gawain and Perceval. The Grail appears, and light and perfume fill the hall; it passes away again, and the next day the knights depart upon the quest of the holy vessel, Arthur giving way to a pathetic regret that his merry company of Round Table champions is to be broken up for ever. Galaad, the pure knight, is the only one who succeeds, and becomes king of the Holy City ;

then Joseph of Arimathea appears, and Galaad dies, his task accomplished. Gawain and Bors fail; Lancelot and Perceval nearly succeed, but are foiled. Bors brings back an account of Perceval's death, and Lancelot returns to court, a moody man ; he and Guinevere fall back into the old sin. 'The qucen is accused of having poisoned a knight, and is exposed to the usual ordeal. Lancelot saves her by conquering her accuscr, but receives wounds which break open at the next secret meeting between them. Scandal

1 As Chrestien never finished his poem, and as he had two or three continu- ators before 1244, he may not be responsible for the Borronesque ending ; but it is to be remarked that Robert de Borron and Chresticn were both from Cham-

agne.

: 2 Whatever be the meaning of the Welsh name Peredur, that of Perceval seems to be also British and to mean " possessor of the Grail." It may not have been one man's appellation but a title applicable to Bron, Alan, or the last achiever. The British words of which it seems compounded are perchen, a

root which implies ownership or possession, and mail (initially inflected vatt), a cup or chalice, so that the earliest form was perhaps Perchenval.

has been busy ; spies are on the watch; and, although, when the lovers are surprised, he escapes by dint of hard fighting, the stains of blood found in the queen's bed are sufficient to condemn them. She is doomed to the stake, but at the moment of execution Lancelot appears and rescues her. They fly together to his castle of Joyeuse Garde, in which he is soon besicged by King Arthur, the king's nephew Gawain, and the other faithful knights. He offers to give up the queen if no harm shall be done her; Arthur rejects the offer; and, after long fighting, news comes of a papal interdict promulgated against the kingdoin so long as King Arthur refuses to take back his wife. Guinevere is then received by her husband, but Arthur is advised by Gawain to continue the war against Lancelot,

whom he follows to his castle of Gannes in France. During the siege Arthur has tidings of an insurrection in Britain : his nephew Mordred has seized the throne, and the queen has fortified herself in London against the usurper. He returns, and after a series of desperate battles Mordred is killed and Arthur wounded to death. Flinging his sword away, the king disappears from mortal view and is borne by fairies to Avalon. Lancelot also returns to England, Jaments the king's death, pays a monrnful visit to the queen, now in a nunnery, retires himself to a monastery, and dies soon afterwards in sorrow and repentance. The original Laneclot was the true Arthur or Round Table romance, although when first written it probably contained no mention of Perceval and Galaad. To it all the other tales and episodes gravitated, and the above analysis represents probably its final fori about the year 1200. When at a later period, in the 13th century, it was abridged, and the Bret (Tristan) also, and both of them amal- gamated in the general Arthurian work now extant in many MSS. of the 14th and 15th centuries, the compilation came into existence which was translated into English by Sir Thomas Malory under the title Morte Arthur. The original complete Lancelot may be considered as a corporate work including the five branches which had previ- ously been separate, namely, (1) Merlin ; (2) Arthur and the Round Table ; (3) Arthur, Guinevere, and Lancelot ; (4) Joseph of Arima- thea and the Grail; the Quest of the Grail and Perceval modified into (5) the new Quest of the Grail and Galaad. A sixth element was added in the French compilation, which formed the original of the Morte Arthur of Sir Thomas Malory, namely, (6) the story of Tristan and Yseult.

V. Tristan.—This beautiful Breton or Cornish romance was Tristan.

originally a work totally independent of the Arthurian, Round Table, and Grail fictions ; and, if it is said by Hélie de Borron to have been left incomplete by its first author, the Anglo-Norman knight Luc or Luces, of the castle of Gast, Galt, or Gau, near Salis- bury, and by Gasse li Blont (Eustace Blunt), who is spoken of as a continuator, we may presume that his statement was based upon no deficiency in the original narrative, but simply on the absence of all allusion to the Round Table. He therefore set to work to produce what he called the Bret, or the complete 7J'ristan, by constructing a number of episodes which exhibit Tristan as one of the

Round Table knights, as also having engaged in the quest, and as having been with his lady-love entertained for soine time at Lancelot's castle of Joyeuse Garde. The Saracen knight Palamedes, who takes an important place in the complete 7ristan, and who is not one of the least interesting characters, seems to have been one of the additions. Whether the first author was really a knight or not, and whether he wrote in poetry or prose, it may here be said once for all that the earliest exoteric reference to the authors of the Round Table romances is that of Hélinand, who, writing close to the date of Walter Map's death (c. 1210), mentioned them as " quosdam proceres," a phrase whieh could only be used as indicating personages ranking at least as high as knights. Tristan (in the old English form, Tristram) of Lyonesse is the nephew of King Mark of Cornwall.3 Warned by a dwarf that his nephew's existence will be pernicious to him, the king resolves to compass his death. His attempt is frustrated: the child is carried to the court of the Frank king Faramond, and there grows up towards man's estate. He wins the love of Faramond's daughter, on the discovery of which he is compelled to fly to his uncle at Tintagel, with whom a reconciliation is effected. A prince called Morhoult or the Morhoult4 of Ireland lands in Cornwall to claim tribute of King Mark. Tristan challenges him to single combat, wounds him mortally, and compels him to reimbark in a dying condition, but is himself wounded by the poisoned lance of his adversary. Seek- ing afterwards a healer for his wounds, he is borne by the wind to Ireland, and well received by the king of Ireland and his daughter Yseult, who restore him to health. It is, however, observed that he is wearing the sword of Morhoult, and he is obliged to take a hasty departure. On his return to Cornwall the incidents of the complete Tristan begin to connect him with Arthur and the Round Table, but his victory over a knight, there said to have accused the

3 His father Meliadus and mother Isabel, as well as the preceding generations of ancestors, were probably invented by Hélie de Borron, as well as the account of his premature birth in the open country.

4 Is this a corruption of Muircheartarch or Murhartarch, and, if so, was it suggested by a recollection of the visit of Diarmuid MacMuircheartarch to England to claim help from the Normans in 1168?

Irish king of treason before King Arthur, is probably part of the original tale. He goes with the absolved monarch to Ireland at his request, and is prayed to accompany Yseult to Cornwall, whither her father sends her as King Mark's bride. Yseult's mother delivers a philtre or love- potion to Brangian (or Bronwen), her daughter's nurse, which the latter is commissioned to give Yseult to drink on the wedding-day, in order that she may conceive a true wifely affection for her stranger husband. Brangian, however, gives it to Tristan and Yseult, who drink, unconscious of the spell that is about to influence their lives. They love each other at once and for ever. During the voyage they land on an island, where Tristan, by overcoming an enchantment, ptoves that he and his companion are the best knight and fairest lady in all the world. They reach Cornwall at last, and think with dread on the approach of the fatal night which is to separate them and to make King Mark aware of his bride's fault. A device, which appeared to the old romancers one of easy performance, is suggested by Brangian, who, to save her mistress's honour, takes her place on the marriage night, trusting that King Mark's carousals and the darkness will cover the fraud. The scheme is carried out satisfactorily ; but the fair Yseult hires two ruffians to slay Brangian, lest the fact should ever come to light. The intending murerers, hcowever, are smitten with pity, and simply leave their victim bound to a tree, from which position she is soon afterwards rescued. As her rescuer was Palamedes, the Saracen knight, who must be looked upon as one of the inventions of Hélie de Borron, we may venture to hope that Yseult's unwomanly cruelty formed no part of the original story. Palamedes is a magnanimous and interesting char- acter, who loves Yseult with a purer love than Tristan, and who spends his life in a generous antagonism to his rival. The man who invented Palamedes and Guiron must have been himself a knight of the noblest type. The intrigue of the two lovers is carried on for some time, till Mark's suspicions are aroused and Tristan leaves Cornwall. Again he receives by treachery a poisoned wound ; but, as he cannot return to Mark's court to obtain healing at the hands of the fair Yseult, he decides upon going to Brittany, to seek a remedy there from her cousin, the white-handed Yseult, who is equally expert in treating wounds. She cures him and falls in love with him; he marries her

from gratitude. The descrip- tion of the wedding night proves that he still loves the other Yseult, for he remains faithful to her in the most material point, the white-handed lady being so innocent that she is unaware of the slight cast upon her charms. He makes his wife's brother Peredur or Pheredur his confidant, and the two quit Brittany to- gcther and reach Cornwall. A fresh source of misery opens for him

ROWARCE

written by any of the original writers of the Round Table stories, Meliadus was composed by Hélie de Borron about 1220 at the desire of and Henry III. of England (who paid him noble guerdon for his labour). Guiron.

Hc had already made Palamedes (the Saracen knight finally baptized and adopted to the Round Table) so prominent and so noble a char- acter in his Bret, or romance of Yristan, that the king wished for another book on the subject. Since the story was to be one of knightly courtesy, its name should be Palamedes. Ag that hero takes only a minor part in the transactions of the story it is diffi- cult to believe that he meant the name as other than a metaphor. The book is divided into two distinct tales,—one relating the adven- tures of Meliadus, who begat Tristan upon the adulterous queen of Scotland, and the other those of a knight whose name appears here for the first time,—Guiron le Courtois.! JAfeliadus is a dull and clumsy composition, chiefly remarkable for the circumstance that it alludes to the Charlemagne romances, and includes among its per- sonages Aryhoan of Saxony, ancestor of Ogyers le Danois (Ogier the Dane). Even the account which it gives of Tristan's birth is wholly at variance with that which the writer had already given (or accepted) in the romance of Tristan and Yseult. As for Guiron, the beauty of his character redeems the tediousness of the narrative. From the point of view of human noble-mindedness it is the best of all the Arthurian tales, Guiron being equally free from the criminal sensuality of Lancelot and Tristan on the one hand, and distant from the superangelical purity of Galaad and Perceval on the other. Under the most trying circumstances he keeps himself chastely aloof from sin, although love is mutual between himself and his friend's wife ; and, when on one occasion he reflects how near he has been to the verge of criminality, he strikes his own sword into his

breast as a punishment. It is needless to say that he does not die but lives to see that same friend, Denain le Roux, carry off a maiden on whom he (Guiron) has bestowed a more justifiable affec- tion. When, after a year's vain search, he meets his false friend and his ravished lady-love together, he fights and conquers Denain but spares his life, and goes away with the lady, still in love with her. Denain exhibits his friendship and gratitude effectually after- wards, but the story is left unfinished, Guiron and Bloye having been entrapped by treachery and lying still within the walls of a dungeon. The author refers to his Afeliadus for an account of their liberation ; but this simply shows that he intended to rewrite Meliadus. Fifty or sixty years later Rusticien of Pisa abridged the Palamedes, and inserted the incidents of the two in his compila- tion of Arthurian romances, now lost as a whole, although usually confounded with the Alorte Arthur. From his compilation the printed Meliadus and Guiron were further abridged and finally

printed so in separate form.

Ysaie le Triste, Arthus de Bretaigne, and Pereeforest are three Ysaie, romances which had also considerable vogue, but, although they Arthus belong to the Arthurian cycle, they have no real connexion beyond de Bret- the use of British names and the supposed kinship of the heroes aigne, with those of the old stories. Almost as much might be alleged and against the Meliadus and the Guwiron, but they were at least written Perce- by one of the first authors of the genuine works, and he had pre- forest.

now, as Pheredur falls in love with fair Yseult. Tristan becomes insane and wanders away ; but after some time he is brought back to the court, where Yseult restores him to reason, at the cost, how- ever, of reawakening the jealous wrath of King Mark, who compels him to quit Cornwall, making him swear never to return. Hélie's Tristan now joins the Round Table company at King Arthur's court, and King Mark, still unsatisfied, goes thither also with the purpose of bringing about his nephew's death. The unfavourable view of

Mark's character is here heightened by making him speak and act in the most ridiculous manner. Arthur reconciles the uncle and the nephew ;

Tristan goes back with Mark, and frees Cornwall from an invasion by the Saxons ; but he fails to win favour from the king, who puts him in a dungeon. He is released by an insurrec- tion and King Mark himself is imprisoned; Tristan flies with Yseult aud is received in Joyeuse Garde by Lancelot, until King Arthur brings about a fresh reconciliation, and Yseult is restored to Mark along with his kingdom. Tristan now returns to his neglected wife, but finds that a revolt has fortunately saved him from the necessity of repaying her devotion with caresses. He goes forth to fight, and subdues the rebel count, but is sorely wounded again. The white- handed lady tends him, cures him, and becomes his wife in deed as Well asin name. He quits her once more, and renews his secret intercourse with fair Yseult in Cornwall, until discovery compels him to return to Brittany. In giving his aid to the unsuccessful prosecution of an amour by his brother-in-law he is once more poisonously wounded. He comes to such a dangerous pass that at last he sends a secret messenger to fair Yseult, to bring her back with him if possible. Should she be able and willing to come the ship is to be rigged with white sails; with black, on the con- trary, if the mission is unsuccessful. Tristan's anxiety comes to the knowledge of white-handed Yseult, who, seized with sudden Jealousy, when the white-sailed vessel comes gaily dancing over the waves, goes to her sick husband and tclls him that the sails are black. He bids her at once farewell and dies of a broken heart. Fair Yseult, on reaching land, hears of his death, makes her way to the chamber where his corpse is lying, and dies upon her dead hero's breast. Their bodies are conveyed to Cornwall, along with Tristan's sword, formerly Morhoult's, and Mark learns the story of the love- potion. Seized with pity, he has the two lovers buried not far from each other, and a wondrous tree extends its branches to overshadow their two graves.

Palamedes; Meliadus and Guiron.— This, the last romance

sumably some acquaintance with the British folk-legends. The fact that Rusticien of Pisa about 1270-75 abridged and compiled in a single great book the scattered and discordant stories of the earlier period, at the request of Prince Edward (afterwards Edward I.) of England, is universally conceded. That compilation has never been printed ; it is even uncertain whether any MS. in existence repre- sents it, for, although the

English Morte Arthur is usually supposed to have been compendiously translated from it, we may infer with greater probability that Sir Thomas Malory used an earlier compila- tion, perhaps the work of Hélie de Borron. One reason to justify such a conjecture may be found in the absence of Guéron and Meliadus from the English book, which would hardly be the case if the former notion were corrcct, since we know that Rusticien published an abridged text of those two works. Rusticien's compilation could in fact only be recovered approximately by re- uniting the texts of the various Arthurian romances as printed in French in the 15th and 16th centuries,—these abridged and inferior texts having apparently been derived or rewritten from his book, not from MSS. of the separate old romances. The Morte Arthur was printed by Caxton from Sir Thomas Malory's MS. translation or adaptation made in England not many years beforc the printer's establishment at Westminster. As an early English text and as the only existing homogeneous embodiment of the ancient Franco- British romances, it is of the highest interest, while at the same time it breathes the earnest and simple feeling which animates the originals,—differing thus toto celo from the colder, more arti- ficial, and less interesting narratives which were invented in the 15th century, and of which the YVsaie, Arthus de Bretaigne, and Perceforest are examples. All thrce may be referred to the first half of that century, although it has been alleged that the second was written in the 14th. Ysade forestalls to some extent the type of the 16th and 17th century French romances. It is an early instance

1 Guiron appears to be the Breton or Cymric word which means "loyal," "true," or "honest," and is a fitting title for the hero.

Minor Arthur- jan ro- mances,

ROMANCE

of the use of a favourite device in later fiction, by which fairies are introduced who bestow special gifts at the birth of a hero ; and amongst its chief personages is the misshapen dwarf Tronc, after- wards named Aubron—that is, Oberon—and made beautiful. He was adopted from the old French story of Huon de Bordeaux, just as the Oberon of the latter had his origin in the Elberich of the Heldenbueh. The original

composition of Pereeforest has been assigned without reason to the 13th century, and it is possible that some insignificant portion of the romance may have been written in the 14th ; but the probability is that David Aubert was the real author of the extant work, and that he wrote it at the court of Burgundy about 1450. It would be difficult to imagine a work more absurd, heterogeneous, and wearying in its immensity than this. The very "variety" for which Dunlop praises it merely indicates the mass of multifarious and incongruous incidents, un- conncted and uninteresting, of which it is full. Antiquaries, how- ever, find it useful for the history of those knightly sports called tournaments, immense numbers of which are described in minute detail. Arthur of Little Britain must have been considcred a very interesting romance when Lord Berners translated it into English, but we cannot discover its attractiveness. It is a dull inartistic composition, with scarcely any distinctiveness in the drawing of its personages.

A great number of poetic and prose compositions, beginning with chansons and fabliaux in the 12th and 13th centuries, form a large portion of the literature of Arthurian romance ; but in most instances they deal only with episodes, and are better described in the articles relating to the literature to which they belong than they could be, or ought to be, here. Some of them may, however, be mentioned briefly in chronological succession. In the 12th century —that is, between 1170 and 1200—Arnaud Daniel the troubadour wrote a poem, now quite lost, on Lancelot and Guinevere ; Chresticn de Troyes the trouvére wrote one entitled the Charrette, t.c., in refer- ence to Lancelot's unknightly mode upon one occasion of hurrying to the rescue of Guinevere in a cart for want of a horse; this story was continued by Godefroi de Leigni. Chrestien wrote another poem on (Peredur) Pereeval, which was continued by three other hands, in which Perceval remains the achiever of the Grail-quest. He also wrote Eree et Enide, a poem which contains the same substance as the Welsh story of Geraint in the Mabinogion, and which never appeared in any of the Arthurian romances; and the Chevalier aw Lyon, which is similarly identical with the Lady of the Fountain in the Mabinogion. Owen or Ywain, the Chevalier au Lyon, is a prominent Round Table knight in the romances, but his story is not incorporated in them. Hartmann von der Aue translated Chrestien's poem

into German verse before 1200 ; in English it appeared as Ywain and Gawain in the 14th century ; another English poem, Sir Gawaine and the Green Knight, was written about 1360, as well as a Scottish Golagrus and Gawaine, in the 14th century. A poem, dated 1212, containing Le Roman de Joseph d' Arimathie, has been published by Francisque Michel, and is supposed by many to be Robert de Borron's original work. Its substance is the same as the first part of the prose Petit Graal, which Hucher has published as Borron's real original. About the same time, or a few years earlier, Ulrich von Zatzikhoven translated Arnaud Daniel's Lancelot into German verse; the lost Pereeval in verse of Guyot de Provins and Wolfram von Eschenbach's metrical German version of it (in which he miscalls the trouvére " Kiot der Provenzal") have already been mentioned. There is an early German poem called Wigalois, composed by Wirnt of Grafenberg (t.e., Gui, son of Gawain), evidently derived soon after 1200 from a French original, Gui Galeis or Giglan, which is lost. On Gawain himself there are two French poems by Raoul and Renault or Raoul de Beaujeu, of the 13th century ; and one of Chrestien de Troyes's chansons (before 1200) celebrates Cliges, a nephew of Gawain. A French poem on Merlin dates from about 1300. There is a Petit Tristan or Brun de la Montagne, written in verse in the 14th century. The French poems of Marie de France, written in England early in the 13th century, contain lays of Lanval and of Chevre-fewille (on Tristan), which are professedly Arthurian subjects. Of the English works on the Round Table romances the chief are the metrical History of the Grail, trans- lated early in the 15th century by Henry Lonelich, and published from a MS. by the Roxburghe Club, and Sir Thomas Malory's Morte Arthur. An English prose romance of Merlin was written about 1450, and a metrical Arthowr and Merlin is probably fifty or sixty years older. A further Life of Arthur in English verse is supposed to have been composed about 1428. There is a metri- cal version of Renault de Beaujeu's Giglan, probably of the latter part of the 14th century. Two poenis both entitled Aforte Arthur exist, one written about 1390, which especially treats of King Arthur, and another belonging to the middle of the 15th century, of which the story of Lancelot is the subject-matter ; and there isa Scottish Lancelot of the Laik in verse, which was composed late in that century. A romance of the Seint Graal, in verse, written about 1350, was probably a translation of Robert de Borron's Joseph d' Arimathie. Between 1838 and 1849 Lady Charlotte

Guest printed and translated the JJabinogion (Children's Stories) from the Welsh MS. known as the Llyfr Coch o Hergest, tran- scribed late in the 14th century, and now preserved at Oxford, in the library of Jesus College. At first it was believed that these stories, so far as they agreed with the narratives of the printed French romances, were copies of the original legends used by Walter Map and the Borrons; but there can be little doubt that only those portions which are not found in the romances are of independent Celtic or Cambrian origin, while the remainder was derived from the French stories or poems of the 13th and 14th centuries.

BiBlioGRAPHICAL List OF EARLIEST EDITIONS oF CHIEF RoUND TABLE Romances.—Partzifal und Titwrel, in German verse, 2 vols. fol., 1477. This book is a translation by Wolfram von Eschenbach, about 1205, of Guyot's lost French poem, based upon Robert de Borron's Histoire du Graal.

Perceval, fol., Paris, 1530. A totally distinct work from the Franco-German Partzifal mentioned above. Various poems in French and English of early date exist on the adventures of Perceval, but they are not to be identified with the prose romance.

Morte Arthur, fol., print. by William Caxton, 1485. Sir Thomas Malory's Eng- lish translation of the sccond French Arthurian compilation which had been made about 1250, and united Tristan with the so-called Lancelot.

Laneelot du Lac, 3 parts, fol., Rouen, 1488; and Paris, A. Vérard, 1494. This, the first Round Table compilation, was made about 1200, and embodied three or four tales which had previously had a separate existence. An Italian trans- lation appeared in 8 vols. 8vo, Venice, 1558-59. A Spanish translation appears to be the Demunda del Sancto Grial, fol., Toledo, 1515, which may possibly be the whole Lancelot notwithstanding its name. A Dutch Roman van Lancelot of the 138th century was printed by Jonckbloet in 2 vols. 4to, 1846-49, from a MS. It may not bea translation of the French romance. The Maitland Club

painted in 1839 a Lancelot du Lac in Scottish metre, from a MS. of the 15th century.

Tristan, fol., Rouen, 1489; and Paris, Vérard, about 1499. Don Tristan de Leonis, fol., Valladolid, 1501, is a Spanish translation. The Italian I due Tristani, 2 vols. 8vo, Venice, 1555, is a compilation of the two romances of Tristan and his son Ysaie. 'The two stories were united also in the late Spanish versions, if not in the first edition of 1501. A Scottish poem on Sir Tristram was written by Thomas Rhymer of Ercildoune in the 13th century; published by Sir Walter Scott. Various early poems on the same subject have been printed in Tristan by Francisque Michel, 2 vols. 12mo, 1835-37. A German poem of Tristan und Isolde, begun by Gottfried of Strasburg early in the 13th century, and continued by others in the same century, was published at Berlin in 1821, 4to, by Groote, and by Von der Hagen in 2 vols. 8vo, Breslau, 1822, This poem and the Scottish one are supposed to be derived from a French Tristan in verse by a trouvére Thomas, which is included in Michel's Tristan. 'There exist also an Icelandic Saga af Tristam og Isond, of the 13th century, published in Miiller's Saga-Bibliothek, and old popular chapbooks on the same subject in German, Danish, Italian, Bohemian, and modern Greek. The oldest German edition of the popular Tristrant was printed in 4to at Augsburg in 1484.

Artus de Bretagne, fol. (no place), 1498; also at Lyons in 1496. An English translation was made by Lord Berners, Arthur of Lytell Brytayne, fol. (print. by Robert Redborne, no date, but probably about 1565).

Vie et Prophéties de Merlin, 3 vols. fol., Paris (ed. Vérard), 1498. There exist an Italian translation, Historia di Merlino, made by Antonio Tedeschi in 1379, fol., Venice, 1480, and a Spanish translation, El Baladro del Sabio Merlin, fol., Burgos, 1498. The Lytel Treatys of the Byrth and Prophecye of Merlin, published by Wynkyn de Worde, 4to, 1510, is a popular poem; and the Life of Merlin, 4to, 1641, is an original work by Thomas Heywood. The Early English Text Society has published Merlin or the Early History of King Arthur (8vo, 1869-77), in prose, from an English MS. of the 15th century, which was made from a French original. 'There exists also an Arthour and Merlin in verse, written about

1400, which has been printed for the Abbotsford Club, 4to, 1838. Geoffrey of Monmouth's original De Vita et Vaticiniis Merlini, in verse, was printed by the Roxburghe Club in 1830, 4to. His prose narrative (portion of the Historia Britonwm) was first printed in the Brittannia# utriusque Regum Origo, 4to, Paris, 1508, and afterwards better in the Heidelberg Script, Rerwm. Britann., fol., 1587,

Gyron le Courtoys, fol., Paris, Vérard, no date (about 1501). Two old Italian translations of the 14th or 15th century have been printed from MSS. in Italy, 8vo, Verona, 1834, and 8vo, Florence, 1835. Alamanni's Girone el Cortese is a poem on the subject of the romance, written for Francis L., 4to, Paris, 1548.

Histoire (et Queste) du S. Graal, fol., Paris, 1516. The Spanish Demanda del Sancto Grial and Baladro de Merlin have probably no connexion with this book, but are rather to be considered as drawn from the Lancelot. A French poetic Roman du Saint-Graal of the beginning of the 14th century has been published by Francisque Michel, 12mo, Bordeaux, 1841; and a prose one of earlier date (perhaps the remote original of the French romance printed in 1516) has beeu published by Hucher, 12mo, Le Mans, 1874. The Early English Text Society has printed (Svo, 1871) a 14th-century poem, Joseph of Arimathea, derived fron the earlier French. The English verse Seynt Graal, by Henry Lonelich, pub- lished by the Roxburghe Club, 4to, 1863-64, must be considered as derived from the Lancelot rather than from the Histoire du S. Graal. ;

Ysaie le Triste, fol., Paris, 1522. For Italian and Spanish translations see Tristan, above. ;

Meliadus de Leonnoys, fol., Paris, 1528. Of this there exists an Italian trans- lation, Egregi Fatti del gran Re Meliadus, 2 vols, 8vo, Venice (Aldo), 1559-50.

Perceforest, 6 vols. fol., Paris, 1528.

(b) Charlemagne and his Twelve Peers.

The cycle of Franco-Teutonic or French romance of which the mythical history of Charles the Great forms the central design is, so far as its original literary elements are concerned, more ancient than the Franco-British cycle of Arthur and his knights. The reduction into prose of the old chansons de geste and of the poémes cycliques which followed them was, however, of much later date than the similar conversions of Round Table poems; and the 15th- century prose romances are so mangled and altered from the character of the earlier stories in verse that without a short notice of the latter it would be impossible to get a

true notion of the richness and copiousness of Frankish romance.

We know from Eginhard that the Frankish heroic ballads were reduced to writing by Charlemagne's order, and thus the first step was taken which led to the creation of similar ballads about himself and his principal warriors. His own large and catholic spirit seems to have embraced all the people within his dominions, and thus indirectly brought about the official employment of the French lan- guage in the famous compact between his grandsons in 841. He was then only twenty-eight years dead, yet his influence was still so mighty that even the Gauls and Aquitanians are declared ina 9th-century chronicle to have gloried in bearing the name of Franks. This both implies an amal- gamation of the two races more complete than is usually believed, and accounts for the creation of French as well as of Frankish ballads on the life and exploits of Charle- magne in the second half of the 9th century. The number of persons who could speak only Theotisc (Teutonic lan- guage) and of those who could speak the two languages was of. course constantly diminishing, and the chanson de geste soon displaced the Heldengedicht within the limits of modern France. Of all the French ballads current in the 9th and 10th centuries some have perished utterly, others survive only in later refusions; the most ancient now extant is the Chanson de Roland, in the modified form which was given to it soon after 1066 by a Norman called Turold. This poem contains so many references to others on Charlemagne and his dowze pairs or paladins as to make it certain that such a ballad-literature existed in the 9th and 10th centuries. None of the existing chansons de geste represents those older forms; all are rifaci- menti of the 12th and 13th centuries, and bear evidence of additions, interpolations, and arbitrary changes. In the 13th century we find the older episodical ballads re- arranged in the form of "cyclic poems," and falling into three groups, which take each its name from the central personage or subject. One is the Geste of the king (Charlemagne, his

father, and grandfather) ; the next is the Geste of Provence or of Garin de Montglane; and the third, the most heterogeneous, is the Geste of Doon of Mayence. Each of these is composed of many separate parts, but the first may be generally described as the entire mythical history of Charles the Great, his family, and his faithful peers; the second a separate and independent set of narratives concerning his conquest of Narbonne ; the third a history of his wars with rebellious vassals and with traitors, including Ganelon, through whom the peers were defeated and slain at Roncesvalles. The number and names of the peers are variously given in nearly all the poems, but Roland and Oliver are included in all the lists, united as in a proverbial English phrase. Roland is the daring warrior, Oliver the wise one; the one is the Achilles, the other the Ulysses of the Carolingian epopee. Many of the early chansons give the name of Turpin, arch- bishop of Rheims (an actual historical contemporary of Charlemagne), as one of the patr's,—warrior and priest com- bined; and there is a chronicle bearing his name which has furnished the later romancers with a goodly propor- tion of their matter. This Pseudo-Chronicle of Turpin was written in Latin, by various hands and in various places between 1000 and 1150, being apparently constructed from the chansons for the purpose of forging history to sult monastic ends. It took its final and existing form between 1160 and 1180, when edited by Géoffroy de Brueil, and was for many centuries regarded as actual his- tory. 'This work was not the first so-called history which embodied monastic fiction in the narrative of Charlemagne's career. A monk of St Gall wrote about 890 a chronicle De Gestis Karoli Magni, based partly upon oral tradition,

ROMANCE

in which certain fabulous incidents appeared for the first time, such as Pippin's fight with the lion, and the conversa- tion about the Iron Emperor between Ottokar the Frank (better known as Ogier the Dane) and the Lombard king Desiderius, on the walls of Pavia, when Charlemagne was advancing to besiege it. Another fabulous incident of great moment in the romances is Charlemagne's sup- posititious journey to the Holy Land, which was related for the first time by Benedict, monk

of St André, about 968, in his Descriptio qualiter Carolus M. Clavum et Coronam Donuni a Constantinopli Aquisgrani attulerit.

A great deal of historical truth underlies the absurdities of the Turpin Chronicle and the rhapsodies of the chansons de geste. Compare Rotanp, Lecenp or. In fact all the older poetic literature of this cycle is based upon purely historical events and real personages ; it is only at a later date that the events are multiplied or variously misapplied, and that the personages also are arbitrarily distorted and augmented, according to the fancy and local sentiments of the various writers. As for the language in which the older poems were written, the idea that they were chiefly the work of troubadours in the langue d'oc is now aban- doned. Gaston Paris holds the curious theory that the French language (langue d'otl) was popularly current over the north of Italy, instancing the works of Rusticien of Pisa as an illustration, besides certain works in Italianized French which belong to this class. Such a notion cannot be accepted readily, as we know that the langue d'oc was the general language of southern France, western Spain, and north-west Italy. But it is possible that the French language (langue d'oil) may have been used as a general literary vehicle for the Charlemagne cycle of poetical fiction, and that Rusticien or Rustighello may have com- piled an abridgment of the Frankish stories. Such a work, if it ever existed, has perished; and it is in the Italian language of Tuscany that we find the first prose compila- tion of Carolingian romance. The Reali di Francia (Princes of France), if it had been completed, would have occupied a corresponding position to the Morte Arthur of the British cycle ; for, while no such popular compilation appears to have ever been made in France itself and in the French tongue (unless the late 15th-century Mera- bras may be considered to take that rank), the Reali in verse and in prose was current in Italy early in the 14th century. From some peculiarities in the language it is conjectured that the author, although writing in Tuscan, was a Venetian. In France at the same period we find only the separate fictions, mostly in verse, but a few in prose. The first French prose compilation of the whole cycle was made by David Aubert in 1458 for Philip of Bur- gundy ; but it was dead-born and has never been printed. The second, in three books, was made a few years later by Jean Bagnyon, for Henri Bolomier, canon of Lausanne ; it was first printed in 1478, and is entitled in some editions La Conqueste

que fist Charlemagne es Espaignes, and in others Merabras ; both titles are insufficient, having appa- rently been merely created to supply the lack of a general heading. 'The first section is a summary chronicle of the history of the Franks from Clovis to Charlemagne, the second an abridgment of the old poem of Merabras, and the third an account of the Spanish expedition, taken from the Pseudo-Turpin. This work became very popular in and out of France, and most readers during the 16th and 17th centuries derived their entire knowledge of the Charlemagne romance from it. Although the French prose works of the cycle were for the most part very late in their construction, there were three French prose transla- tions or adaptations of the Turpin Chronicle executed soon after 1200.

The names as well as the offices of the douze pairs varied

Charle- considerably in the earlier chansons. The final conception which Doon of Mayence was the head) distinguish themselves ; Een S appears to be that which is contained in the Fierabra s; | Algoland is beaten and killed. Charlemagne next attacks Navarre, Pae™® but the substitution of new personages for the old ones oe be oan te oe me the ean aed . "ps . : : oland, and is overcome e i 80 great that 1t 1s not possible to regard the douze latter by means of a stratagem. Cordova is next Gritoeel Get purrs as a definite set of dramatis persone on the stage. | taken possession of, and Charlemagne retraces his steps, but re- Nor mdeed do any of the heroes of the printed prose | members that he has left two other Saracen kings unsubdued— romances belong to that society, however frequently its oe ee ae Saragossa, He sends Ganelon to claim ee einer mr thetmstoninn, "Onigmelipritnnmuld seit'! Hy omens deehlo, ani Iecsanw tic De that some fortuitous coincidence between the number of | leads the monarch to forget military precautions by dividing his the apostles and the number of the captains who headed pk into two portions. He himself with the advanced half passes Charlemagne's evangelizing expedition into Spain had been | the Pyrenees in safety, but Roland, Oliver, and the rear-guard are utilized by some of the monkish lopendunies,,.andlWilitte ie suddenly attacked in the pass of Roncesvalles. All perish in the : Be fight except Roland, who, mortally wounded, dies alone in the wild early chansons became affected with a mystic respect for | mountain gorge,

*after having flung his famous sword away, and the douze pairs. But each writer allowed himself the | blown such a blast upon his horn that it bursts and the sound licence of excluding and including any warrior he chose in fail a at as a a The emperor returus to Ronces- that number. The Pseudo-Turpin makes no reference to | *,° 5 4Y8 the Saracen host, recovers the body of Roland and a he me gets it embalmed, and causes Ganelon to be torn to pieces by wild such a society, although it gives the names of the niore horses, After a time his health suffers and his death apigtlios celebrated knights. The full story of Roland has no prose | Turpin becomes aware of a multitude of demons who are preparing romance to itself (see Rotanp, Lecenp or). The story | mc geese oy On, ips ie a a bone! Sh : ce ee , however, by enis, who, in return for Charlemagne's bene- of Oliver 1s in similar case, unless the prose romance of | yalenee towards the church, rescues his soul and bears it to heaven. Galien, Oliver's son, may be held to embody it. Regnault Ficrabras. —The basis of this romance was the lost poem upon Fiera- de Montauban (the chief of the four sons of Aymon), Huon | the amir Balan, a Saracen leader conquered by Charlemagne in bras. of Bordeaux, Amys and Milles, Jourdain, Galien, Maugis, Italy ; the a ia es was put ck from Turpin a Saimy Mabrian, and many other heroes of the printed romances | *°'7CeS 89,28 to form the one general prose romance of Charle- i A ' magne, 'The scen h d fi Italy t in i P are unknown to the earliest ballad-histories of Charlemagne aa Wesiveas the ant, inten of Baloo ena ee a and his barons. Ogier the Dane seems to have grown out joes Rome, is met by the Frankish host ; Oliver encounters and of two historical personages, a real Othger or Ottokar. a | defeats him ~~n single combat ; the giant is converted and baptized Frankish a diana icieaata a real Olgar by tn Mail, of Florent, bat eoeives sae his father's kingdom 5 4 ' > when his father is conquered and slain. F oripas, sister of Fierabras, or Hulger, a Danish or Norse warrior who plundered Aix~~ marries Gui de Bourgogne, who takes the other half. The Spanish la-Chapelle some seventy odd years after the Frankish mee Historia del Emperador Carlo Magno, printed in 1528, is a Othger had accompanied Roland into Spain. Othger | translation ; there is also a German version. fought with the Lombards against Charlema gne in 773: Guerin de Montglave (or properly Garin de Montglanc).—This Garin de : o° : : ; mance of the 15tl t 3 bas – Mont- and Amys and Milles, in the battle in which they won a Coin de Vaehin*

and pe on tanec ih aoe See Pe the crown of martyrdom, are said to have fallen by his | It is a spirited and entertaining fiction relating the adventures of hand. Beaten by the emperor, he became his vassal and ee. four pe of urn che . the heroes of ek elder Provencal five years later commanded the advanced guard of the cycle, and 1s misnamed, in so far as it contains only the story of his ; family, not of himself. The four sons are sent forth to seek ad- army whose rear-guard was destroyed at Roncesvalles. M. | yenttres. Arnaud, the eldest, asserts his right to the dukedom of Gaston Paris has admirably discussed the historical bear- Aquitaine against a usurper who has succeeded on his uncle's ings and the various phases of the original chansons de geste | death. He is treacherously persuaded to seck the hand of the imshis, Bustovre Poétique de Charlemagne, but has dismissed :| Princess Fregonde, daughter of the Saracen sultan of Lombardy. é : : His traitorous kinsman, Hernault, contrives to set Arnaud and the with a brief r eference all the printed prose romances we | sultan at enmity, and Arnaud is flung into a dungeon, where the _ are now about to consider. daughter, ready to accept Christianity for love of him, secretly Reali di The Reali di Francia exists both in metrical and in prose form, | visits him. Hernault apostatizes and goes back with a promise of Francia. and it is difficult to decide which is the earlier; the metrical | the sultan's help to conquer Aquitaine for himself, but turns aside version was certainly current in the 18th century, and there seems | from some qualm of conscience to confess his sins toa giant hermit, little reason to doubt that the prose story was in existence before | who happens to have been an old comrade of Garin. Thus learning 1300. The latter was first printed at Modena in 1491. It is a | the peril of Arnaud, the giant hermit Ribastre slays Hernault, and, general work on the subject of Frankish romantic history, and is | seeking ine on a old comrade, a converted magician divided into six books, of which the subjects are as follows:—(1) | named Perdigon, sallies forth to the aid of the imprisoned hero. Clovis and Rizier ; (2) Fioravante and Rizier; (3) Ottaviano de | In disguise he obtains admittance to the captive and the princess, Leone (the emperor Octavian and his sons Florent and Lion); (4) | baptizes the latter, kills the jailer, and sends Armaud forth free Buovo d'Antonna (Bevis of Hampton); (5) Buovo avenged by | to reconquer Aquitaine and to bring aid, while he and the lady his sons Guido and Sinibaldo and King William of England ; hold the dungeon

~~*tower, which is at once besieged by the sultan. (6) birth of Charlemagne, death of Pippin and his natural sons. = ae fights, in which Perdigon's magic is the chief actor, Thus we may conclude that it was, so far as printed under the | Ribastre and the princess get away without having received help name feali, the first part of a compilation of all the Charlemagne | from Aquitaine, and on reaching that land find Arnaud a prisoner cyclical stories. The first book of the continuation Aspramonte, a in the power of Hernault's uncle. Ribastre kills the latter ; Arnaud translation from the French poem of Aspremont, or rather a prose | is restored to his duchy and marries Fregonde ; the sultan turns composition from an Italian version of that poem, exists in MS. | Christian; and all ends well. But the romance does not close here; The Reali di Francia has been drawn upon by many later writers. | it proceeds to narrate the honours which fall to the other sons, Pseudo*~~ *Chronicle' of the Pseudo-Turpin.—The early part of this work | Milon de Pouille, Regnier de Génes, and Girard de Vienne, or de Turpin. was evidently forged by some monk interested in exalting the glory | Toulouse, through the favour of Charlemagne, who feels himself*

of St James's shrine at Padron in Galicia (Spain), before it was transferred to Compostella. He represents St James as appearing in successive visions to Charlemagne, urging him to conquer Spain, the land in which the saint's bones are laid and of which the Saracens are masters. Charlemagne advances with a Frankish army and besieges Pamplona, which is invincible to his arms, but falls a prey to his prayers. After further exploits and the founda- tion of many churches, he returns home, but is brought out again very speedily by news that the Saracen king, Aigoland, has once more seized the country. This king is borrowed from the older chansons relating to the war against the Lombards; but for the 12th century all Charlemagne's foes were Saracens. The topo- graphical difficulty is made light of, and Aspremont is placed in Spain. Roland, Oliver, and Ganelon (afterwards infamous for his treachery, the hereditary result of his kinship to the family of

bound to Garin's family in consequence of the obligation attached toa rash game of chess formerly lost by him to that hero. However, when Arnaud's son has grown up, an accidental affront put upon the empress by him changes Charlemagne's friendly feeling to hate. He makes a long war upon Girard in Vienne, who is aided by his brother, and it is agreed at last to settle the affair by a duel between Roland, the emperor's nephew, and Oliver, the son of Regnier de Génes. The two had previously become fast friends, and Roland loves Aude, Oliver's sister ; consequently, although they fight with great vigour and equality of strength, they throw aside their swords in the middle of the combat and embrace one another as worthy brothers-in-arms. A fitting compromise is found between the wairing parties in an agreement that they shall all unite and attack the Saracen conquerors of Spain. Then begins the famous expedition which ended at Roncesvalles.

Galien.

Milles et Amys.

652

Galien le Rhetoré.—This romance was first printed in 1500. It is partly of late composition, although sufficiently ancient to have rendered the word "rhetoré" (¢.c., rhetorized, or narrated in elegant prose) incomprehensible at the time of its impression. The word was supposed to mean "restored," and to indicate the restoration of chivalry by Galien. The chief substance of the story was the ancient tale of Charlemagne's journey to the East and the Turpin Chronicle. Hugues, emperor of Constantinople, at first receives the Frankish emperor and his peers courteously, but is informed by a spy of certain vaunting expressions to which, as is the Frankish nianner, they have given utterance amongst themselves after supper. These "gabes," as they are called, are merely froliesome braggadocio, spoken in lightheartedness, and not intended to convcy any serious intention. The spy and the Greek emperor, however, take them as the threats of dangerous magicians; the Franks are seized and menaced with death if they fail to fulfil their words. Oliver is first put to the test; his speech had had reference to the Greek princess Jacqueline, and might better have befitted the lips of a Parisian gamin of to-day than

of a young paladin. He, however, awakens a tender interest in the lady's heart, and she indulgently informs her father the next morning that the knight's boast has been fulfilled. Hugues requires that the others shall also exhibit their power, which they do to his satisfaction, partly by celestial succour and partly by the use of mother-wit. He finally dismisses them with presents. After Oliver has gone, Jacqueline becomes the mother of Galien, who grows up in time to hear of the ex- pedition to Spain and to arrive just too late for the battle in the pass of Roncesvalles. His dying father there acknowledges him, and Galien signalizes himself in the renewed fighting in which Charlemagne takes reprisals for the loss of his peers and the treachery of Ganelon. After various deeds of valour in the West, Galien returns to the East, saves his mother from a shameful death, and resumes the imperial crown. '

Milles et Amys.—The prose romance in its existing form was written in the 15th century, and first printed by Vérard about 1503. The martyrdom of the two friends is supposed to have taken place in 774 in Charlemagne's war against the Lombards, and their story was popularly current in the 12th century. Milles was the son of Anceaume, count of Clermont, and Amis the son of the count's seneschal. Milles's parents celebrate his birth by making a pilgrimage to Jerusalem. During their adventures and captivity in the East Milles is robbed of his inheritance at home and Amys is brought up under a feigned name. They enter into the elosest friendship and set out for Constantinople, where Milles diseovers his captive mother acting as nurse to the Greek princess Sidoine, whom by her assistanee he weds, after having taken a chief part in forcing the sultan of Acre to raise the siege of Con- stantinople. He beeomes emperor of Byzantium, but after a while returns to France with Amys, regains possession of his estates, and makes Amys a duke. Hearing that the Saracens have again attacked Constantinople and that his Greek wife has perished in the flames, he allows himself to be seduced by Bellisant, the daughter of Charlemagne, who, however, makes an honest man of him by marriage and behaves honourably ever after. Amys also gets married. Then the two friends also go ona pilgrimage to

. Jerusalem, from which Amys returns stricken with leprosy. His

wife refuses to receive him, but he is carefully tended by Milles in his own eastle ; and now the most striking episode in the story takes place. Amys learns in a dream that he can only be healed by bathing in the blood of his friend's offspring and tells Milles of it. The latter is painfully affected, but does not hesitate to strike off the heads of his two children. Amys is cured and the devotion of Milles repaid by a miracle from heaven: the children's heads are replaced upon their shoulders. Afterwards Milles and Amys set out on another pilgrimage to Santiago de Compostella. Ogier the Dane, then at war with Charlemagne, meets and treacherously slays them on their way homeward. A continuation follows, nar- rating the adventures of the infant children of Milles. The widow of Amys plots for their destruction, but they are zealously tended by a wise ape, which shares their fortunes until separated from them by malice and mishap. Florisset becomes a Saracen leader in Venice and Aneeaume a brave warrior in the army of Charle- magne. The two brothers have a desperate eneounter in the war whieh takes place, but are reeognized by the ape (which has already brought about the punishment of the wicked widow of Amys, in a similar fashion to that of the celebrated dog of Mout- argis). A restoration takes place: the two young men are acknow- ledged the emperor's grandsons, and the ape dies.of joy.

Jourdain de Blaves (or de Blaye).—The prose romance, first printed in 1520, is altered from a 15th-century poem. It is affili- ated to Milles et Amys, the hero being the grandson of Amys. He undergoes the most varied fortunes: he throws his wife with his yet unborn child into the sea, enclosed in a box, when the vessel bear- ing himself and his warriors is in peril of shipwreck ; he searches for her some years later, and finds her ina refuge, to whieh she has fled from the love of the man who fished her out of the sea, and who exposed her baby-girl at the birth ; and next, when hunt-

ing in a forest, he finds his daughter rnnning wild in company with a biteh and her young. This is a reflexion of the story of Apollonius of Tyre, and is rather a dull work.

Doon of Mayenee.—Doon or Doolin of Mayence is the hero of a Doon of 14th-century poem, adapted as a prose romance in the 15th cen- Mayence,

tury, first printed by Vérard in 1501. He is represented as defying and almost defeating his lord the emperor, whom he treats at first with disrespect. In his earlier history he appears as a son of Gui of Mayence, who, as penance for an unintentional crime, retires to a hermitage. On his disappearanee his wife is aceused of murder, eondemned to death, and her children banished. Doon meets his father and returns to fight as his mother's champion, conquers his enemies, and assumes his rightful possessions. He falls in love with a Saracen princess and wins her by force, with the help of Charlemagne, after the episode of his quarrel with the emperor. The lady's father has been aided by the king of Denmark ; Doon, after his victory, seizes the Danish crown, which he transmits through his son Geoffrey to his grandson Ogier.

Ogier le Danois.—There are twelve chansons upon the story of Ogier the this hero, dating from the 12th and 13th centuries, and based Dane.

upon still older poems now lost. The trouvéres Raimbert and Adenez le Roi were among the authors. The story was recomposed in prose, from the poem of the latter writer, probably in the second half of the 14th century. The fairies who preside at Ogier's birth and endow him with many gifts are a later addition to the story ; one of them is Morgan la Fay, King Arthur's sister, who foretells that at the end of his career he shall go to live with her in im- mortal youth at Avalon. While yet a little boy he is sent asa hostage to Charlemagne and is brought up at the imperial court. When fourteen years of age he is banished to the castle of St Omer, whiere he falls in love with the young chatelaine, but is soon afterwards ordered out of his prison to accompany Charle- magne on an expedition to Italy against the invading Saracens. Here, for the first time, he is subjected to the hatred and envy of young Charlot, the emperor's son; but on the triumph of the Frankish arms he aceompanies the monarch in his return to Paris and learns that his father is dead and that the chatelaine has borne him ason. He departs to assume the crown of Denmark, but lays it down after a few years and returns to Charlemagne.

His son has grown up and is one day engaged in a game of chess with Charlot, who, having lost it, becomes irritated, and kills him with the chess-board (an ineident frequently met with in old fietion), Ogier, in his fury for revenge, uses such language that he is com- pelled_to fly, and betakes himself to the court of the Lombard king Desiderius, then at war with the emperor. It is on this occasion that the famous dialogue takes place on the walls of Pavia. Desiderius or Didier wonders, as he and Ogier look forth together, at the great number of the Frankish warriors advaneing over the plain, and, as each successive body of troops, ever inereasing in strength and grandeur, makes its appearance, he says, "Is this the emperor?" Ogier to each question answers, '" Not yet," till at last he cries, "When thou shalt see the fields bristling with an iron harvest, and the Po and the Ticino, swollen with sea-floods, inun- dating the walls of the city with iron billows, then perhaps shall Karl be nigh at hand." Soon after the Iron Emperor with his mightiest host darkens the horizon, and Didier falls sinitten with terror. The Lombard king is beaten; Ogier is made prisoner while sleeping, and brought to the emperor. He still refuses to be re- conciled until the monareh yields Charlot to hisrevenge. Charle-magne at last gives way ; Ogier, when just on the point of striking off the prinee's head, abstains, and foregoes his vengeance. Then, returning to his old station as one of the emperor's chief paladins, he fights an invading army and slays their giant leader. He next saves the king of England's daughter Clarice from captivity, marries her, and is recognized as king of that country; but he abandons for a second time the kingly dignity and sets out for the conquest of the Holy Land. Whilst returning to France, he is shipwrecked, comes upon a diamond castle, invisible by day, and finds himself in Avalon in the company of Morgan la Fay. She puts the ring of perpetual youth on his finger, the crown of forgetfulness on his head, and he lives a life of joy for two cen- turies. Then the crown is taken off; he remembers his old life, and betakes himself to the new and degenerate Freneh kingdom which has sueceeded to the empire of Charlemagne. After restor- ing the spirit of the older knighthood, vanquishing the Norse invaders, and passing through some curious adventures in con- nexion with his ring, he is carried away by Morgan la Fay and disappears for ever.

Meurvin.—This was a romance of late origin, first printed at Meurvin.

Paris in 1531. Meurvin was the son of Ogier by Morgan la Fay, and is a personage of little interest, except for his connexion with . the romanee of the Knight of the Swan, whose ancestor he is repre- sented to be through his son Oriant.

The Four Sons of Aymon; or Regnault de Montauban and his Four Three Brothers.—This, one of the most popular and delightful of sons of the romances of this cyele, was printed many times in the 15th Aymon.

and 16th centuries, and in later abridgments as a chap-book.

Maugis d'Aigre- mont.

Gerard d'Eu- phrate.

Huon of

Bor- deaux.

ROMANCE

Adapted from a 18th-century poem, it has been considered as the work of Huon de Villeneuve based upon earlier chansons. Aymon de Dordogne, brother of Beuves d'Aigremont and of Girard de Rous- sillon, brings his four sons to the court of Charlemagne. They are knighted by the emperor, who makes a present of the marvel- lous steed Bayard to the eldest, Regnault. This is the charger pictorially represented as bearing all the four champions on his back at once. Bertholais, the nephew of Charlemagne, plays one day a game of chess with Regnault, and, losing, petulantly strikes his adversary, who smites him dead with the board. All the four sons of Aymon are compelled to fly and war is immediately declared against them as outlaws, in which their unhappy father, as the feudal vassal of Charlemagne, is obliged to take an active part. Numerous incidents of deadly peril and adventure on both sides are recorded, and Regnault displays so much daring, skill, and magnanimity as to create in the reader's mind a hatred of the ungenerous monarch who relentlessly pursues the brothers. It will be remarked how singularly the character of Charlemagne has deteriorated from the earlier type. The famous Bayard

plays a notable part in the story. On one occasion, by the help of his cousin, the enchanter Maugis (son of Charlemagne's assassinated enemy Beuves), Regnault captures the emperor, Roland, Ogier, Naimes of Bavaria, and Turpin. Although they are in his power, the chivalrous knight and his brothers merely kneel to Charlemagne and beg for peace and pardon. The monarch's hatred is implac- able ; but Regnault nobly sets his captives free, and the war begins again. Regnault, who is lord of Montauban, a castle given him by Yvon, sovereign of Gascony, for having repelled a Saracen invasion, retires from the strife and makcs a pilgrimage to Pales- tine. On his return he goes as a simple mason to aid in the bnild- ing of Cologne cathedral, and is there slain by the treachery of his fellow-workmen.

Maugis d& Aigremont.—The special romance bearing this title (first printed about 1520) is not the only one in which Maugis the enchanter plays a prominent part. He is originally derived from the 13th-century poem on the four sons of Aymon, to whom he furnished material assistance in the struggle against Charlemagne. He also appears as a comrade and helper of Renaud in the Conquest of Trebisond, and again in the romance of Mabrian (1530), in which he is elected pope, and finally perishes in a cave to which Charlemagne sets fire. These are all three of late origin; and the Conqueste de Trebisonde (s.a., about 1520) is not even of French com- position, but is adapted from the 14th-century Italian poem of Trabisonda. The four sons of Aymon, especially Regnault (Tasso's hero Rinaldo), and their kinsman Maugis seem to have been especi- ally dear to the Italian imagination.

Gerard d@ Euphrate.—This, printed in 1549, and professedly trans- lated from a metrical Walloon original, is an absurd tale of magic, containing nothing except names to connect it with the ancient poem on Girard de Fratte, one of the vassals who warred against the emperor. Although split into two personages in course of time, Girard de Fratte (not d'Euphrate) and Girard de Roussillon seem to have been originally identical. Girard was one of the sons of Doon of Mayence, and therefore brother to Aymon. Con- sequently this romance may be placed in connexion with the Four Sons of Aymon, and also serves to link it with Garin de Montglane, as it is

evident that Girard de Vienne in the latter romance is only another form of the older Girard.

Huon of Bordeaux,—This interesting story was compiled in prose in 1454, from a late form of a poem which was current towards the end of the 12th century, and which has often been attributed to the trouvere Huon de Villeneuve, but without reason. Huon, duke of Guienne, one of the paladins of Charlemagne, is on his way to Paris to pay his respects to his liege lord, when he is attaeked by the malicious and envious Charlot, whom he kills in self-defence. The emperor grieves so much for his son's death that he dooms the unlucky Huon to death also, notwithstanding the intercession of all the peers and councillors. At last Huon is pardoned, but only on condition that he shall make a journey to the East and bring back from Baghdad a part of the Saracen amir's beard and four of his back teeth, after having slain one of the Saracen lords and kissed the amir's daughter before his face. These impossible tasks he is enabled to accomplish by the help of the pretty dwarf Oberon, who presents him with a magical cup and horn. A loud blast upon the latter suffices to bring Oberon and 100,000 warriors tohis aid. At the most critical instant his magic powers fail him, simply because he had been guilty of deceit in announcing himself asa Mohammedan in order to gain entrance. The princess Esclar- monde has, however, fallen in love with him and succours him. He is at length brought out to fight the giant Agrapard, who has invaded Baghdad ; he conquers him, and tries to persuade the amir to turn Christian. Again when he is in danger, Oberon saves him ; and the tecth and beard are taken from the dead Saracen. Then begins a series of adventures full of peril and distress. Huon over- comes strong temptations practised on his chastity and the deadly straits in which he is placed by Saracen foes and treacherous kins- men, and at last makes Esclarmonde his lawful wife and justifies

himself before Charlemagne. Oberon always makes his appearance when the needs are sorest, and in fact plays the best part in the

narrative. This romance has no connexion with the actual history of Charlemagne ; but it is an attractive work of imagination.

Valentin et Orson.—This well-known and charming story, first Valen- printed in 1489, relates the lives of two brothers exposed 'in in- tine and After many adventurcs, Orson.

fancy, one of whom is suckled by a bear. they regain their rightful position and each learns his relationship. The events are supposed to take place in France in the time of Pippin. It is a composition of the 15th century.

Octavien, or Florent et Lyon, is a similar story, never printed in Oetavien,

French, although written in that language, probably in the 15th century, from an episode of the Reali di Francia.

Beuve @ Hanstoné, or, as he is called in English, Bevis of Hampton, Bevis of is the subject of an old French story which was embodied in the Hamp- Reali, and is only connected with Charlemagne by the mention of ton.

King Pippin and the hero's kinship with the sons of Aymon. As a French prose romance it was printed by Vérard about 1500. It had been printed separately in Italian at Bologna in 1480. An old English poem on Bevis was in the 15th or 16th century turned into a prose romance, and was printed about 1560.

Morgant le Géant is only a translation of Pulci's poem Morgante Maggiore, and Guérin Mesquin is similarly translated from an Italian prose recomposition of an old Italian poem. Little more. than the names was derived from the old Charlemagne chansons de geste; and the same may be said of the famous poems of Boiardo,

Berni, and Ariosto upon Roland (Orlando).

Bibliography of the first printed Prose Romances, including Texts and Transla- tions. —Reali di Franza, fol., Modena, 1491. Pseudo-Turpini chronica, fol., Frank- fort, 1566 (forming a portion of Schard's Rerum German. IV. vetustiores chrono- grapht); Chronique composée par Turpin, fol., Paris, 1476 (forming part of the Chroniques de 8. Denys;

first independent edition, Paris, 1527). Galien Rethoré, fol., Paris, Vérard, 1500. Fierabras le Géant, fol., Geneva, 1478—printed also under the title of Conqueste du grand roy Charlemagne, fol., Lyons, 1486; in English, Charles the Great, Caxton, 1485; in Spanish, 1528. Guerin de Mon- glave, fol., Paris, 1518. Doolin de Mayence, fol., Paris, Vérard, 1501. Ogier le Danois, fol., Paris, Vérard, c. 1498. Quutre Filz Aymon, fol., Lyons, c. 1480; in English, The Fowre Sonnes of Aymon, fol., Caxton; in Spanish, Reynaldos de Montalvan, fol., Seville, 1525 (translated from an unprinted Italian ver- sion of the Quatre Filz and the Trébisonde united); Conqueste de Trebisonde (Regnault de Montauban), 4to, Paris, c. 1520. Chronique de Mabrian, fol., Paris, 1530. Maugist ad' Aygremont, 4to, Paris, c. 1520. Beuves d'Anthonne et la belie Josienne, fol., Paris, Vérard, c. 1500; in English, Syr Bevis of Hampton, 4to, W. Copland, c. 1560. Roman de Meurvin, fils d'Oger le Danois, 8vo, Paris, 1531. Gérard d' Euphrate, fol., Paris, 1549 ; Gérard de Roussillon, Lyons, ¢. 1530. Milles et Amys, fol., Paris, Vérard, c. 1503; in Italian, Milles e Amvis, 4to, Venice, 1503 ; Jourdain de Blaves, fol., Paris, 1520. Huon de Bordeaula, fol., Paris, 1516; in English, Huon of Bordeux, Copland, c. 1540. Valentin et Orson, fol., Lyons, 1489; in English, Valentine and Orson, 4to, ed. Copland, c. 1560; in Italian, Valentino ed Orsone, 8vo, Venice, 1557. Clamades et Clermonde, fol., Lyons, 1480 ; in Spanish, Clamades y Claramonda, 4to, Burgos, 1521. [Octavien:] Florent et Lyon, 4to, Paris, s.a.; in German, Keyser Octavianus, fol., Strasburg, 1535. Morgant le Géant, fol., Paris, 1519. Guérin Mesquin, 4to, 1530; in Italian, Guerino Meschino, fol., Padua, 1473; in Spanish, Guerino Mesquino, Seville, 1512.

(c) Spanish Cycle: Amadis and Palmerin.

Arthur had become in Britain not only a national hero Amadis of romance but also a leading figure around whom might of Gaul.

be grouped the adventures of subordinate knights. Charle- magne filled a similar place for French writers, but had the advantage of being a more distinct historical character than Arthur. In the Iberian peninsula, where we find the next great cycle of stories, the circumstances which pro- duced the national hero (the Cid) were still progressive, and his history

was too real to melt into such romantic fiction as dealt in France and England with remote and shadowy paladins and the wonders of fairyland. There- fore, while the Cid had an ever-present reality in ballads, the earliest appearance of prose romance in Spain was in an artificial imitation of the Franco-British cycle. As it was a work of great merit, its fictitious hero became, as it were, the central figure in the stories which followed and which bore to one another a strong faimily likeness. Most of the chief heroes are illegitimate, like Amadis; the adven- tures of two brothers are told; and there is much similarity of incident and character. Many of the scenes are laid in Constantinople. Amadis de Gaula is the poetical sire of an extraordinary series of romances, which in the words of Cervantes! form an "inumerable linaje," and is itself the most interesting and remarkable of them. Although its reputation is due to the Spanish redaction of Mont- alvo, there was an earlier Portuguese version by Vasco de Lobeira (d. 1403), a gentleman of the court of Joao L.

1 Under Amapis of Gaul (vol. i. p. 650) may be seen the different references in Don Quixote to the romanee.

Transla- tions of Amadis,

654

At the end of the 16th century a manuscript of this ver- sion was in the possession of the dukes of Aveiro at Lisbon, but since the middle of the 18th century all traces of it have been lost. There is, however, reason to believe that the earliest form of the story was in Castilian (c. 12501), also entirely lost. In a moral poem, £7 Rimado de Palacio, written about 1400, we find Pedro Lopez de Ayala speaking of having wasted his youth with '¢ Libros de desvaneos e mentiras probadas Amadis e Lanzarote,"

which is sufficient to prove that Amadis existed about the period 1350-60. There is also a reference to Galaor, brother of Amadis, in the chronicle of Ramon Muntaner (1325-28), as well as to Tristan, Lancelot, and "other knights of the Round Table." There are several allusions in the Cancionero of Baena (1440-50) to an ancient version, one especially to its being "en tres lybros." The earliest form is likely to have been in verse. The author was well acquainted with the Arthurian legends, and we find

a marked imitation of Zristan and especially Lancelot. Many of the names indicate a Celtic origin: Gaula cer- tainly means Wales and not France, as they who insist upon a French original of the romance would lead us to believe. There still remains much that is entirely novel. In the words of M. Baret, to whom the literary history of this romance owes so much—

*'*Si, par la tradition primitive, l'Amadis de Gaule dérive de la source commune des romans de la Table Ronde, si méme il a existé une version Portugaise, c'est néanmoins & l'Espagne que doit de- meurer l'honneur d'avoir créé, sur un théme ancien, une composi- tion originale, en introduisant dans un cadre emprunté la nuance particuliére de sentiments et l'art nouveau qui donnent & notre roman son importance et sa valeur spéciales" (De l' Amadis, p. 21).*

Of the primitive Amadis, probably in three books, which charmed the youth of Ayala nothing is known. The prose romance we now possess was written about 1465 by Garci-Ordofiez de Montalvo, governor of Medina del Campo, to whom we may assign all traces of a spirit later than the first years of the 14th century, and to whom the whole of the fourth book may be due. This book is more refined and more romantic than the others. One of the chief reasons of the popularity of this version is the happy manner in which the improvement in manners is indicated. For the first time in chivalric romances we find distinct traces of the personality of the writer. The tastes, feelings, and prejudices of Spain towards the end of the 15th century are well expressed, without loss of the high chivalry of an earlier and simple time. It was first printed at Saragossa in 1508.1 Within the next fifty years thirteen or fourteen more editions issued from the press, and Amadis became fully established as the popular hero of Spanish romance. When the Spaniards first saw Mexico in 1519 they were reminded of the enchantments of the story.

Francis I. made acquaintance with the Amadis during his Spanish captivity and directed Nicolas de Herberay, seigneur of Essarts, a gentleman of Picardy, to translate it. The first four books of the original work were first printed in French in 1540. De Her. beray also translated most of the continuations down to the ninth book. He died about 1552, and Boileau, Gohorry, and others con- tinued the work. Estienne

Pasquier, in his Recherches de la France (1611), alludes to the popularity of the French Amadis, 'dans lequel vous pouvez cueillir toutes les belles fleurs de nostre langue Frangoyse. Jaimais livre ne feut embrassé avec tant de faveur que cestuy." De Herberay gives as his reason for the translation, "pour ce quil est tout certain qu'il fust premier mis en nostre langue Frangoyse, estant Amadis Gaulois et non Espagnol. Et qu'ainsi soit, Jen ai trouvé encores quelque reste d'un vieil livre escrit 4 la main en langage Picard." This contention, which cannot seriously

1 Until tecently bibliographers considered an edition printed at Salamanca in 1519 as the editio princeps, although Clemencin and others cited one of 1510, which no one had seen. A most interesting discovery was, however, made at Ferrara in 1872 ofan entirely unheard- of edition produced at Saragossa by G. Coci in 1508,

be held, was insisted upon by M. de Tressan in his abridgment of the Amadis de Gaule (1779), wherein a French origin for the first three books is claimed upon the authority of certain MSS. in that language. Amadis romances was printed at Venice in 1546, and the stories became equally popular in that language. on a mission to Spain about 1535, read the Amadis with delight and afterwards based upon it his poem of Amadigi di Francia

The commencement of an Italian translation of the

Bernardo Tasso, while

(1560). He preferred the Amadis to all the French romances, not even excepting Lancelot. Living at that time, his evidence is ex- tremely valuable. He does not seem to have heard of Lobeira's version nor yet of the French and Portuguese pretensions. In his opinion the story was taken from some ancient British history. The romance was translated into German in 1569 and into Dutch

in 1619. Graesse (Z'résor, vii. p. 80) describes a Hebrew translation

of the first four books by Jacob ben Moses Algabbai, printed at Constantinople by Eliezer ben Gerson Soncini, without date. The

Amadis was first read in English through a version from the French

by Anthony Munday (1592). Robert Southey's Amadis of Gaul (London, 1808, 4 vols. sm. 8vo) is an excellent translation, in which, however, there are constant signs of editorial pruning. W. S. Rose put the romance into verse from De Herberay's French text (London, 1803, sm. 8vo). Besides the Amadigi of Tasso, the romance gave rise to Amadis, a drama by Gil Vicente (1521), the Portuguese Plautus, to an opera by Lulli, represented at the Académie Royale de Musique at Paris (1684), to a poem by Wieland (1771), the forerunner of his Oberon, and to another by Creuzé de Lesser (1813). The translation of De Herberay had an extra- ordinary success, It penetrated even to the convents. The Hugue- not La Noue and the Catholic Possevino protested against it in vain. The allusions to the Amadis and its continuations are end- less ; for instance,—" La gloire de N icquée," used for the bracket seat of a coach; the proverbial saying "envoyer chez Guillot le songeur"; "Dariolette," the name for a confidant ; " Urgande la desconnue," a phrase with Scarron and La Fontaine; and many more. The romance even furnished Christian names to some noble families, as to the lovely Corisande, countess of Guiche. The festal pageantries in vogue at the court of Charles V. were imitated from it. A poetical title of Queen Elizabeth was "the fair Oriana." Burton refers to the reading of the romance in his Anatomy of Melancholy (1621).

The period of Los Quatro Libros del Cavallero Amadis de Sketch Gaula is supposed to be earlier than that of Arthur or of of the Charlemagne. The hero is the illegitimate child of Perion, "Y- king of Gaul, and of Elisena, princess of Brittany, and is set adrift at sea inacradle. He is picked up by a Scottish knight, who takes him to his own country; he calls him the Child of the Sea and educates him at the king's court, Having been knighted, Amadis goes to the assistance of his father Perion (the relationship being then unknown), who in the meantime had married Elisena, by whom he had a lawfully begotten son, Galaor. The second child is stolen by a giant. Amadis becomes revealed to his parents through a ring, and consoles

them in their new loss, He overthrows the king of Ireland, who had invaded Gaul, and returns to England. The adventures of the two brothers Amadis and Galaor in England, France, Germany, and the East occupy the remainder of the work, which is full of combats between them and other knights, magicians, and giants. While a youth at the Scottish court Amadis met Oriana, daughter of Lisuarte, king of England, who had been sent away from home in consequence of political troubles. The vicissitudes of their love form a marked feature of the tale. At one time the hero, disguised and under the name of Beltenebros,? retires to a hermitage upon receiving a cruel letter from Oriana. After defeating a hundred knights by whom Lisuarte had been attacked, and some further exploits, Amadis has to leave Oriana and the English court owing to the jealous suspicions of the king. He returns to rescue the princess from the Romans, and afterwards carries on a long war with Lisuarte, who is also attacked by a second enemy, Aravigo. In this per- plexity Lisuarte is generously assisted by Amadis, who

a ee — ee eee

> From the French translation "Le beau ténébreux" comes the popular application of the phrase to taciturn and melancholy lovers. The episode, parodied by Cervantes, is derived from the romance of Tristan. Amadis was also known by the names of the Knight of the Sword and the Greek Knight,

ROMANCE

slays Aravigo. Lisuarte then consents to the marriage of his daughter with Amadis on the Firm Island, whose wonders are brought to an end by Oriana entering a certain magic chamber,—a feat only to be accomplished by the fairest and most faithful of women.!

The Amadis is one of the best of the romances and contains many passages of much beauty and even tender- ness. The boyish attachment between the Child of the Sea and Oriana is well told. The princess is weak and jealous, and not altogether a pleasing character. Amadis is a fine creation and is well distinguished from his brother Galaor. Both are brave, but the elder is grave and the younger gay. Amadis is the type of a

constant lover ; his brother is more changeful. A modern reader may be wearied by the intolerable length of the Amadis and by the continual recurrence of similar adventures all ending in the same way. But these repetitions seemed no fault to readers whose tastes were easily satisfied and to whom such fictions came as an entirely new source of delight.

655

Lisuarte de Greeia y de la Muerte del Rey Amadis, pretended that his work was taken from the Greek. It also is a continuation of Florisand and was not translated.

We now come to Libro Noveno, que es la Chroniea del Prineipe y Cavallero de la Ardiente Espada, Amadis de Greeia, a continuation of the seventh and not of the eighth book, and more full of marvels" than any of its predecessors. Amadis of Greece, the son of Lisu- arte and Onoloria, is carried off by pirates when an infant and sold to a Moorish king. He derived his name from the figure of a flain- ing sword upon his breast. The exploits commence, like those in the Hsplandian, at the Forbidden Mountain, and the family history concludes, as in the same romance, with the enchantment by Zirfea of all the heroes and princesses in the Tower of the Universe in order to prevent their death ata fated moment. Feliciano de Silva is the reputed author. Stimulated by the success of his two anonymous productions, the same writer continued the series with four more parts, of which the Coroniea de los Valientes Caballeros D. Florisel de Niquea y el Fuerte Anaxartes forms the tenth book and contains the first two parts. Genealogically the romance isa con- tinuation of Lisuarte and Amadis de Greeia. Florisel is the son of the latter person and the princess of Niquea. In these fictions a new character is introduced, Darinel, a kind of comic shepherd, in love with the heroine Sylvia, daughter of Lisuarte and Onoloria, through whom Florisel becomes acquainted with the heroine. All

Con- The continuations are inferior to their prototype and become : eaae

tinua- more full of complicated incidents and strange adventures as they ES see ae by eae tions proceed. The characters alter: for instance, the Urganda of the ie ued Menezon Alastraxerea, whose adlgaatt aneey cattle

a great ofthe first four books is a fairy like Morgan la F ay, but subsequently she portion of the tale, which culminates in the siege of Constantinople story. develops into an enchantress of a more Eastern and malignant : a

nature like her rivals Zirfea and Melia. Besides his redaction of the Amadis, Montalvo composed about 1485 an original work, about one-third as long, giving the history of a son of the hero, called Esplandian. In order that it might share in the popularity of the father's achievements, it came forth as Quinto Libro d@' Amadis de Gaula, o las Sergas del Cavallero Esplandiano. The curate justly decreed that "the merits of the father must not be imputed to the son"? when he cast the volume on the bonfire in Don Quixote's courtyard. Although perhaps the best of the continuations, it is not equal to the original. We read that before marriage Oriana bore a child to Amadis, and in order to hide her shame the boy is sent to a distant country. While those in charge of him are passing through a forest a lioness carries him off, but a hermit meets and rebukes the animal, which subsequently suckles the young Esplandian. When he grows up the lioness continues her care and accompanies him to the chase. King Lisuarte one day witnesses this, which is the cause of Oriana recognizing her son by certain marks on his body. He is brought up at the court of Lisuarte and receives knighthood. He then begins his adventures under the title of the Black Knight (from his armour), and sails for Turkey, where most of his exploits take place. The Christians are assisted by the enchantress Urganda and the infidels by her rival Melia. Amadis, Galaor, Esplandian, and the knights being in great danger of death, Urganda saves them by putting them all to sleep on the Firm Island until Lisuarte, son of Esplandian, could obtain possession of a certain magie sword. The romance was first printed in 1510, and five editions appeared before the end of the century. This was soon followed by other similar romances, each with an illegitimate descendant of Amadis for a hero, with a son who performs exploits still more wonderful than those of his father, —a perpetual succession of heroes. At the end of the Lsplandian Montalvo speaks of writing another book to carry on the history still further. This caused some one, believed to be Paez de Ribera, to bring out HI Sexto Libro, en que. se euentan los Grandes Heehos de Florisando, nephew of Amadis, taken from an Italian source. This was translated into

English and Italian, but not into French. The Septimo Libro, en el qual se trata de los Grandes Heehos en armas de Liswarte de Greeia y Perion de Gaula, deals with the life of the The other character is Perion,

by all the potentates of western Europe in consequence of Florisel having carried off Helena, princess of Apollonia. Among other new characters are the enchantress Armida and the "strong" Anaxartes, who marries young Oriana, sister of Florisel. The amount of bloodshed throughout the work is only equalled by the number of marriages. The third part of Florisel forms the eleventh book of Amadis and is known as Chroniea de Don Florisel de Niquea, en la qual se trata de D. Rogel de Greeia y el Segundo Agesilao. Rogel is the son of Florisel and Helena, and brother of Agesilao the Second, so called to distinguish him from Agesilao of Colchos. A few years later Feliciano de Silva published the fourth part of Don Florisel, in two books, the second of which treats of the loves of Rogel of Greece and Archisidea, and of Agesilao and Diana, daughter of Queen Sidonia. The author in his preface implies that the work was intended as an allegorical celebration of the military and domestic virtues of Charles V.

The hero of La Dozena Parte que traeta de los grandes Heehos en Armas del Cav. Don Silves de la Selva, was the son of Amadis of Greece and Finistea. Born on a desert island, Don Silvio first dis- tinguishes himself at the siege of Constantinople described in the tenth book. The Greek empresses and princesses having been carried off by enchantment, he accompanies the knights who go in seareh of them. The ladies are rescued, but during their absence have become mothers, among others of Spheramond, son of Rogel, and Amadis of Astre, son of Agesilao. Feliciano de Silva some- times passes for the author, who was really Pedro de Lujan. The work is in two parts, which in French make the thirteenth and fourteenth books. Lepolemo 6 el Caballero de la Cruz and Leandro el Bel are considered to make the thirteenth and fourteenth books. From a unique first edition (1521) of Lepolemo discovered a few years since it appears that it professed to be a translation by Alonso de Salazar. The hero was the son of the emperor Maximilian and was carried away in infancy to the Hast. N. Antonio speaks of a certain romatce composed by a Portuguese, entitled Penalva, the last of the line of the

original Amadis. It is supposed to have dealt with the last exploits and death of Lisuarte of Greece, but if it existed at all no printed eopy has ever yet been seen. The other Spanish romances usually appended to the Amadis series are mentioned in the bibliographical list below.

son of Esplandian and Leonorina. son of Amadis and Oriana, and the type of the fickle lover, as opposed to Lisuarte, who is more like Amadis. The book com- mences with the voyage of Perion from England to Ireland, but a lady in a boat with a crew of four monkeys separates him from

In the French series more and more liberties are taken with the The original as the work proceeds. As shown in the table below, the French nunbers of the books do not tally. The fifteenth, entirely due to series of Antoine Tyron, describes the feats of Sferamond (so called from eontinu- a birthmark representing a globe) of Greece and Amadis d'Astre. ations.

his followers. He goes to Trebizond and falls in love with Grieileria, daughter of the emperor. When Lisuarte is a prisoner in charge of the king of the Giants' Isle, Gradaffile, the daughter of the latter, escapes with him to Constantinople, where after many combats he obtains the magic sword and enables Amadis and the knights to escape from the magic sleep in the Firm Island (see Hsplandian above). Lisuarte eventually marries Onoloria, sister of Grieileria. The work continues Florisand and is attributed to Feliciano de Silva. Juan Diaz, the author of El Octavo Libro, que trata de

1 This kind of ineident, which is frequently to be found in the subse- quent books as a test of chastity, is connected with the kindred story of the ill-fitting eloak in the Arthurian legend. Spenser uses it in the Laerie Queene (iii. 12) where,

" The maske of Cupid and th' enchant-ed Chamber are displayed."

The sixteenth to the twenty-first books continue the adventures of Sferamond and were translated from the Italian of Mambrino Roseo by Gabriel Chappuys. Duplicate versions from the Italian were made by Nicolas de Montreux of the sixteenth, by Jacques Charlot of the

nineteenth, and by Jean Bovion of the twentieth books. The twenty-second to the twenty-fourth books, devoted to Fulgoran, Safiraman, and Hercules d' Astre, continue and form a new conclusion of the French Amadis. Only one edition appeared (Paris, 1615, 3 vols. 8yo), now extremely rare. The naive and pure style of the earlicst of the series degenerates into an uninteresting suecession of coarse and obscene ineidents. In the twenty-third book we are taken for the first time to America. lores de Greece (1552) is con- sidered to form the twenty-fifth book. Genealogically it would be the sixth, as the hero is the second son of Esplandian. In the 16th century the French Amadis library extended to 30 vols. of various

Although the Palmerins have not enjoyed the celebrity Palmerin of the line of Amadis, they were nevertheless closely allied "¢ Oliva.

sizes. In the 17th century appeared a new work forming, as it were, the preliminary, being the history of the Chevalier du Soledl

and his Brother Rosiclair, sons of the emperor Trebatius (Paris, 1620-25, 8 vols.), not identical with the Spanish Febo. Belianis de Gréce (1625) forms one vol., and the Roman des Romans (1626-29) —containing the end of the career of the Knight of the Sun, all the Amadises, Flores, and Belianis—forms 8 vols., and finishes this long series of about 50 vols. The Thresor de tous les Livres dW Amadis (1559-60, frequently reprinted) is a selection of the speeches, letters, cartels, complaints, &c.; it was translated into English as The Treasury of Amadis of France (H. Bynnenian, n.d.; about 1575). The Italian translation, which is extremely difficult to obtain complete, conforms more closcly to the Spanish. The Sferamundi romances were first composed in that language by Mambrino Roseo. A perfect set of the German version is also very rare. Some of these volumes were translated by a Protestant, who made changes to suit his religious views, such as altering "mass" to " sermon."

Pedigree of the Amadis Heroes.

Perion, king of Gaul, m. Elisena.

| ier

Melicia, Florestan, Amadis of Gaul, Galaor, m. Bruneo m. Sardamira. m, Oriana. m. Briolania. de Bonamar. Florisand. | i a a Lo Flores of Brisena, Esplandian, Perion Perion. Talan- Gar- Greece or 'm. emp. m, Leon- of Gaul, que. inter. Florisand. of Rome. orina. m, Gricileria. : | Lisuarte of Greece, Flores of Greece II., m. Onoloria. Knight of the Swan. | Sylvia, Amadis of Greece,

m, Anaxartes. m. princess of Niquea. : . . Silvio de la Selva,

son of Amadis and Finistca,

Anaxartes, Florisel de Niquea,

4 Alastraxerea, m,. Oriana. m. Helena.

| Agesilao the Second, m. Diana.

| Felix Marte

Rogel of Greece, of Greece.

m. Archisidea.

| Amadis of Astre. Spheramond.

Lisuarte, m, Brisena.

| | Oriana, Leonora.

m. Amadis. Bibliographical List of first Editions of Amadis Romanees. Bk. Spanish.

1-4,| Amadis (Montalvo, 1508) ..

| Norandel, m. Menoressa.

French. Italian. English.

(Herberay, 1540) (1546) ....)(A. Munday,

1592

5, | Asplandian (Montalvo, 1510)| (Do., 1541).....

(Mambrino | (J. Johnson,

'Roseo,1550); 1664)

Not translated. .) (1550) ....|(F. Kirkman,

1652

(Herberay, 1546)|(Do.)..... (1693)

6, | Florisando (Paez de Ribera,

1510)

7, | Lisuarte de Grecia y Perion de Gaula (Feliciano de Silva, 1514)

8. | Liswarte de Grecia y Muerte de Amadis (Juan Diaz,

1526)

9, | Amadis de Grecia (Feliciano

Not translated ..| Not trans.

Herberay, 1546- 5 de Silva, 1535) a 'i — 10. | Florisel de Niquea, pts. 1-2 | (G. Boileau, 1552; (1551) (Fel. de Silva, 1532) J. Gohorry, 1555) ll. | Rogel de Grecia, pt. 3 of| (J.Gohorry,1554; (1551) Florisel (1536) G. Aubert, 1556) 12. | Silvio de la Selva (1546) ....|(Do., 1571; A, (1561) , Tyron, 1576) 13, | Lepolemo o el Caballero de la | Méliadus, ditle..| Cav.

della Cruz (1521) Chev. de la Croix| Croce (P. (1534) Loro,1580) 14. | Leandro el Bel (1563) ..... Not translated..} Not trans. Esferamundi de Grecia ….| Sferamondi et | Sferamundi Amadis d'Astre| pts. 1-6 pt. 1 (A. Tyron, | (1558)

1577)

Sferamondi, pts. – . Chap- ' puys, 1578-82) Febo y Rosicler, 4 pts. (Or-| Chev. du Soleil (1557) ....1(1585) tufiez de Calahorra and (1620) others, 1562-89) Belianis de Grecia (J. Fer- | (1625) ..... (1586) ....1(1598)

nandez, 1547) See Fulgoran (1615) Flores de Gréce (Herberay, 1552) Roman des Ro- mans (1626-29)

Penalva. serene ' ee ee

in dignity and importance, and their histories are written in evident imitation of their distinguished original. At the head of this second great family of Spanish romances stands El libro del Cauallero Palmerin de Oliva. From some Latin verses at the end it appears to have been written by a woman, said to have been a carpenter's daughter of Burgos, or a lady of Puente del Arzobispo (Augustobriga), at the beginning of the 16th century. Only one copy is known of the editzo princeps of Salamanca (1511). The love-scenes are described with more volup- tuous detail than is usually to be expected in a female author. But this warmth of colouring may have been one of the causes of the success of the romance. There are many Spanish and Portuguese editions, and it was first translated into French by Jean de Voyer, vicomte de Paulmy, in 1546, into Italian by Mambrino Roseo in 1544, into English by Anthony Munday in 1588, and into Flemish in 1602.

Like most of his compeers, Palmerin was not born in wedlock. He was the son of Griana, daughter of Reymicio, emperor of Byzantium, and of Florendos of Macedon. The infant was exposed on a hill covered with palm trees and olives (whence the name) and was discovered by a peasant, who reared him as hisown son. Palmerin's earliest exploit is to save a travelling merchant from a lioness. The grate- ful traveller furnishes him with arms and a horse, and Palmerin sets forth in quest of adventures, the

first of which is to kill a serpent that guards a fountain whose waters are necessary to Primaleon, king of Macedon. He then succours the emperor of Germany, with whose daughter, Polinarda, he falls in love. Like the lady in Arthus de Bretaigne, she had previously appeared to him in a dream. Norway, England, and Greece are success- ively the scene of his daring. He delivers from the power of the Grand Turk the princess Agriola, who ulti- mately marries Trineus, the companion of Palmerin. After many combats, enchantments, and love escapades, the hero at length marries Polinarda and becomes emperor of By- zantium upon the death of Reymicio.

The same fair unknown also produced Libro Segundo que trata Continu- de los Heehos en Armas de Primaleon y Polendos, both of them ations.

sons of Palincrin by different mothers, the first by Polinarda and the second by the qucen of Tharsus. While with his mother Polendos one day ill treats an old woman, who mutters that it was not thus that his father treated the helpless. This sets him to look for his sire. He meets with Primaleon and goes to the court of Duardos (Edward) of England. The beautiful Gridonia, daughter of Duke Hormedes, bears two sons to Primaleon, the second of whoin is made the hero of the next romance, or third book, Historia del Cav. Don Polindo (Polendo is the fourth part of the Italian series). The fourth book is La Croniea del Cav. Platir, the son of Primaleon and Gridonia, and very properly condemned by the barber. The fifth book consists of Historia del Cavallier Flortir, which is only to be found in Italian.

The sixth book, Libro del Cav. Palmerin de Inglaterra, was the most serious rival to the popularity of Amadis. Formerly this work was considered to have been first written in Portuguese and was attributed to Francisco Moraes, from the first edition then known in that language, printed at Evora in 1567. The state- ment of Moraes, now proved to be true, that it was translated from the French (1552), was looked upon merely as a literary device. Ou the discovery of the original cdition in Spanish (Toledo, 1547- 48) it was seen that the real author was Luis Hurtado, a Toledo poet. It was translated into French by Jacques Vincent in 1552, and into Italian by Mambrino Rosco in 1554-55. The first Portu-

guese version was republished at Lisbon in 1786 (8 vols. 4to) under the name of Moraes, and from this Southey edited his revision of Munday's translation (London, 1807, 4 vols. sm. 8vo). Palmerin and Florian are the twin children of Flerida (daughter of Palmerin de Oliva) and Duardos, king of England. The mother gives birth to them in a forest and they are taken away by a savage as food for his two lions. Duardos is in the power of an amiable giant, Dramuziando, and Primaleon with a company of knights starts from Constantinople to England in order to relieve him. In the meantime the children are being tended by the wife of the savage and reared with her son Selvian. Florian falls into the hands of

Sir Pridos, son of the duke of Wales, who educates him under the name of the Child of the Desert. Palmerin, his twin brother, meets with Poleudos, who takes him and Selvian to Constantinople. Palmerin's first love-affair is with Polinarda, who repulses his affec- tion, and he travels to England under the title of the Knight of Fortune. In the middle of a battle with Florian the brothers are separated by Flerida and the secret of their birth divulged by Daliarte, 2 magician. Their subsequent adventures are beyond enumeration, those of the Perilous Isle being the most interesting, A part of the story relates to the castle of Almourol, where resides the proud Miraguarda, whose peerless beauty is championed by enamoured knights. The giant Dramuziando becomes one of her admirers. In this romance the marriages take place in the middle, giving ample opportunity for many more combats, abductions, ravishments, murders, and other deeds of violence or valour. This is evidently so close an imitation of the Amadis, while only second to it in popularity and intrinsic merit, that a comparison between the two naturally arises. As in its prototype, there are two heroes. We have Palmerin, the faithful lover, and Florian, the fickle one, as well as Daliarte, the magician, and the Perilous Isle. The characters are well discriminated : Palmerin is generous, brave, and chivalrous; Florian, witty and courageous. The giant Dramuziando actually excites our sympathy and interest, and the emperor Primaleon is a fine and courtly old gentleman. Much feeling for the beauties of nature is shown; the dialogue is good. On the other hand, the story is not so

simple and natural as the original Amadis. There are too many knights and battles, and the romance is distinctly inferior as a work of art.

The seventh book consists of Yereeira [e Quarta] Parte de Pal- meirim de Inglaterra onde se econtam os Feitos do Don Duardos Segundo seu Filho, which continues the Portuguese version of Moraes, to which the two parts are the third and fourth books. It was composed by Diogo Fernandez de Lisboa. The eighth and last book of the Palmerin series are the fifth and sixth parts of the sanie work, being Chronica do Famoso Prineepe Don Clarisol de Bretanha, by Balth. Gongalvez Lobato. Like the preceding, it was written in Portuguese and not translated.

Pedigree of the Palmerin Heroes.

Primaleon. | Florendos, Arismena, m. Griana. mm. king of Sparta. | Armida, Palmerin de Oliva, Francelina, m. Frisol, king m. Polinard m. Polendos, king of Hungary. of Thessaly. "a [I Vasilla, Flerida. Primaleon, Polendos, king of Thessaly m. Gridonia. (son of Palinerin and the queen ° Tharsus). – | [if Florendos. Platir, Polinarda. Franciano. Clarisea. m. Sidela. Polendos. | > | | Frederic, king of Primaleon. Gridonia. Palmerin Flortir. England,

of Lacedemonia. m. daughter of Meliadus.

|

Don Duardos (Edward), m. Flerida. ll ee, c Palmerinof Florian. England,

m. Polinarda.

t Don Duardos II.

i Don Clarisol.

Bibliographical List of first Editions of Palmerin Romanees.

Bk, _ Spanish. French. Italian. English. 1. | Palmerin de Oliva (1511) ..| (1546) .....06. (Mambrino | (A. Munday, | Roseo,1544) 1588 2, fe roapal oaven Us) aaaeaeono|| (015/50) ian apennoc (1548) ....|(Do., 1595) BMV

Rolenao(1526)) cc. c- er cee Not in French. .| Platir(1548) aes 4, | Platir (1533) .....-0+08. Geers anette as. 6 ore Polendo

(1566)

5. | Flortir (no Spanish edition)! Do. .....++ Palmerino says dInghil- (P.of England. terra (1554-| A. Munday,

55) 1602)

6. Palmerin de Inglaterra | (1552) .....++. Flortir oved (1547; in Portuguese, (1554)

1567)

7. Don Duardos II.de Bretanha | Not translated..| Not trans. | Not trans. (Portug. by Diogo Fer- nandez de Lisboa, 1587) 8. Don Clarisol de Bretanha (B.| Do. Do. ....-+ Do. Goncalvez Lobato, 1602)

657

(d) Teutonic, Anglo-Danish, &c.

Outside the four great cycles of medieval romance there le some minor cycles, as well as various isolated fictions, to which we must now make reference.

The origins of the Teutonic cycle belong to epic or Teutonic.

ballad literature, as we find them in the Wilkinasaga, in the Nibelungenlied, and the Leldenbuch. As those works have already been treated separately or in connexion with the national literature to which they belong, we need only make brief allusion to the fact that the Germanic legend of Siegfried (Sigurd, Siegmund, Sigenot) is very ancient, and that the Norse or Icelandic sagas embody its oldest existing form. The High German WVibelungenlied, Hilde- brandslied, Hadubrand, Dietrichssaga (or Heldenbuch), Konig Rother, &c., are probably specifically older than the Norse books, but they contain the legend in a later shape,— the fTeldenbuch especially deviating from the

first two by the introduction of a number of names and incidents arbitrarily adapted from the history of the Gothic, Lom- bard, Burgundian, and Hunnic wars during the 5th and 6th centuries. There are no prose romances on these themes, but the mythical hero Siegfried, called Horn-Siegfried or Hérnen-Siegfried, gave his name to the French and English stories of Lorn and Rimenhild (Rimenhild being derived from Chrimhild, the wife of Siegfried). Before these last came into existence there had arisen in England a set of legends of which Anlaf Sitricson, the Danish king of Dublin (converted to Christianity 943, deceased on a pilgrimage in 981), was the hero. They were combined in a French poem called Havelok, by Geoffrey Gaimar (12th century), the name Havelok being a corruption of Anlaf or Olaf, and reappearing still later in the form of Hamlet. Various trouvéres composed ballads of greater length on the same theme, with many additions, and finally others appeared in English. In all of them we find mixed elements, includ- ing incidents which connect this Dano-Saxon romance with Guy of Warwick and the French King Horn.

The fact last mentioned tends to justify the assumption Anglo- of an Anglo-Danish cycle, which may be said to begin with Danish.

the poem of Beowulf. Between the mythical Siegfried and Beowulf of the early centuries and the fictitious Horn and Guy of the 18th the Anglo-Danish Havelok of the 12th intervened, and furnished material to the trouvéres who composed the last two works. In Lorn and Rimen- hild there is little more than the names to connect the story with the old Siegfried poem, but much that brings it into contact with Anlaf and Danish or Norse history. Its reappearance in prose as Pontus et Sidoine belongs to the second half of the 15th century. Guy of Warwick, from whatever actual personage its hero may have been derived, is a purely English story of the 13th century, connected with HHavelok by its evident relation to legends of Danish wars in England, and with King Jorn by its embodiment of the most striking incidents of that story,— namely, the return of Guy as a disguised palmer to his own castle, and the use of a ring by which he discloses himself to his wife.

Havelok the Dane appeared first in a French poem by Geoffrey Havelok Gaimar (12th century), and was inserted by him between his Brut the Dane.

or translation of Geoflrey of Monmouth (now lost) and his Hstorie des Engles. The story runs that Adelbrict, a Dane, is king of Norfolk, while Edelsi is king in Lindsey. The former marries a sister of the latter, and both die ; a girl, Argentille, remains, whio is given by her uncle, out of spite, in marriage to a scullion-jongleur, Cuheran. She dreams that her new husband is of superior origin ; he confesses that he comes from Grimsby. They both start for this place and discover that Cuheran's putative father, Grim, is dead. It turns out that Cuheran is the son of Gunter, an exiled king of Denmark, aud that his real name is Havelok. He and Argentille set out for Denmark, where Edulf, the brother of the usurper, has become king. Sigar, formerly seneschal to Gunter, is lord of the town where Havelok lands and assists him when Argentille is attacked by iniscreants. Havelok is made known by his power to

Guy of Warwick.

King Horn.

Ponthus et Sidoine.

Outlaw ro- manees.

sound Gunter's horn and is saluted as king. He returns to England, fights with Edelsi, and gains the day through Argentille's device of setting up the dead warriors on stakes. When Edelsi dies Have- lok and Argentille reign in Lindsey as well as in Norfolk. The tale may have filtered through Welsh channels, as it seems to have gathered British elements before it was taken up by the Anglo- Danes. Argentille (or Argantel) appears to be formed from a Welsh name, which the early English writers converted to Goldborough. The Freneh ehanson belongs to the early part of the 12th

century. It has no direct prose representative. Gaimar's text was first edited by Madden iat ea Club, 1828), in the Monumenta Hist. Brit. (1848), and by T. Wright (Caxton Soc., 1850). A French Jai on the same subject is included in the Roxburghe and in the Caxton volumes; it was issued separately by Francisque Michel in 1838. An English poem is also to be found in the Roxburghe volume, and was likewise edited by W. W. Skeat (Early Eng. Text Soc. 1868), : :

Guy of Warwiek is dealt with in vol. xi. p. 341. Besides the many editions of the prose romance, there is an unpublished Heraud ad' Ardennes, sometimes known under the name of its other hero Rembrun, the son of Guy of Warwick, who is found in English metrical versions. :

King Horn. —The primitive English form of the poem is lost, but is represented in the existing chanson de geste (Horn et Rimenhild, 12th century). An early version supplied some of the incidents for Richard of Ely's Gesta Herewardi Saxonis (first half of 12th century), whieh claims to be partly derived from an old book written by Leofric, Hereward's chaplain at Bourne. English MSS. (in verse) are preserved at the British Museum, Oxford, and Cam- bridge. Allof, king of Sudenne, is killed by Saracen (Danish) pirates, who also drive away his wife Godylt and turn their son Horn adrift at sea, with Athulf, Fykenild, and ten other children. They land at Westness (Cornwall) and the children are reared by King Aylmer. Horn is banished for a love passage with the king's daughter, Rymenild, and sails for Ireland under the name of God- mod, He returns with Irish warriors and by himself joins a feast held to celebrate the espousals of Rymenild with a King Mody. Horn, disguised as a pilgrim, drops a ring into Rymenild's cup with the words "' Drink to Horn of horn." He defeats Mody and rein- states his mother in Sudenne. Rymenild is carried off by Fykenild, who is ultimately killed by the hero, by whom the lady is rescued. The only copy known of the knightly romance of Horn Childe and Maiden Rimnild is the Auchinleck MS. The story was very popular in Scotland. Horn and Horn Childe have both been printed by Ritson (Aneient Eng. Metr. Rom., 1802, ii., iii.) Francisque Michel has edited Horn et Rimenhild, including the English and Scottish poems (Bannatyne Club, 1845). The Cambridge MS. was edited by J. R. Lumby for the Early Eng. Text Soc. (1866) and by KE.

Matzner in Altenglische Sprachproben (1867), and the Oxford text by C. Horstmann in Herrig's Achiv (1872).

Ponthus et la Belle Sidoine.—In this prose romance the soldan of Babylon sends his three sons to seek their fortune at sea. One of them, Broadas, occupies Galicia and kills King Thibor, whose young son Pontus with the other children is sent off in a boat to France. They are wrecked off the coast of Brittany, and the story proeeeds very much asin the poem of Horn. Nearly all the names are ehanged, however, and there are additional knightly episodes. The romance was first printed at Lyons about 1480, "A German translation appeared at Augsburg in 1483, and an English version was printed by Wynkyn de Worde in 1511.

The Anglo-Danish cycle of romance, by reason of its origin and type of adventures, may be fitly supplemented by the stories, eminently English in character, although furnished with an Anglo-Norman setting, which have been called " outlaw romances."

Tales of outlaws form a considerable portion of English fiction, and, as elsewhere, the same incidents occur over and over again, being always attributed to the favourite hero of the day. The oldest was that of Hereward the Saxon, whose exploits against William were renowned in prose and verse soon after his own time. Most of the outlaw Stories remain in ballad form; a prose example is the French uk Fitewarin (about 1320), descriptive of outlaw life in the Welsh marches and other parts of England, Spain, &c.,—an embellished record of actual events from 1201 to 1203. We learn that Payn Peverel, having over- come a devil that tenanted the body of a Cornish giant, Geomagog, who haunts a ruined British village in Shrop- shure, builds a castle near the place with the assistance of his kinsfolk. A certain Melette Peverel marries Warin de Meez, and their son Fulk Fitzwarin js himself the father

ROMANCHE

of five sons, who go through scenes many of which are obviously suggested by the Charlemagne chansons, such as the fatal chess-board quarrel, the taunting of Ogier by Roland, &c. The five brothers are outlawed and seek adventures. One of their followers, John de Rampayne,

resembles Friar Tuck in his skill in playing, singing, and the use of the quarterstaff. The story ends with the sub- mission and pardon of Fulk, the eldest of the brothers, the death of his wife Mahaud, his marriage with Clarice de Auberville, and his subsequent blindness,—all real his- torical events. It was the first wife of Fulk who became a personage as Maid Marian in the Robin Hood stories and in the plays of Munday and Chettle. The romance was first published by Francisque Michel in 1840, by T. Wright in 1855 (Warton Club), and at the end of Ralph de Coggeshall (Rolls Series, 1875).

The exploits of the earlier outlaws, Hereward and Fulk Robin Fitzwarin, reappear under the name of Rosin Hoop (q.v.), Hood.

The extensive ballad literature relating to the last and his companions Maid Marian, Friar Tuck, Little John, &c., needs only a passing reference. The Life of Robin Hood, a prose rendering of the Geste of Robyn Hode (Wynkyn de Worde, c. 1495), is reproduced by W. J. Thoms in his Early Eng. Prose Romances, 1858.

One of the most popular stories connected with the Robin Hood cycle is Gamelyn (e. 1840), sometimes inserted among Chaucer's Canterbury Tales. Here three sons are left equal shares in their father's property, — Gamelyn, the youngest, being under the charge of the cldest, John, who neglects him. At the age of sixteen he gains a ram at a wrestling match and invites the spectators home. After the guests retire John and Gamelyn quarrel. The latter is aeyiticeattl but released by Adam the Spencer, an old servant, and the two escape together. Gamelyn is made king of the outlaws and John becomes sheriff. Gamelyn is captured, but is bailed out by his other brother, Ote. Finally, John is hanged by Gamelyn. The tale was used by T. Lodge for Rosalynde (1590) and dramatized by Shakespeare in ds You Like It (ed. W. W. Skeat, 1884).

(e) Unaffiliated Romances.

*The works of this class are of less importance than those Unafiili- which belong to the great cycles ; for, indeed, there are few ated 10- which have not been drawn somehow into one or other of ™2°**

these last. Amongst the most striking we have Pierre de Provence et la Belle Maguelonne, a story of love, adventure, and magic, which existed in Provencal verse at the end of the 12th century, but was first compiled in French prose in 1457 (the text being printed at Lyons about 1478). it was very popular in Spain, and a Spanish translation appeared as a quarto volume at Toledo in 1526.—A similar romance is Paris et Vienne, belonging apparently to the first half of the 15th century ; the first edition was printed at Antwerp, by Gerard Leeuw, in 1487, five years after the appearance of an Italian translation (Treviso, 1482), and two years after Caxton had issued an English version (Westminster, 1485).—Another French romance (better corresponding to the modern use of the word) is Jean de Paris (Paris, c. 1535), written by Pierre de la Sippade (1490-1500). It is a pleasant fiction, full of disguises and surprises like the works of G. P. R. James, and may be compared with Le petit Jehan de Saintré (Paris, 1517), written by Antoine de la Sale about 1470, in which we find a true picture of the manners of the French court in the first half of the 15th century.—The 7rods Filz de ftoys is a heavy and dull romance written in Flanders late in the 15th century.—A work of far superior order is Tivant lo Blanch, written in the Valencian language in the 15th century by Joannot Martorell. This was printed, with the fourth book added after the author's death, at Valencia in 1490, and has the honour of being the first romance which came from the Spanish press. The author professes to derive his stories from English sources, but he seems to be indebted only to Guy of Warwick for some

of his situations and the names of the English localities in which his scenes are laid. Three other Spanish ro- mances may be mentioned here. Though the earliest printed edition of Oliveros y Artus is in French, the work (printed in Spanish at Burgos in 1499) is undoubtedly of Spanish origin. It has been popular in all languages. An English version came from the press of Wynkyn de Worde in 1518. Felix Marte de Hyrcania (Valladolid, 1556), by Melchor Ortega, is chiefly remarkable as having been read by Dr Samuel Johnson, who is likely to have been the only person since the 16th century capable of such a feat. The Guerras de Granada (1595-1619) of Perez de Hita con- tains some of the finest

ballads in the language, and is an interesting and well-written fiction. The first (and best) part deals with the reign of the last Moorish king of Granada, and the second part relates the final ruin of the Moors in Philip JII.'s reign.—Another favourite fiction in many lands is that in which a chaste wife is wrongfully accused of infidelity and punished. The character even appears among the earliest ballads of the Charlemagne cycle (La reine Sibelle); but here we have to mention three distinct narratives which have attracted generations of readers, and which are widely known from their adop- tion by many writers. These are Patient Grizel (Griseldis), Genevieve of Brabant, and La belle Héléne. The story in each is similar, and the plot or some of the incidents may be traced in the Lai del Fresne of Marie de France (c. 1220), in the Latin legendary history of St Genevieve (written about 1272), in several old monkish lives of St Helena of Constantinople, in the late romances of Valentine and Orson, Florent et Lyon, and other stories,—the heroine being variously described as the Chaste Empress, the Chaste Queen, or the Chaste Duchess. The most celebrated of these stories is that of Griseldis. She is said to have been the wife of Walter, marquis of Saluces or Saluzzo, in the llth century, and her misfortunes were considered to belong to actual history when they were handled by Boc- eaccio and Petrarch, although the probability is that Boc- caccio borrowed his narrative from a Provengal fadliau. He included it in the recitations of the tenth day (Deca- merone), and must have written it about 1350. Petrarch Latinized it in 1378, and his translation formed the basis of much of the later literature. These works, however, really belong to a different class from that treated here, and may be referred to popular tales, like the narratives which have been repeated in many forms and in many lands from the time of Bidpai downwards. The prose French romance, La Patience de Griselidis (Bréhan-Loudéac, 1484), was derived from Petrarch, as also Chaucer's nar- rative in the Canterbury Tales, and the Elizabethan drama in which Dekker was a collaborateur.—The De Duobus Amantibus (or Eurialus and Lucretia) of Aineas Sylvius is usually included amongst romances, but it is rather an historical novel based upon the imperial court gossip of his own day.—The Spanish Carcel de Amor, composed about 1480-90 by Diego de San Pedro, is also a novel ; the famous or infamous Celestina is a drama of surpassing vigour and interest ; and the pastoral romances of Diana, Pastor Fido, and Arcadia belong to a

different class from that of medieval romance.—As much may be said of the English romances produced in the 16th and the earlier part of the 17th century, which are chiefly weak novelistic initations of the later adjuncts to Amadis and Palmerin.— The Seven Champions of Christendom is a popular tale.— The Romance of the Fox (Reynard the Fox) and the Loman de la Rose likewise belong to totally distinct orders of literature, the former to that of tales (Volksbiicher) and the latter to the large class of allegorical poems.—The Norman stories of Robert the Devil and Robert of Srily are also popular tales.

659

III. Moprrn Romance to THE 17TH CENTURY.

The inspiration of medizval romance is gone; but it is necessary briefly to trace its final reflexions to the close of the 17th century, when prose fiction began to assuine more definitely the character of the modern novel.

We have seen how large a place in the history of France.

romances is occupied by France down to the end of the 16th century. We first meet with the so-called " pastoral romance" in French in L'Astrée (1612) of Honoré d'Urfé, an enormous work inspired by Montemayor, which, how- ever, La Rochefoucauld found interesting. It was fre- quently reprinted and had many continuations and imita- tions. Camus de Pontcarré wrote in opposition religious pastorals such as Palombe. To the same class belong Floris et Cléonthe (1613) by Moulinet du Pare, Les Bergeries de Vesper (1618) by G. Coste, Chrysérionte de Gaule (1620) by De Sonan, Le Courtisan Solitaire (1622) by J. Lourdelot, Le Mélante (1624) by L. Videl, L'Endimion (1624) by J. Ogier de Gombauld, Cléomédes et Sophonisbe (1627) by De Gerzan, Le Berger Extravagant (1627) by Ch. Sorel, Anaz- andre et Orazie (1629) by Boisrobert, Ariane (1632) and Roxane (1639) by J. Des Marets. Le Roy de Gomberville led the way to the new school of French romance in Polewandre (1632-39) and La Cythérée (1640-42), which were the models for the still more ponderous productions of La Calprenéde and De Scudéry. La jeune Alcidiane (1651), an unfinished continuation of Polexandre, was com-

pleted by Mademoiselle M. A. Gomez. These form a link between the genuine romance of chivalry and the so-called heroic style. We still meet with giants and extravagant exploits. The adventures with pirates and the sea scenes show the influence of translations of Greek novels. Made- leine de Scudéry produced her romances under the name of her eccentric brother Georges, but the authorship was well known. The first to appear was Jbrahim, ou '[llustre Bassa (1641); then the work for which she is best known, Artaméne, ou le Grand Cyrus (10 vols., 1649-53) ; Clélze, histoire romaine (10 vols., 1650-53), contains the famous "carte du pays de Tendre"; then came Almalhide, ou VEsclave Reyne (1660), Les Femmes Illustres (1665), and La Promenade de Versailles (1669). One of the causes of her great popularity was her representation of living characters under flimsy disguise. Keys to Le Grand Cyrus have been published. Gauthier de Costes, chevalier de la Calprenéde, wrote Cassandre (1642-50); Cléopdtre (12 vols., 1647-58), the best of his works, which contains the character of Juba satirized by Boileau; Maramond (12 vols., 1661-70), continued by Pierre Dortigue de Vau- moriére ; and Les Nouvelles (1661). In spite of their appalling length and their tedious conversations and de- scriptions, La Calprenéde's romances are not without merit. The author has imagination, and his heroes have a share of the noble sentiments of their predecessors. érénice (1648) by J. R. de Segrais, Za Précieuse (1656-58) by Mich. de Pure, Histoire du Temps (1654) and Afarcarise (1664), both by Hédelin, and the mystical romances of the Jesuit Ceriziers, belong to the same school. Nearly all the familiar machinery of the old romances is now absent : we no longer meet with dragons, necromancers, giants, and enchanted castles. Formerly love was secondary to heroic achievement; now it becomes the ruling passion, and knightly deeds are performed only to excite the applaud- ing smile of a mistress and not for the sake of military glory. The jargon of gallantry used.in these fictions exercised an evil influence upon contemporary literature, until it was laughed out of existence by the Précreuses Ridicules of Molitre and the dialogue of Boileau on Les Héros de Roman. Such works as Marie Stuart (1675) by P. Le Pesant de Boisguilbert, Vowvelles d' Elisabeth (1680),

England,

Other Euro- pean coun- tries.

660

and Irédérie de Stcile (1680) are a connecting link be- tween the romance of De Scudéry and the modern his- torical novel.

After the invention of printing England produced féw original contributions to the literature of chivalric romance. There was a large number of translations of the old French works, and, in addition to these, a rich store of romantic ballads, which formed the customary literature of the people. The yeoman and the outlaw had succeeded the steel-clad knight in public favour. Robin Hood and his merry men appealed to a wider range of sympathies than did Arthur and his companions, and such tales as the Hxploits of Robin Hood, Tom a Lincoln, George a Green the Pinder of Wakefield, and Thomas of Reading retained their vogue in abbreviated shape as chapbooks down to the end of the 18th century. The stage monopolized the chief forces of imaginative narration during the Elizabethan and Jacobean periods, and the next specimen of a native romance is to be found in the Huphues (1579-80) of John Lyly, who drew largely from Spanish sources. Euphuism gave rise to the Philo- tumus (1583) of Brian Melbanck, to Lodge's Rosalynde (1590), to Greene's Dorastus and Fawnia (1588), which was the foundation of Shakespeare's Wenter's Tale, and to Philomela (1592) by the same writer. Sir Philip Sidney's The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia, which appeared in 1590, after the author's death, is the most brilliant prose fiction in English of the century, and a genuine pastoral and heroic romance. We should not forget Parismus, Prince of Bohemia (1598), based upon Palmerin de Oliva, and Ornatus and Artesia (1607), both by Emanuel Ford ; Pheander, a Maiden Knight (1595), by Henry Roberts ; and The Miseries of Malvillia (1606), by Breton. Such compilations as Painter's Palace of Pleasure (1566), Whet- stone's Heptameron (1582), Westward for Smelts (1620), and Goulart's Admirable Histories (1607) are composed of translations or imitations of Italian and French tales. Boccaccio, Giraldi Cinthio, Apuleius, Heliodorus, and Montemayor appeared in English in the latter half of the 16th century, and to the laborious Munday we owe ver- sions of Amadis (1592) and Palmerin of England (1602) through the

French. In the 17th century La Calprenéde, Scudéry, Gombauld, and other romancists were translated, and Mrs. Behn, Lee, Lord Orrery, Settle, Banks, and Dryden adapted their works for the stage. Barclay's Argems, a politico-heroic romance with characters repre- sentative of real and historical personages, first came out in Latin in 1622; Bishop Hall's Mundus alter et idem (1607) is an imitation of Rabelais. liana (1661) is a caricature of all the absurdities of the contemporary French school. The last of the English romances is the Parthenissa (1665) of Roger Boyle, earl of Orrery, which, although prolix and incongruous, has literary merit and a certain narrative interest.

The last of the Spanish romances is Policisne de Boccia (1602) by Juan de Silva. They received their death-blow in Spain at the hands of Don Quixote in 1605, and even those of the greatest merit and popularity almost entirely ceased to be reprinted after that date. Although the pastoral romance of Diana (1560) by Monte- mayor does not really belong to the present subject, it should be inentioned as forming a distinct school of fiction with a family of successors scarcely less numerous than the lineage of Amadis. It was continued by Gil Polo, and in it, as in the Galatca (1584) of Cervantes, figure real persons and incidents. The earlicst re- presentative of the picaresque tale is to be found in Lazarillo de Tormes (1554).

The heroic romance never became thoroughly naturalized in Portugal, and the narrative class chiefly found 'its way through Spain. The romancists Rodriguez Lobo, Eloi de Sa Sotomayor, and Pires de Rebello may be mentioned. The Menina e Moga (1554) of Bernardim Ribeiro is the earliest specimen of the pastoral style in the Portuguese language.

Although the Pastoralia of Longus is to be considered as the

ROMANCE

remote prototype of the modern works, Arcadia (1502), the Italian poem of Sannazaro, undoubtedly influenced the Diana of Montce- mayor, and through it inspired the Arcadia of Sir Philip Sidney. A few translations and weak imitations of foreign romances were printed in Italy in the 16th

and 17th centuries, but novelle or short tales formed the staple of the national prose fiction during that period.

French romance—translations of Amadis in the 16th and the writings of Mademoiselle de Scudéry and her compeers in the 17th century — exercised a supreme influence in Germany, where the pastoral romance was represented by innumerable "Schifereien." Herkules und Valisca (1659) of A. H. Bucholz is a specimen of the voluminous and tiresome heroic romance of the period. Simplicis- simus (1669) by Hans Jakob von Grimmelshausen, in which the hero traverses the scenes of the Thirty Years' War, is less a romance than the first national novel. C. W. Hagdorn's Acquan, oder der grosse Mogul (1670) is an adaptation of La Calprenéde's Cassandre, and KE. W. Happel's Der insulanische Mandorell (1682) is a kind of foreshadowing of Robinson Crusoe. Two of the most admired fic- tions of the time were the Asiatische Banise (1688) of H. Anselm von Ziegler und Klipphausen and the Arminius und Thusnelda (1689) of D. K. von Lohenstein. Historical tales and love stories were the chief favourites at the end of the 17th and ' Robin- sonaden" or imitations of Defoe in the second quarter of the 18th century.

In Holland the French heroic school was mirrored in the works of Johan van Heemskerk, Hendrik Zoeteboom, and Lambertus Bos, published in the middle of the 17th century.

GENERAL LITERATURE OF MEDLEVAL RoMANCE.—Modern critical editions of the chansons and romances invariably contain literary introductions. Most of these have been already referred to. For the general history of the subject, see [Bp. R. Hurd] Leiiers on Chivalry and Romance, 1762; Clara Reeve, The Progress of Romance,Colchester,1785, 2 vols.; J. Moore, "View of the Commence- ment and Progress of Romance" (preface to Works of T, Smollett, 1797, 8 vols.) ; J. Ritson, " Diss. on Romances and Minstrelsy" (vol. i. of Ancient Metr. Rom., 1802, 3 vols.); W. J. Thoms, Coll. of Early English Prose Romances, London, 1828, 3 vols., new ed. 1858; T. Warton, 'Origin of Romantic Fiction in Europe" (Hisiory of Eng. Poetry, London, 1840, 3 vols.) ; G. Ellis, Specimens of Early Eng. Meir. Romances, new ed. by Halliwell, 1848, 8vo; J. Dunlop, History of Fiction, 1816, 8 vols., and London, 1845, roy.

8vo, still the best general history of the subject, and not very uch improved in the German translation by F. Liebrecht, Berlin, 1851, roy. 8vo; J. Nigroni, Diss. de lectione libb. amatoriorum, Louvain, 1624; Langlois (Fancan), Le iombeau des romans, 1626; P. D. Huet, De Vorigine des romans, 1711; Histoire littéraire de la France, 1733-1881, 28 vols. 4to; {N. Lenglet Dufresnoy], De l'usage des romans, avec wne bibl. des romans, Amstcr- dam, 1734, 2 vols. 12mo, and L'histoire justijiée contre les romans, Amsterdam, 1735 ; [Jacquin], Entretiens sur les romans, 1755; [Boucher de la Richarderie}, Lettre swr les romans, 1762 ; Lacurne de Ste Palaye, "Mém. concernant la lectme des anciens romans" (Hist. et Mém. del' Acad. des Inscr., vol. xvii.) ; J. Chapelain, De la lecture des vieux romans, ed. Feillet, 1870; Bibliotheque universelle des romans, 1775-89, 112 vols. 12mo, containing analyses of most of the romances, over 40 vols. being edited by De Paulmy, the remainder by Le Grand d'Aussy, Tressan, &c.,—the new edition by Bastide (Paris, 1782, 4to) stopped in the middle of the third volume ; Nouvelle Bibliotheque, 1798-1805, 56 vols. 12mo ; De Paulmy and Contant d'Orville, Mélanges tirés d'une grande bibliotheque, 1779-88, 69 vols. 8vo,—Le Grand d' Aussy helped in this work, which contains many analyses and a bibliography; Tressan, Corps d'extraits de romans de chevaleric, 1782, 4 vols. 12mo; C. de Caylus, "Sur J'origine de lancienne chevalerie et des anciens romans " (Hist. et Mém. del' Acad. des Inser., vol. xxiii.) ; L. Dutens, Tables gencalogiques des héros de romans, 1796, 4to; J. Michelet, "Sur les épopées du Moyen Age" (in Rev. des D. M., July 1831); A. P. Paris, Réponse & M. Michelet, 1831; J. J. Ampere, Histoire litiéraire de la France, 1839-40, 8 vols.; A. Ch. Gidel, Hiude sur la litiérature grecque moderne et nos romans de chevalerie, 1846; A. P. Paris, "Romans" (Lacroix, Le Moyen Age et la Re- naissance, vol. ti., 1849); E. du Méril, Poésies populaires latines aniériewres au Alle siecle, 1843; L. Gautier, Hist. des proses jusgu'd la fin du XI le siecle, 1858 + A. Maury, Croyances et légendes de I' antiquité, 1868 ; L. Moland, Origines littéraires de la France, 1863; A. Delvau, Coll. de romans de chevalerie, 1869, 4 vols. (abridg- ments); Fr. H. von der Hagen, Heldenbilder aus d. Sagenkreisen, Breslau, 1823, 3 vols. ; J. G. T. Graesse, Die grossen Sagenkreise des Mittelaliers, Dresden, 1842, bibliographical and literary, but showing extraordinary industry and grasp of the materials; F. Diez, Aliromanische Sprachdenkmdler, Bonn, 1846; O. L. B. Wolff, Allg.

Geschichte des Romans, Jena, 1850; F. W. Val. Schmidt, Les romans en prose des cycles de la Table Ronde et de Charlemagne, trans. by F. de Roisin, St Omer, 1845; K. Goedeke, Deutsche Dichtung im Mittelalier, Dresden, 1871 ; F. Henrion, [storia de' Romanzi di Cavalleria, Florence, 1794; G. Ferrario, Storia ed Analisi degli Anticht Romanzi d'Italia, Milan, 1828-29, 4 vols. 8vo; A. de Gubernatis, Storia della Letieratura (ix.-x., Romanzo), 2 vols. sm. 8vo, 1883 ; see also numerous articles in Jahrbiicher fiir romanische u. engl. Litteraiwr, Anglia, Revue Celiique, Romania, Revue des langues romanes, &c.

ARTHURIAN CvcLE.—Lady Ch. Guest, The Mabinogion, 1838-50, 3 vols. ; Th. Hersart de la Villemarqué, Conies pop. de la Bretagne (1846, 2 vols.), Les Bardes Breions (1860), Les Romans de la Table Ronde (1861), and Myrdhinn, ou 'En- chanteur Merlin (1862); San Marte [A. Schulz], Die Sagen von Merlin (Hane, 1853), and Parceval-Studien (Berlin, 1861-62, 3 pts.); {F. Zambrini], Del? Il- lustre Historia di Lancillotto del Lago, Bologna, 1862; '"'La Tavola Ritonda, o V Historia di Tristano" (Acad. Bologna, R. Com., 1863); E, F. Leith, Zhe Legend of Trisian, 1868; A. P. Paris, Les romans de la Table Ronde, 1868-77, 5 vols. ; Skene, Four Anc. Books of Wales, 1868, 2 vols.; J. 8. Stuart-Glennie, Arthurian Localities, 1869; F. G. Bergmann, The San Greal, 1870; 'G. E.R., The Story of Merlin and Vivien, [1879]; E. F. F. Hucher, Sur les représeniations de Tristan et d'Yseult dans les monuments, 1871, and Le Saint Gral, Le Meus, 1874-77, 3 vols.; W. B. Odgers, King Arihur and the Arihurian Romances, [1872]; A. Birch-Hirschfeld, Die Sage vom Graal, Leipsic, 1877; C. Domanig, Parcival- Studien, 1878; L. Kraussold, Die Sage vom Heil. Gral, 1878; E. Martin, Zur Gralsage, 1880.

CHARLEMAGNE CycLE.—J. ©. v. Aretin, Aelteste Sage iiber die Geburt… Karls d. Gr., Munich, 1803; L. Uhland, " Ueber das altfranzésische Epos" (in Fouqné's Musen, 1812, pt. 3); F. W. Val. Schmidt, Ueber die ttalienischen Heldengedichie aus d. Sagenkreis Karls des Gr., Berlin, 1820; E. Aignan, Ro. mances tirées des anciennes hist. des 12 Pairs (vol. iii. of Bibliotheque Kirangerc, Paris, 1823); Romans des douze pairs de France, Paris, 1882-42, 9 vols.; A. P, Paris, "Sur les romans des douze pairs" (pref. to Berte aux grans piés, 1832),

and “ Examen du systéme de M. Fauriel” (prefixed to Roman de Garin le Loherain, Paris, 1833, 2 vols. 12mo); Fauriel, “ De l’origine de l’épopée cheval. du moyen Age” (Rev. des Deux Mondes, 1832, vols. vii. and viii.); F. Wolf, Ueber d. alifranz, Heldengedichte, Vienna, 1833 ; Baehr, Gesch. d. rom. Lit. im karoling. Zettalter, Karlsruhe, 1840; W. Wattenbach, Der Monch von Sanct Gallen tiber die Thaten Karls des Grossen, Berlin, 1850; Merzdorf, Karolellus, Oldenburg, 1855, 8vo ; C. d’Héricault, Sur lV’origine de V’épopée francaise, 1860; F. Guessard, Tes anciens poéttes de la France, 1859 sqg.; Charlemagne roinances (prose and verse), pub. by Early Eng. Text Soc., pts. 1-10, 1879-84; K. Bartsch, Ueber Karl Meinet, Nuremberg, 1861; G. Paris, De pseudo-Turpino, Paris, 1865, and Histoire poétique de Charlemagne, Paris, 1865 ; L. Gautier, Les épopées francutses, 2d ed., 1878 sq., 4 vols.

SpanisH Cycie.—For the literary history, see E. Baret, De? Amadis de Gaule et de son influence, 2d ed. 1873; L. Braunfels, Krit. Versuch tiber den Roman Amadis von Gallien, 1876; A. Pages, La bibliothéque de Don Quichotie: A. de Gaule, 1868; P. de Gayangos, Libros de Caballerias [Amadis y Esplandian}, con un discurso preliminar y un catalogo razonado, Madrid, 1857, an able and useful work; F. A. de Varnhagen, Da Litteratura dos Livros de Cavallarias, Vienna, 1872; Sir W. Scott, “ Amadis of Gaul” (Edinb. Rev., October 1803); prefaces to Southey’s trans. of Amadis of Gaul, 1803, 4 vols., and of Palmerin of England, 1807, 4 vols. For the bibliography, see Barbosa Machado, Bibliotheca Lusitana, Lisbon, 1741-59, 4 vols. folio; N. Antonio, Bibliotheca Hispana, Madrid, 1783-88, 4 vols. folio; article by Salva in the Repertorio Americano, August 1827, pp. 29-39; articles in the Wiener Jahrbticher, xxvi., xxix., xxxi., xxxiii., lix.; G. Brunet, ‘ Etude sur les romans de chevalerie espagnols” (Bull. du Bibliophile, April, May, June, 1861); P. Salva y Mallen, Cat. de la Biblioteca de Salva, Valencia, 1862, 2 vols.; B. J. Gallardo, Ensayo de wna Biblioteca Espafola, Madrid, 1862-66, 2 vols.; D. Hidalgo, Diccionario General, Madrid, 1862-79, 6 vols. In the first volume of A. J. Duffield’s trans. of Don Quixote, 1881, may be seen a long list of the Spanish romances. See also J..Ormsby, “The Spanish Romances of Chivalry” (trans. of Don Quixote, 1885, vol. iv.).

Teutonic, Dano-Enc.isa, &c.—See F. J. Mone, Untersuchungen zur teutschen Heldensage, Quedlinburg, 1836, Svo; F. H. von der Hagen, Minnesinger, Leipsic, 1838, 4 vols. 4to, and Gesammtabenieuer, Stuttgart, 1850, 3 vols. ; H. A. Keller, Romvart, Manoheiin, 1844; G. G. Gervinus, Gesch. der deutschen Dichtung, Leipsic, 1871-74, 5 vols. ; K. Goedeke, Deutsche Dichtung im Mittelalter, Dresden, 1871, 8vo; A. Bossert, La litt. allemande aw Moyen Age et les origines de lV épopéc ger-

| Romances of Chivalry, 1882;

661

manique, Paris, 1871; A. Nusch, Zur Vergleichung des Nibelungenliedes mit der Ilias, Spires, 1863 ; Stolte, Der Nibelungen:- Not verglichen mit der I. lias, Rietberg 1869; M. Turk, Zur Vergleichung, &c., Cronstadt, 1873 ; O. Schade, "Homer u. d. Nibelungen" (Wissenschafil. Monatsbl., iii., 1875); A. G. Richey, 'The Homeric Question and the Teutonic Epics" (Hermathena, 1876); J. Zupitza Zur Literaturgeschichte des Guy v. Warwick, Vienna, 1873; A. Tanner, Die Sage von Guy von Warwick, 1877; T. Wissmann, "King Horn" (Brink u. Scherer's Quellen, No. 16, 1876); R. Brede, " Ueber die Handschriften der Chanson de Horn" (EH. M. Stengel's Ausgaben, 1833, pt. 3); F. Ludorff, Ueber die Sprache des Havelok le Danois, 1874, Svo.

Moprern Romance.—For general works see the separate articles on the great Kuropean literatures. The following are some special treatises :—Biblio- thek der Romane, Riga, 1782, 21 vols.; J. Schmidt, Geschichte der Romantik, Leipsic, 1848, 2 vols.; J. v. Hichendorff, Der deutsche Roman des XVIIIten Jahrh., Leipsic, 1851; Cholevius, Die bedeutendsten deutschen Romane des XV Ilten Jahrh., Leipsic, 1866; F. Bobertag, Geschichte des Romans in Deutschland, Breslau, 1876-79 ; H. Korting, Geschichte des franzdsischen Romans im XVIIten Jahrh., Leipsic, 1885, pt. 1; D. Masson, British Novelists and their Styles, Cambridge, 1859; B. Tuckerman, History of English Prose Fiction, New York,

1882.

BiBLioGRAPHY.—It has been impossible to do more than indicate the dates and places of the first printed editions of the romances. More full information is to be somal for in J. C. Brunet, Manuel du libraire, 1860-65, 6 vols., Supplé- ment by P. Deschamps and G. Brunet, 1878-80, 2 vols. ; J. G. T. Graesse, T'résor de livres rares et précieux, Dresden, 1859-69, 7 vols. 4to; G. Brunet, La France littéraire au XVe siecle, Paris, 1865; A. Firmin-Didot, Essai de classification des romans de chevalerie, 1870, an admirable and careful work; J. Ames and W. Herbert, Typ. Antiquities, London, 1785-90, 3 vols. 4to; W. T. Lowndes, Bibliographer's Manual, ed. H. G. Bohn, London, 1857-64, 6 vols. ; W. Blades, Life of W. Caxton, London, 1861-63, 2 vols. 4to; B. Quaritch, Catalogue of G. Melzi, Bibliograsia dei romanzie poemi cav. itali- ani, extended by P. A. Tosi, Milan, 1865, 12mo, first published as supplement to Ferrario, Storia; P. Paris, Les MSS. francais de la Bibl. du Roi, 1835-48, 7 vols., with many extracts and accounts of romances; H. L. D. Ward, Catalogue of Romances in the Department of MSS. in the British Museum, vol. i., London, 1883, a most valuable and scholarly essay, and the most important work yet published on romance. (H. R. T.—M. K.)

ROMANCE LANGUAGES is the name generally adopted for the modern languages descended from the old Roman or Latin tongue, acted upon by inner decay or growth, by dialectic variety, and by outward influence, more or less marked, of all the foreign nations with which it came into contact. During the Middle Ages the old Roman empire or the Latin-speaking world was called Romania, its inhabitants Romani (adj. Romanicus), and its speech Romancium, Vulgar Romancio, Italian Romanzo, from Komanice logui=to speak Romance; in Old French nominative romanz, objective roman(t), Modern French roman, "a novel," originally a composition in the vulgar tongue. In English some moderns use Romanic (like Ger- manic, Teutonic) instead of Romance ; some say Neo-Latin, which is frequently used by Romance-speaking scholars. By successive changes Latin, a synthetical language, rich in inflexions, was transformed into several cognate analy- tical tongues of few inflexions, most of the old forms being replaced by separate form-words. As the literary language of the ancient Roman civilization died out, seemingly ex- tinguished by the barbarism of the Middle Ages, all the forms of the old classical language being confounded in the most

hopeless chaos, suddenly new, vigorous, and beautiful tongues sprang forth, ruled by the most regular laws, related to, yet different from, Latin. How was this wonderful change brought about? How can chaos produce regularity? The explanation of this mystery has been given by Diez, the great founder of Romance philology. The Romance languages did not spring from literary class- ical Latin, but from popular Latin, which, like every living speech, had its own laws, not subject to the changing literary fashions, but only to the slow process of phonetic change and dialectic variety. It is wonderful how like the very oldest archaic Latin is to the youngest, Modern Romance. A great number of old sounds, forms, and expressions, which were discarded or disused by classical Latin, reappear in late vulgar Latin, and live on in the modern languages. Here especially the words of Horace come true : :

" Multa renascentur, quae jam cecidere, cadentque Quae nunc sunt in honore vocabula, si volet usus, Quem penes arbitrium est et jus et norma loquendi." The present article, embracing all the Romance languages, dwells chiefly on their common origin and formation. Much of their general history has been treated under

LATIN ; only some points, especially phonetic, which need a fuller discussion, are taken up again here.

We will now briefly review the fate of popular Latin through its successive stages, showing everywhere the earliest appearance of the germs of Modern Romance.

I. Furst (Pre-Classical) Period: to c. 80 B.c. (Cicero).

Latin, like all other literary languages, began as a living Latin popular speech. There was during this first period practi- dialects.

cally little difference between the vulgar and the literary language. In the oldest historical time Latin was spoken only in the small territory called Latium. The greater part of Italy proper was occupied by the Umbro-Oscan tribes, whose languages were Italic, related to Latin, yet so different as to be unintelligible to the Romans. The two most distinct types were Umbrian in the north and Oscan in the south. The chief difference

between them is that Umbrian was in a much more advanced state of phonetic decay, and was in many respects a precursor of Italian and Romance, while Oscan was still more antique than Latin. When the territories where these dialects were spoken became subject to the Romans, about the beginning of the 3d century B.c., the language of the conquerors was intro- duced, but of course modified by the speech of the con- quered. Thus two groups of provincial dialects! were formed, (1) The North or Umbrian and Sabellian Latin, with which Etruscan Latin was closely connected, was peculiarly important, since it spread southwards and ex- tended to the neighbourhood of Rome; thus Falerii, Preeneste, and Tusculum spoke it. Later it spread to Northern Italy. Being really a fuller development of the tendencies of the old popular Latin and easier to pro- nounce than literary Latin, at last from the surrounding peasantry it reached the people of Rome and became the source of the modern tongucs. (2) The South or Oscan Latin was Latin with sonie slight phonetic modifications,

1 The Latin dialects have been investigated by K. Sittl, Die lokalen Verschiedenheiten der lateinischen Sprache, Erlangen, 1882. On Latiu sounds generally see Seelmann, Die Aussprache des Latewn, Heilbronn, 1885. Both these books, however, must be used with caution. Sittl has the merit of having traced the relations of North Latin, but has many rash assertions ; see Zettschr. f. rom. Phil., vi. 608 sq. Seel- mann is superior to Corssen as a phonetician, but is often obscure and given to elaborating strange theories. Thus he arrives at the absurd conclusion that the differences of quantity did not exist in the class-

ical age, but that the poets judged of quantity by the close or open sound of the vowel.

Conso- nants.

662

which, in Modern South Italian, have lived through the levelling influence of the north dialect. Between the Umbrians and the Oscans lay the Sabellians, occupying linguistically as geographically a middle position, yet somewhat nearer to the north dialect than to the south. To

the west of Umbria lay the mysterious Etruria, whose language, preserved in numerous inscriptions, has long been an unsolved riddle and is still a matter of dispute, some considering it as utterly unconnected with Italic or even Aryan, some, as Deecke and Sophus Bugge, thinking it Aryan, intermediate between Greek and Italic, but partly decayed. In the last respect it has much in common with Umbrian, but its tendency to a rapid and slovenly utter- ance is still more distinctly traceable than in Umbrian.

Of the other languages spoken in old Italy, such as Messapian, Celtic, Venetian, and Ligurian, too little is known to enable us to form an estimate of their phonetic character ; but in general we see the peculiarities of North Latin penetrating more or less everywhere, in the north of Italy and in Spain (subjected at the end of the 3d century B.c.), as well as in Gaul, of which the southern part, Pro- vincia (later Provence), was subjected first, and the rest, by Cesar, in the lst century B.c. All these countries were rapidly Latinized ; but the provincial dialects did not always follow the phonetic development of the mother speech, just as American does not always follow the changes of English.

Old Popular Latin.

A. Phonetics. 1. Final consonants, especially s,!m, partly ¢, d,7, were feebly pronounced and often dropped in writing : s in nomina-

- tives, as Cornelio (T. Scip.),2—even Ennius wrote certissimu'

nuntiw' mortis ; gen. Seipione filios (T. Scip.); ace. vivo' nostros (Plaut.). In verse s was not counted in the metre till the manhood of Cicero, who, though he had himself followed the earlier use in his youth, calls it "subrusticum," which shows that it continued in the country. This agrees with Umbrian, where s was often aroupee as Ikuvinu® Iguvini (nom. plur.), agre agri (gen.), &c. ; with North Latin, as matrona Pisaurese (nom. plur. ; at Pisaurum); maxomo maximus, zenatuo (gen. at Falerii) = Old Lat. senatuos ; militare (nom. ; at Tusculum) looks quite Italian. Jf was often cuonpeds as in the well-known hone oino duonoro optumo fuise viro (T. Scip.). It was, by the express statement of Quintilian, obscurely pronounced (see LATIN), and must have been very loosely articu- lated, the lips probably only approaching, not closing, much like

Polish Dabrowski (Dombrowski), which gives a sound between a feeble m and a nasal vowel. In Umbrian this dropping of the m is frequent, as poplo for populum, and in Faliscan sacru, datu. T, on the contrary, was generally retained in Old Latin, but frequently dropped in Umbrian, as dede dedit, habe habet, habia habeat ; likewise in North Latin, as dede dedit, dedro and dedrot for dederunt (T. Pis.) ; dede (Tibur) ; ewpa and eupat for cubat (Fal.). Some- times d was used, as feeid (Prenestc), in Osc. fefacid, deded. In the perfects, however, @ is perhaps the older sound. JD is the final consonant that was first dropped, as in in altod marid (Col. Rostr.), a Gnaivod patre, but also longa vita (T. Scip)., later fre- quently. Pate®, soro®, colo®, occur in Plautus with r dropped or slightly pronounced (not counted in the metre); in pate® venit (Terence ; see LATIN); in Fal. wxo, mate; in fEquian wo ; and in Ital. frate, suora, moglie. N was dropped in tame(n) sus- picor (Ter.) ; Umb. nome and numem, pointing perhaps. to a weak nasal vowel ; Ital. nome.

2. D after vowels sometimes became 7, as ar ad, arvorsum adversum, arfuise, arger agger,—rustic ar me advenias (Plaut., True., ii. 2); it was vetained in classical Latin in arbiter, areesso, meridies. In Old Umbrian d constantly changes to a peculiar sound, here transcribed d, in Later Umbrian spelt 7's, as ad, ars ad, petur- pursus quadrupedibus, dupursus bipedibus. This sound appears to be only a less trilled variety of the Roman sound. In some few instances this old r reappears later, as in Medieval Lat. armes- saris (Lex Salica), in Roum. armesariu, Ital. drgine, Ven. drzare, Span. dreen= Lat. arger (agger). In Modern South Italian r for d

is quite common, as Neap. rurece, Sicil. duriei=Ital. dodici, Lat. duodecim.

1 There is nothing to prove that this s was voiced, like Eng. 2; probably it was voiccless and weakly articulated, much the same as in Andalusian loth) bag for Span. los padres, "the parents."

a Abbreviations —T. Scip., Tituli (Elogia) Scipionum ; Col. Rostr., Columna

*ostrata ; Bacch., Epistola Consolum de Bacchanalibus 77. Pts, DituhePisaur- at? sl. Lets, Low or Late Latin ; * before a word means hypothetical.*

Spaced letters signify the inscriptions in the national character, generally

supposed to be older ; itali i ipti i toe yomicee ics mean the inscriptions in Roman letters, supposed

in the ancient augural books, perhaps Etruscan Latin(?).

ROMANCE LANGUAGES

*3. Zfor sis found in some unintelligible fragments of the Carmen Saliare, mentioned by Varro (L.LZ., vii. 26), but in the text he says that the ancients used s for r. Coz(ano), but also Cosano, is found on two old coins from Cosa, though here may be due to Oscan influence. On the other hand, veter, quirquir, were found But the ordinary form of Old Latin was s, as in asa, honos, honosis, flosem, Lases, Fusius, Papisius, Valesius. Not 2, but s or ss was used to render Greek ¢,—Saguntwm, eomissor, massa; in this last word (Fr. masse) the present pronunciation still testifies to the old voiceless sound. Thus the whole theory of the ancient Latin z becomes somewhat doubtful; yet it is probable that it existed in the oldest prehistoric Latin, and that forms like *easwm reswm were pronounced with z, like the Osc. eizazwne egmazum (same meaning). Later on s (z) passed into 7, following in this the Umb. urnasiaru, pracatarum, &c. In most words Latin now got 7, even in some where Umbrian retained s; comp. Lat. ara with Umb. asa, Lat. plenarius, ordinarius with Umb. plenasier, urnasier. In Lat. nasus—nares the relation must be somewhat like that in A.S. eedsan, ceds—euron, gecoren (choose, chose, chosen),*

probably owing to an original difference of accent. In many cases where Latin retained s it was originally double, as in eaussa, cassus (=cad- tus), thus spelt by Cicero and Virgil (Quint., i. 7, 20) ; formonsus and formossus ; this is the reason why Italian has always s hard (voiceless) in cosa (Ven. cossa), doloroso, &c., as Ascoli has shown. Thus, every 2 or voiced s having passed into 7, the sound 2 must have disappeared from the language, and it was only much later that it was reintroduced. The sound of z seems to be especially at home on Celtic ground ; the voiceless sound still exists in the south of Italy (Rome, Naples, Sicily) and of Spain. The English pronunciation of Latin words like morose, jocose, and of Greek words like dosis, erisis, is probably due to ancient tradition.

4, N was often dropped before s, as eosol consol, cesor censor, cosentiont (T. Scip.), mo(n)strare, Mostellaria (Plaut.); even jfes- tram for fenestram (fen'stram; Ennius); Aldiesis dies dicebatur (Fest.) ; meses (inscr. Neap.), &c. ; nearly always formossus, for- méosus for formonsus (see 3). This agrees with Umb. Z£ikvasese and N. Lat. Pisaurese, Pomp. castresis, pesa, and reappears in Ital. Afilanese, Genovese, mese, pesare, Fr. mois, peser. In Latin n generally did not quite disappear, but was feebly pronounced, very like French x in penser, or probably still more like the Polish nasal vowel in meso, "flesh," ge, " goose," half vowel, half consonant. By this partial absorption of 7 the preceding vowel was lengthened, eo"sol. Cicero expressly mentions insanus, Gellius pénsito, the grammarians mdns, méns, géns. The same was the case before jf, as infelix mentioned by Cicero; sometimes dropped before 1, eoventionid (Bacch., 187 3B.c.); comp. Umb. kuveitu convehito, kuvertu convertito, Fr. cowvent, Eng. covent, covenant. WN is rarely dropped before ¢ and d except in N. Lat. dedro(t) (T. Pis.) ; but this does not count, as the ¢ was mute. Cicero testifies to indoetus, which proves the full sound of ». The spellings tamdtae, sentemtiam, damda, tuemdam, &e., of the Lex Julia (45 B.c.) are probably only analogical from ewmdem, eamdem, &c., pronounced 1. AM disappears in Popont, Seproni, but perhaps only apparently, as Priscian tells us that medial m, as in wimbra, had a middling force, not the obscure sound of final 2. In most old spellings, as in the Scandinavian Runes, we frequently find nasals dropped before corresponding "mutes" or stops, where there is no suspicion of an obscured sound, ¢.g., in Run. LAT for land the nasal is simply

understood. Likewise in Umbrian the older ustetu is shown by the Latin spelling to mean ostendu, &c. In Modern Romance only Celtic districts have produced nasal vowels.

5. His sometimes dropped from the 2d century B.c. downwards— "Parcissime ea [H littera] veteres usi etiam in vocalibus, quum oedos [tread aedos] ireosque dicebant" (Quint., i. 5, 20); "in Latio rure edus, in urbe aedus" (Varro), for haedus=Goth. gaits, " goat"; likewise olera, asta (Varro); in Marsian Lat. Jrtius for Hirtius, Ostilius ; comp. Umb. eretu=heritu "velit." HH must have had a rather feeble sound, something like French h aspirée.

6. Zs is found assimilated in russwm (risum), sussuwm (sisunr),

Nasals.

&c., in MSS. of Plautus and Cato, and in some inscriptions, always –

in présa (but prorsus) and eéna, Umb. gersnatur "cenati," dos- suarius (Varro); "sic,et dossum per duos… quidam ut levius enuntiaverunt " (Vel. Long.). Comp. Umb. Zursce, T'useom "Tus- cum"; Ligurian Lat. suso (bronze tablet near Genoa, 117 B.c.). But this assimilation was never carried out consistently ; we have L. Lat. suswm et gusum (sursum et deorsum), Ital. swe gix, older suso e giuso; dosso, but corso, verso, orso (ursus), Fr. owrs, Span. oso.

7. Iwas doubled between vowels, as in "antiqui maites," which Priscian distinctly explains to have been pronounced with the sound of 7 consonant (Eng. y in you), and " Pompeiit ut si dicas Fom- pelli."" Cicero spelt aito, Matiam; "quod si est, etiam jungetur [¢] ut consonans" (Quint., i. 4, 11). Comp. also Ose. Pompazians. Out of the older and popular majjus, pejjus grew Ital. maggio, peggio, whereas classical Latin had majus, péjus. For filius=filjus, see 23 below, p. 664.

8. V occurs in Old Lat. perplovere perpluere (comp. pluvia),

Greek

conflovont (comp. floviom ; fluvidus, Lucretius), sovo, suvo, suo, ingenuvae, clovacas. Comp. Umb. tover and twer, tui; Ose. suvad, &c. It reappears in Petronius, urceatiin plovebat, and in Ital. piovere, rovina, védova, Genova, Mantova, chidvica, Span. llovér, Fr. plewvotr.

9. In qu the wu after q was only a lip glide, defined by the grammarians as ‘“‘neither vowel nor consonant,” as it did not count in the metre. It was therefore easily dropped altogether, as in Cinti for Quincti in an old inscription. This was especially peculiar to Etruscan Latin, as in the very old Aecetiai Aequitiae, Tarcna, Ktrus. Tarxnas, Tarquinius. Instances occur later every- where, as cocus for coguus, cottidie (Lex Julia), &c. ; L. Lat. cingue, cinguaginta (Edict. Diocl., 301); Ital. chi qui, che quid, cudcere coquere, eucina=vulg. Lat. coquina (=culina), cingue, &c. But generally Italian retains gw with the old sound, gwinto, quanto, Span. cuanto, but gue, guinto (=k), Fr. qu=k.

10. The Old Romans, having no aspirates in their own speech,

aspirates. could not pronounce the Greek ¢, x, 6, but generally turned them

Vowels,

into p, ¢, t, as Pilippus Pidurmos, Prune Ppivn, colapus, Bacanal. In some words the old popular pronunciation continued later, as class. ampulla, purpura; Silver Age, percolopabant (Petron.) ; Medizval, colopus, colpus, Ital. colpo, Fr. coup; spaera, Old Ital. spera (Dante), Early Eng. spere (Chaucer), vulg. Eng. spear, “sphere”; Josepus, Ital. Giuseppe ; Stepanus, Span. Estéban, Slav. Stepan.

11. Greek initial + was often rendered b, as Burrus Tvgpéds, also adj., “burrum antiqui quod nunc dicimus rufum ” (Fest.) ; hence, through bur®eus, Ital. bujo, “ dark”; likewise buxus muéébs, Ital. busso, bosso, Fr. buis, ‘box tree”; from mugis, class. pyxis, popu- lar and L. Lat. buaxis, buaida, Fr. boite.

*12. Fafter vowels is rare in Latin, but frequent in Umbro-Oscan, as Umb. prufe probe, Osc. amprufid improbe, Safintm Samnium (*Sabinium), corresponding in cognate words to Greek aspirates where Latin commonly had 6: Lat. vafcr, "sly," orig. "varius"; comp. vabrum "varium"' (Gloss. Isid.), Umb. vufru. The re- lation between Lat. rufus, Umb. rofu and Lat. ruber is very like that between nasus and nares, or that between veho and lingo, ligurio as representing Gr. x. We may suppose that fis the older and stronger common Italic form, sometimes retained in old popular Latin speech, partly by provincial influence. We find sifilare for sibilare mentioned as archaic by Nonius, as vulgar in the appendix to Probus, Ital. 2w/folare, Fr. sificr. F is preserved in many pro- vineial names, as Safinius (Petron.) and Tifernuwm, Ital. Trferno. We find this / again in the Italian ¢aféno tabanus, béfolo bubalus, Eng. buffalo. The Neapolitan attrufe, " October,' has a very Oscan appearance,*

*18. Old Latin often prefers short e, especially original and un- accented, to 7, as in dedet, fuet (T. Scip.), cepet, refecet (Col. Rostr.), velet (Bacch.), Condetios (inscr.), acetarc=agetarc (Fest.), dubenrs dominus (Fest.), componcto (Cato), genetrix, mereto, calecare (inscr.), Jamelia, magester (Quint.). It stands for radical 7, mostly orig. ¢, as in en, endo=Gr. év, semul (Plaut.)—comp. Ital. insieme, Fr. en- semble; Afenerva (inscr., and mentioned by Quintilian). Sometimes it stands even for original 4, as ¢empestatebus, aidiles (T. Scip.), navebos, navaled, but marid (Col. Rostr.), set ques, si quis (Bacch.). This is quite Umbrian ; comp. kanetu canito, urfetam orbitam, fratreks "fratricus," facefele=L. Lat. facibilis, Old Fr. fesible feasible, famedias familiae (nom. plur.), kvéstretie quaestura, formed like Lat. segnities. In North Latin we find Etrus. Lat. Aecctiai Aequitiae; Umb. Lat. Publece, menesterium (T. Pis.), Apolenet, dcde, Nome(lia); Mars. dedet, mercto ; and rustic " rustici etiam nunc quoque viam vcham appellant" (Varro). #, being more subject to be obscured than 7, is not uufrequently dropped, as in cante for *canete, class. canite (Carm. Sali.), Nwmtortai (inscr. ¢. 290 B.C.), oimvorsct (Bacch.), waverswm (Lucretius), ealdus (Cato), ardus, frigdaria (Lucilius); always fert, fertc=gépere. Popular Latin here approached the North dialect, where such syncopes were constant: comp. Ub. nomne nomine, éermnu termino, postro postero; they were still more violent in Etruscan, as Elysentre Alexander, Sehtmnal Septimiend nata, Tarxnas*

Tarquinius ; Pis. Lat. dedro(t) dederunt, Lebro Liberum ; Umb. Lat. ccdre cedere, &c. South Latin, on the contrary, favoured 7 (see below).

14. Of long ¢ Lucilius distinguishes two kinds—close {(¢ tenue), as in pila, “ mortar,” and open (¢ pingue), approaching to ¢, written e7, asin peilum, “spear,” meilia, “ thousands”; he might have added Jetlius, “son,” comp. félarc, On}. There was an original diph- thong ci, as in deicere, Osc. devewm, Gr. decxvivat, which was early contracted into this middle sound, exactly like Eng. ey in money from Old Fr. moncie. This too is quite Umbrian, spelt e¢ and ee, c, as enetu inito, Arch. Lat. eneito, feliuf filios, sercihior, screhto scripti, preve privus, Joveine= Tjovine, Iguvini; comp. the datives Juve patre, mehe, tofe (tibi), Osc. Diuvel, paterct ; also Umb. Lat. Jel=filius, and Pis. Lebro. In North Latin datives in ¢ are gener- ally constant (Apolenei, Pis., uncontracted), as Junone matre, Jove, patre, Marte, &c., extending sometimes even farther south ; and Gallo-Lat. nisc (Lex Rubr. de Gall. Cisalp.). Livy used sibe and

663

quase (originally ~~ci). This exactly agrees with the rustic pro~~ nunciation vélla, spécea reeorded by Varro, lzber by Festus—“ab antiquis et amect et amecae per e litteram efferebantur” (Fest.). And this again surprisingly agrees with the Modern Emilian (Romagnudlo) pronunciation, as Bolognese méga mica, dég dico, mél mille, plur. méla=Ital. mila, véta vita, maré marito, prém primo. Thus this old rustic sound seems to have extended north- wards, but later to have becn driven from its old home by the classic close 7, which penetrated everywhcre else, and is generally represented in all the Romance languages.

15. Old Latin often prefers short 0, especially original and un- accented, to w, as in consol (T. Scip.), tabola (Bacch.), pocolom (many old inscr.), poyolum (Tab. Bantina), epistola=émwrodh, Patricoles, Hercoles, colpa (Prise.), Volcanom (inser. 3d century B.c.), volgo and volt, &c. (Plaut.; o after v continued in the classical age), sont sunt, cosentiont (T. Scip.), denontiari (Tab. Bant.); in termina- tions—Venos, opos, robose, filtos, and Luciom, &c. (T. Scip.); in Umb. acc. poplo, salvo, tertio; even for orig. w—ascriato eest, observa- tum ibit ; radical—molia multa, “ fine,” onse (h)uinero, Ital. émero, Span, ombro, somo summo (orig. sup-mo),

Ital. sémmo; in North Latin moltaticod (T. Picen.); in Fal. maxomo, zenatuo; and in Ligurian Latin floviom, infumo, suso (bronze tablet near Genoa, 117 B.c.). O reappears in Late Latin and Italian mdlto, délce, &e. Medial o is often dropped before J, as in omni poplo (Plaut. Pseud.), teglarvus (inscr.), Fostlus (Faustulus, 114 3.c.), Hercle (Plaut.), singlaritcr (Lucr.)—comp. Fr. sanglier, Ital. cinghiale—coplata (Lucr.) ; in some cases, as poclwm, periclum, the contraction does not appear till the empire ; at Pompeii anglata, subla, &c. As Umbrian always has contraction, pihaclom, anglom, Treblanir, vitlu, katlu, stiplo, whilst Oscan distinguishes diminutive forms like zicolom, zteelet, ztculud from such forms as sukaraklom, pestlom, the strongest impulse must have come from the north, although there must have been a pretty general tendency to syncope every- where. In Italian contraction is the rule in popular words, as veechio for vet lus, Late veclus, occhio oc'lus, &c. In popolo, tévola, isola, &c., and diminutives like rivolo and géndola, the original vowel has remained throughout. South Latin favoured u (see below).

16. The use of o for ¢ after v is shown by Old Lat. oinwvorsei, voricre ; in vostrum (Plaut., Ambrosian palimpsest), the original sound (from vos) occurs, which must have been universal in popular speech, since it reappears in Latc Latin and all the Romance lan- guages—Ital. vostro, Fr. votre, &c. There was a tradition that Scipio Africanus had been the first to spell these words with ¢ (Quint., i. 7,25). Here Umbrian distinguished between ¢ and 9, as in vestra, covertu (pres.), but covortws (perf.); Lat. vorsare is perhaps Span. vosar, bosar, "to vomit"; in other words ¢ is now universal.

17. U occurred for ¢ before labials; but the old optwmo has scarcely left any trace, yet Ital. has menomo besides minimo. Later « was pronounced with the sound of a, Gr. v, Fr. «, which at last was turned into 7, as in optimus, Ital. ottimo. But in some few words the old popular form has survived—stupwla, Ital. stéppia, Fr. éouble, "stubble," dissaupare, Ital. servupare.

18. Ustands for o—" Frundes, funtes vetustissimi ; quae tamen a primoribus repudiata sunt, quasi rustico more dicta" (Prise. }— contrary to the general rule (see 15). Spellings like muns, muwntem, Juntcem

abound in Late Latin, as puntifer (already in 98 a.D.), Zerrouowriw (Plut., c. 100); whence Old Fr. and Old Eng. muné, "mount," Ital. mdnte, ponte, fonte with close 0. In Sienese we have even pognere, ponto, Ital. and Florentine pugnere, punto (pungere, ptnctum); the connexion, however, of 6 with Old Latin uw is doubtful.

19. Greek v was pronounced w, as in Bruges Pp'yes, Burrus, purpura, gubernum, gubcrnare, cupressus,—the last four also class- ical ; otherwise the classical age adopted the Greek sound y, as in Cyprus. In popular Latin the old sound remained, and wu was sometimes (before 7, as in fore) even changed into 9, as in storax (Ter.), ancora (Nevius). In Low Latin wu is frequent: ewprum, "copper, for which Pliny used Cypriwm (aes) ; comp. bursa, Ital. borsa, Fr. bourse, crupta, Ital. grotta, twmba, Ital. tomba, &c.

In popular Latin there was a general tendency to contract the Diph-

old diphthongs, in aceordance with Umbrian and North Latin.

20. Au in North Latin began very early to be contracted into long open 0, as Pola (inscr. Picen., 218 B.c.). In Umbrian this is a constant law—ote aut, Ital. 6, Umb. torw tauros, Ital. toro, &c. The only form of the oldest Roman Latin was au, as Taurasia, Aulla (T. Scip.), Clawdi (Bacch.). When the Umbrian poet whose provincial name was Plot(u)s settled in Rome in the latter half of the 3d century B.c. his name was Latinized into Plautus. Meauwhile the North Latin 6 began to penetrate into Latium as rustic, vulgar, and familiar; Cato and Varro often use it in their books De Re Rustica, as colcs (Cato), colis, orata (Varro): " Orata genus piscis appellatur a colore auri, quod rustici orwm dicebant, ut auriculas, oriculas" (Fest.). But in the classical age there was a good deal of reaction against this vulgarism, and there is a well-known anecdote of Mestrius Florus warning the emperor Vespasian against saying plostra, and being next day facetiously greeted by the emperor as Flaurus (Suet., Vesp., 22). At Pompeii

Vowels of com- pounds,

Accent and quantity.

eopo took the place of cawpo, o(p)scultat of auscultat. It is scarcely possible to fix the precise period at which 6 for aw became general with the upper classes; but, as it was never changed into ud like the original open 0, the general contraction of au is probably later than that of ae to 2, which was accomplished about the time of the introduction of Christianity. That the contracted sound is open 0, not closed, may be inferred from the Italian 0 in oro, toro, cosa, povero, in Old French ehdse, povre, as is shown by the rhymes, only in Mod. Fr. chése, povre (etymologically spelt pawvre). The Eng. eausc, sauce, poverty, have kept the Old French sound ; the Spanish forms are cosa, oro, pobre. The old diphthongal pronuncia- tion of aw was never quite lost, but preserved in literary tradition all through the Middle Ages, as in Italian and Spanish literary words like causa. It even appears to have been popular in some Roman provinces, judging from the Prov. paubre, causa, in Mod. Prov. couzo (spelt by the French "coouso"), and the Portug. ouro, cousa (also otro, eoisa). Even Fr. chose, chow presuppose cause, caulis, not cosa, colts. In Italian, words like cavolo, " cabbage, Paolo, "Paul," are vare exceptions. It is to be especially noted that eawda seems to be false, céda being the correct Latin form, which is corroborated by Ital. edda with close o. Some philologists, however, think 6 is the old contraction, unconnected with 0.

21. Ae, oldest form ai, occurs very early, as in acs, praedad (Col. Rostr.), and was general at the time of the Gracchi. The difference between ai and ae is really very slight, the sound of 7 being open, which is very near "raised_¢" (both vowels occur in Eng. pity). The pronunciation must have been essentially the

same as in the Osc. at, which in the Latin transcription of the Tab. Bantina wavers between az and ae. The contraction of ae into é first occurs in the north, where it was constant, for example Umb. kvéstir, pré, méstro magistra, dat. asé arae; North Latin— Fal. pret(or), Cesilia; T. Pis. Cesula; Etrus. Lat. Quectld (= Ceeili for Caecilit), Cnevia Gnaevia, Gnaeja, &c. From the north it spread to Latium, where it first occurs as a rustic pronunciation scoffed at by Lucilius, as quoted by Varro: "Rustici

Pappum Mesiwm, non MMaesium, a quo Lucilius scribit—Cecilius Pretor ne rusticus fiat." "In Latio rure edus, in urbe aedus" (Varro). We find e for ae quite commonly uscd in the vulgar dialect of the Ist century A.D.,—at Pompeii Ictus, gucres, etate, presto, tabule, que. In Rome e became the pronunciation of the upper classes only in the Chris- tian period, 3d and 4th centuries, as Hmiliano, pede = filiae (inscr. 3d century), Cesar (4th century). Servius (4th century) says "é is pronounced almost like ae," that is, with the same sound, only shorter (at least in theory), equus like acquus.

22. In Old Latin compound words often did not soften their radical vowel; the preposition being then an adverb, and each word having a distinct stress, the compound was separable, as in manuin endojacito (XII. Tables) =injicito ; 0b vos sacro, vos obsecro, and sub vos placo, vos supplico, in ancient prayers ; transque dato= '"et tradito," in ancient laws. This was imitated by classic poets (tmesis)—inque ligatus (Virg.). Only some of these separable com- pounds continued later on, such as the intensifying per, in per ecastor scitus (Ter.), nobis ista sunt pergrata perque jucunda (Cic., De Or.), per mihi mirum visum est (Cic., 7.), Platoni per fuit Jamiliaris (Gellius). Instances of the unchanged vowel in verbs— écquid placeant, mé rogas? immo vero hercle pérplacent (Plaut.), and ea mihi perplacct (Cic.), to which correspond exactly the Old Fr. par est bons, par me plaist, While the older Latin acceutua- tion was dffatim, ddmodwm, these words seem at the time of Gellius to have been pronounced affdtim, admédum. We have here a first step towards the modern systein of accenting the last clement gf compounds ; comp. the modern Comasco ammo, Roum. ama, " just now." Quomodo is continued in Ital. come, but is formed anew in the dialectic comodo, emdd. In Late Latin and Romance the old systcm reappears unimpaired ; many of the old compounds, having been lost in popular speech, were formed anew with stress on the last element and unchanged vowel: for instance, class. displicet, vulg. displdcet, Ital. dispidce, Span. despldce, Fr. déplait ; class. dcctdit, vulg. accddet, Ital. accdde (inf. aceadére); rélégo becomes Ital. riléggo, &e.

23. Stress, which in Old Latin was often farther from the end than in classical Latin, seems early to have become pretty strong, so as to induce

the voice to hurry over unaccented syllables even though they were long by position (see LaTrn), as magistratus, ministertum, volintate, in Plautus, where st,nt were pronounced as quickly as in Eng. voluntary, magistrate. The vowels, too, were hurried over; that fénéstra was pronounced as Jen'stra is corro- borated by the Ennian festra=ferstra,—comp. Ital. mesticro= ministerium. Scansions like sagittis, simillumae show that double consonants might count as long or short ; position was not regarded so nicely as in Greek till the classical age. The real reason may have been the stress on the first syllable. In accented syllables double consonants cannot have been really short, considering the full length of Italian double consonants in bello, anno, saétta, &c. Likewise final vowels of iambic words were shortened, as novo, habe, puta, bene, homo (see Latin). This is important, as marking the first step towards the Romance levelling of the old quantities.

ROMANCE LtANGUAGHES

This tendency, too, was carefully restrained during the classical age, but reappears early in the post-classical period. Another effect of the strong popular stress is the pronunciation of 7 before vowels as a consonant; thus words like /filizis in Plautus often count as two syllables, fijus (j= Eng. y). This is evidently the preparatory stage to the Romance figlio, &c., with palatal 7,—/ and j having been fused into one sound. This pronunciation, too, was carefully suppressed by the classics.

B. Vocabulary.—We append, in chronological order, a brief Vocabu- selection of archaic words, disused, vulgar, colloquial, or used with lary.

a disparaging sense, in the classical age, but reappearing later as quite usual and dignified expressions. The many modern deriva- tives should be noticed. '

*Livius ANDRONICUS (c. 240 B.c.): sortus surrectus, Ital. sorto, sortire, Fr. sortir de eau. PLauTus (254-184): bucea, "mouth" (fam. Cic.), bucca panis (Petron.), Ital. bdécca, Fr. bouche ; mina- ciae, "threats," Ital. minaccia, Fr. menace ; calceolarius, 'shoe- maker," Ital. calzolaio. Diminutives—vidulus, vid'lus, " wallet," Ital. valigia (*vid'litia, Diez), Fr. valise ; awricula, Ital. orecchia, Fr. oreille; apicula, Fr. abeille;*

Zusciniola, Ital. usignudlo, rosi- gnudlo, Fr. rossignol ; sororcula, Ital. sirocchia, commonly sorella ; vitellus, Ital. vitello, Fr. veau, Eng. veal ; agnedlus, Ital. agnello, Fr. agneau ; putillus, 'little boy," Ital. putello (putus fam. for puer, Virg.). Adjectives—bellus (later fam. Cic.)—the Romance bello has quite superseded puleher; minutus, "small," populus minutus (Petron.)=Fr. le menu peuple ; rivalis, originally a law term, figuratively of a rival in love (class. acmulus; fam. Cic.); ebriacus, "drunk," Ital. ubbridco; sucidus, 'juicy,' " dirty," Ital. sticido, stidicio, Span. sticio, Verbs—ambuilare, '"walk," "go," familiar in all ages, hence according to Dr. Vilh. Thomsen the Romance andare, aller, Roum. wnbld, Ladino amnar; bajulare, "carry," bajulus, "carrier," L, Lat. "educator," Ital. bdlio, "steward," bdlia, "nurse," Fr. baller, "reach," "give"; mandiicus, "glutton," manducare, "chew," 'eat," frequent in Old Latin—the emperor Augustus wrote familiarly manducavi duas bucecas=Ital. mangiai due bocconi—in the Vulgate manducat et bibit, Ital. mangiare, Fr. manger ; auscultare, " listen" (once Cic., mihi ausculta), Ital. ascoltare, Span. escuchar, Fr. écouter; cantare, frequent in Old and classical Latin, the only word in Romance (cancre has been lost) ; adjutare, Ital. ajutare, Fr. aider (adjuvare lost) ; earadicare, eradicare, Ital. sradicare, Fr. arracher; mendicare, Ital. mendi- care, Fr. mendier; batuere, battwere, "strike," Ital. bdttere, Fr. battre (dtto from battuo), L. Lat. battwalia, Ital. battaglia, Fr. bataille ; muttire, "mutter"—palam mutirc, 'speak' (Ennius)— L, Lat. subst. muttwm nullum emiseris, "not a word," Ital. motto, Fr. mot; sapere, "understand"—sometimes very near to the modern sense, sapit scelesta multum (Plaut.)=Ital. la scellerata sa molto, nullam rem sapis=Ital. non sai nulla—Ital. sapére, Span. sabér, Fr. savoir ; comederc, "eat" (Cic. fam.), comedere numos= Fr. manger son argent, Span. comér ; despoliare (Cic., Ep.; Liv. once), Ital. spogliare, Fr. dépouiller ; comparare, "to procure," later "to buy" (Suet.), Ital. comprare. Greek words—colaphus (colapus), " buffet," " box on the ear" (fam. Quint., Plin.), percolo- pabant (Petron.), L. Lat. eolpus, Ital. colpo, Fr. coup. Ennrus (239-169); etvitas, "city"' (reappears in Petronius and later), Ital. citta, Fr. cité, Eng. city ; campsare, "double (a cape)," a d&mrat Aeyouevov, recognized by Diez in the Ital. (s)eansare, 'to avoid"; nitidare, Ital. nettare ; petra, "rock," frequent in Pliny and later —in the Vulgate tu es Petrus, et super hanc Petram aedificabo ecclesiam meam—lItal. piétra, Fr. pierre. Cato (284-149): nascere nasci, Ital. nascere, Fr.

naitre; fracidus, “mellow,” ‘damaged (olives),” Ital. frdcido, fradieio, “rotten.” Pacuvius (219-129): causari, ‘to plead,” not classical, reappears in the Silver Age in the sense of pleading as an excuse, still later in that of disputing, discussing, Fr. causer, “ to chat, talk”; comp. Ladino plidar (plead), ‘“‘to speak.” Lucintus (¢. 148-103): acceptor for accipiter, ‘a hawk,” frequent in Low Latin, Ital. astére, Kr. autour; quwiritare, ‘ery ””—ut quiritare urbanorum, sic judilare rusticorum est (Varro ; fam. Cic.)—Ital. gridaré, Fr. crier. Greek words—gubernum, “rudder,” Ital. governo; schediwm, “improvised or unpolished poem,” Ital. schizzo, “sketch”; caballus, “jade,” seems first to occur here—optat arare caballus (Hor.)—later “horse,” “ steed,” Ttal. cavallo, Span. caballo, Fr. cheval, L. Lat. cadallarius, “chevalier,” “knight”; cyma, “ young sprout of cabbage ” (later Plin., Colum.), Ital. eima, “top.” Q. CLAUDIUS QUADRIGARIUS —Gellius blames several expressions of his as vulgar or rare: diurnare diu vivere, comp. Ital. soggiornare, Fr. séjourner, Eng. sojourn, and aggiornare, ajourner, adjourn; arboretwm, “grove,” Ital. arboreto, Span. arboleda. Varro (116-28), especially in De fe Rustica: belarc balare, Ital. belare, Fr. béler ; olor odor, Span. olor; eapitiwm, “ bodice,” Ital. capezzale, “cape,” “pillow” ; nervium =vevptov, Span. nérvio; rubeus, “red” (later Colum., Pallad.), Fr. rouge, Span. ribio, “fair”; badius, ‘bay (horsc),” a rare word, Ital. bajo, Fr. bai. Laperius (105-43) is blamed by Gellius for using obsolete, rare, and vulgar words : lavandaria lavanda, later “lauudress,” Ital. lavandaja ; gurdus, “ stupid,” a Spanish word, says Quintilian, and in fact we find Old Span.

Gram- mar.

Syntax and phrase-

ology.

Second period.

ROMANCE

gordo, “stupid,” Mod. Span. “fat,’—comp. pingwis Minerva ; pittacium, “patch,” “label,” =mirrdxov, Span. pedazo, ‘ piece”; nanus, “ dwarf,” =vavos, Ital. nano, Fr. nain ; botulus, ‘ sausage 7” (also Petron.), dim.*

botellws (Martial), later = “ bowels,” Ital. budello, plur. budella, Fr. boyaux. Lucretius (94-55): baubare, “bark,” Ital. abbajare, Fr. aboyer, Eng. bay; russus, ‘red ”— arare word, russa gingiva (Catull.), mentioned as usual by Gellius —lItal. résso, “red,” Fr. roux, rousse, “red-haired.” Old words mentioned by GRAMMARIANS: burrus (see 11, above); artitus= bonis instructus artibus, Prov. artista, “trade,” Fr. artisan; gluto (Fest.), glutto (Persius and later), Ital. ghiottone, Fr. glouton (comp. Lat. glut glut, Fr. glouglow); planca tabula plana, Fr. planche, Eng. plank ; sarpere putare, “to imp,” Fr. serpe, ‘ prun- ing knife.”

C. Grammar (Plautine, when no author quoted).—Gender: collus collum, Old Fr. cols, now cou; dorsus, &c. Declensions : Iacte lac, Ital. latte (Petron. unum Jlactem biberunt); vasum, Umb. vaso®, Ital. vaso ; osswm, Ital. osso, Fr. os 3 pauper,-a,~~um (also Petron.), Ital. povero. Comparison: magis pulcer=Span. mas hermoso ; even magis majores, as vulg. Ital. pid meglio, vulg. Fr. plus meilleur, vulg. Eng. more better(er). The ordinary Rom~~ ance formation with plus only appears in the 8d period. With ego ipsissumus, “my very self,” comp. ipsimus, “himself,” 4.¢., the master of the house (Petron.). Out of (ego)met-ipsimus grew Ital. medesimo, Span. mismo, Fr. méme. Pronouns: dat. fem. illae for illi, Ital. le ; eccwm=ecce eum, Ital. ecco—pater eccwm advenit= ceco che viene il padre ; ecciste, eccista=Old Fr. cist, ceste, Mod. Fr. ce, cet, cette ; eccille, eccilla=Old Fr. cil, cele, Mod. Fr. celui, celle. In Italian these were replaced by eccum istwm, Ital. questo, and eccum illwm, Ital. quello, analogous to the Plautine eccwm ipsum, eccam eampse, &c. 3 quotumus, “which of the number ”— quotwmo die huc pervenisti? Ital. lavorare a cdttimo, “work by the job.” Unus indefinite was sometimes very like the modern indefinite article—Huic filia wnw est, ‘he has a daughter,” Ital. qnest’uomo ha wna figlia. lle was sometimes used very like the modern definite article—Imponit geminorum alteruni in nave pater, lium reliquit alterwm apud matrem domi, Ital. lascid 7’altro colla madre a casa. Note also matus nemo in aedibus, “not a living sonl,” “not a mother’s son,” Span. nadie, “nobody,” likewise from nata (res), Span. nada, “nothing,” whereas the Catalan pre- fers res, Prov. ren, re, Fr. rien (rem). Homo is sometimes like an indefinite pronoun—Nequior nemo, quisquamst, quem homo aut amet aut adeat, Fr. on. ae fey morirt moti, Ital. morire, Fr. mourir. Active for deponent—jocare, Ital. giocare, Fr. jouer, partire=Ital.;

fabulare, Span. hablar. Perfects in si—parsi, prae- morsi, Ital. morsi; the formation in si greatly increased in Rom- ance. Habere with past part. often approaches to modern com- pound tenses, Res omnis relictas habeo, Ital. ho lasciato tutto. Adverbs: Alvorswm ire for alié, Prov. alhors, Fr. ailleurs. Pre- positions: de for genitive, dimidium de praeda mihi dare, Ital. la met' del bottino ; ad for dative, te ad patrem esse mortuom re- nuntiem, Ital. dire al padre ; cwm instrumental, cwm virgis caseum radere, Ital. con; de instr., quam illa de meis opulentiis fiat pro- pensior, Ital. di. Peculiar local uses are 77 Ephesum ire, in Epheso esse, ab domo, "from home," ex Epheso, "from Ephesus"; ab, from (at) one's house, as Esne tu ab dlo militc, servus ejus = from (at) the soldier's, foris concrepuit a vicino sene, Ital. dal soldato, dal vecchio vicino.

Syntax and Phraseology.—Pater tuus ts erat patruelis meus ; comp. Fr. le pere est-7a/, Ital. il padre Zo conosco. Pone aedem 7bi sunt homines, Ital. vi sono degli uomini. Scio jam quid vis dicere, Ital. so (quel) che vuot dire. Ne time, ne fac, Fr. ne fais pas cela. Totus gaudeo, tota sum misera, even Cic. falsum est id totum, 'it is all false," Ital. 6 tutto falso, son tutta contenta, Fr. elle est toute joyeuse. Afultum miseri, even Cic. fam. multwm bonus, Ital. molto buono, Span. muy bueno, Port. muito bom. Bene morigerus (Plaut.), bene saepe (Enn.), bene mane (Cic.), Ital. ben bene, ben tosto, Fr. bien bon, bientét, bien souvent. Bene velle alicut, Ital. voler bene ad alcuno. Epityrum estur ¢nsanc bene (Plaut.), showing that the Suriecusement bien of the Précieuses was no novelty. Aequo animo stare, Ital. star di buon animo ; stabam tanquam mortuus (Petron.), Ital. stava come morto, stare in letto, star seduto, &c. Dictwm (ac) Jjactum (Ter.), Ital. detto fatto, "said and done." Cwm (bona) gratia, "with a good grace" (Ter.), Fr. de bonne grace. Jd restabat (deerat, wt), used ironically, (Ter.), It. questa mancava ancora, Fr. il ne manquait (plus) que cela.

IT. Second (Classical) Period: 80 B.c. to 100 (150) A.p.

At this time we begin to have an idea of what South Latin was, of which the chief characteristics were—(1) its conservative character: supported by the antique forms of the Oscan language ; (2) its pre- ferring 7 to c, as in sinatum, cinsuerint, cintum, rim, ris, diibus (Lex Jul.; Heraclea) ; nigatis, tenimus, Lucritius, dicembres, ocilli (Pompeii), tentmus=Mod.

Neap. tenimmo ; fruminto, siptim (Pute- oli) ; ventrandae (Nap.); later sicwndo, siptim (Borgia, 386) ; (3) its preferring w to 0, as in furtunilla, posteru, aliw (Pompeii). These forms are constant in Modern South Italian. Now classical

Latin was an approach to South Latin, and there arose a strong reaction against the vulgar North Latin forms. But even a purist like Cicero could not always abstain from using colloquial forms, and he sometimes gives us precious information about familiar pro- nunciations, as cwn nobis for cwm nobis, showing the assimilation of mn to nn. He hesitates to use the new word medietas, which later became the ordinary expression, Ital. meta, Spau. mitad, Fr. moitié. Catullus has cnvolare, "steal," Ital. involare, Fr. voler, and basiwm, Ital. bacio (for basio, bagio, like cacio caseus), Span. beso, Fr. baiser, and the familiar caressing dssa for ipsa, Ital. essa. He and Horace have platéa, "street" (for platéa=)areia), Ital. piazza, Fr. place. Vitruvius has octwaginta, Ital. ottanta, a peregre = 'from abroad," and the Greek words chalare, Ital. calare, zelus, Ital. geloso, Fr. jaloux, and schidia, "wooden chip," "splinter," Ital. scheggia. The transition from } to v begins, triwmphavit for -bit (Lex Jul.). Gradually the popular speech undermined the classical correctness of the brief Golden Age, and at the beginning of the empire again rose to the surface. The emperor Augustus was fond of talking slang and bad grammar, as simus for swmus, and he wrote as he spoke in his familiar letters, although he was very hard npon a poor legatus consularis for barbarously writing iwi instead of tpst (Suet., dug., 88; comp. proximus for propsimus).

At Pompeii and Herculaneum we find a town dialect fully de- veloped, half South Latin, half vulgar Roman. Final consonants were dropped, for instance m in the acc. pwella, laudata; t in the verse "quisquis ama valia, perta qni nosci (?=nescit) amare (Pomp.); s rarely, valea=valeas (Pomp.). H, the right pronuncia- tion of which had become a mark of education, just as in English (Rusticus fit sermo, si aspires perperam ; Nigid. Figulus), was con- stantly dropped, as in abcto, abuaerit (Pomp.), abiat

(Herc.). Nn took the place of md: verecunnus (Pomp.), later innulgen. (Abella, 170 A.D.), agennae (Puteoli), were generally Italic ; comp. Umb. pthancr piandi (distennite, dispennite, Plaut.), Osc. opsannam operandam ; now South Italian—Roman monno, Neap. mwnno, Sicil. muwnnw=Ital. mondo, Lat. muudus. Ss was used for cs (x) as in words in -triss for -triz (Pomp.). © popularly became p, as Aprodite, but with those who ae to speak fine 7, just as they made the Greek uv an i—Jacintus, Amarillis, Dafne, Filetus, Ital. Jisico, fisonomia, &c. E for oe seems first to occur during the empire, for example, pomerti (8 B.C.), pomerium (49 A.D.), Phebus (Pomp.). There is no certain evidence of the sound of Germ. 6, Fr. ew; we see that the first vowel is absorbed by the second. According to Diez, oe becomes close e, ae open ¢, which is true for popular words like Ital. yéna, Fr. peine, but untrue for Latinisms like fete, fedo, améno, céto, commédia, tragédia, Feébo, oc in Low Lat. being constantly confounded with ae. Original oe never becomes ze, as ae does (cielo, ficno).

Vocabulary.—We remark at Pompeii eamuccavit emunxit, Ital. Vocabu-dial. smoccare, "snuff (the candle)"; mi stmilat, Ital. mi somiglia, lary.

Fr. il me ressemble, elsewhere only in Late Latin. PETRONIUS: bisacciwm, Ital. bisaccia, Fr. besace; nesapius, " unwise," Ital. savio, saggio, Span. sdbio, Fr. sage; berbex, Fr. brebis; peduclus, Ital. pidocchio, Fr. pou (panus facit diminutivuam panucula, Fest., Ital. pannocchia—comp. L. Lat. genuculum, acucula, Ital. ginocchio, agocchia, Span. hinojo, aguja, Fr. genou, aiguille); striga, "witch," Ital. strega ; fatwus, Fr. fat; basiavit me sptssiws, Ital. spésso, "often." Instances of Petronius's grammar are—vinus, caelus, comp. Old Fr. vins, cicls ; jacebat tanqnam bovis, Ital. bove, bue; hoc vetare nec Jovis potest (Old Lat. Jovis pater=Jupiter), Ital]. Giove ; munus excellente, neuter, shows the L. Lat. declension, Ital. eccellente ; habet wnde=il a de quoi (vivre); unus de nobis= uno di noi (see also LATIN). PLINy mentions sanguisuga as vulgar for hirwdo, Ital. sanguisuga, Fr. sangsue; he has gyrare =Ital. girare, "turu," ""roam about." Prrstus (84-62) has stloppo tumidas rumpere buccas, "a slap," L. Lat. sclopus, sclupare, Ital. schioppo, "gun." QUINTILIAN (c. 40-118): duvardy quod nostri possibile nominant, quae ut dura videatur appellatio, tamen sola est, Ital.

possibile, &c. JuveNnau has buccé foculwm excitat, Ital. fuoco, Fr. feu, and Tacitus spatha, Ital. spada, Fr. épée (see also LATIN).

Ill. Third (Post-Classical) Period: 100 (150) to 300 (350).

This period is represented by the latest pagan inscrip- Third On the decay of class- period.

tions, by Gellius, Apuleius, &c. ical Latin, see Latin. In pronunciation only few decided changes appear.

1. Z is inserted before s impurum, as 'tscripta (Afr., 197), ecoTretpetTw = ispirito (Rome, 269); later this was universal, but in Italian only after consonants—non ista (collog. non sta), in isptrito, in iscritto; Span. always, as espiritu, esta, escribir, escuela; Fr. esprit, écrirc, école.

2. Tt is put for pt, as Setemb. (Helvet., 219), Setimus (Afr., 3d century), later frequent. This assimilation originally came from the north ; comp. Etrus. Lat. Nethunus (th=t), Etrus. Ne@uns, Neptunus, Etrus. Lat. Sctumnal, Etrns. Sehtmnal=Septimiend nata

XX. — 84

Vocabu- lary.

Fourth period.

666 ROWAT CE PANGUAC ES

(inser. biling.), Setwme, Sctimi, Septimius, Umb. serethtor, serehto, Ital. Settimo, Nettuno, atto aptus, cattivo, seritio. :

8. Tt takes the place of ct, as in Beneditus (204), lattwca (Edict. Diocl., 301). This too came from the north ; vitorza occurs on an ancient mirror, probably Etruscan. Comp. Umb. subahtu and subator, formally =subacti, rehte recte, where h, originally sounded, had become mute or nearly so, which is further proved by the spellings ambrehtu, ambretu, ambito, &c. ; eomp. tettom(e), probably =Ital. teéfo tectum, just as Ital. retto rectus, atto actus, otto oeto, notte noctem. This change was restricted to Italy ;

elsewhere et became 7, as Fr. fait factum, Port. feito, Span. hecho (= feitjo). Likewise cs (x) became in Italy ss, as in Lat. eossim, visstt, elsewhere és, as Span. and Port. seis, Fr. cwtsse, laisser. ;

4, @ before a single ¢, ¢ becomes palatal (like the old-fashioned Eng. gyarden, &c.) or nearly j (Eng. y in you), so that both are confounded—magestati (inscr. before 248) ; eogiugi, eonjugi. The sign for Jin the Gothic alphabet, taken from Latin G, shows the pronunciation of the 4th century. — ;

5. Ngn for gn, as eongnato, singno, belongs perhaps to this period—connato, &c., is also found—E. Ital. sengno, now spelt segno, with palatal n, degno dignus, regno regnun, &e., Fr. digne, &c.; sometimes n(n), as in condscere, Fr. connattre. There are traces of some other transitions that appear to have been completed only in the next period. ;

6. Vocabulary. —APULEIUS has sapidus, " savoury" (comp. in- sipidus), Old Fr. sade, whence Fr. maussade (mal-sade) ; morsicare =Ital. ; follieare, " breathe" (like a bellows), Port. folgar, Span. holgar, "rest," "lounge"; mastieare, Ital. masticare, Fr. macher ; minart (equum baculis), "threaten," hence " drive," Ital. menare, Fr. mener; eambiare (better than eambire), Ital. eambiare, Fr. changer ; vietwalis adj., in the 6th century subst. vetwalia (nom. plur.), Old Fr. and E. Eng. vitadlle, Eng. vitiles, spelt etymologically victuals ; aucilla, auecila for avicella, the existence of which had been denied by Varro, L. Lat. awcellus, Ital. wecello, poet. argello, Prov. auzels, Old Fr. otsel, Mod. Fr. oiseau. Cmiius AURELIANUS (2d or 8d century) has testa, ""skull," frequent in the 4th century, Ital. testa, "head," Fr. téte. Lampripivs (e. 250): papilio= pavilion, pullicenus, Ital. pulcino, Fr. poussin ; pipio, ' pigeon"; platea, "place." TERTULLIAN, first Christian author: rememorare, "yemember," aefernalis, " eternal," eompassio, " compassion," and many other modernisims, such as plus miser=Ital. piu misero, Fr, plus misérable. DriocueTIAN: fata, parca, Ital. fata, Fr. fée. SoLINusS (c. 8d century): repatriare, "to repair (to). APICIUS (c. 83d century): exealdare, Ital. scaldare, Fr. échauder ; spatula, Ital. spalla, Span. espalda, Fr. épaule.*

IV. Fourth Period : 800 (350) to 500 (550).

This period extends from the introduction of Christianity to the Middle Ages and the great migrations. Christianity marks an important epoch in the history of the Romance languages. Pagan literature was abhorred, and classical traditions lost. Popular speech got the upper hand; the gospel was preached to the people in the people's own language, and the New Testament translated into vulgar Latin. Several phonetic changes which formerly had been wavering and uncertain became rapidly fixed and decided. The whole language was revolutionized.

1. Palatal g or j was developed into dj (like gy in Hung. Magyar =palatal d+ Eng. y) or dzh (Eng. j), sometimes dz, and was eon- founded with original di—Zerax, Hierax (Cuma, 202); Zovdae (pagan inscr.), comp. Diuliali (568), Madias (364), also Mazas= majas, Gianuaria (503), also Zanuari, &e. Italian still retains the sound of dzh in giungere jungere, Giove Jovem, genere, giacére, &e. Original di in Aziabenico (Afr., 195), medius, pronounced medsius according to Servius (4th century) and Consentius (5th century), Ital. mezzo, pronounced med-zo (but giorno from diurnus).

2. Zi was assibilated before vowels; there are no certain pre- Christian instances. In the 4th century the Gothie laiktjo=

lectio shows that the change had only begun; e¢ and ti were.

sometimes eonfounded, as in xdArwos ealceus (Plut., ¢. 100; Ed. Diocl., 301), octo (Rome, 389); we have ¢ for si in aecletiae (carly Christ. inser.). In the 5th century the change appears as fully accomplished ; the grammarian Pompeius (probably a Maure- tanian) expressly teaches the pronunciation Zitius as Titsius, and Consentius (a Gaul) etiam as eziam, i.c., etsiam. In the 6th century we have the Gothie kavtsjon, eautionem. It is probable that this change too originally came from the north, especially from Etruria, where it was very old: we have Etrus. Ventia Venza, Arniia Arnza, Etrus. Lat. Vencsi, Vensius, Arnzius (while Umbrian has tertio, Martie, &c.), Mars. Lat. Martses, evidently the source of the Latin Marst. At length this pronunciation 'reached the capital and became general, mostly expressed by e, as in eciam, ter- clus, milicia, Justicia, staeio, nacionem, &e. The pronunciation ts is eonfirmed for Spain by Isidore in the 7th century. This sound is

still preserved by Italian in words like piazza, grazia, nazione, giustizia, likewise by Old French, as nactwn, place, whereas in Spanish és has coalesced into a lisped s, as in graeia, nacion, and in Portuguese, Provencal, and Modern French it has been assimi- lated into a hard (voiceless) s, as in plaga, plassa, place.

3. Ci was assibilated before vowels. In the 4th century we have the Gothic faskja, which shows no change. Schuchardt is probably right in supposing that e¢ was assibilated a good decal later than #2, —an inference from the comparative rarity of instances of ehangc, and from the silence of the grammarians. From instances like ocio (see 2) it would appear that c? and ¢ had the same sound, but this cannot have been the case, as Italian still keeps up a differ- ence, as in piaceia placeat, piazza platea. Yet there may have been a beginning of a palatal affection, making the two sounds somewhat like each other. In the 6th century we have the Gothic unkjane (unciarum) and ovvxa in the Ravenna eharters, but on the other hand mpexeew=precio for pretio, Urbitcius (588, which, however, may be a miscorrection, ¢ being added instead of substituted for 4), Mauriscius on a Gaulish coin, from the same period,—making it probable that the assibilation had been accomplished. In the 7th and 8th centuries spellings like onzia for wncia are quite eommon.

4, The most important change of all was the victory of stress Accent over quantity and tones. The popular songs of the classical period and show a decided prevalence of accent. In the soldiers' songs from quantity. the end of the 3d eentury stress has quite superseded quantity and is the ruling principle of the metre :—

- *Unus homo mille, mille, mille decollavimus. Tantum vini nemo hdbet quantum fudit sanguinis."*

This is just like the metre of early Christian hymns—" Dées irae, dtes illa," and "O Rex aeterne, Démine," &c. The old quantities had been levelled. St Augustine (354-430) says that in his time only a few grammarians had kept up the distinction between mérac and mére, and that the Africans eonfounded Js and és. Servius (4th century) could only find out quantity from stress iu words like tmpius, amieus. Consentius says that some, especially Africans, said piper for piper and Ordtor for

drdtor. This does not necessarily mean that all short accented vowels before single consonants had become long ; probably both short and long eoalesced to a medial quantity, rather short than long, and there was no very marked difference of quantity between accented and unaccented vowels. This appears plainly from the nature of Romance poetry, where stress has only a moderate importance—namely, in the most prominent parts of the verse—while the chief principle is the uumber of syllables. In Italian, especially in the Tusean dialeet, we may hear bambino with short accented 4, the unaccented 0 being rather longer than the accented 7, just as Eng. y in pity, when emphatic, is longer than 7. In Spanish words like mdno, priméro, senoéra the accented vowel is generally as short as the unaccented or even shorter, which does not prevent the Spaniards from count- ing it as "dos tiempos" (duas moras) ; the unaecented final syllables are often rather longer, as in Eng. pity. In Italian the longest syllables are those containing two or more consonants after the accented vowel, as tempo, paziénea, bécca, gatto; the chicf difference between fatto and fdio is the length of the ¢ in the former. In Spanish and French even long consonants are shortened, as Span. boca, gato, Fr. ehatte; jette and achéte are equally short; vowcls are generally short or medial, as une belle ville (not like veal, as the English make it), and are long only by compensation, as in dine, chante (where the nasal is absorbed by the vowel). The old distinction of tone necessarily disappeared with these, the acute or high even (2omd) and the circumflex or high falling tone (Réma) being dependent on the quantities.

5. Vocabulary.—Avsontius (Burdigala, 309-392): burrae, nugae, Vocabu- Ital. burla, "joke." ARnoxtus (Afr.,c. 330): coguina, Ital. eucina, lary. Fr. cuisine. Firmicus MATERNUS (e. 340 2): comptitus, Ital. conto, Fr. compte. PALLADIUS (e. 350): cdtus, "cat"; specics=Fr. épices. AMMIANUS MARCELLINUS (end of 4th eentury): molina, Ital. molino, Fr. moulin; tmpedieare empéeher ; pilare=cxpilare, Fr. piller, Ital. pigliare ; proba, preuve. VxEGETIUS (end of 4th cen- tury): burgus, eastellum parvum, Ital. borgo, Fr. bourg. JEROME (831-420) : camisia (Celtie), Ital. camicia, Span. camisa, Fr. chemise; earrieare, Ital. caricare, Span. cargar, Fr. charger ; impostor= Eng. ; raneor, "vancour." THE VULGATE: grossus, Ital. grosso, Fr. gros (see also LATIN). SERVIUS (¢. 390): faleo, Ital. falcone, Fr. faucon. LAcrTantivs (d. ¢. 330):

meridionalis. AUGUSTINE (354-430): eom- binare; vanitare vanter. CopEx Tirronos. (488): exagiwm, Ital. saggio, Fr. essai; paraverédus, L. Lat. palafredus, Ital. palafreno, Fr. palefroi; aewewla, aiguille. Casstoporus (beginning of 6th eentury) : modernus, "modern." CopEX JUSTINIAN. (527-565) : amicabilis, "amiable."

V. Fifth Period: 500 (550) to c. 900 (1000). This period, which extends from the migrations to the Fifth first appearance of the modern Romance languages, is the period.

age of Low or barbarous Latin, as written especially in charters and laws. While Christianity had brought vulgar

Charae- teristics of fifth period.

Aeeented 3. # for accented % became frequent.

ROMANCE LANGUAGES

Latin into the foreground, barbarism quite made away with literary Latin. Latin was not only dead but for- gotten. The old sounds and forms had been lost, and the scribes, ignorant of classical grammar, tried neverthe- less to make a show of learning by putting Latin forms at random. This makes the language look much more barbarous than it really was. It is sometimes very hard to find out the living popular form under the Latin varnish, and harder still to find out what is proper to each country, as Low Latin is very much the same everywhere. The

following were some of the chief peculiarities.

1. Old Latin forms reappeared, especially in Italy. Final con- sonants, especially m, ¢, s, were dropped or wrongly put. In Italy the nom. annus (-os), the acc. annum (~~om), the dat. abl. anno, the acc. plur. annos, coalesced in anno; as this was the real pro~~ nunciation, the scribes confounded the Latin forms. There being no longer any difference between in locum and in loco, both were eonfounded ; even in locus, per locus, &c., were written. The pre- valence of the type anno on the one hand and the growing use of the preposition de for the genitive on the

other made the genitive anni disappear, and anni (with which annis coalesced) was used solely for the plural, likewise ford, monti. Sometimes, as in Old French, the objective form anno, Old Fr. an, was used as a genitive, of which Hétel-Diew is stilla remnant. In the same way Ital. rosa became the common singular, rose the common plural form. Out of Italy, final s being retained, the plural form was aznos, rosas, flores, which is the Spanish (afios) and Portuguese form, and partly the French, as roses, with flewrs and ans as accusatives. In Provencal and Old French s was kept in the nom. sing. masc., ans, but in the nom. plur. the oldest form was 7, retained in some Old French monosyllables—Zi illi, dut, tret, twit from éwtti, used in the Gloss. of Cassel ; in polysyllables this 7 was lost, and an remained, likewise flor ("flort; comp. sapienti, Gloss. Cass.), munt. The verbs canto, cantas, cantat in Spanish only lost ¢; in Ital. cantas through cantis (caused by the affinity of s to 7) became canti?. In French both s and ¢ were kept—chante, chantes ; chantet, later chante ; est, vit, vient, and from the analogy of these Mod. Fr. aime-t-il, chante-t-il. Many old tenses were lost, as ama(ve)ram, which even in Latin sometimes had the sense of the simple past (see LATIN), only in the oldest Fr. rovéret, roga(ve)rat=rogavit. Ama(v)i be- came Ital. amai, Fr. aimat, and was used as simple past (perfectum historicum) ; the praesens perfectum was expressed by a new tensc, as habco amatwm (of which early germs are found), Ital. ho amato, Span. he amado, Fr. jai aimé. The old future was destroyed and a uew future formed out of amare habeo (of which early traces are found), Old Ital. amcraggio, Mod. Ital. ameréd, Span. amaré, Fr. J aimerai, &e. In consequence of the general loss of body, short words dwindled down so much that they became unfit for use, and were superseded by fuller words or reinforced by composition ; this is especially the case in pronouns and particles. As ad became a, Lat. a, ab could no longer kecp its ground, and was replaced by de, likewise vis by fortia, &c. (see Latin). Hic disappeared and was replaced by zste, which remained uncomposed in Span. estc, and in the others was composed with ecce, eccwm (see above). Abante, Mod. Ital. avanti, Fr. avant, occurs in a pagan inscription. Lat. wnde became de wade, Ital. donde ; in Spanish this was further composed with ad, as adonde, and as this in time came to mean 'where'? a new de had to be added,—de adonde, &c.

2. C became assibilated before single ¢, 7. That during all the preceding periods ¢ had the sound of & is proved by Old Latin spellings like dcekem ; by Greek transcriptions, as Kixépwy, Katoap ; by the German renderings Kaiser (Old Eng. cdsere), Keller, "cellar," Kirsche, " cherry," &c., and by the use of ¢ for # in Old English, as in cynne, "kin," cennan, "ken"; by late Latin spellings like ques- quenti, quiescenti, pache (Rome, 408), chingxit (Gaul, 676), vachis (Lucca, 722)—in Italian still ch =A, as chi quis, che quid; and lastly dulkisma (Pisaur., 410), ofikina (Gallic vase, end of 6th century; see Romania, xiii. 485). Yet c before e, i must early have had a more palatal sound than before a, 0, uw, something like the old- fashioned English pronunciation kyard for card. But it was not until very late that the difference became so marked as to be ex- pressed by different letters: the palatal sound began to he assibi- lated into something like Italian ce, ct, Eng. ch (as in child from Old Eng. cild), about the 6th century, although perhaps not cqually early everywhere. We find xecrave and tzitane (Ravenna charter, 591), and paze (inscr. about the same time). Ital. c= Eng. ch in pace, diect (in Central Italy mostly pronounced sh), cielo ; Span. paz, diez, cielo (lisping s from ts); Fr. ciel (Old ts, Mod, s). As original 7 and % were no

and un- longer different in quantity, they had to be distinguished by quality ;

aecented

vowels.

accordingly vinwm became Ital. vino, minus (minus, open 2), Ital. méno, with the same vowel as in véna from véna; thus Latin % and é coalesced ; likewise we have scrivo scribo, bévo bibo, sévo sébum, fido fidus, féde fides, créde crédit, scritto scriptum, detio dictum.

667

We find traces of this in the Pomp. veces, Ital. vece. In Low Latin menus, fedes, &c., are constant. But many who had a little more learning retained the Latin spelling minus, pronouncing méno(s), and by this were induced to write constantly 7 for elose ¢ especially accented, as habire,

vedire, cridcre=Ital. avére, vedére, crédere; vindere, stilla=véndere, stélla, Ital. véndere, stélla, Piedm. esteila, Old Fr. esteile, Fr. étoile. In some few instances this may represent a provincial 7, as in Sicil. avirt, or special cases like Fr. tenir, plaisir, merct.

4, Unaccented e¢ for %, which is frequent in Old Latin and not unfrequent in the post-classical age, returns in Low Latin with re-doubled force. Thus we find fedelis (404), later Domenecus, septemus, decemus, anema, deposeta, genetor, capete, soledos; in the Ravenna charters vecedomeno, vendecare, ordenata, &c.; in Frankish charters decemo, Fr. dime, Domenecus, venerabelis, nobvelis, lacrema, caretate, veretate, femcna, placetus, &c. This penetrated even into Central Italy, as in the Tuscan Latin of the 8th century, dedet, placetum, homents, inviolavelis. In Middle Italian woment, in Modern Italian Domeneddio, ospedale, are rare remnants of the earlier form. Gener- ally classical 7 has prevailed in Florentine and Italian, as womini, Jemmina, anima, asino, ordine, spirito. In the Sienese dialect e has remained, as ordendre, cardendle, and in North Italian — Venet. dment, femena, menéstra, drdene, dscno; Lomb. omen, dsen, ordendri, &e. InSpanish it is not unfrequent—drden, uimedo, nove- ddd, corredér ; comp. Prov. lagrema, semenar, conoissedor, and Old Fr. aneme, pronounced dnme (the spelling points to an older stage).

*5. Unaccented inedial e was often dropped, though less in Italian, except in the north, as in L. Lat. dwlkisma, dulcissima (Pisaur., 410), answering to modern Romagnudlo forms like 'strissm=illus- trissimo ; generally L. Lat. domnus, domna=Ital. donna, "lady," "woman." In French all proparoxytones are contracted ; for in- stance, Old Fr. (asinum, *as'no) asne Ane, (anima, *an'ma) anme Ame, (hominem, *hom'ne) honume, (femina, *fem'na), femme.*

6. Accented o for %, not unfrequent in the preeeding period, was constant in Low Latin. While Lat. licem became Ital. lice, Lat. crticem, niicem (nitcem, open Ww) became crécc, néce, like véce from vocem ; comp. justus, Ital. giusto, Fr. juste, but augdstus, Ital. agdsto, Fr. aotit. This caused many to write w for close 0, as oxure uxore, geneture genitorem, although this may partly represent a provincial uw, as in Sicil. amiri. In

*Old Fr. we have honour, favour, and still amour, and in L. Lat. curte=cohortem, *corte, Ital. corte, Fr. cour, Eng. court.*

7. Unaccented o for % as in Old Latin is frequent, as in L. Lat. tabola, popolo, sccolom, regola, volontate, Ital. tdvola, popolo, ke. ; even for original u, as mano, spirito.

8. Unaccented medial o was often dropped before 7, in which case the unfamiliar group ?'2 was changed into cl, as in L. Lat. oclus oculus, Ital. dcchio, Span. ojo, Fr. ceil; vecius vetulus, Ital. vecchio (Old Ital. veglio), Span. viejo, Fr. vieil, vieux ; also L. Lat. tabla= Span. tabla, poplom=Span. pueblo. In French syncope is a law— table, peuple, sangle cingulum, &c.

9. Final unaccented vowels in Italian on the whole obey the general laws. By the loss of the Latin final consonants all words end in a vowel, except such as per, con, non, in, un bel giorno, buon giorno. In South Italian 7, 2 stand for e, 0. In Spanish e is some- times dropped, as sed sitim, Ital. séte ; paréd parietem, Ital. paréte ; Jacl, érden. In Portuguese o is pronounced uw, but often only whispered ; cis nearly always whispered or mute. In North Italian, Ladino, Catalan, Provengal, and French all final vowels are generally dropped, except a, which remains in Provengal, as port, but porta (Mod. porto). In Catalan @ is mostly pronounced as open ¢; in French this becomes obscure e, which in modern French is mute except in such cases as table ronde.

10. Accented ze stands for é, wo for 0. As and , 6 and 6 were levelled in quantity, they were already distinguished in quality, as in Ital. béne bene, véne vénae; Portuguese has got no further than this. But generally this was not distinct enough for the wauts of the speakers, and unconsciously é (in which é from Lat. ae was included) became 72, and 6 (in which 0 from Lat. aw was not included) became wd, both diphthongs being generally accented on the last vowel—Ital. and Span. viéne, Fr. vient venit; Ital. buono, Span. buéno; Ital. swdno, Span. swéno (generally sonédo) sonus, different from Ital. séno sunt, Span. son. This ehange must be very old, as it is found in nearly all the Romance languages. In Spanish, Provencal, and French wo was changed into wé, and this in Modern French to eu, eu, contracted into the sound of 6. In Spanish the

use of diphthongs is extended to position—tiémpo, siéte septem, Ital. sétte, Aiérro, Ital. férro, cwérpo, Ital. corpo, muérte, Ital. morte. Mark the displacement of stress in popular Latin— pariétem for pariétem, Ital. paréte, Span. paréd, Fr. paroi ; filidlus for filiélus, Ital. figliuédlo, Span. hijuélo, Fr. filleul.

11. Of mediae (voiced stops) for tenwes (voiceless stops), especially between vowels, we find some few earlier instances, as grassws for crassus, Ital. grasso, Fr. gras. This is generally rare in Italian Latin, as gubitus, cubitus, Ital. gémito, and is still compara- tively rare in Italian. Yet it occurs in some of the most familiar words, as ago acus, lago, lwogo, segare, pagare (pacare, "to satisfy,"

ROWAN CEH BAN GUAGE?

VI. Sixth (Last) Period.

For the sixth and last period—that is, for the history and Modern distinctive traits of the great modern Romance languages Romance —the reader is referred to the separate articles. _

668

"nay "), pregarc, budcllo, parentado, contado (comitatus), eontrada, spada, strada ; p from 6 becomes », as in riva, riviera, povero, savio ; before r—padre, madre, segreto, lebbra. This recalls similar changes in Umbrian, and was perhaps originally North Italian and from

thence penetrated into Tuscany. In Spanish the voiced sounds guage

Vocabu- lary.

*are the general rule, as fuégo, Ital. fudco, amigo, Ital. amico, amado, finido, Ital. amato, finito, sabér, Ital. sapére, &c., yet there are some exceptions, such as poco (paucum). In Old French the soft sound is the constant law, but this mostly disappears later, as in aimé, aiméc (see FRANCE, vol. ix. p. 632 sg.). A general Romance ease is placitum, Old Ital. piatéo, Ital. piato, Span. pleito, Old Fr. plaid, through *plagito,*

**plajeto, which is singularly like the Umbrian feitu, feetu for fagitu. A limited case is that of such words as Fr. raison, Ital. ragionc from rationem, probably first changed to ratsiéne, *radsiénc, thence to rastone, which sometimes occurs in Late Latin, and often in Early Italian, Span. razon ; comp. Ital. cagione occasionem.*

12, Zand e unaccented before vowels, especially post-tonic, be- came j, as filjus (Plautus), odiwm pron. oljo. J coalesced with the preceding consonant, making it palatal, as in Ital. jiglio, oglio, jiglia, maravigltia (mirabilia), battaglia; Span. maravilla, batalla 9 Fr. fille, merveille, batailic (in North French the palatal sound is replaced by ¢ or 7), &. N—Ital. vigna vinea, Spagna Hispania, ingegno, castagna, campagna, bagno balneum ; Span. Lspafia, can- pana; Fr. vigne, champagne. In some cases 7 was assibilated, as Span. granja, estranjero, Fr. songe, grange, étrange.

*13. Sometimes attraction takes place, ¢ being transposed to the radical syllable, especially in French, as hudle, bain, témoin, Antoine, gloirc, histoire. Before and after 7 peculiar forms appear—Ital. primaio (-jo); muojo morior; Ital. primiero, cavalicre, from primario, probably assimilated into *primer(z)o (Dr Thomsen). Forms like paner, sorecrus are found as early as the 8th century.*

14. Vocabulary.—During this period the Roman world, after being conquered by the Germanic nations, adopted many words from their conquerors. The German influence was strongest in France ; hence we find Germanic expressions for many of the most common words except form-words, though the stock of the language remains Latin. A curious instance, characteristic of the Middle Ages, is rauba, which from "robbery," " prey," came to mean " property," Ital. roba (robba), "things in general," Span. ropa, "linen," "stuff," Fr. robe, "gown." In Rumonsch we have la rauba e'aud a mi, "the property that belongs tone." The German h, as in hair, old hadir = "hate," is peculiar to French, and is still sounded in Normandy. Some Germanic sounds had to be modified, as w to gu, for instance, guerra from werra, 'war'; guanto, Old Fr. quant, Fr. gant, from want, Dan. Vante; in North French w remained, whence Eng. war, &e. Among the leges barbarae, the LEx Sauica is perhaps the

most remarkable as a document of Low Latin. It has sentences and words like—hoce sunt pariculas eausas=ce sont pareilles choses ; si in dominica ambactia fuerit occupatus, Ital. ambasciata, Fr. ainbassade ; si quis alterum voluerit occidere et colpus praeter Jallierit, Ital. se il colpo fallisce; si quis alterum de sagitta toxicata percutere voluerit et praeter sclupaverit (see stloppus, p. 665); si quis caballum extra consilium domini sui caballicaverit, Ital. caval- care, Fr. chevaucher ; si quis per malo ingenio in ewrte (Ital. corte, Fr. cour) alterius aut in casa (Ital. casa, "house") aliquid de furtwm miserit ; compantum, Ital. compagnia; bare, baronis, "a free man," Old Fr. nom. ber, obj. barwn, hero," "baron"; diffacere, Ital. disfare, Fr. défaire ; cxcortieare, Ital. scorticare, Fr. écorcher. From OTHER LAWS we have—/ortia, Ital. forza, Fr. force; hostis exercitus, Eng. host; vassus (Celtic), "a vassal"; auca, Ital. dca, Fr. oie (from avica) ; troppus, grex (from Germ. thorp), Ital. truppa, Fr. troupe, and also Ital. troppo, 'too much," Fr. trop ; forestis (from forts), ' foreign," Ital. forestiere ; marca (Germ.), ** border," whence marchensis, Ital. marchese, Fr. marquis; tornare (Greek ; also Dacian Latin'). Gnrecory or Tours (6th century) has pagensis, Ttal. paése, Fr. pays. Grucory THE GREAT has merces, '*mercy" ; fiasco, Ital. fiasco, "a flask." Corrppus (Afr, c. 570): eara, " face " (Gr. «dpa, "head"), Span. cara, Old Fr. chiere, whence bonne chére, "good cheer" (originally the kind, hospitable countenance of the entertainer). VENANTIUS ForTUNATUS (e. 580): cofea, "coif" ; crema, "cream"; viaticwm, Ital. viaggio, Fr. voyage. OTHER SOURCES : caminus, "'road" (Spanish Latin, 7th century ; probably Celtic), Ital. cammino, Fr. chemin ; directum, jus (Italian Latin 551), Ital. diritto, Fr. droit. The late AGRIMENSORES : cireare, Ital. cercare, Fr. chercher. Op eLossrs (7th and 8th centuries) : aciariwm, Ital. acciaio, Fr. acier ; cosinus, consobrinus, Ital. cugino, Fr. cousin ; gamba, Ital. gamba, Fr. jambe (Gloss. Cass,). Ismore: triveta, Fr. truite, Eng. trout ; cama, Span. cama, "bed"; jficatwm,*

'liver " (properly Jjecur ficatwm, liver of geese fed with figs), Ital, fegato, Span. higado, Fr. foie ; and custre, consuere, Ital. cuscire, cucire, Span. coser, Fr. coudre (Gloss, Isid.) ; selvaticus, Ital. sel- vaggio, Fr. sauvage ; Sormatiewm, Ital. formaggio, Fr. fromage.

ul The Greek historians Theophylact (c. 600) and Theophanes relate that the Dacian soldiers said in their native tongue Topva, Tbpva, ppdrpe, perdpva. This has been called by some the earliest trace of Roumanian. '

1. Ltalian is distinguished by its harmonious form, its vocalic endings, and the rich fulness of its tones.

2. Spanish is distinguished by its regularity, by its short, distinct sounds and its fixed tones, and by many Arabic words. Certain "thick" sounds, as the j (like Dutch and South German ch, though in the south of Spain much weaker, almost /) and the lisping c, z seem to be rather modern developments than due to direct Arabic influence.

3. Portuguese is, with Gallego (the dialect of Galicia), the western dialect of Spanish, and has almost the same words, but a very different pronunciation ; in sound it approaches somewhat to French, as in the nasal vowels (which, however, are less purely vocalic than in French) and the voiced sounds of s, z, and j. It has partly retained the Old Spanish form, as in jilho for Span. hijo, and partly it has a character of its own owing to its many obscured vowels and contractions, as boa for bona, dér for dolor.

4, Provencal in many respects represents the earliest form of French; in others it has peculiar developments (see PROVENGAL). Catalan is the southern dialect of Provengal.

5. french makes up for the want of the full forms and tones of Italian by its grace and delicacy. It has more ofa history than the other Romance languages, Old French being very different from: Modern.

6. Ladino (Rumonsch,' Germ. Churwalsch, from the town of Chur) or Central Romance extends from the Grisons to Friuli on the Adriatic. It is not uniform, being only an agglomeration of cognate dialects; and it is scarcely more Latin than any other Romance language. It has chiefly been elucidated by Ascoli.

7. Rowmanian has probably not survived from the old Roman colonists of Dacia, but been imported from Istria (which has a cognate dialect) or

Northern Italy. It has been greatly mixed up with Slavonic words and sounds (such as the "mixed" vowels), and has some distinctive marks, sucli as the post-positive article, Romunul =Romanus ille ; compare the similar phenomenon in the Slavonic dia- lect of Bulgaria and in the Albanian language.

Literature.—The real founder of scientific Romance philology and linguistics is Friedrich Diez, in his Gramimatik der romanischen Sprachen, 3 vols., Bonn, 1836-42, and Htymologisehcs Worterbuch der romanisehen Sprachen, 2 vols., 1852. He also published Altro- manische Sprachdenkmdler, 1846; Zwei altromanisehe Gedichte, 1852; and Altromanische Glossare, 1865. Pott contributed several articles on the Low Latin of the lcges barbarae in the Zeitschriften of Hofer and Kuhn. Other authorities on various branches of the subject are—Ducange, Glossarium mediz et infimex latinitatis, 7 vols. ; Marini, Papiri diplomatiet ; Muratori, Antiquitates Italice ; Schuchardt, Der Vocalismus des Vulgdérlatcins, 8 vols., 1866-68 (a valuable collection of materials), also several minor works by the same author ; and Gaston Paris, Ktudc sur le Role del Accent Latin dans la Langue Francaise, Paris, 1862, and La Vic de St Alexis (a poem of 11th century), 1872. The principal magazines devoted to the subject are—Jahrbuch fiir romanisehe und englische Literatur (ed. Wolff, Ebert, and Lembcke), later only fiir romanische Liter- atur; Archiv fiir das Studiwm der neueren Sprachen (ed. Herrig), of a more popular character; Romania (a quarterly, ed. Gaston Paris and Paul Meyer, since 1872), contains articles of the most eminent Romanists; Revuc des Langues Romancs (Montpellier, from 1870 onwards), chiefly devoted to Provencal ; Romanische Studien (ed. Boehmer) 3 Zeitschrift fiir romanische Philologie (ed. Grober, since 1877); and Romanische Forsehungen (ed. Vollméller, since 1884). Mussafia has written many articles and treatises, chiefly in the Transactions of the Vienna Academy of Sciences. Ascoli, author of Studi Critici, has edited since 1873 the Archivio Gléttologico, which has articles by Flecchia. The Rivista di Filologia Romanza (ed. Manzoni, Monaci, and Stengel, 1873) in 1878 became Giornale di Filologia Romanza (ed. Monaci). For the etymological dictionaries of the separate languages see the special articles. (g. 81.")

1 Rumonsch is properly the dialect of the upper Rhine valley, Ladino that a as Engadine. Ascoli includes all varieties under the common name of adino.

CHAPTER I.—THE REGAL PERIOD.

Original Contributories to People, Customs, and Law.—The union

elements of the Latin, Sabine, and, to a small extent, Etruscan

a _ bands that, as conquerors or conquered, old settlers or new

™ immigrants, together constituted the first elements of the Roman people, did not necessarily involve contemporaneous adoption of identical institutions or identical notions of law. Although they were descended from the same Indo- European stock, and inherited the same primitive ideas about religion and government, those ideas must have been modified in the course of centuries of separate and independent development. The characteristics of the Latin race are said to have been its sense of the importance of discipline and the homage it paid to power and might ; those of the Sabines were their religious feeling and their reverence for the gods; the characteristic of the Etruscans was their subservience to forms and ceremonies in matters both divine and human. Corresponding influences are very manifest in the growth of Rome's early public institu- tions, civil, military, and religious. It does not seem too much to say that these same influences are traceable also in the institutions of the private law. The patria potestas, with the father's power of life and death over his children ; the manus and the husband's power over his wife; the doctrine that those things chiefly was a man entitled to call his own which he had taken by the strength of his arm; the right which a creditor had of apprehending and imprisoning his defaulting debtor and reducing him to slavery,—all these seem to point to a persuasion that might made right. The religious marriage ceremony and the recognition of the wife as mistress of the household and participant in

its sacred offices as well as its domestic cares; the family council of kinsmen, maternal as well as paternal, who advised the paterfamilias in the exercise of the domestic jurisdiction; the practice of adoption, to obviate the extinction of a family and to prevent its de- ceased members being deprived of the prayers and sacri- fices necessary for the repose of their souls,—these seem to have flowed from a different order of ideas and to bear evidence of Sabine descent. Etruscan influence could make itself felt only at a later date; but to it may pos- sibly be attributed the strict regard, that came to be required to the observance of ceremonials and words of style in the more important transactions both of public and private life.

While it can hardly be doubted that the result of the union of Latins and Sabines was that regulations were at once adopted which should apply to their public life as a united people, it is not only conceivable but probable that each tribe, as regarded the private relations of its members, continued for a time to accord a preference to its own ideas and traditions of right and law, and that the amal- gamation was a gradual process, partly silent, partly due to regal or pontifical intervention. .

Patri- Patricians, Clients, and Plebeians.—There was part of cians. the law of Rome that even in the empire was known by the name of Jus Quiritium, the Law of the Spearmen ; and this in the regal period constituted its main element. The Quwirites were the members of the gentile houses, organized in their curies, primarily for military and secondarily for political purposes. They alone of the rapidly increasing population settled round the urbs quad- rata ranked as citizens, down at least to the time of Servius Tullius. They alone could consult the gods through the medium of auspicia, and participate in the services offered to the tutelary deities of Rome. From

their number the king drew his council of elders, and they alone could take part in the curiate comitia, the assembly of the warriors. They alone could contract a lawful marriage and make a testament; in a word, it was they alone that were entitled directly to the benefit of Rome's peculiar institutions.

These prerogatives they enjoyed as members of the gentile houses. Patrician Rome was a federation of gentes or clans, the, clans aggregations of families bearing a common name, and theoretically at least tracing their descent from a common ancestor. Whether or not the traditional account of the numerical proportion of families to clans and of clans to curies has any substantial historical foundation, and whatever may be the explanation of the method by which the symmetry on which the old writers dwell with so much complacency was attained, it is beyond doubt that the gentile organization was common to the two races at least that contributed most largely to the citizenship of Rome, and that it was made the basis of the new arrangements. Federation necessitated the appoint- ment of a common chieftain and common institutions, religious, military, political, and judicial. But it was long before these displaced entirely the separate institutions of the federated gentes. Every clan had its own cult, peculiar to its own members; this was the universal bond of association in those early times. It had its common pro- perty and its common burial-place. It must have had some common council or assembly, for we read not only of special gentile customs but of gentile statutes and decrees. Instances are on record of wars waged by indi- vidual gentes ; so they must have had the right to require military service alike from their gentiles and gentilici. Widows and orphans of deceased clansmen were under the guardianship of the gens, or of some particular member of it to whom the trust was specially confided. If a clans- man left no heirs, his property passed to his fellow gentiles. Over the morals of its members the gens exercised super- vision and discipline, interfering to prevent prodigality and improvidence, restraining abuses of the domestic authority, and visiting with censure and probably in grave cases with punishment any breach of faith or other dis- honourable conduct; and it is difficult to suppose that, within its own limits, it was not constantly called upon, through the medium of its chief, to act the part of peace-maker and arbiter. Finally, its members were always entitled to rely upon its assistance, to have maintenance when indigent, to be ransomed from captivity, to be upheld in their just disputes and quarrels, and to be avenged when killed or injured.

The successes of the burgesses in one petty war after Clients.

another deprived many small communities of their inde- pendent existence, leaving their members bereft alike of their religion, their territory, and their means of subsist- ence. These had to turn elsewhere for protection, and in large numbers they sought it from their conquerors. To many others, both voluntary immigrants and refugees from other cities, the new settlement proved a centre of attrac- tion. It was quite ready to receive them, but as subjects only, not as citizens. Following a custom familiar to both Latins and Sabines, the new-comers invoked the protection of the heads of patrician families of repute, to whom they attached themselves as free vassals. The relationship was known as that of patron and client. (See PaTRoN AND Cii1enT, vol. xviii. p. 412.) The client became a dependent member of his patron's clan,—not gentilis, however, but only gentilicius. His patron had to provide him with all that was necessary for his sustenance and that of his wife

Ple- beians.

Fas.

670

and children ; and, as private holdings increased in extent, it was not unusual for the patron or his gens to give him during pleasure a plot of land to cultivate for himself. The patron had, moreover, to assist him in his transactions with third parties, obtain redress for him for his injuries, and represent him before the tribunals when he became involved in litigation. The client, on the other hand, had to maintain his patron's interests by every means in his power. But the advantage must have been chiefly on the side of the client, who, without becoming a citizen, obtained directly the protection of his patron and his clan, and indirectly that of the state.

The plebeians, as distinguished from the clients, must be regarded as a heterogeneous mass of non-gentile freemen, small probably in numbers at first, but augmenting with ever greater rapidity, who had of choice or compulsion

made Rome their domicile, but declined to subject them-

selves toa patron. That there was any general cohesion amongst them before the time of Servius there is not the slightest reason to believe. They were of different races,

settling in Rome from different motives, practising in many

matters different customs. The bulk of them, however, were undoubtedly Latins, with traditions and customs much the same as those of the greater number of the patrician houses ; and this it was that in time caused the triumph of Latinism and the predominance of the master- ful spirit in the jus Quiritium. But by the ruling caste those traditions and customs were simply ignored ; till the time of Servius what protection the plebeians got was simply of the grace of the kings, whose policy it was to conciliate them as a body that in time might be a valuable auxiliary against the pretensions of the patricians.

The Regulatives of Public and Private Order.—We look in vain for, and it would be absurd to expect, any definite system of law in those early times. What passed for it was a composite of fas, jus, and boni mores, whose several limits and characteristics it is extremely difficult to define. This may to some extent be accounted for by the fact that much of what was originally within the domain of Sas, once it had come to be enforced by secular tribunals, and thus had the sanction of human authority, was no longer distinguishable from jus; while it may be that others of its behests, once pontifical punishments for their contraven- tion had gone into desuetude, sank to nothing higher than precepts of bone mores.

By jas was understood the will of the gods, the laws given by heaven for men on earth, much of it regulative of ceremonial, but a by no means insignificant part em- bodying rules of conduct. It appears to have had a wider range than jus. There were few of its commands, prohibi- tions, or precepts that were addressed to men as citizens of any particular state ; all mankind came within its scope. Jt forbade that a war should be undertaken without the prescribed fetial ceremonial, and required that faith should be kept even with an enemy when a promise had been made to him under sanction of an oath. It enjoined hospitality to foreigners, because the Stranger guest was presumed, equally with his entertainer, to be an object of solicitude to a higher power. It punished murder, for it was

the taking of a god-given life; the sale of a wife by her husband, for she had become his partner in all things human and divine; the lifting of a hand against a parent, for it was subversive of the first bond of society and reli- gion,—the reverence due by a child to those to whom he owed his existence ; incestuous connexions, for they defiled the altar ; the false oath and the broken vow, for they were an insult to the divinities invoked ; the displacement of a boundary or a landmark, not so much because the act was provocative of feud, as because the march-stone itself, as the guarantee of peaceful neighbourhood, was under the

Jaus of the Vedas, and the jaes of the Zend-Avesta,

guardianship of the gods. When an offence against any of these rules or prohibitions was inexpiable, the punish- ment was usually what is called sacratio capitis, excom- munication and outlawry of the offender. The homo sacer was in every sense of the word an outcast,—one with whom it was pollution to associate, who dared take no part in any of the institutions of the state, civil or reli- gious, whose life the gods would not accept as a sacrifice, but whom, nevertheless, any one might put to death with impunity as no longer god-protected. The precepts of the jas therefore were not mere exhortations to a blameless life, but closely approached to laws, whose violation was visited with punishments none the less effective that they were religious rather than civil.

Recent philology derives the word jus from the Sanscrit Jus. Ju, to "join, bind, or unite," from which some deduce as its

signification "that which binds," "the bond of society," others "that which is regular, orderly, or fitting." The latest inquirer (M. Bréal) identifies it with the jos, jaos, or words whose exact meaning is controverted, but which he inter- prets as "the divine will." Jubeo is generally allowed to be a contraction of jus hibeo, "hold or take as jus." Tf Bréal's definition can be adopted we obtain a very significant inter- pretation of the words addressed by the presiding magistrate to the

assembled comitia in asking them whether they assented to a law proposed by him,—Velatis, jubeatis, Quirites, &e., "Is it your pleasure, Quirites, and do you hold it as the divine will, that," and so on. As legislation by the comitia of the curies and centuries was regarded as a divine office, and their vote might be nullified by the fathers on the ground that there had been a defect in the auspicia, and the will of the gods consequently not clearly ascertained, this explanation of Bréal's seems not without support,—voxr populi vox dei. If it be right, then the only difference between fas and jus was that the will of the gods, which both embodied, was in the one declared by inspired and in the other by merely human agency.

This jus might be the result either of traditional and inveterate custom (jus moribus constitutwm) or of statute (lex). We look in vain for any legislative enactment establishing such an institution, for example, as the patria potestas, or fixing the rules of succession on death. Statute may have regulated some of their details ; but they had taken shape and consistency before Rome had its beginning. It can well be believed, however, that in the outset the customs in observance may have been far from uniform, that not only those of the different races but those also of the different gentes may at first have varied in some respects, but undergoing a gradual approximation, and in course of time consolidating into a general jus Quritium. That the bulk of the law was customary is universally admitted. But Pomponius speaks of certain laws enacted by the comitia of the curies, which he calls leges regiae and which, he says, were collected by one Sext. Papirius in the reign of one of the Tarquins, under the name of Jus Papirianum. The opinion of the best autho- rities is that it is a mistake to attribute these so-called "royal laws" to that assembly. According to the testi- mony of the old writers it had very little share in the work

1 There is controversy about the etymology of the word lex. It was used by the jurists in two distinct senses—(1) as meaning a comi< tial enactment (Gai., i. 3), and hence was occasionally called lex publica (Gai., ii. 104, iii. 174) ; (2) as meaning an obligation, restriction, con- dition, declaration, or what not, expressly incorporated in a private deed (lex privata), as in the phrases lex mancipit, lex contractus, lex testamenti, &c.

Its most likely derivation is from Aéyerv, "to say" or "'to speak." The lex publica was always put to the comitia by word of mouth; and the XII. Tables, in declaring the binding effect of a lex privata when grafted on a conveyance or contract per aes et

Libram, use in reference to it the phrase uti lingua nuncupassit (Festus, s.v. Nuncupata; Bruns, Fontes Jur, rom. antiqui, p. 23).

Boni mores.

Quiri- tian family.

REGAL PERIOD. |

of legislation. Romulus jura dedit at his own hand, not jura tulit. Mommsen is probably near the mark when he describes the leges regiae as mostly rules of the fas which were of interest not merely for the pontiffs but for the public, with which it was of importance that the latter should be acquainted, that they might know the risks they incurred from their contravention.! It is not to be assumed that there was no legislation beyond this; some of the laws of which we have record were of a different character. But on the whole it seems beyond doubt that it was custom rather than statute that was the main factor of the jus of the regal period.

What went by the name of bone mores, quite distinct from the jus mortbus constitutum, must also be regarded as one of the regulatives of public and private order. Part of what fell within their sphere might also be ex- pressly regulated by fas or jus; but there was much that was only gradually brought within the domain of these last, and even down to the end of the republic not a little that remained solely under the guardianship of the family tribunal or the censor's regimen morum. Its function was twofold: sometimes it operated in restraint of law by con- demning—though it could not prevent—the ruthless and unnecessary exercise of legal right, as, for example, that of the head of a house over his dependants; and sometimes it operated supplementarily, by requiring observance of duties that could not be enforced by any compulsitor of law. Dutiful service, respect, and obedience from inferiors to superiors, chastity, and fidelity to engagements, express or implied (ides), were

among the officca that were thus inculcated, and whose neglect or contravention not only affected the reputation but often entailed punishments and disabilities, social, political, or religious. It was the duty of those in authority to enforce their observance by such animadversio as they thought proper,—the paterfamilias in his family, the gens among its members, the king in relation to the citizens generally ; and many a wrong was prevented not by the fear of having to make reparation to the party injured but by the dread of the penalties that would follow conduct unbecoming an upright citizen.

The Quiritian Family.—The word familia in Roman law had at once a more extensive and a more limited meaning than it has in its English form.? Husband, wife, and children did not necessarily constitute an independent family among the Romans, nor were they all necessarily of the same one. Those formed a family who were all subject to the right or power—originally manus,? but latterly jus—of the same family head (paterfamilias). He might have a whole host dependent on him,—wife and sons and daughters, and daughters-in-law, and grand-

1 The most recent and comprehensive treatise on the subject of the Royal Laws, which also contains references to the earlier literature, is that of Voigt, Ueber die Leges Regiae, Leipsic, 1876, 1877 (republished from the Transactions of the Saxon Academy). A collection of them from Livy, Dionysius, Plutarch, Servius, Macrobius, &c., will be found in Bruns, p. 1 sg. Of the Jus Papirianum referred to by Pomponius no remains are extant; but Paul (Dig. 1. 16, fr. 144) mentions inci- dentally that it was commented on by one Granius Flaccus, who was of the time of Julius Cesar.

2 Familia and " family" are used in this section solely to designate the group of persons subject to the same paterfamilias. Occasionally the word meant (1) a gens (or group of families in the stricter sense) ; or (2) the family estate proper, as in the provisions of the XII. Tables about succession—dadgnatus proximus familiam habeto; or (3) the family slaves collectively, as in the phrases fumilia urbana, familia rustica.

3 This word manus, though in progress of time used chiefly to express the power a husband had over the wife who had become a member of his

family, was originally the generic term for all the rights exercised not only over the things belonging but also the persons subject to the head of the house; for a slave when enfranchised was said to be " manumitted,'? and the same phrase was also employed occasionally to express the condition of a jiliusfamilias released from the potestas, although " emancipated" was the usual one.

ROWAN FA W

ort

children by his sons, and possibly remoter descendants related through males; so long as they remained subject to him they constituted but one family, that was split up only on his death or loss of citizenship. But if his wife had not passed in manum—and that was common enough even during the republic, and universal in the later empire —she did not become a member of his family: she re- mained a member of the family in which she was born, or, if its head was deceased or she had been emancipated, was the sole member of a family of her own. Both sons and daughters on emancipation ceased to be of the family of the paterfamilias who had emancipated them.

With the early Romans, as with the Hindus and the Marriage.

Greeks, marriage was a religious duty a man owed alike to his ancestors and to himself. Believing that the happi- ness of the dead in another world depended on their proper burial and on the periodical renewal by their descendants of prayers and feasts and offerings for the repose of their souls, it was incumbent upon him above all things to per- petuate his race and his family cult. In taking to him- self a wife, he was about to detach her from her father's house and make her a partner of his family mysteries. With the patrician at least this was to be done only with divine approval, ascertained by auspicia. His choice was limited to a woman with whom he had conubiwm (ervyapia) or right of intermarriage. 'This was a matter of state arrangement ; and in the regal period Roman citizens could have it outside their own bounds only with menibers of states with which they were in alliance, and with which they were connected by the bond of common religious observances. A patrician citizen, therefore, if

his marriage was to be reckoned lawful (justae nuptiae), had to wed either a fellow-patrician or a woman who was a member of an allied community. The ceremony was a religious one, conducted by the high priests of the state, in presence of ten witnesses, representatives probably of the ten curies of the bridegroom's tribe, and was known as confarreatio. Its effect was to dissociate the wife entirely from her father's house and to make her a member of her husband's ; for confarreate marriage involved what was called in manum conventio, the passage of the wife into her husband's "hand" or power, provided he was himself paterfamilias ; if he was not, then, though nominally in his hand, she was really subject like-him to his family head. Any property she had of her own—which was a possible state of matters only if she had been independent before marriage—passed to him as a matter of course; if she had none, her pater- familias provided her a dowry (dos), which shared the same fate. Whatever she acquired by her industry or otherwise while the marriage lasted also as a matter of course fell to her husband. In fact, so far as her patri- monial interests were concerned, she was in much the same position as her children ; and on her husband's death she had a share with them in his inheritance as if she had been one of his daughters. In other respects manus conferred more limited rights than patria potestas; for Romulus is said to have ordained that, if a man put away his wife except for adultery or one of two or three other very grave offences, he forfeited his estate half to her and half to Ceres, while if he sold her he was to be given over to the infernal gods.

The patria potestas was the name given to the power Patria exercised by a father, or by his paterfamilias if he was potestas.

himself in potestate, over the issue of such justae nuptiae.

Adroga- tion and adoption.

672

The Roman jurists boasted that it was a right enjoyed by none but Roman citizens; and it certainly was peculiar to them in this sense, that nowhere else, except among the Latin race from which they had sprung, did the paternal power attain such an intensity. The omnipotence of the

puterfamilias and the condition of utter subjection to him of his children im potestate became greatly modified under the empire ; but originally the children, though in public life on an equality with the house father, in private life, and so long as the potestas lasted, were subordinated to him to such an extent as, according to the letter of the law, to be in his hands little better than his slaves. They could have nothing of their own: all they earned was his ; and, though it was quite common when they grew up for him to give them peculia, "cattle of their own," to manage for their own benefit, these were only de facto theirs, but de jure his. For offences committed by them outside the family circle, for which he was not prepared to make amends, he had to surrender them to the injured party, just like slaves or animals that had done mischief. If his right to them was disputed he used the same action for its vindication that he employed for asserting his owner- ship of his field or his house: if they were stolen, he pro- ceeded against the thief by an ordinary action of theft ; if for any reason he had to transfer them to a third party, it was by the same form of conveyance that he used for the transfer of things inanimate. Nor was this all; for, according to the old formula recited in that sort of adop- tion known as adrogation, he had over them the power of life and death, jus vitae necisque. This power was subject to certain restrictions during the infancy of a child; but, when he had grown up, his father, in the exercise of his domestic jurisdiction, might visit his mis- conduct, not only in private but in public life, with such punishment as he thought fit, even banishment, slavery, or death.

It might happen that a marriage was fruitless, or that a man saw all his sons go to the grave before him, and that the paterfamilias had thus to face the prospect of the extinction of his family and of his own descent to the tomb without posterity to make him blessed. To obviate so dire a misfortune he resorted to the practice of adop- tion, so common in India and Greece. If it was a pater-

familias that he adopted the process was called adroga-

tion (adrogatio) ; if it was a filiusfamilias it was simply adoptio. The latter, unknown probably in the earlier regal period, was a somewhat coniplicated conveyance of a son by his natural parent to his adopter, the

purpose of course being expressed ; its effect was simply to transfer the child from the one family to the other. But the former was much more serious, for it involved the extinction of one family! that another might be perpetuated. It was therefore an affair of state. It had to be approved by the pontiffs, who probably had, to satisfy themselves that there were brothers enough of the adrogatee to attend to the interests of the ancestors whose cult he was renouncing ; and on their favourable report it had to be sanctioned by a vote of the curies, as it involved the deprivation of his gens of their possible right of succession to him. The result was that the adrogatus, from being himself the head of a house, sank to the position of a jfiliusfamilias in the house of his adopting parent ; if he had had wife or child- ren subject to him, they passed with him into his new family, and so did everything that belonged to him and that was capable of transmission from one person to another, The adopting parent acquired potestas and power of life and death over the adopted child exactly as if he were the issue of his body ; while the latter enjoyed in his

u A paterfanvilias who had no person subject to him constituted a "family" in his own person.

new family the same rights exactly that he would have had if he had been born in it.

The manus and the patria potestas represent the master- Domestic

ful aspects of the patrician's domestic establishment. conjugal and parental ones, however, though not so pro- minent in the pages of the jurists, are not to be lost sight of. The Roman family in the early history of the law was governed as much by fasas by jus. It was an associa- tion hallowed by religion, and held together not by might merely but by conjugal affection, parental piety, and filial reverence. The purpose of marriage was to rear sons who might perpetuate the house and the family sacra. In entering into the relationship the wife renounced her rights and privileges as a member of her father's house; but it was that she might

enter into a lifelong partnership with her husband, and be associated with him in all his family interests, sacred and civil. The husband was priest in the family, but wife and children alike assisted in its prayers, and took part in the sacrifices to its lares and penates. As the Greek called his wife the house-mistress, Seo7ouwva, so did the Roman speak of his as materfamilias,? the house-mother. She was treated as her husband's equal. As for their children, the potestas was so tempered by the natural sense of parental duty on the one side and filial affection on the other that in daily life it was rarely felt as a grievance; while the risk of an arbitrary exercise of the domestic jurisdiction, whether in the heat of passion or under the impulse of justifiable resentment, was guarded against by the rule which required the paterfamilias to consult in the first place the near kinsmen of his child, maternal as well as paternal. Even the incapacity of the subject members of the family to hold property of their own cannot in those times have been regarded as any serious hardship ; for, though the legal title to all their acquisitions was in the house-father, yet in truth they were acquired for and belonged to the family as'a whole, and he was but a trustee to hold and administer them for the common benefit.

In Greece the patria potestas never reached sucli dimensions as in Rome, and there it ceased, de facto at least, when a son had grown up to manhood and started a household of his own. But in Rome, unless the pater- Jamilias voluntarily put an end to it, it lasted as long as the latter lived and retained his status. The marriage of a son, unlike that of a daughter passing into the hand of a husband, did not release him from it, nor did his children become subject to him so long as he himself was in potestate. On the contrary, his wife passed on marriage into tle power of her father-in-law, and their children as they were born fell under that of their paternal grand- father ; and the latter was entitled to exercise over his daughters-in-law and grandchildren the same rights he had over his sons and unmarried daughters. But there was this difference, that, when the paterfamilias died, his sons and daughters who had remained in potestate and his grandchildren by a predeceased son instantly became their own masters (su juris), whereas grandchildren by a surviving son simply passed from the potestas of their grandfather into that of their father.

Itg relations,

The acquisition of domestic independence by the death Guard- of the family head frequently involved the substitution of i@nship

the guardianship of tutors (tutela) for the potestas that °

had come to an end. This was so invariably in the case of females sui juris, no matter what their age: they remained under guardianship until they had passed by marriage in manum mari. It was only pupil males, however, who re- quired tutors, and their office came to an end when puberty

2 Materfamilias is used in the texts in two distinct senses, —(1) as

a woman sui juris, t.e., not subject to any family head, and (2) as a wife in manu maritt.

f tutors,

REGAL PERIOD. |

was attained. It is doubtful whether during the regal period a testamentary appointment of tutors by a husband or parent to wife or children was known in practice,— probably not. If so the office devolved upon the gens to which the deceased paterfamilias belonged ; and it may

Eee it AN I AW

673

however, were not the property of their occupant ; it was the lands acquired by assignation or purchase that were alone regarded as his ex jure Quiritiwm,—what he held in independent ownership to him and his heirs according to the law and custom of the Quirites.

reasonably be assumed that it delegated the duties to one of its members in particular, retaining in its collective capacity a right of supervision.

There are some who maintain that in the regal period, Property anterior to the reign of Servius Tullius, there was no pri-i2 mov- vate property in movables. The proposition thus broadly ables.

Quiri- The Quritian Law of Property.—The distribution of | stated is manifestly untenable. If no more be meant by tiaulaw Jand amongst the early Romans is one of the puzzling | it than this, that movables were not then recognized as – problems of their history. The Servian constitution classi- | objects of quiritarian right that could be vindicated as in land, fied the citizens and determined their privileges, duties, | such by a real action per sacramentum, it may be ad-

and burdens according to the extent of their freeholds ; and yet we know very little with certainty of the way in which these were acquired.!. We have indeed a traditional account of a partition by Romulus of the little territory of his original settlement into three parts, not necessarily of equal dimensions, one of which was intended for the maintenance of the state and its institutions, civil and religious, the second (ager publicus) for the use of the citizens and profit of the state, and the third (ager privatus) for subdivision among his followers. Varro and Pliny further relate that to each of them he assigned a home- stead (heredium) of two jugers, equal to about an acre

mitted that down to the time of Servius, with exception perhaps of captured slaves and cattle, there was no pro- perty in movables. But, if it be meant to negative the right of a man to alienate by tradition what he held as his own, and to protect himself, or have protection from the authorities, against any attempt to deprive him of it by theft or violence, then the non-existence of ownership of movables must be emphatically denied. Theft was theft, though the stolen article had been acquired only by natural means,—by barter in the market, by the industry of the maker, or as the product of something already be- longing to its holder.

The Quiritian Law of Succession.—The legal order of Quiri- succession in the regal period was extremely simple. It tian law was this: on the death of a paterfamilias his patrimony ke

and a quarter, to be held by him and his heirs (quae here- dem sequerentur),—Pliny adding that to none did the king

give more. There can be no doubt that a portion of the territory, gradually augmented through new conquests, was reserved as ager publicus ; that is sufficiently attested by the complaints made for centuries by the plebeians of its monopolization by the patricians. But it is impossible to admit the accuracy of the account of the mode in which the ager privatus was dealt with. The fact that the majority of the Servian local tribes bore the names of well-known patrician gentes leads to the conclusion that many at least of the clans held tracts of land in their corporate capacity, and. that their constituent families settled alongside each other, each with its own homestead in separate and independent right. It can hardly be assumed, however, that two and a half jugers was its maximum. Seven jugers, about 44 acres, seems to have been the normal extent of royal grants to plebeians, and a patrician's freehold is not likely to have been less ; probably in the ordinary case it was larger, seeing the ininimum qualification for the third Servian class was ten jugers, and for the first twenty.? To enable him to make grants during pleasure to his clients he must have held more than seven. But he did not necessarily hold all his lands by gratuitous assignation either from the state or from his gens; purchase from the former was by no means uncommon ; and it may have been on his purchased lands, outside his herediwm proper, that his clients were usually employed. 'Those dependants were also employed in large numbers upon those parts of the ager publicus which were occupied by the patricians under the name of possesscones,

and which really were the source of their wealth. These,

1 See Giraud, Recherches sur le droit de propriété chez les Romains, Aix, 1838 (only first vol. published) ; Macé, LWistoire de la propriété, du domaine public, et des lois agraires chez les Romains, Paris, 1851 ; Hildebrand, De antiquissinae agris Romani distributionis fide, Jena, 1862; Voigt, " Ueber die bina jugera d. iltesten rom. Agrarverfass- ung," in Rhein. Mus. f. Phil., vol. xxiv. (1869), p. 52 sq., the opinions in which are somewhat modified in his XZ/. Tafein, Leipsic, 1883, vol. i. § 102; Karlowa, Rém. Rechtsgeschiehte, Leipsic, 1885, vol. i. § 15.

2 At the same time the writers of the empire frequently refer to the early herediwm of seven jugers as having been amply sufficient for its frugal owner, content to till it himself with the aid of his sons. The case of Cincinnatus in the year 293 v.c. is often mentioned : having a freehold of just that extent, he had to sell three jugers , to meet engagements for which he believed himself in honour respon- sible, and yet found the remaining four ample enough to maintain him with all the dignity of a man who had been consul and who be- came dictator.

devolved upon those of his children in potestate who by that event became sw juris, his widow taking an equal share with them, and no distinction being made between movables and immovables, personalty and realty; and, failing widow and children, it went to his gens. The notion that between the descendants and the gens came an intermediate class under the name of agnates does not seem well founded as regards the regal period ; they were introduced by the XII. Tables to meet the case of the plebeians, who, having no gentes, were without legal heirs in default of children.®

The later jurists more than once refer to the perfect equality of the sexes in the matter of succession in the ancient law. But it was more nominal than real. A daughter who had passed into the hand of a husband during her father's lifetime of course could have no share in the latter's inheritance, for she had ceased to be a member of his family. One who was én potestate at his death, and thereby became swt juris, did become his heir, unless he had pre- vented such a result by testamentary arrangements. But even then it was in the hands of the gens to prevent risk of prejudice to themselves: for she could not marry, and so carry her fortune into another family, without their consent as her guardians ; neither could she without their consent alienate any of the more valuable items of it; nor, even with their consent, could she make a testament disposing of it in prospect of death. Her inheritance, therefore, was hers in name only ; in reality it was in the hands of her guardians.*

Of primogeniture or legal preference of one member of the family over the others there is not the faintest trace. And yet we find record of hercdia remaining in a family not for generations merely but for centuries,—a

state of matters that would have been im- possible had every death of a paterfamilias necessarily involved a splitting up of the family estate. It is conceivable that this was sometimes prevented by arrangement amongst the heirs themselves ;

3 It is quite true, however, that from the first the order of suc- cession was agnatic; for it was those only of a man's children who were agnate as well as cognate that had any claim to his inheritance ; – and the gens was, theoretically at least, just a body of agnates. The supposed mention of agnates in a law attributed to Numa rests sim- ply on a conjecture of LG. Huschke's (Analecta litteraria, Leipsic, 1826, p. 375). The law, which is preserved in narrative by Servius, In Virg. Eclog.,iv. 43, runs thus: "In Numae legibus cautum est, ut si quis imprudens occidisset hominem, pro capite occisi ct natis ejus in cautione (Scalig., concione) offerret arietem."' Huschke's substitu- tion of agnatis for et natis is all but universally adopted ; but, even were it necessary, it need mean nothing more than his children 17 potestate or his gens.

4 The Voconian law of 585 v.c. avowedly introduced something new in prohibiting a man of fortune from instituting a woman, even his only daughter, as his testamentary heir; but even it did not touch the law of intestacy.

and the practice of every now and then drafting the younger mem- bers of families to colonies diminished the number of those who had a claim to participate. But the simplest plan of avoiding the difficulty was for the paterfamilias to regulate his succession by testament ; and there can be little doubt that originally such a deed was had recourse to, not so much for instituting a stranger heir when a man had no issue—according to patrician notions his duty then was to perpetuate his family by adopting a

son—as for partitioning the succession when he had more children than one.

There were two sorts of testaments made use of by the patricians of the regal period,—that made in the comitia of the curies (test. calates comitiis) and that made in the presence of a few comrades on the eve of battle (test. in procinctu factum). The first at least—and the second was just a substitute for it on an emergency—was far from being an independent exercise of the testator's voluntas. For, though in course of time, and under the sanction of the ute legassit ita jus esto of the XII. Tables, the curies may have become merely the recipients of the oral declara- tion by the testator of his last will, in order that they might testify to it after his death, it is impossible not to see in the comitial testament what must originally have been a legislative act, whereby the testator's peers, for reasons which they and the presiding pontiffs thought sufficient, sanctioned in the particular case a departure from the ordinary rules of succession. The pontiffs were there to protect the interests of religion, and the curies to protect those of the testator's gens; and it is hardly con- ceivable that a testament could have been sanctioned by them which so far set at nought old traditions as to deprive a jilvusfamilias of his birthright, at least in favour of a stranger.

Famaly, Property, and Succession amongst the Plebeians. —If perfect identity of law and custom cannot be assumed to have existed amongst the patricians in the earliest years of Rome, far less can it be supposed to have existed amongst the heterogeneous population that constituted the plebs. A large proportion of them, it is true, were of Latin descent, to whom gentile institutions and the manus and the patria potestas of the family were nothing strange; but alongside of them were other tribes that Rome had vanquished, who had very different traditions, and some of whom, as is thought by one or two writers of note, laid more store on female kinship than on that through males. From the moment that any of the former became part of the Roman plebs everything like gentile organiza- tion was of course suppressed ; public policy could not suffer the continuance of what might have proved an element of danger to the state. The inevitable consequence was a disturbance of the whole family system. Having no longer any clansmen to stand by them in emergencies,

to avenge their quarrels and deaths, and to act as guardians of their widows and orphans, the plebeians of Latin origin seem to have drawn closer in their ideas to their fellows of Etruscan and Hellenic descent, and to have transferred their regards to the circle of their relatives by blood and marriage (cognati et adfines). It is remarkable that, not- withstanding the pre-eminence given to agnates by the AIT. Tables in matters of tutory and succession, the law reserved to the cognates, as distinguished from the agnates, certain rights and duties that in patrician Rome must have belonged to the gens,—tfor example, the duty of prosecut- ing the murderer (originally of avenging the death) of a kinsman, and the right of appeal against a capital sen- tence pronounced upon a kinsman. This can only have been because in olden times, when agnation was unknown as distinet from the gens, it was plebeian practice to entrust those rights and duties to the sobrinal circle of cognates, 1

In the discussions on the Canuleian law in the year 309

? On this subject see Klenze,

Das Familienrecht der Cognaten und Afinen nach rém. u, verwandten

Kechten, Berlin, 1828,

ROMAN LAW

U.c. it suited the line of argument of patrician orators to decry plebeian unions as something not deserving of the name of nuptiae, and to stigmatize them as mere matri- monia,—relations entered into between men and women for the sake of making the latter mothers, but involving none of those features that characterized patrician mar- riage.? That there may have been laxity amongst many of the plebeians in their domestic relations is extremely probable. them, and coemption (as seems likely) was not yet in- vented, so that the only way of contracting a marriage

[REGAL PERIOD.

The ceremony of confarreation was denied to

that was open to them was simple interchange of consent, which was not legally creative of manus. Whether it was creative of patria potestas over the issue of the union may

be doubted. Some of the plebeians may have been of opinion that it did create it and may de facto have ex-

ercised the right it conferred, while others may have been indifferent as to whether it did or not; but we may be

very sure that the patricians denied its possibility, on

the ground that it was a prerogative of Roman citizens, amongst whom the plebeians had no claim to rank.

The accounts of the early distributions of land amongst Property,

the plebeians are even more uncertain than those we have of its distribution amongst the patricians. They had un- doubtedly become freeholders in large numbers before the Servian reforms. But they probably attained that position only by gradual stages. There are indications that their earliest grants from the kings in their character of royal clients (as Cicero calls them) were only during pleasure ; but latterly, as they increased in numbers and importance, they obtained concessions of heredia varying in extent from two to seven jugers. That those who had the means also frequently acquired land by purchase from the state may be taken for granted. In fact there is good reason to believe that by the time of Servius the plebeians were as free to hold land in private property as the patricians, although the stages by which they reached equality in this respect are uncertain and difficult to follow. As for movable property their rights in it were presumably the same as those of the patricians.

As regards the law of succession it may safely be assumed Succes- that by custom at all events the children of a plebeian usu- sion, wa ally took his estate on his death. But, as he was not athe ple. member of a gens, there was no provision for the devolu- peians, tion of his succession on failure of children. The want of them he could not supply by adrogation, as he had for long no access to the assembly of the curies ; and it is very doubtful if adoption of a jiliusfamilias was known before the reforms of Servius Tullius. The same cause that dis- quahfied him for adrogating a

paterfamilias disqualified him for making a testament calatis comitiis ; and even one in procinctu was impossible, since, although before the time of Servius plebeians may occasionally have served in the army, they were not citizens, and so had not the requisite capacity for making a testament. Until there- fore the XII. Tables introduced the succession of agnates a plebeian unsurvived by children was necessarily heirless,— that is to say, heirless in law. But custom seems to have looked without disfavour on the appropriation of his herediwm by an outsider : a brother or other near kinsman would have the earliest opportunity, and, if he maintained his possession of it in the character of heir for a reason- able period, fixed by the XII. Tables at a year, the law dealt with him as heir, and in course of time the pontiffs imposed upon him the duty of maintaining the family sacra. This was the origin, and a very innocent and laudable one, Re ee

? The same notion accounts for the grammatically untenable ex- planation of patricii in Liv., x. 8, § 10, "Qui patrem ciere possunt," t.€., patricians were father's sons, while plebeians, before they were admitted to citizenship and conubium, were only reckoned mother's sons,

Contract and its breach.

REGAL PERIOD. |

of the usucapio pro herede, which Gaius condemns as an incomprehensible and infamous institution, and which un- doubtedly lost some of its raison Wétre once the right of succession of agnates had been introduced.

Contract and its Breach.—To speak of a law of obliga- tions In connexion with the regal period, in the sense in which the words were understood in the later jurispru- dence, would be a misapplication of language. It would be going too far to say, however, as is sometimes done, that before the time of Servius Rome had no law of con- tract ; for men must have bought and sold, or at least bartered, from earliest times,—must have rented houses, hired labour, made loans, carried goods, and been parties to a variety of other transactions inevitable amongst a people engaged to any extent in pastoral, agricultural, or trading pursuits. It is true that a patrician family with a good establishment of clients and slaves had

within itself ample machinery for supplying its ordinary wants, and was thus to a great extent independent of outside aid. But there were not many such families ; and the plebeian farmers and the artisans of the guilds were in no such for- tunate position. There must therefore have been contracts and a law of contract ; but the latter was very imperfect. In barter—for at that time money was not yet in use—with instant exchange and delivery of one conmmodity against another, the transaction was complete at once without the creation of any obligation. But in other cases, such as those alluded to, one of the parties at least must have trusted to the good faith of the other. What was his guarantee, and what remedy had he for breach of engage- ment ?

His reliance in the first place was on the probity of the party with whom he was dealing,—on the latter's reverence for Fides, and the dread he had of the disapprobation of his fellows should he prove false, and of the penalties, social, religious, or pecuniary, that might consequently be imposed on him by his gens in the case of a patrician, by his guild in the case of a craftsman, or by the king in the case of any other plebeian.! If the party who had to rely on the other's good faith was not satisfied with his promise and the grasp of the right hand that was its seal, he might require his solemn oath (jusjuwrandum) ; and it can hardly be doubted that, whatever may have been the case at a later period, in the time of the earlier kings he who for- swore himself was amenable to pontifical discipline. If he preferred a more substantial guarantee, he took some- thing in pledge or pawn from the other contractor; and, though he had no legal title to it, and so could not recover it by judicial process if he lost possession, yet so long as he retained it he had in his own hand a de facto com- pulsitor to performance. Upon performance he could be forced to return it or suffer a penalty,—not by reason of obligation resulting from a contract of pledge, for the law as yet recognized none, but because, in retaining it after the purpose was served for which he had received it, he was committing theft and liable to its punishment. At this stage breach of contract, as such, does not seem to have legitimated any action for damages or reparation*

1 Such as debarment from gentile or guild privileges, exclusion from right of burial in the gentile or guild sepulchre, fines in the form of cattle

and sheep, &c. ;

2 Some of the old writers (e.g., Liv., i. 21, § 4, xxiii. 9, § 3; Plin., H.N., xi. 45; Serv., In Aen., iii. 687) say that the seat of Fides was in the right hand, and that to give it (promittere dextram,—is this the origin of the word "promise" ?) in making an engagement was empha- tically a pledge of faith. See a variety of texts illustrating the signifi- cance of the practice, and testifying to the regard paid to Fides before foreign influences and example had begun to corrupt men's probity and trustworthiness, in Lasaulx, Ueber d. Kid bei d. Romern, Wiirz- burg, 1844, p. 5 sg.; Danz, Der sacrale Schutz im roin. Rechtsver- kehr, Jena, 1857, pp. 189, 140; Pernice, ZLabeo, vol. ii., Halle, 1878, p. 408 sq.

before the civil tribunals; but it is not improbable that, where actual loss had been sustained, the injured party was permitted to resort immediately to self-redress by seizure of the wrongdoer or his goods. Such self-help was according to the spirit of the time,—not self-defence merely in presence of imminent danger, but active measures for redress of wrongs already completed.

Public and Private Offences and their Punishment.—For Offences anything like a clear line of demarcation between crimes, 24 their

offences, and civil injuries we look in vain in regal Rome. Offences against the state itself, such as trafficking with an enemy for its overthrow (proditio) or treasonable prac- tices at home (perduellio), were of course matter of state concern, prosecution, and punishment from the first. But in the case of those that primarily affected an individual or his estate there was a halting between, and to some extent a confusion of, the three systems of private venge- ance, sacral atonement, and public or private penalty.® It has been attempted to explain the coexistence of these systems by reference to the different temperaments of the races that constituted united Rome; and this certainly is a consideration that cannot be left out of view. But the same sequence is observable in the history of

the laws of other nations whose original elements were not so mixed, the later system gradually gaining ground upon the earlier and eventually overwhelming it. The remark- able thing in Rome is that private vengeance should so long not only have left its traces but really continued to be an active power. It must still have been an admitted right of the gens or kinsmen of a murdered man in the days of Numa; otherwise we should not have had that law of his providing that, where a homicide was due to misadventure, the offering to them of a ram should stay their hands. To avenge the death of a kinsman was more than a right: it was a religious duty, for his manes had to be appeased ; and so strongly was this idea enter- tained that, even long after the state had interfered and made murder a matter of public prosecution, a kinsman was so imperatively bound to set it in motion that if he failed he was not permitted to take anything of the inherit- ance of the deceased. Private vengeance was lawful too at the instance of a husband or father who surprised his wife or daughter in an act of adultery ; he might kill her and her paramour on the spot, though, if he allowed his wrath to cool, he could afterwards deal with her only judicially in his domestic tribunal. The talion we read of in the XII. Tables is also redolent of the wndicta privata, although practically it had become no more than a compulsitor to reparation. And even the nexal creditor's imprisonment of his defaulting debtor (infra, p. 694), which was not abolished until the fifth century of the city, may not unfittingly, in view of the cruelties that too often attended it, be said to have savoured more of private venge- ance than either punishment or procedure in reparation. Hxpiatio, supplicium, sacratio capitis, all suggest offences against the gods rather than against either an individual or the state. But it is difficult to draw the line between different classes of offences, and predicate of one that it was a sin, of another that it was a

crime, and ofa third that it was but civil injury done to an indi- vidual.4 They ran into each other in a way that is somewhat

3 See Abegg, De antiquissimo Romanorum jure criminali, Konigs- berg, 1823, p. 36 sg. ; Rein, Das Criminalrecht der Rémer, Leipsic, 1844, p. 24 sq. ; Clark, Karly Roman Law: Regal Period, London, 1872, p. 34 sq.

4 Voigt (XII. Tafeln, vol. i. p. 484) observes that the patrician looked upon every offence as committed at once against gods and men, and held that the punishment should be one that satisfied both ; hence the deo necart, sacratio capitis, and consecratio bonorum. The plebeians regarded its two moments as separable, and (as appears from the spirit of the XII. Tables) left it to the pontiffs to protect the gods, putting it on the state to protect itself by ordinary death punishment, addiction into slavery, declaration of tmprobitas or intestability, talion, and pecuniary penalties,

Bffect of

Servian reforms,

676 ROMAN LAW [REGAL PERIOD,

perplexing. Apparently the majority of those specially mentioned in the so-called deges regiae and other records of the regal period were regarded as violations of divine law, and the punishments appropriate to them determined upon that footing. Yet in many of them the prosecution was left to the state or to private indi- viduals. It is not clear, indeed, that there was any machinery for public prosecution except in treason and murder, —the former be- cause it was essentially a state offence, the latter because it was comparatively early deemed expedient to repress the blood-feud, which was apt to lead to deplorable results when friends and neighbours appeared to defend the alleged assassin.! ; on

Take some of those offences whose sanction was sacratio capitis. Breach of duty resulting from the fiduciary relation between patron and client, maltreatment of a parent by his child, exposure or kill- ing of a child by its father contrary to the Romulian rules, the ploughing up or removal of a boundary stone, the slaughter of a plough-ox,—all these were capital offences; the offender, by the formula sacer esto, was devoted to the infernal gods. Festus says that, although the rules of divine law did not allow that he should be offered as a sacrifice to the deity he had especially offended (nee Jas est eum immolari), yet he was so utterly beyond the pale of the law and its protection that any one might kil! him with impunity. But, as the saeratio was usually coupled with forfeiture of the offender's estate or part of it to religious uses, it is probable that steps were taken to

have the outlawry or excommunication judi- cially declared, though whether by the pontiffs, the king, or the curies docs not appear; such a declaration would, besides, relieve the private avenger of the incensed god of the chance of future questiou as to whether or not the citizen he had slain was sacer in the eye of the law.

That there must have been other wrongful acts that were regarded in early Rome as deserving of punishment or penalty of soine sort, besides those visited with death, sacratiou, or forfeiture of estate, total or partial, cannot be doubted ; no community has ever been so happy as to know nothing of thefts, robberies, and assaults, The XII. Tables containcd numerous provisions in reference to them ; but it is extremely probable that, down at least to the time of Servius Tullius, the manner of dealing with them rested on custom, and was in the main self-redress, restrained by the inter- vention of the king when it appeared to him that the injured party was going beyond the bounds of fair reprisal, and frequently bought off with a composition. When the offence was strictly within the family, the gens, and perhaps the guild, it was for those who exercised jurisdiction over those corporations to judge of the wrong and prescribe and enforce the penalty.

Lffect of the Servian Reforms on the Private Law.—The aim of the constitutional, military, and financial reforms of Servius Tullius was to promote an advance towards equality between patricians and plebeians. While it may be an open question whether the institution of the comitia of the centuries was of his doing, or only a result of his arrangements in after years, it seems clear that he had it in view to admit the plebeians to some at least of the privileges of citizenship, imposing on them at the same time a proportionate share of its duties and its burdens. Privileges, duties, and burdens were alike to be measured by the citizen's position as a freeholder; the amount of real estate with its appurtenances held by him on quiri- tarlan title was to determine the nature of the military service he was to render, the extent to which he was to be liable for tribute, and, assuming Servius to have con- templated the creation of a new assembly, the influence he was to exercise in it. .

To facilitate the execution of his scheme it was neces- sary to establish a register of the citizens (census), which should contain, in addition to a record of the strength of their families, a statement of the value of their lands and appurtenances, and which should be revised periodically. In order to ensure as far as possible certainty of title, and relieve the officials of troublesome investigations into the genumeness of every alleged change of ownership between two valuations, it was further declared—presumably by Servius—that no alleged transfer would be recognized which had not been effected publicly, with observance of certain prescribed solemnities, or else by surrender in

eo On murder (parrieidium) in regal Rome, see Osenbriiggen, Das altrdmische Paricidium, Kiel, 1841, and review by Dollmann in eee s Krit. Jahrbueh, vol. xi. (1842), p. 144 sg. ; Clark, op. eit., p. 41 sq.

court before the supreme magistrate. The form of con- : veyance thus introduced got the name of mancipium, and

at a later period mancipatio, while the lands and other

things that were to pass by it came to be known—whether from the first or not is of little moment—as res mancipi. Hence arose in the law of property a distinction of great importance, only abolished by Justinian more than a thousand years later, between ves mancipt, which were transferable in quiritarian right only by mancipation or surrender in court, and res nec mancipi, which were trans- ferable by simple delivery.

Mancipation is described by Gaius, but with particular reference Mancipa- to the conveyance of movable res mancipi, as a pretended sale in tion. presence of five citizens as witnesses and a libripens holding a pair of copper scales. The transferee, with one hand on the thing being transferred, and using certain words of style, declarcd it his by purchase with an as (which he held in his other hand) and the scales (hoe aere aeneaque libra) ; and simultaneously he struck the scales with the as, which he then handed to the transferrer as figurative of the price. The principal variation when it was an immovable that was being transferred was that the mancipation did not require to be on the spot: the land was simply described by its known name in the valuation roll. Although in the

time of Gaius only a fictitious sale—in fact the formal conveyance upon a relative contract—yet it was not always so. Its history is very simple. The use of the scales fixes its introduction to a time when coined money was not yet current, but raw copper nevertheless had become a standard of value and in a manner a medium of ex- change. That, however, was not in the first days of Rome. Then, and for a long time, values were estimated in cattle or sheep, fines were imposed in them, and the deposits in the legis aetio sacra- mento (infra, p. 681) took the same form. The use of copper as a Substitute for them in private transactions was probably derived from Etruria. But, being only raw metal or foreign coins, it could

be made available for loans or payments only when weighed in the

scales: it passed by weight, not by tale. 'There is no reason for ' supposing that the weighing was a solemuity, that it had any significance beyond its obvious purpose of enabling parties to ascer-

tain that a vendor or borrower was getting the amount of copper

for which he had bargained.

It was this practice of everyday life in private transactions that Servius adopted as the basis of his mancipatory conveyance, eu- grafting on it one or two new features intended to give it publicity and as it were state sanction, and thus render it more serviceable in the transfer of censuable property. Instead of the parties them- selves using the scales, an impartial balance-holder, probably an oflicial, was required to undertake the duty, and five citizens were required to attend as witnesses, who were to be the vouchers to the census officials of the regularity of the procedure. They are generally supposed to have been intended as representatives of the five classes iu which Servius had distributed the population, and thus virtually of the state; and the fact that, when the parties appealed to them for thcir testimony, they were addressed not as testes but as Quirites lends some colour to this view. Servius is also credited with the introduction of rectangular pieces of copper of different but carefully adjusted weights, stamped by his authority with various devices (aes signatwm), which are usually supposed to have been intended to take the place of the raw metal (aes rude) formerly in use, and so facilitate the process of weighing; but

there is more reason for thinking they were cast and stamped as standards to be put into oue scale, while the raw metal whose weight was to be ascertained was put into the other.

Instead, therefore, of being a fictitious sale, as Gaius describes it, : and asit became after the introduction of coined money early in the 4th century, the mancipiwm or mancipation, as regulated by Servius, was an actual completed sale in the strictest seuse of the term. What were the precise words of style addressed by the trans- feree to the transferrer, or what exactly the form of the ceremonial, we know not. But, as attendance during all the time that some thousands of pounds perhaps of copper were being weighed would have been an intolerable burden upon the five citizens convoked to discharge a public duty, it may be surmised that it carly became the practice to have the price weighed beforehand, and then to reweigh, or pretend to reweigh, before the witnesses only a single little bit of metal (rawduseulwm), which the transferee then handed to the transferrer as " the first pound and the last," and thus repre- sentative of the whole.2 Whatever may have been its form, how-

° The conjecture is suggested by the words of style in the solutio per aes et libram, Gai., iii. §§ 178, 174. There were some debts from which a man could be effectually discharged only by payment (latterly fictitious) by copper and scales in the presence of a libripens and the usual five witnesses. In the words addressed to the creditor by the debtor making payment these occurred—hane tibi libram primam

ever, its effect was instant exchange of property against a price weighed in the scales. The resulting obligation on the vendor to maintain the title of the vendee, and the qualifications that might be superinduced on the conveyance by agreement of parties—the so-called leges manetpiz—will be considered in connexion with the provisions of the XII. Tables on the subject (ifra, p. 690).

the lay writcrs, but these were matters of usage and fashion rather than of law, and it might be, aud often was, accompanied also with religious rites, which, however, were private, not public as iu confarreation. It is common, but not quite accurate, to speak of coemption as a form of marriage. It was strictly the acquisition of manus by the husband over his wife, and probably in most cases

Res The things included in the class of res mancipi were lands and | contemporaneous with the marriage ; but they were really distinct, mancipi. houses held on quiritarian title, together with rights of way and | the latter being completed simply by interchanged consent. That aqueduct, slaves, and domestic beasts of draught or burden (oxen, | this was so latterly at least is evident from two facts,—(1) that, horses, mules, and donkeys) ; all others were res nee maneipt. In | according to Gaius, the eoemptio might follow the marriage at any the time of Servius and during the greater part of the republic the | distance of time; and (2) that, according to the same authority, domain land (ager publiews) in Italy, until it was appropriated by | though the marriage was dissolved by divorce, the manus still private owners, was also reckoned as res nee mancipi ; like all | remained until put an end to by remancipation (on which the other things of the same class, it passed by simple delivery, where- | divorced wife was entitled to insist). as res mancipt could not be transferred in full ownership except It has also been cxplained that the plebeians were in a very Mortis by mancipation or surrender in court. Many theories have been | much worse position than the patricians in regard to their power of causa propounded to account for the distinction between these two classes | disposing of their estatcs in contemplation of death. Their eleva- convey- of things, and to explain the principle of selection that admitted | tion to the rank of citizens did not apparently give them admission ance per oxen and horses into the one, but relegated sheep and swine, ships | to the comitia of the curies; and, as it was many years after the aes et

and vehicles, to the other. But there is really little difficulty. Under the arrangement of Servius what was to determine the nature and extent of a citizen's political qualifications, military duties, and financial burdens was the value of his heredium (and other freeholds, if he had any), and

what may be called its appur- tenances—the slaves that worked for the household, the slaves and beasts of draught and burden that worked the farm, and the servi- tudes of way and water that ran with the latter. It may be that in course of time slaves without exception were dealt with as res mancipi,—without consideration, that is to say, whether they were employed on their owner's house or farm or on any part of the public lands in his occupancy—and reasonably, because they were often shifted from the one to the other. But the cattle a man depastured on the public meadows were no more res mancipi than his sheep. To say that the things classed as res maneipi were selected for that distinction by Servius because they were what were essential to a family engaged in agricultural pursuits would be to fall short of the truth. They constituted the familia in the sense of the family estate proper; whereas the herds and flocks, and in time everything clse belonging to the paterfamilias, fell under the denomination of peewnia. So the words are to be under- stood in the well-known phraseology of a testament, familia

assassination of Servius before the comitia of the centuries was con-libram.

vened, they had still no means of making testaments unless perhaps in the field on the eve of battle. So here again the expedient of mancipation was taken advantage of, not indeed to make a testa- ment instituting an heir, and to take effect only on the death of the testator, —the form of the transaction, as an instant acquisition in exchange for a price real or nominal, could not lend itself to that without statutory intervention—but to carry the transferrer's familia! to a friend, technically familiac emptor, on trust to let the former have the use of it while he survived,? and on his death to distribute according to his instructions whatever the transferee was not authorized to retain for himself. Like so mauy others of the transactions of the carly law, it was legally unprotected so far as the third parties were concerned whom the transferrer meant to benefit ; they had no action against the trustee to enforce the trust ; their sole guarantee was in his integrity and his respect for Fides. Dionysius credits Servius with the authorship of more than fifty enactments relative to contracts and crimes, which he says were sub- mitted to and approved by the assembly of the curics. The great majority of those so-called enactments

were probably nothing more than formularizations of customary law, for the use of the private judges in civil causes whom the king is said to have instituted.

peeuniague mea. There was one contract, however, notorious in after years under the Con- The public solemnity of mancipatio thus sanctioned as | uame of nexuwm, that manifestly was influenced, either directly or tract : ONGni 6 ‘ indirectly, by his legislation. In its normal estate it was a loan of per aes a mode of transferring ‘ eae a i eee 1 money, or rather of the raw copper that as yet was all that stood et libram.

*for which manus was probably as yet the only technical | for it: Whether before the time of Servius it was accompanied by descriptive word in use, was not long of being adapted to | any formalities beyond the weighing of it in a pair of scales (which other transactions in which manus of a different sort was he eae than Soo * ae te , ma what right it c __ ; ee conferred on the creditor over his debtor who failed to repay can ea be. Lig ers for Siete ibe ape panics ae only be mattcr of speculation. But there are indications that, in adoption of a jiliusfamalias, the contract of newwm, release | thc exercise of undefined self-help, defaulters were treated with con- of a nexal debtor, and that mortis causa alienation of his | siderable severity, being taken in satisfaction and put in chains by estate by a plebeian which in time developed into the testa- | their creditors ; for Servius is reported to have promised to pay ment per aes et Vien their debts himself in ps to obtain Ea release, and to pass ; xs be*

per aes et Servius, the matrimonial unions of the plebeians were not, in the

librani.

estimation of the patricians at least, regarded as lawful marriages (justae nuptiae), although amongst themselves they may have been held effectual and productive, if not of manus, at all events of patria potestas. For this there were two reasons: (1) not being citizens, they did not possess the preliminary qualification for justae nuptiae, namely, conubium; and (2) not being patricians, the only ceremony of marriage known to the law was incompetent to them. The first obstacle was removed by their admission

by Servius to the ordinary rights of citizenship, the second by the in- troduction of the civil ceremony of coemption. Once the efficacy of mancipation as a mode of acquiring manus over things was established, its adoption by the plebeians, now citizens enjoying conubium, as a method of acquiring manus over their wives was extremely natural. The scales, the Jibripens, and the five wit- nesses were all there; but, as there was no real price to be paid, the only copper that was needed was a single rawduseulum. The words recited in the ccremonial, unfortunately not preserved, were necessarily different from those in an ordinary mancipation, and, according to the testimony of a considerable number of ancient writers, and as the word co-emptio itself seems to indicate (though this is disputed by most modern civilians), the nominal purchase was mutual; the man acquired a materfamilias who was to bear him children and enable him to perpetuate his family, while she ac- quired a paterfamilias who was to maintain her while the marriage lasted, and in whose succession she was to share when a widow. It was accompanied with other observances described by many of

postremamque expendo ('I weight out to you this the first and the last pound"). The idea is manifestly archaic, and the words, taken strictly, are quite inappropriate to the transaction in the form it had assumed long before the time of Gaius.

his promise we are not informed ; but the second part of it was impracticable, since a debtor's failure to repay a loan was in most cases attributable to his insolvency and want of means with which to satisfy his creditor. So, apparently, Servius had to be content with regulating and ensuring the publicity of the contract, and making a creditor's right of self-redress by apprehension (manus injeetio) and confinement of his debtor conditional on the obser- vance of the prescribed formalities of the newwm. These were the weighing of the copper that was being advanced in a pair of scales held by an official /ibripvens ; the reweighing of a single piece in the presence of five citizen witnesses, and its delivery by the lender as representing the whole; and the simultaneous recital of certain words of style, which had the effect of imposing on the borrower an obligation to repay the loan, usually with interest, by a certain day.

‘The consequence of this, the earliest independent contract of the jus civile, is explained in p. 693.

Servian Amendments on the Course of Justice.—Of the course of justice in the regal period, whether in criminal or civil matters,

1 The familia was the collective name for a man’s heredium and other lands, with their slaves and other mancipable appurtenances —an aggregate of res mancipi, and therefore itself capable of mancipa- tion. ‘The conveyance was universal, z.¢., the items of the aggregate, even though movable, did not require to be conveyed separately or to be handled in conveying ; and apparently the peeunta was carried along with the familia as an accessory, at least if expressly mentioned.

2 Sir Henry Maine (Ancient Law, p. 206) is of opinion that, as a mancipation could not be subject to a limitation either of condition or time, there must have been not only instant but total divestiture of the transferrer, But that this was not necessarily the result is shown infra, p. 691.

Early course of justice.

678

before the time of Servius we know little that can be relied on. Antiquity used to speak of the king as having been generally supreme in both. But this can be accepted only with considerable reservation. For the paterfamilias, aided by a council in cases of importance, was judge within the family, —his jurisdiction some- times excluding that of the state, at other times concurring with it, and not to be stayed even by an acquittal pronounced by it. He alone was competent in any charge against a member of the family for a crime or offence against the domestic order,— adultcry or unchastity of wife or daughter, immorality of his sons, unduti- ful behaviour of children or clients; while there are instances on record of his interference judieially where an offence such as murder or theft had been committed by a member of his family against a stranger, and even when his crime had been treason against the state. Death, slavery, banishment, expulsion from the family, imprisonment, chains, stripes,

withdrawal of peculium, were all at his eommand as punishments; and it may readily be assumed that in imposing them he was freer to take account of moral guilt than an outside tribunal. The indications of criminal jurisdiction on the part of the gens are slight ; but its organization was such that it is impossible not to believe that it must occasionally have been called on to exercise such functions. And it must not be lost sight of that, as murder secms to have becn the only crime in regard to which private revenge was absolutely excluded, the judicial office of the kings must have been considerably lightened, public opinion approving and not condemning self-redvess so long as it was kept within the limits set by usage and custom.

The boundary between civil and criminal jurisdiction, if it ex- isted at all, was extremely shadowy. Theft and robbery, for ex- ample, if one may conclude from the position they held in the later jurisprudence, were regarded not as public but as private wrongs ; and yet when a thief was caught plying his trade by night he might be slain, and when taken in the act by day might be sold as a slave. But in both cases it may also be assumed that a practice,

. afterwards formally sanctioned by the XII. Tables—that of the

- the wrongdoer,

The king as Judge.

Servian reforms,

thief compounding for his life or freedom—was early admitted, and the right of self-redress thus made much more beneficial to the party wronged than when nothing was attained but vengeance on In assaults, non-manifest thefts, and other minor wrongs, self-interest would in like manner soon lead to the general adoption of the practice of compounding ; what was originally a matter of option in time came to be regarded as a right; and with it there would be occasional difficulty in settling the amount of the composition, and consequent necessity of an appeal toa third party. Here seems to be the origin of the king's jurisdiction in matters of this sort. He was the natural person to whom to refer such a

dispute ; for he alone, as supreme magistrate, had the power to use coercion to prevent the party wronged insistin g on his right of self-redress, in face of a tender by the wrongdoer of what had been de- clared to be sufficient reparation. But that self-redress was not stayed if the reparation found due was withheld; as the party wronged was still entitled at a much later period to wreak his venge- ance upon the wrongdoer by apprehending and imprisoning him, it cannot reasonably be doubted that such also was the practice of the regal period.

How the kings acquired jurisdiction in questions of quiritarian right, such as disputes about property or inhcritance, is by no means so obvious. Within the family, of course, such questions were impossible, though between clansmen they may have been settled by the gens or its chief. The words of style used in the sacramental real action (infra, p. 682) suggest that there must have been a time when the spear was the arbiter, and when the con- tending parties, backed possibly by their clansmen or friends, were actual combatauts, and victory decided the right. Such a pro- cedure could not long survive the institution of a state. In Rome there seems to have becn very early substituted for it what from its general complexion one would infer was a submission of the question of right to the pontiffs as the repositories of legal lore. Their proper functions, however, were sacred, So, to bring what was a question of purely civil right within their jurisdiction, they engrafted on it a sacral element, by requiring each of the parties to make oath to the verity of his contention ; and the point that in form they decided was which of the two oaths was false and there- fore to be made atonement for. In substance, however, it was a finding on the real question at issue ; and the party in whose favour it was pronounced was free to make it effectual if necessary by self-redress in the ordinary way.

Of Servius, Dionysius says—using, as he often docs, language more appropriate to the republican than to the regal period—that he drew a line of separation between public and private judicial processes, and that, while he retained the former in his own hands, he referred the latter to private judges, aud regulated the procedure to be followed in causes brought before them. Something of the sort was absolutely necessary. He

was cnormously increasing the number of the citizens,—that is to sa , of those who were to enjoy right,—and multiplying the

in future the privileges of quiritarian sources of future disputes that would have to be determined by the

nh OM AN bb AW

[JUS CIVILE.

tribunals. The nature of the provision madc by him to meet the new aspect of things is much controverted ; but we are disposed to credit him alike with the establishment of the collegiate court of the centumvirs and the institution of the single judge (unus Judes).

The centumviral court and centumviral causes are often referred Centum- to by Cicero, and the range of their jurisdiction seems to have viral included every possible question of manus in the old sense of court. the word,—status of individuals, property and its easements and burdens, inheritance whether testatc or intestate,—in other words, all questions of quiritarian right. By the time of Gaius the only matters apparently that were brought before it were questions of right to an inheritance of the jus civile ; but the spear, the emblem of quiritarian right generally, was still its ensign.

That Servius should substitute for king and pontiffs a numcrous court of citizens, originally, as there is reason to assume, all patri- cians, to try questions of quiritarian right on remit from himself, was quite in accordance with the general spirit of his reforms. It was not mere matters of personal dispute they had to dccide, but they had to build up by their judgments a law which was to be of general and permanent application; and, as it was beyond the power of the king to overtake the task, what could be a more ap- propriate substitute than a court of his counsellors acting under pontifical guidance ?

But there were many cases requiring judicial assistance in which Unus no question of quiritarian right had to be determined, but only judex. one of personal claim—of alleged indebtedness, whether arising out of a legal or

illegal act, denied either zx foto or only as to its amount. Matters of that sort were supposed to involve no general principle of law, but to be rather mere disputes or differences about facts, which could well be decided by a single judge. To meet their case the wnws judex was introduced ; he was appointed for each case as it arose, and acted really as the king's commissioner.

This was the beginning of a system that bore wondrous fruit in after years, and that, as will be shown in the sequel, eventually displaced altogether the more imposing court of the centumvirs.

CHAPTER II.—THE JUS CIVILE.

(From the Establishment of the Republic until the Subjuga- tion of Central and Southern Italy.)

I. ForMATIVE AGENCIES OF THE LAW.

The Legislative Bodies of the Period.—The limits and Ple- scope of this article do not permit of any detailed account beians' of the consequences of the change from kings to consuls, once or of the tribulations of the plebeians during the first two ity. \ centuries of the republic. Stage by stage they fought and conquered in the uphill battle for social and political equality. In 260 v.c. they got their own special protectors in their tribunes, with the ediles as their assistants, and Judices decemviri to act under their instructions as arbiters in disputes amongst themselves. In 283 they obtained state sanction for their conciliwm, and recognition of its power to regulate purely plebeian interests. The XII. Tables of 303 were the fruit of their agitation for a revision and written embodiment of the law. It was in deference to their complaints of their practical disfranchisement through the unduly preponderating influence of the patri- clans in the comitia of the centuries that in 305 the comitia of the tribes was instituted. Their repeated pro- tests against the monopolization of the public domain land by members of the higher order resulted at last in the definite recognition of their right to participate in its occupation by one of the Licinian laws of 387. The long course of cruel oppression of plebeian insolvents by their patrician creditors was put an end to by the Peetilian law of 428 abolishing nexal contract, and prohibiting the use of

chains and fetters on persons incarcerated for purely civil debt. By the Hortensian law of 467 the resolutions of the plebeian council (plebiscita) were declared binding not only on the plebeians themselves but on the whole body of the citizens. And from 333, when a plebeian first reached the magistracy through the questorship, down to 502, when they attained to the supreme pontificate, they gradually vindicated their right as citizens to share in all the honours and dignities of the state.

The legislative bodies were thus three in number,—the comitia of the centuries, the conciliwm plebis, and the

Comitia of the centuries.

JUS CIVILE. |

comitia of the tribes. The first, if not organized by Servius Tullius, at all events grew out of his distribution of the populace into classes and centuries according to the value of their freeholds as appearing on the census-list. As just the national army assembled for a peaceful purpose (exercitus civilis), it could be convened and presided over originally only by a magistrate possessing the military imperium, v.¢., a consul; but, after the creation of the censorship in 311 and the preetorship in 387, the holders of those offices were entitled to convoke it,—the former for its assent to arrangements for the census, and the latter for state trials. It was the centuries that passed the XII. Tables; but for the most part their legislation was upon questions affecting public and constitutional rather than private interests. The procedure in the centurlate comitia was somewhat cumbrous. There was publication of the proposed law (promulgatio rogationis) a fortnight before.the day appointed, sometimes one or more meetings (conciones) being held in the interval for its consideration and discussion. When the day arrived, the auspicia were taken by the presiding magistrate, assisted by an augur; if favourable, the citizens were

iy © MAIN | i, As W

more than a plebiscitum, and of force only amongst the plebeians themselves. But there was an exception when, because of some constitutional change proposed by it, the senate had previously sanctioned the legislation, as in the case of the Terentilian law, which paved the way for the XII. Tables, of the Canuleian law authorizing the inter- marriage of patricians and plebeians, of the Licinian laws about the occupation of the public lands, &c.; in such cases, although the final vote was that of the conciliwm, the enactment was binding on the citizens generally, and was spoken of asa dex rather than asa plebiscittum. The latter name seems practically to have been dropped after the Hortensian law had equalized them so far as their effects were concerned. The greater part of the legislation for amending the private law latterly fell to the concilium, owing so far, perhaps, to the greater simplicity of its pro- cedure, but also to some extent to the fact that the pretors preferred making their amendments tentatively by edicts (which were revocable), instead of embodying them in statutes, which, as passed under divine auspices and representing the divine will, could not easily be repealed.

The XII, Tables.—We have already shown the efforts Uncer- made by Servius Tullius to secure that the dispensation of tainty of justice should neither be neglected nor left to caprice or hap- !#

summoned anew by blast of trumpet, and on their assenitbling, which originally they did under arms, prayer and sacrifice were offered by president, pontiffs, and

augurs. A final concio might then be held if thought necessary ; and, after it was over, on the order to "' proceed to the comitia," the citizens marched to the Campus Martius (the formal assembly being incompetent within the city). There the rogatio was read and, if no sign from heaven indicated the dissent of the gods and warned the assembly to disperse, was at once put to the vote— "Ts it your pleasure, Quirites, to hold this as law?" The vote was taken by centuries, those of the knights and the freeholders of full valuation voting first; if they were unanimous it went no further, for these formed more than & majority of the whole comitia. The resolution, if adopted, was populc jussum, but not yet law. It had still to run the gauntlet of the "fathers,"—whether the senate or only its

patrician members is disputed; it was in their power to refuse to authorize it (auctores jierc), usually putting their dissent on the ground that the gods willed it not; but if they ratified it, then it became a Jez, ordinarily getting the name of tle magistrate by whom it had been proposed. The power of veto, however, was considerably qualified by a Publilian law of the year 415, which enacted that in future the "fathers" should grant (or refuse) their auctoritas before the vote was taken.

hazard, one rule to-day and another to-morrow. With the consulate and the disregard of the "royal laws" and of Servius's instructions to the judges all this was changed. The consuls, with their harassing military engagements, could have little time to devote to their judicial functions or properly to instruct those to whom they delegated the duty of investigating and adjudicating on the merits of a complaint ; and the yearly change of magistrates must itself have been a serious obstacle to uniformity either of rule or practice so long as the law rested on nothing but unwritten custom. One can well believe too, when feeling was so embittered between the orders, that it was no rare thing for a consul to use his magisterial punitive powers (coercitio) with undue severity when a plebeian was the object of them, or to turn a deaf ear to an appeal for justice addressed to him from such a quarter. The state of matters had become so intolerable that in the year 292 the demand was made by C. Terentilius Arsa, one of the tribunes, that a commission should be appointed to define in writing the jurisdiction of the magistrates, so that a check might be put on their arbitrary, high- handed, and oppressive administration of what they were pleased to call the law. His colleagues induced him for the moment not to press his demand, which he was urging

Con- The points of difference between the enactments of the | th :

cilium concilium plebis and the later comitia tributa are indicated | with a violence of invective that was unlikely to promote a by Mommsen in a paper in his Researches! (1) The | his object. But next year they made common cause with Se iiiis comitia was an assembly of the whole body of the people, | him, requiring that the whole law, public and private, ofthe voting according to tribes instead of centuries; the should be codified, and its uncertainty thus as far as tribes. conciliwm was an assembly of

plebeians only, also voting | possible be removed. After a few years' resistance the

tributim. (2) The comitia was convened and presided over by a patrician magistrate, not necessarily, however,

senate was induced to give its assent to a demand that in itself was too reasonable to be longer withstood.

The first practical step towards its realization was the Compila- despatch of a mission to Greece and the Greek settlements ee a in southern Italy, to study their statute law and collect 0" ~

with military imperium, and therefore very frequently by the praetor ; whereas the conciliwm could be convened and Tables.

presided over only by a plebeian official, either a tribune or an edile. (3) In the comitia the auspicia had to be taken before the proceedings commenced ; in the concaliwm the will of the gods was not demanded, although listened to if communicated in a thunder-storm or the like. (4) The resolution of the comitia required to be confirmed by the "fathers"; while that of the concilium did not. (5) An enactment of the comitia was a lex, and bound the whole people ; but before the Hortensian law an enact- ment by the conciliuwm plebis was in the ordinary case no

1 "Die Sonderversammlungen der Plebs," in his Rom. Forschungen, vol. i., Berlin, 1864, p. 177 sq.

any materials that might be of service in preparing the projected code. On the return of the ambassadors in 302 all the magistracies were suspended, and a commission of ten patricians (decemviri legibus scribundis) was appointed with consular powers, under the presidency of Appius Claudius, for the express purpose of reducing the laws to writing. Before the end of the ensuing year (303) the bulk of the code was ready, and was at once passed into law by the comitia of the centuries, and engraved or per- haps painted on ten tables of wood, which were exposed in the Forum. Next year the decemvirate was renewed

In form the laws contained in the Tables were of remarkable General brevity, terseness, and pregnancy, with something of a rhythmical charac- cadence that must have greatly facilitated their retention in the teristics,

680

with a slight change of personnel, but under the same presidency as before ; and in the course of a few months

it had completed the supplemental matter, which was passed in due form, and displayed on two other tables, thus bringing the number up to twelve and giving the code its official name of Lea XII. Tabularum.

memory. Here and there the rules they embodicd were potestative ; but for the most part they were peremptory, running on broad lines, surmounting instead of removing difficulties. Their application might cause hardship in individual instances, as when a man was held to the letter of what he had declared in a ncxwm or mancipa-

Sources. There were provisions in them that were almost literal renderings tion, even though he had done so under error or influenced by poe ae 'pel Selec Ue be ee Se fraudulent misrepresentations ; the decemvirs admitted no excep- or ine they were directly borrowed. By far the greater pro- eee penne a ae in be ee = spel iosy ae portion of them, however, were native and original,—not that they eee eer Een re Tn ae sep ter peer er eeratio amounted to a general formularization of the hitherto floating Bs ae saecr esto) ca eat ata ae Se, Gate. GR ete customary law, for, notwithstanding Livy's eulogium of them as Teblos i ¢ occlite only omeen marci ttiiie mn tata tee snare the "fountain of the whole law, both pao aoe aca ane to an offence that ould be omenibied eas by a patrician, —material leas that many branes of wee da wth the Tables onl \| Joe caused by apeiron fo hin lint (grow clio frou

; , ; ' 'nent axsit, saccr csto). In all other cases the idea that a crime was an ee i as a A uae Rees nee ae : offence against public order, for which the community was entitled ecient Labi ; in self-protection to inflict

punishment on the criminal, is as pro- ments, the main features of the order of judicial procedure, gud a minent as the older one that it was-a sin against the go Pets ah forth,—of all of these a general knowledge was presumed, and the c feeble : =a aaa decemvirs thought it unnecessary to define them. What they had eet by rg ace ee ae SE eee to do was to make the law equal for all, to remove every chance of aeaile Mites at' tHeeemice pine aed g from the Tarte oale a arbitrary dealing by distinct specification of penalties and precise ie Tl 1 ees t with; th niles. saat declaration of the circumstances under which rights should be held | oye ae ene sera eee ees ee ee ene eee? aL re have arisen or been lost, and to make such eats as were often, poet aie rey , the hanging and eu sue is at oe necessary to meet the complaints of the plebeians and prevent th 8 Bararaleee one ns oe anette ten whom the goods 0 their oppression in the name of justice. Nothing of the customary Te ionit unmonthe Bree. Chee eae eae law, therefore, or next to nothing, was introduced into the Tables Of Hie solde saan ff ori a, Mae CHEN ae Gitta that was already universally recognized, and not complained of as alae pieces be a coal a m4 i cis Bales ~ either unequal, indefinite, defective, or oppressive. Only one or | o…n4tally the same proced a eee ae hee he +h. is two of the laws ascribed to the kings reappeared in then, and that | 4 agit; uM – p aan Alea ae aa Oe a bs : in altered phraseology; yet the omission of the rest did not mean a eee eat ae ee ae . + ea ee Leah aii their repeal or imply denial of their validity, for some of them Y ib a eat Ae whil; Hd 1 re i Thin ae he were still in force in the empire, and arc founded on by Justinian or ; Poa ee Tease ole eu ae akg he in his Digest. Neither were any of the laws of the republic anterior Bae : 1 ens e . _ fog tun to h hes a Orie to the Tables embodied in them, although for long afterwards many | ; uring the day if he used arms in resisting his appre SN eats all a mau had to submit to prosecution under them and to suffer the ing to Cicero there Dee a ErOy eee these words— he telum manu penalties they imposed. In saying, therefore, that for the most fugit magis quam jecit, arietem ae ;_this is dant ee part the provisions of the decemviral code were of native origin, | °2t in illustrative language of the aw attributed to Numa, that all that is meant is that they were the work of the decemvirs them- i ee by ee if the ¥ an " Ere fr be the selves, operating upon the hitherto unwritten law in the directions aon a ys. a. he gt oe oT*

pre ae a already indicated. peace-offering to the kinsmen of him who had been slain. The

Remains. The original Tables are said to have been destroyed when Rome original purpose must have been to stay the blood revenge, and it

was sacked and burned by the Gauls. But they were at once re- »wroduced, and transcripts of them must have been abundant if, as

icero says was still the case in his youth, the children were required to commit them to memory as an ordinary school task. This ren- ders all the more extraordinary the fact that the remains of them are so fragmentary and their genuineness in many cases so debatable. They were embodied in the 7'ripertita of Sextus Alius Petus in the year 557 ; they must have formed the basis of all the writings on the jus civile down to the time of Servius Sulpicius Rufus (who first took the preetor's edicts as a text); and they were the subjects of monographs by a number of authors of distinction, amongst them by M. Antistius Labeo in the early years of the empire and by Gaius probably in the reign of Hadrian. Yet a couple of score or so are all that can be collected of their provisions in what profess to be the ipsissima verba of the Tables,—though in a form in most cases more modern than what we encounter in other remains of archaic Latin. These are contained principally in the writings of Cicero, the Noctes Atticae of Aulus Gellius, and the treatise De verborum significatione of Festus, the last two dealing with them rather as matters of antiquarian curiosity than as rules of positive law. There are many allusions to particular provisions in the pages of Cicero, Varro, Gellius, and the elder Pliny, as well as in those of Gaius, Paul, Ulpian, and other ante-Justinianian jurists ; but these are not implicitly to be relied on, as we have evidence that they frequently represent the (sometimes divergent) glosses of the inter- preters rather than the actual provisions of the statute. Recon- struction has therefore been a work of difficulty, and the results far from satisfactory, that of the latest editor, Voigt, departing very considerably from the versions generally current during the last half century.} i

1 Dirksen's Uebersicht der bisherigen Versuche zur Kritik u. Her- stellung d. 4wilf-Tafet-Fragmente, Leipsic, 1824, supplies the basis of all

the later work on the Tables anterior to that of Voigt. Schoell in his Legis XII. Tub. reliquiae, Berlin, 1866, made a valuable con- tribution to the literature of the subject from a philological point of view. His version has been adopted substantially by Bruns in his Fontes Juris romani antiqut, and by Wordsworth in his Fragments and Specimens of Early Latin, Oxford, 1874, p. 258 sq. The latter, in a& subsequent part of his volume (pp. 502-538), has added notes, historical, philological, and exegetical, which constitute a valuable commentary on the Tables asa whole. Voigt's two volumes, under the title of Geschichte und System des Civil- und Criminal-Rechtes, wie

may even have been so with Numa; but in the Tables it can only have been intended to stay the prosecution which it was incumbent on the kinsmen of a murdered man to institute. So with talionic penalties: "si membrum rupit, ni cum eo pacit, talio esto"—such, according to Gellius, were the words of one of the laws of the Tables, and they undoubtedly contain a reminiscence of a time when talion was recognized, "an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth"; but in the mouths of the decemvirs they were nothing more than a clumsy mode of enabling an injured man to exact the greatest money recompense he could, and to have it measured according to the © position and fortune of the individual who had done him injury.

The structure of the provisions of the Tables was not such as to Inter- enable the plain citizen to apply them to concrete cases, or know pretation how to claim the benefit of them in the tribunals, without some of the Pomponius states that no sooner was Tables.

sort of professional advice. the decemviral legislation published than the necessity was felt for its interpretation, and for the preparation by skilled hands of styles of actions by which its provisions might be made effectual. Both of these duties fell to the pontiffs as the only persons who, in the state of civilization of the period, were well qualified to give the assistance required ; and Pomponius adds that the college annually appointed one of its members to be the adviser of private parties and of the judices in those matters. The interpretatio, commenced by the pontiffs and continued by the jurists during the republic, which, Pomponius says, was regarded as

part of the jus civilc, was not confined to explanation of the words of the statute, but was in some cases their expansion, in others their limitation, and in many the deduction of new doctrines from the actual jus scrip- twm, and their development and exposition. An event that did much to diminish the influence of the pontiffs in connexion with it was the divulgement in the year 450 by Cn. Flavius, secretary of Appius Claudius Cxcus, and probably at his instigation, of a formulary of actions and a ealendar of lawful and unlawful days, which got the name of Jus Flavianwm. The practice adopted in the beginning of the 6th century by Tiberius Coruncanius, the

-Processes, der XII. Tafeln, nebst deren Fragmenten, Leipsic, 1883, contain an exposition of the whole of the earlier jus civile, whether embodied in the Tables or not. The history of them occupies the first hundred pages or thereby of the first volume ; his reconstruction of fragments and allusions—a good deal fuller than any earlier one, and supported by an imposing array of authorities—is in the same volume, pp. 693-737.

Subse- quent legisla- tion.

Legis actiones gener- ally.

-nized and indirectly confirmed by the Tables.

JUS CIVILE. |

first plebeian chief pontiff, of giving advice in law in public had a still greater effect in popularizing it; and the Jus Aclianwm, some fifty years later—a collection that included the Tables, the intcr- pretatio, and the current styles of actions—made it as much the heritage of the laity as of the pontifical college.

Subsequent Legislation.—Of legislation during the fourth

and fifth centuries that affected the private law we have

but scanty record. The best-known enactments are the Canuleian law of 309 repealing the decemviral prohibition of marriages between patricians and plebeians ; the Genu- cian, Marcian, and other laws about usury and the rate of interest ; the Pcetilian law of 428, abolishing the nexal contract ; the Silian law, probably not long afterwards, which introduced a new form of process for actions of debt and appears to have given statutory sanction to the stipulation (in its earliest form of sponsio); and the Aquilian law of 467, which amended the decemviral provisions about actions of damages for culpable injury to property, and continued to regulate the law on the subject even in the books of Justinian.

Il. Tae Actions or THE Law.

The Legis Actiones generallyiAmWe owe to Gaius the only connected (though, owing to the state of the Verona MS., rather fragmentary) account we possess of the legis actiones, as the system of judicial procedure was called which prevailed in Rome down to the substitution of that per formulas by the AXbutian and Julian laws,—the first early in the sixth century of the city, and the second in the age of Augustus. He tells us that as genera agendt or generic forms of process they were five in number, each taking its name from its characteristic feature, viz., (1) sacramento, (2) per judicis postulationem, 7 per condic- tionem, (4) per manus injectionem, and (5) per pignoris capionem. The third was unknown in the decemviral period, and was introduced by the Silian law alluded to in last paragraph. The other four were all more or less regu- lated by the XII. Tables, but must in some form have been anterior to them. It is utterly impossible, however, to say of any one of them at what time it was introduced, or what was the statute (Je) by which it was sanctioned ; it may well be that they were not of statutory introduction at all, but were called legis actiones simply because recog- In char- acter and purpose they were very different. The first three were directly employed for determining a question of right or liability, which, if persistently disputed, inevitably re- sulted in a judicial inquiry. The fourth and fifth might possibly result in judicial intervention ; but primarily they were proceedings in execution, in which the party moving in them worked out his own remedy. As regards their comparative antiquity there is much to be said for the opinion of Ihering and Bekker that manus injectio, as

essen- tially nothing more than regulated self-help, must have been the earliest of the five, and that the legis actio sacramento and the judicis postulatio must have been introduced in aid of it, and to prevent too hasty resort to it where there was room for doubt upon question either of fact or law.

In the three judicial legis actioncs the first step was the in jus vocatio or procedure for bringing the respondent into court, minutely

1 The literature on the subject is very voluminous, great part of it in periodicals. Amongst the leading works are those of Keller, Der rém. Ctvilprocess u. die Actionen, 1st ed. 1852, 6th ed. by Wach, Leipsic, 1883, §§ 12-21; Bethmann-Hollweg, Der rim. Civilprocess in seiner geschichtl. Hntwickelung, 8 vols., Bonn, 1864-66, the first volume of which is devoted to the legis actiones ; Buonamici, Delle Legis Actiones nell' antico diritto romano, Pisa, 1868 ; Bekker, Die Aktionen d. rim. Privatrechts, 2 vols., Berlin, 1871-73, particularly vol. i. pp. 18-74; Karlowa, Der rém. Civilprozess zur Zeit a. Legis- actionen, Berlin, 1872 ; Padeletti, 'Le Legis Actiones," in the Archivio Giuridico, vol. xvii. (1875), p. 821 sq. Schultze, Privatrecht wu. Process in threr Wechselbeziehung, vol. i., Freiburg, 1883 (vol. ii. not yet pub- lished), in pp. 489-532 presents some novel and uot unimportant views.

regulated by the provisions of the first of the XII. Tables. This duty was not committed to any officers of the law ; there was no writ of summons of any sort ; the party moving in the contemplated litigation had himself to do what was needed. Once before the magistrate (consul or pretor), the plaintiff stated his contention. If admitted unqualifiedly by the defendant, the magistrate at once pronounced his decree, leaving the plaintiff to work out his remedy as the law prescribed. But, if the case presented was met either with a denial or a qualified defence, and appeared to the magistrate to be one proper for trial, he remitted it for that purpose either to the centumviral tribunal or to one or more private citizens as judges or arbiters. The act of remit was technically Zitis contestatio or ordinatio

judicti, the first so named because originally the parties called upon those present to be witnesses to the issue that was bein g sent for trial. This was the ordinary practice under both the system of the degis actioncs and that of the formulae, and prevailed until the time of Diocletian. In the first stage the proceedings were said to be in jure, and the duties of the magistrate in reference to them made up his jurisdictio; in the second they were said to be in judicio, those presiding in it being styled judiccs. All that the judge or judges had to do was to pass judgment on the question remitted to them. They were "right-declarers" only, not "right-enforcers." If their judgment was for the plaintiff, and he failed to obtain an amicable settlement, he had himself to make it opera- tive by subsequent proceedings by manus injcctio, and that under the eye of the magistrate, not of the judge.

From an enumeration in Cicero of a variety of causes proper to the centumviral court the conclusion seems warranted that it was its peculiar province to decide questions of quiritary right in the strictest acceptation of the word. They were all apparently real actions (vindicationes),— claims of property in land or of servitudcs over it, of right as heir undcr a testament or in opposition to it, of rights of tutory and succession ad intcstato as agnate or gentile, and so forth. In all these it was a numcrous court of Quirites, advised in the early republic by a pontiff, that determined by its vote the question of quiritary right submitted to it. Many such questions in course of time, and possibly at first of express consent of parties, came to |» referred to a single judge ; but some, and notably claims of inheritance under or in opposition to a testament, were still remitted to the centumviral court iu the classical period. Personal actions, however, do not appear ever to have fallen within its cog- nizance : they were usually sent to a single judge—a private citizen —selected by the parties, but appointed by the magistrate, and to whom the latter administered an oath of office. But, in a few cases in which an action involved not so much a disputed question of right as the exercise of skill and discretion in determining the nature aud extent of a right that in the abstract was not denied, the remit was to a plurality of private judges or arbiters, usually three.

The Legis Actio Sacramento.2— The characteristic feature Sacra-

of this legis actio, as described by Gaius, was that the parties, after a somewhat dramatic performance before the consul or pretor, each challenged the other to stake a certain sum, the amount of which was fixed by the Tables, and which was to abide the issue of the inquiry by the court or judge to whom the cause was eventually remitted. This stake Gaius refers to indifferently as sacramentum, summa sacramenti, and poena sacramentt. The formal question the court had to determine was,— whose stake had been justified, whose not (cujus sacramentum justum, cujus injustum) ; the first was returned to the staker, the second forfeited originally to sacred and afterwards to public uses. But the decision on this formal question necessarily involved a judgment on the matter actually in dispute, and, if it was for the plaintiff, entitled him, failing an amicable arrangement, to take ulterior steps for making it effectual. The procedure was still employed in the time of Gaius in the few cases

2 To the literature in the last note may be added Asverus, Die legis actio sacramenti, Leipsic, 1837 ; Huschke (rev. Asverus), in Richter's Krit. Jahrbuch, vol. iii. (1839), p. 665 sg. 3; Stintzing, Verhdliniss d. 0. a. sacramento zum Verfahren durch sponsio pracjudicialis, Heidelberg, 1853 ; Danz, Der sacrale Schutz, pp. 151-221; Maine, Ancient Law, p. 375 sq. ; Danz, " Die]. a. Sacram. u. d. Lex Papiria," in the Zeitschr. J. Rechtsgeschichte, vol. vi. (1867), p. 339 sq.; Huschke, Die Multa u. d. Sacramentum, Leipsic, 1874 ; Lotmar, Zur U. a. sacramento in rem, Munich, 1876 ; Brinz (crit. Lotmar), 'Zur Contravindication in d. 1. a. sacr.," in the Festgabe zu Spengel's Doctor-Jubiliwm, Munich, 1877, pp. 95-146 ; Miinderloh, " Ueber Schein u. Wirklichkeit an d. 1. a. sacramenti," in the Z. f. Rechtsgesch., vol. xiii. (1878), p. 445 sq.3 E. Roth, in the 7. d. Savigny Stiftung, vol. iti. (1882), Rom. Abtheil., p. 121 sq. ; Fioretti, Leg. act. sacramento, Naples, 1883 ; Ihering, " Reich u. Arm im altrém. Civilprozess," in his Scherz u. Ernst in der Juris-

prudenz, Leipsic, 1885, p. 175 sq. XX. — 386

that continued to be referred to the centumviral court, but otherwise it had been long in disuse.

Gaius explains that it was resorted to both in real and personal actions. Unfortunately the MS. of his Institutes is defective in the passage in which he described its ap- plication to the latter. We possess the greater part of his account of the actio in rem as employed to raise and deter- mine a question of ownership; but his illustration is of vindication of a slave, and not so interesting or instructive as the proceedings for vindication of land. _These, how- ever, can be reconstructed with tolerable certainty with the

aid derived from Cicero, Varro, and Gellius.

*The parties appeared before the magistrate, each armed with a rod (festwea) representing his spear (quer or hasta), the symbol, as Gaius says, of quiritarian ownership. The first word was spoken by the raiser of the action, and addressed to his opponent : "*T say that the land in question [describing it sufficiently for identifica- tion] is mine in quiritary right (mewm esse cx jure quiritiwm) ; where- fore I require you to go there and join issue with me in presence of the magistrate (in jure manwm consererc)." Thereupon, accord- ing to the earliest practice, the magistrate and the partics, accom- panied by their friends and backers, proceeded to the ground for the purpose: the court was transferred from the forum to the land itself. As distances increased, however, and the engagements of the consuls multiplied, this became inconvenient. Instead of it, this course was adopted: the parties went to the spot without the magistrate, but on his command, and there joined issue in the presence of 'their seconds, who had been ordered to accompany them, and who probably made a report of the due observance of formalities on their return. Still later the procedure was further simplified by having a turf brought from the place beforehand— probably as time advanced there would be no very particular in- quiry as to where it had been obtained— and deposited a few yards from the magistrate's chair; and, when he ordered the parties to go to the ground and join issue, they merely brought forward the turf and set it before him, and proceeded to make their formal vindications upon it, as representing the whole land in dispute.*

The ritual was as follows. The raiser of the action, addressing his adversary, again affirmed his ownership, but this time with the significant addition—" As I have asserted my right by word of mouth, look you, so do I now with my vindicta"; and there- with he touched the turf with his rod, which was called vindicta when employed for this purpose. The magistrate then asked the other party whether he meant to counter-vindicate. If he replied in the negative or made no response, there was instant decree (addictio) in favour of the first party, and the proceedings were at an end. If, however, he counter-vindicated, it was by repeating the same words and re-enacting the same play as his ad- versary :—"I say that the land is mine in quiritary right, and I too lay my vindicta upon it." The verbal and symbolical vindica- tion and counter-vindication completed what was technically the manus consertio. The parties were now in this position: each had asserted his ownership, and had figuratively had recourse to arms in maintenance of his contention. But the matter was to be settled judicially, so the magistrate once more intervened and ordered both to withdraw from the land. The dialogue was then resumed, the vindicant demanding to know from his opponent upon what pretence (cawsa) he had counter-vindicated. In the illustra- tion in Gaius he avoided the question and pleaded the general issue, —"T have done as is my right in laying my vindicta on the land." But there can be little doubt that in certain circumstances the counter-vindicant would deem it expedient to disclose his title. This was very necessary where he attributed his right to a con- veyance upon which two years' possession had not yet followed ; in such a case he had to name his author (auwctorem laudare) if he desired to preserve recourse against the latter on the warranty implied in the mancipation. That probably entailed a suspension of the proceedings to allow of the authov's citation for his interest ; and on their resumption, if he appeared and admitted his auctoritas, he was formally made a party to the action.

The proceedings had now reached the sacramental stage proper. The first challenge came from the vindicant,—"Since you have vindicated unrightfully, I challenge you with a sacrament of 500 asses," to which the counter-vindicant responded,—" And I you." This was technically the sacramento provocatio. The magistrate thereupon remitted the matter for trial to the centumviral court, or possibly, in certain cases, to a single

judge, and in the presence of witnesses called by the parties (Jitis contestatio) declared what exactly was the question put in issue which the court or judge was to decide. At the same time, according to Gaius's account of the procedure, he required sureties from the partics for the eventual payment by him who was unsuccessful of the sacrament he had offered to stake, and which became a forfeit to the exchequer. (The original practice was for the stake to be deposited by both partics

in the hands of the pontiffs before they were heard by the cen- tuniviral court ; after judgment that of the gainer was reclaimed by him, while that of the loser was retained for religious uses.) The magistrate also made arrangements for the interim possession of the land by one or other of the litigants, taking security from him that, if he was eventually unsuccessful, it should be returned to his opponent, along with all the fruits and profits drawn in the interval. At the trial, as both parties were vindicants, there must have been a certain burden of proof upon both sides. The vindicant, one may believe, must have been required to establish in the first instance that the thing he claimed had at some time becn his; and then, but probably not till then, the counter-vindicant would have to prove a later title in his person sufficient to exclude that of his oppouent. The judgment, as already observed, necessarily involved a finding on the main question; but in form it was a de- claration as to the sacrament: that of the party who prevailed was declared to be just, and that of his unsuccessful opponent unjust.

Looking at this ritual as a whole the conviction is irresistible that it could not have been so devised by one brain. It reveals and combines tlree distinct stages in the history of procedure,— appeal to arms and self-help, appeal to the gods and the spiritual power, appeal to the civil magistrate and his judicial office. As Gellius says, the real and substantial fight for might, that in olden days had been maintained at the point of the spear, had given place to a civil and festucarian combat in which words were the weapons, and which was to be settled by the interposition of the pretor. But this docs not explain the sacramentum. Very various theories have

been proposed to account for it. According to Gaius, it was nothing more than the sum of money staked by each of the parties, which was forfeited originally to sacred and after- wards to public uses by him who was unsuccessful, as a penalty for his rashly running into litigation; and substantially the same explanation is given by Festus in one of his definitions of the word. But this is far from satisfactory; for it involves the absurdity of declaring that a penalty imposed by law could be unjust (‘njustwm) in any case, and the still greater absurdity of declaring it just in the case of the party who was in the right, and unjust in the case of him who was in the wrong. There is another detinition in Festus—“a thing is said to be done sacramento when the sanction of an oath is interposed ”—which lends support to the opinion that there was a time when parties to a question of right were required to take an oath to the verity of their respective assertions ; that they were also required concurrently to deposit five bullocks or five sheep, according to the nature or value of the thing in dispute, to abide the issne of the inquiry ; that the question for determination was whose oath was just and whose unjust ; and that he who was found to have sworn unjustly forfeited lis cattle or ae as a piamentum—a peace-offering to the outraged deity— while the other party reclaimed his from the repository in which they had been detained in the interval.?

1 It was the Lex Aternia Tarpeia of the year 300 v.c. that com- muted the five bullocks and five sheep into 500 and 50 tb of copper respectively (Cic., De Rep., ii. 85, § 60, where the words usually printed “de multae sacramento” should read “de multa et sacramento”); Fest., s.v. “Peculatus ” (Bruns, Fontes, p. 279). For the pounds’ weight of raw metal the XII. Tables substituted the same number of asses, declaring that 500 should be the summa sacramenti when the cause of action was worth 1000 asses or more, 50 when worth less or the question one of freedom or slavery (Gai., iv. 14).

2 Varro, De L. L., v. 180 (Bruns, p. 303), says that, even after the summa sacramenti had been converted into money, it was deposited ad pontem,—some bridge, he does not say which, where there was a sacred “pound.” (Curiously enough, the Irish spelling of “pound” is “ pont’; Skeat’s Htym. Dict., s.v. ‘“Pound.”) A most ingenious and plausible explanation

was suggested by Danz in 1867, in the Zezéschr. J. Rechtsgesch., vol. vi. p. 859. Recalling the facts that there had been discovered in the Tiber Island sacella of Jupiter Jurarius and Dius Fidius, the two deities to whom solemn oaths were usually addressed, and that the island was spoken of as "inter duos pontes," because con- nected with both banks of the river by bridges bearing no particular names, he suggested that the island may have been the place to which disputants resorted to make their sacramenta, and that the cattle, sheep, or money were deposited in a place for the purpose before the bridge was crossed. Much the same explanation was offered by Huschke two years later in his book Das alte rimische Jahr (Breslau, 1869), p. 360, apparently without being aware of Danz's speculation. He adds, on the authority of the Iguvine Tables, that, while bullocks were offered to Jupiter, only sheep were offered to Dius Fidius, The island, he thinks, must have been selected as neutral ground to which all parties might have access, and which obviated intrusion into the temples of the two gods on the Capitol and Quirinal respectively. And it is to its use as the scene of the sacramental procedure that he ~ attributes its name of "holy island," rather than to the fact of its having been the seat of the temple of Asculapius. Huschke recurs to and enforces this view in his Multa und Sacramentum (1874), p- 410, where he does refer to Danz's paper.

The writers who adopt this view are far from being unanimous as to details. But there seems to be cnough to render it more than probable that, at an intermediate stage between the vera solida vis of ancient times and the vis civilis et festuearia which Gellius and Gaius depict, there was a procedure by appeal to the gods through means of oaths of verity sworn by the parties, in the manner and with the consequences that have been indicated. That in time it should have dropped out of the ritual is quite in the order of things. Its tendency was to become a mere form, imposing no real restraint on reckless litigation. The restraint was rather in the dread of forfeiture of the sacramental cattle, sheep, or money that would follow a verdict that an oath had been unjust. And it must have been felt besides that it was unfair to brand a man as a false- swearer, needing to cxpiate his offence by an offering to the gods, whose oath had been perfectly

honest. That he should suffer a penalty for his imprudencc in not having taken more care to ascertain his position, and for thus causing needless annoyance to others, was reasonable, but did not justify his being dealt with as one who had knowingly outraged the deity to whom he had appealed. So the oath—the original sacramentwm—disappeared, the naine passing by a natural enough process to the money which had been wont to be deposited before the oath was sworn, but which now ceased to be an offering in expiation by a false-swearer, and became a mere penalty of rash litigation (poena temere litigantis).

It may be assumed that in most cases the finding of the cen- tumvirs as to the justness or unjustness of the respective sacraments of the partics was the end of the case,—that it was at once accepted and loyally given effect to. Festus, however, preserves a law of the XII. Tables which, according to Mommsen's rendering, declared that, when it turned out that interim possession had becn awarded to the wrong party, it was to be in the latter's power to demand the appointment of three arbiters who should ascertain the value of the object of vindication and its fruits, and assess the damages due for non-restitution at double the amount. This provision seems to have been intended to afford the wrongful interim possessor, who was not in a position to make specific restitution to his suc- cessful opponent, a means of avoiding the apprehension and im- prisonment which were the statutory consequences of failure to im- plement a judgment. It is probable that in time this duplicated moncy payment came to be regarded as the satisfaction to which the successful party in a vindication was entitled in every casc in which, no matter for what reason, he was unable to obtain the thing itself and its fruits from their interim possessor ; that con- sequently an arbitrium litis aestimandae, or reference to arbiters to assess their value, resulted in every such case; and that it was to assure its payment that the praetor required the party to whom the interim possession was awarded to give to his opponent the sureties (pracdes litis et vindieiarwm) to whom Gaius alludes.

After this explanation of the procedure in the sacramental action for vindication of land it is unnecessary to enter into any detail of what was done when it was a movable that was being vindicated, or when the action was a personal one for payment of money. The teal action about a

movable was of course simpler than that described ; for the thing was always in praesentia. As regards per- sonal actions, the ordinarily received opinion, which rests, however,

which is generally interpreted—te, praetor, judicem arbi- trumve postulo uti des. This petition to the magistrate —king, consul, preetor—to appoint a judge, arbiter, or arbiters (as the case might be) in all probability was part of the procedure in the action, and that from which it derived its distinctive name. Beyond this all is conjecture, alike as to the nature and form of the action and the cases to which it was applicable. Gaius says of the legis actio sacramento that it was general, and that it was the procedure that was to be resorted to where no other was prescribed by statute. The extant fragments of the XII. Tables contain no such indications as this would lead us to expect; there is not a hint in them of an express instruction that proceedings in any particular case were to be per judicis postulationem.

While it is impossible with certainty to trace the history of this procedure to its first beginnings, yet the impression is gencral that it must have originated in the regal period. There were three dif- ferent positions in which an appeal for aid might be made to a court of justice, —(1) when it was a question of civil right that had to be decided in terms directly affirmative or directly negative of the contention of the raiser of the action, and one in which ques- tions of both law and fact were involved ; (2) when it was only a question of fact that had to be ascertained,—the legal result of the fact, if established, being known beforehand ; (3) when facts had to be set against facts, and a result arrived at that in the judgment of those who had to balance them was fair and reasonable in the cir- cumstances. In the first case, as when the contention was meum essc or dart oportere (otherwise than under an obligationary nexwm), the procedure was sacramento and the reference originally (in all probability) to the pontiffs, although afterwards to the centumviral court or to a yudex ; in the second, as when the question was—had or had not the defendant assaulted the plaintiff, and so incurred the invariable statutory penalty,

the reference was probably to a judex without the intervention of a sacrament; in the third, as when the matter in hand was the partitioning of an inheritance amongst co-heirs, or the determining whether operations of the de- fendant were interfering with the natural drainage of the plaintiff's land and how the mischief was to be abated, or the assessment of damages for injury to property, or of the sum sufficient to relieve from talion or the statutory penalty of theft, the reference was to an arbiter or arbiters. In the procedure sacramento the pleadings opened directly with an averment of right—"I say that this is mine," "I say that the defendant is bound to pay me so much" ; but in that per judicts arbitrive postulatio there is reason to surmise that they commenced with an averment of fact, followed by the resulting demand of the plaintiff. The details, however, are quite uncertain, with the exception that in some arbitria the plaintiff expressly threw himself upon the discretion of the arbiters—quantwm aegius melius cst ob cam rem mihi dari.

The Legis Actio per Condictionem.—This the youngest Per con- "action of the law" was introduced, Gaius says, by the diction- Silian law as a means of recovering a liquid money debt ™

ou slender foundations, is that from the first the parties met on equal terms; that, if it was a case of money debt, the creditor commenced the procecdings with the averment that the defendant

owed him the sum in question, —"I say that you ought to pay me (dare oportere) 1000 asses"; that this was met with a denial; and that a sacramental challenge followed on either side. All are agreed that the remit was to a single yudex after an interval of thirty days from the proceedings in gure ; that where the claim was for a definite sum the plaintiff had to establish his case to the letter ; and that his sacrament was necessarily declared unjust if he failed to prove his claim by a single penny. But there is considerable diversity of opinion as to whether by this form of process a claim of uncertain amount could be insisted on,—as, for example, for damages for breach of a warranty of acreage of lands sold, or of their freedom from burdens. If it could, then probably the ques- tion raised and dealt with sacramento was the abstract one of liability, —Was the warranty given, and has it failed? the sum due in

respect of the breach being left to be dealt with in a subsequent arbitral process (arbitriwm litis aestimandac).

(certa pecunia), and afterwards made available by the Cal- purnian law for enforcing personal claims (as distinguished from real rights) for anything else definite and certain (omnis res certa), and in both its forms, therefore, essen- tially an action of debt. The date of both enactments is matter of controversy, although there is no question that the Silian was the earlier. Gaius says of it that its pur- pose was far from obvious, as there was no difficulty in recovering money either by a sacramental action or one per judicis postulationem. He overlooks the fact that money due under a nexal contract was recoverable by neither of these processes, but by the much more suinmary one of manus injectio. By the Peetilian law of 428 this

>. Phe Legis Actio per Judicis Postulationem.'—The defects | was declared unlawful. We are disposed to regard the 7. of the Verona MS. have deprived us of Gaius's account of | Lex Silia and the new procedure it authorized as a result tionem, this legis actio. There is little elsewhere that can with | of the change. To have put off a creditor for money lent

any certainty be said to bear upon it. The most import- ant is a note in Valerius Probus—7.PR.LA.V.P.V.D.,

1 To the literature on p. 681, note 1, add Baron, "Zur leg. act. per judicis arbitrive postulationem," in the Festgabe fiir Aug. W. Ilefter, Berlin, 1873, p. 29 sq.; Huschke, Multa, &c., p. 394 sq.; Adolf Schmidt, " Ueber die 1. a. per jud. post.," in the Zettschr. d. Sav. Stift., vol. ii. (1881), Rom. Abtheil., p. 145 sq.; Voigt, XI. Tafeln, vol. i. § 61.

either with a sacramental action or one per judicis postula- tionem would have been to deprive him of the advantages of manus injectio to a greater extent than was called for. So it was provided by the Silian law that, when a man disputed his liability for what was called pecunia certa credita, and forced his creditor to litigation, not only was the defendant bound in the first place either to deny his

liability under oath or else to pay the sum claimed; but if he did deny it the plaintiff was entitled to require from him an engagement to pay one-third more by way of penalty in the event of judgment being against him, while the soi-disant creditor had to give an engagement to pay as penalty the same amount in case of judgment in favour of the alleged debtor. These engagements (sponsio et resti- pulatio tertiae partis) were not allowed in every case 1n which a definite sum of money was claimed per condhe- tionem, but only when it was technically pecunia credita. In Cicero's time creditum might arise either from loan, stipulation, or literal contract (expensilatio) ; but the last dated at soonest from the beginning of the 6th century, and stipulation apparently was a result of the Silian law itself, so that the pecunia credita of this enactment can have referred only to borrowed money. The same phrase, ac- cording to Livy, was employed in the Pcetilian law ; it was thereby enacted, he says, that for pecunia credita the goods, not the body of the debtor, ought to be taken in execu- tion. A connexion, therefore, between the Peetilian law and the abolition of the zexwm on the one hand, and the Silian law and the introduction of the legis actio per condictionem on the other, can hardly be ignored, and raises more than a probability that the latter statute was a consequence of the former, and must have been passed immediately or soon after the year 428. In the action for a money debt that was not technically pecunia credita, and in the action on the Calpurnian law, it is probable that the defendant could be required to negative the claim under oath (jusjurandum im jure delatum) on pain of being held as confessed ; but there was no penalty of a third part on either side.

Little is known of the procedure! in this legis actio, for, in consequence of the loss of a leaf in the Verona MS., we are with- out part of Gaius's account of it. It got its distinctive name, he says, from the condictio or requisition made by the plaintiff on the defendant, whom he had brought into court in the usual way, to attend again on the expiry of thirty days to have a judge ap- pointed. It was probably only on the reappearance of the partics, and after the defendant had had time for looking into the facts, that the latter could be required to make oath as to his defence of non-indebtedness. In the action for pecunta crcdita it would be then also, and after the oath, if demanded, had been given, that the sponsio et restipulatio tertiae partis were exchanged ; and it is probable that, if

either party refused on the pretor's command so to oblige himself towards the other, judgment was at once pronounced in favour of the latter without any remit to a judcr. How the issue was adjusted when the sponsion and restipulation were duly given we are not informed ; but, judging by analogy from the pro- cedure in an action for breach of interdict under the formular system, and on the broader ground that there must have been machinery for a condemnation of the plaintiff on his restipulation in the event of his being found in the wrong, it may reasonably be concluded that there were in fact three concurrent issues sent to the same judex,—the first on the main question, the second on the defendant's sponsion, and the third on the plaintiff's restipula- tion. When a sum of money other than pecunia credita or a thing or quantity of things other than money was sued for, those sub- sidiary issues were uunecessary, as there was neither spousion nor restipulation.

As Baron has demonstrated, it was not the usual practice to introduce any words explanatory of the ground of indebtedness when the action was either for money (other than pecunia credita) or for a thing or quantity of things. It might be loan, or bequest, or sale, or purchase, or delict, or unjustifiable enrichment, or any of a hundred causae; it would have to be condescended on of course before the judge ; but in the initial stage before the praetor and in the issue all that was necessary was the averment that the defendant was owing such a sum of money or such a thing. It was for the judge to determine whether or not the averment was established and, in certain cases, that non-delivery was due to the fault of the defendant; the plaintiff, however, was bound to make his averment good to the letter of his claim. In the event of the — on a a ee ee

a To the literature on p. 681, note 1, add Asverus, Die Denuncia- tion d. Rémer, Leipsic, 1848, p. 129 sg.; Mommsen (rev. Asverus), in Richter's Krit. Jahrbuch, vol. ix. (1845), p. 875 sq.; Bekker, Aktionen, vol. i. cap. 4-7; Voigt, Jus naturale, dc. d. Romer, 4 vols., Leipsic, 1856-75, vol. iii. §§ 98, 99, and vol. iv. Beilage xix. Nos. 1, 2, 4; Baron, Die Condictionen, Berlin, 1881, §§ 15, 16. :

ROMAN

LA W

plaintiff being successful in an action for corte pecunia, but delay was made by the defendant in satisfying the judgment, execution fol- lowed in ordinary form. How the matter was arranged in an action on the Calpurnian law for a certa res is not so obvious. What the plaintiff wanted was specific delivery or damages, and by some the opinion is entertained that he formulated his claim alternatively. Of this there is no evidence ; and,Gaius's statement that under the system of the legis actioncs condemnation was always in the ipsa res, i.c., the specific thing sued for, leads to the assumption that a judgment for the plaintiff, on which specific implement failed, must have been followed by an arbitriwm litis aestimandae for assessment of the damages in money, and that execution procecded thereon as if the judgment had been for a sum of money in the first instance. The general opinion, however, is that the judge to whom the issue was remitted assessed the damages himself and as a matter of course,—that the instruction to him was quanti res crit, tantam pecuniam condemnato.

[JUS CIVILE.

The Legis Actio per Manus Injectionem.2—This "action Per of the law" was ordinarily employed as a means of execu- manus

tion against the body of a judgment-debtor or one who had confessed liability in the first stage of a process. But, in certain cases in which it was thought proper that a creditor should have a more summary remedy than was afforded by a sacramental action or one per judicis postulationem, he was allowed to apprehend his debtor without any ante- cedent judgment; and, if the debtor disputed liability, the question could be tried only in proceedings at his in- stance, or sometimes at that of a third party on his behalf, for a stay of execution. It will simplify matters, however, to confine our attention to it in the meantime as a means of execution against the body of a judgment-debtor. Gaius's description of it is very general ; for details we are indebted principally to the octes Atticae of Aulus Gellius, in an account which he gives (put into the mouth of Sext. Cecilius Africanus, a well-known jurist of about the same time as Gaius, and a contemporary of his own) of the provisions of the XII. Tables in reference to it. Afri- canus is made to say that according to his belief

(opnor) the words of the statute were these :—"'For admitted money debts and in causes that have been regularly determined by judgment (aerts confessi rebusque jure judicatis) there shall be thirty days' grace. After that there may be manus enjectio. 'The apprehending creditor shall then bring his debtor before the magistrate. If he still fail to satisfy the judgment, and no vindex come forward to relieve him, his creditor may carry him home and put him in chains. He may live at his own cost; if not, his creditor must give him daily a pound of spelt, or more if he please." Africanus continues narrativé: "There was still room for the parties to come to terms; but, if they did not, the debtor was kept in chains for sixty days. Towards the end of that time he was brought before the preetor in the comitium on three consecutive market-days, and the amount of the judgment-debt proclaimed. After the third capite poenas dabat,"—what these words mean will be considered in the sequel,—" or else he was sent across the Tiber to be sold to a foreigner. And this capital penalty, sanctioned in the hope of deterring men from unfaithfulness to their engagements, was one to be dreaded because of its atrocity and of the new terrors with which the decemvirs thought proper to invest it. For, if it was to more creditors than one that the debtor had been adjudged, they might, if they pleased, cut up and divide his body. Here are the words

? To the literature on p. 681, note 1, may be added Huschke, Nexum, 1846, p. 79 sg.; Savigny, "Das altrém. Schuldrecht," in his Verm. Schriften, vol. ii., 1850, p. 369 sq.; Hoffmann, Die Forcten u. Sanaten, nebst Anhang iiber d. altrém. Schuldrecht, Vienna, 1866, p. 54 sq. ; Unger, in the Zeitschr. f. Rechtsgesch., vol. vii. (1868), p. 192 sq.; Vainberg, Le nexum et la contrainte par corps en droit Rom., Paris, 1874, p. 36 sq.; Bruns, in the Zeitschr. f. Rechtsgesch., vol. xii. (1876), ' p. 128 sg.; Exner, in the Zettschr. f. Rechtsgesch., vol. xiii. (1878), p. 392 sq.; Voigt, "Ueber d. Gesch. d. rém. Executionsrechtes," in the Berichte d. k. stichs. Geselisch. d. Wissenschaften (Phil. -Hist. Cl.), vol. xxxiv. (1882), p. 76 sq.; Voigt, XII. Tafeln, vol. i. 8§ 63-65 ; Ihering (as on p. 681, note 2), pp. 196 s¢., 232 Sq.

JUS CIVILE. |

of the statute,—'Tertiis nundinis partis secanto. minusve secuerunt, se fraude esto.' "

Such is Gellius's account of the provisions of the XII. Tables in reference to this legis aetio. But it is to be borne in mind that he does not vouch for its accuracy ; the Tables were already in his time matter of antiquity, and even the jurists knew nothing of them beyond what was still in observance. That he has repro- duced them only partially seems almost beyond question ; for in another chapter he himself quotes a couple of sentences that are to all appearance from the same context. We have to face, therefore, the extreme probability that the record is incomplete and the possibility besides that it is not literally accurate. There is room for error, conscquently, in two directions ; but the nature and effect of the procedure in its main features may be gathered from the texts as they stand with reasonable certainty.

It was competent only after thirty days from the date of judg- ment or confession. It was apprehension of the debtor by the creditor himself,—in its first stage, at least, an act of pure self-help. The debtor had at once to be brought before the magistrate, in order that his creditor might obtain authority to carry him away and provisionally confine him in the domestic lock-up. Such a course, however, was avoided either (1) by instant payment or other implement of the judgment, or (2) by the intervention of a vindex or champion. The position taken by the latter was not exactly that either of a surety or of an attorney for the judicatus demanding a rehearing of the case: he appeared rather as a con- troverter in his own name of the right of the creditor to proceed further with his execution, on the ground that the judgment was invalid, This necessitated an action between the vindex and the creditor, in which the former was plaintiff, but to which the debtor was not a party. If it failed, then the vindex was liable for double the amount of the original debt, as a penalty on him for having improperly interfered with the course of justice ; but on payment he had relief against the original debtor who had been liberated through his intervention. Failing a vindex and failing payment, the ercditor took his debtor home and incarcerated him, dealing with him for sixty days in the manner above described. On their expiry, without any arrangement, there was a magisterial decree (addietio) awarding the debtor to his creditor.

What right did this addictio confer upon the creditor? The debtor, says Gellius, ‘“‘capite poenas dabat,” which he interprets as meaning that his creditor might put him to death, the alterna- tive being his sale as a slave beyond the Roman frontier. Accord- ing to this view a man sentenced to twenty-five asses for a petty assault, which he could not pay, might have to suffer death in- stead. Manifest theft was considered a greater offence, or at least to merit a heavier punishment, than non-manifest,—slavery for the former, a pecuniary penalty for the latter ; but, ifit had been the case that every judicatus who failed within three months to satisfy his creditor might be put to death, then the non-mauifest thief against whom a judgment had becn obtained must often in the end have suffered a penalty more serious than that which overtook him whose theft had been manifest,—slavcry for the graver offence, death for the lighter. Capite poenas dabat, therefore, cannot have meant death. But it is just as impossible that it can have meant slavery. And there is abundant evidence that the addictus, even after the completion of his two months of provisional detention, was still de jure frce,—that he was not capite minutus even as regarded citizenship or family rights, and that any property he had still remained his own. The only other cxplanation is that “he paid the penalty with his person,” in contradistinction to “his means.” Caput is used in opposition to bona. Under the law of the Tables, when the manus injeetio was at the instance of one creditor only, the extent of the latter’s right was to detain his debtor in free bondage, making what use he could of his services, and exercising discipline over him as if he were a slave. But for the mistaken notion that a creditor was entitled after the expiry of the three months to put his debtor to death—of which there is uot a single instance on record—it is unlikely that any one would have thought of imputing to the partis sccanto such an inhuman meaning as that a plurality of creditors might cut the body of their addictus in pieces and each take a share. ;

The opinion is entertained by many jurists that the partis secanto of the Tablcs referred not to the body but to the belongings of the debtor,—that when there were concurrent creditors they shared his familia amongst them. There are two difficulties to face, tl) that, once a debtor was in the hands of a creditor, even provisionally, manus injectio by a second creditor was impossible ; and (2) that the debtor’s estate did not fall

within the power of the incarcerat- ing creditor. The first is removed by a suggestion of Voigt's, that the plurality of creditors Gellius speaks of may have referred to the case of co-heirs taking proceedings against a debtor of their ancestor's. The second disappears on a slight rearrangement of the words of the Tables as Gellius records them.! The result to

1 Reconstructions are always hazardous. But, on the footing above explained, the provision of the Tables may have been something like

Si plus

which it brings us is this: where there was but one creditor con- cerned, and the two months of provisional detention expired with- – out payment, or intervention of a vindex, or compromise of some sort, the debtor definitively became his creditor's free bondman in virtue of the magisterial addietio; but, where co-heirs were con- cerned, as bondage and service to all of them would have been inconvenient if not impossible when thcy were not to continue to possess the inheritance in common, the debtor was sent across the Tiber and sold as a slave, and the price got for him divided among them. If one or other got more than his fair share, no harm was done; for the disproportion could eventually be redressed in an action of partition (aectio familiac erciscundae).

The disgraceful cruelties and indignities to which credi- tors subjected both their judgment and nexal debtors led to many a commotion in the first two centuries of the republic. The latter were probably much more numerous than the judicati, and, being in great part the victims of innocent misfortune, it was the sufferings they endured at the hands of relentless creditors that so often roused the sympathies and indignation of the populace. But the judgment-debtors had suffered along with them; and some of the provisions of the Peetilian law of 428 were meant to protect them against the needless and unjustifiable severity that had characterized their treatment. The manus injectio itself was not abolished, nor the possible intervention of a wndex; neither were the domum ductio

that followed, and the provisional imprisonment with the light chains, authorized by the Tables while it lasted ; nor was the formal addictio of the debtor to his creditor when the sixty days had expired without arrangement. But after addiction, if it was for nothing more than civil debt, there were to be no more dungeons and stripes, fetters and foot-blocks ; the creditor was to treat his debtor and his industry as a source of profit that would in time diminish and possibly extinguish his indebtedness, rather than as an object upon which he might perpetrate any cruelty by way of punishment. Although the edict of P. Rutilius of 647 vu.c. provided a creditor with machinery for attacking the estate of his debtor, he had still the alternative of incarceration. This might be avoided under the Julian law of cessio by the debtor's making a complete surrender of his goods to his creditor; but, failing such surrender, incarceration continued to be resorted to even under the legislation of Justinian. Latterly, however, it was not by manus injectio that the incarceration was effected ; for it went out of use with the definitive establishment of the formular system of procedure.

It was as directed against judgment and nexal debtors (see infra, p- 698) that manus injectio was of most importance and chiefly made its mark in history. But there were other cases in which it was resorted to under special statutory authority, where a remedy secmed advisable more sharp and summary than that by ordinary action. In some of these it was spoken of as manus injectio pro judicato (t.¢., as if upon a judgment), in others as simple manus injectio (manus injectio pwra). In the first the arrestee was not allowed to dispute his alleged indebtedness in person ; he could do so only through a vindex ; and if no one intervencd for him in that character he was carricd off and dealt with by his arresting creditor as if a judgment had been obtained against him. In the second he was not required to find a vindcaw, but might himself dispute the verity of the charge made against him, under penalty, however, of a duplication of his Hability if he failed in his contention. By a Lee Vallia, probably in the latter half of the 6th century of the city, this manus injectio pura was substituted for that pro judieato in all cases in which the ground of arrest was neither judgment nor

depensum, t.e., payment by a surety or other party on account of the true debtor, who failed to relieve the former within six months

thereafter. ; ; : The Legis Actio per Pignoris Capionem.?—In the ritual

this: "Tertiis nundinis addicitor. Capite poenas dato, Si plures sunt, trans Tiberim peregre venum danto, partis secanto. Si plus minusve secuerunt, se fraude esto "—" On the third market-day there shall be decree of addiction. The addictus shall then pay the penalty with his person. If there be several creditors to whom he is awarded, let them sell him beyond Tiber and divide the price. If any of them have got more or Jess than his fair share, no harm shall result,"

2 To the literature on p. 681, note 1, add Degenkolb, Die Lex Hiero-

Per pignoris capio- nem.

Pro- cedure outside legis actiones.

686

of the actio sacraments the vis civilis et festucaria was a reminiscence of the vera solida vis with which men settled their disputes about property in the earliest infancy of the commonwealth. Manus injectio was a survival from times when the wronged was held entitled to lay hands upon the wrongdoer, and himself subject him to punishment ; custom and legislation intervened merely to regulate the conditions and mode of exercise of what essentially was still self-help. In pignoris capio self-help was likewise the dominant idea. It may be fairly enough described by the single word distress,—the taking by one man of property belonging to another in satisfaction of or in security for a debt due by the latter which he had failed to pay. The taking did not proceed upon any Judgment, nor did it require the warrant of a magistrate; it might be resorted to even in the absence of the debtor; but it required to be accompanied by certain words of style, spoken probably in the presence of witnesses. It was only in a few exceptional cases that it was competent, in some by force of custom, in others by statute. What was the procedure, and what its effects, are far from certain. Thering, founding on some expressions of Cicero's,

con- jectures that, whether the debt was disputed or not, the distrainer could neither sell nor definitely appropriate his pignus without magisterial authority,—that in every case he was bound to institute proceedings in justification of his caption, and to take in them the position of plaintiff. The idea is ingenious, and puts the pignoris capio in a new and interesting light. It makes it a summary means of raising a question of right for whose judicial arbitra- ment no other process of law was open,—with the addi- tional advantage that it secured instant satisfaction to the raiser of it in the event of the question being deter- mined in his favour. If against him, the inevitable result, in substance at least, must have been a judgment that he had no right to retain his pledge, with probably a finding that he was further liable to its owner in the value of it, as a punishment for his precipitancy.}

Judicial or Quasi-Judicial Procedure outside the Legis Actioncs. ~— Whatever may have been the extent of the field covered by the actions of the law, they did not altogether exclude other judicial or quasi-judicial agencies. The supreme magistrate every now and then was called upon to intervene in matters brought under his cognizance by petition or complaint, in which his aid was sought not so much to protect a vested right of property or claim as to maintain public order, or to prevent the occurrence or continu- ance of a state of matters that might prove prejudicial to family or individual interests. The process was not an action, with its stages in jure and in judicio, but an inquiry conducted from first to last by the magistrate himself; and his finding, unless it was a dis- missal of the complaint or petition, was embodied in an order (decretwm, interdictwm) which it was for him to enforce by such means as he thought fit,—manw militari or by fine or imprison- ment. Some jurists are disposed to give a very wide range to this magisterial intervention. One of its most important manifestations was in connexion with disputes about the occupancy of the public domain lands. These did not belong in property to the occupants, so that an action founded on ownership was out of the question. But, as the occupancy was not only recognized but sanctioned by the state, it was right, indeed necessary in the interest of public order, that it should be protected against disturbance. In the measures resorted to for its protection Niebuhr recognized the origin of

the famous possessory interdict wét possidctis; and, al- though opinions differ as to whether protection of the better right EP eee a Cte ee

nica, Berlin, 1861, p. 95 sg.; Thering, Geist d. rim. Rechts, vol. i. Sula Voigt, XII. Tafeln, vol. i. p. 502 Sq.

‘ This was according to the spirit of the early system, which en- deavoured to check reckless or dishonest litigation by penalties, —e.g., forfeiture of the swmma sacramenti and duplication of the value of un- restored property and profits in the sacramental procedure ; duplica- tion of the value of the cause when judgment was against the defend- ant in an action upon an engagement embodied in a lea mancipit or les neat ; duplication against a vindex who interfered ineffectually in manus ingectio against a judgment-debtor ; duplication against an heir who refused without judicial compulsitor to pay a legacy bequeathed per damnationem ; the addition of one-third more by way of penalty against a debtor found liable in an actio certae creditae pecuniae, &c.

or prevention of a breach of the peace was what primarily influ- enced the magistrate’s intervention, there is a pretty general accord in accepting this view. Another illustration of this magisterial intervention is to be found in the interdiction of a spendthrift,—a decree depriving of his power of administration a man who was squandering his family estate and reducing his children to penury ; a third presents itself in the removal of a tutor from office on the ground of negligence or maladministration, brought under the notice of the magistrate by any third party in what was called postulatio suspecti tutoris ; and a fourth in the putting of a creditor in possession of the goods of an insolvent debtor, which must have been common enough even before the general bankruptcy regula- tions of the Rutilian edict. These are to be taken merely as ex- amples of this magisterial intervention, which manifested itself in very various directions ; and it is easy to see how largely such pro- cedure might be utilized for remedying the grievances of persons who, from defect of complete legal

title, want of statutory authority, or otherwise, were not in a position to avail themselves of the "actions of the law."

In one of the Valerio-Horatian laws consequent on the second secession of the plebcians there was mention of ten judges (jadices decemvirt), whose persons were declared as inviolable as those of the tribunes of the people and the plebeian ediles. These were a body of judges elected to officiate on reniit from a tribune or edile in questions arising between members of the plebeian body. We are without details as to the institution of this plebeian judicatory, the questions that fell under its cognizance, the forms of process employed, the law administered by it, and the effect of its judg- ments. It is not much referred to by the historians; and its decadence has been attributed to the fact that the Lex Hortcnsia of 468 made the nwndinac lawful court days (dies fasti), and so made it possible for the country folks coming to the city to market to carry on their processes before the pretor.

As all in a manner exercising judicial or quasi-judicial functions must also be mentioned the pontiffs, the consuls, and afterwards the censors as magistri morum, the chiefs of the gentes within the gentile corporations, and heads of families within their households. While it may be the fact that with the enactment of the XII. Tables the jurisdiction of the pontiffs? was materially narrowed, it certainly did not disappear,—witness the famous case in which Cicero made before them the oration of which he was so proud, Pro domo sua. The action of the consuls and afterwards of the censors as guardians of public morals, and the social and political disqualifications and pecuniary penalties with which they visited persons who had been guilty of perjury or gross perfidy, did not a little to foster fidelity to engagements. Through the same agency the exercise of a variety of rights whose abuse could not be made niatter of action—the husband's powcr over his wife, the father's over his children—was controlled and kept within bounds. It was not on light grounds, indeed, that the majesty of the patcr- familias within the household could be called in question ; it was only when he forgot that in the exercise of serious discipline within his family he was bound to act judicially. For he also was a judge —judex domesticus, as he is often called, though in all cases of gravity he was required to invoke the advice of his kinsfolk ina

family council. On him lay the duty of controlling his family ; if he failed to do so he was himself in danger of censorial animad- version. That his gens also, if he were a patrician, had some super- vision and power of calling him to account is extremely probable ; every corporation had it more or less over its members ; but neither historians nor jurists give us any definite information.

Between citizens and foreigners with whom Rome was in alliance Recupe- by a treaty conferring reciprocal right of action the proceedings ratio.

took the form known as recuperatio.? It was an international process, modelled to some extent upon, and deriving some of its technical terms from, the fetial clarigatio. The action was always raised in the forum contractus. The magistrate ordinarily presiding there heard what parties had to say in plaint and defence, and then put in simple shape the points of fact arising on them, authorizing the recuperators to whom the matter was remitted to find for plaintiff or defendant according to circumstances. The recuperators were sometimes three, sometimes five, sometimes still more numer- ous, but always in odd number ; whether the nationality of both parties required to be represented we are not told. Expedition being in most cases a matter of importance, recuperators were re- quired to give judgment within ten days. How execution pro- ceeded upon it, if it were for the plaintiff, does not clearly appear ;

2 See Hiillmann, Jus pontijictum der Romer, Bonn, 1837 ; Cauvet, Le droit pontifical chez les anciens Romains, Caen, 1869 ; Bouchc- Leclerq, Les pontifes de Vance. Rome, Paris, 1871; Marquardt, Rom. Staatsverwalt., vol. iii. p. 290 sq.

3 See Collman, De Romanor. jud. recuperatorio, Berlin, 1835; Carl Sell, Die recuperatio der Rémer, Brunswick, 1837 ; Huschke (rev. Sell), in Richter's Arit. Jahrbiicher, vol. i. (1837), pp. 868-911 ; Voigt, Jus naturale, &c., vol. ii. §§ 28-32; Karlowa, Rém. Civilprocess, pp.

218-230.

The citizen and his caput.

Capitis demi- nutio.

JUS CIVILE. |

Voigt, founding on a few words in Festus, concludes it must have becn by something like pignorts capio. This recuperatory pro- cedure in time came to be resorted to in some cases even where both parties were citizens. There are numerous instances of it in Cicero ; and it is remarkable that in most of the pretorian actions ex delicto the remit was not to a judex but to recuperators, The explanation may be in the comparative summariness of the remedy.

III. DEVELOPMENT OF THE SUBSTANTIVE INSTITUTIONS OF THE Law.

The Citizen and his " Caput."—The early law of Rome was essentially personal, not territorial. A man enjoyed the benefit of its institutions and of its protection, not because he happened to be within Roman territory, but because he was a citizen,—one of those by whom and for whom its law was established. The theory of the early jus genttum was that a man sojourning within the bounds of a foreign state was at the mercy of the latter and its citizens, that he himself might be dealt with asa slave, and all that belonged to him appropriated by the first comer ; for he was outside the pale of the law. Without some sort of alliance with Rome a stranger had no right to claim protection against maltreatment of his person or attempt to deprive him of his property ; and even then, unless he belonged to a state entitled by treaty to the in- ternational judicial remedy of recuperatio, it was by an appeal to the good offices of the supreme magistrate, or through the intervention of a citizen to whom he was allied by the (frequently hereditary) bond of hospitium, and not by means of any action of the jus civile set in motion by himself. A non-citizen—originally hostis, and afterwards usually called peregrinus 1—in time came to be regarded as entitled to all the rights the jus gentium re-cognized as belonging to a freeman, and to take part as freely as a Roman in any transaction of the jus gentium ; but that was not until Rome, through contact with other nations and the growth of trade and commerce, had found it necessary to modify her jurisprudence by the

adoption of many new institutions of a more liberal and less ex- clusive character than those of the jus civile.

A citizen's civil personality was technically his caput. The extent of it depended on his family status. It was only among citizens that the supremacy of the paterfamilias and the subjection of those 7m manu, potestate, or mancipto were recognized,—only among them therefore that the posi- tion of an individual in the family was of moment. While in public life a man's supremacy or subjection in the family was immaterial, in private life it was the pater- familias alone who enjoyed full jural capacity. Those subject to him had a more limited personality; and, so far as capacity to take part in transactions of the jus civile was concerned, it was not inherent in them but derived from their paterfamilias: they were the agents of his will, representatives of his persona in every act whereby a right was acquired by them for the family to which they belonged.

Whenever a citizen either ceased altogether to be a mem- ber of a Roman family or passed from one family into an- other, there was technically capitis minutio or deminutio, ex- cept in the cases of filiifamulias and jiliaefamalras becoming flamens or vestals ; for, though they changed their family,

1 Neither "alien" nor 'foreigner' is an adequate rendering of peregrinus. For peregrint included not only citizens of other states or colonies, independent or dependent, but also aé\cdes,—men who could not call themselves citizens (cives) at all, as, for example, the dediticii whom Rome had vanquished and whose civic organization she had destroyed, offenders sent into banishment, &c. ; and until Caracalla's general grant of the franchise the greater proportion of her provincial subjects were also spoken of as peregrins. This, though linguistically objectionable, is a safer word than '"'non-citizen" ; for the latter would include the Junian Latins of the early empire, who, though not citizens, yet were not reckoned as péregrini.

yet it was by passing from a human into a divine one. When a citizen forfeited his freedom, his capitis deminutio was said to be maxima ; he lost all capacity, whether under the jus covile or the jus gentium. When, retaining freedom, he went into exile or joined a Latin colony, or otherwise became a peregrin, the diminution of his capacity was only media or minor; it was his rights and privileges under the jus civile that alone were affected. When both free- dom and citizenship remained, and no more occurred than the severance of his connexion with a particular family (familiae mutatio), the diminution was said to be minima. Very simple illustrations present themselves in the case of a paterfamilias becoming filiusfamilias by adrogation, or a materfamilias passing into the hand of a husband by con- farreation or coemption ; in both cases he or she who had been sez juris thereby became alieni juris. This was descent in the family scale. It almost appears as if some of the later Roman jurists assumed, as do many moderns, that such descent or degradation was essential to the idea of minutro capitis; for Paul accounts for its presence in the case of emancipation—which converted a filiusfamilias into a paterfamilias, and thus manifestly improved his status— by the observation that in the process of release from his father's potestas a child had to pass, for however brief a period, through a condition of quasi-slavery (mancipiwm). But in reality degradation had nothing to do with it. It was immaterial whether the change was from a higher family position to a lower, or from a lower to a higher," or to the same position in the new family that had been held in the old,—as when a filiusfamilias was transferred by his father into the potestas of an adopter, or when the Jilufamilias of a person giving himself in adrogation passed with him into the potestas of the adrogator: in every case there was capitis minutio. It was not the change of family position that caused it, but the change of family itself,— the change from one family to another. The civil per-sonality of Titius while a jfiliusfamilias in the potestas of Sempronius,— the expectancy of succession, the agnatic relationships, the derivative capacity for being a party to a mancipation or a sponsio that resulted from the rela- tionship,—all came to an end through the severance of the family tie. He might acquire a new and independent capacity on becoming swt juris by emancipation, or a new derivative capacity on passing into the potestas of Mzevius by adoption; but his old personality

quoad civilia was extinguished. This is what some of the jurists mean when they say that capitis deminutio was civil death.

The most important consequence of minima capitis de- minutio was that it not only extinguished patria potestas where it existed, but severed the bond of agnation between the capite minutus and all those who had previously been related to him as agnates. There was no longer any right of succession between them on intestacy ; their reciprocal prospective rights of tutory were defeated, and the mnutzo of either tutor or ward put an end to a subsisting guardian- ship, assuming always that it was a tutela legetima or agnatic cura furiosit. Very remarkable, yet quite logical, was the doctrine that the mnutio extinguished the claims of credi- tors of the minutus ; their debtor, the person with whom they had contracted, was civilly dead, and dead without an heir, and therefore there was no one against whom an action of the jus civile could be directed in order to enforce payment. But equity eventually provided a remedy, by giving the creditors a preetorian action in which the mnutio was held as rescinded, and which the new paterfamilias was bound to defend on pain of having to give up all the estate

2 Children who became swt juris by their parent's death did not change their family ; the change was not in them, but in the disappear- ance of the family head ; therefore they were not regarded as capite minutt.

Law of family relations.

688

he had acquired through the adrogation or im manum con- ventwo.

The Law of the Family Relations.—So far as appears no serious inroad was made by the XII. Tables on the law affecting husband and wife, unless in the recognition of the legality of marriage entered into without any solemnity, and not involving that subjection of the wife to the hus- band (manus) which was a necessary cousequence of the patrician confarreation and plebeian coemption. These were left untouched. But it seems to have become a practice with some of the plebeians to tie the marriage bond rather loosely in the first instance,—possibly (as became

quite general at a later period) in consequence of objection by the women to renounce their independence and right to retain their own property and earnings, more probably because taking a woman to be merely the mother of their children (matrimonium) had been forced upon them before coemption had been introduced as a means of making her a lawful wife, and so they had become in a manner habituated to it. But there seems also to have been an idea that, as a man might acquire the ownership of a thing to which his legal title was defective by pro- longed possession of it, so he might acquire manus, with all its consequences, over the woman with whom he had thus informally united himself by prolonged cohabitation with her as his wife. This had become customary law. The Tables accepted it; all that was needed was to define the conditions under which manus should be held to have been superinduced, and the wife converted from a doubtful uxor into a lawful materfamilias. Hence the provision that, if a woman, married neither by confarreation nor coemption, desired to retain her independence, she must periodically absent herself for three nights from her hus- band's house (trinoctialis usurpatio),—twelve months' un- interrupted cohabitation being required to give him that power over her which would have been created instantly had the marriage been accompanied by either of the recognized. solemnities.

Amongst the fragments of the Tables so industriously collected

'there is none that refers to a wife's marriage portion (dos) ; but it

is hardly conceivable that it was as yet unknown. Justinian says that in ancient times it was regarded as a donation to the husband with his wife, rather than as a separate estate that was to be used by him while the marriage lasted but to revert to her or her repre- sentatives on its dissolution. And it is easy to see that, where there was manus, the wife becoming a member of her husband's family and everything of hers becoming his, such must originally have been its character. But even then, when a man gave his daughter (filiafamilias)—who could have nothing of her own—in marriage, and promised her husband a portion with her, there must have been some process of law for compelling him to pay it ; and Voigt's conjecture that an actio dictac dotis was employed for

the purpose has much in its favour. As regards divorce, Cicero alludes vaguely to a provision in the Tables about a man depriving his wife of the house-keys and turning her out of doors, with some such words as "take what is thine and get thee gone." This can- not have applied to confarreate marriages, which could be dissolved only by the religious ceremony of diffarreation. And even as regards other marriages the statement of the historians is that divorces were few and far between until the 6th century of the city, and that, until the same date, any man who turned his wife away, however serious the ground, without the cognition of the family council was liable to penalties at the hands of the censors.

Of the two or three provisions of the Tables that affected details of the patria potestas, which itself was assuined to be so well estab- lished by customary law as to need no statutory sanction or defini- tion, one was in the words "si paterfamilias ter filium venum duit, a patre filius liber esto." This came to be construed by the jurists as meaning that so powerful was the bond of the potestas that it could not definitively be loosed until the father had three times gone through the process of fictitious sale by which emancipa- tion was effected. But the conception of the law seems to indicate that its original purpose must have been rather to confer a benefit ona son in potestate, by declaring him zpso jure free from it on a certain event, than to place difficulties in the way of his emancipa- tion. "Ifa housc-father have thrice sold his son, the latter shall be free from his father." It reads as if the intention were to rescue the

son from what, by its frequent repetition, was suggestive of a total absence of parental affection rather than reluctant obedience to over- whelming necessity. May not its object have been to restrain the practice, which prevailed toa late period in the empire, of men giving their children to their creditors in security for their loans,—a process that, at the time of the Tables, could be effected only by an actual transfer of the child per aes et libram as a free bondman (mancipti causa), under condition of reconveyance when the loan was repaid ?

The nature of the relation between master and slave, like that of manus and patria potestas, seems also to have been too notorious to require exposition in the Tables. 'We find recorded only two re- ferences to it, one dealing with the case of a slave who had a con- ditional testamentary gift of freedom (state liber), the other with noxal surrender (noxae deditio). The provision about noxal sur- render in all probability was not limited to a slave ; it was to the effect that, if a member of a man's family (familiaris, 7.e., a son or a daughter in potestate or a slave) committed a theft from or did mischief to property belonging to a third party, or a domestic animal belonging to one man did harm to another, the father of the delinquent child, or the owner of the slave or animal, should either surrender him or it to the person injured or make reparation in damages. In course of time the surrender came to be regarded as a means of avoiding the primary obligation of making reparation. But comparative jurisprudence recognizes in the enactment of the Tables a modified survival of the ancient right of an injured party to have the delinquent corpus,—man, beast, or thing,—given up to him to wreak his revenge upon it privately, the modification con- sisting in the alternative of reparation offered to the owncr. This noxal surrender, failing reparation, had gone out of use in the case of daughters in potestate before the time of Gaius, and in the case of sons before that of Justinian ; but the law remained unchanged so far as slaves and domestic animals were concerned even in that emperor's legislation.

Guardianship and the Introduction of the Order of Agnates.

Gentile

—So long as Rome was patrician the gens charged itself guard- with the guardianship of a clansman's orphaned pupil #2ship.

children and his widow and unmarried daughters above pupilarity after his decease (¢utela), as well as with that of male members of his family who were sat juris, but above the age of pupilarity, when they chanced to be lunatic, im- becile, prodigal, or helplessly infirm (cura, curatio, curatela). That was on the supposition, as regarded children, widow, and unmarried daughters above pupilarity, that no testa- mentary appointment of tutors by their deceased parent had displaced the gens, though whether testamentary nomi- nations were then held competent it is impossible to say. The gens in council, in all probability, appointed one of its members to act as tutor or curator as the case might be, itself prescribed his duties, and itself called him to ac- count for any failure in his administration.

But, as this gentile tutory could not be extended to the plebeians, among whom some law of guardianship was as much required as among their fellow-citizens of the higher order, the decemvirs found it expedient to devise a new one of universal application. The Tables contained no express authority for testamentary nomination of tutors to the widow of the testator, or to his pupil children and grown-up unmarried daughters; but such appointment, if unknown previously, was soon held to be justified by a liberal interpretation of the very inclusive provision, "uti legassit suae rei, ita jus esto." In the absence of testa- mentary appointment the nearest male agnates of lawful age were to be tutors. This tutory of agnates was an in- vention of the decemvirs, just as was the agnates' right of succession on intestacy. The plebeians had no gentes, at least until a much later period ; so, to make the law equal for all, it was necessary to introduce a new order of heirs and tutors. 'Tutores … ex lege XII. Tabularum in- troducuntur … agnati" is the very notable language of Ulpian. And his words are very similar in speaking of their right of succession; for, while he says of testament- ary inheritances no more than that they were confirmed by the XII. Tables, he explains that the legitimae hereditates of agnates and patrons were derived from them.! The

1 Ulp., Frag., xxvii. 5, "legitimae hereditatis jus… ex lege Duodecim Tabularum descendit." This derivation of agnatic inherit-

Guard- ianship of agnates.

Owner- ship in res Inan- cipi and res nec mancipi.

JUS CIVILE. |

phrases legitema cognatio, legitima hereditas, legitimt heredes, tutela legitima, tutores legitimi themselves proclaim the origin of agnation, agnatic inheritance, and agnatic tutory ; for, though the word legitimus might be applied to any in- stitution based on statute, yet in the ordinary case it indi- cated one introduced by the XII. Tables, the law of laws.

A man's agnates were those of his kinsmen who were subject to the same patria potestas as himself, ar would have been had the common ancestor been still alive. A man's sons and daughters im potestate, therefore, whether the relationship was by birth or adoption, and his wife in manu (being jfiliae loco) were each other's agnates. But a wife not im manu was not their agnate ; nor were children who had been emancipated or otherwise capite minuti the agnates of either their brothers and sisters or their mother an manu, A man was an agnate of his brother's children, assuming always that there had been no capitis deminutio on either side; but he was not an agnate of his sister's children, for they were not ejusdem familiae: they were agnates of their father's family, not of their mother's. In like manner, and again assuming the absence of minutio capitis, the children of brothers were each other's agnates, but not the children of a brother and a sister or of two sisters. Brothers and sisters were agnates of the second degree ;! a man and his brother's children were of the third, the children of two brothers (consobrini) of the fourth, and so on,—it being a condition, however, that the kinship should always result either from lawful marriage or from adoption in one or other of its forms.

When, therefore, a man died leaving pupil male descendants or unmarried female descendants who by his death became swi juris, they got their brothers of lawful age as their tutors ; if he was sur- vived by his

wife, and she had been tn manu, her sons, or it might be stepsons, acted for her in the same capacity ; in either case they took office as the nearest qualified male agnates. If the widow had no sons or stepsons of full age, and the children consequently no brothers, the tutory devolved on the agnates next in order,—d.e., the brothers germane and consanguinean of the deceased husband and father; for they were agnates of the third degree. And so with agnates of the fourth and remoter degrees. Failing agnates who could demonstrate their pop the tutory probably passed to the gens when the ward happened to belong to one. This is nowhere expressly stated ; but Cicero gives what he represents to be an enactment of the Tables, making the fellow-gentiles of a lunatic his guardians on failure of agnates; and analogy seems to justify the extension of the same rule to the case of sane pupil and female wards.

The curatory of minors above pupilarity was of much later date than the Tables. The only curatories they sanctioned were those of lunatics and spendthrifts. A lunatic (furiosus) was committed to the care of his agnates, and, failing them, of his fellow-gentiles ; and a few words in Festus seem to suggest that arrangements had to be made by them for his safe custody.

Mancipation and the Law of Property.—In the early law there was no technical word for ownership of things; it was an element of the house-father's manus. In time, although it is impossible to say when, the word dominium

came into use; but, so far as can be discovered, it did not

occur in the XIJ. Tables, and must have been of later introduction. In those days, when a man asserted owner- ship of a thing, he was content to say, "It 1s mine," or, "It is mine according to the law of the Quirites." The distinction was this, that, while the first was sufficient to entitle a man de facto holding a thing as his own to pro- tection against a thief or any one attempting forcibly to ance from the XII. Tables was specially noticed by Danz in his Gesch. d. rom. Rechts, 2d ed., Leipsic, 1871-73, vol. ii, p. 95, but is generally ignored. ;

1 To determine the degree of propinquity between two persons it was necessary to count the generations upwards from the first to the common ancestor and downwards from him to the second. Conse- quently brothers were related in the second degree, uncle and nephew in the third, first cousins in the fourth, and so on: "tot gradus quot generationes."

dispossess him, the second was necessary when he appealed toa court of law to declare the legality of his title and his right to oust an individual withholding the possession neither theftuously nor by force. It is said by some jurists of eminence that under the law of the Tables what after- wards came to be called "dominium ex jure Quiritium" was competent only in the case of res mancipt,—of a man's house and farm, and the slaves and animals with which he worked them. But the usucapion (or acquisition by pro- longed possession) which they confirmed and regulated undoubtedly conferred quiritarian right ; and, as it applied to all things ownable without exception, it seems impossible .to maintain that res nec mancipi could not then be held in quiritarian ownership as fully as res mancipi.

The modes in which these two classes of things might be acquired in property were very various. But there was this important difference,— that, while a natural mode of acquisition sufficed in the case of res nec mancipi, some civil one was necessary for the derivative acquisition, at all events, of res mancipi. The most important were mancipation, surrender in court, usucapion, and bequest as singular modes, and inheritance, in manwm conventio, adrogation, and purchase of a confiscated estate as univer- sal modes. All these, with the exception of mancipation, applied equally to res nec mancipi. But the commonest of all the modes of transferring things of the latter class was simple tradition. If the transfer was by the owner, with the intention of passing the property, then the simple delivery of possession was enough, unless it was in virtue of a sale; in such a case, and because a vendor had as yet no action for the price, the Tables provided that the ownership should remain with him,

notwithstanding the change of possession, until the price was paid or security given for it.

_ The origin of the distinction between mancipable and non-man- Manci- cipable things, and of the form of conveyance by mancipation pation.

applicable to the first, has been explained in connexion with the reforms of Servius Tullius (supra, p. 676).2 As he introduced it, mancipation (then called mancipiwm) was not the imaginary sale that Gaius speaks of, but as real a sale as could well be conceived, —the weighing in scales, held by an official, of the raw metal that was to be the consideration for the transfer of a res manctpt, and the handing of it by the transferee to the transferrer, with the de- claration that thereby and therewith the thing in question became his in quiritary right,—and all this in words of style, and in the presence of certain witnesses who represented the pcople, and thus fortified the conveyance with a public sanction. As already shown, there is some reason to believe that, when large quantities of metal had to be weighed, the practice crept in of having this done before the witnesses had assembled ; and in the formal act only a single pound was weighed as representing the whole amount. This paved the way for the greater change that resulted from the introduction by the decemvirs of coined money. From that moment weighing became unnecessary. The price was counted out before the ccre- mony, and sometimes left to be done afterwards ; and, though, in that spirit of conservatism that was so marked in the adhesion to time-honoured forms after their raison d'étre was gone, the scale- bearer and the scales were still retained as indispensable elements of the mancipation, yet the scales were simply tonched by the pur- chaser with a single coin, in order that he might be able to recite the old formula—"T say that this slave is mine in quiritary right, and that by purchase (for such and such a price ?) with these scales and this bit of copper." And that one coin, says Gaius, was then handed by the trausferee to the transferrer, as if it were in fact the price of the purchase (quasi pretii loco). Thus transformed, the mancipation was undoubtedly an imaginary sale ; for the real price might have been paid weeks or months before, or might not be paid until weeks or months afterwards. The mancipation had become nothing more than a conveyance, and in this form it continued down to the end of the 3d

century of the empire to be the appro- priate mode of transfer of a rcs mancipt, or at least of conferring on the transferee of such a thing a complete legal title (dominium ex jure Quiritium). After that, however, it seems gradually to have gone into disuse, being inapplicable to lands out of Italy that did

2 Literature :—Leist, Mancipation und Higenthumstradition, Jena, 1865; Ihering, Geist d. rém. Rechts, vol. ii. § 46; Bechmann, Geschichte d. Kaufs im rim. Recht, Erlangen, 1876, pp. 47-299 ; Voigt, XJZ. Tafeln, vol. i. § 22, vol. ii. §§ 84-88.

XX. — 87

Surren- der in court,

690

not enjoy what was ealled jus Italicwm ; and long before the time of Justinian it had entirely disappeared. ; ;

The effects of a mancipation, provided the price had been paid or security given for it, were that the property passed instantly to the purchaser, and that the transferrer was held to warrant the transferee against eviction from the moment the price was received. In the absence of either payment or sureties for it, the title still remained with the vendor, so that it was in his power, by means of a real action, to get back what had been maneipated, even though it had passed into the possession of the vendee. The vendor's liability to the vendee in the event of eviction is usually supposed to have arisen tpso jure, that is to say, without anything expressly said about it; the acceptance by the transferrer of the coin with whieh the scales had been struck was held to have im- posed upon him an obligation to maintain the transferee in posses- sion, under a penalty of double the amount of the price, recoverable by the latter by what is usually called an actio auctoritatis. But this ipso jure obligation did not arise when the mancipation was either really or fictitiously gratuitous, — really, in the case of dona- tions, &c., fietitiously, when, on purpose to exclude the warranty, the reeital of the transferee was that the price was a single sesterce. . The right of a vendee to sue an actio auctoritatis arose

only when eviction resulted from a decree in a regular judicial process at the instance of a third party disputing his title, and was conditional on his having done all that was necessary on his part to bring his vendor (auctor) into the field to defend his own interests. And the duration of the auctoritas was limited by statute to two years in the case of lands and houses, to one year in the case of other things. As possession for those periods was sufficient to cure any defeet in the vendee's title, it was but reasonable that with their expiry the vendor's liability on his warranty should be at an end.

By a provision of the Tables in the very inclusive terms, 'cum nexum faciet mancipiumque, uti lingua nuncupassit, ita jus esto," the importance of mancipation was immensely increased ; for any sort of qualification germane to the transaction might be super- indueed upon it, and the range of its application thus greatly extended. Such qualifications were spoken of as leges mancipii,— self-imposed terms, conditions, or qualifications of the conveyance, which, as integral parts of the transaction per aes ct ibram, partook of its binding character and were law between the parties. The matter of oral declaration might be the acreage of lands, their freedom from burdens or right to easements, reservation of a usu- fruct, limitation of their mode of use, undertaking to reconvey on a certain event, or what not; the result was just so many obliga- tions created per acs ct libram, whose contravention or denial (Cicero tells us) was punished with a twofold penalty. Ordinarily the words spoken in the hearing of the witnesses fixed the begin- ning and the end of the liability ; it was enough that they were literally complied with, however much the other party might be injured by something inconsistent with their spirit, or which he had not taken the precaution to require should be made matter of declaration. But there was an exception (although possibly not introduced until long after the Tables) in the ease of that parti- cular mancipatory agreement which was known by the name of Jiducia, t.c., where the mancipation was to a creditor in security or to a friend for safe eustody, and the engagement was to return the thing mancipated in the one case when the debt secured by it was paid and in the other on demand. In such cases the transferee took the conveyance more in the transferrer's interest than his own . he became a trustee, entitled to be treated with consideration, and neither mulcted in a twofold

penalty when his inability to reconvey was due to no fault of his, nor forced to reconvey until relieved of eharges incurred by him in reference to the property. Accordingly it became the practice to import into the mancipation a reference to fides —"fidei fiduciae meum esse aio," with explanation of the purpose, &c., of the fiducia in the relative lex mancipit; this had the effect of freeing alike the right of the vendor and the obligation of the vendee from the hard-and-fast lines of the jus strictum, and subordinating them to the principles of bona fides,

Of the civil modes of acquiring property on singular title appli- cable to both res mancipt and res nec mancipi surrender in eourt (in jure cessio) was just a rct vindicatio arrested in its initial stage. The parties, cedent and eessionary, appeared before the magistrate ; the eessionary, taking the position of plaintiff, declared the thing his in quiritary right ; the cedent, as defendant, was asked what he had to say in answer; and, on his admission or silence, the magistrate at once pronounced a decree (addictio) which completed the transfer, but which might be subject to a condition or other limitation, or even to a fiduciary reservation. It was probably more resorted to for the constitution of servitudes, both real and personal, and transfer of such rights as patria potestas, tutory-at-law of a woman, or an inheritance that had already vested, than for con- veyance of property. For it was not only inconvenient, inasmuch as it required the parties to appear before the supreme magistrate in Rome, and eould not be earried through by a slave on his owner's behalf (as maneipation might), but it had the serious dis- advantage that it did not dpso jure imply any warranty of title by

the cedent or afford the eessionary any action against him in the event of eviction. The reason was that in form the right of the cessionary flowed from the magisterial decree,—"Since you say the thing is yours, and the cedent does not say it is his, I declare it yours,'—and not from any act or word of the cedent's, who was passive in the matter.

Adjudication was the decree of a judge in a divisory action, such Adjudi- as one for partition of an inheritance amongst co-heirs; it con- eation,

ferred upon each of them a separate and independent right in a part of what as a whole had previously been joint property.

Usucapion,! regulated by the XII. Tables, but not im- Usuea- probably recognized previously in a vague and uncertain pion.

way, converted uninterrupted possession (wsus) into quiri- tary property by efflux of time. The provision in the Tables was to this effect-—" usus auctoritas fundi biennium esto, ceterarum rerum annuus esto." The relation in which the words usus and auctoritas stand to each other has been a subject of much discussion : the prevailing opinion amongst modern civilians is that the first alone refers to usucapion, and the second to the warranty of title incum- bent on the vendor in a mancipation, and that both were limited to two years in the case of lands (and, by extensive interpretation, houses), and to one year in the case of any- thing else. In the later jurisprudence the possession re- quired to be based on a sufficient title and the possessor to be in good faith. But the decemviral code, as is now generally admitted, contained no such requirements ; any citizen occupying immovables or holding movables as his own, provided they were usucaptible and he had not taken them theftuously, acquired a quiritary right in two years or one, as the case might be, simply on the strength of his possession. Originally, therefore, it was simply the conversion of de facto possession, no matter how acquired so long as not by theft, into legal ownership when pro- longed for the statutory period,— too often the mainte- nance of might at the cost of right. But in time it came to be regarded rather as a remedy for some defect of title, arising either from irregularity of conveyance or incapacity of the party from whom a transfer had been taken; and with the progress of jurisprudence it developed into the carefully regulated positive prescription which has found a place in every modern system.

The conception of the abstract notion of a real right in Jura in (or over) the property of another person (jus in re aliena) re aliena.

is not to be looked for at so early a period in the history of the law as that now under consideration. The rural servitudes of way and water were no doubt very early re- cognized, for they ranked as res mancipi, and the XII. Tables contained various regulations in reference to the former. Usufruct, too, was probably not unknown ; but the urban preedial servitudes bear the impress of a some- what later jurisprudence. Pignorate and hypothecary rights were unknown as rights protected by action at the time now being dealt with.2 Between private parties the only thing legally recognized of the nature of a real security was the jiducia that is described above. Ap- proaching more nearly to the modern idea of a mortgage was the security praedibus praediisyue required by the state from those indebted to it in assurance of their obli- gations. Here there was the double guarantee of sureties (praedes) and mortgaged lands of theirs (praedia subsig-

1 Literature :—Stintzing, Das Wesen von bona fides und titulus in d. rim. Usucaptonslehre, Heidelberg, 1852 ; Schirmer, Die Grundidee d. Usucapion im rim. Recht, Berlin, 1855; Pernice, Labeo, vol. ii. pp. 152 sg. ; Voigt, XII. Tafeln, vol. ii. § 91; Esmein, "Sur Vhistoire de Y'usueapion," in the Vowv. Rev. Hist., &e., vol. ix. (1885), p. 261 sq.

? Hypotheeary rights were certainly unknown until near the end of the republic. But Festus (s.v. " Naneitor ;" see Bruns, Fontes, p. 274) speaks of a provision in the Cassian league between Rome and the Latin states of the year 262 u.c.—" Si quid pignoris naseiscitur, sibi habeto" —which makes it difficult to believe that the Romans were altogether unaequainted with pledge or pawn of movables as a transaction of some value de facto if not de jure.

Forms of

testa- ment.

Testa-

ment per by Gaius as a written instrument.

aes et libram,

nata); but how they were dealt with when the debtor made default is by no means clear.

Changes in the Law of Succession.—The two forms of testament of the regal period (supra, p. 674) still remained in use in the early republic; but in course of time they were displaced by the general adoption of that executed with the copper and the scales (¢estamentum per aes et libram). It seems to be the general opinion that it was to the first two that the words applied which stood in the forefront of the provisions of the XII. Tables about in- heritance,—"' uti legassit suae rei, ita jus esto." Whether resort was to the comitia or to the army, the testator's own will in the matter was henceforth to be supreme. There was to be no more reference to the pontiffs as to the expediency of the testament in view of the interests of the family sacra and of creditors of the testator's; from legislators, sanctioning a departure from the ordinary rules of succession, the assembled Quirites became merely wit- nesses,—recipients of the oral declaration of the testator's will in regard to his inheritance.

The testament with the copper and the scales is depicted But he presents it in what was apparently the third stage of its history. Its probable origin has been explained in describing the result of the Servian reforms upon the private law. It was then not a testament but only a makeshift for one. A plebeian was not qualified in the regal period to make a testament in the comitia; so, instead, he transferred his estate to a friend on whom he could rely with instructions how to distribute it on his death. The transferee was called Jamiliae emptor, because the conveyance was in form a mancipation for a nominal price.

It is not at all unlikely that the same device may occasionally have been resorted to by a patrician who had neglected to make a regular testament, and was seized with mortal illness before he had an opportunity of appealing to the curies. But such a disposition was not a testament, and may not have been so called. A testa- ment was the nomination of a person as the testator's heir, —some- times the substitution of an individual of the testator's choice for the heir assigned to him by law, sometimes the acceptance of the latter but in the character of

testamentary heir, so that the testator might be able to impose upon him what burdens he pleased as the tacit condition of heirship. It made the person instituted as fully the representative of the testator after his death as his heir-at-law would have been had he died intestate. The mortis causa manci- pation that opened the way for the testament per aes et Libram conferred upon the familiae emptor no such character. Gaius says that he stood in place of an heir (heredis loco), inasmuch as he had such of an heir's rights and duties as the familiae venditor had it in his power to confer and impose ; but the transaction was but a conveyance of estate, with a limitation of the right of the grantee. It has been argued that, as the law did not recognize conditional mancipation, the conveyance must have operated as a complete and immediate divestiture of the grantee. But this does not follow. For it was quite competent for a man, in transferring property by mancipation, to reserve to himself a life interest ; and apparently it was equally competent for him to postpone delivery of possession, without infringing the rule that the mancipation itself could not be ex certo tempore. So far as one can see, therefore, there was nothing to prevent the grantee of the conveyance (or quasi-testator) bargaining that he was to retain the posscssion till his death ; and, as the familia was an aggregate of estate (untversitas rerum) which retained its identity notwithstanding any change in its component elements, he must in such case have been as free to operate on it while he survived as if he had never conveyed it by mancipation.

Cicero incidentally remarks—what indeed the nature of the business of itself very distinctly suggests—that the true testament with the copper and the scales had its sta- tutory warrant, not in the wtz legassit suae rei of the XII. Tables, but in the provision contained in the words,—" cum nexum faciet mancipiumque, uti lingua nuncupassit, ita jus esto." Reflexion on the import and comprehensiveness of these words led the interpreters to the conclusion that there was nothing in them to prevent the direct institution of an heir in the course of the verba nuncupata engrafted on a mancipation. From the moment this view was adopted

and put in practice the familiae mancipatio ceased to be a transfer of the testator's: estate to the familiae emptor : the latter's purchase was now for form's sake only, though still an indispensable form, since it was it alone that, according to the letter of the statute, imparted efficacy to the nuncupatio. But it was the nuncupatio—the oral de- claration addressed to the witnesses—that really contained the testamentary disposition, ¢.c., the institution of an heir, with such other provisions as the testator thought fit to em- body in it. This was the second stage in the history of the testament per aes et libram. The third was marked by the introduction of tablets in which the testamentary provisions were set out in writing, and which the testator displayed to the witnesses, folded and tied up in the usual manner, declaring that they contained the record of his last will. Gaius narrates the words spoken by the familiae emptor and addressed to the testator as follows :—" Your estate and belongings (familia pecuniaque tua), be they mine by purchase with this bit of copper and these copper scales, subject to your instructions, but in my keeping, that so you may lawfully make your testament ac- cording to the statute (quo tu jure testamentum faccre possis secundum legem publicam)." The meaning of the words "in my keeping (endo custodelam mcam)" is not quite obvious ; they may have been rem- nants of an older style, or may be due to a clerical error of the writer of the Verona MS, Certain it is that they no more imported a real custody than a real property in the familiae emptor ; for the testator remained so entirely master of his estate that the very next

'day if he pleased he might mancipate it anew to a different pur-

chaser, and nuncupate fresh testamentary writings. The nuncupa- tion was in these terms: 'As is written in these tablets so do I give, so do I legate, so do I declare my will; therefore, Quirites, grant me your testimony"; and, adds Gaius, " whatever the testa- tor had set down in detail in his testamentary tablets he was regarded as declaring and confirming by this general statement." 'To the appeal of the testator the witnesses responded by giving their testimony in words which unfortunately are not preserved; and then the testament was sealed by testator, officials, and witnesses, the seals being outside according to the early fashion.

Although this testament with the copper and the scales was justi- fied in the first instance by the provision of the XII. Tables as to the effect of nuncupative words annexed to a mancipation, yet in course of time it came to be subordinated to that other one which dealt directly with testamentary dispositions, —wtt legassit suae ret, ita jus esto. Upon the words uti legassit the widest possible meaning was put by the interpreters: not only was a testator held entitled on the strength of them to appoint tutors to wife and children, to enfranchise slaves, and make bequests to legatees, but he might even disinherit his proper heir (swes heres) in favour of a stranger, so long as he did so in express terms. Institution of a stranger without mention of the proper heir, however, was fatal, at least if the latter was a son; for without express disherison (exheredatio) his father could not deprive him of the interest he had in the family property as in a manner one of its Joint owners. It can hardly be supposed that disherisonu was contemplated by the compilers of the Tables: it was foreign to the traditional conception of the family and the family estate. But it was aright whose concession could not be resisted when claimed as embraced in the wt degasstt, although generally discountenanced, and as far as possible restrained by the strictness of the rules imposed on its exercise.

In the absence of a testament, or on its failure from Intestate

any cause, the succession opened to the heirs ab intestato, Succes- t s10n.

So notoriously were the suc heredes entitled to the firs place—and that not so much in the character of heirs as of persons now entering upon the active exercise of rights hitherto existing, though in a manner dormant—that the compilers of the XII. Tables thought it superfluous ex- pressly to declare it. 'If a man die intestate, leaving no suus heres, his nearest agnate shall have his estate. If the agnate also fail, his gentiles shall have it." It has been pointed out, in dealing with the tutory of agnates, that the notion of agnation, as a bond distinct from that which connected the gentile members of a clan, was due to the de- cemvirs. They had to devise a law of intestate tutory and succession suitable alike to the patricians who had gentes and to the plebeians who had none. To put the latter in exactly the same position as the former was beyond their power ; for the

fact had to be faced that the plebeians had no gentile institutions, and to create them was impossible.

Position of heirs.

692

The difficulty was overcome by accepting the principle of agnation upon which the patrician gens was constructed, and establishing an agnatic circle of kinsmen within the sixth degree, to which the gens as a corporation should be postponed in the case of the patricians, and which should come in place of it in the case of the plebeians. It was not perfect equalization, but the nearest approach to it that the circumstances permitted. The difference was that, when the agnates of a plebeian intestate failed, his inherit- ance was vacant, whereas, on failure of those of a patrician, there was devolution to his gens in its collective capacity. And this devolution was rendered all the more frequent by two "interpretations" put upon the statute, —(1) that, if the nearest agnates in existence declined the succession, those next in degree were not allowed to take it ; and (2) that no female agnate could take it except a sister of the deceascd intestate. The division among two or more agnates was always per capita, not per sturpes.

The order of intestate succession thus established by the XII. Tables, which prevailed until amended by the preetors probably in the 8th century of the city, was first to the sui heredes of the deceased, next to his nearest agnate or agnates, and finally, if the deceased was a patri- cian, to his gens. His sai heredes included those of his de- scendants in his potestas when he died who by that event (or even after it, but before his intestacy became manifest) became sui juris, together with his wife in manu (who, as regarded his succession, was reckoned as a daughter) ; but they did not include children whom he had emancipated or daughters who had passed in manum of a husband. Eman- cipated children did not even come in as agnates on failure of sui; for emancipation severed the tie of agnation as well as that of potestas. or the same reason no kinsman who had been emancipated, and so cut off from the family tree, could claim as an agnate ; for those only were agnates who were subject to the same patria potestas, or would have been had the common family head been still alive.

The opening of a succession (technically delatio hereditatis) in favour of swi heredes, whether in virtue of a testamentary institu- tion or by operation of law on intestacy, at once invested them with the charaeter, rights, and responsibilitics of heirs. No accept- ance was necessary, nor, according to the rules of the jus eivile, was any declinature competent. They had been all along in a manner joint owners with their parent of the family cstatc, which by his death had become, nominally at least, an inheritance ; and, as he had not thought fit to terminate their interest in it by emancipat- ing or disinheriting them, they were not now allowed to disown it. Hence they were spoken of as necessary heirs (heredes sui et necessarit). A slave, too, whom his owner had instituted in his testament was a necessary heir: he could not decline, and was invested with the character of heir the moment the testator died. Not so with stranger institutes or agnates taking on intestacy: they were free to take or reject the inheritance as they saw fit; consequently an act of acceptance (aditio) was necessary on their part to make them heirs. It was not unusual for a testator, in instituting an heir, to require that he should make a formal de- claration of acceptance within a limited time, failing which his right should pass to a substitute, who in turn was required to enter within a certain time; and so on with any nunber of substitutes, the series ending with one of his slaves, who became heir without entry, and thus saved the testator from the disgrace of post mortem bankruptcy in the event of the inheritance proving insolvent. The wéz legasstt of the Tables, as already remarked, conferred upon a testator very great latitude of testamentary disposition, even to the extent of disherison of swi heredes. This was a course, how- ever, that was rarely resorted to unless when a child had been guilty of gross ingratitude, or when the parent had reason to believe his estate was insolvent and desired to protect his children from the responsibilities of inheritance. Usually his sud, if he had any, would be his institutes, and the purpose of the testament either to apportion the estate amongst them as he thought cxpedient, or to give him an opportunity of appointing tutors, bequeathing legacies, or enfranchising slaves. On intestacy the sui took equally, but ber stirpes; that is to say, grandchildren by a son who had predeceased or been emancipated, but who themselves had been retained in their grandfather's potestas, took amongst them the share to which their father would otherwise have been entitled, instead of taking equal shares with their surviving uncles. It was

by no mcans uncommon, when the whole inheritance descended to sons, for them to hold it in common for many years as partners (eonsortes); but any one of them was entitled at any moment to claim a partition, which was effected judicially, by an arbitral procedure introduced, termed a judietwm (or arbitrium) familiae ereiseundae. Where two or more strangers were instituted testamentarily, whether to equal or unequal shares, if one of them failed either by predecease or declinature his share accrued ipso jure to the others; for it was arule that very early became proverbial that a man could not die partly testate and partly intestate. Thcre was the same accrual among agnates on intestacy ; and both they and stranger testament- ary institutes had the same action for division of the inheritance that was made use of by swt heredes.

According to Gaius it was as a stimulus to heirs to enter as soon Usucapio

as possible to an inheritance that had opened to thein, and thus pro make early provision alike for satisfying the claims of creditors of herede,

the deceased and attending to his family saera, that the law came to recognize the somewhat remarkable institution of usucapion or prescriptive acquisition of the inheritance in the character of heir (usueapto pro herede). Such usucapion was impossible—there was no room for it—if the deceased had left swe heredes; for the inherit- ance vested in them the moment he died. But, if there were no sui heredes, then any person taking posscssion of the property that had belonged to the deceased, and holding it for twelve months without interruption, thereby acquired it as if he were heir: in fact, according to the views then held, he acquired the inhcritance itself. Gaius characterizes it as a dishonest acquisition, inasmuch as the usucapient knew that what he had taken possession of was not his. But, as already explained, the usucapion of the XII. Tables did not require bona fides on the part of the usucapient ; he might acquire ownership by prolonged possession of what he knew did not belong to him so long as he did not appropriate it theftu- ously, t.e., knowing that it belonged to another. But an inherit- ance unappropriated

by an heir who had nothing more than a right to claim it belonged in strictness to no one; and there was no theft, therefore, when a person took possession of it with a view to usucapion in the character of heir. 'There can be little doubt that on the completion of his possession he was regarded as heir just as fully as if he had taken under a testament or as heir-at-law on in- testacy,—that is to say, that he was held responsible to creditors of the deceased and required to charge himself with the family saera. Gaius does not say as much; but both the Coruncanian and the Mucian edict imposed the latter burden upon him who had usucapted by possession the greater part of a deceased pcrson's estate ; and it is but reasonable to suppose that the burden of debts must in like manner have fallen on the usucapient or usucapients in proportion to the shares they had taken of the deceased's property.

The Law of Obligations.—The jurists of the classical Law of period attribute obligation either to contract, or delict, or obliga-

miscellaneous causes (variae causarum figurae) ; and those arising from contract fill a place in the later jurisprudence vastly greater than those arising from delict. In the XII. Tables it was very different. In them delicts were much more prominent than contracts,—wrongs entitling the sufferer to demand the imposition of penalties upon the wrongdoer that in most cases covered both reparation and punishment. The disproportion in the formulated provisions in reference to the two sources of obligation, however, is not surprising. For, first of all, the purpose of the decemviral code was to remove uncertainties and leave as little as possible to the arbitrariness of the magis- trates. In nothing was there more scope for this than in the imposition of penalties; and, as different offences re-quired to be differently treated, the provisions in reference to them were necessarily multiplied. In the next place, the intercourse that evokes contract was as yet very limited. Agriculture was the occupation of the great majority ; trade and commerce were more backward than in the later years of the regal period ; coined money was just beginning to be used as a circulating medium. Lastly, the safeguards of engagement then lay to a great extent in the sworn oath or the plighted faith, of which the law had hardly begun to take cognizance, but which found a protection

quite as potent in the religious and moral sentiments that had so firm a hold on the people.

It may be asked—If a man purchased sheep or store cattle, a Contract

ONS.

plough, a toga, a jar of wine or oil, had he no action to compel in

delivery, the vendor no action for payment of the price ? hire of a horse or the loan of a bullock create no obligation? Was partnership unknown and deposit and pledge and suretyship in

Did the general.

Requi- sites of binding contract.

JUS CIVILE. |

any other form than that of vadimoniwm? One can have no hesitation in answering that, as transactions of daily life, they must all have been more or less familiar. It does not follow, how- ever, that they were already regulated by law and protected by the ordinary tribunals, The historical jurists are pretty well agreed that not only the real contracts of loan (mutuum and commodatum), deposit, and pledge, but also the consensual ones of sale, location, partnership, and mandate, and the verbal one of suretyship, were as yet very barely recognized by law. Sale was the offspring of barter, —of instant exchange of one thing for another. With such instant exchange there was no room for obligation to deliver on either side, even when the ware (merx) given by one of the parties was so much rough copper weighed in the scales. The substitution of coined money for the raw metal can hardly have effected any radical change: the ordinary practice of those early times must still have been ready-money transaction,—an instant exchange of ware for price; and it can only have been when, for some reason or other, the arrangement was exceptionally for delivery or pay- ment at a future date, say next market day, that obligation was held to have been created. Was that obligation enforceable by the civil tribunals? Some jurists hold that it was,—that at no time were

the jus gentiwm contracts outside the protection of judicial remedies, although by a simpler procedure than that resorted to for enforceinent of the contracts of the jus civile. But two provisions in the XII. Tables seem to prove very clearly that it was not so enforceable. The first is onc recorded by Justinian,—that, where a thing was sold and delivered, the property, nevertheless, was not to pass until the price had been paid or sureties (vades) for it accepted by the vendor. Far from being a recognition of the obligatory nature of the transaction, this provision is really a recognition of the inability of the law to enforce payment of the price by the vendee ; it is a declaration that, on the latter's failure to pay, the vendor, unprotected by any ia action, should be entitled to get back the thing sold as still his own, no matter in whose hands he found it. The second related to the case of a person who had bought a victim for sacrifice, but had failed to pay for it. A real action for its revindication by the seller after it had been consumed on the altar was out of the question ; so he was authorized by the Tables, by the process of pignoris capio (supra, p. 686), at his own hand to appropriate in satisfaction a sufficient equivalent out of the belong- ings of the purchaser, against whom he had no personal action.

It was a principle of the law of Rome through the whole of its history, though in course of time subject to an increasing number of exceptions, that mere agreement between two persons did not give him in whose favour it Was conceived a right to demand its enforcement. To entitle a man to claim the intervention of the civil tri- bunals to compel implement of an engagement under- taken by another, it was necessary (subject to those ex- ceptions) either that it should be clothed in some form prescribed or recognized by the law, or that it should be accompanied or followed by some relative act wluich ren- dered it something more than a mere interchange of consent. Under the jurisprudence of the XII. Tables the formalities required to elevate an agreement to the rank of contract and make it civilly obligatory sometimes combined cere- monial act and words of style, sometimes did not go beyond words of style, but in all cases took place before witnesses. Dotis dictio, the undertaking of a parent to provide a dowry with his daughter whom he was giving in marriage, and vadimonium, the guarantee of a surety for the due fulfilment of the undertaking either of a party to a con- tract or a party to a litigation,

probably required nothing more than words of style before persons who could if necessary bear witness to them; whereas an engagement incident to a mancipation, or an undertaking to repay borrowed money, required in addition a ceremony with the copper and the scales. This undertaking to repay arose from the contract of nexum, which was older than the Tables ; both it and the verbal contract by sponseo or stipulation, which was younger, merit further consideration.

The Nexal Contract1—The tumults and seditions so

1 Literature :—Savigny, "Ueber d. altrém. Schuldrecht," in his Verm. Schriften, vol. ii. p. 396 sg. ; Scheurl, Vom Nexum, Erlangen, 1839 ; C. Sell, Dejuris Rom. nexo et mancipio, Brunswick, 1840; Van Heusde, De Lege Poetilia Papiria, Utrecht, 1842; Bachofen, Das Nexum, &c., Basel, 1843; Huschke, Ueber d. Recht des Nexum, Leipsic, 1846; Giraud, Des Next ou de la condition des débiteurs chez les Romains, Paris, 1847; Bekker, Die Aktionen des rém. Privatrechts, vol. i.,

frequent in Rome during the first two centuries of the Causes of republic are more frequently attributed by the historians Plebeian

to the abuses of the law of debt than to any other cause, F social or political. The circumstances of the poorer ple- ~ beians were such as to make it almost impossible to avoid borrowing. Their scanty means were dependent on the regular cultivation of their little acres, and on each opera- tion of the agricultural year being performed in proper rotation and at the proper season. But this was every now and again interfered with by wars which detained them from home at seed-time or harvest, practically render- ing their farms unproductive and leaving them and their families in straits for the commonest necessaries of life. A poor peasant, in such a case, had no alternative but to apply to a capitalist for a loan. But it was not to be had without security, and rarely without interest. It was not that the lender doubted the borrower's honesty and willing- ness to repay his debt ; it was rather that there was every chance that next

year a fresh war might again interfere with the latter's agricultural operations, leavé him again without a crop, and thus render repayment impossible. And so, while interest accumulated and was periodically added to capital, new loans had year after year to be con- tracted as long as any acres remained that could serve as a security ; failing all things, the debtor had to impledge or hypothecate himself ;2 for, phrase it how we may, this was substantially the result of the contract of neaum.

The practice of lending per libram was doubtless of Nexal great antiquity, —indeed the intervention of the scales was contract.

a necessity when money or what passed for it had to be weighed instead of counted; and not improbably old custom conceded to a lender who had thus made an advance in the presence of witnesses some very summary and stringent remedy against a borrower who failed in repayment. How Servius subjected it to much the same formalities as he appointed for mancipation—the state scales, the official libripens, the five witnesses representing the nation—has been shown already. With the introduction of a coinage the transaction, instead of being per ibram simply, became © one per aes et Libram ; the scales were touched with a single piece, representing the money which had already been or was about to be paid, a formula recited whereby the obliga- tion of repayment was imposed on the borrower, and an appeal made to the witnesses for their testimony. Unfortu- nately this formula is nowhere preserved. Huschke and Giraud, assuming that the: lender was the only speaker, formulate it thus—" quod ego tibi mille libras hoc aere aeneaque libra nexas dedi, eas tu mihi post annum jure nexi dare damnas esto"—' whereas with this coin and these copper scales I have given thee a thousand asses, be thou therefore bound jure neat to repay them to me a year hence." The phrase damnas esto, like the rest of the formula, is unsupported by any conclusive authority ; but, as it was that most frequently employed in the republic for imposing by a public act liability to pay a fixed and definite sum, it may not be wide of the mark.

What was the effect of this procedure? The question is one not easily answered. Brinz has expressed the opinion that the creditor

was entitled in virtue of the nexum to take his debtor into custody at any time when he considered such a course necessary for his own

Berlin, 1871, cap. 2; Vainberg, Le Nexum.. . en droit Romain, Paris, 1874; Brinz, "Der Begriff obligatio," in Griinhut's Zeitschr., vol. i. (1874), p. 11 sg.; and Voigt, XJI. Tafeln, vol. i. §§ 63-65. There is a réswmé of the principal theories (down to 1870) in Danz, Gesch. d. rém. Rechts, vol. ii., 2d ed., Leipsic, 1873, § 146.

*2 '*Fe told them how he had been obliged to borrow money, be- cause, when he had been away fighting against the Sabines, his farm had remained uncropped, his house had been burned, his cattle driven off, everything plundered, and at the same time, unhappily for him, a tribute imposed ; how first his ancestral lands had gone, then his other property, and at last, like a wasting disease, it had come to his body ; how his creditor, instead of putting him to work (tm servitiwm), had thrown him into a dungeon and a torture-chamber"' (Liv., ii. 23).*

protection, even before the conventional term of repayment, —that the debtor was in bonds, virtually a pledge, from the very first, and the tightness or looseness of them a matter in the discretion of his ereditor.1 Voigt holds that the nexwm did not give the creditor any peculiar hold over his debtor, and that on the latter's failure to repay an ordinary action was necessary, to be followed by the usual proceedings in execution if judgment was in favour of the former. 'These views may be said to be the two extremes ; and be- tween them lie a good many others, more or less divergent. The difficulty of arriving at a conclusion is caused to some extent by the ambiguity of the words nexus and nexwm. 'The transaction itself was called nexum ; the money advanced was nexwm acs (hence newt, 1.€., aeris datio); the bond was nexus (of the fourth declension) ; and the debtor on whom the bond was laid was also nexus (of the second). All this is simple enough. But we find the same word nexus employed by the historians as almost synonymons with vinctus, —to denote the condition of a debtor put in fetters by his creditor. That might be the condition either of a nexal borrower or of an ordinary judgment-debtor. The former in such a case was doubly nexus ; he was at once in the bonds

of legal obligation and in those of physical constraint. In many passages- in which Livy and others speak of the ncxi it is extremely difficult, sometimes impossible, to be sure in which sense they use the word. It is therefore not sur- prising that there should be considerable diversity of opinion on the subject, and such frequent identification of the legal status of a nexal debtor (nexus) with that of a judgment-debtor (judicatus).

Almost all writers—Voigt? is a distinguished exception—concur in opinion that the nexal contract entitled the creditor, after expiry of thirty days from the conventional date of repayment of the loan, to proceed against his debtor by manus injectio without any ante- cedent action or judgment, and failing settlement to detain him, and put him to servile labour and subject him to servile treatment, until the loan was repaid. The parallel of such a course is to be met with aniongst all ancient nations,—Jews, Greeks, Scandinavians, Germans, &c.3 And it was not altogether unreasonable. If a borrower had already exhausted all available means of raising money, had sold or mortgaged everything he possessed of any value, what other course was open to him in his necessity except to im- pledge himself? That the creditor should have been entitled to realize the right he had thus acquired without the judgment on it of a court of law is equally intelligible. The nexal contract was a public act, carried out in the presence of the representatives of the people, who were witnesses alike of the acknowledgment of indebted- ness and of the tacit engagement of the debtor. The only valid ob- jection that could be stated against the creditor's apprehension of his debtor in execution was that the indebtedness no longer existed, —that the loan had been repaid. Buta nexal debt could be legally discharged only by neat liberatio, which also was a solemn proce- dure per aes ct "ubram in the presence of five citizen witnesses. What need for a judicial inquiry in the presence of facts so notorious? A creditor would rarely be daring enough to proceed to manus injectio if his loan had becn repaid; if he did, the testimony of the wit- nesses to the discharge would at once procure the release of his alleged debtor. It was probably to give opportunity for such proof, if there was room for it, that the XII. Tables required that a creditor who had apprehended a nexal debtor should bring him into court before carrying him off into detention,

_ But there was no room for the intervention of a vindcx or cham- pion, for there was no judgment whose regularity he could impugn. Nor was there any room for a magisterial addictio of the debtor to his creditor ; for the latter's right of detention was founded on contract, and needed no decree to strengthen it. The creditor was entitled at once, after apprehension of his debtor and production of him in court in terms of the statute, to carry him home with him, take such steps as were necessary to ensure his safe custody, and employ his services in profitable industry. But that he could kill him or sell him, as some suppose, is a proposition that is destitute of any authority to support it. Equally untenable is the notion

1 Brinz, in Griinhut's Zettschr., vol. i. p. 22. He likens the position of the nexus to that of a thing—land, say—mortgaged to a creditor in security of a claim. Such security the Roman jurists constantly speak of as Tes obligata, and sometimes as res nexa. As Brinz observes, the thing was obligata from the first, and continued so as long as the debt it secured was unpaid, even though the creditor found it unnecessary to reduce it into possession or interfere with it in any way.

He holds that there was nothing peculiar in the obligation created nexo, v. ¢., that it did not impose any immediate liability on the borrower which the lender could enforce without judicial intervention, but that the latter required to proceed against the former in ordinary course by what he calls an actio pecuniae nuncupatae.

See authorities in Brinz's paper in Griinhut's Zeitschr., vol. i. p. 25. The Greek phrase was él gupare davelfey. There is a curious style in Marculfus (Form., ii. 27), in which a borrower engages that, until he shall have repaid his loan, his creditor shall have right to his services So many days a week, and shall have power to inflict corporal punishment if there be dilatoriness in rendering them.

that the nexus became a slave, or that, while retaining his freedom, his wife, children, and belongings fell with him into the hands of his creditor. He certainly was not in a worse position than an addictus, of whom Quintilian states distinctly that he still retained his position in the census and in his tribe. Manya time, when the exigencies of the state required it, were the nexi temporarily released in order to obey a call to arms,—to fulfil the duty incumbent on them as citizens. In fact a nexal debtor suffered no capitis demin- utto at all because of his detention. If he was a house-father he still retained his manus over his wife and potestas over his children. But they did not share his quasi-servitude. Their earnings legally belonged to him, but were no doubt retained by them with his consent for their own support. They certainly did not fall to his creditor. It was the body of his debtor that he was entitled to, and too often he wreaked his vengeance on it by way of punishment ; there was as yet no machinery for attaching the debtor's goods in substantial reparation for the loss causcd by his breach of contract.

_The abuses to which the system gave rise alike in the case of Peetilian nexal and of judgment debtors have already been alluded to. In the law.

year 428 a more than ordinarily flagrant outrage committed by a creditor upon one of his young nexi, who, Livy says, had given himself up as responsible for a loan contracted by his deceased father, roused the populace to such a pitch of indignation as to necessitate instant remedial legislation. The result was the Po- tilian law (Lex Poetilia Papiria). So far as can be gathered from the meagre accounts of it we possess, it contained at least these three provisions—(1) that fetters and neck, arm, or foot blocks should in future be applied only to persons undergoing imprisonment for crime or delict ; (2) that no one should ever again be the nexus of his creditor in respect of borrowed money; and (8) that all existing next qui bonam copiam jurarent should be released. The first was intended to prevent unnecessary restraint upon judgment-debtors formally given over to their creditors. The second did not neces- sarily abolish the contract of loan per aes et Libram, but only what had hitherto been an dpso jure consequence of it,—the creditor's right to incarcerate his debtor without either the judgment of a court or the warrant of a magistrate. For the future, execution was to be done against a borrower

only as a judgment-debtor form- ally made over to his creditor by magisterial decree, and under the restrictions and limitations imposed by the Peetilian law itself. This very soon led to the disuse of nexal obligation ; once it was deprived of its distinctive processual advantages it rapidly gave place to the simpler engagement by stipulation enforceable per con- dictionem. As for the release of the then existing newt, Cicero, Livy, and Dionysius say nothing of any condition annexed to the boon the statute conferred upon them; it is only Varro who limits it to those qui bonam copiam jurarunt,—those apparently who were able to declare on oath that they had done their best and could do no more to meet their ercditors' claims. Such a limitation can hardly be called unreasonable, even were we to assume—as prob- ably we ought to do—that the release spoken of was only from the bonds of physical restraint, not from those of legal obligation.

Introduction of the Stipulation.A—Few events in the Stipula- history of the private law were followed by more far- tion.

reaching consequences than the introduction of the stipu- lation. It exercised an enormous influence on the law of contract; for by means of it there was created a unilateral obligation that in time became adaptable to almost every | conceivable undertaking by one man in favour of another, By the use of certain words of style in the form of ques- tion and answer any lawful agreement could thereby be made not only morally but legally binding, so that much which previously had no other guarantee than a man's sense of honour now passed directly under the protection of the tribunals. Stipulations became the complement of engagements which without them rested simply on good faith, as when a vendor gave his stipulatory promise to his vendee to guarantee peaceable possession of the thing sold or its freedom from faults, and the vendee in turn gave his promise for payment of the price. The question and answer in the form prescribed by law made the en- gagement fast and sure. Hence the generic name of the

4 Literature :—Liebe, Die Stipulation u. das einfache Versprechen, Brunswick, 1840; Schmidt (rev. Liebe), in Richter's Krit. Jahrb., vol. v. pp. 869 sg., 961 sg.; Gneist, Die formellen Vertrdge d. rim. fechis, Berlin,

1845, p. 118 sq. ; Heimbach, Die Lehre vom Creditum, Leipsic, 1849 ; Danz, Der sacrale Schutz im rim. Rechte, Jena, 1857, pp. 102-142, 286 sg. ; Schlesinger, Zur Lehre von den Formalcontracten, Leipsic, 1858, § 2; Voigt, Jus nat., &c., d. Rim., vol. ii. § 38, vol. iv., Beilage xix. ; Girtanner, Die Stipulation, Kiel, 1859; Bekker, Akitonen, vol. i. pp. 382-401 ; Karsten, Die Stipulation, Rostock, 1878.

Its

contract ; for Paul's derivation of it from stipulum, " firm," is much to be preferred to the earlier and more fanciful ones from styps or stipula. It was round the stipulation that the jurists grouped most of their disquisitions upon the general doctrines of the law of contract,—capacity of parties, requisites of consent, consequences of fraud, error, and intimidation, effects of conditions and specifications of time, and so forth. It may well be said, therefore, that its introduction marked an epoch in the history of the law.

There is, however, no certainty either as to the time or as to the manner of its introduction. So far as appears it was unknown at the time of the compilation of the XII. Tables, at least in private life ; one of the first unmistakable allusions to it isin the Aquilian law of 476 u.c. The mention of it in that enactment, however, is with regard to a phase of it which cannot have been reached for many years after it had come into use ; and the probability is that it originated before the middle of the 5th century, its first statu- tory recognition being in the Silian law introducing the legis actio per condictionem (supra, p. 683). In its earliest days it bore the name not of st¢pulatio but of sponsio, for the reason that the inter- rogatory of the party becoming creditor was invariably formulated with the word spondes—e.g., centum dare spondes?—while the alswer was simply spondeo.

There has been much speculation as to the origin of the con-

by introducing in certain cases words that excluded action in presence of fraud, antecedent or subsequent, on the part of the creditor, and afterwards by pretorian exceptions, such as a plea of "no value," or by having the contract set aside on the motion of the nominal debtor before proceed- ings had been taken upon it by the creditor. Originally the stipulation was employed only in regard to engagements whose terms were in every respect definite and certain, and was enforced by the legis actio per condictionem. But in time it came to be employed in engagements that were from the first indefinite. This seems to have been due to the intervention of the preetors, and to have originated after the system of the legis actiones had begun to give place to that per formulas. The remedy in such a case was not spoken of as a condiction but as an actio ex stipulatu.

CHAPTER IIIL—THE JUS GENTIUM AND JUS HONORARIUM.

(Latter half of the Republic.) I, INFLUENCES THAT OPERATED ON THE LAW.

origin. ee, Modern oem has ae eel? iat Pa the Growth of Commerce and Influx of Foreigners.—While Influx verbal remuant of the nexwm, after the business with the copper | ; : f ve . and the scales had gone into disuse ; (2) that it was evolved out of it mey be admitted that commerce Was beginning to take ee the oath at the great altar of Hercules and the appeal to Fides | Toot in Rome in the 5th century, yet 1t was not until the (supra, p. 675); (8) that it was imported from Latium, which it | 6th that it really became of importance. The campaigns had reached from some of the Greek settlements farther south. | in which Rome was en gaged until the end of the First Punic The last view is the most probable. Verrius Flaccns, as quoted by | War absorbed all its energies. But after that time the Festus, connects it with the Greek or&dew and orovdy; and Gaius | . 4 f rae : : incidentally observes that it was said to be of Greek origin. A | Influx of strangers, and their settlement in the city for libation (o7ovd7) is frequently referred to by Homer and Herodotus | purposes of trade, became very rapid,—first Latins and as an accompaniment of treaties and other solemn covenants,— | other allies, and afterwards Greeks,

*Carthaginians, and a common offering by the parties to the gods which imparted | Asistics. For them and the regulation of their affairs the sanctity to the transaction. Leist! is of opinion that the practice | * le — ie. | ij R rg ai passed into Sicily and Lower Italy, but that gradually the libation | J¥S cwvue—the law peculiar to Rome and its citizens— and other religious features were dropped, although the word | was applicable only if they were members of allied states orovdy was retained in the sense of an engagement that bound | to which commercium and recuperatio were guaranteed by parties just as if the old ritual had been observed, and that it treaty. But multitudes were not in this favoured posi- travelled northward into Latium and thence to Rome under the eat cond hy i eoumieele £ name of sponsio, being used in the first instance in public life for | HON, and even those who were soon lound the range o the conclusion of treaties, aud afterwards in private life for the con- | Roman modes of acquiring property and contracting clusion of contracts. The meaning of spondes as a question by a obligations too narrow for their requirements. Hence a creditor to his debtor (although latterly, we may well believe, un- jus gentium was gradually developed? which very early known to them) thus came to be—" Do you engage as solemnly as | %. ge, Pel stoma Sides tak 'i 'at if the old ceremonial were gone through between us?" There are | 1 148 Hlstory drove treaty covenants ror TEE CRECUO OME, many examples of such simplification of terms, none more familiar | Use; 1ts application may for a time have been limited to than when a man says—'"'] give you my oath upon it," without | transactions between non-citizens or between citizens and oe nee a the individual addressed thinking it necessary to non-citizens, but it was eventually accepted in the deal- go through the form. : ss ae . ' Its It is not a little remarkable that, although the idea was es ee i ae a nature. derived from abroad, the use of the words spondes and | 4 j .*

spondeo in contracting were, down at least to the time of Gaius, confined in Rome to Roman citizens. The sponsio as a form of contract was essentially juris civilis. So at first were the later and less solemn forms of stipulation, — promittisne ? promitto, dabisne ? dabo, and the like. Gaius speaks of these as juris gentium, t.e., binding even between Romans and peregrins. Such they became eventually, but not until towards the end of the republic. Yet, although juris civilis, both the sponsio and the later

forms were from the first free from many of the impediments of the earlier actus legitimz. No witnesses were required to assist at them ; and they were always susceptible of quali- fication by conditions and terms. It was very long, how- ever, before parties had much latitude in their choice of language ; spondeo was so peculiarly solemn that no equi- valent could be admitted ; and even the later styles may be said to have remained stereotyped until well on in the empire. And it was the use of the words of style that made the contract. It was formal, not material ; that is to say, action lay upon the promise the words embodied, apart from any consideration whether or not value had been given for it. In time this serious disadvantage was abated ; first

1 @reco-Itilische Rechtsgeschichte, Jena, 1884, pp. 465-470. Upon the sponstonis vinculum internationally, see Livy, ix. 9.

"the common law of mankind," "the law in use among all nations" ; but the language must not be taken too literally. The Roman jus gentiwm was not built up by the adoption of one doctrine or institution after another that was found to be generally current elsewhere. In the earliest stages of its recognition it was "an inde- pendent international private law, which, as such, re- gulated intercourse between peregrins or between peregrins and citizens on the basis of their common lilertas" ;3 during the republic it was purely empirical and free from the influence of scientific theory, but its extensions in the early empire were a creation of the jurists,—a com- bination of comparative jurisprudence and rational specu- lation. To say that it was de facto in observance every- where is inaccurate; on the contrary, it was Roman law, built up by Roman jurists, though called into existence through the necessities of intercourse with and among non-Romans.

It may be a little difficult for a modern jurist to say

2 On the Roman jus gentium, see Voigt, Das jus naturale, aequum et bonum, und jus gentium d. Romer, 4 vols., Leipsic, 1856-75; Nettle- ship, in the Journal of Philology, vol. xiii. (1885), p. 169 sq.

3 Voigt, Jus nat., vol. ii. 661. He distinguishes the jus civile, jus gentium, and jus naturale as the systems which applied respectively to the citizen,

the freeman, and the man.

The peregrin preetor.

Reforms of Aibu- tian law.

Effects of pro- vincial adminis- tration.

696

with perfect precision what were the doctrines and institu- tions of the jus gentium as distinguished from the jus cave. But the distinction must have been very familiar to the Romans ; otherwise we should not have had the statement of Marcian in reference to the dmdAcdes,—that they en- joyed all the rights competent to a man under the former, but none of those competent to him under the latter. _

Institution of the Peregrin Pretorship.—The preetorship! was an outcome of the Licinian laws of the year 387 U.c. Down to the end of the 5th century the pretor then ap- pointed superintended single-handed the administration of justice, alike between citizens and foreigners. But with the altered condition of things in the beginning of the 6th century, and the influx of strangers which has already been alluded to, the work seems to have been found too onerous for a single magistrate, and a second preetor was appointed. 'The.date is not absolutely certain, although generally assumed to have been about the year 512 v.c. ; but Pomponius says distinctly that the creation of the new office was rendered necessary by the increase of the peregrin population of Rome, and that the new magistrate got the name of praetor peregrinus because his principal duty was to dispense justice to this foreign element. After the submission of Sicily and Sardinia the number of the preetors was increased to four and after the conquest of Spain to six; Sulla raised the number to eight, and Casar eventu- ally to sixteen. But all the later creations were for special purposes ; the ordinary administration of justice within the city was left with the representatives for the time of the two earliest, who came to be distinguished as praetor urbanus (qui jus inter cives dicit) and praetor peregrinus. It would be going too far to speak of the latter as the prin- cipal author of the jus gentium ; for a large proportion of the actions for

enforcing jus gentium rights were civil, not honorary,—a fact which proves that the rights they were meant to protect and enforce had their origin in the jus cwvile, although moulded to meet new requirenients by tacit consuetude and the agency of the jurists. But even in this view the peregrin praetor must have had a powerful influ- ence in giving shape and consistency to the rising juris- prudence, by means of the formulae he adjusted for giving it practical effect.

Simplification of Procedure and Introduction of New Remedies under the butian Law.—The Lea Aebutia is only twice mentioned by ancient writers, and we know neither its precise date nor its specific provisions. And yet, to judge by its cffects, it must have been one of the most important pieces of comitial legislation in the latter half of the republic ; for Gellius speaks of it as having given the deathblow to many of the institutions of the XII. Tables, and Gaius couples it with two Julian laws as the statutory instru- ments whereby the formular system of procedure was substituted for that per legis actioncs. The probability is that it was enacted immediately or soon after the institution of the peregrin prector- ship. Its purpose, whatever may have becn its terms, seems to have been to empower the pretors to adapt existing remedies to altered circumstances, and to fashion new actions on the jus civile for the use of the peregrins to whom the procedure of the legis Getiones was incompetent ; while it may possibly at the same time have expressly authorized the insertion in the styles to be devised by them of clauses that would give protection when required against claims that in law were well founded but in fact inequitable. But, whatever may have been the actual provisions of the statute, thie result was the introduction of a procedure which gradually sup- planted that by the "actions of the law," which was much more pliant than the latter, and whose characteristic was this,—that, instead of the issue being declared by word of mouth by the parties, and requiring in many cases to embody with perfect accuracy the statutory provision upon which it was based, it was now formulated In writing by the pretor, in the shape of an instruction to the judge to inquire and consider, with power to condemn or acquit according to his finding (see infra, p. 707). . __ Provincial Conquests.—The growth of commerce and the enormous increase of wealth, which made great capitalists and enabled them

1 See Labatut, Wistoire de la Rim. Staatsrecht, vol, ii. vol. i. p. 217 sq.

Préture, Paris, 1868 ; Mommsen, p. 176 sg.; Karlowa, Rom. Rechtsgeschichte,

‘through the agency of freedmen and slaves to carry on trade on a

seale hitherto unknown, and which thus helped to foster the jus gentium, was no doubt due toa large extent to provincial conquests. But these operated also in othcr directions. The authorities who proceeded to the conquered provinces as governors found themselves face to face with laws and institutions in many respects differing from those of Rome. Political considerations dictated how far these were to be respected, how far subverted. In some provinces, more especially the Eastern ones, it was thought unnecessary to do more than supplement the existing system by the importation of doctrines of the jus gentiwm and the procedure of the pretor’s edicts ; while in others, in which it was deemed expedient to destroy as rapidly as possible all national feeling and every national rally-ing point, a Romanizing of all their institutions was resorted to, even to the extent of introducing some of the formal transactions which previously had beeu confined to citizens. But in either case there was a reflex action. The native institution had to be studied, its advantages and disadvantages balanced, the means considered of adapting it to the pretorian procedure, and the new ideas so presented as to make them harmonize as far as possible with the old. All this was a training of no small value for those who, on their return to Rome, were to exercise an influence on legislation and the administration of the law. They brought back with them not merely an experience they could not have obtained at home, but sometimes a familiarity with foreign institutions that they were very willing to acclimatize in Italy. Rome thus enriched its law from the provinces, deriving from them its emphyteutic tenure of land, its hypothce, its Rhodian law of general average, and a variety of other featurcs that were altogether novel. Some of them were sanctioned by

tacit recognition, others by edicts of the pretors ; but, in whatever way received, they were indirectly fruits of provincial conquest.

Spread of Literature and Philosophy.—The effect on Roman Influence civilization of the addiction of educated men in the later republic of litera- to literature and philosophy is a matter for consideration in con- ture and

nexion with Rome's general history. It is not proposed to consider here the question how far specific doctrines of Roman law bear the impress of the influence of the schools, especially that of the Stoics ; it is a subject much too large to be disposed of in a few lines.2 The matter is mentioned simply for the sake of noting that the spirit of critical inquiry aroueel and fostcred by literary and philosophical study, seriously and conscientiously undertaken, contributed greatly to promote a new departure in jurisprudence that became very marked in the time of Cicero—the desire to subordinate form to substance, the.word spoken to the will it was mcant to manifest, the abstract rule to the individual case to which it was proposed to apply it. This was the first effort of what then was called equity to temper and keep within bounds the rigour of the jus strictum. The pretors, the judges, and the jurisconsults all had their share in it. Although modern jurists are prone to speak of pretorian equity as if it were a thing apart, yet the same spirit was leavening the law in all directions and in the hands of all who had to deal with it, the difference being that the form and publicity of the edict gave to its applications by the pretors a more pro- minent and enduring record than was found in the decisions of private judiccs or the opinions of counselling jurisconsults.

Decline of Leligion and Morals.—It would be equally Decline

out of place to enlarge here on the causes and manifesta- tions of that decline in religious sentiment and public and private virtue which was fraught with such disastrous results in the later days of the republic. The private law was influenced by it to a considerable extent, alike in those branches which regulated the domestic relations and those which dealt with property and contract.

The ever-increasing disregard of the sanctity of the marriage tie is one of those features in the history of the period which strikes even the most unobservant. While from the first the law had denounced causeless separation and visited it with penalties, in principle it maintained the perfect freedom of divorce,—that it was improper to force persons to continue in the bonds of matrimony between whom matrimonial affection no longer existed. With the simple and frugal habits of the first five centuries

? It is one that was diseussed with much greater fervour a century ago than it is now. Of the later literature may be mentioned—Van Vollenhoven, De exigua vi quam philosophia Greca habuit in effor- manda jurisprudentia Romana, Amsterdam, 1834; Ratjen, Hat die Stoische Phil. bedeutenden Einfluss gehabt, &e.? Kiel, 1839; Voigt, Jus nat., &e., vol. i. §§ 49-51 ; Laferriére, De Vinfluence du Stoicisme sur la doctrine des jurisconsultes Romains, Paris, 1860; Hildenbrand, Gesch. u. System d. Rechts- und Staats- Philosophie, Leipsic, 1860, vol. i, §§ 141, 142. The earlier literature is given in Hildenbrand, p. 593.

philo- sophy.

of reli-

gion ani

morals,

JUS GENTIUM, ETC. |

of Rome, and the surveillance of the consiliwm domesticum, the recognition of this principle produced no evil results ; family misunderstandings were easily smoothed over, and divorces were of rare occurrence. But from the time of the enactment of the Meenian law in 586 there seems to have been a change for the worse. It inter alia displaced the family council as a divorce court and transferred its functions in that matter to a judicium de moribus,—a court of inquiry nominated by the pretor, and having as its duty to decide to what extent there should be forfeiture of the nuptial provisions in case of separation

or repudiation. The motives of the statute may have been of the best ; but its tendency was injurious, for not only did it indirectly facilitate divorce, but it rendered the idea of it familiar, and overthrew that respect for the domestic council which had hitherto been a check upon it. What wonder that with increasing luxury and licentiousness divorce became so common !

This looseness of the marriage bond, as was naturally to be expected, had its effect on the other family relations. The obligation of a father to provide for his children began to be lightly esteemed. The law—possibly only the inter- pretation put upon the w#i legassit of the XII. Tables— had empowered him testamentarily to disinherit them, or in instituting them to limit their right to a mere fraction of the inheritance ; but it was assumed that this power would be exercised with discretion and only when justified by circumstances. But in the latter days of the republic, amid the slackened ties of domestic life, paternal as well as conjugal duty seems to have often been lost sight of, and children disinherited or cut off with a nominal share of the inheritance in order that a stranger might be enriched. This led to the introduction by the centumviral court, without any legislative enactment or practor's edict to warrant it, of what was called the querela inofficiosi testamenti,—challenge of a testament by a child whose natural claims had been capriciously and causelessly dis- regarded. While the practice may for a time have been hesitating and uncertain, yet before long, through means of this guerela, the rule came to be established that every child was entitled, notwithstanding the terms of his father's testament, to at least a fourth (portio legitima, quarta legi- tima, the legitim of the law of Scotland and various Con- tinental countries) of what would have come to him had his parent died intestate, unless it appeared that the latter had had adequate grounds for excluding him or limiting him toa smaller share. A parent might in like manner chal- lenge an undutiful testament made by his child to his pre- judice ; and in certain cases so might brothers and sisters inter se.

The decline of morals had an equally marked effect on the transactions of daily life, calling for precautions and remedies that had not been found requisite in the hey-day of the rioris TOv "Pwpalwv. Men no longer relied on each other's good faith unless backed by stipulations, cautions

(cautiones), and guarantees. The Rutilian bankruptcy arrangements and the actio Pauliana for setting aside alienations in fraud of creditors indicate a laxity in mer- cantile dealings that was perhaps an inevitable consequence of the growth of trade and commerce. But, that such remedies as, for example, the exceptio rei venditae et traditae or the exceptio non numeratae pecuniae should have been found necessary—the one an answer to a vendor (with the price in his pocket) who attempted to dispossess his vendee because some of the formalities of conveyance had been neglected, the other an answer to an action on a bond for repayment of money that by some accident had never been advanced—proves that the law had now to encounter fraud in all directions, and that Graeca fides had toa great extent displaced the old Roman probity.

II. Factors or tHe Law.

Legistation.—It cannot be said that during the period of nearly Legisla- two centuries and a half embraced within the present chapter the tion.

private law owed much to legislation. The vast majority of the enactments of the time referred to by the historians dealt with constitutional questions, municipal and colonial government, agrarian arrangements, fiscal policy, sumptuary prohibitions, criminal and police regulations, and other matters that affected the public law rather than the private. Those of the latter class men- tioned by Gaius and Ulpian in their institutional works barely exceed a score in number ; and of these not above half a dozen can be said to have exercised a permanent influence on the principles (as distinguished from the details) of the law. Most of them were enactments of the conciliwm plcbis or of the comitia of the tribes, to which ordinary legislation had passed as more readily convencd and more easily worked than the comitia of the centuries.

Ldicts of the Magistrates..\—The practice of propounding edicts Magis- was very ancient, and had been followed by kings and consuls long trates'

It was one of the most edicts.

before the institution of the pretorship. obvious ways of exercising the tmpcriwm with which the supreme magistrate was invested,—to lay an injunction upon a citizen and enforce his obedience, or to confer upon him some advantage and maintain him in its enjoyment. It was one of the ways in which public order was protected where there had been no invasion of what the law regarded as a right, and where, consequently, there was no remedy by action. That the earlier edicts of the pretors were of this character—issued, that is to say, with reference to particular cases, and what afterwards came to be called edicta re- pentina or prout res incidit posita—there is little reason to doubt. In time a new class of edicts appeared which got the name of edicta perpctua (or perpetuae jurisdictionis causa proposita),—announce- ments by the pretor, published on his album (as the white boards displayed for the purpose in the forum were called), of the relief he would be prepared to grant on the application of any one allcg- ing that the state of facts contemplated had arisen. The next year's praetor was frec to adopt the edicts of his predecessor or not ; but it was usual for him to do so if they had been found beneficial in practice, he adding to them new provisions suggested by de- mands made upon past pretors for edicta repentina but which they had not generalized, or even proposing for acceptance some remedy entirely of his own devising. As each new pretor entered upon office he announced his jurisdictional programme,—his lex annua, as it was called from this particular point of view, by far the greater part of it tralaticiwm, 7.¢., transmitted from his predecessors, and only a few paragraphs, diminishing in number as time pro- gressed, representing his own contribution. And so it went on in the first years of the empire, until the pretorian function was eclipsed by the imperial ; and at last, after having, by instruction of Hadrian, been subjected to revision, and consolidated with the edicts of the peregrin pretors and provincial governors, it was sanctioned as statute law for the empire through the medium of a senatusconsult.

There is some reason for supposing that the edict attained con- sidcrable proportions in the time of Cicero ; for he mentions that, whercas in his youth the XII. Tables had been taught to the boys in school, in his later

years these were neglected, and young men directed instead to the pretor's edicts for thcir first lessons in law. Of a few of them the date and authorship are known with tolerable precision ; but of the history of the majority, including some of the most important, such as those introducing restitutio in integrum on the ground of lesion through error, absence, minority, and the like, and those revolutionizing the law of succession, we are to a great extent in the dark. It is not necessary to assume either that the Julian consolidation exhibits all the provisions that from first to last appeared on the album, or that those preserved in it were originally in the shape in which they are there presented. It is much more likely that we have in it only those that had stood the test of generations, and that many of them are the result of the combined wisdom and experience of a series of pretors. It was one of the great advantages the edicts had over legislative enact- ments that they might be dropped, resumed, or amended by a new pretor according to his judgment of public requirements. For the edict was viva vox juris civilis,—intended to aid, supplement, and correct it in accordance with the ever-changing estimate of public necessities ; and this would have been impossible had its provisions from the first been as stereotyped as they became by the consolida- tion in the time of Hadrian.

The Edict seems to have contained two parts,—the first what may be called the edict or edicts proper, and the second an appendix of styles of actions, &c., whether derived from the jus civile or from the jus praetorium. The contents of the edict proper were in de- tail very various, but all devoted to an exposition of the ways in which the praetor meant to exercise his jurisdiction during his year

1 See Lenel, Beitrige zur Kunde des praetorischen Edicts, Stuttgart, 1878, and the introductory chapters in his Das Edictum Perpetuum, Leipsic, 1883 ; Karlowa, Rim. Rechtsgesch., § 60.

of office. They were not didactic or dogmatic formulations of law, but rather announcements or advertisements of what remedy he would grant

in such and such circumstances, or direct orders to do or prohibitions against doing certain things. A party claiming an action or whatever else it might be under any of them did so not of right, as he would have done had his claim had a statutory or customary foundation, but of gracc,—on the strength of the pretor's promise to grant him what he claimed and make the grant effectual. That was why originally such an action had to be raised and concluded within the particular pretor's year of office,—a rule which in time, by abuse, was converted into the somewhat different one that a purely pretorian aetion (i.e¢., not originally of the jus civile, even though remodelled and regulated by the pretor) had to be raised within a year of the occurrence to which it referred.

As already observed, the praetors' edicts proceeded to a greater extent than the earlier legislation of the comitia upon lines of equity ; that is to say, they set themselves against the strictness and formalism of the jurisprudence of the XII. Tables. Such may be said to have been the general tendency of the edicts as a whole. But it was the tendency of the whole jurisprudence of the time, and by no means peculiar to the pretorian creation. Nowhere in the texts are the preetors spoken of as the mouthpieces of equity as distinguished from law. Such a distinction recurs frequently in Cicero ; he identifies aequitas with the spirit of a law or agreement, and jus with its letter, but it is in order to sing the praises not of the pretors but of the pleaders who maintained the former as against the latter, and of the judges who were persuaded by their arguments. Much of what was contained in the Edict might quite as well have been embodied in statute, and we know that in time statute came to its aid ; witness a very remarkable provision of it, —"I will give bonorum possessio as may be enjoined by statutc, whether comitial enactment or senatusconsult."'

Of the edicts of the peregrin pretor and their relation to that of his urban colleague little is known. That they differed in some respects there cau be no doubt, for in the Lex Rubria (of 706 2) for settling the government of Cisalpine Gaul the magistrates are directed, with reference to a certain action, to formulate it in the way prescribed in the edict of the peregrin pretor. The latter, therefore, must to some extent have been in advance of that of the urban preetor, probably in this respect, that, being prepared

primarily for the regulation of questions affecting non-citizens, it more thoroughly than the other avoided formalitics that were com- petent only to citizens, and thus to a greater extent simplified pro- cedure. 'he edicts of the provincial governors must have varied according to circumstances, being in all cases composites of pro- visions, more or less numerous, borrowed from the edicts of the pretors and additions suggested by the peculiar wants of the different provinces for which they were framed (provinetale genus edicendi). As for those of the curule ediles, who amongst other duties were charged with the supervision of markets, their range was very limited, their most important provisions having reference to open sales of slaves, horses, and cattle, and containing regula- tions about the duties of vendors exposing them, and their responsi- bility for latent faults and vices.

expensilation or formless loan created such an obligation as was covered by the words pecuniam dari oportere. There may for a time have been a divergent practice, contradictory findings, as Cicero says there were in his day upon the question whether aequ7- tas or jus strictunt was to be applied to the determination of certain matters; but the gradual ascendency and eventual unanimity of judicial opinion in the affirmative was but the expression of the general sentiment of the citizens, of whom the judices were the representatives.

These arc but examples of the way in which consuetudinary law was constructed. It required the combined action of the laity and the judices, both at times acting under professional advice; in some cases even that of the preetors was necessary. It would have been impossible, for instance, to have introduced the consensual contracts into the Roman system and determined what were the obligations they imposed on either side, without magisterial co- operation in framing the formulae that were to be submitted to the judges. Taking the action on sale as an illustration, the formula substantially was this :—"It being averred that the defendant sold such or such a thing to the plaintiff, whatever, judge, it shall ap- pear that the defendant ought in good faith to give to or do for the plaintiff in

respect thereof, in the money equivalent thereof condemn the defendant ; otherwise, acquit him." It is very mani- fest that the free hand here given to the judge must immensely have facilitated the reception of customary doctrine into the law. The judge was to a great extent the spokesman of the forum ; his judgment was formed in accordance with current public opinion, which he had ample opportunity of gauging; it was the reflexion of that general sentiment of right, which, phrase it how we may, is the real basis of all customary law. And so in an action for establishing a right of property in a res nec mancipt. The formula was very simple : —"Ifit appear that such or such a thing belongs to the plaintiff in quiritary right, then, judge, whatever be its value for the plaintift in that condemn the defendant; should it appear otherwise, acquit him." The primary duty of a judge on such a remit was to detcrmine whether the title on which the plaintiff founded his peeteusions gave him a right that came up to property; and it can hardly be disputed that it was by the decisions of a series of judges, in a series of such actions, that the long list of natural modes of acquiring property given by Justinian under technical names was gradually brought into view. Those decisions, whether upon the obligations of a vendor, direct or indirect, or upon the sufficiency of a title founded on by a party averring a right of property by natural acquisition, may in many cases have been arrived at under professional advice, and were in all cases embodied in judgments. But that does not in the least deprive the doctrine deduced from them of its character of customary law. It was not until the empire that the opinions of the jurists sub- mitted to a judge (responsa prudentiwm, see p. 705) were invested with quasi-legislative authority. During the republic, if a judge deferred to them, it was simply because he regarded them as in consonance with well-qualified public opinion ; and what a series of consistent judgments of this sort built up was in the strictest sense a law based on consuetude.?

Consue- — Conswetude, Professional Jurisprudence, and Res Judicatac. —Great As regards the professional jurists in particular it has already Profes- tudinary as may be the difficulty experienced by philosophical jurists in de- | been observed that, according to the testimony of the historians, sional law. fining the ground of the authority of consuetudinary law, there is | the law was a monopoly of the patricians down at lcast to the jurispru-

no room to dispute the importance of its contributions to every system of jurisprudence ancient and modern. The men who first drew, accepted, and endorsed a bill of exchange did as much for the law as any lawgiver has ever accomplished. They may or may not have acted on the advice of jurists ; but, whether or not, they began a practice which grew into custom, and as such was recog- nized by the tribunals as a law-creating one,—one conferring rights and imposing obligations. There is much of this—far more probably than is commonly imagincd—in the history of every system of law.

In Rome the process was sometimes wonderfully expeditious ; witness what Justinian narrates of the introduction and recognition of testamentary trusts and of codicils to last wills, both in the time of Augustus. It can hardly be doubted that the literal contract

per expensilationem originated in the same way, probably in the

end of the 5th or the beginning of the 6th century. The keeping of domestic account-books may have been enjoined and enforced by the censors ; but it was custom, and neither statute nor preetor's edict, that made an entry in them to another person's debit creative of a claim against the latter for certa pecwnia credita, that might be made effectual ki an action under the Silian law. It must have been in exactly the same way that mutuwm, formless loan of money, came to be regarded as the third varicty of certa credita pecunia, and to be held recoverable under the same action. True, this could not have been attained without the co-operation of the courts. But then those courts were eomposed each of a single private citizen, whose office ended with his judgment in the particular case remitted to him, and who was untrammelled by the authority of any series rerum judicatarwm.+ He had simply to decide whether in his view

1 It was not until the empire that a 'series rerum perpetuo similiter judica- tarum," a uniform series of precedents, was held to be law. During the repub-

?

middle of the 5th century of the city. Livy goes so far as to dence.

speak of it as in penetralibus pontificum repositum,—among the secrets of the pontifical college. It was so to a very great extent in the regal period. But after the publication of the XII. Tables this could be the case only in a qualified sense, the pontiffs becom- ing the official interpreters of that which in the letter was patent to the world. The Jus Flavianum, with its formulary of actions, in the year 450, the practice of giving advice in law in public adopted by Tib. Coruncanius in the beginning of the 6th century, and the Jus dilianum, embodying the current interprctatio, some fifty years later, put an cnd not only to pontifical. but to patrician monopoly. From this time onwards there was a series of jurists (prudentes), gradually increasing in number and eminence, of whom a list is given by Pomponius, and many of whom are signalized by Cicero, particularly in his Orator and Brutus. They occupied themselves in giving advice to clients (see ParRoN AND CLIENT, vol. xviii. p. 412), teaching, pleading at the bar, framing styles of contracts, testaments, and various other deeds of a legal character, or writing commentaries or shorter treatises on different branches of the law.®

lic a judge was much freer, and not only entitled but bound to decide according to his own notion of what was right, taking the risk of consequences if his judgment was knowingly contrary to law.

2 The doctrines of the classical jurists as to the necessity of longa, inveterata consuetudo, and so forth, had no application to the formative jurisprudence of the republic, and in fact refer not to general consuetude but to particular custom when founded on in derogation of the common law.

3 Rudorff, Rém. Rechtsgeschichte, vol. i. §§ 62-65; Sanio, Zur Geschichte der rom. Rechtswissenschaft, Konigsberg, 1858; Grellet-Dumazeau, Etudes sur le barreaw Romain, 2d ed., Paris, 1858; Danz, Gesch. d. rém. Rechts, vol. i. § 49; Karlowa, Rom. Rechtsgesch., § 61.

Pub- lician edict.

JUS GENTIUM, ETC.]

III. SussTANTIVE CHANGES IN THE LAW DURING THE PERIOD.

The Publician Edict.—There were necessarily many changes during the period in the law of property and of minor real rights, several of them of no mean importance. But the greatest of all was that effected by the Publician edict,! indirectly recognizing the validity (1) of what Theophilus calls dominiwm bonitarium as an aetual though inferior ownership of res mancipi, and (2) of what got the name of bonae fidei possessio as a fictitious ownership of either ves mancipt or res nec mancipt, valid against all the world except the true dominus. The aecounts we possess of this edict are somewhat inconsistent and even contradictory; the explanation

posed of by a stranger behind his back, there would have been no equity in giving him an action; but as against all the world exeept the truc owner his 'better right" was recognized by the pretor, who accorded to him also a vindication proceeding on a fiction of completed usucapion, for usucapion cured the defect of his title, just as it did that of the bonitarian owner. In this way the preetors introduced that bonac fidet posscssio which was worked out with much skill by the jurists of the early empire, and which assumed very large proportions in the Justinianian law when the term of prescription had been greatly extended, and the difficulty of proving property (as distinguished from bona jide possession) consequently very much inereased.

may be that it went through a process of amendment and cxpansion at the hands of successive pretors, and that eventually it may have had more than one section, without our always being able to say to which of them the criticism of a particular commentator is directed.

Development of the Law of Contract.3—It is impossible within Changes , the limits of an artiele sueh as this to indicate a tithe of the amend- in law ments that were effected on the law of obligations during the period of

con- whose distinguishing features were the rise of a jus gentiwm and tract.

Domini-

um boni-

tarium.

Bonae

But there is no doubt of its general tendency,—of the defects it was meant to correct and of the way in which the correction was accomplished.

One of the defects was this: if a man had taken a transfer of a res mancipi from its rightful owner, but simply by tradition instead of by mancipation or cession in court, he did not acquire dominium ex jure Quiritiwm, and the transferrer remained undi- vested. The result was that the latter was in law entitled to raise a rei vindicatio and oust the transferee whose money he might have in his pocket, while if a third party had obtained possession of the thing, but in such a way as not to be amenable to an interdict, the transferee could have no effectual vindication against him, as he was not in a position to prove dominium ex jure Quiritium. The first difficulty was overcome by the exceptio rei venditac et traditac, also a preetorian remedy, and probably older than the Publician ; to the transferrer's vindication on the strength of his unextin- guished quiritary right the transferee pleaded sale and dclivery as an effectual pretorian defence. But, when a third party was in possession, aud the transferee by simple delivery had to take the initiative, the position was more complicated. Such third party might be in perfect good faith ; he might even have acquired from the original transferrer and fortified his acquisition with a formal conveyance. But that was no sufficient reason in equity why he should be allowed to defeat the prior right of the original trans- feree, who, if he had possessed for the requisite period of usucapion before the third party came upon the scene, would have cured the defect of the informal] delivery and acquired an unassailable quiri- tary right. So the praetor announced in his edict that, if a man came to him and represented that he had bought a res mancipi from its owner,

and had had it delivered to him, but had lost ed sion within the period of usucapion, he (the prstor) would allow him a vindication cmbodying a fietion of completed usucapion (infra, p. 708), with which he might proceed either against the transferrer or any third party withholding the thing in question.

The publication of such an cdict and the formula of the action based upon it—which, though of pretorian origin, was in many respects dealt with as an actio juris civilis and just a variety of the ret vindicatio—had the same effect as if the legislature had directly enacted that in future delivery of a res mancipi in pursuance of a sale or other good cause would confer a right of ownership in it even before usueapion had been completed. Till completed, how- ever, the transferec was not quiritary owner: the thing in question was only in bonis, "of his belongings," and the legal title, though a very empty one—nwdum jus Quirittwm—remained in the trans- ferrer ; it was only with the completion of the usuecapion that it became the transferee's pleno jurc. The inevitable result of the re- cognition of this tenure in bonis was that mancipation came to be regarded in many cases as an unnecessary formality ; and the marvel is that it continued to hold its ground at all. The explanation may be that it afforded a substratum for and gave forcc of law to the verba nuncupata that aceompanied the negotiwm per aes et Libram ; and, although many of these might quite well be thrown into the form of stipulations, yct there were others that it may have been thought safer to leave to take effect under the provisions of the earlier law.

The second ease that was met by the Publician edict—whether

fidei pos. as originally published or by an amendment of it cannot be deter-

sessio.

mined—was that of the bona fide transferee of a thing by purehase or other sufficient title who, having lost possession of it before usucapion, found to his cost that the transferrer had not been its owner, that no ownership therefore had been transmitted to him (the transferee), and that consequently he was not in a position to raisc a vindication with its

averment of dominiwm cx jurc Quirt- tium.? As against the true owner, whose property had been dis-

1 See Ribéreau, Théorie de l'in bonis habere ow dela propriété prétorienne, Paris, 1867; Voigt, Jus naturale, &c., vol. iv., App. xxi., p, 470 sq.; Huschke, Das Recht der Publicianischen Klage, Stuttgart, 1874; Schulin (rev. Huschke), in the Krit. Vierteljahrschrift, vol. xviii. (1876), p. 526 sq.; Lenel, Beitrdge zur Kunde d. praetorischen Edicts: I. Das Public. Ed., Stuttgart, 1878.

2 This case is the only one alluded to by Justinian (Inst., iv. 6, 4). He had

abolished the distinction between quiritarian and bonitarian property, and so .

it was unnecessary for him to mention the other.

the construction of the preetor's cdict. In every branch of it there was an advance not by steps but by strides,—in that of obligations arising from contract, of those arising from delict, and of those arising from facts and cireumstances, such as unjustifiable enrich- ment at another person's cost. The law of suretyship, in its three forms of sponsio, fidepromissio, and fidejussio, received considerable attention, and formed the subject of a series of legislative enact- ments for limiting a surety's liability ; while that of ageney, which was sparingly admitted in Rome, had a valuable contribution from the pretorian edict in the recognition of a man's liability, more or less qualified, for the contractual debts of his filiifamilias and slaves, as also, and without qualification, for the debts properly contracted of persons, whether domestically subject to him or not, who were managing a business on his account, or whom he had placed in command of a ship belonging tohim. The development of the law in the matter of obligations generally was greatly facilitated by the preetorian simplification of procedure and the introduction of new forms of aetions,—thc instruction to a judge, " Whatever in respect thereof the defendant ought to give to or do for the plaintiff, in that condemn him," preceded by a statement of the cause of action, giving wide seope for the recognition of new sourees of liability.

The origin of the verbal contract of stipulation and its action- Stipu- ability under the Silian and Calpurnian laws have already been lation.

explained (pp. 694, 684). It was theoretically a formal contract, i.é., creative of obligation on the strength of the formal question and answer interchanged by the parties, even though no substantial ground of debt might underlie it; but in time it became the prac- tice to introduce words —the single word recte was enough—exelud- ing liability in case of malpractice (clawsula doli); and finally even that beeame unnecessary when the pretors had introduced the general caceptio doli, pleadable as an equitable defence to any ae ae action. And it was cssentially productive only of uni- ateral obligation, 7.¢., the respondent in the interrogatory alone incurred liability; if mutual obligations were intended it was necessary that each should promise for his own part, with the result that two eontraets were executed which were perfectly inde- pendent. Originally the only words that could be employed were spondes? on the one side, spondco on the other; and in this form the contraet was juris civilis and competent only to eitizens (and non- citizens enjoying commercium?!). In time the words promvittis ? promitto, came to be used alternatively. They seem, eventually at least, to have been competent to peregrins as well as to citizens, although that may not have been until the stipulation had become of daily use amongst the former in the still simpler phraseology dabis ? dabo, facics? factam.. Originally eompetent only for the creation of an obligation to pay a definite sum of money, and after- wards one for delivery of a specific thing other than money, the contract came in time, by the simplification of the words of inter- rogatory and response—the substitution of the condictions of the formular system for the Jcgis actioncs of the Silian and Calpurnian laws, and the introduction of the actio ca stipulatu to meet cases of indefinite promise—to be adaptable to any sort of unilateral engagement, whether initiated by it or only confirmed. It was of immense service too outside the ordinary range of contract in what were called necessary (in contradistinetion to voluntary) stipula- tions, of which a variety of illustrations are given infra, p. 709. In all directions advantage was taken of it to bind a man by forma] eontract either to do or to refrain from doing what in many eases he might already be bound 7pso jure to do or to abstain from doing, and

that because of the simplicity of the remedy—an action on his stipulation —that would lic against him in the event of his failure.

A second form of contract that eame into use to a considerable Literal extent in the latter half of the republic is what is commonly called contract.

the literal contract, or, as Gaius phrases it with greater aeeuracy,

3 See Bekker, Aktionen, vol. i. chaps. 5-8, and App. D, E, F, and vol. ii. chaps. 15, 16; Voigt, Jus naturale, &c., vol. ili. §§ 106-124, and vol. iv., App. da bie aah,

4 Such obligations—usually imposing the duty of restitution of unjustifiable gains—filled a considerable space in the practice and doctrine of the period, and early gave rise to a variety of brocards, e.g., "' Nemo cum alterius damno lucrari debet," " Nemo damnum sentire debet per lucrum alterius," &c.

Con- sensual contracts.

the nomen transscripticium.! Notwithstanding the prolific litera- ture of which it has been the subject, it must be admitted that in many points our knowledge of it is incomplete and uncertain. The prevalent opinion, formed before the discovery of the Verona MS. had made known Gaius's description of it, and almost univer- sally adhered to ever since, is that such contracts were ereated by entries in the account-books which the censors insisted that all citizens of any means should keep with scrupulous regularity. They are often alluded to by the lay writers ; but the text princi- pally relied on is what remains of Cicero's speech for the player Roseius. From the tenor of the argument in that case, and inci- dental remarks elsewhere, the conclusion has been formed that a citizen who made an entry in his codew—whether of the nature of a cash-book or a ledger is much disputed—to the debit of another, thereby made the latter his debtor for a sum recoverable by an actio ccrtae creditae pecuntiae. Gaius in his description of the con- tract does not mention the

codices; but his account is not ineon- sistent with the notion that the entries (nomina) of which he speaks were made in them. He says that those entries were of two sorts, nomina arcaria and nomina transscripticia. 'The former were entries of cash advances ; and of them he observes that they did not create obligation, but only served as evidence of one already ereated by payment to and receipt of the money by the borrower. Of the latter he says that there were two varieties, the entry tran- scribed from thing to person and that transcribed from one person to another, and that both of them were not probative merely but creative of obligation. The first was effected by a creditor (A) entering to the debit of his debtor (B) the liquidated amount of what the latter was already owing as the price of something pur- chased, the rent of a house leased, the value of work done, or the like. The second was effected by A transcribing B's debt to the debit of a third party ©, hitherto a debtor of B's, and who con- sented to the transaction, —A at the same time crediting B with the sum thus booked against C, and B in his books both crediting CO with it (acceptilatio) and debiting A (capensilatio).

All this at first sight seems just a series of bookkeeping opera- tions. But it was much more than that for the Roman citizens who first had recourse to it. There was a time when sale, and lease, and the like, so long as they stood on their own merits, created no obligation enforcible at law, however much it might be binding as a duty to Fides or (as moderns would say) in the forum of conscience ; to found an action it required to be clothed in some form approved by the jus civile. The nexwm may have been one of those forms, the vendee or tenant being fictitiously dealt with as borrower of the price or rent due under his purchase or lease ; the stipulation was another, the obligation to pay the price or rent being made legally binding by its embodiment in formal question and answer. But stipulation was competent only between persons who were face to face, whereas expensilation was competent also as between persons at a distance from each other. 'This of itself gaye expensilation—which, originally at least, was as much a ncgo- tium juris civilis as the sponsio—an advantage in some cases over stipulation. But it had also a further advantage, which was not affected by the subsequent recognition of the real and consensual contracts as productive of legal obligation on their own merits: it paved the way for subsequent transcription from one

person to another. This last must have been of infinite convenience in com- merce, not only by enabling traders to dispense with a reserve of coin, but by obviating the risks attending the transit of money over long distances, It was this that led, as Theophilus says was the case, to the conversion even of stipulatory obligations into book-debts ; it was not that thereby the creditor obtained a tighter hold over his debtor, but that an obligation was obtained from him which in a sense was negotiable and therefore more valuable.

The evolution of the four purcly consensual eontracts—sale, loca- tion, partnership, and mandate—supplies matter for one of the most interesting chapters in the whole history of the law. But, as it is impossible in such an article as this to attempt to mark the successive stages in the progress of all of them, we shall confine ourselves to sale. The others did not and could not follow identi- cally the same course: location ran most nearly parallel with sale ; but partnership and mandate, from their nature, not only started ata different point from the other two, but rcached the same goal with them—that of becoming productive of obligation simply on the strength of consent interchanged by the parties—by paths that were sometimes far apart. Nevertheless a sketch of the history of the origin of the contract of sale may be sufficient to indicate generally some of the milestones that were successively passed by all four.?

1 Literature :—Savigny, " Ueber den Literaleontract der Rémer" (originally 1816, with adaitions in 1849), in his Verm. Schriften, vol. i. p, 205 sq.; Keller. in Sell's Jahrb. f. hist. u. dogm. Bearbeit. des rém. Rechts, vol. i. (1841), p. 98 sq. : Gneist, Die formellen Vertrdge d. rim, Rechts, Berlin, 1845, p. 321 sq.; Heim- bach, Die Lehre vom Creditum, Leipsic, 1849, p. 309 sq.; Pagenstecher, De literar. obligatione, &c., Heidelberg, 1851; Danz, Gesch. d. rém. Rechts, vol. ii. p. 42 sq. (where there is a résumé of the principal theories); Gide, in the Rev. de Législat., vol. ili. (1873), p. 121 sq.; Buonamici, in the Archivio Giwridico,

vol. xvi. (1876), p. 3 sq.; Gide, Etudes sur la Novation, Paris, 1879, p. 185 sq. : Baron, Die Condictionen, Berlin, 1881, §$ 11, 12. : a aes

2 The literature on the history of the contract of sale is profuse, but mostly

Going back as far as history carries us we meet with it under the Con- names of emptio and venditio, but meaning no more than barter ; for tracts of — emere originally signified simply "to take" or "'acquire." Sheep sale. and cattle (wecus, hence pecunia) may for a time have been a very usual article of exchange on one side, and then came raw metal weighed in the scales. But it was still exchange, instant delivery of goods on one side against simultaneous delivery of so many pounds | weight of copper on the other. With the reforms of Servius Tullius came the distinction between res mancipi and res nec mancipt, and with it a regulated mancipation for sale and conveyance of the former. It was still barter; but along with it arose an obligation on the part of the transferrer of the res mancipi to warrant the transferce against eviction,—a warranty that was implied in the mancipation. Whether this rule obtained from the first or was the growth of custom it is impossible to say; but it is in the highest degree probable that it was the XII. Tables which fixed that the measure of the transferrer's liability to the transferee in the event of eviction should be double the amount of the price. Equally impossible is it to say when the practice arose of embody- ing declarations, assurances, and so forth in the mancipation (Jcges mancipti), which were held binding on the strength of the negotiwm juris civilis in which they were clothed. They received statutory sanction in the Tables, in the words already referred to more than once—"cum nexum faciet mancipiumque, uti lingna nuncupassit, ita jus esto," substantially "whatever shall by word of mouth be declared by the parties in the course of a transaction per acs et Libram in definition of its terms shall be law as between them."

The substitution by the decemvirs of eoined money, that was to be counted for rough metal that had been weighed, converted the contribution on one side into price (pretiwm), as distinguished from article of purchase (mera) on the other ; and sale thus became distinct from barter. In contemplation of the separation of the mancipa- tion and the price-paying, and the degeneration of the former into a merely imaginary sale, they enacted that, mancipation notwith- standing, the property of what was sold should not pass to the purchaser until the price had been paid or security by

sureties (vades) given for it to the vendor; and it was probably by the interpretation of the pontiffs that this was added to the rule,— a that until the price was paid no liability for eviction should attach to the transferrer (or auctor). The reason of the provision in the XII. Tables was that a vendor who had mancipated or delivered a thing sold by him before recciving the price had no action to euforce payment of the latter; and in such circumstances it was thought but right to give him the opportunity of getting back the thing itself by a real action. It might be, however, that the price had been paid, and yet the vendor refused to mancipate. It was long, apparently, before the purchaser could in such a case compel him to do so. With the introduction of the legis actio per condic- tionem he (the purchaser) had undoubtedly the power to recover the money on the ground of the vendor's unjustifiable enrichment, —that the latter had got it for a consideration which had failed (causa data, causa non sccuta); and it is possible that before that he had a similar remedy per judicis postulationem.

Down to this point, therefore, say the beginning of the 6th century, there were several obligations consequent on sale of a 7cs mancipt ; but not one of them arose directly out of the sale itself, or could be enforced simply on the ground that it had taken place. The vendor was bound to support the purchaser in any action by a third party disputing his right, and to repay him the price two- fold in the event of that third party's success ; and he was bound, moreover, to make good to him any loss he had sustained through a deficiency of acreage he had guaranteed, non-cxistence of servi- tudes he had declared the lands enjoyed, existence of others from which he had stated they were free,? incapability of a slave for labour for which he was vouched fit, and soon. But these obliga- tions were binding, not in virtue of the sale per se, but of the transaction per acs et libram superindueed upon it; and, if the vendor had at any time to return the price on failure to mancipate what he had sold, it was not because he had committed a breach of contract, but because he had unjustly enriched himself at the purchaser's expense.

In sales of res ncc mancipi, just as in those of rcs manecipi, a vendor who had been incautious enough to deliver his wares before he had been paid, or had got stipulatory security for the price, or had converted it into a

book-debt, night recover them by a real action if payment was unduly delayed; while the purchaser who had paid in advance but failed to get delivery might also get back his money from the vendor on the plea of unwarrantable enrichment. But, as

scattered in periodicals and much of it very fragmentary. It may be enough to refer to Bechmann, Gesch. d. Kaufs im rom. Recht, Erlangen, 18763; three articles by Bréard, in the Nowv. Rev. Hist., vol. vi. (1882), p. 180 sq., vol. vii. (1883), p. 586 sq., and vol. viii. (1884), p. 395 sg.; and Mommsen, " Die rém. Anfinge von Kauf u. Mietlie," in the Zettschr. d. Savigny Stiftwng, vol. vi. (1885), Rom. Abtheil., p. 260 sq.

3 Cicero says (De Off., iii. 16, § 65) that, though by the XII. Tables it was enough if a vendor per aes et libram made good his positive assurances (uti lingua nuncupassit, ita jus esto), the jurists.held him responsible for reticence about burdens or defects he ought to have revealed, and liable for a poena dupli exactly as if he had guaranteed their non-existenee.

Confir- matory stipula- tions.

JUS GENTIUM, ETC. |

mancipation was unnecessary for carrying the property (and, as some think, incompetent), some other machinery had to be resorted to than that of the copper and the scales for imposing upon the vendor an obligation of warranty against eviction, defects, and so forth. It may be that, until trade began to assume considerable proportions, and when a transaction was between citizens, a pur- chaser was content to rely partly on the honesty of his vendor, partly on the latter's knowledge that he ran the risk of an action for theft if what he sold belonged to another,! and partly on the maxim common in all ages and climes, eaveat emptor. When it was one between a citizen and a peregrin, a different set of rules may have come into play ; for between them disputes were settled by recuperators whose decisions were arrived at very much on con- siderations of natural equity. It was the popularization of the stipulation that facilitated a further advance, rendered all the more necessaty by the expansion of intercourse with forcigners and the cessation of recuperation.

We read of a satisdatio seewndwm manetpium, a stipulatio habere licere, and a stipwlatio duplae. 'The nature of the first is obscure ; it seems to have been connected with mancipatory sales, and prob- ably to have been the guarantee of a sponsor for the liabilities im- posed upon the vendor by the transaction per aes et libram and the verba nuneupata that were covered by it. The stipulation habere licere occurs in Varro, in a collection of styles of sales of sheep, cattle, &c., some of which he says were abridgments of those of M. Manilius, who was consul in the year 605. It was the guarantee of the vendor of a res nee maneipi, or even of a res manetpi sold without mancipation, that the purchaser should be maintained in possession of what he had bought ; it entitled him to reparation on eviction, measured not by any fixed standard but according to the loss he had sustained. It cannot have been introduced, thcre- fore, until after the Lex Aebutva and the formulation by the praetor of the aetio ex stipulatu. The idea of the stipwlatio duplae may have been borrowed from the duplwm incurred by a vendor on the eviction of a purchaser acquiring a thing by mancipation ; for one of its earliest manifestations was in the edict of the curule ediles, who insisted on it from persons sclling slaves, probably because the dealers were for the most part foreigners, and therefore unable to complete their sales per aes et Libram. Judging from Varro, it was a form of stipulation against eviction that in his time was used only in sales of slaves, although he adds that by agrcement of parties it might be limited to a svmplwm.

We learn from the same writer—what is also indicated in various passages of Plautus—that the vendor at the same time and in the body of the saine stipulation guaranteed that the shecp or cattle he was selling were healthy and of a healthy stock and free from faults, and that the latter had not done any mischief for which their owner could be held liable in a noxal action; and similarly that a slave sold was healthy and not chargeable for any theft or other offence for which the purchaser might have to answer. If any of these guarantees turned out fallacious the purchaser had an actio ca stipulatu against the vendor: ' Whereas the plaintiff got from the defendant a stipulation that certain sheep he bought from him were healthy, &c. [repeating the words of guarantee], and that he, the plaintiff, should be free to hold them (habere licere), whatever it shall appear that the defendant ought in respect thereof to give to or do*

for the plaintiff, in the value thereof, judge, con- demn him ; otherwise, acquit him." Itisan observation of Bekker's?

Origin of that the aetio emptt in its original shape was just a simplification

actio empti,

of the aetio ex stipulatu on a vendor's guarantecs ; the stipulations to which we have been alluding had become such unfailing accom- paniments of a sale as to be matters of legal presumption, the result being that the words "whereas the plaintiff bowght from the defendant the sheep about which this action has arisen" were substituted in the demonstratio (as the introductory clause of the formula was called) for the detailed recital of what had been stipu- lated. Bekker justifies this by reference to the language of Varro, who seems to include under the words emptio, venditio not merely the agreement to buy and sell but also the stipulations that usually went with it.

The introduction of an aetio empti in this shape, however, was far from the recognition of sale as a purely consensual contract. If the price was not paid at once, the purchaser gave his stipulatory promise for it, or got some one on whom the vendor placed more reliance to do so for him, or else made a book-debt of it; and, if it had to be sued for, it was in all these cases by a condietio certi and not by an action ou the sale. If the price was paid but the thing purchased not delivered, the only remedy open to the purchaser was to get back his money by the same condiction, unlcss, indeed, the guarantee habere licere was held to cover delivery, in which case the purchaser might obtain damages in an aetio ex stipulatu under the name of actio empti. But this aetio empti, whether in- sisted on on the ground of uon-delivery, eviction, or breach of some other warranty, was really an action on the verbal contracts

ee ee

1 "Jp rebus mobilibus … qui alienam rem vendidit et tradidit furtum committit" (Gai., ii. 50).

2 Bekker, Aktionen, vol. i. p. 158.

that had accompanied the sale,—a strietwm jus action in which the judge could not travel beyond the letter of the engagements of the purchaser. In the latter years of the republic, and probably from the time of Q. Mucius Scevola, it was a bonae fidet action. How had the change come about? A single case of hardship may have been sufficient to induce it, such as the defeat of a claim for damages for eviction on the ground that the stipulatory guarantee had been accidentally overlooked. Ulpian says, " As the stipulatio duplae is a thing of universal observance, action on the ground of eviction will lie ex empto if perchance the vendor of a slave have failed to give his stipulatory guarantee, for everything that is of general custom and practice ought to be in view of the judge in a bonae fide judietum." *

Very little was required to convert the strveti juris aetio empti, really nothing more than an actio ex stipulatu, into a bonae jfidet one,—simply the addition by the pretor of the words "on con- siderations of good faith" (ex fide bona) to the "whatever the defendant ought to give to or do for the plaintiff." The effect, however, was immeasurable,—not that it did away with the prac- tice of stipulatory guarantees, for Varro wrote after the time of Q. Mucius (who speaks of the action on sale as a bonae fidet onc), and references to them are abundant in the pages of the classical jurists ; but it rendered them in law unnecessary. It made sale a purely consensual contract in which, in virtue of the simple agreement to buy and sell, all the obligations on either side that usually attended it were held embodied without express formulation or (still less) stipulatory or literal engagement. And, in instructing the judges to decide in every case between buyer and seller suing ex empto or ex vendito on principles of good faith, it really empowered them to go far beyond " general custom and practice," and to take cogniz- ance of everything that in fairness and equity and common sense ought to influence their judgment, so as to enable them freely to do justice between the parties in any and every question that might directly or indirectly arise out of their relation as seller and buyer.

The history of the four nominate real contracts—mutuwm (1.¢e., Real con- loan of money or other things returnable generically), commo- tracts.

date (¢.¢., loan of things that had to be returned specifically), deposit, and pledge—is more obscure than that of the consensual ones. Down to the time of the Peetilian law loan of mouey, corn, &c., was usually contracted per aes et libram; and it is probable that after the abolition of the nexum the obligation on a borrower to repay the money or corn advanced to him was made actionable, under the Silian and Calpurnian laws respectively, by a stipulation contemporaneous with the loan. With the rise of the jus gentiwm loan became actionable on its own merits,—that is to say, the advance and receipt of money as a loan of itself laid the borrower under obligation to repay it, even though no stipu- latory engagement had intervened ; the res (in this case the giving and receiving mutui causa)*

completed the contract. The obliga- tion that arose from it was pee unilateral, and enforcible, where the loan was of money, by the same action as stipulation and literal contract ; and so strictly was it construcd that interest on the loan was not claimable along with it, the ves given and received being the full measure of the obligation of repayment. The other three— commodate, deposit, and pledge—became independent real contracts very much later than mutwum, possibly not all at the same time, and none of them apparently until very latc in the republic. All of them, of course, had been long known as transactions of daily life ; the difficulty is to say when they first became actionable, and under what guise.

It is impossible within the space at our command to criticize the various theories entertained of their vicissitudes, for they neces- sarily vary to some extent in regard to each. We must content ourselves, therefore, with the simple statement that eventually, and within the period with which we are now dealing, they came to be recognized as independent real contracts, the res by which they were completed being the delivery of a thing by one person to another for a particular purpose, on the undcrstanding that it was to be returned when that purpose was served. And it is to be noted that, while mutwwm transferred the property of the money lent, the borrower being bound to return not the identical coins but only an equal amount, in pledge it was only the possession that passed, while in commodatc and deposit the lender or depositor retained both property and (legal) possession, the borrower or de- positary having nothing more than the natural detention. In all but matwum, therefore, there was trust ; the holder was bound, to an extent varying according to circumstances, to care for what he held as if it were his own, and entitled to be reimbursed for outlay on its maintenancc,—bound to return it, yet excused if his failure to do so was due to a cause for which in fairness he could not be held responsible. Consequently the actions on these three con- tracts, differing from that on mutwum, were all bonae fidei, the

3 Ulp., 'Lib. I. ad ed. aedil.," in Dig., xxi. 1, fr} 315.8) 20)

4 See Heimbach, Creditum, pp. 498 sq., 633 sg.; Bekker, Loci Plautini de rebus creditis, Greifswald, 1861; Deinelius, in the Zeitschr. f. Rechtsgesch., vol. ii, (1863), p. 217 sq.; Bekker, Aktionen, vol. i. p. 306

sqg.; Ubbelohde, Zur Gesch. d. benannten Realcontracte, Marburg, 1870; Huschke, Lehre vom Darlehn, Leipsic, 1882.

judge being vested with full discretion to determine what was fair and equitable in each individual case. ; ; Preetor- Pretorian Amendments on the Law of Succession.—The most im- ianbon- portant change in the law of succession during the latter half of the orum pos- republic was due to the pretors. They introduced, under the eee sessio. of bonorum possessio,' what was really beneficial enjoyment of the estate of a deceased person without the legal title of inheritance. There is much to lead to the conclusion that the series of provisions in regard to it which we find in the Julian consolidation of the Ediet were the work of a succession of pretors, some of them prob- ably not under the republic but under the empire ; but it will be convenient to give here a general view of the subject as a whole, disregarding the consideration that some. of its features may not have been given to it within the period now under notice.

Justinian, speaking of the origin of bonorwm possessio, observes that in promising it to a petitioner the pretors were not always actuated by the same motives; in some eases their object was to facilitate the application of the rules of the jus civile, in some to amend their application according to what they belicved to be the spirit of the XII. Tables, in others, again, to set them aside as in- equitable. It is not unreasonable to assume that it was with the purpose of aiding the jus ctvile that the first step was taken in what gradually beeame a momentous reform ; and it is extremely prob- able that this first step was the announcement by some pretor that, where there was dispute as to an inheritance, and a testament was

resented to him bearing not fewer seals than were required by law, te would give possession of the goods of the defunct to the heir named in it? In this as it stands there is nothing but a regulation of possession of the dona of the inheritance pending the question of legalright. Just as between two parties contending about the owner- ship of a specifie thing in a red windicatio the pretor first settled the question of interim possession, so did he promise to do here when a question was about to be tried about the right to an inheritance (si de hereditate ambigitur). It was

a provisional arrangement merely, and very necessary in view of the state of the law which permitted a third party, apart from any pretence of title, to step in and com- plete a wsueapio pro herede by a year's possession of the effects of the inheritance (supra, p. 692). Even at the time when the Edict was closed it was not necessarily more than a provisional grant ; for, if heirs-at-law of the deceased appeared and proved that, although the testament bore on the outside the requisite number of seals, yet in fact some solemnity of execution, such as the familiae venditio or testamenti nuncupatio, had been omitted, the grantee had to yield them up the possession that had been given him pending inquiry. It was only by a rescript of Marcus Aurelius's that it was declared that a plea by the heir-at-law of invalidity of a testament on the ground of defeet of formalities of execution might be defeated by an exceptio doli, on the principle that it was contrary to good faith to set aside the wishes of a testator on a technical objection that was purely formal. Thus was the bonorwm possessio seeundwm tabulas, ?.é., in accordance with a testament, from being originally one in aid of the jus civile, in course of time converted into one in contra- dietion of it. That the motives and purposes of the series of pretors who built up the law of bonorwmn possessio must have varied in progress of years is obvious ; and, once the machinery had been invented, nothing was easier than to apply it to new ideas. The pretor could not make a man heir,—that he always disclaimed ; but he could give a man, whether heir or not, the substantial ad- vantages of inheritance, and protect him in their enjoyment by pretorian remedies. He gave him possession of the goods of the deceased, with summary remedies for ingathering them, which, once in his hands, would become his in quiritarian right on the expiry of the period of usucapion ; and, by interpolation into the

Jormula of a fiction of heirship, he gave him effectual personal actions against debtors of the deceased, rendering him lable in the same way to the deceased's creditors.

Another variety of the bonorwm possessto was that contra tabulas, —In opposition to the terms of a testament. If a testator had neither instituted nor expressly disinherited a son who was one of his sui heredes, then his testament was a nullity, and the child passed over had no need of a

preetorian remedy. Where swt heredes other than sons were passed over the jus civile allowed thein to par- ticipate with the instituted hcirs by a sort of accrual. But the Edict went further ; for, if the institute was a stranger, t.¢., not brother or sister of the child passed ovcr, then, on the petition of the latter, the preetor gave him and any other swi concurring with him possession of the whole estate of the deceased, the institute being left with nothing more than the empty name of heir. Another

1 For a résumé of the principal theories (down to 1870) about the origin of honorum possessio, see Danz, Geschichte d. rim. Rechts. vol. ii. § 176. Of the later literature it is enough to mention Leist, in the first 4 vols. of his con- tinuation of Gliick's Pandecten-Commentar, Erlangen, 1870-79,

2 Cic., In Verr. II., i. 45,§ 117. He says (writing in 684) that an edict to that effect was already tralaticium, i.e., had been adopted year after year by a Series of preetors. Gaius (ii. 119) speaks of seven at Jeast as the requisite num- ber of seals ; ¢.¢., those of the libripens and the five citizen witnesses, and that

of the antestatus, whose functions are not well understood, but whose official

designation appended to his seal recurs so regularly in i ipti 4 no doubt that his was the seventh. 7 En ea al

application of the bonorwm possessio contra tabulas was to the case of emancipated children of the testator's. By the jus civile he was not required to institute or disinherit them ; for by their emanci- pation they had ceased to be sui heredes, and had lost that interest in the family estate which was put forward as the reason why they had to be mentioned in the testament of their paterfanvilias. The pretors—although probably not until the empire, and when the doctrines of the jas natwrale were being more freely recognized— put them on the same footing as unemancipated children, requiring that they also should be either instituted or disinherited, and giving them bonorum possessio if they were not. It was contra tabulas in the sense that it displaced the instituted heirs either wholly or partially,—wholly when the institutes were not children of the deceased, partially when they were. In the latter case, at least when sui

were affected by it, the grant of bonorwm possessio was under the very equitable condition that the grantees should col- late or bring into partition all their own acquisitions since their emancipatian.

The third variety of bonorum possessio was that granted ab intes- tato. As has been shown on a previous page (p. 692), the rules of the jus cévile in reference to succession on intestacy were extremely strict and artificial. They admitted neither emancipated children nor agnates who had undergone capitis deminutio; they admitted no female agnate except a sister; if the nearest agnate or agnates declined, the right did not pass to those of the next degree ; mere cognates, kinsmen of the deceased who were not agnates, ¢.g., grand- children or others related to him through females and agnates capite minutt, were not admitted at all; while a wife had no share unless she had been im manu of the deceased and therefore filiae loco. All these matters the pretors amended, and so far paved the way for the revolution in the law of intestate succession which was accom- plished by Justinian.

The classes they established were four. (1) Displacing the swt Pretor- heredes of the jus civile, they gave the first place to descendants ian order (dibert), including in the term all those whom the deccased would of intes- have been bound either by the jus civile or the Edict to institute tate suc- or disinherit had he made a will, 7.¢., his wife in manu, his natural cession.

(as distinguished from adopted) sons and daughters whether én potestate at his death or emancipated, the representatives of sons who had predeceased him, and adopted children in his potestas when he died. (2) On failure of liberi the right to petition for bonorwm possessio opened to the nearest collateral agnatcs of the intestate, under their old name of legitimd heredes. (3) Under the Jus civile, on failure of agnates (and of the gens where there was one), the succession was vacant and fell to the fisc, unless perchance it was usucapted by a stranger possessing pro herede. The frequency of such vacancies was much diminished by the recognition by the pretors of the right of cognates to claim bonoruwm possessio in the third place. Who they had primarily in view under the name of "'cognates" it is impossible to say. The epithet is most frequently

applied by modern writers to kinsmen related through females ; but in its widest sense it included all kinsmen without exception, and in a more limited sense all kinsmen not entitled to claim as agnates. There were included amongst them thcrefore—although it is very probable that the list was not made up at once, but from time to time by the action of a series of pretors—not merely kins- men related through females (who were not agnates), but also agnates of a remoter degree who were excluded as such because the nearest agnates in existence had declincd, persons who had been agnates but by reason of capitis minatio had lost that character, female agnates more distantly related than sisters, and ehildren of the intestate's who at the time of his death were in an adoptive family, All these took according to proximity. (4) Finally, the claim passed to the survivor of husband and wife, assuming always that their marriage had not involved manus. This list constituted the pretorian order of succession on intestacy.

All these bonorwm possessiones had to be formally petitioned for. In that ab intestato descendants were allowed a year for doing so, while other persons were limited to 100 days, the period for those entitled in the second place beginning when that of those entitled in the first had expired, and soon, The grant was always made at the risk of the petitioner; nothing was assured him by it; it might turn out real and substantial (cwm re) or merely nominal (sine re), according as the grantee could or could not maintain it against the heir of the jus civile. For the latter was entitled to stand on his statutory or testamentary right, without applying for bonorwm possessio, although in fact he often did so for the sake of the summary procedure it supplied him for ingathering thc effects of the deceased.

Lhe Law of Procedwre.—The substitution of the formular system Law of of procedure for that by the "actions of the law" commenced long pro- before the end of the period now under eonsideration ; and we have cedure.

had occasion more than once to observe how greatly it facilitated the development of the institutions of property and contractual obligation. But as the change was only completed in the early empire it will be more

convenient to defer explanation of the nature of the new procedure in the meantime. (See infra, p. 707 sq.)

JUS NATURALE. |

CHAPTER IV.—THE JUS NATURALE AND MA- TURITY OF ROMAN JURISPRUDENCE.

(The Empire until the time of Diocletian.)

TI, CHARACTERISTICS AND FoRMATIVE AGENCIES OF THE LAW DURING THE PERIOD.

Characteristics generally and Recognition of a Jus Naturale in particular. —The first three centuries of the empire witnessed the perfection of Roman jurisprudence and the commencement of its decline. During that time the history of the law presents no such great landmarks as the enactment of the XII. Tables, the commencement of a preetor's edict, the recognition of simple consent as creative of a contractual bond, or the introduction of a new form of judicial procedure; the establishment of a class of patented jurists speaking as the mouthpieces of the prince, and the admission of all the free subjects of the empire to the privileges of citizenship, are about the only isolated events to which one can point as productive of great and lasting results. There were, indeed, some radical

But many of them refer again and again to the jus naturale s and Gaius is the only one (Justinian following him) who occasionally makes it synonymous with jus gentium. There can be no question that the latter was much more largely imbued with precepts of natural law than was the jus cvile, but it is impossible to say they were identical ; it is enough to cite but one illustration, pointed out again and again in the texts: while the one admitted the legality of slavery, the other denied it. While the jus civile studied the interests only of citizens, and the jus gentium those of freemen irrespective of nationality, the law of nature had theoretically a

wider range and took all man- kind within its purview. We have no hint that the doc- trine of the jus gentiwm differed in this respect from the Jus cwile—that a slave was nothing but a chattel; yet we find the latter, when tinctured with the jus naturale, re- cognizing many rights as competent to a slave, and even conceding that he might be debtor or creditor in a con- tract, although his obligation or claim could be given effect to only indirectly, since he could neither sue nor be sued.

Voigt thus summarizes the characteristics of this speculative Charaec- Roman jus natwrale :—(1) its potential universal applicability to teristies all men, (2) among all peoples, (8) at all times, and (4) its corre- of jus spondence with the innate conviction of right (innere Reehtsiber- naturale.

changes in particular institutions, such as the caduciary legislation of Augustus, intended to raise the tone of

domestic morality and increase fruitful marriages, and the legislation of the same emperor and his immediate suc- cessor for regulation of the status of enfranchised slaves ; but these, although of vast importance in themselves, and the first of them influencing the current of the law for centuries, yet left upon it no permanent impression. It was by much less imposing efforts that it attained the perfection to which it reached under the sovereigns of the Severan house,—a steady advance on the lines already marked out in the latter years of the republic. The sphere of the jus Quiritium became more and more cir- cumscribed, and one after another of the formalities of the jus civile was abandoned. The manus of the husband practically disappeared ; the patria potestas of the father lost much of its significance by the recognition, notwith- standing it, of the possibility of a separate and independ- ent estate in the child; slaves might be enfranchised by informal manumission ; res mancipt constantly passed by simple tradition, the right of the transferee being secured by the Publician action ; servitudes and other real rights informally constituted were maintained as effectual tuctione praetoris; an heir's acceptance of a succession could be accomplished by any indication of his intention, without observance of the formal cretzo of the earlier law; and many of the incidental bargains incident to consensual contract, but varying their

natural import, that used to be embodied in words of stipulation, came to be enforcible on the strength of formless contemporaneous agreements.

zeugung). Its propositions, as gathered from the pages of the jurists of the period, he formulates thus :—(1) recognition of the claims of blood (sanguinis vel cognationis ratio); (2) duty of faithfulness to engagements, —is natura debet . . . cujrus fidem secuti sumus; (8) apportionment of advantage and disadvantage, gain and loss, aecord- ing to the standard of equity ; (4) supremacy of the volwntatis ratio over the words or form in which the will is manifested.? It was regard for the first that, probably pretty carly in the principate, led the pretors to place emancipated children on a footing of perfect equality with unemancipated in the matter of succession, and to admit collateral kindred through females as well as those related through males; and that, in the reigns of Hadrian and Mareus Aurelius respectively, induced the senate to give a mother a pre- ferred right of succession to her children, and vice versa. It was respect for the second that led to the recognition of the validity of what was called a natural obligation,—one that, because of some defect of form or something peculiar in the position of the parties, was ignored by the jus eivile and incapable of being made the ground of an action for its enforcement, yet might be given effect to indirectly by other equitable remedies, Regard for the third was nothing new in the jurisprudence of the period ; the republic had already admitted it as a principle that a man was not ta be unjustifiably enriched at another's eost ; the jurists of the empire, however, gave it a wider application than before, and used it as a key to the solution of many a difficult question in the domain of the law of contract. As for the fourth, it was one that had to be applied with delicacy ; for the volwntas could not in equity be pre- ferred to its manifestation to the prejudice of other parties who in good faith had acted upon the latter. We have many evidences of the skilful way in which the matter was handled, speculative opinion being held in check by cousiderations of individual interest and general utility.*

A remark of Voigt's on the subject is well worthy of being kept in view, that the risk which arose from the setting up of the pre-

Idea of ded by jurists and judges to the | cepts ofa speculative jus natwrale, as derogating from the rules of 5 ns. ‘ = ae ae ail yd euieient a pee an for | the jus eivile, was greatly diminished through the position held by Jus gentium over the jus cote 18 In the jurists of the early empire.

naturale.

these and many other changes in the same direction, as well as for the ever-increasing tendency evinced to sub- ordinate word and deed to the voluntas from which they arose. They are rather to be attributed to the striving on the part of many after a higher ideal, to which they gave the name of jus naturale.’ It is sometimes said that the notion of a jus naturale as distinct from the jus gentewm was peculiar to Ulpian, and that it found no acceptance

Their jus respondend? (infra, p. 705) made them legislative organs of the state, so that, in introducing principles of the jus naturale, or of aequum ct bonwm, they at the same Imoment positivized them and gave them the force of law. They were, he says, “ philosophers in the sphere of law, searehers after the ultimate truth ; but, while they—usually in reference to a concrete case—sought out the truth and applied what they had found, they combined with the freedom and untrammelledness of speeulation the life-freshness of practice and the power of assuring the operativeness of their abstract propositions.” +

Influence of Constitutional Changes.—Tle ehanges in the con- Position stitution aided not a little the current of the law. Men of foreign and char- desecnt reached the throne and recruited the senate,—proud indeed acter of of the history and traditions of Rome, yet in most cases free from jurists. prejudice in favour of institutions that had nothing to recommend them but their antiquity. Military life had not the same attrac- tions as during the republic; there was no longer a tribunate to which men of ainbition might aspire ; the comitia soon eeased to afford an outlet for public eloquence ; so that men of education and

2 Voigt, lc, p. 804. 3 Voigt, pp. 321-23. + Voigt, p. 341.

with the Roman jurists generally. But this is inaccurate. Justinian, indeed, has excerpted in the Digest and put in the forefront of his Znstitutes a passage from an elementary work of Ulpian's, in which he speaks of a jus naturale that is common to man and the lower animals, and which is substantially instinct. This is a law of nature of which it is quite true that we find no other jurist taking account.

1 See Voigt, Das Jus naturale … der Romer, particularly vol. i. §§ 52-64, 89-96; Maine, Ancient Law, chap. iil.

Exten- sion of citizen- ship to whole

empire.

FEnact-

position had all the more inducement to devote themselves to the conscientious study and regular practice of the law. This was greatly encouraged by the action of Augustus in creating a elass of licensed or patented jurists, privileged to give answers to questions submitted to them by the judges, and that ex auctoritate prineiprs, and still more so, perhaps, by Hadrian's reorganization of the im- perial privy couneil, wherein a large proportion of the seats were assigned to jurists of distinction. With several of the emperors lawyers were amongst their most intimate and trusted friends. Again and again the offiee of pretorian prefect, the highest next the throne, was filled by them; Papinian, Ulpian, and Paul all held it in the reigns of Septimius Severus and Alexander. Juris- prudenee, therefore, was not merely an honourable and luerative profession under the new arrangements, but a passport to places of eminence in the state ; and till the death of Alexander the ranks of the jurists never failed to be recruited by men of position and accomplishment.

Extension of Citizenship to the Empire generally.—It must have been between the years 212 and 217 that Caracalla published his constitution conferring citizenship on all the free inhabitants of the empire. Far-

reaching as were its consequences, the primary pur- pose was purely fiseal. Augustus had imposed a tax of five per eent. on inheritances and bequests, exeept where the whole sueces- sion was worth less than 100,000 sesterces or the heir or legatee was a near kinsman of the deeeased. It was continued by his suc- cessors, and was very profitable, thanks to the propensity of the well-to-do classes for single blessedness, followed by testamentary distribution of their fortunes amongst their friends. But it affeeted only the suecessions of Roman citizens, so that the great mass of the provincials escaped it. Caracalla, being needy, not only in- ereased it temporarily to ten per eent., but widened the area of its operation by elevating all his free subjects to the rank of eitizens. The words of Ulpian are very inclusive,—"in urbe Romano qui sunt… eives Romani effecti sunt"; but there is considerable diversity of opinion as to their meaning, caused by the fact that peregrins are still mentioned by some of Caraealla's suceessors. Limit the constitution, however, as we may, there can be no ques- tion of its immense importanee. By conferring eitizenship on the provincial peregrins it subjeeted them in all their relations to the law of Rome, and qualified them for taking part in many trans- actions both inter vivos and mortis eausa whieh previously had been incompetent for them. It did away with the necessity for the jus gentiwm as a separate positive system. Its principles and its doctrines, it is true, survived, and were expanded and elabo- rated as freely and sueeessfully as ever ; but they were so dealt with as part and pareel of the civil law of Rome, whieh had ceased to be Italian and become imperial.

Legislation of Comitia and Senate.—Augustus, clinging as much

ments of as possible to the form of republican institutions, thought it ex-

Augus- tus ;

about mar- riage ;

about manu- Inission.

pedient not to break with the old practice of submitting his legis- lative proposals to the vote of the comitia of the tribes. Some of them were far from insignificant. Besides various measures for the amendment of the

eriminal law, three groups of enactments of considerable importance owed their authorship to him, the first to improve domestie morality and encourage fruitful marriage, the second to abate the evils that had arisen from the too lavish ad- mission of liberated slaves to the privileges of citizenship, and the third to regulate procedure in publie prosecutions and private litigations.

The first group included the Lex Julia de adulteriis coercendis of 736 and the Lew Julia et Papia Poppaca,—the latter a voluminous matrimonial code, which for two or three eenturies exercised such an influence as to be regarded as one of the sourees of Roman law almost quite as mueh as the XII. Tables or Julian's consolidated Edict. It was often spoken of as the Lex Caducaria, one of its most remarkable provisions being that unmarried persons (within certain ages and under certain qualifications) should forfeit entirely anything to whieh they were entitled under a testament, and that married but ehildless persons should forfeit one-half, the lapsed provisions (cadwea) going to the other persons named in the will who were qualified in terms of the statute, and failing them to the lise. However well intended, the language of Juvenal and others raises doubts whether the law did not really do more harm than good. By the Christian emperors many of its provisions were repealed, while others fell into disuse; and in the Justinianian books hardly a trace is left of its distinctive features.

The second group included the Alia-Sentian law of the year 4 A.D., the Fufia-Caninian law of the year 8, and the Junia-Norban law of the year 19,—the last passed in the reign of Tiberius, but was probably planned by Augustus. The Atlia-Sentian law regulated the matter of manumission, with the result that a manumittee might on that event, and aecording to eireumstances minutely described, become (1) either a citizen, or (2) a freedman with the possibility of attaining eitizenship by a process indicated in the statute, or (3) a freedman who, beeause of his bad eharaeter, was forbidden to reside within a hundred miles of Rome and denied the hope of ever becoming a citizen (libertus deditieius). The Junian

law was passed in order to define more preeisely the status in the meantime of those freedmen who had a potentiality of citizenship. It did so by assimilating them to the eolonial Latins, denying to them the rights of a citizen proper so far as coneerned family and suecession, but eoneeding to thei all the patrimonial rights of a eitizen and the fullest power of dealing with their belongings so long as not mortis causa and to the prejudice of their patrons. This was the Junian Latinity so prominent in the pages of Gaius, but of which our limits exelude any detailed description.

The third group of enactments referred to included the two Leges Judici- Juliae judiciariae, of which we know but little. That regulating ary laws. procedure in private litigations is the same that is mentioned by Gaius as having completed the work of the Abutian law in sub- stituting the formular system for that per legis aetiones. It must have been a somewhat comprehensive statute, as a passage in the Vatican Fragments refers to a provision of its 27th section ; and our ignorance of its eontents therefore, beyond one or two trifling details, is the more to be regretted.

From the time of Tiberius onwards it was the senate that did Legisla- the work of legislation, for the simple reason that the eomitia were tion of no longer fit for it. And very active it seems to have been. This senate. may have been due to some extent to the fact that so many pro- fessional jurists, aware from their practice of the points in which the law required amendment, possessed seats in the imperial couneil, where the drafts of the senatuseconsults were prepared. It was the senatusconsults that were the principal statutory factors of what was called by both emperors and jurists the jus sovwm,—law that departed often very widely from the prineiples of the old jus civile, that was much more in aecordance with those of the Zdvet, and that to a great extent might have been introduced through its means had not the authority of the pretors been overshadowed by that of the prince. In the end of the 2d and the beginning of the 3d century the supremaey of the latter in the senate became rather too pronouneed, men quoting the oratio in whieh he had submitted to it a projeet of law instead of the resolution whieh gave it legislative effect. No doubt it must have been earefully eonsidered beforehand in the imperial council, and rarely stood in need of further discussion ; but the ignoring

of the formal act that followed it tended unduly to emphasize the share borne in it by the sovereign, and made it all the easier for the emperors after Alexander Severus to dispense altogether with the time-honoured praetice.

The Consolidated Edietum Perpetuum.—The ediets of the preetors, Julian's which had attained very considerable proportions before the fall of Edictum, the republic, certainly received some additions in the early empire. But those magistrates did not long enjoy the same independence as of old; there was a greater imperium than theirs in the state, before which they hesitated to lay hands on the law with the bold- ness of their predecessors. They continued as before to publish annually at entry on office the ediets that had been handed down to them through generations; but their own additions were soon limited to mere amendments rendered necessary by the provisions of some senatusconsult that affeeted the jus honorarium. They ceased to be that viva vox juris eivilis which they had been in the time of Cicero ; the emperor, if any one, was now entitled to the epithet ; the annual edict had lost its raison d'étre. Hadrian was of opinion that the time had eome for writing its " explicit," and giving it another and a more enduring and authoritative shape,— for so fashioning and so sanctioning it that it might be reeeived as law, and not merely as edict, throughout the length and breadth of the empire. He accordingly commissioned Salvius Jnlianus, urban pretor at the time, to revise it, with a view to its approval by the senate as part of the statute law.

The revisal, unfortunately, like the XII. Tables, is no longer extant. Itis only a very slight account we have of the revision,— a line or two in Eutropius and Aurelius Victor, and a few lines in two of Justinian's prefaces to the Digest. We may assume, from what is said there, that there were both abridgment and rearrange- ment of the ediets of the urban pretor ; but the question remains how far Julian consolidated with them those of the peregrin preetor and other officials who had contributed to the jus honorarium. Those of the eurule ediles, we are told, were ineluded ; Justinian says that they formed the last part of Julian's work, and may have been a sort of appendix. There is reason to believe that so much of the ediets of the provincial governors as differed from those of the pretors were also ineorporated in it, and that the edicts of the peregrin pretors, in

so far as they contained available matter not embodied in those of their urban colleagues or the provincial governors, were dealt with in the same way. The consolidation got the name of Hdietwm Perpetwum in a sense somewhat different from that formerly imputed to edieta perpetua as distinguished from edicta repentina, and, after approval by Hadrian,' seems to have been formally sanctioned by senatusconsult. It was thus a closed ehapter so far as the preetors were eoncerned ; for, though it may have continued for a time to hold its place on their album with its formularies of actions, they had no longer any power to alter or make additions to it. It had ceased to be a mere efflux of their imperium and had become matter of statute ; and its interpreta-

Re-

JUS NATURALE. |

of the emperor.

The Julian diet does not seem to have been divided into books, but only into rubricated titles ; and the general impression is that the formularies of actions were split up and distributed in their appropriate places. The arrangement is not difficult to discover by comparison of the various commentaries upon it, particularly those of Ulpian and Paul, which each contained over eighty books. First came a series of titles dealing with the foundations and first steps of all legal procedure,—jurisdiction, summons, intervention of attorneys or procurators, &c. ; secondly, ordinary process in vir- tue of the magistrate's jurisdietio; thirdly, extraordinary process, originally in virtue of his dmperiwm ; fourthly, execution against judgment-debtors, bankrupts, &c. ; fifthly, interdicts, exceptions, and preetorian stipulations ; and lastly, the edilian remedies. From the quotations from the Julian Hdict embodied in the fragments of the writings of the commentators preserved by Justinian re- peated attempts have been made to reproduce it. Most of them are nothing more than transcripts or attempted reconstructions of passages in the Digest which are supposed to have been borrowed from it, and are of comparatively little value. The only really scientific and worthily critical efforts are those of Rudorff in 1869 and Lenel in 1883. +

The Responses of Patented Cownsel.—The right of responding

ROMAN LAW

- tion and amendment were no longer in their hands but in those

-some relief he proposed to grant.

705

magistrate the empcror had the same jus edicendi that kings, con- suls, and pretors had had before him, and used it as they did to indicate some course of action he meant to adopt and follow or His range, of course, was much greater than that of the pretors had been ; for his authority en- dured for life, and extended over the whole empire and every department of government. But originally, and in principle, his successor on the throne was no more bound to adopt any of his edicts than a praetor was to adopt those of his predecessors. That it was not unusual for an edict to be renewed, and that it occasion- ally happened that the renewal was not by the immediate successor of its origina] author, are manifest from various passages in the texts, Very frequently, when its utility had stood the test of years, it was transmuted into a senatusconsult ; this fact proves of itself that an edict per se had not the effect of statute. But their adoption by a succession of two or three sovercigns, whose reigns were of average duration, may have been held sufficient to give them the character of consuetudinary law ; and, by a not unnatural process, unreflecting public opinion may have come to impute force of statute to the edict itself rather than to the longa consuetudo that followed on it, thus paving the way for the assertion by the sove- reigns of the later empire of an absolute right of legislation, and for the recognition of the lex edictalis (infra, p. 710) as the only form of statute.

The imperial rescripts and decrees (reseripta, deereta) had force of Rescripts law (legis vicem habent) from the earliest days of the empire, and and their operation was never limited to the lifetime of the prince from decrees.

sponses under imperial authority (jus respondendi ex auctoritate principis), of first granted by Augustus and continued by his successors down to patented the time of Alexander Severus, did not imply any curtailment of

couzisel.

Eclicts of

the right of unlicensed jurists to give advice to any one who chose to consult them. What it did was to give an authoritative char- acter to a response, so that the judge who had asked for it and to whom it was presented—for the judges were but private citizens, most of them unlearned in the law—was bound to adopt it as if it had emanated from the emperor himself. It may be that Augus- tus was actuated by a political motive,—that he was desirous by this concession to attach lawyers of eminence to the new régime, and prevent the recurrence of the evils experienced during the re- public from the too great influence of patrons. But, whatever may have prompted his action in the matter, its beneficial consequences for the law can hardly be overrated. For the quasi-legislative powers with which they were invested enabled the patented counsel to influence current doctrine not speculatively merely but positively (jura econdere), and so to leaven their interpretations of the jus civile and jus honorarium with suggestions of natural law as to give a new complexion to the system.

Instead of giving his opinion like the unlicensed jurist by word of mouth, either at the request of the judge or at the instance of one of the parties, the patented counscl, who did not require to give his reasons, reduced it to writing and sent it to the court under seal. Augustus does not seem to have contemplated the possibility of conflicting responses being tendered from two or more jurists equally privileged. It was an awkward predicament for a judge to be placed in. Hadrian solved the difficulty by declaring that in such a case the judge should be entitled to use his own discretion. That on receiving a response with which he was dis- satisfied he could go on calling for others until he got one to his mind, and then pronounce judgment in accordance with it on the ground that there was «lifference of opinion, is extremely unlikely. The more probable

explanation of Hadrian's rescript is, that the number of patented responding counsel was very limited; that a judge, if he desired their assistance, was required by this rescript to consult them all (quorwm omniwm si, &c.); that, if they were unanimous, but only then, their opinion had force of statute (legis vieem optinet); and that when they differed the judge must decide for himself. é

Constitutions of the Emperors.?—Gaius and Ulpian coucur in

emperors, holding that every imperial constitution, whether in the shape of

rescript, decree, or edict, had the force of statute. It may be that by the time of Ulpian that was the prevailing opinion ; but modern criticism is disposed to regard the dictwm of Gaius, written in the time of Antoninus Pius, as coloured by his Asiatic notions, and not quite accurate so far as the edicts were coneerned. As supreme

1 Rudorff, De jurisdictione edictum: edicti perpetui quae reliqua sunt, Leipsic, 1869, and rev. by Brinz in the Arit. Vierteljahrschrift, vol. xi. (1870), p. 471 sg.; Lenel, Das Edictwm Perpetuum : ein Versuch zu dessen Wiederherstellung, Leipsic, 1883. The last gained the "Saviony Foundation Prize" offered by the Munich Academy in 1882 for the best restitution of the formulae of Julian's Edict, but goes far beyond the limited subject prescribed ; see Brinz's report upon it to the Academy in the Zeitschr. d. Sav. Stift., vol. iv. (1883), Rom. Abtheil., p. 164 sq. :

2 Gaius, i. 7. Justinian, Znst., i. 2, § 8, gives it somewhat differently.

3 Gai. i. 5; Ulp., in Dig., i. 4, fr. 1, § 1; Mommsen, Rom. Staats- recht, vol. ii. p. 843 sq. ; Wlassak, Krit. Studien zur Theorie der Rechts- quellen im Zeitalter d. klass. Juristen, Gratz, 1884; A. Pernice (crit. Wlassak), in Zeitschr. d. Sav. Stift., vol. vi. (1885), Rém. Abtheil., p. 293 sq.; Karlowa, Rim. Rechtsgesch., vol. i. § 85.

whom they had proceeded. But they were not directly acts of legislation. In both the emperor theoretically did no more than authoritatively interpret existing law, although the boundary be- tween interpretation and

new law, sometimes difficult to define, was not always strictly adhered to. The rescript was an answer by the emperor to a petition, either by an official or a private party, for an instruction as to how the law was to be applied to the facts set forth ; when the answer was in a separate writing it was usually spoken of as an epistula; when noted at the foot of the application its technical name was subseriptio or adnotatio. The decree was the emperor's ruling in a case submitted to him judicially ; it might be when it had been brought before him in the first instance extra ordinem, or when it had been removed by supplicatio from an inferior court in its earliest stage, or when it came before him by appeal. It was asa judge that the emperor pronounced his decree ; but, proceeding as it did from the fountain of authoritative interpretation, it had a value far beyond that of the sentence of an inferior court (which was law only as between the parties), and formed a precedent which governed all future cases involving the same question. Those decrees and rescripts constituted one of the most important sources of the law during the first three centurics and more of the empire, and were elaborated with the assistance of the most eminent jurists of the day, the rescripts being the special charge of the magister libellorum. From the time of the Gordians to that of the abdication of Diocletian they were almost the only channel of the law that remained.

Professional Jurisprudence, —A sketch of the history of Roman law can hardly be considered complete without some account of the jurists of the first two centuries and a half of the empire, who con- tributed to it the great body of doctrine embalmed in the Digest of Justinian. But the exigencies of space compel us to refrain from entering upon a branch of our subject that cannot be satisfactorily treated without considerable detail, and to content ourselves with referring the reader to the recent work of Mr Roby, or the Reehts- gesehichte of Professor Karlowa of Heidelberg, where all will be found that the most inquisitive could desire. For an account of the extant remains of their writings outside the Justinianian Digest, such as the Jnstitutes of Gaius, the Rules of Ulpian, the Sentences of Paul, and a variety of minor pieces, we must likewise refer to Karlowa's book,® which promises to be the most elaborate history of Roman law as yet given to the public.*

IL. SursrantivE CHANGES IN THE Law.

Concession of Peculiar Privileges to Soldiers.—While the period with which we are dealing saw the substantial dis- appearance of the distinction between citizen and peregrin, it witnessed the rise of another, —that between soldiers and civilians (mites, pagant). The most remarkable effluxes

4 Roby, Introduction to the Study of Justinian's Digest, Cambridge, 1884, chaps. ix.~~xv. ; Karlowa, Rdm. Rechtsgeschichte, vol. i, (Staats~~ recht und Rechtsquellen), Ueipsic, 1885, §§ 87-91. Karlowa's 2d vol. will contain the history of the private law, the criminal law, and civil and criminal procedure. ,

5 Karlowa, op. cit., § 92. An account of the jurists of the empire and their remains outside the Digest will be found in an expansion of the present article now in the press, under the title of Historical Intro- duction to the Private Law of Rome.

XX. — 89

[JUS NATURALE,

706 ROMAN LAW

The Family.— The legislative efforts of Augustus to encourage Family marriage, to which persons of position showed a remarkable dis- relations.

Military of the jus mlitare (as it is sometimes called) were the

testa- military testament and the castrense peculiwm. The first taste, have already been mentioned. The relation of husband and mnguts. "setrat naught all the rules of the jus civile and the preetors' | wife still in law required no more for its creation than deliberate edict alike as to the form and substance of last wills. It uaterea age, of nuptial concent ainece ly oy one or two BUDA . . +48 the bride's home-coming to her husbaud's house was regarded as might be in writing, by word of mouth, by _ acc the

criterion of coinpleted marriage. But it was rarely accom- signs perhaps of a dying man ; all that was required was the panied with manus. So repugnant was such subjection to patrician voluntas so manifested as not to be mistaken. More extra- ladies that they declined to submit to confarreate nuptials ; and so ordinary still,—it was sustained even ¢hough its provisions | great consequently became the difficulty of finding persons qualified ran counter to the most cherished rules of the common law. | by confarreate use es ree priesthoods ar ea in the ; ld die partly testate | °™pire it had to be decreed that confarreation should in future be Contrary to the maxim that ee Cou 2 – | productive of manus only quoad saera, and should not make the and partly intestate, a soldier might dispose of part of his | \ite a member of her husband's family. Manus by a year's unin- estate by testament and leave the rest to descend to his | terrupted cohabitation was already out of date in the time of Gaius; heirs ab intestate. Contrary also to the maxim seme | and, although that by coemption was still in use in his time, it prob- : a) he might sive his estate to A for life or | ably was quite unknown by the end of the period. Husband and heres semper heres, Se es wife therefore had their separate estates, the common establish- for a term of years, or until the occurrence of some event, | jiont being maintained by the husband, with the assistance of the with remainder to B. Contrary to the general rule, a | revenue of the wife's dowry (dos), —an institution which received Latin or peregrin, or an unmarried or married but child- ner ag Ai aan' hat of the I a an es to some pase . . : regulate statute. Divorce was unfortunately very common ; i less pemou, might take an inheritance me tie ponent ee othe lawful Sie without any assignable cause ; a iN blame attached a soldier as freely as could a citizen with children. "IS | to either side, he or she suffered deprivation to some extent of the testament, in so far as it disposed only of bona castrensia, nuptial provisions, but there were no other penal consequences. was not affected by capitis deminutio minima. It was not Not only in the case of a /iliusfamilias who had adopted a mili- invalidated by preeterition of suc heredes, nor could they | tary career, but in all cone there was manifested a ee : Hed dese unalen ae Gea to place restrictions on the exercise of the patria potestas. 11s challenge it because they ke : ; was due in a great degree to the hold that the doctrines of natural "legitim"; nor could the instituted heir claim a Fal- | jaw were gaining within the Roman system, partly also to the cidian fourth, even

though nine-tenths of the succession had | fact that the emperors, having succeeded to the censorial regimen been assigned to legatees. Finally, a later testament did | ™orwm, allowed it freely to influence their edicts and rescripts. ye : ae ; di to-Be sWennnenin Exposure of an infant was still allowed ; but a parent was no longer a nullify an earlier one, if it appeared to be the intention permitted, even in the character of household judge, to put his of the soldier testator that they should be read togetlier. son to death; in fact his prerogative was limited to moderate All this is remarkable, manifesting a spirit very different from | chastisement, the law requiring, in case of a grave offence that that which animated the common law of testaments. True, it was | merited severer punishment, that he should hand his child over to a principle with the jurists of the classical period that the voluntatis | the ordinary tribunal. His right of sale, in like manner, was re- ratio was to be given effect to in the interpretation of testamentary | gtricted to young children, and permitted only when he was in writings ; but that was on the condition that the requirements of | great poverty nal unable to maintain them, while their impignora- law as to form and substance had been serupulously observed. But | tion by him was prohibited under pain of banishment. in the military testament positive rules were made to, yield to the Except in the solitary case of a, son who was a soldier, a pater. voluntas in all respects: the will was almost absolutely unfettered. | familias was still recognized as in law the owner of all the earnings Roman law in this matter gave place to natural law. One would | 'and other acquisitions of his children in potestate ; but the old rule have expected the influence of so great a change to have manifested | still remained that for their civil debts he was not liable beyond itself by degrees in the ordinary law of testaments ; yet it is barely | the amount of the fund he had advanced them to deal with as de visible. In a few points the legislation of Constantine, Theodosius | facto their own (peculium profectictum), except when he had derived II., and Justinian relaxed the strictness of the old rules ; but there advantage from their contract or had expressly or by implication was never any approach to the recognition of the complete supre- | authorized them to enter into it as his agents. To the party with macy of the voluntas. In the Corpus Juris the contrast between the | whom he had contracted a Jiliusfamilias was himself liable as fully lestamentum paganwm and the testamentwm militare was almost as | as if he had been a paterfamilias,

with one exception, namely, when marked as in the days of Trajan. The latter was still a privileged | his debt was for borrowed money ; in that case, with some very deed, whose use was confined to a soldier actually on service, and | reasonable qualifications, it was declared by the notorious Mace- which had to be replaced by a testament executed according to the | donian senatusconsult (of the time of Vespasian) that the lender __., usual forms of law within twelve months after his retirement. should not be entitled to recover payment, even after his borrower ern The peeuliwm eastrense had a wider influence ; for it was the first | had become sut juris by his father's death. Between a father and castrense,

of a series of amendments that vastly diminished the importance of the patria potestas on its patrimonial side. It had its origin in the concession by Augustus to filiifamilias on service of the right to dispose by testament of what they had acquired in the active exer- cise of their profession (quod in eastris adquisierant). But it soon went much further. Confined at first to filiifamilias on actual service, the privilege was extended by Hadrian to those who had obtained honourable discharge. The same emperor allowed them not merely to test on their peeuliwm castrense, but to manumit slaves that formed part of it; and a little step further recognized their right to dispose of it onerously or gratuitously inter vivos. By and by the range of it was extended so as to include not only the soldier's pay and prize but all that had come to him, directly or indirectly, in connexion with his profession,— his outfit, gifts made to him during his service, legacies from comrades, and so on. All this was in a high degree subversive of the doctrines of the common law. It may almost be called revolutionary ; for it in- volved in the first place the recognition of the right of a person alient juris to make a testament as if he were sui juris, and in the second place the recognition of a separate estate in a filiusfami- lias which he might deal with independently of his paterfamilias, whieh could not be touched by the latter's creditors, and which he was not bound to collate (or bring into hotch-pot) on claiming a share of his father's succession. The radical right of the parent, however, was rather suspended than extinguished ; for, if the soldier son died intestate, the right of the paterfamilias revived :

- he took his son's belongings, not as his heir appropriating an in-

heritance, but as his paterfamilias reclaiming a peeulium,)

- This was altered by Justinian's 118th Novel, under which a father ae any part of a deceased son's estate did so as his heir 3 see infra, p. : ;

his emancipated son there was, and always had been, perfect free- dom of contract; but so was there now between a father and his soldier son in any matter relating to the peeuliwm eastrense, even though the son was in potestate. What is still more remarkable is that the new sentiment which was operating on the jus civile admitted the possibility of natural obligation between paterfamilias and /iliusfamilias even in reference to the peeulium profecticium, which, though incapable of direct enforcement by action, was yet to some extent recognized and given effect to indirectly.

In the matter of guardianship, while the tutory of pupils was carefully tended and the law in regard to it materially amended during the period under review (particularly by a senatusconsult generally referred to as the Oratio divi Severi, prohibiting aliena- tion of the ward's property without judicial authority), that of women above the age of pupilarity gradually disappeared. The guardianship or curatory (ewra) of minors above pupilarity owed its institution to Marcus Aurelius. The Pletorian law of the middle of the sixth century of the city had indeed imposed penalties on those taking undue advantage of the inexperience of minors, i.e., persons sui yuwris under the age of twenty-five ; and from that time the pretors were in the habit of appointing curators to act with such persons for the protection of their interests in particular affairs. But it was Marcus Aurelius who first made curatory a general permanent office, to endure in the ordinary case until the ward attained majority. The powers, duties, and responsibilities of such curators became a matter for careful and elaborate defini- tion and regulation by the jurists, whose exposition of the law of guardianship, whether by tutors or curators, has found wide accept- auce in modern systems of jurisprudence.

The Law of Suecession and particularly Testamentary Trusts.— There were far more positive changes in the law of succession than

Law of succes- sion,

in either that of property or that of obligation. The rise and progress of the military testament has already been explained. The testament of the common law was still ostensibly that per aes et Libram ; but the practice of granting bonorum possessto seeundum tabulas to the persons named as heirs in any testamentary instru- ment that bore outside the requisite number of seals led, from the time of Marcus Aurelius, to the frequent neglect of the time-honoured formalities of the familiae maneipatio and nuneupatio testamentt. It was a rescript of his, declaring that an heir-at-law should no longer be entitled to dispute the last wishes of a testator on the technical ground of non-compliance with the purely formal require- ments of the law, that practically introduced what Justinian calls the pretorian testament.

One of the commouest provisions in the testaments of the period was the jideicommissum,—a request by the testator to his heir to enter to the inheritance and thereafter denude wholly or partially in favour of a third party. It was introduced in the time of Augustus by (it is said) a testator who had married a peregrin wife, and desired thus indirectly to give to his peregrin children the succession which, as not being citizens, they could neither take ab intestato nor as his direct testamentary heirs.! The practice soon gained ground, and became thorouglily established once the emperor, shocked at the perfidy of a trustee who had failed to comply with the request of his testator, indicated his approval of the new institution by remitting the matter to the consuls of the day, with instructions to do in the circumstances what they thought just. So quickly did it establish itself in public favour, and so numerous did the questions become as to the construction and ful- filment of testamentary trusts, that before long it was found neces- sary to institute a court specially charged with their determination, —that of the practor fideicommissarius.

The employment of a trust as a means of benefiting those who were under disqualifications as heirs or legatees, as, for example, persons who had no testamenti faetio, women incapacitated by the Voconian law, unmarried and married but childless persons inca- pacitated by the Julian and Papia-Poppzan law, and so on, was in time prohibited by statute ; but that

did not affect its gencral popu- larity. For, whethcr what was contemplated was a transfer of the universal hereditas or a part of it to the beneficiary (/ideicommisswm hercditatis), or only of some particular thing (fideteommissum ret singularis), a testamentary trust had various advantages over either a dircct institution or a direct bequest (legatwm). In theory the imposition upon the heir of a trust in favour of a beneficiary, whether it required him to denude of the whole or only a part of the inherit- ance, did not deprive him of his character of heir or relieve him of the responsibilities of the position ; and at common law therefore he was entitled to decline the succession, often to the great prejudice of the beneficiary. In order to avoid such a mischance, and at the same time to regulate their relations inter se and towards debtors and creditors of the testator's, it became the practice for the parties to enter into stipulatory arrangements about the matter ; but these were to some extent rendered superfluous by two senatusconsults, the Trebellian in the time of Nero and the Pegasian in that of Vespasian, which at once secured the beneficiary against the trustee's (i.e., the heir's) repudiation of the inheritance, protected the latter from all risk of loss where he was trustee and nothing more, and enabled the former to treat directly with debtors and creditors of the testator's and himself ingather the corporeal items of the inheritance. '

It was one of the advantages of a trust-bequest, whether universal or singular, that it might be conferred in a codicil, even though unconfirmed by any relative testament. The codicil (codiczdz), also an invention of the time of Augustus, was a deed of a very simple nature. It was inappropriate either for disherison of sw or institu- tion of an heir; but if confirmed by testament it might contain direct bequests, manumissions, nominations of tutors, and the like, and whether confirmed or unconfirmed miglit, as stated, be utilized as a vehicle for trust-gifts. Latterly it was held operative even in the absence of a testament, the trusts contained in it being regarded as burdens ou the heir-at-law. ; '

The most important changes in the law of intestate succession during the period were those accomplished by the Tertullian and Orphitian senatusconsults, fruits of that respect for the precepts of natural law which in so many directions was modifying the doctrines of the jus civile.

The first was passcd in the reign of Hadrian, the second in the year 178, under Marcus Aurelius. Down to the time of the Tertullian senatusconsult a mother and her child by a mar- riage that was unaccompanied with manus stood. related to each other only as cognates, being in law members of different fainilics ; consequently their chance of succession to each other was remote, being postponed to that of their respective agnates to the sixth or seventh degree. The purpose of the senatusconsult was to prefer a

nother to all agnates of her deceased child except father and brother a EEE EE EE ——————————————EEE

1 They could not even have a claim as cognates under the pretorian rules ; for the pretors followed the rule of the jus civile to this extent, that they did not grant bonorwm possessio to a person who had not testamenti factio with him whose succession was in question.

and sister; father and brother excluded her; but with a sister of the deceased, and in the absence of father or brother, she shared equally, While there can be little doubt that it was natural con- siderations that dictated this amendment, yet its authors were too timid to justify it on the abstract principle of common humanity, lest thereby they should scem to impugn the wisdom of the jus civile, and so they confined its application to women who had the jus liber- orwm, 7.e., to women of free birth who were mothers of three children and freedwomen who were mothers of four, thus making it osten- sibly a reward of fertility. The Orphitian senatusconsult was the counterpart of the Tertullian. It gave children, whether legitimate or illegitimate, a right of succession to their mother in preference to all her agnates ; and subsequent constitutions extended the prin- ciple, admitting children to the inheritance not only of their mater- nal grandparents but also to that of their patcrnal grandmother.

III. Jupic1an PRocEDURE.

The Formular System.2—The ordinary procedure of the first three Formular centuries of the empire was still two-staged ; it commenced before system.

the preetor (in jwre) and was concluded before a judex (in judicio). But the legis aetiones had given place to preetorian formulae. Under the older system parties, and particularly the plaintiff, had them- selves to formulate in statutory or traditional words of style the matter in controversy between them ; and as they formulated, so did it go for trial to centumviral court or judex or arbiters, with the not infrequent result that it was then all too late discovered that the real point in the case had been missed. Under the formu- lar system parties were free to represent their plaint and defence to the pretor in any words they pleased, the plaintiff asking for a Jormula and usually indicating the style on the album that he thought would suit his purpose, and the defendant demanding when necessary an exception, @.¢., a plea in defence, either pretorian or statutory, that, without traversing the facts or law of the plain- tiff's case, avoided his demand on grounds of equity or public policy. It was for the preetor to consider and determine whether the action or exception should or should not be granted, and, if granted, whether it should be according to the style exhibited on the album or according to a modification of it. The result he embodied in a written and signed appointment to a judge, whom he instructed what he had to try, and empowered to pronounce a finding either condemning or acquitting the defendant. This writing was the formaila.

Although it was not until the early empire that this system of procedure attained its full development, yet it had its commence- ment two centuries before the fall of the republic. Gaius ascribes its introduction and definitive establishment to the Lex Aebutia (probably of the second decade of the sixth century of the city) and two judiciary laws of the time of Augustus (sepra, pp. 696, 704). The Abutian Jaw, of which unfortunately we know very little, is generally supposed to have empowered the pretors (1) to devise a simpler form of procedure for causes already cognizable per legis aettonem, (2) to devise forms of action to meet cases not cognizable under the older system, and (3) themselves to formulate the issue and reduce it to writing. It was by no means so radical

a change as is sometimes supposed. There were formulae employed by the pretor both in the procedure per judicis postulationem and in that per condietionem. The difference between them and the formulae of the Aibutian system was that the former were in part mere echoes of the statutory words of style uttered by the plaintiff, and that they were not written but spoken in the hearing of witnesses.

A large proportion of the personal actions of the formular system Its appli- were evolved out of the legis actio per condictionem. 'The sequence cation to Taking the personal simplest form of it, the action for certa pecunita under the Silian actions.

of operations may have been something like this.

law, the first step was to drop the formal condietio from which it derived its character of legis aetio, thus avoiding a delay of thirty days ; the plaintiff stated his demand in informal words, and, if the defendant denied indebtedness, the prector straightway formulated a written appointment of and instruction to a judge, embodying in it the issue in terms substantially the same as those he would have employed under the earlicr procedure :—"Titius be judge. Should it appear that N. N. ought to pay (dare oportere) 50,000 sesterces to A. A., in that sum condemn N.N. to A. A. ;? should it not so appear, acquit him." This was no longer the legis actio per condietionem, because what had made it legis actio was gone, but the certi eondietio of the formular system. The condictio triti- earia of the same system ran on the same lines: " Titius be judge. Should it appear that N. N. ought to give A. A. the slave Stichus, then, whatever be the value of the slave, in that condemn N. N. to A. A.," and soon. In both of these examples the formala included only two of the four clauses that might find place in it,4—an " in-

2 See Keller (as on p. 681, note 1), §§ 23-43; Bethmann-Hollweg (as in same note), vol. ii. §§ 81-87; Bekker (as in same note), vol. i. chaps. 4-7, vol. ii. chaps. 15, 19, 20; Baron, Gesch. d. rém. Rechts, Berlin, 1884, vol. i. §§ 202-215.

3 In the typical Roman styles of actions the plaintiff was usually called Aulus Agerius and the defendant Numerius Negidius.

4 Gaius enumerates them as the demonstratio, intentio, adjudicatio, and con-

Tts appli- cation to real actions.

Formulae

injusand infactum con- eeptae,

708

tention" and a "condemnation." The matter of claim in both cases was certain,—so much money in one, a slave in the other ; but, while in the first the condemnation also was certain, in the second it was uncertain. What if the claim also was uncertain,— say a share of the profits of a joint adventure assured by stipulation ? It was quite compctent for the plaintiff to condescend on a definite sum, and claim that as due to him ; but it was very hazardous, for unless he was able to prove the debt to the last sesterce he got nothing. To obviate the risk of such failure the preetors devised the incerti condictio, whose formula commenced with a "demon- stration" or indication of the cause of action, and whose "inten- tion" referred to it and was conceived indefinitely: "Titius be judge. Whereas A. A. stipulated with N. N. for a share of the profits of a joint adventure, whatever in respect thereof N. N. ought to give to or do for (dare facerc oportet) A. A., in the money amount thereof condemn N. N.," and so on.! Once this point was attained further progress was comparatively easy, the way being open for the construction of formulae upon illiquid claims arising from trans- actions in which the practice of stipulation gradually dropped out of use (supra, p. 701), till at last the bonac fidei judicia were reached, marked by the presence in the "intention" of the words ex fide bona,—" whatever in respect thereof N. N. ought in good faith to give to or do for A. A." ;

In the case of real actions the transition from the legis actiones to the formulae followed a different course. The Abutian law did not abolish the procedure per sacramcentum when reference was to be to the centumyiral court on a question of quiritarian right. In the time of Cicero that court was apparently still in full activity (p. 678), but by that of Gaius it is

doubtful if it was resorted to except for trial of questions of inheritance. In his time questions of pro- perty were raised eithcr per sponsionem or per formulam petitoriam. The procedure by sponsion must be regarded as the bridge between the sacramental process and the petitory vindicatio. In the first as in the second the question of real right was determined only indirectly. The plaintiff required the defendant to give him his stipulatory promise to pay a nominal sum of twenty-five sesterces in the event of the thing in dispute being found to belong to the former; and at the same time the defendant gave sccurity for its transfer to the plaintiff, with all fruits and profits, in the same event. The formula that was adjusted and remitted to a judge ex facie raised only the simple question whether the twenty-five sesterces were due or not: the action was in form a personal, not a real one, and was therefore appropriately remitted to a single judcx instead of to the centumviral tribunal. But judgment on it could be reached only through means of a finding (sententia) on the ques- tion of real right ; if it was for the plaintiff he did not claim the amount of the sponsion, but the thing which had been found to be his; and, if the defendant delayed to deliver it, with its fruits and profits, the plaintiff had recourse against the latter's sureties. The petitory formula was undoubtedly of later introduction and much more straightforward. Like the certé condictio it contained only "intention" and "condemnation." It ran thus: "Titius be judge. Should it appear that the slave Stichus, about whom this 'action has been raised, belougs to A. A. in quiritary right, then, unless the slave be restored, whatever be his valuc, in that you will condemn N. N. to A. A.; should it not so appear, you will acquit him."

The formulae given above, whether applicable to real or personal actions, are so many illustrations of the class known as Sormulae juris civilis or in jus conceptae. The characteristic of such a formula was that it contained in the "intention " one or other of the follow- ing phrases—ejus esse cu jure Quiritium, adjudicart oporterc,? dari oportere, dri fiert oporterc, or damnum decidi oporterc.2 Such a formula was employed where the right to be vindicated or the obligation to be enforced had its sanction in the jus civile, whether in the shape of statute, consuetude, or interpretation. Where, on the other hand, the right or obligation had its sanction solely from the preetor's edict, formulae so conceived were inappropriate and incompetent. The actions employed in sueh cases were actiones juris

honorarii, and these either actioncs utiles or actiones in Sactum. The first were adaptations of actions of the Jus civile to cases that did not properly fall within them ; the second were actions entirely of preetorian devising, for the protection of rights or redress of wrongs unknown to the jus civile.4

demnatio, and describes their several functions in iv. §§ 39-48. Besides these a formula might be preceded by a praescrintio (Gai., iv. §§ 130-137), and have incorporated in it fictions (§§ 32-88), exceptions (§§ 115-125), and replications, duplications, &c. (§§ 126-129),

1 This was specifically called the actio ex stipulatu, but was really nothing more than a variety of the condictio incerti. The later actions on the consensual contracts, and on all the nominate real contracts except mutuwum, in like manner had specific names, but in fact were just incerti condictiones in the larger sense of the phrase.

2 Employed only in the divisory actions, i.e., for dividing common property, partitioning an inheritance, or settling boundaries ; the demand was that the Judge should adjudicate (or assign) to each of the parties such a share as he thought just.

3 Employed in certain actions upon delict, where the old penalties of death, slavery, or talion had in practice been transmuted into money payments, and the defendant. consequently called upon to make a settlement in that way.

4 In a few instances (not satisfactorily explained) there was both civil and

Of the actiones utiles some were called actiones fieticiac.

adversely criticized accordingly. But every amendinent on the law is an admission of defect in what is being amended ; and it was in sympathy with the spirit of Roman jurisprudence, when it found an action too

narrow in its definition, to include some new case that ought to fall within it, rather by feigning that the new case was the same as the old, to bring it within the scope of the existing and familiar action, than to cause disturbance by either altering the definition of the latter or introducing an entirely new remedy. A bonorum possessor (supra, p. 702) held a position unknown to the Jus civile; he was not an heir, and therefore not entitled offhand to employ the actions competent to an heir, either for recovering the property of the defunct or proceeding against his debtors. The preetor could have had no difficulty in devising new actions to mect his case ; but he preferred the simpler expedient of adapting to it an heir's actions, by introducing into the formula a fiction of civil heirship; so he did with the bonorwm emptor or purchaser of a bankrupt's estate at the sale of it in mass by his creditors. Emptio bonorum was a purely pretorian institution, and the pretor, if he had thought fit, could casily have fortified the purchaser's acquisition by giving him pretorian remedies for recovering the property and suing the debtors of the bankrupt ; but here again he followed the simpler course of giving him, as if he were a universal successor, the benefit of an heir's actions by help of a fiction of heirship.® A peregrin could not sue or be sued for theft or culpable damage to property, for the XII. Tables and the Aquilian law applied only to citizens; but he could both sue and be sued under cover of a fiction of citizenship. A man who had acquired a res mancipt on a good title, but without taking a conveyance by mancipation or surrender in court, if he was dispossessed before he had completed his usucapion, could not sue a rez vindicatio for its recovery, for he was not in a position to affirm that he was quiritarian owner ; neither, for the same reason, could a man who in good faith and on a sufficient title had acquired a thing from one who was not ina posi- tion to alienate it. Butin both cases the prator granted him what was in effect a red vindicatio proceeding on a fiction of completed usu- capion,—the Publician action referred to on p. 699.*

These are examples of actiones fictictae,—actions of the jus civile adapted by this very simple expedient to cases to which other- wise they would have been inapplicable, and forming one of the

most important varieties of the actioncs wtiles. Quite different was Actiones the course of procedure in the actiones in factwm, whose

number in fac- and varieties were practically unlimited, although for the most tum.

part granted in pursuance of the preetor's promise in the edict that under such and such circumstances he would make a remit to a judex (judieiwm dabo),6 and formulated in accordance with the relative skeleton styles also published on the albwm. A great number of them canie to be known by special names, as, for example, the actio de dolo, actio negotiorum gestorum, actio hypothecaria, actio de pecunia constituta, actio vi bonorwm raptorum, actio de superficie, &c.,—the generic name actio in factum being usually confined to the inuo- minate ones. Their formulae, unlike those i jus conccptae, sub- mitted no question of legal right for the consideration of the judge, but only a question of fact, proof of which was to bé followed by a condemnation. That of the act'o de dolo, for example, ran thus: 'Titius be judge. Should it appear that, through the fraud of N.N., A. A. was induced to convey and cede posscssion to him of his farm (describing it), then, unless on your order N.N. restores it, you will condemn him in damages to A. A. ; if it shall not so appear, you will acquit him."

Our limits do not admit of any explanation of the purpose, form, or effect of the prescriptions, exceptions, replications, &c., that were engrafted on a formula when required ; or of the ways in which the "'condemnation" was occasionally "taxed" by the pretor, so as to prevent the award of extravagant damages ; or of the con- sequences of defects in the formula; or of the procedure in jure before it was adjusted, or in judicio afterwards; or of appeal for review of the judgment by a higher tribunal; or of execution (which was against the estate of the judgment-debtor, and took the form of incarceration only when his goods could not be at- tached). Our main object has been to show how elastic was this procedure, and how the pretorian formulae, in conjunction with the relative announcements in the edict, supplied the vehicle for the introduction into the law of an immense amount of new doctrine. The system was fully developed before Jnlian's consolidation of the

pretorian remedy for the same wrong ; for Gaius observes (iv. 45) that in com- modate and deposit failure of the borrower or depositary to return

the thing lent to or deposited with him gave rise to actions that might be formulated either in jus or in factum. In the same section he gives the styles of actiones depositi in jus and in factum conceptae ; their comparison is instructive.

° Gai., iv. 35. Theophilus (Par. Inst., iii. 12) calls the bonorwm emptor mpaTwpios dcddoxos (pretorian successor) of the bankrupt.

*6 Examples: 'Si quis negotia alterius .. . gesserit, judicium eo nomine dabo" (Dig., iii. 5, 3, pr.); **Quae dolo malo facta esse dicentur, si de his rebus alia actio non erit et justa causa esse videbitur, judicium dabo " (Dig., iv. 3, 1,§ 1); " Nautae caupones stabularii quod cujusque salvum fore receperint, nisi restituent, in eos judicium dabo " (Dig., iv. 9, 3, 1); "Quod quis commodasse dicetur, de eo judicium dabo" (Dig., xiii, 6, 1, pr.).*

Resort Actiones to a fiction is sometimes said to be a confession of weakness, and ficticiae,

Proced-

JUS NATURALE. |

Edict ; and the statutory recognition which the latter then obtained did nothing to impair its efficiency. Procedure extra Ordinem.1—The two-staged procedure, first in

ure extrajwre and then in judicio, constituted the ordo judiciorum priva-

ordinem. forwm.

Direct magis- terial inter- vention.

Inter- dicts.

Early in the empire, however, it became the practice in certain cases to abstain from adjusting a formula and making a remit to a judex, and to leave the cause in the hands of the magis- trate from beginning to end. This eourse was adopted sometimes because the claim that was being

made rested rather on moral than on legal right, and sometimes in order to avoid unnecessary dis- closure of family misunderstandings. Thus, the earliest questions that were raised about testamentary trusts were sent for considera- tion and disposal to the consuls, apparently because, in the existing state of jurisprudence, it was thought incompetent for a beneficiary to maintain in reference to the heir (who had only been requested to comply with the testator's wishes) that he was bound in law (dare oportere) to pay him his bequest. Had the difficulty arisen at an earlier period, and in the heyday of the constructive energy of the pretors, they would probably have solved it with an actio in factum. As it was, it fell to the emperors to deal with it, and they adopted the method of extraordinaria cognitio, the jurisdic- tion which they in the first instance conferred on the consuls being before long confided to a magistrate specially designated for it,— the praetor fideicommissarius. Questions betwecn tutors and their pupil wards in like manner began to be dealt with extra ordinem, the cognition being entrusted by Marcus Aurelius to a practor tute- laris; while fiscal questions in which a private party was interested went to a practor fisci, whose creation was due to Nerva, Claims for aliment between parent and child or patron and freedman rested on natural duty rather than on legal right ; they could not therefore well be made the subject-matter of a yudictwm, and con- sequently went for disposal to the consuls or the city prefect, and in the provinces to the governor. Questions of status, especially of freedom or slavery, at least from the time of Marcus Aurelius, were also disposed of extra ordinem ; and so were claims by physicians, advocates, and public teachers for their honoraria, and by officials for their salaries, the Romans refusing to admit that these eould be recovered by an ordinary action of location. In all those extra- ordinary cognitions the procedure began with a complaint addressed to the magistrate, instead of an in jus vocatio of the party com- plained against ; it was for the magistrate to require the attendance of the latter (evocatio) if he thought the complaint relevant. The decision was a judicatwm or decretwm according to circumstances.

Jural Remedies flowing directly from the Magistrate's Imperiwm.? — Great as were the results for the law of the multiplication and simplification of judicia through the formular system, it may be

uestioned whether it did not benefit quite as much from the

irect intervention of the pretors in certain cases in virtue of the supreme power with which they were invested. This manifested itself principally in the form of (1) interdicts ; (2) preetorian stipula- tions; (3) missto in possessionem ; and (4) in integrum restitutio.

1. The interdicts® have already been referred to as in use under the régime of the jus civile; but their number and scope were vastly increased under that of the jus practoriwm. The char- acteristic of the procedure by interdict was this,—that in it the pretor reversed the ordinary course of things, and, instead of wait- ing for an inquiry into the facts alleged by a eomplainer, provision- ally assumed them to be true and pronounced au order upon the respondent, which he was bound either to obey or show to be unjustified. The order pronouneed might be either restitutory, exhibitory (in both cases usually spoken of in the texts as a decree), or prohibitory :—restitutory, when, for example, the respondent was ordained to restore something he was alleged to have taken posses- sion of by violent means, to remove impediments he had placed in the channel of a river, and so on; exhibitory, when he was ordained to produce something he was unwarrantably detaining, e.g., the body of a freeman he was holding as his slave, or a will in which the complainer alleged that he had an interest ; prohibi- tory, as, for example, that he should not disturb the status quo of possession as between the complainer and himself, that he should not interfere with a highway, a watercourse, the access to a sepulchre, and so forth. If the respondent obeyed the order pro- nounced in a restitutory or exhibitory decree, there was an end of the matter. But frequently, and perhaps more often than not, the interdict was only the commencement of a litigation, facilitated by sponsions and restipulations, in which the questions had to be tried (1) whether the interdict or injunction was justified, (2) whether there had been breach of it, and, (3) if so, what damages were due in consequence. The procedure therefore was often anything but summary.

1 See Keller (as on p. 681, note 1), § 81; Bethmann-Hollweg (as in same note), vol. ii. § 122; Bekker (as in same note), vol. ii. chap. 23; Baron, Gesch. d. rom. Rechts, vol. i, § 220.

2 Keller, §§ 74-80; Bethmann-Hollweg, vol. ii. §§ 98, 119-121; Bekker, vol. ii, chaps. 16-18; Baron, vol. i. §§ 216-219. :

3 In addition to the authorities in last note, see K. A, Schmidt, Das Inter-diktenverfahren d. Rom. in geschichtl. Entwickelung, Leipsic, 1853 ; Machélard, Théorie des interdits en droit romain, Paris, 1864.

ROMAN

LA W 709

__ In the possessory interdicts wt? possidetis and wtrubi in particular it was extremely involved, due to some extent to the fact that they were double interdicts (interdicta duplicia), t.e., addressed indifferently to both parties. Gaius says, but, as most jurists think, erroneously, that they had been devised as ancillary to a litigation about owncrship, and for the purpose of deciding which of the parties, as possessor, was to have the advantage of standing on the defensive in the rci vindicatio.t That they were so used in his time, as in that of Justinian, eannot be doubted. But it is amazing that they should have been, for they were infinitely more cumbrous than the vindicatio to which they led up. Take the interdict uti possidetis, which applied to immovables, as wérubi did to movables. Both partics being present, the pretor addressed them to this effect: "I forbid that one of you two who does not possess the house in question to use force in order to prevent the other who is in possession, provided he is so neither by elandes- tine or violent exclusion of the first, nor in virtue of a grant from him during pleasure, from eontinuing to possess as at present." It is manifest that this decided nothing; it was no more than a pro- hibition of disturbance of the status quo ; it left the question entirely open which of the parties it was that was in possession, and which that was forbidden to interfere. The manner of its explication was somewhat singular. Each of the parties was bound at once to commit what in the case of one of them must have been a breach of the interdict, by a pretence of violence offered to the other (vis cx conventu) ;> cach of them was thus in a position to say to the other —"We have both used force ; but it was you alone that did it in defiance of the interdict, for it is I that am in possession." The intcrim enjoyment of the fruits was then awarded to the highest bidder, who gave his stipulatory promise to pay for them to

his adversary in the cvent of the latter being successful in the long run; penal sponsions and restipulations were exchanged upon the question which of them had committed a breach of the interdict ; and on these, four in number, formulac were adjusted and sent to a judca for trial. If the procedure could not thus be explicated, because either of the parties declined to take part in the vis ex conventu, or the bidding, or the sponsions and restipulations, he was assumed to be in the wrong, and, by what was ealled a secondary interdict, required to abstain from disturbing the other "'in all time coming." Whatever we may think of the action system of the tomans in the pan of the elassical jurisprudence, one cannot help standing aghast at a procedure so cumbrous and complex as that of their posscssory interdicts. 2, A pretorian stipulation ® was a stipulatory engagement im- Pretor- posed upon a man by a magistrate or judge, in order to secure a ianstipu- third party from the chance of loss or prejudice through some act lations. or omission either of him from whom the engagement was exacted or of some other person for whom he was responsible. Although called pretorian, because the cases in which such stipulations were exigible were set forth in the Edict, there can be no question that they originated in the jus civile; in fact they were just a means of assuring to a man in advance the benefit of an action of the jus civile whereby he might obtain reparation for any injury suffered by him through the occurrence of the act or omission contemplated as possible. Ulpian classifies them as cautionary (cautionalcs), judicial, and common. The first were purely pre- cautionary, and quite independent of any action already in depend- ence between the party moving the magistrate to cxact the stipu- lation and him on whom it was desired to impose it. There were many varieties of them, connected with all branches of the law,— for example, the cautio damni infecti, security against damage to a man's property in consequence, say, of the ruinous condition of his neighbour's house, the cautio usufructuaria that property usufructed should revert unimpaired to the owner on the expiry of the usu- fructuary's life interest, the edilian stipulation against faults in a thing sold, and so forth. In all these cases the stipulation or cautio was a guarantee against future loss or injury, usually cor- roborated by sureties, and made effectual by an action on the stipu- lation in the event of loss or injury resulting. Judicial stipulations, according to Ulpian's classification, were those imposed by a judge in the course of and with reference to an action in dependence

before him, as, for example, the cautio sudicatum solvi (that the defendant would satisfy the judgment), the cawtio de dolo (that a thing claimed in the action would not be fraudulently impaired in the meantime), and many others. Common were such as might either be imposed by a magistrate apart from any depending action or by a Judge in the course of one, such as that taken from a guardian for the faithful administration of lis office, or from a procurator that his principal would ratify what he did.

3, Missio in possessionem was the putting of a person in possession

err renee

4 If that had been their original purpose, they must have been unknown as tong as a rei vindicatio proceeded per sacramentum ; for in the sacrainental real action both parties vindicated, and both consequently were at once plaintiffs and defendants.

5 So Gaius calls it; it was probably the same thing as the vis moribus facta referred to by Cicero, Pro Caec., 1, § 2, 8, § 22.

6 To the authorities in notc 1 above add Schirmer, Ueber die priitorischen Judicial-Stipulationen, Greifswald, 1853.

710

Missio in either of the whole estate of another (missio in bona) or of some par- posses- ticular thing belonging to him (missio i rem). The former was by sionem. far the more important. It was resorted to as a means of execution not only against a judgment-debtor but also against a man who frandulently kept out of the way and thus avoided summons in an action, or who, having been duly summoned, would not do what was expected on the part of a defendant; against the estate of a person deceased to which no heir would enter, thus leaving creditors without a debtor from whom they could enforce payment of their claims ; and also against the estate that had belonged to a person who had undergone capitis deminutio, if the family head to whom he had subjected himself refused to be responsible for his debts. Missio in rem was granted, c.g., where a man

refused to give cautio damni infeeti ; the applicant was then put in possession of the rninous property for his own protection. Cie.

4. In integrum restitutio,' reinstatement of an individual, on grounds of equity, in the position he had occupied before some occurrence which had resulted to his prejudice, was one of the most remarkable manifestations of the exercise of the ¢mpertwm. It was not that the individual in question, cither directly by action or indirectly by exception, obtained a judgment that either rendered what had happencd comparatively harmless or gave him compensa- tion in damages for the loss he had sustained from it, but that the magistrate—and it could only be the preetor, the urban or preetorian prefect, a provincial governor, or the emperor himself—at his own hand pronounced a decree that as far as possible restored the status quo ante. It was not enough, however, to entitle a man to this extraordinary relief, that he was able to show that he had been taken advantage of to his hurt, and that no other adequate means of redress was open to him; he required in addition to be able to fouud on some subjective ground of restitution, such as minority, or, if he was of full age, intimidation which could not be resisted, mistake of fact, fraud, absence, or the like. What should be held to amount toa sufficient ground of restitution, either objcctive or subjective, was at first left very much to the discretion of the magis- trate ; but even here practice and jurisprudence in time fixed the lines within which he ought to confine himself, and made the principles of in integrum restitutio as well settled almost as those of the aetio quod metus causa or the actio de dolo.

CHAPTER V.—THE PERIOD OF CODIFICATION. (Diocletian to Justinian.) I. HistoricAL EVENTS THAT INFLUENCED THE Law.

Emperors Supremacy of the Emperors as Sole Legislators.—From

solelegis- the time of Diocletian downwards the making of the law

ators. wag exclusively in the hands of the emperors. The senate still existed, but shorn of all its old functions alike of government and legislation. The responses of patented jurists were a thing of the past. It was to the imperial consistory alone that men looked for interpretation of old law or promulgation of new.

In the reign of Diocletian rescripts were still abundant ; but the constitutions in the Theodosian and Justinianian Codes from the time of Constantine downwards are mostly of a wider scope, and of the class known as general or edictal laws (leges generales edictales). It would be wrong, however, to infer that rescripts had ceased ; for Justinian's Code contains various regulations as to their form, and the matter is dealt with again in one of his Novels. The reason why so few are preserved is that they were no longer authoritative except for the parties to whom they were addressed. This was expressly declared by the emperors Arcadius and Honorius in 898 in reference to those in answer to applications for advice from officials ; and it is not unrcasonable to assume that a limitation of the same sort had been put at an earlier date on the authority of those addressed to private parties. Pnchta is of opinion that the enactment of Honorius and Arcadius applied equally to deereta, for the reason that during this period matters of litigation did not come under the cognizance of the emperors except on appeal, and that under the new arrangements of Constantine the judg- ment of affirmance or reversal was embodied in a rescript ad- dressed to the magistrate from whom the appeal had been taken. The rule of Arcadius and Honorius was renewed in 425 by Theo- dosins and Valentinian, who qualificd it, however, to this extents that, if it contained any distinct indication that the doctrine it laid down was meant to be of general application, then it was to be received as an edict or lex gencralis. To this J ustinian adhered in so far as rescripts in the old sense of the word were concerned ; but he declared that his judgments (decreta) should be received everywhere as laws of general application, and so should any inter- pretation given by him of a lex generalis, even though elicited by

In in- tegrum resti- tutio.

1 In addition to the authorities in note 2, p. 709, see Savigny, System d. rim. Reehts, vol. vii. §§ 315-343.

ROMAN

he We

the petition of a private party. The imperial edicts, adjusted in the consistory, were usually addressed to the people, the senate, or some official, civil, military, or ecclesiastical, according to the nature of their subject-matter.

Establishment of Christianity as the State Religion.2—A disposi- Chris- tion has sometimes been inanifested to credit nascent Christianity tianity with the humaner spirit which began to operate on some of the the state institutions of the law in the first century of the empire, but which religion. in a previous section we have ascribed to the infiltration into the jus civile of doctrines of the jus naturale, the product of the philo- sophy of the Stoa. The teaching of Seneca did quite as much-— nay far more— to influence it then than the lessons that were taught in the little assemblics of the early converts. It would be a bold thing to say that, had Christianity never gained its pre- dominance, that spirit of natural right would not have continued to animate the course of legislation, and to evoke, as ycars pro- gressed, most of those amendments in the law of the family and the law of succession that were amongst the most valuable contribu. tions of the imperial constitutions to the private law. It may well be that that' spirit was intensified and rendered more active with the growth of Christian belief; but not until the latter had becn publicly sanctioned by Constantine, and by Theodosius declared to be the religion of the state, do we meet with incontestable records of its influence. We find them in enactments in favour of the church and its property, and of its privileges as a legatee ; in those conferring or imposing on the bishops a supervision of charities and charitable institutions, and a power of interfering in matters of guardianship ; in the recognition of the efficacy of certain acts done in presence of two or threc of the clergy and thereafter re- corded in the church registers ; in the disabilities as to mairiage and succession with which heretics and apostates were visited, and in a variety of minor matters. Of greater importance were three features for which it was directly responsible,—the repeal of the caduciary provisions of the Papia-Poppean law, the penalties im- posed upon divorce, and the institution of the episeopalis audientia.

The purpose of the caduciary law was to discourage celibacy and encourage fruitful marriages ; but legislation in such a spirit could not

possibly be maintained when cclibacy had come to be inculcated as a virtue, and as the peculiar characteristic of a holy life. The penalties alike of orbitas and coelibatus were abolished by Constan- tine in the year 320. Thc legislation about divorce, from the first of Constantine's enactments on the subject down to those of Justin- ian, forms a miserable chapter in the history of the law. Not one of the emperors who busied himself with the matter, undoing the work of his predecessors and substituting legislation of his ow quite as complicated and futile, thought of interfering with the old prin- ciple that divorce ought to be as frce as marriage and independent of the sanction or deerce of a judicial tribunal. Justinian was the first who, by one of his Novels, imposed a condition on parties to a divorce of common accord (commun consensn), namely, that they should both enter a convent, otherwise it should be null ; but, so distasteful was this to popular feeling, and so little conducive to improvement of the tone of morals within the conventual precincts, that it was repealed by his successor. The legislation of Justinian's predecessors and the bulk of his own were levelled at one-sided re- pudiations, imposing penaltics, personal aud patrimonial (1) upon the author of a repudiation on some ground the law did not recog- nize as sufficient— and the lawful grounds varied from reign to reign —and (2) upon the party whose misconduct gave rise to a repudia- tion that was justifiable. The bishop's court (episcopale jucieiwm, episcopalis audientia) had its origin in the practice of the primitive Christians, in accordance with the apostolic precept, of submitting their differences to one or two of their brethren in the faith, usu- ally a presbyter or bishop, who acted as arbiter. On the establish- ment of Christianity the practice obtained legislative sanetion, Constantine giving the bishop's court concurrent jnrisdiction with the ordinary civil courts where both parties preferred the former, and by a later enactment going so far as to empower one of the partics to a suit to remove it to the ecclesiastical tribunal against the will of the other. For various reasons, advantage was taken of this power of resorting to the bishop to an extent which seriously interfered with the proper discharge of his spiritual functions, so that Honorius judged it expedicnt to revert to the original rule, and, at least as regarded laymen, to limit the right of resort to the episcopal judicatory to cases in which both parties consented. It is impossible to say with any approach to exactitude what effect this intervention of the clergy as judges in ordinary civil causes— for they had

no criminal jurisdiction—had on the development of the law. But it can hardly have been without some influence in still further promoting the tendency to subordinate act and word to will and animus, to deal leniently with technicalities, and to temper the rules of the jus civile with equity and considerations of natural right.

SS eS eee eee

2 See Troplong, De Vinfluence du ehristianisme sur le droit civil des Romains, Paris, 1843 (and subsequently) ; Merivale, The Conversion of the Roman Empire (Boyle Lectures for 1864), London, 1864.

[CODIFICATION,

aPiioas mular system, with its remit from the pretor to a sworn judex | law the aforesaid five have imported into their own works,— of pro- who was to try the cause, was of infinite advantage to the law; | Scevola, for example, and Sabinus, and Julian, and Marcellus,—and cedure, for the judgment was that of a free and independent citizen, un- | of all others whom they have been in the habit of quoting as autho- trammelled by officialism, fresh from some centre of business, and | rities (ommtwmgque quos ili eclebrarunt), provided always, as their in full sympathy with the parties between whom he had to decide. | antiquity makes them uncertain, that the texts of those earlier Such a system was incompatible with the political arrangements | jurists are verified by collation of manuscripts. If divergent dicta of Diocletian and Constantine; and it is with no surprise that | be adduced, that party shall prevail wlio has the greatest number of we find the former of these sovereigns instructing the provincial | authorities on his side; if the number on each side be the same, that governors that in future, unless when prevented by pressure of | one shall prevail which has the support of Papinian ; but, whilst he, business (or, according to a later constitution of Julian's, when | most excellent of them all, is to be preferred to any other single the matter was of trifling importance), they were themselves to | authority, he must yield to any two. [Paul's and Ulpian's notes hear the causes brought before them from first to last, as had pre- | ou his writings, however, as already enacted, are to be disregarded.] viously been the practice in the extraordinariae ecognitiones. 'The | Where opinions are equal, and none entitled to

preference, we leave remit in such cases was not, as formerly, to a private citizen, but | it to the discretion of the judge which he shall adopt." to what was called a judex pedaneus, probably a matriculated This constitution has always been regarded as a signal proof of member of the local bar; and for a time his delegated authority | the lamentable condition into which jurisprudence had sunk in was embodied in a formula after the old fashion. But even this | the beginning of the 5th century. Constantine, a hundred ycars exceptional use of it did not long survive, for an enactment by | earlier, had condemned the notes of Ulpian and Paul upon Papin- the two sons of Constantine, conceived in terms the most compre- | ian. There were no longer any living jurists to lay down the law hensive, declared fixed styles to be but traps for the unwary, and } (jura condere) ; and, if it was to be gathered from the writings of forbade their use in any legal act whatever, whether contentious | those who were dead, it was well that the use of them should be or voluntary. The result was, not only the formal disappearance | regulated. Tho Valentinianian law proceeded so far in the same of the distinction between the proceedings in jure and in judicio, | direction. It made a selection of the jurisconsults of the past but the practical disappearance also of the distinctions between | whose works alone were to be allowed to be cited,— Papinian, Paul, actions in jus and in factwm, and between actioncs dircctae and | Ulpian, and Modestine, the four latest patented counsel of any actiones wtiles, the conversion of the interdict into an actio ex inter- | distinction ; Gaius, of authority previously only in the schools, dicto, admission of the power of amendment of the pleadings, con- | but whose writings were now approved universally, notwithstand- demnation in the specific thing claimed, if in existence, instead of | ing that he had never possessed the jus respondendi ; and all the its pecuniary equivalent, and execution accordingly by the aid of | earlier jurists to whom those five had accorded their imprimator. officers of the law. But it went yet a step further, for it declared all of them, with the Under the new system a process was full from first to last of | sole exception of Papinian, to be of the same authority, and de- intervention by officials. The in jus vocatio of the XII. Tables | graded the function of the judge in most cases, so far at least as a —the procedure by which a plaintiff himself brought his adversary | question of law was concerned, to the purely arithmetical task of into court—was a thing of the past. In the earlier part of the | counting

up the names which the industry of the advocates on period the proceedings atonal with the litis denuntiatio intro- | either side had succeeded in adducing in support of their respective duced in the time of Marcus Aurelius and remodelled by Constan- | contentions. It is probable that, from the days of Hadrian down tine; but under Justinian (though probably begun before his | to Alexandcr Severus, when the emperor in his council had to frame reign) the initial step was what was called the /ibellus conventionis. | a rescript or a decree, its tenor would be decided by the vote of the This was a short and precise written statement addressed by the | majority ; but that was after argument and counter-argument, plaintiff to the court, explaining (but without detail) the nature | which must in many cases have modified first impressions. Taking of the action he proposed to raise and the claim he had to prefer; | the votes of dead men, who had not heard each other's reasons for this was accompanied with a formal undertaking to proceed with | their opinions, was a very different process. It may have been the cause and follow it out to judgment, under penalty of having | necessary ; but it can have been so only because a living juris- to pay double costs to the defendant. If the judge was satisfied | prudence had no existence,—because the constructive talent of the of the relevancy of the libel, he pronounced an interlocutor (intcr- | carlier cmpire had entircly disappeared. locutio) ordaining its service on the respondent; this was done by an officer of the court, who cited him to appear on a day named, IL. ANTEIUSTINIANIAN COLLECTIONS OF STATUTE AND usually at a distance of two or three months. The defendant, TURISPRUDEROR through the officer, put in an answer (dibcllus eontradictionis), at jee eae the same time giving security for the proper maintenance of the The Gregorian and Hermogenian Codes.—The first of these Codes Grego- defence and eventual satisfaction of the judgment. On the day | was a collection of imperial rescripts (with a few edicts, &c.) made rian and appointed the parties were first heard on any dilatory pleas, such | by one Gregorianus in the very end of the 3d century, and probably Hermo- as defect of jurisdiction ; if none were offered, or those stated re- | at the instigation of Diocletian, though whether in the East or the genian pelled, they then proceeded to expound their respective grounds | West critics are unable to decide. The collection of Hermogenianus, Codes. of action and defence, each finally making oath of his good faith | also of rescripts,

seems to have been a supplement to the earlier in the matter (jwramentum calumniac), and their counsel doing | one. As the latest enactment in it belongs to the year 365, the prob- the same. ability is that the collection was published about that time. Both From this point, which marked the itis contestatio or joinder of | Codes, although the work of private partics, received statutory re- issue, the procedure was much the same as that in judicio under the | cognition from Theodosius and Valentinian in their commission for formular system. But in all cases in which the demand was that | the preparation of a collection of edictal law; and from thc language a particular thing should be given or restored, and the plaintiff | of Justinian in reference to them there is reason to believe that in desired to have the thing itself rather than damages, execution was | the courts they were regarded as authoritative, even to the ignoring specific and effected through officers of the law (manw militart). | of all rescripts not embodied in them. : Where, on the other hand, the condemnation was pecuniary, the The Theodosian Code and Post-Theodosian Novels,~~Three years Theodo~~ usual course was for the judge, through his officers, to take pos- | aftcr the publication of the "law of citations" Theodosius nonti- sian Code session of such things belonging to the defendant as were thought | nated a commission to initiate the preparation of a bodyof law which, sufficient to satisfy the judgment (pignus in causa judieati captum), | if his scheme had been carried into exccution, would have rendered and they were eventually sold judicially if the defendant still | that of Justinian unnecessary, In a constitution some ten years refused to pay ; the mssio in bona of the classical period was rarely | later he explains the motives that had actuated him,—that he saw resorted to except in the case of insolvency. with much concern the poverty-stricken condition of jurisprudence Valen- The Valentinianian Law of Cttations.2 —This famous enact- | and how very few men there were who, notwithstanding the prizes tinian's ment, the production of Theodosius (II.), tutor of the youthful | that awaited them, were able to make themselves familiar with the law of Valentinian III., was issued from Ravenna in the year 426, and | whole range of law; and that he attributed it very much to the citations. was addressed to the Roman senate. It ran tlius:— multitude of books and the large mass of statutes through which it

CODIFICATION. |

Abandonment of the Formular System of Procedwre.1—'The for-

" We accord our approval to all the writings of Papinian, Paul, Gaius, Ulpian, and Modestine, conceding to Gaius the same authority that is enjoyed by Paul, Ulpian, and the rest, and sanctioning the citation of all his works, We ratify also the jurisprudence (scicn-

1 Wieding, Der Justinianeische Libellprocess, Vienna, 1865; Bethmann-Hollweg (as on p. 681, note 1), vol. iii. (1866); Muther (crit. Wieding), in the Krit. Vierteljahrschrift, vol. ix. (1867), pp. 161 sqg., 329 sg.; Wieding, in same Journal, vol. xii. (1870), p. 228 sq.; Bekker (as on p. 681, note 1), vol. ii. chaps. 23, 24; Baron, Gesch. d. rém. Rechts, vol. i. p. 448 sq.

2 Theod. Cod., i. 4,8; Puchta, in the Rhein. Museum f. Jurisprud., vol. v. (1832), p. 141 sq., and Verm. Schriften, Leipsic, 1851, p. 284 sq. ; Sanio, Rechtshist. Abhandl. u. Studien, Konigsberg, 1845, p. 1 sq.; Karlowa, Rom. Rechtsgesch., vol. i. p. 933 sq.

tia) of those earlier writers whose treatises and statements of the

was dispersed, and which it was next to impossible for any ordinary mortal to master. His scheme was eventually to compile one single code from materials derived alike from the writings of the jurists, the Gregorian and Hermogenian collections of rescripts, and the edictal laws from the time of Constantine downwards. His lan- guage leaves no doubt that it was his intention to have this general code very carefully prepared, so as to make it a complete exponent of the law in force, which should take the place of everything, statutory or jurisprudential, of an carlier date. The collection of edicts which he directed his commissioncrs to prepare, and which was to contain all that had not been displaced by later legislation, even though some of them might be obsolete by disuse, was to be

Collatio.

Vatican Frag- ments.

Consul- tatio.

Romano-

barba- rian codes.

712

the first step in the execution of his project. For some reason or other nothing followed upon this enactment ; and in 485 a new and stronger commission was nominated to collect the edicts, but nothing was said in their instructions about anything ulterior, The work was completed in three years, and published at Constantinople early in the year 488, with the declaration that it should take effect from Ist January following ; and a copy was communicated to Valentinian, who ordained that it should come into force in the West from 12th January 489. The arrangement is in sixteen books, subdivided into titles, in which the constitutions are placed in chronological order. They cover the whole field of law, private and public, civil and criminal, fiscal and municipal, military and ecelesiastical. The private law is contained in the first five, which unfortunately are very defective. The imperial ediets subsequent to the publication of the Code got the name of Novels (novellae constitutiones).

The Collatio, the Vatiean Fragments, and the Consultatio.— These were unofficial collections, The first—Collatio Legum Mosaiea- rum et Romanarum, otherwise Lex Dei quam Dominus praccepit ad Moysen—is a parallel of divine and hurnan law, the former drawn from the Pentateuch and the latter from the writings of Gaius, Papinian, Paul, Ulpian, and Modestine, rescripts from the Gregorian and Herniogenian Codes, and one or two later general enactments. Its date is probably about the year 390, but its authorship is un- known. The Vatican Fragments were discovered by Mai in a palim- psest in the Vatican in 1820,— evidently part of a book of practice compiled in the Western empire, and of very considerable dimensions. The extant fragments deal with the law

of sale, usufruet, dowries, donations, tutories, and processual agency, and are drawn from the writings of Papinian, Ulpian, and Paul, the two collections of re- seripts, and a few general enactments, the latest dating from the year 372. The compilation, therefore, may be of about the same antiquity as the Collatio. The Consultatio (Veteris cujusdam Juriseonsulti Consultatio) was first published by Cujas in 1577. It seems to be part of a collection of answers upon questions of law submitted for the opinion of counsel, and is of value for the fragments it contains from Paul's Sentences and the three Codes. It is thought to have been written in Franee in the end of the 5th or beginning of the 6th century,

The Romano-Barbarian Codes.—This title is usually applied to three collections compiled in western Europe after it had thrown off the sovereignty of Rome.

1. The Edietum Theodories was compiled at the instance of Theodoric, king of the Ostrogoths, in or very soon after the year 500. Its materials were drawn from the writings of the jurists— principally the Sentences of Paul—the Gregorian, Hermogenian, and Theodosian Codes, and the later Novels, all reduced into 154 sections, with no systematic arrangement, but touching upon all branches of the law public and private, especially criminal law and procedure, It was professedly intended to apply to all Theodoric's subjects, both Goths and Romans.

2. The Lex Romana Visigothorum or Breviartum Alaricianum was a much more ambitions and important collection. It was eon- piled by a commission appointed by Alaric IL, king of the Western Goths, with approval of the bishops and nobles, and published at Aire in Gascony in the year 506. The compilers selected their material partly from deges (statute law) and partly from jus (juris- prudential law), taking what they considered appropriate, without altering the text except in the way of excision of passages that were obsolete or purely historical. For the leges they utilized some 400 of the 3400 enactments (according to Haenel's estimate) of the Theodosian Code, and about 30 of the known 104 post-Theodosian Novels ; for the jus,—the Institutes of Gaius, Paul's Sentences, the Gregorian and Hermogenian rescripts, and the first book of Papinian's Responses (a single sentence). All of these, except Gaius,

were accompanied with an "interpretation," which re- sembles the interpretatio of the XII. Tables in that it is often not so much explanatory of the text as qualifieative or eorrective, Gaius is contained in an epitome in two books, believed to have been only a reproduction of an abridgment already current, and dating from about the beginning of the 5th century. The Breviary exercised very considerable influence in Europe generally; and there is no question that, until the rise of the Bologna school in the 12th century, it was from it, rather than from the books of Justinian, that western Europe acquired its scanty knowledge of Roman law. .

3. The Lex Romana Burgundionum, of a transcriber, called Papianus, is the collection which King Gundobald, when publishing his code of native law (Lex Bur- gundionum or Gundobada), had promised should be prepared for the use of his Roman subjects.. It deals with private law, criminal law, and judicial procedure, distributed through 47 titles, and is arranged very much after the order of the Gundobada, from which it has a few extracts. Its statutory Roman sources are the same as those of the Breviary: the jurisprudential authorities referred to are Gaius and Paul, the latter in his Sentences, and the former (only three times altogether) in some other book than his Institutes.

formerly, owing to a mistake

RG@OMAN LA W

[CODIFICATION,

III. Tue JUstiniaANiAn LEGISLATION.

Justiman's Collections and his own Legislation.—It is unnecessary to revert to the history of Justinian outside his legislative achievements, or even to speak of his collec- tions in detail, for both have already been described in the article Justrytan I. (vol. xiii. p. 792 sq.). Am- bitious to carry out a reform more complete even than that which Theodosius had planned but failed to execute, he took the first step towards it little more than six months after the death of his uncle Justin, in the appointment of a commission to prepare a collection of statute law (leges), among which he included the rescripts of the Gregorian and Hermogenian Codes, It

was published in April 529; and in rapid succession there followed his Fifty Decisions (529-532), his Institutes (21st November 533), his Digest of excerpts from the writings of the jurists (16th December 533), and the revised edition of his Code, in which he incor- porated his own legislation down to date (16th November 534). From that time down to his death in 565 there followed a series of Novels (novellae constitutiones), mostly in Greek, which were never officially collected, and of which probably many have been lost.

Justin- tan's codifiea- tion.

Taking his enactments in the Code and his Novels to- His own gether we have of Justinian's own legislation about 400 enact

constitutions. about three times as numerous; but most of them professed to be nothing more than short declaratory statements of pre-existing law, whereas Justinian's, apart from his Jifty Decisions, were all reformatory enactments, many of them as long as an average Act of Parliament, and dealing with diverse matters under the same rubric. They cover the whole field of law, public and private, civil and criminal, secular and ecclesiastical. It cannot be said that they afford pleasant reading: they are so disfigured by redun- dancy of language, involved periods, aud nauseous self- glorification. But it cannot be denied that many of those which deal with the private law embody reforms of the highest importance and of most salutary tendency. He sometimes loved to pose as the champion of the simplicity and evenhandedness of the early law, at others to denounce it for its subtleties ; sometimes he allowed himself to be influenced by his own extreme asceticism, and now and again we detect traces of subservience to the imperious will of his consort; but in the main his legislation was dictated by what he was pleased to call humanitas so far as the law of persons was concerned, and by naturalis ratio and public utility so far as concerned that of things. The result was the eradication of almost every trace of the old jus Quritium, and the substitution for it, under the name of jus Romanum, of that cosmopolitan body of law which has contributed so largely to almost every modern system.

Amendments on the Law of the Family.—With the Christian emperors the last traces disappeared of the old conception of the Jamilia as an

aggregate of persons and estate subject absolutely to the power and dominion of its head. Janus, the power in a hus- band over his wife and her belongings, was a thing of the past ; both stood now on a footing of equality before the law; perhaps it might be more accurate to say, at least with reference to the Justinianian legislation, that the wife was the more privileged of the two in respeet both of the protection and the indulgence the law accorded her. With manus the old confarreation and coemption had ceased, marriage needing nothing more than simple interchange of consent, except as between persons of rank or when the inten- tion was to legitimate previous issue ; in the latter case a written marriage settlement was required, and in the former either such a settlement or a marriage in church before the bishop and at least three clerical witnesses, who granted and signed a certificate of the completed union. The legislation of the Christian emperors on the subject of divorce, largely contributed to by Justinian in his Novels, has already been referred to. In regard to dowries many new pro- visions were introdneed, principally for curtailing the husband's power of dealing with the dowry while the marriage lasted, enlarging the right of the wife and her heirs in respect of it, and simplifying

Diocletian's contributions to the Code are ™™

Law of family relations.

CODIFICATION. |

the means of recovering it from the husband or his heirs when the marriage was dissolved. Between the time of Constantine and that of Theodosius and Valentinian it had become the practice for 2 man to make a scttlement on his intended wife of a provision which was to remain his property (but without the power of aliena- tion) during the marriage, but to pass to her on his predecease ; it got the naine of donatio ante nuptias or sometimes, as being a sort of return for the dos, antipherna. The earliest legislation about it was by the last-mentioned emperors; Zeno and Justin followed suit ; and Justinian, in Code and Novels, published five or six enact- ments for its regulation. The general result was that, wherever a dos was given or promised on the part of the wife, there a donatio was to be constituted on the part of the husband ; that, if one was increased

during the marriage, a corresponding increase was to be made to the other ; that it might be constituted after the marriage without infringing the rule prohibiting donations between husband and wife, which caused Justinian to change its name to donatio propter nuptias ; that the wife might demand its transfer to her (as she could that of the dos) on her husband's insolvency, but undcr obligation to apply its income to the maintenance of the family ; and that on the dissolution of the marriage by her hus- band's death or by a divorce for which he was in fault she had ample remedies for reducing it into possession.

The change in the complexion of the relations between husband and wife under the Christian emperors, however, was insignificant when compared with that whieh had overtaken the relation between parent and child. Justinian in his Jnstitwtes reproduces the boast of Gaius that nowhere else had a father such power over his children as was exercised by a Roman paterfamilias. True it is that the patria potestas in name still held a prominent place in the Justin- lanian collections; but it had been shorn of most of the prerogatives that had characterized it in the republic. To expose a new-born child was forbidden under penalties. To take the life of a grown- up one—unless it was a daughtcr slain with her paramour in the act of adultery—was murder ; for the domestic tribunal, with the judicial power of life and death in the paterfamilias as its head, had long disappeared. For the same rcason a parent could no longer sell his child asa slave, at least he could do so only when the child was an infant aud he in such extreme poverty as to be nnable to support it. Even the right to make a noxal surrender of his son to a party who had suffered from the latter's delict had silently become obsolete; so greatly had altered sentiment, in

sympathy with legislation, curtailed the power of the paterfamilias |

over those in his potestas. All that remained of it in the latest Justinianian law was no more than is sanctioned in most modern systems as natural emanations of the paternal relationship, —the rights of moderate chastisement for offence, of testamentary noniina- tion of guardians, of pupilary substitution (enlarged by Justinian), and of withholding consent

from the marriage of a child, but subject to magisterial intervention if used unreasonably.

How the right of the paterfamilias over the earnings and acqnisi- tions of his children was modified by the recognition of the peeuliwm eastvense has been shown in a previous page (p. 706). But the modification was carried to such an extent by the Christian em- perors as finally to negative the father's ownership altogether, except as regarded acquisitions that were the outcome of funds advanced by him to his child for his separate use (pecwliwm pro- Jecticium). Of some of the child's acquisitions his father had, down to the time of Justinian, the life interest and right of ad- ministration ; but by his legislation even these might be excluded at the pleasure of the parties from whom the acquisitions had been derived. By the classical law the father's radical right in his son's peculiwm castrense revived on the latter's death; for if he died intestate the former appropriated it not as his son's heir, but as an owner whose powers as such had been merely temporarily sus- pended. But by one of the chapters in the famous Novel on the law of intestate succession even this prerogative of the paterfamilias was abolished, and all a child's belongings except his peewliwm profecticium were recognized as his own in death as well as in life, so that if any of them should pass to his parent on his intestacy it should only be by title of inheritance and in the absence of descendants.

In every other branch of the law of the family the same reform- ing spirit was manifested. Adoption was no longer followed in all cases by a change of family for the adoptee, but only when the adopter was in fact one of his parents, such asa paternal or maternal grandfather,—when there was a natural potestas to underlie and justify the civil one. The modes of legitimation of children born

converted into the mildcr condition of colonate ; but, even where this did not happen, the rights of owners were not allowed to be abused ; for slaves were permitted to claim the protectiou of the magistrate, and

cruelty by a master might result in his being deprived of his human property. Kinship that had arisen between two persons when one or both were slaves (servilis eognatio) was recognized as creative not only of disabilities but of rights. The modes of manumission were multiplied, and the restrictions of the legislation of the early empire abolished ; and a freedman invari- ably became a citizen, Juniau Latinity and dediticiancy being no longer recognized.

Amendments on the Law of Property and Obligation.—In the law Law of of property the principal changes of the Christian empire were the property.

simplification of the forms of conveyance, the extension of the colonate, the introduction and regulation of emphyteusis, and the remodelling of the law of prescription. Simplification of the forms of conveyance was necessary only in the case of res maneitpi, for res nee mancipt had always passed by delivery. From the Theodosian Code it is apparent that movable res maneipt usually passed in the same way from very early in the period, and that for the mancipa- tion of lands and houses (for in jwre eessio had disappeared with the formular system) a solemnis traditio, a written instrument and delivery following thereon, and both before witnesses, was gradu- ally substituted. Of this there is no trace in the Justinianian Code. For Justinian abolished all remains of the distinction between res mancipi and res nee mancipi, between full ownership, bonitarian ownership, and nudwm jus Quiritiwmn, placing movables and im- movables on a footing of perfect equality so far as their direct con- veyance was concerned. But, as regarded the possession required of an alienee to cure any defect in the conveyance, he made a marked difference between them. For, amalgamating the old positive usu- capion of the jus eivile with the negative " prolonged possession " (longi temporis possessio) that had been introduced in the provinces (probably by the provincial edict), he declared that possession on a suflicient title and in good faith should in future make the possessor legal owner of the thing possessed by him, provided that the posses- sion of himself and his author had endured nninterruptedly for three years in the case of a movable, and in the case of an immovable for ten years if the party

against whom he possessed was resideut in the same province, or for twenty if he resided in another one.

The same causes that led to the colonate induced the introduc- Emphy- tion of emphyteusis,'—an institution which had already existed in teusis.

some of the Kastern provinces when independent, and which came to be utilized first by the emperors, then by the church, and after- wards by municipalities and private landowners, for bringing into cultivation the large tracts of provincial land belonging to them which were unproductive and unprofitable through want of supcr- vision on the spot. Its nature and conditions were carefully de- fined by Zeno and amended by Justinian. The emphyteuta, as the grantee of the right was called, did not become owner ; the granter still remained dominus, all that the grantee enjoyed being a jus in re aliens, but de facto so extensive as hardly to be distinguishable from ownership. 1t conferred upon him and his heirs a perpetual right in the lands included in the grant, in consideration of a fixed annual payment to the lord (canon) and due observance of couven- tional and statutory conditions; but he was not entitled to abandon it, nor able to frce himself of the obligations he had undertaken, without the lord's consent. The latter was entitled to hold the grant forfeited if the eanon fell into arrear for three years (in church lands for two), or if the land-tax was in arrear for the same period, or if the emphytewta allowed the lands to deteriorate, or if he at- tempted to alienate them (alienare meliorationes, as the text says) without observance of statutory requirements. These were that he should intimate an intended alienation and the name of the intended alience to the lord, so that the lattcr, before giving his assent, inight satisfy himself that he would not be a loser by the transac- tion ; and, if the alienation was to be by sale, he had to state the price fixed, so as to give the lord the opportunity of exercising his statutory right of pre-emption at the same figure. If those require- ments were complied with, and the lord had no reasonable objection to the proposed alienee, he was not cntitled to resist the alienation, provided a payment (Jawdemiium) was made to him of two per cent. of the sale-price in consideration of his enforced consent.

The changes in the law of obligation were more superficial than those in the law of property, and consisted principally in the simpli- fication of formalities and in some cases in their entire abolition. To describe them, however, would carry us into details which would here be out of place.

Amendments on the Law of Succession.—The changes niade in the Testa- law of succession by Justinian's Christian predecessors, espccially mentary Theodosius IJ. and Anastasius, were far from insignificant ; but succes- his own were in some directions positively revolutionary. The gion. testament per wes et Libram of the jus civile probably never obtained any firm footing in the East; for it was only by Caracalla's con-

out of wedlock, especially that by subsequent marriage of the parents, first introduced by Constantine, were regulated, and the extent of the rights of the legitimated issue carefully defined. Emancipation was simplified, and the old procedure by sales and manunussions, which degraded the child too much to the level of a slave, dispensed with. Tutory at law was opened to the pupil's nearest kinsman, whether on the father's side or the mother's ; and the mother herself, or the child's grandmother, might be allowed, uuder certain conditions, to act as its guardian. Slavery was often

1 See Elia Lattes, Studi storici sopra il Contratio d' Enfiteusi nelle sue relaziont col Colonato, Turin, 1868, chaps. 1 and 3; and Frangois, De l' Emphytéose, Paris,

stitution conferring citizenship on all his free subjects that pro- vincials generally acquired testamenti factio; and by that time a testament bearing externally the requisite number of seals had been recognized as sufficient for a grant of bonorwm possessio, unchallenge- able by the heirs-at-law, even though they were able to prove that neither familiae maneipatio nor testament? nuneupatio had inter- vened. Hence the universal adoption of what Justinian calls the pretorian testament, which, however, underwent considerable re- form at the hands of the emperors, notably in the requirement (in the ordinary case) of signature by the testator and subscription by the witnesses. There was much hesitating legislation on the subject before the law was finally established as it stands in the Justinianian books; and even at the last we find it encumbered with many ex- ceptions and reservations in favour of testaments that were merely deeds of division by a parcnt among his children, testaments made in time of plague, testaments recorded in books of court, testaments entrusted to the safe-keeping of the emperor, and so forth. Codicils had become deeds of such importance as, in the absence of a testa- ment, to be dealt with as imposing a trust on the heir-at-law ; it was therefore thought expedient to deny effect to them unless attested by at least five witnesses. And a most important step in advance was taken by Justinian in the recognition of the validity of an oral mortts causa trust ; for he declared that, if it should be represented to a competent judge that a person on his deathbed had

advances to his child during his life or left him a legacy which quantitatively equalled the legitim ; his idca was that a child was entitled to recognition by his parent as one of his heirs, and that to deny him that position was to put upon him an indignity which the law would not permit.

Amongst the other beneficial changes effected by Justinian may Other be mentioned the assimilation so far as possible of hereditas and changes,

bonorwm possessio, so that the latter might be taken like the former without formal petition for a grant of it; the equiparation of legacies and singular trust-gifts, and the application of some of their rules to mortis causa donations ; the extension of the rule of 'transmission'? to every heir without exception, so that, if he died within the time allowed him for considering whether or not he would acccpt (tempus deliberandt), his power of acceptance or declinature passed to his heirs, to be exercised by them within what remained of the period; the introduction of entry under inventory (eum beneficio inventarti), which limited the heir's re-spousibilities and rendered unnecessary the nine or twelve months of deliberation ; and the application of the principle of collation to descendants generally, so that they were bound to throw into the mass of the succession before its partition every advance they had received from their parent in anticipation of their shares.

IV. THE JUSTINIANIAN LAw-Booxs.

by word of mouth directed his heir-at-law to give something to the complainant, the heir should be required either on his oath to deny the averment or to give or pay what was claimed.

Their Use in the Courts and in the Sehools.—Although the Jnsti- Justin-tutes were primarily intended to serve as a text-book in the schools, janian it was expressly declared that they and the Digest and the Code law-

The In the matter of intestacy there was long a halting between two | should be regarded as just so many parts of one great piece of books. 118th opinions, —a desire still further to amend the law in the direction | legislation and all of equal authority, and that, although Digest novel. taken by the prators and by the legislature in the Tertullian and | and Code were but collections of legislation and doctrine that had Orphitian senatusconsults, and yet a hesitancy about breaking pie originally from many different hands, yet they were to altogether from the time-lallowed principle of agnation. Justinian | be treated with the same respect as if they had been the work of in his Code went far beyond his predecessors, making a mother's | Justinian himself. But, while everything within them was to be right of sueecssion independent altogether of the jus liberorum ; | held as law, nothing outside them was to be looked at, not even

e.’tending that of a daughtcr or sister to her descendants, without | the volumes from which they had been collected ; and so far did any deduction in favour of agnates thus excluded; admitting | this go that, after the publication of the revised Codc, neither the emancipated collaterals and their descendants as freely as if there | first edition of it nor the Fifty Decisions were allowed to be referred had been no eapttis deminutio minima ; applying to agnates the | to. If a case arose for which no precedent was to be found, the same suecessio graduum that the pretors had allowed to cognates, | emperor was to be resorted to for its decision, as being outside his and so forth. But it was by his Vovels, especially the 118th and | collections the only fountain of the law. ‘To preserve the purity 127th, that he revolutionized the system, by eradicating agnation | of the texts Justinian forbade the use of conventional abbreviations altogether and settling the canons of descent —which were the | (sigla) in making transcripts, visiting an offender with the penalties same for real and personal estate—solcly on the basis of blood kin- | of falsification (erimen falsi). Literal translations into Greek were ship, whether through males or females, and whether crossed or | authorized, and indeed were very necessary for many of his subjects ; not by a capitis deminutio. First came descendants of the intestate, | so were rapd7irha or summaries of the contents of individual titles male and female alike, taking per capita if all were of the same | (although the jurists read the word less strictly). Commentaries degree, per stirpes if of different degrees. Failing descendants, the | and general summaries were forbidden under heavy penalties, as succession passed to the nearest ascendants, and, concurrently with | an interference with the impcrial prerogative of interpretation ; but them, to brothers and sisters of full blood and (by Nov. 127) the | the prohibition does not seem to have been enforced, as we have children of any that had predeceased. Where there were ascend- | accounts and remains not only of translations but of comment- ants alone, one-half of the succession went to the paternal line | aries, notes, abridgments, excerpts, and general summaries even and one-half to the maternal; where there were ascendants and | in Justinian’s lifetime. Thesc, it is true, were mostly by professors brothers and sisters, or only brothers and sisters, the division | (antecessores), and their productions may have been intended pri- was made cqually per eapita ; when children of a deceased brother | marily for educational

purposes ; but there can be little doubt that or sister participated it was per stirpes. In the third class came | they soon passed into the hands of the practitioners and were used brothers and sisters of half-blood or by adoption and their children ; | without scruple in the courts. A Greek Paraphrasc of the Insti- the division here was on the same principle as in the second class. | tutes, usually attributed to Theophilus, a professor in Constantinople The fourth class included all other collaterals according to pro- | and one of Justinian's commissioners, is commonly supposed to have pinquity, and without distinction between full and half blood ; | been used by him in his prelections. It embodies much more his- the primary division was per stirpes, but all of the same degree | torical matter than is to be found in the Institutes ; but its value took per capita. has been very differently rated by different critics. Its latest editor, The A reform effected by Justinian by his 115th Novel ought not to | Ferrini, who puts a high estimate on it, is of opinion that the 115th pass unnoticed ; for it rendered superfluous all the old rules about | original of it was a paraphrase of Gaius, which was remodelled novel, disherison and preterition of a testator's children, practically | after the plan of Justinian's Jnstétwtes, and had their new matter

abolished bonorum posscssio contra tabulas, and established the principle that a child had, as a general rule, an inherent and inde- feasible right to be one of his father's heirs in a certain share at all events of his succession, and that a parent had the same right in the succession of his child if the latter had died without issue. The enactment enumerated certain grounds upon which alone it should be lawful for a parent to disinherit his child or a child his parent, declaring that in every case of disherison the reason of it should be stated in the testament, but giving leave to the person disinherited to dispute and disprove the facts when the testament was opened. If a child who had not been disinherited—and one improperly disinherited was eventually in the same position—was not instituted to at least his "'legitim" (legitima or debita portio), he was entitled to have the testament declared null in so far as the Institutions in it were concerned, thus opening the succession to himself and the other heirs-at-law, but without affecting the minor provisions, such as bequests, nominations of tutors, &c. The legitim, which under the practice of the centumviral court had been one-fourth of the share to which the child

would have been entitled ab intestato, was raised by Justinian to one-third at least and one-half where there were five or more entitled to participate. He did not allow challenge of the will to be excluded, as in the earlier querela inofficiosi testamenti, because the testator had made

incorporated in order to adapt it to the altered conditions ; but he doubts if there be any sufficient authority for ascribing it to Theo- philus. If he be right in assuniing that it was really a redaction of Gaius, the historical explanations will be.received with all the more confidence.

Fate of the Justinianian Books in the East.—The literary work Their indicated in the preceding section was continued throughout the 6th fate in century. Butthe next three were comparatively barren, the only the Hast

thing worth noting being the "Exd\oy} r&v véuwr ey cuvrdum yevouern of Leo the Isaurian in 740, professcdly an abstract of the whole Justinianian law amended and rearranged; but it was repealed by Basil the Macedonian on account of its imperfections and its audacious departure from the law it pretended to summarize. The last-named emperor, with his son Leo the Philosopher, set them- selves in the end of the 9th and beginning of the 10th centuries to the production of an authoritative Greek version of the whole of the Justinianian collections and legislation, omitting what had be- come obsolete, excising redundancies, and introducing such of the post-Justinianian legislation as merited preservation. The result was the Basilica (Ta Baowhixd, ¢.¢., vdueua), which was completed in the reign of Leo, though probably issued in a preparatory stage in the reign of Basil, who also published a sort of institutional work, the Ipéxeipov, which was revised and republished by Leo under

Their fate in theWest.

ROM—ROM

the name of 'Exavaywyy tof véuov. The Basilica consists of sixty books, subdivided into titles, following generally the plan of the Justinianian Code, but with the whole law on any particular sub- ject arranged

consecutively, whether from Digest, Code, or Novels (see BASILICA, vol. iii. p. 419). Leo's son, Constantinus Porphyro- genitus, made an addition to it in the shape of an official com- mentary collected from the writings of the 6th-century jurists, the so-called Ilapdéypapat r&v waha:dy, which is now spoken of as the seholia to the Basilica, and has done good exegetical service for modern civilians. The Basilica retained its statutory authority until the fall of the Byzantine empire in 1453. But long before that it had practically been abandoned ; and not a single complete copy of it exists. Its place was taken by epitomes and compendia, the last being the Hédé8.8dos of Constantinus Harmenopulus of 1345, 'ta miserable epitome of the epitomes of epitomes," as Bruns calls it, which survived the vicissitudes of the eenturies, and finally received statutory authority in the modern kingdom of Greece in the year 1835, in place of the Basilica, which had been sanctioned thirteen years before, in 1822.

Their Fate in the West.—Before the rise of the Bologna school it was to a much greater extent from the Romano-barbarian codes than from the books of Justinian that central and western Europe derived their acquaintance with Roman law. Theodoric's Kdict can have had little influence after Justinian's recovery of Italy, and the Romano-Burgundian law was no doubt gradually displaced by the Breviary (Lea Rom. Visigothorum) after Burgundy had fallen into the hands of the Franks ; but the Breviary itself found its way in all directions in France and Germany, penetrating even into England, to a great extent through the agency of the church. There must, however, have been other repertories of Roman law in circulation, as witness a testament made in Paris in the end of the 7th century, preserved by Mabillon, in which the testator uses the old formula of the jus eivile,—"' ita do, ita lego, ita testor, ita vos Quirites testimonium mihi perhibetote,"—words: that are not to be found either in the Visigothic or the Justinianian collections. :

In his pragmatic sanction of the year 554 Justinian anew accorded his imperial sanction to the jwra and leges, i.¢., the Digest and Code, which he says he had long before transmitted to Italy, at the same time declaring that his ovels were to be of the same authority there as in the East. Two years after this came Julian's Latiu epitome of them, not improbably prepared by eommand of the empcror himself. That they all came at once

to some extent into use is beyond question ; for there is preserved in Marini's collection the testament of one Mannanes, executed at Ravenna in the reign of Justinian's immediate successor Justin II., in which the requirements of both Code and Novels are scrupulously observed. Of other monuments of the same period that prove the eurrency of the Justinianian law in Italy several are referred to by Savigny in the second volume of his History of the Roman Law in the Middle Ages, among which may be mentioned the Turin gloss of the Jn- stitutes, which Fitting ascribes to about the year 545, and two little pieces known as the Dictatwm de consiliartis and the Collectio de tutoribus, which form an appendix to some manuscripts of Julian's epitome of the Novels, and may possibly have been from his pen. The invasion of the Lombards, the disturbance they caused in Italy for two centuries, and the barrier they formed between it and the rest of Europe militated against the spread of the Justinianian law north- wards ; but it was taught without much interruption in Ravenna, the seat of the exarchs, to which (but this is doubtful) the school (studiwm) of Rome, revived by Justinian, is said to have been trans- ferred. By the Lombards, as their savagery toned down, the Roman

law was so far recognized that they allowed it to be applied to the Romans living within their territory; and it is said to have cven been taught in Pavia, which they had established as their cayital. Their overthrow by Charlemagne opened an outlet for it beyond Italy; and in the 9th century therc is evidence that the Justinian- ian books or some of them were already circulating in the hands of the clergy in various parts of Europe. Yet there are very few remains of any literature indieating much acquaintance with them. Almost the only pieces worth mentioning are the so-called Summa Perusina, an abridgment of the first eight books of the Code, ascribed to the 9th century; the Quaestiones ae monita, to the Lombardic laws, drawn mostly from the Jnstitutes, but with a few texts from the Digest, the Code, and Julian's Epitome, and supposed to have been written early in the 11th century; the Brachylogus, an abbreviated revision of Justinian's Jnstitutes, with referenecs to his other books, which is thought to have been written in France (Orleans?), according to

Fitting between 999 and 1002, but accord- ing to other authoritics nearer the end of the 11th century; and the Petri exeeptiones legum Romanarum, a systematic exposition of the law in four books, written in the south of France early in the latter half of the 11th century, and mostly compiled from Justinianian sources,

It was in the very end of the 11th century or the beginning of The glos- the 12th that at Bologna, and under one Imerius, who appears not sarists.

to have been a professional jurist but originally a teacher of letters, the study of Ronan law began somewhat suddenly to attract students from all parts of the world. Through the action of the clergy the only parts of the Justinianian legislation that had hitherto been in ordinary use were the Jnstitutes, the Code, and the Novels. The first, from its elementary character, had naturally commended itself ; the Code, with its opening title on the Trinity and its seeond on Holy Church, and the Novels, with their abundant legislation on matters ecclesiastical, were in many respects charters of the church's privileges, and were prized accordingly ; but the Digest, as being the work of pagan jurists, had been practically ignored. The Code and the Novels, however, with their modicum of wheat concealed in such a quantity of chaff, offcred little attraction to laymen of intelligence ; and, when a copy of a portion of the Digest, with its infinitely purer diction and its clear and incisive reasoning, came into the hands of Irnerius, it must have been for him asa new revelation. The text of it secms to have reached him by in- stalments; at least this is the only reasonable explanation of its division by the glossarists (as Irnerius and his successors of the Bologna school were called, the name being derived from the glossae, notes marginal and interlinear, with which they furnished it) into three parts, Digestwm Vetus (books 1 to 24, tit. 2), Infortiatum, and Digestum Novum (book 89 to the end), the general idea being that, after first the old and then the new Digest had come to light, the connecting link unexpectedly turned up, and got in conse- quence the somewhat singular name by which it continued to be known for centuries. The whole collection was by the glossarists distributed in five volumes, the fourth containing the first ninc books of the Code, and the fifth, called Volumen parvum legum, containing the Institutes, a Latin translation of 134 of the Novels known as the Authentiewm, and the last three books of

the Code which had been recovered subsequently to the others. With these five volumes, the teaching that accompanied them, and the glossae, summae, casus, broearda, &c., with which they were enriched from the rise of the school with Irnerius till its close with Franciseus Accursius in 1260, Roman jurisprudence began a new career, which it would carry us beyond the limits of this article to attempt to trace even in meagrest outliue.! (Joe)

iO SPAN ~ fal

T would be impossible within the limits allowed for iI this article to attempt, even in outline, any history of the course of Roman literature which would include an account, not only of the extant works which it con- tains and of their authors, but also of the principal works and writers known to us from ancient testimony. The mere enumeration of these in chronological order, without some attempt to ascertain their individual features and to estimate their relation to the intellectual movement of their time, could be of no interest or use to any one. All that is possible to accomplish here is to pass in rapid review the first four of the five periods into which Roman literature may most conveniently be divided, to ascertain the chief literary motives and characteristics of each, and to connect these with the works and writers in whom they

TERATURE

are most conspicuously displayed. It will be unnecessary to give any biographical account even of the greatest authors or to criticize their works in detail, as these have been sufficiently treated in separate articles of the present work. The object of the following survey will be to obtain some appreciation of the relation in which the

1 The great authority on the matter of this section is still Savigny's Gesch. d. rim. Rechts tm Mittelalter, 7 vols., 2d. ed., Heidelberg, 1834-51 ; but much additional light has been thrown on it by Merkel, Stintzing, Blume, Fitting, Bruns, Mommsen, Kriiger, Ficker, Rivier, Courat (Cohn), and others, whose writings, mostly in periodicals, are too numerous to mention. On the early traces of Roman Jaw in England, see Amos, LHistory and Principles of the Civil Law of Rome, London, 1888, p. 443

sq. ; Caillemer, Le Droit Civil dans les pro- vinces Anglo-Normandes, Caen, 1883; Scrutton, The Influence of the Roman Law on that of England, Cambridge, 1885.

Early forms.

716 kh OMA

individual authors noticed stand to the whole subject, 2.e., to the collective literary expression, so far as they found an expression, of the action, the ideas, the character, the various feelings, passions, and moods, of ancient Rome and of the races which it absorbed, so long as that literature has a distinct unity and individuality.

The actual beginning of Roman artistic literature can be assigned to a definite date, the year 240 B.c., when Livius Andronicus produced on a Roman stage a drama with a regular plot, instead of the unconnected dramatic

‘dialogues (sature) by which the holidays of the people

had previously been enlivened, Yet the germs of an indi- genous literature had existed independently at an earlier period in Rome and in the country districts of Italy. Although these cannot be said to have exercised any marked influence on the subsequent development of litera- ture, they have an importance as indicating natural wants in the Italian race, which were ultimately satisfied by regular literary forms. The art of writing was first em- ployed in the service of the state and of religion for the preservation of the sacred hymns, books of ritual, treaties with other states, the laws of the XII. Tables, &e. An approach to literature was made in the Annales Maximi, although it cannot be supposed that the pontifex maximus in drawing up the dry records of the prodigies and events of the year had any thought of gratifying intellectual curi- osity or imparting intellectual pleasure. But in the satis-

LItGgeaykru kr ®

Roman epic poetry, and that form of Roman oratory known as "'laudationes," and in some of the Odes of Horace. The latest and probably the most important of these rude and inchoate forms was that of dramatic saturx (medleys), put together without any regular plot, and consisting appa- rently of contests of wit and satiric invective, and perhaps of comments on current events, accompanied with music ("saturas impletas modis," Liv., vii. 2). These have a real bearing on the subsequent development of Roman literature. They prepared the mind of the people for the reception of regular comedy. They may have contributed to the formation of the style of comedy which appears at the very outset much more mature than that of serious poetry, tragic or epic. They gave the namie and some of the characteristics to that special literary product of the Roman soil, the "satura," addressed to readers, not to spectators, which ultimately was developed into pure poetic satire in Lucilius, Horace, Persius, and Juvenal, into the prose and verse miscellany of Varro, and into something approaching the prose novel in Petronius.

First Period: from 240 to about 80 B.c.

The historical event which brought about the greatest change in the intellectual condition of the Romans, and thereby exercised a decisive influence on the whole course of human culture, was the capture of Tarentum in 272, After the capture many Greek slaves were brought to

Rome, and among them the young Livius Andronicus, Livius

faction they afforded to the commemorative and patriotic who was employed in teaching Greek in the family of his Androni-

instincts they anticipated an office afterwards performed by From that time

the national epics and the works of regular historians.

But it was rather in extemporaneous effusions than in written compositions that some germs of a native poetry might have been detected. The most genuine indication of that impulse which ultimately

finds its realization in artistic literature appears in the use of a metre of pure native origin, the Saturnian, which by its rapid and lively movement gives expression to the vivacity and quick apprehension of the Italian race. This metre appears to have been first used in ritual hymns, which seem to have assumed definite shapes out of the exclamations of a prinitive priesthood engaged in a rude ceremonial dance. It was also employed by a class of bards or itinerant sooth- sayers known by the name of "vates." It was used also in the "Fescennine verses," which gave expression to the coarse gaiety of the people and to their strong tendency to personal raillery and satiric comment. This tendency, which under the stern censorship of the patrician rulers of the early republic was repressed by stringent laws, found ultimately its legitimate outlet in Roman satire. The metre was also employed in commemorative poems, accom- panied with music, which were sung at funeral banquets in celebration of the exploits and virtues of distinguished men. These had their origin in the same impulse which ultimately found its full gratification in Roman history,

master, a member of the Livian gens. to learn Greek became a regular part of the education of a Roman noble. The capture of Tarentum was followed by the complete Romanizing of all Southern Italy. Soon after came the First Punic War, the principal scene of which was Sicily, where, from common hostility to the Carthaginian, Greek and Roman were brought into friendly relations, and the Roman armies must have become familiar with the spectacles and performances of the Greek theatre. In the year following the conclusion of the war (240), after the armies had returned and the people were at leisure to enjoy the fruits of victory ("et post Punica bella quietus," Hor., £p., ii. 162), Livius Andronicus "took the bold step" ("ausus est primus argumento fabulam serere," Liv., vii. 2) of substituting at one of the public festivals a regular drama translated or adapted from the Greek for the musical medleys (satwrx) hitherto in use. From this time dramatic performances became a regular accompaniment of the public games, and came more and more to encroach on the older kinds of amuse- ment, such as the chariot races. The dramatic work of Livius was, however, merely educative ; it can hardly be called in any sense of the word literary. The same may be said of his later work, which was still used as a school- book in the days of Horace,—the translation of

the Odyssey ; and probably the religious hymn which he was called upon to compose in the latter part of the Second Punic War had no higher literary pretension. He was, however, the first to make the old name of poet a title of honour instead of reproach; and by familiarizing the Romans with the forms of the Greek drama and the Greek epic he determined the main lines which Roman literature followed for more than a century afterwards.

His immediate successor, Cn. Nevius, was not, like Nevius.

Livius, a Greek, but either a Roman citizen or one who enjoyed the limited citizenship of a Latin, and who had served in the Roman army in the First Punic War. His first appearance as a dramatic author was in 235. He adapted both tragedies and comedies from the Greek, but the bent of his genius, the tastes of his audience, and the condition of the language, developed through the active

- Plautus.

i

Ennius,

OMAN bIPERATURE

intercourse and business of life, gave a greater impulse to comedy than to tragedy. Neevius tried to use the theatre, as it had been used by the writers of the Old Comedy of Athens, for the purposes of political warfare, and thus seems to have anticipated by a century the part played by Lucilius. Satiric and censorious criticism rather than a humorous sense of the comedy of human life and character was apparently the chief motive of his representation. But the state censorship, which in a more revolutionary time tolerated the free criticism of public men in works addressed to a select class of readers, arrested at the out- set all such criticism addressed to the mass of the people assembled in the theatre; and Neevius, after being im- prisoned, had to retire in his old age into banishment. He was not only the first in point of time, and according to ancient testimony one of the first in point of merit, among the comic poets

of Rome, and in spirit, though not in form, the earliest of the line of Roman satirists, but he was also the oldest of the national poets. Besides cele- brating the success of Marcellus in 225 over the Gauls in a play called Clastedium, he gave the first specimen of the "fabula przetexta" in his Alimonium Romuli et Remi, based on the most national of all Roman traditions. Still more important service was rendered by him in his long Saturnian poem on the First Punic War, in which he notonly told the story of contemporary events but gave shape to the legend of the settlement of Avneas in Latium,—the theme ultimately adopted for the great national epic of Rome.

His younger contemporary Plautus (d. 184) was the greatest comic and dramatic genius of Rome, and is still read as one of the great comic and dramatic writers of the world. He lived and wrote only to amuse his contempo- raries, and thus, although more popular in his lifetime and more fortunate than any of the older authors in the ultimate survival of a large number of his works, he is less than any of the great writers of Rome in sympathy with either the serious or the caustic spirit in Roman literature. Yet he is the one extant witness to the humour and vivacity of the Italian temperament at a stage between its early rudeness and rigidity and its subsequent degeneracy.

Thus far Roman literature, of which the predominant characteristics are dignity, gravity, and fervour of feeling, and which more than any other literature aimed at forti- fying and elevating the character, seemed likely to become a mere vehicle of amusement adapted to all classes of the people in their holiday mood. But a new spirit came over the Italian Camene in the time of Plautus, which hence- forth became predominant. Roman literature ceased to be in close sympathy with the popular spirit, either in political partisanship or in ministering to general amuse- ment, but became the expression of the ideas, sentiment, and culture of the aristocratic governing class. It was by Q. Ennius (239-169) of Calabria that a new direction was given to Roman literature and new and deeper springs of emotion were elicited from the native genius. Deriving from his birthplace the culture, literary and philosophical, of Magna Grecia, having served with distinction in the Roman armies, and gained the friendship of the greatest of the Romans living in that great age, he was of

all the early writers most fitted to be the medium of conciliation between the serious genius of ancient Greece and the seri- ous genius of Rome. Alone among the older writers he was endowed with the gifts of a poetical imagination and animated with enthusiasm for a great ideal. With the widest culture and knowledge among all the men of his generation, he had also the justest discernment of the rela- tion of culture and knowledge to actual life and to the work which he had to accomplish.

First among his special services to Roman literature was the fresh impulse which he gave to tragedy. He turned

"1¢

the eyes of his contemporaries from the commonplace social humours of later Greek life to the contemplation of the heroic age. But he did not thereby denationalize the Roman drama. He animated the heroes of early Greece with the martial spirit of Roman soldiers and the ideal magnanimity and sagacity of Roman senators, and im- parted weight and dignity to the language and verse in which their sentiments and thoughts were expressed. Al- though Rome wanted creative force to add a great series of tragic dramas to the literature of the world, yet the spirit of elevation and moral authority breathed into tragedy by Ennius passed into the ethical and didactic writings and the oratory of a later time.

Another work, the rdpepyov of his serious activity, was the sature, written in various metres, but chiefly in that which came nearest to the spoken language of Rome, the trochaic tetrameter. He thus became the inventor of a new form of literature ; and, if in his hands the satura was rude and indeterminate in its scope, it was a proof of the practical bent of his understanding that he found a vehicle by which to address a reading public on matters of the day, or on the materials of his wide reading, in a style not far removed from the language of common life. His greatest work, which made the Romans regard him as the father of their literature, was his epic poem, in eighteen books, the Annales, in which the record of the whole career of Rome was unrolled with idealizing enthusiasm and realistic detail. The idea which inspired Ennius was ultimately realized in both the national epic of Virgil and the national history of Livy. And the metrical vehicle which he conceived as the only

one adequate to his great theme was a rude experiment, which was ultimately de- veloped into "the stateliest metre ever moulded by the lips of man." Even as a grammarian he performed an important service to the literary language of Rome, by fixing its prosody and arresting the tendency to decay in its final syllables. Although we know his writings only in fragments, these fragments are enough, along with what we know of him from ancient testimony, to justify us in regarding him as the most important among the makers of Roman literature,—the most important indeed among Roman authors before the age of Cicero.

There is still one other name belonging partly to this, partly to the next generation to be added to those of the men of original force of mind and character who created Roman literature, that of M. Porcius Cato (234-149), the younger contemporary of Ennius. More than Nevius and Plautus he represented the pure native element in that literature, the mind and character of Latium, the plebeian pugnacity, which was one of the great forces in the Roman state. He had no poetic imagination, and set himself in antagonism to the literature of imagination created by Ennius. He strove to make literature ancillary to politics and to objects of practical utility, and thus started prose literature on the main lines which it after-wards followed. Through his industry and vigorous understanding he gave a great impulse to the creation of Roman oratory, history, and systematic didactic writing. He was one of the first to publish his speeches and thus to bring them into the domain of literature. Cicero speaks of 150 of these speeches as extant in his day. He praises them for their acuteness, their wit, their conciseness. He speaks with emphasis of the impressiveness of Cato's eulogy and the satiric bitterness of his invective. As an orator he seems to have been akin in spirit to Nevius and Lucilius, and to the last genuine representative of the native temper in literature, the satirist Juvenal.

Porcius Cato also heads the roll of the Roman historians, at least of those whose works were ranked as literature. His Origines, the work of his old age, was written with

Cato.

Terence,

that thoroughly Roman conception of history which re- gards actions and events not in relation to their causes or their general human interest but as incidents in the continuous and progressive life of the state. Such is the conception of the past in Livy and Tacitus, and in Ennius and Virgil. But in one respect Cato seems to have formed a truer conception of his subject than any of these writers except Virgil, who, availing himself of the labours of Cato, realized and perfected his conception. Cato felt that the record of Roman glory could not be isolated from the story of the other Italian communities, which, after fighting against Rome for their own independence, shared with it the task of conquering the world. To the wider national sympathies which stimulated the researches of the old censor into the legendary history of the Italian towns we owe some of the most truly national parts of the inetd. There is another point of contact between the work done by Cato and that of Virgil, although they may be regarded as the most dissimilar in intellectual and imaginative gifts in the whole range of Roman literature, the one being the most realistic and prosaic, the other the most idealistic and imaginative. While the ideal charm of the old rural life and industry of Italy still lives in the Georgics, the practical utilitarian prose of that life may best be learned from the De Fe Rustica of Cato.

Neevius, Plautus, Ennius, and Cato not only represent but may be said actually to have been the contending forces which strove for ascendency in determining what was to be the character of the new literature. Although their combined activity was spread over nearly a century, yet so vigorous was their vitality and so prolonged their career that they may be spoken of as contemporaries. Cato, the youngest of the four, was a man of mature years, actively engaged in the service of the state, when Nevius was still in the full vigour of his powers, and before Plautus had reached the most productive period of his career. It is characteristic of the time that the genius of all these writers was ripest in their old age. They were thus able partially to overcome the difficulties incident to the beginning of their art. They acquired by the rude attempts of their earlier activity the faculty which they exercised with unabated natural force till the end of their lives. In their prolonged career of intellectual energy they remind us

of some of the early philosophers and travellers of Greece. The work begun by them was carried on by younger contemporaries and successors, that of Plautus by Cecilius Statius and others, the tragedy of Ennius by his kinsman, Pacuvius, and, in the following generation, by Accius. The impulse given to oratory by Cato, Sulpicius Gallus, and others, and along with it the development of prose composition, went on with increased momentum till the age of Cicero. But the interval between the death of Ennius (169) and the beginning of Cicero's career, while one of progressive advance in the apprecia- tion of literary form and style, was much less distinguished by original force than the time immediately before and after the end of the Second Punic War. The one complete survival of the generation after the death of Ennius, the comedy of Terence (185-159), exemplifies the gain in literary accomplishment and the loss in literary freedom. Terence has nothing Roman or Italian except his pure and idiomatic Latinity. His relation to the Greek authors whom he copied is that of a fine engraver to the great painters of another age and time. The Athenian elegance of Terence affords the strongest contrast to the Italian rude- ness of Cato's De Re Rustica. By looking at them together we understand how much the comedy of Terence was able to do to refine and humanize the manners of Rome, but at the same time what a solvent it was of the discipline and ideas of the old republic. What makes Terence an

important witness of the culture of his time is that he wrote from the centre of the Scipionic circle, in which what was most humane and liberal in Roman statesman- ship was combined with the appreciation of what was most vital in the Greek thought and literature of the time. Cicero tells us that the peculiar glory of that age was the purity of its Latinity; and it is natural to ascribe to the members of that aristocracy of birth and culture the senti- ment ascribed to Ceesar a century later, that to maintain the purity of the Latin tongue was due to the sense both of personal and of national dignity. The comedies of Ter- ence may therefore be held to give some indication of the tastes of Scipio, Leelius, and their friends in their youth. The influence of Panzetius and Polybius was more adapted to their maturity, when they led the state in war, states- manship, and oratory, and when the humaner teaching of Stoicism began to enlarge the synipathies of Roman jurists. But in the last years during which this circle

kept together a new spirit appeared in Roman politics and a new power in Roman literature,—the revolutionary spirit evoked by the Gracchi in opposition to the long-continued ascendency of the senate, and the new power of Roman satire, which was exercised impartially and unsparingly against both the ‘ excesses of the revolutionary spirit and the arrogance and

incompetence of the extreme party among the nobles.

Roman satire, though in form a legitimate development of the indigenous dramatic satura through the written ‘ satura of Ennius and Pacuvius, is really a birth of this

f

time, and its author was the youngest of those admitted into the mtimacy of the Scipionic circle, C. Lucilius of Lucilius. Aurunca (166 71-102). Among the writers before the age of Cicero he alone deserves to be named with Neevius, Plautus, Ennius, and Cato as a great originative force in literature. For about thirty years the production of the satires of Lucilius, in which the politics, morals, society, and letters of the time were criticized with the utmost freedom and pungency, and his own personality was brought immediately and familiarly before his contemporaries, was much the most important event in Roman literature. The years that intervened between his death and the beginning of the Ciceronian age are singularly barren in works of original value.

The general results of the last fifty years of the first General period, from c. 130 to c. 80, may be thus summed up. In rh poetry we have the satires of Lucilius, the tragedies of Accius a and of a few successors among the Roman aristocracy, who thus exemplified the affinity of the Roman stage to Roman oratory; the “comeedia togata” of Afranius, in which : comedy, while assuming a Roman dress, did not assume

the virtue of a Roman matron; various annalistic poems

intended to serve as continuations of the great poem of

Ennius ; minor poems of an epigrammatic and erotic char-

acter, unimportant anticipations of the Alexandrian tend-

ency operative in the following period ; works of criticism

in trochaic tetrameters by Porcius Licinus and others,

forming part of the critical and grammatical movement |

which almost from the first accompanied the creative move-

ment in Roman literature, and which may be regarded '

as rude precursors of the didactic epistles that Horace |

devoted to literary criticism. i. ; The only extant prose work which may be assigned to

the end of this period is the treatise on rhetoric known by –

the title Ad Herennium, a work indicative of the attention

bestowed on prose style and rhetorical studies during' the

last century of the republic, and which may be regarded

as a precursor of the oratorical treatises of Cicero in the

following generation and of the work of Quintilian in the

first century of the empire. But the great literary pro-

1 The reasons for rejecting the date usually assigned to his birth (148) have been given under the heading Lucinius.

ES

Oratory.

History.

Sum- mary of the period.

Rom AN LITERATURE

duct of this period was oratory, developed indeed with the aid of these rhetorical studies, but itself the immediate outcome of the imperial interests, the legal conflicts, and the political passions of that time of agitation. The speakers and writers of a later age looked back on Scipio and Lelius, the Gracchi and their contemporaries, L. Crassus and M. Antonius, as masters of their art. We can only judge of what they were by the fame of their speeches and a few unimportant fragments. But as we infer from the artistic excellence of the Homeric poems that many poets of power and genius, whose names were soon forgotten, preceded the great master; as we know that the art of Shakespeare did not come without due preparation into the world ; so from the mature perfection of the art of Cicero we may, in a measure, judge of the power and accomplishment of the orators who came before him, from whom he professes to have learned much, and whom he regarded with generous admiration.

In history, regarded as a great branch of prose literature, it is not probable that much was accomplished, although, with the advance of oratory and grammatical studies, there must have been not only greater fluency of composi- tion but the beginning of a richer and more ornate style. Yet Cicero, so candid and indulgent in his estimate of early Roman poetry and oratory, denies to Rome the existence, before his own time, of any adequate historical literature. Nevertheless it was by the work of a nuinber of Roman chroniclers during this period that the materials of early Roman history were systematized, and the record of the state, as it was finally given to the world in the artistic work of Livy, was extracted from the early annals, state documents, and private memorials, combined into a coherent unity, and supplemented by invention and re- flexion. There were also special works on Roman anti- quities and contemporary memoirs, which formed the sources of future historians.

Although the artistic product of the first period of Roman literature which has reached us in a complete shape is limited to the comedies of Plautus and Terence, the influence of the lost literature in determining the spirit, form, and style of the eras of more perfect accom- plishment which followed is unmistakable. While humour and vivacity, which were not surpassed in the more ad- vanced stages of literature, had characterized the earlier, and an urbanity of tone, with which Horace by frequent imitation acknowledges his sympathy, characterizes the later development of comedy, the tendency of serious literature had been in the main practical, ethical, com- memorative, and satirical. The higher poetical imagina- tion had appeared only in Ennius, and had been called forth in him by sympathy with the grandeur of the national life and the great personal qualities of its representative men, Some of the chief motives of the later poetry, such as the love of nature and the pleasures and sorrows of private life, had as yet found scarcely any expression in Roman literature. The fittest metrical vehicle for epic, didactic, and satiric poetry had been discovered, but its movement was as yet rude and inharmonious. The idiom

_ of ordinary life and social intercourse and the more fervid

and elevated diction of oratorical prose had made great progress, but the language of imagination and poetical feeling was, if vivid and impressive in isolated expressions, still incapable of being wrought into consecutive passages of artistic composition. Although the impulse which awoke the literary energy of Rome had come from the semi-Greeks of the south of Italy, the character of the literature was in the main Roman and Latin; and to this may be attributed the preponderance of the prosaic over the poetical element in it. The Sabellian races of central and eastern Italy and the Italo-Celtic and Venetian races

of the north, in whom the poetic susceptibility of Italy was most manifest two generations later, were not, until after the Social War, sufficiently in sympathy with Rome, and were probably not as yet sufficiently educated to induce them to contribute their share to the national literature. Hence the end of the Social War, and of the Civil War which arose out of it, is

most clearly a deter- mining factor in Roman literature, and may most appro- priately be taken as marking the end of one period and the beginning of another.

Second Period: from 80 to 42 B.c.

The last age of the republic coincides with the first half of the Golden Age of Roman literature. It is generally known as the Ciceronian age from the name of its greatest literary representative, whose activity as a speaker and writer was unremitting during nearly the whole period. It is the age of purest excellence in prose, and of a new birth of poetry, characterized rather by great original force and artistic promise than by perfect accomplishment, The five chief representatives of this age who still hold their rank among the great classical writers are Cicero, Cesar, Sallust, Lucretius, and Catullus. The works of other prose writers, Varro and Cornelius Nepos, have been partially preserved ; but these writers have no claim to rank with those already mentioned as creators and masters of literary style. Although literature had not as yet become, as it did in the age of Martial, and to a certain extent in the age represented in the Epistles of Horace, a trade or pro- fession, an educated reading public already existed, and books and intellectual intercourse filled a large part of the leisure of men actively engaged in affairs. Even oratory was intended quite as much for readers as for the audiences to which it was immediately addressed ; and some of the greatest speeches which have come down from that great age of orators were never delivered at all, but were pub- lished as manifestoes after the event with the view of in- fluencing educated opinion, and as works of art with the view of giving pleasure to educated taste.

Thus the speeches of Cicero (106-43), more certainly than Cicero.

any modern speeches, belong to the domain of literature quite as much as to that of forensic or political oratory. And, although Demosthenes is a master of style unrivalled even by Cicero, the literary interest of most of Cicero's speeches is greater than that of the great mass of Greek oratory, — a result of what from a forensic point of view would now be regarded as a serious defect. Thus it is with justice urged that the greater part of the Defence of Archias was irrelevant to the issue and would not have

been listened to by a Greek court of justice or a modern jury. But it was fortunate for the interests of literature that a court of educated Romans could be influenced by the considerations there submitted to them. In this way a question of the most temporary interest, concerning an individual of no particular eminence or importance, has produced one of the most impressive vindications of literature ever spoken or written. Oratory at Rome assumed a new type from being cultivated as an art which endeavoured to produce persuasion not so much by intellectual conviction as by appeal to those general human sympathies which are the subject-matter with which literature has to deal. In oratory, as in every other intellectual province, the Greeks had a truer sense of the limits and conditions of their art. But command over form is only one element in the making of an orator or poet. The largeness and dignity of the matter with which he has to deal is at least as important. The Roman oratory of the law courts had to deal not with petty questions of disputed property, of fraud, or violence, but with great imperial questions, with matters affecting the wellbeing of large provinces and the honour and safety

of the republic; and no man ever lived who, by the in- tensity of his patriotic and imperial feeling, by his prac- tical experience of great affairs, and by the largeness of his

human sympathies, was better fitted than Cicero to be the

representative of the type of oratory demanded by the

condition of the later republic. He elevates nearly every subject with which he deals, in those speeches at least which he thought worthy of preservation, by connecting it with great political or imperial issues. But with the

patriotic motive of his speeches there is generally com-

bined a great moral motive. Whatever were the weak- nesses and faults of his personal character, no man of antiquity had higher ethical aspirations. Nowhere is the Roman ideal of character humanized by

Greek studies presented with more impressiveness than in the speeches of Cicero. In no writer ancient or modern do we find a greater power of moral indignation. And, while he inveighed against the enormities of the man whom he accused with the grave rebuke of a censor as well as the passion of a personal enemy, no advocate could feel or awaken in others a keener sympathy with the fortunes and the character of the man whom he was defending.

To his great artistic accomplishment, perfected by prac- tice and elaborate study, to the power of his patriotic, his moral, and personal sympathies, and his passionate emo- tional nature, must be added his vivid imagination and the rich and copious stream of his language, in which he had no rival among Roman writers or speakers.! He realizes with the imagination of a great dramatist the personages of his story, their feelings and motives, and the minutest details of their action. It has been said that Roman poetry has produced few, if any, great types of character. But the Verres, Catiline, Antony of Cicero are living and permanent types. The story told in the Pro Cluentio may be true or false, but the picture of provincial crime which it presents is vividly dramatic.

Had we only known Cicero in his speeches we should have ranked him with Demosthenes as one who had realized the highest literary ideal, and thereby secured immortality to an art the effect of which is not often perpetuated. We should think of lim also as the creator and master of Latin style,—the writer by whom the amplest, most passionate, and most living powers of the language had been called forth and combined into a great and orderly literary organ, We know him, moreover, not only as a great orator but as a just and appreciative critic of oratory. But to his ser- vices to Roman oratory we have to add his services not indeed to philosophy but to the literature of philosophy, and his application to the exposition of his doctrines of the calmer and more equable resources of the language. If not a philosopher he is an admirable interpreter of those branches of philosophy which are fitted for practical ap- plication, and he presents us with the results of Greek reflexion vivified by his own human sympathies and his large experience of men. In giving a model of the style in which human interest can best be imparted to abstract discussions, he has used his great oratorical gift and art to persuade the world to accept

the most hopeful opinions on human destiny and the principles of conduct most conducive to elevation and integrity of character.

_ The Letters of Cicero are the best either in his own or in any other language. They are thoroughly natural, — "colloquia absentium amicorum," to use his own phrase. In nearly all other published correspondence there is some medium which interrupts the natural outlet of the man, something of literary mannerism, natural reserve, academic elaborateness, and after-thought. Cicero's letters to Atticus and to the friends with whom he was completely at his

a "Qui non illustravit modo sed etiam genuit in hac urbe dicendi copiam" (Cic., Brut., 73).

R@MAN LCIiYTneeraTvuat

ease are the most sincere and immediate expression of the thought and feeling of the moment. They let us into the secret of his most serious thoughts and cares, and they give a natural outlet to lis vivacity of observation, his wit and humour, his kindliness of nature. It shows how flexible an instrument Latin prose had become in his hand, when it could in accordance with the conditions of perfect literary taste do justice at once to the ample and vehement volume of his oratory, to the calmer and more rhythmical movement of his philosophical meditation, and to the natural interchange of thought and feeling in the every- day intercourse of life.

Among the many rival orators of the age the most eminent were Hortensius and Cesar. The former, like other members of the aristocracy, such as Memmius and Torquatus, and like Q. Catulus in the preceding generation, was a kind of dilettante poet and a precursor of the poetry ~ of pleasure, which attained such prominence in the elegiac poets of the Augustan age. Of Julius Cesar (100-44) as an Cesar, orator we can judge only by his reputation and by the testi- mony of his great rival and adversary Cicero; but we are able to appreciate the special praise of perfect taste in the use of language attributed to him.? In his Commentaries, by laying aside the ornaments of oratory,? he created the most admirable style of prose narrativé, the style which presents

interesting events in their sequence of time and dependence on the will of the actor, rapidly and vividly, with scarcely any colouring of personal or moral feeling, any oratorical passion, any pictorial illustration. While he shows the persuasive art of an orator by presenting the subjugation of Gaul and his own action in the Civil War in the light most favourable to his claim to rule the Roman world, he is entirely free from the Roman fashion of self-laudation or disparagement of an adversary. Yet the character of the man is stamped on every line that he writes, and reveals itself especially in a perfect simplicity of style, the result of the clearest intelligence and the strongest sense of personal dignity. He avoids not only every unusual but every superfluous word ; and, although no writing can be more free from rhetorical colouring, yet there may from time to time be detected a glow of sympathy, like the glow of generous passion in Thucydides, the more effective from the reserve with which it betrays itself whenever he is called on to record any act of personal heroism or of devotion to military duty.

In the simplicity of his style, the directness of his Sallust. narrative, the entire absence of any didactic tendency, Czesar presents a niarked contrast to another prose writer of that age,—the historian Sallust (87-34). Like Varro, he survived Cicero by some years, but the tone and spirit in which his works are written assign him to the republican era. He was the first of the purely artistic historians, as distinct from the annalists and the writers of personal memoirs. He imitated the Greek historians in taking par- ticular actions—the Jugurthan War and the Catilinarian Conspiracy—as the subjects of artistic treatment. He wrote also a continuous work, /istorix, treating of the events of the twelve years following the death of Sulla, of which only fragments are preserved. His two extant works are more valuable as artistic studies of the rival parties in the state and of personal character than as trustworthy narratives of facts. His style aims at effect- iveness by pregnant expression, sententiousness, archaism.

He produces the impression of caring more for the manner of saying a thing than for its truth. Yet he has great value as a painter of historical portraits, some of them those of his contemporaries, and as an author who had 2 "Latine loqui elegantissime."

3 “Nudi enim sunt, recti et venusti, omni ornatu orationis tanquam veste detracto” (Cicero).

Imere- practical affairs. The conditions which enabled the poetic | Alceeus and Sappho in the early days of Greek poetry. tus, genius of Italy to come to maturity in the person of | No poet has surpassed him in the power of vitally repro- . Lucretius (99-55) were entire seclusion from public life | ducing the pleasure and pain of the passing hour, not | and absorption in the ideal pleasures of contemplation and | recalled by idealizing reflexion as in Horace, nor overlaid artistic production. He produces the impression of aman | with mythological ornament as in Propertius, but in all so possessed by intellectual and imaginative enthusiasm as | the keenness of immediate impression. He also introduced to have separated himself from the active interests and | into Roman literature that personal as distinct from poli- social pleasures of his time, and to have passed that period | tical or social satire which appears later in the Hpodes of of his life which was given to literary production in study- | Horace and the Zpigrams of Martial. The sting in ing the laws and watching the spectacle of nature, and in | Catullus, at least in his iambics and phalecians, is more the active exercise of imaginative thought on the problems | concentrated than in the later writers. He anticipated of human life. This isolation from the familiar ways of | Ovid in recalling the stories of Greek mythology into a his contemporaries, while it was, according to tradition and | second poetical life. His greatest contribution to poetic ‘ the internal evidence of his poem, destructive to his spirit’s | art consisted in the perfection which he attained in the health, resulted in a work of genius, unique in character, | phalecian, the pure iambic, and the scazon metres, and in which was a second birth of imaginative poetry in Italy, | the ease and grace with which he used the language of and still stands forth as the greatest philosophical poem | familiar intercourse, as distinct from that of the creative in any language. In the form of his poem he followed a | imagination, of the “rostra,” and of the schools, to give at Greek original ; and the stuff out of which the texture of | once a lifelike and an artistic expression to his feelings. | his philosophical argument is framed was derived from | He has the interest of being the last poet of the free re- Greek science ; but all that is of deep human and poetical | public. In his life and in his art he was the

precursor of meaning in the poem is his own. His sense of the grace | those poets who used their genius as the interpreter and and beauty of language had indeed been educated by | minister of pleasure ; but he rises above them in the spirit the sympathetic study of Homer and Euripides ; but the | of personal independence, in his affection for his friends, philosophical guidance which he followed and his reverence | in his keen enjoyment of natural and simple pleasures, and for his guide were rather a hindrance than an aid to his | in his power of giving vital expression to these feelings. art, and were the cause of his presenting the pure ore of F , his own genius overlaid with great masses of alien alloy. Third Period: Augustan Age, 42 B.c. to 17 A.D. While we recognize in the De Rerum Natura some of the The poetic impulse and culture communicated to Roman most powerful poetry in any language and feel that few | literature in the last years of the republic passed on with- poets have penetrated with such passionate sincerity and | out any break of continuity into the literature of the . courage into the secret of nature and some of the deeper | succeeding age. One or two of the circle of Catullus sur- . truths of human life, we must acknowledge that, as com- | vived into that age ; but an entirely new spirit came over pared with the great didactic poem of Virgil, it is crude | the literature of the new period, and it is by new men, and unformed in artistic design, and often rough and un- | educated indeed under the same literary influences, but equal in artistic execution. Yet, apart altogether from | living in an altered world and belonging originally to a its independent value, by his speculative power and | different order in the state, that the new spirit was ex- enthusiasm, by his revelation of the life and spectacle of | pressed. The literature of the later republic reflects the Influence | nature, by the fresh creativeness of his diction and the | sympathies and prejudices of an aristocratic class, sharing of i elevated movement of his rhythm, he exercised a more | in the conduct of national affairs and living on terms of Paitin: powerful influence than any other on the art of his more equality with one another ; that of the Augustan age, both tions, | perfect successors. in its early serious enthusiasm and in the licence and levity | While the imaginative and emotional side of Roman of its later development, represents the hopes and aspira- / poetry was so powerfully represented by Lucretius, atten- tions with which the new monarchy was ushered into the tion was directed to its artistic side by a younger genera- world, and the pursuit of

pleasure and amusement, which tion, who moulded themselves in a great degree, though | becomes the chief interest of a class cut off from the higher Catullus. not exclusively, on Alexandrian models. Of this small | energies of practical life, and moving in the refining and

been a political partisan and had taken some part in making history before undertaking to write it; and he gives us, from the popular side, the views of a contem- porary on the politics of the time.

In following the development of Roman literature we have seen it become the prose organ of great affairs, but since the appearance of the Annals of Ennius, in whom the poetry of national life had originated, no work of great and original poetical genius had appeared. The powerful poetical force which for half a century continued to be the strongest force in literature, and which created masterpieces of art and genius, first revealed itself in the latter part of the Ciceronian age. The strength with which it burst forth seems indicative of latent sources of imaginative feeling and conception long suppressed in the Italian temperament, owing perhaps to the absorption of the mind and passion of the race in war, politics, and

group of poets, who were bound together by common tastes and friendship, one only has survived, fortunately the man of most genius among them, Valerius Catullus (841.54), He too was a new force in Roman literature.

i The reasons for accepting 84 rather than 87 as the date of his birth have been given in the article CaTULLUs.

Although of a family probably originally Roman, and although brought early in his career into intimate rela- tions with members of the great Roman fanuilies, he was a provincial by birth, and was apparently moved in his earliest youth by that fresh enthusiasm for culture which in his own and the following generation enabled Cisalpine Gaul to do so much to

enrich Roman literature. His nature, in which sensuous passion and warm affection were united, made him fall a victim to the fascinations of the famous Clodia, whom he has celebrated, under the name of Lesbia, in some of the most powerful and charming love poetry found in any language. The subjects of his best art are taken immediately from his own life,—his loves, his friendships, his travels, his animosities, personal and political, His most original contribution to the substance of Roman literature was that he first shaped into poetry the experience of his own heart, as it had been shaped by

enervating atmosphere of an imperial court. The great

inspiring influence of the new literature was the enthu-

siasm produced first by the hope and afterwards by the ful-

filment of the restoration of peace, order, national glory,

under the rule of Augustus. All that the age longed for

seemed to be embodied in a man who had both in his XX. =< QI

Virgil.

722

own person and by inheritance the natural spell which sways the imagination of the world. The sentiment of hero-worship was at all times strong in the Romans, and no one was ever the object of more sincere as well as simulated hero-worship than Augustus. It was not, how- ever, by his equals in station that the first feeling was likely to be entertained. The earliest to give expression to it was the humbly-born poet from the Cisalpine pro- vince ; but the spell was soon acknowledged by the calmer and more worldly-wise poet whose first enthusiasm had directed him into the opposite camp. The disgust aroused by the anti-national policy of Antony, and the danger to the empire which was averted by the result of the battle of Actium, with the confidence inspired by the new ruler,

combined to reconcile the great families as well as the great body of the people to the new order of things.

While the establishment of the empire produced a revival of national and imperial feeling, it suppressed all independ- ent political thought and action. Hence the two great forms of prose literature which drew their nourishment from the struggles of political life, oratory and contem- porary history, were arrested in their development. The chief interest of letter-writing had consisted in its being the medium of interchange of thought on politics, and thus, although correspondence between friends still went on as before, no collection of letters was of sufficient im- portance to be preserved. 'The main course of literature was thus for a time diverted into poetry. That poetry in its most elevated form aimed at being the organ of the new empire and of realizing the national ideals of life and character under its auspices} and in carrying out this aim it sought to recall the great memories of the past. It became also the organ of the pleasures and interests of private life, the chief motives of which were the love of nature and the passion of love. It sought also to make the art and poetry of Greece live a new artistic life. Satire, debarred from that comment on political action which had been open to Lucilius and to Catullus and Calvus under the republic, turned to social and individual life, and com- bined with the newly-developed taste for ethical analysis and reflexion introduced by Cicero, One great work had still to be done in prose—a retrospect of the past history of the state from an idealizing and romanticizing point of view. For that work the Augustan age, as the end of one great cycle of events and the beginning of another, was eminently suited, and a writer who, by his gifts of imagina- tion and sympathy, was perhaps better fitted than any other man of antiquity for the task, and who through the whole of this period lived a life of literary leisure, was found to do justice to the subject.

Although the age did not afford that free scope and stimulus to individual energy and enterprise which have been the conditions under which the most truly creative literature has flourished, no age afforded more material and social advantages for the peaceful cultivation of letters. The new influence of patronage, which in other times has chilled the genial current, of literature, became, in the person of Mecenas, the medium

through which literature and the imperial policy were brought into union. Poetry thus acquired the tone of the world, kept in close connexion with the chief source of national life, while it was culti- vated to the highest pitch of artistic perfection under the most favourable conditions of leisure and freedom from the distractions and anxieties of life.

The earliest in the order of time of the poets who adorn this age—Virgil (70-19)—is also the greatest in genius, the most richly cultivated, and the most perfect in art. He is the idealizing poet of the hopes and aspirations and of the purer and happier life of which the age seemed to contain the promise. He elevates the present by associat-

ing it with the past and future of the world, and sancti- fies it by seeing in it the fulfilment of a divine purpose. Poetry is no longer, as in the previous generation, in dis- cord with the dominant tendency of affairs, but in harmony with all that was restorative of the peace, order, and happiness of the world. Virgil is the true representative poet of Rome and Italy, of national glory and of the beauty of nature, the artist in whom all the efforts of the past were made perfect, and the unapproachable standard of excellence to future times. While more richly endowed with sensibility to all native influences, he was more deeply imbued than any of his contemporaries with the poetry, the thought, and the learning of Greece. It was by lean- ing on these supports that his genius felt its way and expanded into higher and wider development. His art begins in imitation of the cadences, the diction, and the pastoral fancies of Theocritus ; but even in these imitative poems of his youth we see that he is perfect master of his materials. The Latin hexameter, which in Ennius and Lucretius was the organ of the more dignified and majestic emotions, became in his hands the most perfect measure in which the softer and more luxurious sentiment of nature has been expressed ; and the Latin language was enriched with its sweetest and most musical variations. The senti- ment of Italian scenery and the love which the Italian peasant has for the familiar sights and sounds of his home found a voice which never can pass away; and the joy and pain of the passion of love were revealed in these poems in a way as yet unapprehended by the world. In this the

earliest and least serious effort of Virgil's genius there is no immaturity of art, and in poems outwardly most remote from the current of active life there is the recogni- tion of the master-force by which that current was destined to be impelled and controlled.

In his next poem, the Georgics, we are struck by the great advance in the originality and self-dependence of the artist, in the mature perfection of his workmanship, in the deepening and strengthening of all his sympathies and convictions. His genius still works under forms prescribed by Greek art, and under the disadvantage of having a practical and utilitarian aim imposed on it. But he has even in form so far surpassed his originals that he alone has gained for the pure didactic poem a place among the highest forms of serious poetry, while he has so transmuted his material that, without violation of truth, he has made the whole poem alive with poetic feeling. The homeliest details of the farmer's work are transfigured through the magical potency of the poet's love of nature in her imme- diate charm of sight and sound and in her all-pervading presence, especially as that charm and presence reveal themselves in the land and climate of Italy ; through his

religious feeling and his pious sympathy with the sanc-

tities of human affection ; through his patriotic sympathy with the national greatness; and through the rich allu- siveness of his art to everything in poetry and legend which can illustrate and glorify his theme.

In the Pastoral Poems and Georgics Virgil is the idealiz- ing poet of the beauty and of the old simple and hardy life of Italy, as the imagination could conceive of it in an altered world. In the #neid he is the idealizing poet of national glory, especially as that glory was manifested in the person of Augustus. The epic of national life, vividly conceived but rudely executed by Ennius, was perfected in the years that followed the decisive victory at Actium. To do justice to his idea Virgil enters into rivalry with a greater poet than those whom he had equalled or sur- passed in his previous works. And, though he cannot unroll before us the page of heroic action with the power and majesty of Homer, yet by the sympathy with which he realizes the idea of Rome, and by the power with which

Horace.

ROWAN LITE RAT U'R-E

he has used the details of tradition, of local scenes, of reli- gious usage, to embody it, he has built up in the form of an epic poem the most enduring and the most artistically constructed monument of national grandeur,

The second great poet of the time—Horace (65-8)—holds a lower place in the reverence of the world, but is perhaps as much loved.and is even more largely and familiarly known. He is both the realist and the idealist of his age. If we want to know the actual lives, manners, and ways of thinking of the Romans of the generation succeeding the overthrow of the republic it is in the Satires and par- tially in the Epistles of Horace that we shall find them. If we ask what there was in the life of that time of more exquisite or more piquant charm, of more elevated enthu- siasm, of graver experience, to stir the fancy and move the mood of imaginative reflexion, it is in the lyrical poems of Horace that we shall find the most varied and trustworthy answer. He was prepared for his double task by the experience of life and his strong hold on the actual world, and by drinking long and deeply of the purer and more remote sources of Greek inspiration.

His literary activity extends over about thirty years and naturally divides itself into three periods, each marked by a distinct character. The first—extending from about 40 to 29—is that of the composition of the Zpodes and Satires. In the former he imitates the Greek poet Archilochus, but takes his subjects from the men, women, and incidents of the day. They are the expression of the least happy part of his career and the least estimable side of his nature. His humorous observation of life and the more serious grain in his character found more congenial occupation in perfecting the national work of Lucilius than in introduc- ing "the Parian iambics to Latium." Personality is the essence of his £podes ; in the Satires it is used merely as illustrative of general tendencies. In the Satires we find realistic pictures of social life, and the conduct and opin- ions of the world submitted to the standard of good feeling and common sense. The style of the Hodes is pointed and epigrammatic, that of the Satires natural and familiar. The hexameter no longer, as in Lucilius,

moves awkwardly as if in fetters, but, like the language of Terence, of Catullus in his lighter pieces, of Cicero in his letters to Atticus, adapts itself to the everyday intercourse of life. The next period is the meridian of his genius, the time of his greatest lyrical inspiration, which he himself asso- ciates with the peace and leisure secured to him by his Sabine farm, The spirit of the child who had lost himself on Monte Voltore seemed to come back to him in his lonely wanderings among the Sabine hills. The life of pleasure which he had lived in his youth comes back to him, not as it was in its actual distractions and disappointments, but in the idealizing light of meditative retrospect, He had not only become reconciled to the new order of things, but was moved by his intimate friendship with Mecenas to aid in raising the world to sympathy with the imperial rule through the medium of his lyrical inspiration, as Virgil had through the glory of his epic art. With the comple- tion of the three books of Odes he cast aside for a time the office of the "vates," and resumed that of the critical spectator of human life, but in the spirit of a moralist rather than a satirist. He feels the increasing languor of the time as well as the languor of advancing years, and seeks to encourage younger men to take up the réle of lyrical poetry, while he devotes himself to the contempla- tion of the true art of living. Self-culture rather than the fulfilment of public or social duty, as in the moral teaching of Cicero, is the aim of his teaching ; and in this we recognize the influence of the empire in throwing the individual back on himself. As Cicero tones down his oratory in his moral treatises, so Horace tones down the

| or of dramatic art marked out for them by Horace. | latest form of poetry adopted from Greece and destined to

723

fervour of his lyrical utterances in his Epistles, and thus produces a style combining the ease of the best epistolary style with the grace and concentration of poetry,—the style, as it has been called, of 'idealized common sense," that of the "urbanus" and cultivated man of the world who is also in his hours of inspiration a genuine poet. In the last decennium of his life he resumed for a time, under pressure of the imperial command, his lyrical function, and produced some of the most

exquisite and mature products of his art, But his chief activity is devoted to criticism. He first vindicates the claims of his own age to literary pre-eminence, and then seeks to stimulate the younger writers of the day to what he regarded as the manlier forms of poetry, and especially to the tragic drama, which seemed for a short time to give promise of an artistic revival, It seems strange that, although he must have known the writings of Propertius and the earlier writings of Ovid, he has no word of recognition for them. And, though he writes to Tibullus with friendly regard, he seems to value him as a student of philosophy more than as a poet, and says nothing to indicate that he believed his work would be more enduring than that of Titius or Julius Florus or Julus Antonius,

But the poetry of the latter half of the Augustan age destined to survive did not follow the lines either of lyrical The

gain and permanently to hold the ear of the world was tlic elegy. From the time of Mimnermus this form seems to have presented itself as the most natural vehicle for the poetry of pleasure in an age of luxury, refinement, and incipient decay. Its facile flow and rhythm seem to adapt it to the expression and illustration of personal feeling. It goes to the mind of the reader through a medium of sentiment rather than of continuous thought or imaginative illustration. The greatest masters of this kind of poetry are the elegiac poets of the Augustan age,—Tibullus, Pro-

pertius, and Ovid. Of these Tibullus (d. 19) is the most Tibullus.

refined and tender. As the poet of love he gives utterance to the pensive melancholy rather than to the pleasures associated with it. In his sympathy with the life and beliefs of the country people he shows an affinity both to the idyllic spirit and to the piety of Virgil. There is something, too, in his fastidious refinement and in his shrinking from the rough contact of life that reminds us of the English poet Gray.

A poet of more strength and more powerful imagination, Proper- but of less refinement in his life and less exquisite taste tius.

in his art, is Propertius (c. 50-c. 15), "the Roman Calli- machus." His youth was a more stormy one than that of Tibullus, and was passed, not

like his, among the ‘ healthy woods” of his country estate, but amid all the licence of the capital. His passion for Cynthia, the theme of his most finished poetry, is second only in interest to that of Catullus for Lesbia ; and Cynthia in her fascination and caprices seems a more real and intelligible personage than the idealized object first of the idolatry and afterwards of the malediction of Catullus. Propertius is a less accom- plished artist and a less equably pleasing writer than either Tibullus or Ovid, but he shows more power of dealing gravely with a great or tragic situation than either of them, and his diction and rhythm give frequent proof of a concentrated force of conception and a corresponding move- ment of imaginative feeling which remind us of Lucretius.

The most facile and brilliant of the elegiac poets and the Ovid.

least serious in tone and spirit is Ovid (43 B.c.~~17 a.p.), the latest in order of time. As an amatory poet he is the poet of pleasure and intrigue rather than of tender senti~~ ment or absorbing passion. Though he treats his subject in relation to himself with more levity and irony than real

Livy.

724 ROMAN’ DIYERATUR SE

feeling, yet he alone among the elegiac poets is able to embody it in dramatic form, and by his vivid gifts of fancy to create a literature of romantic passion and adventure adapted to amuse and fascinate the idle and luxurious society of which the elder Julia was the centre. The power of continuous narrative is best seen in the Metamorphoses, written in hexameters, to which he has imparted a rapidity and fluidity of movement more suited to romantic and pic- turesque narrative than the weighty self- restrained verse of Virgil. In his Yast? he treats a subject of national interest; it is not, however, through the strength of Roman sentiment but through the power of vividly conceiving and narrating stories of strong human interest that the poem lives. In his latest works—the Trista and Lx Ponto—he imparts the interest of personal confessions to the record of a unique experience. Latin poetry is more rich in the expression of personal feeling than of dramatic imagination. In Ovid we have both. We know him in the intense liveliness of his feeling and the human weak- ness of

his nature more intimately than any other writer of antiquity, except perhaps Cicero. As Virgil marks the point of maturest excellence in poetic diction and rhythm, Ovid marks that of the greatest facility.

The Augustan age was one of those great eras in the world, like the era succeeding the Persian War in Greece, the Elizabethan age in England, and the beginning of the present century in Europe, in which what seems a new spring of national and individual life calls out an idealizing retrospect of the past. As the present seems full of new life, the past seems rich in glory and the future in hope. The past of Rome had always a peculiar fascination for Roman writers. Virgil in a supreme degree, and Horace, Propertius, and Ovid in a less degree, had expressed in their poetry the romance of the past. But it was in the great historical work of Livy (59 B.c.~~17 a.p.) that the record of the national life, coloured by idealizing retro~~ spect, received its most systematic exposition. The con- ception of his work must have nearly coincided in point of time with the impulses in which the Zneid and the national Odes of Horace had their origin. Its execution was the work of a life prolonged through the languor and dissolution following so soon upon the promise of the new era, during which time the past became glorified by con- trast with the disheartening aspect of the present. The value of the work consists not in any power of critical in- vestigation or weighing of historical evidence but in the intense sympathy of the writer with the national ideal, and the vivid imagination with which under the influence of this sympathy he gives life to the events and personages, the wars and political struggles, of times remote from his own. Although he has no accurate conception of the con- stitutional history of the state, yet nowhere else in ancient history do we find the patrician and plebeian forces in a state by which that history is worked out so vividly and dramatically embodied. He makes us feel more than any one the majesty of the Roman state, of its great magis- tracies, and of the august council by which its policy was guided, And, while he makes the words "senatus popu- lusque Romanus " full of significance for all times, no one realizes with more enthusiasm all that is implied in the words "imperium Romanum," and the great military quali- ties of head and heart by which that empire was acquired and maintained. While the general conception of his work 1s thus animated by national enthusiasm, the details are filled up with all the resources of a vivid

imagination and of literary art. The vast scale on which the work was conceived and the thoroughness of artistic execution with which the details are finished are characteristically Roman. The prose style of Rome, as a vehicle for the continuous narration of events coloured by a rich and picturesque

imagination and vivified by dignified emotion, attained its perfection in him.

Fourth Period: from 17 to about 130 a.p.

For more than a century after the death of Augustus Charac- Roman literature continues to flow in the old channels, teristies Rome continues the centre of the literary movement. The oe characteristics of the great writers are essentially national, 'an a not provincial nor cosmopolitan. In prose the old forms —oratory, history, the epistle, treatises or dialogues on ethical and literary questions—continue to be cultivated.

Scientific and practical subjects, such as natural history, architecture, medicine, agriculture, are treated in more elaborate literary style. The old Roman satura is devel- oped into something like the modern prose novel. In the various provinces of poetry, while there is little novelty or inspiration, there is abundance of industry and ambitious effort. The national love of works of large compass shows itself in the production of long epic poems, both of the historic and of the imitative Alexandrian type. Out of | many others four of these have been preserved, two at least of which the world might have allowed to perish without sensible diminution to its literary wealth. The imitative and rhetorical tastes of Rome showed themselves | in the composition of exotic tragedies, as.remote in spirit and character from Greek as from Roman life, of which the only extant specimens are those attributed to the | younger Seneca. The composition of didactic, lyrical, and elegiac poetry also was the accomplishment and pastime of |

an educated dilettante class. The only extant specimens of any interest are some of the Stlvx of Statius. The only voice with which the poet of this age can express himself with force and sincerity is that of satire and satiric epi- gram. Ovid was the last of the true poets of Rome who combined

idealizing power of imagination with artistic originality. After him we find only imitative echoes of the old music created by Virgil and others, as in Statius, or powerful declamation, as in Lucan and Juvenal. There is a deterioration in the diction as well as in the music of poetry. The elaborate literary culture of the Augustan age has done something to impair the native force of the Latin idiom. The language of literature, in the most elaborate kind of prose as well as poetry, loses all ring of | popular speech. The old oratorical tastes and aptitudes find their outlet in public recitations and the practice of declamation. Forced and distorted expression, exagger- ated emphasis, point and antithesis, an affected prettiness, "melliti verborum globuli," were studied with the view of gaining the applause of audiences who thronged the lecture and recitation rooms in search of temporary excite- ment. Education was more widely diffused, but was less thorough, less leisurely in its method, less than before de- rived from the purer sources of culture. The precocious immaturity of Lucan's career affords a marked contrast to | the long preparation of Virgil and Horace for their high office. Although there are some works of the Silver Age of considerable and one at least of supreme interest, from the insight they afford into the experience of a century of organized despotism and its effect on the spiritual life of the ancient world, it cannot be doubted that the steady literary decline which characterized the last centuries of paganism begins with the death of Ovid and Livy. If the world had not altogether ceased to produce men of genius, the conditions under which their genius could unfold itself were no longer the same. The influences which had inspired the republican and Augustan literature were the artistic impulse derived from a familiarity with the great works of Greek genius, becoming more intimate with every new generation, the spell of Rome over the imagination of the kindred Italian races, the charm of Italy, and the vivid

sensibility of the Italian temperament. These influences were certainly much less operative in the first century of the empire. The imitative impulse, which had much of the character of a creative impulse, and had resulted in the appropriation of the forms of poetry suited to the Roman and Italian character and of the metres suited to the genius of the Latin

language, no longer stimulated to artistic effort. The great sources of Greek poetry were no longer regarded, as they were by Lucretius and Virgil, as "integri" and "sancti fontes," and approached in a spirit at once of daring adventure and reverential enthusi- asm.! We have the testimony of two men of the shrewdest common sense and the most masculine understanding— Martial and Juvenal—to the stale and lifeless character of the art of the Silver Age, which sought to reproduce in the form of epics, tragedies, and elegies the bright fancies of the Greek mythology.

The idea of Rome, owing to the antagonism between the policy of the Government and the sympathies of the class by which literature was favoured and cultivated, could no longer be an inspiring motive, as it had been in the literature of the republic and of the Augustan age. The spirit of Rome appears only as animating the protest of Lucan, the satire of Persius and Juvenal, the sombre picture which Tacitus paints of the annals of the empire, Oratory is no longer an independent voice appealing to sentiments of Roman dignity, but the weapon of the "delatores," wielded for their own advancement and the destruction of that class which, even in their degeneracy, retained most sympathy with the national traditions, Roman history was no longer a record of national glory, stimulating the patriotism and flattering the pride of all toman citizens, but a personal eulogy or a personal invec- tive, according as servility to a present or hatred of a recent ruler was the motive which animated it.

The charm of Italian scenes still remained the same, but the fresh and inspiring feeling of nature as a great power in the world, a great restorative influence on human life, gave place to the mere sensuous gratification derived from the luxurious and artificial beauty of the country villa. The idealizing poetry of passion, which found a genuine voice in Catullus and the elegiac poets, could not prolong itself through the exhausting licence of successive generations. The vigorous vitality which gives interest to the personality of Catullus, Propertius, and Ovid no longer characterizes their successors. The pathos of natural affection is occasionally recognized in Statius and more rarely in Martial, but it has not the depth of tenderness found in Lucretius and Virgil. Human life is altogether shallower, has the same capacity for neither joy nor sorrow.

The wealth and luxury of succeeding generations, the monotonous routine of life, the separation of the educated class from the higher work of the world, have produced their enervating and paralysing effect on the mainsprings of poetic and imaginative feeling.

New elements, however, appear in the literature of this period. As the result of the severance from the active interests of life, a new interest is awakened in the inner life of the individual. The extreme immorality of the age not only affords abundant material to the satirist but deepens the consciousness of moral evil in purer and more thoughtful minds. To these causes we attribute the patho- logical observation of Seneca and Tacitus, the new sense of purity in Persius called out by contrast with the im- purity around him, the glowing if somewhat sensational exaggeration of Juvenal, the vivid characterization of Martial. Thc literature of no time presents so powerfully

1 Contrast with the '"juvat imtegros accedere fontes" and the

"sanctos ausus recludere fontes" of the older poets the first line of Persius's prologue "nec fonte labra prolui caballino."

the contrast between moral good and evil. In this respect it is truly representative of the life of the age. Another new element is the influence of a new race. In the two preceding periods the rapid diffusion of literary culture following the Social War and the first Civil War was seen to awaken into new life the elements of original genius in Italy and Cisalpine Gaul. In the first century of the empire a similar result was produced by the diffusion of that culture in the Latinized districts of Spain. The fervid temperament of a fresh and vigorous race, which received the Latin discipline just as Latium had two or three centuries previously received the Greek discipline, revealed itself in the writings of the Senecas, Lucan, Quintilian, Martial, and others, who in their own time added literary distinction to the Spanish towns from which they came. This new cosmopolitan element introduced into Roman literature draws into greater prominence the characteristics of the last great

representatives of the genuine Roman and Italian spirit,—Tacitus and Juvenal.

On the whole this century shows, in form, language, and substance, the beginning of literary decay. But it is still capable of producing men of original force; it still maintains the traditions of a happier time ; it is still alive to the value of literary culture, and endeavours by minute attention to style to produce new effects. Though it was not one of the great eras in the annals of literature, yet the century which produced Martial, Juvenal, and Tacitus cannot be pronounced barren in literary originality, nor that which produced Seneca and Quintilian in culture and literary taste.

This fourth period is itself subdivided into three divi- sions :—(1) that extending from the accession of Tiberius to the death of Nero, 68,—the only important part of it being the Neronian age, 54 to 68; (2) the Flavian era, from the death of Nero to the death of Domitian, 96 ; (3) the period included in the reigns of Nerva and Trajan and part of the reign of Hadrian.

(1) For a generation after the death of Augustus no Period

new original literary force appeared. The later poetry of the Augustan age had ended in trifling dilettanteism, for the continuance of which the atmosphere of the court was no longer favourable. The class by which literature was encouraged had become both enervated and terrorized. The Fables of Phedrus, the Pierian freedman, a work of no kind of national significance and representative in its morality only of the spirit of cosmopolitan individual- ism, is the chief poetical product of the time. Velleius Paterculus and Valerius Maximus are the most important prose-writers. The traditional culture was still, howevcr, maintained, and the age was rich in grammarians and rhetoricians. The new profession of the "delator" must have given a stimulus to oratory. A high ideal of culture, literary as well as practical, was realized in Germanicus, which seems to have been transmitted to his daughter Agrippina, whose patronage of Seneca had important results in the next generation. The reign of Claudius was a time in which antiquarian learning, grammatical studies, and jurisprudence were cultivated, but no import- ant additions were made to literature. A fresh impulse was given to letters on the accession of

Nero, and this was partly due to the theatrical and artistic tastes of the young emperor. Four writers of the Neronian age still possess considerable interest,—Seneca, Lucan, Persius, and Petronius. The first three represent the spirit of their age by exhibiting the power of the Stoic philosophy as a moral, political, and religious force; the last is the most cynical exponent of the depravity of the time. Sencca (d. 65) is less than Persius a pure Stoic, and more of a moralist and pathological observer of man's inner life. He makes the commonplaces of a cosmopolitan philosophy

interesting by his abundant illustration drawn from the private and social life of his contemporaries. He has knowledge of the world, the suppleness of a courtier, Spanish vivacity, and the "ingenium amcenum " attributed to him by Tacitus, the fruit of which is sometimes seen in the "honeyed phrases" mentioned by Petronius,—pure aspirations combined with inconsistency of purpose,—the inconsistency of one who tries to make the best of two worlds, the ideal inner life and the successful real life in the atmosphere of a most corrupt court. The Pharsalia of Lucan (39-65), with Cato as its hero, is essentially a Stoical manifesto of the opposition. It is written with the force and fervour of extreme youth and with the literary ambition of a race as yet new to the discipline of intellectual culture, and is endowed with a rhetorical rather than a poetical imagination. The Satires of Persius (34-62) are the purest product of Stoicism,—a Stoicism that had found in a living contemporary, Thrasea, a more rational and practical hero than Cato. But no important writer of antiquity has less literary charm than Persius. He either would not or could not say anything simply and naturally. In avoiding the literary conceits and fopperies which he satirizes he has recourse to the most unnatural contortions of expression. Of the works of the time that which from a human point of view is perhaps the most detestable in ancient literature has the most genuine literary quality, the fragment of the prose novel of Petronius. It is most sincere in its repre- sentation, least artificial in

diction, most penetrating in its satire, most just in its criticism of art and style.

(2) A greater sobriety of tone was introduced both into life and literature with the accession of Vespasian. The time was, however, characterized rather by good sense and industry than by original genius. Under Vespasian Pliny the elder is the most important prose-writer, and Valerius Flaccus, author of the Argonautica, the most important among the writers of poetry. The reign of Domitian, although it silenced the more independent spirits of the time, Tacitus and Juvenal, witnessed more important con- tributions to Roman literature than any age since the Augustan,—among them the Institutes of Quintilian, the Pume War of Silius Italicus, the epics and the Stlvw of Statius, and the Zpigrams of Martial. Quintilian (c. 35- 95) is brought forward by Juvenal as a unique instance of a thoroughly successful man of letters, of one not be- longing by birth to the rich or official class who had risen to wealth and honours through literature. He was well adapted to his time by his good sense and sobriety of judg- ment. His criticism is just and true rather than subtle or ingenious, and thus stands the test of the judgment of after-times. The poem of Silius (25-101) is a proof of the industry and literary ambition of members of the rich official class. Of the epic poets of the Silver Age Statius (c. 45-96) shows the greatest technical skill and the richest pictorial fancy in the execution of detail ; but his epics have no true inspiring motive, and, although the recitation of the Thebaid could attract and charm an audience in the days of Juvenal, it really belongs to the class of poems so unsparingly condemned both by him and Martial. Tn the Stlve, though many of them have little root in the deeper feelings of human nature, we find occasionally more than in any poetry after the Augustan age something of the purer charm and pathos of life, But it is not in the artificial poetry of the Silve, nor in the epics and tragedies of the time, nor in the cultivated criticism of Quintilian that the age of Domitian lives for us. Tt is in the Epi- grams of Martial (c. 41-102) that we have a true image of the average sensual frivolous life of Rome at the end of the lst century, seen through a medium of wit and humour, but undistorted by the exaggeration which moral indignation and the love of effect add to the representation

of Juvenal. Martial represents his age in his LEpigrams, as Horace does his in his Satires and Odes, with more variety and incisive force in his sketches, though with much less poetic charm and serious meaning. We know the daily life, the familiar personages, the outward aspect of Rome in the age of Domitian better than at any other period of Roman history, and that knowledge we owe to Martial. Though a less estimable character than some of them, he is a better writer than any of his contemporaries because he did not withdraw into a world of literary in- terests, but lived and wrote in the central whirl of city life. He tells us the truth of his time without the wish either to protest against or to extenuate its vices.

(3) But it was under Nerva and Trajan that the greatest Period and most. truly representative works of the empire were of Nerva, written, those which at once present the most impressive 2*Jan, spectacle to the imagination and have made its meaning Hadrian, sink most deeply into the heart and conscience of the world. The Annals and Histories of Tacitus (54-119), with the supplementary Life of Agricola and the treatise On the Manners of the Germans, and the Satires of Juvenal (c. 47-130) have summed up for all after-times the moral experience of the Roman world from the accession of Tiberius to the death of Domitian, The powerful feel- ings under which they both wrote, the generous scorn and generous pathos of the historian acting on extraordinary gifts of imaginative insight and imaginative characteriza- tion, and the fierce indignation of the satirist finding its vent in exaggerating realism, have undoubtedly disturbed the completeness and exactness of the impressions which they received and have perpetuated; nevertheless their works are the last powerful voices of Rome, the last voices expressive of the freedom and manly virtue of the ancient world. In them alone among the writers of the empire the spirit of the Roman republic seems to revive. The Letters of Pliny (61-c. 115), though they do not contradict the representation of Tacitus and Juvenal regarded as an exposure of the political degradation and moral corruption of prominent individuals and classes, do much to modify the pervadingly tragic and sombre character of their re- presentation, and to show that life even in the higher circles of Roman society had still sources of pure enjoy- ment and wellbeing.

With the death of Juvenal, the most important part of whose activity falls in the reign of Trajan, Roman literature as an original and national expression of the experience, character, and sentiment of the Roman state and empire, and as one of the great literatures of the world, may be considered as closed. There still continued to be much industry and activity in gathering up the memorials of the past and in explaining and illustrating the works of genius of the ages of literary creation, A kind of archaic revival took place in the reign of Hadrian, which showed itself both in affectation of style and in a renewed interest in the older literature. The most important works of the age succeeding that of Juvenal are the Biographies of Suetonius (c. 75-160), which did much to preserve a know- ledge of both political and literary history. The Moctes Attice of Aulus Gellius, written in the latter part of the 2d century, have preserved many anecdotes, some of them of doubtful authenticity, concerning the older writers. The persistence of critical and grammatical studies and of in- terest in the literature of the past resulted in the 4th and Sth centuries in the works of Donatus and Servius and in the Saturnalia of Macrobius. The works of the great Latin grammarians are also to be connected with the scholarly study of antiquity which superseded to a great extent the attempt to produce works of new creation. The writer of most original genius among the successors of Juvenal and Tacitus is probably Apuleius, and his most

original work, the Metamorphoses, has nothing of Roman or Italian colouring. The last writer who combines genius with something of national spirit is the poet Claudian, who wrote his epics under the immediate inspiring influ- ence of a great national crisis and a national hero, As fresh blood came to the nearly exhausted literary genius of Italy from Spain in the first century of the empire, so in the later centuries it came from Africa. Whatever of original literary force appears either in the pagan or Christian literature written in the Latin language between the 2d and the 6th century is due to Romanized settle- ments in Africa. We

have to remember during all these comparatively barren centuries that secular literature had

ROMANS, a town of France, in the department of Dréme, 12 miles north-east of Valence by the railway con- necting this town with Grenoble, stands at the foot of an eminence on the right bank of the Isére, 530 feet above the sea. A fine stone bridge unites it with Bourg du Péage on the other side of the river. Both towns owe their prosperity to their situation in the most fertile part of the valley of the Isere, where land is sometimes sold at £200 per acre. The population of Romans was 11,916 (13,806 in the commune) in 1881. The present parish church belonged to an abbey founded in 837 by St Bernard, forty-ninth bishop of Vienne. now condemned, dates from the 11th century; the prin- cipal portal is one of the finest specimens of 1 2th-century Romanesque ; and the choir and the transept are striking examples of the style of the 13th. Romans has also a wealthy hospital and a large seminary. Besides the silk- trade the local industries comprise shoemaking, tanning, hat-making, oil-refining, &e.

ROMANS, Epistiz ro tux. The origin of the Chris- tian community at Rome is involved in obscurity. Accord- ing to Catholic tradition it was founded by Peter, who was its bishop for a quarter of a century. But neither allega- tion has historical support. The most striking proof of the contrary is precisely this epistle of Paul. It does not contain the remotest reference to either the one fact or the other. And if Paul had written such an epistle to a community founded by Peter he would not only have vio- lated the agreement mentioned in Gal. ii. 9, but would also have gone against his own principle of refraining from intrusion on the mission fields of others (Rom. xv. 20; 2 Cor. x. 16). But neither was Paul the founder of the church in Rome. This also is shown by the present epistle, in which he for the first time opens relations with a community already formed. Thus we are thrown upon mere conjecture. In pursuing the investigation we have this fact to start from, that even before the Christian era there already existed in Rome a strong Jewish colony. After the conquest of Jerusalem by Pompey (63 B.c.) numbers of Jewish prisoners of war were brought to Rome and there sold as slaves. Of these many were soon after- wards emancipated by their masters, Jewish slaves being a peculiarly inconvenient kind of property on account of the strictness of

their observance of their law, especially in the matter of clean and unclean meats (Philo, Leg. ad Cavum, ii. 568, ed. Mangey). These freedmen became the nucleus of a Jewish community, which ultimately settled in Trastevere and organized itself into an independent religious communion. It rapidly increased and became an important element in the life of the capital. By the time of Herod's death (4 B.c.) the independent Jews of Rome—that is, besides women and children—already numbered 8000 according to Josephus (Anézq., xvi. 11, 1; Bell. Jud., ii. 6,1). In the reign of Tiberius indeed this large and powerful organization was dissolved at a single

The north portal, –

727

again found its organ in the Greek language, and that the new spiritual life of the world had come into stern antagonism with many of the most powerful motives of classical poetry.

Literature.—The most important books on the subject are the Geschichte der rémischen Litteratur, by J. C. F. Bahr; the Grund- riss der rémischen Liticratur, by G. Bernhardy ; and the Geschichte der romischen Litteratur, by W. 8. Teuffel. 'The last of these has been translated into English. There is also a Geschichic der rémischen Litteratur by G. Munck. The most recent books on the subject in English are Mr. G. A. Simcox's History of Latin Literature from Ennius to Boethius, and the History of Roman Literature from the Earliest Period to the Death of Marcus Aurelius, by Mr C. T. Cruttwell. (W. Y. 8.)

stroke, a decree of the senate (19 a.p.) having sent to Sardinia for nulitary service all Jews capable of bearing arms (Tac., Ann., 11. 85; Suet., Ziber., 36 ; Joseph., Anizg., xvul, 3, 5). It is probable, however, that after the death (31 a.D.) of Sejanus, to whom this measure had been mainly due, the Jews were expressly permitted to return to Rome, for we are told by Philo (Leg. ad Caium, ii. 569, ed. Mangey) that after the death of his favourite Tiberius perceived the Jews to have been unjustly calumniated, and ordered the authorities to refrain from oppressing them. At all events the community must ultimately have come together again, for in the reign

of Claudius its existence is again presupposed, the idea of expelling the Jews from the capital having anew been entertained under that emperor. Regarding this proposal, however, accounts vary. According to the Acts of the Apostles (xviii. 2), and also Suetonius (Claud., 25), it was actually carried out ; but according to Dio Cassius (lx. 6) the expulsion was only proposed, and, when it was seen to be impracticable without great tumult, all that was done was to withdraw from the Jews their right of meeting. The latter version is doubtless the more correct. The withdrawal of the right of meeting was equivalent to the prohibition of public worship, and sufficiently explains why numbers left the city (Acts xviii. 2). But the main body must have remained and doubtless have again obtained the privilege of assembly, for from the time of Nero onwards we find the Jews in Rome once more flourishing with undiminished vigour.

From the midst of this Jewish community it was that the Christian congregation doubtless arose. The Jews of the Dispersion, it is well known, kept up an active corre- spondence with the mother-country in Palestine. Every year they sent their gifts and offerings thither, and every one in a position to do so went in person to the great festivals of the Holy City. Asa result of this vigorously maintained intercourse, which was aided also by the interests of trade, tidings of Jesus as the promised Messiah did not fail to reach the capital of the empire. Individual Jews who had become believers came forward in Rome as preachers of the gospel and found acceptance with a section of their countrymen. They found a perhaps still more numerous following among the "God-fearing" or "devout" (ceBopevot, poBovpevor, Tov Oedv) heathen, 2.¢., within that large circle which consisted of those who had adopted the faith of the Jews, observed certain of the more important precepts of their law, and also attended their public worship, but did not, strictly speaking, belong to the communion, and thus represented a sort of Judaism of the second order.! In proportion as faith in Jesus as the Messiah gained ground within the Jewish community, a separation between the believers and the others would of course become more

1 Many scholars identify these "devout" heathen with the "pro-

selytes of the gate’”’ who are met with in Rabbinical literature; but in reality the two are quite distinct and unrelated.

and more inevitable. Under what circumstances and con- ditions the separation actually took place is not now known. We may be sure, however, that it was not brought about without violent internal commotions ; it is probable even that the edict of Claudius itself may have had its occasion in these. The remark of Suetonius (Claud., 25) readily admits of being interpreted in such a sense: “ Judzos impulsore Chresto! assidue tumultuantes Roma expulit.” So interpreted, these words contain our first notice of the Christian Church in Rome; its earliest constitution must have taken place precisely then. For, as has already been seen, the edict of banishment was probably never carried out, or at all events did not continue long in force. Un- fortunately, we do not know the date of it, but it must have belonged to the later years of Claudius, for in the beginning of his reign the disposition of that emperor towards the Jews was friendly (Jos., Antig., xix. 5). In its context also Acts xviil. 2 imphes a late rather than an early date, say about 50-52 a.p.; and there is nothing against this in the circumstance that the edict is mentioned by Dio Cassius towards the beginning of his account of that reign, for in that particular passage the author is characterizing his subject in a general way and not referring to events in their chronological sequence.

If the foregoing suppositions are correct, Paul’s epistle to the church at Rome was written some six or eight years after its formation. Paul was staying in Corinth at the time, in the last month before the eventful journey to Jerusalem which led to his captivity (58 a.p.). The evi- dence that the epistle was written during this last sojourn in Greece, which is only briefly alluded to in Acts xx. 2, 3, is simple and conclusive. We know from the Epistles to the Corinthians that shortly before this stay the apostle had set on foot throughout the churches of Macedonia and Achaia a collection on behalf of the needy church at Jerusalem (1 Cor. xvi.; 2 Oor. viii.-ix.). This collection it was his wish to carry in person from Corinth (1 Cor. xvi. 3-6; 2 Cor. i. 16; Acts xxiv. 17). But the Epistle to the Romans was written, as we learn from the author himself (Rom. xv.

24-28), when the collection had just been concluded and he was on the point of taking it with him to Jerusalem,—in other words, before his departure from Corinth, but not long before.

We have now to inquire into the motive which led the apostle precisely at such a juncture to address a communi- cation so full and elaborate as this to the Christian com- munity at Rome, with which he had no personal acquaint- ance. In general terms we have it from himself at the beginning and end of the epistle (i. 8-15, xv. 14 sq.). He had proclaimed the gospel in all the East from Jerusalem to Hlyricum (xv. 19). He regarded his work in these quarters as for the present finished, and he felt impelled to preach Christ crucified also in the West. He was already looking towards Spain (Rom. xv. 24, 28). He wished first to take the collection to J erusalem, and, that once accomplished, his labours in the West were to begin forthwith. But there, in Rome, the metropolis of the world, a community already existed which had come into being apart from any effort of his. For his activity in the West it was obviously of the utmost importance to secure the organization for himself and his message. Should its attitude be cold, he would be left without any secure base of operations. The purpose of the present epistle, then, is, to speak generally, this: to secure a connexion with the community at Rome, to gain it for himself and the gospel he carried. But had it hitherto been without that gospel ? The community was at any rate already a Christian one.

ie The vulgar pronunciation "Chrestus" for "Christus" is borne witness to in other passages (Tert., Apol., 3, and Ad Nat., i. 3; Lactan., Inst. Div., iv. 7, 5).

ANS

And, if perhaps it was in need of fuller teaching, why did he not wait until he arrived in person in Rome in order to give it? Surely he could have done this more effect- ually by word of mouth than by a written treatise. Why, then, did he send this written message before him? There must have been some perfectly definite circumstances which led him to take this course. The nature of these will become clear to us when we seek to ascertain what at that juncture was the state of the Christian community in Rome.

Assuming that church to have arisen out of the midst of the Jewish community of the place, the most obvious conjecture is that at the period of the present letter it still continued to consist mainly of Jewish Christians, 2.¢., that the majority of its members were Jews by birth who even after their conversion to Christ still continued to regard the Mosaic law in its totality as binding on them. This is the view which Baur in particular sought to establish,? as against the previously prevailing belief in the Gentile Christian character of the church in question. Baur's position was adopted by many subsequent critics, the most careful and elaborate defence of it, though with many modifications in detail, being that of Mangold.? An inter- mediate position between the older view and that of Baur has been sought by Beyschlag, who works out the theory that the Christian community in Rome may possibly have been Jewish Christian in its way of thinking, yet at the same time Gentile Christian in its origin. In direct opposition to Baur, on the other hand, Theodor Schott5 has again maintained the older view as to its Gentile character, and in all essential points this is also defended by Weizsicker,® who, however, recognizes in Baur's hypo- thesis certain elements of truth by which the older theory must be corrected and supplemented.*

In presence of the facts we are compelled to adopt the view of Weizsiicker as on the whole the right one. For the Jewish Christian character of the church Baur and Mangold, besides the argument from its presumable origin, have adduced a number of isolated texts. On the majority of these Mangold no longer lays any stress, since they admit of being otherwise interpreted. Thus when Paul designates Abraham as '"'our father" (rév zpomdropa Hua; iv. 1) he indeed includes his readers under the jor. But in 1 Corinthians, an epistle certainly addressed to a church of Gentile Christians, the fathers of Israel are also called "our fathers" (1 Cor. x. 1). The Christian Church is in point of fact the true Israel; hence the patriarchs of Israel are its "fathers."' In another place (Rom. vii. 1) Paul addresses his readers as persons "who know the law." But this holds true not of born Jews alone but of Gentile Christians as well, to whom also the Old Testament was a sacred book. Mangold finds an "irrefragable evidence of the Jewish Christian character of the community in Rome" in Rom. vil. 4: "ye also, beloved brethren, have died to the law" (kat tpets eOavarwOnre ro vopw). If they have died to it they must of course have

once lived under it: so argues Mangold quite correctly. But the inference that

[EPISTLE,

? First of all in his essay " Ueber Zweck u. Veranlassung des Romer- briefs," in the Titbinger Zeitschr. f. Theol., 1836, hft. 38, p. 59 sq.

3 Der Romerbrief u. d. Anfinge der rémischen Gemeinde, Marburg, 1866 ; Der Rimerbrief u. seine geschichtlichen Voraussetzungen, Mar- burg, 1884.

*4 ** Ueber das geschichtliche Problem des Rémerbriefs," in Stud. w. Krit., 1867, p. 627 sq.*

® Der Rémerbrief, seinem Endzweck u. Gedankengang nach ausgelegt, Erlangen, 1858.

*§ **Ueber die alteste rémische Christengemeinde," in Jahrbb. f deutsche Theol., 1876, p. 248 sq.*

7 The words xara odpxa in Rom. iv. 1 are not to be construed with Tpotaropa Huay but with the verb evpnxévat. Abraham is thus de- signated as "our father " only in the spiritual and not in the physical sense.

EPISTLE. |

in such a case they must have been born Jews is neverthe- less a rash one. Not the Jews only, who possess the written law, but the whole of pre-Christian mankind are in Paul's conception ideally under the law,— under its bondage and curse. For all alike redemption is a redemp- tion from the law's penalty and dominion. Hence Paul can say even to born Gentiles, eGavardéOyre TO vopw. But according to Baur and Mangold the decisive evidence for the Jewish Christian character of the Roman Christians is the whole substance of the present epistle. All its arguments have for their aim to establish and vindicate the free gospel of Paul as against the objections of the Judaizers. They therefore conclude that it

can have been designed only for Judaistically-disposed readers whom Paul seeks by these representations to win for his gospel. This line of argument is at bottom sound, and Baur has rendered a real service by showing that the epistle is by no means an outline of the Pauline dogmatic as a whole, but is simply an elucidation of such points in it as were offensive to the Judaically-minded. A brief review of its contents will make this clear.

The epistle falls into two unequal parts,—a theoretical (i.-xi.) and a hortatory (xii.~~xvi.), The latter is almost of the nature of a mere appendix. The proper kernel of the cpistle, that for the sake of which it came to be written, is found in the theoretical exposition of the first eleven chap~~ ters. 'These again fall into two sections,—chaps. i.-v. laying the positive foundations of the Pauline gospel as freed from the law, and chaps. vi.-xi. containing the vindication of that gospel against objectors. Having shown directly in chaps. 1.-v. that we can attain righteousness and so salvation not along the path of legal observance but only along the path of faith, that is to say, believing apprehension of the mercy of God in Christ, he goes on in chap. vi. to refute point by point the positions of the Judaizers. He shows that in the freedom from the law the freedom to sin is by no means involved ; on the contrary, it is with the believer an inherent necessity that he should live a new life in his fellowship with Christ (chap. vi.), and precisely by that fellowship is he for the first time truly enabled so to live (chap. viii.). The law cannot give him this power ; it only commands, and does not at the same time give strength to obey. Hence, although good in itself, it has for men only a pernicious effect, inasmuch ag by its injunctions sinful desire is excited (chap. vii.). A special objection of the Judaizers against the activity of Paul was also this,—that he should have turned to the heathen while still the greater part of Israel remained unconverted. His answer to this is

contained in chaps. ix.~~xi. On the one hand, it is Israel's own fault to have rejected its salvation ; on the other hand, such has been God's will. Israel is at present rejected in order that the heathen may step into the gap thus made. Yet the rejection of Israel is only fora time. By the ad~~ mission of the heathen Israel is to be stirred to jealousy and thus at last to be also

converted. Precisely in such intricate paths as these is the wonderful depth of the divine wisdom made manifest.

Thus all the theoretical disquisitions of the epistle are in reality neither more nor less than a vindication and a polemic against the Jewish Christian point of view. But are we to conclude from this that the readers were them- selves Jewish Christians? Such an inference has against it the fact that Paul, both at the beginning and at the close of his epistle, clearly designates them as Gentile Christians. In i. 5, 6, and i. 13-15, as well as in xv. 15, 16, he appeals to his office as apostle of the Gentiles as justifying him in now writing to the church at Rome and in proposing further labours there. In xi. 13, also, the readers are spoken to as of Gentile birth. The arguments by which Baur and Mangold seek to weaken

the force of this passage are very far-fetched. If, then, the Roman Christians were Gentiles by blood, the theory of Beyschlag, that they were Gentile Christians in origin but Jewish Christians by conviction, appears to have most to commend it in view of the contents of the epistle. If the epistle stopped short at the end of chap. xili., we should indeed be compelled to adopt that theory. But the remaining chapters (xiv., xv.) suggest much rather that the majority were by conviction also Gentile Christians and emancipated from the law. For in the chapters specified Paul deals with a division that has arisen within the community. One section still remained in the bonds of the strictest legal scrupulosity : they regarded a vegetable diet (Adyava) as alone permissible, rejecting the use of animal food (xiv. 2), and they also observed certain days (xiv. 5), by which, there can be no doubt, the Jewish sabbaths and festivals must be under- stood. In fact they were legal Jewish Christians, but Jewish Christians who in their asceticism went beyond the precepts of Mosaism, which indeed prohibits the use of the flesh of unclean animals, but not animal food in general, Over against these Jewish Christian ascetics, called by Paul "the weak in the faith," stood another section, whom he describes as "the strong." They rejected these legal observances, taking their stand on the gospel as freed from the law. But the latter must have

been in the majority, for they are exhorted by the apostle to have a tender regard for the weakness of their brethren, and not by any harsh terrorism to force them into any courses which might offend their consciences. Such an exhortation, as Weizsiicker remarks, would have no meaning if the representatives of the freer view were not in the majority. The majority, then, of the church at Rome was Gentile Christian not only by origin but by conviction.

Here two problems arise, neither of which received sufficient attention from critics before Baur : (1) How are we to explain the origin, outside the limits of Paul's activity, of a Christian community thus free from the fetters of the law? and (2) How came it about that Paul should have addressed to such a community a letter like this,—adapted, as it appears to be, for Jewishly-inclined readers? As regards the first question, in the absence of adequate materials for a conclusive solution, our answer can only be conjectural. The problem is a difficult one, because, following Gal. ii., we must start with the assump- tion that the communities founded under the more direct influence of the original apostles did not reject the Jewish law. In seeking, then, to account for the existence of a community which had so done, we must carry with us the fact that within the wide limits of the Jewish Dispersion very various degrees of strictness in observance of the law were to be found. Even those who were in the truest sense members of the communities of the Dis- persion can hardly have observed the law as strictly as did the Pharisees in Palestine. But the demands made on those "' God-fearing" Gentiles who were wont to attach themselves, more or less closely, to the Jewish communi- ties must of course have been still more accommodating, If only they accepted the monotheistic religion and its worship without the use of images, the ceremonial pre- cepts laid upon them were reduced to a bare minimum,— the observance of Sabbaths, and also of some laws regard- ing meat. Now the community at Rome seems to have chiefly arisen out of the circles of such '" God-fearing" Gentiles. As Paul himself gained access for the preach- ing of the gospel, at Thessalonica, for example, principally among the "God-fearing Greeks" (Acts xvii. 4), so also in Rome do these seem to have been the main element in the church. On this assumption we can understand how

from the outset the community had not been in the habit of observing the Mosaic law. At most it was observed in isolated details, and as new members continued to be added from the outer heathen world these relics of Jewish custom received less and less prominence, fading away in presence of the faith in Jesus as the Redeemer. It is possible that influences from Pauline circles may also have come into play, but of this we cannot be sure.

Tf such were the circumstances in which the majority of the community in Rome had been brought to their attitude of freedom towards the law, that attitude was one of fact rather than of principle. The law was not observed ; but there was no clear consciousness that it had no obligatory force. A community thus placed had no firm basis from which to withstand a Judaizing agitation when it should arise. In such an event there was the greatest danger to its very existence. It is here, then, that we must look for the real occasion of the present epistle. Paul was afraid that the Judaizers who had wrought with such effect within the churches founded by himself in Galatia and Corinth might also lay hold on that at Rome. Perhaps they had already arrived there and the apostle knewit. At all events he perceived a threatening danger. He was unwill- ing to delay till he could visit the church personally, and accordingly sent forthwith an elaborate document in estab- lishment and vindication of the gospel as free from the law, so that the Roman Christians might be confirmed in their free practice and might be strengthened to withstand the agitations of Judaizers. This is the explanation of the fact that a letter addressed to a Gentile Christian church, not in bondage to the law, is yet almost entirely devoted to the refutation of the Judaistic positions.

The genuineness of the epistle is practically undisputed ; not so, however, its integrity. Baur (as had already been done by Marcion in ancient times) disputed the genuine- ness of the last two chapters (xv., xvi.), chiefly on the ground that in them a spirit of concession towards the weak is urged in a wholly un-Pauline manner. Lucht? has sought to separate out the genuine from the spurious in these chapters in a very complicated

manner, but substantially on the lines of Baur's criticism. The most thorough discussion of Baur's and Lucht's views is that of Mangold,? who has very convincingly shown that there is no real ground for refusing to attribute to the apostle the chapters in question. All the exhortations to concession do not, after all, go beyond the principle acted on by Paul himself (1 Cor. ix. 20),—"to the Jews I became as a Jew that I might win the Jews." In two points, however, the defence does not hold: (1) the doxology at the close (Rom. xvi. 25-27) appears certainly to be froin a later hand ; (2) ch. xvi. 3-20 seems to be genuinely Pauline indeed, but not to belong to the present epistle. Not only is the large number of salutations in a letter addressed to a community personally unknown to the apostle in itself strange ; but salutations also occur addressed to per- sons whom one would expect to find rather at Ephesus than at Rome (ver. 3, Aquila and Priscilla; ver. 5, Epzenetus) and in districts where the apostle had resided and laboured. (xvi. 7, 9, 13). Not without reason, therefore, is it con- jectured that here we have a fragment of an epistle to the Ephesians which by mistake has come to be incorporated with that to the Romans.4*

; Ueber die beiden letzten Kapitel des Rimerbriefes, Berlin, 1871. Der Réimerbrief u. s. gesch. Voraussetz., pp. 1-164.

® See Mangold, op. cit., pp. 44-81.

a See espeeially Mangold, op. ¢eit., pp. 147-164. Lightfoot (S¢ Poul's Epistle to the Philippians, 2d ed., pp. 169-176) has shown that many of the names met with in Rom. xvi. 3-20 are found precisely in Roman inscriptions of the period of the emperors, but the faet is more striking than convincing. The names in themselves are eommon. It is not to the names but to the persons charactcrized that we have

ROM—ROM

The more recent literature relating to the Epistle to the Romans has been fully catalogued and discussed in the work of Grafe (Ueber Verantlassung u. Zweck des Rimerbriefes, Tiibingen, 1881). The most important works in the list have already been named in the present article. (ES)

ROMANUS I. (Lecapenus), who shared the imperial throne with Constantine VII. (q.v.) and exercised all the real power from 919 to 944, was admiral of the By- zantine fleet on the Danube when, hearing of the defeat of the army at Achelous (17th August 917), he resolved to sail for Constantinople. Popular caprice as well as his influence over his sailors aided his ambition, and, after the marriage of his daughter Helena to Constantine, he was first proclaimed '"basileopater" in April 919 and afterwards crowned colleague of his son-in-law on 17th December of the same year. His reign, which was un- distinguished and uneventful, was terminated by his own sons Stephen and Constantine, who in 944 carried him off to the island of Prote and compelled him to become a monk. He died in 948.

ROMANUS IL. emperor of the East, succeeded his father Constantine VII. in 959 at the age of twenty-one, and died—poisoned, it was believed, by his wife, Theophano —in 963. He was a pleasure-loving sovereign, but showed judgment in the selection of his ministers. The great event of his reign was the conquest of Crete by Nicephorus Phocas. ;

ROMANUS III. (Argyrus), emperor of the East, was an accomplished but otherwise undistinguished member of the Byzantine aristocracy when, summoned to the palace of the dying Constantine VIII., he was informed that he had been selected to marry one of the imperial princesses and succeed the emperor. His hesitation as already a married man was removed by his wife, who generously took the veil; and his union with Zoe and their joint coronation were celebrated on 19th November 1028. Two days later Constantine died. A serious defeat which Romanus sustained in person at Azaz in Syria, when marching to take possession of Aleppo, considerably im- paired the popularity among his subjects which he had sought to purchase by lavish concession to various classes, and soon afterwards he began to show symptoms of disease, attributed by many to slow poison administered by con- nivance of the empress. His death took place on 11th April 1034, and he was forthwith succeeded by MicHaEn IV. (q.v.).

ROMANUS IV. (Diogenes), emperor of the East from 1068 to 1071, was a member of a distinguished Cappa- docian family and had risen to

distinction in the army when he was convicted of treason against the sons of Con- stantine X. While waiting execution he was summoned into the presence of their mother, Eudocia Macrembolitissa, the empress regent, whom he so fascinated that she granted him a free pardon and shortly afterwards married him. Taking the field soon after his coronation, he carried on three campaigns against the Saracens and Seljuk Turks without achieving any decisive success, and in a fourth he was disastrously defeated by Alp Arslan on the banks of the Araxes and taken prisoner. Released from captivity after promising to pay a large ransom and concluding a treaty of peace, he returned homewards only to find revolu- tion in full flood, and after a second defeat of his arms by the troops of Michael VII. he was compelled to resign the empire and retire to the island of Prote, where he soon died in great misery. It was during this reign that by the surrender of Bari (15th April 1071) the Byzantine empire lost its last hold upon Italy.

ROMAN WALL. See Anroninus, WALL oF, vol. ii. p. 139, and Haprian, Watt of, vol. xi. p. 364.

to look. But of these it is diffieult to believe that they should all have been living in Rome,

See Plate

1

Rome a Latin city.

a

(

31

ROME

PART IL—ROMAN HISTORY.

Section J.—Ancrenr History. I. The Beginnings of Rome and the Monarchy.

OTH the city and the state of Rome are represented iB in tradition as having been gradually formed by the fusion of separate communities. The original settlement of Romulus is said to have been limited to the Palatine Mount. With this were united before the end of his reign the Capitoline and the Quirinal; Tullus Hostilius added the Czelian, Ancus Martius the Aventine; and finally Servius Tullius included the Esquiline and Viminal, and enclosed the whole seven hills with a stone wall. The growth of the state closely followed that of the city. To the original Romans ou the Palatine were added succes- sively the Sabine followers of King Tatius, Albans trans- planted by Tullus, Latins by Ancus, and lastly the litruscan comrades of Celes Vibenna. This tradition is supported by other and more positive evidence. The race of the Luperci on February 15 was in fact a purification of the boundaries of the "ancient Palatine town,"! the "square Rome" of Ennius ;? and the course taken is that described by Tacitus as the "pomoerium" of the city founded by Romulus. On the Esquiline, Varro mentions an "ancient city" and an "earthen rampart,"4 and the festival of the Septimontium is evidence of a union between this settlement and that on the Palatine. The fusion of these " Mounts" with a settlement on the Quirinal "Hill" is also attested by trustworthy evidence ; and in parti- cular the line taken by the procession of the Argei repre- sents the enlarged boundaries of these united communities." Lastly, the Servian agger still remains as a witness to the final enclosure of the various settlements within a single ring-wall. But is tradition right in representing this fusion of distinct settlements as a fusion also of com- inunities of different race? Much of what it says on this point may be at once dismissed as fabulous. The tales of Adneas and his Trojans, of Evander and his Arcadians, of the followers of Heracles, and of the still earlier Aborigines have no claim to a place in history ;® we cannot accept the tradition to which the Romans clung with proud humility of the asylum opened by Romulus, or believe that the ancestors of the Romans were a mixed concourse of outlaws and refugees,® nor, while admitting the probability of the tradition that in remote tinies the **Sicels" had dwelt on the seven hills, can we allow them any part or lot in the historic Roman people.!° That this people were in the main homogeneous and in*

the main of Latin descent is unquestionable. Indications of the truth are not wanting even in the traditions themselves: King

Vewo, L. L., vi. 34.

? Fest., 258; Varro ap. Solinus, i. 17.

3 Tac., Ann., xii. 24. Fora full discussion of the exact limits of the Palatine city see Smith, Dict. Geog., s. v. "Roma"; Jordan, Lopog. d. Stadt Rom, i. cap. 2; Gilbert, Topog. u. Gesch. d. Stadt ftom, i. caps. 1, 2; and "Topography" below.

4L. L., v. 48; cf. ibid., 50.

> Festus, 348 ; Jordan, i. 199; Gilbert, i. 161. The seven "montes" are the Palatine with the Velia and Germalus, the Subura, and the three points of the Esquiline (Fagutal, Oppius, and Cispius).

5 See Mommsen, R. G. (7th ed.), i. 51.

7 Varro, L. L., v. 45, vii. 44; Jordan, ii, 237.

8 For these traditions see Dionys., i. 81-71.

° For a criticism of the myth of the asylum see Schwegler, R. G., i. 465 sq., who, however, exaggerates the mixed character of the Roman people. Hegel, Phil. d. Gesch., 345, takes the story seriously.

10 Dionys., i. 9$ Thuc., vi. 2; Dionys., i. 16, ii. 1.

Faunus who rules the Aborigines on the Palatine is Latin ; "TLatini" is the name assumed by the united Aborigines aud Trojans; the immediate progenitors of Rome are the Latin Lavinium and the Latin Alba. The evidence of the language, the religion, the institutions and civilization of early Rome points to the same conclusion. The speech of the Romans is from the first Latin ;!! the oldest gods of Rome—Saturn, Janus, Jupiter, Juno, Diana, &c.—are all Latin ; "rex," "praetor," "dictator," "'curia," are Latin titles and institutions.!2_ Geographically too the low hills by the Tiber form a part of the strip of coast-land from which the Latini took

their name, and the primitive settlements, with their earthen ramparts and wooden palisades planted upon them out of reach both of human foes and of the malaria of the swampy low grounds, are only typical of the mode of settlement which the conditions of life dictated throughout Latium.!® But tradition insists on the admix- ture of at least two non-Latin elements, a Sabine and an Etruscan, The question as regards the latter will be more fully discussed hereafter ; it is enough to say here that there is no satisfactory evidence that any one of the communities which combined to form Rome was Etruscan, or that there was any important Etruscan, strain in the Roman blood.! With the Sabines it is otherwise.*

That The

union of the Palatine and Quirinal settlements which ceded in

constituted so decisive a stage in the growth of Rome is represented as having been in reality a union of the original Latins with a band of Sabine invaders who had seized and held not only the Quirinal Hill but the northern and nearest peak of the Capitoline Mount. The tradition was evidently deeply rooted. The name of the Quirinal Hill itself was derived from the Sabine town of Cures.1® The ancient worships connected with it were said to be Sabine.1© One of the three old tribes, the Tities, was believed to represent the Sabine element ;!" the second and the fourth kings are both of Sabine descent. By the great majority of modern writers the substance of the tradition, the fusion of a body of Sabine invaders with the original Latins, is accepted as historical; and even Mommsen allows its possibility, though he throws back the time of its occurrence to an earlier period than that of the union of the two settlements.18 We cannot here enter into the

"The theory that Latin was a "mongrel speech" is now discarded; see Schwegler, i, 190, and Latin LANnauaGgE, vol. xiv. p. 327.

12 The title "rex" occurs on inscriptions at Lanuvium, Tusculum, Boville ; Henzen, Bullettino dell. Inst., 1868, p. 159; Orelli, 2279 g Corp. I. Lat., vi., 2125. For "dictator" and " praetor," see Livy, i, 23, viii. 3; ef. Marquardt, Rom. Staatsverwaltung, i. 475; tor "curia," Serv. on Zn. i. 17 ; Marquardt, i. 467.

8 Helbig, Die Italiker in d. Poebene; Pohlmann, Anfange Roms, 40; Abeken, Afittel-Italien, 61 sq.

14 The existence of a Tuscan quarter: (Tuscus vicus) in early Rome probably points to nothing more than the presence in Rome of Etruscan artisans and craftsmen. The Etruscan origin ascribed to the third tribe, the "Luceres," is a mere guess; see Schwegler, i. 504, and Lange, Rom. Alterth., i. 85.

Hy Went), Ils Ilo We Bile

16 Varro, L. L., v. 74; Schweglcr, i. 248 sq. ; but Mommsen (R. G., i. 58) points out that most of these so-called Sabine deitics are at least equally Latin.

Varro, L. L., v. 553 Liwyy i 18.

8 Mommsen, &. G., i. 48, Schwegler (R. G., i. 478) accepts the tradition of a Sabine settlement on the Quirinal, and considers that in the united state the Sabine element predominated. Volquardsen (Rhein. Mus., xxxiii. 559) believes in a complete Sabine conquest ; and so does Zdller (Latium u. Rom, Leipsic, 1878), who, however, places it after the expulsion of the Tarquins. Gilbert (Topogr., 1. cap. 5) accepts the Sabine settlement, but holds rightly that in the union the Latin element decisively predominated,

ome

The early state.

The people.

732

question at length, but two statements may be safely made respecting it. The Sabine invasion, if it took place at all, must have taken place far back in the prehistoric age; it must have been on a small scale ; and the Sabine invaders must have amalgamated easily and completely with the Latin settlers. The structure of the early Roman state, while it bears evident

marks of a fusion of communities, shows no traces of a mixture of race. Nor is it easy to point to any provably Sabine element in the language, religion, or civilization of primitive Rome.1 The theory of a Sabine conquest can hardly be maintained in the face of the predominantly Latin character of both people and institutions. On the other hand, the probability of a Sabine raid and a Sabine settlement, possibly on the Quirinal Hill, in very early times may be admitted. The incursions of the highland Apennine tribes into the lowlands fill a large place in early Italian history. The Latins were said to have originally descended from the mountain glens near Reate.2 The invasions of Campania and of Magna Grecia by Sabellian tribes are matter of liistory, and the Sabines themselves are represented as a restless highland people, ever seeking new homes in richer lands. In very early days they. appear on tlie borders of Latium, in close proximity to Rome, and Sabine forays are familiar and frequent occurrences in the old legends.

Such is all we know of the manner in which the separate settlements on the seven hills grew into a single city and community. How long Rome took in the making, or when or by whom the work was completed, we cannot say. Nor is it possible to give more than a very meagre outline of the constitution and of the history of the united state in the early days of its existence.

The " populus Romanus" was, we are told, divided into three tribes, Ramnes, Tities, and Luceres, and into thirty "curiae." The three tribes probably represent a primitive clan division, older than the Roman state itself. They survived in later times only as divisions of the ancient "equitum centuriae," and even in the accounts of the earliest constitution they have ceased to serve as a political division of the people.' Of far greater importance is the division into "curiae." In Cicero's time there were still curies, curial festivals, and curiate assemblies, and modern authors are unquestionably right in regarding the curia as the keystone of the primitive political system. It was a primitive association held together by participa- tion in common "'sacra," and possessing common festivals, common priests, and a common chapel, hall, and hearth. The members of a curia were very probably neighbours and kinsmen, but the curia seems to represent a stage in political development midway between that in

which clan- ship is the sole bond of union and that in which such claims as those of territorial contiguity and ownership of land have obtained recognition. As separate associations the curiz

1 See Momunsen, i. 48. The Sabine words in Latin, if not common to both dialects, were probably introduced later, or are Sabinized Latin (Mommsen, Unterital. Dialekten, 347). Schwegler's attempt to distinguish Sabine features in the Roman character is ingenious but unsatisfactory.

2 Cato ap. Dionys., ii. 48, 49.

3 Cato ap. Dionys., ii. 48, 49. For the institution of the "ver sacrum" see Schwegler, Rém. Gesch., i. 240 ; Nissen, Templum, iv.

- *The tradition connecting the Ramnes with Romulus and the Tities with Tatius is as old as Ennius (Varro, L. Z., v. 55). Mommsen (i. 41) explains Ramnes as= Romani, but this etymology is rejected by Schwegler and by Corssen. As regards the Luceres there is little to add to Livy's statement (i. 13), "nominis et originis causa incerta est. _ Cf., on the whole question, Schwegler, i. 505, and Volquardsen Rhein. Mus., xxxiii, 538.*

34 They are traditionally connected only with the senate of 300 patres, with the primitive legion of 3000, with the vestal virgins, and with the augurs (Varro, Z. L., v. 81, 89, 91; Livy, x. 6; Festus, 344; Mommsen, i. 41, 74, 75 ; Genz, Patricisch. Rom, 90),

are probably older than the Roman state, but,® however this may be, it is certain that of this state when formed they constituted the only effective political subdivisions. The members of the thirty curie are the populus Romanus, and the earliest known condition of Roman citizenship is the "'communio sacrorum," partnership in the curial "sacra." Below the curia there was no further political division, for there is no reason to believe that the curia was ever formally subdivided into a fixed number of

gentes and families.' Nor can we assent to the view which would represent the curiz as containing only the "patrician gentes." The primitive Roman people of the thirty curize included all the freemen of the community, siniple as well as gentle.§

At their head was the "rex," the ruler of the united The king. ' 5

people. The Roman "king" is not simply either the hereditary and patriarchal chief of a clan, the priestly head of a community bound together by common sacra, or the elected magistrate of a state, but a mixture of allthree.® In later times, when no " patrician magistrates " were forthcoming to hold the elections for their successors, a procedure was adopted which was believed to represent tle manner in which the early kings had been appointed.® In this procedure the ancient privileges of the old "oentes" and their elders, the importance of maintaining unbroken the continuity of the "sacra," on the trans- mission and observance of which the welfare of the com- munity depended, and thirdly the rights of the freemen, are all recognized. On the death of a king, the auspicia, and with them the supreme authority, revert to the council of elders, the " patres," as representing the "gentes." By the "patres" an "interrex" is appointed, who in turn nominates a second; by him, or even by a third or fourth interrex, a new king is selected in consultation with the "patres." The king-designate is then proposed to the freemen assembled by their curise for their acceptance, and finally their formal acceptance is ratified by the " patres," as a security that the "sacra" of which they are the guardians have been respected.!!_ Thus the king is in the first instance selected by the representatives of the old gentes, and they ratify his appointment. In form he is nominated directly by a predecessor from whose hands he receives the auspicia. But it is necessary also that the choice of the patres and the nomination of the interrex should be confirmed by a solemn vote of the community. It is useless to attempt a precise definition of the prerogatives of the king when once installed in office. Tradition ascribes to hin a position and powers closely

6 It is possible that the curie were originally connected with separate localities; ¢f such names as Foriensis, Veliensis (Fest., 174; Gilbert, i. 218).

7 Niebuhr's supposition of ten gentes in each curia kas nothing in its favour but the confused statement of Dionysius as to the purely nlilitary 5€kades (Dionys., ii. 7; of. Miiller, Phdlologus, xxxiv. 96).

8 The view taken here on the vexed question of the purely patrician character of the curiz is that of Mommsen (Rom. Forschungen, vol. i.).

® Rubino, Genz, and Lange insist on the hereditary patriarchal character of the kingship, Ihne on its priestly side, Schwegler on its elective. Mommsen comes nearest to the view taken in the text, but fails to bring out the nature of the compromise on which the kingship rests.

0 Cic. De Legg., iii. 8; Livy, iv. 7.

11 " Patres auctores facti," Livy, i. 22; '* patres fuere auctores," Id., i. 82. In 386 B.c. (Livy, viii. 12) the Publilian law directed that this sanction should be given beforehand, " ante initum suffragium," and thus reduced it to a meaningless form (Livy,i. 11). It is wrongly identified by Schwegler with the "lex curiata de imperio," which in Cicero's day followcd and did not precede election. According to Cicero (De Rep., ii. 18, 21), the proccedings included, in addition to the "creation" by the comitia curiata and the sanction of the patres, the introduction by the king himself of a lex curiata conferring the imperium and auspicia; but this theory, though generally accepted, is probably an inference from the practice of a later time, when the "ereatio" had been transferred to the " comitia centuriata."'*

The senate.

The assembly.

RO

resembling those of the heroic kings of Greece. He rules for life, and he is the sole ruler, unfettered by written statutes. He is the supreme judge, settling all disputes and punishing wrongdoers even with death. All other officials are appointed by him. He imposes taxes, dis- tributes lands, and erects buildings. Senate and assembly meet only when he convenes them,

and meet for little else than to receive communications from him. In war he is absolute leader,! and finally he is also the religious head of the community. It is his business to consult the gods on its behalf, to offer the solemn sacrifices, and to announce the days of the public festivals. Hard by his house was the common hearth of the state, where the vestal virgins cherished the sacred fire.

By the side of the king stood the senate, or council of elders. In the descriptions left us of the primitive senate, as in those of the "rex," we can discover traces of a transition from an earlier state of things when Rome was only an assemblage of clans or village communities, allied indeed, but each still ruled by its own chiefs and headmen, to one in which these groups have been fused into a single state under a common ruler. On the one hand the senate appears as a representative council of chiefs, with inalien- able prerogatives of its own, and claiming to be the ultimate depository of the supreme authority and of the "sacra" connected with it. The senators are the " patres "; they are taken from the leading "' gentes" ; they hold their seats for life; to them the "auspicia" revert on the death of a king ; they appoint the interrex from their own body, are consulted in the choice of the new king,? and their sanction is necessary to ratify the vote of the assembled freemen. On the other hand they are no longer supreme. They cannot appoint a king but with the consent of the community, and their relation to the king when appointed is one of subordination. Vacancies in their ranks are filled up by him, and they can but give him advice and counsel when he chooses to consult them.

The popular assembly of united Rome in its earliest days was that in which the freemen met and voted by their curiz (comitia curiata'), The assembly met in the comitium at the north-east end of the forum,' at the summons and under the presidency of the king or, failing him, of the "interrex." By the "rex" or 'interrex " the question was put, and the voting took place "curiatim," the curiz being called up in turn. The vote of each curia was decided by the majority of indivi- dual votes, and a majority of the votes of the curie determined the final result. But the occasions on which the assembly could exercise its power must have been few. Their right to elect magistrates was apparently limited to the

acceptance or rejection of the king proposed by the interrex. Of the passing of laws, in the later sense of the term, there is no trace in the kingly period. Dionysius's statement ® that they voted on questions of war and peace is improbable in itself and unsupported by tradition. They are indeed represented, in one instance, as deciding a capital case, but it is by the express permis- sion of the king and not of right.6 Assemblies of the people were also, and probably more frequently, convened for other purposes. Not only did they meet to hear from the king the announcement of the high days and holidays for each month, and to witness such solemn religious rites aS the inauguration of a priest, but their presence (and

1 For the references, see Schwegler, i. 646 sq.

- *If the analogy of the "rex sacrorum" is to be trusted, the "king " could only be chosen from the ranks of the ''patricii." Cic. Pro Domo, 14; Gaius, i. 122.*

3 Cie. De Rep., ii. 18; Dionys., ii. 14, &c.

4 Varro, L. L., v. 155. For the position of the "comitium," see Smith, Dict. Geog., s.v. " Roma," and Jordan, Topog. d. Stadt Rom.

- *Dionys., dc. 6 Livy, i. 26; Dionys., iii, 22.*

sometimes their vote) was further required to authorize and attest certain acts, which ina later age assumed a more private character. The disposal of property by will? and the solemn renunciation of family or gentile "sacra "8 could only take place in the presence of the assenibled freemen, while for adoption® (arrogatio) not only their presence but their formal consent was necessary.

Such in outline was the political structure of the Roman state at the earliest period known to us. It is clear that it belongs to a comparatively advanced stage in the development of society, and that a long previous

history lies behind it. Traces of an older and more primitive order of things still linger in the three ancient shadowy tribes, in the curie and gentes, in many of the features noticeable in the senate; but they are traces of an order that has passed away. The supremacy of the state is established over the groups out of whose fusion it has grown, and such of these groups as still retain a distinct existence are merely private corporations. Private differ- ences are settled and wrongdoers punished by the state tribunals, and even within the close limits of the family the authority of the head is limited by the claims of the state upon the services of the sons and dependants.

A history of this early Roman state is out of the ques- Rome The names, dates, and achievements of the first under

tion. four kings are all too unsubstantial to form the basis of a i sober narrative ;1° a few points only can be considered as fairly well established. If we except the long eventless reign ascribed to King Numa, tradition represents the first kings as incessantly at war with their immediate neigh- bours. The details of these wars are no doubt mythical ; but the implied condition of continual struggle, and the narrow range within which the struggle is confined, may be accepted as true. The picture drawn is that of a small community with a few square miles of territory, at deadly feud with its nearest neighbours, within a radius of some 12 miles round Rome. Nor, in spite of the repeated victories with which tradition credits Romulus, Ancus, and Tullus, does there seem to have been any real extension of Roman territory except towards the sea. Fidenz remains Etruscan; the Sabines con- tinue masters up to the Anio; Preneste, Gabii, and Tusculum are still untouched; and on this side it is doubt- ful if Roman territory, in spite of the possible destruction of Alba, extended to a greater distance than the sixth milestone from Rome.!! But along the course of the Tiber below the city there was a decided advance. The fortifi- cation of the Janiculum, the building of the "pons sublicius," the foundation of Ostia, and the acquisition of the saltworks near the sea may all be safely ascribed to this early period. Closely connected, too, with the control of the Tiber from Rome to the sea was the subjugation of the petty Latin communities lying south of the river; and the tradition of the conquest and destruction of Poli- torium, Tellenz, and Ficana is

confirmed by the absence in historical times of any Latin communities in this district.

With the reign of the fifth king Tarquinius Priscus a The marked change takes place. the last three kings not only wear a more historical air

? Gaius, ii. 101. 8 Gell., xv. 27.

® Gell., v. 19, "Comitia praebentur, quae curiata appellantur." Cf. Cie. Pro Domo, 18, 14; and see Roman Law.

10 By far the most complete criticism of the traditional accounts of the first four kings will be found in Schwegler's Rém. Geschichte, vol. i.; compare also Ihne's Zarly Rome, and Sir G. C. Lewis's Credibility of Karly Roman History.

U The "fossa Cluilia," 5 miles from Rome (Livy, ii. 39), is regarded by Schwegler (i. 585) and by Mommsen (i. 45) as marking the Roman frontier towards Latium. Cf. Ovid., Fast., ii. 681; Strabo, 230, "peratd yotv tod wéumrrov nad tod Exrov Alou. . . Témos Pijoro. . . dpioy THs TéTe 'Pwuatwy vis."

kin

The traditional accounts of Tarquins.

734 RO

than those of the first four, but they describe something like a transformation of the Roman city and state. Under the rule of these latter kings the separate settle- ments are for the first time enclosed with a rampart of colossal size and extent.1 The low grounds are drained, and a forum and circus elaborately laid out; on the Capitoline Mount a temple is erected, the massive founda- tions of which were an object of wonder even to Pliny.? To the same period are assigned the redivision of the city area into four new districts and the introduction of a new military system. The kings increase in power and surround themselves with new splendour. Abroad, too, Rome suddenly appears as a powerful state ruling

far and wide over southern Etruria and Latium. These startling changes are, moreover, ascribed to kings of alien descent, who one and all ascend the throne in the teeth of estab- lished constitutional forms. Finally, with the expulsion of the last of them—the younger Tarquin—comes a sudden shrinkage of power. At the commencement of the republic Rome is once more a comparatively small state, with hostile and independent neighbours at her very doors. It is difficult to avoid the conviction that the true explanation of this phenomenon is to be found in the supposition that Rome during this period passed under the rule of powerful Etruscan lords. In the 7th and 6th centuries B.c., and probably earlier still, the Htruscans appear as ruling widely outside the limits of Etruria proper. They were supreme in the valley of the Po until their power there was broken by the irruption of Celtic tribes from beyond the Alps, and while still masters of the plains of Lombardy they established themselves in the rich lowlands of Campania, where they held their ground until the capture of Capua by the Samnite high- landers in 423 B.c. It is on the face of it improbable that a power which had extended its sway from the Alps to the Tiber, and from the Liris to Surrentum, should have left untouched the intervening stretch of country between the Tiber and the Liris. Nor are we without evidence of Etruscan rule in Latium. According to Dionysius there was a time when the Latins were known to the Greeks as Tyrrhenians, and Rome as a Tyrrhenian city.© When Aineas landed in Italy the Latins were at feud with Turnus (Turrhenos? Dionys., i. 64) of Ardea, whose close ally is the ruthless Mezentius, prince of Cere, to whom the Latins had been forced to pay a tribute of wine.® Cato declared the Volsci to have been once sub- ject to Etruscan rule,' and Etruscan remains found at Velitre,® as well as the second name of the Volscian Auxur, Tarracina (the city of Tarchon), tend to confirm lis statement. Nearer still to Rome is Tusculum, with its significant name, and at Alba we hear of a prince Tapyxérvos,® lawless and cruel like Mezentius, who consults the "oracle of Tethys in Tyrrhenia." Thus we find the Etruscan power encircling Rome on all sides, and in Rome itself a tradition of the rule of princes of Etruscan origin. The Tarquinii come from South Etruria; their name can hardly be anything else than the Latin equivalent of the Etruscan Tarchon, and is therefore possibly a title*

1 Livy, i. 36.

2 Livy, i. 38, 55; Plin., NV. i, xxxvi, 15.

3 This is the view of O. Miiller, and more recently of Deecke, Gardthausen, and Zéller; it is rejected by Schwegler. Mommscn accepts the Etruscan origin of the Tarquins, but denics that it proves an Etruscan rule in Rome.

_ Zoller, Latium u. Rom, 166, 189; Gardthauscn, Mastarna (Leipsic, 1882); Cuno's Verbreitung d. Etr. Stammes (Graudenz, 1880) is highly fanciful. 5 Dionys., i. 29.

6 Livy, i. 2; Dionys., i. 64, 65; Plut., Q. R., 18.

7 Cato ap. Serv., din., xi. 567.

8 Helbig, Ann. d. Inst., 1865.

9

Z Plut., fom., 2, wapavoudratos kal dudtaros; of. Rutulian arquitius, Virg., Jn., x. 550.

M E [1ISTORY. (= "lord" or "prince") rather than a proper name,10 Even Servius Tullius was identified by Tuscan chroniclers with an Etruscan " Mastarna."!! Again, what we are told of Etruscan conquests does not represent them as moving, like the Sabellian tribes, in large bodies and settlmg down en masse in the conquered districts. We hear rather of military raids led by ambitious chiefs who carve out principalities for themselves with their own good swords, and with their followers rule oppressively over alien and subject peoples.!2 And so at Rome the story of the Tarquins implies not a wave of Etruscan immigration so much as a rule of Etruscan princes over conquered Latins.

The achievements ascribed to the Tarquins are not less characteristic. Their despotic rule and splendour contrast with the primitive simplicity of the native kings. Only Etruscan builders, under the direction of wealthy and powerful Etruscan lords, could have built the great cloaca, the

Servian wall, or the Capitoline temple,—monu- ments which challenged comparison with those of the emperors themselves. Nor do the traces of Greek influ- ence upon Rome during this period } conflict with the theory of an Etruscan supremacy ; on the contrary, it is at least possible that it was thanks to the extended rule and wide connexions of her Etruscan rulers that Rome was first brought into direct contact with the Greeks, who had long traded with the Etruscan ports and influenced Etruscan culture.*

These Etruscan princes are represented, not only as hav- The

ing raised Rome for the time to a commanding position in Latium and lavished upon the city itself the resources of Etruscan civilization, but also as the authors of important internal changes. They are represented as favouring new men at the expense of the old patrician families, and as reorganizing the Roman army on a new footing, a policy natural enough in military princes of alien birth, and rendered possible by the additions which conquest had made to the original community. From among the lead- ing families of the conquered Latin states a hundred new members were admitted to the senate, and these gentes thenceforth ranked as patrician, and became known as "gentes minores."!5 The changes in the army begun, it is said, by the elder Tarquin and completed by Servius Tullius were more important. The basis of the primitive military system had been the three tribes, each of which furnished 1000 men to the legion and 100 to the cavalry.!® Tarquinius Priscus, we are told, contemplated the creation of three fresh tribes and three additional centuries of horsemen with new names," though in face of the opposi- tion offered by the old families he contented himself with simply doubling the strength without altering the names of the old divisions. But the change attributed to

10 Miiller-Deecke, i. 69, 70; Zoller, Latium u. Rom, 168; ef Strabo, p. 219; Serv. on 4n., x. 179, 198. The existence of an independent "gens Tarquinia" of Roman extraction (Schwegler, i. 678) is unproven and unlikely. Nor can "Tarquinius" mean " of Tarquinii"; this would require " Tarquiniensis " as a cognomen.

11 See speech of Claudius, Tab. Lugd., App. to Nipperdey's edition of the Annals of Tacitus, "Tusce Mastarna ei nomen erat." For the painting in the Francois tomb at Vulci, see Gardthansen, Afastarna, 29 sq. ; Annalt dell. Instit., Rome, 1859.

12° OF the traditions of Mezentius, of Celes Vibenna, Porsena, &c.

13 Schwegler, R. G., i. 679 sq.

M4 Schwegler, i. 791, 792. He accepts as genuine, and as represent- ing the extent of Roman rule and connexions under the Tarquins, the first treaty between Rome and Carthage mentioned by Polybius (iii. 22); see, for a discussion of the question, Vollmer, Rhein. Afus., xxxii. 614 sq. ; Mommsen, Rém. Chronologte, 20; Dyer, Journ. of Philol., ix. 238. Livy, i. 853; Dionys., iii, 67; Cic. De Rép., ii. 20.

16 Varro, ZL. L., v. 89. W Livy, i. 86; Dionys., iii. 71.

18 The six centuries of horsemen were thenceforward known as "primi secundique Ramnes " (Fest., 344; cf Schwegler, i. 685 sq.).

It is possible that the reforms of Tarquinius Priscus were limited to the cavalry.

THE MONARCHY. |

Servius Tullius went far beyond this. Ilis famous distri- bution of all freeholders (assidui) into tribes, classes, and centuries,! though subsequently adopted with modifica- tions as the basis of the political system, was at first ex- clusively military in its nature and objects.2 It amounted in fact to the formation of a new and enlarged army on a new footing. In this force, excepting in the case of the centuries of the horsemen, no regard was paid either to the old clan divisions, or to the semi-religious semi- political curie. In its ranks were included all free- holders within the Roman territory, whether members or not of any of the old divisions, and the organization of this new army of assidui was not less independent of the old system with its clannish and religious traditions and forms. The unit was the "centuria" or company of 100

men; the centurize were grouped in "classes" and drawn up in the order of the phalanx. The centuries in front were composed of the wealthier citizens, whose means enabled them to bear the cost of the complete equipments necessary for those who were to bear the brunt of the onset. These centuries formed the first class. Behind them stood the centuries of the second and third classes, less completely armed, but making up together with those of the first class the heavy-armed infantry. In the rear were the centuries of the fourth and fifth classes, recruited from the poorer freeholders, and serving only as light- armed troops. The entire available body of freeholders was divided into two equal portions, a reserve corps of "seniores" and a corps of "juniores" for active service. Each of these corps consisted of 85 centuries or 8500 men, i.e., of two legions of about 4200 men each, the normal strength of a consular legion under the early republic.> It is noticeable also that the heavy-armed centuries of the three first classes in each of these legions represented a total of 3000 men, a number which agrees exactly with the number of heavy-armed troops in the legion as described by Polybius. Attached to the legions, but not included in them, were the companies of sappers and trumpeters. Lastly, to the six centuries of horsemen, which still retained the old tribal names, twelve more were added as a distinct body, and recruited from the wealthiest class of citizens.6 The four " tribes" also insti- tuted by Servius were probably intended to serve as the basis for the levy of freeholders for the new army.' As their names show, they corresponded with the natural local divisions of the city territory,® but that they included freeholders residing on Roman territory but out- side Rome is indicated by the fact that both Ostia and Alba belonged to the Palatine tribe.°*

1 Cic, De Rep., ii. 22; Livy, i. 42; Dionys., iv. 16.

2 This is recognized by Mommsen, Genz, and Soltau, as against Niebuhr, Schwegler, and Ihne. Even in the later "comitia cen- turiata" the traces of the originally military character of the organ- ization are unmistakable.

3 The century ceased to represent companies of one hundred when the whole organization ceased to be military and became exclusively political.

4 The property qualification for service in the first class is given at 100,000 asses (Livy), for the second at 70,000, third 50,000, fourth 25,000, fifth 11,000. It was probably originally a certain acreage in land, afterwards translated into terms of money ; ¢f. Mommsen, Rom. Tribus, 115.

- *Polyb., vi. 20; Mommsen, Rim. Trib., 132 sq.*

6 Livy, i. 48. Dionys. (iv. 18) and Cic. (De Rep., ii. 22) ascribe the whole eighteen to Servius. But the six older centuries remained distinct, as the "'sex sulfragia" of the comitia centuriata; Cic. De Mvepe,) We 22.

7 Dionys., iv. 14, eis ras karaypapas Tay oTpaTiwTay.

8 Livy, i. 48. The four were Palatina, Suburana, Hxquilina, Collina.

® See Grotefend, Imperium R. tributim descriptum, 27, 67. The inclusion of landless men (" proletarii") in the tribes belongs to a later time, when the tribes had ccased to have a purely military significance ; ¢f. the formation of a ceutury of " capite censi."'

ROM 139

The last of these Etruscan lords to rule in Rome was Fall of Tarquin the Proud. He is described as a splendid and the mon-

despotic monarch. His sway extended over Latiuin as far south as Circeii. Aristodemus, tyrant of Cume, was his ally, and kinsmen of his own were princes at Collatia, at Gabii, and at Tusculum. The Volscian high- landers were chastised, and Signia with its massive walls was built to hold them in check. In Rome itself the Capitoline temple and the great cloaca bore witness to his power. But his rule pressed heavily upon the Romans, and at the last, on the news of the foul wrong done by his son Sextus toa noble Roman matron, Lucretia, the indignant people rose in revolt. Tarquin, who was away besieging Ardea, was deposed ; sentence of exile was passed upon him and upon all his race; and the people swore that never again should a king rule in Rome. Freed from the tyrant, they chose for themselves two yearly magistrates who should exercise the "supreme

authority, and thus the republic of Rome was founded. Three times the banished Tarquin strove desperately to recover the throne he had lost. First of all the men of Veii and Tarquinii marched to his aid, but were defeated in a pitched battle on the Roman frontier. A year later Lars Porsena, prince of Clusium, at the head of all the powers of Etruria, appeared before the gates of Rome, and closely besieged the city, until, moved by the valour of his foe, he granted honourable terms of peace and withdrew.!? Once again, by Lake Regillus, the Romans fought victoriously for their liberty against Tarquin's son-in-law Mamilins, prince of Tusculum, and chief of the Latin name. Mamilius was slain; Tarquin in despair found a refuge at Cuma, and there soon afterwards died.

So, in brief, ran the story of the flight of the kings, as it was told by the chroniclers whom Livy followed. Its details are most of them fabulous; it is crowded with inconsistencies and improbabilities; there are no trust-worthy dates; the names even of the chief actors are probably fictitious, and the hand of the improver, Greek or Roman, is traceable throughout. The struggle was doubtless longer and sharper, and the new constitution more gradually shaped, than tradition would have us believe. Possibly, too, this revolution in Rome was but a part of a widespreading wave of change in Latium and central Italy, similar to that which in Greece swept away the old heroic monarchies. But there is no room for doubting the main facts of the emancipation of Rome from the rule of alien princes and the final abolition of the kingly office.

II. The Republic.

Pertop I.: 509-265 3.c.l2—(a) The Struggle between the 245-489 Orders. —It is characteristic of Rome that the change from 4-¥-°.

monarchy to republic!® should have been made with the least possible disturbance of existing forms. The title of king was retained, though only as that of a priestly officer (rex sacrorum) to whom some of the religious functions of the former kings were transferred. The two annually elected consuls, or "' praetores,"!4 were regarded as joint heirs of the full kingly authority, and as holding the "imperium," and the correlative right of auspices, by

10 Livy, ii. 9-14. Pliny (W. W7., 34, 14) and Tacitus (Anm., iii. 72) imply the existence of a tradition, possibly that of " Tuscan annalists,"' according to which Porsena actually made himself master of Rome. The whole story is fully criticized by Schwegler (ii. 181 sq.) and Zoller (Latiwm u. Rom, p. 180).

11 See the exhaustive criticism in Schwegler (ii. pp. 66-208).

12 The dates in the margin throughout are the years from the foundation of the city.

13 Schwegler (ii. 92) suggests that the dictatorship formed an intermediate step between the monarchy and the consulate; cf. Ihne, im. Forsch., 42.

1 For the title " praetor," sec Mommsen, Staatsrceht, ii. 70, note.

direct transmission from the founder of the city. They were, it is true, elected or created by a new assembly, by the army of freeholders voting by their classes and centuries (comitia centuriata), and to this body was given also the right of passing laws ; but nevertheless it was still by a vote of the 30 curies (lex curiata) that the supreme authority was formally conferred on the magistrates chosen by the centuries of freeholders, and both the choice of magistrates and the passing of laws still required the sanction of the patrician senators (patrum auctoritas).! Nor, lastly, were the legal prerogatives of the senate altered, although it is probable that before long plebeians were admitted to seats, if not to votes, and though its importance was gradually increased by the substitution of an annual magistracy for the life-long rule of a single king. But the abolition of the monarchy brought with it a change of the utmost importance in the actual working of. the constitution. Though the distinction between patricians and plebeians was at least as old as the state itself, it is not until the establishment of the republic that it plays any part in the history of Rome. No sooner, however, was the overshadowing authority of the king removed than a struggle commenced between the two orders which lasted for more than two centuries. It was in no sense a struggle between a

conquering and a con- quered class, or between an exclusive citizen body and an unenfranchised mass outside its pale.? Patricians and plebeians were equally citizens of Rome, sprung of the same race and speaking the same tongue. The former were the members of those ancient "'gentes" which had possibly been once the "chiefly" families in the small communities which preceded the united state, and which claimed by hereditary right a privileged position in the community. Only patricians could sit in the council of patres, and hence probably the name given to their order.3 To their representatives the supreme authority reverted on the death of the king; the due transmission of the auspicia and the public worship of the state gods were their special care ; and to them alone were known the tra- ditional usages and forms which regulated the life of the people from day to day. To the "plebs" (the multitude, 7700s) belonged all who were not members of some patrician gens, whether independent freenien or attached as "clients" to one of the great houses. The plebeian was a citizen, with civil rights and a vote in the assembly of the curies, but he was excluded by ancient custom from all share in the higher honours of the state, and inter- marriage with a patrician was not recognized as a properly legal union.*

The revolution which expelled the Tarquins gave the patricians, who had mainly assisted in bringing it about, an overwhelming ascendency in the state. The plebs had indeed gained something. Not only is it probable that the strictness of the old tie of clientship had somewhat relaxed, and that the number of the "clientes" was smaller and their dependence on patrician patrons less complete, but the ranks of the plebs had, under the later kings, been swelled by the admission of conquered Latins, and the freeholders among these had with others been enrolled in the Servian tribes, classes, and centuries. The establish- ment of the republic invested this military levy of free-

7 'The present writer has adopted the view of the " patrum auctori- tas taken by Mommsen (Forsch., i.). Others identify it with the

lex curiata," or at least closely connect the two.

eC Here again the present writer has in the main followed Mommsen, as against Schwegler, Ihne, Zoller, and others.

3 Of. “aedilis,” “aedilicius,” é&e.; Cie, De Rep. it, 12. Wivy, i,%8: For a full discussion of other views, see Soltau, 179 sq. ; Christensen Hermes, ix. 196. ‘ ,

4 For the “clientela,”

(i. 638), see Mommsen (Forsch., i.) and Schwegler

holders with political rights as an assembly, for by their votes the consuls were chosen and laws passed, and it was the plebeian freeholders who formed the main strength of the plebs in the struggle that followed. But these gains were greater in appearance than in reality. The plebeian freeholders commanded only a minority of votes in the comitia centuriata. In their choice of magistrates they were limited to the patrician candidates nominated by patrician presiding magistrates, and their choice required confirmation not only by the older and smaller assembly of the curiz, in which the patricians and their clients pre- dominated, but also by the patrician patres. They could only vote on laws proposed by patrician consuls, and here again the subsequent sanction of the patres was necessary. The whole procedure of the comitia was in short absolutely in the hands of their patrician presidents, and liable to every sort of interruption and suspension from patrician pontiffs and augurs.

But these political disabilities did not constitute the main grievance of the plebs in the early years of the re- public. What they fought for was protection for their lives and liberties, and the object of attack was the despotic authority of the patrician magistrates. The consuls wielded the full “imperium” of the kings, and against this “‘con- sular authority” the plebeian, though a citizen, had no protection and no appeal, and matters were only worse when for the two consuls was substituted in some emer- gency a single, all-powerful, irresponsible dictator. In Rome, as in Greece, the first efforts of the people were directed against the arbitrary powers of the executive magistrate.

*The history of this struggle between the orders opens with a concession made to the plebs by one of the consuls themselves, a concession possibly due to a desire to secure the allegiance of the plebeian freeholders, who formed the backbone of the army. In the very first year of the republic, according to the received chronology, P. Valerius Poplicola carried in the comitia centuriata his famous law of appeal.' It enacted that no magistrate, saving only a dictator, should execute a capital sentence upon any Roman citizen unless the sentence had been confirmed on appeal by the assembly of the centuries. But, though the "right of appeal" granted by this law was justly regarded in later times as the greatest safeguard of a Roman's liberties, it was by no means at first so effective a pro- tection as it afterwards became. For not only was the operation of the law limited to the bounds of the city, so that the consul in the field or on the march was left as absolute as before, but no security was provided for its observance even within the city by consuls resolved to disregard it. *

It was by their own efforts that the plebeians first obtained any real protection against magisterial despotism. The traditional accounts of the first secession are con- fused and contradictory,® but its causes and results are tolerably clear. The seceders were the plebeian legionaries recently returned from a victorious campaign. Indignant at the delay of the promised reforms, they ignored the order given them to march afresh against Volsci and Aiqui, and instead entrenched themselves on a hill across the Anio, some three miles from Rome, and known afterwards as the Mons Sacer. The frightened patricians came to terms, and a solemn agreement (lex sacrata)' was con- cluded between the orders, by which it was provided that henceforth the plebeians should have annual magistrates of their own (tribuni plebis), members of their own order, who should be authorized to protect them against the

> Livy, ii. 8, lex Valeria de provocatione; Cic. De Rep., ii. 31; cf. Livy, iii. 20. 6 Schwegler, ii. 226 sq. ? Schwegler, ii. 251, note; Livy, i. 33.

Lex Valeria

@ provo- |

catione,

The first secession and the tribunate.

| |

Lex Publilia.

283.

Agrarian agitation.

ae)

consuls,! and a curse was invoked upon the man who should injure or impede the tribuue in the performance of his duties.2. The number of tribunes was at first two, then five, and before 449 B.c. it had been raised to ten. The fact that the institution of the tribunate of the plebs was the one result of the first secession is strong evidence that the object of the seceders was not economic or agrarian reform but protection against the consuls. The tribunate gave them this protection in a form which has no parallel in history. The tribune was not, and, strictly speaking, never became, a magistrate of the Roman people. His one proper prerogative was that of granting protection to the oppressed plebeian against a patrician officer. This prerogative (jus auxilii) was secured to the tribunes, not by the ordinary constitution, but by a special compact between the orders, and was protected by the ancient oath (vetus jusjurandum),® which invoked a curse upon the violator of a tribune. This exceptional and anomalous right the tribunes could only exercise in person, within the limits of the " pomoerium," and against individual acts of magisterial oppression. It was only gradually that it expanded into the later wide power of interference with the whole machinery of govern- ment, and was supplemented by the legislative and judicial powers which rendered the tribunate of the last century B.C. so formidable, and the " tribunitia potestas " so essen- tial an element in the authority of the emperors.

But from the first the tribunes were for the plebs not only protectors but leaders, under whom they organized themselves in opposition to the patricians. The tribunes convened assemblies of the plebs (concilia

plebis), and earried resolutions on questions of interest to the order. This incipient plebeian organization was materially ad- vanced by the Publilian law of 471 3.c.,5 which appears to have formally recognized as lawful the plebeian concilia, and established also the tribune's right "cum plebe agere," %.¢., to propose and carry resolutions in them. These assemblies were 'tributa," or, in other words, the voting in them took place not by curies or centuries but by tribes. In them, lastly, after the Publilian law, if not before, the tribunes were annually elected. By this law the founda- tions were laid both of the powerful '"comitia tributa"? of later days and also of the legislative and judicial prerogatives of the tribunes. The patricians maintained indeed that resolutions (plebiscita) carried by tribunes in the concilia plebis were not binding on their order, but the moral weight of such resolutions, whether they affirmed a general principle or pronounced sentence of condemnation on some single patrician, was no doubt considerable.

It is atany rate certain that the passing of the Publilian law was followed by increased activity on the part of the tribunes. The attack on the consular authority was continued, and combined with it we have a persistent effort made to secure for the plebs their fair share of the common lands of the state (agri publici). The main object, however, of this early agrarian agitation was not economic but political. Membership in a tribe was now more than ever important for a plebeian, as giving a vote not only in the comitia centuriata but also in the plebeian " concilia," and membership in a tribe was possible as yet only for freeholders.6 To increase the number of freeholders

1 Cie. De Rep., ii. 34, "contra consulare imperium creati."

2 Livy, iii. 55. 3 Festus, 818; Appian, B. C., i. 138.

Gall, xiii, 12, "wt injuria quae coram fieret arceretur."

® Livy, ii. 56, 60; Dionys., ix. 41 ; Schwegler, ii. 541 ; Soltau, 493.

6 For theories as to the original mode of appointing tribunes, see Mominsen, Forsch., i. 185.

“It is impossible to accept Mommsen’s theory of a patricio-plebeian comitia tributa, as distinct from the plebeian assembly by tribes.

8 “Proletarii” were not admitted before the decemvirate, and according to Mommsen not until 310 B.c. There were now twenty-

one tribes, seventeen having been added shortly after the establish- ment of the republic. Livy, ii. 21; Soltau, 481.

STRUGGLE OF THE ORDERS.]

M EE 137

became therefore a matter of importance, and the simplest mode of increasing the number of freeholders was for the state to create freeholds on the common lands. But such a policy met with bitter opposition from the patricians, who had long enjoyed a virtual monopoly of these lands, and had excluded the plebeians even from those more recently acquired tracts which they had helped to win by their swords. Against this patrician monopoly the tribunes unceasingly protested from a few years after the first secession down to 465 3.c.9 In that year a compromise was effected by the colonization of Antium, which had been taken the year before, and the plebeians obtained land without any disturbance of patrician occupiers. Eleven years later the common lands on the Aventine were reclaimed and assigned to plebeians by a lex Icilia.1°

289.

But this agrarian agitation, though destined subse- The de- quently to play an important part in the history, was for cemvirate.

the time far less fruitful in results than that which was directed against the consular authority.

The proposal of C. Terentilius Arsa (460 B.c.) to appoint a plebeian commission to draw up laws restricting the powers of the consuls! was resolutely opposed by the patricians, but after ten years of bitter party strife a compromise was effected. A commission of ten patricians was

appointed, who should frame and publish a code of law binding equally on both the orders. These decemviri were to be the sole and supreme magistrates for the year, and the law of appeal was suspended in their favour.!2 The code which they promulgated, the famous XTI. Tables, owed little of its importance to any novelties or improve- ments contained in its provisions. For the most part it seems merely to have reaffirmed existing usages and laws (see Roman Law). But it substituted a public, written law, binding on all citizens of Rome, for an unwritten usage, the knowledge of which was confined to a few patricians, and which had been administered by this nunority in their own interests. With the publication of the code the proper work of the decemvirs was finished ; nevertheless for the next year a fresh decemvirate was elected, and it is conceivable that the intention was per- manently to substitute government by an irresponsible patrician 'council of ten" for the old constitution. How- ever this may have been, the tyranny of the decemvirs themselves was fatal to .the continuance of their power. We are told of a second secession of the plebs, this time to the Janiculum, and of negotiations with the senate, the result of which was the enforced abdication of the decem- virs. The plebs joyfully chose for themselves tribunes, and in the comitia centuriata two consuls were created. But this restoration of the old regime was accompanied by legislation which made it an important crisis in the history of the struggle between the orders. decemvirate this struggle enters upon a new phase. The tribunes appear as at once more powerful and more strictly constitutional magistrates; the plebeian 'concilia" take their place as formal comitia by the side of the older assemblies ; and finally this improved machinery is used not simply in self-defence against patrician oppression but to obtain complete political equality. This change was no doubt due in part to circumstances outside legisla- tion, above all to the expansion of the Roman state, which swelled the numbers and added to the social importance of the plebs as compared with the dwindling forces of the close corporation of patrician gentes. Still the legislation " 9 Whatever the historical value of the story of Sp. Cassius's agrarian law, the existence of a sustained agrarian agitation during this pcriod can ag be doubted (Mommsen, Rom. Forsch., ii. 158 ; Schwegler, ji. 455).

10 Livy, iii. 31; Dionys., x. 31. The Aventine was said to have been previously common woodland.

1 Livy, iii. 9. 12 Livy, iii, 32. XX. — 93

294.

Valerio- Horatian a

*With the fall of the @™**

738 iy

of 449 clearly involved more than a restoration of the old form of government. The Valerio-Horatian laws, besides reaffirming the right of appeal and the inviolability of the tribunes, improved the position of the plebeian assemblies by enacting that " plebiscita" passed in them, and, as seems probable, approved by the patres, should be binding on patricians as well as plebeians.1 By this law the tribunes obtained a recognized initiative in legislation. Hence- forth the desired reforms were introduced and carried by tribunes in what were now styled "comitia tributa," and, if sanctioned by the patres, became laws of the state. From this period, too, must be dated the legalization at any rate of the tribune's right to impeach any citizen before the assembly of the tribes.2 Henceforward there is no question of the tribune's right to propose to the plebs to impose a fine, or of the validity of the sentence when passed. The efficiency of these new weapons of attack was amply proved by the subsequent course of the struggle. Only a few years after the Valerio-Horatian

ME

advantage, and to this must be added the pressure of war. The death struggle with Veii and the sack of Rome by the Gauls absorbed for the time all the energies of the community. In 377, however, two of the tribunes, C. Licinius Stolo and L. Sextius, came forward with pro- posals which united all sections of the plebs in their support. Their proposals were as follows :—(1) that con- suls and not consular tribunes be elected; (2) that one consul at least should be a plebeian ; (3) that the*

priestly college, which had the charge of the Sibylline books, should consist of ten members instead of two, and that of these half should be plebeians ; (4) that no single citizen should hold in occupation more than 500 acres of the common lands, or pasture upon them more than 100 head of cattle and 500 sheep; (5) that all landowners should employ a certain amount of free as well as slave labour on their estates ; (6) that interest already paid on debts should be deducted from the principal, and the remainder paid off in three years. The three last proposals were obviously

[HISTORY.

Lex legislation came the lex Canuleia (445 B.c.), by which | intended to meet the demands of the poorer plebeians,

Canuleia. mixed marriages between patricians and plebeians were | and to secure their support for the first half of the scheme.

309. declared lawful, and the social exclusiveness of the | Ten years of bitter conflict followed, but at last, in 367 patriciate broken down. In the same year with this | B.c., the Licinian rogations became law, and one of their measure, and like it in the interests primarily of the | authors, L. Sextius, was created the first plebeian consul.

Leges Wealthier plebeians, a vigorous attack commenced on the | For the moment it was some consolation to the patricians

Liciniae patrician monopoly of the consulate, and round this | that they not only succeeded in detaching from the consul-

Sextiae. stronghold of patrician ascendency the conflict raged until | ship the administration of civil law, which was entrusted to 387. the passing of the Licinian laws in 367. The original | a separate officer, " praetor urbanus," to be elected by the proposal of Canuleius in 445 that the people should be | comitia of the centuries, with an understanding apparently allowed to elect a plebeian consul was evaded by a com- | that he should be a patrician, but also obtained the promise. The senate resolved that for the next year, in | institution of two additional zdiles

("aediles curules"), who the stead of consuls, six military tribunes with consular | were in like manner to be members of their own order.? powers should be elected,' and that the new office should | With the opening of the consulship, however, the issue of be open to patricians and plebeians alike. The consulship | the long contest was virtually decided, and the next eighty was thus for the time saved from pollution, as the patri- | years witnessed a rapid succession of plebeian victories. cians phrased it, but the growing strength of the plebs is | Now that a plebeian consul might preside at the elections, Opening

shown by the fact that in fifty years out of the seventy- | the main difficulty in the way of the nomination and

310-388. eight between 444 and 366 they succeeded in obtaining | election of plebeian candidates was removed. The pro-

the election of consular tribunes rather than of consuls. A

posed patrician monopoly of the new curule edileship was

good omen for their ultimate success was a victory they won in connexion with the inferior office of the queestorship. Down to the time of the decemvirate the questors had 307. been nominated by the consuls, but in 447 their appoint-

almost instantly abandoned. In 356 the first plebeian 398. was made dictator, in 350 the censorship, and in 337 the 404, 417, preetorship were filled for the first time by plebeians, and

lastly, in 300, by the lex Ogulnia, even the sacred 454.

ment was transferred to the plebeian "comitia tributa,"

colleges of the pontiffs and augurs, the old strongholds of

333. and in 421 the first plebeian was elected to the office. | patrician supremacy, were thrown open to the plebs.$] Despite, however, these discouragements, the patricians | The patricians lost also the control they

had exercised so fought on. Each year they strove to secure the creation long over the action of the people in assembly. The of consuls rather than consular tribunes, and failing this | " patrum auctoritas," the sanction given or refused by the strained every nerve to secure for their own order at least patrician senators to laws and to elections, had hitherto @ majority among the latter. Even the institution of | been a powerful weapon in their hands. But in 339 a 4165. |

319. the censorship (435), though rendered desirable by the | law of Q. Publilius Philo, a plebeian dictator, enacted Publilian

increasing importance and complexity of the census, was, 1t 18 probable, due in part to their desire to discount before- hand the threatened loss of the consulship by diminish- ing its powers.? Other causes, too, helped to protract the struggle. Between the wealthier plebeians, who were ambitious of high office, and the poorer, whose minds were set rather on allotments of land, there was a division of interest of which the patricians were not slow to take

1 Livy, iii. 55, ' quuin veluti in controverso jure esset, tenerenturne patres plebiscitis legem comitiis centuriatis tulere, ut quod tributim plebs Jussisset populum teneret, qua lege tribuniciis rogationibus telum acerrimum datum est." What were the precise conditions under which a plebiscitum " became law, and what was the exact effect of the lex Publilia of 339 and the lex Hortensia of 287, can only be conjectured. One of the two last can hardly have been more than a reaffirmation of a previous law.

? After the decemvirate, the tribunes no longer pronounce capital sentences. They propose fines, which are confirmed by the comitia taba. , 3 Livy, iv. 7; ¢f. Monimsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 165.

; Livy, iv. 43 ; Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 497.

Mommsen, id., 304

*that this sanction should be given beforehand to all laws ;9 @**

and by a lex Maenia, carried apparently some fifty years later, the same rule was extended to elections. Hencefor- ward the ‘“‘patrum auctoritas” sank into a meaningless form, though as such it still survived in the time of Livy. A second Publilian law affirmed afresh the validity of “plebiscita,” 7.e, of measures carried in the plebeian comitia tributa.

found necessary finally to settle the question.!° From 287 onwards it is certain that measures passed by the plebs, voting by their tribes, had the full force of laws without

® Livy, vi. 85, 42; Appian, B. C., i. 8.

7 Livy, vi. 42. 8 Rivy, vil, 17, 22° viii, 15; ino

- *Livy, viii. 12, ‘ut. . . ante initum suffragium patres auctores fierent,” cf Livy, i. 17. For the “lex Maenia,” see Cic, Brut., 14; Soltau, 112.*

1) Plin., MV. W., xvi. 10; Gell., xv. 27; Gaius, i. 8, ‘ plebiscita lege Hortensia non minus valere quam leges.”

Apparently, however, their validity was Lex Hor- still left subject to some conditions, for in 287 a lex tensia Hortensia, carried by another plebeian dictator, was 467

411.

411-485.

347,

League with the Latins and Her- nicans,

261.

CONQUEST OF ITALY.] ROME 739

any further conditions whatsoever. The legislative inde- pendence of the plebeian assembly was secured, and with this crowning victory ended the long struggle between the orders.

(6) Conquest of Italy.—Twelve years after the passing of the lex Hortensia, King Pyrrhus, beaten at Beneventum, withdrew from Italy,and Rome was left mistress of the peninsula. .The steps by which this supremacy had been won have now to be traced. Under the rule of her Etruscan princes Rome spread her sway over the lowlands of Latium, and her arms were a terror to the warlike highlanders of the Sabine and Volscian hills. But with their fall this minia- ture empire fell also, and at first it seemed as if the infant republic, torn by internal dissensions, must succumb to the foes who threatened it from so many sides at once. It was only after one hundred and fifty years of almost con- stant war that Rome succeeded in rolling back the tide of invasion and in establishing her supremacy over the neigh- bouring lowlands and over the hill country which bordered them to the east and south, The close of this first stage in her external growth is conveniently marked by the first collision with the Sabellian peoples beyond the Liris in 343.1 In marked contrast with the slowness of her advance up to this point is the fact that only seventy-five years more were needed for the virtual subjugation of all the rest of the peninsula (343-269).

The expulsion of the Tarquins from Rome, followed as it seems to have been by the emancipation from Etruscan supremacy of all the country between the Tiber and the Liris, entirely altered the aspect of affairs. North of the Tiber the powerful Etruscan city of Veii, after a vain attempt to restore the Tarquins, relapsed into an attitude of sullen hostility towards Rome, which, down to the outbreak of the final struggle in 407, found vent in con- stant and harassing border forays. The Sabines recom- menced their raids across the Anio; from their hills to the south-east the Aqui pressed forward as far as the eastern spurs of the Alban range, and ravaged the plain country between that range and the Sabine mountains ; the Volsci overran the coast-lands as far as Antium, established themselves at Velitree, and even ravaged the fields within a few miles of Rome. But the good fortune of Rome did not leave her to face these foes single- handed, and it is a significant fact that the history of the Roman advance begins, not with a brilliant victory, but with a useful and timely alliance. According to Livy, it was in 493, only a few years after the defeat of the prince of Tusculum at Lake Regillus, that a treaty was concluded between Rome and the Latin communities of the Campagna.? The

alliance was in every respect natural. The Latins were the near neighbours and kinsmen of the Romans, and both Romans and Latins were just freed from Etruscan rule to find themselves as lowlanders and dwellers in towns face to face with a common foe in the ruder hill tribes on their borders. The exact terms of the treaty cannot, any more than the precise circumstances under which it was concluded, be stated with certainty (see Latium), but two points seem clear. There was at first a genuine equality in the relations between the allies ; Romans and Latins, though combining for defence and offence, did so without sacrificing their separate freedom of action, even in the matter of waging wars independently of each other. But, secondly, Rome enjoyed from the first one inestimable advantage. The Latins lay between her and the most active of her foes, the Auqui and Volsci, and served to protect her territories at the expense of their own. Behind this barrier Rome grew strong, and the close of the Aquian and Volscian wars left the Latins

? Livy, vii. 29. 2 Livy, ii, 38; Cic. Pro Balbo, 23.

3 Livy, viii, 2.

her dependents rather than her allies. Beyond the limits of the Campagna Rome found a second ally, hardly less useful than the Latins, in the tribe of the Hernici ('the men of the rocks"), in the valley of the Trerus, who had equal reason with the Romans and Latins to dread the Volsci and Aiqui, while their position midway between the two latter peoples made them valuable auxiliaries to the lowlanders of the Campagna.

The treaty with the Hernici is said to have been con- cluded in 486, and the confederacy of the three peoples 265. —Romans, Latins, and Hernicans—lasted down to the great Latin war in 340, Confused and untrustworthy as 414. are the chronicles of the early wars of Rome, it is clear that notwithstanding the acquisition of these allies Rome made but little way against her foes during the first fifty years of the existence of the republic. In 474, it is true, 280. an end was put for a time to the harassing border feud with Veii by a forty years' peace, an advantage due not so much to Roman valour as to the increasing dangers from other quarters which were threatening the Etruscan states.° But this partial success stands alone, and down to 449 the raids of Sabines, AXqui, and

Volsci continue 305. without intermission, and are occasionally carried up to the very walls of Rome. Very different is the impression left by the annals of the next sixty years (449-390), 305-364. During this period there is an unmistakable development of Roman power on all sides.

In southern Etruria the capture of Veii (396) virtually Capture gave Rome the mastery as far as the Ciminian forest. of Veii. Sutrium and Nepete, "the gates of Etruria," became 358. her allies and guarded her interests against any attack from the Etruscan communities to the north, while along the Tiber valley her suzerainty was acknowledged as far as Capena and Falerii. On the Anio frontier we hear of no disturbances from 449 until some ten years after the sack of Rome by the Gauls. In 446 the A'qui 308. appear for the last time before the gates of Rome. After 418 they disappear from Mount Algidus, and in 336. the same year the communications of Rome and Latium with the Hernici in the Trerus valley were secured by the capture and colonization of Labicum. Successive invasions, too, broke the strength of the Volsci, and in 393 361. a Latin colony was founded as far south as Circeii. In part, no doubt, these Roman successes were due to the improved condition of affairs in Rome itself, consequent upon the great reforms carried between 450 and 442; but 304-312. it is equally certain that now as often afterwards fortune befriended Rome by weakening, or by diverting the atten- tion of, her opponents. In particular, her rapid advance Decline of in southern Etruria was facilitated by the heavy blows Etruscan inflicted upon the Etruscans during the 5th century p.c, PY by Celts, Greeks, and Samnites. By the close of this century the Celts had expelled them from the rich plains of what was afterwards known as Cisalpine Gaul, and were even threatening to advance across the Apen- nines into Etruria proper. The Sicilian Greeks, headed by the tyrants cf Syracuse, wrested from them their mastery of the seas, and finally, on the capture of Capua by the Samnites in 423, they lost their possessions in the fertile 331. Campanian plain. These conquests of the Samnites were part of a great southward movement of the highland Sabellian peoples, the immediate effects of which upon the fortunes of Rome were not confined to the weakening of the Etruscan power. It is probable that the cessation of the Sabine raids across the Anio was partly due to the new outlets which were opened

southwards for the restless and populous hill tribes which had so long disturbed the peace of the Latin lowlands. We may conjecture, also,

4 Livy, ii. 40. 5 From the Celts in the north especially.

Sack of But in 390, only six years after the great victory over | lying between the hills and the sea as far south as

Rome by her ancient rival Veii, the Roman advance was for a | Tarracina. Latin colonies were established at Satricum

He moment checked by a disaster which threatened to alter | (385), at Setia (379), and at Antium and Tarracina some 369, 378,

eae the course of history in Italy, and which left a lasting | time before 348. In 358 two fresh Roman tribes (Pomp- 406, 396

363. : é z : d ona ; ee VE ee impress on the Roman mind. In 391 a Celtic horde left | tina and Publilia) were formed in the same district. their newly won lands on the Adriatic, and, crossing the Rome had now nothing more to fear from the foes who Re- Apennines into Etruria, laid siege to the Etruscan city | a century ago had threatened her very existence. The ae of Clusium (Chiusi). Thence, provoked, it is said, by | lowland country, of which she was the natural centre, the the conduct of the Roman ambassadors, who, forgetting | from the Ciminian forest to Tarracina, was quiet, and league, their sacred character, had fought in the ranks of | within its limits Rome was by far the strongest power, Clusium and slain a Celtic chief, the barbarians marched | But she had now to reckon with the old and faithful allies

364, upon Rome. On July 18, 390 B.c., onlya few miles from | to whose loyal aid her present position was largely due.

393-4. even once penetrated as far south as Campania (361-360), | rather than the equals of Rome, a position which it is the Celts never obtained any footing in Italy outside the | evident that they accepted much against their will, and plains in the north which they had made their own. from which they were yet to make one last effort to

Annexa- Nor, in spite of the defeat on the Allia and the sack of escape.

oa a the city, was Rome weakened except for the moment by We have now reached the close of the first stage in

Etruria, the Celtic attack. The storm passed away as rapidly as | Rome's advance towards supremacy in Italy. By 343 411. it had come on. The city was hastily rebuilt, and Rome | B.c. she was already mistress both of the low country dismayed the enemies who hastened to take advantage of | stretching from the Ciminian forest to Tarracina and her misfortunes by her undiminished vigour. Her con- | Circcii and of the bordering highlands. Her own terri- quests in southern Etruria were successfully defended | tory had largely increased. Across the Tiber the lands against repeated attacks from the Etruscans to the north. | of Veii, Capena, and Cere were nearly all Roman, while

367. The creation in 387 of four new tribes (Stellatina, | in Latium she had carried her frontiers to Tusculum on Sabatina, Tromentina, Arniensis) marked the final annexa. the Alban range and to the southernmost limits of the tion of the territory of Veii and of the lands lying along | Pomptine district. And this territory was protected by a the Tiber valley. A few years later Latin colonies were | circle of dependent allies and colonies reaching northward established at Sutrium and Nepete for the more effectual | to Sutrium and Nepete, and southward to Sora on the

401. defence of the frontier, and finally, in 353, the subjuga- | upper Liris, and to Circeii on the coast. Already, too, she tion of South Etruria was completed by the submission was beginning to be recognized as a power outside the of Care (Cervetri) and its partial incorporation with | limits of the Latin lowlands, The fame of the capture of the Roman State as a "municipium sine suffragio "—the | Rome by the Celts had reached Athens, and her subse-

eet on it 1s said, of its kind,! quent victories over marauding Celtic bands had given

a ext to the settlement of southern Etruria, the most | her prestige in South Italy as a bulwark against northern

Pai and important of the successes gained by Rome between 390 | barbarians. In 354 she had formed her first connexions 400.

Volsci, nd 343 Bo. were those won against her old foes the beyond the Liris by a treaty with the Samnites, and

364-411, "Equi and Volsci, and her old allies the Latins and | in 348 followed a far more important treaty with the great 406.

ermicans, The Aiqui indced, already weakened by their | maritime state of Carthage.5 long feud with Rome, and hard pressed by the Sabellian | Rome had won her supremacy from the Ciminian forest —_ tribes in their rear, were easily dealt with, and after the

740 RO

that the growing feebleness exhibited by Volsci and Aiqui was in some measure caused by the pressure upon their rear of the Sabellian clans which at this time established themselves near the Fucine Lake and along the course of the Liris.

Rome, was fought the disastrous battle of the Allia. The defeat of the Romans was complete, and Rome lay at the mercy of her foe. But in characteristic fashion the Celts halted three days to enjoy the fruits of victory, and time was thus given to put the Capitol at least in a state of defence. The arrival of the barbarians was followed by the sack of the city, but the Capitol remained impreg- nable. For seven months they besieged it, and then in as sudden a fashion as they had come they disappeared. The Roman chroniclers explain their retreat in their own way, by the fortunate appearance of Camillus with the troops which he had collected, at the very moment when famine had forced the garrison on the Capitol to accept terms. More probably the news that their lands across the Apennines were threatened by the Veneti, coupled with the unaccustomed tedium of a long siege and the difficulty of obtaining supplies, inclined the Celts to accept readily a heavy ransom as the price

of their withdrawal. But, whatever the reason, it is certain that they retreated, and, though during the next fifty years marauding bands appeared at intervals in the neighbourhood of Rome, and

campaign of 389 we have no further mention of an

- *For the status of Cere, and the "Czrite franchise," see Mar-*

quardt, Staatsverw., i. 28 sq, + Padvic : ; Ital. Bund, 120. ' q-; Madvig, R. Verf., i. 89; Beloch,

M E

/Equian war until the last AZquian rising in 304. Volsci, who in 389 had advanced to Lanuvium, were met and utterly defeated by M. Furius Camillus, the con- queror of Veli, and this victory was followed up by the gradual subjugation to Rome of all the lowland country

[HISTORY.

The Latins and Hernicans had suffered severely in the /quian and Volscian wars; it is probable that not a few of the smaller communities included in the league had either been destroyed or been absorbed by larger states, and the independence of all alike was threatened by the growing power of Rome. The sack of Rome by the Celts gave them an opportunity of reasserting their independ- ence, and we are consequently told that this disaster was immediately followed by the temporary dissolution of the confederacy, and this again a few years later by a series of actual conflicts between Rome and her former allies.

Between 383 and 358 we hear of wars with Tibur, Praneste, 371-396.

Tusculum, Lanuvium, Circeii, and the Hernici. But in all Rome was successful.

incorporated with the Roman state by the bestowal of

the full franchise ?; in 358, according to both Livy and 396.

Polybius the old alliance was formally renewed with Latins and Hernicans. We cannot, however, be wrong in assuming that the position of the allies under the new league was far inferior to that. accorded them by the treaty of Spurius Cassius. Henceforth they were the subjects

2 Livy 15. 3 Livy, vi. 26.

- *Mommsen, R. @., i. 347, note; Beloch, Zéal, Bund, cap. 1x.*

5 Livy, vii. 27. For the whole question of the early treaties with Carthage, see Polybius, iii, 22; Mommsen, R. G., i. 418, and Z. Chronol., p. 820; Vollmer, Rhein. Mus., xxxii. 614.

The 450,

In 382 Tusculum was fully 372,

nents i ———_-

ROME 741

SAMNITE AND LATIN Wars. |

Advance to the Liris as the champion of the comparatively civilized | self deliberately to the task of re-establishing on a new Settle- ane communities of the lowlands against the rude highland | and firmer basis her supremacy over the lowlands, and in ment of Ea vill tribes which threatened to overrun them, and so, when her doing so laid the foundations of that marvellous organiza- Latium ;

Samnite tion which was destined to spread rapidly over Italy, and Wars. from a lowland city against invaders from the hills. While | to withstand the attacks even of Hannibal. The old she was engaged in clearing Latium of Volsci and | historic Latin league ceased to exist, though its memory Aqui, the Sabellian tribes of the central Apennines had | was still preserved by the yearly Latin festival on the rapidly spread over the southern half of the peninsula. | Alban Mount. Most if not all of the common land of the Foremost among these tribes were the Samnites, a por- league becaine Roman territory ;5 five at least of the old tion of whom had captured the Etruscan city of Capua in | Latin cities were compelled to accept the Roman fran- 831, 334. 423, the Greek Cumz in 420, and had since then ruled | chise® and enter the pale of the Roman state. The rest, as masters over the fertile Campanian territory. But in| with the Latin colonies, were ranked as Latin allies of their new homes the conquerors soon lost all sense of Rome, but on terms which secured their complete depend- relationship and sympathy with their highland brethren. | ence upon the sovereign city. The policy of isolation, They

dwelt in cities, amassed wealth, and inherited the | which became so cardinal a principle of Roman rule, was civilization of the Greeks and Etruscans whom they had | now first systematically applied. No rights of '"con- dispossessed ;1 above all, they had before long to defend | nubium" or "commereium" were any longer to exist themselves in their turn against the attacks of their ruder | between these communities. Their federal councils were kinsmen from the hills, and it was for aid against these prohibited, and all federal action independent of Rome that the Samnites of Campania appealed to the rising | forbidden." state which had already made herself known as the bul- In future they were to have nothing in common but wark of the lowlands north of the Liris, and which with | their common connexion with Rome, a connexion based her Latin and Hernican allies had scarcely less interest | in each case on a separate treaty between the individual than the Campanian cities themselves in checking the | Latin community and Rome. The Latin allied state raids of the highland Samnite tribes. retained its internal independence and the old rights of First The Campanian appeal was listened to. Rome with intermarriage and commerce with Rome, but it lost all Samnite her confederates entered into alliance with Capua and the | freedom of action in external affairs. It could wage War. neighbouring Campanian towns, and war was formally | no wars, conclude no treaties, and was bound, so the 411. declared (343) against the Samnites.2 While to the phrase ran, to have always the same foes and friends Latins and Hernicans was entrusted apparently the defence | as Rome herself. In Canipania and the coast-lands and of of Latium and the Hernican valley against the northerly connecting Campania with Rome, a policy of annexa- Cam- members of the Samnite confederacy, the Romans them- | tion was considered safer than that of alliance. Of the Pavia selves undertook the task of driving the invaders out of | two frontier posts of the Volsci, Antium and Velitre, Campania. After two campaigns the war was ended in| the former was constituted a Roman colony, its long 413. 341 by a treaty, and the Samnites withdrew from the galleys burnt and their prows set up in the Forum at lowlands, leaving Rome the recognized suzerain of the Rome, while the walls of Velitree were razed to the Campanian cities which had sought her aid.® ground, its leading men banished beyond the Tiber, and There is no doubt that the check thus given by Rome ! their lands given to Roman settlers. Farther south on to

the advance of the hitherto invincible Sabellian high- | the route to Campania, Fundi and Formie were, after the landers not only made her the natural head and champion precedent set in the case of Cere, declared Roman and of the low countries, south as well as north of the Liris, | granted the civil rights of Roman citizenship, while lastly but also considerably added to her prestige. Carthage | in Campania itself the same status was given to Capua, sent her congratulations, and the Etruscan city of Falerii | Cun, and the smaller communities dependent upon voluntarily enrolled herself among the allies of Rome. | them.8 During the ten years from 338 to 328 the 416-426. Of even greater service, however, was the fact that | work of settlement was steadily continued. Tarracina, like for fifteen years the Samnites remained quiet, for this Antium, was made a Roman colony. Privernum, the last inactivity, whatever its cause, enabled Rome triumphantly | Volscian town to offer resistance to Rome, was subdued to surmount a danger which threatened for the moment | in 330, part of its territory allotted to Roman citizens, and 424. to wreck her whole position. This danger was nothing | the state itself forced to accept the Roman franchise. less than a desperate effort on the part of nearly all her Lastly, to strengthen the lines of defence against the allies and dependents south of the Tiber to throw off the | Sabellian tribes, two colonies with the rights of Latin The Latin yoke of her supremacy. The way was led by her ancient | allies were established at Fregelle and at Cales. The War. confederates the Latins, whose smouldering discontent | settlement of the lowlands was accomplished. From the

legions first crossed the Liris, it was in answer to an appeal

broke into open flame directly the fear of a Samnite attack was removed. From the Latin Campagna and the Sabine hills the revolt spread westward and southward to Antium and Tarracina, and even to the towns of the Campanian plain, where the mass of the inhabitants at once repudiated the alliance formed with Rome by the ruling class. The struggle was sharp but short. In two pitched battles the strength of the insurrection was broken, and two more campaigns sufficed for the complete reduction of such of the insurgent communi- ties as still held out. The revolt crushed, Rome set her-*

Ciminian forest to the southern extremity of the Cam- panian plain, the lands lying between the sea and the hills were now, with few exceptions, Roman territory, while along the frontiers from Sutrium and Nepete in the north to Cales in the south stretched the protecting line of the Latin allied states and colonies. As a single powerful and compact state with an outer circle of closely dependent allies, Rome now stood in sharp contrast with the disunited and degenerate cities of northern Etruria, the loosely organized tribes of the Apennines, and the decaying and disorderly Greek towns of the south.

‘ For the Samnites in Campania, see Mommisen, &. G., i. 353; Schwegler-Clason, 2. G., v. 98 sq.; Beloch, Campanien, Berlin, 1879.

2 Livy, vii. 32.

3 For the difficulties in the traditional accounts of this war, see Mommsen, 7. G., i. 355 note ; Schwegler-Clason, &. G., v. 14 sq.

4 At the foot of Mount Vesuvius, Livy, viii. 9; at Trifanum, Id., viii. 11.

5 Livy, viii. 11.

8 Livy, viii. 14; Lanuvium, Aricia, Nomentum, Pedum, Tusculum.

7 Id., loc, cit., “ceteris Latinis populis connubia commerciaque et concilia inter se ademerunt.”’

8 For the controversy as to the precise status of Capua and the “equites Campani” (Livy, viii. 14), see Beloch, Ztal.,Bund, 122 sq.; Id., Campanien, 317 ; Zumpt, Comment. Epigraph., p. 290.

Second Samnite War,

327-304 = 427-450,

412-427. 422,

427.

450,

433, 436.

438.

492.

742 hi 0

The strength of this system was now to be tried by a struggle with the one Italian people who were still ready and able to contest with Rome the supremacy of the peninsula. The passive attitude of the Samnites between 342 and 327 was no doubt largely due to the dangers which had suddenly threatened them in South Italy. But the death of Alexander of Epirus, in 332,! removed their only formidable opponent there, and left them free to turn their attention to the necessity of checking the steady advance of Rome. In 327, the year after the ominous foundation of a Roman colony at Fregelle, a pretext for renewing the struggle was offered them. The Cumezan colony of Palpolis? had incurred the wrath of Rome by its raids into her territory in Campania. The Samnites sent a force to defend it, and Rome replied by a declaration of war. The two opponents were not at first sight unequally matched, and had the Sabellian tribes held firmly together the issue of the struggle might have been different. As it was, however, the Lucanians to the south actually joined Rome from the first, while the northern clans Marsi, Vestini, Peeligni, Frentani, after a feeble and lukewarm resistance, subsided into a neutrality which was exchanged in 304 for a formal alliance with Rome. An even greater advantage to Rome from the outset was the enmity existing between Samnites and the Apulians, the latter of whom from the first joined Rome and thus gave her a position in the rear of her enemy and in a country eminently well fitted for maintaining a large military force. These weaknesses on the Samnite side were amply illustrated by the events of the war.

The first seven or eight years were marked by one serious disaster to the Roman arms, the defeat at the Caudine Forks (321), but, when in 318 the Samnites asked for and obtained a two years' truce, Rome had succeeded not only in inflicting several severe blows upon her enemies but in

isolating them from outside help. The Lucanians to the south were her allies. To the east, in the rear of Samnium, Apulia acknowledged the suzer- ainty of Rome, and Luceria, captured in 320, had been established as a base of Roman operations. Finally to the north the Romans had easily overcome the feeble resistance of the Vestini and Frentani, and secured through their territories a safe passage for their legions to Apulia. On the renewal of hostilities in 316, the Samnites, bent on escaping from the net which was being slowly drawn round them, made a series of desperate efforts to break through the lines of defence which protected Latium and Campania. Sora and Fregell on the upper Liris were captured by a sudden attack; the Ausones in the low country near the mouth of the same river were encouraged to revolt by the appearance of the Samnite army; and in Campania another army, attracted by rumours of disturb- ance, all but defeated the Roman consuls under the very walls of Capua. But these efforts were unavailing. Sora and Fregellz were recovered as quickly as they had been lost, and the frontier there was strengthened by the estab- lishment of a colony at Interamna. The Ausones were punished by the confiscation of their territory, and Roman supremacy further secured by the two colonies of Suessa and Pontia (312). The construction of the famous Via Appia,® the work of the censor Appius Claudius Czcus, opened a safe and direct route to Campania, while the capture of Nola deprived the Samnites of their last important stronghold in the Campanian lowlands. The failure of these attempts broke the courage even of the Samnites. Their hopes were indeed raised for a moment by the news that Etruria had risen against Rome (310), but their daring scheme of effecting a union with the Etruscans was frustrated by the energy .of the Roman

- *Livy, viii. 8, 17, 24. 2 Livy, viii. 22. 3 Livy, ix. 23,*

ME

generals. Samnite raid into Campania by an invasion of Samnium itself. Arpinum on the frontier was taken, and at last, after a twenty-two years' struggle, the Second Samnite War was closed by a renewal of the ancient treaty with Rome

(304).4

[wIstorRy.

The six years of peace which followed (304-298) 450-6,

were characteristically employed by Rome in still further strengthening her position. Already, two years before the peace, a rash revolt of the Hernici® had given Rome a pretext for finally annexing the territory of her ancient allies. The tribal confederacy was broken up, and all the Hernican communities, with the exception of three which had not joined the revolt, were incorporated with the Roman state as municipia, with the civil rights of the Roman franchise. Between the Hernican valley and the frontiers of the nearest Sabellian tribes lay what remained of the once formidable people of the Alqui. In

their case, too, a revolt (304) was followed by the annexa- 450,

tion of their territory, which was marked in this case by

the formation there (301) of two Roman tribes (Aniensis 453.

and Teretina).6 Not content with thus carrying the borders of their own territory up to the very frontiers of the Sabellian country, Rome succeeded in finally detaching from the Sabellian confederacy all the tribes lying' between the north-east frontier of Latium and the Adriatic Sea. Henceforward the Marsi, Peeligni, Vestini, Marrucini, and Frentani were enrolled among the allies of Rome, and not only swelled her forces in the field but interposed a useful barrier between her enemies to the north in Etruria and Umbria and those to the south in Samnium, while they connected her directly with the friendly Apulians. Lastly, as a security for the fidelity at least of the nearest of these allies, colonies were planted in the Marsian 'territories at Carseoli and at Alba Fucentia. A significant indication of the widening range of Rome's influence in Italy, and of the new responsibilities rapidly pressing upon her, is the

fact that when in 302 the Spartan Cleonymus landed in 454.

the territory of the Sallentini, far away in the south-east, he was inet and repulsed by a Roman force.8

Six years after the conclusion of the treaty which ended Third the Second Samnite War, news arrived that the Samnites Samnite were harassing the Lucanians. Rome at once interfered o9¢”999— Samnium was invaded in force, the 456464,

to protect her allies. country ravaged, and one stronghold after another cap- tured. Unable any longer to hold their own in a position where they were hedged round by enemies, the Samnite leaders turned as a last hope to the communities of northern Etruria, to the free tribes of Umbria, and to the once dreaded Celts. With a splendid daring they formed the scheme of uniting all these peoples with themselves in a last desperate effort to break the power of Rome.

For some forty years after the final annexation of Romans southern Etruria (351 3B.c.) matters had remained un-!”:*

changed in that quarter. Sutrium and Nepete still guarded the Roman frontier; the natural boundary of the Ciminian forest was still intact; and up the valley of the Tiber Rome had not advanced beyond Falerii, a few miles short of the most southerly Umbrian town Ocriculum.

But in 311, on the expiry, apparently, of the long truce 443.

with Rome, concluded in 351, the northern Etruscans, alarmed no doubt by the rapid advances which Rome was making further south, rose in arms and attacked Sutrium. The attack, however, recoiled disastrously upon the heads of the assailants. A Roman force promptly relieved Sutrium, and its leader, Q. Fabius Rullianus, without awaiting orders from home, boldly plunged into the wilds of the Ciminian forest, and crossing them safely swept

4 Livy, ixao 5 Livy, ix. 45. 6 Livy, ix. 45.

7 Livy, x. 9. STAY, Se 2.

Five years later (305) the Romans revenged a 449.

ee EEO

RO

with fire and sword over the rich lands to the north. Then turning southward he met and utterly defeated the forces which the Etruscans had hastily raised in the hopes of intercepting him at the Vadimonian Lake! This decisive victory ended the war. The Etruscan cities, disunited among themselves, and enervated by long years of peace, abandoned the struggle for the time, paid a heavy indem- nity, and concluded a truce with Rome (309-308). In the same year the promptitude of Fabius easily averted a threatened attack by the Umbrians, but Rome proceeded nevertheless to fortify herself in her invariable fashion against future dangers on this side, by an alliance with | Ocriculum, which was followed ten years later by a colony : at Nequinum,? and an alliance with the Picentes, whose position in the rear of Umbria rendered them as valuable | to Rome as the Apulians had proved farther south.

| Battle of Fourteen years had passed since the battle on the

SAMNITE WARS. |

445-6.

Sentinum, Vadimonian Lake, when the Samnites appeared on the 295=459. borders of Etruria and called on the peoples of northern Italy to rise against the common enemy. Their appeal, #- backed by the presence of their troops, was successful. The Etruscans found courage to face the Roman legions once more; a few of the Umbrians joined them; but the ‘ most valuable allies to the Samnites were the Celts, who | had for some time threatened a raid across the Apennines, \ and who now marched eagerly into Umbria and joined the coalition. The news that the Celts were in motion produced a startling effect at Rome, and every nerve was strained to meet this new danger. While two armies were left in southern Etruria as reserves, the two consuls, Fabius and Decius, both tried soldiers, marched northwards up the valley of the Tiber and into Umbria at the head of four Roman legions and a still larger force of Italian allies, At Sentinum, on the further side of the Apennines, they encountered the united forces of the Celts and Samnites, the Etruscans and Umbrians having, it is said, been withdrawn for the defence of their own homes. The

battle that followed was desperate, and the Romans lost one of their consuls, Decius, and more than 8000 men.? But the Roman victory was decisive. The Celts were annihilated, and the fear of a second Celtic attack on Rome removed. All danger from the coalition was over. The Etruscan communities gladly purchased peace by the payment of indemnities. The rising in Umbria, never formidable, died away, and the Samnites were left single-handed to bear the whole weight of the wrath of Rome. During four years more, however, they desperately defended their highland homes, and twice 461, 462, at least, in 293 and 292, they managed to place in the field a force sufficient to meet the Roman legions on equal terms. At last, in 290, the consul M. Curius Dentatus finally exhausted their power of resistance. Peace was concluded, and it is significant of the respect inspired at Rome by their indomitable courage that they were allowed to become the allies of Rome, on equal terms and without any sacrifice of independence. Between the close of the Third Samnite War and the 473, landing of Pyrrhus in 281 B.c. we find Rome engaged, as , her wont was, in quietly extending and consolidating her power. In southern Italy she strengthened her hold on | Apulia by planting on the borders of Apulia and Lucania the strong colony of Venusia.® In central Italy the annexation of the Sabine country (290) carried her frontiers eastward to the borders of her Picentine allies on the Adriatic.6 Farther east, in the territory of the 1 Livy, ix. 39, Ihne (R. G., i. 851 sg.) throws some doubts on the traditional accounts of this war and of that in 296. 2 Narnia, Livy, x. 10. GW Y, X21 1 Livy, Zpit., xi., "pacem petentibus Samnitibus foedus quarto renovatum est." Dion wialweac saeco) Vell Rats, 1 Ay 6 Livy, Hpit., xi.; Vell. Pat., i 14,*

464.

464,

ME 743 Picentes themselves, she established colonies on the Adriatic coast at Hatria and Castrum (285-283).7 By 469-471.

these measures her control of central Italy from sea to sea was secured, and an effectual barrier interposed between her possible enemies in the north and those in the south. North of the Picentes lay the territories of the Celtic Senones, stretching inland to the north-east borders of Etruria,

and these too now fell into her hands. Ten years after their defeat at Sentinum (285-284) a Celtic force descended into Etruria, besieged Arretium, and defeated the relieving force despatched by Rome. In 283 the consul L. Cornelius Dolabella was sent to avenge the insult. He completely routed the Senones. Their lands were annexed by Rome, and a colony established at Sena on the coast. This success, followed as it was by the decisive defeat of the neighbouring tribe of the Boii, who had invaded Etruria and penetrated as far south as the Vadimonian Lake, awed the Celts into quiet, and for more than forty years there was comparative tranquillity in northern Italy.§

In the south, however, the claims of Rome to supre- War with macy were now to be disputed by a new and formidable Pyrrhus, foe. At the close of the Third Samnite War the Greek ee cities on the southern coast of Italy found themselves ~~ si: once more harassed by the Sabellian tribes on their borders, whose energies, no longer absorbed by the long struggles in central Italy, now found an attractive opening south- ward. Naturally enough the Greeks, like the Capuans sixty years before, appealed for aid to Rome (283-282), and like the Capuans they offered in return to recognize the suzerainty of the great Latin republic. In reply a Roman force under C, Fabricius marched into South Italy, easily routed the marauding bands of Lucanians, Bruttians, and Samnites, and established Roman garrisons in Locri, Croton, Rhegium, and Thurii. At Tarentum, the most powerful and flourishing of the Greek seaports, this sudden and rapid advance of Rome excited the greatest anxiety. Tarentum was already allied by treaty (301) 453. with Rome, and she had now to decide whether this treaty should be exchanged for one which would place her, like the other Greek communities, under the protectorate of Rome, or whether she should find some ally able and willing to assist in making a last stand for independence. The former course, in Tarentum, as before at Capua, was the one favoured by the aristocratic party ; the latter was eagerly supported by the inass of the people and their leaders. While matters were still in suspense, the appear- ance, contrary to the treaty, of a Roman squadron off the harbour decided the controversy. The Tarentines, indig- nant at the insult, attacked the hostile fleet, killed the admiral, and sunk most of the ships. Still Rome, relying probably on her partisans in the city, tried negotiation, and an alliance appeared likely after all, when suddenly

the help for which the Tarentine democrats had been looking appeared, and war with Rome was resolved upon (281-280).°

King Pyrrhus, whose timely appearance seemed for the moment to have saved the independence of Tarentum, was the most brilliant of the military adventurers whom the disturbed times following the death of Alexander the Great had brought into prominence. High-spirited, generous, and ambitious, he had formed the scheme of rivalling Alexander's achievements in the East, by winning for himself an empire in the West. He aspired not only to unite under his rule the Greek communities of Italy and Sicily, but to overthrow the great Pheenician state of Carthage —the natural enemy of Greeks in the West, as Persia had been in the East. Of Rome it is clear that he

7 Livy, Hptt., xi. J 1GiAy, 2, ing Fans OGD, ih Si

? hivy, 2p, xis Plu Pyyrh. 13.

471-2.

474,

475.

476.

478.

479.

481, 491, 481.

knew little or nothing; the task of ridding the Greek sea- ports of their barbarian foes he no doubt regarded as an easy one; and the splendid force he brought with him was intended rather for the conquest of the West than for the preliminary work of chastising a few Italian tribes, or securing the submission of the unwarlike Italian Greeks. Pyrrhus's first

measure was to place Tarentum under a strict military discipline; this done he advanced into Lucania to meet the Roman consul Levinus. The battle which followed, on the banks of the Liris, ended in the complete defeat of the Roman troops, largely owing to the panic caused by the elephants which Pyrrhus had brought with him (280).! The Greek cities expelled their Roman garrisons and joined him, while numerous bands of Samnites, Lucanians, and Bruttians flocked to his standard. But, to the disappointment of his Greek and Italian allies, Pyrrhus showed no anxiety to follow up the advantage he had gained. His heart was set on Sicily and Africa, and his immediate object was to effect such an arrangement with Rome as would at once fulfil the pledges he had given to the Greeks by securing them against Roman interference and set himself free to seek his fortunes westward. But, though his favourite minister Cineas employed all his skill to win the ear of the senate, and, though Pyrrhus himself lent weight to his envoy's words by advancing as near Rome as Anagnia (279), nothing could shake the resolution of the senate, and Cineas brought back the reply that the Romans could not treat with Pyrrhus so long as he remained in arms upon Italian soil. Disappointed in his hopes of peace, Pyrrhus in the next year (278) turned his forces against the Roman strongholds in Apulia.2 Once more, at Ascu- lum, he routed the legions, but only to find that the indomitable resolution of the enemy was strengthened by defeat. Weary of a struggle which threatened inde- finitely to postpone the fulfilment of his dreams . of empire, Pyrrhus resolved to quit Italy, and, leaving garri- sons in the Greek towns, crossed into Sicily. Here his success at first was such as promised the speedy realiza- tion of his hopes. The Sicilian Greeks hailed him as a deliverer; the Carthaginians were driven back to the extreme west of the island, and Eryx and Panormus fell into his hands. But at this point fortune deserted him. His efforts to take Lilybeum were fruitless; the Carthaginians recovered their courage, while the unstable Greeks, easily daunted by the first threatenings of failure, and impatient of the burdens of war, broke out into open murmurs against him. Soured and disappointed, Pyrrhus returned to Italy (276) to find the Roman legions steadily moving southwards, and his Italian allies disgusted by his deser- tion of their cause. One of the consuls for the year (275), M. Curius Dentatus, the conqueror of Samnium, was encamped at Beneventum awaiting the arrival of his colleague. Here Pyrrhus attacked him, and the

closing battle of the war was fought. It ended in the complete victory of the Romans. Pyrrhus, unable any longer to face his opponents in the field, and disappointed of all assistance from his allies, retreated in disgust to Tarentum and thence crossed into Greece.® A few years later (272) Tarentum was surrendered to Rome by its Epirot garrison; it was granted a treaty of alliance, but its walls were razed and its fleet handed over to Rome. In 270 Rhegium also entered the ranks of Roman allies, and finally in 269 a single campaign crushed the last efforts at resistance in Samnium. Rome was now at leisure to consolidate the position she had won. Between 273 and 263 three new colonies were founded in Samnium and Lucania—Pestum in 273, Beneventum in Pet, NV. Hey vin ae 2 Plut., Pyrrh., 21. 3 Livy, Epit., xiv. > Plut., Pyrrh., 26.

ROME

[WISTORY.

268, AEsernia in 263. territory was increased by the full enfranchisement (268) of the Sabines, and of their neighbours to the east, the Picentes. To guard the Adriatic coast colonies were established at Ariminum (268), at Firmum, and at Castrum Novum (264), while to the already numerous maritime colonies was added that of Cosa in Etruria.®*

Rome was now the undisputed mistress of Italy. The limits of her supremacy to the north were represented roughly by a line drawn across the peninsula from the mouth of the Arno on the west to that of the Asis on the east.6 Beyond this line lay the Ligurians and the Celts ; all south of it was now united as "Italy" under the rule of Rome.

But the rule of Rome over Italy, like her wider rule over the Mediterranean coasts, was not an absolute dominion over conquered subjects. It was in form at least a confederacy under Roman protection and guid- ance; and the Italians, like the provincials, were not the subjects, but the "allies and friends" of the Roman people." Marvellous as are the perseverance and skill with which Rome built up, consolidated, and directed this confederacy, it is yet clear that both her success in forming it and its stability when formed were due in part to other causes than Roman valour and policy. The disunion which, in former times, had

so often weakened the Italians in their struggles with Rome still told in her favour, and rendered the danger of a combined revolt against her authority remote in the extreme. In some cases, and especially in the city states of Etruria, Campania, and Magna Grecia, where the antagonism of the two political parties, aristocrats and democrats, was keen, Rome found natural and valuable allies in the former. Among the more backward peoples of central Italy, the looseness of their political organization not only lessened their power of resistance, but enabled Rome either to detach tribe after tribe from the confederacy or to attack and crush them singly. Elsewhere she was aided by ancient feuds, such as those between Samnites and Apulians, or Tarentines and Iapygians, or by the imminent dread of a foe—Celt, or Samnite, or Lucanian—whom Roman aid alone could repel. And, while combination against her was thus rendered difficult, if not impossible, by internal dissensions, feuds, differences of interest, of race, of language, and habits, Rome herself, from her position in the centre of Italy, was so placed as to be able to strike promptly, on the first signs of concerted opposition. All these advantages Rome utilized to the utniost. We have no means of deciding how far she applied elsewhere the principle upon which she acted in northern Etruria and Campania, of attaching the aristocratic party in a com- munity to Roman interests, by the grant of special privileges; but it is certain that she endeavoured by every means in her power to perpetuate, and even to increase, the disunion which she had found so useful among her allies. In every possible way she strove to isolate them from each other, while binding them closely to herself. The old federal groups were in most cases broken up, and each of the members united with Rome by a special treaty of alliance. In Etruria, Latium, Campania, and Magna Grecia the city state was taken as the unit; in central Italy, where urban life was non-existent, the unit was the tribe. The northern Sabellian peoples, for instance,—the Marsi, Peeligni, Vestini, Marrucini, Frentani,—were now

- *Vell. Pat., i. 14, "suffragii ferendi jus Sabinis datum."*

° Vell. Pat., i. 14; Livy, Zpit.,xv. The present writer has followed Beloch (Ztal. Bund, 142) in identifying the "Cosa" of Vell., loc. cit., and Livy, Hpit., xiv., with Cosa in Etruria; of. Plin., VW. H,, iii. 8, 51. Mommsen and Madvig both place it in Lucania.

6 Mommsen, FR. G., i. 428, note; Nissen, Zéal. Landeskunde, p. 71. 7 Beloch, Jtal. Bund, 203; Monmsen, R. G. , i. 428, note.

In central Italy the area of Roman 486, 491,

486.

486. 490.

Rome as the mistress of Italy,

The Latins.

The Italian allies.

ROME THE MISTRESS OF ITALY. |

constituted as separate communities in alliance with Rome. In many cases, too, no freedom of trade or intermarriage was allowed between the allies themselves, a policy after- wards systematically pursued in the provinces. Nor were all these numerous allied communities placed on the same footing as regarded their relations with Rome herself. To begin with, a sharp distinction was drawn between the "QLatini" and the general mass of Italian allies. The "Qatins" of this period had little more than the name in common with the old thirty Latin peoples of the days of Spurius Cassius. With a few exceptions, such as Tibur and Preeneste, the latter had either disappeared or had been incorporated with the Roman state, and the Latins of 268 B.c. were almost exclusively the " Latin colonies," that is to say, communities founded by Rome, composed of men of Roman blood, and whose only claim to the title "Latin" lay in the fact that Rome granted to them some portion of the rights and privileges formerly enjoyed by the old Latin cities under the Cassian treaty.) Though nominally allies, they were in fact offshoots of Rome herself, bound to her by community of race, language, and interest, and planted as Roman garrisons among alien and conquered peoples. The Roman citizen who joined a Latin colony lost his citizenship,—to have allowed him to retain it would no doubt have been regarded as enlarging too rapidly the limits of the citizen body; but he received in exchange the status of a favoured

ally. The Latin colony did not indeed enjoy the equality and independence originally possessed by the old Latin cities. It had no freedom of action outside its own territory, could not make war or peace, and was bound to have the same friends and foes as Rome. But its members had the right of commercium and down to 268? of connubium also with Roman citizens. Provided they left sons and property to represent them at hone, they were free to migrate to Rome and acquire the Roman franchise. In war time they not only shared in the booty, but claimed a portion of any land confiscated by Rome and declared " public." These privileges, coupled with their close natural affinities with Rome, successfully secured the fidelity of the Latin colonies, which became uot only the most efficient props of Roman supremacy, but powerful agents in the work of Romanizing Italy. Below the privileged Latins stood the Italian allies ; and here again we know generally that there were considerable differences of status, determined in each case by the terms of their respective treaties with Rome. We are told that the Greek cities of Neapolis and Heraclea were among the most favoured ;° the Bruttii, on the other hand, seem, even before the Hannibalic war, to have been less generously treated. But beyond this the absence of all detailed information does not enable us to go.

Rome, however, did not rely only on this policy of isola- tion. Herallies were attached as closely to herself as they were clearly separated from each other, and from the first she took every security for the maintenance of her own para- mount authority. Within its own borders, each ally was left to manage its own affairs as an independent state.4 The badges which marked subjection to Rome in the pro- vinces—the resident magistrate and the tribute—were unknown in Italy. But in all points affecting the relations of one ally with another, in all questions of the general

1 For the "coloniae Latinae" founded before the First Punic War, see Beloch, 136 sq.

?'The year of the foundation of Ariminum, the first Latin colony with the restricted rights ; Cic. Pro Caec., 85; Mommsen, R. G., i. 421, note; Marquardt, Staatsverw., i. 58. Beloch, 155-158, takes a different view.

3 Beloch, Camp., 39; Cic. Pro Balbo, 22.

“For the relation of the “socii Italici” to Rome, see Mommsen, R. G., i. 422; Beloch, /tal. Bund, cap. x.

interests of Italy and of foreign policy, the decision rested solely with Rome. The place of a federal constitution, of a federal council, of federal officers, was filled by the Roman senate, assembly, and magistrates. The maintenance of peace and order in Italy, the defence of the coasts and frontiers, the making of war or peace with foreign powers, were matters the settlement of which Rome kept entirely in her own hands. Each allied state, in time of war, was called upon for a certain contingent of men, but, though its contingent usually formed a distinct corps under officers of its own, its numerical strength was fixed by Rome, it was brigaded with the Roman legions, and was under the orders of the Roman consul.®

This paramount authority of Rome throughout the pen- The

insula was confirmed and justified by the fact that Rome

Roman

herself was now infinitely more powerful than any one ‘#t¢*

of her numerous allies. Her territory, as distinct from that of the allied states, covered something like one-third of the peninsula south of the Aisis. Along the west coast it stretched from Czre to the southern borders of Campania. Inland, it included the former territories of the A%qui and Hernici, the Sabine country, and even extended eastward into Picenum, while beyond these limits were outlying districts, such as the lands of the Senonian Celts, with the Roman colony of Sena, and others elsewhere in Italy, which had been confiscated by Rome and given over to Roman settlers. Since the first important annexation of territory after the capture of Veii (396), twelve new tribes had been formed,® and the number of male citizens registered at the census had risen from 152,000 to 290,000.77 Within this enlarged Roman state were now included

numerous communities with local institutions and government. At their head stood the Roman colonies ("coloniae civium Romanorum"), founded to guard especially the coasts of Latium and Campania.8 Next to these eldest children of Rome came those communities which had been invested with the full Roman franchise, such, for instance, as the old Latin towns of Aricia, Lanuvium, Tusculum, Nomentum, and Pedum. Lowest in the scale were those which had not been considered ripe for the full franchise, but had, like Czere, received instead the "civitas sine suffragio," the civil without the political rights.? Their members, though Roman citizens, were not enrolled in the tribes, and in time of war served not in the ranks of the Roman legions but in separate contingents. In addition to these organized town communities, there were also the groups of Roman settlers on the public lands, and the dwellers in the village communities of the enfranchised highland districts in central Italy.

The administrative needs of this enlarged Rome were obviously such as could not be adequately satisfied by the system which had done well enough for a small city state with a few square miles of territory. The old centraliza- tion of all government in Rome itself had become an impossibility, and the Roman statesmen did their best to meet the altered requirements of the time. The urban communities within the Roman pale, colonies and muni-

5 Beloch, 208. The importance of this duty of the allies is expressed in the phrase "socii nominisve Latini quibus ex formula togatorum milites in terra Italia imperare solent."

6 Four in South Etruria (387), two in the Pomptine territory (358), two in Latium (882), two in the territory of the southern Volsci and the Ager Falernus (318), two in the Aquian and Hernican territory (299). The total of thirty-five was completed in 241 by formation of the Velina and Quirina, probably in the Sabine and Picentine districts, enfranchised in 268. See Beloch, 32.

7 Livy, Zpit., xvi.; Eutrop., ii. 18; Mommsen, 2. G., i. 428; Beloch, cap. iv. p. 77 sq.

8 Ostia, Autium, Tarracina, Minturne, Sinuessa, and, on the Adriatic, Sena and Castrum Novum.

® To both these classes the term " municipia" was applied.

64

358,

Colonies

and muni- cipia.

Prefects.

The military system.

746

cipia, were allowed a large measure of local self-govern- ment. In all we find local assemblies, senates, and magistrates, to whose hands the ordinary routine of local administration was confided, and, in spite of differences in detail, ¢.g., in the titles and numbers of the magistrates, the same type of constitution prevailed throughout.! But these local authorities were carefully subordinated to the higher powers in Rome. The local constitution could be modified or revoked by the Roman senate and assembly, and the local magistrates, no less than the ordinary members of the community, were subject to the paramount authority of the Roman consuls, preetors, and censors. In particular, care was taken to keep the administration of justice well under central control. The Roman citizen in a colony or municipium enjoyed of course the right oi appeal to the Roman people in a capital case. We may also assume that from the first some limit was placed to the jurisdiction of the local magistrate, and that cases falling outside it came before the central authorities. But an additional safeguard for the equitable and uniform administration of Roman law, in communities to many of which the Roman code was new and unfamiliar, was provided by the institution of prefects ("praefecti juri dicundo"),? who were sent out annually, as representatives of the Roman

pretor, to administer justice in the colonies and municipia. To prefects was, moreover, assigned the charge of those districts within the Roman pale where no urban communities, and consequently no organized local government, existed. In these two institutions, that of municipal government and that of prefectures, we have already two of the cardinal points of the later imperial system of government. .

A word must lastly be said of the changes which the altered position and increased responsibilities of Rome had effected in her military system.? For the most part these changes tended gradually to weaken the old and intimate connexion between the Roman army in the field and the Roman people at home, and thus prepared the way for that complete breach between the two which in the end proved fatal to the republic. It is true that service in the legion was still the first duty and the highest privilege of the fully qualified citizen. Every "assiduus" was still liable to active military service between the ages of seventeen to forty-five, and "proletarii" and freedmen were still called out only in great emergencies,' and then but rarely enrolled in the legions. But this service was gradually altering in character. Though new legions were still raised each year for the summer campaigns, this was by no means always accompanied, as formerly, by the disbandment of those already on foot, and this increase in the length of time during which the citizen was kept with the standards had, as early as the siege of Veii, necessitated a further deviation from the old theory of military service—the introduction of pay.® Hardly less important than these changes were those which had taken place in the organiza- tion of the legion itself. In the early days of the republic the same divisions served for the soldier in the legion and the citizen in the assembly. The Roman army in the field, and the Roman people in the comitia on the Campus, were alike grouped according to their wealth, in classes and centuriz. But by the time of the Latin war the

arrangement of the legion had been wholly altered. In a eee ee eee

' For details, see Beloch, Jéal. Bund, caps. v., vi., vii. The enfran- chised communities in most cases retained the old titles for their magistrates, and hence the variety in their designations.

? For the " praefecti," see Mommsen, R. G., i. 419, and Rim. Staats-recht, ii. 569; Beloch, 180-133.

3 Mommsen, F, G., i. 438; Madvig, Livy, viii. 8; Polyb., vi. 17-42.

- *£.9., before the battle of Sentinum (296), Livy, x. 21.*

5 Livy, iv. 59.

Verf. R. Reichs, ii. 467 sq.;

ROM E

[HIsToRY,

the new manipular system, with its three lines, no regard was paid to civic distinctions, but only to length of service and military efficiency, while at the same time the more open order of fighting which it involved demanded of each soldier greater skill, and therefore a more thorough train- ing in arms than the old phalanx. resulted from the new military necessities of the time, which was as fruitful of results as the incipient separation between the citizen and the soldier. The citizen soldiers of early Rome were commanded in the field by the men whom they had chosen to be their chief magistrates at home, and still, except when a dictator was appointed, the chief command of the legions rested with the consuls of the year. But, as Rome's military operations increased in area and in distance from Rome, a larger staff became necessary, and the inconvenience of summoning home a consul in the field from an unfinished campaign became intolerable. The remedy found, that of prolonging for a further period the imperium of the consul, was_ first applied in 327 B.c. in the case of Q. Publilius Philo,® and between 327 and 264 instances of this " prorogatio imperii" became increasingly common. This proconsular authority, originally an occasional and subordinate one, was destined to become first of all the strongest force in the republic, and ultimately the chief prop of the power of the Czesars. Already, within the limits of Italy, Rome had laid the foundation stones of the system by which she afterwards governed the world,—the municipal constitutions, the allied

states, the proconsuls, and the prefects. Periop II: Rome anD THE MEDITERRANEAN STATES,

One other change The pro. consulate,

427-490.

265-146 B.c.—(a) Conquest of the West.—Though marked 439-608.

out by her geographical position as the natural centre of the Mediterranean, Italy had hitherto played no active part in Mediterranean politics, but, now that she was for the first time united, it was felt throughout the Mediter- ranean world that a new power had arisen, and Rome, as the head and representative of Italy, found herself irresistibly drawn into the vortex of Mediterranean affairs. With those of the eastern Mediterranean indeed she was not immediately called upon to concern herself. Her repulse of Pyrrhus, and the news that the Greek cities of South Italy had acknowledged her suzerainty, had, it is true, suddenly revealed to the Eastern world the existence of a powerful Italian state. Egypt sought her alliance, and Greek scholars began to interest them- selves keenly in the history, constitution, and character of the Latin republic which had so suddenly become famous. But this was all, and not until fifty years after the retreat of Pyrrhus did Rome seriously turn her attention eastward. Westward of Italy the case was different. The western coasts of the peninsula were the most fertile and populous and wealthy, and it was west- ward rather than eastward that the natural openings for Italian commerce were to be found. But it was precisely on this side that Rome had serious ground for anxiety. Carthage was now at the height of her power. Her out- posts were threateningly near to Italy in Sardinia and in Sicily, while her fleets swept the seas and jealously guarded for the benefit of Carthage alone the hidden treasures of the West. In the east of Sicily, Syracuse still upheld the cause of Greek independence against the hereditary foe of the Greek race ; but Syracuse stood alone, and her resources were comparatively small. What Rome had to fear was the establishment, and that at no distant date, of an absolute Carthaginian domination over the Western seas—a domination which would not only be fatal to Italian commerce but would be a standing menace to the safety of the Italian coasts. Rome had indeed long been

8 Livy, viii, 23, “ut pro consule rem gereret quoad debellatum esset.”

Virst Punic War,

265-241 = 489-518.

489,

498,

492, 493, 494,

ki. ©

connected with Carthage by treaty, and the older purely commercial treaties had quite recently been replaced by a close alliance formed in face of the common danger to which both had been exposed by the adventurous schemes of Pyrrhus. But this danger was past, and it is probable that others besides Pyrrhus foresaw that on the old battleground of Greeks and Pheenicians a struggle must soon be fought out between the Phoenician mistress of the Italian seas and the rulers of the Italian peninsula.

It was above all things essential for Rome that the Carthaginians should advance no farther eastward. But already in 272 Tarentum had almost fallen into their grasp, and seven years later Rome was threatened with a danger at least as serious, the establishment of Car- thaginian rule in the east of Sicily, and within sight of the Italian coast. In 265 a body of Campanian mercenaries, who had seized Messana, found themselves hard pressed by Hiero, king of Syracuse. One party among them appealed for aid to Carthage. The Cartha- ginians readily responded, and a Carthaginian garrison occupied the citadel of Messana. But at Messana, as once at Tarentum, there were others who turned to Rome, and, as Italians themselves, implored the aid of the great Italian republic, offering in return to place Messana under the suzerainty of Rome. The request was a perplexing one. Both Hiero and the Carthaginians were allies of Rome, and Messana, if rescued from the latter, belonged of right to Hiero and not to Rome. Apart, too, from treaty obligations, the Roman

senate naturally hesitated before acceding to an appeal which would precipitate a collision with Carthage, and commit Rome to a new and hazardous career of enterprise beyond the sea. Finally, however, all other considerations gave way before the paramount importance of checking the advance of Carthage. The Roman assembly voted that assistance should be sent to the Mamertines, and in 264 the Roman legions for the first time crossed the sea. Messana was occupied, and, after sustaining a defeat, the Carthaginians and Syracusans were forced to raise the siege and withdraw. The opening years of the war which was thus begun gave little promise of the length of the struggle, and it seemed likely at the outset that Rome's immediate object, the expulsion of the Carthaginians from Sicily, would be soon attained. The accession to the Roman side of King Hiero (263) not only confirmed the position which Rome had already assumed in Italy of the champion of the western Greeks against barbarians, but provided her in eastern Sicily with a con- venient base of operations and commodious winter quarters, and in Hiero himself with a loyal and effective ally. In the next year (262) followed the capture of Agrigentum, and in 261 the Roman senate resolved on supplementing these successes on land by the formation of a fleet which should not only enable them to attack the maritime strongholds which defied the assaults of their legions, and protect their own coasts, but even to carry the war into Africa itself. In the spring of 260 the first regular Roman fleet, consisting of one hundred quinqueremes and twenty triremes set sail;! and the brilliant naval victory off Myle, won by the consul C. Duilius in the same year, seemed to promise the Romans as much success by sea as they had won by land. But the promise was not fulfilled ; and in 256 the senate, impatient of the slow progress made in Sicily, determined on boldly invading Africa. It was a policy for which, if Africa were once reached, the defenceless state of the Carthaginian territories, the doubt- ful loyalty of her Libyan subjects, and the unwarlike habits of her own citizens, gave every hope of success, and, but for the blunders of the Romans themselves, it might have succeeded now as it did fifty years later. The

1 Mommsen, &. G., i. 515.

ME TAT

passage to Africa was opened by the defeat of the Cartha- ginian fleet off Ecnomus; the two consuls, L. Manlius Vulso and M. Atilius Regulus, landed in safety and rapidly overran the country. But these successes led the senate, at the close of the summer, into committing the serious blunder of recalling one of the consuls, Manlius, with a large portion of the troops. It was one of many instances in which the rules and traditions of the old republican system proved themselves inconsistent with the new requirements of an extended warfare. The consul came back to hold the elections; his soldiers returned, as the custom had been, to their homes after a summer's cam- paign; but the efficiency of the expedition was fatally impaired. The rashness and over-confidence of Regulus aggravated the effects of the senate's action. Emboldened by further successes, and notwithstanding his diminished forces, he met the Carthaginian proposals for peace by terms so harsh that the latter, though the Romans were almost at their gates, their soldiers disheartened, and the nomad tribes swarming on their frontiers, indignantly broke off the negotiations and prepared to resist to the last. At this crisis, so the story runs, the arrival of Xanthippus, a Spartan soldier of fortune, changed the face of affairs, as that of Gylippus had formerly done at Syracuse. His superior military skill remedied the blunders of the Carthaginian generals; confidence was restored; and in

255 he triumphantly routed the Roman forces a few 499.

miles outside the city. Regulus was taken prisoner,? and only a miserable remnant of two thousand men escaped to the Roman camp on the coast. Here they were rescued by a Roman fleet, but their ill-fortune pursued them. On its way home the fleet was wrecked, and all but 80 vessels out of a total of 364 were lost.

Still, though abandoning all thoughts of invading Africa, the Romans were unwilling to renounce all thoughts of facing their enemy on the sea.

But fresh disasters

followed. The hopes raised (254) by the capture of 500.

Panormus were dashed to the ground the next year (253) by the total destruction in a storm of the victorious fleet on its way home from Panormus to Rome. Four years later a second fleet, despatched under P. Claudius to assist in the blockade of Lilybeum, was completely defeated off Drepana, while, to make matters worse, his colleague L. Junius, who had been hastily sent out with reinforce- ments, was wrecked near the dangerous promontory of Pachynus.

Disheartened by these repeated disasters, the senate resolved to trust only to the legions, and by sheer force of perseverance slowly to force the enemy out of the few positions to which he still clung in Sicily. But, though for five years (248-243) no fresh naval operations were attempted, no compensating success by land followed. Hamilcar Barea, the new Carthaginian commander, not only ravaged with his fleet the coasts of Italy, but from his impregnable position at Ercte incessantly harassed the Roman troops in the west of the island, and even recaptured Eryx. Convinced once more of the impossi- bility of driving the Carthaginians out of Sicily as long as their navy swept the seas, the Romans deterniined on a final effort. The treasury was empty; but by the liberal contributions of private citizens a fleet was equipped, and

501.

506-511.

C. Lutatius Catulus, consul for 242, started for Sicily early 512.

in the summer of that year with 200 quinqueremes. From Drepana, whither he had gone to aid in the blockade, he sailed out to meet a Carthaginian fleet, despatched from Africa against him; and a battle took place at the /Kgates islands, sone 20 miles from the Sicilian coast, in which Catulus completely defeated his enemy. The end

2 For criticisms of the story of Regulus, see Mommsen, i. 523 ; Thne, ii. 69; Ranke, Weltgeschichte, ii. 185. Of. art. Recuvus.

513, 516.

of the long struggle had come at last. The Carthaginian government, despairing of being able to send further aid to their troops in Sicily, authorized Hamilcar to treat for peace. His proposals were accepted by Catulus, and the terms agreed upon between them were confirmed in all essential points by the commissioners sent out from Rome. The Carthaginians agreed to evacuate Sicily and the adjoining islands, to restore all prisoners, and to pay an indemnity of 2300 talents.

In its duration and its severity the First Punic War is justly ranked by Polybius above all other wars of his own and preceding times, though neither in the military talent displayed nor in the importance of its results can it be compared with the war that followed. It was distin- guished by no military achievement comparable with Hannibal's invasion of Italy, and with the single excep- tion of Hamilcar it produced no general of the calibre of Hannibal or Scipio. It was in fact a struggle in which both Rome and Carthage were serving an apprenticeship in a warfare the conditions of which were unfamiliar to both. The Roman legions were foes very unlike any against which the Carthaginian leaders had ever led their motley array of mercenaries, while Rome was called upon for the first time to fight a war across the sea, and to fight with ships against the greatest naval power of the age. The novelty of these conditions accounts for much of the vacillating and uncertain action observable on both sides, and their effect in this direction was increased by the evident doubts felt by both antagonists as to the lengths to which the quarrel should be pushed. It is possible that Hamilcar had already made up his mind that Rome must be attacked and crushed in Italy, but his govern- ment attempted nothing more than raids upon the coast. There are indications also that some in the Roman senate saw no end to the struggle but in the destruction of Carthage; yet an invasion of Africa was only once seriously attempted, and then only a halfhearted support was given to the expedition. But these peculiarities in the war served to bring out in the clearest relief the strength and the weakness of the two contending states. The chief dangers for Carthage lay obviously in the jealousy exhibited at home of her officers abroad, in the difficulty of controlling her mercenary troops, and in the ever-present possibility of disaffection among her

subjects in Libya,—dangers which even the genius of Hannibal failed finally to surmount. Rome, on the other hand, was strong in the public spirit of her citizens, the fidelity of her allies, the valour and discipline of her legions. What she needed was a system which should make a better use of her splendid materials than one under which her plans were shaped from day to day by a divided senate, and executed by officers who were changed every year, and by soldiers most of whom returned home at the close of each summer's campaign.

The interval between the First and Second Punic Wars was employed by both Rome and Carthage in strengthen- ing their respective positions. Of the islands lying off the coast of Italy, the most important, Sicily, had fallen to Rome as the prize of the recent war. The eastern end of the island was still left under the rule of King Hiero as the ally of Rome, but the larger western portion became directly subject to Rome, and a temporary arrangement seems to have been made for its government, either by one of the two pretors, or possibly by a queestor.! Sardinia and Corsica had not been surrendered to Rome by the treaty of 241, but three years later (238), on the invitation of the Carthaginian mercenaries stationed in the islands, a Roman force occupied them ; Carthage pro- = Ee OE ee eee

u Marquardt, Rim. Staatsver., i. 92; Mommsen, R. G., i. 548; Appian, Sic., 2.

tested, but, on the Romans threatening war, she gave way, and Sardinia and Corsica were formally ceded to Rome, though it was some seven or eight years before all resist- ance on the part of the natives themselves was crushed.

In 227, however, the senate considered matters ripe for 527.

the establishment of a separate and settled government, not only in Sardinia and Corsica, but also in Sicily. In that year two additional

preetors were elected ; to one was assigned the charge of western Sicily, to the other that of Sardinia and Corsica,? and thus the first stones of the Roman provincial system were laid. Of at least equal importance for the security of the peninsula was the sub- jugation of the Celtic tribes in the valley of the Po. These, headed by the Boii and Insubres and assisted by

levies from the Celts to the westward, had in 225 alarmed 529,

the whole of Italy by invading Etruria and penetrating to Clusium, only three days' journey from Rome. Here, however, their courage seems to have failed them. They retreated northward along the Etruscan coast, until at Telamon their way was barred by the Roman legions, returning from Sardinia to the defence of Rome, while a second consular army hung upon their rear. Thus hemmed in, the Celts fought desperately, but were com- pletely defeated and the flower of their tribesmen slain. The Romans followed up their success by invading the Celtic territory. The Boii were easily reduced to submis- sion. The Insubres, north of the Po, resisted more

obstinately, but by 222 the war was over, and all the 532,

tribes in the rich Po valley acknowledged the supremacy of Rome. The conquered Celts were not enrolled among the Italian allies of Rome, but were treated as subjects beyond the frontier. Three colonies were founded to hold them in check—Placentia and Cremona in the territory of the Insubres, Mutina in that of the Boii; and the great northern road (Via Flaminia) was completed as far as the Celtic border at Ariminum.

On the Adriatic coast, where there was no Carthage to be feared, and no important adjacent islands to be annexed, the immediate interests of Rome were limited to rendering the sea safe for Italian trade. It was with this object

that, in 229, the first Roman expedition crossed the 525,

Adriatic, and inflicted severe chastisement on the Illyrian pirates of the opposite coast. But the results of the expedition did not end here, for it was the means of estab- lishing for the first time direct political relations

between Rome and the states of Greece proper, to many of which the suppression of piracy in the Adriatic was of as much importance as to Rome herself. Alliances were concluded with Corcyra, Epidamnus, and Apollonia; and embassies explaining the reasons which had brought Roman troops into Greece were sent to the Autolians, the Achzans, and even to Athens and Corinth. Everywhere they were well received, and the admission of the Romans to the Isthniian

games 4 (228) formally acknowledged them as the natural 526.

allies of the free Greek states against both barbarian tribes and foreign despots, a relationship which was destined to prove as useful to Rome in the East as it had already proved itself to be in the West.

While Rome was thus fortifying herself on all sides, Cartliage had acquired a possession which promised to compensate her for the loss of Sicily, Sardinia, and Corsica. The genius of her greatest citizen and soldier, Hamilcar Barca, had appreciated the enormous value of the Spanish peninsula, and conceived the scheme of founding there a Carthaginian dominion which should not only add to the wealth of Carthage, but supply her with troops, and with a base of operations for that war of revenge with Rome on which his heart was set. The conquest of southern and

eastern Spain, begun by Hamilcar (236-228), and carried 518-526. |

2 Livy, Epit. xx. 3 Polyb., ii. 8 sq. 4 Polyb., ii, 12.

|

526-538.

538.

528.

530.

Second Punic War,

on by his kinsman Hasdrubal (228-221), was completed by his son Hannibal, who, with all his father's genius, inherited also his father's hatred of Rome, and by 219 the authority of Carthage had been extended as far as the Ebro. Rome had not watched this rapid advance without anxiety, but, probably owing to her troubles with the Celts, she had contented herself with stipulating (226) that Carthage should not carry her arms beyond the Ebro, so as to threaten Rome's ancient ally, the Greek Massilia, and with securing the independence of the two nominally Greek communities, Emporis and Saguntum,! on the east coast.

But these precautions were of no avail against the resolute determination of Hannibal, with whom the conquest of Spain was only preliminary to an attack upon Italy, and who could not afford to leave behind him in Spain a state allied to Rome. In 219, therefore, dis- regarding the protests of a Roman embassy, he attacked and took Saguntum, an act which, as he had foreseen, rendered a rupture with Rome inevitable, while it set his own hands free for a further advance.

A second war with Carthage was no unlooked-for event at Rome; but the senate seems to have confidently expected that it would be waged at a distance from Italy—in Africa and in Spain, where Saguntum would have given them a convenient point of support; and to this hope they clung even after Saguntum was lost. In 218, the first year of the war, one consul, P. Cornelius Scipio, was despatched to Spain, and the other, T. Sempronius Gracchus, to Sicily, and thence to Africa. But Hannibal's secrecy and prompt- itude baffled all their calculations. Leaving New Carthage early in 218, in the space of five months he crossed the Pyrenees, reached the Rhone just as Scipio arrived at Massilia on his way to Spain, passed the Alps in spite of endless difficulties and hardships, and startled Italy by de- scending into the plains of Cisalpine Gaul. In two battles on the Ticinus and the Trebia he defeated the forces hastily collected to bar his progress southwards ; the Celtic tribes rallied to his

standard ; and at the beginning of the next year he prepared to realize the dream of his life and carry fire and sword into Italy itself. His own force numbered 26,000 men ; the total available strength of Rome and her allies was estimated at over 700,000.2 But Hannibal's hope lay in the possibility that by the rapidity of his movements he might be able to strike a decisive blow before Rome could mobilize her levies, or get her somewhat cumbrous military.machinery into working order. From a first success he expected no less a result than the break up of the Roman confederacy, and the isolation of Rome herself, while it would also increase the readiness of his own government to render him effective support. His trust in himself and his army was not misplaced, for to the last he had the advantage over the Roman legions wherever he met them in person. Except, however, in South Italy, his brilliant victories and dashing marches brought him no allies, and it was his inability to shake the loyalty of northern and central Italy and of the Latin colonies everywhere, even more than the indomitable perseverance of Rome and the supineness of Carthage, which caused his ultimate failure.

In the spring of 217 Hannibal crossed the Apennines and marched southwards through the lowlands of eastern Etruria, the route taken before him by the Celtic hordes. In April he annihilated Flaminius and his army at the Trasimene Lake,' and pushed on to Spoletium, only a few

play, ext 25: Polyb.,'iii, 15, 31.

- *Polybins (ii. 24 sg.) enumerates the forces of Rome and her allies at the time of the Celtic invasion of 225. For a criticism of his account see Mommsen, #. Forsch., ii. 398; Beloch, /tal. Bund, 80. For Hannibal's force, see Polyb., iii. 35, 56.*

3 For the date see Ovid, Fast., vi. 765; Weissenborn on Livy, xxii, 5; Mommsen, R. G., i. 594.

days' march from Rome. But Rome was not yet his goal ; from Spoletium, which had closed its gates against him, he moved rapidly eastward, ravaging the territories of Roman allies as he went, till he reached the Adriatic and the fertile lands of northern Apulia, where supplies and especially remounts for his Numidian cavalry' were plentiful, and communication with Carthage easy, and where, moreover, he was well placed for testing the fidelity of the most recent and the least trustworthy of the Italian allies of Rome. A second victory here, on the scale of that at the Trasimene Lake, might be the signal for a general revolt against Roman rule. It was not, however, until the summer of the next year that his opportunity came. The patient tactics of Q. Fabius Cunctator had become unpopular at Rome; and the consuls of 216, L. /Qmilius Paulus and M. Terentius Varro, took the field in Apulia, at the head of a larger force than Rome had yet raised, and with orders to fight and crush the daring invader. The result realized for the moment Hannibal's highest hopes. The Roman army was annihilated at Cannz ; and South Italy, with the exception of the Latin colonies and the Greek cities on the coast, came over to his side. Nor did the Roman misfortunes end here. Philip of Macedon concluded an alliance with Hannibal (215), and threatened an invasion of Italy. In the very next year Syracuse, no longer ruled by the faithful Hiero, revolted, and a Carthaginian force landed in Sicily ; lastly, in 212 came the loss of the Greek cities on the south coast. But the truth of Polybius's remark that the Romans are most to be feared when their danger is greatest was never better illustrated than by their conduct in the face of these accumulated disasters. Patiently and undauntedly they set themselves to regain the ground they had lost. Philip of Macedon was first of all forced to retire from the allied city of Apollonia which he had attacked (214), and then effectually diverted from all thoughts of an attack on Italy, by the formation of a coalition against him in Greece itself (211); Syracuse was recaptured in 212, after a lengthy siege, and Roman authority re-established in Sicily. In Italy itself the Roman commanders took advantage of Hannibal's absence in the extreme south to reconquer northern Apulia ; but their main efforts were directed to the recovery of Campania, and above all of Capua. The imminent danger of Capua, which he had named as the successor of Rome in the headship of Italy, recalled Hannibal from the south, where he was besieging a Roman garrison in the citadel of Tarentum. Failing to break through the lines

which enclosed it, he resolved, as a last hope of diverting the Roman legions from the devoted city, to advance on Rome itself. But his march, deeply as it impressed the imagination of his contemporaries by its audacity and promptitude, was without result. Silently and rapidly he moved along the course of the Latin Way, through the heart of the territory of Rome, to within 3 miles of the city,and even rode up with his advanced guard to the Colline gate. Yet no ally joined him; no Roman force was recalled to face him; no proposals for peace reached his camp; and, overcome, it is said, by the unmoved confidence of his foe, he withdrew, as silently and rapidly as he had advanced, to his headquarters in the

south. The fall of Capua followed inevitably (211),° and :

the Roman senate saw with relief the seat of war removed to Lucania and Bruttium, and a prospect opening of some relief from the exhausting exertions of the last five years. Their hopes were quickly dashed to the ground. The

4 Livy, xxiv. 20.

5 Livy, xxvi. 16, 33, gives the sentence passed on Capua: " Ager omnis et tecta publica P. R. facta, habitari tantum tanquam urbem, corpus nullum civitatis esse." For the condition of Capua subse- quently, see Cic,, Z. Agr., i. 6; compare C. J. L., 566 sq.

ot

38,

539.

542,

540.

548, 542.

faithful Massiliots sent word that Hasdrubal, beaten in Spain, was marching to join Hannibal. in Italy. The anxiety at Rome was intense, and every nerve was strained to prevent the junction of the two brothers. Equally great was the rclief when the news arrived that the bold march of the consul Claudius had succeeded, and that Hasdrubal

M i

made in the organization and consolidation of her rule. The rate of progress was indeed unequal.

[HISTORY.

sions were not either to fall a prey to internal anarchy, or be recovered for Carthage by some second Hamilcar.

In the case of Sicily Sicily and Spain, the immediate establishment of a Roman and government was imperatively necessary, if these posses- SP.

547. had been defeated and slain on the river Metaurus (207).'] Accordingly, we find that in Sicily the former dominions The war in Italy was now virtually ended, for, though | of Hiero were at once united with the western half of the during four years more Hannibal stood at bay in a corner | island as a single province, under the rule of a Roman of Bruttium, he was powerless to prevent the restoration | praetor (201),? and that in Spain, after nine years of a 553. of Roman authority throughout the peninsula. Sicily | provisional government (206-197), two provinces were in 548-557.

548 was once more secure; and finally in 206, the year after | 197° definitely established, and each, like Sicily, assigned the victory on the Metaurus, the successes of the young P. | to one of the praetors for the year, two additional preetors

543-548. Scipio in Spain (211-206) were crowned by the complete | being elected for the purpose. But here the resemblance expulsion of the Carthaginians from the peninsula. | between the two cases ends. From 201 down to the out- 553. Nothing now remained to Carthage outside

Africa but the | break of the Slave War in 136 there was unbroken peace 618. ground on which Hannibal desperately held out, and | in Sicily, and its part in the history is limited to its popular opinion at Rome warmly supported Scipio when | important functions in supplying Rome with corn and in on his return from Spain he eagerly urged an immediate | provisioning and clothing the Roman legions. It became invasion of Africa. The senate hesitated. Many were | every year a more integral part of Italy; anda large pro- jealous of Scipio's fame, and resented his scarcely concealed | portion even of the land itself passed gradually into the intention of appealing to the people, should the senate | hands of enterprising Roman speculators. The governors decline his proposals. Others, like the veteran Q. Fabius, | of the two Spains had very different work to do from that thought the attempt hazardous, with exhausted resources, | which fell to the lot of the Sicilian preetors. Although and while Hannibal was still on Italian soil. But Scipio | the coast towns readily acquiesced in Roman rule, the

549, gained the day. He was elected consul for 205, and given | restless and warlike tribes of the interior were in a con- the province of Sicily, with permission to cross into Africa | stant state of ferment, which from time to time broke if he thought fit. Voluntary contributions of men, money, | out into opem revolt. In Sicily the ordinary preetorian and supplies poured in to the support of the popular hero ; | authority, with at most a few cohorts, was sufficient, but and by the end of 205 Scipio had collected in Sicily a | the condition of Spain required that year after year the

550. sufficient force for his purpose. In 204 he crossed to | pretors should be armed with the consular authority, and Africa, where he was welcomed by the Numidian prince | backed by a standing force of four legions, while more Masinissa, whose friendship he had made in Spain. In | than once the presence of the consuls themselves was

551. 203 he twice defeated the Carthaginian forces, and a large | found necessary. Still, in spite of all difficulties, the party at Carthage were anxious to accept his offer of | work of pacification proceeded. To the elder Cato (consul negotiations. But the advocates of resistance

triumphed. | 195), and to Tiberius Sempronius Gracchus (preetor and 559. Hannibal was recalled from Italy, and with him his brother | propreetor 180-179), father of the two tribunes, is mainly 574-5. Mago, who had made a last desperate attempt to create | due the credit of quieting the Celtiberian tribes of central a diversion in Italy by landing in Liguria. Mago died Spain, and the government of Gracchus was followed by on the voyage, but Hannibal returned to fight his last thirty years of comparative tranquillity. The insurrection battle against Rome at Zama, where Scipio, who had been | headed by Viriathus in 149 was largely caused by the 605.

552. continued in command as proconsul for 202 by a special | exactions of the Roman magistrates themselves, while its vote of the people, won a complete victory. 'The war | obstinate continuance down to the capture of Numantia was over. The Roman assembly gladly voted that the | in 133, was almost as much the result of the incapacity of 621. Carthaginian request for peace should be granted, and | the Roman commanders. But the re-settlement of the entrusted the settlement of the terms to its favourite Scipio | country by Scipio Africanus the younger in that year left and a commission of ten senators. Carthage was allowed | all'Spain, with the exception of the highland Astures and to retain her own territory in Africa intact ; but she under- | Cantabri in the north-west, finally and tranquilly subject took to wage no wars outside Africa, and none inside | to Rome. Meanwhile the disturbed. state of the interior without the consent of Rome. She surrendered all her | had not prevented the spread of Roman civilization on ships but ten triremes, her elephants, and all prisoners of | the seaboard. Roman traders and speculators flocked war. Finally she agreed to pay an indemnity of 10,000 | to the seaport towns and spread inland. The mines talents in fifty years. Masinissa was rewarded by an | became centres of Roman industry ; the Roman legionaries Increase of territory, and was enrolled among the "allies | quartered in Spain year after year married Spanish wives, and friends" of the Roman people.! and when their service was over gladly settled down in

a The battle of Zama decided the fate of the West. The Spain, in preference to returning to Italy. The first Roman

ae power of Carthage was broken, and her supremacy passed | communities established outside Italy were both planted

een Oy the right of conquest to Rome. Henceforth Rome had | in Spain, and both owed their existence to the Roman

rule, no rival to fear westward of Italy, and it rested with her- legions.> Spain even in 133 gave promise of becoming in self to settle within what limits her supremacy should be | time 'more Roman than Rome itself." confined, and what form it should take. The answer to In Africa there was no question at first of the introduc- Afriea— both these questions was largely determined for her by | tion of Roman government by the formation of a province. circumstances. For the next fifty years Rome was too Carthage, bound hand and foot by the treaty of 201, was War deeply involved in the affairs of the East to think of | placed under the jealous watch of the loyal prince of Nu- 153-146= extending her rule far beyond the limits of the rich inherit- ee ee ea

aT ance which had fallen to her by the defeat of Carthage ; | ihe fist heist fi, Sie wen ~ Fea ie ae

and it was not until 125 that she commenced a fresh career of conquest in the West by invading Transalpine Gaul. But within this area considerable advance was

1 Livy, xxx. 43; Polyb., xv. 18.

® Livy, xxx. 27; oF Marquardt, Staatsverw., i. 100, and Hiibner in Hermes, i. 105 sq.

4 Livy, xxvii. 5, "pace ac bello fidissimum annonac subsidium"'; Bi, SoCal, Dif

® Italica (206), Appian, Zder., 38; Carteia (171), Livy, xiii. 3.

EOD. ol.

608.

Italy.

573.

574,

581.

THIRD PUNIC WAR.]

midia, who himself willingly acknowledged the suzerainty of Rome. But it was impossible for this arrangement to be permanent. Every symptom of reviving prosperity at Carthage was regarded at Rome with feverish anxiety, and neither the expulsion of Hannibal in 195 nor his death in 183 did much to check the growing conviction that Rome would never be secure while her rival existed. It was therefore with grim satisfaction that many in the Roman senate watched the increasing irritation of the Carthia- ginians under the harassing raids and encroachments of their favoured neighbour Masinissa, and waited for the moment when Carthage should, by some breach of the con- ditions imposed upon her, supply Rome with a pretext for interference. At last in 151 came the news that Carthage, in defiance of treaty obligations, was actually at war with Masinissa. The anti-Carthaginan party in the senate, headed by M. Porcius Cato, eagerly seized the oppor- tunity, and, in spite of the protests of Scipio Nasica and others, war was declared, and nothing short of the destruc- tion of their city itself was demanded from the despairing Carthaginians. This demand, as the senate no doubt foresaw, was refused, and in 149 the siege of Carthage begun. During the next two years little progress was made, but in 147 P. Cornelius. Scipio AZmilianus, son of L. Aimilius Paulus, conqueror of Macedonia, and grandson by adoption of the conqueror of Hannibal was, at the age of thirty-seven, and though only a candidate for the edileship, elected consul, and given the command in Africa. In the next year (146) Carthage was taken and razed to the ground. Its territory became the Roman province of Africa, while Numidia, now ruled by the three sons of Masinissa, remained as an allied state under Roman suzerainty, and served to protect the new province against the raids of the desert tribes. Within little more than a century from the commencement of the First Punic War, the whole of the former

dominions of Carthage had been brought under the direct rule of Roman' magistrates, and were regularly organized as Roman provinces.

In Italy itself the Hannibalic war was inevitably followed by important changes, and these changes were naturally enough in the direction of an increased Roman predominance. In the north the Celtic tribes paid for their sympathy with Hannibal with the final loss of all separate political existence. Cispadane Gaul, studded with colonies, and flooded with Roman settlers, was rapidly Romanized. Beyond the Po in Polybius's time, about sixty years after the Hannibalic war, Roman civiliza- tion was already widely spread. In the extreme north- east the Latin colony of Aquileia, the last of its kind, was founded in 181, to hold in check the Alpine tribes, while in the north-west the Ligurians, though not finally subdued until a later time, were held in check by the colony of Luna (180), and by the extensive settlements of Roman citizens and Latins made on Ligurian territory in 173.1 In southern Italy the effects of the war were not less marked. The depression of the Greek cities on the coast, begun by the raids of the Sabellian tribes, was com- pleted by the repeated blows inflicted upon them during the Hannibalic struggle. Some of them lost territory ;? all suffered from a decline of population and loss of trade ; and their place was taken by such new Roman settlements as Brundusium and Puteoli.2 In the interior the southern Sabellian tribes suffered scarcely less severely. The Bruttii were struck off the list of Roman allies, and nearly

1 Livy, xlii, 4.

- *#.g., Tarentum, Livy, xliv. 16. A Roman colony was established at Croton in 194, and a Latin colony (Copia) at Thurii in 193 (Livy, xxxiv, 45, 53).*

> Brundusium was established after the First Punic War. Puteoli

was fortified during the Second Punic War, and became a Roman colony- in 194 (Livy, xxxiv. 45).

ROM E

Tol all their territory was confiscated. To the Apulians and Lucanians no such hard measure was meted out ; but their strength had been broken by the war, and their numbers dwindled ; large tracts of land in their territories were seized by Rome, and allotted to Roman settlers, or occupied by Roman speculators. That Etruria also suffered from declining energy, a dwindling population, and the spread of large estates is clear from the state of things existing there in 133, of the Latins and their nearest kinsmen, and in the new Latin and Roman settlements throughout the peninsula that progress and activity were henceforth concentrated, and even within this area the Roman, and not the strictly Latin, element tended to preponderate. Of the twenty colonies founded between 201 and 146 only four were Latin.

pulse of Pyrrhus from Italy, Rome had been slowly drift- ing into closer contact with the Eastern states. With one of the three great powers which had divided between them the empire of Alexander, with Egypt, she had formed an alliance in 273, and the alliance had been cemented by the growth of commercial intercourse between the two countries.5 In 228 her chastisement of the Illyrian pirates had led naturally enough to the establishment of friendly relations with some of the states of Greece proper. Further than this, however, Rome for the time showed no desire to go. The con- nexions already formed were sufficient to open the eastern ports to her trade, and the engrossing struggle with Carthage left her neither leisure nor strength for active interference in the incessant feuds and rivalries which had made up Eastern politics since the falling asunder of Alexander's empire. In 214 the alliance between Philip and Hannibal, and the former's threatened attack on Italy, forced her into war with Macedon, but even then she con- tented herself with heading a coalition of the Greek states against him, which effectually frustrated his designs

or

It was indeed in central Italy, the home 621,.

' 553-608. (6) Rome in the East, 200-133.—Ever since the re- 554-621.

40,

against herself; and at the first opportunity (205) she 549.

ended the war by a peace which left the position un- changed. The results of the war were not only to draw closer the ties which bound Rome to the Greek states, but to inspire the senate with a genuine dread of Philip's restless ambition, and with a bitter resentment against him for his union with Hannibal. The events of the next four years served to deepen both these feelings. Philip entered into a compact with Antiochus of Syria for the partition between them of the dominions of Egypt,° now left by the death of Ptolemy Philopator to the rule of a boy king. Antiochus was to take Ccle-Syria and Phoenicia, while Philip claimed for his share the districts subject to Egypt on the coasts of the Augean and the Greek islands. Philip no doubt hoped to be able to secure these unlawful acquisitions before the close of the Second Punic War should set Rome free to interfere with his plans. But the obstinate resistance offered by Attalus of Perga- mum and the Rhodians upset his calculations. Rome made peace with Carthage, and the senate had leisure to listen to the urgent appeal for assistance which reached her from her Eastern allies. With Antiochus indeed the senate was not yet prepared to quarrel ; Egypt was assured of the continued friendship of Rome, but Antiochus was allowed to work his will in Ceele-Syria.7 With Philip it is clear that the senate had no thoughts of a peaceful settlement. Their animosity against him had been deepened by the assistance he had recently rendered to Carthage. Always an unsafe and turbulent

4 Appian, Hann., 61; Aul. Gell., x. 3; ¢f Beloch, Ztal. Bund. 5 Egypt had supplied corn to Italy during the Second Punic War (Polyb., ix. 44).

S Polyb., iii, 2, xv. 20; Livy, xxxi. 14. 7 Livy, xxxiii. 19.

In 205 549.

In 201 553.

654.

Second Mace- donian War,

200-197 = 554-557.

553.

The liberation of Greece,

560.

752

neighbour, he would, if allowed to become supreme in the Aigean, prove as dangerous to her interests in the East as Carthage had been in the West; nor, lastly, could Rome, in honour, look quietly on at the ill-treatment of states which, as Greeks and as allies of her own, had a double claim on her protection. To cripple or at least to stay the growth of Philip's power was in the eyes of the senate a necessity, but it was only by representing a Macedonian invasion of Italy as imminent that they persuaded the assembly, which was longing for peace, to pass a declara-tion of war] (200), an ostensible pretext for which was found in the invasion by Macedonian troops of the terri- tory of Rome's ally, Athens,

The war commenced in the summer of 200 B.c., and, though the landing of the Roman legions in Epirus was not followed, as had been hoped, by any general rising against Philip, yet the latter had soon to discover that, if they were not enthusiastic for Rome, they were still less inclined actively to assist himself. Neither by force nor diplomacy could he make any progress south of Beeotia. The fleets of Pergamum and Rhodes, now the zealous allies of Rome, protected Attica and watched the eastern coasts. The Acheans and Nabis of Sparta were obstin- ately neutral, while nearer home in the north the Epirots and Atolians threatened Thessaly and Macedonia. His own resources both in men and in money had been severely strained by his constant wars,? and the only ally who could have given him effective assistance, Antiochus, was fully occupied with the conquest of Coele-Syria. It is no wonder then that, in spite of his dashing generalship and high courage, he made but a brief stand. T. Quinctius Flamininus (consul 198), in his first year of command, defeated him on the Aous, drove him back to the pass of Tempe, and in the next year utterly routed him at Cynos- cephale. Almost at the same moment the

Achzans, who had now joined Rome, took Corinth, and the Rhodians defeated his troops in Caria.? Further resistance was impossible ; Philip submitted, and early the next year a Roman commission reached Greece with instructions to arrange terms of peace. These were such as effectually secured Rome's main object in the war, the removal of all danger to herself and her allies from Macedonian aggres- sion. Philip was left in possession of his kingdom, but was degraded to the rank of a second-rate power, deprived of all possessions in Greece, Thrace, and Asia Minor, and forbidden, as Carthage had been in 201, to wage war without the consent of Rome, whose ally and friend he now became. Macedon thus weakened could*

no longer be formidable, but might yet be useful, not

only as a barrier against Thracians and Celts,> but as a check upon anti-Roman intrigues in Greece.

The second point in the settlement now effected by Rome was the liberation of the Greeks, The " freedom of Greece" was proclaimed at the Isthmian games amid a scene of wild enthusiasm,® which reached its height when two years later (194) Flamininus withdrew his troops even from the "three fetters of Greece "—Chalcis, Demetrias, and Corinth." There is no reason to doubt that, in acting thus, not only Flamininus himself, but the senate and people at home were influenced, partly at any rate, by feelings of genuine sympathy with the Greeks and rever- ence for their past. It is equally clear that no other course was open to them. For Rome to have annexed Greece, as she had annexed Sicily and Spain, would have been a flagrant violation of the pledges she had repeatedly given both before and during the war; the attempt would have excited the fiercest opposition, ES ee eee eee

1 Livy, sexi 6, 7. 2 Livy, xxxiii., 3.

5 Polyb., xvili, 44-47 5 Livy, xxxiii. 30-34.

Polyb., xviii. 87. 6 Livy, xxxiii. 32, 33.

3 7b., 17.

? Livy, xxxiv. 48-52.

ROME

[HISTORY.

and would probably have thrown the Asiatic as well as the European Greeks into the arms of Antiochus. Buta friendly and independent Greece would be at once a check on Macedon, a barrier against aggression from the East, and a promising field for Roman commerce. Nor while liberating the Greeks did Rome abstain from such arrange- ments as seemed necessary to secure the predominance of her own influence. In the Peloponnese, for instance, the Achzans were rewarded by considerable accessions of territory; and it is possible that the Greek states, as allies of Rome, were expected to refrain from war upon each other without her consent. The failure of the policy, after all, was due to the impracticability of the Greeks, and the intensity of their civic and tribal feuds. To sup- pose as some have done that Rome intended it to fail is to attribute to the statesmen of the generation of Scipio and Flamininus even more than the cynicism of the time of L. Mummius.§

Antiochus ITI. of Syria, Philip's accomplice in the pro- War with posed partition of the dominions of their common rival, Antiochus,

Egypt, returned from the conquest of Coele-Syria (198) to learn first of all that Philip was hard pressed by the Romans, and shortly afterwards that he had been deci- sively beaten at Cynoscephale. It was already too late to assist his former ally, but Antiochus resolved at any rate to lose no time in securing for himself the possessions of the Ptolemies in Asia Minor and in eastern Thrace, which Philip had claimed, and which Rome now pro- nounced free and independent. Asia Minor and crossed into Thrace. But Antiochus was pleasure-loving, irresolute, and above all no general, and

it was not until 192 that the urgent entreaties of the 562.

/Etolians, and the withdrawal of the Roman troops from Greece, nerved him to the decisive step of crossing the Aigean ; and even then the force he took with him was so small as to show that he completely failed to

appreciate the nature of the task before him.!? At Rome the prospect of a conflict with Antiochus excited great anxiety, and it was not until every resource of diplomacy had been exhausted that war was declared. At a dis- tance, indeed, Antiochus, the great king, the lord of all the forces of Asia, seemed an infinitely more formidable opponent than their better known neighbour Philip, and a war against the vaguely known powers of the East a far more serious matter than a campaign in Thessaly. War, however, was unavoidable, unless Rome was to desert her Greek allies, and allow Antiochus to advance unopposed to the coasts of the Adriatic. And the war had no sooner commenced than the real weakness which lay behind the magnificent pretensions of the "king of kings" was revealed.

Had Antiochus acted with energy when in 192 he 562.

landed in Greece, he might have won the day before the Roman legions appeared. As it was, in spite of the warnings of Hannibal,! who was now in his camp, and of the AXtolians, he frittered away valuable time between his pleasures at Chalcis and useless attacks on petty Thessalian towns. ing force; and a single battle at Thermopyle broke the courage of Antiochus, who hastily recrossed the sea to Ephesus, leaving his Atolian allies to their fate. But Rome could uot pause here. The safety of her faithful allies, the Pergamenes and Rhodians, and of the Greek cities in Asia Minor, as well as the necessity of chastising Antiochus, demanded an invasion of\Asia. A Roman fleet*

8 For the conflicting views of moderns on the action of Rome, see Mommsen, &. G@., i. 718, and on the other side Ihne, R. G., iii. 52- 63, and C. Peter, Studien zur Rém. Gesch., Halle, 1863, pp. 158 sq.

9 Livy, xxxiii. 88; Polyb., xviii. 50, LO Givy. xxve 40.

WMV y, xiv. 20h xxxvis 1. Te Winihy 2eSODL Ih

In 197-196 he overran 557-8,

In 191 Glabrio landed at the head of an impos- 563.

RO

had already (191) crossed the A®gean, and in concert with the fleets of Pergamum and Rhodes worsted the navy of Antiochus. In 190 the new consul L. Scipio, accom- panied by his famous brother, the conqueror of Africa, led

ME 793

hostility to Rome among his Greek and barbarian neigh- bours. His successor, Perseus, his son by a left-handed alliance, continued his father's work. He made friends among the Illyrian and Thracian princes, connected him-

MACEDONIAN WARS. |

At

the Roman legions for the first time into Asia.

Magnesia, near Mount Sipylus in Lydia, he met and defeated the motley and ill-disciplined hosts of the great For the first time the West, under Roman leader-

king.! ship, successfully encountered the forces of the East, and

the struggle began which lasted far on into the days of

self by marriage with Antiochus IV. of Syria and with Prusias of Bithynia, and, among the Greek peoples, strove, not without success, to revive the memories of the past glories of Greece under the Macedonian leadership of the great Alexander.4 The senate could no longer hesitate. They were well aware of the restlessness and discontent in

_ Settle. the emperors. The terms of the peace which followed | Greece ; and after hearing from Eumenes of Pergamum, ment of the victory at Magnesia tell their own story clearly | and from their own officers, all details of Perseus's intrigues } = enough. 'There is no question, any more than in Greece, | and preparations they declared war. The struggle, in of annexation ; the main object in view is that of secur- spite of Perseus's

courage and the incapacity at the outset ing the predominance of Roman interests and influence | of the Roman commanders, was short and decisive. The throughout the peninsula of Asia Minor, and removing to | sympathy of the Greeks with Perseus, which had been a safe distance the only Eastern power which could be encouraged by the hitherto passive attitude assumed by considered dangerous.?, The line of the Halys and the | Rome, instantly evaporated on the news that the Roman . Taurus range, the natural boundary of the peninsula east- legions were on their way to Greece. No assistance came ward, was established as the boundary between Antiochus | from Prusias or Antiochus, and Perseus's only allies were and the kingdoms, cities, and peoples now enrolled as the | the Thracian king Cotys and the Illyrian Genthius. The allies and friends of Rome. This line Antiochus was for- | victory gained by L. Aimilius Paulus at Pydna (168) 586. bidden to cross ; nor was he to send ships of war farther | ended the war. Perseus became the prisoner of Rome, | west than Cape Sarpedon in Cilicia. Immediately to the | and as such died in Italy a few years later.' Rome had west of this frontier lay the small states of Bithynia and | begun the war with the fixed resolution no longer of . Paphlagonia and the immigrant Celtic Galate, and these crippling but of destroying the Macedonian state. Perseus's frontier states, now the allies of Rome, served as a second | repeated proposals for peace during the war had been line of defence against attacks from the east. The area | rejected; and his defeat was followed by the final extinc- . lying between these "buffer states" and the Algean was | tion of the kingdom of Philip and Alexander.8 Mace- organized by Rome in such a way as should at once reward | donia, though it ceased to exist as a single state, was not | the fidelity of her allies and secure both her own paramount definitely constituted a Roman province.? On the con- authority and safety from foreign attack. Pergamum and | trary, the mistake was made of introducing some of the : Rhodes were so strengthened—the former by the gift of | main principles of the provincial system—taxation, dis- the Chersonese, Lycaonia, Phrygia, Mysia, and Lydia, the | armament, and the isolation of the separate communities— | latter by that of Lycia and Caria—as not only amply to | without the addition of the element most essential for the reward their loyalty, but to constitute them effective props | maintenance of order—that of a resident Roman governor. of Roman interests and effective barriers alike against | The four petty republics now

created were each autonom- Thracian and Celtic raids in the north and against aggres- | ous, and each separated from the rest by the prohibition sion by Syria in the south. Lastly, the Greek cities on the | of commercium and connubium, but no central controlling coast, except those already tributary to Pergamum, were | authority was substituted for that of the Macedonian king. declared free, and established as independent allies of Rome. | The inevitable result was confusion and disorder, resulting Sb4- 565. In a space of little over eleven years (200-189) Rome | finally (149- 146) in the attempt of a pretender, Andriseus, 605-8. had broken the power of Alexander's successors and | who claimed to be a son of Perseus, to resuscitate the ate established throughout the eastern Mediterranean a Roman | ancient monarchy." On his defeat in 146 the senate Spat protectorate. It remained to be seen whether this protec- | hesitated no longer, and Macedonia became a Roman pro- province. torate could be maintained, or whether Rome would be | vince, with a Roman magistrate at its head.1! driven to that policy of annexation which she had adopted The results of the protectorate in Greece, if less Affairs in ; from the first in Sicily and Spain. dangerous to Roman supremacy, were quite as unfavour- STece. | te It was in the western half of the protectorate in Euro-| able to the maintenance of order. But from 189 to the 565-587. joie pean Greece that the first steps in the direction of annexa- | defeat of Perseus in 167, no formal change of importance War, tion were taken. The enthusiasm provoked by the libera- | in the status of the Greek states was made by Rome. The 171-168 tion of the Greeks had died away, and its place had been senate, though forced year after year to listen to the 583-6. taken by feelings of dissatisfied ambition or sullen resent- | mutual recriminations and complaints of rival communi- | ment. Internecine feuds and economic distress had | ties and factions, contented itself as a rule with interven- brought many parts of Greece to the verge of anarchy, | ing just enough to remind the Greeks that their freedom and, above all, the very foundations of the settlement | was limited by its own paramount authority, and to pre- 597. effected in 197 were threatened by the reviving power and | vent any single state or confederacy from raising itself too aspirations of Macedon. Loyally as Philip had aided | far above the level of general weakness which it was the | Rome in the war with Antiochus, the peace of Magnesia | interest of Rome to maintain. After the victory at . brought him nothing but fresh humiliation. He was Pydna,

however, the sympathy shown for Perseus, exag- . forced to abandon all hopes of recovering Thessaly, and he | gerated as it seems to have been by the interested repre- had the mortification to see the hated king of Pergamum | sentations of the Romanizing factions in the various states, installed almost on his borders as master of the Thracian | — an rs i die wl dose ie. Chersonese. Resistance at the time was unavailing, but | re ae eat, Piit, Aged, 15 . ea ~/9. from 189 until his death (179) he laboured patiently and 7 Diod., xxxi. 9; Livy, xlv. 42; Polyb., xxxvii. 16.

8

quietly to increase the internal resources of his own king- dom,? and to foment, by dexterous intrigue, feelings of meg ay Oe ees Senge 0!

} Livy (xxxvii. 40): describes the composition of Antiochus's army. > Livy, xxxvii. 55, xxxviii. 38 ; Eoly pesca 17 3 Livy, xxxix. 24 sq.

Livy, xlv. 9. 9 Livy, xlv. 17, 29; Plut., Amil., 28; Mommsen, 7. G., i. 769; Thne, #. G., ili. 216 ; Marquardt, Rém. Staatsverw., i. 160. 10 Polyb., xxxvii. 2; Livy, Zpit., 1. ll For the boundaries of the province, see Ptolemy, iii. 13; Mar- quardt, loc, cit., 161.

XX. — 95

Settle- iment of Greece,

146 = 608.

587.

The Roman protector- ate in Asia,

189-146= 565-608.

Tot RO

was made the pretext for a more emphatic assertion of Roman ascendency. All those suspected of Macedonian leanings were removed to Italy, as hostages for the loyalty of their several communities,! and the

real motive for the step was made clear by the exceptionally severe treatment of the Achzans, whose loyalty was not really doubtful, but whose growing power in the Peloponnese and growing independence of language had awakened alarm at Rome. A thousand of their leading men, among them the historian Polybius, were carried off to Italy (see Ponysius). In ZEtolia the Romans connived at the massacre by their so-called friends of 500 of the opposite party. Acarnania was weakened by the loss of Leucas, while Athens was rewarded for her unambitious loyalty by the gift of Delos and Samos.

But this somewhat violent experiment only answered for a time. In 148 the Achzans rashly persisted, in spite of warnings, in attempting to compel Sparta by force of arms to submit to the league. When threatened by Rome with the loss of all that they had gained since Cynoscephale, they madly rushed into war.? They were easily defeated, and a "commission of ten," under the presidency of L. Mummius, was appointed by the senate thoroughly to resettle the affairs of Greece? Corinth, by orders of the senate, was burnt to the ground, and its territory confiscated. Thebes and Chalcis were destroyed, and the walls of all towns which had shared in the last desperate outbreak were razed to the ground. All the existing confederacies were dissolved ; no " commercium " was allowed between one community and another. LEvery- where an aristocratic type of constitution, according to the invariable Roman practice, was established, and the pay- ment of a tribute imposed. Into Greece, as into Macedonia in 167, the now familiar features of the provincial system were introduced—disarmament, isolation, and taxation. The Greeks were still nominally free, and no separate province with a governor of its own was established, but the needed central control was provided by assigning to the neighbouring governor of Macedonia a general super- vision over the affairs of Greece. From the Adriatic to the Aigean, and as far north as the river Drilo and Mount Scardus, the whole peninsula was now under direct Roman rule.5*

Beyond the Aigean the Roman protectorate worked no better than in Macedonia and Greece, and the demoraliz- ing recriminations, quarrels, and disorders which flourished under its shadow were aggravated by its longer duration, and by the still more selfish view taken by Rome of the

responsibilities connected with it.6 At one period indeed, after the battle of Pydna, it seemed as if the more vigorous, if harsh, system then initiated in Macedon and Greece was to be adopted farther east also. The level- ling policy pursued towards Macedon and the Acheans was applied with less justice to Rome's two faithful and favoured allies, Rhodes and Pergamum. The former had rendered themselves obnoxious to Rome by their inde- pendent tone, and still more by their power and commer- cial prosperity. Ona charge of complicity with Perseus they were threatened with war, and though this danger was averted' they were forced to exchange their equal alliance with Rome for one which placed them in close

: Livy, xlv. 31. 2 Livy, Hpit., li., lit.

Livy, Xpit., lii.; Polyb., xl. 9 sq. ; Pausanias, vii. 16 ; Momm- sen, FR. G., ii, 47 sq.

- *Mommsen, loc. cit., note; Marquardt, Rim. Staatsverw., i. 164 sq.; A. W. Zumpt, Commentt. Hpigraph., ii. 158.*

5 North of the Drilo, the former kingdom of Perseus's ally Genthius had been treated as Macedon was in 167 (Livy, xlv., 26); ¢f Zippel, Rim. Herrschaft in Illyrien, Leipsic, 1877. Epirus, which had been desolated after Pydna (Livy, xlv. 34), went with Greece; Marquardt,

i Oe § Mommsen, &. G., i. 771-780, ii. 50-67. Livy, xlv. 20; Polyb., xxx. 5.

[misTory.

ME

dependence upon her, and to resign the lucrative posses- sions in Lycia and Caria given them in 189. their commercial prosperity was ruined by the establish- ment of a free port at Delos,§ and by the short-sighted acquiescence of Rome in the raids of the Cretan pirates. With Eumenes of Pergamum no other fault could be found than that he was strong and successful; but this was enough. His brother Attalus was invited, but in vain, to become his rival. His turbulent neighbours, the Galate, were

encouraged to harass him by raids. Pamphylia was declared independent, and favours were heaped upon Prusias of Bithynia. These and other annoyances and humiliations had the desired effect. Eumenes and his two successors—his brother and son, Attalus II. and Attalus IIJ.—contrived indeed by studious humility and dexterous flattery to retain their thrones, but Pergamum ceased to be a powerful state, and its weakness, added to that of Rhodes, increased the prevalent disorder in Asia Minor. During the same period we have other indica- tions of a temporary activity on the part of Rome. The frontier of the protectorate was pushed forward to the confines of Armenia and to the upper Euphrates by alliances with the kings of Pontus and Cappadocia beyond the Halys. In Syria, on the death of Antiochus Epiphanes

(164), Rome intervened to place a minor, Antiochus 590.

Eupator, on the throne, under Roman guardianship.? In

168 Egypt formally acknowledged the suzerainty of 586, Rome,!9 and in 163 the senate, in the exercise of this new 591.

authority, restored Ptolemy Philometor to his throne, but at the same time weakened his position by handing over Cyrene and Cyprus to his brother Euergetes.!!

But this display of energy was short-lived. From the

Finally, 565.

y

death of Eumenes in 159 down to 133 Rome, secure 595-691.

in the absence of any formidable power in the East, and busy with affairs in Macedonia, Africa, and Spain, relapsed into an inactivity the disastrous results of which revealed themselves in the next period, in the rise of Mithradates of Pontus, the spread of Cretan and Cilician piracy, and the advance of Parthia. To the next period also belongs the

conversion, on the death of Attalus TIL, of the kingdom of Pergamum into the Roman province of Asia.

Both the western and eastern Mediterranean now acknowledged the suzerainty of Rome, but her relations with the two were from the first different. The West fell to her as the prize of victory over Carthage, and, the Carthaginian power broken, there was no hindrance to the immediate establishment in Sicily, Sardinia, Spain, and finally in Africa, of direct Roman rule. To the majority, moreover, of her Western subjects she brought a civilization as well as a government of a higher type than any before known to them. And so in the West she not only formed provinces but created a new and wider Roman world. To the east, on the contrary, she came as the liberator of the Greeks; and it was only slowly that in this part of the empire her provincial system made way. In the East, moreover, the older civilization she found there obstinately held its ground. Her proconsuls governed and her legions protected the Greek communities, but to the last the East remained in language, manners, and thought Greek' and not Roman.

Pertop IIL: Tus Periop or THE REVOLUTION (146-49 608-705.

B.C.).—In the course of little more than a century, Rome had become the supreme power in the civilized world. By all men, says Polybius, it was taken for granted that nothing remained but to obey the commands of the Romans.!?_ For

8 Polyb., xxxi. 7, The Rhodian harbour dues suffered severely.

9 Rome had already intervened between Syria and Egypt; Livy, cake WAS Iolite, Sembe, IML, ser, 1M

10 Livy, xiv. 18, "Regni maximum praesidium in fide populi Romani." ll Livy, Zpit., xlvi., xlvii.

12 Polyb., iti. 4.

q

‘

Consti- tutional changes,

265-146 = 489-608,

Ascend- ency

of the senate.

CONSTITUTIONAL CHANGES. |

the future the interest of Roman history centres in her attempts to perform the two Herculean tasks which this unique position laid upon her,—the efficient government of the subject peoples, and their defence against the bar-

barian races which swarmed around them on all sides.

They were tasks under which the old republican constitu- tion broke down, and which finally overtaxed the strength even of the marvellous organization framed and elaborated by Augustus and his successors.

At the outset the difficulties of Rome were increased by the rapidity with which her new duties came upon her. From a century, first of deadly struggle, and then of dazzlingly easy success, she emerged to find herself called upon to govern a world with the primitive machinery of a small city state, and to deal with new and complicated ad- ministrative problems which she had as yet had no leisure to study. Nor was it until her own political system had been remodelled that she was able to deal effectively with the government of the empire at large. During the period which has now to be considered, the period of the so-called Revolution, but little advance was made towards a better imperial organization, and that little was made by men who, like Cesar and Pompey, belonged, both in the methods and aims of their policy and in the position they held, to the empire rather than to the republic.

Although in its outward form the old constitution had undergone little change during the age of war and con- quest from 265 to 146,! the causes, both internal and external, which brought about its fall had been silently at work throughout. Its form was in strictness that of a moderate democracy. The patriciate had ceased to exist as a privileged caste,? and there was no longer any order of nobility recognized by the constitution. The senate and the offices of state were in law open to all,' and the will of the people in their comitia had been in the most explicit and unqualified manner declared to be supreme alike in the election of magistrates, in the passing of laws, and in all matters touching the "caput" of a Roman citizen. But in practice the constitution had become an oligarchy. The senate, not the assembly, ruled Rome, and both the senate and the magistracies were in the hands ofa class which, in defiance of the law, arrogated to itself the title and the privileges of a nobility.4 The ascendency of the senate is too obvious and familiar a fact to need much illustration here. It is but rarely that the assembly was called upon to decide questions of policy, and then the proposal was usually made by the magistrate in obedience to the express directions of the senate.® In the enormous majority of cases the matter was settled by a senatus consultum, without any reference to the people at all. The assembly decides for war or peace®, but the conduct of the warand the conditions of peace are matters left to the senate. Now and then the assembly confers a

1 The most important change was the assimilation of the division by classes and centuries with that by tribes, a change effected appa- rently by the censors in their revision of the register, and probably effected gradually. For a full discussion of the point, see Mommsen, Rh. G., i. 818; Lange, Rom. Alterth., ii. 463 (where the literature is given); Madvig, Verf. d. Rim. Reichs, i. 117. A second constitu- tional question was the franchise of the freedmen; see Nitzsch, Die Gracchen, 132 (Berlin, 1847)

2 A few offices of a more or less priestly character were still filled only by patricians, ¢.g., rex sacrorun, flamen Dialis. A plebeian first became "curio maximus" in 209 (545 a.u.c.); Livy, xxvii. 8; see Mominsen, Rém. Forsch., i. 77-127.

3 The "lectio senatus" was in the hands of the censors, but whether before Sulla's time their choice was subject to legal restric- tions is doubtful. Cf. Cicero Pro Sestio, 65, "Deligercntur in id consilium ab universo populo."

4 Mommsen, R. G., i. 781 sq.; Lange, Rom. Alterth., ii.

° "Ex auctoritate senatus." The lex Flaminia agraria of 232 Was an exception, Cic. De Senect., 4; Polyb., ii. 21.

® Livy, xxxi. 5, xxxiii, 25, xxxvii. 55.

command upon the man of its choice, or prolongs the imperium of a magistrate,' but, as a rule, these and all questions connected with foreign affairs are settled within the walls of the senate house. It is the senate which year after year assigns the commands and fixes the number and disposition of the military forces,8 directs the organ- ization of a new province,? conducts negotiations, and forms alliances. Within Italy, though its control of affairs was less exclusive, we find that, besides supervis- ing the ordinary current business of administration, the senate decides questions connected with the Italian allies, sends out colonies, allots lands, and directs the suppres- sion of disorders. Lastly, both in Italy and abroad it managed the finances.!° Inseparably connected with this monopoly of affairs to the exclusion of the assembly was the control which in practice, if not in theory, the senate exercised over the magistrates. The latter had become what Cicero wrongly declares they were always meant to be, merely the subordinate ministers of the supreme council,"! which assigned them their departments, provided them with the necessary equipment, claimed to direct their conduct, prolonged their commands, and rewarded them with triumphs. It was now at once the duty and the interest of a magistrate to be "in auctoritate senatus," "subject to the authority of the senate," and even the once formidable "tribuni plebis" are found during this period actively and loyally supporting the senate, and acting as its spokesmen in the assembly.?"

The causes of this ascendency of the senate are not to Its causes.

be found in any additions made by law to its constitu- tional prerogatives, but first of all in the fact that the senate was the only body capable of conducting affairs in an age of incessant war. The voters in the assembly, a numerous, widely scattered body, many of whom were always away with the legions abroad, could not readily be called together, and when assembled were very imper- fectly qualified to decide momentous questions of military strategy and foreign policy. The senate, on the contrary, could be summoned in a moment,!® and included in its ranks all the skilled statesmen and soldiers of the common- wealth, while its forms of procedure were at least better fitted than those of the comitia for securing the careful discussion and prompt decision of the question before it. The subordination of the magistrates was equally the result of circumstances, though it suited the senatorial advocates of a later day to represent. it as an original prin- ciple of the constitution, and though it was encouraged and confirmed by the policy of the senate itself.!4 Tor, as the numbers of the magistrates, and also the area of govern- ment, increased, some central controlling power became absolutely necessary to prevent collisions between rival authorities, and to secure a proper division of labour, as well as to enforce the necessary concert and co-operation, nor could such a power be found anywhere in the repub- lican system but in the senate, standing as it necessarily did in the closest relations with the inagistrate, and com- posed as it was increasingly of men who were or had been in office.

*Once more, behind both senate and magistrates lay the The – —— '*nobiles,"*

T Wivy, xxix. 40) xecx, 27,641) xxi 50.

8 Livy, xxvi. 1, "consules de republica, de administratione belli, ae provinciis excrcitibusque patres consulucrunt."

9 Livy, xlv. 18.

10 Thne, R. G., iv. 48; Polyb., vi. 13.

11 Pro Sestio, 65, “quasi ministros gravissimi consilii.”

2 Livy, xxvii. 5, xxviii. 45.

13 Livy, xxii. 7; in 191 the senators were forbidden to Icave Rome® for more than a day. Nor were more than five to be absent at once ; Livy, xxxvi. 3.

M4 F.g., the abandonment of the dictatorship and the growing infre- quency of re-election after the Second Punic War.

5 Livy, xxvil. 35; xxxv, 42, 48.

608.

Weakness of the sena- torial govern- ment.

608.

756

whole power and influence of the new nobility.1 These “nobiles” are esseutially distinct from the older and more legitimate patrician aristocracy. Every patrician was of course noble, but the majority of the “noble families” in 146 were not patrician but plebeian.? The title had been gradually appropriated, since the opening of the magistra- cies, by those families whose members had held curule office, and had thereby acquired the “‘jus imaginum.” It was thus in theory within the reach of any citizen who could win election even to the curule edileship, and, more- over, it carried with it no legal privileges whatsoever. Gradually, however, the ennobled plebeian families drew together, and combined with the older patrician gentes to form adistinct order. Office brought wealth and prestige, and both wealth and prestige were liberally employed in securing for this select circle a monopoly of political power, and excluding new men.? Already by the close oi the period it is rare for any one but a noble to find his way into high office or into the senate. The senate and magistrates are the mouthpieces of this order, and are identified with it in policy and interest. Lastly, it must be allowed that both

the senate and the nobility had to some extent justified their power by the use they made of it. It was their tenacity of purpose and devoted patriot- ism which had carried Rome through the dark days of the Hannibalic war. The heroes of the struggle with Carthage belonged to the leading families ; the disasters at the Trasimene Lake and at Cannze were associated with the blunders of popular favourites.

From the first however, there was an inherent weak- ness in this senatorial government. It had no sound con- stitutional basis, and with the removal of its accidental supports it fell to the ground. Legally the senate had no positive authority. It could merely advise the magistrate when asked to do so, and its decrees were strictly only suggestions to the magistrate, which he was at liberty to accept or reject as he chose.4 It had it is true become customary for the magistrate not only to ask the senate's advice on all important points, but to follow it when given. But it was obvious that if this custom were weakened, and the magistrates chose to act independently, the senate was powerless. It might indeed anathematize® the re- fractory official, or hamper him if it could by setting in motion against him a colleague or the tribunes, but it could do no more, and these measures, though as a rule effective in the case of magistrates stationed in Rome, failed just where the senate's control was most needed and most difficult to maintain—in its relations with the generals and governors of provinces abroad. The virtual independ- ence of the proconsul was before 146 already exciting the jealousy of the senate and endangering its supremacy.é Nor again had the senate any legal hold over the assembly. Except in certain specified cases, it rested with the magis- trate to decide whether any question should be settled by a decree of the senate or a vote of the assembly.' If he

1 Mommsen, R. G., i. 782 sq.

® L.g., Livii, Sempronii, Ceecilii, Licinii, &c.

- *Livy, xxii. 34, "plebeios nobiles . . . contemuere plebem, ex quo contemni a patribus desierint, coepisse"; cf. Sall., Jug., 41, " paucorum arbitrio belli domique agitahatur penes eosdem aerarium, provinciae, magistratus." Mommsen, R. G., i. 792, 793. The number*

of new families ennobled dwindles rapidly after 200 B.¢.; Willems, Le Sénat de la République Romaine, i. 366 sq. (Paris, 1878).

4 The senators' whole duty is "sententiam dicere." The senator was asked "quid eenses?" the assembly " quid velitis jubeatis?" Cf, also the saving clause, "Si eis videretur" (sc. consulibus, &c.) in Scta., eg., Cic, Phil., v.19.

- *By declaring his action to be "contra rempublicam." force of this anathema varied with circumstances. value.*

6 Livy, xxxviii. 42, of Cn. Manlius Vulso in Asia, 189 B.c.; of. also the position of the two Scipios.

7 Hence the same things, e.g., founding of colonies, are done in one

The It had no legal

ROME

[HIsToRY.

decided to make a proposal to the assembly, he was not bound except by custom to obtain the previous approval of the senate, and® the constitution set no limits to the power of the assembly to decide any question whatsoever that was laid before it. The right of the people to govern was still valid, and though it had long lain dormant any year might see a magistrate in office resolved on recalling the people to a larger share in the conduct of affairs by consulting them rather than the senate, and an assembly bent on the exercise of its lawful prerogatives.

And from 167 at least, onwards, there were increasing indications that both the acquiescence of the people and the loyalty of the magistrates were failing. The absorb- ing excitement of the great wars had died away; the economic and social disturbance and distress which they produced were creating a growing feeling of discontent; and at the same time the senate provoked inquiries inte its title to govern by its failure any longer to govern well. In the East there was growing confusion; in the West a

single native chieftain defied the power which had crushed Carthage. At honie the senate was becoming more and more simply an organ of the nobility, and the nobility were becoming every year more exclusive, more selfish, and less capable and unanimous.®

But if the senate was uot to govern, the difficulty arose of finding an efficient substitute, and it was this difficulty that mainly determined the issue of the struggles which convulsed Rome from 133 to 49. As the event showed, ueither the assenibly nor the numerous and disorganized magistracy were equal to the work; the latter were gradu- ally pushed aside in favour of a more centralized authority, and the former became only the means by which this new authority was first encouraged in opposition to the senate and finally established in a position of impregnable strength. The assembly which niade Pompey and Cesar found out too late that it could not unmake them.

It is possible that these constitutional and administra- tive difficulties would not have proved so rapidly fatal to the republic had not its very foundations been sapped by the changes which followed more or less directly on the conquest of the world. These changes: can only be glanced at here. Civic equality and solidarity were alike destroyed by the concentration of wealth in a few hands, the disappearance of the small independent freeholder, and the growing numbers of freedmen and clients. The Roman community became not only unmanageably large, but hopelessly divided by class distinctions and interests, and wide differences in habits of life and modes of thought. The old traditions, beliefs, and usages insepar- ably connected with the republican reginie, and essential to its continuance, lost ground daily before the incoming flood of new fashions, intellectual and social, from Greece and the East. Before the republic fell, Roman society was already in structure, temper, and mind thoroughly unrepublican.

7

587,

621-705,

|

‘

|

The first systematic attack upon the senatorial govern-The ment is connected with the names of Tiberius and Gaius Gracht, |

Gracchus, and its immediate occasion was an attempt to deal with no less a danger than the threatened disappear- ance of the class to which of all others Rome owed most

year by a Sctum., in another by a “lex”; ef. Cic. De Rep., ii. 32; Phil., i. 2, of Antony as consul, “mutata omnia, nihil per senatum, omnia per populum.”

8 There was no legal necessity, before Sulla’s time, for getting the “senatus auctoritas” for a proposal to the assembly.

® See generally Mommsen, 2. G., i. bk. iii. cap. 6; Lange, Rém. Alterth., vol. ii.; Thne, v. cap. i. The first law against bribery at elections was passed in 181 B.c. (Livy, xl. 20), and against magisterial extortion in the provinces in 149 (Lex Calpurnia de pecuniis repe- tundis). The senators had special seats allotted to them in the theatre in 194 B.c.; Livy, xxxiv. 44, 54.

133-121 = |

621-633.

RO

in the past.’ For, while Rome had been extending her sway westward and eastward, while the treasury had been enriched, and while her nobles and merchants were amassing colossal fortunes abroad, the small freeholders throughout the greater part of Italy were sinking deeper into ruin under the pressure of accumulated difficulties. The Hannibalic war had laid waste their fields and thinned their numbers, and when peace returned to

Italy it brought with it no revival of prosperity. The heavy burden of nuilitary service still pressed ruinously upon them,' and in addition they were called upon to compete with the foreign corn imported from beyond the sea,® and with the foreign slave-labour purchased by the capital of wealthier men. Farming became unprofitable, and the hard laborious life with its scanty returns was thrown into still darker relief when compared with the stirring life of the camps with its opportunities of booty, or with the cheap provisions, frequent largesses, and gay spectacles to be had in the large towns. The small holders went off to follow the eagles or swell the proletariate of the cities, and their holdings were left to run waste or merged in the vineyards, oliveyards, and above all in the great cattle-farms, of the rich, and their own place was taken by slaves. The evil was not equally serious in all parts of Italy. It was least felt in the central highlands, in Campania, and in the newly settled fertile valley of the Po. It was worst in Etruria and in southern Italy ; but everywhere it was serious enough to demand the earnest attention of Roman statesmen. Of its existence the government had received plenty of warning in the de- clining numbers of able-bodied males returned at the census, in the increasing difficulties of recruiting for the legions,® in servile outbreaks in Etruria and Apulia,® and between 200 and 160 a good deal was attempted by way of remedy. In addition to the foundation of twenty colonies," there were frequent allotments of land to veteran soldiers, especially in Apulia and Samnium.8 In 180 40,000 Ligurians were removed from their homes and settled on vacant lands once the property of a Samnite tribe,® and in 160 the Pomptine marshes were drained for the purpose of cultivation.!° But these efforts were only partially successful. The colonies planted in Cisalpine Gaul and in Picenum flourished, but of the others the majority slowly dwindled away, and two re- quired recolonizing only eight years after their foundation,¥ The veterans who received land were unfitted to make good farmers ; and large numbers, on the first opportunity, gladly returned as volunteers to a soldier's life. More- over, after 160 even these efforts ceased, and with the single exception of the colony of Auximum in Picenum (157) nothing was done to check the spread of the evil, until in 133 Tiberius Gracchus, on his election to the tribunate, set his hand to the work.*

The remedy proposed by Gracchus !2 amounted in effect

THE GRACCHL. |

- *Mommsen, i. bk. iii. cap. 12, bk. iv. cap. 2; Ihne, v. 1-25; Nitzsch, Die Gracchen ; Long, Decline and Fail of the Roman Republic; Beesly, The Gracchi, Marius, and Sulla.*

2 To Spain alone more than 150,000 inen were sent between 196 and 169 (Ihne, iii, 319); compare the reluctance of the people to declare war against Macedon in 200 B.C., and also the case of Spurius Ligustinus in 171 (Livy, xlii, 34).

- *Mommsen, i. 837 sg. Ihne, v. 16, thinks that Mommsen has exaggerated the depressing effects of foreign competition, but hardly makes out his case, + Beloch, tal. Bund, 80 sq.*

® Livy, xliii. 14 ; Lpit., xlviii., lv. During the period the minimum qualification for service in the legion was reduced from 11,000 to 4000 asses. 6 Livy, xxxii. 26, xxiii, 36, xxxix. 29, 41.

" Sixteen Roman and four Latin colonies. See Marquardt, Staats- verw., 1. 8 H.g., Livy, xxxi. 4, 12, 89, xxxii. 1.

9 Livy, xl. 38. 0 Livy, Epit., xlvi. "1 Sipontum and Buxentum in 186; Livy, xxxix. 23.

"ad BPlut., 7. G., 9-14; Appian, B. C., i. 9-18; Livy, Epit., lviii.;

Mie, L. Agr., ii, 31. Compare also Mommsen, 2. G., ii. 68 sq.;

iv. 178 sg.,

ME

to the resumption by the state of as much of the Tiberius "common land" as was not held in occupation by author- Gracchus.

TO7

ized persons and conformably to the provisions of the Licinian Jaw. Unauthorized occupiers were to be evicted : in other cases the occupation was reduced to a maximum size of 1000 acres;}3 the public pastures were reclaimed for agriculture.14 And the land thus rescued for the com- munity from the monopoly of a few was to be distributed in allotments.!5 It was a scheme which could quote in its favour ancient precedent as well as urgent necessity. Of the causes which led to its ultimate failure something will be said later on ; for the present we must turn to the constitutional conflict which it provoked. The senate from the first identified itself with the interests of the wealthy occupiers, and Tiberius found himself forced into a struggle with the senate, which had been no part of his original plan. He fell back on the legislative sovereignty of the assembly ; he resuscitated the half-forgotten powers of interference vested in the tribunate in order to paralyse the action of the senatorial magistrates, and finally lost his life in an attempt to make good one of the weak points in the tribune's position by securing his own re-elec- tion for a second year. But the conflict did not end with his death. It was renewed on a wider scale, and with a

more deliberate aim by his brother Gaius, who on his Gaius election to the tribunate (123) at once came forward as Gracchus. The latter suddenly 631.

the avowed enemy of the senate. found its control of the administration threatened at a variety of points. On the invitation of the popular tribune the assembly proceeded to restrict the senate's freedom of action in assigning the provinces.!° It regu- lated the taxation of the province of Asia 17 and altered the conditions of military service.1® In home affairs it inflicted two serious blows on the senate's authority by declaring the summary punishment of Roman citizens by the con- suls on the strength of a senatus consultum to be a viola- tion of the law of appeal,!® and by taking out of the senate's hands the control of the newly established court for the trial of cases of magisterial misgovernment in the provinces.2? Tiberius had committed the mistake of rely- ing too exclusively on the support of one section only of the community; his brother endeavoured to enlist on the popular side every available ally. The Latins and Italians had opposed an agrarian scheme which took from them land which they had

*come to regard as rightfully theirs, and gave them no share in the benefit of the allot- ments.*1_ Gaius not only removed this latter grievance, 2? but ardently supported and himself brought forward the first proposals made in Rome for their enfranchisement.22*

Thne, v. 25; Marquardt, Rém. Staatsverw., i. 437 sq.; Lange, Rom. Alterth., iii. 8 sq.; Nitzsch, Gracchen, 294; .Dureau de la Malle,

con. politique des Romains, ii. 280,

8 Or possibly 750; it was in excess of the limit fixed by the Licinian law; App., B. C., i. 9.

14 Compare the inscription of Popillius Lenas, consul 132, C. J. L., i. 551; Wordsworth, Fragments of Early Latin, p. 221.

© The allotments were to be inalienable, and were charged with payment of a quit-rent. App., B. C., i. 10; Plut.,C. G., 9. Their size is not stated. lt is doubtful if the thirty jugera held " agri colendi causa" (compare the lex agraria, 111 3.0.) refer to the Sempro- nian allotments. See C. J. Z., i. 200, and Mommsen's notes.

16 Lex Sempronia de provinciis consularibus; Cic. Pro Domo, 9; De Prov. Cons., 2, 7; Sallust, Jug., 27.

7 Lex de provincia Asia; Cic. Verr., 3, 6; Fronto Ad Ver, i, p. 125. 18 Plut., C. G., 5; Diod., xxxiv. 25.

19 Plut., C. G., 4; Cie. Pro Domo, 31; Pro Rab. Perd., 4.

°° Questio de repetundis, est. 149 B.c. See Plut., C. G., 5; Livy, fipit., 1x.; Tae, Anm, xii. 603 App., BC, i. 91, For ehe kindred lex Acilia, see C, 7. Z., i. 198; Wordsworth, Fragm., 424,

21 They had succeeded in 129 in suspending the operations of the agrarian commission. App., B. C., i. 18; Livy, Epit., lix.; Cic, De Rep., iii. 41; of. Lex Agraria, line 81; C. I. L., i. 200.

Lange, R. A., iii. 32; Lex Agr., lines Si, is, Mil,

3 The rogatio Fulvia, 125 B.c.; Val. Maz., ix. 0,1; Appeaqe? 1.21.

Failure

of the attemptat agrarian reform.

636.

643,

Marius,

118-100= 636-654.

636,

758 RO

The indifference of the city populace, to whom the pro- spect of small holdings in a remote district of Italy was not a tempting one, was overcome by the establishment of regular monthly doles of corn at a low price.1_ Finally, the men of business—thée publicans, merchants, and money- lenders—were conciliated by the privilege granted to them of collecting the tithes of the new province of Asia, and placed in direct rivalry with the senate by the substitution of men of their own class as judges in the " quaestio de repetundis," in place of senators.? The organizer of this concerted attack upon the position of the senate fell, like his brother, in a riot.

The agrarian reforms of the two Gracchi had little per- manent effect.' Even in the lifetime of Gaius the clause in his brother's law rendering the new holdings inalienable was repealed, and the process of absorption recommenced.' In 118 a stop was put to further allotment of occupied lands,® and finally, in 111, the whole position of the agra- rian question was altered by a law which converted all land still held in occupation into private land.¢. The old controversy as to the proper use of the lands of the com- munity was closed by: this act of alienation. The contro- versy in fnture turns, not on the right of the poor citizens to the state lands, but on

the expediency of purchasing other lands for distribution at the cost of the treasury.'

But, though the agrarian reform failed, the political conflict it had provoked ended only with the dictatorship of Ceesar, and the lines on which it was waged were in the main those laid down by Gaius Gracchus. The sover- eignty of the assembly continued to be the watchword of the popular party, and a free use of the tribunician powers of interference and of legislation remained the most effective means of giving effect to theiraims. At the same time the careers. of both Tiberius and Gaius had illustrated the weak points of their position,—the un- certain temper and varying composition of the, assembly, the limited tenure of office enjoyed by. the tribunes® and the possibility of disunion in their own body, and, lastly, the difficulty of keeping together the divergent interests which Gaius had for a moment united in hostility to the senate. _

Ten years after the death of Gaius the populares once more summoned. up courage to challenge the supremacy of the senate; and it is important as marking a step in advance that it was on a question not of domestic reform but of foreign administration that. the conflict was renewed.

The course of affairs.in the client state of Numidia since .

Micipsa's death in 118 had been such as to discredit a stronger government than that of the senate.? In open defiance of Roman authority, and relying on the influence of his own well-spent gold, Jugurtha had murdered both his legitimate rivals, Hiempsal and Adherbal, and made himself master of Numidia. The declaration of war

1 Plut., C. G@., 53 App., i. 215 Livy, Zpit., 1x.; Festus, 290.

? Hence Gaius ranked as the founder of the equestrian order. Plin., N, I, xxxiii. 84, "judicum appellatione separare eum ordinem . . fee Gracchi ;" Varro ap. Non., 454, "bicipitem civitatem

ecit,

3 Traces of the work of the commission survive in the Miliarinm Popilianum, C. J. Z., i. 554, in a few Gracchan "termini," 7., 552, 553, 554, 555, in the "limites Gracchani," Liber Colon., ed. Lach- mann, pp. 209, 210, 211, 229, &c. Compare also the rise in the numbers of the census of 125 B.c.; Livy, Hpit., 1x.

4 Lex Minucia, 121 B.c.; App., i. 273 Oros., v. 12; Festus, 201.

° The so-called lex Thoria; App., i. 27; Cic. Brut., 86; of. Wordsworth, Mragm., 441.

8 The " lex agraria," still extant in a fragmentary condition in the museum at Naples. See Mommsen, C. J. Z., i. 200; Wordsworth, 441 sq.; Bruns, Montes Juris Rom., 54-67 ; App., i. 27.

7 Cic., Lex Agr., ii. sect. 65.

® Efforts were repeatedly made to get over this difficulty, e.g., the lex Papiria, 131 B.c.; Livy, Hpit., lix. Gaius was himself tribune for two years, 110-109 (¢f. Sall., Jug., 37, " tribuni continuare magis- tratum nitebantur)", and Saturninus in 100 B.c.

$ Sallust, Jug., 5 sq.; Livy, Epit., 1xii., Ixiv.

.

wrung from the senate (112) by popular indignation had 642. been followed by the corruption of a consul! (111) and 648. the crushing defeat of the proconsul Albinus." On the news of this crowning disgrace the storm burst, and on the proposal of the tribunes a commission of inquiry was appointed into the conduct of the war.'? But the popular leaders did not. stop here. Cecilius Metellus, who as con- sul (109) had succeeded to. the command in Numidia, was: 645. an able soldier but a rigid aristocrat; and they now resolved to. improve their success by entrusting the com- mand instead to a genuine son of the people. Their choice fell on Gaius Marius (see Marius), an experienced officer and administrator, but a man

of humble birth, wholly illiterate, and one who, though no politician, was by temperament and training a hater of the polished and effeminate nobles who filled the senate.!3 He was triumph, antly elected, and, in spite of a decree of the senate continuing Metellus as proconsul, he was entrusted by a: vote of the assembly with the charge of the war against Jugurtha.14 . Jugurtha was vanquished ; and Marius, who had been a second time elected consul in his absence, arrived at Rome in January 104, bringing the captive prince with him in 650. chains.© But further triumphs awaited the popular hero. The Cimbri and Teutones were at the gates of Italy; they had four times defeated the senatorial generals, and Marius was called upon to save Rome from a second invasion of the barbarians.!6 After two years of suspense the victory at Aque Sextize (102), followed by that on the 652. Raudine plain (101), put an end to the danger by 'the 653. annihilation of the invading hordes ; and Marius, now con- sul for the fifth time, returned to Rome in triumph. There the popular party welcomed him as a leader, and as one who would bring to their aid the imperium of the consul and all the prestige of a successful general. Once more, however, they were destined to a brief success followed by disastrous defeat. Marius became for the sixth time eonsul ;!' of the two popular leaders Glaucia became preetor gatur- and Saturninus tribune. But neither Marius nor his ninus allies were statesmen of the stamp of the Gracchi; and amd i | the laws proposed by Saturninus had evidently no other Dea : serious aim in view than 'that of harassing the senate. — His corn law merely reduced the price fixed in 123 for the 631. monthly dole of corn, and the main point of his agrarian law lay in the clause appended to it requiring all senators to swear to observe its provisions.!§ The laws were carried ; the senators with the exception of Metellus took the oath; but the triumph of the popular leaders was short-lived. Their recklessness and violence had alienated all classes in Rome; and their period of office was drawing to a close. At the elections fresh rioting took place, and at last Marius as consul was called upon by the senate to protect the state against his own partisans. In despair Saturninus and Glaucia surrendered, but while the senate was dis-' cussing their fate they were surrounded and murdered by the populace. The popular party had been worsted once more in their struggle with the senate, but none the less their alliance with Marius, and the position in which their votes placed

7,, 88, 39. a Mey, COS

13 Sallust, Jug., 68; Plut., Marius, 2,3. For the question as to the position of his parents, see Madvig, Verfas.,i.170; Diod., xxxiv. 38.

14 Sallust, Jug., 738.

1 7,, 114. Forthe chronology of the Jugurthine war, see Momm- sen, R, G., ii. 146 note; Pelham, Journ. of Phil., vii. 91.

16 Livy, Hpit., lxvii.; Plut., Mfar., 12; Mommsen, ii. 171 sq.

A MiNi, Leia Iba? Nii 185 Ob, ty AS Sie

18 For the "leges Appulciae," see Livy, Hpit., lxix.; App., i. 29 ; Cic. Pro Balbo, 21; Auct. Ad Herennium, i. 12,21. They included also allotments to Marius's veterans ; Auct. De Vir. Zl., 62.

Military

- reforms – of

Marius.

661.

Discon- tent of the Italian allies,

MARIUS. |

The six consulships of Marius represented not merely a party victory but a protest against the system of divided and rapidly-changing commands, which was no doubt the system favoured by the senate, but was also an integral element of the republican constitution, and in assailing it the populares weakened the republic even more than they irritated the senate. The transference of the political leadership to a consul who was nothing if not a soldier

was at once a confession of the insufficiency of the purely |

civil authority of the tribunate and a dangerous encourage- ment of military interference in political controversies. The consequences were already foreshadowed by the special pro- visions made by Saturninus for Marius's veterans, and in the active part taken by them in the passing of his laws. Indirectly too Marius, though no politician, played an important part in this new departure. His military reforms} at once democratized the army and attached it more closely to its leader for the time being. He swept away the last traces of civil distinctions of rank or wealth within the legion, admitted to its ranks all classes, and substituted voluntary enlistment under a popular general for the old-fashioned compulsory levy. The efficiency of the legion was increased at the cost of a complete severance of the ties which bound it to the civil community and to the civil authorities.

The defeat of Saturninus was followed by several years of quiet ; nor was the next important crisis provoked directly by any efforts of the discredited popular party. It was due partly to the rivalry which had been growing more bitter each year since 122 between the senate and the commercial class, and secondly to the long impending question of the enfranchisement of the Italian allies. The publicani, negotiatores, and others, who constituted what was now becoming known as the equestrian order, had made unscrupulous use of their control of the courts and especially of the '"quaestio de repetundis" against their natural rivals, the official class in the provinces. The threat of prosecution before a hostile jury was held over the head of every governor, legate, and quzstor who ventured to interfere with their operations in the pro- vinces, 'The average official preferred to connive at their exactions ; the bolder ones paid with fines and even exile for their courage. In 93 the necessity for a reform was proved beyond a doubt by the scandalous condemnation of P. Rutilius Rufus,? ostensibly on a charge of extortion, in reality as the reward of his efforts to check the extor- tions of the Roman equites in Asia.

The need of reform was clear, but it was not so easy to carry a reform which would certainly be opposed by the whole strength of the equestrian order, and which, as in- volving the repeal of a Sempronian law, would arouse the resentment of the popular party. The difficulties of the Italian

question were more serious. That the Italian allies were discontented was notorious. After nearly two centuries of close alliance, of common dangers and victories, they now eagerly coveted as a boon that complete amal- gamation with Rome which they had at first resented as a dishonour. But, unfortunately, Rome had grown niore selfishly exclusive in proportion as the value set upon Roman citizenship increased. The politic liberality with which the franchise had once been granted had disappeared. The allies found their burdens increasing and their ancient privileges diminishing, while the resentment with which they viewed their exclusion from the fruits of the conquests they had helped to make was aggravated by

1 Sallust, Jug., 86, " ipse interea milites scribere, non nore majorum neque ex classibus, sed uti cujusque cupido erat, capite censos plerosque." For details, ef, Mommsen, ii. 192; Madvig, Verf, ii. 468, 493; Marquardt, Staatsv., ii, 417, 421.

- *Livy, Epit., Ixx.; Vell. Pat., ii. 13; Cicero, Brud.,*

RO

time before.

ME 759

the growingly suspicious and domineering attitude of the Roman government.? During the last forty years feel- ings of hope and disappointment had rapidly succeeded each other; Marcus Fulvius, Gaius Gracchus, Saturninus, had all held out promises of relief—and nothing had yet been done. On each occasion they had crowded to Rome, full of eager expectation, only to be harshly ejected from the city by the cousul's orders The justice of their claims could hardly be denied, the danger of continuing to ignore them was obvious—yet the difficulties in the way of granting them were formidable in the extreme. The temper of senate and people alike was still jealously exclusive, and from a higher than a merely selfish point of view there was much to be said against the revolution involved in so sudden and enormous an enlargement of the citizen body. –

Marcus Livius Drusus, who as tribune gallantly took up Marcus the task of reform, is claimed by Cicero® as a member of Livius that party of the centre to which he belonged himself. are Noble, wealthy, and popular, he seems to have hoped to be ¢@3. able by the weight of his position and character to rescue the burning questions of the day from the grasp of extreme partisans and to settle them peacefully and equitably.

But he, like Cicero after him, had to find to his cost that

there was no room in the -fierce strife of Roman politics

for moderate counsels. His proposal to reforin the law courts excited the equestrian order and their friends in the senate to fury. The agrarian and corn laws which he coupled with it® alienated many more in the senate, and roused the old anti-popular party feeling ; finally, his known negotiations with the Italians were eagerly misrepresented to the jealous and excited people as evidence of complicity with a wide-spread conspiracy against Rome. His laws were carried, but the senate pronounced them null and void." Drusus was denounced in the senate house asa traitor, and on his way home was struck down by the hand ° of an unknown assassin.

The knights retained their monopoly of the courts, but The this and all other domestic controversies were silenced for Social the time by the news which followed hard upon the poekoeS murder of Drusus that the Italians were in open revolt ¢g4_665, against Rome. His assassination was the signal for an outbreak which had been secretly prepared for some Throughout the highlands of central and southern Italy the flower of the Italian peoples rose as one man.® Etruria and Umbria held aloof; the isolated Latin colonies stood firm; but the Sabellian clans, north and south, the Latinized Marsi and Peeligni, as well as the still Oscan-speaking Samnites and Lucanians, rushed to arms. No time was lost in proclaiming their plans for the future. A new Italian state was to be formed. The Pelignian town of Corfinium was selected as its capital and re-christened with the proud name of Italica. All Italians were to be citizens of this new metropolis, and here were to be the place of assembly and the senate house. A senate of 500 members and a magistracy

resembling that of Rome completed a constitution which adhered closely to the very political traditions which its authors had most reason to abjure.

Now, as always in the face of serious danger, the action

3 Mommisen, ii, 218; Ihne, iv. 151, v. 253; Marquardt, Staats- verw., i. 57, 58.

4 Lex Junia,'Cic. De Off, iii. 11; lex Licinia Mucia, Cic. Pro Corn., fr. 10; Ascon., p. 67.

5 Cic. De Orat., i. 25, and De Domo, 50; Appian, B. C.,i. 85; Diod. Sic., xxxvii. 10; Ihne, v. 242.

6 For the provisions of the "leges Liviae," see App., B. C., i. 85; Livy, Zpit., lxxi. They included, according to Pliny, W. Z., xxxiii. 3, a proposal for the debasement of the coinage.

7 Cic. Pro Domo, 16.

8 For the Social War, see, besides Mommsen, Thne, Lange; also Kiene, D. Rémische Bundesgenossenkrieg, Leipsic, 1845.

664,

Lex Julia: and lex Plautia

Papiria.

665.

665.

P. Sul- picius Rufus,

88 = 666.

760 RO

of Rome was prompt and resolute. Both consuls took the field;! with each were five legates, among them the veteran Marius and his destined rival L. Cornelius Sulla, and even freedmen were pressed into service with the legions. But the first year's campaign opened disastrously. In central Italy the northern Sabellians, and in the south the Samnites, defeated the forces opposed to them, And though before the end of the year Marius and Sulla in the north, and the consul Cesar himself in Campania, succceded in inflicting severe blows on the enemy, and on the Marsi especially, it is not surprising that, with an empty treasury, with the insurgents' strength still un- broken, and with rumours of disaffection in the loyal districts,~~opinion in Rome should have turned in the direc~~ tion of the more liberal policy which had been so often scornfully rejected and in favour of some compromise which should check the spread of the revolt, and possibly sow discord among their enemies. 'Towards the close of the year 90 the consul Cesar carried the "lex Julia," by which the Roman franchise was offered to all communi- ties which had not as yet revolted; early in the next year (89) the Julian law was supplemented by the "lex Plautia Papiria," introduced by two of the tribunes, which enacted that any citizen of an allied community then domiciled in Italy might obtain the franchise by giving in his name to a pretor in Rome within sixty days. A third law (lex Calpurnia) apparently passed at the same time empowered Roman magistrates in the field to bestow the franchise there and then upon all who were willing to receive it. This sudden opening of the closed gates of Roman citizen- ship was completely successful, and its effects were at once visible in the diminished vigour of the insurgents. By the end of 89 the Samnites and Lucanians were left alone in their obstinate hostility to Rome, and neither, thanks to Sulla's brilliant campaign in Samnium, had for the moment any strength left for active aggression.

The termination of the Social War brought with it no peace in Rome. The old quarrels were renewed with increased bitterness, and the newly enfranchised Italians themselves complained as bitterly of the restriction? which robbed them of their due share of political influence by allowing them to vote only in a specified number of tribes. The senate itself was distracted by violent personal rivalries

—-and all these feuds, animosities, and grievances were

aggravated by the widespread economic distress and ruin which affected all classes. Lastly, war with Mithradates had been declared ; it was notorious that the privilege of commanding the force to be sent against him would be keenly contested, and that the contest would lie between the veteran Marius and L. Cornelius Sulla.5

It was in an atmosphere thus charged with the elements of disturbance that P. Sulpicius Rufus as tribune® brought forward his laws. He proposed—(1) that the command of the Mithradatic war should be given to Marius, (2) that the new citizens should be distributed through all the tribes, (3) that the freedmen should no longer be confined to the four city tribes, (4) that any senator owing more

1 App., B. C., i. 89-49; Livy, Zpit., Ixxii.—lxxvi.

2 For the lex Julia, see Cicero Pro Balbo, 8; Gell., iv. 4; App., B. C., i. 49. For lex Plautia Papiria, see Cic. Pro Archia, 4, and Schol. Bob., p. 353.

- *Vell, Pam, i. 20); App, C4. 49, 53. Madvig (R. Verf., i. 27) follows Appian in holding that the tribes to which the new voters were confined were newly created tribes, Cf. Mommsen Rim. Tribus, ii. a App., B.C., i. 54, and Mithr. 22; Oros., v. 18; Livy, Lipit., XXiv. ; > It had been already declared a consular province for 87, and early in = seems to have been assigned to Sulla by decree of the senate.*

Cf. Cie. De Orat., i. 25, iii. 31, and Brutus, 214; Vell. Party, las 18, for Sulpicius himself. For his laws, see App., B.C., i. 55 sq.; Livy Jipit., \xxvii.; Plutarch, Sulla, 8 sq.

| bodies of the slain.

ME

than 2000 denarii should lose his seat, (5) that those exiled on suspicion of complicity with the Italian revolt should be recalled. Whatever may have been Sulpicius's intentions, these proposals inevitably provoked a

storm. The old voters bitterly resented the swamping of the existing constituency; the senate rallied its forces to oppose the alteration in the franchise of the freedmen and the proposed purging of its own ranks; and, lastly, both the senate and Sulla himself, now one of the consuls, pre- pared to resist the transference of the Asiatic command to Marius. Both sides were ominously ready for violent measures. The consuls, in order to prevent legislation, proclaimed a public holiday.' Sulpicius replied by arm- ing his followers and driving the consuls from the forum, The proclamation was withdrawn and the laws carried, but Sulpicius's triumph was short-lived. From Nola in Campania, where lay the legions commanded by him in the Social War, Sulla advanced on Rome, and for the first time a Roman consul entered the city at the head of the legions of the republic. Resistance was hopeless. Marius and Sulpicius fled, and Sulla, summoning the assembly of the centuries, proposed the measures he con- sidered necessary for the public security, the most import- ant being a provision that the sanction of the senate should be necessary before any proposal was introduced to the assembly. Then, after waiting in Rome long enough

to hold the consular elections, he left for Asia early in 87, 667. Sulla had conquered, but his victory cost the republic Marius

dear. He had first taught political partisans to look for final success, not to a majority of votes in the forum or campus, but to the swords of the soldiery; and he had shown that the legions, composed as they now were, could be trusted to regard nothing but the commands. of a favourite leader. The lesson was well learnt. Shortly after his departure, Cinna as consul revived the proposals of Sulpicius ;!° his colleague Octavius at the head of an armed force fell upon the new citizens who had collected in crowds to vote, and the forum was heaped high with the Cinna fled, but fled like Sulla to the legions. When the senate declared him deposed from his consulship, he replied by invoking the aid of the soldiers in Campania in behalf of the violated rights of the people and the injured dignity of the consulship, and, like Sulla, found them ready to follow where he led. The

neighbouring Italian communities, who had lost many citizens in the recent massacre, sent their new champion men and money ;!? while from Africa, whither he had escaped after Sulla's entry into Rome, came Marius with 1000 Numidian horsemen. He landed in Etruria, where his old veterans flocked to his standard, and at the head of some 6000 men joined Cinna before the gates of Rome. The senate had prepared for a desperate defence, but fortune was adverse, and after a brief resistance they gave way. Cinna was acknowledged as consul, the sentence of outlawry passed on Marius was revoked, and Cinna and Marius entered Rome with their troops. Marius's thirst for revenge was gratified by a frightful massacre, and he lived long enough to be nominated consul for the seventh time. But he held his consulship only a few weeks. Early in 86 he died, and for the next three years Cinna ruled Rome. Constitutional government was virtu-

7 App., loc. cit., quepav apylas roAXGy—a favourite stroke of policy. Cf. Cicero Ad Q. F., ii. 4, 4, "dies comitiales exemit omnes. . Latinae instaurantur, nec deerant supplicationes."

8 Marius finally escaped to Africa (see Martius); Sulpicius was taken and killed ; App., i. 60.

9 App., B. C., i. 59, undéy eri &rpoBovrAcvrov és roy Shuov éopépecOat. For the other laws mentioned by Appian, see Mommsen, 1258. 10 Livy, Zpit., lxxix.; Vell., ii. 20.

1 Cic. Pro Sestio, 77; Catil., iii. 24. 12 Tibur and Preneste especially.

and Cinna,

668.

669, 670.

668.

669.

The return of Sulla,

83=671.

672.

Sulla's dictator- ship, 81

= 678.

SULLA. |

ally suspended. For 85 and 84 Cinna nominated himself and a trusted colleague as consuls.! The state was, as Cicero? says, without lawful authority. One important matter was carried through—the registration in all the tribes of the newly enfranchised Italians, but beyond this little was done. The attention of Cinna and his friends was in truth engrossed by the ever-present dread of Sulla's return from Asia. The consul of 86, Valerius Flaccus, sent out to supersede him, was murdered by his own soldiers at Nicomedia.> In 85 Sulla, though disowned by his government, concluded a peace with Mithradates.6 In 84, after settling affairs in Asia and crushing Flaccus's suc- cessor Fimbria, he crossed into Greece, and in the spring of 83 landed at Brundusium with 40,000 soldiers and a large following of emigré nobles. Cinna was dead,7 murdered like Flaccus by his mutinous soldiers ; his most trusted colleague Carbo was commanding as proconsul in Cisalpine Gaul; and the resistance offered to Sulla's advance was slight. At Capua Sulla routed the forces of one consul, Norbanus ; at Teanum the troops of the other went over in a body to the side of the outlawed proconsul. After a winter spent in Campania he pressed forward to Rome, defeated the younger Marius (consul 82) near Preeneste, and entered the city without further opposition. Iu North Italy the success of his lieutenants Metellus, C. Pompeius, and Marcus Crassus had been fully as decisive. Cisalpine Gaul, Umbria, and Etruria had all been won for Sulla, and the two principal leaders on the other side, Carbo and Norbanus, had each fled, one to Rhodes, the other to Africa. Only one foe remained to be conquered. The Samnites and Lucanians whom Cinna had conciliated, and who saw in Sulla their bitterest foe, were for the last time in arms, and had already joined forces

with the remains of the Marian army close to Rome. The decisive battle was fought under the walls of the city, and ended in the com- plete defeat of the Marians and Italians.®

For a period of nearly ten years Rome and Italy had been distracted by civil war. Constitutional government, whether by senate or assembly, had been in abeyance, while the opposing parties fought out their quarrels with the sword, under the leadership of generals at the head of legions ready and willing to follow them against their fellow citizens and against the established authorities of the state. The strife had spread from the Roman forum to Italy, and from Italy to the provinces ; and for the first time the integrity of the empire was threatened by the conflicts of rival governors.? The tottering fabric of Italian prosperity had been rudely shaken by the ravages of war. Class hatreds and personal feuds distracted the community, while the enfranchisement of the Italians was in itself a revolution which affected the very foundations of the republic. Such was the situation with which Sulla was now called upon to deal. heal the divisions which rent the state asunder, to set in working again the machinery of civil government, and above all so to modify it as to meet the altered conditions,

ROME

It was for him to

761

and to fortify it against the dangers which visibly threatened it in the future. The real charge against Sulla!® is not that he failed to accomplish all this, for to do so was beyond the powers even of a man so able, resolute, and self-confident as Sulla, armed though he was with absolute authority and backed by overwhelming military strength and the prestige of unbroken success. He stands convicted rather of deliberately aggravating some and culpably ignoring others of the evils he should have tried to cure, and of contenting himself with a party triumph when he should have aimed at the regeneration and con- firmation of the whole state. His victory was instantly followed, not by any measures of conciliation, but by a series of massacres, proscriptions, and

confiscations, of which almost the least serious consequence was the immediate

loss of life which they entailed.1! From this time forward Effects the fear of proscription and confiscation recurred as a °f the

possible consequence of every political crisis, and it was with difficulty that Caesar himself dissipated the belief that his victory would be followed by a Sullan reign of terror. The legacy of hatred and discontent which Sulla left behind him was a constant source of disquiet and danger. In the children of the proscribed, whom he excluded from holding office, and the dispossessed owners of the confiscated lands, every agitator found ready and willing allies.1? The moneyed men of the equestrian order were more than ever hostile to the senatorial government, which they now identified with the man who cherished towards them a peculiar hatred,!8 and whose creatures had hunted them down like dogs. The attachment which the new Italian citizens might in time have learnt to feel for the old republican constitution was nipped in the bud by the massacres at Praeneste and Norba, by the harsh treat- ment of the ancient towns of Etruria, and by the ruthless desolation of Samnium and Lucania.!4 Quite as fatal were the results to the economic prosperity of the peninsula. Sulla's confiscations, following on the civil and social wars, opened the doors wide for a long train of evils. The veterans whom he planted on the lands he had seized! did nothing for agriculture, and swelled the growing numbers of the turbulent and discontented.16 The "Sullan men" became as great an object of fear and dislike as the "Sullan reign."!" The "latifundia" increased with start- ling rapidity—whole territories passing into the hands of greedy partisans.!8 Wide tracts of land, confiscated but never allotted, ran to waste.!® In all but a few districts of Italy the free population finally and completely dis- appeared from the open country; and life and property were rendered insecure by the brigandage which now developed unchecked, and in which the herdsmen slaves played a prominent part. The outbreaks of Spartacus in

73, and of Catiline ten years later, were significant com- 681. mentaries on this part of Sulla's work.2° His constitutional Consti- legislation, while it included many useful administrative tutional

reforms, is marked by as violent a spirit of partisanship, and as apparently wilful a blindness to the future.

The consuls of 86, 85, 84 were all nominated without election. Livy, Epit., 1xxx., lxxxiii.; App., i. 75.

2 Brut., 227.

3 The nobles had fled to Sulla in large numbers; Velleius, ii. 23.

4 This work was accomplished apparently by the censors of 86; but ef. Lange, iii. 183 ; Mommsen, ii. 315 ; Livy, Zpit., 1xxxiv.

> Livy, Mpit., lxxxii. Appian, Mfithr., 52; Plut., Sudia, 23.

8 Livy, Lpit., \xxxiii,; Vell., ii. 23; Plut., Sudl., 22.

" In 84; App., B. C., i. 78; Livy, Zpit., lxxxiii.

8 Livy, HZpit., lxxxviii., "cum Samnitibus ante portam Collinam debellavit ;" Plut., Sulla, 29, and Crassus, 6. According to App., i. 98, and Livy, Joc. cit., 8000 captives were massacred. Florus, iii. 21, gives 4000. Preneste surrendered, was razed to the ground, and its population put to the sword.

® In Asia between Sulla and Fimbria. In 82 Pompey crushed the Marian leader Carbo in Africa. In Spain Q. Sertorins maintained himself for ten years (82-72).

of the Hirpini.

10 Compare especially Mommsen's brilliant chapter, which is, how- ever, too favourable (ii. 335-377), and also Lange (iii. 144 sq.), where inost of the special literature on the Sullan legislation is given.

App., i. 95 sg.; Dio Cassius, fr, 109; Plut., Sa, 31. The number of the proscribed is given as 4700 (Valer. Max.), including, according to Appian, 2600 members of the equestrian order,

2 #.g., Catiline, in 63. Sall., Cat., 21, 87. For the “liberi pro- scriptorum,” see Velleius, ii. 28. 1 Gic. Pro Cluent., 151.

MN Oic., Phil., v. 48, “tot municipiorum maximae calamitates,” Cic. Pro Domo, 30 ; Cic. Ad Aét., i. 19 ; Florus, iii. 21 ; Strabo, p.

223, 2548

1 Livy, Hpit., lxxxix.; App., B. C., i. 100; Cicero, Cadti., ii, 20.

16 Sall., Cat., 28. Wie, LenvAgn., lie 26:

18 Cic., Lew Agr., ii. 26, 28, iii. 2, —the territories of Preneste and AE Otley Ie Alot, wal, PY! hy Be For the “ pastores ”

XX. — 96

20 See especially Cicero’s oration Pro Tullio. of Apniia, Sall., Cat., 28.

The guna,

666.

650,

762

re-establishment on a legal basis of the ascendency which custom had so long accorded to the senate was his main object. With this purpose he had already, when consul in 88, made the “senatus auctoritas” legally necessary for proposals to the assembly. He now as dictator! followed this up by crippling the power of the magistracy, which had been the most effective weapon in the hands of the senate’s opponents. The legislative freedom of the tribunes was already hampered by the necessity of obtain- ing the senate’s sanction ; in addition, Sulla restricted their wide powers of interference (intercessio) to their original purpose of protecting individual plebeians,? and discredited the office by prohibiting a tribune from holding any sub- sequent office in the state. The control of the courts (quaestiones perpetuae) was taken from the equestrian order and

restored to the senate. To prevent the people from suddenly installing and keeping in high office a second Marius, he re-enacted the old law against re-election,® and made legally binding the custom which required a man to mount up gradually to the consulship through the lower offices. His increase of the number of preetors from six to eight,7 and of questors to twenty,® though required by administrative necessities, tended, by enlarging the numbers and further dividing the authority of the magistrates, to render them still more dependent upon the central direction of the senate, Lastly, he replaced the pontifical and augural colleges in the hands of the sena- torial nobles, by enacting that vacancies in them should, as before the lex Domitia (104), be filled up by co-optation.® This policy of deliberately altering the constitution, so as to make it pronounce in favour of his own party, was open to two grave objections. It was not to be expected that the new legal safeguards would protect the senate any more efficiently than the established custom and tra- dition which the Gracchi had broken down ; and, secondly, it was inevitable that the popular party would on the first opportunity follow Sulla's example, and alter the con- stitution to suit themselves. Still less was Sulla success- ful in fortifying the republican system against the dangers which menaced it from without. He accepted as an accomplished fact the enfranchisement of the Italians,1° but he made no provision to guard against the consequent reduction of the comitia to an absurdity, and with them of the civic government which rested upon them, or to organize an effective administrative system for the Italian communities. Of all men, too, Sulla had the best reason

1 For Sulla's dictatorship as in itself a novelty, see App., i. 98 ; Plut., Sulla, 88; Cic. Ad Adt., 9, 15; Cic. De Legg., i. 15.

2 Cic. De Legg., iii. 22, "injuriae faciendae potestatem ademit, auxilii ferendi reliquit." Cf. Cic., Verr., i. 60; Livy, Hpit., lxxxix.

3 Cic. Pro Cornel., fr. 78; Ascon, In Corn., 78; Appian, i. 100.

4 Velleius, ii. 832; Tac., Ann., xi. 223 Cic., Verr., i. 18.

5 App., B. C., i. 100; of. Livy, vii 42 (842 B.c.), "ne quis enndem magistratum intra decem annos caperet."

6 The custom had gradually established itself. Cf Livy, xxxii. 7. The "certus ordo magistratuum " legalized by Sulla was—questorship, pretorship, consulate; App., i. 100.

7 Pompon., De Orig. Juris (Dig., i. 2, 2); Velleius, ii. 89. Com-

pare also Cicero In Pison., 15, with Id. Pro Alilone, 15. The increase was connected with his extension of the system of " quaestiones perpetuae," which threw more work on the preetors as the magistrates in charge of the courts. : 8 Tac., Ann., xi. 22. The questorship henceforward carried with it the right to be called up to the senate. By increasing the number of queestors, Sulla provided for the supply of ordinary vacancies in the senate and restricted the censors' freedom of choice in filling them up. Fragments of the "'lex Cornelia de XX quaestoribus" survive. See OMT, Lay LOS)

® Dio Cass., xxxvii. 37; Ps. Ascon., 102 (Orelli). He also increased their numbers; Livy, Hpit., Ixxxix.

'° He did propose to deprive several communities which had joined Cinna of the franchise, but the deprivation was not carried into effect ; Cic. Pro Domo, 30, and Pro Cxcina, 38, 35.

" There is no evidence to show that Sulla's legislation touched at all upon municipal government in Italy; ¢f, Mommscn, ii. 361 sq.

ROM E

[HISTORY.

to appreciate the dangers to be feared from the growing independence of governors and generals in the provinces, and from the transformation of the old civic militia into a group of professional armies, devoted only to a successful leader, and with the weakest possible sense of allegiance to the state. He had himself, as proconsul of Asia, con- temptuously and successfully defied the home government, and he, more than any other Roman general, had taught his soldiers to look only to their leader, and to think only of booty.!2 Yet, beyond a few inadequate regulations, there is

*no evidence that Sulla dealt with these burning ques- tions, the settlement of which was among the greatest of the achievements of Augustus.' One administrative re- form of real importance must, lastly, be set down to his credit. The judicial procedure first established in 149 605-673. for the trial of cases of magisterial extortion in the pro- vinces, and applied between 149 and 81 to cases of treason and bribery, Sulla extended so as to bring under it the chief criminal offences, and thus laid the foundations of the Roman criminal law.**

The Sullan system stood for nine years, and was then Over- overthrown—as it had been established—by a successful throw soldier. It was the fortune of Cn. Pompeius, a favourite eel officer of Sulla, first of all to violate in his own person the constitu. fundamental principles of the constitution re-established tion, 70 by his old chief, and then to overturn it. In Spain the =684 Marian governor Q. Sertorius (see SeRTorIUs) had defeated one after another of the proconsuls sent out by the senate, and was already in 77 master of all Hither Spain. To 677. meet the crisis, the senate itself took a step which was in fact the plainest possible confession that the system sanctioned afresh by Sulla was inadequate to the needs of the state. Pompey, who was not yet thirty, and had never held even the quiestorship, was sent out to Spain with proconsular authority.1® Still Sertorius held out, until in 73 he was foully murdered by his own officers. 681. The native tribes who had loyally stood by him submitted, and Pompey early in 71 returned with his troops to Italy, 683. where, during his absence in Spain, an event had occurred which had shown Roman society with startling plainness how near it stood to revolution. In 73 Spartacus,!' a 681. Thracian slave, escaped with seventy others from a gladia- tors' training school at Capua. In an incredibly short time he found himself at the head of a numerous force

12 Sall., Cat., ii., "L. Sulla exercitum, quo sibi fidum faceret, contra morem majorum luxuriose nimisque liberaliter habnerat."

13 There was a " lex Cornelia de provinciis ordinandis," but only two of its provisions are known :—(1) that a magistrate sent out with the imperium should retain it till he re-entered the city (Cic, Ad Fam., i. 9, 25), a provision which increased rather than diminished his free- dom of

action; (2) that an outgoing governor should leave his pro- viuce within thirty days after his successor's arrival (Cic. Ad Fam., iii, 6, 4). A "lex Cornelia de majestate" contained, it is true, a definition of treason evidently framed in the light of recent experience. The magistrate was forbidden "exire de provincia, educere exercitum, belluin sua sponte gerere, in regnum injussu populi ac scnatus ac- cedere," Cic. Jn Pis., 21. Sulla also added one to the long list of laws dealing with extortion in the provinces. But the danger lay, not in the want of laws, but in the want of security for their observance by an absolutely autocratic proconsul. The present writer cannot agree with those who would include aniong Sulla's laws one retaining consuls and pretors in Rome for their year of office and then sending them out to a province. This was becoming the common practice before 81. After 81 it is invariable for pretors, as needed for the judicial work, and invariable but for two exceptions in the case of consuls ; but nowhere is there a hint that there had bcen any legislation on the subject, and there are indications that it was convenience and not law which maintained the arrangement. Mommsen, ii. 855; Marquardt, Staatsverw., i. 378:

4 For this, the most lasting of Sulla's reforms, see Mommsen, ii. 359 3 Rein, Criminal-Recht ; Zumpt, Criminal-Prozess d. Rimer.

15 For the Sertoriau War, see Plutarch, Sertorius.

16 Plut., Pomp., 17; Livy, Zpit., xci. For Pompey's earlier life, see POMPEY.

W App., i. 1163 Livy, Zpit., xev.; Plut., Crass., 8 sq.

682.

683.

676.

Pompey as consul.

684,

Gabinian and Manilian

_ laws,

RO

of runaway slaves, outlaws, brigands, and impoverished peasants. By the end of 73 he had 70,000 men under his command, had twice defeated the Roman troops, and was master of southern Italy. In 72 he advanced on Rome, but, though he again routed the legions led against him by the consuls in person, he abandoned his scheme and established himself in the now desolate country near Thurii, already the natural home of brigandage. At length in 71 the pretor Crassus, who had been sent against him with no less than six legions, ended the war. Spartacus was defeated and slain in Apulia. In Rome itself the various classes and parties hostile to the Sullan system had, ever since Sulla's death in 78, been incessantly agitating for the repeal of his most obnoxious laws, and needed only a leader in order successfully to attack a government discredited by failure at home and abroad. With the return of Pompey from Spain their Opportunity came. Pompey, who understood politics as little as Marius, was anxious to obtain—what the senate was more than likely to refuse to give him, and what he was not legally entitled to—a triumph, the consulship for the next year (70), and as the natural consequence of this an important command in the Hast. The opposition wanted his name and support, and a bargain was soon struck. Pompey and with him Marcus Crassus, the con- queror of Spartacus, were elected consuls, almost in the presence of their troops, which lay encamped outside the gates in readiness to assist at the triumph and ovation granted to their respective leaders. Pompey lost no time in performing his part of the agreement. The tribunes regained their prerogatives.1 The "perpetual courts" were taken out of the hands of the senatorial judices, who had outdone the equestrian order in scandalous corrup- tion,' and finally the censors, the first since 86 B.c., purged the senate of the more worthless and disreputable of Sulla's partisans. The victory was complete; but for the future its chief significance lay in the clearness with which it showed that the final decision in matters political lay with neither of the two great parties in Rome, but with the holder of the military authority. The recognition of

this fact was fatal to the dignity of politics in the city. In proportion as the mass of the Roman community in Italy, and able aspirants to power, like Czesar, became conscious of the unreality of the old constitutional controversies, they became indifferent to the questions which agitated the forum and the curia and contemptuously ready to alter or disregard the constitution itself, when it stood in the way of interests nearer to their hearts. Of this grow- ing indifference to the traditional politics of the republic, against which Cicero struggled in vain, Pompey is an excellent example. He was absolutely without interest in them, except in so far as they led up to important military commands, and, though he was never revolutionary in intention, his own career, in its quiet defiance of all the established rules of the constitution, did almost more than the direct attacks of others to render the republic impos- sible,

When his consulship ended, Pompey impatiently awaited at the hands of the politicians he had befriended the further gift of aforeign command. He declined an ordinary

POMPEY. |

1 The exact provisions of Pompey's law are nowhere given; Livy, Epit., xcvii., "tribuniciam potestatem restituerunt." Cf. Velleius, li. 30, A "lex Aurelia," in 75, had already repealed the law dis- qualifying a tribune for further office ; Cic., Comnawin, (8%

2 This was the work of L. Aurelius Cotta, pretor in this year. The "judices" were to be taken in equal proportions from senators, equites, and "tribuni aerarii." For the latter and for the law generally, see Madvig, Verf., i. 182, ii. 222; Lange, R. Alt., iii. 198. Com- pare also Cicero's language, Zn Verr., i. 1, 15. The prosecution of Verres shortly preceded the lex Aurelia.

3 Livy, Epit., xcviii. Sixty-four senators were expelled. Cf. Plut., Pomp., 22; Cie. In Vere taleltis

Bt 763

province, and from the end of 70 to 67 he remained at 684-7.

Rome in a somewhat affectedly dignified seclusion. But

in 67 and 66 the laws of Gabinius and Manilius gave him 687, 688.

all and more than all that he expected. The ravages of the pirates, encouraged in the first instance, by the inactivity which had marked Roman policy in the East after 167, and by the absence of any effective Roman navy in the Mediterranean, had now risen to an intolerable height, and the spasmodic efforts made since 81 had done little to check them. The trade of the Mediterranean was para- lysed, and even the coasts of Italy were not safe from their raids.© Aulus Gabinius, a tribune, and a follower of Pompey, now proposed to the people to entrust Pompey with the sole command against the pirates.© His com- mand was to last for three years. He was to have supreme authority over all Roman magistrates in the provinces throughout the Mediterranean and over the coasts for 50 miles inland. Fifteen legati, all of preetorian rank, were assigned to him, with two hundred ships, and as many troops as he thought desirable. These powers were still further enlarged in the next year by the Manilian law, which transferred from Lucullus and Glabrio to Pompey the conduct of the Mithradatic war in Asia, and with it the entire control of Roman policy and interests in the East.7 The unrepublican character of the position thus granted to Pompey, and the dangers of the precedent established, were clearly enough pointed out by such moderate men as Q. Lutatius Catulus, the "father of the senate," and by the orator Hortensius—but in vain. Both laws were sup- ported, not only by the tribunes and the populace, but by the whole influence of the "publicani" and " nego- tiatores," whose interests in the East were at stake.

Pompey left Rome in 67, and did not return to Italy Cwsar, The interval was marked in 687, 692,

till towards the end of 62. Rome by the rise to political importance of Cesar and

Cicero, and by Catiline's attempt at revolution. When in 70 684.

the removal of the restrictions placed upon the tribunate restored to the popular party their old weapons of attack, Czesar was already a marked

man. In addition to his patrician birth, and his reputation for daring and ability, he possessed, as the nephew of Marius and the son-in-law of Cinna, a strong hereditary claim to the leadership of the popular and Marian party. He had already taken part in the agitation for the restoration of the tribunate; he had supported the Manilian law; and, when Pompey's withdrawal left the field clear for other competitors, he stepped at once into the front rank on the popular side.® He took upon himself, as their nearest representative, the task of clearing the memory and avenging the wrongs of the great popular leaders, Marius, Cinna, and Saturninus. He publicly reminded the people of Marius's services, and set up again upon the Capitol the trophies of the Cimbric War. He endeavoured to bring to justice, not only the ringleaders in Sulla's bloody work of proscription, but even the murderers of Saturninus, and vehemently pleaded the cause of the children of the proscribed. While thus carrying on in genuine Roman fashion the feud of his family, he attracted the sympathies of the Italians by his efforts to procure the Roman franchise for the Latin communities beyond the Po, and won the affections of the populace in Rome and its immediate neighbourhood by the splendour of the games which he gave as curule

edile (65), and by his lavish expenditure upon the improve- 689,

4 Velleius, ii. 31; Plut., Pomp., 28.

> See the brilliant sketch by Mommsen, R. G., iii. 89 sq.

6 Plut., Pomp., 25; Dio, xxxvi. 6; Livy, Zpit., c.

? Cic. Pro Lege Manilia ; Dio, xxxvi. 25; Plut., Pomp., 30.

8 Prof. Beesly, in his essay on Catiline, has vainly endeavoured to show that Catiline and not Cesar was the popular leader from 67 to 63. That this is the inference intentionally conveyed by Sallust, in order to screen Cesar, is true, but the inference is a false one,

689. 691.

Cicero.

691, 696.

705.

764 RO

ment of the Appian Way. But it is characteristic of Caesar and of his time that these measures were with him only means to the further end of creating for himself a position such as that which Pompey had already won; and this ulterior aim he pursued with a skill, and with an audacious indifference to constitutional forms and usages, unsur- passed even by Sulla. His coalition with Crassus, soon after Pompey's departure, secured him an ally whose colossal wealth and wide financial connexions were of inestimable value, and whose vanity and inferiority of intellect rendered him a willing tool. The story of his attempted coup @état in January 65 is probably false,' but it is evident that by the beginning of 63 he was bent on reaping the reward of his exertions by obtaining from the people an extraordinary command abroad, which should secure his position before Pompey's return ; and the agrarian law proposed early that year by the tribune Rullus had for its real object the creation, in favour of Cesar and Crassus, of a commission with powers so wide as to place its members almost on a level with Pompey himself.2. It was at this moment, when all seemed going well, that Czesar's hopes were dashed to the ground by Catiline's desperate outbreak, which not only discredited every one connected with the popular party, but directed the suspicions of the well-to-do classes against Cesar him- self, as a possible accomplice in Catiline's revolutionary schemes.?

The same wave of indignation and suspicion which for the moment checked Cesar's rise carried Marcus Tullius Cicero to the height of his fortunes. Cicero, as a poli- tician, has been equally misjudged by friends and foes. That he was deficient in courage, that he was vain, and that he attempted the impossible, may be admitted at once. But he was neither a brilliant and unscrupulous adventurer nor an aimless trimmer, nor yet a devoted champion merely of senatorial ascendency.t He was a representative man, with a numerous following, and a policy which was naturally suggested to him by the cir- cumstances of his birth, connexions, and profession, and which, impracticable as it proved to be,

was yet consistent, intelligible, and high-minded. Born at Arpinum, he cherished like all Arpinates the memory of his great fellow- townsman Marius, the friend of the Italians, the saviour of Italy, and the irreconcilable foe of Sulla and the nobles. A "municipal" himself, his chosen friends and his warmest supporters were found among the well-to-do classes in the Italian towns.> Unpopular with the Roman aristocracy, who despised him as a " peregrinus,"® and with the Roman populace, he was the trusted leader of the Italian middle class, "the true Roman people," as he proudly styles them. It was they who carried his election for the consulship? (63), who in 58 insisted on his recall from exile,® and it was his influence with them which made Cesar so anxious to win him over in 49. He represented their antipathy alike to socialistic schemes and to aristocratic exclusive- ness, and their old-fashioned simplicity of life in contrast

1 The story is so told by Suetonius, Jul., 8. In Sallust, Cat., 18,

it enw as an intrigue originating with Catiline, and Ceesar's name is omitted,

z Cic., Lew Agr., ii. 6, "nihil aliud actum nisi ut decem reges constituerentur." ont That Cesar and Crassus had supported Catiline for the consulship in 65 is certain, and they were suspected naturally cnongh of favour- ing his designs in 68, but their complicity is in the highest degree improbable,

- *Mommsen is throughout unfair to Cicero, as also are Drumann wd Prof. Beesly. The best estimate of Cicero's political position known to the present writer is that given by Prof. Tyrrell in the Introduction to his edition of Ciccro's Letters.*

: Cic. Ad Ait., i. 191, "locupletes. . . noster exercitus.'"'

: Cie. Pro Sulla, 7 ; Sall., Caé., 31, "inquilinus urbis Romae."

: See the De Petitione Consulatus, passim.

De Domo, 28 ; Pro Plancio, 97.

ME

with the cosmopolitan luxury of the capital. By birth, too, he belonged to the equestrian order, the foremost re- presentatives of which were indeed still the publicani and negotiatores, but which since the enfranchisement of Italy included also the substantial burgesses of the Italian towns and the smaller "squires" of the country districts. With them, too, Cicero was at one in their dread of demo- cratic excesses and their social and political jealousy of the "nobiles."!° Lastly, as a lawyer and a scholar, he was passionately attached to the ancient constitution. His political ideal was the natural outcome of these circum- stances of his position. He advocated the maintenance of the old constitution, but not as it was understood by the extreme politicians of the right and left. The senate was to be the supreme directing council,!! but the senate of Cicero's dreams was not an oligarchic assemblage of nobles, but a body freely open to all citizens, and representing the worth of the community.!2 The magistrates, while deferring to the senate's authority, were to be at once vigorous and public-spirited ; and the assembly itself which elected the magistrates and passed the laws was to consist, not of the "'mob of the forum," but of the true Roman people throughout Italy.!3 For the realization of this ideal he looked, above all things, to the establishment of cordial relations between the senate and nobles in Rome and the great middle class of Italy represented by the equestrian order, between the capital and the country towns and dis- tricts. This was the " concordia ordinum," the " consensus Italiae," for which he laboured.1 He failed because his ideal was impracticable. The inveterate selfishness and exclusiveness of the nobles, the indifference of the Italians to constitutional questions, and their suspicious dislike of Roman politicians, above all the incompetency of the old machinery, even if reformed as he would have had it reformed, to govern the empire and control the proconsuls and the army, were insuperable obstacles in his way.*

[HISTORY.

Cicero's election to the consulship for 63 over the heads The was mainly con- spiracy of : 5 : Catiline, easy both by the rumours which were rife of revolutionary ¢

of Ceesar's nominees, Antonius and Catiline, the work of the Italian middle class, already rendered un-

schemes and of Cesar's boundless ambition, and by the numerous disquieting signs of disturbance noticeable in Italy. The new consul vigorously set himself to discharge the trust placed in him. He defeated the insidious pro- posals of Rullus for Czesar's aggrandizement, and assisted in quashing the prosecution of Rabirius. But with the consular elections in the autumn of 63 afresh danger arose from a different quarter. The "conspiracy!°> of Catiline" (see CATILINE) was not the work of the popular party, and still less was it an unselfish attempt at reform ; L. Sergius Catilina himself was a patrician, who had held high office, and possessed considerable ability and courage ; but he was bankrupt in character and in purse, and two successive defeats in the consular elections had rendered him desperate. To retrieve his broken fortuncs by violence was a course which was only too readily suggested by the history of the last forty years, and materials for a conflagration abounded on all sides. The danger to be feared from his intrigues lay in the state of Italy, which made a revolt against society and the estab- lished government only too likely if once a leader pre- sented himself, and it was such a revolt that Catiline

® Cie. Pro Quinctio, 31 ; Pro Cluentio, 46, 153.

10 Cic. In Very., ii. 73; De Pet. Cons.,i. He shared with them their dislike to Sulla, as the foe of their order; Pro Cluentio, 55.

ll De Rep., ii. 36 5 De Legg., ii. 12.

22 Pro Sestio, 65; De Legg., ili. 4.

13 Pro Sestio, 49. Ut Wa wAlets, 1a

15 For Catiline's conspiracy, see Sallust, Catiline ; Cicero In Cati- linam ; Plut., Cicero; Mommsen, R. G., iii, 164 sg. ; and especially C. Jolin, Entstehung d. Catilinarischen Verschawérung (Leipsic, 1876).

3=691.

RO

endeavoured to organize. Bankrupt nobles like himself, Sullan veterans and the starving peasants whom they had dispossessed of their holdings, outlaws of every descrip- tion, the slave population of Rome, and the wilder herdsmen-slaves of the Apulian pastures, were all enlisted under his banner, and attempts were even made to excite disaffection among the newly-conquered people of south- ern Gaul and the warlike tribes who still cherished the memory of Sertorius in Spain. In Etruria, the seat and centre of agrarian distress and discontent, arising actually took place headed by a Sullan centurion, but the spread of the revolt was checked by Cicero's vigorous measures. Catiline fled from Rome, and died fighting with desperate courage at the head of his motley force of old soldiers, peasants, and slaves. His accomplices in Rome were arrested, and, after an unavailing protest from Cesar, the senate authorized the consuls summarily to put them

CSAR. |

ME 769

the relief refused by the senate, and carried an agrarian law of the new type, which provided for the purchase of lands for allotment at the cost of the treasury, and for the assignment of the rich "ager Campanus."? But Cesar aimed at more than the carrying of an agrarian law in the teeth of the senate or any party victory in the

forum. An important military command was essential Czsar's to him, and he judged correctly enough that in the West command

there was work to be done which might enable him to Win a position such as Pompey had achieved in the East. An obedient tribune was found, and by the lex Vatinia he was given for tive years the command of Cisalpine Gaul and Illyricum, to which was added by a decree of the senate Transalpine Gaul also. It was a command which not only opened to him a great military career, but enabled him, as the master of the valley of the Po, to keep an effective watch on the course of affairs in Italy.

Early the next year the attack upon himself which Banish- Cicero had foreseen was made. P. Clodius as tribune nee brought forward a law enacting that any one who had put a (7 a

Roman citizen to death without trial by the people should 53-57 be interdicted from fire and water. Cicero finding him- 696-7.

to death.

The Catilinarian outbreak had been a blow to Cesar, whose schemes it interrupted, but to Cicero it brought, not only popularity and honour, but, as he believed, the realization of his political ideal. The senate and the

Retumof But Pompey was now on his way home,! and again | his tribunate merely illustrated the anarchy which now ay as in 70 the political future seemed to depend on the | inevitably followed the withdrawal of a strong controlling Ko. attitude which the successful general would assume; | hand. A reaction speedily followed. Pompey, bewildered Pompey himself looked simply to the attainment by the | and alarmed by Clodius's violence, at last bestirred himself. help of one political party or another of his immediate | Cicero's recall was decreed by the senate, and early in aims, which at present were the ratification of his | August 57 in the comitia centuriata, to which his Italian arrangements in Asia and a grant of land for his troops. | supporters flocked in crowds, a law was passed revoking It was the impracticable jealousy of his personal rivals in | the sentence of outlawry passed upon him. the senate, aided by the versatility of Czesar, who pre- Intoxicated by the acclamations which greeted him, Renewal sented himself not as his rival but as his ally, which drove | and encouraged by Pompey's support, and by the salutary of the Coali- Pompey once more, in spite of Cicero's efforts, into the | effects of Clodius's excesses, Cicero's hopes rose high, Fre iam of f what was still nominally the popular party. In| and a return to the days of 63 seemed not impos— Pompey. _) 'ac Dee : : 6 One D : y P Cesar, 60, on Cesar's return from his propretorship in Spain, | sible. With indefatigable energy he strove to reconstruct and the coalition was formed which is known by the some- | a solid constitutional party, but only to fail once more. Crassus, what misleading title of the first triumvirate? Pompey | Pompey was irritated by the hostility of a powerful party

60=694. was ostensibly the head of this new alliance, and in return | in the senate, who thwarted his desires for a fresh com- for the satisfaction of his own demands he undertook to | mand and even encouraged Clodius in insulting the support Ceesar's candidature for the consulship. The | conqueror of the East. Czesar became alarmed at the wealth and influence of Crassus were enlisted in the same | reports which reached him that the repeal of his agrarian cause, but what he was to receive in exchange is not } law was threatened and that the feeling against the coali- clear. Cicero was under no illusions as to the significance | tion was growing in strength; above all he was anxious of this coalition. It scattered to the winds his dreams | for a renewal of his five years' command. He acted at of a stable and conservative republic. Pompey, whorn he | once, and in the celebrated conference at Luca (56) the 698.) had hoped to enlist as the champion of constitutional | alliance of the three self-constituted rulers of Rome was government, had been driven into the arms of Cesar. | renewed. Cicero succumbed to the inevitable and with- The union between the senate and the equestrian order | drew in despair from public life. Pompey and Crassus had been dissolved, and the support of the publicani lost | became consuls for 55. Cvzesar's command was renewed 699. by an untimely quarrel over the price to be paid for | for another five years, and to each of his two allies import- collecting the taxes of Asia, and, to crown all, both his | ant provinces were assigned for a similar period —Pompey own personal safety and the authority of the senate were Se ey I ec : ; fades we 3 Jass., 691. le a – seeking Ky eee eat, – a, B. C. li, 10; Suet., One ZON CicmeAg AC, bring US | ii, 16, 18. unconstitutional execution of Catiline's accomplices. His 4 Suet., Cesar, 22; Dio Cass., xxxviii, 8; App., B. C., ii, 13; 695, fears were fully justified by the results. The year 59 saw | Plut., Cws., 14.

equestrian order, the nobles of Rome and the middle class in the country, had made common cause in the face of a common danger; and the danger had been averted by the vigorous action of a consul sprung from the people, under the guidance of a united senate, and backed by the mass of good citizens.

the republic powerless in the hands of three citizens. Cxsar as consul procured the ratification of Pompey's acts in Asia, conciliated the

publicani by granting them

1 For the history of the next eighteen years, the most important ancient authority is Cicero in his letters and speeches.

? Misleading, because the coalition was unofficial. The "trium- virs" of 43 were actual magistrates, " 1iviri reipublicae constituendae causa,

self deserted even by Pompey left Rome in a panic, and by a second Clodian law he was declared to be outlawed.® With Cesar away in his province, and Cicero banished, Clodius was for the time master in Rome. But, absolute as he was in the streets, and recklessly as he parodied the policy of the Gracchi by violent attacks on the senate,

5 Both Jaws were carried in the "comitia tributa." The first merely reaffirmed the right of appeal, as the law of Gaius Gracchus had done. 'The second declared Cicero to be already by his own act in leaving Rome "interdicted from fire and water,"—a procedure for which precedents could be quoted. Clodius was within the letter of the law.

6 Cicero's speech Pro Sestio gives expression to these feelings ; it contains a passionate appeal to all good citizens to rally round the old constitution. The acquittal of Sestius confirmed his hopes. See Ad Q. Fr., ii. 4

Death of Crassus,

538=701.

700.

Pompey sole consul,

§2=702.

706.

Proposed recall of Ceesar.

708-704.

705.

Cesar crosses the Rubicon,

49=705.

709,

766 RO

receiving the two Spains and Africa, and Crassus Syria.! The coalition now divided between them the control of the empire. For the future the question was, how long the coalition itself would last. Its duration proved to be short. In 53 Crassus was defeated and slain by the Parthians at Carrhe, and in Rome the course of events slowly forced Pompey into an attitude of hostility to Cesar. The year 54 brought with it a renewal of the riotous anarchy which had disgraced Rome in 58-57. Conscious of its own helplessness, the senate, with the eager assent of all respectable citizens, dissuaded Pompey from leaving Italy. His provinces were left to his legates, and he himself remained at home to maintain order by the weight of his influence. It was a confession that the republic could not stand alone. But Pompey's mere presence proved insufficient. The anarchy and confusion grew worse, and even strict constitutionalists like Cicero talked of the necessity of investing Pompey with some extraordinary powers for the preservation of order? At last in 52 he was elected sole consul, and not only so, but his provincial command was prolonged for five years more, and fresh troops were assigned him.' The rdle of "saviour of society" thus thrust upon Pompey was one which flattered his vanity, but it entailed consequences which it is probable he did not foresee, for it brought him into close alliance with the senate, and in the senate there was a powerful party who were resolved to force him into heading the attack they could not successfully make without him upon Cesar. It was known that the latter, whose' command expired in March 49, but who in the ordinary course of things would not have been replaced by his successor until January 48, was anxious to be allowed to stand for his second consulship in the autumn of 49 without coming in person to Rome. His opponents in the senate were equally bent on bringing his command to an end at the legal time, and so obliging him to*

dis- band his troops and stand for the consulship as a private person, or, if he kept his command, on preventing his standing for the consulship. Through 51 and 50 the discussions in the senate and the negotiations with Cesar continued, but with no result. On Ist January 49 Cesar made a last offer of compromise. The senate replied by requiring him on pain of outlawry to disband his legions. Two tribunes who supported him were ejected from the senate house, and the magistrates with Pompey were authorized to take measures to protect the republic. Cesar hesitated no longer; he crossed the Rubicon and invaded Italy. The rapidity of his advance astounded and bewildered his foes. Pompey, followed by the consuls, by the majority of the senate and a long train of nobles, abandoned Italy as untenable, and crossed into Greece.> At the end of March Cesar entered Rome as the master of Italy. The story of the civil war which followed, down to the victory at Munda in the spring of 45, has been told elsewhere.6 We are concerned here with the work which Czsar achieved in the brief intervals

1 Livy, Zpit., ev.; Dio Cass., xxxix. 31. Hip. Ad Fam., i. 9; Ad Att., iv. 5.

*2 A dictatorship was talked of in Rome; Plnt., Pomp., 54; Cic. Ad Q. Fr, iii. 8. Cicero himself anticipated Augustus in his picture of a " princeps civitatis" sketched in a lost book of the De Republica, written about this time, which was bascd upon his hopes of what Pompey might prove to be; Ad Att., viii. 11 ; August., De Civ. Dei, v. 18. * Plat., 56; Apps, BC, in 2h*

- *For the rights of the question involved in the controversy between Cesar and the senate, see Mommsen, Rechtsfrage zw. Cxsar und d. ot Guiraud, Le Différend entre César et le Sénat (Paris, 1878).*

Cicero severely censures Pompey for abandoning Italy, but strategically the move was justified by the fact that Pompey's strength

lay in the East, where his name was a powcr, and in his control of the

sea, Politically, however, it was a blunder, as it enabled Ceasar to pose as the defender of Italy.

§ Sce arts. Czsar, CICERO, and Pompry.

For Cicero's views, see

M E of rest allowed him during these stormy years, and with

the place which his dictatorship holds in the history of Rome.

[111SToORY.

The task which Cesar had to perform was no easy one. Dictator. It came upon him suddenly; for there is no sufficient ship of

reason to believe that Czsar had long premeditated revolution, or that he had previously aspired to anything more than such a position as that which Pompey had already won, a position unrepublican indeed, but accepted by republicans as inevitable.' War was forced upon him as the alternative to political suicide, but success in war brought the responsibilities of nearly absolute power, and Cesar's genius must be held to have shown itself in the masterly fashion in which he grasped the situation, rather than in the supposed sagacity with which he is said to have foreseen and prepared for it. In so far as he failed, his failure was mainly due to the fact that his tenure of power was too short for the work which he was required to perform. From the very first moment when Pompey's ignominious retreat left him master of Italy, he made it clear that he was neither a second Sulla nor even the reckless anarchist which many believed him to be® The Roman and Italian public were first startled by the masterly rapidity and energy of his movements, and then agreeably surprised by his lenity and moderation. No proscriptions or confiscations followed his victories, and all

Cesar,

48-44 = 706-710,

his acts evinced an unmistakable desire to effect a sober –

and reasonable settlement of the pressing questions of the hour ; of this, and of his almost superhuman energy, the long list of measures he carried out or planned is sufficient proof. , The "children of the

proscribed" were at length restored to their rights,? and with them many of the refugees 1° who had found shelter in Ceesar's camp during the two or three years immediately preceding the war ; but the extreme men among his supporters soon realized that their hopes of "novae tabulae" and grants of land were illusory. In allotting lands to his veterans, Czesar carefully avoided any disturbance of existing owners and occupiers,!! and the mode in which he dealt with the economic crisis produced by the war seems to have satisfied all reasonable men.!2 It had been a common charge against Ceesar in former days that he paid excessive court to the populace of Rome, and now that he was master he still dazzled and delighted them by the splendour of the spec- tacles he provided, and by the liberality of his largesses.

| But he was no indiscriminate flatterer of the mob. The

popular clubs and guilds which had helped to organize the anarchy of the last few years were dissolved.13 A strict inquiry was made into the distribution of the monthly doles of corn, and the number of recipients was reduced by one half ;1 finally, the position of the courts of justice was raised by the abolition of the popular element among the judices.® Nor did Cxsar shrink from the attempt, in which so many had failed before him, to mitigate the twin evils which were ruining the prosperity of Italy,—the concentration of a*

7 On this, as on many other points connected with Cesar, divergence has here been ventured on from the views expressed by Monimsen in his brilliant chapter on Cesar (R. G., iii. 446 sg.). Too much stress must not be laid on the gossip retailed by Suetonius as to Casar's early intentions.

8 Cicero vividly expresses the revulsion of feeling produced by Cesar's energy, humanity, and moderation on his first appearance in Italy. Compare Ad Att., vii. 11, with Ad Att., viii. 18.

- *Dio, xii, 18. 10 App., ii. 48; Dio, xli. 36.*

" Plut., Czs., 51; Sucton., 37, "adsignavit agros, sed non con- tinuos, ne quis péssessorum expelleretur." Cf. App., ii. 94.

2 For the 'lex Julia de pecuniis mutuis," see Sneton., 42; Cesar, B. C., iii. 1; Dio, xli. 87; App., ii. 48. The "focneratores " were satisfied ; Cic., Ad Fam., viii. 17. But the law displeased anarchists like M. Ceelius Rufus and P. Cornelius Dolabella.

13 Sueton., 42. 14 Sueton., 41; Dio, xliii, 21.

15 Sueton., 40; Dio, xliii, 25,

CmSAR. |

pauper population in tlie towns, and the denudation and desolation of the country districts. His strong haud carried out the scheme so often proposed by the popular leaders since the days of Gaius Gracchus, the colonization of Carthage and Corinth. Allotments of land on a large scale were made in Italy ; decaying towns were reinforced by fresh drafts of settlers; on the large estates and cattle farms the owners were required to find employment for a certain amount of free labour ; and a slight and temporary stimulus was given to Italian industry by the reimposi- tion of harbour dues upon foreign goods.! To these measures must be added his schemes for the draining of the Fucine Lake and the Pomptine Marshes, fora new road across the Apennines, and for turning the course of the Tiber.? It is true that these vigorous efforts to revive the agrarian prosperity of Italy were made along the old lines laid down eighty years before by the Gracchi, and that their final success was no greater than that of preced- ing efforts in the same direction, but they are a proof of the spirit in which Cezesar understood the responsibilities of absolute power, and their failure was due to causes which no legislation could remove. The reform of the calendar, which has been described elsewhere,? completes a record of administrative reform which entitles Czesar to the praise of having governed well, whatever may be thought of the validity of his title to govern at all. But how did Cesar deal with what was after all the greatest problem which he was called upon to solve, the establish- ment of a satisfactory government for the empire? One point indeed was already settled—the necessity, if the empire was to hold together at all, of placing the army, the provinces, and the control of the foreign policy in more vigorous hands than those of a number of changing magistrates independent of each other, and only very

imperfectly controlled by the senate at home. Some centralization of the executive authority was indispensable, and this part of his work Cesar thoroughly performed. From the moment when he seized the moueys in the treasury on his first entry into Rome‘ down to the day of his death he recognized no other authority but his throughout the empire. He alone directed the policy of Rome in foreign affairs; the legions were led, and the provinces governed, not by independent magistrates, but by his ‘legates ;”5 and the title “imperator” which he adopted was intended to express the absolute and unlimited nature of the “imperium” he claimed, as distinct from the limited spheres of authority possessed by republican magistrates. In so centralizing the executive authority over the empire at large, Czesar was but developing the policy implied in the Gabinian and Manilian laws, and the precedent he established was closely followed by his successors. It was otherwise with the more difficult question of the form under which this new executive authority should be exercised and the relation it should hold to the republican constitution. We must be content to remain in ignorance of the precise shape which Cesar intended ultimately to give to the new system. The theory that he contemplated a revival of the old Roman kingship’ is supported by little more than the popular gossip of the day, and the form under which he actually

1 Sueton., 42, 43.

2 Plut., Cws., 58; Suet., 44; Dio, xliii, 51.

3 See CALENDAR, vol. iv. pp. 666-7; Mommsen, R. G., iii. 550; and Fischer, Rém. Zeittafeln, 292 sq.

2 Phiten, Bay LU 1D, saline, 2470

§ Suet., 40; Dio, xliii.44. For this use of the title “ imperator,”’ see Mommsen, &. G., iii. 466, and note.

7 See Mommsen, iii. 467, and Ranke, Weltgeschichte, ii. 319 sq. According to Appian, ii. 110, and Plutarch, Cws., 64, the title “‘rex”’ was only to be used abroad in the East, as likely to strengthen Cesar’s position against the Parthians.

wielded his authority can hardly have been regarded by so sagacious a statesman as more than a provisional arrange- ment. This form was that of the dictatorship; and in favour of the choice it might have been urged that the dictatorship was the office naturally marked out by republican tradition as the one best suited to carry the state safely through a serious crisis, that the powers it conveyed were wide, that it was as dictator that Sulla had reorganized the state, and that a dictatorship had been spoken of as the readiest means of legalizing Pompey's protectorate of the republic in 53-52. theless was a bad one. It was associated with those very Sullan traditions from which Cesar was most anxious to sever himself; it implied necessarily the suspension for the time of all constitutional government ; and, lastly, the dictatorship as held by Cxsar could not even plead that it conformed to the old rules and traditions of the office. There was indeed a precedent in Sulla's case for a dictator '"reipublicae constituendae causa," but Cesar was not only appointed in an unusual manner, but appointed for an unprecedentedly long period,' and the " perpetual dictatorship" granted him after his crowning victory at

Munda (45) was a contradiction in terms and a repudia- 99.

tion of constitutional government which excited the bitterest animosity.® The dictatorship served well enough for the time to give some appearance of legality to Cesar's autocratic authority, but it was not—even, it is probable, in his own eyes—a satisfactory solution of the problem.

A second question, hardly less important than the estab- lishment and legalization of a strong central executive authority over the army and the provinces, was that of the position to be assigned to the old constitution, by the side of this new power. So far as Cxsar himself was concerned, the answer was for the time sufficiently clear. The old constitution was not formally abrogated. The senate met and deliberated ; the assembly passed laws and elected magistrates; there were still consuls, prztors, zdiles, queestors, and tribunes ; and Cesar himself, like his successors, professed to hold his authority by the will of the people. But senate, assembly, and

magistrates were all alike subordinated to the paramount authority of the dictator; and this subordination was, in appearance at least, more direct and complete under the rule of Cesar than under that of Augustus. Czesar was by nature as impatient as Augustus was tolerant of established forms ; and, dazzled by the splendour of his career of victory and by his ubiquitous energy and versatility, the Roman public, high and low, prostrated themselves before him and heaped honours upon him with a reckless profusion which made the existence of any authority by the side of his own an absurdity.!° Hence under Cesar the old constitu- tion was repeatedly disregarded, or suspended in a way which contrasted unfavourably with the more respectful attitude assumed by Augustus. For months together Rome was left without any regular magistrates, and was governed like a subject town by Cesar's prefects.! At another time a tribune was seen exercising authority out- side the city bounds and invested with the "imperium " of a pretor.!2 At the elections, candidates appeared before

8 Cesar's first dictatorship in 49 was simply ''comitiorum haben- dorum causa," and lasted only eleven days. He was appointed dictator again for one year in 48, for ten yearsin 46, and for life in 45.

® Cicero, Phil., i. 2, praises Antony, "quum dictatoris nomen . .. propter perpetuae dictuturae recentem memoriam funditus ex republica sustulisset."

10 For the long list of these, see Appian, ii. 106; Dio, xliii. 43- 45; Plut., 57; Suet., 76. Cf also Mommsen, R. G., iii, 463 sq.; Watson, Cicero's Letters, App. x.; Zumpt, Studia Romana, 199 sq. (Berlin, 1859).

1 Zumpt, Stud. Rom., 241; Suet.,76. © Cic. Ad Att, x. 8a.

The choice never- 701-702.

673.

706.

768

the people backed by a written recommendation from the dictator, which was equivalent to a command.' Finally, the senate itself was transformed out of all likeness to its former self by the raising of its numbers to 900, and by the admission of old soldiers, sons of freedmen, and even "semi-barbarous Gauls."? But, though Czsar's high- handed conduct in this respect was not imitated by his immediate successors, yet the main lines of their policy were laid down by him. These were (1) the municipaliza- tion of the old republican constitution, and (2) its subor- dination to the paramount authority of the master of the legions and the provinces. In the first case he only carried further a change already in progress. Of late years the senate had been rapidly losing its hold over the empire at large. Even the ordinary proconsuls were virtually independent potentates, ruling their provinces as they chose, and disposing absolutely of legions which recognized no authority but theirs. The consuls and preetors of each year had since &1 been stationed in Rome, and immersed in purely municipal business; and, lastly, since the enfranchisement of Italy, the comitia, though still recognized as the ultimate source of all authority, had become little more than assemblies of the city populace, and their claim to represent the true Roman people was indignantly questioned, even by republicans like Cicero.

' The concentration in Ceesar's hands of all authority out-

side Rome completely and finally severed all real con- nection between the old institutions of the republic of Rome and the government of the Roman empire. And, though Augustus and Tiberius elevated the senate to a place beside themselves in this government, its share of the work was a subordinate one, and it never again directed the policy of the state; while, from the time of Ceesar onwards, the old magistracies are merely municipal offices, with a steadily diminishing authority, even in the city, and the comitia retain no other prerogative of imperial importance but that of formally confirming the ruler of the empire in the possession of an authority which is already his. But the institutions of the republic not merely became, what they had originally been, the local institutions of the city of Rome; they were also subordin- ated even within these narrow limits to the paramount authority of the man who held in his hands the army and the provinces. And here Cvesar's policy was closely followed by

his successors. Autocratic abroad, at home he was the chief magistrate of the commonwealth; and this position was inarked, in his case as in that of those who followed him, by a combination in his person of various powers, and by a general right of precedence which left no limits to his authority but such as he chose to impose upon himself. During the greater part of his reign he was consul as well as dictator. In 48, after his victory at Pharsalia, he was given the "tribunicia potestas " for life, and after his second success at Thapsus the "praefectura morum" for three years. As chief magistrate he convenes and presides in the senate, nominates candidates, conducts elections, carries laws in the assembly, and administers justice in court.6 Finally, as a reminder that the chief magistrate of Rome was also the autocratic ruler of the empire, he wore even in Rome the laurel wreath and triumphal dress, and carried the sceptre of the victorious imperator.?

Nor are we without some clue as to the policy which

- *Suet., 41, 'Caesar dictator … commendo vobis illum et*

illum, ut vestro suffragio suam dignitatem teneant."

? Suet., 41, 76 ; Dio, xliii. 47,

é Watson, op. cit., App. x.; Zumpt, Stud. Rom., loc. cit.; Suet., 76, tertium et quartum consulatum titulo tenus gessit."

4 Dio, xlii. 20. > Dio, xliii. 14; Suet., 76.

® Suet., 43, "jus laboriosissime ac severissime dixit."

" App., ii. 106 ; Dio, xliii, 43.

ROM HE

Cesar had sketched out for himself in the administra- tion of the empire, the government of which he had cen- tralized in his own hands. The much-needed work of rectifying the frontiers he was forced, by his premature death, to leave to other hands, but our authorities agree in

attributing to him the design of extending the rule of Rome to its natural geographical limits §—to the Euphrates and the Caucasus on the east, to the Danube and the Rhine or possibly the Elbe on the north, and to the ocean on the west. Within the frontiers he anticipated Augustus in lightening the financial burdens of the provincials,® and in establishing a stricter control over the provincial governcrs,!° while he went beyond him in his desire to consolidate the empire by extending the Roman franchise! and admitting provincials to a share in the government.!2 He completed the Romanization of Italy by his enfran- chisement of the Transpadane Gauls, and by establishing throughout the peninsula a uniform system of niunicipal government, which under his successors was gradually extended to the provinces, !4

On the eve of his departure for the East, to avenge the Attempt- death of Crassus and humble the power of Parthia, Czesar ¢drestora- fell a victim to the wounded pride of the republican nobles ; i and between. the day of his death (March 15, 44) and that rare on which Octavian defeated Antony at Actium (September 710-711. 2, 31) lies a dreary period of anarchy and bloodshed. 710.

For a moment, in spite of the menacing attitude of 723. Czesar's self-constituted representative Antony, it seemed to one man at least as if the restoration of republican gov- ernment was possible. With indefatigable energy Cicero stroye to enlist the senate, the people, and above all the provincial governors in support of the old constitution. But, though his eloquence now and again carried all before it in senate house and forum, it was powerless to alter the course of events. By the beginning of 43 civil war 711. had recommenced; in the autumn Antony was already threatening an invasion of Italy at the head of seventeen legions. Towards the end of October Antony and his ally Lepidus coalesced with the young Octavian, who had been recently elected consul at the age of twenty, in spite of senatorial opposition ; and the coalition was legalized by The the creation of the extraordinary commission for the second "reorganization of the commonwealth" known as the — "second triumvirate."!6 It was appointed for a period of 43 9g— | five years, and was continued in 37 for five years more.!" 711-726. The rule of the triumvirs was inaugurated in the Sullan 717. fashion, and, in marked contrast to the lenity shown by

Cesar, by a proscription, foremost among the victims of which was Cicero himself.1® In the next year the defeat of Brutus and Cassius at Philippi, by the combined forces of Octavian and Antony, destroyed the last: hopes of the republican party.!9 In 40 a threatened rupture between 714. the two victors was avoided by the treaty concluded at Brundusium. Antony married Octavian's sister Octavia,

*8 Plut., 58, "'ouvdwar tov kbKrov THs tyeuovias'"' ; Suet., 44; Dio, xiii. 51. * Pint., 48; App., v. 4.*

10 He limited the term of command to two years in consular and one year in preetorian provinces; Cicero, Phil., i. 8; Dio, xliii. 25.

1 Suet., 42; Cic. Ad Até., xiv. 12.

12 Suet., 76. 13 Dio, xli. 86; Tac., Ann., xi. 24.

M4 Lex Julia municipalis ; Wordsworth, Fragments of Early Latin, pp. 2138, 464; Mommsen, &. G., iii. 524. Lex Rubria; Wordsworth, pp. 212, 463.

15 For this period see Merivale, Romans under the Empire, vol. iii; Lange, Rém. Alterth., iii. 476 sq.; Ranke, Weltgeschichte, ii. 336 sg.; Watson, Cicero's Letters, Introd. to Part v.

16 The triumvirate was formally constituted in Rome (Nov. 27) by a plebiscitum ; App., iv. 7; Dio, xlvi. 50-56, xlvii. 2; Livy, Hyit., exx. "ut Iviri reipublicae constituendae per quinquennium essent."

7 Dio, xlviii. 54; App., v. 98. For the date, cf. Fischer, Rim. Zeittafeln, 352, 353.

18 Livy, Epit., cxx.; App., iv. 7; and art. CICERO.

19 Dio, xlvii. 35-49 ; App., iv. 87-138.

é

The Augustan system, 28-27 — 12e=7,

and took command of the eastern half of the empire; Octavian appropriated Italy and the West ; while Lepidus was forced to content himself with Africa.) For the next twelve years, while Antony was indulging in dreams of founding for himself and Cleopatra an empire in the East, and shocking Roman feeling by his wild excesses and his affectation of oriental magnificence,? Octavian was patiently consolidating his power. Of his only two rivals, Lepidus his fellow triumvir was in 36 ejected from Africa and banished to Circeii, while Sextus Pompeius, who had since his defeat at Munda maintained a semi-piratical ascendency in the western Mediterranean, was decisively defeated in the same year, and his death in 35 left Octavian sole master of the West. The inevitable trial of strength between himself and Antony was not long delayed. In 32 Antony inflicted one more outrage upon Roman feeling, and openly challenged the hostility of Octavian by divorcing Octavia in favour of the beautiful and daring Egyptian princess, with whom, as the heiress of the Ptolemies, he aspired to share the empire of the Eastern world. By a decree of the senate Antony was declared deposed from his command, and war was declared against Queen Cleopatra. On September 2, 31, was fought the battle of Actium.* Octavian's victory was complete. Antony and Cleopatra committed suicide (30), and the Eastern provinces submitted in 29. Octavian returned to Rome to celebrate his triumph and mark the end of the long-continued anarchy by closing the temple of Janus ;° at the end of the next year he formally laid down the extraordinary powers he had held since 43, and a regular government was established.

Tif. The Empire.

Periop I.: THz Principats, 27 B.c.~284 a.p.—(a) The Constitution of the Principate.—The conqueror of Antony at Actium, the great-nephew and heir of the dictator Cesar, was now summoned, by the general consent of a world wearied out with twenty years of war and anarchy,6 to the task of establishing a government which should as far as possible respect the forms and traditions of the republic, without sacrificing that centralization of author- ity which experience had shown to be necessary

for the integrity and stability of the empire. It was a task for which Octavian was admirably fitted. To great admin- istrative capacity and a quiet tenacity of purpose he united deliberate caution and unfailing tact ; while his bourgeois birth' and genuinely Italian sympathies enabled him to win the confidence of the Roman community to an extent impossible for Caesar, with his dazzling pre-eminence of patrician descent, his daring disregard of forms, and his cosmopolitan tastes.

The new system which was formally inaugurated by Octavian in 28-27 B.c.8 assumed the shape of a restora- tion of the republic under the leadership of a " princeps."

1 Vell., ii. 76; Dio, xlviii. 28; App., v. 65.

- *For Antony's policy and schemes in the East, see Ranke, Weligeschichte, ii. 881-885; Merivale, Romans under the Empire, vol. iii. chap, 27 ; Lange, Rém. Alterth., iii. 578 sq.*

3 Suet., Octav., 17 ; Dio, 1. 1-8; Plutarch, Anton., 58.

- *Dio, li. 1; Zonaras, 10, 30.*

> He celebrated his triumph on August 6, 7, 8; Dio, li. 20; Livy, LEpit., cxxxiii. For the closing of the temple of Janus, see Livy, i. 19; Vell., ii. 838; Suet., Oct., 22.

6 Tac., Ann., i. 2, "cunctos dulcedine otii pellexit."

7 Suet., Aw, i. His grandfather was a citizen of Velitree ; "'municipalibus magisteriis contentus. "

® Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 707; Mon. Ancyranum (ed. Momm- sen, Berlin, 1883), vi. 13-23, pp. 144-153; Merivale, Romans under the Empire, chap. xxxi.; Cape's Early Empire, chaps. i.—xii. _? Tac., Ann, iii. 28, "sexto demum consulatu.. . quae Iiviratu Jusserat abolevit, deditque jura quis pace et principe uteremur ;"' 2d7d.,

i. 9, “non regno neque dictatura sed principis nomine constitutam rempublicam.”’

ROME

769

Octavian voluntarily resigned the extraordinary powers which he had held since 43, and, to quote his own words, “handed over the republic to the control of the senate and people of Rome.1° The old constitutional machinery was once more set in motion; the senate, assembly, and magistrates resumed their functions! ; and Octavian him- self was hailed as the “restorer of the commonwealth and the champion of freedom.”!2 It was not so easy to determine what relation he himself, the actual master of the Roman world, should occupy towards this revived republic. His abdication, in any real sense of the word, would have simply thrown everything back into confusion. The interests of peace and order required that he should retain at least the substantial part of his authority; and this object was in fact accomplished, and the rule of the emperors founded, in a manner which has no parallel in history. Any revival of the kingly title was out of the question, and Octavian himself expressly refused the dictatorship.! Nor was any new office created or any new official title invented for his benefit. But by senate and people he was invested according to the old constitutional forms with certain powers, as many citizens had been before him, and so took his place among the lawfully appointed magistrates of the republic ;——only, to mark his pre-eminent dignity, as the first of them all, the senate decreed that he should take as an additional cognomen that of “ Augustus,”!© while in common parlance he was henceforth styled “princeps,” a simple title of courtesy, familiar to republican usage, and conveying no other idea than that of a recognized primacy and precedence over his fellow citizens.16 The ideal sketched by Cicero in his De Republica, of a constitutional president of a free republic, was apparently realised; but it was only in appearance. For in fact the special prerogatives conferred upon Octavian gave him back in substance the autocratic authority he had resigned, and as between the restored republic and-its new princeps the balance of power was overwhelmingly on the side of the latter.*

Under one form or another Octavian had held the

“imperium” since 43, and in 33 he had been formally 711, 721.

acknowledged as “imperator,” by the consent of all.!7 For this somewhat irregular authority was substituted in

27 the regular ‘“proconsulare imperium,”!®8 the authority Imperium under which for nearly two centuries the provinces had Prcou- He received oy —

been governed and the legions led to war. it in the orthodox way, by decree of the senate; and the decree, as was customary, defined the area of his command. The essential difference between the “proconsulare imperium” granted to Octavian and that which had been voted year after year to the ordinary proconsuls, lay in its unprecedentedly wide extent and in its long duration. All the provinces, with the exception of those where no military authority or force was required, were placed under his command, to be governed directly by “ legati ” appointed by him and responsible only to him.19 The “unarmed

10 Mon. Ancyr., vi. 18.

Vel “Pab,, i. 89, revocata,”

” Ovid, Fasti, i. 589. Ona coin of Asia Minor Augustus is styled “‘libertatis P. R. vindex.” Compare, for other evidence, Mommsen, Staatsr., ii. 708, note 1.

18 Dio Cassius describes Augustus as seriously contemplating abdication (lii. 1; liii. 1-11); ef Suet., Aug., 28.

14 Suet., 52; Mon. Ancyr.,i.31. Mon. Ancyr., vi. 16, 21, 28.

16 The explanation of ‘“‘princeps” as an abbreviated form of “princeps senatus” is quite untenable. For its real significance, see Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 733; Pelham, Journ. of Phil., vol. viii. It is not an official title.

7” Mon. Ancyr., v. 8-6, vi. 18, 14. Augustus adopted “inrper- ator” asa prenomen in 40, Mommsen, Staatsr., ii. 727, note 2.

18 Dio, lili, 17, 32 ; Mommsen, Staatsr., 791.

9 Dio, liii. 12; Suet., 47, “provincias validiores ipse suscepit, ceteras proconsulibus sortito permisit.”

‘ XX. — 94

‘‘prisca et antiqua reipublicae forma*

731, 727.

Tribuni- sia potes- tas.

718. 731,

770 kx O

provinces” were to be assigned by lot in the old way to ex-consuls and ex-preetors, and to be nominally under the control of the senate ; but in 23 even their governors were declared to be generally subordinate to Octavian as the holder of a higher authority (“ majus imperium).”! In addition to this control, direct and indirect, of all the pro- vinces, Octavian received also the sole and supreme com- mand of all the military and naval forces of the empire. He alone henceforth levies, pays, and dismisses soldiers, equips fleets, and orders the movements of both army and navy, and he was granted in addition full authority to wage war and conclude treaties with whom he would.” Finally, in 23, if not in 27, he was exempted from the law which required the proconsul to lay down his “im- perium” on entering Rome, and was allowed to exercise it within the sacred limits of the pomerium,? a privilege which facilitated the introduction into the city of the pre- fects, pretorian guard, and summary jurisdiction proper to the proconsul in the province. This “ proconsulare imperium ” was granted in the first instance for ten years,‘ but was renewed for periods of five, five, and ten years successively, and the fiction of its temporary duration and periodic renewal was maintained

under Augustus's suc- cessors by the celebration every ten years of the " decen- nalia."> The supreme importance attached to its posses- sion as the mainstay of the imperial power is sufficiently indicated by the fact that the man on whom it is con- ferred becomes thereby " princeps," and the day on which he receives it ("dies imperii") marks the beginning of his reign.®

The proconsular imperium not only carried with it the control of the army and the provinces, but in Rome itself it gave its holder a position of precedence. In virtue of it he took his seat between the consuls, was preceded by lictors,'? and wore the laurel wreath, paludamentum, and sword of the imperator. But as yet Rome could not be governed like a subject provincial city by proconsular authority ; and, for the necessary direction and regulation of the constitutional machinery which he had restored, Augustus contented himself* with the authority which traditionally invested its holder with a popular leadership, that of the tribunes of the plebs. The "tribunicia potestas" had been granted him for life in 36, and his tenure of it was confirmed in 23.19 Thenceforward it ranked as a constituent element of the principate, second in importance only to the proconsular authority. With but few exceptions it was conferred for life upon all succeeding emperors, and the years of their reigns are reckoned by the years of their tribunician power. It was conferred, as all special "potestas" had been conferred under the republic, by a decree of the senate and vote of the assembly.1!_ It gave its holder all the prerogatives of

1 Dio, liii. 32.

- See the so-called 'lex de imperio Vespasiani," C. J. Z., vi. 980.

3 Dio, liii. 17. 4 Dio, liii. 13.

5 Dio, liii. 16 ; vii. 24; Mommsen, Staatsr., ii. 751, 752.

8 See the passages from the Acta Fratrum Arvalium (ed. Henzen, Berlin, 1874), p. 68. 'Tiberius received it when associated with Augustus as his colleague ; Tac., Ann., i. 3; Suet., Tid., 21.

” Dio, liv. 10, connects these privileges with the bestowal of con- sular power for life, but it is doubtful whether any such power was formally conferred. Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 818; Mon. Ancyr., iil. ts , | Tac, Ann, i, 2. 9 Mon. Ancyr., ii. 21.

io, liii, 32. The years of the ‘‘tribunicia potestas’”’ are reckoned by Augustus from this year. See Mommsen, Staatsr., ii.

753, 754,

| References are found in the Acta Fratrum Arvalium to the comitia in which it was conferred; Acta F. A., ed. Henzen, p. 65. It is possible, as Mommsen thinks, that the extant fragmentary law de Imperio Vespasiani” may be a part of the “lex” conferring the

tribunicia potestas”; see his Staatsr., ii. 818. The ‘‘tribunicia, potestas”” was, like the “proconsulare imperium,” conferred on the chosen colleague or destined successor ; Tac., Anz., i. 2, of Tiberius,

consors tribuniciae potestatis.”

ME

the tribunate, without the restrictions which hampered the tribunes theniselves. Augustus and his successors were unimpeded in its exercise by the presence of colleagues ; and both their personal inviolability and their right of interference held good outside the pomerium. It enabled them, as representing the acknowledged protectors of the plebs, to control in the name of the people the whole administrative ‘machinery, to introduce laws, to convene the senate, to protect the aggrieved, and to interfere with any exercise of authority by other magistrates, In short, it gave to the man who already wielded an authority abroad more absolute than that granted to Pompey by the Gabinian law all and more than all the power possessed by a Gracchus in Rome.

It was on these two powers that Augustus’s position as Other princeps rested. In virtue of these he was chief magistrate Powers

of the Roman state, and all other offices and privileges conferred upon him are comparatively of secondary import- ance. The consulship which he held continuously from

31 up to 23 he never accepted again but on two occa- 723-731,

sions, in 5 B.c. and in 2 B.c.,!2 though he was twice invested 749, 752. » ' ' §

with "consular authority" for the purpose of taking the census (8 B.C., 14 a.D.).¥8 ordinary "morum legumque regimen," as stated by Sue- tonius and Dio,!4 is extremely doubtful, and his language in the Ancyran monument implies that for this purpose, as for many others, he found the tribunician authority sufficient.1® annonae,"!6 the supervision of the corn supply and the corn largesses at Rome. B.C. he succeeded him as " pontifex maximus," and he was also a member of the augural and other priestly colleges.?" Lastly, at various times, and probably by decree of the senate, he was granted a number of special exemptions and privileges.1§

In theory at least, the Roman world was governed Changes

according to the "maxims of Augustus"!® down to the time of Diocletian. Even in the 3d century there is

still, in name at least, a republic, of which the emperor the prin- is in strictness only the chief magistrate, deriving his cipate.

authority from the senate and people, and with preroga- tives limited and defined by law. The case is quite different when we turn from the theory to the practice. The division of authority between the republic and its chief magistrate became increasingly unequal. Over the provinces the princeps from the first ruled autocratically ; and this autocracy reacted upon his position in Rome, so that it became every year more difficult for a ruler so absolute abroad to maintain even the fiction of republican government at home. The republican institutions, with the partial exception of the senate, lose all semblance of author- ity outside Rome, and even in their altered position as the municipal institutions of the chief city of the empire they retain but little actual power. The real government

even of Rome passes gradually into the hands of imperial pre- fects and commissioners, and the old magistracies become merely decorations which the emperor gives away at his pleasure. And at the same time the rule of the princeps assumes an increasingly personal character, and the whole work of government is silently concentrated in his hands and in those of his own subordinate officials. Closely connected with this change is the different aspect pre- sented by the history of the empire in Rome and Italy on

22 Suet., 26. 13 Mon. Ancyr., ii. 5. 8.

14 Suet., 27 4 Dio, liv. 10, 30.

1 Mon. Ancyr. Gr., iii. 15,and Mommsen's notes, pp. 28-30, 36-38.

16 Mon. Ancyr. Lat., i. 32, 38.

17 Mommsen on Mon. Ancyr. Lat., i. 45, p. 82.

18 Dio, liii. 18. In the "lex de imperio Vespasiani" several such exemptions are mentioned ; Mommsen, Staatsr., ii. 711 sg.

*19 Suet., Vero, 10, '*ex Augusti praescripto."*

,

That he ever received an extra- 746.

In 22 sB.c. he was invested with the " cura 732,

On the death of Lepidus in 12 742.

|

Decay

of re- publican institu- tions.

705, 726.

The comitia.

The Magis- tracies,

RO

the one hand and in the provinces on the other. Rome and Italy share in the decline of the republic. Polit- ical independence and activity die out; their old pre- eminence and exclusive privileges gradually disappear ; and at the same time the weight of the overwhelming power of the princeps, and the abuses of their power by individual " principes," press most heavily upon them. On the other hand, in the provinces and on the frontiers, where the imperial system was most needed, and where from the first it had full play, unfettered by the fictions of republican government, it is seen at its best as devel- oping or protecting an orderly civilization and maintain- ing the peace of the world.

The decay of the republican institutions had commenced before the revolutionary crisis of 49. It was accelerated by the virtual suspension of all regular government between 49 and 28; and not even the diplomatic defer- ence towards ancient forms which Augustus displayed availed to conceal the unreality of his work of restoration. The "comitia" received back from him "their ancient rights,"! and during his lifetime they continued to pass laws and to elect magistrates. But after the end of the reign of Tiberius we have only two instances of legislation by the assembly in the ordinary way,? and the law-making of the empire is performed either by decrees of the senate or by imperial edicts and coustitutions. Their prerogative of electing magistrates was, even under Augustus, robbed of most of its importance by the control which the princeps exercised over their choice by means of his rights of nomination and com- mendation, rights which effectually secured the election of his own nominees.? By Tiberius even this restricted prerogative was still further curtailed. The candidates for all magistracies except the consulship were thencefor- ward nominated and voted for in the senate-house and by the senators,# and only the "renuntiatio," the formal return of the result, and the introduction of the magis- trates designate to the people took place in the assembly. And, though the election of consuls was never thus trans- ferred to the senate, the process of voting seems to

have been silently abandoned. In the time of the younger Pliny we hear only of the nomination of the candidates and of their formal "'renuntiatio" in the Campus Martius.¢ By this empty form the ancient right of the people to confer all magisterial authority was saved, at least in appearance ; and it was acknowledged in as purely formal @ manner in the case of the princeps himself, who, as long as the principate lasted, continued to receive the "tribunicia potestas" by a vote of the assembly, and was thus held to derive his authority from the people.'

This almost complete effacement of the "comitia" was largely due to the fact that they had ceased to represent anything but the populace of Rome, and the compara- tively greater vitality shown by the old magistracies is mainly attributable to the value they continued to possess in the eyes of the Roman upper class. But, though they were

1 Suet., Aug., 40, "comitiorum pristinum jus reduxit."

- *The "'plebiscita" of Claudius, Tac., Ann., xi. 13, 14, and the "lex agraria" of N erva ; Digest, xlvii. 21, 8; Dio, lxviii. 2; Plin., Epp., vii. 31.*

3 For the nature of these rights, the latter of which was not exercised in the case of the consulship until the time of Vespasian, see Mommsen, Staatsr., ii. 861-869; Tac., Ann., i. 14, 15, 81; Suet., Aug., 56; Dio, lviii. 20.

" Tac., Ann., i. 15, "comitia e campo ad patres translata sunt"; Compare Ann., xiv. 28. The magistracy directly referred to is the pretorship, but that the change affected the lower magistracies also is certain ; see, e.g., Pliny's Letters, passim, especially iii, 20, vi. 19.

® Dio, lviii, 20.

§ Mommsen, Staatsr., ii, 865, 866 ; Plin., Paneg., 92.

" Gaius, i. 5, "cum ipse imperator per legem imperium accipiat."

Mommsen is probably right in referring this to the "lex tribu- nicia,"'

eagerly sought,' and conferred on their holders considerable social distinction, the magistrates ceased, except in name, to be the popularly chosen executive officers of the Roman state. In the administration of the empire at large they had no share, if we except the subordinate duties still assigned to the questor in a province. In Rome, to which their sphere of work was limited, they were over- shadowed by the dominant authority of the princeps, while their range of duties was increasingly circumscribed by the gradual transference of administrative authority, even within the city, to the emperor and his subordinate officials, And their dependence on the princeps was con- firmed by the control he exercised over their appointment. For all candidates the approval, if not the commendation, of the princeps became the indispensable condition of success, and the princeps on his side treated these ancient offices as pieces of preferment with which to reward his adherents or gratify the ambition of Roman nobles, In all instances, too, the dignity of the office was impaired by the practice, begun by Cesar and continued by Augustus and his successors, of granting the insignia to men who had not held the actual magistracy itself. The change is especially noticeable in the case of the consuls, the chief magistrates of the old commonwealth. The con- sulship was still the highest post open to the private citizen,' and consular rank a necessary qualification for high office in the provinces ;! but the actual consuls have scarcely any other duties than those of presiding in the senate, conducting its proceedings, and occasionally exe- cuting its decrees,!? while their term of office dwindles from a year to six and finally to two months.!3 In the age of Tacitus and the younger Pliny, the contrast is striking enough between the high estimate set on the dignity of the office and the frankness with which both its limited powers and its dependence on the emperor are acknow- ledged.1 Of the other magistrates the preetors continued to exercise their old jurisdiction with little formal change down at least to the latter half of the second century, but only as subordinate to the higher judicial authority*

Consul- ship.

Preetor- ship.

of the emperor. The zdiles seem to have retained only Adile-

such petty police duties as did not pass to one or another of the numerous imperial prefects and conmissioners.!6

ship.

The tribunate fared still worse, for, by the side of the Tribu- tribunicia potestas wielded by the princeps, it sank into 24te

insignificance, and it is described by the younger Pliny as a "'shadow and an empty name." !7

- *Plin., Zpp., ii. '9,~~vi, 6. See, generally, Friedlaender, Sitten~~ geschichte Roms (Leipsic, 1869), pp.' 227 sq.*

® The permission to use the " ornamenta consularia, praetoria," &c., was distinct from the "adlectio inter consulares, praetorios," &. See Mommsen, Staatsr., ii, 877 sq.; Suet., Jul., 76; Claud., v. 24; Tac, , Ann., xii, 21, xv. 72; Dio Cass., lx. 8. Cf also Friedlaender, i. 224.

10 Tac., Agric., 44; Pliny, Epp., ii. 1, "summum fastigium privati hominis, "

11 For a consular senatorial province and for the more important of the imperial legateships.

2 Plin., Paneg., 48, graphically sums up the consuls' duties.

13 Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 79. Six months was the usual term

down to the death of Nero; we have then four or two months ; in the 3d century two is the rule. The consuls who entered on office on January 1 were styled "consules ordinarii," and gave their name to the year. Seneca De Jra, iii. 31, "a me numerari voluit annum," Lucan, Phars., v. 398, "careat ne nomine tempus, menstruus in fastos distinguet saecula consul." Plin., Paneg., 58. The others were distinguished as " consules

suffecti"' or "minores" ; Dio Cass., xlviii. 35. 4 Plin., Paneg., 92; Tac., Hist., i. 1; Agric., 44, 1° Mommsen, Staatsr., ii. 206. 16 They lost the "cura annonae" and "cura ludorum" as well as other duties, which passed to such officers as the "praefectus vigilum," and the "curatores viarum, cloacarum," &c, There is no mention of the edileship after the reign of Severus Alexander,

Y Plin., Epp., i. 23, "inanem umbram et sine honore nomen." There are a few instances of the exercise by the tribunes of their power of interference within the senate; Tac., Ann., i. 77, vi. 47, xvi. 26; Plin., Epp., ix. 13. :

The questorship Ques, torship,

The senate,

172

suffered perhaps less change than any other of the old offices. It still kept its place as the first step on the ladder of promotion, and there was still a queestor attached to each governor of a senatorial province, to the consuls in Rome, and to the princeps himself as proconsul.}

The senate alone among republican institutions retained some importance and influence. The virtual abolition of the comitia, and the degradation of the magistracies left the senate to stand alone as the representative of repub- licanism, and it thus came to be regarded as sharing the government of the empire with the princeps himself. The magistrates elected by the senate are contrasted with the legates, prefects, and procurators appointed by the emperor. It is to the senate, in theory, that the supreme power reverts in the absence of a princeps. It is by decree of the senate that the new princeps immediately receives his powers and privileges,? though he is still supposed to derive them ultimately from the people, and is as a rule actually the nominee of the soldiers. After the cessation of all legislation by the comitia, the only law-making authority, other than that of the princeps by his edicts, was that of the senate by its decrees? Its judicial authority was parallel with that of the emperor, and at the close of the lst century we find the senators claiming, as the emperor's " peers," to be exempt from his jurisdiction.4

But in spite of the outward dignity and importance of this position, and of the politic deference with which it was frequently treated, the senate became gradually almost as powerless in reality as the comitia and the magistracies. The two great supports of its authority under the republic—its identification with the interests of a powerful aristocracy and the subserviency of the magistrates—both fell away under the empire.

The senators continued indeed to be taken asa rule from the ranks of the wealthy, and a high property qualifica- tion was established by Augustus as a condition of member- ship, but any effect which this may have had in giving in- dependence to the position of a senator was counterbalanced by the facilities it afforded to the emperors for securing their own ascendency by subsidizing those whose property fell short of the required standard, and who thus became

vincials themselves, carried on the same policy, and by the close of the 2d century even the Greek provinces of the East had their representatives among the senators of Rome. Some, no doubt, of these provincials, who con- stituted the great majority of the senate in the 3d century, were men of wealth and mark, but many more were of low birth, on some rested the stain of a servile descent, and all owed alike their present position and their chances of further promotion to the emperor. The procedure of the senate was as completely at the mercy of the princeps as its composition. He was himself a senator and the first of senators ;? he possessed the magisterial prerogatives of convening the senate, of laying business before it, and of carrying senatus consulta ;!° above all, his tribunician power enabled him to interfere at any stage, and to modify or reverse its decisions. The share of the senate in the government was in fact determined by the amount of administrative activity which each princeps saw fit to allow it to exercise, and by the extent to-which he chose to use it as an instrument of government. And this share became steadily smaller. The jurisdiction assigned it by Augustus and Tiberius was in the 3d century limited to the hearing of such cases as the emperor thought fit to send for trial, and these became steadily fewer in number. Its control of

the state treasury, as distinct from the imperial fiscus, and of the so-called senatorial provinces passed in fact to the emperor and his officials, and was only occasionally revived by the special favour of emperors who, like Marcus Aurelius,!! were sincerely attached to old traditions, or, like Severus Alexander and Tacitus, hoped by close alliance with the senate to escape from the evils of a military despotism.!2. Even in Rome and Italy its control of the administration was gradually transferred to the prefect of the city, and after the reign of Hadrian to imperial officers (juridici) charged with the civil adminis- tration.12 The part still played by its decrees in the modification of Roman law has been dealt with elsewhere (see p. 704 supra), but it is clear that these decrees did little else than register the expressed wishes of the emperor and his personal advisers.

The growing impotence of all other authority than that Altered

simply the paid creatures of their imperial patrons. Admission to the senate was possible only by favour of the emperor, as at once controlling the elections to the

of the princeps inevitably altered the character of the Position principate. Even under Augustus, Tiberius, and the % ye

: : rinceps; Claudian emperors, there is a silent and steady concentra- 4

central-

magistracies, which still as of old gave entrance to the curia, and as invested with the power of directly creating senators by "adlectio," a power which from the time of Vespasian onwards was freely used.6 As the result, the composition of the senate rapidly altered. Under Augustus and Tiberius it still contained many represen- tatives of the old republican families, whose prestige, influence, and ancestral traditions were some guarantee for their independence. But this element soon disappeared. The ranks of the old nobility were thinned by natural decay and by the jealous fears of the last three Claudian emperors. Vespasian' flooded the senate with new men from the municipal towns of Italy and the Latinized provinces of the West. Trajan and Hadrian, both pro-

1 Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 532. Caesaris," Hpp., vii. 16.

- *Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii, 818; Tac., Ann., xii. 69, Hist., i. 47. In the 3d century the honours, titles, and powers were conferred en bloc by a single decree; Vit. Sev. Alex,, 1.*

3 Gaius, i. 4; Ulpian, Dig., i. 3, 9.

4 Under Domitian; Dio Cass., lxvii. 2. Even Septimius Severus pledged himself "non inconsulto senatu occidere senatorem"; Vita Severi, 7 > Suet., Vero, 10; Vesp., 17.

5 Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 879 sq. The power was derived from the censorial authority. Domitian was censor for life ; Suet, Dom., 8. After Nerva it was exercised as falling within the general autho- rity vested in the princeps ; Dio, liii. 17.

7 Suet., Vesp., 90; Tac., Ann., iii. 55.

Pliny was himself " quaestor

tion of all authority in the hands of the princeps ; not only ization of

the army and the provinces, but even Rome and Italy, are an' rity in

in reality governed by him, though still with a lingering

respect for the traditional prerogatives of the senate and ponds,

the senatorial magistrates; in the reigus of Caligula, Claudius, and Nero the politic disguise under which Augustus and Tiberius had endeavoured to conceal the extent of their power was thrown contemptuously aside. In the administration of justice and in finance, as well as in military and foreign affairs, the authority of the princeps is paramount; and his own personal subor- dinates—legates, prefects, procurators, and even his freed- men!+—divide between them the real work of government.

This increase of power was accompanied by a correspond- Outward

ing elevation of the princeps himself above the level pe

of all other citizens. The comparatively modest house- hold and simple life of Augustus were replaced by a more

8 See on this point Friedlaender, Stttengeschichte Roms, i. 197 sq.

9 Mon. Ancyr. Gr., iv. 8, mp&rov akibparos témov.

10 Lex de imp. Vesp., C. Z. Z., vi. 9830: "Senatum habere, relationem facere, remittere ; Scta. per relationem discessionemque facere."'

11 Dio Cass., Ixxi. 10.

12 Vit. Sev. Alex., 3; Vit. Tac., 12, 18.

13 Vit. Hadr., 22. ' Juridici'' were appointed by Marcus Aurelius, Vit. Ant., 11; Marquardt, i. 72, 73.*

14 For the position of the imperial freedmen under Claudius, see Friedlaender, i. 63 sg.; Tac., Ann., xii. 60, xiv. 39, Wist., ii. 57, 95.

RO

than regal splendour, and under Nero we find all the outward accessories of monarchy present, the palace, the palace guards, the crowds of courtiers, and a court ceremonial. In direct opposition to the republican theory of the principate, the members of the princeps's family share in the dignities of his position. The males bear the cognomen of Cesar, and are invested, as youths, with high | office; their names and even those of the females are ? included in the yearly prayers for the safety of the | princeps!; their birthdays are kept as festivals; the pretorian guards take the oath to them as well as to the princeps himself. Finally, the growing practice of Casar worship invested the chief magistrate of the Roman commonwealth with the divine attributes ascribed to

Eastern monarchs. The death of Nero was followed, it

is true, by a partial reaction. Not only Galba and the Flavian emperors but Trajan, Hadrian, and the Antonines at once affected a certain simplicity in their personal habits, and discountenanced the excessive servility and

DEVELOPMENT OF THE PRINCIPATE. |

adulation encouraged by Caligula and Nero. But this reaction served only to bring into clearer relief the con- tinued advance made towards the establishment of an] autocratic and military rule. Caligula, Claudius, and ingly Nero were all first saluted as imperatores by the military : : C : character SOldiery and then invested with their powers by the

of the princi- pate.

Increas-

*senate,? but this reversal of the constitutional order was rendered less noticeable by the fact that the choice was still made in Rome, and that it fell in each case on one whose birth already marked him out as the natural successor to the purple. The salutation of Galba by the legions in Spain marks the opening of a new epoch.4 Thenceforward, if the legions do not actually select the princeps, it is their acceptance of him which is the one essential condition of his tenure of power, and it is on their support that he relies. Vitellius and Vespasian were chosen by the legions of Germany and Syria, as Galba had been by those of Spain. Domitian emphasized the military character of his rule by entering the senate in | the triumphal dress ;> and under the great soldier Trajan, whose adoption by Nerva was a frank confession of the necessities of the case, the military title "imperator " was already superseding the older and more constitutional | *¢ princeps."*

Sever- Closely connected with the increasingly military char- a acter of the emperor's position was the gradual severance

nexion Of the old ties which connected the emperor, as chief with magistrate, with Rome, as the traditional seat and centre Rome. of political power. Glalba, Vitellius, and Vespasian were already de facto

emperors when they entered Rome from their distant provinces to claim the legal confirmation by the senate. Trajan and Hadrian were both provincials by birth ; the former did not enter Rome for a full year after his accession, and Hadrian courteously apologized to the senate for taking up the imperium in Syria before his acceptance by that body.6 The connexion between the emperors and Rome was further weakened by the increasing frequency and length of their absences from the city. Life in Rome was no doubt irksome to men trained in camps, as Trajan had been, and the state of affairs was such as imperatively to require the emperor's presence in the provinces and on the frontiers. The distant campaigns of Trajan and Marcus Aurelius, and the unwearying travels of Hadrian, were necessary for the safety and good govern- ment of the empire, but they involved the removal from

1 Acta Fr. Arval. (ed. Henzen) 33, 98, 99.

? For Cesar worship, see Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 716 sq. ; Boissier, La Religion Romaine, i. 122-208 ; Marquardt, Rom. Staatsverw., iii. 443-454 ; Preller, Rim. Mythologie, 770 sq.

3 Tac,, Ann., xii, 69, of Nero, "sententiam militum secuta patrum consulta." @-Tac., Lists, 1,4 5 Dio, Lxvii. 4,

6 Dio, lxix. 2.

Rome of the real seat of government. The emperors from Vespasian to Aurelius were, with the exception of Domi-

tian, ready enough to respect constitutional forms, at least

in their personal intercourse with the senate, and Aurelius

seems sincerely to have wished to share with the senate

the overwhelming responsibilities which pressed upon him.

But the improved organization of the administrative system which the times demanded was too urgent a need

to be set aside out of respect for the niceties of an obsolete constitutional government; and this period is marked by

the development and extension of a purely imperial system

of government, the control of which was centralized in

the hands of the emperor alone. The main credit of this achievement is due to Hadrian,' and its immediate effect

was undoubtedly to increase the effectiveness of the administration ; but it accelerated the decay of local inde- pendence and energy, and thus diminished the strength

of the empire. The century which separates the death The em- of Marcus Aurelius from the accession of Diocletian perors of (180-284) completed the destruction of the old Augustan jae system. Now and again, as in the case of Pertinax, of y Severus Alexander, of Maximus and Balbinus, and of Tacitus, the senate succeeded in claiming for itself the selection of an emperor, but with the single exception of Severus Alexander their nominees were not more success-

ful than Nerva in securing the necessary attachment of

the legions; as a rule the emperors of the 3d century

were more than ever the nominees of the soldiery, often

men of obscure origin from the frontier provinces.6 The

worst of them treated the senate with contempt and con- tumely, and the best of them excluded it from all share

in the government. Septimius Severus, a native of Septi- Africa, set the precedent of abstaining from seeking a Spe formal confirmation of his authority from the senate ;9 °°V™ he assumed the title of proconsul*

even in Rome, ad- ministered justice no longer openly in the forum but within the walls of the palace, and finally established the prefect of the preetorian guard as the officer next in power

to the emperor himself. It is, moreover, on his inscrip-

tions that the emperor is first officially styled "dominus."

From the accession of Decius (249), the first of a series The

of able emperors sprung from the Danubian provinces, "Ulyrian the autocratic and military character of the imperial ne a

system rapidly develops. The old distinctions between imperial and senatorial provinces, between the state treasury and the privy purse of the emperor, finally dis- appear. Senators are almost entirely excluded alike from the military and civil services. Under Aurelian (270-275), an able soldier and a vigorous administrator, the breach with the old traditions became complete. He anticipated Diocletian in the completely autocratic methods of his government and in the Oriental pomp and splendour with which he surrounded himself.

(6) General History of the Empire.—From the develop- ment of the principate of Augustus into the avowed despot- ism which it was the great work of Diocletian to organize and consolidate we pass to the general fortunes of the empire during this period. On the accession of Augustus, there could be little doubt as to the nature of the work that was necessary, if peace and prosperity were to be secured for the Roman world. He was called upon to justify his posi- tion by rectifying thefrontiers and strengthening the frontier defences, by reforming the system of provincial government, and by reorganizing the finance; and his success in dealing with these three difficult problems is sufficiently proved

7 See, for a short account, Capes, Age of the Antonines, chap. Lexie of. Schiller, Gesch. d. Kaiserzeit, i. (2) 617 sq.

8 H.g., Maximinus, "de vico Thraciae, barbaro patre ac matre,"' Vit. Max., 1.

® Vita Severi, 7. For the importance of the reign of Severus see Schiller, i. (2) 725, Gibbon, vol. i. 258 sq.

the distracted Roman world desired, it was imperatively | Crassus beyond the Euphrates provoked the first serious The necessary to establish on all sides of the empire really | collision between Rome and Parthia, and the victory at frontiers. defensible frontiers ; and this became possible now that | Carrhze encouraged among the Parthians the idea of an for the first time the direction of the foreign policy of the | invasion of Syria and Asia Minor, while it awakened in state and of its military forces was concentrated in the | Rome a genuine fear of the formidable power which had hands of a single magistrate. To the south and west the | so suddenly arisen in the East. Czesar was at the moment generals of the republic, and Czsar himself, had extended | of his death preparing to avenge the death of Crassus by the authority of Rome to the natural boundaries formed | an invasion of Parthia, and Antony's schemes of founding by the African deserts and the Atlantic Ocean, and in | an Eastern empire which should rival that of Alexander these two directions Augustus's task was in the main con- | included the conquest of the kingdom beyond the fined to the organization of a settled Roman government | Euphrates. But on the Euphrates, as on the Rhine and within these limits. In Africa the client state of Egypt | the Danube, Augustus adhered to the policy which he was formed into a separate province, and the kingdom | recommended to his successors of "keeping the empire of Numidia (25 B.c.) was incorporated with the old | within its bounds"; and the Parthians, weakened by province of Africa. In Spain the hill-tribes of the north- | internal feuds and dynastic quarrels, were in no mood for west were finally subdued, and a third province, Lusitania, | vigorous action. Roman pride was satisfied by the established.2 Until the commencement of Cesar's cam- | restoration of the standards taken at Carrhe. Four paigns (58 8.c.) Roman rule in Gaul had been confined to | legions guarded the line of the Euphrates, and, beyond the single southern province of Gallia Narbonensis (121—| the frontiers of Pontus and Cappadocia, Armenia was 118 B.c.). Caesar subdued the rest of the country, but the | established as a "friendly and independent ally."5 fierce struggles of the Civil War and his early death Next in importance to the rectification and defence Adminis- obliged him to leave to his nephew the task of organizing | of the

frontiers was the reformation of the administra- tative the conquered territory. Augustus (27 B.c.) established | tion, and the restoration of prosperity to the distracted jy" in addition to the "old province" the three new ones of | and exhausted provinces. The most serious defect of pro- The Aquitania, Lugdunensis, and Belgica.? Towards the north | the republican system had been the absence of any vinces. North. the republic had left the civilized countries bordering on | effective contral control over the Roman officials outside the Mediterranean with only a very imperfect defence | Italy. This was now supplied by the general proconsular against the threatening mass of barbarian tribes above | authority vested in the emperor. The provinces were for them. The result of Augustus's policy was to establish a 4 the first time treated as departments of a single state, while protecting line of provinces running from the Euxine to | their governors, from being independent and virtually irre- the North Sea, and covering the peaceful districts to the | sponsible rulers, became the subordinate officials of a higher south,—Meesia (6 a.p.), Pannonia (9 .D.), Noricum | authority. Over the "legati" and '"procuratores" of the (15 B.c.), Reetia (15 B.c.), and Gallia Belgica. Roman | imperial provinces the control of the emperor was as com- rule was thus carried up to the natural frontier lines of the | plete as that of the republican proconsul over his staff in his Rhine and the Danube. Here, after the defeat of Varus | own province. They were appointed by him, held office at (9 a.D.) and the abandonment of a forward policy be- | his good pleasure, and were directly responsible to him for yond the Rhine, Augustus fixed the limits of the empire | their conduct. The proconsuls of the senatorial provinces northward; his successor Tiberius recalled Germanicus, | were in law magistrates equally with the princeps, though as soon as the disaster in the Silva Teutoburgensis had | inferior to him in rank; it was the senate that they been avenged ; and after the peace with Maroboduus, the | were as of old responsible; they were still selected by chief of the Marcomanni on the upper Danube, in the | lot from among the senators of consular and preetorian next year (17 .p.), the defensive policy recommended by | rank. But the distinction did not seriously interfere with Augustus was adopted along the whole of the northern | the paramount authority of the emperor. The provinces frontier. The line of the great rivers was held by an | left nominally to the senate were the more peaceful and imposing mass of troops. Along the Rhine lay the armies | settled districts in the*

heart of the empire, where only the of Upper and Lower Germany, consisting of four legions | routine work of civil administration was needed, and where each; eight more guarded the Danube and the frontiers of | the local municipal governments were as yet compara- Pannonia and Moesia. The command of the troops was tively vigorous. The senatorial proconsuls themselves entrusted to imperial legates, whose posts became the most | were indirectly nominated by the emperor through his coveted prizes in the imperial service, and were not | control of the preetorship and consulship. They wielded unfrequently stepping- stones to tho imperial purple itself. | no military and only a strictly subordinate financial autho- At frequent intervals along the frontier were the military | rity, and, though Augustus and Tiberius, at any rate, colonies, the permanent camps, and the smaller intervening | encouraged the fiction of the responsibility of the senatorial "castella." Flotillas of galleys cruised up and down the governors to the senate, it was in reality to the emperor rivers, and Roman roads opened communication both along | that they looked for direction and advice, and to him that the frontiers and with the seat of government in Italy. they were held accountable. Moreover, in the case of all In the East Rome had other work to do than that of | governors this accountability became under the empire a re-

774

by the prosperous condition of the empire for a century and a half after his death.1 To secure the peace which

erecting a barrier against a surging tide of barbarism, for here she was confronted with a well-organized and powerful state whose claims to empire were second only to her own. The conquests of Pompey (66-62 B.c.) had brought Rome face to face with Parthia on the banks of the Euphrates, the limits of Roman authority being marked by the eastern frontiers of the client states of

1 Marquardt, Rim. Staatsverw. , 1. 282, 506.

> Marquardt, i. 101; Mommsen, R. Ge VOSS

3 Marquardt, i. 112; Mommsen, R. Ga va iG:

4 See especially Mommsen, R. G., v. caps. 4 and 6.

Pontus, Cappadocia, and Commagene, and of the newly formed province of Syria. In 54 the rash advance of

ality. Prosecutions for extortion (‘de pecuniis repetundis”), which were now transferred to the hearing of the senate, are tolerably frequent during the first century of the empire ; but a more effective check on maladministration lay in the appeal to Cesar from the decisions of any oe) i i 2 aa

5 Mommsen, R. G., v. cap. 9. Armenia, however, long continued to be a debateable ground between Rome and Parthia, —passing alter- nately under the influence of one or the other.

8 For the provincial reforms of Augustus, see Marquardt, Staats- verw., i. 402-422; Madvig, Verf. d. R. Reichs, ii. 7; Merivale, iv. cap. 32.

governor, which was open to every provincial, and in the right of petition. Under the Antonines, not the least laborious of the duties which devolved upon the emperor and his ministers was the daily one of hearing and deciding the innumerable cases sent up from the provinces. On the other hand, the growing frequency of imperial mandates and rescripts (see above, p. 705), dealing both with ques- tions of general policy and with points of law, attests the close attention paid by all the better emperors to the government of the provinces and the increasing dependence of the governor on imperial guidance. Within the province Augustus curtailed the powers of legate and proconsul alike. In both cases there was a division of authority. By the side of the imperial legate was placed, as the highest financial authority, an imperial procurator, while the proconsul,

in addition to the loss of all military control, was checked by the presence of the imperial officer, also styled procurator, to whom the care of the fiscal revenues was entrusted ; finally, both legate and proconsul were de- prived of that right of requisitioning supplies which, in spite of a long series of restrictive laws, had been the most powerful instrument of oppression in the hands of repub- Financial lican governors. The financial reforms of Augustus! are reforms. marked by the same desire to establish an equitable, orderly, and economical system, and by the same centralization of authority in the emperor's hands. The institution of an imperial census, or valuation of all land throughout the empire, and the assessment upon this basis of a uniform land tax, in place of the heterogeneous and irregular payments made under the republic, were the work of Augustus, though the system was developed and perfected by the emperors of the 2d century and by Diocletian. The land tax itself was directly collected, either by imperial officials or by local authorities responsible to them, and the old wasteful plan of selling the privilege of collection to publicani was henceforward applied only to such indirect taxes as the customs duties. The rate of the land tax was fixed by the emperor, and with him rested the power of remission even in senatorial provinces.2 The effect of these reforms is clearly visible in the improved financial condition of the empire. Under the republic the treasury had been nearly always in difficulties, and the provinces exhausted and impoverished. Under the emperors, at least throughout the Ist century, in spite of a largely increased expenditure on the army, on public works, on shows and largesses, and on the machinery of government itself, the better emperors, such as Tiberius and Vespasian, were able to accumulate large sums, while the provinces show but few signs of distress. A reformed administration and an improved system of taxation were not the only boons for which the empire at large had to thank Augustus. While the republic had almost entirely neglected to develop the internal resources of the pro- vinces, Augustus set the example of a liberal expenditure on public works, in the construction of harbours, roads, and bridges, the reclamation of waste lands, and the erection of public buildings. The crippling restrictions which the republic had placed on freedom of intercourse and trade, even between the separate districts of a single province, disappeared under the empire, and the institution of the provincial councils, as centres of provincial unity, is one among many

instances of the more liberal policy Italy and pursued by the emperors.¢ In the eyes of the republican L 4 Pro- statesmen the provinces were merely the estates of the Mn the Roman people, but from the reign of Augustus dates empire, the gradual disappearance of the old pre-eminence of Rome and Italy. It was from the provinces that the

THE EARLY EMPERORS. |

Liberal policy towards the pro- vinces,

Marquardt, ii, 198 sq., esp. p. 200, note 4, where = literature is given. 2Tac., Ann., ii. 47. 3 Suet., Aug., 18, 47. – Marquardt, i, 365.

ME 775

legions were increasingly recruited; provincials rose to high rank as soldiers, statesmen, and men of letters; the growing Roman civilization of the Western provinces and the thriving commerce of the populous cities of the East contrasted significantly with the degenerate cosmo- politanism of Rome, and with the dwindling population and decaying industry of Italy; while even into Rome and Italy the methods of administration formerly distine- tive of the provinces found their way. From Augustus himself, jealous as he was of the traditions and privileges of the ruling Roman people, date the rule of an imperial prefect in the city of Rome, the division of Italy into regiones in the provincial fashion, and the permanent quartering there of armed troops.®

For a century and 'a half the policy initiated by The em. Augustus secured the peace and prosperity of the empire ; Pire from of the emperors who ruled during that period the majority recog were able and vigorous administrators, and even the follies death ot and excesses of Gaius, Claudius, and Nero did little harm Marcus beyond the limits of Rome and Italy. The firm rule of Aurelius, Vespasian repaired the damages inflicted by the wars of 180 4-. the rival emperors after Nero's death, and the abilities of Trajan, Hadrian, and the Antonines, if they failed to revive the flagging energies of the empire, at least secured tranquillity and good government. But few additions of importance were made to the territories of Rome. In Britain' the work begun by Czesar was

taken up by Conquest Claudius, under whom the southern part of the island was of. | constituted a province; the northern districts were subdued Pttains by Agricola (78-84 4.p.), and the limits of the province northward were finally fixed by the Wall of Hadrian (see Britannia). The conquest of Dacia by Trajan (107) of Dacia. was provoked by the threatening attitude of the barbarian tribes on the lower Danube, and, though it remained part of the empire down to 256, its exposed position as lying beyond the Danube frontier rendered it always a source of weakness rather than strength.' To Trajan's reign also belongs the annexation of Arabia Petreea. Otherwise on The the frontiers there was little change. In the north the frontiers revolt of Civilis (69-70 a.p.) owed its temporary success aa mainly to the confusion created by the rivalries of Otho, ; Vitellius, and Vespasian.8 The connexion of the Rhine with the Danube frontier by a continuous wall,a work gradu- ally carried out under the Flavian and Antonine emperors, was a strategical necessity, and involved no general advance of the Roman lines. On the Rhine itself the peaceful state of affairs is sufficiently proved by the reduction of the force stationed there from eight legions to four; and it was only on the Danube that there was any pressure severe enough to strain the strength of the Roman defence. The presence of Trajan himself was required to quell the Dacians under their able king Decebalus, and, though his campaigns were followed by sixty years of peace, a force of ten legions was considered necessary to guard the Danubian frontier. Far more serious was the Invasion irruption of the Marcomanni and other tribes in the reign of the of Marcus Aurelius (162-175.).1° The tide of barbaric rd invasion which then swept across the upper Danube and j over the provinces of Rheetia, Noricum, and Pannonia, till it touched the Alps and the soil of Italy, was indeed driven back after fourteen years of war, but it first revealed to the Roman world the strength of the forces

- *Jung, Romanische Landschaften (Innsbruck, 1881); Budinszky, Die Ausbretung d. Latcinischen Sprache (Berlin, 1881).*

6 Marquardt, i. 67; Suet., Aug., 82.

? Mommsen, R. G., v. 205-208.

8 Tac., Hist., iv.; Mommsen, R. G., v. 116-131.

9 For the "limes imperii," see Mommsen, v. 140-146 ; Cohaugen, Der Rim. Grenzwall (Wiesbaden, 1884) ; Herzog, Die Vermessung d. Rim. Grenzwalls (Stuttgart, 1880).

10 Mommsen, v. 209; Vita Marci, 12 99.

The Rastern frontier.

Condi- tion of the pro- vinces,

Spread of the muui- cipal system ;

of the Roman fran- chise ;

of Ro- man law and civiliza- tion,

Symp- toms of decline.

The empire from

180-284.

776

which were gathering unnoticed in the distant regions beyond the limits of the "Roman peace." In the East Rome and Parthia still faced each other upon the banks of the Euphrates, and contended, now by arms now by diplomacy, for supremacy in the debateable land of Armenia. 'Trajan's momentary acquisitions were aband- oned by Hadrian, and on this side of the empire the first changes of importance on the frontier belong to the reign of Septimius Severus.! Within the frontiers the levelling and unifying process commenced by Augustus had steadily proceeded. A tolerably uniform provincial system covered the whole area of the empire. The client states had one by one been reconstituted as provinces, and even the government of Italy had been in many respects assimilated to the provincial type. The municipal system had spread widely ; the period from Vespasian to Aurelius witnessed the elevation to municipal rank of an immense number of communities, not only in the old provinces of the West, in Africa, Spain, and Gaul, but in the newer provinces of the North,

and along the line of the northern frontier ; and everywhere under the influence of the central imperial authority there was an increasing uniformity in the form of the local constitutions, framed and granted as they all were by imperial edict.2 Throughout the empire again the extension of the Roman franchise was preparing the way for the final act by which Caracalla assimilated the legal status of all free-born inhabitants of the empire,® and in the west and north this was preceded and accompanied by the complete Romanizing of the people in language and civilization. Moreover, the empire, that was thus becom- ing one in its administrative system, its laws, and its civilization, had as yet continued to enjoy peace and order. The burdens of military service fell on the frontier pro- vinces, and only the echoes of the border wars reached the Mediterranean territories. Yet, in spite of the internal tranquillity and the good government which have made the age of the Antonines famous, we can detect signs of weak- ness. 'Though the evils of excessive centralization were hardly felt while the central authority was wielded by vigorous rulers, yet even under Trajan, Hadrian, and the Antonines we notice a failure of strength in the empire as a whole, and a corresponding increase of pres- sure on the imperial government itself. The reforms of Augustus had given free play to powers still fresh and vigorous. The ceaseless labours of Hadrian were directed mainly to the careful husbanding of such strength as still remained, or to attempts at reviving it by the sheer force of imperial authority. Among the symptoms of incipient decline which not the most heroic efforts of the government could entirely remove were the growing depopulation especially of the central districts of the empire, the con- stant financial difficulties, the deterioration in character of the local governments in the provincial communities,' and the increasing reluctance exhibited by all classes to under- take the now onerous burden of municipal office. Lastly, the irruption of the Marcomanni, and the revolt of Avidius Cassius (174-175) in the Eastern provinces, anticipated the two most serious of the dangers which ultimately proved fatal to the empire.

Marcus Aurelius died in 180, and his death was followed by a century of war and disorder, during which nothing but the stern rule of soldier emperors, such as Septimius Severus, Decius, Claudius, Aurelian, and Probus saved the empire from dissolution. The want of any legal security

: Mommsen, v. 409.

‘a Marquardt, i. 464 sq.; ef. esp., the “leges Salpensanae et Malaci- tanae”; C.J. L., ii, 1963, 4; Bruns, Fontes Juris Romani, 130 (Berlin, 1879). 3 Dio, Ixxvii. 9 (211-217 a.p.).

Pliny, Epp. ad Trajanum. For the ‘‘curatores” and “ correc- tores ” appointed in the 2d century, see Marquardt, i. 487 and notes.

ROM HE

[HISTORY.

for the orderly transmission of the imperial power had been partially supplied during the 2d century by the practice of adoption.

But throughout the 3d century the Roman Internal

world witnessed a series of desperate conflicts between 'issen- 1OnS,

rival generals put forward by their respective legions as claimants for the imperial purple. Between the death of Severus in 211 and the accession of Diocletian in 284, no fewer than twenty-three emperors sat in the seat of Augustus, and of these all but three died violent deaths at the hands of a mutinous soldiery or by the orders of a successful rival. Of the remaining three, Decius fell in battle against the Goths, Valerian died a prisoner in the far East, and Claudius was among the victims of the chronic pestilence which added to the miseries of the time. The

"tyrants," as the unsuccessful pretenders to the imperial The purple were styled, reappear with almost unfailing regu- tyrants,

larity in each reign. The claims of Septimius Severus himself, the first and ablest of the soldier emperors, were disputed by Clodius Albinus in the West, and by Pescen- nius Niger in the East, and at the bloody battle of Lug- dunum and the sack of Byzantium rival Roman forces, for the first time since the accession of Vespasian, exhausted each other in civil war.> In 237-238 six emperors perished in the course of a few months. It was, however, during

the reign of Gallienus (260-268) that the evil reached its Reign of

height. The central authority was paralysed ; barians were pouring in from the North; the Parthians were threatening to overrun the Eastern provinces; and the legions on the frontiers were left to repel the enemies of Rome as best they could. A hundred ties bound them closely to the

districts in which they were stationed; their permanent camps had grown into towns, they had families and farms; the unarmed provincials looked to them as their natural protectors, and were attached to them by bonds of intermarriage and by long intercourse. Now that they found themselves left to repel by their own efforts the invaders from without, they reasonably enough claimed the right to ignore the central authority which was powerless to aid them, and to choose for themselves '"'imperatores" whom they knew and trusted. The first of these provincial empires was that established by Postumus in Gaul (259-272), and long maintained by his successors Victorinus and Tetricus.® Their authority was acknowledged, not only in Gaul and by the troops on the Rhine, but by the legions of Britain and Spain; and under Postumus at any rate (259-269) the existence of the Gallic empire was justified by the repulse of the barbarians and by the restoration of peace and security to the provinces of Gaul. On the Danube, in Greece, and in Asia Minor none of the "pretenders" enjoyed more than a passing success. It was otherwise in the far East, where the Syrian Odeenathus, prince of Palmyra,' though officially only the governor of the East (dux Orientis) under Gallienus, drove the Persians out of Asia Minor

_ Gallienus the bar- 60am

Tyrants in Gaul,

Odena- thus and Zenobia at Pal-

and Syria, recovered Mesopotamia, and ruled Syria, myra.

Arabia, Armenia, Cappadocia, and Cilicia with all the independence of a sovereign. Odenathus was murdered in 266. His young son} Vaballathus succeeded him in his titles, but the real power was vested in his widow Zenobia, under whom not only the.greater part of Asia Minor but even the province of Egypt was forcibly added to the dominions governed in the name of Gallienus by the Palmyrene prince.

Gallienus was murdered at Milan in 268, and_ the Restora-

remaining! sixteen years of this period were marked by the restoration of unity to the distracted empire. Palmyra

tion of unity by Aurelian,

was destroyed and Zenobia led a prisoner to Rome by 273.

5 Gibbon, i. chap. v.; Schiller, Gesch. d. Kaiserzeit, i. (2) 660. 8 Gibbon, i. chap. x.; Mommsen, v. 149 ; Schiller, i. (2) 827. ? Gibbon, i, chap. x.; Mommsen, v. 433 ; ¢f. PALMYRA,

Barbaric inva- sions.

The Goths.

The Sassani- de in Parthia.

THIRD CENTURY. |

Aurelian in 273 ; in the next year the Gallic empire came to an end by the surrender of Tetricus, and the successors of Aurelian—Tacitus, Probus, and Carus (275-282)—were at least rulers over the whole extent of the empire.

While rival generals were contending for the imperial purple, the very existence of the empire which they aspired to rule was imperilled by foreign invasion. As early as 236 a new enemy, the Alemanni, had crossed the Rhine, but had been driven back by the valour of Maxi- nunus (238), and in the same year the Goths first appeared on the banks of the Danube. It was, however, during the period of internal dissension and civil war from the reign of Philip (244-249) to the accession of Claudius (268) that the barbarians saw and used their opportunity. From across the Rhine bands of Alemanni and Franks swept over Gaul and Spain, and even descended upon the coasts of Africa, until their raids were checked by the Gallic emperor Postumus (253-259). Far more destructive were the raids of the Goths. Towards the close of the reign of Philip (247) they crossed the Danube, and overran Mcesia, Thrace, and Macedonia. In 251 they defeated and slew the emperor Decius ; and, though his successor

Gallus purchased a temporary peace by lavish gifts, the province of Dacia was finally lost to Rome. The Gothic raids by sea which began under Valerian (253-260) were even more destructive. Their fleets issuing from the ports of the Black Sea ravaged the seaboard of Asia Minor, and returned laden with the spoils of the maritime towns. In the reign of Gallienus (260-268) a fleet of five hundred sail appeared off the coasts of Greece itself; Athens, Corinth, Argos, and Sparta were sacked, and Epirus laid waste. On the death of Gallienus (268) the Goths once more marched south- ward, but in the new emperor Claudius they were con- fronted at last by an able and resolute opponent. They were decisively defeated and driven back across the Danube (269). Claudius died of the plague in the next year, but by his successor Aurelian Roman authority was established in Mcesia and Pannonia, and the Danube frontier was put once more in a state of efficient defence. Five years later (276) Probus repulsed a raid of the Franks and Alemanni, and restored peace on the Rhine. But the rule of Rome now stopped short, as in the reign of Tiberius, at the line of the two great rivers; all that had been acquired beyond since the time of Vespasian was abandoned, and on the further banks of the Rhine and Danube stood, in the place of friendly or subject tribes, a threatening array of hostile peoples.

At the close of the 2d century the growing weakness of Parthia seemed to promise an immunity from danger on the Eastern frontier. But with the revolution which placed the Sassanid upon the throne the whole situation was changed." The new dynasty was in blood and religion Persian ; it claimed descent from Cyrus and Darius, and aspired to recover from Western hands the dominions which had once been theirs. In 230 Artaxares (Ardashir) had formally demanded from Severus Alexander the restitu- tion of the provinces of Asia, had invaded Mesopotamia, now a Roman province, and even advanced into Syria. Twenty years later his successor Sapor again crossed the Euphrates ; in 260, ten years after Decius's defeat by the Goths, the emperor Valerian was conquered and taken prisoner by the Persians, who poured triumphantly into Syria and captured Antioch. But here for the time their Successes ended. Three years later Odzenathus of Pal- myra drove them back, and held the East securely in the name of Rome. On the fall of Zenobia (273) they gained

possession for a time of Armenia and Mesopotamia, but eee ee eeoporamaia, bub

*Gibbon, i. chap. x. ; Mommsen, v. 216. * Gibbon, i. chap. viii.; Mommsen, v. 411 ; ¢f PERSIA.*

ROME

T17

were driven out by the emperor Carus (282), and the frontier line as fixed by Septimius Severus was restored.

Although any serious loss of territory had been avoided, the storms of the 3d century had told with fatal effect upon the general condition of the empire.. The "Roman peace" had vanished; not only the frortier territories, but the central districts of Greece, Asia Minor, and even Italy itself, had suffered from the ravages of war, and the fortification of Rome by Aurelian was a significant testimony to the altered condition of affairs. War, plague, and famine had thinned the population and crippled the resources of the provinces. On all sides land was running waste, cities and towns were decaying, and commerce was paralysed. Only with the greatest difficulty were suf- ficient funds squeezed from the exhausted tax-payers to meet the increasing cost of the defence of the frontiers, The old established culture and civilization of the Medi- terranean world rapidly declined, and the mixture of barbaric rudeness with Oriental pomp and luxury which marked the court, even of the better emperors, such as Aurelian, was typical of the general deterioration, which was accelerated by the growing practice of settling bar- barians on lands within the empire, and of admitting them freely to service in the Roman army.

State of the em- pire at the close of the 3d cen- tury.

Prrtop IL: 284-476 a.p.—(a) From the Accession of The re- Diocletian to the Death of Theodosius (284-395 a..).— forms of

The work begun by Aurelian and Probus, that of fortify- ing the empire alike against internal sedition and foreign invasion, was completed by Diocletian and Constantine the Great, whose system of government, novel as it appears at first sight, was in reality the natural and inevitable outcome of the history of the previous century.? Its object was twofold, to give increased stability to the imperial authority itself, and to organize an efficient administrative machinery throughout the empire. In the second year of his reign Diocletian associated Maximian with himself as colleague, and six years later (292) the hands of the two "Augusti" were further strengthened by the proclamation of Constantius and Glalerius as '"Caesares." Precedents for such an arrangement might have been quoted from the earlier history of the empire ;4 and the considerations in favour of it at the time were strong. It divided the overwhelming burdens and respon- sibilities of government, without sacrificing the unity of the empire ; for, although to each of the Augusti and Ceesars a separate sphere was assigned, the Czesars were subordinate to the higher authority of the Augusti, and over all his three colleagues Diocletian claimed to exercise a paramount control. It at least reduced the too familiar risk of a disputed succession by establishing in the two Ceesars the natural successors to the higher position of Augusti, and finally it satisfied the jealous pride of the rival armies of the empire by giving them what they had so constantly claimed, imperatores of their own. The dis- tribution of power between Diocletian and his colleagues followed those lines of division which the feuds of the previous century had only too clearly marked out. The armies of the Rhine, the Danube, and of Syria fell to the lot respectively of Constantius, Galerius, and Diocletian, the central districts of Italy and Africa to Maximian.5 A

3 See Gibbon, vol. iii, chap. xvii.; Marquardt, Staatsverw., i. pp. 81, 336, 337, ii. 217 sq.; Madvig, Verf. d. Rém.™ Reichs, i. 585; Bécking, Wotitia Dignitatum, Bonn, 1853; Hodgkin, Italy and her Invaders, i, 202 sq.; Preuss, Diocletian, Leipsic, 1869.

- *Mommsen, Staatsrecht, ii. 1065 sg. Verus was associated with Marcus Aurelius as Augustus ; Severus gave the title to his two sons. The bestowal of the title "Czsar" on the destined successor dates from Hadrian. Mommsen, op. cit., 1044.*

5 The division was as follows :—(1) Diocletian—Thrace, Egypt, Syria, Asia Minor ; (2) Maximian—lItaly and Africa; (3) Galerius— Ilyricum and the Danube; (4) Constantius—Britain, Gaul, Spain. See Gibbon, ii. 68 ; Aurelius Victor, c. 39.

Diocle- tian and Constan- tine,

Augusti and Caesares,

Altered charac- ter of the im- perial autho- rity.

Level- ling policy of Diocle- tian.

Degrada- tion of

The new adminis- trative system.

778

second point in the new system was the complete and final emancipation of the imperial authority from all constitu- tional limitation and control. The last lingering traces of its republican origin disappear. The emperors from Diocletian onwards are autocrats in theory as well as in practice. The divided powers, the parallel jurisdictions, the defined prerogatives of the Augustan system have all vanished. There is but one legal authority throughout the empire, that of the emperor himself ; and that authority is absolute. This avowed despotism Diocletian, following in the steps of Aurelian, hedged round with all the pomp and majesty of Oriental monarchy. The final adoption of the title "dominus," so often rejected by earlier emperors, the diadem on the head, the robes of silk and gold, the replacement of the republican salutation of a fellow citizen by the adoring prostration even of the highest in rank before their lord and master, were all significant marks of the new regime.!_ In the hands of this absolute ruler was placed the entire control of an elaborate admin- istrative machinery. Most of the old local and national distinctions, privileges, and liberties which had once flourished within the empire had already disappeared under the levelling influence of imperial rule, and the level- ling process was now completed. Roman citizenship had, since the edict of

Caracalla, ceased to be the privilege of a minority. Diocletian finally reduced Italy and Rome to the level of the provinces: the provincial land-tax and pro- vincial government were introduced into Italy,? while Rome ceased to be even in name the seat of imperial authority.® Throughout the whole area of the empire a uniform system of administration was established, the control of which was centred in the imperial palace, and in the confidential ministers who stood nearest tlle emperor's person. Be-tween the civil and military departments the separation was complete. At the head of the former, at least under the completed organization of Constantine, were the four pre- fects,' next below them the " vicarii," who had charge of the "dioceses," below these again the governors of the sepa- rate provinces (" praesides," " correctores," " consulares"),° under each of whom was a host of minor officials. Parallel with this civil hierarchy of prefects, vicars, pre- sides, and smaller "officiales" was the series of military officers, from the "magistri militum," the "duces," and '"comites" downwards. But the leading features of both are the same. In both there is the utmost possible sub- ordination and division of authority. The subdivision of provinces, begun by the emperors of the 2d century, was systematically carried out by Diocletian, and either by Diocletian or by Constantine the legion was reduced to one-fifth of its former strength.' Each official, civil or military, was placed directly under the orders of a superior, and thus a continuous chain of authority connected the emperor with the meanest official in his service. Finally, the various grades in these two imperial services were care-

1 Aurel. Victor, 39; Eutrop., ix. 26.

? Marquardt, Staatsverw., i. 80-88, where a list is given of the seventeen so-called " provinciae " into which Italy, together with Sicily, Sardinia, and Corsica, was divided. Each had its own governor ; the governors were subject to the two vicarii (vic. urbis, vic. Italie), and they in turn to the prefect of Italy, whose prefecture, however, included as well Africa and Western I}yricuni.

3 The seats of government for Diocletian and his three colleagues were Milan, Treves, Sirmium, Nicomedia.

4 For these last, see Gibbon, ii. chap. xvii. Pp. 825 3 cf also Notitia Dignitatum and Bocking's notes.

_> "Praefecti praetorio." The four prefectures were Oriens, Ily- ricum, Italia, Gallia, to which must be added the prefectures of Rome and Constantinople.

6 There were 12 dioceses and 116 provinces ; cf. in addition to the authorities mentioned above, Bethmann-Hollweg, Civil-Prozess, iti. ; Walter, Gesch. d. Rém. Rechts, i. pp. 428 sq. (Bonn, 1845).

7 For this and other changes in the military organization, see Madvig, ii. 572; Marquardt, ii. 584 sq.

fully marked by the appropriation to each of distinctive titles, the highest being that of "illustris," which was confined to the prefects and to the military magistri and comites, and to the chief ministers.®

There can be little doubt that on the whole these reforms prolonged the existence of the empire, by creating a machinery which enabled the stronger emperors to utilize effectively all its available resources, and which even to some extent made good the deficiencies of weaker rulers. But in many points they failed to attain their object. Diocletian's division of tle imperial authority among colleagues, subject to the general control of the senior Augustus, was effectually discredited by the twenty years of almost constant conflict which followed his own abdication (305-323). Constantine's partition of the empire among his three sons was not more successful in ensuring tranquillity, and in the final division of the East and West between Valens and Valentinian (364) the essential principle of Diocletian's scheme, the mainten- ance of a single central authority, was abandoned. The "tyrants," the curse of the 3d century, were far from unknown in the 4th, and their comparative paucity was due rather to the hold which the house of Constantine obtained upon the allegiance of their subjects than to the system of Diocletian. This system, moreover,

while it failed altogether to remove some of the existing evils, aggravated others. The already overburdened financial resources of the empire were strained still further by the increased expenditure necessitated by the substitution of four imperial courts for one, and by the multiplication in every direction of paid officials. The gigantic bureaucracy of the 4th century proved, in spite of its undoubted services, an intolerable weight upon the energies of the empire.®

Diocletian and Maximian formally abdicated their high Constan- | Eighteen years later Constantine, the sole tine the

office in 305. survivor of six rival emperors, united the whole empire under his own rule. His reign of fourteen years was marked by two events of first-rate importance,—the recog-

Effects of these

reforms.

reat,

Recog-

nition of Christianity as the religion of the empire,! and nition of

the building of the new capital at Byzantium. The alliance which Constantine inaugurated between the Christian church and the imperial government, while it enlisted on the side of the state one of the most powerful of the new forces with which it had to reckon, imposed a check, which was in time to become a powerful one, on the imperial authority. The establishment of the new "City of Constantine" as a second Rome, with a second senate,

Chris- tianity.

Constan-

a prefect of the city, regiones, and even largesses, did tinople

more than proclaim once again the deposition of Rome from her old imperial position. It paved the way for the final separation of East and West by providing the former for the first time with a suitable seat of government on the Bosphorus. The death of Constantine in 337 was followed, as the abdication of Diocletian had been, by the outbreak of quarrels among rival Cesars. Of the three sons of Constantine who in 337 divided the empire between them, Constantine the eldest fell in civil war against his brother Constans ; Constans himself was, ten years afterwards, defeated and slain by Magnentius; and the latter in his turn was in 353 vanquished by Constantine's only surviving son Constantius. Thus for the second time the whole empire was united under the rule of a member of the house of Constantine. But in 355 Con-

8 The grades were as follows : illustres, spectabiles, clarissimi, per-fectissimi,' egregii. For the other insignia, see Madvig, ii. 590, and the Notitia Dignitatum.

®° The passion for moulding everything after a uniform official pattern extended beyond the departments of civil and military administration to the professions and to society. Walter, op. cit., i. 456; Marquardt, ii. 230 sq.

10 Gibbon, ii. chaps. xv. xvi.; Ranke, Weltgesch., iii. 525.

Constan- tius II.,

351-363.

Julian,

361-368.

Jovian,

363-364.

Valen- tinian I.,

864-375.

Division of the empire,

3864,

Valens,

364-378,

Revolt of the Goths,

Theo- dosius I.,

378-395.

FOURTH CENTURY. |

stantius reluctantly granted 'the title of Cwsar to his cousin Julian and placed him in charge of Gaul, where

the momentary elevation of a tyrant, Silvanus, and still.

more the inroads of Franks and Alemanni, had excited alarm. But Julian's successes during the next five years were such as to arouse the jealous fears of Constantius. In order to weaken his suspected rival the legions under Julian in Gaul were suddenly ordered to march eastward against the Persians (360). They refused, and when the order was repeated replied by proclaiming Julian himself emperor and Augustus. Julian, with probably sincere reluctance, accepted the position, but the death of Constantius in 361 saved the empire from the threatened civil war. The chief importance of the career of Julian, both as Cesar in Gaul from 355 to 361 and during his brief tenure of sole power (361-363), lies, so far as the general history of the empire is concerned, in his able defence of the Rhine frontier and in his Persian campaign ; for his attempted restoration of pagan and in especial of Hellenic worships had no more permanent effect than the war which he courageously waged against the multi- tudinons abuses which had grown up in the luxurious court of Constantius.1_ But his vigorous administration in Gaul undoubtedly checked the barbarian advance across the Rhine, and

postponed the loss of the Western provinces, while, on the contrary, his campaign in Persia, _bril- liantly successful at first, resulted in his own death, and in the immediate surrender by his successor Jovian of the territories beyond the Tigris won by Diocletian seventy years before. Julian died on June 26, 363, his suc- cessor Jovian on February 17, 364; and on the 26th of February Valentinian was acknowledged as emperor by the army at Nica. In obedience to the expressed wish of the soldiers that he should associate a colleague with himself, he conferred the title of Augustus upon his brother Valens, and the long-impending division of the empire was at last effected,—Valentinian became emperor of the West, Valens of the East. From 364 till his death in 375 the vigour and ability of Valentinian kept his own frontier of the Rhine tolerably intact, and prevented any serious disasters on the Danube. But his death, which deprived the weaker Valens of a trusted counsellor and ally, was followed by a crisis on the Danube, more serious than any which had occurred there since the defeat of Decius. In 376 the Goths, hard pressed by their new foes from the eastward, the Huns, sought and obtained the protection of the Roman empire. They were transported across the Danube and settled in Meesia, but, indignant at the treatment they received, they rose in arms against their protectors. In 378 at Hadrian- ople Valens was defeated and killed ; the victorious Goths spread with fire and sword over Illyricum, and advanced eastward to the very walls of Constantinople. Once more, however, the danger passed away. The skill and tact of Theodosius, who had been proclaimed emperor of the East by Gratian, conciliated the Goths; they were granted an allowance, and in large numbers entered the service of the Roman emperor. The remaining years of Theodosius's reign (382-395) were mainly engrossed by the duty which now devolved upon the emperor of the East of upholding the increasingly feeble authority of his colleague in the West against the attacks of pretenders. Maximus, the murderer of Gratian (383), was at first recognized by Theodosius as Czxsar, and left in undisturbed conmand of Gaul, Spain, and Britain; but, when in 386 he proceeded to oust Valentinian II. from Italy and Africa, Theodosius marched westward, crushed him, and installed Valentinian ee ee ee

1 In especial against the overweening influence of the eunuchs, an influence at once greater and more pernicious than even that of the

imperial freedmen in the days of Claudius.

ROME

779

as emperor of the West. In the very next year, however, the murder of Valentinian (392) by Arbogast, a Frank, was followed by the appearance of a fresh tyrant in the person of Eugenius, a domestic officer and nominee of Arbo- gast himself, Once more Theodosius marched westward, and near Aquileia decisively defeated his Opponents. But his victory was quickly followed by his own illness and

Division of the empire

between Arcadius

death (395), and the fortunes of East and West passed and

into the care of his two sons Arcadius and Honorius.

Honorius.

(0) From the Death of Theodosius to the Extinction of Fall of the the Western Hmpire (395-476).—Through more than a Western

century from the accession of Diocletian the Roman empire had succeeded in holding at bay the swarming hordes of barbarians. But, though no province had yet been lost, as Dacia had been lost in the century before, and though the frontier lines of the Rhine and the Danube were still guarded by Roman forts and troops, there were signs in plenty that a catastrophe was at hand.

From all the writers who deal with the 4th century comes the same tale of declining strength and energy. From Lactantius to Zosimus we have one long series of laments over the depression and misery of the provinces. To meet the increased expenditure necessary to maintain the legions, to pay the hosts of officials, and to keep up the luxurious splendour of the imperial courts, not only were the taxes raised in amount, but the most

oppressive and inquisitorial methods were adopted in order to secure for the imperial treasury every penny that could be wrung from the wretched taxpayer. The results are seen in such pictures as that which the panegyrist Eumenius 2 draws of the state of Gaul (306-312) under Constan- tine, in the accounts of the same province under Julian fifty years later, in those given by Zosimus early in the 5th century, and in the stringent regulations of the Theodosian code, dealing with the assessment and collec- tion of the taxes. Among the graver symptoms of economic ruin were the decrease of population, which seriously diminished not only the number of taxpayers, but the supply of soldiers for the legions ; the spread of infanticide ; the increase of waste lands whose owners and cultivators had fled to escape the tax collector; the declining prosperity of the towns; and the constantly recurring riots and insurrections, both among starving peasants, as in Gaul,* and in populous cities like Antioch.® The distress was aggravated by the civil wars, by the rapacity of tyrants, such as Maxentius and Maximus, but above all by the raids of the barbarians, who seized every opportunity afforded by the dissensions or incapacity of the emperors to cross the frontiers and harry the lands of the provincials. Constantine (306-312), Julian (356-360), and Valentinian I. (364-375) had each to give a temporary breathing space to Gaul by repelling the Franks and Alemanni. Britain was harassed by Picts and Scots from the north (367-370), while the Saxon pirates swept the Northern seas and the coasts both of Britain and Gaul. On the Danube the Quadi, Sarmatz, and above all the Goths, poured at intervals into the provinces of Pannonia and Meesia, and penetrated to Macedon and Thrace. In the East, in addition to the constant border feud with Persia, we hear of ravages by the Isaurian mountaineers, and by a new enemy, the Saracens.®*

Even more ominous of coming danger was the extent

2 Eumenius, Paneg. Vet., vii. For Julian's administration in Gaul see Ammianus, xv.~~xvii.; Julian's own oration to the Athenian senate and people, Juliani Opera (ed. Hertlein, Leipsic, 1875) pp. 346 sq.; Zosimus, ii. 38. Cf Gibbon, ii. 8338, 412; Jung, Roman. Lund~~ schaften, 264, 265 ; Hodgkin, i. 600 sq.

3 Gibbon, ii. 328.

4“ For the Bagaude, see Gibbon, ii. 69, and Jung, op. cit., 264, where the authorities are given.

5 In 387 ; Hodgkin, i. 178. § Amm. Marcel., xiv. 4,

empire.

Distress of the provinces

in the 4th

century.

Rar- barians within the empire.

Barbaric invasions,

780

to which the European half of the empire was becoming barbarized. The policy which had been inaugurated by Augustus himself of settling barbarians within the frontiers had been taken up on a larger scale and in a more systematic way by the Illyrian emperors of the 3d century, and was continued by their successors in the 4th. In Gaul, in the provinces south of the Danube, even in Macedon and Italy, large barbarian settlements had been made—Theodosius in particular distinguishing himself by his liberality in this respect. Nor did the barbarians admitted during the 4th century merely swell the class of half-servile coloni. On the contrary, they not only constituted to an increasing extent the strength of the imperial forces, but won their way in ever-growing numbers to posts of dignity and importance in the imperial service. Under Constantine the palace was crowded with Franks.! Julian led Gothic troops against Persia, and the army with which Theodosius defeated the tyrant Maximus (388) contained large numbers of Huns and Alans, as well as of Goths. The names of Arbogast, Stilicho, and Rufinus are sufficient proof of the place held by barbarians near the emperor’s person and in the control of the

provinces and legions of Rome; and the relations of Arbogast to his nominee for the purple, Eugenius, were an anticipation of those which existed between Ricimer and the emperors of the latter half of the 5th century.

It was by barbarians already settled within the empire that the first of the series of attacks which finally separated the Western provinces from the empire and set up a barbaric ruler in Italy were made," and it was in men of barbarian birth that Rome found her ablest and most successful defenders, and the emperors both of East and West their most capable and powerful ministers. The

Alaric and Visigoths whom Alaric led into Italy had been settled

the Visi- goths,

Alaric in Italy.

south of the Danube as the allies of the empire since the accession of Theodosius. The greater part of them were Christians at least in name, and Alaric himself had stood high in the favour of Theodosius. The causes which set them in motion are tolerably clear. Like the Germans of the days of Cesar, they wanted land for their own, and to this land-hunger was evidently added in Alaric's own case the ambition of raising himself to the heights which had been reached before him by the Vandal Stilicho at Ravenna and the Goth Rufinus at Constantinople. The jealousy which existed between the rulers of the Western and Eastern empires furthered his plans. In the name of Arcadius, the emperor of the East, or at least with the connivance of Arcadius's minister Rufinus, he occupied the province of Illyricum, and .from thence ravaged Greece, which according to the existing division of pro- vinees belonged to the Western empire. Thence in 396 he retreated before Stilicho to [lyricum, with the command of which he was now formally invested by Arcadius, and which gave him the best possible starting point for an attack on Italy? In 400 he led his people, with their wives and families, their waggons and treasure, to seek lands for themselves south of the Alps. But in this first invasion he penetrated no farther than the plains of Lombardy, and after the desperate battle of Pollentia

1 Anim,, xv. 5.

? Accounts of the leading ancient authorities for the period 395- 476 will be found prefixed to the several chapters in Hodgkin's Ttaly and her Invaders, vols. i. ii. (Oxford, 1880), especially vol. i. pp. 234, 277. Among standard modern authorities are Gibbon, vol. iv.; Tillemont, Histoire des Emperewrs, vol. v.; Milman, Latin Chris- tvanity, vol. i.; Thierry, Trois Ministres des fils de Theodose (Paris, 1865), and Histoire d' Attila ; Ranke, Weltgeschichte, vol. iv.,—compare especially his criticisms (iv. (2) 249 sg.) on Eusebius, Zosimus, Pro- copius, Jordanes, and Gregory of Tours. For the barbarian migrations see Wietersheim, Gesch. d. V dlkerwanderung.

3 Hodgkin, op. cit., i. 275.

(402) 4 he slowly withdrew from Italy, his retreat being hastened by the promises of gold freely made to him by the imperial government. Not until the autumn of 408 did Alaric again cross the Alps. Stilicho was dead; the barbarian troops in Honorius's service had been provoked into joining Alaric by the insane anti-Teutonic policy of Honorius and his ministers, and Alaric marched unopposed to Rome. This time, however, the payment of a heavy ransom saved the city. Several months of negotiation followed between Alaric and the court of Ravenna. Alaric's demands were moderate, but Honorius would grant neither lands for his people nor the honourable post in the imperial service which he asked for himself. Once more Alaric sat down before Rome, and this time the panic-stricken citizens discovered a fresh mode of escape. Attalus, a Greek, the prefect of the city, was declared Augustus, and Alaric accepted the post of commander-in- chief. But the incapacity of Attalus was too much for the patience of his barbarian minister and patron, and after a few months' reign Alaric formally deposed him and renewed his offers to Honorius. Again, however, they were declined, and Alaric marched to the siege and sack of Rome (410). His death followed hard on his capture of Rome.

Two years later (412) his suc- The Visi- |

cessor Ataulf led the Visigoths to find in Gaul the lands goths in

which Alaric had sought in Italy. the anarchical condition of the West that Ataulf and his Goths should have fought for Honorius in Gaul against the tyrants,° and in Spain against the Vandals, Suevi, and Alani; and it was with the consent of Honorius that in 419 Wallia, who had followed Ataulf as king of the Visigoths, finally settled with his people in south-western Gaul and founded the Visigothic monarchy."

It was about the same period that the accomplished Vandals, |

It is characteristic of 424)

fact of the division of Spain between the three barbarian Suevi, and |

tribes of Vandals, Suevi, and Alani was in a similar manner recognized and approved by the paramount authority of the emperor of the West. These peoples had crossed the Rhine at the time when Alaric was making his first attempt on Italy. A portion of the host led by Radagaisus ® actually invaded Italy, but were cut to pieces by Stilicho near Florence (405); the rest pressed on through Gaul, crossed the Pyrenees, and entered the as yet untouched province of Spain.

Honorius died in 423.

lani in

ain,

His authority had survived the Death of

dangers to which it had been exposed alike from the Honorius,

rivalry of tyrants and barbaric invasion, and with the single exception of Britain?° no province had yet formally broken loose from the empire. But over a great part of the West this authority was now little more than nonuinal ; throughout the major part of Gaul and in Spain the

barbarians had settled, and barbarian states were growing up which still recognized the paramount supremacy of the emperor, but were in all essentials independent of his control. The question for the future was whether this relationship between the declining imperial authority and the vigorous young states which had planted the seeds of a fresh life in the provinces would be maintained.

423.

The long reign of Valentinian IIL. (423-455) is marked Valen-

- *According to others, 403; Hodgkin, i. 310.*

5 For the treatment of Rome by Alaric, see Hodgkin, i. 370, with Gibbon, iv. 101, and Ranke, Wedltgesch., iv. 246. Allowance must be made for the exaggerations of the ecclesiastical writers.

6 For these "tyrants" see an article by Prof. Freeman in the first number of the new English Historical Review (Jan. 1886), pp. 538-86.

? The capital of the new state was Tolosa (Toulouse).

8 Jung, Die Romanische Landschaften, 73 sq.

® For the connexion between his movement and those of Alaric and of the Vandals, see Hodgkin, i. 282, 804; Gibbon, iv. 46.

10 The Roman troops were withdrawn from Britain by Constantine in 409; Jung, 305.

tinian IIL. .

423-455.

y ROME 781

imperial part outside Italy.5 Ricimer died in 47 2, and two years later a Pannonian, Orestes, aspired to fill the place which Ricimer had occupied. Julius Nepos was deposed, x and Orestes filled the vacancy by

*proclaiming as Augustus his own son Romulus. But Orestes's tenure of power was Orestes brief. The barbarian mercenaries in Italy determined to the Pan- secure for themselves a position there such as that which 2°78". their kinsfolk had won in Gaul and Spain and Africa. Their demand for a third of the lands of Italy was refused by Orestes,® and they instantly rose in revolt. On the defeat and death of Orestes they proclaimed their leader, Odoacer the Rugian,' king of Italy. Romulus Augustulus Romulus laid down his imperial dignity, and the court at Con- ee stantinople was informed that there was no longer an * emperor of the West.8*

The installation of a barbarian king in Italy was the King natural climax of the changes which had been taking place Odoacer. in the West throughout the 5th century. In Spain, Gaul, and Africa barbarian chieftains were already established as kings. In Italy, for the last twenty years, the real power had been wielded by a barbarian officer. Odoacer, when he decided to dispense with the nominal authority of an emperor of the West, placed Italy on the same level of independence with the neighbouring provinces. But the old ties with Rome were not severed. The new king of Italy formally recognized the supremacy of the one Roman emperor at Constantinople, and was invested in

by two events of first-rate importance,—the conquest of Africa by the Vandals! and the invasion of Gaul and Vandal Italy by Attila. The Vandal settlement in Africa was conquest closely akin in its origin and results to those of the of Afric. Visiooths and of the Vandals themselves in Gaul and Spain. Here as there the occasion was given by the jealous quarrels of powerful imperial ministers. The feud between Boniface, count of Africa, and Aetius, the "master- general" or "count of Italy," opened the way to Africa for the Vandal king Gaiseric (Genseric), as that between Stilicho and Rufinus had before set Alaric in motion westward, and as the quarrel between the tyrant Con- stantine and the ministers of Honorius had paved the way for the Vandals, Sueves, and Alans into Spain. In this case too, as in the others, the hunger for more land and treasure was the impelling motive with the barbarian invader, and in Africa, as in Gaul and Spain,

the invaders' acquisitions were confirmed by the imperial authority which they still professed to recognize. It was in 429 that Gai- seric, king of the Vandals, crossed with his warriors, their families and goods, to the province of Africa, a province hitherto almost as untouched as Spain by the ravages of war. Thanks to the quarrels of Boniface and Aetius their task was an easy one. The defenceless province was easily and quickly overrun. In 4352 a formal treaty secured them in the possession of a large portion of the rich lands which were the granary of Rome, in

exchange for a payment probably of corn and oil. Car-| return with the rank of "patrician," which had been held thage was taken in 439, and by 440 the Vandal kingdom | before him by Aetius and Ricimer. In Italy too, as in was firmly established. Spain and Gaul, the laws, the administrative system, and

Attila Eleven years later (451) Attila invaded Gaul, but this | the language remained Roman.? But the emancipation of

a Hunnish movement was in a variety of ways different Italy and the Western provinces from direct imperial con-

~ from those of the Visigoths and Vandals. Nearly a trol, which is signalized by Odoacer's accession, has rightly

century had passed since the Huns first appeared in| been regarded as marking the opening of a new epoch. Europe, and drove the Goths to seek shelter within the | It made possible in the West the development of a Roman lines. Attila was now the ruler of a great empire | Romano-German civilization ; it facilitated the growth of in central and northern Europe,' and, in addition to his | new and distinct states and nationalities; it gave a new own Huns, the German tribes along the Rhine and Danube impulse to the influence of the Christian church, and laid and far away to the north owned him as king. He con- | the foundations of the power of the bishops of Rome. fronted the Roman power as an equal; and, in marked Chronological Table of the Roman Emperors. contrast to the Gothic and Vandal chieftains, he treated | ne. A.D. A.D. with the emperors of East and West as an independent = aie 193, { Didi Faanns 268. Claudius sovereign. His advance on Gaul and Italy threatened, not ees

on, ‘SeptiminsSeverat, 270, Aurelian, the establishment of yet one more barbaric chieftain on| jj; Suge 217, Mecrmie 276. Probus. Roman soil, but the subjugation of the civilized and| 5 Ao ce (Guecreate. We cous aes ea tee Christian West to the rule of a heathen and semi-barbarous | 68, 69. {othe a” Valo 283, | merian, conqueror. But Rome now reaped the advantages of the} Veet “a The two Gordiant, | 284, { Pihian soca policy which Honorius had perhaps involuntarily followed. i a. 238, acs and Bal- cents, 280). The Visigoths in Gaul, Christian and already half} 96° Nerva. Gordian III. 305. { Galerius, Au- Romanized, rallied to the aid of the empire against a i foe fe Beet a ae

Battle of common foe. Attila, defeated at Chalons 4 by Aetius, 138. Antoninus Pius, cs and Mmil- | 353. me I.

Chalons. withdrew into Pannonia (200). Ti) thes west gear he| gon fee | ae Valerian, co overran Lombardy, but penetrated no farther south, Division of the Empire. and in 453 he died. With the murder of Valentinian —— ih he wae III. (453) the western branch of the house of Theodosius | fs: Gaentmian Lc sutan (Se et sas 1 came to an end, and the next twenty years witnessed | 283. Valentinian 11. — the accession and deposition of nine emperors. The three | — 395: Honorius. pe ee

Sack of months’ rule of Maximus is memorable onlyfox theanvasion | 75, j‘entinian IIL i Ea

an of italy and the sack of Rome by the Vandals under ses. a eae

Vandals, Caiseric. From 456-472 the actual ruler of Italy was | 461. Severus.

Ricimer ‘icimer, the Sueve. Of the four emperors whom he placed ae atau

supreme On the throne, Majorian (457-461) alone played any | 478. Glycerius.

ue 474, Julius Nepos.

im Italy. 475. Romulus Augustulus. (03G. 195 129)

- *Hodgkin, ii, 283-290; Gibbon, iv. 176-188, 256; Jung, 183.*

The leading ancient authority is Procopius. See Ranke, iv. (2) 285; > Majorian was the last Roman emperor who appeared in person in

Papencordt, Gesch. d. Vandal. Herrschaft in Africa.

2 Prosper, 659; Ranke, iv. (1) 282.

- *The principal ancient authorities are Priscus (Miller, Fragm. Hist. Gr., iv. 69); Jordanes (ed. Mommsen, 1882); Sidonius Apollinaris (ed. Barret, Paris, 1878).*

'For the decisive battle of Chalons, see Gibbon, iv. 234 sq.; Hodgkin, ii. 138, note A, 161, where the topography is discussed.

Spain and Gaul. 8 Hodgkin, i. 531.

7 The nationality of Odoacer is a disputed point. Hodgkin, i. 528 ; Ranke, iv. (1) 372.

8 Gibbon, iv. 298. The authority for the embassy to Zeno is Malchus (Miiller, Fragm. Hist. Gr., iv. 119).

® Gibbon, iv. 302; Jung, 66 sg.; Bryce, 24-33. See also RomAN Law.

Holy Roman Empire,

The Goths.

782

Srcrion I1.—History or THE RomMAN REPUBLIC IN THE MippLe AGES.

The history of the Roman republic during the Middle Ages has yet to be written, and only by the discovery of new documents can the difficulties of the task be com- pletely overcome. Although very different in its origin, the Roman republic gradually assumed the same form as the other Italian

communes, and with almost identical institu- tions. But, owing to the special local conditions amid which it arose, it maintained a distinct physiognomy and character. The deserted Campagna surrounding the city checked any notable increase of trade or industry, and prevented the establishment of the guilds on the solid footing that elsewhere made them the basis and support of the commune. There was also the continual and oppressive influence of the empire, and, above all, the presence of the papacy, which often appeared to absorb the entire vitality of the city. At such moments the commune seemed annihilated, but it speedily revived and reasserted itself. Consequently there are many apparent gaps in its history, and we have often extreme difficulty in discovering the invisible links connecting the visible fragments.

Even the aristocracy of Rome had a special stamp. In the other republics, excepting Venice, it was feudal, of German origin, and in perpetual conflict with the popular and commercial elements which sought its destruction. The history of municipal freedom lay in this struggle. But the infiltration of Teutonic and feudal elements broke up the ancient aristocracy of Rome, and left it at the mercy of the people. Then the popes, by the bestowal of lucrative posts, rich benefices, and vast estates, and, above all, by raising many nobles to the purple, introduced new blood into the Roman aristocracy, and endued it with increasing strength and vitality. Always divided, always turbulent, this irrepressible body was a continual source of discord and civil war, of permanent confusion and turmoil. Amidst all these difficulties the commune struggled on, but never succeeded in long preserving a regular course or administration. What with continual warfare, attacks on the Capitol, and consequent slaughter, pillage, and in- cendiarism, it is no wonder that so few original documents are left to illustrate the history of the Roman republic. Nor have chroniclers and historians done much to supply this want, since, in treating of Roman affairs, their' atten- tion is mainly devoted to the pope and the emperor. Nevertheless we will attempt to connect in due order all the facts gleaned from former writers and published records.

The removal of the seat of the empire to Constantinople effected a radical change in the political situation of Rome ; nor was this change neutralized by the formation of the weak Western empire soon to be

shattered by the Germanic invasions. But we still find Roman laws and institutions ; and no sign is yet manifest of the rise of a medizval municipality. The earliest germ of one is seen during the barbarian invasions. Of these we need only enumerate the four most important,— those of the Goths, Byzantines, Lombards, and Franks. The Gothic rule merely superposed upon the Roman social order a Teutonic stratum, that never penetrated beneath its surface. The Goths always remained a conquering army ; according to the German custom, they took possession of one third of the vanquished territory, but, while forbidding the Romans to bear arms, left their local administration intact. The senate, the curiae, the principal magistrates, both provin- cial and municipal, the prefect of the city, and the Roman Judges enforcing the enactments of the Roman law were all preserved. Already, under the empire, the civil power had been separated from the military, and this separation

was maintained. Hence there was no visible change in the constitution of the state. Only, now there were con- quered and conquerors. All real and effective power was on the side of brute force, and the Goths alone bore arms. In every province they had their comztes, or heads of the army, who had judicial power over their countrymen, especially in criminal cases. Here then was a combina- tion of civil and military jurisdiction altogether contrary to the Roman idea. Nor can it be denied that the comites, as chiefs of the armed force, necessarily exerted a direct or indirect influence on the civil and administrative power of the provinces, and especially upon the collection of the imposts. The civil arm, being virtually subordinate to the military, suffered unavoidable change. Notwithstanding the praise lavished on Theodoric, the kingdom founded by him in Italy had no solid basis. It was composed of two nations differing in race and traditions and even in religion, since the Goths were Arians and the Romans Catholics. The latter were sunk in degeneracy and cor- ruption ; their institutions were old and decrepit. It was necessary to infuse new life into the worn-out body. This was difficult, perhaps impossible; and at any rate Theodoric never attempted the task.

Little wonder then if the Gothic kingdom succumbed to the Byzantine hordes from Constantinople. |

The wars of Belisarius and Narses against the Goths

lasted twenty years (535-555 a.p.), caused terrible slaughter

and devastation in Italy, and finally subjected her to Constantinople. In place of a Gothic king she was now ruled by a Greek patrician, afterwards entitled the exarch, who had his seat of government at Ravenna as lieutenant of the empire. In the chief provincial cities the ruling counts were replaced by dukes, subordinate to the exarch; and the smaller towns were governed by military tribunes. Instead of dukes, we sometimes find magistri malitum, apparently of higher rank. The praefectus praetorio of Italy, likewise a dependant of the exarch, was at the head of the civil administration. The pragmatic sanction (554), promulgating the Justinian code, again separated the civil from the military power, which was no longer allowed to intervene in the settlement of private disputes, and, by conferring on the bishops the superintendence of and authority over the provincial and municipal government, soon led to the increase of the power of the church, which had already considerable influence.

The new organization outwardly resembled that of the Goths: one army had been replaced by another, the counts by dukes; there was an exarch instead of a king; the civil and military jurisdictions were more exactly defined. But the army was not, like that of the Goths, a conquer- ing nation in arms; it was a Greeco-Roman army, and did not hold a third of the territory which was now probably added to the possessions of the state. The soldiery took its pay from Constantinople, whence all instructions and appointments of superior officers likewise proceeded. In Rome we find a magister militum at the head of the troops. The Roman senate still existed, but was re- duced to a shadow. Theodoric had left it intact until he suspected it of hostile designs and dealings with the Byzantines, but then began to persecute it, as was proved by the wretched fate of Boetius and Symmachus. Never- theless the senate survived, added the functions of a cura or municipal council to those of a governmental assembly, and took part in the election of the pope—already one of the chief affairs of Rome. So many senators, however, were slaughtered during the Byzantine

war that it was com- monly believed to be extinct. The pragmatic sanction, conferring on senate and pope the superintendence of weights and measures in Italy, is a convincing proof to the contrary, although, in the general chaos, now that

The By- zantine rule.

The Lom- bards.

popes.

Gregory

1,

The Roman com- Mune,

MEDIAVAL REPUBLIC. |

Rome was a mere provincial city, constantly exposed to attack, we may imagine to what the senate was reduced.

All Roman institutions were altered and decayed ; but their original features were still to be traced, and no heterogeneous element had been introduced into them. The first dawn of a completely new epoch can only be dated from the invasion of the Lombards (568-572), Their conquest of a large portion of Italy was accompanied by the harshest oppression. They abolished all ancient laws and institutions, and not only seized a third of the lands, but reduced the inhabitants to almost utter slavery. But, in the unsubdued parts of the country—namely, in Ravenna, Rome, and the maritime cities—a very dif- ferent state of things prevailed. The necessity for self- defence and the distance of the empire, now too worn out to render any assistance, compelled the inhabitants to depend solely on their own strength. Thus, certain maritime cities, such as Naples, Amalfi, Pisa, and Venice, soon attained toa greater or less degree of liberty and inde- pendence.

A special state of things now arose in Rome. We behold the rapid growth of the papal power and the con- tinual increase of its moral and political influence. This had already begun under Leo I, and been further pro- moted by the pragmatic sanction. Not only the super- intendence but often the nomination of public function- aries and judges was now in the hands of the popes. And the accession to St Peter's chair of a man of real genius in the person of Gregory I., surnamed the Great, marked the commencement of a new era. By force of individual character, as well as by historic necessity, this pope became the most potent personage in Rome. Power fell naturally into his hands ; he was the true representative of the city, the born defender of church and state. His ecclesiastical authority, already great throughout Italy, was specially great in the Roman diocese and in southern Italy. The continual offerings of the faithful had previously endowed the church with enormous possessions in the province of Rome, in Sicily, Sardinia, and other parts. The admini- stration of all this property soon assumed the shape of a small government council in Rome. This protected and succoured the oppressed, settled disputes, nominated judges, and controlled the ecclesiastical authorities. The use made by the pope of his revenues greatly contributed to the increase of his moral and political authority. When the city was besieged by the Lombards, and the emperor left his army unpaid, Gregory supplied the required funds and thus made resistance possible. And, when the defence could be no longer maintained, he alone, by the weight of his personal influence and the payment of large sums, induced the Lombards to raise the siege. He negotiated in person with Agilulph, and was recognized by him as the true representative of the city. Thus Rome, after being five times taken and sacked by the barbarians, was, on this occasion, saved by its bishop. The exarch, although unable to give any help, protested against the assumption of so much authority by the pope ; but Gregory was no usurper, and his attitude was the natural result of events. " For twenty- seven years "—so wrote this pontiff to the imperial government of Constan- tinople—" we lived in terror of the Longobards, nor can J say what sums we had to pay them. There is an imperial treasurer with the army at Ravenna; but here it is I who am treasurer. Likewise I have to provide for the clergy, the poor, and the people, and even to succour the distress of other churches."

It was at this moment that the new Roman commune began to take shape and acquire increasing vigour owing to its distance from the seat of the empire and its resistance to the Lombard besiegers. Its special character was

now to be traced in the preponderance of the military over the civil power. A Roman element had penetrated into the army, which was already possessed of considerable political importance. The prefect of Rome loses authority and seems almost a nullity compared with the magister militum. Hardly anything is heard of the senate. "Quia enim Senatus deest, populus interiit," exclaims Gregory ina moment of despair. The popes now make common cause with the people against the Lombards on the one hand and the emperor on the other. But they avoid an absolute rupture with the empire, lest they should have to face the Lombard power without any prospect of help. Later, when the growing strength of the commune becomes menacing, they remain faithful to the empire in order not to be at the mercy of the people. It was a permanent feature of their policy never to allow the complete inde- pendence of the city until they should be its sole and absolute masters. But that time was still in the future. Meanwhile pope and people joined in the defence of their common interests.

This alliance was cemented by the religious disputes of the East and the West. First came the Monothelite con- troversy regarding the twofold nature of Christ. In order to compel obedience to his edict, the emperor commanded the exarch to take energetic measures, and, provided he could secure the favour of the Roman army, to actually seize the person of Pope Martin I. (649-654). A long and violent struggle ensued, in which the people of Rome and of other Italian cities sided so vigorously with the popes that John VI. (701-705) had to interpose in order to release the exarch from captivity and prevent a definitive rupture with the empire. Later (710-711) Ravenna revolted against the emperor, organized its armed population under twelve flags, and almost all the cities of the exarchate joined in a resistance that was the first step towards the

independence of the Italian communes. A still fiercer religious quarrel then broke out concerning images. Pope Gregory II. (715-731) opposed the cele- brated edict of the iconoclastic emperor Leo the Isaurian. Venice and the Pentapolis took up arms in favour of the pope, and elected dukes of their own without applying to the emperor. Again public disorder rose to such a pitch that the pope was obliged to check it lest it should go too far.

In the midst of these warlike tumults a new constitu- The tion, almost a new state, was being set up in Rome. oS of During the conflict with Philippicus, the Monothelite and "°™ heretical emperor who ascended the throne in 711, the Inber Pontificalis makes the first mention of the duchy of Rome (ducatus Romanae urbis), and we find the people struggling to elect a duke of their own. In the early days of the Byzantine rule the territory appertaining to the city was no greater than under the Roman empire. But, partly through the weakness of the government of Constantinople, and above all through the decomposi- tion of the Italian provinces under the Lombards, who destroyed all unity of government in the peninsula, this dukedom was widely extended, and its limits were always changing in accordance with the course of events. It was watered by the Tiber, and stretched into Tuscia to the right, starting from the mouth of the Marta, by Tolfa and Bleda, and reaching as far as Orte. Viterbo was a frontier city of the Lombards. On the left the duchy extended into Latium as far as the Garigliano. It spread very little to the north-east and was badly defended on that side, inasmuch as the duchy of Spoleto reached to within fourteen miles of the Salara gate. On the other side, towards Umbria, the river Nera was its boundary line.*

The constitution of the city now begins to show the

The first results of the conditions amid which it took shape. The | were always optimates, and guarded the interests of the constitu- separation of the civil from the military power has entirely | army. But the real chiefs of the bands or numerz were tion of disappeared. This is proved by the fact that, after the | the duces or tribunes, and under the Franks the latter a ie year 600, there is no further mention of the prefect. | became comites. These chiefs were styled magnificr 'His office still survived, but with a

gradual change of | consules, optimates de militia, often too judices de mili- functions, until, in the 8th century, he once more appears tia, since, as was the custom of the Middle Ages, they as president of a criminal tribunal. The constitution of wielded political and judicial as well as military authority. the duchy and of the new republic formed during the wars | The title of consul was now generally given to superior with the Lombards and the exarch was substantially of an | officers, whether civil or military. The importance of the aristocratico-military nature. At its head was the duke, | scholae militum began to decline in the 10th century; first elected by the emperor, then by the pope and the | towards the middle of the 12th they disappeared alto- people, and, as his strength and influence grew with gether, and, according to Papencordt, were last mentioned those of the commune, he gradualiy became the most | in 1145. It is probable that the scholae militum signified respected and powerful personage in Rome. The duke | local divisions of the army, corresponding with the city inhabited the palace of the Cesars on the Palatine Hill, | wards, which were twelve in number during the 10th and and had both the civil and the military power in his | 11th centuries, then increased to thirteen, and occasion- hands; he was at the head of the army, which, being | ally to fourteen. It is certain that from the beginning composed of the best citizens and highest nobility of | the army was distributed under twelve flags; after the Rome, was a truly national force. This army was styled | scholae had disappeared, we find it classified in districts, the felicissimus or florens exercitus Romanus or also the | which were subdivided into companies. The division of militia Romana. Its members never lost their citizen | cities into quarters, sestveri or rioni, corresponding with stamp; on the contrary they formed the true body of the | that of the army, and also with that of the municipal citizens. We find mention of other duces in Rome, but | government, was the common practice of Florence, Siena, these were probably other leaders or superior officers of | and almost all the Italian communes. But, while usually the army. Counts and tribunes are found in the subject | losing importance as the guilds acquired power, in Rome cities bound to furnish aid to the capital. In fact during | the insignificance of the guilds added to the strength of the pontificate of Sergius II. (844), when the duchy was | the regiont or rioni, which not only became part of the threatened by a Saracenic invasion, they were requested | army but finally grasped the

reins of government. This to send troops to defend the coast, and as many soldiers | was a special characteristic of the political constitution of as possible to the city. the Roman commune. The At that time the inhabitants of Rome were divided into We now come to a question of weightier import for The different four principal classes—clergy, nobles, soldiers, and simple | all desiring to form a clear idea of the Roman govern- senate eo. of citizens. The nobles were divided into two categories, | ment at that period. What had become of the senate! ee in Rone. first the genuine optimates, i.e., members of old and wealthy | It had undoubtedly lost its original character now that Ages. families with large estates, and filling high, and often | the empire was extinct. But, after much learned dis- hereditary, offices in the state, the church, and the army. | cussion, historical authorities are still divided upon the These were styled proceres and primates. The second | subject. Certain Italian writers of the 18th century— category comprised landed proprietors, of moderate means | Vendettini, for example—asserted with scanty critical but exalted position, mentioned as nobiles by Gregory L, | insight that the Roman senate did not disappear in and constituting in fact a numerous petty nobility and the | the Middle Ages. The same opinion backed by much bulk of the army. Next followed the citizens, ¢.e., the | learned research was maintained by the great German commercial class, merchants, and craftsmen, who, having | historian Savigny. And Leo, while denying the per- as yet no fixed organization and but little influence, were | sistence of the curia in Lombard Italy, adhered to simply designated as honesti cives. These, however, were | Savigny's views as regarded Rome. Papencordt did the quite distinct from the plebeians, plebs, vulgus popult, viri | same, but held the Roman senate to be no more than a humiles, who in their turn ranked above bondsmen and | curia. This judgment was vigorously contested, first by slaves. The honesti cives did not usually form part of the | Hegel and Giesebrecht, then by Gregorovius. These army, and were only enrolled in it in seasons of emergency. | writers believe that after the middle of the 6th century Nevertheless the army was not only national, but became | the senate had a merely nominal existence. According increasingly democratic, so that in the 10th century it | to Gregorovius its last appearance was in the year 579. included every class of inhabitants except churchmen and | After that date it is mentioned in no documents, and the slaves. At that period we sometimes find the whole | chroniclers

are either equally silent or merely allude to its people designated as the exercitus, those actually under | decay and extinction. In the 8th century, however, the arms being distinguished as the militia exercitus Romani. | terms senator, senatores, senatus again reappear. We See This again was divided into bands or "numbers," 2.¢., | find letters addressed to Pippin, beginning thus: Omnis 1tum,

regiments, and also, in a manner peculiar to Rome, into scholae militum. These scholae were associations derived from antiquity, gaining strength and becoming more general in the Middle Ages as the central power of the state declined. There were scholae of notaries, of church singers, and of nearly every leading employment; there were scholae of foreigners of diverse nationalities, of Franks, Lombards, Greeks, Saxons, &c. Even the trades and crafts began to form scholae. These were at first very feeble institutions, and only later gained importance and became guilds. As early as the 8th century there were scholae militum in the army, which was thus doubly divided. But we have no precise definition of their functions. 'They were de facto corporations with separate pro- perty, churches, and magistrates of their own. The latter

senatus atque univers. populi generalitas. When Leo III. returned from Germany he was met by tam proceres clert- corum cum omnibus clericis, quamque optimates et senatus, cunctague militia (see Anastasius, in Muratori, vol. iii. 198 c). But it has been noted that the senate was never found to act as g political assembly ; on occasions when it might have been mentioned in that capacity we hear nothing of it, and only meet with it in ceremonials and purely formal functions. Hence the conclusion that the term senator was used in the sense of noble, senatus of nobility, and no longer referred to an institution but only to a class of the citizens. Even when we find that Otho IIT. (who sought to revive all the ancient institutions of Rome) addressed an edict to the "Consuls and Senate of Rome," and read that the laws of St Stephen

were issued senatus decreto, the learned Giesebrecht merely remarks that no important changes in the Roman con- stitution are to be attributed to the consuls and senate introduced by ;Otho III. Thus for the next glimpse of the senate we must pass to the 12th century, when it was not only reformed, as some writers believe, but entirely reconstituted,

But in this case a serious difficulty remains to be dis- posed of. Gregorovius firmly asserts that the nobles acquired great power between the 7th and 10th centuries, not only filling the highest military, judicial, and ecclesias- tical offices, " but also directing the municipal government, presumably with the prefect at their head." He further adds : —"Notwithstanding the disappearance of the senate, it is difficult to suppose that the city was without govern- ing magistrates, or without a council." Thus, after the 7th century, the optimates at the head of the army were also at the head of the citizens, and "formed a communal council in the same manner in which it was afterwards formed by the banderesi."! Now, if the nobles were called senatores, and the nobility senatus, and if this body of nobles met in council to administer the affairs of the republic, there is no matter for dispute, inasmuch as all are agreed that the original senate must have had a different character from the senate of the Middle Ages. And, since the absence of all mention of a prefect after the 7th century is not accepted as a proof of his non-existence, and we find him reappear under another form in the 8th century, so the silence as to the senate after the year 579, the fresh mention of it in the 8th century, and its reappearance in the 12th asa firmly reconstituted body reasonably lead to the inference that, during that time, the ancient senate had been gradually transformed into the new council. Its meetings must have been held very irregularly, and probably only in emergencies when important affairs had to be discussed, previously to bringing them before the parliament or general assembly of the people. Historians are better agreed as to the sig- nificance of the term consul. At first this was simply a title of honour bestowed on superior magistrates, and retained that meaning from the 7th to the 11th century, but was then—as in other Italian cities—only given to the chief officer of the state.

During this period the Roman constitution was very simple. The duke, commanding the army, and the prefect, presiding over the criminal court, were the chiefs of the republic ; the armed nobility constituted the forces, filled all superior offices, and occasionally met in a council called

secretaries of state. When, on the constitution of the new empire, these ministers were declared to be palatine or imperial as well as papal officials, the primicerius and the secundicerius were also in waiting on the emperor, who sat in council with them, when in Rome. Next came the arcarius, or treasurer, the sacellarius, or cashier; the proto- scriniarvus, who was at the head of the papal chancery; the primus defensor, who was the advocate of the church, and administered its possessions. Seventh and last came the nomenclator, or adminiculator, who pleaded the cause of widows, orphans, and paupers. There were also some other officials, such as the vestiarius, the vicedominus or steward, the cubicularius or majordomo, but these were of inferior importance. They were ecclesiastics, but not bound to be in priest's orders. The first seven were those specially known as proceres clericorum and oftener still as judaces de clero, since they speedily assumed judicial functions and ranked among the chief judges of Rome. But as ecclesiastics they did not give decisions in criminal cases. Thus Rome had two tribunals, that of the judices de clero, or ordinarii, presided over by the pope, and that of the judices de militia, leaders of the army, dukes and tribunes, also bearing the generic title of consuls. First appointed by the exarch and then frequently by the pope, these decided both civil and criminal cases. In the latter they were sole judges under the presidency of the prefect.

The pope was thus at the head of a large administrative The popes powers that were continually and the

body with judicial and civil

on the increase, and, in addition to his moral authority Papal

over Christendom, was possessed of enormous revenues. So in course of time he considered himself the real repre- sentative of the Roman republic. Gregory II. (715-731) accepted in the name of the republic the submission of other cities, and protested against the conquest by the Lombards of those already belonging to Rome. He seemed indeed to regard the territory of the duchy as the patri- mony of the church. The duke was always at the head of the army, and, officially, was always held to be an imperial magistrate. But the empire was now powerless in Italy. Meanwhile the advance of the Lombards was becoming more and more threatening; they seized Ravenna in 751, thus putting an end to the exarchate, and next marched towards Rome, which had only its own forces and the aid of neighbouring cities to rely upon. To avoid being crushed by the brute force of a foreign nation unfit to rule, and only capable of oppression and pillage, it was necessary to make an energetic stand.

power.

the senate, though it had no resemblance to the senate of older times. In moments of emergency a general parlia- ment of the people was convoked. This constitution

Accordingly the reigning pope, Stephen II, (752-757), The popes appealed to Pippin, king of the Franks, and concluded appeal

: : 5 : to the with that monarch an alliance destined to inaugurate a Fishes

4)

Judices e clero,

differed little from that of the other Italian communes, where, in the same way, we find all the leading citizens under arms, a parliament, a council, and one or more chiefs at the head of the government.

But Rome had an element that was lacking elsewhere. We have already noted that, in the provinces, the admini- strators of church lands were

important personages, and exercised during the Middle Ages, when there was no exact division of power, both judicial and political fune- tions. It was very natural that the heads of this vast administration resident in Rome should have a still higher Standing, and in fact, from the 6th century, their power increased to such an extent that in the times of the Franks they already formed a species of papal cabinet with a share and sometimes a predominance in the affairs of the republic. There were seven principal administrators, but two of them held the chief power,—the primicerius notarioram and the secundicerius, z.e., the first and under eee

Gregorovius, Geschichte, vol. ii. p. 427-8 and note (2d ed.).

|

new epoch of the world's history. The pope consecrated Pippin king of the Franks, and named him patricius Lomanorum. This title, as introduced by Constantine, had no longer the ancient meaning, but now became a sign of lofty social rank. When, however, it was after- wards conferred on barbarian chieftains such as Odoacer and Theodoric, and then on the representative of the Byzantine empire in Italy, it acquired the meaning of a definite dignity or office. In fact the title was now given to Pippin as defender of the church, for the pope styled him at the same time patricius Romanorum and defensor or protector ecclesiae. And the king pledged himself not only to defend the church but also to wrest the exarchate and the Pentapolis from the Lombards and give them to Rome, or rather to the pope, which came to the same thing. This was considered as a restitution made to the head of the church, who was also the repre- sentative of the republic and the empire. And, to pre- serve the character of a restitution, the famous " donation of Constantine" was invented during this period (752—

X. — 99

for aid.

Donation of Pippin.

Charle- magne in Italy.

The papacy, the re- public, and the Franks.

RO

Pippin brought his army to the rescue (754-755) and fulfilled his promise. The pope accepted the dona- tion in the name of St Peter, and as the visible head of the church. Thus in 755 central Italy broke its connexion with the empire and became independent ; thus was in- augurated the tenporal power of the papacy, the cause of so much subsequent warfare and revolution in Rome.

Its first consequences were speedily seen. In 767 the death of Paul I. was followed by a fierce revolt of the nobles under Duke Toto (Theodoro) of Nepi, who by violent means raised his brother Constantine to the chair of St Peter, although Constantine was a layman and had first to be ordained. For more than a year the new pontiff was a pliable tool in the hands of Toto and of the nobles. But the genuine papal faction, headed by a few judices de clero, asked the aid of the Lombards and made a formidable resistance. Their adversaries were defeated, tortured, and put to death. Toto was treacherously slain during a fight. The pope was blinded and left half dead on the highway. Fresh and no less violent riots ensued, owing to the public dread lest the new pope, Stephen IV. (768-772), elected by favour of the Lombards, should give them the city in return. But Stephen went over to the Franks, whom he had previously deserted, and his succes- sor, Hadrian I. (772-795), likewise adhered to their cause, called the city to arms to resist king Desiderius and his Lombard hordes, and besought the assistance of Charle- magne. This monarch accordingly made a descent into Italy in 773, and not only gained an easy victory over Desiderius, but destroyed the Lombard kingdom and seized the iron crown. Entering Rome for the first time in 774, he confirmed and augmented the donation of Pippin by the addition of the dukedom of Spoleto. He returned several times to Italy and Rome, making new conquests and fresh concessions to Adrian I., until the death of the latter in 795.

The position of Rome and of the pope is now substan- tially changed. Duke, prefect, militia, and the people exist as heretofore, but are all subordinate to the head of the church, who, by the donations of Pippin

and Charle- magne, has been converted into a powerful temporal sovereign. Henceforth all connexion with Byzantium is broken off, but Rome is still the maiaspring of the empire, the Roman duchy its sole surviving fragment in Italy, and the pope stands before the world as representative of both, And, although it is difficult to determine how this came about, the pope is now regarded and regards him- self as master of Rome. In the year 772 he entrusts the vestiartus with judicial powers over the laity, ecclesiastics, freemen, and slaves nostrae Komanae reipublicae. He writes to Charlemagne that he has issued orders for the burning of the Greek ships employed in the slave trade, "in our city of Civita Vecchia" (Centumcell), and he always speaks of Rome and the Romans as "our city," "our republic," "our people." The donations of Pippin and Charlemagne are restitutions made to Saint Peter, the holy church, and the republic at the same time. It is true that Charlemagne held the supreme power, had an im- mensely increased authority, and actively fulfilled his duties as patricius. But his power was only occasionally exercised in Rome; it was the result of services rendered to the church, and of the church's continual need of his help ; it was, as it were, the power of a mighty and indispensable ally. The pope, however, was most tenacious of his own authority in Rome, made vigorous protest whenever rebels fled to Charlemagne or appealed to that monarch's arbitra- tion, and contested the supremacy of the imperial officials in Rome. Yet the pope was no absolute sovereign, nor, in the modern sense of the term, did any then exist. He asserted supremacy over many lands which continually

rebelled against him, and which, for want of an army of his own, he was unable to reduce to obedience without others' help. Neither did the republic acknowledge him as its head. It profited by the growing power of the pope, could not exist without him, respected his moral authority, but considered that he usurped undue power in Rome. This was specially the feeling of the nobles, who had hitherto held the chief authority in the republic, and, being still the leaders of the army, were by no means

willing to relinquish it. The Roman nobles were very different from other aristocratic bodies elsewhere. They were not, as they pretended, descendants of the Camilli and the Scipios, but neither were they a feudal aristocracy, inasmuch as the Teutonic element had as yet madesmall way among them. They were a mixture of different elements, national and foreign, formed by the special conditions of Rome. Their power was chiefly derived from:the high offices and large grants of money and land conferred on them by the popes ; but, as no dynasty existed, they could not be dynastic. Every pope agerandized his own kindred and friends, and these were the natural and often open adversaries of the next pontiff and his favourites. Thus the Roman nobility was powerful, divided, restless, and turbulent ; it was con- tinually plotting against the pope, threatening not only his power, but even his life; it continually appealed to the people for assistance, stirred the militia to revolt, and rendered government an impossibility. Hence, notwith- standing his immense moral authority, the pope was the effective head neither of the aristocracy, the army, nor of the as yet unorganized lower classes. The lord of vast but often insubordinate territories, the recognized master of a capital city torn by internecine feud and plots against himself, he needed the support of an effective force for his own preservation and the maintenance of the authority proffered him from all quarters. Hence the necessity of creating an empire of the West, after having snapped every link with that of the East. Thus the history of Rome is still, as in the past, a history of continual strife between pope, emperor, and republic ; and the city, while imbibing strength from all three, keeps them in perpetual tumult and confusion.

Leo III. (796-816) further strengthened the ties be- tween Charlemagne and the church by sending the former a letter with the keys of the shrine of St Peter and the banner of Rome. Charlemagne had already joined to his office of patrician the function of high justice. The new symbols now sent constituted him mzles of Rome and general of the church. The pope urged him to despatch an envoy to receive the oath of fealty, thus placing him- self, the representative of the republic, in the subordinate position of one of the bishops who had received the immunities of counts. And all these arrangements took place without the slightest reference to the senate, the army, or the people. Much resentment was felt, especially by the nobles, and a revolution ensued headed by the primicerius Paschalis

and the secundicerius Campulus, and backed by all who wished to liberate the city from the papal rule. During a solemn procession the pope was attacked and barbarously maltreated by his assailants, who tried to tear out his eyes and tongue (799). He was thrown into prison, escaped, and overtook Charle- magne at Paderborn, and returned guarded by ten of the monarch's envoys, who condemned to death the leaders of the revolt, reserving, however, to their sovereign the right of final judgment. Charlemagne arrived in December 800, and as high justice assembled a tribunal of the clergy, nobles, citizens, and Franks; he pronounced Leo to be innocent, and confirmed the capital sentence passed on the rebels. But through the intercession of the pope, who dreaded the wrath of the nobles, this was presently com-

[HISTORY.

w

Charle- magne crowned emperor.

Decline of the empire,

RO

muted into perpetual exile. And finally on Christmas day, in St Peter's, before an assemblage of Roman and Frankish lords, the clergy, and the people, the pontiff placed the imperial crown on Charlemagne's head and all proclaimed him emperor. :

Thus the new emperor was elected by the Romans and consecrated by the pope. But he was their real master and supreme judge. The pope existed only by his will, since he alone supplied the means for the maintenance of the temporal power, and already pretended to the right of controlling the papal elections. Yet Charlemagne was not sovereign of Rome ; he possessed scarcely any regalia there, and was not in command of the army; he mainly represented a principle, but this principle was the law which is the basis of the state. The pope still nominated the Roman judges, but the emperor or his miss¢ presided over them, together with those of the pope, and his decision was appealed to in last resort. lingian

times no mention is found of the prefect, and it would seem that his office was filled by the imperial missus, or legate, the judices de clero, and judices de militia. The power of the pope was now entangled with that of the republic on the one hand and that of the empire on the other. The consequent confusion of sacred and secular func- tions naturally led to infinite complications and disputes.

The death of Charlemagne in 814 was the signal for a fresh conspiracy of the nobles against the pope, who, dis- covering their design, instantly put the ringleaders to death, and was severely blamed by Louis for this violation of the imperial prerogative. While the matter was under dis- cussion the nobles broke out in fiercer tumults, both in Rome and the Campagna. At last, in 824, the emperor Lothair came to re-establish order in Rome, and proclaimed a new and noteworthy constitution, to which Pope Eugenius II. (824-27) gave his oath of adherence. By this the partnership of pope and emperor in the temporal rule of Rome and the states of the church was again confirmed. The more direct power appertained to the pope; the supreme authority, presidence of the tribunals, and final judgment on appeal to the emperor. The new constitu- tion also established the right of contending parties to select either the Roman or the Teutonic code for the settle- ment of their disputes. During the Carolingian period it is not surprising that the commune should have been, as it were, absorbed by the church and the empire. In fact it is scarcely mentioned in history throughout that time. And when, no longer sustained by the genius of its founder, the Frankish empire began to show signs of dissolution, the popes, finding their power thereby strengthened, began to assume many of the imperial attributes. Soon, however, as a natural consequence of the loss of the main support of the papacy, the nobles regained vigour and were once more masters of the city. Teutonic and feudal elements had now largely penetrated into their organization. The system of granting lands, and even churches and convents, as benefices according to feudal forms, becamie more and more general. It was vain for the popes to offer opposi- tion, and they ended by yielding to the current. The fall of the Frankish empire left all Italy a prey to anarchy, and torn by the faction fights of Berengar of Friuli and Guido of Spoleto, the rival claimants to the crowns of Italy and the empire. The Saracens were advancing from the south, the Huns from the north; the

popes had lost all power; and in the midst of this frightful chaos a way was opened for the rise of the republics. Anarchy was at its climax in Rome, but the laity began to overpower the clergy to such an extent that the judices de militia pre- vailed over the judices de clero. For a long time no imperial missi or legates had been seen, and the papacy

754-932. |

During the Caro- °

ME 787

positively fallen into the hands of certain beautiful women notorious for their evil life and depravity. The aristo- cracy alone gained strength ; now freed from the domina-

tion of the emperor, it continually wrested fresh privileges °

from the impotent.pontifis, and became organized as the ruling force of the republic. Gregorovius, notwithstand- ing his denial of the continuation of the senate after the 6th century, is obliged to acknowledge that it appeared to have returned to life in the power of this new baronage. And, although this body was now permeated with the feudal principle, it did not discard its ancient traditions. The nobles claimed to be the main source of the empire; they wished to regain the dignity and office of patricius, and to make it, if possible, hereditary in their families. Nothing is known of their system of organization, but it seems that they elected a chief bearing the title of consul, senator, princeps Romanorum, who was officially recognized by the pope, as a patricius presided over the tribunals, and was the head of the commune.

Theophylact was one of the first to assume this dignity. His wife Theodora, known as the senatrix, was one of the women then dominating Rome by force of their charms and licentiousness. She was supposed to be the concubine of Pope John X. (914-928), whose election was due to her influence. Her daughter Marozia, in all things her worthy rival, was married to Alberic, a foreign mercenary of un- certain birth who rose to a position of great influence, and, although an alien, played a leading part

in the affairs of the city. He helped to increase. the power of Theophylact, who seemingly shared the rule of the city with the pope. In the bloody war that had to be waged against the Saracens of southern Italy, and at the defeat of the latter on the Garigliano (916), Theophylact and Alberic were the Roman leaders, and distinguished themselves by their valour. They disappeared from the scene after this victory, but Marozia retained her power, and bore a son Alberic, who was destined to greater deeds. The pope found him- self caught in this woman's toils, and struggled to escape, but Marozia, gaining fresh influence by her marriage with Hugo, margrave of Tuscany, imprisoned the pontiff himself in Castle St Angelo (928). This fortress was the property of Marozia and the basis of herstrength. The unfortunate John died within its walls. Raised to the chair by Theodora, he was deposed and killed by her daughter. The authority of the latter reached its culminating point in 931, when she succeeded in placing her son John XI. on the papal throne. On the death of her second husband she espoused Hugo of Provence, the same who in 928 had seized the iron crown at Pavia, and now aspired to the empire. Dissolute, ambitious, and despotic, he came to Rome in 932, and, leaving his army outside the walls, entered Castle St Angelo with his knights, instantly began to play the tyrant, and gave a blow to Alberic his step-son, who detested him as a foreign intruder. This blow proved the cause of a memorable revolution ; for Alberic rushed from the castle and harangued the people, crying that the time was come to shake off the tyrannous yoke of a woman and of barbarians who were once the slaves of Rome. Then, putting himself at the head of the popu- lace, he closed the city gates to prevent Hugo's troops from coming to the rescue, and attacked the castle. The king fled; Marozia was imprisoned, Alberic proclaimed lord of the Romans, and the pope confined to the Lateran in the custody of his own brother. Rome was again an independent state, a republic of nobles. Rid of the temporal dominion of emperor and pope, and having expelled the foreigners with great energy and courage, it chose Alberic for its chief with the title of princeps atque omnium Romanorum senator. The tendency of the

was incredibly lowered. The election of the popes had | Roman republic to elect a supreme authority, first mani-

Renewed power

e aristo- cracy.

The revolt

of the Romans. Alberic at the head

of the commune,

788

of Alberic, Brancaleone, Crescenzio, Cola di Rienzo, and others. One of the many causes of this tendency may be traced to the conception of the new empire of which Rome was the original and enduring fountainhead. As Rome had once transferred the empire from Byzantium to the Franks, so Rome was surely entitled to reclaim it. The imperial authority was represented by the office of patri- cian, now virtually assumed by Alberic. That he gave the name of Octavian to his son is an additional proof of this fact. In the Eternal City the medizeval political idea has always the aspect of a resurrection or transformation of classic antiquity. This is another characteristic of the history of the Roman comniune.

Alberic's strength was due to his connexion with the nobility, to his father's valiant service against the Saracens at the battle of Garigliano, and to the militia under his command, on which everything depended amid the internal and external dangers now threatening the new state. As yet no genuine municipal constitution was possible in Rome, where neither the people nor the wealthy burghers engaged in industry and commerce had any fixed organization. All was in the hands of the nobles, and Alberic, as their chief, frequently convened them in council, although obliged to use pressure to keep them united and avoid falling a prey to their disputes. Hence the whole power was concentrated in his grasp ; he was at the head of the tribunals as well as of the army. The judices de clero and judices de militia still existed, but no longer met in the Lateran or the Vatican, under the presidency of emperor and pope or their missi. Alberic himself was their president ; and, a still more significant fact, their sittings were often held in his private dwelling. There is no longer

any mention of prefect or patricius. The papal coinage was inscribed with Alberic's name instead of the emperor's. His chief attention was given to the militia, which was still arranged in scholae, and it is highly probable that he was the author of the new division of the city into twelve regions, with a corresponding classi- fication of the army in as many regiments under twelve flags and twelve banderesi, one for every region. The organization of the scholae could not have been very dissimilar, but doubtless Alberic had some important motive for altering the old method of classification. By means of the armed regions he included the people in the forces. It is certain that after his time we find the army much changed and far more democratic. It was only natural that so excellent a statesman should seek the aid of the popular element as a defence against the arrogance of the nobles, and it was requisite to reinforce the army in order to be prepared for the attacks threatened from abroad. This change effected, Alberic felt prepared for the worst, and began to rule with energy, moderation, and justice. His contemporaries award him high praise, and he seems to have been exempt from the vices of his mother and grandmother.

In 933 Hugo made his first attack upon the city, and was repulsed. A second attempt in 936 proved still more unfortunate, for his army was decimated by a

ROM

fested in the case of Theophylact, was repeated in those | attack by that potentate.

[HISTORY.

At last, however, this inveter- ate foe withdrew from Rome, being summoned to the north by the victories of his rival Berengarius. But Alberic, after procuring the election of various popes who were docile instruments of his will, experienced a check when Agapetus IT. (946-955), a man of firmness and resource, was raised to the papal throne. The fortunes of Berengarius were now in the ascendant. In 950 he had seized the iron crown, and ruled in the Pentapolis and the exarchate. This being singularly painful to the pope, he proceeded to make alliance with all

those enemies of Berengarius preferring a distant emperor to a neighbouring and effective sovereign, with the Roman nobles who were discontented with Alberic, and with all who foresaw danger, even to Rome, from the extended power of Berengarius. And Agapetus recurred to the old papal policy, by making appeal to Otho I., whose rule in Germany was distinguished by a prestige almost comparable with that of Charlemagne.

Otho immediately responded to the appeal and descended into Italy ; but his envoys were indignantly repulsed by Alberic, and, being prudent as well as firm, he decided to wait a more opportune moment for the accomplishment of his designs. Meanwhile Alberic died in 954, and the curtain fell on the first great drama of the Roman republic. He had reigned for twenty-two years with justice, energy, and prudence; he had repelled foreign invaders, main- tained order and authority. He seems, however, to have realized that the aspect of affairs was about to change, that the work he had accomplished would be exposed to new dangers. These dangers, in fact, had already begun with the accession of an enterprising pope to the Holy See. The name of Octavian given by Alberic to his son leads to the inference that he meant to make his power hereditary. But, suddenly, he began to educate this son for the priesthood, and, assembling the nobles in St Peter's shortly before his death, he made them swear to elect Octavian as pope on the decease of Agapetus II. They kept their word, for in this way they freed themselves from a ruler. Possibly Alberic trusted that both offices might be united, and that his son would be head of the state as well as the church. But the nobles knew this to be a delusion, especially in the case of a nature such as Octavian's. The lad was sixteen years old when his father died, received princely honours until the death of Agapetus, and was then elected pope with the name of John XII. He had inherited the ungoverned passions of his grandmother Marozia and great-grandmother Theodora, but without their intelligence and cunning. His palace was the scene of the most scandalous licence, while his public acts were those of a baby tyrant. He conferred a bishopric on a child of ten, consecrated a deacon in a stable, invoked Venus and Jupiter in his games, and drank to the devil's health. He desired to be both pope and prince, but utterly failed to be either. Before long, realizing the impossibility of holding in check Berengarius, who still ruled over the

exarchate, he sought in 960 the aid of Otho I., and promised him the imperial crown, Thus the new ruler was summoned by the son of the man

pestilence. Thoroughly disheartened, he not only made peace, but gave his daughter in marriage to Alberic, thus satisfying the latter's desire to ally himself with a

by whom he had been repulsed. Otho vowed to defend Otho I. the church, to restore her territories, to refrain from crowned usurping thé power of the pope or the republic, and was °™P°™

royal house. But this union led to no conciliation with Hugo. For Alberic, finding his power increased, marched at the head of his troops to consolidate his rule in the Campagna and the Sabine land. On the death of his brother, Pope John XL, in 936, he controlled the elec- tion. of several successive popes, quelled a conspiracy formed against him by the clergy and certain nobles insti- gated by Hugo, and brilliantly repulsed, in 941, another

crowned on the 2d February 962 with unheard-of pomp and display.

Accordingly, after being extinct for thirty-seven years, the empire was revived under different but no less diffi- cult conditions. The politico-religious unity founded by Charlemagne had been dissolved, partly on account of the heterogeneous elements of which it was composed, and partly because other nations were in course of formation.

Rising import- ance

of the people.

Another revolu- tion.

933-999.]

Now too the feudal system was converting the officers of the | empire into independent princes, and the new spirit of communal liberty was giving freedom to the cities. Otho once more united the empire and the church,

Italy and Germany, in order to combat these new foes. But the difficulties of the enterprise at once came to light. John XII, finding a master in the protector he had invoked, now joined the discontented nobles who were conspiring | with Berengarius against the emperor. But the latter hastened to Rome in November 963, assembled the clergy, nobles, and heads of the people, and made them take an oath never again to elect a pope without his consent and that of his son. He also convoked a synod presided over by himself in St Peter's, which judged, condemned, and deposed Pope John and elected Leo VIII. (963-965), a Roman noble, in his stead. All this was done at the direct bidding of the emperor, who thus deprived the Romans of their most valued privilege, the right of choosing their own pope. But the people had now risen to considerable importance, and, for the first time, we find it officially represented in the synod by the plebeian Pietro, surnamed Imperiola, together with the leaders of the militia, which had also become a popular institution since Alberic's reign, It was no longer easy to keep the lower orders in sub- jection, and by their junction with the malcontent nobles they formed a very respectable force. On the 3d J anuary 964 they sounded the battle-peal and attacked the Vatican, where the emperor was lodged. The German knights repulsed them with much slaughter, and this bloodshed proved the beginning of an endless feud, Otho departed in February, and John XII, as the chosen pope of the Romans, returned with an army of followers and com- pelled the defenceless Leo VIII. to seek safety in flight. Soon afterwards Leo was deposed and excommunicated by a new synod, and many of his adherents were cruelly murdered. But on the 14th May 964 John suddenly expired ; the Romans, amid violent struggles and tumults, resumed their rights, elected Benedict V. and procured his consecration in spite of the emperor's veto, Otho now

ROME

_to the guilds and the people. _and people had made common cause in Rome; but this harmony was soon to be interrupted. The feudal spirit

| the pedanei. | Franks, and when the edict of Lothair (824) granted

appeared at the head of an army, committed fresh slaughter, besieged the city, reduced it by famine, and, after holding a council which deposed

Benedict and sent him a prisoner to Hamburg, restored Leo VIII. to the papal throne.

But, although the emperor thus disposed of the papacy at hiswill, his arbitrary exerciseof powerroused a long and obsti- nate resistance, which had no slight effect upon the history of the commune. Leo VIII. died in 965, and the imperial party elected John XIII. (965-972). Upon this the nobles of the national party joined the people, and there was a general revolt. 'The nobles were led by Pietro, prefect of Rome. As we have noted, this office seemed to be extinct during the Carolingian rule, but we again meet with it in 955, after an interval of a century and a half. The leaders of the people were twelve decarcont, a term of unknown derivation, but probably indicating chiefs of the twelve regions (dodecarchi, dodecarconi, decarcont). The new pope was seized and confined, first in Castle St Angelo, then in a fortress in the Campagna. But the emperor quickly marched an army against Rome, and this sufficed to produce a reaction which recalled the pope (November 966), sent the prefect into exile, and put several of the rebellious nobles to death. And shortly after the emperor sacked the city. Many Romans were exiled, some tortured, others, including the twelve decarconi, killed. John XIII. died in 972 and Otho in 973.

All these events clearly prove how great a change had now taken place in the conditions of Rome. The people (plebs) had made its appearance upon the stage ; the army had become democratic; the twelve regions were regularly organized under leaders. Opposed to them stood the

nobles, headed by the prefect, also a noble, precisely as in

Florence the nobles and the podesta were later opposed So far, it is true, nobles

had made its way among the Roman aristocrats, had

| Split them into two parties and diminished their strength.

It was now destined to spread, and, as it was always

| vigorously detested and opposed b the people elsewhere g y pp Ne peop

in Italy, so the same consequence was inevitable in Rome.

Another notable change, and a subject of unending con- Judices | troversy, had also occurred in the administration of justice. "tivi.

So far there were the judices de clero, also known as ordinary or palatine judges, and the judices de militia, also styled consules or duces. These judges generally formed a court of seven, three being de clero, four de militia, or vce versa, under the presidency of the papal or imperial missi. In criminal cases the judices de militia had the prefect or the imperial missus for their president. But there was a third order of judges called pedanei, a consulibus creati. It seems clear that the duces, being distributi per judicatus, found themselves isolated in the provinces, and to obtain assistance nominated these pedanei, who were legal experts. In Rome, with its courts of law, they were less needed, but possibly in those sections of the city where cases of minor importance were sub- mitted to a single magistrate reference was made to But many changes were made under the

free choice of either the Roman or Germanic law, and the duces were replaced by comites and gastaldiones, chiefly of German origin, the use of legal experts became increas- ingly necessary. And the custom of employing them was the more easily diffused by being already common among the Franks, whose scabint were legal experts acting as judges, though not qualified to pass sentence. Thus the pedanei multiplied, came to resemble the scabini, and were designated judices dativi (a magistratu dati) or simply dativi. These were to be found in the exarchate in 838, but not in Rome until 961, when the judices de militia had ceased to exist. The great progress of the German legal procedure may then have contributed to the forma- tion of the new office.

Meanwhile Pope John XIII. had been succeeded by Benedict VI, (973-974) and Otho I. by his son Otho IL, a youth of eighteen married to the Byzantine princess Theophano. Thereupon the Romans, who had

supported the election of another pope, and were in no awe of the new emperor, rose to arms under the command of Crescenzio, a rich and powerful noble. They not only seized Benedict VI. by force, but strangled him in Castle St Angelo. The national and imperial parties then elected several popes who were either exiled or perse- cuted, and one:of them was said to be murdered. In 985 John XV. was elected (985-996). During this tur- moil, the national party, composed of nobles and people,*

led by Giovanni Crescenzio, son of the other Crescenzio Giovanni mentioned above, had taken complete possession of the Cres- This Crescenzio assumed the title of patri- °¢22°-

government. cian, and sought to imitate Alberic, although far his inferior in capacity. Fortunately for him the reigning pope was a detested tyrant, and the emperor a child entirely guided by his mother. But the new emperor Otho ITI. was backed by a powerful party, and on coming to Rome in 996 was able, although only aged fifteen, to quell the rebellion, oust Crescenzio from public life, and elect as successor to John XV. his own cousin, Pope Gregory V. (996-999). But this first German pope sur- rounded himself with compatriots, and by raising them to lofty posts even in the tribunals excited a revolt that

Otho III.

The second Giovanni Cres- cenzio.

790

drove him from the throne (29th September 996). Cres- cenzio, being master of Castle St Angelo, resumed the title of patrician or consul of the Romans, expelled the Ger- man judges, reconstituted the government, prepared his troops for defence, and created a new pope. But the following year Otho III. came to Rome, and his party opened the gates to him. Although deserted by nearly all his adherents, Crescenzio held the castle valiantly against its besiegers. At last, on the 29th April 998, he was forced to make terms, and the imperialists, violating their pledges, first put him to torture and then hurled him from the battlements. Gregory V.

dying shortly after these events, Sylvester II., another German, was raised to the papacy (999-1003).

Thus Otho III. was enabled to establish his mastery of Rome. But, as the son of a Greek mother, trained amid Greek influences, his fantastic and contradictory nature seemed only to grasp the void. He wished to reconstitute a Romano-Byzantine empire with Rome for his capital. His discourse always turned on the ancient republic, on consuls and senate, on the might and grandeur of the Roman people ; and his edicts were addressed to the senate and the people. The senate is now constantly mentioned, and its heads bear the title of consuls. The emperor also gave renewed honour to the title of patrician, surrounded himself with officials bearing Greek and Roman designa- tions, and raised the prestige of the prefect, who, having now almost the functions of an imperial vicar, bore the eagle and the sword as his insignia. Nevertheless Otho III. was thoroughly German, and during his reign all Germanic institutions made progress in Rome. This was particularly the case with feudalism, and Sylvester IT. was the first pope to treat it with favour. Many families of real feudal barons now arose. The Crescenzii held sway in the Sabine hills, and Preeneste and Tusculum were great centres of feudalism in the 11th century. The system of feudal benefices was recognized by the church, which made grants of lands, cities, and provinces in the feudal manner. The bishops, like feudal barons, became actual counts. And, in consequence of these changes, when the emperor, as head of the feudal system, seeks to impose his will upon the church (which has also become feudal) and control the papal elections, he is met by the great question of the investitures, a question destined to disturb the whole world. Meanwhile the Roman barons were growing more and more powerful, and were neither submissive nor faith- ful to the emperor. On the contrary they resented his attitude as master of Rome, and, when he subjected Tivoli to the Holy See, attacked both him and the pope with so much vigour as to put both to flight (16th February 1001). Thereupon Rome again became a republic, headed by Gregory of Tusculum, a man of a powerful family claim- ing descent from Alberic.

By the emperor's death in January 1002 the race of the Othos became extinct, the papacy began to decline, as at the end of the Carolingian

period, and the nobles, divided into an imperial and a national party, were again predominant. They reserved to themselves the office of patrician, and, electing popes from their own ranks, obtained enlarged privileges and power. At the time when Ardoin, marquis of Ivrea, profiting by the extinction of the Othos and the anarchy of Germany, was stirring Italy in the vain hope of constituting a national kingdom, the Roman republic was being consolidated under another Giovanni Crescenzio, of the national faction. He was now elected patrician ; one of his kinsmen was invested with the office of prefect, and the new pope John XVIII. (1003-9) was one of his creatures. Although the power of Henry of Bavaria was then gaining ascendency in Germany, and giving strength to the imperialist nobles, Crescenzio

still remained supreme ruler of the city and the Campagna. Surrounded by his judges, the senators, and his kinsman the prefect, he continued to dispense justice in his own palace until his death in 1012, after ten years' rule. And, Pope Sergius IV. having died the same year, the counts of Tusculum compassed the election of Benedict VIII. (1012-24), one of their own kin. This pope expelled the Crescenzii, changed the prefect, and reserved the title of patrician for Henry II., whom he consecrated emperor on the 14th February 1014. A second Alberic, bearing the title of "eminentissimus consul et dux," was now at the head of the republic and dispensed placita in the palace of his great ancestor, from whom the counts of Tusculum were also descended.

The new emperor endeavoured to re-establish order in Henry Rome, and strengthen his own authority together with U.

that of the pope. But the nobles had in all things the upper hand. They were regularly organized under leaders, held meetings, asserted their right to nominate both pope and emperor, and in fact often succeeded in so doing. Even Henry II. himself was obliged to secure their votes before his coronation. The terms senate and senator now recur still more frequently in history. Never- theless, Benedict VIII succeeded in placing

his own brother, Romano, at the head of the republic with the title of 'consul, dux, and senator," thus making him

'leader of the nobles, who met at his bidding, and chief of

the militia and the tribunals. The prefect still retained his authority, and the emperor was by right supreme judge. But, a violent revolt. breaking out, the.emperor only stayed to suppress it and then went to Germany in disgust. The pope, aided by his brother, conducted the government with energy ; he awed the party of Crescenzio, and waged war against the Saracens in the south. But he died in 1024, and in the same year Henry II. was succeeded by Conrad II. There was now beheld a repetition of the same strange event that had followed the death of Alberic, and with no less fatal consequences. SBenedict's brother Romano, head of the republic, and still retaining office, was, although a layman, elected pope. He took the name of John XIX. (1024-33), and in 1027 conferred the imperial crown on Conrad the Salic, who, abolishing the Lothairian edict of 824, decreed that throughout Rome and its territory justice should be henceforth administered solely by the Justinian code. Thus, notwithstanding the spread of feudalism and Germanic procedure, the Roman law triumphed through the irresistible force of the national character, which was already manifested in many other ways.

Meanwhile John XIX. was succeeded by his nephew, Benedict IX. (1033-45), a lad of twelve, who placed his own brother at the head of the republic. Thus church and state assumed the aspect of hereditary possessions in the powerful house of the counts of Tusculum. But the vices and excesses of Benedict were so monstrous that the papacy sank to the lowest depth of corruption; there followed a series of tumults and reactionary attempts, and so many conflicting elections that in 1045 three popes were struggling for the tiara in the midst of scandal and anarchy. The streets and neighbourhood of Rome swarmed with thieves and assassins; pilgrims were plundered ; citizens trembled for their lives; and a hundred petty barons threatened the rival popes, who were obliged to defend themselves by force. This state of things lasted until Henry III. came to re-establish order. He appointed a synod to depose the three popes, and then, with the consent of the wearied and anarchy-stricken

Romans, assuming the right of election, proposed a German, Clement IJ., who was consecrated at Christmas 1046. Henry III]. was then crowned, and also took the title of patrician. Thus the

Hilde- brand and the question of inves- titure.

998-1108.]

emperor was lord over church and state. This, however, stirred both people and pope against him, and led to the terrible contest of the investitures, although for the moment the Romans, being exhausted by past calamities, seemed not only resigned but contented.

In fact, the idea of reform and independence was already germinating in the church and was soon to become tenacious and irresistible. Hildebrand was the prompter and hero of this idea. He sought to abolish the simony and concubinage of the priesthood, to give the papal elections into the hands of the higher ecclesiastics, and to emancipate the church from all dependence on the empire. Henry III. procured the election of four German popes in succession, and Hildebrand was always at hand to inspire their actions and dominate them by his strength of intel- lect and still greater strength of will. But the fourth German pope, Victor II, died in 1057, and Henry III. had been succeeded in 1056 by the young Henry IV. under the regency of a weak woman, the empress Agnes. Hildebrand seized this favourable moment for trying his strength and procured the election of Stephen IX. (1057-58), a candidate he had long had in view. Stephen, however, died in 1058; the nobles instantly rose in rebellion ; and Gregory of Tusculum, who had assumed the patriciate, caused an incapable cousin to be named pope (Benedict X.). Upon this Hildebrand postponed his design of maintaining the papacy by the help of Italian potentates and had recourse to the empress. In a synod held at Siena with her consent Benedict was deposed and Nicholas II. (1059-61) elected in his stead. This pope entered Rome escorted by the troops of Godfrey of Tuscany, and, when also assured of help from Naples, assembled a council of one hundred and thirteen bishops (1059), who condemned the deposed pontiff and renewed the prohibition of simony and concubinage among the priesthood. Finally Nicholas instituted the college of cardinals, entrusting it with the election of the pope, who was in future to be chosen

from its ranks. The assent of the clergy and people was left purely formal. The decree also contained the proviso— "saving the honour and reverence due to the emperor"; but this too was an empty expression.

The new decree was a master-stroke of Hildebrand's genius, for by means of it he placed the papal. election in the hands of a genuine ecclesiastical senate and gave a monarchical form to the church. Backed by the Normans who were in Rome, and whose commander, Richard of Capua, did not scruple to strike off the heads of many recalcitrant nobles, Hildebrand and the pope could now pursue their work of reform. Nevertheless the nobles again revolted on the death of Nicholas II. in 1061, and declared their purpose of restoring to Henry IV. the patri- ciate and right of election; but Hildebrand, by speedily convoking the cardinals, procured the election of Alexander IL. (1061-73). This pope, although friendly to the empire, did not await the imperial sanction, but, protected by the Romans, at once entered the Lateran and put some other riotous nobles to death. The German bishops, how- ever, elected Honorius II., who had the support of the barons. Thus the city was split into two camps and a deadly civil war ensued, terminating, despite the vigorous resistance of the nobility, in the defeat of Honorius II. But the nobles persevered in the contest and were the real masters of Rome. By conferring the patriciate on the emperor, as their feudal chief, they hoped to organize them- selves under the prefect, who now, with greatly increased authority, presided over both the civil and criminal courts in the absence of the pope's representative. In a general assembly the Romans elected their prefect, whose investi- ture was granted by the emperor, while the pope elected another. Thus disorder was brought to a climax,

ROM E

Alexander died on the 21st April 1073, and thereupon Gregory Hildebrand was at last raised to the chair as pope Gregory VU.

Tol

VIL (1073-85). He reconfirmed his predecessors' de- crees, dismissed all simoniacal and non-celibate priests, and then in a second council (1075) forbade the clergy to receive investiture at the hands of laymen. No bishop

nor abbot was again to accept ring or crozier from king or emperor. Now, as ecclesiastical dignities included the possession of extensive benefices, privileges, and feudal rights, this decree gave rise to tremendous dispute and to fierce contest between the empire and the church. The nobles took a very decided part in the struggle. With Cenci, their former prefect, at their head, they rose in revolt, assailed the pope on Christmas day 1075, and threw him into prison. But their fear of the popular wrath compelled his speedy release; and he then decreed the excom- munication and deposition of the emperor who had declared him deposed. That monarch afterwards made submission to Gregory at Canossa (1077), but, again turning against him, was again excommunicated. And in 1081 he returned to Italy bringing the antipope Clement IIL, and besieged Rome for forty days. Assembling the nobles in his camp, he there arranged a new government of the city with prefect and senate, palatine judges, and other magis- trates, exactly similar to the existing government within the walls. He then took his departure, returned several times in vain, but at last forced his way into the city (March 1084), and compelled Gregory VII. to seek refuge in Castle St Angelo. The emperor was then master of Rome, established the government he had previously arranged, and, calling a parliament of nobles and bishops, procured the deposition of Gregory and the consecration of Clement III., by whom he was crowned in 1084. He then attacked and seized the Capitol, and assaulted the castle in order to capture the pope. But Robert Guiscard brought his army to the rescue. Emperor and anti-pope fled ; the city was taken, the pope liberated, and Rome reduced to ruin by fire and pillage. Upon this Gregory VIL, broken with grief, went away with the Normans, and died at Salerno on the 25th May 1085. He had separated the church from the people and the empire by a struggle that, as Gregorovius says, disturbed the deep sleep of the Middle Ages

Pope Paschal IJ. (1099-1118) found himself entirely Paschal

at the mercy of the tyrannous nobles who were alike II. masters of Rome, of its government, and its spiritual lord. As they were divided among themselves, all the pope could do was to side with one party in order to overcome the other. With the help of his own nephew Gualfredo, the prefect Pietro Pierleone, and the Frangipani, he was able to keep down

the Corsi, and hold the Colonna in check. Being compelled to repair to Benevento in 1108, he left Gualfredo to command the militia, Tolomeo of Tusculum to guard the Campagna, and the consuls Pierleone and Leone Frangipani, together with the prefect, in charge of the government. The consulship was no longer a mere title of honour. The consuls seem to have been elected, as at Ravenna, in imitation of those of the Lombard cities, and were at the head of the nobles and senate. The expressions " praefectus et consules," "de senatoribus et consulibus," are now of frequent occurrence. We have no precise knowledge of the political organization of the city at this moment ; but it was an aristocratic government, similar to that originally formed in Florence, as Villani tells us, with a senate and consuls. The nobles were so completely the masters that the pope, in spite of having trusted them with the government, could only return to Rome with the aid of the Normans. Being now absorbed in the great investiture question, he had recourse to a daring plan. He proposed to Henry V. that the bishops

New power of the people.

Popular revolu- tion. Recon- struction of senate and re- public.

792

should resign all property derived from the crown and depend solely on tithes and donations, while the empire should resign the right of investiture. Henry seemed disposed to accept the suggestion, but, suddenly changing his mind, took the pope prisoner and forced him to yield the right of investiture and to give him the crown (1111). But the following year the party of reform annulled in council this concession, which the pope declared to have been extorted by force. By the death of Countess Matilda in 1115 and the bequest of her vast possessions to the Holy See, the pope's dominions were greatly enlarged, but his authority as a ruler was nowise increased. Deeds of violence still continued in Rome; and then followed the death of the prefect Pietro. The nobles of the imperial party, joined with the people, wished to elect Pietro's son, also nephew to Tolomeo of Tusculum, who then held the position of a potent imperial margrave, had territories stretching from the Sabine mountains to the sea, was the dictator of Tusculum, master of Latium, and consul of the

Romans. The pope opposed this election to the best of his strength; but the nobles carried the day, and their new prefect received investiture from the emperor. Upon this the pope again quitted Rome, and on his return, two years later, was compelled to shut himself up in Castle St Angelo, where he died in 1118.

The popes were now the sport of the nobles whom they had aggrandized by continual concessions for the sake of peace. And peace seemed at hand when Innocent II. (1130-43), after triumphing over two antipopes, came to terms with Roger L, recognized him as king of Sicily, and gained his friendship and protection. tumults took place. In consequence of the division of the nobles neither party could overcome its foes without the aid of the people, which thus became increasingly powerful. Throughout Upper and Central Italy the cities were being organized as free and independent communes on a democratic basis, Their example was soon followed in the ancient duchy of Rome and almost in the immediate neighbourhood of the city. [Even Tivoli was converted into a republic. This excited the deepest jealousy in the Romans, and they became furious when this little city, profiting by its strong position in the Teverone valley, not only sought to annex Roman territory, but dared to offer successful resistance to the descendants of the conquerors of the world. In 1141 Tivoli openly rebelled against the mother city, and the pope sent the Romans to subdue it. They were not only repulsed, but ignominiously pursued to their own gates. Afterwards, returning to the assault in greater numbers, they conquered the hostile town. Its defenders surrendered to the pope, and he immediately concluded a treaty of peace without consulting either the people or the republic. 'The soldiery, still flushed with victory, were furious at this slight. They demanded not only the submission of Tivoli to the Roman people, but also permission to demolish its walls and dwellings and expel its population. Innocent II. refused consent to these excesses, and a memorable revolution ensued by which the temporal power of the papacy was entirely overthrown.

In 1143 the rebellious people rushed to the Capitol, pro- claimed the republic, reconstituted the senate, to the almost entire exclusion of the nobles, declared the abolition of the temporal power, issued coin inscribed to the senate, the people, and St Peter, and began to reckon time from the

day of the restoration of liberty. Arnold of Brescia was not, as has been incorrectly stated, the author of this revolution, for he had not yet arrived in Rome. It was the outcome of an historic necessity—above all of the renewed vigour of the people and its detestation of the feudal aristocracy. This body, besides being divided into an imperial and a national party, had almost excluded from

ROME

But now still graver .

[WISTORY.

the government the powerful baronage of the Campagna and the provinces. Also, as we have before noted, the Roman aristocracy was by no means an exclusive caste. Between the great aristocrats and the people there stood a middle or new nobility, which made common cause with the people, whose chief strength now lay in the army. This, divided into twelve and then into thirteen or four- teen regions, assembled under its banners all arm-bearing citizens. Thus the exercitus was also the real populus Romanus, now bent on the destruction of the temporal power. 'This purpose, originating in the struggle of the investitures, was the logical and inevitable result of the proposals of Paschal II., which, despite their rejection, found a loud echo in Italy. Lucius IT. (1144-45) tried to withstand the revolution by seeking Norman aid and throwing himself into the arms of the feudal party, but this only precipitated the course of events. The people, after having excluded nearly all aristocrats from the senate, now placed at its head the noble Giordano dei Pierleoni, who had joined the revolutionary party. They named him patrician, but without prejudice to the authority of the empire, still held by them in respect, and also conferred on him the judicial powers appertaining to the aristocratic and imperial office of prefect. The pope was requested to resign the temporal power, the regalia, and every other possession, and content himself with the tithes and offerings of the faithful according to the scheme of Paschal II. He indignantly refused, marched at the head of the nobles against the Capitol, but was violently repulsed, and received a blow on the head from a stone, which is supposed to have occasioned his speedy death on the 15th February 1145. Eugenius III. was then elected

(1145-53), but soon had to fly to Viterbo in quest of armed assistance, in consequence of the senate's resolve to forcibly prevent his consecration until he recognized the new state of things in the Eternal City.

It was at this moment that Arnold of Brescia arrived Arnold of His ideas, already well known in Italy, had Brescia.

in Rome. inspired and promoted the Roman revolution, and he now came to determine its method and direction. Born at Brescia in the beginning of the 12th century, Arnold had studied in France under the celebrated Abelard, who had instructed him in theology and philosophy, inspired him with a great love for antiquity, and stimulated his natural independence of mind. On returning to his native land he assumed the monkish habit, and proved the force and fervour of his character by taking part in all struggles for liberty. And, together with political reform, he preached his favourite doctrine of the necessary renunciation by the clergy of all temporal wealth. Expounded with singular eloquence, these doctrines had a stirring effect on men's minds, spread throughout the cities of northern Italy, and were echoed on all sides. It seems undoubted that they penetrated to Rome and helped to promote the revolution, so that Arnold was already present in spirit before he arrived there in person. It is known that at the Lateran council of 1139 Innocent II. had declared these doctrines to be inimical to the church and enjoined silence on their author. And, as at that time the party hostile to liberty was triumphant in Brescia, Arnold left his native place, crossed the Alps, and returned to France, where other struggles awaited him. He professed no anti-Catholic dogmas,—only maintaining that when the pope and the prelacy deviated from the gospel rule of poverty they should not be obeyed, but fearlessly opposed. In France, finding his master, Abelard, exposed to the persecutions of St Bernard, he assumed his defence with so much ardour that St Bernard directed the thunders of his eloquence against the disciple as well as the master, saying of the former, "He neither eats nor drinks,

1111-1155]

suffers hunger, and, being leagued with the devil, only thirsts for the blood of souls." In 1142 we find Arnold a wanderer in Switzerland, and then, suddenly reappearing in Italy, he arrived in Rome.

Three different elements entered into his nature and inspired his eloquence—an exalted and mystic tempera- ment, a great and candid admiration for classic antiquity added to an equal admiration for republican freedom independent of the church and the empire, and a pro- found conviction, derived from the Vaudois and Paterine doctrines, that the church could only be purified by the renunciation of temporal wealth. Finding Rome already revolutionized in accordance with his own ideas, he immediately began to preach there. His mystic exhorta- tions against the riches of the church had an inflammatory effect, while his classical reminiscences aroused the enthusi- asm of the Romans, and his suggestion that they should imitate the republican institutions of Upper Italy met the necessities of the time that had created the revolution. He urged the reconstitution of the ancient senate and senatorial order, which indeed was already partially accomplished, and of the ancient equestrian order, and the reconstruction and fortification of the Capitol. His pro- posed senate was a body somewhat resembling the com- munal councils of Upper Italy, his equestrian order a mounted force composed of the lesser nobility, since at Rome, as elsewhere, the lower classes had neither time nor means to form part of it. All his suggestions were accepted ; the citizens laboured strenuously on the fortifica- tion of the Capitol. The pope soon beheld the revolution spread beyond the walls, and several cities of the state proclaimed their independence. The barons of the Cam- pagna profited by the opportunity to act as independent sovereigns. Thus the whole domain of the church was threatened with dissolution. The pope marched towards Rome with his newly gathered army, but hoped to come to terms. The Romans in fact recognized his authority, and he in his turn recognized the republic. The office of patrician was abolished, and seenis to have been replaced by that of gonfalonier, and the prefect, answering to the podesta of the other republics, was revived. The senators received investiture from the pope, who returned to Rome at Christmas 1145.

The republic now seems to have been fully constituted. The senate was drawn from the lower classes and the petty nobility, and this was the special characteristic of the new revolution. In 1144 there were fifty-six senators, pro- bably four to each of the fourteen regions, but the number often varied. By the few existing documents of the period we notice that

the senators were divided into senatores consiliarw and ordinary senators. The former constituted a smaller council, which, like the credenza or lesser council found in other cities, consulted with the head or heads of the republic on the more urgent and secret affairs of the state. And, conjointly with the rest of the senators, it formed the greater council. Thus classic traditions were identified with new republican usages, and the commonwealth of Rome resembled those in other parts of Italy. But, of course, every republic had special local customs of its own. So the Roman senate had judicial as well as political attributes, and there was a curia senatus composed of senators and legal experts.

As was easily to be foreseen, the agreement with the pope was of short duration. The revolution could not be checked ; the Romans desired independence, and _ their spiritual lord fled to France, whence, in 1147, he pro- claimed a new crusade, while the Romans were employed in demolishing Tivoli, banishing its inhabitants, and waging war on other cities. Giordano Pierleone was gonfalonier and head of the republic, and Arnold, sup-

ported by the popular favour and the enthusiasm of the lower clergy, was preaching with even greater fervour than before. But the pope now re-entered Italy, pro- claimed Arnold a schismatic, and then advancing to Tusculum assembled an army in order to attack Rome. In this emergency the Romans applied to Conrad IIL, the first emperor of the house of Hohenstaufen ; and their urgent letters are clearly expressive of Arnold's theories and his medley of ancient and modern, sacred and profane, ideas. "Rome," so they said, "is the fountain of the empire confided to you by the Almighty, and we seek to restore to Rome the power possessed by her under Constantine and Justinian. For this end we conquered and destroyed the strongholds of the barons who, together with the pope and the Normans, sought to resist us. These are now attacking us on all sides. Haste to Rome, the capital of the world, thus to establish thy imperial sway over the Italian and German lands."

After long hesitation the king of the Romans at last replied to these appeals, stating that he would come " to re-establish order, reward the faithful, and punish the rebellious." These words promised ill. In fact Conrad had already arranged terms with the pope; but his life came to an end on the 15th February 1152.

He was succeeded by Frederick I. surnamed Barbarossa, Frederick

who took no notice of the numerous letters urging him to I. come and receive the empire from the Roman people, which alone had the right of conferring it. In accordance with his design of subduing all the independent cities, he made an agreement with the pope, in which he vowed to give no truce to the Romans, but subject them to their spiritual lord, whose temporal power should be restored. The pope, on his side, promised to crown him emperor. Thereupon the people again rose to arms, and Arnold broke off all negotiations with Eugenius III. The senate was re- organized, formed of one hundred members, and, according to the old Roman precedent, had two consuls, one for in- ternal and the other for external affairs. Frederick was a daring statesman, a valiant soldier in command of a powerful army, and was no friend of half measures. Accordingly the nobles ventured on reaction. Finally, to increase the gravity of the situation, an English pope, Hadrian IV., was elected (1154-59), who was also a man of strong and resolute temper. In fact, even before being able to take possession of the Lateran, he requested the Romans to banish Arnold, who, with greater eloquence than ever, was directing his thunders against the papacy. These utterances increased the wrath of Hadrian, who, encouraged by the knowledge that Frederick and his host were already in Italy, at last launched an interdict against Rome. It was the first time that a pope had ventured to curse the Eternal City. The interdict put a summary stop to the religious life of the inhabitants. Men's minds were seized with a sudden terror, and a fierce tumult broke out. Thereupon the senators, whose opposition to the pope was less courageous than that of the fallen magnates, prostrated themselves at his feet and implored pardon. But Hadrian demanded the expulsion of Arnold before consenting to raise the interdict. Arnold was therefore obliged to leave Rome. After having for nine years preached successfully in favour of liberty, after having been the moving spirit of the new

revolution, the new con- stitution, he was now abandoned by all, and forced to wander from castle to castle, in the hope of reaching some independent city capable of shielding him from the fierce enmity of the pope. Meanwhile Frederick I. had achieved his first victories in Lombardy, and, leaving ruined cities and bloodshed in his track, was rapidly advancing towards central Italy. The pope sent three cardinals to him, with a request for the capture and consignment of Arnold, who XX. — 100

7

M E

III. recognized and hailed as the legitimate pontiff, and Agree- the prefect of Rome again nominated by the pope, to ment be- whom the emperor restored the temporal power, acknow- eatin ledging him the independent sovereign of Rome and of anq the the ecclesiastical state, from Acquapendente to Ceprano. pope.

794 R O

had taken refuge in the castle of the Visconti of Campag- natico. Frederick without delay caused one of the Visconti to be seized and kept prisoner until Arnold was given up, and then consigned the latter to the papal legates. The pope in his turn gave the reformer into the hands of

[WISTORY.

Arnold's the prefect, Pietro di Vico, who immediately hanged his Frederick's troops accompanied the pope to Rome, where rxecu prisoner, burnt his body at the stake, and cast his ashes | the republic was forced to make submission to him. But, 'ion. into the Tiber. The execution took place in June 1155. | proudly conscious as it still was of its strength, its The exact date and place of it are unknown; we only | surrender wore the aspect of a voluntary concession, and

know that Arnold met his fate with great serenity and | its terms began with these words—"Totius populi Romani firmness. consilio et

deliberatione statutum est," &c. The senators,

But the Romans who had so basely deserted their | elected yearly in September, had to swear fealty to the champion would not give up their republic. Their | pope, and a certain proportion of nobles was included in envoys went to meet Frederick near Sutri, and made an | their number. On his return to Rome, Alexander received address in the usual fantastic style on the privileges of | a solemn welcome from all, but he had neither extinguished

the Roman people and its sole right to confer the imperial | nor really subdued the republic. On the contrary, men's

crown. But Frederick indignantly cut short their harangue, | minds were more and more inflamed by the example of

and they had to depart full of rage. He then continued | freedom displayed in the north of Italy. He died on the

his march, and, entering Rome on the 18th June 1155, was | 30th August 1181. 'The fact that between 1181 and forthwith crowned in St Peter's by the pope. Thereupon | 1187 there were three popes always living in exile proves

the Romans rushed to arms, and made a furious attack on | that the republic was by no means crushed. During the

the Leonine city and the imperial camp. A desperate | same period another blow was inflicted on the papacy by

battle went on throughout the day; and the knights | the marriage of Henry VI., son and successor to Frederick

proved that the equestrian order instituted at Arnold's | I., with Constance, sole heiress of the Norman line in suggestion was no empty sham. About a thousand | Naples. For thus the kingdom was joined to the empire Romans perished by the sword or by drowning, but their | and the popes were more than ever in the latter's power. fellow-citizens made such

determined preparations to | On the 20th December 1187 Clement IIL. (1187-91), being continue the struggle that Frederick, on the 19th June, | raised to the pontificate, made a solemn agreement with hastily retreated or rather fled, and was escorted as far | the Government of the Capitol before coming to Rome.

as Tivoli by the pope and the cardinals. After all, the | And this peace or concordia had the air of a treaty temporal power of the papacy was not restored, and the | between potentates of equal importance. Rome con-

The re- republic still survived in the form bestowed on it by | fronted the pope from the same standpoint from which public Arnold of Brescia. Its existence was in truth favourable | the Lombard cities had confronted the emperor after a rather than injurious to Frederick, whose aim was to rule Legnano. 'This treaty, the basis of the new constitution,

over Rome and treat the bishops as his vassals. He had not yet discerned that his best policy would have been to use the republic as a lever against the pope. The latter, with keener acumen, while remaining faithful to the feudal party in Rome, made alliance with the communes of Lombardy and encouraged them in their resistance to the emperor. Hadrian IV. died in 1159, and the national party elected Alexander ITI. (1159-1181), who energetic- ally opposed the pretensions of Frederick, but, having to struggle with three antipopes successively raised against him by the imperial party, was repeatedly driven into exile. During these schisms the senate quietly carried on the government, administered justice, and made war on some neighbouring cities and barons. An army compris- ing many nobles of the national party marched against Tusculum, but found it defended by several valiant officers and a strong band of German soldiery, who, on the

was confirmed on the last day of May 1188 (Anno XLIV. of the senate). It begins with these words: —"Concordia inter Dominum Papam Clementem III. et senatores populumque Romanum super regalibus et aliis dignitatibus urbis." The pope was recognized as supreme lord, and invested the senators with their dignity. He resumed the privilege of coinage, but allowed one-third of the issue to be made by the senate. Almost all the old 'pontifical rights and prerogatives were restored to him.

The pope might employ the Roman militia for the defence of his patrimony, but was to furnish its pay. 'The rights of the church over Tivoli and Tusculum were confirmed ; but the republic reserved to itself the right of making war on those cities, and declared its resolve to dismantle and destroy the walls and castle of Tusculum. In this under- taking the pope was to co-operate with the Romans, even should the unhappy city make surrender to him alone.

29th May 1167, inflicted on the Romans so severe a defeat that it is styled by Gregorovius the Cannz of the Middle Ages. Shortly afterwards the emperor arrived in Rome with his antipope Paschal III., and Alexander had to fly

From all this it is clear that the church had been made Rome independent of the empire, and that the republic, despite in its numerous concessions, was by no means subject to the ("

j : th 3 church. The pope, in fact, had obtained liberty of rire

before him to Benevento. 'Then, at last, Frederick came to terms with the republic, recognized the senate, which accepted investiture at his hands, re-established the pre- fecture as an imperial office, and bestowed it on Giovanni, son of Pietro di Vico. He then hastily departed, with- out having advanced outside the Leonine city.

Meanwhile Pope Alexander continued the crafty policy of Hadrian and with better success, for the Lombard cities had now formed a league and inflicted a signal defeat on the emperor at Legnano on the 29th May 1176. One of the results of this battle was the conclusion of an agree- ment between the pope and the emperor, the latter resigning his pretensions on Rome and yielding all that he had denied to Hadrian. And by the treaty of Venice (Ist August 1177) the antipope was forsaken, Alexander

election, and Frederick I, by resigning the investiture of the prefect, had virtually renounced his claim to imperial power in Rome. The republic had no patrician nor any other imperial magistrate, and preserved its independence even as regarded the pope, who merely granted investiture

to magistrates freely chosen by the people, and had no legislative nor administrative power in the city. His temporal dominion was limited to his great possessions, to his regalia, to a supreme authority that was very indefinite, and to a feudal authority over the barons of the Campagna and many cities of a state that seemed ever on the point of dissolution. The senate continued to frame laws, to govern, and to administer justice. The army carried on the wars of the republic, as we see by the tragic fate of Tusculum, which was razed to the ground on the 19th

The nobles re-enter the senate.

Popular revolu- tion and counter- revolu- tion of the aris- tocracy.

The office of pretect becomes heredi- tary.

Innocent I.

elects the senate,

1155-1235. |

April 1191. Thus the powerful counts of Tusculum disappeared ; they sought refuge in the Campagna, and according to all probability the no less potent family of the Colonna sprang from their line. In consequence of these events, the nobles realized that the papacy sought to reduce them to vassalage. And, seeing that the republic remained firmly established and able to help them, they began to adhere to it and succeeded in obtaining admission to the new senate. In fact, whereas since 1143 plebeians and petty nobles had prevailed in its ranks, nobles of ancient descent are now found outnumbering the knights and burghers. But in 1191 this state of things caused a sudden popular outbreak which abolished the aristocratic senate and gave the headship of the republic to a single senator, swummus senator, named Benedetto "Carissimus" or "Carus Homo" or "Carosomo," of unknown, but undoubtedly plebeian, origin. During the two years he remained in office this personage stripped the pope of his revenues, despatched justitiari even to the provinces, and with the aid of the parliament and other popular assemblies promulgated laws and statutes. But he was overthrown by a counter-revolution, and

Giovanni Capoccio of the party of the nobles became senator for two years, and had been succeeded by one of the Pierleoni when, in 1197, a fresh revolution re-established a senate of fifty-six members, chiefly consisting of feudal barons in high favour with Henry VI., who had revived the imperial faction in Rome. But this emperor's life ended the same year as the pope's, in 1198, and the new pontiff Innocent III. (1198-1216) began to make war on the nobles, who were again masters of the republic. Their leader was the prefect Pietro di Vico. Owing to the revolution of 1143 most of the prefectorial attributes were now vested in the senate; nevertheless Pietro still retained a tribunal of police both within and without the city. But his main strength was derived from the vast possessions of the Vico family, in which the office of prefect now became hereditary. Very soon, however, these prefects of Vico were chiefly regarded as the great feudal lords of Tuscia, and the independent municipal office lost its true character. Then the popes made a point of according great pomp and dignity to this nominal prefect, in order to overshadow the senator, who still represented the independence of the republic and had assumed many of the attributes wrested from the prefect.

But Innocent IIT, dissatisfied with this state of things, contrived by bribing the people to arrogate to himself the right of electing the senator, who had now to swear fealty and submission to the pope, and also that of nominating the provincial justitiara, formerly chosen by the Govern- ment of the Capitol. This was a deadly blow to the republic, for the principal rights of the people, i.e., the elec- tion of pope and emperor, prefect and senate, were now lost. The general discontent provoked fresh revolutions, and Innocent III. employed all his political dexterity to ward off their effects. But shortly afterwards the people made a loud outcry for a senate of fifty-six members ; and the pope, again making a virtue of necessity, caused that number to be chosen by twelve mediani specially named by him for the purpose. Even this did not calm the popular discontent, which was also stirred by other dis- putes. The consequence was that when, six months later, the pope again jelected a single senator the Romans rose to arms, and in 1204 formed a Government of Buonz Uomini in opposition to that created by the pope. But an amicable arrangement being concluded, the pope once more nominated fifty-six

senators ; and when, soon after, he again reduced them to one, the people were too weary to resist (1205). Thus the Capitol was subdued, and Innocent IIT. spent his last years in tranquillity.

ROME

795

On the 22d November 1220 Honorius IIL. (1216-27) conferred the imperial crown on Frederick II., who con- firmed to the church the possession of her former states, of those bequeathed to her by countess Matilda, and even of the March of Ancona. But it was soon seen that he sought to dominate all Italy, and was therefore a foe to be dreaded. The successor of Honorius, Pope Gregory IX. (1227-41) was speedily insulted and put to flight by the Ghibelline nobles, whose courage had revived, and the republic began to subdue the Latian cities on its own account. Peace was several times made and unmade by pope and people; but no enduring harmony was possible between them, since the former wished to subject the entire state to the church, and the latter to escape from the rule of the church and hold sway over "the universal land from Ceprano to Radicofani" formerly belonging to the duchy. Accordingly the Roman people now appointed judges, imposed taxes, issued coin, and made the clergy amenable to secular tribunals. In 1234 the senator Luca Savelli published an edict declaring Tuscia and Campania territories of the republic, and sent judges thither to exact an oath of obedience. He also despatched the militia to the coast, where it occupied several cities and erected fortresses ; and columns were raised everywhere inscribed with the initials 8. P.Q.R. The pope, unable to prevent but equally unable to tolerate these acts, fled from Rome, hurling his anathema against Savelli, "et omnes illos con- siliarios urbis quorum consilio," &c. The Romans sacked the Lateran and the houses of many cardinals, and marched on Viterbo, but were driven back by the papal troops. When Savelli left office and Angelo Malabranca was elected in his stead, the people made peace and sub- mission in 1235, and were obliged to give up their preten- sions of subjecting the clergy to ordinary tribunals and the urban territory to the republic. Thus matters were virtually settled on the footing established

by Innocent IIL, thanks to the aid given to the pope by Frederick IL., who had been one of the promoters of the rebellion.

It may appear strange that, at this period of their history, the Romans, after showing such tenacious adher- ence to the republic and senate, should have accepted the rule of a single senator without rushing to arms, and passed and repassed from one form of government to another with such surprising indifference. But on closer examination it is plain that these changes were greater in appearance than reality. We have already seen, in treat- ing of Carosomo, how the single senator convoked the people in parliament to pass sanction on the laws. But, whenever there is only one senator, we also continually meet with the expression "consilium vel consilia urbis." It is evident that when, instead of laws to be approved in parliament by a simple placet or rejected by a non-placet, matters requiring consideration had to be discussed, the senator convoked a much smaller council, consisting only of the leaders of the people. These leaders were the heads of the twelve or thirteen regions, of the guilds, now becoming organized and soon to be also thirteen in number, and of the militia. As in the other Italian republics, all these associations had been formed in Rome.

The senator therefore held consultation with the leading men of the city; and, although, especially at first, these meetings were rather loosely organized, it is clear that they took the form of two councils—one numerous (con- siglio maggtore), the other limited (consiglio minore or speciale), co-operating with and forming part of the first. Such was the prevailing custom throughout Italy at the time when Roman institutions most nearly resembled those of the other republics. We already know that, from the date of Arnold's reforms, the senate, with its junta of counsellors, had been divided into two parts, forming when

The republic regains

independ- ence,

The republic submits to the people.

Formation of the greater and lesser councils,

united a species of greater council. Therefore the transition from a senate divided into two parts to the greater and lesser councils must have been very easy and natural. And, seeing that later, when the nomination of a single senator had become a constant practice, the meet- ings of the two councils are frequently mentioned without the slightest remark or hint as to their origin, it is clear that they had been gradually formed and long established. Not long after the revolution of 1143 the grandees sought to re-enter the senate; and the popes themselves, partly from dread of the people and partly to aggrandize their own kindred, contributed to build up the power of a new and no less turbulent nobility. This class, arising between the 12th and 13th centuries, was composed of families newly created by the popes, together with remnants of the old aristocracy, such as the Frargipani, Colonna, &c. These nobles, regaining possession of the senate, so com- pletely eliminated the popular element that, when the popes again opposed them, and, obtaining from the parlia- ment the right of electing the senators, adopted the expedient of appointing one only, the senator was always chosen from the ranks of the nobles. And then the people, unable and unwilling to renounce republican forms, replaced their suppressed senate by a greater and a lesser council. This was an easy task—a natural consequence of the fact that the people now began to constitute the real strength of the republic. Later, with an increasing detestation for their nobility, the Romans decreed that. the single senator should be of foreign birth, and, as we shall see, chose Brancaleone in the middle of the 13th century. Thus, after a long series of frequent changes and revolu- tions, the Roman republic became a commonwealth, with an increasing resemblance to those of the other Italian cities. The people were organized and armed, the guilds almost established, the two councils gradually constituted, and the aristocracy, while retaining special local character-

in the hope of conciliating both factions by simultaneously raising them to power. Afterwards one only was elected, alternately an Orsini and a Colonna, then again two, and so on. But all these changes failed in their

aims, since the struggle between emperor and pope exasperated party feeling in Rome. The political genius of Frederick might have wrought great harm to the city had not his mind teemed with contradictory ideas. Although desirous to emancipate the state from the church, he was opposed to the communal democracy, which was then the chief strength of the secular state in Italy. While combating the church and persecuting her defenders, he yet sent heretics to the stake ; although excommunicated, he undertook a crusade ; he feasted at his table philosophers, sceptic and atheist poets, bishops, and Mussulmans; he proclaimed anti-Christian the possession of wealth by the church, yet made lavish gifts to altar and monastery. Thus, although he had a strong party in Rome, it seemed to dissolve at his approach, inasmuch as all feared that he might abolish the statutes and liberties of the commune. It fact, when he advanced towards Rome on the death of Gregory IX. in 1241 he was energetically repulsed by the people, and later even by Viterbo, a city that had always been faith- ful to him. But after he had withdrawn his adherents gained strength and put to flight his opponent, Innocent IV. (1243-54), the newly elected pope, who then from his asylum in France hurled an excommunication against him. Frederick's death in December 1250 deter- mined the fall of the Ghibelline party and the close of the imperial epoch in Italy. 'The pope instantly returned to Rome with the set purpose of destroying the power of the Hohenstaufens. This was no longer difficult when, by the decease of Conrad IV. (1254), the child Conradin became the last legitimate representative of that line, and negotia- tions were already on foot for placing the Angevins on the Neapolitan throne.

[HISTORY.

The istics, assumed its definitive shape. It is not surprising The republic meanwhile preserved its independence Roman to find that Rome, like other Italian cities, now possessed | against the pope, who, among other concessions, had statutes. statutes of its own. There has been much controversy on | entirely given up to it the right of coinage. Never- this point. Certain writers had alluded to a statute of 1246. | theless, being much harassed by the factiousness of the As no one, however, could discover any statute of that date, | nobility, it was obliged in 1252 to decide

on the election others decided that it had never existed. A statute of 1363 | of an alien senator armed with ample powers, precisely as was recently published by Professor Camillo Re, who asserted | other communes gave the government into the hands of a it to be the first and most ancient that Rome had possessed. | podest'. Accordingly a Bolognese noble, Brancaleone degli Branca- But the still more recent researches of Messrs La Mantia | Andald, count of Casalecchio, and a Ghibelline of much pa é ao egli An- and Levi prove that Professor Re's assertions were some- | energy and talent, was invited to Rome. But before gary the what too bold. There is certain evidence of a statutwm | accepting office he insisted on making definite terms. He first senatus existing between 1212 and 1227, of a statutwm | desired to hold the government for three years; and this, foreign vel capitulare senatoris vel senatus of 1235, followed in | although contrary to the statutes, was granted. Further, to Senator 1241 by a statutum urbis. This brings us very near to | ensure his personal safety, he demanded that many scions the statute of 1246 mentioned by Vitale and others. So it | of the noblest Roman houses should be sent as hostages to is well ascertained that, in the first half of the 13th century, | Bologna ; and to this also the republic consented. Then, Rome possessed statutes at large composed of older | in August 1252, he came with his judges and notaries, limited statutes. The consuls of the trade guilds were | made oath to observe justice and the laws, and began to from 1267 regular members of the councils; and the | govern. He was head of the republic in peace and in war, merchants' guild held general meetings in 1255. Its | supreme judge and captain in chief. He nominated the statutes were confirmed in 1296 by the senator Pandolfo | podestas of subject territories, despatched ambassadors, Savelli, and the compilation of these, published in 1880 | issued coin, concluded treaties, and received oaths of by Signor Gatti, refers to 1317. obedience. The pope, who was then at Perugia, was Frede- Meanwhile the struggle between Frederick II. and the | greatly afflicted by the arrival of this new master, but, a Pe pope was once more renewed. The former sought to domi- | despairing of aid from any quarter, was forced to make a a nate Italy, separate the state from the church, and repress | virtue of necessity. Thus Brancaleone was able to seize

the republics. The latter, although really hostile to the Roman free Government, joined it against the emperor, who on his side favoured the

republic of Rome and the nobles most adverse to the pope. Thus the new nobility, composed, as we have seen, of two different elements, was again split into a Guelf party headed by the Orsini and a Ghibelline party under the Colonna. And in 1238 it was deemed advisable to elect two senators instead of one,

the reins of power with a firm grasp. The parliament still met in the square of the Capitol, and the greater and lesser councils in the church of Ara Cceli. There were besides frequent assemblies of the college of Capitoline judges or assectamentum. Unfortunately, no records having been preserved of the proceedings of the Roman councils and parliament, little can be said of the manner in which affairs were conducted. Certainly Brancaleone's govern-

RO

ment was not very parliamentary. He convoked the councils as seldom as was possible, although he frequently assembled the people in parliament. The chief complaint made against him was of undue severity in the administra- tion of justice. He rendered the clergy amenable to secular tribunals, subdued the neighbouring cities of Tivoli, Palestrina, &c., and commanded in person the attacking force. But his greatest energy was directed to the repression of the more turbulent nobles who were opposed to him; and he soon made them feel the weight of his hand by hanging some, banishing others, and persecuting several more. But he too recognized the expediency of winning the popular favour. He was the first senator to add to his title that of captain of the people ("' Almae Urbis Senator Ill: et Romani Populi Capitaneus"). He befriended the people by promoting the organization of guilds after the manner of those of his native Bologna. There were already a few in Rome, such as the merchants' guild and that of the agriculturists, Bobacteriorum or Bovattari, who must have resembled the so-called mercanti di campagna or graziers of the present day, since no peasant guild existed in Italian republics. The merchants' guild, definitely established in 1255 under Brancaleone's rule, had four consuls and twelve councillors, held meetings, and made laws. The other guilds, thirteen in all, were organized much on the same plan. The admission of their heads into the councils of

the republic in 1267 shows how efficaciously their interests had been promoted by Brancaleone.

The death of Innocent IV. and the election of Alexander IV. (1254-61), who was milder and less shrewd than his predecessor, were favourable events for Brancaleone ; but he failed to check the growing discontent of the clergy and the more powerful nobles, who had received deadly injuries at his hands. And when, on the expiration of his three years' term of office, his re-election was proposed, his enemies rose against him, accused him before the sindacato, threw him into prison, and vehemently protested against the continuance of "foreign tyranny." His life was only spared on account of the hostages sent to Bologna. The next senator chosen was a Brescian Guelf, Emanuele de Madio, a tool of the nobles, who were now masters of the situation. But soon afterwards, in 1257, the guilds rose in revolt, drove the nobles from power, put the pope to flight, and recalled Brancaleone for another three years' term. He ruled more sternly than before, hung several nobles, and made alliance with Manfred, the representative of the Swabian party in Italy. This rendered him increasingly odious to the pope and procured his excom- munication. But, disregarding the thunders of the church, he marched against Anagni, the pope's birthplace, and Alexander was quickly obliged to humiliate himself before the senator of Rome. Brancaleone next set to work to destroy the fortified towers of the nobility, and in razing them to the ground ruined many of the adjacent dwell- ings. Accordingly, a considerable number of nobles became homeless exiles. In 1258, while engaged on the siege of Corneto, Brancaleone was attacked by a violent fever, and, being carried back to Rome, died on the Capitoline Hill. Thus ended the career of a truly remarkable statesman. He was succeeded by his uncle, Castellano degli Andald, who, lacking the political genius of his nephew, only retained office until the following spring (1259), in the midst of fierce and perpetual disturbances. Then the people, being bribed by the pope, joined with the nobles and drove him away. His life too was saved by having followed his nephew's shrewd plan of sending hostages to Bologna. Two senators of Roman birth were next elected ; and on the death of Alexander IV. a French pope was chosen, Urban IV. (1261-64), thus giving fresh predomin- ance in the church to the anti-Swabian policy. But the

1241-1277.]

ME TOF

internal disturbances of the city soon drove Urban to ° flight.

At this period the fall of the empire had induced many Italian republics to seek strength by placing their governments in the hands of some prince willing to swear respect to their laws and to undertake their defence against neighbouring states and the pope. In Rome the Guelfs and Ghibellines proposed various candidates for this office, and after many fierce quarrels ended by electing a com- mittee of bone homines, charged with the revision of the statutes, reorganization of the city, and choice of a senator. This committee sat for more than a year without nomi- nating any one, so, the Guelf party being now predominant, and all being wearied of this provisional state of things,

the majority agreed on the election as senator of Charles Charles of Anjou, who, at the pope's summons, was already pre- of Anjou He would defend S4tor

paring for the conquest of Naples. Rome against the pope, and the pope would defend Rome against him. By thus taking advantage of either's jealousy the citizens hoped to keep their republic intact. In fact, although Urban IV. had incited Charles to attack Naples, he was by no means willing to see him established as master in Rome. He accordingly declared that, if Charles really wished to obtain the Neapolitan crown, he must only accept the offered dignity pending the conquest of that kingdom. And he must likewise promise to recognize the supremacy of the pope over the senate. Charles soothed him with the amplest verbal promises, but in fact accepted the senatorship for life. In 1265, when Urban was succeeded by Clement IV. (1265-68), who as a Provengal was a subject of Charles, the latter entered Rome and was immediately made senator. Seven days Jater (28th June) he received the investiture of the Neapolitan kingdom, and in the following January its crown. On the 26th February 1266 the battle of Benevento was fought, and, the valiant Manfred being killed, the triumph of the Guelf Angevins in Italy was assured, Then, at the urgent command of the pope, Charles was forced to resign the senatorship in the May of

the same year. Two Romans were elected in his stead, but soon fell out with the pope, because the Guelf nobles again tried to exercise tyranny. The people, however, profited by these disturbances to rise on its own account, and formed a democratic government of twenty-six boni homines with Angelo Capocci, a Ghibelline, as its captain. By this

government Don Henry, son of Ferdinand III. of Castile, Don was elected senator ; and he came to Rome for the purpose Henry of

of promoting a Ghibelline and Swabian policy in favour of Conradin, who was preparing for conflict. The rule of the new senator was very energetic, for he kept down the clergy, subdued the Campagna, persecuted the Guelf nobles, made alliance with the Tuscan Ghibellines, forcibly drove back the troops of King Charles, who was advancing towards Rome, and gave a splendid reception to Conradin. But the battle of Tagliacozzo (23rd August 1268), followed by the murder of Conradin, proved fatal to the Ghibelline party. Charles was re-elected senator immediately after the battle, and the pope confirmed his powers for a term of ten years, after having already named him imperial vicar in Tuscany. On the 16th September Charles for the second time took possession of the Capitol, and ruled Rome firmly by means of vice-governors or vicars.

The Swabian line was now extinct, and in Charles's hands the Neapolitan kingdom had become a fief of the church. The empire had fallen so low as to be no longer formidable. Now therefore was the moment for treating with it in order to restrain Charles, and also for making use of the French king to keep the empire incheck. And this was the policy of Nicholas III. (1277-80), who hastened to extract advantageous promises from Rudolph

The

senate in the hands of the

popes.

Boniface VIII.

of Hapsburg, the new candidate for the imperial crown. In 1278, the ten years' term having expired, he deprived Charles of the senatorship and appointed Rudolph vicar of Tuscany. After declaring that he left to the people the right of electing the senator, he promulgated a new constitution (18th July 1278) which, while confirming the rights of the church over the city, prohibited the election of any foreign emperor, prince, marquis, count, or baron as senator of Rome. Thus the Colonna, Savelli, Orsini, Annibaldi, and other Roman nobles again rose to power, and the republic was again endangered and plunged in disorder. The Romans then gave the reconstitution of the city into the pope's hands by yielding to him the right of nominating senators, declaring, however, that this was a personal concession to himself, and not to the popes in general. So Nicholas proceeded to name senators, alternating a Colonna with an Orsini, or simultaneously choosing one of each faction. The same power over the senate was granted with the same restriction to Martin IV. (1281-85), and he at once re-elected Charles of Anjou. Thus, greatly to the disgust of the Romans, the Capitol was again invaded by French vicars, notaries, judges, and soldiery. But the terrible blow dealt at Charles's power by the Sicilian Vespers (31st March 1282) resounded even in Rome. The Orsini, backed by the people, rose to arms, massacred the French garrison, and quickly re-established a popular Government. Giovanni Cencio, a kinsman of the Orsini, was elected captain and defender of the people, and ruled the city with the co-operation of the senator and a counci! of priors of the guilds. This Government was of brief duration, for, although the pope had professed his willingness to tolerate the experiment, he quickly arranged fresh terms, and, forsaking Charles of Anjou, again nominated two Roman senators. Pope and king both died in 1285, and Nicholas IV. (1288-92), also holding sway over the senate, favoured the Colonna in order to curb the growing mastery of the Orsini. But thus there were two powerful houses instead of one. In fact Giovanni Colonna, when elected senator, ruled from the Capitol as an independent sovereign, conducted in person the campaign against Viterbo, and subjected that city to the republic on the 3d May 1291.

When one of the Gaetani, Boniface VIII. (1294-1303), was raised to the papal chair, the extent of the Colonnas' power became evident to all. Boniface opposed them in order to aggrandize his own kin, and they

showed equal virulence in return. The Cardinals Colonna refused to acknowledge him as the legitimate pope, and he excom- municated them and proclaimed a crusade against their house. Even after he had subdued them and destroyed Palestrina, their principal fief, the drama did not yet come toan end. Boniface had a very lofty conception of the church, and desired to establish her supremacy over the state. The king of France (Philip the Fair) believed, on the contrary, that the Angevin successes entitled him to fill the place in Italy vacated by the Swabians, and to play the master there. This led to a tremendous contest in which all the French sided with their king. And shortly afterwards a plot was hatched against the pope by the agents of France and the Colonna. These determined enemies of the pope met with much favour in Rome, on account of the general irritation against the Gaetani and the enormous power conferred on them by Boniface. Suffice it to say that they were now lords of the whole of lower Latium, from Capo Circeo to Ninfa, from Ceprano to Subiaco. Thus Sciarra Colonna and a Frenchman named Nogaret were able to fall on the pope at Anagni, insult him, and take him prisoner. The people rising to his rescue, the conspirators were put to flight. But when Boniface returned to Rome with the escort and protection of the

Orsini, who had made themselves masters of the city, he found that he was virtually a captive in their hands. He

felt this so keenly that he died of rage and exhaustion

on the 11th October 1303. The brief pontificate of his successor Benedict XI. was followed by that of Clement

V. (1305-14), a Frenchman, who, instead of coming to Rome, summoned the cardinals to France. This was the beginning of the church's so-called exile in Avignon, which, although depriving Rome of a source of wealth and influence, left the republic to pursue its own course. It The re employed this freedom in trying to hold its own against Public the nobles, whose power was much lessened by the absence ae of the pope, and endeavoured to gain fresh strength by demall organizing the thirteen regions, which, as we have shown, cratic were associations of a much firmer nature in Rome than the form. guilds. Accordingly, in 1305, a

captain of the people was elected with thirteen elders and a senator, Paganino della Torre, who governed for one year. The pope was opposed

to these changes at first, but in 1310 he issued a brief granting Rome full permission to select its own form of government. Thus, the first pope in Avignon restored the rights of the Romans. But the latter, even with church

and empire so far removed, still considered Rome the Eternal City, the source of all law, and the only natural

seat of the spiritual and temporal government of the world. To their republic, they thought, appertained a new

and lofty destiny, nor could it ever be content to descend

to the level of other Italian municipalities.

On the 6th January 1309 Henry VII. was crowned king Henry of the Romans at Aix-la-Chapelle; and so greatly were VIL men's minds changed in Italy that, throughout the land, he was hailed as a deliverer. He wished to restore the grandeur of the empire, and the Italians, above all Dante Alighieri, beheld in him the champion of the state against the church, who, after becoming the foe of communal liberty, had forsaken Italy and withdrawn to France.

The Roman people shared these ideas, and awaited Henry with equal impatience, but the nobles rose in opposition. The Orsini, leaders of the Guelfs, and allied with Robert of Naples, took possession of Castle St Angelo and the Trastevere. Hence, when Henry reached Rome in May 1312, after seizing the iron crown at Milan, he was obliged to act on the offensive. He took the Capitol by assault, but, failing in his attack on Castle St Angelo, was pur- sued by its Neapolitan garrison. Forsaken by many discouraged adherents, he was forced to recognize the expediency of departure. First, however, he desired to be crowned at the Lateran, St Peter's being held by his foes. The cardinals refused his request, but were compelled to yield by the threats of the people, who, reasserting their ancient rights, insisted that the coronation should take place without

delay. And the ceremony was performed | on the 29th June 1312. The emperor then resolved to depart in spite of the popular protest against his leaving the natural seat of the empire, and on the 20th August { started for Tuscany, where worse fortune awaited him. |

ES SES Hg

ae

STE. es ee

Their differences settled, the nobles expelled the cap- Jacopo tain of the people left by Henry, and elected as senators Atlotti Sciarra Colonna and Francesco Orsini. But this was the oo signal for a popular revolt. The Capitol was attacked, the people. senators put to flight, and Jacopo Arlotti elected captain witha council of twenty-six worthies (buoni homini). The new leader instantly summoned the chief nobles before his tribunal, had them chained and cast into prison, and demolished many of their houses and strongholds. But, having thus humiliated their pride, Arlotti dared not put them to death, and, releasing them from confinement, banished them to their estates, where they plunged into hostile preparations. Meanwhile the victorious people convoked a parliament and decreed that, the aristocracy

Sciarra Colonna, captain of the people.

Louis the Bavarian,

1278-1339.]

being now overthrown, the tribunitia potestas alone should invite the emperor to make his triumphal entry into the Capitol, and receive his authority from the people of Rome. This conception of the Roman power will now be seen to become more and more definite until finding its last expression in Cola di Rienzo. Pope Clement, resigning himself to necessity, acknowledged the new government under the energetic rule of Arlotti. The latter now joined the Ghibellines of the Campagna against the Orsini and the Neapolitans, subdued Velletri, and gave it a podesta.

But then the Gaetani, who were Guelfs, united with the Orsini and the Neapolitans, and, giving battle to the Ghibellines in the Campagna, routed them in such wise as to put an end to the popular government. The nobles forced their way into the city, attacked the Capitol, made Arlotti their prisoner, and re-elected the senators Sciarra Colonna and Francesco Orsini. Close upon these reverses came the death of Henry VII. (24th August 1313) at Buonconvento near Siena, which put an end to the Ghibel- line party in Italy. Thereupon King Robert of Naples, being named senator by the pope, immediately appointed avicarin Rome. Clement likewise profited by the vacancy of the imperial throne to name the king imperial vicar in Tuscany. And he died on the 20th April 1314, well content to have witnessed the triumphs of the Guelfs in ltaly.

Affairs took a fresh turn under Pope John XXII. (1316-34). Rome was still ruled by the vicars of King Robert ; but, owing to the continued absence of the popes, matters grew daily worse. Trade and industry declined, revenue diminished, the impoverished nobles were exceed- ingly turbulent, deeds of murder and violence occurred on all sides; even by day the streets of the city were unsafe. Hence there was universal discontent. Meanwhile Louis the Bavarian, who in 1314 had been crowned king of the Romans, having overcome his German enemies at Miihl- dorf in 1322, turned against the pope, one of his fiercest opponents. Louis was surrounded by Minorite friars, supporters of the poverty of the church, and consequently enemies to the temporal power. They were men of the stamp of William of Occam, Marsilio of Padua, Giovanni Janduno, and other philosophers favourable to the rights of the empire and the people. Accordingly the Italian Ghibellines hailed Louis as they had previously hailed Henry. Even the Roman people were roused to action, and, driving out the representatives and partisans of King Robert, in the spring of 1327, seized on Castle St Angelo, and again established a democratic government. 'Nearly all Italy was stirred to new deeds," says G. Villani,

"and the Romans rose to arms and organized the people" |

(bk. x. c, 20). Regardless of the reproofs of the pope, they elected a haughty Ghibelline, Sciarra Colonna, captain of the people and general

of the militia, with a council of fifty-two popolani, four to each region. Then, ranged under the standards of the militia, the Romans gave chase to the foes of the republic, and Sciarra, returning victorious, ascended to the Capitol and invited Louis the Bavarian to Rome. The summons was obeyed ; on the 7th January 1328 the king was already encamped in the Neronian Fields with five thousand horse and a considerable number of foot soldiers, and, with better fortune than Henry VIL., was able to enter the Vatican at once.

Encircled by a crowd of heretics, reformers, and Minorite brethren, he convoked a parliament on the Capitol, asking that the imperial crown might be conferred upon him by the people, from whom alone he wished to receive it. And the people proclaimed him their captain, Senator, and emperor. On the 17th January his corona- tion took place in St Peter's. But, as he had neither money nor practical sense, his method of taxation and the excesses

committed by himself and his over-excited philosophers speedily aroused the popular discontent. His ecclesiastical vicar, Marsilio of Padua, and Giovanni Janduno placarded the walls with insulting manifcstoes against the pope, whom the Minorites stigmatized as a heretic and wished to depose. In April Louis twice assembled the parliament in St Peter's Square, and, after obtaining its sanction to several anti-papal edicts, declared John XXII. degraded and deposed as a heretic. This was a very strange and novel spectacle, the more so that, as was speedily proved, the Romans were stirred by no anti-Catholic spirit, no yearning for religious reform. Jacopo Colonna, a canon of the Lateran, was able to make his way into Rome with four masked companions, to publicly read, at the top of his voice and before a great multitude, the excom- munication launched against the emperor by the deposed pope, to traverse the entire city, and to withdraw un- molested to Palestrina. Meanwhile the emperor contented himself with decreeing that henceforth the popes must reside in Rome,—that if, when invited, they should fail to come they would be thereby held deposed from the throne. As a logical consequence,

proceedings were immediately begun for the election of the new pope, Nicholas V., who on the 12th May was proclaimed by the popular voice in St Peter's Square, and received the imperial sanction. But this ephemeral drama came to an end when the emperor departed with his antipope on the 4th August. This caused the immediate downfall of the democratic Government. Bertoldo Orsini, who had returned to Rome with his Guelfs, and Stefano Colonna were elected senators, and confirmed in the office by Cardinal Giovanni Orsini in the name of the pope. A new parliament cancelled the emperor's edicts, and had them burnt by the public execu- tioner. Later, Nicholas, the antipope, went with a rope about his neck to make submission to John XXIL., and Louis promised to disavow and retract all that he had done against the church, provided the sentence of excom- munication were withdrawn. This, however, was re- fused. Never had the empire fallen so low. Meanwhile King Robert was again supreme in Rome, and, being re- elected senator, appointed vicars there as before. Anarchy reigned. The city was torn by factions, and the provinces rebelled against the French representatives of the pope, who, in their ignorance of Italian affairs, were at a loss how to act.

And after the election of Benedict XII. (1334-42) con- fusion reached so great a pitch that, on the expiration of Robert's senatorial term, the Romans named thirteen heads of regions to carry on the government with two senators, while the king still sent vicars as before. The people, for the sake of peace, once more granted the supremacy of the senate to the pope, and he nominated two knights of Gubbio, Giacomo di Cante dei Gabrielli and Bosone Novello dei Gabrielli, who were succeeded by two other senators the following year. But in 1339 the Romans attacked the Capitol, named two senators of their own choice, re-established a democratic Government, and sent ambassadors to Florence to ask for the ordinances of justice (ordinamenti della giustizia), by which that city had broken the power of the nobles, and also that a few skilled citizens should lend their help in the reconsti- tution of Rome. Accordingly some Florentines came with the ordinamenti, some portions of which may be recog- nized in the Roman statutes, and, after first rearranging the taxes, elected thirteen priors of the guilds, a gonfa- lonier of justice, and a captain of the people after the Florentine manner. But there was a dissimilarity in the conditions of the two cities. The guilds having little influence in Rome,

the projected reform failed, and the pope, who was opposed to it, re-elected the senators.

Reconsti- tution

of the republic,

Cola di Rienzo.

800

Thereupon public discontent swelled, and especially when, by the foundation of the papal palace of Avignon, it was evident that Benedict XII. had no intention of restoring the Holy See to Italy. This pope was succeeded in 1342 by Clement VI. (1342-52), and King Robert in 1343 by his niece Joanna ; and the latter event, while plunging the kingdom in anarchy, likewise aggravated the condition of Rome. For not only were the Neapolitan sovereigns still very powerful there, but the principal Roman nobles held large fiefs across the Neapolitan borders.

Shortly before this another revolution in Rome had re-established the government of the Thirteen and the two senators. The people, being anxious to show their intention of respecting the papal authority, had despatched to Avignon as ambassador of the republic, in 1343, a man destined to make much noise in the world. This was Cola di Rienzo, son of a Roman innkeeper, a notary, and an impassioned student of the Bible, the fathers, Livy, Seneca, Cicero, and Valerius Maximus. Thoroughly imbued with a half pagan half Christian spirit, he believed that he had a divinely inspired mission to revive the ancient glories of Rome. Of handsome presence, full of fantastic eloquence, and stirred to enthusiasm by contemplation of the ruined monuments of Rome, he harangued the people with a stilted oratory that enchanted their ears. He hated the nobles, because one of his brothers had been killed by them; he loved the republic, and in its name addressed a stately Latin speech to the astonished pope, and, offering him the supreme power, besought his instant return to Rome. He also begged him to allow the city to celebrate a jubilee every "fifty years, and then, as a personal request, asked to be nominated notary to the urban chamber. The pope consented to

everything, and Rienzi communicated this good news to Rome in an emphatically worded epistle. After Easter, in 1344, he returned to Rome, and found to his grief that the city was a prey to the nobles. He immediately began to admonish the latter, and then, draped in a toga adorned with symbols, exhibited and explained allegorical designs to the people, and announced the speedy restoration of the past grandeur of Rome. Finally he and a few burghers and merchants, whom he had secretly inflamed by his discourses, made a solemn vow to overthrow the nobility and consolidate the republic. The moment was favourable, owing to the anarchy of Naples, the absence of the pope, the weakness of the empire, and the disputes of the barons, although the latter were still very potent and constituted, as it were, a separate government opposed to that of the people. Rienzi, having gained the pope's eccle- siastical vicar to his side, passed in prayer the night of the 19th May 1347, placing his enterprise under the pro- tection of the Holy Spirit, and the following day marched to the Capitol, surrounded by his adherents, convoked a parliament of the people, and obtained its sanction for the following proposals :—that all pending lawsuits should be at once decided; that justice should be equally administered to all; that every region should equip one hundred foot soldiers and twenty-five horse ; that the dues and taxes should be rearranged ; that the forts, bridges, and gates of the city should be held by the rector of the people instead of by the nobility; and that granaries should be opened for the public use. On the same day, amid general homage and applause, Rienzi was proclaimed head of the republic, with the title of tribune and liberator of the Holy Roman Republic, "by authority of the most merciful Lord Jesus Christ." The nobles withdrew scoffing but alarmed. Rienzi engaged a body-guard of one hundred men, and assumed the command of thirteen hundred infantry and three hundred and ninety light horse; he abolished the senators, retained the Thirteen

and the general and special councils, and set the adminis- tration on anew footing. These measures and the prompt submission of the other

cities of the state brought an instant increase of revenue to Rome.

This revolution, as will be noted, was of an entirely novel stamp. For its leader despatched envoys to all the cities of Italy, exhorting them to shake off the yoke of their tyrants, and send representatives to the parliament convoked for the 1st August, inasmuch as the liberation of Rome also implied the "liberation of the sacred land of Italy." In Rienzi's judgment the Roman revolution must be, not municipal, but national, and even in some points universal. And this idea was welcomed with general enthusiasm throughout the peninsula. Solemn festivals and processions were held in Rome; and, when the tribune went in state to St Peter's, the canons met him on the steps chanting the Veni, Creator Spiritus.

/ Even the pope, willingly or unwillingly, accorded his

approval to Rienzi's deeds. The provincial cities did homage to Rome and her tribune, and almost all the rest of Italy gave him its enthusiastic adherence. The ancient sovereign people seemed on the point of resuscitation, And others besides the multitude were fascinated and carried off their feet. Great men like Petrarch were transported with joy. The poet lauded Cola di Rienzo as a sublime and supernatural being, the greatest of ancient and modern men. But it was soon evident that all this enthusiasm was mainly factitious. On the 26th of July a new parlia- ment was called, and this decreed that all the rights and privileges granted to the empire and church must now be vested in the Roman people, from whom they had first emanated. But on the convocation of the national parlia- ment few representatives obeyed the summons and the scheme was a failure. All had gone well so long as principles only were proclaimed, but when words had to be followed by deeds the municipal feeling awoke and distrust began to prevail. Nevertheless, on the Ist August Rienzi assumed the spurs of knighthood and passed a decree declaring that Rome would now resume her old jurisdiction over the world, invoking the Holy Spirit upon Italy, granting the Roman citizenship to all her cities, and proclaiming them free in virtue of the freedom of Rome. This was a strange jumble of the ancient Roman idea combined with the medizval. It was a dream of Rienzi's brain, but it was also the dream of Dante and Petrarch. The conception of the empire and the history of Italy,

particularly that of ancient and medizval Rome, were inevitably preparing the way for the national idea. This Rienzi foresaw, and this constitutes the true grandeur of his character, which in other respects was not exempt from pettiness and infirmity. He pursued his course, therefore, undismayed, and had indeed gone too far to draw back. On the 15th August he caused himself to be crowned tribune with great pomp, and confirmed the rights of Roman citizenship to all natives of Italy. But practical matters had also to be taken into account, and it was here that his weakness and lack of judgment were shown. The nobles remained steadily hostile, and refused to yield to the charm of his words. Hence conflict was unavoidable ; and at first Rienzi succeeded in vanquishing the Gaetani by means of Giovanni Colonna. He next endeavoured to suppress the Guelf and Ghibelline factions, and to restore Italy to "holy union" by raising her from her present abasement.

The pope, however, was weary of toleration, and, coming to terms with the nobles, incited them to war. They accordingly moved from Palestrina, and on the 30th November were encamped before Rome. Rienzi now put forth his energy. He had already called the militia to arms, and a genuine battle took place in which eighty

nobles, chiefly of the Colonna clan, were left dead. This was a real catastrophe to them, and the aristocracy never again achieved the rule of the republic. But Rienzi's head was turned by this sudden success. In great need of money, he began to play the tyrant by levying taxes and exacting instant obedience. The papal legate saw his opportunity and seized it, by threatening to bring a charge of heresy against the tribune. Rienzi was dismayed. He declared himself friendly to the pope and willing to respect his authority; and he even sought to conciliate the nobles. At this moment certain Neapolitan and Hungarian captains, after levying soldiers with the tribune's consent, joined the nobles and broke out in revolt. On their proving victorious in a preliminary encounter with some of Rienzi's guards, the tribune suddenly lost heart, resigned the power he had held for seven months, and took refuge with a few trusty adherents in

Castle St Angelo, on the 15th December 1347. Thence he presently fled to Naples, vainly hoping to find aid, and afterwards disappeared for some time from the scene.

Meanwhile the Romans remained tranquil, intent on making money by the jubilee ; but no sooner was this over than disorders broke out and the tyranny of the baronage recommenced. To remedy this state of things, application was made to the pope. He consulted with a committee of cardinals, who sought the advice of Petrarch, and the poet suggested a popular government, to the complete exclusion of the nobles, since these, he said, were strangers who ruined the city. The people had already elected the Thirteen, and now, encouraged by these counsels, on the 26th December 1351 chose Giovanni Perrone as head of the republic. But the new leader was unable to withstand the hostilities of the nobles; and in September 1353 Francesco Baroncelli was elected tribune. He was a follower of Rienzi, had been his ambassador to Florence, and did little beyond imitating his mode of government and smoothing the way for his return.

Rienzi had spent two years in the Abruzzi, leading a life of mystic contemplation on Monte Maiella. Then, in 1350, he had gone to Prague and endeavoured to convert to his ideas the yet uncrowned emperor Charles IV. When

and, seduced by his promises and hopes, they supplied him with funds. Then, profiting by his prestige, the apparent favour of the pope, and the sums received, he was able to collect a band of five hundred soldiers of mixed nationalities and returned towards Rome. On Monte Mario he was met by the cavallerotti. On the Ist August 1354 he entered the Castello gate, took possession of the government, named Monreale's two brothers his captains, and sent them to lay siege to Palestrina, which was still the headquarters of the Colonna. But then money ran short, and he again lost his head. Inviting Fra Monreale to a banquet, he put him to death for the sake of his wealth, and kept the two brothers in confinement. This act excited general indignation. And when, after his ill-gotten gains were spent, he again recurred to violence to fill his purse, the public discontent

was vented in a sudden revolt on the 8th October. The people stormed the Capitol with cries of "Death to the traitor." Rienzi presented himself at a window waving the flag of Rome. But the charm was finally broken. Missiles were hurled at him; the palace was fired. He hid himself in the courtyard, shaved his beard, and, disguised as a shepherd with a cloth over his head, slipped into the crowd and joined in their cries against himself, Being recognized, however, by the golden bracelets he had forgotten to remove, he was instantly stabbed. For two days his corpse was left exposed to the insults of the mob, and was then burned. Such was the wretched end of the man who, at one moment, seemed destined to fill the world with his name as the regenerator of Rome and of Italy.

In all the Italian cities the overthrow of the aristo- cracy had led to military impotence and pressing danger of tyranny. The same thing had happened in Rome when the nobility, weakened by the absence of church and empire, received its death blow from Rienzi. But, where- as elsewhere tyrants were gradually arising in the citizen class, Rome was always in danger of oppression by the pope. Nor was any aid available from the empire, which had never recovered from its abasement under Louis the Bavarian. In fact, when Charles of Luxembourg came to Rome to be crowned, he was obliged to promise the pope

apparently on the point of success, he was sent under | that he would not enter the city. On Easter day 1355 The arrest to the new pope, Innocent VI. (1352-62), a man | he received the crown, and departed, after counselling the popes of great shrewdness and practical sense. On Rienzi's | Romans to obey the pope. And the pontiffs had greater ee arrival at Avignon it became evident that his popularity | need than ever of an established kingdom. Their position iataae was still very great, and that it would be no easy task to | in France was much endangered by that country's disorder. temporal

dispose of him. The Romans were imploring his return ; | New states were being formed on all sides ; the medizval kingdom.

Petrarch lauded him as a modern Gracchus or Scipio ; and the pope finally released him from confinement. Innocent had decided to send to Italy, in order to settle affairs and bring the state into subjection to the

church, that valiant captain and skilled politician, Cardinal Albornoz. And, having no fear that the latter's hand would be forced, he further decided that Rienzi should be sent to give him the support of his own popularity in Rome. In fact directly the pair arrived Baroncelli was overthrown, the supremacy of the senate granted to the pope, and the government confided to Albornoz, who, without concerning himself with Rienzi, nominated Guido Patrizi as senator. He then marched at the head of his troops against Giovanni, prefect of Vico, and forced him to render submission at Montefiascone on the 5th June 1354. With the same promptitude and skill he reduced Umbria and the Tuscan and Sabine districts, consented to leave the privileges of the cities intact in return for their recognition of the papal author- ity, and planted fortresses in suitable positions. In the meantime Rienzi's popularity was increasing in Rome; without either money or arms, the ex-tribune succeeded by his eloquence in winning over the two Provencal leaders, brothers of the famous free captain Fra Monreale ;

unity was shattered ; and the shrunken spiritual authority of the church increased her need of material strength. As Italian affairs stood, it would be easy for the popes to found a kingdom, but their presence was required in Rome before it could be firmly established. The blood-stained sword of Albornoz had prepared the way before them. In 1355-56 he vanquished the lords or tyrants of Rimini, Fano, Fossombrone, Pesaro, Urbino, and other cities. And all these places had been so rudely oppressed that the cardinal was often hailed as a liberator after subduing their masters by fire and sword. But everywhere he had been obliged to leave existing Governments and rulers a statu quo after exacting their oaths of fealty. Thus the state was still dissevered, and it was impossible to bind it together with the pope at Avignon and Rome a republic. Bologna was still independent, Ordelafti still lord of Forli; Cesena and other cities were still rebel- lious ; and the Campagna was still in the hands of the barons. Some places were ruled by rectors nominated by the pope; at Montefiascone there was an ecclesiasti- cal rector, with a bench of judges, and a captain commanding a mixed band of adventurers. Rome had submitted to the haughty cardinal, but hated him XX. — 101

Foreign senators.

The band- eresi.

802 RO

mortally, and, on his departure for Avignon in 1357 to assist the threatened pontiff, immediately conceded to the latter tho supremacy of the senate. And the pope, instead of two senators, hastened to name a single one of foreign birth. This was a shrewd device of Albornoz and another blow to the nobles, with whom he was still at war. Thus was inaugurated, by the nomination of Raimondo de' Tolomei in 1358, a series of foreign senators, fulfilling the functions of a podesta, and changed every six months, together with their staff of judges, notaries, and knights. The people approved of this reform as being inimical to the nobles and favourable to the preservation of liberty. Hitherto the senators had been assisted, or rather kept in check, by the thirteen representatives of the regions. These were now replaced by seven reformers, in imitation of the priors of Florence, the better to follow that city's example. The reformers were soon the veritable chiefs of the republic. They first appeared in 1360, were either popolani or cavallerottc, and were elected by ballot every three months. When Albornoz returned to Italy, although desirous to keep Rome in the same subjection as the other cities, he had first to vanquish Ordelaffi and reduce Bologna. The latter enterprise was the more difficult task, and provoked a lengthy war with Matteo Visconti of Milan. Thus Rome, being left to herself, continued to be governed by her reformers; and the nobles, already shut out from power, were also excluded from the militia, which had been reorganized, like that of Florence, on the democratic system. Three thousand men, mostly archers, were enrolled under the command of two banderesi, "in the likeness," says M. Villani, " of our gonfaloniers of the companies," with four antepositi constituting a supreme council of war. And the whole body was styled the " Felix Societas Balestrariorum et Pavesatorum." It was instituted to support the reformers and re-establish order in the city and Campagna, to keep down the nobles and defend the republic. It fulfilled these duties with much, and sometimes excessive, severity. Banderesi and ante- positi had seats in the special council beside those of the reformers, as, in Florence, the gonfaloniers of the com- panies were seated beside the priors. Later these officials constituted the so-called signoria det

banderesi. In 1362, the Romans having subjected Velletri, which was defended by the nobles, the latter made a riot in Rome. Thereupon the banderesi drove them all from the city, killed some of their kindred, and did not even spare the cavallerotti. The fight became so furious that from gate to gate all Rome was in arms, and even mercenaries were hired. But in the end renewed submission was made to the pope.

On the death of Innocent VI. in 1362, an agreement was concluded with his successor Urban V. (1362-70), also a Frenchman, who was obliged to give his sanction to the government of the reformers and banderesi. And then, Albornoz being recalled in disgrace to Avignon, and after- wards sent as legate to Naples, these Roman magistrates were able, with or without the co-operation of the foreign senator, to rule in their own way. They did justice on the nobles by hanging a few more; and they defended the city from the threatening attacks of the mercenaries, who had now become Italy's worst foes. It was at this period that the Roman statutes were revised and re- arranged in the compilation erroneously attributed by some writers to Albornoz, which has come down to us supplemented by alterations of a later date.

But now the popes, being no longer in safety at Avignon, really decided to return to Italy. Even Urban V. had to pay ransom to escape from the threatened attacks of the free companies. The Romans implored his return, and he was further urged to it by the Italian

literati with Petrarch at their head. In April 1367 he

finally quitted Avignon, and, entering Rome on the 16th October, was given the lordship of the city. Cardinal Albornoz had fallen mortally ill at Viterbo, but, though unable to accompany the pope to Rome, had, before dying, suggested his course of action. Certainly Urban showed Urban V, much acumen in profiting by the first burst of popular begins to enthusiasm to effect quick and dexterous changes in the the al . . . . @- constitution of the republic. After naming a senator, he pupiic, abolished the posts of reformers and banderesi, substituting three conservators, or rather a species of municipal council, alone charged with judicial and administrative powers, which has lasted to the present day. 'The thirteen leaders of the regions and the consuls of the guilds still sat in the councils, which were left unsuppressed. But all real power was in the hands of the pope, who, in Rome, as in his other cities, nominated the principal magistrates. Thus, by transforming political into civil institutions and concen- trating the supreme authority in his own grasp, Urban V. dealt a mortal blow to the liberties of Rome. Yet he felt no sense of security among a people who, after the first

rejoicings over the return of the Holy See, were always on the brink of revolt. Besides he felt himself a stranger in Italy, and was so regarded. Accordingly, in April 1370 he decided to return to France; on the 20th of that month he wrote from Viterbo that no change was to be made in the government; and he died in Avignon on the 19th of December.

The Romans retained the conservators, conferring on Re-estab- them the political power of the reformers; they re-estab- lishment lished the banderesi with the Florentine title of executores 0! the, pees sits, alls wae. « Tepublic justitiae and the four antepositi with that of consiliarii. ang the Thus the "Felix Societas Balestrariorum et Pavesatorum band- Urbis" was restored, and the two councils met as before, eresi. The new French pope, Gregory XI. (1370-78), had to be content with obtaining supremacy over the senate and the possession of the Castle St Angelo. It was a difficult moment for him. The Florentines had come to an open rupture with his legates, and had adopted the expedient of inviting all the cities of the Roman state to redeem their lost freedom. Accordingly in 1375 many of them rose against the legates, who were mostly French and regarded with dislike as foreigners. Florentine despatches, full of classical allusions and chiefly composed by the famous scholar, Secretary Coluccio Salutati, were rapidly sent in all directions. Those addressed to the Romaus were specially fervid, and emphatically appealed to their patriotism and memories of the past. But the Romans received them with doubt and mistrust, for they saw that the revolution threatened to dismember the state, by promoting the independence of every separate city. Besides, while maintaining their republic, they also desired the pope's pre- sence in Rome. Nevertheless they went with the current to the extent of reforming their constitution. In February 1376 they nominated Giovanni Cenci captain of the people, and gave him uncontrolled power over the towns of the patrimony and the Sabine land. The conservators,

with their new political authority, the executores, the antepositi, and the two councils were all preserved, and a new magis- tracy was created, the "Tres Gubernatores Pacis et Libertatis Reipublicae Romanae." This answered to the Eight (afterwards Ten) of War in Florence, likewise frequently called the Eight of Liberty and Peace. It was this Council of Eight that was now directing the war against the pope and braving his sentence of excommuni- cation ; and their fiery zeal had won them the title of the Holy Eight from the Florentines.

Realizing that further absence would cost him his state, Gregory XI. quitted Avignon on the 13th September 1376, and, reaching Corneto in December, despatched to

R O

Rome three legates, who, on the 21st of the month, concluded an agreement with the parliament. The people gave up the gates, the fortresses, and the Trastevere, and promised that if the pope returned to Rome he should have the same powers which had been granted to Urban V. But, on his side, he must pledge himself to maintain the executores, their council, the Three of War, and allow the Romans the right of reforming the banderesi, who would then swear fealty to him. The terms of this peace and the pope's epistles clearly prove that the two councils still exercised their functions, that the banderesi were still the virtual heads of the Government, and that their sup- pression was not contemplated. In fact, when the pope made his entry on the 17th January 1377 accompanied by two thousand armed men, he perceived that there was much public agitation, that the Romans did not intend to fulfil their agreement, and that the Government of the banderesi went on as before. Accordingly, after naming Gomez Albornoz, a nephew of the deceased cardinal, to the office of senator, he retired to Anagni, and remained there until November 1377. The Romans presently waited on him with conciliating offers, and begged him to negotiate a peace for them with the prefect of Vico. In fact the treaty was concluded at Anagni in October, and on the 10th November confirmed in Rome by the general council. The meeting was held in the great hall of the Capitol, "ubi consilia generalia urbis fieri solent," in the presence of all the members of the

republican Government. But the pope was enraged by the survival of this Government, and, being worn out by the persistent hostility of the Florentines, which reduced his power to a low ebb, had

appearance of order and unity on his state. But fresh tumults soon arose, partly because the conservators and banderesi sought to govern on their own account, and especially because the pope seems for a time to have omitted naming the senator. Boniface was a prudent nian; he saw that events were turning in his favour, now that throughout Italy liberty was tottering to its fall, and bided his time. He was satisfied for the moment by obtaining a recognition of the immunities of the clergy, rendering them solely amenable to ecclesiastical tribunals, and thus distinguishing the powers of the church from those of the state in Rome. The republic also pledged itself neither to molest the prelates nor to levy fresh contributions on them towards repairing the walls, to aid in recovering the estates of the church in Tuscia, and to try to con- ciliate the baronage. This concordat, concluded with the conservators and banderesi on the 11th September 1391, was also confirmed on the 5th March 1392 by the heads of the regions, together with a fresh treaty binding both parties to furnish a certain number of armed men to com- bat the prefect of Vico and the adherents of the antipope at Viterbo. With the exception of this city, Orchi, and Civita Vecchia, all other conquered territory was to belong to the republic. But the Romans soon discovered that they were playing into the hands of the pope, who kept everything for himself, without even paying the troops. Upon this a riot broke out; Boniface fled to Perugia in October 1392, and resolved to exact better terms when next recalled to Rome. Meanwhile the Romans subdued the prefect, captured Viterbo, and, being already repentant, handed it over to the pope and implored his return. He

determined to make peace, wheu surprised by death on { the 27th March 1378.) The next pope, Urban VI. (1378-89), a Neapolitan, was the spirit of discord incarnate. His election was not altogether regular: the French party among the cardinals

then proposed his own terms, which were approved, not Boniface only by the conservators, banderesi, and four councillors, 1X. con- but also by the special council and by the unanimous vote pene sia of a general assembly composed of the above-mentioned ete

authorities, heads of regions, other officials, and a hundred the re-

was against him; and the people were ripe for insurrec- tion. But, regardless of all this, Urban threatened the cardinals in his first consistory, saying that church reform must begin with them; and he used the same tone with the people, reproving them for failing to suppress the banderesi. In consequence of this the cardinals of the French party, assembling at Fondi, elected the antipope Clement VII. (1378-94) and started a long and painful schism in the church. Clement resided in Avignon, while Urban in Rome was engaged in opposing Queen Joanna I. of Naples and favouring Charles of Durazzo, who, on conquering the Neapolitan kingdom, was made gonfalonier of the church and senator of Rome, where he left a vicar as his deputy. Shortly afterwards the pope went to Naples, and made fierce war on the king. Then, after many adventures, during which he tortured and put to death several cardinals whom he suspected of hostile intentions, he returned to Rome, where the utmost disorder pre-

citizens (8th August 1393). the pope was to elect the senator, and that, on his failing so to do, the conservators would carry on the government after swearing fealty to him. The senatorial function was to be neither controlled nor hampered by the banderesi. The immunities of the clergy were to be preserved, and all church property was to be respected by the magistrates. The expenses of the pope's journey were to be paid, and he was to be escorted to Rome in state. Boniface tried to complete his work by abolishing the banderesi, the last bulwarks of freedom ; but the people, although weakened and weary, made efforts to preserve them, and, although their fall was inevitable, the struggle went on for some time.

During the spring of 1394 the banderesi provoked an insurrection in which the pope's life was endangered ; it was only saved by the arrival of King Ladislaus, who came from Naples with a large force in the early autumn.

Urban vailed. The conservators and the banderesi were still at | But for the Neapolitan soldiery Boniface could not have

VI. the head of the Government, and, the pope speedily falling | withstood the long series of revolts that continually

ee out with them, a riot ensued, after which he excommuni- | exposed him to fresh perils and the anxiety caused by

destruc. cated the banderesi. These at last made submission to | the persistent schism of thechurch. The death of Clement

tion of him, and Urban VI. became master of Rome before his | VII. in 1394 was followed by the election of another . – death in 1389. He was succeeded by Boniface IX. | antipope, Benedict XIII. But a new jubilec was in | public.

(1389-1404), another Neapolitan, but a man of greater

prospect for the year 1400, and this was always an effica-

These terms prescribed that public.

cious means of bending the will of the Romans. Depend- Fai of ing upon this and the assistance of Ladislaus, Boniface the band- not only demanded full powers to nominate senators resi and (none having been recently elected), but insisted on the ithe

shrewdness and capacity. His first act was to crown Ladislaus king of Naples, and secure the friendship and protection of this ambitious and powerful prince. In all the principal cities of the state he chose the reigning lords Peal for his vicars.

But he allowed Fermo, Ascoli, and Bologna the privilege of assuming their own vicariate for twenty- five years. And, as these different potentates and Govern- ments had only to pay him an annual tribute, all parties were satisfied, and the pope was able to bestow at least an

suppression of the banderesi. Both requests were granted; but, directly Angelo Alaleoni was made senator, a con- spiracy was hatched for the re-establishment of the banderesi. However, the pope felt sure of his strength ; the plot was discovered and the conspirators were beheaded

on the stairs of the Capitol. This proved the end of the banderesi and of the liberties of Rome. The government was again directed by an alien senator together with three conservators, but the latter were gradually deprived of their political attributes, and became mere civil officers. The militia, regions, guilds, and other associations now rapidly lost all political importance, and before long were little more than empty names. Thus in 1398 the Romans submitted to the complete sway of the pope, and in July of the same year the senator chosen by him was Mala- testa dei Malatesti of Rimini, one of a line of tyrants, a valiant soldier, who was also temporal vicar and captain general of the church. Boniface continued to appoint foreign senators during the rest of his life; he fortified Castle St Angelo, the Vatican, and the Capitol; he stationed galleys at the mouth of the Tiber, and proved himself in all things a thoroughly temporal prince. He aggrandized all his kindred, especially his brother, and, with the aid of his senator, his armed force, and the protection of Ladislaus, succeeded in keeping down all the surviving nobles. In 1400, however, these made an attempt to upset the Government. Niccold Colonna forced his way into the city with cries of "Popolo, popolo! death to Boniface!" But the Romans had grown deaf to the voice of liberty; they refused to rise, and the senator, a Venetian named Zaccaria Trevisan, behaved with much energy. Colonna and his men had to beat a swift retreat to Palestrina. A charge of high treason was immediately instituted against him, and thirty-one rebels were beheaded. The pope then proclaimed a crusade against all the Colonna, and sent a body of two thousand nten and some of the Neapolitan soldiery to attack them. Several of their estates were seized and devastated, but Palestrina con- tinued to hold out, and on the 7th January 1401 the Colonna finally made submission to the pope. Neverthe- less they obtained advantageous terms, for Boniface left them their lands, appointed them vicars of other territories, and made similar agreements with the Gaetani and Orsini. In

this way he became absolute master of Rome. One chronicler remarks that "Romanis tanquam rigidus imperator dominabatur," and the same tone is taken by others. But he did not succeed in putting an end to the schism of the church, which was still going on when he died in the Vatican on the Ist October 1404.

Innocent VII. (1404-6) was the next pope. He too was a Neapolitan, and on his election the people again rose in revolt and refused to acknowledge him unless he consented to resign the temporal power. But Ladislaus of Naples hastened to his help, and an agreement was made which, under the cover of apparent concessions, really riveted the people's chains. Rome was recognized as the seat of the temporal and spiritual sovereignty of the pope, and the pope continued to appoint the senator. The people were to elect seven governors of the city, who were to swear fealty to the pope and carry on the government in conjunction with three other governors chosen by the pontiff or Ladislaus. The stipulations of Boniface IX. concerning ecclesiastical immunities were again confirmed. The barons were forbidden to place more than five lances each at the service of the people, and—which was the real gist of the covenant—the people were henceforth forbidden to make laws or statutes without the permission of the pope. The captain of the people, deprived of his political and judicial functions and reduced to a simple judge, was also to be chosen by the pope. But this treaty, drawn up on the 27th October 1404, was not signed at the time, and many difficulties and disturbances arose when its terms were to be put into effect. The Romans nominated the Seven governors, but, without waiting until the pope had chosen three more, placed the state in their hands,

and styled them governors of the liberty of the Roman

republic. They were in fact banderesi or reformatori under a new name. But the attempt proved inefficacious, for, at the pope's first threat of departure, the Romans made their submission, and the treaty of October was sub- scribed on the 15th May 1405. Nevertheless, as it only bears the

signatures of the "seven governors of the liberty of the Roman republic," the pope would seem to have made some concessions. His position was by no means assured. Ladislaus was known to aspire to absolute dominion in Italy, and, although willing to aid in sup- pressing the republic, tried to prepare the way for his own designs, and frequently held out a helping hand to the vanquished. On the 6th August fourteen influential citizens of Rome boldly presented themselves at the Vatican, and in a threatening manner called the pope to account for giving his whole attention to worldly things, instead of endeavouring to put a stop to the schisms of the church. But, on leaving his presence, they were attacked by Luigi Migliorati, the pope's nephew, and notorious for his violence, who killed eleven of their number, including several heads of the regions and two of the governors. An insurrection ensued, and the pope and his nephew fled to Viterbo. The Colonna tried to profit by these events, and applied to Ladislaus, who, hoping that the moment had come to make himself master of Rome, sent the count of Troia thither with a troop of three thousand horse. But the people, enraged by this treachery, and determined not to fall under the yoke of Naples, awoke for an instant to the memory of their past glories, and bravely repulsed the Colonna and the Neapolitans. And, on the speedy arrival of the Orsini with some of the papal troops, the people voluntarily restored the papal govern- ment, and, assembling the parliament, besought the pope to return on his own terms. Accordingly, after first naming Francesco Panciatichi of Pistoia to the senatorship, the pope came back on the 13th March 1406, bringing his whole curia with him, and also the murderer Migliorati, who, triumphing in impunity, became more arrogant than before. Here indeed was a proof that the Romans were no longer wortlLy of liberty! And now, by means of the Orsini, Innocent had only to reduce the Colonna and other nobles raised to power by Ladislaus; nor was this very difficult, seeing that the king, in his usual fashion, abandoned them to their fate, and, making terms with the pope, was named gonfalonier of the church and again protected her cause. Innocent, dying in 1406, was succeeded by Gregory XIL,, a Venetian, who, as we shall presently see, resigned the chair in 1415. On his accession, finding his state firmly established, he seemed to be seriously bent on putting an end to the Great Schism, and for that purpose arranged a meeting with the antipope Benedict XIII. at the congress of Savona in 1408. But Gregory and Benedict only used the

congress as a pretext for making war upon each other, and were urged on by Ladislaus, who hoped by weakening both to gain possession of Rome, where, although opposed by the Orsini, he had the support of the Colonna. Gregory, who had then fled from Rome, made a momentary attempt to win the popular favour by restoring the govern- ment of the banderesi; but Ladislaus marched into Rome Ladislaus in June 1408 and established a senator of his own. master of Meanwhile the two popes were continuing their shameful ®°™¢ struggle, and the council of Pisa (March 1409), in attempt- ing to check it, only succeeded in raising up a third pontiff, first in the person of Alexander V. (1409-10), and then in the turbulent Baldassare Cossa, who assumed the name of John XXIII. The latter began by sending a large contingent to assist Louis of Anjou against Ladislaus. But the enterprise failed, and, seeing himself deserted by

all, Pope John next embraced the cause of his foe by

End

of the schism, and elec- tion of Martin V.

Rome in a state of anarchy.

The popes of the Renais- sance.

1400-1447.] ROME 805

naming him gonfalonier of the church. Thereupon | foreign intrigues, falsehoods, and treacheries of Italian

Ladislaus concluded a sham peace, and then, seizing Rome, put it to the sack and established his own government there. Thus John, like the other two popes, became a wanderer in Italy. In August 1414 Ladislaus died and was succeeded by the scandalous Queen Joanna II. The Roman people promptly expelled the Neapolitans, and Cardinal Isolani, John's legate, succeeding in rousing a reaction in favour of the church, constituted a govern- ment of thirteen " conservators" on the 19th October.

In November 1414 the council of Constance assembled, and at last ended the schism by deposing all the popes, and incarcerating John XXIII., the most turbulent of the three. On the 11th November 1417 Oddo Colonna was unanimously elected to the papal chair; he was consecrated in the cathedral on the 27th as Pope Martin Y., and, being acknowledged by all, hastened without delay to take possession of his see. Meanwhile disorder was at its height in Rome. The cardinal legate Isolani governed as he best could, while Castle St Angelo re- mained in the hands of the Neapolitans, who still had a party in the city. In this divided state of affairs Braccio, a daring captain of adventurers, nicknamed Fortebraccio, was inspired with the idea of making himself master of Rome. Overcoming the feeble resistance opposed to him, he succeeded in this on the 16th June 1416 and assumed the title of "Defensor Urbis." But Joanna of Naples despatched Sforza, an equally valiant captain, against him, and, without offering battle, Fortebraccio withdrew on the 26th August, after having been absolute master of the eternal city for seventy days. Sforza marched in on the 27th, and took possession of the city in the name of Joanna. Martin V. instantly proved himself a good statesman. He confirmed the legate Isolani as his vicar, and Giovanni Savelli as senator. Leaving Constance on the 16th May 1418, he reached Milan on the 12th October, and slowly proceeded on his journey. While in Florence he despatched his brother and nephew to Naples to make alliance with Joanna, and caused her to be crowned on the 28th October 1419 by his legate Morosini. Upon this she promised to give up Rome to the pope. Her general, Sforza, then entered the service of Martin V., and compelled Fortebraccio, who was lingering in a threatening attitude at Perugia, to make peace with the pope. The latter entrusted Fortebraccio with the conduct of the campaign against Bologna, and that city was reduced to submission on the 15th July 1420. The Romans had already yielded to Martin's brother the legate, and now earnestly besought the arrival of their pope. Accordingly he left Florence on the 19th September 1420, and entered the Vatican on the 28th. Rome was in ruins; nobility and burghers were equally disorganized, the people unable to bear arms and careless of their rights, while the battered walls of the Capitol recorded the fall of two republics.

Martin V. had now to fulfila far more difficult task than that of taking possession of Rome. Throughout Italy municipal freedom was

overthrown, and the Roman republic had ceased to exist. The Middle Ages were ended ; the Renaissance was beginning. The universal unity both of church and of empire was dissolved ; the empire was now Germanic, and derived its principal strength from direct dominion over a few provinces. Independent and national states were already formed or forming on all sides. The papacy itself had ceased to claim universal supremacy over the world's Govern- ments, and the possession of a temporal state had become essential to its existence. In fact Martin V. was the first of the series of popes who were real sovereigns, and more occupied with politics than religion. Involved in all the

diplomacy in the 15th century, their internal policy was imbued with all the arts practised by the tyrants of the Renaissance, and nepotism became necessarily the basis of their strength. It was natural that men suddenly elected sovereigns of a new country where they had no ties, and of which they had often no knowledge, should seek to strengthen their position by aggrandizing so-called nephews who were not unfrequently their sons.

Martin V. reduced the remains of the free Roman The

Government to a mere civil municipality. Following the temporal method of the other despots of Italy, the old republican oe institutions were allowed to retain their names and forms, popes their administrative and some of their judicial attributes, raised on while all their political functions were transferred to the new the ruins Government. Order was re-established, and justice rigidly ° te observed. Many rebellious places were subdued by the 2" sword, and many leaders of armed bands were hanged. The pope, however, was forced to lean on his kinsmen the Colonna and again raise them to power by grants of vast fiefs both in his own state and the Neapolitan territory. And, after first supporting Joanna IT., who had assisted his entry into Rome, he next sided with her adversary, Louis of Anjou, and then with Alphonso of Aragon, the con-queror of both and the constant friend of the pope, who at last felt safe on his throne. Rome now enjoyed order, peace, and security, but had lost all hope of liberty. And when Martin died (20th February 1431) these words were inscribed on his tomb, Temporum suorum felicitas.

*Eugenius IV. (1431-47) leant on the Orsini, and was A revolu- fiercely opposed by the Colonna, who excited the people tion against him. Accordingly on the 29th May 1434 the °xels the Romans rose in revolt to the old cry of " Popolo e popolo," * ~~ and again constituted the rule of the seven governors of liberty. The pope fled by boat down the Tiber, and, being pursued with stones and shots, narrowly escaped with his life. On reaching Florence, he turned his energies to the recovery of the state. It was necessary to quell the people ; but, first of all, the Colonna and the clan of the prefects of Vico, with their renewed princely power, had to be overthrown. The Orsini were still his friends. Eugenius entrusted the campaign to Patriarch (afterwards Cardinal) Vitelleschi, a worthy successor of Albornoz, and of greater ferocity if less talent. This leader marched his army towards Rome, and, instantly attacking Giovanni, prefect of Vico, captured and beheaded him. The family was now extinguished; and, its possessions reverting to the church, the greater part of them were sold or given to Count Everso d'Anguillara, of the house of Orsini. The prefecture, now little more than an honorary title, was bestowed at will by the popes. Eugenius gave it to Francesco, founder of the powerful line of the Gravina- Orsini. Thus one noble family was raised to greatness while another perished by the sword. Vitelleschi had already begun to persecute the Colonna and the Savelli, and committed terrible slaughter among them. Many castles were demolished, many towns destroyed ; and their inhabitants, driven to wander famine-stricken over the Campagna, had to sell themselves as slaves for the sake of bread. Finally the arrogant patriarch marched into Rome, as into a conquered city, at the head of his men, and the Romans crouched at his feet. The pope now began to distrust him, and sent Scarampo, another prelate of the same stamp, to take his place. This new commander soon Eugenius arrived, and, perceiving that Vitelleschi proposed to resist, V- had him surrounded by his soldiers, who were obliged to ee ee use force to compel his surrender. Vitelleschi was carried : j; bleeding to Castle St Angelo, where he soon afterwards died. The pope at last returned to Rome in 1443, and remained there quietly till his death in 1447.*

His successor Nicholas V. (1447-55) was a scholar solely devoted to the patronage of literati and artists. During his reign there was a fresh attempt to restore the republic, but it was rather prompted by literary and classical enthusiasm than by any genuine patriotic ardour. Political passions and interests had ceased to exist. The

Con- conspiracy was headed by Stefano Porcari, a man of the spiracy of people, who claimed to be descended from Cato. He had Stefano once been captain of the people in Florence, and was made a podesta of Bologna by Eugenius IV. He was a caricature of Cola di Rienzo, and extravagantly proud of his Latin speeches in honour of ancient republican liberty. The admiration of antiquity was then at its height, and Porcari found many enthusiastic hearers. Directly after the death of Eugenius IV. he made a first and unsuccessful attempt to proclaim the republic. Nevertheless Nicholas V., with the same indulgence for scholars that had prompted him to pardon Valla for denying the temporal power of the papacy and laughing to scorn the pretended donation of Constan- tine, freely pardoned Porcari and named him podesta of Anagni. He filled this office with credit, but on his return to Rome again began to play the agitator, and was banished to Bologna with a pension from the pope. Nicholas V. had conferred all the state offices upon priests and abbots, and had erected numerous fortresses. Hence there were many malcontents in Rome, in communication with Porcari at Bologna, and ready to join in his plot. Arms were collected, and on the day fixed he presented himself to his fellow-conspirators adorned with rich robes and a gold chain, and harangued them in Latin on the duty of freeing their country from the yoke of the priests. His design was to set fire to the Vatican on the 6th January 1453, the feast of the Epiphany ; he and his followers were to seize the pope, the cardinals, and Castle St Angelo. But Nicholas received timely warning ; the conspirators' house was surrounded ; and Porcari himself was seized while trying to escape, confined in Castle St Angelo, and put to death with nine of his companions on the 9th January. Others shortly suffered the same fate.

Under Calixtus ITI. and Pius II. affairs went on quietly enough, but Paul II. (1464-71) had a somewhat troubled reign. Yet he was a skilled politician. He re- ordered the finances and the courts of justice, punished

crime with severity, was an energetic foe to the Malatesta of Rimini, put an end'to the oppression exercised in Rome by the wealthy and arrogant house of Anguillara, and kept the people in good humour with continual festivities. But—and this was a grave defect at that period—he extended no favour to learning, and, by driving many scholars from the curia to make room for his own kins- men, brought a storm about his ears. At that time the house of Pomponio Leto was the rendezvous of learned men and the seat of the Roman Academy. Leto was an enthusiast of antiquity; and, as the members of the Academy all assumed old Latin names, they were suspected of a design to re-establish paganism and the republican

Men of government. It is certain that they all inveighed against learning the pope; and, as the latter was no man of half measures, vied on GUting the carnival of 1468 he suddenly imprisoned twenty suspicion Academicians, and even subjected a few of them to torture. of re- Pomponio Leto, although absent in Venice, was also

ae arrested and tried ; but he exculpated himself, craved for- dencies, &! ¥eness, and was set at liberty. His friends were also re- leased, for the charge of conspiracy proved to be unfounded. Certain members of the Academy, and notably Platina in his Lives of the Popes, afterwards revenged themselves by stigmatizing Paul II. as the persecutor of philosophy and letters. _ But he was no more a persecutor than a patron of learning ; he was a politician, the author of some useful reforms, and solely intent on the consolidation of his

absolute power. Among his reforms may be classed the revision of the Roman statutes in 1469, for the purpose of destroying the substance while preserving the form of the old Roman legislation, and entirely stripping it of all political significance. In fact the pope's will was now absolute, and even in criminal cases he could trample unhindered on the common law.

There was still a senator of Rome, whose nomination was entirely in the hands of the pope, still three conser- vators, the heads of the rioni, and an

elected council of twenty-six citizens. Now and then also a shadowy semblance of a popular assembly was held to cast dust in the eyes of the public, but even this was not forlong. All these officials, together with the judges of the Capitol, retained various attributes of different kinds. They administered justice and gave sentence. There were numerous tribunals all with undefined modes of procedure, so that it was very difficult for the citizens to ascertain in which court justice should be sought. But in last resort there was always the supreme decision of the pope. Thus matters remained to the time of the French Revolution.

For the completion of this system a final blow had to be dealt to the aristocracy, whose power had been increased by nepotism ; and it was dealt by bloodshed under the three following popes—Sixtus IV. (1471-84), Innocent VIII. (1484-92), and Alexander VI. (1492-1503)—each of whom was worse than his predecessor. The first, by means of his nephews, continued the slaughter of the Colonna, sending an army against them, devastating their estates at Marino, and beheading the protonotary Lorenzo Colonna. Innocent VIII. was confronted by the power of the Orsini, who so greatly endangered his life by their disturbances in the city that he was only saved by an alliance with Naples. Neither peace nor order could be lastingly established until these arrogant barons were overthrown. This task was accomplished by the worst of the three pontiffs, Alexander VI. All know how the mas- sacre of the Orsini was compassed, almost simultaneously, by the pope in Rome and his equally iniquitous son, Ceesar Borgia, at Sinigaglia (1502). This pair dealt the last blow to the Roman aristocracy and the tyrants of Romagna, and thus the temporal dominion of the papacy was finally assured. The republic was now at an end; it had shrivelled to a civil municipality. Its institutions, deprived of all practical value, lingered on like ghosts of the past, subject from century to century to unimportant changes. The his- tory of Rome is henceforth absorbed in that of the papacy.

Nevertheless the republic twice attempted to rise from Post- its grave, and on the second occasion gave proofs of heroism medieval worthy of its past. It was first resuscitated in February Rome. 1798, by the influence of the French Revolution, and the French constitution of the year III. was rapidly imitated. Rome had again two councils—the tribunate and the

senate, with five consuls constituting the executive power. But in the following year, owing to the military reverses of the French, the government of the popes was restored until 1809, when Napoleon I. annexed to his empire the States of the Church. Rome was then governed by a con- sulta straordinaria—a special commission—with the muni-. cipal and provincial institutions of France. In 1814 the papal government was again reinstated, and the old institutions, somewhat modified on the French system, were recalled to life. Pius IX. (1846-77) tried to intro- duce fresh reforms, and to improve and simplify the old machinery of state; but the advancing tide of the Italian revolution of 1848 drove him from Rome; the republic was once more proclaimed, and had a brief but glorious existence. Its programme was dictated by Joseph Mazzini, who with Saffi and Armellini formed the triumvirate at the head of the Government. United Italy was to bea

TOPOGRAPHY. | RO republic with Rome for her capital. The rhetorical idea of Cola di Rienzo became heroic in 1849. The constituent assembly (9th February 1849) proclaimed the fall of the temporal power of the popes, and the establishment of a republic which was to be not only of Rome but of all Italy. France, although then herself a republic, assumed the unenviable task of re-establishing the temporal power by force of arms. But the gallant defence of Rome by General Garibaldi covered the republic with glory. The enemy was repulsed, and the army of the Neapolitan king, sent to restore the pope, was also driven off. Then, how- ever, France despatched a fresh and more powerful force ; Rome was vigorously besieged, and at last compelled to surrender. With June 1849 begins the new series of pontifical laws designed to restore the government of Pius IX., whose reign down to 1870 was that of an absolute sovereign. Then the Italian Government entered Rome (20th September 1870), proclaimed the national constitu- tion (9th October 1870), and the Eternal City became the capital of Italy. Thus the scheme of national unity, the natural outcome of the history of Rome and of Italy, impossible of accomplishment under the rule of the popes, was finally achieved by the monarchy of Savoy, which, as the true representative and personification of Italian interests, has abolished the temporal power of the papacy and made Rome the seat of government of the united country. @v:) Leapinc AvTHORITIES.—Anetent History.—(1) Monarchy and

Republic :—Mommsen, Rémische Geschichte, vols. i.-iil. (7th ed., Berlin, 1881); Schwegler-Clason, Rémische Geschichte, 5 vols., 1867-1876, Tiibingen-Halle; Ihne, Rémische Geschichtc, 5 vols., Leipsic, 1868-1879 ; Niebuhr, History of Rome, 3 vols. (Eng. tr.,

1855), and Lectures on the History of Rome, 3 vols. (Eng. tr., 1849) ; Arnold, History of Rome, 8 vols., 1848, and Latcr Roman Common-

wealth, 2 vols., 1845; Long, Decline and Fall of the Roman Republre, 5 vols., 1864; Drumann, Geschichte Roms, 6 vols., Konigsberg, 1834, (2) Empire :—Tillemont, Histoire des Empéreurs, 6 vols., Brussels, 1732 ; Gibbon, Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire, 8 vols. (ed. of 1862); Merivale, The Romans under the Empire, 8 vols., 1865; Champagny, Les Césars, 4 vols., Paris, 1867 ; Momm- sen, Rom. Gesch., vol. v., Berlin, 1885; Schiller, Geschichte d. Kaiscrzeit, 2 vols., Gotha, 1883. Duruy, Histotre des Romains, 5 vols., Paris, 1870, and Ranke, Weligeschichte, vols. ii., ili., iv., Leipsic, 1883, deal with both periods. (3) Antiquities, &c.: — Mommsen and Marquardt, Handbach d. Romischen Alterthiimer ; Mommsen, Staatsrecht, 2 vols.; Marquardt, Staatsverwaliung, 3 vols. ; Id., Privatleben d. Romer, 2 vols., Berlin, 1871-82; Lange, Rémische Altcrthiimer, 3 vols., Berlin, 1868; Madvig, Verfassung »v. Verwaltung d. Rémischen Staats, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1881; Fried- laender, Sittengeschichte Roms, Leipsic, 1869.

Mcdizval.—Vitale, Storia diplomatica de' Senatori di Roma, 2vols., Rome, 1791; Galletti, Del primicerio della Santa Sede Apostolica ¢ di altri uficiali maggiori del sagro palazzo Lateranense, Rome, 1776; Vendettini, Del Senato Romano, Rome, 1782; Baronius, Annales Ecclesiastici, continued by Raynaldus, 42 vols. fol. (1738-56), and the recent continuations of Theiner relating to the years 1572-85; J. Ficker, Forschwngen zur Reichs- wnd Rechis- geschichte Italiens, 4 vols., Innsbruck, 1868-74 ; Savigny, Geschichte des rémischen Rechts im Mittelalter (frequently reprinted and trans- lated into all the principal languages); Leo, Enéwickclung der Verfassung der lombardischen Stédte,

Hamburg, 1824 ; M. A. yon Bethmann-Hollweg, Ursprung der lombardischen Stddtefrethett (Anhang :—Schicksale der rémischen Stadtverfassung vm Exarchat und in Rom), Bonn, 1846; Hegel, Geschichte der Stédteverfassung von Italien, Leipsic, 1847; Gicsebrecht, " Ueber die stadtischen Verhiltnisse im X. Jahrhundert," at end of vol. i. of Geschichte der deutschen Kaiserzeit, Brunswick, 1863; "Studi e documenti di Storia e Diritto," in Annuario di Conferenze storico-giwridiche (Rome, 1880 sg.) ; Archivio della Reale Societa Romana di Storia Patria (the other publications of the same society, as, ¢.g., the Regesto di Farfa, may also be consulted with advantage) ; J. Papen-cordt, Geschichte der Stadt Rom, Paderborn, 1857; Id., Cola di Rienzo, Hamburg, 1841; Gregorovius, Geschichte der Stadt kom (8 vols., Stuttgart, finished in 1872; a 4th edition now in the press); Reumont, Geschichte der Stadt Rom, 3 vols., Berlin, 1867-68.

PART II.—TOPOGRAPHY AND ARCHEOLOGY.

Rome? is situated (41° 58' 52" N. lat., 12° 28' 40" E. long.) on the banks of the Tiber, Italy, 14 miles from its present mouth, in a great plain of alluvial and marine deposit, broken into elevations by numerous masses of voleanic matter. The nine or ten hills and ridges on which the city stands are formed of masses of tufa or con- glomerated sand and ashes thrown out by neighbouring volcanoes now extinct, but active down to a very recent period. One group of these volcanoes is that around Lago Bracciano, while another, still nearer to Rome, composes the Alban Hills. That some at least of these craters have been in a state of activity at no very distant period has been shown by the discovery at many places of broken pottery and bronze implements below the strata of tufa or other volcanic deposits. Traces of human life have even been found below that great flood of lava which, issuing from the Alban Hills,

scorie into a soft and friable rock ; in other places they still lie in loose sandy beds and can be dug out with the spade. Other masses of tufa again show signs either of having been deposited in water, or else washed away from their first resting-place and redeposited with visible stratifications ; this is shown by the water-worn pebbles and chips of limestone rock, which form a conglomerate bound together by the volcanic ashes into a

sort of natural cement. A third variety is that which exists on the Palatine Hill. Here the shower of red-hot ashes has evidently fallen on a thickly-growing forest, and the burning wood, partly smothered by the ashes, has been converted into charcoal, large masses of which are embedded in the tufa rock. In some places charred branches of trecs, their form well preserved, can be easily distinguished. The so-called

‘ wall of Romulus” is built of this conglomerate of tufa and charred

flowed towards the site of Rome, only stopping about 3 miles short,

by the tomb of Cecilia Metella. | The superficial strata on which Rome is built are of three main

kinds : (1) the plains and valleys on the left bank of the Tiber are

wood ; a very perfect section of the branch of a tree is visible on one of the bloeks by the Scale Caci.

So great have been the physical changes in the site of Rome Physieal since the first dawn of the historic period that it is difficult now changes

Site.

covered, as it were, by a sea of alluvial deposit, in the midst of

which (2) the hills of volcanic origin rise like so many islands ; and |

(3) on the right bank of the Tiber, around the Janiculan and Vatican Hills, are extensive remains of an ancient sea-beach, conspicuous in parts by its fine golden sand and its deposits of greyish white potter’s clay. From its yellow sand the Janiculan has been some- times known as the Golden Hill, a name which survives in the church on its summit called 8. Pietro in Montorio (Monte d’Oro). In addition to these three chief deposits, at a few places, especially in the Aventine and Pincian Hills, under-strata of travertine crop out—a hard limestone rock, once in solution in running water, and deposited gradually as the water lost its carbonic-acid solvent, a process still rapidly going on at Terni, Tivoli, and

other places in the neighbourhood. The conditions under whieh the tufa hills were formed have been very various, as is clearly seen by an ex- amination of the rock at different places. The volcanic ashes and sand of which the tufa is composed appear in parts to lie just as they were showered down from the crater; in that case it shows but little sign of stratification, and consists wholly of igneous pro- ducts. In parts time and pressure have bound together these

Ce ee

1 The limited space available for the following article is devoted mainly to those buildings of which some remains still exist, to the unavoidable neglect of a large number which are known only from documentary evidence. The plan of the Foruin (Plate VII.) and nearly all the cuts have been measured and drawn by the author specially to illustrate this article.

to realize what its aspect once was. Velabrum, the great Campus Martius (now the most crowded part of modern Rome), and other valleys were once almost impassable marshes or pools of water (Ov., Fast., vi. 401; Dionys., 0h, EOE The draining of these valleys was effected by means of the great cloace, which were among the earliest important architectural works of Rome (Varro, Ling. Lat., iv. 149). Again, the various hills and ridges were once more numerous and very much more abrupt than they are now. At an early period, when each hill was crowned by a separate village fort, the great object of the inhabitants was to increase the steepness of its cliffs and render access difficult, At a later time, when Rome was united under one government, the very physieal peculiarities which had originally made its hills so populous, through their natural adaptability for defence, beeame extremely inconvenient in a united city, where architectural symmetry and splendour were above all things aimed at. Hence the most gigantic engineering works were undertaken : tops of hills were levelled, whole ridges eut away, and gentle slopes formed in the place of abrupt clifis. The levelling of the Velia and the excavation of the site for Trajan's forum are instances of this. The same works were continued in the Middle Ages, as when in the 14th century an access was made to the Capitoline Arx? from the side of the Campus Martius ; up to

that time a stcep cliff had prevented all approach except from the side of the Forum. pha i a ae a

2 By the great flight of marble steps up to 8, Maria in Ara Coli.

The Forum Romanum, the in site.

808 ROME [TOPOGRAPHY AND

And under the present Government an even more extensive plan, called the "piano regolatore," is being (1886) gradually carried out, with the object of reducing hills and valleys to one uniform level, ou which wide boulevards are being constructed on the chess- board plan of an American city. 'The constant fires which have devastated Rome have been a great agent in obliterating the natural contour of the ground. The accumulated rubbish from these and other causes has in some places covered the ground to the depth of 40 feet, especially in the valleys.

Climate The climate of Rome in ancient times appears to have been

and colder than it is at present. Malarious fever in and around the

health. city existed to some extent, but to a much less degree thau it does now. The magnificent villa of Hadrian and other country houses near Rome are built on sites which are now very unhealthy. The sanitary superiority of the Campagna in ancient times was mainly due to its more complete drainage and thicker population. That fever did exist is, however, proved in many ways. Altars to the goddess Febris were erected on the Palatine and other hills, and on the Esquiline was a grove dedicated to Mephitis. The popula- tion of Rome! increased with great rapidity, till, during its most populous period in the 4th century, it was probably not less than 24 millions.?

strength and coherence. Stucco, cement, and mortar (teetortwm, opus albarium, structura testacea, and other names) are of many kinds; the ancient Romans especially excelled in their manufac- ture. The cement used for lining the channels of aqueducts (opus signinum) was made of lime mixed with pounded brick or potsherds and pozzolana; the same

mixture was used for floors under the "'nucleus " or finer cement on which the mosaic or marble paving- slabs were bedded, and was called cementum ex testis tunsis. For walls, three or four coats of stucco were used, often as much as 5 inches thick altogether ; the lower coats were of lime and pozzolana, the finishing coats of powdered white marble (opus albarvum) suit- able to receive painting. Even marble buildings were usually coated with a thin layer of this fine white stucco, nearly as hard and durable as the marble itself—a practice also employed in the finest buildings of the Greeks—probably because it formed a more absorbent ground for coloured decoration ; stone columns coated in this way were called "columne dealbate " (Cie., In Verr., ii. 1, 52 sq.). For the kinds of sand used in mortar and stucco Vitruvius (ii. 4) mentions sea, pit, and river sand, saying that pit sand is to be preferred.

Marble appears' to have come into use about the beginning of the Decora- Ist century B.c. Its introduction was at first viewed with great tive |

ANCIENT Roms. Architecture and Construction.

Building The chief building materials uscd in ancient Rome were those

materials. enumerated below. (1) Tufa, the 'ruber et niger tophus" of Vitruvius (ii. 7), the formation of which has been described above, is usually a warm brown or yellow colour. The Aventine, Palatine, and Capitoline Hills contained quarries of the tufa, much worked at an early period (see Liv., xxvi. 27, xxxix. 44, and Varro, L.L., iv. 151). It isa very bad "weather-stone," but stands well if pro- tected with stucco (Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 48). (2) Lapis Albanus, from Alba Louga, is also of volcanic origin, a conglomerate of ashes, gravel, and fragments of stone ; its quarries are still worked at Albano and Marino. (3) Lapis Gabinus, from Gabii, is very similar to the last, but harder and a better weather-stone ; it contains large lumps of broken lava, products of an earlier eruption, and small pieces of limestone. According to Tacitug (Ann., xv. 43), it is fire-proof, and this is also the case with the Alban stone. Both are now called peperino, from the black scorie, like pepper- corns, with which the brown conglomerate mass is studded. (4) Silex (mod. selec), a lava from the now extinct volcanoes in the Alban Hills, was used for aving roads, and when

broken into small pieces and mixed a lime and pozzolana formed an im- inensely durable concrete. It is dark grey, very hard, and breaks with a slightly conchoidal fracture (Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 29; Vitr., ii. 7), but does not resemble what is now called stlex or flint. (5) Lapis Tiburtinus (travertine), the chief quarries of which are at Tibur (Tivoli) and other places along the river Anio, isa hard pure carbonate of lime, of a creamy white colour, deposited from run- ning or dripping water in a highly stratified form, with frequent cavities and fissures lined with crystals. As Vitruvius (ii. 5) says, it is a good weather-stone, but is soon calcined by fire. If laid horizontally it is very strong, but if sct on end its crystalline struc- ture is a great source of weakness, and it splits from end to end. Neglect on the part of Roman builders of this important precau- tion in many cases caused a complete failure in the structure. This was notably the case in the rostra (see below). (6) Pulvis Puteo- lanus (pozzolana), so called from extensive beds of it at Puteoli, is a voleanic product, which looks like red sandy earth, and lies in enormous beds under and round the city of Rome. When mixed with lime it forms a very strong hydraulic cement, of equal use in concrete, mortar, or undercoats of stucco. It is to this material that the concrete walls of Rome owe their enormous strength and durability, in many cases far exceeding those of the most massive stone masonry. Vitruvius devotes a chapter (bk. ii, ch. 6) to this very important material.

Bricks were either sun-dried or kiln-baked (lateres crudi aut cocti). The remarks of Vitruvius (ii. 3) seem to refer wholly to sun-dried bricks, of which no examples now exist in Rome. It is very important to recognize the fact that among the existing ancient buildings of Rome there is no such thing as a brick wall or a brick arch in the true sense of the word; bricks were merely used as a fac-

jealousy, as savouring of Greek luxury. The orator Crassus was materials, the first to use it in his house on the Palatine, built about 92 B.c. ; | and, though he had only six small columns of Hymettian marble, | he was for this luxury nicknamed the " Palatine Venus" by the stern republican M. Brutus (Plin., A.N., xxxvi. 3). The tem- porary wooden theatre of the edile M. Amilius Scaurus, built in 58 B.C., appears to have been the first building in which marble was | more largely used ; its 8360 columns and

the lower order of its scena were of Greek marble (see Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 3, 24). Ina very few : years, under the rule of Augustus, marble became very common. ?

Of white statuary marble four principal varietics were used. (1)) Marmor Lunense, from Luna, near the modern Carrara (Strabo, v.), is of many qualities, from the purest creamy white and the finest grain to the coarser sorts disfigured with bluish grey streaks. (Ex., the eleven Corinthian columns in the Dogana di Terra.) (2) Mar- |

mor Hymettium, from Mount Hymettus, near Athens, is coarser in grain than the best Luna marble and is usually marked with grey or blue striations (Strabo, x.), (Ex., the forty-two columns in the nave ofS Maria Maggiore and the columns in §. Pietro in Vincoli.) (8) Marmor Pentelicum, from Mount Pentelicus, also near Athens, is very fine in grain and of a pure white ; it was more used for : architectural purposes than for statues, though some sculptors pre- | ' |

ferred it above all others, especially Scopas and Praxiteles (Paus., Arcad., viii.). (Ex., the bust of the young Augustus in the Vatican.) (4) Marmor Pariwm, from the Isle of Paros, is very beautiful, though coarse in texture, having a very crystalline structure.

Nine chief varicties of coloured marbles were used in Rome. (1) Coloured Marmor Numidiewm (mod. giallo antico ; Plin., H.N., v. 3), from marbles. Numidia and Libya, hence also called Libycum, is of a rich yellow, deepening to orange and even pink, Enormous quantities of it were used, especially for columns, wall-linings, and pavements. (Ex., six large columns in the Pantheon and seven on the arch of Con- stantine, taken from the arch of 'Trajan ; the eighth column is iu the Lateran basilica.) (2) Marmor Carystiwm (mod. etpollino), from | Carystus in Eubcea (Strabo, x.), has alternate wavy strata of white i] and pale green—the " undosa Carystos " of Statius (Sélv., i. 5, 86). ' From its well-defined layers like an onion (cipolla) is derived its 1 modern name. (Ex., columns of temple of Faustina.) (3) Marmor il Phrygium or Synnadicum (mod. pavonazetto), from Synnada in Phrygia (Strabo, xii. ; Juv., xiv. 307 ; Tibull., iii, 3, 18), is a slightly translucent marble, with rich purple markings, violet . verging on red. _ It was fabled to be stained with the

blood of Atys | (Stat., Stlv., i. 5, 86). (Ex., twelve fluted columns in S. Lorenzo fuori le Mura, and large columns in the apse of S. Paolo fuori, saved | from the ancient nave of the basilica, burnt in 1828.) (4) Marmor Lasiwm (probably the modern porta santa), from asus, is mottled 1 with large patches of dull red, olive green, and white. The "holy | door" of St Peter's is framed with it, hence its modern name. | (Ex., the slabs in front of the Grecostasis and four columns in 8.

Agnese fuori le Mura.) (5) Marmor Chium (probably the modern i Africano), from Chios, is similar in colour and marking to the | porta santa, but more brilliant in tint. (Ex, a great part of the

paving of the Basilica Julia and two large columns in the centre of

the fagade of St Peter's.) (6) Rosso antico (the ancient name is un-

known) is a very close-grained marble of a rich deep red, like blood.

Asa rule it does not occur in large pieces, but was much used for

3 The oft-quoted boast of Augustus (Suet., Aug., 29) that he ' found Roine of brick and left it of marble" has probably much truth in it, if for "brick" we read " peperino and tufa." In the time of Augustus burnt brick was very i little used, the usual wall-facings being opus quadratum of tufa or peperino, and opus reticulatum of tufa only. The confessiones or erypts in front of the high {

|

;

{

from about the size of a man's fist and embcdded in cement made of lime and pozzolana,—forming one solid mass of enormous

I See a good article on this subject in the Monografia di Roma, vol. ii., 1878 2 Works to be consulted.—GroLoay.—Brocchi, Sue di Roma, 1820, and its supplement by Ponzi, Storia Jisica di Roma, 1867 : Mantovani,

Descrizione geologica della, Campagna di Roma, 1875 ; Giordano and Mantovani, Monograjia di Roma, 1878, vol. i. pp. 1-exxili., and pp. 51-79; Mauro, Analisi chimica delle , 1884; Pinto, Aque potabili nell Agro Romano, 1883. eae AND ZooLocy.—Bonaparte, Fauna Italica, 1835; Sanguinetti, Pro- Lromus Flore Romane ; Deakin, Flora of the Colosseum, 1855 ; Terrigi, ' Flora &c., del Quirinale," in Acad. Pont. d. Lincei, May 1882. '*

altars of St Peter's, 8. Maria Maggiore, 8. Pietro in Vincoli, and other churches in Rome are museums of the rarer and more splendid marbles used by the ancient Romans, as their walls and pavements are covered with the richest Specimens found during excavations. All the fine marbles in Roman churches have been taken from ancient buildings ; an excellent account of these is given by Corsi, Pietre antiche, 1845.

Granites From the latter part of the 1st century B.c. hard stones— granites At first tufa only was used in opus quadratum, as we sec in the Opus and and basalts—were introduced in great quantities. The basalts— | so-called wall of Romulus. Next the harder peperino began to be quad- basalts. "basanites" of Pliny (xxxvi. 11)—are very refractory, and can only | worked: it is used, though sparingly, in the great Servian wall, ratum. be worked by the help of emery or diamond dust. The former was | and during the later republic appears to have been largely employed obtained largely at Naxos; diamond-dust drills are mentioned by | for exterior walls or points where there was heavy pressure, while Pliny (H.N., xxxvii. 76). The basalts are black, green, and brown, | other parts were built of tufa. Thirdly, travertine appears to have 'and are usually free from spots or markings ; examples of all three | been introduced about the 2d century B.C., but was used at first for exist, but are comparatively rare. The red variety called "por- | merely ornamental purposes, very much as marble was under the phyry " was used in enormous quantities. It is the " porphyrites" | empire ; after about the middle of the 1st century A.D. travertine of Pliny (#.N., xxxvi. 11), and was brought from Egypt. It has a | began to be largely used for the solid mass of walls, as in the temple rich red ground, covered with small specks of white felspar; hence | of Vespasian and the a it was also called "leptopsephos." A large number of columns of | Colosseum. The tufa al

HAT il Mh it exist, and it wasmuch used for pavements of opus Alexandrinum. | or peperino blocks uA MN A rich green porphyry or basalt was also largely used, but not in | were roughly 2 (Ro- such great masses as the red porphyry. It has a brilliant green | man) feet thick in ground covered with rectangular light green crystals of felspar. | regular courses, iso- This is the lapis Lacedemonius (wrongly called by the modern | domuwm, by 2 feet Romans "'serpentino"), so named from its quarries in Mount | across the end, and Taygetus in Lacedemonia (Paus., Lac., iii. and viii.; Plin., H.N., | under the republic Xxxvi, 11; Juv., xi. 173). It appears to have been mostly used | often exactly 4 feet for pavements and panels of wall linings. The granites used in | long, so that two Rome came mostly from near Phile on the Nile (Plin., H.N., | blocks set endways xxxvi. 13). The red sort was called lapis pyrrhopecilus and the | ranged with one set grey lapis pswronius, The columns in the Basilica Ulpia are a fine | lengthways. They example of the latter ; both sorts are uscd for the columns of the | were then arranged Pantheon and those of the temple of Saturn in the Forum. Gigantic | in alternate courses ships were specially made to carry the obelisks and other great | of headers and _ monoliths (Plin.,, H.W, xxxvi. 1, 14). stretchers, so as to Archi- The style of architecture employed in ancient Rome may be said | make a good bond ; tectural +o have passed through three stages,—the Etruscan, the Greek, and | this is the "em- styles. the Roman. During the first few centuries of the existence of the plecton" of Vitruvius city, both the methods of construction and the designs employed | (ii. 8). The so- called appear to have been purely Etruscan. The earliest temples were | Tabularium of the either simple celle without columns, as we see on the Palatine by | Capitol is a good the Scale Caci, or else, in the case of the grander temples, such as | example of this (see fig. 1). The harder

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

small cornices and other mouldings in interiors of buildings. Its uarries in Greece are still worked. (The largest pieces known are ie fourteen steps to the high altar of S. Prassede and two columns nearly 12 feet high in the Rospigliosi Casino dell' Aurora.) (7) Nero antico is probably the ancient marmor Tenarium, from Cape Tenarus in Sparta. It is mentioned by Tibullus (iii. 3, 14) in con- junction with Phrygian and Carystian

marbles ; see also Prop., iii. 2, and Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 48. (Ex., two columns in the choir of the church of Ara Ceeli.) (8) Lapis Atracius (verde antieo), found at Atrax in Thessaly (Liv., xxxii. 15), was one of the favourite materials for decorative architecture ; it is not strictly a marble (i.¢., a calcareous stone) but a variety of " precious serpentine," with patches of white and brown on a brilliant green ground. It seldom oceurs in large masses. (The finest known specimens are the twenty-four columns beside the niches in the nave of the Lateran basilica.) (9) The hard Oriental alabaster, the " onyx" or 'falabastrites" of Pliny (H.N., xxxvi. 12, xxxvii. 32); its chief quarries were on the Nile near Thebes,! in Arabia, and near Damascus. In Pliny's age it was a great rarity ; but in later times it was introduced in large quantities, and fragments of a great many columns have been found on the Palatine, in the baths of Caracalla, and elsewhere. It is semi-transparent, and beautifully marked with concentric nodules and wavy strata. An immense number of other less common marbles have been found, including many varieties of breccia, but their ancient names are unknown.

that of Capitoline Jupiter, the columns were very widely spaced (areostyle), and consequently had entablatures of wooden beams. The architectural decorations were more generally in gilt bronze or painted terra-cotta than in stone, and the paintings or statues which decorated the buildings were usually the work of Etruscan

very able engineers, and this led to the development of a new and more purely Roman style, in which the restrictions imposed by the use of the stone lintel were put aside and large spaces were covered with vaults and domes cast in semifluid concrete, a method which had the enormous advantage of giving the arched form without the constant thrust at the springing which makes true arches or vaults of wide span so difficult to deal with. The enormous vaults of the great therme, the basilica of Constantine, and the like cover their spaces with one solid mass like a metal lid, giving the form but not the principle of the arch, and thus allowing the vault to be set on walls which would at once have been thrust

apart had they been subjected to the immense leverage which a true arched vault con- stantly exerts on its imposts.4 This is a very important point, and one which is usually overlooked, mainly owing to the Roman prac- tice of facing their concrete with bricks, which (from an examina- tion of the surface only) appear to be a principal item in the con- struction. The walls of the Pantheon, for example, are covered with tiers of brick arches, and many theories have been invented as to their use in distributing the weight of the walls. But a re- cognition of the fact that'these walls are of concrete about 20 fect thick, while the brick facing averages scarcely 6 inches in thickness, clearly shows that these "relieving arches" have no more con- structional use as far as concerns the pressure than if they were painted on the surface of the walls. Exactly the same reasons apply to the superficial use of brick in all arches and vaults.

and more valuable travertine was not cut in this regular T way, but pieces of all

RAVERT INE: PAVEM Qerare

SS 1G. 1.—Example of op

artists.? The Greek influence is more obvious; almost all the | sizes were used, just "'¢ sot of the stairs of the Tabularium (see Plate temples of the earlier imperial age are Greek, with certain modifi. | as they happened to yr). _The flat arch C is of travertine, the rest of cations, not only in general design but in details and ornaments. | come from the peperino. A. Footing-course of rough stones. L.

Greek architects were largely employed; and Roman architects such as Vitruvius and C. Mutius in the 1st century B.c., Severus and Celer under Nero, and Rabirius under Domitian were Greek by education, and probably studied at Athens (see Vitr., vii., Pref. ; Hirt, Gesch. d. Bauwkunst, ii. p. 257; Burn, Rome, p. 76).2 The Romans, however, though quite devoid of artistic originality, were

1 These Nile quarries have been worked during the present century, and ey blocks were imported into Rome for the rebuilding of S. Paolo fuori le

ura.

_ 2 Pliny (H.N., xxxy. 45), quoting Varro, says that the decorations in paint- ing and sculpture of the temple of Ceres near the Circus Maximus (now 8. Maria in Cosmedin) were the work of the first Greek artists employed in Rome, and that before that (c. 498 B.c.) "all things in temples were Etruscan." Vitruvius (iii. 8) says, "' Ornantque signis fictilibus aut ereis inauratis earuin fastigia Tuscanico more, uti est ad Cireum Maximum Cereris, et Herculis Pompeiani, item Capitolii" (comp. iv. fy, Wa. 8):

3 The frequent use of engaged columns is a peculiarity of Roman architec- ture, but it is not without precedent in Greek buildings of the best period, e.g., in the lion-tomb at Cnidus and the temple of Zeus at Agrigentum. Sur- face enrichments over the mouldings were used far more largely by the Romans than by the Greeks.

Concrete foundation, exposed by the lowering of the

ony = order to paving when the temple of Vespasian was built.

avoid waste: blocks as much as 15 by 8 feet were used, and the courses varied in thickness—the " pseudisodomum" of Vitruvius. When tufa or peperino was mixed with the travertine, it was cut so as to range with the irregular courses of the latter.

It is an interesting point to note the manner in which the Roman builders mixed their different materials according to the weight they had to carry. While tufa was frequently used for the main walls, peperino (¢.g., in the Servian wall on the Aventine) or travertine (¢.g., in the forum of Augustus and the temple of For- tuna Virilis, so called) was inserted at points of special pressure, such as piers or arches (see fig. 21 below). The Colosseum is a particularly elaborate example of this mixed construction with three degrees of pressure supported by three different materials (see fig. 2).

4 In the beautiful drawings of Choisy (L' Art de bdtir chez les Romains, Paris, 1873) the structural importance of the brick used in vaults and

arches is very much exaggerated.

XX, — 102

Mortar,

Clamps,

Opus retieu- latum.

810 ; ROME [TOPOGRAPHY AND

The use of mortar with opus quadratum is a sign of an early rather than a late date.1 It occurs in the Servian wall on the Aventine, in the Tabularium,and, most striking of all, in the Tul- lianum under the "Mamertine prison'? — cer- tainly one of the oldest buildings in Rome (see fig. 11). Under the empire massive blocks, whether of tufa, traver- tine, or marble,

——|

———

are set without

any mortar. It

must, a PS —

be observed tha ————

in these early MMs Hi

instances the i in i yen HL

oo a Maeve

a thin stratum =| es (wel ES

thicker” than sur a Ll

thicker than

—| ===] ————————

B=] ———-—

MORE» SOADeH i a d t rests 7 -. USGL Et – 7 it 1 iw cement to bind ea a the blocks to. Fo i simply to give Beat —$ 0 _Is FEET

the joints a Fra, 2.—Example of construction in which os 8 ing are used ; upper part of one of the inner radiating walls per en mune under the come of the Colosseum. A, A. Marble seats = . ~l© _ on brick and concrete core, supported on vault made of actual binding puinice-stone concrete ©. B. Travertine arch at end of together was raking vault ©. D. One of the travertine piers built in done by clamps flush with the tufa wall to give it extra strength. HE, E. and. dowels. 24 seg? 4 tufa Cy Fags faced with a bricks, . ? ing the vaults of pumice concrete which suppor e

well as by the marbleseats. F. Travertine pier at end of radiating wall. mass and wei ght G. Brick-faced arch of concrete to carry floor of passage. of the reat H, H. Tufa wall, opus quadratum. J, J, J. Line of steps § in next bay. K, K. Surface arches of brick, too shallow

blocks used. Ex- to be of any constructional use, and not meant for orna- cept in the ear- ment, as the whole was stuccoed; they only face the liest masonry, wall (which is about 4 feet thick) to the average depth

*each block was °! * inches.*

very carefully fastened, not only to the next blocks on the same course, which was done with double dove-tailed dowels of wood, but also to those above and below with stout iron clamps, run with lead (Vitr.,

ii. 8). In more ornamental marble TTS eR work bronze clamps were often used.]] WY Qs When concrete was employed it ; 3 was faced cither with blocks of , 7 Pp opus quadratum (¢.9., the Servian yy Ar: Pr wall along

the Aventine) or with opus incertum—small irregularly shaped blocks of tufa 3 to 6 inches across, with pointed ends driven into the concrete while it was soft, and worked smooth on the face only (see fig. 8). Thirdly, in the ~. Ist century B.C. opus reticulatum,? also of tufa, was largely uscd alone ; after that it began to be mixed with brickwork. It is very neat in ap- pearance, and is often fitted with great care, though it was generally _ | covered with stucco. The so-called © "'house of Livia" on the Palatine is a good example of the earlier sort, when the quoins were made \ of small rectangular blocks of tufa. SECTION OF ANGLE JHM The palace of Caligula has it With Fra, 3.—Conerete wall faced with (A) quoins of brick facing. Thoughin opus incertum and (B) opus reticu- Rome opus reticulatum was always latum. C shows the section, similar made of tufa, in the neighbourhood ™ ao

of the city it was sometimes of peperino or even lava, where these materials were found on the spot.

1 Choisy (L' Art de batir chez les Romains, Paris, 1873) is mistaken in his denial of the early use of mortar by the Romans.

2 The expansion of the iron through rust, which caused the stone to split, has frequently been a great source of injury to Roman walls, as well as the practice, common in the Middle Ages, of breaking into the stones in order to extract the metal.

3 These two kinds of stone facings are mentioned thus by Vitruvius (ii. 8),

"reticulatum, quo nune [reign of Au: ustu n i a ra a ' {reign g Ss] omnes utuntur, et antiquum, quod

Of concrete walls faced with burnt bricks no dated example Brick earlier than the middle of the Ist century z.c. is known. The facing, Pantheon (27 B.c.) is the most important early specimen of certain date. The bricks used are always triangular in shape, so as to present a large surface on the face with little expenditure of brick, and also to improve the bond with the concrete behind (see fig. 4).

Even party walls of small rooms, only 7 inches thick, are not built

solid, but have a concrete core faced with brick triangles about

3 inches long. Owing to this method of form- ing the walls it was | necessary to support | the facing until the | concrete was set, which | appears to have been done with a wooden framing covered with || planks on the inside. |} In some cases the planks ag eae were nailed outside the Fic. 4.—Section of concrete wall, showing the wooden uprights, as was use of bricks merely as a facing,

done with the unfaced concrete walls (see below), and then a series of perpendicular grooves appear in the face of the brickwork. Walls faced with opus reticulatum must have been supported temporarily in the same way.

The character of the brick facing is a great help towards dcter- mining the date of Roman buildings; it has been stated that this can be done simply by measuring the number of brick courses that go to a foot,—the more the bricks the earlier the work. This, how- ever, is not the case. In early work the bricks are thick and the joints thin, while in later times the reverse is the case. Thus brickwork of the time of Severus and later usually has more bricks to the foot than that of the Flavian pcriod. The following list gives a few characteristic specimens of different dates.

Average Average Building. thickness of] thickness of

Bricks, Joints. Inches. Inches.

14 4

+ § to li tol to 1 tol to 4

14 +

1y 1} 1 tol}

eae

1 %

1dto13 | 14 toif

The length of the bricks as it appears on the face is no guide | to the date, owing to the fact that one or more of the sharp points of the brick triangles were very frequently broken off before they

were used. Moreover, varieties both in quality of workmanship and

size of the bricks often occur in work of the same date ; anew gang

of workmen or a batch of bricks from a fresh figlina might easily

occasion this. In the remains of Nero's Golden House great

varieties appear, and some of the walls in the inferior rooms are

faced with very irregular and careless brickwork.4 Special care

and neatness were always employed in the rare cases when the wall

was not to be covered with stucco, which in the absence of marble

was usually spread over both inside and outside walls. All these circumstances make great caution necessary in judging of dates;

fortunately after the 1st century A.p., and in some cases even

earlier, stamps impressed on bricks, and especially on the large

tiles used for arches, give clearer indications. The reason of the | almost universal use of smooth facings cither of opus reticulatum | or of brick over concrete walls is a very puzzling question ; for con- crete itself forms an excellent ground for the stucco coating or back- ing to the marble slabs, while the stucco adhcres with difficulty to a smooth facing, and is very liable to fall away. The modern practice of raking out the joints to form a key was not employed by the Romans, but before the mortar was hard they studded the face of the wall with marble plugs and iron or bronze nails driven | into the joints, so as to give a hold for the stncco—a

great waste | both of labour and material.® The quality of the mortar varies

according to its date: during the 1st and 2d centuries it is of most

remarkable hardness, —made of lime with a mixture of coarse

pozzolana of a bright red colour; in the 3d century it began to

be inferior in quality ; and the pozzolana used under the later

empire is brown instead of red.

Concrete was at first always made of lumps of tufa; then traver- Concrete | tine, lava, broken bricks, and even marble were used, in fact all wallsand the chips and fragments of the mason's yard. Under the empire vaults. the concrete used was of travertine or lava mostly for foundations, . of tufa or broken bricks for walls, and of tufa or pumice-stone (for the sake of lightness) for vaults. Massive walls were cast in a

4 Some of the bricks are as much as 2% inches thick, while 1} inches is the usual maximum for Roman bricks. : ;

5 The Roman method of applying stucco to walls with a wooden " float," ex- actly as is done now, is shownin a painting from Pompeii(see Ann. Inst., 1881).

|

—— ——

a CO ES

.

Marble

linings, &e.

Ancient

‘slab. Fig. 5 gives an

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

mould ; upright timbers, about 6 by 7 inches thick and 10 to 14 feet long, were set in rows on each face of the future wall; planks 9 to 10 inches wide were nailed to them, so as to form two sides of a sort of box, into which the semi-fluid mass of stones, lime, and pozzolana was poured. When this was set the timbers were re- moved and refixed on the top of the concrete wall; then fresh concrete was poured in ; and this process was repeated till the wall was raised to the required height. Usually such cast-work was only used for foundations and cellar walls, the upper parts being faced with brick ; but in some cases the whole wall to the top was cast in this way and the brick facing omitted. In strength and durability no masonry, however hard the stone or large the blocks, could ever equal these walls of concrete when made with hard lava or travertine, for each wall was one perfectly coherent mass, and could only be destroyed by a laborious process like that of quarry- ing hard stone from its native bed. Owing to this method of forming the Roman buildings the progress of the work from day to day can often be traced by a change in the look of the concrete. About 3 feet high appears to have been the average amount of wall raised in a day.

Marble linings were fixed very firmly to the walls with long clamps of metal, —< hooked at the end so as to hold in a hole made in the marble

example, of the time of Augustus, fixed against a stone wall. The quantity of rich inarbles which, for at least three centuries, were being dug out in

countless quarries in ; the East, by whole 56 armies of workmen, = andconstantly poured

into Rome is almost D.

beyond calculation Scarcely a church is without columns and wall-linings _ stolen ; from ancient build ings, and the more

0. ;: 6. 9. IZ.INCHES. magnificent chapels, _

Fria. 5.,—Exainple of marble lining, from the cella of such as those of the " 'the temple bf Concord. A. Slabs of Phrygian Borghese, Corsini, marble. B. Plinth moulding of Numidian " giallo. and Cibo families, ©. Slab of cipollino (Carystian marble). D. Paving

ith the whole cl ', of porta santa. Eand F. "nucleus" and "rudus" ki ewhore churen of concrete bedding. G, G. Iron clamps run with of S. Maria della Vit- toria, owe their splen-

lead to fix marble lining. H. Bronze clamp. J. Cement backing. dour entirely to their wall-linings of ancient marbles, porphyry, and alabaster.1 The blocks were usually marked in the quarry with a number, and often with the names of the reigning emperor and the overseer of the quarry. These quarry-marks are often of great value as indications of the date of a building or statue.? Metropolitan building Acts, not unlike those of moderu London, were enacted by several of the emperors. These fixed the materials to be used, the thickness of walls, the minimum width of streets, the maximum height allowed for houses, and the like. After the great fire in Nero's reign, 64 A.D., an Act was passed requiring external walls to be faced with fire-proof materials, such as peperino or burnt brick ; this Act was being prepared long before the fire,—strong evidence as to this being a wilful act on Nero's part, as is asserted by Suetonius (Nero, 38). . Enormous accumulations of statues and pictures enriched Rome

'orks of during its period of greatest splendour. In the first place, the

art.

numerous statues of the republican and even of the regal period were religiously preserved at a time when, from their archaic char- acter, they must have been regarded rather as objects of sacred or archeological interest than as works of art (Plin., H.W., xxxiv. 9-16, xxxv.7). Secondly came the large Greco-Roman class, mostly copies of earlier Greek works, executed in Rome by Greek artists. To this class belongs most of the finest existing sculpture preserved in the Vatican and other museums. Thirdly, countless statues and pictures were stolen from almost every important

city in Greece, Magna Grecia, Sicily, and western Asia Minor. These robberies began early, and were carried on for many centuries. The importa- tions included works of art by all the chief artists from the 5th century downwards. Long lists are given by Pliny (H.W, XXXiil.- XXXvi.), and pedestals even now exist with the names of Praxiteles, Timarchus, Polycletus, Bryaxis, and others (see Bull. Comm. Arch.

1 Yet for many centuries during the Middle Ages the richest sites of ancient Rome were riddled with lime-kilns, in which the greater part of the marble was destroyed ; see Raphael's letter to Leo X. on this subject published by Visconti (Rome, 1834).

- *See Bruzza, in Ann. Inst., 1870, p. 106.*

Rom., ii. p. 176). These accumulated works of sculpture were of all materials—gold and ivory (Suet., 7%t., 2), of which seventy-four are mentioned in the catalogue of the Breviarium (see Preller, egionen, p. 231), many hundreds or even thousands of silver 3 (Plin., H.N., xxxiii. 54), while those of gilt bronze and marble must have existed in almost untold numbers (Pars., viii. 46). Nor were the accumulated stores of Greek paintings much inferior in number ; not only were easel pictures by Zeuxis, Apelles, Timanthes, and other Greek artists taken, but even mural paintings were carefully cut off their walls and brought to Rome secured in wooden frames (Plin., H.N., xxxv. 49, and compare 7bid., 45).

The basalt (silew) roads were inade of polygonal blocks of lava Roads.

neatly fitted together may and laid on a carefully prepared bed, similar to that used for mosaic paving (see Mosaic and Roaps). Roads thus made were called "vie strate." One portion only exists in Rome of early date, when the blocks were fitted together with the utmost accuracy viz., a piece of the Clivus Capitolinus in front of the temple of Saturn (see fig. 6, which also shows the massive _ travertine curb which bordered the road; in some cases the curb was of lava). The other best preserved vie strate in

Rome are those leading up to the Palatine from the Summa Sacra Via and that which follows the curved line of shops in Trajan's forum. Many others exist, but have all been ah rer ¢ in later times, with badly fitting joints.

The following is a list of the chief roads which radiated from Rome (see Plate VI.) :—(1) Via Appia and (2) Via Latina, both issued from the Servian Porta Capena, and both met at Beneventum ; (3) Via Labicana, from the P. Esquilina, passing Labicum, joined the Via Latina 30 miles from Rome ; (4) Via Gabina (later called Prenestina), also issued from the P. Esquilina and joined the Via Latina,—these two roads pass through the Claudian aqueduct gate (mod. Porta Maggiore) ; (5) Via Tiburtina, from the gate of that name to Tibur ; (6) Vie Nomentana, from the P. Collina, passing Nomen- tum, joined the Via Salaria ; (7) Via Salaria, also from the P. Collina, joined the Via Flaminia at Ancona ; (8) Via Flaminia, its first half-mile or so after leaving the Servian Porta Ratumena was known as the Via Lata ; it afterwards passed out of the Aurelian P. Flaminia, and with many branches led to the chief towns of Northern Italy, and so into Cisalpine Gaul ; (9) Via Aurelia, issued from the trans-Tiberine P. Aurelia and passed through Pisa to Gaul ; (10) Via Portuensis, from the gate of that name, also on the right bank of the Tiber, to Portus Augusti near its mouth ; (11) Via Ostiensis, from the Servian P. T'rigemina and the Aurelian P. Ostiensis to Ostia ; (12) Via Ardeatina, probably a branch from the Via Appia, led to Ardea.

Remains of Prehistorie Rome.

| He cn Paul

ANNA

J.H.M.

3._4,_3. 2. 4.0. 5.

40 Feer.

Fic. 6.—Example of early basalt road by the temple of Saturn on the Clivus Capitolinus, A. Traver- tine paving. B. Polygonal. basalt blocks. ©. Con- crete bedding. D. Rain-water gutter. The curb shown is taken from another part of the road.

It is evident from recent discoveries that the site of Rome was Plate VI. populous at a very remote period. Flint implements and remains Archaic of the early Bronze Age have been found on the Aventine and in pottery.

other places ;° and in 1874, near the arch of Gallienus on the Esquiline, the important discovery was made of a necropolis § ap- parently ot considerable extent, the tombs of which and their con- tents—fictile vases and other objects—were of Phcenician and Etruscan character, dating probably about the time of the tradi- tional founding of Rome. In February 1883 a number of very early cist tombs, formed by two slabs of stone set on edge with a third for the lid, were found during excavations on the Esquiline between the Piazza Vitt. Emmanuele and the Via di Napoleone

a

3 Highty silver statues of Augustus, some equestrian and some in quadrigze, are mentioned in the Mon. Ancyr. See p. 822 below.

4 See Nibby, Vie degli Antichi, in Nardini, vol. iv. 1820; also Livy, x. 23, x1 OL, xii 2y.

5 Under the Servian wall on the Esquiline has been found pottery of that very primitive sort which is ornamented only with rudely incised lines, zig- zags, hatchings, and dots, similar to that found under a stratum of peperino rock at Alba Longa.

6 See "Necrop. dell. Esquilino," in Ann. Inst., 1882, p. 5 sq., and Mon. Inst.,

xi., pl. xxxvii.; also Bull. Comm. Arch., iii.

Wall of Romulus.

Aneient fortifiea- tion.

812 RO

III.1 Some of the pottery found in the Esquiline necropolis was of that rare kind which is coated with white and coloured stanni- ferous enamels, examples of which have beeu found in Agina and at Camirus in Rhodes, —a method of decoration which is not Hellenic, but was common in Assyria and Egypt.? Some of the Esquiline tombs also contained terra- eotta reliefs of Oriental char- acter, covered with plumbo-vitreous glaze, coloured brilliant blues and greens, like the little figures so commonly found in Egypt. Some dim traditions of these earlier inhabitants certainly existed among the Romans: Dion Cassius (iii. 5), to account for the exist- ence of a city on the Palatine earlier than the traditional Roma Quadrata, invents an earlier Romulus and Remus to be its founders.

The most important existing relics of the time when Roman history first begins, though dimly, to take a definite shape are the so-called 'wall of Romulus," forming the circuit of the famous Roma Quadrata of the Palatine. Unfortunately the accounts of the extent of the Pomerium (Postmeriwm) or sacred enclosure give but little help towards defining its circuit. Even its precise nature is a matter of doubt, in spite of the aecounts of it given by Varro (Z.L., v. 143), Livy (i. 44), and Dionysius (i. 88), as is usually the case with descriptions in ancient writers of what was in their time purely an archeological matter. It is, however, certain that the Pomerium in some way or other followed the circuit of the primi- tive city, called from its shape Roma Quadrata. Its boundaries are given thus by Tacitus (Ann., xii. 24): starting from the Forum Boarium at the west corner of the Palatine, it goes to the Ara Maxima (see Ann. Inst., 1854, p. 28) and the Ara Consi, both prob- ably in the Vallis Murcie, afterwards occupied by the Circus Maximus ; but the exact positions of these points are unknown.® The next stages are the Curie Veteres, the Saccllum Larum, and lastly the Forum Romanum. Unfortunately the known points in this description, namely the two fora, are precisely those which mark that part of the circuit known from existing remains of the walls. It is therefore to the scanty relics of the wall which still exist on the other sides that we must turn to determine the extent of Roma Quadrata. These*

enable us to fix its line along the whole valley of the Velabrum, on the west of the hill, and along the valley of the Cireus Maximus as far as the so-galled Domus Gelo- tiana, about half-way on the south side (see fig. 17). The doubtful point has been whether the line of the wall from north to south included the whole extent of the hill, or passed across it, along the line of that deep natural valley which once divided the Palatine into two parts, and was in later times filled up and built upon by Domitian in the construction of his great palace. Recent excaya- tions have, however, disclosed at several points the existence of this ancient wall cxtending along the south-eastern part of the Palatinc; moreover, there is strong evidence as to Roma Quadrata being co- extensive with the whole hill from Cicero, De Rep., ii. 6, and Aul. Gell., xiii. 14. Traces of the wall have been found running cast- wards from the Porta Mugonia, and that piece of wall by the Domus Gelotiana which starts to run northwards across the middle of the hill has been found to be merely a projecting spur, which again turns eastwards, so as to include apparently the rest of the Palatine where the palace of Severus now stands.

The most perfect remains of the Romulean wall are those near the west angle of the hill (see fig. 7). These show that the forti- fications of Roma Quadrata were formed in the usual manner of Etruscan citics, in which the natural strength given by cliffs was inercased by artificial means. The wall was set neither at the top nor at the foot of the hill, but more than half-way up, a level terrace or shelf all round being eut in the rock on which the base of the wall stood. Above that the hill was cut away into a cliff, not quite perpendicular but slightly " battering" inwards, to give greater stability to the wall, which was built np against it, like a retaining wall, reaching to the top of the cliff, and probably a few feet higher. The stones used in this wall are soft tufa, a warm brown in colour, and full of masses of charred wood. The cutting to form the steep cliff probably supplied part of the material for the wall; and ancient quarries, afterwards used as reservoirs for water, exist in the mass of rock on which the so-called temple of Jupiter Victor stands. It has been asserted that these tufa blocks are not cut but split with wedges; this, however, is not the case. Tufa does not split into rectangular masses, but would be shattered to pieces by a wedge ; moreover, distinct tool-marks can be seen on all the blocks whose surface is well preserved and in the quarries

A Not. degli Scavi, February 1883. An account of pottery found in Rome with archaic incised inscriptions is given in Ann. Inst., 1880.

2 See also Brizio, Pitture e Sepolert sull' Esquilino, 1876, and De Rossi, Ogetti arcarcr rinvenuti nel Viminale, 1878.

: See Becker, Handb. der rim. Alterth., Leipsic, 1848, i. pp. 105-6.

: See Dionys., i, 65 ; Solinus, i. 17; Plut., Rom., 9.

The Ara Maxima of Hercules was probably near the careeres or starting end of the circus (Dionys., i. 40). The Ara Consi (Equestrian Neptune) gave its name to the Consualia, games in honour of this deity held by Romulus, at which the celebrated capture of the Sabine women took place. In later times this altar existed on or below the spina of the circus, apparently near the meta at the opposite end to the carceres; it was usually hidden from sight, but during the Ludi Circenses was uncovered and exposed to view (see Plut., Rom., 14; Varro, L. L., vi. 20; Tertull., De Spec., v. 8).

ME

themselves. Chisels from one-fourth to three-fourths of an inch in width were used, and also a sharp-pointed pick or hammer, The wall is about 10 feet thick at the bottom, and increases in thickness above as the scarped cliff against which it is built recedes. It is built of blocks laid in alternate courses of headers and stretchers, varying in thickness from 22 to 24 inches, in length from 8 to 5 feet, and in width from 19 to 22 inches. These blocks are _ carefully worked on their beds, },7oP er HILL but the face is left jj, 5? / rough, and the vertical (qj & joints are in some cases |}: open, spaces of nearly 2 inches being left be- tween block and block ; in other cases the ver- tical joints are worked true and close like the beds. The open vertical joints are peculiar to the masonry of this early period ; in the wall of Servius they always fit closely, at least on the visible face of the wall. No mortar was used.. At two points on the side of the Velabrum (see 8 // and 9 on the plan of the | Palatine, fig. 17) wind- =™ < – ing passages are exca- Fic. 7.—Section of prinitive wall of Roma Quad-*

. . rata. A. Original height of wall, B. Upper part vated in the tufa cliff, of cliff, now crumbled away. ©. Cistern cut in the entrance to which the tufarock. D. Levelled platform to receive was once closed by the base of wall. E, E. Cliff made steeper by cutting.

ancient wall. One of these (No. 8) in early times (before water in abundance was brought to the Palatine on aqueducts) was used as a reservoir to collect surface water, probably for use in case of siege ; circular shafts for buckets are cut downwards through the rock from the top of the hill; fig. 7 shows it in section. 'An exactly similar rock-cut cistern with vertical shafts, of very early date, exists at Alba Longa. Opposite the church of S. Teodoro a series of but- tresses belonging to the wall of Romulus exists, partly concealed by a long line of buildings of the later years of the republic and the early empire, to make room for which the greater part of the then useless wall was pulled down, and only fragments left here and there, where they could be worked into the walls of the later houses.

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

is i Mp

Three accesses only to the ancient city can now be traced. One Gates of is the so-called Scale Caci, a long sloping ascent cut through the Roma rock (see fig. 17) from the side of the Circus Maximus; some Quadrata.

remains of the earliest wall still exist along the sides of this steep ascent or staircase, The upper part of this has remains of a basalt pavement, added in later times, probably covering the more ancient rock-cut steps. The name of the gate which led at this point into Roma Quadrata is unknown. The only two gates whose name and position can be (with any degree of probability) identified are the Porta Romanula and the Porta Mugionis (Plin., H.W, iii. 5, 9). The former of these, called Porta Romana by Festus (ed. Miiller, p. 262), was at the foot of the Clivus Victoriz (sce fig. 17), at the angle next the Forum Romanum.® According to Festus it was so called by the Sabines of the Capitol because it was their natural entrance to Roma Quadrata (see also Varro, L.L., v. 164, vi. 24). The original approach to it was by a road running up the lower extra-mural

part of the hill from the direction of the Velabrum. In later times a more direct ascent to it was made from the Forum by a flight of steps, probably the Scale Anularie of Suetonius (Aug., 72; see figs. 16 and 17 and plan of the Forum, Plate VII.). The lower part of these stairs, now buried under S. Maria Liberatrice, is shown in the marble plan of Rome; the upper part, that from the Nova Via to the Clivus Victoria, still exists, and has recently been exposed. Traces of the Porta Mugionis or Mugonia (sce Sol., i, 24) have been discovered near the temple of Jupiter Stator, where a basalt paved road leads up into the Palatine from the Summa Sacra Via and the Summa Nova Via, which join near the arch of Titus ; exposure to weather has now destroyed the soft tufa blocks of which this gate was built. This is probably the "veterem portam Palatii" of Livy (i. 12) through which the Romans fled when defeated by the Sabines. ancient Etruscan rule (see Servius, Ad 4n., i. 422), probably ex- isted on the east side of the hill, but its site is uncertain. J udging from the shape of the hill, it may very possibly have been under the existing palace of Severus, where a road Icads from the stadium

6 The present entrance to Caligula's palace is probably exactly on the site of the ancient Porta Romana. The stairs of Cacus, being only an access for men on foot, would not he counted as one of the three necessary gates which existed in every Etruscan city, and were dedicated to Jupiter, J uno, and Minerva.

A third entrance,' according to the °

>

pr ~

Great wall of Servius.

Line of Servian wall.

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

down to the valley of the Celian; at other places the east side is precipitous. The buildings of the emperors have, however, made such

radical changes in the form of the ground that any degree of eertainty on this point is impossible. This third gate, according to Varro, who mentions (Z.Z., v. 164-5) all three, was called Janu- alis.! With regard to the last gate there is. some doubt whether he is right in its position ; Macrobius (Satur., i. 9) places it on

the slopes of the Viminal.?

Remains of Period of Kings (753-509 B.c.).

The most important remains of the regal period are the great wall, principally the work of Servius Tullius, by which he included within one circuit the separately fortified hills which were then in- habited,—the Palatine, Capitoline, Aventine, Quirinal, and Ceelian, and added two more, the Esquiline and Viminal. These seven hills formed the Septimontium® (Varro, L. L., iv. 41, vi. 24). Of even earlier date was the fort (Liv., i. 33) on the top of the Jani- culum, connected by walls with the Pons Sublicius, some massive foundations of which still exist, though now buried near the church of §. Pietro in Montorio. Existing remains show that the great wall is of more than one date ; part is probably earlier than Servius, and may be remains of the wall which, according to Livy (i. 36, 38) and Dionysius (iii. 37), was planned and in part carried out by Tarquinius Priscus ; it would seem impossible that a work of such gigantic magnitude could have been begun and completed in the lifetime of one man. It should, however, be remembered that a complete circuit of new wall was not required in this undertaking ; each, probably, of the five hills first inhabited had its own fortifica- tions, and these were utilized in the line of the new wall. The spaee thus included was divided by Servius for political, military, and religious purposes into four regiones (Varro, L. L., v. 46-54)— (1) the Suburana, including the Ccelian, and probably most of its adjacent valleys, with the Subura, the Carine, and part of the Esquiline—the derivation of Suburana from swb wrbe is from Junius, quoted by Varro; (2) Esquilina, the main part of the Esquiline, including the Oppius and Cispius (es-quil-iz, dwellings outside, cf. in-quil-inus) ; (3) Collina, the Viminal and Quirinal, which were ealled "colles" in contradistinction to the other five hills, which were called "montes" ; (4) Palatina, the Palatine and its adjacent spurs, the Velia and Germalus. It

will be observed that these four regiones do not include the Aventine, the Ca itol, and some of their adjacent valleys,—an omission for which it is not easy to account. #

Excavations of the last fifteen years have done much to deter- mine the line of the Servian wall (see Plate VI.), especially the great works undertaken in laying out a new quarter of the city on the Quirinal, Esquiline, and Viminal, which have laid bare and then mostly destroyed long lines of wall, especially along the agger. Beginning from the Tiber, which the Servian wall touched at a point near the present Ponte Rotto, and separating the Forum Olitorium (outside) from the Forum Boarium (inside), it ran in a straight line to the Capitoline Hill, the two crests of which, the Capitolium and the Arx, with the intermediate valley the Asylum, were surrounded by an earlier fortification, set (Dionys., ix. 68) éml Nopas . . . Kal wérpas darorduos. In this short space there were three gates, —(1) the Porta Flumentana next the river (see Cic., Ad Att., vii. 3; Liv., xxxv. 19, 21); (2) Porta Triumphalis, site un- known and usually only mentioned in connexion with triumphal processions (see Cic., Jn Pis., 28; Joseph., Bell. Jud., vii. 5, 4),— it was probably not used except on the occasion of triumphs ; (3) Porta Carmentalis, close to the Capitolium.' From the Capitoline Hill the wall passed to the Quirinal along a spur of elevated ground, afterwards completely cut away by Trajan. Close to the Capitol was the gate afterwards called the Porta Ratumena, whence issued the Via Lata (Plut., In Pudi., 13; Plin., H.2., viii. 42). Remains of the wall and foundations of the gate exist in Via di Marforio, Nos. 81 C and 81 E. After passing Trajan's forum, the first remains of the walls are on the slope of the Quirinal in the Colonna gardens. Near the foot of the Quirinal was the Porta Fontinalis (Liv., xxxv. 10). A piece of the wall has been exposed in the new Via Nazionale, and also an archway under the Palazzo Antonelli, which has been thought to be the Porta Fontinalis. This arch is, however, only 6 feet 6 inches wide and (to the springing of the atch) 5 feet high, which seems too small for one of the principal gates. The Porta Sanqualis (see Festus, ed. Miiller, p. 345) was also on the Quirinal, probably on the slope between the Trevi fountain and the royal palace. Its position is indicated by the

_ } See Dionys., fi. 65; Plut., Rom., ix. ; Dion Cass., various fragments; Liv., i. 7,9; Sol., i.17; Festus (ed. Miiller), pp. 258, 262.

2 See Becker, De Muris et Portis Rome, Leipsic, 1842; also "La fondazione di Roma," in Bull. Comm. Arch., ix., 1881.

3 At an early date the term "Septimontium" hada different meaning (see Plut., Ques. Rom., 69; Burn, Rome, p. 37).

4 Becker suggests (Handbuch, i. 886) that the Capitoline Hill was excluded on account of its sacred character, while the Aventine was not yet thickly populated, and the Janiculum was only occupied by the fort; see also Ann. Tnst., 1861, p. 61. 2

5 See Sol., i. 13; Liv., ii. 49, xxiv. 47, xxv. 7; Ascon., Ad Cie. in Toga, p. 90, Orell.

existence of some tombs which give the line of the road. On the north-west of the Quirinal was the Porta Salutaris (Festus, p. 327 ; Liv., ix. 43), probably near the 'Quattro Fontane." In the Barberini palace gardens, and especially in those of the Villa Bar- berini (Horti Sallustiani), extensive remains of the wall have been recently exposed and destroyed, —which was also the fate of that fine piece of wall that passed under the new office of finance, with the Porta Collina, which was not on the line of the present road, but about 50 yards to the south (see Dionys., ix. 68 ; Strabo, v. 3). Thus far in its course from the Capitol the wall skirted the slopes of hills, which were once much more abrupt than they are now ; but from the Porta Collina to the Porta Esquilina it crossed a large tract of level ground ; and here, by the construction of his great agger, Servius gained the strength whieh elsewhere was given by the natural formation of the hills. The whole linc of this agger has been recently traced and mostly destroyed. About the middle of it the Porta Viminalis was found in 1872; it stood, as Strabo says, 0rd wéow TH xwmaTr, and from it led a road which passed through the Porta Chiusa (ancient name unknown) in

Aurelian's wall. Foundations of the Porta Esquilina were found in 1876 close behind the arch of Gallienus. The further course of the wall across the valley of the Colosseum, with its Porta Querquetulana and Porta Cclimontana, probably a little beyond, is the least known part of the circuit. Hence the wall skirts the slopes of the Celian to the valley along which the Via Appia passed through the Porta Capena, near the church of S. Gregorio. Its line along the Aventine is fairly distinct, and near S. Balbina and in the Vigna Torlonia are two of the best-preserved pieces,—the former 11 courses high (22 feet), the latter 25 (50 feet). Under the Aventine it appears to have touched the river near the existing foundations supposed to be those of the Pons Sublicius. The Porta Trigemina was close by the bank. Hence to our starting-point the river formed the defence of the city, with its massive quay wall, —the xddy dxrn of Plutarch (Rom., 20). A fragmentary passage of Varro (Z. L., v. 163) mentions two other gates, Nevia and Rauduscula, "the bronze gate," but their positions are unknown. The site of the Porta Navalis is also very doubtful ; it was probably not in the Servian wall.

The wall is built of blocks of tufa, usually the softer kinds, but Its eon- varying according to its position, as in most cases the stone used struc- In some places a good deal of tion.

was that quarried on the spot. peperino is used. The blocks average from 23 to 24 inches in thickness—roughly 2 Roman feet—and are laid in alternate courses of headers and stretchers. The best preserved piece of wall—that on the Aventine in the Vigna Torlonia—has one complete arch and the starting of another ; their sills are about 34 feet from the ground outside, and probably level with the ground inside (see fig. 8).

he "i" Zz

ny en

ee t OTT ii : as si Te yp E

Fria. 8.—Part of Servian wall on Aventine.

These arches, though built of the harder stone, are not later inser- tions, but are contemporary with the wall itself. The blocks, both beds and vertical joints, are very carefully worked and set in mortar; in most cases they are bevelled round the joints. Some blocks are of great length,— dudtior AlGou Dionysius calls them. At this place the wall is backed with a thick mass of concrete ; the use of the arched openings is doubtful: they may have been embrasures for catapults.

agger, with its wall and foss, begun by the earlier kings and com- pleted by the last Tarquin. Fig. 9 shows it in section ; the earth taken from the foss (which was 100 feet wide at the bottom by 30 deep) was heaped up to form the agger, and was kept in its position by a lofty retaining wall on the front and a lower one behind. The outer wall was in places strengthened with massive buttresses closely set, or with towers ; in other places it had no projections. The back wall, the position of which shows the thickness of the

The discoveries of recent years have shown the cor- Agger of rectness of the description given by Dionysius (ix. 68) of the great Servius.

814

agger, is in parts about 33 feet from the front one, but it varies in this respect ; in other parts the agger appears to have been more

PLAN OF WALL.

- 20.30, 40. 50.

SCALE OF SECTION.

ROM E

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

round temple in the Forum Boarium ; it is still in use, and well preserved at most places. Its mouth, an archway in the great quay wall (xdédy dxrn)

nearly 11 feet wide by 12 high, consists of three rings of peperino " voussoirs," most neatly fitted. The rest of the vault and walls is built of mixed tufa and peperino.> Pliny (H.N., xxxvi. 24) gives an interesting account of what is probably this great sewer, big enough (he says) for a loaded hay-cart to pass along. The mouths of two other similar but smaller cloace are still visible in the great quay wall near the Cloaca Maxima, and a whole network of sewers exists under a great part of the Servian city. Some of these are not built with arched vaults, but have triangular tops formed of courses of stone on level beds, each pro- jecting over the one below,—a very primitive method of construc-

*tion, employed in the Tullianum (see fig. 11). The great quay Great wall of tufa and peperino which lined both banks of the Tiber for a quay considerable distance also belongs to the regal period, and was a wall. work of great solidity and strength ; it is now mostly destroyed by the action of the river. In later times this massive wall was ex- tended, as the city grew, all along the bank of the Campus Martius, and, having lost its importance as a line of defence, had frequent flights of stairs built against it, descending to the river. Some of these are shown in one of the fragments of the marble plan (see Jordan, For. Ur. Rom.; Frag. 169). In 1879 a travertine block was dredged up inscribed P. BARRONIVS. BARBA. AED. CVR. GRADOS. REFECIT, dating from the 1st century B.c. This records the repair of one of these numerous river stairs. The name **pul- chrum littus" is not a classical term, but simply a translation of Plutarch's xéAn dxrn.8*

The Tullianum is probably, next to the remains of Roma Quad- 'Tulli- rata, the earliest anun of the existing and buildin gs of Rome. career,

B by)

Fia. 9.—Section and plan (double scale) of wall and agger of Servius.

A, A. Undisturbed earth of fossa, B. Earth heaped up to form the agger. C. Road

at brink of fossa. D, Wall and buttress. E. Back retaining wall of agger. F. Level to which the fossa was filled up and built upon under the empire.

than 50 feet thick. Between the railway station and the Dogana a fine lofty piece of the front wall remains, with traces of the Porta Viminalis and of the lower back wall. Unfortunately the whole of the bank or agger proper has been removed, and the rough back of the great retaining wall exposed. Both tufa and peperino are used; the blocks vary in length, but average in depth the usual 2 Roman feet. The railway cutting which has destroyed a great part of the agger showed clearly the section of the whole work : the strata of different kinds of soil which appeared on the sides of the

— was difficult so (Dionys., iv. 18). A very curious serics of | an early Latin asons' masons' marks word, tullius, a marks. exists on the

Cloace.

foss appeared again in the agger, but reversed as they naturally would be in the process of digging out and heaping up. Dionysius (ix. 68) statcs the length of the agger to have been 7 stadia—that is, about 1400 yards—which agrees (roughly speaking) with the actual discoveries, Originally one road ran along the bottom of the foss and another along its edge ; the latter existed in imperial times. But the whole foss appears to have beensfilled up, probably in the time of Augustus, and afterwards built upon; houses of mixed brick and opus reticulatum still exist against the outside of the great wall, which was itself used as the back wall of these houses, so that we now see painted stucco of the time of Hadrian covering parts of the wall of the kings. Another row of houses seems to have faced the road mentioned above as running along

It is partly cut in the tufa rock of the Capitoline Hill and partly built of 2-feet blocks of tufa, set with thin beds of pure lime mortar, in courses projecting one over the other (sec fig. 11). Its name is ied de- rived, not from

sim

the upper edge of the foss, thus forming a long street. As early as Servius Tullius, , Tee SECTION the time of Augustus a very large part of the wall of the kings as Varro (v. 151) — a ee ee

had been pulled down and built over, so that even then its circuit

CE S+f7i-E3Z

ON THE AGGER WALL

VX AZTS ZATIVLHNK

buildings of the regal period, es- pecially on the stones of the agger wall and those of the small celle on the Palatine near

*the Scale Caci. Lente, \, H] MV 4 4> tionally an arch, They are deeply — very like the incised, usually on | aun so-called '*tomb*

the ends of the blocks, and aver- age from 10 to 14 inches in length: some are single letters or monograms; others are numbers; and some are doubtful signs,

Fra. 10.—Masons' marks on walls of the regal period.

asserts, but from

spring of water ; its original use was probably that of a cistern or well. It was closed by a conical vault, arched in shape, but not construc-

of Agamemnon" at Mycene, and many early Etrus-

*Ty ¢.9.) L, Which may be the numeral 50 or the Etruscan CH. Fig. ay — Jie 10 shows the chief forms from the Palatine and Ksquiline.4 with ba arched The Servian city did not include what is now the most crowded Ynult. alse of tute Last of sit Sop which under the empire was the most architect- was baile the 816. 11— ta _ section of 7. Deeasians *. ' ener o 2 i i i ison." A. ening in floor over the Tullianum. ae Mee oe nif te . ay ape oe by a upper part of the B, BY Solid tufa Ret nag } &, C. adhd aoe. D, E. A y hed a eine : Vet eaee ae Bee cone seems to _ Position of modern stairs and door. F, F. Front wall Tarquiniorum, but after the expulsion of the Tarquins was named have been re- Of prison with inscription of 22 4.p. G. Probable ori-*

Campus Martius from an altar to Mars, times (Liv., ii. 5).3

Of that wonderful system of massive arched sewers 4 by which, as Dionysius (iii. 68) says, every street of Rome was drained into the Tiber considerable remains exist, especially of the Cloaca Max- ima, which runs from the valley of the Subura, under the Forum (see Plate VII.), along the Velabrum, and so into the Tiber by the

eas ee

1 See Bruzza, in Ann. Inst., 1876, p. 72; J ordan, Topogr., i. p. 259.

2 It was specially that part of the Campus Martius which was named after the Circus Flaminius that was remarkable for its architectural splendour.

3 On this whole subject consult Nibby and Gell, Le Mura di Roma, 1820; Piale, Porte del Recinto di Servio, 1833 ; Becker, De Roma Muris, Leipsic, 1842; Lanciani, Ann. Inst., 1871, p. 40, Mon. Inst., ix. pl. xxvii., also Ann. Inst., 1857, p. 62, and Mon. Inst., vi. pl. iv.: Quarenghi, Le Mura di Roma, 1880 (taken from Lanciani) ; comp. Vitruvius, i. 5.

4 See Liy., i. 88, 56; Dionys., iv. 44.

dating from prehistoric

moved, and a flat ginal top of Tullianuin.

2

stone floor (a flat arch in construction) substituted. This cannot be other than the ‘“‘carcer . . . media urbe imininens foro” of Livy (i. 33), who speaks also (xxxiv. 44) of an “‘inferiorem car- cerem,” and at xxix. 22 of a criminal being put in the Tul- lianum. That its use as a cistern was abandoned is shown by the cloaca which leads from it, through the rock, to a branch of the Cloaca Maxima. This horrible place was used as a dun-
5 Mommsen is mistaken in his assertion that travertine is used in the vault of this cloaca ; and hence his argument as to its being of later date falls to the ground, “6 A great quay wall with arched cloaca, similar in

style to those in Rome, exists among the remains of the Etruscan city of Gravisem, by the sea near Tarquinii, and also in other Etruscan cities,—a similarity not unnatural if we

accept the statement of historians that the great cloace were the work of Tarquinius Priscus.

Plate VII. Forum Roman- um.

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

geon, prisoners being lowered through a hole in the stone floor, —the only access. The present stairs are modern. The two chambers are vividly described by Sallust (Cat., 55). The en- trance to the upper prison was on the left of the stairs leading up from the Forum to the Clivus Argentarius, the road to the Porta Ratumena (see Plate VI.). Lentulus and the Catiline conspirators, as well as Jugurtha and other prisoners of importance, were killed or starved to death in this fearful dungeon, which is called 76 Bdpabpov by Plutarch (Marius, xii.). According to a doubtful tradition of the Catholic Church St Peter and St Paul were im- prisoned in the Tullianum. The name Mamertine prison is of medieval origin. The front wall of the prison was restored in the reign of Tiberius 22 A.p., and bears this inscription on a projecting string-course—C. VIBIVS.C.F.RVFINVS.M.COCCEIV[S NERVA] COS.EX.S8.C.! The floor of the upper prison is about 16 feet above the level of the Forum, to which access was given by a flight of steps—Scalee Gemoniz—on which the bodies of criminals were ex- posed ;? Pliny (H.N., viii. 61) calls it the " stairs of sighs" (gradus gemitorit). Forwm Romanum and Adjacent Buildings.

The Forum Romantim or Magnum, as it was called in late times to distinguish it from the imperial fora, occupies a valley which extends from the foot of the Capitoline Hill to the north-east part of the Palatine. 'Till the construction of the great cloace it was,

. at least in wet seasons, marshy ground, in which were several pools

of water. In early times it was bounded on two sides by rows of shops and houses, dating from the time of the first Tarquin (Liv., i. 35). The shops on the south-west side facing the Sacra Via, where the Basilica Julia afterwards was built, were occupied by the Taberne Veteres. The shops on the northern side, being occupied by silversmiths, were called Taberne Argentarie (see Liv., xxvi. 27, xl. 51), and in later times, when rebuilt after a fire, were called Taberne Nove.* An altar to Saturn (Dionys., i. 34, vi. 1), tradi- tionally set up by the companions of Hercules, and an altar to Vulcan, both at the end towards the Capitol, with the temple of Vesta and the Regia at the opposite end, were among the earliest monuments grouped around the Forum. The Lacus Curtius vanished, as Varro says (Z.Z., v. 148-149), probably with other stagnant pools, when the cloace were constructed (Liv., i. 38, 56).° Another pool, the Lacus Servilius, near the Basilica Julia, was preserved in some form or other till the imperial period. Under Sulla it was used as a place to expose the heads of many senators murdered in his proscriptions (Cic., Rosc. Am., 32; Seneca, De Prov., 3). The Vulcanal or Hephesteum was an open area, so called from the early altar to Vulcan, and was (like the Comitium) a place of public meeting, at least during the regal period.® It was raised above the Comitium, and probably was a space levelled on the lower slope of the Capitoline Hill behind the arch of Severus; but its exact form and position are very doubt- ful. It was probably much encroached upon when the temple of Concord was enlarged in the reign of Augustus.*

Plate VII. gives a carefully measured plan of the Forum, show- ing the most recent discoveries.

References to Numbers in Plate (VII.) of Forum Romanum.7 1, 1. (Basilica Julia) existing marble piers and fragment of screen. 2. Im- pression of marble pier in the late archway of brick-faced concrete. 3. Only remaining one of ancient travertine piers. 4,4. Chambers of tufa and traver- tine, with traces of stairs. 5. Tabula lusoria, with inscription, sce p. 817. 6. Opening into Cloaca Maxima. 7. Massive travertine pedestal. 8, 8. Paving of porta santa and Africano marbles. 9, 9. Paving of various Oriental marbles. 10. Probable position of arch of Tiberius. 11,11. Exist- ing granite columns of temple of Saturn. 12. Main flight of steps, of which only the concrete core remains. 13. Starting of small side stairs to

chamber under iain flight of steps. 14. Only piece existing of ancient basalt paving (see fig. 6). 15. Platform of porticus of Dii Consentes. 16. Upper door in Tabulariuin blocked up by porticus of Dii Consentes. 17. Door at foot of stairs of Tabularium, blocked up by temple of Vespasian (see fig. 1). 18. Travertine paving of time of Domitian. 19. Pedestal of Vespasian's statue, 20. Three existing columns of temple of Vespasian. 21. Aidicula built by Domitian. 22. Travertine paving of time of Domitian. 23, 23. Long passage and windows in lower story of Tabularium. 24. Pedestal of statue of Concord. 25. Pedestal added by one of the Flavian emperors. 26. Frag- nent of a later pedestal. 27. White marble door-jamband massive threshold of porta santa marble. 28. Remains of some early structure intufa. 29. Three travertine steps down to lower paved level, perhaps that of the Comi- tium. 30. Marble steps to this lower level. 31. Large marble pedestal (not in sitw) inscribed to Fl. Jul. Constantius. 32. Late addition to rostra. 33. Remains of a small marble structure. 34. Marble pedestal of a column, with rude reliefs of the 4th century. 35. Marble pedestal of an equestrian

1 Consules suffecti for 22 a.p.

2 See Tac., Hist., iii. 74, 85; Suet., Vit., 17.

3 See Livy (xliv. 16), who mentions a house of P. Africanus, " pone veteres ad Vortumni signum," which was bought by T. Sempronius to clear the site for the Basilica Sempronia in 169 B.c. This basilica appears to have been afterwards absorbed in the Basilica Julia.

4 Hence these two sides of the Forum are frequently referred to in classical writings as "sub veteribus" and 'sub novis."

5 In later times it appears to have been an enclosed space containing an altar; it is described by Ovid (Fast., vi. 403); according to one tradition it marked the spot where Curtius's self-immolation filled up the chasm which had opened in the Forum (see Dionys., ii. 41).

6 See Dionys., ii. 50, vi. 67; Plin., H.N., xvi. 86; Plut., Quas. Rom., 47.

7 A larger plan, coloured in detail, is given in J. H. Middleton, Ancient Rome in 1885 (A. & C. Black, Edinburgh).

statue, set on end, and inscribed to Arcadius and Theodosius. 36. Marble walls (plutet) with reliefs of time of Trajan (not in situ). 37. Remains of a small marble structure. 38. Large concrete core of a latc pedestal. 39. Steps to column of Phocas, part marble and part tufa. 40. Late building of brick and concrete lined with marble. 41. Existing three columns of temple of Castor. 42, 42. Existing pieces of mosaic pavement. 43. Main steps of temple of Castor. 44. Side steps; only the three lowest remain. 45. Part of circular travertine curb; puteal Scribonis? 46, 46. Original line of Sacra Via, covered with late paving of travertine. 47. Line of side steps of Ades Divi Julii. 48. Simall front stairs up to podium of Ades Divi Julii. 49. Curved recess in podium, which probably once contained an altar to Divus Julius ; now blocked up by late masonry. 50. Fragment of a wall faced with opus reticulatuin. 51. Conerete core of podiuin of temple of Vesta. 52. Small zdicula by entrance to Atrium Veste. 53, 53. Shops adjoining Atriuin Veste. 54. Stairs from Nova Via up to Clivus Victorie and palace of Caligula. 54a. Stairs, shown ona fragment of the marble plan, leading

up from the level of the Forum to that of the Nova Via. 55, 55. Windows in

curia of Diocletian (S. Adriano), now below the ground level; see fig. 12, p.

816. 56. Marble doorway shown by Du Perac, now missing.

Unlike the fora of the emperors, each of which was surrounded by a lofty wall and built at one time from one design, the archi- tectural form of the Forum Romanum was a slow growth. The marshy battle-field of the early inhabitants of the capitol and Palatine becaine, when the ground was drained by the great cloaca, under a united rule the most convenient site for political meetings, for commercial transactions, and for the pageants of rich men's funerals, Zudi scenici, and gladiatorial games. For these purposes a central space, though but a small one, was kept clear of buildings ; but it was gradually occupied in a somewhat inconvenient manner by an ever-accumulating crowd of statues and other honorary monuments. On three sides the limits of this open space are marked by paved roads, faced by the stately buildings which gradu- ally took the place of the simple wooden taberne and porticus 9 of early times. This central space was essentially the meeting-place of the plebs, or the Comitia Tributa, while the patricians, the Comitia Curiata, met on the Comitium, which adjoined the Forum. The Comitium 1° was a level space in front of the Curia; the con- struction of both is ascribed to Tullus Hostilius. For the position of the Comitium and the Curia" see plan of Forum (Plate VIL). Varro (L. Z., v. 155-156) gives the following account of the build- ings which were grouped along the northern angle of the Forum.

"Comitium ab eo quod coibant co comitiis curiatis et litium causa. Curie duorum generum, nam et ubi curareut sacerdotes res divinas, ut Curie Veteres, et ubi senatus humanas, ut Curia Hostilia, quod primum eedificavit Hostilius rex. Ante hanc Rostra, quojus loci id vocabulum, quod ex hostibus capta fixa sunt rostra. Sub dextra hujus a Comitio locus substructus, ubi nationum sub- sisterent legati qui ad senatum essent missi. Is Greecostasis appel- latus a parte ut multa. Senaculum supra

Grecostasim, ubi Aidis Concordie et Basilica Opimia. Senaculum vocatuim, ubi senatus, aut ubi seniores consisterent."'

The Curia or senate-house passed through mauy vicissitudes. At first called Curia Hostilia from its founder Tullus Hostilius (Liv., i. 30), it lasted till 52 B.c., when it was burnt at the funeral of Clodius, and was then rebuilt by the son of Sulla, and from his gens called Curia Cornelia (Dion Cass., xl. 50; Plin., Z.N., xxxiv. 12). It was again rebuilt by Augustus (29 B.c.) under the name of the Curia Julia, as recorded in the inscription of Ancyra (see ANGORA)—CVRIAM. ET. CONTINENS. EI. CHALCIDICVM... FECI. Little is known about the adjoining buildings called the Atheneum and Chalcidicum ; Dion Cassius (li. 22) mentions the group. In the reign of Domitian the Curia Julia was again rebuilt (Prosp. Aquit., p. 571), and lastly by Diocletian. There is strong evidence to show that the existing church of 8. Adriano is the Curia of Diocletian, though of course much altered, and with its floor raised about 20 feet above the old level. Fig. 12 shows the front existing towards the Forum, omitting later windows and doors. As late as the time of Du Perac (Vestig] di Roma) the old entrance and level were preserved. He gives a drawing" of it with steps descending to the doorway. The ancient bronze doors now at the end of the nave of the Lateran basilica originally belonged to this building, and were removed thence by Alexander VII. Vig. 12 is derived from actual measurements of the part above ground, while the lower part, now buried, is derived from Du Perac's drawing and from the bronze doors at the Lateran, which give the size of the opening,

8 The first gladiatorial show in Rome was given in 264 B.c. in the Forum Boarium by D. Junius Brutus at his father's funeral (Liv., Epit., xvi.), the first in the Forum Romanum in 216 B.c. (Liv., xxiii. 30). See also Liv., xxxi. 50, xli. 28; and Suet., Cws., 39; Aug., 43; and Tid., 7. ;

*9 *"Porticus" means a covered colonnade in one or inore stories, either in one straight line or enclosing a space like a cloistered quadrangle. A "crypto- porticus" usually implies a covered passage, with walls instead of columns at its sides.*

10 See a valuable paper on the Comitium by Detlefsen, Ann. Inst., 1860 ; and Dernburg, Die Lage des Comitiums. The Comitium was also tlie chief

law-court, where criminal cases were heard by the triumviri capitales. Dictators, consuls, and other officials of Rome held courts there, and received foreign envoys. It was also used for public shows and games and was a place of execution of criminals.

ll Livy (xlv. 24) indicates their relative positions by the phrase " Comitium vestibulum Curie."

12 This valuable set of drawings was not published till 1575; but internal evidence shows that many of them, if not all, were made as early as 1540. A good account of the Curia and its vicissitudes is given by Lanciani, L' Aula e gli Uffict del Senato Romano, 1883.

Curia.

Comi- tium.

Original rostra.

Greeo- stasis.

Sena- culum.

Basilicee in Forum.

816 RO

and show how deeply the buried part descends below the present level. The brick cornice and marble consoles, covered with enriched mouldings in stucco, and the sham marble facing, also of stucco, if com- pared with similar details in the baths of Diocletian, leave little doubt as to this being a work of his time, and not, as has been

usually as- sumed, the work of Pope Presenrueved —— PRESENT LEVEL

. OF GROUND Honorius LL,

who (625-638 A.D.) — conse- crated it as the church of S.

Adriano.

From _ the REMY '_ _ \ TM. Curia a flight 5 Io 20 io 400 OFEET ae. : a Fia, 12.—Curia of Diocletian, as it was in the 16th century.

sag : A, A, A. Original windows now blocked up. B. Bronze mitium (Liv., doors. ©. Stucco facing. D. Cornice with marble consoles 1. 36), the level and enriched stueco mouldings, both existing. E. Raking of which ap- cornice now gone, but shown by Du Perac. pears from the existing steps and pavement near the arch of Severus (see Plate VII.) to have been about 2 feet below that of the Forum, and not above it, as Bunsen and others have asserted. On the Comitium stood the ancient rostra till they were rebuilt on a new site by Julius Cesar in 44 B.c. The ancient rostra were so called in 338 3B.c., when Camillus and Mcenius defeated the Latin fleet at Antium, and the beaks (rostra) of the captured ships were fixed to an existing platform on the Comitium for orators. It was also called a "templum"' because the structure was consecrated by the augurs (Cic., De Orat., iii. 3). Other rostra, named for distinction Rostra Julia, were so called from the beaks of ships taken at Actium and affixed by Augustus to the podium of the teinple built by him in honour of the deified Julius. oth are mentioned by Suetonius (Awg., 100). There were several other platforms or tribunals for orators in and about the Forum, but they were not called rostra. From the original rostra Cicero delivered his Second and Third Catiline Orations, and they were the scene of some of the most important political struggles of Rome, such as the enunciation of their laws by the Gracchi. Beside the Comitium another monument was erected, also adorned with beaks of ships, to commemorate the same victory at Antium. This was the Columna Meenia, so called in honour of Meenius (Plin., H.., xxxiv. 11, vii. 60). The Columna Duilia was a similar monument, erected in honour of the victory of C. Duilius over the Punic fleet in 260 B.c.; a fragment of it with inscription (restored in imperial times) is preserved in the Capitoline Museum.'! Columns such as these were called "columne rostrate."

Near the Comitium, on the side towards the Capitol, was the Greecostasis, a platform where foreign ambassadors stood to hear the speeches (see Varro, loc. cit.). It appears probable that, like the rostra, the Grecostasis

was moved in the 1st century B.C. ; and this name has been given with some probability to the curved marble-faced platform behind the existing rostra.

The Senaculum appears to have been a place of preliminary meeting for the Senate before entering the Curia (Liv., xli. 27; Val. Max., ii. 2, 6) ; it adjoined the temple of Concord, and when this was rebuilt on an enlarged scale in the reign of Augustus it appears probable that its large projecting portico became the Senaculum (Dionys., i. 34, vi. 1). It may possibly have once been identical with the Area Concordie mentioned by Livy (xl. 19) in connexion with the Area Vulcani (comp. xxxix. 46).

A great part of the north-east side of the Forum was occupied by two basilice, which were more than once rebuilt under different names. The first of these appears to have been adjacent to the Curia, on its south side; it was called the Basilica Porcia, and was founded by the elder Cato in 184 z.c. (see Liv., xxxix. 44, and Plut., Cato Major, 19); it was burnt with the Curia at Clodius's funeral. Adjoining it another basilica, called Emilia et Fulvia (Varro, vi. 4), was built in 176 3.c. by the censors M. Fulvius and M. Amilius Lepidus ;? it stood, according to Livy (xl. 51), RE aM scapes Dita! ai in Winters Th LY

1 The column itself is a copy made by Michelangelo ; it is at the foot of the stairs of the Palazzo dei Conservatori.

z The Forum Piseatorium or fish-market appears to have been at the back of this basilica (see Liv., xl. 51).

'post argentarias novas," the line of silversmiths' shops along the north-east side of the Forum. In 50 B.c. it was rebuilt by L. Aimilius Paulus (Plut., Ces., 29; Appian, Bell. Civ., ii. 26), and was more than once restored within the few subsequent years by members of the same family. Its later name was the Basilica Pauli, and it was remarkable for its magnificent columns of Phrygian marble (Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 24) or pavonazetto.

Near the middle of the north-east side of the Forum stood also Temples the small bronze temple of Janus,? the doors of which were shut of Janus. on those rare occasions when Rome was at peace.4 A first brass of Nero shows it as a small cella, with richly ornamented frieze and cornice. Another edicula near that of Janus was the shrine of Venus Cloacina (or the Purifier), probably on the line of the great cloaca (Liv., iii. 48; Plin., H.N., xv. 36). Two or more other shrines of Janus stood on this side, behind the shops of the money- lending argentarii ; and the word "Janus" was used to imply the place of usurers (Hor., Sat., ii. 3, 18).

So far the buildings mentioned have been mostly those whose

sites are still buried under the line of modern houses on the north- east of the Forum, the only part which has not yet been excavated. Turning to those of which existing remains are visible, at the notth-west end the rostra of Julius Cesar mark the limit of the Forum in this direction, as the arch of Fabius beside the temple of Faustina did in the other.

Plate VII. shows the plan of the rostra, with the curved Grecostasis Existing behind it. It is an oblong platform about 78 feet long and 11 feet rostra. high above the level of the Forum; its ground floor, paved with herring-bone bricks, is 2 feet 6 inches below the Forum paving.

Its end and side walls are of tufa blocks, 2 feet thick and 2 feet

wide, each carefully clamped, to the next with wooden dovetail

dowels. Its floor was supported by a series of travertine piers, carrying travertine lintels, on which the floor slabs rested (sce

fig. 13). Outside it was completely lined with Greek marble and

had a richly moulded plinth and cornice; none of the latter is in

situ, "0 many pieces lie scat-

tered around. A Be cosnice, groove cut im sere, fat tous verses the top of the cornice shows the place where marble cancelli were fixed; one of the

cornice : blocks is partly OL MMMM

MARBLE Lining.

without this (NE LINT 25 groove, showing that the screen did not extend along the whole front of the ros- tra. This agrees with a relief on the arch of Con- stantine, repre- rsa or senting the em- f peror making an oration from the rostra, withother buildings at this ; endofthe Foruin py, 13,— Section through front of rostra, showing the shown behind. marble lining, screen, and bronze beaks, the position of

; ; which is shown by the holes in the existing tufa wall. In this be elief the The details are to double scale. > screen is shown

with a break in the middle, so that the orator, standing in the centre, was visible from head to foot. Two tiers of large holes to hold the bronze rostra are drilled right through the tufa wall, and even throngh the travertine pilasters where one happens to come in the way ; these holes show that there were nincteen rostra in the lower tier, and twenty above set over the intermediate spaces of the lower row. The back wall of the rostra is of concrete faced with brick, which, being pone the work of Julius Cesar in 44 B.C., is the earliest dated example of brickwork in Rome. The inside space, under the main floor of the rostra, is coated thickly with stucco,— the brick wall being studded in the usual way with iron nails to form a key for the plaster. In spite of the assertions of Bunsen, Jordan, and others that tlre Curved curved platform behind (conjecturally called the Grecostasis) is a platform. work of late date, it is evident from various constructional points, i visible at the junction of the two structures, that it existed before the rostra, which when built completely hid its rich lining and the pilasters of porta santa marble which decorated its front,—very strong evidence as to the curved platform being earlier in date. The level

TRAVERTINE LIN’

on U, DETAIL

Yl Wi WY, , MARBLE PLINTH.

3 The original temple was one of the prehistoric buildings attributed to Romulus and Tatius (Serv., Ad Afn., i. 291), or by Livy (i. 19) to Numa. 4 See Mon. Ancyr.; Procop., Bell. Goth., i. 25; Liv., 1.19; Suet., Aug., 22.

Umbili- cus and Milliar- ium.

Temple of Saturn.

ARCHEOLOGY. |

of the top of this platform and that of the rostra appear to have eoincided exactly, so that the whole formed one continuous marble- paved platform, and the rostra would be reached, not by steps, but from the higher ground towards the Capitol, from which access is given to the curved platform and so on to the floor of the rostra. The bronze rostra on this structure of 44 B.c. were believed to be the original beaks from Antium, moved from the old rostra (Florus, i. 11). On its marble platform stood many statues,! ¢.g., of Sulla, Pompey, two of Julius Cesar, and others (see Dion Cass., xlii. 18, and xliv. 4). Owing probably to the weight of the many statues proving too much for the travertine piers, which are not set on their natural beds bunt endways, and therefore are very weak, the structure seems to have given way at more than one time and the floor has been supported by piers and arches of brick-faced concrete, inserted either in place of or at the sides of the shattered piers. These later additions, apparently of the 3d and 4th centuries, are omitted in Plate VII. for the sake of clearness. The moulded plinth of the curved platform is of Pentelic marble, some of the blocks of which are ineised with masons' marks, namely, the Greek Ictters T, A, HE, Z, H, ©, and K. A number of metal pins on the face of the slabs of porta santa marble which line its front show that emblemata or reliefs, probably of gilt bronze, were once fastened to the marble.2. The use of Greek marble shows that this platform can be bnt little earlier than the rostra (44 B.c.); and it appcars possible that this is the Grecostasis, transferred, like the rostra, to anew site.? See Varro (Z.Z., v. 155) and Cicero (Ad Quint. Fr., ii. 1), who mention the original structure. Restorations of the later one by Antoninus Pius and Diocletian are mentioned by Capitolinus (Ant. Pius, 8), and in the Catal. Imp. Vienn. given by Preller (Regionen, p. 143),—in both cases after injury by fire, a fact which seems to show that in later times the

Grecostasis had some roofed porticus or shelter and was not a mere open platform as it was originally.

At the northern end of the curved platform there is a cylindrical structure of concrete faced with brick, and lined with thin marble slabs ; it is in three stages, each diminishing in size, and appears to be an addition of about the time of Severus. This is usnally identified with the Umbilicus Rome, or central point of the city, mentioned in the Nodttia and the Einsiedelu MS. (see Preller, Regionen, Reg. viii.). According to another theory it is the base of the gilt statue of the Genius Populi Romani set up by Aurelian ; but this is contradicted by the form of the structure, which is not that of the pedestal of a statuc.4 At the other extremity probably stood the Milliarium Aureum, a marble column sheathed in gilt bronze and inscribed with the names and distances of the chief towns on the roads which radiated from the thirty-seven gates of Rome (Plin., H.N., iii. 9). It was set ie! by Augustus in 29 Bc. and its position "sub edc Saturni"' is indicated by Tacitus (Hist., i. 27; see schol. on Suet., Otho, 6, and Plut., Galba, 24), The Milliarium is mentioned in the Notitia (Reg. viii.) as being near the Vicus Jugarius. The position shown in Plate VII. agrees with both these indications, being near the start of the Vicus Jugarius, and close under the temple of Saturn. Fragments of a curved marble plinth and frieze with floriated reliefs, now lying in the Basilica Julia, probably belonged to the pedestal of this column ; they were found by Canina near the supposed site.? |

The position of the temple of Saturn is described in Aon. Aneyr. (see below) and shown on the marble plan, and is also identified by various passages in ancient writers. Varro (Z.Z., v. 42) speaks of it as being "in faucibus Capitolii";® Servins (4d din, 11. 115) says that it is in front of the Clivus Capitolinus, and near the temple of Coucord (see Plate VIL). It was built against a steep slope or outlying part of the Capitoline Hill (comp. Dionys., 1. (SS ie 2a gg il SiR as ne lI

1 The original rostra had specially honorary statues to those Roman ambassa- dors who had been killed while on foreign service (Liv., iv. 17); these were probably removed during Cicero's lifetime (Cic., Phil., ix. 2; see also Dion Cass., xHii. 49, and Plin., H.N., xxxiv. 11). Ghastly

ornaments fixed to these rostra in the year 43 B.c., shortly after they were built, were the head and hands of the murdered Cicero (Appian, Bell. Civ., iv. 20; Dion Cass., xlvii. 8 ; Juy., x. 120), as on the original rostra had been fixed many heads of the chief victims of the proscriptions of Marius and Sulla (see Appian, Bell. Civ., i. 71, 94; Florus, iii. 21; and Cic., Pro Sext., 35,36). The denarius of the gens Lollia with the legend PALIKANVS was once supposed to have a representation of the rostra on its reverse, but it is now generally admitted that the subject is a harbour containing ships, the beaks of which only are shown. Even if the rostra of the Forum are represented it would be the original suggestum, not that of Julius Cesar.

2 This method of decoration was much employed by the Greeks and largely followed by their-Roman imitators. For further details on the rostra, &c., see Jordan and Fabricius, in Ann. Inst. for 1883; Nichols, Gli Avanzi det Rostri, &e., 1885; and a paper by the present writer in Archaologia (read November 1884). Pp

3 It must, however, be admitted that there is very little evidence in support of this theory.

4 Becker, Handbuch, i. p. 360, adopts this view, and maintains that the Umbilicus and Milliarium were identical, in spite of their being separately catalogued in the Notitia. ; ;

5 What is probably the column of the Milliarium is still lying near its supposed site; it is of Greek marble, and is covered with holes by which the bronze casing was attached. Since the above was written the existing pieces of the marble base have been replaced on its conjectural site. ane

6 In the same passage he mentionsa gate near this temple into the Capitolium once called Porta Saturnia, but in his time P. Pandana.

ROM #

817

34) on the site of a prehistoric altar to Saturn, after whom the Capitoline Hill was originally called Mons Saturnius. The public treasury was part of this temple (Serv., Ad dn., ii. 116, and Macrob., Saé., i. 8).? The original temple is said by Varro (ap. Macrob., i. 8) to have been begun by the last Tarquin, and dedi- cated by T. Lartius, the first dietator, 501 B.c. ; but Dionysius (vi. 1) and Livy (ii. 21) attribute it to the consuls A. Sempronius and M. Minucius in 497 B.c. It was rebuilt on a larger scale by Munatius Plancus in the reign of Augustus (Suet., Awg., 29). The only part remaining of this date is the very lofty podium of massive travertine blocks, and part of the lower course of Athenian marble, with which the whole was faced. In the 16th century a piece of the marble frieze was found, inscribed L. PLANCVS.L.F. COS. IMPER.ITER.DE.MANIB. (C.J.Z., vi. 1816). The erection of the six granite columns in the front and two at the sides, with their clumsily patched entablature, belongs to the last rebuilding in the time of Diocletian. Some of these fine columns are evi- dently earlier than this rebuilding, but were refixed with rude caps and bases. One of the columns is set wrong way up, and the whole work is of the most careless sort. Part of the inscription, once inlaid with bronze, recording this latest rebuilding still exists ou the entablature (see Gori, L'Erario di Saturno, 1873).8 On the Forum side the temple is flanked by the Vicus Jugarius, while the steep Clivus Capitolinus winds round the front of the great flight of steps leading up to the cella, and then turns along the north-

west side of the temple.® The Vicus Jugarius (see Plate VII.), part Vicus of the basalt paving of which is now exposed, was so called (see Jugarius.

Festus, ed. Miller, p. 104) from an altar to Juno Juga, the guardian of marriage. Starting from the Forum, it passed between the temple of Saturn and the Basilica Julia, then close under the cliff of the Capitolium (see Liv., xxxv. 21) and on to the Porta Carmen- talis. It was spanned at its commencement by a brick-faced arch lined with marble, the lower part of which exists, and is not earlier than the 3d or 4th century." At this end of the Forum the arch of Tiberius was built across the Sacra Via, which is narrowed as if to bring it under the span of the arch. It was erected in 17 A.D. to commemorate the recovery of the standards lost by Varus.?} A few fragments remain, scattered about in various places

The Basilica Julia? occupies a great part of the south-west side Basilica of the Forum, along the line of the Sacra Via ; its ends are bounded Julia.

by the Vicus Jugarius and the Vicus Tuscus. It was begun by Julius Cesar, finished by Augustus, and again rebuilt by him, as is recorded in the Afon. Ancyr., in an important passage which gives its complete early history. In plan it was a large double porticus, open on three sides, with a range of rooms, tavo or three stories high, on the south-west side. These rooms, of which con- siderable remains exist, are built of tufa with travertine pilasters and bands in the tufa wall. This part probably is of the time of Julius Cesar; Angustus surrounded it with an arcade of arches in two stories and engaged Tuscan columns in Lnna marble, fragments of which cxist at the north-west end. The double aisle which surrounded it was vaulted in conerete, forming uppcr galleries (mxniana), whence spectators heard the law-cases which were con- ducted in the area below (see Plin., Zp., vi. 33). The central space was not roofed, but probably was sheltered by an awning. It is paved with richly eoloured Oriental marbles, namely, pavonazetto, cipollino, giallo, and Africano. The covered aisles are paved with large slabs of white marble. Many tabulz lusorizx, or gambling boards, are scratched on this marble paving (comp. Cic., Phil., ii. 23).16 Low marble cancelli, with moulded plinth, closed the other- wise open arches of the basilica; many fragments exist, and one piece of the subplinth is still im sttw. This basilica held four law- courts with 180 judices or jurors. Trajan and other emperors held law-courts there (Dion Cass., lxxxviii. 10). An inscription fonnd

7 In several inscriptions occurs the title " prafecti" or " queestores cerarii . " (see Gudius, Ant, Insc., p. 125; Suet., Claud., 24; Tac., Ann., xiii.

28, 29).

8 Another important treasury was the temple of Ops, in which were stored the 700,000,000 sesterces left by Julius Cesar at his death (Cic., Phil., ii. 87, and i. 7). It is usually supposed, though without much reason, to have ad- joined the temple of Saturn. Livy (xxvii. 10) mentions another treasury, the £rarium Sanctius, in which a reserve store of gold was kept.

9 A portion of these streets with part of the temple of Saturn and the Basilica Julia is shown on fragments of the marble plan (see Plate VII.)

10 One side of this gate was built against one of the marble piers of the Basilica Julia, a perfect print of which still exists in the concrete of the gate, though the marble pier itself has disappeared. The other side of the gate abutted against the marble-lined podium of the temple of Saturn. ;

1l See Tac., Ann., ii. 41, who says it was " propter edem Saturni." |

12 See Suet., Aug., 29; Gerhard, Bas, Giulia, &c., 1823; and Visconti, Excava- zione della Bas. Giulia. gat

13 "'Forym . Ivlivm . et. basilicam . qvac . fvit . inter .aedem . Castoris. et . aedem . Satvrni. cocpta . profligataqve . opera . a. patre. meo. perfeci . et . eandem. basilicam . consvmptam . incendio . ampliato . eivs . solo. svb. titvlo. nominis . filiorvm . inchoavi. et. si. vivvs . non. perfecissein . perfici . ab. haeredibvs. [ineis . ivssi]." The "'filii" here referred to are Augustus's grand- sons, Caius and Lucius (see Dion Cass., lvi. 27). : '

14 Oneof the late reliefs on Constantine's arch shows this (or a similar build- ing) with the upper galleries crowded with people (see Plin., Ep., vi. 38, 5). The open arches seem to have curtains to keep out the sun.

15 Three medieval lime-kilns were found by Canina within this basilica, which accounts for the scantiness of the existing remains.

16 A few have inscriptions, ¢.g., " Vinces. gaudes: perdes. plangis."

XX, — 103

818 RO

near it records its restoration by Septimius Severus in 199 a.p. after a fire ; it was again burnt in 282 and restored by Diocletian. These fires had destroyed nearly all the fine marble arches of Augustus ; and Diocletian rebuilt it mostly with brick ov travertine piers, a

few of which remain.! A final restoration is recorded in aninscrip- | The Fons Ju- tion discovered in the 16th century, and another in 1882, as being | turne (see Ov., carried out by Gabinius Vettius Probianus, prefect of the city in | Fast., i. 705,

377 (Gruter, Inscr., clxxi. 7); the latter is on a pedestal which now stands in the Vicus Jugarius. Suetonius (Ca/., 37) mentions that it

was one of Caligula's amusements to throw money to the people | the _Dioscuri below from the roof of this basilica, which probably was a link in | were fabled to the bridge by which this maniac connected the Palatine with the | have watered Capitolium. The line of the bridge, which starts in the upper part | their horses, was of Caligula's palace, passes over a lofty and massive brick-faeed | beside their

building, once lined with marble, which stands on the lower slopes of the Palatine. Suetonius's aecount (Cal., 22) of the bridge makes it very probable that this building is the temple of Augustus, as

there is no other possible site for it on the line from the Palatine | byhas been sup- to the Capitolium. The intermediate stages from the temple to} posed to have , the basilica and thence to the Capitolium were probably merely a | belonged to this. wooden structure, as no traces of it now remain. The temple of'| Its form, how- Augustus was begun by Tiberius and finished by Caligula (Suet., | ever, makes it

Cal., 21).

M Ei

Senate, and its lofty podium formed a tribunal for orations.4 Close by it was another tribunal, probably merely a wooden sug- gestus—called the Tribunal Aurelium (see Cic., In Pis., 5, and Pro wSeet.,, 15).

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

and Dionys., vi. 13), at which

temple, and the circular traver- tine curb close

more probable

Vieus The Vicus Tuscus passes from the Sacra Via between the Basilica | that it was the

Tuscus, Julia and the temple of Castor to the Velabrum and Circus | plinth of a Maximus ; its basalt paving has been exposed at many points along | screen round its whole line (see Liv., xxvii. 37). A very early statue of one of | the Puteal Scri- the chief Etruscan deities, Vortumnus, stood in this street, a little | bonis or Libouis to the south-west of the Basilica Julia, where part of its pedestal | (Hor., Ep.,i.19, was found in 1549 inscribed VORTVMNVS TEMPORIBVS DIOCLE- | 8, and Sat., ii. ; [TIANI. ET. MAXIMIANI ... (C.J. L., vi. 804? see also Pseudo- | 6, 35),—a cir- —— ==— wT ee Ascon., Ad Cic. Verr., ii. 1, 59). The Vicus Tuscus was also | cular marble _—— OW called Thurarius, from shops of perfume-sellers (see Hor., Saé., ii. | structure like a ie ~aceus™, 4 8, 228, and Ep., ii. 269). It is the street along which processions | well-mouth, or- SACRA VIA POT TERETE passed, mentioned by Cicero (Verr., ii. 1, 59) as extending "a signo | namented with FOUNDATIONS !PLAN OF TENBLE X ae Vertumni in Circum Maximum." reliefs of lyres : ;

Temple The temple of Castor on the south-east side of the Vicus Tus- | and garlands, FiG. 14.—Plan of temple of Castor, half showing igh Sta*

ofCastor. cus was founded to commemorate the apparition in the Forum of | used to enclose #02 a erro ge na rod aches

*A . ° * » Db, Db. OHpurs of roundation wall, of travertine and tula,*

the Dioscuri announcing the vietory of Aulus Postumus at Lake somespotstruck under the three existing columns. C. Steps to small Regillus, 496 B.c., and was dedicated in 482 B.c. by the son of A. | by lightning or chamber in concrete core of podium. D. Existing piece Postumus (Liv., ii. 20, 42 ; Dionys., vi. 13; Plut., Coriol.,3; Ov., | sacred rom f mosaic paving of earlier building.

Fast., i. 707). In 119 B.c. it was restored by the consul L. Metellus Dalmaticus (Ascon., In Cic. Pro Scawr., 46) and finally rebuilt in the reign of Augustus by Tiberius and Drusus, 6 A.D. (Suet., 77%b., 20; Ov., Fast., i: 705; Dion Cass., lv. 8, 27), to which period belong the three existing Corinthian columns and piece of entablature, all very delicate and graceful in detail, and of the finest workmanship, in Pentelic marble; the design is of pure Greek style. One point shows Roman timidity in the use

other causes. It is shown on a denarius of the gens Scribonia. The Sacra Via, in its course from the Regia towards the temple of Saturn, originally passed in front of the temple of Castor ; but in late times its line was changed, and it is now covered at this point by rude paving of travertine and marble, probably not earlier than the 5th century. The ancient line is indicated by the Regia, shown on fig. 16. .

On the other side of the Sacra Via stand the scanty remains of Temple the temple of Divus Julius, erected by Augustus. Though little of Divus | beyond its concrete core is left, its plan can be fairly well made out Julius. |

of a lintel: the frieze is jointed so as to form a flat arch, quite needlessly, with the object of relieving the weight on the archi-

trave. Its plan, hexastyle, with only eleven columns on the sides, is shown in Plate VII. and fig. 14. It had a lofty podium, lined with marble, and decorated with a heavy cornice al, pilasters, one under each column. The podium is an interesting example of the enormous solidity of Roman buildings of the best period. Solid tufa walls, 8 feet thick, are built under the whole of the cella and the front row of columns, while the columns of the sides rest on a i of similar walling, projecting at right angles from that under the cella ; the part immediately under the columns is of travertine, and the spurs are united and strengthened laterally by massive flat arches, also of travertine. With the exception of a small chamber under the steps, entered from the Vicus Tuscus, the entire podium is filled up by a solid mass of concrete, made of broken tufa, pozzolana, and lime, the whole forming a lofty platform, about 22 feet high, solid as a rock, on which the columns and upper structure are erected. Small chambers

formed in the con- crete basement, such as the one in this temple, occur in many instances, ¢.g., in the temples of Saturn, Divus Julius, and Con- cord. They were probably used as strong rooms, in which money and plate were deposited for safe keeping (see Juv., xiv. 260), a purpose for which Roman temples were frequently used. Two fragments of mosaic, with simple lozenge pattern in white marble and basalt, still exist in the cella of this temple. The level of the mosaic shows that it is of earlier date than the rebuilding of Tiberius, as it lies considerably below the level of the later floor. It has all the characteristics of early mosaic—very small tesserae fitted with great accuraey, like the early mosaic in the Regia. The temple of Castor was often used as a meeting-place for the

ee ee as 'a 1 The whole building has unhappily been much falsified by needless restora- ion.

2 A drawing of this pedestal, which is now lost, with MS. note by Ligorio, exists in Cod. Vat., 3439, fol. 46. Propertius (Eleg., iv. 2) gives an interesting oe of Vortumnus, and in 1, 50 mentions the derivation of the name Vicus

scus,

3 The temple of Castor is shown on two fragments of the marble plan (see

Plate VI1.), and its position is also indicated by th sage i 4A ia Er Seay p Ss y the passage in the Mon. Ancyr.

from the voids in the concrete, which show the position of the tufa foundations under the walls and columns (as in the temple of Castor). The temple itself, a hexastyle prostyle building, with close pyknostyle intercolumniation (Vitr., iii. 2), stood on a lofty podium with a curved recess in the front between two flights of stairs (see Plate VII.). The wall which now fills up the recess is a late addition. It is possible that this very unusual plan was, adopted in order that the recess might leave room for the pre- existing altar (Appian, Bell. Civ., ii. 148) or column (Suet., J. Cexs., 85) erected by the Senate with the inscription PARENTI PATRIZ. The podium, which projects in front of the temple itself, was adorned with beaks from the ships taken at Actium (Dion Cass., li. 19), and hence it

was called the Rostra Julia, to distin- guish it from the other rostra described above. Both were used for the funeral orations in honour of Augustus (Suet., dug., 100; see also Dion Cass., liv. 35). Besides the concrete core and the curved tufa wall of the recess, little now exists except a small bit of the mosaic of the cella floor and some fragments of the cornice and pediment, of fine Greek marble. This temple is represented on coins of Augustus and Hadrian.

The temple of Vesta, founded according to tradition by Numa,® Temple stands at the southern angle of the Forum on the ancient line of of Vesta.

the Sacra Via (Ov., Trist., iii. 1, 28). No shrine in Rome was equal in sanctity to this little circular building, which contained the sacred fire.and the relics on which the welfare and even the existence of Rome depended. The shrine was an "des sacra," not a "templum" in the strict sense of the word, which means a build- ing so inaugurated that it could be used for meetings of the Senate. The original building was destroyed in 390 B.c. by the Gauls; it was burnt again in 241 8.c., again in the great fire of Nero's reign, and then in the reign of Commodus; after this it was rebuilt hy

4 One of the mad acts of Caligula was to eonnect the temple of Castor with his palace by breaking a door through the back of the eella (Suet., Cal., 22). Though dedicated to both the Dioscuri, the building was usually called the temple of Castor only (see Suet., J. Cas., 10).

5 Another legend attributes its founding to Romulus.

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

Severus, to whose age belong the fragments of columns, cornice, and other architectural features now lyitig around the ruined podium. These, with the help of representations of the temple on coins of Domitian, and an ancient relief in the Uffizi (see Lanciani, L' Atrio di Vesta, 1884, pls. xix.~~xxi.), are sufficient to make an accurate restoration (see Plate VII. and fig. 15). It consisted of a circular cella, surrounded by eighteen columns, with screens be~~ tween them ; the circular podium, about 10 feet high, still exists,

—<——S_ ———— iid _———

72S OS Ll Fs ae ee

ST oy ET AN A A A |||

7 a Ba wy TH AL

a)

Se se ess EEE ETE OEE EEE) Fic, 15.—Temple of Vesta, as rebuilt by Severus, conjecturally restored by Comm. Lanciani from existing remains.

|e? “aa Ao ene GeV Re

60 40 GO 2 te oO

=

Fig. 16.—Plan showing the remains of the temple of Vesta, the Regia, and the house of the vestals, as rebuilt by Hadrian ; exeavated 1883-84.

destroyed in 390 B.c. by the Gauls, and was again burnt in 210 B.c. (Liv., xxvi. 27), when the temple of Vesta narrowly escaped. Julius Cesar, as pontifex maximus, resided here; and when Augustus succeeded to this office in 12 B.c. he gave the Regia to the vestals, having ‘built himself a large house on the Palatine. When the Atrium Veste or house of the vestals was rebuilt on an enlarged scale the Regia was pulled down and its site partly occupied by

1 The temple of Vesta is also shown on medals of Faustina senior, Lueilla, Crispina, and Julia Domna (see Froehner, Médaillons de’empire Romain, Paris, 1878, pp. 76, 96, 148, 159), It very elosely resembles the so-called tomb of St Luke at Ephesus, a Roman work of about the same date. ne

2 See Lipsius, ‘De Vesta,” inGrevius, Thes. Ant. Rom., v.; Cancellieri, Le sette Cose faiali di Roma, 1812; Preuner, Hestia-Vesta, Tiibingen, 1864 ; Jordan, Vesta und die Laren, Berlin, 1865; Maes, Vesta e Vestali, 1883.

*the new atrium. Ovid (7'rist., iti. 1, 28) describes this end of the Forum thus — ** Hee est a saeris que via nomen habet, Hie locus est Vest, qui Pallada servat et ignem, Hie fuit antiqui Regia parva Nuine."*

The excavations of the last few years have laid bare remains of this very interesting building, and show that it was a large house extending close up to the temple of Vesta,—éuéro.xos, as Dion Cassius (Ivi. 27) says. It was set at a quite different angle from the Atrium and other later buildings which were built over its founda- tions; this angle shows the original line of the Sacra Via, which in later times was diverted into a different direction. The existing remains are of several dates,—first, walls of soft tufa, part possibly of the earliest building; second, walls of hard tufa, of rather later date; and lastly, concrete walls faced with brick, decorated with painted stucco, and columns of travertine, also stuccoed and painted,? with a large quantity of fine mosaic of that early sort which has very small tesseree put together with great accuracy. This last part probably belongs to the rebuilding by Domitius Calvinus in 35 B.c. (Dion Cass., xliii. 42). These valuable remains were preserved in spite of the erection of later buildings over them because the levels of the later floors were higher than those of the Regia, and thus covered and protected the mosaics and lower parts of the walls and columns (see fig. 16). Besides being a dwelling- house, the Regia contained a sacrarium, in which were preserved the sacred spears of Mars (Aul. Gell., iv. 6), and also the shrine of the Dea Ops Consiva, only entered by the vestals and the sacerdos publicus (Varro, L.L., vi. 21).*

The Atrium Vesti or house of the vestals, like the temple, was Atrium many times burnt and rebuilt ; the existing building, which was Veste.

excavated in 1883-84, is of the time of Hadrian, as is shown by the brick stamps. It consists of a large atrium or quadrangle with columns of cipollino. At one end is the tablinum, with three small rooms on each side of it,—probably for the six vestals. A bathroom, bakehouse, servants' offices, and some rooms lined with rich marbles extend along the south-west side. This extensive building is set against the side of the Palatine, which is cut away to admit the lower story. Thus the level of the first

upper floor is nearly the same as that of the Nova Via, on which it faces, about 23 feet above the ground floor. The upper floor is in part well preserved ; it contains a large suite of bath and other rooms, which were probably the sleeping apartments of the vestals. All the better rooms and the baths are lined with polished marbles, many of great beauty and rarity; the floors are mostly mosaic of tesselated work. The paving of the tablinum was a beautiful specimen of inlay in porphyry and marble. In many places alterations and clumsy patchings of the 4th and 5th centuries are apparent.

the Nova Via separates the Atrium Veste from the palace of

Caligula (see Plin., Zp., vii. 19; Aul. Gell., i, 12), which extends over the site of the Lucus Veste, —" qui a Palatii radice in Novam Viam devexus est" (Cic., De Div., 1. 45). A curious octagonal structure in the middle of the atrium (sce fig. 16) looks very much like a border for flower-beds; and it is possible that this miniature garden was made by the vestals when Calignia built over their ex- tensive grove on the slopes of the Palatine. By the main entrance from the Fornm stood a small edicula,—a large pedestal at the angles of which were columns supporting an entablature.® It may have contained a statue of Vesta, there being none within the temple. It is of the time of Hadrian. The last of the vestals is mentioned by Zosimus (v. 38) as being alive in 894 ; but the Atrium continued to be partly inhabited for many centuries later.? In September 1884 a road was discovered leading up past the tablinum end of the Atrium from the Sacra Via to the Nova Via (ee fig. 16). In about the 4th century this road appears to have been blocked up at the Nova Via end by a building which adjoincd the Atrium Veste.

At the east corner of the Forum stood the arch of Q. Fabius Areh of Maximus, consul in 121 3.c., called Allobrogicus from his victory Fabius,

3 See a monograph by the present writer in Archwologia (read November

1884), ;

4 tne eolumns were crimson, the travertine rain-water gutter bright blue, and the inner walls had simple designs in panels of leaf ornament and

wreaths.

5 One of these, a noble figure of the time of Hadrian, is specially remarkable

_as being the only statue known on which the sufibulwm is represented, a sort

of hood, only worn by the vestal at the moment of offering saerifiee (see Festus, ed. Miiller, p. 340; and Varro, L.L., vi. 21). Many points of great interest occur in the inseriptions on the pedestals.

6 The front and one side are now lying near; the former is inscribed SENA- TVS . POPVLVSQVE . ROMANVS . PECVNIA .. PVBLICA . FACIEN- DAM. CVRAVIT. ;

7 In the excavations of December 1883 a pot was found in the north corner containing $30 silver pennies of English kings of the 9th and 10th centuries,— Alfred the Great, Eadward I., Athelstan, Eadmund I., and others. A list of these is given by De Rossi in Laneiani's work, LT' Atrio di Vesta (Rome, 1584), None are later than 946, and a bronze fibula inlaid with silver with the name of Pope Marinus II. (942-946) makes it seem probable that this hoard was con- cealed during his pontificate.

y

.

Temple The temple of Faustina the elder stands at the east angle of the pasian (only about 7 feet in width) a small brick and concrete of Faus- Forum, facing the later line of the Sacra Via. It is prostyle hexa- | edicula stands against the Tabularium. This has been wrongly tina. style, and has monolithic columns of cipollino and arich entabla- | called a shrine of Faustina, on the authority of a small inscribed ture of Greek marble, with graceful reliets of griffins and candelabra | pedestal found near it ;7 but there is clear constructional proof on the frieze.2 The walls are of massive peperino, once lined with | that it is contemporary with the temple of Vespasian, and is there- marble. On the front is inscribed DIVO.

ANTONINO.ET.DIVAE. | fore of the time of Domitian. It inay possibly have been a shrine FAVSTINAE.EX.S.C. This temple, built by Antoninus Pius in | dedicated to Titus, whose name does not occur in the inscription inemory of his wife, who died in 141, was after his death dedicated | of the adjoining temple, though the catalogue in the Curtoswm, also to him, and the first line was then added (Capitolinus, Ant. | Reg. ix., mentions a dedication to both father and son.9 Pius, 6). At an early period it was consecrated as the church of S. The next building is the Porticus XII. Deorum Consentium, a Portiens Lorenzo in Miranda, and a great part of its cella has been destroyed. | large marble platform facing the Clivus Capitolinus, with a row of XII. The front is now excavated to the original level. This temple is | small rooms or shrines partly cut into the tufa rock of the hill Deorum. shown on the reverse of several coins of Antoninus Pius; some | behind. This conjunction of twelve deities was of Etruscan origin; have the legend DEDICATIO. AEDIS. they were six of each sex and were called Senatus Deorum (Varro, Temple The space between the north-west end of the Forum and the | L.Z., viii. 70, and De Re Rust., i. 1)..° The columns are of cipol- of Con- Tabularium is occupied by a range of important buildings (see Plate | lino with Corinthian caps ; on the frieze is an inscription record- cord, VII). The chief of these is the temple of Concord (see Festus, ed. | ing a restoration by Vettius Preetextatus, prefect of the city in 367 Miller, p. 347) shown on a fragment of the marble plan, founded | a.p. Under the marble platform is a row of seven small rooms, by Camillus in 367 3B.c. (Plut., Cam., 42), and rebuilt by the | the brick facing of which is of the Flavian period, used as offices brothers Tiberius and Drusus out of the spoils gained in Germany; | (schola) for scribes and precones of the ediles. It is usually called it was rededicated in 10 a.p, (Suet., T%b., 20; Dion Cass., lv. 25). | the Schola Xanthi from an inscription, now lost, recording its re- It is shown with unusual minuteness on the reverse of a first brass | storation by A. Fabius Xanthus and others, and the erection of of Tiberius. It is probable that an earlier restoration was carried | seven silver statues of gods (Gruter, Znscr., 170, 3).1 out by L. Opimius in 121 Bc. (Plut., C. Gracch., 17; Appian, The arch of Severus stands by the rostra, across the road on the Arch of Bell. Civ., i. 26), The existing remains? are of the rebuilding by | north-east side of the Forum ; the remains of the ancient travertine Severus. Tiberius and Drusus, and show that it was unusual in plan,

having | curb show that originally the road went along a rather different a large cella much wider than its depth, and a very large projecting line, and was probably altered to make room for this great arch. portico. Its construction is an intcresting example of the Roman | It was built in 203 A.D., after victories in Parthia, and was origin- use of many different materials. The lower part of the walls was ally set up in honour of Severus and his two sons Caracalla (here of massive tufa blocks, the upper part of the cella of travertine; | «called M. Aurelius Antoninus) and Geta. Caracalla, after murder- and the inner low wall, which supported ranges of internal columns, ing Geta, erased his name from all monuments to his hononr in was of mixed conerete, tufa, and travertine. The whole was lined | Rome. Representations of the arch on coins of Severus show that ° with marble, white outside, and rich Oriental marbles inside (see | its attic was surmounted by a chariot of bronze drawn by six fig. 5), which were also used for the pavement. The door-sill is | horses, in which stood Severus crowned by Victory ; at the sides made of enormous blocks of porta santa marble, in which a bronze | were statues of Caracalla and Geta, with an equestrian statue at caduceus (emblem of Concord) was inlaid. Between the internal | each angle. The arch, except the base, which is of marble-lined columns of the cella stood rows of statues; and the temple also | travertine, is built of massive blocks of Pentelic marble, and has contained a large collection of pictures, engraved gems, gold and | large crowded reliefs of victories in the East, showing much deca- silver plate, and other works of art, mostly the work of ancient dence from the best period of Roman art. Greek artists (see Plin., H.W, xxxiv. 19, xxxv. 36, 40, xxxvi. 67, The central space of the Forum is payed with slabs of travertine, Central xxxvii. 2). On the apex of the pediment was a group of three | much patched at various dates; it appears to have been marked space of figures embracing ; the tympanum was filled with sculpture; and | out into compartments with incised lines (see Plate VII.), the use Forum. statues were set in the open porch. Though how only the podium of which is not known.'" Numerous clamp- holes all over the and the lower part of the cella wall exist, with foundations of the paving show where statues and other ornaments once stood. The great flight of steps, many rich fragments both of the Corinthian | recorded number of these is very great, and they must once have entablature and of the internal caps and bases are preserved in the thickly.crowded a great part of the central area.

“I’wo short marble Capitol; and some of the marble lining is still in situ. The | walls or plutei covered with reliefs, discovered in 1872, stand on the Einsiedeln MS. gives part of the inscription of the front—S.P.Q. | north side. Their use and original position are not known, as the R. AEDEM . CONCORDIAE . VETVSTATE. COLLAPSAM . IN . MELI- rough travertine plinth on which they have been set is evidently OREM . FACIEM . OPERE. ET. CVLTV. SPLENDIDIORE.RESTITV- | of late date. Each of these marble screens has (on the inside) ERVNT.5 Another temple of Concord, built in 219 B.c., stood on | reliefs of a fat bull, boar, and ram, decked out with sacrificial the Oapitoline Arx (Liv., xxii. 33, xxvi. 23) ; and a bronze edicula | wreaths and vitte—the suovetaurilia. On the outside are scenes of Concord in the Area Vulcani, which must have been close by the | in the life of Trajan: one has the emperor seated on a suggestus great temple. This was dedicated by Cn. Flavius, 305 B.c. (see instituting a charity for destitute children in 99 a.p.—a scene Liv., ix. 46) ; according to Pliny (A.N., xxxiii, 6) it stood “in | shown also in one of his first brasses—with the legend ALIM[ENTA] Grecostasi, que tune supra Comitium erat.” Both these were ITALIAE ;}° at the other end the emperor stands on the rostra, on probably only small shrines. which the two tiers of beaks are shown ; he is addressing a crowd Temple The temple of Vespasian stands close by that of Concord, abutting | of citizens. The backgrounds of this and the other relief are of of Ves- on the Tabularium in a similar way, and blocking up a doorway great topographical interest. In the first is shown the long line pasian. at the foot of a long flight of steps (see fig. 1). It consists of a of arches of the Basilica Julia, with (on the left) what is probably*

820 i O

over the Allobroges (schol. on Cic., In Verr., i. 7; Liv., Ep., lvi.; Plin., H.N., vii. 50). It marked the extreme limit of the Forum in this direction (Cic., Pro Plan., 7, 17), as the rostra did at the other end. This arch was dug up and mostly de- stroyed in 1540-50, near the temple of Faustina; on one of the fragments then discovered was inscribed Q. FABIVS OQ) on. EA SVMVS.AED.CVR.REST. About twenty-five other fragments were found in 1882.? The arch of Augustus, erected in 29 B.C., also stood

near this point, but its exact site is uncertain. An inscribed block of its attic was found during the excavations of

1540-50.

nearly square cella with prostyle hexastyle portico of the Corinth- lan order ; three of the columns are still standing, with their rich entablature, the frieze of which is sculptured with sacred instru-

a eee ee ee

1 Ann, Inst., 1859, p. 307; Not. degli Scavi, 1882, p. 225.

2 This finely sculptured frieze is almost an exact copy of that on the temple of Apollo at Miletus.

3 The size of the earlier and smaller temple is indicated by the rough blocks on the face of the wall of the Tabularium, close against which the temple stands. When the Tabularium was built it was not thought worth while to dress to a sinooth face that part of its wall which was concealed by the then existing teinple of Concord.

4 The anonymous writer of this MS. appears to have visited Rome in the 9th century. The MS. is named after the monastery in which it is preserved.

® Little is known of the Basilica Opimia, which probably adjoined the earlier temple of Concord, and the existing building appears also to have occupied the site of the Senaculum (see Festus, ed. Miiller, p. 347). For various exciting scenes which took place in the temple of Concord and on its steps, see Cic., Phil., vii. 8; Sallust, Bell. Cat.

M E

ments. The walls are of enormous blocks of travertine with strong iron clamps; the whole was lined with white Pentelic marble outside, and inside with coloured Oriental marbles. There was an internal range of columns, as in the temple of Concord. This temple was built by Domitian,

c. 94 A.D., in honour of his father Vespasian. The inscription on the entablature, given in the Kinsiedeln MS., re- cords a restoration by Severus and Caracalla—DIVO. VESPASIANO., AVGVSTO.S.P.Q.R.IMPP.CAESS.SEVERVS. ET. ANTONINVS. PII . FELIC . AVGG . R[ESTITVER]VNT; part of the last word only now exists.®

In the narrow space between the temples of Concord and Ves-

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

the temple of Castor and the arch of Augustus. On the right are the statue of Marsyas and the sacred fig-tree (ficws rwminalis),! eS a Nae

6 See Piale, Tempi di Vespasiano e Concordia, 1821.

7 This pedestal is now on the ground floor of the Capitoline Museum ; its inscription is interesting, being a dedication to Faustina by a viator (messen- ger) of one of the questors of the Hrarium Saturni. Its discovery near this eedicula was probably accidental.

8 Exactly that part of the marble plinth of the temple of Vespasian which was concealed by the edicula is left rough, the moulding not being worked, showing that the little shrine is not an addition later than the temple.

9 See Preller, Regionen der Stadt Rom, Reg. ix., and Uhilrichs, Codex Topog. Rome, Reg. ix.

10 Twelve gilt statues are mentioned by Varro.

ll See Grifi, Gli Consenti e loro Portico, 1858.

12 They may possibly have had something to do with the marshalling of the voters of the Comitia Tributa.

33 Colien, vol. ii. 303-305,

14 Pliny (H.N., xv. 20) mentions another fig-tree in the middle of the Forum, which may possibly be the one here represented.

which stood on the Comitium. On the other slab the emperor is seated on the rostra (this part is broken), while in front a crowd of citizens are bringing tablets and piling them in a heap to be burnt. This records the remission by Trajan of some arrears of debt due to the imperial treasury (Spartian, 7). The background here represents again the Basilica Julia, with (on the right) the Ionic temple of Saturn and the Corinthian temple of Vespasian. Between them is an arch, which may be that of Tiberius. On the left the fig-tree and the statue of Marsyas are repeated. Other explanations of these reliefs have been given, but the above appears the most probable.! Towards the other end of the Forum are re- mains of a large coneretc pedestal. This is usually called the base of the cquestrian statue of Domitian (Statius, Si/v., i. 22), which stood in front of the Aides Julii; but its brick facing shows that it is much later than Domitian's time, and, moreover, Domi- tian's statue was destroyed immediately after his death.

The seven cubical brick and concrete structures, once faced with marble, which line the Sacra Via, are not earlier than the time of Constantine.? They are probably the pedestals of honorary columns, such as those shown in the relief on Constantine's arch, mentioned above. The column erected in honour of the tyrant Phocas by Sniaragdus in the eleventh year of his exarchate (608) is still standing. It is a fine marble Corinthian column, stolen from some earlier building ; it stands on rude steps of marble and tufa. The name of Phocas is erased from the inscription; but the date shows that this monument was to his honour. Remains of other small marble structures are shown in Plate VIL, but what they are is not known. In the 4th century a long brick and concrete build- ing faced with marble was built along the whole south-east end of the Forum, probably a row of shops. They were destroyed by Comm. Rosa's order a few ycars ago. Countless fragments of other buildings, reliefs, and statues are strewn all over the Forum. Many of these are of great interest; pieces of large granite columns which probably stood on the seven pedestals

mentioned above are lying in various places ; some of these appear to have been deco- rated with bronze reliefs, the iron fastenings of which, run with lead, still exist.?

Palatine Hill or Palatiwm.

In addition to the walls of Roma Quadrata (see above), a few remains only now exist earlier in date than the later years of the républic ; these are mostly grouped near the Scale Caci (see No. 11 in fig. 17) and consist of small celle and other structures of un- known use.4 They are partly built of the soft tufa used in the wall of Romulus and partly of the lard tufa which resembles peperino. Various names, such as the "lhut of Faustulus" and the " Auguratorium," have been given to these very ancient remains, but with little reason. One thing is certain, that the buildings were respected and preserved even under the empire and were probably regarded as sacred relics of the earliest times. Remains of more than one temple, probably of the early republican period, exist near this west angle of the Palatine; these had peristyles with Tuscan columns of tufa stuccoed and painted. The larger of these (see 14 in fig. 17) has been called conjecturally the temple of

architectural fragments are lying near this temple; they consist of drums and capitals of Corinthian columns, and part of the cornice of the pediment, cut in peperino, and thickly coated with hard white stucco to imitate marble. Between this and the temple (so called) of Jupiter Victor are extensive remains of a large sort of porticus, with tufa walls and travertine piers, also republican in date. The use and name of this building are unknown. The

temple of Jupiter Stator, traditionally vowed by Romulus during Temple his repulse by the Sabines (Liv., i. 12), stood near the Porta of Jupi- Mugionis, and therefore near the road leading up to the Palatine ter Sta- This has been identified with the ruined concrete tor.

Sacra Via.> podium (40 in fig. 17), the position of which suits the above indi- cations; but the admixture of travertine, brick, and even marble with the tufa of the concrete shows that no trace here remains of any early building. On the tufa blocks of a shaft leading down to a large drain by the side of these remains are incised in large

letters— FILOCR DIOCLEA E

—possibly the names of Greek stone-masons (Diocles, Philocrates) ; the form of the letters shows that this inscription is as early as the 2d or even 3d century B.c.

Remains of extensive lines of buildings in early opus reticulatum exist on the upper slopes of the Palatine, all along the Velabrum side, and on the south-west side as far as the so-called Domus Gelotiana. These buildings are constructed on the ruins of the wall of Romulus, a great part of which has been cut away to make room for thein ; their base is at the foot of the ancient wall, on the shelf cut midway in the side of the hill ; their top reached originally above the upper level of the summit. They are of various datcs and caunot be identified with any known buildings.

Tac., Hist., i. 27, and iti. 71); this palace covered a great part of the west corner of the hill.

reticulatumn ; it is usually called the house of Livia. It has a small atrium, out of which open the triclinium and the tablinum with a room (a/a) on each side, all handsomely decorated with good paintings of mythological and domestic scenes, probably the work of Greek artists, as inscriptions in Greek occur,—e.g., EPMHC, under the figure of Hermes, in a picture representing his deliver- ance of Io from Argus.6 The back part of this house was three stories high, and is divided into a great nuinber of very small rooms, mostly bedrooms. The house is built in a sort of hole against the side of an elevation, so that the upper floor behind is level with an ancient paved road. The dampness caused by this is counteracted and kept off the paintings by a lining of flangc-tiles over the external walls, under the stucco, thus forming an air- cavity all over the surface. From the back of the house, at the upper level, a long subterranean passage leads towards the Flavian palace, and then, turning

at right angles and passing by the foundations of the so-called temple of Jupiter Victor, issues In the ancient tufa building mentioned above (20 in fig. 17). Another

Temple Jupiter Victor (Liv., x. 29; Ov., Fast, iv. 621). It stands on a | crypto-porticus starts near this house and communicates with the of Jupi- levelled platform of tufa rock, the lower part of which is excavated | long semi-subterranean passage by which the palaccs of Caligula ter Vic- into quarry chambers, used in later times as water reservoirs. Two | and Domitian are connected (19 in fig. 17). It is ornamented with tor. ancient well-shafts lined with tufa communicate with these sub- | yery beautiful stucco reliefs of cupids, beasts, and foliage, once

terranean hollows. Another extensive building of hard tufa of the republican period exists in the valley afterwards covered by the Macen palace; part of this can be seen under the so-called Accademia (21 in fig. 17). Not far from the top of the Scale Caci are the massive remains of some large cella, nothing of which now exists except the concrete core made of alternate layers of tufa and By it a noble

'also Suet., Cal., 58).

painted and gilt. This private house is probably that of Germani- cus, into which the soldiers who killed Caligula in the long crypto- porticus escaped, as described by Josephus (Ant. Jud., xix. 1; see Some inscribed lead pipes were found in this house ; some pieces bear the inscription IVLIAE. AVG., prob- ably the daughter of Titus.

' Part is ap- Domus parently of the time of the emperor Tiberius, and no doubt belongs Tiberi- to the Domus Tiberiana mentioned by Suetonius (7%b., 5; comp. ana.

C Of about the same date is a very House of interesting and well- preserved private house built wholly of opus Livia.

The palace of Augustus and the Area Apollinis' occupied a great Palace of portion of the central part of the Palatine (see 47 and 48 in fig. Augustus 17); the splendour of its architecture and the countless works of

and Area art in gold, silver, ivory, bronze, and marble, mostly the produc- Apollinis,

Statue of peperino. It was probably once lined with marble. Cybele. colossal seated figure of a goddess was found, in Greek marble, well modelled, a work of the lst century A.D. The head and arms are

missing, but the figure is probably rightly called a statue of Cybele ; and from it her name has been conjecturally given to this temple. Augustus in the Monwmentum Ancyranum records AEDEM. MATRIS .MAGNA.IN.PALATIO. FECI; but it is more probable that his temple to Cybele formed part of the magnificent group of buildings in the area of Apollo (see below). Some interesting early

1 See Brizio, Ann. Inst., 1872, p. 309; Henzen, Bull. Inst., 1872, p. 81; and Jordan, Marsyas aufdem Forum, Berlin, 1883.

2 It is probable that these occupy the line of the Taberne Vetcres.

3 Authorities on the Forwm.—Nichols, Roman Forum, London, 1877 (very use- ful from its collection of passages in ancient authors); Jordan, Capitol, Forum, dc., Berlin, 1881, and Topographie Roms, vol. i., 1878 ; Nibby, Il Foro Romano, 1819; Angelini and Fea, 11 Foro Romano, 1837 ; Tocco, Ripristinazione del Foro, 1858 ; Ravioliand Montiroli, Foro Romano, 1859; Michelet, Das Forum Romanum, Berlin, 1877; Marucchi, I2 Foro Romano, 1881 ; Dutert, Le Forwm Romain, Paris, 1876 (very handsomely illustrated, but more fanciful than trustworthy) ; Canina, IZ Foro Romano, 1845 (open to the same criticism as the work of Dutert, and wholly stultified by later discoveries). For inscriptions found in the Forum, see Jordan, " Sylloge Inserip. Fori Rom.," in the Ephem. Epigraph., lil. p. 248 sq. Some of the more recent excavations are described by Lanciani, ""'Seavi del Foro," in Notizie degli Scavi for 1882. a oh ;

4 Many masons' marks exist on the tufa blocks of the most primitive build- ings near the Scale Caci (see fig. 10).

tion of the best Greek artists, which adorned this magnificent group of buildings must have made it the chief glory of this splendid city. It was approached from a road leading out of the Summa Sacra Via along the line of the present Via di 5. Bonaven- tura; the entrance, probably the Arcus of Pliny (H.., xxxvi. 4, 10), led through lofty propylea into~a very extensive peristyle or porticus, with (at least) fifty-two fluted columns of Numidian giallo; the rest was of white Luna and Athenian marble. In the centre of this enclosure stood the great octostyle peripteral temple of Apollo Palatinus, so called to distinguish it from another temple of Apollo outside the Porta Carmentalis, remains of which exist

5 Dionys., ii. 50; see also Plut., Cic., 16; Ov., Fast., vi. 793, and Trist., iii. 127, Near this temple, and also near the Porta Mugonia, was the house of Tarquinius Priscus (Liv., i. 41; Sol., Polyhist., i. 24). Owing to the strength of its position this temple was more than once selected during troubled times asa safe meeting-place for the Senate ; it was here, as being a "locus muni- tissimus," that Cicero delivered his First Catiline Oration (sce Cic., In Cat., i. 1).

6 See Mon. Inst., xi., pls. xxii., xxiii; Renier, Les Peintures du Palatin, Paris, 1870.

7 See Lanciani's paper in Bull. Comm. Arch. Roma, iv., 1883.

y j Piazza Montanara. This | (Plin., 7.W., xxxvi. 4); round the walls were statues of the nine pn age gHaA ole oe B.C.,! after his Sicilian | Muses (Juy., vii. 37). The pediment had seulpture by Bupalus bet over Sextus Pompeius, and finished in 28 B.c.?, A glowing | and Archermus of Chios (Plin., ALN., xxxvi. 4), and on the apex, scone of the splendours of these buildings is given by Propertius | was Apollo in a quadriga of gilt bronze. The double door was (HI., ii. 8). Inside the, cella were statues of Apollo between Latona | covered with ivory reliefs of the death of the Niobids and the and Diana hy Seopas, Praxiteles, and Timotheus respectively | defeat of the Gauls at Delphi. The Ancyra inseription records that

Wy 2 Ty META DANS A Li AN ee, . - 2 Ei e \ CT) YY) Ly : eee aan ~ BASILICA eS CA Koga + : La Jutia RY) &.mar : 45 ARCH isn TIBERATRICE SP ee ouanum is 5 Sa C7 SOE: Ria re VERTUMNI/S ZED BS fod “*

Barberini Vine ova ra

I

&

9

Peay s] — ~y

7

ll bre h tae sae ALATINUS.

re petits

P

4 cy WILE, Church &Monaster; or of S Sebactana

int

rg

TEMPLE OF JUPITER STATOR OD

Fer ERY & GARDENS 83) BONAVENTURA

yyy if] wy, % Myf % Y) Lily Yo

MlidlieruXS meas –

z

ote me fi

)

; u | | I

Ping AP : ec

i] f

My I

AYN MN i HY

|

”

} |

Fic. 17.—Plan of the Palatine Hill,—1. Present entrance. 2, 2. Remains of wall of Roma Quadrata. 3. Aqueduct. 4. Early buildings of opus reticulatum. 5. Scale Caci. 6. Buildings of mixed brick and opus reticulatum. 7. Altar to the unknown god, Sei Deo, Sei Deive, &c. 8. Reservoir cut in tufa rock. %. Passage cut in the rock. 10. So-called temple of Cybele. 11. Very early structures of tufa. 12. Tufa arcade and paved road. 13. Building with travertine piers of later republican period. 14. So-called temple of Jupiter Victor. 15. Well communicating with subterranean rock-cut reservoirs. 16, 16. Simall chambers and paved road, part of Tiberius’s building. 17. Piscina, 18, House of Germanicus. 19, 19. Crypto-porticus. 20, 20. Early building of tufa buried and covered by Domitian’s palace. 21. So-called academy and library—part of Domitian’s palace. 22. Triclinium of Domitian’s palace. : 23, Nympheum and piscina. 24, Peristyle. 25. Small rooms at side of peristyle. 26. Stairs down to erypto-porticus. 27. Throne-room. 28. Lararium. 29. Basilica. 80. Branch of crypto-porticus leading to Domitian’s palace. 31. Crypto-porticus of Caligula. $2, 32. Stairs from crypto-porticus to higher level. 33, 33. Early buildings of opus reticulatum. 34, 34. Stairs from Forum to

Porta Romanula, 35 and 38. Stairs to upper rooms of Caligula's palace. 36, 36. Substructures of Caligula's palace. 37. Caligula's bridge. 39. Porta Mugionis. 40. Temple of Jupiter Stator (so called), 41. Remains of wall of Roma Quadrata. 42,42, Remains of Nero's palace. 43. Great concrete platform. 44. Remains of medieval Turris Cartularia. 45, 45. Series of small bath- rooms. 46, So-called basilica of 5th century. 47. Site of temple and libraries of Apollo. 48. Palace of Augustus (now destroyed). 49. Domus Gelotiana. 50. Stadium, with oval hall of Theodoric (). 51. Exedra of Hadrian. 52. Stairs from stadium to higher level of hill. 538, 58. Remains of Hadrian's palace, partly covered by later palace of Severus. 54. Baths of Severus's palace. 55, 55. Lofty substructures of Severus's palace. 56. Aqua Claudia brought on Nero's aqueduct. 57. Shops of opus incertum. 58. Substructures of Circus Maximus. 59. Remains of early tufa building, and brick-faced structures of imperial times. 60, 60. Paved road skirting outside of Circus Maximus.

Augustus sold eighty silver statues of himself and with the money | (Suet., 4wg., 31); and within the cella were vases, tripods, and" "offered golden gifts" to this temple, dedicating them both in his | statues of gold and silver, with a collection of engraved gems dedi- own name and in the names of the original donors of the statues.? | eated by Marcellus (see Plin., H.N., xxxvii. 5). On each side of The Sibylline books were preserved under the statue of Apollo | the porticus was a large library, one Latin and the other Greek ;4

pa ae fea : } 1 TEMPLVM . APOLL ; i ; and a third side of the great enclosure was oeeupied by a large hal EMPTO . FECI tien a Hing TN . SOLO . MAGNAM . PARTEM . where the Senate occasionally met (Tac., Ann., ii. 37), in the centre

2 See Dion Cass., xlix. 15, lili. 1, and C.I.L., i. p. 403. TS Ge ee

3 See also Suet., dug., 52, whose account is rather different. 4 Schol. to Juv., i. 128, and Suet., Aug., 29.

Temple of Victory.

Palace of

of which stood a bronze colossus of Augustus,! 50 feet high (Plin., H.N., xxxiv. 18). Round the portieus, between the Numidian marble columns, were statues of the fifty Danaids, and opposite them their fifty bridegrooms on horseback (see schol. on Pers., ii. 56), many fragments of which have been found. In the centre before the steps of the temple stood an altar surrounded by four oxen, the work of Myron (Proper., Z1., ii. 8,7). Within the same area was a small temple of Vesta (C.I.L., i. p. 392), dedicated on 28th April 12 B.c., when Augustus was elected pontifex maximus ;? the sacred block or altar symbolically called Roma Quadrata, sur- rounded by a circular trench called the Mundus, was also in some part of this great group of buildings. On the side towards the Circus Maximus was the palace of Augustus, which was excavated in 1775, and drawings of which were published by Guattani.?

The palace of Caligula occupies the northern angle of the Palatine,

Caligula. and extends over the Clivus Victorie a long way towards the Clivus

Palatinus (see fig. 17). This part of the Palatine was once occupied by the Lucus Veste, with the Sacellum Volupie and many fine private houses. Among these were the dwellings of Q. Lutatius Catulus, Q. Hortensius, Catiline, Scaurus, Crassus (Plin., H.J., XXxXvi. 3, 24), whose house was aftcrwards bought by Cicero,® and the house of Clodius, the view of which Cicero threatened to block out." Many other wealthy Romans had houses on this part of the Palatine, so that the cost of the site for Caligula's cnormous palace must have been very great. The part now existing is little more than the gigantic substructures built to raise the principal rooms to the level of the top of the hill. The lowest parts of these face the Nova Via, opposite the Atrium Veste, and many stories of small vaulted rooms built in mixed brick and opus reticulatum rise one above the other to the higher levels. The palace extends over the Clivus Victorie, supported on lofty arches so as to leave the road unblocked ; many travertine or marble stairs lead to the upper rooms, some starting from the Nova Via, others from the

livus Victorie. Its enormous extent is referred to by Pliny (H.N., xxxvi. 24).

1 The bronze head, now in the court of the Palazzo dei Conservatori, may possibly have belonged to this colossus ; it is much too sinall for that of Nero, to which it has generally been attributed ; it seems, however, of inferior work- manship to that of the Augustan age. . vi

2 Ovid (Fast., iv. 949) mentions this group as being divided among three gods, namely, Phebus, Vesta, and Augustus (comp. Metam., xv. 864). The plan of a circular temple drawn by Ligorio (Cod. Ursin. Vat., 3439, fol. 25) probably represents this temple of Vesta as discovered in the 16th century ; it is repro- duced in Bull. Comm. Arch. Roma, 1883, pl. xvii.

3 Mon. Ant. ined. di Roma, 1785, p. 56. ? , ao

4 This temple is shown on a rare bronze medallion of Gordianus ITI. ; it is domed, and on the pediment is inscribed NEIKH OIITAOBOPO. See Grueber, Roman Medallions, pl xlii., London, 1874,

5 See Bianchini, Pal. dei Cesari, 1738, p. 236. :

6 Cic., Pro Domo, 43; Val. Max., vi. 83,1; and see Becker, Handb., i. p. 423.

7 Cic., De Harus., 15, 33. ;

8 At this point the Palatine is cut away into four stages like gigantic steps ; the lowest is the floor of the Atrium Vests, the second the Nova Via, the third the Clivus Victoriz, and the top of the hill forms the fourth.

Nova Via. This possibly marks a difference of date, and the occurrence of brick stamps of the latter part of the 1st century A.D. In various parts of the palace shows that a large portion of it is later than the time of Caligula.

The next great addition to the buildings of the Palatine was the Flavian magnificent suite of state apartments built by Domitian, over a Palace.

deep natural valley running across the hill (see fig. 17). The valley was filled up and the level of the new palace raised to a considerable height above the natural soil. Remains of a house, decorated with painting and rich marbles, exist under Domitian's peristyle, partly destroyed by the foundations of cast concrete which cut right through it. The floor of this house shows the original level, far below that of the Flavian palace. The south angle of this great building adjoins the palace of Augustus, and it is connected with the palace of Caligula by a branch subterranean passage leading into the earlier crypto-porticus. These two build- Ings continued to be used as the private apartments of the emperor, the Flavian block consisting only of state rooms; the words AEDES PVBLICA werc inscribed upon it by Nerva to show its public charac- ter. It consists of a large open peristyle, with columns of Oriental marble, at one end of which is the grand triclinium with magnifi- cent paving of opus sectile in red and green basalt and coloured marbles, a piece of which is well preserved ; next to the triclinium, on to which it opens with large windows, is a nympheum or room with marble-lined fountain and recesses for plants and statues. On the opposite side of the peristyle is a large throne-room, the walls of which were adorned with rows of pavonazetto and giallo columns and large marble niches, in which were colossal statues of porphyry and basalt; at one side of this is the basilica, with central nave and apse and narrow aisles, over which were galleries. The apse, in which was the emperor's throne, is screened off by open marble cancelli, a part of which still exists. It is of great interest as show- ing the origin of the Christian basilica ; S. Agnese fuori le Mura is exactly similar in arrangement (see Basic, vol. iii. p. 417).9 On the other side of the throne-room is the lararium, with altar and pedestal for a statue; next to this is the grand staircase, which led to the upper rooms, now destroyed. The whole build- ing, both floor and walls, was covered with the richest Oriental marbles, including all the varieties mentioned on p. 808. Out- side were colounades or porticus,—on one side of cipollino, on the other of travertine, the latter stuccocd and painted. The magni- ficence of the whole, crowded with fine Greck sculpture and covered with polished marbles of the most brilliant colours, is difficult now to realize ;

a glowing description is given by Statius (Sidv., iv. 11, 18; see also Plut., Poplie., 15, and Mart., viii. 86). Doors were arranged in the throne-room and basilica so that the emperor could slip out unobserved and reach by a staircase (30 in fig. 17) the erypto-porticus which communieates with Caligula's palace. The vault of this passage was covered with mosaic of mixed marble and glass, a few fragments of which still remain ; its walls were lined with rieh marbles; it was lighted by a series of windows in the springing of the vault. This, as well as the Flavian palace, appears to have suffered more than once from fire, and in many places important restorations of the time of Severus, and some as late as the 4th century, are evident. In 1720-26 extensive exca- vations were made here for the Farnese duke of Parma, and an immense quantity of statues and marble architectural fragments were discovered, many of which are now at Naples and elsewhere. Among them were sixteen beautiful fluted columns of pavonazetto and giallo, fragments of the porphyry statues, and an immense door-sill of Pentelic marble, now used for the high altar of the Pantheon ; these all came from the throne-room. 'The excavations were carried on by Bianchini, who published a book on the subject.'

In the middle of the slopes of the Palatine, towards the Circus Domus Maximus, are considerable remains of buildings set against the Gelo- This tiana.

wall of Romulus and covering one of its projecting spurs. series of rooms with a long Corinthian colonnade has been sup- posed to be part of the Domus Gelotiana, from which Caligula used to watch the races in the circus below (Suet., Cad.,18). Little, however, of the existing remains is as early as the reign of Caligula, and the marble porticus apparently dates from the time of Severus. The rooms were partly marble-lined and partly decorated with painted stucco, on which are ineised a number of interesting in- scriptions and rude drawings. Here, in 1857, was found the cele- brated (so-called) caricature of the Crueified Christ, now in the Museo Kircheriano, but which, more probably, has a Gnostic meaning.!t The inscription CORINTHVS . EXIT . DE . PEDAGOGIO suggests that this building was at one time used as a school, per- haps for the imperial slaves. A number of soldiers' names also occur, ¢.g.,

HILARVS.MI.V.D.N. (Hilarus miles veteranus domini nostri); some are in mixed Latin and Greek characters, with many

9 The brick stamps on the tiles laid under the marble paving of the basilica have CN. DOMITI. AMANDI. VALEAT. QVI. FECIT.,— the last three words a common augury of good luck stamped on bricks or aimphore; these date from a restoration after a fire in the time of Severus.

10 Pal. dei Cesari, Verona, 1738; see Guattani, Not. di Antich., 1798.

1l See Kraus, Das Spottcrucifizx vom Palatin, Freiburg, 1872, and Becker, Das Spoticrucifiz, &c., Breslau, 1866.

Stadium.

Hadrian's

palace.

Palace of Severus.

824 EK ©

varieties of mis-spelling. After one pair of names is inscribed PEREG, showing that they belonged to the foreign corps called Peregrini, probably stationed here as guards to the imperial resi- dences on the hill above. Most of these inscriptions appear to be as early as the 1st century A.pD.! These interesting graffiti have in great part perished during the last few years, and soon none will remain. ; 7

The great stadium of the Palatine (sce 50 in fig. 17) was begun by Domitian, mainly built by Hadrian, and much altered or restored by Severus. The greater part of the outer walls and the large exedra or apse at the side, with upper floor for the emperor's seat, are of the time of Hadrian, as is shown by the brick stamps, and the character of the brick facing, which much resembles that of the Flavian time (bricks 14 inches and joints 4 inch thick)? The stadium is surrounded with a colonnade of engaged shafts, forming a sort of aisle with gallery over it. Except those at

the curved end, which are of Hadrian's time, these piers are of the time of Severus, as are also all the flat piers along the outer wall,—one opposite each of those in the inner line. This shows either that the stadium must have been left by Hadrian in an unfinished state, or else that it suffered seriously from a fire or earthquake before the reign of Severus.

In addition to the stadium, Hadrian built a number of very handsome rooms, forming a palace on the south-east side and at the south-west end of the stadium. These rooms were partly destroyed and partly hidden by the latcr palace of Sevcrus, the foundations of which in many places cut through and render useless the highly decorated rooms of Hadrian (53 in fig. 17). The finest of these which is now visible is a room with a large window opening into the stadium near the south angle; it has intersecting barrel vaults, with deep coffers, richly ornamented in stucco. The oval structure shown in the plan (50 in fig. 17), with other still later additions, belongs to the 4th or 5th century, when the stadium was no longer used for races ; some of the walls, of opus mixtum, which cut up and disfigure this noble building appear to be the work of Theodoric, c. 500.

The palace of Septimius Severns was very extensive and of enormous height ; it extends not only all over the south angle of the Palatine but also a long way into the valley of the Circns Maximus and towards the Celian. This part (like Caligula's palace) is carricd on very lofty arched substructures, so as to form a level, uniform with the top of the hill, on which the grand apartments stood. The whole height from the base of the Palatine to several stories above its summit must have been enormous. Little now remains of the highest stories, except part of a grand staircase which led to them. xtensive baths, all richly decorated with marble linings and mosaics in glass and marble, cover a great part of the top of the hill. These and other parts of the Palatine were supplied with water by an aqueduct built by Nero in continuation of the Claudian aqueduct, some arches of which still exist on the slope of the Palatine (56 in fig. 17; sce Spart., Sept. Sev., 24). The palace of Severus was restored and enlarged by Heliogabalus and Severus Alexander.? One of the main roads up to the Palatine passes under the arched substructures of Severus, and near this, at the foot of the hill, at the sonth angle, Septimius Severus built an

M E

was formed. The foundations of part of Nero's palace along the road between this temple and the Esquiline are exposed for abont 20 to 30 feet in height, showing a corresponding lowering of the level here, and the bare tufa rock, cut to a flat surface, is visible on the site of Hadrian's great temple; that the Vclia was once much loftier is also indicated by the story of the removal of Valerius Publicola's dwelling.®

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

On the Velia and the adjoining Summa Sacra Via were two Sacra temples which Augustus rebuilt." The " Aides Larum" is probably Via.

"

the "Sacellum Larum" mentioned by Tacitus (Ann., xii. 24) as one of the points in the line of the pomcerium of Roma Quadrata. The Sacra Via started at the Saccllum Strenie, an unknown point on the Esquiline, probably near the baths of Titus (Varro, L.L., v. 47), in the quarter called Cerolia. Thence it probably (in later times) passed round part of the Colosseum to the slope leading up to the arch of Titus on the Velia; this piece of its course is lined on one side by extensive baths, attributed to Heliogabalus (45 in fig. 17), and farther back, against the cliff of the Palatine, are remains of Nero's enormous palace (see 42 in fig. 17). From the arch of Titus 'or Summa Sacra Via the original line of the road has been altered (see Plate VII.) ; the angle at which the scanty remains of the Regia are set probably shows the early direction of the Sacra Via in passing on to the temple of Vesta. Its later course was more to the north-east, passing at a sharp angle from the arch of Titus to the front of Constautine's basilica, and on past the temple of Faustina. It is uncertain whether the continuation of this road to the arch of Severus was in later times called the Sacra Via or whether it rejoined its old line along the Basilica Julia by the cross-road in front of the Ades Julii. Its original line past the temple of Vesta was completely built over in the 3d and 4th centuries, and clumsily-fitted pavements of marble and travertine occupy the place of the old basalt blocks. The course of the

Nova Via ® (sce figs. 16 and 17) along the palace of Caligula !° was Nova According to Varro (Z.Z., vi. 59) it was a Via.

exposed in 1882-84. very old road. It led up from the Velabrum, probably winding along the slope of the Palatine, round the north angle under the church of S. Maria Liberatrice. The rest of its course, gently ascending towards the arch of Titus, is now exposed, as are also the stairs, possibly the Scale Anulariz, which connected it with the Clivus Victorie at the Porta Romanula; a continuation of these stairs, still unexcavated, led down to the Forum.

_. The extent of the once marshy Vclabrum (Gk., Fédos) is not Vela- known, though part of its site is indicated by the church of S. brum.

Giorgio in Velabro; Varro (Z.Z., vi. 24) says, "extra urbem an- tiquam fuit, non longe a porta Romanula." It was a district full of shops (Plaut., Capt., iii. 1, 29; Hor, Sat., ii 8, 229). The Vicus Tuscus on its course from the Forum to the Circus skirted the Velabrnm (Dionys., v. 26), from which the goldsmiths' arch was au entrance into the Forum Boarium (comp. Dionys., i. 40).

Capitoline Hill.

The Capitoline Hill, once called Mons Saturnius (Varro, L. L., v. 42), consists of two peaks, the Capitolium and the Arx,! with an intermediate valley (Asylum). The older name of the Capi- tolium was Mons Tarpeius (Varro, Z. Z., v. 41). Livy (i. 10)

mentions the founding of a shrine to Jupiter Feretrius on the Temple Capitolium by Romulus ;¥ this summit was afterwards occupied of

by the great triple temple dedicated to Jupiter, Juno, and Minerva, Jupiter a triad of deitics worshipped under the names of Tinia, Thalna, Capitol- and Menrva in every Etruscan city. This great temple was (Liv., inns.

outlying part of his palace, a building of great splendour dedicated to the Sun and Moon, called the Septizonium, probably from its seven stories or zone (sce Jordan, Bull. Inst., 1872, p. 145). It has been doubted whether it

can really have been as much as seven stories high ; but this is not improbable when we consider

the cnormons height of the rest of Severus's palace, reaching from the foot of the Palatine to far above its summit. Part of the Septi- zonium cxisted as date as the reign of Sixtus V. (1585-90), who destroyed it in order to use its marble decorations and columns in the new basilica of St Peter ; drawings of it are given by Du Perac, Vestig) di Roma, 1575, and in other works of that century.

i. 38, 53) founded by Tarquin I., built by his son Tarquin II., and dedicated by M. Horatius Pulvillus, consul suffectus in 509 3.c.14 It was built in the Etruscan style, of peperino stuccoed and painted (Vitr., ili, 3), with wooden architraves, wide intercolumniations, and painted terra-cotta statues.!° It was rebuilt many times; the original temple lasted till it was burnt in 838 B.c. ; it was then re-

Velia The Velia and Germalus were two outlying spurs of the Palatine.5 | founded in marble by Sulla, with Corinthian columns stolen from and Ger- Owing to the great altcrations that have been made in the contour | the temple of Olympian Zeus in Athens (Plin., xxxvi. 5), and was malus. of the hill it is now very difficult to identify these ancient districts | completed and dedicated by Q. Lut. Catulus, whose name appeared

(see Ann. Inst., 1865, p. 847). The Germalus or Cermalns was probably on the side towards the Velabrum, while the Velia may be identified with that elevated ground between the Palatine and the Esquiline on which the temple of Venus and Rome and the arch of Titus now stand. It is evident that this was once much loftier and more abrupt than it is now; a great part of it was cut away when the level platform for the temple of Venus and Rome Se ee ee ee ee

: oe bape e he elie eee 1863, p. 72, and 1867, p. 113.

Nparts ot the outer wall brick stamps of the Flavian period appear, e.g. or AVG.1L. CLONI—"{A brick] of Clonius, feeding of ae Five

g S.

3 See Dion Cass., lxxii. 24; Lamprid., Hist. Auy.: Se t. Sev., 19, :

Alex., 24, 25; and Id., Heliog., 3 e 24," – = pinay. ia

a See Jordan, Die Kaiserpal. in Rom, Berlin, 1871; Thon, Pal. dei Cesari, 1828 ; Lanciani, Guida del Pal., 1873; Ann. Inst., 1852, p. 324, and Mon. Inst., v. pl. xxxvi.; Guattani, Roma desc., 1805.

*5 'Huic (Palatio) Germalum et Velias conjunxerunt . . . 'Germalum' a germanis Romulo et Remo, quod ad ficum Ruiminalem ibi inventi" (Varro, L.L., vy. 54). Varro's derivation of Velia from '*vellera," the fleeces of the | pasturing flocks, is obviously wrong. |*

on the front. Augustus, in spite of his having carried out part of the work, did not introduce his name by the side of that of Catulus. It was again burnt by the Vitellian rioters in 70 A.p., and rebuilt by Vespasian in 71.16 Lastly, it was burnt in the three days' fire

6 Liv., ii. 7; Cie., Rep., ii. 831; see also Ascon., Ad Cic. In Pis., 22.

7 AEDEM .LARVM.IN.SVMMA.SACRA.VIA.AEDEM.DEVM. PENATIVM.IN.VELIA .. . FECI (Mon. Ancyr.). ;

8 See Goettling, De Sacra Via, Jena, 1834, and Jordan, Topographie der Stadt Rom, Berlin, 1871 (in progress).

® See Not. d. Scavi, 1882, p. 23 ee

10 See Solinus (i. 24) and Varro (Ap. Gell., xvi. 17), who mention its two ends, "summa" and "infima" (comp. Liv., v. 32).

11 See marble plan on Plate VII. and comp. Ov., Fast., vi. 395.

12 These two peaks are clearly distinguished by Livy and Strabo.

13 This is the earliest temple mentioned in Roman history, though there was probably in Roma Quadrata the usnal triply consecrated temple erected at the qoundig of the city. It was rebuilt by Augustus, as is recorded in the Mon.

meyr.

14 See Plut., Publ., 15; ¢. I. L., i. p. 487; Liv., ii. 8, iv. 51; Dionys., v. 35.

15 Plin., xxxv. 45; see Tac., Hist., iii. 72; Val. Max., v. 10. :

16 Suet., Vit., 15, and Ves.,8; comp. Tac., Hist., iv. 53, and Dion Cass., Ixvi. 10.

of Titus's reign! and rebuilt with columns of Pentelic marble by Domitian ; the gilding alone of this last rebuilding is said to have cost 2} millions sterling (Plut., Publ., 15). There has been much controversy as to the site of this temple and that of Juno Moneta on the Arx; but there is an overwhelming mass of evidence to show that the Capitolium is the peak where the Palazzo Caffarelli stands, and that the church of Ara Cceli occupies the Arx. Livy (xxxyv. 21) mentions the fall of a mass of rock from the Capitolium into the Vicus Jugarius, which passes close under the Caffarelli summit, and is not near the opposite peak. Moreover, extensive substructions of tufa and peperino have been exposed on the eastern peak, the form of which appears to fit this nearly square triple temple, and in 1875 a fragment of a fluted column was found, of such great size that it could only have belonged to the temple of Jupiter. Its actual limits have not been clearly made out, and therefore the truth of Dionysius's description (iv. 61) cannot be

roved.2, The temple is represented on many coins, both repub-

ican and imperial; these show that the central cella was that of

Jupiter, that of Minerva on his right, and of Juno on his left. The door was covered with gold reliefs, which were stolen by Stilicho (c. 390; Zosim., v. 88), and the gilt bronze tiles (Plin., xxxiii. 18) on the roof: were partly stripped off by Genseric in 455 (Procop., De Bell. Vand., i. 5), and the rest by Pope Honorius I. in 630 (Marliano, Topogr., ii. 1). Till 1848, when the steps up to Ara Cceli were built, there was no access to the Capitol from the back ; hence the three ascents to it mentioned by Livy

(iii. 7, v. 26-28) and Tacitus (Hist., iii. 71-72) were all from the inside of the Servian circuit. Even on this inner side it was defended by a wall, the gates in which are called "Capitolii fores" by Tacitus. Part of the outer wall at the top of the tufa rock, which is cut into a smooth cliff, is visible from the modern Vicolo della Rupe Tarpeia ; this cliff is traditionally called the Tarpeian rock, but that must have been on the other side towards the Forum, from whence it was visible, as is clearly stated by Dionysius (vil. 35, viii. 78).? Another piece of the ancient wall has recently been exposed, about half-way up the slope from the Forum to the Arx. It is built of soft yellow tufa blocks, five courses of which still remain in the existing frag- ment. The large temple of Juno Moneta ("the Adviser") on the Arx, built by Camillus in 384 B.c., was used as the mint; hence moneta = "money" (Liv., vi. 20).

A large number of other temples and smaller shrines stood on the Capitoline Hill, a word used broadly to include both the Capitolium and the Arx.4 Among these were the temple of Honos " Virtus, built by Marius, and the temple of Fides, founded by Numa, and rebuilt during the First Punic War. Both these were large enough to hold meetings of the Senate. The temple of Jupiter Tonans® was built by Augustus (Suet., dug., 29), near the great temple of Jupiter. Other shrines existed to Venus Victrix, Ops, Jupiter Custos, and Concord—the last under the Arx (Liv., xxii, 33)—and many others, as well as a triumphal arch in honour of Nero, and a crowd of statues and other works of art (see Plin., H.N., xxxiii. 4; xxxiv. 17, 18,19; xxxv. 36, 45; xxxvi. 5, 8), so that the whole hill must have been a mass of architectural and artistic magnificence, the spoils of the whole Hellenic world.

The so-called Tabularium occupies the central part of the side towards the Forum; it is set on the tufa rock, which is cut away to receive its lower story. It derives its name from an inscription found there in the 15th century, quoted by Poggio (see Gruter, Inscr., 170, 6); but that name was given to many buildings in Rome (Liv., iii. 55, xliii. 16), and there is no reason to suppose that this specially was known as the Tabularium (comp. Virg., Gcor., ii. 501). Catulus, who was also the dedicator of the great temple of Jupiter (Tac., Hist., iii. 72; Dion Cass., xliii, 14), was consul in 78 B.c., but part of this building is probably much earlier in date. Its outer

walls are of peperino, its inner ones of tufa or concrete ; the Doric arcade has capitals and architrave of traver- tine.® A road paved with basalt passes through the building along this arcade, entered at one end from the Clivus Capitolinus, and at the other probably from the Gradus Monetz, a flight of steps leading from the temple of Concord and the Forum up to the temple of Juno Moneta on the Arx (see Plate VII.). The entrance

1 Snet., Dom., 5; Dion Cass., Ixvi. 24.

2 See Bull. Comm. Arch., iii., 1875, p. 165; Mon. Inst., v. pl. xxxvi., x. pl. xxx.a; Hirt, "Der Capit. Jupiter Tempel," in Abhandl. der Berl. Akad., 1813 ; Niebuhr, Rom. Gesch., i. 55-58; Bunsen, Gesch., iii. 5-14; Becker, Handb., i. p. 887. Bee also Ann. Inst., 1851, p. 289, for a relief showing the sculpture in the pediment; the front of the temple is shown in one of the reliefs from the arch of M. Aurelius, now in the Capitoline Museum.

3 See Dureau, La roche Tarpienne, Paris, 1816; a graceful account of the legend of Tarpeia is given by Propertius, Hleg., iv. 4.

4 A structure of great sanctity, dating from prehistoric Etruscan times, was the Auguraculum, an elevated platform upon the Arx, from which the signs in the heavens were observed by the augurs (see Festus, ed. Mitler, p. 18). This was moved under the empire to the Palatine (see Notitia, &c.), probably by Ae What are probably its foundations have been found near the substructures of the great temple (Bull. Comm. Arch. Rom., 1875, ili. p. 165 sq.). It is men- tioned in the list of the Mon. Ancyr.

6 The whole of the frieze and cornice is missing; it is usually supposed that there was once another story above this entablature, but there is no evidence of that except Poggio's statement.

from the Clivus Capitolinus is by a wide flat arch of peperino most beautifully jointed ; the other end wall has been mostly destroyed. The

back of this building overlooked the Asylum or depression between the two peaks. From this higher level a long steep stair- case of sixty-four steps descends towards the Forum; the doorway at the foot of these stairs has a flat arch, with a circular relieving arch over it ; it was completely blocked up by the temple of Ves- pasian (see fig. 1). This was probably the door where the Vitellian rioters broke into the Capitolium (Tac., Hist., iii, 71). Great damage was done to this building by the additions of Boniface VIII. and Nicholas V., as well as by its being used as a salt store, by which the walls were much corroded.§

The Imperial Fora.

The Forum Julium (see fig. 18), with its central temple of Venus Genitrix, was begun in 49 B.c. after the battle of Pharsalia by Julius and completed by Augustus.? Being built on a crowded site it was somewhat cramped, and the ground cost nearly a hundred million sesterces,19 Part of its circuit wall, with remains of five arches, exists in the Via Marmorella ; and behind is a row of small vaulted rooms, probably shops or offices. The arches are flat, slightly cambered, with travertine springers and keys; the rest, with the circular relieving arch over, is of tufa; it was once lined with slabs of marble, the holes for which exist. Foundations of the circuit wall exist under the honses towards 8. Adriano, but the whole plan has not been made out. Palladio (Arch., iv. 31) de- scribes excavations made here, and the discovery of remains of a fine temple, probably that of Venus Genitrix.!"

_ The forum of Augustus (see fig. 18) adjoined that of Julius on its north-east side ; it contains the temple of Mars Ultor, built to

I ee went CT 77] PHO Ls mm vi | i 4

\) . 4 'OR Y)

(

| © wm 4

MM

bares SUR RERUR SAEED 4 Wy y

WAY:

at

Hii y j /;])s

Yf (chai

- AY

290

Fic, 18.—Plan of fora of Julius, Augustus, and Nerva.

commemorate the vengeance taken on Cesar's murderers at Philippi, 42 B.c. (Ov., Fast., v. 575 sq.). It was surrounded with a massive

7 Mommsen (Ann. Inst., 1858, p. 211) comes to the conclusion that this building is the Hrarium Saturni, but that seems hardly possible, as there is the clearest evidence that that xrarium was in or part of the temple of Saturn (see ante, p. 817).

8 The Porta Pandana ("'ever-open gate") was probably situated near the south-west angle of the Tabularium, where the road of the Clivus Capitolinus entered the circuit wall of the Capitoline Hill. See Righetti, Descriz. del Campidoglio, 1833; Azzurri, Antico Tabulario, 1889; Supham, De Capitolio Romano, 1866; and Jordan, Ann. Inst., 1881.

9 See Mon. Ancyr. (quoted at p. 817, note 13, above); Plin., H.N., xxxv. 45, xxxvi. 24.

10 Cic., Ep. ad Att., iv. 16; Suet., Cas., 26,

11 There is no foundation whatever for the theory that these chambers were part of the "Mamertine prison"; their form and position both make that impossible.

S 12 See Dion Cass., xliii. 22; Appian, Bell. Civ., ii. 102; Vitr., iii. 3; Plut.,

2s., 60.

13 The Ancyrean inscription records—IN . PRIVATO . SOLO. [EMP]TO. MARTIS . ULTORIS . TEMPLVM . FORVMQVE . AVGVSTVM . EX. [MANTJBIIS.FECI. See Suet., Aug., 29, 56; Dion Cass., lvi. 27; Plin., H.N.

Forum Jniium.

Forum of Augus-

tus,

XX. — 104 2

Forum Pacis.

826

wall of peperino, nearly 100 feet high, with travertine string-courses and cornice ; a large piece of this wall still exists, and is one of the most imposing relics of ancient Rome. Against it are remains of the temple of Mars, three columns of which, with their entablature and marble ceiling of the peristyle, are still standing; it is Cor- inthian in style, very richly decorated, and built of fine .Luna marble. The cella is of peperino, lined with marble ; and the lower part of the lofty circuit wall seems also to have been lined with marble on the inside of the forum. The large archway by the temple (Arco dei Pantani) is of travertine. Palladio (Arch., iv.) and other writers of the 16th century give plans of the temple and circuit wall, showing much more than now exists. The temple, which was octastyle, with nine columns and a pilaster on the sides, occupied the centre, and on each side the circuit wall formed two large semicircular apses, decorated with tiers of niches for statues.)

The Forum Pacis, built by Vespasian, was farther to the south- east ; the only existing piece, a massive and lofty wall of mixed tufa and peperino,

with a travertine archway, is opposite the end of the bases of Constantine. The arch opened into what was probably the Templum Sacre Urbis, which contained a plan of the city of Rome. The original plan was probably burnt with the

whole group of buildings in this forum in 191, in the reign of Com- modus (Dion Cass., Ixxii. 24); but a new plan engraved on marble was made, and the building restored in concrete and brick by Severus. The north-east end wall, with the clamps for fixing the marble plan, still exists, as does also the other (restored) end wall with its arched windows towards the forum (sec fig. 19); one

SWAN)

Fia. 19.—Group of buildings by the Forum Pacis. and tufa, with travertine doorway. 2. Do. and porch destroyed by Urban VIII. 3. Brick-faced wall of time of Severus against which the marble plan was fixed. 4. Apse built by Felix IV., when he converted the Templum Sacree Urbis into the church of 88. Cosmo e Damiano. 5. Temple of Romulus, built by Maxentius, made by Felix IV. into the porch of his church.

1. Existing wall of peperino

hundred and sixty-seven fragments of this plan were found ¢. 1560 at the foot of the wall to which they were fixed, and are now pre- served in the Capitoline Museum ; drawings of the seventy-four

leces now lost are preserved in the Vatican 2 (Cod. Vat., 3489).

he whole has been published in a valuable work by Professor J ordan, Forma Urbis Romz, Berlin, 1875-82. The fragments which relate to the Forum Magnum are given on Plate VII. The circular building at the end facing on the Sacra Via is an addition built by Maxentius in honour of his deified son Romulus ; like the other buildings of Maxentius, it was rededicated and inscribed with the name of his conqueror Constantine.? The original stone build- ing of Vespasian was probably an archive and record office ; the name Templum Sacre Urbis is with much probability given to it by Jordan, partly on the authority of an inscription now in the

Vatican (see Forma Urbis omz). The fine bronze doors at the entrance to the temple of Romulus are much earlier than the build- ing itself, as are also the porphyry columns and very rich entabla- ture which ornament this doorway. Pope Felix IV. (526-530)

XXXVI. 24, XXxv. 36, xxxiv. 18, Vii. 53, where many fine Greek eg – beltg in the forum of Augustus, r Sie a ig ose o oman leaders and generals, from neas and Ri

rey ee Foro @ Augusto, &c. (Lincei), 1884, ee n interesting description of this discovery is given by Vacea, writing i

pe wore! in sie es ages Ant., ed. Nibby, 1818-20, +a iv.) ; since then

ragments have been found. The scale is

“—— to be not quite uniform. ee ee or accounts of this interesting group of buildings, see De Rossi, B

ay Crist., 1867, p. 62; Tredelemburg, Ann. Inst., 1872, >. 66; and we he

*; * 1. Comm. Arch. Rom., 1882. Ligorio (in a 16th-century MS. ; Cod. Vat.,*

39) and Du Perac (Vestig}) show much more than now exists. ;

e

ROM E

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

made the double building into the church of SS, Cosmo e Damiano, using the circular domed temple of Romulus as a porch.4 The chief building of Vespasian’s forum was the Templum Pacis,® dedi- cated in 75, one of the most magnificent in Rome, which contained a very large collection of works of art.

The forum of Nerva (see fig. 18) occupied the narrow strip left Forum of between the fora of Augustus and Vespasian; being little more Nerva.

than a richly decorated street, it was called the Forum Transitorium or Forum Palladium, from the temple to Minerva which it con- tained. It was begun by Domitian, and dedicated by Nerva in 97 (see Suet., Dom., 5 ; Mart., Ep., i. 2, 8). Like the other imperial fora, it was surrounded by a peperino wall, not only lined with marble but also decorated with rows of Corinthian columns sup- porting a rich entablature with sculptured frieze. Two columns and part of this wall still exist ; on the frieze are reliefs of weay- ing, fulling, and various arts which were under the protection of Minerva. A great part of the temple existed till the time of Paul V., who in 1606 destroyed it to use the columns elsewhere.® In the reign of Severus Alexander a series of colossal bronze statues, some equestrian, were set round this forum ; they represented all the previous emperors who had been deified, and by each was a bronze column inscribed with his "res geste " (Lamprid., Hist. Aug. ; Sev, Alex., 28),

The forum of Trajan with its adjacent buildings was the last and, Forum of at least in size, the most magnificent of all ; it was in progress from Trajan.

100 to 117. A great spur of hill, which connected the Capitoline with the Quirinal, was cut away to make a level site for this enor- mous group of buildings. It consisted (see fig. 20) of a large dipteral

he

aS

| MoveRN | | PIAZZA

2 Md

oe

300 400 Feet ©

Fie. 20.—Forum of Trajan.

peristyle, with curved projections, lined with shops on the side. That against the slope of the Quirinal, three stories high, still partly exists. The main entrance was through a triumphal arch (Dion Cass., Ixviii. 29), from which probably were taken most of the fine relicfs used by Constantine to decorate his arch. Aurei of Trajan show this arch and other parts of his forum." The opposite nT NM a i pill aka a

_ 4 'Hic (Felix) fecit_basilicam SS. Cosme et Damiani. . . In Via Sacra, juxta Templum Urbis Rome" (Anastas. Bibl. , Vita S. Felicis IV.),—important evidence in favour of Jordan's suggestion.

5 Statues by Phidias and Lysippus existed in the Forum Pacis as late as the 6th century (Procop., Bell. Goth., iv. 21).

8 Drawings of it are given in Du Perac and by Palladio (Arch., iv. 8).

7 See Aul. Gell., xiii. 25, 2; and Amm. Mare., xvi. 10.

Trajan's column.

Temple of Trajan.

- Other temples.

ARCH AOLOGY. |

side was occupied by the Basilica Ulpia (Jordan, For. Ur. Rom.), part of which, with the column of Trajan, is now visible ; none of the columns, which are of grey granite, are in situ, and the whole restoration is misleading. Part of the rich paving in Oriental marble is genuine. This basilica contained two large libraries (Dion Cass., lxviii. 16; Aul. Gell., xi. 17).

The Columna Cochlis (so called from its spiral stairs) is, includ- ing capital and base, 97 feet 9 inches high, z.c., 100 Roman feet ; its pedestal has reliefs of trophies of Dacian arms, and winged Victories, with an inscription recording the enormous mass of hill which was removed to*

form the site (comp. Dion Cass., Ixviii. 16). On the shaft are reliefs arranged spirally in twenty-three tiers, scenes of Trajan's victories, containing about 2500 figures. Trajan's ashes were buried in a gold urn under this column (Dion Cass., Ixviii. 16) ; and on the summit was a colossal gilt bronze statue of the emperor, now replaced by a poor figure of St Peter, set there by Sixtus V.2_ Beyond the column stood the temple of Trajan completed by Hadrian ; its foundations exist under the buildings at the north-east side of the modern piazza, and many of its granite columns have been found. This temple is shown on coins of Hadrian.? The architect of this magnificent group of buildings was Apollodorus of Damascus (Dion Cass., lxix. 4), who also de- signed many buildings in Rome during Hadrian's reign. In addi- tion to the five imperial fora, and the Forum Magnum, Olitorium, and Boarium, mentioned above, there were also smaller markets for pigs (Forum Suarium), bread (Forum Pistorium), and fish (Forum Piscarium), all of which, with some others, popularly but wrongly called fora, are given in the regionary catalogues.*

Other Temples, &c.

Besides the temples mentioned in previous sections remains of many others still exist in Rome. The circular temple by the Tiber in the Forum Boarium, formerly thought to be that of Vesta, may be the temple of Hercules mentioned by Macrobius (Saturn., iii. 6), Solinus (Colleet., i. 11), and Livy (x. 23). Its design is similar to that of the temple of Vesta in the Forum (fig. 15), and, except the entablature and upper part of the cella, which are gone, it is well preserved (see Piale, Yempio di Vesta, 1817). The neigh- bouring Ionic temple, popularly called of Fortuna Virilis, is of special interest from its early date, probably the end of the 2d century B.c. The complete absence of marble and the very sparing use of travertine, combined with the simple purity of its design, are all proofs of its great antiquity. It has a prostyle tetrastyle portico of travertine, and a short cella of tufa with engaged columns; the bases of these and of the angle columns are of travertine. The frieze has relicfs of ox skulls and garlands.

The whole was originally stuccoed and painted so that the different

stones used ; would not show. Fig. 21 gives the plan,

“ea the PSEUDO— PERIPTERAL PRO: ST YER ard = traver- CELLA. PORTICO. tine used at ‘mar

‘ the points of \ H greatest pres- sure, while the main walls

with the half sum. columus are of Fic. 21.—So-called temple of Fortuna Virilis. the weakerand shows tufa; the shading travertinc.

softer tufa. The dedication of this temple is doubtful ; on the whole it appears most probable that it is the temple to Fortuna (without any affix) founded by Servius Tullius (Dionys., iv. 27) in the Forum Boarium, not the one to Téxy ’Avdpela (Fors Fortuna ?) mentioned as being by the river (comp. Plut., De Fort. Rom., 5). Ten columns of what is probably the temple of Ceres, Liber, and Libera exist i situ, built up in the end and side walls of the church of S. Maria in Cosmedin. These have well sculptured composite capitals and wide intercolumniation, —probably a survival of the original design of this temple, which was Tuscan in style (Vitr., iii. 3, 5; Plin., H.N., xxxv. 45). It was founded by Aulus Postumius, dictator in 497 B.c., and dedicated by Spurius Cassius, consul in 494 B.C. SSE SS a ae 1 Its pedestal is inscribed, “ Senatus Populusqne Romanus Imp. Cesari Divi Nerve F. Nerve Trajano Aug. Germ. Dacico Pontif. Maximo Trib. Pot. XVIL [i.e., 114 a.p.] Imp. VI. P. P. ad declarandum quant altitudinis mons et locus tant(is operi)bus sit egestus.” This cannot be taken literally, as the ridge which was cut away never approached 100 feet in height, but possibly means that the cliff of the Quirinal was cut back to a slope reaching to a point 100 feet high (sce Brocchi, Suolo di Roma, p. 133 ; Becker, Handb., note 737). 2 See Fabretti, Columna Trajana (1683), who gives drawings of all the reliefs’; also De Rossi, Col. Traj. designata. The reliefs, from their lofty position, are now difficult to see, but originally must have been very fairly visible from the galleries on the eolonnades which once surrounded the column. 3 See Aul. Gell., xi. 17, 1; Spart., Hist. Aug.: Hadr., 19; and compare Pau- sanias (v. 12, 6; x. 5, 11), who mentions the gilt bronze roofs of Trajan’s forum. 4 See Fea, Foro Trajano, 1832; Richter, Ristauro del Foro Trajano, 1839; Bartoli, Col. Trajana, 1704 ; Pistolesi, Col. Trajana, 1846 ; Froehner, La Colonne

Trajane, Paris, 1865.

The black

ROM kh

827

(Dionys., vi. 17, 94). In 31 8.c. it was burnt (Dion Cass., 1. 10), and was rebuilt by Augustus and Tiberius (Tac., Ann., ii. 49) ; but the existing columns belong to a still later restoration. The temple stands close to the carceres of the Circus Maximus, in the Forum Boarium. Within the walls of 8. Niccolo in Carcere (see fig. 22) in the Forum Olitorium are preserved remains of the tufa celle and travertine columns of three small hexastyle peripteral temples, two Ionic and one Tuscan, set close side by side? A fragment of the marble plan in- cludes part of this group, as is indi- cated on fig. 22. Two of these temples were pro- bably those to Spes and Juno Sospita (Liv. , xxi. 62, xxxii. 30); the third may be that of Apollo Medicus (Liv., xl. 51), as suggested by Burn (Rome and Campagna, 1871, note i. p. 306). Near the Forum Olitorium, in the Fic. 22.—Plan of three temples on site of 8. Niccolo in modern Ghetto, Carcere; the part within the line A, A is that shown on are extensive re- ® fragment of the marble plan. The black shows what 4 still exists.

mains of the large

roup of buildings included in the Porticus Octavie, two of which, dedicated to Juno Regina and Jupiter Stator, with part of the en- closing porticus and the adjoining temple of Hercules Musarum, are shown on a fragment of the marble plan.

built in honour of Octavia by her brother Augustus on the site of the Porticus Metelli, founded in 146 n.c. This must not be con- founded with the neighbouring Porticus Octavia founded by Cn. Octavius, the conqueror of Perseus (Liv., xlv. 6, 42), in 168 B.c., and rebuilt under the same name by Augustus, as is recorded in the Ancyrean inscription. The whole group was one of the most magnificent in Rome, and contained a large number of works of art by Phidias and other Greek sculptors. The

existing portico, which was the main entrance into the porticus, is a restoration of the time of Severus in 203. 'The church of S. Michele and the houses be- hind it conceal extensive remains of the porticus and its temples (see Ci Inst., 1868, p. 108 ; and Contigliozzi, I Portici di Ottavia,

1861).

Remains of a large peripteral Corinthian temple are built into Temple Eleven of Nep- marble columns and their rich entablature are still in sitw, with the tune,

the side of the "Dogana di Terra," near Monte Citorio.

corresponding part of the cella wall of peperino ; in 1878 a piece of the end wall of the cella was discovered, and, under the houses near, part of a large peribolus wall, also of peperino, forming an enclosure with columns all round the temple nearly 330 feet square (see Bull. Comm. Arch. Rom., vi., pl. iv., 1878). The dedication of this temple is not known; it has commonly been identified with the temple of Neptune (Dion Cass., lxvi. 24), built by Agrippa, and surrounded by the Porticus Argonautarum (Dion Cass., liii. 27 ; Mart. iii, 20, 11); but its details appear to be later than the reign of Augustus.? Another not improbable theory is that it was the temple of Hadrian, mentioned in the Mirabilia (Uhlrichs, Codex Topogr., Wiirtzburg, 1871, p. 107) as being near this spot.

The temple of Venus Felix and Roma Aiterna on the Velia (sec Temple was the largest in Rome ; it was pseudo-dipteral with ten of Venus Corinthian columns of Greek marble at the ends, and probably and twenty at the sides; it had an outer colonnade round the peribolus Rome.

fig. 23)

of about 180 columns of polished granite and porphyry. Of these only a few fragments now exist; for several centuries the whole area of this building was used as a quarry, while the residue of the marble was burnt into lime on the spot in kilns built of broken fragments of the porphyry columns. A considerable part of the two celle with their apses, set back to back, still exists; in each apse was a colossal seated figure of the deity,

and along the side walls of the celle were rows of porphyry columns and statues in niches. The vault is deeply coffered with stucco enrichments once painted and gilt. The roof was covered with tiles of gilt bronze, which were taken by Pope Honorius I. (625-688) to cover the basilica of St Peter's. 'These were stolen by the Saracens during their sack of the Leonine city in 846. The emperor Hadrian him- self designed this magnificent temple, which was partially completed

5 For drawings of them see Ann. Inst., 1850, p. 347, and Mon. Inst., v. 24; also Labacco, Architettura, 1557.

6 The remains of the Porticus Octavie are now being more completely exposed by the demolition of the Ghetto.

7 This, however, is not conclusive, as the temple of Neptune may have been eompletely rebuilt after the fire which injured it in 80.

The Porticus Octaviz, Porticus a large rectangular space enclosed by a double line of columns, was Octavie.

many of these are recorded in the Notizie degli Scavi and the Bull. Comm. Arch. Rom., 1872-1876. The extensive cutting away of the Tiber bank for the new embankment exposed some very ornate houses near the Villa Farnesina, richly decorated with marble, fine wall-paintings, and stucco reliefs, equal in beauty to any works of the kind that have ever been found. Some of these were cut off the wall, and will be exhibited in a new museum about to be formed to contain all ancient works of art found in Rome; but the houses themselves have been destroyed. The laying out of the new Quirinal and Esquiline quarters also has exposed many fine buildings. One handsome villa, built over the Servian wall, may possibly be the house of Mecenas, A very remarkable vaulted room, decorated with paintings of plants and landscapes, has been shown to be a greenhouse ;? at one end is an apse with a scries of step-like stages for flowers. This one room has been preserved, though the rest of the villa has been destroyed ; it is on the road leading from S. Maria Maggiore to the Lateran. The walls are a very fine specimen of tufa opus reticulatum, unmixed with

brick, evidently earlier than the Christian era. Among the numerous buildings discovered in the Horti Sallustiani near the Quirinal is a very fine house of the 1st century a.p., in concrete faced with brick and opus reticulatum. It has a central circular domed hall, with many rooms and staircases round it, rising several stories high. This house was set in the valley against a cliff of the Quirinal, so that the third floor is level with the upper part of the hill. It is nearly on the line of the Servian wall, which stood here at a higher level on the edge of the cliff This is identified as the house of Sallust, which at his death became crown property, and was used as a residence by Nero (Tac., Ann., xiii. 47) and other emperors till the 4th century. In 1884, near the Porta S.. Lorenzo, a long line of houses was discovered during the making of a new road, Some of these were of opus reticulatum of the Ist century B.C.; others had the finest kind of brick-facing, probably of the time of Nero; all had been richly decorated with marble linings and mosaics. The line of the street was parallel to that of the later Aurelian wall, which at this part was built against the back of this row of houses. At the same time, behind the line of houses, were uncovered fine peperino and tufa piers of the aqueduct rebuilt by Augustus, one arch of which forms the Porta §. Lorenzo. These interesting remains have all been completely destroyed. A fine house of the end of the Ist centu A.D., with richly decorated walls, was exposed in June 1884 against the slope of the Quirinal, near the Palazzo Colonna ; it was immediately destroyed to make room for new buildings.

The pretorian camp was first made permanent and surrounded Pretor- with a strong wall by the emperor Tiberius (Suet., Z%b., 37). iancamp, Owing to the camp being included in the line of the Aurelian wall a great part of it still exists; it isa very interesting specimen of early imperial brick-facing. The wall is only 12 to 14 fect high, and has thinly scattered battlements, at intervals of 20 feet. The north gate (Porta Principalis Dextra) is well preserved; it had a tower on each side, now greatly reduced in height, in which are small windows with arched heads moulded in one slab of terra- cotta. The brick-facing is very neat and regular,—the bricks being about 14 inches thick, with ~~inch joints. On the inside of the wall are rows of small rooms for the guards. Part of the Porta Decumana also remains. This camp was dismantled by Constan~~ tine, who removed its inner walls ; the outer ones were left because they

formed part of the Aurelian circuit. The present wall is nearly three times the height of the original camp wall. The upper part was added when Aurelian included it in his general circuit wall round Rome. The superior ueatness and beauty of Tiberius's brick-facing make it easy to distinguish where his work ends and that of the then emperors begins. Owing to the addition of the later wall it requires some care to trace the rows of battle-ments which belong to the camp.

The Pantheon is the most perfect among existing classical build- Pan-ings in Rome (see fig. 24). It was built by Agrippa in 27 B.c., theon. as is recorded on the frieze of the portico. What its original pur- pose was is not clear ; on the one hand, it forms part of the great therme built by Agrippa, and in position and design closely resembles the great circular calidarium in the thermer of Caracalla ; on the other hand, it has no hypocaust or hot-air flues, and was certainly consecrated as a temple to Mars, Venus, and other sup- posed ancestors of Czsar's family very soon after it was built (Dion Cass., liii. 27); it was used as the meeting-place of the Fratres Arvales before they began to meet in the temple of Concord (see Henzen, Acta Frat. Arval., 1868, No. 71).5 It had the name Pantheum apparently from the first ; Pliny (A.N., xxxvi. 4) men-

in 185; the design was criticized rather severely by the architect Apollodorus (Dion Cass., xix. 4; Spart., Hadr.,19).1_ The temple

e09000000000000000000L--- e99000009CC0ON0O CoO COoOO oO OOC ON oO

COLUMNS OF PERIBOLUS,

MOUSE.

RRO IDs PRS aT oy

2..9

°

.

©0000 000000000000

2..2..2..0..9.

OF NEROS GOLDEN OF PERIBOLUS,

Ste oe oe

SeP0C00C0C0NDCND OOOO COCO OODOO000

ROW OF SHOPS.

2.2 2.0.0

PART

SACRA VIA.

COLUMNS OF PERIBOLUS

2°PAO900000000 D0 0000 000 e000

52]

=) = –

L |S

Fig. 23.—Temple of Venus and Rome.

was probably finished by Antoninus Pius ; it was partly burned in the reign of Maxentius, who began its restoration, which was carried on by Constantine (Amm. Marcell., xvi. 10). The existing remains of the two celle are mainly of Hadrian's time, but contain patches of the later restorations. "Between the south angle of this temple and the arch of Constantine stand the remains of a fountain, usually known as the Meta Sudans. This was a tall conical struc. ture ina large circular basin, all lined with marble. From its brick facing it appears to be a work of the Flavian period. ; Build- That part of the Celian Hill which is near the

Colosseum is ings on covered with very extensive remains,—a great peribolus of brick- the faced concrete, apparently of Flavian date, and part of a massive Celian. travertine arcade, somewhat similar to that of the Colosseum ; most of the latter has been removed for the sake of the stone, but a portion still exists under the monastery and campanile of SS. Giovannie Paolo. What this extensive building was remains doubtful till further excavations are made. According to one theory it is the temple of Claudius, built by Vespasian (Suet, Vesp., 9); but Bunsen's suggestion is much more probable (Besch. , iii. p. 476), that it was the house of Vectilius, bought and probably enlarged by Commodus (Hist. Aug.: Comm., 16), and connected with the Colosseum by a subterranean passage. Such a passage actually exists, and has been partly cleared out.

The so-called temple of Minerva Medica on the eastern slope of the Esquiline (so named from a statue found in it) is probably part of some baths. It is a curiously planned building, with ceutral decagonal domed hall, probably of the time of Gallienus 263-268 (see Canina, Ind. To -» p. 161). Somewhat similar ruins beside the neighbouring basilica of S. Croce have been supposed to belong to a nympheum of Severus Alexander, mentioned in the Notitia, Regio v., but are more probably part of the Sessorium, a court of justice on the Esquiline. The remains on the Quirinal in the Colonna gardens of massive marble entablatures richly sculptured were formerly thought to belong to Aurelian's great temple of the Sun, but it now appears certain that they belong to the very extensive therme of Constantine, part of the site of which is now occupied by the Quirinal palace and neighbouring

. , buildings.? Private The excavations of recent years have brought to light, and in

I . . . houses, many cases destroy: ed, a large number of domestic buildings 3 3 Bull. Inst., 1875; see also Bull. Comm. Arch., 1874, where drawings are given.

4 During excavations made here in 1876 lead pipes were found inscribed with the name of the estate, the imperial owner (Severus Alexander), and the plumber who made them—HORTORVM . SALLVSTIAN . IMP. SEV. ALEXANDRI. AVG. NAEVIVS. MANES. FECIT.

5 The demolition of the block of houses which was built against it at the back has exposed the point of junction between the Pantheon and the therm. It is now apparent that the Pantheon originally was an isolated building, and that the union of it and the therm was a later alteration.

1 The existence of some chambers in the podium near the Colosseum and the great platform by which this temple is raised above the Sacra Via make it appear that the criticisms of Apollodorus were made before Hadrian's design

tions of his professional critic.

2 See Palladio (Terme dei Romani, London, 1732), who gives the plan of this enormous building, now wholly hidden or destroyed.

tions the sculpture by the Athenian Diogenes which adorned it, and its capitals and dome covering of Syracusan bronze (exxive 7); the ceiling of the portico too was of bronze, supported by massive tnbular girders,! which remained till Urban VIII. melted them to make cannon for S. Angelo and the baldacchino of St Peter's ; the bronze weighed 450,000 tb. The bronze tiles of the dome were stolen long before by Constans II., in 663, but on their way to Constantinople they were seized by the Saracens. The portico has eight columns on the front and three on the sides, all granite monoliths except the te- stored ones on the east

The

The central depét is buricd under the Palazzo Savorelli; that of the second cohort is on the Esquiline, near the so-called temple of Minerva Medica; that of the third was found in 1873 near the baths of Diocletian (see Bull. Comm. Areh. Rom., 1878). The most perfect is that of the 7th cohort near

S. Crisogono in Tras- tevere, a handsome house of the 2d century, decorated with mosaic floors, wall-paintings, &c.7

The excavations made in exposing the ancient church of 8. Clemente brought to light interesting remains of many different periods ; drawings are given by Mullooly, Sé Clement's Basilica, 1869, and De Rossi, Bull. Areh. Crist., 1870, pt. iv.

Many remains exist of the Golden House ® of Nero, which show Golden that this gorgeous palace covered an almost incredibly large space House of of ground, extending from the Palatine, over the Velia and the site of Nero.

side, —sixteen in all. capitals are Corinthian, of white marble; the tym-

Therme

Agrippa.

GREAT HALL OF THERM OF AGRIPPA

panum (derés) of the pedi- ment was filled with bronze reliefs of the battle of the gods and the giants.? The walls of the circular part, nearly 20 feet thick, are of solid tufa concrete, thinly faced with brick. The enormous dome, 142 feet 6 inches-in span, is cast in concrete made of pumice-stone, pozzolana, and lime; being one solid mass, it covers the building like a shell, free from any lateral thrust at the haunches. Round the central opening or hypethrum still re- mains a ring of enriched mouldings in gilt bronze, the only bit left of the bronze which once covered the whole dome. The lower story of the circular part and the walls of the pro- Fic. 24.—Plan of Pantheon and part of therm

the temple of Venus and Rome, to the Esquiline, filling the great valley between the Ccelian and the Esqniline where the Colos- senm stands, and reaching far over the Esquiline to the great re- servoir now called the "Sette Sale." No other extravagances or cruelties of Nero appear to have offended the Roman people so much as the erection of this enormous palace, which must have blocked up many important roads and occupied

the site of a whole populous quarter. It was no doubt partly to make restitution for this enormous theft of land that Vespasian and Titus destroyed the Golden House and built the Colosseum and public therme of Titus® on part of its site. Under the substructions of the latter building extensive remains of the Golden House still exist ; aud at one point, at a lower level still, pavements and foundations remain of one of the numerous houses destroyed by Nero to clear the site. The great bronze colossus of Nero, 120 feet high (Suet., Nero, 31), which stood in one of the porticus of the Golden House, was moved by Vespasian, with head and attributes altered to those of Apollo (Helios), on to the Velia; and it was moved again by Hadrian, when the temple of Rome was built, on to the base which still exists near the Colosseum. Several coins show this colossus by the side of the Colosseum.

Under the Palazzo Doria, the church of S. Maria in Via Lata, and Septa other neighbouring buildings extensive remains exist of a great Julia.

porticus, with long rows of travertine piers; this building appears to be represented on fragments of the marble plan with the words

*jecting portico were covered * en a Se Regeln ~, SAEPT...LIA. This is probably the Septa Julia, begun by Julins with slabs of Greek marble; eahousll chtlae of Augustus and Agrippa. | C&sar, and completed by Agrippa in 27 B.c., as the voting place a great part of the latter C. Pedestal for statue, and apse added by } for the Comitia Centuriata, divided into compartments, one for*

still remains, enriched with Hadrian.

Corinthian pilasters and bands of sculptured ornament. The two upper stories of the drum were covered outside with hard stucco of pounded marble. Inside the whole was lined with a great variety of rich Oriental marbles. This magnificent interior, divided into two orders by an entablature supported on columns and pilasters, has been much injured by alteration ; but the materials are ancient, and the general effect is probably much the same as it was, not in the time of Apsip De but after the restorations of Hadrian (Spart., Hadr., 181) and Severus, when the magnificently coloured por- phyries and Oriental marbles were so largely

used. About 608 the Pantheon was given by Phocas to Boniface IV., who con- secrated it as the church of S. Maria ad Martyres. In 1881-82 the destruction of a row of houses behind the Pantheon exposed remains of a grand hall with richly sculptured entablature on Corinthian columns, part of the great therme of Agrippa, which extend beyond the Via della Ciambella (fig. 24). A great part of the therme appears from the brick stamps to belong to an exten- sive restoration in the reign of Hadrian, and bricks of his time are even said to have been found in the facing of the Pantheon itself. (See Barus, vol. iii. p. 434 sq.)*

Close by the Pantheon is the church of 8. Maria sopra Minerva, which stands (as its name records) on the site of a temple to Minerva Chalcidica, probably founded by the great Pompey e. 60 B.c.5 Adjoining this were temples to Isis and Serapis, a cult which became very popular in Rome in the time of Hadrian ; large quantities of sculpture, Egypto-Roman in style, have been found on this site at many different times. ®

each century. The building contained rostra, and was also nsed for gladiatorial shows. Under the later empire it became a bazaar and resort of slave-dealers.

That curiously planned building on the Esquiline, in the new Piazza Vit. Emmanuele, where the so-called trophies of Marius once were placed (see drawing by Du Perac in his Vestig/), is one of the numerous castella or reservoirs from which the water of the various aqneducts was distributed in the quarters they were meant to supply. This was built by Severus Alexander at the termination of his Alexandrine aqueduct, opened in 225 (see Lamprid., Hist. Aug.: Sev. Alex., 25). The marble trophies are now set at the top of the Capitoline steps; their quarry mark shows them to be of the time of Domitian : it consists of the following inscription, now not visible, as it is cut on the under part—IMP. DOM. AVG. GERM. PER .CHREZ . LIB. %C<.1°

Places of Amusement.

The Circus Maximus (see vol. v. p. 791) occupied the Vallis Circuses.

Murciz !! between the Palatine and the Aventine. Its first rows ot seats, which were of wood, were made under Tarquin I. (Liv., i. 56 ; Dionys., iii. 68). It was restored in 327 and 174 B.c. (Liv., viii. 20; xli. 27). In the reign of Julius Cesar it was rebuilt with (for the first time) lower seats of stone (Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 24), the upper being still of wood (Suet., Cws., 39) ; Dionysius (iii. 68) describes it as it was after this rebuilding. It was further ornamented with marble by Angustus, Claudius, and other emperors. The wooden part was burnt in the great fire of Nero, and again under Domi- tian, by whom it was restored wholly in stone and marble, and

Fire- Several of the barracks (excubitoria) of the various cohorts of the | lastly it was restored and enlarged by Constantine. Iu its later men's _vigiles or firemen have been discovered in various parts of Rome. | state it had a marble facade with three external tiers of arches 'aracks,. —$— $<$<£2 – —@& ——_— | with engaged columns, and (inside) sloping tiers of marble seats,

1 Drawings of this interesting bronze work by Sallustio Peruzzi are pre- served in the Uffizi at Florence.

2 On the architrave is cut an inscription recording the restoration of the Pantheon by Severus in 202. :

3 The Pantheon still possesses its original doors between fluted pilasters, and over them an open screen, all of bronze. Other ancient bronze doors still exist in the temple of Romulus, the Lateran basilica, and in its baptistery, the latter taken from the thermz of Caracalla. a. ;

4 The plan of the whole group, including the Pantheon, is given by Palladio (op. cit.). The recent discoveries are given by Lanciani, Not. d. Scavi, 1882, p. 357, with a valuable plan. The one given by Canina is worthless. See also Maes, IZ Pantheon, 1881; Geymiiller, Documents inédits sur les Thermes d Agrippa, Lausanne, 1883 ; Nispi-Landi, IZ Pantheon, 1882; Adler, Das Pan- theon, Berlin, 1871; and Hirt, Das Pantheon, Berlin, 1807.

5 Part of the Serapeum is shown on a fragment of the marble plan; see Jordan, For. Ur. Rom. : bee

6 See Marucchi, "Le Scoperte dell' Iséo Campense, in Bull. Comm. Arch. Rom., 1883, and Ann. Inst., 1853 ; Fea, Miscell., ecliv. 112.

supported on concrete raking vaults (Plin., Paneg., 51). A great part of these vaults existed in the 16th century, and is shown by Du Perac. It held a quarter of a million spectators (Plin., H.N.,

a a 7 See De Rossi, " Vigili," in Anz. Inst., 1858 ; Visconti, Coorte VII. de' Vigilt, 1867. 8 See Fea, Casa Aurea, 1832.

9 See Romanis, Terme di Tito, 1822. It should be noted that tlie paintings said in this and other works to have belonged to the baths of Titus really decorated the Golden House, over which the baths were built. The substrue- tures of Titus's building are absolutely without ornament, and were almost devoid of light.

10 See Bruzza, in Ann. Inst., 1870, and Lenormant, Trophées de Marius, Blois, 1842. This once magnificent building, with the marble trophies in their place, is shown with much minuteness on a bronze medallion of Severus Alexander (see Froehner, Médaillons de [Empire, Paris, 1878, p. 169).

11 So called from a prehistoric altar to the Dea Murcia (Venus); Varro, L.L., v. 154.

xxxvi. 24). The end with the carceres was near the church of S. Maria in Cosmedin.! Some of its substructures, with remains of very early tufa structures on the Palatine side, still exist below the ehurch of S. Anastasia (see 58 in fig. 17). The obelisk now in the Piazza del Popolo was set on the spina by Augustus. The Circus Flaminius in the Campus Martius was built by the C. Flaminius Nepos killed at Thrasymene in 217 B.c.;

remains of the structure were found in the 16th eentury under the Palazzo Mattei. In the Middle Ages its long open space was used as a rope-walk, hence the name of the chureh called S. Caterina dei Funari, which oceupies part of its site.2 The circus of Caligula and Nero was at the foot of the Vatican Hill (Plin., 77.N., xxxvi. 15). The modern sacristy of St Peter's stands over part of its site. The obelisk on its spina remained standing in situ till it was moved by Fontana 3 for Sixtus Y. to its present site in the centre of the piazza. Another circus was built by Hadrian near his mausoleum; remains of it were found in 1743, but nothing is now visible (Att? d. Pont. Accad., 1839). The great stadium, foundations of which exist under most of the houses of the Piazza Navona (Agonalis), and especially below S. Agnese, is probably that built by Domitian and restored by Severus Alexander. It was called from the latter emperor the Stadium Alexandrinum. That it was a stadium and not a circus is shown by the fact that its starting end is at right angles to the sides and not set diagonally, as was always the ease with the carceres of a circus ; nor is there any trace of foundations of a spina. The best preserved circus is that built by Maxentius in honour of his deified son Romulus, by the Via Appia, 2 miles outside the walls of Rome. It was attributed to Caracalla til] 1825, when an inscription record- ing its true dedieation was found.4

The first permanent naumachia was that constructed by Augustus between the foot of the Janiculan Hill and the Tiber ; traces of it have recently been discovered near the church of 8. Crisogono. The naumachia of Domitian was pulled down and the materials used to restore the Circus Maximus (Suet., Dom., 5) ; its site is not known.

The first stone® theatre in Rome was that built by Pompey, 56- 52 B.c.; it contained a temple to Venus Victrix, and in front of it was a great porticus ealled Hecatostylum from its hundred columns. This is shown on the marble plan.§ Considerable remains of the foundations exist between the' Via de' Chiavari, which follows the line of the scena, and the Via de' Giubbonari and Via del Paradiso. Adjoining this was the curia of Pompey, where Cesar was murdered, after which it was burnt and the site decreed to be a 'locus sceler. atus."" The eolossal statue, popularly supposed to be that of Pompey at the feet of which Cwsar died,' now in the Palazzo Spada, 'was found in 1553 near the theatre. This theatre was

restored by Angustus (Aon. Ancyr.) ; in the reign of Tiberins it was burnt and its rebuilding was completed by Caligula. The scena was again burnt in 80 4.p., and restored by Titus. According to Pliny (H.N., xxxvi. 24), it held 40,000 spectators. In 1864 the colossal gilt bronze statue of Hercules, now in the Vatican, a work of the 3d eentury, was found near the site of the theatre of Pompey, carefully concealed underground. he theatre of Marcellus is much more perfect ; complete foundations of the eunei exist under the Palazzo Savelli, and part of the external arcade is well preserved. This is built of travertine in two orders, Tuscan and Ionic, with delicate details, very superior to those of the Colosseum, the arcade of which is very similar to this in general design. This theatre was begun by J. Cxsar, and finished by Augnstus in 13 B.c., who dedicated it in the name of his nephew Marcellus.® It was restored by Vespasian (Suet., Vesp., 19). Livy (xl. 51) mentions an earlier theatre on the same spot, built by M. Amilius Lepidus in 179 n.c.

1 Part of it is shown on a fragment of the marble plan (see Jordan, For. Ur. Rom.) ; it is represented on a bronze medallion of Gordian IIL, with an obelisk on the spina and three mets at each end; in front are groups of gladiators wrestling and boxing (see Grueber, Rom. Med., pl. xli., London, 1874),

2 The 16th-century discoveries recorded by Fulvio and Ligorio are quoted by Nardini, Roma Ant. (ed. Nibby, 1818-20), fii. p. 21.

3 See his Trasportazione dell' Obelisco Vat., 1590.

4 Nibby, Circo di Caracalla, 1825; Canina, Rom. Ant., i. p. 447, pl. exxxvii.; see also Panvinius, De Lud. Circens., and Bianconi, Deser. dei Circi, 1789. An interesting relief showing a circus race, with the carceres, spina, and galleries for spectators, is illustrated in Ann. Inst., 1870, pl. LM; and three of the saine subject are preserved in the Sala della Biga in the Vatican; see also the Brescia diptych, Gori (Thesaur. Vet. Dipt., Florence, 1759).

5 A great prejudice existed in republican Rome against the introduction of the Greek custom of having permanent stone theatres, In 154 s.c., owing to the advice of Scipio Nasica, the Senate demolished a half-

finished stone theatre which had been begun by the censor C. Cassius Longinus. Even Pompey had to build a temple to Venus in the upper part of his theatre asa sort of excuse for having seats and steps of stone leading up to it (Tertull., De Spec,, 10).

6 Plut., Pomp., 52; Dion Cass., xxxix. 38; Tac., Ann., xiv. 20.

7 See Fea, Rom. Ant., Ixviii. 57, for an account of its discovery.

§ Suet., Aug., 29. See Aon. Ancyr,—" Theatrvm.ad.aedem. Apollinis.in, solo – Magna . ex. parte. a. [privatis.] empto.feci. qvod. svb. nomine, M. Mar- celli. generi. [mel]i.esset." The temple of Apollo here named was one of the most ancient and highly venerated in Rome; it was dedicated to the Delphic Apollo in 428 B.c. by O. Julius (Liv., iv. 25); meetings of the Senate were held in it; and it contained many fine works of art,—an ancient cedar-wood statue of Apollo (Liv., xxvii, 37), and the celebrated statues of the slaughter of the Niobids by Praxiteles or Scopas (Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 4), of which many ancient copies exist. One almost complete set is in the Uffizi at Florence ; one figure of one of the daughters in the Vatican may be an original.

ROME

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

It stands partly in the Forum Olitorium, a large extent of the tra- vertine paving of which was exposed in 1875 (Bull. Com. Arch. Mun., in. 1875). Foundations also of the theatre of Balbus exist under the Palazzo Cenci; and in the Via di S. Maria in Cacaberis, No. 23, there is a small portion of the external arcade of the por- tieus which belonged to this theatre; the lower story has travertine arches with engaged columns, and the upper has brick-faced pilasters, It was built by Cornelius Balbns in 13 B.0. (Suet., 4ug., 29; Dion Cass., liv. 25). An interesting account of the temporary theatre of Scaurus, erected in 58 B.c., is given by Pliny (7.N., xxxvi. 2, 24), The same writer mentions an almost incredible building, which consisted of two wooden theatres made to revolve on pivots, so that the two together made an amphitheatre; this was erected by C. Curio in 50 B.c.

The first stone amphitheatre in Rome was that built by Statilius Amphi- Its ruins are supposed to form theatres,

Taurus in the reign of Augustus, the elevation called Monte Giordano, but none of it is visible. For the Colosseum see AMPHITHEATRE, vol. i. The Amphitheatrum Castrense is in the line of the wall of Aurelian near the Porta Asinaria ; it is built of concrete, faced with neat brickwork, and was decorated with friezes and other ornaments in moulded 'terra. eotta. Its exterior had two tiers of arches between engaged Corinthian columns, all, even the foliage of the eapitals, very neatly executed in terra- cotta. Only one piece with the upper order still exists on the outside of the Aurelian line. This amphi- theatre is mentioned in the regionary catalogues under Regio y. It is supposed to have been erected for the amusement of the troops in the neighbouring camp, hence its name. From the character of the brick-faeing the building appears to date from the early part of the 2d eentury.

Arches, Columns, Tombs, and Bridges.

The earliest triumphal arches were the two erected by L. Stertinins Arehes,

(196 B.c.) in the Forum Boarinm and in the Circus Maximus, out of spoils gained in Spain.® In the later years of the empire there were nearly forty in Rome. The arch of Titus and Vespasian on the Summa Sacra Via was ereeted by Domitian to commemorate the eonquest of Judea by Titus in his father's reign. Reliefs inside the areh represent the triumphal procession—'l'itus in a chariot, and-on the other side soldiers bearing the golden candlestick, trumpets, and table of prothesis, taken from the Jewish temple. The central part only of this monuiment is original ; the sides were restored in 1823.1? Another arch in honour of Titus had previously been built (80 A.D.) in the Circus Maximus; its inscription is given in the Einsiedeln MS. (Gruter, Inscr., p. 244, No. 6). A plain tra- vertine areh near the supposed palace of Commodns on the Ceelian is inscribed with the names of the consul Publius Corn. Dolabella (10 a.p.) and of the flamen martialis, C. Junius Silanus. In later times Nero's aqueduct was built over it. It may possibly have been an entrance into the Campus Martialis, an enclosure on the Ceelian sacred to Mars, which

was used for games when the Campns Martius was flooded. The so-called arch of Drusus by the Porta Appia also earries the specus of an aqueduct, —that built by Cara- ealla to supply his great therme. Its coarse details show, how- ever, that it is much later than the time of Drusus (Suet., Claud., 1). It was usual to ornament specially the arch of an aqueduct that happened to eross a road, and this arch was probably built by Caracalla with the rest of his branch of the Aqua Marcia. Ad- joining the church of S. Giorgio in Velabro a rich though coarsely decorated marble gateway with flat lintel still exists, — built, as its inscription records, in honour of Severus and his sons by the argentaril (bankers and silversmiths) and other merchants of the Forum Boarium in 204. It formed an entrance from the Forum Boarium into the Velabrum. The figure of Geta in the reliefs and his name have been erased by Caracalla; the sculpture is poor both in design and execution? (see Bull. Inst., 1867, p. 217, and 1871, p. 233). Close by is a quadruple areh, set at the intersection of two roads, such as was called by the Romans an arch of Janus Quadrifons. Though partly built of carlier fragments, it is of the worst style of work ; it eannot be earlier than the time of Constan- tine, and probably is of still later date. The finest existing arch is that by the Colosseum erected by Constantine. It owes, however, little of its beauty to that artistically degraded period. Not only most of its reliefs but its whole design and many of its architectural features were stolen from an earlier arch erected by Trajan as an entrance to his forum (see p. 826 above). The arch of Claudins, built in 43 to commemorate his supposed victories in Britain, stood across the Via Lata (modern Corso) between 8. Francesco Saverio and the Palazzo Sciarra. Its exact position is shown in Bull.

9 Liv., xxxiii. 27, see also xxxvii. 3.

10 This arch is the earliest known example of tle so-called Composite order, a modification of Corinthian in which the capitals combine Ionic volutes with Corinthian acanthus leaves ; in other respects it follows the Corinthian order.

ll The second half of the 2d ecntury was a time of extraordinarily rapid decline in art. The relief of Antinous in the Villa Albani and other

portraits of him made in the reign of Hadrian (117-138) are among the most beautiful ex- isting specimens of Roman or Greco-Roman sculpture ; while after the acces-

sion of Severus in 193 no sculpture of any real artistic merit seems to have been produced.

| Columns.

SET arr.

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

Comm.. Arch. Rom., vi., pl. iv. Its remains wcre removed in the middle of the 16th century,! and nothing now is left but half its inscription, preserved in the garden of the Barberini palace, and two of its reliefs in the porch of the Villa Borghese. 1t is shown on both aurei and denarii of Claudius, with an attic inscribed DE BRITANNIS, and surmounted by a quadriga and trophies. The aveh of Marcus Aurelius, also destroyed in the 16th century, spanned the modern Corso farther north, where the Via Lata had become the Via Flaminia.2 Many of its fine reliefs are preserved in the Capitoline Museum. The central part of the once triple arch of Gallienus still exists on the Esquilinc; it stands against the ancient Porta Esquilina of the Servian wall. It is built of traver- tine, is simple in design, with coarse details, and has a long in- scription on its attic. The two side arches and pediment over the centre existed in the 16th century, and are shown in the Mantuan oil-painting of Rome,? and in several antiquarian works of the 16th century. 'The inscription records that it was erected in 262 in honour of Gallienus and his wife Salonina by M. Aurelius Victor, preefect of the city.+

The column of Antoninus Pius was a monolith of red granite, erected after his death by his adopted sons M. Aurelius and L. Verus. One fragment of it is preserved in the: Vatican with an interesting quarry inscription, recording that it was cut in the ninth year of Trajan's reign, under the supervision of Dioscurus and the architect Aristides. The rest of its fragments were used by Pius VI. to repair the obelisk of Monte Citorio, set up by Augustus in the Campus Martius as the gnomon of a sun-dial

(Plin., H.N., xxxvi. 15). The marble pedestal of the Antonine colunin is now in the Vatican ; it has reliefs of the apotheosis of Faustina and Antoninus Pius, and processions of soldiers. This and the column of M. Aurelius were both surmounted by colossal portrait statues of gilt bronze. The column of M. Aurelius is very similar in size and design to that of Trajan. Its spiral reliefs represent victories in Germany from 167 to 179, arranged in twenty tiers. Like the column of Trajan, it is exactly 100 Roman feet high, without the pedestal. The pedestal was originally much higher than at present, but is now partly buried; it is shown by Gamueei, Du Perac, and other 16th-century writers. This column stood in front of a temple

Greek honeysuckle ornament (see Bull. Comm. Arch. Rom., iv.). This also is of the last years of the republic."

The mausoleum of Augustus, built 28 B.c., stands in the north Mauso- part of the Campus Martius, between the Tiber and the Via lea.

Flaminia. It is a massive cylindrical structure of concrete, faced with opus reticulatum ; over that it was liued with marble slabs ; inside were a series of radiating chambers, in plan like a whieel. On the top was a great mound of carth, planted with trees and flowers (Tac., Ann., ii. 9). As late as the 16th century its external form remained unaltered. Only the bare core exists now, with its fine opus reticulatum, best seen in the court of the Palazzo Valdam- brini. The inside is concealed by modern seats, being used now as a circus (Teatro Correa). The sepulchral inscription in honour of Augustus, engraved on two bronze columns at the entrance, is pre- served tous by its copy at Ancyra. It records an almost incredible amount of building: in addition to the long list of buildings men- tioned by name Augustus says, DVO. ET.OCTAGINTA.TEMPLA. DEVM.IN.VRBE.CONSVL.SEXTVM...REFECI.9 The first burial in the mausoleum of Augustus was that of Marcellus, 22 3.c., and it continucd to be the imperial tomb till the death of Nerva, 98 A.p., after whose interment there was no niore room. It was sacked by Alaric in 409, and in

the 12th century was made into a fortress by the Colonna family, and suffered inuch from constant party struggles.

The mausoleum of Hadrian, begun in 135 as a substitute for that built by Augustus, was a large circular building on a square podium ; its walls, of enormous thickness, are of concrete faced with blocks of peperino, the whole being lined with Parian marble and surrounded by a colonnade with rows of statues,—a work of the greatest magnificence. The bronze pine-cone, now in the Vatican, was (according to Vacca) found near the mausoleum, and probably surmounted its conical dome. The splendour of the whole is de- scribed by Procopius (B. G., i. 22), who mentions its siege by the Goths, when the defenders hurled the statues on to the heads of the encmy. In the 6th century it was made into a papal castle called S. Angelus inter Nubes, and all through the Middle Ages it suffered much from constant attacks. The interior chambers are still well preserved, but its outside has been so often wrecked and refaced that little of the original masonry is visible.

' Several of the grander sepulchral monuments of Rome were built Sepul- in the form of pyramids. One of these still exists, included in the chral Aurelian wall, by the Porta Ostiensis. It isa pyramid of conerete, pyra- 118 feet high, faced with blocks of white marble, and contains a mids.

to M. Aurelius, and within a great peribolus, forming a forum

similar to that of Trajan, though much smaller; the remains of this

temple probably form the elevation now called Monte Citorio.® For the catacombs see that article (vol. v. p. 206) ; for obelisks®

Tombs.

see ARCHITECTURE (vol. ii. p. 390) and Eaypr (vol. vii. pp. 768, 778).

The recent discovery of a cemetery of prehistoric (Etruscan) date is mentioned above, p. 812. Few tombs exist of the Roman period earlier than the Ist century B.c.,—probably owing to the great extension of the city beyond the Servian limits, which thus obliter- ated the earlier burial

places. The tomb of the Cornelian Scipios is the most important of early date which still exists. It is exca- vated in the tufa rock at the side of the Via Appia, outside the Porta Capena. Interments of the Scipio family went on here for about 400 years, additional chambers and passages being excavated from time to time. The peperino sarcophagus of Cornelius Lucius Scipio Barbatus (Liv., x. 12, 18), consul in 298 B.c., is now in the Vatican ; its inscription, in rude Saturnian verse, is perhaps the most important existing specimen of early Latin epigraphy. Many other inscribed slabs were found in the 17th century, covering the "loculi" in which lay the bodies of later members of the family. Those now existing in the tomb are modern copies, with blundered inscriptions. All are given by Mommsen (C.J.L.,i. p. 11 sg.). This burial-place of the Scipios is unlike those of other families, owing to the gens Cornelia keeping up the early custom of interment without burning ; thus stone sarcophagi or loculi (rock-cut recesses) were required instead of mere pigeon-holes to hold the cinerary urns. The tomb of Bibulus, a few yards outside the Porta Ratumena, and remains of two recently discovered during the destruction of the Aurelian towers at the Porta Salara, date from about the middle of the Ist century B.c., as does also the curious tomb of the baker Eurysaces outside the Porta Maggiore. In 1863 an interesting tomb of the Sempronia gens was discovered on the Quirinal, below the royal palace, near the site of the Porta Sanqualis. It is of travertine, with a rich entablature and frieze sculptured with the

1 See Vacca, ap. Fea, Misc., p. 67.

2 The destruction in 1879 of the Aurelian towers flanking the Porta del Popolo brought to light the fact that this gate is exactly on the site of the ancient Porta Flaminia, and not to one side of it, as was formerly believed on the evidence of a vague passage in Procopius (Bell. Goth., i. 23). Thus it appears probable that the northern part of the Corso follows the line of the Via Flaminia, as the southern portion does that of the Via Lata.

3 Reproduced by De Rossi in his valuable Piante di Roma Antertori al Sec. XVI., 1879.

4 See Bellori, Veteres Arcus, 1690, showing some now destroyed ; and Fea, Archi Trionf., 1832. '

5 See Ann. Inst., 1852, p. 338; and Mon. Inst., v., pl. xl.__See also Fabris, Piedestallo d. Col. Anton., 1846; Bartoli, Col. M. Aurelii, 1704; Chausse, Col. ritrovata nel Campo Marzo, Naples, 1704; Pellegrini, Colonne ed Obelischt, 1881.

6 In 1882 a small Egyptian obclisk of red granite was found buried near the Pantheon ; it now lies in the Piazza del Collegio Romano; a translation of its hieroglyphs is given in Bull. Comm. Arch. Rom., 1883. At the same time a very curious granite column was discovered of Egypto-Roman work, the lower part adorned with figures in relief.

small chamber decoratcd with painted stucco. An inscription iu large letters on the marble facing records that it was built as a tomb for C. Cestius, a praetor, tribune of the people, and septemvir of the epulones (officials who supervised banquets in honour of the gods)—an office founded in 196 B.c. (Liv., xxxiii. 42). It was erected, according to Cestius's will, by his exccutors, in the space of 330 days. It dates from the time of Augustus ?° (see Falconieri, in Nardini, Roma Antica, iv. p. 1, ed. 1818-20). Another similar pyramid, popularly known as the tomb of Romulus, stood between the mausoleum of Hadrian and the basilica of St Peter. It was destroyed in the 15th century during the rebuilding of the long bridge which connects the former building with the Vatican.

The earliest bridge was a wooden drawbridge called the Pons Bridges.

Sublicius from the piles (swblice) on which it was built. The river being an important part of the defence of Rome from the Aventine to the Porta Fluminalis (see plan of Servian wall, fig. 8), no permanent bridges were made till the Romans were strong enough not to fear attacks from without. The Pons Sublicius appears to

7 Sce A. F. Gori, Columb. Libert. et Serv. Livise, 1727 ; Bianchini, Camera . Sepolcrali, 1727; Campana, Sepoleri Romani, 1840; Fortunati, Scavi lwngo la Via Latina, 1859; Brizio, Pitture e Sepolcri sull' Esquilino, 1876; Secchi, Sepolero di una Famiglia Greca, 1843 ; Visconti, Sepoicro di Q. Sulpicio Massimo, 1871 ; Stevenson, Cimitero di Zotico, Via Labicana, 1876.

8 Sec Du Perac's Vestigj, which shows the garden on the top.

9 The other greatest building period after the reign of Augustus appears to have been that of Severus and his son Caracalla; the following list of buildings, built or restored between 196 and 211, will give some notion of this :—Marcian aqueduct restored and lengthened to the Therme Severianz in 196; pzeda- gogium puerorum a capite Afric in 198 ; temple of Cybele on the Palatine in 200, rebuilt ; Claudian and Anio Novus aqueducts restored in 201; theatre of Pompey, Pantheon, therme of Agrippa, Amphitheatrum Castrense, and pre- torian camp, all restored in 202 ; Septizonium and great palace on the Palatine, and arches in the Forum Magnuin and Forum Boarium built; Stadium Pala- tinum, Porticus Octavie, and Forum Pacis restored, all in 203. In various years before 211: temple of Vespasian, of Fortuna Muliebris, schola scribarum, halneze near the Porta Septimiana, horti of Geta, a porticus with res geste Divi Severi, the Antonine aqueduct, and (212-215) the great, thermee of Caracalla. The great fire of 191 was one of the causcs of these extensive works (see Lanci- ani, Bull. Comm. Arch. Rom., 1882).

10 Near the tomb of Cestius is that extraordinary mound of potsherds called Monte Testaccio. These are mostly fragments of large amphore, not piled up at random, but carefully stacked, with apertures at intervals for ventilation. Many theories have been advanced to account for this enormous mass of broken pottery ; but by far the most probable explanation is that the broken earthen- ware of Rome was collected and stored here for use in the making of the stucco called opus signinum (Vitr., viii. 6, 14), with which the specus or channels of aqueducts were lined, and also the concrete in which marble and mosaic pavings were bedded (nucleus). This latter is the opus testaceum of Vitruvius (vii. 1, 5); and the universal use of pounded earthenware for floors and aque- ducts must have used up immense quantities of broken pots and bricks (test tunsz). A good account of the potsherds of Monte Testaccio and their stamps is given in Ann. Inst., 1878, p. 118.

Augus- tan regiones.

Aurelian wall.

have been of wood even in the imperial period.!_ Its exact site is doubtful, but some existing foundations near the foot of the Aven- tine, near the Marmoratum, may have been the supports of its wooden piers. The first stone bridge was completed in 142 3.¢., when the conquest of Etruria and the defeat of Hannibal had put an end to fears of invasion; it was called the Pons Amilius, after the pontifex maximus? M. Aimilius Lepidus, its founder. It was also called Pons Lapideus to distinguish it from the wooden Sublician bridge. The modern Ponte Rotto is on the site of this ;

but the existing three arches are medieval. An ancient basalt-paved .

road still exists, leading to the bridge from the Forum Boarium. The Pons Fabricius unites' the city and the island (Insula Tiber- ina); Livy (ii 5) gives the fable of the formation of this island from the Tarquin corn, cut from the Campus Martius and thrown into the river. The bridge derived its name from L. Fabricius, a curator viarum in 62 B.C.; its inscription, twice repeated, is L. FABRICIVS.C.F.CVR. VIAR. FACIVNDVM.COERAVIT. Like the other existing bridges, it is built of great blocks of peperino and tufa, with a massive facing of travertine on both sides. Corbels to support centering were built in near the springing of the arches, so that they could be repaired or even rebuilt without a scaffolding erected in the ss i The well-preserved Pons Cestius, prob- ably named after L. Cestius, prefectus urbi in 46 B.c., unites the island and the Janiculan side ; on the marble parapet is a long in- scription recording its restoration in 870 by Gratian, Valentinian, and Valens. The next bridge, Ponte Sisto, is probably on the site of an ancient bridge called in the Notitia Pons Aurelius. Marliano gives an inscription (now lost) which recorded its restoration in the time of Hadrian. The Pons Allius was built in 185 by Hadrian to connect his mausoleum with the Campus Martius; it is still well preserved, and is now called the Ponte 8. Angelo (see Dante, Znfer., Xvili. 28-33). Its inscription, now lost, is given in the Einsiedeln MS.—IMP. CAESAR. DIVI. TRAIANI. PARTHICI. FILIVS . DIVI. NERVAE. NEPOS. TRAIANVS . HADRIANVS. AVG. PONT. MAX. TRIB. POT. XVIII.COS. II. P. P. FECIT. The Pons Alius is shown on coins of Hadrian. A little below it are the foundations of another bridge,

probably the Pons Neronianus of the Mirabilia, called also Vaticanus, built probably by Nero as a way to his Vatican circus and the Horti Agrippina.'

Regiones of Augustus.

In spite of the extensive growth of the city under the republic no addition was made to the four regiones of Servius till the reign of Augustus, who divided the city and its suburbs into fourteen regiones, the first six of which embraced the original four of Servius. The lists in the WMotitia and Curioswm are the chief aids in deter- mining the limits of each, which in many cases cannot be done with any exactness (see Preller, Die Regionen der Stadt Rom, 1846, and Uhlrichs, Codex Topograph., Wiirzburg, 1871). Each regio was divided into vici or parishes, each of which formed a religious body, with its edicula larium, and had magistri vicorum, the low- est in rank of the Roman magistracy. The smallest regio (No. II.) contained seven vici, the largest (No. XIV.) seventy-eight. The list is as follows :—

I. or Porta Capena, extended to the Aurelian Porta Appia.

IT. or Celimontana, the Coelian Hill.

III. or Isis et Serapis, included the valley of the Colosseum and the adjoining part of the Esquiline.

IV. or Zemplum Pacis ct Sacra Via, included the Velia, most of the Subura, the fora of Nerva and Vespasian, the Sacra Via, and also buildings along the north-east side of the Forum Magnum.

V. or Lsquilina, north part of the Esquiline and the Viminal.

VI. or Alta Semita, the Quirinal as far as the preetorian camp.

VII. or Via Lata, the valley bounded on the west by the Via Lata, and by the neighbouring hills on the east.

VIII. or Forwm Romanum, also included the fora of Julius, Augustus, and Trajan, and the whole Capitoline Hill.

IX. or Circus Flaminius, between the Tiber, the Capitol, and the Via Lata.

X. or Palatium, the Palatine Hill.

XI. or Circus Maximus, the valley between the Palatine and the Aventine, with the Velabrum and Forum Boarium.

XII. or Piscina Publica, between the Celian and the Aventine, and beyond the Via Appia, including the site of Caracalla's therme.

XIII. or Aventinus, the hill, and the bank of the Tiber below it.

XIV. or Pranstiberina, the whole district across the river and the Tiber Island.4

The walls of Aurelian (see Plates VI. and VIII.), more than 12 miles in circuit, were mainly built to enclose the regiones of Augus- tus, the greater part of which were then thickly inhabited. This

1 See Varro, L. L., v. 83; Ov., Fast., v. 622; Tac., Hist., i. 86. 2 The bridges were specially under the care of the pontifex maximus, at least till the later years of the republic (Varro, L. L., v. 88).

3 See Piale, 'Antic. Ponti," in Atti d. Pont. Accad., 1831; and Becker, De Muris et Portis, Leipsic, 1842.

4 See Jordan, For. Urb. Rom., Berlin, 1875. Besides the works of Preller, Jordan, and Uhlrichs, the regionary catalogues of buildings are given by Nardini, Rom. Ant., ed. Nibby, 1818-20, the whole of which valuable work is arranged in accordance with these lists.

enormous work was begun in 271, to defend Rome against sudden attacks of the Germans and other northern races when the great armies of Rome were fighting in distant countries.®> After the death of Aurelian the walls were completed by Probus in 280, and about a century later they were restored and strengthened by the addition of gate-towets under Arcadius and Honorius (395 – 425)

in place of the earlier gateways of Aurelian; this is recorded by existing inscriptions on several of the gates® At many periods these walls suffered much from the attacks of the Goths (Procop., Bell. Goth., iii. 22, 24), and were restored successively by Theodoric (about 500), by Belisarius (about 560), and by various popes during the 8th and 9th centuries, and in fact

all through the Middle Ages, A great part of the Aurelian wall still exists in a more or less perfect state ; but it has wholly vanished where it skirted the river, and a great part of its trans-Tiberine course is gone. The most perfect piece is that in the gardens of the Villa Ludovisi. Other well-preserved pieces are by the Porta Appia, and between the Lateran and the Amphitheatrum Castrense. The wall, of concrete, has the usual brick-facing and is about 12 feet thick, with a guards' passage formed in its thickness. Fig. 25 shows its plan: on the inside the

ARCHED RECESS UNDER STAIRS.

STAIRS TO UPPER FLOORS «

THREE WINDOWS.

SIX OF THESE OPEN ARCHES BETWEEN EACH PAIR OF TOWERS.

25, 30. 40.

SS

50.F%,

Oo, 5. to. is. 20. a 4 2 —

Fic. 25.—Aurelian's wall; plan showing one of the towers and the passage in thickness of wall,

passage has tall open arches, which look like those of an aqueduct, and at regular intervals of about 45 feet massive square towers are built, projecting on the outside of the wall, in three stories, the top story rising above the top of the wall. The height of the wall varies according to the contour of the ground ; in parts it was about 60 feet high outside and 40 inside. Necessaria, supported on two travertine corbels, projected from the top of the wall on the outside beside most of the towers. The Einsiedeln MS. gives a description of the complete circuit, counting all the gates, fourteen in number, as follows :— : Porta 8. Petri (destroyed); P.

Flaminia (in use); P. Pinciana (closed) ; P. Salaria (destroyed in 1870); P. Nomentana (closed) ; P. Tiburtina (in use, now called P. S. Lorenzo); P. Prenestina (in use, now Porta Maggiore); P. Asinaria (closed); P. Metrovia (closed) ; P. Latina (closed); P. Appia (in use, now called P. S. Sebastiano) ; P. Ostieusis (in use, now P. S. Paolo). On the Jani- culan side, P. Portensis (destroyed) ; P. Aurelia (in use). One gate, known as the P. Chiusa, is omitted in this list, owing to its being blocked up in the time of the Einsiedeln writer. Its ancient name is not known. ‘ These existing gates are mostly of the time of Honorius ; each is flanked by a projecting tower, and some are double, with a second pair of towers inside. Several have grooves for a portcullis (cata- racta) in the outer arch. The handsomest gate is the P. Appia, with two massive outer towers, three stages high, the upper semi- circular in plan. Many of the gates of Honorius have Christian symbols or inscriptions. The general design of all these gates 1s much the same,—a central archway, with a row of windows over it and two flanking towers, some square, others semicircular in plan. In many of the gates older materials are used, blocks of tufa, traver- tine, or marble. The doors themselves swung on pivots, the bottom ones let into a hole in the threshold, the upper into projecting corbels. ,

At many points along the line of the Aurelian wall older build- ings form part of the circuit,—near the Porta Asinaria a large piece of the Domus Laterana, a house of the 3d century which gave its name to the Lateran basilica, and a little farther on, by S. Croce In Gerusalemme, the Amphitheatrum Castrense ; the latter, of about the end of the 1st century a.p., has two tiers of arches and cn- gaged columns of moulded brick on the outside. Between the P. Preenestina and the P. Tiburtina comes a large castellum of the _ Tepula, The Pretorian Camp forms a great projection neat = P, Nomentana. Lastly, the angle near the Porta Flaminia, at the

5 i , ; Zosimus, i. 87, 49; Eutrop., ix. 15.

6 The insoriptions run this—8P.Q,R_IMPP, CANSS . D.D. INVIC- TISSIMIS . PRINCIPIBVS. ARCADIO. ET, HONORIO. VICTORIB “4 AC. TRIVMPHATORIBVS. SEMPER. AVGG. OB. INSTAVRATOR . VRBIS . AETERNAE. MVROS. PORTAS. AC. TVRRES . EGESTIS ;

IMMENSIS . RVDERIBVS. .. .—the rest refers to honorary statues erected to commemorate this work.

RO

foot of the Pincian Hill, is formed by remains of a lofty and enor- mously massive building, faced with fine opus reticulatum of the Ist century B.c. Owing to the sinking of the foundation this is very much out of the perpendicular, and was known as the 'murus tortus" at a very early time.1 What this once important building was is uncertain. It has been supposed to belong to the tomb of the Domitii (Suet., Dom., 2), but on scanty grounds. Two arch- ways which form gates in the Aurelian wall are of much earlier date. The Porta Maggiore consists of a grand triple arch of the Claudian aqueduct built in travertine. The P. 8. Lorenzo is a single travertine arch, built by Augustus where the aqueduct carrying the Aqua Marcia, Tepula, and Julia crossed the Via Tiburtina. The inner gateway, built of massive travertine blocks by Honorius, was pulled down by Pius IX, in 1868 for the sake of

the material." Literature.—Probably no archeological subject has so copious a literature as that dealing with the topography of Rome ; much of this, however, has been rendered obsolete by subsequent discoveries. The reader who wishes to study the subject in a fairly concise form will find the following books the most use- ful.3 Nardini, Roma Antica, ed. Nibby, 1818-20; Nibby, Antichita di Roma, 1830, and Roma nell' Anno 1838, 1839; Becker, Handbuch der rémischen Alter- thiimer, Leipsic, 1843 (of special value from its numerous references to classical authors); Reber, Die Ruinen Roms, Leipsic, 1863 ; Bunsen and others, Beschreib- ung der Stadt Rom, Stuttgart, 1829-42, and the abridgment of this work by Platner and Uhirichs, 1844; Von Reumont, Geschichte der Stadt Rom, Berlin, 1867-70; Jordan, Topographie der Stadt Rom, Berlin, 1871 (in progress, a work of great value); Burn, Rome and the Campagna, London, 1870 (by far the best work in English, both froin its iNustrations and very able text); Dyer, The City of Rome, London, new ed., 1883 (a compact work, useful for reference). The yery large and magnificently illustrated works by Canina must be used with great caution; they contain imaginative restorations rather than accurate representations of what

really exists ; even those drawings which profess to give the existing remains are rendered of little value by their numerous in- accuracies. The chief of Canina's works are Indicazione di Roma Antica, 1830 , Esposizione topografica, 1842; Hdijfizj di Roma Antica, 1848-56 ; Foro Romano, 1845; and Architettura Antica, 1834-44. The student who wishes to enter into the subject in detail and form inde- pendent opinions will have an enormous mass of literature to wade through. (1) First, of course, come various classical authors, frequently cited above; the Monumentum Ancyranum, ed. Mommsen, Berlin, 1883, and other ancient inscrip- tions, (2) Second in importance come various documents of the decadence and early Middle Ages :—the Notitia and Curiosum Urbis Rome, printed by Preller in his Regionen der Stadt Rom, Jena, 1846; the Mirabilia Rome, ed. Parthey, Berlin, 1869; Graphia Aurew# Urbis, ed. Ozanam in Documents inédits, Paris, 1850; Catalogus Viennensis Imp. Rom., published by Eccard ; Descriptio Regionwm Rome, Kinsiedeln MS., ed. Haenel in Archiv fiir Philologte, v. 115, Berlin, 1887; Ordo Romanus, ed. Fea in Dissertaziont, &¢., 1830; the Codex Topog. Urbis Rome, ed. Uhlrichs, Wiirzburg 1871 (contains these and extracts from other medieval sources); Paulus Diaconus, Hucerpta ex Lib. Pomp. Festi, ed, Miler, Leipsic, 1839; Anastasius Bibliothecarius, De Vitis Rom. Pont., ed. Branchini, 1718. The various commentators on Virgil known under the general name of Servius give many valuable notes on Roman topography ; an excellent edition of these is being produced by Thilo and Hagen, Leipsic, 1881-85. (3) Thirdly we have a large number of works, mostly illustrated, pro- duced from the 15th to the 18th century, the value of which is frequently very great from the fact that they describe a large number of ancient monuments which no longer exist. Some of these, especially those earliest in date, exist only in MS. in the libraries of the Vatican, the Uffizi, Milan, and elsewhere ; a very valuable MS. of Ligorio (16th century) is preserved in the Bodleian at Oxford, Among these MSS. are drawings of ancient buildings by Raphael, Bramante, Bramantino, Baldassare, Sallustio Peruzzi, Andrea Sansovino, Palladio, and in fact by nearly all the great architects of the 16th century. Works of 15th and 16th Centuries. —Biondo, Roma Ristawrata, Venice, 1543 (MS. of 1431-39); Poggio, De Fortune Varietate (MS. of about 1440), Basel, 1538 ; Bramantino, Rovine di Roma (M8., 1503-13, in Bibl. Ambros., Milan), ed. by Mongeri, Milan, 1875; Albertini, Opusc. de Mirab, Urbis

Rome, 1509; Pomp. Leto, De Vetustate Urbis, 1523; And. Fulvius, Antiquaria Urbis, Venice, 1527 ; Calvus, Antiqua Urbis Roma Simulachrum, 1532; Marlianus, Urbis Rome Topog., 1544; Palladio, L'Architettwra, Venice, 1542, and Le Terme dei Romani, printed first in London, 1732; Serlio, Architettwra, Venice, 1545, bk. iii. 5 Fauno, Antichita di Roma, 1548; Labacco, Architettwra ed Antichita, 1557; L. Mauro, Antichité di Roma, Venice, 1558; Ligorio, Efigies Antiq. Rome, 1561 ; Gainucci, Antichita di Roma, Venice, 1565 ; Dosius, Urbis Rome Aidificia, 1569 ; Du Perac, Vestigj di Roma, 1575; Fabricius, Rome Antiq., 1587 ; Vacca, Varie Antichité, 1594, printed in Nardini, ed. Nibby, in Roma Antica, vol. iv., 1818-20; Miintz, Un Plan de Rome au XVme Siecle (Soc. Nat. des Antiquaires), Paris, April 1880. 17th Centwry.— Crechi, Antichita dt Roma, 1601; Laurus, Antig. Urbis Splendor, 1612; Maggius, Avdificia et Ruine Rome, 1618; Felini, Alma Citta di Roma, 1625 ; Secamozzi, L' Antichita di Roma, 1632 ; Franzini, Roma Ant. ¢ Mod., 1653; Desgodetz, Edifices Antiques de Rome, 1682 ; Ciampini, Vetera Monumenta, 1690; Bartoli, Admiranda Rom. Vestigia, 1693 ; De Rubeis, Roma Magnif. Monum., 1699. 18th Century.— Pinarole, Antichita di Roma, 1709, and Vestigi di Roma, 1744; Donatus, Roma Vetus, 1725; Bianchini, Pal. det Cesari, 1788. The magnificent etchings by Piranesi are of great value; the copperplates (in a much damaged state) still exist, and are worked by the Calcografia Camerale. They are grouped in folio vols. entitled La Magnificenza ei Romani, 1761-64; L' Antichita Romana, 1756 ; and other works. See further Bellori, Ichnographia Vet. Rome, 1764; Venuti, Vet. Monwmenta, 1778, and Deseriz. Topog. di Roma, 1824; Guattani, Monwm. Antiq. ined., 1784-89, and Roma descritia, 1805. 19th Century.—Many articles of great value occur in the following periodicals —Annali, Bullettino, and Monwmenti dell Instituto di Corris. Archeo. di Roma, 1829 (in progress); Atti dell' Accad. Rom. di Areh., 1821; Atti della R. Accad. dei Lincei (in progress); Bullettino della Commissione Arch. Mun. di Roma, 1872 (in progress); Notizie degli Scavi, 1876 (in progress). See also Valadier, Le piu insigni Fabbriche di Roma, 1810-26 ; Rossini, Antichita. di Roma, 1817, large plates; Fea, Ragionamento and other works, 1821-33 ; Taylor and Cresy, Archit. Antig. of Rome, London, 1821; Romanis, Vestigie di Rom. Ant., 1832; Gell, Topography of Rome, London, 1834; Donovan, Rome Ancient and Modern, 1842; Becker, Die romische Topographie, Leipsic, 1844;

Zestermann, De Basilicis, Brussels, 1847 ; Braun, Die Ruinen und Museen Roms, Berlin, 1854; Ampere, Histoire Romaine, Paris, 1862-64 ; Zinzow, Das dlteste

1 Procop., Bell. Goth., i. 23.

2 See Becker, De Rom. Muris et Portis, Leipsic, 1842; Nibby and Gell, Le Mura di Roma, 1820; Quarenghi, Le Mura di Roma, 1880; Burn, Rome and the Campagna, 1870, with other general works mentioned above. g

3 In the list given above all books are printed in Rome unless otherwise de- scribed,

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

M E 833

Rom, Pyritz, 1866; Parker, Photographs illustrating the Arch. of Rome, Oxford,

1867; Friedlinder, Sittengeschichte Roms, Leipsic, 1869, and Darstellungen aus

der Sittengesch. Roms, Leipsic, 1881; Wey, Description de Rome, Paris, 1871; Gsell-Fels, Rémisehe Ausgrabungen, Hildburghausen, 1870; Jordan, Forma Urbis Rome, Berlin, 1875, with supplement of 1883, and Nove Quastiones Topog., Konigsberg, 1868; Lanciani, I Commentarit di Frontino, 1880, and Dissertazioni Archeo., 1876-85; De Rossi, Note di Topog. Rom., 1882; Duruy, Histoire des Romatns, Paris, 1878-84, well illustrated ; J. H. Middleton, Ancient Rome in 1885 (A. & C. Black, Edinburgh), 1885. Maps.—Nolli's map of ancient Rome, 1748, is largely followed by Canina in his large map in many plates, 1850; Moltke, Carta Topog. di Roma, Berlin, 1852; Rieu, Rom, Vet. Yehnographia, Lyons, 1863; good maps of ancient and modern Rome together are contained in the guides of Gsell-Fels, Baedeker, and Murray; an excellent map of ancient Rome is given by Burn, Rome and the Campagna, London, 1870.

CHRISTIAN ROME.

1. From the 4th to the 12th Century.

The era of church building in Rome may be said to begin with the reign of Constantine and the peace of the church. Before then Christian worship was conducted with various degrees of secrecy either in private houses or in the CATACOMBS (q..), ac- cording as the reigning emperor viewed the sect with tolerance or dislike. The type of church which in the beginning of the 4th century was adopted with certain modifica- tions from the pagan basilica, though varying much in size, had little or no variety in its general form and ar- rangement. One fixed model was strictly ad- hered to for many cen- turies, and, in spite of

numberless alterations and additions, can be traced in nearly all the Poe ; ‘ f — churches 0 eaes

Fig. 26 shows a typical example, omitting all later changes.4 The plan is that of the lower church of 8. Clemente, built in the 4th century, probably in the reign of Constantine; an exist- ing inscription records its restoration by 5S. Siricius (384-398). The fittings, altar, choir- screen, &c., are not now in situ, but were moved into the npper ehureh when that was built, be- tween 1100 and 1118. f They were then rather Ce Se. o

carelessly put together, Fia. 26.—Plan of lower church of 8. Claes } roper positions A. Celebrant’s throne in western apse. B. High and the proper p altar and baldacchino. C. Stairs down to con-

ATRIUM OR QUADRO-PORTICUS

=.

=

–

of | the gospel and the fessio. D,D. Side doors in screen. E. Gos el epistle ambo reversed. gmbo. F. Epistle ambo. G. Lectern. : The figure shows these Paschal candlestick. J, J. Aisles, K. Doors

L. Stairs to upper church. M.

at east end. N. Campanile.

Fountain of ablution.

fittings replaced in the ancient chureh as they originally stood ; they are rather later than the building itself, being made under Pope John, probably the second of that name (532- 535) ; his monogram is sculptured on the marble slabs which form the low walls of the choir. In the 13th century ornaments of mosaic inlay were added on these 6th-century screens by one of the Cos- mati. The baldacchino which now exists in the upper church is of c. 1100, but two of the eolumns of a much older canopy are pre- served by being used in the construction of a fine 15th-century tomb near the high altar. These have richly carved caps of semi-classical style, and, as well as the high altar, have an inscription recording their gift to the church by the priest Mercurius in the pontificate of Hormisdas (514-523). The paintings of the 9th century, and even earlier, which cover the walls of the lower church are among the most important existing specimens of early

Christian art.®

rr 4 The plan of the upper church of 8. Clemente is shown under Basilica, fig. 18, vol. iii. p. 417; other plans of early basilicas are given in the same

article. 5 See Mullooly, S. Clement and his Basilica, Rome, 1869; De Rossi, in Bull.

Arch. Crist., 1863, 1865, 1867, especially 1870, pt, iv.

Plate VII. Early churches.

Typical plan,

Con- struction.

Circular churches,

The typical church was a simple rectangular building, with or without aisles, having a large apse at the west end, and at the east three doors opening from a cloister-like atrium ;! when space was limited three sides of the atrium were omitted, leaving only a long pillared narthex or porch which extended along the whole width of the nave. The apse or presbyterium, which was raised above the nave, contained a central marble throne for the celebrant and a long bench for the rest of the clergy. The high altar stood a little forward from the apse; and over it was a square canopy or baldacchino supported on four marble columns; each of the four arches of the canopy had a curtain, which was drawn close during the consecration of the elements; at other times these curtains were twisted round the four columns of the baldacchino. The celebrant stood with his back to the apse, looking eastwards towards the people over the altar.? The high altar stood over the tomb of some saint or confessor, hence called the "confessio"; this was so arranged as to be at least partly visible, and usually was reached by a few steps descending from the nave. In later times the confessio became frequently a spacious crypt containing a small altar of its own, At this point cancelli or marble screens ran across the whole width of the church, both nave and aisles; and hence the part thus railed off was called the "chancel." The choir occupied inost of the western half of the nave, and was raised one step above it; it was completely surrounded by a low marble wall or screen, along two sides of which a marble bench was fixed. On the right? was the gospel ambo, its marble book-rest usually distinguished by a sculptured eagle, and beside it the tall paschal candlestick. On the left was the epistle ambo.4 The font was frequently an ancient marble or porphyry bath, as in the Lateran baptistery and that of S. Maria Maggiore ; but in early times an ordinary parish church had no font ; baptisms were only performed in one or two of the great basilicas, and then in a separate building, usually octagonal in shape. In the eentre of the open atrium stood a fountain for ablutions performed before entering the church, as in an Oriental mosque.

The walls of these early churches were mostly built of concrete, faced with brick, left structurally quite plain, and decorated only with painted stucco or glass mosaics,—especially (internally) in the apse and on the

face of its arch, and (externally) on the east or entrance wall, the top of which was often built in an overhang- ing curve to keep off the rain. The windows were plain, with semicircular arches, and were filled with pierced marble screens, or in some cases with slabs of translucent alabaster; the latter was the case at 8. Lorenzo fuori le Mura, and examples of the former still exist in the very early church formed in the rooms of some thermz on the Esquiline (possibly those of Trajan), below the 6th- century church of 8, Martino ai Monti. Almost the only bit of external architectural ornament was the eaves cornice, frequently (as at the last-named church) formed of marble cornices stolen from earlier classical buildings. Internally the nave columns, with their capitals and bases, were usually taken from some classical building, and some churches are perfect museums of fine sculptured caps and rich marble shafts of every material and design.®> At first the nave had no arches, the columns supporting a horizontal entablature, as at 8. Clemente, S. Maria Maggiore, and S. Maria in Trastevere, but afterwards, in order to widen the intercolumniation, simple round arches of narrow span were introduced, thus requiring fewer columns. The roof was of the simple tie-beam and kingpost con- struction, left open, but decorated with painting or metal plates. The floor was paved either with coarse mosaie of large tessere (as at S. Pudentiana) or with slabs of marble stripped from ancient buildings. A later development of this plan added a small apse containing an altar at the end of each aisle, as in S. Maria in Cos- medin and §. Pietro in Vincoli.®

The type of church above described was used as a model for by far the majority of early churches not only in Rome but also in England, France, Germany, and other Western countries. Another form was, however, occasionally used in Rome, which appears to have been derived from the round temple of pagan times. This is a circular building usually domed and surrounded with one or more rings of pillared aisles.

1 The complete atrium or quadro-porticus now very rarely exists; the churches of 8. Prassede and 8. Cecilia in Trastevere still have it in a modernized form, and so has the church of the Quattro Santi Incoronati, which also pos- sesses the triforium galleries, like those of 8. Agnese fuori.

2 The custom (adopted some centuries later) of the celebrant standing between the altar and the people necessitated a reversal of orientation, and the high altar was then placed at the east end.

3 “Right” and “left” are here used of one facing the high altar.

4 An analogous arrangement of the choir exists in most of the Spanish cathedrals, in which it occupies a great part of the nave.

5 8. Lorenzo and 8. Agnese fuori, 8. Maria in Trastevere, Ara Cceli, and numberless other churches are very rich in this respect.

6 G. G. Scott (Church Architecture, London, 1881) gives a valuable account of the arrangements of early churches; see also Hiibsch, Altchristlichen Kirchen, Carlsruhe, 1862. The three apses are common in Eastern churches.

ME

Rome; it is a circular domed building, now known as the Torre Pignattara, from the pignatte or amphore built into the concrete dome to lighten it. The mausoleum of 8S. Cos- tanza, close by 8. Agnese fuori, is also domed, with circular aisle, or rather ambulatory, the vault of the latter decorated with mosaic or classical style (see Mosaic, vol. xvi. p. 852). The red porphyry sarcophagi, sculptured richly with reliefs, from these mausolea are now in the Vatican. On a much larger scale is the church of S. Stefano Ro- tondo on the Ceelian, built by Pope Simplicius (468- 483), with a double ring of pillared aisles, the outer one of which was pulled down and a new ww » 9 5D

enclosure wall built by in Se alee ud ; rie

‘ . — ur Mm, . Nicholas V. Other round A. Recess frais, B. Porbhyry aga tee churches are 8. Teodoro Where the tomb stood. C. Modern altar. D, (by the Vicus Tuscus), of D. Slabs of white marble, part of ancient pav- the 8th century, and §, ing. E,E. Recesses with mosaics. F, ¥. Am- Bernardo, which is one of bulatory with mosaic vault. the domed halls of Diocletian’s therme, consecrated as a church in 1598,

Space will not allow any individual description of the very numerous and important churches in Rome which are built on the above-described plan. The principal examples are these:?—8. Puden- tiana, traditionally the oldest in Rome, rebuilt by Adrian I. (772- 795); S. Sabina, 5th century; S. Vitale, 5th century, founded by Innocent I. (402-417) ; S. Martino ai Monti, 500; S. Balbina, 6th century ; church of Ara Cceli, founded in 6th century as 8. Maria in Capitolio ; 8. Giorgio in Velabro, rebuilt by Leo II. (682- 683) ; S. Cesareo, 8th century ; S. Maria in Via Lata, built by Sergius I. (687-701) ; S. Crisogono, rebuilt in 731 by Gregory III.;'S. Maria in Cosmedin and §. Giovanni ad Portam Latinam, both rebuilt «. 772 by Adrian I. ; S. Maria in Domnica, rebuilt by Paschal I. (817-824), who also rebuilt S. Cecilia in Trastevere c. 821 and S. Prassede in 822 ; S. Marco, rebuilt by Gregory IV. in 833 ; S. Maria Nuova, founded by Nicholas I. (858-867), now called S. Francesca Romana; §. Anastasia, founded in the 4th, rebuilt in the 10th century ; S. Bartolomeo in Isola and the church of the Quattro Santi Incoronati, built by Paschal II. about 1118; and 8. Maria in Trastevere, rebuilt by Innocent II. in 1139.8

Though the apscs and classical columns of the naves in these churches were built at the dates indicated, yet in many cases it is difficult to trace the existence of the ancient walls; the alterations and additions of many centuries have frequently almost wholly concealed the original structure. With the exception of S. Clemente, the early choir, placed as shown in fig. 26, has invariably been destroyed ; the side walls have often been broken through by the addition of rows of chapels; and the whole ehurch, both within and withont, has been overlaid with the most incongruous archi- tectural features in stucco or stone. The open roof is usually con- cealed either by a wooden panelled ceiling or by a stucco vault. The throne® and marble benches in the apse have usually given place to more modern wooden fittings, to suit the later position of the choir, which has always been transferred from the nave to the apse. In many cases the mosaics of the apse and the columns of the nave are the only visible remains of the once simple and stately original church,!@

2. From 1200 to 1450; and the Papal Palaces.

[TOPOGRAPHY AND

The 10th and 11th centuries in Rome were extraordinarily barren Era ofthe in the production of all branches of the fine arts, even that of archi- Cosmati.

tecture ; and it was not till the end of the 12th that any important revival began. The 13th century was, however, one of great artistic activity, when an immense number of beautiful works, especially in marble enriched with mosaic, were produced in Rome. This revival, though on different lines, was very similar to the rather later one which took place at Pisa (see Pisano), and, like that, was mainly due to the great artistic talents of one family,—the

7 For the carly church of SS. Cosmo e Damiano, see above, fig. 19.

8 This list does not include the great basilicas of Rome, for which see Basiwioa, vol. iii. p. 412. ‘

9 Some of these marble thrones which still exist are very interesting relics of Hellenic art, much resembling the existing seats in the theatre of Dionysius at Athens, whence probably some of those in Rome were brought in classical times. Examples of these Greek thrones exist at 8. Pietro in Vincoli, 8. Stefano Rotondo, and in the Lateran cloister. :

10 See Nesbitt, “Churches in Rome earlier than 1150,” in Archeologia, vol. xl, 1866. :

RO

Cosmati,’ seven members of which, for four generations, were-skilful architects, sculptors, and mosaicists. The following are the names and dates known from existing

ARCH ZOLOGY. |

ME 835

architecture in Rome during the 13th and 14th centuries. Tufa+ Domestic or brick was used for the main walls, the lowest story being often

architect- supported on an arcade of pointed arches and marble columns. The ure.

Cam-

panili,

inscriptions :— Lorenzo (boru in the second half of the 12th centw

Jacopo (dated works 1205 and 1210).

windows were usually formed of large marble slabs with trefoil- shaped heads or cusped arches. As a rule the upper stories pro- Jected slightly over the lower wall, and were supported on small ornamental machicolations. The top story frequently had an open loggia, with rows of pointed arches. When vaulting was used it

Cosimo (,, 1210-35). also was of the pointed form, usually in simple quadripartite bays, with slightly moulded groin-ribs. "The finest existing specimen of

| l | this style is the palace built about 1300 by Boniface VIII. (Gaetano Bites Jacopo Naeoanee Covaaiin family), enclosing the tomb of Cecilia Metella on the Via Appia,

(1231 and 1235). (1281-1298). (1294), (1296 and 1308). Their principal works in Rome are :—ambones of 8. Maria in Ara Coeli (Lorenzo); door of S. Saba, 1205, and door with mosaics of S. Tommaso in Formis (Jacopo) ; chapel of the Sancta Sanctorum, by the Lateran (Cosimo) ; pavement of S. Jacopo alla Lungara, and (probably) the magnificent episcopal throne and choir-screen in 8. Lorenzo fuori le Mura, of 1254 (Jacopo the younger) ;? baldacchino of the Lateran and of 8. Maria in Cosmedin, c. 1294 (Adeodato) ; tombs in 8. Maria sopra Minerva (c. 1296), in S. Maria Maggiore, and in 8. Balbina (Giovanni). A large number of other works by members and pupils of the same family, but unsigned, exist in Rome. These are mainly altars and baldacchini, choir-screens, paschal candlesticks, ambones, tombs, and the like, all enriched with sculpture and glass inosaic of great brilliance and decorative effect.

Besides the more mechanical sort of work, such as mosaic patterns and architectural decoration, they also produced mosaic pictures and sculpture of very high merit, especially the recumbent effigies, with angels standing at the head and foot, in the tombs of Ara Celi, S. Maria Maggiore, and elsewhere. One of their finest works is in S. Cesareo ; this is a marble altar richly decorated with mosaic in sculptured panels, and (below) two angels drawing back a curtain (all in marble) so as to expose the open grating of the confessio. The magnificent cloisters of S. Paolo fuori le. Mura, built about 1285 by Giovanni, the youngest of the Cosmati, are one of the niost beautiful works of this school. The baldacchino of the same basilica is a signed work of the Florentine Arnolfo del Cambio, 1285, "cum suo socio Petro," probably a pupil of the Cosmati. Other works of Arnolfo, such as the Braye tomb at ORVIETO (q.0.), show an intimate artistic alliance between him and the Cosmati. The equally magnificent cloisters of the Lateran, of about the same date, are very similar in design ; both these triumphs of the sculptor- architect's and mosaicist's work have slendcr marble columns, twisted or straight, richly inlaid with bands of glass mosaic in delicate and brilliant patterns. The shrine of the Confessor at Westminster is a work of this school, executed about 1268 (see Mosatc). The general style of works of the Cosmati school is Gothic in its main lines, especially in the elaborate altar-canopies, with their pierced geometrical tracery. In detail, however, they differ widely from the purer Gothic of northern countries. The richness of effect which the English or French architect obtained by elaborate and carefully worked mouldings was produced in Italy by the beauty of polished marbles and jewel-like mosaics,—the details being mostly rather coarse and often carelessly cxecuted. Chiefly to the 13th century belong the large number of beautiful campanili, which are the most conspicuous relics of the medieval period in Rome. The finest of these are attached to the churches of S. Maria Nuova, SS. Giovanni e Paolo, and 8. Maria Maggiore. Others belong to the basilicas of S. Lorenzo fuori and 8. Croce in Gerusalemme, and to S. Giorgio in Velabro, 8S. Maria in Cosmedin, 8. Alessio, S. Giovanni ad Portam Latinam, 8. Cecilia, S. Crisogono, and S. Pudentiana. They occupy various positions with regard to the church, being all later additions ; that of SS. Giovanni e Paolo stands at some distance from it. In design they are very similar, consisting of many stages, divided by brick and marble

cornices ; in the upper stories are from two to four windows on each side, with round arches supported on slendcr marble columns. They are decorated with brilliantly coloured ciotole or disks of earthen- ware, enamelled and painted in green or turquoise blue, among the carliest existing specimens of the so-called majolica (see Porrery, vol. xix. p. 624 sg.). Sometimes disks or crosses made of red or green porphyry are inlaid in the walls. In most cases on one face of the top story is a projecting canopied niche, which once contained a statue or mosaic picture. The walls are built of fine neat brick- work. One campanile (that of S. Maria Maggiore), the largest and once the handsomest of all, has string-courses of enamelled and coloured terra-cotta. The slender columns of the windows have often proved insufficient to support the weight, and so many of the arches are built up.® m4… Though but little used for churches, the Gothic style, in its modified Italian form, was almost universally employed for domestic 1 An excellent account of the Cosmati is given by Boito, Architettura del Medio Evo, Milan, 1880, pp. 117-182. ‘ 2 The chief signed works of Jacopo and his brother Luca are at Anagni and

Subiaco. 3 See De Montault, Les Cloches de Rome, Arras, 1874.

with a graceful little chapel within the precincts of the castle. This building is very worthy of study ; the remaining part is well pre- served. Many houses of this period, though generally much injured by alterations, still exist in Rome. They are mostly in out-of-the- way alleys, and, not being mentioned in any books, are seldom ex- amined. The Ghetto and the quarter near the Ponte Rotto contain many of these interesting buildings, as well as some of the most crowded parts of the Trastevere district ; all are rapidly disappear- ing under the wholesale destruction of old streets now in progress. Among those which may possibly escape for a while is the 13th- century house where Giulio Romano lived, near the Palazzo di Venezia, and the Albergo del Orso, at the end of the Via di Tordi- nona, of the same period, which was an inn in the 16th century and is one still ; this has remains of a fine upper loggia, with rich cornices in moulded terra-cotta ; the lowest story has pointed vault- ing resting on many pillars. Another graceful but less stately house exists, though sadly mutilated, opposite the entrance to the atrium of S.

Cecilia in Trastevere. Very few now remain of the ouce numerous lofty towers built by the turbulent Roman barons for purposes of defence. he finest, the Torre della Milizia on the Viminal, was built in the 18th century by the sons of Petrus Alexius ; of about the same date is the Torre dei Conti, near the forum of Augustus, built by Marchione of Arezzo; both these were once much higher than they are now ; they are very simple and noble in design, with massive walls faced with neat brickwork, much resembling that of the 2d century.

Till the 14th century the Lateran was the usual residence of the Laterau pope ; this was once a very extensive building, covering four times palace.

its present area. The original house is said to have belonged to the senator Plautius Lateranus in the reign of Nero ; but the existing part on the line of the Aurelian wall is of the 8d century. This house, which had become the property of the emperors, was given by Constantine as a residence for S. Sylvester ; it was very much enlarged at many periods during the next ten centuries ; in 1308 a great part was burnt, and in 1586 the ancient palace was completely destroyed by Sixtus V., and the present palace built by Domenico Fontana. The Cappella Sancta Sanctorum (see list of Cosinati works) is the only relic of the older palace. The present palace has never been used as a papal residence; in the 18th century it was an orphan asylum, and is now a museum of classical sculpture and early Christian remains.

The Vatican palace also appears to have originated in a house The This was rebuilt by Vatican.

which existed in the time of Constantine. Innocent ILI. (c. 1200) and enlarged by Nicholas III. (1277-80). It did not, however, become the fixed residence of the popes till after the return from Avignon in 1377. In 1415 John XXIII. connected the Vatican and the castle of S. Angelo by a covered passage carried on arches. But little of the existing palace is older than the 15th century ; Nicholas V. in 1447 began its reconstrue- tion on a magnificent scale, and this was carried on by Sixtus IV. (Sistine chapel), Alexander VI. (Appartamenti Borgia), Julius II. and Leo X. (Bramante's cortile and paintings by Raphael), and Paul III. (Sala Regia and Cappella Paolina by Antonio da Sangallo). Sixtus V. and his successors built the

lofty part of the palace ou the east of Bramante's cortile. The Scala Regia was built by Bernini for Urban VIII., the Museo Pio-Clementino under Clement XIV. and Pius VI., the Braccio Nuovo under Pius VII., and lastly the grand stairs up to the cortile were added by Pius IX.

The Quirinal palace, now occupied by the king of Italy, is devoid The It stands on the highest part of the hill, Quirinal.

of architectural merit. on the site of part of the baths of Constantine. This palace was begun in 1574, under Gregory XIII., by Flaminio Ponzio, and was completed by Fontana and Maderna under subsequent popes.

4 For many centuries wall-facing of small tufa stones was used, e.g., in the medieval part of the Capitol; this was called "opera saracinesca" from its supposed adoption from the Saracens; it is largely employed in the walls and towers of the Leonine city, built by Leo IV. (848-852) to defend the Vatican basilica and palace against the inroads of the Moslem invaders. The greater part of this wall is now destroyed and built over, but a long piece with massive circular towers well preserved exists in the gardens of the Vatican.

5 The house of Crescentius, popularly called the " house of Rienzi," near tlic Ponte Rotto, is perhaps the sole relic of the domestic architecture of an earlier period,—the 11th century. Its architectural decorations are an extraordinary mixture of marble fragments of the most miscellaneous sort, all taken from classical buildings; it has a long but somewhat unintelligible inscription over the doorway. . . ;

6 The great mosaic in the adjacent apse is a modern copy of that which once decorated the triclinium of Leo ITI. (795-816).

Eeelesi- astical Gothic.

Mino da Fiesole,

Bra- mante.

836 RO

The only important church in Rome which is wholly Gothic in style is S. Maria sopra Minerva, the chief church of the Dominican order. This was not the work of a Roman architect, but was de- signed by two Dominican friars from Florence—Fra Ristoro and Fra Sisto—about 1289, who were also the architects of their own church of S. Maria Novella. It much resembles the contemporary churches of the same order in Florence, having wide-spanned pointed arches on clustered piers and simple quadripartite vaulting. Its details resemble the early French in character! It contains a large number of fine tombs ; among them that of Durandus, bishop of Mende (the author of the celebrated Rationale divinorum officiorwn), by Giovanni Cosmas, c. 1300, and the tomb of Fra Angelico, the great Dominican painter, who died in Rome, 1455. The most elaborate specimen of ecclesiastical Gothic in Rome is that part of S. Maria in Ara Celi which was rebuilt about 1300, probably by one of the Cosmati, namely, the south aisle and transept. For at least two centuries after the death of Giovanni Cosmas no native Roman appears to have excelled in any branch of the fine arts, The sculptured effigy and reredos of Cardinal Alengon in S. Maria in Trastevere, executed about 1400 by a certain Paulus Romanus, is a fair example of the decadence which took place during this period ; the cfligy is a very elumsy and feeble copy of the fine recumbent figures of the Cosmati.

3. Hlorentine Period, c. 1450-1550.

The long period of almost complete artistic inactivity in Rome was broken in the 15th century by the introduction of a number of foreign artists, chiefly Florentines, who during this and the succeeding eentury enriched Rome with an immense number of magnificent works of art. The dawn of this brilliant epoch may be said to have begun with the arrival of Fra Angelico (see Firsour) in 1447, invited by Nicholas V. to paint the walls of his small private chapel in the Vatican dedicated to S. Lorenzo.

To Mino da Fiesole (see Mino pi GIOVANNI, vol. xvi. p. 477), who spent several years in Rome between 1470 and 1484, and other Florentine sculptors are due almost all the very beautiful sculptured tombs which were made for a large number of the Roman churches during the last thirty years of the 15th century, as well as many altar frontals, reredoses,

tabernacles, and the like. Though varied in details, most of these tombs are designed after one types that employed by Mino in his fine monuments in the Badia at Florence. A life-sized recuinbent effigy lies on a richly ornamented sarcophagus, over which is an arched canopy decorated with relicfs ; the piers which support this (usually) have statuettes in two or more tiers. For grace and refined beauty no type of sepulchral monument has ever equalled this Florentine design. The peaceful attitude and calm face of the effigy are frequently of the most perfect beauty, and the minute statuettes and reliefs are finished with ivory-like delicacy. Though the influence of Mino, very strongly marked, may be traced in all these numerous works (there are in Rome more than a hundred tombs of this class), yet a very small proportion can be actually by his hand. Mino created and trained a large school of sculptor-pupils in Rome, some of whom appear almost to have equalled their master in skill ; and it is to them that most of these works must be referred. A very long list of churches contain- ing sculpture of this class might be given; perhaps the richest are S. Maria in Monserrato (the cloisters) and 8S. Maria del Popolo.?

The architecture no less than the sculpture of the latter part of the 15th century was mainly the work of Florentines, especially of Baccio Pintelli, who partly rebuilt S. Maria del Popolo, S. Agostino,? and S. Cosimato in Trastevere. He also was the architect of S. Pictro in Montorio, erected in 1500 for Ferdinand and Isabella of Spain, and probably designed the Sistine chapel for Sixtus IV. in 1473. Other buildings were carried out by another Florentine, vluliano da Majano (see Ferrerio, Palazzi di Roma, 1825). The Palazzo di Venezia, begun for Cardinal Barbo, afterwards Paul II., about 1455, a very massive and stately building of medieval char- acter, was designed by Francesco di Borgo San Sepolcro,

During the latter part of the 15th and the first few years of the succeeding century Rome was enriched with a number of buildings by BRAMANTE (q.v.), one of the greatest architects the world has ever seen. With the most consummate skill, he combined the delicacy of detail and the graceful lightness of the Gothic style with the ineasured stateliness and rhythmical proportions of classic architecture. Though he invariably used the round arch and took his mouldings from antique sources, his beautiful cloisters

and loggie are Gothic in their general conception. Moreover, he never committed the prevalent blunder of the 16th century, which was a fruitless attempt to obtain magnificence by mere size in a build- ing, without multiplying its parts. His principal works in Rome are the magnificent Palazzo della Cancelleria, built for Cardinal a pens ne me a

1 The absence of a triforium is one of the chief reasons why the large Gothic churches of Italy are so inferior in effect to the cathedrals of France and England.

2 It would be easy to double the list given in Perkins's valuable Handbook of Ital. Sculpt., London, 1883, p. 417. Drawings of many of these are published by Tosi, Monwmenti Sacri, &c., 1843.

3 These two churches were the first in Rome built with domes after tlic classical period,

ME [TOPOGRAPHY AND

Riario in 1495, with its stately church of S. Lorenzo in Damaso ; the so-called Palazzo di Bramante in the Governo Vecchio, built in 1500; and the Palazzo Giraud, near St Peter's, once the residence of Cardinal Wolsey, built in 1506. He also built the cortile of 8. Damaso in the Vatican, the toy-like tempietto in the cloister of 8. Pietro in Montorio, and the cloisters of S. Maria della Pace, 1504.4 In 1503 Bramante was appointed architect to St Petcr's, and made complete designs for it, with a plan in the form of a Greek cross, The piers and arches of the central dome were the only parts com- pleted at the time of his death in 1514, and subsequent architects did not carry out his design. For St Peter's, see ARCHITECTURE, vol. ii. p. 488 and plates XXII., XXIII. ; also Basiuica, vol. iii. p. 415 sq.

Baldassare Pervzzi (q.v.) of Sicna was one of the most talented Peruzzi, architects of the first part of the 16th century ; the Villa Farnesina and the Palazzo Vidoni (usually attributed to Raphael) are from his designs.° His later works bear traces of that decadence in taste which so soon began, owing mainly to the rapidly growing love for the dnll magnificence of the pseudo-classic style. This falling off in architectural taste was due

to MICHELANGELO (g.v,) more than to any other one man. His cortile of the Farnese palace, though a work of much stately beauty, was onc of the first stages towards that lifeless scholasticism and blind following of antique forms which were the destruction of architecture as a real living art, and in the sneceeding century produced so much that is almost brutal in its coarseness and neglect of all true canons of proportion and scale. During the earlier stage, however, of this decadence and throughout the 16th century a large number of fine palaces and churches were built in and near Rome by various able artists, such as the Villa Madama by Raphael, part of the Palazzo Farnese by Antonio da Sangallo the younger, S. Giovanni de' Fiorentini by Jac. Sansovino, and many others.®

4. Modern Period.

Under Vignola (1507-1573), Carlo Maderna (1556-1639), Bernini Period of i| (1598-1680), Carlo Fontana (1634-1714), and others architectural degrada- | beauty in Rome steadily declined, till the prevalent style became tion. |

a mere caricature of classical forms, twisted and contorted into every possible incongruous and ridiculous shape, void of all sense of harmony of proportion and unredeemed by any grace or even | decency of detail. Clumsy weightiness and extravagance of out- | line, with the frequent introduction of the most ungraceful curves, i are the main characteristics of this unhappy period, which, un- 1 fortunately, was one of great activity in building, 'The degraded | taste of the 17th and 18th centuries could see no beauty in the

stately simplicity of the early basilicas, in the delicate grace and

rich ornament of the Cosmati period, or even in the refined har-

monious beauty of the Renaissance.' Every church in Rome is

more or less disfigured inside with extravagant stucco pilasters and

reliefs, transfiguring the whole interior, while outside many have j clumsy facades stuck on without the slightest reference to the { structures they are meant to decorate. The Latcran basilica is one] of the most conspicuous instances of this sad treatment of a grand

old building ; and the hideous facades which disfigure the fine cliurches of 8S. Marcello and 8. Maria in Via Lata (both in the Corso) are typical examples of the degradation into which archi- tecture had sunk in its latest stages. In the present century taste Nine- has somewhat improved. Since 1870, when Rome became the teenth capital, an immense amount of building has been carried out, century | mostly innocent in design, though dull and lifeless. The modern build- architects of Rome possess the rare merit of acknowledging their ings. own artistic incapacity, and the more important recent buildings have been copies, fairly faithful in design though not in material,

of fine palaces of the best 15th and 16th century architects. The Cassa di Risparmio in the Corso and some large houses in the new quarter across the Tiber are good copies of the Strozzi and other Florentine palaces; the Hotel Bristol is from a fine palace at Venice; and Bramante's Palazzo Giraud has been imitated in a new house uear the Piazza Nicosia. Unfortunately stucco is mainly

used for the exteriors of these otherwise handsome buildings, a material which, however, lasts fairly well in the mild climate of Rome. The growing rage for the Parisian style of building, with

wide straight boulevards, is rapidly destroying all the picturesque-

ness of the city ; and these broad streets, from their waut of shade,

are not suited to an almost constantly sunny climate.

The chief architectural work of the 19th century has been i 4 The upper story of the latter is varied by having horizontal lintels instead of arches on the columns.

5 There appears now to be some doubt whether the Farnesina may not have been designed by Raphael; an original sketch by Peruzzi's own hand of the Palazzo Vidoni is preserved in the Uffizi.

6 A valuable account of Raphael's architectural works is given by Geymiller, Raffaello come Architetto, Milan, 1882. Drawings of many of the finest palaces of Rome are given by Percier and Fontaine, Edifices modernes & Rome, Paris, 1798 ; and especially in the fine work by Létarouilly, Edijfices de Rome moderne, Brussels, 1856-66.

7 yen the frescos of the chief earlier artists were not spared; those by Pinturicchio in the 8d chapel (south) of S. Maria del Popolo were covered by

wretched stucco ornaments, only removed in 1850; and numberless works of art by Giotto and other early painters were wilfully destroyed.

perienE woe ae

Museums and gal- \eries.

Private collec- tions of pictures ;

of seulp- ture,

Libraries,

RO

the rebuilding of the nave of the great basilica of 8. Paolo fuori le Mura, burnt in 1828, in a style of great splendour, though some- what cold in effect. Its columns are enormous monoliths of grey granite from the Alps; the confessio and transepts are lined with rosso and verde antico from the recently rediscovered quarries in Greece, and with Egyptian alabaster. The reconsecration of this magnificent edifice took place in 1854, after thirty years had been spent in the rebuilding; the east facade, with its new gaudy mosaics, and the atrium are not yet complete. Another great work still in progress is the extension of the sanctuary of the Lateran basilica,

which unhappily has involved the destruction of the ancient apse and its ambulatory, the only part of the church which had escaped complete distigurement. 'he priceless mosaics of the apse (1290), among the most beautiful in Rome, have been refixed in the new apse, but of course in a sadly modernized and restored form." Some large blocks of Government offices on the Esquiline Hill are the most important in size among the recent constructions, They have little architectural merit either in design, materials, or solidity of workmanship. :

The Vatican contains the largest collection in the world of Greco-Roman and Roman sculpture, with a few specimens of truc Hellenie art. It is also very rich in Greek vases and in objects from Etruscan tombs; this latter division is called the Museo Gregoriano. There is also an Egyptian museyn. In the great library are preserved a number of early glass chalices? and other rare objects from the catacombs, as well as many fine specimens of later Christian art,—church plate and jewels. The picture gallery, though not as large as some of the private collections in Rome, contains few inferior pictures. The Lateran palace, still, like the Vatican, in the possession of the pope, contains a fine collection of classical sculpture, but is most remarkable as a museum of Christian antiquities. The two Capitoline museums are very rich in classical sculpture, bronzes, coins, pottery, and the contents of early Etruscan and Latin tombs. A large hall has lately been added, and is filled with sculpture found on the Esquiline since 1870. The picture gallery contains a few masterpieces and a large number of inferior works. A new museum is now (1886) being formed in the great cloister of 8S. Maria degli Angeli to hold the numerous fine examples of classical painting and sculpture found along the Tiber during the excavations for the new embankment, and in other places in Rome. The university of Rome possesses fine collections of minerals, fossils, and other geological specimens, and examples of ancient marbles used in the buildings of Rome. A new Museo Artistico has recently been formed in a monastery in the Capo le Case, to contain medieval works of art ; it will prob- ably be rapidly increased. The Museo Kircheriano is in some respects unique of its kind. It contains an unrivalled collection of prehistoric objects found in ltaly and its islands, in stone, bronze, iron, and pottery. The collection of es grave is the finest yet made; and the museum also contains a large quantity of inter- esting

classical antiquities of various kinds. Another branch is the Ethnological Museum, as yet of no great importance. Un- fortunately all these muscums are badly adapted for purposes of study, being neither well arranged nor catalogued.

Among the private collections of pictures the Borghese is quite unrivalled. The next in importance is that in the Dora palace, which, however, like most Italian collections, contains a large proportion of very inferior works. The Corsini picture gallery, lately bought by the municipality of Rome, is chiefly rich in the works of the Bolognese and other third-rate painters. The Bar- berini and Sciarra-Colonna palaces contain a few fine paintings ; those in the latter collection are now arranged in the owne1's private apartments, and are not visible to the public.

The largest private collection of sculptnre is that of the Villa Albani, which, among a large mass of inferior Roman sculpture, contains a few gems of Greek art. The original Albani collection was stolen and brought to Paris by Napoleon I., and was there dispersed ; one relief, the celebrated Antinous, is the only piece of sculpture from the original collection which was sent back from Paris. The owner of this is now Prince Torlonia, who also possesses a very large collection of classical sculpture formed by himself ; it contains several very fine works, but unfortunately the greater number are much injured and falsified by restorations, The casino in the Borghese gardens possesses a great quantity of sculpture, mostly third-rate Roman works. The small collection of the Villa Ludovisi contains a few works of Greek sculpture of the highest importance, of which the chief are the Pergamean group of the suicide of the Gaulish chief, a relief of Medusa's head, and a male terminal figure. Many other palaces, such as that of the Colonna family, contain less important collections of sculpture and painting.*

For an account of the ehief public libraries, see L1BrAR1Es, vol. xiv. pp. 529-530, 548.

1 Fea, La Basilica Ostiense, 1826-33.

2 For the interesting discoveries made in exeavating for the new apse, see Amn. Inst., 1877, p. 332.

3 See Garrucci, Vetri Ornati in Oro, 1858.

4 The beautiful gardens of the Villa Ludovisi are now (1886) being destroyed and built over, and the fate of the sculpture gallery is as yet undecided.

ARCHEOLOGY. |

ME 837

_ Population, Climate, &e.°—-In the sixteen years which have elapsed Popula- since Rome became the capital of Italy (1870-1886) the population tion.

has largely increased, ehiefly owing to the introduction of a great number of Government officials with their families from Northern Italy. Under the last papal census the number of inhabitants was 216,000; in 1881 it had increased to 276,463. Education of the working classes has much improved in these years, and there are now nearly 170 parochial schools. The streets are remarkable for their cleanliness, and are mostly well paved with hard lava and well lighted with gas. For municipal purposes Rome is still divided into the fourteen medieval "rioni"; these, thongh corre- sponding in number with the fourteen regiones of Augustus, include very ditferent areas. averaging 10° Fahr. above the tempcrature of London ; but the variation between day and night is very great. The coldest months are December and February (average temp. 47°); the hottest are July and August (average 75°). The raintall is slight, averaging 165th inches annually, and the rainy days are few proportionally. On the whole Rome is a healthy city, in spite of some malaria, usually confined to its more open parts.® Campagna is in parts almost uninhabitable during the summer from this cause; but the malaria is much checked by the planting of eucalyptus trees, which grow rapidly in and about the city.

Works on Christian Rome,—CHURCHES.—16th and 17th Century Books: Pan- vinius, De Precipwis Basilicis, 1570; De Albericis, Ifist. S. Virginis de Pojnilo, 1599; De Angelis, Bas. S. Marie# Major., 1621; Severano, Le Sette Chicse di Rome, 1630; Landucci, 8. Maria del Popolo,

1646; Rasponi, De Basil. Lateran., 1656 ; Torrigio, Sacre Grotte Vaticane, 1675; Fontana, Tenupio Vaticano, 1694; Bonanuus, Ten. Vatic. Iistoria, 1696. sth Century: Crescimbeni, 8. Maria in Cosmedin (1715), 8. Giovanni a Porta Latina (1716), and Bas. di S. Anastasia (1722); Boroulino, La Chiesae Fabbrica d. Sapienza, 1726 ; Casimiro Romano, 8. Maria in Ara Celi, 1736; Fonseca, Bas. 8. Lawrentit in Damaso, 1745; Erra, 8, Maria tv Cam- pitelli, 1750; Besozzi, S. Croce in Gerus., 1750; Cancellieri, Basilica Vaticana, 1786; F, di San Pietro, S. Giorgio in Velabro, 1791. 19th Century: Paulinus, Basil. S. Pancratii, 1803; Nicolai, Das. di S. Paolo, 1815, and De Vatican. Bas., 1817; Nibby, Forma degli Antichi Tempj Cristiani, 1825; Dionysius, Vat. Basil. Crypt. Mon,, 1828-40; Bunsen, Guttensohn, and Knapp, Bastliken des Christ. Roms, Munich, 1842; Canina, Arch. dei Tempj Cristiani, 1843-46; Fontana, Migliort Chiese dt. Roma (1855), Bas, di S. Paolo (1878), and Musaict delle Chiese di Roma (1870); Valentini, fine monographs on the Basiltcas of the Vatican, the Lateran, and S. Maria Maggiore, 1832-45; Gori, Bas. di S. Lorenzo, 1862; Hiibsch, Alt-christlichen Kirchen, Carlsruhe, 1862; De Montault, Les Souterrains de S. Pierre, Paris, 1866; Burckhardt, De Origine Bastlicarum Christianarun, 1875; De Fleury, Le Latran, Paris, 1877; De Lorbac, S. Pierre de Rome, 1879 ; Geymiiller, Les Projets Primitifs pour la Bas. de S. Pierre, Paris, 1875-80 (gives a valuable scries of facsiiniles of the designs made by Bramante, Raphael, Fra Giocondo, Sangallo, and others); Létarouilly, Le Vatican et la Basilica de S. Pierre, ed. Simit, Paris, 1882; Debleser, Rome et ses Monuments, 1882 (especially useful to the Catholic traveller for its information about church cercmonics and other religious matters). G»rNERAL Worxks.—Pistolesi, Il Vaticano, 1829-38 ; Nibby, Roma Moderna, 1839 ; Marchi, Mon. dell' Arte Crist. primitiva, 1844; Massimo, La Torre Anguillara in Trastevere, 1847 ; Létarouilly, Edifices de Rome Moderne, Brussels, 1856-66 ; Gregorovius, Geschichte . . . Roms im Mittel- alter, Stuttgart, 1859-72, and Die Grabmdiler der Pépste, Leipsic, 1857 (both these valuable works have been translated into Italian); Garrucci, Mon. del Mus. Lateran., 1861, and Storia dell' Arte Cristiana, Prato, 1872-80; De Rossi, Roma Sotterranea, 1864-80, and Musaici e Pavimenti delle Chiese di Roma (in progress), and (edited by him) Bull. di Archwo. Cristiana, 1863 (in progress), also Inscrip- tiones Christiane Urbis Rome, 1861 (in progress); Gerbet, Rome Chrétienne, Paris, 1866; Pellegrini, Edijici de' Bassi

Tempi, 1870; Rio, L'Art Chrétien, Paris, 1861, and Epilogue aU Art Chrétien, 1872; Dohine, Kunst wnd Kiinstler Italiens, Leipsic, 1878; Wey, Description de Rome (well illustrated), 1871. Inscriptions. — Foreella, Inscriziont nelle Chiese di Roma, 1869-84; Galetti, Inscriptiones Rom. Infimi Asvi, 1760, A nuinber of medieval wall-paintings in Rome, such as those in the Vatican library and in S. Martino ai Monti, though worthless as works of art, are very valuable for their representations of buildings now destroyed or altered. The great oil-painting, now in the museum at Mantua, which gives a bird's-eyc view of Rome as it was in the 16th century, is published in the valu- able work by De Rossi, Piante di Roma anteriori al Sec. XVI., 1879, which cou- tains also other early plans and drawings of the city. Museums anp Scutp- TuRE.— Pistolesi, I2 Vaticano, 1829-38; Visconti, Mus. Chiaramonti and Pio- Clementino, and Museo Gregoriano, 1803-43 ; Wolff, Bildwerke des Vaticans, dc, Berlin, 1870; E. Q. Visconti, Sculéwre della Villa Borghese, 1196, and Sculd. del Pal. Giustiniani, 1811; Winckelmann, Opere, best edition by Fea, Prato, 1830 ; Vitale, Marmi nel Pal. Torlonia, n.d. ; Benndorf, Die Bildwerke des Lateran. Mus., Leipsic, 1867; Schreiber, Antike Bildwerke der Villa Ludovisi, Leipsic, 1880; Bottari, Museo Capttolino, Milan, 1821-22 ; Matz and Von Duhn, Antike Bildwerke in Rom, Leipsic, 1881; De Montault, Musées et Galeries de Rome, 1880 ; Bernoulli, Rémische Ikonographie, Stuttgart, 1881. (J. H. M.)

5 See Taussig, The Roman Climate, Health, and Disease, 1870. The Monografia di Ron (1878) contains valuable articles on the population, climate, health, and public institutions of Rome. ; ;

6 See Balestra, L'Igiene di Roma, 1880; Vitelleschi and others, Atti della Giunta per la Inchiesta Agraria, vol. xi., 1884 (see also their map showing the malarious districts, 1888); Tournon, Ktudes Statistiques sur Rome, Paris, 1831.

7 The numberless fountains and jets of water which abound in the streets of Rome are one of its chief beauties; these are all fed with pure hill water brought in aqueducts or pipes, and flow in apparently undiminished voluine during the dry months of summer. The Trevi fountain (Aqua

Virgo) and the Fontana Paolina on the Janieulum are the grandest of these; see Falda, Le Fontane di Roma, 1691.

The climate is mild and sunny, in winter Climate.

The neighbouring Health.

InpEx to ARTICLE Rome.

Achgan league, 752, 754, | Caraealla, edict of, 776,

Actium, battle of, 769. 778,

Equi, 739, 740, 742, Carrhe, battle of, 766,

Actius, 780, 781, 774,

Agrarian laws, 737, 738,| Carthage, 740, 746, 748,

757, 758, 765, 766, 749, 751, 767, 781.

Alaric, 780. Cataeombs, 831.

Alberie, 787. Catiline conspiraey, 764.

Albornoz, 801. Census, imperial, 774.

Alemanni, 776-779. Chflons, battle of, 781.

Alexander 111., pope, 794. | Charlemagne, 786.

Allia, battle of, 740. Charles of Anjou, 797.

Ancient Rome, 807-833. Christianity, 778, 781.

Antiochus the Great, 751, | Christian Rome, 833.

Antony, Mark, 768. Churches, 833-837.

Arbogast, 779, 780. Cicero, 764, 768.

Exedra, 824,

Feudalism, 789,

Firemen's barracks, 829,

Fortifications, 812.

Forum, 815, 825.

Franks, 776-780.

Frederick 1, 793.

Frontiers, 768, 774-777.

Gaiseric, 781.

Galleries, art, 837.

Gallienus, 776,

Garibaldi, 807,

Gates, 812, 832.

Gaul, 748, 751, 768, 774,

776, 778, 781.

Gauls, 740, 743.

Areadius, 779. Cinna, 760, Genserie, 781. Arches, triumphal, $19.}
Circus, 829. Germalus, 824. $30. Civilis, revolt of, 775. Ghibellines, 796.

Architecture, 809, 835. Claudius, 773, 775. Area Apollinis, 821. Claudius Gothicus, 777. Avistocracy of Middle | Cleopatra, 769. Ages, 784, 787, 792, | Climate, 808, 837, 806. Cloaem, 814, Arvlotti, 798. Colonies, 745. Armenia, 774. Colonna family, 796. Gregory I., pope, 783. Arnold of Brescia, 792, Columns, 827, 831. Gregory VI1., pope, 791. Art, works of, 811. Comitia euriata, 733; een- | Guelfs, 796. Atrium Veste, 819. turiata, 735; tributa, | Hadrian, 773; wall of, 775. Attila, 781. 737, 771. Tladrianople, 779. Augusti and Cesarcs, 777. | Comitium, 816. Tlernici, 739, 742. Angustus, 768, 774. Commune, Roman, 783. llenry [11., 790. Aurelian, 773, 776. Consuls, 735, 738, 771, 785, | Henry VI1., 798. Aurclius, Mareus, 773, | Constantine, 777. llenry of Castile, 797, 775, Constantinople, 778. llildebrand, 791. Banderesi, 802. Constantius, 778. Wistory, aneient, 731-781; Barbarian invasions, 775- | Cosmati, 834, medizval, 782-805; re- 717, 779-781, Crassus, 766, eent, 805. Barons, 790. Crescenzio, 789, 790. Honorius, 779, 780,

Goths, 777, 779, 782. Graechi, 757, Greecostasis, 816. Grandccs, 796. Gratian, 779. Greece, 752,

Basilicas, 816, 833, 837. Curia, 815, lluns, 779-781,

Baths of Agrippa, 829, Curizx, 732, Investiture question, 791.

Beneventum, battle of, | Cynoseephale, 752. Italy, conquest of, 739— 744, Dacia, 775, 777. 746; after Wanuibalie

war, 751; enfranchise-

ment of, 760 ; under em-

perors, 771, 775, 778. John X1I., pope, 788, Jovian, 779.

Boniface V111., pope, 798. Bonifaee 1X., pope, 803. Bramante, 836, Branealeone, 796, Bridges, 831.

Britain, 775, 780. Building materials, 808. Byzantine rule, 782. Cesar, Julius, 763-768. Cesares and Augusti, 777. Campanili, 835.

Canne, battle of, 749. Capitoline Till, 824,

Deeemvirate, 737, Decius, 773, 776, Dioeletian, 777. Domitian, 772. Drusus, 759. Duehy of Rome, 783, Judices dativi, 789; de Egypt, 751, 754, 774. elero, 785, Empire, 768, 774, 777; | Jugurtha, 758.

division of, 779. Julian, 778. fLmpire, Holy Roman, 785. | Kings, early, 732, 735. Etruria, 731, 734, 739, 742, | Ladislaus, 803.

757 Land-tax, 775, 778, Lateran palace, 835,

Eugenius IV., pope, 805.

Latins, 731, 739; colonies

of, 745,

Laws, 736-738, 760, 763,

770.

Leo 111., pope, 786. Libraries, 837, Lombards, 783. Louis IV., 799. Macedonia, 749, 752. Magistracies, 738, 771. Magnesia, battle of, 753. Mamertine prison, 814. Mareomanni, 775. Marius, 758. Martin V., pope, 805. Materials, building, 808. Mausolea, 831. Maximiaun, 777. Mazzini, 806. Middle Ages, republic of,

782,

Military system, 734, 746,

759, 776,

Milliarium Aureum, 817. Mino da Fiesole, 836. Modern Rome, 807, 836. Mesia, 774. Monarehy, carly, 732-5, Municipal system, 768,

776, 779.

Municipia, 740, 745. Museums, 837, Nero, 773, Nicholas V., pope, 806.

Nobility, 755; in Middle

Ages, 784, 787, 791, 806. Nova Via, 824, Odoacer, 781.

Opus quadratum, 809; 1e-

ticulatum, 810. Orestes, 781, Orsini family, 796. Otho I., 788.

Otho 111., 790,

Palaces, 821, 823, 829, 835.

Palatine 11ill, 821. Palinyra, 776. Pannonia, 774. Pantheon, 828.

Paolo, S., basilica, 837.

Papacy, 783, 785, 791, 805.

Parthia, 766, 774, 777. Paschal 11., pope, 791. Patricians, 732, 736. People, primitive, 732; power of the, 789, 792.

Pergamum, 751-754.

Petei's, St, 836.

Philippi, battle of, 768.

Pippin, donation of, 786.

Pirates, 763.

Plebeians, 732, 736.

Pollentia, battle of, 780.

Pompey, 762-766.

Popes, 783, 785, 791, 805.

Population, 808, 837.

Porcari, Stefano, 806.

Portieus X11 Deorum, 829,

Postumus, 776.

Preetorian camp, 828.

Prehistorie remains, 811.

Principate, 769,

Private houses, 828.

Proeconsulare imperium,

769,

Proeonsuls, 746.

Provinees, 750, 774, 778.

Punie Wars, 747-751.

Pyramids, 831..

Pyrrhus, 743.

Questiones perpetux, 756;

759, 762.

Queestorship, 738, 772.

Quay wall, 814.

Quirinal palace, 835.

Radagaisus, 780.

Regia, 819.

Regiones

832.

Renaissanee, 805.

Republic, ancient, 735- 769; of Middle Ages,

782,

Rhodes, 751-754.

Ricimer, 781.

Rienzi, 800.

Roads, 811,

Romanization of West,

750, 754, 768, 775-778,

Roma quadrata, 812.

Romulus, 731.

Romulus Augustulus, 781.

Rostra, 816.

ltufinus, 780,

Sabines, 731, 739, 744.

Sacra Via, 824.

Samnites, 741-744,

Sassanide, 777.

Saturninus, 758.

Schole militum, 784, 788.

Secession, the first, 736.

Senaculum, 816.

of Augustus,

Senate, 738, 755, 756, 784,

793, 795,

Sentinum, battle of, 743.

Sertorius, 762.

Servian wall, 731, 734, 81s.

Settlements, early, 731,

Severus Alexander, 777,

Severus Septimius, TB;

776.

Sicily, 746, 747, 750.

Site of Rome; 807.

Social War, 759.

Spain, 750, 780,

Spartacus, 762, 7(3.

Stadium, 824.

Statutes, Roman, 796.

Stilicho, 780.

Sulla, 760-762, 768, 772,

Sulpieius Rufus, 760,

Tabtlarium, 825.

Tarquins, 733, 734.

Tax, land, 775, 778.

Temples, 817-827.

Testaecio, Monte, 831.

Theatres, 830,

Theodosius 1., 779.

Tombs, 831.

Trajan, 772, 778, 775,

Tribes, Roman, 732, 735,

745,

Tribunes, 736, 772.

Tribunicia potestas, 770.

Triumvirates, 765, 768.

Tullianum, 814,

Tyrants, 776, 778, 780.

Umbilicus Rome, 817.

Urban V., pope, 802.

Valens, 779,

Valentinian I., 779; IL,

779; 111., 780.

Valerian, 776.

Vandals, 780, 781,

Vatiean, 835.

Veii, capture of, 739.

Velabrum, 824.

Velia, 824,

Vespasian, 773-775.

Vico, Pietro di, 794.

Vicus Jugarius, 817; Tuscus, 818.

Volsci, 739-741.

Wallia, 780.

Walls, 812, 832.

Zama, battle of, 750.

Zenobia, 776,

Plate VI. is a Plan of Ancient Rome ; Plate VII. shows the Forum and tts Surroundings ; Plate VILL. is the Modern City ; and Plate [X. is w Map of the Empire in the Third Century of our Era.

ROME, a city of the United States, the capital of Oneida county, New York, 110 miles by rail west-north- west of Albany, occupies a level site at the head of Mohawk valley, near the watershed between the Atlantic and the western lakes. Itisan important railway junction, lies on the line of the Erie Canal, and is the terminus of the Black River Canal. Besides being the centre of a great cheese- making district, Rome has large railroad shops, rolling- mills, and lumber-yards. The population Was 11,000 in 1870 and 12,194 in 1880.

ROMFORD, an old market-town of Essex, is situated on the small river Rom, and on the Great Eastern Railway about 12 miles east-north-east of London. The ancient church of St Edward the Confessor was replaced in 1850 by a structure in the Late Decorated style. The large brewery of Inde, Coope, & Co. is situated in the town, and there are extensive market gardens in thé neighbourhood. A grant of a market was obtained in 1247, and this is still of importance as regards both cattle and corn. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1159 acres) in 1871 was 6512, and in 1881 it was 7176.

ROMILLY, Sir Samuen (1757-1818), the great legal reformer who first attempted to relax the barbarity of the English penal code, was the second son of Peter Romilly, a watchmaker and jeweller in London, whose father had emigrated from Montpellier after the revocation of the edict of Nantes, and who had married a Miss Garnault, a

Huguenot refugee like himself, but of a far wealthier family. Samuel Romilly was born in Frith Street, Soho, on Ist March 1757, and was named after Sir Samuel Fludyer, M.P. for the city of London and alderman, who was in partnership with two of his uncles. He served for a time in his father's shop; but his education was not neglected, and he became a good classical scholar and particularly conversant with French literature. A legacy of £2000 from one of his mother's relations led to his being articled to a solicitor and clerk in Chancery with the idea of qualifying himself to purchase the office of one of the six clerks in Chancery. In

1778, however, he determined to go to the bar, and entered himself at Gray's Inn. He went to Geneva in 1781, where he made the acquaintance of the chief demo- cratic leaders, including Etienne Dumont. Called to the bar in 1783, he went the midland circuit, but was chiefly occu- pied with Chancery practice. On the publication of Madan's Thoughts on Hxecutwe Justice, advocating the increase of capital punishments, he at once wrote and published in 1786 Observations on Madan's book. Of more general interest is his intimacy with the great Mirabcau, to whom he was introduced in 1784 (see MrraBEAv). Mirabeau saw him daily for a long time and introduced him to Lord Lans- downe, who highly appreciated him, and, when Mirabeau became a political leader, it was to Romilly that he applied for an account of the procedure used in the English House of Commons. He visited Paris in 1789, and studied the

| |

course of the Revolution there ; and in 1790 he published his Thoughts on the Probable Influence of the Late Revolu- tion in France upon Great Britain, a work of great power. His practice at the Chancery bar continued largely to in- crease, and in 1800 he was made a K.C. In 1798 he married the daughter of Francis Garbett of Knill Court, Herefordshire ; and in 1805 he was appointed chancellor of the county palatine of Durham. His great abilities were thoroughly recognized by the Whig party, to which he attached himself; and in 1806, on the accession of the ministry of "All the Talents" to office, he was offered the post of solicitor-general, although he had never sat in the House of Commons. He accepted the office, and was knighted and brought into parliament for Queenborough. He went out of office with the Government, but remained in the House of Commons, sitting successively for Horsham, Wareham, and Arundel. It was now that Sir Samuel Romilly commenced the greatest labour of his life, his attempt to reform the criminal law of England, which. was at once cruel and illogical. By statute law innumerable offences were punished by death, but, as such wholesale executions would be impossible, the larger number of those convicted and sentenced to death at every assizes were respited, after having heard the sen- tence of

death solemnly passed upon them. 'This led to many acts of injustice, as the lives of the convicts depended on the caprice of the judges, while at the same time it made the whole system of punishments and of the criminal law ridiculous. Romilly saw this, and in 1808 he managed to repeal the statute 8 Eliz. ¢. 4, which made it a capital offence to steal from the person. This success, however, raised opposition, and in the following year three bills repealing equally sanguinary statutes were thrown out by the House of Lords under the influence of Lord Ellenborough. Year after year the same influence prevailed, and Romilly saw his bills rejected; but his patient efforts and his eloquence ensured victory eventually for his cause by opening the eyes of Englishmen to the barbarity of their criminal law. The only success he had was in securing the repeal, in 1812, of the statute 39 Eliz. ce. 17, making it a capital offence for a soldier or a mariner to beg without a pass from a magistrate or his command- ing officer. Sir Samuel Romilly's efforts made his name famous not only in England but all over Europe, and on 4th July 1818 he had the honour of being returned at the head of the poll for the city of Westminster. He did not long survive his triumph. On the 29th of October 1818 Lady Romilly died in the Isle of Wight. Her husband's grief was intense, and he committed suicide in a fit of temporary insanity on the 2d November. No man of his time was more loved than Sir Samuel Romilly ; his singularly sweet nature, his upright manliness, his elo- quence, and his great efforts on behalf of humanity secured him permanent fame. His second son John rivalled his reputation as a lawyer, and after being appointed master of the rolls in 1851, an office which he held for twenty-two years, was raised to the peerage as Lord Romilly in 1866.

See the Memoirs of the Life of Sir Samuel Romilly writien by himself, with a selection from his Correspondence, edited by his Sons,

3 vols., 1840; and The Speeches of Sir Samuel Romilly in the House of Commons, 2 vols., 1820.

ROMNEY, Grorex (1734-1802), historical and portrait painter, was born at Dalton-le-Furness, Lancashire, on December 26,1734. His father was a builder and cabinet- maker of the place, and the son, having manifested a turn for mechanics, was instructed in the latter craft, showing

considerable dexterity with his fingers, executing carvings of figures in wood, and constructing a violin, which he spent much time in playing. He was also busy with his pencil; and, some of his sketches of the neighbouring

rustics having attracted the attention of his father, he was at length induced to apprentice the boy, at the age of nineteen, to an itinerant painter of portraits and domestic subjects named Steele, an artist who had studied in Paris under Vanloo; but the erratic habits of his instructor prevented Romney from making great progress in his art. In 1756 he impulsively married a young woman who had nursed him through a fever, and started as a portrait painter on his own account, travelling through the northern counties, executing likenesses at a couple of guineas, and producing a series of some twenty figure compositions, which were exhibited in Kendal, and afterwards disposed of by means of a lottery.

Having, at the age of twenty-seven, saved about £100, he left a portion of the sum with his wife and family, and started to seek his fortune in London, never returning, except for two brief visits, till he came, a broken-down and aged man, todie. In London he rapidly rose into popular favour. His Death of General Wolfe was judged worthy of the second prize at the Society of Arts, but a word from Reynolds in praise of Mortimer's Edward the Confessor led to the premium being awarded to that painter, while Romney had to content himself with a donation of £50, an incident which led to the subsequent coldness between him and the president which prevented him from exhibit- ing at the Academy or presenting himself for its honours.

'In 1764 he paid a brief visit to Paris, where he was befriended by Joseph Vernet; and his portrait of Sir Joseph Yates, painted on his return, bears distinct traces of his study of the works of Rubens then in the Luxembourg Gallery. In 1766 he became a member of the Incorporated Society of Artists, and three years later he seems to have studied in their schools. Soon he was in the full tide of prosperity. He removed to Great Newport Street, near the residence of Sir Joshua, whose fame in portraiture he began to rival in such works as Sir George and Lady

Warren, and Mrs Yates as the Tragic Muse; and his professional income rose to £1200 a year.

But he was seized with a longing to study in Italy ; and in the beginning of 1773 he started for Rome in company with Ozias Humphrey the miniature painter. On his arrival he separated himself from his fellow traveller and his countrymen, and devoted himself to solitary study, raising a scaffold to examine the paintings in the Vatican, and giving much time to work from the undraped model, of which his painting of a Wood Nymph was a fine and grace- ful result. At Parma he concentrated himself upon the productions of Correggio, which powerfully fascinated him, and greatly influenced his practice.

In 1775 Romney returned to London, establishing himself in Cavendish Square, and resuming his extensive and lucrative employinent as a portrait-painter, which in 1785, according to the estimate of his pupil Robinson, yielded him an ineome of over £3600. The admiration of the town was divided between him and Reynolds, 'There are two factions in art," said Lord Thurlow, 'and I am of the Romney faction,'—and the remark, and the rivalry which it implied, causcd much annoyance to Sir Joshua, who was accustonied to refer contemptuously to the younger painter as 'the man in Cavendish Square." After his return from Italy Romney formed two friendships which powerfully influenced his life. He became acquainted with Hayley, his future biographer, then in the zenith of his little-merited popularity as a poet. His influence on the painter seems to have been far from salutary. Weak himself, he flattercd the weaknesses of Romney, cncouraged his excessive and morbid sensibility, disturbed him with amateurish fancies and suggestions, and tempted him to expend on slight rapid sketches, and ill-considered, seldom-completed paintings of ideal and poetical subjects, talents which would have found fitter exer- cise in the steady pursuit of portraiture. About 1783 Romney was introduced to Emma Hart, afterwards celebrated as Lady Hamilton, and she beeame the modcl from whom he worked incessantly. Her bewitching face smiles from innumerable can- vases ; he painted her as a Magdalene and as a Joan of Arc, asa Ciree, a Bacchante, a Cassandra, and he has himself confessed that she was the inspirer of what was most beautiful in his art. But

her fascinations seem to have been too much for the more than middle-aged painter, and they had their own share in aggravating that nervous restlessness and instability, inherent in his nature, which finally ruined both health and mind.

In 1786 Alderman Boydell started his great scheme of the Shakespeare Gallery,—it would appear at the suggestion of Romney. The painter at least entered heartily into the plan, and contributed his scene from the Tempest, and his Infant Shakespeare attended by the Passions, the latter characterized by the Redgraves as one of the best of his subject pictures. Gradually he began to withdraw from portrait-painting, to limit the hours devoted to sitters, and to turn his thoughts to mighty schemes of thc ideal subjects which he would execute. Already, in 1792, he had painted Milton and his Daughters, which was followed by Newton making Experiments with the Prism. Hc was to paint the Seven Ages, Visions of Adam with the Angel, "six other subjects from Milton—three where Satan is the hero, and three from Adam and Eve,—perliaps six of each." Having planned and erected a large studio in Hampstead, he removed thither in 1797, with the fine collection of casts from the antique which his friend Flaxman had gathered for him in Italy. But his health was now irremediably shattered, and the man was near hisend. In the summer of 1799, suffcring from great weakness of body and the profoundest depres- sion of mind, he returned to the north, to Kendal, where his deserted but faithful and long-suffering wife received and tended him. He died November 15, 1802.

The art of Romney, and especially his figure subjects, suffered greatly from the waywardness aud instability of the painter's disposi- tion, from his want of fixed purpose and sustained energy. He lacked the steadfast perseverance needful to the accomplishment of a great picture. His imagination was no "constant angel ever by his side" ; it flashed and flickered fitfully upon him, like April sun- shine. His fancy would be captivated by a subject, which was presently embodied in a sketch, but the toil of elaborating it into the finished completeness of a painting too frequently overtaxed his powers ; he became embarrassed by technical difficulties which, through defective early training, he was unable to

surmount, and the half-covered canvas would be turned to the wall. It is in the best of his portraits that we feel the painter's true greatness. These, and especially his female portraits, are full of grace, distinc- tion, and sweetness. When we examine his heads of Cowper and Wilkes, his delicate and dignified full length of William Beckford, his Parson's Daughter iu the National Gallery, and his group of the Duchess of Gordon and her Son, we are ready to admit his claim to rank as the third of the great portrait painters of 18th- century England.

See the Afemotrs by William Hayley, 1809, and the artist's son, the Rev. John Romney, 1830; also Cunningham's Lives of the Painter's.

ROMNY, a district town of Russia, on the Sula river, 112 miles to the north-west of Poltava, and in the govern- ment of that name. It acquired commercial importance during last century, especially on account of its fairs. The chief of these—that in wool—was removed to Poltava in 1852, but the prices established by the remaining three still determine to a great extent those at the greater fair of Poltava. Of the local industries, the manufacture of agricultural implements is the only one worthy of mention, but the petty trades, both in town and district, are of considerable importance. The population in 1881 was

12,300.

ROMULUS, the mythical eponym founder and first king of Rome, is represented in legend as the son of Mars. His mother, the Vestal Silvia or Dia, was daughter of Numitor, who had been dispossessed of the throne of Alba by his younger brother Amulius; Silvia's twin sons, Romulus and Remus, were placed in a trough and cast into the Tiber by their cruel granduncle. The trough grounded in the marshes where Rome afterwards stood, under the wild fig- tree (jicus ruminalis) which was still holy in later days. The babes were suckled by a she-wolf and fed by a wood-pecker, and then fostered by Acca Laurentia, wife of the shepherd Faustulus. Growing up they became leaders of a warlike band of shepherds on the Palatine, and in course of time were recognized by their grandfather, whom they restored to his throne, slaying the usurper Amulius. They now proposed to found a city on the site where they had been nurtured ; but a quarrel broke out between the brothers, and Remus

was slain. The story goes on to tell how Romulus strengthened his band by receiving outlaws, found wives

for them by capture, and waged war with the indignant parents. The most formidable foe was Titus Tatius, king of the Sabines, but after an obstinate struggle he and Romulus united their forces and reigned side by side till Tatius fell in a blood feud with Laurentum. Romulus now reigned alone till le suddenly one day disappeared from earth in darkness and storm, and was thereafter worshipped as a god under the name of Quirinus, which, however, is really a Sabine form of Mars. This legend, best preserved in Livy (book i.), belongs througliout to mytho- logy, not to history. See also Plutarch's Romulus, and Dionysius, books i., 11.

ROMULUS AUGUSTULUS. See Onoacer, vol. xvii. p. 726, and Roms, supra, p. 781.

RONDA, a town of Spain, in the province of Malaga, and about 43 miles to the west of that city. It occupies a site of singular picturesqueness on a high rock nearly surrounded by the Guadalvin (afterwards the Guadiaro), which flows through a deep and abrupt chasm (or " Tajo") by which the old town is separated from the new. Of the two bridges the more modern (1761) spans the stream in a single arch at a height of about 255 feet. On the edge of the Tajo is the alameda or public promenade, commanding a wide and beautiful prospect of the fertile valley or vega and the sierra beyond. The old part of the town has a Moorish aspect, with narrow, steep, and crooked lanes, and still retains some Moorish towers and other buildings. The Ronda bull-ring is one of the finest in Spain, and can accommodate 10,000 spectators. Ronda is the seat of a considerable trade in leather, saddlery, and horses, and has an important fair (May 20). The population within the limits of the municipality was 19,181 in 1877. .

Some inconsiderable remains of an aqueduct and theatre, about 7 miles to the north of Ronda, are supposed to represent the Acintpo or Arunda of ancient geographers. Ronda was taken from the Moors in 1485. It was the birthplace of Espinel.

RONDEAU or Ronpet (Ital. Rondo). In poetry the rondeau is a short metrical structure which in its perfect form is divided into three strophes of unequal length, knit together by rapidly recurrent rhymes and a refrain. The laws of the rondeau have varied at different periods, and even with different poets of the same period—varied so fundamentally that some critics have found a generic dif- ference between the "rondeaw" and the "'rondel" or "ron- det." Rondeau, however, seems to be merely the modern spelling of the word rondel, as marteau is the modern spell- ing of martel, chdteau of chdtel, &c. When the rondeau was called the rondel it was mostly written in fourteen octosyllabic lines of two rhymes as in the rondels of Charles @Orleans. In this variability of structure it contrasts with the stability of the Sonnet (¢.v.). While the proper sonnet of octave and sestet has always been a struciure of fourteen verses (whatever may be the arrangement of the rhymes), the structure under consideration, whether called rondeau or rondel or rondet, may, it seems, consist of any number of verses from eight to thirteen. But when we find that the kind of triolet used by Froissart is a '"'rondel" we are compelled to admit that the names given to this form are very elastic. In Clement Marot's time, however, the laws of the rondeau became more settled, and, according to Voiture, in the 17th century the approved form of the rondeau was a structure of thirteen verses and a refrain.

Ma foy, c'est fait de moy, car Isabeau M'a conjuré de luy faire un Rondeau :

Cela me met en une peine extréime.

Quoy treize vers, huit en caw, cing en éme, Je luy ferois aussi-t6t un bateau !

En voila cing pourtant en un monceau : Faisons en huict, en invoquant Brodeau, En puis mettons, par quelque stratageme, Ma foy, c'est fait!

RON—RON

Si je pouvois encore de mon cerveau Tirer cing vers, 'ouvrage seroit beau ; Mais cependant, je suis dedans l'onzieme, Et si je croy que je fais le douzieme En voila treize ajustez au niveau. Ma foy, c'est fait !

All forms of the rondeau, or rondel, however, are alike in this that the distinguishing metrical emphasis is achieved by a peculiar use of the refrain. Though we have the Eng- lish rondels of Occleve and a set of rondeaus in the Rolliad (written by Dr Lawrence the friend of Burke, according to Mr Gosse, who has given us an admirable essay upon exotic forms of verse), it was not till our own day that the form had any real vogue in England. Considerable attention, however, has lately been given in England to the form. Some of the rondeaus of our own contemporary poets are as bright and graceful as Voiture's own. Mr Swinburne, who in his Century of Roundels was perhaps the first to make the refrain rhyme with the second verse of the first strophe, has brought the form into high poetry.

Although the origin of the refrain in all poetry was no doubt the improvisatore's need of a rest, a time in which to focus his forces and recover breath for future flights, the refrain has a distinct metrical value of its own ; it knits the structure together, and so intensifies the emotional energy, aS we see in the Border ballads, in the Oriana of Lord Tennyson, and in the Sister Helen of Rossetti, The suggestion of extreme artificiality —of "difficulty over- come"—which is one great fault of the rondeau as a vehicle for deep emotion, does not therefore spring from the use of the refrain, but from the too frequent recur- rence of the rhymes in the strophes—for which there is no metrical necessity as in the case of the Petrarchan sonnet. "Dificulty overcome," though a legitimate source of plea- sure in French poetry even of the most serious kind (for the French language is essentially the most unpoetic in Europe), finds no place in the serious poetry of England.

In music the "rondo" seeks much the same effect as in poetry, the melodic emphasis of the refrain. The Italian composer Buononcini seems to have been the inventor of the rondo as thus understood.

RONSARD, Prerri pe (1524-1585), "Prince of Poets" (as his own generation in France called him, and as after much change of criticism there is reason for calling him still in reference to that generation and country), was born at the Ch&teau de la Poissonniére, near the village of Couture in the province of Vendémois (department of Loir-et-Cher) on

September 11, 1524. His family are said to have come from the Slav provinces to the south of the Danube (provinces with which the crusades had given France much intercourse) in the first half of the 14th century. Baudouin de Ronsard or Rossart was the founder of the French branch of the house, and made his mark in the early stages of the Hundred Years' War. The poet's father was named Loys, and his mother was Jeanne de Chaudrier, of a family not only noble in itself but well connected. Pierre was the youngest son. Loys de Ronsard was maitre @hétel du rot to Francis I., whose captivity after Pavia had just been softened by treaty, and he had to quit his home shortly after Pierre's birth. The future Prince of Poets was educated at home for some years and sent to the Collége de Navarre at Paris when he was nine years old. It is said that the rough life of a medizval school did not suit him. He had, however, no long experience of it, being quickly appointed page to the duke of Orleans. When Marguerite of France was married to James V. of Scotland Ronsard was attached to the king's service, and he spent three years in Great Britain. The latter part of this time seems to have been passed in England, though he had, strictly speaking, no business there. On returning to France in 1540 he was

again taken into the service of the duke of Orleans. In this service he had other opportunities of travel, being sent to Flanders and again to Scotland. After a time a more important employment fell to his lot, and he was attached as secretary to the suite of Lazare de Baif, the father of his future colleague in the Pléiade and his com- panion on this occasion, Antoine de Baif, at the diet of Spires. Afterwards he was attached in the same way to the suite of the Cardinal du Bellay-Langey, and his mythical quarrel with Rabelais dates mythically from this period. His apparently promising diplomatic career was, however, cut short by an attack of deafness which no physician could cure, and he determined to devote himself to study. The institution which he chose for the purpose among the numerous schools aud colleges of Paris was the Collége Coqueret, the principal of which was Daurat—afterwards the "dark star" (as he has been called from his silence in France) of the Pléiade, Baif accompanied Ronsard ; Belleau shortly followed; Joachim du Bellay, the second of the

seven, joined not much Jater. Muretus, a great scholar and by means of his Latin plays a great influence in the creation of French tragedy, was also a student here.

Ronsard's period of study occupied seven years, and the first manifesto of the new literary movement, which was to apply to the vernacular the principles of criticism and scholarship learnt from the classics, came not from him but from Du Bellay. The Défense et Lilustration de la Langue Francaise of the latter appeared in 1549, and the Pléiade may be said to have been then launched. It con- sisted, as its name implies, of seven writers whose names are some- times differently enumerated, though the orthodox canon is beyond doubt composed of Ronsard, Du Bellay, Baif, Belleau, Pontus de Tyard (a man of rank and position who had exemplified the prin- ciples of the friends earlier), Jodelle the dramatist, and Daurat. Ronsard's own work came a little later, and a rather idle story is told of a trick of Du Bellay's which at last determined him to publish. Some single and minor pieces, an epithalamium on Antoine de Bourbon and Jeanne de Navarre, a "Hymne de la France," an "Ode & la Paix," preceded the publication in 1550 of the four first books ("first " is characteristic and noteworthy) of the Odes of Pierre de Ronsard. This was followed in 1552 by the publication of his Amowrs with the fifth book of Odes. These books excited a violent literary quarrel. Marot was dead, but he left a numerous school, some of whom saw in the stricter literary critique of the Pléiade, in its outspoken contempt of merely ver- nacular and medieval forms and so forth, an insult to the author of the Adolesecnce Clémentine and his followers. The French court, and indeed all French society, was just then much interested in literary questions, and a curious story is told of the rivalry that ensued. Mcllin de St Gelais, it is said, the chief of the "Heole Marotique" and a poet of no small merit, took up Ronsard's book and read part of it in a more or less designedly burlesqne fashion before the king. It may be observed that if he did so it was a dis- tinctly rash and uncourtier-like act, inasmuch as from Ronsard's father's position in the royal household the poet was personally known and liked both by Henry and by his family. At any rate Marguerite the king's sister, who afterwards became duchess of Savoy, is said to have snatched the book from St Gelais and insisted on reading it herself, with the result of general applause. Hence- forward, if not before, his

acceptance as a poet was not doubtful, and indeed the tradition of his having to fight his way against cabals is almost entirely unsupported. It is quite true that he more than any other poet has had to suffer detraction from a remarkably different series of opposing forces. But none of these interfered with his popularity in his own time, which was over- whelming and immediate, or with his prosperity, which was unbroken. He published his Hymns, dedicated to Marguerite de Savoie, in 1555, the conclusion of the Amowrs in 1556, and then a collection of Guvres Completes said to be due to the invitation of Mary Stuart, queen of Francis II., in 1560.

The rapid change of sovereigns did Ronsard no harm, Charles IX., who succeeded his brother after a very short time, was even better inclined to him than Henry and Francis. He gave him rooms in the palace; he bestowed upon him divers abbacies and priories ; and he called him and regarded him constantly as his master in poetry. Neither was Charles IX. a bad poet. This royal patronage, however, had its disagreeable side. It excited violent dislike to Ronsard on the part of the Huguenots, who wrote constant pasquinades against him, strove (by a ridiculous exaggera- tion of the Dionysiac festival at Arcueil, in which the friends had indulged to celebrate the success of the first French tragedy, Jodelle's Cléopatre) to represent him as a libertine and an atheist,

XX… ==" F66.

842

and (which seems to have annoyed him more than anything else) set up his follower Du Bartas as his rival. According to some words of his own which are quite credible considering the ways of the time, they were not contented with this variety of argument, but attempted to have him assassinated. During this period Ronsard's work was considerable but mostly occasional, and the one work of magnitude upon which Charles put him, the Franciade, has never been ranked, even by his most devoted admirers, as a chief title to fame. The metre (the decasyllable) which the king chose could not but contrast unfavourably with the magnificent alexandrines which Du Bartas and Agrippa d'Aubigné were shortly to produce; the general plan is feebly classical, and the very language has little or nothing of that racy mixture of scholarliness and love of natural

beauty which distinguishes the best work of the Pléiade. The poem could never have had an abiding success, but at its appearance it had the singular bad luck almost to coincide with the massacre of St Bartholomew, which had occurred about a fortnight before its publication. One party in the state were certain to look coldly on the work of a minion of the court at such a juncture, the other had something elsc to think of. The death of Charles made, indeed, little difference in the court favour which Ronsard enjoyed, but, combined with his increasing infirmities, it seems to have determined him to quit court life. During his last year he lived chiefly at a house which he possessed in Vendéme, the capital of his native province, at his abbey at Croix Val in the same neighbourhood, or else at Paris, where he was usually the guest of Jean Galland, well known as a scholar, at the Collége de Boncourt. It seems also that he had a town house of his own in the Faubourg Saint Marcel. At any rate his preferments made him in perfectly easy circumstances, and he seems neither to have derived nor wished for any profit from his books. A half-jocular suggestion that his publisher should give him money to buy "du bois pour se chauffer" in return for his last revision of his Huwvres Completes is the only trace of any desire of the kind. On the other Rand he received not merely gifts and endowments from his own sovereign but presents from many others, including Elizabeth of England. His last years were, however, saddened not merely by the death of many of his most intimate friends, but by constant and increasing ill health. This did not interfere with his literary work in point of quality, for he was rarely idle, and some of his latest work is among his best. But he indulged (what few poets have wisely indulged) the tempta- tion of constantly altering his work, and many of his later altera- tions are by no means for the better. Towards the end of 1585 his condition of health grew worse and worse, and he seems to have moved restlessly from one of his houses to another for some months. When the end came, which, though in great pain, he met in a resolute and religious manner, he was at his priory of Saint Cosme at Tours, and he was buried in the church of that name on Friday, December 27.

The character and fortunes of Ronsard's works are among the most remarkable in literary history, and supply in themselves a kind of illustration of the progress of French literature during the last three

centuries. It was his fortune to be almost always extra- vagautly admired or violently attacked, and it is only recently that he has been setin his proper place. At first, as has been said, the enmity, not altogether unprovoked, of the friends and followers of Marot fell to his lot, then the still fiercer antagonism of the Huguenot faction, who, happening to possess a poet of great merit in Du Bartas, were able to attack Ronsard in his tenderest point, that of his reputation as the greatest living French poet. But fate had by no means done its worst with him in his lifetime. After his death the classical reaction set in under the auspices of Malherbe, a man of correct and narrow spirit who seems to have been animated with a sort of personal hatred of Ronsard, though it is not clear that they ever met. After Malherbe (who by no means himself produced the effect which some well-known but quite unhistorical lines of Boileau would convey) the rising glory of Corneille and his contemporaries obscured the tentative and equal work of the Pléiade, which was, moreover, directly attacked by Boileau himself, the dictator of French criticism in the last half of the 17th century. Then Ronsard was, except by a few men of taste, like La Bruyére and Fénelon, forgotten when he was not sneered at. In this con- dition he remained during the whole 18th century and the first quarter of the 19th. The romantic revival, seeing in him a victim of its special béie noire Boileau, and attracted by his splendid diction, rich metrical faculty, and combination of classical and medieval peculiarities, adopted his name as a kind of battle cry, and for the inoment exaggerated his merits somewhat. The critical work, however, first of Sainte-Beuve in his Tableaw dela Littératwre Francaise aw 16éme Siecle, and since of others, has established Ronsard pretty securely in his right place, a place which may be defined in a few sentences.

For the general position of the Pléiade reference may be made to the article on the literature of France (vol. ix. p. 650). Ronsard, its acknowledged chief and its most voluminous poet, was probably also its best, though a few isolated picces of Belleau excel him in

airy lightness of touch. Several sonnets of Du Bellay exhibit what may be called the intense and voluptuous melancholy of the Renaissance more

perfectly than anything of his, and the finest passages of the Tragiques and the Divine Sepmaine surpass his work in command of the alexandrine and in power of turning it to the purposes of satirical invective and descriptive narration. But that work is, as has been said, very extensive (we possess at a rough guess not much short of a hundyed thousand lines of his), and it is extraordinarily varied in form. He did not introduce the sonnet into France, but he practised it very soon after its introduction aud with admirable skill—the famous "Quand vous serez bien vieille" being one of the acknowledged gems of French literature. His odes, which are very numerous, are also very in- teresting and in their best shape very perfect compositions. He began by imitating the strophic arrangement of the ancients, but very soon had the wisdom to desert this for a kind of adjustment of the Horatian ode to rhyme, instead of exact quantitative metre. In this latter kind he devised some exquisitely melodious rhythms of which, till our own day, the secret died with the 17th century. His more sustained work sometimes displays a bad selection of metre; and his occasional poetry—epistles, eclogues, elegies, &c.—is injured by its vast volume. But the preface to the Franciade is a very fine piece of verse, far superior (it is in alexandrines) to the poem itself. Generally speaking, Ronsard is best in his amatory verse (the long series of sonnets and odes to Cassandre, Marie, Genevre, Heléne, &c.), and in his descriptions of the country (the famous " Mignonne allons voir si la rose," the " Fontaine Bellerie," the "Forét de Gastine," and so forth), which have an extraordinary grace and freshness. No one used with more art than he the grace- ful diminutives which his school set in fashion. He knew well too how to manage the gorgeous adjectives ("marbrine," "cinabrine," "ivoirine," and the like) which were another fancy of the Pléiade, and in his hands they rarely become stiff or cumbrous. In short, Ronsard shows eminently the two great attractions of French 17th-century poetry as compared with that of the two following ages,—magnificence of language and imagery and graceful variety of metre. The chief separately published works of Ronsard are noted above. He pro- duced, however, during his life a vast number of separate publications, some of them mere pamphlets or broadsheets which from time to time he collected, often striking out others at the same time, in the successive editions of his works. Of these he himsclf published seven—the first in 1560, the last in 1584, Betwcen his death and the year 1630 ten more

complete editions were published, the most famous of which is the folio of 1609. A copy of this presented by Sainte-Beuve to Victor Hugo, and now in the possession of M. Maxime du Camp, has a place of its own in French litcrary history. From 1630 Ronsard was not again reprinted for more than two centuries, Just before the close of the second, howevcr, Sainte-Beuve printed a selection of his poems at the end of the above-mentioned Tableau. There are also selections by M. Noel (in the Collection Didot) and Becq de Fouquitres. 1n1857 M. Prosper Blanchemain, who had previously pub- lished a volume of Guvres Inédites de Ronsard, undertook a complete edition for the Bibliotheque Elzévirienne. 'The eighth and last volume of this appeared ten years later. It is practically complete; a few pieces of a somewhat free character which are ascribed with some certainty to the poet are, however, excluded, The chief separate volume of criticism on Ronsard is that of M. Gandar (Mctz, 1854), which considers him chiefly in his rclation to the ancients. (G. SA.)

RONSDORF, a town in north-western Prussia, on the Morsbach, a small affluent of the Rhine, 18 miles west of Diisseldorf, contains considerable iron and brass works, foundries, and wire-works, besides carrying on extensive manufactures of ribbons, trimmings, and similar goods. The population in 1880 was 10,100.

Founded in 1737 by the followers of Elias Eller, a religious en- thusiast, Ronsdorf received town-rights in 1745. The Ronsdort sect, the members of which called themselves Zionites, is now extinct.

ROOF. See Burtpine and Dome.

ROOK (Anglo-Saxon Hréc, Icelandic Hrékr,' Swedish Rdka, Dutch Rock, Gaelic Rocas), the Corvus frugilegus of ornithology, and throughout a great part of Europe the commonest and best-known of the Crow-tribe. Besides its pre-eminently gregarious habits, which did not escape the notice of Virgil (Georg. i. 382)? and are so unlike those of nearly every other member of the Corvidz, the Rook is at once distinguishable from the rest by commonly losing at an early age the feathers from its face, leaving a bare, scabrous, and greyish-white skin that is sufficiently visible at some distance. In the comparatively rare cases " 1 The bird, however, does not

inhabit Iceland, and the language to which the name belongs would perhaps be more correctly termed Old Teutonic. From this word is said to come the French Prewm. There are many local German names of the same origin, such as Rooke, Rouch, Ruch, and others, but the bird is generally known in Germany as the Saat-Krihe, i.e., Seed- (=Corn-) Crow.

2 This is the more noteworthy as the.district in which he was born and educated is almost the only part of lialy in whichthe Rook breeds. Shelley also very truly speaks of the "legioned Rooks" to which he stood listening " mid the mountains Euganean."

in which these feathers persist, the Rook may be readily known from the black form of Crow (vol. vi. p. 618) by the rich purple gloss of its black plumage, especially on the head and neck, the feathers of which are soft and not pointed. Ina general way the appearance and manners of the Rook are so well known, to most inhabitants of the British Islands especially, that it is needless here to dwell upon them, and particularly its habit of forming com- munities in the breeding-season, which it possesses in a measure beyond that of any other land bird of the northern hemisphere. Yet each of these communities, or rookeries, seems to have some custom intrinsically its own, the details of which want of space forbids any attempt to set before the reader. In a general way the least-known part of the Rook's mode of life are facts relating to its migration and geographical distribution. Though the great majority of Rooks in Britain are sedentary or only change their abode to a very limited extent, it is now certain that a very considerable number visit this country in or towards autumn, not necessarily to abide here, but merely to pass onward, like most other kinds of birds, to winter further southwards ; and, at the same season or even a little earlier, it cannot be doubted that a large proportion of the young of the year emigrate in the same direction. As a species the Rook on the European continent only resides during the whole year through- out the middle tract of its ordinary range. Further to the northward, as in Sweden and northern Russia, it is a regular summer-immigrant, while further to the southward, as in southern France, Spain,

and most parts of Italy, it is, on the contrary, a regular winter-immigrant. The same is found to be the case in Asia, where it extends eastward as far as the upper Irtish and the Ob. It breeds through- out Turkestan, in the cold weather visiting Afghanistan, Cashmere, and the Punjab, and Sir Oliver St John found a rookery of considerable size at Casbin in Persia. In Palestine and in Lower Egypt it is only a winter-visitant, and Canon Tristram noticed that it congregates in great numbers about the mosque of Omar in Jerusalem.!

There are several moot points in the natural history of the Rook which it is impossible here to do more than mention, One is the cause of the curious shedding on reaching maturity of the feathers of its face, and another the burning question whether Rooks are on the whole beneficial or detrimental to agriculture. In England the former opinion seems to be generally entertained, but in Scotland the latter has long been popular. The absence of suffi- cient observations made by persons at once competent and without bias compels the naturalist to withhold his judgment on the matter,

but the absence of such observations is eminently discreditable to the numerous Agricultural Societies of the United Kingdom. (A.N.)

ROOKE, Sir Gzorcr (1650-1709), naval commander, was born near Canterbury in 1650. Entering the navy as a volunteer, he became post-captain in 1680, and vice- admiral in 1692. In May of this year he greatly dis- tinguished himself in a night attack on the French fleet off Cape La Hogue, when he succeeded in burning six of their ships. Shortly afterwards he received the honour of knighthood and a reward of £1000. In 1702 he com- manded the expedition against Cadiz, and on the passage home captured the Plate fleet off Vigo. Along with Sir Cloudesley Shovel he took part in the capture of Gibraltar, 21st July 1704. On 13th August of the same year he attacked the French fleet off Malaga, the battle being drawn. On account of the dissatisfaction expressed indirectly at the result of the contest, he retired from the service in February 1705. He died 24th January 1709.

See The Life and Glorious Actions of Sir George Rooke, 1707.

1 It is right to mention that the Canon considers the Rook of Palestine entitled to specific distinction as Corvus agricola (Proe. Zool. Society, 1864, p. 444; Ibis, 1866, pp. 68, 69), In like manner the Rook of China has been described as forming a distinct species,

under the name of C. pastinator (Proe. Zool. Society, 1845, p. 1), from having the feathers of its face only partially deciduous.

ROPE. All varieties of cordage having a circumference of an inch or more are known by the general name of rope. 'Twisted cordages of smaller dimensions are called cords, twines, and lines, and when the dimensions are still smaller the article becomes thread or doubled yarn. All these varieties of cordage are composed of at least two, and in most cases of very many separate yarns, which are textile fibres drawn out and twisted into a uniform compact line. From thread and fine twine upwards the whole art of manufacture is simply that of twisting together fibres and yarns, but the comparative heaviness and coarse- ness of the materials operated on in rope-making render necessary the adoption of strong machinery and modified processes which clearly define this manufacture as a distinct calling. The modern trade of rope-making is again divided into two branches dealing respectively with certain vegetable fibres and with metallic wire. Silk cords and hair lines and ropes do not come within the scope of rope-making proper.

Vegetable fibres fit for rope-making are numerous, but ordinarily not many are employed. Speaking generally, for the prime requisites of strength, suppleness, flexi- bility, and durability, none can compete with the common Hump (9.v.), which consequently is the staple of the rope-maker. Manita Hemp (q.v.) is a fibre of the most remarkable tenacity, of unapproached value for heavy cordage, but too stiff and woody for small cords and twines. After these in utility come sisal hemp of South America (Agave sisalana), phormium hemp of New Zealand (Phormium tena, see vol. xviii. p. 812), and the sunn hemp of the East Indies (Crotalaria juncea, see vol. xi. p. 647)—all fibres of great strength, and largely used by rope- makers. Among fibres more rarely seen in rope-works are Jubbulpore hemp (Crotalaria tenuifolia), bowstring hemp (Sanseviera zeylanica), and other "hemps" of the East Indies, and plantain fibre

(Afusa paradisica) and agave fibre (Agave americana) of America. Ropes and twine of cotton are extensively made, especially for driving-bands for machinery. JUTE (q.v.) is now in considerable use by

rope-makers, on account of its cheapness, but it is very

deficient in strength and durability. Corr (see vol. vi. p. 917) is also largely employed, and many other fibres are used, principally in the localities of their production.

A rope is composed of a certain number of " strands," the strand being itself made up of many "yarns." Three strands laid or twisted together form a "hawser- laid" rope, and three such hawsers similarly laid make a '"cable-laid rope" or "cable."

The primary object of twisting fibres together in a rope is that by mutual friction they may be held together when a strain is applied to the whole. Eard twisting has the further advantage of compacting the fibres and _pre- venting the penetration of moisture when the ropes are exposed to water. The proper degree of twist is a matter of considerable importance, as all twisting injuri- ously affects the strength of the individual fibres, and indeed it is possible to twist a cord so hard that it will break under the action. The degree of twist given to ropes is generally such that the rope is from three- fourths to two-thirds the length of the yarn composing it, and the lighter the twist the greater in proportion is

the strength of the rope. In a bundle of fibres, equal in length and strength, fastened at the ends, each fibre will, upon a strain being applied to the bundle, bear its proper share of the stress; and the strength of the bundle will evidently be measured by adding together the strength of the separate fibres. But if this bundle is twisted so as to form a thread, the strain will no longer be equally distributed among the fibres, for, by the tor- sion, the external fibres of the bundle will be wound round those that lie nearest to the centre, and, in proportion to their distance from the heart of the bundle and the amount of twist given, will form spirals more or less inclined from the axis of the thread. The external fibres will in

consequence be longer than the internal ones, and the greatest share of the strain will be borne by the latter. The depreciation in strength from twist- ing of hard woody fibres is greater than is the case with fine soft flexible fibres, such as common hemp of good quality.

To prevent the decay of ropes which are frequently exposed to water, the yarns of which they are composed are soaked in hot Archangel tar before they are formed into strands. Tarring, it is found, also seriously diminishes the strength of the rope, but no other means of preventing water from penetrating and rotting the fibre has yet been found. M. Duhamel, from a series of investigations made in 1741-46, came to the conclusion that, apart from exposure to wet, untarred cordage in constant service was about one-third more durable than tarred, that it retained its strength for a longer period when kept in store, and that it resisted the ordinary influences of the weather better than when it was tarred. Subsequent experience has fully borne out these conclusions, and now that Manila hemp, which withstands the influence of water well, is so extensively used for heavy cordage, tarring is no longer so generally practised in rope-making as was at one time the case.

Ropewalk Spinning.—The sequence of operations in this ancient but still greatly used method of working is—(1) heckling the fibre ; (2) spinning the yarn ; (8) tarring the yarn (when neces- sary); (4) forming the strands ; (5) laying the strands into ropes.

Heckling differs in no way from the hand-heckling process used in the preparation of flax (see vol. xiv. p. 604-5). The heckle- board consists of a wooden plank, studded with strong tapered and sharp-pointed steel prongs. A series of such heckle-boards is used in the progressive heckling operation, the prongs diminishing in size and being closely set together. In drawing his "stricks" of fibre through these gradually diminishing heckles the workman not only combs out and disentangles the material, separating ' tow" from "'line," but he also splits up and makes finer the fibres upon which he operates. A little oil is sprinkled on the heckles in course of the process. The spinning is done in a covered dnd enclosed walk from 800 to 400 yards in length, at both ends of which the machines are placed. These (one variety of which is shown in fig, 1) consist of a

series of " whirls" d, d, generally twelve in number, set ina semicircular framee. The whirls are set in rapid rotation by a belt which passes over them from a wheel 6); or, what is now more usual, they are driven by the direct friction of the wheel itself pressed hard against them. The point of the prolonged axis of the whirl is bent into a hook, on which the ends of the fibre are hung for spinning. Each spinner carries around his waist a quan- tity of heckled fibre, and, fasten- ing an end on the whirl hook, he walks backward down the walk giving out even proportions of fibre all the while and regulating his pace so that the amount of

twist communicated to the yarn is uniform.

a ee

Fig. 1.

He draws the fibre from his waist with the left hand and lets it slip between the thumb and finger of the right, which, protected by a piece of woollen cloth, compresses and moulds into

ROPE

cylindrical form the yarn as it is spun. At intervals im the length of the walk there are posts and rails supplied with hooks into which the spinner throws the yarn to keep it off the ground, The spinners commonly work from both ends in sets of six, and as each set arrives at the end of the walk the yarns spun by them are unhooked from the whirls, tied together at the ends, and collected in large hooks along the side of the walk till a haul of about four hundred yarns is accumulated. When tarred rope is to be made the haul of yarn is at this stage passed through a kettle of tar heated to about 212° Fahr., from which it is drawn through a nipping apparatus which squeezes out superfluous tar, leaving the yarn a bright brown colour soaked with about one-fourth its weight of tar.

For "forming" strands the spun yarn is wound, each yarn separately, on bobbins and placed in a bobbin frame. From their bobbins the yarns are conducted through a concentric circle of holes in a steel register plate, behind which they come together and are pressed through a trumpet-

mouthed tube, which varies in diameter according to the diameter of the strand being formed ; and they are attached to the hooks of the forming machine or traveller. This machine travels down the ropewalk on rails moved by an endless rope passing over a grooved pulley, the hooks being at the same time set in rotation by gearing connected with the pulley. When the machine has reached the end of the walk and sufficient "twist" is given to the three strands, they are un- hooked and hung together on the centre hook of the machine. A grooved conical block of wood called a "top" is inserted between the strands, one of which lies in each of the three equidistant con- centric grooves. The strands at the fore-end are cut away and attached separately to three other hooks. The laying of the three strands into a hawser is now proceeded with by giving a reverse rotation to the central hook on which at the lower end they are hung. As twist is communicated to the strand between the top and the machine, the former is forced away towards the fore-end, and on the uniform motion outwards of the top depends the even and regular character of the lay. While the hook at the lower end is rotating in one direction to lay the strands, the three hooks holding the strands at the upper end are correspondingly revolved in the opposite direction to keep up the amount of twist in them which they would otherwise lose by the unwinding effect of the revolution of the laying hook. As the laying pro- ceeds, the forming machine is gradually dragged up the rails owing to the shortening of the strands caused by twisting them into a hawser. The formation of a cable from three hawsers is effected ina similar manner; but the great weight of material dealt with necessitates some modified operations to ensure uniformity of laying. In many rope-works distinct machinery is used for the strand lay- ing and rope-forming operations.

Machine or Factory Rope-Making.—The ropewalk system of manufacture has several inconveniences, among which, in towns, the most serious is the difficulty and expense of obtaining the long narrow strips of ground it requires. Hand-made ropes are also subject to certain irregularities of twist, and the yarns are less uniform than can be obtained from the operations of automatic machinery. Moreover in machine-spinning it is possible so to form the strands and lay the finished rope that any strain can be more equally distributed over all the fibres than can be done with hand-spinning and twisting. The essential feature

of the factory system consists in having yarns, strands, and ropes wound upon bobbins or drums in each successive stage, the material being drawn direct from the reel to be twisted and immediately wound up again. The length of rope made is only limited by the carrying capacity of the drum on which it is finally wound. —

The carliest practical attempt to introduce machine rope-spinning was made by Cartwright, the famous inventor of the power loom, — who, in 1792, obtained a patent for a machine called by him a "Cordelier." Cartwright's cordelier, as improved in 1805 by Captain Huddart, became the basis of modern laying and forming machines. Numerous modifications and improved combinations have been introduced, but the principle on which they are worked is essentially the same. A complete set of rope and twine making machinery includes heckling machines, spreading and drawing frames for line yarns, and carding engines and drawing frames for tow. These machines do not differ from the ordinary preparing machinery in flax manufactures, nor is there any essential difference in the spinning frames for the smaller counts of yarns. The heavier yarns for rope-making are spun upon a gill-spinning frame, such as Goode's automatic spinner, which is fitted with a self-feeding motion by which when the sliver is presented in large quantity the rate of motion and spinning is proportionally increased, when the sliver becomes attenuated the motion is correspondingly slow, and when the sliver is broken the spinner stops. Thus a yarn well laid and uniform in thickness is secured by automatic machinery. For spinning heckled yarn such as is used in the ropewalk a machine of simple construction, Ronald's patent (fig. 2), 1s DOW extensively used. The yarn in this machine has the advantage of being hand-spun, as the spinner draws out, compresses, and feeds the fibre from a supply round his or her waist just as on the rope-

walk. In this way the strength, evenness, and other good qualities of hand-spun yarn are secured.

Twine Manufacture.—The making of twines and small cords forms a distinct branch of the rope trade, the whole of the opera- tions being carried out on a series of machines in which a large number of twines

and eords are twisted and otherwise prepared simultaneously, while in rope-making the machines deal only in general with the material of one rope at a time. Common twines are twisted from prepared yarns on a twine-twisting frame, the same in principle as the doubling spindle frames of the ordinary textile trade. The bobbins of yarn are placed on pegs in the creel above the twisting spindles, from two to five bobbins being placed over each spindle according to the number of yarns which go to make up the twine. These yarns are passed round a pair of rollers, which pull them off the bobbins and deliver them evenly and with regularity to the flyer of the spindle, by which they are twisted and wound on the bobbin round which they rotate. By a recent improvement the required number of yarns, instead of being drawn from separate bobbins, are first wound together upon one bobbin in a "doubling winding frame."

flyers and spindles by which they are twisted and wound upon a large bobbin. Twines and cords at this stage are rough and bristly in appearance, and for finishing them they undergo a dressing, sizing, and polishing operation in a special polishing machine. From the bobbins they are unwound and passed through a trough of hot water, thence in parallel order over the surface of a set of rubbing rollers eovered with strong card cloth revolving at high speed in a eontrary direction to that in which the twine is travel- ling. The friction of the strong card wires shaves and smooths the twine, which then passes through the sizing trough contain- ing a hot paste, usually of potato farina. The superfluous paste is squeezed out by passing the twine between rollers, and it is next passed over rollers covered with rough coir, which presses in all fibres yet protruding from the twine, and finally it is dried by passing round a range of steam-heated cylinders, running parallel with which are coir-covered polishing rollers which smooth the twine while it is being dried. The finished twine is wound into balls of a definite weight on a balling machine.

hope-Spinning.—The machines required for making ropes from spun yarn eonsist of a forming flyer for forming the strands and a laying machine for twisting the strands into rope. A eabling machine for uniting three-strand hawsers into a cable is only a second, laying machine of larger and heavier dimensions ; but it is still a common practice to lay the

heavy cable on the ropewalk. The two operations of forming strands and laying rope may be per- formed on one combined machine, especially in dealing with light ropes composed of a few yarns; but as a rule separate machines are preferred for each operation. In a simple machine designed only for a single twisting operation there must be one fixed and one revolving section. If the section which contains the bobbins of yarn to be twisted is fixed, then the section in which is placed the bobbin for receiving the twisted product must be made to revolve. A machine in which the two operations of forming strands and laying rope are combined is of necessity eumbrous in proportion and complex in gearing. It must embrace three form-

ing flyers, to form simultaneously three strands which in another part of the machine are laid into one rope. The forming flyers re- volve in one direction to twist the strands, while they move in the opposite direction as a whole with the revolution of the laying section which gives the finishing twist to the rope, and such com- plex inter-revolutions within one frame are somewhat unwieldy. Finally, the machincs may be made with their axis of revolution either vertical or horizontal. With all these alternatives there is eonsiderable room for modification in the twisting arrangements. The ordinary form of strand-laying machine is a vertical flyer (fig. 3). It consists of two ormore upright frames or creels a, a, capable of holding ranged above each other a eertain number of bobbins, from which the yarn may be easily run off and carried upward to be formed into a strand. The ereels are fixed above and below ina stout eircular plate and framework 0b, to which motion of rotation is given by gearing ¢, placed on the under side. At the upper end of the revolving framework the yarns from the various bobbins are passed through a register plate d, a circular A of metal pierced with concentric oles corresponding in number with the bobbins which the crecls are fitted to hold. Beyond the register plate d the yarns come together in the trumpet- shaped mouth of the stranding tube. The stranding tube itself varies in gauge according to the diameter of the strand | \ being made, and in it the yarns are \ caught, rounded, compressed, twisted, and

\ BK

— i

Uf Ail

SMILLE A, Fig. 3.

smoothed, and, passing out, the new-formed strand is drawn over a pulley ¢ around "' drawing-off" gear f, and wound on a large bobbin or drum g. The speed at which the drawing-off gear revolves regu- lates the hardness or softness of twist given to the strand, and its rotation can be varied at pleasure by the use of change wheels.

In fig. 4 is illustrated a different form of stranding machine, of American origin. In this apparatus the bobbin creel is stationary

cm —_— MMACAAATT je TT i

Fig. 4.

and the yarns are drawn through the register plate and twisted in the stranding tube by the revolution of tho entire framework in whieh are placed the drawing-off gear and the large drum or spool on which the finished strand is wound. The advantages elaimed for this apparatus are facility of replacing bobbins as the yarns run out, and increased production owing to the rapid and uninter- rupted rotation of the flyer.

In the ordinary laying machine there are only three bobbins of strand to deal with ; but, from the fact that it is necessary to give a certain amount of "forehard" or twisting to the strands them- selves while they are being twisted together in an opposite direction for laying, the machine is not without complexity. The three bobbins revolve together within a strong iron frame, and that motion forms the strand into a rope. But each bobbin is at the same time revolving in a contrary direction on its own axis at the rate tempered to the amount of forehard it is desired to put on the rope in laying. Moreover, in order to deliver evenly and in equal quantities the heavy and intractable strands from each bobbin to the laying top, it is

necessary to have within each bobbin frame a drawing-off motion, and thus we have three dis-

846

tinct sets of motions in an ordinary laying machine. Fig. 5, in which only one bobbin frame is shown, will make plain one method of communicating these three motions,

which in this case are controlled by a

series of three shafts, placed one within

the other. The external shaft gives

motion to the entire apparatus, and its

revolution in one direction forms the

rope, which passcs away over a pulley.

The second shaft controls the spur wheel

a, which, geared into the spur-wheel a'

attached to tho bobbin frame, turns it

in a direction contrary to the motion of the whole. The internal shaft gears into

aspur-wheel 6, which again is centred

on a tubular shaft ¢ passing into the. bobbin frame, and by a pair of bevel

wheels controlling the rate of motion of the "drawing-off" pulley d, around

which the strand is once wound, and

from which it is conveyed by the tubu-

lar shaft to a small guide pulley on the

upper part of the revolving frame.

An American rope-laying machine is in use, similar in principle to the form- ing machine fig. 4, from which it differs only in having the strand bobbins mounted in flyers to give the strand the necessary amount of forehard in laying.

Wire Rope.—Ropes made of wire have only come into use in the course of the present century, but now their employ- ment is very extensive, and they play an important part in connexion with trac- tion railways, mines, collieries, hoists, steam ploughing, and many other modern developments of industry. In the year 1822a suspen- sion bridge of wire was erected at Geneva. The wire used in this case, however, was not twisted, but consisted of parallel bundles bound with wire and other coverings wrapped spirally around them to compact and keep the whole together. A bundle of small wires so treated presents the maximum of strain-resisting power combined with great rigidity, but it is obviously unsuited for most of the uses to which rope is put. Formed wire rope, consisting of strands laid in the manner of ordinary rope, began to be made about 1837; and now wire ropesof many kinds and dimensions are made from char- coal iron wire of fine quality, from mild steel, and from fine crucible steel. Copper wire and brass wire are also used for rope-making.

Wire ropes are stranded and laid or closed in machines which do not differ in essential features from the ordinary rope-making machinery. Both vertical and horizontal forms of revolving machines are used ; but, as the rope-closing machine has sometimes to carry as many as nine bobbins of strand, each with about two tons of wire, a vertical machine is best for enormous weights. An ingenious wire-rope machine has been invented by Mr Archibald Smith, in which the bobbins of wire are suspended, and only the framework around them and the wire drawn off are rotated for the forming and laying operations, and thus the necessity for rotat- ing these enormous weights at a high specd is obviated.

The number of wires in a wire-rope strand are few—generally from six to nine, and never more than cighteen. They are lightly twisted in the stranding machine, and they receive no forctwist in the rope-closing apparatus. The strands, on the other hand,

— =i l TANT ATATRTTOVTTTTT

=7>~ = Es

=

which go to form a rope are numerous—from six to nine and up- wards ; and they are always wound round a core, which is generally of hemp, but sometimes a wire core is used. A wire rope thus_ forms a series of gentle spirals arranged continuously round a core. A large proportion of the wire is galvanized, to protect it from rusting. The following table shows the relative circumference, weight, and strength of hemp, charcoal iron wire, and steel wire round ropes :—

Crucible Steel.

Charcoal Iron.

Hemp.

: i Breaking | Workin Circum- | Weight) cireum-| Weight | circum- J

Weight Strain Load. fer { per se, per ; ‘ per ~ iit Fathom. sas Fathom. seas Fathom.

Inches. Ibs. Inches. lbs. Inches. Ibs Tons. Cwt.

30 4 14 32 100

10 26 34 9 24 85

9 20 if 18 67 16 54 | 616 50

12 4 11 36

9 3 8 28

6 12 5 18

RORQUAL. See WHALE.

ROSA, Satvator (1615-1673), a renowned painter of the Neapolitan school, was born in Arenella, in the out- skirts of Naples, in 1615: the precise day is given as 20th June, and also as 21st July. His father, Vito Antonio de Rosa, a land surveyor, was bent upon making the youth a lawyer, and sent him to study in the convent of the Somaschi fathers. Here Salvator began showing a turn for art: he went in secret to his maternal uncle Paolo Greco to learn the practice of painting, but soon found that Greco had little pictorial lore to impart, so he trans- ferred himself to his own brother-in-law Francesco Fracan- zaro, a pupil of Ribera, and afterwards had some practice under Ribera himself. Above all he went to nature, fre- quenting the Neapolitan coast, and keeping his eyes open and his hand busy. At the age of seventeen he lost his father ; the widow was left unprovided for, with at least five children, and Salvator found himself immersed in a sea of troubles and perplexities, with nothing for the while to stem them except a buoyant and adventurous temperament. He obtained some instruction under the battle-painter Aniello Falcone, but chiefly painted in solitude, haunting romantic and desolate spots, beaches, mountains, caverns, verdure-clad recesses. Hence he became in process of time the initiator of romantic land- scape, with a special turn for scenes of strange or pictur- esque aspect—often turbulent and rugged, at times grand, and with suggestions of the sublime. He picked up scanty doles when he could get them, and his early landscapes sold for a few pence to petty dealers. The first person to discover that Rosa's work was not as trumpery as it was cheap was the painter Lanfranco, who bought some of the paintings, and advised the youth to go to Rome. Hither in 1635, at the age of twenty, Rosa betook himself; he studied with enthusiasm, but, catching fever, he returned to Naples and Falcone, and for a while painted nothing but battle-pieces, and these without exciting any atten- tion. This class of work was succeeded by the

landscape art peculiarly characteristic of him—wild scenes wildly peopled with shepherds, seamen, or especially soldiers. He then revisited Rome, and was housed by Cardinal Brancaccio; this prelate being made bishop of Viterbo, Rosa painted for the Chiesa della Morte a large and noticeable picture of the Incredulity of Thomas—the first work of sacred art which we find recorded from his hand. At Viterbo he made acquaintance with a mediocre poet named Abati, and was hence incited to try his own faculty in verse. He then returned to Naples. Here the mono- polizing triumvirate —Ribera, Caracciolo, and Corenzio— were still powerful. Rosa was as yet too obscure to sufier from their machinations ; but, having painted a picture of Tityus Torn by the Vulture, which went to Rome and there produced a great sensation, he found it politic to follow in the footsteps of his fame, and once more, in 1638, resought the papal city.

Rosa was a man of facile and versatile genius, and had by this time several strings to his bow. It is said that, still keeping painting steadily in view as his real objective, he resolved to secure attention first as a musician, poet, improvisatore, and actor—his mother-wit and broad Neapolitan dialect (which appears to have stuck to him through life) standing him powerfully in stead. In the carnival he masqued as Formica and Capitan Coviello, and bustled about Rome distributing satirical prescriptions for diseases of the body and more particularly of the mind. As Formica he inveighed against the farcical comedies acted in the Trastevere under the direction of the celebrated Bernini. Some of the actors, in one of their performances, retaliated by insulting Rosa, but the public was with him, and he now enjoyed every form of

success,—social prestige, abundant commissions, and any amount of money, which he was wont to throw about broadcast to the populace. In 1646 he returned to Naples, and is said to have taken an active part in the insurrection of Masaniello; certain it is that he sympathized with and admired the fisherman autocrat, for a passage in one of his satires proves this. His actual share in the insurrection is, however, dubious; it appears only in recent narratives, and the same is the case with the well- known story that at one time he herded with a band of brigands in the Abruzzi—

an incident which cannot be conveniently dove-tailed into any of the known dates of his career. As regards the popular revolt against Spanish tyranny, it is alleged that Rosa, along with other painters —Coppola, Porpora, Micco Spadaro, Dal Po, Masturzo, the two Vaccari, and Cadogna—all under the captaincy of Aniello Falcone, formed the Compagnia della Morte, whose mission it was to hunt up Spaniards in the streets and despatch them, not sparing even those who had sought some place of religious asylum. He painted a portrait of Masaniello—probably from reminiscence rather than from life : indeed it is said that he painted him several times over in less than life size. On the approach of Don John of Austria the blood-stained Compagnia dispersed, Rosa escaping or at any rate returning to Rome. Here he painted some important subjects, showing the uncommon bent of his mind as it passed from landscape into history ~~—Democritus amid Tombs, the Death of Socrates, Regulus in the Spiked Cask (these two are now in England), Justice Quitting the Earth, and the Wheel of Fortune. This last work, the tendency of which was bitingly sati~~ rical, raised a storm of ire and remonstrance. Rosa, endeavouring at conciliation, published a description of its meaning (probably softened down not a little from the real facts); none the less an order for his imprisonment was issued, but ultimately withheld at the instance of some powerful friends. It was about this time that Rosa wrote his satire named Babylon, under which name Rome was of course indicated.

Cardinal Giancarlo de' Medici now invited the painter to leave Rome—which had indeed become too hot to hold him—for Florence. Salvator gladly assented, and remained in the Tuscan capital for the better part of nine years, introducing there the new style of landscape; he had no pupils, but various imitators. Lorenzo Lippi the painter poet, Baldovini, and other beaux esprits shared with Rosa the hospitalities of the cardinal, and they formed an academy named I Percossi (the Stricken), indulging in a deal of ingenious jollity—Rosa being alike applauded as painter, poet, and musician. His chief intimate at this time was Lippi, whom he encouraged to proceed with the poem // Malmantile Racqustato. He was well acquainted also with Ugo and Giulio Maffei, and housed with them more than once in Volterra, where he wrote other four satires—Music, Poetry, Painting, and War. About the same time he painted his own

portrait, now in the Uffizi Gallery of Florence. Finally he reverted once more to Rome, and hardly left that city again. Much enmity still brooded there against him, taking the form more especially of an allegation that the satires which he zealously read and diffused in MS. were not his own pro- duction, but filched from some one else. Rosa indignantly repelled this charge, which remains indeed quite unsub- stantiated, although it is true that the satires deal so extensively and with such ready manipulation in classical names, allusions, and anecdotes that one is rather at a loss to fix upon the period of his busy career at which Rosa could possibly have imbued his mind with such a multitude of semi-erudite details. It may perhaps be legitimate to suppose that his literary friends in Florence

and Volterra had coached him up to a large extent—the satires, as compositions, remaining none the less strictly and fully his own. To confute his detractors he now wrote the last of the series, entitled Hnvy. Among the pictures of his closing years were the admired Battlepiece now in the Louvre, painted in the short space of forty days, full of long-drawn carnage, with ships burning in the offing ; Pythagoras and the Fishermen; the Oath of Catiline (Pitti Gallery); and the very celebrated Saul and the Witch of Endor (Louvre), which is perhaps his latest work. He undertook a series of satirical portraits, to be closed by one of himself, but while occupied with this pro- ject he was assailed by dropsy, which, after lasting fully half a year, brought his life to a close on 15th March 1673. In his last moments he married a Florentine named Lucrezia, who kept his house and had borne him two sons, one of them surviving him, and he died in a contrite frame of mind. He lies buried in the Chiesa degli Angeli, where a protrait of him has been set up. Salvator Rosa, after the hard struggles of his early youth, had always been a successful man, and he left a handsome fortune.

Rosa was indisputably a great leader in that modern tendency of fine art towards the romantic and picturesque which, developing in various directions and by diversified processes, has at last almost totally differentiated modern from olden art. He saw appearances with a new eye, and presented new images of them on his canvases, and deserves

therefore all the credit due to a vigorous innovator, even if we contest the absolute value of his product. He himself courted reputation for his historical works, laying comparatively little stress on his landscapes ; in portraits he was forcible. In ehiaroscuro he is simple and effective ; his design has energy and a certain grandeur, without any high type of form or any superior measure of correctness. His colour is too constantly of a sandy or yellowish-grey tone. Personally he was a man of high spirit, and he sold his pictures at large prices, more (it is said) to assert the honour of his art than from love of money; rather than sell them quod he destroyed them. In his later Florentine period he etched severa of his works, subjects of mythology, soldiering, &c. He was choleric, but kind and generous. Though a man of gaiety and pleasure, aud a jovial boon-companion, he does not appear to have been vicious in any serious degree. He was talkative, very sharp- tongued, and an unblushing encomiast of his own performances. Among his pictures not already mentioned we may name, in the London National Gallery, Mercury and the Dishonest Woodman, and two others; in Raynham Hall, Belisarius; in the Grosvenor Gallery, Diogenes ; in the Pitti Gallery, a grand portrait of a man in armour, and the Temptation of St Anthony, which contains his own portrait. This last subject appears also in St Petersburg, and in the Berlin Gallery.

The satires of Salvator Rosa deserve more attention than they have generally received. Though considerably spread abroad during his lifetime, they were not published until 1719. They are all in terza rima, written without much literary correctness, but remarkably spirited, pointed, and even brilliant. They are slashingly denunciatory, and from this point of view too monotonous in treatment. Rosa here appears as a very severe castigator of all ranks and conditions of men, not sparing the highest, and as a champion of the poor and down-trodden, and of moral virtue and Catholic faith. It seems odd that aman who took so free a part in the pleasures and diversions of life should be so ruthless to the ministers of these. The satire on A/usic exposes the insolence and profligacy of musicians, and the shame of courts and churches in encouraging them. Poetry dwells on the pedantry, imitativeness, adulation, affectation, and indecency of poets— also their poverty, and the neglect with which they were treated ; and there is a very vigorous

sortie against oppressive governors and aristocrats. 'Tasso's glory is upheld ; Dante is spoken of as obso- lete, and Ariosto as eorrupting. Painting inveighs against the pictorial treatment of squalid subjects, such as beggars (though Rosa must surely himself have been partly responsible for this misdirection of the art), against the ignorance and lewdness of painters, and their tricks of trade, and the gross indecorum of painting sprawling half-naked saints of both sexes. War (which contains the eulogy of Masaniello) derides the folly of hireling soldiers, who fight and perish while kings stay at home; the vile morals of kings and lords, heresy, and unbelief also come in for a flagellation. In Babylon Rosa represents himself as a fisherman, Tirreno, constantly unlucky in his net-hauls on the Euphrates ; he converses with a native of the country, Ergasto. Babylon (Rome) is very severely treated, and Naples inuch the same. Envy (the last of the satires, and generally accountcd the best, although without strong apparent reason) represents Rosa

dreaming that, as he is about to inscribe in all modesty his name upon the threshold of the temple of glory, the goddess or fiend of Envy obstructs him, and a long interchange of reciprocal objur- gations ensucs. Here occurs the highly-charged portrait of the chief Roman detractor of Salvator (we are not aware that he has ever been identified by name); and the painter protests that he would never condescend to do any of the lascivious work in paint- ing so shamefully in vogue.

As authorities for the life of Salvator Rosa, Passeri, Vite de Pittort, may be consulted, and Salvini, Satire e Vita di Salvator Rosa; also Baldinucci and Dominici. The Life by Lady Morgan is a romantic treatment, mingling tradition or mere fiction with fact. (W. M.

ROSAMOND, Farr. Rosamond Clifford, mistress of Henry IL, was the daughter of Sir Walter Clifford, a Berkshire knight (Dugdale, Jonasticon, iv. 366). She appears to have died in or about the year 1177, and was buried in the nunnery at Godstow. At the command of St Hugh, bishop of Lincoln, her body was removed from the church in which it had been buried, and was interred again outside the church. Such are all the facts that are known about Fair Rosamond. She is said to have been the

mother of William Longsword, and of Geoffrey, arch- bishop of York. But this is impossible, for both William and Geoffrey were born before 1155, and Rosamond was still a girl at the time of her death. The story of the labyrinth or maze built by Henry to conceal her from Queen Eleanor occurs first in Brompton (end of 12th century). The legend of her death at Queen Eleanor's hand is variously related, but does not appear to be trace- able beyond the first half of the 14th century. It can hardly be true in any form, for Eleanor was in confinement during the last fifteen years of Henry's reign.

ROSARIO, a river-port on the Parana, and the chief town of a department in the province of Santa Fé in the Argentine Republic, 186 miles by river from Buenos Ayres. In 1853 an insignificant village, with less than four thousand inhabitants, it now ranks in commercial import- ance as the second city in the republic, being the centre of almost the entire trade of the eleven provinces lying between the Parana and the Andes and the terminus of the great railways which since 1863 have gradually been pushed further north and west to Cordoba (1870), Tucuman (1876), Mendoza (1884), and San Juan (1885). The population had increased to 21,000 by 1870 and to 45,000 in 1883, while the imports in the latter year reached the value of £4,560,000 and the exports £3,780,000.

Rosario stands about 65 feet above the level of the river. It is laid out chess-board fashion ; and the streets are paved, and lighted with gas (introduced in 1869). The area, 145 acres in 1870, is now about 2000 acres. Brick is the principal building material, and the houses are mostly of one story. There are no suburbs, the city terminating abruptly on the great plain. The industrial establishments are extensive foundries, a large number of brick kilns, a jam and fruit-preserving factory, breweries, tanneries, soap-works, saw-mills, and flour-mills.

Rosario was founded in 1725 by Don Francisco Godoy as a settlement of "reduced" Calchaqui Indians, and the parish was established in 1731 and dedicated to Our Lady of the Rosary, whose colours, blue and white, were adopted in 1813 as those of the national flag. The prosperity of the town dates from 1854, when it was made a port of entry by General Urquiza. Jn

1867 and 1868 it suffered from a severe cholera plague. The proposal to make Rosario the capital of the republic instcad of Buenos Ayres has morc than once been nearly carried in the legislature.

ROSARY (Rosariwm, Germ. Rosenkranz) is defined in the Roman Breviary as a series of one hundred and fifty repetitions of the 'Ave Maria," with a 'Pater Noster" interpolated after each decade, the whole exercise being accompanied with pious meditation on the mysteries of redemption. This particular method of devotion, though said to have been not altogether unknown previously, first became extensively popular through St Dominic, who was admonished by the Virgin Mary to preach the rosary as

a special defence against heresy and vice. The Feast of the Rosary of the Blessed Virgin (Duplex Majus—first Sunday in October) was instituted by Clement XI. to commemorate the successes of the Christian arms against the Turks in 1716; it has reference also to the battle of Lepanto (Oct. 7, 1571). The word "rosary" or " chaplet " (capellina) is also employed to denote the string of beads of larger and smaller size by the use of which in repeating the rosary the faithful secure the due alternation of Ave Marias with Pater Nosters. In strict language the word chaplet is applied only to the "lesser" rosary, consisting of but fifty Aves and five Pater Nosters. Similar expe- dients to assist the memory in complex repetitions occur among Mohammedans and Buddhists: in the former case the so-called sobha has ninety-nine beads, and is used for the pious repetition of the ninety-nine names which express the attributes of God.

ROSAS, Juan Manvert DE, born at Buenos Ayres March 30, 1793, died in England March 14, 1877 (see ARGENTINE REPUBLIC, vol. ii. p. 491).

ROSCELLINUS (also written RoussELiIn and Rucz- LINUS), often called the founder of nominalism (see ScHOLASTICISM), was born in Armorica or Lower Brittany somewhere about the middle of the 11th century. Our information about his life is scanty, and, as he appears to have written nothing, we are dependent for a knowledge of his doctrine upon the statements of his opponents and the cursory statements of later writers. He studied at Soissons and Rheims, was afterwards attached to

the cathedral of Chartres, and became canon of Compiégne. It seems most probable that Roscellinus was not strictly the first to promulgate nominalistic doctrines; but in his exposition they received more definite expression, and, being applied to the dogma of the Trinity, attracted universal attention. The chief opponent of Roscellinus was Anselm of Canterbury, who defended at once the realistic doctrine of universals and the orthodox tradition of the church. It appears from the polemic of Anselm that "the heretics in dialectic" whom he combats denied the substantial reality of universals, asserting, for example, that colour has no real existence except as coloured body. There is no reason, however, to suppose that Roscellinus meant thereby to deny the real existence of attributive differences in things, though Anselm endeavours to involve him in that consequence. But we may conclude from the censure of his pupil Abelard that his reaction against realism had led Roscellinus into rashness of expression. In conformity with his general nominalistic position, Roscellinus taught that whatever exists as a real thing or substance exists as one self-identical whole, and is not susceptible of division into parts. This was the part of his teaching which created so much scandal when applied to the doctrine of the Trinity. Roscellinus maintained that it is merely a habit of speech which prevents our speaking of the three persons as three substances or three Gods. If it were otherwise, and the three persons were really one substance or thing (una res), we should be forced to admit that the Father and the Holy Spirit became incarnate along with the Son. Roscellinus seems to have put forward this doctrine in perfect good faith, and to have claimed for it at first the authority of Lanfranc and Anselm. In 1092, however, a council convoked by the archbishop of Rheims condemned his interpretation, and Roscellinus, who was in danger of being lynched by the orthodox populace, recanted hiserror. As his enforced penitence did not prove lasting, his opinions were con- demned by a second council (1094), and he himself fled to England. Forced by a fresh persecution to return to France at a later date, he taught at Tours and Loc-menach in Brittany (where he had Abelard asa pupil), and resided

lh

latterly as canon at Besancon. He is heard of as late as 1121, when he came forward to oppose Abelard's views on the Trinity.

ROSCOE, Winr1Am (1753-1831), historian and miscel- laneous writer, was born March 8, 1753, at Liverpool, where his father, who was a market gardener, kept the public house known as the Bowling Green at Mount Pleasant. Young Roscoe showed an early eagerness in the acquisition of knowledge, and at twelve he left school, havjng learned all that his schoolmaster could teach. He now assisted his father in the work of the garden, and gave his leisure hours to reading and study. 'This mode of life," he says, "gave health and vigour to my body, and amusement and instruction to my mind; and to this day I well remember the delicious sleep which succeeded my labours, from which I was again called at an early hour. If I were now asked whom I consider to be the happiest of the human race, I should answer, those who cultivate the earth by their own hands." At fifteen it was necessary to decide upona path in life. A month's trial of bookselling sufficed to disgust him, and in 1769 he was articled to a solicitor, on whose death he was transferred to the office of Peter Ellames, who had more than a local reputation. Although a diligent student of law, he did not bid farewell to the Muses, but continued to read the classics, and made that acquaintance with the language and literature of Italy which became the instrument of his distinction in after life. He wrote many verses: his Mount Pleasant was composed when he was sixteen, and this and similar compositions, though now forgotten, won the esteem of good critics. In 1774 he commenced business as an attorney, and as soon as his professional gains warranted he married (1781). His sympathies were attracted to the miseries of the victims of the African slave trade, and he had the courage to denounce it in his native town, where not a little of the wealth came from this source. He wrote the Wrongs of Africa (1787-88), and entered into a controversy with an apostate Roman Catholic priest, who undertook to prove the "'licitness of the slave trade" from the Bible. Roscoe was also a political pamphleteer, and like many other Liberals of the day hailed the promise of liberty in the French Revolution.

Meanwhile he had steadily pursued his Italian studies, and had made extensive collections relating to the great ruler of Florence. The result

was his Life of Lorenzo de' Medicr, called the Magnificent, which appeared in 1796, and at once placed him in the front rank of contemporary historians. The first edition was produced at Liverpool by Jolin M'Creery, an elegant printer who had settled there by Roscoe's encouragement. Soon after the ap- pearance of the book, Cadell & Davis bought the copy- right for £1200. The work has often been reprinted, and translations in French, German, and other languages show that its popularity was not confined to its author's native land. Perhaps the most gratifying testimony was that of Fabroni, who had intended to translate his own Latin life of Lorenzo, but abandoned the design and in- duced Gaetano Mecherini to undertake an Italian version of Roscoe instead. In 1796 Roscoe gave up practice as an attorney, and had some thought of going to the bay, but abandoned the idea after keeping a single term. Between 1793 and 1800 he gave much attention to agriculture, and was one of those who helped to reclaim Chat Moss, near Manchester. He also succeeded in re- storing to good order the affairs of a banking house in which his friend William Clark, then resident in Italy, was a partner. This task led to his introduction to the business, which eventually proved disastrous. His trans- lation of Tansillo's WVurse appeared in 1798, and went through several editions. It is dedicated in a sonnet to

his wife, who had practised the precepts of the Italian poet.

The Infe and Pontificate of Leo the Tenth appeared in 1805, and was a natural sequel to that by which he had made his reputation. For one half of the copyright he received £2000 from Cadell & Davis. The work, whilst it maintained its author's fame, did not, on the whole, meet with so favourable a reception as the Life of Lorenzo. It has been frequently reprinted, and the insertion of the Italian translation in the Jndex did not prevent its circula- tion even in the papal states. Roscoe was elected member of parhament for Liverpool in 1806, but the House of Commons was not a congenial place, and at the dissolution in the following year he declined to be again a candidate. The commercial troubles of 1816 brought into difficulties the banking house with which he was connected, and forced the sale of his collection of books and pictures. It was on this occasion that he wrote the fine Sonnet on Parting with his Books. After a five years' struggle to discharge the liabilities of the bank, the action of a

small number of creditors forced the partners into bankruptcy in 1820. For a time Roscoe was in danger of arrest, but ultimately he received an honourable discharge. On the dispersal of his library, the volumes most useful to him were secured by friends and placed in the Liverpool Athenzeum, where they still remain. The sum of £2500 was also invested for his benefit. The independent and sensitive nature of Roscoe made both these operations difficult. Having now resigned commercial pursuits entirely, he found a pleasant task in the arrangement of the great library at Holkham, the property of his friend Coke. In 1822 he issued an appendix of illustrations to his Lorenzo and also a Memoir of Richard Robert Jones of Aberdaron, a remarkable self-taught linguist. The year 1824 was memorable for the death of his wife and the publication of his edition of the works of Pope, which in- volved him in a controversy with Bowles. His versatility was shown by the appearance of a folio monograph on the Monandrian Plants, which was published in 1828. It appeared first in numbers, and the last part came out after his recovery from a paralytic attack. He died on the 30th June 1831.

Roscoe's character was a fine one. Under circumstances uncon- genial and discouraging he steadfastly maintained the ideal of the intellectual life. Sensitive and conscientious, he sacrificed his possessions to a punctilious sense of duty. He had the courage of unpopular opinions, and, whilst promoting every good object in his native town, did not hesitate to speak out where plain dealing, as in the matter of slavery, was required. Nor was his public life more meritorious than his private career, for hc was a sincere friend and exemplary in his domestic relations. Posterity is not likely to endorse the verdict of Horace Walpole, who thonght Roscoe " by far the best of our historians," but in spite of newer lights and of some changes of fashion in the world of lctters, his books on Lorenzo de' Medici and Leo X. remain important contributions to historical literature. a

1n addition to the writings already named, Roscoe wrote tracts on penal juris- prudence, and contributed to the Transactions of the Royal Society of Literature and of the Linnean Socicty. The first collected edition of his Poetical Works was published in 1857, and is sadly incomplete, omitting, with other verses known to be from his pen, the Butterfly's Ball, a fantasy,

which has charmed thousands of children since it appeared in 1820-21 in Poems for Youth, by a Family Cirele.

The Life by his son Henry Roscoe (2 vols., London, 1833) contains full details of Roscoe's career. Fuller bibliographical details are given in Allibone's Dictionary of English Literature. (W. E. A. A.)

ROSCOMMON, an inland county of Ireland, in the province of Connaught, is bounded N.E. by Leitrim, N.W. by Sligo, W. by Mayo, W. and §. by Galway, E. by Longford, and E. and 8. by Westmeath and King's County. The total area is 607,691 acres or nearly 950 square miles. The greater part of the county belongs to the great lime- stone plain, and is either flat or very slightly undulating. In the north-east, on the Leitrim border, the Braulieve Mountains, consisting of rugged and precipitous ridges of limestone gravel with flattened summits, attain an eleva- tion at their highest point of 1377 feet ; and in the north-

west the Curlew Mountains, of similar formation, between Roscommon and Sligo rise abruptly to a height of over 800 feet. In the east the Slievebawn range, formed of sand- stone, have a somewhat similar elevation. The Connaught coal field, which embraces the mountainous district round Lough Allen, touches on Roscommon, but the mineral is not much wrought within the limits of the county. Iron- stone is also found in the same district, but mining is no longer prosecuted. The Shannon with its expansions forms nearly the whole eastern boundary of the county, and on the west the Suck from Mayo forms for over 50 miles the boundary with Galway till it unites with the Shannon at Shannon Bridge. The other tributaries of the Shannon within the county are the Arigna, the Feorish, and the Boyle. The lakes formed by expansions of the Shannon on the borders of Roscommon are Loughs Allen, Boderg, Boffin, Forbes, and Ree. Of the numerous other lakes within the county the most important are Lough Key in the north, very picturesquely situated with finely wooded banks, and Lough Gara in the west.

Agriculture.—The subsoil is principally limestone, but there is some light sandy soil in the south. In the level parts the land when drained and properly cultivated is very fertile, especially in the district known as the plains of Boyle, which includes some of the ricliest grazing land in Ireland. Along the banks of the Suck and Shannon there is, however, a large extent of bog and marsh. Of the 130,426 acres in crop in 1884 only 61,055 acres were under tillage, while 69,371 acres were under meadow and clover. Corn crops occupied 26,931 acres, of which 26,246 were under oats ; and green crops occupied 33,448 acres, of which 26,178 were under potatoes and 5236 under turnips. Horses and mules in 1884 numbered 11,134, cattle 106,546 (of which 27,084 were milch cows), asses 8801, sheep 147,077, pigs 35,493, and goats 10,822. Accord- ing to the latest return the county was divided among 707 proprietors possessing 577,999 acres at an annual valuation of £294,698. The following possessed upwards of 20,000 acres :— Colonel King-Harman, 29,242 acres; H. S. P. Mahon, 26,980; Lord De Freyne, 25,437; and Thos. Wills-Sandford, 24,411.

Railways.—A branch of the Midland Great Western Railway traverses the north-eastern boundary of the county to Sligo, and another the south-western boundary to Westport, whilst a third crosses the southern corner to Galway.

Administration and Population.—The county is divided into 10 baronies, and contains 58 parishes, 7 parts of parishes, and 1995 townlands. The population in 1881 was 132,490—a decrease of nearly one-half since 1841, when it was 258,591. The number of persons who could read and write in 1881 was 66,858, the number who could read only was 18,373, while 47,259 were unable to read or write. The number who spoke Irish and English was 21,494, and 95 were able to speak Irish only. The towns containing over 1000 inhabitants are Roscommon, the county town (2117), Boyle (2994), and Castlerea (1229). Within the county are also included a part (3683) of Athlone, the remainder being in Westmeath, a part (947) of Ballinasloe, the larger part being in Galway, and a very small portion (100) of Carrick-on-Shannon, which is situated chiefly in Leitrim. LEcclesiastically the county belongs to the Elphin diocese, with small portions in those of Tuam, Clonfert, and Ardagh. It is in the

Connaught circuit. Assizes are held at Roscommon and quarter sessions at Athlone, Boyle, Castlerea, and Roscommon, There are nine petty sessions districts within the county and parts of fonrothers. Itisin the Dublin military district, and there are barrack stations at Athlone, Boyle, Castlerea, and Roscommon.

History.—The district was granted by Henry III. to Richard de Burgo, bunt remained almost wholly in the possession of the native septs. Until the time of Elizabeth Connaught was included in the two districts of Roscommon and Clare, and when these were sub- divided Roscommon was assigned its present limits. It takes its name (Irish Los-Comain, Comain's wood) from the county town, at which a monastery was founded by St Coman in the 6th century. All the old proprietors were dispossessed at the Cromwellian set- tlement, except the O'Conor family, now headed by the O'Conor Don, The most interesting antiquarian remains within the county are the ruins of Crogan, the ancient palace of the kings of Connaught. The principal ancient castles are the old stronghold of the M'Der- motts on Castle Island, Lough Key, the dismantled castle of the M'Donoughs at Ballinafad, the extensive fortress at Roscommon rebuilt by John D'Ufford, justiciary of Ireland in 1268, and the keep of Athlone, now used as barracks. The abbey of Boyle is in remarkably good preservation, and exhibits good specimens of the Norman arch. The other monastic remains within the county are of comparatively small importance.

ROS—ROS

ROSCOMMON, Wentwortrn Ditton, Eart or (1634— 1684), one of the pioneers of the so-called " classical " school in English poetry, owed his burial in Westminster Abbey more to his rank than to his achievements in poetry. But his Essay on Translated Verse (1684), though feeble in thought, has a certain distinction in the history of our literature as being the first definite enunciation of the principles of the " poetic diction" of our Augustan age. He is very refined and fastidious in his notions of dignified writing, and intimates, though with a genteel affectation of humility, that the "railing heroes" and "wounded gods" of Homer are too vulgar for a correct taste. He himself wrote in the finest of diction, but he

wrote little. On Fenton's remark that his imagination might have been more fertile if his judgment had been less severe Johnson makes the comment that his judgment might have been less severe if his imagination had been more fertile' The subjects of his half-dozen of original poems range from the death of a pet dog to the day of judgment, both treated in the same elevated and conventional style. Roscommon, a nephew of the great earl of Strafford, was born in Ireland, and educated partly under a tutor at his uncle's seat in Yorkshire, partly at Caen in Normandy, and partly at Rome He published a translation of Horace's Art of Poetry in 1680.

ROSE (Rosa). The rose has for all ages been the favourite flower, and as such it has a place in general literature that no other plant can rival. In most cases the rose of the poets and the rose of the botanist are one and the same in kind, but popular usage has attached the name rose to a variety of plants whose kinship to the true plant no botanist would for a moment admit. In this place we shall employ the word in its strict botanical significance, and in commenting on it treat it solely from the botanical point of view (see also HorticuLrurg, vol. xii. p. 260). The rose gives its name to the order Rosacez, of which it may be considered the type. The genus con- sists of species varying in number, according to the diverse opinions of botanists of opposite schools, from thirty to one hundred and eighty, or even two hundred and fifty, exclusive of the many hundreds of mere garden varieties. While the lowest estimate is doubtless too low, the highest is enormously too large, but in any case the wide dis- crepancies above alluded to illustrate very forcibly the extreme variability of the plants, their adaptibility to various conditions, and consequently their wide dispersion over the globe, the facility with which they are cultivated, and the readiness with which new varieties are continually being produced in gardens by the art of the hybridizer or the careful selection of the raiser. The species are natives of all parts of the northern hemisphere, but are scantily represented in the tropics unless at considerable elevations.

They are erect or climbing shrubs, never herbs or trees, gene- rally more or less copiously provided with thorns of various shapes and with glandular hairs, as in the sweet brier or in the moss rose of gardens. The

thorns serve the purpose of enabling the shrub to sustain itself amid other vegetation, and perhaps in some sort serve as a protection against marauders. The viscid hairs which are specially frequent on the flower stalks or in the neighbourhood of the flower serve to arrest the progress of undesirable visitants, while the perfume emitted by the glands in question may co-operate with the fragrance and colour of the flower to attract those insects whose presence is desirable. The leaves are invariably alternate, provided with stipules, and unequally pinnate, the stipules them: selves being in this case perhaps merely the lowest pair of ‘‘ pinn or leaflets less perfectly developed than the others. The flowers are solitary or in loose cymes (chuster-roses) produced on the ends of the shoots. The flower-stalk expands into a vase- or urn-shaped dilatation, called the receptacle or receptacular tube, which ulti- mately becomes fleshy and encloses in its cavity the numerous carpels or fruits, From the edge of the urn or “hip” proceed five sepals, often more or less compounded like the leaves and over- lapping in the bud. Within the sepals are five petals, generally

broad or roundish in outline, with a very short stalk or none at all, and of all hues except blue. The very numerous stamens originate from about the same spot as the sepals and petals; each has a slender filament and a small two-celled anther. The inner portion of the reccptacular tube whence the stamens spring is thick and fleshy, and is occasionally spoken of as the “disk”; but, as in this case it does not represent any separate organ, it is better to avoid the use of the term. The carpels are very numerous, ulti- mately hard in texture, covered with hairs, and each provided with a long style and button-like stigma. The carpels are concealed within the receptacular tube and only the stigmas as a rule pro- trude from its mouth. Each carpel contains one ovule without perisperm. The so-called fruit is merely the receptacular tube, which, as previously mentioned, becomes fleshy and brightly coloured as an attraction to birds, which devour the hips and thus secure the dispersion of the seed. The stamens are in whorls, and, according to Payer, they originate in pairs

one on each side of the base of each petal (parapetalous), so that there are ten in each row ; a sccond row of ten alternates with the first, a third with the second, and soon. By repeated radial and tangential branching a vast number of stamens are ultimately produced, and when these stamens assume a petaloid aspect we have as a consequence the double flowers which are so much admired. The carpels are much less subject to this petaloid change, and, as it denetally happens in the most double of roses that some few at least of the anthers are formed with pollen, the production of seed and the possibility of cross-breeding become intelligible. Under natural circumstances rose flowers do not secrete honey, the attraction for insects being provided, according to Miiller, by the colour and perfume and the abundance of pollen for food. The stigmas and anthers come to maturity at the same time, and thus, while cross-fertilization by insect agency is doubtless most common, close fertilization is not prevented.

In The Student's Flora Sir Joseph Hooker recognizes seven species of Rosa as British, Among them may be inentioned 2. spinosissima, the Scotch Rose, much less variable than the others, £. rubiginosa, the Sweet Brier, represented by several varieties, FR. canina, the Dog Rose, of which no fewer than twenty-nine varieties are described, and &. arvensis. Cultivated roses are frequently ""budded" or worked upon the stems of the brier or R. cantina, or upon young seedling plants of the same species. Other species also are used for stocks (see HorTIcULTURE). Roses have been grown for so many centuries and have been crossed and recrossed so often that it is difficult to refer the cultivated forms to their wild proto-types. The older roses doubtless originated from R. gallica, a native of central and southern Europe. J. centifolia (the Cabbage Rose), a native of the Caucasus, contributed its share. A cross between the two species named may have been the source whence originated the Bourbon Roses. The yellow-flowered Austrian and Persian Brier originated from R. cglantcria, a native of Austria. The Monthly or China Roses sprang from the Chinese &. ¢ndica, and these crossed with others of the &. centifolia or gallica type are the source of the hybrid perpetuals so commonly grown nowadays, because, in addition to their other attractions, their blooming season is relatively prolonged, and, moreover, is repeated in the autumn. Tea Roses and Noisettes, it is to be presumed, also acknowledge Rosa

indica as one of their progenitors. The Banksian Rose is a Chinese climbing specics, with small white or fawn-coloured flowers of great beauty; the Macartney Rose (KR. bracteata) is also of Chinese origin. Its nearly evergreen deep green leaves and large whitc flowers are very striking. The Japanese &. rugosa is also a remark- able species, notable for its bold rugose foliage, its large white or pink flowers, and its conspicuous globular fruit. R. damascene is cultivated in some parts of Roumelia for the purpose of making attar of roses (see O1LS and PERFUMERY). According to Hanbury, the flowers are gathered before sunrise and distilled the same day. The distilled liquid is allowed to remain fora day or two, by which time most of the oil will have risen to the surface, from which it is skimmed off. The percentage yielded is very small, not more than 0°04.

In India #. damasccna is grown largely near Ghazipur for the purpose of procuring attar of roses and rose water. The roses are distilled with double their weight of water. The attar is skimmed offin the Turkish method. Colonel Drury mentions that it takes 200,000 roses to yield the weight of arupee in attar. This quantity sells on the spot for 100 rupees.

Rose water is chicfly produced in Europe from the Provence or cabbage rose, R. centifolia, grown for the purpose at Mitcham and much more abundantly in the south of France. Conserve of roses and infusion of roses, two medicinal preparations retained for their agreeable qualities rather than for any special virtue, are prepared from the petals of Rosa gallica, one variety of which was formerly grown for the purpose near the town of Provins. Conserve of dog rose is made from the ripe hips of the dog rose, Rosa canina. Its only use is in the manufacture of pills.

The name Ros oF JERtcHo is popularly applied to a small Cruciferous wecd, Anastatica hicrochuutina, a native of the desert

regions of Egyyt, Arabia, Palestine, and Persia. In the dry season the dead branches are strongly incnrved, and thus serve to protect the still living seed in the pods. In the wet season the branches absorb the moisture to a large extent, unfold, resume the direction they had in life, and facilitate the dispersion of the seed under circumstances favourable to germination. The plant is frequently carried off as a curiosity,

inasmuch as immersion in a basin of water enables it to resume the original form and to create the impression that the plant "comes to life again," but the pro- cess is purely a physical one.

ROSSELLINI, Ippotrro (1800-1843), a native of Pisa and subsequently professor there of Oriental languages, in which Mezzofanti was his teacher, is best known as the associate of J. I'. CHAMPOLLION (q.v.), whose studies he shared and whom he accompanied in his Egyptian explorations (1828). On the death of Champollion the publication of the results of their expedition fell to Rosellini (Monwmenti dell' Egitto e della Nubia, Florence, 1832-1840, 10 vols. fol.).

ROSEMARY (Rosmarinus), a well-known Labiate plant, the only representative of the genus and a native of the Mediterranean region. It is a low shrub with linear

| leaves, dark green above, white beneath, and with margins

rolled back on to the under surface. The flowers are in small axillary clusters. Each has a two-lipped calyx, from which projects a bluish two-lipped corolla enclosing two stamens, the other two being deficient. The fruit con- sists of four smooth nutlets. Botanically the genus is near to Salvia, but it differs in the shorter connective to the anther. Rosemary was highly esteemed by the ancients for its aromatic fragrance and medicinal uses. In modern times it is valued mainly as a perfume, for which purpose the oil is obtained by distillation. It doubtless has slight stimulant properties, which may account for the general belief in the efficacy of the plant in promoting the growth of the hair. Rosemary plays no unimportant part in literature and folk-lore, being esteemed as an emblem of remembrance. 'There's rosemary, that's for remem- brance," says Ophelia. Its use in connexion with funeral ceremonies is not extinct in country places to this day, and it was formerly as much valued at wedding festivities. The name "ros marinus" or "ros maris" was probably given in allusion to its native habitat in the neighbour- hood of the sea.

ROSETTA (see Eoypt, vol. vii. p. 768). The cele- brated Rosetta Stone, a basalt stele containing a decree of Ptolemy V. Epiphanes in hieroglyphics, demotic, and Greek, which supplied the key for the decipherment of the

ancient monuments of Egypt, was found near Fort St Julien, 4 miles north of the town, in 1799, by Boussard, a French officer. It is now in the British Museum.

ROSEWOOD. Under this name several distinct kinds of ornamental timber are more or less known. That, however, so called in the United Kingdom is Brazilian rosewood, the palissandre of the French, the finest quali- ties of which, coming from the provinces of Rio de Janeiro and Bahia, are believed to be the produce principally of Dalbergia nigra, a Leguminous tree of large dimensions, called cabiuna and jacaranda by the Brazilians. The same name, jacaranda, is applied to several species of Macherium, also trees belonging to the natural order Legu- minose ; and there can be no doubt that a certain proper- tion of the rosewood of commerce is drawn from these sources. Formerly Brazilian rosewood was said, on the authority of the French botanist and traveller Guillemin, to be the produce of a species of Z'riptolomexa, but that genus has now been constituted a section of Dalberguu. Rosewood comes to the United Kingdom from Rio, Bahia, Jamaica, and Honduras. The heartwood attains large dimensions, but as it begins to decay before the tree arrives at maturity it is always faulty and hollow in the centre. On this account squared logs or planks of rose-

wood are never seen, the wood being imported in half round flitches 10 to 20 feet in length and from 5 to 12 inches in their thickest part. Owing to its irregular form the wood is sold by weight, and its value varies within wide limits according to the richness of colour. Rosewood has a deep ruddy brown colour, richly streaked and grained with black resinous layers. It takes a fine polish, but on account of its resinous nature it is some- what difficult to work. The wood is very much in demand both by cabinetmakers and pianoforte-makers, by whom it is used both solid and in veneer.

The wood of Dalbergia latifolia, a native of the East Indies used for ornamental furniture and carvings under the name of black wood, is frequently termed East Indian Rosewood, as is also the allied tree of Madras, Dalbergia sissoides. the French, the Portuguese Pao de Rosa,

and the German Rosenholz, is a Brazilian wood, the produce of Physoealymma floribunda, called in the United Kingdom tulip wood, and very highly esteemed on account of its beautiful rose colour and grain. African rosewood is from Pterocarpus erinaeeus, Dominican from Cordia Gerascanthus, and in New South Wales the wood of Synowm glanduloswim locally receives the same name.

ROSH, also Harosh (we, wen, te, "chief," "the chief"), stands by contraction for Rabbenu Asher, or Harab Rabbenu Asher (b. Yehiel), chief rabbi of all Castile. the 13th century and died at Toledo on the 25th of October 1327.1

Rosh enjoys a sixfold celebrity. (1) He was a descendant of a

long line of distinguished ancestors, among whom RABAN (q.v.) may be specially named. (2) He was "the distinguished of the

most distinguished disciples"? of the foremost rabbi of his age in

Germany, viz., Rabbenu Meir b. Barukh, better known under the name of R. Mcir of Rothenburg, whose tragic fate? even more than his learning and piety has endeared him to all Jews down to this very day. (3) He was the father of eight great Rabbinic scholars.4 (4) He was in his own right, after 1298 in Germany

j Schiller-Szinessy, Catal. Heb, MSS., &e., ib 385 66, note 3, and ii. p. hil note 3,

2 R. Meir of Rothenburg (see next note) had among his many disciples four

more distinguished than the rest :—(1) R: Mordekhai b. Hillel, who was slain with his wife and children at Nuremberg in 1310,—a fine Latin and general scholar and author of the Afordekhai, now an integral part of the Ripg (g.v.); (2) R. Mcir llakkohen, the author of the Haggahoth Matmoniyyoth, now an integral part of the Afishneh Torah of MAIMONIDES (q.v.); (8) R. Shimshon b.

Sadok, who wrote his master's Zashbes in prison, &c. (see Catal, Arab, MSS. of

Trin, Coll,, Cambr., App. p. 229) ; (4) Rosh,

3 The persecutions and massacres of the Jews in many parts of Germany in the 13th century made life so unendurable that the wealthier of them determined to quit the land of their birth and to emigrate to that of their ancient fathers. Rt. Meir of Rothenburg, being at the head of the emigration, had in the spring of 1286, with his whole family and several other families, already arrived in Lombardy. But one Kinppa, or Knippa, or Konpil, z.e., Koppel (=Jacobd), a con- verted Jew, recognized and betrayed him to his master, the bishop (? {4) of Basel, who had him arrested by Captain Meinert (Meinhard) of Gorz, who handed him over to the emperor, Rudolph of Hapsburg, who had only a dozen years before or so (to speak in the great Geran poet's language) " made an end,

- after the long destructive strife, to the emperorless, terrible time," was, though very rich in dignities, as yet comparatively poor in purse. He therefore, in the midsummer of the same year (to extort money from the Jews), caused the poor rabbi to be imprisoned in the tower of Ensisheim (in Alsace) and subsequently in other places, —e.g., Weissenburg, or Wasserburg (PVAY)). Considerable sums were offered by the Jews for their revered chief, but the negotiations were brought to nought by the command of the rabbi himself, who would not permit more than a trifling sum to be given for his release (RESHAL (q.v.), Fam shel Shelomoh, on Gittin, iv. 66). He died in prison in 1293. Rudolph's successors, Adolph of Nassau (1291-1298) and Albrecht of Austria (1298-1308), were so heartless as not to deliver up for nearly fourteen years the poor rabbi's corpse for burial, hoping to extort from the Jews even greater sums than they had origin- ally offered to Rudolph for the rabbi alive. In 1307, however, a rich and pious but childless man, Alexander Stisskind Wimpfen of Frankfort, offered an enor- mous sum on the condition that the congregation of Worms should bury the rabbi's corpse and should allow at his own dcath his body to rest near it (see Lewysohn, Sechzig Epitaphien… zu Worms, Frankfort-on-Main, 1855, 8vo, pp. 35-41), R. Meir of Rothenburg was not merely a fine Biblical and Rabbinic Scholar

but also a great Cabbalist, as R. David b, Yehudah Hasid testifies in his Maroth Ifassobeoth (Camb, Univ. MS. Add. 664, leaf 72a). Most of his literary productious are incorporated with works of his disciples and the disciples of these disciples, For instance, some of his massoretico-ethical explanations are to be found in R. Ya‘akob b. Asher’s so-called Ba‘al Hatturim, and part of his commentary on the Mishnah is to be found in R. Yomtob Lipmann Hecller’s Tosephoth Yomtob (see Misunan). Other Rabbinic work of his is to be found in Rosh, Mordekhai, &c. But there exists also independent literature of his as (1) Tosaphoth on Yoma (in the editions of the Babylonian Talmud); (2) Responsa, in three volumes (i., Cremona, 1557, 4to; ii., Prague, 1608, fol., which contains, however, matter by other authors also, as Rabbcnu Gershom, Rabbenu Tham, the Takkanoth Shum, Rules of Penitence, by R. El‘azar of Worms, é&c. ; iii., Lemberg, 1860, 4to); (3) Tashbes (sce last note); (4) Birekhoth Maharam (Riva di Trento, 1558, 8vo) ; (5) religious poems of considerable value, which are to be found in the Ashkenazic Mahzor,

aor these we will only mention two. (1) R. Yehudah, his successor in the rabbinate, is the author of the Zikhron Yehudah (Responsa, Berlin, 1846, 4to). (2) Rabbenu Ya‘akob, is the anthor of (a) the Turim, printed times innumerable (ed. princeps, Pieve di Sacco, 1475, fol.), a code of laws for a long time normative, but now almost superseded by the Shulhan ‘“Arukh of R. Yoseph Caro (see

The Bots de Rose of

He was born in Germany about the middle of

and after 1310 cverywhere, the greatest Talmudist.5 (5) He was the first rabbi of the Ashkenazic school who possessed powers of systematization. (6) He was a man not merely of the deepest piety but of the sternest and, if we may say so, the most savage 6 morality. Rosh, in despair at the state of affairs in Germany (some, however, say through his being involved in negotiations with the emperor for the delivery of the body of his master, which he could not bring to a successful issue),” left his home and travelled aimlessly about with his numerous family till he arrived in Provence. There he would have remained gladly had not the Maimonidcan controversy broken out. He went therefore to Castile,

where Toledo, jealous of Barcelona possessing such a great rabbi as R. Shelomoh Ibn Addereth was,® received him with open arms and great respect and elected him their rabbi. Under his eyes the celebrated astronomical work Yesod 'Olam, by R. Yishak b. Yoseph Yisracli, was composed. !°

Of the numerous works by Rosh, which have been printed times innumerable, we can only mention the most important :—

(1) Commentary on the Pentateuch (sce Madar Zekenim, Leghorn, 1840, folio). (2) Commentary on the Mishnic treatises of the orders Zera'im and Tohoroth (sce editions of the Babylonian Talmud). (8) Commentary on the whole Babylonian Talmud (¢bid.; the Aissur Piseke Harosh is by Rabbenu Ya'akob, the author's son, see note 4). (4) Yosephe Harosh on several treatises (see Schiller- Szinessy, Catalogue, ii. pp. 76-94). (5) Responsa (Constantinople, 1517, folio, and reprints). (6) Halakhoth Ketannoth (see Talmud editions), (7) Manhagah, Sevaah, &c, (Testament, &c., Venice, 1578, 16mo, and reprints), (S. M. §,-S.)

ROSICRUCIANS (Rosenxrevzer), a celebrated but entirely fabulous secret society. . In 1614 there appeared at Cassel an anonymous German work, Allgemeine und General-Reformation der ganzen Welt beneben der Fama Fraternitatis des léblichen Ordens des Rosenkreuzes, inviting the scholars of Europe to test the pretensions and join the ranks of a secret society, said to have been founded two hundred years before by a certain Christian Rosen- kreuz, who had acquired on a pilgrimage the hidden wisdom of the East. The society, according to this account, possessed many secret gifts of knowledge, of which goldmaking was one of the least. Its character was Christian and of Protestant type; its chief aim was the gratuitous healing of the sick. Though the origin of the fama and some subsequent tracts in supplement to it has never been made quite clear, it has generally been held that Arnold, in his Xtrchen- und Ketzer-Historte, renders it highly probable that the author was the talented theo- logian and polymath Johann Valentin Andree (1586- 1654), and that the book was originally a sort of elaborate joke composed in the stift at Tiibingen. But the marvel- lous elements in the account of Rosenkreuz and his society ouly served in that age to draw serious attention to the supposed

order. A large controversial literature sprang up, and, while some violently condemned the Rosicrucians as heretics in theology and medicine, others, and among them R. Frupp (g.v.), defended them and hoped great things from the enlarged activity which was proposed for them in the Fama and its companion tracts. Gradually it came to be generally seen that the whole thing was a mystification. The name and fable of the Rosicrucians have, however, from time to time been made use of by such impostors as Cagliostro,

ROSIN, or CotopHony, is the resinous constituent of the oleo-resin exuded by various species of pine, known in commerce as crude turpentine (see TURPENTINE). The separation of the oleo-resin into the essential oil-spirit of turpentine and common rosin is effected by distillation in large copper stills. The essential oil is carried off ata heat of between 212° and 316°, leaving fluid rosin, which is run off through a tap at the bottom of the still, purified by passing through a straining wadding, and received into

RusuAL, note 1); (6) the commentary on the Pentateuch mentioned in the fore- going note, a portion of which forms now an integral part of cyery Rabbinic Bible (it was first issued at Constantinople in 1514, 4to); and © the Késsur Piseke Harosh (Constantinople, 1515, fol.).

° .e., after the death of his master and that of R. Shelomoh b. Abraham Ibn Addereth (see Rasuza III.).

6 See Schiller-Szincessy, Cafal., ii. p. 78, note 2

7 See Ibn Yalya's Shalsheleth ifakkabbalah.

8 See Schiller-Szinessy, Catal., i. p. 188 seg. 5 Sec RasuBa III.

10 Printed in 1777, and from an ancicnt MS. again in 1848, both times at Berlin and in 4to, The library of Cambridge university possesses a most valuable MS. of it (Oo. 6. 65)

a vat, whence it is ladled into barrels ready for the market. Rosin varies in colour, according to the age of the tree whence the turpentine is drawn and the amount of heat applied in distillation, from an opaque almost pitchy black substance through grades of brown and yellow to an almost perfectly transparent colourless glassy mass. The commercial grades are numerous, ranging by letters from A, the darkest, to N, extra pale,—superior to which are W, "window glass," and WW, "water white" varieties, the latter having about three times the value of the common qualities. Rosin is a very brittle and friable resin, with a faint piny odour, softening at about 176° and melting completely at the temperature of boiling water. It dis- solves freely in ether, benzol, and chloroform, and to some extent in alcohol and fatty oils. When exposed to the action of hot dilute alcohol or when boiled with alkaline solutions it takes up a molecule of water and becomes converted into abietic acid, a change which also takes place slowly in the air when the resin is yet mixed with the essential oil as it flows from the trees. Rosin is thus regarded as an anhydride of abietic acid, and its use in yellow soaps is due to the fact that this acid itself com- bines with caustic alkalies to form a kind of soap. In addition to its extensive use in soap-making, rosin is largely employed in making inferior varnishes, sealing wax, and various cements. It is also used for preparing shoemaker's wax, for soldering metals, for pitching lager beer casks, for rosining the bows of musical instruments, and numerous minor purposes. In pharmacy it forms an ingredient in several plasters and ointments. On a large scale it is treated by destructive distillation for the production of an oily complex hydrocarbon, having a tarry odour and a whitish opalescent colour, which under the name of rosin oil is much used as a lubricant. Rosin oil also enters extensively into the common kinds of fatty oils as an adulterant.

The chief region of rosin production is the southern coast States of the American Union,—the ports of Wilmington, Charleston, Savannah, and Brunswick being the principal centres of the trade. American rosin is obtained from the turpentine of the swamp pine, Pinus australis, and of the loblolly pine, P. Tada. The main source of supply in Europe is the "landes" of the departments of Gironde and Landes in France, where the sea pine, P. maritima, is extensively cultivated. In thenorth of Europe rosin is obtained from the Scotch fir, P. sylvestris, and throughout

Huropean countries local supplies are obtained from other species of pine. The imports into the United Kingdom average about 1,250,000 ewts. annually, nearly the whole of which comes from America. In 1883 the amount imported was 1,377,368 cwts. (1,387,848 ewts. from the United States and 16,242 cwts. from France), the total estimated value of the imports being £400,938.

ROSMINI-SERBATI, Antonio (1797-1855), perhaps the most important figure in modern Italian philosophy, was born at Rovereto in the Italian Tyrol in 1797, and died in 1855. With every worldly advantage as the eldest son of a noble and wealthy family, from an early age he resolved to devote himself to God's service in the Catholic priest- hood. He became the founder of a new religious order, named the Institute of Charity, but known in Italy gene- rally as the Rosminians. The members may be priests or laymen. Allare prepared to do any works of charity— corporal, intellectual, or spiritual—to which they may be directed by divine providence, under obedience to their superior, to the bishops, and to the pope. They have branches in Italy, England, Ireland, France, and America. In London they are attached to the ancient church of St Etheldreda, Ely Place, Holborn, where the English transla- tions of Rosmini's works are edited.

Rosmini's Sistema Filosofico set forth the conception of a complete encyclopedia of the human knowable, synthet- ically conjoined, according to the order of ideas, in a perfectly harmonious whole. This conception Rosmini developed in more than forty volumes. Here a brief

notice of the characteristic principle of his philosophy must suffice.

Rosmini, contemplating the position of recent philosophy from Locke to Hegel, and having his eye directed to the ancient and fundamental problem of the origin, truth, and certainty of our ideas, wrote :—'"'If philosophy is to be restored to love and respect, I think it will be necessary, in part, to return to the teachings of the ancients, and in part to give those teachings the benefit of modern methods" (Theodicy, n. 148). Pursuing therefore the now generally approved method of the observation of facts, he most carefully examined and analysed the fact of human know- ledge, and obtained the following results:—(1) that the notion or

idea of being or existence in general enters into, and is presupposed by, all our acquired cognitions, so that, without it, they would be impossible ; (2) that this idea is essentially objective, inasmuch as what is seen in it is as distinct from and opposed to the mind that sees it as the light is from the eye that looks at it; (3) that it is essentially true, because " being" and " truth" are conver- tible terms, and because in the vision of it the mind cannot err, since error could only be committed by a judgment, and here there is no judgment, but a pure intuition affirming nothing and denying nothing; (4) that by the application of this essentially objective and true idea the human being intellectually perceives, first, the animal body individually conjoined with him, and then, on occasion of the sensations produced in him not by himself, the causes of those sensations, that is, from the action felt he per- ceives and affirms an agent, a being, and therefore a true thing, that acts on him, and he thus gets at the external world,—these are the true primitive judgments, contain- ing () the subsistence of the particular being (subject), and (0) its essence or species as determined by the quality of the action felt from it (predicate); (5) that reflexion, by separating the essence or species from the subsistence, obtains the full specific idea (universalization), and then from this, by leaving aside some of its elements, the abstract specific idea (abstraction); (6) that the mind, having reached this stage of development, can proceed to further and further abstracts, including the first principles of reasoning, the principles of the several sciences, complex ideas, groups of ideas, and so on without end; (7) finally, that the same most universal idea of being, this generator and formal element of all acquired cognitions, cannot itself be acquired, but must be innate in us, implanted by God in our nature. Being, as naturally shining to our mind, must therefore be what men call the light of reason. Hence the name Rosmini gives it of ideal being; and this he laid down as the one true fundamental principle of all philosophy, and the supreme criterion of truth and certainty. This he firmly believed to be the teaching of St Augustine, as well as of St Thomas, of whom he was an ardent admirer and defender. The above seven points could only be hinted at here. A complete and exhaustive treatment of them will be found in Rosmini's Vew Lssay on the Origin of Ideas, which has lately been rendered into English (London, 1883-84).

Rosmini's Sistema Filosofico has been translated into English by Davidson (Rosmini's Philosophical System, London, 1882). The volume contains also a biographical sketch of the author, with a complete catalogue of his writings, ninety-nine in all, on philo- sophical, religious, and miscellaneous subjects, and a copious list of works relating to his life and philosophy.

ROSS, a county in the north of Scotland. Cromarty (q.v.) consists of detached portions scattered throughout Ross, and for most administrative purposes the two coun- ties are regarded as one. Theunited area of their mainland portion lies between 57° 8' and 58° 6' N. lat., and o ai and 5° 52' W. long., and is bounded N. by the Dornoch Firth and Sutherlandshire, E. by the Moray Firth, 8. by

Inverness-shire, and W. by the Atlantic. It comprehends 2,003,065 acres, of which only about 220,280 acres are included in Cromarty. Its length from east to west is 67 miles, and from north to south 58 miles. The area of the islands is 437,221 acres. Ross includes the northern part of Lewis (see vol. xiv. p. 492), and other ten islands of the Hebrides, of which eight only were inhabited in 1881 (nine in 1871). The outline of Ross and Cromarty is very irregular, and both east and west coasts are much indented by bays and inland lochs, but except in the more inland recesses of these inlets the coast scenery is comparatively tame and uninteresting. The Moray Firth, an extension of Loch Beauly, separates the county from Nairn; the northern shore of the peninsula of the Black Isle is washed by Cromarty Firth, including the Bay of Nigg and extending from Dingwall to the headlands known as the Sutors of Cromarty ; and the extreme northern coast is bounded by the Dornoch Firth, an extension of the river Oykel, On the west coast the inlets are for the most part long, narrow, and irregular, the principal being Loch Broom, Little Loch Broom, Lochs Gruinard, Ewe, Torridon, Carron, and Alsh.

Surface and Geology.—In the north-west of Ross the Archean series of rocks, consisting of gneisses, schists, and other crystalline rocks, are well developed. Above them: rest uuconformably red conglomerates and sandstones of Cambrian age, rising into the picturesque mountains which

form such a striking feature of the seenery of western Ross. Farther east they are overlaid uucon- formably by the quartzites and limestones belonging to the Lower Silurian division. Over these, by enormous terrestrial displace- ment, the Archean and Cambrian rocks have been pushed, some- times for a horizontal distance of ten miles. New crystalline structures have been superinduced upon all the rocks affected by these movements, and the resulting crystalline schists may consist of what originally were Archean, Cambrian, or Silurian rocks of ordinary types. In their present condition, however, these eastern schists are certainly later thom the older part of the Silurian system. They cover by far the larger part of the two counties, Along the east coast they are uneonformably covered by the Old Red Sand- stone formation. Rocks of Jurassic (Oolitic) age fringe the eastern shores. In the Black Isle peninsula they include a thin coal scam. Near the Sutors of Cromarty they abound in ammonites, belemnites, and other shells, and in the remains of various woods and ferns. Ironstone, chiefly in the form of bog iron ore, is found in considerable quantities. Of the various mineral springs the best known is that of Strathpeffer, characterized chiefly by sul- phuretted hydrogen gas and various salts. The surface consists principally of lofty mountain groups, intersected by comparatively narrow valleys, oceupied partly by lakesand rivers ; but in the east there is a considerable extent of comparatively level ground.

Soil and Agricultwre.—The most fertile part of the counties is the eastern district, especially that included in the peninsulas of the Black Isle and Easter Ross, the soil varying from a light sandy gravel toa rich deep loam. In this district agriculture is quite as advanced as in any other part of Scotland. In the valleys and along the shores of the western coast there are many patches of good soil, but, partly on account of the excessive rainfall, tillage is uot prosecuted with the same enterprise as in the eastern districts, On the higher grounds there is a large extent of good pasturage for sheep. According to the agricultural statisties for 1885 the total area in Ross and Cromarty under crops, bare fallow, and grass was 134,399 aeres, of which 47,639 acres were under grain crops, 26,496 under green crops, 40,819 rotation grasses, 19,075 permanent pasture, and 370 fallow. The area under wheat has

Bn OSes

been gradually diminishing, being 9715 acres in 1857 and only 1185 in 1885, while that under barley on the other hand has in- creased from 6435 acres to 18,681, and that under oats from 16,256 to 81,685, The area under potatoes has also doubled, in the earlier year being only 4471, while in 1885 it was 8982. The area under turnips has increased from 12,228 to 16,557 and that under rota- tion grasses from 20,869 to 40,819. Horses, principally half-breeds between the old "garrons" and Clydesdales, numbered 7365 in 1885, of which 5874 were uscd solely for purposes of agriculture ; eattle numbered 42,976, of which 17,811 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf, and 17,561 under two years old. They are principally the native Highland breed or crosses. Sheep in 1885 numbered 309, 590, of which 213,522 were one year oldand above. Besides black-faced, crosses with Leicesters and crosses between Leicesters and Cheviots are notuncommon. There is still in Ross and Cromarty a con- siderable extent of native woodland, the trees being principally firs, oaks, ash, and alder. The area under woods in 1881 was 43,201 aeres, The red aud roc deer have free scope on the extensive

-Inountain regions, the area under deer forests being 719,305 aeres,

Toxes, badgers, wild cats, alpine hares, and other wild animals abound. The usual varieties of winged game are plentiful. The golden eagle and osprey are both common, as well as many other birds of prey. Waterfowl of all kinds abound in the extensive sea lochs, and the rivers and inland lochs are specially abundant in trout and salmon. The pearl mussel is found in the bed of the river Conan, According to the latest Landowners' Return, 2043 proprietors possessed 1,971,682 acres in the county of Ross, of a gross annual value of £269,342. The owners of less than one acre numbered 1719. The following owned more than 100,000 acres :—Sir James Matheson, 406,070; Alex. Matheson, 220,433 ; Sir Kenneth S. Mackenzie, 164,680; the duchess of Sutherland, 149,879 ; and Sir C. W. A. Ross, 110,445. For Cromarty separately the Return gives 231 owners, possessing 18,206 aeres, of £11,966 annual value. Manufactures and Trade.—With the exception of distillation, there are no important manufactures within le counties, although home-made woollen cloth is

woven in the country districts. The counties depend chiefly on their agriculture and their fishing, which within recent years has greatly developed through improved means of communication with the south. Stornoway and the west coast have regular communication by steamers with Glasgow, and on the east coast a steamer leaves Cromarty and Invergordon for Aberdeen and Leith once a week. Fish, cattle, and sheep are the principal exports. The Highland Railway skirts the Firth of Cromarty by Dingwall and Tain to Bonar Bridge, a branch passing from Ding- wall south-westwards to Strome Ferry, whence there is communi- cation with Skye by steamer. Salmon fishing is extensively carried on in the bays and inouths of the rivers, and the deep-sea fishings for herring, and for cod and other large fish, are amoug the most important in Scotland. They include the districts of Cromarty on the east coast, of Stornoway in Lewis, of Loch Broom and part of Loch Carron on the west coast, the remainder of the Loch Carron district being in Inverness-shire. The Broad Bay of Stornoway is famed for its founders. Administration and Population.—The two counties of Ross and Cromarty form one sheriffdom, and return one member to parlia- ment. The burghs of Cromarty, Dingwall, Fortrose, and Tain are included in the Wick district of burghs, which returns oue member. From 56,318 in 1801 the population of Ross and Cromarty had increased in 1841 to 78,685, and in 1871 to 80,955 ; in 1881 it was 78,547 (37,027 males and 41,520 females), of whom 56,086 were Gaelic-speaking, It is the fourth most thinly populated county in Scotland, the nuniber of persons to the square mile being 25. The island population amounted to 23,960, of whom 23,149 were in Lewis. The town and village population amounted to 28,665, and the rural to 49,882. The police burghs are Cromarty (population 1352), Dingwall, which is also a royal burgh (1921), Fortrose (869), Invergordon (1092), Stornoway (2627), and Tain (1742). There are thirty-one entire parishes, and parts of two others. fTistory and Antiquitics.—Ross proper, possessed by the Rosses, originally only included the district adjoining the Dornoch and Moray Firths. The first who bore the title of earl of Ross was Malcolm Macbeth, upon whom it was bestowed by Malcolm IY. After his rebellion in 1179 there was a period of chronic insur- rection. By Alexander II. the carldom was bestowed on Fearehar Mac an t-Sagairt (the son of the priest), who being abbot of Apple- cross had already possession of the western district. William, fourth earl, was present with

his clan at the battle of Bannockburn. The earldom reverted to the crown in 1424, and James I. restored it to the heiress of the line, the mother of Alexander, Lord of the Isles (see HEBRIDES, vol. xi. 607). The lands of the earldom were in 1481 conferred on Prince James, second son of James TIL, who in 1478 had been created duke of Ross. Ross was constituted a county in 1661, but the sheriffdom of Cromarty is of more ancient date. At Invercarron Montrose was totally defeated by Colonel Strachan, 27th April 1650; and at Glenshiel, 11th June 1718, General Wight- man defeated the Jacobites. So-called Druidical circles and eaims are very common. Among ancient sculptured stones may be men-

tioned the three according to tradition marking the burial-places of the three sons of a Danishking. The largest, at Shandwick, Clach- a-charridh, or the "Stone of Lamentation," was blown down in a storm in 1847 and broken into three pieces ; a smaller one at Nigg churchyard, struck down by the fall of the belfry in 1725, has been re-erected and fenced round ; and the third, which formerly stood at Cadboll of Hilltown has been removed for preservation to the grounds of Invergordon Castle. An ancient vitrified fort, 420 feet by 120, erowns the hill of Knockfarre] in Fodderty parish. Among old castles are those of Lochslin, in the parish of Fearn, said to date from the 13th century, which, though very ruinous, still pos- sesses two square towers in good preservation; Balone, in the pavish of Tarbat, said to have been built by the earls of Ross; and the remains of Dingwall Castle, the earls of Ross's original seat. Of the abbey of Fearn, transferred from Edderton in 1388, and interesting as having had for its tenth abbot the Reformer Patrick Hamilton, the abbey chureh, much altered, is still used as the parish church. There are a very large number of fine modern mansions.

ROSS, Sir James Cxiark (1800-1862), arctic voyager, was born in London 15th April 1800. He entered the navy in 1812 under his uncle Sir John Ross (see below), whom he accompanied in his first voyage in search of a north-west passage. From 1819 to 1825, and again in 1827, he was engaged with Captain Parry in his voyages. He served under his uncle from 1829 to 1833, discovering the position of the north magnetic pole on

Ist June 1831 (see PoLAR Recions, vol. xix. p. 320). He commanded the expedition in the "Erebus" and "Terror" to the Antarctic seas from 1839 to 1843, and after his return he received in 1844 the honour of knighthood. In 1847 he published 4 Narrative of a Voyage in the Antarctic Regions, 2 vols. His last expedition was in 1848 in the ' Enter- prise" to Baffin's Bay in search of Sir John Franklin. Ife died at Aylesbury, 3d April 1862.

ROSS, Sir Joun (1777-1856), arctic voyager, was the fourth son of the Rev. Andrew Ross, minister of Inch, Wigtonshire, where he was born in 1777. He entered the navy in 1786. In 1818 he sailed in command of an Arctic expedition (see Potar Recions, vol. xix. p. 319), an account of which he published, under the title Voyage of Discovery for the Purpose of Exploring Baffin's Bay, in 1819. In 1829, through the munificence of his friend Sir Felix Booth, he was able to undertake a second expedition (see vol. xix. p. 320). Shortly after his return in 1833 he was knighted, made C.B., and elected a member of many learned societies. In accordance with a promise made to Sir John Franklin, he undertook a third expedition in 1850 and remained one winter on the ice, but accomplished nothing. His own account of the causes of his failure is given in a pamphlet published in 1855. He died 31st August 1856.

Ross also wrote A Treatise on Navigation by Steam, 1828; Me- motrs and Correspondence of Admiral Lord De Sawmarez, 1838; Arctie Expedition, 1850; and several other minor works.

ROSSANO, a city of Italy, in the province of Cosenza, most picturesquely situated on a precipitous spur of the great mountain mass of Sila (geologically the oldest part of Italy) overlooking the Gulf of Taranto. The railway station, 93 miles from Taranto, is about an hour from the town. Rossano is the seat of an archbishop and the centre of a circondario; marble and alabaster quarries are worked in the neighbourhood; and the inhabitants num- bered 14,688 in 1881 (17,979 in the commune). In the cathedral is preserved the Codex Rossanensis, an uncial MS. of the Gospels of Matthew and Mark (6th century) in silver characters on purple vellum, with twelve minia- tures, of great interest in the history of Byzantine art.

Mentioned in the Itineraries, Rossano (Roscianwnr) anpears under the Latin empire as one of the important fortresses of Calabria. Totila took it in 548. The people showed great attach- ment to the Byzantine empire, and the Greek rite was maintained in the cathedral till the time of the Angevins. In the 14th eentury Rossano was made a principality for the great family of De Baux. Passing to the Sforza, and thus to Sigismund of Poland, it was ultimately in 1558 united to the erown of Naples by Philip II. of Spain in virtue of a doubtful will by Bona of Poland in

favour of Giovanni Lorenzo Pappacoda, Under Isabella of Aragon and Bona of Poland the town had been a centre of literary eulture ; but under the Spaniards it rapidly declined eveu in the matter of population (2256 households in 1561, 1177 in 1669). The crown sold the lordship in 1612 to the Aldobrandini, and from them it passed to the Borghesi and the Caraffa. LRossano is best known as the birthplace of St Nilus the younger, whose life is the most valuable source of information extant in regard to the state of matters in southern Italy in the 10th century. Pope John VII. (705-707) was also a native of the town. See Lenormant, La Grande-Gréce, vol. i.

ROSSE, Wittram Parsons, THIRD Earn or (1800- 1867), the distinguished constructor of reflecting telescopes, was born at York on June 17, 1800, a son of the second earl, who as Sir Lawrence Parsons, Bart., had been a pro- minent member of the Irish Parliament. Until his father's death (1841) he was known as Lord Oxmantown. He was M.P. for King's County from 1821 to 1834, Irish represen- tative peer from 1845, president of the Royal Society from 1848 to 1854, and chancellor of the university of Dublin from 1862. From 1827 he devoted himself to the improvement of reflecting telescopes ; in 1839 he mounted a telescope of 3 feet aperture at his seat, Birr Castle, Parsonstown ; and in 1845 his celebrated 6-foot reflector was finished. Owing to the famine and the disturbed state of the country, which demanded his attention as a large landowner and lieutenant of King's County, the instrument remained unused for nearly three years, but since 1848 it has been in constant use, chiefly for observa- tions of nebule, for which it was particularly suited on

account of its immense optical power. Lord Rosse died on October 31, 1867.

The first coustructor of reflecting telescopes on a large scale, . William Herschel, never published auything about his methods of casting aud polishing specula, and he does not appear to have been very suecessful beyond specula of 18 inclies diameter, his 4- foot speculum ("the 40-foot telescope") having been very little used by him (about this question see an interesting discussion between Sir J, Herschel and Robinson in The Athcnwwm, Nos. 881-86, 1848, which deserves to be rescued from oblivion). Lord Rosse had therefore no help whatever in working his way from a small beginning to the brilliant results he achieved. His speculum metal is composed of four equivalents of eopper and one of tin, a very brilliant alloy, which resists tarnish better than any other compound tried. Chiefly owing to the extreine brittleness of this material, Lord Rosse's first larger specula were composed of a number of thin plates of speculum metal (sixteen for a 38-foot mirror) soldered on the back of a strong but light framework made of a peculiar kind of brass (2°75 of eopper to 1 of zinc), which has the same expansion as his speculum metal. In Brewster's Edinburgh Journal of Science for 1828 he described his machine for polishing the speculum, which in all essential points remained unaltered afterwards. It imitates the motions made in polishing a speculum by hand by giving both a rectilinear and a lateral motion to the polisher, while the speculum revolves slowly; by shifting two eccentric pins the eourse of the polisher ean be varied at will from a straight line to an ellipse of very small eccentricity, and a true parabolic figure ean thus be obtained. The speculum lies face upwards in a shallow bath of water (to preserve a uniform tempera- ture), and the polisher fits loosely in a ring, so that the rotation of the speculum makes it revolve also, but more slowly. Both the grinding and polishing tools are grooved, to obtain a uniform dis- tribution of the emery used in the grinding process and of the rouge employed in polishing, as also to provide for the lateral expansion of the pitch with which the polisher is coated. In September 18389 a 3-foot speculum was finished and mounted on an altazimuth stand similar to Herschel's; but, though the definition of the images was good (except that the diffraction at the joints of the speculum caused minute rays in the case of a very bright star), and its peculiar skeleton form allowed the

speculuin to follow atmospheric changes of temperature very quickly, Lord Rosse decided to cast a solid 8-foot speculum. Hitherto it had been felt as a great difficulty in casting specula that the solidification did not begin at one surface and proceed gradually to the other, the common sand mould allowing the edges to coo] first, so that the central parts were subject to great straining when their time of cooling came, and in large castings this generally caused cracking. By forming the bottom of the mould of hoop iron placed on edge and closely packed, and the sides of saud, while the top was left open, Lord Rosse overcame this difficulty, and the hoop iron had the further advantage of allowing the gas developed during the cooling to escape, thus preventing the speculum from being full of

pores and cavities. This happy invention secured the success of the casting of a solid 3-foot speculum in 1840, and encouraged Lord Rosse to make a speculum of 6 feet diameter, which he also succeeded in doing in 1842. In the beginning of 1845 this great reflector (which up to the present time has remained without a rival) was mounted and ready for work. The instrument has a focal length of 54 fect and the tube is about 7 feet in diameter ; owing to these large dimensions it cannot be pointed to every part of the heavens, but can only be moved a short distance from the meridian and very little to the north of the zenith; these restric- tions have, however, hardly been felt, as there is almost at any moment a sufficient number of objects within its reach. From 1848 to 1878 it was with but few interruptions employed for observations of nebule; and many previously unknown features in these objects were revealed by it, especially the remarkable spiral configuration prevailing in many of the brighter nebula. A special study was made of the nebula of Orion, and the resulting large drawing gives an extremely good representation of this complicated object. Since 1845 others have followed in Lord Rosse's footsteps and several 3- and 4-foot mirrors have been made, while the develop- nient of refracting telescopes has been so rapid that, whereas twenty- five years ago there were no object glasses larger than 15 inches in existence, a 30-inch glass has now actually been completed. But, though the refractors surpass the large reflectors in general con-

venience of use and are very much better adapted to work of pre- cision (micrometer measures), Lord Rosse's great reflector is still unapproached in light-grasping power, and remains a noble monument of 'its maker, who (as beautifully expressed on a memorial tablet in the parish church of Birr) "revealed to mankind by the unrivalled creation of his genius a wider vision of the glory of God."

Lord Rosse gave a detailed account of the experiments which step by step had led to the construetion of the 8-foot speeulum in the Philosophical Transactions for 1840. In the same publication for 1844 and 1850 he communicated short descriptions and drawings of some of the more interesting nebule, and in the volume for 1861 he published a paper On the Construction of Specula of 6 feet aperture, and a Selection from the Observations of Nebule made with them, with numerous engravings. The accounts of the observations given in these papers were, however, of a very fragmentary character; but in 1879-80 a eomplete account of them was published by the present earl (" Observations of nebulee and clusters of stars made with the 6-foot and 3-foot reflectors at Birr Castle from 1848 to 1878")in the Scient. Trans. R. Dublin Soe., vol. ii. The drawing of the nebula of Orion was published in the Phi. Trans. for 1868.

ROSSELLLI, Cosimo (1439-c. 1507), a Florentine painter, was born in 1439. At the age of fourteen he became a pupil of Neri di Bicci, and in 1460 he worked as assistant to his cousin Bernardo di Stefano Rosselli. The first work of Cosimo mentioned by Vasari still existsin 8, Ambrogio, in Florence, over the third altar on the left. It is an Assumption of the Virgin, a youthful and feeble work of but little merit. In the same church, on the wall of one of the chapels, is a fresco by Cosimo which Vasari praises highly, especially for a portrait of the young scholar Pico of Mirandola, The scene, a procession bearing a miracle- working chalice, is painted with much vigour and less mannerism than most of this artist's work. A picture painted by Rosselli for the church of the Annunziata, with figures of SS. Barbara, Matthew, and the Baptist, is now in the Academy of Florence. Rosselli also spent some time in Lucca, where he painted several altar- pieces for various churches, none of any great importance. A picture attributed to him, taken from the church of S. Girolamo at Fiesole, is now in the National Gallery of London. It is a large retable,

with, in the centre, St Jerome in the wilderness kneeling before a crucifix, and at the sides standing figures of St Damasus and St Eusebius, St Paolo and St Eustachia; below is a predella with small subjects. Though dry and hard in treatment, the figures are designed with much dignity. The Berlin Gallery possesses three pictures by Rosselli, the Virgin in Glory, the Entombment of Christ, and the Massacre of the Innocents. In 1480 Rosselli, together with the chief painters of Florence, was invited by Sixtus IV. to Rome to assist in the painting of the frescos in the Sistine Chapel. Three of these were executed by him—the Destruction of Pharaoh's Army in the Red Sea, Christ Preaching by the Lake of Tiberias, and the Last Supper. The last of these is still well preserved, but is a very mediocre work. Vasari's story about the pope admiring his paintings more than those of his abler brother painters

has probably but little foundation. frescos were partly painted by his assistant Piero di Cosimo, who was so called after Cosimo Rosselli. His chief pupil was Fra Bartolommeo, Rosselli died in 1484, but this is evidently a mistake, as his will still exists dated November 25, 1506 (see Gaye,

Beschreibung der Stadt Rom, ii. Forschwngen, ii. 265.

ROS—ROS

Rosselli's Sistine According to Vasari,

Car. ined., ii. 457, note). For an account of Rosselli's Sistine frescos, see Platner and Bunsen, pt. i.; and Rumohr, Jtalien.

ROSSELLINO, Awnronto (1427-c. 1479), one of the

most skilful of Florentine sculptors, was the son of Matteo di Domenico Gamberelli, and had four brothers, who all practised some branch of the fine arts,

Almost nothing is known about the life of Antonio, but many of his works

Marble Relief by Antonio Rossellino.

still exist, and are of the highest beauty, full of strong religious sentiment, and executed with the utmost delicacy of touch and technical skill. The style of Antonio and his brother (see below) is a development of that of Donatello and Ghiberti ; it possesses all the refinement and soft sweetness of the earlier masters, but is not equal to them either in vigour or originality. Antonio's chief work, still in perfect preservation, is the very lovely tomb of a young cardinal prince of Portugal, who died in 1459, aged only twenty-six. It occupies one side of a small chapel on the north of the nave of San Miniato.! The recumbent effigy of the cardinal is very remarkable for the grace of its pose and the beauty of the portrait face. It rests on a handsome sarcophagus, and over it, under the arch which frames the whole, is a beautiful relief of the Madonna between two flying angels. The tomb was begun in 1461 and finished in 1466; Antonio received four hundred and twenty-five gold florins for it. A repro- duction of this tomb with slight alterations, and of course a different effigy, was made by Antonio for the wife of Antonio Piccolomini, duke of Amalfi, in the church of 8. Maria del Monte at Naples, where it still exists. For the same church he also executed some delicate reliefs, which perhaps err in being too pictorial in style, especially in the treatment of the backgrounds. A fine medallion relief by him is preserved in the Bargello at Florence (see fig.), and the original terra cotta model for this is in the pos- session of Mr Drury Fortnum; in some small matters of

- *Tlustrated by Gonnelli, Afon. Sepol. della Toscana, Florence, 1819, plate xxiii.*

|

detail the original terra cotta is superior to the finished marble, especially in the treatment of the infant Christ.

ROSSELLINO, Bernarpo (1409-1464), was no less able asa sculptor than his younger brother (see above), and was also a very distinguished architect. His finest piece of sculpture is the tomb, in the Florentine Santa Croce, of Leonardo Bruni of Arezzo, the historian of Florence ; the recumbent effigy is a work of great merit. The inner cathedral pulpit at

Prato, circular in form ona tall slender stem, was partly the work of Mino da Fiesole and partly by Bernardo Rossellino. The latter executed the very minute reliefs of St Stephen and the Assumption of the Virgin. For his part in the work he received sixty-six gold florins. The South Kensington Museum possesses a relief by Bernardo, signed and dated (1456). It is a fine por- trait of the physician Giovannida§. Miniato.! Bernardo's works as an architect were very numerous and important, and he was also very skilful as a military engineer. He restored the church of §. Francis at Assisi, and designed several fine buildings at Civita Vecchia, Orvieto, and elsewhere. He also built fortresses and city walls at Spoleto, Orvieto, and Civita Castellana. He was largely employed by Nicholas V. and Pius II. for restorations in nearly all the great basilicas of Rome, but at present little trace of his work remains, owing to the sweeping altera- tions which were made during the tasteless 17th and 18th centuries. Between the years 1461 and 1464 (the date of his death) he occupied the important post of capo-maestro to the Florentine duomo. A number of buildings at Pienza, executed for Pius IL, are attributed to him; the Vatican registers mention the architect of these as M° Bernardo di Fiorenza, but this indication is too slight to make it certain that the elder Rossellino is referred to (see Vasari, ed. Milanesi, iii. 93 sq.).

ROSSETTI, Dante Gapriet (1828-1882), poet and painter, whose full baptismal name was Gabriel Charles Dante, was born May 12, 1828, at 38 Charlotte Street, Portland Place, London. He was the first of the two sons and the second of the four children of Gabriele Rossetti, the Italian poet and patriot, whose career was at one period as turbulent as that of his illustrious son was (as far as mere outward incidents went) uneventful.

About 1824 Gabriele Rossetti, the father, after many vicissitudes, reached England, where he married in 1826 Frances Polidori, sister of Byron's Dr Polidori and daughter of a Tuscan who had in early youth been Alfieri's secretary and who had married an English lady. From his mother the subject of this notice inherited as many English traits as Italian, or indeed more. In 1831 Gabriele became professor of Italian in King's College, London, and afterwards achieved a recognized position as a subtle and original, if eccentric, commentator on Dante.

Dante Rossetti's education was begun at a private school in Foley Street, Portland Place, where he remained, however, only nine months, from the autumn of 1835 to the summer of 1836. He next went (in the autumn of 1836) to King's College School, where he remained till the summer of 1843, having reached the fourth class. From early childhood he had displayed a marked pro- pensity for drawing and painting. It had therefore from the first been tacitly assumed that his future career would be an artistic one, and he left school early. In Latin, however, he was already fairly proficient for his age; French he knew well; Italian he had spoken from childhood, and he had some German lessons about 1844-45. But, although he learned enough German to be able to translate the Arme Heinrich of Hartmann von

1 See Perkins, Italian Sculptors, 1864, i. p. 207 ; also Id., Tuscan Sculptors, p. 202, and Historical Handbook of Italian Sculpture, 1883, p. 121.

Aue, and some portions of the Nibelungenlied, he after- wards forgot the language almost entirely. His Greek too, such as it had been, he lost. On leaving school he went to Cary's Art Academy (previously called Sass's), near Bedford Square, and thence obtained admission to the Royal Academy Antique School towards 1846. He did not attend the Royal Academy Life School, and uo doubt his defective knowledge of anatomy was some obstacle to him in after life. The truth is, however, that Rossetti's occasionally defective drawing (which, as regards the throat, is most striking) did not arise mainly from ignorance ; it was the result of a peculiar mannerism. Admiring long and slender necks, and drawing them admirably in such masterpieces as Beata Beatrix and Monna Vanna, he refused to see that in art as in ethics the point of virtue lies midway between two opposite vices. Admiring large hands and massive arms in a woman, and drawing them admirably in such designs as Proserpine, Reverie, &c., he refused to see that hands can be too large, arms too massive. As a colourist, however, Rossetti may be said to have required no teaching, Mastery over colour seemed to have come to him by instinct.

Of the artistic education of foreign travel Rossetti had very little. But in early life he made a short tour in Belgium, where he was indubitably

much impressed and influenced by the works of Van Eyck at Ghent and Memling at Bruges. In the spring of 1848 he took an active part in forming the so-called pre-Raphaelite brother- hood, the members of which believed that the time had come for the artist to confront again Nature herself— imitating no longer man's imitations of her—even though the imitations be those splendid works of the great Raphaelite or post-Raphaelite masters which had hitherto been the inspiration of modern art. The revolution was to be one of motives no less than of methods. Of motive Rossetti was from the first a master. His struggle with methods we have already indicated.

To "paint nature as it is around them, with the help of modern science," was the object of the pre-Raphaelites according to Mr Ruskin, but to do so artists require something more than that "earnestness of the men of the 13th and 14th centuries" which Mr Ruskin speaks of : they require knowledge. Without knowledge, as we see in even such a marvellous design as Christ at the Door of Simon the Pharisee (1859), the artistic camel has to be drawn from the artist's inner consciousness, and the result is rarely a satisfactory quadruped. Intensity of seeing does not necessarily imply truth of seeing ; otherwise what phe- nomenon can be more real than Blake's Ghost of a Flea?

. But Rossetti's genius absorbed from pre-Raphaelitism all that it had to give, and then passed on its way towards its own special goal. Often and indeed mostly an artist's true and best education is unlearning rather than learning. It was so in Rossetti's case, though he had the most vivid personality and the rarest imagination of any man of his time. Plastic as molten wax, the mind from the dawn of consciousness begins learning, for good or ill. Youth, therefore, how rich soever in individual force, can no more help being imitative than a river, even though it be the Amazon itself, can help reflecting the scenery through which it flows. The goal before the young Rossetti's eyes (as we see in such designs as Taurello's First Sight of Fortune, 1848, and Cassandra) was to reach through art the forgotten world of old romance—that world of wonder and mystery and spiritual beauty which the old masters knew and could have painted had not lack of science, combined with slavery to monkish traditions of asceticism, crippled their strength. And he reached it—he reached early

that world which not all the pseudo-classicism that arose in the 15th century, ripened in the 16th, and rotted

XX. — 108

858

in the 18th could banish from the dreams of man, as we see in even such juvenile work as the pen and ink drawings of Gretchen in the Chapel, and Genevieve. In that great rebellion against the renascence of classicism which (after working much good and much harm) resulted in 18th-century materialism,—in that great movement of man's soul which may be appropriately named '"'the Renascence of the Spirit of Wonder in Poetry and Art" —he became the acknowledged protagonist before ever the pre-Raphaelite brotherhood was founded and down to his last breath at Birchington.

And it was by inevitable instinct that Rossetti turned to that mysterious side of nature and man's life which to other painters of his time had been a mere fancy-land, to be visited, if at all, on the wings of sport. It is not only in such masterpieces of his maturity as Dante's Dream, La Pia, &c., but in such early designs as How they Met Themselves, La Belle Dame Sans Merci, Cassandra, &c., that Rossetti shows how important a figure he is in the history of modern art, if modern art claims to be anything more than a mechanical imitation of the facts of nature.

For if there is any permanent vitality in the Renascence of Wonder in modern Europe—if it is not a mere passing mood—if it is really the inevitable expression of the soul of man in a certain stage of civilization (when the sanc- tions which have made and moulded society are found to be not absolute and eternal, but relative, mundane, ephemeral, and subject to the higher sanctions of unseen powers that work behind "the shows of things"), then perhaps one of the first questions to ask in regard to any imaginative painter of the 19th century is, In what relation does he stand to the newly awakened spirit of romance? Had he a genuine and independent sympathy with that temper of wonder and mystery which all over Europe had preceded and now followed the temper of imi- tation, prosaic acceptance, pseudo-classicism, and domestic materialism ? or was

his apparent sympathy with the temper of wonder, reverence, and awe the result of artistic en- vironment dictated to him by other and more powerful and original souls around him ?

We do not say that the mere fact of a painter's or a poet's showing but an imperfect sympathy with the Renascence of Wonder is sufficient to place him below a poet in whom that sympathy is more nearly complete, because we should then be driven to place some of the disciples of Rossetti above our great realistic painters, and we should be driven to place a poet like the author of The Excursion and The Prelude beneath a poet like the author of The Queen's Wake; but we do say that, other things being equal or anything like equal, a painter or poet of our time is to be judged very much by his sym- pathy with that great movement which we call the Renas- cence of Wonder—call it so because the word romanticism never did express it even before it had been vulgarized by French poets, dramatists, doctrinaires, and literary harle- quins. To struggle against the prim traditions of the 18th century, the unities of Aristotle, the delineation of types instead of characters, as Chateaubriand, Madame de Staél, Balzac, and Hugo struggled, was well. But in studying Rossetti's works we reach the very key of those "high palaces of romance" which the English mind had never, even in the 18th century, wholly forgotten, but whose mystic gates no Frenchman ever yet unlocked. Not all the romantic feeling to be found in all the French romanticists (with their theory that not earnestness but the grotesque is the life-blood of romance) could equal the romantic spirit expressed in a single picture or drawing of Rossetti's, such, for instance, as Beata Beatrix or Pandora. For, while the French romanticists—inspired by the theories (drawn from English exemplars) of Novalis,

Tieck, and Herder—cleverly simulated the old romantic feeling, the "beautifully devotional feeling" which Holman Hunt speaks of, Rossetti was steeped in it: he was so full of the old frank childlike wonder and awe which pre ceded the great renascence of materialism that he might have lived and worked amidst the old masters. Hence, in point of design, so original is he that to match such ideas as are expressed in Lilith,

Hesterna Rosa, Michael Scott's Wooing, the Sea Spell, &c., we have to turn to the sister art of poetry, where only we can find an equally powerful artistic representation of the idea at. the core of the old romanticism—the idea of the evil forces of nature assailing man through his sense of beauty. We must turn, we say, not to art—not even to the old masters themselves—but to the most perfect efflorescence of the poetry of wonder and mystery—to such ballads as the ""Demon Lover," to Coleridge's " Christa- bel" and "Kubla Khan," to Keats's "La Belle Dame sans Merci," for parallels to Rossetti's most characteristic designs. Now, although the idea at the heart of the highest romantic poetry (allied perhaps to that apprehen- sion of the warring of man's soul with the appetites of the flesh which is the basis of the Christian idea) may not belong exclusively to what we call the romantic temper (the Greeks, and also most Asiatic peoples, were more or less familiar with it, as we see in the Saldémdn and Absal of Jami), yet it became peculiarly a romantic note, as is seen from the fact that in the old masters it resulted in that asceticism which is its logical expression and which was once an inseparable incident of all romantic art. But, in order to express this stupendous idea as fully as the poets have expressed it, how is it possible to adopt the asceticism of the old masters? This is the question that Rossetti asked himself, and answered by his own progress in art. Not that it is possible here to give a chronological catalogue of Rossetti's pictures. Moreover this has been already done in great measure by Mr William Sharp, Mr W. M. Rossetti, and others. We shall only dwell upon a few of those which most strongly indicate the course his genius took.

In all of them, however, the poorest and the best, is displayed that power which Blake calls vision—the power which, as he finely says, is 'surrounded by the daughters of inspiration," the power, that is, of seeing imaginary objects and dramatic actions—physically seeing them as well as mentally—and flashing them upon the imagina- tions (even upon the corporeal senses) of others.

It was as early as 1849 that Rossetti exhibited in the so-called Free Exhibition the Girlhood of the Virgin, one of the most beautiful and characteristic of all his works. He scarcely ever exhibited again in

London, though just before his death his largest and most ambitious picture, Dante's Dream, was exhibited at Liverpool.

Then came, in 1850, Zhe Germ, that short-lived maga- zine of four numbers upon which so much has of late been written. If Zhe Germ was really "an official manifesto or apologia of pre-Raphaelitism," all that it had to preach was the noble doctrine of the sacredness, the saving grace, of conscience in art. In it appeared Rossetti's poem the "Blessed Damozel," the prose poem "Hand and Soul" (written as early as 1848), six sonnets, and four lyrics, but none of his designs, though two illustrations had been prepared and discarded on account of their unsatisfactory condition when reproduced. Like the other contributors to The Germ Rossetti had a belief that can only be called passionate in the value of subject in art. For some years his fecundity as a designer was called into astonishing activity, but not always in the field of wonder and poetic mystery. The artist who had had the strongest influence upon Rossetti's early tastes was Madox Brown, whose genius, dramatic and historic, has at length obtained

ross Fr'? I

universal recognition through the magnificent frescos at Manchester. Though not one of the pre-Raphaelite brotherhood, he had been a contributor to The Germ. Rossetti was deeply impressed with the power and fecun- dity of design displayed by Mr Brown's cartoons exhibited in Westminster Hall, and when he himself began serious work as a painter he thought of Brown as the one man from whom he would willingly receive practical guidance, and wrote to him at random. He became Brown's pupil ; but only once or twice, as in Found and Dr Johnson at the Mitre, did Rossetti try his hand at such realistic subjects as Brown loved, and then with a success that is very surprising if we consider how entirely his artistic energy had worked in very different lines. Found, begun in 1853, still remains unfinished. A countryman entering London in the early morning is accidentally or fatally encountered at the foot of the bridge by his rustic sweetheart, who, having gone to London, has been, in the most pathetic and terrible sense of the word, "lost." At sight of her lover the girl falls fainting at his feet. The expression of shame and

horror on her still beautiful face as she cowers against the wall, and the expression of pity and grief on the man's as he clasps her hands and tries to raise her are unsurpassed and perhaps for sheer power unequalled in modern dramatic art.

Many circumstances—for instance, the beginning of such grand designs as Magdalene at the Door of Simon the Pharisee, " Aspecté Medusa," the Boat of Love, &c.,—inter- fered with the completion of Found. With the exception of the Boat of Love, Dante's Dream (1870) was perhaps Rossetti's most ambitious design in purely imaginative art. From the painting of this picture to his death Rossetti never satisfactorily completed a large and elaborate design —not because his faculty of invention was ever exhausted ; in the very year of his death his brain was teeming with ideas as restlessly as when he designed Found and the Boat of Love. But the truth is that he wanted to write more poetry ; and those wonderful half-lengths of women for which, late in life, he became so famous were not only beautiful and satisfying but comparatively easy of achieve- ment; moreover purchasers were keen to commission them. Among those half-lengths, however, will be found some of his greatest works. Chief among them (if it is not Proserpine) is the marvellous crayon design Pandora in the possession of the present writer. its highest Rossetti's unique faculty of treating classical legend in the true romantic spirit. beauty of Pandora's face, the mysterious haunting sadness in her deep blue-grey eyes as she tries in vain to reclose the fatal box from which are still escaping the smoke and flames that shape themselves as they curl over her head into shadowy spirit faces, grey with agony, between tortured wings of sullen fire, are in the highest romantic mood. And if the Proserpine does not equal this design in elaborate allegorical richness it has perhaps the still higher merit of suggesting lofty tragedy by the simplest means. By sheer force of facial expression, a woman clasping a pomegranate renders a tragic situation as fully as though the canvas had been crowded with figures.

But we must turn to his poetry. "The Blessed Damozel " was written so early as 1848. "Sister Helen" was produced in its original form in 1850 or 1851. The translations from the carly Italian poets also began as far back as 1845 or 1846, and may have been mainly com- pleted by 1849,

Materials for the volume of original poetry (1870) accumulated slowly, and these having been somewhat widely read in manuscript had a very great influence upon our poetic literature long before their appearance in print; but this is not the place for criticiz- ing them in detail. All that we can here say is that in

In it is.seen at .

The grand and sombre >

859

poetry no less than in art what makes Rossetti so import- ant a figure is the position he took up with regard to the Renascence of Wonder—-to that modern revival of what is called the "romantic" spirit, that spirit without which English poetry, as the present writer has on a former occasion said when discussing the romantic movement, can searcely hold an original place at all when challenged in a court of universal criticism. The Renascence of Wonder culminates in Rossetti's poetry as it culminates in his paint- ing. The poet who should go beyond Rossetti would pass out of the realm of poetry into pure mysticism, as certain of his sonnets show. Fine as are these sonnets, it is in his romantic ballads that Rossetti (notwithstanding a certain ruggedness of movement) shows his greatest strength. In this opinion (which is not the general one) we agree with Dr Hueffer. "Sister Helen," "The Blessed Damozel," "Staff and Scrip,' "Eden Bower," "Troy Town," " Rose Mary," as representing the modern revival of the true romantic spirit, take a place quite apart from the other poetry of our time.

By the modern revival of the romantic spirit in English poetry we mean something much more than the revival, at the close of the last century, of natural language, the change discussed by Wordsworth in his famous Pre- face, and by Coleridge in his comments thereon—that change of diction and of poetic methods which is com- monly supposed to have arisen with Cowper, or, if not with Cowper, with Burns. The truth is that Wordsworth and Coleridge were too near the great changes in question, and they themselves took too active a part in those changes, to hold the historical view of what the changes really were. Important as was the

change in poetic methods which they so admirably practised and discussed, important as was the revival of natural language, which then set in, it was not nearly so important as that other revival which had begun earlier and of which it was the outeome—the revival of the romantic spirit, the Renas- cence of Wonder, even beneath the weight of 18th- century diction, the first movement of which no one has yet been able clearly and decisively to point out, but which is certainly English, and neither German nor French in its origin, and can be traced through Chatterton, Macpherson, and the Percy Ballads. .

Asa mere question of methods, a reaction against the poetic diction of Pope and his followers was inevitable. But, in discussing the romantic temper in relation to the overthrow of the bastard classicism and didactic materialism of the 18th century, we must, as we have just seen in discussing Rossetti's pictures, go deeper than mere artistic methods in poetry. When closely examined it is in method only that the poetry of Cowper is different from the ratiocinative and unromantic poetry of Dryden and Pope and their followers. Pope treated prose subjects in the ratiocinative—that is to say, the prose—temper, but in a highly artificial diction which people agreed to call poetic. Cowper treated prose subjects too—treated them in the same prose temper, but used natural language, a noble thing to do, no doubt— but this was only a part (and by no means the chief part) of the great work achieved by English poetry at the close of last century. That period, to be sure, freed us from the poetic diction of Pope ; but it gave us something more precious still—it gave us entire freedom from the hard rhetorical materialism imported from France; it gave a new seeing to our eyes, which were opened once more to the mystery and the wonder of the universe and the romance of man's destiny ; it revived in short the romantic spirit, but the romantic spirit enriched by all the clarity and sanity that the renascence of classicism was able to lend,

860

The greatest movement that has occurred in later times was that which substituted for the didactic materialism of the 18th century the new romanticism of the 19th, the leaders of which movement, Coleridge and

Scott, were admirably followed by Byron, Shelley, and Keats. Not that Wordsworth was a stranger to the romantic temper. The magnificent image of Time and Death

under the yew tree is worthy of any romantic poet that

ever lived, yet it cannot be said that he escaped save at moments from the comfortable 18th-century didactics, or that he was a spiritual writer in the sense that Coleridge, Blake, and Shelley were spiritual writers.

Of the true romantic feeling, the ever present apprehen- sion of the spiritual world and of that struggle of the soul with earthly conditions which we have before spoken of, Rossetti's poetry is as full as his pictures —so full indeed that it was misunderstood by certain critics, who found in the most spiritualistic of poets and painters the founder of a "fleshly school." Although it cannot be said that '""The Blessed Damozel" or "Sister Helen" or 'Rose Mary" reaches to the height of the masterpieces of Coleridge, the purely romantic temper was with Rossetti a more per- manent and even a more natural temper than with any other 19th-century poet, even including the authorof "'Christabel" himself. As to the other 19th-century poets, though the Ettrick Shepherd in The Queen's Wake shows plenty of the true feeling, Hogg's verbosity is too great to allow of really successful work in the field of romantic ballad, where concentrated energy is one of the first requisites. And even Dobell's " Keith of Ravelston " has hardly been fused in the fine atmosphere of fairy land. Byron's "'footlight bogies" and Shelley's metaphysical abstractions had of course but very little to do with the inner core of romance, and we have only to consider Keats, to whose "La Belle Dame sans Merci" and "Eve of St Mark" Rossetti always acknowledged himself to be deeply in- debted. In the famous close of the seventh stanza of the "Ode to a Nightingale "—

Charmed magic casements opening on the foam Of perilous seas in faery lands forlorn— there is of course the true thrill of the poetry of wonder, and it is expressed with a music, a startling magic, above the highest reaches of Rossetti's poetry. But, with- out the evidence of Keats's two late poems, "La Belle Dame sans Merci" and the " Eve of St Mark," who could have said that Keats showed more than a passing appre- hension of

that which is the basis of the romantic temper —the supernatural? In contrasting Keats with Rossetti it must always be remembered that Keats's power over the poetry of wonder came to him at one flash, and that it was not (as we have.said elsewhere) " till late in his brief life that his bark was running full sail for the enchanted isle where the old ballad writers once sang and where now sate the wizard Coleridge alone." Though outside Coleridge's work there had been nothing in the poetry of wonder comparable with Keats's "La Belle Dame sans Merci," he had previously in "Lamia" entirely failed in rendering the romantic idea of beauty as a malefi- cent power. The reader, owing to the atmosphere sur- rounding the dramatic action being entirely classic, does not believe for a moment in the serpent woman. The classic accessories suggested by Burton's brief narra- tive hampered Keats where to Rossetti (as we see in "Pandora," "Cassandra," and "Troy Town") they would simply have given birth to romantic ideas. It is perhaps with Coleridge alone that Rossetti can be compared as a worker in the Renascence of Wonder. Although his apparent lack of rhythmic spontaneity places him below the great master as a singer (for in these miracles of Coleridge's genius poetry ceases to appear as a fine art at all

—it is the inspired song of the changeling child "singing, dancing to itself"), in permanence of the romantic feeling, in vitality of belief in the power of the unseen, Rossetti stands alone. Even the finest portions of his historical ballad "The King's Tragedy" are those which deal with the supernatural.

In the spring of 1860 Rossetti married Elizabeth Eleanor Siddall, who being very beautiful was constantly painted and drawn by him. She had one still-born child in 1861, and died in February 1862. Mrs Rossetti's own water-colour designs show an extraordinary genius for invention and a rare instinct for colour. He felt her death so acutely that in the first paroxysm of his grief he insisted upon his poems (then in manuscript) being buried with her. These were ata later period recovered, how- ever, and from this time to his death he continued to write poems and produce pictures,—in the latter relying more and more upon his manipulative skill

but exercising less and less,—for the reasons above mentioned,—his exhaustless faculty of invention.

About 1868 the curse of the artistic and poetic tempera- ment, insomnia, attacked him. One of the most distress- ing effects of this malady is a nervous shrinking from personal contact with any save a few intimate and con- stantly seen friends. This peculiar kind of nervousness may be aggravated by the use of narcotics, and in his case was aggravated to a very painful degree; at one time he saw scarcely any one save his own family and imme- diate family connexions and the present writer. During the time that his second volume of original poetry, Ballads and Sonnets, was passing through the press (in 1881) his health began to give way, and he left London for Cumber- land. A stay of a few weeks in the Vale of St John, how- ever, did nothing to improve his health, and he returned much shattered. He then went to Birchington-on-Sea, but received no benefit from the change, and, gradually sinking from a complication of disorders, he died on Sunday the 9th April 1882.

In all matters of taste Rossetti's influence has been im- mense. The purely decorative arts he may be said to have rejuvenated directly or indirectly. And it is doubtful whether any other Victorian poet has left so deep an im- pression upon the poetic methods of his time.

One of the most wonderful of Rossetti's endowments, however, was neither of a literary nor an artistic kind: it was that of a rare and most winning personality which attracted towards itself, as if by an unconscious magnetism, the love of all his friends, the love, indeed, of all who knew him.

See T. Hall Caine, Recollections of Dante Gabriel Rossetti, 1882; and William Sharp, Dante Gabriel Rossetti, a Record and a Study, 1882. (T. W.)

ROSSINI, Groacntvo Anronro (1792-1868), Italian dramatic composer, was born at Pesaro, February 29, 1792. He first studied music under Angelo Tesei, and that so successfully that he was able to sing solos in church when only ten years old, and three years later to appear at the opera house as Adolfo, in Paer's Camilla. He was next placed under a

retired tenor, named Babbini, and on the breaking of his voice he entered the Liceo at Bologna for the purpose of studying counterpoint under Mattei. On his departure from the school, Mattei, who was not pleased. with his progress, told him that he knew enough counter- point to enable him to write in the free style, but that he was quite unfit for the composition of church music. 'Do I know enough to write operas?" asked Rossini. ' Quite enough," was the reply. " Then," said the boy, "TI care to know no more." But in truth his wonderful instinct had taught him a great deal more than either he or Mattei suspected. Rossini's first opera, Za Cambiale di Matri-

monio, was produced with success at the Teatro San Mosé at Venice in 1810. In 1811 he produced L'Hqwivoco stravagante, at Bologna; but his first real triumph was achieved at Venice in 1812, in L'Inganno felice, a work in which his genius unmistakably asserted itself. In the same year he produced La Pietra del Paragone, with equal applause, at Milan, besides four other operas in other places. These pieces were all successful, but Tancredi, written for the Teatro San Fenice at Venice, in 1813, produced a veritable furore. The name of the young maestro was now famous ; yet, strange to say, his greatest comic opera was hissed on its first performance at Rome in 1816. This delightful inspiration, first entitled Alma- viva, but now known as Jl Barbiere di Siviglia, was founded on a libretto which Paisiello had already treated with success, and hence the refusal of the Roman audience to tolerate it. But the beauty of the music overcaine the scruples of the most prejudiced listeners, and, by the time the Barbiere reached its third representation, Rossini was openly accepted as the greatest dramatic composer in Italy. Between 1815 and 1823 Rossini composed no less than twenty operas, including his masterpieces Elcsabetta (1815), 22 Barbiere (1816), Otello (1816), La Cenerentola (1817), La Gaza Ladra (1817), Mose in Egitto (1818), Le Donna del Lago (1819), and Semiramide (1823), the last of which has lately been revived, with so great success, by Madame Adelina Patti.

Rossini visited England in 1823, and in 1824 accepted an engagement as musical director of the Théatre Italien in Paris, where, in 1829, he

produced his last great masterpiece, Guillaume Tell. After completing this beauti- ful work, he composed no more until 1832, when he wrote the first six movements of the Stabat Mater for private performance only. He completed this lovely composition in 1839, and it was first publicly performed at the Salle Ventadour in 1842. In 1855 he settled permanently in Paris, at 2 Rue Chaussée d'Antin, where he composed his last work, the Petite Messe Solennelle, which was first privately performed at the house of M. Pillet Will, March 16, 1864, and posthumously produced at the ThéAtre Italien February 28, 1869. Rossini was twice married—to Isabella Colbran in 1821, and in 1847 to Olympe Pelissier. After his final return to Paris he spent a part of every year in a suburban villa in the Avenue Ingres, at Passy, and here he died of a very pain- ful illness, November 13, 1868. He was buried at the church of the Trinité, November 21, with every possible honour. He was a foreign associate of the Institute, " orand officer of the Legion of Honour," the recipient of innumerable orders, and a member of innumerable musical institutions. Honour was justly lavished upon him ; and, though his career was not free from temporary misfortunes, probably no man of genius ever lived a happier life, or enjoyed more fully the appreciation both of brother artists and the general public.

Rossini effected a complete revolution in the style of Italian opera. His accompaniments were richer than any that had ever been previously heard in Italy, and in their masterly instrumen- tation rivalled some of the most notable achievements of German art. His use of the crescendo and the "cabaletta," though some- times carried to excess, gave a brilliancy to his music which added greatly to the excellence of its effect. Hc first accompanied his recitatives with the stringed orchestra in Elisabetta, and with stringed and wind instruments combined in Otello. And his

overtures are by far the most masterly and complete composi- tions of the kind that the Italian school has ever produced.

ROSTOCK, the largest town of Mecklenburg-Schwerin, and one of the most important commercial cities on the Baltic, is situated on the left bank of the estuary of the Warnow, about eight miles from the sea. It lies

177 miles north-west of Berlin by railway, 80 miles north-east of Liibeck, and 106 miles south of Copenhagen. The city

consists of three parts—the old town to the east, and the middle and new towns to the west—of which the first retains some of the antique features of an old Hanse town, while the last two are for the most part regularly and even hand- somely built. There are several fine squares in Rostock, among them the Bliicher Platz, with a statue of Field-marshal Bliicher, who was born in the town in 1742. Rostock was at one time a fortress of some strength, but the old fortifications have been razed, and their site is now occu- pied by a promenade. Within the last twenty years the suburbs have considerably extended themselves. Rostock has five old parochial churches :—St Mary's, dating from 1398-1472, one of the most imposing Gothic buildings in Mecklenburg ; St Nicholas's, begun about 1250 and re- stored in-1450 ; St Peter's, with a lofty tower built in 1400, which serves as a landmark to ships 20 miles at sea; St James's, completed in 1588; and the church of the Holy Rood, begun in 1270, but now no longer used for service. St Mary's church contains a monument marking the original tomb of Grotius, who died in Rostock in 1645, though his remains were afterwards removed to Delft. Among the other interesting buildings are the curious 14th-century Gothic town-house, the fagade of which is concealed by a Renaissance addition ; the palace of the grand duke of Mecklenburg-Schwerin, built in 1702; the law courts, built in 1878-79; and the new university buildings, erected in 1867-70. The university of Rostock was founded in 1418 by the dukes Johann III. and Albrecht V. From 1437 till 1443 it had its seat at Greifswald in consequence of commotions at Rostock ; and in 1760 it was again removed—on this occasion to Biitzow. 'The professors appointed by the city, however, still taught there, so that there were practically two universities in the duchy until 1789, when they were reunited at the original seat. In winter 1884-5 the uni- versity had a teaching staff of 39, with 265 students ; and it possesses a library of 145,000 volumes, various collections and museums, and a number of scientific and literary auxiliary institutions. Rostock is the seat of the supreme court for both the duchies of Mecklenburg, and is well equipped with schools, hospitals, and other institutions. The population in 1810 was 10,979; in 1880 it was

36,967, of whom only 224 were Roman Catholics, and only 221 were Jews; in 1885 it was 39,212.

Although the population, commerce, and wealth of Rostock have all declined since its palmy days as a flourishing Hanse town in the Middle Ages, it has still a very considerable trade, and no Baltic port possesses so large a merchant fleet. In 1882 314 ships, with a total burden of 97,447 tons, were registered as belonging to Rostock ; and in 1882 730 ships, with a total burden of 80,578 tons entered, and 724 ships, with a total burden of 82,537 tons, cleared, the port. Ships of more than 200 tons burden must discharge part of their cargo at Warnemiinde, at the mouth of the Warnow, the port of Rostock, a fishing village and watering place. with 1766 inhabitants, who are distinguished by a peculiar dialect and costume. By far the most important export of Rostock is grain, which goes almost entirely to British ports ; but wool, flax, and cattle are also shipped. _The chief imports arc coal from Great Britain, herrings from Sweden, petroleum from America, timber, wine, and colonial goods. Rostock has an important fair at Whitsuntide, lasting for fourteen days, and also a frequented wool and cattle market. The industries of the town are very varicd. One of the chief is shipbuilding, which, however, has declined of late years. Cotton, straw hats, tobaeco, carpets, soap, cards, chocolate, and dye-stuffs are among the manufactures of the town, which also contains distilleries, saw-mills, oil-mills, tanneries, and

breweries. ; ;

Local historians assert that a village existed on the site of Rostock as early as 329 a.p., but no certain proofs have been traced of any earlier community than that founded here by Pribislaw II. in the 12th century, which is said to have received town rights in 1218. The earliest signs of commercial prosperity date from about 1260. For a time Rostock was under the dominion of the kings of Den- mark. Soon after returning into the protection of Mecklenburg in 1317, it joined the Hanseatic League ; and in fact was one of the

original members of the powerful and prosperous Wendish Hansa, in

whieh it exereised an influenee seeond only to that of Liibeek. The most prosperous epoeh of its eommereial history began in the latter half of the 15th eentury, preeiselyat the period when its political power began to wane. Rostock, however, never entirely lost the independenee whieh it enjoyed as a Hanse town; and in 1788, as the result of long contentions with the rulers of Mecklenburg, it seeured for itself a peeuliar and liberal munieipal eonstitution, administered by three burgomasters and three ehambers. In 1880 this constitution was somewhat modified, and the eity beeame less like a state within a state. The badge of Rostoek is the figure'7; and a loeal rhyme explains that there are 7 doors to St Mary's ehureh, 7 streets from the market plaee, 7 gates on the landward side and 7 wharves on the seaward side of the town, 7 turrets on the town-house, whieh has 7 bells, and 7 linden trees in the park.

ROSTOFF, on the Don, is one of those modern towns which have grown up with such remarkable rapidity in South Russia since the definite occupation by the Russians of the Black Sea coast. In 1731 a small fort was erected on an island in the Don, near its mouth. Thirty years later the fortifications were transferred to the site now occupied by Rostoff, 5 miles above the head of the first branch of the delta of the Don (Mertvyi Donets), and 13 miles above the real head of the delta, the fort being called Dmitri Rostovskiy. Settlers of all nationalities immediately gathered around it, and here within less than a century a city, which in 1881 had 70,700 inhabitants, sprung up, having a mixed population of Great Russians, Ukrainians, Greeks, Germans, Jews, &c. Rostoff stands on the elevated right bank of the Don, and, viewed from the river, looks fairly imposing ; but the interior still retains the aspect of a large village.

The Don, which here has a breadth of no more than 230 to 250 yards, with a hardly pereeptible current, offers an exeellent road- stead. The navigation, however, is considerably impeded by the shallowness of the branehes of the river, which are thirty in number at its entranee to the sea, but of which only three (Mertvyi Donets, Kolonteha, and the Don proper) are navigable. During the east winds, however, there is only 4 feet depth of water on the bars of the delta ; and ships formerly were often eompelled to stay outside for several weeks, waiting for a south-west wind. Recent dredging operations have but partially remedied this evil, and the

goods have to be earried on lighters to Taganrog and Mariupol, where they are shipped. In 1882 only forty-one ships of small size eoming from foreign countries under the Russian and Turkish flags entered the port, but no fewer than 3175 vessels (349,500 tons), engaged in eabotage or lighter traffie, left the roadstead. The export of eorn, oil-seeds, wool, tallow, butter, iron, hides, ropes, eoarse linen, piteh, &e., from 12,311,000 roubles in 1865, had risen to 41,634,252 roubles in 1882, while the imports were valued at only 886,120 roubles. The agrieultural produee thus exported is drawn from the entire basin of the Don in eentral Russia, while ores and metals are brought from the Urals. The commereial importance of

Rostoff is further inereased by its iis ee on the great highway from Kharkoff and Voronezh to Caueasus, on whieh traftie has greatly inereased sinee Rostoff beeame eonneeted by rail with Kharkoff and Voronezh on the one side and Vladikavkaz on the other. Two fairs, one of whieh has eonsiderable importanee for the whole of south-eastern Russia, are yearly held here, with an estimated turnover of about 5,000,000 roubles. Rostoff has also exeellent fisheries, and in summer it beeomes the gathering plaee of many thousands of labourers on their way to assist in harvesting operations in the provinees of the Don and in northern Caueasia. The population then exeeeds 100,000. The administrative position of Rostoffis quite unique. Along with a territory of 2520 square miles it belongs to the government of Ekaterinoslaff, of which it is a distriet town; but this territory is quite separated from the government, being enelosed by the territory of the Don Cossacks.

ROSTOFF, on Lake Nero, a district town of Russia, in the government of Yaroslavl, and 35 miles by rail south- west of Yaroslavl, is probably the oldest town of north- eastern Russia. Its present importance is due to its fair, which rapidly developed towards the close of last century, and still remains a market where prices of cotton wares are established preliminary to the great fair of Nijni-Nov- gorod, and where a brisk exchange in various kinds of raw materials and unmanufactured articles is carried on. The specialty of Rostoff is the production of a variety of kitchen- garden produce and apothecary's herbs. Chicory and dried sweet peas are the principal objects of trade; in 1880 350,000 cwts., chiefly of

kitchen-garden produce, were exported. Another industry formerly developed in con- sequence of the great influx of pilgrims—that of painting sacred pictures on a kind of enamel—still continues to flourish, The saddlery and linen manufactures, and the fishing, may likewise be mentioned. The population of Rostoff in 1883 was 12,500.

Rostoff was founded by the Slavonians in territory formerly oeeupied by the (Finnish) Meres, and it played so prominent a part in the history of that part of Russia that it used to be known as Rostoff the Great. From the beginning of the 11th century to the 18th it was the ehief town of the great Rostoff territory, which ineluded large parts of the present governments of Yaroslavl, Vladimir, and Novgorod, and seems to have been a populous eity. After the Mongolian invasion it rapidly deelined, and in 1474 it was purehased by Ivan III. and annexed to the growing Moseow prineipality. It was repeatedly plundered by Tartars, Lithuanians, and Poles in the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries. Its eathedral, built in 1231, still stands, notwithstanding numerous conflagra- tions ; some of the relies it contains are more than eight centuries old. Another ehurch is of still older date, having been built in 1216. Eaeh of its five monasteries has venerated relies of renowned Christian missionaries or Russian prinees.

ROSWITHA. See Hrosvirua.

END OF VOLUME TWENTIETH.

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.

PRUSSIA PLATE I.

Piares, Vou. XX.—DrIRECTIONS TO BINDER,

oughout the text ts desired, the Plates to be placed opposite the following pages -—

When insertion tho

Plate | < ; : ; page 3 ~ fF ; : ‘ » 165

1 «| ; : » «= hed

A Aes : F > » 523

V. ‘ . . ~ oh

*\ Veisse \ Koni ms tal ve 4 . a * Bai ——<———— 50 2 a ? igi: : S 7g A – KINGDOM or PRUSSIA Aoguisiti 178 1803 ASsé £ i | qquisitions 17 6 to Fb Acquisitio: a ere oar | | Present extent of the kingdom Pye ena ene i ptt i atu iis ae c ; Territory lost to Prussia. between 1801 $1815 5 = ee : Territory lost to Prussia in 1807 but: reincor ae é as = : ~ porated with the leingdam 1866 0000… E*

18 20

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION. W.& AK. Johnston

862

which it exercised an influence sccond only to that of Liibeck. The most prosperous epoch of its commercial history began in the latter half of the 15th century, preciselyat the period when its political power began to wane. Rostock, however, never entirely lost the independence which it enjoyed as a Hanse town; and in 1788, as the result of long contentions with the rulers of Mecklenburg, it secured for itself a peculiar and liberal municipal constitution, administered by three burgomasters and three chambers. In 1880 this constitution was somewhat modified, and the city became less like a state within a state. The badge of Rostock is the figure’7 ; and a local rhyme explains that there are 7 doors to St Mary’s church, 7 streets from the market place, 7 gates on the landward side and 7 wharves on the seaward side of the town, 7 turrets on the town-house, which has 7 bells, and 7 linden trees in the park. ROSTOFF, on the Don, is one of those modern towns which have grown up with such remarkable rapidity in South Russia since the definite occupation by the Russians of the Black Sea coast. In 1731 a small fort was erected on an island in the Don, near its mouth. Thirty years later the fortifications were transferred

to the site now occupied by Rostoff, 5 miles above the head of the first branch of the delta of the Don (Mertvyi Donets), and 13 miles above the real head of the delta, the fort being called Dmitri Rostovskiy. Settlers of all nationalities immediately gathered around it, and here within less than a century a city, which in 1881 had 70,700 inhabitants, sprung up, having a mixed population of Great Russians, Ukrainians, Greeks, Germans, Jews, &c. Rostoff stands on —— 2 . aut M+ and wiawed fram the

ROS—ROS

Rostoff is further increased by its position on the great highway from Kharkoff and Voronezh to Caucasus, on which traffic has greatly increased since Rostoff became connected by rail with Kharkoff and Voronezh on the one side and Vladikavkaz on the other. Two fairs, one of which has considerable importance for the whole of south-eastern Russia, are yearly held here, with an estimated turnover of about 5,000,000 roubles. Rostoff has also excellent fisheries, and in summer it becomes the gathering place of many thousands of labourers on their way to assist in harvesting operations in the provinces of the Don and in northern Caucasia. The population then exceeds 100,000. The administrative position of Rostoff is quite unique. Along with a territory of 2520 square miles it belongs to the government of Ekaterinoslaff, of which it is a district town; but this territory is quite separated from the

government, being enclosed by the territory of the Don Cossacks. ROSTOFF, on Lake Nero, a district town of Russia, in the government of Yaroslavl, and 35 miles by rail south- west of Yaroslavl, is probably the oldest town of north- eastern Russia. Its present importance is due to its fair, which rapidly developed towards the close of last century, and still remains a market where prices of cotton wares are established preliminary to the great fair of Nijni-Nov- gorod, and where a brisk exchange in various kinds of raw materials and unmanufactured articles is carried on. The specialty of Rostoff is the production of a variety of kitchen- garden produce and apothecary's herbs. Chicory and dried sweet peas are the principal objects of trade; in 1880 350,000 cwts., chiefly of kitchen-garden produce, were exported. Another industry formerly developed in con- "8 etme thet af nainting.

END OF VOLUME TWENTIETH.

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.

=

PRUSSIA PLATE T.

MARE or’ BRANDENBUR

- 1 Sheen Wypnigerode ox

o) chelpzig | Ligtwen.

PRUSSIA

1786 7

Acquisitions 1648 to 1786 ey Katent of the kingdom in 1786, enclosed diva red line Territory subsequently lost to Prussia Lervitery lost te Prussia in 1807, but re-tneorporated with the kingdone 1806

a

Bornhalm

Heligolana °

—— past Prisianlelands.

4

= | = ett

ae |

*od oDarn: ver aX 3 ‘ rs 2 “4 —_ (* © oe OF PRUSSIA |*

Wiirxburd 18 66 Acquisitions 1786 to 1803) Acquisitions 1803 toIAS | Present extent of the kingdom of Prussia enclosed by ared line : b Territory lost to Prussia. between 18Ol &1815 , F sa 4 7 R. > Territory lost toPrussia in 1807 but: reincor— English Miles ie | oi + – ~ porated with the kingdom 1866……. CZ o 50 } ifs I : – Sorat Bi oe bas

8 z 18 20

W.& AK. Johnswn. ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

ENCYCLOPADIA BRIT Gy,

=

PLATE Il

ste

P! St Nicolas

StAndrens

ri Fs aemeart by NEWFOUNDLAND : Puen Came Gulf of On~ L.S Jon % Peninsula) 5 Lawrence i P< NajourB. o\ PAs _ (Magdalen ie = Three Ri get °y NEW PR.EOWARD eB > \e pond JBRUNSWICK land 2 : Vis j 3 Ottawa 2*Montres i. : ie AEN ; zatth : A i Champlain, : < ATLANTIC EOneazio§ mn # OCEAN _~” UNITED STATES Mortlana uf 70 from Greenwich 69 68*

AZ a if ‘ VY) 32s BUS An ans

67

ICA, NINTH EDITION.

J.Bartholomew,

VOD. XX. QUEENSLAND PLATE IIL

D’Eutrecasteaux

SL Normanby T° et

va x wv” ~ t 285 ar Bic -Lboutsiade Se aie, eae a Oe NG te ey Ar chin? a ¢ =, “> rae Pie = a “wall

English Miles

*Reference to Counties In Port Curtis Distt | In Moreton Dist*t N°l Murchison. N91 Cavendish*

2 Liebig 2 Stanley

3 Livingstone 3 Churchill

4 Packington. !

5 Deas Thompso:

6 Raglan

7 Pe I

8

Welle sley Y p flotmen Roots

Herald Coys

Pr

BS Flinders Reet>

Capricorn Channel

Tropic; De ea A prarcoe

& 9

! N?é

Longitude East 145 of Greenwich

W&A.K Johnston.

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION

; Pah ‘ : ; : ; S – 2 4 Fs . : ; ~ A od a ; . . . =a ; a < ; Py : ; a =3- je Y : . ; : i – 7 | : a age? : ~ o "2 ; , ¢ y 1 : | 5] ' ; . |

*- _ * . +) . : .*

*7 7 = ad . : : » ; : ; n ei 7 : ‘ << ; 7 ia = : = : : - | - _ e *. P G | == “ 1 Ps P 2 . Z ct : . | ‘fe =< ‘= ‘ i] g ; | ¥ : ‘ f . ‘ ; - ‘. 3 > . ‘ : £ fe . | | . P*

RHODE ISLAND

PLATE IV

Longitude West

—

Diem pNe HILL

Scale of Miles

7Y 10

1 2 3 4 5

lain

ly Stillwatey nes Reservou cn a SS WYGN KH EIG ES c= F oy HILLS: uf Spray, LIIMLOTLY Oy,

sy Ls

KK rip sstin yy

pe

; P.) Howaron HILL ¥ ut

whe Samay ae ane Wage oe 224 ee neni

“= HILL

*Si Hy $ * et My Wy, ny Mi*

ZNO P KEN S

HILL Harber i=.)

ORSPAIR | A HOP be CLar\eg PS

ond

woes

Ww : lcheppnittin ’ esterly Cli ‘e

ZY al Me /

4

“onochontaung , “PY My ~ o Nt 04 W- Ocean View o

nts IME Fane IW Oks

|

9 r ‘ootl River June,

<—fRichmonad_Switey 4 oe ewuMNewus 4 Rr ee 39 e, iis yy 2 chers4rPond %

drdickville BURYLNG ? ,% Mu. tun

thool raid HILL “4 2 nine

si ag TR .

gt n

iN ly

*op A 5 a I harlestown * LEAGUE ROCK ° wv Til Pron ore Par ot 0 – Ee: » e pt*

ze hy squins | bn, LEDGE }

Railroads

County Towns ©

10

‘ ae ¢

Longitmde East 5°20° from Washington

frock? 2° 5°40

. i BEAST 4) west.

— at

Hi Samay Rownt 5

BLOCK ISLAND Part of Newport County

SLAND) ENCYULOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

W.& AK. Johnston.

RIVER EN

= = 3 = ns = ———— —_a ae RIVER TYNE 3 Se FIG. 8 Scale to Plan & Horizontal Scale to Section —_, 2 ‘ 5008 2 SO 5,000 10,000 18000 Feet 4 eee Vertical Scale to Section pcan ag 100 10 20 30 40 50 Feet | Blaydon | oe wv g ob & a g rs ® Rod # “0 ao y + & 9, om tig Water “S spring Tides 1075 RIGS? : : Sd ae – ¥ ‘ ‘ ‘ ‘ 1 ‘ —— = ~= r Lert smastin,, | ek eee ee ‘ ‘ \ ; : i pene FEE cro” dew Waits Weiter”, Sore ing Tide 4B ss ee or AE OOTY ERIM, JQetor, 5 Tite = _ RIVER 884 : . ir , paciae ras 1 4 “Sy ‘ al? | ay { Datum Line 60 Feet below Tyne datum | —— a = ~S a e a SSS FIG.12 TRAINING WALL | | = RIVER SEINE eee High Water Spr. Tides | FIG. 10 Scale to Plan & Horizontal Seale to Section Se ; | ca : SET Dat Mell ety km aa ee | > Survey of 1880 , Vertical Seale to Section , are Caudebee \ 1050 10 20 30 40 80 Feet een etn res Scale Section pf Training Wall , g ge \ HAVRE 0 10 20 30 Feet Villecrzlan iY : | => — f | f | | | | | fy La Roque | | lA, | ae P FIG. 11 | a < go Pog ae bi We High Water Srdinary Spring Tides sf i & “Tien | I ; ’ — = = ee ' } ' 1 ‘ ; ~ , – Es ra | ‘Low Water | x r fi ae ao ea ;*

4

| | < | __ Datum Line 50 Feet below the level of the sea _at Marseilles -s oa mele rs – = eS Se ee a Se : | i ee pte ae ag a oe | FIG. 13 : 2 MOUTH OF RIVER MAAS SECTION OF SOUTH JETTY a : Scale FIG. 15 ; Eg ae wos 0 10 20 ao 40 50 60 Feet

1

| High Water Ordinary Spr, Tides _ w Wate medi my Sp Diddle FIG. 14 i i f : . JETTY CHANNEL — ‘io Se i eres WE OU ee PO =a ie a ee = [a } == High Water Ordinary Spr. Tides \ | 4 HOLLAND ny bat nee Lae Mater Ordinary Spr. Tides | iy | a ORI: ©, Dy a a as | | – 3 pos -—~ ar Datum Line 35 Feet below Low Water —__ : ee eee = ie oe | | | . 1, Seale to Plan & Horizontal Seale to Section ry Vertical Scale to Section : | 19000 2000 4000 $000 8000 10,000 Feet BOS Qe ae ae ee ee | a eT = oe a – | SECTION OF OVERFALL WEIR ON THE SEVERN FIG.7 DRUM WEIR HYDRAULIC SHUTTER WEIR 30 Feet | I Fic TUES | fi | | { = ewe = J

: ENCYCLOPADIA BRITMN\c

WINEERING | Pe

——

*FIG: 16 FIG. 17 SULLIVANS Le . | ISLAND & FIG. 18 MOUTH OF RIVER ADOUR Rea Saw Weiter: Pome Seearierenta ls Seale. – se { 8 \ “° = =€6=6ho ~ 1000 ~~ 2600 Feet t *

18 12 , ! 12 18

*biG Ree 20 3O Feet | 18 | 18 | 13 | | | ————————S—S—SS | S 18 rt | CHARLESTON JETTIES eS | Ceres ae ee | ee ae 1900 cu 2000 4000 6,000 Feet FIG. 21 FIG. 19 a DELTA OF THE DANUBE SULINA PIERS SECTION OF SOUTH PIER EPRENA CLENS Se 2 gate i Ss 10 o = Rashes Seale, ‘ 4 5000 saigvaae 4000 4000 Feet (2 * 10 o 10 20 20 40 Feet e FIG.20 . E Harbour Side [55 Sea Side Ning ern o ORR Ot aa ares ET I ISLAND | FIG. 22 DELTA OF THE MISSISSIPPI foe ee eed SS ae ee, 15,000 o 16000 30,000 Peet ei BRACE Ss -.*

7

| é : | es sua 9 : eae uth we cemaie $0 yor ; Patil a ; 1 cf. pa PS ISLAND Key ‘ BAY | | SOUTH PASS JETTIES _ SECTION AT 10,400 FEET Scale | IO es 7 20° BO Feet | FIG. 23 SHUTTER WEIR | SELF ACTING WEIR ON RIVER IRWELL } | H | HY | Hf | 1 | | | | 6 FIG. 3 ae FIG. 5 i | b | i} Pepe i | 4 | | if Yy ty 1 Scale to Figs. oe 5,6, 3 afi Sa =i ja gre ighe Pa ae 20 30 Feet

al

ANICA. NINTH EDITION

& A K Johnston

te

“r

PLATE VI.

ROME

VOL. XX.

| uBLIpey Jo saat)

C\a mpu s

@ AM) Bie aN 1/77

ty)

Mi

ANS

(Colosseum)

Sepa Septmiana.

Ay ! Hh nt Lay)

mi Ut

wis

ANCIENT ROME

—emmaivmts Wall of Servius Tullius. The black shows what has been discovered

ae Wall of Aurean and Probus 271-76,4.D wera Wall of Pope leo lV. 850, A.D.

wie es Wall. of 1560 ~1640,A.D.

4): Porta, Triumphalis

3. Porta Carmentalis

In Wall of Servius Tullius 1. Porta Fhumentana 4. Janiculan Arx

SCALES

Wh A K Johrston

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION

*” o ‘ ‘ >i Wry a J < , . i " ‘ s ey. } ° “I vo + fe : , | ia ys, J | less » dy * . . ' . . : | Ve . é = : a : | | : ot Wa ; 3 > y hi | | | “r – - | y ; “i ‘ 7*

+ ‘

ba at a r |

; –

- *’ ; j ‘ 2 . ; | ‘ | ‘ ‘ rs – ; . ” . ‘ ‘ a . P i : ;*

*, **

’ ‘ : é , 4 – a col ; ; . – + A , 5 vy , ‘

,

*‘ * j*

_ –

wit Rha ; ; ‘ , L i } + a 1 q :

‘ 7, 4 ;

. 5 . i J | |

. .

t ; ‘

,

| oy 1 ‘ pa ns +4 i t r – x) é ; :. ‘ Ps

: <

F N | : ‘

- =

i |

. 4

. >

;

i f i

.

*d | . . é “ ; . 4 ‘ 45 ; . ee = ’ – a * ‘ . | or Ny ¢ ‘ ue . | ‘ sf . , ” | ‘ t J { : ;*

. – . .

« i A : : . ‘ ‘eo

. :

‘ (ae. ae :

.

*‘ ‘ – | ‘ , ve . ‘ | | 1 ” i =) F \ A A i A ‘ : * – : . mi – . ; y j – -* i ‘ * 1 ‘ oe ne 42m r 7 4 r ° – i hes 0 + : ” ae | ss ” Pr ‘ y . . . ; ; Pa ‘ wan On ee L. : “ihe , ‘ c aw 4. i = oe at ; ‘ i. y os ’ h ‘ i ; : rane ok. a ; ‘*

‘NOLLIGS HININ ‘WOINNVLING YIGHdO19A9NI ae ; supa any Blululung ¢ Wedey 55/7 WH Ag umig puo pemsmay

glLsnoenyv taia WNTdN3L

vovo19

SSNIGIING SNIGNNOYYNS SLI GNY

WONSVW WOYOA AHL

KLEE RRA C i : UT SLiSIX3 11idS LVHM SMOHS M WOVIa FHL

“SIS ‘d 338 SUAGWNN JO NOILYNV1dxXa YO4

=z S

< 2 2

A J

tree)

SSN , he

an)

ANUWZAVG TIGUVYW 3LIHM

WLSEA Sx0y

’ ae Sevig a78uvn axt 40] | 3Z1S FHL MOWS S3Nri agaK

UMAH W3A0 OMAva | JNItu3AVeL dwn

GQWIHL 3HL 40 21GUWAW HLM Gani ONIGIING Nova

ANITOLI advo

BN

4904

WN¥od BH OL ONLIVIAE

NVid JIGUWW FHL JO SLNIWOWSA ? | ‘ WNIdV1ayNOIS

S aHL 4O 31LIS

‘ ’ | A Ny r

. 7 2

an

+

a)

–

VOL. XX.

*exe Reference to Antiquities 1 Arch of Constantine 7 = 2 Dolabella \} / e oe Janis f \ 4 Septimius Severus in the Forum (i ‘ ‘ oe ott the Velabrum. 6 Atrium of Vesta. if Basilica. Ulpia 8 Mamertine Prison # Palace of Caligula. JO Column of M. Aurelius il i » Phocas : oe R F oo Drajan UnpuaD cy 13 Colossus of Nero = ‘) I4 Forum Palladian E : Ce Ld, Meta. Sudans , “2] 1G… Obelisk of the Lateran eae | AZ wimg ame OF §. M Maggiore hry 18 * of the Minerva \ f © 3 U4 ‘ it mnie ae Papele ‘ oe 20 . noe. Plogea Navona Pare ; al . pr ons ems Qaaeriretl ~ a RR a sone . Lantheon Porta S.Pancrazio\ 23 : on. Mt Cltorio (Porta Aurelia) \ a4 4 of Trinita, de Monti 26 ‘ on the Pinelan 26 5 of the Vatican. a7 A “ on Villa, Matted 28… Porticus of Octavia RG inen Tomb of Bibulus BO. Site of the Septizoniam. 31 Temple of Faustina 32 o* 1 nn Concora, es – » the Di Consentes JA. ‘ * Saturn = 35 * . _. Fortune = 36 a ». Mars Uleor 37. “ oo, Romulus 38 Torre de Conti 39 van Gella Milixia MODERN ROME showing the Municipal Scheme for the ENLARGEMENT OF THE CITY,*

1885.

SCALES . Engi sh Feet oS 1000 20007 3000 4000 French Metres

ENCYCLOPADIA BR

NH

= PLATE VII.

—

ew Of

- 2 YQ

fi Wy wal rd LRUE/SOrti OLE rcintan: Ky >

Di :

SES

Men of

Asro ie

Sexe ca Cece Pica

—= ‘i e ae i \ L

et

D . ante: By Mospit. z ; a) iy NI : riclinio

Baptisiryoi ConstapARe FX

n

*1 P*di Porta S.Giovanni*

S x eo {Pq Porta Metronia (closed) 7 – | or Metrovia

Explanation of Colours

(7) Existing blocks of houses Pe | Houses to be demolished. to make new Streets:

al The Municipal. Scheme for new Houses, Streets Picea and. River Embankment

Gardens and Meadows

Railways

ng 4 ba é S Be Yona re ° a ty, _ . H on of Sangaly- – Sebastiano (Porta Appia) —__

’ W. & A. K Johnston JPNICA. NINTH EDITION.

= a . a ae Se. |

‘

— —_=

‘ra

ra

Ce

De le ee ed

ay

ee ee : es a

a

ae

gta el

“NOJLIGS HLININ “VOINNVLINS VIdadOT9A0N9

oz : oO

oos ooF oos 002 oot os 4 sop, wey

{ P e . } 77 i 2 “theta : o i x ote ao at 2 : ‘ – Sat =e be: c g } J Ir Se neu we: = Swe : oS; “seal PAD 0 \ es we ana 2 “Pp % . : x. J _ “ 7 ae =a re Dora rae f aa. 5 a 2 cf 2 Z

ie)

Nw Sagryag sat F

a8! S20re ry y

aa =

a)

XT LVI a WO Ww — XY “TOA

pees

Fria

AM,

a

Simi

-

PAR A Hy” ‘

7

Vol 21 (ROT-Siam)

Britannica 9th

co

ara SHS eRu an

.

‘2 au H a a} i

. .

: wate sSosststesanenesates

eSst3= saree,

ae it

a

See

HiME Hh RAH Rin

3 Fee

< : _~ =

SSS : = Ps = r Ta a ene “: ee ros a5

:

eeseecoorat

—- — aretet ste Taietecacatecetess > oo

wiereteleralet ares. cesates = weiiieiiveisteersissss 2S =: reiatares SSE ms

ios series oes = – Sereaeaman : SSS ast = SSiecaverecese

= =

Set Se SS Saneteteres SES = Jacetete neletes: ae

- = 5

‘ = oh Sareceietelsteae= arenas eee

a

or

ee Soe Se

Tose as elena ——— eee ere wiereTaTerere ecerere. See

earners = SSS

=

Se See a

PERI ue be ae t ae it i i i i a i Hy _ | a an te a . a ve : i . ae i i ae ie Haat ‘ i a M : hi . a a a i Let | Hi . . SG Raa OA (a . . SE aE Ua a |) hhh iti NUS RR HH i SARS Oe it Aish ht RR aa

. .

a oo a a . . 0 oe 7 a ae fii : – Ht au a 7 oe FT ae nny | a : a i [2 a ah . i a. oo a AA . i a iu i PHHEtet i } i ult it i ae i ui : ee i f } / si : Hit Mi . a. ca | te ‘ a th ae vs He ne La

. .

ie Fe EE a ER it ne a ait ite He tH i th . / 7 Hee ci i | | ae Ht a _ LL oo i i oo 4 i 7 iat ratrit a i i ie ue i a uy a a rit a c i a | na . [a bi i / | tlt 7 . : a a 7. rr ae i : i a 7 i i i a if ig ft a ae i a . Oe

‘Ii

as

eS |e

Boh har rele has pip 4 iw

_ .

i” ve Ton Gaby Pare eo! i

- a . 6 ae . ‘ed y.

= o \ 7 ;

ENCYCLOPHDIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

THE

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA

DICTIONARY

OF

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XxXI

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXVI

[All Rights reserved. |

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA.

ROTHE

oe RicHarp (1799-1867), theologian, was born at Posen, January 28, 1799, of parents in a good position. After passing through the grammar schools of Stettin and Breslau, he studied theology in the universities of Heidelberg and Berlin (1817-20) under Daub, Schleier- macher, and Neander, the philosophers and _ historians Hegel, Creuzer, and Schlosser, exercising a considerable influence in shaping his thought. Fron: 1820 to 1822 he was in the clerical seminary at Wittenberg, and spent the next year in private study under his father's roof at Breslau. In the autumn of 1823 he was appointed chaplain to the Prussian embassy in Rome, of which Baron Bunsen was the head. This post he exchanged in 1828 for a professorship in the Wittenberg seminary, and hence in 1837 he removed to Heidelberg as professor and director of a new clerical seminary; in 1849 he accepted an invitation to Bonn as professor and university preacher, but in 1854 he returned to Heidelberg as pro- fessor of theology and member of the Oberkirchenrath, a position he held until his death, August 20, 1867. Rothe's mental and religious development was one of continuous progress, Asa youth he was the subject of deep religious feeling, with a decided bent towards a supernatural mysticism ; his chosen authors were those of the romantic school, and Novalis remained his life through a special favourite. In Berlin and Wittenberg he came under the influence of Pietism as represented by such men as Stier and Tholuck, though the latter pro- nounced him a "very modern Christian." He afterwards himself confessed that, though he had been a sincere, he was never a happy Pietist. In Rome, where he enjoyed the intimate friendship of Bunsen, and studied church history under the broadening influence of classical and ecclesiastical art, his mind broke loose from the straitened life and narrow views of Pietism and he learned to look at Christianity in its human and universalistic aspects. From that time he began to develop and work out his great idea, the inseparable relation of religion and morals, finding in the latter the necessary sphere and the realiza- tion of the idea of the former. He began then, and particularly after the revolution of J uly 1830, likewise to give a more definite form to his peculiar view of the relations of church and state. In consequence of this

enlargement of his ideas of the world, religion, morals, Christianity, the church and the state, Rothe gradually found himself out of harmony with the Pietistic thought and life of Wittenberg, and his removal to Heidelberg in 1837 and the publication of his first important work (Anfinge der

christlichen Kirche) in that year coincide with the attainment of the principal theological positions with which his name is associated. During the middle period of his career (1837-61) he led the life of a scholastic recluse, taking no active public part in ecclesiastical affairs in any way. During the last six years of his life (1861-67), partly owing to his liberation from great domestic cares and partly to the special circumstances of the church in Baden, he came forward publicly and actively as the advocate of a free theology and of the PRoresTANTENVEREIN (g.v.). This important change in Rothe's practice was preceded by the publication of a valuable series of theological essays (in the Studien und Kritiken for 1860), afterwards published in a separate volume (Zur Dogmatik, Gotha, Ist ed. 1863, 2d ed. 1869), on revelation and inspiration more particularly. These essays were a very searching examina- tion of the relation of revelation to Scripture, and pro- voked much hostile criticism in quarters previously friendly to Rothe, where the relation was usually treated as almost one of identity. In consequence of this publica- tion, and his advocacy of the programme of the Pro- testantenverein, he was classed at the end of his life amongst the more decided theological liberals rather than with the moderate orthodox party, amongst whom so many of his personal friends were to be found.

_ Rothe was one of the most if not the most profound and influential of modern German theologians next to Schleiermacher. Like the latter he combined with the keenest logical faculty an intensely religious spirit, while his philosophical tendencies were rather in sympathy with Hegel than Schleiermacher, and theosophic mysticism was more congenial to him than the abstractions of Spinoza, to whom Schleiermacher owed so much. He classed him- self amongst the theosophists, and energetically claimed to be a convinced and happy supernaturalist in a scientific

-age. A peculiarity of his thought was its systematic

completeness and consistency ; aphoristic, unsystematic, XXI. — 1

timidly halting speculation was to him intolerable. Though his own system may seem to contain extremely doubtful or even fantastic elements, it is

allowed by all that it is in its general outlines a noble massive whole, constructed by a profound, comprehensive, fearless, and logical mind. Another peculiarity of his thought was the realistic nature of his spiritualism: his abstractions are all real existences; his spiritual entities are real and corporeal ; his truth is actual being. Hence Rothe, un- like Schleiermacher, lays great stress, for instance, on the personality of God, on the reality of the worlds of good and evil spirits, and on the visible second coming of Christ. Hence his religious feeling and theological specu- lation demanded their realization in a kingdom of God coextensive with man's nature, terrestrial history, and human society ; aud thus his theological system became a Theologische Ethik. It is on the work published under this title that Rothe's permanent reputation as a theo- logian and ethical writer will rest. The first edition, in three volumes, was published in 1845-48, and remained twelve years out of print before the second (1867-71, in five volumes) appeared. It was the author's purpose to rewrite the whole, but he had completed the first two volumes only of the new edition when death overtook him, The remainder was reprinted from the first edition by Prof. Holtzmann, with the addition of some notes and emendations left by the author.

This work begins with a general sketch of the author's system of speculative theology in its two divisions, theology proper and cosmology, the latter falling into the two subdivisions of Physik (the world of nature) and Zthik (the world of spirit). It is the last subdivision with which the body of the work is occupied. After an analysis of the religious consciousness, which yields the doctrine of an absolute personal and spiritual God, Rothc proceeds to deduce from his idea of God the process and history of creative development, which is eternally proceeding and bringing forth, as its unending purpose, worlds of spirits, partially self-creative and sharing the absolute personality of the Creator. As a thorough-going evolu- tionist Rothe regards the natural man as the consummation of the development of physical nature, and obtains spirit as the personal attainment, with divine help, of those beings In whom the further creative process of moral development is carried on. His theory leaves the natural man, without hesitation, to be developed by the natural processes of animal evolution. The attainment of the higher stage of devclopment is the moral and religious vocation of man; this higher stage is self-determination, the

performance of every human function as a voluntary and intelligent agent, or asa person, having as its cosmical effect the subjection of all material to spiritual existences. This personal process of spiritualization is the continuation of the eternal divinc work of creation. Thus the moral life and the religious life coincide, and when normal are identical ; both have the same aim and are occupied with the same task, the accomplishment of the spiritualization of the world. “ Piety, that it may become truth and reality, demands morality as its fulfilment, as the only conercte element in which the idea of fellowship with God is realized; morality, that it may find its perfect unfolding, requires the aid of piety, in the light of which alone it can comprehend its own idea in all its breadth and depth.” Rothe follows Schleiermacher in dividing his ethical system into the threc parts of the doctrine of moral ends (Giéiterlehre), or the products of moral action, the doctrine of virtue (Tugendlehre), or of the power producing moral good, and the doctrine of duty (Pflichtenlehre), or the specific form and manner in which that power obtains its results. The process of human development Rothe regards as necessarily taking an abnormal form and passing through the phase of sin. This abnormal condition necessitates a fresh creative act, that of salvation, which was, however, from the first part of the divine plan of devclopment. As a preparation for this salvation supernatural revelation was required for the purifying aud revivification of the religious consciousness, and the Saviour Himsclf had to appear in human history as a fresh miraculous creation, born of a woman but not begotten by a man. In consequence of His supernatural birth the Saviour, or the seeond Adam, was free from original sin. By His own moral and religious development He made possible a relation of perfect fellowship between God and man, which was the new and highest stage of the divine creationof mankind. This stage of development inaugurated by the Saviour is attained by means of His kingdom or the community of salvation, which is both moral and religious, and in the first instance and temporarily only rcligious—that is, a

church. As men reach the full devclopment of their nature, and appropriate the perfection of the Saviour, the separation between the religious and the moral life will vanish, and the Christian state, as the highest sphere of human life representing all human functions, will displace the chureh. ‘‘In proportion as the Saviour Christianizes the state by means of the church must the progres- sive completion of the structure of the church prove the

cause of its abolition." The decline of the church is therefore not to be deplored, but recognized as the consequence of the independence and completeness of the Christian life. It is the third section of his work—the Pflichtenlehre—whieh is generally most highly valued, and where his full strength as an ethieal thinker is displayed, without any mixture of theosophic speculation.

Since Rothe's death several volumes of his sermons and of his leetures (on dogmaties, the history of homileties) and a eolleetion of brief essays and religious meditations under the title of Stille Stunden (Wittenberg, 1872) have been published. See F. Nippold, Richard Rothe, ein christliches Lebensbild (2 vols., Wittenberg, 1873-74); Schenkel, "Zur Erinnerung an Dr R. Rothe," in the Allgemeine kirchliche Zeitschrift, 1867-68 ; Holtzmann, '' Richard Rothe," in the Jahrbuchdes Protestantenvereins, 1869; Schwarz, Zur Geschichte der neuesten Theologie (4th ed., Leipsic, 1869, pp. 417-444); Pfleiderer, Religionsphilosophie auf geschichtlicher Grundlage (2d ed., Berlin, 1884, vol. i. pp. 611-615). (J. F. S.)

ROTHERHAM, a market-town and municipal borough in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated at the junc- tion of the Rother with the Don navigation, on several railway lines, 5 miles north-east of Sheffield. The parish church of All Saints, occupying the site of a building dating from Anglo-Saxon times, was erected in the reign. of Edward IV., and is a good specimen of Perpendicular. Among the other principal public buildings are the new market-hall, the post office, the court-house, the temper. ance hall, St George's Hall, the council hall, and the cor- poration offices. There are a large number of educational and literary institutions, including the grammar school founded in 1483, the people's charity school, the Indc- pendent college, the mechanics' institute, the free library, and the literary and scientific society. There is a large hospital, besides almshouses and various other charities. The town possesses extensive iron, steel, and brass works, potteries, glass works, breweries, saw mills, and rope yards. The population of the municipal borough (area 5995 acres) in 1881 was 34,782.

The town is of Roman origin, and was of some importance in Anglo-Saxon times. In the time of Edward the Confessor it possessed a market and a church. Mary queen of Scots stayed a night at Rotherham while a prisoner,

as did also Charles I. when in the hands of the Scots. During the Civil War it sided with the Parliament. It was taken possession of by the Royalists in 1643, but after the victory of Marston Moor was yielded up toa detachment of the Parliamentary forces. The townships of Rother- ham and Kimberworth were incorporated as a municipal borough in August 1871, the adjacent suburbs being included in 1879. The corporation act as the sanitary authority, and own the water- works, gasworks, and markets. ‘They have introduccd a system of main drainage, and have also provided a public park and a free library.

ROTHESAY, a royal burgh, and the principal town of the county of Bute, Scotland, is situated in the island of Bute, at the head of a well-sheltered and spacious bay in

‘the Firth of Clyde, 40 miles W. of Glasgow and 18 8.W. of

Greenock, with which there is frequent communication by steamers. The bay affords good anchorage in any wind, and there are also a good harbour and pier. The town is the headquarters of an extensive fishing district, and is much frequented as a watering place. Besides two hydropathic establishments, it has several hotels and numerous lodging houses. Facing the bay there is an extensive esplanade. In the centre of the town are the ruins of the ancient castle, supposed by some to have been erected in 1098 by Magnus Barefoot, and by others at the same date by the Scots to defend themselves against the Norwegians. The village which grew up round the castle was made a royal burgh by Robert ITI., who created his eldest son David duke of Rothsay. During the Commonwealth the castle was garrisoned by Cromwell’s troops. It was burned by the followers of Argyll in 1685, and remained neglected till the rubbish was cleared away by the marquis of Bute in 1816. The principal

modern buildings are the aquarium, the town-hall and county buildings, the public halls, the academy, and the Thomson institute. The corporation consists of a provost, three bailies, a dean of guild, a treasurer, and twelve councillors. The population of the royal burgh in 1871 was 8027 and in 1881 it was 8291. ROTHSCHILD, the name of a Jewish family which has

acquired an unexampled position from the magnitude of its financial transactions. The original name was Bauer, the founder of the house being MayErr ANSELM (17438-1812), the son of Anselm Moses Bauer, a small Jewish merchant of Frankfort-on-the-Main. His father wished him to become a rabbi, but he preferred business, and ultimately set up asa money lender at the sign of the “Red Shield” (othschild) in the Frankfort Juden-gasse. He had already acquired some standing as a banker when his numismatic tastes obtained for him the friendship of William, ninth landgrave and after- wards elector of Hesse-Cassel, who in 1801 made him his agent. In the following year Rothschild negotiated his first great Government loan, ten million thalers for the Danish Government. When the landgrave was compelled to flee from his capital on the entry of the French, he placed his silver and other bulky treasures in the hands of Rothschild, who, not without considerable risk, took charge of them and buried them, it is said in a corner of his garden, whence he dug them up as opportunity arose for disposing of them. This he did to such advantage as to be able afterwards to return their value to the elector at 5 per cent. interest. He died at Frankfort 19th September 1812, leaving ten children, five sons and five daughters. Branches of the business were established at Vienna, London, Paris, and Naples, each being in charge of one of the sons, the chief of the firm always residing at Frankfort, where, in accordance with the wish of the founder, all important consultations are held. By a system of cooperation and joint counsels, aided by the skilful employment of subordinate agents, they obtained unexampled opportunities of acquiring an accurate know-ledge of the condition of the financial market, and practically embraced the whole of Europe within their financial network. The unity of the interests of the several members of the firm has been preserved by the system of intermarriages which has been the general practice of the descendants of the five brothers, and the house has thus grown in solidity and influence with every succeeding generation. Each of the brothers received in 1815 from Austria the privilege of hereditary landowners, and in 1822 they were created barons by the same country. The charge of the Frankfort house de-volved on the eldest, ANSELM Mayer (1773-1855), born 12th June 1773, who was chosen a member of the royal Prussian privy council of commerce, and, in 1820, Bavarian consul and court banker. The Vienna branch was under- taken by Sonomon (1774-1826), born 9th December 1774, who entered into intimate relations with Prince Metter- nich, which

contributed in no small degree to bring about the connexion of the firm with the allied powers. The third brother, Naruan Mayer (1777-1836), born 16th September 1777, has, however, generally been regarded as the financial genius of the family, and the chief originator of the transactions which have created for the house its unexampled position in the financial world. He came to Manchester about 1800 to act as a purchaser for his father of manufactured goods; but at the end of five years he removed to London, where he found full scope for his financial genius. The boldness and skill of his transactions, which caused him at first to be regarded as rash and unsafe by the leading banking firms and financial merchants, latterly awakened their admiration

and envy. By the employment of carrier pigeons and of

_fast-sailing boats of his own for the transmission of news

he was able to utilize to the best advantage his special sources of information, while no one was a greater adept in the art of promoting the rise and fall of the stocks. The colossal influence of the house dates from an operation of his in 1810. In that year Wellington made some drafts which the English Government could not meet; these were purchased by Rothschild at a liberal discount, and renewed to the Government, which finally redeemed at par. From this time the house became associated with the allied powers in the struggle against Napoleon, it being chiefly through it that they were able to negotiate loans to carry on the war. Rothschild never lost faith in the ultimate overthrow of Napoleon, his all being virtually staked on the issue of the contest. He is said to have been present at the battle of Waterloo, and to have watched the varying fortunes of the day with feverish eagerness. Being able to transmit to London private information of the allied success several hours before it reached the public, he effected an immense profit by the purchase of stock, which had been greatly depressed on account of the news of Blucher’s defeat two days previously. Rothschild was the first to popularize foreign loans in Britain by fixing the rate in sterling money and making the dividends pay- able in London and not in foreign capitals. Latterly he became the financial agent of nearly every civilized Govern- ment, although persistently declining

contracts for Spain or the American States. He did not confine himself to operations on a large scale, but on the contrary made it a principle to despise or neglect no feasible opportunity of transacting business, while at the same time his operations gradually extended to every quarter of the globe. He died 28th July 1836, and was succeeded in the manage- ment of the London house by his son Lionzt (1808-1879), born 22d November 1808, whose name will always be associated with the removal of the civil disabilities of the Jews. He was elected a member for the City of London in 1847, and again in 1849 and 1852, but it was not till 1858 that the joint operation of an Act of Parliament and a resolution of the House of Commons, allowing the omission from the oath of the words to which as a Jew he conscientiously objected, rendered it possible for him to take his seat. He continued to represent the city of London till 1874. Jacop (1792-1868), the youngest of the original brothers, was intrusted with the important mission of starting the business in Paris after the restora- tion of the Bourbons, for whom he negotiated large loans. At the Revolution of 1848 he was a heavy loser, and had also to be protected for a time by a special guard. It was by his capital that the earliest railroads were con- structed in France; the profits he obtained from the speculation were very large. He died 15th November 1868. The Naples branch was superintended by an- other of the brothers, Karn (1780-1855). It was always the least important of the five, and after the annexation of Naples to Italy in 1860 it was discontinued.

See Das Haus Rothschild, 1858 ; Picciotto, Sketches of Anglo-Jewish History, 1875; Francis, Chronicles and Characters of the Stock Exchange, 1853; Treskow, Biographische Notizen tiber Nathan Meyer

Rothschild nebst seinem Testament, 1887 ; Roqueplan, Le Baron James de Rothschild, 1868.

ROTHWELL, an urban sanitary district in the West Riding of Yorkshire, situated in a pleasant valley four miles south of Leeds. It is of great antiquity, and soon after the Conquest was granted as a dependency of the castle of Pontefract to the Lacys, who erected at it a baronial residence of which there are still some remains. The church of the Holy Trinity is an old structure in

the Later English style with embattled parapet. There are a mechanics' institute and a working men's club. Coal and stone are obtained in the neighbourhood, and the town possesses match works and rope and twine factories. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 3302 acres) in 1871 was 3733, and in 1881 it was

5105.

ROTIFERA. The Rotifera (or Rotatoria) form a small, in many respects well-defined, but somewhat isolated class of the animal kingdom. They are here treated of sepa- rately, partly on account of the difficulty of placing them in one of the large phyla, partly on account of their special interest to microscopists.

Now familiarly known as "wheel animalcules" from the wheel-like motion produced by the rings of cilia which generally occur in the head region, the so-called rotatory organs, they were first discovered by Leeuwenhoek (1),} to whom we also owe the discovery of Bacteria and ciliate Infusoria. Leeuwenhoek described the Rotifer vulgaris in 1702, and he subsequently described Melicerta ringens and other species. A great variety of forms were described by other observers, but they were not separated as a class from the unicellular organisms (Protozoa) with which they usually occur until the appearance of Ehrenberg's great monograph (2), which contained a mass of detail regarding their structure. The classification there put forward by Ehrenberg is still widely adopted, but numer- ous observers have since added to our knowledge of the anatomy of the group (8). At the present day few groups of the animal kingdom are so well known to the micro- scopist, few groups present more interesting affinities to the morphologist, and few multicellular animals such a low physiological condition.

General Anatomy.—The Rotifera are multicellular animals of microscopic size which present a ccelom. They are bilaterally symmetrical and present no true metameric segmentation. A head region is generally well marked, and most forms present a definite tail region. This tail region has been termed the "pseudopodium." It varies very much in the extent to which it is developed. It attains its highest development in forms like Philodina, which

affect a leech-like method of progression and use it as a means of attachment. We may pass from this through a series of forms where it becomes less and less highly developed. In such forms as Brachionus it serves as a directive organ in swimming, while in a large number of other forms it is only represented by a pair of terminal styles or flaps. In the sessile forms it becomes a con- tractile pedicle with a suctorial extremity. A pseudo- podium is entirely absent in Asplanchna, T'riarthra, Polyarthra, and a few other genera. The pseudopodium, when well developed, is a very muscular organ, and it may contain a pair of glands (fig. 2, a, gl) which secrete an ad- hesive material.

The surface of the body is covered by a firm homogeneous structureless cuticle. This cuticle may become hardened by a further development of chitin, but no calcareous deposits ever take place in it. The cuticle remains softest in those forms which live in tubes. Among the free-living forms the degree of hardening varies considerably. In some cases contraction of the body merely throws the cuticle into wrinkles (Notommata, Asplanchna) ; in others definite ring-like joints are produced which telescope into one another during contraction; while in others again it becomes quite firm and rigid and resembles the carapace of one of the Entomostraca ; it is then termed a "lorica." The lorica may be prolonged at various points into spines, which may attain a considerable length. The surface may be variously modified, being in some cases smooth, in others

1 These numbers refer to the bibliography at p. 8.

marked, dotted, ridged, or sculptured in various ways (fig. 1, Kx). The curved spines of Philodina aculeata (fig: 1, 2) and the long rigid spines of Zriarthra are further develop- ments in this direction. The so-called sete of Polyarthra on the other hand are more complex in nature, and are moved by muscles, and thus approach the "limbs" of Pedalion.

Fig. 1.—A, Floscularia, campanulata, an adult male, drawn from a dead specimen (after Hudson): ¢, testis; oc, eye-spots. B, Floscularia

appendiculata, an adult female (after Gegenbaur): a, the ciliated flexible proboscis. C, Stephano- ceros eichhornii: a, the urceolus. D, Microcodon clavus, ventral view (after Grenacher): m, mouth; a, bristles ; x, architroch ; s, lateral sense-organs. E, Polyarthra plaiyptera : oc, eye-spot; 2” isolated tufts representing a cephalo- troch ; x, branchiotroch; a, 6, and c, three pairs of appendages which are moved bythe muscles m. F, another figure of Polyarthra, to show the position which the appendages may take up. G, Philodina aculeata: oc, eye-spot; s, calear. H, Actinurus neptunius. oc, eye-spot; s, calear. I, Asplanchna sie- boldit, male, viewed from the abdominal surface : a, anterior short arms; b, posterior longer arms; m, mouth; 2’, cephalotrochic tufts; a, branchiotroch, J, Asplanchna sieboldii, female; letters as before, K, Noteus quadvicornis, to show the extent to which the lorica may become sculptured. (All, except where otherwise stated, from Pritchard.)

Several genera present an external casing or sheath or tube which is termed an “urceolus.” In Floscularia and Stephanoceros the urceolus is gelatinous and perfectly hyaline ; in Conochtlus numerous individuals live in such a hyaline urceolus arranged in a radiating manner. The urceolus, which is secreted by the animal itself, may become covered with foreign particles, and in one species, the well-known Melicerta ringens, the animal builds up its urceolus with pellets which it manufactures from foreign

particles, and deposits in a regular oblique or spiral series, and which are cemented together by a special secretion. The urceolus serves as a defence, as the animal can by con- tracting its stalk withdraw itself entirely within the tube.

Locomotor Organs.—While, as mentioned above, several genera or individual species present long spines, these become movable, and may be spoken of as appendages, in two genera only. In Polyarthra (fig. 1, £, F) there are

four groups of processes or plumes placed at the sides of .

Fig. 2,—Floscularia appendicuiata. A and B represent the same animal, some of the organs being shown in one figure and some in the other. oc, eye-spots; g, nerve ganglion ; p, pharynx (the mouth should be shown opening opposite the letter); ma, the mastax ; €, esophagus; st, stomach; a, anus, opening the cloaca; gl, mucous glands in the pseudopodium; 2, nephridia; /, flame-eells; bi, contractile vesicle ; m, m, muscles.

the body, each of which groups can be separately moved

up and down by means of muscular fibres attached to their

bases, which project into the body. The processes them-

selves are unjointed and rigid. In Pedalion (fig. 3), a

remarkable form discovered by Dr ©. J. Hudson in 1871

(12, 18, 14, and 15), and found in numbers several times

since, these appendages have acquired a new and quite

special development. They are six innumber. The largest is placed ventrally at some distance below the mouth. Its

free extremity is a plumose fan-like expansion (fig. 3,

A, a, and H). It is (in common with the others) a hollow

process into which run two pairs of broad, coarsely trans-

versely striated muscles. Each pair has a single insertion on the inner wall—the one pair near the free extremity of the limb, the other near its attachment ; the bands run up, one of each pair on each side and run right round the body forming an incomplete muscular girdle, the ends approximating in the median dorsal line. Below this point springs the large median dorsal limb, which termin- ates in groups of long sete. It presents a single pair of muscles attached along its inner wall which run up and form a muscular girdle round the body in its posterior third. On each side is attached a superior dorso-lateral and an inferior ventro-lateral appendage, each with a

fan- like plumose termination consisting of compound hairs, found elsewhere only among the Crustacea 3 each of these

is moved by muscles running upwards towards the neck and arising immediately under the trochal disk, the inferior ventro-lateral pair also presenting muscles which form a girdle in the hind region of the body. Various other muscles are present: there are two complete girdles in the neck region immediately behind the mouth; there are also muscles which move the hinder region of the body. In addition to these the body presents various processes which are perhaps some of them unrepresented in other Rotifers. In the median dorsal line immediately below the trochal disk there is a short conical process presenting a pair of muscles which render it capable of slight move- ment. From a recess at the extremity of this process spring a group of long setose hairs the bases of which are connected with a filament probably nervous in nature. This doubtless represents a structure found in many Rotifers, and variously known as the “calcar,” “siphon,” “tentaculum,” or “antenna.” This calcar is double in Tubicolaria and Melicerta. It is very well developed in the genera Rotifer, Philodina, and others, and is, when so developed, slightly retractile. It appears to be repre- sented in many forms by a pit or depression set with hairs. The calcar has been considered both as an intromittent organ and a respiratory tube for the admission of water. It is now, however, universally considered to be sensory in nature. Various forms present processes in other parts

af A. Vlg ¥ g

= Say i”

<<

Silly,

395

sek? Tr Willy Wee,

OE TEE

Fig. 3.—Pedalion mira. A, Lateral surface view of an adult female: a, median ventral appendage; 6, median dorsal appendage; c, inferior ventro-lateral appendage : d, superior dorso-lateral appendage ; 7, dorsal sensc-organ (calcar) ; g, “chin;” x, cephalotroch. B, lateral view, showing the viscera: oc, eye- spots ; , nephridia; e, eiliated processes, probably serving for attachment ; other letters as above. C, ventral view: 2x‘, cephalotroch; 2, branchiotroch; other letters as above. D, ventral view, showing the musculature (cf. text). E, dorsal view of:a male: a, lateral appendages ; 6, dorsal appendage. F, lateral view of a male. G, enlarged view of the sense-organ marked 7. Il, enlarged view of the median ventral appendage. (All after Hudsun.)

of the body which have doubtless a similar function, ¢.g., Microcodon (fig. 1, D, s) with its pair of lateral organs. Pedalion presents a pair of ciliated processes in the posterior region of the body (fig. 3, B, c, and p, e), which it can apparently use as a means of attachment; Dr Hudson states that he has seen it anchored by these and swimming round and round in a circle. They possibly re-

present the flaps found on the tail of other forms. Pedalion also has a small ciliated muscular process (fig. 3, a, g) placed immediately below the mouth, and termed a “ chin,” which appears to be merely a greater development of a sort of lower lip which occurs in many Rotifers.

Muscular System.—All the Rotifera present a muscular system which is generally very well developed. Transverse striation occurs among the fibres to a varying extent, being well marked in cases where the muscle is much used. The muscles which move the body as a whole are arranged as circular and longitudinal series, but they are arranged in special groups and do not form a com- plete layer of the body-wall as in the various worms. Some of the longitudinal muscles are specially developed in connexion with the tail or pedicle. Other muscles are developed in connexion with special systems of organs,—the trochal disks, the jaw apparatus, and the reproductive system. The muscles in connexion with the trochal disk serve to protrude or withdraw it, and to move it about, when extruded, in various directions. The protrusion is probably, however, generally effected by the elasticity of the

integument coming into play during the relaxation of the retractor muscles, and by a general contraction of the body wall. The tentaculiferous apparatus of Polyzoa and Gephyrea is protruded in the same manner.

Trochal Disk.—This structure is the peculiar characteristic of the class. It is homologous with the ciliated bands of the larvee of Echinoderms, Chetopods, Molluses, &c., and with the tenta- culiferous apparatus of Polyzoa and Gephyrea, and has been termed in common with these a “velum.” This velum presents itself in various stages of complexity. It is found asa single circum-oral ring (piliduwm), as a single pre-oral ring (Chetopod larve), or as a Single pre-oral ring coexisting with one or more post-oral rings (Cheetopod larvae, Holothurian Jarve). We may here assume that the ancestral condition was a single circum-oral ring associated with a terminal mouth and the absence of an anus, and that the exist- ence of other rings posterior to this is an expression of metameric segmentation, 7.¢., a repetition of similar parts. With the develop- ment of a prostomiate condition a certain change necessarily takes place in the position of this band: a portion of it comes to lie longitudinally; but it may still remain a single band, as in the larva of many Echinoderms. How have the other above-mentioned conditions of the velum come about? How has the pre-oral band been developed? Two views have been held with regard to this question. According to the one view, the fact whether the single band is a pra:-oral or a post-oral one depends upon the position in which the anus is about to develop. If the anus develops in such a position that mouth and anus lie on one and the same side of the band, the latter becomes pre-oral ; if, however, the anus develops so that the mouth and anus lie upon opposite sides of the band, the band becomes post-oral. If we hold this view we must consider any second band, whether pre- or post-oral, to arise as a new development. The other view premises that the anus always forms so as to leave the primitive ring or “architroch” post-oral, 7.2., between mouth and anus. Concurrently with the development of a prostomium this architroch somewhat changes its position and the two lateral portions come to lie longitudinally ; these may be supposed to have met in the median dorsal line and to have coalesced so as to leave two rings—the one pre-oral (a “ cephalo- troch”), the other post-oral (a “ branchiotroch”); this latter may atrophy, leaving the single pre-oral ring, or it may become further developed and thrown into more or less elaborate folds. The exist- ing

condition of the trochal disk or velum in the Rotifera seems to the writer of this article to bear out the latter view as to the way in which modifications of the velum may have come about.

In its simplest condition it forms a single circum-oral ring, as in Microcodon (fig. 1, p). The structures at the sides of the mouth in this form are stated to be bristles, and have therefore nothing to do with the velum (fig. 4, a, y). This simple ring may beeome thrown into folds, so forming a series of processes standing up around the mouth; this is the condition in Stephanoceros (fig. 4, B, p). There are, however, but few forms presenting this simple condi- tion ; and it must be remembered that the evidence for the assump- tion here made, that this is a persistent architroch and not a bran- chiotroel persisting where a cephalotroch has vanished, is not at present conclusive. This band, may, while remaining single and perfectly continuous, become prolonged around a lobe overhanging the mouth—a prostomium. This condition occurs in Philodina (fig. 4, E, F, »); the two sides of the post-oral ring do not meet dorsally, but are carried up and are continuous with the row of cilia lining the “wheels.” There is thus one continuous ciliated band, a portion of which runs up in front of the mouth. This condition corresponds to that of the Auricularian larva. The fold- ing of the band has become already somewhat complicated ; a hypothetical intermediate condition is shown in fig. 4, c, p. The next stage in the advancing complexity is that the prostomial por- tion of the band (fig. 4, G, H, p’) becomes separated as a distinct ring, a cephalotroch ; we find such a stage in Lacinularia (fig. 4,

FERA

G, H), where both cephalotroch and branchiotroch remain fairly simple in shape. In Melicerta (fig. 4, 1, 3) both cephalotroch and branchiotroch are thrown into folds. Lastly, we find that in such forms as Brachionus the cephalotroch becomes first convoluted and

f

4

Fre. 4—Diagrams of the Trochal Disk. A, Microcodon, B, Stephanoceros; the mouth lies in the centre of a group of tentacles. C, hypothetical intermediate form between Aficrocodon and Philodina, showing the development of a pro- stomial portion of the velum. D, dorsal view of the same. E, Philodina. F, dorsal view of the same. G, Lacinularia; the dotted line represents the por- tion of the velum which has become separated as a special ring—a cephalotroch. H, dorsal view of the same. I, Melicerta; the dotted line represents the cephalotroch; both this and the branchiotroch have become thrown into folds, J, dorsal view of the same. K,' Brachionus; there is a large pree-oral lobe with three ciliated regions, shown by the dotted lines ¢, c, a discontinuous cephalotroch. L, dorsal view of the same.

m, mouth; p, p', velum ; 7, architroch ; py', portion of the architroch which becomes carried forward to line the prostomial region, but does not become separated ; c, cephalotroch. (Original.)

then discontinuous (fig. 4, K, L, c), and further it may become so reduced as to be represented only by a few isolated tufts, as in Asplanchna (fig. 1, 1, «and a'); in such a form as Lindia (fig. 6, C) the branchiotroch has vanished and the cephalotroch has become reduced to the two small patches at the sides of the head.

The trochal apparatus serves the Rotifera as a locomotive organ and to bring the food particles to the mouth ; the cilia work so as to produce currents towards the mouth.

Digestive System.—This consists of the following regions :—(1) the oral cavity; (2) the pharynx; (3) the cesophagus; (4) the stomach ; (5) the intestine, which terminates in an anus. The anus is absent in one group.

The pharynx contains the mastax with its teeth; these are calcareous structures, and are known as the trophi. In a typical mastax (8, 9) (Bra-] chionus, fig. 5, a) &~ there are a median anvil or inews and two hammer-like portions, mailet. The incus consists of two rami (e) resting upon a cen- tral fulerum (f); each malleus con- sists of a handle or manubrium (e) and a head or wneus (@), pee a comb-

ike structure. Fig. 5 shows some of the most important Fig. 5.-Trophi of various forms: A, Brachionus; B, modifications which Digiena forcipata; C, Asplanchna; D, Philodina. f, the apparatus may fulcrum, and e, e, rami, forming the incus; c, manubrium, exhibit. The parts and d, uncus, forming the malleus, (After Hudson.)

may become very slender, as in Diglena foreipata (fig. 5, B); the mallei may be absent, as in Asplanehna (fig. 5, c), the rami being highly developed into curved forceps aud movable one on the other ; or, the manubria being absent and the fulerum rudimentary, the rami may become massive and subquadratic, as in Philodina (fig. 5, D). All the true Rotifers possess a mastax. HEhrenberg's group of the Agomphia consisted of a heterogeneous collection of forms, —Ichthydium and Chetonotus being Gastrotricha, and Cyphonautes

which often

a Polyzoan larva, while Znteroplea is probably a male Rotifer, and, like the other males, in a reduced condition. There is no reason for

eonsidering this mastax as the homologue of either the gastrie mill of

Crustaceans on the one hand or the teeth in the Cheetopods' pharynx on the other; it is merely homoplastie with these struetures, but has attained a specialized degrec of development. Both the pharynx and the cesophagus which follows it are lined with chitin. The cesophagus varies in length and in some genera is absent (Philo- dinadz), the stomach following immediately upon the pharynx. The stomach is generally large ; its wall consists of a layer of very large eiliated eells, whieh often contain fat globules and yellowish- green or brown partieles, and outside these a connective tissue membrane ; museular fibrille have also been deseribed. Very eonstantly a pair of glands open into the stomach, and probably represent the hepato-panereatie glands of other Invertebrates. Following upon the stomach there isa longer or shorter intestine, which ends in the eloaea. The intestine is lined by eiliated eells. In forms living in an ureeolus the intestine turns round and runs forward, the eloaea being placed so as to

debouch over the margin of the ureeolus. The eloaea is often very large ; the nephridia and oviduets may open into it, and the eggs lodge there on their way outwards; they are thrown out, as are the fieal masses, by an eversion of the eloaca.’ Asplanchna, Notommata sieboldti, and eer- tain species of Ascomorpha are said to be devoid of intestine or anus, exerementitious matters being ejeeted through the mouth yy, Nephridia.—The ecelom contains a fluid in whieh very minute corpuseles have been deteeted. There is no trace of a true vaseular system. The nephridia (fig. 2, 8,) present a very interesting stage of development. They consist of a pair of tubules with an intraeellular lumen running up the sides of the body, at times merely sinuous, at others considerably eonvoluted. From these

are given off at irregular intervals short lateral branehes, eaeh of

whieh terminates in a flame-cel] preeisely similar in strueture to the flame-eells found in Planarians, Trematodes, and Cestodes g here as there the question whether they are open to the ecelom or not must remain at present undeeided. At the base these tubes open either intoa permanent bladder whieh communieates with the eloaea or into a structure presenting apparently no advanee in its development upon the contractile vacuole of a ciliate Infusorian. Nervous System and Sense-Organs.—Various struetures have been spoken of as nervous whieh are now aeknowledged to have been erroneously so deseribed (18). There is a supra-cesophageal gang- lion which often attains considerable dimensions, and presents a lobed appearanee (fig. 2, A and p, g). Connected with this are the eye-spots, whieh are seldom absent. Where these are most highly developed a lens-like strueture is present, produeed by a thieken- ing of the cuticle. In the genus Liotifer and other forms these are plaeed upon the protrusible portion of the head, and so appear to have different positions at different moments. The number of eye- spots varies from one to twelve or more. They are usually red, red- dish-brown, violet, or blaek in colour. Other structures are found which doubtless act as sense-organs. The ealear above-mentioned generally bears at its extremity stiff hairs which have been demon- strated to be in eonnexion with a nerve fibril. On the ventral sur- face of the body just below the mouth a somewhat similar strueture is often developed—the ehin. There are besides at times speeial organs, like the two lateral organs in Microcodon (fig. 1, D, s), which no doubt in eommon with the ealcar and

ehin have a tactile funetion. Reproductive Organs and Development.—The Rotifera were formerly considered to be hermaphrodite, but, while the ovary was always elear and distinet, there was always some diffieulty about the testis, and various structures were put forward as representing that organ. One by one, however, small organisms have been dis- eovered and deseribed as the males of eertain species of Rotifers, until at the present time degenerated males are known to occur in all the families except that of the Philodinade. The male Rotifers are provided with a single cirelet of cilia (a eritroch), a nerve ganglion, eye-spots, muscles, and nephridial tubules all in a some- what redueed condition, but there is usually no traee of mouth or stomaeh, the main portion of the body being oeeupied by the testi- eular sae. There is an aperture eorres onding with the eloaea of the female, where the testis opens into he base of an eversible penis. The males of Floscularia are shown in fig. 1. The male of Pedalion mira possesses rudimentary appendages. The ovary is usually a large gland lying beside the stomach eonnected with a short oviduct whieh opens into the cloaea. The ova often present a reddish hue (Philodina roseola, Brachionus rubens), due doubtless, like the red eolour of many Crustacean ova, to the presence of tetronerythrin. Up to the present our embryologieal knowledge of the group is very incomplete. Many Rotifers are known to lay winter and summer eggs of different character. The winter eggs are provided with a thick shell and probably require fertilization. Two or three of them are often carried about attached to the parent (Brachionus, Notommata), but they are usually laid and fall into the mud, there to remain till the following spring. The summer eggs are of two kinds, the so-ealled male and female ova, both of whieh are stated to develop parthenogenetically. They may be carried about in

large numbers in the eloaea or oviduct or attached to the body of the parent. The female ova give rise to female and the male ova to male individuals, Male individuals are only formed in the autumn in time to fertilize the winter ova.

Habitat and Mode of Life.—The Rotifera are distri- buted all over the earth’s surface, inhabiting both fresh and salt water. The greater number of species inhabit fresh water, occurring in pools, ditches, and streams. A few species will appear in countless numbers in infusions of leaves, &e., but

their appearance is generally delayed until the putrefaction is nearly over. Species of Rotifer and Philodina appear in this way. A few marine forms only have been described—Brachionus millert, B. hepta- tonus, Syncheta baltica, and others.

A few forms are parasitic. Albertia lives in the intestine of the earthworm ; a form has been described as occurring in the body-cavity of Synapta; a small form was also observed to constantly occur in the velar and radial canals of the freshwater jelly-fish, Zimnocodium. Notommata parasitica leads a parasitic existence within the hollow spheres of Volvox globator, sufficient oxygen being given off by the Volvox for its respiration.

Many Rotifers exhibit an extraordinary power of resist- ing drought. Various observers have dried certain Species upon the slide, kept them dry for a certain length of time, and then watched them come to life very shortly after the addition of a drop of water. The animal draws itself to- gether, so that the cuticle completely protects all the softer parts and prevents the animal itself from being thoroughly dried. This process is not without parallel in higher groups ; e.g., many land snails will draw themselves far into the shell, and secrete a complete operculum, and can remain in this condition for an almost indefinite amount of time. The eggs are also able to withstand drying, and are pro- bably blown about from place to place. The fotifera can bear great variations of temperature without injury.

Since their removal from among the Protozoa various attempts have been made to associate the Rotifera with one or other large phylum of the animal kingdom. Huxley, insisting upon the importance of the trochal disk, put forward the view that they were “permanent Echino. derm larve,” and formed the connecting link between the Memertidz and the Nematoid worms. Ray Lankester proposed to associate them with the Chetopoda and Arthropoda in a group Appendiculata, the peculiarities in the structure of Pedalion forming the chief reason for such a classification. There is, however, no proof that we thus express any genetic relationship. The well-developed ccelom, absence of metameric segmentation, persistence of the trochal disk in varying stages of development, and the structure of the nephridia are all characters which point to the Rotifera as very near representatives of the common ancestors of at any rate the J€ollusca,

Arthropoda, and Chetopoda. But the high development of the mastax, the specialized character of the lorica in many forms, the movable spines of Polyarthra, the limbs of Pedalion, and the lateral appendages of Asplanchna, the existence of a diminutive male, the formation of two varieties of ova, all point to a specialization in the direction of one or other of the above mentioned groups. Such specialization is at most a slight one, and does not justify the definite associa- tion of the Rotifera in a single phylum with any of them.

Classification.—The following classification has been recently put forward by Dr C. T. Hudson (19).

Crass ROTIFERA. Order I.—Rhizota.,

Fixed forms ; footattached, transversely wrinkled, non-retractile. truneate. Fam. 1. FLoscunariapgZ. Floscularia, Stephanoceros. Fam. 2. MeicerTapa. Melicerta, Cephalosiphon, Megalo- trocha, Limnias, cistes, Lacinularia, Conochilus.

Order I1.—Bdelloida. Forms which swim and ereep like a leech; foot retractile, jointed, telescopie, termination fureate. Fam. 3. PHILopInaD&. TPhilodina, Rotifer, Callidina.

Order III.—Ploima. Forms which swim only.

Grade A. ILLoRIcATA. Fam. 4. Hypatinapa. Hydatina, Rhinops. Fam. 5. SyncoamTapm. Synchexta, Polyarthra. Fam. 6. NoromMaTaAps. Notommatia, Diglena, Furcularia, Scaridium, Pleurotrocha, Distemma. Fam. 7. TriartHraps. Triarthra. Fam. 8, ASPLANCHNADE. Asplanchna.,

Grade B. Loricara.

Fam. 9. BracuionipZ. Brachionus, Notcus, Anurea, Sac- culus.

Fam. 10. Preropinapz. Pterodina, Pompholyz.

Fam. 11, Evcutanipa, Lchlanis, Salpina, Diplax, Mono- styla, Colurus, Monura, Metopodia, Stephanops, Monocerca, Mastigocerca, Dinocharis.

Order 1V.—Scirtopoda,

Forms which swim with their ciliary wreath, and skip by means of hollow limbs with internal locomotor muscles.

Fam. 12. Pepationipa. Pedalion.

The above list includes only the principal genera. There are, however, a number of forms which could not be placed in any of the above families.

ABERRANT Forms.

Trochosphera xquatorialis (fig. 6, G), found by Semper in the

Philippine Islands, closely resembles a monotrochal polychetous

Fig. 6.—Various aberrant forms. A, Balatro calvus (after Claparéde) : a, mastax. B, Seison nebaliz# (after Claus): m. mouth ; vd, position of the aperture of the vas deferens. C, Lindia torulosa: a, ciliated proeesses at the sides of the head representing eephalotroeh; oc, eye-spots. D, E, and F, Apsilus lentiformis (after Mecznikow). D, adult female with expanded proboscis: m, position of the mouth ; s, lateral sense-organs. E, young free-swimming female. F, adult male. G, Trochosphxra xquatorialis (after Semper): m, mouth; g, ganglion; a, anus; 6, velum; oc, eye-spot; c, museles.

larva while possessing nndoubted|y Rotiferal characters. Meeznikow has deseribed a remarkable form, Apsilus lentiformis (fig. 6, D, B, and F), the adult female of which is entirely devoid of cilia but possesses a sort of retractile hood ; the young female and the males are not thus modified. Claparéde discovered fixed to the bodies of small Oligochetes a curious non-eiliated form, Balatro calvus (fig. 6, A), which has a worm-like very contractile body and a well- developed mastax. As mentioned above, the ciliation is reduced to aminiinum in the curious worm-like form Linda (fig. 6, c). Seison nebalie (fig. 6, B), living on the surface of Nebaliw, which was deseribed originally by Grube, is the same form as the Saccoddella nebali#,

which was supposed by Van Beneden and Hesse to be a leech. It has been shown by Claus to be merely an aberrant Rotifer.

Of the curious aquatie forms Icthydiwm, Chetonotus, Turbanella, Dasyditis, Cephalidium, Chetura, and Hemidasys, which Mecznikow and Claparéde ineluded under the name Gastrotricha, no further account can be given here. They are possibly allied to the Rotifera, but are devoid of mastax and trochal disk.

The following are some of the more important memoirs, &e., on the Rotéfera. (1) Leeuwenhoek, Phil. Trans., 1701-1704. (2) Ehrenberg. Die Infustonsthierchen als volikommene Organismen, 1838. (8) M. F. Dujardin, Hist. Nat. des Zoophytes : Infusoires, 1841. (4) W. C. Williamson, ‘On Meliceria ringens,” Quart, Jour. Micr. Sct., 1858. (5) Ph. H. Gosse, “On Afelicerta ringens,”’ Quart. Jour. Mier, Sci., 1853, (6) T. UW. Huxley, “On Lacinularta socialis,” Trans. Micr. Soc., 1853. (7) Fr. Leydig, ‘‘ Ueber den Bau und dic systematisehe Stellung der Raderthiere,” Zeit. f.w. Zool., vi., 1854, (8) Ph. H. Gosse, Phil. Trans,, 1856. (9) F. Cohn, Zeié. Jf. w. Zool,, vii., ix., and xii. (10) Ph. H. Gosse, Phil. Trans., 1858. (11) Pritchard, Infusoria, 1861. (12, 13, 14) C. T. Hudson, “On Pedalion,’ Quart. Jour. Micr. Sci., 1872, and Monthly Micr. Jour., 1871 and 1872. (15) E. Ray Lankester, ‘On Pedalion,” Quart. Jour, Micr. Sci., 1872, (16) El. Mecznikow, “On Apsilus lenti-

h- OE

formis,” Zeit. f. w. Zool., 1872. (17) C. Semper, “On Trochosphera,’ Zeit. f. w. Zool., xxii.. 1872, (18) K. Eckstein, “ Die Rotatorien der Umgegend von Giessen, *’ Zeit. f.w. Zool., 1883. (19) C. T. Hudson, “On an Attempt to reclassify Rotifers,” Quart. Jour. Mier. Sci., 1884. (&. GaB,)

ROTROU, JEAN DE (1609-1650), the greatest tragic poet of France before Corneille, was born on August 21, 1609 at Dreux in Normandy, and died of the plague at the same place on the 28th June 1650. His family was of small means but of not inconsiderable station, and seems to have had a kind of hereditary connexion with the magistracy of the town of Dreux. He himself was “lieutenant particulier et civil,” a post not easy to trans- late, but apparently possessing some affinity to a Scotch sherifiship substitute.

Rotrou, however, went very early to Paris, and, though three years younger than Corneille, with whom he was intimately acquainted, began play-writing before him. With few exceptions the only events recorded of his life are the successive appearances of his plays and his enrolment in the band of five poets who had the not very honourable or congenial duty of turning Richelieu's dramatic ideas into shape. Rotrou's own first picce, L' Hypocondriaque, appeared when he was only seventeen. His second, La Bague de ''Oubli, an adaptation in part from Lope de Vega, was much better, much more sugges- tive, and much more characteristic. It is the first of several plays in which Rotrou, following or striking out for himself a way which did not lead to much for the time but which was again entered at the Romantic revival, endeavoured to naturalize in France the romantic comedy which had flourished in Spain and England instead of the classical tragedy of Seneca and the classical comedy of Terence. Corneille, as is known to readers of his early work, had considerable leanings in the same direction, and yielded but slowly and unwillingly to the pressure of critical opmion and the public taste. Rotrou's brilliant but hasty and unequal work showed throughout marks of a stronger adhesion to the Spanish (it is needless to say that neither writer is likely to have known the English) model. Cleagénor et Doristée, Diane, Les Occasions Per- dues, L'Heureuse Constance, pieces which succeeded each other very rapidly, were all in the Spanish style. Then the author changed his school, and, in 1632, imitated very closely the Menzchmi of Plautus and the Hercules Hitxus of Seneca. A crowd of comedies and _ tragi-comedies followed, and by the time he was twenty-eight (when documents exist showing the sale of two batches of them to the bookseller Quinet for the sum of 220 livres tour- nois) Rotrou had written nearly a score of plays. He was married in 1640, and had three children, a son and two daughters (none of whom, however, continued the name), and it seems that he went to live at Dreux. Pre- viously, vague and anecdotic tradition describes him as having led rather a wild life in Paris, and especially as having been much addicted to gambling. Among his pieces written before his marriage were a translation of the Amphitryon under the title of Les Deux Sosies, which was not useless to Moliére, Antigone, which was not useless to Racine, and Laure Persecutée (in the opposite style to these classical pieces), which has much merit. These were followed by others until, in 1646 and 1647, Rotrou pro- duced his three masterpieces, Saint Genest, a story of Christian martyrdom containing some

amusing by-play, one noble speech, and a good deal of dignified action ; Don Bertrand de Cabrére, a comedy of merit; and Ven- ceslas, which is considered in France his masterpiece, and which in a manner kept the stage till our own timgs. The subject (in which a father, being constrained to choose between his duty as king and his parental affection, pardons his son for a murder he has committed, but immediately abdicates as feeling himself unworthy to reign) was taken from Francisco de Rojas; the execution,

iO Ty —

though unequal, is in parts very fine. Rotrou's death and its circumstances are known to many who never read a line of his plays.) He was in Paris when the plague broke out at Dreux; the mayor fled, and all was con- fusion. Rotrou, reversing the conduct of Montaigne in somewhat similar circumstances, at once went to his post, caught the disease, and died in a few hours,

Rotrou's great fertility (he has left thirty-five collected plays besides others lost, strayed, or uncollected), and perhaps the uncertainty of dramatic plan shown by his hesitation almost to the last between the classical and the romantic style, have injured his work, He has no thoroughly good play, hardly one thoroughly good act. But his situations are often pathetic and noble, and as a tragic poet properly so called he is at his best almost the equal of Corneille and perhaps the superior of Racine. His single lines and single phrases have a brilliancy and force not to be found in French drama between Cornejlle and Hugo.

A complete edition of Rotrou was edited in five volumes by Viollet le Duc in 1820. In 1882 M. de Ronchaud published a handsome edition of six plays —Saint Genest, Venceslas, Don Bertrand de Cabrére, Antigone, Hercule Mourant, and Cosroes,—the latter Rotrou's last play and a remarkable one. Venceslas and Saint

Genest are also to be found in the Chefs-@euvre Tragiques of the Collection Didot.

ROTTERDAM, a city of the Netherlands in the pro- vince of South Holland, situated in 51° 55’ 19” N. lat. and 4° 29’ 7” E. long., on the right bank of the Nieuwe Maas at the point where it is joined by the Rotte, a small

Plan of Rotterdam.

1. Groote Markt and Statue of Erasmus. 3. Post Office,

2. Bourse. 4, Boymans Museum.

Stream rising near Moerkapelle. By rail it is 14% miles south-east of The Hague and 443 south of Amsterdam. As defined by its I/th-century fortifications the town was an isosceles triangle with a base of 14 miles along the river, but in modern times it has spread out in all direc- tions beyond the limits of its own commune (which was Increased in 1869 by the island of Fijenoord and part of

the south bank of the river) into those of Delfshaven, Kralingen, and Hillegersberg. A huge dyke on which stands Hoog Straat or High Street divides the triangular portion into nearly equal parts—the inner and the outer town ; and the latter is cut up into a series of peninsulas and islands by the admirable system of harbours to which Rotterdam owes so much of its prosperity. The central part of the river frontage is lined by a broad quay called the Boompjes from the trees with which it is planted. From the apex of the triangle the town is bisected by a great railway viaduct (erected about 1870, and mainly con- structed of iron), which is continued across the river to Fijenoord and the south bank by a bridge on a similarly grand scale, the line being the Great Southern Railway which connects Belgium and Holland and crosses the Hollandsch Diep by the Moerdijk bridge. Parallel with

of the Maas

NORTH SEA

‘ae

wea ~Giheltevoetsiuis eee?

Han

as ina Sm Teese Environs of Rotterdam. isa ee

the railway bridge the municipality, in 1873, built a road- bridge, and apart from their ordinary function these con- structions have proved a sufficient barrier to prevent the ice-blocks of the upper part of the river from descending so as to interfere with the seaward navigation. Tram- ways, introduced in 1880, are being gradually extended to various suburbs. While some nine or ten Protestant sects, the Roman Catholics, the Old Roman Catholics, and the Jews are all represented in Rotterdam, none of the ecclesiastical buildings are of primary architectural interest. The Groote Kerk or Laurenskerk is a Gothic brick structure of the fifteenth century with a tower 297 feet high; it has a fine rood screen and an excellent organ, and contains the monuments of Lambert Hendriks- zoon, Egbert Meeuweszoon Kortenaar, Witte Corneliszoon de Witt, Johan van Brakel, Johan van Liefde, and other Dutch naval heroes. Among the more conspicuous secular buildings are the Boymans Museum, the town-house (restored in 1823-1827), the exchange (1723), the Delft Gate (1766), the court-house, the post and telegraph office (1875), the corn exchange, the seamen’s home (1855), the hospital (1846), and the theatres. The Boymans Museum is mainly a picture gallery, which became the property of the town in 1847. When the building, originally erected in 1662-63 as the assembly house of Schieland, was burned down in 1864, most of the pictures perished, but the museum was restored by 1867, and the collection, steadily recruited, is again rich in the works of Dutch artists. The ground floor also contains the city archives and the city library. The maritime museum, established in 1874 by the Yacht Club, is a remarkable collection of ship models, and the Society of Experimental Philosophy has a considerable collection of instruments, books, and specimens. At the north-west corner of the town an area of several acres is occupied by the zoological garden, which dates from 1857. Besides the Erasmus Gymnasium the XXI. — 2

educational institutions comprise an academy of art and technical science, a naval school, an industrial school, a deaf and dumb asylum, &. In the Groote Markt (to the south of the Hoog Straat) stands the bronze statue of Erasmus (Gerrit Gerrits), erected by his fellow-citizens in 1662 ; and his birth-house, now a tavern in Wijde Kerk- straat, is distinguished by a Latin inscription. The statue by Grefs of Gijsbert Karel van Hogendorp (1762—1834), a great Dutch statesman, gives his name to the Hogendorpsplein, formerly Boymansplein, behind the museum; in the "Park," which extends west along the bank of the Maas, is a marble statue by Strackée of Hen- drik Tollens, the Dutch poet; and the Nieuwmarkt is adorned with a fountain in memory of the jubilee (1863) of the restoration of Dutch independence (1813). Exten- sive works for supplying the town with filtered water were constructed between 1870 and 1875, the water in the river and canals being rendered unwholesome by the sewerage, the treatment of which naturally presents great difficulties in a city lying in great part below high-water level. The most important industrial establishment is that of the Netherlands Steamboat Company, who are ship- owners, shipbuilders, and engineers ; there are also exten- sive sugar-refineries and a great variety of smaller factories for the production of lead, iron, and copper wares, white lead, varnishes, tobacco and cigars, beer and vinegar, chocolate and confectionery, &c. Rotterdam is, however, not so much a manufacturing as a commercial city, and its commercial progress has been very striking since the middle of the century. While in 1846 it had only 321,764 tons out of the total of 1,024,705 tons which then represented the export trade of the Netherlands, in 1883 it had 1,940,026 tons out of a total of 3,953,009 tons. In 1850 it had only 27:9 per cent. of the outgoing vessels, and 35°77 per cent. of the tonnage; by 1870 it had 35°60 per cent. of the vessels and 50°37 of the tonnage, and by 1883 43°75 per cent. of the vessels, and 49-08 of the tonnage. Rotterdam has thus become what Amsterdam formerly was—the principal port in the country. For steamers it is now, since the opening of the new waterway through the Hoek van Holland in 1872, only two hours distant from the sea, and the channel is deep enough for vessels drawing 22 feet of water.1 From 4471 vessels with a register tonnage of 1,688,700 tons in 1873, the shipping clearing from the Netherlands by the new waterway had increased by 1884 to 8177 vessels with register tonnage of 4,382,100 tons. Up- wards of 18,000 emigrants left Europe by Rotterdam in 1881. Besides its maritime trade Rotterdam

commands a most extensive river traffic, not only with the towns of the Netherlands, but with those of Belgium and Ger- many. With Germany alone its Rhine traffic amounted in 1883 to 1,706,587 tons, against 2,021,644 for all the other ports of the Netherlands. On January 1, 1885, Rotterdam owned 43 sailing vessels and 50 steam-ships with a united aggregate burden of 99,018 tons. Owing

1 Previously the only direct way to the sea was by the Brielle (Brill) Channel, where in 1856 the fairway had gradually diminished in depth to 5 feet at low water and 11 or 12 feet at high water. In 1866 the works for the new waterway were commenced, and by November 1868 the canal from the Scheur (or northern arm of the Maas) across the Hoek had been dug. The seaward piers were com- pleted to the originally proposed length of (together) 2800 metres, but in 1874 they were prolonged to a total of 4300 metres, thus jutting out into the sea for more than a mile. Contrary to expecta- tions the scour was not strong enough to widen the fairway; and works for this purpose were commenced in 1877, and at a later period the width of 900 metres between the piers was reduced to 700 metres by constructing an inner pier north of the south pier. The whole work has cost upwards of 23,000,000 guilders (£1,750,000)—154 millions expended up to 1879, and 7# between 1881 and 1884. With

the exception of a contribution of not more than 3,000,000 from the city of Rotterdam, the entire sum has been paid by the state.

to the great increase of navigation and commerce the berthing accommodation of the port frequently proves too small, though by the works at Fijenoord the length of the quays has of late years been extended by about 8000 metres. This island, two-thirds of which was purchased by the town in 1591 and the remaining third in 1658, was dyked in 1795, and became the seat of a building which has been in succession a pest-house, a military hospital, a naval college, and a private industrial school. The Netherlands Steamboat Company established its work- shops there in 1825 ; and in 1873 the Rotterdam Trading Company began to construct the harbours and warehouses which have been purchased by the city. The population of the commune of Rotterdam, which did not much exceed

20,000 in 1632, was 53,212 in 1796, 72,294 in 1830, 88,812 in 1850, 105,858 in 1860, 132,054 in 1876, and 148,102 in 1879-80. In 1870 the city contained 111,256 inhabitants, the suburbs 3341, and the ships 2478, and in 1884 the total, exclusive of the shipping, was 169,477.

Rotterdam probably owes its origin to the castles of Wena and Bulgerstein, of which the former was laid in ruins by the Hoek party in 1426. In 1299 Count John I. granted the “ good people of Rotterdam” the same rights as the burghers of Beverwijk, and freedom from toll in all his lands. In 1597 a sixth extension of the town’s area took place, and a seventh followed in 1609. Francis of Brederode seized the place in 1488, but had to surrender it to the emperor Maximilian in 1489, The Spaniards were in possession from April 9th to July 31st 1572, having gained entrance partly by treachery and partly by force (see Motley, Dutch Republic, ii.). It was at a meeting of the states held at Rotterdam in June 1574 that the relief of Leyden was determined on, though it was not till 1580 that the town obtained a vote in the assembly.

ROUBAIX, a manufacturing town of France, the second in population in the department of Nord, lies to the north-east of Lille on the Ghent Railway and on the canal connecting the lower Deule with Scheldt by the Marg and Espierre. Several tramway lines traverse the town and connect it with various manufacturing centres in the neighbourhood. The population of Roubaix, which in 1881 was 79,700 (the commune 91,757), is almost entirely manufacturing, and the trading firms of the town gave employment besides to an equally large number of hands in the vicinity. The weaving establishments number 300 (250 for woollen or woollen and cotton goods), the leading products being fancy and figured stuffs for waistcoats, trousers, overcoats, and dresses, velvet, barége, orleans, furniture coverings, and the like. The yearly production is estimated at £6,000,000, but the annual turnover ex- ceeds £8,000,000, if all the industries of the place are taken into account. These include 70 wool-spinning mills, 12 cotton mills, silk-works, wool-combing establishments, carpet manufactories, dye-houses, soap-works, machine- works, and foundries. Roubaix possesses several interest- ing churches, a library and art museum, a most interesting museum of local industries, communal schools of art and music, an industrial school for weaving, founded in 1857, a chamber of commerce dating from 1871, a

chamber of arts and manufactures, a board of prud'hommes, and an agricultural and horticultural society.

The prosperity of Roubaix has its origin in the first factory franchise, granted in 1469 by Charles the Bold to Peter of Rou- baix, a descendant of the royal house of Britanny ; but the great development of the manufacturing industries of the town and the growth of its population date from the French Revolution. The population, which in 1804 was only 8700, had risen in 1861 to 40,274, in 1866 to 65,091, and in 1876 to 83,000.

ROUBILIAC, Lovis Francois (1695-1762), an able French sculptor. Born at Lyons in 1695, he became a pupil of Balthasar of Dresden and of N. Coustou. About the year 1720 he settled in London, and soon became the most popular sculptor of the time in England, quite super- seding the established success of the Flemish Rysbracck.

He died on January 11, 1762, and was buried in the church of St Martin-in-the-Fields. Roubiliac was very largely employed for portrait statues and busts, and especially for sepulchral monuments in Westminster Abbey and else- where. His chief works in the abbey are the monuments of Handel, Admiral Warren, Marshal Wade, Mrs Night- ingale, and the duke of Argyll, the last of these being the first work which established Roubiliac's fame as a sculptor. The statues of George I., Sir Isaac Newton, and the duke of Somerset at Cambridge, and of George II. in Golden Square, London, were also his work, as well as many other important pieces of portrait sculpture. 'Trinity College, Cambridge, possesses a series of busts of distinguished members of the college by him.

Roubiliac possessed much skill in portraiture, and was technically a real master of his art, but unhappily he lived at a time when it had reached a very low ebb. His figures are uneasy, devoid of dignity and sculpturesque breadth, and his draperies are treated in a manner more suited to painting than sculpture. His excessive striving after dramatic effect takes away from that repose of atti- tude which is so necessary for a portrait in marble. His most celebrated work, the Nightingale monument, in the north transept of Westminster Abbey, a marvel of technical skill, is only saved from being

ludicrous by its ghastly hideousness. On this the dying wife is represented as sinking in the arms of her husband, who in vain strives to ward off a dart which Death is aiming at her. The lower part of the monument, on which the two portrait figures stand, is shaped like a tomb, out of the opening door of which Death, as a half-veiled skeleton, is bursting forth. Wonderful patience and anatomical realism are lavished on the marble bones of this hideous figure, and the whole of the grim conception is carried out with much skill, but in the worst possible taste. The statue of Handel in the south transept is well modelled, but the attitude is affected and the face void of any real expres- sion. Itisa striking proof of the degraded taste of the age that these painful works when first set up were enthusi- astically admired.

ROUCHER, Jean Antoine (1745-1794), a French poet, to whom a melancholy fate and some descriptive verse equal to anything written during at least three- quarters of a century by any of his countrymen except André Chénier, gave some reputation, was born on February 17, 1745 at Montpellier, and perished by the guillotine at Paris on July 25, 1794. He wrote an epithalamium on Louis XVI. and Marie Antoinette, gained the favour of Turgot, and obtained a salt-tax collector- ship. His main poem was entitled Les Mois; it appeared in 1779, was praised in MS., damned in print, and restored to a just appreciation by the students of literature of the present century. It has the drawbacks of merely didactic- descriptive poetry on the great scale, but much grace and spirit in parts. Roucher was by no means anti- revolutionary, but ill-luck and perhaps his unpopular em- ployment made him a victim of the Revolution. He lay in prison for nearly a year before his death, and went to it on the same tumbril with Chénier. The malicious wit of Rivarol’s mot on the ill-success of Les Mois, “C’est le plus beau naufrage du siécle,” is not intelligible unless it is said that one of the most elaborate passages describes a shipwreck.

ROUEN, a city of France, the ancient capital of

Normandy, and now the administrative centre of the |

department of Seine Inférieure, the seat of an arch- bishopric and a court of appeal, and the headquarters of the third corps d’armée, stands on a level site on the right bank of the Seine in 49° 26’ N. lat. and 1° 6’ E. long. at the point where it is joined by the Aubette and

the small Riviere de Robec ; it has also crept some dis- tance up the hills which enclose the valley on the right, and has an extension on the plain on the left bank. The faubourgs by which it is surrounded are, reckoning from the east, Martainville (on the left bank of the Robec), St Hilaire, Beauvoisine, Bouvreuil, and Cauchoise ; and the portion which lies on the left bank of the Seine is known as the Faubourg St Sever. Between the old town and the faubourgs runs a line of boulevards. Communication between the two banks of the river is maintained by ferry- boats and by two bridges; the upper bridge, a stone struc- ture, is divided into two parts by the Lacroix island and decorated by a statue of Corneille; the lower is an iron suspension bridge which opens in the middle to let masted vessels pass. The railway from Havre to Paris crosses the Seine a little above Rouen, and having passed by a tunnel under the higher quarters of the city reaches a station on the north ata distance of 87 miles from Paris and 55 from Havre. Another station at Martainville is the terminus of the line from Rouen to Amiens; and at St Sever are those of the lines to Paris and to Orleans by Elbeuf. Since about 1860 wide streets have been driven through the old town, and tramway lines now traverse the whole city and its environs. Rouen, which is 78 miles from the sea, stands fourth in the list of French ports, coming next to Marseilles, Havre, and Bordeaux. Em- bankments constructed along the lower Seine have forced the river to deepen its own channel, and the land thus reclaimed has more than repaid the expenses incurred. The port is now accessible to vessels drawing 21 feet of water, and by means of easy dredgings this will be increased to from 25 feet to 28 according to the tide. The expansion of the traffic as the improvements have advanced is shown by the following returns: whereas in 1856 the number of vessels entered and cleared was 6220, with an aggregate burden of 570,314 tons, the corresponding figures were 4511 and 748,076 in 1876, and 5189 and 1,438,055 in 1880. What is now wanted is an increased amount of quay accom- modation, the old line of quays scarcely exceeding J mile in length. The building of new quays and repairing-docks for large vessels is in active progress; the port is being dredged and deepened; and schemes are under considera- tion for a slip, a petroleum dock, and corn elevators.! Rouen has regular steamboat communication with Bor- deaux, Spain, Algeria, London,

Hull, Goole, Plymouth, Bristol, and Canada. A sunken chain allows boats to be towed up to Paris and beyond.

The population of the six cantons of Rouen in 1881 was 105,906, but if the suburbs are included the figure may be stated at about 150,000.

The imports landed at Rouen include cottons, wheat, maize, and petroleum from America; coal and iron from England ; marble, oils, wines, and dried fruits from Italy; wines, wools, ores, and metals from Spain; grain and wool from the Black Sea; grapes from the Levant; rice from India; coffee from the French colonies; oil seeds, timber, dyewoods, foreign textile fabrics, Dutch cheese, &e. The articles of export comprise grain, table fruits, oil-seeds and oilcake, sugar, olive oil, palm oil, timber, hemp, linen, and wool, marble, granite, hewn stone, plaster and building materials, sulphur, coal, pig-iron, steel, copper, lead, zinc, salt, dyestuffs and other chemical products, wines, brandy, ciders, earthenware and glass- ware, machinery, packing-paper, &c.

Cotton spinning and weaving are carried on in the town, and especially the manufacture of rowennerics (cotton fabrics woven with

dyed yarn). In this connexion the department of Seine Inférieure gives employment to 200,000 workmen, most of them in Rouen and

1 See De Coene, Congrés de l' Association Francaise pour lV avance- ment des sciences, Rouen, 1883.

its neighbourhood, and makes use of 30,000 tons of cotton annually. In 1876 there were in the Rouen district 1,099,261 spindles engaged in cotton-spinning, and 9251 power-looms. Hand-loom weaving is prosecuted (mainly in the country districts) by 13,000 workmen. In the rowennerie department 190 manufacturers were engaged, producing annually to the value of £2,400,000. In the manufacture of printed cotton and woollen goods 22 establishments and 5000 workmen are employed. The annual production of printed calico amounts to 1,000,000 pieces, each 105 metres (about 115 yards) long ; 22 establishments with 700 workmen are devoted

to the dyeing of eotton cloth, and 32 establishments with 1200 workmen to the dyeing of cotton thread, the industry being specially favoured by the quality of the water of Rouen. There are also 3 soap works, 7 chemical works, manufacturing soda, vitriol, and dyestuffs, and 10 iron foundries. Engineering works manufacture steam-engines, spinning-machines, and weaving-looms, agricultural maehines, sewing-maehines, &c., which are sold throughout Franee and exported to other countries to a total value of £360,000. There is an establishment at Déville for refining copper and manu- facturing copper pipes. Other works at Rouen are distilleries, oil mills, bleacheries and cloth-dressing establishinents, tanneries, and ship-building yards. The town is also famous for its confectionery, especially sucres de pomme. Among the public institutions are extensive poorhouses (1800 beds in the hospice général), several theatres, a public library (118,000 volumes and 2500 MSS.), a theo- logieal faculty, a preparatory =

school of medieine and phar- macy, a preparatory school for higher instruction in science and literature, and schools of agriculture, botany, and forestry, painting and drawing schools, &c. Besides the Grand Cours, whieh runs along the bank of the Seine above the town and is lined with magnificent elms, the publie promenades comprise the Cours Boieldieu, with the composer's statue, the Solfer- ino garden in the heart of the |x; town, and the botanical gar- densatSt Sever. (G. ME.)

- History.—Ratuma or Ratn- macos, the original name of Rouen, was modified by the Romans into Rotomagus, and by the writers of medieval Latin into Rodomum, of which the present name is a corrup-

Scale of ¥e Enghsh Mile

—

ANE LA MADELE DE

tion. Under Cesar and the

early emperors the town was ,

the capital of the Veliocas- g ry sians, a people of secondary ny "a oie

i

rank, and it did not attain to any eminence till it was made the centre of Lugdunensis Secunda at the close of the 3d eentury, and a little later the see of an arch-

A bishop. Rouen was largely indebted to its first bishops—

from St Mello, the apostle of the region, who flourished about 260, to St Remigius, who died in 772. Ten or twelve of those prelates have the title of saints; they built in their city many churches, and their tombs became in turn the origin of new sanctuaries, so that Rouen was already, at that early period, what it has remained to the present time, and in spite of its political character—a religious city full of ecclesiastical monuments. From this period there has been preserved the precious erypt of St Gervais, which contains the tomb of the second bishop of Rouen, St Avitiau. Under Louis “le Debonnaire” and his successors Normans several times sacked the city, but the conversion of Rollo in 912 made Rouen the capital of Normandy, and raised it to a greater degree of prosperity than ever. The first Norman kings of England rather neglected Rouen in favour first of Caen aud afterwards of Poitiers, Le Mans, or Angers ; but the monas- teries, the local trade and manufactures, and the eommunal organization, which the people of Rouen had exacted from their sovereigns in 1145, maintained a most flourishing state of affairs, indicated by the rebuilding of several sumptuous churches, and notably of the great abbey which had been erected in the 5th century by St Victrix, and afterwards took the name of St Ouen from the bishop whose tomb it contained. Of this restora- tion there remains in the present building a small apse of two stories, the only Norman fragment of any importance preserved by the ancient capital of Normandy. The union of this province to

Fe o—DUAl CAVELIER DE

5

Hy CS SEAR RONDEA

UAL DE

ROUEN

France by Philip Augustus in 1204 did no dainage to the prosperity of Rouen, although its inhabitants submitted to their new master only after a siege of nearly three months. ‘To this period belong, if not the commencement, at least the rapid erection of the most important building in the town, the cathedral of Notre Dame, whose vast pile, ereeted between 1200 and 1220 by an architect ealled Ingelram or Enguerrand, underwent so many alterations, restorations, and extensions that it took its final form only in the 16th century. It isin plan a Latin cross 427 feet in length, with aisles completely surrounding it and giving access to the three great chapels of the choir. The west facade and those of the. transept are of extreme richness. Eaeh was surmounted by two towers, of which only one—the Butter Tower (Tour de Beurre)— was completed. The western fagade, frequently enlarged, embel- lished, or restored from its first construction to the present time, has two charming side doorways of the close of the 12th century, a great central doorway, a rose window, and countless arcades and Gothic pinnacles and turrets of the close of the 15th and the beginning of the 16th century. The width of the front is increased by the pro- jection of the two towers: that on the left hand, the Tour Saint- Romain, was commenced about 1200, and raised to a greater height in 1465-1477 ; that on the right hand, the finer, has a height of 260 feet, and takes its name of Butter Tower from the fact that it was erected between 1485 and 1507 by means of the moneys paid by the faithful for permission to eat butter in Lent. On the north

RAy

a 78 | BOULE? | 5 = ARD BEAUYVOTS THE

- Waa tas

AC S DE ST PAUL STPAU

a

COUR

side of the cathedral are various accessory buildings dating from the Middle Ages, and the Booksellers' Portal, corresponding to the Portail de la Calende in the south transept. Both portals are adorned with statues, and both, as well as the towers which flank them, date from the reigns of St Louis and Philip the Fair. Above the transept rises the central tower, which was rebuilt in the 15th and 16th centuries, and had before its destruction by fire in 1822 a height of 480 feet. The iron spire added in 1876, though unfortunately much too slender, has raised it to a height of 485 feet, and thus made it the highest erection in Europe after the spires of Cologne cathedral. While more harmonious in its style than the exterior, the interior of Notre Dame de Rouen presents nothing peculiar in its architecture, with the exception of the false gallery along the nave with passages running round the pillars; but the artistic curiosities are numerous and varied. In the choir may be noted a fine series of 18th-century stained-glass windows, carved stalls of the 15th century, the tombs of the English kings Henry Ii. and Riehard I., that of Bishop Maurille, who built the larger part of the present structure, an elegant Gothic stairease, and various tombs of archbishops and nobles.

Philip Augustus built a castle at Rouen, but it was rather a fortress than a palace, and the kings of France never treated it as a residence; around keep called Joan of Arc's Tower still stands. On the other hand, nothing remains of the castle erected by Henry V. of England when he took possession of Rouen in 1418 after a san-

guinary siege ; he proposed making it one of his Continental resi- dences, but it was never completed. It was in Philip Augustus's eastle that Joan of Arc was imprisoned and tried, and one of the public squares was the place where she was burned alive in 1431. From that year began a series of attempts on the part of the French to recapture the town. Ricardville in 1432 and Xaintrailles in 1436 failed in spite of the secret connivance of the inhabitants. In 1449 a stronger and better-planned expedition was

successful, and Somer- set, the English commander, was obliged, in order to secure an honourable capitulation, to surrender the principal fortified places in Normandy. The English rule, though badly supported by the citizens, had not becn without its influence on the prosperity of Rouen. It was then that the present church of St Ouen was con- tinued and almost completed ; the foundation was laid in 1311, but the choir alone had been constructed in the 14th century. In spite of the juxtaposition of the sccond and third or "radiant" and "flamboyant" styles of Gothic, the building taken altogether pre- sents in its general lines the most perfect unity—a unity which even the modern addition of a facade with two bell towers has failed to mar, though no regard was had to the original plans. St Onen is the largest church erected in France during the War of the Hundred Years ; in length (450 feet) it exceeds the cathedral. The central tower, not unlike the Butter Tower, with which it is contemporary, is 265 feet high ; the two new towers with their spires are some- what lower. Apart from its enormous dimensions and the richness of its southern portal, St Ouen has nothing that need long de- tain the visitor; its style is cold and formal ; the interior, bare and stripped of its ancient stained glass, was further despoiled in 1562 and in 1791 of its artistic treasures and of almost all its old church-furniture. The organ dates from 1630, and the rather handsome roodscreen from the 18th century. The close of the 15th century and the first half of the 16th—the reigns of Charles VIII, Lonis XII., Francis I., and Henry IL, and the episcopates of Cardinal Estoutteville (1453-1483), Cardinal Georges d' Am boise (1494-1510), and his nephew of the same name (1511-50)—rendered Rouen for nearly a hundred years the metropolis of art and taste in France ; and it was one of the first towns where the splendours of the Renaissance burst forth. At this time the church of St Maclou was erected, a building that can hardly be brought into comparison with the cathedral and St Ouen, but is justly cele- brated for the value and variety of its artistic treasures, such as the carved work of the principal doors, partly execntcd by Jean Goujon, the beautiful stained glass, and an organ-loft reached by an open-work staircase. The spire, 285 feet high, is a structure of the present century. Beside the church is the old parish cemetery, called the Aitre of Saint Maclou, surrounded by charming Renaissance galleries and famous for its danse maeabre formed by a series of sculptured groups, Other churches of the same period—St Godard, St Patrice, St Vincent—are no less interesting from the pro- fusion of their architectural details than from their

magnificent 16th- century stained-glass windows. There are two glass windows in St Godard, and a regular collection in St Patrice ; but the latter, though the most famous, are in the eyes of connoisseurs of less worth than the stained glass in St Vincent, due to two incomparable artists of Beauvais, Engrand and Jean Le Prince,—the two principal subjects treated by them being the Gifts of Mercy and the Glorification of the Virgin. St Godard contains, besides, old frescos worthy of note. ‘The church of St Laurent, no longer used for worship, and the tower of St André are both of 16th-century origin. At the same period the cathedral received great embellishnients, the central fléche was erccted, and the portals were decorated with new sculptures. Georges d’Amboise, the virtuous minister of Louis XII., chose the chapel of the Virgin for his placc of burial ; he caused his mausoleum, constructed after the plans of the architect Roland le Roux, to be composed entirely of marble, as well as his statue, which he ordered from Jean Goujon. Georges d’Amboise the second was, according to his desire, interred in his nncle’s tomb, but his statue is of much less value. Near this tomb are two others erected for the lords of Brézé ; both are very remarkable ; the oldest belongs to the Gothic style; the other, the tomb of Diana of Poitiers’s husband, is a Renaissance structure of the time of Henry IL, but, contrary to what was long believed, contains nothing from the hand of Jean Goujon. Under Louis XII. the archbishops of Rouen also rebuilt their palace at the side of the cathedral ; but in spite of the rich- ness of its architecture this lordly mansion cannot compete with the “palace of justice” begun in the same year, 1499, when the exchequer of Normandy, which had been established at Rouen in 1302, was erected intoa parlement, though the title was not adopted till 1515, This sumptuous building is in the Gothic style; but the Hétel de Bourgtheroulde, which dates from the time of Francis I., is undisguisedly of the Renaissance, and is justly celebrated for its bas-reliefs, the snbjects of which are borrowed from two quite different orders of things—the allegories from Petrarch’s Triumphs, and _the interview of the Ficld of the Cloth of Gold between Henry VIII. and Francis I. Many other secular Renais- sance buildings in Rouen bear witness to the great commercial prosperity of its citizens and to their keen appreciation of the

arts :—numerous private houses in stone and especially in wood ; the gate of the great clock; and a unique structure, the “ fierte ” of St Romain, a sort of pulpit from which every ycar a person condemned to death raised before the people the shrine or fierte (feretrum) of St Romain, and then reccived pardon and liberty. This splendour of the arts began to decline during the wars of religion ; in 1562 the town was sacked by the Protestants, which did not prevent the League from obtaining so firm a footing there that Henry IV., after having vainly besieged it, did not obtain entrance till long after his abjuration. To the 18th century belong the exchange and the claustral buildings of the abbey of St Ouen, transformed into an hétel de ville. Much more important works have been executed in recent times, but in great part at the expense of the historic and picturesque features of the town. On the other hand, handsome structures of various kinds have been erected in the interests of public utility or embellishment—churches, civil and military establishments, fountains, statues, &e.; and many old buildings have been carefully restored or completed. Rouen, more- over, has recently been provided with museums of antiquities, of fine arts, of ceramic art, of natural history, and of industry, —the first two being very important. During the Franco-German War the city was occupied by the invaders from 5th December 1870 to 22d July 1871, and had to submit to heavy requisitions. Among the famous men born at Rouen are the brothers Corneille, Fon- tenelle, the journalists Armand Carrel and De Villemessant, the composer Boieldieu, the painters Jouvenet, Restout, and Géricault, the architect Blondel, Dulong the physicist, and La Salle the American explorer. (A. 8.-P.)

ROUGE. This name is applied to various colouring substances of a brilliant carmine tint, especially when used as cosmetics. The least harmful of these preparations are such as have for their basis carthamine, obtained from the safllower (Carthamus tinctorius). The Chinese prepare a rouge, said to be from safflower, which, spread on the cards on which it is sold, has a brilliant metallic green lustre, but when moistened and applied to the skin assumes a delicate carmine tint. Jeweller’s rouge for polishing gold and silver plate is a fine red oxide of iron prepared by calcination from sulphate of iron (green vitriol).

ROUGET DE LISLE, Craupz Josmpn (1760-1836), one of the most noteworthy of those authors whom a single short piece of work has made famous, was born on 10th May 1760, at Lons-leSaunier. He entered the army as an engineer and attained the rank of captain. He wrote complimentary verses pretty early, and appears to have been a good musician. The song which has immor- talized him, the Marseillaise, was composed at Strasburg, where Rouget de Lisle was quartered in April 1792, and he is said to have composed both the words and the music in a fit of patriotic excitement after a public dinner. The piece was at first called Chant de Varmée du Rhin, and only received its name of Marseillaise from its adoption by the Provengal volunteers whom Barbaroux introduced into Paris, and who were prominent in the storming of the Tuileries. The author himself was unfavourably affected by that very event. He was a moderate republican, and was cashiered and thrown into prison; but the counter-revolution set him at liberty. Little is recorded of his later years, and he received no pension or other mark of favour till the accession of Louis Philippe. He died at Choisy on the 26th June 1836.

The Marseillaise (of which as usually given six-sevenths only are Rouget's) is so well known that no elaborate criticism of it is necessary. The extraordinarily stirring character of the air and its ingenious adaptation to the wordsserve to disguise the alternate poverty and bombast of the words themselves, As poetry the sixth stanza alone has much merit. Ronget de Lisle wrote a few other songs of the same kind, and set a good many of others' writing to music. He also produced a play or two and some translations. But his chief literary monument is a slender and rather rare little volume entitled Zssais en Vers et en Prose (Paris, 1796). This contains the Marseillaise, a prose tale of the sentimental kind called Adelaide et Monviile, and a collection of occasional poems of various styles and dates, from which the author's poetic faculty can be fairly judged. It is humble enough. Rouget was a mere follower of standard models, imitating by turns J. B. Rousseau, La Fontaine, and Voltaire, and exaggerating the artificial language of his time. In Yom et Lucey, which turns on a romantic story of

Plate I.

the English army in America, he has contrived without in the least knowing it to make a pathetic subject supremely Indicrous. But he seems to have been a very well meaning and harmless person, and he had one moment of remarkable inspiration.

ROULERS, or RovsseLaERE, a town of Belgium, in the province of West Flanders, on the Mandelbeke, a tributary of the Lys, 22} miles south of Ostend on the railway to Courtrai. From time immemorial it has been the seat of a great weaving industry, which now produces both cotton, union, and linen goods; and it also manufac- tures in various other departments. The principal build- ings are the town-house, the college, and the church of St Michel with its conspicuous Gothic tower. The popula- tion was 16,345 in 1874, and 17,219 in 1884,

Roulers is mentioned in 822 as Roslar and in 847 as Rollare. Baldwin VIII., count of Flanders, died in a house in the principal square of the town in 1120 on his return from the battle of Angers. In 1794 Roulers was the scence of a conflict between the Austrians and the French.

ROUM (Rvtm) is the name by which the Arabs call the Romans, 2.¢., all subjects of the Roman power. Bildd al- fitim, “the lands of the Romans,” accordingly nieans the Roman empire. The parts of the old empire conquered by the Arabs were regarded as having ceased to be Roman, but the Western Christian lands were still called lands of the Rum, without reference to the fact that they had in great part ceased to pay any allegiance to the “king of the Rum,” z.e., the Byzantine emperor. When Ibn Jobair takes a passage in a Genoese vessel he speaks of the crew as Romans; and in Spain a “ Rumitya” meant a “ Christian slave-girl.” Sometimes all Europe is included in the lands of the Rim; at other times the northern nations are excluded ; sometimes again the word means the Byzantine empire ; and, finally, the kingdom founded by the Seljuks, in lands won by them from Byzantium, is the kingdom of the Seljuks of Rum, so that Rum comes to take the restricted sense of Asia Minor. So Abulfeda uses the term. Roumelia and Roumania in like manner mean no more than the “ Roman country” in a special limitation.

ROUMANIA, a kingdom in the south-east of Europe between the Carpathians, the Pruth, the Black Sea, and the Danube. The Pruth and the

Kilia mouth of the Danube now form the frontier with Russia. West of Silistria the Danube is the boundary between Roumania and Bulgaria, while to the east of that point the boundary is formed by an irregular line passing east by south to the coast about ten miles to the south of Mangalia. The territory thus shut off between the Danube and the Black Sea is known as the Dosprupsa (q.v.), and differs in its physical features and products from the rest of the kingdom. It was given to Roumania at the close of the last Russo-Turkish War as a compensation for the territory of Bessarabia, east of the Pruth, which was then restored to Russia. The area of the kingdom is estimated at about 49,250 square miles, which is rather less than that of England without Wales. The greatest length of the kingdom is from east to west near the parallel of 45°, along which the length is about 350 miles. The line stretching from north-west to south-east between the extreme points of the kingdom is about fifteen miles shorter.

The crescent-shaped portion of the kingdom lying between the Danube and Pruth and the Carpathians is tolerably uniform in its physical features. The southern part of the area is a plain continuous with that of southern Russia. Towards the interior the surface rises gradually but slowly until we come to the spurs of the Carpathians. The Roumanian frontier on this side runs for the most part along the very crest of the mountains, which have peaks rising to from 6000 to 8000 feet and upwards. The lowest part of this plain is that which stretches along the left bank of the Danube, and this also

is the dreariest and least productive. Large tracts of it are marshy and subject to inundation, and even beyond the marshy districts the aspect of the country remains extremely uninviting. Agriculture is neglected; coarse grasses occupy large areas; and the most conspicuous feature in the landscape is probably a rude well, such as is seen in the pusstas of Hungary and some parts of southern Russia, where the general aspect of the country is so like what we find here. Farther inland, however, the appearance of the surface improves: agriculture becomes more general, trees (willows, alders, and poplars) more abundant; on the still higher ground nearer the Carpathians the outward signs of comfort and prosperity become more and

more apparent; the vine clothes the hill slopes ; plums, peaches, and southern fruits are grown in profusion; large forests of oak, beech, and elm reach to the hill tops, and various minerals form an important addition to the present and prospective resources of the country. At elevations too high for the foliage trees just mentioned these are succeeded by pines and firs, birches and larches, which crown the mountains to a height of 5000 or 6000 feet. Extensive as the plains of Roumania are, 40 per cent. of the entire surface is more than a thousand feet above sea-level, while the greater part of the northern (or Moldavian) half of the crescent varies from 300 to 1000 feet, almost all the rest of Moldavia being still more elevated.

The superficial geology of Roumania, so far as it iy Geology,

known, is extremely simple, at least on the left bank of the Danube. Quaternary deposits are spread over all the plains. Among these the most important is the yellow loess, which covers such large areas in Hungary also, and which in Roumania attains in places a depth of 150 to 300 feet. In certain parts the black soil of southern Russia extends into Roumania, and is important on account of its richness, though its depth is nowhere above 3 feet. Advancing inland one meets next with Miocene and Eocene deposits, until, in ascending the slopes of the Carpathians, Secondary, Primary, and crystalline rocks are seen to crop out in succession. The desolate plateau of the Dobrudja contrasts with the region on the left of the Danube in its geology as in other respects. Its basis consists of crystalline rocks, but these are covered with sedimentary formations of various ages. On the north this plateau, which is hilly and even mountainous, sinks down rathcr abruptly to the delta of the Danube, a congeries of alluvial marshes occupied chiefly by aquatic and marsh-loving birds.

Of the rivers of Roumania by far the most important Rivers.

is the Danube, which is navigable for large vessels throughout its Roumanian reach, the first obstruction to navigation, the celebrated Iron Gates, occurring just where it enters Roumanian territory. The breadth of the river is of some consequence in view of the fact that it is a frontier stream, and the marshes on the left bank have at least this advantage that they enable it to serve all the more effectually as a natural boundary. The plains on the left are traversed by numerous winding tributaries of the

Danube, but of these the only one of importance as a means of communication is the Pruth, which is navigable for small grain-carrying vessels. The others—the Sereth, Jalomitza, Dambovitza, Olta—are sluggish streams, often half-dry, but yet at certain seasons subject to inundations, which unfortunately occur at a time when the crops are so far advanced as to be liable to be much damaged. In consequence of this the Government has bestowed much pains on the regulation of these streams, and the works for this purpose are rendered further serviceable by the fact that the Roumanian rivers can be turned to account for irrigation.

Wlimate.

ROUMANIA

The climate of Roumania is one of extremes as regards temperature. Winter and summer are almost equally trying. In the former season the thermometer may sink to — 15° Fahr., while in the latter it may rise to from 90° to 95°. The mean temperature of spring at Bucharest is 53°, summer 724°, autumn 65°, winter 273°. Spring, how- ever, scarcely exists except in name, the interval between the cold winter and hot summer being very short. The autumn, on the other hand, is long and is the most genial season of the year. It lasts to the end of November. Being continuous with the Russian plain, Roumania is exposed to the bitterly cold wind from the north-east by which southern Russia is also scourged. In Roumania this wind, known as crivets, blows on an average 155 days in the year, while a west or south-west wind, called the austru, equally disagreeable for its scorching heat, blows on an average 126 days. The rainfall is not excessive. The number of rainy days in the year is about 74, or only about two-fifths of the number round London. The summer nionths are those in which the rains are most abundant. Snow is unfrequent (12 days in the year). As regards salubrity the low-lying plains near the Danube are the worst part of the kingdom. Marsh fever is there prevalent, and the tendency to suffer from disease is increased by the miserable character of the dwellings occupied by the peasantry of that district. The houses are mere pits dug out in the ground and covered over with sloping roofs formed of branches and twigs.

Three-fourths of the population are dependent upon agriculture. The plains covered by loess and black soil are admirably adapted for the growth of eereals, and of these the most important are niaize, wheat, and barley. The methods of eultivation are to a large extent primitive and imperfect, but great improvements are taking place through the application of foreign capital to the development of the native resources. Improved agricultural im- plements of all kinds have been introduced of late years in great numbers, The old plough, which has a share resembling a lance head, which enters the ground horizontally and thus merely scratches the surface, is being rapidly superseded by ploughs of English and Austrian manufacture. These improvements, which have been greatly stimulated by the alteration in the status of the Roumanian peasantry brought about by the law of 1864, and like- wise by the introduction of railways, have resulted in an enormous increase in the amount of the production of cereals. Roumania is one of the principal grain-exporting countries in Europe, and the increase in the production just alluded to is sufficiently well indi- cated by the figures given below relative to the exports of grain to the United Kingdom. The great variations in these figures, though obviously due in part to political causes, likewise serve to illustrate the ehief drawback under which Roumanian agriculture labours— nainely, the liability to drought.

Besides forming a valuable article of export maize furnishes the chief food of the people. The great body of Roumanians seldom eat meat exccpt on feast days, and the favourite food is a dish called mamaliga, made by boiling maize-meal and flavouring it with a little salt. {t thus resembles the hominy of the Americans. In addition to eercals many kinds of vegetables, including garlic, melons, and cueumbers, are grown. Hemp and eolza are also important products, and tobacco furnished a considerable article of export until it was made a monopoly of the state in 1872. As already mentioned, wine and numerous fruits are produced on the foot-hills of the Carpathians, but owing to neglect the products are greatly inferior to what they ought to be. Nothing, it is said, but eare in the cultivation of the vine and the preparation and pre- servation of tlie wine is necessary to make Roumania a wine- growing country of the first rank. As it is, vines are estimated to cover only about 250,000 acres, or about 735 of the entire surface. From plums the Roumanians extract a strong spirit known as tsuica, and it is chiefly for this that the plum-tree is eultivated.

The rearing of domestic animals is likewise an important industry, but it has not advanced so much of late years as the growth of cereals. The exports of eattle are almost stationary. Oxen are of much more importance than horses, being chiefly used in field labours. Buffaloes also are reared for the purpose, and are much valued for their strength. Sheep and cattle rearing forms the chief occupation of the sparse population of the Dobrudja.

About one-sixth of the total surface of Roumania is estimated to be eovcred with forests produeing valuable timber trees. Oaks, firs, and beeches are said to be met with having a diameter of more than 8 feet at the height of 33 feet above the ground. The warm

summers and eold winters are favourable to the quality of the wood, which is hard and lasting. Unfortunately there is a good deal of recklessness in the way in which the forests are utilized, and they are said to be fast disappearing ; but it is to be hoped that the influence of the College of Agriculture and Sylviculture at Ferestreu, 2 miles from Bucharest, will help to put a check upon this improyvidence, as it is without doubt contributing greatly to the promotion of Roumanian agriculture.

The mineral wealth on the Roumanian side of the Carpathians is considerable, but at present there are only three minerals that have any great industrial importance. These are rock-salt, petroleum, and lignite. The salt mines are a state niouopoly, and two of them, at Ocna-Mare and Telega, are partly worked by convicts. The depth from which the salt is extracted nowhere exceeds 300 feet. The average quantity of salt sold annually is about 62,000 tons. Lignite is important inasmuch as it is used along with wood on the railways, as well as in brick and lime kilns, Coal is also found, in some places even at the surface, but, though one or two mines have been opened, the total production is insignificant. Ozocerite, or fossil wax, is frequently found in association with lignite, but is used only in small quantity by the peasantry. Among other minerals are antlivacite, iron, gold, copper, lead, sulphur, cobalt, and arsenic ; and there is little doubt that some of tliese at least might be made economically valuable if the resources of the country were adequately developed.

Minerals,

So far tle manufacturing industries of Roumania are hardly Manu-

worthy of mention. sugar refineries, numerous steam-mills for grinding flour, besides large numbers of floating maize-mills on the Danube; but in addition to these there are only a few manufactories at Galatz.

There are petroleum refineries, one or two factures.

From the account just given of the products of Roumania it Trade.

follows that the exports of the kingdom consist ehiefly of raw produce, and above all of cereals, while the imports are mainly composed of manufactured articles. The countries with which the trade is chiefly earried on are Austria (with about 40 per cent. of the whole trade in 1883), Great Britain (about 80 per cent.), France (about 10 per cent.), Germany (about 8 per cent.), Turkey, and Russia. The foreign eommerce of Roumania is centred in Galatz, which is situated at the bend of the Danube where the river once more turns eastward on reaching the northern extremity of the Dobrudja plateau. From this centre there is one line of rail- way leading into Russia, while others pass through the interior of Roumania and connect with the Austrian lines in the north and south of Hungary. The first Roumanian railway was that from Giurgevo to Bucharest, opened in 1869. In 1884 there were about 1000 miles of railway in the kingdom. The internal trade of Roumania is almost entirely in the hands of the Jews. It is greatly hampered by the existence of the octroi in all the large towns, almost all the necessaries of life as well as luxuries being taxed when introduced within the municipal boundaries.

See Samuelson, Roumania, Past and Present (London, 1882); Ozanne, Three

Years in Roumania (London, 1878); Kanitz, Donau-Bulgarien und der Balkan (1875); and R. Roesler, Romdnische Studien. (G. G.

Statistics.

The approximate proportion of cultivated and uncultivated land Produce.

in Roumania is given in pogones (= 14 acres) as follows :—

Ceorealem@oandens) vines). ...2….0-.c-ssonssess- 4,945,708 PPASUULCHAMUMIAN AG. ccsec sas sce vsessseceenseruces 7,698,910 jest success cence atest ad snmnnnecaniras 4,029,947 Thai isiganucedl, sanpaseoscotonncduoseosseonsdodceone 7,574,386

The annual yield of cereals of all kinds is roughly estimated at 15,000,000 quarters. is about 3,000,000.

In 18838 the following were the values of the principal articles of import and export :—

The number of horned cattle in the country

Imports.| Exports.

Imports.

——

ee

£ “3 £ £ Textiles…….| 4,706,063 | 248,504 || Minerals, pottery..) 455,510 12,760 WetalShec ce. ~~ers << 2,926,576 | 73,196 || Oils, fat, &e vee] 874,337 ' Skins, leather.....| 1,749,674 281,377 | 6,902,280 Wood and manu~~ Animals…….) 159,420 | 465,692 PACTUTES. 0,-2.2: 754,754 | 323,372 || Fruits, vegetables..| 62,846 | 171,381 Exotie products…) 713,000 ; 24,080

The total imports of British home produce, mostly cotton goods, &e,, and iron, into Roumania in 1883 amounted to £1,344,619, and the total exports, mostly barley and maize, of Roumania to Great Britain to £3,516,442. ; There were in 1884 about 1000 miles of railway complete in the kingdom, and 3000 miles of telegraph lines. ; The estimated population of the country is 5,876,000, including Popula-

about 400,000 Jews and 200,000 Gipsies. millions of the population belong to the Roumanian branch of the Orthodox Greek Church, and there are 114,000 Roman Catholics and 18,800 Protestants.

Imports and exports.

About four and a half tion.

Eduea- tion,

Learned institu- tions.

Army.

Radul Negru.

16

An official analysis of the occupations of the people gives the following results (the figures representing heads of families) :—

SOUT MAIS SS oe oy y continua dSiuvvvsdenses ace 684,168 Artisans and labourer… .....cccccseceees $3,061 TE RO 2 Jc rec 30,417 C1 cll CN am ~~Oa 22 Silla Provessors GWU tCACWSTS 0… .0:c0000~~..~~csooreee 6,066 Medical and legal professions and. druggists. 995 Artists, musicians, and publicists…..... 2,156 Priests, nron kon andsnwns……~~. 00 ces esnese es ones 18,452 NERC GPS gece ncaa TOR oot ge ke ek 125,815

BOG rns teeters ses vain sae ae eae 973,941

Of the larger cities Bucharest (Bucurest) numbered in 1876 221,805 inhabitants, Jassy 90,125, and Galatz 80,763.

In 1883 there were 2742 primary schools with 124,130 pupils, 8 normal schools with 830 pupils, and 54 high schools with 7993 pupils, besides the two universitics of Bucharest and Jassy, con- taining 97 professors and readers and 705 students. It is estimated that about 1000 young men receive their university education abroad, mostly at Paris. There is also a ladies' college, called the Asyle Héléne from its founder in its present form, the

Princess Helena Cuza, and accommodating 230 girls, niany of whom are orphans. Amongst lcarned institutions the Roumanian Academy claims the first place, and excellent contributions on subjects of national and scicntifie interest will be found amongst its proceed- ings (Analele Academiet Romane, 1878 sq.). The academy building at Bucharest contains the national library of over 30,000 volumes and a fine archzological museum containing many Old Dacian antiquities.

The peace strength of the permanent army consists of 1200 officers and 18,532 men, with 180 guns, Besides this, there are the territorial army, consisting of 120,000 men and 84 guns ; the inilitia, consisting of thirty-two regiments of infantry; and finally the levée en masse. Every Roumanian, from his twenty-first to his forty-sixth year, is obliged to serve his time in one of the above categories. The total of the Roumanian forces, exclusive of the levée en masse, amounts to about 150,000 men and 288 guns.

Medieval and Modern History of Walachia and Moldavia,

Roumnania is the name officially adopted by the united kingdom that comprises the former principalities of Walachia and Moldavia, In its native form it appears simply as “Romania,” representing the claim to Roman descent put forward by its inhabitants. These call themselves “ Romani” or “ Rumeni, ” but by their neighbours, Slavonic, Greek, Magyar, and German, they are universally known by one or other form of the word “Vlach.” As, however, this Vlach or Rouman race occupies a far wider area than that included in the present Roumanian kingdom, it may be convenient to post- pone the vexed questions connected with its origin, migrations, and distribution for more general treatment under the heading VLACHs, and to confine ourselves on this occasion to Roumania proper—the country between the Carpathians, the Lower Danube, and the Black Sea. It may be sufficient here to observe that, according to the concurrent accounts from various sources, the great plains of the later Walachian and Moldavian principalities were first occupied by an immigrant Rouman population coming from the Carpathian lands and the present Transylvania in the early Middle Ages. According to the Russian Nestor and the earliest Hungarian chroniclers, the Carpathian region, including tracts of eastcrn Hungary, were occupied by a Rouman (‘‘ Roman”) population at the time of the

Magyar invasion in the 9th century. On the other hand, the meagre annals of the plains that lie on the left bank of the Lower Danube are exclusively occupied till at least the 11th century with Slovenes, Petchenegs, Cumans, and Bulgarians. Whatever title the Carpathian Roumans may have to be considered the descendants in situ of the Romanized pro- vincials of Trajan's Dacia, it scems fairly ascertained that the present extension of this easternmost branch of the Latin peoples over the Walachian and Moldavian plains is duc to a colonizing movement from the Alpine regions to the west, effected for the most part in the 12th and succeeding centurics.

Walachia,—For the early history of the Walachian (Valachian, or Wallachian) principality the native sources are late and untrust- worthy. These sources really reduce themselves to a single chron- icle, a part of which appears to have been drawn up in the 16th eentury in Bulgaro-Slovene, and of which two Rouman translations have scen the light. This "' History of the Rouman land since the arrival of the Roumans" (Istoria téered Romaneset de chnd& au descilicata Romanit) gives a precise account of the founding of the Walachian state by Radul Negru, voivode of the Roumians of Fogaras in Transylvania, who in 1290 descended with a numerous people into the Transalpine plain and established his capital first at Cimpulungit and then at Argish. Radul dies in 1314 and is succeeded by a series of voivodes whose names and dates are duly given; but this early chapter of Walachian history has been

rudely handled by Rocsler in his essay on the oldest history of the Walachian voivodeship (Roménisehe Studien, p. 261 sg.). The so- called "Chronicle of Hurul" is a modern forgery, and our only real authorities for the beginnings of Roumanian history are Hungarian, Polish, and Byzantine.

In 1830 the voivode Alexander Bazarad or Bassaraba succeeded Hun- King Charles of garian Hungary, and for fourteen years Wallachia enjoyed complete inde: supre-

in inflicting a crushing defeat on his suzerain

pendence. Louis the Great succeeded for a while in restoring the Hungarian supremacy, but in 1367 the voivode Vlad or Vladislav inflicted another severe defeat on the Hungarians, and sueceeded for a time in ousting the Magyar ban of Severin and thus incor- porating Little Walachia, the country west of the Aluta, in his dominions. Subsequently, in order to retain a hold on the loyalty of the Walachian voivode, the king of Hungary invested him with the title of duke of Fogaras and Omlas, Rouman districts situate in Transylvania, and this investiture scems to have left its impress on the traditional account of Radul Negru. ‘

Under the voivode Mircea (1383-1419), whose prowess is still Mircea.

celebrated in the national folk-songs, Walachia played for a while a more ambitious part. This prince, during the earlier part of his reign, songht a coumterpoise to Hungarian influence in the close alliance with King Vladislav Jagietto of Poland. He added to his other titles that of “count of Severin, despot of the Dobrudja, and lord of Silistria,” and both Widin and Sistov appear in his pos- session. A Walachian contingent, apparently Mircea’s, aided the Servian Kuiaz Lazar on the fatal field of Kosovo ; later he was led by the force of circumstances to ally himself with his former enemy Sigismund of Hungary against Bajazet, and in 1396 shared with him the disaster of Nikopolis. Bajazet subsequently invaded and laid waste a large part of Walachia, but the voivode succeeded in inflicting considerable loss on the retiring Turks, and the capture of Bajazet by Timur in 1402 gave the country a reprieve. In the internecine struggle that followed amongst the sons of Bajazet, Mircea espoused the cause of Musa; but, though he thus obtained for a while considerable influence in the Turkish councils, this policy eventually drew on him the vengeance of Sultan Mahomet I., who succeeded in reducing him to a tributary position.

During the succceding period the Walachian princes appear alternately as the allies of Hungary or the creatures of the Turk. In the later battle of Kosovo of 1448, between Hunyadiand Sultan’ Murad, the Walachian contingent treacherously surrendered to the Turks, but this did uot hinder the victorious sultan from massacring the prisoners and adding to the tribute a yearly contribution of 3000 javelins and 4000 shields. In 1453

Constantinople fell; in 1454 Hunyadi died; and two years later the sultan invaded Walachia to set up Vlad IV., the son of a former voivode,

but his son, during his Turkish sojourn, had improved on his father's example. He was known in Walachia as " Dracul," or the Devil, and has left a name in history as Vlad the Impaler. The stories of his ferocious savagery exceed belief. He is said to have feasted amongst his impaled victims. When the sultan Mahomet, infuriated at the impalement of his envoy, the pasha of Widin, who had been charged with Vlad's deposition, invaded Walachia in person with an immense host, he is said to have found at one spot a forest of pales on which were the bodies of men, women, and children. The voivode Radul, who was now substituted for this monster by Turkish influence, was constrained to pay a tribute , of 12,000 ducats.

The shifting policy of the Walachian princes at this time is State of well described in a letter of the Hungarian king Matthias to Walachia "The voivodes," he writes, "of Walachia and circ. Moldavia fawn alternately upon the Turks, the Tatars, the Poles, 1500.

Casimir of Poland.

and the Hungarians, that among so many masters their perfidy may remain unpunished." The prevalent laxity of marriage, the frequency of divorce, and the fact that illegitimate children could succeed as well as those born in lawful wedlock, by multiplying the candidates for the voivodeship and preventing any regular system of succession, contributed much to the internal confusion of the country. The elections, though often controlled by the Divan, were still constitutionally in the hands of the boiars, who were split up into various factions, cach with its own pretender to the throne. The princes followed one another in rapid succession, and a large proportion met with violent ends, A large part of the population led a pastoral life, and at the time of Veran tius's visit to Walachia in the early part of the 16th century the towns and villages were built of wood and wattle and daub.. Tirgovist alone, at this time the capital of the country, was a considerable town, with two stone castles, Nagul Bassaraba, who succeeded in TNs was a great builder of monasteries, and, besides erecting a monastic church at Argish, which he coated with white marble, and a new cathedral at Tirgovist, adorned Mount Athos with his pious works, He transferred the

direct allegiance of the Walachian Church to Constantinople. On Nagul's death, however, in 1521, the brief period of comparative prosperity which his architectural works attest was tragically interrupted, and it seemed for a timc

The Vlad the father of this Vlad had himself been notorious for his ferocity, Impaler.

urkish

ppres- Lons,

ROUM

that Walachia was doomed to sink into a Turkish pashalic. The Turkish commander Mahmoud Bey became treacherously possessed of Nagul's young sou and successor, and, sending him a prisoner to Stamboul, proceeded to nominate Turkish governors in the towns and villages of Walachia. The Walachians resisted desperately, elected Radul, a kinsman of Nagul, voivode, and succeeded with Hungarian help in defeating Mahmoud Bey at Grumatz in 1522.

The conflict was prolonged with varying fortunes, but in 1524 the

dogged opposition of the Walachians finally triumphed in the sultan's recognition of Radul.

But, though Walachia thus escaped conversion into a Turkish pashalic, the battle of Mohacs in 1526 decided the long pre- ponderance of Turkish control. The unfortunate province served as a transit route for Turkish expeditions against Hungary and Transylvania, and was exhausted by continual requisitions. Turkish scttlers were gradually making good their footing on Walachian soil, and mosques were rising in the towns and villages, The voivode Alexander, who succeeded in 1591, and who like his predecessors had bought his post of the Divan, carried the oppres- sion still further by introducing agaiust the capitulations a janizary

BINT A 17

of his returning prosperity Basta, who had quarrelled with him about the supreme command of the imperial forees, procured his murder (August 19, 1601). Thus perished Michael the Brave in the forty-third year of his age, after performing in the course of his short reign achievements which, considering the small resources at his disposal, must place his name beside those of Hunyadi and Sobieski in the annals of castern Europe. Not only did he succeed in rolling back for a time the tide of Turkish conquest, but for the first and last time in modern history he united what once had been Trajan's Dacia, in its widest extent, and with it the whole Rouman race north of the Danube, under a single sceptre.

Michael's wife Florika and his son Petrushko were carried off Turkish into Tatar captivity, and Serban, of the Bassaraba family, was domina- raised to the voivodeship of Walachia by imperialist influences. tion.

On his deposition by the Porte in 1610, there followed a succession of princes who, though still for the most part of Rouman origin, bought their appointment at Stamboul. Walachian contingents were continually employed by the Turks in their Polish wars; and the settlement of Greeks in an official or mcreantile capacity in the principality provoked grave discontent, which on one occasion took the form of a massacre.

The reign of the voivode Matthias Matthias Bassaraba, who succeeded in 1633, was an interval of comparative Bassa- prosperity, and its length, twenty-one years, forms itself a panegyric, raba.

guard, and farming out his possessions to his Turkish supporters, Meanwhile the Turkish governors on the Bulgarian bank never ceased to ravage the country, and again it seemed as if Walachia

was favourable.

must share the fate of the Balkan states and succumb to the direct government of the Ottoman. In the depth of the national distress the ehoice of the people fell on Michael, the son of Petrushko, ban of Krajova, the first dignitary of the realm, who had fled to Transylvania to escape Alexander's machinations, Supported at Constantinople by twoat that time influential personages, Sigmund Bathori and the English ambassador, Edward Barton,

and aided by a loan of 200,000 florins, Michael succeeded in procuring from the Diwan the deposition of his enemy and his own nomination,

The genius of Michael “the Brave ” (1593-1601) secured Walachia for a time a place in universal history. The moment for action The emperor Rudolph II. had gained some successes over the Turks, and Sigmund Biathori, prince of Transylvania, had been driven by Turkish extortions to throw off the allegiance to the sultan, But the first obstacle to be dealt

- with was the presence of the enemy within the walls, and Michael

had recourse to the same desperate expedient as the Montenegrins ata later date. By previous concert with the Moldavian voivode Aaron, on November 18, 1594, the Turkish guards and settlers in the two principalities were massacred at a given signal, Michael followed up these ‘ Walachian Vespers ” by an actual invasion of Turkish territory, and, aided by Sigmund Bathori, succeeded in carrying by assault Rustchuk, Silistria, and other places on the right bank of the lower Danube. A simultaneous invasion of Walachia by a large Turkish and Crim-Tatar host was successfully defeated ; the Tatar khan withdrew with the loss of his bravest followers, and, in the great victory of Mantin on the Danube (1595), the Turkish army was annihilated, and its leader Mustafa slain. The sultan now sent Sinan Pasha “the Renegade” to invade Walachia with 100,000 men. Michael withdrew to the mountains before this overwhelming force, but, being joined by Bathori with a Transylvanian contingent, the voivode resumed the offensive, stormed Bucharest, where Sinan had entrenched a Turkish detach- ment, and, pursuing the main body of his forces to the Danube, overtook the rearguard and cut it to pieces, capturing enormous -booty. Sinan Pasha returned to Constantinople to die, it is said, of vexation, and in 1597 the ‘sultan, weary of a disastrous contest, sent Michaela red flag in token of reconciliation, reinvested him for life in an office of which he had been unable to deprive him, and granted the succession to his son.

and defeated his successor Andreas Bathori near Hermannstadt, and, seizing himself the reins of government, secured his proclama- tion as prince of Transylvania. The emperor consented to appoint him his ‘locum tenens per Transylvaniam,” and the sultan ratified his election. As prince of Transylvania he summoned dicts in 1599 and 1600, and, having expelled

the voivode of Moldavia, united under his sceptre three principalities. The partiality that he showed for the Rouman and Szekler parts of the population alicnated, however, the Transylvanian Saxons, who preferred the direct government of the emperor, The imperial commissioner General Basta lent his support to the disaffected party, and Michael was driven out of Transylvania by a successful revolt, while a Polish army under Zamoyski invaded .Walachia from the Moldavian side. for a moment deserted him. He resolved to throw himself on the emperor, rode to Prague, won over Rudolph by his singular address, and, richly supplied with funds, reappeared in Transylvania a3 imperial governor. In conjunction with Basta he defeated the superior Transylvanian forces at Goroslé, expelling Sigmund Bathori, who had again aspired to the erown, and taking one hundred and fifty flags and forty-five cannon. But at the moment

Michael's coolness and resource, however, never

He defended himself successfully against his powerful rival Vasilje Lupul, the voivode of Moldavia, and his Tatar and Cossack allies, and found a golden key to Turkish tolerance. He appears as a lawgiver, translating the Basilica of Jo. Comnenus, and founded many churches and monasteries. His last days were embittered, however, by an outbreak of military anarchy. On his death the Turkish yoke again weighed heavier on Walachia. The old capital Tirgovist was considered by the Divan to be too near the Transyl-vanian frontier, and the voivodes were accordingly compelled to transfer their residence to Bucharest. The mechanical skill of the Walachians was found useful by the Turks, who employed them as carpenters and pontonniers ; and during the siege of Vienna by Kara Mustafa in 1683 the Walachian contingent, which, under the

voivode Serban Cantacuzene, had been forced to co-operate with Serban the Turks, was entrusted with the construction of the two bridges Canta- The Walachian as cuzene.

over the Danube above and below Vienna, well as the Moldavian prince, who had been also forced to bring his contingent, maintained a secret intelligence with the besieged, an intelligence continued by the voivode Serban after his return to Walachia. The emperor granted him a diploma creating him count of the empire and recognizing his descent from the

imperial house of Cantacuzene, Serban meanwhile collecting his forces for an open breach with the Porte. His prudence, however, per- petually postponed the occasion, and Walachia enjoyed peace to his death in 1688. This peaceful state of the country gave the voivode leisure to promote its internal culture, and in the year of. his death he had the satisfaction of seeing the first part of a Walachian Bible issue from the first printing-press of the country, which he had established at Bucharest. He had also caused to be compiled a history of Walachia, and had called to the country many teachers of the Greek language, whose business it was to instruct the sons of the boiars in ‘‘ grammar, rhetoric, and philosophy.”

Immediately on Serban’s death the boiars, to prevent the Porte Constan- from handing over the office to the Greek adventurer who bid the tine | highest, proceeded to elect his sister’s son Constantine Brancovan. Bran- persuaded to put eovan:

The Turkish capidji pasha, then in Bucharest, was the caftan on his head in token of Turkish approval, and the . patriarch of Constantinople, who was also present, and the arch- bishop of Walachia, Theodosius, consecrated him together at the . high altar of the cathedral, where he took the coronation oath to

quest In 1599, on the definitive abdication of Sigmund Bathori in | devote his whole strength to the good of his country and received offran- Transylvania, Michael, in league with the imperialist forces under | the boiars’ oath of subniission. Brancovan, it is true, found it syania. General Basta, and in connivance with the Saxon burghers, attacked | expedient to devote his predecessor’s treasure to purchasing: the

confirmation of his title from the Divan, but the acconnt of his coronation ceremony remains an intcresting landmark in the constitutional history of the country. In his foreign relations with the Hapsburg power he displayed the.same caution as the voivode Serban. In spite of. the vietories of the margrave of Baden at Pojarevatz, Nish, and Widin.in 1689, it was only by an exercise of force that the imperial troops secured winter quarters in Walachia, and, though after the battle of Pultava in 1709 Brancovan con. cluded a secret treaty with Czar Peter, he avoided giving open effect to it. The tranquillity. which he thus obtained was employed by Brancovan as by

his predecessor in furthering the internal well- being of the country, with what success is best apparent from the

description of Walachia left by the Florentine Del Chiaro, who Del

He Chiaro's with its rich pastures, its descrip- so symmetrically planted tion of and carefully kept by Brancovan's orders that hiding in them was Walachia.

visited the country in 1709 describes the stoneless Walachian plain, crops of maize and millet, and woods

and spent seven years there.

out of the question. Butter and honey were exported to supply the Grand Signor's kitchen at Stamboul ; wax and cattle to Venice 5 and the red and white wine of Walachia, notably that of Pitesti, to Transylvania, The Walachian horses were in demand amongst

the Turks and Poles. Near Ribnik and elsewhere were salt-mines which supplied all the wants of the Transdanubian provinces ; there were considerable copper mines at Maidan ; and iron was worked near Tirgovist. The Gipsy community was bound to bring fifteen pounds weight of gold from the washings of the Argish. The boiars were many of them wealthy, but the common people were so ground down with taxation that "of their ancient Roman valour only the name remained." 'To avoid the extortion of their rulers numbers had emigrated to Transylvania and even to the Turkish provinces. The principal Walachian city was Bucharest (Bucurest), containing a population of about 50,000; but, except for two large "hans " or merchants' halls built by Brancovan and his predecessor, and the recently-erected palace, which had a marble staircase and a fine garden, the houses were of wood. The other principal towns were Tirgovist, the old capital, Cernetz, Fokshani, supplied by Brancovan with an aqueduct, Ploiesti, Ghierghitza, Rusi di Vede, and Krajova, the capital of the banat of

that name, where a fine han had also been built. At Cimpulungu was a great annual fair. The dress of the men was thoroughly Turkish except for their lambskin caps, that of the women half-Greek half-Turkish. The houses were scrupulously clean and strewn with sweet herbs. Del Chiaro notices the great imitative capacity of the race, both artistic and mechanical. A Walachian in Venice had copied several of the pictures there with great skill; the copper-plates and wood engravings for the new press were executed by native hands. The Walachians imitated every kind of Turkish and European manufacture ; and, though the boiars imported finer glass from Venice and Bohemia, a glass manufactory had been established near Tirgovist which produced a better quality than the Polish. From the Bucharest press, besides a variety of ecclesiastical books, there were issued in the Rouman tongue a translation of a French work entitled “The Maxims of the Orientals” and “‘The Romance of Alexander the Great.” In 1700 Brancovan had a map of the country made and a copper- plate engraving of it executed at Padua.

the new system could uot but be productive of grinding oppression, and the swarms of ‘‘hungry Greeklings” who aceompanied the Fanariote rulers from Stamboul made their rule doubly hateful. Numbers of the peasantry emigrated, and the population rapidly diminished. In 1745 the number of tax-paying families, which a few years before had amounted to 147,000, had sunk to 70,000. Yet the taxes were continually on the increase, and the hospodar Scarlatti Ghika (1758-61), though he tried to win some popularity by the removal of Turkish settlers and the abolition of the ‘vakarit,” or tax on cattle and horses, whieh was peculiarly hateful to the peasantry, raised the total amount of taxation to 25,000,000 lion-dollars. The Turks meantime maintained their iron grip on the country by holding on the Walachian bank of the Danube the fortresses of Giurgevo, Turnul, and Orsova, with the surrounding districts.

But the tide of Ottoman dominion was ebbing fast. Already, by the peace of Passarovitz (Pojarevatz) in 1718, the banat of Krajova had been ceded to the emperor, though by the peace of Belgrade in 1739 it was recovered by the Porte for its Walachian vassal. In 1769 the Russian general Romanzoff

occupied the principality, the bishops and clergy took an oath of fidelity to the empress Catherine, and a deputation of boiars followed. The liberties of the country were guaranteed, taxation reformed, and in 1772 the negotiations at Fokshani between Russia and the Porte broke down because the czarina's representatives insisted on the sultan's recognition of the independence of Walachia and Moldavia under an European guarantee.

of the Walachians and Moldavians. palities were to enjoy all the privileges that they had possessed under Mahomet IV.; they were to be freed from tribute for two years, as some compensation for the ruinous effects of the last war ; they were to pay a moderate tribute; the agents of Walachia and

Fall of The prosperity of Walachia, however, under its ''Golden Bey," | Moldavia at Constantinople were to enjoy the rights of nations, and Bran- as Brancovan was known at Stamboul, only increased the Turkish | the Russian minister at the Porte should on occasion watch over the eovan. exactions. In 1701 the tribute was increased to 80,500 purses of | interests of the principalities. The stipulations of the treaty of 500 florins each. In 1708 the voivode was summoned in person to | Kutshuk Kaimardji, though deficient in precision (the Walachians, Adrianople, and again must resort to extraordinary mieans to for instance, had no authentic record of the privileges enjoyed under mollify the Divan. Shortly after, the Walachians were called on to Mahomet IV.), formed the basis of the future liberties in both prin- supply masons, carpenters, and other workmen for the fortification cipalities ; and, as from this period onwards Walachian history is of Bender, and, though these and other demands were punctually | closely connected with that of Moldavia, it may be convenient met and the increased tribute regularly paid, the sultan finally | before continuing this review to turn to the earlier history of the resolyed on the removal of his too prosperous vassal. Brancovan | sister principality. was accused of secret correspondence with the empcror, the czar, Moldavia.—The mention of Vlachs on the borders of Galicia in Early the king of Poland, and the Venetian republic, of betraying the | 1160 (Nic. Chon., p. 171) gives just ground for believing that a Mol- Porte's secrets, of preferring Tirgovist to Bucharest as a residence, of | Rouman population existed in Moldavia at least as early as the first davian acquiring lands and palaces in Transylvania, of keeping agents at half of the 12th century. Under the successive

domination, how- history. Venice and Vienna, in both of which cities he had invested large | ever, of Petchenegs, Cumans, and Tatars, it occupied as yet a sub- sums, and of striking gold coins with his effigy, one of which, with | ordinate position. It was not till 1352 that the Tatars, already the legend CONSTANTINVS BASSARABA DE BRANCOVAN D. G. VOEVODA weakened by Polish assaults on the Podolian side, were expelled from ET PRINCEPS VALACHIM TRANSALPIN#, and having on the reverse | this Cumanian region by the Transylvanian voivode Andreas the crowned shield of Walachia containing a raven holding a cross | Laszkovich. It is in fact to the period immediately succeeding this in its beak between a moon and a star, is engraved by Del Chiaro. | event that the first establishment of an independent Rouman state They were of 2, 8, and 10 ducats weight. A capidji pasha arrived in Moldavia is referred by the concurrent testimony of Moldavian, at Bucharest on April 4, 1714, and proclaimed Brancovan "'mazil," Russian, and Hungarian sources, i.e, deposed. He was conducted to Constantinople and beheaded, According to the native traditional account, as first given by the together with his four sons. A scion of the rival Cantacuzenian Moldavian chroniclers of the 17th and 18th centuries (Grigorie family was elected by the pashia's orders, and he, after exhausting Urechie and Miron Costin), Dragosh the son of Bogdan, the founder the principality for the benefit of the Divan, was in turn deposed | of the new principality, emigrated with his followers towards the and executed in 1716. end of the 14th century from the Hungarian distriet of Marmaros The From this period onwards the Porte introduced a new system with | in the North Carpathians. The story is related with various Fan- regard to its Walachian vassals. The line of national princes ceases. fabulous accompaniments. From the aurochs (zimbrw), in pursuit ariote The office of voivode or hospodar was sold to the highest bidder at | of which Dragosh first arrived on the banks of the Molda, is derived regime. Stamboul, to be farmed out from a purely mercenary point of view. | the ox-head of the Moldavian national arms, and from his favourite

The princes who now succeeded one another in rapid suceession were mostly Greeks from the Fanar quarter of Constantinople who had served the palace in the quality of dragoman, or held some other court appointment. They were nominated by imperial firman without a shadow of free election, and were deposed and transferred from one principality to another, executed

or reappointed, like so many pashas. Like pashas they rarely held their office more than three years, it being the natural policy of the Porte to multiply such lucrative nominations. The same hospodar was often reappointed again and again as he succeeded in raising the sum necessary to buy back his title. Constantine Mavroeordato was in this way hospodar of Walachia at six different times, and paid on one occasion as much asa million lion-dollars for the office. The princes thus imposed on the country were generally men of intelli- gence and culture. Nicholas Mavrocordato, the first of the series, was himself the author of a Greek work on duties, and main- tained at his court Demeter Prokopios of Moschopolis, who wrote a raview of Greek literature during the 17th and beginning of the 18th centuries. Constantine Mavrocordato was the author of really liberal reforms. He introduced an ‘‘urbarium” for the peasants, limiting the days of ‘‘ angaria,” or forced labour for the landlord, to twenty-four, and in 1747 decreed the abolition of serfdom. But

hound who perished in the waters the name of the river. From the Hungarian and Russian sources, which are somewhat more precise, the date of the arrival of Dragosh, who otherwise appears as Bogdan, in Moldavia appears to have been 1359, and his de- parture from Marmaros was carried out in defiance of his Hungarian suzerain.

In the agreement arrived at between King Louis of Hungary and Rival the emperor Charles IV. in 1872, the voivodate of Moldavia was claims of recognized as a dependency of the crown of St Stephen. The over- Poland lordship over the country was, however, contested by the king of and Poland, and their rival claims were a continual source of dispute Hungary.

between the two kingdoms. In 1412 a remarkable agreement was arrived at between Sigismund, in his quality of king of Hungary, and King Jagietto of Poland, by which both parties consented to postpone the question of suzerainship in Moldavia. Should, however, the Turks invade the country, the Polish and Hungarian forces were to unite in expelling them, the voivode was to be deposed, and the Moldavian territories divided between the allies. During the first half of the 15th eentury Polish influence was preponderant, and it was customary for the voivodes of Moldavia to do homage to the king of Poland at Kamenice or Snyatin.

In 1456 the voivode Peter, alarmed at the progress of the Turks,

By the treaty of Kutshuk Kaimardji, coneluded in Treaty of 1774, Russia consented to hand back the principalities to the Kutshuk sultan, but by Art. xvi. several stipulations were made in favour Kaim- The people of the prinei- ardji.

ROUMANIA

who were now dominant in Servia and Walachia, offered Sultan Mahomet a yearly tribute of 2000 ducats. On his deposition, how- ever, in 1458 by Stephen, known as “ the Great,” Moldavia became a power formidable alike to Turk, Pole, and Hungarian. Through- out the long reign of this voivode, which lasted forty-six years, from 1458 to 1504, his courage and resources never failed him. In the early part of his reign le appears, in agreement with the Turkish sultan and the king of Poland, turning out the Hungarian vassal, the ferocious Vlad, from the Walachian throne, and annexing the coast cities of Kilia and Cetatea Alba or Bielogorod, the Turkish Akicrman, In the autumn of 1474 the sultan Mahomet entered Moldavia at the head of an army estimated by the Polish historian Dlugoss at 120,000 men. Voivode Stephen withdrew into the interior at the approach of this overwhelming host, but on J anuary 17, 1475, turned at bay on the banks of Lake Rakovietz and gained a complete victory over the Turks. Four pashas were among the slain ; over a hundred banners fell into the Moldavian hands; and only a few survivors succceded in reaching the Danube. In 1476 Mahomet again entered Moldavia, thirsting for vengeance, but, though successful in the open field, the Turks were sorely harassed by Stephen’s guerilla onslaughts, and, being thinned by pestilence, were again constrained to retire. In 1484 the same tactics proved successful against an invasion of Bajazet. Three years later a Polish invasion of Moldavia under John Albert with 80,000 men ended in disaster, and shortly afterwards the voivode Stephen, aided by a Turkish and Tatar contingent, laid waste the Polish territories to the upper waters of the Vistula, and succeeded in annexing for a time the Polish province of Pokutia that lay between the Car- pathians and the Dniester.

Exclusive of this temporary acquisition, the Moldavian territory

. at this period extended from the river Milcov, which formed the

boundary of Walachia, to the Dniester. It included the Carpathian region of the Bukovina, literally “the beechwood,” where lay Sereth and Suciava, the earliest residences of the voivodes, the maritime district of Budzak (the later Bessarabia), with Kilia and Bielogorod, and the left bank of the lower Danube from Galatz to the Sulina mouth, The government, civil and ecclesiastical, was practically the same as that described in the case of Walachia, the officials bearing for the most part Slavonic titles derived from the practice of the Bulgaro-Vlachian czardom. The church was Orthodox Oriental, and depended from the patriarch of Ohrida. In official documents the language used was the old Slovene, the style of a Moldavian ruler being Natchalnik ¢ Voievoda Moldovlasi, prince and duke (= Germ. “Fiirst” and “Herzog”) of the Moldovlachs, The election of the voivodes, though in the hands of the boiars, was strictly regulated by hereditary principles, and Cantemir de- scribes the extinction of the house of Dragosh in the 16th century as one of the unsettling causes that most contributed to the ruin of the country. The Moldavian army was reckoned 40,000 strong, and the cavalry arm was especially formidable. Verantius of Sebenico, an eye-witness of the state of Moldavia at the beginning of the 16th century, mentions three towns of the interior provided with stone walls—Suciava, Chotim, and N jamtz; the people were barbarous, but more warlike than the Walachians and more tena- cious of their national costume, punishing with death any who adopted the Turkish,

In 1504 Stephen the Great died, and was succeeded by his son, Bogdan “the One-eyed.” At feud with Poland about Pokutia, despairing of efficacious support from hard-pressed Hungary, the new voivode saw no hope of safety except in a dependent alliance with the advancing Ottoman Power, which already hemmed Moldavia in on the Walachian and Crimean sides. In 1513 he agreed to pay an annual tribute to Sultan Selim in return for the sultan’s guarantce to preserve the national constitution and religion of Moldavia, to which country the Turks now gave the name of Kara Bogdan, from their first vassal. The terms of Moldavian sub- mission were further regulated by a firman signed by Sultan Suleiman at Buda in 1529 by which the yearly present or ‘‘ back- shish,” as the tribute was euphoniously called, was fixed

at 4000 ducats, 40 horses, and 25 falcons, and the voivode was bound at necd to supply the Turkish army with a contingent of a thousand

a

historical works which he dedicated to Philip II. of Spain, Basilicus, finding that his Aigean sovereignty in partibus was of little practical value beyond the crowning of poet laureates, fixed his roving ambi- tion on a more substantial dominion. He published an astounding pedigree, in which, starting from ‘Hercules Triptolemus” he wound his way through the royal Servian line to the kinship of Moldavian voivodes, and, having won the emperor Ferdinand and Albert Lasky to his financial and military support, succeeded, though at the head of only 1600 cavalry, in routing by a bold dash the vastly superior forces of the voivode, and even in purchasing the Turkish confirmation of his usurped title. He assumed the style of BaotAcds MoAdaBias, and elnded the Turkish stipulation that he should dismiss his foreign guards. In Moldavia he appeared as a moral reformer, endeavouring to put down the preva- lent vices of bigamy and divorce. He erected a school, placed it under a Gerinan master, and collected children from every part of the country to be maintained and educated at his expense, He also busied himself with the collection of a library. But his taxes —a ducat for each family—were considered heavy; his orthodoxy was suspected, his foreign counsellors detested. In 1563 the people rose, massacred the Hungarian guards, the foreign settlers, and finally Jacob himself.

The expelled voivode Alexander was now restored by the Porte, the schools were destroyed, and the country relapsed into its normal state of barbarism. His successor Ivonia was provoked by the Porte’s demand for 120,000 ducats as tribute instead of 60,000 as heretofore to rise against the oppressor, but after gaining three victories he was finally defeated and slain (1574), and the country was left more than ever at the mercy of the Ottoman. Voivodes were now created and deposed in rapid succession by the Divan, but the victories of Michael the Brave in Walachia infused a more independent spirit into the Moldavians. The Moldavian dominion was now disputed by the Transylvanians and Poles, and in 1600 Michael succeeded in annexing it to his “‘Great Dacian” realm. On Michael’s murder the Poles under Zamoyski again asserted their supremacy, but in

1618 the Porte once more recovered its dominion and sct up successively two crcatures of its own as voivodes—Gratiani, an Italian who had been court jeweller, and a Greek custom-house official, Alexander,

As in Walachia at a somewhat later date the seemed now thorouglily established in Moldavia,

tion by a large backshish, and every year by a smaller one. The prince Vasilje Lupul, however, an Albanian, who succeeded in 1634, showed great abilities, and for twenty years succeeded in maintaining his position on the Moldavian throne. He introduced several internal reforms, codified the written and unwritten laws of the country, established a printing press, Greek monastic schools, and also a Latin school. He brought the Moldavian Church into more direct relation with the patriarch of Constantinople, but also showed considerable favour to the Latins, allowing them to erect churches at Suciava, Jassy, and Galatz.

During the wars between Sobieski and the Turks Moldavia found itself between hammer and anvil, and suffered frightfully moreover from Tatar devastations. The voivode Duka was forced like hig Walachian contemporary to supply a contingent for the siege of Vienna in 1683. After Sobieski's death in 1696, the hopes of Moldavia turned to the advancing Muscovite power. In 1711 the

voivode Demetriu Cantemir, rendered desperate by the Turkish Demetriu exactions, concluded an agreement with the czar Peter by which Cantemir.

Moldavia was to become a protected and vassal state of Russia, with the enjoyment of its traditional liberties, the voivodeship to be hereditary in the family of Cantemir. On the approach of the Russian army the prince issued a proclamation coutaining the terms of the Russian protectorate and calling on the boiars and people to aid their Orthodox deliverers. But the iron had entered into the people's soul. The long Turkish terrorism had done its work, and at the approach of a Turkish and Tatar host the greater part of the Moldavians deserted their voivode. The Russian campaign was unsuccessful, and all that Czar Peter could offer Cantemir and the

Fanariote regime The and it became the Fanariote rule that every three years the voivode should procure his confirma- regime.

boiars who had stood by him was an asylum on Russian soil,

In his Russian exile Cantemir eomposed in a fair Latin style Cante- his Descriptio Moldaviz, the counterpart so far as Moldavia is mir's concerned to Del Chiaro's contemporary description of Walachia, descrip- The capital of the country was now J. assy, to which city Stephen the tion of Great had transferred his court from Suciava, the earlier residence Moldavia. of the voivodes. It had at this time forty churches—some of stone, some of wood. Fifty years before it had contained 12,000 houses, but Tatar devastations had reduced it to a third of its former size. The most important commercial emporium was the Danubian port of Galatz, which was frequented by vessels from the whole of the Levant from Trebizond to Barbary. The cargoes which they here took in consisted of Moldavian timber (oak, deal, and cornel), grain, butter, honey and wax, salt, and nitre ; Kilia at the north mouth of the Danube was also frequented by trading vessels, including Venetian and Ragusan. Moldavian wine was exported to Poland, Russia, Transylvania, and Hungary ; that of Cotnar was

incn. The Turks pursued much the same policy as in Walachia. The tribute was gradually increased. A hold was obtained on the country by the occupation of various strongholds on Moldavian soil with the surrounding territory,—in 1538 Cetatea Alba (Akierman), in 1592 Bender, in 1702 Chotim (Khotin). Already by the middle of the 16th century the yoke was so heavy that the voivode Elias (1546-1551) became Mohammedan to avoid the sultan's anger.

At this period occurs a curious interlude in Moldavian history. In 1561 the adventurer and impostor Jacob Basilicus succeeded with Hungarian help in turning out the voivode Alexander and 8. seizing on the reins of government, A Greek by birth, adopted son of Jacob Heraklides, despot of Paros, Samos, and other figean islands, acquainted with Greek and Latin literature, and master of most European languages, appearing alternately as a student of astronomy at Wittenberg, whither he had been invited by Count Mansfeld, as a correspondent of Melanchthon and as a writer of

Officers of state.

Continua-

tion of

20)

in Cantemir’s opinion superior to Tokay. The excellence of the Moldavian horses is attested by a Turkish proverb; and annual droves of as many as 40,000 Moldavian oxen were sent across Poland to Dantzic. Moldavia proper was divided into the upper country or Z’erra de sus, and the lower country, or J’erra de josw. Bessarabia had been detached from the rest of the principality and placed under the direct control of the seraskier. It was divided into four provinces :—that of Budzak, inhabited by the Nogai Tatars; that of Akierman or Cetatea Alba, the Greek Monkastron, a strongly fortified place ; and those of Ismaila and Kilia. The voivodes owed their nomination entirely to the Porte, and the great officers of the realm were appointed at their discretion. These were the Great Logothete (Aarele Logofetw) or chancellor ; the governor of Lower Moldavia—Vorniculw de Cerra de josw; the governor of Upper Moldavia—Vorniculu de Cerra de sus; the Hatman or commander in chief; the high chamberlain—Jfarele Postelnicu ; the great Spathar, or swordbcarer; the great cupbearer—Jfarele Paharnicu ; and the treasurer, or Vistiernicu, who together formed the prince’s council and were known as Boiari de Svatu. Below these were a number of subordinate officers who acted as their assessors and were knownas boiars of the Divan (Botart de Divanit). The high conrt of justice was formed by the prince, metropolitan, and boiars: the Botari de Svatu decided on the verdict ; the metro- politan declared the law; and the prince pronounced sentence. The boiars were able to try minor cases in their own residences, but subject to the right cf appeal to the prince’s tribunal. Of the character of the Moldavian people Cantemir does not give a very favourable account. Their best points were their hospitality and, in Lower Moldavia, their valour. They cared little for letters and were generally indolent, and their prejudice against mercantile pursuits left the commerce of the country in the hands of Armenians, Jews, Greeks, and Turks. The pure-blood Rouman population, noble and plebeian, inhabited the cities and towns or larger villages ; the peasantry were mostly of Little Russian and Hungarian

race and were in a servile condition. There was a considerable Gipsy population, almost evcry boiar having several Zingar families in his possession ; these were mostly smiths.

From this period onwards the character of the Ottoman domina- tion in Moldavia is in every respect analogous to that of Walachia.

Fanariote The office of voivode or hospodar was farmed out by the Porte to

regime,

Cession

of Buko-

vina.,

Russian protec- tion.

a succession of wealthy Greeks from the Fanar quarter of Con- stantinople. All formality of election by the boiars was now dispensed with, and the princes received their caftan of office at Constantinople, where they were consecrated by the Greek patriarch. The system favoured Turkish extortion in two ways: the presence of the voivode's family connexions at Stamboul gave the Porte so many hostages for his obedience; on the other hand the prinees themselves could not rely on any support due to family inflnence in Moldavia itself. They were thus mere puppets of the Divan, and could be deposed and shifted with the same facility as so many pashas—an object of Turkish policy, as each change was a pretext for a new levy of ''backshish." The chief families that shared the office during this period were those of Mavrocordato, Ghika, Callimachi, Ypsilanti, and Murusi. Although from the very conditions of their creation they regarded the country as a field for exploitations, they were themselves often men of education and ability, and unquestionably made some praiseworthy attempts to promote the general culture and wellbeing of their subjects. In this respect, even the Fanariote regime was preferable to merc pasha rule, while it had the further consequence of preserving intact the national form of administration and the historic offices of Moldavia. Gregory Ghika (1774-1777), who himself

spoke French and Italian, founded a school or “gymnasium” at Jassy, where Greek, Latin, and theology were taught in a fashion. He encouraged the settlement of German protestant colonists in the country, some of whom set np as watchmakers in Jassy, where they were further allowed to build an evangelical church. Carra, a Swiss who had been tutor to Prince Ghika’s children, and who published in 1781 an account of the actual state of the principalities, speaks of some of the boiars as possessing a taste for French literature and even for the works of Voltaire, a tendency actively combated by the patriarch of Constantinople.

The Russo-Turkish War, which ended in the peace of Kutshuk Kaimardji, was fatal to the integrity of Moldavian territory. The house of Austria, which had already annexed Galicia in 1772, pro- fited by the situation to arrange with both contending parties for the peaceful cession of the Bukovina to the Hapsburg monarchy. This richly-wooded Moldavian province, containing Suciava, the earliest seat of the voivodes, and Cernautii or Czernovitz, was in 1774 oceupied by Hapsburg troops with Russian connivance, and in 1777 Baron Thugut procured its formal cession from the sultan. The Bukovina is still an Austrian province.

Walachian and Moldavian History from the Treaty of Kutshuk Kaimardjt in 1774 to the Establishment of the Roumanian Kingdom. —The treaty of Kutshuk Kaimardji was hardly concluded when it was violated by the Porte, which refused to recognize the right of the Walaehian boiars to elect their voivode, and nominated

Alexander Ypsilanti, a creature of its own. In 1777 Constantine Murusi was made voivode of Moldavia in the same high-handed fashion. ‘The Divan seemed intent on restoring the old system of government in its entirety, but in 1783 the Russian representative extracted from the sultan a hattisherif defining more precisely the liberties of the principalities and fixing the amount of the annual tribute—for Walachia 619 purses exclusive of the bairam and other presents amounting to 130,000 piasters, and for Moldavia 135 purses and further gifts to the extent of 115,000 piasters. By the peace of Jassy in 1792 the Dniester was recognized as the Russian frontier, and the privileges of the principalities as specified in the hattishcrif confirmed.

In defiance of treaties, however, the Porte continued to change the hospodars almost yearly and to exact extraordinary installation presents. The revolt of Pasvan Oglu in Bulgaria was the cause of great injury to Walachia. The rebels ravaged Little Walachia in 1801-2, and their ravages were succeeded by those of the Turkish troops, who now swarmed over the country. Exaction followed exaction, and in 1802 Russia resolved to assert her treaty rights in favour of the oppressed inhabitants of the principalities. On the accession of Constantine Ypsilanti the Porte was constrained to issué a new hattisherif by which every prince was to hold his office for at least seven years, unless the Porte satisfied the Russian minister that there were good and sufficient grounds for his deposi- tion. All irregular contributions were to cease, and all citizens, with the exception of the boiars and clergy, were to pay their share of the tribute. The Turkish troops then employed in the princi- palities were to be paid off, and one year's tribute remitted for the purpose. The boiars were to be responsible for the maintenance of schools, hospitals, and roads ; they and the prince together for the militia. The number of Turkish merchants resident in the country was limited. Finally, the hospodars were to be amenable to repre- sentations made to them by the Russian envoy at Constantinople, to whom was entrusted the task of watching over the Walaehian and Moldavian liberties. This, it will be seen, wasa veiled Russian protectorate.

In 1804 the Serbs under Karageorge rose against the Turkish dominion, and were secretly aided by the Walachian voivode Ypsilanti. The Porte, instigated by Napoleon's ambassador Sebastiani, resolved on Ypsilanti's deposition, but the hospodar succeeded in escaping to St Petersburg. In the war that now ensued between the Russians and the Turks, the former were for a time successful, and even demanded that the Russian territory should extend to the Danube. In 1808 the Russians, then in occupation of the principalities, formed a governing committee consisting of the metropolitan, another bishop, and four or five boiars under the presidency of General Kusnikoff. The seat of the president was at Jassy, and General Engelhart was appointed as vice-president at Bucharest. By the peace of Bucharest, however, in 1812, the principalities were restored to the sultan under the former condi- tions, with the exception of Bessarabia, which was ceded to the ezar. The Pruth thus became the Russian boundary.

The growing solidarity between the two Rouman principalities received a striking illustration in 1816, when the Walachian and Moldavian hospodars published together a code applicable to both countries, and which had been elaborated by a joint commission. The Greek movement was now beginning, and in 1821 Alexander Ypsilanti entered Moldavia at the head of the Heterists, and pre- vailed on the hospodar Michael Sutzu to aid him in invading the Ottoman dominions. Tosecure Walachian help, Ypsilanti advanced on Bucharest, but the prince, Theodore Vladimirescu, who repre- sented the national Rouman reaction against the Fanariotes, repulsed his overtures with the remark "that his business was not to march against the Turks, but to clear the country of Fanariotes." Viadimirescu was slain by a Greek revolutionary agent, but Ypsilanti's legion was totally routed by the Turks at Dragashani, and the result of his enterprise was a Turkish oecupation of the principalities. In 1822 the Turkish troops, who had committed great excesses, were withdrawn on the combined representations of Russia, Austria, and Great Britain. The country, however, was again ravaged by the retiring troops, quarters of Jassy and Bucharest burnt, and the complete evacuation delayed till 1824, when the British Government again remonstrated with the Porte. By the convention of Akierman betwecn the Russians and the Turks in 1826 the privileges of the principalities were once more confirmed, and they were again ratified in 1829, under Russian guarantce, by

" Hetar- ists move- ment.

the peace of Adrianople. By this peace all the towns on the left bank Peace of of the Danube were restored to the principalities, and the Porte Adrian- undertook to refrain from fortifying any position on the Walachian ople, side of the river. The principalities were to enjoy commercial free- 1829.

dom, and the right of establishing a quarantine cordon along the Danube orelsewhere. The internal constitution of the countries was to be regulated by an 'Organic Law," which was drawn up by assem- blies of bishops and boiars at Jassy and Bucharest, aeting, however, under Russian control, The Organic Law thus elaborated was by no means of a liberal character, and amongst other abuses maintained the feudal privileges of the boiars. It was

ratified by the Porte in 1834, and the Russian army of occupation thereupon withdrew.

ROU—

The revolutionary movement of 1848 extended from the Roumans | according to

of Hungary and Transylvania to their kinsmen of the Transalpine regions. In Moldavia the agitation was mostly confined to the boiars, and the hospodar Michael Sturdza succeeded in arresting the ringleaders. In Walachia, however, the outbreak took a more violent form, The people assembled at Bucharest, and demanded a constitution, The prince Bibescu, after setting his signature to the constitution submitted to him, fled to Transylvania, and a provisional government was formed. The Turks, however, urged thereto by Russian diplomacy, crossed the Danube, and a joint Russo-Turkish dictatorship restored the “ Organic Law.” By the Balta-Liman convention of 1849 the two Governments agreed to the appointment of Barbi Stirbeiti as prince of Walacliia, and Gregoriti Ghika for Moldavia.

On the entry of the Russian troops into the principalities in 1858, the hospodars fled to Vienna, leaving the government in the hands of their ministers, During the Danubian campaign that how ensued great suffering was inflicted on the inhabitauts, but in 1854 the eabinet of Vienna induced the Russians to withdraw,

. Austrian troops occupied the principalities, and the hospodars

returned to their posts.

By the treaty of Paris in 1856 the principalities with their exist- ing privileges were plaeed under the holleedve guarantee of the contracting powers, while remaining under the suzerainty of the Porte,—the Porte on its part engaging to respect the complete in- dependence of their internal administration. A strip of southern Bessarabia was restored to Moldavia, so as to push baek the Russian frontier from the Danube mouth. The existing laws and statutes of both principalities were to be revised by a European commission sitting at Bucharest, and their work was to be assisted by a

Divan or national council which the Porte was to convoke ad hoc in each of the two provinces, and in which all classes of Walachian and Moldavian society were to be represented. The European com- mission, in arriving at its conclusions, was to take into considera- tion the opinion expressed by the representative councils; the Powers were to come to terms with the Porte as to the recommen- dations of the commission ; and the final result was to be embodied in a hattisherif of the sultan, which was to lay down the definitive organization of the two principalities. In 1857 the commission arrived, and the representative councils of the two peoples were con- voked. On their meeting in September they at once proceeded to vote with unanimity the nnion of the two principalities into a single state under the name of Romania (Ronmania), to be governed by a foreign prinee elected from one of the reigning dynasties of Europe, and having a single representative assembly. The Powers decided to undo the work of national union. By the convention concluded by the European congress at Paris in 1858, it was decided that the principalities should continue as heretofore to be governed each by its own prince. Walachia and Moldavia were to have separate assemblies, but a central comniission was to be established at Fokshani for the preparation of laws of common interest, which were afterwards to be submitted to the respective assemblies, Moldavia and Walachia met in Separate assemblies at Bucharest and Jassy, but the choice of both fell unanimously on Prince Alexander John Cuza, thus ensuring the personal union of the two prineipali- ties (January 1859). A new conference was now summoned to

Paris to discuss the affairs of the principalities, and the election of

Prince Cuza finally ratified by the Powers and the Porte. The two assemblies and the central commission were preserved till 1862, when a single assembly met at Bucharest and a single ministry was formed for the two countries. The central commission was at the same time abolished, and a council of state charged with preparing bills substituted for it. In May 1864, owing to difficulties between the Government and the gencral assembly, the latter was dissolved, and a statute was submitted to universal suffrage giving greater authority to the prince, and creating two chambers (of senators aud of deputies). The franchise was now extended to all

citizens, a cumulative voting power being reserved, however, for property, and the peasantry were emancipated from forced labour,

In 1865 a eonflict broke out between the Government and the people in Bucharest, and in February 1866 Prince Cuza, whose personal viees had rendered him detestable, was forced to abdicate. The chambers chose first as his suceessor the count of Flanders, but on his declining the office proceeded to elect Prince Charles of Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen, who was proclaimed hospodar or Domnu of Roumania April 29, 1866. A new constitution was at the same time introduced. Its provisions secure the universal suffrage of tax-paying citizens, ministerial responsibility, trial by jury, freedom of meeting and petition, of speeeh and of the press (except as regards breaches of the criminal eode), gratuitous and compulsory primary education, and the right of asylum for political exiles. Legislative power is shared between the prince aud chambers, but bills relating to the budget and army must originate with the ehamber of deputies. There are two chanibers — the senate and the chamber of deputies. Both houses are eleetive, and the election is carricd out by means of electoral colleges classified

Jorce majeure the Government of Prince Charles conse passage of Russian troops across Roumanian territory, on the under- War,

jurisdiction of the

In aecordanee with this convention the deputies of

ROU 21 property and professional qualifications. For the house of deputies each constituency is divided in this way into four colleges, each of which elects a member. The two highest of these colleges also elect the senators, each senator being eleeted for a term of eight years, The senate also includes ex officio certain high officials and ecclesiastics, and members for the universities. The senate consists at present of 120 members, the chamber of deputies of 178. The sovereign has a right of veto reserved to him onall measures. The judicial system is based on the Code Napoléon, with some modifieations.

On the outbreak of the Russo-Turkish war in 1877 Roumania Roumania Yielding to in Russo- nted to the Turkish

found herself once more between hammer and anvil.

standing that the scene of hostilities was as far as possible to be removed outside the limits of the principality. The Porte, how- ever, refusing to recognize that Roumania had acted under constraint, proclaimed the Roumanians rebels, and the prince's Governinent accordingly resolved to offer active assistance to the

Russians. A Roumanian division of 32,000 men under General Rou-

Cernat, took part in the siege of Plevna, and the Roumanian manian soldiers distinguished themselves in the opinion of the most com- feats at The snceessful Plevna,

petent judges alike for their heroism and endurance. assault by the Roumanian troops on the ''indomitable redoubt" of Grivitza formed in fact the turning point of the siege and of the war. In the peace of St Stefano, however, Russia insisted on the retroces- sion of the strip of Bessarabia that had been restored to Moldavia by the treaty of Paris, giving Roumania "in exchange " the islands of the Danubian delta, and the Dobrudja, which had been ceded by the sultan. of Berlin (1878). consented by Art. xliii. to reeognize the independence of the prin- cipality subject to the provision (Art. xliv.) that all the inhabitants should enjoy complete religious freedom, a clause inserted on aceount of the Jewish persecutions that had previously taken place, and that foreigners in the country should be treated on a footing of perfect equality. All Danubian fortresses were to be razed, and the European commission to regulate the Danubian navigation, on which Roumania now acquired the right of repre- sentation, was extended from the mouth to the Iron Gates. The

coping-stone to Roumanian independence was set by the proclama- Prinee 1881, of Prince Charles as king of Roumania, Charles year his coronation took place with the erowned head was king.

tion on March 26, and on May 22 of the same European sanction. The crown placed on King Carol's made from the captured cannon of the Plevna redoubts.

Authorities.—As the questions regarding the first appearance of the Roumans north of the Danube are reserved for the article VLAcHS, it may be sufficient here to refer the reader to the works of Roesler, especially Romdnische Studien; J. Jung, Anjfinge der Romdnen, and Roemer und Romdnen ; Lad. Pit, Abstam- mung der Rumdnen: A. D. Xenopol, Les Roumains au Moyen Age. For the history of the principalities down to the end of the last century J. C. Engel's works, Die Geschichte der Walachet and Geschichte der Moldau, are still the most trustworthy authoritics. J. A. Vaillant, La Romainte: Histoire, Langue, &c., and A, T. Laurianu, Jstoria Romaniloru, &e., may be consulted for the later his. tory, but a really critical history of the principalities has yet to be written. The materials for it are, howcver, being rapidly amassed—thanks to the publica- tions of the Roumanian Academy and the documents collected by native scholars; ¢f. especially Hurmuzaki, Documente privitore la Istorta Romanitor,

and Hasdcu, Publicationt istorico-filologice, &c. For a uscful account of the Roumania Past and Present,

present state of Roumania, see James Samuelson, 1882. For views of Walachia and Moldavia, as they existed from the 15th ecutury onwards, reference has already been made to the works of Verantius and Del Chiaro, and Cantemir's Descriptio Moldaviz, (A. J. E.)

ROUMANITAN LITERATURE. See Vuacus.

ROUMELIA. The name of Roumili, "the land of the Romans," was applied from the 15th century downwards to all that portion of the Balkan peninsula westwards from the Black Sea which was subject to Turkey. More precisely it was the country bounded N, by Bulgaria, W. by Albania, and §. by the Morea, or in other words the ancient provinces, including Constantinople and Salonica, of Thrace, Thessaly, and Macedonia. The name was ulti- mately applied more especially to an eyalet or province composed of Central Albania 'and Western Macedonia, having Monastir for its chief town and including Kesrie (Castoria), Ocri (Ochrida), and Scodra (Scutari) ; and at length it disappeared altogether in the administrative alterations effected between 1870 and 1875, Eastern Roumelia was constituted an autonomous province of the Turkish empire by the Berlin treaty of 1878, to be governed by a Christian governor-general appointed by tlie sultan for a

term of five years. In 1879, in obedience to an international commission, it was divided into six departments and twenty-eight cantons, the departments being Philippopolis (187,095), Tatarbazarjik (117,063),

This territorial readjustment was ratified by the treaty Berlin The high contracting powers at the same time treaty.

22

Hasskdi (134,268), Eski-Zagra (158,905) Kazanlik, Slivno or Sliven (130,136), and Burgas (88,046). On the N. and N.W. East Roumelia was bounded by Bulgaria, the frontier running along the line of the Balkans though not keeping to the watershed ; on the S.W. and S. lay the vilayets of Salonika and Adrianople, the borderlands form- ing part of the Rhodope or Despoto mountain system. The direct distance between the northmost and southmost point on the Black Sea is only 40 miles, but the actual coast-line is lengthened by the ramifications of the Bay of Burgas, which is the only part of the Black Sea affording several good anchorages. The great bulk of the country belongs to the basin of the Maritza and its tributary the Tunja (confluence at Adrianople, to the south of Roumelia), though a certain part drains north-eastwards by several small streams. The whole area is estimated at 14,858 square miles, and the population in 1880 was 815,513, of whom 573,231 were Bulgarians, 176,759 Turks, 42,526 Greeks, 19,524 Gipsies, 4177 Jews, and 1306 Armenians. This preponderance of Bulgarians led in September 1885 to the Philippopolis revolution, which resulted in the princi- pality of Bulgaria declaring East Roumelia part and parcel of United Bulgaria ; and the United Bulgarians have since been successful in a war with the Servians, who invaded their territory.

ROUND TOWERS. A peculiar class of round tower exists scattered throughout Ireland; about one hundred and twenty examples still remain, mostly in a ruined state, but eighteen or twenty are almost perfect. These towers were built either near or adjoining a church ; they are of various dates from perhaps the 8th to the 13th century; though varying in size and detail, they have many characteristics which are common to all. They are built with walls slightly battermg inwards, so that the tower tapers towards the top. The lower part is formed of solid masonry, the one doorway being raised from 6 to 20 feet above the ground, and so only accessible by means

of a ladder. The towers within are divided into several stories by two or more floors, usually of wood, but in some cases, as at Keneith, of stone slightly arched. The access from floor to floor was by ladders, no stone staircase being provided. The windows, which are always high up, are single lights, mostly arched or with a flat stone lintel. In some of the oldest towers they have triangular tops, formed by two stones leaning together, like the windows at Deerhurst and other pre-Norman buildings in England. One peculiarity of the door and window openings in the Trish round towers is that the jambs are frequently set sloping, so that the opening grows narrower towards the top, as in the temples of ancient Egypt. The later examples of these towers, dating from the 12th and 13th centuries are often decorated with chevron, billet, and other Norman enrichments round the jambs and arches. The roof is of stone, usually conical in shape, and some of the later towers are crowned by a circle of battlements. The height of the round towers varies from about 60 feet to 132; that at Kilcullen is the highest. The masonry differs according to its date,—the oldest examples being built of almost uncut rubble work, and the later ones of neatly-jointed ashlar. .

Much has been written as to the use of these towers, and the most conflicting theories as to their origin have been propounded. It is, however, fairly certain that they were constructed by Christian builders, both from the fact that they always are or once were near to a church, and also because crosses and other Christian emblems frequently occur among the sculptured decorations of their doors and windows. The original purpose of these towers was pro- bably for places of refuge, for which the solid base and the door high above the ground seem specially adapted. They

may also have been watch-towers, and in later times often contained bells. Their circular form was probably for the sake of strength, angles which could be attacked by a battering ram being thus avoided, and also because no quoins or dressed stones were needed, except for the open- ings—an important point at a time when tools for working stone were scarce and imperfect. Both these reasons may also account for the Norman round towers which are so common at the west end of churches in Norfolk,

Suffolk, and Essex, though these have little resemblance to those of Ireland except in the use of a circular plan. One example exactly like those of Ireland still exists in the Isle of Man, within the precincts of Peel Castle adjacent to the cathedral of St German ; it was probably the work of Irish builders. There are also three in Scotland, viz. at Egilshay in Ork- ney, and at Abernethy and Brechin.

Round towers wider and lower in proportion than those of Ireland appear to have been built by many prehistoric races at different parts of Europe. Many examples exist in Scotland, and in the islands of Corsica and Sardinia. The towers of this class in Scotland are called “ brochs ” ; they average about 50 feet high and 30 feet in internal diameter. Their walls, which are usually about 15 feet thick at the bottom, are built hollow, of rubble masonry, with series of passages one over the other running all round the tower. As in the Irish towers, the entrance is placed at some distance from the ground; and the whole structure is designed as a stronghold. The brochs appear to have been the work of a pre-Christian Celtic race. Many objects in bronze and iron and fragments of hand- made pottery have been found in and near these towers, all bearing witness of a very early date. See Anderson, Scotland in Pagan Times, 1883, and Scotland in Early Christian Times, 1881. During the 6th century church towers at and near Ravenna were usually built round in plan, and not unlike those of Ireland in their proportions. The finest existing example is that which stands by the church of S. Apollinare in Classe, the old port of the city of Ravenna (see Bastzica, vol. iii. p. 415, fig. 5). It is of brick, divided into nine stories, with single-light windows below, three-light windows in the upper stories, and two-lights in the intermediate ones. The most magnificent example of a round tower is the well-known leaning tower of Pisa, begun in the year 1174, It is richly decorated with tiers of open marble arcades, supported on free columns. The circular plan was much used by Moslem races for their minarets. The finest of these is the 13th- century minar of Kootub at Old Delhi, built of limestone with bands of marble. It is richly fluted on plan, and when complete was at least 250 feet high.

The best account of the Irish round towers is that given by Petrie, in his Ecclesiastical Architecture of Ireland (Dublin, 1845). See also Keane, Towers and Temples of Ancient Ireland (Dublin, 1850); Brash,

Ecclesiastical Architecture of Ireland (Dublin, 1875); and Stokes, Early Architecture in Ireland (Dublin, 1878).

ROUNDEL. See RonDEAv.

ROUS, or Rouse, Francis (1579-1659), known by his translation of the Psalms; see vol. xii. p. 590. His works appeared at London in 1657.

ROUSSEAU, Jacquzs (1630-1693), painter, a member of a Huguenot family, was born at Paris in 1630. He was remarkable as a painter of decorative landscapes and classic ruins, somewhat in the style of Canaletto, but without his delicacy of touch; he appears also to have been influenced by Nicolas Poussin. While quite young Rousseau went to Rome, where he was fascinated by the noble picturesqueness of the ancient ruins, and spent some years in painting them, together with the surrounding landscapes. He thus formed his style, which was highly artificial and conventionally decorative. His colouring for the most part is unpleasing, partly owing to his violent

(e) te) Se ie

ROUS

treatment of skies with crude blues and orange, and his chiaroscuro usually is much exaggerated. On his return to Paris he soon became distinguished as a painter, and was employed by Louis XIV. to decorate the walls of his palaces at St Germain and Marly. He was soon admitted a member of the French Academy of the Fine Arts, but on the revocation of the edict of Nantes he was obliged to take refuge in Holland, and his name was struck off the Academy roll. From Holland he was invited to Eng- land by the duke of Montague, who employed him, together with other French painters, to paint the walls of his palace, Montague House.! Rousseau was also employed to paint architectural subjects and landscapes in the palace of Hampton Court, where many of his decorative panels still exist. He spent the latter part of his life in London, where he died in 1693.

Besides being a painter in oil and fresco Rousseau was an etcher of some ability ; many etchings by his hand from the works of the Caracci and from

his own designs still exist ; they are vigorous, though too coarse in execution.

ROUSSEAU, Jzan Baptiste (1670-1741), a poet of some merit and a wit of considerable dexterity, was born at Paris on the 10th April 1670; he died at Brussels on the 17th March 1741. The son of a shoemaker, he is said to have been ashamed of his parentage and relations when he acquired a certain popularity, but the abundance of literary quarrels in which he spent his life, and the malicious inventiveness of his chief enemy, Voltaire, make any such stories of small account. He was certainly well educated and early gained favour with Boileau, who did not regard many people favourably ; but authentic intelli- gence as to his youth is very scarce. He does not seem to have attempted literature very young, and when he began he began with the theatre, for which at no part of his life does he seem to have had any aptitude. A one-act comedy, Le Café, failed in 1694, and he was not much happier with a more ambitious play, Les Flatteurs, or with the opera of Venus and Advnis. He would not take these warnings, and tried in 1700 another comedy, Le Capricieux, which had the same fate. By this time he had already (it is not quite clear how) obtained influential patrons, such as Breteuil and Tallard, had gone with Tallard as an attaché to London, and, in days when litera- ture still led to high position, seemed likely to achieve success. ‘To tell the whole story of his misfortunes would take far more space than can be spared him here. They began with what may be called a club squabble at a certain Café Laurent, which was much frequented by literary men, and where Rousseau indulged in lampoons on his companions. A shower of libellous and sometimes obscene verses was written by or attributed to him, and at last he was practically turned out of the café. At the same time his poems, as yet only singly printed or in manuscript, acquired him a great reputation, and not unjustly, for Rousseau is certainly the best French writer of serious lyrics between Racine and Chénier. He had in 1701 been made a member of the Académie des Inscrip- tions ; he had been offered, though he had not accepted, profitable places in the revenue department; he had become a favourite of the libertine but not uninfiuential coterie of the Temple; and in 1710 he presented himself as a candidate for the Académie Francaise. Then began the second chapter (the first had lasted ten years) of a history of the animosities of authors which is almost the strangest though not the most important on record. A copy of verses, more

offensive than ever, was handed to the original object of Rousseau's jealousy, and, getting wind, occasioned the bastinadoing of the reputed author by a certain La Faye or La Faille, a soldier who was reflected

1 Montague House stood on the site of the British Museum.

on. Legal proceedings of various kinds followed, and Rousseau either had or thought he had ground for ascrib- ing the lampoon to Joseph Saurin. More law ensued, and the end of it was that in 1712 Rousseau, not appear- ing, was condemned par contumace to perpetual exile. He actually suffered it, remaining for the rest of his life in foreign countries except for a short time in 1738, when he returned clandestinely to Paris to try for a recall. It should be said that he might have had this if he had not steadfastly protested his innocence and refused to accept a mere pardon. No one has ever completely cleared up the story, and it must be admitted that, except as exhibiting very strikingly the strange idiosyncrasies of the 18th century in France, and as having affected the fortunes of a man of letters of some eminence, it is not worth much attention.

Rousseau's good and ill luck did not cease with his exile. First Prince Eugene and then other persons of dis- tinction took him under their protection, and he printed at Soleure the first edition of his poetical works. But by fault or misfortune he still continued to quarrel. Voltaire and he met at Brussels in 1722, and, though Voltaire had hitherto pretended or felt a great admiration for him, something happened which turned this admiration into hatred. Voltaire's Le Pour et Le Contre is said to have shocked Rousseau, who expressed his sentiments freely. At any rate the latter had thenceforward no fiercer enemy than Voltaire. Rousseau, however, was not much affected by Voltaire's enmity, and pursued for nearly twenty years a life of literary work, of courtiership, and of rather obscure speculation and business. Although he never made his fortune, it does not seem that he was ever in want. When he died his death had the singular result of eliciting from a poetaster, Lefranc de Pompignan, an ode of real excellence and perhaps better than anything of Rousseau's own work. That work, however, has high merits, and is divided, roughly speaking, into two strangely contrasted divisions. One consists of formal and partly sacred odes and

cantates of the stiffest character, the other of brief epigrams, sometimes licentious and always or almost always ill-natured. In the latter class of work Rousseau is only inferior to his friend Piron. In the former he stands almost alone. The frigidity of conven- tional diction and the disuse of all really lyrical rhythm which characterize his period do not prevent his odes and cantates from showing true poetical faculty, grievously cramped no doubt, but still existing.

Besides the Soleure edition mentioned above, Rousseau published (visiting England for the purpose) another issue of his work at London in 1723. The chief edition since is that of Amar in 1820. M. A. de Latour has published (Paris, Garnier, 1869) a useful though not complete edition, with notes of merit and a biographical

introduction which would have becn better if the facts had been more punctually and precisely stated.

ROUSSEAU, Jzan Jacques (1712-1778), was born at Geneva on the 28th June 1712. His family had estab- lished themselves in that city at the time of the religious wars, but they were of pure French origin. Rousseau's father Isaac was a watchmaker; his mother, Suzanne Bernard, was the daughter of a minister; she died in childbirth, and Rousseau, who was the second son, was brought up in a very haphazard fashion, his father being a dissipated, violent-tempered, and foolish person. He, however, taught him to read early, and seems to have laid the foundation of the flighty sentimentalism in morals and politics which Rousseau afterwards illustrated with his genius. When the boy was ten years old his father got entangled in a disgraceful brawl and fled from Geneva, apparently without troubling himself about Jean Jacques. The father and son had little more to do with each other and rarely met. Rousseau was, however, taken charge of

by his mother's relations and was in the first place com- mitted by them to the tutorship of a M. Lambercier, pastor at Bossey. Of these times as of the greater part of his life there are ample details in the Confessions, but it may be as well to remark at once that this famous book, however charming as literature, is to be used as docu- mentary evidence only with great reserve.

In 1724 he was removed from this school and taken into the house of his uncle Bernard, by whom he was shortly afterwards apprenticed to a notary. His master, however, found or thought him quite incapable and sent him back. After a short time (April 25, 1725) he was apprenticed afresh, this time to an engraver. He did not dislike the work, but was or thought himself cruelly treated by his master. At last in 1728, when he was sixteen, he ran away, the truancy being by his own account unintentional in the first instance, and due to the fact of the city gates ‘being shut earlier than usual. Then began a very extraordinary series of wanderings and adventures, for much of which there is no authority but his own. He first fell in with some proselytizers of the Roman faith at Confignon in Savoy, and by them he was sent to Madame de Warens at Annecy, a young and pretty widow who was herself a convert. Her influence, however, which was to be so great, was not immediately exercised, and he was, so to speak, passed on to Turin, where there was an institution specially devoted to the reception of neophytes. His experiences here were (accordiug to his own account, it must always be understood) sufficiently unsatisfactory, but he abjured duly and was rewarded by being presented with twenty francs and sent about his business. He wandered about in Turin for some time, and at last established himself as footman to a Madame de Vercellis. Here occurred the famous incident of the theft of a ribbon, of which he accused a fellow servant—a girl too. But, though he kept his place by this piece of cowardice, Madame de Vercellis died not long afterwards and he was turned off. He found, however, another place with the Comte de Gouvon, but lost this also through coxcombry. Then he resolved to return to Madame de Warens at Annecy. The chronology of all these events is somewhat obscure, but they seem to have occupied about three years.

Even then Rousseau did not settle at once in the anomalous but to him charming position of domestic lover to this lady, who, nominally a converted Protestant, was in reality, as many women of her time were, a kind of deist, with a theory of noble sentinient and a practice of libertinism tempered by good nature. It used to be held that in her conjugal relations she was even more sinned against than sinning. But recent investigations seem to show that M. de Vuarrens (which is said to be the correct spelling of the name) was a very unfortunate hus- band, and was deserted and robbed by his wife. However, she welcomed Rousseau kindly, thought it

necessary to complete his education, and he was sent to the semin- arists of St Lazare to be improved in classics, and also to a music master. In one of his incomprehensible freaks he set off for Lyons, and, after abandoning his companion in an epileptic fit, returned to Annecy to find Madame de Warens gone no one knew whither. Then for some months he relapsed into the life of vagabondage, varied by improbable adventures, which (according to his own statement) he so often pursued. Hardly knowing anything of music, he attempted to give lessons and a concert at Lausanne; and he actually taught at Neuchatel. Then he became or says he became secretary to a Greek archimandrite who was travelling in Switzerland to collect subscriptions for the rebuilding of the Holy Sepulchre; then he went to Paris, and, with recommendations from the French ambas-

sador at Soleure, saw something of good society; then he returned on foot through Lyons to Savoy, hearing that Madame de Warens was at Chambéry. This was in 1732, and Rousseau, who for a time had unimportant employ- ments in the service of the Sardinian crown, was shortly installed by Madame de Warens, whom he still called Maman, as amant en titre in her singular household, wherein she diverted herself with him, with music, and with chemistry. In 1736 Madame de Warens, partly for Rousseau's health, took a country house, Les Charmettes, a short distance from Chambéry. Here in summer, and in the town during winter, Rousseau led a delightful life, which he has delightfully described. In a desultory way he did a good deal of reading, but in 1738 his health again became bad, and he was recommended to go to Montpellier. By his own account this journey to Montpel- lier was in reality a voyage & Cythére in company with a certain Madame de Larnage. This being so, he could hardly complain when on returning he found that his official position in Madame de Warens's household had been taken by a person named Vintzenried. He was, however, less likely than most men to endure the position of second in command, and in 1740 he became tutor at Lyons to the children of M. de Mably, not the well-known writer of that name, but his and Condillac's elder brother. But Rousseau did not like teaching and was a bad teacher, and after a visit to Les Charmettes, finding that his place there was finally occupied, he once more went to Paris in 1741. He was not without recommendations. But a new system of musical notation which he thought he had discovered was unfavourably received by the Académie des

Sciences, where it was read in August 1742, and he was unable to obtain pupils. Madame Dupin, however, to whose house he had obtained the entry, procured him the honourable if not very lucrative post of secretary to M. de Montaigu, ambassador at Venice. With him he stayed for about eighteen months, and has as usual infinite complaints to make of his employer and some strange stories to tell. At length he threw up his situation and returned to Paris

1745).

Up A this time—that is to say, till his thirty-third year— Rousseau's life, though continuously described by himself, was of the kind called subterranean, and the account of it must be taken with considerable allowances. There are, to say the least, grave improbabilities in it ; there are some chronological difficulties ; and in one or two instances his accounts have been flatly denied by persons more or less entitled to be heard. He had written nothing, and if he was known at all it was as an eccentric vagabond. From this time, however, he is more or less in view; and, though at least two events of his life—his quarrel with Diderot and his death—are and are likely long to be subjects of dispute, its general history can be checked and followed with reasonable confidence. On his return to Paris he renewed his relations with the Dupin family and with the literary group of Diderot, to which he had already been introduced by M. de Mably's letters. He had an opera, Les Muses Galantes, privately represented ; he copied music for money, and received from Madame Dupin and her son- inlaw M. de Francueil a small but regular salary as secretary. He lived at the Hotel St Quentin for a tinie, and once more arranged for himself an equivocal domestic establishment. His mistress, whom towards the close of his life he married after a fashion, was Thérése le Vasseur, a servant at the inn. She had little beauty, no education or understanding, and few cliarms of any kind that his friends could discover, besides which she had a detestable mother, who was the bane of Rousseau's life. But he made himself at any rate for a time quite happy with her, and (according to Rousseau's account, the accuracy of

which has been questioned) five children were born to them, who were all consigned to the foundling hospital. This dis- regard of responsibility was

partly punished by the use his critics made of it when he became celebrated as a writer on education and a preacher of the domestic affections. Diderot, with whom he became more and more familiar, admitted him as a contributor to the Hncyclopédie. He formed new musical projects, and he was introduced by degrees to many people of rank and influence, among whom his warmest patron for a time was Madame dEpinay. It was not, however, till 1749 that Rousseau made his mark. The academy of Dijon offered a prize for an essay on the effect of the progress of civilization on morals. Rousseau took up the subject, developed his famous paradox of the superiority of the savage state, won the prize, and, publishing his essay next year, became famous. The anecdotage as to the origin of this famous essay is voluminous. It is agreed that the idea was suggested when Rousseau went to pay a visit to Diderot, who was in prison at Vincennes for his Lettre sur les Aveugles. Rousseau says he thought of the paradox on his way down; Morellet and others say that he thought of treating the subject in the ordinary fashion and was laughed at by Diderot, who showed him the advantages of the less obvious treatment. Diderot himself, who in such matters is almost absolutely trustworthy, does not claim the suggestion, but uses words which imply that it was at least partly his. It is very likehim. The essay, however, took the artificial and crotchety society of the day by storm. Francueil gave Rousseau a valuable post as cashier in the receiver general's office. But he resigned it either from conscientiousness, or crotchet, or nervousness at responsibility, or indolence, or more probably from a mixture of all four. He went back to his music copying, but the salons of the day were determined to have his society, and for a time they had it. In 1752 he brought out at Fontainebleau an operetta, the Devindu Village, which was very successful. He received a hundred louis for it, and he was ordered to come to court next day. This meant the certainty of a pension. But Rousseau's shyness or his perversity (as before, probably both) made him disobey the command. His comedy Warcisse, written long before, was also acted, but unsuccessfully. In the same year, however, a letter Sur la Musique Francaise again had a great vogue. Finally, for this was an important

1 Rousseau's influence on French music was greater than might have been expected from his very imperfect education; in truth, he was a musician by natural instinct only, but his feeling for art was very

| good and beautiful. The system of notation (by figures) concerning

which he read a paper before the Académie des Sciences, August 22,

1742, was ingenious, but practically worse than useless, and failed) to attract attention, though the paper was published in 1743 under the) title of Dissertation sur la musique moderne. In the famous "' guerre

des buffons," he took the part of the " buffonists," so named in conse-

quence of their attachment to the Italian "opera buffa," as opposed to

the true French opera; and, in his Lettre sur la musique Francatse,

published in 1753, he indulged in a violent tirade against French | music, which he declared to be so contemptible as to lead to the con-

clusion ''that the French neither have, nor ever will have, any music)) of their own, or at least that, if they ever do have any, it will be so)) much the worse for then." This silly libel so enraged the performers y at the Opera that they hanged and burned its author in effigy.) Rousseau revenged himself by printing his clever satire entitled | Lettre d'un symphoniste de 0 Académie Royale de Musique @ ses cama- | rades de Vorchestre. Hig Lettre a M. Burney is of a very different | type, and does full justice to the genius of Gluck. His articles on es in the Hncyclopédie deal very superficially with the subject ; jand his Dictionnaire de Musique (Geneva, 1767), though admirably written, is not trustworthy, either as a record of facts or as a col- jlection of critical essays. In all these works the imperfection of his musical education is painfully apparent, and his compositions | betray an equal lack of knowledge, though his refined taste is as clearly displayed there ag is his literary power in the Letters and Dic-tionary. His first opera, Les Muses Galantes, privately prepared at

strong, and, though capricious, based upon true perceptions of the:

year with him, the Dijon academy, which had founded his fame, announced the subject of “The Origin of In- equality,” on which he wrote a discourse which was un- successful, but at least equal to the former in merit. During a visit to Geneva in 1754 Rousseau saw his old friend and love Madame de Warens (now reduced in cir- cumstances and having lost all her charms), while after abjuring his abjuration of Protestantism he was enabled to take up his freedom as citizen of Geneva, to which his birth entitled him and of which he was proud. Some time afterwards, returning to Paris, he accepted a cottage near Montmorency (the celebrated Hermitage) which Madame d’Kpinay had fitted up for him, and established him- self there in April 1756. He spent little more than a year there, but it was a very important year. Here he wrote La Nouvelle Héloise; here he indulged in the passion which that novel partly represents, his love for Madame d’Houdetot, sister-in-law of Madame d’Epinay, a lady still young and extremely amiable but very plain, who had a husband and a lover (St Lambert), and whom Rousseau’s burning devotion seems to have partly pleased and partly annoyed. Here too arose the incomprehensible triangular quarrel between Diderot, Rousseau, and Grimm which ended Rousseau’s sojourn at the Hermitage. It is impossible to discuss this at length here. The supposition least favourable to Rousseau is that it was due to one of his numerous fits of half-insane petulance and indignation at the obligations which he was nevertheless always ready to incur. That most favourable to him is that he was expected to lend himself in a more or less complaisant manner to assist and cover Madame d’Epinay’s adulterous affection for Grimm. It need only be said that Madame d’Epinay’s morals and Rousseau’s temper are equally indefensible by anyone who knows anything about either, but that the evidence as to the exact influence of both on this particular transaction is hopelessly inconclusive. Diderot seems to have been guilty of nothing but thought- lessness (if of that) in lending himself to a scheme of the Le Vasseurs, mother and daughter, for getting Rousseau out of the solitude of

the Hermitage. At any rate Rous- seau quitted the Hermitage in the winter, and established himself at Montlouis in the neighbourhood.

Hitherto Rousseau's behaviour had frequently made him enemies, but his writings had for the most part made him friends. The quarrel with Madame d'Epinay, with Diderot, and through them with the philosophe party reversed this. In 1758 appeared his Lettre a d' Alembert contre les Spectacles, written in the winter of the previous year at Montlouis. This was at once an attack on Voltaire, who was giving theatrical representations at Les Délices, on D'Alembert, who had condemned the prejudice against the stage in the Encyclopédie, and on one of the favourite amuse- ments of the society of the day. Diderot personally would have been forgiving enough. But Voltaire's strong point was not forgiveness, and, though Rousseau no doubt exaggerated the efforts of his "enemies," he was certainly henceforward as obnoxious to the philo-

the house of La Popeliniére, attracted very little attention ; but Le Devin du Village, given at Fontainebleau in 1752, and at the Académie in 1753, achieved a great and well-deserved success, Though very unequal, and exceedingly simple both in style and con- struction, it contains some charming melodies, and is written through- out in the most refined taste. His Pygmalion (1775) is a melodrama without singing. Some posthumous fragments of another opera, Daphwis et Chloé, were printed in 1780; and in 1781 appeared Les Consolations des Miséres de ma Vie, a collection of about one hundred songs and other fugitive pieces of very unequal merit. Thc popular air known as Rousseau's Dream is not contained in this collection, and cannot be traced back farther than J. B. Cramer's celebrated " Variations." M. Castil-Blaze has accused Rousseau of extensive plagiarisms (or worse) in Le Devin du Village and Pygmalion, but apparently without sufficient cause. ~ GWie anti) XXI. — 4

26 :

Sophe coterie as to the orthodox party. He still, how- ever, had no lack of patrons—he never had—though his unsurpassable perversity made him quarrel with all. an. turn.

he was eagerly industrious in his literary work—indeed most of his best books were produced during his stay in the neighbourhood of Montmorency. A letter to Voltaire on his poem about the Lisbon earthquake embittered the dislike between the two, being surreptitiously published. La Nouvelle Héloise appeared in the game year (1760), and it was immensely popular. In 1§62 appeared the Contrat Social at Amsterdam, and Hmilé, which was pub- lished both in the Low Countries and at Paris. For the latter the author received 6000 livres, for the Conérat

1000.

Julie, ou La Nouvelle Héloise, is a novel written in letters describing the loves of a man of low position and a girl of rank, her subsequent marriage to a respectable freethinker of her own station, the mental agonies of her lover, and the partial appeasing of the distresses of the lovers by the influence of noble sentiment and the good offices of a philanthropic Englishman. It is too long, the sentiment is overstrained, and severe moralists have accused it of a certain complaisance in dealing with amatory errors; but it is full of pathos and knowledge of the human heart. The

Contrat Social, as its title implies, endeavours to base all

government on the consent, direct or implied, of the governed, and indulges in much ingenious argument to get rid of the practical inconveniences of such a suggestion. mile, the second title of which is De ?Hducation, is much more of a treatise than of a novel, though a certain amount of narrative interest is kept up throughout. Rousseau’s reputation was now higher than ever, but the term of the comparative prosperity which he had enjoyed for nearly ten years was at hand. The Contrat Social was obviously anti-monarchic; the Mowvelle Héloise was said to be immoral ; the sentimental deism of the “ Profes- sion du vicaire Savoyard” in Emile irritated equally, the philosophe party and the church. On June 11, 1 62, mile was condemned by the parlement of Paris, and two days previously Madame de Luxembourg and the Prince de Conti gave the author information that he would be arrested if he did not fly. They also furnished him with means of flight, and he made for Yverdun in the territory of Bern, whence he transferred himself to Motiers in Neuchatel, which then belonged to Prussia. Frederick II. was not indisposed to protect the persecuted when it

cost him nothing and might bring him fame, and in Marshal Keith, the governor of N euchatel, Rousseau found a true and firm friend. He was, however, unable to be quiet or to practise any of those more or less pious frauds which were customary at the time with the unor- thodox. The archbishop of Paris had published a pastoral against him, and Rousseau did not let the year pass without a Lettre & M. de Beaumont. The council of Geneva had joined in the condemnation of Emile, and Rousseau first solemnly renounced his citizenship, and then, in the Lettres de la Montagne (1763), attacked the council and the Genevan constitution unsparingly. All this excited public opinion against him, and gradually he grew unpopular in his own neighbourhood. This unpopularity is said on very uncertain authority to have culminated in a nocturnal attack on his house, which reminds the reader remarkably of an incident in the life of the greatest French man of letters of the present century. At any rate he thought he was menaced if he was not, and migrated to the fle St Pierre in the Lake of Bienne, where he once more for a short, and the last, time enjoyed that idyllic existence

ROUS

The amiable duke and duchess of Luxem- bourg, who were his neighbours at Montlouis, made his acquaintance, or rather forced theirs upon him, and

SEAU

which he loved. But the Bernese Government ordered him to quit its territory. He was for some time uncertain where to go, and thought of Corsica (to join Paoli) and Berlin, But finally David Hume offered him, late in 1765, an asylum in England, and he accepted. He passed through Paris, where his presence was tolerated for a time, and landed in England on January 13, 1766. Thérése travelled separately, and was entrusted to the charge of James Boswell, who had already made Rousseau’s acquaintance, Here he had once more a chance of settling peaceably. Severe English moralists like Johnson thought but ill of him, but the public generally was not unwilling to testify against French intolerance, and regarded his sentimental- ism with favour. He was lionized in London to his heart’s content and discontent, for it may truly be said of Rousseau that he was equally indignant at neglect and intolerant of attention. When, after not a

few displays of his strange humour, he professed himself tired of the capital, Hume procured him a country abode in the house of Mr Davenport at Wootton in Derbyshire. Here, though the place was bleak and lonely, he might have been happy enough, and he actually employed himself in writing the greater part of his Confessions. But his habit of self-tormenting and tormenting others never left him. His own caprices interposed some delay in the con- ferring of a pension which George III. was induced to grant him, and he took this as a crime of Hume's. The publication of a spiteful letter (really by Horace Walpole, one of whose worst deeds it was) in the name of the king of Prussia made Rousseau believe that plots of the most terrible kind were on foot against him. Finally he quarrelled with Hume because the latter would not acknowledge all his own friends and Rousseau's supposed enemies of the philosophe circle to be rascals. He re- mained, however, at Wootton during the year and through the winter. In May 1767 he fled to France, addressing letters to the lord chancellor and to General Conway, which can only be described as the letters of a lunatic, He was received in France by the Marquis de Mirabeau (father of the great Mirabeau), of whom he soon had enough, then by the Prince de Conti at Trye. From this place he again fled and wandered about for some time in a wretched fashion, still writing the Confessions, constantly receiving generous help, and always quarrelling with, or at least suspecting, the helpers. In the summer of 1770 he returned to Paris, resumed music copying, and was on the whole happier than he had been since he had to leave Montlouis. He had by this time married Thérase le Vasseur, or had at least gone through some form of marriage with her.

Many of the best-known stories of Rousseau's life date from this last time, when he was tolerably accessible to visitors, though clearly half-insane. He finished his Con- Sessions, wrote his Dialogues (the interest of which is not quite equal to the promise of their curious sub-title Rousseau juge de Jean Jacques), and began his Réveries du Promeneur Solitaire, intended as a sequel and complement to the Confessions, and one of the best of all his books, It should be said that besides these, which complete the list of his principal works, he has left a very large number of minor works and a considerable correspondence, During this time he lived in the Rue Platiére, which is now named after him. But his suspicions of secret enemies grew stronger rather than weaker, and at the beginning of 1778 he was glad to

accept the offer of M. de Girardin, a rich financier, and occupy a cottage at Ermenonville. The country was beautiful ; but his old terrors revived, and his woes were complicated by the alleged inclination of Thérése for one of M. de Girardin's stable boys. On July 2d he died in a manner which has been much discussed, sus-

picions of suicide having at the time and since been fre- quent. On the whole the theory of a natural death due to a fit of apoplexy and perhaps to injuries inflicted accident- ally during that fit seems most probable. He had always suffered from internal and constitutional ailments not unlikely to bring about such an end.

Rousseau's character, the history of his reputation, and the intrinsic value of his literary work are all subjects of much interest. There is little doubt that for the last ten or fifteen years of his life, if not from the time of his quarrel] with Diderot and Madame d'Hpinay, he was not wholly sane—the combined influence of late and unexpected litcrary fame and of constant solitude and discomfort acting upon his excitable temperament so as to overthrow the balance, never very stable, of his fine and acute but unrobust intellect. He was by no means the only man of letters of his time who had to submit to something like persecution. Fréron on the orthodox side had his share of it, as well as Voltaire, Helvétius, Diderot, and Montesquieu on that of the innovators. But Rousseau had uot, like Montesquieu, a position which guaranteed him from scrious danger ; he was not wealthy like Helvétius; he had not the wonderful suppleness and trickiness whieh even without his wealth would probably have defended Voltaire himself; and he laeked entirely the ''bottom" of Fréron and Diderot. When he was molested he could only shriek at his enemies and suspect his friends, and, being more given than any man whom history mentions to this latter weakness, he suffcred intensely from it. His moral character was undoubtedly weak in other ways than this, but it is fair to remember that but for his astounding Confessions the more disgusting parts of it would not have been known, and that these Confessions were written, if not under hallucination, at any rate in cireumstances entitling the self-condemned criminal to the benefit of very considerable doubt. If Rousseau had held his tongue, he might have

stood lower as a man of letters; he would pretty certainly have stood higher as a man. He was, moreover, really |) sinned against, if still more sinning. The conduct cf Grimm to

‘ him was certainly very bad; and, though Walpole was not his personal friend, a worse action than his famous letter, considering the well-known idiosyncrasy of the subject, would be difficult to find. It was his own fault that he saddled himself with the Le Vasseurs, but their conduct was probably if not certainly ungrateful in the extreme. Only excuses can be nade for him; but the excuses fora man born, as Hume after the quarrel said of him, “ without a skin” are numerous and strong.

It was to be expected that his peculiar reputation would increase rather than diminish after his death; and it did so. During his life his personal peculiarities and the fact that his opinions were nearly as obnoxious to the one party as to the other worked against him, but it was not so after his dcath. The men of the Revolution regarded him with something like idolatry, and his literary merits

_ eonciliated many who were very far from idolizing him as a revolutionist. His style was taken up by Bernardin de Saint _ Pierre and by Chateaubriand. It was. employed for purposes quite different from those to which he had himself applied it, and the reaction triumphed by the very arms which had been most powerful _in the hands of the Revolution. Byron’s fervid panegyric en- , listed on his side all who admired Byron—that is to say, the _ majority of the younger men and women of Europe between 1820 and 1850—and thus different sides of his tradition were continued for a full century after the publication of his chief books. His religious unorthodoxy was eondoned because he nevér scoffed ; his | political heresies, after their first effect was over, seemed harmless | from the very want of logic and practical spirit in them, while part at least of his literary secret was the common property of almost everyone who attempted literature. At the present day persons as

_ different as M. Renan and Mr Ruskin are children of Rousseau.

It is therefore important to characterize this influence which was and is so powerful, and there are three points of view—those of religion, politics, and

literature—which it is necessary to take in

|} doing this. In religion Rousseau was undoubtedly what he has been called above—a sentimental deist ; but no one who reads him | with the smallest attention can fail to see that sentimentalism was | the essence, deism the accident of his creed. In his time ortho- | doxy at once generous and intelligent hardly existed in France.), There were ignorant persons who were sinccrely orthodox; there were | intelligent persons who pretended to be so. But between the time | of Massillon and D'Aguesseau and the time of Lamennais and Joseph | de Maistre the class of men of whom in England Berkeley, Butler, iz Johnson were represcntatives simply did not exist in France. Little inclined by nature to any but the emotional side of religion, and utterly undisciplined in any other by education, course of life, jor the general tendency of public opinion, Rousseau naturally took | refuge in the nebulous kind of natural religion which was at once | fashionable and convenient. If his practice fell very far short even) of his own very arbitrary standard of morality asmuch may be said) of persons far more doginatically orthodox.

27

In politics, on the other hand, there is no doubt that Rousseau was a sincere and, as faras in him lay, a convinced republican. He had no great tincture of learning, he was by no means a profound logician, and he was impulsive and cmotional in the extreme— charaeteristics which in political matters undoubtedly predispose the subject to the preference of equality above all political requisites. He saw that under the French monarchy the actual result was the greatest misery of the greatest number, and he did not look much further. The Contrat Social is for the political student one of the most curious and interesting books existing. Historically it is null; logically it is full of gaping flaws; practically its manipulations of the volonté de tous and the volonté générale are clearly insufficient to obviate anarchy. But its mixture of real eloquence and apparent cogency is exactly such as always carries a multitude with it, if only for a time. Moreover, in some minor branches of politics and economics Rousseau was a real reformer. Visionary as his educational sehemes (chiefly promulgated in Emile) are in parts, they are admirable in others, and his protest against mothers refusing to nurse

their children hit a blot in French life which is not removed yet, and has always been a source of weakness to the nation.

But it is as a literary man pure and simple—that is to say, as an exponent rather than as an originator of ideas—that Rousseau is most noteworthy, and that he has exercised most influence. The first thing noticeable about him is that he defies all customary and mechanieal classification. He is nota dramatist—his work as such is insignificant—nor a novelist, for, though his two chief works except the Confessions are called novels, Emile is one only in name, and La Nouvelle {léloise is as a story diffuse, prosy, and awkward to a degree. He was perfeetly without command of poetic form, and he could only be called a philosopher in an age when the term was used with sueh meaningless laxity as was eustomary in the 18th century. If he must be classed, he was before all things a describer —a describer of the passions of the human heart and of the beauties of nature. In the first part of his vocation the novelists of his own youth, such as Marivaux, Richardson, and Prévost, may be said to have shown him the way, though he improved greatly upon them; in the second he was almost a creator. In combining the two and expressing the effect of nature on the feelings and of the feelings on the aspect of nature he was absolutely without a forerunner or a model. And, as literature since his time has bcen chiefly differentiated from literature before it by the colour and tone resulting from this combination, Rousseau may be said to hold, as an influenee, a place almost unrivalled in literary history. The defects of all sentimental writing—occasional triviality and exag- geration of trivial things, diffuseness, overstrained emotion, false sentiment, disregard of the intellectual and the practical—are of course noticeable in him, but they are excused and palliated by his wonderful feeling, and by what may be called the passionate sincerity even of his insincere passages. Some cavils have been made against his French, but none of much weight or importance. And in sueh passages as the famous “Voilé de la pervenche” of the Confessions, as the description of the isle of St Pierre in the éveries, as some of the letters in the Nowvelle Héloise and others, he has achieved the greatest success possible—that of absolute perfection in doing what he intended to do. The reader, as it has been said, may think he might have done something else with advantage, but he can hardly think that he could have done this thing better.

The dates of most of Rousseau's works published during his lifetime have bcen given above. The Confessions and Révertes, which, read in private, had given much umbrage to persons concerned, and which the author did not intend to be published until the end of the century, appeared at Geneva in 1782. In the same year and the following appeared a complete edition in forty-seven small volumes. There have been many since, the most important of them being that of Musset- Pathay (Paris, 1823). Some unpublished works, chiefly letters, were added by Bosscha (Paris, 1858) and Streckeisen Moultou (Paris, 1861). The most con- venient edition is perhaps that of Didot in 4 vols. large 8vo, but a handsome and well-edited collection is still something of a desideratum. Works on Rousseau are innumerable. The chief are—in French that of Saint Mare Girardin (1874), in English the excellent book of Mr John Morley. – (G. SA.)

ROUSSEAU, TutoporE (1812-1867), a distinguished landscape painter, was born at Paris, and studied in the Ecole des Beaux-Arts, after which he spent some time in

. travelling and making studies of landscape and sky effects.

He first exhibited at the Salon in 1834, obtained gold medals in 1849 and 1854, and in 1852 received the Legion of Honour. His paintings became very popular in France, and Rousseau grew to be the acknowledged founder of the modern realistic school of landscape. He was largely influenced in style by Constable and Turner, the former of whom was perhaps more thoroughly appreci- ated in France than in England. The influence of Turner is clearly seen in some of Rousseau's pictures, with striking effects of cloud or storm,—as, for example, in his Effet de Soleil and Aprés la Pluie (1852), in the Matinée

Orageuse (1857), the Coucher de Soleil (1866), and one of his last works, the Soleil par un Temps Orageux, which appeared in the exhibition of 1867. Rousseau's study of Constable is more especially apparent in some of his fine forest scenes near Fontainebleau, and in some magnificently painted views on the banks of the Loire and other French rivers. His execution was of extraordinary brilliance, and he was a thorough master of atmospheric

Though in some re- spects a realistic painter, he treated nature in a strongly dramatic way and showed great imaginative power. His style is broad and dashing, with rapid and at times appa- rently careless handling. His fame has increased rather than diminished since his death in 1867 ; and one of his paintings has recently received the high distinction of being transferred from the Luxembourg Palace to the Louvre, an

effect and glowing sunset colours.

honour which is but rarely conferred. It is not, however,

one of the best specimens of his work. Most of Théodore Rousseau's pictures are in private collections in Paris and

elsewhere in France.

ROUSSILLON, a province of France, which now forms department of Pyruintzs ORIENTALES (g.v.). It was bounded on the south by the Pyrenees, on the west by the county of Foix, on the north by Languedoc, and on the east by the Mediterranean. The province derived its name from a small bourg near Perpignan, the capital, called Ruscino (Rosceliona, Castel Rossello), where the Gallic chieftains met to consider

the greater part of the

Hannibal's request for a conference. The district formed

part of the Roman province of Gallia Narbonensis from 121 B.c. to 462 a.p., when it was ceded with the rest of Septimania to Theodoric IL, king of the Visigoths. His

successor, Amalaric, on his defeat by Clovis in 531 retired

to Spain, leaving a governor in Septimania. In 719 the

Saracens crossed the Pyrenees, and Septimania was held by them until their defeat by Pippin in 756. On the invasion of Spain by Charlemagne in 778 he found the

borderlands wasted by the Saracenic wars, and the inhabit-

ants hiding among the mountains. He accordingly made grants of land to Visigothic refugees from Spain, and founded several monasteries, round which the people gathered for protection. In 792 the Saracens again invaded France, but were repulsed by Louis, king of Aquitaine, whose rule extended over all Catalonia as far as Barcelona. The different portions of his kingdom in time grew into allodial fiefs, and in 893 Suniaire JO became the first hereditary count of Roussillon. But his rule only extended over the eastern part of what became the later province. The western part, or Cerdagne, was ruled in 900 by Miron as first count, and one of his grandsons, Bernard, was the first hereditary count of the middle portion, or Bésalu. In 1111 Raymond-Bérenger IIL, count of Barcelona, inherited the fief of Bésalu, to which was added in 1117 that of Cerdagne ; and in 1172 his grandson, Alphonso ITI.,, king of Aragon, united Rous- sillon to his other states on the death of the last count, Gerard II. The counts of Roussillon, Cerdagne, and Bésalu were not sufficiently powerful to indulge in any wars of ambition. Their energies had been accordingly devoted to furthering the welfare of their people, who enjoyed both peace and prosperity under their rule. Under the Aragonese monarchs the progress of the united province still continued, and Collioure, the port of Perpignan, became a centre of Mediterranean trade. But the country was in time destined to pay the penalty of its position on the frontiers of France and Spain in the long struggle for ascendency between these two powers. James I. of Aragon had wrested the Balearic Isles from the Moors and left them with Roussillon to his son James (1276), with the title of king of Majorca. The consequent

disputes of this monarch with his brother Pedro ITT. of Aragon were not lost sight of by Philip ITI. of France in his quarrel with the latter about the crown of the Two Nicilies. Philip espoused James’s cause and led his army into Spain, but retreating died at Perpignan in 1285, James then became reconciled to his brother, and in 1311 was succeeded by his son Sancho, who founded the cathedral of Perpignan shortly before his death in 1324. His successor James II. refused to do homage to Philip VI. of France for the seigniory of Montpellier, and applied to Pedro IV. of Aragon for aid. Pedro not only refused it, but on various pretexts declared war against him, and seized Majorca and Roussillon in 1344, The province was now again united

to Aragon, and enjoyed peace until 1462. In this year the disputes between John IL. and his son about the crown of Navarre gave Louis XI. of France an excuse to support John against his subjects, who had risen in revolt. Louis at the fitting time turned traitor, and the province having been pawned to him for 300,000 crowns was occupied by the French troops until 1493, when Charles VIII. restored it to Ferdinand and Isabella. During the war between France and Spain (1496-98) the people suffered equally from the Spanish garrisons and the French invaders. But dislike of the Spaniards was soon effaced in the pride of sharing in the glory of Charles V., and in 1542, when Perpignan was besieged by the dauphin, the Roussillonnais remained true to their allegiance. Afterwards the decay of Spain was France's opportunity, and, on the revolt of the Catalans against the Castilians in 1641, Louis XIIL espoused the cause of the former, and by the treaty of 1659 secured Roussillon to the French crown.

ROVEREDO (in German sometimes Rofreit), one of the chief industrial cities in South Tyrol, and, after Trent, the chief seat of the Tyrolese silk industry, is situated on the left bank of the Adige (Etsch), in the fertile Val Lagarina, 35 miles north of Verona and 100 miles south of Innsbruck. Though there are several open places within the town, the streets, except in the newer quarters, are narrow, crooked, and uneven. Of the two parish churches, §. Marco dates from the 15th century and Sta Maria del Carmine from 1678. The only other interesting building is the quaint old castle known as Castell Junk. As an active trading town and administra- tive centre Roveredo is well equipped with commercial, judicial, educational, and benevolent institutions. Though the district between Trent and Verona yields about 120,000 ib of silk annually, the silk industry of Roveredo, introduced in the 16th century, has declined during the last fifty years. The establishments in which the cocoons are unwound (jilande) are distinct from those in which the silk is spun (jfilatoje). The silk is not woven at Roveredo. Paper and leather are the other chief manu- factures of the place ; and a brisk trade in southern fruits and red wine is carried on. The population is 8864.

The origin of Roveredo is probably to be traced to the founding of the castle by William of Castelbarco-Lizzana about 1300. Later it passed to the emperor Frederick of the Empty Pockets, who sold it to Venice in 1413. The

treaty of Cambray transferred it from Venice to the emperor Maximilian in 1510, since which time it has shared the fate of southern Tyrol, finally passing to Austria in 1814. In September 1709 the French under Masséna won a victory over the Austrians near Roveredo. Near the neighbouring village of St Marco are the traces of a destructive

landslip in 888, described in the Inferno (xii. 4-9) by Dante, who spent part of his exile in 1302 in a castle near Lizzana.

ROVIGNO, a city of Austria, in the province of Istria, is picturesquely situated on the coast of the Adriatic, about 12 miles south of Parenzo, and 10 miles by rail from Canfanaro, a junction on the railway between Divazza (Trieste) and Pola. It has two harbours, with ship- building yards ; and it carries on several industries and a

a i ae

---

good export trade, especially in olive-oil and a cement manufactured in the little island of Sant' Andrea. The population was 9564 in 1869 and 9522 in 1880.

Aceording to tradition Rovigno was originally built on an island, Cissa by name, which disappeared during the earthquakes about 737. In the 6th century, as the local legend hasit, the body of St Euphemia of Chalcedon was miraculously conveyed to the island ; and ata later date it was transported to the summit of the promontory, Monte di Sant' Kufemia, whither it was restored by the Venetians in 1410 after being in the possession of the Genoese from 1380. The diocese of Rovigno was merged in 1008 in the bishopric of Parenzo ; but its church continued to have the title of cathedral. Rovigno passed definitively into the hands of the Venetians in 1330, and it remained true to the republic till the treaty of Campo Formio (1797).

ROVIGO, a city of Italy, the chief town of a province, and the seat of the bishop of Adria, lies between the Po and the Adige, and is traversed by the Adigetto, a navig- able branch of the Adige. By rail it is 27 miles south-south-west of Padua. ‘The architecture bears the stamp both of Venetian and Ferrarese influence. The cathedral church of Santo Stefano (1696) is of less interest than La Madonna del Soccorso, an octagon (with a fine campa-nile), begun in 1594. The town-hall contains a library of 80,000 volumes belonging to the Accademia de’ Concordi, founded in 1580, and a picture gallery enriched with the spoils of the monasteries. Wool, silk, linen, and leather are among the local manufactures. The population of the city proper was 7452 in 1871 and 7272 in 1881; the commune in 1881 had 11,460 inhabitants.

Rovigo (Neo-Latin Rhodigiwm) appears to be mentioned as Rudigo in 838. It was selected as his residence by the bishop of Adria on the destruction of his city by the Huns, From the 11th to the 14th century the Este family was usually in authority ; but the Venetians who obtained the town and castle in pledge between 1390 and 1400 took the place by siege in 1482, and, though the Este more than once recovered it, the Venetians, returning in 1514, retained possession till the French Revolution. Jn 1806 the city was made a duehy in favour of General Savary. The Austrians in 1815 created it a royal city.

ROVIGO, DUKE oF. See SAVARY,

ROWE, Nicnotas (1674-1718), the descendant of a family long resident at Lamerton in Devon, was born at Little Barford in Bedfordshire, June 30, 1674. The house in which he was born is close to the Great North Road, and a small stone to his memory has been erected in the centre of the garden. His father, John Rowe, took to the law as his profession, and at his death in 1692 (by which time he had attained to the dignity of being a serjeant at law) had amassed sufficient property to leave to his son an income of £300 a year. Nicholas Rowe passed some time in a private school at Highgate, and then proceeded to Westminster School, at that time under the charge of the celebrated master Dr Busby. In 1688 he became a king’s scholar in this foundation, but three years later he was called away from school and entered as a student at the Middle Temple. The study of the law had little

attraction for a young man of good person and lively manners, and at his father's death in the following year he devoted himself to society and to literature. His first play, Zhe Ambitious Stepmother, was produced when he was twenty-five years old. It was followed by Tamerlane, a patriotic composition in which the virtues of Willian ITI. were lauded under the disguise of Tamerlane and the vices of the French king, Louis XIV., were denounced in the person of Bajazet. The popularity of this production soon declined, but for many years it was acted once every year, on the anniversary of the landing at Torbay of the Dutch prince. His next play, The Fair Penitent, long retained the favourable reception which marked its first appearance, and was pronounced by the great critic of the 18th century one of the most pleasing tragedies which had ever been written. Through its suc-

cess the name of the principal male character Lothario became identified in popular language as the embodiment of the manners and habits of a fashionable rake. After the production of two more tragedies, Ulysses and The Royal Convert, of slight account at the time and long since forgotten, Rowe tried, his hand on a comedy, Zhe Biter. Much to the author's surprise his attempt in this new direction proved a failure, but Rowe recognized the justice of the verdict of the audience sufficiently to abstain from risking a second disappointment. His two last dramatic works were entitled Jane Shore and Lady Jane Grey, and the former of them, from the popularity of its subject and the elegance of its language, kept its position on the stage longer than any other of his works.

Rowe excelled most of his contemporaries in the knowledge of languages. He was acquainted more or less thoroughly with Greek, Latin, French, Italian, and Spanish. The latter tongue he is said to have acquired on the recommendation of Harley and with the expecta- tion that he would afterwards be rewarded by some high office. When, however, he reported his new acquisition to the new minister he was met with the dry remark from Harley—" How I envy you the pleasure of reading Don Quixote in the original!" Notwithstanding this dis- appointment, Rowe enjoyed many lucrative posts during his short life. When the duke of Queensberry was

principal secretary of state for Scotland (1708-10), Rowe acted as his under-secretary. On the accession of George I, he was madea surveyor of customs, and on the death of Tate he became poet laureate. He was also appointed clerk of the council to the prince of Wales, and the list of preferments was closed by his nomination by Lord- Chancellor Parker (5th May 1718) as secretary of presenta- tions in Chancery. He died 6th December 1718, and was buried in the south cross of Westminster Abbey. By his first wife, a daughter of Mr Parsons, one of the auditors of the revenue, he left a son John; and by his second wife, Anne, the daughter of Joseph Devenish of a Dorsetshire family, he had an only daughter, Charlotte, born in 1718, who married Henry Fane, a younger brother of Thomas, eighth earl of Westmoreland. The burials of mother and daughter are recorded in Colonel Chester's Registers of Westminster Abbey.

Rowe's tragedies were marked by passionate feeling set off by a graceful diction, and were well adapted for stage effect. If The Fair Penitent and Jane Shore have been expelled from the stage, their historic reputation and their style will repay perusal.

Among Rowe's other literary efforts may be mentioned an edition of the works of Shakespeare (1709), for which he received from Lintot the bookseller the sum of £36, 10s., a rate of pay not out of proportion to the labour which was bestowed upon the task. At the time of his death he had also finished a translation of Lucan's Pharsalia, a work then much praised and not yet superseded by any competitor. Rowe's minor poems were beneath the level of his age. An edition of his works was published in 1720 under the

care of Mr (afterwards Bishop) Newton. His translation of Lucan was edited by Dr Welwood.

ROWING is the act of driving forward or propelling a boat along the surface of the water by means of oars. It is remarkable how scanty, until quite recent times, are the records of this art, which at certain epochs has played no insignificant part in the world's history. It was the oar that brought Phoenician letters and civilization to Greece ; it was the oar that propelled the Hellenic fleet to Troy ; it was the oar that saved Europe from Persian despotism ; it was the skilful use of the oar by free citizens which

was the glory of Athens in her prime. It is to be regretted that so little is known of the details connected with it, or of the disposal of the rowers on board the splendid fleet which started in its pride for Sicily, when 17,000 oars at a given signal smote the brine, and 100 long ships raced as far as Algina. The vessels of the ancient Greeks and

Romans—the biremes, quadriremes, quinquiremes, and hexiremes—owed their pace to the exertions of men who plied the oar rather than to the sails with which they were fitted, and which were only used when the wind was favourable. Professor Gardner has shown that boat racing was not uncommon among the Greeks ;! and that it was practised among the Romans Virgil testifies in the well- known passage in the fifth book of the Zeid. And the Venetian galleys which were subsequently used on the shores of the Mediterranean in medieval times were only a modified form of the older kind of craft. These were for the most part manned by slaves and criminals, and were in constant employment in most European countries.

Rowing was understood by the ancient Britons, as they trusted themselves to thé mercy of the waves in coracles composed of wicker-work covered with leather, similar no doubt in many respects to those now used in Wales ; but these frail vessels were propelled by paddles and not by oars. The Saxons seem to have been expert in the management of the oar, as well as the Danes and Norwe- gians, as it is recorded that the highest nobles in the land devoted themselves to it, Alfred the Great introduced long galleys from the Mediterranean, which were propelled by forty or sixty oars on each side, and for some time these vessels were used for war purposes. It is stated by William of Malmesbury that Edgar the Peaceable was rowed in state on the river Dee from his palace, in the city of West Chester, to the church of St John and back again, by eight tributary kings, himself acting as coxswail.

Boat quintain, or tilting at one another on the water, was first brought into England by the Normans as an amusement for the spring and summer season, and prob- ably much of the success of the champions depended upon the skill of those who managed the boats. Before the beginning of the 12th century the rivers were commonly used for conveying passengers and

merchandise on board barges and boats, and until the introduction of coaches they were almost the only means of transit for royalty, and for the nobility and gentry who had mansions and watergates on the banks of the Thames. It is, how- ever, impossible to trace the first employment of bargemen, wherrymen, or watermen, but they seem to have been well established by that time, and were engaged in ferrying and other waterside duties. During the long frosts of the early part of the 13th century, frequent mention is made in the chronicles of the distress among the watermen, from which we may assume that their numbers were large. They were employed in conveying the nobles and their retinues to Runnymede, where they met King John and where Magna Charta was signed. Towards the close of this century the watermen of Greenwich were frequently fined for over-charging at the established ferries, and about the same time some of the city companies established barges for water processions. We learn from Fabian and Middleton that in 1454 “Sir John Norman, then lord mayor of London, built a noble barge at his own expense, and was rowed by watermen with silver oars, attended by such of the city companies as possessed barges, in a splendid manner,” and further “that he made the barge he sat in burn on the water”; but there is no explanation of this statement. Sir John Norman was highly commended for this action by the members of the craft, as no doubt it helped to popularize the fashion then coming into vogue of being rowed on the Thames by the watermen who plied for hire in their wherries. The lord mayor’s procession by water to Westminster, which figures on the front page of the Llustrated London News, was made annually until the -year 1856, when it was discontinued, The lord

_1 Journal of Hellenic Studies, 1881.

ROW

ING

mayor’s state barge was a magnificent species of shallop rowed by watermen ; and the city companies had for the most part barges of their own, all rowed double-banked with oars in the fore half, the after part consisting of a cabin something like that of a gondola. The watermen became by degrees so large and numerous a body that in the sixth year of the reign of Henry VIII. (1514) an Act was passed making regulations for

them. This Act has from time to time been amended by various statutes, and the last was passed in 1858. Much time seems to have been spent in pleasuring on the water in the 15th and 16th centuries, and no doubt competitions among the watermen were not uncommon, though there is no record of them. The principal occupation of watermen, who were obliged to serve an apprenticeship, used to be ferrying and rowing fares on the Thames, but in process of time the introduction of bridges and steamers drove them from this employment, and the majority of them now work as bargemen, lightermen, and steamboat hands, having still to serve an apprenticeship. For many years matches for money stakes were frequent (1831 to 1880), but the old race of watermen, of which Phelps, the senior Kelley, Campbell, Coombes, Newell, the MacKinneys, Messenger, Pocock, and Ifenry Kelley were prominent members, has almost died out, and some of the best English scullers during the last fifteen years have been landsmen. Apart from the reference already made to the ancients, we do not find any records of boat-racing before the establishment in England of the coat and badge, insti- tuted by the celebrated comedian Thomas Doggett in 1715, in honour of the house of Hanover, to commemo- rate the anniversary of “King George I.’s happy accession to the throne of Great Britain.” The prize was a red coat with a large silver badge on the arm, bearing the white horse of Hanover, and the race had to be rowed on the Ist of August annually on the Thames, by six young watermen who were not to have exceeded the time of their apprentice- ship by twelve months. Although the first contest took place in the year above mentioned, the names of the winners have only been preserved since 1791. The race continues at the present day, but under slight modifica- tions. The first. regatta appears to have occurred about sixty years later, for we learn from the Annual feegister of the year 1775 that an entertainment called by that name (Ital., regata), introduced from Venice into England, was exhibited on the Thames off Ranelagh Gardens, and a lengthy account of it is given at the end of the work. The lord mayor’s and several-of the city companies’ pleasure barges were conspicuous, and, although we learn very little indeed of the competing wager boats, it seems clear they were rowed by watermen. We find from Strutt’s Sports and Pastimes (first published in 1801) that the proprietor of Vauxhall Gardens had for some years given a new wherry to be rowed for by watermen, two in a boat, which igs perhaps the first pair-oared race on record. Similar prizes were also given by Astley, the

celebrated horseman and circus proprietor of the Westminster Bridge Road, about the same period ; but thus far rowing was apparently viewed as a laborious exercise, and the rowers were paid. At the commencement of the present century, however, rowing as- sociations were formed, and the " Star," " Arrow," « Shark," and "Siren" Clubs had races amongst themselves, gene- rally over long courses and in heavy six-oared boats. The Star and Arrow Clubs ceased to exist in the early years of this century, and were merged in the newly formed Leander Club. The date of its establishment cannot be fixed exactly, but it was probably about 1818 or 1819. It ranked high, because the majority of its members had frequently distinguished themselves in matches with the oar and sculls. They were the first to patronize and lend

a helping hand to young watermen who showed promise of aquatic fame, and they likewise instituted a coat and badge for scullers.

The first record of public-school racing which ean now be seen is the Water Ledger of Westminster School, whieh commenees in the year 1813 with a list of the crew of the six-oared Fly. This craft continued for some time to be the only boat of the school, and in 1816 beat the Temple six-oar in a race from Johnson's Dock to Westminster Bridge by half a length. Eton possessed a fleet of boats in 1811, if not at an earlier date, consisting of a ten-oar and three boats with eight oars. In those days some of the crews had a waterman to pull stroke and drill the crew, but this practice was abolished in 1828, as the waterman frequently rowed a bad stroke and the erew were obliged to subseribe for his day's pay, beer, and clothes ; thenceforward the captain of each crew rowed the stroke- oar. The earliest record of a race at Eton is when Mr Carter's four rowed against the watermen and beat them in 1817; but the pro- fessionals had a boat too small for them. In1818 Eton challenged Westminster School to row from Westminster to Kew Bridge against the tide, but the match was stopped by the authorities ; and it was not until 1829 that the first contest between the two schools was brought to an issue.

Rowing appears to have commenced at the universities soon after the beginning of the century, but earlier at Oxford than at Cam- bridge. There

were college boats on the river for some time before there were any races. Those first recorded at Oxford were in 1815, said to be college eights, but the boats uscd are more likely to have becn fours, when Brasenose was ‘‘ head of the river” and Jesus their, chief opponent. These two clubs were constantly rowing races, but they were not very particular about the oarsmen in the boats, as the Brasenose crew in 1824 was composed of two members of tlie eollege, a Worcester man, and a waterman, The first authentic records commence in 1836, and the Oxford University Boat Club was established in 1839. At Cambridge eight-oared rowing was not in fashion so soon as at Oxford, the first eight (belonging to St John’s College) not having been launched until 1826 ; and between that year and 1829 the Cambridge University Boat Club was formed. Eight-oared races were established on the Cam in 1827, when First Trinity was “head of the river,” and in 1828 the first Oxford and Cambridge University boat race was proposed and fixed for June 10, 1829, on the Thames, from Hambledon Lock to Henley Bridge. The race was rowed at intermittent periods up to 1856, since whieh year it has been annual, In 1830 the amateur championship of the Thames was instituted by Mr Henry C. Wingfield, who presented a pair of silver sculls to be rowed for annually by the amateur scullers of the Thames on the 10th August from Westminster to Putney at half flood, but the course and date of the race have been changed since then. The first scullers’ race for the professional ehampionship of the Thames was rowed from Westminster to Putney on the 8th September 1831, Charles Campbell of West- minster defeating John Williams of Waterloo Bridge. During the next cight years rowing increased in favour among amateurs, and, as it had taken its proper place among the national pastimes, and the want of a eentral spot for a regatta was much felt, Henley- on-Thames was chosen, and it was decided that a regatta should be held there in 1839, and the Grand Challenge cup for eight oars was established. This has been an annual fixture ever since, prizes being given for four oars, pair oars, and scullers, as well as for eight oars. In 1843 the Royal Thames Regatta was started at Putney, and it gave a gold challenge cup for eight oars and a silver challenge eup for four oars, to be rowed by amateurs. In 1844 Oxford beat Cambridge at this regatta, and in the same year the eommittce added a champion prize for watermen. About this time the Old Thames Club was established, and they carried off the gold challenge cup by winning it for three years in succession, viz., 1846 to 1848. In 1852 the Argonauts Club

first appeared at Henley and won the Visitors' cup, and in 1853 the Royal Chester Rowing Club were successful in the Stewards' cup for four oars, and won the Grand Challenge cup for eight oars the next year. In 1856 the London Rowing Club was established, but those members of it who rowed at Henley were obliged to enter under the name of the Argonauts Club, as, not having been in existence a year, its crew eould not eompete under its name. The next year, however, they carried off the Grand Challenge cup from Oxford University, and were successful in the Stewards' cup as well. Many more clubs, such as the Kingston, Radley, West London, Twickenham, Thames, Moulsey, and other metropolitan and provincial elubs were subse- quently established, and have met with varied success.

Boats. —The boats of the present day differ very much from those formerly used, and the heavy lumbering craft which alone were known to our forefathers have been superseded by a lighter descrip- tion,—skiffs, gigs, and racing outriggers. The old Thames wherry with its long projecting bow is now seldom seen, and a roomy skiff, often used with a sail when the wind is favourable, has taken its

laee. The gig isan open boat with several strakes, having the row- ocks, or picces of wood between which the oar works, fixed upon the

gunwalc, which is level all round. The skiff is wider and longer than the gig and of greater depth, and, rising higher fore and aft, with rowlocks placed on a curved and elevated gunwale, has greater earrying power and rows lighter than the gig. The wherry rises high at the bows with a long nose pointed upwards and a very low stern, being eonsequently unsuited for rough water. The modern racing boat differs much from the foregoing, as its width has been decreased so as to offer as little resistanee to the water as possible, while it is propelled by oars working between rowlocks fixed on projecting iron rods and cross pieces which arc made fast to the timbers. These rods and cross pieces are rigged out from the side of the boats, and hence the term outriggers. These boats are constructed for single scullers, for pairs, for fours, for eights, and occasionally for twelve oars. The outrigger was first brought to perfection by the late Henry Clasper of Neweastle-on-Tyne, who is generally believed to have been its inventor ;

but the first outriggers, which were cnly rude pieces of wood fastened on the boat's sides, were used in 1828, and were fixed to a boat at Ouseburn-ou-Tyne. The first iron outriggers were affixed to a boat in 1830 at Dents' Hole on Tyne. In 1844 Clasper, who had been improving upon these inventions, made his first boat of the kind and brought her to London; but her outriggers were only 8 inches in length, and she was built of several strakes, with a small keel. In process of time keels were dispensed with, the outriggers were lengthencd, and the skin of the boat is now composed of a single strake of cedar planed very thin and bent by means of hot water to take the form of the timbers of the boat. It is fastened by copper nails to curved timbers of ash, one extremity of which is fixed into the keelson while the other is made fast to long pieces of deal that run from end to end of the boat and are called inwales. The timbers in the middle are thicker than the rest, so as to support the iron outriggers which are fastened to them, and the thwart, which is wider than it used to be in order to carry the sliding seat, which works backward and forward with the oarsman, is screwed to the inwales. This seat moves toand fro on rollers made of steel, wood, or brass, and travels over a distance varying from 12 to 6 inches according to the judgment of the instructor. The sliding seat seems to have been the invention of an American oarsman, who fixed one to asculling boat in 1857, but it was not until 1870 that he had mastered the principles sufficiently to discover how much was gained mechanically and physically. The value of the improve- ment is now universally recognized, but it was some little time before it was understood and came into general use. The members of the London Rowing Club, who defeated the representatives of the New York Atalanta Club at Putney in June 1872, used sliding seats, and the club also had them fitted to their eight, which easily carried off the Grand Challenge eup at Henley a few days after- wards. In 1873 the sliding seat was adopted by the crews rowing in the University boat race. The Americans have also the ercdit of two other inventions, viz., the steering apparatus, which enables a erew to dispense with a coxswain, and the swivel rowlock ; but, though the former is now fitted to the majority of non-coxswain pairs and fours, the use of the latter is confined for the most part to sculling boats. In outrigged eights, fours, and pairs the outriggers are placed, one for each thwart, at each side alternately, but in gigs, skiffs, wherries, and funnies they are placed opposite one another, so as to be used

on either side at discretion. The oars generally used are about 12 feet long, varying with the width of the boat, and sculls are as much as 10 feet long.

Directions for Rowing.—In modern rowing the oarsman, grasping the handle of the oar with both hands, sits forward on the edge of his seat, stretches out his arms until they arc fully extended—the blade of the oar being, just previous to entering the water, at right angles to its surface. It is then dipped into the water just so far as to cover it, and the handle pulled towards the oarsman's body, the weight 'of the latter being thrown backward at the same time, so as to make one movement, and the legs pressed hard against the stretcher, and the handle finally pulled home to the chest with the arms, the elbows being allowed to pass the sides until the handle of the oar just touches the lower extremity of the breast. The blade of the oar thus appears to be forced through the water, but in reality this is very slightly the case, as the water, which is the fulcrum, remains almost immovable. In sculling, the operation is the same except that the sculler has a scull in each hand and drives the boat himself, whereas a man rowing an oar must have one or more com- rades to assist him. Rowing is made up of two parts, the stroke and the feather. Feathering is turning the oar at the end of the stroke by lowering the hands and dropping'the wrists, thus bringing the flat blade of the oar parallel with the surface of the water, and is generally considered to include the driving forward of the handle of the oar and the consequent carrying back of the blade previous to the beginning of a new stroke.

When prepared to embark, the pupil should lay his oar on the water if an outside or upon the land if a shoreside oar, and step into the boat with his face to the stern, when he should at once seat himself and ship his oar, and then try the length of his stretcher to sec that it suits his length of leg. This arranged, he should

back being kept quite straight. On eatehing hold of the water, the knees must be gradually straightened and the body thrown baek, the two aetions going on simultaneously, so that the legs are straight out by the time the stroke is finished and not before, the body and shoulders at the end of the stroke being thrown well baek. The bodyis then reeovered to the upright

position from the hips, the hands thrown forward, and by the time they are just past the knees the body is being drawn forward, and the knees bent, The motion then begins the same as before. (E. D. B.)

Boat-Racing in America. —This pastime ean be traeed baek to the beginning of the present century. The earliest important affair was in 1811, —a sectional match, New York City against all Long Island, four-oared barges, with eoxswains, from Harsimus, New Jersey, to the flag-staff on the Battery. New York won easily, and such was the popular enthusiasm over the raee that its boat, the “ Knickerboeker,” was suspended in a public museum, where it remained for fifty-four years, a eoustant reeipient of publie admira- tion until destroyed by fire in July 1865. Sinee this historie con- test no year has been without boat races, At that time the words amateur and professional were unknown on the water; the Castle Garden Amateur Boat Club Association—Ameriea’s first avowedly amateur club—was founded in 1834,

There had been informal clubs and desultory racing at Yale College as early as 1833, but the first regular organization wag in March 1843. Harvard followed in September 1844, and Yale and Harvard first met on the water at Lake Winnepiseogee, New Hampshire, August 8, 1852; sinee 1878 they have met annually at New London, Conn. In 1865 Harvard, Yale, Trinity, and Brown formed the Union College Regatta Assoeiation, whieh lasted three years. The Raeing Association: of American Colleges, which at one time included sixteen colleges, died in 1876. In 1883 Bowdoin, Columbia, Cornell, Prineeton, Rutgers, University of Pennsylvania, and Wesleyan formed the Intercollegiate Raeing Association, which still flourishes and gives annual regattas,

The control of amateur racing in Ameriea belongs to the National Assoeiation of Amateur Oarsmen, founded in 1873, whose member- ship ineludes all the better class of amateur boat clubs. Its management is vested in an Exeeutive Committee of nine members, three of whom are eleeted at each annual meeting of the association, The rulings of this eommittee are subjeet to review, approval, or reversal, at each annual meeting of the full association. This association gives an annual open amateur regatta, similar to the Royal Henley Regatta in being the ehief aquatic event of the year, but

unlike it in not being rowed always on the same course, but moving about from year to year—having, sinee 1873, been rowed at Philadelphia, N ewark, Troy, and Watkins (N.Y.), Detroit, Washington, and Boston. There are in the United States eleven regularly organized amateur rowing associations, formed by the union of amateur rowing clubs and giving each year one or more regattas. These associations are the National Association of Amateur Oarsmen, the North- Western Amateur Rowing Assoeiation, the Mississippi Valley Amateur Rowing Association, the Passaic River Amateur Rowing Assoeiation, the Intereollegiate Rowing Association, the Harlem Regatta Association, the Louisiana State Amateur Rowing Association, the Virginia State Rowing Associa- tion, the Schuylkill N. avy, the Upper Hudson Navy, and the Kill von Kull Regatta Association, At English regattas it is usual to start three boats in a heat, sometimes four, five being the utmost limit, whereas at Saratoga, in the great regattas of 1874 and 1875, there were started abreast, in four separate races, eleven singles (twiee), thirteen coxswainless fours, and thirteen eoxswainless sixes,

The primary division of American racing eraft is into (a) lap- streaks or elinkers, built of wood in narrow streaks with overlapping edges at eaeh joint, and (b) smooth bottoms, made of wood or paper, and having a fair surfaee, without projeeting joint or seam. Lap- streak boats are, however, now rarely used save in barge raees. Then follows the subdivision into barges, whieh are open inrigged boats, gigs, which are open outrigged boats, and shells, which are covered outrigged boats. These three elasses of boats are further subdivided, in aecordanee with the means of propulsion, into single, double, and quadruple seulling boats, and pair-, four-, six-, and eight- oared boats. In Ameriea the double-seull is more frequent than the pair, and the six-oar mueh more eommon than the eight-oar.

The sliding seat is now being gradually superseded by various styles of rolling seats, in whieh the actual seat travels backward and forward on frietionless wheels or balls, The best of these de- vices run more easily, are cleaner, and less liable to aecident than the ordinary sliding seat. English oarsmen use the sliding scat as a means of making their old aecustomed stroke longer and more powerful. Ameriean oarsmen hold that what is needed by an oars- man is not the addition of the long slide to the old-

fashioned long swing, but the almost total substitution of slide for swing, the transfer of the labour from back to legs—in fact, a totally new style.

ROWLANDSON, Txomas (1756-1827), caricaturist, was born in Old Jewry, London, in J uly 1756, the son of a tradesman or city merchant. It is recorded that “he could

stretcher, and the two heels elose together with the toes wide apart, so as to keep the knees Open and separate. Of eourse if the pupil sits fair and square, and immediately opposite the handle of his oar, he will be at one side and not in the eentre of the boat. The stretcher, it may be added, should be as short as possible eon- veniently for elearing the knees and for exereising eomplete eontro] over the oar. The body should be upright, not bent forward and sunk down upon the trunk; the shoulders should be thrown baek, the ehest out, and the elbows down elose alongside the flanks, The oar should be held firmly, but withal lightly, in both hands, not clutched and cramped asin a viee—the outside hand elose to the

an ineh and a half to 2 inehes away from its fellow, but grasping the oar more eonvexly than the latter, the thumb being kept under- neath. The forearms should be below the level of the handle, and

fault in rowing. In taking the stroke the body should be inelined forwards with the baekbone straight, the stomach well out and down between the legs, the ehest forward and elevated as much as possible. The knees must be pressed slightly outwards; and the shoulders should eome moderately forward, but perfeetly level, and at an equal height. The arms should play freely in the shonlder joints, and should be perfeetly straight from the shoulders to the wrists ; the action of the hips also should be free. The inside wrist, however, must be somewhat raised, and the outside one be

body without the least pause, and as soon as the oar has passed the knees the wrists should be raised to bring the blade at right angles

upon it, by whieh the beginning of the stroke ig eaught, and the stroke itself pulled through ; in a word, the pupil should, as it were, knit himself up, and then spring baek like a bow when the string

make sketches before he learned to write," and that he covered his lesson-books with caricatures of his masters and fellow-pupils. On leaving school he became a student in the Royal Academy. At the age of sixteen he resided and studied for a time in Paris, and he afterwards made frequent tours on the Continent, enriching his portfolios with numerous jottings of life and character. In 1775 he exhibited at the Royal Academy a drawing of Delilah visiting Samson in Prison, and in the following years he was represented by various portraits and landscapes. Possessed of much facility of execution and a ready com- mand of the figure, he was spoken of as a promising student; and had he continued his early application he would have made his mark as a painter. But he was the victim of a disastrous piece of good fortune. By the death of his aunt, a French lady, he fell heir to a sum of £7000, and presently he plunged into the dissipations of the town. Gambling became a passion with him, and he has been known to sit at the gaming-table for thirty- six hours at a stretch. In time poverty overtook him ; and the friendship and example of Gillray and Bunbury seem to have suggested that his early aptitude for carica- ture might furnish a ready means of filling an empty purse. His drawing of Vauxhall, shown in the Royal Academy exhibition of 1784, had been engraved by Pollard, and the print was a success. Rowlandson was largely employed by Rudolph Ackermann, the art publisher, who in 1809- 1811 issued in his Poetical Magazine 'The Schoolmaster's Tour"—a series of plates with illustrative verses by Dr William Coombe. They were the most popular of the artist's works. Again engraved by Rowlandson himself in 1812, and issued under the title of the Tour of Dr Syntax in Search of the Picturesque, they had attained a fifth edition by 1813, and were followed in 1820 by Dr Syntax in Search of Consolation, andin 1821 by the Third Tour of Dr Syntax, in Search of a Wife. The same collaboration of designer, author, and publisher appeared in the English Dance of Death, issued in 1814-16, one of the most admirable of Rowlandson's series, and in the Dance of Life, 1822. Rowlandson also illustrated Smollett, Goldsmith, and Sterne, and his designs will be found in The Spirit of the Public Journals (1825), The English Spy (1825), and The Humourist (1831). He died in London, after a pro- longed illness, on the 22d April 1827.

Rowlandson’s designs were usually executed in outline with the reed-pen, and delieately washed with eolour. They were then etched by the artist on the copper, and afterwards aqua-tinted— usually by a professional engraver, the impressions being finally coloured by hand. As a designer he was characterized by the utmost facility and ease of draunghtsmanship. He poured forth his designs in ill-considered profusion, and the quality of his art suffered from this haste and over-production. He was a true if not a very refined humorist, dealing less frequently than his fierce contemporary Gillray with politics, but commonly touching, in a rather gentle spirit, the various aspects and incidents of social life. His most artistic work is to be found among the more careful drawings of his carlier period ; but even among the gross forms and exaggerated caricature of his later time we find, here and there, in the graceful lines of a figure or the sweet features of some maiden’s

face, sufficient hints that this master of the humorous might have attained to the beautiful had he so willed.

See J. Grego, Rowlandson the Caricaturist, a Selection from his Works, &c. (2 vols., 1880).

ROWLEY, Witt, actor and dramatist, collaborated with several of the celebrated dramatists of the Elizabethan period—Dekker, Middleton, Heywood, Fletcher, Webster, Massinger, and Ford. Nothing is known of his life except that he was an actor in various companies, and married in 1637. There was another Rowley, an actor and playright in the same generation, Samuel, and probably a third, Ralph. Four plays by W. Rowley are extant, —A Woman never Veat (printed 1632), A Match at Midnight (1633), All ’s Lost by Lust (1633), and A Shoemaker a

3d

Gentleman (1638). From these an opinion may be formed of his individual style. Effectiveness of situation and in- genuity of plot are more marked in them than any special literary faculty, from which we may conjecture why he was in such request as an associate in play-making. ‘There are significant quotations from two of his plays in Lamb’s Specimens. It is recorded by Langbaine that he “was beloved of those great men

Shakespeare, Fletcher, and Jonson”; and the tradition of his personal amiability is supported by the fact of his partnerships with so many different writers.

ROWLEY REGIS, an urban sanitary district of Staf- fordshire, is situated on the Birmingham Canal, and on the Stourbridge branch of the Great Western Railway, 6 miles west of Birmingham. The original village surrounds the parish church, dating from the 13th century, but rebuilt in 1840 with the exception of the tower, which was also rebuilt in 1858. The village is situated in a rich coal and iron- stone district, and round it numerous hamlets have grown up within recent years. Lately the parish has been erected into an urban sanitary district, governed by a local board of fifteen members. Besides collieries, iron works, and ex- tensive quarries for “Rowley rag” (a basaltic intrusion), there are potteries, rivet, chain, and anchor works, breweries, and agricultural implement works, the district being one of the most important manufacturing centres of Staffordshire. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 3670 acres) in 1871 was 23,534 and in 1881 it was 27,385.

ROXANA, or Roxane, daughter of the Bactrian Oxy- artes and wife of Alexander the Great (see ALEXANDER, vol. i. p. 484, and Maceponran Empire, vol. xv. p. 142).

ROXBURGH, a border county of Scotland, occupying the greater part of the border line with England, is bounded E. and 8.E. by Northumberland, 8.E. by Cumberland, S.W. by Dumfriesshire, W. by Selkirkshire, N.W. by Midlothian, and N.E. by Berwickshire. It lies between 55° 6’ 30” and 55° 42’ 30” N. lat., and between 2° 10’ and 3° 7’ W. long. Its greatest length from north to south is 43 miles, and its greatest breadth about 30 miles. The area is 428,464 acres, or about 670 square miles.

Surface and Geology.—The greater part of Roxburgh is included in Teviotdale. The whole course of the Teviot, 40 miles in length, is included within the county. It rises in the ranges of greywacke hills which separate the county from Dumfriesshire and Selkirk, and runs north-eastwards, following the deposition of the greywacke rocks to the Tweed at Kelso, and dividing the county into two unequal parts. On the north a high range of land runs parallel with its banks and slopes to its margin. South-west be-

tween Dumfries and Cumberland the greywacke formation constitutes an almost continuous succession of eminences, through which the Liddel finds its way southwards. The highest summits of the greywacke ranges exceed 1800 feet. Although occasionally rocky and rugged, the hills are for the most part rounded in outline and clothed with grass to their summits. This Silurian formation occupies nearly the whole of the western half of the county, but along with the greywacke rocks is associated clay slate of a bluish colour, glimmering with minute scales of mica and fre- quently traversed by veins of calcareous spar. The forma- tion is succeeded to the eastward by an extensive deposit of Old Red Sandstone, forming an irregular quadrangular area, towards the centre of the county, emitting two irregu- lar projections from its southern extremity, and interrupted towards the north by an intrusion of trap rocks. Owing to the sandstone formation the transverse valleys formed by various affluents of the Teviot present features of great interest. The action of the water has scooped deep channels in the rock, and thus formed picturesque narrow defiles, of which the high sandstone scaurs are a pro-

minent characteristic, their dark red colour blending finely with the bright green woods and sparkling streams. The best example of this species of scenery is on the Jed near Jedburgh. From the left the Teviot receives the Borth- wick and the Ale, both rising in Selkirkshire, and from the right the Allan, the Slitrig, the Rule, the Jed, the Oxnam, and the Kale, which rise in the high grounds towards the English border. As the Teviot approaches Hawick the county becomes more cultivated, although frequent irrup- tions of igneous rocks in the shape of isolated hills lend to it picturesqueness and variety. Towards the Tweed, where the lower division of the coal formation prevails, it expands into a fine champaign country, richly cultivated and finely wooded. The Tweed, which enters the county about two miles north of Selkirk, crosses its northern corner, east- wards by Abbotsford, Melrose, and Kelso to Coldstream, Its tributaries within the county are, besides the Teviot, the Gala, the Leader, and the Eden. One of the principal features of the Tweed district is the beautiful group of the Hildon Hills near Melrose,

consisting of felspathic porphyry, the highest of the three peaks reaching 1385 feet. The ex- tensive range of the Cheviots running along the Northum- berland border is of similar formation, Within Roxburgh- shire they reach a height of over 2400 feet. The lochs are comparatively few, the principal being Yetholm or Primside Loch, and Hoselaw in Linton parish,

The principal minerals are calcareous Spar and quartz. The spar is frequently of a red or rose character indicating the presence of hematite. In the greywacke strata fossils are very rare, but in the Old Red Sandstone fossil fishes of the genus Pterichthys and Holoptychius are very numer- ous, and a great variety of plant impressions have been found, especially fucoids, but also vegetables of a higher origin, including distinct petrifactions of Calamites.

Climate and Agriculture.—The mean annual temperature ap- proximates to that of Scotland generally, but it is much warmer in the low and arable portions, where also the rainfall is much less than in the hilly regions. The soil varies much in different dis- tricts, being chiefly loam in the low and level tracts along the banks of the river, where it is also very fertile. In other parts a mixture of elay and gravel prevails, but there is also a considerable extent of mossy land. The hilly district is everywhere covered by a thick green pasturage admirably suited for sheep. Both in the pastoral and in the arable districts agriculture is in a very advanced con- dition. The chief attention is devoted to cattle and sheep rearing.

Of the total area of 428,464 acres, 184,196 were in erops in 1885, 48,506 being under eorn crops, 28,385 green crops, 59,937 clover, 47,058 permanent pasture, and 310 fallow. Of the area under corn crops, 32,624 acres, or fully two-thirds, were occupied by oats, and 13,355 acres by barley. Turnips and swedes were the principal green crops, oceupying 25,143 acres, while potatoes occupied only 2118. The total number of horses was 4420, of which 3697 were used solely for purposes of agriculture ; of cattle 17,831, of which 5154 were eows and heifers in milk or in calf ; of sheep 502,721 ; and of pigs 4783. The valued rental in 1674 was £314,633 Scots, or £26,219 sterling, while that in 1883-84 was £420,403 ineluding railways. According to the parliamentary return of lands and heritages, the total number of owners was 2455, of whom 1880

possessed less that one acre. The duke of Buceleuch possessed 104,461 acres, or nearly a fourth of the whole ; the duke of Rox- burghe, 50,459; the countess of Home, 25,380; marquis of Lothian, 19,740; and Sir William F. Elliot of Stobs, 16,475.

Manufactures.—Though essentially an agricultural county, Roxburghshire possesses woollen manufactures of some importance, including tweeds, blankets, shawls, and hosiery, the principal seats being Hawiek, Jedburgh, and Kelso.

Railways.—The county is intersected by one of the lines of rail- way from Edinburgh to London (the “ Waverley” route), which passes Melrose and Hawick. At Riccarton a branch passes south- eastwards to Newcastle. The northern district is erossed by the border railway from St Boswells to Kelso, Coldstream, and Berwiek, a branch passing south from near Kelso to J edburgh.

Population.—Between 1831 and 1881 the population increased from 43,663 to 53,442 (25,436 males, 28,006 females), but from 1861 to 1871 there was a decrease from 54,119 to 49,407. The town population numbered 24,273 in 1881, the village 6627, and the rural 22,542. Jedburgh (population 2432) is a royal burgh ; it is also a police and parliamentary burgh, as is likewise Hawick

(16,184) ; Kelso (4687) is a police burgh. The most important villages are Melrose (1550), Neweastleton (924), and Yetholm (746).

History and Antiquities.—Among the more important relics of the early inhabitants of the eounty are the so-called Druidical re- mains at Tinnishill between the parishes of Castleton and Canonbie, at Ninestanerigg near Hermitage Castle, and at Plenderleath between the Oxnam and the Kale. Of old forts there are two of great size on the summits of Caerby and Tinnishill in Liddesdale, and a number of smaller ones in different parts of the county. On the north- west of the Eildon Hills are two fosse or ramparts forming a eircuit of more than a mile. On Caldshiels Hill there was another British fort, and between them a ditch with rampart of earth defend- ing the country

from the east. The famous Catrail, ‘partition of the fence,” the most important of the British remains in the king- dom, extended a distance of 45 miles from near Galashiels in Sel- kirkshire through Roxburgh to Peel Fell on the border. The Roman Watling Street touehed on Roxburgh at Broomhartlaw, whence pass- ing along the mountains now forming the boundary of the county for a mile and a half, until it entered Scotland at Blackhall, it turned northward by Bonjedward, Mount Teviot, Newton, Eildon, and Newstead to Channelkirk in the Lammermuirs. Cu its line there were important stations at Chewgreen in the Cheviots (? Ad Fines), Bonjedward (Gadanica), and Eildon Hill (? Trimontium). Another Roman road called the Maidenway from Maiden Castle in Westmoreland entered Roxburgh at Deadwater, and under the name of the Wheelcauseway traversed the north-east corner of Liddesdale into Teviotdale. “From Watling Street a braneh ealled

the Devil’s Causeway passed to the Tweed. After forming part of

the kingdom of Northumberland for several eenturies, Roxburgh was relinquished along with Lothian to the Scottish king about 1020 (see Loruran, vol. xv. p. 10). It is supposed to have been formed into a shire in the reign of David I. , its aneient county town of Roxburgh forming, along with Edinburgh, Berwiek, and Stirling, the court of the four burghs of Scotland, whose laws were collected by that king. Roxburgh Castle, between the Tweed and Teviot near Kelso, was a royal residence of the Saxon kings of Northumbria and afterwards of the Scottish monarchs, It was frequently taken by the English, and James II. was killed there by the bursting of a cannon. After this it remained in rnins till it was repaired by Protector Somerset, shortly after which it was demolished. Hermitage, in Liddesdale, the scene of Leyden’s ballad of Lord Soulis, was probably built by Nicholas de Sules in the beginning of the 13th eentury. On the forfeiture of the Soulis family in 1320, it was granted by Robert the Bruce to Sir John Graham of Aber- corn, and passed by the marriage of his heiress Mary to her

husband William Douglas, knight of Liddesdale, who starved Sir

Alexander Ramsay of Dalhousie to death in it in 1342 in revenge for Ramsay’s appointment as sheriff of Roxburgh by David I]. In 1492

Archibald Douglas, fifth earl of Angus, exchanged the Hermitage for Bothwell Castle, on the Clyde, with Patrick Hep- burn, first earl of Bothwell ; and it was there that his descendant, the fourth earl, was visited in 1566 by Mary queen of Seots. The principal of the other old castles are Branxholm on the Teviot, long the residence of the Buccleuchs and the scene of Sir Walter Scott's Lay of the Last Minstrel ; Cessford, on a ridge inclining towards the Kale, formerly of great strength, besieged in 1520 by Surrey, to whom it surrendered; and Ferniehirst, the mansion of the Kers, on the Jed, occupying the site of a baronial fortress erected in 1410, and the scene of manya fray. The district was fora long time the scene of continual border conflicts, the leaders in which were the Armstrongs and other chiefs occupying the fortresses or peels, chiefly in Liddesdale, as at Gilknockie, Castleton, Whitehaugh, Copshaw, Syde, Mangerton, Goranberty, Hartsgarth, and Newcastleton. Among many fine modern mansions mention may be made of Floors Castle, the seat of the duke of Roxburghe ; Minto House, the seat of the earl of Minto; and Abbotsford, built by Sir Walter Scott. Few counties can boast of such important ecclesiastical remains as those of the abbeys of Melrose, J edburgh, and Kelso. There are several ancient crosses in the county, the principal being those at Ancruin, Bowden, Maxton, and Melrose. Aniong numer- ous enlinent men connected with Roxburgh mention may be made of Samuel Rutherfurd the theologian, James Thomson, author of Z'he

Seasons, John Leyden the poet, and Sir Gilbert Elliot of Minto. See Jeffrey, History of Roxburghshire, 4 vols., 1857-64; Armstrong's Iistory of Liddesdale, 1884. T. FW)

ROXBURY, formerly a city of Norfolk county, Massa- chusetts, U.S., now incorporated in Boston (g.v.).

ROY, RAmmonun (1772-1833), Raja Rammohun Roy (or Ray), the founder of the Brahma Samaj or Theistic Church of India, was born at Radhanagar, Bengal, in May 1772, of an ancient and honourable Brahman family. His father gave him a good education ; he learnt Persian at home, Arabic at Patna (where he studied Euclid, Aris- totle, and the Koran), and Sanskrit at Benares. Although a devout idolater in boyhood, he early began to doubt and

speculate, and at fifteen left home to study Buddhism in Tibet, where his criticisms on the Lama-worship gave much offence. After some years' travel he returned, but, his anti- idolatrous sentiments obliging him to leave home, he lived at Benares until his father's death in 1803. After this, he spent about ten years in the East India Company's service, latterly as dewan or head officer in the collection of revenues.

During this period he first began to assemble his friends together for evening discussions on the absurdities of idolatry, and he also issued his first work, Z'uhfat-al Muwahhiddin (" A Gift to Monotheists ») This treatise was in Persian, with an Arabic preface, and was a bold protest against superstition and priestcraft. These pro- ecedings brought on him much hostility, and even perse- cution, and in 1814 he retired to Calcutta for greater safcty. Here he soon established a little Friendly Society (Atmiya Sabhd), which met weekly to read the Hindu Scriptures and to chant monotheistic hymns. In 1816 he translated the Vedanta into Bengali and Hindustani, following this by a series of translations from the Upani- shads into Bengali, Hindustani, and English, with intro- ductions and comments of his own. These works he pub- lished at his own expeuse and disseminated widely among his countrymen. His writings excited much opposition and gave rise to numerous controversies, in which his ability, tact, and learning rendered him fully a match for his antagonists. But the deadliest blow which he inflicted upon Hindu superstition was his effective agitation against the rite of suttee, the burning of living widows on the funcral piles of their deceased husbands. In 1811 he had been a horrified witness of this sacrifice in his elder prother's family, and had vowed never to rest until he had uprooted the custom. He exposed the hollow pre- tences of its advocates in elaborate pamphlets, both in Bengali and English, and pressed the matter in every possible way, till at last the tide of public feeling turned, and on December 4, 1829, Lord William Bentinck issued a regulation abolishing suttee throughout all the terri- tories subject to Fort William. Rammohun was an active politician and philanthropist. He built schoolhouses and established schools in which useful knowledge was gratu- itously taught through the medium both of the English and the native languages. He wrote a suggestive Bengali gram- mar, of which he published

one version in English (1826) and one in Bengali (1833). He wrote valuable pamphlets on Hindu law, and made strenuous exertions for the freedom of the native press; he also established (1822) and mainly conducted two native newspapers, the Sambad Kaumudi in Bengali, and (if rightly identified) the Mfirdt- al-Akhbér in Persian, and made them the means of diffusing much useful political information. Becoming interested in Christianity, he learned Hebrew and Greek in order to read the Bible in the original languages; and in 1820 he issued a selection from the four Gospels entitled The Precepts of Jesus, the Guide to Peace and Happiness. This was attacked by the Baptist missionaries of Serampur, and a long controversy ensued, in which he published three remarkable Appeals to the Christian Public in Defence of the " Precepts of Jesus." He also wrote other theological tracts (sometimes under assumed names) in which he attacked both Hindu and Christian orthodoxy with a strong hand. But his personal relations with orthodox Christians were never unfriendly, and he rendered valuable assistance to Dr Duff in the latter's educational schemes. He also warmly befriended a Unitarian Christian Mission which was started in Calcutta (1824) by Mr William Adam, formerly a Baptist missionary, who, in attempting to convert RAmmohun to Trinitarianism; had himself been converted to the opposite view. This Unitarian Mission,

BY)

though not a theological success, attracted considerable sympathy among the Hindu monotheists, whose Atmiya Sabha had then become extinct. At last Rammohun felt able to re-embody his cherished ideal, and on August 20, 1828, he opened the first "Bréhmya Association" (Brahma Sabha) at a hired house. A suitable church building was then erected and placed in the hands of trustees, with a small endowment and a remarkable trust-deed by which the building was set apart 'for the worship and adoration of the Eternal, Unsearchable, and Immutable Being who is the Author and Preserver of the universe." The new church was formally opened on the 11th Magh (January 23) 1830, from which day the Brahma Samaj dates its existence. Having now succeeded in his chief projects, RAmmohun resolved to visit England, and the king of Delhi appointed him his envoy thither on special business, and gave him the title of raja. He arrived in England on April 8, 1831, and was received with universal cordiality and

respect. He watched with special anxiety the parlia- mentary discussions on the renewal of the East India Company's charter, and gave much valuable evidence before the Board of Control on the condition of India. This he republished with additional suggestions (Exposition of the Practical Operation of the Juticial and Revenue Systems of India), and also reissued his important Lssay on the Light of Hindus over Ancestral Property (1832). He visited France, and wished to visit America, but died unexpectedly of brain fever at Bristol, September 27, 1833.

His Bengali and Sanskrit works were lately reissued in one volume, by Rajnarain Bose and A. C. Vedantabagish (Calcutta, 1880), and his English works will shortly be published in two volumes by Eshanchandra Bose. Nagendranath Chattopadhaya's Bengali memoir of him (1881) is the fullest yet published.

ROY, Witrstam (c. 1726-1790), a famous geodesist, was employed in some of the great national trigonometrical measurements which were made during last century. In 1746, at the age of twenty, when an assistant in the office of Colonel Watson, deputy quartermaster-general in North Britain, he began the survey of the mainland of Scotland, the results of which were embodied in what is known as the "duke of Cumberland's map." In 1756 he obtained a lieutenancy in the 51st regiment, and proceeded with it to Germany, where his talents as a military draughtsman brought him to notice, and procured him rapid promotion. He ultimately reached the rank of maj or-general. In 1784, while deputy quartermaster-general at the Horse Guards, his services were called into request for conducting the observations for determining the relative positions of the French and English royal observatories. His measure- ment of a base line for that purpose on Hounslow Heath in 1784, which was destined to be the germ of all subse- quent surveys of the United Kingdom, gained him the gold medal of the Royal Society of London. Owing to unfore- seen delays, the triangulation for connecting the meridians of the two observatories was not carried out until 1787. He had completed his undertaking, and was finishing an account of it for the Phil. Trans. when he died in 1790.

Besides several papers in Phil. Trans., Roy was author of the work entitled Military Antiquities of the Romans in North Britain, published in 1793.

ROYAL HOUSEHOLD. In all the medisval mon- archies of western Europe the general system of govern- ment sprang from, and centred in, the royal household. The sovercign's domestics were his officers of state, and the leading dignitaries of the palace were the principal admin- istrators of the kingdom. The royal household itself had, in its turn, grown out of an earlier and more primitive 'nstitution. It took its rise in the comitatus described by Tacitus, the chosen band of comites or companions who, when the Roman historian wrote, constituted the personal following, in peace as well as in war, of the Teutonic

princeps or chieftain, In England before the Conquest the comitatus had developed or degenerated into the thegnhood, and among the most eminent and powerful of the king's thegns, were his dishthegn, his bowerthegn, and his horsethegn or staller. In Normandy at the time of the Conquest a similar arrangement, imitated from the French court, had long been established, and the Norman dukes, like their overlords the kings of France, had their seneschal or steward, their chamberlain, and their con- stable. After the Conquest the ducal household of Normandy was reproduced in the royal household of England ; and since, in obedience to the spirit of feudalism, the great offices of the first had been made hereditary, the great offices of the second were made hereditary also, and were thenceforth held by the grantees and their descend- ants as grand-serjeanties of the crown. The consequeuce was that they passed out of immediate relation to the practical conduct of affairs either in both state and court or in the one or the other of them. The steward and chamberlain of England were superseded in their political functions by the justiciar and treasurer of England, and in their domestic functions by the steward and chamber- lain of the household. The marshal of England took the place of the constable of England in the royal palace, and was associated with him in the command of the royal armies. In due course, however, the marshalship as well as the constableship became hereditary, and, although the constable and marshal of England retained their military authority until a comparatively late period, the duties they had successively performed about the palace had been long before transferred to the master of the horse. Under these circumstances the holders of the original great offices of state and the household ceased to attend the court

except on occasions of extraordinary ceremony, and their representatives either by inheritance or by special appointment have ever since continued to appear at corona- tions and some other public solemnities, such as the Open- ing of the parliament or trials by the House of Lords.! The materials available for a history of the royal house- hold are somewhat scanty and obscure. The earliest record relating to it is of the reign of Henry II., and is contained in the Black Book of the Huchequer. It enumer- ates the various inmates of the king's palace and the daily allowances made to them' at the period at which it was compiled. Hence it affords valuable evidence of the antiquity and relative importance of the court offices to which it refers, notwithstanding that it is silent as to the functions and formal subordination of the persons who filled them.? In addition to this record we have a series of far later, but for the most part equally meagre, docu- ments bearing more or less directly on the constitution of the royal household, and extending, with long intervals, from the reign of Edward IIL to the reign of William and Mary. Among them, however, are what are known as the

' The great officers of state and the household whom we have particularly mentioned do not of course exhaust the catalogue of them. We have named those only whose representatives are still dignitaries of the court and functionaries of the palace. If the reader consults Hallam (Middle Ages, vol. i. p. 181 sq.), Freeman (Vorman Conquest, vol. i, p. 91 sg., and vol. y. p. 426 sq.), and Stubbs (Const. List., vol. i. p. 343, sg.), he will be able himself to fill in the details of the outline we have given above.

2 The record in question is entitled Constitutio Domus Regis de Procurationibus, and is printed by Hearne (Liber Niger Scaecarit, vol. ie 1D) ~ sq.). It is analysed by Stubbs (Consé. 4ist., vol. i, note 2, p. 345).

King William and Queen Mary, printed for the Society of Antiquaries, London, 1790. See also Pegge's Curialia, published partly before and partly after this volume; and Carlisle's Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, published in 1829, Pegge and Carlisle, however, deal with small and insignificant portions of the royal establishment.

his domesticall meyne,

ROYAG HOUCHHAD GT, DP

Black Book of the Household compiled the first in the reign of Edward IV. and the second in the reign of Henry VIII., from which a good deal of detailed information may be gathered concerning the arrangements of the court in the 15th and 16th centuries.

and the Statutes of Liltham,

The Statutes of Eltham were meant for the practical guid-

ance merely of those who were responsible for the good _order and the sufficient supply of the sovereign's household at the time they were issued. But the Black Book of the Household, besides being a sort of treatise on princely mag-

nificence generally, professes to be based on the regulations established for the governance of the court by Edward III., who, it affirms, was "the first setter of certeynties among upon a grounded rule" and whose palace it describes as "the house of very policie and flowre of England ;" and it may therefore possibly, and even probably, take us back to a period much more remote than that at which it was actually put together.4 Various orders, returns, and accounts of the reigns of Elizabeth, James ie Charles I., Charles IL, and William and Mary throw con- siderable light on the organization of particular sections of the royal household in times nearer to our own.) Moreover, there were several parliamentary inquiries into the expenses of the royal household in connexion with the settlement or reform of the civil list during the reigns of George III, George IV., and William IV.6 But they add hittle or nothing to our knowledge of the subject in what was then its historical as distinguished from its contem- porary aspects. So much, indeed, is this the case that, on the accession of Queen Victoria, Chamberlayne's Present State of England, which contains a, catalogue of the officials at the court of Queen Anne, was described by Lord Melbourne the prime minister as the " only authority " which the advisers of the crown could find for their assistance in determining the appropriate constitution and dimensions of the domestic establishment of a queen regnant.?"

In its main outlines the existing organization of the royal household is essentially the same as it was under the Tudors or the Plantagenets. It is now, as it was then, divided into three principal departments, at the head of

which are severally the lord steward, the lord chamber- lain, and the master of the horse, and the respective pro- vinces of which may be generally described as “below stairs,” “above stairs,” and “out of doors.” But at present, the sovereign being a queen, the royal household is in some other respects rather differently arranged from what it would be if there were a king and a queen consort. When there is a king and a queen consort there is a

- Liber Niger Domus Regis Edward FV. and Ordinances Sor the fousehold made at Eltham in the seventeenth year of King Henry | VILI., 4.D. 1526, ave the titles of these two documents. The earlier documents printed in the same collection are Household of King Edward 11f. in Peace and War Jrom the eighteenth to the twenty-first year of his reign; Ordinances of the Household of K: ing Uenry IV, in the thirty-third year of his reign, A.D. L455, and Articles ordained by King Henry VII. for the Regulation of his Household, A.D. 1494.

5 The Book of the Household of Queen Elizabeth as it was ordained in the forty-third year of her Reign delivered to our Sovereign Lord King James, &c., is simply a list of officers’ names and allowances. It seems to have been drawn up under the curious circumstances referred to in Archxologia (vol. xii, pp, 80-85), For the rest of these docn- ments see Ordinances and Regulations, dc, pp. 299, 340, 847, 352, 368, and 380.

§ Burke’s celebrated Act “for enabling His Majesty to discharge the debt contracted upon the civil list, and for preventing the same from being in arrear for the future, &c.,” 22 Geo. III. ¢. 82, was passed in 1782. But it was foreshadowed in his great speech on ‘‘ Economical Reform” delivered two years before. Since the beginning of the current century select committees of the House of Commons have reported on the civil list and royal household in 1808, 1804, 1815, and 18381.

7 Torrens’s Memoirs of ii. p. 803,

William, second Viscount Melbourne, vol.

hoy zAnrYBOUwnRE AOL D

separate establishment “above stairs ” and “out of doors” for the queen consort. She has a lord chamberlain’s department and a department of the master of the horse of her own, and all the ladies of the court from the mistress of the robes to the maids of honour are in her service. At the commencement of the reign of Queen Victoria the two establishments were combined, and on the whole considerably reduced. Hence the royal house- hold, although it is of course much larger than that of a queen consort would be, is also appreciably smaller than that of a king and queen consort together has been since the reigning family acceded to the throne.!

I. Department of the Lord Steward of the Houschold.—The hall; the kitchen, ewry, and pantry; the wine, beer, and coal cellars ; and the almonry are in the lord steward’s department. The lord steward is the first dignitary of the court, and presides at the Board of Green Cloth, where all the aecounts of the household are examined and passed.? He is always a member of the Govern- ment of the day, a peer, and a privy couneillor. He receives his appointment from the sovereign in person, and bears a white stalf as the emblem and warrant of his authority.? In his department the treasurer and comptroller of the household are the officers next in rank to him. They also sit at the Board of Green Cloth, earry white staves, and belong to the ministry. They are always peers or the sons of pecrs, and privy councillors. But the duties which in theory belong to the lord steward, treasurcr, and comp- troller of the household are in practice performed by the master of the houschold, who is a permanent officer and resides in the palace. It is he who really investigates the accounts and main- tains discipline among the ordinary servants of the royal establish- ment. He is a white-staff officer and a member of the Board of Green Cloth but not of the ministry, and among other things

he presides at the daily dinners of the suite in waiting on the |

sovereign.4 In the lord steward’s department are the secretary and three clerks of the Board of Green Cloth; the coroner and paymaster of the household ; and the officers of the almonry, namely, the hereditary grand almoncr,? the lord high almoner, the sub-alinoner, the groom of the almonry, and the secretary to the lord high almoner.®

Il. Department of the Lord Chamberlain of the Household. —The bedchamber, privy chamber, and presence chamber, the wardrobe, the housekeeper's room, and the guardroom, the metropolitan theatres, and the chapels royal are in the lord chamberlain's depart- ment. The lord chamberlain is the second dignitary of the court, and is always a member of the Government of the day, a peer, and a privy councillor. He carries a white staff, and wears a golden or jewclled key, typical of the key of the palace, which is supposed to be in his charge, as the ensigns of his office. He is responsible for the necessary arrangements connected with state ceremonies, sueh as eoronations aud royal marriages, christenings, and funerals. All invitations to court are sent out in his name by command of the sovercign, and at drawing roonts and levecs he stands next to the sovereign and announces the persons who are approaching the throne. It is also part of his duty to conduct the sovereign to and from his or her earriage.? The vice-ehamberlain of the household is the lord ehaniberlain's assistant and deputy. He also is one of the ministry, a whitc-staff officer, and the bearer of akey; and he is always a peer or the son of a peer as well as a privy councillor.

1 llansard, Parl, Debates, vol. xxxix. pp. 146 sg., 1942 sg.

2 Inthe Statutes of Eltham he is called 'the lord great master," but in the Household Book of Queen Elizabeth 'the lord steward," as before and since. In 31 Hen. VILL. c. 10, "for placing of the lords," he is described as " the grand master or lord steward of the king's most honourable household." The whole business of purveyance and pre-emption was anciently managed by the Board of Green Cloth. Sec under heading ''The counting house of the king's household, Domus Compotus Hospitti Regis," in Coke, Institutes, iv, cap. 19. It is designated "the court of the virge or green eloth 'in 22 Geo. IlI. c. 82, § 5.

3 In the old time the lord steward had three courts besides the board of grecn cloth under him, namely, the lord steward's court, the court of the Marshalscy, and the palace court (Coke, Just, iv. caps. 20 and 21; Reeves, Hist. of the Law of England, vol. ii. pp. 188 and 297; Stephen, Commentaries on the Law of England, vol. iv. p. 222). The lord steward or his deputies formerly administer. d the oaths to the members of the House of Commons, and frequent inconveniences were the consequence (see

Hatsell, Precedents of Proceedings in the House of Commons, London, 1818, vol. ii. pp. 84-91). In certain cases now “the lords with white staves’ are the proper persons to bear communications between the sovereign and the Houses ot Parliament.

4 {nthe case of the master of the household we sce history repeating itself. lie is not named in the Black Book of Edward IV. or in the Statutes of Henry VI1IL,, and is entered as “‘master of the household and clerk of the green cloth” in the Household Book of Quecn Elizabeth. But practically he has superseded the lord steward of the houschold, as the lord steward of the household at one time superseded the lord high steward of England.

5 The marquess of Exeter.

6 In the lord steward’s department the offices of cofferer of the household, treasurer of the chamber, paymaster of pensions, and six clerks of the Board of Green Cloth were abolished by 22 Geo. II]. e. 82.

7 The lord chamberlain of the household at one time discharged some import- ant politieal funetions, which are described by Sir Harris Nicolas (Proceedings of the Privy Council, vol. vi., Preface, p. xxiii).

ot

Wheu there is a king the groom of the stole comes next to the vice-chamberlain in rank and authority. At present, however, the mistress of the robes in some measure occupies the position of the groom of the stole. She is the only lady of the eourt who comes into office aud goes out with the administration, and the duties she performs are merely occasional and formal. She is always a duchess, and attends the queen at all state ceremonies and enter- tainments, but is never in permanent residence at the palace.? On the eontrary the ladies of the bedchamber share the function of personal attendance on the sovereign throughout the year. Of these there are eight, always peeresses, and each is in waiting for about a fortnight or three weeks at a time. But the women of the bedchamber, of whom there are also eight, appear only at court ceremonies and entertainments according to a roster annually issued under the authority of the lord chamberlain. They are usually the daughters of peers or the wives of the sons of peers, and in the

old time, like the mistress of the robes and the ladies of the bedchamber, habitually assisted the queen at her daily toilette. But this has long ceased to be done by any of them. The maids of honour, whose situations are by no means sinecures, are like- wise eight in number and have the same terms of waiting as the ladies of the bedechamber. They are commonly if not always the daughters or granddaughters of peers, and when they have no superior title and precedence by birth are called “ honourable” and placed next after the daughters of barons. The queen as a special mark of her favour nominates ‘‘extra” ladies and women of the bed-chamber and maids of honour. But their position is altogether honorary and involves no charge on the civil list. There arc cight lords and eight grooms, who are properly described as “of the bed- chamber ” or “in waiting,” according as the reigning sovereign is a king or a queen, and whose terms of attendance are of similar duration to those of the ladies of the bedchamber and the maids of honour. Oceasionally ‘‘extra” lords and grooms in waiting are nominated by the quecn, who, however, are unpaid and have no regular duties. The master, assistant master, and marshal of the ceremonies are the officers whose special function it is to enforce the observance of the etiquette of the court. The reception of foreign potentates and ambassadors is under their particular care, and they assist in the ordering of all entertainments and festivities at the palace.® The gentleman usher of the black rod—the black rod which he carrics being the ensign of his office—is the principal usher of the court and kingdom. He is one of the original functionaries of the order of the Garter, and is in constant attendance on the House of Lords, from whom, either personally or by his deputy the yeoman usher of the black rod, it is part of his duty to carry messages and summonses to the House of Commons. The gentlemen ushers of the privy chamber and the gentlemen ushers daily waiters, of whom there are four eaeh, and the gentlemen ushers quarterly waiters and the sergeants-at- aris, of whom there are eight each, are in waiting only at drawing rooms and levees and state balls and concerts. But of the sovereign’s sergeants-at-arms there are two others to whom special duties are assigned, the one attending the speaker in the House of Commons, and the other attending the lord chancellor in the House of Lords, carrying their maces and executing their orders. The ycomen of the guard date from the reign of Henry VIL, and the gentlemen-at-arms from the reign of Henry VIII. The captain of each corps is always a member of the ministry and a peer. Besides the captains, the former, now

called the queen’s bodyguard, eonsists of a lieutenant, ensign, clerk of the cheque and adjutant, four exons, and a hundred yeomen; and the latter, onee ealled the gentlemen pensioners, consists of a lieutenant, standard-bearer, elerk of the cheque and adjutant, a sub-officer, and forty gentlemen. The comptroller and examiner of accounts, the licenser of plays, the dean and subdean of the ehapel royal, the clerk of the closet, the groom of the robes, the pages of the backstairs, of the chamber, and of the presence, the poet laureate, the royal physicians and surgeons, chaplains, painters and sculptors, librarians and musicians, &e., are all under the superiutendence of the lord chamberlain of the household.”

III. Department of the Master of the Horsc.—The stables and coachhouses, the stud, mews, and kennels, are in the master of the horse’s department. The master of the horse is the third

8 In the reign of Queen Anne, Sarah duchess of Marlborough from 1704, and Elizabeth duchess of Somerset from 1710, held the combined offiecs of mistress of the robes and groom of the stole.

9 Since the great ‘“‘bcdchamber question” of 1839 the settled practice has been for all the ladies of the court except the mistress of the robcs to receive and continue in their appointments independently of the political connexions of their husbands, fathers, and brothers (see Mr Gladstone’s Gleanings of Past Years, vol. i. p. 40; and Torrens’s Memoirs of Lord Melbourne, vol. ii. p. 304).

10 The office of master of the eeremonies was created by James{. The master of the ceremonies wears a medal attached to a gold chain round his neck, on one side being an emblem of peace with the motto ‘“¢ Beati pacifici,”’ and on the other an emblem of war with the motto ‘Dien ct mon droit” (see Finetti Philoxensis, by Sir John Finett, master of the ceremonies to James I. and Charles I., 1656; and D’lsraeli’s Curtosities of Literature, 10th ed., p. 242 sq.).

il See May, Parliamentary Practice, pp. 236, 244. ,

12 The offices of master of the great wardrobe and master of the jewel house in the lord chamberlain’s department were abolished by 22 Geo. Iii.

e. 82.

08

dignitary of the court, and is always a member of the Govern- meut of the day, a peer, and a privy eouncillor. All matters connected with the horses and hounds of the sovereign are within his jurisdiction. The master of the buekhounds, who is also one of the ministry, ranks next to him, and it is his duty to attend the royal hunt and to head the procession of royal equipages on the racecourse at Ascot, where he presents himself on horseback in a green and gold uniform wearing the couples of a hound as the badge of his office. The hereditary grand falconer! is also sub- ordinated to the master of the horse. But the practical manage- ment of the royal stables and stud in fact devolves on the chief or crown equerry, formerly called the gentleman of the horse, who is hever in personal attendance on the sovereign, and whose appoint- mient is permanent. The clerk marshal has the supervision of the aceounts of the department before they are submitted to the Board of Green Cloth, and is in waiting on the sovereign on state oceasions only. LExelusive of the crown equerry there are seven regular equerries, besides extra and honorary equerries, one of whom is always in attendance the royal earriage. They are always officers of the army, and each of them is ‘fon duty” for about the same time as the lords and grooms in waiting. There are also three pages of honour in the naster of the horse’s department, who must not be confounded with the pages of various kinds who are in the department of the lord chamberlain. They are youths aged from twelve to sixteen, selected by the sovereign in person, to attend on her at state ceremonies, when two of them arrayed in an antique costume assist the groom of the robes in carrying the royal train,

It remains to be said that to the three ancient departments of

the royal household which we have already noticed two others have been added in comparatively recent times, The departments of the private secretary and the keeper of the privy purse to the sovereign, which are for the present combined, originated no longer ago than the earlier part of the current century. Very great doubts were at one time entertained as to whether such an office as that of private secretary to the sovereign could constitntionally exist, and the privy purse itself was unknown until after the

passing of Burke’s Act of 1782. As at present organized these branches of the royal household consist of the private secretary and keeper of the privy purse, two assistant private secretaries and keepers of the privy purse, and a secretary and two clerks of the privy purse. By the statute which settled the civil list at the beginning of the current reign (1 & 2 Vict. c 2) the privy purse was fixed at £60,000 a year, and the salaries, allowances, and other expenses of the royal house- hold were fixed at £303,760 a year. (F. DR.)

ROYAL SOCIETY, THE, or, more fully, The Royal Society of London for Improving Natural Knowledge, is an association of men interested in the advancement of mathematical and physical science. tific society in Great Britain, and Europe.

The Royal Society is usually considered to have been founded in the year 1660, but a nucleus had in fact been in existence for some years before that date. Wallis informs us that as early as the year 1645 weekly meetings were held of “divers worthy persons, inquisitive into natural philosophy, and other parts of human learning, and particularly of what hath been called the New Philo- sophy or Experimental Philosophy,” and there can be little doubt that this gathering of philosophers is identical with the “ Invisible College” of which Boyle speaks in sundry letters written in 1646 and 1647. ‘These weekly meet- ings, according to Wallis, were first suggested by Theodore Haak, “a German of the Palatinate then resident in London,” and they were held sometimes in Dr Goddard’s lodgings in Wood Street, sometimes at the Bull-Head Tavern in Cheapside, but more often at Gresham College.

On November 28, 1660, the first journal book of the society was opened with a “ memorandum,” from which the following is an extract :—“ Memorandum that Novemb. 28. 1660, These persons following, according to the usuall custom of most of them, mett together at Gresham Colledge to heare Mr Wren’s lecture, viz., The Lord Brouncker, Mr Boyle, Mr Bruce, Sir Robert Moray, Sir Paul Neile, Dr Wilkins, Dr Goddard, Dr Petty, Mr Ball, Mr Rooke, Mr Wren, Mr Hill. And after the lecture was ended, they did, according to the usuall manner withdrawe for mutual]

one of the oldest in

1 The duke of St Albans.

on the sovereign and rides at the side of

It is the oldest scien-

ROY-—-ROY

converse. Where amongst other matters that were dis- coursed of, something was offered about a designe of founding a Colledge for the promoting of Physico-Mathe- maticall Experimentall Learning.” It was agreed at this meeting that the company should continue to assemble on Wednesdays at 3 o’clock; an admission fee of ten shillings with a subscription of one shilling a week was instituted : Dr Wilkins was appointed chairman ; and a list of forty-one persons judged likely and fit to join the design was drawn up. On the following Wednesday Sir Robert Moray brought word that the king (Charles II.) approved the design of the meetings; a form of obligation was framcd, and was signed by all the persons enumerated in the memorandum of November 28, and by seventy-three others. On December 12 another meeting was held at which fifty-five was fixed as the number of the society,—persons of the degree of baron, fellows of the College of Physicians, and public professors of mathematics, physic, and natural

philosophy of both universities being supernumeraries.

Gresham College was now appointed to be the regular meeting-place of the society. Sir Robert Moray was chosen president (March 6, 1661), and continued in that office until the incorporation of the society, when he was suc- ceeded by Lord Brouncker. In October 1661 the king offered to be entered one of the society, and next year the society was incorporated under the name of “The Royal Society,” the charter of incorporation passing the great seal on the 15th July 1662, to be niodified, however, by a second charter in the following year. The council of the Royal Society met for the first time on May 13, 1663, when resolutions were passed that debate concerning those to be admitted should be secret, and that fellows should pay ls. a week to defray expenses.

At this early stage of the society's history one main part of their labours was the "correspondence" which was actively maintained with Continental philosophers, and it was from this that the Philosophical Transactions (a publication now of world-wide celebrity) took its rise. At first the Transactions was entirely the work of the secretary, except that it was ordered (March 1, 1664-5) "that the tract be licensed by the Council of the Society, being first reviewed by some of the members of the same." The first number, consisting of sixteen quarto pages, appeared on Monday 6th March 1664—5. In 1750 four hundred and ninety-six numbers or forty-six volumes had been published by the secretaries. After this date the work was issued under the superintendence of a committee, and the division into numbers disappeared. At present (1885) one hundred and seventy-five volumes have been completed.

Another matter to which the society turned their atten- tion was the formation of a museum, the nucleus being ''the collection of rarities formerly belonging to Mr Hubbard," which, by a resolution of council passed February 21, 1666, was purchased for the sum of £100. This museum, at one time the most famous in London, was presented to the trustees of the British Museum in 1781, upon the removal of the society to Somerset House.

After the Great Fire of London in September 1666 the apartments of the Royal Society in Gresham College were required for the use of the city authorities, and the society were therefore invited by Henry Howard of Norfolk to meet in Arundel House. At the same time he presented them with the library purchased by his grandfather Thomas, earl of Arundel, and thus the foundation was laid of the magnificent collection of scientific works, pro- bably not far short of 45,000 volumes, which the society at the present time possesses. Of the Arundel MSS. the bulk was sold to the trustees of the British Museum in 1830 for the sum of £3559, the proceeds being devoted

S

ho Y°xeL

to the purchase of scientific books. These MSS. are still kept in the museum as a separate collection.

Under date December 21, 1671, the journal-book records that “the lord bishop of Sarum proposed for candidate Mr Isaac Newton, professor of the mathematicks at Cam- bridge.” Newton was elected a fellow January 11, 1671-2, and in 1703 he was appointed president, a post which he held till his death in 1727. During his pre- sidency the society moved to Crane Court, their first meeting in the new quarters being held November 8, 1710. Inthe same year they were appointed visitors and directors of the Royal Observatory at Greenwich, a func- tion which they ccntinued to perform until the accession of William IV., when by the new warrant then issued the president and six of the fellows of the Royal Astrono- mical Society were added to the list of visitors.

In 1780, under the presidency of Sir Joseph Banks, the Royal Society removed from Crane Court to the apart- ments assigned to them by the Government in the new Somerset House, where they remained until they removed to Burlington House in 1857. The policy of Sir Joseph Banks was to render the fellowship more difficult of attainment than it had been, and the measures which he took for this purpose, combined with other circum- stances, led to the rise of a faction headed by Dr Horsley. Throughout the years 1783 and 1784 feeling ran exceed- ingly high, but in the end the president was supported by the majority of the society. An account of the contro- versy will be found in a tract entitled An Authentic Narra- tive of the Dissensions and Debates tn the Royal Soctety. In connexion with this policy of Sir Joseph Banks may be mentioned a further step in the same direction taken in the year 1847, when the number of candidates recom- mended for election by the council was limited to fifteen, and the election was made annual. Concurrently, how- ever, with this gradual narrowing of the Royal Society’s boundaries was the successive establishment of other scientific bodies. The founding of the Linnean Society in 1788 under the auspices of several fellows of the Royal Society was the first instance of the establishment of a distinct scientific association under royal charter. The Geological Society followed in 1807, and the Royal Astronomical Society in 1820. The Chemical, the Royal Geographical, and the Entomological are the remaining chartered scientific societies existing in London at the present

time. ‘The Royal Society continues, however, to hold the foremost place among the scientific bodies of England, not only from the number of eminent men in- cluded in its fellowship, but also from its close official con- nexion with the Government.

The following will serve as some indication of the variety and importance of the scientific matters upon which they have been consulted by or have memorialized the Government during the last seventy years :—1816, standard measures of length ; 1817, expedition in search of North-West Passage ; 1822, use of coal-tar in vessels of war; best manner of measuring tonnage of ships; 1823, eorrosion of copper sheathing by sea-water ; Babbage’s cal- culating-machine ; lightning-conductors for vessels of war ; 1825, supervision of gas-works ; 1826, Parry’s North Polar expedition ; 1832, tidal observations ; 1835, instruments and tables for testing the strength of spirits; 1839, Antarctic expedition ; magnetic observatories in the colonies ; 1845, Franklin’s Arctic expedition ; 1849-55, Government grant for scientific research ; 1862, the great Melbourne telescope ; 1865, pendulum observations in India ; 1866, reorganization of the meteorological department ; 1868, deep sea research ; 1872, “Challenger” expedition ; 1874, Arctic expedi- tion; 1875, eclipse expedition; 1876, Vivisection Bill; 1877, transit of Venus expedition; 1879, prevention of accidents in mines; 1881, pendulum observations; 1882, transit of Venus; cruise of the “Triton” in Faroe Channel ; 1883, borings in delta of Nile; 1884, Bureau des Poids et Mesures ; prime meridian eonfer- ence, &c. One of the most important duties which the Royal Society performs on behalf of the Government is the administra-

tion of the annual grant of £4000 for the promotion of scientific research. This grant originated in a proposal by Lord John

Russell in 1849 that at the close of the year the president and council should point out to the first lord of the treasury a limited number of persons to whom the grant of a reward or of a sum to defray tho eost of experiments might be of essential service. This grant of £1000 afterwards became

annual, and was continued until 1876. In that year an additional sum of £4000 for similar pur- poses was granted, and the two funds of £1000 and £4000 were administered concurrently until 1881, in which year the two were combined in a single annual grant of £4000 under new regulations. One of the most useful of the society's undertakings of late years is the great catalogue of scientific papers, —an index, in eight quarto volumes, under authors' names, of all the memoirs of importance in the ehief English and foreign scientific serials from the year 1800 to the year 1873. 'The work was prepared under the direc- tion and at the expense of the Royal Society, and was printed by H. M. Stationery Office.

'A statement of the trust funds administered by the Royal Society will be found in their published Procecdings under date November 30th of each year, and the origin and history of these funds will be found in Weld's History of the Royal Society, and in the late William Spottiswoode's '' Anniversary Address for 1874" (Proc. Roy. Soc, xxiii. p. 49). The income of the society is derived from the annual contributions and composition fees of the fellows, from rents, and from interest on various investments. The bpalance-sheet and an account of the estates and property are pub- lished in the Proceedings at each anniversary. Four medals (a Copley, two Royal, and a Davy) are awarded by the society every year, and the Rumford medal in alternate years. The first of these originated ina bequest by Sir Godfrey Soe (1709), and is awarded 'to the living author of such philosophical research, either pub- lished or communicated to the society, as may appear to the council to be deserving of that honour"; the author may be an Englishman or a foreigner. The Rumford medal originated in a gift from Count Rumford in 1796 of £1000 8 per eent. consols, for the most important discoveries in heat or light made during the preceding two years. The Royal medals were instituted by George IV., and are awarded annually for the two most important contributions to science published in the British dominions not more than ten ycars nor less than one year from the date of the award. The Davy medal was founded by the will of Dr John Davy, F.R.S., the brother of Sir Humphry Davy, and is given annually for the most important discovery in chemistry made in Europe or Anglo-America. 'An enumeration of the awards of each of the medals will be found at the end of the list of fellows which is published annually by the society.

Under the existing statutes of the Royal Society every candidate for election must be recommended by a certificate in writing signed by six or more fellows, of whom three at least must sign from personal knowledge. From the candidates so recommended the council annually select fifteen by ballot, and on the first Thursday in June the namies so selected are submitted to the society in the form of a printed balloting-sheet with space left for erasure and substitution of names. Princes of the blood may, however, be proposed at any ordinary meeting and put to the vote on the same day, and any member of H. M. privy council may be balloted for on the third ordinary meeting from the day upon which his certificate is read. Foreign members, not exceeding fifty, may be selected by the council from among men of the greatest scientifie eminence, and proposed to the society for election. Every member of the privileged class is liable to an admission fee of £10 and an annual payment of £4; other fellows pay £3 per annum. The composition for annual payments is £60.

The anniversary meeting for the election of the council and oftieers is held on St Andrew's Day. 'The council for the ensuing year, out of which are chosen the president, treasurer, principal secretaries, and foreign secretary, must consist of eleven members of the existing council and ten fellows who are not members of the existing council. These are nominated by the president and council previously to the anniversary meeting. The session of the society is from November to June ; the ordinary meetings are held every Thursday during the session, at 4.30 P.M. The selection for publication from the papers read before the society is made by the ''Committee of Papers," which consists of the members of the council for the time being aided by referees. The papers so selected are published either in the Philosophical Transactions (4to) or the Proceedings of the Royal Society (8vo), and one copy of each of these publications is presented gratis to every fellow of the society and to the ehief scientific societies throughout the world.

The making and repealing of laws is vested in the council, and in every case the question must be put to the vote on two several days of their meeting.

The text of the charters of the Royal Society is given in the appendix to Weld's History of the Royal Society, and in the same work will be found lists of the pre- gidents, treasurers, secretaries, and assistant-secretaries

from the foundation to the year 1845. Appendix IV. to Thomson’s History of the Royal Society (1812)

gives a chronological list of all the fellows down to the year 1812 with dates of birth, election, admission, and death, and an alphabetical index to the same,

40

Other histories are Bishop Sprat’s (1667), whieh consists largely of a defence of the society against the attacks of @ priori philosophers, and Dr Birch’s (1756), which treats mainly of the society’s scientifie work. al

ROYAN, a town of France, in the department of Charente Inférieure, is situated on the right bank of the Gironde, where it joins the ocean; a branch line of 54 miles connects it with Saujon, on the Seudre Railway, which joins the Bordeaux-Nantes line at Pons. Royan, which in 1881 had a population of only 4573 (5445 asa commune), is one of the most frequented bathing resorts on the Atlantic seaboard, the visitors numbering about 80,000 annually. Royan owes this popularity to its charming neighbourhood, pleasantly watered by brooks and shaded by fine trees down to the steep rocky shore. The coast is divided into a number of small bays or “‘conches,” forming so many distinct beaches: to the east of the town is the “Grande Conche”; to the south the “Conche de Foncillon,” separated from the first-named by a quay which forms a fine terraced esplanade ; beyond the fort of Royan, which protects the entrance of the river, follow in succession the conches “du Chay” and “de Grand Robinson,” and the most fashionable of all, that of Pontaillac. In the Avenue de Pontaillac stand a large new casino, a theatre, and a hydropathic establishment. Royan also has a race-course and a museum of natural history.

Royan, whose inhabitants were Protestants, had to sustain in 1622 an eight days’ siege by the troops of Louis XIII. As late as the end of last century it was but a “ bourg” of about one thousand inhabitants, noticeable only for its priory, where Brantéme wrote a portion of his Chronicles. The prosperity of the place dates from the Restoration, when steamboat communication was established with Bordeaux. The question of making of Royan the seaport for Bordeaux has often been mooted, but as yet the harbour is still

a merely tidal one and is dry at low water. The sardine, here known by the name of royan, is caught by the local fishermen.

ROYER-COLLARD, Prerre Pavt (1763-1 845), French statesman and philosopher, was born on the 21st June 1763 at Sompuis near Vitry-le-Francais. At an early age he became a member of the bar, and pleaded several times in the old parlement of Paris. On the breaking out of the Revolution he took the popular side, and was elected to a seat in the municipal council of Paris. He was secretary to this body from 1790 to 1792, but separated himself from the later excesses of the Revolution. During the Reign of Terror he lived in retirement at Sompuis, and after vainly endeavouring in 1797, as member of the Council of Five Hundred, to bring about the restoration of the monarchy, he retired altogether from publie life till the fall of Napoleon in 1814. During the interval he devoted himself mainly to philosophical studies. Animated by a profound distrust of the negative sensationalism and materialism which had characterized the French philo- sophy of the 18th century, he found a master whom he could follow in Thomas Reid. The study of Reid's Inquiry, which he picked up on a book-stall, first gave a definite form and direction to his thinking. Royer-Collard may be said to have introduced Reid to France, and the works of the Scottish philosopher were translated not long afterwards by his pupil Jouffroy. In 1810 Royer-Collard became professor of philosophy, and taught with success in Paris, till the Restoration recalled him to political life. In 1815 he was elected to represent his native department of the Marne in the chamber of deputies; he was also made councillor of state and appointed president of the commission of public instruction. A royalist of moderate views, he helped to restrain the extreme members of his own party, opposing alike the reactionary laws against the press and the proposal to give the clergy control of public instruction. In 1827 he was so popular as to be elected in seven departments, and shortly afterwards he became a member of the French Academy ; in the following year he

was nade president of the chamber. In this capacity he had the unpleasant duty of presenting to Charles X. the address in which the majority of the

chamber refused their further support to the Government (March 1830). Royer-Collard retained his position as deputy under the new régime of Louis Philippe, but no longer took a pro- minent part in public affairs. In 1842 he withdrew com- pletely from active life and spent most of his remaining time at his country seat of Chateauvieux near Sainte. Aignan. He died there on the 2d September 1845,

As a philosopher, Royer-Collard is not distinguished either by originality or profundity ; but he possesses a certain importance as having transplanted to France the philosophy of common sense. He has himself left no philosophical writings except some frag- ments which appear in Jouffroy's edition of Reid ; but by his example and teaching he founded the school which has been variously named the Scoto-French, the eclectic, the spiritualistic, or the psychological. Maine de Biran, Cousin to some extent, and Jouffroy in a closer way, as well as Janet and others at the present day, are the chief representatives of the school. The name "*Spiritualisme," which is perhaps the commonest designation, expresses the tenacity with which, in opposition to the dominant sensationalistic materialism of France, it upholds the doctrine of a spiritual Ego as a fact of consciousness. The title psychological, however, would be preferred by the philosophers themselves as describing their method, and the basis on which they claim to have erected their philosophy. Philosophy tends for them, as for Reid and Stewart, to become a classification of isolated facts of consciousness.

Several biographies of Royer-Collard have been published. Barante, Vie politique de M. Royer-Collard, ses discours, et ses écrits, 1861, is the fullest. Others are by Philippe and Lacombe. In addition May be mentioned Mémoires sur Royer-Collard, by his nephew Genty de Bussy.

ROYLE, Joun Forzrs (1800-1858), a distinguished botanist and teacher of materia medica. His reputation is especially founded upon the results of personal in vesti- gations in the Himalaya Mountains and in other parts of Hindustan. He was born in Cawnpore in 1800. His medical education was obtained in London, and on its completion he entered the service of the East India Com- pany, and was sent to India in 1822 in the grade of assistant surgeon. In this service he devoted himself to studying in the field the botany and geology of the regions within his reach, and made large

collections among the Himalaya Mountains. He also made special investiga- tions of the medical properties of the plants of Hindustan and of the history of their uses among the native races. The results of these investigations appeared in 1837 in the form of a valuable work On the Antiquity of Hindoo Medicine. For nearly ten years he held the post of super- intendent of the East India Company's botanic garden in the Himalayas at Saharanpur. He returned to London on furlough in 1831, and in 1837 he was appointed to the professorship of materia medica in King's College, London, a position which he held till 1856. From 1838 onwards he conducted a special department of correspondence, relating to vegetable products, at the East India House, and at the time of his death he had just completed there the forma- tion and arrangement of an extensive and valuable museum of technical products from the East Indies. In 1851 he superintended the Indian department of the Great Ex- hibition. He died at Acton near London on 2d January

1858.

The work on which his reputation chiefly rests is the [Zustrations of the Botany and other branehes of Natural History of the Himalaya Mountains, and of the Flora of Cashmere, in 2 vols, 4to, begun in 1839. It contains much information on the natural products of India, especially on such as are useful in the arts or as drugs. In addition to this work, however, he wrote several others of repute, viz., An Essay on the Produetive Resources of India (1840), A Manual af Materia Medica (1845), An Essay on the Cultivation of Cotton . (1857), and on The Cordage Plants and Vegetable Fibres of India (1855). He also published a number of papers, between 1832 and 1855, upon subjects akin to those of his larger works, in scientific journals, for the most part published in India. Among these papers are included three on geological subjects. A list of the whole will be found in the Royal Society's Catalogue of Scientific Papers.

RSH—RUB

whose aspect of energy is well known through Van Dyck's beautiful etching, was the highly esteemed master of num- erous painters,—among them Van Balen, Sebastian Vrancx, and Jordaens, later his son-in-law. His pictures are almost exclusively to be found in Antwerp churches.

RSHEFF. See R2vErFF.

RUBBER. See Inpia-RUBBER.

RUBENS, Perer Paut (1577-1640), the most eminent representative of Flemish art, and one of the greatest painters of any school, was born very probably at Siegen, in Westphalia, on the 29th of June 1577. Till some thirty years ago Cologne might still claim the honour of having been the master's birthplace ; the Rhenish city is mentioned by Rubens himself, in one of his letters, as closely connected with his childhood, and through his father's epitaph we learn that for more than nineteen years Cologne was the family's place of refuge amid the disturbances prevailing in the Low Countries. This, however, has been proved to be but part of the truth, and, if Rubens's parents certainly during several years did live at Cologne, they also resided elsewhere, and that for reasons so strong that both wife and husband might well desire to see them for ever buried in secrecy.

Although of humble descent,—his father was a druggist, John Rubens was a man of learning. He had studied Jaw at home and abroad, and became councillor and alder- man in his native town (1562). A Catholic by birth, it was not long before he became, like many of his countrymen, a zealous upholder of the Reformation, and we even find him spoken of by a contemporary as "le plus docte Calviniste qui fust pour lors au Bas Pays." After the plundering of the Antwerp churches in 1566, the magistrates were called upon for a justification. While openly they declared themselves devoted sons of the church, a list of the followers of the Reformed creed, headed by the name of Anthony Van Stralen, the burgomaster, got into the hands of the duke of Alva. This was a sentence of death for the magistrates, and John Rubens lost no time in quitting Spanish soil, ultimately settling at Cologne (October 1568), with his wife and four children.

In his new residence he became legal adviser to Anne of Saxony, the second wife of the prince of Orange, William the Silent. Before long it was discovered that their relations were not purely of a business kind. Thrown into the dungeons of Dillenburg, Rubens lingered there for many months, his wife, Maria Pypelincx, never relaxing her endeavours to get the undutiful husband restored to freedom. 'Two years elapsed before the prisoner was released, and then only to be confined to the small town of

Siegen. Here he lived with his family, from 1573 to 1578, and here most probably Maria Pypelinex gave birth to Philip, afterwards town-clerk of Antwerp, and Peter Paul.

Rubens went to Antwerp with his mother when he was scarcely ten years of age, and made good progress in his classical studies, which he had begun with the Jesuits at Cologne. An excellent Latin scholar, he was also pro- ficient in French, Italian, English, German, and Dutch. Part of his boyhood he spent as a page in the household of the countess of Lalaing, in Brussels; but, tradition adds, and we may well believe, the youth's disposition was such as to induce his mother to allow him to follow his proper vocation, choosing as his master Tobias Verhaecht, who was in some way connected with the family. Not the slightest trace of this first master's influence can be detected in Rubens's works. Not so with Adam Van Noort, to whom the young man was next apprenticed. Van Noort,

richest decoration. palace, the Louvre, and the royal galleries of England owe

4]

Rubens remained with Van Noort for the usual period

of four years, thereafter studying under Otto Voenius or Van Veen, a gentleman by birth, a most distinguished Latin scholar, and a painter of very high repute. a native of Leyden, and only recently settled in Antwerp, but the town gave him numerous commissions of import- ance. Though Rubens never adopted his style of painting, the tastes of master and pupil had much in common, and some pictures by Otto Voenius can be pointed out as having inspired Rubens at a more advanced period. For example, the Magdalene anointing Christ's Feet, painted for the

He was

cathedral at Malaga, and now at the Hermitage in st

Petersburg, closely resembles in composition the very im- portant work of Otto Veenius in the church at Bergues near Dunkirk.

In 1598, Adam Van Noort acting as dean of the Ant- werp guild of painters, Rubens was officially recognized as “ master,”—that is, was allowed to work independently and receive pupils) We have no means of forming an idea of his style at this early period, two years before his

journey to Italy, but even the somewhat later works found

at Genoa, Mantua, and Rome differ considerably from what may be termed the Rubenesque.

From 1600 to the latter part of 1608 Rubens belonged to the household of Vincenzo Gonzaga, duke of Mantua. Few princes in Italy surpassed the Gonzagas in splendour. For them Mantegna, Giulio Romano, Titian, and Prima- ticcio had produced some of their most admired works, and their now deserted palaces still bear traces of the To the Mantuan collection the Pitti

some of their noblest specimens of Italian art. How Rubens came to be engaged at Mantua has not been explained. The duke, it is known, spent some time at Venice in July 1600, and is supposed there to have met his future painter, but it is also to be remembered that another Fleming, Francis Pourbus the younger, was at the time employed by him in taking the likeness of the prettiest women of the day; and Rubens, much against his will, was also, at first, it seems, intrusted with a similar task. The influence of the master’s stay at Mantua was of extreme importance, and cannot be too constantly kept in view in the study of his later works.

Sent to Rome in 1601, to take copies from Raphael for his master, he was also commissioned to paint several pictures for the church of Santa Croce, by the archduke ‘Albert of Austria, sovereign of the Spanish Netherlands, and once, when he was a cardinal, the titular of that see. A copy of Mercury and Psyche after Raphael is preserved in the museum at Pesth. The religious paintings—the Invention of the Cross, the Crowning with Thorns, and the Crucifixion—are to be found in the hospital at Grasse in Provence.

At the beginning of 1603 “The Fleming,” as he was termed at Mantua, was sent to Spain with a variety of presents for Philip III. and his minister the

duke of Lerma, and thus had opportunity to spend a whole year at Madrid and become acquainted with some of Titian's masterpieces. Two of his own works, known to belong to the same period, are in the Madrid Gallery, Heraclitus and Democritus, Of Rubens's abilities so far back as 1604 we get a more complete idea from an immense picture now in the Antwerp Gallery, the Baptism of Our Lord, originally painted for the Jesuits at Mantua. Here it may be seen to what degree Italian surroundings had

influenced the painter of Vincenzo Gonzaga. Vigorous to the extreme in design, he reminds us of Michelangelo as much as any of the degenerate masters of the Roman school, while in decorative skill he seems to be descended from Titian and in colouring from Giulio Romano. Equally with this picture the Transfiguration, now in the museum at Nancy, and the portraits of Vincenzo and his consort, kneeling before the Trinity, in the library at Mantua, claim a large share of attention, apart from the interest awakened by the name of their author.

Two years later we meet a very large altarpiece of the Circumcision at St Ambrogio at Genoa, the Virgin in a glory of Angels, and two groups of Saints, painted on the wall, at both sides of the high altar in the church of Santa Maria in Valicella, in Rome. Undoubtedly these works give an impression of grandeur and effectiveness, but, in the immediate vicinity of the finest productions of the Italian school, they rank higher as documentary evi- dence than in intrinsic value, and remind us of a saying of Baglione, who was acquainted with Rubens in Italy, '"'Apprese egli buon gusto, e diede in una maniera buona Italiana."

While employed at Rome in 1608, Rubens received most alarming news as to the state of his mother's health. The duke of Gonzaga was then absent from Italy, but the dutiful son, without awaiting his return, at once set out for the Netherlands, though with the full intention of shortly resuming his post at court, as we gather from a letter to Annibale Chieppio, the Mantuan minister. When he arrived in Antwerp, Maria Pypelincx was no more. However strong his wish might now be to return to Italy, his purpose was

overruled by the express desire of his sovereigns, Albert and Isabella, to see him take up @ permanent residence in the Belgian provinces. Scarcely a year before, the archduke had unsuccessfully attempted to free the painter from his engagement at Mantua, and he could not fail to take advantage of the opportunity now presented for the fulfilment of his wishes. On August 3, 1609, Rubens was named painter in ordinary to their High- nesses, with a salary of 500 livres, and “the rights, honours, privileges, exemptions,” &c., belonging to persons of the royal’ household, not to speak of the gift of a gold chain. Not least in importance for the painter was his complete exemption from all the regulations of the guild of St Luke, entitling him to engage any scholars or fellow- workers, without being obliged to have them enrolled,—a favour, it must be added, which has been the source of considerable trouble to the historians of Flemish art.

Although so recently returned to his native land, Rubens seems to have been, with one accord, accepted by his countrymen as the head of their school, and the municipality was foremost in giving him the means of proving his acquirements. The first in date among the numerous repetitions of the Adoration of the Magi is a picture in the Madrid Gallery, measuring 12 feet by 17, and containing no fewer than eight-and-twenty life size figures, many in gorgeous attire, warriors in steel armour, horsemen, slaves, camels, &c. This picture, painted in Antwerp, at the town’s expense in 1609, had scarcely re- mained three years in the town-hall when it went to Spain as a present to Don Rodrigo Calderon, count of Oliva. The painter has represented himself among the horscmen, bareheaded, and wearing his gold chain. Cumberland speaks of this picture as the standard work of its author, and certainly it was well calculated to bring Rubens to the front rank in his profession. From a letter written in May 1611 we know that more than a hundred young men were desirous to become his pupils, and that many had, “for several years,” been waiting with other masters, until he could admit them to his studio. It was thus from the

beginning regarded as a great favour to be admitted pupil of Rubens.

Apart from the success of his works, another powerful motive had helped to detain the master in Antwerp,—his marriage with Isabella Brant (October

1609). Many pictures have made us familiar with the graceful young woman who was for seventeen years to share the master's destinies. We meet her at The Hague, St Petersburg, Florence, at Grosvenor House, but more especially at Munich, where Rubens and his wife are depicted at full length on the same canvass. "His wife is very hand- some," observes Sir Joshua Reynolds, '"'and has an agree- able countenance ;" but the picture, he adds, "is rather hard in manner." This, it must be noted, is the case with all those pictures known to have immediately followed Rubens's return, when he was still dependent on the assistance of painters trained by others than him- self. Even in the Raising of the Cross, now in the Antwerp cathedral, and painted for the church of St Walburg in 1610, the dryness in outline is very striking.

According to the taste still at that time prevailing, the picture is tripartite, but the wings only serve to develop the central composition, and add to the general effect. In Witdoeck's beautiful engraving the partitions even disappear. Thus, from the first, we see Rubens quite determined upon having his own way, and it is recorded that, when he painted the Descent from the Cross, St Christopher, the subject chosen by the Arquebusiers, was altered so as to bring the artistic expressions into better accordance with his views. Although the subject was frequently repeated by the great painter, this first Descent from the Cross has not ceased to be looked upon as his masterpiece. Begun in 1611, the celebrated work was placed in 1614, and certainly no more striking evidence could be given of the rapid growth of the author's abili- ties. Rubens received 2400 florins for this picture.

Although it is chance that has brought the Raising of the Cross and the Descent from the Cross into their present close juxtaposition, it is not improbable that their uniformity in size may have been designed. In many respects, Italian influence remains conspicuous in the Descent. Rubens had seen Ricciarelli's fresco at the Trinita de' Monti, and was also acquainted with the grandiose picture of Baroccio in the cathedral of Perugia, and no one conversant with these works can mistake their influence. But in Rubens strength of personality could not be overpowered by reminiscence; and in type, as well as in colouring, the Descent from the Cross may be termed thoroughly Flemish and Rubenesque. As Waagen justly observes : "the boldness of the composition, the energy in the characters, the striking

attitudes, and the effects of the grouping, together with the glowing vigorous colouring, belong to his later style, whereas a few of the heads, par- ticularly that of the Virgin, display the careful execution of his earlier period. The interior of the wings, on which are painted the Visitation and the Presentation in the Temple, exhibit, on the other hand, a greater resemblance to the conjugal picture already alluded to, owing to a certain repose in action, a more elevated expression of delicacy and feeling in the characters, and a less glowing though still admirable colouring."

Legend, in some way, connects Van Dyck with the Descent from the Cross, and ascribes to the great portrait painter an arm and shoulder of Mary Magdalene, which had been damaged by a pupil's carelessness. Plain truth here, once more, seems to contradict romance. ' Van Dyck was a pupil of Van Balen's in 1609, and most probably remained with him several years before coming to Rubens.

If Sir Dudley Carleton could speak of Antwerp in 1616 as "Magna civitas, magna solitudo," there was no place

nevertheless which could give a wider scope to artistic Spain and the United Provinces were for a time at peace; almost all the churches had been stripped monastic orders were powerful and richly endowed, guilds and corporations eager to show the fervour of their Catholic faith, now that the "monster of

enterprise.

of their adornments ;

heresy " scemed for ever quelled. Here were opportunities without number for painters as well as sculptors and

architects. Gothic churches began to be decorated accord-

ing to the new fashion adopted in Italy. Altars magnified to monuments, sometimes reaching the full height of the vaulted roof, displayed, between

their twisted colunms, pictures of a size hitherto unknown. No master seemed better fitted to be associated with this kind of painting than Rubens, whose works we have already met with in churches newly erected at Rome, Genoa, and Mantua, by the Jesuits, in the gorgeous style which bears their name, and which Rubens commends in the preface to his Palazzi di Genova (Antwerp, 1622). The temple erected by the reverend fathers in Antwerp was almost entirely the painter's work, and if he did not, as we often find asserted, design the front, he certainly was the inspirer of the whole building, which, after all, was but a reminiscence of the churches in Genoa. And the temple of the J esuits in Antwerp remained for a century the only example of its kind in Belgium. Hitherto no Fleming had undertaken to paint ceilings with foreshortened figures, and blend the religious with the decorative art after the style of those buildings which are met with in Italy, and owe their decora- tions to masters like Titian, Veronese, and Tintoretto. No less than forty ceilings were composed by Rubens, and painted under his direction in the space of two years. All were destroyed by fire in 1718. Sketches in water- colour were taken some time before the disaster by De Wit, and from these were made the etchings by Punt which alone enable us to form a judgment of the grandiose under- taking. In the Madrid Gallery we find a general view of the church in all its splendour. The present church of St Charles in Antwerp is, externally, with some alteration,

the building here alluded to. '

Rubens delighted in undertakings of the vastest kind. "The large size of a picture," he writes to W. Trumbull in 1621, "gives us painters more courage to represent our ideas with the utmost freedom and semblance of reality. a I confess myself to be, by a natural instinct, better fitted to execute works of the largest size." The correctness of this appreciation he was very soon called upon to demonstrate most strikingly by a series of twenty- four pictures, illustrating the life of Mary de' Medici, queen-mother of France. The gallery at the Luxembourg Palace, which these paintings once adorned, has long since disappeared, and the complete work is now exhibited in the Louvre. Drawings, it seems, had been asked from Quentin Varin, the French master who incited Poussin to become a painter, but Rubens was ultimately preferred. This preference may in some degree be ascribed to his former connexion with the court at Mantua, Mary de' Medici and the duchess of

Gonzaga being sisters. The story of Mary de’ Medici may be regarded as a poem in painting, and no person conversant with the literature of the time can fail to recognize that strange mixture of the sacred and the mythological in which the most admired authors of the 17th century, beginning with Malherbe, delight. Absolutely speaking, Mrs Jameson may be right in criticizing Rubens’s “ coarse allegories, historical impro- pricties, &c.”; but a man belongs to his time, and uses its language in order to make himself understood. From the cradle to the day of her reconciliation with Louis XL, we follow Mary de’ Medici after the manner in which it was customary in those days to consider personages of

superior rank. The Fates for her have spun the silken and golden thread; Juno watches over her birth and intrusts her to the town of Florence; Minerva, the Graces, and Apollo take charge of her education ; Love exhibits her image to the king, and Neptune conveys her across the seas ; Justice, Health, and Plenty endow her son ; Prudence and Generosity are at her sides during the regency ; and, when she resigns the helm of the state to the prince, Justice, Strength, Religion, and Fidelity hold the oars. The sketches of all these paintings—now in the Munich Gallery—were painted in Antwerp, a numerous staff of distinguished collaborators being intrusted with the final execution. But the master himself spent much time in Paris, retouching the whole work, which was completed within less than four years. On May 138, 1625, Rubens writes from Paris to his friend Peiresc that both the queen and her son are highly satisfied with his paintings, and that Louis XIII. came on purpose to the Luxembourg, “where he never has set foot since the palace was begun sixteen or eighteen years ago.” We also gather from this letter that the picture representing the Felicity of the Regency was painted to replace another, the Departure of the Queen, which had caused some offence. “If I had been let alone,” he says, “the other subjects would have been better accepted by the court, and without scandal or murmur.” ‘And I fear,” he adds, ‘far greater difficulties will be found with the subjects of the next gallery.” Richelieu gave himself some trouble to get this part of the work, intended to represent the life of Henry IV., bestowed upon Cavalier d’Arpina, but did not succeed in his endea- vours. The queen’s exile, however, prevented the under- taking from going beyond

a few sketches, and two or three panels, one of which, the Triumph of Henry IV., now in the Palazzo Pitti, is one of the noblest works of Rubens or of any master. Most undoubtedly the painter here calls to his aid his vivid recollections of the Triumph of Cesar by Mantegna, now at Hampton Court, but in his day adorning the palace at Mantua ; of this he made a copy, inscribed No. 315 in the catalogue of his effects sold in 1640, and now in the National Gallery.

On the 11th of May 1625 Rubens was present at the nuptials of Henrietta Maria at Notre Dame in Paris, when the scaffolding on which he stood gave way, and he tells us he was just able to catch an adjoining tribune.

No painter in Europe could now pretend to equal Rubens either in talent or in renown. Month after month productions of amazing size left the Antwerp studio ; and to those unacquainted with the master's pictures mag- nificent engravings by Vorsterman, Pontius, and others had conveyed singularly striking interpretations. " What- ever work of his I may require," writes Moretus, the cele- brated Antwerp printer, "I have to ask him six months before, so as that he may think of it at leisure, and do the work on Sundays or holidays; no week days of his could I pretend to get under a hundred florins."

Of the numerous creations of his pencil, none, perhaps, will more thoroughby disclose to us his comprehension of religious decorative art than the Assumption of the Virgin at the high altar of the Antwerp cathedral, finished in 1625. It is, of twenty repetitions of this subject, the only example still preserved at the place it was intended by the painter to occupy. In spirit we are here reminded of Titian's Assunta in the cathedral at Verona, but Rubens's proves perhaps a higher conception of the subject. The work is seen a considerable way off, and every outline is bathed in light, so that the Virgin is elevated to dazzling glory with a power of ascension, scarcely, if ever, attained by any master.

Able to rely so greatly on his power as a colourist, Rubens is uot a mere decorator. He penetrates into the

spirit of his subjects more deeply than, at first sight, seems |

consistent with his prodigious facility in execution. The Massacre of the Innocents, in the Munich Gallery, is a composition that can leave no person unmoved,—mothers defending their children with nails and teeth. If Mrs Jameson terms this picture atrocious, it ought to be recol- lected how atrocious is the subject. When St Francis attempts to shelter the universe from the Saviour's wrath (Brussels Gallery), Rubens, drawing his inspiration from a passage of St Germain, "Ostendit mater filio pectus et ubera," recalls to our memory that most dramatic passage of the Jliad when Hecuba, from the walls of Troy, entreats her son Hector to spare his life. The subject is inconsistent with the spirit of Christianity, says Waagen, evidently forgetting that to Catholic eyes nothing could be more impressive than the Virgin's intervention at this supreme moment, when Christ, like another Jupiter, brandishes his thunderbolt against mankind. Rubens was a man of his time; his studies of Italian art in no way led him back to the Quattrocentisti nor the Raffae- leschi; their power was at an end. The influence of Michelangelo, Titian, Tintoretto, more especially Baroccio, Polydoro, and even Parmigiano, is no less visible with him than with those masters who, like Spranger, Chr. Schwartz, and Goltzius, stood high in public estimation immediately before his advent.

In the midst of the rarest activity as a painter, Rubens was now called upon to give proofs of a very different kind of ability. The truce concluded between Spain and the Netherlands in 1609 ended in 1621 ; archduke Albert died the same year. His widow sincerely wished to prolong the arrangement, still hoping to see the United Provinces return to the Spanish dominion, and in her eyes Rubens was the fittest person to bring about this conclusion. The painter's comings and goings, however, did not remain unheeded, for the French ambassador writes from Brussels in 1624,—" Rubens is here to take the likeness of the prince of Poland, by order of the infanta. I am persuaded he will succeed better in this than in his negotiations for the truce." But, if Rubens was to fail in his efforts to bring about an arrangement with the Netherlands, other events enabled him to render great service to the state.

Rubens and Buckingham met in Paris in 1625; a corre- spondence of some importance had been going on between the painter and the Brussels court, and before long it was proposed that he should endeavour to bring about a final arrangement between the crowns of England and Spain. The infanta willingly consented, and King Philip, who much objected to the interference of an artist, gave way on hearing, through his aunt, that the negotiator on the English side, B. Gerbier—a Fleming by birth—was like- Wise a painter. Rubens and Gerbier very soon met in Holland. “Rubens is come hither to Holland, where he now is, and Gerbier in his coinpany, walking from town to town, upon their pretence of pictures,” writes Sir Dudley Carleton to Lord Conway i July 1627, “which may serve him for a few days if he dispatch and be gone ; but yf he entertayne tyme here long, he will infallibly be layd hold of, or sent with disgrace out of the country ad: This I have made known to Rubens least he should meet with a skorne what may in some sort reflect upon others.” Matters, however, went on very well, and Rubens volunteered to go to Spain and lay before the council the result of his negotiations (1628). Nine months were thus spent at Madrid; they rank among the most important in Rubens’s career. He had brought with him eight pictures of various sizes and subjects as presents from the infanta, and he was also commissioned to take several portraits of the king and royal family. An

equestrian picture of Philip IV., destroyed by fire in last century, became the subject of a poem by Lope de Vega, and the description enables us to identify the composition with that of a painting now in the Palazzo Pitti, ascribed to Velazquez.

Through a letter to Peirese we hear of the familiar intercourse kept up between the painter and the king, Philip delighted to see Rubens at work in the studio pre- pared for him in the palace, where he not only left many original pictures, but copied for his own pleasure and pro- fit the best of Titian’s. No less than forty works were thus produced, and, says the author of the Annals of the Artists of Spain, “the unwearied activity of his well-stored mind is exemplified by the fact that amid his many occupations he was seeking in the libraries materials for

an edition of Marcus Aurelius, on which his friend Gaspard

Gevaerts was then engaged." An artistic event of some importance connected with the sojourn in Spain is the meeting of Rubens and Velazquez, to the delight, and we venture to add, advantage of both.

Great as was the king's admiration of Rubens as a painter, it seems to have been scarcely above the value attached to his political services. Far from looking upon

Rubens as a man of inferior calling, unworthy to meddle

with matters of state, he now commissioned the painter to go to London as bearer of his views to Charles I. Giving up his long cherished hope of revisiting Italy on his return from Spain, Rubens, honoured with the title of secretary of the king's privy council in the N etherlands, started at once on his new mission. Although he stopped but four days in Antwerp, he arrived in London just as peace had been concluded with France. In this conjuncture of affairs, it can hardly be doubted that the eminent position of Rubens as a painter greatly contributed to his ultimate success as an envoy. Received by Charles with genuine pleasure, he very soon was able to ingratiate himself so far as to induce the king to pledge his royal word to take part in no undertakings against Spain so long as the negotiations remained unconcluded, and all the subsequent endeavours of France, Venice, and the States found him immovable in this resolution. Although the privy council in Madrid, as well they might, passed several votes of thanks to Rubens, the tardiness of the Spanish court in sending a regular ambassador involved the unfortunate painter in distressing anxieties, and the tone of his dispatches is very bitter. But he speaks with the greatest admiration of England and the English, regretting that he should enly have come to know the country so late. His popularity must have been very great, for on September 23, 1629, the university of Cam- bridge conferred upon him the honorary degree of master of arts, and on February 21, 1630, he was knighted, the king presenting him with the sword used at the ceremony, which is still preserved by the descendants of the artist. When the council at Madrid had to deliberate as to recognition of the title conferred upon Rubens in England, they remembered that Titian had been made a knight by the emperor Charles V., and the matter was settled without difficulty ; but,

the painter’s name having been mentioned as a possible envoy to the British court, Olivares objected that it was quite out of the question to make an ambas- sador of one who lived by the work of his hands. Although, it seems, less actively employed as an artist in England than in Spain, Rubens, besides his sketches for the decoration of the Banqueting House at Whitehall, painted the admirable picture of the Blessings of Peace, now in the National Gallery. There is ‘no reason to doubt, with Smith, that “His Majesty sat to him for his portrait, yet it is not a little remarkable that no notice occurs in any of the royal catalogues, or the writers of the

period, of the existence of such a portrait.” While in England, Rubens very narrowly escaped drowning while soing to Greenwich in a boat. The fact is reported by Lord Dorchester in a letter to Sir Isaac Wake (Sainsbury, exvi.). At the beginning of March the painter’s mission came to a close.

Rubens was now fifty-three years of age; he had been four years a widower, and before the end of the year (December 1630) he entered into a second marriage with the beautiful girl of sixteen, named Helena Fourment, with whom his pictures have made the world so well ac- quainted. More than twenty portraits of her are described by Smith, and she also figures in perhaps twice as many of the master’s creations. Whether Rubens was more powerfully led in the choice of his second wife by her per- sonal beauty or by the strength of a certain resemblance to his feminine ideal is questionable. Anyhow, she was an admirable model, and none of her husband’s works may be more justly termed masterpieces than those in which she is represented (Munich, St Petersburg, Blenheim, Liechtenstein, the Louvre, &c.).

Although the long months of absence could not be termed blanks in Rubens’s artistic career, his return was followed by an almost incredible activity. Inspired more than ever by the glorious works of Titian, he now pro- duced some of his best creations. Brightness in colouring, breadth of touch and pictorial conception, are specially striking in those works we know to have been painted in the latter part of his lifetime. Could anything give a higher degree of Rubens’s genius than, for example, the Feast of Venus, the portrait of Helena Fourment ready to enter the bath, or the St

Ildefonso. This last picture— now, as well as the two others just alluded to, in the Vienna Gallery—was painted for the church of the convent of St Jacques, in Brussels. On the wings are represented the archdukes in royal attire, under the protection of their patron saints. The presence of these figures has led to some mistake regarding the date of the production, but it has been proved beyond doubt, through a document pub- lished by Mr Castan (1884), that the St Ildefonso belongs to the series of works executed after the journeys to Spain and England. Archduke Albert had been dead ten years. ‘The picture was engraved by Witdoeck in 1638.

Isabella died in 1633, and we know that to the end Rubens remained in high favour with her, alike as an artist and as a political agent. The painter was even one of the gentlemen she deputed to meet Mary de’ Medici at the frontier in 1631, after her escape from France.

Spain and the Netherlands went to war again, the king never ceasing to look upon the Dutch as rebels. The sub- ject need not be dwelt upon; suffice it to say that much useless trouble and suspicion came upon the great artist. As to the real nature of his communings with Frederick Henry of Orange, whom he is known to have interviewed, nothing as yet has been discovered.

Ferdinand of Austria, the cardinal-infant of Spain, was called to the government of the Netherlands on the death of his aunt. He was the king’s younger brother, and arrived at Antwerp in May 1635. The streets had been decorated with triumphal arches and “ spectacula,” arranged by Rubens, and certainly never equalled by any other works of the kind! Several of the paintings detached from the arches were offered as presents to the new governor-general, a scarcely known fact, which accounts for the presence of many of these works in public galleries

; 1 Many sketches of the arches. are still preserved in the museums in Antwerp, St Petersburg, Cambridge, Windsor, &e.

(Vienna, Dresden, Brussels, &c.). Rubens was at the time laid up with gout, but Prince Ferdinand was desirous of expressing his satisfaction, and called upon the painter, remaining a long time at his house. Rubens and Ferdinand

had met at Madrid, and only a short time elapsed before the painter was confirmed in his official standing,—a matter of small importance, if we consider that the last years of his life were almost exclusively employed in working much more for the king than for his brother. About a hundred and twenty paintings of considerable size left Antwerp for Madrid in 1637, 1638, and 1639; they were intended to decorate the pavilion erected at the Pardo, and known under the name of Torre de la Parada. Another series had been begun, when Ferdinand wrote to Madrid that the painter was no more, and J ordaens would finish the work. Rubens breathed his last on the 30th of

May 1640.

More fortunate than many artists, Rubens left the world in the midst of his glory. _ Not the remotest trace of approaching old age, not the slighcst failing of mind or skill, can be detected even in his latest works, such as the Martyrdom of St Peter at Cologne, the Martyrdom of St Thomas at Prague, or the Judgment of Paris at Madrid, where his young wife appears for the last time. ‘‘She is the handsomest person in Antwerp,” writes Ferdinand to his brother, in announcing the completion of what he terms ‘‘ the best painting Rubens has done.”

If Rubens was something of a diplomatist, it cannot be denied that alike in body as in mind he is portrayed in his own works with the utmost straightforwardness. His productions are what they are, as if they could not have becn otherwise, and the fact is that, in reply to any observations he may happen to receive, we con- stautly find him asserting the necessities of his subjects, thus confirming a remark made by Sir Joshua Reynolds that his subjects always seem to suit his style.

Rubens is so well known that it hardly seems necessary to dwell upon his outward appearance. From his own letters and those in which he is referred to we become acquainted with a man of

vast erudition, great good sense, dignity, and kindness, none more

worthy of being called a gentleman ; and Sir Dudley Carleton, we know, termed him not only the prince of painters but of gentlc- men.

Those with whom he dealt in questions of lcarning proclaim his artistic excellence to be second only to his other qualifications, and even such critics as Winckelmann, who are least likely to sympathize with his style, do homage to his superior genius. “ Rubens,” he writes to Count Cobenzl, ‘‘is the glory of art, of his school, of his country, and of all coming centuries; the fertility of his imagination cannot be overrated ; he is correct in his design, magnificent in his drapery ; and he must be looked upon as the great model for chiaroscuro, although in this branch he may be termed fanciful, but he has not sacrificed to the goddesses of beauty (Horz) and the Graces.”

Rubens, indeed, although his type of feminine beauty is generally most pleasing, has little of the ltalian grace and refinement, but then he was a Fleming throughout, notwithstanding his frequent recollections of those Italian masters whom he most admired, and who themselves have little, if anything, in common with Raphael. But it must be borne in mind how completely his predecessors were frozen into stiffness through Italianization, and how necessary it was to bring back the Flemish school to life and nature. Critics have spoken of Rubens’s historical improprieties. Ofcourse nobody could suppose that his classical learning did not go far enough to know that the heroines of the Old Testament or of Roman history were not dressed out as ladies of his time; but in this respect he only follows the example of Titian, Paul Veronese, and many others. In no other school do we find these animated hunts of lions, tigers, and even the hippopotamus and the crocodile, which may be reckoned among the finest specimens of art, and here again are life and nature displayed with the utmost power. ‘© His horses are perfect in their kind,” says Reynolds ; his dogs are of the strong Flemish breed, and his landscapes the most charming pictures of Braban- tine scenery, in the midst of which lay his seat of Steen. Asa portrait painter, although less refined than Van Dyck, he shows that eminent master the way, and his pure fancy subjects, as the Garden of Love (Madrid and Dresden) and the Village Feast (Louvre), have never been equalled. As Mrs Jameson so justly remarks, “ Rubens is the most popular because the most intelligible of painters.”

For nearly one hundred years the Flemish school may be said to have been but areflexion of the Rubenesque principles. Although Jordaens and

Erasmus Quellin lived till 1678, the school might be termed a body without soul.

Some etchings have been ascribed to Rubens, but except a head

of Seneea, the only eopy of whieh is in the Print Room at the British Museum, and a beautiful figure of St Catherine, we ean admit none of the other plates, said to proceed from Rubens, as authentie. Rubens nevertheless exereised an immense influence on the art of engraving. Under his direct guidanee Soutman, Vorsterman, Pontius, Witdoeek, the two Bolswerts, Peter de Jode, N. Lauwers, and many others of less note left an immense number of beautiful plates, reproducing the most eelebrated of his paint- ings. To give an idea of what his influenee was capable of aeeom-plishing, pietorially spcaking, it might be sufficient to notice the transformation undergone by the Antwerp sehool of engraving under Rubens; even the modern school of engraving, in more than one respeet, is a continuation of the style first practised in Antwerp. His influenee is seareely less apparent in seulpture, and the celebrated Luke Fayd'herbe was his pupil.

Neithcr in name nor in faet did the Flemish school ever find a seeond Rubens. None of his four sons beeame a painter, nor did any of his three daughters marry an artist. Aeeording to Rubens's will, his drawings were to belong to that one of his sons who might become a painter, or in the event of one of his daughters marrying a eelebrated artist they were to be her portion. The valuable eolleetion was dispersed only in 1659, and of the pietures sold in 1640 thirty-two beeame the property of the king of Spain. The Madrid Gallery alone possesses a hundred of his works. Four years after her husband's death Helena Fourment married J. B. Van Brouekhoven de Bergheyck, knight of St James, member of the privy eouneil, &e. She died in 1678. In 1746 the male line of Rubens's deseendants was completely extinet. In the female line more than a hundred families of name in Europe trace their deseent from him.

The paintings of Rubens are found in all the prineipal galleries in Europe: Antwerp and Brussels, Madrid, Paris, Lille, Dresden, Berlin, Munieh,

Vienna, St Petersburg, London, Florenee, Milan, Turin exhibit several hundreds of his works. J. Smith's Catalogue gives deseriptions of more than thirteen hundred eom positions.

Literature.—A, van Hasselt, Histoire de P. P. Rubens, Brussels, 1840; E. Gachet, Lettres inédites de P. P. Rubens, Brussels, 1840; W. Noel Sainsbury, Original unpublished Papers illustrative of the Life of Sir Peter Paul Rubens, London, 1859; C. Ruclens, Pierre Paul Rubens, Documents et Lettres, Brussels, 1877; Armand Baschet "Rubens en Italie et en Espagne," in the Gazette des Beaux Arts, vols. xxii. to xxiv., Paris, 1867-68; A. Michiels, Rubens et I' Ecole d@' Anvers. Paris, 1877; Cruzada Villaamil, Rubens diplomatico espanol, Madrid, 1874; Gachard, Histoire politique et diplomatique de P. P. Rubens, Brussels, 1877; P. Genard, P. P. Rubens, Aanteekeningen over den Grooten Meester, Antwerp, 1877; Max Rooses, Titres et Portraits graves Vaprés P. P. Rubens, pour Vimprimerie plantinienne, Antw., 1877; J. Smith, Catalogue Ratsonné of the Works of the most eminent Dutch and Flemish Painters, part ii., London, 1830: Waagen, Peter Paul Rubens (translated from the German by R. Noel, edited by Mrs Jameson, London, 1840); H. Hymans, Histoire de la gravure dans Ecole de

Rubens, Brussels, 1879; C. G. Voorhelm Schneevoogt, Catalogue des Estampes gravées d'aprés Rubens, Haarlem, 1873. (H. H.) RUBIDIUM. See Porasstum Meats.

RUBRUQUIS, the name which has most commonly been given to William of Rubruk, a Franciscan friar and the author of a remarkable narrative of Asiatic travel in the 13th century. Nothing is known of him save what can be gathered from his own narrative, with the exception of a word from the pen of Roger Bacon, his contemporary and brother Franciscan, indicating personal acquaintance, The name of Rubruquis has adhered to him, owing to this form ("Willielmus de Rubruquis") being found in the imperfect copy of the Latin original printed by Hakluyt in his collection, and followed in his English translation, as well as in the completer issue of the English by Purchas. Writers, again, of the 16th and 17th centuries have called the traveller Risbroucke and Rysbrokius, for which there is no authority,—an error founded on the too hasty identification of his name of origin with

Ruysbroeck in Brabant (a few miles south of Brussels). This error was probably promoted by the fame of John of Ruysbroeck or Rysbroeck (1294-1381), a Belgian mystic theologian, whose treatises have been reprinted as late as 1848 (see vol. xvii. p. 133). Our traveller is styled “(Guillaume de Rysbroeck” and “ Ruysbroek ” in the Biographie Universelle and in the Nouv. Diog. Générale. It is only within the last twenty years that attention has been called to the fact that Rubrouck is the name of a village and commune in what was formerly called French Flanders, belonging to the canton of Cassel in the department du Nord, and lying some 84 miles north-east of St Omer. In the library of the latter city many medieval documents exist referring expressly to

Rubrouck, and to persons in the 12th and 13th centuries styled as “de Rubrouck.”! It may be fairly assumed. that Friar William came from this place ; indeed, if attention had been paid to the title of the MS. belonging to Lord Luniley, which was published by Hakluyt (Ltinerarium Sratris Willielmi de Rubruquis de Ordine fratrum Minorum, Galli, Anno Gratiz 1258, ad partes Orientales), there need have. been no question as to the traveller’s quasi-French nationality ;* but this (erroneously) has always been treated as if it were an arbitrary gloss of Hakluyt’s own.

Friar William went to Tartary under orders from Louis IX. (St Louis). That king, at an earlier date, viz., December 1248, when in Cyprus, had been visited by certain persons representing themselves to be envoys from a great Tartar chief Elchigaday (Ilchikadai), who com- manded the Mongol hosts in Armenia and Persia. The king then despatched a return mission consisting of Friar Andrew of Lonjumel and other ecclesiastics, who carried presents and letters for both Ilchikadai and the Great Khan. They reached the court of the latter in the winter of 1249-50, when there was in fact no actual khan on the throne ; but in any case they returned, along with Tartar envoys, bearing a letter to Louis, which was couched in terms so arrogant and offensive that the king repented sorely of having sent such a mission (li rois se repenti fort quant uy envoia, Joinville, § 492). These returned envoys reached the king when he was at Czsarea, therefore be-. tween March 1251

and May 1252. It was, however, not very long after that the zealous king, hearing that a great Tartar prince called Sartak was a baptized Christian, felt strongly moved to open communication with him, and for this purpose deputed Friar William of Rubruk with com- panions. But it is evident that the former rebuff had made the king chary as to giving these emissaries the character of his royal envoys, and Friar William on every occasion, beginning with a sermon delivered in St Sophia's (on Palm Sunday, z.e., April 13, 1253), formally disclaimed that character, alleging that, though he was the bearer of the king's letters and presents, he went simply in fulfilment of his duty as a Franciscan and preacher of the gospel.

Various histories of St Louis, and other documents which have come down to us, give particulars of the despatch of the mission of Friar Andrew from Cyprus, but none mention that of Friar William; and the first dates given by the latter are those of his sermon at Constanti- nople, and of his embarkation from Sinope (May 7, 1253). He must therefore have received his commission at Acre, where the king was residing from May 1252 to June 29, 1253; but he had travelled by way of Constantinople, as has just been indicated, and there received letters to some of the Tartar chiefs from the emperor, who was at this time Baldwin de Courtenay, the last of the Latin dynasty.

The narrative of the journey is everywhere full of life and interest, but we eannot follow its details. The vast eonquests of Jenghiz Khan were still in nominal dependence on his sueeessors, at this time represented by Mangu Khan, reigning on the Mongo- lian steppes, but praetieally those conquests were splitting up into several great monarehies. Of these the Ultis of Jaji, the eldest son of Jenghiz, formed the most westerly, and its ruler was Batt Khan, established on the Volga. Sartak is known in the history of the Mongols as Batti's eldest son, and was appointed his sue- cessor, though he died immediately after his father (1255). The

story of Sartak's profession of Christianity may have had some kind of foundation ; it was eurrently believed among the Asiatic

1 A detailed notice of such documents was published by M. Edm. Coussemaker of Lille. See remarks by M. D'Avezac in Bull. de la Soc. de Géog., 2d vol. for 1868, pp. 569-570.

2 The country of Flanders was at this time a fiet of the French crown (see Natalis de Wailly, Noles on Joinville, p. 576). William's mother-tongue may probably have been Flemish. But this cannot be proved by his representation to Mangu Khan (p. 361) that certain Teutonict who had been carried away as slaves by a Tartar chief were nostrae linguae, as Dr Franz Schmidt inclines to think.

Christians, and it is alleged by Armenian writers that he had been brought up and baptized among the Russians.

Rubruk and his party landed at Soldaia, or Sfidak, on the Crimean coast, a port which was then the chief seat of the com- munication between the Mediterranean states and what is now southern Russia. Equipped with horses and carts for the steppe, they travelled suceessively to the courts of Sartak and of Batt, respectively on the hither and further banks of the Volga, bandied from one to the other, and then referred to the Great Khan him- self, an order involving the enormous journey to Mongolia. The actual travelling of the party from the Crimea to the khan's court near Karakorum cannot have been, on a rough calculation, less than 5000 miles, and the return journey to Ayas in Cilicia would be longer by 500 to 700 miles. The chief dates to be gathered from the narrative are as follows -—embark on the Euxine, May 7, 1258 ; reach Soldaia, 21; set out thence, June 1; reach camp of Sartak, July 31; begin journey from camp of Bata eastward across steppe, September 16 , turn south-east, November 1; reach Talas river, 8; leave Cailac? (south of Lake Balkash), 30; reach camp of Great Khan, December 27; leave camp of Great Khan on or about July 10, 1254; reach camp of Bata again, Scptember 16 ; leave Sartak's camp, November 1; at the Iron Gate (Derbend) 13; Christmas spent at Nakhshivan (under Ararat); reach An- tioch (from Ayas, via Cyprus), June 29, 1255; reach Tripoli, August 15.

The camp of Batu was reached ncar the northernmost point of his summer marches, thercfore about Ukck near Saratoff (see Marco Polo, Prol., chap. iii. note 4). Before the camp was left they had marched with it five weeks down the Volga. The point of departure would lie on that river somewhere between 48° and 50° N. lat. The route taken lay eastward by a line running

north of the Caspian and Aral basins ; then from about 70° E. long. south (with some easting) to the basin of the Talas river ; thence across the passes of the Kirghiz Ala-tau and south of the Balkash Lake to the Ala-kul and the Baratula Lake (Ebi-niir). From this the travellers struck north across the Barluk, or the Orkochuk Mountains, and thence, passing south of the modern Kobdo, to the valley of the Jabkan river, whence they emerged on the plain of Mongolia, coming upon the Great Khan's camp at a spot ten days' journcy from Karakorum and bearing in the main south from that place, with the Khangai Mountains between.

This route is of course not thus defined in the narrative, but is a laborions deduction from the facts stated therein. The key to the whole is the description given of that central portion inter- yening between the basin of the Talas and the Lake Ala-kul, which enables the topography of that region, including the passage of the Ili, the plain south of the Balkash, and the Ala-kul itself, to be identified past question."

The return journey, being made in summer, after retraversing the Jabkan vallcy,? lay much farther to the north, and passed north of the Balkash, with a tolcrably straight course probably, to the mouths of the Volga. 'hence the party travelled south by Derbend, and so by Shamakhi to the Araxes, Nakhshivan, Erzingan, Sivas, and Iconium, to the coast of Cilicia, and eventually to the port of Ayas, where they embarked for Cyprus and Syria. St Louis had returned to France a ycar before.

We have alluded to Roger Bacon's mention of Friar William of Rubruk. Indeed, in the geographical section of the Opus Majus (c. 1262) he cites the traveller repeatedly and copiously, describing him as "frater Wilhelmus quem dominus rex Franciae misit ad Tartaros, Anno Domini 1253 . ... qui perlustravit regiones oricntis ct aquilonis et loca in medio his annexa, et scripsit haec praedicta illustri regi; quem librum diligenter vidi et cum ejus auctore contuli" (Opus Majus, ed. Jebb, 1733, pp. 190-191). Add to this William's own incidental particular as to his being (like his precursor, Friar John of Pian Carpine, see vol. v. p. 132) a very heavy man (ponderosus valde), and we know no more of his personality except the abundant indications of character afforded by the story itself. These paint for us an honest, pious, stout- hearted, acute, and most intelligent observer, keen in

the acquisi- tion of knowledge, the author in fact of onc of the best narratives of travel in existence. His language indeed is Latin of the most un-Ciceronian quality,—dog-Latin we fear it must be called; but,

call it what we may, it is in his hands a pithy and transparent |

medium of expression. In spite of all the diffieulties of communi-

ee

3 Cailac, where Rubruk halted twelve days, is undoubtedly the Kayalik of the historians of the Mongols, the position of which is somewhat indefinite. The narrative of Rubruk shows that it must have been near the modern Kopal.

2 Sce details in Cathay and the Way Thither, pp. ecxi.-cexiv., and Schuyler's Turkistan, i. 402-405. Mr Schuyler points out the true identification of Rubruk's river with the 1li, instead of the Chu, which is a much smaller stream ; and other amendments haye been derived from Dr F, M. Schmidt (see below).

y So the present writer interprets what Rubruk says :—"Our going was in winter, our return in summer, and that by a way lying very much farther north, only that for a space of fifteen days' journey in going and coming we followed a certain riyer betwcen mountains, and on these there was no grass to be found except close to the river," The position of the Chagan Takoi or upper Jabkan sccms to suit these facts best ; but Mr Schuyler refers them to the upper Irtish, and Dr F, Schmidt to the Uliungur.

ie UG AT

cation, and of the badness of his twrgemannus or dragoman,* he gathered a mass of particulars, wonderfully true or near the truth, not only as to Asiatic nature, geography, ethnography, and manners, but as to religion and language. Of his geography a good example occurs in his account of the Caspian (eagerly caught up by Roger Bacon), which is perfectly accurate, except that he places the hill country occupied by the Mulahids, or Assassins, on the eastern instcad of the southern shore. He explicitly

corrects the allegation of Isidore that it isa gulf of the occan : “non est verum quod dicit Ysidorus. . . . . nusquam enim tangit oceanum, sed undique circumdatur terra ” (265).° Of his interest and acumen in matters of language we may cite examples. The language of the Pascatir (or Bashkirds) and of the Hungarians is the same, as he had learned from Dominicans who had been among them (274).° The language of the Ruthenians, Poles, Bohemians, and Slavonians is one, and is the same with that of the Wandals, or Wends (275). In the town of Equius (immediately beyond the Ili, perhaps Aspara)? the people were Mohammedans speaking Persian, though so far remote from Persia (281). The Yugurs (or Uigurs) of the country about Cailac (see note above) had formed a language and character of their own, and in that language and character the Nestorians of that tract used to perform their office and write their books (281-2). The Yugurs are those among whom are found the fountain and root of the Turkish and Comanian tongne (289). Their character has becn adopted by the Moghals. In using it they begin writing from the top and write downwards, whilst lme follows line from left to right (286). The Nestorians say their service, and have their holy books, in Syriac, but know nothing of the language, just as some of our monks sing the mass without knowing Latin (293). The Tibet people write as we do, and their letters have a strong resemblance to ours. The Tangut people write from right to left like the Arabs, and their lines advance upwards (329). The current money of Cathay is of cotton paper, a palm in length and breadth, and on this they print lines like those of Mangu Khan’s seal :—“imprimuwnt lineas sicut est sigillum Mangu ”—a remarkable expression. They write with a painter’s pencil and combine in one character several letters, form- ing one expression : —“faciunt in una figura plures literas compre- hendentes unam dictionem,”—a still more remarkable utterance, showing an approximate apprehension of the nature of Chinese writing (329).

Yet this sagacious and honest observer is denounced ag an ignorant and untruthful blunderer by Isaac Jacob Schmidt (a man no doubt of uscful learning, of a kind rare in his day, but narrow and wrong-headed, and in natural acumen and candour far infcrior to the 13th-century friar whom he maligns), simply because the evidence of the latter as to the Turkish dialect of the Uigurs traversed a pct heresy, long since exploded, which Schmidt enter- tained, viz., that the Uigurs were by race and language Tibetan.®

The narrative of Rubruk, after Roger Bacon's copious use of it, seems to have dropped out of sight. 1t has no place in the famous collections of the 14th century, nor in the earlicr Speculum Historiale of Vincent of Beauvais, which gives so many others of the Tartarian ecclesiastical itineraries. It first appeared imperfectly in laklnyt (1600), as we have mentioned. But it was not till 1839 that any proper edition of the text was published. In that year the Recueil de Voyages of the Paris Geographical Society, vol. iv., contained a thorough edition of the Latin text, and a collation of the few existing MSS., put forth by M. D'Avezac, with the assistance of two young scholars, since of high distinction, viz., Francisque-Michel and Thomas Wright. But there is no commentary, such as M. D'Avczac attached, in his own incomparable fashion, to the edition of Friar John of Pian Carpine in the same volume ; hor has there ever been any properly annotated edition of a traveller so worthy of honour. Richthofen in his China, i, 602-604, has briefly but justly noticed the narrative of Rubruk. A French version with some notes, issued at Paris in 1877, in the Bibliotheque Orient ale Elzévirienne, if named at all, can only be mentioned as beneath contempt. The task is one which the present writer has long contemplated, but now with but slender hope of accomplishment. (Since this was in type the writer has received from Dr. Franz Max Schmidt an admirable monograph by him, Ueber Rubruk's Reise (Berlin, p. 93), extracted from vol. xx. of the Ztschr. Geog. Soc. Berl., and has greatly profited by it in the revision of the article in proof.) IRS)

RUBY. This name is applied by lapidaries and jewellers to two distinct minerals, which may be distinguished as the true or Oriental ruby and the spinel ruby. The former is a red variety of corundum or native alumina, of

4 "Ego enim percepi postea, quando incepi aliquantulum intelligere idioma, quod quando diccbam unum ipse totum aliud dicebat, secundum quod ei occurrebat. Tum, videns pericnlum loquendi per ipsum, elegi magis tacere'

248-249),

' 5 The — references in the text are to D'Avezac's edition of the Latin (sce below).

6 oe Bashkirds now speak a Turkish dialect ; but they are of Finnish race, and it is quite possible that they then spoke a language akin to Magyar. There is no doubt that the Mussulman historians of that age identified the Hungarians and the Bashkirds (e.g., see extracts from Juvaini and Rashiduddin in App. to D'Ohsson's Hist. des Mongols, ii. 620-623). The Bashkirds are also constantly coupled with the Majar by Abulghazi. See Fr. tr. by Desmaisons, pp. 19, 140,

180, 189.

7 Asp == Equus. Aspara is "often mentioned by the historians of Timur and his successors ; its exact place is uncertain, but it lay somewhere on the Ili frontier. Dr F. Schmidt thinks this identification impossible ; but one of his reasons— viz., that Equius was only one day from Cailac—appears to be a misapprehension of the text.

8 Sec Forschungen im Gebiete . Petersburg, 1824, pp. 90-93.

. der Vélker Mittel-Asiens, St.

great rarity and value, while the latter is an aluminate of Inagnesium, inferior to the true ruby in hardness and much less esteemed as a gem stone. With ancient writers the confusion was even greater, for they appear to have classed together under a common name, such as the car- bunculus of Pliny or the av@paé of Greek writers, not only our two kinds of ruby but also garnets and other inferior stones of a brilliant fiery colour. By modern mineral- ogists it has come to be understood that when the word ruby is used without any qualifying prefix the true or Oriental stone is invariably indicated.

The Oriental ruby, like all other varieties of corundum, crystallizes in the rhoinbohedral system; but, as it usually occurs as small pebbles or rounded fragments, the crystal- line form can rarely be traced. Its colour varies from deep cochincal to pale rose red, in some cases inclining to purple, the most valued tint being that known to experts as pigeon's blood colour. On cxposure to a high tempera- ture the ruby becomes green, but regains its

original colour on cooling—a behaviour which is consistent with the sup- position that the stone owes its colour to the presence of oxide of chromium, and indeed in artificial rubies the required tint is always obtained by the use of some com- pound of chromium. When a ruby of the most esteemed colour is properly viewed through a dichroiscope, the colour is resolved into a carminc and an aurora red, or red inclining to orange. By this test the true ruby may be distinguished from spinel and garnet, since these minerals crystallize in the cubic system and therefore are not di- chroic. Another mode of distinction is suggested by the high density of corundum: the specific gravity of the true ruby reaches or even rises slightly above 4, and thus greatly excecds that of either spinel or garnet. But perhaps the simplest test is afforded by its great hard- ness (H=9): the sharp edge of a corundum crystal will readily scratch either a spinel or a garnet, but has no effect ona ruby. The true ruby has a very high index of refraction (4=1:78), and to this character is due the remarkable lustre of the polished stone. Mr Crookes has shown that the ruby is brilliantly phosphorescent when subjected to radiant discharge in a properly ex- hausted vessel, and curiously enough the red light emitted is equally vivid whatever be the colour of the corundum under experiment. The microscopic structure of the ruby has been studied by Mr Sorby, who finds that the stone contains fluid cavities and numerous crystallized enclosures of other minerals (Proc. Roy. Soc., xvii.. 1869, p- 291). ,

The Oriental ruby is a mineral of very limited distribution, its prineipal localities being confined to the kingdom of Burmah. The most important ruby mines are situated at Kyat Pyen, about 70 miles to the north-east of Mandalay; there are also mines at Mookop, a little farther north, and others in the Sagyin Hills, within 16 miles of Mandalay. In all these localities the rubies oecur in association with sapphires and other precions stones, forming a gem-bearing gravel which is dug up and washed in very primitive fashion. By far the larger number of the rubies are of small size, and the larger stones are generally flawed. All rubies exceeding a certain weight were the property of the king of Burmah. The mines were jealously watched, and it was diffienlt for Europeans to obtain access to them ; but some of the Ava workings were visited and described many years ago by Pére Giuseppe d’Amiato, and more recently those near Mandalay have been deseribed by Mr Bredmeyer, who was offieially connected with them

(Ball). It is stated in the older works on mineralogy that rubies oceur in the Capelan Mountains near Syrian, in Pegu. In peninsular India there are but few localities that yield rubies, but they have been reported from the corundum mines of the Salem distriet in Madras and from Mysore. In Ceylon they oecur with sapphires, but are rarer than those gems, and the Ceylon rubies are not usually of good colour. Rubies have been brought from Gandamak, in Afghanistan, but most of the stones reputed to be Afghan rubies are merely spiuels.

In 1871 some remarkable deposits of corundum were discovered by Col. C. W. Jenks in Maeon co., North Carolina. Rubics,

sapphires, and large pebbles of coarse corundum were found in the bed of a river near a large mass of serpentine which afterwards became known as Corundum Hill, and these pebbles were eventually traced to certain veins in the serpentine. The corundum oecurred crystallized in situ, but was rarely of such a colour as would entitle it to be called ruby. Mr G. F. Kunz, who has lately written an article on American precious stones, states that rubies and sapphires have also been found at Vernon, New Jersey ; near Helena, Montana ; at Santa Fé, New Mexico; in southern Colorado ; and in Arizona.

Anstralia has oceasionally yielded true rubies, but mostly of smal] size and inferior quality. In Victoria they have been found in the drifts of the Beechworth gold fields and at the Berwiek tin mine, Wallace’s Creek ; while in New South Wales they oecur at Mudgee, in the Cudgegong and some of its tributaries, and at Tumberumba, co. Wynyard. A magenta-coloured turbid ruby from Vietoria is known under the name of ‘‘ barklyite.”

The “star ruby” is a rather cloudy variety from Ceylon, exhibit- ing when cut en cabochon a luminous star of six rays, reflected from the convex surface of the stone.

The largest ruby known in Europe is said to be one of the size of a small hen’s egg, whieh was presented by Gustavus III. of Sweden to the empress of Russia on the occasion of his visit to St Petersburg. Rubies of larger size

have been deseribed by Tavernier and other Oriental travellers, but it is probable that in many cases spinels have been mistaken for true rubies. There seems no doubt that the great historic ruby set in the Maltese cross in front of the imperial state crown of England is a spinel. This stone was given to Edward the Black Prince by Pedro the Cruel, king of Castile, on the victory of Najera,in 1367, and it was afterwards worn by Henry V. at the battle of Agincourt, when it narrowly escaped destruction.

The spinel ruby has been described in the article MINERALOGY (vol. xvi. p. 386, sp. 93). The spinels nsed for jewellery are mostly obtained in Burmah, where they oeeur as octahedral erystals or as water-worn pebbles in assoeiation with the true ruby, for which they are often mistaken. They are also found in the gem-bearing gravels of Ceylon, Victoria, and New South Wales. ‘The delicate rose-pink variety known as balas ruby was worked for centuries in Badakhshan, but the operations appear to have been suspended of late years. The mines are situated on the river Shighnan, a tributary of the Oxus. It is commonly said that the name ‘*balas ” or ‘‘ balash” is.a corruption of Badakhshan, while others derive it from Balkh.

The Oriental ruby has always been esteemed of far higher value than any other precious stone. A ruby of perfect colour, weighing five carats, is worth at the present day ten times as mueh as a diamond of equal weight (Streeter). As the weight of the stone inereases, its value rapidly rises, so that rubies of exceptional size eommaud enormous prices. There is consequently inuch tempta- tion to replace the true stone by spinel or garnet or even paste. By means of oxide of ehromium an excellent imitation of the colour of the ruby is obtained ; and, though the ordinary “ strass,’’ or fine lead-glass, is very soft, and therefore soon loses its lustre, it is yet possible to produce a paste consisting of silicate of alumina which is almost as hard as roek crystal.

It is an interesting fact that the chemist has frequently suc- ceeded in causing alumina to assume artificially many of the physical characteristics of the native ruby. As far baek as 1837 M. Gaudin reproduced the ruby on a small scale by exposing ammonia-alum to the heat of the oxyhydrogen blowpipe, whereby he obtained fused alumina whieh was readily colourcd by the addition of oxide of chromium. A different method was followed by

Ebelmen. He dissolved alumina in boric acid at a high temperature, and on the cooling of the mass obtained the alumina in a crystallized form; while if ehromate of ammonium was present the crystals became veritable ruby. MM. Saiute-Claire Deville and Caron heated a mixture of fluoride of aluminium, fluoride of chromium, and boric acid, and thus obtained a fluoride of boron, which, being volatile, readily escaped, and left a solid residue of alumina coloured by the chrome. These, however, were only laboratory experiments, and it was reserved for MM. Frémy and Feil, in 1878, to reproduce the ruby and sapphire ona seale sng- gestive of some commereial importance. By heating a mixture of artificial alumina and red lead in a fireelay crucible, they obtained a vitreous silieate of lead (the siliea being derived from the crueible) and erystallized alumina, while the addition of bichromate of potas- sium caused this alumina to assume the coveted tint of the ruby.

For a general description of the ruby see E. Jannettaz, Diamant et Pierres Précieuses (1881); Kluge, Handbuch der Edelsteinkunde (1860); Schrauf, Edelsteinkunde (1869); Church, Precious Stones (1883); Streeter, Precious Stones and Gems (Ath cd., 1884). For Indian localities see Ball's Economie Geology, being vol. iii. of the Manual of the Geology of India (1881); for Australian localities, Liversidge's Minerals of New South Wales (2U ed., 1882); for United States rubies, Quart. Jour. Geol. Soc. Lond., vol. xxx. 1874, p. 303, and American Jour. Science, ser. ili. vol. iv. 1872, pp. 109, 175, and Kunz's article in Mineral Resources of the United States, by A. Williams, jun. (1883). For the history of the stone consult King's Natural IHist. of Precious Stones (1865), and

for artificial rubies, Comptes Rendus, vol. 1xxxv. 1877, p. 1029. (F. W. BR.)

of the various tints and shades of flowers in his poems flatly contradict the customary legend of the "blind min- strel." In his eighth year he knew the whole Koran by heart and had begun to write verses. He had besides a wonderful voice which enraptured all hearers, and he played in a masterly way on the lute. The fame of these accom- plishments at last reached the ear of the SAmanid Nasr II. bin Ahmad, the ruler of Khord4s4n and

Transoxiana (913- 942), who drew the poet to his court and distinguished him by his personal favour. Rudagi became his daily companion, rose to the highest honours, and grew rich in worldly wealth. He received so many costly presents that he could allow himself the extravagance of keeping two hundred pages, and that four hundred camels were neces- sary to carry all his property. In spite of various pre- decessors he well deserves the title of "father of Persian literature," since he was the first who impressed upon every form of epic, lyric, and didactic poetry its peculiar stamp and its individual character. He is also said to have been the founder of the "diwan," that is, the typical form of the complete collection of a poet's lyrical compositions in a more or less alphabetical order which prevails to the present day among all Mohammedan writers. His poems filled, according to all statements, one hundred volumes and consisted of one million three hundred thousand verses ; but of this there remain only fifty-two kasidas, ghazals, and ruba'is; of his epic masterpieces we have nothing beyond a few stray lines found here and there as illus- trations of ancient Persian words and phrases in native dictionaries. But the most serious loss is that of his translation of Ibn Mukaffa's Arabic version of the old Indian fable book Kalilah and Dimnah, which he put into Persian verse at the request of his royal patron, and for which he received the handsome reward of 40,000 dirhems. In his kasfdas, which are all devoted to the praise of his sovereign and friend, Rudagi has left us unequalled models of a refined and delicate taste, very different from the often bombastic compositions of later Persian encomiasts, and these alone would entitle him to a foremost rank among the poets of his country ; but his renown is considerably enhanced by his odes and epi- grams. Those of a didactic tendency express in well-measured lines a sort of Epicurean philosophy—in the loftiest sense of the word—on human life and human happiness; more charming still are the purely lyrical pieces, sweet and fascinating songs, which glorify the two everlast- ing delights of glowing hearts and cheerful minds—love and wine. Rudagi survived his royal friend, and died long after the splendid days of Nasr's patronage, the time of wealth and luxury, had passed away—poor and forgotten by the world, as one of his poems, a beautiful elegy, seems to indicate—in 954.

A complete edition of all the extant poems of Ridagi, in Persian text and metrical German translation, together with a biographi- cal account, based

on forty-six Persian MSS., is found in Dr Ethé's "Ridagi der Samanidendichter " (Géttinger Nachrichten, 1878, pp-

663-742).

RUDD, or Rev-Eve (Leuciscus erythrophthalmus), a fish of the family of Carps, generally spread over Europe, north and south of the Alps, also found in Asia Minor, and extremely common in suitable localities, viz., still and deep waters with muddy bottom. When adult, it is readily recognized by its deep, short body, golden-coppery tint of the whole surface, red eyes, and scarlet lower fins ; the young are often confounded with those of the roach, but the pharyngeal teeth of the rudd stand in a double row, and not in a single one, as in the roach; also the first dorsal rays are inserted distinctly behind the vertical line from the root of the ventral fin. The anal rays are from thirteen to fifteen in number, and the scales in the lateral line from thirty-nine to forty-two. The rudd is a

XXI. — 7

RUCKERT, Frrepricn (1788-1866), an eminent German poet, was born at Schweinfurt on the 16th May 1788. He was educated at the gymnasium of his native place and at the universities of Wiirzburg and Heidelberg, where he studied law and philology. Having taken his degree, he went to the university of Jena as a " privat- docent" ; but this position hesoon abandoned. For some time he worked in connexion with the Morgenblati at Stuttgart. Nearly the whole of the year 1818 he spent in Rome, where he devoted himself to study, especially to the study of the popular poetry of Italy ; and afterwards he lived for several years at Coburg. He was appointed a professor of Oriental languages at the university of Erlangen in 1826, and in 1841 he was called to a similar position in Berlin, where he was also made a privy councillor. In 1849 he resigned his professorship at Berlin, and went to live on his estate near Coburg. He died on the 31st January 1866. When Riickert began his literary career, Germany was engaged in her life-and-death struggle with Napoleon; and in his first volume, Deutsche Gtedtchte, published in 1814 under the name of Freimund Raimar, he gave vigorous expression to the prevailing sentiment of his countrymen. In 1816 appeared Napoleon, eine politische Komidie in drei Stiicken, and in 1817 the Kranz der Zeit. He issued a collection of

poems, Oestliche Rosen, in 1822; and in 1834-38 his Gesammelte Gedichte were published in six volumes, a selection from which has passed through many editions. Rickert, who was master of thirty lan- guages, made his mark chiefly as a translator of Oriental poetry, and as a writer of poems conceived in the spirit of Oriental masters. Much attention was attracted by Die Verwandlungen des Abu Seid, a translation of Hariri's Makamen (1826), Nal und Damajanti, an Indian tale (1828), Amrilkais, der Dichter und Konig (1843), and Hamasa, oder die diltesten arabischen Volkslieder (1846). Among his original poems dealing with Oriental subjects are Morgenldndische Sagen wnd Geschichten (1837), Erbau- liches und Beschauliches aus dem Morgenland (1836-38), Rostem und Suhrab, cine Heldengeschachte (1838), and Brahmanische Erzdhlungen (1839). The most elaborate of his works is Die Wesshet des Brahmanen, published in six volumes in 1836-39. In 1843-45 he issued several dramas, all of which are greatly inferior to the work to which he owes his distinctive place in German literature. At the time of the Danish war in 1864 he wrote Ein Dutzend Kampf-Lieder fir Schleswig-Holstein, which, al- though published anonymously, produced a considerable impression. After his death many poetical translations and original poems were found among his papers, and several collections of them were published. Riickert lacked the simple and natural feeling which is character- istic of all the greatest lyrical poets of Germany. But he had a certain splendour of imagination which made Oriental poetry congenial to him, and he has seldom been surpassed in his power of giving rhythmic expression to ideas on the conduct of life. As a master of poetical style he ranks with German writers of the highest class. 'Thereare hardly any lyrical forms which are not represented among his works, and in all of them, the simplest and the most complex, he wrote with equal ease and grace.

A complete cdition of Riickert's poetical works appeared in Frankfort in 1868-69. Sce Fortlage, Rickert und seine Werke (1867); Beyer, Friedrich Riickert, ein biographisches Denkmal (1868); Neue Mitthcilungen tiber Rickert (1878); and Nachgelasscne Gedichte Riickerts und neue Beitrage zu dessen Leben wnd Schriften (1877) ; Boxberger, Riickert-Studien (1878).

RUDAGL (d. 954). Hakim Mohammed Farfd-eddin 'Abdallah, the first great genius of modern Persia, was born in Riidag, a village in Transoxiana,

about 870-900, —totally blind, as most of his biographers assert, although the fine distinction of colours and the minute description

o0

fine fish, but little esteemed for food, and very rarely ex- ceeds a length of 12 inches or a weight of 2 Ib. It feeds on small freshwater animals and soft vegetable matter, and spawns in April or May. It readily crosses with the white bream, more rarely with the roach and bleak.

RUDDIMAN, Tuomas (1674-1758), an eminent Scot- tish scholar, was born in October 1674, at Raggal, in the parish of Boyndie, Banffshire, where his father was a farmer. He studied Latin eagerly at the school of his native parish, and when sixteen started off to walk to Aberdeen, there to compete for a college bursary. On the way he was attacked by Gipsies, robbed of a guinea, which was all he had, and otherwise very cruelly treated; but he persevered in his journey, reached Aberdeen, and competed for and won the bursary. He then entered the university, and four years afterwards—on 21st June 1694—received the degree of M.A. For some time he acted as school- master at Laurencekirk in Kincardine. There he chanced to make the acquaintance of Dr Pitcairne, of Edinburgh, who persuaded him to remove to the Scottish capital, where he obtained the post of assistant in the Advocates' Library. As his salary was only £8, 6s. 8d. per annum, he was forced to undertake additional employment. He engaged in miscellaneous literary work, took pupils, and for some time acted as an auctioneer. His chief writings at this period were editions of Wilson's De Animi Tran- quillitate Dialogus (1707), and the Cantici Solomonis Para- phrasis Poetica (1709) of Arthur Johnstone (0d. 1641), editor of the Delicize Poetarum Scotorum.

In 1714 he published Rudiments of the Latin Tongue, which is even yet his best known work. This was intended to be an easy introduction to Latin grammar, and was so successful that it at once superseded all others. Under various forms it has been in use, down to our own day, in the schools of Scotland. In 1715 he edited, with notes and annotations, the works of George Buchanan in two volumes folio. As Ruddiman was a Jacobite, the liberal views of Buchanan seemed to him to call for frequent censure. That censure is often rather implied than openly expressed ; but it excited much

opposition. scholars was formed in Edinburgh to “vindicate that in- comparably learned and pious author from the calumnies of Mr Thomas Ruddiman” by publishing a correct edition of his works, This they never did; but a number of ob- scure writers from this time attacked Ruddiman with great vehemence. He replied; and it was not till the year before his death that he said his “last word” in the con- troversy.

His worldly affairs, meanwhile, grew more and more prosperous. He founded (1715) a successful printing business, and after some time was appointed printer to the university. He acquired the Caledonian Mercury in 1729, and in 1730 was appointed keeper of the Advocates’ Library, which post, owing to failing health, he resigned in 1752. He died at Edinburgh, 19th January 1758, and was interred in Greyfriars churchyard, where in 1806 a tablet was erected to his memory.

Besides the works mentioned, the following writings of Ruddiman deserve notice :—an edition of Gavin Douglas’s Mneid of Virgil (1710) ; the editing and completion of Anderson’s Selectus Diplo- matum et Numismatum Scotie Thesaurus (1739) ; Catalogue of the Advocates’ Iibrary (1733-42); an edition of Livy, famed for its “immaculate purity,” in 4 vols. (1751). Ruddiman was for many years the representative scholar of Scotland. Writing in 1766, Dr Johnson, after reproving Boswell for some bad Latin, significantly adds—“ Ruddiman is dead.” When Boswell proposed to write

Ruddiman’s life, “I should take pleasure in helping you to do honour to him,” said Johuson.

See Chalmers’s Life of Ruddiman (1794) ; Scots Magazine, January 7, 1757; Boswell’s Life of Johnson.

RUDE, Frango1s(1784—1855),a French sculptor of great natural talent and force of character, but of an ignorance

|

A society of |

X

as to all that did not immediately concern his art which can best be described as out of date. He was born at Dijon, 4th January 1784, and came therefore in his youth under the influence of the democratic and N. apoleonic ideals in their full force. Till the age of sixteen he worked at his father's trade as a stovemaker, amusing himself with modelling in his free hours only; but in 1809 he went up to Paris from the Dijon school of art, and became a pupil of Castellier, obtaining the Great Prize in 1812. After the second restoration of the Bourbons he retired to Brussels, where he got some work under the architect Van der Stracten, who employed him to execute nine bas reliefs in the palace of Tervueren, which he was then engaged in building. At Brussels Rude married Sophie Fremiet, the daughter of a Bonapartist compatriot, to whom he had many obligations, but, obtaining with difficulty work so ill-paid that it but just enabled him to live, he gladly availed himself of the opportunity of return to Paris, where in 1827 a statue of the Virgin for St Gervais and a Mercury Fastening his Sandals obtained much attention. His great success dates, however, from 1833, when he received the cross of the Legion of Honour for his statue of a Neapolitan Fisher Boy playing with a Tortoise, which also procured for him the important com- mission for all the ornament and one bas relief of the Arc de Etoile. This relief, a work full of energy and fire, immortalizes the name of Rude. Amongst other produc- tions, we may mention the statue of Monge, 1848, Jeanne d'Arc (in garden of Luxembourg), 1852, a Calvary in bronze for the high altar of St Vincent de Paul, 1855, as well as Hebe and the Eagle of Jupiter, Love Triumphant, and Christ on the Cross, all of which appeared at the Salon of 1857 after his death. He had worked all his life long with the most extraordinary energy and given himself no rest in spite of the signs of failing health, and at last, on the 3d November 1855, he died suddenly with scarcely time to cry out. One of his noblest works, and easily accessible, is the tomb of Cavaignac, on which he placed beside his own the name of his favourite pupil Christophe. Although executed in 1840, this was not erected at Mont- martre till the year after Rude's own death. His Louis XIII, a life size statue, cast in silver, is to be seen at the Duc de Luynes's chateau at Dampierre. Cato of Utica stands in the gardens of the Tuileries, and his Baptism of Christ decorates a chapel of the Madeleine.

RUDE STONE MONUMENTS. The raising of com- memorative monuments of such an enduring material as stone is a practice that may be traced in all countries to the remotest times. The highly sculptured statues, obelisks, and other monumental erections of modern civi- lization are but the lineal representatives of the unhewn monoliths, dolmens, cromlechis, &c., of prehistoric times. Judging from the large number of the latter that have still survived the destructive agencies (notably those of — man himself) to which they have been exposed during so many ages, it would seem that the ideas which led to their erection had as great a hold on humanity in its earlier stages of development as at the present time. In giving some idea of these rude monuments in Britain and else- where, it will be convenient to classify them as follows (see vol. ii. p. 383, figs. 1-4). (1) Isolated pillars or inono- liths of unhewn stones raised on end are called Menhirs (maen, a stone, and hir, long). (2) When these monoliths are arranged in lines they become Alignments. (3) But if their linear arrangement is stich as to form an enclosure (enceinte), whether circular, oval, or irregular, the group is designated by the name of Cromlech (see CromLEcH). (4) Instead of the monoliths remaining separate, they are sometimes placed together and covered over by one or more capstones so as to form a rude chamber ; in this case

{

a

imubDe STONE

the monument is called a Dolmen (daul, a table, and maen, a stone). This megalithic chamber is sometimes partially or wholly imbedded in a mound of earth or stones so as to form a tumulus or cairn. As, however, there are many tumuli and cairns which do not contain megalithic cham- bers, we have only partially to deal with them under the category of rude stone monuments.

Menhirs.—Rude monoliths fixed on end (see vol. ii. p. 388, fig. 1) have been used in all ages for a variety of purposes, commem- orative and religious. Stone pillars were also used ceremonially on the accession of kings and chiefs. In Scotland, when stones were thus used, they were called

Tanist Stones, the most celebrated of which was the Lia Fail, formerly at Scone (now at Westminster Abbey), on which the kings of Scotland used to be crowned. We read also of Hare or Hoer Stones, Cambus or Camus Stones, Cat (cath, battle) Stones, "' Witch Stanes, " ''Druid Stanes," &c. The Hawk's Stane, or Saaum Falconis, at St Madoes, Perthshire, was erected in memory of the defeat of the Danes at Lunearty, and a monolith now standing on the field of Flodden is said to mark the place where King James fell. When menhirs were grouped together their number was often significant, ¢g., twelve (Josh. iv. 5) or seven (Herod., iii. 8). Some standing stones are found to have been artificially perforated, and these superstition has invested with some curious functions. As examples of this class may be mentioned the famous Stone of Odin, near the circle of Stennis, the Clach-Charra, or Stone of Vengeance, at Onich near Balachu- lish in Argyllshire, and Men-en-tol in Cornwall. Two rude mono- liths in Scotland bear inscriptions,—the famous Newton Stone in the district of Garioch, and the Cat Stane near Edinburgh. Many others have eup-marks and spirals or concentric circles. In Ireland, Wales, and the north of Scotland, they are occasionally found with ogam inscriptions, and in the north-east of Scotland (Pictland) with symbolical figures, which were subsequently continued on the beautifully sculptured stones of early Christian date which are peculiar to that locality.

Menhirs are found in all megalithic countries. In the British Isles they are very abundant, more especially in the less cultivated districts. In France ovcr 1600 isolated examples have been recorded, of which about the half, and by far the most remarkable, are within the five departments which constitute Brittany. In the rest of France they are generally small, and not to be compared in grandeur to those of Brittany. At Locinariaquer (Morbihan) is the largest menhir in the world. It isin the form of a rude but smooth-sided obelisk, and lies on the ground broken into four portions, the aggregate length of which amounts to 20°50 metres (about 67 feet). It was made of granite, foreign to the neighbour- hood, and its weight, according to the most recent calculations, amounted to 347,531 kilogrammes or 342 tons (L'Homme, 1885, p- 193). The next largest menhir is at Plésidy (Cétes-du-Nord), measuring about 87 feet in height. Then follows a list of sixty-seven gradually diminishing to 16 feet in height, of which the first ten (all above 26 feet) are in Brittany. As regards form, these menhirs vary greatly.

Some are cylindrical, as the well-known ‘nierre du champ Dolent” at Dol (height 30 fcet), and that of Cadiou in Finistére (28 feet); while that of Penmarch (26 feet) takes the shape of a partially expanded fan. On the introduction of Christianity into France its adherents appear to have made use

-of these menhirs at an early period; many of them at present support a cross, and some a Madonna. The scattered positions of some monoliths and the no less singular grouping of others show that, although they were sometimes used as landmarks, this was only a secondary function. It is not uncommon to find a monolith overtopping a tumulus, thus simulating the Bauta (grave or battle) Stones of Scandinavia. In England, monoliths are often associated with the stone circles, as the King’s Stone at Stanton Drew, Long Meg at Little Salkeld, the Ring Stone at Avebury, &c. One of the finest British monoliths stands in the churchyard of Rudston, Yorkshire. Examples of a large size are met with in Algeria, Morocco, India, Central Asia, &c.

_ Alignments.—The most celebrated monuments of this class are in the vicinity of Carnac in Brittany. They are situated in groups at Ménec, Kermario, Kerlescant, Erdeven, and St Barbe—all within a few miles of each other, and in the centre of a district containing the most remarkable megalithic remains in the world. The first three groups are supposed by some archeologists to be merely portions of one original and continuous series of alignments, which extended nearly 2 miles in length in a uniform direction from south-west to north-east. Commencing at the village of Ménec, the menhirs are arranged in eleven rows. At first they stand from 10 to 18 feet above the ground, but, as we advanee, they become gradually smaller till they attain only 8 or 4 feet, when they cease altogether. After a vacant space of about 350 yards we come to the Kermario group, which contains only ten lines, but they are nearly of the same magnitude as at the begin- ning of the former group. After a still greater interval the menhirs

again appear, but this time in thirteen rows, at the village of Kerlescant. In 1881 M. Felix Gaillard, Plouharnel, made a plan of the alignments at Erdeven, which shows that, out of a total of 1120 menhirs which originally

constituted the group, 290 are still standing, 740 fallen, and 90 removed. The menhirs here may be traced for nearly a mile, but their linear arrangement is not so distinct, nor are the stones so large as those at Carnac. About fifty alignments are known in France. At Penmarch there is one containing over two hundred menhirs arranged in four rows. Others, however, are formed of only a single row of stones, as at Kerdouadec, Leuré, and Camaret. The first is 480 m. in length, and terminates at its southern extremity in a kind of eroix gammée. At Leuré three short lines meet at right angles. The third is situated on the rising ground between the town of Camaret and the point of Toulinguet. It consists of. base line, some 600 yards long, with forty-one stones (others have apparently been removed), and two perpendicular lines as short offsets. Close to itare a dolmen and a prostrate menhir. These monoliths are all of coarse quartz and of small size, only one, at Leuré, reaching a height of 9 feet. Alignments are also found in other countries. In the Pyrenees they are generally in single file,—mostly straight, but sometimes reptiliform. Onc at Peyrelade (Billitre) runs in a straight line from north to south for nearly 300 yards, and contains ninety-three stones, some of which are of great size. At St Columb in Cornwall, there is one called the Nine Maidens, which is formed of eight quartz stones, extending in a perfectly straight line for 262 feet. In Britain they are more frequently arranged in. double file, or in avenues, leading to or from other megalithic monuments, such as still exist, or formerly existed, at the circles of Avebury, Stonehenge, Shap, Callernish, &. The only example in England comparable to the great alignments of Carnac is in the Vale of the White Horse in Berkshire. Here the stones, numbering about eight hundred, are grouped in three divisions, and extend over an irregular parallelogram whieh measures from 500 to 600 yards in length and from 250 to 300 yards in breadth. Sir Henry Dryden describes groups ofa similar character in Caithness, as at Garry- Whin, Camster, Yarhouse, and the ‘‘many stones” at Clyth. Alignments in single and multiple rows have also been observed in Shetland, India, Algeria, &c.

Cromlechs.—Enclosures (enceintes) formed of rude monoliths, placed at intervals of a few yards, have generally a circular or oval shape. Rectangular forms are, however, not unknown, examples of which may be seen at Curcunno (Morbihan), near the eelebrated dolmen of that name, and at Saint Just (Illc-et- Vilaine). The former measures 37 by 27 yards, and is

now com- posed of twenty-two meuhirs, all of whieh are standing (some fallen ones having been recently restored by the Government). About a dozen menhirs would appear to be wanting. A donkey- shoe-shaped enclosure has been described by Sir Henry Dryden, in the parish of Latheron, Caithness. It is 226 feet long and 110 feet wide in the middle, and the two extremities are 85 feet apart. Stone eircles are frequently arranged ‘concentrieally, as may be geen in the circle at Kenmore, near Aberfeldy, Perthshire, as well as in many other Scotch, Irish, and Scandinavian examples. More rarely one large circle surrounds secondary groups, without having a common ceutre, as was the case at Avebury, where the outer circle, 1200 feet in diameter, included two others, each of which contained an inner concentric circle. At Boscawen, in Cornwall, there is a group of cireles confusedly attached, and, as it were, partially overlapping each other. Circles may also be connected by an alignment or avenue, as at Stanton Drew, Dart- moor, &c. Cromlechs are often associated with other megalithic monuments ; thus at the head of the great Carnac alignments are the remains of a large circle which can be readily traced, notwith- standing that some houses are constructed within its area. In the British Isles and the north of Europe cromlechs frequently surround the dolmens, tumuli, or cairns. A few examples of a dolmen surrounded by one or more concentrie circles have also been recorded by M. Cartailhac, in the department of Aveyron in France. Outside the cromlech there is also frequently to be

found a circular ditch or vallum, as at Avebury, Stonehenge,

Arbor Low, Brogar, &c. The most remarkable megalithic monu- ment of this class now extant is Stonehenge, which differs, how- ever, from its congeners in having the stones of its second inner circle partially hewn and attached by large transverse lintels. The largest cromlech in France stands on the Jle-aux-Moines (Morbihan), in the village of Kergonan. About half of it is destroyed by the encroachment of the houses. The remaining semi-circumference (slightly elliptical) contains thirty-six menhirs from 6 to 10 feet high, and its diamcter is about 100 metres (328 feet). Only a few of the British eromlechs exceed these dimen- sions, among which may be mentioned Avebury (1260 by 1170 feet), Stonehenge (outer circle 300 feet, inner 106 feet), Stanton Drew (360 feet), Brogar (845 feet), Long Meg and her Daughters (330 feet). One near Dumfries, called the Twelve Apostles,

also closely approaches the 100-metre size; but, generally speaking, the Scotch and Irish examples are of smaller proportions, rarely

exceeding 100 feet in diameter. That most of the smaller circles have been used as sepulchres has been repeatedly proved by actual excavations, which showed that interments had taken place within their area. It is difficult, however, to believe that this could have been the main object of the larger ones. At May- borough, near Penrith, there is a circle entirely composed of an immense aggregation of small stones in the form of a gigantic ring enclosing a flat area, about 300 feet in diameter. Near the centre there is a fine monolith, one of several known to have formerly stood there. Of the same type is the Giant's Ring near Belfast, only the ring in this instance is made of earth, and it is consider. ably larger in diameter (580 feet); the central object is a fine dolmen. It is more probable that such enclosures were used, like many of our modern churches, for the double purpose of burying the dead and addressing the living.

Dolmens.—In its simplest form a dolmen consists of three, four, or five stone supports, covered over with one selected megalith called a capstone or table. A well-known example of this kind in England is Kit's Cotty House, between Rochester and Maidstone, which is formed of three large supports, with a capstone measuring 11 by 8 feet. From this simple form there is an endless varicty of upward gradations till we reach the so-called Gaint Graves and Grottes aux Fées, which are constructed of numerous supports and several capstones. A dolmen (allée couverte) situated in a plant- ation at the outskirts of the town of Saumur is composed of four flat supports on each side, with one at the end, and four capstones. The largest capstone measures 7°5 metres in length, 7 in breadth, and 1 in thickness. The chamber is 18 metres long, 6°5 broad, and 3 high. Another near Essé, called '"'la Roche aux Fées," is cqually long, and is constructed of thirty supports, with eight capstones, including the vestibule. Dolmens of this kind are extremely rare in the British Isles, the only one approaching thein being Calliagh Birra's House in Ireland. "These (generally known as allées couvertes) and many other examples of the simple dolmen show no evidence of having been covered over witha mound. When there was a

mound it necessitated, in the larger ones, an entrance passage, which was constructed, like the chamber, of a series of side stones or supports and capstones. Some archeologists maintain that all dolmens were formerly covered with a cairn or tumulus, —a theory which undoubtcdly derives some favour from the condition of many examples ‘still extant, especially in France, where all stages of degradation are seen, from a partial to a com- plete state of denudation. The allécs couvertes of France, Ger- many, and the Channel Islands had their entrance at the end “buts on the other hand, the Hunnebedden of Holland had both ends closed and the entrance was on the side facing the sun. The covered dolmens are extremely variable in shape,—circular, oval, quadrangular, or irregular. The entrance gallery may be attached to the end, as in the Grotte de Gavr’inis, or to the side, as in the Gaint’s Grave (Jettestuer) at Oem near Roskilde. In other instances there is no distinct chamber, buta long passage gradually widening from the entrance ; and this may be bent at an angle, as in the dolmen du Rocher (Morbihan). Again, there may be several chambers cummunicating with one entrance, or two or three separate chambers having separate entrances, and all imbedded in the same tumulus. An excellent example of this kind is the partially destroyed tumulus of Rondosec, near Plouharnal railway station, which contains three separate dolmens. That such varia- tions are not due to altered customs, in consequence of wideness of geographical range, is shown by M. de Mortillet, who gives plans of no less than sixteen differently shaped dolmens (Musée préhis- torique, pl. 58), all within a confined district in Morbihan.

No dolmens exist in eastern Europe beyond Saxony. They reappear, however, in the Crimea and Circassia, whence they have been traced through Central Asia to India, where they are widely distributed. Similar megalithic structures have also been recog- nized and described by travellers in Palestine, Arabia, Persia, Australia, the Penrhyn Islands, Madagascar, Peru, &c. The irregular manner in which dolmens are distributed along the western parts cf Europe has led to the theory that all these megalithic structures were erected by a special pcople, but as to the when, whence, and whither of this singular race there is no knowledge whatever. Though the European dolmens have a strong family likeness, however widely apart, they present some characteristic differences in the various countries in which they arc found. In Scandinavia they are confined

to the Danish lands and a few provinces in the south of Sweden. Here the exposed dolmens are often on artificial mounds, and surrounded by cromlechs which are either circular (rwnddysser) or oval (langdysser). In Sweden the sepulture a galerie is very rarely entirely covered up as in the giant graves of Denmark.

Hanover, Oldenburg, and Meckleuburg are very rich in the remains of thesemonuments. At Riestedt, near Uelzen in Hanover, there is, on the summit of a tumulus, a very singular dolmen of oblong form, which measures about 40 feet long and over 6 fect in breadth. Another at Naschendorf, near Wismar, consists of a mound surrounded by a large circle of stones and a

covered chamber on its summit. Remains of a megalithic structure at Rudenbeck, in Mecklenburg, though now imperfect, show that originally it was constructed like an allée couverte, It had four supports on each side, two at one end (the other end forming the entrance), and two large capstones.. The length had been about 20 feet, breadth 74 feet, and height from the floor to the under-surface of roof about 8 fect. According to Bonstetten, no less than two hundred of these monuments are found distributed over the three provinces of Liineburg, Osnabriick, and Stade ; and the most gigantic examples in Germany are in the duchy of Oldenburg.

In Holland, with one or two exceptions, they are confined to the province of Drenthe, where between fifty and sixty still exist. Here they get the name of Hunnebedden (Huns’ beds). The Borger Hunnebed, the largest of this group, is 70 feet long and 14 feet wide. In its original condition it contained forty-five stones, ten of which were capstones. They are all now denuded, but some show evidence of having been surrounded with a mound containing an entrance passage. Only one dolmen has been recorded in Belgium ; but in France thcir number amounts to 3410. They are irregularly distributed over seventy-eight departments, six hundred and eighteen being in Brittany. In the centre of the country they are also numerous, no less than four hundred and thirty-five being recorded in Aveyron, but they are of much smaller proportions than in the former locality. From the Pyrenees the dolmens are sparsely traced along the north coast of Spain and through

Portugal to Andalusia, where they occur in considerable numbers, Crossing into Africa they are found in large groups in Morocco, Algeria, and Tunis. General Faidherbe writes of having examined five or six thousand at the cemeteries of Bou Merzoug, Wady Berda, Tebessa, Gastal, &c.1 In the Channel Islands every species of megalithic monument is met with. At Mont Cochon, near St Helier, there was lately discovered in a mound of blown sand an allée couverte, and close to it a stone circle surrounding a dolmen.? In the British Isles they are met with in many localities, particularly in the west of England, Anglesey, the Isle of Man, Ireland, and Scot- land. In the country last named, however, they are not the most striking feature among its rude stone monuments—the stone circles and cisted cairns having largely superseded them.

In the absence of historical knowledge all these megalithic structures were formerly regarded as of Celtic origin. By some they were supposed to have been constructed by the Druids, the so-called priests of the Celts ; and hence they were often described, especially since the time of Aubrey and Stukely, under the name of Celtic or Druidical monuments. ‘But this theory is disproved by the fact that the ethnographical range of the Celtic races does not correspond with the geographical distribution of these rude stone monuments. Thus, for example, in Europe, not to speak of their localization in non-Celtic countries, the megaliths occupy an elon- gated stretch of territory on its western seaboard extending from Pomerania to North Africa. This area crosses at right angles the lands supposed to have been occupied by the Celtic or Aryan races on théir westward waves of migration. There can be no doubt from investigations of the contents of dolmens that their primary object was sepulchral, and that the megalithic chambers, with entrance passages, were used as family vaults. Against the theory that any of them were ever uscd as altars there is prima

facie evidence in the care taken to have the smoothest and flattest

surface of the stones composing the chamber always turued inwards. Moreover, cup marks, and other primitive markings when found on the capstones or supports, are almost invariably on their inside, as, for example, at the dolmens of Keriaval, Kercado, Dol au Marchant, Gavr’inis (Morbihan), and the great tumulus at New Grange (Ireland). From its

position in the centre of a large circular enclosure no dolmen could be more suggestive of public sacrifices than that within the Giant's Ring near Belfast; yet nothing could be more inappropriate for such a purpose than its capstone, which is in fact a large granite boulder presenting on its upper side an unusually rounded surface.

No chronological sequence can be detected in the evolution of the rude stone monuments, with perhaps the exception of the primitive cist which gave origin to the allées couvertes, giant graves, &c., and these again to the tumuli with microlithic built chambers. Much less can their appearance in different countries be said to indicate contemporaneity. The dolmens of Africa are often found to contain objects peculiar to the Iron Age, and it is said that in some parts of India the people are still in the habit of erecting dolmens and other megalithic monuments. Scandinavian archeologists assign their dolmens exclusively to the Stone Age. It would therefore appear as if a subsequent stage of degradation occurred, when a tamer style of interment ensued, and the Bronze Age barrows replaced the dolmens, and these again gave way to the Iron Age burials—the ship-barrows and large tumuli of the vikings, as manifested in the three tumuli of Thor, Odin, and Freya at ee eee a ee

1 Compte Rendu du Congrés International d'Anth. et @ Arch., Bruxelles, p. 408. 2 Socicté Jerséaise, 9¢ Bulletin, 1884,

Gamla Upsala, and the Gokstad mound on the Sandefiord, the

scene of the recent discovery of the viking ship. Literature.—Fergusson, Rude Stone Monuments; Compte Rendu du Congrés International @ Anthropologie et d' Archéologie Préhistoriques; by G. de Mortillet, Les Eiudes Préhistoriques; Lubbock, Prehistoric Times; Inventatre des Monuments Mégalithiques de France; Bonstetten, Essai sur les Dolmens ; Proceedings, &c., of the various antiquarian societies. (R. MU.)

RUDOLPH I. (1218-1291), German king, eldest son of Albert IV., count of Hapsburg, was born on the Ist May 1218. By marriage and in other ways he greatly ex- tended his hereditary dominions, so that when he became king

he was lord not only of Hapsburg but of the counties of Kyburg and Lenzburg and of the landgraviate of Alsace. At different times he carried on war with the bishop of Strasburg, the abbot of St Gall, and the city of Basel. THe was engaged in his second struggle with Basel in 1273 when Frederick, burgrave of Nuremberg, brought the in- telligence that he had been elected to the German crown. Basel at once submitted, and Rudolph went to Aix-la- Chapelle, where he was crowned on the 28th October 1273. The princes had become so independent during the Great Interregnum that they would have preferred to have no supreme ruler; but Pope Gregory X. had threatened that if they did not elect a king he would himself appoint one. The pope now cordially supported Rudolph, who proved to be much more energetic than the electors had antici- pated. Having secured the friendship of the palsgrave Louis and Duke Albert of Saxony by allowing them to marry his daughters, he advanced against Ottocar, king of Bohemia, and Henry, duke of Bavaria, both of whom had refused to do him homage. Henry was soon won over to the new king's side, and then Ottocar had to sue for peace. His request was granted only on condition that he should cede Austria, Styria, Carinthia, and Carniola. By and by Ottocar again rebelled, and was slain in 1278 in a battle fought on the Marchfield. Rudolph gave Bohemia and Moravia to Wenceslaus, Ottocar's son; but Austria, Styria, and Carniola he granted to his own sons, Albert and Rudolph. Carinthia was given to Meinhard, count of Tyrol, who agreed that if his descendants in the male line died out the land should pass to Rudolph's family. Rudolph compelled Otho, count of Upper Burgundy, and other nobles, who tried to make themselves independent of the German crown, to acknowledge his supremacy ; and he recovered certain fiefs in what is now Switzerland, which had been seized by the count of Savoy. He also restored peace in Bohemia, and gave his daughter in marriage to the young king, Wences- laus. He often visited troubled parts of the kingdom, settling local disputes, and destroying the towers of robber barons. On the whole, his rule was a beneficent one, but he did not succeed in re-establishing the authority of the crown, nor did he see how great an element of strength he might have found in an alliance with the cities. The electors he was forced to confirm in the possession of important rights, which were maintained under his suc- cessors. His reign is memorable chiefly because he was the founder of the greatness of the house of Hapsburg. In 1281 his

first wife died, and in 1284 he married Elizabeth, daughter of Hugo IV., duke of Burgundy. He died at Germersheim on the 15th July 1291.

See Lorenz, Deutsche Geschichte im 13 und 14 Jahrh. (1867) ; Huber, Rudolf vor seiner Thronbesteigung (in the Almanach der kaiserlichen Akademie, 1873); Hirn, Rudolf von Habsburg (1874).

RUDOLPH II. (1552-1612), Holy Roman emperor, was the son of the emperor Maximilian IL, and was born on the 18th July 1552. In 1572 he obtained the crown of Hungary, in 1575 that of Bohemia, with the title ‘‘ King of the Romans”; and in 1576, after his father’s death, he became emperor. He was of an indolent and melan- choly disposition, and preferred the study of astrology and alchemy to the responsibilities of government. He

surrendered himself absolutely to the control of the Jesuits, under whose influence he had been brought up at the gloomy court of Spain; and in his hereditary lands they laboured assiduously to destroy Protestantism. The Protestants were deprived of the right of public worship in Vienna and other towns; their schools were closed, and many of their preachers banished. Almost all public offices, too, were placed in the hands of Roman Catholics. In the lands which Rudolph ruled, not by hereditary right, but as emperor, his advisers could exercise less authority ; but there also they did what they could to foster the Catholic reaction. In 1607 Maximilian, duke of Bavaria, was allowed to seize the imperial city Donau- worth, the Protestant inhabitants of which had quarrelled with the abbot. This and other high-handed proceedings alarmed the Protestants of Germany, and in 1608, under the leadership of Frederick IV., elector of the Palatinate, they formed a confederation called the Union for the pro- tection of their interests. The Catholic princes, guided by Duke Maximilian of Bavaria, responded by forming the League. Civil war seemed inevitable, but it was postponed by the murder of Henry IV. of France, who had promised to support the Union, and by the death of the elector Frederick IV. Meanwhile, the greatest con- fusion prevailed in Hungary, due in part to, religious oppression, in part to a war with the Turks. In 1604 the Hungarians rebelled, and peace was not restored until 1606, when Matthias, the

emperor’s brother, with the sanction of his younger brothers, who acknowledged him as head of the family, came to terms both with the Hungarians and with the sultan. Matthias allied him- self with the Protestants, and compelled Rudolph to give up to him Hungary, Moravia, and the greater part of Austria. The emperor then tried to strengthen his position by granting to the nobles, knights, and towns of Bohemia perfect religious freedom, with the right to build Protestant churches and schools on their own and on the royal lands. Even after they had obtained the letter of majesty in which these concessions were embodied, the Bohemians did not trust Rudolph; and, when at his request the archduke Leopold appeared in their country with an army, they invited Matthias to come to their aid. Matthias went, and the emperor had no alternative but to resign to him in 1611 the remainder of his hereditary territories. Rudolph died on the 20th January 1612.

See Kurz, Geschichte Oecsterreichs unter Kaiser Rudolf (1821) ; Gindely, Rudolf II. und seine Zeit (1863-65).

RUDOLSTADT, capital of the German principality of Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt, and chief residence of the prince, is situated on the left bank of the Saale, 18 miles due south of Weimar, in one of the most beautiful districts of Thuringia. The picturesque little town is a favourite summer watering-place, with pine baths, as well as a fre- quented tourist resort. Besides containing the Govern- ment buildings of the little principality, Rudolstadt is fairly well provided with schools and other institutions, including a library of 60,000 volumes. The residence of the prince is in the Heidecksburg, a palace on an eminence 200 feet above the Saale, rebuilt after a fire in 1735, and containing various show apartments. The Ludwigsburg, another palace within the town built in 1742, accommodates the natural history collections be- longing to the prince. The principal church dates from the end of the 15th century. In the Anger, a tree-shaded public park between the town and the river, is the theatre. Various memorials in and near the town commemorate the visits of Schiller to the neighbourhood in 1787 and 1788. The industries of the district include the manufacture of porcelain and of dyestuffs, wool-spinning, and bell-found- ing. The population (4100 in 1817) was 8747 in 1880.

bk

o4

The name of Rudolstadt occurs in an inventory of the possessions of the abbey of Hersfeld in the year 800. After passing through the possession of the German emperor and of the rulers of Orlamtinde and Weimar, it came into the hands of the dukes of Schwarzburg in 1355. Its town rights were confirmed in 1404; and since 1599 it has been the residence of the ruling house.

RUEDA, Lope pz. See Drama, vol. vii. p. 420.

RUFF, a bird so called from the very beautiful and remarkable frill of elongated feathers that, just before the breeding-season, grow thickly round the neck of the male, who is considerably larger than the female, known as the Reeve. In many respects this species, the T'ringa pugnax of Linnzeus and the Machetes pugnax of the majority of modern ornithologists, is one of the most singular in existence, and yet its singularities have been very ill appreciated by zoological writers in general,! These singularities would require almost a volume to

Ruff.

describe properly. The best account of them is unques- tionably that given in 1813 by Montagu (Suppl. Orn. Dictionary), who seems to have been particularly struck by the extraordinary peculiarities of the species, and, to investigate them, expressly visited the fens of Lincolnshire, possibly excited thereto by the example of Pennant, whose information, personally collected there in 1769, was of a kind to provoke further inquiry, while Daniel (Rural Sports, iii. p. 234) had added some other particulars, and subsequently Graves in 1816 repeated in the same district the experience of his predecessors. Since that time the great changes produced by the drainage of the fen-country have banished this species from nearly the whole of it, so that Lubbock (Obs. Fauna of Norfolk, pp. 68-73) and Mr Stevenson (Birds of Norfolk, ii. pp. 261—271) can alone be cited as modern witnesses of its habits in England,

1 Mr Darwin, though frequently citing (Descent of Man and Sexual Selection, i. pp. 270, 306 ; ii. pp. 41, 42, 48, 81, 84, 100, 111) the Ruff as a witness in various capacities, most unfortunately seems never to have had its peculiarities presented to him in such a form that he conld fully perceive their bearings. However, the significance of the lesson that the Ruff may teach was hardly conceivable before he began to write ; but the fact is not the less to be regretted that he never elucidated its importance, not only in regard to " Sexual Selection," but more especially with respect to " Polymorphism." He appears not to have consulted Montagu's original account of this bird, and seems to have known it only by the excerpt given by Macgillivray, in which were not included the important passages on the extreme diversity of plumage exhibited by the males—that author passing over this wonderful peculiarity in a paragraph of less than a score of lines,

grey, or gold-colour.

7

while the trade of netting or snaring Ruffs, and fattening them for the table has for many years practically ceased, The cock-bird, when out of his nuptial attire, or, to use the fenman's expression, when he has not "his show on," and the hen at all seasons, offer no very remarkable deviation from ordinary Sandpipers, and outwardly? there is nothing, except the unequal size of the two sexes, to rouse suspicion of any abnormal peculiarity. But when spring comes all is changed. Ina surprisingly short time the feathers clothing the face of the male are shed, and their place is taken by papillx or small caruncles of bright yellow or pale pink. From each side of his head sprouts a tuft of stiff curled feathers, giving the appearance of long ears, while the feathers of the throat change colour, and beneath and around it sprouts the frill or ruff already mentioned as giving the bird his name. The feathers which form this remarkable adornment, quite unique among birds, are, like those of the "ear-tufts," stiff and incurved at the end, but much longer—measuring more than two inches. They are closely arrayed, capable of depression or elevation, and form a shield to the front of the breast impenetrable by the bill of a rival.3 More extraordinary than this, from one point of view, is the great variety of coloration that obtains in these temporary outgrowths. It has often been said that no one ever saw

| two Ruffs alike. That is perhaps an over-statement ; but,

considering the really few colours that the birds exhibit, the variation is something marvellous, so that fifty examples or more may be compared without finding a very close resemblance between any two of them, while the individual variation is increased by the “ ear-tufts,” which generally differ in colour from the frill, and thus produce a combination of diversity. The colours range from deep black to pure white, passing through chestnut or bay, and many tints of brown or ashy-grey, while often the feathers are more or less closely barred with some darker shade, and the black is very frequently glossed with violet, blue, or green—or, in addition, spangled with white, The white, on the other hand, is not rarely freckled, streaked, or barred with grey, rufous- brown, or black. In some examples the barring is most regularly concentric, in others more or less broken-up or undulating, and the latter may be said of the streaks, It was ascertained by Montagu, and has since been confirmed by the still wider experience and if possible more carefully conducted observation of Mr Bartlett, that every Ruff in each successive year assumes tufts and frill exactly the same in colour and markings as those he wore in the preceding season ; and thus, polymorphic as is the male as a species, as an individual he is unchangeable in his wedding-garment —a lesson that might possibly be applied to many other birds. The white frill is said to be the rarest.

That all this wonderful “show” is the consequence of the polygamous habit of the Ruff can scarcely be doubted. No other species of Limicoline bird has, so far as is known, any tendency to it. Indced, in many species of Limicole, as the Dotterel, the Gopwirs (vol. x. p. 720), Phalaropes, and perhaps some others, the female is larger and more brightly coloured than the male, who in such cases seems to take upon himself some at least of the domestic duties, Both Montagu and Graves, to say nothing of other writers, state that the Ruffs, in England, were far more numerous than the Reeves; and their testimony can hardly be doubted; though in Germany Naumann (Vog. Deutschland’s, vii. p.

- Internally there is a great difference in the form of the posterior margin of the sternum, as long ago remarked by Nitzsch,

- This “ruff” has been compared to that of Elizabethan or Jacobean costume, but it is essentially different, since that was open in front and widest and most projecting behind, whereas the bird’s

decorative apparel is most developed in front and at the sides and scarcely exists behind.

544) considers that this is only the case in the earlier part of the season, and that later the females greatly out- number the males. It remains to say that the moral characteristics of the Ruff exceed even anything that might be inferred from what has been already stated. By no one have they been more happily described than by Wolley, in a communication to Hewitson (Zggs of Brit. Birds, 3d ed., p. 346), as follows :—

«(The Ruff, like other fine gentlemen, takes much more trouble with his courtship than with his duties as a husband. Whilst the Reeves are sitting on their eggs, scattered about the swamps, he is to be seen far away flitting about in flocks, and on the ground dancing and sparring with his companions. Before they are con- fined to their nests, it is wonderful with what devotion the females arc attended by their gay followers, who seem to be each trying to be more attentive than the rest. Nothing can be more expressive of humility and ardent love than some of the actions of the Ruff. He throws himself prostrate on the ground, with every feather on his body standing up and quivering; but he seems as if he were afraid of coming too near his mistress. If she flies off, he starts up in an instant to arrive before her at the next place of alighting, and all his actions are full of life and spirit. But none of his spirit is expended in care for his family. He never comes to see afteran enemy. In the[Lapland] marshes, a Reeve now and then flies near with a scarcely audible ka-ka-kuk ; but she seems a dull bird, and makes no noisy attack on an invader.”

Want of space forbids a fuller account of this extremely interesting species. Its breeding-grounds extend from Great Britain! across northern Europe and Asia; but the birds become less numerous towards the east. They winter in India, reaching even Ceylon, and Africa as far as the Cape of Good Hope. The Ruff also occasionally visits Iceland, and there are several well-

authenticated records of its occurrence on the eastern coast of the United States, while an example is stated (bis, 1875, p. 332) to have been received from the northern part of South America. (A. N.)

RUFINUS, Tyrannivs (Turranius, Toranvs), the well-known contemporary of Jerome, was born at or near Aquileia about the year 345. In early life he studied rhetoric, and while still comparatively young he entered the cloister as a catechumen, receiving baptism about 370, About the same time a casual visit of Jerome to Aquileia led to the formation of a close and intimate friendship between the two students, and shortly after Jerome's departure for the East Rufinus also was drawn thither (in 372 or 373) by his interest in its theology and monasticism. He first settled in Egypt, hearing the lectures of Didymus, the Origenistic teacher at Alexandria, and also cultivating frieudly relations with Macarius and other ascetics in the desert. In Egypt, if not even before leaving Italy, he had become intimately acquainted with Melania, a wealthy and devout Roman matron, who since the death of her husband had devoted all her means to religious and charitable works ; and when she removed to Palestine, taking with her a number of clergy and monks on whom the persecu- tions of Valens had borne heavily, Rufinus ultimately (about 378) followed her. While his patroness lived in a convent of her own in Jerusalem, Rufinus, in close co-operation with her and at her expense, gathered togetlier a number of monks in a monastery on the Mount of Olives, devoting himself at the same time with much ardour to the study of Greek theology. When Jerome came to reside at Bethlehem in 386 the friendship formed at Aquileia was renewed. Another of the intimates of Rufinus was John, bishop of Jerusalem, and formerly a Nitrian monk, by whom he was ordained to the priesthood in 390. In 394, in consequence of the attack upon the doctrines of Origen made by Epiphanius of Salamis during a visit to Jerusalem, a fierce quarrel broke out, which found Rufinus and Jerome ranged on different sides; and, though three

u In England of late years it has been known to breed only in one locality, the name or situation of which it is not desirable to publish.

years afterwards a formal reconciliation was brought about between Jerome and John through the intervention of third parties, the breach between Jerome and Rufinus re- mained unhealed.

In the autumn of 397 Rufinus embarked for Rome, where, finding that the theological controversies of the East were exciting much interest and curiosity, he published a Latin translation of the Apology of Pamphilus for Origen, and also (398-399) a somewhat free rendering of the wept dpxav of that author himself. In the preface to the latter work he had referred to Jerome as an admirer of Origen, and as having already translated some of his works ; this allusion proved very annoying to the subject of it, who was now exceedingly sensitive as to his reputation for orthodoxy, and the consequence was a bitter pamphlet war, very wonderful to the modern onlooker, who finds it difficult to see anything discreditable in the accusation against a Biblical scholar that he had once thought well of Origen, or in the countercharge against a translator that he had avowedly exercised editorial functions as well. Some time during the pontificate of Anastasius (398-402) Rufinus was summoned from Aquileia to Rome to vindicate his orthodoxy, but he excused himself from personal attendance ina written Apologia pro fide sua; the pope in his reply expressly condemned Origen, but leniently left the question of Rufinus's orthodoxy to his own conscience. In 408 we find Rufinus at the monastery of Pinetum (in the Campagna ?); thence he was driven by the arrival of Alaric to Sicily, being accompanied by Melania in his flight. In Sicily he was engaged in translating the Homilies of Origen when he died in 410.

The original works of Rufinus are—(1) De Aduitcratione Inbrorum Origenis—an appendix to his translation of the Apology of Pamphilus, and intended to show that many of tho features in Origen's teaching which were then held to be objectionable arise from interpolations and falsifications of the genuine text; (2) De Benedictionibus XII Patriarcharwm Libri II,—an exposition of Gen. xlix.; (3) Apologia s. Invectivarum in Hieronymum Libri IT; (4) Apologia pro Fide Sua ad Anastasium Pontificem ; (5) Mistoria Eremitica—consisting of the lives of thirty-three monks of the Nitrian desert; (6) Lxpositio Symbolt. The Historie Lcclesiastice Libri XI of Rufinus consist partly of a free translation of Eusebius (10 books in 9) and partly of a continuation (bks. x. and xi.) down to the time of Theodosius the

Great. Thc other translations of Rufinus are—(1) the Jnstituta Monachorum and some of the Homilies of Basil ; (2) the Apology of Pamphilus, referred to above ; (3) Origen's Principia ; (4) Origen's Homilies (Gen.—Kings, also Cant. and Rom.) ; (5) Oguscula of Gregory of Nazianzus ; (6) the Sententiz# of Sixtus, an unknown Greek philosopher ; (7) the Sententiz# of Evagrius ; (8) the Clementine Recognitions (the only

form in which that work is now extant); (9) the Canon Paschalis of Anatolius Alexandrinus.

Vallarsi's uncompleted edition of Rufinus (vol. i., fol., Verona, 1745) contains the De Benedictionibus, the Apologies, the Expositio Symboli, the Historia Eremitica, and the two original books of the Hisé. Eccl. See also Migne, Patrol. (vol. xxi. of the Latin series), For the translations, see the various editions of Origen, Euscbius, &c.

RUGBY, a market-town of Warwickshire, is finely situated on a table-land rising from the southern bank of the Avon, at the junction of several railway lines, and near the Grand Junction Canal, 30 miles E.S.E. of Birmingham, and 20 §.8.W. of Leicester. It is a well- built town, with a large number of modern houses erected for private residences. It occupies a gravel site, is well drained, and has a good supply of water. It owes its importance to the grammar school, built and endowed by Laurence Sheriff, a merchant grocer and servant to Queen Elizabeth, and a native of the neighbouring village of Brownsover. The endowment consisted of the parsonage of Brownsover, Sheriff's mansion house in Rugby, and one- third (8 acres) of his estate in Middlesex, near the Found- ling Hospital, London, which, being let on building leases, gradually increased to about £5000 a year. The full endowment was obtained in 1653. The school originally stood opposite the parish church, and was removed to its

o6

present site on the south side of the town between 1740 and 1750. In 1809 it was rebuilt from designs by Hake- will; the chapel, dedicated to St Lawrence, was added in 1820. At the tercentenary of the school in 1867 subscrip- tions were set on foot for founding scholarships, building additional schoolrooms, rebuilding or enlarging the chapel, and other

objects. The chapel was rebuilt and recon- secrated in 1872. A swimming bath was erected in 1876; the Temple observatory, containing a fine equatorial refrac- tor by Alvan Clark, was built in 1877, and the Temple read- ing room with the art museum in 1878. The workshops underneath the gymnasium were opened in 1880, anda new big school and class rooms were erected in 1885. There are three major and four minor exhibitions for students to any university in the United Kingdom. From about 70 in 1777 the numbers attending the school have increased to over 400. A great impulse was given to the progress of the school during the headmastership of Dr Arnold, 1827-1842. The best known of Arnold's successors are Tait, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, and Temple, the present bishop of London. The parish church of St Andrew's is, with the exception of the tower and the north arcade in the nave, entirely modern, having been built from designs by Mr Butterfield at a cost of £22,000, and reconsecrated in 1879. The daughter church of the Holy Trinity, a handsome building by Sir Gilbert Scott, in close proximity to St Andrew's, was erected in 1853, St Marie's Catholic Church is in the Early English style. A town-hall was erected in 1858, at a cost of £7000. There are a number of charities, including Laurence Sheriff's almshouses (founded 1567), Elborow's almshouses (1707), Miss Butlin's almshouses (1851), and the hospital of St Cross, opened in 1884, at a cost of £20,000. A public recreation ground was provided by the local government board in 1877. The town has an import- ant cattle market. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1617 acres) in 1871 was 8385, and in 1881 it was 9891.

Rugby was originally a hamlet of the adjoining parish of Clifton- on-Dunsmore, and is separately treated of as such in Domesday Book. Ernaldus de Bosco (Ernald de Bois), lord of the manor of Clifton, seems to have erected the first chapel in Rugby, in the reign of Stephen, about 1140. It was afterwards granted by him, with certain lands, to endow the abbey of St Mary, Leicester, which grant was confirmed by his successors and by royal charter of Henry II. In the second year of King John (1200) a suit took place between Henry de Rokeby, lord of the manor of Rugby, and Paul, abbot of St Mary, Leicester, which resulted in the former obtaining possession of the advowson of Rugby, on condition of homage and service to the abbot of Leicester. By virtue of this agreement the chapel was converted into a parish church, and the vicarage into a rectory. In 1350

Ralph, Lord Stafford, became possessed of the manor and advowson of Rugby, and considerably enlarged the parish church. Subsequent alterations, notably in 1814 and 1831, left little of this structure remaining except the tower and north arcade in the nave. The advowson of Rugby is now the property of the earl of Craven; and the late rector was widely known and honoured as ‘the poet pastor,” John Moultrie.

RUGE, Arnotp (1803-1880), German philosophical and political writer, was born at Bergen, in the island of Riigen, on the 13th September 1803. He studied at Halle, Jena, and Heidelberg, and became an enthusiastic adherent of the party which sought to create a free and united Germany. For his zeal in this cause he had to spend five years in the fortress of Kolberg, where he devoted himself to the study of classical writers, especially Plato and the Greek poets. On his release in 1830, he published Schill und die Seinen, a tragedy, and a transla- tion of Qidipus in Colonus. Ruge settled in Halle, where in 1838, in association with his friend Echtermayer, he founded the Hallesche Jahrbiicher fiir deutsche Kunst und Wissenschaft. In this periodical, which soon took a very high place, he discussed all the great questions which were then agitating the best minds in Europe, dealing

with them from the point of view of the Hegelian philo. sophy, interpreted in the most liberal sense. The Jahr. bticher was detested by the orthodox party in Prussia ; bug as it was published in Leipsic, the editors fancied that it was beyond the reach of the Prussian Government. Tp 1840, however, soon after the accession of King Frederick William IV., they were ordered, on account of the name of the periodical, to have it printed in Halle, subject to the censorship there. Thereupon Ruge went to Dresden, and the Jahrbticher (with which Echtermayer was no longer connected) continued to appear in Leipsic, but with the title Deutsche Jahrbiicher, and without the names of the editors. It now became more liberal than ever, and in 1843 was suppressed by the Saxon Government. In Paris Ruge tried to act with Karl Marx as co-editor of the Deutsch-Franzsische Jahrbiicher, but the two friends soon parted, Ruge having little sympathy with Marx’s socialist theories. Ruge next associated himself with a publishing firm in Ziirich, and when it was put down he attempted to establish a firm of his own in

Leipsic, but his scheme was thwarted by the Saxon Government. In the revolu- tionary movement of 1848 Ruge played a prominent part. He organized the Extreme Left in the Frankfort parlia- ment, and for some time he lived in Berlin as the editor of the Reform, in which he advocated the opinions of the Left in the Prussian National Assembly. The career of the Keform being cut short by the Prussian Government, Ruge soon afterwards visited Paris, hoping to establish, through his friend Ledru-Rollin, some relations between German and French republicans; but in 1849 both Ledru-Rollin and Ruge had to take refuge in London. Here, in company with Mazzini and other advanced poli- ticians, they formed a " European Democratic Committee." From this committee Ruge soon withdrew, and in 1850 he went to Brighton, where he supported himself by working both as a teacher in schools and as a writer. He took a passionate interest in the events of 1866 and 1870, and as a publicist vigorously supported the cause of Prussia against Austria, and that of Germany against France. In his last years he received from the German Government a pension of 3000 marks. He died on the 31st December 1880.

Ruge was a man of generous sympathies and an able writer, but he did not produce any work of enduring importance. In 1846-48 his Gesammelte Schriften were published in ten volumes. After this time he wrote, among other books, Unser System, Revolutions- novellen, Die Loge des Humanismus, and Aus friiherer Zeit (his memoirs). He also wrote many poems, and several dramas and romances, and translated into German various English works, in- cluding the Letters of Junius and Buckle's History of Civilization.

RUGEN, the largest island belonging to Germany, is situated in the Baltic Sea, immediately opposite the town of Stralsund, 14 miles off the north-west coast of Pomerania in Prussia, from which it is separated by the narrow Strelsasund. Its shape is exceedingly irregular, and its coast-line is broken by very numerous bays and peninsulas, sometimes of considerable size. The general name is applied by the natives only to the roughly trian- gular main trunk of the island, while the larger peninsulas, the landward extremities of which taper to very narrow necks of land, are considered to be as distinct from Riigen as the various adjacent smaller islands which are also statistically included under the name. The chief penin- sulas are those

of Jasmund and Wittow on the north, and Monchgut, at one time the property of the monastery of Eldena, on the south-east; and the chief neighbouring islands are Unmanz and Hiddensoe, both off the north- west coast. The greatest length of Riigen from north to south is 32 miles ; its greatest breadth is 254 miles; and its area is 377 square miles. The surface gradually rises towards the west to Rugard (335 feet), the “eye of

Riigen,” near Bergen, but the highest point is the Hertha- burg (505 fect) in Jasmund. Erratic blocks are scattered throughout the island, and the roads are made with granite, Though much of Rigen is flat and sandy, the fine beech-woods which cover great part of it and the northern coast scenery combine with the convenient sea- bathing offered by the various villages round the coast to attract large numbers of visitors annually. The most beautiful and attractive part of the island is the peninsula of Jasmund, which terminates to the north in the Stuben- kammer (from two Slavonic words meaning “rock steps 2) a sheer chalk cliff by the sea, the summit of which, known as the Konigsstuhl, is 420 fect above sea-level. The east of Jasmund is clothed with an extensive beech-wood called the Stubbenitz, in which lies the Burg or Hertha Lake. Connected with Jasmund only by the narrow isthmus of Schabe to the west is the peninsula of Wittow, the most fertile part of the island. At its north-west extremity rises the height of Arcona, with a lighthousc.

The official capital of the island is Bergen (3662 inhabitants), connected since 1883 with Stralsund by a railway and ferry. The other chief places are Garz (2014), Sagard (1447), Gingst (1285), and Putbus (1752). The last is the old capital of a barony of the princes of Putbus. Sassuitz, Gohren, and Putbus are among the favourite bathing resorts. Schoritz was the birthplace of the patriot and poet, Arndt (1769-1860). Ecclesiastically, Riigen is divided into 27 parishes, in which the pastoral succession is said to be almost hereditary. The inhabitants are distinguished from those of the main-land by peculiarities of dialect, costume, and habits ; and even the various peninsulas differ from each other in these particulars. ‘The peninsula of Monchgut has best preserved its peculiarities ; but there too primitive simplicity is yield- ing to the influence .of the annual stream of summer

visitors. The inhabitants rear some cattle, and Riigen has long been fainous for its geese; but the only really con- siderable industry is fishing,—the herring-fishery being especially important. Riigen, with the neighbouring islands, forms a governmental department, with a popula- tion (1880) of 46,115.

The original Germanic inhabitants of Riigen were dispossessed by Slavs ; and there are still various relics of the long reign of paganism that ensucd. In the Stubbenitz and elsewhere Huns' or giants' graves (see p. 52, supra) are common; and near the Hertha Lake are the ruins of an ancient edifice which some have sought (though perhaps erroncously) to identify with the shrine of the heathen deity Hertha or Nerthus, referred to by Tacitus. On Arcona in Wittow are the remains of an ancient fortress, enclosing a temple of the four-headed god Svantevit, which was destroyed in 1168 by the Danish king Waldemar I., when he made himself master of the island. From that date until 1825 Riigen was ruled by a suc- cession of native princes, at first under Danish supremacy; and, after being for a century and a half the possession of a branch of the ruling family in Pomerania, it was finally united with that provinee in 1478, and passed with it into the possession of Sweden in 1648. With the rest of Western Pomerania Riigen has belonged to Prussia sinee 1815.

RUHNKEN, Davin (1723-1798), one of the most illustrious scholars of the Netherlands, was of German origin, having been born in Pomerania in 1723. His parents had him educated for the church, but after a residence of two years at the university of Wittenberg, he determined to live the life of a scholar. His biographer (Wyttenbach) somewhat quaintly exhorts all studious youths who feel the inner call as Ruhnken did to show the same boldness in crossing the wishes of their parents. At Wittenberg, Ruhnken lived in close intimacy with the two most distinguished professors, Ritter and Berger, who fired his passion for things ancient, and guided his studies. To them he owed a thorough grounding in ancient history and Roman antiquities and literature; and from them he learned what distinguished him among the scholars of his

time, a pure and at the same time a vivid Latin style. At Wittenberg, too, Ruhnken derived valuable mental training from study in mathematics and Roman law. Probably nothing would have severed him from his. surroundings there but a desire which daily grew upon him to explore the inmost recesses of Greek literature. Neither at Wittenberg nor at any other German university was Greek in that age seriously studied. Jt was taught in the main to students in divinity for the sake of the Greek Testament and the early fathers of the church,—taught as a necessary appendage to Hebrew and Syriac, and generally by the same professors. F. A. Wolf is the real creator of Greek scholarship in modern Germany, and Porson's gibe that ''the Germans in Greek are sadly to seek" was barbed with truth. It is significant of the state of Hellenic studies in Germany in 1743 that their leading exponents were Gesner and Ernesti. Ruhnken was well advised by his friends at Wittenberg to seek the university of Leyden, where, stimulated by the influence of Bentley, the great scholar Tiberius Hemsterhuis had founded the only real school of Greek learning which had existed on the Continent since the days of Joseph Scaliger and Isaac Casaubon.

Perhaps no two men of letters ever lived in closer friendship than Hemsterhuis and Ruhnken during the twenty-three years which passed from Ruhnken's arrival in the Netherlands in 1743 to the death of Hemsterhuis in 1766. A few years made it clear that Ruhnken and Valckenaer were the two pupils of the great master on whoni his inheritance must devolve. As his reputation spread, many efforts were made to attract Ruhnken back to Germany, but the air of freedom which he drew in the Netherlands was more to him than all the flesh-pots his native land could offer. Indeed, after settling in Leyden, he only left the country once, when he spent a year in Paris, ransacking the public libraries (1755). For work achieved, this year of Ruhnken may compare even with the famous year which Ritschl spent in Italy. In 1757 Ruhnken was appointed lecturer in Greek, to assist Hemsterhuis, and in 1761 he succeeded Oudendorp, with the title of "ordinary professor of history and eloquence," but practically as Latin professor. This promotion drew on him the enmity of some native Netherlanders, who deemed themselves (not: without some show of reason) to possess stronger claims for a chair of Latin. The only defence made by Ruhnken was to publish works on Latin literature which eclipsed and

silenced his rivals. In 1766 Valckenaer succeeded Hemsterhuis in the Greek chair. The intimacy between the two colleagues was only broken by Valckenaer's death in 1785, and stood without strain the test of common candidature for the office (an import- ant one at Leyden) of university librarian, in which Ruhnken was successful. Ruhnken's later years were clouded by severe domestic misfortune, and by the poli- tical commotions which, after the outbreak of the war with England in 1780, troubled the Netherlands without ceasing, and threatened to extinguish the university of Leyden. The year of Ruhnken's death was 1798.

Personally, he was as far as possible removed from being a recluse or a pedant. He had a well-knit and even handsome frame, attractive manners (though some- times tinged with irony), and a nature simple and healthy, and open to impressions from all sides. Fond of society, he cared little to what rank his associates belonged, if they were genuine men in whom he might find something to learn. His biographer even says of him in his early days that he knew how to sacrifice to the Sirens without proving traitor to the Muses. Life in the open air had a great attraction for him ; he was fond of sport, and would sometimes devote to it two or three days in the week. In

his bearing towards other scholars Ruhnken was generous and dignified, distributing literary aid with a free hand, and meeting onslaughts for the most part witha smile. It would be difficult to point out in the history of scholarsbip the name of another man who so thoroughly possessed the savour vivre.

Jn the records of learning Ruhnken occupies an im- portant position. He forms a principal link in the chain which connects Bentley with the modern scholarship of the Continent. The spirit and the aims of Hemsterhuis, the great reviver of Continental learning, were committed to his trust, and were faithfully maintained. He greatly widened the circle of those who valued taste and precision in classical scholarship. He powerfully aided the eman- cipation of Greek studies from theology; nor must it be forgotten that he first in modern times dared to think of rescuing Plato from the hands of the

professed philo- sophers—men presumptuous enough to interpret the ancient sage with little or no knowledge of the language in which he wrote.

Ruhnken's principal works are editions of (1) Timeus's Lexicon of Platonie Words, (2) Thaleleus and other Greek commentators on Roman law, (3) Rutilius Lupus and other grammarians, (4) Velleius Paterculus, (5) the works of Muretus. He also occupied himself much with the history of Greek literature, particularly the oratorical literature, with the Homeric hymns, the scholia on Plato, and the Greek and Roman grammarians and rhetoricians. A dis- covery famous in its time was that in the text of the work of Apsines on rhetoric a large piece of a work by Longinus was embedded. Recent vicws of the writings attributed to Longinus have lessened the interest of this discovery without lessening its merit. The biography of Ruhnken was written by his great pupil Wyttenbach, soon after his death. (J. 5. BR.)

RUHRORT, a busy trading town in Prussia, is situated at the junction of the Ruhr and Rhine, in the midst of a productive coal district, 15 miles north of Diisseldorf. tuhrort has the largest river harbour in Germany, with very extensive quays ; and most of the 14 million tons of coal which are annually exported from the neighbourhood are despatched in the fleet of steam-tugs and barges which belong to the port. About one half of the coal goes to Holland, and the rest to towns on the upper Rhine. Grain and timber are also exported. In 1881 11,282 craft, carrying 1,791,213 tons, left the harbour. The goods traffic between Ruhrort and Homberg on the opposite bank of the Rhine is carried on by large steam ferry boats, in which the railway waggons are placed with the help of towers, 128 feet high, on each side of the river. The industries of the town include active shipbuilding, iron and tin working, and the making of cordage and machinery. The inhabitants numbered 1443 in 1816, and 9130 in 1880. Ruhrort formerly belonged to Cleves: it received town rights in 1587,

RULHIERE, or Rutuiires, CLaupE CARLOMAN DE (1735-1791), poet and historian, was born at Bondy in 1735, and died at Paris in 1791. He was for a time a soldier, and served under Richelieu in'Germany. But at twenty-five he accompanied Breteuil to St Petersburg as secretary of legation. Here he actually saw the revolu- tion which seated Catherine II. on the throne, and thus obtained the facts of his best-known and best work, the short

sketch called Anecdotes sur la Revolution de Russie en 1762. It was not published till after the empress's death. The later years of Rulhitre's life were spent either in Paris, where he held an appointment in the foreign office and went much into society, or else in travelling over Germany and Poland. The distracted affairs of this latter country gave him the subject of his longest work, Histoire de ?Anarchie de Pologne (1807), which was never finished, and which the patriotism of its latest editor, M. Ostrowski, has rather unjustifiably rebaptized Révolutions de Pologne. Rulhiére was made an Academician in 1787.

RU H—

RUM

Besides the historical works mentioned, he wrote one on the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes (1788).

Rulhiére as an historian has much merit of style and arrangement, and the short sketch of the Russian revolution is justly ranked among the masterpieces of the kind in French. Of the larger Poland Carlyle, as justly, complains that its allowance of fact ig too small in proportion to its bulk. The author was also a fertile writer of vers de société, short satires, epigrams, &c., which show much point and polish, and he had a considerable reputation among the witty andill-natured group also containing Chamfort, Rivarol, Champcenetz, &c. On the other hand he has the credit of being long and disinterestedly assiduous in caring for J. J. Rousseau in his morose old age, until Rousseau as usual quarrelled with him,

Rulhitre's works were published by Anguis in 1819 (Paris, 6 vols. Svo). The

Russian Revolution may be found in the Chefs-d'euvre Historiques of the Collee- tion Didot, and the Poland, with title altered as above, in the same Collection,

RUM is a spirituous liquor, prepared from molasses, skimmings of the boiling house, and other saccharine bye- products, and the refuse juice of the cane-sugar manufac. ture. Its distillation, which is a simple process, may be conducted in connexion with any cane-sugar establish- ment, but the rum which comes to the American and European markets is chiefly the produce of the West India Islands and Guiana. The ordinary method of working in the West Indies is the following. A wash is prepared consisting of sugar skimmings 4 parts, lees of still or dunder 5 parts, and molasses 1 part, the quantity prepared being equal to the capacity of the still in use. Dunder consists of the residue of the still from previous distillations, and it takes the place of a ferment, besides which the acetic acid it contains, derived from the fer- menting wash of previous operations, has a favourable influence on the progress of attenuation. The wash pre- pared as above is placed in the fermenting vat, where, according to weather and other conditions, the fermenta- tion proceeds more or less briskly ; but usually a week or ten days is the period required for attenuation, during which time the scum formed is removed from the surface of the vat twice daily. When sufficiently attenuated, the wash is run into the still, which is generally of a

simple construction, and distilled off, the first product being “low wines,” which on redistillation come over as “high wines” or strong rum. When a Pontefex still is used, which contains two intermediate “retorts” between the still and the worm, a strong spirit is obtained at the first distillation. The charge of wash yields from 10 to 12 per cent. of rum, of an average strength of 25° over proof. Pure distilled rum is an entirely colourless liquid, but as imported and sold it generally has a deep brown colour imparted by caramel or by storage in sherry casks. It has a peculiar aroma, derived principally from the pre- sence of a minute proportion of butyric ether. Rum varies very considerably in quality, the finest being known as Jamaica rum, whether it is the product of that island or not. An inferior quality of rum is known among the French as tafia ; and the lowest quality, into the wash for which debris of sugar cane enters, is called negro rum, and is mostly consumed by the coloured workers in the sugar houses and distilleries. The planters sometimes put rinds and slices of pine-apple into the barrels in which rum is matured, to improve and add to its flavour, and occasion- ally anise and other flavouring ingredients are also used. The spirit prepared from molasses of beet-sugar factories cannot be classed with rum. The product has a highly disagreeable odour and taste, and it can only be rendered fit for consumption by repeated distillation and concentra- tion toa high degree of strength, whereby the spirit is rendered “silent,” or has only a faint rum flavour. In this condition it is used for mixing with strongly flavoured rum, and for the preparation of a fictitious rum, the flavour of which is due to “rum essence,”—a mixture of artificial ether, birch bark oil, and other substances. Cane- sugar molasses enters largely into the materials from which

Arrack (q.v.), the spirit of Java and the Indian Archi- pelago, is prepared, but its flavour depends more on palm- trcc toddy, which also is a constituent of the wash. The imports of rum into the United Kingdom and the home consumption have been decreasing for a number of years.’ RUMFORD, Count. See Tuompson, Sir BENJAMIN. RUMI. Mohammed b. Mohammed b. Husain albalkhi, better known as Maulana Jal4l-uddin Rumi, the greatest Stific poet of Persia, was born on the 30th of September 1207 (604 au. 6th of Rab 1) at Balkh, in Khorasdn, where his family had

resided from time immemorial, rich in property and public renown. He claimed descent from the caliph Abtbckr, and from the Khwarism shah Sultan “Alé-uddin b. Tukush (1199-1220), whose only daughter, Malika-i-Jahan, had been married to Jalal-uddin’s grand- father. Her son, Mohammed, commonly called Baha- uddin Walad, was a famous doctor of Balkh, who, to escape the jealousy with which the sultan viewed his influence, emigrated to Asia Minor in 1212. Young Jalal-uddin was only five years old at that time, but the signs of lis future greatness in spiritual matters began already to mani- fest themselves in precocious knowledge and in ecstasies and visions. After residing for some time at Malatiyah and afterwards at Erzinjan in Armenia, Bahd-uddin was ealled to Larindah in Asia Minor, as principal of the local college, and there young Jalél-uddin, who had meanwhile grown under the careful tuition of his father in wisdom and holiness, attained his maturity, and married in 1226 Jauhar Khatun, the daughter of Lal4 Sharaf-uddin of Samarkand. Finally, Bahd-uddin was invited to Iconium by “Al4-uddin Kaikubad (1219-1236), the sultan of Asia Minor, or, as it is commonly called in the East, Rim,—whence Jalal-uddin’s surname (takhallus) Rumi. After Baha-uddin’s death in 1231, Jalal-uddin went to Aleppo and Damascus for a short time to study, but, as the mere positive sciences in which he had been particu- larly trained failed to satisfy him, on his return to Iconium, whcre he became by and by professor of four separate colleges, he took for nine years as his spiritual guide Sayyid Burhan-uddin Husaini of Tirmidh, one of his father’s disciples, and later on the wandering Sufi Shams- uddin of Tabriz, who arrived in Iconium on the 29th of November 1244, and soon acquired the most powerful influence over Jaldl-uddin, who even adopted his name as takhallus in his ghazals or mystic odes. Shams- uddin’s rather aggressive character, however, roused the indignation of the people of Iconium against him, and during a riot in which Jalal-uddin’s eldest son, “Alé-uddin, was killed, he was arrested and probably executed; at least he was no more seen. This fate of his teacher and friend, together with the untimely death of his son, threw Jalal-uddin into deep melancholy, and in remembrance of these victims of popular wrath he founded the order of the Maulawi or (in Turkish pronunciation) Mewlewi der- vishes, famous for their piety as well as for their peculiar garb of mourning, their music and their mystic dance (sania), which is the outward representation of the circling inovement of the spheres, and the inward symbol of the circling movement of the soul caused by the

vibrations of Rum Shrub is a kind of liqueur, or cold punch, the basis of which is rum, lemon juice, and sugar. It is prepared by adding to 34 gallons of proof rum 2 oz. of the essential oil of orange and an equal quantity of essential oil of lemon dissolved in one quart of spirit, and 300 ib of refined sugar dissolved in 20 gallons of water. This combination is thoroughly mixed together, after which there is added sufficient orange Juice or solution of tartaric acid to produce a slight pleasant acidity. After agitating the mixture again for some time, 20 gallons of water ave added, bringing the quantity up to 100 gallons, and the agitation of the whole is continued for half an hour. In about a fortnight's time the shrub should be brilliant and ready for bottling. Other flavouring

ingredients are occasionally added, and the eompound may be varied according to taste.

09

a Suff's fervent love to God. The establishment of this order, which still possesses numerous cloisters throughout the Turkish empirc, and the leadership of which has been kept in Jalal-uddin's family in Iconium uninterruptedly for the last six hundred years, gave a new stimulus both to the zeal and energy and the poetical inspiration of the great shaikh. Most of his matchless odes, in which he soars on the wings of a genuine enthusiasm, high over earth and heaven up to the throne of Almighty God, were composed in honour of the Maulawi dervishes, and even his opus magnum, the Mathnawi or, as it is usually called, The Spiritual Mathnawi (mathnawi-i-ma'nawl), a production of the highest poetical and religious intuition in six books or daftars, with 30,000 to 40,000 double-rhymed verses, can be traced to the same source. The idea of this immense collection of ethical and moral precepts, interwoven with numerous anecdotes and comments on verses of the Koran and sayings of the Prophet, which the Eastern world reveres as the greatest devotional work, the study of which securcs eternal bliss, was first suggested to the poet by his favourite disciple Hasan, better known as Hus4m-uddin, who became in 1258 Jaldl-uddin's chief assistant. He had frequently observed that the members of the Maulawi fraternity read with great delight the mystic mathnawis of Sanda'i and Farid-uddin 'Attdr, and induced his master to compose a similar poem on a larger scale. Jaldl-

uddin readily fell in with this suggestion and dictated to him, with a short interruption, the whole work during the remaining years of his life. Soon after the completion of this masterpiece Jalal-uddin died on the 17th of December 1273 (672 a.u. 5th of Jumada IT.), worshipped as a saint by high and low. His first successor in the rectorship of the Maulawi fraternity was Husim-uddin himself, after whose death in 1284 Jalal-uddin's younger and only surviving son, Shaikh Bahaudd-in Ahmed, commonly called Sultan Walad, and favourably known as author of the mystical mathnawi, Rabdbndma, or the Book of the Guitar (died 1312), was duly installed as grand-master of the order.

Jalal-uddin's life is fully described in Shams-uddin Ahmed Aflaki's Mandkib-ul 'drifin (written between 718 and 754 4.u.), the most important portions of which have been translated by J. W. Redliouse in the preface to his English metrieal version of The Mesnevi, Book the First (London, 1881 ; Triibner's Oriental series). Complete editions have been printed in Bombay, Lucknow, Tabriz, Constantinople, and in Bulak (with a Turkish transla- tion, 1268 A.H.), at the end of whieh a seventh daftar is added, the genuineness of which is refuted by a remark of Jalal-uddin himself in one of the Bodleian copies of the poem, Ouseley, 294 (f. 828a sqg.). The revised edition by 'Abd-ullatif (made between 1024 and 1032 a.H.) is still unpublished, but the same author's eommentary on the Mathnawt, Latd'if-ulma'nawwt, and his glossary, Latd@'if-allughdt, have been lithographed in Cawnpore (1876) and Lueknow (1877) respectively, the latter under the title Farhang- i-mathnawt. For the other numerous eommentaries and for further biographical and literary particulars of Jalal-uddin see Rieu's Cat. of the Persian MSS. of the Brit. Mus., vol. ii. p. 584 sg.3 A. Sprenger's Oudh Cat., p. 489; Sir Gore Ouseley, Nottees of Persian Poets, p. 112 sq.; and H. Ethé, in Morgenldndische Studien, Leipsie, 1870, p. 95 sg. Seleet poems from Jaldl-uddin's diwan (often styled Diwdn-i-Shams-i-Tabriz) have been translated in German verse by V. von Rosenzweig, Vienna, 1838. (H. E.)

RUMINANTS. See Mamata, vol. xv. p. 431.

RUMKER, Cart Lupwie Curistian (1788-1862), German astronomer, was born in Mecklenburg on May 28, 1788. He served in the British navy for some years until 1817 ; in 1821 he went to New South Wales as astronomer

at the observatory built at Parramatta by Sir Thomas Brisbane (see OBSERVATORY, vol. xvii. p. 716). He re- turned to Europe in 1831, and took charge of the school of navigation at Hamburg and the observatory attached to it. His principal work is a Catalogue of 12,000 fixed stars from meridian observations made at Hamburg, published in 1843. In 1857 he retired and went to reside in Lisbon, where he died on December 21, 1862.

60

RUNCIMAN, Atexanper (1736-1785), historical painter, was born in Edinburgh in 1736. He studied at the Foulis's Academy, Glasgow, and at the age of thirty proceeded to Rome where he spent five years. It was at this time that he became acquainted with Fuseli, a kindred spirit, between whose productions and those of Runciman there is a marked similarity. The painter's earliest efforts had been in landscape; "other artists," it was said of him, "talked meat and drink, but he talked landscape." He soon, however, turned to historical and imaginative subjects, exhibiting his Nausicaa at Play with her Maidens in 1767 at the Free Society of British Artists, Edinburgh. On his return from Italy, after a brief residence in London, where in 1772 he exhibited in the Royal Academy, he settled in Edinburgh, and was appointed master of the Trustees' Academy. He was patronized by Sir James Clerk, whose hall at Penicuik House he decorated with a series of subjects from Ossian. He also executed various religious paintings and an altarpiece in the Cowgate Episcopal Church, Edinburgh, and easel pictures of Cymon and Iphigenia, Sigismunda Weeping over the Heart of Tancred, and Agrippina Landing with the Ashes of Germanicus. He died in Edinburgh on October 4, 1785. His works, while they show high intention and considerable imagination, are frequently defective in form and extravagant in gesture.

RUNCIMAN, Joun (1744-1766), historical painter, a younger brother of the above, accompanied him to Rome, and died at Naples in 1766. He was an artist of great promise. His Flight into Egypt, in the National Gallery of Scotland, is remarkable for the precision of its execution and the mellow richness of its colouring.

RUNCORN, a market-town and seaport of Cheshire, is pleasantly situated on the south side of the Mersey and near the terminus in that river of the

Bridgewater, the Mersey and Irwell, and the Trent and Mersey Canals, 15 miles §.E. of Liverpool and 15 N.E. of Chester. The Mersey, which here contracts to 400 yards at high water, is crossed by a wrought-iron railway bridge 1500 feet in length. The modern prosperity of the town dates from the completion in 1773 of the Bridgewater Canal, which here descends into the Mersey by a succession of locks. The town was made an independent landing port in 1847, and within recent years large additions have been made to the docks and warehouses. The town possesses ship- building yards, iron foundries, rope works, tanneries, and soap and alkali works. The population of the urban sani- tary district (area 1490 acres) in 1871 was 12,443, and in 1881 it was 15,126.

Owing to the Mersey being here fordable at low water, the place was in early times of considerable military importance. On a rock which formerly jutted some distance farther into the Mersey Ethelfleda erected a castle in 916, but of the building there are now no remains. She is also said to have founded a town, but probably it soon afterwards fell into decay, as it is not noticed in Domesday. The ferry is noticed in a charter in the 12th century.

RUNE. See Atpuaset, vol. i. pp. 607, 612, and SCANDINAVIAN LANGUAGES.

RUNEBERG, Jouan Lupwie (1804-1877), Swedish poet, was born at Jakobstad, in Finland, on the 5th of February 1804. Brought up by an uncle at Uleaborg, he entered the university of Abo in the autumn term of 1822, and in 1826 began to contribute verses to the local news- papers. In the spring of 1827 he received the degree of doctor of philosophy, and shared in the calamity which, in September of the same year, destroyed the city and uni- versity of Abo with fire. Runeberg accepted a tutorship at Saarijairvi, in the interior of Finland, where he remained for three years, studying hard and writing actively. The university had been removed after the great fire to Hel- singfors, and in 1830 the young poct returned thither, as

amanuensis to the council of the university. In the same year he published his first volume of Dikter (Poems), anda collection of Servian folksongs translated into Swedish. In 1831 his verse romance Grafven « Perrho (The Grave in Perrho) received the small gold medal of the Swedish Academy, and the poet married the daughter of Dr Teng- strom, archbishop of Finland. For a tractate on the Medea of Euripides he was in the same year appointed university lecturer on Roman literature. In 1832 he leaped at one bound to the foremost place among Swedish poets with his beautiful little epic Elgskyttarne (The Elk-Hunters) ; and in 1833 he published a second collection of lyrical poems. His comedy Friaren frén Landet (The Country Lover) was not a success in 1834. He returned to more characteristic fields in 1836, when he published the charming idyl in hexameters called Janna. In 1837 Runeberg accepted the chair of Latin at Borg& College, and resided in that little town for the rest of his life.

From Borgaé he continued to pour forth volumes of verse, and he was now recognized in his remote Finland retirement as second only to Tegnér among the poets of Sweden. In 1841 he published Wadeschda, a romance of Russian life, and Jedqudllen (Christmas Eve), an idyl. The third volume of his lyrical pieces bears the date 1843, and the noble cycle of unrhymed verse romances called Kung Rjalar was published in 1844, Finally, in 1848, he achieved a great popular success by his splendid series of poems about the war of independence in 1808, a series which bears the name of Ménrik Stals Stgner (Ensign Steel’s Stories); a second series of these appeared in 1860. From 1847 to 1850 the poet was rector of Borg’ College, a post which he laid down to take the only journey out of Finland which he ever accomplished, a visit to Sweden in 1851. His later writings may be briefly mentioned. In 1853 he collected his prose essays into a volume entitled Smdrre Berdittelser. In the same year he was made president of a committee for the preparation of a national Psalter, which issued, in 1857, a Psalm-Book largely contributed by Runeberg for public use. He once more attempted comedy in his Kan e¢ (Can’t) in 1862, and tragedy, with infinitely more success, in his stately Kungarne pa Salamis (The Kings at Salamis) in 1863. He collected his writings in six volumes in 1873-74, Runeberg died at Borga on the 6th of May 1877.

The poems of Runeberg show the influence of the Greeks and of Goethe upon his mind ; but he possesses a great originality. In an age of convcntionality he was boldly realistic, yet never to the sacrifice of artistic beauty. Less known to the rest of Europe than Tegnér, he yet is now generally considered to excel him asa poet, and to mark the highest attainment hitherto reached by imaginative literature in Sweden.

The life of Johan Ludvig Runeberg has not yet been written in detail, although it is said to be in preparation. The fullest aceount of his life and works is that whieh forms the introduction to the Samlade Skrifter of 1873. It was written by Prof. Nyblom. A minute critieism of Runeberg's prineipal poems, with translations, oeeupies pp. 98-133 of Gosse's Studies in the Literature of Northern

Europe, 1879. A selection of his lyrical pieees was published in an English translation by Messrs Magnusson and Palmer in 1878.

RUNNING. In this mode of progression the step is lighter and gait more rapid than in walking, from which it differs in consisting of a succession of springs from toe to toe, instead of a series of steps from toe to heel. As an athletic exercise, it has been in vogue from the earliest times, and the simple foot race, dpéqos, run straight from starting point to goal, was'a game of the Greek pent- athlon. It was diversified with the diavAodpspos, in which a distance mark was rounded and the starting and winning points were the same, and also by the Spduos SaArray, which might be compared to the modern heavy marching order race. In ancient Italy running was practised in circus exhibitions, as described by Virgil (dn. v. 286 sq.). In modern times it has been developed almost into a science by the Anglo-Saxon race in Great Britain and North America, till the distances recently covered appear almost

fabulous compared with the performances up to the end of the first half of the century. In all kinds of run- ning the entire weight of the body is thrown on the toes, from which light strides are taken with all possible free- dom of action from the hips. At starting the feet are placed about a foot apart, the body being inclined slightly forward, with the weight of it on the right or

hindermost foot. A bent double position with the feet wide apart is on no account advisable. The start cannot be made too quickly on the signal being given. Two or three short steps are taken to get fairly into stride, after which the runner should look straight before him, set his eyes steadfastly on the goal, and run towards it at his longest and quickest stride, care being taken not to swerve or get out of stride.

Running is usually thns classified :—(1) sprinting includes all distances up to 400 yards ; (2) medium distances range from one quarter to three qnarters of a mile; (3) long distances are those | of one mile and upwards. The first-named is the most popular, and is much practised in the north of England, especially at Sheffield, which may be termed the home of sprint running. It is less fatiguing than long distances and requires less arduous training, while strength to a certain extent replaces wind. A great point in sprinting is to obtain a good start, for which purpose incessant pmctice is required. A first-class sprinter when at full speed will clear from 8 to 9 feet in each stride, and his toes leave the ground with inconceivable rapidity. When in good condition he will run 100 yards at top speed in one breath, and probably 150 yards with- out drawing a second one. The quickest authenticated times in which short distances have been run on perfectly level ground are as follows:—120 yards, 11} sec.; 150 yards, 15 sec.; 200 yards, 194 sec.; 300 yards, 30 sec.; and 400 yards, 43% sec.

Of medium distances the qnarter mile race is by far the most difficult to run, as a combination of speed and endurance is requi- site. In facta runner shonld be able to sprint the whole way. Six hundred yards and half a mile are the other chief distances in this class of running. ‘he stride is slower than in sprinting, and a – man cannot maintain the same speed throughout as is possible up to 800 yards. ‘The best authenticated times are—quarter mile, 484 sec.; 600 yards, 1 min. 113 sec. ; half mile, 1 min. 584 sec.; 1000 yards, 2 min. 18 sec. ; three quarter mile, 8 min. 7 sec.

Light wiry men are best fitted for long-distance running, where stamina and wind are more useful than speed. The strides must be long and light. After some miles a runner is unable to keep the weight of the body on his toes any longer owing to fatigue, puts his heels down, and runs flat-footed. The times accomplished of late years by long-distance runners are most

remarkable. Those for the chief distances are as follows :—1 mile, 4 min. 16% sec. ; 2 miles, 9 min. 114 sec.; 8 miles, 14 min. 86 sec.; 4 miles, 19 min. 36 sec. ; 5 miles, 24 min. 40 sec. ; 10 miles, 51 min. 63 sec. ; 20 miles, 1 h. 56 min. 38 sec.; 30 miles, 3 h. 15 min. 9 sec. 5 40 miles, 4 h. 84 min. 27 sec. ; 50 miles, 6 h. 8 min.; 100 miles, 13 h. 26 min. 30 sec. ; 200 miles, 35 h. 9 min. 28 sec. ; 300 miles, 58 h. 17 min. 6 sec. ; 400 miles, 85 h. 52 min.; 500 miles, 109 Ihe 18 min. 20 sec.; 600 miles, 187 h. 25 min. 10 sec. ; 610 miles, 140 h. 34 min. 10 sec.

Nearly all running contests now take place on prepared cinder paths, which from their springiness assist speed considerably. A runner's dress should be as light as possible, and consist merely of a thin jersey, a pair of drawers covering the waist and loins and extending downwards to the top of the knee caps, and heelless run- ning shoes with a few short spikes in the soles just under the tread of the foot. The spikes are longer for sprinting. Chamois leather socks for the toes and ball of the foot may be added, since they diminish concussion as each foot reaches the ground. Since the introduction of ATHLETIC Sports (see vol. iii. p. 12) into England and America commenced in 1860 the popularity of amateur run- ning races has vastly increased. These contests are governed by the rules of the Amateur Athletic Association. At Sheffield a code of rules has been drawn up for the regulation of the more important professional handicaps.

RUPERT (Hropserr), St, a kinsman of the Merovingian house, and bishop of Worms, was invited (696) to Regens- burg (Ratisbon) by Theodo of Bavaria, but finally settled in Salzburg, the bishopric of which was his foundation. He is regarded as the apostle of the Bavarians, not that the land was up to that time altogether heathen, but because of his services in the promotion and consolidation of its Christianity.

The Gesta Sancti Hrodberti Confessoris have been printed in the Archiv fiir Oesterreich. Geschichte, 1882, from a 10th-century MS.

61

RUPERT (1619-1682), prince of Bavaria, the third son of Frederick V., elector palatine and king of Bohemia, and of Elizabeth, sister of Charles I. of England, was born at Prague on December 18, 1619. In 1630 he was

placed at the university of Leyden, where he showed particular readiness in languages and in military discipline. In 1653 he was with the prince of Orange at the siege of Rhyn- berg, and served against the Spaniards as a volunteer in the prince's life-guard. In December 1635 he was at the English court, and was named as leader of the proposed expedition to Madagascar. In 1636 he visited Oxford, when he was made master of arts. Returning to The Hague in 1638, he made the first display of his reckless bravery at the siege of Breda, and shortly afterwards was taken prisoner by the Austrians in the battle before Lemgo. For three years he was confined at Linz, where he withstood the endeavours made to induce him to change his religion and to take service with the emperor. Upon his release in 1642 he returned to The Hague, and from thence went to Dover, but, the Civil War not having yet begun, he returned immediately to Holland. Charles now named Rupert general of the horse, and he joined the king at Leicester in August 1642, being present at the raising of the standard at Nottingham. He was also made a knight of the Garter. It is particularly to be noticed that he brought with him several military inven- tions, and, especially, introduced the " German discipline" in his cavalry operations. He at once displayed the most astonishing activity, fought his first action with success at Worcester in September, and was at Edgehill on October 23. At Aylesbury and Windsor, on the march to London, he received severe checks, but after desperate fighting took Brentford. In 1643 he captured Ciren- cester, but failed before Gloucester, and in February issued his declaration denying the various charges of inhumanity which had been brought against him. At the end of March he set out from Oxford to join the queen at York, took Birmingham, and, after a desperate resistance, Lichfield, but was there suddenly recalled to the court at Oxford to meet Essex's expected attack. Chalgrove fight, at which during one of his incessant raids he met Hampden, was fought on June 18. On July 11 he joined the queen at Stratford-on-Avon, and escorted her to the king at Edgehill. He then began the siege of Bristol, which he took on July 26, and he took part in the futile attempt on Gloucester, where he failed to repulse Essex's relieving force. In the skirmish previous to the first battle of Newbury he checked the enemy's advance, and in the battle itself displayed desperate courage, following up the day's work by a night attack on the retiring army. In the beginning of 1644 he was rewarded by being made earl of Holderness, duke of Cumberland, and president of Wales. In February he was at Shrewsbury,

from whence he administered the affairs of Wales; in March he went to relieve Newark, and was back at Shrewsbury by the end of the month. He then marched north, relieving Lathom and taking Bolton, and finally relieving York in July. At Marston Moor he charged and routed the Scots, but was in turn completely beaten by Crom- well's Ironsides. He escaped to York, and thence to Richmond, and finally by great skill reached Shrewsbury on July 20. On November 21 he was repulsed at Abing- don, and on 23d he entered Oxford with Charles. He had meanwhile been made generalissimo of the armies and master of the horse. Against him, however, was a large party of courtiers, with Digby at their head. The in- fluence of the queen, too, was uniformly exerted against him. In May 1645 he took Newark by storm. His advice to march northwards was overruled, and on June 14 the experiences of Marston Moor were repeated at

Naseby. Rupert fled to Bristol, whence he counselled the king to come to terms with the parliament. In his con- duct of the defence of the town, this "boldest attaquer in the world for personal courage" showed how much he "wanted the patience and seasoned head to consult and advise for defence" (Pepys). His surrender of the town after only a three weeks' siege, though he had promised Charles to keep it four months, caused his disgrace with the king, who revoked all his commissions by an order dated September 14, and in a cold letter ordered him to seek his subsistence beyond seas, for which purpose a pass was sent him. Rupert, however, broke through the enemy, reached the king at Oxford, and was there reconciled to him. He challenged an investigation of his conduct, and was triumphantly acquitted by the council of war. He appears, too, to have remonstrated personally with Charles in terms of indecent violence. He then applied to the parliament for a pass. This, however, was offered only on unacceptable conditions. On June 24 Rupert was taken prisoner by Fairfax at Oxford, and on July 5, at the demand of the parliament, sailed from Dover for France. He was immediately made a marshal in the French service, with the command of the English there. He received a wound in the head at Armentidres during 1647. The greater part of the English fleet having adhered to Charles, and having sailed to Holland, Rupert went with the prince of Wales to The Hague, where the charge of it was put into his hand. He immediately set out

in January 1649 upon an expedition of organized piracy. In February, after passing without molestation through the Parliamentary ships, he was at Kinsale, of which he took the fort. He relieved John Grenville at the Scilly Isles, and practically crippled the English trade. Attacked by Blake, he sailed to Portugal, and was received with kindness by the king; Blake, however, blockaded him in the Tagus, and demanded his surrender. Rupert broke through the blockade and sailed to che Mediter- ranean, landing at Barbary, and refitting at Toulon; thence he proceeded to Madeira, the Canaries (in 1652), the

Azores, Cape de Verd, and the West Indies, sweeping the |

ocean between the latter places for a considerable time. Finding it impossible, however, to escape the indefatigable pursuit of Blake, he returned to France in 1653. He was now invited to Paris by Louis XIV., who made him master of the horse; he had also an offer from the emperor to command his forces. He travelled for some while, and was again in Paris in 1655. His movements, however, at this time are very uncertain, but he appears to have devoted his enforced leisure to engraving, chemistry, the perfection of gunpowder, and other arts, especially those of military science. Whether he was the actual discoverer of mezzotinto engraving, in which he was skilful, is un- certain, but this seems probable.

At the end of September 1660 Rupert returned to England ; he was abroad during 1661, was placed on the privy council in April 1662, and in October was one of the commissioners for Tangiers; in December he became a member of the Royal Society. In August 1664 he was appointed to command the Guinea fleet against the Dutch, and set sail in October. On June 5, 1665, he gained with Monk a great victory over the Dutch, and on his return had his portrait painted by Lely along with the other admirals present at the battle. He again put to sea in May 1666, to hinder the junction of the Dutch and French, and returned in the beginning of June after a heavy defeat, his ship having stuck on the Galloper Sands during the fight. He was obliged to justify himself before the council. In January 1667 he was very ill, but recovered after the operation of trepanning. At this time he is mentioned as one of the best tennis players in the

nation. On October 22, 1667, he received with Monk the thanks of the House of Commons for his exertions against the Dutch at Chatham, and he was again at sea in April 1668. He was always staunch in his Pro. testant principles, and was carefully kept in ignorance of Charles's Catholic plot in 1670. In August of that year he was constable of Windsor, and busied himself with the fitting up of the Round Tower, a turret of which he converted into a workshop. He shared in the prevail- ing immorality of the time, his favourite mistress being the celebrated actress, Mrs Hughes. In 1673 he was appointed lord high admiral, and fought two battles with the Dutch Fleet on May 28 and August 11, but could do little through the backwardness of the French in coming to his assistance. This appears to have so annoyed him that he henceforward eagerly helped the anti-French party. He was an active member of the Board of Trade, and governor of the Hudson's Bay Company. Till his death, on November 29, 1682, he lived in complete retirement at Windsor. (0. A.)

RUPERT'S LAND. See Hupson's Bay Company and Norru-West Terrrrory.

RUPTURE. See Hernza.

RUSH. Under the name of rush or rushes, the stalks or fistular stem-like leaves of several plants have minor industrial applications. The common rushes (species of Juncus) are used in many parts of the world for chair-bottoms, mats, and basket work, and the pith they ; contain serves as wicks in open oil-lamps and for tallow- candles,—whence rushlight. The bulrush, Zypha elephan- tina, is used in Sindh for mats and baskets. Under the name of rushes, species of Scirpus and other Cyperacee are used for chair-bottoms, mats, and thatch. The elegant rush mats of Madras are made from Papyrus pangorei. The sweet rush, yielding essential oil, is Andropogon Scheenanthus, known also as lemon grass. Large quantities of the "horse tail," Equisetum liemale, are used under the name of the Dutch or scouring rush, for scouring metal and other hard surfaces on account of the large proportion of silica the plant contains.

RUSH, Bensamin (17 45-1813), the Sydenham of America, was born near Bristol (12 miles from Phila- delphia), on a homestead founded by his grandfather, who had followed Penn from England in 1683, being of the Quaker persuasion, and a gunsmith by trade. After a careful education at

school and college, and an appren- ticeship of six years with a doctor in Philadelphia, Rush went for two years to Edinburgh, where he attached himself chiefly to Cullen. He took his M.D. degree there in 1768, spent a year more in the hospitals of London and Paris, and began practice in Philadelphia at the age of twenty-four, undertaking at the same time the chemistry class at the new medical school. He at once became a leading spirit in the political and * social movements of the day. He was a friend of Franklin's, a member of Congress for the State of Pennsylvania in 1776, and one of those who signed the Declaration of Independence the same year. He had already written on the Test Laws, "Sermons to the Rich," and on Negro Slavery, having taken up the last-named subjectiat the instance of Anthony Benezet, whose Historical Account of Guinea was the inspiration of Clarkson's celebrated college essay twelve years after. In 1774 he started along with James Pemberton the first anti-slavery society in America, and was its secretary for many years. When the political crisis ended in 1787 with the convention for drawing up a federal constitution, of which he was a member, he retired from public life, and gave himself up wholly to medical practice. In 1789 he exchanged his chemistry lectureship for that of the theory and practice of physic;

and when the medical college, which he had helped to found, was absorbed by the university of Pennsylvania in 1791 he became professor of the institutes of medicine and of clinical practice, succeeding in 1805 to the chair of the theory and practice of physic. He was the central figure in the medical world of Philadelphia, as Cullen was at Edinburgh and Boerhaave at Leyden. Much of his influence and success was due to his method and regularity of life on the Franklin model. During the thirty years that he attended the Pennsylvania Hospital as physician, | he is said to have never missed his daily visit and never to have been more than ten minutes late. Notwithstanding | a weak chest, which troubled him the greater part of his life, he got through an enormous amount of work, literary | and other ; he was a systematic early riser, and his leisure) at the end of the day was spent in reading poetry, history, the moral sciences, and the like, with his pen always in his hand. His temperament was of the gentle sort, and his conversation and correspondence abounding in ideas. It is stated by his

friend Dr Hosack of New York, that Rush | was successively a Quaker, an Anabaptist, a Presbyterian, and an Anglican. He gained great credit when the) yellow fever devastated Philadelphia, in 1793, by his | assiduity in visiting the sick (as many as one hundred and | twenty in a day), and by his bold and apparently success- ful treatment of the disease by bloodletting. When he began to prosper in practice, he gave a seventh part of his income in charity. He died in 1813, after a five days' illness from typhus fever. Nine out of a family of thirteen children survived him, all prosperously settled.

Rush's writings eover an immense range of subjects, including langnage, the study of Latin and Greek, the moral faculty, capital punishment, medicine among the American Indians, – maple sugar, the blackness of the negro, the cause of animal life, tobaceo smoking, spirit drinking, as well as a long list of more strietly professional topics. His last work was an elaborate treatise on the Diseases of the Mind (1812). Heis best known now by the five volumes of Medical Inquiries and Observations, which he brought out at intervals from 1789 to 1798 (two later editions revised by the author). Epidemiology, and yellow fever in parti- cular, was the subject on which he wrote to most purpose. His treatment of yellow fever by bloodletting helped more than any- thing else to make him famous, although the practice would now | be condemned. His views as to the origin and diffusion of yellow ' fever have a more permanent interest. He stoutly maintained, as

against the doctrine of importation from the West Indies, that the | yellow fever of Philadelphia was generated on the spot by noxious | exhalations, although he does not appear to have suspected that | there was something special or specific in the filthy conditions of soil or harbour mud which gave rise to the miasmata. For a number of years he expressed the opinion that yellow fever might become catching from person to person, under ccrtain aggravated circumstances ; but in the end he professed the doctrine of absolute non-eontagiousness. He bceame well known in Europe as an anthority on the epidemics of fever, and was elcctcd an honorary member of several foreign socicties.

See eulogy by Hosaek (Zssays, i., New York, 1824), with biographical details taken from a letter of Rush to President John Adams; also referenees

in the works of Thacker, Gross, and Bowditch on the history of medicine in America. lis part in the yellow fever controversies is indicated by La Roche (Yellow Fever in Philadelphia from 1699 to 1854, 2 vols., Philadelphia, 1855) and by Bancroft (Essay on the Yellow Fever, London, 1811). His serviees as an aboli- a are recorded in Clarkson's History of the Abolition of the African

ave Trade,

RUSHWORTH, Joun (c. 1607-1690), the compiler of the Historical Collections commonly described by his name, | was born in Northumberland about the year 1607. After | @ period of study at Oxford, but not, it appears, as a | member of the university, he came to London, was entered | at Lincoln's Inn, and was in due course called to the bar. | As early as 1630 he seems to have commenced attendance at the courts, especially the Star Chamber and the | Exchequer Chamber, not for the purpose of practising his | profession, but in order that he might observe and record _ the more remarkable of their proceedings. On the meeting | of the Long Parliament in 1640 he was appointed assistant clerk to the House of Commons, and was in the habit of

63

making short-hand notes of the speeches he heard de- livered in debate. He himself states that it was from his report that the words used by Charles I. during his memorable attempt to seize the 'five members" were printed for public distribution under the king's orders. Being an expert horseman, it seems that Rushworth was frequently employed by the House as their messenger as well as in the capacity of clerk. When the king left London, and while the earl of Essex was general, he was often the bearer of communications from the parliament to one or the other of them. In 1645 Sir Thomas Fairfax, to whom he was distantly related, and who was then in command of the Parliamentary forces, made him his secretary, and he reniained with the army almost continuously until 1650. In 1649 he was at Oxford, and the degree of master of arts was conferred on him by the university. In 1652 he was nominated one of the commissioners for the reform of the common law, and in 1658 he was elected member for Berwick in the parliament of the commonwealth. Almost immediately before the

Restoration he published the first volume of his Historical Collections, which had been sub- mitted in manuscript to Oliver Cromwell, with a very laudatory dedication to Richard Cromwell, then Lord Protector. But the turn of events induced hin to with- draw this dedication, and he subsequently endeavoured without success to conciliate Charles II. by presenting him with some of the registers of the privy council which had come into his possession. In the convention of 1660, which recalled the king, he sat again as member for Berwick. In 1677 he was made secretary to Sir Orlando Bridgeman, then lord keeper, and he was returned for Berwick a third and a fourth time to the parliaments of 1679 and 1681. Soon after this he appears to have fallen into straitened circumstances. In 1684 he was arrested for debt, and cast into the King's Bench prison, where he died, after lingering for some time in a condition of mental infirmity, the result of excessive drinking, in 1690. Rushworth's Historical Collections of Private Passages of State, Weighty Matters in Law, and Remarkable Proceedings in Parlia- ment was reprinted in eight folio volumes in 1721. The eighth volume of this edition is an account of the trial of the carl of Strafford, the other scven volumes being coneerned with the miscellaneous transactions of the period from 1618 to 1648. Only the first three volumes and the trial of Strafford were originally published in Rushworth's lifetime; but the manuscript of the other volumes was left by him ready for the press. The extreme value of the work is well known to all inquirers into the history of the Civil War, and much of the information it contains is to be found nowhere else. Its impartiality, however, can hardly be

seriously maintained, and hence it is necessary to consult it with some caution.

RUSSELL, Jonn Russert, Earn (1792-1878), a statesman who for nearly half a century faithfully repre- sented the traditions of Whig politics, was the third son of John, sixth duke of Bedford, and was born in Hertford Street, Mayfair, London, 18th August 1792, one of the most terrible months in the annals of the French Revolu- tion. Whilst still a child he was sent to a private school at Sunbury, and for a short time he was at Westminster School. Long and severe illness led to his being placed, with many other young men sprung from Whig parents, with a private tutor at Woodnesborough in Kent. Following in the footsteps of Lord Henry Petty,

Brougham, and Horner, he went to the university of Edinburgh, then the academic centre of Liberalism, and dwelt in the house of Prof. Playfair, whom he afterwards described as “one of the best and noblest, the most upright, the most bene- volent, and the most liberal of all philosophers.” On leaving the university, he determined upon taking a foreign tour, and, as the greater part of Europe was overrun by French troops, he landed at Lisbon with the intention of exploring the countries of Portugal and Spain. Lord John

Russell had previously arrived at the conclusion that the continuance of the war with France was necessary for the restoration of the peace of Europe, and his convictions were deepened by the experience of travel. On the 4th May 1813, ere he was of age, he was returned for the ducal borough of Tavistock, and in this he resembled Lord Chesterfield and other aristocratic legislators, who were entrusted with the duty of law-making before they had arrived at years of discretion. After the battle of Water- loo the Whig representatives in parliament concentrated their efforts in promoting financial reform, and in resisting those arbitrary settlements of the Continental countries which found favour in the eyes of Metternich and Castle- reagh. In foreign politics Lord John Russell’s oratorical talents were especially shown in his struggles to prevent the union of Norway and Sweden, In domestic questions he cast in his lot with those who opposed the repressive measures of 1817, and protested that the causes of the discontent at home should be removed by remedial legisla- tion. When failure attended all his efforts he resigned his seat for Tavistock, and meditated permanent withdrawal from public life, but was dissuaded from this step by the arguments of his friends, and especially by a poetic appeal from Tom Moore. In the parliament of 1818~20 he again represented the family borough in Devon, and in May 1819 began his long advocacy of parliamentary reform by moving for an inquiry into the corruption which prevailed in the Cornish constituency of Grampound. During the first parliament (1820-26) of George IV. the county of Huntingdon accepted Lord John Russell’s services as its representative, and it was his good fortune to secure in 1821 the disfranchisement of Grampound, but his satis- faction at this triumph was diminished by the fact that the seats were not

transferred to the constituency which he desired. This was the sole parliamentary victory which the advocates of a reform of the representation obtained before 1832, but they found cause for congratulation in other triumphs. Lord John Russell paid the penalty for his advocacy of Catholic emancipation with the loss in 1826 of his seat for Huntingdon county, but he found a shelter in the Irish borough of Bandon Bridge. He led the attack against the Test Acts by carrying in February 1828 with a majority of forty-four a motion for a committee to inquire into their operations, and after this decisive victory they were repealed. He warmly supported the Wellington ministry when it realized that the king's government could only be carried on by the passing of a Catholic Relief Act. For the greater part of the short-lived parliament of 1830-31 he served his old constituency of Tavistock, having been beaten in a contest for Bedford county at the general election by one vote; and, when Lord Grey's Reform ministry was formed, Lord John Russell accepted the office of payniaster-general, though, strange to say, he was not admitted into the sacred precincts of the cabinet. This exclusion from the official hierarchy was rendered the more remarkable by the circumstance that he was selected (1st March 1831) to explain the provisions of the Reform Bill, to which the cabinet had given its formal sanction. The Whig ministry were soon met by defeat, but an appeal to the country increased the number of their adherents, and Lord John Russell himself had the satisfaction of being chosen by the freeholders of Devon as their member. After many a period of doubt and defeat, "the bill, the whole bill, and nothing but the bill" passed into law, and Lord John stood forth in the mind of the people as its champion. Although it was not till some years later that he became the leader of the Liberal party, the height of his fame was attained in 1832. After the passing of the Reform Bill he sat for the southern division of Devon, and continued to retain

the place of paymaster-general in the ministries of Lord Grey and Lord Melbourne. The former of these cabinets was broken up by the withdrawal of Mr Stanley, after. wards Lord Derby, on the proposal for reforming the Irish Church, when he emphasized Lord John Russell's part in the movements by the saying "' Johnny 's upset the coach a the latter was abruptly, if not rudely, dismissed by William IV. when the death of Lord

Spencer promoted the leader of the House of Commons, Lord Althorp, to the peerage, and Lord John Russell was proposed as the spokesman of the ministry in the Commons. At the general election which ensued the Tories received a considerable accession of strength, but not sufficient to ensure their continuance in office, and the adoption by the House of Commons of the proposition of the Whig leader, that the surplus funds of the Irish Church should be applied to general education, necessitated the resignation of Sir Robert Peel's ministry, In Lord Melbourne's new administration Lord John Russell became home secretary and leader of the House of Commons, but on his seeking a renewal of confidence from the electors of South Devon, he was defeated and driven to Stroud. Although the course of the Whig ministry was not attended by uniform prosperity, it succeeded in passing a Municipal Reform Bill, and in carrying 4 settle. ment of the tithe question in England and Ireland. At the close of its career the troubles in Canada threatened a severance of that dependency from the home country, whereupon Lord Johu Russell, with a courage which never deserted him, took charge of the department, at that time a dual department, of war and the colonies. In May 1839, on an adverse motion concerning the administration of Jamaica, the ministry was left with a majority of five only, and promptly resigned the seals of office. Sir Robert Peel's attempt to form a ministry was, however, frustrated by the refusal of the queen to dismiss the ladies of the bedchamber, and the Whigs resumed their places. Their prospects brightened when Sir John Yarde Buller's motion of "no confidence" was defeated by twenty-one, but the glimpse of sunlight soon faded, and a similar vote was some months later carried by a majority of one, whereupon the Whig leader announced a dissolution of parliament (1841). At the polling booth his friends were smitten hip and thigh ; the return of Lord John Russell for the City of London was almost their solitary triumph. On Sir Robert Peel's resignation (1846) the task of forming an administra- tion was entrusted to Lord John Russell, and he remained at the head of affairs from 1846 to 1852, but his tenure of office was not marked by any great legislative enactments. His celebrated Durham letter on the threatened assump- tion of ecclesiastical titles by the Roman Catholic bishops weakened the attachment of the "'Peelites" and alienated his Irish supporters. The impotence of their opponents, rather than the strength of their friends, kept the Whig ministry in power, and, although beaten by a majority of nearly two to one on Mr Locke King's County Franchise Bill in

February 1851, it could not divest itself of office. Lord Palmerston’s unauthorized recognition of the French coup Wétat was followed by his dismissal, but he had his revenge in the ejectment of his old colleagues a few months later. During Lord Aberdeen’s administration Lord John Russell led the Lower House, at first as foreign secretary, then without portfolio, and lastly as_presi- dent of the council. In 1854 he brought in a Reform Bill, but in consequence of the war with Russia the bill was allowed, much to its author’s mortification, to drop. His popularity was diminished by this failure, and although he resigned in January 1855, on Mr Roebuck’s Crimea motion, he did not regain his old position in the country. At the Vienna conference (1855) Lord John Russell was England’s representative, and immediately on his returi

\

| they earried him to the highest places in the state.

| 9th January 1876.

) of the infamous countess of Somerset, was born September

that about 1654 he was sent to Cambridge with his elder brother Francis. | brothers travelled abroad, visiting Lyons and Geneva, and residing for some while at Augsburg. His account of his

in 1658, but had returned to Woburn in December 1659.

forced him to retire. “stormy petrel ” of politics. ‘in defeating Lord Palmerston in 1857. on the Tory Reform Bill of 1859.

Lord Palmerston’s ministry, and to accept an earldom.

the North restrained his country from embarking in the contest, but he was not equally successful in his desire to prevent the spoliation of Denmark. On Lord Palmerston’s death (October 1865) Earl Russell was once more sum- moned to form a cabinet, but the defeat of his ministry Jin the following June on the Reform Bill which they had introduced was followed by his retirement from public life. His leisure hours were spent after this

event in the preparation of numberless letters and speeches, and in the composition of his Lecollections and Suggestions, but every-

‘thing he wrote was marked by the belief that all philo-

sophy, political or social, was summed up in the Whig creed

| of fifty years previously. Earl Russell died at Pembroke | Lodge, Richmond Park, 28th May 1878.

For more than half a century Earl Russell lived in the exeitement of political life. He participated in the troubles of Whiggism before 1832, and shared in its triumph after that event. He expounded the prineiples of the first Reform Bill and lived to see a seeond earried into law by the Conservative ministry of Lord Derby. Un- limited confidence in his own resourees exposed him to many jests from both friend and foe, but he rightly estimated his powers, and His tragedies and his essays are forgotten, but his works on Fox are among the ehief authorities on Whig polities. Earl Russell was twice married, —first, in 1835, to Adelaide, daughter of Mr Thomas Lister, and ‘widow of Thomas, second Lord Ribblesdale, and seeondly, in 1841,

By the former he had two daughters, by the latter three sons and one daughter. His eldest son, Lord Amberley, predeceased him (Ww. BP. C.)

RUSSELL, Witi1am Russet, Lorp (1639-1683), the third son of Lord Russell, afterwards fifth earl and still later first duke of Bedford, and Lady Anne Carr, daughter

29, 1639. Nothing is known of his early youth, except

On leaving the university, the two

impressions is spirited and interesting. He was at Paris

At the Restoration he was elected for the family borough of Tavistock. For a long while he appears to have taken no part in public affairs, but rather to have indulged in the follies of court life and intrigue ; for both in 1663 and 1664 he was engaged in duels, in the latter of which he was wounded. In

1669 he married the second daughter of the earl of Southampton, the widow of Lord Vaughan, thus becoming connected with Shaftesbury, who had married Southampton's niece. With his wife Russell always lived on terms of the greatest affection and confidence. _ It was not until the formation of the "country party," in opposition to the policy of the Cabal and Charles's French-Catholic plots, that Russell began to take an active part in affairs. He then joined Cavendish, Birch, Hamp- den, Powell, Lyttleton, and others in vehement antagonism to the court. With a passionate hatred and distrust of the Catholics, and an intense love of political liberty, he united the desire for ease to Protestant Dissenters. His first speech appears to have been on January 22, 1673, in which he inveighed against the stop of the exchequer, the attack on the Smyrna fleet, the corruption of courtiers with French money, and "the ill ministers about the king."

Ke soe. ih 1 a

he became secretary of the colonies; but the errors in his negotiations at the Austrian capital followed him and For some years after this he was the He was the chief instrument He led the attack A reconciliation was then cffected between the rival Whig leaders, and Lord 'John Russell consented to become foreign secretary in

| During the American War Earl Russell's sympathies with

to Lady Franees Ann Maria, daughter of the second earl of Minto. —

65

He also supported the proceedings against the duke of Buckingham. In 1675 he moved an address to the king for the removal of Danby from the royal councils, and for his impeachment. On February 15, 1677, in the debate on the fifteen months' prorogation, he moved the dissolu- tion of parliament ; and in March 1678 he seconded the address praying the king to declare war against France. The enmity of the country party against Danby and James, and their desire for a dissolution and the disbanding of the army, were greater than their enmity to Louis. The French king therefore found it easy to form a temporary alliance with Russell, Hollis, and the opposition leaders, by which they engaged to cripple the king's power of hurting

France, and to compel him to seek Louis's friendship,— that friendship, however, to be given only on the condition that they in their turn should have Louis's support for their cherished objects. Russell in particular entered into close communication with Rouvigny, who came over with money for distribution among members of parliament. By the tes- timony of Barillon, however, it is clear that Russell himself utterly refused to take any part in the intended corruption.

By the wild alarms which culminated in the Popish Terror Russell appears to have been affected more com- pletely than his otherwise sober character would have led people to expect. He threw himself into the party which looked to Monmouth as the representative of Protestant interests, a grave political blunder, though he afterwards was in confidential communication with Orange. On November 4, 1678, he moved an address to the king to re- move the duke of York from his person and councils. At the dissolution of the pensionary parliament, he was, in the new elections, returned for Bedfordshire. Danby was at once overthrown, and in April 1679 Russell was one of the new privy council formed by Charles on the advice of Temple. Only six days after this we find him moving for a committee to draw up a bill to secure religion and pro- perty in case of a Popish successor. He does not, how- ever, appear to have taken part in the exclusion debates at this time. In June, on the occasion of the Covenanters' rising in Scotland, he attacked Lauderdale personally in full council.

In January 1680 Russell, along with Cavendish, Capell, Powell, Essex, and Lyttleton, tendered his resignation to the king, which was received by Charles "with all my heart?' On June 16 he accompanied Shaftesbury, when the latter indicted James at Westminster as a Popish re- cusant; and on October 26 he took the extreme step of moving "how to suppress Popery, and prevent a Popish successor"; while on November 2, now at the height of his influence, he went still further by seconding the motion for exclusion in its most emphatic shape, and on the 19th carried the bill to the House of Lords for their concurrence. The limitation scheme he opposed, on the ground that monarchy under the conditions expressed in it would be an absurdity. The statement, made by Echard alone, that he joined in opposing the indulgence shown to Lord Straf- ford by Charles in dispensing with the more horrible parts of the sentence of death—an indulgence afterwards

shown to Russell himself—is entirely unworthy of credence. On December 18 he moved to refuse supplies until the king passed the Exclusion Bill. The Prince of Orange having come over at this time, there was a tendency on the part of the opposition leaders to accept his endeavours to secure a compromise on the exclusion question. Russell, however, refused to give way a hair's breadth.

On March 26, 1681, in the parliament held at Oxford, Russell again seconded the Exclusion Bill. Upon the dissolution he retired into privacy at his country seat of Stratton in Hampshire. It was, however, no doubt at his wish that his chaplain wrote the Life of Julian the Apos-

tate, in reply to Dr Hickes's sermons, in which the lawful- ness of resistance in extreme cases was defended. In the wild schemes of Shaftesbury after the election of Tory sheriffs for London in 1682 he had no share ; upon the viola- tion of the charters, however, in 1683, he began seriously to consider as to the best means of resisting the Government, and on one occasion attended a meeting at which treason, or what might be construed as treason, was talked. Mon- mouth, Essex, Hampden, Sidney, and Howard of Escrick were the principal of those who met to consult. On the breaking out of the Rye Plot, of which neither he, Essex, uor Sidney had the slightest knowledge, he was accused by informers of promising his assistance to raise an insurrection and compass the death of the king. Refusing tovattempt to escape, he was brought before the council, when his attendance at the meeting referred to was charged against him. He was sent on June 26, 1683, to the Tower, and, looking upon himself as a dying man, betook himself wholly to preparation for death. Monmouth offered to appear to take his trial, if thereby he could help Russell, and Essex refused to abscond for fear of injuring his friend's chance of escape. Before a committee of the council Russell, on June 28, acknowledged his presence at the meeting, but denied all knowledge of the proposed insurrection. He reserved his defence, however, until his trial. He would probably have saved his life but for the perjury of Lord Howard. The suicide of Essex, the news of which was brought into court during the trial, was quoted as

additional evidence against him, as pointing to the cer- tainty of Essex's guilt. On July 19 he was tried at the Old Bailey, his wife assisting him in his defence. Evidence was given by an informer that, while at Shaftesbury's hiding-place in Wapping, Russell had joined in the pro- posal to seize the king's guard, a charge indignantly denied by him in his farewell paper, and that he was one of a committee of six appointed to prepare the scheme for an insurrection. Howard, too, expressly declared that Russell had urged the entering into communications with Argyll in Scotland. Howard's perjury is clear from other wit- nesses, but the evidence was accepted. Russell spoke with spirit and dignity in his own defence, and, in especial, vehemently denied that he had ever been party toa design so wicked and so foolish as those of the murder of the king and of rebellion. It will be observed that the legality of the trial, in so far as the jurors were not properly "quali- fied and the law of treason was shamefully strained, was denied in the Act of 1 William and Mary which annulled the attainder. Hallam maintains that the only overt act of treason proved against Russell was his concurrence in the project of a rising at Taunton, which he denied, and which, Ramsay being the only witness, was not sufficient to warrant a conviction.

Russell was sentenced to die. Many attempts were made to save his life. The old earl of Bedford offered £50,000 or £100,000, and Monmouth, Legge, Lady Ranelagh, and Rochester added their intercessions. Russell himself, in petitions to Charles and J ames, offered to live abroad if his life were spared, and never again to meddle in the affairs of England. He refused, however, to yield to the influence of Burnet and Tillotson, who endeavoured to make him grant the unlawfulness of resistance, although it is more than probable that compliance in this would have saved his life. He drew up, with Burnet's assist- ance, a paper containing his apology, and he wrote to the king a letter, to be delivered after his death, in which he asked Charles's pardon for any wrong he had done him. A suggestion of escape from Lord Cavendish he refused. He behaved with his usual quiet cheerfulness during his stay in the Tower, spending his last day on earth as he had intended to spend the following Sunday if he had reached it, He

received the sacrament from Tillotson, and Burnet twice preached tohim. Having supped with his wife, the parting from whom was his only great trial, he slept peacefully, and spent the last morning in devotion with Burnet, He went to the place of execution in Lincoln's Inn Fields with perfect calmness, which was preserved to the last, He died on July 21, 1683, in the forty-fourth year of his age,

A true and moderate summing up of his character will be found in his Life, by Lord John Russell. (0. A.)

RUSSELL, Joun Scorr (1808-1882), was born in 1808 near Glasgow, a "son of the manse," and was at first destined for the ministry. But this intention on his father's part was changed in consequence of the boy's early lean- ings towards practical science. He attended in succession the universities of St Andrews, Edinburgh, and Glasgow,— taking his degree in the last-named at the age of sixteen,

- After spending a couple of years in workshops, he settled

in Edinburgh as a lecturer on science, and soon collected large classes. In 1832-33 he was engaged to give the natural philosophy course at the university, the chair having' become vacant by the death of Leslie, In the following year he began that remarkable series of obser- vations on waves whose results, besides being of very great scientific importance, were the chief determining factor of his subsequent practical career. Having been consulted as to the possibility of applying steam-naviga- tion to the Edinburgh and Glasgow Canal, he replied that the question could not be answered without experi- ments, and that he was willing to undertake such if a portion of the canal were placed at his disposal. The results of this inquiry are to be found in the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh (vol. Xiv.), and in the British Association Reports (seventh meeting). We need not say more than that the existence of the long wave, Or wave of translation, as well as many of its most important features, were here first recognized, and (to give one very simple idea of the value of the investigation) that it was clearly pointed out why there is a special rate, depending on the depth of the water, at which a canal-boat can be towed at the least expenditure of effort by the horse. The elementary mathematical theory of the long wave is very simple, and was soon supplied by

commentators on Scott Russell’s work ; a more complete investigation has been since given by Stokes; and the subject may be considered as certainly devoid of any special mystery. Russell held an opposite opinion, and it led him to many extraordinary and groundless speculations, some of which have been pub- lished in a posthumous volume, Zhe Wave of Translation (1885). His observations led him to propose and experi- ment on a new system of shaping vessels, which is known as the wave system. This culminated in the building of the enormous and unique “Great Eastern,” of which it has been recently remarked by a competent authority that “it is probable that, if a new ‘Great Eastern’ were now to be built, the system of construction employed by Mr Scott Russell would be followed exactly.”

Though his fame will rest chiefly on the two great steps we have just mentioned, Scott Russell’s activity and ingenuity displayed themselves in many other fields, — steam-coaches for roads, improvements in boilers and in marine engines, the immense iron dome of the Vienna exhi- bition, cellular double bottoms for iron ships, &e. Along with Mr Stafford Northcote (now Lord Iddesleigh), he was

joint secretary of the Great Exhibition of 1851; and he

was one of the chief founders of the Institution of Naval Architects, from the twenty-third volume of whose Trans- actions we have extracted much of what is stated above. Russell contributed the articles STEAM, STEAM-ENGINE, STEAM NavicaTION, &c., to the 7th edition of the Ency- clopxdia Britannica. He died at Ventnor. June 8, 1882.

|

\

Part I.—GENERAL SURVEY OF THE RusstAN EMPIRE.

HE Russian empire is a very extensive territory in {! eastern Europe and northern Asia, with an area exceeding 8,500,000 square miles, or one-sixth of the land jsurface of the globe (one twenty-third of its whole super- ficies). It is, however, but thinly peopled on the average, including only one-fourteenth of the inhabitants of the jearth. It is almost entirely confined

to the cold and tem- | pcrate zones, In Nova Zembla (Novaya Zemlya) and the ‘Taimyr peninsula, it projects within the Arctic Circle as far as 77° 2’ and 77° 40’ N. lat.; while its southern ex- tremities rcach 38° 50’ in Armenia, about 35° on the Afghan \frontier, and 42° 30’ on the coasts of the Pacific. To the west it advances as far as 20° 40’ E. long. in Lapland, 18° 32’ in Poland, and 29° 42’ on the Black Sea; and its eastern limit—East Cape in the Behring Strait—extends |to 191° E. longitude.

The Arctic Ocean—comprising the White, Barents, and) Kara Seas—and the northern Pacific, that is, the Seas of | Behring, Okhotsk, and Japan, bound it in the north and cast. The Baltic, with its two deep indentations, the Gulfs of Bothnia and Finland, limits it on the north-west ; and two sinuous lines of frontier separate it respectively from Sweden and Norway on the north-west and from Prussia, Austria, and Roumania on the west. The southern frontier is still unsettled, and has never remained unaltered for so many as twenty consecutive years. Quite recently it has ‘been pushed southwards, on both the western and the eastern shores of the Black Sea, parts of Roumania and Asia Minor having been annexed in 1878. In Asia, beyond the Caspian, the southern boundary of the empire remains vague; the advance into the Turcoman Steppes and Afghan Turkestan and on the Pamir plateau is still in progress. Bokhara and Khiva, though represented as vassal khanates, are in reality mere dependencies of Russia.

} An approximately settled frontier-line begins only farther

i

east, where the Russian and the Chinese empires meet on

_ the borders of Eastern Turkestan, Mongolia, and Manchuria.

| But even there, the province of Kuldja has recently been _ occupied by Russia, and again restored to China; while in

‘ eastern Mongolia, the great overland route from Kiakhta

to Peking, wa Urga, is in fact in the hands of Russia, and it is difficult to predict how far Russian influence may extend should circumstances lead it

to seek a footing on the thinly-pcopled plateaus of Central Asia.

| Russia has no oceanic possessions, and has abandoned those she owned in last century; her islands are mere appendages of the mainland to which they belong. Such are the Aland archipelago, Hochland, Tiitters, Dagé, and Osel in the Baltic Sea; Nova Zembla, with Kolgueff and Vaigatch, in the Barents Sea ; the Sotovetsky Islands in the White Sca; the New Siberian archipelago, and the small group of the Medvyezhii Islands off the Siberian coast; the Commandor Islands off Kamchatka; the Shantar Islands and Saghalin in the Sea of Okhotsk. The Aleutian archi- pelago was sold to the United States in 1867, together with Alaska, and in 1874 the Kurile Islands were ceded to Japan.

A vast variety of physical features is obviously to be

| expected in a territory like this, which comprises on the } one side the cotton and silk regions of Turkestan and i Transcaucasia, and on the other the moss and lichen-clothed _ Arctic tundras and the Verkhoyansk Siberian pole of cold | —the dry Transcaspian deserts and the regions watered by

the monsoons on the coasts of the Sea of Japan. Still, if

| the border regions, that is, two narrow belts in the north

and south, be left out of account, a striking uniformity of physical feature prevails. High plateaus, like those of Pamir (the “Roof of the World”) or of Armenia, and high mountain chains like the snow-clad summits of the Caucasus, the Alay, the Thian-Shan, the Sayan, are met with only on the outskirts of the empire.

Viewed broadly by the physical geographer, it appears Plateau

as occupying the territories to the north-west of that great, belt of plateau-belt of the old continent—the backbone of Asia —which spreads with

decreasing height and width from the high tableland of Tibet and Pamir to the lower plateaus of Mongolia, and thence north-eastwards through the Vitim region to the furthest extremity of Asia. It may be said to consist of the immense plains and flat lands which extend between the plateau-belt and the Arctic Ocean, including also the series of parallel chains and hilly spurs which skirt

the plateau-belt on the north-west. It extends over the plateau itself, and crosses it, beyond Lake Baikal only.

This belt—the oldest geological continent of Asia— being unfit for agriculture and for the most part unsuited for permanent settlement, while the oceanic slopes of it have from the dawn of history been occupied by a dense population, has long prevented Slavonian colonization from reaching the Pacific. Russians happened to cross it in the 17th century, only in its narrowest and most northerly part, thus reaching the Pacific on the foggy and frozen coasts of the Sea of Okhotsk ; and two centuries elapsed ere, after colonizing the depressions of the plateau around Lake Baikal, the Russians crossed the plateau in a more genial zone and descended to the Pacific by the Amur, rapidly spreading farther south, up the nearly uninhabited Usuri, to what is now the Gulf of Peter the Great. In the south-western higher portions of the plateau-belt the empire has only recently planted its foot on the Pamir ; as we write, it is endeavouring to get command of the lower passages which give an easy access to the Afghan portion of the plateau ; while already, within the present century, it has established itself firmly on the plateaus of Armenia.

A broad belt of hilly tracts—in every respect alpine in The character, and displaying the same variety of climate and alpine organic life as alpine tracts usually do—skirts the plateau- pet belt throughout its length on the north and north-west, forming an intermediate region between the plateaus and the plains. The Caucasus, the Elburz, the Kopet-dagh, and Paropamisus, the intricate and imperfectly known net- work of mountains west of the Pamir, the Thian-Shan and Ala-tau mountain regions, and farther north-east the Altai, the still unnamcd complex of Minusinsk mountains, the intricate mountain-chains of Sayan, with those of the Olekma, Vitim, and Aidan, all of which are ranged en échelon—the former from north-west to south-east,

and the others from south-west to north-east—all of these belong to one immense alpine belt bordering that of the plateaus. These have long been known to Russian colonists, who, seeking to escape religious prosecutions and exactions by the state, early penetrated into and rapidly pushed their small settlements up the better valleys of these tracts, and continued to spread everywhere as long as they found no obstacles in the shape of a former population or in unfavour- able climatic conditions.

As for the flat-lands which extend from the Alpine hill- The

foots to the shores of the Arctic Ocean, and assume the ‘lat-lands.

character either of dry deserts in the Aral-Caspian de- pression, or of low table-lands in central Russia and eastern Siberia, of lake-regions in north-west Russia and Finland, or of marshy prairies in western Siberia, and of

Caucasus, in the Aral-Caspian region, and in the basin of the Usuri on the Pacific coast. Favoured by these con- ditions, the Russians not only conquered northern Asia— they colonized it.

The total population of the Russian empire was stated Poy at 102,000,000 by estimates made in 1878-82 ; but it ig tior multiplying rapidly, and, as the surplus of births over deaths reaches nearly 1,250,000 every year, it must now be somewhat more than 106 millions,

Within the empire a very great diversity of nationalities is comprised, due to the amalgamation or absorption by the Slavonian race of a variety of Ural-Altaic stems, of Turco-Tartars, Turco-Mongolians, and various Caucasian stems. Statistics as to their relative Strength are still very imperfect, and their ethnical relations have not as yet been completely determined ; but, considered broadly, they may be classified as follows :—

A. The Letto-Slavonians comprise (a) the Lithuanians and Letts on the lower Niemen and Diina, and (>) the Slavonians, that is, the Poles on the Vistula and N iemen and the Russians—Great, Little, and White—whose

tundras in the far north,—their monotonous surfaces are diversified by only a few, and these for most part low, hilly tracts. Recently emerged from the Post-Pliocene sea, or cleared of their ice-sheet coverings, they preserve the very same features over immense stretches; and the few portions that rise above the general elevation have more the character of broad and gentle swellings than of mountain-chains. Of this class are the swampy plateaus of the Kola peninsula, gently sloping southwards to the lake-regions of Finland and north-west Russia; the Valdai table-lands, where all the great rivers of Russia take their rise; the broad and gently-sloping meridional belt of the Ural Mountains; and lastly, the Taimyr, Tunguska, and Verkhoyansk ridges in Siberia, which do not reach the snow-line, notwithstanding their sub-Arctic position. As to the picturesque Bureya mountains on the Amur, the forest-clothed Sikhota-alin on the Pacific, and the volcanic chains of Kamchatka, they belong to quite another orographical world; they are the border-ridges of the terraces by which the great plateau-belt descends to the depths of the Pacific Ocean.

Rivers, It is owing to these leading orographical features— proper abodes are in European Russia, south of a line divined by Carl Ritter, but only within the present day | drawn from the Gulf of Finland to the middle Volga. revealed by geographical research—that so many of the Spreading from this region towards the north-east, east, great rivers of the old continent are comprised within the | and south-east, they have colonized north-east Russia, the limits of the Russian empire. Taking rise on the plateau- | Ural region, Caucasus, Siberia, and large parts of the belt, or in its Alpine outskirts, they flow: first, like the Kirghiz Steppe,—the leading feature of their colonization upper Rhone and Rhine, along high longitudinal valleys | having always been penetration in compact masses among formerly filled up with great lakes; next they find their | the original inhabitants. Thus, on northern Caucasus way through the rocky walls; and finally they enter the | the Russians (chiefly Little Russians) already

constitute a lowlands, where they become navigable, and, describing | compact rural population of nearly 1,500,000, that is, great curves to avoid here and there the minor plateaus | about a quarter of the total population of Caucasia. In and hilly tracts, they bring into water-communication | Western Siberia the Great Russians already number with one another places thousands of miles apart. The | more than 2,300,000 agriculturists, constituting four- double river-systems of the Volga and Kama, the Obi and | fifths of the entire population; in Eastern Siberia they Irtish, the Angara and Yenisei, the Lena and Vitim on number more than 1,000,000, that is, probably more than the Arctic slope, the Amur and Sungari on the Pacific | the original inhabitants ; and the Kirghiz Steppe has also slope, are instances. They were the true channels of begun rapidly to be colonized within the last twenty years. Russian colonization. It is only in the more densely peopled Turkestan, and in

A broad depression,—the Aral-Caspian desert—has | the recently annexed Transcaspian region, that Russian arisen where the plateau-belt has reached its greatest | settlers continue to bear but a small proportion to the height and suddenly changes its direction from a north- | natives (who are more than 4,600,000 strong). The western into a north-eastern one; this desert is now filled Slavonians altogether number more than 7 5,000,000, of only to a small extent by the salt waters of the Caspian, | which number 5,600,000 are Poles.

Aral, and Balkash inland seas; but it bears unmistakable Swedes (310,000), Germans (1,240,000), Roumanians, traces of having been during Post- Pliocene times an im- Serbs, &e., may number altogether about 2,500,000.

mense inland basin. There the Volga, the Ural, the Sir B. A great variety of populations belonging to the Daria, and the Oxus discharge their waters without reaching | Caucasian race, but not yet well classified, some of which the ocean, but continue to bring life to the rapidly drying | are considered to be remainders of formerly larger nation- Transcaspian Steppes, or connect by their river network, as | alities pushed aside into the mountain tracts during their the Volga does, the most remote parts of European Russia. | migrations, are met with on Caucasus. Such are the

The ex- The above-described features of the physical geography | Georgians, Ossetes, Lesghians, who fall little short of

ee of of the empire explain the relative uniformity of this wide a territory, in conjunction with the variety of physical features on its outskirts. They explain also the rapidity of the expansion of Slavonic colonization over these thinly peopled regions; and they also throw light upon the internal cohesion of the empire, which cannot fail to strike the traveller as he crosses this immense territory, and finds everywhere the same dominating race, the same features of life. In fact, in their advance from the basins of the

2,500,000, and the Armenians, about 1,000,000.

C. The Iranian branch is represented by some 130,000 Persians and Kurds in Caucasia and Transcaucasia, and by Tajiks in Turkestan, mixed with Turco-Tartar Sarts. The nomad Tsigans, or Gipsies, numbering nearly 12,000, may be mentioned under this head,

D. The Semitic branch consists of upwards of 3,000,000 Jews in Poland, in west and south-west Russia, and on Caucasus and in the towns of Central Asia, and of a few

Volkhoff and Dnieper to the foot of the Altai and Sayan Mountains, that is, along nearly a quarter of the earth’s circumference, the Russian colonizers could always find the same physical conditions, the same forests and prairies as they had left at home, the same facilities for agriculture, only modified somewhat by minor topographical features. New conditions of climate and soil, and consequently new cultures and civilizations, the Russians met with, in their expansion towards the south and east, only beyond the

thousand Karaite Jews.

E. The Ural-Altaic branch comprises two great sub- divisions—the Finnish and the Turco-Tartarian stems, mixed to some extent with Mongolians. The former (see below) occupy, broadly speaking, a wide stretch of territory to the north of the Slavonians, from the Baltic to the Yenisei, and include the

Baltic Finns, the Northern Finns, the Volga Finns, and the Ugrians. The Russians have already spread among the last two in compact masses,

and, while some stems, like the Ostiaks, are rapidly disappearing, others, like the Mordvinians, Permians, &c., are losing their national character, and becoming assimi- lated to the Russians. The West Finns alone have fully maintained their national features, and happen to have constituted a nationality developing into a separate state.

The Turco-Tartars (nearly 10,000,000) comprise the Tartars, the Bashkirs, the Kirghizcs, the Uzbegs, and the Turcomans of the Aral-Caspian region, the Yakuts on the Lena, and a variety of smaller stems in East Russia and Caucasia. They occupy another broad belt which extends from the Aral-Caspian depression to the eastern parts of the Arctic coast.

F. The Mongol-Manchurian stems of the Tunguses, and the Golds, and the Manchus proper, come next, occupying the castern parts of the mountain-belt and the plateau itself in Siberia, the Tunguses also projecting north-west- wards, so as to separate the Yakuts from their southern Turkish brethren. Small stems of the same family also pass a nomad existence in the basin of the Amur. They are rapidly diminishing in number, and can hardly be estimated at more than 50,000.

(. The Mongolian branch is represented by nearly half a million of Kalmucks on the Altai outskirts of the great plateau and around the Caspian, and by nearly 250,000 Buriats in and around the Baikal depression.

H. A variety of stems, not yet well classified, are met with on the Pacific coasts. Such are the Tchuktchies, the Kamchadales, the Koryaks in the north-east, the Ghilyaks ou the Amur, and the Ainos in Saghalin.

Statistics of the relative strength of different nationalities in the Russian empire; which, however, must be con- sidered only as rough estimates, are given (in millions) in the following table (I.) :—

3 a we od

3 add

(= ees

5g P gj | SS

eS 3 3 Ns

S s = @ |}2S? eS :

aie | & gilmeg| 8 3

EI S i a | Hos i 5

=) C4 i 0 Mae n a Russians ….....+006 63°316 | 0°790 | 0-017 |1:530| 0°640?|73°380 | 69°673 ROLES scotctrccvsssxees 1°020 | 4°550 ae aes BG 5°570 Other Slavonians….} O°118] ... 0-118 IBGUBS ete seeressssascosis Loe) eae 1°254 Lithnanians…..... 1:380 | 0°370 1°750 ISECESe cecevorcssseees 0°017 } + 0-293 ae 0°310 GeTMIANIS:,.....-..... 0:780 | 0-460 ; 0-001 0-003 1°243 Other Europeans….) 0°910 Se 0-911 Persians and Kurds.| ... 07130 07130 Armenians ….....068 0:050 0-905 0°955 Tsigans and other

PANIOMNS, ...cc0c00 OH0S)) ae 0-015 Caucasians ….....00. 2°450 2-450 ISEMINEES! s<..sc0s0ese0s5- 2-203 | 0°913 i 0°007 37123 Finns, Karelians…..| 0°316 1°750 2:066 Esthonians, Lives.,.| 0-903 S 0-903 Other West Finns…) 0°101 : 07101 Lapps, Samoyedes,.| 0-014 0°025 0:039 Volga Finns and REGIS es cecse ees 1:°731 0:047 1778

PEANGATS’. cesosescc0e sees 1°510 1°520 0-100 Bashkirs…..... 0-906 500 Kirghizes…..... 07194 ee r Turcomans. 0-002 + 4-298? ae + 9°750? BYEKtS…..—2. nee Other Turco-T:

Kalmucks SVITINES, ..cesecccccscees

Tunguses and other Mongol-Manchu-

LEWIN vote ea ccesssice ce 0-050 0:050 Tchuktchies, Kor- a

yaks, Kamchadales 0-012 0-012

Total….....| 77°878 | 7°083 | 2°061 | 6°535} 5°238?| 4-094 | 102-889

RUS Ss I &

69

The area and population of the various divisions of the Russian empire are given in the following table :—

TABLE II.—Area and Population of the Russian Empire.’

Area, Area,

Provinces. sume a Provinces. — 7 oe 1.£uropean Russia 4, Russia in Asia. Avrelmngel…....- 831,505 315,367 | Kubafi2…....0006 36,497 | 1,107,922 Astrakhan…..... 91,327 790,338 | Stavropol….....| 26,531 637,893 Bessarabia…....- 17,619 | 1,419,762 | Terek?.....06. 23,548 615,660 Courands…2---..- 10,535 642,570 ————————|— Don Cossacks…..| 61,886] 1,474,183] Northern Cau- ; Ekatcrinoslaif….. 26,148 | 1,697,061 AST nagaadpacnacood 86,576 | 2,361,475 Esthonia…....++ 7,818 379,875 — Grodno…. 6 14,931 | 1,226,946} Baku….....0-| 15,516 669,992 Kaluga.. 11,942 | 1,140,337] Daghestan 2…..... 17,048 529,271 USAIN be aceepar 24,601 | 1,955,590] Elizabethpol…....| 11,469 636,316 Kharkoff….. 21,041 | 2,160,263 | Evivafi…..... | 10,705 583,957 Kerson:..——- 27,523 | 1,865,164) Kars2… 7,175 162,979 TGS ocnrmospnepeccod) USL IL | Ca etri shl Kutais#.....---(14,005 863,195 Kostroma…..... 32,702 | 1,278,856 | Telicrnomorsk 2… 2,824 25,983 GO ANO) coeseesdccocoud 15,692 | 1,444,614] Tiflis….....e0eee. 15,578 726,685 Kas Kehes vovsensss se 17,937 | 2,314,300 | Zakataly3…..... 1,609 75,000 Livonia. 18,158 | 1,178,951 —_— Minsk… 35,293 | 1.569,342 | Transcaucasia….. 95,929 | 4,173,378 Moghileff…....+. 18,551 | 1,146,470 eee Moscow… 000e0000e1 12,859} 2,187,179 | Caucasus, 1882-83} 182,505 6,534,855 Nijni-Novgorod…| 19,797 | 1,427,893 = |_-———— ee See 47,236 | 1,127,881 JONCLZ.....000006..) 57,439 327,323 × 3 rors Ge a 18,042 |

1,892/982 | Se ea rene 3 agra Tene Z acces 3 wy Orenburg.. 73,816 | 1,196,133] Manghishlak 3… 80,260 34,500 Penza… 14,997 | 1,882,732) Merv3…... eles 90:000 PCE ssicsesecesssree 128,210 2,539,874 Tedjefi [ARCA ee red about =) 5.000 IR@dOlid…J.:..0ssess 16,224 2,276,518 Taleo. ese 97,000 = 10.000 IROPEAWA-cocccn0ss0-00 19,265 ae rarer heres ‘ 3 (12/000 17,069 94,712 | Caspian Sea…....- ; Rye 16 255 L TASS Caspian Sea. eee jee t Petersburg….. A 1,622,768 Transeaspian SAMMATA:.c.c25 «sce: 2,224,093 ane : ewan 9113.07 region,’ about..| 390,000 206,000 Simbirsk.. 1,471,164 ei Dee Akmolinsk?.....| 210,564] 463,347 Tada 964.329 Semipalatinsk 2,,.1 188,299 538,385 Tenetnioniie. cw. 1.970.094 Turgai, with Lake 8 ea 202,192 | 326,706 TN eiSecencssceases 1,840,866 141.474 Or 9 Tver… 1,617,685 eee 525,332 Ce ee Kirghiz Steppes..| 742,529 | 1,853,770 A ge 1,170,067 | Amu-daria…....| 39,976 | 222,200 ir…. 352,140 | Perganah 2 98,045} 808,00 Volhynia. 2,062,270 gana. sapc0dau9 ; 8, 0 Semiryetchensk?.| 155,297 685,945 Vologda. woeee 1,161,551 Sir-daria 2 166. 03 1.109.542 Voroneehc. 9‘433,657 ir- i ae 0 109,542 Vista… 2,740,953 Zerafshan?..... 19,665 351,897 Yaroslavl… 1,082,782 3 a hae a at joe 082782 | purkestan…....| 408,986 | 3,177,584 Total, Russian | CentralAsia,about|1,541,500 | 5,237,354 provinces, 1882,|1,902,092 | 77,879,521 SS | 2. Poland. aligzece eros ecs- 4,392| 774,759 | Tobolsk | 531,982 | 1,283,168 Kielce… 3,897 643,629 PROMS Kemercererecs <2 $29,039 | 1,134,748 Lomza 4,667 559,316} . | ae Lublin 6.499 882,616 | Western Siberia.. 861,021] 2,417,916 Piotrkéw. 4,729 865,777 oes aaa Plock…... 4,200 538,141 Irkutsk.. seterseseees 309,190 398,873 Radom 4,769 644,827 Transbaikalia 2,...| 240,781 497,760 Siedlce 5,535 630,238 Y akutsk See oere 1,517,127 243,443 Simiiit..-...0| | 4fe) cepa pUCmment saree 992,870 | 421,010 HESS Wiss-cossesoes y i) ae sik cela 5,623 | 940,998 | + astern Siberia…|3,059,968 | 1,561,086 Total, Poland…... 49,157 | 7,083,475 ARR E ce Mc 173,559 40,538

, 8. Finland, Maritime, or Pric

9,335] 844,649) morskaya?.....| 730,022 74,000 16,499 | 256,420 apes noes en 4,586 | 202,806| Amur region…... 903,581 | 114,538 8,819| 167,310

221,360

Totul, Siberia…... 4,824,570

207,782

4,098,535

wef 16,627] 858,480! potay ‘Awdeee

WIDOTG.....2c000- 16,084 301,975 Russia, about. ..(6,548,600 | 15,865,742

Total, Finland….. 144,255 | 2,060,782) ¢ rand total =| nae ———————— Sa)

Russian empire,

Total, European BDOW s.crcccccsaxesse

RuSSia…seseeee 2,095,504 8,644,100 /102,889,520

87,023,778

1 The figures are taken, for the areas, from Strelbitzky’s Super sicies de Europe, and, for the population, from the Sbornik Svedeniy o Evropeiskot Rossii for 1882, the Zzvestia of the Caucasus Geographical Society, the Russkiy Kalendar, &c. The arenas have been reduced, taking the square kilometre as equal to 0°3861167 English square mile.

2 Oblasts, or provinces.

3 Okrugs, or otdyels (territories) under military government, the remainder being governments (gubernii) under civil governors.

4 Including Batum and Sukhum.

5 According to General Meyer, in Izvestia of the Russian Geogr. Society, 1885, 4, The areas for the first three districts are given according to M. Seidlitz in Russische Revue, 1885, 4; for the remainder, according to General Meyer. The oasis of Merv proper extends to about 2100 square miles. The populations are given without the Russian military. M. Scidlitz

estimates them as follows :— Akhal Tckke, 42,000; Krasnovodsk, 15,300; Manghishlak, 34,500; Merv, 160,000; Tedjefi, 7500; total, 260,000. The total population, excluding military, is estimated by military authorities at 214,000.

Bubdi- visions of the empire,

Cities.

Govern- ment,

70

Of the areas given in the table, the following (298,636 square miles) are occupied by internal waters (larger lakes and estuaries) :— JETER CEN TRS Fee ae ee “as square miles.

1

ELOUAM Lester ss Sentence eccrine a cee 1 3 HEGita aes (Meee yee eva cesee sted cea Secccs eee oes Sucesssedesscc 18,471 – (CSTOE ST SERS eer errs ear 1,628 € SH ET etemeerenerett ee scse tte Ones cnc Se choca, ok Se 18,864 a PRUE ORD AM ee eeetiag: «sees te Seeieeiex. 2s GMI Z SUED PENE: oh o:< . caer sacesadedeesencsocencssee es 14,888 es BRAS CASPRRNVECE ION ..<:s55sse0:-ceecescaccdsnce+0656e05s 455 rs Sea of Azoff, Caspian Sea, Lake Aral……. 213,874 ee

The islands included in the above statement have the following areas (total 91,182 square miles) :— PIU Re WHIM SOR recess — snore secs ceomemnersse ence

Oe LOBUGIES S@Aleeerscccecseceese ones tee oe eee 38,5 A 3) poalble Sear (itmssinn)s..c,sscssersersreoreeeee eee 1,579 05 uy es (Binnish) <5... s.csecsssecestecseeresees 2,000 D Ae Ebel Ser ee 5a 21 D », Sea of Azoff..... 41 . », Caspian Sea..... so EL aH »> Siberian Arctic Ocean……....0…ccc-ccccsceses 16,496 53. SBOHICH .ccstsesc verteerer esse en 31,763 3

The Russian empire falls into two great subdivisions, the European and the Asiatic, the latter of which, representing an aggregate of nearly 6,500,000 square miles, with a population of only 16 million inhabitants, may be considered as held by colonies. The European dominions comprise European Russia, Finland, which is in fact a separate nationality treated to some extent as an allied state, and Poland, whose very name has been erased from official documents, but which nevertheless continues to pursue its own development. The Asiatic dominions comprise the following great subdivisions :—Cavcasta (q.v.), under a separate governor-general; the Transcaspian region, which is under the governor-general of Caucasus ; the Kirghiz Steppes; TurKustTan (g.v.), under separate governors-general ; Western Siberia and Eastern Siberia (see SrBeRra); and the Amur region, which last comprises also the Pacific coast region and Kamchatka (see KAMCHATKA and Maritime Province). The administrative sub- divisions, with their populations, as estimated for 1882 for European Russia, Poland, and Caucasus, 1881 for Finland, and 1878-82 for the remainder (no regular census having been taken since 1858), are shown above in Table IT.

The enipire contains only twelve cities with a population exceeding 100,000:—St Petersburg, 929,090 (1881); Mos- cow, 753,469 (1884); Warsaw, 406,260 (1882) ; Odessa, 217,000 (1882); Riga, 169,330 (1881); Kharkoff, 159,660 (1883); Kazai, 140,730 (1883); Kishineff, 130,000 ; Kieff, 127,250 (1874); Lodz, 113,146, in Poland (1884); Saratoff, 112,428 (1882); Tiflis, 104,020 (1883) ; and Tashkend, 100,000. According to the most recent returns Vilna, Orel, Rostoff, Astrakhan, Nikolaieff, Dinaburg, Tula, Samara, Taganrog, Kherson, N ini-Novgorod, Berditcheff, Bobruisk, Zhitomir, Minsk, Vitebsk, Elisabetgrad, Reval, and Voronezh had from 94,000 to 50,000 inhabitants, while 61 towns more in European Russia, Finland, and Poland, and 20 in the Asiatic dominions, had from 50,000 to 20,000 inhabitants. The number of towns above 10,000 is con- siderable, but they are mostly mere administrative centres : many villages have greater importance.

Only 9,263,000 (or 9 per cent.) of the aggregate popu- lation of Russia inhabit towns, the number of which is 601 in the 50 Russian governments. The great number of the Russian towns are mere villages; their inhabitants depend on agriculture, and the houses are mostly built of wood, only

127,000 out of about 787,000 houses in towns being built of stone. Of the 68,600,000 who in 1882 formed the rural population of European Russia the greater part were settled in 555,278 villages, almost entirely built of wood ; nearly one-seventieth of the houses are destroyed by fire yearly (164,400 out of 10,649,000 in 1882).

Russia is an absolute and strongly centralized monarchy. The primary unit of state organization is the village com- munity, or mir. A number of such communities are united

into volosts, whose peasant inhabitants clect an elder (volost- noy starshana) and a peasants' tribunal (volostnoy sud), Placed, however, under the uncontrolled rule of a state official—the mirovoy posrednik—and of the police, the elder of the volost and his clerk have become mere organs of the local police and tax-gatherers, while the tribunal of the volost is at the mercy both of influential land-proprietors and of the wealthier peasants or merchants. The system of local self-government is continued in the elective district and provincial assemblies—the zemstvo—on the one hand, and on the other in the elective justices of the peace (miro- voy sudia), whose periodical gatherings (mirovoy syezd) are courts of appeal against the decisions of the individual justices. But neither of these institutions—and least of al] the zemstvo—is capable of acquiring the necessary inde- pendence. The zemstvos—one for each district, and an- other for the province—consist of a representative assembly (zemskoye sobraniye) and an executive (zemskaya uprava) nominated by the former. The sobraniye consists of three classes of delegates :—the landed proprietors (all nobles possessing more than 590 acres, and delegates from the remainder, along with delegates from the clergy in their capacity of landed proprietors); representatives of the mer- chants, artisans, and urban population ; and representatives of the peasants, indirectly elected,—matters being usually so adjusted that this class is less numerous than the agere- gate of the other two. In theory the zemstvos have large powers in relation to the incidence of taxation, as well as in matters affecting education, public health, roads, &e, But in reality they are for the most part compelled to limit themselves

to the adjustment of the state taxation, which is so high that new taxes for education, sanitary purposes, and so on, must necessarily be very limited, Moreover, the decisions of the zemstvos are jealously con- trolled by the representative of the central Government,— the governor,—and promptly annulled whenever they manifest a different spirit from that prevailing for the time at the court. Disobedience is punished by dissolution, sometimes by administrative exile. These circumstances have helped to eliminate from the zemstvos the better elements which at first entered into their composition. The greater number of them are inspired now with the same red-tapeism as the ministerial chancelleries, or are refuges for proprietors in search of a salary. Still, in several provinces a good deal of most useful work has been done, especially educational, by those zemstvos in which the peasants are in a majority or the proprietors are inspired with a more liberal spirit; while several other zemstvos have recently made extensive and most valuable inquiries into the condition of agriculture, industry, é&e.

Since 1870 the municipalities have had institutions like those of the zemstvos. All owners of houses, and tax-paying merchants, artisans, and workmen, are enrolled on lists in a descending order according to their assessed wealth. The total valuation is then divided into three equal parts, each of which elects an equal number of repre- sentatives to the duma. The executive is in the hands of an elective mayor and an wprava which consists of several members elected by the duma. Both are, in fact, function- aries under the governor, and the municipal institutions have no real independent life.2

The organs of the central government in the provinces are the uryadniks (a kind of gardes-champétres) in the villages, the stanovoys and isprauniks (chiefs of the police) in the districts, and the governors (a kind of Napoleonic prefect) in each government—all invested, the uryadmks

oS eee

1 See* Golovatchoff, Zen Years of Reforms in Russia; The Finances of: the Zemsivos (official publication) ; Dityatin, Municipal Self-Government in Russia, 2 vols.; and very numerous and valuable papers in the reviews Vyestnik Evropy, Otetchestvennyya Zapiski, Russkaya Mys!, &e.

i i a

wmU Te LX 71

finances, army, and representative institutions, with limited rights, but its ministers of war and the exterior are thoso of the empire, and its institutions are not always respected by the emperor,

The emperor is not the head of the church, all decisions in theo- logical matters having to be given by the Synod. His influence, however, is very great, as the nomination of the bishops rests with him. In 1882 there were in Russia 40,569 Orthodox churches and about 14,000 chapels, with 37,318 priests, 7009 deacons, and 45,395 singers. There were also 6752 monks and 3957 aspirants, 4945 nuns and 13,803 female aspirants. The church budget was 18,974,887 roubles in 1884. The monasteries and churches are possessed of great wealth, including 2950 square miles of land (a territory greater than that of Oldenburg), an invested capital of 22,634,000 roubles, an annual subsidy of 408,000 roubles from Government, and a very great number of inns, shops, printing establishments, burial grounds, &c., with whole towns eovering an aggregate area of 104 square miles, Their total annual revenue is estimated at 9,000,000 roubles.

RUSSLAN EMPIRE. |

included, with powers which are the more extensive as they are totally undefined. ‘There is also in each ‘government a special gendarmerie under the “chief of gendarmes,” who usually is also the head of the “ third section” of the Imperial Chancery. The name of the third section has been recently abolished, but the institution still continues. It has charge of the secret police of the state, and has most varied functions, such as the arrest of supposed political offenders, their exile to Siberia, the delivery of separation papers to spouses desiring divorce, and so on. Several governments are placed under special governors- seneral, whom the recent law on the “state of siege” invests with almost dictatorial powers. The higher administration is represented by the emperor,

who unites the supreme legislative, executive, and judicial powers, and is surrounded by four distinct councils—the committee of ministers, the

council of the empire, the senate, and the Holy Synod. The ministers, who are con- sidered as executing tho will of the czar, and are nominated by him, are invested with very extensive powers; their circulars for the interpretation of laws have greater weight than the laws themselves. The council of the empire, which consisted in 1884 of 64 members, nominated by the emperor, besides the ministers and several members of the imperial family, is a consultative body for matters of legis- lation. ‘The senate, also nominated by the emperor, has two distinct functions. Seven “departments” of it are administrative ; they promulgate the laws, examine the acts of governors, adjudicate in their conflicts with zemstvos, and, in theory, can make remonstrances to the emperor,— in fact they merely register and promulgate laws. Two other “departments” are courts of cassation. A special department, reinforced by representatives of nobility, pro- nounces judgment in political cases. The Holy Synod, consisting of metropolitans and bishops who sit there in turn, has the superintendence of religious affairs.

The judicial system introduced in 1864 was conceived in a very liberal spirit, which, unfortunately, has not been main- tained. Thus a ‘‘ preliminary instruction,” made by the ** third section” in political cases, or by the police, has been subse- quently introduced. The ‘‘ judges of instruction, ” irremovable by law, have not yet been nominated, their functions being discharged by substitutes entircly dependent upon the ministry. Elective justices of the peace decide in all eases involving less than 500 roubles, or less than six months’ imprisonment. Their decisions can be brought by appeal before the district gathering of the jus- tices of tho peace, and thence before the senate. All criminal cases involving severer penalties are tried by juries, whose verdicts can be set aside only by a court of cassation, but are not respected in cases having a so-called “political” aspect. Political offences are tried by tribunals composed ad hoc. Civil cases in which more than 500 roubles are involved are tried by courts of justice, with appeal to chambers of justice.

In 1879 in European Russia,—exclusive of six Lithuanian and White Russian governments,—42,530 persons were tried before the courts, and 59,600 before the justices of the peace, the convictions being respectively 27,397 and 36,742. The aggregate number of eondemnations pronounced in

1882 was 46,018 in European Russia, that is, 5-9 condemned in each 10,000; only 4836 of them were women, On January 1, 1882, 93,108 persons were in jail; 530,307 men and 66,073 women (the latter with 30,769 children) were imprisoned during the year, while 625,280 prisoners were liberated or exiled, and on January 1, 1883, the number of prisoners in jail (excluding those of Saghalin and Caucasus) was 97,337. More than 20,000 are annually transported to Siberia.

The empire is divided for administrative purposes into govern- ments (guberniya) or territories (oblast), of which there are 50 in European Russia and 10 in Poland. Each government, or territory, is divided into cight to fifteen districts (uyezd). The Asiatic dominions are divided' into onc licutcnancy (namyestnitchestvo), that of Caucasia, and four general governments—Turkestan, Stepnoye (Kirghiz Steppes), East Siberia, and Amur. They com- prise thirty-three governments and territories, besides a few dis- tricts (okrug, otdyel) in Transcaucasia and the Transcaspian region, regarded almost as separate governments. In Siberia the governors and governors-general are assisted by councils which have a consultative voice. The Baltic provinces have some peculiar institutions. Finland is a separate state, having its own

Much still remains to be done for the diffusion of the first Educa-

elements of a sound education throughout the empire; unhappily tion, the endeavours of private persons in this field and of the zemstvos

are for political reasons discouraged by the Government. There

are seven universities—Dorpat, Kazan, Kharkoff, Kieff, Moscow, Odessa, and St Petersburg—to which may be added thoso of Warsaw and Helsingfors. had 605 professors and 10,528 students, fessors and 1228 students at Warsaw. on the whole is high, and may be compared to that of tho German universities. intelligent. Mostly sons of poor parents, they live in extreme poverty, supporting themselves chiefly by translating and by tutorial work. universities. Explicit regulations for the interpretation of science have been issued, and restrictions laid upon the teaching of philo- sophy and natural science generally ; comparativo legislation has been excluded from the programmes ; teaching in Russian (instead of German)

has been ordered at Dorpat. under rigorous regulations in regard to their life outside the uni- versity. About 950 studeuts in theological academies and 2500 in higher teclinical schools must be added to the above.

In 1883 the seven Russian universities and there were 81 pro- The standard of teaching

The students are hardworking, and generally very

Severe measures have been taken in 1885 in regard to the

The students are placed

The state of secondary education still leaves very much to be desired. There were in 1883 180 gymnasiums and progymnasiums for boys in European Russia, and 24 in the Asiatic dominions, and 27 and 10 respectively for girls; there were also 73 “eal” schools in European Russia and 8 in the Asiatic dominions, and 48 normal schools in Russia and 10 in the Asiatic dominions. To these must be added the 14,800 pupils in 58 theological seminaries, and about 3000 in varioussecondary schools, The steady tendency of Russian society towards increasing the number of secondary schools, where instruction would be based on the study of the natural sciences, is checked by Government in favour of the classical gymnasiums. The aggregate number of schools for second- ary instruction in European Russia in 1882 was 456 for boys and 384 for girls, with 107,980 male and 79,625 female scholars. Of these, 355 schools (45,3803 boys and 3199 girls) give professional edueation.

For primary instruction there were in 1882 in European Russia proper 28,329 schools, with 1,177,504 male and 362,471 female pupils. Of the 6,231,160 roubles expended on primary schools only 747,772 roubles were contributed by Government, the remainder being supplied by the zemstvos (2,512,118 roubles), by municipalities, or by private persons. Sunday schools and public lectures are virtually prohibited.

‘A characteristie feature of the intellectual movement in Russia is its tendency to extend to women the means of receiving higher instruction. “The gymnasiums for girls are both numerous and good. In addition to

these, notwithstanding Government opposi- tion, a series of higher schools, where careful instruction in natural and social sciences is given, have been opened in the chief citics under the name of ‘‘ Pedagogical Courscs.” At St Petersburg a women’s medical academy, the examinations of which were even more searching than those of the ordinary academy (especially as regards diseases of women and children), was opened, but after about one hundred women had received the degree of M.D., it has been suppressed by Government. In several university towns there are also free teaching establishments for women, supported by subscription, with programmes and examinations equal to those of the universities. In 1882 the students numbered 914 at St Petersburg, about 500 at Moscow, and 389 at Kazan.

The natural sciences arc much cultivated in Russia, especially Scientifie during the last twenty years. Besides the Academy of Science, the societies. Moscow Society of Naturalists, the Mineralogical Society, the Geographical Society, with its Caucasian and Siberian branches, the archeological societies and the scientific societies of the Baltic pro- vinces, all of which are of old and recognized standing, there have lately sprung up a series of new societies in connexion with each university, and their serials are yearly growing in importance, as

Finance.

Army.

Navy.

For- tresses.

also are those of the recently founded Moscow Society of Friends of Natural Science, the Chemico-Physical Society, and various medical, educational, and other societies. The work achieved by Russian savants, especially in biology, physiology, and chemistry, and in the seiences descriptive of the vast territory of Russia, are well known to Europe.

The finances of the empire are in a most unsatisfactory condition. Although the revenue has doubled since 1856, and had reached 697,980,983 roubles (£69, 798,098)! in 1883, the expenditure, which was estimated at 721,337,844 roubles the same year, is always in excess of the income. The national debt is rapidly augmented both by loans and by issues of papcr money so depreciated as to be worth only about 60 to 63 per cent. of its nominal value. On January 1, 1884, no less than 1,085,000,000 paper roubles were in circulation g and the national debt, the paper-mnoney ineluded, reached about £578,000,000, inclusive of the railway debt. Russian finance is that its direct taxes are chiefly paid by the peasantry (91 per cént. of the whole), and the revenue is chiefly based on excise duties (direct taxes, 136,105,320 roubles ; excise duties on spirits, 250,291,380; duties on tobacco and sugar, 28,569,500 ; import duties, 101,053,000). Of the yearly revenue no less than 436,000,000 roubles are spent in interest and sinking fund on the debt, and for war purposes.?

The zemstvos, which have an ageregate yearly income of about

thirty million roubles, have also a yearly deficit of from three to | The municipalities had in 1882 an income of

five million roubles. only 40,076,748 roubles, there being only nine cities which had a budget of more than 500,000 roubles, and five above one million.

The Russian army has been completely reorganized since the Crimean War, and compulsory military service was introduced in 1874. In 1884 the strength of the army on a peace footing was 532,764 men serving with the colours, 68,786 reserve troops, 55,599 Cossacks and irregulars, 72,626 local, depét, and instruction troops, 27,468 officers, 129,736 horses, and 1844 guns. On a war footing there were 986,000 in the active army, 563,373 in the reserve, 148,057 Cossacks and irregulars, 178,450 local, depét, and instruction troops, 41,551 officers, 366,354 horses, and 3778 guns; that is, about 1,300,000 men in field, to which number 1,000,000 untrained militia could be added in case of need. These high figures, ought, however, to be much reduced on account of the deficiencies of mobilization.

The irregular troops consist of ten voiskos—Don, Kubafi, Terek, Astrakhan, Orenburg, Ural, West Siberia, Semiryetchensk, Trans- baikalia, and Amur. All the men of these voiskos between sixteen and forty-one years of age are bound to be ready for service in turn in time of peace, and to equip themselves at their own expense, train and artillery being provided by Government. In their twofold capacity as peasant settlers and a military force, these men have contributed much to the conquest of Asia.

Since 1878 compulsory military service has been introduced in Finland. The Finnish troops (nine battalions of 4833 riflemen) must be employed, as a rule, for the defence of their own country.

Notwithstanding large recent outlays, the Russian navy is by no means adapted to the exigencies of modern warfare ; much stress is therefore laid on the good organization of the torpedo flotilla. The navy consists of 358 vessels, of 196,575 tons, carrying 24,500 men and 671 guns. Only 40 of these are armoured ships, the remainder being unarmoured frigates, corvettes, and cruisers, or torpedo boats (119), while a great number are mere transports and small craft.

The extensive frontier is defended by many fortresses, chiefly on the west. Poland to the west of the Vistula remains quite unpro- tected, fortifications being only now in course of construction in the south-west ; but the Vistula is defended by the first-class fortresses of Modlin (Novogeorgievsk), Warsaw, and Ivangorod, with Brest- Litovsk in the rear. For protecting this line in rear new fortifica- tions are being erected. ‘The space between Poland and the Diina is protected only by the citadel of Vilna and the inarshes of the Pripet. The second line of fortresses has been erected on the Diina and Dnieper,—Riga, Diinaburg, Vitebsk, Bobruisk, and Kieff. The south-western frontier is under the protection of the advanced works of Bendery and Akerman, while the Black Sea coast is defended by Kinburn and Otchakoff at the entrances of the Dnieper and the Bug, Sebastopol in the Crimea, batteries at Odessa and Nikolaieff, and a series of minor fortifications. Formidable defen- sive works have been erected on the Baltic at Diinamiinde, Reval, Narva, Cronstadt, Wib g, Frederikshamn, Rohtensalm, Sveaborg, Hangéudd, and in the Neca Islands. A great number of minor forts are scattered throughout Caucasia, Transcaucasia, and

Turkestan ; but the Pacific coast has only earth-works at Vladi- vostok and Nikolaievsk.

is equivalent to 38-046

declined from 94:5 per

1882 (see below, p.86),

ee Svedeniy on European Russia ;

84,

penee sterling; cent. of its nominal value in 1861-65 to 60 per eent. in

Brzeski, State Dedts of Russta,

RUSSIA

The great defect of

q

[BUROPEAN RUSszA,

Parr II.—Evrorgan Russi1a—Grocnarty.

The administrative boundaries of European Russia, apart from Finland and Poland, broadly coincide on the whole with the 1 natural limits of the East-European plains, where they suddenly take, eastward of the Baltic Sea, a great extension towards the north. In the north it is bounded by the Arctic Ocean ; the islands of Nova Zembla, Kolgueff, and Vaigatch also belong to it, but the Kara Sea is reckoned to Siberia. ‘To the cast it has the Asiatic dominions of the empire, Siberia and the Kirghiz Steppe, from both of which it is separated by the Ural Mountains, the Ural river, and the Caspian —the administrative boundary, how- ever, partly extending into Asia on the Siberian slope of the Urals, To the south it has the Black Sea and Caucasia, being separated from the latter by the double valley of the two Manytches —a channel which in Post-Pliocene times connected the Sea of Azotf with

the Caspian. The western boundary is purely conventional: it crosses first the peninsula of Kola from the Varanger Fiord to the northern extremity of the Gulf of Bothnia, making an arbitrary deflexion towards the west ; thence it runs to the Kurische Haif in the sonthern Baltic, and thence to the mouth of the Danube, taking a great circular sweep to the west to embrace Poland, and separating Russia from Prussia, Austrian Galicia, and Roumania.

Of this immense frontier line less than one-half is bordered by seas—nearly all of them inland seas. For it isa special feature of Russia—a feature which has impressed a special character on its history—that she has no free outlet to the high seas except on the ice-bound shores of the Arctic Occan. Even the White Sea is merely a ramified gulf of that ocean. Another warmer guif, of the Arctic Ocean—the Varanger Fiord—separated from Russia by the uninhabitable plateaus of the peninsula of Kola, has been abandoned to Norway. The deep indentations of the Gulf of Bothnia and Finland wash the shores of Finnish territory, and it is only at the very head of the latter gulf that the Russians happen to have taken a firm foothold by erecting their capital on the marshes at the mouth of the Neva. ‘The Gulf of Riga and the south-eastern Baltic belong also to territory which is not inhabited by Slavonians, but by Finnish stems, and by Germans. It is only very recently, within the last hundred years, that the Russians definitively took possession of the northern shores of the Black Sea and the Sea of Azoff. The eastern coast of the Black Sea belongs properly to Transcaucasia, a great chain of mountains separating it from Russia. But even this sea is an inland one, the only outlet of which, the Bosphorus, is in foreign hands, while the Caspian is but an immense shallow lake, bordered mostly by deserts, and possessing more importance as a link between Russia and her colonies than as a channel for intercourse with other countries.

The great territory occupied by European Russia—1600 miles in Cor length from north to south, and nearly as much from west to east rati —is on the whole a broad elevated plain, ranging between 500 and 900 feet above sea-level, deeply eut into by river-valleys, and bounded on all sides by broad hilly swellings or mountains :—the lake plateaus of Finland and the Maanselkii heights in the north- west; the Baltic coast-ridge and spurs of the Carpathians in the west, with a broad depression between the two,

oceupied by Poland; the Crimean and Caucasian mountains in the south ; and the broad but ‘moderately high swelling of the Ural Mountains in the east,

From a central plateau which comprises Tver, Moscow, Smolensk, and Kursk, and projects eastwards towards Samara, attaining an average height of 800 to 900 feet above the sea, the surface gently slopes in all directions to a level of from 300 to 500 fect. Then it again gently rises as it approaches the hilly tracts cnclosing the great plain. This central swelling may be considered a continua- tion towards the east-north-east of the great line of upheavals of western Europe; the heights of Finland would then appear as continnations of the Scanian plateaus, and the northern mountains of Finland as continuations of the Kjélen, while the other great line of upheaval of the old continent, which runs north-west and south-east, would be represented in Russia by the Caucasus in the south and the Timan ridge of the Petchora basin in the north,

The hilly aspects of several parts of the central plateau are not due to foldings of the strata, which for the most part appear to be horizontal, but chiefly to the excavating action of rivers, whose valleys are deeply dug out in the plateau, especially on its borders. The round flattened summits of the Valdai plateau do not rise above 1100 feet, and they present the appearance of mountains only in consequence of the depth of the valleys—the levels of the rivers which flow towards the depression of Lake Peipus being only from 200 to 250 feet above the sca. The ease is similar with the plateaus of Livonia, ‘‘ Wendish Switzerland,” and Kovno, which do not exceed 1000 feet at their highest points ; so also with the eastern spurs of the Baltic coast-ridge between Grodno and Minsk. The same elevation is reached by a very few flat summits of the plateau about Kursk, and farther east on the Volga about Kamyshin, where the valleys are excavated in the plateau to a depth of from 800 to 900 feet, giving quite a hilly aspect to the country. It is only in the south-west, where spurs

of the Carpathians enter Volhynia, Podolia, and Bessarabia, that ridges reaching 1100 feet are met with, intersected by deep ravines.

The depressions on the borders of the central plateau thus ac- quire a greater importance than the small differences in its height. Such is the broad depression of the middle Volga and lower Kama, bounded on the north by the faint swelling of the Uvaty, which is the watershed between the Arctic Ocean and the Volga basin. Another broad depression, from 250 to 500 feet above the sea, still filled by Lakes Peipus, Ladoga, Onega, Bieto-ozero, Latche, Vozhe, and many thousands of smaller ones, borders the central plateau on the north, and follows the same east-north-east direction. Only a few low swellings penetrate into it from the north-west, about Lake Onega, and reach 900 feet, while in the north-east it is enclosed by the high Timanskiy ridge (1000 fect). A third depression ofa similar character, occupied by the Pripet and the middle Dnieper, extends to the west of the central plateau of Russia, and penetrates into Poland. The immense lacustrine basin is now broken up into numberless ponds, lakes, and extensive marshes (see Minsk). Itis bounded on the south by the broad plateaus spreading east of the Carpathians. South of 50° N. lat. the central plateau gently slopes towards the south, and we find there a fourth depression spreading west and east through Poltava and Kharkoff, but still reaching in its higher parts 500 to 700 feet. It is separated from the Black Sea by a gentle swelling which may be traced from Kremenetz to the lower Don, and perhaps farther south-east. This low swelling includes the Donetz coal-measures and the middle granitic ridges which cause the rapids of the Dnieper. Finally a fifth immense depression, which descends below the level of the ocean, extends for more than 200 tiles to the north of the Caspian, comprising the lower Volga and the Ural and Emba rivers, and establishing a link between Russia and the Aral-Caspian region. The depression is continued farther north by plains below 300 feet which join the depression of the middle Volga, and extend as far as the mouth of the Oka.

The Ural Mountains present the aspect of a broad swelling whose strata no longer exhibit the horizontality we see in Russia, and moreover are deeply cut into by rivers. It is connected in the west with broad plateaus joining those of central Russia, but its orographical relations to other upheavals must be more closely studied before they can be definitely pronounced oun.

The rhomboidal peninsula of the Crimea, connected by only a narrow isthmus with the continent, is occupied by a dry plateau gently sloping north and east, and bordered in the south-east by the Yaita Mountains, the summits of which range between 4000 and 5118 feet (see CRIMEA and TAURIDA),.

Owing to the orographieal structure of the East-European plains, which has just been described, the river-system has attained a very high development. Taking their origin from a series of great lacustrine basins scattered over the surface of the plateaus and differing slightly in elevation, the Russian rivers describe im- mense curves before reaching the sea, and flow with a very gentle gradient, receiving numerous large tributaries, which collect their waters from vast areas. Thus the Volga, the Dnieper, and the -Don attain respectively a length of 2110, 1330, and 1125 miles, and their basins cover 645,000, 244,600, and about 115,000 square miles respectively. Moreover the chiefrivers of Russia—the Volga, the Diina, the Dnieper, and even the Lovat and the Oka—take their rise in the north-western part of the central plateau, so close to one another that they may be said to radiate from the same marshes. The sources of the Don are ramified among the tribu- taries of the Oka, while the upper tributaries of the Kama join those of the Dwina and Petchora. In consequence of this, the rivers of Russia have been from remote antiquity the true channels of trade and migration, and have contributed much more to the elaboration of the national unity than any political institutions. Boats could be conveyed over flat and easy portages, from one river- basin to another, and these portages were subsequently transformed with a relatively small amount of labour into navigable canals, and even at the present day these canals have more importance for the traffic of the country than most railways. By their means the plains of the central plateau—the very heart of Russia, whose natural outlet was the Caspian—were brought into water-communication with the Baltic, and the Volga basin connected with the Gulf of Finland. The White Sea has also been brought into connexion with the central Volga basin, while the sister-river of the Volga —the Kama—became the main artery of communication with Siberia.

_ It must be observed, however, that, though ranking before the rivers of western Europe in respect of length, the rivers of Russia are far behind as

regards the amount of water discharged. They freeze in winter and dry up in summer, and most of them are navigable only during the spring-floods ; even the great Volga becomes so shallow during the hot season that only light boats can pass its shoals.

Russia has a very large number of lakes. The ageregate area of the largest ones is stated at 25,800 square miles.

The following is a descriptive list of the principal rivers of Euro- pean Russia.

A. Arctic Ocean Basin. —(1) The Petchora (1025 miles) rises in the

northern Urals, and enters the ocean by a large estuary at the Gulf of Petchora. Its basin, thinly peopled and available only for cattle- breeding and for hunting, is quite isolated from Russia by the Timan ridge. The river is navigable for 770 miles; grain and a variety of goods conveyed from the upper Kama are floated down, while furs, fish, and other products of the sea are shipped up the river to be transported to Tcherdyn on the Kama. (2) The Kara (139 miles) enters the Kara Sea. (3) The Mezefi (510 miles) enters the Bay of Mezeii; it is navigable for 450 miles, and is the channel of a considerable export of timber. (4) The northern Dwina, or Dvina (950 miles), with a basin of about 150,000 square miles, is formed by the union of two great rivers, the Yug (270 miles) and the Sukhona (330 miles). The Sukhona has its origin in Lake Kubenskoye, in north-west Vologda, and flows rapidly southwards and eastwards, having a great number of rapids. It is navigable throughout its length, and, as Lake Kubenskoye commu- nicates by the Alexander of Wiirtemberg Canal with Lake Bietoye, it is connected with the Caspian and Baltic. The Vytchegda (685 miles), which flows west-south-west to join the Sukhona, through a woody region, thinly peopled, is navigable for 500 miles and in its upper portion is connected by a canal with the upper Kama. The Dwina flows with a very slight gradient through a broad valley, receiving many tributaries, and reaches the White Sea at Arch- angel by a number of branches. Notwithstanding serious

obstacles offered by shallows, corn, fish, salt, and timber are largely shipped to and from Archangel. (5) The Onega (245 miles) rises in Lake Latche in the south of Otonetz, and flows into Onega Bay ; it has rapids ; timber is floated down in spring, and fishing and some navigation are carried on in the lower portion.

B. Baltic Basin.—(6) The Neva (46 miles) flows from Lake. Ladoga into the Gulf of Finland (see St PETeRspuRG). (7) The Volkhoff (135 miles), discharging into Lake Ladoga (see Lapoea), and forming part of the Vyshnevolotsk system of canals, is an important channel for navigation; it flows from Lake Ilmen (867 square miles), which receives the Msta (250 miles), connected with the Volga, the Lovat (310 miles), and many smaller tributaries. (8) The Svir (135 miles), also discharging into Lake Ladoga, flows from Lake Onega (4925 square miles), and, being part of the Mariinsk canal system, is of great importance for navigation (see Vouea). (9) The Narova (46 miles) flows out of Lake Peipus into the Gulf of Finland at Narva; it has remarkable rapids, notwith- standing which an active navigation is carried on by means of its waters. Lake Peipus, or Tchudskoye (136 square miles), receives —(10) the Velikaya (210 miles), a channel of traffic with southern Russia from a remote antiquity, but now navigable only in its lower portion, and (11) the Embach (83 miles), navigated by steamers to Dorpat. (12) The Diina, or West Dwina (577 miles), with a basin area of about 75,000 square miles, rises in the Ostashkoff district of Tver, and falls into the sea below Riga, after having described a great curve to the south. It is shallow above the rapids of Jacob- stadt, but navigation is carried on as far as Vitebsk, —corn, timber for shipbuilding, potash, flax, &c., being the principal shipments of its navigable tributaries (the Obsha, Ulla, and Kasplya); the Ulla is connected by the Berezina canals with the Dnieper. (13) The Niemen (Memel), with a course of 470 miles in Russia, rises in the north of Minsk, leaves Russia at Yurburg, and enters the Kurische Haff ; rafts are floated upon it almost from its sources, and steamers ply as far as to Kovno ; the export of corn and timber to Prussia, and import of fish, grocery, and manufactured ware are consider- able ; it is connected by the Oginski Canal with the Dnieper. The chief tributaries are the Viliya and the Shara. For (14) the Vistula, with the Bug and Narew, see PoLAND.

C. Black Sea Basin.—(15) The Pruth (505 miles) rises in Austrian Bukovina, and separates Russia from Roumania ; it enters (16) the Danube, which flows along the Russian frontier for 100 miles below Reni, touching it with its Kilia branch. (17) The Dniester (530 miles within Russia and about 330 miles in Austria) rises in Galicia. Light boats and rafts are floated at all points, and steamers ply on its lower portion ; its estuary has important fisheries. (18) The Dnieper (1330 miles), with a basin of about 245,000 square miles, with tributaries, waters thirteen governments, of which the aggregate population numbers about 15,000,000. It also originates in the north-western parts of the central plateau, in the same marshy lakes which give rise to the Volga and Diina. It flows west, south, south-east, and south-west, and enters a bay in the north-western part of the Black Sea. In the middle navigable part of its course, from Dorogobuzh to Ekate- rinoslaff, it is an active channel for traffic. It receives several large tributaries :—on the right, the Berezina (285 miles), con- nected with the Diina, and the Pripet (400 miles), both most important for navigation,—as well as several smaller tributaries on which rafts are floated; on the left the Sozh (830 miles), the Desna (590 miles), one of the most important rivers of Russia, navigated by steamers as far as Bryansk, the Suta (252 miles), the Psiot (415 miles), and the Vorskta (268 miles). Below Ekaterinoslaff the Dnieper flows for 46 miles through a series of thirteen rapids. At Kherson it enters its long (40 miles) but

shallow estuary, which receives the West Bug (450 mules) and the Ingut (220 iniles). The traffic of the Dnieper and its tributaries reached in 1882 an aggregate of 12:9 million cwts. shipped and 6°7 discharged, the principal items being corn, salt, and timber. (19) The Don (1125 miles), with a basin of about 120,000 square iniles, and navigable for 880 miles, rises in south-eastern Tula and enters the Sea of Azoff at Rostoff by thirty mouths, after describing a great curve to the east at Tsaritsyn, approaching the Volga, with which it is connected by a railway (40 miles). Its navigation is of great importance (5°4 million cwts. shipped, and 5°1 discharged), es -cially for

goods brought from the Volga, and its fisheries are extensive. The chief tributaries are the Sosna (175 miles) and North Donetz (615 milcs) on the right, and _ the Voronezh (305 miles), Khoper (565 miles), Medvyeditsa (410 miles), and Manytch (295 miles), on the left. (20) The Ylya (192 iniles), (21) the Kubaii (510 miles), and (22) the Rion belong to Caueasia.

D. The Caspian Basin.—(23) The Volga, the chief river of Russia, has a length of 2110 miles, and its basin, about 648,000 square miles in area, contains a population of more than 40,000,000. It is connected with the Baltic by three systems of canals (see Vouea). (24) The Great and the Little Uzci no longer reach the Caspian but lose themselves in the Babinskoyc Lakes. (25) The Ural (1475 miles), in its lower part, constitutes the frontier between European Russia and the Kirghiz Steppe; it receives the Sakmara on the right and the Ilek on the left. (26) The East Manytch (175 miles) is on the Caucasian boundary. (27) The Kuma (405 miles), (28) the Terek (360 miles), and (29) the Kura (about 650 miles), with the Arax (about 650 miles), which receives the waters of Lake Goktcha, belong to Caucasia.!

Almost every geological formation, from the oldest up to the most recent, is met with in Russia; but, as they are almost horizontal, they for the most part cover one another over immense spaces, so that the lower ones appear only at the bottom of the deeper valleys, and the oldest are seen only on the borders of the great Russian plain.

At the beginning of the Paleozoic period only a very few portions of what is now Russia—Finland, namely, and parts of Olonetz— rose above the surface of the sea; but, as the result of a gradual upheaval continued through Paleozoic times, it is supposed that at the end of this epoch Russia was a continent not greatly differ- ing from the present one. In Mesozoic times the sea began again to invade it, but, while in the preceding period the oscillations resolved themselves into a gradual upheaval extending from west to east, in Mesozoic times the upheaval went on from north-west to south-east. The Mesozoic sea, however, did not extend beyond what is now central Russia, and did not cover the “Devonian plateau” of western Russia, which remained a continent from the Carboniferous epoch. A gradual rising of the continent followed, and was continued through Neozoic times, with perhaps a limited subsidence in the Post-Glacial period, when the actual

seas extended their narrow gulfs up the valleys now occupied by the great rivers. During the first part of the Glacial period, Russia seems to have been covered by an immense ice-sheet, which extended also over central Germany, and of which the eastern limits cannot yet be determined.

The Archean gneisses have a broad extension in Finland, northern Russia, the Ural Mountains, and the Caucasus; they form also the back-bone of the ridge which extends from the Carpathians through southern Russia. They consist for the most part of red and grey gneisses and granulites, with subordinate layers of granite and granitite. The Finland rappa-kivi, the Serdobol gneiss, and the Pargas and Rustiala marble (with the so-called Hozoon cana- dense) yield good building stone ; while iron, copper, and zinc-ore are common in Finland and in the Urals. Rocks regarded as representing the Huronian system appear also in Finland, in north- western Russia, as a narrow strip on the Urals, and in the Dnieper ridge. They consist of a series of unfossiliferous crystalline slates. The Cambrian is represented by blue clays, ungulite sandstones, and bituminous slates in Esthonia and St Petersburg.

The Silurian system is widely developed, and it is most probable that, with the exception of the Archean continents of Finland and the Urals, the Silurian sea covered the whole of Russia. Being con- cealed by more recent deposits, Silurian rocks appear on the surface

1 Bibliography.—The lengths of the rivers of European Russia as ascertained by accurate mcasurements are

See also Stuckenberg, M7ydr. des R. Reichs ; Semenoff, Geogr. Statist, Dictionary (the most reliable source for all the

Russian rivers, separate govcrnments, a great variety of inonographs dealing with separate

was published in 1878; sce also Tillo, Orogr. Map of Russia; the ordinance maps of Russia; and Tillo, “ Magnctical of Geogr. Soc., 1884 and 1885,

only in north-western Russia (Esthonia, Livonia, St Petersburg, and on the Volkhoff), where all European subdivisions of the system have been found, in the Timan ridge, on the western slo e of the Urals, in the Pai-kho ridge, and in the islands of the Aretic Ocean. In Poland it is met with in the Kielce Inountains, and in Podolia in the deeper ravines.

The Devonian -dolomites, limestones, and red sandstones cover immense tracts and appcar on the surface over a much wider area, From Esthonia these rocks extend north-east to Lake Onega, and south-east to Moghileff; they form the central plateau, as algo the slopes of the Urals and the Petchora region. In north-western and middle Russia they contain a special fauna, and it appears that the Lower Devonian series of western Europe, represented in Poland and in the Urals, is missing in north-western and central Russia, where only the Middle and Upper Devonian divisions are found.

Carboniferous deposits cover nearly all eastern Russia, their west boundary being a line drawn from Archangel to the upper Dnieper, thence to the upper Don, and south to the mouth of the last-named river, with a long narrow gulf extending west to encircle the plateau of the Donetz. They are visible, however, only on the western borders of this region, being covered towards the east by thick Permian and Triassic strata. Russia has three large coal-bearing regions—the Moscow basin, the Donetz region, and the Urals. In the Valdai plateau there are only a few beds of mediocre coal. In the Moscow basin, which was a broad gulf of the Carboniferous sea, coal appears as isolated inconstant seams amidst littoral deposits, the formation of which was fayoured by frequent minor subsidences of the sea-coast. The Donetz coal-measures, containing abundant remains of a rich land-flora, cover nearly 16,000 square miles, and comprise a valuable stock of excellent anthracite and coal, togethcr with iron-mines. Several smaller coal-fields on the slopes of the Urals and on the Timan ridge may be added to the above. The Polish coal-fields belong to another Carboniferous area of deposit, which extended over Silesia, _

The Permian limestones and marls occupy a strip in eastern Russia of much less extent than that assigned to them on geological maps a few years ago.

The variegated marls of eastern Russia, rich in salt-springs, but very poor in fossils, are now held by most Russian geologists to be Triassic. Indisputably Triassic deposits have been found only in the two Bogdo mountains in the Kirghiz Steppe (Campiler-Schichten) and in south-western Poland.

During the Jurassic period the sea began again to invade Russia from south-eastand north-west. The limits of the Russian Jurassic system may be represented by a line drawn from the double valley of the Sukhona and Vytchegda to that of the upper Volga, and thence to Kieff, with a wide gulf penetrating towards the north- west. Within this space three depressions, all running south-west to north-east, are filled up with Upper Jurassic deposits. They are much denuded in the higher parts of this region, and appear but as isolated islands in central Russia. In the south-east all the older subdivisions arc represented, the deposits having the characters of a deep-sea deposit in the Aral-Caspian region and on the Caucasus.

The Cretaceous deposits—sands, loose sandstones, marls, and white chalk —cover the region south of a line drawn from the Niemen to the upper Oka and Don, and thence north-east to Simbirsk, with the exception of the Dnieper and Don ridge, the Yaita Mountains, and the upper Caucasus. They are rich in grind- ing stone, and especially in secondary layers of phosphorites.

The Tertiary formations occupy Jarge areas in southern Russia. The Eocene covers wide tracts from Lithuania to Tsaritsyn, and is represented in the Crimea and Caucasus by thick deposits belong- ing to the same ocean, which left its deposits on the Alps and the Himalayas. Oligocene, quite similar to that of North Germany, and containing brown coal and amber, has been met with only in Poland, Courland, and Lithuania. The Miocene (Sarmatian stage) occupics extensive tracts in southern Russia, south of a line drawn through Lublin to Ekaterinoslaff and Saratoff. Not only the higher chains of Caucasus and Yaita, but also the Donetz ridge, rose above the level of the Miocene sea, which was very shallow to the north of this last ridge, while farther south it was connected both with the Vienna basin and with the Aral-Caspian. The Pliocene appears only in the coast region of the Black and Azoff Seas, but it is widely developed in the Aral-Caspian

region, where, however, the Ust-Urt and the Obshchiy Syrt rose above the sea.

The thick Quaternary, or Post-Pliocene, deposits which cover nearly all Russia were for a long time a puzzle to geologists. They consist of a boulder clay in the north and of loess in the south. The former presents an intimate mixture of boulders brought from Finland and Olonetz (with an addition of local boulders) with small gravel, coarse sand, and the finest glacial mud, —the whole bearing no trace of ever having been washed up and sorted by water in motion, except in subordinate layers of glacial sand and gravel; the size of the boulders decreases on the whole from north to south, and the boulder clay, especially in northern and central Russia, often takes the shape of ridges parallel to the direction of the

RUS motion of the boulders. Its southern limits, roughly correspond- ing with those established by Murchison, but not yet settled in the south-east and east, are, according to M. Nikitin, the following :— from the southern frontier of Poland to Ovrutch, Umah, Kremen- tchug, Pottava, and Razdornaya (50° N. latitude), with a curve northwards to Kozelsk'(?); thence due north to Vetluga (58° north latitude), east to Glazova in Vyatka, and from this place towards the north and west along the watershed of the Volga and Petchora (?). South of the 50th parallel appears the loess, with all its usual characters (land fossils, want of stratification, &c.), showing a re- markable uniformity of composition over very large surfaces; it covers both watersheds and valleys, but chiefly the former. Such being the characters of the Quaternary deposits in Russia, the majority of Russian geologists now adopt the opinion that Russia was covered, as far as the above limits, with an immense ice-sheet which crept over central Russia and central Germany from Scandi- navia and north Russia. Another ice-covering was probably ad- vancing at the same time from the north-east, that is, from the northern part of the Urals, but the question as to the glaciation of the Urals still remains open. As to the loess, the view is more and more gaining ground which considers it as a steppe-deposit due to the drifting of fine sand and dust during a dry episode in the Pleistocene period.

The deposits of the Post-Glacial period are represented through- out Russia, Poland, and Finland, as also throughout Siberia and central Asia, by very

thick lacustrine deposits, which show that, after the melting of the ice-sheet, the country was covered with immense lakes, connected by broad channels (the fjdrden of the Swedes), which later on gave rise to the actual rivers. outskirts of the lacustrine region, closely resembling the area of the actual continent, traces of marine deposits, not higher than 200 or perhaps even 150 feet above present sea-level, are found alike on the Arctic Sea and on the Baltic and Black Sea coasts. A deep gulf of the Arctic Sea advanced up the valley of the Dwina; and the Caspian, connected by the Manytch with the Black Sea, and by the Uzboy valley with Lake Aral, penetrated north up the Volga valley, as far as its Samara bend. Unmistakable traces show that, while during the Glacial period Russia had an arctic flora and fauna, the climate of the Lacustrine period was more genial than it is now, and a dense human population at that time peopled the shores of the numberless lakes.

The Lacustrine period has not yet reached its close in Russia. Finland and the north-west hilly plateaus are stil] in the same geological phase, and are dotted with numberless lakes and ponds, while the rivers continue to dig out their yet undetermined chan- nels. But the great lakes which covered the country during the Lacustrine period have disappeared, leaving behind them immense marshes like those of the Pripet and in the north-east. The disappearance of what still remains of them is accclerated not only by the general decrease of moisture, but also by the gradual up- heaval of northern Russia, which is going on from Esthonia and Finland to the Kola peninsula and Nova Zembla, at an average rate of about two feet per century. This upheaval,—the consequences of which have been felt even within the historic period, by the drain- age of the formerly impracticable marshes of Novgorod and at the head of the Gulf of Finland,—together with the destruction of forests, which must be considered, however, as a quite secondary and subordinate cause, contributes towards a decrease of precipi- tation over Russia and towards increased shallowness of her rivers. At the same time, as the gradients of the rivers are gradually in- creasing on account of the upheaval of the continent, the rivers dig their channels deeper and deeper. Consequently central and especially southern Russia witness the formation of numerous miniature cafions, or ovraghi (deep ravines), the summits of which rapidly advance and ramify in the loose surface deposits. As for the southern steppes, their desiccation, the consequence of the above causes, is in rapid progress.+

The soil of Russia depends chiefly on the distribution of the boulder-clay and loess coverings described above, on the progress made by the rivers in the excavation of their valleys, and on the moistness of climate. Vast areas in Russia are quite unfit for cultivation, 27 per cent. of the aggregate surface of European Russia (apart from Poland and Finland) being occupied by lakes, marshes, sands, &c., 38 per cent. by forests, 14 per eent. by prairies, and only 21 per cent. being under culture. The distri- bution of all these is, however, very unequal, and the five follow- ing subdivisions may be established :—(1) the twndras ; (2) the forest region ; (3) the middle region, comprising the surface avail- able for agriculture and partly covered with forests ; (4) the black- earth (tchernoziom) region; and (5) the Steppes. Of these the black-carth region, —about 150,000,000 acres, —which reaches from the Carpathians to the Urals, extending to the Pinsk marshes and

1 Bibliography.—Memoirs, Izvestia, and Geological Maps of the Committee for the Geological Survey of Russia; Memoirs and Sborniks of the Mineralogical Society, of the Academy of Science, and of the Societies of Naturalists at the Universities; Mining Journal; Murchison's Geology of Russta; Helmersen's and

Méller's Geological Maps of Russia and the Urals; Inostrantseff in Appendix to Russian translation of Reclus's Géogr. Univ., and Manual of Geology (Russian).

SOIL AND CLIMATE.]

On the ©

oe lA 79

the upper Oka in the north, is the most important. It is covered with a thick sheet of black earth, a kind of locss, mixed with 5 to 15 per cent. of humus, due to the decomposition of an herba- ceous vegetation, which developed richly during the Lacustrine period on a continent relatively dry even at that epoch. On the three-fields system corn has been grown upon it for fifty to seventy consecutive years without manure. Isolated black-earth islands, less fertile of course, occur also in Courland and Kovno, in the Oka, Volga, and Kama depression, on the slopes of the Urals, and in a few patches in the

north. Towards the Black Sea coast its thickness diminishes, and it disappears in the valleys. In the extensive region covered with boulder-clay the black earth appears only in isolated places, and the soil consists for the most part of a sandy clay, containing a much smaller admixture of humus. There culture is possible only with the aid of a considerable quantity of manure. Drainage finding no outlet through the thick clay cover-

| ing, the soil of the forest region is often covered with extensive

marshes, and the forests themselves are often mere thickets spread- ing over marshy ground ; large tracts covered with sand appear in the west, and the admixture of boulders with the clay in the north-west renders agriculture increasingly difficult. On the Arctic coast the forests disappear, giving place to the tundras. Finally, in the south-east, towards the Caspian, ou the slopes of the southern Urals and the Obshchiy Syrt, as also in the interior of the Crimea, and in several parts of Bessarabia, there are large tracts of real desert, covered with coarse sand and devoid of vegetation."

Notwithstanding the fact that Russia extends from north to

south through 26 degrees of latitude, the climate of its different Climate.

portions, apart from the Crimea and the Caucasus, presents a striking uniformity. The aerial currents—cyclones, anti-cyclones, and dry south-east winds—extend over wide surfaces and cross the flat plains freely. Everywhere we find a cold winter and a hot summer, both varying in their duration, but differing rela- tively little in the extremes of temperature recorded. From Table ILI. (page 76) it will be seen that there is no place in Russia, Archangel and Astrakhan included, where the thermometer does not rise in summer nearly to 86° Fahr. and descend in winter to — 13° and – 22°. It is only on the Black Sea coast that we find the absolute range of temperature reduced to 108°, while in the remainder of Russia it reaches 126° to 144°, the oscillations being between — 22° to – 31°, occasionally — 54°, and 86° to 104°, occasion- ally, 109°. Everywhere the rainfall is small : if Finland and Poland on the one hand and Caucasus with the Caspian depression on the other be excluded, the avcrage yearly rainfall varies between the limits of 16 and 28 inches. Everywhere, too, we find that the maximum rainfall does not take place in winter (as in western Europe)

but in summer, and that the months of advanced spring are warmer than the corresponding months of autumn.

Though thus exhibiting all the distinctive features of a con- tinental climate, Russia is not altogether exempt from the moder- ating influence of the ocean. The Atlantic cyclones also reach the Russian plains, mitigating to some extent the cold of the winter, and in summer bringing with them their moist winds and thunderstorms ; their influence is chiefly felt in western Russia, but extends also towards and beyond the Urals. They thus check the extension and limit the duration of the cold anticyclones.

Throughout Russia the winter is of long continuance. The last days of frost are experienced for the most part in April, but also in May to the north of 55°. The spring is exceptionally beautiful in' central Russia ; late as it usually is, it sets in with vigour, and vegetation develops with a rapidity which gives to this season in Russia a special charm, unknown in warmer climates ; the rapid melting of snow at the same time raises the rivers, and renders a great many minor streams navigable for a few weeks. Buta return of cold weather, injurious to vegetation, is observed throughout central and eastern Russia between May 18 and 24, so that it is only in June that warm weather sets in definitely, reaching its maximum in the first half of July (or of August on the Black Sea coast). The summer is much warmer than might be supposed; in south-eastern Russia it is much warmer than in the corresponding latitudes of France, and really hot weather is experienced everywhere. It does not, however, prevail for long, and in the first half of September the first frosts begin to be experienced on the middle Urals; they reach western and southern Russia in the first days of October, and are felt on the Caucasus about the middle of November. The temperature descends so rapidly that a month later, about October 10 on the middle Urals and November 15 throughout Russia, the thermometer ceases to rise above the freezing-point. The rivers rapidly freeze ; towards November 20 all the streams of the White Sea basin are covered with ice, and so remain for an average of 167 days; those of the Baltic, Black Sca, and Caspian basins freeze later, but about December 20 nearly all the rivers of the (Ge ERO E N e eee | eEeeEEeeeeee

2 Bibliography.—Ruprecht, Geo.~~Botanical Researches on the Tchernoziom; Dokutchaeff, Russian Tchernoziom, 1880; Id., Phys. Chem. Researches ; Materials for Statistics of Russia, published by the Minister of Domains, v., 1871; Wasil~~ tchikoff, ‘‘ Tchernoziom and its Future,” in Afem. Moscow Soc. of Agr., 1877.

Flora.

76 RUS

country are highways for sledges. The Volga remains frozen for a period varying between 150 days in the north and 90 days at Astrakhan, the Don for 100 to 110 days, and the Dnieper for 83 to 122 days. On the Diina ice prevents navigation for 125 days, and even the Vistula at Warsaw remains frozen for 77 days. The lowest temperatures are experienced in January, in which month the average is as low as 20° to 5° Fahr. throughout Russia ; in the west only does it rise above 22°. On the whole, February and March continue to be cold, and their average temperatures rise above zero only on the Blaek Sea coast. Even at Kieff and Lugait the average of March is below 30°, while in central Russia it is 25° to 22°, and as low as 20° and 16° at Samara and Orenburg. Isotherms.—All Russia is comprised between the isotherms of 32° and 54°. On the whole, they are more remote from one another than even on the plains of North America, those of 46° to 32° being distributed over 20 degrees of latitude. They are, on the whole, inclined towards the south in eastern Russia; thus the isotherm of 39° runs from St Petersburg to Orenburg, and that of 35° from Torneé to Uralsk. The inflexion is still greater for the winter isotherms. Closely following one another, they run almost north and south ; thus Odessa and Kénigsberg are situated on the same winter isotherm of 28°; so also St Petersburg, Orel, and the mouth of the Ural river (about 20°) ; Mezen and Ufa (9°). The summer isotherms cross the above nearly at right angles, so that Kieff and Ufa, Warsaw and Tobolsk, Riga and the npper Kama have the same average summer temperatures of 64°, 624°, and 61°.

ep lA

Winds, Moisture, Rainfall.—The investigation of the cyclones and antieyclones in Russia eannot as yet be regarded as completed, It appears,

however, that in January the cyclones mostly cross north-west Russia (north of 55° and west of 40° E. long.), following directions which vary between north-east and south-east. In July they are displaced towards the north, and cross the Gulf of Bothnia, while another series of eyclones crosses middle Russia, between 50° and 55° N. lat. The laws of the anticyclones are not yet estah- lished. The winds closely depend on the routes followed by both. Generally, however, it may be said that alike in January and in July west and south-west winds prevail in western Russia, while eastern ones are most common in south-eastern Russia; northern winds are most common on the Black Sea coast. The strength of the wind is greater, on the whole, than in the continental parts of western Europe, and it attains its maximum in winter. Terrible gales blow from October to March, especially on the southern steppes and on the tundras. Gales with snow (burans, myatels), lasting from two to three days, or northerly gales without show, are especially dangerous to man and beast. The average relative moisture reaches 80 to 85 per cent. in the north, and only 70 to 8} per cent. in southern and eastern Russia. In the steppes it is only 60 per cent. during summer, and still less (57) at Astrakhan. The average amount of cloud reaches 73 to 75 per cent. on the White Sea and in Lithuania, 68 to 64 in central Russia, and only 59 to 538 in the south and south-east. The amount of rainfall is shown in the subjoined table (III.):—+ :

[FLORA,

a a a a

Teh . : Number of Days Average Rainfall

ace oo Average Temperatures. Average a sill Gee _ per Year, in iene Latitude. | Sea in Ther- Frosts. Frosts.

Feet. | year January.} July. | Minimum. | Maximum,| ™ometer. Bright. | Cloudy.| Year, | November

to Mareh. Arehangel…... 64 34 30 | 32:7 76 | 60°6 — 33 $4 147 =| 26 Sept.| 20 May} 23 199 | 16-2 4°3 Petrozavodsk ..| 61 47 160 | 386°4 |° 11°8 | 6271 —24 8&6 135 2e me ep 8 ot Fos Helsingfors….. 60 10 40 | 39:0 UG ey |) Las ~17 80 ele ee 2 ay Pe es AE St Petersburg..| 59 57 20; 38°4 | 15°0 |;

64:0; -20 88 135 15 Oct. | 8 May | 35 148 | 18°3 5°3 Bogoslovsk….. 59 45 6302} 29°4 | —3°8 |62°5| -47 87 150 =| 20 Sept.| 14 May | 43 94 | 15°8 3’l ID Kaya al Geoacoodee 56) 22 220 | 39°5 17°6 | 63°1 -14 85 124 7 Oct. | 3 May | 40 145 | 24:9 WES Kostroma…..... 57 46 860 | 37°83 9°4 | 66°3 ~— 27 88 140 2 nS aM aon 19°4 ae Kkaterinburg..| 56 49 890 | 32:8 Pa || 183) ~ 33 87 142 21 Oet.|14 May | 40 185 Wasi 1°6 JAVA Soper eoeece 5on47 260 | 37:2 7:0 | 67°3 —25 89 129 1 @et. (2px)... Mee 18-0 5°4 Moscow……..... 5545 520 | 89°0 | 12:1 | 65-0 — 22 88 144 7 Oct. | 26 April} 35 142 | 23:0 (a3 WMalltta scocsee coe 54 41 890 | 43°8 22°1 | 65°6 -10 85 110 17 Oct. (27 Api) gs 175 ua = Warsaw …..... 52 14 3860 | 44°9 23°8 | 65:4 – 2 86 123 18 Oct. | 7 April] 40 5a 22-8 67 Orenburg…..... 51 45 3860 | 37°9 4‘7 | 70°9 — 28 96 147 Ss si ae ; i7eu 5°8 Ktinslogee eee 51 44 690 | 41°0 BEY | Oe -—19 91 139 st ah *, a 19°9 5°6 STC tiie. cee ee BY)) Wer 590) || 44°2°|| 21-0 6653 -13 89 122 19 Oct. | 17 April} 34 Hse || 20rd! 6°0 Tsaritsyn…..... 48 42 100 ; 44-4 | 18:4 | 74°6 es ee ae se ce sae me Bre wag (CSI seaagenene 48 27 200 | 45°6 TAO) Be ~18 95 146 11 Oct. |11 April] 64 124; 14:3 4°3 Odessa……..... 46 29 270 | 49°0 Pees | 7/2B} – 38 89 108 10 Nov. |} 31 Mar.| 67 1D |) 56 5-4 Astrakhan…... 46 21 | -—70] 49:0] 19:2 | 77-9 -14 97 185 27 Oct. | 5 April | 69 114 Sag 15 Sebastopol…... 44 37 130 | S87) Soe Ween sare . 93 105 Bee ee ee 15°4 7:2 MOU ccc ses ces 42 9 0] 58°4 390M fears +25 93 88 12 Jan. | 1 Mar. 64°9 | 23-4 SMS et ase oer 41 42 | 1440 | 54:5 83°0 | 75°7 +10 96 100 18 Nov..| 15 Mar. 19°3 4°3

The flora of Russia, which represents an intermediate link between those of Germany and Siberia, is strikingly uniform over a very large area. Though not poor at any given place, it appears so if the space occupied by Russia be taken into account, only 3300 species of phanerogams and ferns being known. Four great regions may be distinguished :—the Arctic, the Forest, the Steppe, and the Cireum-Mediterranean,

The Arctic Region comprises the tundras of the Arctic littoral beyond the northern limit of forests, which last closely follows the coast-line, with bends towards the north in the river valleys (70° N. lat. in Finland, on the Arctic Circle about Archangel, 68° N. lat. on the Urals, 71° on West Siberia). The shortness of the summer, the deficiency of drainage, and the thickness of the layer of soil which is frozen through in winter are the elements which go to the making of the characteristic features of the

tundras. Their flora is far nearer those of northern Siberia and North America than that of central Europe. Mosses and lichens cover them, as also the birch, the dwarf willow, and a variety of shrubs ; but where the soil is drier, and humus has been able to accumulate, a varicty of herbaceous flowering plants, some of which are familiar also in western Europe, make their appearance. Only from 275 to 280 phanerogams are found within this region.

The forest Region of the Russian botanists occupies the greater part of the country, from the Arctic tundras to the Steppes, and it maintains over this immense surface a remarkable uniformity of character. M. Beketoff subdivides it into two portions—the forest region proper, and the " Ante-Steppe" (predstepie). The northern limit of the Ante-Steppe would be represented by a line drawn from the South Pruth through Zhitomir, Kursk, Tamboff, and Stavropol-on-Volga to the sources of the Ural. But the

forest region proper itself presents a certain variety of aspect in its northern and southern parts, and must in turn be again sub- divided into two parts—the coniferous region and that of the oak forests, —these being separated by a line drawn through Pskoff, Kostroma, Kazafi, and Ufa. Of course, the oak occurs farther north than this, and conifer forests extend farther south, advancing even to the border-region of the Steppes; but this line must still be considered as important. To the north of it we have dense forests, covering very large areas, and interrupted oftener by marshes than by meadows or cultivated fields. Vast and impene- trable forests, unpassable marshes and thickets, frequent lakes, swampy meadows, with cleared and dry spaces here and there occu- pied by villages, are the leading features of the region. Fishing and hunting are the important sources of livelihood. The characteristies of what may be described as the oak region, which comprises all central Russia, are totally different. The surface is undulatory ; marshy meadow lands no longer exist on the flat watersheds, and only a few shelter themselves in the much deeper and broader river valleys. Forests are still numerous where not destroyed by man, but their character has changed. Conifers are rare, and the Scotch pine, which covers the sandy plains, has taken the place of the Abies ; birch, oak, and other deeiduous trees 1 Bibliography.—Memoirs of the Central Physical Observatory; Kepertorium Jiir Meteorologie and Meteorological Sbornik, published by

the same body; Ves- selovsky, Climate of Russia (Russian); Wild, Temperatur-Verhdlinisse des Russ. R., 1881; Woyeikoff, The Climates of the Globe, 1884 (Russ.), containing the best general information about the elimate of Russia; Klossovsky, Thunderstorms in Russia, 1885 (Russ.); Memotrs and Jzvestia of the Geographical Society; many papers in the Memoirs and Bulletin of the Aeademy of Scienees, in the Trudy of the Scientifie Soeieties at the Universities, in the Moseow Bulletin, &c.; Woyeikoff and Leist in Appendix to Russian translation of Elise Reclus's Géogr. Univ.,; Woyeikoff, in Russkiy Kalendar and in Mem. Russ. Geogr. Soc., 1885,

compose the forests, the soil of which is dry, and the extension of which is interrupted by green prairies. Viewed from a rising ground, the landscape presents a pleasing variety of corn-field and forest, while the horizon is broken by the bell-towers of numerous villages along the banks of the streams.

Viewed as a whole, the flora of the forest region must be regarded as European-Siberian ; and, th ough certain species disappear towards the cast, while new ones make their appearance, it maintains, on the whole, the same characters throughout from Poland to Kam- chatka. 'Thus the beech (Fagus sylvatica), a characteristic tree of western Europe, is unable to face the continental climate of Russia, and does not penetrate beyond Poland and the south- western provinces, reappearing again in the Crimea. The silver fir (pichta) does not extend over Russia, and the oak does not cross the Urals. On the other hand, several Asiatic species (Siberian pine, Jarch, cedar) grow freely in the north-east, while several shrubs and herbaceous plants, originally from the Asiatic steppes, have spread into the south-east. But all these do not greatly alter the general characters of the vegetation. The coniferous forests of the north contain, besides conifers, the birch (Betula alba, B. pub- escens, B. fruticosa, and B. verrucosa, which extend from the Petchora to the Caucasus), the aspen, two species of alder, the mountain-ash (Sorbus aweuparia), the wild cherry-tree, and three species of willow. South of 62° — 64° north latitude appears the lime-tree, which multiplies rapidly and, notwithstanding the rapidity with which it is being exterminated,

constitutes entire forests in the east (central Volga, Ufa). Farther south the ash (Frawinus exeelsior) and the oak make their appearance, the latter (Quereus pedunculata) reaching in isolated groups and trees as far as to St Petersburg and South Finland (Q. Robw appears only in the south-west). The hornbeam is prevalent in the Ukraine, and the maple begins to appear in the south part of the coniferous region. In the forest region no fewer than 772 flowering species are found, of which 568 dicotyledons occur in the Archangel government (only 436 to the east of the White Sea, which is a botanical limit for many species). In central Russia the species become still more numerous, and, though the local floras cannot yet be considered complete, they number from 850 to 1050 species in the separate governments, and about 1600 in the best explored parts of the south-west. Corn is cultivated throughout this region. Its northern limits—which are sure to advance still farther as the population increases—almost reach the Arctic coast at the Varanger Fiord ; farther east they hardly extend to the north of Archangel, and the limit is still lower towards the Urals. The northern frontier of rye closely corre- sponds to that of barley. Wheat is cultivated in South Finland, but in western Russia it hardly passes 58° N. lat. Its true domains are the oak region and the Steppes. Fruit-trees are cultivated as far as 62° N. in Finland, and as far as 58° in the east, Apricots and walnuts flourish at Warsaw, but in Russia they do not extend beyond 50°. Apples, pears, and cherries are grown throughout the oak region.

The Region of the Steppes, which covers all southern Russia, may be subdivided into two zones—an intermediate zone and that of the Steppes proper. The Ante-Steppe of the preceding region and the intermediate zone of the Steppes include those tracts where the West-European climate struggles with the Asiatic, and where a struggle is being carried ou between the forest and the Steppe. It is comprised between the summer isotherms of 59° and 63°, being bounded on the south by a lino which runs through Ekaterinoslaff and Lugaii. South of this line begin the Steppes proper, which extend to the sea and penetrate to the foot of Mount Caucasus.

The Steppes proper are very fertile elevated plains, slightly undulated, and intersected by numerous ravines which are dry in summer. The undulations are scarcely apparent to the eye as it takes in a wide prospect under a blazing sun and with a deep-blue sky overhead, Not a tree is to be seen, the

few woods and thickets being hidden in the depressions and deep valleys of the rivers. On the thick sheet of black earth by which the Steppe is covered a luxuriant vegetation develops in spring ; after the old grass has been burned a bright green covers immense stretches, but this rapidly disappears under the burning rays of the sun and the hot easterly winds, The colouring of the Steppe changes as if by magic, and only the silvery plumes of the kovyl (Stipa pennata) wave under the wind, giving the Steppe the aspect of a bright yellow sea. For days together the traveller sees no other vegetation ; even this, however, disappears as he nears the regions recently left dry from the Caspian, where salted clays covered with a few Salsolacce, or mere sands, take the place of the black-earth. Here begins the Aral-Caspian desert, The Steppe, however, is not so devoid of trees as at first sight appears. Innumerable clusters of wild cherries (Prunus Chamxeerasus), wild apricots (Amygdalus nana), tehilizhnik (Caragana frutescens), and other deep-rooted shrubs grow in the depressions of the surface and on the slopes of the ravines, giving the Steppe that charm which manifests itself in the popular poetry. Unfortunately the spread of cultivation is fatal to these oases (they are often called “islands” by the inhabitants) ; the axe and the plough ruthlessly destroy them.

fk Uo Ll &

7

The vegetation of the poimy and zaimischas in the marshy bottoms of the ravines, and in the valleys of streams and rivers, is totally different. The moist soil gives free development to thickets of various willows (Sadicinex), bordered with dense walls of worm- wood and needle-bearing Composita, and interspersed with rich but not extensive prairies harbouring a great variety of herbaceous

plants ; while in the deltas of the Black Sea rivers impenetrable masses of rush (Arundo Phragmites) shelter a forest fauna. But cultivation rapidly changes the physiognomy of the Steppe. The

prairies are superseded by wheat-fields, and flocks of sheep destroy the true steppe-grass (Stipa pennata), which retires farther cast.

A great many species unknown in the forest region make their appearance in the Steppes. The Scotch pine still covers sandy spaces, and maple (Acer tatarica and A. eampestre), the hornbean, and the white and black poplar become quitecommon. The number of species of herbaceous plants rapidly increases, while beyond the Volga a variety of Asiatic species join the West-European flora.

The Circwm-Mediterranean Region is represented by a narrow strip of land on the south coast of the Crimea, where a climate siinilar to that of the Mediterranean coast las permitted the development of a flora closely resembling that of the valley of the Arno. Of course, human cultivation has not yet acclimatized there the same variety of plants as that imported into Italy since the Romans. It has even destroyed the rich forests which sixty years ago made deer-hunting possible at Khersones. The olive and the chestnut are rare; but the beach reappears, and the Pinus Pinaster recalls the Italian pines. At a few points, such as the Nikitsky garden and Alupka, where plants have been accli- matized by human agency, the Californian /Wellingtonia, the Lebanon cedar, many evergreen trees, the laurel, the cypress, and even the Anatolian palm (Chamwrops excels) flourish. The grass vegetation is very rich, and, according to lists still incom- plete, no fewer than 1654 flowering plants are known. On the whole, the Crimean flora has little in common with that of the Caucasus, where only 244 Crimean species have as yet been found.’

The fauna of European Russia does not very materially differ Fanna.

from that of western Europe. In the forests not many animals which have disappeared from western Europe have held their ground ; while in the Urals only a few—now Siberian, but formerly also European—are met with. On the whole, Russia belongs to the same zoo-geographical region as central Europe and northern Asia, the same fauna extending in Siberia as far as the Yenisci and Lena. In south-eastern Russia, however, towards the Caspian, we find a notable admixture of Asiatic species, the descrts of that part of Russia belonging in reality rather to the Aral-Caspian depression than to Europe.

For the zoo-geographer only three separate sub-regions appear on the East-European plains—the tundras, including the Arctic islands, the forest

region, especially the coniferous part of it, and the Ante-Steppe and Steppes of the black-earth region. The Ural mountains might be distinguished as a fourth sub-region, while the south coast of the Crimca and Caucasus, as well as the Caspian deserts, have their own individuality.

As for the adjoining seas, the fauna of the Arctic Ocean off the Norwegian coast corresponds, in its western parts at least, to that of the North Atlantic Gulf Stream. The White Sea and the Arctic Ocean to the east of Svyatoi Nos belong to a separate zoological region connected with, and hardly separable from, that part of the Aretic Ocean which extends along the Siberian coast as far as to about the Lena. The Black Sea, of which the fauna was formerly little known but now appears to be very rich, belongs to the Medi- terrancan region, slightly modified, while the Caspian partakes of the characteristic fauna inhabiting the lakes and scas of the Aral- Caspian depression.

In the region of the tundras life has to contend with such un- favourable conditions that it cannot be abundant. Still, the rein- deer frequents it for its lichens, and on the drier slopes of the moraine deposits four species of lemming, hunted by the Canis lagopus, find quarters. Two species of the white partridge (Lagopus albus, L. alpinus), the lark, one Pleetrophanes, two or three specics of Sylvia, one Phylloscopus, and the Motacilla must be added. Nuniberless aquatic birds, however, visit it for breeding purposes. Ducks, divers, geese, gulls, all the Russian species of snipes and sandpipers (Limicula, Tringa), &c., cover the marshes of the tundras, or the crags of the Lapland coast.

The forest region, and especially its coniferous portion, though it has lost some of its representatives within historic times, is still rich. The reindeer, rapidly disappearing, is now met with only in Olonetz and Vologda; the Cervus pygargus is found everywhere, and reaches Novgorod, The weasel, the fox, and the hare are exceed- ee

1 Bibléography,—Beketoff, Appendix to Russian translation of Griesebach and Reclus's Géogr. Univ.; Ledebour, Flora Rossica; Trautvetter, Rossix Arctice Plantz, 1880; 1d., Flore Rossice Fontes; for flora of the tundras, Beketoff's " Flora of Archangel," in Mem. Soc. Natur, at St Petersburg university, xv., 1884 ; Regel, Flora Rossica, 1884; floras of separate

governments in several scientific periodicals ; Brown, Forestry in the Mining Districts of the Urals, 1885; Reports by Commissioners of Woods and Forests in Russia, 1884; Forestry Almanac (Lyesnoi Kalendar) for 1885.

Ethno- graphy.

ingly common, as also the wolf and the bear in the north ; but the glutton (Gulo borealis), the lynx, and even the elk (C. alces) are rapidly disappearing. The wild boar is confined to the basin of the Diina, and the Bison ewropea to the Bielovyezha forests. The sable has quite disappeared, being found only on the Urals ; the beaver is found at a few places in Minsk, and the otter is very rare. On the other hand, the hare (roussak), and also the grey partridge (Perdix cinerea), the hedgehog, the quail, the lark, the rook (Trypanocorax frugilega), and the stork find their way into the coniferous region as the forests are cleared (Bogdanoff). The avifauna of this region is very rich; it includes all the forest and garden birds which are known in western Europe, as well as a very great variety of aquatic birds. A list, still incomplete, of the birds of St Petersburg shows 251 species. Hunting and shoot- ing give occupation to a great number of persons. The reptiles are few. As for fishes, all those of western Europe, except the Carp, are met with in the lakes and rivers in immense quantities, the characteristic feature of the region being its wealth in Coregont and in Salmonidx generally.

In the Ante-Steppe the forest species proper, such as Pteromys volans and Tamias striatus, disappear, but the eommon squirrel (Sciurus vulgaris), the weasel, and the bear are still met with in the forests. The hare is increasing rapidly, as well as the fox. The avifauna, of course, becomes poorer; nevertheless the woods of the Steppe, and still more the forests of the Ante-Steppe, give refuge to many birds, even to the hazel-hen (Tetrao bonasia), the woodcock, and the black grouse (Tetrao tetrix, T. urogallus). The fauna of the thickets at the bottom of the river valleys is decidedly rich, and includes aquatic birds. The destruction of the forests and the advance of wheat into the prairies are rapidly impoverishing the Steppe fauna. The various species of rapacious animals are disappearing, together with the

colonies of marmots ; the insectivores are also becoming scarce in consequence of the destruction of insects, while vermin, such as the suslik (Spermo- philus, see MArMmor), become a real plague, as also the destructive insects which have been a scourge to agriculture during recent years. The absence of Coregoni is a characteristic feature of the fish-fauna of the Steppes; the carp, on the contrary, reappears, and the rivers are rich in sturgcons (Acipenserides). On the Volga below Nijni Novgorod the sturgeon (Acipenser ruthenus), and others of the same family, as also a very great varicty of ganoids and Telcostei, appear in such quantities that they give occupation to nearly 100,000 people. The mouths of the Caspian rivers are especially celebrated for their wealth of fish.2

Prehistoric anthropology is a science of very recent growth in Russia; and, notwithstanding the energy displayed within that field during the last twenty years, the task of reconstructing the early history of man on the plains of eastern Europe is daily becom- ing more complicated as new data are brought to light. Remains of Paleolithic man, contemporary with the large Quaternary mammals, are few in Russia ; they are known only in Poland, Pottava, and Voronezh, and perhaps also on the Oka. Those of the later portions of the Lacustrine period, on the contrary, are so numerous that scarcely one old lacustrine basin in the regions of the Oka, the Kama, the Dnieper, not to speak of the lake-region itself, and even the White Sea coasts, can be mentioned where remains of Neolithic man have not been discovered, showing an unexpected variety of minor anthropological features, even at that remote period. The Russian plains have been, however, the scene of so mally migrations of various races of mankind, the dwelling-places of prehistoric man and the routes followed during his migrations were so clearly indicated by natural conditions, and so often re-occupied, or again covered by new waves of colonization and migra- tion, that at many placcs a series of deposits belonging to widely distant epochs are found superposed. Settlements belonging to the Stone age, and manufactories of stone implements, burial grounds (kostishchas) of the Bronze epoch, earthen forts (gorodishchas), and

grave mounds (kurgans)—of which last four different types are known, the earliest belonging to the Bronze period—are superposed upou and obliterate

one another, so that a long series of researches is necessary in order that sound generalizations may be reached,

Two different races—a brachycephalic and a dolichocephalic—can be distinguished among the remains of the earlier Stone period (Lacustrine period) as having inhabited the plains of eastern Europe. But they are separated by so many generations from the earliest historic times that sure conclusions regarding them are impossible: at all events, as yet Russian archeologists are not agreed as to whether the ancestors of the Slavonians were Sarmatians only or Scythians also (Samokvasoff, Lemiére), whose skulls have nothing in common with those of the Mongolian race. The earliest points that can, comparatively speaking, be regarded as settled must thus be taken from the Ist century, when the Northern Finns migrated from the North Dwina region towards the west, and the Sarmatiang were compelled to leave the region of the Don, and to cross the Russian steppes from east to west, under the pressure of the Aorzes (the Mordvinian Erzya 2) and Siraks, who in their turn were soon followed by the Huns and the Ugur-Turkish stem of Avars.

It appears certain, moreover, that in the 7th century southern Russia was occupied by the empire of the KHAzARs (q.v.), who drove the Bulgarians, descendants of the Huns, from the Don, one section of them migrating up the Volga to found there the Bul. garian empire, and the remainder migrating towards the Danube. This migration compelled the Northern Finns to advance farther west, and a mixture of Tavasts and Karelians penetrated to the south of the Gulf of Finland.

Finally, it is certain that as early as the 8th century, and probably still earlier, a stream of Slavonian colonization, advancing eastward from the Danube, was thrown on the plains of south- western Russia. It is also most probable that another similar stream—the northern, conting from the Elbe, through the basin of the Vistula—ought to be distinguished. In the 9th century the Slavonians already occupied the Upper Vistula, the southern part of the lake region, and the central plateau in its western parts, | They had Lithuanians to the west ; various Finnish stems, mixed towards the south-east with Turkish stems (the present Bashkirs) ; the Bulgars, whose origin still remains doubtful, on the middle Volga and Kama: and to the

south-east the Turkish-Mongolian world of the Petchenegs, Potovtsi, Uzes, &c.; while in the sonth, along the Black Sea, extended the empire of the Khazars, who kept under their rule several Slavonian stems, and perhaps also some of Finnish origin. In the 9th century also the Ugrians are supposed to have left their Ural abodes and to have crossed south-eastern and southern Russia on their way to the basin of the Danube.

If these numerous migrations on the plains of Russia be taken into account, and if we add to them the Mongolian invasion, the migration of South Slavonians towards the Oka, the North Slavonian colonization extending north-east towards the Urals and thence to Siberia, the slow advance of Slavonians into Finnish territory on the Volga, and at a later period their advance into the prairies on the Black Sea, driving back the Turkish stems which occupied them,—if we consider the manifold mutual influences of these three races on one another, we shall be able to form a faint idea of the present population of European Russia.

If the Slavonians be subdivided into three branches—the western (Poles, Czechs, and Wends), the southern (Serbs, Bulgarians, Croa- tians, &c.), and the eastern (Great, Little, and White Russians), it will be seen that, with the exccption of some 3,000,000 Ukrainians or Little Russians, in East Galicia and in Poland, and a few on the south slope of the Carpathians, the whole of the East Slavonians occupy, as a compact body, western, central, and southern Russia.

Like other races of mankind, the Russian race is not a pure one. The Russians have taken in and assimilated in the course of their history a variety of Finnish and Turco-Finnish elements. Still, craniological researches show that, notwithstanding this fact, the Slavonian type has maintained itself with remarkable persistency— Slavonian skulls ten and thirteen centuries old exhibiting the same anthropological features as are seen in those of our own day. This may be explained by a variety of causes, of which the chicf is the maintenance by the Slavonians down to a very late period of gentile organization and gentile nialriages, a fact vouched for, not only in the pages of Nestor, but still more by decp traces still visible in the face of society, the gens later on passing into the village community, and the colonization being carried on by great compact bodies. This has all along

maintained the saine characters. The Russians do not emigrate as isolated individuals ; they migrate in whole villages. The overwhelming numbers of the Slavonians, and the very great differences in ethnical type, belief, mythology, between the Aryans and Turanians, may have contributed in the same direction, and throughout the written history of the Slavonians we see that, while a Russian man, far away from his home among Sibcrians, readily marries a native, the Russian woman seldont docs the like. All these causes, and especially the first-mentioned, have enabled the Slavonians to maintain their ethnical features in a

1 The Year 1884 with regard to Agriculture, St Petersburg, 1885, gives nearly eomplcte lists of them.

danoff, Birds and Mammals of the Black-Earth Region of the Volga Basin: Kare- lin for the southern Urals; Kessler for fishes; Strauch, Die Schlangen des Russ. Tes, for reptiles generally; Rodoszkowski and the publications of the Entomologieal Soeiety generally for insects; Czerniaysky for the marine fauna of the Black Sea; Kessler for that of Lakes Onega and Zadoga; Grimm for the Caspian; and the publications of the seientific soeieties for a very great number of monographs

Zoology, though dealing more especially with Siberia, is an invaluable source of information for the Russian fauna generally. Vega-expeditionens Vetenskapliga

and make them reinforce or improve the ethnical type, without giving rise to half-brecd races. ‘The maintenance of the very same North-Russian type from Novgorod to the Pacific, with but minor differentiations on the outskirts—and this notwithstanding the great variety of races with which the Russians came in contact— cannot but strike the observer. But a closer observation of what is going on even now on the recently colonized confines of the empire here whole villages live, and will continue to live, without mixing with natives, but very slowly bringing them over to the Russian manner of life, and then very slowly taking in a few female

elements from them—gives the key to this prominent feature of Russian life, which is a colonization on an immense scale, and assimilation of foreigners, without in turn losing the primary etlinical features.

Not so with the national customs. There are features—the wooden house, the oven, the bath—which the Russian never abandons though lost amidst alien populations. But when settled among these the Russian—the North-Russian—readily adapts him- sclf to many other differences. He speaks Finnish with Finns, Mongolian with Buriats, Ostiak with Ostiaks ; he shows remarkable facility in adapting his agricultural practices to new conditions, without, however, abandoning the village community ; he becomes hunter, cattle-breeder, or fisherman, and carries on these occupa- tions according to local usage ; he modifies his dress and adapts his religious belicfs to the locality he inhabits. In consequence of all this, the Russian peasant (not, be it noted, the trader) must be recognized as the best colonizer among the Aryans ; he lives on the best terms with Ostiaks, Tartars, Buriats, and even with Red Indians when lost in the prairies of the American Far- West.

Three different branches, which may become three separate nationalities, can be distinguished among the Russians since the dawn of their history :—the Great Russians, the Little Russians (Malorusses or Ukrainians), and the White Russians (the Bielo- russes). These correspond to the two currents of immigration mentioned above, the northern and southern, with perhaps an inter- mediate one, the proper place of the White Russians not having as yet been exactly determined. The primary distinctions between these branches have been increased during the last nine centuries by their contact with different nationalities,—the Great Russians taking in Finnish elements, the Little Russians undergoing an admixture of Turkish blood, and the White Russians submitting to Lithuanian influence. Moreover, notwithstanding the unity of lan- guage, it is easy to detect among the Great Russians themselves two separate branches, differing from one another by slight divergences of language and type and deep diversities of national character, — the Central Russians and the Novgorodians; the latter extend throughout northern Russia into Siberia. They correspond, perhaps, to subdivisions mentioned by Nestor. Itis worthy of notice, more- over, that many minor anthropological features can be distinguished both among the Great and

Little Russians, depending probably on the assimilation of various minor subdivisions of the Ural-Altaians.

The Grcat Russians number about 42,000,000, and occupy in one block the space enclosed by a line drawn from the White Sea to the sources of the western Diina, the Dueiper, and the Donetz, and thence, through the mouth of the Sura, by the Vettuga, to Mezefi. To the east of this boundary they are mixed with Turco- Finns, but in the Ural Mountains they reappear in a compact body, and extend thence through southern Siberia and along the courses of the Lena and Ainur. Great Russian nonconformists are disseminated among Little Russians in Tchernigoff and Moghileff, and they reappear in greater masses in Novorossia, as also in northern Caucasia. ~

The Little Russians, who number about 17,000,000, occupy the Steppes of southern Russia, the south-western slopes of the central plateau and those of the Carpathian and Lublin mountains, and the Carpathian plateau. The Sitch of the Zaporog Cossacks colonized the Steppes farther east, towards the Don, where they mct with a large population of Great Russian runaways, constituting the present Don Cossacks. The Zaporog Cossacks, sent by Catherine Il. to colonize the east coast of the Sea of Azoff, constituted there the Black Sea and later the Kubafi Cossacks (part of whom, the Nekrasovtsy, migrated to Turkey). They have also peopled large parts of Stavropol and northern Caucasia.

The White Russians, mixed to some extent with Great and Little Russians, Poles, and Lithuanians, now oceupy the upper parts of the western slope of the central plateau. They number about 4,300,000.

The Finnish stems, which in prehistoric times extended from the Obi all over northern Russia, even then were subdivided into Ugrians, Permians, Bulgarians, and Finns proper, who drove back the previous Lapp population from what is now Finland, and about the 7th century penetrated to the south of the Gulf of Finland, in the region of the Livesand Kurs, where they mixed to some exteut with Lithuanians and Letts.

At present the stems of Finnish origin are represented in Russia by the following :—(a) the Western Finns; the Tavasts in central Finland; the Kvanes, in north-western Finland; the Karelians,

iy U Re 1A

| relatively high degree of purity, so as to assimilate foreign elements

in the east, who also occupy the lake-regions of Olonetz and Archangel, and have settlements in separate villages in Novgorod and Tver ; the Izhora and Vod, which are local names for the Finns on the Neva and the south-eastern coast of the Gulf of Finland ; the Esthes in Esthonia and northern portion of Livonia; the Lives on the Gulf of Riga; and the Kors, mixed with the Letts ; (b) the Northern Finns, or Lapps, in northern Finland and on the Kola peninsula, and the Samoyedes in Archangel ; (c) the Volga Finns, or rather the old Bulgarian branch, to which belong the Morpvinians (g.v.) and perhaps the Tcheremisses in Kazafi, Kostroma, and Vyatka, who are also classified by some authors with the following ; (d) the Permians, or Cis-Uralian Finns, in- cluding the Votiaks on the east of Vyatka, the Permians in Perm, the Zyrians in Vologda, Archangel, Vyatka, and Perm, and the Tcheremisses ; (¢) the Ugrians, or Trans-Uralian Finns, including the Voguls on both slopes of the Urals, the Ostiaks in Tobolsk and partly in Tomsk, and the Madjares, or Ugrians.

The Turco-Tartars in European Russia number about 3,600,000. The following arc their chief subdivisions. (1) The Tartars, of whom three different stems must be distinguished :—(a) the Kazafi Tartars on both banks of the Volga, below the mouth of the Oka, and on the lower Kama, penetrating also farther south in Ryazaii, Tamboff, Samara, Simbirsk, and Penza ; (0) the Tartars of Astrakhan at the mouth of the Volga; and © those of the Crimea, a great many of whoni have recently emigrated to Turkey. There are, besides, a certain number of Tartars from the south-east in Minsk, Groduo, and Vilna. (2) The Bashkirs, who inhabit the slopes of the southern Urals, that is, the Steppes of Ufaand Orenburg, extending also into Perm and Samara. (8) The Tchuvashes, on the right bank of the Volga, in Kazai and Simbirsk. (4) The Mescheriaks, a tribe of Finnish origin which formerly inhabited the basin of the Oka, and, driven thence during the 15th century by the Russian colonizers, immigrated into Ufa and Perm, where they now live among Bash- kirs, having adopted their religion and customs. (5) The Tepters, also of Finnish origin, settled among Tartars and Bashkirs,

together with the Mescheriaks, also in Samara and Vyatka. They have adopted the religion and customs of the Bashkirs, from whom they can hardly be distinguished. The Bashkirs, Mescheriaks, and Tepters have rendered able service to the Russian Government against the Kirghizes, and until 1863 they constituted a separate Bashkir and Mescheriak Cossacks army, employed for service in the Kirghiz Steppe. (6) The Kirghizes, whose true abodes were in Asia, in the Ishim and Kirghiz Steppe; but one section of them crossed the Urals and occupied the Steppes between the Urals and the Volga. Only the Horde of Bukeeff inhabits European Russia, north-east of Astrakhan, the remainder belonging to Turkestan and Siberia.

The Mongolian race is represented in Russia by the Lamaite Kalmuks, who inhabit the Steppes of Astrakhan between the Volga, the Don, and the Kuma. They immigrated to the mouth of the Volga from Dzungaria, in the 17th century, driving out the Tartars and Nogais, and after many wars with the Don Cossacks, followed by treaties of mutual assistance for military excursions, one part of them was taken in by the Don Cossacks, so that even now there are among these Cossacks several Kalmuk sotnias or squadrons. They live for the most part in tents, supporting themselves by cattle-breeding, and partly by agriculture.

The Semitic race is represented in Russia by upwards of 3,000,000 Jews and 3000 Karaitcs. The Jews first entered Poland from Ger- many during the crusades, and soon spread through Lithuania, Courland, the Ukraine, and, in the 18th century, Bessarabia. The rapidity with which they peopled certain towns and whole pro- vinces was really prodigious. ‘Thus, from having been but a few dozens at Odessa some eighty years since, they make now one-third of its population (73,400, out of 207,000). The law of Russia prohibits them from entering Great Russia, only the wealthiest and most educated enjoying this privilege ; nevertheless they are met with everywhere, even on the Urals. Their chief abodes, however, continue to be Poland, the western provinces of Lithuania, White and Little Russia, and Bessarabia. In Russian Poland they are in the proportion of 1 to 7 inhabitants. In Kovno, Vilna, Moghileff, Grodno, Volhynia, Podolia, and probably also in Bessarabia and Kherson, they constitute, on the average, 10 to 16 per cent. of the population, while in separate districts the proportion reaches 30 to 36 per cent. (50°5 in Tchaussy). Organized as they

are into a kind of community for mutual protection and mutual help (the Kahal), they soon become masters of the trade wherever they penetrate. In the villages they are mostly innkeepers, interme- diaries in trade, and pawnbrokers. In many towns most of the skilled labourers and a great many of the unskilled (for instance, the grain-portcrs at Odessa and elsewhere) are Jews. In the 16 western provinces of Russia they numbered 2,848,400 in 1888, and about 432,000 in five Polish provinces. Less than 600,000 of them inhabit villages, the remainder being concentrated in towns.

The Karaites differ entirely from the Jews both in worship and in mode of life. They, too, are inclined to trade, but also success-

fully carry on agriculture. Those inhabiting the Crimea speak Tartar, and the few who arc settled in western Russia speak Polish. They are on good terms with the Russians.

Of West Europcans, only the Germans attain considerable num- bers (upwards of a million) in European Russia. In the Baltic provinces they constitute the ennobled landlord class, and that of tradesmen and artisans in towns. Considerable numbers of Germans, also tradesmen and artisans, were scattered throughout many of the larger towns of Russia as early as the 16th century, aud to a much greater extent in the 18th century, German artisans having been invited by the Government to settle in Russia, and their numbers having steadily increased since. Finally, numbers of Germans were invited in 1762 to settle in southern Russia, as separate agricultnral colonies, which gradually extended in the Don region and in northern Caucasia. Protected as they were by the right of self-government, exempted from military service, aud endowed with considerable allotments of good land, these colonies are much wealthier than the neighbouring Russian peasants, from whom they have adopted the slowly modified village community. They are chiefly Lutherans, but many of them belong to other reli- gious sects, —Anabaptists, Moravians, Mennonites (about 40,000). In certain districts (Akkerman, Odessa, Berdiansk, Kamyshin, Novouzensk) they constitute from 10 to 40 per cent. of the total population. The Swedes, who number about 300,000 in Finland, hardly reach 12,000 in European Russia, mostly in the Baltic pro- vinces,

The Roumanians (Moldavians) number not less than 800,000, and are still increasing. Thcy inhabit the governments of Bess- arabia, Podolia, Kherson, and Ekaterinoslaff, In Bessarabia they

number of Great Russians respectively to 72, 67, and 32 per cent, of the aggregate population of these three provinces,

Of the Turco-Tartars of eastern Russia, the Baslikirs often revolted against Russian rule, and the traffic in Bashkir lands, recent] carried on by the Orenburg administration, certainly does not tend to reconcile them. The Tcheremisses have often joined the Bashkirs in their revolts, but are rapidly losing their nationality, As regards the other Turco- and Finno-Tartars, the Mordvinians really have been assimilated to the Russians ; the Moslem Tartarg of Kazan lived till recently on excellent terms with their Russian neighbours and would have continued to do so had no attempts been made to interfere with their land-laws.

In western Russia, while an antipathy exists between Ukrainians and Poles, the Russian Government, by its harassing interference in religious, educational, and economical matters, has become antag. onistic, not only to the Poles, but also to the Ukrainians; printing in Ukrainian is prohibited, and “ Russification”’ is being carried on among Ukrainians by the same means as those employed in Poland, The same is true with the Esthes and Letts, whom the Govern- ment, while countenancing them to some extent in their antipathy to the German aristocracy, has not yet found means to conciliate.

The relative strength of the different ethnical elements of which Their the population of European Russia and Poland is composed may relative be seen from the following figures (Table 1V.). They must be strength, regarded, however, as rough estimates only. They were original] computed by M. Rittich for an aggregate population of 69,788,240, aud in the following table they have merely been increased in vro- portion to the actual population of 84,495,000.

constitute from one-fourth to three-fourths of the population of ‘ Tasue IV. certain districts. On the whole, the Novorossian governments Great Russians sin}0jn/e\0:6 sin,‘eie(4) e(elaceraisiatais/eleleiaieletsictel=teleairet

41,994,000 (Bessarabia, Kherson, Ekaterinoslaff, and Taurida) exhibit the | Little Russians ara ane ecaUEHERHeraeaceeeeoneneaeile 17,241,000 greatest variety of population. Little and Great Russians, Rouma- | White Russians…0.000…..00c.ccccccs 4,330,000 nians, Bulgarians, Serbs, Germans, Greeks, Frenchmen, Poles, ; —= Tartars, and Jews are mixed together and scattered about in small Russiansisi2. 8. 0.0, 63,565,000 colonies, especially in Bessarabia. Of course, the Greeks inhabit LE kas 5,750,000 chiefly the towns, where they carry on trade, as also do the Ar- ee en On oe | 110,000 menians, scattered through the towns of southern Teter, “fai || Celis oo… .2 50. 000e00cccet cama een 9,500 appearing in larger numbers only in the district of Rostoff (10 per PROG 5.2.0. +25.200; ee ee 9,500 cent. of population). — Geo- However great the variety of nationalities inhabiting European Total Slavonians…..... 69,444,000 graphical Russia, its ethnological composition is much Simpler than maiglst-at | Lithwatiians. 0.0.0.0. 5.ecsevesseseeeee cscs. 987,000 distribu- first sight be supposed. The Russians—Great, Little, and White | Zhmuds….....-... eh gsemreec eects 771,000 tion of | —largely prevail over all others, both numerically and as respects | Letts…....ccs-csseccssscssesesesseeeceses,, 1,243,000 races. the territories they occupy in compact bodies. Central Russia is —_——_ ——— almost purely Great Russian, and represents a compact body of Letto-Lithuanians…..... 3,001,000 more than 30,000,000 inhabitants with but 1 to 5 pie eerie WE | Gareelee. i isiacc. ce ccaeeers dank toy. 84,000 admixture of other nationalities. The governments on the Dnicper | Roumanians, and French (about 2000)..... 795,000 (Kieff, Volhynia, Tchernigoff, Podolia, and Pottava), as also the —_——_— adjoining districts of Kharkoff, Voronezh, Kursk, and Don, are Greeco- Romans…..... 879,000 Little-Russian, or Ukrainian, with but a slight admixture of White | Germans and English ….....6..cccc0000 0 1,165,000 and Great Russians, and some 12 per cent. of Jews. The Poles | Swede…...cccccueee 12,000 there number only 8 to 6 per cent. of the population—chiefly land- holders—and are hated by the Ukrainians. Same, 00) ck, aoe 1,177,000 Moghileff, Vitebsk, and Minsk are White Russian, the Poles con- | Armenians and Georgians. ..... 43,000 stituting only 8 per cent. of the population (16simn Minek).. Invether”| ‘Tsigams..... ...0cssveaitiwiiies..sscesecccacsscoce, 16,000 Bielorussian provinees, the White Russians are mixed either with Sa Lithuanians (Vilna), or Ukrainians

(Grodno), or Great Russians Total AvVaMs.....-00bes 74,560,000 (Smolensk), and their relations to Polish landlords are no better than in the Ukraine. The Lithuanians prevail in Rowno,cvwhiowe | Jewi,...cisdecssosdsceatteeviasesdssaceceee sess 3,120,000 they are 80 per cent. of the population, the remainder wos ohuelly | Weraites sis:scaies «10550. 0s oeesseraccaseosneceees 3,000 Jews (10 per cent.), Poles (3 per cent.), Great Russians (8 per cent.), =— Germans, &c. Total Semiteay……..0.<...00:042 3,128,000 In the Baltic provinces (Esthonia, Livonia, and Courland) the — prevailing population is Esthonian, Curonian, or Lettish, the | Kaveliams', ...s0cc0…...0000i0ssscccecceacceoesc ss 235,000 Germans (landlords, or tradesmen and artisans in towns) being | Esthes…..... dina eRe sels eceeRe eee 891,000 respectively only 3°5, 6°8, and 7°6 per cent. of the POpUIAeen, Mit) TNMRE oo. snc. i caeiiedsn0- oes ee ee 2,000 the three provinces, Riga mucaet they hardly reach 120,000 out | Various….....ccccssscscecesseccecescceccescw. 175,000 of 1,800,000 inhabitants. The relations of the Esthes and Letts ed to their landlords are anything but friendly. Baltio PWS»... ....5……...0002. 1,803,000 The northern governments of St Petersburg (apatt from the | Lappsis……...cassvs.ssscecsevvesseddeecec ccc… 7,500 capital), Olonetz, and Archangel contain an admixture of 12 to 28 ei) eer a. an 6,500 percent. of Karelians, Samoyedes, and Zyrians, the remainder being — Great Russians. In the east and south-east provinces of the Northern Pinte… 20.0.54:;,., 14,000 Volga (Nijni, Simbirsk, Samara, Penza, and waratait) tle Groat | Mordve…..0.00…..s00000sescciees BOARS. 0 555.:5003sccse0e enc 1,563,000 Russians number less than one half of the aggregate population | Zyrians….....s00c:sssssescecccaveesooece.,, 102,000 (42-43 per eent.). In the Ural provinces of Perm and Me ee oe 80,000 Great Russians are again in the majority (92 and 81 je OR RS a 2,000 remainder being a variety of Finno-Tartars. It is only in the —- southern Ural governments (Uralsk, Orenburg, Ufa) that the ad- UGSERIRY.. .»...:. 2. 184,000 mixture of a variety of Turco-Tartars—of Kirghizes in Uralsk (23 aan per cent.), Bashkirs in Orenburg and Ufa (22 and 23 per cent.), Total Ural-Altaians…..,..... 3,064,000

——$—=

and less important stems—becomes considerable, reducing the

VITAL STATISTICS.] kU Ss Tt A 81

TABLE 1V.—continued.

SPPEIVAETES 6… 2-c------snceccecscnccee coesernvece 697,000 IT? MIBURS: « cqpenecoo0G0 000 BROE REEDED OEDE eos ou SeeoOEaEnE 1,500,000 “oP ER co. pan ostonseneneonpec0e spdedenereeneeceeeee 908,000 PIES EH CRIGIGS. 0… .cc0— 5c ecccne eee ccecereraereceress 167,000 Tepters. .....ccseeeeeseceeesecesenereeeeeeeeeeeseeans 159,000 Kirghizes …...0.:ccsessessseessseeseeeeeeeeeeeneeees 197,000 ivy OLS, coennoeonpepnne gBOseEBe05ae6s SnOSeHOEOOEORcE 6,000 PTINGONAMEATS|s. 5.52 c+. ~~m0cesersecc 8,629,000 Talia, noo oondehodgneeBeseDeSBoEe sean Ua seBancnce 119,000 “tae! ULDRNTEN OSES cassacpanesopaE 8,748,000 Gramdelotaler…cc..2+.>-~~ 84,495,0001

Part II]. EuROPEAN RussIA—STATISTICS.?

Russia is on the whole a thinly-peopled country, the average population being but 42 to the square mile. The density of population varies, however, very much in European Russia—from one inhabitant per square mile in the government of Archangel to 102 in that of Moscow (exclusive of the capital) and 188 in Podolia. Two-thirds of the whole population are concentrated upon less than one-third of the whole surface. The most thickly- peopled parts form a strip of territory which extends from Galicia through Kieff to Moscow, and comprises partly the most fertile governments of Russia and partly the manufacturing ones ; next come a strip of fertile country to the south of the above and the manufacturing provinces of the upper Volga. The black-earth region has an average of 90 inhabitants per square mile ; the central manufacturing region, 85; the western provinces, 79 ; the black-earth and clay region, 88; the black-earth Steppes, 33 ; the hilly tracts of the Crimea and Caucasus, 31; the forest-region proper, 26; the Steppes, 9; the far north, less than 2.

The rate at which the population is increasing throughout the empire is very considerable. It varies, however, very much in different parts, and even in European Russia, being almost twice as high in the fertile tracts of the south as it isin the north (1°8 to 1:0). ‘he rapid increase is chiefly due to early marriages, the peasants for the most part marrying their sons at eighteen and their daughters at sixteen. The resulting high birth-rate eompensates for the great mortality, and the Russian population is increasing more quickly than the Polish, Lithuanian, Finnish, or Tartar. In 1880 the marriages, births, and deaths were returned as follows (Table V.) :~

Exeess of Births

Marriages.} Births. Deaths. over Deaths.

European Russia ..| 725,427 |3,678,071 |2,684,828 | 993,243

Poland…….....00… 62,771 | 294,021| 189,514] 104,507 Finland (1881)..... 14,283| 74,469] 53,777| 20,692 Siberia 0… 32,952 | 180,802] 131,793 49,009

885,433 |4,227,363 [3,059,912 | 1,167,451

These figures agree pretty nearly with those for a series of years (1871-78), which gave an annual surplus of 945,000 for European Russia alone. In 1882, throughout the empire—leaving out of account Caucasus and Turgai —the births numbered 4,408,555 and the deaths 8,464,404, tor an estimated population of 95,565,100. But the birth-rate and death-rate were very different in Russia proper and in the Asiatic dominions ; in the former they reached respectively 4°88 and 3°77, and in the latter only 8°75 and 2°84. The low birth-rate in Asia counterbalances the low mortality. So also within Russia proper: in the central provinces the high mortality (85 per thousand) is compensated by a high birth-rate (49), while in the western provinees, where the

mortality is relatively small (27), the number of births is also the lowest (37).

On the whole, the mortality in Russia is greater than anywhere else in Europe. The lowest figures are found in Courland (20),

| Bibliography.—Rittich, Ethnographical Map of Russia, and Ethnogr, Com-Position (Plemennoi Sostav) of Russia; Venukoff, Outskirts of Russia (Russ.); Works of the Expedition to the Western Provinces; Mem. of the Geogr. Society (Ethnography) ; Mem. of the Moscow Soc. of Friends of Nat. Science (Anthro- pology); Pauli, The Peoples of Russia; Narody Rosit, popular edition by M. lliin. For prehistoric anthropology, see Count Uvaroif, Archwology, i.; Inos- trantseff, Prehistoric Man on Lake Ladoga; Budiloviteh, Primitive Slavonians, 1879; A. Bogdanotf's extensive and most valuable researches in Mem. of Moscow Soc, of Friends of Nat. Sc.; the researches of Polyakoff and many others in various scientific periodicals (St Petersburg, Kazan universities); and Reports of the Archeol. Congresses. For subsequent periods, see numerous papers in Afe- moirs of Archxol. Soc., Mem, Ac. of Sciences, &e.,and the works of Russian histo-rians. Mezhoff's Bibltogr. Indexes, published yearly by the Russian Geographical Soeiety, contain complete information about works and papers published.

2 For all statistics for European Russia, see ‘‘ Recueil of Information" for European Russia in 1882 (Sbornik Svedeniy), published in 1884 by the Central

_— Committee, and the publieations mentioned below under different

the Baltic provinces (22), and Poland (30). Within Russia itself the rate varies between 29 and 49 (80 to 38 in towns). In 1882 the average mortality in the 18 central governments reached the exceptional figure of 62, so that there was a decrease of 1‘7 per cent. in the aggregate population. The mortality is highest among children, only one-half of those born reaching their seventh year. From military registers it appears that of 1000 males born only 480 to 490 reach their twenty-first year, and of these only 375 are able-bodied ; of the remainder, who are unfit for military service, 50 per cent. suffer from chronic diseases. Misery, insani- tary dwellings, and want of food account for this high mortality, which is further increased by the want of medical help, there being in Russia with Poland only 15,348 males and 66 female surgeons, 7679 assistants, and one bed in hospital for every

1270 inhabitants. The hospitals are, however so unequally distributed, that in 63 governments having an aggregate country population of about 76,000,000 there were only 657 hospitals with 8273 beds, and an average of two surgeons to 100,000 inhabitants.

The rate of emigration from the Russian empire is not high. In Emigra- 1871-80 the average number was 280,700 yearly, and the immigra- tion, tion 245,500. But within the empire itself migration to South Ural, Siberia, and Caucasus goes on extensively ; figures, however, even approximate, are wanting. During the ten years 1872-81 no less than 406,180 Germans and 235,600 Austrians immigrated into Russia, chiefly to Poland and the south-western provinces.

A very great diversity of religions, including (besides numerous Religion. varieties of Christianity) Mohammedanism, Shamanism, and Buddhism, are found in European Russia, corresponding for the most part with the separate ethnological subdivisions. All Russians, with the exception of a number of White Russians who belong to the Union, profess the Greek Orthodox faith or one or other of the numberless varieties of nonconformity. The Poles and most of the Lithuanians are Roman Catholics. The Esthes and all other Western Finns, the Germans, and the Swedes are Protestant. The Tartars, the Bashkirs, and Kirghizes are Mohammedans; but the last-named have to a _ great extent maintained along with Mohammedanism their old Shamanism. The same holds good of the Mescheriaks, both Moslem and Christian. The Mordvinians are nearly all Greek Orthodox, as also are the Votiaks, Voguls, Tcheremisses, and Tchuvashes, but their religions are, in reality, very interesting modifications of Shamanism, under the influence of some Christian and Moslem beliefs. The Voguls, though baptized, are in fact fetichists, as much as the unconverted Samoyedes. Finally, the Kalmucks are Buddhist Lamaites.

All these religions are met with in close proximity to one another, and their places of worship often stand side by side in the same town or village without giving rise to religious disturbances. The recent outbreaks against the Jews were directed, not against the Talmudist creed, but against the trading and exploiting community of the ‘‘Kahal.” In his relations with Moslems, Buddhists, and even fetichists, the Russian peasant looks rather to

conduct than to creed, the latter being in his view simply a matter of nationality. Indeed, towards paganism, at least, he is perhaps even more thau tolerant, preferring on the whole to keep on good terms with pagan divinities, and in difficult circumstances— especially on travel and in hunting—not failing to present to them his offering. Any idea of proselytism is quite foreign to the ordinary Russian mind, and the outbursts of proselytizing zeal occasionally manifested by the clergy are really due to the desire

for “Russification,” and traceable to the influence of the higher clergy and of the Government.

The various creeds of European Russia were estimated in 1879 as follows : —Greek Orthodox and Raskolniks, 638,835,000 (about 12,000,000 being Raskolniks); United Greeks and Armenio- Gregorians, 55,000; Roman Catholics, 8,800,000 ; Protestants,

2,950,000 ; Jews, 3,000,000 ; Moslems, 2,600,000 ; Pagans, 26,000. In 1881 the number of Greek Orthodox throughout the empire, excluding two foreign bishoprics, was estimated at 61,941,000.

Nonconformity (Raskot) is a most important feature of Russian Noncon- popular life, and its influence and prevalence have rapidly grown formists. during the last tweuty-five years.

When, towards the beginning of the 17th century, the Moscow principality fell under the rule of the Moseow botars (one of whom, Godunoff, reached the throne), they took advantage of the power thus acquired to increase their wealth bya series of measures affect- ing land-holding and trade ; they sanctioned and enforced by law the serfdom which had already from economical causes found its way into Russian life. The great outbreak of 1608-12 weakened their power in favour of that of the ezar, but without breaking it ; and throughout the reigns of Michael and Alexis the wkazes were issued in the name of “the czar and boiars.” Serfdom was rein- forced by a series of laws, and the whole of the 17th century is char- acterized by a rapid accumulation of wealth in the hands of boiars, by the development of luxury, imported from Poland, and by the struggle of a number of families to acquire the political power

| already enjoyed by their Polish neighbours. The same tendency XXI. —
11

pervaded the church, which was also accused by the people of having introduced “Polish luxury,” “ Polish creed,” and the tendencies towards supremacy of the Polish clergy. The patriarch Nikon was a perfect representative of these tendencies. Opposition resulted, and the revision of the sacred books, which was undertaken by Nikon, gave the opposition acute character. “splitting” or “schism ”) made its appearance, and gathered under its banner, not only those who accused Nikon of ‘‘ Polish” and ‘* Latin ” tendencies, but also all those who were for the old customs, for federative and communist principles of social organization, and who revolted against serfdom, centralization, and the suppres- sion of municipal life. A series of insurrections broke out under the banner of the “eight-ends” cross of the Raskolniks. Barbarous persecutions by Alexis, Peter I., and their followers did not kill out an opposition which inspired with fanatical enthusiasm the best elements among the Great Russians, and induced its supporters to submit to the fire by thousands at a time, while others rather than submit went to colonize the forests of the Arctic littoral, or betook themselves to Siberia. Profound modifications have taken place in Russian nonconformity since its first appearance. It would be impossible to enumerate them all here, but the following points of primary importance must be mentioned. (1) The mere protest against Nikon’s ‘‘innovations” (novshestvas) led, in the course of two centuries, to a mere servile adherence to the letter of the ver- nacular Scriptures—even to obvious errors of earlier translators— and to interminable discussions about minor points of ritual and about unintelligible words. (2) Another eurrent which now per- vades the whole of Russian nonconformity is that proceeding from rationalist sects which had already spread in north-west Russia in the 16th century, and even in the 14th. These have given rise to several sects which deny the divinity of Christ or explain away various dogmas and prescriptions of orthodoxy. (3) Protestantism, with its more or less rationalistic tendencies, has made itself in- creasingly felt, especially during the present century and in southern Russia. (4) Hostile critics of the Government, and especially of the autocracy, with its army of officials and

its system of con- scriptions, passports, and various restrictions on religious liberty, are found more or less in all the nonconforming bodies, which see in these manifestations of authority the appearance of the Anti- christ. Several of them refuse accordingly to have any dealings whatever with the official world. (5) Another tendency pervading the whole of Russian nonconformity is that which seeks a return to what are supposed to have been the old communist principles of Christianity in its earlier days. All new sects start with applying these principles to practical life ; but in the course of their develop- ment they modify them more or less, though always maintaining the principle at lcast of mutual help. (6) Finally, all sects deal more or less with the question of marriage and the position of woman. A few of them solve it by encouraging,—at least during their "' love-feasts,"—absolutely free relations between all "brethren and sisters," while others only admit the dissolubility of marriage or prohibit it altogether. On the whole, leaving the extremer views out of account, the position of woman is undoubtedly higher among the dissenters than among the Orthodox.

These various currents, combining with and counteracting one another in the most complicated ways, have played and continue to play a most important part in Russian history. The mutual assist- ance found in dissenting sects has preserved many millions of peasants from falling into abject misery, the nonconformists enjoy- ing, as a rule, a greater degree of prosperity than their Orthodox neighbours. 'he leading feature of Russian history, the spread of the Great Russians over the immense territory they now occupy, cannot be rightly understood without taking into account the colonization of the most inaccessible wildernesses by Raskolniks, and the organization of this by their communities, who send dele- gates for the choice of land and sometimes clear it in common by the united labours of all the young men and cattle of the community. On the other hand, the noneonforming sects, while helping to preserve several advantageous features of Russian life, have had a powerful influence in maintaining, especially among the " Staroobr- yadtsy," the old system of the Moscovite family, subject to the despotic yoke of its chief, aud hermetically sealed against instruc- tion.

It is worthy of notice that since the emancipation of the serfs nonconformity has again made a sudden advance, the more radical sects preponderating

over the scholastic ones, and the influence of Protestantism bcing increasingly felt. Nonconformity, whieh formerly had no hold upon Little Russia (though it had penetrated ainong Protestant Esthonians and Letts, and even among Moslem ‘Tartars), has suddenly begun to make progress there in the shape of the “Stunda,” a mixture of Protestant and rationalistic teaching, with tendencies towards a social but rarely socialistie reforma- tion.

The Russian dissenting sects may be subdivided into (1) the “ Popovtsy ” (who have priests), (2) the “ Bezpopovtsy ” (who have none), and (3) numerous spiritualist sects, “ Dukhovnyie Khris- tiane.” The Popovtsy (5 to 6 millions) arc again subdivided into

BUS Si &

The Raskot (lit.

[NONCONFoRMISTs,

two classes, —those who recognize the Austrian hierarchy, and those who have only Orthodox ‘‘ runaway priests” (“ Byeglopopovtsy”), The latter have recently received unexpected help in the aceession of three Orthodox priests of great learning and energy. Morcover, there are among the Popovtsy abont a million of “ Edinovyertsy,” who have received Orthodox priests on the condition of their keeping to the unrevised books. They are patronized by Government.

The Bezpopovtsy embody three large sects—the Pomory, Fedo- seevtsy, and Filipovtsy—and a variety of minor ones. They reeog- nize no priests, and repudiate the Orthodox ritual and the sacm. ments, They avoid all contact with the state, and do not allow prayer for the czar, who is regarded as the Antichrist. They may niunber about 5,000,000 in west, north, and north-east Russia, and represet, on the whole, an intellectually developed and wealthy population. Of the very numerous smaller sects of Bezpopovtsy, the “Stranniki” (Errants) are worthy of notice. They prefer to lead the life of hunted outcasts rather than hold any relation with the state.

The spiritualists, very numerous in central and sonthern Russia, are subdivided into a great variety of schools. The “ Khlysty,” who have their “love-feasts,” their “ Virgins,” sometimes flagellation, and so on, represent a numerous and strong organization in central Russia. The “Skoptsy” (“Men of God,” “ Castrati ”) occur every- where, even among the Finns, but ehiefly in Orel and Kursk, and in towns as money-brokers. The “Dukhobortsy ” communities (warriors of the Spirit), chiefly found in the sonth-east, are renowned as colonizers. They are spreading rapidly in Caucasia and Siberia, The “ Molokany” (a kind of Baptists), numbering perhaps about one million, are spread also in the south-east, and are excellent gardeners and tradesmen. Both are quite open to instruction, and have come under the influence of Protestantism, like the “Stunda” in Little Russia and Bessarabia. The “Sabbathers” and the “Ska- kuny” (a kind of Shakers) are also worthy of notiee; whilea great variety of new sects, such as the ‘ Nemolyaki” (“who do not pray’’), the ‘‘ Vozdykhateli” (“who sigh ”), the “N eplatelshchiki ” (“who do not pay taxes”), the “ Ne-Nashi” (the “ Not-ours ”) van so on, spring up every year.

The aggregate number of Raskolniks is officially stated at nearly one million, but this is quite misleading. The ministry of interior estimated them at 9,000,000 in 1850 and 9,500,000 in 1859. In reality the nuinber is still higher. In Perm alone they were recently computed at a million, and there would be no exaggeration in esti- mating them at a total of from twelve to fifteen millions.1

The old subdivisions of the population into orders possessed of Class unequal rights is still maintained. The great mass of the people, divisions,

81°6 per cent., belong to the peasant order, the others being—

nobility, 1°3 per cent.; clergy, 0°9; the “meschane” or burghers

and merchants, 9°3; military, 6°1; foreigners, 0°2; unclassified,

0°5. Thus more than 63 millions of the Russians are peasants.

Half of them were formerly serfs (10,447,149 males in 1858),—

the remainder being “state peasants” (9,194,891 males in 1858,

exclusive of the Archangel government) and “domain peasants” — (842,740 males the samc year).

The serfdom which had sprung up in Russia in the 16th century, and became consecrated by law in 1609, taking, however, nearly one hundred and fifty years to attain its full growth and assume the forms under which it appeared in the present century, was abolished by law in 1861. ‘This law liberated the serfs from a yoke which was really terrible, even under the best landlords, and from this point of view it was obviously an immense benefit, the results of which are apparent now. But it was far from securing corresponding economic results. Along with the enrichment of the few, a general impoverishment of the great mass followed, and took proportions so alarming as to arouse public attention and to result in a great number of serious investigations conducted by the state, the provincial assemblies, scientific societies, and private statisticians. he general results of these inquiries may be summed np in the subjoined statement.

The former “dvorovyie,” attached to the personal service of their masters, were merely set free ; and they entirely went to reinforce the town proletariat. The peasants proper received their houses and orchards, and also allotments of arable land. These allotments were given over to the rural commune (mir), which was made responsible, as a whole, for the payment of taxes for the allot- ments. The size of the allotments was determined by a maximum and by a minimum, which last, however, could be still further reduced if the amount of land remaining in the landlord’s hands was less than one half of what was allotted to the peasants, For these allotments the peasants had to pay, as before, cither by per- sonal labour (twenty to forty men’s days and fifteen to thirty women’s days per year), or bya fixed rent (“ obrok ”), which varied from 8 to 12 roubles per allotment. As long as these relations subsisted, the peasants were considered as “ temporarily obliged ” (vremenno obyazannyic). On January 1, 1882, they still numbered

1 See Schapoff on Russian Raskol; Sbornik of State Regulations against the

Raskolntks ; and very many papers printed in reviews, chiefly in Otetch. Zapiskt, Dyeto, Vyestnik Lvropt, &e., by Schapoff, Yuzoff, Prugavin,

1,422,012 males; but this category is now disappearing in conse- quence of a recent law (December 28, 1881).

The allotinents could be redeemed by the peasants with the help of the crown, and then the peasants were freed from all obliga- tions to the landlord. The crown paid the landlord in obligations representing the eapitalized “ obrok,” and the peasants had to pay the crown, for forty-nine ycars, 6 per cent. interest on this capital, that is, 9 to 12 roubles per allotment. If the redemption was made without the consent of the peasants —on a mere demand of the landlord, or in consequence of his being in arrear for the pay- ment of his debts to the nobility hypothec the redemption was reduced by one-fifth. The redemption was not calculated on the value of the allotments, but was considered as a eompensation for the loss of the compulsory labour of the serfs; so that throughout Russia, with the exception of a few pro- vinees in the south-east, it was—and still remains notwithstanding a very great increase of the value of land—much higher than the market value of the allotment. the maximum law, many proprietors eut away large parts of the allotments the peasants possessed under serfdom, and precisely the parts the peasants were most in need of, namely, pasture lands around their houses, and forests. On the whole, the tendency was to give the allotments so as to deprive the peasants of grazing land and thus to compel them to rent pasture lands from the landlord at any price.

The present condition of the peasants—according to official docu- ments—appears to be as follows. In the twelve central governments the peasants, on the average, have their own rye-bread for only 200 days per year,—often for only 180 and 100 days. One quarter of thei have received allotments of only 2°9 acres per male, and one half less than 8°5 to 11°4 aercs,—the normal size of the allotment necessary to the subsistence of a family under the three- fields system being estimated at 28 to 42 acres. Land must be thus rented from the landlords at fabulous prices. Cattle-breeding is diminishing to an alarming degree. ‘The average redemption is 8°56 roubles (about 17s.) for such allotments, and the smaller the allotment the heavier the payment, its first “ dessiatina ” (2°86 acres) costing twice as much as the second, and

four times as much as the third. In all these governments,,the state commission testifies, there are whole distriets where one-third of tlic peasants have received allotments of only 2°9 to 5:8 aeres. The aggregate value of the redemption and land-taxes often reaches from 185 to 275 per cent. of the normal rental value of the allotments, not to speak of taxes for recruiting purposes, the church, roads, local administration, and so on, chiefly levied from peasants. The arrears increase every year; one-fifth of the inhabitants have left their houses ; cattle are disappearing. Every year more than half the adult males (in some districts three-fourths of the men and one-third of the women) leave their homes and wander throughout Russia in search of labour. The state peasants are ouly a little better off.

Such is the state of affairs in central Russia, and it would be use- less to multiply figures, repeating nearly the same details. In the eight governments of the black-earth region the state of matters is hardly better. Many peasants took the “gratuitous allotments,” whose amount was about one-eighth of the normal ones.

The average allotment in Kherson is now only 0:90 acre, and for allotments from 2°9 to 5°8 acres they pay from 5 to 10 roubles of redemption tax. The state peasants are better off, but still they are emigrating in masses. It is only in the Steppe govern- ments that the situation is more hopeful. In Little Russia, where the allotments were personal (the mir existing only among state peasants), the state of affairs does not differ for the better on account of the high redemption taxes. In the western provinces, where the land was valued cheaper and the allotments somewhat increased after the Polish insurrection, the general situation might be better were it not for the former misery of peasants. Finally, in the Baltic provinces nearly all the land belongs to German landlords, who either carry on agriculture themselves, with hired labourers, or rent their land as small farms. Only one-fourth of the peasants are farmers, the remainder being mere labourers, who are emigrating in great numbers.

The situation of the former serf-proprietors is also unsatisfactory. Accustomed to the use of compulsory labour, they have failed to accommodate themselves to the new conditions. The 700,000,000 roubles of redemption money reccived from the crown down to 1877 by 71,000

landed proprietors in Russia have been spent without accomplishing any agricultural improvement. The forests have been sold, and only those landlords are prospering who exact rack- rents for the land without which the peasants could not live upon their allotments.

As showing a better aspect of the situation it must be added that in eighty-five districts of Russia the peasants have bought 5,349,000 acres of land since 1861. But these are mostly village- traders and grain-lenders (kulaks). A real exception can be made only for Tver, where 53,474 householders united in communities have bought 633,240 acres of land. There has been an increase of

bank—the value of

Moreover, taking advantage of

wealth among the few, but along with this a gencral impoverish- ment of the inass of the people.'

The ancient Scandinavians described Russia as Gardariki,—the The country of towns,—and until now Great Russia has maintained village this character. The dwellings of the peasantry are not seattered commun- over the face of the country, but aggregated in villages, where they ity.

are built in a street or streets. This grouping in villages has its origin in the bonds which unite the peasants in the village com- munity—the mir, or the obshehina.

When Haxthausen first described the Great Russian mir, it was considered a peculiarity of the Slavonian race,—a view which is no longer tenable. The mir is the Great Russian equivalent for the German, Dutch, and Swiss " mark" or "allmend," the English "township," the French "commune," the Polish "gmina," the South Slavonian "zadruga," the Finnish " pittiy#," &c.; and it very nearly approaches, though differing from them in some esscn-

tial features, the forms of possession of land prevailing among the Moslem Turco-Tartars, while the same principle is found even among the Mongol Buriat shepherds and the Tungus hunters.

The following are the leading features of the organization of the mir among the Great Russians.

The whole of the land occupied by a village—whoever be the landlord recognized by law—the state, a private person, or a juridical unity, such as the voisko of the Cossacks—is considered as belonging to the village eommunity as a whole, the separate members of the community having only the right of temporary possession of such part of the common property as will be allowed to them by the mir in proportion to their working power. To this right corresponds the obligation of bearing an adequate part of the charges which may fall upon the community. If any produee results from the common work of the community, each member has a right to an equal part of it.

According to these general principles, the arable land is divided into as many lots as there are working units in the community, and each family receives as many lots as it has working units. The unit is usually one male adult; but, when the working power of a large family is inereased by its containing a number of adult women, or boys approaching adult age, this eireumstance is taken into account, as well as the diminution from any cause of working power in other households.

For dividing the arable land into lots, the whole is parted first into three “fields,” according to the three-field rotation of erops. As each field, however, contains land of various qualities, it is in its turn subdivided into, say, three parts—of good, average, and poor quality ; and each of these parts is subdivided into as many lots as there are working units. Each household receives its lots in each of the subdivisions of the ‘‘field,” a carefully minute equalization as to the minor differences between the lots being aimed at; and the partition is nearly always made so as to permit each householder to reach his allotment without passing through that of another.

To facilitate this division, the community divides, first, into smaller groups (vyt, zherebyevka, a ‘‘ten, an “eight,” &e.), each of which is composed, by

free selection, of a number of householders —the community only taking care that each shall not be eomposed of rich, of poor, or of “turbulents” exelusively. The division of the land is first made among such groups, and the subdivision goes on within these. The division into groups facilitates also the dis- tribution of such work as the community may have to accomplish— as when a bridge or a ditch has to be repaired, or a meadow mowed —and the work cannot be done by the community as a whole.

As sickness, death, removal, and other incidents bring about changes in the distribution of working power among the diffcrent households, or when the number of working units in the eom- munity has increased or decreased, a redistribution of land (peredyel) follows. Whether the land be a burden (the taxes exceeding its rental value) or a benefit, its division is equalized ; the households whose working power has increased receive ad- ditional lots, and vice versa. The peredyel may be ‘partial’ or ‘¢general.” In most cases a mere equalization of lots among several families will serve, and a general redistribution is resorted to only when greater incqualities have arisen. On the whole, these redistributions are rare, and the preeariousness of land-holding which has been supposed to be a eonsequenee of the mir proves to have been exaggerated. More detailed inquiries have

1 See Yanson’s Researches on Allotments and Payments (2d ed., 1881) and Com- parative Statistics of Russia (vol. ii.); Statistics of Landed Property, published by Central Statistical Committee ; works of the Committee on Taxation, and those of the Committee of Inquiry into Petty Trades (12 vols.); Reports of the Com- mission on Agriculture; Collection of Materials on the Village Community (vol.i.); Collection of Materials on Landholding, and Statistical Descriptions of Separate Governments, published by several zemstvos (Moscow, Tver, Nijni, Tula, Ryazafi, Tamboff, Pottava, Saratotf, &e.); Kawelin, The Peasant Question; Vasiltchi- koff, Land Property and Agriculture (2 vols.), and Village‘Life and Agriculture; Ivanukoff, The Fall of Serfdom in Russia; Shashkoff, ‘“Peasantry in the Baltic Provinees,” in Russkaya Mysl, 1883, iii. and ix.; V. V., Agric. Sketches of Russia; Golovatchoff, Capital and Peasant Farming; Engelhardat’s Letters from the Country; many elaborate papers in reviews (all Russian); and Appendix to Russian translation of Reelus’s Géogr. Univ.

“ Artels.”

8+

shown that no redistribution is made without urgent neeessity.

Thus, to qnote but one instance, in 4442 village communities of Moscow, the average number of redistributions has been 2°1 in twenty years (1858-78), and in more than two-thirds of these

communities the redistribution took place only once. On the

other hand, a regular rotation of all households over all lots, in order to eqnalize the remaining minor inequalities, is very often

practised in the black-earth region, where no manure is needed. . s ? Besides the arable mark, there is usually a vygon (or “ eommon ”

for grazing, to whieh all honseholders send their eattle, whatever The meadows are either divided on the above principles, or mowed in common, and the hay divided The forests, when consisting of small wood in snfficient quantity, are laid under no regnlations ; when this is scarce, every trunk is counted, and valued according to its age, number of branches, &c., and the whole is divided accord.

the number they possess.

according to the number of lots.

ing to the number of lots.

The houses and the orchards behind them belong also, in prin- ciple, to the eommnuity ; but no peredyel is made, except after a fire or when the necessity arises of building the houses at greater The orchards usually remain for years in the

distances apart. same hands, with but slow equalizations of the lots in width. All decisions in the village community are given by the mir,

that is, by the general assembly of all householders, —women being admitted on an equal footing with men, when widows, or when their For the decisions unanimity is neces- sary ; and, though in some difficult cases of a general peredyel the discussions may last for two or three days, no decision is reached

male guardians are absent.

until the minority has declared its agreement with the majority.

Each eommune elects an elder (starosta); he is the executive, but has no authority apart from that of the mir whose decisions he carries ont. All attempts on the part of the Government to make him a functionary have failed.

Opinion as to the advantages and disadvantages of the village community being much divided in Russia, it has been within the last twenty years the subject of extensive inquiry, both private and official, and of an ever-growing literature and polemic. The supporters of the mir are found chiefly among those who have made more or less extensive inquiries into its actual organization and con- sequences, while their opponents draw their arguments principally from theoretical considerations of political eeonomy. The main

reproach that it checks individual development and is a source of

immobility has been shaken of late by a better knowledge of the institution, which has bronght to light its remarkable plasticity and power of adaptation to new circumstances. The free settlers in Siberia have voluntarily introduced the same organization. In uorth and north-east Russia, where arable land is scattered in small patches among forests, communities of several villages, or “volost” com- munities, have arisen ; and in the “ voisko” of the Ural Cossacks we find commmnity of the whole territory as regards both land and fish- eriesand work in common. Nay, the German colonists of southern Russia, who set out with the principle of personal property, have snb- sequently introduced that of the village eommunity, adapted to their special needs (Clauss). In some localities, where there was no great, scarcity of land and the authorities did not interfere, joint cultiva-

tion of a common area for filling the storehouses has reeently been developed (in Penza 974 commmnes have introduced this system and cultivate an aggregate of 26,910 acres). The renting of land in common, or even purchase of land by wealthy communes, has become quite usual, as also the purchase in common of agricultural imple- ments.

Since the emancipation of the serfs, however, the mir has been undergoing profound modifications. The differences of wealth whieh ensued, —the impoverishment of the mass, the rapid increase of the rmral proletariat, and the enrichment of a few “knlaks” and “miroyedes” (“mir-eaters’’),—are certainly operating un- favourably for the mir. The miroyedes steadily strive to break up the organization of the commune as an obstacle to the extension of their power over the moderately well-to-do peasants ; while the proletariat cares little about the mir. Fears on the one side and hopes on the other have been thns entertained as to the likelihood of the mir resisting these disintegrating influences, favonred, more- over, by those landowners and manufacturers who foresee in the creation of a rural proletariat the certainty of cheap labonr. But the village community does not appear as yet to have lost the power of adaptation which it has exhibited throughout its history. If, indeed, the impoverishment of the peasants continues to go on, and legislation also interferes with the mir, it must of course disap- pear, but not without a corresponding disturbance in Russian life.!

The co-operative spirit of the Great Russians shows itself further

1 See Collection of Materials on Village Communities, published by the Geogra- phical and Economieal Soeieties, vol. i. {containing a complete bibliography up to 1880), Of more recent works the following are worthy of notice :—Lutchitsky, Collection of Materials for the History of the Village Community in the Ukraine, Kieff, 1884; Efimenko, Researches into Popular Life, 1884; Hantower, On the Origin of the Czinsz Possession, 1884 ; Samokvasoff, History of Russian Law, 1884; Keussler, Zur Geschichte und Kritik des bduerlichen Gemeinde-Besitzes in Russland, 2 vols., 1884; and papers in publications of Gcographieal Society.

in another sphere in the artels, which have also been &@ prominen; feature of Russian life since the dawn of history. The artel very much resembles the co-operative society of western Europe, with this difference that it makes its appearance without any impulse from theory, simply as a natnral form of popular life. When workmen from any province come, for instance, to St Petersburg to engage in the textile industries, or to work as carpenters, masons, &e,

they immediately unite in groups of from ten to fifty persons, settle in a house together, keep a common table, and pay each his part of the expense to the elected elder of the artel. All Russia is covered with such artels,—in the cities, in the forests, on the banks of rivers, on journeys, and even in the prisons.

The industrial artel is almost as frequent as the preceding, in all those trades which admit of it. A soeial history of the inost funda- mental state of Russian society would bea history of their huntin fishing, shipping, trading, building, exploring artels. or two hundred carpenters, bricklayers, &c., are common wherever new bnildings have to be erected, or railways or bridges made; the contractors always prefer to deal with an artel, rather than with separate workmen. The same principles are often put into practice in the domestic trades. It is needless to add that the wages divided by the artels are higher than those earned by isolated workmen.

Finally, a great number of artels on the stock exehange, in the seaports, in the great cities (commissionaires), during the great fairs, and on railways have grown up of late, and have acquired the confidence of tradespeople to such an extent that considerable sums of money and complieated banking operations are frequently handed over to an artelshik (member of an artel) without any receipt, his number or his name being accepted as sufficient guarantee. These artels are recruited only on personal acqnaint- ance with the candidates for membership, and security reaching £80 to £100 is exacted in the exchange artels. These last have a tendeney to beeome mere joint-stock companies employing salaried servants. Co-operative societies have lately been organized by several zemstvos. They have achieved good results, but do not exhibit, on the whole, the same unity of organization as those which have arisen in a natural way among peasants and artisans. 2

Artels of one

The chief occupation of the population of Russia is agriculture. Agri- Only in a few parts of Moscow, Vladimir, and Nijni has it been culture,

abandoned for manufacturing pursuits. Cattle-breeding is the leading industry in the Steppe region, the timber-trade in the north-east, and fishing on the White and Caspian Seas. Of the total surface of Russia, 1,237,360,000 acres (excluding Finland), 1,018,737,000 acres are registered, and it appears that 39°9 per cent. of these belongs to the crown, 1°9 to the domains (udel), 31°2 to peasants, 24°7 to landed proprietors or to private com- panies, and 2°3 to the towns and monasteries. Of the acres registered only 592,650,000 can be considered as "* good," that is, capable of paying the land tax; and of these 248,630,000 acres were under erops in 1884.3 The crops of 1883 were those of au average year, that is, 2°9 to 1 in central Rnssia, and 4 to 1 in south Russia, and were estimated as follows (seed corn being left out of account) :—Rye, 49,185,000 quarters ; wheat, 21,605,000; oats, 50,403,000 ; barley, 13,476,000; other grains, 18,808,000. Those of 1884 (a very good year) reached an average of 18 per cent. higher, except oats. The crops are, however, very unequally distributed. In an average year there are 8 governments which are sone 6,930,000 quarters short of their requirements, 35 which have an exeess of 33,770,000 quarters, and 17 which have neither excess nor deficiency. The export of corn from Russia is steadily increasing, having risen from 6,560,000 quarters in 1856-60 to an average of 23,700,000 quarters in 1876-83 and 26,623,700 quarters in 1884. This increase does not prove, however, an excess of corn, for even when one-third of Russia was famine-stricken, during the last years of scarcity, the export trade did not decline ; even Samara exported during the last famine there, the peasants being compelled to sell their corn in autumn to pay their taxes, Scarcity is quite usual, the food supply of some ten provinces being exhansted every year by the end of the spring. Orach, and even bark, are then mixed with flonr for making bread.

Flax, both for yarn and seed, is extensively grown in the north- west and west, and the annual production is estimated at 6, 400,000 ewts. of fibre and

2,900,000 quarters of linseed. Hemp is largely cultivated in the central governments, the yearly production being

2 See Isaeff on Artels in Russia, and in Appendix to Russian translation of Reelus; Kalatehoff, The Artels of Old and New Russia ; Recuetl of Materials on Artels (2 vols.); Seherbina, South Russian Artels; Nemiroff, Stock Exchange Artels (all Russian).

3 The division of the registered land is as follows, the figures being pereentages of the whole :—

Arable Meadows,

sari. Forests. Baeentel Unproduetive. Peasants' holdings….....0. 53°8 10°1 26°6 9:5 IBLivatewHOldiesstscr..ccssssc ccc. 22 37°6 23°1 11°9 Crown and domains….....0666 ey 64°3 1°6 32°4 ROHAN ee: eve ccetsosces eevee 26°3 38°7 15°9 19°1

INDUSTRIES. |

1,800,000 ewts. of fibre and 1,800,000 quarters of seed. The export of both (which along with other oil-bearing plants reached

jn the foreign trade of Russia.

The culture of the beet is increasing, and in 1884 785,700 acres were under this root, chiefly in Little Russia and the neighbouring overnments ; 68,900,000 ewts. of beetroot were worked up, yield- ing 5,119,000 cwts. of sugar, while fifty-five refineries (twenty-six of them in Poland) showed a production valued at 118,888,530 roubles in 1882. Tobacco is cultivated everywhere, but good qua- lities are obtained only in the south. In 1876-80 an average area of 101,600 aercs was under this steadily increasing culture, and the erop of 1884 yielded 86,400,000 cwts. The vine, which might be grown much farther north than at present, is cultivated only ou Mount Caucasus, in Bessarabia, in the Crimea, and on the lower Don for wine, and in Ekaterinoslaff, Podolia, and Astrakhan for raisins. The yearly produce is 10-8 million gallous in Russia, 10°0 in the Caucasus, and 24 in Transcaucasia.

Market gardening is extensively earricd on in Yaroslavl for a variety of vegetables for exportation, in Moscow and Ryazafi for hops, and in the south for sunflowers, poppies, melons, &c. Gardening is also widely spread in Little Russia and in the more fertile central governments. Madder and indigo are cultivated on Caucasus, and the silk-worm in Taurida, Kherson, and Caucasia. Bee-keeping is widely spread.

The breeding of live stock is largely carried on in the east and south, but the breeds are usually inferior. Good breeds of cattle are met with only in the Baltic provinees, and excellent breeds of horses on the Don, in Tamboff, and in Voronezh. Since the emancipation, the peasants have been compelled to reduce the number of their cattle, so that the increase in this department does not correspond to the increase of population, as is shown by the following figures :—

1851. 1882.

seen ese 20,962,000 23,845,100 ee 37,527,000 47,508,970 on 8,836,000 9,207,670

Ir ee

A more thorough registration of horses for nvlitary purposes gives a return of 21,203,900 horses in Russia and Poland, that is, 255 horses per 1000 inhabitants—a proportion which is elsewhere approached only in the United States. They are kept in largest numbers in the thrce Steppe governments and on the Urals (550 and 384 per 1000 inhabitants), while the smallest proportion occurs in the manufacturing region (155 per 1000 inhabitants). 90 per cent. of the total number of horses belong to peasants ; these are mostly of a very poor description. Infectious diseases make great ravages every year. In 1882 no less than 121,500 cattle and 14,110 horses perished from that cause.?

Fishing is a most important source of income for whole com- munities in Russia. No less than 2000 to 3000 inhabitants of Archangel are eugaged in fishing on the Norwegian coast and in the White Sea, the aggregatc yield of this industry being estimated at 200,000 ewts., including 150 million herrings. These fisheries are, however, declining. Fishing in the Baltic is not

of much importance. In the estuaries of the Dnieper, Dniestcr, and Bug it gives occupation to about 4000 men, and may be valued at less than 1,000,000 roubles. The fisheries in the Sea of Azoff, which oceupy about 15,000 men, are much more important, as are also those of the lower Don, which last alone are valued at over 1,000,000 roubles a year. The chief fisherics of Russia are, how- ever, on the Caspian and in its feeders: those of the Volga cover no less than 6000 square miles, and those of the Ural extend for over 100 miles on the sea-coast and 400 miles up the river. The lowest estimates give no less than 4 million cwts., valued at 15 million roubles, of fish taken every year in the Caspian and its affluents. The fisherics on the lakes of the lake region are also worthy of notice.

Ilunting is an important source of income in north and north- east Russia, no less than 400,000 squirrels and 800,000 grouse, to mention no other game, being killed in different governments, while sea-hunting is still productive on the shores of the Arctic Occan.?

Notwithstanding the wealth of the country in minerals and mctals of all kinds, and the endeavours made by Government to encourage mining, ineluding the imposition of protective tariffs even against Finland (in 1885), this and the related industries are still at a low stage of development. The remoteness of the mining from the industrial eentres, the want of technical instruc- tion and also of capital, and the existence of a variety of vexatious

1 See The Year 1884 with regard to Agriculture, published by the Ministry of

Interior (so also preceding years); the publications of the Minister of Finance; Yanson's Comparative Statistics of Russia, 1880; Appendix to Russian translation of Reelus; and Suvorin's Russkiy Kalendar. 2 Bibliography.— Baer and Danilevskiy, Fishery Researches in Russia, published by Minister of Domains, 9 vols.; Veniaminoff, Fishing in Russia, 1876; Sidoroff, Northern Russia, and Contributions to the Knowledge of Northern Russia, 1882; Grimm, The Work of the Aral-Caspian Expedition.

kUtS Se I 2

the value of 136,816,000 roubles in 1882) holds the second place

oy)

regulations may be given as the chief reasons for this state of matters. The imports of foreign metals in the rough and of coal are steadily increasing, while the exports, never otherwise than insignificant, show no advance. The chief mining districts of Russia are the Ural Mountains and Olonetz for all kinds of metals ; the Moscow and Donetz basins for coal and iron; Poland and Finland; Caucasus; and the Altai, the Nertchiusk, and the Amur mountains.

Gold is obtained from gold-washings in Siberia (63,194 fb in 1882), the Urals (16,850 ib), Central Asia (325 Tb in 1881), and Finland (42 tb); silver in Siberia (16,128 tb), and partly on Cau- casus (1232 tb), the quantity steadily decreasing ; platinum in the Urals (3600 to 4600 tb every year). Lead is extracted along with silver (19,416 ewts. in 1881 ; 357,260 cwts. imported); zinc only in Poland (89,650 cwts. ; half as much is imported); tin in Finland (194 ewts.; 40,000 cwts. imported). Copper is worked in several govern- ments of the Ural region, in Kazafi, Vyatka, Caucasus, Siberia, and Finland, but the industry is a languishing one, and the crown mincs show a deficit (65,000 cwts. ; double this amount is imported). Iron-ores are found at many places. Excellent mines are worked on the Urals; and iron mines occur also in large numbers throughout the Moscow and Donetz basins, as also in the western provinces, not to speak of those of the Asiatic dominions, of Poland, and of Fin- land (bog-iron). In 1881 the annual production of pig-iron (which covered only two-thirds of the consumption) was stated as follows, (in thousands of ewts.):—Urals, 6153; central Russia, 1092; Olonctz, 42; south and south-west Russia, 501; Poland, 951; Finland, 413; Siberia, 85. The iron and steel throughout the empire amounted to 10,720,000 cwts. in 1882. European Russia alone produced in 1882 31,520 ewts. of copper, 7,703,000 cwts. of pig-iron, 4,981,300 ewts. of iron, and 3,799,600 cwts. of steel.

The production of coal is rapidly increasing and in 1882 reached 46,270,000 cwts., three-fourths being produced by the Donetz basin, and one-fifth by that of Moscow. Poland, moreover, yielded 27,950,000 ewts. of coal in 1882, and the Asiatic dominions about 800,000 ewts. Nearly 34,000,000 ewts. are imported annually. The extraction of naphtha on the

Apsheron peninsula of the Caspian has been greatly stimulated of late, reaching about 20,000,000 cwts. in 1883 (4,600,000 ewts. of kerosene, 1,000,000 ewts. of lubricating oils, and 300,000 ewts. of asphalt).

Russia and Siberia are very rich in rock-salt, salt springs, and salt lakes (16,360,000 cwts. extracted ; 3,746,000 imported). Excel- lent graphite is found in the deserts of the Sayan Mountains and Turukhansk. Sulphur is obtained in Caucasia, Kazaii, and Poland (2000 to 5000 ewts. extracted ; 70,000 tc 170,000 cwts. imported). The mining and related industries occupy altogether about an ageregate motive force (steam and water) of 73,500 horse-power and 305,000 hands.

Since the time of Peter I. the Russian Government has becn Mannfac- unceasing in its efforts for the creation and development of home tures manufactures. Important monopolies in last century, and heavy and petty protective, or rather prohibitive, import duties, as well as large industries. money bounties, in the present, have contributed towards the accumulation of immense private fortunes, but manufactures have developed but slowly. A great upward movement has, however, been observable since 1868. About that time a thorough reform of the machinery in use was effected, whereby the number of hands employed was reduced, but the yearly production doubled or trebled. In some branches the production suddenly rose at a yet higher rate (cottons from 12 million roubles in 1865 to 209 million in 1882). The following figures for European Russia, without Poland and Finland, will give some idea of this progress :—

Workmen Employed.

Number of

Yearly Production | Produetion per Establishments.

in Roubles. Workman.

157,372,000

1851 9,256 | 456,596 317 1861 14,060 | 559,538 | 295,560,000 528 1870 18,892 | 463,093 | 452,660,000 977 1882 56,905 | 954,971 | 1,126,083,000

1,187

These figures lose, however, some of their significance if the corre- sponding rate of progress in manufacturing productivity in westeru Europe be taken into account. Besides, since the great improve- ments of 1861-70 the industrial progress of Russia has been but slow. The manufactories of rails and railway plant, aud even the Ural iron- works, are ina precarious condition. The textile industries, though undoubtedly they have made great advances, are subject to great fluctuations in connexion with those of the home erops, and are thus in an abnormal state. The artisans labour for twelve, fourteen, and sometimes sixteen hours a day, and their condition, as revealed by recent inquiries, is very unsatisfactory. Many causes contribute to this, the want of technical instruction, the want of capital, and

3 See the yearly accounts in Mining Journal; Dobronizskiy, Mining in the Russian Exhibition of 1883 (detailed account); publieutions of the Minister of Finanee ; Képpen's "' Mining Industry of Russia," in Mining Journal, 1880, and Iznvestia Geog. Soc., 1880; Marvin's Petroleum Industry of Russia, 1885.

Tnland trade.

above all the want of markets. Russia has not, and cannot have, such foreign markets as the countries which first attained an indus- trial development. Her eolonies are deserts, and in the home markets the manufacturer only finds 80 millions of poverty-strieken people, whose wants are nearly all supplied by their petty domestic industries.

These, that is, the domestic industries which are earried on by the peasants in conjunction with their agricultural pursuits during the long days of idleness imposed by the climate and by the re- dueed allotments of land, continue, not only to hold their ground side by side with the large manufactures, but to develop and to compete with these by the cheapness of their products. Extensive inquiries are now being made into these domestic industries (kustar- noyie proizvodstvo). 855,000 persons engaged in them along with agrieulture (£ustari) have already been registered, and an

unexpected variety of industries, and a still more unexpected teehnical develop- ment in several of them, have been disclosed by these researches. The yearly production of the 855,000 kustari who have been regis- tered reaches 218,444,000 roubles; while the total number of peasants engaged in the industries, mostly in Great Russia and northern Caucasia, is estimated at a minimum of 7,500,000 persons, with a yearly production of at least 1,800,000,000 roubles, or more than double the aggregate production of the manufactures proper.

Of course the machinery they use is very primitive, and the wages for a day of twelve to sixteen hours exceedingly low. But the industries are capable of being improved, and it has been brought out that “Paris” silk hats and “ Vienna” house furniture sold by substantial foreign firms at Moseow are really manufactured in the neighbourhood of the capital by peasants who still eontinue to till their fields. All these industries suffer very much from want of credit, and the producers become the prey of intermediaries. But their continued existence and their progress under most unfavour- able conditions show that they meet a real want, which is itself the consequence of the peculiar conditions under which Russia, the last to come into the international market, has to develop.

In those very governments where two-thirds of the textile manu- factories of Russia are concentrated domestic weaving (for the market, not for domestic use) employs about 200,000 hands, whose yearly produetion is valued at 45,000,000 roubles. In Stavropol on Caueasus it has so rapidly developed that 42,400 looms are now at work, with a yearly production of 2,007,700 roubles. But no ade- quate idea could be given of the petty industries of Russia without entering into greater detail than the scope of the present article per- mits. Suffice it to say that there is no branch of the industries in textiles, leather, woodwork, or inetal work, provided it needs no heavy machinery, which is not suceessfully carried on in the villages. Nearly all the requirements of nine-tenths of the popula- tion of Russia are met in this way.

The aggregate production of industries within the empire, in- clusive ot mining, was stated in 1882 as follows :—European Russia, 1,126,033,000 roubles ; Poland, 147,309,000 ; Finland, 15,130,000. The chief

manufactures in European Russia (apart from Poland and Finland), aud their yearly production in 1882 in millions of roubles, were as follows :— cotton yarn and cottons, 208°6; other textile industrics, 103°5; metal wares and machinery, 107°9 ; chemicals, 6°6 ; candles, soap, glue, leather, and other animal products, 61:4 ; distillery products, 156-0 ; other liquors, 39°0; sugar, 140-9 ; flour, 74:0. The remainder are of minor importance. It must be observed, however, that these figures are much below those given for 1879, when the aggregate production of Russian manufactures was computed at 1,102,949,000 roubles, without the mining and related industries, the distillery products, and the flour.

The geographical distribution of manufactures in Russia is very unequal. The governments of Moscow and St Petersburg, with a yearly production of 173 and 134 million roubles respectively, repre- sent together two-fifths of the ageregate production of Russia, If we add Vladimir (91,766,000 roubles), Kieff (73,300,000), Perm (56,500,000), Livonia, Esthonia, Kharkoff, and Kherson (from 30 to 35 millions each), we have all the prineipal manufacturing centres. In fact, Moscow, with portions of the neighbouring governments, contains half the Russian manufactures exempted froin excise duties, while the south-west governments of Kieff, Podolia, and Kherson contain two-thirds of those not so exempted. 1}

The main wealth of Russia consisting in raw produce, the trade of the country turns chiefly on the purchase of this for export, and the sale of manufactured and imported goods in exchange. This

1 See Orloff's Index of Russian Manufactures, 1881; Timiryazeff's Development of Industry in Russia, and Industrial Atlas of Russia ; Materials for Statistics of Steam-Engines, published by Central Statistical Committee, 1882; LWistorical and Statistical Sketch of Russian Industry, vol. ii., 1883 ; Annuaire of the Ministry of Finance; Russische Revue, published monthly at St Petersburg by Roettger. On the petty trades, see Memoztrs of the Committee for Investigation of Petty Trades, vols. i. to xii., 1879-84; Recueil of Statistical Information for Moscow Govern- ment, published by the Zemstvo, vols. vi. and vii.; Isaeff's Trades of Moscow; several papers in reviews; and an appendix to the Russian translation of Reclus's Géographie Universelie; Resumé of Materials on Russtan Peity

Trades, 1874 (all Russian); also Thun, Russlands Gewerbe. For the position of workmen in manu- factories see the extensive inquiries of the Moseow Zemstvo in its Recueil, and

the reports of the recently nominated inspectors of manufactures, especially Yanjul, Sketches and Researches, 2 vols., 1884.

SIA

traffic is in the hands of a great number of middlemen, —in the west Jews, and elsewhere Russians,—to whom the peasants are for the most part in debt, as they purchase in advance on security of sub. sequent payments in corn, tar, wooden wares, &c. A good deal of the internal trade is carried on by travelling merchants (ofent).

The fairs are very numerous ; the minor ones numbered 6500 in 1878, and showed sales amounting to an aggregate of 305 million roubles. Those of Nijni-Novgorod, with a return of 400 inillion roubles, of Irbit and Kharkoff (above 100 million roubles each), of Romny, Krestovskoye in Perm, and Menzelinsk in Ufa (55 to 12 million roubles), have considerable importance both for trade and for home manufactures. The total value of the internal trade, which is in the hands of 681,116 licensed dealers, is roughly estimated at more than seven milliards of roubles,

The development of the external trade of Russia is scen from the following figures (millions of roubles):—

[TRADB,

1861-65,| 1866-70. 1871-75.] 1876-80.

1881. 1882,

Exports, Articles of food…... Raw and half-manu- faetured produce. Manufactured wares

66°1 | 116°9 | 200°1 | 326-2 | 261-9 | 350-6

102°8 | 180-1 | 164-6 12°7| 15°6

197°4 | 219°5 | 232-9 11°0|| 13°25) ies

Wattles… ee 11°8 | 19a Ho tally eee 181°6 | 262°7 | 374-9 | 534°6 | 506-4 »» in metallic roubles? | 158-4 | 214°4 342°3 | 336°8 Inwports. Articles of food…... 60°4] 68°5 AH Raw and half-manu- factured produce.| 66°4 | 116°9 278°5 Manufactured wares| 36‘1| 96:4 iSsG HOGA cee eee 162°9 | 281-8 517°8 », in metallic

142°5 | 229°3

roubles… 344°3

The chief artiele of export is grain—wheat, oats, (24,870,000 quarters, 321,042,000 roubles in 1882), to which the inerease of exports is mainly due. This increase, however, does not correspond to an increase of crops, only 10 per cent. of which were exported in 1870 and about 20 per cent. in 1882. Next to grain come flax, hemp, linseed, and hempseed (129,370,000 roubles in 1882) ; oil-yielding grains (441,000 quarters) ; wool, tallow, hides, bristles, and bone (31,120,000 roubles). If we add to these timber (35,044,000 roubles) and furs (4,147,000 roubles), 95 per cent. of all Russian exports are aceounted for, the remainder consisting of linen, ropes, and some woollen stuffs and metallic wares (7,172,000 roubles to western Europe, 2,888,000 to Finland, and 5,763,000 to Asia).

The chief imports from Europe were in 1882 as follows :—Tea (48,091,000 roubles), liquors (16,124,000 roubles), salt, fish, riee, fruits, and colonial wares (38,446,000 roubles), various raw tex- tile wares (127,986,000 roubles—cotton 72,417,000), raw metals (32,630,000 roubles), chemicals (57,894,000 roubles), and stuffs (22,428,000 roubles). The imports from Asia—chiefly tea—in the same year reached 32,853,000 roubles. The chief imports were from Germany (214,000,000 roubles) and Great Britain (124,700,000), the chief exports to Great Britain (210,000,000), Germany (178,000,000), and France (54,000,000). Even in her trade with Finland Russia imports more than she exports,—the chicf imports being paper, cotton, iron, and butter ; prohibitory tariffs were im- posed on Finnish wares in 1885.

During 1882 the ports of the empire were visited by 18,638 foreign ships (5,337,000 tons), of which number 1436 were to Asiatic ports (391,200 tons). Of the above total only 2489 vessels (628,000 tons) were under the Russian flag (mostly Finnish), while the British alone showed a tonnage of 2,258,000 and the German 639,000. The coasting trade was represented by 35,083 vessels (6,040,000 tons) entering the ports, chiefly those of the Black Sea.

The mercantile marine of Russia in 1882 numbered 6383 vessels (727,000 tons), including 604 steamers ; of the total number 1593 (254,000 tons) were Finnish. The chief ports are St Petersburg, Odessa, Riga, Taganrog, Libau, and Reval. Baku has recently acquired some importance in consequence of the naphtha trade.

The rivers of the empire, mostly connected by canals, play a very Commun important part in the inland traffic. The ageregate length of cation. navigable waters reaches 21,510 miles (458 miles of canals), and 12,600 miles more are available for floating rafts. In 1882 51,407 boats, with cargoes amounting to 153,250,000 cwts., valued at 186,480,000 roubles, left the ports on Russian rivers and canals, ——_—__ ee eee

and rye—

2aSee note lepers 3 See Obzor of the Foreign Trade of Russia in 1882, published b y the Minister of Finance, and the same for trade with Europe in 1888 and 1884,

k Us

firewood, and timber constitute two-thirds of the whole es. Pact Within Russia proper, from 5740 to 7400 boats, larger and smaller, worth from four to seven niillions of roubles, have been built annually during the last five years (7415 boats, valued at 6,758,000 roubles, in 1882,—18 of them being steamers) ; most of them are light flat-bottomed structures, which are broken up as soon as they have reached their destination. The number of steamers plying on ‘nland waters, chiefly on the Volga, was esti- mated in 1879 at 1056 (80,890 lhorse-power). ‘Twenty-five years ago Russia had only 992 miles of railways ; on January 1, 1888, the totals were 13,428

miles for Russia and Caueasia, 888 for Poland, 734 for Finland, and 141 for the Transcaspian region, and two years later they had reached an aggre- gate length of 16,155 miles. The railways ehicfly conncet the Baltic ports with the granaries of Russia In the south-east, and the western frontier with Moscow, whence s1x trunk lines radiate in all directions. Several military lines run along the western frontier, while two trunk lines, starting from St Petersburg, follow the two shores of the Gulf of Finland. of the projected Siberian railway one main line (444 miles), connecting Perm and Berezniki on the Kama with Ekaterinburg and the chief iron-works of the Urals, has been constructed. It has been extended east to Kamyshkoff, and is to be continued to Tiumen, 100 miles farther east, whence steamers Tomsk. Dy iy 738 miles of the railways of Russia belong to the state, but most of them have been constructed under Government guar- antecs, involving payment of from 11 to 21 million roubles yearly. On the other hand the yearly increasing debt of the railways to the state amounted to 781,888,800 roubles in 1883. Of the aggregate value of the Russian railways, estimated at 2210 million roubles, no less than 1971 million roubles were held by Government in shares and bounds. ‘Che cost of construction has been altogether out of proportion to what it ought to be; for, whereas the average rate per verst (0°663 milc) in Finland was only 20,000 silver roubles, in Russia it reached 60,000, 75,000, 90,000, and even 100,000 roubles. In 1882 21,322 versts (14,136 miles) represented an expenditure of 2,210,047,632 roubles, and their net revenue was only 3°18 per cent. on the capital invested (4982 roubles per English mile in 1882). In 1884 34,674,858 passengers, 2,287,955 military, and 834,500,000 cwts. of merchandise were conveyed by 5808 locomo- tives and 120,940 carriages and waggons. Fully one-half of the merchandise carried consisted of corn (24 per cent.), coal (13 per cent.), firewood (12.per cent.), and timber (8 per cent.).1 : For the conveyance of correspondence and travellers along ordi- nary routes the state maintains an extensive organization of post- horses between all towns of the empire, that 1s, over an ageregate length of 110,170 miles. In 1882 4355 stations, with a staff of 15,560 men and 446,460 horses, were kept up for that purpose. In 1883 242,193,470 letters, newspapers (93,520,000), registered letters, and parcels were carried, of which 29,808,100 belonged to international correspondence. The telegraph system had in the same year an aggregate length of 65,394 miles, with

2,957 telegraph- offices, and 10,222,139 telegrams were transmitted.2 (P. A. K.)

HISTORY. |

Part LV. Russtan HisTory.

The Russians, properly so called, belong to the Slavonic race, itself a division of the great Aryan faimily. It can- not be denicd that in the northern and eastern parts of Russia large Finnish elements have become mixed with the Slavs, and Mongolian in the south, but this is far from justifying the prejudiced attempts of Duchinski and others to challenge the right of the Russians to be called an Aryan people. The derivation of the words Russia, Russians (Rous, Hossia, Rossiane), has been much disputed. The old-fashioned view was to identify them with the Rhozxolani, who are now generally believed to have been a Medish tribe. he later and probably correct one is to derive the name from the Finnish Ruotsi applied to the Swedes, and considered by Professor Thomsen of Copen- hagen to be itself a corruption of the Swedish word rothsmenn, rowers or seafarers. They are Scandinavian

1 See the Statistical Sbornik of the Ministry of Roads and Commu- nications, vols. viii., ix., and x. (roads, canals, railways, and traffie thereon, with maps and graphic representation of traffic); Golovatchoff, “Russian Railways,” in Bezobrazoff’s Sbornik Gosudarstvennykh Znaniy, vols. iv., v., vii, viii.; Rybakoff and Bieloff, Our Ways of Communication, 1884; Tehuproff, Tovarnyie Sklady, &e. (trade in corn), 1884.

2 See Postal Statistics for 1883 (St Petersburg, Russkiy Kalendar.

1885), and the

Be a 87

vikings with whom we first become acquainted in northern Russia, and who in a way founded the empire, although from Arabian and Jewish writers we have dim records of a Slavonic race inhabiting the basin of the Dnieper about the close of the 9th century. In recent times Hovaiski and Gedeonoff

have again attacked the view of the Swedish origin of the invaders. They see in them only Slavs, but they are not considered to have shaken the theory which derives the name from Ruotsi. As the story goes, threc brothers, Rurik, Sineus, and Truvor, were invited to Russia from the north and settled at Novgorod in 862. Nestor calls them Varangians, a name in which most people are willing to see Norsemen. Fora long time the Russians and Scandinavians are considered, as we shall find, to be separate races, but at length they are fuscd, as the Saxons and Normans in England under Henry I. Concerning the origin of the town of Novgorod, which bears a purely Slavonic name, nothing is known; it has been supposed that at first a Finnish settlement existed on its site. According to the legend the three brothers were invited over by a leading citizen named Gostomisl. There is, however, no mention of such a person in the Chronicle of Nestor. There is another story that Rurik was the son of the Swedish king, Ludbrat, a person met with in Scandinavian legend, and his queen Umila, the daughter of Gostomisl, and was born at Upsala in 830. Whatever the variants of the legend may be, we seem to learn one thing,—that a successful Scandinavian invasion occurred in the north of Russia. The three brothers finally settled in the country,—Rurik at Ladoga, where the river Volkhoff flows into the lake, Sineus at Bielo-ozero, and Truvor at Izborsk on Lake Peipus. On the death of his two brothers without heirs, we are told that Runk annexed their dominions to his own, and took the title of veliki kniaz, or grand-prince. These three brothers are said to have brought two other adventurers with them, Askold and Dir, who, having had a quarrel with Rurik, set out with some companions to Constantinople to try their fortune. On their way they saw Kieff, situated on a rich and grassy plain, in the occupation of the Khazars. Of this city they made themselves masters, and permanently established themselves on the Dnieper. The origin of Kieff itself is involved in mystery. It is first mentioned about the 9th century. Constantine Porphyrogenitus speaks of 13 Kaotpov Td KuodBa 7d érovopalopevov SapBaras. This last word has given much labour to scholars ; some are disposed to see in it the Norse sandbakhi, the bank of sand. It is at Kieff that, according to the legend, St Andrew preached the gospel to the Russians. From this place Askold and Dir sallied forth two years afterwards, with an armament of two hundred vessels, sailed up the Bosphorus, and plundered the capital of the Byzantine empire. The Greek writers give 851 as the date of this enter- prise, thus making it precede the

arrival of Rurik by eleven years. The emperor at the time of their invasion was Michael TIT.

Having greatly extended his dominions by subduing the surrounding Slavonic tribes, Rurik died at an advanced age in 879, leaving the regency of the principality and the guardianship of his son Igor to the renowned Oleg? This chief subdued Smolensk, a city of the Krivitchi, in 882. Allured by its wealth and advantageous situation, Oleg now resolved to attempt Kieff, which was held by Askold and Dir. The story goes that he took young Igor with him, and disguised himsclf and his companions as Slavonic merchants. The unsuspecting Askold and Dir were invited to a conference and slain on the spot. Thus was Kieff added to the dominions of Igor, who was recognized as the

3 Both these names are Scandinavian, the original forms being Ingvar and Helgi.

Rurik and his brothers.

Igor and Oleg.

Jord of the town.1 In 903 Oleg chose a wife for Igor, named Olga,' said to have been a native of Pskoff, the origin of which place, now mentioned for the first time, is unknown. We are told that it was a city of importance before the arrival of Rurik. The derivation of the name is disputed, some deriving it from a Finnish, others from a Slavonic root. Oleg next resolved to make an attack upon Byzantium, and his preparations were great both by sea and land. Leo the Philosopher, then emperor, was ill able to resist these barbarians. He attempted to block the passage of the Bosphorus, but Oleg dragged his ships across the land and arrived before the gates of Constantinople. The Greeks begged for peace and offered tribute. Oleg is said to have hung his shield in derision on the gates of the city. We may believe this without going so far as to give credence to Stryikowski, the Polish writer, who says it was to be seen there in his time (16th century). The atrocities committed by Oleg and his followers are described by Karamzin, the Russian historian; they are just such as the other Norsemen

of their race were committing at the same time in northern and western Europe. ‘The Byzantines paid a large sum of money that their city might be exempted from injury, and soon after Oleg sent ambassadors 3 to the emperor to arrange the terms. The treaty was ratified by oaths: the Byzantines swore by the Gospels, and the Russians by their gods Perun and Volos. In 911 Oleg made another treaty with the Byzantines, the terms of which, as of the preceding one, are preserved in Nestor. The authenticity of these two treaties has been called in question by some writers, but Miklosich truly observes that it would have been impossible at the time Nestor wrote to forge the Scandinavian names. Soon after this Oleg died ; he had exercised supreme power till the time of his death to the exclusion of Igor, and seems to have been regarded by the people as a wizard. He is said to have been killed by the bite of a serpent, which had coiled itself in the skull of his horse, as he was gazing at the animal’s unburied bones. The story is in reality a Scandinavian saga, as has been shown by Bielowski and Rafn. It is also found in other countries. In the reign of Igor the Petchenegs first make their appearance in Russian history. In 941 he undertook an expedition against Constantinople and entered the Bosphorus after devastating the provinces of Pontus, Paphlagonia, and Bithynia. Nestor has not concealed the atrocities com- mitted by the Russians on this occasion ; he tells us of the churches and monasteries which they burned, and of their cruelty to the captives. They were, however, attacked by the Byzantine fleet, and overpowered by the aid of Greek fire ; many were drowned, and many of those who swam to land were slaughtered by the infuriated peasants ; only one of their number escaped. Thirsting to avenge his loss, Igor fitted out another expedition in the spring of the following year. The Greeks were unwilling to run arisk again; they renewed the treaty which had been signed with Oleg, and were only too glad to purchase deliverance from their adversaries. The Russian at first demanded too much, but was finally persuaded by his more prudent attendants: “If Cesar speaks thus,” said they, ‘““what more do we want than to have gold and silver and silks without fighting? Who knows which will

survive, we or they? Who has ever been able to conclude |

a treaty with the sea? We do not go on the dry land, but on the waves of the sea; death is common to all.”

1 This story is considered by the historian Bestuzheff Riumin to be a mere legend invented to explain the connexion between Novgorod and Kieff.

2 Here again we have a Norse name. which in its older form is Holga.

3 It has been observed that the names of the ambassadors in this treaty are purely Scandinavian.

Olga is equivalent to Helga,

RUS Ss i“

|

[WIsToRy,

A treaty of peace was accordingly concluded, which js given at full length by Nestor ; of the fifty names attached to it we find three were Slavonic and the rest N orse. The two races are beginning to be fused. From this expedi- tion Igor returned triumphant. He was, however, unfor- tunate in a subsequent attack on the Drevlians, a Slavonic tribe whose territory is now partly occupied by the government of Tchernigoff. The Drevlians had long suffered from his exactions. They resolved to encounter him under the command of their prince Male ; for they saw, as a chronicler says, that it was necessary to kill the wolf, or the whole flock would become his prey. They accordingly laid an ambuscade near their town Korosten, now called Iskorost, in the government of Volhynia, and slew him and all his company. According to Leo the Deacon, he was tied to two trees bent together, and when they were let go the unhappy chief was torn to pieces,

Igor was succeeded by his son Sviatoslaff, Russian prince with a Slavonic name. Olga, however, the spirited wife of Igor, was now regent, owing to her son’s minority. Fearful was the punishment she inflicted upon the Drevlians for the death of her husband, and the story lacks no dramatic interest as it has been handed down by the old chronicler. Some of the Drevlians were buried alive in pits which she had caused to be dug for the purpose previously ; some were burned alive ; and others murdered at a trizna, or funeral feast, which she had appointed to be held in her husband’s

honour. The town Iskorost was afterwards set on fire by tying lighted matches to the tails of sparrows and pigeons, and letting them fly on the roofs of the houses. Here we certainly have a piece of a bélina, as the old Russian legendary poems are called. Geoffrey of Monmouth and Layamon give the same account of the capture of the city of Cirencester by Gurmund at the head of the Saxons, and something similar is also told about Harold Hardrada in Sicily. Finally, at the close of her life, Olga became a Christian. She herself visited the capital of the Greek empire, and was instructed in the mysteries of her new faith by the patriarch. There she was baptized by him in 955, and the emperor Constantine Porphyrogenitus became her god-father. She did not, however, succeed in persuading her

son Sviatoslaff to embrace the same faith, although he Sviato- took no measures to impede its progress among his gub-Slafl.

jects. This son was as celebrated a warrior as Oleg ; his victories were chiefly over the Petchenegs previously men- tioned, a people of Mongol origin inhabiting the basin of the Don. He began, however, the fatal custom of break- ing up Russia into apanages, which he distributed among his sons. The effects of this injudicious policy, subse- quently pursued by other grand princes, were soon felt. Thus was paved the way for the invasion of Russia by the Mongols, who held it for two hundred years, and com- municated that semi-Asiatic character to the dress and customs of the country which the ukazes of Peter the Great could hardly eradicate, and which perhaps have not entirely disappeared even in our own times. In his division of the country, Sviatoslaff gave Kieff to his son Yaropolk ; to another son, Oleg, the conquered land of the Drevlians ; to another, Vladimir, he assigned Novgorod.

| It would be impossible to interest the reader in the petty

wars of these princes. After having gained several victories over the Petchenegs, Sviatoslaff set out on an expedition against the Bulgarians, a Ugro-Finnish tribe, dwelling on the banks of the Volga, the remains of whose ancient capital can still be seen. He made himself master of their country, but his victorious career was cut short at the cataracts of the Dnieper, where he and his soldiers were slain by the Petchenegs. According to the barbarous custom of the times, their prince Kurya made his skull

the first Regency

iis |

. Russia, so Yaroslaff his son was the first legislator.

‘ of heroic men, for the second division of our subject.

903-1174.]

. into a drinking-cup. Vladimir, the son of Sviatoslafi, was

for some time a monster of cruelty and debauchery. He killed his brother Yaropolk, and seized his dominions ; and, Yaropolk having some time before murdered his brother Oleg, Vladimir now became sole ruler. To his hereditary dominions he added Galicia or Red Russia, and subjugated some Lithuanian and Livonian tribes. Suddenly he seems to have been troubled with religious difficulties. Accord- ing to the chronicler, he sent ambassadors to bring him reports of the different religions—Catholic, Jewish, Mus- sulman, and Greek. The last of these beliefs seemed the most satisfactory. Vladimir marched south, took the city of Chersonesus in the Crimea, which at that time belonged to the Byzantine emperors, and then sent to demand the hand of the daughter of that potentate. After some deliberation his request was granted on condition that he was baptized. Accordingly he went to Constantinople in 988, and was admitted into the church, and at the same time received the hand of Anne, the Byzantine princess, although he seems to have already had a great number of wives. On his return to Kieff, he caused the image of Perun, the Slavonic god of thunder, which had been erected on an eminence, to be cast into the river, after having been belaboured by the cudgels of his soldiers. After this Vladimir issued a proclamation ordering all the inhabitants to proceed on the following day to the banks of the river to receive baptism. This extraordinary com- mand met with universal obedience, and Russia was Christianized. As Vladimir introduced Christianity into He was prince of Novgorod, aud died in 1054. Vladimir on his death divided his dominions among his sons :—to Yaroslaff, Novgorod; to Iziaslaff, Polotsk ; to Boris, Rostoff ; to Gleb, Murom ; to Sviatoslaff, the Drevlians ; and a few other provinces to others of his sons. Kieff, his capital, was seized by his nephew

Sviatopolk, who murdered Boris and Gleb, now canonized among the martyrs of the Russian Church. Yaroslaff at length drove Sviatopolk from Kieff, and was temporarily restored by the Poles, but only to be driven out again, and he ended his life as an exile. Yaroslaff was successful against the Petchenegs, but failed in an attack on Constantinople. His great claim to be remembered lies in his publishing the first recension of the Russkaia Pravda, the earliest Russian code, which was handed down in the chronicles of Novgorod.

We now leave the earliest period of Russian history, with its romantic stories and embedded sagas, telling us The death of Yaroslaff was followed by the dreariest portion of the Russian annals—the period of the apanages (wdvel?), lasting from 1054 to 1238. The country was now broken up into petty principalities, and we shall understand its condition more clearly if we remember that the chief divisions of Russia from the 11th century to the 13th were as follows! :—

(1) The principality of Smolensk, formerly of great importance, as including in its territories the sources of three of the great Russian rivers—the Volga, the Dnieper, and the Diina.

(2) The principality of Russia, in the carly and restricted scnse, the original element of the country. The first form of the name is Rous. The word appears to have been a collective appellation of the people ; it was under the influcnce of the Byzantine writers that in the 17th century the form Rossia sprang up, which in time spread over the whole land. We must not forget, however, that to the majority of Englishmen, till the beginning of the 18th cen- tury, its name was Muscovy. Itssitnation on the Dniepcr was very advantageous; and the soil was fertile, the black-carth region being at the prescnt time the great wheat-growing district of Russia. Besides, the Byzantine territory was not far off. On the princi- pality of Kieff depended that of Pereiaslavl ; and Vishgorod, Biel-

gorod, and Tortchesk were made apanages for princes of the same dynasty.

1See Rambaud, Histoire de la Russie, p. 76.

mee > t A

(3) On the affluents of the right bank of the Dnieper, especially the Sozha, the Desna, and the Seim, stretched the principalities of Tchernigoff with Starodub and Lubech, and Novgorod Severski with Putivl, Kursk, and Briansk.

(4) The double principality of Ryazan and Murom.

(5) The principality of Suzdal.

(6) The republics of Novgorod and Pskoff, and the daughter-city of the latter, Vyatka.

Tziaslaff, the son of Yaroslaff, seems to have had a troubled reign of twenty-four years, constantly disturbed by civil wars. On his death in 1078, although he had two sons, he left the principality of Kieff to his brother Vsevolod, apparently on a principle common among the Slavs to bequeath the crown to the oldest male of the family; but, on the death of Vsevolod, Sviatopolk, the son of Iziaslaff, succeeded in 1093. At his deatli Vladimir Monomakh came to the throne, and ruled from 1113 +0 1125. He was the son of Vsevolod, and was called after his maternal grandfather, the Byzantine emperor Constantine Monomachus. The reign of this prince was a very prosperous one. He left a curious treatise called ‘Instruction ” (Pouchenie), addressed to his sons, in which we get a picture of the simple life in Russia at that period (see below, p. 103). He also founded on the river Kliazma a town which bears his name. There were con- tinual quarrels among his descendants, but it is impossible to go into these minutely here. George Dolgoruki, one of the sons of Vladimir Monomakh, gained possession of Kieff in 1157, but the city soon began to pale before the growing power of Suzdal, and ceased to be the capital. He died the same year, just while a league was being formed to drive him out of it. The confederates entered the city, and their chief made himself prince. In 1169 Andrew Bogolioubski, son of George Dolgoruki, formed a coali- tion against Mstislaff, who was reigning in Kieff, and a large army was sent against the city. It was taken and pillaged; and the sacred pictures, sacerdotal ornaments, and even bells were carried off. It is on this occasion

that the head of St Clement, the Slavonic apostle, which is known to have been preserved at Kieff, was lost.

After the fall of this city Russia ceased for some time to have any political centre. During the fifty-four years previous to the arrival of the Mongols, our chief interest is drawn to Suzdal and Galicia, and the republics of Novgorod and Pskoff. George Dolgoruki had founded the principality of Suzdal; his great anxiety, however, was to make himself master of Kieff. The chief aim of his son Andrew Bogoliubski was to extend his authority in another direction, and to cause it to be recognized at Novgorod the Great, where he had established his nephew as a kind of lieutenant. He attacked the city in 1170, but was completely repulsed from its walls, a panic having seized his army. The Novgorodians put to death many of their prisoners, and sold others as slaves, so that, to quote the words of their chronicler, ‘six Suzdalians could be bought for a grivna,” an old piece of money. In 1173 Andrew was also defeated by Mstislaff the Brave at Smolensk, and in 1174 he was assassinated by his own nobles. The reign of Andrew was in all respects an im- portant one. From his refusing to divide his dominions among his brothers and nephews, it is plain that he saw the evil effect of the system of apanages and could conceive the idea of a united state. He was a man of iron will, and an astute diplomatist rather than a great soldier. He thus had something of the spirit of the Ivans, and anticipated their policy. He may be said with truth to have been the last of the conspicuous rulers of Russia before the Mongol invasions. As yet we have had but few worthy of the attention of the historian. They are Rurik, the founder of the empire, Oleg the warrior, and Olga the

first Christian sovereign. ‘To these succeed the warlike Pe 2

The Mongol supre- macy.

Sviatoslaff, slain by the Petchenegs; Vladimir, who caused the country to be Christianized; and Yaroslaff his son, the legislator. During the second period, in which we find Russia weakened and divided into apanages, we have only two noteworthy princes among a score of unimportant persons,—Vladimir Monomakh and Andrew.

The death of Andrew, whose murderers were not brought to justice, was followed by many petty wars. The only event, however, of any importance for a con- siderable time is the battle of Lipetsk (near Pereiaslavl Zaliesski) in 1215, in which George, son of Vsevolod, brother of Andrew, was defeated by the combined troops of Novgorod, Pskoff, and Smolensk. In 1220 we hear of Nijni-Novgorod being founded. A prince of consider- able importance was Roman of Volhynia, to whom the inhabitants of Galicia offered the government of their principality, but he was superseded by another Vladimir, and did not get the crown till after a great deal of hard fighting. He is said by Kadlubek, the Polish historian, to have acted with ferocious cruelty. In 1205 he was killed in a battle with the Poles. In 1224 we have the first invasion of Russia by the Mongols. Daniel of Galicia was one of the last of the Russian princes to make his submission to Batu (1238). He died in 1264. In the 14th century the principality of Galicia was lost in the Polish republic, having been annexed to Lithuania. It joined the fortunes of that state in its union with Poland at the time of the marriage of Jagictto with Jadwiga.

We now come to the third division of our subject— tussia under the yoke of the Mongols, viz., from 1238 to 1462. This is indeed a dreary period, in which the political and material development of the country was delayed by its complete enslavement. The first occasion on which the Russians came into contact with their Mongolian invaders was in 1224, when, in company with their allies, the Polovtzes, they suffered a complete defeat on the banks of the Kalka, near where it flows into the sea of Azoff, and adjoining the site of the present town of Mariupol. On this occasion, however, the Mongols only marched a little way up the river Dnieper, and retired after devastating the country. In 1238 they reappeared, and after destroying Bolgari, the capital of the Finnish Bulgarians on the Volga, advanced against Ryazan, which was plundered and burned, with adjoining cities. They then defeated the army of Suzdal, at. Kolomna, on the Oka; after which they burned Moscow, Suzdal, Yaroslavl, and other important towns. The grand- duke Yuri of Suzdal had encamped on the river Sit, almost on the frontiers of the territory of Novgorod. He was there defeated and was decapitated on the field of battle, while his nephew Vasilko had his throat cut for refusing to serve Batu. After taking Tver and advancing within fifty leagues of Novgorod, the Mongols turned south and occupied the two

following years (1239-1240) in ravaging southern Russia. They then burned Pereiaslavl and Tchernigoff, and Mangu, the grandson of Jenghiz Khan, directed his march against Kieff. The noise of the great host proceeding to the capture of the fated city is graphic- ally described by the chronicler. The city was taken and given up to pillage, not even the graves being respected. Volhynia and Galicia followed the fate of the other prin- cipalities, and all Russia was now under the yoke of the Mongols, except the territory of Novgorod.

The subsequent movements of these barbarians in Hungary and Moravia cannot be described here. It will suffice to say that soon afterwards Batu turned eastwards. He next founded on the Volga the city of Sarai (the Palace), which became the capital of the powerful Mon- golian empire, the Golden Horde. Here also congregated the remains of the Petchenegs, the Polovtzes, and other

tribes, and to these barbarians Russia was for a long time tributary. In 1272 the Mongolian hordes embraced Islam. Yaroslaff, who entered into his territory of Suzda] after the death of his brother Yuri, found his hereditary domains completely devastated. He had commenced re. building the ruined town, when he was summoned by Batu to do him homage in his new capital of Sarai. This, however, was not considered sufficient, and the poor prince was obliged to betake himself to the court of the great khan, which was at the further end of Asia, on the banks of the river Amur. His title was confirmed, but on his return he died of the fatigues of the journey. He was succeeded in Suzdal by his son Andrew (1246-1252), His other son Alexander reigned at Novgorod the Great, and gained the surname of Nevski from his celebrated victory over the Swedes in 1240. He and Dmitri Donskoi are the only great figures of this period of national abase- ment. Alexander Nevski has become consecrated in the memories of the people, and is now one of the leading Russian saints. In spite, however, of his services to the people of Novgorod, he afterwards quarrelled with them and retired to Pereiaslavl Zaliesski. But the citizens were soon glad to betake themselves to his help. On being invaded by the German Sword-bearing

Knights, who had established themselves in Livonia in the year 1201, and an army of Finns, Alexander was summoned, like another Camillus, and defeated the enemy on Lake Peipus in what was called the “Battle of the Ice” in 1242. He entered Novgorod in triumph with his prisoners. In spite of all this brilliant success, Alexander was unable to resist the power of the Golden Horde, and was obliged to go to Sarai to do homage to the khan. He was accompanied by his brother Andrew. The ceremony was always attended by many degrading acts of submission on the part of the tributary prince. In 1260 the Novgorodians, who had so long preserved the liberty of their republic uninjured, consented to submit to the khan and pay tribute ; Alexander died before reaching Vladimir on his return from one of these humiliating journeys. A great part of western Russia was now consolidated by the Lithuanian princes into a state, the capital of which was Vilna and the language White Russian. To this many of the western provinces of Russia gravitated, and by the marriage of the Polish heiress Jadwiga with Jagietto of Lithuania these provinces went to Poland and were not reannexed to Russia till a much later period. The eastern portion of Russia grouped itself round Moscow, which is first heard of in the chronicles in 1147. We find four con- siderable eastern states—Ryazan, Suzdal, Tver, and Moscow. For a century after its foundation we hear nothing of this city, the name of which is certainly Finnish. We are told that it was burned by the Mongols in 1237, and thata brother of Alexander Nevski was killed there in 1248, in a battle against the Lithuanians. We have seen that the political centre of the country has constantly changed. From Novgorod it went to Kieff, from Kieff to Vladimir, the capital of Suzdal, and from Vladimir to Moscow; we shall soon find that owing to the vigorous policy of its rulers this principality became the nucleus of the great Russian empire, and gathered round it the adjacent states Its true founder was Daniel, a son of Alexander Nevski, who added to it the cities of Pereiaslav! Zaliesski and Kolomna. At his death in 1303 he was the first. to be buried in the church of St Michael the Archangel, where all the Russian sovereigns were laid till the days of Peter the Great. Since that time, with the exception of Peter IL, they have been interred in the church of the Petro- pavlovski fortress at St Petersburg. Daniel was followed on the throne by his sons Yuri and Ivan in succession. Yuri Danilovich (1303-1326) took possession of Mozhaisk. The

yeign of Ivan Kalita, or the Purse (1328-1340), still | further strengthened the new principality. Tver was ‘ added, and the pre-eminence of Moscow was assured by the metropolitan coming to reside there. After Kalita came in succession his two sons, Simeon the Proud (1340- 1353) and Ivan IL. (1353-1359). Simeon first took the title of grand-duke of all the Russias. He died of the Black Death, which was then devastating Europe. In spite of the efforts of these princes to maintain the supremacy of Moscow, on their death the hegemony of the Russian states went again for a time to Suzdal. It was Dmitri, surnamed Donskoi, the son of Ivan II., who won the battle of Kulikovo (lit. “the field of woodcocks ”) over Mamai, the Mongolian chief, in 1380. In spite of this, however, Toktamish their general invaded Russia, burned Moscow to the ground, and put to death a great number of the inhabitants. To Dmitri succeeded his son Vasilii or Basil (1889-1425), who was prince both of Moscow and Viadimir. He in turn was followed by Vasilii the Blind (1425-1462).

We begin to touch firmer ground when we approach the reign of Ivan III, the son of Vasilii, who may be con- sidered the founder of the autocracy. We may take, there- fore, as our fourth division the period from 1462 to 1613, which will include the consolidation of the empire under the vigorous rule of Ivan IIL, Basil V., and Ivan IV., the usurpation of Boris Godunoff, the reign of the false Demetrius, and the troubles following upon it till the accession of the house of Romanoff in the person of Michael in the year 1613. Ivan IIL reigned forty-three years, and had as much influence in the consolidation of Russia as Louis XJ. had in that of France. It was the great age when throughout Europe absolute monarchies were being created on the ruins of feudalism. On his accession Tvan found himself surrounded by powerful neighbours—to the east the great principality of Lithuania, to the south the Mongols; Ryazan and Tver had not been annexed to the territory of Muscovy ; Novgorod and Pskoff were still republics. It was against Novgorod, a wealthy city and a member of the Hanseatic league, that his efforts were first directed. In consequence of its situation, and by its paying the tribute demanded, it had escaped from the ravages which other parts of Russia had under- gone. Taking advantage of the factions which harassed this city, he succeeded in creating a party subservient to his own interests, and as early as 1470 had got the con- trol of the government of the city, which a rival faction was anxious to transfer to the Poles. In 1478 the

republic of Novgorod ceased to exist ; the chief opponents of Ivan were transported to Moscow, and their goods confiscated. The veche, as the public assembly was called, was terminated for ever, and the bell which had summoned the mutinous citizens carried off triumphantly to Moscow. In 1495 the tyrant was so foolish as to confiscate the goods of many of the German merchants who traded at Novgorod. In consequence of this nearly all the foreigners left the city, and its prosperity rapidly declined. It is now a decayed provincial town, interesting only to the antiquary. In 1489 Vyatka, a daughter city of Pskoff, was annexed and lost thereby its republican constitution. In 1464 by giving the hand of his sister to the prince of Ryazan Ivan made sure of the proximate annexation of that apanage. He seized Tver and joined it to his dominions, when the grand-prince Michael had allied him- self with Lithuania. The system of apanages in Russia had now to come to an end. But Ivan, who had married the niece of the Byzantine emperor, and assumed as his cognizance the two-headed eagle, was also to come into col- lision with the hereditary enemies of Russia, the Mongols.

nm US ot 2

The great power of the Golden Horde had been broken up;_

on its ruins had arisen the empires of Kazan and of Sarai or Astrakhan, the horde of the Nogais, and the khanate of the Crimea. In 1478, when Ahmed, the khan of the Great Horde, whose capital was Sarai, sent his ambassadors with his portrait, to which the Russian was to do homage, Ivan trampled it under foot, and put to death all the envoys, except one, who was deputed to take back the news to the khan. The reply of Ahmed to this outrage was a declara- tion of war; and the two armies met on the banks of the Oka. Ivan, who, like Louis XL, was much more of a dip- lomatist than a soldier, according to the accounts of the chroniclers, was in great terror, and could not be induced to fight by the persuasions of his soldiers or the benedictions of his ecclesiastics. He had already, after the armies had been for some time encamped opposite to each other, given the signal of retreat, when, in consequence of a sudden panic the Mongols also retreated, and the armies fled from each other in mutual fear. This invasion, which occurred in the year 1480, was the last great inroad of the Asiatic enemies of Russia, but

we shall find some even later than the days of Ivan the Terrible, in whose time Moscow was burned by these barbarians. Meanwhile Ivan went on in his career of annexation. In 1472 he conquered Permia, in 1489 Vyatka. ‘Ten years afterwards he had extended his authority as far north as the Petchora. His good fortune seemed ever on the increase; by a war with Alexander, king of Poland, he gained an accession of territory to the west as far as the river Desna. Upon peace being concluded, Alexander married Helen, the daughter of Ivan, but that monarch, on pretence that no regard had been paid to his daughter’s religious scruples, declared war against his new son-in-law. The Polish monarch could not rely upon the fidelity of many of his vassals, as we find so often the case in Polish history, and suffered a complete defeat at the battle of the Vedrosha. On the other hand, in 1501 the Russians were routed at the battle of the Siritza, near Isborsk, by the grand-master of the Teutonic order, Hermann von Plettenberg. The order had been established in Lithuania as early as 1225; the Sword-bearers amalgamated with them in 1237.

In 1472 Ivan had married a Byzantine princess, Sophia, daughter of Thomas, brother of the emperor Constantine Paleologus. This Thomas had fied to Rome after the fall of Constantinople in 1453. In consequence of this mar- riage, a great many Greeks came to Moscow, bringing Byzantine culture, such as it was, to Russia, and among other things a quantity of valuable manuscripts, which formed the nucleus of the synodal library. Italians also made their appearance in Russia, among others the cele- brated Aristotle Fioraventi of Bologna, the architect of so many buildings at Moscow. Ivan not only welcomed foreigners in his dominions, but entered into relations with many European powers, among others the Germans, the Venetians, and the Pope. His reign is remarkable, not only for the consolidation of the Russian autocracy, but also for legislation. In 1497 he issued his Sudebnik, or Book of Laws, the second Russian code after the Russkaia Pravda of Yaroslaff. Comparison of the two codes will show how much had been done by the Mongols to lower the Russian character. It is in the reign of Ivan that we first hear of the use of the knout: an archimandrite and some noblemen were publicly knouted for being concerned in forging a will. throne to his second son Vasilii or Basil, passing over his grandson, the child of his eldest son Ivan, who had pre- deceased him; he was evidently unwilling to commit his growing empire to the perils of a minority. Vasilii

Ivan- ovich (1505-1533) fully carried out the programme of his father. He destroyed the independence of Pskoff in 1510, put an end to the veche or popular assembly, and carried

At his death Ivan bequeathed his Basil.

Ivan IV. (the Terrible),

off the bell which summoned the citizens. Thus fell the last of the Slavonic republics. Ryazan was next added to the Muscovite territory. The prince, being accused of having contracted an alliance with the khan of the Crimea, fled to Lithuania, where he died in obscurity. Nov- gorod Severski was annexed soon after, and by a war with Sigismund J. Basil got back Smolensk. He was doomed, however, to suffer from an invasion of the Mongols of the Crimea, and is said to have signed a humiliating treaty to save his capital, whereby he acknowledged himself the tributary of the khan. ;

Meanwhile at home Basil exercised absolute authority ; Russia now exhibited the spectacle of an Asiatic despotism. He entered into negotiations with many foreign princes. Herberstein, the German ambassador, who has left us such an interesting account of the Russia of this time, has told us of the great splendour of his court. We now come to the reign of the terrible Ivan, who has left his name written in blood upon the annals of Russia, and ruled for the long period of fifty-one years (1533-1584). It was a fortunate thing for the aggrandizement of the empire that, instead of having a succession of weak sovereigns, who only ruled a short time, it had three such vigorous potentates as Ivan ITI., Basil, and Ivan IV., whose united reigns extended over a hundred and twenty-two years, The grand-duke Basil at his death left two sons, Ivan and Yuri, under the guardianship of his second wife Helen Glinska. She had come into Russia from Lithuania, her family having been proscribed by the Polish king Alexander on the accusation of having plotted against his life. The grand-duchess ruled with great ability, but died in 1538, having been, as is supposed, poisoned. The two young princes then became the victims of the intrigues of the chief families, especially those of Shuiski and Belski. Ivan

early gave proof of a vigorous understanding, whereas his younger brother Yuri appears to have been half-witted. In 1543, when only in his thirteenth year, Ivan determined to emancipate himself from the galling yoke of the boiars, and by a kind of coup détat threw off their tutelage, and caused Shuiski to be torn to pieces by dogs. After this, for some time, he was under the influence of his maternal relations. In January 1547 Ivan was crowned by the metropolitan Macarius, and took the title of czar, or tsar, a Slavonic form of the Latin Cesar. He soon afterwards celebrated his marriage with Anastasia Romanova. The same year a great conflagration took place at Moscow. The mob affected to believe that this had been caused by the Glinskis, who were very unpopular, and massacred a member of that family.

After this time Ivan seems to have committed himself very much to the guidance of the priest Silvester and Alexis Adasheff. This was the happiest portion of his reign, for he was also greatly under the influence of his amiable wife. To this period also belongs a recension of the Sudebnik of his grandfather Ivan IIT. (1550), and the Stoglaf, or Book of the Hundred Chapters, by Which the affairs of the church were regulated (1551). In the following year Ivan became master of Kazan, and two years later of Astrakhan. The power of the Mongols was now almost broken. ‘Triumphant in the south and the east, he then turned his attention to the north, being anxious to open up a means of communication with the west. He anticipated the plans which Peter the Great was destined to carry out long afterwards. He was thus brought into collision with the Swedes and the Teutonic Knights. When Ivan sent a German named Schlitt to procure the assistance of some foreign artisans, they were stopped by the Germans and prevented from entering Russian territory. In consequence of this, war afterwards broke out between Ivan and the Order. In 1558 the

Russian army invaded Livonia, and took several towns, whereupon the Order made an alliance with Sigismund Augustus of Poland. But, while Russia was busy with this war, a great change was taking place in the home policy of Ivan. He threw off the influence of Silvester and Adasheff, who were both banished. From this time may be said to date the commencement

of the atrocities of this czar which have earned him the epithet constantly added to his name. He was especially moved by the treason of Prince Andrew Kurbski, who, having lost a battle with the Poles, was too much afraid of the wrath of his imperial master to venture again into his clutches He accordingly fled to the king of Poland, by whom he was well received, and from his safe retreat he commenced an angry correspondence with the czar, reproaching him with his cruelties (see below, p. 104). The answer of Ivan has been preserved. In it he dwells upon the degrad- ing subjection in which he had been kept by his early advisers, and attempts to justify his cruelties by saying that they were only his slaves whom he had killed, over whom God had given him power of life and death.

In December 1564 Ivan retired with a few personal friends to his retreat at Alexandrovskoe, near Moscow, where he passed his time pretty much as Louis XI. did at Plessy-les-Tours, for he resembled the French monarch both in his cruelty and his superstition. The boiars, afraid that the monarch was about to quit them for ever, went in crowds to Alexandrovskoe to supplicate him to return to Moscow. This he finally consented to do, and on his return established his bodyguard of oprichniks, who were the chief agents of his cruelty. In the year in which he retired to Alexandrovskoe we have the establish- ment of a printing-press at Moscow. Ivan now commenced a long series of cruelties. To this period belong the deposi- tion and perhaps murder of Philip, the archbishop of Mos- cow ; the execution of Alexandra, the widow of his brother Yuri; the atrocities committed at Novgorod, which seems to have fallen under the tyrant’s vengeance for having meditated opening its gates to the king of Poland; and, lastly, the terrible butcheries on the Red Square (Krasnaia Plostchad).

It was in the reign of Ivan that the English first had dealings with Russia. In 1553, while Edward VI. was on the throne, three ships were sent out under Willoughby and Chancellor to look for a north-east passage to China and India. Willoughby and the crews of two of the ships were frozen to death, but Chancellor arrived safely in the White Sea, and thence proceeded to the court of Ivan, by whom he was favourably received. The English secured great trading privileges from Ivan, and established fac- tories in the country. In one of his mad sallies, Ivan actually wrote to Queen Elizabeth (1570)

asking for a safe retreat in her dominions if he should be driven out by his own subjects.

Ivan was continually waging war in the Baltic territory with the Teutonic Knights, in which, although on the whole unsuccessful, he committed great cruelties. But in 1571 he was obliged to suffer another invasion of the Mongols of the Crimea, who, to quote the quaint language of an English resident, burned “the Mosco every stick” (Hakluyt’s Voyages, i. 402). On the death of Sigismund Augustus of Poland in 1572, when the crown of that country had become elective, the family of the Jagiettos being now extinct, Ivan declared himself one of the com- petitors. The successful candidate was the French prince Henry of Valois, but he soon fled from his new kingdom, and, on the throne again becoming vacant, the redoubtable Stephen Batory was chosen, who proved a formidable foe to the tyrant now growing old. In consequence of the successes of Stephen, Ivan was obliged to abandon all his

id

1533-1598. |

~ conquests in Livonia ; and the attempt to open up a

passage for Russia into the Baltic failed till carried out by the efforts of Peter the Great.

One of the chief events of this reign was the conquest of Siberia by a Cossack named Yermak, who had formerly been a robber, but was pardoned by the czar on laying his conquests at the imperial feet. Among many points in which Tvan resembled Henry VIII. was the number of his wives. On the death of the seventh, he was anxious to procure an eighth from the court of his friend Elizabeth of Eng- land, and the daughter of the Earl of Huntingdon was offered to the inspection of the Russian ambassador, Feodor Pisemski, at her own desire and the queen’s. She was presented to him in the gardens of York House. The ambassador prostrated himself before her, and pro- fessed to be dazzled by her beauty. Before, however, the negotiations for the marriage were concluded, the young lady, of whom a very favourable account had been trans- initted to the court of Moscow,

became alarmed. Rumours had reached her about the former wives of the czar and his habits. She therefore declined the brilliant prospect of an alliance associated with so many dangers. Full details of the adventures of the Englishmen who resided at Tvan's court will be found in Hakluyt's Voyages. In 1567 Anthony Jenkinson was commissioned by the czar to convey a special message to Queen Elizabeth, "that the Queen's Majestie and he might be to all their enemyes joyned as one, and that England and Russland might be 'nall manners asone." In fact Ivan wanted the assistance of the English in his wars against the Swedes and the Poles; he could appreciate the superiority of their weapons and military tactics ; but Elizabeth only cared to secure a monopoly of trade, which the English for a long time enjoyed, and, according to the historian Ustrialoff, the Russians were but little benefited by it.

The declining days of Ivan were embittered by the death of his eldest son, whom he had stricken in a fit of passion with his iron staff. When the paroxysm of his anger was over, his grief was boundless. Full of remorse and continually afraid of conspiracies which might be concocted by his subjects, and harassed by superstitious dread, in which he betook himself to the divination of witches,! he expired in the year 1584. .

Ivan was succeeded by his eldest surviving son Feodor (Theodore), at that time twenty-seven years ofage. He was feeble both in mind and body, and very superstitious. Fletcher calls him "very simple, and almost a natural," and Solomon Henning, author of a Chronicle of Lwwonia, says that he was so weak-minded that he could find no greater amusement than tolling the church bells before service. In consequence, the chief power in the empire fell into the hands of Boris Godunoff,? the brother-in-law of Feodor, a man of boundless ambition and great capacity. His inordinate lust of rule he concealed under the guise of piety; his commanding presence extorted respect wherever he went. Between him and the throne were only the sickly Feodor and his brother Dmitri, still a child, who had been previously removed to the town of Uglich in the government of Yaroslavl. For a while Boris had nourished the idea of proclaiming Dmitri illegitimate, on the ground that he was the son of Ivan's seventh wife, a marriage forbidden by the canons of the church. Finally, as there seems every reason to believe, he caused the child to be assassinated at Uglich on the 15th of May 1591. The

circumstances of the death of the young prince are involved in mystery ; so much, however,

1 Horsey’s Diary, edited for the Hakluyt Society, 1856, p. 199. F a was of Mongol descent,—his ancestor being a certain Murza chet.

rues tT zx

93

ness Vasilissa Volokhova, his nurse, and a servant-maid were in attendance. Whether from accident or design they all for a time lost sight of him. According to their testimony while under examination, the young prince had a knife in his hand when last seen; he amused himself with sticking it into the ground and cutting pieces of wood. Suddenly the nurse, on looking round, saw him prostrate and covered with blood. He died almost immediately from a large wound in his throat. The account of how the news was brought to Moscow is described in a highly dramatic manner by Horsey. We have no direct evi- dence of the complicity of Godunoff in this murder ; but there seems little doubt of it. A secret inquiry was con- ducted ; the body, however, was not examined, and the commissioners reported that Dmitri had died of a wound accidentally inflicted by himself in a fit of epilepsy. On account of the riot which had taken place at Uglich, Boris proceeded to punish the town. More than two hundred of the inhabitants were put to death and many sent to Siberia. The church bell of Uglich was banished with them and placed in the capital of Siberia ; it was not brought back till the earlier part of the present century. The remains of Dmitri, who was afterwards canonized, were deposited in the cathedral of St Michael, the burial- place of the czars. Soon afterwards a great fire broke out in Moscow, and Boris caused many streets to be rebuilt at his own expense, distributed aid, and exempted the sufferers from taxes; but still the people murmured secretly ; they felt that the stain of blood was upon him, and ungratefully accused him of having caused the city to be set on fire. In the same year (1591) the khan of the Crimea made one of his periodical raids against Moscow. He set out from Perekop, and marched in a straight line, everywhere plun- dering and devastating. In these circumstances, Feodor displayed nothing but imbecility. He merely remarked that the saints who protected Russia would fight for her, and again betook himself to his

favourite amusement of bell-ringing. Boris, however, showed vigour. In a few days he caused Moscow to be surrounded with palisades, redoubts, and artillery. ‘The Mongols were repulsed with great slaughter; but, although Boris saved his country, he could not secure the goodwill of the people. Indeed, they accused him of having invited the Mongols that the general danger might make them forget the death of Dmitri. The czarina, Irene, wife of Feodor and sister of Boris, about this time gave birth to a female child, which lived but a few days, and Boris was of course accused of having poisoned it. In reality the princess suffered from continual ill-health, and on one occasion we find Elizabeth of England sending her a physician. Boris, however, still persevered in his energetic measures for strengthening the empire. Smolensk was fortified, Archangel built; and a strong cordon was drawn round the territories occupied by the Mongols. The Swedes were driven into Narva, and dip- lomatic relations were opened with the European powers.

About this time the imbecile Feodor died, and with him became extinct the dynasty of Scandinavian Rurik.

This event occurred in 1598, and Boris was elected to Boris.

succeed him. Godunoff, however, who felt sure of the crown, at first affected to be unwilling to receive it. He retired to a monastery and was followed by the people, supplicating him to be their emperor. He kept Russia in this state of suspense for six weeks, and then relented. As soon as he ascended the throne, the traces of his vigorous hand could be found everywhere. One of his first plans was the abridgment of the power of the nobility, which had been begun by Ivan III. and continued by Tvan IV. By this a benefit was conferred upon Russia; but Boris also served his own ambition. He was particularly severe to

3 Diary, ed. Bond, p. 254.

The “ false ” Dmitri.

all members of the Romanoff family, because they were allied to the house of Rurik, and troubled his dreams of sovereignty. The head of this house was compelled to become a monk; his son, however, was destined to ascend the throne. A famine broke out in 1601, which Boris was unsparing in his efforts to allay. In the midst of all this suffering a rumour spread that Dmitri, the youngest son of Ivan the Terrible, was not dead.

One day in the year 1603 Prince Adam Wisniowiecki, of Bragin in Lithuania, happening to be very angry with a servant, struck him and used an insulting epithet. The young man, with tears in his eyes, said, “If you knew who I am, you would not treat me so nor call me by that name.” “Who then are you, and whence do you come?” replied the astonished prince. ‘I am the prince Dmitri, son of Ivan Vasilievich.” He then recounted a well-concocted tale of his miraculous escape from the assassin whom Boris had employed. This was his physi- cian, who feigned compliance with the usurper’s designs, but only to frustrate them. On the night appointed for the murder, the man, whose name was Simon, put the son of a serf into his young master’s bed (who was accordingly killed), and immediately fled with Dmitri from Uglich. He was then committed to the care of a loyal gentleman, who thought it better for the sake of protection that he should entera monastery. This gentleman and the physician were dead, but in confirmation of his story the false Dmitri exhibited a seal, bearing the arms and name of the prince, and a golden cross set with jewels which he said was the baptismal gift of his godfather, Prince Ivan Mstislavski. Wisniowiecki believed his tale. There were also other supposed signs. The Polish nobles thronged around the young man, whose manners, as we read in the case of Perkin Warbeck, seemed to bear out his pretensions. Meanwhile Dmitri remained in Poland, enjoying all the lavish attentions of the Polish nobility. Boris was soon made acquainted with his appearance on the scene, and offered the brothers Wisniowiecki money and lands if they would surrender the impostor to him. Without, however, replying to these overtures, they removed him into the interior of Poland, and he was received with royal honours by George Mniszek, the palatine of Sandomir. Here he is said to have entered into a secret understanding with the Jesuits to bring over Russia to the Latin faith, on condition of being supported by the papal nuncio.? The pretender privately abjured the Greek faith, and signed a contract of marriage with Marina, the youngest daughter

of Mniszek, by which he settled upon her the towns of Novgorod and Pskoff, and engaged to pay her father a million of florins as soon as he had ascended the throne. Afterwards he executed another treaty ceding Smolensk and the surrounding territory to Mniszek and

a ee eee ee

1 The present writer doubts the genuineness of this claimant ; inany authors, however, some of them contemporaries, were con- vinced that he was the real son of Ivan, and aniong these the first place must be assigned to the French mercenary captain Margeret, whose intimate relations with the man point him out as a valuable authority. This clever adventurer had entered the Russian service in the time of Boris Godunoff, and was a witness of the whole struggle. At first he led the troops of the latter against Dmitri, but when the pretender had established his authority he accepted a post in his service. He has given us an interesting portrait of Dmitri, of whom he speaks very favourably, in his work on Russia published at Paris in 1669.

2 According to some authors, the whole plot had been concocted by the Jesuits for this purpose. For the contrary view, however, see Rome et Demétrius daprés des documents nouveaux avec pieces Justificatives et facsimile, by Pére Pierling, 8. J., Paris, 1878. Gerard Miller tells us that the pretender “conversed in Latin and Polish with fluency ;” if this had been the case his knowledge of the former would be easily explained by his Jesuitical training. Margeret, however, denies it altogether. “TI est trés certain qu’il ne parloit nullement Latin, j’en puis temoigner, moins le scavoit-il lire et écrire ” (p. 163).

really the man who personated Dmitri,

army of fifty thousand men.

SitA

the king of Poland. These proceedings recommend him to his Russian subjects. they were concealed, and Dmitri publicly professed the Greek ritual. Soon after this Sigismund of Poland saluted him as czar of Moscow, and assigned him a pension of 40,000 florins. All this time Boris affected to

regard the pretender with contempt, and issued-a manifesto setting forth that his real name was Grishka (or Gregory) Otrepieff, a renegade monk. Whether this individual wag the son of Ivan, cannot be known for certain; but it seems very probable, Karamzin has adopted this view. Boris soon issued a proclamation against him, calling him an apostate monk, who wished to introduce the Latin heresy into Russia, and to build Romish churches in the Orthodox land. Dmitri entered that country on the 31st of October 1604, and marched on Moravsk in Tchernigoff. He met with uninter. rupted success, large numbers joining his expedition, and the authorities of the chief towns on his route offering him bread and salt till he came to N. ovgorod Severski on the 23d of November. This well-fortified place was defended by Basmanoff, a veteran captain, with five hundred streltzi. On the arrival of the pretender he was summoned to capitulate, but, standing on the ramparts with a lighted

[uistory,

were not likely to For the present

| Match, he replied: ‘The grand-prince and czar is at Mos.

cow ; as for your Dmitri he is a robber, who shall be im- paled, along with his accomplices.” After three months the invaders abandoned the siege, but they had the good fortune soon afterwards to seizea large sum of money which Boris was sending to some of the towns. Shortly after this the important fortresses of Putivl, Sievsk, and Voronezh surrendered to Dmitri. Boris was too ill to go in person against the impostor ; he, however, raised an A great battle took place near Novgorod, and the supporters of the czar would have suffered a most ignominious defeat had it not been for Basmanoff. This captain was recalled to Moscow and loaded with honours by Boris, who, from motives not very evident, unless he had begun to have suspicions of his

| fidelity, detained him in the city, and committed the care

of the new army which he had formed to Shuiski, who was probably only half-hearted in his cause. A great battle took place on the 2d of January 1605, on the plain of Dobrinichi, not far from Orel; here Dmitri was

defeated, chiefly through the bravery of the foreign legion. He would have been captured had it not been for the fidelity of his Cossack infantry—for at this time the Cossacks were subject to Poland—who were killed to a man, and probably not a fugitive would have reached Sievsk had not Shuiski acted with duplicity. Meanwhile, the pretender rode as fast as his horse would carry him to Putivl, a strong town on the frontier, from which he could easily beat a retreat into Poland. The followers of Boris remained at Dobrinichi, putting to death their prisoners. The conduct of Shuiski showed with what apathy he viewed the cause of his master ; he soon drew off his troops into winter quarters, alleging that nothing more could be done that season, and also wasted time before Kromi, an insignificant place. Meanwhile Dmitri corrupted some of the chief generals of Boris. An attempt to poison him soon afterwards failed, and the pretender sent a message to Boris, recommending him to descend from the throne which he had usurped. But the days of the latter were numbered. On the 13th of April 1605 he presided as usual at the council-board, and received some distinguished foreigners. A grand banquet was given, but suddenly after dinner he was seized with illness ; blood burst from his nose, ears, and mouth, and in the brief period before his death, according to the Russian custom, the dress of a monk was thrust upon him, and he was

consecrated under the name of Bogolep (“acceptable to God”). He expired in the fifty-third year of his age, after a reign of six years. Whether he committed suicide or was poisoned cannot now be ascertained ; his death could hardly have been natural. Boris was a man of great energy of character, with views singularly in advance of his age. In some respects he anticipated the plans of Peter the Great ; thus he caused several young Russians to be sent abroad to be educated, some of whom came to England. By a ukaze, however, binding the peasant to the soil, he began the system which reduced him by degrees to a con- dition of abject serfdom.

Boris had left a sufficient number of partisans at Moscow to proclaim his son Feodor, a youth of sixteen, and all classes took the oath of allegiance to him. Shuiski and Mstislavski returned to Moscow to assist the young czar in the government. Basmanoff was sent to take the command of the army, but,

probably feeling the cause of Feodor to be desperate, on the 7th of May he proclaimed Dmitri. He was now ordered to march on the capital. Feodor, however, and his adherents still held the Kremlin with a large garrison. Accordingly it was resolved to make an attempt on Krasnoe Selo, a large town near Moscow, where many wealthy merchants resided. This was easily taken, whereupon many of its citizens marched to Moscow, and convoking the people called upon them to acknowledge Dmitri as their sovereign. Feodor and his ¥- mother were murdered, and buried in a cemetery out- side the city walls, whither also the remains of Boris were carried, for they were not allowed sepulture among the tombs of the czars. Pctreius, the Swedish envoy, who has left us an interesting account of these times, tells us that the rumour was circulated that these unhappy people had poisoned themselves, but he himself saw their bodies, and the marks on their necks of the cords with which they had been strangled. According to some authorities, Xenia, the daughter of Boris, described as beautiful by the old Russian chronicler Kubasoff, was forced to retire into a convent, but Petreius declares that she was compelled to become the mistress of the conqueror. The usurper now hearing that every obstacle was removed, marched upon the capital, which he entered on June 20, 1605. We have not space to detail the splendours of his retinue, nor the ceremonics and feastings which attended his arrival. He acted at first with prudence and concilia- tion towards his new subjects, and even promised to pay the debts of his father Ivan. He received his mother with transports of joy; she professed to identify him, although she afterwards denied that he was her son. She was probably, however, glad enough to get out of the convent into which she had been thrust by Boris. But Dmitri soon gave offence on account of his neglect of Russian etiquette and superstitious observances. It was plain that he held the Greek Orthodox religion very cheap, and his subjects could see that he had a propensity for the Latin heresy. In the following year Marina Mniszek, his bride, made her appearance in Moscow, and the marriage took place on the 18th of May. It was followed by continued banquets. But a rebellion broke out on the 29th, at the head of which was Vasilii Shuiski, whom Dmitri had spared when about to be executed. The czar, hearing a noise in the night, and finding himself surrounded by enemies, opened a window 30 feet from the ground, leapt down, and broke his leg. He was soon afterwards found and killed. Basmanoff was slain while attempting to defend his master. The corpse of

the impostor was afterwards burned. Marina was not killed, although there was a great massacre of the Poles In cvery quarter of Moscow; she and the ladies of her suite were kept as prisoners. Thus ended this remarkable

episode of Russian history. The whole period has been aptly termed by the national historians “the Period of Troubles” (Smutnoye Vremya).

The boiars, on being convoked after the murder Basil of Dmitri, elected Vasilii Ivanovich Shuiski for their Shuiski. sovereign, but he found himself in every way disadvan- tageously situated, without an army and without money. He was, moreover, troubled by an announcement which gained credence among the people that Dmitri was not really dead. To put an end to these rumours, Shuiski, entirely changing his policy, and contradicting his pre- vious assertions, sent to Uglich for the body of the un- fortunate pririce, and caused him to be canonized. Two subsequent impostors, who gave themselves out to be Dmitri, were taken and executed. To complete the mis- fortunes of Russia, the country was invaded by the Poles in 1609, who laid siege to Smolensk. Shuiski was defeated at Klushino (a village situated to the north-east of Moscow), was taken prisoner, and was set free, to become a monk,—a favourite way of treating troublesome persons in Russia. He was afterwards delivered over to Sigismund, who kept him in prison during the rest of his life. The crown was finally offered to Ladislaus, the Ladis- son of Sigismund, who in reality for two years was laus. sovereign of Russia, and caused money to be coined in his name at Moscow. Everything seemed to portend the ruin of the country, when it was saved by the bravery of Minin, the butcher of Nijni-Novgorod, who roused the citizens to arms by his patriotic appeal, and was joined by Prince Pozharski. The latter took the command of the army; the administrative department was handed over to the former. The brave prince succeeded in driving the Poles from Russia. In 1612 the boiars resolved to elect a new czar, but they did not actually meet till 1613, and many debates ensued. The sufferings of the country had been great; a considerable part of the city of Moscow. (with the exception of the Kremlin and the churches built of stone) was laid in ashes. The treasury was plundered, and its contents sent

to Poland. Among other things Olearius, the traveller of the 17th century, quaintly adds, “the Russians lost the horn.of a unicorn of great value, set with precious stones,” which was also carried off to Poland; and he tells us that even up to his time the Muscovites bitterly regretted that they had been robbed * of it. Princes Mstislavski and Pozharski refused the crown, and finally the name of Michael Romanoff, a youth Michael of sixteen, was put forward as a candidate, chiefly on Romanoff. account of the virtues of his father Philarete. The Romanoffs were connected on the female side with the house of Rurik, Anastasia Romanova having been the first wife of Ivan the Terrible. Before being allowed to ascend the throne, the youthful sovereign, according to some authors, took a constitutional oath. The condi- tion of the country all this time was most critical ; large portions of its territory were in the hands of the Swedes and Poles, and the villages were plun- dered by wandering bands of Cossacks. Ladislaus the son of Sigismund had not yet renounced the title of ezar ; in 1617 he appeared with an invading army under the walls of Moscow, but was repulsed, and on December 1, 1618, consented to abandon his claims, and conclude an armistice for fourteen years. In 1617 a treaty had been made at Stolbovo, a town near Lake Ladoga, by which the Russians had been compelled to give up a large portion of their territory to the Swedes. Philarete, the father of Michael, who had been for some time imprisoned at Warsaw, was now allowed to return; he entered Moscow in 1619, and was elected patriarch, an office which had been vacant since the death of Hermogenes. Michacl associated his father with himself in his power ; all ukazes

were published in their joint names; the patriarch held a separate court, and always sat at the right hand of the sove- reign. The patriarchate was suppressed in 1721 by Peter the Great, who had formed the idea of making himself head of the church from what he saw in England and other Protestant countries. The reign of Michael was not very eventful ; he employed it wisely in ameliorating the condi- tion of the country, which had recently suffered so much, and in improving the condition of his army. Foreigners began to visit the country in great numbers, and Russia was

gradually opening itself to Western civilization. Gustavus Adolphus of Sweden induced the czar to sign a treaty offensive and defensive, and a Swedish ambassador appeared at the Russian court. The sufferings which had been inflicted upon them by the Poles made the Russians eager to join an alliance which was directed against the Roman Catholic religion. In 1629 a French ambassador appeared at Moscow. Dutch and German artisans were taken into the Russian service to assist in the iron-

foundries, with special view to the manufacture of cannon.

The country swarmed with English merchants who had obtained valuable privileges. Scottish adventurers were to be met with in the Russian army in great numbers. We find them as early as the reign of Ivan the Terrible, to judge from Horsey's Diary. The false Demetrius, like Louis XI., had a Scottish guard. In Russian documents we find the names of Carmichaels, Hamiltons (frequently in the corrupted Russified form of Khomutoff), Bruces, Gordons, and Dalziels. From Scottish settlers in Russia sprang the celebrated poet Lermontoff, the first two syllables of whose name fully show his Caledonian origin. The following are the leading events of the reign of Alexis, who succeeded to the throne on the death of his father Michael in 1645. (1) First comes his codification

of the Russian laws (called Ulozhenie), which was based on | .the preceding codes of Ivans III. and IV. By the order of

the czar, a commission of ecclesiastical and lay members was appointed to examine the existing laws, and make any necessary additions, or to adapt to present needs any which had become obsolete. The work was chiefly carried on by Princes Odoievski and Volkonski, with the assistance of two secretaries. They were engaged over it two months and a half, and the original code is still preserved in the Oruzhennaia Palata at Moscow. Ustrialoff boasts that, by recognizing the equality of all men in the eyes of the law, it anticipated a principle which was not generally acknowledged in western Europe till the 18th century. This doctrine, however, may be considered as only a natural consequence of autocracy. We are told that Alexis allowed access to all petitioners, and at his favourite village of Kolomenskoe, opposite his bed-room window, was placed a tin box ; assoon as the czar rose and appeared at the window the suppliants came

forward with their complaints, and, making an obeisance, placed them in the box, which was afterwards taken to him. (2) The second great event of his reign was the incorporation of the Ukraine and country of the Cossacks with Russia. For a description of the causes of this war, see PoLAND. (3) By the treaty of Andruszowo the Russians gained Smolensk, Tchernigoff, and finally Kieff, the Dnieper being the new boundary, and thus the towns which had been taken by the Lithuanians and annexed to Poland by the treaty of Lublin (1569) became Russian again. The only other events of the reign of Alexis of any importance are the great riot at Moscow, on account of the depreciation of the coinage in 1648, and the rebellion of Stenka Razin, a Cossack. The riot is fully described in the interesting letter of an eyewitness which is pre- served in the Ashmolean Collection at Oxford. Razin devastated the country round the Volga, and continued his

depredations for three years. Alexis, however, captured him, and pardoned him on condition of his taking the oath of allegiance. He soon, however, broke out into rebellion again, and proclaimed himself the enemy of the nobles, and the restorer of the liberty of the people. By various arti- fices he succeeded in alluring two hundred thousand men to his standard. Astrakhan was surrendered to hin, and he ruled from Nijni-Novgorod to Kazan. He was, however, like Pugatcheff in the reign of Catherine II, a vulgar robber aud nothing more. His atrocities disgusted the more respectable of his adherents; his forces were gradually dispersed, and in 1671 he was taken to Moscow and executed. The czar Alexis died in 1676 in his forty- eighth year. One of the most eminent men of his reign was Ordin-Nastchokin, who negotiated the peace of Andruszowo. Alexis was a man of broad views, and made many efforts to raise Russia to the level of a European power, by sending competent men as ambassadors to foreign parts, and developing the trade of the country. In these respects he resembled Boris Godunoff. Altogether his reign was one of distinct progress for Russia.

He was succeeded by his eldest son Feodor, by his first wife Maria Miloslavskaia. prince of weak health, and his reign was uneventful. A notable occurrence was the destruction of the rozriadnie knigi, or books of

pedigrees. According to the miestni- chestvo no man could take any office which was inferior to any which his ancestors had held, or could be subordinate to any man who reckoned fewer ancestors than himself. Feodor, however, finding to what interminable quarrels these pedigrees gave rise, both at court and in the camp, hit upon a bold plan, said to have been suggested by his minister Vasilii Golitzin. He caused all the families to deliver their pedigrees into court that they might be examined, under pretext of ridding them of any errors which might have crept in. The nobles were convoked ‘ and the czar, assisted by the clergy, caused their books to be burned before their eyes.

On the death of Feodor, there seemed every probability that the empire would fall into a complete state of anarchy. The czar Alexis had been twice married: his first wife Maria Miloslavskaia bore him two sons, Feodor and Ivan, and several daughters; his second, Natalia Narishkina, was the mother of Peter and a daughter Natalia. The court was rent by the rival factions of the Miloslavskis and the Narishkins. Ivan was even more infirm than Feodor and the Narishkins strove to bring it about that he should be set aside and Peter should be elected. Sophia, however, the daughter of Alexis by his first wife, was a woman of singular energy of character, the more remarkable on account of the little attention paid to the education of women in Russia and the cloistered and spiritless lives they were compelled to lead. According to some accounts she was a woman altogether wanting in personal at- tractions. Perry, however, the engineer employed by Peter the Great, speaks of her as good-looking. But the position of the women of the imperial family was even worse than that of the generality ; they were not allowed to marry subjects, and in consequence the majority of them led a life of enforced celibacy. Sophia was the favourite daughter of her father, and was assiduous.in her attentions to him during his last illness. One of her brothers being an imbecile and the other a child, she hoped to wield the sceptre. She fomented a revolt of the streltzt, and, instigated by her harangues, they murdered some of the family and partisans of the Narishkins. Not content with slaying one of the czarina’s brothers at the beginning of the rebellion, they afterwards dragged another from his hiding-place and cut him to pieces.

The result of all these disturbances was that Ivan and

Feodor

Feodor (1676-1682) was a lll

Sophia.

and

he

n

1619=1722)] nw Ss

a Peter were declared joint-sovereigns, and Sophia was to be

regent during their minority. She appointed Vasilii Golitzin to be commander-in-chief of the forces. He marched against the Mongols of the Crimea, but owing to the length of the journey and sufferings of the troops was able to effect but little. In 1689 Peter married Eudokia Lopukhina; but the union was by no means a happy one. Two sons were born to Peter, Alexander and Alexis; the first lived six months only, the latter survived to make a sad figure in Russian history. Next we have another revolt of the streltzi, said to have been instigated by Sophia and Golitzin. It is even alleged that the object of this conspiracy was to put Peter to death. His cause, however, prevailed, and the rebels were punished with great severity. Golitzin's life was spared, but all his property was taken from him. Sophia was now permanently incarcerated in a convent under the name of Susanna, where she remained till her death fifteen years afterwards, at the age of forty-six. Thus from 1689 dates the actual rule of Peter. His brother Ivan, infirm both in body and mind, had but little share in the government ; his faculties both of sight and speech are said to have been very imperfect. He took a wife, however, and had three daughters, concerning one of whom, at least, we have much more to hear. Ivan led a retired life, and died in 1696 at the age of thirty.

Want of space compels us to deal here only with the Jeading facts of the reign of Peter the Great (1689-1725) ; for more minute details the reader

must consult the special article (vol. xviii. p. 698). The great object of the new ezar was to give Russia ports in some other direction than the White Sea, constantly blocked with ice. He had already trained an army which was officered by foreigners in his pay. The Turks were the first objects of his attack. At first he was unsuccessful in his attempt to get possession of Azoff at the mouth of the Don,—partly on account of the treason of the Dutch engineer Jansen, who, in consequence of some slight put upon him, went over to the enemy. In 1696, however, he took the fort and soon afterwards made his triumphant entry into Moscow. In the following year Peter, accompanied by Lefort and Generals Golovin and Vosnitzin, set out on his travels. J'or some time he worked at the docks of Saardam in Holland, and then he went to England, where he remained three months. The story of his stay at Deptford is too well known to need descrip- tion here. He left England, taking with him a great number of ingenious men, who were appointed to teach the arts to the barbarous Russians. He was getting ready to go to Venice when he heard of the great revolt of the streltzi. Before his arrival their insurrection had been quelled by Gordon and others, and many of them lay in prison await- ing the sentences to be given by Peter. When he reached Moscow, a series of terrible executions took place, which have been described with only too much accuracy by some eyewitnesses, the chief being Korb, the secretary of the German embassy. In 1706 broke out the revolt of the Cossacks of the Don, and in 1709 that of Mazeppa, the hetman of the Little-Russian Cossacks, who eagerly joined Charles XII. in his struggle with Peter. As early as 1700 the Russian czar had carried on war with this last of the vikings, as he had been called. In that year Charles defeated Peter at the battle of Narva, but the latter, although humbled, was not disheartened. He gathered all his strength for another encounter. In the following year Sheremetreff defeated the Swedish general Schlippenbach in Livonia, and again in 1702. The great object of Peter was to gain possession of the Neva; this he attained, but the Russian arms were disgraced by many cruelties and robberies in the unfortunate Baltic provinces, which had already suffered so much in the wars of Ivan the Terrible.

ei Az 97

Charles XII. now abandoned his attacks on the Polish king and invaded Russia. "I will treat with the czar at Moscow," he said, Peter replied, '"'My

brother Charles wishes to play the part of Alexander, but he will not find me Darius.” At Lesna the Swedish general Lowenhaupt fought a desperate battle with the Russians, in which, although nominally victorious, his losses were terrible. On June 15 (x.s.) was fought the battle of Poltava, which resulted in the complete defeat of Charles. He had brought it on by his recklessness, and, it may be added, complete ignorance of his duties as a general.

With the fall of Mazeppa and the coalition of the Little Russians in aid of Charles fell also the independence oi the Cossacks and their sech or republic. They now became entirely dependent upon the Muscovite czar. The hetmanship, which had long been a mere empty title, lasted till the year 1789. In 1712 Peter married Martha Skavronska, a Livonian or Lithuanian peasant who had been taken prisoner at the siege of Marienburg in 1702. But little is known of her previous history ; she received the name of Catherine on being baptized as a member of the Greek Church. Peter had previously divorced his wife Eudokia, who was distasteful to him on account of her sympathies with the conservative party in Russia. He now set about his great plan of civilizing the country ou the model of the nations of the West. In this he was assisted by many foreigners in his pay. He abolished the patriarchate, probably from dislike of its great power, based nobility entirely upon service either civil or military, and divided the merchants into guilds, but left serfdom still existing in Russia, or perhaps we may say with truth even augmented it, by doing away with the privileges which the odnodvortz, and polouniki had and confounding all in a common category of serfdom. His attempt to introduce

primogeniture into Russia did not succeed. He put an

end to the Oriental seclusion of women and the Oriental dress of men; for the beard and long caftan were sub-

stituted the cleanly-shaved face and the dress in vogue in the West. flagellation of defaulting debtors. pletely remodelled on the European system.

He abolished also the pravezhe or public The army was com- During the exile of Charles XII. at Bender Peter drove Stanis-

laus Leszczynski out of Poland, and Augustus II. re- entered Warsaw. Peter conquered Esthonia and Livonia.

He was not able to annex Courland, which was a

feudatory of Poland, but he negotiated a marriage between

the duke and his niece Anna, daughter of the late czar Ivan, who was afterwards empress. A foolish expedition undertaken against Turkey was not successful. Peter found himself but ill-supported by the inhabitants through whose territory he marched, and was compelled to sign the treaty of the Pruth in 1711, whereby he gave back Azoff, one of his most valuable conquests, to the Turks. The story of his having been rescued by the dexterity of Catherine seems to lack confirmation ; under any circum-stances, he shortly afterwards acknowledged her as his wife. In May 1713 Peter gained some fresh victories over the Swedes. In 1717 he made another European tour, visiting, among other places, Paris. On this occasion he was accompanied by his wife ; concerning both strange stories were told, but perhaps we must be cautious how we receive too credulously, as Carlyle has done, the malicious gossip of the margravine of Baireuth. In 17 21, by the treaty of Nystad with Sweden, Peter was left master of Livonia, Esthonia, Ingria, and part of Finland. He had begun building St Petersburg, “the window by which Russia looks” at Europe, as early as 1703.

In 1722 we find Peter descending the Volga from Nijni to Astrakhan, and gaining some important points on that river. Previous to this had occurred the sad death

of his son Alexis, in which it must be said with sorrow Peter seemed lost to all the feelings of a father. Alexis had undoubtedly given him great cause for dislike by identifying himself in every way with the retrogressive party. The unfortunate young man probably died under the infliction of torture. In 1721 Peter promulgated the celebrated ukaze (afterwards abrogated by Paul) that the sovereign had the right of naming his successor. On January

28, 1725, the great reformer was dead. An attempt to estimate his character has been made in the separate article assigned to him.

On the death of Peter the country was divided into two factions. The old reactionary party, the Golitzins, Dolgo- rukis, and others, were eager to proclaim Peter the son of Alexis, but those who had identified themselves with the

Catherine reforms of the late sovereign were anxious that Catherine

Ik

Peter II. others.

Anna.

his widow, who had been crowned empress, should succeed. Menshikoff, the favourite of the late czar, who is said when a boy to have sold cakes in the streets of Moscow, became all-powerful at this period, and the reforms of Peter con- tinued to be carried out. Catherine died in 1727; she appears to have been an indolent, good-natured woman, with but little capacity for government, and accordingly, throughout her short reign, was entirely controlled by She designated as her successor Peter the son of Alexis, and, in default of Peter and his issue, Anna, who had married the duke of Holstein, and Elizabeth, her daughters. The regency was exercised by a council consist- ing of the two daughters, the duke of Holstein, Menshikoff, and seven or eight of the chief dignitaries of the empire. Menshikoff was still all-important; he had obtained from Catherine her consent to a marriage between his daughter and the youthful czar. But his authority was gradually undermined by the Dolgorukis. The favourite of Peter the Great was first banished to his estates, and afterwards to Berezoff in Siberia, where he died in 1729. The Dol- gorukis were now in the ascendency, and the czar was betrothed to Natalia, one of that family. He showed every inclination to undo his grandfather’s work, and the court was removed to Moscow. Soon afterwards, how- ever, in January 1730, the young prince died of small-pox. His last words as he lay on his death-bed were, “Get ready the sledge; I want to go to my sister,”— alluding to the Princess Natalia, the other child of Alexis, who had died three years previously. The only foreign event of

importance in this reign was the attempt of Maurice of Saxony to get possession of Courland, by marrying the duchess Anna, then a widow. She con- sented to the union, and the states of the province elected him, but Menshikoff sent a body of troops who forced him to quit it. On the death of Peter at the age of fifteen, various claimants of the throne were put for- ward. The great czar had left two daughters, Elizabeth, and Anna, duchess of Holstein, who had a son, afterwards Peter III. Two daughters were also surviving of his eldest brother Ivan, Anna, the duchess of Courland, and Catherine, duchess of Mecklenburg. Alexis Dolgoruki even had an idea of claiming the crown for his daughter, because she had been betrothed to the young emperor. This proposal, however, was treated with derision, and the High Secret Council resolved to call to the throne Anna of Courland, thinking that, as she was so much more remote by birth than the daughters of Peter, she would more willingly submit to their terms. In fact, they had pre- pared for her signature something like the pacta conventa of Poland. The following were the terms :—(1) the High Council was always to be composed of eight members, to be renewed by co-option, and the czarina must consult it on state affairs ; (2) without its consent she could neither make peace nor declare war, could not impose any tax,

alienate any crown lands, or appoint to any office above that of a colonel ; (3) she could not cause to be condemned or executed any member of the nobility, nor confiscate the goods of any noble before he had a regular trial; (4) she could not marry nor choose a successor without the con- sent of the council. In case she broke any of these stipu- lations she was to forfeit the crown (see Rambaud, p. 425), Anna assented to these terms and made her entry into Moscow, which was now to be the capital. But the em- press was soon informed how universally unpopular these pacta conventa were, which in reality put Russia into the hands of a few powerful families, chiefly the Dolgorukis and Golitzins. She accordingly convened her supporters, and publicly tore the document to pieces, and thus ended the last attempt to give Russia a constitution. The new empress was a cold, repulsive woman, whose temper had been soured by indignities endured in her youth; she took

vengeance upon her opponents, and threw herself almost entirely into the hands of German advisers, espe- cially Biren, a Courlander of low origin. This is the period called by the Russians the Bironovstchina. The country was now thoroughly exploited by the Germans; some of the leading Russians were executed, and others banished to Siberia. Among the former was the able minister Volinski, beheaded with two others in 1740. He had fallen under the wrath of the implacable Biren. One of the most important enactments of this reign was the abolition of the right of primogeniture introduced by Peter the Great, which had never been popular in the country. On the crown of Poland falling vacant in 1733, an attempt was again made to place Stanislaus Leszczynski on the throne, but it failed through the opposition of Russia, and Stanislaus escaped with difficulty from Dantzic. Upon this followed a war with Turkey, which lasted four years (1735-1739), in conjunction with Austria. This was not very successful, but the Russian generals gained possession of a few towns, and were indignant when the Austrians signed the treaty of Belgrade with the Turks (1739), and the campaign came to an end. In 1740 the empress Anna died; she had reigned exactly ten years. She left the crown to Ivan, the son of her niece Anna, daughter of her sister Catherine, duchess of Mecklenburg. During the minority of this child Biren was to be regent. By a revolution de palais, however, the German adventurer was hurled from power and sent to Pelim in Siberia. But matters did not rest here; taking advantage of the general unpopularity of the German faction, the partisans of Elizabeth, the daughter of Peter the Great, were resolved to work their overthrow, and place her upon the throne. They consisted of Alexander and Peter Shuvaloff, Michael Vorontzoff, Razumovski, Schwarz, and a French surgeon named Lestocq. Elizabeth ingratiated herself into the favour of the soldiers, by whom the name of Peter the Great was still so much cherished. Anna Leopold- ovna, as she was called, her husband Anthony Ulrich, the infant emperor, Munich, Ostermann, and the whole

German faction were arrested in the night, and Elizabeth Blizbetl

ascended the throne. Ivan VI. was imprisoned in the fortress of Schliisselburg; Anna, with her husband and children, was banished to Kholmogort near Archangel, where she died in 1746. Ostermann was banished to Bere- zoff, and Munich to Pelim; they had both been previously

sentenced to death. Biren and his family were now recalled and allowed to live at Yaroslavl. Elizabeth Petrovna (1741-1762) inaugurated the return of Russian influence in opposition to the Germans, from whom the country had suffered so much during the reign of Anna. The people were weary of them, yet they were, as we shall see, to have one German emperor more. On ascending the throne she summoned to her court the son of her sister

1721-1775.]

Anna and the duke of Holstein, who took the name of Peter Feodorovich on assuming the Greek religion, and was declared heir to the throne. In 1744 he married the Princess Sophia of Anhalt-Zerbst, who by her baptism in the Orthodox Church became Catherine. Thus the line of descent was secured to the direct heirs of Peter the Great. In 1743, the armies of Elizabeth having gained some victories over the Swedes, the treaty of Abo was signed, by whieh Russia acquired the southern part of Finland, as far as the river Kiumen. The next event of importance is the war between Russia and Frederick the Great (1756- 1762). In 1757 Apraksin crossed the frontier with 85,000 Russians, occupied Eastern Prussia, and defeated Lewald at Gross-Jagersdorf; but, instead of taking advantage of the victory, he soon afterwards retired behind the Niemen, having been tampered with by the grand-duchess Catherine and the chancellor Bestuzhefi-Riumin. In 1758 Fermor, the Russian general, was completely defeated by Frederick at Zorndorf, but he was allowed to retreat without molesta- tion. In 1759 Saltikoff beat the Prussians at Paltzig, and in the same year Frederick was obliged to submit to a greater defeat at Kiinersdorf, where he lost eight thousand men and one hundred and seventy-two cannon. It was on the loss of this battle that he meditated committing suicide. In 1760 the Russians entered Berlin, where they committed great havoc.and destruction. ‘‘ We have to do,” said Frederick, “‘ with barbarians, who are digging the grave of humanity.” In the following year they took Pomerania. The cause of Frederick seemed on the verge of ruin; he was saved by the death of Elizabeth in Decem- ber 1761. The empress was an idle, superstitious woman of lax morals, who was greatly under the influence of favourites. Since the reign of Peter I. no successor had appeared worthy of him. Still Russia made more progress under Elizabeth than it had made under Anna. In 1755 the university of Moscow, the oldest in the country, was founded

through the influence of Ivan Shuvaloff. Litera- ture made great advances, as will be seen below. Elizabeth was succeeded by her nephew Peter, son of her sister Anna and Charles Frederick, duke of Holstein- Gottorp. He was suspected of German leanings, but his first measures made him very popular. In February 1762 he published an ukaze by which the nobility were freed from the neeessity of entering upon any state employment, and he abolished the secret chancery. On the other hand he acted in some matters injudiciously, and offended the prejudices of the Russians, as the false Demetrius had done a century and a half previously. He ridiculed some of the ceremonies of the Orthodox Church, and showed a fondness for the Lutheran. He introduced many German tactics into the army, and evinced a great preference for his German corps of Holsteiners. His personal habits were very coarse: he was constantly seen drunk. Moreover he sent out of the country many of the talented Frenchmen who had during the reign of Elizabeth been helping Russia to get rid of her barbarism. Frederick II. of Prussia, who was at his lowest depths after the battle of Kiinersdorf, now saw to his delight a complete change in the Russian policy. Peter was an ardent admirer of the Prussian sovereign ; in order to ensure peace, Frederick would have ceded Eastern Prussia; but Peter dreamed of nothing of the kind; he restored all the Russian conquests and formed an alliance with him, offensive and defensive. He lived very unhappily with his wife Catherine, and meditated divoreing her and imprisoning her for the rest of her life ina convent. The condition in which she passed her time may be seen from her memoirs, first published by Herzen, the authenticity of which there seems to be no reason to doubt. She, however, quietly waited her time, and a conspiracy was concocted in which she was assisted by the

Orloffs, Potemkin, the princess Dashkoff, and others (see Peter III.). Leaving her residence at Peterhof, Catherine boldly put herself at the head of twenty thousand men. The miserable emperor abdicated without a struggle, and was soon afterwards secretly assassinated at Ropcha, near St Petersburg. Many of the details of this catastrophe are given in the interesting memoirs of the Princess Dashkoff, which were published by an

English lady, Mrs W. Brad- ford, in 1840, having been taken down from her dictation.

Thus had a German woman, by adroitly flattering the Catherine prejudices of the Russians, succeeded in making herself

head of this vast empire. Two years afterwards Ivan VL., who is said to have become an idiot from his long confine- ment at Schliisselburg, was murdered by his guards on account of the attempt of a certain Lieutenant Mirovich to set him free. Whether Mirovich was incited to this adven- ture by secret promises of the Government, so that there might be an excuse for the murder of Ivan, has never been clearly shown. He expiated his crime by public execution, and is said to have expected a reprieve till the last moment.

The Seven Years' War was now over, and the next great European complications were to be concerned with the partition of Poland, throughout the struggles of which country the Russians were constantly interfering; but for a fuller discussion of this subject the reader must be referred to the article Potanp. In 1767 Turkey, urged on by France, declared war against Russia ; the object was to aid the Poles by creating a diversion. The Russian general Golitzin attacked the grand vizier, took the town of Khotin (1769), and in the following year Rumantzofi defeated the khan of the Crimea, the Turkish feudatory and ally, and in 1770 won the great victory of Kagul. In 1771 Dolgoruki overran the Crimea, and Alexis Orloff defeated the Turks in a naval engagement at Chesme, on the coast of Asia Minor. In their naval expeditions the Russians were at this time greatly assisted by the number of Englishmen in their service. In 1774 was signed the peace of Kutchuk-Kainardji, whereby the sultan acknow- ledged the independence of the Mongols of the Crimea. The Russians thus detached this province from the sultan's dominions, and after exercising a kind of protectorate over it added it to their own. He also ceded Azoff on the Don, Kinburn at the mouth of the Dniester, and all the fortified places of the Crimea. The Greeks, who had been induced to rise, were abandoned to the vengeance of the Turks.

In 1771 the plague broke out at Moscow, and many of the inhabitants perished. The archbishop Ambrose was massacred in a popular tumult, while endeavouring to carry out some measures which were necessary for

the preservation of the public health. Soon afterwards occurred the rebellion of Pugatcheff, a Cossack of the Don, who declared himself to be the emperor Peter III. The czar, he alleged, had escaped from the hands of his would- be murderers, and would soon regain his throne. A large band of disaffected peasants and Raskolniks gathered round him, and he was joined by many of the Mongol races, who were inimical to the Russian rule. At first the generals sent against him were defeated. The rebel's path was everywhere marked with bloodshed and pillage ; he even got possession of several towns, including Kazan. Had he been something more than a vulgar assassin he might have made Catherine tremble on her throne, but his cruelties estranged his more moderate followers. He was after- wards beaten by Bibikoff and others, and finally surrendered by his accomplices to Suwaroff. He was taken to Moscow in an iron cage and there publicly executed in 1775, together with four of his principal followers. In the same year the empress put an end to the republic, as it was called, of the Zaporogian Cossacks. A great codification of the laws took place under Catherine, which may be

styled the sixth great period of Russian legislation. The serfs, however, were not benefited by these changes. In

1767 an ukaze forbade them to bring any complaints against their masters. The latter had the power of send- ing their serfs to Siberia as a punishment, or handing them over to be enlisted in the army. The public sale of serfs was not put an end to till the reign of Alexander I. The country was now divided into governments for the better administration of justice, each government being subdivided into wiezdi or districts. Catherine also took away from the monasteries their lands and serfs, and allotted them payments according to their importance from the state revenues. The plans of Peter I. were thus fully carried out, and the church became entirely dependent upon the state. In 1783 the Crimea was annexed to Russia. A second war with Turkey broke out in 1787; the Ottoman power had many grounds of complaint, but its suspicions were particularly aroused by the tour of Catherine through the southern provinces of Russia and her

interviews with the emperor Joseph II. ‘Turkey declared war that same year; and, to increase the em- barrassed position of the empress, Sweden did the same, requiring from Russia the cession of the southern part of Finland which had been taken from her. But King Gustavus ITI., in spite of some petty successes, was unable to carry on the war, and soon signed the peace of Verela on the footing of status quo ante bellum. The empress met with equal good fortune in the south; Potemkin took Otchakoff and Suwaroff Khotin, In 1789 the latter gene- ral won the battles of Fokshani and Kimnik; and in 1790 after a sanguinary engagement he took Ismail. By the treaty of Jassy in 1792 Catherine kept possession of Otch- akoff, and the shore between the Bug and Dniester. She was next occupied with the affairs of Poland, which

have been described under that heading. In consequence of |

the demands of the confederates of Targovica,—men who were prepared to ruin their country for their own private ends,—eighty thousand Russians and twenty thousand Cossacks entered the Ukraine to undo the work of the confederates of Bar. In 1794 Suwaroff stormed Warsaw, and the inhabitants were massacred. In the following year Stanislaus Poniatowski laid down his crown, the third division of Poland took place, and the independence of that country was at an end. In spite of her correspond- ence and affected sympathies with Voltaire, Diderot, and

many of the advanced French thinkers, Catherine showed

great opposition to the principles of the French Revolu- tion, and the policy of the latter part of her reign was reactionary. She died suddenly on November 7, Ugo: Her character has been amply discussed by foreign writers. It may suffice to say here that, whatever her private vices may have been, she was unquestionably a woman of great genius, and the only sovereign worthy of Russia who had appeared since the days of Peter the Great. Hence the veneration with which her memory is regarded by the Russians to this day.

Paul, who had lived in retirement during the life of his mother, was an object of aversion to her. We are told that she had prepared a will by which he would be disinherited, and the succession conferred upon his son

Alexander, but his friend Kurakin got hold of it immediately upon the death of the empress and destroyed it. The events of the reign of Paun (q.v.) can be only briefly discussed here. He concluded an alliance with Turkey, and entered into a coalition against the French republic, which he regarded with horror. Suwaroff took the command of the united Russian and Austrian troops at Verona. In 1799 he defeated the French general Moreau on the banks of the Adda, and made a triumphant entry into Milan. After this he won another victory over Macdonald on the Trebbia

i US se ee

[n1sTorYy,

and later the same year that of Novi over Joubert. He then crossed the Alps for the purpose of driving the French out of Switzerland, but he was everywhere hampered by the Austrians, and, after fighting his way over the Alps and suffering great losses, he reached his winter quarters between the Iler and the Lech, and soon afterwards he was recalled in disgrace. Paul now completely changed his tactics. Ac. cusing England and Austria of having acted treacherously towards him, he threw himself into the arms of Bonaparte, who had won him over by skilful diplomacy, and, among other pieces of flattery, sent back the Russian prisoners newly clothed and armed. Paul then meditated joining him in a plan for conquering India; but in the night: between the 23d and 24th of March 1801 he was assassinated. The chief agents in this catastrophe were Plato Zuboff, Benning- sen, and Pahlen. The rule of Paul had become intolerable, and he was fast bringing on a national bankruptcy.

He was succeeded by his eldest son, Alexander I, Alexander

(1801-1825). One of the first acts of the new emperor lL was to make peace with England and France. He, how- ever, soon changed his policy, and in 1805 joined the third

coalition against France, to which Austria and England

were parties. Events which belong to general European history, and are well known, need only be described briefly here. On December 2d of that year

took place the battle of Austerlitz, in which the Russians lost 21,000 men, 133 guns, and 30 flags. They accused their Austrian allies of treachery. The war was soon ended by the treaty of Pressburg. We now come to the fourth coalition against France (1806-7). In 1807 Napoleon engaged the Russian general Benningsen at Eylau. The battle was protracted and sanguinary, but not decisive ; both parties abandoned the field and retired into winter quarters. A defeat at Friedland in the same year was followed by the peace of Tilsit. By this treaty the Prussian king, Frederick William III., lost half his dominions. Nearly all his Polish posses- sions were to go to the king of Saxony under the name of the grand-duchy of Warsaw. Bya secret treaty, it seemed as if Alexander and Napoleon almost aspired to divide the world, or at least Europe, between them. The terms, how- ever, were received by a large party in Russia with disgust. The next important event in the reign of Alexander was the conquest of Finland. By the treaty of F rederikshamn, September 17, 1809, Sweden surrendered Finland, with the whole of East Bothnia, and a part of West Bothnia lying eastward of the river Tornea. The Finns were allowed a kind of autonomy, which they have preserved to this day. The annexation of Georgia to Russia was consolidated at the beginning of this reign, having been long in prepara- tion. It led to a war with Persia, which resulted in the incorporation of the province of Shirvan with the Russian empire in 1806,

In 1809 commenced the fifth coalition against Napoleon. Alexander, who was obliged by treaty to furnish assistance to the French emperor, did all that he could to prevent the war. A quarrel with Turkey led to its invasion by a Russian army under Michelsen. This war was terminated by a congress held at Bucharest in 1812. Russia gave up Moldavia and Wallachia, which she had occupied, but kept Bessarabia, with the fortresses of Khotin and Bender. Gradually an estrangement took place between Alexander and Napoleon, not only on account of the creation of the grand-duchy of Warsaw, but because Russia was suffering greatly from the Continental blockade, to which Alexander had been forced to give his adhesion. This led to the great invasion of Russia by Napoleon in 1812.1

1 This has been fully described in the pages of Eugéne Labaume and Sir Robert Wilson. In the recent volumes of the excellent review, Russki Arkhiv, edited by M. Bartenieff, will be found some most in-

» | teresting details based upon Russian family papers and traditions.

1767-1831.]

On May 9, 1812, Napoleon Icft Paris for Dresden, and the Russian and French ambassadors received their passports. The grand army comprised 678,000 men, 356,000 of them being French ; and, to oppose them, the Russians assembled 372,000 mcn. Napoleon crossed the Niemen and advanced by forced marches to Smolensk. Here he defeated the Russians, and again at the terrible yattle of Borodino, and then entered Moscow, which had been abandoned by most of the inhabitants; soon after- wards a fire broke out (probably caused by the order of Rostopchin the governor), which raged six days and destroyed the greater part of the city. Notwithstanding this disaster, Napoleon lingered five weeks among the ruins, endeavouring to negotiate a peace, which he seemed to think Alexandcr would be sure to grant; but he had mistaken the spirit of the emperor and his people. On the 18th of October Napoleon reluctantly commenced his backward march. The weather was unusually severe, and the country all round had been devastated by the French on their march. With their ranks continually thinned by cold, hunger, and the skirmishes of the Cossacks who hung upon their rear, the French reached the Beresina, which they crossed near Studianka on the 26th—29th of N ovember with great loss. The struggle on the banks of this river forms one of the most terrible pictures in history. At Smorgoni, between Vilna and Minsk, Napoleon left the army and hurried to Paris. [Finally the wreck of the grande armée under Ney crossed the Niemen. Not more than eighty thousand of the whole army are said to have returned. .

Frederick William III. of Prussia now issued a mani- festo, and concluded an alliance with Russia for the re- establishment of the Prussian monarchy. In 1813 took place the battle of Dresden, and the so-called Battle of the Nations at Leipsic on October 16 and the two fol- lowing days. In 1814 the Russians invaded France with the allies, and lost many men in the assault upon Paris. After the battle of Waterloo, and the conveyance of Napoleon to the island of St Helena, it fell to the Russian forces to occupy Champagne and Lorraine. In the same year Poland was re-established in a mutilated form, with a constitution which Alexander, who was crowned king, swore

to observe. In 1825 the emperor died suddenly at Taganrog at the mouth of the Don, while visiting the southern provinces of his empire. He had added to the Russian dominions Finland, Poland, Bessarabia, and that part of the Caucasus which includes Daghestan, Shirvan, Mingrelia, and Imeretia. Much was done in this reign to improve the condition of the serfs. The Raskolniks were better treated; many efforts were made to improve public education, and the universities of Kazan, Kharkoff, and St Petersburg were founded. One of the chief agents of these reforms was tlie minister Speranski, who for some time enjoyed the favour of the emperor, but he attacked so many interests by his measures that a coalition was formed against him. He was denounced as a traitor, and his enemies succeeded in getting him removed and sent as governor to Nijni- Novgorod. In 1819, when the storm raised against him had somewhat abated, he was appointed to the important post of governor of Siberia. In 1821 he returned to St Petersburg, but he never regained his former power. To the mild influence of Speranski succeeded that of Shishkoff, Novosiltzeff, and Arakcheeff. The last of these men made himself universally detested in Russia. He rose to great influence in the time of Paul, and managed to continue in favour under his son. Besides many other pernicious measures, it was to him that Russia owed the military colonics which were so unpopular and led to serious riots. The censorship of the press became much stricter, and

many professors of liberal tendencies were dismissed from their chairs in the universities. ‘The country was now filled with secret societies, and the emperor became gloomy and suspicious. In this condition of mind he died, a man thoroughly disenchanted and weary of life. He has been judged harshly by some authors; readers will remember that Napoleon said of him that he was false as a Byzantine Greek. To us he appears as a well-intentioned man, utterly unable to cope with the discordant elements around him. He had discovered that his life was a failure.

The heir to the throne according to the principles of succession recognized in Russia was Constantine, the second son of the emperor Paul, since Alexander left no children. But he had of his own free will secretly

renounced his claim in 1822, having espoused a Roman Catholic, the Polish princess Julia Grudzinska. In consequence of this change in the devolution of the sovereign's authority, the conspiracy of the Dekabrists! broke out at the end of the year, their object being to take advantage of the confusion caused by the alteration of the succession to get consti- tutional government in Russia. Their efforts failed, but the rebellion was not put down without great bloodshed. Five of the conspirators were executed, and a great many sent to Siberia. Some of the men implicated were among the most remarkable of their time in Russia, but the whole country had been long honeycombed with secret societies, and many of the Russian officers had learned liberal ideas while engaged in the campaign against Napo- leon. So ignorant, however, were the common people of the most ordinary political terms that when told to shout for Constantine and the constitution (constitutzia) they naively asked if the latter was Constantine's wife. 'The new emperor, Nicholas, the next brother in succession, showed throughout his reign reactionary tendencies ; all liberalism was sternly repressed. In 1830 appeared the Complete Collection of the Laws of the Russian Empire, which Nicholas had caused to be codified. He partly restored the right of primogeniture which had been taken away by the empress Anna as contrary to Russian usages, allowing a father to make his eldest son his sole heir. In spite of the increased severity of the censorship of the press, literature made great progress in his reign. From 1826 to 1828 Nicholas was engaged in a war with Persia, in which the Russians were completely victorious, having beaten theenemyat Elizabetpol, and again under Paskewitch at Javan Bulak. The war was terminated by the peace of Turkmantchai (February 22, 1828), by which Persia ceded to Russia the provinces of Erivan and Nakhitchevan, and paid twenty millions of roubles as an indemnity. The next foreign enemy was Turkey. Nicholas had sympa- thized with the Greeks in their struggle for independence, in opposition to the policy of Alexander ; he had also a part to play as protector of the Orthodox Christians, who formed a large number of the sultan's subjects. In con- scquence of the sanguinary war which the Turks were carrying on against the Greeks and the utter collapse of the latter, England, France, and Russia signed the treaty of London in 1827, by which they forced themselves upon the belligerents as mediators. From this union resulted the battle of Navarino (October 20, 1827), in which the Turkish fleet was annihilated by that of the allies Nicholas now pursued the war with Turkey on his own account; in Asia

Paskewitch defeated two Turkish armies, and conquered Erzeroum, and in Europe Diebitsch defeated the grand vizier. The Russians crossed the Balkans and advanced to Adrianople, where a treaty was signed in 1829 very disadvantageous to Turkey.

In 1831 broke out the Polish insurrection, of which a

1 Literally, the men of December, the month in which Alexander died.

description has already been given (see PoLAND, vol. xix. p. 298). Paskewitch took Warsaw in 1831. The cholera which was then raging had already carried off Diebitsch and the grand-duke Constantine. Poland was now entirely at the mercy of Nicholas. The constitution which had been granted by Alexander was annulled; there were to be no more diets; and for the ancient palatinates, familiar to the historical student, were substituted the governments of Warsaw, Radom, Lublin, Plock, and Modlin. The university of Vilna, rendered celebrated by Mickiewicz and Lelewel, was suppressed. By another treaty with Turkey, that of Unkiar-Skelessi (1833), Russia acquired additional rights to meddle with the internal politics of that country. Soon after the revolution of 1848, the emperor Nicholas, who became even more reactionary in consequence of the disturbed state of Europe, answered the appeal of the emperor Francis Joseph, and sent an army under Paskewitch to suppress the Hungarian revolt. After the capitulation of Gorgei in 1849, the war was at an end, and the Magyars cruelly expiated their attempts to procure constitutional government. In 1853 broke out the Crimean War. The emperor was anxious to distribute the possessions of the ‘‘sick man,” but found enemies instead of allies in England and France. The chief events of this memorable struggle were the battles of the Alma, Balaklava, Inkermann, and Tchernaya, and the siege of Sebastopol; this had been skilfully fortified by Todleben, who appears to have been the only man of genius who came to the front on either side during the war. In 1855 the Russians destroyed the southern side of the city,

and retreated to the northern. In the same year, on March 14th, died the emperor Nicholas, after a short illness. Finding all his plans frustrated he had grown weary of life, and rashly exposed himself to the severe temperature of the northern spring.

Alexander He was succeeded by his son Alexander II. (1855-1881),

Il.

at the age of thirty-seven. One of the first objects of the new czar was to put an end to the war, and the treaty of Paris was signed in 1856, by which Russia consented to keep no vessels of war in the Black Sea, and to give up her protectorate of the Eastern Christians; the former, it must be added, she has recently recovered. A portion of Russian Bessarabia was also cut off and added to the Danubian principalities, which were shortly to be united under the name of Roumania. This was afterwards given back to Russia by the treaty of Berlin. Sebastopol also has been rebuilt, so that it is difficult to see what the practical results of the Crimean War were, in spite of the vast bloodshed and expenditure of treasure which attended it. The next important measure was the emanci- pation of the serfs in 1861. This great reform had long been meditated by Nicholas, but he was unable to ac- complish it, and left it to be carried out by his son. The landlords, on receiving an indemnity, now released the serfs from their seigniorial rights, and the village commune became the actual property of the serf. This great revolution was not, however, carried out without great difficulty. The Polish insurrection of 1863 has already been described, as well as its fatal effects upon that part of Poland which had been incorporated with Russia. On the other hand Finland has seen her privileges confirmed. Among important foreign events of this reign must be mentioned the capture of Schamyl in 1859 by Prince Bariatinski, and the pacification of the Caucasus 3; many of the Circassians, unable to endure the peaceful life of cultivators of the soil under the new regime, migrated to Turkey, where they have formed one of the most turbulent elements of the population. Turkestan also has been gradually subjugated. In 1865 the city of Tashkend was taken, and in 1867 Alexander II. created the government of Turkestan. In 1858 General Muravieff signed a treaty

kU ee te

with the Chinese, by which Russia acquired all the left bank of the river Amur. A new port has been created in Eastern Asia (Vladivostok), which promises to be a great centre of trade. In 1877 Russia came to the assistance of the Slavonic Christians against the Turks. After the terrible siege of Plevna, nothing stood between them and the gates of Constantinople. In 1878 the treaty of San Stefano was signed, by which Roumania became independent, Servia was enlarged, and a free Bulgaria, but under Turkish suzerainty, was created. But these arrangements were subsequently modified by the treaty of Berlin. Russia got back the portion of Bessarabia which she had lost, and advanced her Caucasian frontier. The new province of Bulgaria was cut into two, the southern portion being entitled Eastern Roumelia, with a Christian governor, to be appointed by the Porte, and self-govern- ment. Austria acquired a protectorate over Bosnia and Herzegovina. The latter part of the reign of Alexander II. was a period of great internal commotion, on account of the spread of Nihilism, and the attempts upon the emperor's life, which unfortunately were at last successful. In the cities in which his despotic father had walked about fearless, without a single attendant, the mild and amiable Alexander was in daily peril of 'his life. On April 16, 1866, Karakozoff shot at the emperor at St Petersburg; in the following year another attempt was made by a Pole, Berezowski, while Alexander was at Paris on a visit to Napoleon III.; on April 14, 1879, Solovioff shot at him. The same year saw the attempt to blow up the Winter Palace and to wreck the train by which the czar was travelling from Moscow to St Petersburg. A similar conspiracy in 1881 (March 13) was successful. Five of the conspirators, including a woman, Sophia Perovskaia, were publicly executed. Thus terminated the reign of Alexander IL, which had lasted nearly twenty-six years. He died leaving Russia exhausted by foreign wars and honeycombed by plots. His wife and eldest son Nicholas had predeceased him, the latter at Nice.

acterized by conspiracies and constant deportations of suspected persons. It was long before he ventured to be crowned in his ancient capital of Moscow (1883), and the chief event since then has been the disturbed relations with England, which for a time threatened war. (Ww. R. M.)

Part V.—Russian LirerRature.

To get a clear idea of Russian literature, it will be most convenient for us to divide it into oral and written. The

first of these sections includes the interesting bélint, or Bilin,

“tales of old time,” as the word may be translated, which have come down to us in great numbers, as they have been sung by wandering minstrels all over the country. The scholars who during the last forty years have given their attention to these compositions have made the following division of them into cycles:—(1) that of the older heroes ; (2) that of Vladimir, prince of Kieff; (3) that of Novgorod ; (4) that of Moscow; (5) that of the Cos- sacks; (6) that of Peter the Great; (7) the modern period. These poems, if they may be so styled, are not in rhyme ; the ear is satisfied with a certain cadence which is observed throughout. For a long time they were neglected, and the collection of them only began at the commencement of the present century. The style of Russian literature which prevailed from the time of Lomonosoff was wholly based upon the French or pseudo- classical school. It was, therefore, hardly likely that these peasant songs would attract attention. But when the gospel of romanticism was preached and the //istory of Karamzin appeared, which presented to the Russians a

He was succeeded by his second Alexander son Alexander, born in 1845, whose reign has been char- HI

ie US

past of which they had known but little, described in poetical and ornate phraseology, a new impulse was given to the collection of all the remains of popular literature. In 1804 appeared a volume based upon those which had been gathered together by Cyril or Kirsha Daniloff, a Cos- sack, at the beginning of the 18th century. They were received with much enthusiasm, and a second edition was published in 1818. In the following year there appeared at Leipsic a translation of many of these pieces into Ger- man, in consequence of which they became known much more widely. his little book of 160 pages is important in many ways, and not the least so because the originals of some of the bilint translated in it arc now lost. Since that

time large collections of these poems have been published, edited by Ribnikoff, Hilferding, Sreznevski, Avenarius, and others.

These curious productions have all the characteristics of popular poetry in the endless repetitions of certain con- ventional phrases—the “green wine,” “the bright sun” (applied to a hero), “the damp earth,” and others. The heroes of the first cycle are monstrous beings, and seem to be merely impersonifications of the powers of nature ; such are Volga Vseslavich, Mikula Selianinovich, and Svia- togor. They are called the bogatiri starshe. Sometimes we have the giants of the mountain, as Sviatogor, and the serpent Gorinich, the root of part of both names being gora (mountain). The serpent Gorinich lives in caves, and has the care of the precious metals. Sometimes animal natures are mixed up with them, as zmev-bogatir, who unites the qualities of the serpent and the giant, and bears the name of Tugarin Zmievich. There is the Pagan Idol (Idolistche Poganskoe), a great glutton, and Nightingale the Robber (Solovet Razboinik), who terrifies travellers and lives in a nest built upon six oaks.

In the second cycle the legends group themselves round the celebrated prince Vladimir of Kieff, in whose time the Christian religion was introduced into Russia, as previously mentioned. The chief hero is Ilya Murometz, who performs prodigies of valour, and is of gigantic stature and superhuman strength. The cycle of Novgorod deals with the stories of Vasilii Buslaevich and Sadko, the rich merchant. The great commercial prosperity of Novgorod has been already described. The fourth cycle deals with the autocracy ; already Moscow has become the capital of the future empire. We are told of the taking of Kazan, of the conquest of Siberia by Yermak, of Ivan the Terrible and his confidant Maliuta Skuvlatovich. It is observable that in the popular tradition Ivan, in spite of his cruelties, is not spoken of with any hatred. As early as 1619 some of these bilini were committed to writing by Richard James, an Oxford graduate who was in Russia about that time as chaplain of the embassy. The most pathetic of these is that relating to the unfortunate Xenia, the daughter of Boris Godunoff. Yermak, the conqueror of Siberia, forms the subject of a very spirited lay, and there is another on the death of Ivan the Terrible. Considering the relation in which she stood to the Russians, we cannot wonder that Marina, the wife of the false Demetrius, appears as a magician.

Many spirited poems are consecrated to the achievements of Stenka Razia, the bold robber of the Volga, who was a long time a popular hero. The cycle of Peter the Great is a very interesting one. We have songs in abundance on the various achievements of the wonderful ezar, as the taking of Azoff in 1696. Thereis also a poem on the execution of the streltzi, and another on the death of Peter. In the more modern period there are many songs on Napoleon. The Cossack songs, written in the Little Russian language, dwell upon the glories of the sech, the sufferings of the people from the invasions of the Turks and Mongols, the exploits of the Haidamaks and lastly the

fall of the Cossack republic. Besides these, the Russians can boast of large collections of religious poems, many of them containing very curious legends. In them we have a complete store of the beliefs of the Middle Ages. A rich field may be found here for the study of comparative mythology and folk-lore. Many of them are of considerable antiquity, and some seem to have been derived from the Midrash. Some of the more important of these have been collected by Beszonoff. Besides the bilint or legendary poems, the Russians have large collections of skazki or folk-tales, which have been gathered together by Sakharoff, Afanasieff, and others. They also are full of valuable materials for the study of comparative mythology.

Leaving the popular and oral literature, we come to Earliest

what has been committed to writing. specimen of Russian, properly so-called, must be considere the Ostromir Codex, written by the diak Gregory at the order of Ostromir, the posadnik or governor of Novgorod. This isa Russian recension of the Slavonic Gospels, of the date 1056-57. Of the year 1073 we have the Zzbornik or “ Miscellany” of Sviatoslaff. It was written by John the diak or deacon for that prince, and is a kind of Russian encyclopedia, drawn from Greek sources. The date is 1076. The style is praised by DBuslaeff as clear and simple. The next monument of the language is the Discourse concerning the Old and New Testament by Ilarion, metropolitan of Kieff. In this work there is a panegyric on Prince

Vladimir of Kieff, the hero of so much of the Russian popular poetry. Other writers are Theodo- sius, a monk of the Pestcherski cloister, who wrote on the Latin faith and some Pouchenia or “ Instructions,” and Luke Zhidiata, bishop of Novgorod, who has left us a curious Discourse to the Brethren. From the writings of Theodosius we see that many pagan habits were still in vogue among the people. He finds fault with them for allowing these to continue, and also for their drunkenness ; nor do the monks escape his censures. Zhidiata writes in a more vernacular style than many of his contemporaries ; he eschews the declamatory tone of the Byzantine authors.

With the so-called Chronicle of Nustor (q.v.) begins the long series of the Russian annalists. There is a regular catena of these chronicles, extending with only two breaks to the time of Alexis Mikhailovich, the father of Peter the Great. Besides the work attributed to Nestor, we have chronicles of Novgorod, Kieff, Volhynia, and many others. Every town of any importance could boast of its annalists, Pskoff and Suzdal among others. In some respects these compilations, the productions of monks in their cloisters, remind us of the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle, dry details alternating with here and there a picturesque incident ; but the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle has nothing of the saga

about it, and many of these annals abound with the

quaintest stories. There are also works of early travellers, as the igumen Daniel, who visited the Holy Land at the

end of the 11th and beginning of the 12th century. A

later traveller was Athanasius Nikitin, a merchant of Tver, who visited India in 1470.

account written by the two merchants, Korobeinikoff and Grekoff. ‘They were sent with a sum of money to the Holy Sepulchre to entreat the monks to pray without ceasing for the soul of the son of Ivan the Terrible, whom his father had killed. A curious monument of old Slavonic times is the Pouchenie (“Instruction”) written by Vladimir Monomakh for the benefit of his sons. This composition is generally found inserted in the Chronicle of Nestor ; it gives a quaint picture of the daily life of a Slavonic prince.

He has left a record of his adventures, which has been translated into English and published for the Hakluyt Society. Later also is the

The earliest written d literature,

Annalists and travellers.

In the 12th century we have the sermons of Cyril, the Religious bishop of Turoff, which are attempts to imitate in Russian literature.

The Story

of Igor.

Other popular tales.

Codes of laws.

104 Jig ales

the florid Byzantine style. He is very fond of allegorical representations ; thus, in his sermon on Holy Week, Christianity is represented under the form of spring, Paganism and Judaism under that of winter, and evil thoughts are spoken of as boisterous winds. An attempt to carry this symbolism through other portions of his writings leads him to many fantastic conceits which are far from being in good taste. And here may be mentioned the many lives of the saints and the Fathers to be found in early Russian literature. Some of these have been edited by Count Bezborodko in his Pametniki Starinnoi Russkoi Interaturt (“ Memorials of Ancient Russian Literature”).

We now come to the story of the expedition of Prince Igor, which is a kind of bilina in prose, and narrates the expedition of Igor, prince of Novgorod-Severski, against the Polovtzes. The manuscript was at one time preserved in a monastery at Yaroslavl, but was burnt in the great fire at Moscow in the year 1812. Luckily the story had been edited (after a fashion) by Count Musin-Pushkin, and a transcript was also found among the papers of the empress Catherine. The authenticity of this production has been disputed by

some modern scholars, but without solid grounds. The original was seen by several men of letters in Russia, Karamzin among the number. ‘There is a mixture of Christian and heathen allusions, but there are parallels to this style of writing in such a piece as the “Discourse of a Lover of Christ and Advocate of the True Faith,” from which an extract has been given by Buslaeff in his Chrestomathy. Unlike most of the productions of this period, which are tedious, and interesting only to the philologist and antiquary, there is a great deal of poetical spirit in the story of Igor, and the metaphors are fre- quently very vigorous. Mention is made in it of another bard named Boyan, but none of his inspirations have come down to us. A strange legend is that of the czar Solomon and Kitovras, but the story occurs in the popular literatures of many countries. Some similar productions among the Russians are merely adaptations of old Bulgarian tales, especially the so-called apocryphal writings. The Zadon- stchina is a sort of prose-poem much in the style of the “Story of Igor,” and the resemblance of the latter to this piece and to many other of the skazania included in or attached to the Russian chronicle, furnishes an additional proof of its genuineness. The account of the battle of the “Field of Woodcocks,” which was gained by Dmitri Donskoi over the Mongols in 1380, has come down in three important versions. The first bears the title “Story of the Fight of the Prince Dmitri Ivanovich with Mamai”; it is rather meagre in details but full of expressions showing the patriotism of the writer. The second version is more complete in its historical details, but still is not without anachronisms. The third is altogether poetical. The Poviest 0 Drakule (“Story of Drakula”) is a collection of anecdotes relating to a cruel prince of Moldavia, who lived at the beginning of the 15th century. Several of the bar- barities described in it have also been assigned to Ivan the Terrible.

The early Russian laws present many features of interest, such as the Russkaia Pravda of Yaroslaff, which is preserved in the chronicle of Novgorod; the date is between 1018 and 1054. Large additions were made to it by subsequent princes. It has many points in common with the Scandinavian codes, e.g., trial by wager of battle, the wergild, and the circuits of the judges. The laws show Russia at that time to have been in civilization quite on a level with the rest of Europe. But the evil influence of the Mongols was soon to make itself felt. The next important code is the

Sudebnik of Ivan IIL, the date of which is 1497; this was followed by that of Ivan IV., of tho year 1550, in which we have a republi-

SIA

cation by the czar of his grandfather's laws, with additions, In the time of this emperor also was issued the Stoglay (1551), a body of ecclesiastical regulations. Mention must also be nade of the Ulozhenie or '* Ordinance" of the czar Alexis. This abounds with enactments of sanguinary punishment: women are buried alive for murdering their husbands ; torture is recognized as a means of procuring evidence ; and the knout and mutilation are mentioned on almost every page. Some of the penalties are whimsical: for instance, the man who uses tobacco is to have his nose cut off ; this, however, was to be altered by Peter the Great, who himself practised the habit and encouraged it in others.

In 1553 a printing press was established at Moscow, and in 1564 the first book was printed, an " Apostol,"

[LITERATURE,

and the Epistles. The printers were Ivan Feodoroff and Peter Mstislavetz ; a monument was erected a year or two ago tothe memory of the former. As early as 1548 Ivan had invited printers to Russia, but they were detained on their journey. Feodoroff and his companions were soon, however, compelled to leave Russia, and found a protector in Sigismund III. The cause of their failure appears to have been the enmity which they had stirred up among the copyists of books, who felt that their means of gaining a livelihood were lessened. They succeeded accordingly in drawing over to their side the more fanatical priests, who thought it degrading that the sacred books should be multiplied by such an art, just as at the present day the Arabs refuse to allow the Koran to be printed. The first Slavonic Bible was printed at Ostrog in Volhynia in 1581, Another press, however, was soon established at Moscow ; up to 1600 sixteen books had been issued there.

A curious work of the time of Ivan the Terrible is the Time of Domostror, or " Book of Houschold Management," which is Ivan the said to have been

written by the monk Sylvester, although tos

this statement has been disputed. This priest was at one time very influential with Ivan, but ultimately offended him and was banished to the Solovetzkoi monastery on the White Sea. The work was originally intended by Sylvester for his son Anthemius and his daughter-in-law Pelagia, but it soon became very popular and in general use. We have a faithful picture of the Russia of the time, with all its barbarisms and ignorance. We see the unbounded authority of the husband in his own house- hold: he may inflict personal chastisement upon his wife; and her chief duty lies in ministering to his wants, The Mongols had introduced into Russia the Oriental seclusion of women ; those of the older time knew nothing of these restrictions. Sylvester, or whoever wrote the book, was a complete conservative, as indeed the clergy of Russia almost universally were.1 To the reign of Ivan the Ter- rible must also be assigned the Chetii-Minei or "Book of Monthly Readings," containing extracts from the Greek fathers, arranged for every day of the week. The work was compiled by the metropolitan Macarius, and was the labour of twelve years. An important writer of the same period was Prince Alexander Kurbski, de- scended from the sovereigns of Yaroslavl, who was born about 1528. In his early days Kurbski saw a great deal of service, having fought at Kazan and in Livonia, But he quarrelled with Ivan, who had begun to perse- cute the followers of Sylvester and Adasheff, and fled to Lithuania in 1563, where he was well received by

1 In a curious letter of the date of 1698, and now among the manu- scripts of the Bodleian, Bishop Burnet writes thus of a priest who accompanied Peter the Great to England : ‘‘ The ezar's pricst is come over, who is a truly holy man, and more learned than I should have imagined, but thinks it a great piece of religion to be no wiser than

his fathers, and therefore cannot bear the thought of imagining that anything among them can want amendment."

as tion of it is called, ¢.e., a book containing the Acts of the Apostles Printing,

LITERATURE, |

Sigismund Augustus. From his retreat he commenced a correspondence with Ivan, in which he reproached him for his many cruelties. Ivan in his answer declared that he was quite justified in taking the lives of his slaves, if he thought it right to do so, While living in Lithuania, Kurbski appeared as the defender of the Greek faith, which was being undermined by the Jesuits. He died in exile in 1583. Kurbski was a fluent writer, but Bestu-zheff Riumin thinks that his hatred of Ivan led him to exaggerate, and he regrets that Karamzin should have followed him so closely. Besides the answers of Ivan to Kurbski, there is his letter to Cosmas, and the brother-hood of the Cyrillian monastery on the White Lake (Bielo Ozero), in which he reproaches them for the self-indulgent lives they are leading. Other works of the 16th century are the Stepennaya Kniga, or "Book of Degrees " (" or Pedi- grees"), in which historical events are grouped under the reigns of the grand-dukes, whose pedigrees are also given ; and the Life of the Czar Feodor Ivanovich (1584-1598), written by the patriarch Job. To the beginning of the 17th century belongs the Chronograph of Sergius Kubasoff of Tobolsk. His work extends from the creation of the world to the accession of Michael Romanoff, and contains interesting accounts of such of the members of the Russian royal family as Kubasoff had himself seen. Something of the same kind must have been the journal of Prince Mstislavski, which he showed the English ambassador Jerome Horsey, but which is now lost.!

To the time of the first Romanofis belongs the story of the siege of Azoff, a prose poem, which tells us, in an inflated style, how in 1637 a body of Cossacks trium- phantly repelled the attacks of the Turks. They had seized this town, which they were anxious to hand over to the czar Michael, but circumstances were not ripe for it. There is also an account of the siege of the Troitza monastery by the Poles during the '"""Smutnoye Vremya," or Period of Troubles, as it is called,—that which deals with the adventures of the false Demetrius and the Polish invasion which followed. But all these are surpassed by the work on Russia of Gregory Karpoff Kotoshikhin. He served in the ambassador's office (posolski prikaz), and when called upon to give information against his col- leagues fled to Poland about 1664. Thence he passed into Sweden and wrote his account of Russia at the request of Count Delagardie, the chancellor of that country. He was executed about 1669 for slaying in a quarrel the master of the house in

which he lived. The manuscript was found by Prof. Solovieff (not the eminent historian lately deceased) at Upsala and printed in 1840. A new edition has recently appeared, and Prof. Grote has col- lected some fresh facts about the author's life, but we have no space here for a minute examination of them. The picture which Kotoshikhin draws of his native country is a sad one: ignorance, cruelty, and superstition are seen everywhere rampant. His work is of great import- ance, since it is from his description, and the facts we gather from the Domostroi, that we can reconstruct the Old Russia of the time before Peter the Great, as in our days the valuable labours of M. Zabielin have done in his work on Russian domestic life. Perhaps, as an exile from his country, Kotoshikhin has allowed himself to write too bitterly. A curious work is the Uriaduk Sokol- michia Puti (" Directions for Falconry"), which was written for the use of the emperor Alexis, who, like many Russians

1 Horsey says: 'I read in their cronickells written and kept in secreat by a great priem prince of that country named Knez Ivan Fedorowich Mistisloskoie, who, owt of his love and favour, imparted unto me many secreats observed in the memory and procis of his tyme, which was fowerscore years, of the state, natur, and government of that comonweelth."—Bond, Russia at the Close of the Sixteenth Century (Hakluyt Society), 1856.

ie eS we 1 A

was defended by Stephen Yavorski.

of old time, was much addicted to this pastime. The Serb, Yuri Krizhanich, who wrote in Russian, was the first Pan- slavist, anticipating Kollar by one hundred and fifty years or more. He wrote a critical Servian grammar (with comparison of the Russian, Polish, Croatian, and White Russian), which was edited from the manuscripts by Bodianski in 1848. For his time he had a very good insight into Slavonic philology. His Panslavism, how- ever, sometimes took a form by no means practical. He went so far as to maintain that a common Slavonic language might be made for all the peoples of that race,— an impossible project which has been the dream of many

enthusiasts. From some unexplained cause he was ban- ished to Siberia, and finished his grammar at Tobolsk. He also wrote a work on the Russian empire, which was edited by Beszonoff in 1860. In it he shows him- self a widely-read man, aud with very extensive Western culture. The picture drawn, as in the corresponding production of Kotoshikhin, is a very gloomy one. The great remedy suggested by the Serb is education. To this period belongs the life of the patriarch Nikon by Shusherin. The struggles of Nikon with the czar, and his emendations of the sacred books, which led to a great schism in Russia, are well known. They have been made familiar to Englishmen by the eloquent pages of Dean Stanley.2, At Moscow may be seen the portrait of this celebrated divine and his tomb; his robes, which have been preserved, show him to have been a man of 7 feet in stature. The mistakes which had crept into the translation of the Scriptures, from the blunders of genera- tions of copyists, were frequently of a ludicrous character ; still, a large number of the people preferred retaining them, and from this revision may be dated the rise of the Raskolniks (Dissenters) or Staro-obriadtzi (those who adhere to the old ritual), With the name of Simeon Polotzki (1628-1680) the old period of Russian literature may be closed. He was tutor to the czar Feodor, son of Alexis, and may be said in a way to have helped to introduce the culture of the West into Russia, as he was educated at Kieff, then a portion of Polish territory. Polotzki came to Moscow about 1664. He wrote religious works (Vienetz Viert, “The Garland of Faith,”) and composed poems and religious dramas (The Prodigal Son, Nebuchadnezzar, &c.). He has left us some droll verses on the czar’s new palace of Kolomenskoe, which are very curious doggerel. ‘The artificial lions that roared, moved their eyes, and walked especially delighted him. Alexis had probably ordered something to be constructed resem- bling the machinery we find mentioned in the Byzantine writers. There does not seem to be any ground for the assertion (often met with even in Russian writers) that Sophia, the sister of Peter the Great, was acquainted with French, and translated some of the plays of Moliére.

And now all things were to be changed as if by an enchanter’s wand. Russia was to leave her martyrologies and historical stories and fragmentary chronicles, and to adopt the forms of literature in use in the West. One of the chief helpers of Peter the Great in the education of the people was Feofane (Theophanes) Procopovich, who advocated the cause of science,

and attacked unsparingly the superstitions then prevalent ; the cause of conservatism The Rock of Faith of the latter was written to refute the Lutherans and Calvinists. Another remarkable writer of the times of Peter the Great was Pososhkoff, who produced a valuable work on Poverty and Riches, a kind of treatise on political economy. Antiokh Kantemir (1708-1744), son of a former hospodar of Moldavia, wrote some clever satires still read; they are imitated from Boileau. He also

2 Lectures on the Kastern Church.

co

Krizha- nich,

Polotzki.

The modern period.

Lomono- soff,

Tatis- tcheff.

Tredia- kovski,

Sumaro- koff.

Kniazh- nin,

Khera- skoff.

Bogdan- ovich.

Khem- nitzer.

Visin.

translated parts of Horace. Besides his satires, he pub- lished versions of Fontenelle's Pluralité des Mondes and the histories of Justin and Cornelius Nepos. He was for some time Russian ambassador at the courts of London and Paris. But more celebrated than these men was MicHaEL Lomonosorr (q.v.). He was an indefatigable writer of verse and prose, and has left odes, tragedies, didactic poetry, essays, and fragments of epics; without being a man of great genius he did much to advance the education of his country. He also made many valu- able contributions to science. Basil Tatistcheff (1686- 1750), a statesman of eminence, was the author of a Rus- sian history which, although written in a confused style and hardly superior to a chronicle, is interesting as the first attempt in that field, which was afterwards so successfully cultivated by Karamzin, Solovieff, and Kosto- maroff. His work was not given to the world till after his death. There had been a slight sketch published before by Khilkoff, entitled the Marrow of Russian History. Basil Trediakovski (1703-1769) was but a poor poetaster, in spite of his many productions. He was born at Astrakhan, and we are told that Peter, passing through that city at the time of his Persian expedition, had Trediakovski pointed out to him as one of the most promising boys of the school there. Whereupon, having questioned him, the czar said, with truly prophetic insight, "A busy worker, but master of nothing." His Zelemakhida, a poem in which he versified the Télémaque of Fénelon, drew upon him the derision of the wits of the time. He had frequently to endure the rough horse-play of the courtiers, for the position of a literary man at that time in Russia was not altogether a cheerful one.

From the commencement of the reign of Elizabeth Russian literature made great progress, the French furnishing models. Alexander Sumarokoff (1718-1777) wrote prose and verse in abundance—comedies, tragedies, idyls, satires, and epigrams. He is, perhaps, best entitled to remembrance for his plays, which are rhymed, and in the French style. It took the Russians some time to find out that their language was capable of the unrhymed iambic line, which is the most suitable for tragedy. His Dmitri Samozanetz ("Demetrius the Pretender") is certainly not without merit. Some of the pieces of Kniazhnin had great success in their time, such as The Chat- terbox, The Originals, and especially The Fatal Carriage. He is now, however, almost forgotten. In 1756 the first theatre was opened at St Petersburg, the director being Sumarokoff. Up to this time the Russians had

acted only religious plays, such as those written by Simeon Polotzki. The reign of Catherine IL. (1762-96) saw the rise of a whole generation of court poets, many of whom were at best but poor writers. Everything in Russia was to be forced like plants in a hot-house; she was to have Homers, Pindars, Horaces, and Virgils. Michael Kheraskoff (1733-1807) wrote besides other poems two enormous epics—the Rossiada in twelve books, and Vladimir in eighteen ; they are now but little read. Although they are tedious poems on the whole, yet we occasionally find spirited passages. Bogdanovich (1743-1803) wrote a pretty lyric piece, Dushenka, based upon La Fontaine, and telling the old story of the loves of Cupid and Psyche. Perhaps the elegance of the versification is the best thing to be found in it. With Ivan Khemnitzer begins the long list of fabulists ; this half-Oriental form of literature, so common in countries ruled absolutely, has been very popular in Russia. Khemnitzer (1744-1784), whose name seems to imply a German origin, began by translating the fables of Gellert, but afterwards produced original specimens of this kind of literature. A writer of real national comedy appeared in Denis von Visin, probably of

German extraction, but born at Moscow (1745-1792), His best production is Vedorosl (‘‘The Minor”), in which he satirizes the coarse features of Russian society, the ill- treatment of the serfs, and other matters. The colouring of the piece is truly national. He has also left some very good letters describing his travels. He saw France on the eve of the great Revolution, and has well described what he did see. Russian as he was, and accustomed to serfdom, he was yet astonished at the wretched condi- tion of the French peasants. The great poet of the age of Catherine, the laureate of her glories, was Gabriel Der- Derzhavin (1743-1816). He essayed many styles of zhavin, composition, and was a great master of his native language, Many of his lyric pieces are full of fire. No one can deny the poet a vigorous imagination and a great power of expressing his ideas. There is something grandiose and organ-like in his high-sounding verses; unfortunately he occasionally degenerates into bombast. His versification is perfect ; and he had the courage, rare at the time, to write satirically of many persons of high rank. His Ode to God is the best known of his poems in Western countries, We can see from some of his pieces that he was a student of Edward Young, the author of the Night Thoughts, Tawdry rhetoric, containing, however, occasionally fine and original thoughts,

rendered this writer popular throughout Europe. Other celebrated poems of Derzhavin are the Odes on the Death of Prince Mestcherski, The Nobleman, The Taking of Ismail, and The Taking of Warsaw.

An unfortunate author of the days of Catherine was Radis- Alexander Radistcheff, who, having, in a small work, A teheft Journey to Moscow, spoken too severely of the miserable condition of the serfs, was punished by banishment to Siberia, from which he was afterwards allowed to return, but not till his health had been permanently injured by his sufferings. An equally sad fate befell the spirited writer Novikoff, who, after having worked hard as a Novikoft journalist, and done much for education in Russia, fell under the suspicion of the Government, and was imprisoned by Catherine. On her death he was released by her successor. The short reign of Paul was not favour- able to literary production; the censorship of the press was extremely severe, and many foreign books were excluded from Russia. Authors and lovers of literature were liable to get into trouble, as we see by the experiences of the poet Kotzebue and pastor Seidler.

But a better state of things came with the reign of Alexander, one of the glories of whose days was Nicwonas Karamuin, KaRaMZzIn (q.v.). His chief work is his History of the Russian Empire, but he appeared in the fourfold aspect of historian, novelist, essayist, and poet. Nor need we do more than mention the celebrated Archbishop PiaTon Platon. (q.v.). Ivan Dmitrieff (1760-1837) wrote some pleasing Dmitrief lyrics and epistles, but without much force. He is like some feeble British poets towards the close of last cen- tury, in whom the elegance of the diction will not atone for the feebleness of the ideas. He appears from his translations to have been well acquainted with the English poets. Ozeroff wrote a great many tragedies, which are Ozerofi. but little read now. ‘They are in rhyming alexandrines.

His form belongs to the false classical school, but he occasionally handled native subjects with success, as in his Dmitri Donskoi and Yaropolk and Oleg. In Ivan Kriloft Kriloff (1768-1844) the Russians found their most genial fabulist, His pieces abound with vigorous pictures of Russian national life, and many of his lines are standard quotations with the Russians, just as Hudibras is with our- selves. Long before his death Kriloff had become the most popular man in Russia. He resembled La Fontaine not

only in the style of his verse but in his manner of life. He was the same careless, unpractical sort of person, and

mh

tain

nit

afl

paoft

i

Ler Ig

ie- the novel, and many others.

showed the same simplicity of character. As Derzhavin was the poet of the age of Catherine, so Zhukovski (1783- 1852) may be said to have been that of the age of Alexander. He is more remarkable, however, as a trans- lator than as an original poet. With him Romanticism began in Russia. The pseudo-classical school, led by the

French, was now dead throughout Europe. In 1802 he published his version of Gray's Elegy, which at once became a highly popular poem in Russia. Zhukovski

translated many pieces from the German (Goethe, Schiller, Uhland) and English (Byron, Moore, Southey). One of his original productions, "The Poet in the Camp of the Russian Warriors," was on the lips of every one at the time of the war of the fatherland (Otechestvennaia Voina) 'n 1812. He attempted to familiarize the Russians with all the most striking specimens of foreign poetical litera- ture. He produced versions of the episode of Nala and Damayanti from the Mahabharata, of Rustam and Zohrab from the Shah-Namah, and of a part of the Odyssey. In the case of these three

masterpieces, however, he was obliged to work from literal translations (mostly German), as he was unacquainted with the original languages. The

Iliad was translated during this period by Gnedich, who

was familiar with Greek. He has produced a faithful and spirited version, and has naturalized the hexameter in the Russian language with much skill. Constantine Batiushkoff

- (1787-1855) was the author of many elegant poems, and

at the outset of his career promised much, but sank into imbecility, and lived in this condition to an advanced age. Merzliakoff and Tziganoff deserve a passing notice as the writers of songs some of which still keep their popularity. As the poet of the age of Catherine was Derzhavin, and of that of Alexander Zhukovski, so the next reign, that of Nicholas, was to have its representative poet, by the common consent of his critics the greatest whom Russia had yet seen. During his short life (1799-1837) Alexander Pushkin produced many celebrated poems, which will be found enumerated in the article devoted to him (see Pousuxin). It may suffice to say here that he tried almost all styles of composition—the drama, lyric poetry, In Alexander Griboiedoff (1794-1829) the Russians saw the writer of one of their most clever comedies (Gore ot Uma), which may perhaps be translated “The Misfortune of being too Clever” (lit. “Grief out of Wit”). The fate of Griboiedoff was sad ; he was murdered in a riot at Teheran, where he was residing as Russian minister at the court of Persia. The poet is said to have had a presentiment of his fate and to have been unwilling to go. Pushkin, while travelling in the Caucasus, in the track of the army of Paskewitch, met the body of his friend, which was being carried to Tiflis for burial. The satirical powers of Griboiedoff come out in every line of his play; he was unquestionably a man of genius. A few words may be allowed to Ivan Kozloff (1774-1838), the author of some pretty original lyrics, and some translations from the English, among others Burns’s Cotter’s Saturday Night. He became a cripple and blind, and his misfortunes elicited some cheering and sympathetic lines from Pushkin, which will always be read with pleasure.

Since the death of Pushkin, the most eminent Russian

‘ poet is Lermontoff (1814-41); his life terminated, like

that of his predecessor, ina duel. He has left us many exquisite lyrics, mostly written in a morbid and melan- choly spirit. In quite a different vein is his clever imita- tion of a Russian bilina, “Song about the Czar Ivan Vasilievich, the Young Oprichnik, and the Bold Mer- chant Kalashnikoff.” The poet was of Scotch extrac- tion (Learmont), the termination being added to Russify his name. In one of his pieces he has alluded to his

Caledonian ancestors. His chief poems are “The Demon,” “The Novice” (‘Mtziri,” a Georgian word), and “ Hadji Abrek.” He also wrote a novel, A Zero of our Time. He has faithfully reproduced in his poems the wild and varied scenery of the Caucasus and Georgia; from them he has drawn his inspiration—feeling, no doubt, that the flat grey landscapes of northern Russia offered no attractions to the poet. people, and one of their most truly national authors, was Koltzoff (1809-1842), the son of a tallow merchant of Voronezh. He has left usa few exquisite lyrics, which are to be found in all the collections of Russian poetry. He died of consumption after a protracted illness. Another

poet who much resembled Koltzoff was Nikitin, born Nikitin.

in the same town, Voronezh. His life was spent in poverty; his father was an incurable drunkard, and brought his family to the greatest distress. Nikitin, to support his relations, was obliged to keep an inn; this he was afterwards enabled to change for the more congenial occupation of a bookseller. He died in 1861. The novel in Russia has had its cultivators in Zagoskin and Lazhechnikoff, who imitated Sir Walter Scott. The most

celebrated of the romances of Zagoskin was Yurt Mzlo- Zagoskin.

slavski, a tale of the expulsion of the Poles from Russia in 1612. The book may even yet be read with interest ; it gives a very spirited picture of the times ; unfortunately, as is but too often the case with the writings of Sir

Walter Scott himself, a gloss is put upon the barbarity of the manners of the period, and the persons of the novel have sentiments and miodes of expressing them which could only have existed about two centuries afterwards. There is also too much of the sentimentalism which was prevalent at the time when the author wrote. Aniong the better known productions of Lazhechnikoff are The Heretic and The Palace of Ice. A flashy but now forgotten writer of novels was Bulgarin, author of Ivan Vishigin, a work which once enjoyed considerable popular-

ity. The first Russian novelist of great and original talent Gogol.

was Nicholas Gogol (1809-1852). In his Dead Souls he satirized all classes of society, some of the portraits being wonderfully vivid; take, for example, that of Pliush- kin, the miser. Being a native of Little Russia, he is very fond of introducing descriptions of its scenery and the habits of the people, especially in such stories as the Old-fashioned Household, or in the more powerful Taras Bulba. This last is a highly-wrought story, giving us a picture of the savage warfare carried on between thie Cossacks and Poles. Taras is brave, but perhaps too much of a barbarian to be made interesting to Western readers. He reminds us of some of the heroes of the Cossack poet Shevchenko. Gogol was also the author of a good comedy, The Reviser, wherein the petty pilferings of Russian muni- cipal authorities are satirized. In his Memoirs of a Mad- man and Portrait, he shows a weird and fantastic power which proves him to have been a man of strong imagina- tion. The same may be said of Zhe Cloak, and the curious tale Vii ("The Demon"), where he gives us a picture of Kieff in the old days. He has very dexterously interwoven his tales with the traditions and superstitions of Little Russia. The fate of Gogol was sad; he sank into religious melancholy, and ultimately into imbecility. He made great efforts to destroy all his writings, and indeed burnt most of the second part of his Dead Souls; only fragments have been preserved. His Confessions of an Author is the production of a mind verging on insanity. He died in 1852, aged forty-two. Since his time the novel has been very much cultivated in Russia, the school culminating in Ivan Turgenieff, but it is the school of Thackeray and Dickens, not that of Balzac and George Sand. The Russians seem to affect especially the realistic

A genuine bard of the Koltzoff.

Herzen.

Turgen- ieff.

Belinski.

His- torians. Polevoi.

novels of England. Among the most conspicuous of these writers was the celebrated Alexander Herzen, author of a striking romance, Kto Vinovat ? (“Who is to Blame ?”), which he published under the assumed name of Iskander. The public career of Herzen is well known. The freedom of his opinions soon embroiled him with the authorities. He was exiled to Perm, and, seizing the first opportunity which offered itself of passing the Russian frontiers, he spent the remainder of his life chiefly in France and England, and died at Geneva in 1869. His celebrated journal Kolokol (‘The Bell”) had a great circulation. A novelist of repute was Goncharoff, his two chief works being A Common-place Story and Oblomof Grigorovich has written The /isherman and The Emigrants. Pisemski, another novelist of the realistic type, is the author of The Man of St Petersburg and Liesht (“ The Wood Demons”). Other novelists of celebrity are Salttkoff, who writes under the name of Stchedrin, and whose Provincial Sketches pub- lished a few years ago made a great sensation and have been followed by Letters to My Aunt and other works; Dostoievski (d. 1881), author of Poor People, Letters from the fTouse of the Dead (describing his impressions of Siberia, whither he was banished in consequence of a political offence), a powerful writer; and Ostrovski. We may also add Ryeshetnikoff, who takes his characters from the humbler classes ; he died at the early age of thirty-nine. All these are disciples of the school of Dickens and Thackeray. Count

On September 4, 1883, died Ivan Turgenieff, aged sixty-four, the most eminent Russian novelist, and perhaps the only Russian man of letters universally known. His celebrity dates from his Memoirs of a Sportsman, in which he appears as the advocate of the Russian muzhth or pea- sant. He

had witnessed in his youth many sad scenes at his own home, where his mother, a wealthy lady of the old school, treated her serfs with great cruelty. The poet devoted all his energies to procure their emancipation. This work was followed by a long array of tales, too well known to need recapitulation here, which have gained their author a European reputation, such as Dvorianskoe Gnezdo ("A Nest of Gentle People"), one of the most pathetic tales in any language, Vou ("Virgin Soil"), and others ; nor can the minor tales of Turgenieff be forgotten, especially Mumu, a story based upon real life, for the dumb door- keeper was a serf of his mother's, and experienced her ill- treatment. His last two works were Poetry in Prose and Clara Milich.

In Belinski the Russians produced their best critic. For thirteen years (1834-1847) he was the Aristarchus of Russian literature and exercised a healthy influence. In his latter days he addressed a withering epistle to a on the newly-adopted reactionary views of the atter.

Since the time of Karamzin the study of Russian history has made great strides. He was followed by Nicholas Polevoi, who wrote what he called the LTistory of the Russian People, but his work was not received with much favour and has now fallen into oblivion. Polevoi was a self-educated man, the son of a Siberian merchant re besides editing a well-known Russian journal The Telegraph, he was also the author of many plays, among others a translation of Hamlet. Since his time, however, the English dramatist has been produced in a more

perfect dress by Kroneberg, Druzhinin, and others. In

the year 1879 died Sergius Solovieff, whose story Of Solovieg

fussia had reached its twenty-eighth volume, and fragments of the twenty-ninth were published after his death. This stupendous labour lacks something of the critical faculty, and perhaps may be described rather as a quarry of materials for future historians of Russia than an actual history. During 1885 the Russians have had to

mourn the loss of Kostomaroff, the writer of many valuable Kosto. monographs on the history of their country, of which those marol,

on Bogdan Khmelnitzki and the False Demetrius deserve special mention. From 1847 to 1854 Kostomaroff, who had become obnoxious to the Russian Government, wrote nothing, having been banished to Saratoff, and forbidden to teach or publish. But after this time his literary activity begins again, and, besides separate works, the leading Russian reviews, such as Old and New Russia, The His- torical Messenger, and The Messenger of Europe, contain many contributions from his pen of the highest value, In 1885 also died Constantine Kavelin, the author of many valuable works on Russian law, and Kalatcheff, who published a classical edition of the old Russian codes, Tlovaiski and Gedeonoff have attempted to upset the general belief that the founders of the Russian empire were Scandinavians. Their opinions have been alluded to above (p. 87). A good history of Russia was published by

Ustrialoff (1855), but his most celebrated work was his Ustris Tzarstvovame Petra Velikago (“ Reign of Peter the Great”); loft.

in this many important documents first saw the light, and the circumstances of the death of the unfortunate Alexis were made clear. Russian writers of history have not generally occupied themselves with any other subject than that of their own country, but an exception may be found in the writings of Granovski, such as Abbé Suger (1849) and Hour Historical Portraits (1850). So also Kudriay- tzoff, who died in 1850, wrote on “The Fortunes of Italy, from the Fall of the Roman Empire of the West till its Reconstruction by Charlemagne.” He also wrote on “The Roman Women as described by Tacitus.” We may add Kareyeff, now professor at Warsaw, who has written on the condition of the French peasantry before the Revolu- tion. Other writers on Russian history have been Pogo- dine, who compiled a History of Russia till the invasion of the Mongols, 1871, and especially Zabielin, who has written a Ilistory of Russian Life from the most Remote Times (1876), and the Private Lives of the Ozarinas and Cars (1869 and 1872). Leshkoff has written a History of Rus- stan Law to the 18th Century, and Tchitcherin a Listory of Provincial Institutions in Russia in the 17th Century (1 856). To these must be added the work of Zagoskin, LMistory of Law in

the State of Muscovy (Kazan, 1877). Prof. Michael Kovalevski, of the university of Moscow, is now publish- ing an excellent work on Communal Land Tenure, in which he investigates the remains of this custom throughout the world. Of the valuable history of Russia by Prof. Bestuzhefi-Riumin (1872) one volume only has appeared ; the introductory chapters giving an account of the sources and authorities of Russian history are of the highest value. It is the most critical history of Russia which has yet appeared. In 1885 Dubrovin published an excellent his- tory of the revolt of Pugatcheff. The valuable work by Messrs Pipin and Spasovich, History of Slavonic Litera- tures, is the most complete account of the subject, and has been made more generally accessible to Western stu- dents by the German translation of Pech. The Llistory of Slavonic Literature by Schafarik, published in 1826, has long been antiquated. Previous. to this, a history of Russian literature by Paul Polevoi had appeared, which has gone through two editions. It is modelled upon Cham- bers's Cyclopxdia of English Literature. The account of

the Polish rebellion of 1863 by Berg, published in 1873, which gave many startling and picturesque episodes of this celebrated struggle, has now been withdrawn from circulation. It appeared originally in the pages of the Russian magazine, Starina.

Since the death of Lermontoff the chief Russian poet who has appeared is Nicholas Nekrasoff, who died in 1877. He has left six volumes of poetry, which in many respects remind us of the writings of Crabbe; the poet dwells mainly upon the melancholy features of Russian life. He is of that realistic school in which Russian authors so much resemble English. Another writer of poetry deserving mention is Ogarieff, for a long time the companion in exile of Herzen in England; many of his compositions appeared in the Polar Star of the latter, a medley of prose and verse, which contains some very important papers, including the interesting autobiographical sketches of Herzen, entitled Béloe ¢ Dumi ("The Past and my Thoughts"). Maikoff at one time enjoyed great popu- larity as a poet; he is a kind of link between the present generation and that of Pushkin, of whose elegance of versification he is somewhat of an imitator. Another poet of a past

generation was Prince Viazemski, whose works are now being collected. Graceful lyrics have also becn written by Mei, Fet (whose name would apparently prove Dutch extraction, Veth), Stcherbina, and, going a little farther back, Yazikoff, the friend of Pushkin, and Khomi- akoff, celebrated for his Slavophile propensities. To these may be added Mdlle Zhadovskaia, who died a short time ago, Benediktoff, Podolinski, and Tiutcheff. It will be seen that in Russia (as in England) lyrical poetry is almost the only form now cultivated. It is becoming more and more coloured with imitations of the bilini and reproduc- tions of the old Russian past, which is perhaps getting treated somewhat fantastically, as was the old Irish life in the Irish melodies of Moore. Occasionally Polonski con- tributes one of his exquisite lyrics to the Veestnik Yevropi ("European Messenger ").

Excellent works on subjects connected with Slavonic philology have been published by Vostokoff, who edited the Ostromir Codex, mentioned above (p. 103), and Sreznevski and Bodianski, who put forth an edition of the celebrated codex used at Rheims for the coronation of the French kings. Since their deaths their work has been carried on by Prof. Grote (Philological Investigations, also many critical editions of Russian classics). Budilovich, now a professor at Warsaw, Potebnya of Kharkoff, and Baudoin de Courtenay, who, among other services to philology, has described the Slavonic dialect spoken by the Resanians, a tribe living in Italy, in two villages of the Julian Alps. The songs (bilini) of the Russians have been collected by Zakrevski, Ribnikoff, Hilferding, Barsoff, and others, and their national tales by Sakharoff, Afanasieff, and Hrlen- vein. Kotliarevski, Tereshenko, and others have treated of their customs and superstitions, but it is to be regretted that no one as yet has made a complete study of the vexed question of Slavonic mythology. At the present

Language"), by Dahl, has gone into a second edition. Alexander Hilferding published some valuable works on ethnology and philology, among others on the Polabes, an extinct Slavonic tribe who once dwelt on the banks of the Elbe. Although they have produced some good Sla- vonic scholars, the Russians have not exhibited many works in the field of classical or other

branches of philo- logy. Exception, however, must be made in favour of the studies of Tchubinoff in Georgian, Minayeff in the Indian, and Tzvetayeff in the old languages of Italy.

In moral and mental philosophy the Russians have pro- duced but few authors. We meet with some good mathe- maticians, Ostrogradski among others, and in natural science the publications of the Society for Natural History at Moscow have attracted considerable attention.

Since the Boris Godunoff of Pushkin, which was the Recent first attempt in Russia to produce a play on the Shake- drama.

spearian model, many others have appeared in the same style. A fine trilogy was composed by Count A. Tolstoi on the thrce subjects, Zhe Death of Ivan the Terrible (1866), Zhe Czar Feodor (1868), and The Czar Boris (1869). Other plays of merit have been written by Ostrovski and Potiekhin.

Many excellent literary journals and magazines make Serials.

their appearance in the country; among these may especially be mentioned the time-honoured Viestnik Yevropt (‘Messenger of Europe”), which contains some of the most brilliant writing produced in the Russian empire. The Zstoricheski Viestnek (‘‘ Historical Messenger”) is full of curious matter, and does not confine itself merely to Russian subjects. It is edited by M. Shubinski, the author of some pleasant sketches on the manners of Russia in the old time. On the contrary Stara (the “Antiquary,” if we may so freely translate the original name) is entirely Russian, and is a valuable repertory of documents concerning the history of the country, and memoirs, especially relating to the latter part of the 17th century. The highly interesting magazine Drevnaia + Novaia Rossia did not protract its existence beyond six years, having come to an end in 1881. Many of the best Russian writers contributed to it; it contains much valuable material for the student of history. The Russkiz Arkhiv is edited by M. Bartenieff, and has long been celebrated ; some of the most important notes on Russian history of the 18th and 19th century have appeared in this journal. During the last few years extensive excava- tions have been made in many parts of Russia, and much has been done to throw light upon the prehistoric period of the country. A large “ kurgan,” called Cherna Mogila, or the Black

Grave, was opened by Samokvasoff in the government of Tchernigoff and described in the pages of Old and New Russia. Explorations have been carried on on the site of Bolgari, the ancient capital of the Ugrian Bolgars on the Volga. One of the most active workers in this field was the late Count Uvaroff (d. 1884), who pub- lished a valuable monograph on the Stone Age in Russia, and many other important works.

A few words must be said on the literature of the Russian The Little dialects, the Little and White Russian, The Little Russian is Russian rich in skazki (tales) and songs. Peculiar to them is the dwma, dialcct,

a narrative poem which corresponds in many particulars with the or Malo-

time Stanislaus Mikutzki, professor at the university of Warsaw, is publishing his Materials for a Dictionary of the Roots of the Russian and all Slavonic Dialects, but,

unfortunately, it represents a somewhat obsolete school of philology. The Early Russian Text Society continues its useful labours, and has edited many interesting monu- ments of the older Slavonic literature. Quite recently two valuable codices have been printed in Russia, Zogra- phus and Marianus, interesting versions of the Gospels in Palxeoslavonic. They were edited by the learned Croat Jagié, who now occupies the chair of Sreznevski in St Petersburg. An excellent Tolkovi Slovar Velikorusskago Yazika (“Explanatory Dictionary of the Great Russian

Russian bilina. when curiosity was first aroused on the subject of national poetry, the Little Russian dwmt have been repeatedly edited, as by Maksimovich Metlinski and others. An elaborate edition (far surpassing the earlier ones) was commenced by Dragomanoff and Antonovich, but as yet only one volume and a portion of a second have made their appearanee. Just as the bilini of the Great Russians, so also these dumi of the Little Russians admit of classification, and they have been divided by their latest editors as follows :—(1) the songs of the druzhina, treating of the early princes and their followers ; (2) the Cossack period (Kozachestvo), in which the Cossacks are found in continual warfare with the

Since the commencement of the present century, russian.

Shev- chenko.

Polish pans and the attempts of the Jesuits to introduce the Roman Catholic religion ; (3) the period of the Haidamaks, who formed the nucleus of the national party, and prolonged the struggle. The gradual break up of the military republic of these sturdy freebooters has already been described. :

The foundation of the Little Russian literature (written, as opposed to the oral) was laid by Ivan Kotliarevski (1769-1838), whose travesty of part of the dneid enjoys great popularity among some of his countrymen. Others, however, object to it as tending to bring the language or dialect into ridicule. A truly national poet appeared in Taras Shevehenko, born at the village of Kirilovka in the government of Kieff, in the condition of aserf. The strange adventures of his early life he has told us in his autobiography. He did not get his frecdom till some time after he had reached manhood, when he was purchased from his master by the gener- ous efforts of the poet Zhukovski and others. Besides poetry, he occupied himself with painting with considerable success. He unfortunately became obnoxious to the Government, and was punished with exile to Siberia from 1847 to 1857. He did not long survive his return, dying in 1861, aged forty-six. No one has described with greater vigour than Shevchenko the old days of the Ukraine. In his youth he listened to the village traditions handed down by the priests, and he has faithfully reproduced them. The old times of Nalivaiko, Doroshenko, and others live over again. Like Gogol he is too fond of describing scenes of bloodshed. In the powerful poem entitled Haidamak we have a graphic picture of the horrors enacted by Gonta and his followers at Uman. The sketches are almost too realistic. Like Burns with the old Scottish songs, so Shevchenko has reproduced admirably the spirit of the lays of the Ukraine. All those familiar with his works will remember the charming little lyrics with which they are interspersed. The funeral of the poet was a vast public procession ; a great cairn, surmounted with a cross, was raised over his remains, where he lies buried near Kanioff on the banks

South Russian Revolutionists.” He is the great national poct of the Sonthern Russians. A complete edition of his works, with interesting biographical notices—one contributed by the novelist Turgenieti—appeared at Praguc in

1876. Besides the nationa] songs, excellent eollections of the South Russian folk-tales have appeared, edited by Dragomanoff, Rudchenko, and others. Many of these are still recited by the “tchumaki” or wandering pedlars, A valuable work is the Zapiski o Yuzhnoi Rossii (“Papers on Southern Russia”), published atSt Petersburg in 1857 by Panteleimon Kulish, After he got into trouble (with Kostomaroff and Shevchenko) for his political views, the late works of this author show him to have undergone a complete change. Other writers using the Little Russian language are Marko-Vovchok (that is, Madame Eugenia Markovich), and Yuri Fedkovich, who employs a dialeet of Buko- vina. Fedkovich, like Shevchenko, sprang from a peasant family, and served as a soldier in the Austrian army against the French during the Italian campaign. Naturally we find his poems filled with descriptions of life in the camp. Like the Croat Preradovié, he began writing poetry in the German language, till he was turned into more natural paths by some patriotie friends. A eollection of songs of Bukovina was published at Kieff in 1875 by Lona- chevski. At the present time Eugene Zelechowski continues his valuable Dictionary of Little Russian, of which about one half has appeared. This promises to be a very useful book, for up to the present time students have been obliged to rest satisfied with the scanty publications of Levchenko, Piskunoff, and Verchratzki, There is a good grammar by Osadtza, a pupil of Miklosich.

In the White Russian dialect are to be found only a few songs, White with the exception of portions of the Scriptures and some legal Russian documents. A valuable dictionary was published a short time ago dialect, by Nosovich, but this is one of the most neglected of the Russian dialects, as the part in which it is spoken is one of the dreariest of the empire. Collections of White Russian songs have been published by Shein and others. For details regarding this and the

of the Dnieper. His grave has been styled the ‘‘ Mecca of the | other Russian dialects see SLAVS. (W. R. M.) INDEX.

Administration, 70, Crime, 71. Georgia annexed, 100. Ladislaus, 95. Physieal features, 67, 72. | Shuiskis, 92, 95,

Ahmed Khan, 91, Crimea annexed, 100. Gnedich, 107. Language, 110. Platon, 106. Siberia, acquisition of, 93,

Alexander I., 100, Crimean War, 102, Godunoff, 93. Law eodes, 96, 104. Plevna, sicge of, 102. Slavonians, 78,

Alexander I1II., 102, Cyril, 103. Gogol, 107. Lermontoff, 107. Poetry, reeent, 109, Soil, 75.

Alexander Nevski, 90. Daniloff, 103. Golden Horde, 90. Lipetsk, battle of, 90. Poland, partition of, 99; | Solovieff, 108,

Alexis, 96. Debt, 72. Golitzin, 97. Literature, 102-110. insurrection in, 101, Sophia, regent, 96.

Andrew Bogoliubski, 89. | Derzhavin, 106, Government, 70. Little Russians, 79. Poleyoi, 108, Speranski, 101.

Animals, 77. Dmitri, 93, 94. Governments (provinees), | Lomonosoff, 106. Polotzki, 105. Statistics, 69, 81.

Anna, 98, Dmitrieff, 106. 69, 71. Maikoff, 109. Poltava, battIc of, 97. Steppes, 77,

Arakcheef, 101. Dolgorukis, 98. Great Russians, 79. Manufactures, 85, Population, 68, 81. Sumarokoff, 106,

Archeology, 109. Domostroi, 104. Griboiedoff, 107, Mazeppa, 97. Pososhkoff, 105. Suwaroff, 100.

Arca, 67, 72. Drakula, story of, 104, llerzen, 108. Mecarius, 104. Postal service, 87, Suzdal principality, 89.

Army, 72. Drama, 106, 109. llistorians, 108. Meteorology, 76. Printing, introduetion of, | Sweden, conflict with, 97

Artels, 84. Dumi, 109. History, 87-102. Miehacl, 95. 104. Sylvester, 104.

Austerlitz, battle of, 100. | Education, 71. Tee, battle of the, 90. Mongolian raee, 79, Proeopovieh!, 105. Tales, 104,

Basil, 91. Elizabeth, 98, Igor, story of, 104. Mongol supremacy, 90. Provinces, 69. Tartars, 79.

Basil Shuiski, 95, Emigration, 81. Industries, 84-86, Mortality, 81. Pskoff republic, 89, 91. Tatisteheff, 106.

Batiushkoff, 107. England, war with, 102. Islands, 67. Napoleon's invasion, 100. | Pugateheff, 99. Teutonic knights, 92.

Belinski, 108. Ethnography, 78. Ivan LII., 91. National debt, 72. Pushkin, 107. Tolstvi, 108.

Bilini, 102, 107, 109. European Russia, 72. Ivan 1Y. (the Terrible), | Navarino, battle of, 101. | Raccs, 68, 78. Towns, 70.

Biren, 98, Fauna, 77. 92. Navy, 72. Radistcheff, 106. Trade, 86,

Births, 81. Fedkovieh, 110. Jews, 79. Nekrasoff, 109. Railways, 87. Trediakovski, 106.

Bogdanovich, 106, Feodor 1., 93. Kantemir, 105. Nestor, 103. Raskolniks, 81. Tundras, 75.

Bogoliubski, 89. Feodor IL., 95. Karaites, 79. Nicholas, 101. Razin, 96, Turco-Tartars, 79,

Boiars, 81, 92, 95. Feodor II1., 96. Karamzin, 106, Nihilism, 102. Religion, 71, 81. Turgenicff, 108.

Boris, 93. Fermor, 99, Khemnitzer, 106. Nikitin (poet), 107. Revenue, 72. Turkey, wars witli, 97-102,

Borodino, battle of, 101. | Ficld of | Woodeoeks, | Kheraskoff, 106. Nikitin (traveller), 103. Rivers, 73. Ulozhenie, 96, 104.

Boundarics, 67, 72. battle of, 91, 104. Kniazlinin, 106. Nikon, 82, 105. Romanoffs, 95. Ustrialoff, 108.

Catherine I., 98. Finance, 72. Knout, 91. Nonconformists, 81. Romanticism, 107. Vasilii, 91.

Catherine II., 99. Finland annexed, 100, Koltzoff, 107. Novels, 107. Roumanian race, 86. Viazemski, 109.

Charles XIL., 97. Finns, 79. Kostomaroff, 108. Novgorod republie, 89, 91. | Russian race, 78, 79. Village communities, 83, *

Chetii-Minei, 104. Flora, 76. Kotoshikhin, 105. Novikoff, 106. St Petersburg founded, | Visin, 106.

Chronicles, 103. Forests, 76. Kozloff, 107. Ozeroff, 106, 97. Vital statistics, 81.

Church, 71, 81. Fortresses, 72. Kriloff, 106. Paul, 100. Saltikoff, 99. White Russians, 79.

Citics, 70. France, wars with, 100, | Krizhanich, 105. Persia, war with. 101. Schools, 71. Yavorski, 105.

Class divisions, $2. 102. Kubasoff, 105. Peter I. (the Great), 97. Scientifie societies, 71. Zadonstehina, 104.

Climate, 75. Frederick the Great, 99. Kudriavtzoff, 108. Peter I1., 98. Sects, 81, 82. Zagoskin, 107,

Communication, 86 Geography, 67, 72. Kiinersdorf, battle of, 99. | Peter 111., 99. Serfdom, 82, 100, Zhukovski, 107.

Cossacks, 79, Geology, 74. Kurbski, 104. Philology, 109. Shevehenko, 110, Zorndorf, battle of, 99.

RUSTCHUK (Rus¢évx), a city of Bulgaria, Turkey in Europe, on the south bank of the Danube, opposite Giurgevo, at the point where the river receives the waters of the Lom, a fine stream from the northern slopes of the Balkans. Since 1867 it has been connected by rail (139 miles) with Varna. The town was nearly destroyed by the Russian bombardment from Giurgevo in 1877, and the military works have since been dismantled in terms of the treaty of Berlin. Its position on the river frontier of Turkey long made it a place of strategic importance. In 1871 the population was about 23,000 (10,800 Turks, 7700 Bulgarians, 1000 Jews, 800 Armenians, 500 Gipsies,

800 Wallachians and Serbs, 400 Western Europeans), and in 1881 it was returned as 26,163. :

In the time of the Romans Rustchuk was one of the fortified points along the line of the Danube. Inthe Tabula Peutingeriana it appears as Prisca, in the Antonine Itinerary as Scrantaprista, in the Notitia as Scragintaprista, and in Ptolemy as Priste Polis. Destroyed by the barbarian invasion, the town recovered its importance only in comparatively modern times. In 1810 it was eaptured by the Russians, and on his departure next year Kutusoff destroyed the fortifications. In 1828-29 and again in 1853-54 it played a part in the Russo-Turkish War, and in 1877, as already mentioned, it was nearly destroyed.

RUTH, Book or. The story of Ruth, the Moabitess, great-grandmother of David, one of the Old Testament

et

BUT

Hagiographa, is usually reckoned as the second of the five Megilloth or Festal Rolls. This position corresponds to the Jewish practice of reading the book at the Feast of Pentecost; Spanish MSS., however, place Ruth at the head of the Megilloth (see CanricLEs); and the Talmud, in a well-known passage of Baba Bathra, gives it the first place among all the Hagiographa. On the other hand the Septuagint, the Vulgate, and the English version make Ruth follow Judges. It has sometimes been held that this was its original place in the Hebrew Bible also, or rather that Ruth was originally reckoned as an appen- dix to Judges, since it is only by doing this, and also by reckoning Lamentations to Jeremiah, that all the books of the Hebrew canon can be reduced to twenty-two, the number assigned by Josephus and other ancient authori- ties. But it has been shown in the article LAMENTATIONS (q.v.) that the argument for the superior antiquity of this way of reckoning breaks down on closer examination, and, while it was very natural that a later rearrangement should transfer Ruth from the Hagiographa to the histor- ical books, and place it between Judges and Samuel, no motive can be suggested for the opposite change. That the book of Ruth did not originally form part of the series of Prophetx priores (Judges—Kings) is further probable from the fact that it is quite untouched by the process of “prophetic” or “Deuteronomistic” editing, which gave that series its present shape at a time soon after the fall of the kingdom of Judah; the narrative has no affinity with the point of view which looks on the.whole history of Israel as a series of examples of divine justice and mercy in the successive rebellions and repentances of the people of God.!_ But if the book had been known at the time when the history from Judges to Kings was edited, it could hardly have been excluded from the collection ; the ancestry of David was of greater interest than that of Saul, which is given in 1 Sam. ix. 1, whereas the old history names no ancestor of David beyond his father Jesse. In truth the book of Ruth does not offer itself as a document written soon after the period to which it refers; it presents itself as dealing with times far back (Ruth i. 1), and takes obvious delight in depicting details of antique life and obsolete usages; it views the rude and stormy period before the institution of the kingship through the softening atmosphere of time, which imparts to the scene a gentle sweetness very different from the harsher colours of the old narratives of the book of Judges. In the language, too, there is a good deal that makes for and nothing that makes against a date sub- sequent to the captivity, and the very

designation of a period of Hebrew history as “the days of the judges” is based on the Deuteronomistic additions to the book of Judges (ii, 16 sg.) and does not occur till the period of the exile. An inferior limit for the date of the book cannot be assigned with precision. It has been argued that, as the author seems to take no offence at the marriage of Israelites with Moabite women, he must have lived before the time of Ezra and Nehemiah (Ezra ix. ; Neh. xiii.) ; but the same argument would prove that the book of Esther was written before Ezra, and indeed ‘‘a disposi- tion to derive prominent Jewish families from proselytes prevailed to a much later date,” and finds expression in the Talmud (see Wellhausen-Bleek, p. 205). The lan- guage of Ruth, however, though post-classical, does not seem to place it among the very latest Old Testament books, and the manner in which the story is told is as remote from the legal pragmatism of Chronicles as from the prophetic pragmatism of .the editor of the older histories. The tone of simple piety and graciousness

1 The religious pragmatism lacking in the original is in part supplied by the Targum (i. 5, 6).

which runs through the narrative, unencumbered by the pedantry of Jewish legality, seems to indicate that the book was written before all the living impulses of Jewish literature were choked by the growing influence of the doctors of the law. In this respect it holds in Hebrew prose writing a position analogous to that of the older Chokma in Hebrew poetry. But the triumph of the scribes in literature as well as in law was not accomplished till long after the time of Ezra.

Wellhausen in Bleek, 4th edition, p. 204 sq., finds the clearest indication of the date of Ruth in the appended genealogy, Ruth iv. 18-22; compare his remarks in Prol. Gesch. Israels, p. 227 (Eng. tr., pp. 217 sq.). Salma (Salmon), father of Boaz, is a tribe foreign to old Judah, which was not “father” of Bethlehem till after the exile, and the names of Salma’s ancestors are also open to criti- cism. But this genealogy is also found in Chronicles, and is quite in the manner of other genealogies in the same book. That it was borrowed from Chronicles and added to Ruth by a later hand seems certain, for the author of Ruth clearly recognizes that Obed was

legally the son of Mahlon, not of Boaz (iv. 5, 10), so that from his standpoint the appended genealogy is all wrong.

The design of the book of Ruth has been much dis- cussed and often in too narrow a spirit; for the author is an artist who takes manifest delight in the touching and graceful details of his picture, and is not simply guided by a design to impart historical information about David's ancestors, or enforce some particular lesson. Now the interest of the story, as a work of art, culminates in the marriage of Boaz and Ruth, not in the fact that their son was David's ancestor, which, if the book originally ended with iv. 17, is only mentioned in a cursory way at the close of the story. Had the author's main design been to illustrate the history of the house of David, as many critics think, or to make the point that the noblest stock in Israel was sprung from an alien mother (Wellhausen), this design would certainly have been brought into more prominence. The marriage acquires an additional interest when we know that Ruth was David's great-grandmother, but the main interest is independent of that, and lies in the happy issue of Ruth and Naomi from their troubles through the loyal performance of the kinsman's part by Boaz. Doubtless the writer meant his story to be an example to his own age, as well as an interesting sketch of the past; but this is effected simply by describing the exemplary conduct of Naomi, Ruth, Boaz, and even Boaz's harvesters. All these act as simple, kindly, God-fearing people ought to act in Israel.

There is one antique custom which the writer follows with peculiar interest and describes with archeological detail as a_thing which had evidently gone out of use in his own day. By old Hebrew law, as by the old law of Arabia, a wife who had been brought into her husband's house by contract and payment of a price to her father was not set free by the death of her husband to marry again at will. The right to her hand lay with the nearest heir of the dead. Originally we must suppose, among the Hebrews as among the Arabs, this law was all to the disadvantage of the widow, whose hand was simply part of the dead man's estate; but, while this remained so in Arabia to the time of Mohammed, among the Hebrews the law early took quite an opposite turn ; the widow of a man who died childless was held to have a right to have a son begotten on her by the next kinsman, and this son was regarded as the son of the dead and succeeded to his inheritance so that his

name might not be cut off from Israel. The duty of raising up a son to the dead lay upon his brother, and in Deut. xxv. 5 is restricted to the case when brothers live together. In old times, as appears from Gen. xxxviii., this was not so, and the law as put in the book of Ruth appears to be that the nearest kinsman of the dead in general had a right to “redeem for himself” the dead man’s estate, but at the same time was bound to marry the widow. The son of this marriage was reckoned as the dead man’s son and succeeded to his property, so that the “redeemer” had only a temporary usufruct in it. Naomi was too old to be married in this way, but

she had certain rights over her husbaud’s cstate which the next kinsman had to buy up before he could enter on the property. And this he was willing to do, but he was not willing also to marry Ruth and beget on her a son who would take the name and estate of the dead and leave him out of pocket. He therefore withdraws and Boaz comes in in his plaee. That this is the sense of the transaction is clear; there is, however, a little obseurity in iv. 5, where one lettcr seems to have fallen out and we must read on FATS Ds, and translate “What day thou buyest the field from Naomi thou must also buy Ruth,” &c. Comp. vv. 9, 10.

Among older commentaries speeial mention may be made of J. B. Carpzov, Collegium rabbinico-biblicum tn libellum Ruth, Leipsie, 1703. In recent times.Ruth has usually been taken up by commentators along with Jupcxs

(g.v.).

RUTHENIANS. See Stavs. For Ruthenian (Little Russian) literature, see Russta.

RUTHENIUM. See PLatTinum.

RUTHERFURD, or Rutuerrorp, Samuet (1600- 1661), Scottish divine, was born about 1600 at the village of Nisbet in Roxburghshire. He is supposed to have received his early education at Jedburgh, and he entered the university of Edinburgh in 1617. He graduated M.A. in 1621, and two years afterwards was elected professor of humanity. On account of some alleged

indiscretion or irregularity connected with his marriage in 1625, he resigned his professorship in that year, but, after study- ing theology, he was in 1627 appointed minister of An- woth, Kirkcudbrightshire, where he displayed remarkable diligence and zeal, alike as preacher, pastor, and student, and soon took a leading place among the clergy of Galloway. In 1636 his first book, entitled Hrercitationes de Gratia —an elaborate treatise against Arminianism—appeared at Amsterdam, and attracted some attention both in Great Britain and on the Continent. Combined with his strict and non-conforming presbyterianism, the severe Calvinism set forth in this work led to a prosecution by the new bishop of the diocese, Sydserff, in the High Commission Court, first at Wigtown and afterwards at Edinburgh, with the result that Rutherfurd was deposed from his pastoral office, and sentenced to confinement in Aberdeen during the king's pleasure. His banishment lasted from September 1636 to February 1638, and was chiefly remarkable for the epistolary activity he displayed, the greater number of his published Letters belonging to this period of his life. He was present at the signing of the Covenant in Edin- burgh in 1638, and afterwards at the meeting of the Glasgow Assembly the same year, which restored him to his parish. In 1639 he was appointed professor of divin- ity in St Mary's College, St Andrews, and shortly after- wards became colleague to Robert Blair in the church of St Andrews. He was sent up to London in 1643 as one of the eight commissioners from Scotland to the West- minster Assembly. Arriving along with Baillie in Novem- ber, and remaining at his post over three years, he did great service to the cause of his party. In 1642 he had pub- lished his Peaceable and Temperate Plea for Paul's Presby- terve in Scotland, and the sequel to it in 1644 on The Due fight of Presbyteries provoked Milton's contemptuous reference to "mere A. S. and Rutherfurd" in his sonnet On the New Forcers of Conscience under the Long Parliament. In 1644 also appeared Rutherfurd's Lea Rex, a Dispute for the Just Prerogative of King and People, which gives him a recognized place among the early writers on constitutional law; it was followed by Zhe Divine Right of Church Government (1646), and Free Disputation against Pretended Liberty of Conscience (1649), Among his other works are the Tryal and Triumph of Faith (1645), Christ Dying and Drawing Sinners to ITimself (1647), and Survey of the Spiritual Antichrist (1648). In 1647 he returned to St Andrews to become principal of the New College there, and in 1648 and 1651 he declined successive invitations to theological chairs at Harderwijk

and Utrecht. His last days were assailed by the persecution which followed the

Restoration in 1660. His Lex Rex was ordered to be burned at the cross of Edinburgh, and also at the gate of the college. He was deprived of all his offices, and on a charge of high treason was cited to appear before the ensuing parliament. His health, however, now utterly broke down, and knowing that he had not long to live he drew up, on 26th February 1661, a Testimony, which was posthumously published. He died on the 20th of the following March.

The fame of Rutherfurd now rests principally upon his remark- able Letters, on which Wodrow thus comments:—‘ He seems to have outdone cven himsclf as well as everybody else in his admir- able and every way singular lettcrs, which, though jested upon by profane wits because of some familiar expressions, yet will be owned of all who have any relish of picty to contain such sublime flights of devotion and to be fraughted with such massy thoughts as loudly speak a soul united to Jesus Christ in the closest embraces, and must needs at once ravish and edify every serious reader.” In addition to the other works already mentioned, Rutherfurd published in 1651 a treatise De Divina Providentia, against Molinvism, Socinianism, and Arminianism, of which Richard Baxter, not without justice, remarked that “as the Letters were the best piece so this was the worst he had ever read.”

The Letters, to the number of 215, were first published anonymously by M‘Ward, an amanuensis, at Rotterdam, in 1664. They have been frequently reprinted, the best edition (365 letters) being that by Rey. A. A. Bonar, 1848, with a sketch of his life. See also a short Life by Rev. Dr Andrew Thomson, 1884,

RUTHERGLEN, an ancient royal burgh of Lanark- shire, Scotland, is situated near the left bank of the Clyde, 2 miles south-east of Glasgow. It consists chiefly of one long wide irregular street, with narrow streets, wynds, and alleys branching from it at intervals. The parish church is situated near the centre of the town, a little distance from the tower of the old church where the treaty was made in 1297 with Edward I., by which Sir John Mon- teith agreed with the English to betray the Scottish hero Wallace. The most important public building is the town- hall, a handsome

structure with a large square tower. In the vicinity there are extensive collieries and ironworks, and the town possesses chemical works, a paper mill, a pottery, and a shipbuilding yard. The corporation consists of a provost, two bailies, a dean of guild, a treasurer, and fifteen councillors. The population of the royal burgh in 1871 was 9239, and in 1881 it was 11,473.

Rutherglen was crected into a royal burgh by King David in 1126. At this time it ineluded a portion of Glasgow, but in 1226 the boundaries were rectificd so as to exclude the whole of that city. In early times it had a castle, which was taken by Bruce from the English in 1313. It was kept in good repair till after the battle of Langside it was burnt by order of the regent Murray. After this the town for a time gradually decayed, the trade being absorbed by Glasgow. Rutherglen is included in the Kilmarnock district of parliamentary burghs.

RUTILIUS CLAUDIUS NAMATIANUS is known to us as the author of a Latin poem in elegiac metre, describ- ing a coast voyage from Rome to Gaul in 416 ap. The literary excellence of the work and the flashes of light which it throws across a momentous but dark epoch of history combine to give it exceptional importance among the relics of late Roman literature. The poem was in two books ; the exordium of the first and the greater part of the second have been lost. What remains consists of about 700 lines.

The poet's voyage took place in the late autumn of 416 (i. 135 sqg.), and the verses as we have them were evi- dently written at or very near the time. The author is a native of southern Gaul, and belonged, like Sidonius, to one of the great governing families of the Gaulish pro- vinces. His father, whom he calls Lachanius, had held high offices in Italy and at the imperial court, had been governor of Etruria and Umbria (consularis Tusciae) pro- bably in 389, when a Claudius is named in the Theodosian Code (2, 4, 5) as having held the office, then imperial treasurer (comes sacrarum largitionum), imperial recorder (quaestor), and governor of the capital itself (praefectus

urbis). Rutilius boasts his career to have been no less distinguished than his father's, and particularly indicates that he had been secretary of state

(magzster officiorum) and governor of the capital (i. 157, 427, 467, 561). It is

probable that a certain Namatius named in the Theodosian Code (6, 27, 15) as magzster officiorum of the year 412 is no other than our poet. ‘The true literary man is apt to be inordinately proud of political distinction, and Rutilius celebrates his own praises in a style worthy of Cicero or Pliny. At all events, he had lived long in the great world of the Western empire, and knew much of the inner history of his time. After reaching manhood, he had passed through the tempestuous period that stretches between the death of Theodosius (395) and the fall of the usurper Attalus, which occurred near the date when our poem was written. He had witnessed the chequered career of Stilicho as actual, though not titular, emperor of the West ; he had seen the hosts of Radagaisus rolled back from Italy, only to sweep over the helpless provinces of Gaul and Spain, the defeats and triumphs of Alaric, the three sieges and final sack of Rome, followed by the marvellous recovery of the city, Heraclian’s vast armament dissipated by a breath, and the fall of seven pretenders to the Western diadem. Undoubtedly the sympathies of Rutilius were with those who during this period dissented from, and, when they could, opposed, the general tendencies of the imperial policy. We know from himself that he was the intimate of dis- tinguished men who belonged to the circle of the great orator Symmachus,—men who had scouted Stilicho’s com- pact with the Goths, and had led the Roman senate to support the pretenders Eugenius and Attalus in the vain hope of reinstating the gods whom Julian had failed to save.

While making but few direct assertions about historical characters or events, the poem, by its very texture and spirit and assumptions, forces on us important conclusions concerning the politics and religion of the time, which are not brought home to us with the same directness by any other authority. The attitude of the writer towards paganism is remarkable. The whole poem is intensely pagan, and is penetrated by the feeling that the world of literature and culture is and must remain pagan, that outside paganism lies a realm of barbarism. The poet wears an air of exalted superiority ovcr the religious innovators of his day, and entertains a buoyant confidence that the future of the ancient gods of Rome will not belie their glorious past. Invective and apology he scorns alike, nor troubles himself to

show, with Claudian, even a suppressed grief at the indignities put upon the old religion by the new. Asa statesman, he is at pains to avoid offending those jeune Christian senators over whom pride in their country had at east as great power as attachment to their new religion. Only once or twice does Rutilius speak directly of Christianity, and then only to attack the monks, whom the temporal authorities had hardly as yet recognized, and whom, indeed, only a short time before, a Christian emperor had forced by thousands into the ranks of his army. Judaism Rutilius could assail without wounding either pagans or Christians, but he intimates, not obseurely, that he hates it chiefly as the evil root whence the rank plant of Christianity had sprung.

We read in Gibbon that ‘‘Honorius excluded all persons who were adverse to the catholic church from holding any office in the state,” that he ‘‘obstinately rejected the service of all those who dissented from his religion,” and that ‘‘the law was applied in the utmost latitude and rigorously executed.” Far different is the pieture of political life impressed upon us by Rutilius. His Voiee is assuredly not that of a partisan of a discredited and over- borne faction. We see by the aid of his poem a senate at Rome composed of past office-holders, the majority of whom were certainly pagan still. We discern a Christian section whose Christianity was political rather than religious, who wcre Romans first and Christians afterwards, whom a new breeze in politics inight easily have wafted back to the old religion. Between these two sections the broad old Roman toleration reigns. Some eeclesiastical historians have fondly imagined that after the sack of Rome the bishop Innocent returned to a position of practical predominance. No one who fairly reads Rutilius can cherish this idea. The air of the capital, perhaps cven of Italy, was still charged with paganism. The court was far in advance of

the people, and the persecuting laws were in large part incapable of execution.

113

Perhaps the most interesting lines in the whole poem are those in which Rutilius assails the memory of ‘‘dire Stilicho,” as he names him. Stilicho, “fearing to suffer all that had caused himself to be feared,” annihilated those

defences of Alps and Apennines which the provident gods had interposed between the barbarians and the Eternal City, and planted the cruel Goths, his ‘“skin-clad”” minions, in the very sanctuary of the empire. His wile was wickeder than the wile of the Trojan horse, than the wile of Althza or of Scylla. May Nero rest from all the torments of the damned, that they may seize on Stilicho, for Nero smote his own mother, but Stilicho, the mother of the world !

We shall not err in supposing that we have here (what we find nowhere else) an authentic expression of the feeling entertained by a majority of the Roman senate concerning Stilicho, He had but imitated the policy of Theodosius with regard to the barbarians, but even that great emperor had met with passive opposition from the old Roman familics. The relations, however, between Alaric and Stilicho had bcen closer and more mysterious than those between Alaric and Theodosius, and men who had seen Stilicho surrounded by his bodyguard of Goths not unnaturally looked on the Goths who assailed Rome as Stilicho’s avengers. It is noteworthy that Rutilius speaks of the crime of Stilicho in terms far different from those used by Orosius and the historians of the lower empire. They believed that Stilicho was plotting to make his son emperor, and that he called in the Goths in order to climb higher. Rutilius holds that he used the barbarians merely to save himself from impending ruin, The Christian historians assert that Stilicho designed to restore paganism. To Rutilius he is the most uncompromising foe of paganism. His crowning sin (recorded by our poct alone) was the destruction of the Sibylline books—-a sin worthy of one who had decked his wife in the spoils of Victory, the goddess who had for centuries presided over the deliberations of the senate. This crime of Stilicho alone is sufficient in the eyes of Rutilius to aceount for the disasters that afterwards befell the city, just as Merobaudes, a generation or two later, traced the miseries of his own day to the overthrow of the ancicnt rites of Vesta.

With regard to the form of the poem, Rutilius handles the elegiac couplet with great metrical purity and freedom, and betrays many signs of long study in the clegiac poetry of the Augustan era. The Latin is unusually clean for the times, and is generally fairly classieal both iu vocabulary and construction, The taste of Rutilius too is comparatively pure. If he lacks the

genius of Claudian, he also lacks his overloaded gaudiness and his large exaggeration, and the directness of Rutilius shines by comparison with the laboured complexity of Ausonius. It is common to call Claudian the last of the Roman poets. That title might fairly be claimed for Rutilius, unless it be reserved for Merobaudes. At any rate in passing from Rutilius to Sidonius no reader can fail to feel that he has left the region of Latin poetry for the region of Latin verse.

Of the many interesting details of the poem we can only mention afew. At the outset we have an almost dithyrambic address to the goddess Roma, whose glory has ever shone the brighter for disaster, and who will rise once more in her might and confound her barbarian foes. The poet shows as deep a consciousness as any modern historian that the grandest achievement of Rome was the spread of law. Next we get incidental but not unimportant references to the destruction of roads and property wrought by the Goths, to the state of the havens at the mouths of the Tiber and the general decay of nearly all the old commercial ports on the coast. Most of thesewere as dcsolate then as now. Rutilius even exaggerates the desolation of the once important city of Cosa in Etruria, whose walls have scarcely changed from that day to ours. The port that served Pisee, almost alone of all those visited by Rutilius, seems to have retained its prosperity, and to have foreshadowed the subsequent greatness of that city. At one point on the coast the villagers everywhere were “soothing their wearied hearts with holy merriment,” aud were celebrating the festival of Osiris.

All existing MSS. of Rutilius are later than 1494, and are copies from a lost copy of an ancient MS. once at the monastery of Bobio, which disappeared about 1700. The editio princeps is that by J. B. Pius (Bologna, 1520), and the princi- pal editions since have been those by Barth (1623), P. Burman (1731, in his edition of the minor Latin poets), Wernsdorf (1778, part of a similar collection), Zumpt (1840), and the critical edition by Lucian Miller (Teubner, Leipsic, 1870). Miller writes the poet’s name as Claudius Rutilius Namatianus, instead of the usual Rutilius Claudius Namatianus; but if the identification of the poet’s father with the Claudius mentioned in the Theodosian Code be correct, Miiller is probably wrong. Rutilius receives more or less attention from all writers on the history or literature of the times, but a lucid chapter in Beugnot, Histoire dela Destruc- tion du

Paganisme en Occident (1835), may be especially mentioned. It should be noted that in using the passage concerning Stilicho we have ventured to read the line at ii. 45 thus—Jliacae cladis deteriore dolo; the change from the MSS. reading /ilatae cladis liberiore dolo (preserved in all editions) seems demanded by the context, as well as by the sense. (J. S. R.)

RUTLAND, the smallest county in England, is bounded See

N. and N.E. by Lincolnshire, §.E. by Northamptonshire, S a

and W. by Leicestershire. Its shape is extremely irregular. The greatest length from north-east to south-west is about = XXL — 15

ol, xiv.

114

20 miles, and the greatest breadth from east to west about 16 miles. The area is 94,889 acres, or about 148 square miles. The surface is pleasantly undulating, ridges of high ground running east and west, separated by rich and luxu- riant valleys, generally about half a mile in breadth. The principal valley is that of Catmoss to the south of Oakham, having to the north of it a tract of table-land commanding an extensive prospect into Leicestershire.

The Welland, which is navigable to Stamford, flows north-east, forming the greater part of the boundary of the county with Northamptonshire. The Gwash or Wash, which rises in Leicestershire, flows eastwards through the centre of the county, and just beyond its borders, enters the Welland in Lincolnshire. The Chater, also rising in Leicestershire and flowing eastwards enters the Welland about two miles from Stamford. The Eye flows south- eastwards along the borders of Leicestershire. The county belongs almost entirely to the Jurassic formation, consist- ing of Liassic and Oolitic strata—the harder strata, chiefly limestone containing iron, forming the hills and escarp- ments, and the clay-beds the slopes of the valleys. The oldest rocks are those belonging to the Lower Lias in the north-west. The bottom of the vale of Catmoss is formed of marlstone rock belonging to the Middle Lias, and its sides are composed of long slopes of Upper Lias clay. The Upper Lias also covers a large area in the west of the county. The

lowest series of the Oolitic formation is the Northampton sands bordering Northamptonshire. The Lincolnshire Oolitic limestone prevails in the east of the county north of Stamford. It is largely quarried for building purposes, the quarry at Ketton being famous beyond the boundaries of the county. The Great Oolite prevails towards the south-east. Formerly the iron was largely dug and smelted by means of the wood in the extensive forests, and the industry is again reviving.

Agriculture.—In the castern and south-eastern districts the soil is light and shallow. a tenacious but fertile loam, and in the fertile vale of Catmoss the soil is either clay or loam, or a mixture of the two. The prevailing redness, which colours even the streams, is owing to the ferruginous limestone carried down from the slopes of the hills. The name of the county is by some authorities derived from this characteristic of the soil, but the explanation is doubtful. The eastern portions of the county are chiefly under tillage and the western in grass. Out of 94,889 acres no fewer than 86,477 acres in 1885 were under cultivation, corn crops occupying 22,820 acres, green crops 7520 acres, rotation grasses 6558 acres, and permanent pasture 47,816 acres. Over 3000 acres were under woodland. The prineipal corn crop is barley, which occupied 9484 acres, but wheat and oats are also largely grown. Turnips and swedes occupy about five-sixths of the area under green crops. The rearing of sheep and cattle occupies the chief attention of the farmer. Large quantities of cheese are manufactured and sold as Stilton. Cattle, principally shorthorns, numbered 19,810, of which 3054 were cows and heifers in milk and in calf. Sheep—Leicesters and South Downs—numbered 80,881, horses 3062, pigs 3054, and poultry 27,376. According to the parliamentary return of 1873 the number of proprietors was 1425, of whom 861 possessed less than one acre. The largest proprietors were the earl of Gainsborough 15,076, Lord Aveland 13,634, marquis of Exeter 10,718, and George H. Finch 9182.

failways.—The main line of the Great Northern intersects the north-eastern corner of the county, and branches of that system, of the London and North-Western, and of the Midland connect it with all parts of the country.

Administration and Population.—Rutland comprises five hun- dreds and contains fifty-seven civil parishes, and part of the parish of Stoke-Dry,

which extends into Leicestershire, F ormerly repre- sented by two members of parliament, since 1885 it returns one only. There is no municipal or parliamentary borough. The county has one court of quarter sessions, but is not subdivided for petty sessional purposes. Kcclesiastically it is entirely in the diocese of Peterborough. The population was 21,861 in 1861, 22,078 in 1871, and 21,484 in 1881. The average number of per- sons to an acre in 1881 was 0°28, and of acres to a person 4°48.

History and Antiquities.—In the time of the Romans the district now included in Rutlandshire was probably inhabited by the Coritani, and was included in Flavia Cesaricnsis. Ermyn

In the other districts it consists chiefly of

Street traversed it in the north-east, and there was an important station at Great Casterton. As a shire it is later than Domesday, when a portion of it was included in Northamptonshire but the greater part in Nottingham. It is referred to as com. Roteland in the fifth year of King John, in the document assigning a dowry to Queen Isabella, but for a long time previous to this the name Roteland was applied to Oakham and the country round it, Edward, eldest son of Edmund of Langley, fifth son of Edward OL, was created earl of Rutland, but the title became extinet in the royal house when Edward earl of Rutland was stabbed to death at the battle of Clifford. In 1525 the title was revived in the person of Lord Ros, and the tenth earl was created duke in 1703. At the battle of Stamford in 1470 Lancaster was defeated by Edward IV. The only old castle of which there are important remains is Oakham, dating from the time of Henry II., and remarkable for its Norman hall.

RUTLAND, a township and village of the United States, capital of Rutland county, Vermont, 117 miles north-north- west of Boston. It is an important railway junction, being the terminus of several minor lines and the seat of machine-shops and engine-houses; but its name is even better known through its quarries of white marble. The population of the township was 12,149 and that of the village 7502 in 1880.

Chartered by New Hampshire in 1761 and again chartered as Socialborough in 1772 by New York, Rutland became in 1775 a fortified post on the great northern military road, and in 1781

was made the chief town of Rutland county. Between 1784 and 1804 it was one of the capitals of the State.

RUYSBROECK, or RuysprogEK, Jonny, mystic, was born at Ruysbroek, near Brussels, about 1293, and died as first prior of the convent of Groenendael, near Waterloo, in 1381. See Mysricism, vol. xvii. p. 133.

RUYSCH, Freperix (1638-1731), anatomist, was born at The Hague in 1638, and died at Amsterdam on February 22, 1731. See Anatomy, vol. i. p. 812.

RUYSDAEL, or Rutspaat, Jacos (c. 1625-1682), the most celebrated of the Dutch landscapists, was born at Haarlem about 1625. The accounts of his life are very conflicting, and recent criticism and research have discredited much that was previously received as fact regarding his career. He appears to have studied under his father Izaac Ruysdael, a landscape-painter, though other authorities make him the pupil of Berghem and of Albert van Everdingen. The earliest date that appears on his paintings and etchings is 1645. Three years later he was admitted a member of the guild of St Luke in Haarlem ; in 1659 he obtained the freedom of the city of Amsterdam, and we know that he was resident there in 1668, for in that year his name appears as a witness to the marriage of Hobbema. During his lifetime his works were little appreciated, and he seems to have suffered from poverty. In 1681] the sect of the Mennonites, with whom he was connected, petitioned the council of Haarlem for his admission into the almshouse of the town, and there the artist died on the 14th of March 1682.

The works of Ruysdael may be studied in the Louvre and the National Gallery, London, and in the collections at The Hague, Amsterdam, Berlin, and Dresden. His favourite subjects are simple woodland scenes, similar to those of Everdingen and Hobbema, or views of picturesque mills and cottages, or of ruined towers and temples, set upon broken ground, beside streams or waterfalls. He is especially noted as a painter of trees, and his rendering of foliage, particularly of oak leafage, is characterized by the

greatest spirit and precision. His views of distant cities, such as that of Haarlem in the possession of the marquis of Bute, and that of Katwijk in the Glaseow Corporation Galleries, clearly indieate the influence of Rembrandt. He frequently paints coast- scenes, and sea-pieces with breaking waves and stormy skies filled with wind-driven clouds, but it is in his rendering of lonely forest glades that we find him at his best. The subjects of certain of his mountain seenes, with bold rocks, waterfalls, and fir-trees, seem to be taken from Norway, and have led to the supposition that he had travelled in that country. We have, however, no record of such a journey, and the works in question are probably

merely adaptations from the landscapes of Van Everdingen, whose manner he copied at one period. Only a single architectural sub-

| Ryazafi is an intermediate link between the central Great

ject from his brush is known—an admirable interior of the New Church, Amsterdam, in the possession of the marquis of Bute. The prevailing hue of his landscapes is a full rich green, which, how- ever, has darkened with time, while a clear grey tone is character- istie of his sea-picces. aa The art of Ruysdael, while it shows little of the scientific know- ledge of later landscapists, is sensitive and poetic in sentiment, and direct and skilful in technique. Figures are sparingly introduced into his compositions, and such as oceur are believed to be from the pencils of Adrian Vandevelde, Philip Wouwerman, and Jan Lingel- bach. In his love of landscape for itself, in his delight in the quiet and solitude of nature, the painter is thoroughly modern in feeling. Ruysdael etched a few plates, which were reproduced by Amand Durand in 1878, with text by M. Georges Duplessis. The «Champ de Blé” and the ‘‘ Voyageurs ” are characterized by M. Duplessis as ‘‘ estampes de haute valeur qui peuvent étre regardées comme les spécimens Jes plus significatifs de l’art du paysagiste dans les Pays-Bas.” RUYSSELEDE, or Rurssetkpz, a market-town of Belgium, in the province of West Flanders, 15 miles south- east of Bruges. It is best known as the seat of a great reformatory for boys, founded by the Government in 1849. The population was 6663 in 1874, and 6670 in 1881. — RUYTER, Micnary Aprian DE (1607-1676), a dis- tinguished Dutch naval officer, was born at Flushing,

24th March 1607. He began his seafaring life at the age of eleven as a cabin boy, and in 1636 was entrusted by the merchants of Flushing with the command of a cruiser against the French pirates. service of the States, and, being appointed rear-admiral of a flect fitted out to assist Portugal against Spain, specially distinguished himself at Cape St Vincent, 3d November 1641. In the following year he left the service of the States, and, until the outbreak of war with England in

In 1640 he entered the

1652, held command of a merchant vessel. In 1653 a |

squadron of seventy vessels was despatched against the English, under the command of Admiral Tromp. Ruyter, who accompanied the admiral in this expedition, seconded him with great skill and bravery in the three battles which were fought with the English. He was afterwards stationed in the Mediterranean, where he captured several Turkish vessels. In 1659 he received a commission to join the king of Denmark in his war with the Swedes. ‘As a reward of his services, the king of Denmark ennobled him and gave him a pension. In 1661 he grounded a vessel belonging to Tunis, released forty Christian slaves, made a treaty with the Tunisians, and reduced the Algerine corsairs to submission. From his achievements on the west coast of Africa he was recalled in 1665 to take command of a large fleet which had been organized against England, and in May of the following year, after a long contest off the North Foreland, he compelled the English to take refuge in the Thames. On June 7, 1672, he fought a drawn battle with the combined fleets of England and France, in Southwold or Sole Bay, and after the fight he convoyed safely home a fleet of merchantmen. His valour was displayed to equal advantage in several engage- ments with the French and English in the following year. In 1676 he was despatched to the assistance of Spain against France in the Mediterranean, and, receiving a mortal wound in the battle on the 21st April off Messina, died on the 29th at Syracuse. A patent by the king of Spain, investing him with the dignity of duke, did not reach the fleet till after his death. His body was carried to Amsterdam, where a magnificent monu- ment to his memory was erected by command of the states-general.

See Li fie ye er one.” Brandt, Amsterdam, 1687, and by Klopp,

RYAZAN, a government of Central Russia, is bounded by Moscow and Tula on the W., by Vladimir on the N., and by Tamboff on the E. and S., with an area of 16,255 square miles, and a population of 1,713,581 in 1882.

Russian governments and the Steppe governments of the south-east,—the wide and deep valley of the Oka, by which it is traversed from west to east, with a broad curve to the south, being the natural boundary between the two. On the left of the Oka the surface often consists of sands, marshes, and forests; while on the right the fertile black- earth prairies begin, occupying especially the southern part of the government (the districts of Ranenburg, Sapojok, and Dankoff). The whole of Ryazafi isa plateau about 700 feet above the sea, but deeply cut by the river valleys and numerous ravines. The geological formations represented are the Devonian, the Carboniferous, the Jurassic, and the Quaternary. The Devonian appears in the deeper valleys in the south, and belongs to the well- known “ Malevka-Muraevnya horizon,” now considered as equivalent to the Cypridina serrato-striata Upper Devonian deposits of the Eifel. The Carboniferous deposits are widely spread, and appear at the surface in the bottoms of the ravines and valleys. They contain strata of excellent coal between plastic blue clays, which are worked at several places. Upper Carboniferous lime- stones, as also sandstones, the age of which has not yet been determined, but which seem to be Lower Jurassic, cover the Carboniferous clays. The Upper Jurassic de- posits are widely spread, but they have been much destroyed and now appear as separate insular tracts. They belong to the Oxford and Callovian horizons, the former contain- ing corals, which are very rare on the whole in the Russian Jurassic deposits. The Quaternary deposits are represented by the Glacial boulder clay and more recent alluvial deposits, which occupy wide areas in the valley of the Oka. Iron-ores, limestone, grindstone grits, potters’ clays, and thick beds of peat are worked, besides coal. The northern parts of Ryazafi belong to the forest regions of Russia, and, notwithstanding the wholesale destruction of forests in that part of the country, these (chiefly Coni- ferous) still cover one-third of the surface in several dis- tricts. In the south, where the proximity of the Steppes is felt, they are much less extensive, the prevailing species being oak, birch, and

other deciduous trees. They cover an aggregate area of more than 2 million acres.

The Oka is the chief river; it is navigable throughout, and receives the navigable Pronya, Pra, and Tsna, besides a great many smaller streams utilized for floating timber. Steamers ply on the Oka to Kasimoff and Nijni Novgorod. The Don and the Lyesnoi Voronezh belong to Ryazaii in their upper courses only. On the whole, the south dis- tricts are not well watered. Small lakes are numerous in the broad depression of the Oka and elsewhere, while extensive marshes cover the north-east districts; a few attempts at draining several of these on the banks of the Oka have resulted in the reclamation of excellent pasture lands. ‘The climate is a little warmer than at Moscow, the average temperature at Ryazaii being 41°.

The territory of Ryazafi was occupied in the 9th century by Finnish stems (Mordvinians, Mers, Muroms, and Meschers), which for the most part have either given way before or disappeared amongst the Slavonian colonizers. The population is now Great Russian throughout, and contains only a trifling admixture of some 6000 Tartars, 1500 Poles, and 500 Jews in towns. Some Tartars immigrated into the Kasimoff region in the 15th century, and are noted for their honesty of character as well as for their agricultural prosperity. The people of the Pra river are described as Mescheriaks, but their manners and customs do not differ from those of the Russians.

The chief occupation in Ryazaii isagriculture. Out of 10,100,000 acres only 838,000 are unfit for tillage. 5,482,000 acres are under crops, and the annual produce is estimated at about 4,248,000

quarters of corn and 972,000 quarters of potatoes. The area under cultivation and the crops themselves are increasing, as also is the export of corn. But cven here, in one of the wealthiest govern- ments of Russia, the situation of the peasants is far from satis- factory. Cattle-breeding is rapidly falling off on account of want of pasture lands, but hay, which is abundant, especially on the rich meadow lands of the Oka, is exported. In 1882 there were 283,500 horses, 262,200 cattle, and 839,600 sheep, the figures having been 446,000, 297,000, and 847,000 respectively in 1858. In the northern

part of the government various industries are carried on, such as boatbuilding, the preparation of pitch and tar, the manufacture of wooden vessels, sledges, &c. Various other petty trades, such as weaving, lace-making, and boot-making, are combined with agriculture. Manufactures also have lately begun to make progress, aud in 1882 their agercgate production reached 13,000,000 roubles (cotton and flax-spinning mills, glass-works and metal-ware works, and distilleries, the last-named producing to the value of 1,850,000 roubles). Trade, especially in corn and other agricultural produce and in merchandise manufactured in the villages, is very active. The railway from Ryazah to Moscow is one of the most important in Russia, from the amount of goods carried from the south-east Steppe governments. The Oka is another artery of traffic, the aggregate amount shipped to or sent from its ports within Ryazafi reaching 3,634,000 cwts. in 1880. The government is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which, with thcir populations in 1883, are subjoined : Ryazafi (30,325 inhabitants), Dankoff (2475), Egoricvsk (6055), Kasimoff (15,260), Mikhailoff (2720), Pronsk (1740), Ranenburg (4500), Ryazhsk (4265), Sapojok (2670), Skopin (10,260), Spassk (4820), and Zaraisk (5870). Ranenburg, Skopin, and Zaraisk are important markets for corn and hemp. Several villages, such as Muracvuya, Dyedinovo (6600) and Lovtsy (loading places on the Oka), and Ukolovo (market for corn), have more commerce and industry than the district towns. Large villages are numcrous, about sixty having cach from 2500 to 7000 inhabitants.

The Slavonians began to colonize the region of Ryazafi as early as the 9th century, penetrating thither both from the north-west (Great Russians) and from the Dnieper (Little Russians). As early as the 10th century the principality of Murom and Ryazafi is mentioned in the chronicles. During the following centuries this principality increased both in extent and in wealth and included parts of what are now the governments of Kaluga and Moscow. Owing to the fertility of the soil, its Russian popnila- tion rapidly increased, while the Finnish stems which formerly inhabited it migrated farther east, or became merged among the Slavonians. A dozen towns, all fortificd and commercial, are mentioned as belonging to the principality towards the end of the 12th century. The Mongolian invasion stopped all this develop- ment. The horsemen of Batu burned and destroyed several towns in 1237, and killed many people, desolating the country. The

principality, however, still continued to exist; its great princes strongly opposed the annexation plans of Moscow, making alliance with the Mongols and with Lithuania, but they succumbed, and, the last of them, Ivan, having been imprisoned in Moscow, his principality was definitively annexed in 1517.

RYAZAN, capital of the above government, lies 119 miles to the south-east of Moscow, on the elevated right bank of the Trubej, a mile above its junction with the Oka. A wide prairie dotted with large villages, being the bottom of a former lake, spreads out from the base of the crag on which Ryazafi stands, and has the aspect of an immense lake when it is inundated in the spring. Except one or two streets, the town is badly built, chiefly of wood, and ill-paved. It has often suffered from fire, and has few remains of former days. The large church of Uspensk dates from 1770. Those of Arkhangelsk and Kresto- vozdvijensk have preserved, however, their old archi- tecture, though obliterated to some extent by subsequent repairs, as also the archiepiscopal palace, formerly the ““terem” of the great princes. The industries are un. developed, and the trade has less importance than might be expected from the position of the town inso rich a region. It is, however, an important railway centre, no less than 15,000,000 ewts., chiefly of corn, being brought from the south-east and sent on to Moscow, while nearly 3,390,000 ewts. of various manufactured and grocery wares are con- veyed in the opposite direction. The loading place on the Oka also has some importance. The population, 30,325 in 1883, is increasing but slowly.

The capital of Rvazah principality was Ryazatii—now Old Ryazaft, a village close to Spassk, also on the Oka. It is mentioned in

aunals as early as 1097, but continucd to be the chief town of the principality only until the 14th century. In the 11th century one of the Kieff princes—probably Yaroslaff Svyatoslavitch in 1095—founded, on the banks of a small lake, a fort which received the name of Pereyaslaff-Ryazanskiy. In 1294 (or in 1335) the bishop of Murom, compelled to leave his own town and probably following the usual policy of that epoch,—that

of selecting a new town with no municipal traditions, as the nucleus of a new state, —settled in Pereyaslaff-Ryazanskiy, and thus gave new importance to this formerly insignificant settlement. The great princes of Ryazan followed his example and by-and-by completely abandoned the old republican town of Ryazai, transferring also its name to Pereyaslafi-Ryazanskiy. In 1300 a congress of Russian princes was held there, and in the following year the town was taken by the Moscow prince. It continued, however, to be the residence of the Ryazafi princes until 1517. In 1365 and 1377 it was plundered and burned by Tartars, but in the two following centuries (in 1460, 1518, 1521, and 1564) it was strong enough to repel them. Earthen walls with towers were erected after 1301 ; and in the 17th century a ‘‘kreml” still stood on the high crag above the Trubej. Ryazafi became chief town of the Ryazati lieutenancy in 1778.

RYBINSK, or Ruzprnsk, though but a district town of the government of Yaroslavl, with a permanent population (1883) of only 18,900, is, as being virtually the port of St Petersburg on the Volga, one of the most important towns of the northern part of Central Russia. It lies 54 miles to the north-west of Yaroslavl, and is connected by rail (186 miles) with Bologoye, on the line between St Petersburg and Moscow. It derives its importance from its situation on the Volga, opposite the mouth of the Sheksna,—one of those tributaries which, flowing from the north-west, have since the dawn of Russian history connected the Volga with the regions around Lake Ladoga. Russians settled there as early as the 12th century, or perhaps earlier; subsequently it seems to have become a mere fishing station under Moscow, with perhaps some shipbuilding. It became a considerable centre for traffic when the Vyshnevolotsk, Tikhvinsk, and Mariinsk canal systems, connecting St Petersburg with the Volga, were opened. The cargoes of the larger boats from the lower Volga, consisting mainly of corn and flour, as also of salt, spirits, potash, and tallow, are here trans- ferred to smaller boats capable of accomplishing the navigation to St Petersburg, and wice versa. The amount of goods thus transhipped is estimated at 16,000,000 cwts., worth 32,800,000 roubles. Since the opening of the line to Bologoye, a large proportion of this merchandise is sent to St Petersburg by rail (9,293,000 cwts. in 1880), The total number of boats visiting Rybinsk annually is estimated at 5000 to 7000, their aggregate cargoes amounting to nearly 20,000,000 cwts. (about 40,000,000 roubles). Upwards of 100,000

labourers (male and female) assemble at Rybinsk during the navigation, and the num- ber of vessels is so great as to cover the Volga and the Sheksna like a bridge. Besides the business of tranship- ment, Rybinsk has an active trade in corn, hemp, é&c., from the neighbouring districts. The town is but poorly built, and its sanitary condition leaves very much to be desired, especially in summer,

RYCAUT, or Ricavt, Sm Pav (d. 1700), traveller and diplomatist, was the tenth son of Sir Peter Ricaut, a Royalist who on account of his support of King Charles had to pay a composition of £1500. The son was admitted a scholar of Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1647, and took his B.A. degree in 1650. After travelling in Europe and in various parts of Asia and Africa, he in 1661 accom- panied as secretary the earl of Winchelsea, ambassador extraordinary to Turkey. During a residence there of eight years he wrote Zhe Present State of the Ottoman Empire, in three books ; containing the Maxims of the Turkish Politie, their Religion and Military Discipline (1670; 4th ed. 1686; Fr. transl. by Briot, 1670; and another with notes by Bespier, 1677). In 1663 he pub-

lished at Constantinople The Capitulation, Articles of Peace, &c., concluded between the King of England and the Sultan of the Ottoman Empire. Subsequently he was for eleven years consul at Smyrna, and at the command of Charles II. wrote The Present State of the Greek and Armenian Churches, Anno Christi 1678, which on his return to England he presented to the king and published in 1679. In 1685 Lord Clarendon, lord lieutenant of Treland, made him principal secretary for the provinces of Leinster and Connaught. He at the same time received from James I. the honour of knighthood, was made a member of the privy council of Ireland, and named judge of the high court of admiralty, which office he retained till 1688. From 1690 to 1700 he was employed by King William as English resident at the Hanse towns, and shortly after his return to England, worn out with age and infirmities, he died on the 16th December 17 00.

Rycaut was a fellow of the Royal Society, and wrote an article on Sable Mice which was published in their Transactions. In addition to the works already mentioned he was the author of A Continuation of Knolles’ History

of the Turks from 1623 to 1677 (1680), and from 1679 to 1699 (1700); A Translation of Platina's Lives of the Popes, with a Continuation from 1471 to the Present Time (1685); Lhe Critick, from the Spanish of Gracian (1686) ; and the Royal Commentaries of Peru, from the Spanish of Garcilasso (1688).

RYDE, a municipal borough and watering place of the Isle of Wight, is finely situated on a sloping eminence above the Solent, 5 miles south by west of Portsmouth, and 7 (12 by rail) from West Cowes. It occupies the site of a village called La Rye or La Riche, which was destroyed by the French in the reign of Edward IT. About the close of the 18th century it was a small fishing hamlet, but when the beauty of its site attracted attention it rapidly grew into favour as a watering-place. The streets are wide, regular, and well-paved, and there are a large number of fine villas on the slopes of the hill. It is connected by rail with the principal other towns in the island, and there is also steamboat communication with Portsmouth, Southampton, Southsea, Portsea, and Stoke's Bay. The pier, built originally in 1812, but since then greatly ex- tended, forms a delightful promenade half a mile in length. The principal buildings are All Saints church, erected in 1870 from the designs of Sir Gilbert Scott, and other churches, the market-house and town hall, the Royal Vic- toria Yacht club-house, the theatre, and the Royal Isle of Wight Infirmary. The town was incorporated in 1868, and is governed by a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen councillors. The population of the municipal borough (area 792 acres) in 1871 was 11,260 and in 1881 it was 11,461.

RYE. As in the case of other cereals, it is doubtful if rye (Secale cereale) exists at the present time in a truly wild state. The best evidence on this point goes to show that the plant is a native of the regions between the Black and Caspian Seas. It is also recorded from Afghanistan and Turkestan ; but botanists are very chary about admitting the validity of the evidence hitherto adduced. Aitchison, the latest investigator of the flora of Afghanistan, mentions it as growing in wheat-fields, where it is considered as a weed, not being intentionally sown. In some fields "it almost eradicates the wheat crop." But this merely shows that the conditions are more favourable to the growth of rye than to that of wheat. In spite of the uncertainty as to the precise origin of the cultivated plant, its cultivation

does not appear to have been practised at a very early date, relatively speaking. Alphonse de Candolle, who has collected the evidence on this point, draws attention to the fact that no traces of this cereal have hitherto been found in Egyptian monuments or in the earlier Swiss dwellings, though seeds have been found in association with weapons of the Bronze period at

ey Olmiitz. The absence of any special name for it in the Semitic, Chinese, and Sanskrit languages is also adduced as an indication of its comparatively recent culture. On the other hand, the general occurrence of the name in the more modern languages of northern Europe, under various modifications, points to the cultivation of the plant then, as now, in those regions. The origin of the Latin name secale, which exists in a modified form among the Basques and Bretons, is not explained. The circumstances that the cultivation of rye is relatively not of great antiquity and that it is confined to a relatively restricted area must be taken into account, in connexion with the fact that the variations of*this cereal are much fewer than are noted in the case of other plants of like character.

The fact stated by Miiller that the anthers and stigmas of the flowers come to maturity at the same time would tend to ‘close fertilization” and a consequent constancy of “characters” in the offspring, and, as a matter of fact, the varieties of this grass are not numerous. Rye isa tall-crowing annual grass, with fibrous roots, flat, narrow, ribbon-like bluish-green leaves, and erect or decurved cylindrical slender spikes like those of barley. The spike- lets contain two or three flowers, of which the uppermost is usually imperfect. The outer glumes are acute glabrous, the flowering glumes lance-shaped, with a comb-like keel at the back, and the outer or lower one prolonged at the apex into a very long bristly awn. Within these are three stamens surrounding a compressed ovary, with two feathery stigmas. When ripe, the grain is of an elongated oval form, with a few hairs at the summit.

In the southern parts of Great Britain rye is chiefly or solely cultivated as a forage-plant for cattle and horses, being usually sown in autumn for spring use, after the crop of roots, turnips, &c., is exhausted, and before the clover and lucerne are ready. For forage purposes it is best to cut early, before the

leaves and haulms have been exhausted of their supplies to benefit the grain. In the northern parts of Europe, and more especially in Scan- dinavia, Russia, and parts of northern Germany, rye is the principal cereal ; and in nutritive value, as measured by the amount of gluten it contains, it stands next to wheat, a fact which furnishes the explanation of its culture in northern latitudes ill-suited for the growth of wheat. Rye- bread or black-bread is in general use in northern Europe, but finds little favour with those unaccustomed to its use, owing to its sour taste, the sugar it contains rapidly passing into the acetous fermentation.

When the ovaries of the plant become affected with a peculiar fungus (Cordyceps), they become blackened and distorted, constituting Ercor (¢.v.).

RYE, a municipal town and seaport at the eastern extremity of the county of Sussex, 63 miles south-south- east of London, is built upon a rocky eminence which two or three centuries ago was washed on all sides by the influx of the tide, but now, in consequence of the gradual recession of the sea, lies two miles inland. It is sur- rounded by rich marsh land through which flows the river Rother, uniting at the south-east foot of the rock with two rivulets to form a small serpentine estuary, Rye harbour, the mouth of which is connected with the town by means of a branch line of railway. In bygone years, when the adjacent marshes were flooded with tidal water, the efflux was so powerful as to effectually maintain safe and free entrance into Rye harbour; and in the reign of Charles II. a frigate of 50 guns could enter and ride at anchor. Now the harbour suffers seriously from the shifting sand and shingle, and considerable sums of money have been expended by the harbour commissioners with the view of overcoming these impediments, with but partial success. The trade is chiefly in coal, timber,

and bark, and shipbuilding is carried on as well as fish- | ing. There is a large market every alternate Wednesday, |

and considerable business in cattle, sheep, corn, wool, and hops is transacted. Rye is a quaint, compactly-built town perched upon the rock to which for centuries it was restricted, but in the course of the last half-

century it has gradually extended itself over the northern slopes beyond the town wall. It is excellently drained, abundantly supphed with clear spring water, and very healthy.

The church, said to be the largest parish church in Eng- |

land, is of very mixed architecture, chiefly Transitional, Norman, and Early English ; the nave and high chancel

were judiciously restored in 1882, according to designs by |

the late Mr G. E. Street. Of the old fortifications there still remain portions of the town wall, much hidden by newer buildings, a strong quadrangular tower built by William of Ypres, earl of Kent, and lord warden in the time of Stephen, and now forming part of the police station,

and a handsome gate with a round tower on each side,

known as the Sandgate, at the entrance into Rye from the London road. Rye ceased in 1885 to be a parliamentary borough, but gives its name to the eastern division of the county. The population in 1881 was 4224.

Of the early history of Rye little is known. In the medieval Freneh chronicles it is always mentioned as ‘La Rie.” Having been conferred upon the abbey of Féeamp by Edward the Confessor, it was taken baek by King Henry III. into his own hands, ‘‘ for the better defenee of his realm,” and received from that sovereign the full rights and privileges of a Cinque Port under the title of “Aneient Town.” In eonsequenee of the frequent incursions of the French, by whom it was sacked and burnt three times in the 14th century, it was fortified by order of Edward III. on the land- ward side, the steep precipitous sides of the rock affording ample protection towards the sea. In addition to the naval services rendered by Rye as a Cinque Port under the Plantagenet and Tudor sovereigns, it was a principal port of communication with Franee in times of peace,—for whieh reason successive bands of Huguenots fled thither between 1562 and 1685, many of whom settled at Rye and have left representatives now living.

RYEZHITZA, a town of European Russia at the head of a district in the Vitebsk government, in 56° 30’ N. lat. and 27° 21’ E. long., 198 miles north-west from Vitebsk on the railway between St Petersburg and Warsaw, near the Ryezhitza, which falls into Lake Iuban. Its popu- lation increased from 7306 (2902 Jews) in 1867 to about 9000 in 1881 ; but its importance is mainly histori- cal. The cathedral is a modern building (1846).

Ryezhitza, or, as it is ealled in the Livonian chronicles, Roziten, was founded in 1285 by Wilhelm von Harburg to keep in subjee- tion the Lithuanians and Letts. The eastle was continually the object of hostile attacks. In 1559 the Livouian order, exhausted by the war with Russia, gave it in pawn to Poland, and, though it was eaptured by the Russians in 1567 and 1577, and had its fortifications dismantled by the Swedes during the war of 1656- 1660, it eontinued Polish till 1772, when White Russia was united with the Russian empire. In early times Ryezhitza was a large and beautiful town.

RYLAND, Wittiam Wynne (1738-1783), engraver, was born in London in July 1738, the son of an engraver and copper-plate printer. He studied under Ravenet, and in Paris under Boucher and J. P. le Bas. After spending five years on the Continent he returned to England, and having engraved portraits of George III. and Lord Bute after Ramsay (a commission declined by Strange), anda portrait of Queen Charlotte and the Princess Royal after Francis Cotes, R.A., he was appointed engraver to the king. In 1766 he became a member of the Incorporated Society of Artists, and he exhibited with them and in the Royal Academy. _ In his later life Ryland abandoned line- engraving, and introduced “chalk-engraving,” in which the line is composed of stippled dots, a method by means of which he attained great excellence, and in which he transcribed Mortimer’s King John Signing Magna Charta, and copied the drawings of the old masters and the works

of Angelica Kauffman. He traded largely in prints, but in consequence of his extravagant habits his affairs became involved ; he was convicted of forging bills upon the East India Company, and, after attempting to commit

suicide, was executed at Tyburn on the 29th of August 1783. A short memoir of Ryland was published the year after his death.

RYMER, Tomas (1641-1713), historiographer royal, was the younger son of Ralph Rymer, lord of the manor of Brafferton in Yorkshire, described by Clarendon as “possessed of a good estate” and executed for his share in the “ Presbyterian rising” of 1663. Thomas was probably born at Yafforth Hall early in 1641, and was educated at a private school kept by Thomas Smelt, a noted Royalist, with whom Rymer was “a great favourite,” and “ well known for his great critical skill in human learning, especially in poetry and history.”

He was admitted as pensionarius minor at Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge, on April 29, 1658, but left the university without taking a degree. On May 2, 1666, he became a member of Gray’s Inn, and was called to the bar on June 16, 1673. His first appearance in print was as translator of Cicero’s Prince (1668), from the Latin treatise (1608) drawn up for Prince Henry. He also translated Rapin’s Lejlections on Aristotles Treatise of Poesie (1674), and followed the principles there set forth

| in a tragedy in verse, licensed September 13, 167 7, called

Edgar, or the English Monarch, which was not, however, very successful. The printed editions of 1678, 1691, and 1693 belong to the same issue, with new title-pages, Rymer’s views on the drama were again given to the world in the shape of a printed letter to Fleetwood Shep- heard, the friend of Prior, under the title of The Tragedies of the Last Age Considered (1678). To Ovid’s Epistles Translated by Several Hands (1680), with preface by Dry- den, ‘‘ Penelope to Ulysses” was contributed by Rymer, who was also one of the “hands” who Englished the Plutarch of 1683-86. ‘The life of Nicias fell to his share. He furnished a preface to Whitelocke’s Memorials of Eing- lish Affairs (1682), and wrote in 1681 A General Draught and Prospect of the Government of Europe, reprinted in 1689 and 1714 as Of the Antiquity, Power, and Decay of Parliaments, where, ignorant of his future dignity, the critic had the misfortune to observe, “You are not to expect truth from an historiographer royal.” He con- tributed three pieces to the collection of Poems to the Memory of Edmund Waller (1688), afterwards reprinted in Dryden’s Miscellany Poems, and is said to have written the Latin

inscription on Waller's monument in Beaconsfield churchyard. He produced a congratulatory poem upon the arrival of Queen Mary in 1689. His next piece of author- ship was to translate the sixth elegy of the third book of Ovid's Tristia for Dryden's Miscellany Poems (1692, p. 148). On the death of Thomas Shadwell in 1692 Rymer received the appointment of historiographer royal, at a yearly salary of £200. Immediately afterwards appeared his Short View of Tragedy (1693), criticizing Shakespeare and Ben Jonson, which produced The Impartial Critick (1693) of Dennis, the epigram of Dryden,? and the judgment of Macaulay that Rymer was "the worst critic that ever lived" Within eight months of his official appointment Rymer was directed (August 26, 1693) to carry

1 See Hickes, Memoirs of John Kettlewell, 1718, pp. 10-14.

2 "The eorruption of a poet is the generation of a eritie" (Ded. of the Third Miscellany, in Works, 1821, xii. p. 49), whieh is much more pointed than Beaeonsfield's referenee to eritics as "men who have failed in literature and art" (Lothatr, chap. xxxv.) or Balzac's sly hit at Mérimée in similar terms. The poet's remarks on the Tragedies of the Last Age have been reprinted in his Works, 1821, xv. pp. 383-96, and in Johnson's Life of Dryden. See also Dryden's Works, i. 377, vi. 251, xi. 60, xiii. 20.

out that great national undertaking with which his name will always be honourably connected, and of which there is reason to believe that Lords Somers and Halifax were the original promoters. The Codex Juris Gentium Diplo- maticus of Leibnitz was taken by the editor as the model of the Federa. The plan was to publish all records of alliances and other transactions in which England was concerned with foreign powers from 1101 to the time of publication, limiting the collection to original documents in the royal archives and the great national libraries. Unfortunately, this was not uniformly carried out, and the work tontains some extracts from printed chronicles. From 1694 he corresponded with Leibnitz, by whom he was greatly influenced with respect to the plan and forma- tion of the Fadera. While collecting materials, Rymer unwisely engraved a spurious charter of King Malcolm, acknowledging that Scotland was held in homage from Edward the Confessor. When this came to be

known, the Scottish antiquaries were extremely indignant. G. Redpath published a MS. on the independence of the Scottish crown, by Sir T. Craig, entitled Scotland's Sover- eignty Asserted (1695), and the subject was referred to by Bishop Nicolson in his Scottish Historical Library (1702). This led Rymer to address three Letters to the Bishop of Carlisle (1702), explaining his action, and discussing other antiquarian matters. The first and second letters are usually found together ; the third is extremely rare. Rymer had now been for some years working with great industry, but was constantly obliged to petition the crown for money to carry on the undertaking. Up to August 1698 he had expended £1253, and had only received £500 on account,

At last, on November 20, 1704, was issued the first folio volume of the adera, Conventiones, Litteree et cujuscun- que generis Acta Publica inter reges Angliz et alios quosvis imperatores, reges, de, ab AD. 1101 ad nostra usque tempora habita aut tractata. The publication proceeded with great rapidity, and fifteen volumes were brought out by Rymer in nine years. Two hundred and fifty copies were printed ; but, as nearly all of them were presented to persons of distinction, the work soon became so scarce that it was priced by booksellers at one hundred guineas. A hundred and twenty sheets of the fifteenth volume and the copy for the remainder were burnt at a fire at William Bowyer's, the printer, on January 30, 1712-13. Rymer died shortly after the appearance of this voluine, but he had prepared materials for carrying the work down to the end of the reign of James I. These were placed in the hands of Robert Sanderson, his assistant. For the greater part of his life Rymer derived his chief subsistence from a mortgage assigned to him by his father. His miscel- laneous literary work could not have been very profitable. At one time he was reduced to offer his MSS. for a new edition for sale to the earl of Oxford. About 1703 his affairs became more settled, and he afterwards regularly received his salary as historiographer, besides an addi- tional £200 a year as editor of the Medera. Twenty- five copies of each volume were also allotted to him. He died at Arundel Street, Strand, December 14, 1713, and was buried in the church of St Clement Danes. His will was dated July 10, 1713. 'Tonson issued an edition of Rochester's Works (1714), with a short preface by the late historiographer. Another posthumous publication was in a miscellaneous collection called Curious Amuse- ments, by M. B. (1714), which included "some transla-

tions from Greek, Latin, and Italian poets, by T. Rymer.” Some of his poetical pieces were also inserted in J. Nichols’s Select Collection (1780-86, 8 vols.).

_Two more volumes of the Federa were issued by Sanderson in 1715 and 1717, and the last three volumes (xviii., xix., and xx.) by

| pape a new and improved edition of the Federa.

‘ lished between 1816 and 1830.

‘of reports, orders, &c., on the Fodera, 1808-11.

119

the same editor, but upon a slightly different plan, in 1726-35. The latter volumes were published by Tonson, all the former by Churchill. Under Rymer it was carried down to 1586, and con- tinued by Sanderson to 1654. The rarity and importance of the work induced Tonson to obtain a licence for a second edition, and George Holmes, deputy keeper of the Tower records, was appointed editor. The new edition appeared between 1727 and 1735. The last three volumes are the same in both issues. There are sonie corrections, enumerated in a volume, The Emendations in the new edition of Mr Rymer’s Federa, printed by Tonson in 1730, but in other respects the second is inferior to the first edition. A third edition, embodying Holmes’s collation, was commenced at The Hague in 1737 and finished in 1745. It is in smaller type than the others, and is compressed within ten folio volumes. The arrangement is rather more convenient ; there issome additional matter; the index is better ; and on the whole it is to be preferred to either of the previous editions. When the volumes of the Federa first appeared they were analysed by Leclere and Rapin in the Bibliotheque Choisie and Bibliothéque Aneienne et Moderne. Rapin’s articles were collected together, and appended, under the title of Abregé historique des aetes publiques de U Angleterre, to the Hague edition. A translation, called Acta Regia, was published by Stephen Whatley, 1726-7, 4 vols. 8vo, reprinted both in 8vo and folio, the latter edition containing an analysis of the caneelled shects, relating to the journals of the first Parliament of Charles I., of the 18th volume of the Federa.

In 1808 the Record Commissioners appointed Dr Adam Clarke to Six parts, arge folio, edited by Clarke, Caley, and Holbrooke, were pub- Considerable additions were made, but the editing was performed in so unsatisfaetory a manner that the publication was suspended in the middle of printing a seventh part. The latter portion, bringing the work down to 1388, was ultimately issued in 1869.

The wide learning and untiring labours of Rymer have received the warmest praise from historians. Sir T. D. Hardy styles the

| Federa “a work of which this nation has every reason to be proud,

for with all its blemishes—and what work is faultless ?—it has no rival in its class’ (Syllabus, vol. ii., xxxvi.), and Mr J. B. Mullinger calls it ‘‘a collection of the highest value and authority a (Gardiner and Mullinger’s Introduction to English History, p. 224).

The best account of Rymer is to be found in the prefaccs to Sir T. D. Hardy’s Syllabus, 1869-86, 3 vols. 8vo. There is an unpublished life by Des Maizeaux (Brit. Mus. Add. MS, No. 4223), and a few memoranda in Bishop Kennct’s collections (Lansd. MS. No. 987). 1n Caulfield’s Portraits, &c., 1819, i. 50, may be secn an engraving of Rymer, with a description of a satirical print. Rymer’s two critical works on the drama are discussed by Sir T. N. Talfourd in the Retrospective Review, 1820, vol. i. p. 1-15.

Sir T. D. Hardy’s Syllabus gives in English a condensed notice of each instru- ment in the several editions of the Federa, arranged in chronological order. The third volume contains a complete index of names and places, with a catalogue of the volumes of transcripts collected for the Record edition of the Fwdera. In 1869 the Record Office printed, for private distribution, Appendices A to E ‘‘toa report on the Federa intended to have becn submitted by C. Purton Cooper to the Late Commissioners of Public Records,” 3 vols. 8vo (incluaing accounts of MSS. in forcign archives relating to Great Britain, with facsimiles). In the British Museum is preserved (Add. MS, 24,699) a folio volume of reports and papers relating to the Record edition. Rymer left extensive materials for a new edition of the Federa, bound in 59 vols. folio, and embracing the period from 11165 to 1698. This was the collection offered to the earl of Oxford. It was

purchased by the Treasury for £215 and is now in the British Museum (Add. MSS. Nos. 4573 to 4630, and 18,911). A catalogue and index may be consulted in the 17th volume of Tonson's edition of the Fodera, The Public Record Office possesses a MS. volume, compiled by Robert Lemon about 1800, containing instruments in the Patent Rolls omitted by Rymcr. In the same place may be a a eT) Bhs aU

RZHEFF, RsuerF, Rsxv, or RzHorr, a town of European Russia at the head of a district in the Tver government, in 56° 16' N. lat. and 34° 21' E. long., 89 miles south- west of Tver, occupies the bluffs on both banks of the Volga (here 350 feet wide) near the confluence of the river Bazuza. It is the terminus of a branch line from the St Petersburg and Moscow Railway, has a population of 18,569 (1880; 19,660 in 1866), carries on a variety of manufactures—hemp-spinning, malting, brewing, ship- building, é&c.—and is the centre of a great transit trade between the provinces of the lower Volga, Orel, Kaluga, and Smolensk, and the ports of St Petersburg and Riga.

Rzheff was already in existence in the 12th century, when it belonged to the principality of Smolensk and stood on the highway between Novgorod and Kieff. Under the rulers of Novgorod it become from 1225 a subordinate principality, and in the 15th century the two portions of the town were held by two independent

| princes, whose names are still preserved in the designations Knyaz

Fedorovskii and Knyaz Dimitrievskii, given respeetively to the left and the right bank of the Volga. In 1368 Rzheff was eaptured by Vladimir Andreevitch, and in 1875 it stood a three weeks' seige aud had its suburb burned by the same prince. It was made a district town in 1775.

)

{ represents the hard open (or fricative) sound produced S by bringing the blade of the tongue close to the front palate, immediately behind the gums, or rather, this is the normal position for S, as slight varieties can be

produced by bringing the tongue farther back. By the “blade” is meant the pointed end of the tongue, not the mere point, which at the same part of the palate produces R. This position differs little from that for TH, into which 8 passes in a lisping pronunciation ; a larger part of the surface of the tongue is brought near to the palate for TH than for 8. The symbol which represents the soft open sound corresponding to 8 is Z, though in practice S often stands for both.

The history of our symbol S is easy up to a certain point. It is the rounded form of $, rounded at a very early period for convenience of writing, for the change is apparent in the old Italian alphabet of Cere, and still more on the recently discovered vase of Formello; and even in the scribbling of the Greeks at Abu Simbel—the oldest, or nearly the oldest, bit of Greek epigraphy—per- fectly rounded forms stand side by side with the angular ones. The common Greek form 2 was obtained by adding a fourth stroke, and gradually making the top and bottom ones horizontal. When, however, we wish to identify the Greek symbol of three strokes with its Phoenician counter- part, the difficulty begins. The Phoenicians had four symbols for sibilants, known in Hebrew as Zayin, Samekh, Sade, and Shin; the last of these at a very early date represented two sounds, the English sh, and another sound which resembled that of Samekh and ultimately became indistinguishable from it, both being pronounced as the English s. The Greeks did not want all these symbols, consequently in different parts of Greece one or other— not the same—Phcenician symbol fell into disuse. One of these, M or Vy, called San, though lost in Ionic, appears

in old Doric inscriptions, as those of Thera, Melos, and |

Crete, Argos, Corinth, and Corcyra; but the later Doric form is the usual Sigma; probably San was too like the nasal M. There is no doubt that in form Zeta represents Zayin, and that Xi represents Samekh. Moreover, Zeta and Zayin stand seventh in the Greek and Phcenician alphabets respectively, and Xi and Sainekh each fifteenth. Again, the form of San with three strokes corresponds fairly with Sade, and Sigma is moderately like Shin ; but here the evidence of position comes in again to strengthen a somewhat weak case, for in the old Italian alphabets San has the place of Sade, the simpler form occurring in the Ceere alphabet, the fuller in that of the

Formello vase ; in both Sigma (rounded in form) has the place of Shin. These identifications would be certain if the names cor- responded as well as the forms; but they clearly do not: Zeta and Sade (not Zayin) seem to hold together in sound, and Sigma (as has often been suggested) looks like a “ popu- lar etymology” for Samekh. But the objection from difference of names is not fatal. All names which are thought of habitually in rows or sets tend to be modified under the influence of analogy ; and analogy has certainly been at work here, for Xi, which is a purely Greek name, is, like Psi, and like Chi and Phi, due to the older Fi. Sunilarly Eta and Theta have probably made Zeta; but it must be allowed that the metamorphosis of Sade is more intelligible (as a matter of sound-change) than that of Zayin. Probably we must have recourse to a different principle to explain at least some part of our difficulty. We may suppose that in some part of Greece the sounds

denoted originally by Sade and Zayin became indis- tinguishable ; there would then exist for a time one sound but two names. It would be a matter of little moment which name should survive; thus Sade (or Zeta) might supersede Zayin, or one name might survive in one district—as San in the Doric, but Sigma in the rest of Greece. This suggestion is made by Dr Taylor (The Alphabet, ii. 100). The history of the sounds, as well ag of the forms, of the Greek sibilants is difficult. Probably Sigma was generally hard —our s in sign. But Zeta did not originally denote the corresponding z: rather it was dz; some say dj, as in “John,” but this is not likely. Xi was probably a strong sibilant with a weak guttural, as X was in Latin. If the sound z existed in Greek, as is prob- able, it was denoted by Sigma. In Italy, also, we must infer that the soft sibilant was heard too little to need a special symbol, because z, which exists in the old alphabets of Cxre and Formello, was lost early enough to leave a place for the newly-made Italian symbol G. When Z was restored, it was placed at the end of the alphabet and doubt- less with the value of Greek Z in the Greek words in which alone it was used. One Latin s—probably z—became the trilled + between two vowels,—eg., in ‘“Papirius” for “Papisius,” “arboris ” for “ arbosis.”

In English the symbol s alone existed till z was intro- duced from France with words of French origin, as “zeal,” “zone.” Anattempt was made to employ it at the end of plural nouns, where the sound is regularly heard

except when the last sound of the noun is hard, eg., “bedz” (beds), but “hops”; but this was not maintained, nor even consistently done, for the symbol was used even when the sound must have been s. We regularly write s for both sounds,—e.g., in “lose” and “loose,” “curs” and “curse,” “hers” and “hearse.” When there is a distinc- tion in spelling the s commonly has the value of z—eqg., “vies” and “vice,” “pays ” and “ pace,” “his” and ‘“limeam S has the sound of sh in “sure,” “sugar,” and some other words ; this is due to the palatal sound heard before the wu. Sh, in spite of its spelling, is a single sound, the position of which differs from that for s only in a slight retraction of the point of the tongue; it is commonly found in English words which originally had sk,—e.g., shall,” O.E. sceal ; “‘shabby,” a doublet of “scabby ” ; “fish,” O.E. fish. The sound is the same as that of French ch in “ chAteau,” “chef,” “sécher,” where it is due to assibilation of original &.

SAADI. See Sa‘pi.

SAADIA, or Saapras (Heb. Se‘adyah, Arab. Sa‘td?), was the most accomplished, learned, and noble gaon (head of the academy) of Siira (see Ras). Mar Rab Se‘adyah b. Yoseph? was born in the Fayytim, Upper Egypt, in 892 and died at Stra in 942. Of his teachers only the Jew Abt: Kethir is positively known by name,? but he must have had at least three more teachers of considerable learning, one a Karaite,4 one a Mohammedan, and one a Christian, as his acquaintance with the literature of these four religious bodies testifies. His pre-eminence over his

1 He signs himself S”YD acrostically in his Azharoth (Kobes, pp. 52, 53; see note 4 on next page).

? Mas‘tdi, a contemporary, calls the father Ya‘akob ; but see Fiirst, Literaturblatt d. Orients, vi. col. 140.

3 Mas‘tdi (De Sacy, Chrest. Ar., 2d ed., i. 350, 351).

4 The late learned and ingenious Rabbi 8. L. Rapoport rolled here, as in many other places, the stone of Sisyphus (“Toledoth Rabbenu Se‘adyah Gaon,” in Bikkure Ha‘ittim, Vienna, 1828, note BIR Par haps, after all, the

Karaites may be right in asserting that Salmon b: Yeruham was Rab Se‘adyah’s teacher.

|

iS A Beeld’ i A

contemporaries is indicated in the fact that he was the only gaon who had not been educated and then advanced by degrees in the academy, to the highest dignity of which he was called from a far-off country, but best appears in the excellence of his many works, which extend over most branches of learning known in his time. And his learning was exceeded by his manifold virtues. His love of truth and justice was made more conspicuous by the darkness of the corruption amid which he lived. When the résh galutha (“prince of the captivity,” the highest dignitary of the Jews in Babylonia, and to some extent of those of the whole world) attempted to wrest judgmient in a certain case, and first asked, then requested, and finally demanded the signature! of the gaon of Siira in a threaten- ing manner, Se‘adyah refused it, fearless of consequences. David b. Zakkai, the résh galutha, deposed him and chose another gaon in his stead. A reconciliation took place some years afterwards, and Se’adyah was reinstated in his old dignity. And, although his health had been fatally undermined by the behaviour of the résh galutha and his son, Se‘adyah, when his former opponent died, was indefatigable in his endeavours to have this very son of his once mortal enemy placed on the throne of his fathers. But the new prince of the captivity enjoyed his dignity for little more than half a year. He left behind him a boy, twelve years of age, whom Se‘adyah took into his own house and treated in every respect as his own child. This learning and these virtues endeared Se‘adyah not merely to his contemporaries but also to the best men of succeeding ages. Behayye b. Yoseph (the author of the Hoboth Hallebaboth), Rashi, Se‘adyah (the author of the commentary on Daniel in the Rabbinic Bible), David Kimhi, Behayye b. Asher (the author of Kad Hakkemah), all appeal to him as an authority not to be questioned. Even Ibn ‘Ezra defers more to him than to any other authority. To this day Jewish and Christian scholars alike express for him the highest admiration.

The numerous works which are ascribed to him may be con- veniently divided into four classes.

I. Genuine and still extant Works.—(1) Arabic translations of, and in part commentaries? on, books of the Bible: (a) the Penta- teuch (printed in Hebrew characters, Constantinople, 1546, oll -and in Arabic characters in the Paris and London polyglotts) ; (0) Isaiah (printed in Arabic characters from Hebrew letters of the Bodleian MS. Uri 156,3 by Paulus, Jena, 1790-91, 8vo) ; (e) Psalms (Ewald, Ueber die arabiseh geschriebenen Werke jiidiseher Sprach- gelehrten, Stuttgart, 1844, 8vo); (d) Proverbs (Bodleian MS. Uri 15); (e) Job (Uri 45) ; (f) Canticles (Merx, Die Saadjanische Ueber- setzung des Hohen Liedes ins Arabische, Heidelberg, 1882, 8vo). (2) Hebrew Lexicography : Seventy (90 or 91) drat Neybueva to be found in the Bible, published from the Bodl. MS. Hunt. 573, by Dukes (7. K. M., v. 6) and by Benjacob (Debarim

1 To make the legal decisions of the résh gilutha more respected, the signatures of the geonim of Stra and Pumbaditha were desirable. A specimen of a legal decision by David b. Zakkai signed on the authority of Rab Se‘adyah Gaon is to be found in Frankel-Gratz, Monatsschrift, xxxi. pp. 167-170.

2 If we may argue from the known to the unknown, Seadyah’s translations, whether they were called tafsir or sharh, contained more than a mere translation. From Ibn ‘Ezra’s preface to his com- mentary on the Pentateuch and from the Arabic comm. on the Psalms published in excerpt by Ewald we see that Rab Séadyah was in the habit of explaining in addition to translating. Compare also Munk,

Notice sur Saadia,” in Cahen, La Bible (Isaie), Paris, 1838, 8vo, p. 77, note 1.

3 Tn the copyist’s subscription to this MS. the actual reading is not my (Rapoport), but MINDY; this should be AINAY, as Munk prints it (“ Notice,” p. 108). The Bodleian MSS. are referred to in this article from personal inspection.

e The original codex on brownish paper, in square characters of Babylonian handwriting (14th cent.), is defective at beginning and end. The supplement at the beginning, containing also later matter,

zu den Zehn Geboten, in Hebrew lettcrs (MS. Jellinek of Vienna, with Hebrew and German translation by W. Hisenstadter, Vienna, 1868, 8vo). (5) Religious Philosophy: (#) Comimentary on the Sepher Yesirah, MS. Uri 370 (Opp. Add., 4to, 89), contains the ear- lier part of a Heb. trans. in a modern hand ; (0) Kitdb al-Amdndt wa' l-I'tigdddt (Landauer, Leyden, 1880, 8vo), translated into Hebrew by Yehudah Ibn Tibbon (edztio prineeps, Constantinople, 1562, 4to), and by R. Berekhyah Hannakdan, author of the Mishele Shu'alim (printed only in part; see Dukes, Beitrige, pp. 20, 22); nine chapters have been translated into German (Fiirst, Leipsic, 1845, 12mo), and parts into English (7'wo Treatises, by P. Allix, London, 1707, 8vo).

Il. Works now lost, but the existenee of whieh is testified to by contemporary and later authors.—(1) An Arabic translation of, and in part commentary on, most, if uot all, the other books of the Bible.® (2) Lexical Treatises: Book of Interpretations (Sepher Pithronim, or Collection (Iggeron).® (3) Grammatical Treatises : (a) Elegancy of the Hebrew Tongue—(a) Treatise on the Changes, () Treatise on the Combinations, (y) Treatise on Dagesh and Lapheh, (5) Treatise on the Letters Y,M,1,87; (b) Treatise on Punctuation 8; (ec) Treatise on Right Reading® ;—it is not impossible that the first four constituted one work and the last two another work. (4) Talmudic Literature: (a) Translation of the Mishnah; (b) Meth- odology of the (Babylonian) Talmud?!; (e) Treatise on Bills"; (d) Treatise on Deposits; (¢) Treatise on Oaths'; (f) Treatise on Prohibited Degrees; (g) Treatise on Jmpura et Pura, including Hilekhoth Niddah 8 ;—it is very possible that thosc marked e¢ to f constituted one book, just as the treatise marked g constituted one book. (5) Calendaric Literature: Sepher Ha''ibbur (Treatise on Intercalation).!" (6) Apologetics : Treatise on Investigations."® (7) Polemics : (a) against Karaism—(a) 'Anan, (8) Ibn Sakkawiyyah," (y) Ibn Zitta (or Zutta)"; (5) against the Rabbanite Hivvi al- Balkhi" ; (e) against the Karaite Ben Asher (the completer of tlic Massoreth ; see L.-B. d.

Or., x. 684). (8) The nature of the Sepher Haggalui cited by Rabad II. and Ab. b. Hiyya in his Sepher Ha’ibbur is not clear.

Ill. Works ascribed to Se‘adyah the authorship of whieh is not sufficiently proven.1) The commentary on Canticles edited by Yishak Ibn ‘Akrish (Constantinople, 1577, 4to), and that published by L. Margaliyyoth at Frankfort-on-Oder, 177778, (2) The well- known piece of didactic poetry which gives account of all the letters of the Bible, how many times they occur, &c. (editio prineeps, Venice, 1538, at the end of Elias Levita’s Massoreth Hammass.).

IV. Works ascribed to Se‘adyah by mistake.—(1) The Commentary on Daniel commonly found in the Rabbinic Bibles belongs to an- other Rab Seadyah, who lived at least two hundred years later, and was a native either of France or the south of Germany. (2) The Commentary on the Sepher Yesirah, printed with the text and three other commentaries at Mantua in 1562, 4to. (3) The Book on Lots (Sepher Haggoraloth), often printed separately aud in con- junction with similar works. (4) Eben Happilosophim (Lapis Philo- sophorum), ascribed to him by R. Mosheh Butrial (Mantua edition of the Sepher Yesirah as above). (S. M. §.-8.)

is in §. Arabian handwriting. The well-known “Ten reasons for Sounding the Trumpet on the Day of Memorial” are not found in this Siddur (against Rapoport, ut supra, note 21). The three poetical pieces published as five by Rosenberg (Kobes, ii., Berlin, 1856) form an integral part of the Siddur, but bear on the surface marks of having been taken from a second-hand, if not a third-hand, copy, as the editor admits with regard to the “second petition.” The “Two Petitions” must have served Ibn Gebirol (AVICEBRON) as a model for the latter

or liturgical part of his m2>p “N53, just as he and others after him silently utilized Se‘adyah’s philosophy.

5 See Hoboth Hallebaboth (preface) and Sibbub (Travels) of R. Peth- ahyah of Ratisbon (London, 1861, 8vo, p. 22).

6 [.-B. d. Orients, x. coll. 516, 541, 684.

7 Tbid., coll. 516, 518. 8 See Rashi on Psalm xlv. 10.

9 L.-B. d. Or., x. 518. 10 Sibbud (as in note 5 above).

1l See Shem Haggedolim (Vilna, 1852, 8vo), ii. leaf 16a, col. 2.

2. See Sha‘are Sedek (ut supra), leaf 17b.

13 See R. Menahem b. Shelomoh lebeth Meir (commonly called Meiri) on Aboth (Vienna, 1854, 8vo, Introduction, p. 17).

14 See Rapoport, /.¢., note 20.

1 See Pinsker, Likkute Kadmoniyyoth (Vienna, 1860, p. 174, note 1, in Nispahim). 16 See Rapoport, l.¢., note 19.

YW See L.-B. d. Or., xii. coll. 101, 102.

18 See Sion (Frankfort-on-Main, 1842-43, 8vo), ii. p. 187.

19 See Pinsker (wt supra), p. 103. 20 Sion (as before).

21 On this commentator see Ibn ‘Ezra on Exodus xxi. 24. From this passage we learn that Se‘adyah and Ben Zitta were contemporaries, and even had oral controversies with one another.

22 See Halikhoth Kedem, Amsterdam, 1846, p.71. Wivvi ai-Balkhi had raised strong objections against the truth of Scripture in his Two Hundred Questions, or Objections to the Bible.

23 The editions ‘Prag”, 1782 (Steinschneider), and Nowydwor, 1783 (Zedner), are probably the same as that of Frankfort with different titles.

SAALFELD, a busy little town of Germany, in the eastern horn of the crescent-shaped duchy of Saxe-Meiningen, is picturesquely situated on the

left bank of the Saale (here spanned by a bridge), 24 miles south of Weimar and 77 miles south-west of Leipsic. One of the most ancient towns in Thuringia, Saalfeld was the capital of the now extinct duchy of Saxe-Saalfeld, and contains some interest- ing old buildings. Among these are the former residential palace, built in 1679 on the site of the Benedictine monas- tery of St Peter, destroyed during the Peasants' War ; the Gothic church of St John, dating from the 13th century ; the quaint town-house, built in 1533-37 ; and the Kitzer- stein, a shooting-lodge said to have been originally erected by the emperor Henry I., though the present building is not older than the 16th century. But perhaps the most interesting relic of the past in Saalfeld is the striking ruin of the Sorbenburg or Hoher Schwarm, a strong castle said to have been built by Charlemagne to protect his borders from the Slavonic hordes. Its destruction took place in 1290, under Rudolf of Hapsburg. Saalfeld is situated in one of the busiest parts of Meiningen, and carries on a number of brisk industries, including the manufacture of sewing-machines, colours, wax-cloth and wire-cloth, brewing, and iron-founding. It has an active trade in iron, slate, wood, and wooden goods, and there are ochre and iron mines in the neighbourhood. The population in 1880 was

7458.

Springing up under the wing of the Sorbenburg, Saalfeld early became an imperial demesne, and received various benefits at the hands of successive emperors. After asomewhat chequercd carcer, the town became the capital of the duchy of Saxe-Saalfeld, founded in 1680 by the youngest son of the duke of Gotha; but in 1735, when the succession to the duchy of Coburg was assigned to the dukes of Saalfeld, their residence was removed to Coburg. In 1826 the united duchies merged by inheritance in the duchy of Saxe-Meiningen.

SAARBRUCKEN, an important industrial and com- mercial town in Prussia, on the left bank of the Saar, a navigable tributary of the Moselle, is situated 49 miles east of Metz, at the south end of one of the most extensive coal- fields in Europe, to which it has given itsname. With the town of St Johann, immediately opposite on the right bank of the river, here spanned by two bridges, Saarbriicken forms in reality a single community, with a

united popu- lation of nearly 22,000. St Johann, though now the larger, is the more recent town, being in fact the creation of the important railways whose junction is fixed there. Saar- briicken itself is not directly on any main line. The industries of St Johann-Saarbriicken include wool-spinning, brewing, and the manufacture of tobacco, chemicals, tin, and stoneware. The trade is chiefly connected with the produce of the neighbouring coal-mines and that of the numerous important iron and glass works of the district. The Saarbriicken coal-field extends over 70 square miles ; and its annual output is about 6 million tons. Of this total the Prussian state mines yield about 5,200,000 tons, Prussian private mines 100,000 tons, the mines in Lorraine 500,000 tons, and mines in Rhenish Bavaria 200,000 tons. In 1880 the population of Saarbriicken alone was 9514, and of St Johann 12,346.

Till 1283 Saarbriicken was in the possession of the old counts of Ardennes ; from 1381 till 1793 it was the residence of the princes of Nassau-Saarbriicken ; from 1793 till 1815 it was in the possession of the French ; and since 1815 it has been Prussian. St Johann is said to have been founded as an outwork to Saarbriicken in 1046, and to have received town-rights in 1321. In the Franco- Prussian War of 1870-71 Saarbriicken was seized by the French on

ad August 1870, but the first German victory, on the heights of Spicheren, 3 miles to the sonth, relieved it four days later.

SAARDAM. See Zaanpam.

SAARGEMUND (Fr. Sarreguemines), an industrial town and railway junction of Germany, in the imperial province of Alsace-Lorraine, is situated at the confluence

of the Blies and the Saar, 40 miles east of Metz. It carries on considerable manufactures of silk, plush, porcelain, and earthenware, and is a chief depdt for the papier-maché boxes (mostly snuff-boxes) which are made in great quan- tity in the neighbourhood. To the south lies the district lunatic asylum

of Steinbacherhof. The town, which is garrisoned by four squadrons of cavalry, in 1880 had a population of 9573, chiefly Roman Catholics.

SAAVEDRA, Ancet pr, DuKE or Rivas (1791-1865), Spanish poet and politician, was born at Cordova in 1791, and fought with bravery in the Spanish War of Independ- ence. From 1813 to 1820 he lived in retirement in An- dalucia, but in the latter year he sided actively with the revolutionary party, and in consequence had to go into exile in 1823. He lived successively in England, Malta, and France until 1834, when he received permission to return to Spain, shortly afterwards succeeding his brother as duke of Rivas. In 1836 he became minister of the interior under Isturiz, and along with his chief had again to leave the country. Having returned with Maria Chris- tina in 1844, he again held a portfolio for a short time in 1854; and during the last two decades of his life he was ambassador at Naples, Paris, and Florence for consider- able periods. He died in 1865.

In 1813 he published Ensayos poeticos, and between that date and his first exile several tragedies of his composition (Aliatar, 1814; Hl Duque d' Aquitania, 1814 ; Lanuza, 1822) were put upon the stage. Z'anto vales quanto tienes, a comedy, appeared in 1884, Don Alvaro, a tragedy, in 1835, and two other dramatic composi-

tions in 1842. Saavedra was also the author of Hi Moro Hxposito, a narrative poem in ballad metre (two volumes), and Florinda, an

epic romance. SAAVEDRA, MicvEeL pE Crrvantses. See CzEr-

VANTES,

SAAVEDRA FAXARDO, Dinco pz (1584-1648), diplomatist and man of letters, was born of a noble family at Algezares in the Spanish province of Murcia in 1584, Having been educated for the church at Salamanca, and admitted to the priesthood, he accompanied Cardinal Borgia, the Spanish ambassador, to Rome in the capacity of secretary. Ultimately he rose to high rank in the diplo- matic service, and was Spanish plenipotentiary at Ratisbon in 1636 and at Miinster in 1645. He was nominated to the supreme council of the Indies in 1646, but not long afterwards retired to a monastery, where he died in 1648.

In 1640 he published a treatise entitled Hmpresas politicas, 6 idea de un principe politico cristiano representado en cien empresas, a hundred short essays, in which he discusses the education of 4 prince, his relation and duties to those around him, and so forth, primarily intended for and dedicated to the son of Philip IV. It is sententious in style and characterized by the curious learning of the time, and is still read and admired in Spain. It passed through a number of editions and was translated into several languages, the English version being by Astry (2 vols., 8vo, London, 1700). An unfinished historical work entitled Corona Gotica, Castellana, y Austriaca politicamente ilustrada, appeared in 1646, Another work by Saavedra, only second iu popularity to the Hmpresas, his Republica Literaria, was published posthumously in 1670 ; it dis- cusses in a somewhat mocking tone some of the leading characters in the ancient and modern world of letters. Collected cditions of his works appeared at Antwerp in 1677-78, and again at Madrid im 1789-90 ; see also vol. xxv. of the Bibl. de Aut. Esp. (1858).

SAAZ (Bohemian Zatec), a manufacturing and com- mercial town in the north of Bohemia, is situated on thie right bank of the Eger, 42 miles north-west of Prague. The suspension bridge, 210 feet long, which here spans the river was constructed in 1826 and is one of the oldest of the kind in Bohemia. Saaz, which claims to have ex- isted as early as the 8th century, contains a number of ancient churches, of which one is said to date from 1206, and five others from before the close of the 14th century. The town-house was built in 1559. A technical school was added in 1878 to the already fairly numerous educa- tional institutions. Nails, leather, beetroot-sugar, and pasteboard are among the chief manufactures of Saaz,

which, however, owes its main importance to being the centre of the extensive hop-trade of the neiglibourhood.

The hops of Saaz are said to have been renowned for the

last five hundred years; and nearly 800 tons are annually raised in the district to which the town gives its name. The population of Saaz was 12,425 in 1880.

SABAA. See YEMEN.

SABAH, or British NortH Bornxo, is all that portion of the island of Bornxo (q.v.) which was formally recog- nized by the charter of incorporation granted in Novem- ber 1881 as the territory of the British North Borneo Company. Tt has a coast-line of over 600 miles, and its area, still to a great extent unexplored,! is estimated at 30,000 square miles. Leaving out of account the deep indentations of the coast-line, it may be said to form a pentagon, of which three sides, the north-west, north-east, and south-east, are washed by the sea, while the remaining two sides are purely conventional lines drawn from Gura Peak (3° 50’ N. lat., 116° 10’ E. long.), the one almost due east to the Sibuco river, the other north-north-west to the mouth of the Sipitong on Brunei Bay. The latter separates the Company’s territory from the independent sultanate of Brunei; the former is the frontier towards the Dutch possessions.

The great central feature of Sabah is the magnificent mountain of Kinabalu (compare Bornxo) or Nabalu, built up of porphyritic granite and igneous rocks to a height of 13,698 feet, and dominating the whole northern part of the island, with all its profusion of lesser mountains and hills. Kinabalu, which has the appearance of two mountains, unites towards the east by a low ridge with “Nonohan t’ agaioh (the great Nonohan) and the terminal cone Tumboyonkon (Tamboyukon).” These two summits are respectively 8000 and 7000 feet high, and there are others of considerable elevation in the same neighbour- hood. At some 15 or 20 miles to the north rises Mount Madalon (5000 feet), separated from Kinabalu and the other igneous and metamorphic hills by a wide valley, and consisting of those aqueous rocks, limestones, sandstones, and clays which appear to occupy the whole country to the north. Westward from Kinabalu are hills between 1000 and 2000 feet in height, and about 40 or 50 miles south-east is an important group on the north side of the Labuk valley known as the Mentapok Mountains (3000- 8000 feet). The whole surface of the country is channelled by countless streams whose precipitous ravines, boulder- strewn

rapids, and enormous beds of rolled pebbles bespeak the denuding energy of tropical rains. The coasts are generally low and flat, and to a great extent lined with casuarina trees, with here and there a stretch of mangrove, a low sandstone or limestone cliff, or a patch of that great forest which in the interior still covers so large a portion of the territory. In the low grounds along the coast and also inland among the hills are vast swamps and watery plains, which in the rainy season, when the rivers rise 20 or 30 fect above their usual level, are transformed into lakes. On the west side of Sabah the principal rivers are the Padas and the Klias, debouching opposite Labuan, but quite unexplored in their upper courses; the Papar (Pappar or Pappal), which passes the village of that name and enters the sea at Papar Point; the Tampassuk, one of the first to be explored (see St John's Life im the Forests of the Far East) and remarkable for the waterfall of Pandassan or Tampassuk (1500 feet high, and thus one of the highest in the world), formed by its headwater the Kalupis. The Sekwati, a comparatively small river

1 But the officers of the company are very active in exploration. L. B. von Donop, F. Witti (killed 1882), W. B. Pryer, Frank Hatton (killed 1883), and Henry Walker are or have been among the more energetic.

farther north, is well known for its oil-springs. At the northern extremity of the island the deep inlet of Marudu Bay receives the waters of the Marudu or Maludu river, which rises on the west side of Mount Madalon. On the

east coast are the Sugut, which has its headwaters in the

hills to the east of Kinabalu, and forms its delta in the neighbourhood of Torongohok or Purpura Island ; the Labuk, debouching in Labuk Bay, and having its sources in the highlands about 70 miles inland ; the Kinabatangan, with a longer course than any yet mentioned, rising prob- ably betwecn 116° and 117° E. long., and forming at: its mouth a very extensive delta to the south of Sandakan Harbour; and finally the Segama, the scene of Frank Hatton's death (1883). Farther south, and inland from Darvel Bay and Sibuco (or St Lucia) Bay, there are no doubt other rivers of equal, it may be superior, import- ance; such, to judge by its delta, is the

Kalabakong, debouching opposite Sebattik Island. Most of the rivers mentioned are navigable for steam launches of light draught, but their value is frequently impaired by a bar near the mouth. Several of the natural harbours of North Borneo, on the other hand, are at once accessible, safe, and commodious. Sandakan Harbour, on the north-east coast (5° 40’ N. lat. and 118° 10’ E. long.), runs inland some 17 miles, with a very irregular outline broken by the mouths of numerous creeks and streams. The mouth, only 24 miles across, is split into two channels by the little island of Balhalla. The depth in the main entrance varies from 10 to 17 fathoms, and vessels drawing 20 feet can advance half-way up the bay. Just within the mouth, on the north side, lies Elopura (see below). At Silam, on Darvel Bay, farther south, there is good anchor- age. Kudat (discovered by Commander Johnstone, of H.M.S. “Egeria,” in 1881) is a small but valuable harbour in Marudu Bay running inland for 2 or 3 miles, but rapidly shoaling after the first mile to 1 and 2 fathoms. It affords anchorage for vessels of any draught, but the frontage available for wharves is limited to some 1500 feet. In Gaya Bay, on the west coast, any number of vessels may lie in safety during either monsoon, the depths varying from 6 to 16 and 17 fathoms.

The climate of North Borneo is of course tropical, with a very equable temperature. The lowest minimum of the thermometer recorded in 1883 at Sandakan was 68°°5in December. The greatest interval without rain was eight days in March. The rainfall was 344 inches (157 in 1880) at Sandakan, 129 at Papar, and 120 at Kudat. In the interior it must often be much above these figures.

That North Borneo should prove rich in minerals was supposed probable from the character of some other parts of the island ; but hitherto investigations have not in this matter proved very suc- cessful. Coal or lignite exists, but most frequently in thin seams and insignificant pockets ; the petroleum springs cannot come into any true competition with those worked elsewhere ; gold has been discovered (1885) in the Segama river and may prove a stimulus to immigration ; iron-ores appear both abundant and at times produc- tive ; and there are indications of the existence of copper, antimony, tin, and zinc ores. As yet the wealth of the country lies in its timber and jungle products (camphor and gutta-percha in grcat

quantities), and in its edible nuts, guano, sago, sugar, tobacco, coffee, pepper, and gambier. Tobacco is most successfully grown by the natives in the inland districts of Mansalut, Kandassang, Koporin- gan, Gana-Gana, Tomborongo, Karnahan, Penusak, Tiong-Tuhan, &e. ; and its cultivation has been taken up by several foreign com- panies. The birds'-nest caves of Gomanton (Gormanton) near the village of Malape on the Kinabatangan yield the Government a revenue of from $6000 to $7000 ; and other caves of the same kind are still unworked. As the natives (Dusuns, Tagaas-Bajaus, Idaan, &e.) are scattered, mostly in small villages, throughout the unex- plored as well as the explored districts, their number can only be guessed, but it is usually stated at 150,000. Since the formation of the company there has been a steady immigration, especially of Chinese from Singapore. At Elopura, the capital of the territory and of its East Coast residency, the inhabitants in 1883 numbered 3770 (1500 being Chinese and 1085 Sulus). Hong-Kong and Singa- pore steamers now call regularly at Sandakan, Gaya, and Kudat. In 1885 the territory was divided into Alcock province (in the north), Keppel province (along the west coast as far north as

Kimanis Bay), the East Coast residency (to the south-east of

Alcock and Keppel provinces), and Dent province (to the south-west of the East Coast residency with the coast from Kimanis Bay to Brunei Bay).

In 1865 an American company started by Mr Torrey obtained from the sultan of Brunei certain concessions of territory in North Borneo ; but this enterprise proved a financial failure and the

settlement formed on the Kimanis river broke up. The rights of

the Amcrican company were bought up by the Austrian Baron von Overbeck and the English merchant Mr Alfred Dent, who further obtained from the sultan of Brunei and the sultan of Sulu a series of charters conferring on them the sovereign authority in North Borneo under the titles of maharajah of Sabah, rajah of Gaya and Sandakan and Data Bandahara. Spain, which claimed that the sultan of Sulu being a Spanish vassal could not dispose of his territory without her consent, the English company

organized by.Mr Dent succecded in obtaining a charter of incorporation under Act of Parliament, Ist November 1881, as the “British North Borneo Company,” with right to acquire other interests in, over, or affecting the territories or propcrty comprised

in the several grants.

The text of the charter will be found in the London Gazette, 8th November 1881 and in the appendix to Mr Joseph Hatton’s New Ceylon (1881); see also Frank Hatton, North Borneo, 1885; the Century Magazine, 1885; the Edinburgh Review, 1882; and the English Illustrated Magazine, 1885.

SABAS, or Sappas, Sr (Syr. Mar Sabha), one of the early leaders of monasticism in Palestine, was a native of Cappadocia, born about 439. While still a child he accompanied his parents to Alexandria, whence in his eighteenth year, having made choice of the ascetic life, he removed to Palestine, settling at the desolate spot now occupied by the convent called by his name, about two hours from the north-west shore of the Dead Sea. As his reputation for holiness increased he was joined by others, who ultimately constituted a “laura” under the rule of St Basil. He took some part in the doctrinal controversies of the day, being a zealous defender of the decrees of Chalcedon. He died about 532 and is commemorated on 5th December. Another saint of this name, surnamed “the Goth,” suffered martyrdom at the hands of Athanaric, the Visigothic king, in the reign of Valentinian; he is commemorated on 15th (or 18th) April. See also Hoff-mann, Syr. Acten Persischer Méartyrer (1880), Nos. iv. and xi., for lives of two martyrs named Sabha.

SABBATH (navy), the day of sacred rest which among the

Hebrews followed six days of labour and closed the week.

1. Observance of the Sabbath.—The later Jewish Sab- bath, observed in accordance with the rules of the Scribes, was a very peculiar institution, and formed one of the most marked distinctions between the Hebrews and other nations, as appears in a striking way from the fact that on this account alone the Romans found themselves com- pelled to exempt the Jews from all military service. The rules of the Scribes enumerated thirty-nine main kinds of work forbidden on the Sabbath, and each of these prohibi- tions gave rise to new subtilties. Jesus's disciples, for example, who plucked ears of corn in passing through a field on the holy day, had, according to Rabbinical casuis- try, violated the third of the thirty-nine rules, which for- bade harvesting ; and in healing the sick Jesus Himself broke the rule that a sick man should not receive medical aid on the Sabbath unless his life was in danger. In fact, as our Lord puts it, the Rabbinical theory seemed to be that the Sabbath was not made for man but man for the Sabbath, the observance of which was so much an end in itself that the rules prescribed for it did not require to be justified by appeal to any larger principle of religion or humanity. The precepts of the law were valuable in the eyes of the Scribes because they were the seal of Jewish particularism, the barrier erected between the world at large and the exclusive community of Jehovah's grace. For this purpose the most arbitrary precepts were the most effective, and none were more so than the complicated rules of Sabbath observance. The ideal of the Sabbath which all these rules aimed at realizing was absolute rest

In spite of the opposition of

from everything that could be called work ; and even the exercise of those offices of humanity which the strictest Christian Sabbatarians regard as a service to God, and therefore as specially appropriate to His day, was looked on as work. To save life was allowed, but only because danger to life "superseded the Sabbath." In like manner the special ritual at the temple prescribed for the Sabbath by the Pentateuchal law was not regarded as any part of the hallowing of the sacred day; on the contrary, the rule was that, in this regard, "Sabbath was not kept in the sanctuary." Strictly speaking, therefore, the Sabbath was neither a day of relief to toiling humanity nor a

day appointed for public worship; the positive duties of its observance were to wear one's best clothes, eat, drink, and be glad (justified from Isa. lviii. 13). A more directly religious element, it is true, was introduced by the prac- tice of attending the synagogue service; but it is to be

remembered that this service was primarily regarded not

as an act of worship but asa meeting for instruction in the law. So far, therefore, as the Sabbath existed for any end outside itself it was an institution to help every Jew to learn the law, and from this point of view it is regarded by Philo and Josephus, who are accustomed to seek a philosophical justification for the peculiar institutions of their religion. But this certainly was not the leading point of view with the mass of the Rabbins ;! and at any rate it is quite certain that the synagogue is a post-exilic institution, and therefore that the Sabbath in old Israel must either have been entirely different from the Sabbath of the Scribes, or else must have been a mere day of idle- ness and feasting, not accompanied by any properly reli- gious observances or having any properly religious mean- ing. The second of these alternatives may be dismissed as quite inconceivable, for, though many of the religious ideas of the old Hebrews were crude, their institutions were never arbitrary and meaningless, and when they spoke of consecrating the Sabbath they must have had in view some religious exercise of an intelligible kind by which they paid worship to Jehovah.

Indeed, that the old Hebrew Sabbath was quite differ- ent from the Rabbinical Sabbath is demonstrated in the trenchant criticism which Jesus directed against the latter (Matt. xii. 1-14; Mark ii. 27). The general position which He takes up, that "the Sabbath is made for man and not man for the Sabbath," is only a special application of the wider principle that the law is not an end in itself but a help towards the realization in life of the great ideal of love to God and man, which is the sum of all true religion, But Jesus further maintains that this view of the law asa whole, and the interpretation of the Sabbath law which it involves, can be historically justified from the Old Testa- ment. And in this connexion He introduces two of the main methods to which historical criticism of the Old Testament has recurred in modern times: He appeals to the oldest history rather than to the Pentateuchal code as proving that the later conception of the law was

unknown in ancient times (Matt. xii. 3, 4), and to the exceptions to the Sabbath law which the Scribes themselves allowed in the interests of worship (ver. 5) or humanity (ver. 11), as showing that the Sabbath must originally have been de- voted to purposes of worship and humanity, and was not always the purposeless arbitrary thing which the schoolmen made it to be. Modern criticism of the history of Sabbath observance among the Hebrews has done nothing more than follow out these arguments in detail, and show that the result is in agreement with what is known as to the dates of the several component parts of the Pentateuch.

1 See the Mishnah, tr. “Shabbath,” and B. of Jubilees, ch. 1. 3 and

compare Schiirer, Gesch. d. jiid. Volkes, ii. 357, 376, 393 sq., where the Rabbinical Sabbath is well explained and illustrated in detail.

Of the legal passages that speak of the Sabbath all those which show affinity with the doctrine of the Scribes— regarding the Sabbath as an arbitrary sign between Jehovah and Israel, entering into details as to particular acts that are forbidden, and enforcing the observance by severe penalties, so that it no longer has any religious value, but appears as a mere legal constraint—are post-exilic (Exod. xvi. 23-30, xxxi. 12-17, xxxv. 1-3; Num. xv. 32-36); while the older laws only demand such cessation from daily toil, and especially from agricultural labour, as among all ancient peoples naturally accompanied a day set apart as a religious festival, and in particular lay weight on the fact that the Sabbath is a humane institution, a holiday for the labouring classes (Exod. xxiii. 12; Deut. v. 13-15). As it stands in these ancient laws, the Sabbath is not at all the unique thing which it was made to be by the Scribes. “The Greeks and the barbarians,” says Strabo (x. 3, 9), “have this in common, that they accompany their sacred rites by a festal remission of labour.” So it was in old Israel: the Sabbath was one of the stated religious feasts, like the new moon and the three great agricultural sacri- ficial celebrations (Hosea ii. 11); the new moons and the Sab- baths alike called men to the sanctuary to do sacrifice (Isa. i, 14); the remission of ordinary business belonged to both alike (Amos viii. 5), and for precisely the same reason. Hosea even takes it for granted that in

captivity the Sab- bath will be suspended, like all the other feasts, because in his day a feast implied a sanctuary.

This conception of the Sabbath, however, necessarily underwent an important modification in the 7th century B.¢., when the local sanctuaries were abolished, and those sacrificial rites and feasts which in Hosea's time formed the essence of every act of religion were limited to the central altar, which most men could visit only at rare intervals. From this time forward the new moons, which till then had been at least as important as the Sabbath and were celebrated by sacrificial feasts as occasions of religious gladness, fall into insignificance, except in the conservative temple ritual. The Sabbath did not share the same fate, but with the abolition of local sacrifices it became for most Israelites an institution of humanity divorced from ritual. So it appears in the Deuteronomic decalogue, and presumably also in Jer. xvii. 19 sg. In this form the institution was able to survive the fall of the state and the temple, and the seventh day's rest was clung to in exile as one of the few outward ordinances by which the Israelite could still show his fidelity to Jehovah and mark his separation from the heathen. Hence we understand the importance attached to it in the exilic literature (Isa. lvi. 2 sq., lviii. 13), and the character of a sign between Jehovah and Israel ascribed to it in the post-exilic law. This attachment to the Sabbath, beautiful and touching so long as it was a spontaneous expression of continual devotion to Jehovah, acquired a less pleasing character when, after the exile, it came to be enforced by the civil arm (Neli. xiii.), and when the later law even declared Sabbath-breaking a capital offence. But it is just to remember that without the stern discipline of the law the community of the second temple could hardly have escaped dissolution, and that Judaism alone preserved for Chris- tianity the hard-won achievements of the prophets.

The Sabbath exercised a twofold influence on the early Christian church. On the one hand, the weekly celebration of the resurrection on the Lord's day could not have arisen except in a circle that already knew the week as a sacred division of time ; and, moreover, the manner in which the Lord's day was observed was directly influenced by the Synagogue service. On the other hand, the Jewish Chris- tlans continued to keep the Sabbath, like other points of the old law. Eusebius (HW. H,, iti. 27) remarks that the

Ebionites observed both the Sabbath and the Lord's day ; and this practice obtained to some extent in much wider circles, for the Apostolical Constitutions recommend that the Sabbath shall be kept as a memorial feast of the crea- tion as well as the Lord's day as a memorial of the resur- rection. The festal character of the Sabbath was long recognized in a modified form in the Eastern Church by a prohibition of fasting on that day, which was also a point in the Jewish Sabbath law (comp. Judith viii. 6).

On the other hand, Paul had quite distinctly laid down from the first days of Gentile Christianity that the Jewish Sabbath was not binding on Christians (Rom. xiv. 5 sq. ; Gal. iv. 10; Col. ii. 16), and controversy with Judaizers led in process of time to direct condemnation of those who still kept the Jewish day (¢.g., Co. of Laodicea, 363 .D.). Nay, in the Roman Church a practice of fasting on Satur- day as well as on Friday was current before the time of Tertullian. The steps by which the practice of resting from labour on the Lord's day instead of on the Sabbath was established in Christendom and received civil as well as ecclesiastical sanction will be spoken of in SuNDAY; it is enough to observe here that this practice is naturally and even necessarily connected with the religious observance of the Lord's day as a day of worship and religious glad- ness, and is in full accordance with the principles laid down by Jesus in His criticism of the Sabbath of the Scribes. But of course the complete observance of Sunday rest was not generally possible to the early Christians before Christendom obtained civil recognition. For the theological discussions whether and in what sense the fourth commandment is binding on Christians, see DEca- LOGUE, Vol. vil. p. 17.

2. Origin of the Sabbath—As the Sabbath was origin- ally a religious feast, the question of the origin of the Sabbath resolves itself into an inquiry why and in what circle a festal cycle of seven days was first established. In Gen. ii. 1-3 and in Exod. xx. 11 the Sabbath is declared to be a memorial of the completion of the work of creation in six days. But it appears certain that the decalogue as it lay before the Deuteronomist did not contain any allusion to the creation (see DrcaLocus, vol. vii. p. 16), and it is generally believed that this reference was added by the same post-exilic hand that wrote Gen. i. 1-ii. 4a. The older account of the creation in Gen. ti. 4b sg. does not recognize the hexaemeron, and it is even doubtful whether the

original sketch of Gen i. distributed creation over six days. The connexion, therefore, between the seven days' week and the work of creation is now generally recognized as secondary. The week and the Sabbath were already known to the writer of Gen. i., and he used them to give the framework for his picture of the creation, which in the nature of things could not be literal and required some framework. At the same time, there was a peculiar appropriateness in associating the Sabbath with the doctrine that Jehovah is the Creator of all things ; for we see from Isa. xl.-lxvi. that this doctrine was a mainstay of Jewish faith in those very days of exile which gave the Sabbath a new importance for the faithful.

But, if the week as a religious cycle is older than the idea of the week of creation, we cannot hope to find more than probable evidence of the origin of the Sabbath. At the time of the exile the Sabbath was already an institution peculiarly Jewish, otherwise it could not have served as a mark of distinction from heathenism. This, however, does not necessarily imply that in its origin it was specifically Hebrew, but only that it had acquired distinguishing features of a marked kind. What is cer- tain is that the origin of the Sabbath must be sought within a circle that used the week as a division of time. Here again we must distinguish between the week as

such and the astrological week, ¢.e., the week in which the seven days are named each after the planet which is held to preside over its first hour. If the day is divided into twenty-four hours and the planets preside in turn over each hour of the week in the order of their periodic times (Saturn, Jupiter, Mars, Sun, Venus, Mercury, Moon), we get the order of days of the week with which we are familiar. For, if the Sun presides over the first hour of Sunday, and therefore also over the eighth, the fifteenth, and the twenty-second, Venus will have the twenty-third hour, Mercury the twenty-fourth, and the Moon, as the third in order from the sun, will preside over the first hour of Monday. Mars, again, as third from the Moon, will preside over Tuesday (Dies Martis, Mardi), and so forth. This astrological week became very current in the Roman empire, but was still a novelty in the time of Dio Cassius (xxxvii. 18). This writer believed that it came from Egypt; but the old Egyptians had a week of ten, not of seven days, and the original home

of astrology and of the division of the day into twenty-four hours is Chaldea, It is plain, however, that there is a long step between the astrological assigna- tion of each hour of the week to a planet and the recog- nition of the week as an ordinary division of time by people at large. Astrology is in its nature an occult science, and there is not the slightest trace of a day of twenty-four hours among the ancient Hebrews, who had the week and the Sabbath long before they had any acquaintance with the planetary science of the Babylonian priests. Moreover, it is quite clear from extant remains of Assyrian calendars that our astrological week did not prevail in civil life even among the Babylonians and Assyrians: they did not dedicate each day in turn to its astrological planet. These facts make it safe to reject one often-repeated explanation of the Sabbath, viz., that it was in its origin what it is in the astrological week, the day sacred to Saturn, and that its observance is to be derived from an ancient Hebrew worship of that planet. In truth there is no evidence of the worship of Saturn among the oldest Hebrews; Amos v. 26, where Chiun (Kaiwan) is taken by many to mean Saturn, is of uncer- tain interpretation, and, when the tenses are rightly rendered, refers not to idolatry of the Israelites in the wilderness but to the time of the prophet.

The week, however, is found in various parts of the world in a form that has nothing to do with astrology or the seven planets, and with such a distribution as to make it pretty certain that it had no artificial origin, but suggested itself independently, and for natural reasons, to different races. In fact the four quarters of the moon supply an obvious division of the month; and, wherever new moon and full moon are religious occasions, we get in the most natural way a sacred cycle of fourteen or fifteen days, of which the week of seven or eight days (determined by half moon) is the half. Thus the old Hindus chose the new and the full moon as days of sacrifice ; the eve of the sacrifice was called upavasatha, and in Buddhism the same word (updsatha) has come to denote a Sabbath observed on the full moon, on the day when there is no moon, and on the two days which are eighth from the full and the new moon respectively, with fasting and other religious exercises.!

From this point of view it is most significant that in the older parts of the Hebrew Scriptures the new moon and the Sabbath are almost invariably

mentioned together. The month is beyond question an old sacred division of time common to all the Semites ; even the Arabs, who re- ceived the week at quite a late period from the Syrians

1 Childers, Pali Dict., p. 585; Kern, Buddhismus (Cae tie), p. 8; Mahdvagga, ii. 1, 1 (Eng. tr., i. 239, 291).

(Birini, Chronology, Eng. tr., p. 58), greeted the new nioon with religious acclamations. And this must have been an old Semitic usage, for the word which properly means “to greet the new moon” (ahalla) is, as Lagarde (Orientalia, ii. 19) has shown, etymologically connected with the Hebrew words used of any festal joy. Among the Hebrews, or rather perhaps among the Canaanites, whose speech they borrowed, the joy at the new moon be- came the type of religious festivity in general. Nor are other traces wanting of the connexion of sacrificial occa- sions—.e., religious feasts—with the phases of the moon among the Semites. The Harranians had four sacrificial days in every month, and of these two at least were deter- mined by the conjunction and opposition of the moon.?

That full moon as well as new moon had a religious significance among the ancient Hebrews seems to follow from the fact that, when the great agricultural feasts were fixed to set days, the full moon was chosen. In older times these feast-days appear to have been Sabbaths (Lev. xxiii. 11; comp. Passover, vol. xviii. p. 344).

A week determined by the phases of the moon has an average length of 294+4=72 days, 7.e., three weeks out of eight would have eight days. But there seems to be in 1 Sam. xx. 27, compared with vv. 18, 24, an indication that in old times the feast of the new moon lasted two days—a very natural institution, since it appears that the feast was fixed in advance, while the Hebrews of Saul’s time cannot have been good enough astronomers to know beforehand on which of two successive days the new moon would actually be observed.? In that case a week of seven working days would occur only once in two months. We cannot tell when the Sabbath became dissociated from the month; but the change seems to have been made before the Book of the Covenant, which already regards the Sabbath simply as an

institution of humanity and ignores the new moon. In both points it is followed by Deuteronomy.

The Babylonian and Assyrian Sabbath.—The word “Sabbath” (sabattuv), with the explanation “day of rest of the heart,” is claimed as Assyrian on the basis of a textual emendation made by F. Delitzsch in II. Rawl., 32, 16. The value of this isolated and uncertain testimony cannot be placcd very high, and it seems to prove too much, for it is practically certain that the Babylonians at the time of the Hebrew exile cannot have had a Sabbath exaetly corresponding in conception to what the Hebrew Sabbath had be- come under very special historical circumstances. What we do know from a calendar of the intercalary month Elul II. is that in that month the 7th, 14th, 19th, 21st, and 28th days had a pecu- liar character, and that certain acts were forbidden on them to the king and others. There is the greatest uncertainty as to the details (compare the very divergent renderings in Records of the Past, vii. 160 sq. ; Schrader, K.A.7., 2d ed., p. 19; Lotz, Qu. de historia Sabbati, 39 sq.); but these days, which are taken to be Assyrian Sabbaths, are certainly not ‘days of rest of the heart,” and to all appearance are unlucky days, and expressly designated as such.‘ If, therefore, they are “ Assyrian Sabbaths” at all, they are exaetly opposite in character to the Hebrew Sabbath, which Hosea deseribes as a day of gladness, and which never ceased to be a day of feasting and good cheer.

Etymology of the word “ Sabbath.” —The grammatical inflexions of the word “Sabbath” show that it is a feminine form, properly shab- bat-t for shabbat-t, from NW I. The root has nothing to do with resting in the sense of enjoying repose; in transitive forms and applications it means to ‘‘sever,” to ‘‘ put an end to,” and intran- sitively it mcans to ‘‘ desist,” to ‘‘come to an end.” ‘The gram- matical form of shabbath suggests a transitive sense, “the divider,” and apparently indicates the Sabbath as dividing the month. It may mean the day which puts a stop to the week’s work, but this is less likely. It certainly cannot be translated “the day of rest.”

Sabbatical Year.—The Jews under the sccond temple observed every scventh year as a Sabbath according to the (post-exilic) law of Lev. xxv. 1-7. It was a year in which all agrieulture was re-

2 The others—aceording to the Fihrist, 319, 14—are the 17th and the 28th.

3 It appears from Judith viii. 6 that even in later times there were two days at the new moon on whieh it was improper to fast.

4 Lotz says they are lucky days; but the expression which he renders “dies faustus” is applied to every day in the ealendar. The rest of his book does not rise above this example of acumen.

oo Ss Ss

==

a

a a a ee a

SA B—S AB

mitted, in which the fields lay unsown, the vines grew unpruned, and even the natural produce was not gathered in, That this law was not observed before the captivity we learn from Lev. xxvi. 34 sq.; indeed so long as the Hebrews were an agricultural people with little trade, in a land often ravaged by severe famines, such a law could not have been observed. Even in later times it was occasion- ally productive of great distress (1 Mac. vi. 49, 53 ; Jos., Anit., xiv. 16, 2). In the older legislation, however, we already meet with a seven years’ period in more than one connexion. The release of a Hebrew servant after six years’ labour (Exod. xxi. 2 sg.; Deut. xv. 12 sg.) has only a remote analogy to the Sabbatical year. But in

| Exod. xxiii. 10, 11 it is prescribed that the crop of every seventh | year (apparently the self-sown crop) shall be left for the poor, and

after them for the beasts. The difference between this and the later law is that the seventh year is not called a Sabbath, and that there is no indication that all land was to lie fallow on the same year. In this form a law prescribing one year’s fallow in seven may have been anciently observed. It is extended in ver. 11 to the vineyard and the olive oil, but here the culture necessary to keep the vines and olive trees in order is not forbidden ; the precept is only that the produce is to be left to the poor. In Deuteronomy

this law is not repeated, but a fixed seven years' period is ordained for the benefit of poor debtors, apparently in the sense that in the seventh year no interest is to be exacted by the creditor from a Hebrew, or that no proceedings are to be taken against the debtor in that year (Deut. xv. 1 sq.). (W. R. 8.)

SABELLIUS. Even after the elimination of Gnosti- cism the church remained without any uniform Christology ; the Trinitarians and the Unitarians continued to confront each other, the latter at the beginning of the 3d century still forming the large majority. These in turn split into two principal groups—the Adoptianists and the Modalists —the former holding Christ to be the man chosen of God, on whom the Holy Spirit rested in a quite unique sense, and who after toil and suffering, through His oneness of will with God, became divine, the latter maintaining Christ to be a manifestation of God Himself. Both groups had their scientific theologians who sought to vindicate their characteristic doctrines, the Adoptianist divines holding by the Aristotelian philosophy, and the Modalists by that of the Stoics; while the Trinitarians (Tertullian, Hippo- lytus, Origen, Novatian), on the other hand, appealed to Plato.

In Rome Modalism was the doctrine which prevailed from Victor to Calixtus (c. 190-220). The bishops just named protected within the city the schools of Epigonus and Cleomenes, where it was taught that the Son is identical with the Father. But the presbyter Hippolytus was successful in convincing the leaders of that church that the Modalistic doctrine taken in its strictness was contrary to Scripture. Bishop Calixtus saw himself under the necessity of abandoning his friends and setting up a mediating formula designed to harmonize the Trinitarian and the Modalistic positions. But, while excommunicating the strict Unitarians (Monarchians), he also took the same course with Hippolytus and his followers, declaring their teaching to be ditheism. The mediation formula, how- ever, proposed by Calixtus became the bridge by which, in the course of the decades immediately following, the doctrine of the Trinity made its way into the Roman Church. In the year 250, when the Roman presbyter Novatian wrote his book De T'rinitate, the doctrine of Hippolytus, once discredited as ditheism, had already become official there. At the same time Rome and most of the other churches of the West still retained a certain leaning towards Modalistic

monarchianism. This appears, on the one hand, in the use of expressions having a Modalistic ring about them—see especially the poems of Commodian, written about the time of Valerian—and, on the other hand, in the rejection of the doctrine that the Son is subordinate to the Father and is a creature (wit- ness the controversy between Dionysius of Alexandria and Dionysius of Rome), as well as in the readiness of the West to accept the formula of Athanasius, that the Father and the Son are one and the same in substance (6po0o0vcev01).

127

The strict Modalists, whom Calixtus had excommuni- cated along with their most zealous opponent Hippolytus, were led by Sabellius, who was perhaps a Libyan by birth. His party continued to subsist in Rome for a considerable time afterwards,! and withstood Calixtus as an unscrupu- lous apostate. In the West, however, the influence of Sabellius seems never to have been important; in the East, on the other hand, after the middle of the 3d cen- tury his doctrine found much acceptance, first in the Pentapolis and afterwards in other provinces.? It was violently controverted by the bishops, notably by Dionysius of Alexandria, and the development in the East of the philosophical doctrine of the Trinity after Origen (from 260 to 320) was very powerfully influenced by the opposition to Sabellianism. Thus, for example, at the great synod held in Antioch in 268 the word opootva.os was rejected, as seeming to favour Unitarianism. The Sabellian doc- trine itself, however, during the decades above mentioned underwent many changes in the East and received a philo- sophical dress. In the 4th century this and the allied doctrine of Marcellus of Ancyra were frequently con- founded, so that it is exceedingly difficult to arrive at a clear account of it in its genuine form. Sabellianism, in fact, became a collective name for all those Unitarian doctrines in which the divine nature of Christ was acknowledged. The teaching of Sabellius himself was indubitably very closely allied to the older Modalism (“ Patripassianism”) of Noetus and Praxeas, but was distinguished from it by its more careful theological elaboration and by the account it took of the Holy Spirit. His central proposition was to the effect that Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are the same person, three names thus being attached to one and the same being. What weighed most with Sabellius was the monotheistic interest. The One Being was also named by

him viordrwp,—an expression purposely chosen to obviate ambiguity. To explain how one and the same being could have various forms of manifestation, he pointed to the tripartite nature of man (body, soul, spirit), and to the sun, which manifests itself as a heavenly body, as a source of light, and also as a source of warmth. He further maintained that God is not at one and the same time Father, Son, and Spirit, but, on the contrary, has been active in three consecutive energies,—first in the prosopon of the Father as Creator, then in the prosopon of the Son as Redeemer, and lastly in the prosopon of the Spirit as the Giver of Life. It is by this doctrine of the succession of the prosopa that Sabellius is essentially distinguished from the older Modalists. In particular it is significant, in conjunction with the reference to the Holy Spirit, that Sabellius re- gards the Father also as merely a form of manifestation of the one God,—in other words, has formally put Him in a position of complete equality with the other Persons. This view prepares the way for Augustine's doctrine of the Trinity. Sabellius himself appears to have made use of Stoical formulas (7Aativer Oar, cveréA Aco Gat), but he chiefly relied upon Scripture, especially such passages as Deut. vi. 4, Exod. xx. 3, Isa. xliv. 6, John x. 38. Of his later history nothing is known ; his followers died out in the course of the 4th century.

The sources of our knowledge of Sabellianism are Hippolytus (Philos., bk. ix.), Epiphanius (H#r., lxii.), and Dionys. Alex. (Epp.); also various passages in Athanasius and the other fathers of the 4th century. For modern discussions of the subject seo Schleiermacher (Theol. Ztschr., 1822, hft. 3), Lange (Zéschr. f. hist. Theol., 1832, ii. 2), Dollinger (Hippolyt u. Kallist, 1853), Zahn (Marcell v. Ancyra, 1867), and Harnack (s.v. ' Monarchianismus," in Herzog-Plitt, Encykl. f. Prot. Theol., x. 199 sq.). (A. HA.)

1 In the 18th century there was discovered in one of the catacombs of Rome an inscription containing the words "qui et Filius diceris et Pater inveniris."" This can only have come from a Sabellian.

2 Whether Sabellius himself ever visited the East is unknown.

SABIANS. In three passages of the Koran Mohammed mentions between the Jews and the Christians a sect whom he calls Sabians (Sabi'éina). He distinguishes them from the Magians and polytheists (xxii. 17), and appears to say that they believed in God and in the day of resurrection and judgment. It has commonly been supposed that the sect referred to is the MANDZANS (¢.v.); but it is more probable that they were some obscure half-Christian body (Elkesaites 1), which had representatives in Arabia itself (see MoHAMMEDANISM, vol. xvi. p. 547). The name is derived from the Aramaic Y2¥, with a softening of Y to &, such as took place in certain dialects of that speech, and means ‘‘ Baptists.” The older Mohammedan theologians were agreed that the Sabians possessed a written revela- tion, and were entitled accordingly to enjoy a toleration not granted to mere heathen, and it appears that the Man- dans got the benefit of this, whether they were the sect Mohammed had in view or not. But under Al-Mamtn (830) a body that had certainly no claim to be deemed other than polytheists began to shield themselves under the same name, viz., the Harranians, or remnant of the old heathen of Mesopotamia. Star-worship had a chief place in the religion of the Harranians, as it had had in the older Babylonian and Syrian faiths, but they had partly disguised their polytheism in a fantastic philosophy, so that they were able on occasion to pose as people of enlightened beliefs. Accounts of these false Sabians reached the West through Maimonides, and then through Arabic sources, long before it was understood that, in this application, the name was only a disguise. Hence the greatest confusion prevailed in all European accounts of them till Chwolsohn published in 1856 his Ssabier und Ssabismus, in which the authorities for the history and belief of the Harranians in the Middle Ages are collected and discussed. See also Dozy and De Goeje in the Actes of the sixth Oriental congress, ii. 1, 185 sg., Leyden, 1885. It is quite inappropriate to call star-worshippers in general Sabians or Zabians or to speak of a distinct Sabian religion, as older writers do. The religion of the Harranians is simply a modernized form of the old Syrian polytheism.

SABICU WOOD is the produce of a large leguminous tree, Lysiloma Sabicu, a native of Cuba, where alone it appears to be found. The wood has a rich mahogany colour; it is exceedingly heavy, hard, and durable, and therefore most valuable for shipbuilding. Sabicu, on account of its durability, was selected for the stairs of the Great Exhibition (London) of

1851, and, notwithstanding the enormous traffic which passed over them, the wood at the end was found to be little affected by wear.

SABINE, Str Epwarp (1788-1883), astronomer, was born in Dublin on 14th October 1788, a scion of a family said to be of Italian origin. He was educated at Wool- wich and obtained a commission in the Royal Artillery at the age of fifteen. He attained the rank of major-general in 1859. His only experience of actual warfare seems to have been at the siege of Fort Erie in 1814; but few men have seen more than he of active and sometimes perilous service. In early life he devoted himself to astronomy and physical geography, and in consequence he was appointed astronomer to various expeditions, among others that of Sir J. Ross (1818) in search of the North-West Passage, and that of Sir E. Parry soon afterwards. Later, he spent long periods on the inter-tropical coasts of Africa and America, and again among the snows of Spitzbergen. Sir Edward Sabine died at East Sheen, Surrey, on 26th May 1883.

Of Sabine's scientific work two branches in particular deserve very high credit—his determination of pendulum data for the investigation of the figure of the earth and his extensive researches connected with terrestrial magnetism. His pendulum observations were the first to show the altogether unexpected amount of accuracy attainable in a matter which, under the most favourable conditions,

is one of great delicacy, but which had to be pursued by him under cireumstanees often of peculiar difficulty. The establishment of a system of magnetic observatories in various parts of British territory all over the globe was accomplished mainly on his representations « and to the direction of these observatories and to the reduetion and discussion of the observations a great part of his life was devoted. His published papers, as shown by the Royal Soeiety's Catalogue, amounted in 1872 to 101. While the majority bear on one or other of the subjects just mentioned, others deal with such widely different topics as the birds of Greenland, ocean tempera- tures, the Gulf Stream, barometric measurement of heights, ares of meridian, glacier transport of rocks, the volcanoes of the Sandwich Islands, and various points of meteorology. Sabine occupied for ten years (1861-71) the president's chair of the Royal Society, and was made K.C.B. in 1869.

Though he cannot be said to have been a man of striking originality, his unflagging devotion to his work deservedly won him an honourable position among the foremost scientific men of the present century.

SABINES. The Sabines (Sabini) were a people of Cen- tral Italy, who played an important part in the early history of Rome. According to all old writers they were one of the most ancient nations of Italy, and the parent stock from which many of the other tribes that occupied the central and southern regions of the peninsula derived their origin, Of their own origin and affinities we know very little. Strabo calls them a very ancient race and " autochthonous," which may be taken as signifying that there was no authen- tic tradition of their immigration, or of the quarter from whence they came. 'The story of their Laconian. descent may be safely rejected as one of those fictions by which a certain class of the later Greek writers sought to derive every people in Italy from a Greek origin. But the evi- dence concerning their language, seanty as it is, is sufficient to prove that they were a cognate race with the neighbour- ing Umbrians and Oscans, as well as, more remotely, with the Latins. Cato, the best authority among the Roman writers with respect to the different races of Italy, affirmed that the Sabines originally occupied the country about Amiternum, in the upper valley of the Aternus, at the foot of the loftiest group of the Apennines. From thence they gradually extended themselves into the fertile valleys about Reate, where we find them established in historical times, and occupied the tract from thence to the Tiber and the Anio. But even in its widest extension the region held by the Sabines was of small dimensions, and for the most part of a rugged and mountainous character. Hence it was natural that they should seek a place for their super- fluous population by repeated emigrations into the neigh- bouring districts, and the general tradition among Roman writers ascribed the origin of several of the more powerful and populous nations of the peninsula to such emigrations. This result was especially promoted by a custom which, though not unknown to the other nations of Italy, appears to have been peculiarly characteristic of the Sabines—that of a Ver Sacrum, or ''sacred spring," when everything born in that year was consecrated to some local divinity, most frequently to Mamers or Mars. All the cattle were duly sacrificed, while the young men were allowed to grow up to manhood, and then sent forth in a body to seek for themselves new abodes beyond the limits of their native land. To such

colonies is ascribed the foundation of the Picentes or people of Picenum, the Samnites, and the Hirpini. Of these the last-mentioned derived their name from hirpus, the Sabine name for a wolf, an animal of that description being supposed to have been divinely sent as the leader of the colony, as a woodpecker (picus), also sacred to Mars, became that of the Piceni. The Peligni also, as we learn from Ovid, himself a native of the dis- trict, claimed a Sabine origin, and the same was probably the case with the smaller kindred tribes of the Marsi, Marrucini, and Vestini. The Samnites, again, in their turn sent forth the Frentani and the Lucanians, who extended their dominion throughout the mountainous regions of

outhern Italy and carried their arms from the Adriatic o the Sicilian Straits.

Meanwhile the Sabines themselves were confined within omparatively narrow limits, and their extension towards he south was checked by the growing power of the Latins. ‘Here their power appears to have attained its highest point ‘,bout the time of the foundation of Rome, and the legend-

ry history, familiar to every schoolboy, of the contests bc fmcen Romulus and Tatius, the divided sovereignty at one time established between them, and the peaceful reign and legislation of the Sabine king Numa may be taken as representing the historical fact that the population of ‘Rome really contained an important Sabine element, and that Sabine influences were largely intermixed with those f Latin origin, both in the civil institutions and still ore in the religious rites and: ceremonies of the rising epublic. Beyond this it is impossible to pronounce with ‘certainty as to the real value and significance of the tradi- tions preserved to us in the poetical legends transmitted in the garb of history; and it is impossible in an article like the present to give even an outline of the various theories that have been devised by modern writers to put an historical interpretation upon the records thus preserved tous. It is clear, however, that the power of the Sabines was by no means broken, even by the establishment of the more powerful monarchy at Rome under the Tarquins, and for a period of more than fifty years after the fall of the ‘monarchy we find the Romans engaged in almost perpetual hostilities against the Sabines on the one side and the ‘Aquians and Volscians on the other. At length in the ‘year 449 z.c, the Sabines were defeated by the consul -M. Horatius, in an action which

appears to have been of so decisive a character that we do not find them again _appearing in arms against the Romans for a period of more ‘than 160 years. Their quiescence is the more singular as

during this interval the republic was engaged in the long ‘series of the Samnite Wars, in which their adversaries were the direct descendants of the Sabines, and had therefore every claim on their support. Still more unaccountable _is it that, after looking on with apparent neutrality for so ‘long, we find the Sabines in the year 290 B.c. once more in arms against Rome, and that at a period when the

Third Samnite War had for a time crushed all the hopes of their natural allies. The result was, as might have been expected, that they found themselves wholly unequal to contend single-handed against the power of Rome, and the consul M’. Curius Dentatus reduced them to submission in a single campaign. They were severely punished for this ‘defection ; and henceforth their national existence was at ‘an end. Those who survived the slaughter of the war were admitted to the position of Roman citizens, though ‘at first without the right of suffrage, but twenty years after this also was granted them, and they were to all intents and purposes incorporated in the Roman state. Thus separated from all the tribes of kindred origin, they jnever again appear in history, and, like the Campanians ‘and Latins, were content to swell the ranks of the Roman ‘legions even in the fierce struggle of the Social War (91- . 88 B.c.). Under the arrangements of the Roman empire jtheir very name was lost as a territorial designation, but It always continued in popular use, and was revived in the Middle Ages as that of an ecclesiastical province. Even at the present day every peasant in the neighbourhood of /Rome will point to La Sabina as the familiar appellation of the lofty mountain tract to the north of the city. | The limits of the territory occupied by the Sabines do ‘not appear to have varied much from a very early period (till the days of Strabo. That geographer describes them as extending as far south as Eretum near the Tiber, on the road to Rome, and a few miles only from Cures, the

ae

SA B—

reputed birthplace of Tatius and Numa, but which in his time had become a mere village. The principal town of the Sabines was Reate (still called Rieti), in the midst of the beautiful and fertile valley of the Velino, and from thence they occupied the upper valley of that river to its sources in the Monte della Sibilla and the rugged mountain valleys which connected it with that of the Aternus. Here was found Amiternum, the original capital of the tribe, near the modern Aquila, and between that and Reate lay Interocrea (Antrodoco), in a pass that has always formed one of the leading lines of communication through the central Apennines. In the extreme north was Nursia (Norcia), noted for the coldness of its climate, and cele- brated in ecclesiastical history as the birthplace of St Bene- dict. These were the only towns of any importance in the territory of the Sabines; but they lived for the most part scattered in villages about the mountains, a circum- stance absurdly alleged by some Roman writers as a proof of their Laconian origin. It was doubtless owing to this habit, as well as to the rugged mountainous character of the country in which they dwelt, that the Sabines owed the primitive simplicity of their manners and the frugal and severe character which distinguished them even in the days of Augustus. All readers of Horace must be familiar with his frequent allusions to the moral purity and frugal manners of the people that surrounded his Sabine villa, which was situated on the reverse of Mount Lucretilis, only about 15 miles from the rich and luxurious Tibur (Tivoli). The small town of Varia (Vicovaro), in its immediate neighbourhood, seems to have marked the frontier on this side.

No remains of the Sabine language are extant in the form of inscriptions, but coins struck during the Social War with the inscription ‘‘Safinim” show that the native appellation was the same as that in use among the Latins. The form “Sabellus” is frequently found in Latin writers as an ethnic adjective equivalent to Sabine; but the practice adopted by modern writers, of employing the term “ Sabel- lian ” to designate all the tribes of Sabine origin, including Samnites, Lucanians, &c., was first introduced by Niebuhr, and is not supported by any ancient authority. (E. H. B.)

SABLE (Mustela zibellina). See MAARTEN, vol. xv. p. 577, and Four, vol. ix. p. 838.

SABLES D'OLONNE, a seaport town of France, the chef-lieu of an arrondissement of the department of La Vendée, is situated on the Atlantic seaboard in 46° 30' N. lat., 300 miles south-west of Paris by the railway for Tours and La-Roche-sur-Yon. The town stands between the sea on the south and the port on the north, while on the west. it is separated by a channel from the suburb of La Chaume, built at the foot of a range of dunes 65 feet high, which terminates southwards in the rocky peninsula of L'Aiguille (the Needle), defended by Fort St Nicholas. To the north of Sables extend salt-marshes and oyster-parks, stocked from Auray or Cape Breton, and yielding 6,000,000 to 8,000,000 oysters perannum. The port of Sables, consisting of a tidal basin and a wet-dock, is accessible only to vessels of from 350 to 400 tons, and is dangerous when the winds are from the south-west. The entrance is shown by six lights ; a seventh lighthouse, that of the Barges, a mile out at sea to the west, has a height of 80 feet and is visible for 17 to 18 nautical miles. In 1882 145 vessels (62,073 tons) entered and 146 vessels (61,037 tons) cleared. The staple articles of trade are grain, wine, cattle, timber, salt, tar, fish, building stone, manures ; 400 boats are engaged in the sardine fishery. The beautiful smoothly sloping' beach, a mile in length, is much frequented by bathers. It is lined by an embankment which serves as a promenade and drive, and is bordered by hotels, villas, and cafés. The population in 1881 was 9769, that of the commune 10,420.

Founded by Basque or Spanish sailors, Sables was the first place in Poitou invaded by the Normans in 817. Louis XI., who went there in 1472, granted the inhabitants various privileges, improved the harbour, and fortified the entrance. Captured and recaptured during the Wars of Religion, the town afterwards became a nursery of hardy sailors and privateers, who harassed the Spaniards and afterwards the English. In 1696 Sables was bombarded by the combined fleets of England and Holland. Hurricanes have more than once caused grievous damage to town and harbour.

SACCATOO. See Soxora.

SACCHETTI, Franco (c. 1335-c. 1400), Italian novel- ist, was the son of Benci di Uguccione, surnamed “Buono,” of the noble and ancient Florentine family of the Sacchetti (comp. Dante, Par., c. xvi.), and was born at Florence about the year 1335. While still a young man he achieved repute as a poet, and he appears to have travelled on affairs of more or less importance as far as to Genoa, Milan, and “ Is- chiavonia.” When a sentence of banishment was passed upon the rest of the house of Sacchetti by the Florentine authorities in 1380 it appears that Franco was expressly exempted, “per esser tanto uomo buono,” and in 1383 he was one of the “eight,” discharging the office of “prior” for the months of March and April. In 1385 he was chosen ambassador to Genoa, but preferred to go as podest& to Bibbiena in Casentino. In 1392 he was podesta of San Miniato, and in 1396 he held a similar office at Faenza. In 1398 he received from his fellow-citizens the post of captain of their then province of Romagna, having his residence at Portico. The date of his death is un- known; most probably it occurred about 1400, though some writers place it as late as 1410.

Sacchetti left a considerable number of sonnetti, canzoni, ballate, madrigalt, &c., which have never been printed, but which are still extant in at least one MS. in the Laurentian library of Florence. His Novelle were first printed in 1724, from the MS. in the same collection, which, however, is far from complete. They were ori- ginally 300 in number, but only 258 in whole or in part now sur- vive. They are written in pure and elegant Tuscan, and, based as they are for the most part on real incidents in the public and domestic life of Florence, they are valuable for the light they throw on the manuers of that age, and occasionally also for the biograph- ical facts preserved in them. But in no other respect do they come up to the corresponding compositions of his friend Boccaccio. Some of them, it need hardly be said, are very coarse—a feature not con- pensated for by the moralizings almost invariably appended—and many more are dull and pointless, leaving the impression, as Sis- mondi has remarked, that in that century of artistic advance the art of conversation had remained far behind the others.

SACCHI, Anprea (c. 1600-1661), a leading painter of the later Roman school, was born in Rome in 1600, or perhaps as early as 1598. His father, Benedetto, a painter of undistinguished position, gave him his earliest instruc- tion in the art; Andrea then passed into the studio of Albani, of whom he was the last and the most eminent pupil, and under Albani he made his reputation early. The painter of Sacchi's predilection was Raphael; he was the jealous opponent of Pietro da Cortona, and more especially of Bernini. In process of time he became one of the most learned designers and one of the soundest colour- ists of the Roman school. He went to Venice and to Lom- bardy to study Venetian colour and the style of Correggio ; but he found the last-named master unadaptable for his own proper methods in art, and he returned to Rome. Sacchi was strong in artistic theory, and in practice slow and fasti- dious; it was his axiom that the merit of a painter consists in producing, not many middling pictures, but a few and perfect ones. His works have dignity, repose, elevated yet natural forms, severe but not the less pleasing colour, a learned treatment of architecture and perspective; he is thus a painter of the correct and laudable academic order, admired by connoisseurs rather than by ambitious students or the large public. His principal painting, often spoken of as the fourth best easel-picture in Rome— in the Vatican Gallery—is St Romuald relating his Vision to Five Monks of his Order. The pictorial crux of dealing

with these figures, who are all in the white garb of their order, has often been remarked upon; and as often the ingenuity and judgment of Sacchi have been praised in varying the tints of these habits according to the light and shade cast by a neighbouring tree. The Vatican Gallery contains also an early painting of the master,—the Miracle of St Gregory, executed in 1624; a mosaic of it was made in 1771 and placed in St Peter's. Other leading examples are the Death of St Anna, in S. Carlo ai Catinari; St Andrew, in the Quirinal ; St Joseph, at Capo alle Case; also, in fresco, a ceiling in the Palazzo Barberini—Divine Wisdom—reckoned superior in expression and selection to the rival work of Pietro da Cortona. There are likewise altar-pieces in Perugia, Foligno, and Camerino. Sacchi, who worked almost always in Rome, left few pictures visible in private galleries: one, of St Bruno, is in Gros. venor House. He had a flourishing school: Nicholas

Poussin and Carlo Maratta were his most eminent scholars ; Luigi Garzi and Francesco Lauri were others, and Sacchi's own son Giuseppe, who died young, after giving very high hopes. This must have been an illegitimate son, for Andrea died unmarried. This event took place in Rome in 1661.
SACCHINI, Antonio Marra Gaspare (1734-1786), musical composer, of the Italian school, was born at Pozzuoli, 23d July 1734, and educated under Durante at the Conser- vatorio di San Onofrio at Naples. His first serious opera was produced at Rome in 1762, and was followed by man others, nearly all of which were successful. In 1769 he removed to Venice; and in 1772 he visited London, where, notwithstanding a cruel cabal formed against him, he achieved a brilliant success, especially in his four new operas, Zamerlano, Lucio Vero, Nitetti e Perseo, and Il Gran Cid. Ten years later he met with an equally enthu- siastic reception in Paris, where his Rinaldo was produced under the immediate patronage of Queen Marie Antoinette, to whom he had been recommended by the emperor Joseph IJ. But neither in England nor in France did his reputation continue to the end of his visit. He seems to have been everywhere the victim of bitter jealousy. Even Marie Antoinette was not able to support his cause in the face of the general outcry against the favour shown to foreigners; and by her command, most unwill- ingly given, his last opera and undoubted masterpiece, Gidipe & Colone, was set aside in 1786 to make room for Lemoine's Phédre,—a circumstance which so preyed upon his mind that he died of chagrin, 7th October 1786. Sacchini's style was rather graceful than elevated, and he was deficient both in creative power and originality. But the dramatic truth of his operas, more especially the later ones, is above all praise, and he never fails to write with the care and finish of a thorough and accomplished musician. Cdipe was extremely successful after his death, and has since been performed at the Académie nearly

600 times. The last performance of which any record has reached us took place in 1844,

SACHEVERELL, Henry (1674-1724), an English church and state politician of extreme views, was born im 1674, the son of Joshua Sacheverell, rector of St Peter's, Marlborough, who at his death left a large family iu poverty. Henry Sacheverell matriculated at Magdalen College,

Oxford, 28th August 1689, and was demy of his college from 1689 to 1701 and fellow from 1701 to 1713.

_Addison, another Wiltshire lad, entered at the same college

two years earlier, but was also elected a demy in 1689; he inscribed to Sacheverell in 1694 his account of the greatest English poets. Sacheverell took his degree of B.A. in 1693, and became M.A. in 1696 and D.D. in 1708. His first preferment was the small vicarage of Cannock in Staffordshire ; but he leapt into notice when holding a preachership at St Saviour's, Southwark, His famous sermons on the church in danger from the neglect of the Whig ministry to keep guard over its interests

ha

'not include them in his own collection of his works.

were preached, the one at Derby, 14th August, the other at St Paul's Cathedral, 5th November 1709. They were immediately reprinted, the latter being dedicated to the lord mayor and the former to the author's kinsman, George Sacheverell, high sheriff of Derby for the year; and, as the passions of the whole British population were at this period keenly exercised between the rival factions of Whig and Tory, the vehement invectives of this furious divine on behalf of an ecclesiastical institution which supplied the bulk of the adherents of the Tories made him their idol. The Whig ministry, then slowly but surely losing the sup- port of the country, were divided in opinion as to the pro- priety of prosecuting this zealous parson. Somers was against such a measure ; but Godolphin, who was believed to be personally alluded to in one of these harangues under the nickname of '" Volpone," urged the necessity of a prosecution, and gained the day. The trial lasted from 97th February to 23d March 1710, and the verdict was that Sacheverell should be suspended for three years and that the two sermons should be burnt at the Royal Ex- change. 'This was the decree of the state, and it had the effect of making him a martyr in the eyes of the populace and of bringing about the downfall of the ministry. Im- mediately on the expiration of his sentence (13th April 1713) he was instituted to the valuable rectory of St Andrew's, Holborn, by the new Tory ministry, who

despised the author of the sermons, although they dreaded his in- fluence over the mob. He died at the Grove, Highgate, on 5th June 1724.

Ample information about his life and trial will be found in Hearne's Diaries, Bloxam's Register of Magdalen, iii. 98-110, and Hill Burton's Queen Anne, vol. ii. Mr Madan of the Bodleian Library has compiled a Sacheverell bibliography.

SACHS, Hans (1494-1576), the most eminent German poet of the 16th century, was born at Nuremberg on 5th November 1494. His father was a shoemaker, and Hans was trained to the same calling. Before beginning his apprenticeship, however, he was educated at the Latin school of Nuremberg. Having finished his ' Lehrjahre" as a shoemaker, he began his ''Wanderjahre" in 1511, and worked at his craft in many towns, including Ratisbon, Passau, Salzburg, Leipsic, Liibeck, and Osnabriick, In 1516 he returned to Nuremberg, where he remained during the rest of his life, working steadily at his business, and devoting his leisure time to literature. He married in 1519, and after his wife's death he married again in 1561, He died on 19th January 1576.

Sachs was much respected by his fellow-citizens, and acquired great fame as a poet. Early in life he reccived instruction in the principles and rules of the '' Meistergesang," and at Munich in 1513 he completed his study of 'the charming art." Afterwards he Wrote many poems in the formal manner of the '' Meistersivger," but to these efforts he attributed so little importance that he did nt Among his hest writings are his hymns, in which he gave expression to the highest spiritual aspirations of the age of the Reformation. He was one of the most ardent adherents of Luther, and in 1523 wrote in his honour the poem beginning, '' Die wittenbergisch Nachtigall, Die man jetz héret tiberall." This poem attracted much attention and was of great service to Luther. Sachs also wrote in verse many fables, parables, tales, and dialogues. Of his dramatic poems, the most remarkable are his Shrove Tuesday Plays, in each of which he offers a lively representation of an action without any attempt at exact portraiture or at a profound appreciation of motives. Works of this kind were popular before Sachs's time, but he gave them fresh vitality by his humour and fancy. Sachs had extra- ordinary fertility of imagination, and none of his German contem- portaries

approached him in his mastery of the forms of literary expression which were then known. He wrote thousands of poems, and in his lifetime a large number of them were printed, in three volumes 3 after his death two additional volumes appeared ; and in et times many volumes of his works in manuscript have been po From about the middle of the 17th century, when bog seieies of verse became as a rule mere imitators of foreign y ue | achs was almost forgotten, until interest in his work was

evived by Goethe ; and many selections from his writings have

since been published. A complete edition, prepared by A. von Keller, has been issued by the Literary Society of Stuttgart. A biography of Sachs by M. Solomon Ranisch was published in 1765, and there are later biographies by J. L. Hoffmann (1847), Weller (1868), and Liitzelberger (1874).

SACKING anp SACK MANUFACTURE. Sacking is a stout close-woven fabric, properly of flax, but now very largely made of jute. The chief centres of the manufacture are Dundee and ~~Forfar in Scotland. Sacks, however, are made of many qualities and from different fibres, according to the purposes to which they are devoted. A large pro~~ portion of flour sacks, those particularly of American origin, are made of stout cotton. Numerous attempts have been made to manufacture seamless sacks ; but none have met with success. The invention of a sewing-machine for the “overhead” seaming of sacks has been successfully solved in the machine of Laing and other inventors.

SACO, a city of the United States, in York county, Maine, on the left or north bank of the Saco river, opposite Biddeford, 9 miles from the sea and 100 from Boston by the Boston and Maine Railroad. The water- power furnished by the river, which here falls 55 feet, is utilized by various cotton-factories, machine-shops, lumber- mills, &c. Originally included in Biddeford, but sepa- rately incorporated in 1762 as Pepperellborough, Saco re- ceived its present name in 1805 and was made a city in 1867, The population was 5755 in 1870 and 6389 in 1880.

SACRAMENT. The Latin word sacramentum, mean- ing “an oath,” is. most commonly used by classical writers to denote the military oath of allegiance ; for its technical application in legal phraseology see Roman Law, vol. xx. p. 682. In the earliest ecclesiastical Latin traces of the old military meaning are still present; thus Tertullian (Ad Mart., 3) writes, “We were called to the warfare of the living God in our very response to the sacramental words [in baptism]”; but the main import of the word has entirely changed, it being used simply as the equiva- lent of the Greek puorjpiov. Thus even in the Vulgate we still have the “sacrament of godliness” (1 Tim. iii. 16), “‘of the seven stars” (Rev. i. 20), “‘of the woman and the beast” (Rev. xvii. 7); but in earlier Latin versions the word also occurred in numerous other places where ‘“‘mysterium ” is now found (e.g., Rom. xvi. 25; 1 Cor. xiii. 2). In addition to its general sense the word pvoripiov not unnaturally soon came to have for Christians a more special meaning as denoting those external rites of their religion, solemn, instructive, and more or less secret, which had most analogy with the Mysrmrixs (q.v.) of paganism. No attempt, however, was at first made to enumerate or to define these. ‘Tertullian speaks of the sacrament of baptism and the Eucharist, Cyprian of “either sacrament,” meaning baptism and confirmation, and many others, fol- lowing Eph. v. 22 (see Vulgate), of the sacrament of marriage, but all with the utmost vagueness. Augustine’s definition of the word was little more explicit, but for cen- turies it was all the Western Church had, and for even a longer period it continued to be a sufficiently adequate expression of the Oriental view also. According to him a sacrament is “the visible form of invisible grace,” or “a sign of a sacred thing.” The sacraments he principally has in view are those of baptism and the Lord’s Supper, but with so wide a definition there was nothing to prevent him from using the word (as he freely does) in many other applications. The old Sacramentaries or liturgical books, which can in some cases be carried back as far as to the 8th century, in like manner contain prayers and benedic- tions, not only for the administration of the Eucharist and of baptism, but also for a variety of other rites, such as the blessing of holy water and the dedication of churches. In the De sacramentis Christiane fidei of Hugh of St

Victor (d. 1141), no fewer than thirty sacraments are enumerated, divided into three classes, baptism and the Lord's Supper occupying a first place. What proved to be an important new departure was taken by Peter Lombard (d. 1164), in the 4th book of his Sentences, which treats "of sacraments and sacramental signs." There for the first time are enumerated the seven sacraments (baptism, confirmation, the Eucharist, penance, extreme unction, order, matrimony), which were afterwards formally recognized by the Church of Rome at the councils of Florence (1439) and of Trent ; and there also for the first time it was expressly recognized that not all signs of sacred things can be regarded as sacraments, but only those which are the form of invisible grace in such a sense as to represent it and bring it about ("ut ipsius imaginem gerat et causa existat"). This "differentia" of the sacra- ment, properly so called, became the basis of all subse- quent scholastic discussion and authoritative decree in the Western church, and even, though of course indirectly, in the Eastern also. The main points in the Tridentine doctrine are these: the sacraments have the power of con- ferring grace ex opere operato on the recipients who do not resist it ('non ponentibus obicem"); for their validity, however, there must be in the minister the intention of doing that which the church does. Though all are in a sense necessary, they are not so with equal directness for each individual, nor are they alike in dignity. The two principal sacraments are baptism and the Lord's Supper. All were instituted by Christ. Three of them (baptism, confirmation, order) impart an indelible "character," and therefore cannot be repeated. For the teaching of the Greek Church compare vol. xi. pp. 158, 159. The churches of the Reformation, while retaining the current doctrine that sacraments were "effectual signs of grace and God's good will" 'ordained by Christ," reduced their number to two, the remaining five being excluded partly because direct evidence of their institution by Christ was wanting, and partly because "they have not any visible sign or ceremony ordained of God." For further details on the individual sacraments the reader is referred to the separate articles (BAPTISM, EUCHARIST, &c.).

SACRAMENTO, a city of the United States, the capital of California and the county seat of Sacramento county, 135 miles by rail north-east of San Francisco on the east bank of the Sacramento river, which at this point receives the American river and becomes navigable for large steam- boats. The site is only 15 feet above low water of the river, or 30 above sea-level,

and as the river sometimes rises 20 feet the city was originally subject to destructive floods. Those of 1850, 1852, and 1853, however, led to the raising of the level of the principal streets and build- ings in the business quarter by 5 feet, and to the construc- tion of strong levees or embankments, from 4 to 20 feet high for 2 miles along the Sacramento and 3 along the American river. Further measures of the same kind were adopted after the disaster of 1861, which almost rendered the city bankrupt ; and the level of the principal districts is now 8 feet above the river. The shops and stores in the city are mostly of brick, but the dwelling-houses gener- ally only of wood. The State capitol, commenced in 1861 and completed at a cost of $2,500,000, is one of the finest buildings of its kind in the States; it stands in the heart of the city in the midst of a park of 50 acres. The other public buildings—the State printing-office and armoury, the agricultural hall, the Oddfellows' hall, the hospital, the grammar-school, &c.—are comparatively unimportant. Besides the State library (36,000 volumes) there are two other public libraries in the city, The number of industrial establishments has recently been rapidly increasing ; they comprise the extensive workshops of the Central Pacific

Railroad, a woollen-mill, carriage-factories, plough-factories, marble-works, breweries, potteries, glue-works, &c. The population was 6820 in 1850, 13,785 in 1860, 16,283 in 1870 (6202 foreigners, 1370 Chinese), and 21,420 in 1880 (7048 foreigners, 1781 Chinese).

In 1841 John Augustus Sutter (b. 1803), a Swiss military officer, obtained a grant of land at the junction of the Sacramento and Amcrican rivers, and made a settlement which he called New Hel- vetia. The discovery of gold on his property in 1848 changed the whole history of California. Sutter's Fort, as the spot was popu- larly called, became the site of a mining town, which was made the capital of the State in 1854, and obtained a city charter in 1863, The name of Sacramento was first applicd to the place in the adver- tisement for the sale of ground-lots in 1848.

SACRIFICE. The Latin word sacrificium, from which we have the English "sacrifice," properly means an action within the sphere of things sacred to the gods, so that "sacrificial" and "hierurgic" are synonymous, and, strictly

speaking, cover the whole field of sacred ritual. By the Romans, as by all ancient or primitive nations, the gods were habitually approached with gifts, and the presentation of the gift, being the central feature in every ordinary act of worship, is regarded as the sacrifice proper. In all parts of the world, moreover, for reasons which will appear by and by, the stated gifts by which the gods are honoured in private worship or public feasts are drawn from the stores on which human life is supported,—fruits, grain, wine, oil, the flesh of animals, and the like. All gifts of this kind, which are not merely presented to the god but consumed in his service, fall under the notion of sacrifice, while permanent votive offerings of treasure, lands, temples, images, or the like, not forming part of any stated ritual, are excluded. But again, where we find a practice of sacrificing honorific gifts to the gods, we usually find also certain other sacrifices which resemble those already characterized inasmuch as something is given up by the wor- shippers to be consumed in sacred ceremony, but differ from them inasmuch as the sacrifice—usually a living victim— is not regarded as a tribute of honour to the god, but has a special atoning or mystic significance. The most familiar case of this second species of sacrifice is that which the Romans distinguished from the hostea honoraria by the name of hostia piacularis. In the former case the deity accepts a gift; in the latter he demands a life. The former kind of sacrifice is offered by the worshipper on the basis of an established relation of friendly dependence on his divine lord; the latter is directed to appease the divine anger, or to conciliate the favour of a deity on whom the worshipper has no right to count. The precise scope of sacrifices not merely honorific will appear more clearly in the sequel ; for the history of religion this second kind of sacrifice has a very peculiar importance, as may be judged from the fact that the ordinary metaphorical use of '"sacrifice" in English answers not to the notion of a "gift" but to that of "reluctant surrender." +

Honorvfic Sacrifices naturally hold the chief place in all natural (as opposed to positive) religions that have reached the stage in which orthodox ritual is differentiated from sorcery (comp. Prixst, vol. xix. p. 724), and in which the relations between the gods and their worshippers are con- ceived as being of a fixed and habitually friendly character, so that the acts by which a continuance of divine favour can be secured are known by well-established

tradition and regularly practised with full confidence in their efficacy. Religions of this type unite the god to a definite circle of

1 Apart from this metaphorical use the word “sacrifice” in English is often taken as.synonymous with “victim,” bloodless oblations being called rather by the vague word “offering.” This usage corresponds to the practice of the Authorised Version, which commonly renders MAID) 713}, z.e., “victim and cereal oblation,” by the words “ sacrifice and offering,” and uses the verb “to sacrifice” for the Hebrew M2}, “to slaughter a victim.”

worshippers forming a natural unity, so that every man’s birth or political and social status determines at once what god he is called upon to worship and may confidently look to for help. Religions of this sort, therefore, are mainly tribal or national, and the deity is regarded as a king, or, ‘f there are several gods worshipped by the same circle, they are lords and ladies and are naturally to be honoured in the same way as earthly grandees. Thus among the Hebrews, whose early institutions afford a typical example of a national religion, the fundamental rule is that no one is to appear before Jehovah empty-handed (Exod. xxiii. 15), just as it would be indecent (and in the East is still indecent) to approach a king or great man without some present, however trifling. In like manner Homer teaches that gods and kings alike are persuaded by gifts. A special request will naturally be accompanied by a special gift proportioned to the occasion or by a vow to be fulfilled when the prayer is heard ; but apart from this the general goodwill whether of god or king falls to be acknowledged and secured by offerings renewed from time to time by way of tribute or homage. Thus in Hebrew the word minha means alike “ gift,” “tribute,” and “sacrificial oblation,” especially an oblation of agricultural produce. For in a simple agricultural society payments in kind, whether to a divine or to a human lord, would naturally consist for the most part of the fruits of the soil; and with this it agrees that not only in Canaan but among the Greeks there is evidence that cereal oblations had a great place in early ritual, though they afterwards became second in importance to animal sacrifices, which yielded a more luxurious sacrificial banquet, and also, as we shall see, derived a

peculiar significance from the shedding of the victim's blood. In almost all nations we find that the chief sacrificial feasts are associated with the harvest and the vintage, or, where pastoral life predominates, are re- gulated by the time at which the flocks bear their young (comp. Passover) ; at these seasons tribute of firstfruits and firstlings is paid to the gods of the good things which they themselves have given to the inhabitants of their land, This conception of sacrifice may go with very various views of the nature of the gods and of religion. It may go with the idea that the god has need of the worshipper and his gifts just as the worshipper has need of the god and his help, and thus with a matter-of-fact business-like people like the Romans religion may become very much a sort of bargain struck with the gods. But, on the other hand, it Is quite possible that sacrifices may continue to be offered by men who have ceased to believe that the deity has any need of what man can give, simply because such gifts are in ordinary life the natural expression of respect and homage and no fitter and more expressive way of giving utterance to the same feelings towards the gods has been devised. Thus the Hebrews continued to offer sacrifices to Jehovah long after they knew that "if He were hungry He would not tell man, for the world was His and the fulness thereof." But when this standpoint is reached sacrifice becomes a merely conventional way of expressing religious feeling; the ritual becomes a simple affair of tradition, which may, as in the Levitical legislation, be based on an express divine command ; and those who are not content with the authority of tradition as a sufficient proof that the gods love to be honoured in this way take refuge in some allegorical explanation of the ceremonial. In general, however, we find an extraordinary persistence of the notion that sacrifices do in some way afford a phy- sical satisfaction to the deity. If they do not feed him, he 18 at least gratified by their odour. Neither the Greek oi nor the Jewish rabbins ever quite got rid of idea.

But in fact the notion that the more ethereal elements

of the sacrifice rise to heaven, the seat of the gods, in the savoury smoke that ascends from the sacrificial flame can in certain instances be shown to be connected with a later development of sacrifice. Among the Semites, for

ex- ample, sacrifices were not originally burned. The god was not seated aloft, but was present at the place of sacri- fice, inhabiting a sacred stone (a baetylium, beth-el, or “house of god”), which answered at once to the later idol and the later altar. That the god was thought by the heathen Semites to inhabit the sacred stone, or in other cases a sacred tree, is expressly recorded of several Arabian sanctuaries, and it cannot be doubted that this was the general view wherever there was a masséba (sacred cippus) or an ashera (sacred pole or tree). And in these cases the gift of the worshipper was not, in the more primitive cults, consumed by fire, but the sacred stone was daubed with oil or blood, libations of milk, of blood, or of wine were poured forth beside it, cereal gifts were presented by being simply laid on the sacred ground, and slaughtered victims were left there to be devoured by wild beasts (Sprenger, Leb. Moh., iii. 457), or even a human sacrifice was offered by burying the victim under the cippus. Sacrifices of this type are found not only throughout the Semitic field but in all parts of the world ; they belong to the same category with the Hebrew showbread and the Roman lectisternia. In later times the food spread on the tables of the god is eaten by his ministers, the priests, to whom he is supposed to make over the enjoyment of the banquet; but this is a refinement on the original usage. In older times the gods themselves were held to partake of these gifts of food, just as the venerable dead were fed by the meat and drink placed or poured out upon their tombs. In the religions of savages both gods and the dead have very material needs, among which the need of nourishment has the first place ; and just as we learn from the story of Periander and Melissa (Herod., v. 92) that among the Greeks of the 7th century B.C. it was a new idea that the dead could make no use of the gifts buried with them unless they were etherealized by fire, so also the fact that among the Greeks, especially in old times, sacrifices to water-gods were simply flung into the river or the sea, and sacrifices to underground gods were buried, indicates that it is a secondary idea that the gods were too ethereal to enjoy a sacrifice through any other sense than that of smell. Even the highest antique religions show by unmistakable signs that in their origin sacrifices were literally ‘the food of the gods.” In Israel the conception against which the author of Psalm 1. protests so strongly was uever eliminated from the ancient technical language of the priestly ritual, in which the sacri- fices are called D‘nDN nnd, “food of the deity” (Lev. xxi. 8, 17, 21); and among the Greeks we find not only such general expressions as that the gods “feast on

hecatombs ” (i1., ix. 531) but even that particular gods bear special surnames, such as “‘the goat-eater,” the “ram-eater,” “Dionysus the eater of raw (human) flesh” (a’yodayos, Kpiopayos, @unarys).

A sacrifice, therefore, is primarily a meal offered to the deity. In some of the cases already noticed, and in the case of holocausts or whole burnt-offerings, the sacrificial gift is entirely made over to the god; but ordinarily the sacrifice is a feast of which gods and worshippers partake together. If all sacrifices are not convivial entertainments, at least the tendency is to give to all feasts, nay to all meals, a sacrificial character by inviting the gods to partake of them (Atheneus, v. 19). Thus the Roman family never rose from supper till a portion of the food had been laid on the burning hearth as an offering to the Lares (Serv., Ad n., i. 730; Ovid, Fast., ii. 633); and a similar practice was probably followed in early Greece.! At all events

1 See the discussion in Buchholz, Homer. Realien, Il. ii. 213 sq.

the slaughter of an animal (which gave the meal a more luxurious and festal character, animal food being not in daily use with the mass of the agricultural populations of the Mediterranean lands) seems to have been always sacrificial in early Greece, and even in later times St Paul assumes that the flesh sold in the shambles would often consist of eiSwAd@ura. Among the Semites sacrifice and slaughter for food are still more clearly identified; the Hebrews use the same word for both, and the Arabian invocation of the name of Allah over every beast killed for food is but the relic of a sacrificial formula. The part of the gods in such sacrificial meals was often very small, the blood alone (Arabia), or the fat and the thighs (I1., i. 460), or small parts of each joint (Od., xiv. 427), or the blood, the fat, and the kidneys (Lev. iii.). When the sacrifice was offered by a priest, he also naturally received a portion, which, properly speaking, belonged to the deity and was surrendered by him to his minister, as is brought out in the Hebrew ritual by the ceremonial act of waving it towards the altar (Lev. vii. 29 sqg.). The thigh, which in Homeric sacrifice is burned on the altar, belongs in the Levitical ritual to the priest, who was naturally the first to profit by the growth of a conviction that the deity himself did not require to be fed by man’s food.

The conception of the sacrifice as a banquet in which gods and men share together may be traced also in the accessories of sacred ritual. Music, song, garlands, the sweet odour of incense, accompany sacrifice because they are suitable to an occasion of mirth and luxurious enjoy- ment. Wine, too, ‘ which cheereth gods and men” (Judges ix. 13), was seldom lacking in the vine-growing countries ; but the most notable case where the sacrificial feast has the use of an intoxicant (or narcotic) as its chief feature is the ancient soma sacrifice of the old Aryans, where the gods are honoured by bowls of the precious draught which heals the sick, inspires the poet, and makes the poor believe that he is rich.

The sacrificial meal, with the general features that have been described, may be regarded as common to all the so- called nature-religions of the civilized races of antiquity, —religions which had a predominantly joyous character, and in which the relations of man to the gods were not troubled by any habitual and oppressive sense of human guilt, because the divine standard of man’s duty corre- sponded broadly with the accepted standard of civil con- duct, and therefore, though the god might be angry with his people for a time, or even irreconcilably wroth with individuals, the idea was hardly conceivable that he could be permanently alienated from the whole circle of his worshippers,—that is, from all who participated in a certain local (tribal or national) cult. But when this type of religion began to break down the sacrificial ritual under- went corresponding modifications. Thus we find a decline of faith in the old gods accompanied, not only by a grow- ing neglect of the temples and their service, but also by a disposition to attenuate the gifts that were still offered, or to take every opportunity to cheat the gods out of part of their due,—a disposition of which Arabia before Mohammed affords a classical example. But, again, the decline of faith itself was not a mere product of indiffer- ence, but was partly due to a feeling that the traditional ritual involved too material a conception of the gods, and this cause, too, tended to produce modifications in sacri- ficial service. The Persians, for example (Herod: ai: 132); Strabo, xv. p. 732), consecrated their sacrifices with liturgical prayers, but gave no part of the victim to the deity, who “desired nothing but the life (or soul) of the victim.” This, indeed, is the Roman formula of placular as distinct from honorific offerings (Macrob., iii. 5, 1),

and might be taken as implying that the Persians had ceased to look on sacrifices as gifts of homage; but such an explanation can hardly be extended to the parallel case of the Arab sacrifices, in which the share of the deity wag the blood of the victim, which according to antique belief contained the life. For among the Arabs blood was a recognized article of food, and the polemic of Ps. lL. 138 is expressly directed against the idea that the deity " drinks the blood of goats." And the details given in Strabo make it tolerably clear that Persian sacrifice is simply an example of the way in which the material gift offered to the deity is first attenuated and then allegorized away as the conception of the godhead becomes less crassly mate- rial. But on the other hand it is undoubtedly true that under certain conditions the notion of piacular sacrifice shows much greater vitality than that of sacrificial gifts of homage. When a national religion is not left to slow decay, but shares the catastrophe of the nation itself, as was the case with the religions of the small western Asiatic states in the period of Assyrian conquest, the old joyous confidence in the gods gives way to a sombre sense of divine wrath, and the acts by which this wrath can be conjured become much more important than the ordinary traditional gifts of homage. To this point we must return by and by.

It appears, then, that in the old national nature-religions the ordinary exercises of worship take the form of meals offered to the gods, and usually of banquets at which gods and worshippers sit down together, so that the natural bond of unity between the deity and his subjects or children is cemented by the bond of ''bread and salt "— salt is a standing feature in the sacrifices of many races (comp. Lev. ii. 13)—to which ancient and unsophisticated peoples attach so much importance. That the god is habitually willing to partake of the banquet offered to him is taken for granted ; but, if anything has occurred to alienate his favour, he will show it by his conduct at the feast, by certain signs known to experts, that indicate his refusal of the offered gift. Hence the custom of inspect- ing the exta of the victim, watching the behaviour of the sacrificial flame, or otherwise seeking an omen which proves that the sacrifice is accepted, and so that the deity may be expected to favour the requests with which the gift is associated.}

In the religions which we have been characterizing all the ordinary functions of worship are summed up in these sacrificial meals ; the stated and normal intercourse between gods and men has no other form. God and worshippers make up together a society of commensals, and every other point in their reciprocal relations is included in what this involves. Now, with this we must take the no less certain fact that throughout the sphere of the purely sacrificial religions the circle of common worship is also the circle of social duty and reciprocal moral obligations. And thus the origin of sacrificial worship must be sought in a stage of society when the circle of commensals and the circle of persons united to each other by sacred social bonds were identical. But all social bonds are certainly de- veloped out of the bond of kindred, and it will be generally admitted that all national religions are develop- ments or combinations of the worship of particular kins. It would seem, therefore, that the world-wide prevalence of sacrificial worship points to a time when the kindred group and the group of commensals were identical, and when, conversely, people of different kins did not eat and drink together.

At first sight it might appear that this amounts to the

z Hence in Roman ritual there is no inspection of the exta where an sacrifice is piacular, and so does not involve a meal offered to the eity.

proposition that all religious and civil societies of antiquity have the family as their type, and that the type of sacri- fice is such a family meal as is found among the Romans. And this view would seem to be favoured by the frequent occurrence among ancient peoples of the conception that the deity is the father (progenitor and lord) of his worshippers, who in turn owe filial obedience to him and brotherly duty to one another. But in the present stage of research into the history of early society it is by no means legitimate to assume that the family, with a father at its head, is the original type of the circle of com- mensals. It is impossible to separate the idea of com- mensality from the fact so constantly observed in primitive nations, that each kindred has certain rules about for- bidden food which mark it off from all other kindreds. And in a very large proportion of cases kindred obliga- tions, religion, and laws of forbidden food combine to divide a child from

his father’s and unite him to his mother’s kin, so that father and sons are not commensals. It is noteworthy that family meals are by no means so universal an institution as might be imagined a@ priori. At Sparta, for example, men took their regular meals not with their wives and children but in sysstea or pheiditia ; and a similar organization of nations in groups of com- mensals which are not family groups is found in other places (Crete, Carthage, &c.). The marked and funda- mental similarity between sacrificial worships in all parts of the globe makes it very difficult to doubt that they are all to be traced back to one type of society, common to primitive man as a whole. But the nearest approximation to a primitive type of society yet known is that based not on the family but on the system of totem stocks ; and as this system not only fulfils all the conditions for the formation of a sacrificial worship, but presents the con- ception of the god and his worshippers as a circle of commensals in its simplest and most intelligible form, it seems reasonable to look to it for additional light on the whole subject. In totemism and in no other system laws of forbidden food have a direct religious interpretation and form the principal criterion by which the members of one stock and religion are marked off from all their neigh- bours. For the totem is usually an animal (less often a plant); the kindred is of the stock of its totem; and to kill or eat the sacred animal is an impiety of the same kind with that of killing and eating a tribesman. To eat the totem of a strange stock, on the other hand, is legitimate, and for one totem group to feast on the carcase of a hostile totem is to express their social and religious particularism in the most effective and laudable way, to honour their own totem and to cast scorn on that of the enemy. The importance attached to the religious feast of those who have the same laws about food, and are there- fore habitual commensals, is more intelligible on this system than on any other.

Though the subject has not been completely worked out, there is a good deal of evidence, both from social and from religious phenomena, that the civilized nations of antiquity once passed through the totem stage (see Famity and MyTHoLoey) ; it is at least not doubtful that even in the historical] period sacred animals and laws of forbidden food based on the sacredness of animals, in a way quite analo- gous to what is found in totemism, were known among all these nations. Among the Egyptians the whole organiza- tion of the local populations ran on totem lines, the

different villages or districts being kept permanently apart by the fact that each had its own sacred animal or herb, and that one group worshipped what another ate. And the sacri- ficial feast on the carcase of a hostile totem persisted down ee a late date, as we know from Plutarch (Js. e¢ Osir., p. 330; comp. Alex. Polyh., ap. Eus., Prep. Ev., lx. p. 432;

Diod. Sic., i. 89). Among the Semites there are many relics of totem religion; and, as regards the Greeks, so acute an observer as Herodotus could hardly have imagined that a great part of Hellenic religion was borrowed from Egypt if the visible features of the popular worship in the two countries had really belonged to entirely different types. To suppose that the numerous associations between particular deities and corresponding sacred animals which are found in Greece and other advanced countries are merely symbolical is a most unscientific assumption; especi- ally as the symbolic interpretation could not fail to be introduced as a harmonizing expedient where, through the fusion of older deities under a common name (in connexion with the political union of kindreds), one god came to have several sacred animals. But originally even in Greece each kin had its own god or in later language its hero; so in Attica the Crioeis have their hero Crius (Ram), the Butadez have Butas (Bullman), the Aigide have Aigeus (Goat), and the Cynide Cynus (Dog). Such heroes are real totem ancestors ; Lycus, for example, had his statue in wolf form at the Lyceum. The feuds of clans are repre- sented as contests between rival totems: Lycus the wolf flees the country before AZgeus the goat, and at Argos, where the wolf-god (Apollo Lycius) was introduced by Danaus, the struggle by which the sovereignty of the Danaids was established was set forth in legend and picture as following on the victory of a wolf (representing Danaus) over a bull (representing the older sovereignty of Gelanor) ; see Paus., 11. 19, 3 sg. That Apollo’s sacrifices were bulls and rams is therefore natural enough; at the sanctuary of the wolf-Apollo at Sicyon indeed legend pre- served the memory of a time when flesh was actually set forth for the wolves, as totem-worshippers habitually set forth food for their sacred animals,—though by a touch of the later rationalism which changed the wolf-god into Apollo the wolf-slayer (Lycoctonus) the flesh was said to have been poisoned by Apollo’s direction in a way that even theological experts did

not understand (Paus,, ii. 9, 7). Such clear traces of the oldest form of sacrifice are neces- sarily rare, but the general facts that certain animals might not be sacrificed to certain gods, while on the other hand each deity demanded particular victims, which the ancients themselves explained in certain cases to be hostile animals, find their natural explanation in such a stage of religion as has just been characterized. The details are difficult to follow out, partly because most worships of which we know much were syncretistic, partly because the animals which the gods loved and protected were in later times often confused with the victims they desired, and partly because piacular and mystical sacrifices were on principle (as we shall see by and by) chosen from the class of victims that might not be used for the feasts of the gods. A single example, therefore, must here suffice to close this part of the subject. At Athens the goat might not be offered to the Athena on the Acropolis. Now according to legend Athena's worship was made Panathenaic by the Aigide or goat clan,and Athena herself was represented clad in the zgis or goat-skin, an attribute which denotes that she too was of the goat kin or rather had been taken into that kin when her worship was introduced among them.? Generally speaking, then, the original principle on which a sacrificial meal is chosen is that men may not eat what cannot be offered to their god (generalized in later syn- cretism to the rule that men may not eat things that can be offered to no god; Julian, Orat., v. p. 176 C.); and that,

1 The religious meaning of wearing the skin of an animal is identi- fication with the animal. Hxamples will appear below ; compare also the were-wolf superstitions (vol. xv. p. 90), where the same symbolism occurs. So too Pausanias (x. 31, 10) describes a representation of the bear-heroine Callisto reclining on a bear-skin couch.

conversely, acceptable offerings are the things which are eaten by predilection by that divine animal which in later times became the sacred symbol of the anthropomorphic god, or else victims are to be chosen which are sacred among a hostile tribe. The two principles may often co- incide. Fierce mountain tribes who live mainly by harry- ing their neighbours in the plain will be wolves, lions, bears, while their enemies will naturally

worship bulls, sheep, goats, like the Troglodytes on the Red Sea, who “gave the name of parent to no human being but to the bull and the cow, the ram and the ewe, because from them they had their daily nourishment ” (Strabo, xvi. 4); and thus in cases like that of Argos the ultimate shape of the ritual may throw important light on the character of the early population. When by conquest or otherwise two such originally hostile nations are fused the opposing animal symbols will ultimately be found in friendly asso- ciation: e.g., Artemis (in her various forms) is associated both with carnivora and with stags or domestic animals. The former is the original conception, as her sacrifices show. She is therefore, like the wolf-Apollo, originally the deity of a wild hunting tribe, or rather various carnivorous deities of such tribes have coalesced in her.

Human Sacrifices —From these observations the tran- sition is easy to those human sacrifices which are not piacular. It is perfectly clear in many cases that such sacrifices are associated with cannibalism, a practice which always means eating the flesh of men of alien and hostile kin. The human wolves would no more eat a brother than they would eat a wolf; but to eat an enemy is another matter. Naturally enough traces of cannibalism persist in religion after they have disappeared from ordinary life, and especially in the religion of carnivorous gods.1 Thus it may be conjectured that the human sacrifices offered to the wolf-Zeus (Lyczeus) in Arcadia were originally can- nibal feasts of a wolf tribe. The first participants in the rite were according to later legend changed into wolves (Lycaon and his sons); and in later times, as appears by comparing Plato (Rep., viii. 15) with Pausanias (vili. 2), at least one fragment of the human flesh was placed among the sacrificial portions derived from other victims, and the man who ate it was believed to become a were-wolf. All human sacrifices where the victim is a captive or other foreigner may be presumed to be derived from cannibal feasts ; but a quite different explanation is required for the cases, which are by far more numerous among people no longer mere savages, in which a father sacrifices his child or a tribe its fellow-tribesman. This case belongs to the head of piacular sacrifices.

Piacular Sacrifices—Among all primitive peoples there are certain offences against piety (especially bloodshed within the kin) which are regarded as properly inexpiable ; the offender must die or become an outlaw. Where the

god of the kin appears as vindicator of this law he demands the life of the culprit; if the kinsmen refuse this they share the guilt. Thus the execution of a criminal assumes the character of a religious action. If now it appears in any way that the god is offended and refuses to help his people, it is concluded that a crime has been committed and not expiated. This neglect must be repaired, and, if the true culprit cannot be found or cannot be spared, the worshippers as a whole bear the guilt until they or the

guilty man himself find a substitute. The idea of substitu-

tion is widespread through all early religions, and is found in honorific as well as in piacular rites; the Romans, for example, substituted models in wax or dough for victims ee

a Tn the Roman empire human sacrifice was practised at not a few shrines down to the time of Hadrian ; for examples the reader may

refer to Porphyry, De Abstin., ii. 27, 54 sq., and to Clem. Alex., Coh. ad Gentes, p. 27.

SA CHIT

that could not be procured according to the ritual, or else

feigned that a sheep was a stag (cervaria ovis) and the like. In all such cases the idea is that the substitute shall imitate as closely as is possible or convenient the victim whose place it supplies; and so in piacular ceremonies the god may indeed accept one life for another, or certain select lives to atone for the guilt of a whole community, but these lives ought to be of the guilty kin, just as in blood-revenge the death of any kinsman of the manslayer satisfies justice. Hence such rites as the Semitic sacrifices of children by their fathers (see Monocn), the sacrifice of Iphigeneia and similar cases among the Greeks, or the offering up of boys to the goddess Mania at Rome pro familiarium sospitate (Macrob., 1. 7, 34). In the oldest Semitic cases it is only under extreme manifestations of divine wrath that such offerings are made (comp. Porph., De Abst., ii. 56), and so it was probably among other races also; but under the pressure of long-continued calamity, or other circumstances which made men doubtful of the steady

favour of the gods, piacular offerings might easily become more frequent and ultimately assume a stated character, and be made at regular intervals by way of precaution without waiting for an actual outbreak of divine anger. Thus the Carthaginians, as Theophrastus relates, annually sprinkled their altars with “a tribesman’s blood” (Porph., De Abst., ii. 28). But in advanced societies the tendency is to modify the horrors of the ritual either by accepting an effusion of blood without actually slaying the victim, e.g., in the flagellation of the Spartan lads at the altar of Artemis Orthia (Paus., iii. 16, 7; comp. Eurip., [ph. Taur., 1470 sq. ; 1 Kings xviii. 28), or by a further extension of the doctrine of substitution ; the Romans, for example, substituted puppets for the human sacrifices to Mania, and cast rush dolls into the Tiber at the yearly atoning sacrifice on the Sublician bridge. More usually, however, the life of an animal is accepted by the god in place of a human life. This explanation of the origin of piacular animal sacrifices has often been disputed, mainly on dogmatic grounds and in connexion with the Hebrew sin-offerings ; but it is quite clearly brought out wherever we have an ancient account of the origin of such a rite (e.g., for the Hebrews, Gen. xxii. 13 ; the Pheenicians, Porph., De Abst., iv. 15; the Greeks and many others, ebid., 1. 54 sq. ; the Romans, Ovid, Fastz, vi. 162). Among the Egyptians the victim was marked with a seal bearing the image of a man bound, and kneeling with a sword at his throat (Plut., [s. e¢ Os., chap. xxxi.) And often we find a ceremonial laying of the sin to be expiated on the head of the victim (Herod., 11. 39; Lev. iv. 4 compared with xiv. 21).

In such piacular rites the god demands only the life of the victim, which is sometimes indicated by a special ritual with the blood (as among the Hebrews the blood of the sin-offering was applied to the horns of the altar, or to the mercy-seat within the vail), and there is no sacrificial meal. Thus among the Greeks the carcase of the victim was buried or cast into the sea, and among the Hebrews the most important sin-offerings were burnt not on the altar but outside the camp (city), as was also the case with the children sacrificed to ‘‘Moloch.” Sometimes, however, the sacrifice is a holocaust on the altar (2 Kings iii. 27), or the flesh is consumed by the priests. The latter was the case with certain Roman piacula, and with those Hebrew sin-offerings in which the blood was not brought within the vail (Lev. vi. 25 sq.). Here the sacrificial flesh is seemingly a gift accepted by the deity and assigned by him to the priests, so that the distinction between @ honorific

and a piacular sacrifice is partly obliterated. But this is not hard to understand ; for just as a blood- rite takes the place of blood-revenge in human justice, soan _

seek rrre

offence against the gods may in certain cases be redeemed

by a fine (e.g., Herod., il. 65) or a sacrificial gift. This seems to be the original meaning of the Hebrew dshaém (trespass-offering), which was a kind of atonement made partly in money (Lev. v. 15 sq.), but accompanied (at least in later times) by a sacrifice which differed from the sin-offering, inasmuch as the ritual did not involve any exceptional use of the blood. The ordinary sin-offerings in which the priests ate the flesh may be a compound of the dsham and the properly piacular substitution of life for life. ‘The two kinds of atonement are mixed up also in Micah vi. 6 sg., and ultimately all bloody sacrifices, especially the whole burnt-offering (which in early times was very rare but is prominent in the ritual of the second temple), are held to have an atoning efficacy (Lev. i. 4, xvii. 11). There is, however, another and mystical sense sometimes associated with the eating of sin-offerings, as we shall see presently.

The most curious developments of piacular sacrifice take place in the worship of deities of totem type. Here the natural substitute for the death of a criminal of the tribe is an animal of the kind with which the worshippers and their god alike count kindred; an animal, that is, which must not be offered in a sacrificial feast, and which indeed it is impious to kill. Thus Hecate was invoked as a dog (Porph., De Abst., iii. 17), and dogs were her pia- cular sacrifices (Plut., Qu. Rom., iii.), Andin like manner in Egypt the piacular sacrifice of the cow-goddess Isis- Hathor was a bull, and the sacrifice was accompanied by lamentations as at the funeral of a kinsman (Herod., 11. 39, 40). This lamentation at a piacular sacrifice is met with in other cases, ¢.g., at the Argean festival at Rome (Marquardt, Rém. Staatsverw., iii. 192), and is parallel to the marks of indignation which in various atoning rituals it is proper to display towards the priest who performs the sacrifice. At Tenedos, for example, the priest was attacked with stones who sacrificed to Bacchus a bull-calf, the affinity of which with man was indicated by the mother-cow being treated like a woman in

childbed and the victim itself wearing the cothurnus. As the cothurnus was proper to Bacchus, who also was often addressed in worship and represented in images as a bull, the victim here is of the same race with the god (El., H.W., xii. 34; Plut., Qu. Gr, xxxy.) as well as with the worshippers. In such rites a double meaning was suggested : the victim was an animal kindred to the sacrificers, so that his death was strictly speaking a murder, for which, in the Attic Diipolia, the sacrificial axe cast away by the priest was tried and condemned (Paus., i. 24, 4), but it was also a sacred animal sharing the nature of the god, who thus in a sense died for his people. The last point comes out clearly in the annual sacrifice at Thebes, where a ram was slain and the ram-god Amen clothed in his skin. The worshippers then bewailed the ram and buried him ina sacred coffin (Herod., ii. 42). Thus the piacular sacrifice in such cases is merged in the class of offerings which may be called sacramental or mystical.

M. ystwal or Sacramental Sacrifices.—That the mysteries of races like the Greeks and Egyptians are sprung from the same circle of ideas with the totem mysteries of savage tribes has been suggested in Myruonoey, vol. xvii. p: tol, with which the reader may compare Mr Lang's book on Custom and Myth ; and examples of sacramental sacrifices ce been adduced in the same article (p. 150) and in

BXICO, vol. xvi. p. 212. In Mexico the worshippers ate sacramentally paste idols of the god, or slew and feasted i a human victim who was feigned to be a representative of the deity. The Mexican gods are unquestionably developed out of totems, and these sacraments are on one line with the totem mysteries of the ruder Indian tribes

in which once a year the sacred animal is eaten, body and blood. Now according to Julian (Orat., v. p. 175) the mystical sacrifices of the cities of the Roman empire were in like manner offered once or twice a year and consisted of such victims as the dog of Hecate, which might not be ordinarily eaten or used to furnish forth the tables of the gods. The general agreement with the American mysteries is therefore complete, and in many cases the resemblance extends to details which leave no doubt of the totem origin of the ritual. The mystic sacrifices seem always to have had an

atoning efficacy ; their special feature is that the victim is not simply slain and burned or cast away but that the worshippers partake of the body and blood of the sacred animal, and that so his life passes as it were into their lives and knits them to the deity in living commu- nion. Thus in the orgiastic cult of the bull-Bacchus the worshippers tore the bull to pieces and devoured the raw flesh. These orgies are connected on the one hand with older practices, in which the victim was human (Orpheus legend, Dionysus ’Quycrys), and on the other hand with the myth of the murder of the god by his kinsmen the Titans, who made a meal of his flesh (Clem. Al., Cok. ad Gentes, p. 12). Similar legends of fratricide occur in connexion with other orgies (the Corybantes ; see Clement, ut supra) ; and all these various elements can only be reduced to unity by referring their origin to those totem habits of thought in which the god has not yet been differentiated from the plurality of sacred animals and the tribesmen are of one kin with their totem, so that the sacrifice of a fellow- tribesman and the sacrifice of the totem animal are equally fratricides, and the death of the animal is the death of the mysterious protector of the totem kin. In the Diipolia at Athens we have seen that the slaughter of the sacred bull

was viewed as a murder, but “the dead was raised again

in the same sacrifice,” as the mystic text had it: the skin was sewed up and stuffed and all tasted the sacrificial flesh, so that the life of the victim was renewed in the lives of those who ate of it! (Theophr., in Porph., De Abst., ii, 29 sq.).

Mystic sacrifices of this sacramental type prevailed also among the heathen Semites, and are alluded to in Isa. Ixv. 4 sq., Ixvi. 3, 17; Zech. ix. 7; Lev. xix. 26, &c.,? from which passages we gather that the victim was eaten with the blood. This feature reappears elsewhere, as in the pia- cular swine-offerings of the Fratres Arvales at Rome, and possesses a special significance inasmuch as common blood means in antiquity a share in common life. In the Old Testament the heathen mysteries seem to appear as cere- monies of initiation by which a man was introduced into a new worship, 7.e., primarily made of one blood with a new religious kinship, and they therefore come into promi- nence just at the time when in the 7th century B.c. political convulsions had shaken men’s faith in their old gods

and led them to seek on all sides for new and stronger pro- tectors. The Greek mysteries too create a close bond between the mystzx, and the chief ethical significance of the Eleusinia was that they were open to all Hellenes and so represented a brotherhood wider than the political limits of individual states. But originally the initiation must have been introduction into a particular social community ; Theophrastus's legend of the origin of the Diipolia is ex- pressly connected with the adoption of the house of Sopa- trus into the position of Athenian citizens. From this point of view the sacramental rites of mystical sacrifice are a form of blood-covenant, and serve the same purpose

1 Tn the same way the Issedones honoured their parents by eating their dead bodies (Herod., iv. 26). The life was not allowed to go out of the family.

2 For details see W. R. Smith, Kinship and Marriage in Early

Arabia, p. 309. XXT, — 18

as the mixing of blood or tasting of each other's blood by which in ancient times two men or two clans created a sacred covenant bond. In all the forms of blood-covenant, whether a sacrifice is offered or the veins of the parties opened and their own blood used, the idea is the same: the bond created is a bond of kindred, because one blood ig now in the veins of all who have shared the ceremony. The details in which this kind of symbolism may be carried out are of course very various, but where there is a covenant sacrifice we usually find that the parties eat and drink together (Gen. xxxi. 54), and that the sacrificial blood, if not actually tasted, is at least touched by both parties (Xen., Anab., li. 2, 9), or sprinkled on both and on the altar or image of the deity who presides over the con- tract (Exod., xxiv. 6,7). A peculiar form which meets us in various places is to cut the animal in twain and make those who swear pass between the parts (Gen. xiii. 9 sg.; Jer. xxiv. 18 sg.; Plut., Qu. Hom., iii, &c.). This is generally taken as a formula of imprecation, as if the parties prayed that he who proved unfaithful might be similarly cut in twain ; but, as the case cited from Plutarch shows that the

victim chosen was a mystic one, it is more likely that the original sense was that the worshippers were taken within the mystic life.

Even the highest forms of sacrificial worship present much that is repulsive to modern ideas, and in particular it requires an effort to reconcile our imagination to the bloody ritual which is prominent in almost every religion which has a strong sense of sin. But we must not forget that from the beginning this ritual expressed, however crudely, certain ideas which lie at the very root of true religion, the fellowship of the worshippers with one another in their fellowship with the deity, and the consecration of the bonds of kinship as the type of all right ethical relation between man and man. And the piacular forms, though these were particularly liable to distortions disgraceful to man and dishonouring to the godhead, yet contained from the first germs of eternal truths, not only expressing the idea of divine justice, but mingling it with a feeling of divine and human pity. The dreadful sacrifice is per- formed not with savage joy but with awful sorrow, and in the mystic sacrifices the deity himself suffers with and for the sins of his people and lives again in their new life. (Ww. R. 8.)

The Idea of Sacrifice in the Christian Church.

There can be no doubt that the idea of sacrifice occupied an important place in early Christianity. It had been a fundamental element of both Jewish and Gentile religions, and Christianity tended rather to absorb and modify such elements than to abolish them. To a great extent the idea had been modified already. Among the Jews the preaching of the prophets had been a constant protest against the grosser forms of sacrifice, and there are indica- tions that when Christianity arose bloody sacrifices were already beginning to fall into disuse ; a saying which was attributed by the Ebionites to our Lord repeats this protest in a strong form, “I have come to abolish the sacrifices ; and if ye do not cease from sacrificing the wrath of God will not cease from you” (Epiph., xxx. 16). Among the Greeks the philosophers had come to use both argument and ridicule against the idea that the offering of material things could be needed by or acceptable to the Maker of them all. Among both Jews and Greeks the earlier forms of the idea had been rationalized into the belief that the most appropriate offering to God is that of a pure and penitent heart, and among them both was the idea that

Tin Greek ritual the identity of the covenant sacrifice with mystico- piacular rites is clearly brought out by the animals chosen and by other features in the ritual. See Schoemann, Gr. Alt., p. 248 sq.

the vocal expression of contrition in prayer or of gratitude in praise is also acceptable. The best instances of these ideas in the Old Testament are in Psalms 1. and li, and in Greek literature the striking words which Porphyry quotes from an earlier writer, "' We ought, then, having been united and made like to God, to offer our own conduct as a holy sacrifice to Him, the same being also a hymn and our sgal- vation in passionless excellence of soul" (Euseb., Dem, Ev., 3). The ideas are also found both in the New Testa. ment and in early Christian literature: 'Let us offer u a sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of lips which make confession to His name" (Heb. xiii. 15); "That prayers and thanksgivings, made by worthy persons, are the only perfect and acceptable sacrifices I also admit" (Just. Mart., Zrypho, c. 117); "We honour God in prayer, and offer this as the best and holiest sacrifice with righteousness to the righteous Word" (Clem. Alex., Strom., vii. 6).

But among the Jews two other forms of the idea ex- pressed themselves in usages which have been perpetuated in Christianity, and one of which has had a singular im- portance for the Christian world. The one form, which probably arose from the conception of Jehovah as in an especial sense the protector of the poor, was that gifts to God may properly be bestowed on the needy, and that consequently alms have the virtue of a sacrifice. Biblical instances of this idea are—" He who doeth alms is offering a sacrifice of praise" (Ecclus. xxxii. 2); "To do good and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased" (Heb. xiii. 16); so the offerings sent by the Philippians to Paul when a prisoner at Rome are "an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God" (Phil. iv. 18). The other form, which was prob- ably a relic of the conception of Jehovah as the author of natural fertility, was that part of the fruits of the earth should be offered to God in acknowledgment of His bounty, and that what was so offered was especially blessed and brought a blessing upon both those who offered it and those who afterwards partook of it. The persistence of this

form of the idea of sacrifice constitutes so marked a feature of the history of Christianity as to require a detailed account of it.

In the first instance it is probable that among Christians, as among Jews, every meal, and especially every social meal, was regarded as being in some sense a thank-offering. Thanksgiving, blessing, and offering were co-ordinate terms. Hence the Talmudic rule, “A man shall not taste anything before blessing it” (Tosephta Berachoth, c. 4), and hence St Paul’s words, “He that eateth, eateth unto the Lord, for he giveth God thanks” (Rom. xiv. 6 ; comp. 1 Tim. iy. 4). But the most important offering was the solemn obla- tion in the assembly on the Lord’s day. A precedent for making such oblations elsewhere than in the temple had been afforded by the Essenes, who had endeavoured m that way to avoid the contact with unclean persons and things which a resort to the temple might have involved (Jos., Antig., xviii. 1, 5), and a justification for it was found in the prophecy of Malachi, “In every place incense is offered unto My name and a pure offering; for My name is great among the Gentiles, saith the Lord of hosts” (Mal. i. 11, repeatedly quoted in early Christian writings, e.g., Teaching of the Twelve Apostles, c. 14; Just. Mart, Trypho, c. 28, 41, 116; Irenzus, iv. 17, 5).

The points in relation to this offering which are clearly demonstrable from the Christian writers of the first two centuries, but which subsequent theories have tended to confuse, are these. (1) It was regarded as a true offering or sacrifice ; for in the Teaching of the Twelve Apostles, Justin Martyr, and in Irenxus it is designated by each of the terms which are used to designate sacrifices in the

tl aE

SHCRIFICE

Old Testament. (2) It was primarily an offering of the fruits of the earth to the Creator ; this is clear from both Justin Martyr and Ireneus, the latter of whom not only explicitly states that such oblations are continued among Christians but also meets the current objection to them by arguing that they are offered to God not as though He needed anything but to show the gratitude of the offerer (Iren., iv. 17, 18). (3) It was offered as a thanksgiving partly for creation and preservation and partly for re-

demption: the latter is the special purpose mentioned (e.g.) in the Teaching of the Twelve Apostles ; the former 1s that upon which Irenzus chiefly dwells; both are men- tioned together in Justin Martyr (Trypho, c. 41). (4) Those who offered it were required to be not only baptized Christians but also ‘‘in love and charity one with another ”; there is an indication of this latter requirement in the Ser- mon on the Mount (Matt. v. 23, 24, where the word trans- lated “gift” is the usual LXX. word for a sacrificial offer- ing, and is so used elsewhere in the same Gospel, viz., Matt. viii. 4, xxiii. 19), and still more explicitly in the Teaching, c. 14, “Let not any one who has a dispute with his fellow come together with you (z.¢., on the Lord’s day) until they have been reconciled, that your sacrifice be not defiled.” ‘This brotherly unity was symbolized by the kiss of peace. (5) It was offered in the assembly by the hands of the president ; this is stated by Justin Martyr (Apol., i. 65, 67), and implied by Clement of Rome (Ep., 1. 44, 4). Combined with this sacrifice of the fruits of the earth to the Creator in memory of creation and redemption, and probably always immediately following it, was the sacred meal at which part of the offerings was eaten. Such a sacred meal had always, or almost always, formed part of the rites of sacrifice. There was the idea that what had been solemnly offered to God was especially hallowed by Him, and that the partaking of it united the partakers in a special bond both to Him and to one another. In the case of the bread and wine of the Christian sacrifice, it was believed that, after having been offered and blessed, they became to those who partook of them the body and blood of Christ. This “ communion of the body and blood of Christ,” which in early writings is clearly distinguished from the thank-offering which preceded it, and which fur- nished the materials for it, gradually came to supersede the thank-offering in importance, and to exercise a reflex influence upon it. In the time of Cyprian, though not before, we begin to find the idea that the body and blood of Christ were not merely partaken of by the worshippers but also offered in sacrifice, and that the Eucharist was not so much a thank-offering for creation and redemption as a repetition or a showing forth anew of the self-sacrifice of Christ. This idea is repeated in Ambrose and Augus- tine, and has since been a dominant idea of both Eastern and Western Christendom. But, though dominant, it has not been universal; nor did it become dominant until several centuries after its first promulgation. The history of it has yet to be written. For, in spite of the important controversies to which it has given birth, no one has been at

the pains to distinguish between (i.) the theories which have been from time to time put forth by eminent writers, and which, though they have in some cases ultimately won a general acceptance, have for a long period remained as merely individual opinions, and (ii.) the current beliefs of the great body of Christians which are expressed in recog- nized formularies. A catena of opinions may be produced in favour of almost any theory; but formularies express the collective or average belief of any given period, and changes in them are a sure indication that there has been a general change in ideas. _It is clear from the evidence of the early Western litur- gles that, for at least six centuries, the primitive conception

of the nature of the Christian sacrifice remained. There is a clear distinction between the sacrifice and the com- munion which followed it, and that which is offered con- sists of the fruits of the earth and not of the body and blood of Christ. Other ideas no doubt attached themselves to the primitive conception, of which there is no certain evidence in primitive times, ¢e.g., the idea of the propitiatory character of the offering, but these ideas rather confirm than disprove the persistence of those primitive conceptions themselves.

All Eastern liturgies, in their present form, are of later date than the surviving fragments of the earlier Western liturgies, and cannot form the basis of so sure an induction ; but they entirely confirm the conclusions to which the Western liturgies lead. The main points in which the pre-medieval formularies of both the Eastern and the Western Churches agree in relation to the Christian sacri- fice are the following. (1) It was an offering of the fruits of the earth to the Creator, in the belief that a special blessing would descend upon the offerers, and sometimes also in the belief that God would be propitiated by the offerings. The bread and wine are designated by all the names by which sacrifices are designated (sacrvjicia, hostie, libamina, and at least once sacrificium placationis), and the act of offering them by the ordinary term for offering a sacrifice (¢mmolatio). (2) The offering of bread and wine was originally brought to the altar by the person who offered it, and placed by him in the hands of the presiding officer. In course of time there were two im- portant changes in this respect : (a) the

offerings of bread and wine were commuted for money, with which bread and wine were purchased by the church-officers ; (b) the offerings were sometimes handed to the deacons and by them taken to the bishop at the altar, and sometimes, as at Rome, the bishop and deacons went round the church to collect them.! (3) In offering the bread and wine the offerer offered, as in the ancient sacrifices, primarily for himself, but inasmuch as the offering was regarded as having a general propitiatory value he mentioned also the names of others in whom he was interested, and especially the departed, that they might rest in peace. Hence, after all the offerings had been collected, and before they were solemnly offered to God, it became a custom to recite the names both of the offerers and of those for whom they offered, the names being arranged in two lists, which were known as diptychs. Almost all the old rituals have prayers to be said "before the names," "after the names." Tt was a further and perhaps much later development of the same idea that the good works of those who had pre- viously enjoyed the favour of God were invoked to give additional weight to the prayer of the offerer. In the later series of Western rituals, beginning with that which is known as the Leonine Sacramentary, this practice is almost universal. (4) The placing of the bread and wine upon the altar was followed by the kiss of peace. (5) Then followed the actual offering of the gifts to God (immolatio missx). It was an act of adoration or thanks- giving, much longer in Eastern than in Western rituals, but in both classes of rituals beginning with the form "Lift up your hearts," and ending with the Ter Sanctus or Trisagion.2 The early MSS. of Western rituals indi- cate the importance which was attached to this part of the liturgy by the fact of its being written in a much more ornate way than the other parts, e.g., in gold uncial letters 0 ee eS ee

1 Of this proceeding an elaborate account exists in the very inter- esting document printed by Mabillon in his Musewm Italicum as * Ordo Romanus I."; the small phials of wine which were brought were emptied into a large bowl, and the loaves of bread were collected in a bag.

2 The elements of the form are preserved exactly in the liturgy of the Church of England.

upon a purple ground, as distinguished from the vermilion cursive letters of the rest of the MS. With this the sacrifice proper was concluded. (6) But, since the divine injunction had been “ Do this in remembrance of Me,” the sacrifice was immediately followed by a commemoration of the passion of Christ, and that again by an invocation of the Holy Spirit (epiclests) that He would make the bread and wine to become the body and blood of Christ. Of this invocation, which is constant in all Eastern rituals, there are few, though sufficient, surviving traces in Western rituals! Then after a prayer for sanctification, or for worthy reception, followed the Lord’s Prayer, and after the Lord’s Prayer the communion.

In the course of the 8th and 9th centuries, by the opera- tion of causes which have not yet been fully investigated, the theory which is first found in Cyprian became the dominant belief of Western Christendom. The central point of the sacrificial idea was shifted from the offering of the fruits of the earth to the offering of the body and blood of Christ. The change is marked in the rituals by the duplication of the liturgical forms. The prayers of in- tercession and oblation, which in earlier times are found only in connexion with the former offering, are repeated in the course of the same service in connexion with the latter. The designations and epithets which are in earlier times applied to the fruits of the earth are applied to the body and blood. From that time until the Reformation the Christian sacrifice was all but universally regarded as the offering of the body and blood of Christ. The in- numerable theories which were framed as to the precise nature of the offering and as to the precise change in the elements all implied that conception of it. It still remains as the accepted doctrine of the Church of Rome. For, although the council of Trent recognized fully the dis- tinction which has been mentioned above between the Eucharist and the sacrifice of the mass, and treated of them in separate sessions (the former in Session xiii., the latter in Session xxii.), it continued the medieval theory of the nature of the latter. The reaction against the medizval theory at the time of the Reformation took the form of a return to what had no doubt been an early belief, —the idea that the Christian sacrifice consists in the offer- ing of a pure heart and of vocal thanksgiving. Luther at one period (in his treatise De Captivitate Babylonica) main- tained, though not on historical grounds, that the offering of the oblations of the people was the real origin of the con- ception of the sacrifice of the mass; but he directed all the force

of his vehement polemic against the idea that any other sacrifice could be efficacious besides the sacrifice of Christ. In the majority of Protestant communities the idea of a sacrifice has almost lapsed. That which among Catholics is most commonly regarded in its aspect as an offering and spoken of as the “mass” is usually regarded in 1ts aspect as a participation in the symbols of Christ’s death and spoken of as the “communion.” But it may be inferred from the considerable progress of the Anglo- Catholic revival in most English-speaking countries that the idea of sacrifice has not yet ceased to be an important element in the general conception of religion. (E. HA.)

SACRILEGE. The robbery of churches was in Roman law punishable with death. There are early instances of persons having suffered death for this offence in Scotland. In England at common law benefit of clergy was denied to robbers of churches. The tendency of the later law has been to put the offence of sacrilege in the same position as if the offence had not been committed in a sacred build-

It is found, ¢.g., in the second of Mone’s masses from the Reichenau palimpsest, and in Mabillon’s Missale Gothicum, No. 12; it is ex- pressly mentioned by Isidore of Seville as the sixth element in the Eucharistic service, De Offic. Eceles., i. 15,

ing. Thus breaking into a place of worship at night, says Lord Coke, is burglary, for the church is the mansion. house of Almighty God. The Larceny Act of 1861 punishes the breaking into or out of a place of divine worship in the same way as burglary, and the theft of things sacred in the same way as larceny. The breaking or defacing of an altar, crucifix, or cross in any church, chapel, or church- yard is an offence punishable with three months’ imprison- ment on conviction before two justices, the imprisonment to be continued unless the offender enter into surety for good behaviour at quarter sessions (1 Mary, sess. 2, c. 3).

SACRO BOSCO, JoHANNES DE, or JoHN Hotywoop, astronomical author, died 1244 (or 1256) as professor of mathematics at the university of Paris. Nothing else is known about his life. He wrote a treatise on spherical

astronomy, Z’ractatus de Sphera Mundi, first printed at Ferrara in 1472, and reprinted, generally with copious notes and commentaries, about sixty times until the end of the 17th century. About the year 1232 he wrote De anni ratione seu ut vocatur vulgo computus ecclesiasticus, in which he points out the increasing error of the Julian calendar, and suggests a remedy which is nearly the same as that actually used under Gregory XIII. three hundred and fifty years later.

SACY, Anvorne Isaac, Baron Sunvesrru? DE (1758- – 1838), the greatest of French Orientalists and the founder of the modern school of Arabic scholarship, was the second son of a Parisian notary, and was born at Paris on 21st September 1758. From the age of seven years, when he lost his father, he was educated in more than monastic seclusion in the house of his pious and tender mother, Designed for the civil service, he studied jurisprudence, and in 1781 got a place as counsellor in the cour des monnares, in which he continued till, in 1791, he was advanced to be a commissary-general in the same depart- ment. De Sacy had a natural turn for business and liked variety of work, while he seems to have had little or no need of absolute repose. He had successively acquired all the Semitic languages while he was following the usual course of school and professional training, and while he was engaged in the civil service he found time to make himself a great name as an Orientalist by a series of pub- lications which, beginning with those Biblical subjects to which his education and sympathies naturally directed his first Semitic studies, gradually extended in range, and already displayed the comprehensive scholar who had chosen the whole Semitic and Iranian East for his domain.? The works of these early years do not show the full maturity of his powers; his chief triumph was an effect- ive commencement of the decipherment of the Pahlavi inscriptions of the Sasanian kings (1787-91). It was the French Revolution which gained De Sacy wholly for letters. As a good Catholic and a staunch royalist he felt con- strained in 1792 to retire from the public service, and lived in close seclusion in a cottage near Paris till in 1795 he was called to be professor of Arabic in the newly founded school of living Eastern languages. The years of retire- ment had not been fruitless; they were in part devoted to the study of the religion of the Druses, which continued to occupy him throughout life and was the subject

of his last and unfinished work, the Exposé de la Religion des Druzes (2 vols., 1838). Nevertheless, when called to be a

His father’s name was Silvestre, the addition De Sacy he took asa younger son after a fashion then conimon with the Parisian bourgeoisie.

- A communication to Eichhorn on the Paris MS. of the Syro- Hexaplar version of IV. Kings formed the basis of a paper in the latter’s Repertorium, vol. vii. (1780). This was De Sacy’s literary début. It was followed by text and translation of the letters of the Samaritans to Jos. Sealiger (bid., vol. xiii., 1783) and by a series of essays on Arabian and Persian history in the Recueil of the Academy of Inscriptions and in the Notices et Extraits.

ee oe

eas CF

teacher, he felt that he had himself much to learn. Since the death of Reiske Arabic learning had been in a back- ward state, the standard of philological knowledge was low, and the books for students extremely defective. De Sacy set himself with characteristic thoroughness to com- plete his own knowledge and supply the lacking helps to others, and he accomplished this task on such a scale, with such width of range, precision of thought, and scrupulous attention to details, that he became the founder of a wholly new school and the father of all subsequent Arabists. His great text-books, the Grammaire Arabe (2 vols., 1st ed. 1810, 2d ed. 1831) and the Chrestomathie (3 vols., Ist ed. 1806, 2d ed. 1826-31), together with its supplement, the Anthologie Grammaticale (1829), are works that can never become obsolete; the luminous exposition of the grammar and the happy choice of the pieces in the chres- tomathy—all inedita—with the admirable notes, drawn from an enormous reading in MS. sources, make them altogether different from ordinary text-books. The whole powers of a great teacher, the whole wealth of knowledge of an unrivalled scholar, are spent with absolute single- ness of purpose for the benefit of the learner, and the result is that the books are equally delightful and instruc- tive to the student and to the advanced scholar. A com- parison of the first and second editions shows how much toil and research it cost the author to raise his own

scholar- ship to the level which, thanks to his work, has become the starting-place for all subsequent ascents of the Arabian Parnassus.

De Sacy’s place as a teacher was threatened at the outset by his conscientious refusal to take an oath of hatred to royalty. He tendered his resignation both as professor and as member of the Institute; but he was allowed to continue to teach, and rejoined the Institute on its re-organization in 1803. In 1805 he made the only con- siderable journey of his life, being sent to Genoa on a vain search for Arabic documents supposed to lie in the archives of that city. In 1806 he added the duties of Persian pro- fessor to his old chair, and from this time onwards—as, in spite of his royalist opinions, he was ready to do public service under any stable government—his life, divided between his teaching, his literary work, and a variety of public duties, was one of increasing honour and success, broken only by a brief period of retreat during the Hundred Days. He found time for everything: while his pen was ever at work on subjects of abstruse research, he was one of the most active leaders in all the business which the French system throws on the savans of the capital, especi- ally as perpetual secretary of the Academy of Inscriptions (from 1832); in 1808 he entered the corps législatif ; and mm 1832, when quite an old man, he became a peer of France and was regular in the duties of the chamber.! In 1815 he became rector of the university of Paris, and after the second restoration he was active on the commission of public instruction. Of the Société Asiatique he was one of the founders, and when he was inspector of Oriental types at the royal printing press he thought it his duty to read a proof of every book printed in Arabic and Persian. With this he maintained a vast correspondence and was accessible not only to every one who sought his advice on matters of learning and business but to all the poor of ai Nh Ee came to him as a member of the bureau do os y. 4 he was neither monk nor hermit: he ee eee f and was happy in forty-eight years of =. Pec and in the care of a large family. Though ase: : appearance of delicate frame, De Sacy enjoyed en ealth and worked on without sign of failing melee 1 La days before his death (21st February 1838), ee su idenly fell down in the street and never rallied.

The title of baron he received from Napoleon in 1813.

De Sacy wrote so much that a list even of his larger essays, mostly communicated to the Academy or in the Notices et Hxtraits, is im- possible in this place, while his lesser papers and reviews in the Allg. Bib. f. biblische Litteratur, the Mines de 0 Orient, the Magasin Eneyelopédique, the Journal des Savants (of which he was an editor), and the Journal Asiatique are almost innumerable. Among the works which he designed mainly for students may be classed his edition of Hariri (1822, 2d edition by Reinaud, 1847, 1855), with a selected Arabic commentary, and of the Alftya (1833), and his Calila et Dimna (1816),—the Arabic version of that famous collec- tion of Buddhist animal tales which has bcen in various forms one of the most popular books of the world. De Sacy's enquiry into the wonderful history of these tales forms one of his best services to letters and a good example of the way in which he always made his work for the benefit of learners go hand in hand with profound research. Of his continued interest in Biblical subjects he gave evidence in his memoir on the Samaritan Arabic version of the Pentateuch (Mém. Acad. des Inser., vol. xlix.), and in the Arabic and Syriac New Testaments edited for the British and Foreign Bible Society ; among works important for Eastern history, besides that on the Druses already named, may be cited his version of Abd-Allatif, Relation Arabe sur 0 Egypte, and his essays on the History of the Law of Property in Egypt since the Arab conquest (1805-18). And, in conclusion, it must not be forgotten that his oral teaching was not less influential than his writings, and that, except Ewald, almost all Arabists of chief note in the first half of this century, in Germany as well as in France, were his personal pupils. Of the brilliant series of teachers who went out from his lecture-room one or two veterans still survive, and Professor Fleischer's elaborate notes and corrections to the Grammaire Arabe (Kleinere Schriften, vol. i., 1885) may be regarded as the latest tribute to the memory of the great master by a disciple who is now the patriarch of living Arabists. (W. R. 8.)

SACY, Isaac Louis Lz Mairre pE (1613-1684), a figure of some prominence in the literary annals of Port Roya (g.v.), and after the death of St Cyran (1643) and Singlin (1664) the leading confessor and "director" of the Jan- senists in France, was born in Paris on 29th March 1613. He was

closely connected with the Arnauld family, his true surname being Le Maitre and that of Saci or Sacy which he afterwards assumed a mere anagram of Isaac, his Christian name. He studied philosophy and belles lettres at the Collége de Calvi-Sorbonne, and afterwards, under the influence of St Cyran (see DUVERGIER DE HavURANNE), his spiritual director, joined his eldest brother Antoine Le Maitre at Port Royal des Champs. Here he threw himself heartily into the life of the place, devoting himself specially to teaching and the preparation of school-books, his chief productions in this class being expurgated edi- tions of Martial and Terence and a translation of Phzedrus. In 1650 he was ordained to the priesthood, and in 1654 he entered the field of theological controversy with a brochure entitled Hnluminures de ’ Almanach des Jésuites intitulé la Déroute et la Confusion des Jansénistes, of which it is enough to say that, if the Jesuit attack was in exe- crable taste, neither was the reply in keeping with the finer ethical tone of Port Royal. From 1661, after the breaking up of the Petites Ecoles, he lived more or less in concealment in Paris until May 1666, when he was thrown into the Bastille, where he remained till November 1668. During his imprisonment he occupied himself with the completion of a new version of the New Testament, known as the Vouveau Testament de Mons (1667), and the re- mainder of his life was largely devoted to a similar trans- lation of the Old Testament, based chiefly on the Vulgate, with Zclaircissements. These began to appear in 1672 and were continued down to the end of the minor prophets. As De Sacy knew nothing of Hebrew, this version is of no value as a contribution to scholarship, and in style it is more artificial and laboured than those which had pre- ceded it. From 1668 till his death on 4th January 1684 he lived partly in Paris, partly at Port Royal des Champs, and partly at Pomponne, the seat of his cousin, the marquis de Pomponne. He was buried at Port Royal des Champs.

In addition to the works already mentioned, he published, under

the pseudonym of the “Sieur de Beuil,” a French translation of the De Imitatione Christi (1662). He also translated Chrysostom’s Homilies on Matthew. See Sainte-Beuve, Port Royal, bk. ii. chaps. 17, 18 (ed. 1878).

SADDLERY embraces the industries connected with the harnessing and controlling of all beasts of draught and burden. The materials used in harnessing the various creatures so employed and the modifications of harness necessary to suit their structure, temperament, and duties are, of course, exceedingly varied. In a restricted sense saddlery is principally a leather trade, and has to do with the harnessing of the horse. The craft has been recognized and established in England as a separate trade since the 13th century, when the London Saddlers' Company received its charter of incorporation from Edward I. There is evi- dence also of its early prosperity at Birmingham, where it grew to an importance which it still retains, the princi- pal seat of the saddlery trade being now at Walsall near Birmingham, which is practically a saddlers' town. The trade divides itself into two branches, brown saddlery and black saddlery. The former is concerned with saddle- making and the cutting and sewing of bridles, reins, and all other uncoloured leather-work. The saddle is the most important article on the brown saddler's list. It consists of the tree or skeleton, on which the leather is stretched, the seat, the skirts, and the flaps. The tree is commonly made of beech strengthened with iron plates. The whole leather-work ought to be of pig-skin, but often

the seat alone is of that material, the other parts being

imitation, cleverly grained by means of electro-deposit copper casts from the surface of real pig-skin. There are many varieties of saddles, such as racing, military, hunting, and ladies' saddles, &c. A racing saddle may weigh not more than two or three pounds, while a cavalry saddle will be four times heavier. The saddle-maker has to con- sider the ease and comfort of both horse and rider. The saddle must fit closely and evenly to the curvature of the horse's back without tendency to shift, and it ought to offer as far as possible a soft and elastic seat for the rider. The black saddler is concerned with the harness of carriage, cart, and draught horses generally. The skill of the tradesman in this department is displayed in designing and arranging harness most favourable for the proper dis- tribution of the load, and for bringing into use the muscles of the animal without chafing or fraying the skin. Much of the usefulness and comfort of a horse depends on the accu- rate and proper fit of itsharness. The collar and traces and the saddle are the important features of draught harness, the former being the

pieces through which the draught is effected, while dead weight is borne through the saddle. The portions of saddlery by which the horseman controls and guides the horse are the bridle and bit and the reins. Into the many devices connected with these and other parts of harness for curbing horses, for breaking them of evil habits, and for adding to the security of the equestrian and carriage traveller, we cannot here enter (compare HorsEeMansuip, vol. xii, p. 198). Saddler's ironmongery forms an important feature of the trade. It embraces the making of buckles, chains, cart-gearing, stirrups, spurs, bits, hanes, &c. The ornamental metal-work of carriage- i?! is either electro-plated in silver or of solid polished rass.

SADDUCEES (o'pyy, ae. Zadokites), the party of the priestly aristocracy under the later Hasmoneans. The Sadducees were essentially a political party opposed to the Pharisees or party of the Scribes, and their position and history have therefore already been discussed in IsRAEL, vol. xili. p. 424 sg. The common view that Sadducieism was essentially a philosophico-religious school is due partly to Josephus but mainly to later Jewish tradition, which

never could realize the difference between a nation and a sect, and fancied that the whole history of Israel was made up of such scholastic controversies as engrossed the attention of later times. The theological tenets of the Sadducees as they appear in the New Testament and in Josephus had a purely political basis. They detested the doctrine of the resurrection and the fatalism of the Phari- sees because these opinions were used by their adversaries to thwart their political aims. The aristocracy suffered a great loss of position through the subjection of Judea to a foreign power; but it was useless to urge political schemes of emancipation on those who believed with the Pharisees that Israel's task was to endure in patience till Jehovah redeemed the nation, and the resurrection rewarded those who had lived and died in bondage. In matters of ritual the Sadducees were naturally conservative, and their opposition to the unwritten traditions, from which they appealed to Scripture, is simply one phase of their opposi- tion to Pharisaic innovations ; for the traditions were the invention of the Pharisees and the written law represented old practice. When the Sadducees

had lost all political importance their opposition to Pharisaism necessarily be- came more and more an affair of the schools rather than of practical life, but the Sadducees of the schools are only the last survival of what had once been a great political party. SA DE MIRANDA, Franctsco px (1495-1558), Portu- guese poet, was born of noble family on 27th October 1495, at Coimbra, where also he received his education. He after- wards travelled in Spain and Italy, and held for some time a post at the court of John III. of Portugal. He died on his own property at Tapada near Ponte do Lima on 15th March 1558. Besides eight eclogues (six in Spanish and two in Portuguese), he wrote two comedies in Portuguese, —Os Estrangeiros and Os Vilhalpandos. See PorTuGaL (Literature), vol. xix. p. 556, and Spary (Literature). SA‘DI, generally called Mustig-uppin, but more cor- rectly MusHARRIF-UDDIN B. MusLin-uppin, the greatest didactic poet and the most popular writer of Persia, was born about 1184 (580 a.H.) in Shiraz, where his father, ‘Abdallah, a man of practical religion and good common sense, who impressed upon his son from early childhood the great maxims of doing good and fearing nobody, was in the service of the Turkoman race of the Salgharides or Atabegs of Fars. The fifth ruler of this dynasty, Sad b. Zengi, who ascended the throne in 1195 (591 a.n.), con- ceived a great affection for young Musharrif-uddin and enabled him, after the premature death of his father, to pursue lis studies in the famous medreseh of Baghdad, the Nizamiyyah, where he remained about thirty years (1196-1224). Strict college discipline and severe theo- logical studies repressed for a long time the inborn cheer- fulness and joviality of his nature; but his poetical genius, which rapidly developed, kept alive in him, amid all the privations of an austere life, the elasticity of youth, and some of his “‘early odes,” in which he praises the pleasures of life and the sweetness of love, were no doubt composed during his stay in Baghdéd. At any rate his literary fame had already spread about 1210 (606 a.H.) as far as Kash- gar in Turkistén, which the young poet (who in honour of his patron had assumed the name of Sa‘df) visited in his twenty-sixth or twenty-seventh year. After mastering all the dogmatic disciplines of the Islamitic faith he turned his attention first to practical philosophy, and later on to the more ideal tenets of Suific pantheism, under the spirit- ual guidance of the famous sheikh Shihdb-uddin “Umar Suhrawardi (died 1234; 632 a.u.). Between 1220 and 1225 he paid a visit to a friend in Ispahén, went from there to Damascus,

and returned to Ispahan just at the time of the inroads of the Mongols, when the Atabeg Sad had been deposed by the victorious ruler of Kirman,

ee oe

SA D—S AD

GhiyAth-uddin (1223). Sadly grieved by the misfortune of his generous patron and disgusted with the miserable state to which Persia had been reduced, Sa‘di started in 1224 or 1225 on his way to India, thus entering on the second period of his life—that of his wanderings (1225- a5). He proceeded wa Balkh, Ghazni, and the Punjab to Gujrat, on the western coast of which he visited the famous shrine of Siwa in Pattan-Sumanat, and met with a remarkable adventure. Having seen the statue of the god lifting up its hands to heaven every morning at sun- rise, he discovered that a priest, hidden behind the image, wrought the miracle by means of a cord; but, being caught in the very act of watching the performance, he had no alternative but to hurl his pursuer into a deep well and to escape at full speed,—not, however, until he had smashed the detested statue. Aftera prolonged stay in Delhi, where he acquired the knowledge of Hindustanf which he afterwards turned to account in several of his poems—just as a number of excellent Arabic kasidas bear witness to his fluency in that idiom which he had learnt in Baghd4d—he sailed for Yemen. In San‘d, the capital of Yemen, the loss of a beloved child (when he had married is not known) threw him into deep melancholy, from which only a new adventurous expedition into Abys- sinia on the opposite African shore and a pilgrimage to Mecca and Medina could again rouse him. Thence he directed his steps towards Syria and lived as a renowned sheikh for a considerable time in Damascus, which he had once already visited. There and in Baalbec he added to his literary renown that of a first-rate pulpit orator. Specimens of his spiritual addresses are preserved in the five homilies (on the fugitiveness of human life, on faith and fear of God, on love towards God, on rest in God, and on the search for God) which usually form the second risdlah or prose treatise in Sa‘di’s complete works. At last weary of Damascus he withdrew into the desert near Jerusalem and led a solitary wandering life, till one day he was taken captive by a troop of Frankish soldiers, brought to Tripoli, and condemned to forced labour in the trenches of the fortress.

After enduring countless hard- ships, he was eventually rescued by a rich friend in Aleppo, who paid his ransom, and moreover gave him his daughter in marriage. But Sa‘di, unable to live with his quarrel- some wife, set out on new travels, first to North Africa and then through the length and breadth of Asia Minor and the adjoining countries. Not until he had passed his seventieth year did he return to Shiraz (about 1255; 653 A.H.). Finding the place of his birth tranquil and pros- perous under the wise rule of Abubakr b. Sa‘d, the son of his old patron (1226-1260; 623-658 a.H.), the aged poet took up his permanent abode, interrupted only by repeated pilgrimages to Mecca, in a little hermitage out- side the town, in the midst of a charming garden, and devoted the remainder of his life to Sufic contemplation and poetical composition. Sa‘di died at Shiraz in 1292 (691 a.u.) according to Hamdall4h Mustaufi (who wrote only forty years later), or in December 1291 (690 ..), at the age of 110 lunar years.

The experience of the world gained during his travels, his intimate acquaintance with the various countries he had visited, his insight into human character, its grandeur and its littleness, which a thirty years intercourse with men of all ranks and of many nationalities had fully matured, together with an inborn loftiness of thought and the purest moral standard, made it easy for Sadi to compose in the short Space of three years his two masterpieces, which have immortalized his name, the Bustdn or ‘‘ Fruit-garden ” (1257) and the Gulistdn or “ Rose-garden ” (1258), both dedicated to the reign- ing Atabeg Abubakr. The former, also called Sa’dindma, is a kind of didactic epopee in ten chapters and double-rhymed verses, which

passes in review the highest philosophical and religious questions, |

not seldom in the very spirit of Christianity, and abounds with pect ethical maxims and matchless gems of transcendental specu- ation. The latter is a prose work of a similar tendency in eight

chapters, interspersed with numerous verses and illustrated, like the Bustdn, by a rich store of clever tales and charming anecdotes ; it discusses more or less the same topics as the larger work, but has acquired a much greater

popularity in both the East and the West, owing to its easier and more varied style, its attractive lessons of practical wisdom, and its numerous bon-mots. But Sadi's Diwédn, or collection of lyrical poetry, far surpasses the Bustin and Gulistan, at any rate in quantity, whether in quality also is a matter of taste. Other minor works are the Arabic kasidas, the first of which laments the destruction of the Arabian caliphate by the Mongols in 1258 (656 a.u.); the Persian kasidas, partly panegyrical, partly didactical ; the marathi, or elegies, beginning with one on the death of Abubakr and ending with one on the defeat and demise of the last caliph, Musta'sim ; the mulammadt, or poems with alternate Persian and Arabic verses, of a rather artificial character; the tarjédt, or refrain-poems; the ghazals, or odes; the sdhibiyyah and mukatta'dt, or moral aphorisms and epigrams ; the rubdiyydé, or quatrains ; and the mufraddt, or distichs. Sadi's lyrical poems possess neither the easy grace and melodious charm of Hafiz's songs nor the overpowering grandeur of Jelal-uddin Rumi's divine hymns, but they are nevertheless full of deep pathos and show such a fearless love of truth as is seldom met with in Eastern poetry. Even his panegyrics, although addressed in turn to almost all the rulers who in those days of continually changing dynasties presided over the fate of Persia, are free from that cringing servility so com- mon in the effusions of Oriental encontiasts.

The first who collected and arranged his works was 'Ali b. Ahmad b. Bisutun (1326-1334 ; 726-734 a.H.). The most exact information about Sa'di's life and works is found in the introduction to Dr W. Bacher's Sa'di's Aphoris- men und Sinngedichte, Strasburg, 1879 (a complete metrical translation of the epigrammatic poems), and in the same author's ''Sa'di Studien," in 7.D.M.G., XXX. pp. 81-106. Sa'di's Kulliyyat or complete works have been edited by Harington, Calcutta, 1791-95 (with an English translation of some of the prose treatises and of Daulat Shah's notice on the poet, of which a German version is found in Graf's Rosengarten, Leipsic, 1846, p. 229 sqg.); for the numerous litho- graphed editions, see Rieu's Pers. Cat. of the Brit. Mus., ii. p. 596. The Busta has been printed in Calcutta (1810 and 1828), as well as in Lahore, Cawnpore, Tabriz, &c. ; a critical edition with Persian commentary was published by K. H. Graf at Vienna in 1850 (German metrical translations by the same, Jena, 1850, and by Schlechta-Wssehrd, Vienna, 1852; English translation by W. Clarke, London, 1879; French translation by Barbier de Meynard, Paris, 1880). The

best editions of the Gulistén are by A. Sprenger (Calcutta, 1851) and by Platts (London, 1874); the best translations into English by Eastwick (1852) and by Platts (1873); into French by Defremery (1858); into German by Graf (1846) ; see also 8. Robinson's Persian Poetry for English Readers, 1883, pp. 245- 366. Select kasidas, ghazals, elegies, quatrains, and distichs have been edited, with a German metrical translation, by Graf, in the Z.D.M.G., ix. p. 92 sq., xii. p. 82 sq., xiii. p. 445 sq., xv. p. 541 sg., and xviii. p. 570 sq. On the Sufic character of Sa'di in contrast to Hafiz and Jeldl-uddin Rumi, comp. Ethé, '' Der Stfismus und seine drei Hauptvertreter," in Morgenlandische Studien, Leipsic, 1870, pp. 95-124. (H. E.)

SADLER, Sir Ratpu (1507-1587), English statesman, was the son of Henry Sadler, steward to the proprietor of the manor of Gillney, near Great Hadham, Hertford- shire, and was born at Hackney in Middlesex in 1507. While a mere child he obtained a situation in the family of Thomas Cromwell, earl of Essex. Through him he was introduced to Henry VIII., who conferred on him various appointments and employed him in connexion with the dissolution of the monasteries, in the rich spoils of which he was a large sharer. So much was the king impressed by Sadler's ability and address that he made choice of him for his subsequent important negotiations with Scotland. In 1537 he was sent thither to strengthen the English interest ; in 1539-40 he was commissioned to persuade the Scottish king James V. to cast off the supremacy of the pope; in 1541 he went back to enforce the same counsel; and in 1542 he was appointed to settle the proposed match be- tween Edward prince of Wales and Mary the infant queen of Scots. Although not successful in any of these missions, he continued to retain the full confidence of the king, who, in recognition of his zealous services, conferred on him in 1543 the honour of knighthood. On Henry's death in 1547 Sadler's name was found in the royal will as one of the councillors to the sixteen nobles who were entrusted with the guardianship of the young king. In the same year he was appointed treasurer to the army sent against Scotland, and for his great services in rallying the repulsed cavalry he was created a knight-banneret on the battlefield of Pinkie. During the reign of Mary he lived in retirement on his estate near Hackney ; but on the accession of Eliza- beth in 1558 he came once more

into a sphere of active employment. He immediately became a member of parlia- ment for the county of Hertford and a privy councillor.

144

Not long afterwards his strong Protestant sympathies and his acquaintance with Scottish affairs recommended him as a fit person to be employed by Elizabeth in her intrigues with the Scottish lords of the congregation against Queen Mary. In 1584 he was appointed keeper of Mary queen of Scots in the castle of Tutbury ; but on account of “age and infirmity ” he was permitted to resign his charge some time before the death of the queen. His last service was to repair to Scotland to pacify the king’s indignation on account of Mary’s death. He died after his return home at Standon in Hertfordshire, 30th March 1587.

The Letters and Negotiations of Sir Ralph Sadler were published at Edinburgh in 1720, and a more complete collection under the title State Papers and Letters of Sir Ralph Sadler, with a life by Sir Walter Scott, in 1809. The Memoir of the Life and Times of Sir Ralph Sadleir, by his Descendant Major F. Sadleir Stoncy, appeared in 1877.

SADOLETO, Jacopo (1477-1547), Italian humanist and churchman, was born at Modena in 1477, and, being the son of a noted jurist, was designed for the same profession. He gave himself, therefore, to humanistic studies and acquired reputation as a Latin poet, his best-known piece being one on the group of Laocoon. Passing to Rome, he obtained the patronage of Cardinal Carafa and adopted the ecclesiastical career. Leo X. chose him as his secretary along with Peter Bembo, and in 1517 made him bishop of Carpentras. Sadoleto had a remarkable talent for affairs and approved himself a faithful servant of the papacy in many difficult negotiations under successive popes, especi- ally as a peacemaker ; but he was no bigoted advocate of papal authority, and the great aim of his life was to win back the Protestants by peaceful persuasion—he would never countenance persecution—and by putting Catholic doctrine in a conciliatory form. Indeed his chief work, a Commentary on Romans, though meant as a prophylactic against the new doctrines, gave great offence at Rome and Paris. Sadoleto was a diligent and devoted bishop and always left his diocese with reluctance even after he was made cardinal (1536). His piety

and tolerant spirit, combined with his reputation for scholarship and eloquence and his diplomatic abilities, give him a somewhat unique place among the churchmen of his time. He died in 1547. His collected works appeared at Mainz in 1607, and in- clude, besides his theologico-irenical pieces, a collection of Epistles, a treatise on education (first published in 1533), and the Phedrus, a defence of philosophy, written in 1538.

SMMUND. See Eppa, vol. vii. p. 650, and Icrnanp, vol. xii. p. 624.

SAFES. A safe is any repository in which valuable property is guarded against risk of loss by fire or from the attacks of thieves. The protection of valuable documents and possessions was only imperfectly effected in the charter- rooms of old mansions and in the iron-bound oaken chests and iron coffers of the Middle Ages ; but these in their day represented the strong rooms and safes of modern times. The vast increase in realized wealth and the complication of financial and banking operations necessitate in our days the greatest attention to the safeguarding of securities and property. The ingenuity of inventors has, within practicable limits, effected much in safe-making ; but the cunning of thieves has increased in proportion to the obstacles to be overcome and to the value of the booty at which they aim. No safe can be held to be invulnerable ; for, whatever human ingenuity can put together and close, the same ingenuity can tear down and open. An impreg- nable safe would indeed be a source of greater danger than of security to its owner, for, were the key or other means of access lost or rendered unworkable, the contents of the safe would of necessity be irrecoverable. The efficiency of a safe, therefore, does not depend on absolute impregna- bility, but on the nature of the obstacles it presents to

successful attack, and to the generally unfavourable con- ditions under which such attacks are made. It is common to make safes both thief- and fire-resisting, and the condi tions necessary for the one object to a certain extent con- duce to the attainment of both; but for many purposes security from the one danger alone is requisite.

The devices for baffling thieves are numerous. The safe must in the first place be made heavy and unwieldy, or otherwise it must be so fixed that it

can only be carried away with the utmost difficulty. Next, the greatest obstacles to obtaining illegitimate access must be presented, To prevent fracturing a tough metal must be used in the construction, and to resist penetration by drilling metal of great hardness must be interposed. These conditions are commonly met by making the outer casing of the safe of boiler plate, backed by a lining of hard steel, over which is an inner lining of thin boiler plate, the three layers being securely bolted together by screws from within. By some makers a layer of hard metal is poured, in a fluid state, between the outer and inner casing; others case- harden one surface ; and there are numerous additional de- vices for securing the combination of hardness and tough- ness. To prevent wrenching of joints, the two sides with top and bottom of the outer shell are sometimes made out of a single plate welded at the joint, and the back and front are then attached to that shell by angle irons screwed from within. The frame upon which the door hangs and into which the bolts shoot is made of great strength, with special precautions to prevent the wrenching off of the door by means of crowbars or wedges. In an ordinary safe the massive bolts, three or more in number, shoot only at the front, and fixed dogs or sham bolts fit into slots at the back or hinged side. This arrangement is sufficient to keep the door closed independent of hinges, which are merely the pivot on which the door turns. In all Chubb’s safes bolts shoot both to front and back; and in the higher quality of that and of every other good maker bolts shoot on every side,—front, back, top, and bottom. Ordinarily the bolts shoot straight into the slot as in an ordinary lock ; but, to defy wrenching, additional grip is secured by Chatwood, who makes a bolt with a clutch or projection, which falls into a recess in the slot and thus holds against any direct wrench. In Chubb’s finer safes the bolts shoot diagonally all round, so that in each face of the door they go in two different directions. Safe bolts are shot not by the key, as in an ordinary lock, but by the door handle, and the key simply secures them in their position. By this arrangement, patented by Mr Charles Chubb in 1835, a series of the most ponderous bolts can be secured in locked position by a small key which can be carried in the vest pocket. The lock of a safe must be a careful piece of mechanism, not subject to derangement, unpickable, and gunpowder-proof. The portion of the door on which it is fastened is generally provided with extra precautions against drillmg. A safe being well made and securely locked remains vulnerable through the medium of the key, which may be surreptitiously obtained

either for direct use or to form a mould by which false keys can be cut. On this account, keyless locks and time locks are coming into great favour in America. In keyless permutation locks, such as those of Hall, Sargent, Yale, and Dalton, the bolts can be withdrawn only after an indicator has been successively set against a combination of numbers arranged before the closing of the door; and in the time lock of these inventors the safe can only be opened at any hour to which the time controller is set before closing. Electrical arrangements have also been attached to safes by which signals are conveyed to any spot when a safe so guarded is unlawfully interfered with.

It is much easier to render a safe fire-proof than to

It requires nothing more than | second solution is neutralized with acid, carthamine in a

guard it against burglary. 3, calculation of the intensity and duration of any fire to which it is likely to be exposed, and the provision of a sufficient lining of fire-resisting material. What is princi- pally used is a mixture of some absorbent medium—such as sawdust, powdered gypsum or cement, or infusorial earth—with ground alum. Asbestos, silicate cotton, mica, and other non-conductors are also used; and by some makers sealed tubcs of alkaline salts are distributed through the absorbent material. These burst when exposed to high heat and their contents saturate the surrounding substance. A carefully packed shell of not less than 3} inches of the fire-resisting medium should line the interior of every fire-proof safe; but in many chcap safes a quantity of brick dust is the only fire-resisting medium.

Where an ordinary safe provides insufficient accommoda- tion the strong room takes its place. Such an apartment, being generally in the basement of a building, presents no special difficulties to make it proof against fire and thieves. Thickness of walls, built by preference of hard brick laid in cement, and liberal use of cement within the walls, as well as at the floor and over the arched roof, give strength against both fire and burglars. The interior of a strong room is gencrally lined with boiler-plate, and, in addition to the massive steel and iron door, it has an inner wrought-iron grill-door, which

secures the vault during business hours and permits the ventilation of the apartment. Within such a strong room extra strong chambers or separate safes may be placed, and in this way precautions may be indefinitely multiplied.

The most complete examples of safe and strong-room arrange- ments are afforded by the public safes or safe-deposits crected in most of the great cities of America and in Loudon. The premises of the National Safe Deposit Company in London consist of a large isolated building in Queen Victoria Street. The building, which is fire-proof, covers and surrounds the great safe vault or citadel, which is sunk in the ground to a depth of 45 feet. The vault itself, founded on a bed of concrete 20 feet in thickness, has walls, 3 feet thick, of hard blue brick laid in cement, with an external lining of fire-brick, and is lined internally with cast-iron plates 44 inches thiek chilled on one side, the plates having embedded in them a network of strong interlaced wrought-iron bars. The vault is divided into four tiers or stories with eight separate conipart- ments in each, which, aftcr business hours, are closed with doors raised and lowered by hydraulic power. These doors, which each weigh four tons, are built up, 12 inches thick, of combinations of hard and tough metal to resist fracture and drilling, and when they are raised for business purposes the entrance to each compartment is protected by a massive wrought-iron grill. Within the thirty- two compartments there is space for about 20,000 safes of various sizes, whieh are let to owners of valuables, each renter having the sole control of the safe hired by him. Additional security is obtained by the patrol of armed watclimen, and generally it may be said that in the institution precautions have been carried almost to the pitch of perfection, if indeed they have not been pushed to needless excess. (J. PA.)

SAFETY LAMP. See Coat, vol. vi. p. 72 sg.

SAFFARIDS, a Persian dynasty of the 9th century. See MoHAMMEDANISM, vol. xvi. p. 586.

_SAFFT (Asafi), a seaport of Morocco, with 6000 inha- bitants, some commerce, and a famous shrine, the House of the Seven Sleepers, frequented by Moslem and Jewish pilgrims. See vol. xvi. p. 831.

SAFFLOWER, or Basrarp Sarrron (Carthamus tinc- tortus), belongs to the natural order Composite ; its flowers form the basis of the safflower dye of commerce. The plant 1s a native of the East Indies, but is cultivated in Egypt and to some extent in southern Europe. To obtain the dyeing principle—carthamine—the flowers are first washed to free them from a soluble yellow colouring matter they contain; they are then dried and powdered, and digested im an alkaline solution in which pieces of clean white cotton are immersed. The alkaline solution having been neutralized with weak acetic acid, the cotton is removed and washed in another alkaline solution. When this

pure condition is precipitated. Dried carthamine has a rich metallic green colour ; it forms a brilliant but fugitive scarlet dye for silk, but is principally used for preparing toilet rouge. In 1884 there were imported into the United Kingdom 1794 tons of safflower, valued at £7109, almost the whole of which came from the East Indies.

SAFFRON (Arab. za‘faran) is manufactured from the dried stigmas and part of the style of the saffron crocus, a cultivated form of Crocus sativus, L., the precise origin of which is unknown ; for, though some of the wild forms (var. Thomasn, Cartwrightianus) are also employed for the manufacture of saffron, they differ in character from the cultivated type and are somewhat restricted in geographical range, while the cultivated form extends with little or no change through nearly ninety degrees of longitude (Spain to Kashmir) and twenty-five degrecs of latitude (England to Persia). It is invariably sterile, unless artificially fertilized with the pollen of some of the wild varieties. The purple flower, which blooms late in autumn, is very similar to that of the common spring crocus, and the stigmas, which are protruded from the perianth, are of a characteristic orange-red colour. The Egyptians, though acquainted with the bastard safflower (see preceding article), do not seem to have possessed saffron ; but it is named in Canticles iv. 14 among other sweet-smelling herbs. It is also repeatedly mentioned (xpoxos) by Homer, Hippocrates, and other Greek writers; and the word “crocodile” was long supposed to have been derived from xpdxos and detAds, whenee we have such stories as that ‘the croco- dile’s tears are

never true save when he is forced where saffron groweth” (Fuller’s Worthies). It has long been cultivated in Persia and Kashmir, and is supposed to have been introduced into China by the Mongol invasion. It is mentioned in the Chinese materia medica (Pun tsaou, 1552-78). The chief seat of cultivation in early times, however, was the town of Corycus (modern Korghoz) in Cilicia, and from this central point of distribution it may not improbably have spread east and west. According to Hehn, the town derived its name from the crocus; Rey- mond, on the other hand, with more probability, holds that the name of the drug arose from that of the town. It was cultivated by the Arabs in Spain about 961, and is mentioned in an English leech-book of the 10th century, but seems to have disappeared from western Europe till reintroduced by the crusaders. According to Hakluyt, it was brought into England from Tripoli by a pilgrim, who hid a stolen corm in the hollow of his staff. It was especi- ally cultivated near Hinton in Cambridgeshire and in Essex at Saffron Walden (7.e., Saffron Woods, not Saffron Walled-in, as the canting crest of the town would imply), its cultivators being called “crokers.” This industry, though very important in the 15th century, when English saffron commanded the highest prices on the Continent, appears to have died out about 1768.

Saffron was used as an ingredient in many of the com- plicated medicines of early times. According to Gerard ““the moderate use of it is good for the head and maketh the sences more quicke and lively. It shaketh off heavie and drowsy sleep and maketh a man mery.” It appears to be really a stimulant and antispasmodic, though its powers are slight. It is scarcely ever employed by modern pharmacists unless for the mere coloration of other tinc- turcs, or at most as a cordial adjunct to other medicines. That it was very largely used in cookery is evidenced by many writers; thus Laurenbergius (Apparatus Plantarum, 1632) makes the large assertion “In re familiare vix ullus

-est telluris habitatus angulus ubi non sit croci quotidiana

usurpatio aspersi vel incocti cibis.” The Chinese used also to employ it largely, and the Persians and Spaniards XXI. — 19

still mix it with their rice. As a perfume it was strewn in Greek halls, courts, and theatres, and in the Roman baths. The streets of Rome were sprinkled with saffron when Nero made his entry into the city.

It was, however, mainly used as a dye. It was a royal colour in early Greek times, though afterwards perhaps from its abundant use in the baths, and as a scented salve, it was especially appropriated by the hetaire. In ancient Ireland a king's mantle was dyed with saffron, and even down to the 17th century the "lein-croich," or saffron-dyed shirt, was worn by persons of rank in the Hebrides. In medizval illumination it furnished, as a glaze upon bur- nished tinfoil, a cheap and effective substitute for gold. The sacred spot on the forehead of a Hindu pundit is also partly composed of it. Its main use in England was to colour pastry and confectionery,—hence "I must have saffron to colour the Warden pies" (Winter's Tale, act iv. sc. i.),—and it is still often added to butter and cheese. One grain of saffron rubbed to powder with sugar and a little water imparts a distinctly yellow tint to ten gallons of water. This colouring power is due to the presence of polychlorite, a substance whose chemical formula appears to be C,gH,)0,,, and which may be obtained by treating saffron with ether, and afterwards exhausting with water. Under acids it yields the following reaction—

CygH 90 yg + HzO = 2(CygH gg) + CyoH 40 + CgH20¢. Polychlorite. Crocin. Essential oil. Sugar. Crocin, according to Watts, Dict. of Chem., has a composi- fion of C,H,,0,. or C..H,.0,,. "Dhismerocitigisea red colouring matter, and it is surmised that the red colour of the stigmas is due to this reaction taking place in nature.

At present saffron is chicfly cultivated in Spain, France, Sicily, on the lower spurs of the Apennines, and in Persia and Kashmir. The ground has to be thoroughly cleared of stones, manured, and trenched, and the corms are planted in ridges. The flowers are gathered at the end of Octobcr, in the early morning, just when they are beginning to open after the night. The stigmnas and a part of the style are carefully picked out, and the wet saffron is then scattered on sheets of paper to a depth of 2 or 3 inches; over thisa cloth is laid, and next a board with a heavy weight. A strong heat is applied for about two hours so as to make the saffron "sweat," and a gentler tenperature for a further period of twenty-four hours, the cake being turned

every hour so that every part is thoroughly dried. It is calculated that the stigmas of about 4300 flowers are required to give an ounce of saffron ; but the experiments of Chappellicr indicate a possibility of greatly increasing the yield by the cultivation of monstrous forms.

The drug has naturally always been liable to great adulteration in spite of penalties, the severity of which suggests the surviving tradition of its sacred character. Thus in Nuremberg a regular saffron inspection was held, and in the 15th century we read of men being burned in the market-place along with their adulterated saffron, while on another occasion three persons convicted of the same crime were buried alive. Grease and butter are still very frequently mixed with the cake and shreds of beef dipped in saffron water are also used. Good saffron is distinguished by its deep orange-red colour ; if it is light yellow or blackish, it is bad or too old. It should also have a peculiar and rather powerful odour, and

a bitter pungent taste. If oily it is probably adulterated with butter or grease.

See Fliickiger and Hanbury, Pharmacographia, and Maw, Monograph of the genus Crocus, upon which the preceding account is essentially based; also Pereira, Materia Medica, and the pharmacoperias.

SAFFRON WALDEN, a market-town and municipal borough of Essex, England, is finely situated near the Cam in a valley surrounded by hills, on a branch of the Great Eastern Railway, 44 miles north-north-east of London and 14 south of Cambridge. It has a somewhat ancient ap- pearance and possesses good streets and a spacious market- place. Of the old castle, dating probably from before the Conquest, the keep and a few other portions still remain. The church of St Mary the Virgin, a beautiful specimen of the Perpendicular style, dating from the reign of Henry VII., but frequently repaired and restored, contains the tomb of Lord Audley, chancellor to Henry VIII. There is an Edward VI. grammar-school, for which new buildings have recently been erected. Amongst the modern public

buildings are the corn exchange (1848) and the new town. hall (1879). The town possesses a museum, a literary institute, and a horticultural society. The benevolent institutions include the hospital and the Edward VI. alms-houses. In the neighbourhood is the fine mansion of Audley End, built by Thomas, first earl of Suffolk, in 1603 on the ruins of the abbey, converted in 1190 from a Benedictine priory founded by Geoffrey de Mandeville in 1136. The town is an important centre of agricultural industry and has large corn, cattle, and sheep markets, Brewing and malting are carried on. The population of the municipal borough (area, 7416 acres) in 1871 was 5718, and in 1881 it was 6060.

The original name of the town was Wealdenberg, and when it received a grant of a market in the time of Geoffrey de Mandeville it was called Cheping Walden. The substitution of the prefix Saffron is accounted for by the former culture of SArrron (q.v.) in the neighbourhood. The town has existed for more than 500 ycars as a guild, and the government is now vested in a mayor, four aldermen, and twelve councillors.

SAGAN, a manufacturing town in Prussian Silesia, situated on the Bober, a tributary of the Oder, lies 60 miles south-south-east of Frankfort-on-the-Oder and 102 miles south-east of Berlin. It contains the handsome palace of the dukes of Sagan, several interesting churches, a Roman Catholic gymnasium, and a large Gothic hospital, named after its founder, the duchess Dorothea (1793-1862), The leading industry of the town is cloth-weaving, with wool and flax spinning; it has also some trade in wool and grain. The population in 1880 was 11,373.

The mediate principality of Sagan, formed in 1397 out ofa por- tion of the duchy of Glogau, has several times changed hands by purchase as well as by inheritance. One of its most famous pos- sessors was Wallenstein, who held it for seven years before his death in 16384. Bought by Prince Lobkowitz in 1646, the principality remained in his family until 1786, when it was sold to Peter, duke of Courland, whose descendant, the duke of Talleyrand-Périgord and Valengay in France, now ownsit. The area of the principality is about 467 square miles, and its population is about 65,000.

SAGAR, or Satcor, a British district of India, situated in the extreme north-west of the Central Provinces, and comprised between 23° 4’ and 24° 27’ N. lat., and between 78° 6’ and 79° 12’ E. long., with a total area of 4005 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by the Lalitpur district of the North-Western Provinces and the native states of Bijawar, Panna, and Charkhari; on the E. by Panna and Damoh district ; on the S. by Narsinhpur dis- trict and the native state of Bhopal; and on the W. also by Bhopal. Sd4gar district is an extensive, elevated, and in parts tolerably level plain, broken in-places by low hills of the Vindhyan sandstone. It is traversed by numerous streams, chief of which are the Sunar, Beds, Dhupan, and Bina, all flowing in a northerly direction towards the valley of the Ganges. In the southern and central parts the soil is black, formed by decaying trap; to the north and east it is a reddish-brown alluvium. Iron ore of excellent quality is found and worked at Hira- pur, a small village in the extreme north-east. The dis- trict contains several densely wooded tracts, the largest of which is the Ramna teak forest preserve in the north. Roads are the only means of communication ; of these the total length is 134 miles, 50 being returned as first class. The climate is moderate ; the average temperature is 75, and the average rainfall is about 46 inches.

By the census of 1881 the population numbered 564,950 (294,795 males and 270,155 females). Hindus numbcred 498,071, Moham- medans 25,396, Buddhists and Jains 16,482, Christians 1034, and aboriginals 19,144. Thc only town except the capital (see below) with a population exceeding 10,000 is Garhakota, which contains 11,414 inhabitants. Of the total arca only 1396 square miles are cultivated, and of the portion lying waste 1220 are returned as cultivable, Wheat forms the principal crop, which is produced m large quantities all over the district; other products are food grains, rice, oil-seeds, cotton, and sugar-cane. Cattle and buffaloes are bred to a large extent both for draught and carriage, and alse

‘ry purposes, especially for the manufacture of ghee. The eect) chrar ‘strict in 1883-84 amounted to £68,376, of which the land-tax contributed £44,429.

By a treaty concluded with Baji Rao in 1818, the greater part of the present district was made over to the British. During the mutiny of 1857 the whole district was in the possession of the rebels, excepting the town aud fort, in which the Europeans were shut up for eight months, till relieved early in the following year by Sir Hugh Rose. The rebels were totally defeated and order was

again restored by March 1858. Sagar was formed into a separatc

district of the Central Provinces in 1861. SAGAR, principal town and headquarters of the above

district, situated in 23° 50’ N. lat. and 78° 49’ E. long,, is well built with wide streets and stands on the borders of a small but beautiful lake, and has military canton- ments. Sagar is the entrepdt of the salt trade with Rajputéna, and carries on a large trade with Mirzdpur district in the North-Western Provinces, importing sugar and other grocery, besides English cloth. The population of the town in 1881 was 44,416 (males 22,556, females

21,860).

SAGE, Lr. See Lz Sace.

SAGHALIN, or SakHALtn, is the name improperly given to a large elongated island in the North Pacific, lying between 45° 57’ and 54° 24’ N. lat. and 141° 30’ and 144° 50’ E. long., off the coast of Russian Manchuria. Its proper name is Karaftu, or Karafuto. It is separated from the mainland by the narrow and shallow Strait of Tartary, which often freezes in winter in its narrower part, and from Yezo (Japan) by the Strait of La Pérouse. This island (670 miles long, 20 to 150 broad, with an area of 24,560 square miles), about equal in size to Belgium and Holland together, must be considered as a continua- tion of the mountains bordering the Manchurian littoral. Its orography is still imperfectly known. The present maps represent it as formed of two parallel ridges, running north and south and reaching from 2000 to 4000 or 5000 feet (Mounts Berniget and Ktéus-pal) high, with two or more wide depressions, not exceeding 600 feet above the sea. The general configuration of the littoral and the island, however, renders it more

probable that there are three chains running south-west to north-east, forming continuations of those of the mainland. The geological structure of the island is also imperfectly known. A few crystalline rocks are found at several capes; Cretaceous limestones containing a rich and specific fauna of gigantic ammonites occur at Dui; and Tertiary conglomerates, sandstones, marls, and clays, folded by subsequent up- heavals, are widely spread. The clays, which contain layers of good coal and a rich fossil vegetation, show that during the Miocene period Saghalin was part of a continent which comprised both north Asia, Alaska, and Japan, and enjoyed a much warmer climate than now. The Pliocene deposits contain a mollusc fauna more arctic than the present, and probably indicating that the connexion be- tween the Pacific and Arctic Oceans was broader than now. Only two rivers, the Tym and the Poronai, are worthy of mention. The former, 250 miles long, and navigable by rafts and light boats for 50 miles from its mouth, flows north and north-east with numerous (about 100) tapids and shallows, in a wild valley suitable only for fishing or hunting settlements, and enters the Sea of Okhotsk at the Bay of N yi. The Poronai flows north and then south to the Gulf of Patience, a wide bay on the south-east coast. Three other small streams enter the Wide semicircular Gulf of Aniva at the southern extremity of the island.

Owing to the cooling influence of the Sea of Okhotsk, the climate is very cold. At Dui the average yearly tem- perature is only 33°-0 Fahr. (January, 3°-4; July, 61°-0), 35°°0 at Kusunai, and 37°-6 at Aniva (January, 9°°5 ; July, 60°2). A dense covering of clouds for the most

part shuts out the rays of the sun; while the cold current issuing from the Sea of Okhotsk, aided by north-east winds, in summer brings immense ice- floes to the east coast. The whole of the island is covered with dense forests (mostly coniferous). The Ayan fir (Abzes ayanensis), the Saghalin pichta, and the Daurian larch are the chief trees; and the upper parts of the mountains have the Siberian rampant cedar (Cembra pumila) and the Curilian bamboo (Arundinaria kurilense), 4 feet high and half an inch thick. Birch, both European and Kamchatkan (2. alba and B. Ermani), elder, poplar, elm,wild cherry (Prunus padus), Taxus baccata, and several willows

are mixed with the Conifers ; while farther south the maple, the ash, and the oak, as also the Japanese Panax ricinifolium and the Amur cork (Philodendron amurense), make their appear- ance. The number of phanerogamous species known reaches 590 and may reach 700, of which only 20 are peculiar to Saghalin, the remainder belonging to the Amur and partly to the Japanese flora. The fauna of Saghalin closely resembles that of the Amur region, and in fact the Siberian. Bears, foxes, and sables are still numerous, as also the reindeer in the north and the antelope; and tigers are occasionally met with in the south. The avi- fauna is the commion Siberian; and the rivers are ex- ceedingly rich in fish, especially species of salmon (Onco- rhynchus), which make their way up the rivers in vast numbers to spawn. The lower marine fauna, explored by Schrenck, is also rich, while numerous whales, not in high esteem with whalers, are met with on the sea-coast. Otarias, seals, and dolphins are a source of profit.

Saghalin has been inhabited since at least the Neolithic Stone Age. Flint implements, exactly like those of Siberia and Russia, have been found at Dui and Kusunai in great numbers, as well as polished hatchets (of trap, diorite, and argillaceous schists)—also like the European oues—primitive pottery with decorations like those of Olonetz, and stone weights for nets. Afterwards came a population to whom bronze was known ; they have left their traces in earthen walls and kitchen-middens (in the Bay of Aniva). The present inhabitants consist of some 2000 Gilyaks, 2500 Ainos, 500 Oroks, as many Japanese, and about 6000 Russians. The Gilyaks, who do not differ from those of the Amur, inhabit the northern part of the island. They support themselves by fishing and partly by hunting, but suffer from competition with the Japanese, who take possession of the best fishing-grounds. The Oroks, of Tungus origin, resemble the Orotchons of the Amur; they live by hunting. The Ainos, who are still the subject of so much discussion among ethno- logists, are the aborigines of the island ; they are closely akin to the

Curilians, and, like these, differ from all other Mongolian races by their luxuriance of hair and beard. They now inhabit only the

_ south part of the island, and have been brought into a condition of

slavery by the Japanese, by whom they have been driven out of Yezo and Nippon, in both of which they were the aborigines. The Japanese have several colonies on Saghalin and force the Ainos to fish and to collect seaweed for exportation. They send their ships to the south part of the island and have colonies there, and also on the east coast, at the mouth of the Tym. The Russians began to settle permanently on Saghalin in 1857 ; and, though next year posts were established in the southern part of the island, it still continued to belong to Japan, which definitely ceded it to Russia in 1875. A scheme having been latcly formed for colonizing the island with convicts, several thousands have becn transported thither, especially to Dui (Alexandrovsk), where they are employed in coal-mining (annual output from 3000 to 30,000 cwts.), or make some attempt at agriculture; they are either kept in the Alex- androvsk prison, or permitted to build houses and to settle with their families. These efforts towards colonization, however, en- counter great difficulties from the quality of the soil, the cultivable patches occurring here and there in the marshy valley of the Duika river, on the upper course of the Tym, and in the bays of Patience and Aniva. The only crops that thrive are various kinds of kitchen produce. The Russian settlements are at Dui on the west coast, Malo-Tymovsk and Rykovsk on the upper Tym, Korsakoff and Muravieff on the Bay of Aniva.

History.—Saghalin, which was under Chinese dominion until the present century, became known to Europeans from the travels of Martin Gerrits in the 17th century, and still better from those of La Pérouse (1787) and Krusenstern (1805), who described large parts of its coasts. Both, however, regarded it as a mere appendage of the continent, and were unaware of the existcnce of the Strait of

Tartary, which was discovered a few years later by a Japanese, Mamia Rinso, whose discovery is embodied in Siebold’s A ippon. The Russian navigator Nevelskoi, in 1849, definitively established the existence and navigability of this strait; sinee that time the Russian expeditions of Boshnyak (1851) and Rimskiy- Korsakoff (1853) continued the explorations, and in the latter year a Russian post was temporarily established at Aniva Bay. L. Schrenek in 1855-56, and MM. Schmidt,

Glehn, Brylkin, and Shebunin in 1860, explored the geology, fauna, flora, and ethnology of the island ; M. Lopatin in 1867 explored, on foot, the east coast ; MM. Dobrot- vorsky published (1869 and onwards) interesting data as to the inhabitants, and M. Polyakoff was entrusted in 1881-82 with a detailed exploration, and returned with rich ethnological and zoo- logieal collections, with regard to which only preliminary reports have as yet been published. P. A. K.)

SAGINAW, a city of the United States, capital of Saginaw county, Michigan, lies on an elevated plateau about 30 feet above the water on the left bank of the Saginaw river, which falls into Saginaw Bay on Lake Huron, about 18 miles lower down. It is a railway Junc- tion of some importance, 100 miles north-west of Detroit, is connected with East Saginaw by a street railway, and can be reached by the largest vessels that ply on the lake. The upper branches of the river are also available for boat traffic throughout a considerable district. Saw-muills, planing-mills, and salt-works are the principal industrial establishments. The population was 7460 in 1870 and 10,525 in 1880. The city charter dates from 1859, the first settlement from 1822.

SAGITTA. The name “Sagitta” was given by Martin Slabber in 1775 to a small marine worm which is now known as the type of a distinct group, the Chetognatha (Leuckart). The group comprises two genera (Sagitta and Spadella) and a considerable number of species ; they are small transparent pelagic animals, varying in length from a few lines up to two inches, and are universally dis- tributed. The body (see fig.) is elongated and furnished with a tail and lateral fins, which are prolongations of the chitinous cuticle; the head is provided with a great number of variously shaped chitinous sete. The body is divided by transverse septa into three distinct segments: the first septum is placed just behind the head (st), the second (sf) about the middle of the body, separating the ovaries and testes. The body-cavity is likewise separated into right and left halves by a continuous vertical mesentery, which suspends the gut. The alimentary canal is a simple straight tube of uniform structure passing from the mouth to the anus, which is placed ventrally and at the second ‘transverse septum ; the alimentary tube is ciliated and is unprovided with glands of any kind. The body-wall is composed of (1) an outer layer of epidermis, which secretes the chitinous

cuticle already referred to,—the thickness of the epidermis varying from five or six cells in the region of the head to a single layer of cells in the “fins”; (2) a deli- cate structureless supporting lamella ; (3) a layer of longi- tudinal muscles. These last have a peculiar arrangement and structure: they are disposed in four bands, two dorsal and two ventral, the action of which is evidently favour- able to producing the onward movements of the creature. The muscular fibres, which are transversely striated, are arranged in a series of lamelle whose direction is per- pendicular to the longitudinal axis of the body. Projec- tions inward of the supporting lamella bear on either side a single row of muscular fibres ; a similar muscular struc- ture occurs in the Wematoidea and in many Oligocheta. In the anterior region of the body the muscular layer is differentiated into special muscles for the movement of the sete. (4) The body-cavity is lined by a delicate peritoneal epithelium closely applied to the muscular layer of the body-wall and to the gut. The nervous system consists of a cerebral ganglion and a large ventral ganglion—the two united by commissures which pass round the gut; both ganglia are embedded in the epidermis. This primi-

tive condition of the nervous system is retained in other lowly organized worms (eg., Poly- gordius). The ventral ganglion is connected with an intra- epidermic nervous plexus which surrounds the whole body. Eyes are present, be- sides a number of tactile cells upon the outer surface of the body; an- teriorly is a ring-shaped structure (r) which is supposed to be olfac- tory in function. The generative organs consist of ovaries and testes, which are united in the same indi- vidual; the ovaries (e), placed an- terior to the testes, are furnished with oviducts, which appear to ter- minate in a cecal extremity. The testes (ho) are placed behind the second septum; they are each fur- nished with a vas deferens opening on to the exterior and into the body-cavity by a ciliated funnel. For embryology, see Balfour, Com- parative Embryology, vol. i. p. 303.

In spite of the detailed knowledge whieh we now possess of the structure and development of the Chetognatha, the systematie position of the group remains a matter of the greatest uneertainty. That they are an arehaie group is shown by their hermaphroditism, by the primitive eondition of the

nervous system, and by the persistence of the vertical mesentery among other eharaeters; in all these points and in others they agree with such primitive Annelida as Protodrilus and Polygordius. On the other hand, their similarity to the Nematoidea has been dwelt upon; the disposition of the museles is the same in both groups, and the Gor- diacex have the gut suspended by a dorsal and ventral mesentery in the same fashion as has been described above in Sagitta ;

Spadella cephaloptera (Busch). the Chetognatha differ, however, froin the St, septa dividing body-cavity

Nematoidea in the important fact of their transversely ; 9°, cerebral ganglia ; ni, commissure

So DD, ‘On the whole, it appears uniting this with ventral that the Chetognatha are best regarded as_ ganglion (uot shown in a special phylum equivalent to such groups fig.); ®, nerve uniting as Annelida, Platyhelminthes, Nematoidea, cerebral ganglia with small

5 3 ° li head; nr, ol- pa no special relation to any one fae ory me alien of them.

ary canal; 1, olfactory SAGO is a food-starch prepared one peels he from a deposit in the trunk of several pase i am palms, the principal source being vas deferens ; /2, /3, lateral the sago palm, Metrorylon Rumphi and ae (Mart.), and AY. lve (Mart.). These cated as black dots belli palms are natives of the East Indian “° “™D* 8N8™™ Archipelago, the sago forests being especially extensive in the island of Ceram. The trees flourish only in low marshy situations, seldom attaining a height of thirty feet, with a thick-set trunk. They attain maturity as starch-yielding plants at the age of about fifteen years, when the stem 1s gorged with an enormous mass of spongy medullary matter, around which is an outer rind consisting of a hard dense woody wall about two inches thick. When the fruit 1s allowed to form and ripen, the whole of this starchy core disappears, leaving the stem a mere hollow shell ; and the tree immediately after ripening its fruit dies. When ripe the palms are cut down, the stems divided into sections and split up, and the starchy pith extracted and grated to a powder. The powder is then kneaded with water over a strainer, through which the starch passes, leaving

the woody fibre behind. The starch settles in the bottom of a trough, in which it is floated, and after one or two

washings is fit for use by the natives for their cakes and

soups. That intended for exportation is mixed into a paste with water and rubbed through sieves into small grains, from the size of a coriander seed and larger, whence + ig known according to size as pearl sago, bullet sago, &e, A large proportion of the sago imported into Europe comes from Borneo, and the increasing demand has led toa large extension of sago-palm planting along the marshy river banks of Sarawak.

Various palms, in addition to the two above named, yield sago, but of an inferior quality. Among them may be mentioned the Gomuti palm (Arenga saccharifera), the Kittul palm (Caryota wrens), the cabbage palm (Corypha winbraculifera), besides Corypha Gebanga, Raphia flabelliformis, Phenix farinifera, and Metroxylon filare—all East Indian palms—and MMawritia flexuosa and Guilielma speciosa, two South-American species. The imports of sago into the United Kingdom for 1884 amounted to 346,188 cwt., valued at £195,680, the whole of which, excepting less than 300 tons, is entered as coming from the Straits Settlements.

SAGUNTUM, an ancient city of Hispania Tarraco- nensis, was situated near the mouth of the river Pallantias (Palancia). It was the centre of a fertile district and was a rich trading place in early times, but owes its celebrity to the desperate resistance it made to Hannibal (see vol. xi, p. 441). The Romans restored the city and made it a colony; later writers speak of its figs, which were esteemed at Rome, and of its earthenware, which enjoyed a certain reputation. The most important remains are those of the theatre.

The modern Sagunto or Murviedro (muri veteres), 18 miles by rail from Valencia on the line to Tarragona, is now about 3 miles from the sea; the population within the municipal boundaries was 6287 in 1877.

SAHARA is the great desert region which stretches across the continent of Africa eastwards from the Atlantic

‘ for a considerable distance on both sides of the Tropic of

Cancer, and is generally distinguished by aridity of soil, absence of running water, dryness of atmosphere, and comparative scarcity of vegetable and animal life. The physical limits of this region are in some directions marked with great precision, as in part of Morocco and Algeria, where the southern edge of the Atlas range looks out on what has almost the appearance of a boundless sea, and forms, as it were, a bold coast-line, whose sheltered bays and commanding promontories are occupied by a series of towns and villages—Tizgi, Figig, Laghouat, &c. In other directions the boundaries are vague, conventional, and dis- puted. This is especially the case towards the south, where the desert sometimes comes to a close as suddenly as if it had been cut off with a knife, but at other times merges gradually and irregularly into the well-watered and fertile lands of the Sudan (Soudan). While towards the east the valley of the Nile at first sight seems to afford a natural frontier, the characteristics of what is usually called the Nubian or Arabian desert are so identical in most respects with those of the Sahara proper that some authorities extend this designation over the whole country to the shores of the Red Sea. The desert, indeed, does not end with Africa, but is prolonged eastwards through Arabia towards the desert of Sind. As the Nubian region has been described under the heading Nusra (vol. xvii. p. 610), attention will in the present article be confined to the desert country west of the Nile valley. Even as thus defined the Sahara is estimated to have an area of 3,965,565 square miles, or nearly as much as all Europe minus the Scandinavian peninsula and Iceland ; but, while Europe supports a population of 327,000,000, the Sahara probably does not contain more than 2,500,000,—a figure, however, which is sufficiently startling to those who think of it as an uninhabitable expanse of sand. The sea-like aspect of certain portions of the Sahara has given rise to much popular

misconception, and has even affected the ideas and phraseology of scientific writers. Instead of

being a boundless plain broken only by wave-like mounds of sand hardly more stable and little less dangerous than the waves of ocean, the Sahara is a region of the most varied surface and irregular relief, ranging in altitude from 100 feet below to some 5000 or 6000 or even it may be 8000 feet above the sea-level, and, besides sand-dunes and oases, containing rocky plateaus, vast tracts of loose stones and pebbles, ranges of hills of the most dissimilar types, and valleys through which abundant watercourses must once have flowed.

The culminating points of the Sahara are probably the summits of the Ahaggar (Hoggar), a great mountain plateau, not inferior to the Alps in the area which it covers, crossing the Tropic of Cancer about 5° and 6° E. long., almost midway between the Atlantic and the valley of the Nile. In its central mass rise with red steep cliffs two peaks, Watellen and Hikena, which Duveyrier believes to be volcanic like those of Auvergne. The height of this country has not been ascertained by direct European observation, but may be gathered from the fact that according to the Tuareg the snow lies for three months of the year, from December to March. To the north- west, and separated from the Atakor-’n-Ahaggar by a wide plain, rises the Muydir plateau, lying nearly east and west for a distance of about 200 miles. Its north- eastern extremity is extended towards Timassinin by the Jrawen Mountains, which in their turn are separated by a narrow valley from the Tasili plateau (strictly Tasili of the Asjer or Asgar). This great plateau stretches soutli- east for 300 miles parallel with the Atakor-’n-Ahaggar (from which it is separated by the Amadghor and Adamar plains), and then the line of elevation is continued by low ridges to the Tummo or War Mountains, and so onwards to the highland country of Tibesti or Tu, whose highest point, Tusidde, is 7880 feet above the sea-level, while its south-eastern eminences gradually die away in the direction of Wadai and Darfor (Darfur). About midway between Tibesti and the Niger rises the isolated mountain mass of Air or Asben, in which Dr Erwin von Bary! discovered the distinct volcanic crater of Teginjir with a vast lava-bed down its eastern

side. By some this country is assigned to the Sudan, as it lies within the limit of the tropical rains ; but the districts farther south have all the character- istics of the desert. The low but extensive plateau of Adghagh lies between Air and the Niger. Away to the north-east, in the country of Frzzan (q.v.), are the dark mountains of Jebel es-Séda, which are continued south-east towards Kufra by the similar range of the Haruj; and in the extreme south-west at no great distance from the Atlantic is the hilly country of Adrar (Aderer).

Nearly all the rest of the Sahara consists in the main of undulating surfaces of rock (distinguished as hammada), vast tracts of water-worn pebbles (serir), and regions of sandy dunes (variously called maghter, erg or areg, wid and in the east vhart), which, according to M. Pomel, occupy about one-ninth or one-tenth of the total area. The following is the general distribution of the dunes. From the Atlantic coast to the south of Cape Blanco a broad belt extends north-east for a distance of about 1300 miles, with a breadth varying from 50 to 300 miles. This is usually called the Igidi or Gidi, from the Berber word for dunes. Eastward it is continued to the south of Algeria and Tunis by the Western Erg and the Eastern Erg, separated by a narrow belt at Golea. To the south of the Eastern Erg (which extends as far north as the neighbourhood of the Lesser Syrtis) the continuity of the sandy tract is completely broken by the Hammada al-Homra (or Red Rock Plateau), but to the south of this region lie the dunes of Edeyen, which, with slight inter-

1 Zeitschrift fir Erdkunde, 1880.

ruptions, extend to Murzuk (Morztk). To the south of the hammada of Murzuk the dunes of Murzuk stretch away south-east. Looked at in its entirety, this series of tracts may be called the northern zone; it forms a kind of bow, with its extremities respectively at the Atlantic and the Libyan Desert and its apex in the south of Tunis. In the south are the Juf,! covering a vast area to the south-east of the middle portion of the Igidi, another area between the Adghagh plateau and the Tasili wan Ahaggar, and a third between Air and Tibesti. Away to the east in the Libyan Desert is a vast region of dunes of unascer- tained limits. It must be borne in mind that the

sands do not entirely cover the areas assigned to them in the ordinary maps, which are of too small a scale to show the interchange of different kinds of surface. In the Eastern Erg especially the dunes lie in long lines in a north-north- west and south-south-east direction, presenting a gradual slope to windward and an abrupt descent to leeward. There they are generally about 60 or 70 feet high, but in other parts of the Sahara they are said to attain a height of upwards of 300 feet. The true dune sand is remarkable for the uniformity of its composition and the geometrical regularity of its grains, whi h measure less than ‘03937 inch.2 While individually these appear crystalline or reddish yellow (from the presence of iron), they have in the mass a rich golden hue. According to M. Tissandier’s examination, animal organisms, such as the microscopic shells of Rhizopoda, so abundant in sea-sand, are strik- ingly absent. Under the influence of the wind the surface of the dunes is subject to continual change, but in the mass they have attained such a state of comparative equilibrium that their topographic distribution may be considered as permanent, and some of them, such as Gern (Peak) al-Shuf and Gern Abd-al-Kader, to the . § of Golea, have names of their own. The popular Stories about caravans and armies being engulfed in the moving sands are quite apocryphal, but there is abundant evidence against the theory of M. Vatonne as to the dunes having been formed in site. To understand their origin it is necessary to glance at the general geology of the Sahara, which, however, in this aspect, is only known in detail to the south of Algeria and along the routes of the Rohlfs ex- pedition (1873-74, Dr Zittel) and that of Dr Lenz (1880).

Granite, whieh, along with gneiss and mica schists, seems to be the prevailing rock in the highlands of Air (Von Bary), comes to the surface more or less sporadieally in the neighbourhood of Al- Eglab and in the Adrar distriets in the south-west. Gneiss and mica schists are probably the main materials of the Ahaggar plateau. Volcanic rocks (basalt, &c.) form the mountain masses of Jebel es-Sdda and the Haruj; in Air they break through the granite and other roeks in a very erratic fashion. Slates and quartz- ite (possibly Silurian, according to Lenz), which play so great a part in Senegambia, appear to the north of the Senegal, along the edge of the desert, and crop out again in Adrar, on the castern borders of the Juf, and to the east of Wady Sus. An immense tract from Adrar north-east to the borders of Algeria seems to be occupied by Devonian and Carboniferous

formations, the character- istic fossils of whieh frequently show on the surface; farther east these rocks are covered by Cretaceous and Quaternary deposits, though they again appear in the Muydir and Tasili plateaus (M. Roche's report). The development of the Cretaceous system is altogether one of the most striking features of Saharan gcology, its extreme limits being the coasts of the Atlantic and the Red Sea, and the area occupicd by it in the Algerian Sahara alone being equal to the whole of France. In the Algerian Sahara the Cretaceous rocks are covered by no later sediments, with the exception of certain Quaternary deposits, but in the Libyan Descrt Tertiary deposits: are abundant, though, aceording to Zittel, there is no sharp distinction between Cretaceous and Tertiary, the one seem-

1 This name, meaning the ''depression," has long been in use, but appears to be a misnomer; the lowest point in Lenz's route, which, ye only erossed the east end of the Juf, was 400 feet above

he sea,

4 See Rolland, in Bull. de la Soe. géol. de France, 1881, and Revue Scientifique, 1881.

3 Comptes Rendus, Acad. des Sciences.

ing (certain paleological charactcristics apart) to pass gradually into the other. Eocene limestones, rich in nummulites and oper. culines, stretch south and east from the oasis of Siwa and are well seen in the cliffs enclosing the depressed oasal areas which sink down to the Cretaceous rocks. To the south of Farafreh extends a vast tract of Nubian sandstone.

In all parts of the Sahara there is evidence of denudation carried out on ascale of unusual magnitude. The present surface of the desert has been exposed to the protracted wear and tear of the elements. But to determine the exact method by which the ele- ments have done their work has hitherto proved beyond the power of science. The superficial observer is at once tempted to accept the theory of submarine denudation: the Sahara is still the '' dried bed of a sea" in even such text-books as Professor Huxley's Physio-

graphy and Stanford's Compendium of Geography. The sand-dunes, the salt efflorescence and deposits, and the local occurrence of certain modern marine molluscs all go to help the hypothesis of a diluvial sea. But a more extensive acquaintance with Saharan character- istics shows that such a sea for the Sahara as a whole is impossible. The denudation must probably be explained as duc to the combined action of fresh water and atmospheric agencies. Even at present the Sahara is not so destitute as has been supposed of fresh water. Though rain is one of the rarest phenomena of the lowlands, the mountains on its northern borders and the central highlands are both regions of precipitation, and discharge their surplus waters into the hollows. A glance at a good physical map of the Sahara shows in fact the skeleton of a regular river-system. From the north side of the Ataker-'n-Ahaggar, for instance, begins Wady Igharghar, which, running northwards between the Tasili plateau and the Irawen Mountains, appears to lose itself in the sands of the Eastern Erg, but can be distinctly traced northwards for hundreds of miles. Its bed contains rolled fragments of lava and freshwater shells (Cyrena and Planorbis). In a linc almost parallel to Wady Igharghar Wady Mya descends from the plateau of Tademayt, and shows the importance of its ancient current by deep erosion of the Cretaceous rocks, in which a large number of left- hand tributaries have also left their mark. Away in the far cast of the Libyan Desert Dr Zittel discovered page caves in the: limestone. The question arises, What has be¢ome of the abundant water-supply which filled the wadies and hollowed out the caves? Recent discoveries in the Algerian Sahara suggest that part of the water circulation has become subterranean. The streams from the Atlas which seem to be absorbed in the sands of the desert evidently find a series of underground rescrvoirs or basins capable of being tapped by artesian wells over very extensive areas. As Olympio- dorus (quoted by Photius) mentions that the inhabitants of the Sahara used to make excavations from 100 to 120 feet deep, out of which jets of pure water rose in columns, it is clear that this state of matters is (historically) of ancient date. Since 1856 the French engineers have carried on a series of borings which have resulted in the fertilizing of extensive tracts; between 1856 and 1879 155 wells were bored in the province of Constantine alone. In Wady Rir', which runs for 80 miles towards the south-west of the Shott Melrir (comp. infra), the water-bearing stratum is among permeable sands, which are covered to a depth of 200 feet by impermeable marls, by which the water is kept under pressure. The

wells, varying much in their discharge and ‘‘head,” give a total of 3°5 cubic metres per second at an average temperature of 25°‘1 Fahr.

Everything considered, it may therefore be assumed that the desert formerly possessed a surface circulation of water capable of aiding in the processes of disintegration, removal, and deposition. Since the water disappeared other agencies have been at work. The surface of the rocks, heated by the sun and suddenly chilled by rapid radiation over night, gets fractured and crumbled ; elsewhere the cliffs have been scored and the sand thus formed is at once turned by the wind into an active instrument of abrasion. In many places it has planed the flat rocks of the hammada as smooth as ice. Elsewhere it has scored the vertical faces of the clifis with curious imitations of glacial striation, and helped to undercut the pillar- or table-like eminences which, under the name of gurs or “witnesses,” are among the most familiar products of Saharan erosion. The softer quartz rocks of the Quaternary and Cretaceous pinata

4 See Rolland, “Le régime des eaux artésiennes de l’Oued Rir et du Bas Sahara,” in Comp. Rend., Acad. des Se., Sept. 1885.

‘es(and according to Zittel especially the Nubian sandstone) have ee to yield ‘the sand which, drifted and sifted by the winds, has taken on the form of dunes. The slightest breeze is enough to make the surface ‘‘smoke” with dust ; and at times the weird singing of the sands, waxing louder and louder, tells the scientific traveller that the niotion is not confined to the superficial particles.! How important a part the winds may play in the redistribution of the lighter particles is probably shown by the clouds of red dust which were noticed by Edrisi as frequently obscuring the Atlantic sky between Cape Verd and the American coast, and which have recently been referred by Dr Gustav Hellemann to the African Sahara, whence Professor Tacchini also derives the similar clouds of dust observed in many parts of Italy (comp. Tchihatchef).

But even such a river-system as that supposed combined with all conceivable atmospheric agencies would only account for the minor

henomena of erosion. Dr Zittel in dealing with the Libyan Desert finds it necessary to assume violent freshwater floods proceeding from the south, though, as he confesses, this only shifts the diffi- culty a stage further back, as it involves an enormous change of

climate. To render such a change of climate a probable hypothesis “various recent speculations combine ; and Dr Theobald Fischer and Dr Oscar Fraas agree in believing that the desiccation has markedly increased in historic times. Evidence derived from ancient monu- ments combined with the statements of Herodotus and Pliny are held to prove that the elephant, the rhinoceros, and the crocodile existed in North African regions where the environment is now utterly alien, and on the other hand that the camel is a late intro- duction. Humboldt sought to attribute the desiccation of the desert region of Asia and Africa to the effects of the north-east trade-wind ; but Dr Lenz, who points out that in North Africa the wind seldom blows from the north-east but generally from the north or north- west? (the latter of course from the Atlantic, in the western parts, but farther east from the European regions of precipitation), argues that one of the principal causes has been the destruction of the forests on the highlands. The dry winds from the Sahara are known in Europe as the Scirocco and the Fohn or Fon.

Botanieally the Sahara is the mceting-ground of representatives of the ‘‘ Mediterranean” and the “Tropical” floras which have man- aged to accommodate themselves to the peculiar climatic conditions. The linc of demarcation between the two floral areas, almost coin- ciding in the west with the Tropic of Cancer and in the east dipping south towards the meridian of Lake Tchad, assigns by far the greater portion of the area to ‘‘ Mediterranean” influences. Uniformity, in spite of differences of altitude and soil, is a general characteristic of the vegetation, which outside of the oases consists mainly of plants with a tufty dry stiff habit of growth. The oases are the special home of the date-palm, of which there are about 4,000,000 in the Algerian oases alone. In company with this tree, without whieh life in the Sahara would be practically impossible, are grown apples, peaches, oranges, citrons, figs, grapes, pomegranates, &c. During the months from December to March wheat, barley, and other northern grain crops are successfully cultivated and in the hotter season rice, dukhn, durra, and other tropical products. Altogether the oasal flora has considerable

variety ; thirty-nine specics are known from the Kufra group, forty-eight from the Aujila group.

Zoologically the Sahara is also a debatable territory, partly Mediterranean, partly Tropical. Apart from the domestic animals (camels, asses, &., and very noticeably a black breed of cattle in Adrar), the list of fifteen mammals comprises the jerboa, the fennek or fox, the jackal, the sand rat (Psammomys obesus), the hare, the wild ass, and threc species of antelope. In Borku, Air, &c., baboons, hyenas, and mountain sheep are not uncommon. Without count- ing migratory visitants, about eighty species of birds have been registered—the ostrich, the Certhilawda deserti or desert-lark (which often surprises the traveller with its song), Emberiza Sahare, three species of Dromolea, &c. Tortoises, lizards, chame- leons, geckos, skinks, &c., of fifteen different species were collected by the single Rohlfs expedition of 1878-74; the serpents comprise the horned viper, Psammophis sibilans, Colopeltis lacertina, the python, and several other species. The edible frog also occurs. Cyprinodon dispar, a fish not unlike Cyprinodon ealaritanus, is found in all the brackish waters of north Sahara and swarms in the lake of the Siwa oasis. The brine-shrimp has been described in the article Frzzan,

The present population of the Sahara consists almost exclusively of Arabs, Berbers, and Negro tribes. The Berbers (Tuareg or Tuarik, &c.) occupy the west central region almost exclusively, appear sporadically in the western, and stretch northwards into Moroeco and Algeria ; the Negro tribes form a compact block in the east central region northwards and north-eastwards from Lake

’ See Lenz’s chapter on this phenomenon. Comp. Derrécagaix, “Le sud de la province d’Oran,” in Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr., Paris, 1873.

: Com Drude, Florenreiche der Erde, 1884; and Cosson, Com- pendium Flore Atluntice, 1881, &c.

Tchad ; and the Arabs are in possession of all the rest of the country. Politically the Sahara belongs partly to Morocco (Tafilet, &c.), partly to

Algeria and Tunis (and thus to France), and partly to the Turkish empire (Tripolis, Egypt, &c.). France especially has been steadily pushing south with the purpose of forming a junction ultimately with her colony on the Senegal. The spirit of independ- ence among the Mohammedan populations las been crystallized and stimulated by the remarkable confraternity of Sidi Mohammed ben ‘Ali es-Senusi, founded about 1837, and now possessing about 120 convents or zawiga (mostly in the Saharan region), with its headquarters at Jerabub.+ With this organization the French have already come into conflict in their southward progress. To estab- lish their influence they propose the construction of a trans-Saharan railway and the opening up of the region to the south of Algeria and Tunis by the construction of an inland sea, According to M. Roudaire, the author and protagonist of this scheme, which is familiarly but deceptively styled the ‘‘ flooding of the Sahara,” 5

‘it is possible by proper engineering works to create an inland sea

to the south of Algeria and Tunis with an average depth of 78 feet and an area of 3100 square miles, or about fourteen times the size of the Lake of Geneva. A Government commission decided that the excavation of the necessary canal would not be difficult, and that, in spite of silting-up processes, the work would at least last 1000 to 1500 years. M. de Lesseps, M. Roudaire’s principal sup- porter, visited the distriet in 1883 and reported that the canal would cost five years’ labour and 150,000,000 francs. The scheme, which has met with persistent hostility on the part of M. Cosson and others, is based on the following facts. The Gulf of Gabes is separated by a ridge 13 miles across and 150 feet high from Shott al-Fejej, a depression which extends south-west into the Shott Jerid, which in its turn is separated from the Shott Rharsa only by a still narrower ridge. Shott Rharsa is succeeded westwards by a series of smaller depressions and beyond them lies the Shott Melrir, whose north-west end is not far from the town of Biskra. What we know about such inland seas as the Caspian and the Aral seems to cast serious doubt on the probability of any increase of the rainfall in the Sahara by the formation of Roudaire’s sea.

The commerce of the Sahara is not inconsiderable. Among the more important trade routes are—(1) from Morocco to Cairo by Insalah and

Ghadames, which' is followed by the pilgrims of Western Africa bound for Mecca; (2) from Kuka to Murzuk and Tripolis; (3) from the Sudan to Tripolis by Air and Ghat; (4) from Timbuktu to Insalah, Ghadames, and Tripolis ; (5) from Timbuktu to Insalah and thence to Algeria and Tunis; (6) from Timbuktu to Morocco. The two great products are dates and salt. Full details of the date trade will be found in Fischer's Die Dattelpaline, 1881. The principal sources of salt are the rock-salt deposits of the Juf (especially Taudeni), the lakes of Kufra, and the rock-salt and brine of Kawar (Bilma).

See, besides the works already quoted, Vatonne, Mission de Ghadames, 1863 ; Duveyrier, Les Touaregs du Nord, 1864; Ville, Explor. géologique du Mzab, &c., 1867 ; Pomel, Le Sahara, 1872; Rohlfs, Quer durch Afrika (1874), Drei Monate im libyschen Wiiste (1875), and Kufra (i881); Largeau, Le pays de Rirha-Ouargla, 1879 ; Nachtigal, Sdhard und Stiddn, 2 vols., 1879; Rolland, "Le Crétacé du Sahara Septentrional" (with geological map of the Central Sahara), in Bull. de la Soc. Géol. de France, 1881; Roudaire, Rapport sur la derniére exped. des Chotts, 1881 (and other reports by the same author); Tchihatchef, ''The Deserts of Africa and Asia," in British Association Reports (Southampton, 1882); Derré- cagaix, '' Explor. du Sahara: Les deux missions du Licut.~~Colonel Flatters," in Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr., 1882; Lenz, Timbuktu: Reise durch Marokko, &c., 1884; and Reclus, Nouv. Géographie Univ., xi., 1886, which contains an admir~~ able résumé. (H. A. W.)

SAHARANPUR, or SEHARUNPOOR, a British district of India, in the Meerut division of the lheutenant-governor- ship of the North-Western Provinces. It lies between 29° 35' and 30° 21' N. lat., and between 77° 9' and 78° 15' E. long., and is bounded on the N. by the Siwélik Hills, separating it from the district of Dehra Dun, on the 8. by the district of Muzaffarnagar, on the E. by the Ganges, and on the W. by the Jumna. Saharanpur forms the most northerly portion of the Doab, or alluvial tableland, which stretches between the valleys of the Ganges and the Jumna. The Siwdlik Hills rise precipitously on its northern fron- tier ; at their base stretches a wild submontane tract, with much forest and jungle. Cultivation generally in this part is backward, the surface of the country being broken by wild and magnificent ravines. South of this tract, flanked on the east and west by broad alluvial plains, lies the Dodb, with fertile soil

and good natural water-supply. This portion of the country is divided into parallel tracts

4 See list in Duveyrier’s paper, Bull. de lu Soe. de Géogr., 1884.

5 Tn this connexion it is enough to mention Mr Mackenzie’s scheme for flooding the Western Sahara; see Mlooding Sahara, 1877, and Ravenstein, “The Western Sahara,” in Geog. Mag., 1876.

by numerous streams from the Siwdliks, while the Eastern Jumna and the Ganges Canals, which traverse the district from north to south and issue from its north-west and north-east corners, cover the district with a network of irrigation channels. The only large rivers are the Ganges, which enters Saharanpur 180 miles from its source, by a well-marked gorge formed in the rock at Hardwar ; and the Jumna, which debouches into the plain about 123 miles from its source, at a place called Khara. The district has abundant means of communication : the Sind, Punjab, and Delhi Railway traverses 1t for a dis- tance of 42 miles, with stations at Deoband, Saharanpur, and Sars4wa; and it has numerous roads, both metalled and unmetalled.. The climate of Saharanpur is that of the North-Western Provinces in general; at one season 1t is tropical, at another partially European. Its average annual rainfall is about 37 inches. Wild animals are plentiful, including the tiger, leopard, wild cat, lynx, hyena, and wolf.

By the census of 1881 the population of Saharanpur numbered 979,544 (530,427 males and 449,117 females). By religion there were 653,272 Hindus, 317,535 Mohammedans, and 1793 Christians, Five towns had populations exceeding 10,000 each, namely, Sandr- ANPUR (q.v.), Hardwar Union (28,106), Deoband (22,116), Rurki (12,818), and Gangoh (12,089). Rurki (Roorkee) is a town of con- siderable importance, situated in 29° 52’ 25” N. lat. and 77° 55’ 40” E. long. It is the headquarters of the Ganges Canal workshops and iron-foundry, with the Thomason Civil Engineering College, for the instruction of natives and others in practical engincering ; it contains also an excellent meteorological observatory. Hard- war municipality, which lics 39 miles north-cast of Saharanpur town, on the right bank of the Ganges, is the most frequented of all Hindu places of

pilgrimage, and is largely used for the bathing festivals. Every twelfth year, when Jupiter is in Aquarius, a great fair or kumbh-mela is held, which attraets an immense number of people ; as many as 3,000,000 attended in 1882.

Of a total area of 2221 square miles 1256 are cultivated and 331 are cultivable waste. Cereals form the principal products. The chief spring crops are wheat, barley, pulses, and oil-seeds, and the staples of the rain crops are rice, joar, bajra, and vegetables; the cultivation of cotton and indigo is also carried on, the latter in much greater quantities since the introduction of canal irrigation has rendered its out-turn less precarious than formerly. The commer- cial importance of the district depends mostly on its raw materials. It manufactures broad-cloth, jewellery, and sweetmeats; among the articles produced at the Rurki workshops are steam-engines, pumps, printing presses, lathes, and mathematicalinstruments. The gross revenue of Saharanpur in 1883-84 amounted to £172,960, of which the land-tax contributed £118,067.

During the later years of the Mogul empire Saharanpur was the scene of much strife and suffering on account of the perpetual raids of the Sikhs, but in 1785 the district under Ghulam Kadir enjoyed comparative tranquillity. On his death the country fell into the hands of the Mahrattas, but it was for a time occupied by the adventurer George Thomas, until his death in 1802. It was afterwards overrun by Sikhs and Mahrattas, remaining practically in the hands of the former until their final defeat in November 1804, when it passed under British rule. Several disturbances subsequently took place among the native chiefs; but from 1824 to 1857 nothing occurred to disturb the peace of the district. The mutiny in this part was soon quelled.

SAHARANPUR, principal town and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated in 29° 58’ 15” N. lat. and 77° 35’ 15” EH. long., on a small stream

(the Damaula Nadi) in an open level country. Its height’

above the sea is over 900 feet. The town possesses a fine botanic garden, where early experiments were made in tea and cinchona culture. Amongst its buildings are an old Rohilla fort, used as a court-house, and a handsome

Mo- hammedan mosque. A considerable trade is carried on in grain, sugar, molasses, and country cloth. The population in 1881 was 59,194 (31,506 males and 27,688 females).

SAIDA. See Sipon.

SAIGA. See ANTELOPE, vol. ii. p. 102.

_ SAIGON, the capital of French Cochin China, occupies an area of 1000 acres, on the right bank of the Saigon river or Don-nai (one of the streams that inosculate with the deltaic branches of the Me-kong), about 60 miles from

the China Sea. In 1884 it was connected by rail with Mytho, 37 miles south-west on one of the branches of the Me-kong, with which it had obtained direct water-communi. cation in 1877 by the opening of the Canal de Cho-gon The present city has : been practically created since 1861, and its fine streets, boulevards, squares, and public buildings make it one of the most attractive towns in the East, as it was well planned and the plan not un- | worthily carried out. The town possesses a

governor’s palace or cit- EAS : adel (cost 12,000,000 aN \

francs) with a grand Fig. 1.—Map of Saigon District,

facade, a cathedral (1877; cost 2,500,000 francs), a palace of justice (1882), a chamber of commerce, a large military hospital, nunicipal gardens, and botanical gardens with collections of wild beasts. Among the educational insti- tutions are the Collége Chasseloup-Laubat and the Col- lége d’Adran, the latter in memory of Bishop Piqueaux dé Behaigne, whose tomb is in the vicinity of the town. There is a large arsenal with upwards of 100 European employés and a special establishment for the artillery with machine-shops and foundries.

Fig. 2. £2,000,000, were exported. In 1884, leaving out the Messageries Maritimes, 503 vessels (568,077 tons), of which

239 (253,871 tons) were British, cleared from Saigon. Fig. 2 shows the relative positions of Saigon and Singapore.

Saigon was the native capital of Lower Cochin China and the residence of the governor of the southern provinces. In 1836 it was fortified for the emperor Gia Long by Colonel Ollivier. The French under Admiral Rigault de Genouilly captured it in 1858, and it was part of the territory eeded in 1861. The importance of the old town may be judged by the vast mounds of brick and stone which still crowd the ancient necropolis on one of the two roads between Saigon and Cholon. 5

oa If L

SAIL, SAILCLOTH, SAILMAKING. A sail is a sheet of canvas (or other material of the requisite flexi- bility and strength) by the action of the wind on which, when spread out or extended, a vessel is moved through the water. Sails are supported and extended by means of masts, yards, gaffs, booms, bowsprit—all technically termed “spars ”—and stays or slanting ropes. In the first experiments for impelling vessels by sails the least com- plicated form, that of a single square sail erected on a single mast, was no doubt adopted. To the quadrangular the triangular sail would soon be added ; and single sails of both these forms are known to have been used at very early periods. Subsequently the trapeziform and trape- zoidal sails also came into use. As vessels increased in size, thereby requiring a greater surface of canvas to impel them, it became necessary to use not only more sails but also an increased number of masts; and the number and disposition of the several kinds of sails could be almost indefinitely varied according to the ideas of navigators, the services required of the vessels, the places in which they were employed, and the size of the crews. Thus a great variety of rig naturally arose. Leaving out of account the many nondescript styles adopted in the case of boats and small craft, all modern vessels may, for general purposes, be considered as belonging to one or other of the following categories—cutter, schooner, three-masted schooner, brig- antine, brig, barquetine, barque, or full square-rigged ship ; but the cardinal distinction is that by which they are classified as square-rigged or fore-and- aft-rigged (compare SEAMANSHIP and Sup). These expressions can be easily explained by reference to any three-masted ship. The mast nearest the

bow or head is known as the fore-mast, the next abaft or nearest the middle of the ship as the main-mast, and the third or that nearest the stern as the mizzen-mast. Hach mast consists of several sections, that attached to the hull being called the lower or standing- mast, the next above that the top-mast, the next the top- gallant-mast, above which may rise a pole or royal-mast. On each of these masts, and at right angles with it, is a yard denominated “square,” which is hung (slung) by the middle and balanced. These yards are named according to their situation, those placed on the fore and main standing-masts being called respectively the fore and main lower-yards, that on the mizzen the cross-jack-yard ; the yards on the top-masts are called the top-sail-yards, those on the top-gallant-masts the top-gallant-yards, and those on the royal-masts the royal-yards. To each of these yards a sail is bent or attached, taking its name from the yard; thus the principal sail upon the fore-lower-yard is called the fore-course or fore-sail; the next above, upon the fore-top-sail-yard, is the fore-top-sail; above which, upon the fore-top-gallant-yard, is the fore-top-gallant-sail ; and above all, upon the fore-royal-yard, is the fore-royal. Tn like manner on the main-mast we have the main-course or main-sail, main-top-sail, main-top-gallant-sail, and the main-royal, Similar appellations are given to those on the mizzen-mast ; in large merchant-ships, by means of a sky-sail-pole, a sail termed “‘sky-seraper” is sometimes set above the royals, but not so frequently as formerly. Such square sails can be placed at right angles to the direction of the keel of the ship, a position given to them when going before the wind ; the same sails can also, by means of braces, be placed obliquely to the keel with a side wind, commonly termed by seamen “on a wind” or “by the wind.” In addition to these there are sails between the masts, set either on gaffs (unbalanced) or on stays, also others beyond the extremities of the ship, extended prin- clpally by means of the bowsprit, which, in addition to Supporting the fore-mast by a stay, also supports the jib and flying-jib-booms for extending the sails still farther

forwards ; the means for extending thie after-sail are the driver or spanker-boom and the gaff. Sails extended or set on gaffs and on stays are called “fore-and-aft,” and are generally or approximately in a vertical plane passing through the keel; but a certain degree of obliquity can be given

them by easing off the sheet or aft lower corner of the sail. A ship fitted as above described would be termed “square-rigged,” the square sails predominating both in importance and in number. A square-rigged line- of-battle ship would be supplied with the following de- scriptions of sails 1 :—

Square. Pore-and-Aft.

Fore-course or fore-sail. Flying-jib.

», top-sail. Jib.

», top-gallant-sail. Second jib.

», Toyal. Fore-gaff-sail. Main-course or main-sail. », try-sail (storm-sail).

», top-sail. Main-gaff-sail.

», top-gallant-sail. » try-sail (storm-sail).

>, royal. Mizzen-try-sail (storm-sail), Mizzen-top-sail. Spanker.

», top-gallant-sail. Stay-sail-fore (storm-sail).

3, royal. Studding-sail-fore.

23 he

3? 33 top.

top. 35 – top-gallant. »» sail-main-top-gallant.

In the fore-and-aft-rig the principal sails are of course fore-and-aft ; a cutter (vessel with one mast) when fully equipped carries the following :—

Fore-and-Aft. Jib-top-sail, Jib. Fore-sail. Boom-main-sail. Gaff-top-sail.

The several sides of a sail have separate names applied to them, the upper part or side being known as the “ head,” the lower part as the “foot”; the sides in general are called “leeches,” but the weather or side edge where the

wind enters the sail, of any but a square-sail, is called the “luff,” and the other edge the “‘after-leech.” The two top corners are “earings,” but the top corner of a jib, &c. (triangular, one corner only), is the “head”; the two bottom corners are in general “clews”; and the weather clew of a fore and-aft-sail or of a course while set is the “ tack.”

The relative importance of particular sails in the working of a ship varies according to conditions of weather, and is a matter for the judgment of the officer incommand. The following table, however, shows approximately what sails are commonly set “by the wind,” presuming that the effect on the ship in relation to her stability is safe :—

Square. Square-sail (set flying).

Winds as commonly

distinguished. Sails commonly set ‘‘ by the wind.”

iehtairs 2… 5.2

Light winds …...

Light breezes …|

| Moderate breezes |

Fresh breezes …| Royals and flying-jib taken in, in a sea way, to two reefs in the top-sails.

Single-reefed top-sails, and top- gallant -sails, in mueh sea, two reefs in the top-sails to taking in top-gallant-sails.

Courses, top-sails, top-gallant-sails, royals, spanker, jib, flying-jib, and all light sails.

Strong breezes …

Moderate gales …; Double-reefed top-sails to treble-reefed top- sails, reefed spanker, and jib. Fresh gales …... Close-reefed top-sails, reefed

courses, to tak-

ing in spanker, jib, fore and mizzen top- sail,

Reefed courses, elose-reefed main-top-sail, fore-stay-sail, mizzen-try-sail, to taking in the main-sail.

Strong gales…...

Heavy gales …... Close-reefed main-top-sail, storm stay-sails, to storm stay-sails or close-reefed main-top- sail only.

| Storms.

1 Some ships (merchant-liners) have two jibs, inner and outer, and

XX]. — 20

154

To the casual observer sails when spread and in use appear merely as so many large pieces of cloth ; but some of them are of very considerable size: it is not at all un- usual in full square-rigged ships for a main-course or main-sail to contain 1000 yards of canvas (24 inches wide), and a main-top-sail nearly as much,—the single suit for such a vessel comprising upwards of 10,000 yards. Courses and top-sails are made reducible ; in the British navy they are reduced by means of reefs (two in courses, four in top-sails), each fitted with spilling, slab, and reef lines and becket, and toggles on the yard (reef-points throughout being now obsolete). In the merchant service double top-sails—upper and lower—are much in use on account of handiness in reducing sail ; there is also “ patent reefing gear,” such as Cunningham’s, which allows reefing to be done as much as possible from deck. The dimensions of masts and yards, quantity of canvas or area of sail, centre of gravity of each sail (from which the moment of sail is obtained and compared with the moment of stability), centre of effort of the sails, and other important calcula- tions necessary in relation to the body of the vessel are made by constructors and naval architects.

Sailcloth is obtainable from any description of fibrous material capable of being woven into cloth, having sufficient compactness and closeness of texture, and possessing the requisite strength for sustaining the heavy pressure which sails often have to bear in severe weather. Several descriptions of fibre might be enumerated which would to a certain extent serve for sailcloth but for the absence of quality of endurance or resistance ; hemp has been and is now occasionally used, as also a mixture of cotton and linen yarn, or cotton only,—especially in America ; but in the United Kingdom FLax (q.v.) is the usual staple material, since, when well manufactured, it possesses the qualities of flexibility and lightness, and, what is still more important, the element of strength in a very large degree.

The following points may be regarded as of primary importance for securing sailcloth or canvas of a superior quality and durability. Whatever flax is uscd, it is absolutely necessary that the “warp” and “weft” of the canvas be spun wholly from the “longs,” be free from blacks and any mixture of short flax, well dressed or heckled, aud that the yarn be well and evenly spun and properly twisted. Both warp and weft yarn should be twice boiled with the best American pot and pearl ashes, aud carefully and thoroughly washed and cleansed. No acid chloride of lime or other preparation of chlorine, nor any deletcrious substance, should be uscd in any stage of the process, otherwise the integrity of the fibre will most probably be interfered with ; the only advantage got is that the cloth looks much whiter, which for yachts and pleasure-boats is perhaps desirable, but for naval and mercantile uses is not at all necessary. The yarns are first boiled a sufficient length of time in a solution of the best American potash, in fixed proportions of ashes, green yarn, and water, then mill-washed (beating process), and subse- quently carefully washed in a considerable stream of clear running water, and wrung. They are again boiled for a sufficient length of time in a solution of American pearl ashes, in due proportions of ashes, green yarn, and water, then carefully rinsed, or washed in a clear stream of water, carefully dried, and frequently shaken in the course of drying, so that the fibres of the flax may be equally stretched. These repeated boilings, &c., have the effect of cleans- ing, bleaching, softening, and removing all vegetable impurities which may be hanging about ; no starch, tallow, paste, or weaver’s dressing of any description should be used, otherwise the fabric will tend to mildew if allowed to remain damp

for any time. Sail- cloth is made in bolts, mostly 24 inches wide, but also 18 inches wide, and for yachting purposes frequently still less wide, upon the ground that the narrower the cloth the flatter and better will the sail stand to its work. It is generally made of eight different qualities in respect of thickness, numbered 1 to 8 accordingly ; the heavier numbers—Nos. 1, 2, and 3—are used for storm and other sails that have to do heavy work, the remaining numbers for the lighter descriptions of sail. The weight of each bolt of canvas 24 inches wide, from Nos. 1 to 6 inclusive for 39 yards in length and

their top-sails also in two parts, upper and lower or eap-top-sails, an arrangement which makes it easier to reduce or shorten sail; they also

have a mizzen eourse (eross-jack), and carry several light stay-sails so as to cateh every breath of wind.

Sp A Lae

for Nos. 7 and 8 for 40 yards in length, is about as follows, viz, No. 1, 46 1b; No. 2, 43; No. 3, 40; No. 4, 36; No. 5, 33; No,

canvas is in proportion.

6, 30; No. 7,27; No. 8, 25 1b. The weight of each bolt of narrower The warp (or lengthwise) should consist of the following proportions of elean unstarched yarn, viz. :—

No. 1 not less than 26 ib…... 163 score reed 2 ie We 163 = 3 Ks Te 164 * 4 a lee. eee 17 ss 5 ee a1) ene 17 BF 6 a IDS apps: 17 a a – Tape ae0 as 8 oe Tee 20 is

As a rule about 40 yards in length may be considered as the average content of each bolt. Particular attention should be paid to the weaving, that the texture be struck sufficiently close, and the selvages be evenly and well manufactured ; what is termed a slack selvage (that is, one selvage longer than the other) is not only awkward for the sailmaker but unsatisfactory both in wear and appearance, the slack side showing itself puckered. Sailcloth made upon these conditions is very likely to be a good article ;

tests, however, can be applicd, generally to strips 1 inch wide from Nos. 1 to 6 inclusive, and 14 inch wide from Nos. 7 and 8. Weft and warp (24 inches in length) in each case are placed ina small testing machine, which has a dial plate with a spring under- neath ; vices are attached to grip the strips, one vice to the spring, the other in connexion with a long screw with a handle; by turning this handle the vices are drawn asunder until the strip breaks, and the hands on the dial-plate indicate the strain in pounds. The following is a fair test of strength for the various numbers of good sailcloth :—

Weft. i Weft. Warp.

Noy USaoqasace A ileegboone 340 Ib INGE sca Si OND). «etree 260 ib Zep eqnedc 200) epoeeoce 320 Go oogooer 350 creme 250 aldnotocan Gu) secescan 300 Uodnoecsc 390) [eee 330 4 o20) acooneon 280 Raccoon 380) Ceeeemen 310

Tt is not at all unusual, however, to find some sailcloth stand a strain considerably in excess of this. Freedom from blacks, twist and spun of the yarn, stiffening, calendering, &c., can be discovered by observation and a magnifying glass, excessive dressing by a little tincture of iodine.

Sailmaking is a very old branch of industry in connexion with the navy and commerce, and it still continues to be important notwithstanding the enormous extent to which steam is now employed in navigation.

The operations of the sailmaker may be stated as follows. The dimensions of mast and yards and sail plan being supplied, the master sailmaker is enabled to determine the dimensions of each sail—after due allowance for stretching—in terms of cloths and depth in yards—if a square sail, the number of cloths in the head, number in the foot, and the depth in yards ; if a fore-and-aft sail (triangular), the number of cloths in the foot, and the depth in yards of the luff or stay and of leech or after-leech ; if a fore-and-aft sail (trapezium form), the number of cloths in the head, number in foot, and the depth of mast or luff and of after-leech. These particulars obtained, there is got out what is technically termed a ‘‘casting,” which simply means the shape, length, &c., of each in- dividual cloth in the sail. These figures are given to the cutter, who proceeds to cut out the sail cloth by cloth in

consecutive order, numbering them 1, 2, 3, 4, &c. ; the series of cloths thus eut out are handed over to the workman, who joins them together by carefully made double flat seams, sewn with twine specially prepared for the purpose, with about 120 stitches in a yard. In the heavy sails the seam is about an inch and a half in width and in the British navy stuck or stitched in the middle of the seam to give additional strength; the seams in the lighter sails are about an inch wide. The whole of the cloths are then brought together, and spread out, and the tabling (or hemming, so to speak) is turned in and finished off with about 72 stitches toa yard. Strengthen- ing pieces or ‘‘ linings” are affixed where considered necessary, m courses and top-sails such pieces as reef-bands, middle-bands, foot bands, leech-linings, bunt-line cloths; in top-sails (only) @ top- lining or brim ; in other and lighter sails such pieces as mast-lining clew and head, tack, and corner pieccs ; holes, such as head, rect, stay (luff), mast, cringle, bunt-line, &c., are also made where re- quired, a grommet of line of suitable size being worked in them to prevent their being cut through. The next thing to be done is to secure the cdges of the sail,—an important operation, as much depends upon this whether the sail will stand well and do its work efficiently. Bolt-rope, a comparatively soft laid rope made from the finer hemp yarn (Italian) is used for this purpose ; im the British navy it ranges from 1 inch (increasing in size by quarter inches) up to 8 inches inclusive, the size selected for each part 0 a sail being determined by the amount of strain it will have to bear; it is then neatly sewn on with roping twine specially pre pared, the needle and twine passing between and clear of evety two strands of the rope in roping. Where slack sail has to be taken in, it is the practice to leave it to the judgment of the sail-

ae

maker; but where possible it is better to set up the rope by means of a tackle to a strain approximate to what it will have to bear when in use, and whilst on the stretch mark it off in yards, as also the edge of the sail in yards, so that by bringing the marks to-

gether in roping the sail will stand flat. In the British navy the largest size of rope sewn on toa sail is 6 inches ; sizes above this fo)

are used for foot and clew ropes of top-sails and courses, being first svormed, parcelled (that is, wound round with strips of worn canvas), tarred, and served over with spun yarn ; the foot of the sail is then secured to it by being marled in. Where two sizes of bolt-rope used in roping a sail have to be connccted, it is effected by a tapered splice. Cringles (similar to the handle of a maund) formed by a strand of bolt-rope, mostly having a galvanized iron thimble in them as a protection, are then stuck where necessary, as at the corners, sides or leeches, mast or luff; they are required either for making stationary or hauling “taut” by tackle or otherwise certain parts of the sail when in use. Fore-and-aft sails, such as spankers, gaff-sails, and storm try-sails, are reduced in size by reef-

oints made of stout line (4 to 20 Ib), crow-footed in the middle, a hole being pierced through every seam ; one-half of the point is passed through and the crowfoot sewn firmly to the sail; the number of reefs depends upon the size of the sail, and the reefs are placed parallel to the foot. The sails—now finished in respect of making—have to be fitted, that is, such ropes have to be attached to cach of them as are necessary for proper use; such ropes may be summarily stated as follows :—head-earings, robands, reef-car- ings, reef-lines, spilling and slab lines, reef-tackle pendant, reef- points, bow-line bridles, bunt-line toggles, bunt-becket, leech-line strops and toggles, toggles in clews, sheet ropes, down-haul, lacings,

head and stay, tack-rope (gaff top-sail), tack lashing, bending strops,

matting, and gaskets.

The tools and appliances of a sailmaker are not very numerous :— a bench about 7 feet long and 15 inches high, upon which he sits to perform the greater part of his work ; palms for seaming and roping to fit the hand, made of hide lined with Icather, a plate properly tempered being fixed in it having chambers to catch the head of the needle, thus acting as a thimble in forcing it through the several parts of canvas in seaming, and between the strands and through the canvas in roping ; needles of various sizes, that for seaming being the smallest ; and fids, splicing, serving, and stretch- ing knife, rubber, sail-hook, bobbin for twine, and sundry small articles. (E. JE.)

SAINFOIN (Onobrychis sativa) is a low-growing per- ennial plant with a woody root-stock, whence proceed the stems, which are covered with fine hairs and bear numerous long pinnate leaves, the segments of which are elliptic. The flowers are borne in close pyramidal or cylindrical clusters on the end of long stalks. Each flower is about

half an inch in length with lanceolate calyx-teeth shorter

| it is considered as an escape from cultivation.

than the corolla, which latter is papilionaceous, pink, with darker stripes of the same colour. The indehiscent pods or legumes are flattened from side to side, wrinkled, some- what sickle-shaped and crested, and contain only a single seed. In Great Britain the plant is a native of the calcareous districts of the southern counties, but elsewhere It is native throughout the whole of central Europe and Siberia; but it does not seem to have been cultivated in Great Britain till 1651, when it was introduced from France or French Flanders, its French name being retained. It is grown as a forage plant, being especially well adapted for dry Innestone soils. It has about the same nutritive value

| as lucerne, and is esteemed for milch cattle and for sheep

in winter. Sinclair speaks in high terms of its value for this latter purpose.

SAINT. The New Testament writers have much to say

: about the relations of the “saints” (as members of the various churches are usually called) with their living con-

temporaries, but are comparatively reticent on their duties and privileges with regard to their departed brethren. Long before the close of the 4th century, however, certain very definite practices in the way of commemoration and invocation had sprung up, which ultimately found doc- trmal expression in the authoritative documents alike of the Eastern aud of the Western Church. (1) Commemo- ration.— Under Funerau Rives, MaNEs, &c., allusion has already been made to the ancient custom of visiting the tombs of deceased relatives at certain periods and there

offering various gifts. With certain modifications, this practice was retained by the early Christians; they cele- brated the Eucharist at or near the grave, laid oblations on the altar in the name of the departed, and in the pre-communion prayer made supplication for the peace of their souls. Thus among the usages “ originated by tradition, strengthened by custom, observed by faith,” Tertullian (De Cor. Mil., 3; comp. De Exh. Cast., 11) mentions “the offerings we make for the dead as often as the anniversary comes round” (comp. Sacriricg, p. 139). If such com- memoration was usual in domestic circles, it was little likely to be omitted by Christian congregations in the case of those who had “spoken to them the word of God,” least of all when the bishop had also been, as was so often the case, a martyr. In the very instructive document of the 2d century, preserved by Eusebius (H. #., iv. 15), in which the martyrdom of PoLycarp (¢.v.) is described, we are told that the followers of the martyr, having taken up the bones, deposited them ‘where it was proper that they should be.” ‘There also, as far as we can, the Lord will grant us to assemble and celebrate the natal day of his martyrdom in joy and gladness.” Cyprian (Hp., 36) ex- horts that the days of death of those who have died in prison should be carefully noted for the purpose of celebrat- ing their memory annually; and all the earliest extant liturgies contain commemorations of the departed. The names to be commemorated were written on the diptychs (see Diptycn). (2) Jnvocation.—It is not difficult to under- stand how a belief in the efficacy of the prayers of departed saints—especially of martyrs—should at an early date have taken a practical form. Martyrs were believed to pass into the immediate presence of God, and the supposed nature of their claims there is not dimly indicated in the docu- ment already referred to, which once and again speaks of Polycarp as “a noble victim selected from the flock,” “a rich and acceptable sacrifice to God.” The readers of Cyprian are familiar with the use made of the intercession of living “martyrs” by the lapsed to secure their recon- ciliation with the church ; but positive evidence of the inter- cession of the dead being invoked for obtaining favour with God is not forthcoming so soon. Perhaps, indeed, Cyril of Jerusalem (c. 350) is the earliest author to make express allusion to the practice (Cat. Afyst., v. 9):

“we commemo- rate … patriarchs, prophets, apostles, martyrs, . . . that God at their prayers and intercessions (zpeoPetats) would receive our supplications.” In the liturgies, however, the oblation still continued to be offered “for all martyrs and confessors” as well as for others, and Augustine was the first to declare (Zn Joann., Tract. 84) that “at the table of the Lord we do not commemorate martyrs in the same way that we do others who rest in peace so as to pray for them, but rather that they may pray for us that we may follow in their footsteps.”

For the subsequent development of Catholic practice see the various church historics; compare also CANONIZATION, LiTAny, Retics, IMAGE WorsHipP, &c. Previous to the Reformation ecclesi- astical legislation mainly sought to check the popular tendency towards something like polytheism. The Tridcntine doctrine is ‘that the saints who reign along with Christ are to be honoured and invoked, that they offer prayers for us, and that their relics are to be venerated.”’ All the churches of the Reformation, on the other hand, while in one form or another commemorating “all thy servants departed this life in thy faith and fear,” practically concur in the teaching of the Church of England (Art. xxii.), that “the Romish doctrine concerning . . . invocation of saints” is ‘‘a fond thing, vainly invented, and grounded upon no warranty of Scripture, but rather repugnant to the word of God.”

ST ALBANS, a city, municipal borough, and market town of Hertfordshire, England, is finely situated on an eminence above the river Ver, on the main line of the Mid- land Railway and on branches of the London and North-Western and the Great Northern lines, about 24 miles

north-west of London and 5 miles west from Hatfield. The abbey or cathedral church, in some respects one of the most remarkable ecclesiastical buildings in England, is described below. St Michael’s church to the west of the town, within the site of the ancient Verulamium, was originally constructed in the 10th century partly out of the ruins of the town. Considerable portions of the Norman building remain ; the church contains the tomb of Lord Chancellor Bacon. St Stephen’s church, dating from the same period, contains soe good examples of Norman architecture. St Peter’s

church has been in great part rebuilt, but the nave of Early Perpendicular remains. The (restored) clock-house in the market-place was built by one of the abbots in the reign of Henry VIII. There is an Edward VI. grammar-school. The principal modern buildings are the corn exchange, the court-house, the prison, the public baths, and the public library. There are a number of charities and benevolent institutions, 1n- cluding the hospital and dispensary, and the almshouses founded in 1734 by Sarah duchess of Marlborough. The principal industries are the manufacture of silk and straw- plaiting. There are also breweries and ironfoundries. The population of the municipal borough (area, 997 acres, extended in 1879) in 1881 was 10,931; the population of the same area in 1871 was estimated at 8239. ; Not only is the cathedral ‘‘a text-book of medieval architec- ture from its beginning to its ending,” but it ‘is still in style, material, and feeling that onc among our great churches which most thoroughly carries us back to Old English and even to earlier days” (Freeman). Shortly after the execution of Britain’s proto- martyr, St Alban, probably in 303, a church was built on the spot. In 793 Offa of Mercia, who professed to have discovered the relics of the martyr, founded in his honour a monastery for Benedictines, which became one of the richest and most important houses of that order in the kingdom. The abbots Ealdred and Ealmer at the close of the 10th century began to break up the ruins of the old Roman city of Verulamium for materials to construct a new abbcy church ; but on account of the unsettled character of the times its erection was delayed till the time of William the Conqueror, when Paul of Caen, a relative of Archbishop Lanfranc, was in 1077 appointed abbot. Canterbury as built by Lanfranc was almost a reproduction of St Stephen’s, Caen ; but Paul, while adopting the same model for St Albans, built it on an immensely larger scale. The church was consecrated in 1115, but had been finished some years before. Of the original Norman church the principal portions now remaining are the eastern bays of the nave, the tower, and the transepts, but the main outlines of the building are still those planned by Paul. It is thus one of the most important specimens of Norman architecture in England, with the special characteristic

that, owing to the use of the flat broad Roman tile, the Norman —

portions are peculiarly bare and stern. The western towers were pulled down in the 13th century. About 1155 Robert de Gorham repaired and beautificd the early shrine and rebuilt the chapter- house and part of the eloister; but nothing of his work now re- mains except part of a very beautiful doorway lately discovered. Abbot John de Cella (1195-1214) pulled down the west front and portions of the north and south aisles. He began the erection of the west front in a new and enriched form, and his work was con- tinued by his successor William de Trumpyngtone (1214-35) in a plainer manner. In 1257 the eastern portion was pulled down, and between the middle of the 13th and the beginning of the 14th century a sanctuary, ante-chapel, and lady chapel were added, all remarkably fine specimens of the architecture of the period. In 1828 two great columns on the south side suddenly fell, which necessitated the rebuilding of five bays of the south aisle and the Norman cloisters. Various incongruous additions were made during the Perpendicular period, and much damage was also done during the dissolution of the abbeys to the finer work in the in- terior. The building within recent years has undergone extensive renovation, first under the direction of Sir Gilbert Scott, and latterly to a much greater cxtent under Sir Edmund Beckett. Its extreme length outside is 550 fect, which is exceeded by Winchester by 6 feet. ‘The nave (284 feet) is the longest Gothic nave in the world and exceeds that of Winchester by about 20 feet. The length of the transepts is 175 feet inside. The monastic buildings have all disappeared with the exception of the great gateway.

To the south-west of the present city of St Albans stood the ancient Verulamium, one of the oldest towns in Britain, on Wat- ling Street. It was the chief station of Cassivellaunus at the time of Cesar’s invasion, and under the Romans became a municipiwm. The ancicnt town which grew up around St Albans church was

completely destroyed by the Saxons betwcen 500 and 560. During Wat Tyler’s insurrection the monastery was besieged by the towns. people, many of whom were executed in consequence. At St Albans the Lancastrians were defeated on 21st May 1455, their leader, the duke of Somerset, being killed, and Henry VI. taken prisoncr; there too Queen Margarct defeated the earl of Warwick on 17th Februa 1461. During the civil wars the town was garrisoned for the Parliament. On a printing press, one of the earliest in the

king. dom, set up in the abbey the first English translation of the Bible was printed. A charter of incorporation was granted to the town by Edward VI. It returned two members to parliament unti] 1852, when it was disfranchised. It becamea bishop's see in 1877 Nicholas Breakspear, the only English pope (Adrian IY.), was born near St Albans, and was elected its abbot in 1187.

See Matthew Paris, Historia Major; H. T. Riley, Chronicle of the Monastery of St Albans, 11 vols., 1863-73 ; Nicholson, History of St Albans; Buckler, Norman Church of St Albans; Neale, Abbey Church of St Albans, 1879; Sir E. Beckett, St Albans Cathedral and its Restoration, 1885. :

ST ALBANS, a township and village of the United States, the capital of Franklin county, Vermont, at the junction of several divisions of the Central Vermont Railroad. The village lies on an elevated plain about 3 niles east of Lake Champlain, and has its principal buildings arranged round a public park. Besides being the seat of the extensive workshops of the railroad company, St Albans is the great cheese and butter market of the eastern States. In the neighbourhood, which is cele- brated for the beauty of its scenery, are quarries of calico stone and variegated marble. The population of the township was 1814 in 1850, 3637 in 1860, 7014 in 1870, and 7193 in 1880. Being only 14 miles distant from the Canadian frontier, the village has more than once been the scene of political disturbances. In 1866 a band of 1200 Fenians, on their return from a frnitless invasion of Canada, were disarmed there by the United States troops,

ST AMAND-LES-EAUX, a town of France, in the department of Nord, at the junction of the Elnon with the Scarpe (a left-hand tributary of the Scheldt), 74 miles by rail north-west of Valenciennes and 22 south-east of Lille. It has numerous industrial establishments, but is better known from the mineral waters in the vicinity. Though from Roman coins found in the mud it is evi dent that these must have been frequented during the Roman period, it is only two centuries since they began to be again turned to account. There are four distinct springs ; the water (75° Fahr.) contains sulphates of lime and sulphur, and deposits white gelatinous threads without smell or taste. The black mud, which constantly gives out sulphuretted hydrogen, is composed of thiree strata—(1) a clayey peat, (2) clay, and (3) a

composition of silica, carbonate of lime, oxide of iron, and aluminium. Numerous small sulphurous springs ooze through the lowest stratum and, soaking those above, form a slough in which patients suffering from rheumatism, gout, and certam affections of liver and skin remain for hours at a time. The population in 1881 was 7881 (commune, 11,184).

St Amand owes its name to St Amand, bishop of Tongres, who founded a monastery here in the reign of Dagobert. The abbey was laid waste by the Normans in $82 and by the count of Hainault in 1340. The town was captured by Mary of Burgundy in 1447, by the count of Ligne, Charles V.'s lieutenant, in 1521, and finally in 1667 by the French. The abbey has been destroyed, with the exception of the gateway flanked by two octagonal pavilions, now occupied by municipal offices ; and of the abbey church there re- mains only the 17th-century facade.

SAINT-AMANT, Marc ANTOINE GERARD, SIEUR DE (1594-1661), the most eminent of a curious bacchanalian school of poets in France during the 17th century, Was born at Rouen in the year 1594. Very little is known of his family except that it was of some position at Rouen, and the mysterious description which all his French bio graphers give of his father—that he was a sailor "qu commanda pendant 22 ans un escadre de la reine Kliza- beth" —does not greatly assist an English imagination. It appears that Saint-Amant himself haunted taverns and

{

'other resorts of gay society a good deal during his youth 'and manhood, that he attached himself at different times 'to different great noblemen— Retz (the duke, not the car- 'dinal), Créqui, Harcourt, &c. that he saw some military service, and sojourned at different times in Italy, in England

a sojourn which provoked from him a violent poetical attack on the country, only printed within the last thirty years), in Poland (where he held a court appointment for

_two years), and elsewhere. But details on all these points are both few and vague. Saint-Amant’s later years were spent in France ; and he died at Paris in 1661.

~ Saint-Amant has left a not inconsiderable body of poetry as various in style as Herrick’s, and exhibiting a decided poetical faculty, hardly at all assisted by education. Of one class of his poetry the chief monument is the Moise Sauvé, published in 1653. The author calls this by the odd title of ‘‘idylle héroique”; but | it is to all intents and purposes an epic of the school of Tasso. It is not by any means without merit, and the alexandrine couplet is managed in it with much vigour and ease. The second and larger | part of Saint-Amant’s works consists of short miscellaneous poems ona great variety of subjects. The best of these are Bacchanalian,

| the oft-quoted La Débauche being one of the most remarkable

convivial poems of its kind. All through his work flashes of strength and true poetical imagination occur ; but he was rarely happy in his choice of subjects, and his execution is constantly

marred by want of polish and form. The standard edition of Saint-Amant, with life, notes, &c., is that in the

| « Bibliotheque Elzévirienne ” by M. C. L. Livet (2 vols., Paris, 1855).

——s

FE

ST ANDREWS, a city, royal burgh, university town, and seaport of Scotland, in the county of Fife, is situated on a bay of the German Ocean and on a branch of the North British Railway, 9 miles east of Cupar and 11 south-south-east of Dundee. It occupies a platform of sandstone rock about 50 feet in height, running east and west and presenting to the sea a precipitous wall, which has been much encroached on by its action within recent years. The principal streets (North Street, Market Street, and South Street) diverge from the cathedral and run east and west, and Queen Street

runs south from the centre of South Street. Many new houses and villas have been

=e annie a eee

samy woyouyy

ale) ce UR au Ju)

sy

Plan of St Andrews.

recently erected towards the south, north, and west. The prosperity of the city depends primarily on its educational institutions, especially the university. The golf links, which are considered the best in Scotland, and sea-bathing attract many residents and visitors. In the 16th century

St Andrews was one of the most important ports north of the Forth, and is said to have numbered 14,000 inha-

bitants ; but it fell into decay after the Civil War, and,

_ although it has much increased in the present century, its

trade has not revived to any extent. The harbour, pro- tected by a pier 630 feet in length, affords entrance to vessels of 100 tons burden. The principal imports are wood and coals and the principal exports agricultural pro-

duce. The herring and deep-sea fishing is carried on by about 170 fishermen. ‘The evidences of antiquity in the dwelling-houses are comparatively few. The city was never surrounded by walls, but had several gates, of which that called the West Port still remains. The most pro- minent ruins are those of the cathedral and the castle (see below). Among the modern public buildings are the town- hall (1858) in the Scottish baronial style, the golf club- house, the Gibson and fever hospitals, and the recreation hall (1884). The population of St Andrews in 1801 was only

3263, but by 1881 it had nearly doubled, being 6406. The parliamentary burgh in 1881 numbered 6458.

The cathedral originated partly in the priory of Canons Regular founded to the south-east of the town by Bishop Robert (1122-1159). Martine, who wrote in the end of the 17th century, states that in his time some of the buildings were entire and that considerable remains of others existed, but nearly all traces have now disappeared, with the exception of portions of the abbey wall and the archways, now known as the "' Pends," forming the main entrance from the city. The wall is about three-quarters of a mile long and bears turrets at intervals. The cathedral was founded by Bishop Arnold (1159-1162), to supply more ample accommodation for the canons and for the celebration of the worship of the see than was afforded by the church of St Regulus. Of this older building in the Roman- esque style, probably dating from the 10th century, there remain the square tower, 108 feet in height, and the choir, of very diminu- tive proportions. On a plan of the town c. 1530 a chance. appears beyond, and on seals affixed to the city and college charters there are representations of other buildings attached. The cathedral which succeeded the church of St Regulus is represented in full outline in the plan of the town of 1530. It was constructed in the form of a Latin cross, the total length of the building inside the walls being 355 feet, the length of the nave 200, of the choir and lateral aisles 62, and of the lady chapel at the eastern extremity 50. The width at the transepts was 166 feet and of the nave and choir 62. According to Fordun the building was founded in 1159 ; but before it was finished the see witnessed the succession of eleven bishops, the consecration taking place in the time of Bishop Lamberton (1297-1328) in 1318, when the ceremony was witnessed by Robert the Bruce. When entire it had, besides a central tower, six turrets, of which two at the castern and one of the two at the western ex- tremity rising to a height of 100 feet still remain. The building was partly destroyed by fire in 1378, and the restoration and further embellishment were completed in 1440. It was stripped of its altars and images in 1559 by the magistrates and inhabitants of the city. It is believed that about the end of the 16th century the central tower gave way, carrying with it the north wall. Since then large portions of the ruins have been taken away for building purposes, and nothing was done to preserve them till 1826. The principal portions now remaining, partly Norman and partly Early English, are the

eastern and western gables, the greater part of the southern wall of the nave, and the western wall of the south transept.

Closely connected with the fortunes of the cathedral are those of the castle, the picturesque ruins of which are situated about 250 yards north-west of the cathedral, on a rocky promontory now much worn away by the sea. It is supposed to have been erected by Bishop Roger about the beginning of the 13th century as an episcopal residence, and was strongly fortified. It was frequently taken by the English, and after it had been captured by the Scottish regent in 1336-37 was destroyed lest it should fall into their hands. Towards the close of the century it was rebuilt by Bishop Trail in the form of a massive fortification with a moat on the south and west sides. James I. spent some of his early years within it under the care of Bishop Wardlaw, and it is supposed to have been the birthplace of James III. From a window in the. castle Cardinal David Beaton witnessed the burning of Wishart in front of the gate, and shortly afterwards he was murdered within it in his bedroom by a party of Reformers. The castle was taken from the conspirators by the French, among the prisoners captured. being John Knox. Some ycars afterwards it was repaired by Arch- bishop Hamilton, but in a less massive and substantial form. It had in 1656 fallen into such disrepair that the town council ordered its "'sleatts and timmer, redd and lumps" to be devoted to the repair of the pier at the harbour. The principal remains are a por- tion of the south wall enclosing a square tower, the bottle dungeon below the north-west tower, the kitchen tower, and a curious sub- terranean passage.

The town church, formerly the church of the Holy Trinity, was originally founded in 1112 by Bishop Turgot. The early building was a beautiful Norman structure, but at the close of the 18th eentury the whole, with the exception of little else than the square tower and spire, was re-erected in a plain and ungainly style. Within the church Knox preached the sermon which led to the stripping of the cathedral and the destruction of the monastie

buildings. It contains an elaborate monument to Archbishop Sharp. Near the south-west of the town is the ruined northern transept of the chapel of the

Dominican monastery founded by Bishop Wishart in 1274; but all traces of the Observantine mon- astery founded about 1450 by Bishop Kennedy have disappeared, except the well. The church of St Mary on the rock erected by the Culdees is supposed to have stood on the Lady's Craig now covered by the sea; and the foundations of another, also dedicated to the Virgin, to the west of the harbour were discovered in 1860, giving the full outline of the ground-plan of the building.

The university was possibly a development of the ''schools" which were in existence as early as the beginning of the 12th century, and were endowed by certain ''rents and kune" payable to them from lands in the neighbourhood. Its immediate origin was due to a society formed in 1410 by Lawrence of Lindores, abbot of Scone, Richard Cornwall, archdeacon of Lothian, William Stephen, afterwards archbishop of Dunblane, and a few others, for the instruction of all who chose to attend their lectures. A charter was granted in 1411 by Bishop Wardlaw, who attracted the most learned men in Scotland as professors, and bulls were obtained from the pope in 1413 confirming the charter and constituting it a studiwm generale or university. The lectures were delivered in various parts of the town until 1430, when a building called the ''nedagogy" to the Faculty of Arts was granted by the founder of the university. St Salvator's College was founded and richly endowed by Bishop Kennedy in 1456; twelve years later it was granted the power to confer degrees in theology and philosophy, and by the end of the century was regarded as a constituent part of the university. In 1512 the university received a further addition by the foundation of St Leonard's College by Prior John Hepburn and Archbishop Alexander Stuart on the site of buildings which at one time were used as a hospital for pilgrims. In the same year Archbishop Stuart nominally changed the original " pedagogy " into a college and annexed to it the parish church of St Michael of Tarvet ; but its actual crection into a college did not take place until 1537. By a bull obtained from Paul III. it was dedicated to the Blessed Virgin Mary of the Assumption. The outline of the ancient structure is preserved, but the general character of the buildings has been much altered by various restorations. They form two sides of a quadrangle, the library and principal's residence being on the north and the lecture-rooms and old dining-hall on the west. The university library, whieh now includes the older college libraries, was founded about the middle of the 17th

century, rebuilt in 1764, and improved in 1829. The lower hall in the older part of the building has been used as a provincial meeting-place for the Seottish parliament. When the constitution of the colleges was remodelled in 1579 St Mary's was set apart to theology; and in 1747 the colleges of St Salvator and St Leonard were formed into the United College. The buildings of St Leonard's are now occupied as a high class school for girls. The college chapel is in ruins. The United College occupies the site of St Salvator's Col- lege, but the old buildings have been removed, with the exception of the college chapel, now used as the university chapel and the parish church of St Leonard's, a fine Gothic structure containing an elaborate tomb of Bishop Kennedy ; the entrance gateway with the square clock tower rising to a height of 152 feet; and the janitor's house, with some class-rooms above. The imodern build- ing, in the Elizabethan style, forming two sides of a quadrangle, was erected between the years 1827 and 1847. The Madras College was founded and endowed by Dr Andrew Bell. It is attended by about 700 pupils. There are also several large boarding and day schools.

St Andrews (see ScorLAND) is said to have been made a bishopric in the 9th century, and when in 908 the Pictish and Scottish Churches were united the primacy was transferred to it from Dun- keld, its bishops being henceforth known as bishops of Alban. Turgot, who was appointed in 1109, was the first bishop who really filled the see. It became an archbishopric during the primacy of Patrick Graham (1466-78). This ceased in 1688. It was created a royal burgh by David I. in 1124. The St Andrews district of burghs returns onc member to the House of Commons.

Martine, History and Antiquities of St Rule's Chapel, St Andrews, 1787 ; Grier- son, Delineations of St Andrews, 1807, 3d ed. 1838; Reliquiw Divi Andrex, 1797 ; Liber Cartarum Sancti Andrew, Bannatyne Club, 1841 ; Skene, ' Ecclesiastical

Scttlements in Scotland," in Proc. Soc. Antig. Scot., 1862-63 ; Histories of St Andrews by Lyon (1843) and Rogers (1849); Skene, Celtic Scotland. (T. F. H.)

ST ASAPH, a city and parliamentary borough of North Wales, in the county of Flint, is situated on an eminence in the Vale of Clwyd, near the junction

of the Clwyd and Elwy, about 6 miles south-south-east of Rhyl and 6 north-north-west of Denbigh. It is somewhat irre- gularly built and has an antique appearance. On the brow of the hill is an encampment, Bron-y-Wylva, supposed to have been occupied by the Roman forces under Suetonius Paulinus. According to tradition the cathedral occupies the site of a church and monastery founded by St Kenti-

gern about 560, when he fled from Strathclyde. It wag originally called Llan-Elwy, the church on the Elwy. J is uncertain whether the first bishop was Kentigern or Asaph, to whom Kentigern committed the charge of the church and monastery when he returned to Scotland. The ancient wooden structure was burnt down by the English in 1245; and again in 1278 the same fate befell the building. A third edifice was in great part destroyed during the wars of Owen Glendower in 1402. The

greater part of the present building was constructed by

Bishop Redman about 1480 ; the choir and chancel under- went restoration from the designs of Sir Gilbert Scott in 1867-68, and the nave in 1875, when a new roof was added. It is one of the smallest cathedrals in Britain, its total length being 182 feet, while the breadth across the transepts is 108 feet. It is a plain cruciform structure, chiefly Decorated, but with some Early English portions, with an embattled tower, 97 feet in height, rising from the intersection of the nave and the transept. In the south transept there is a library of nearly 2000 volumes, inelud- ing some rare and valuable books. The bishop’s palace isa comparatively modern structure. The town has a grammar- school (1882), county court offices, the union workhouse, and almshouses. The population of the borough (area, 1155 acres) in 1881 was 1901 and of the parish 3177. ST AUGUSTINE, a city of the United States, capital of St John’s county, Florida, has the distinction of being the oldest city in the States built by Europeans, and has re- cently become a popular winter watering-place. By rail it is 36 miles south-east from Jacksonville. It stands ona narrow sandy peninsula, not more than 12 feet above the sea, formed by the Matanzas and San Sebastian rivers, and is separated from the ocean by the northern end of Anastasia Island. The streets are very narrow, the principal thorough- fares being only 12 or 15 feet wide, and the balconies of the old houses often project so as almost to

meet overhead. Along the sea-front for nearly a mile extends a granite. coped sea-wall (1837-43), which forms a fine promenade, At its northern end stands the old fort of San Marco (now Fort Marion), a well-preserved specimen of Spanish military architecture (finished 1756), with moat and outworks, walls 21 feet high, bastions at the corners, heavy casemates, dungeons, and subterranean passages. It is in the form of a trapezium, and covers about 4 acres. Like most of the Spanish buildings, it is constructed of coquina, a curious shelly conglomerate from Anastasia Island, which was easily quarried, but grew very hard on exposure to the atmosphere. The same material was used for paving the streets, which were thus kept extremely clean and firm. At the southern end of the sea-wall is the old Franciscan monastery, now used as United States barracks. Of the Spanish wall which ran across the peninsula and defended the city on the north side there only remains the so-called city gate. In the centre of St Augustine is the Plaza de la Constitucion, which takes its name from the monument in the middle, erected in 1812 in memory of the Liberal Spanish Constitution. On this square stand the cathedral (1793), with a Moorish belfry, the old governor’s palace, now used as a post-office and public library, and an Episco- pal church in modern Gothic. Other buildings of note in the town are the convent of St Mary and the convent of the sisters of St Joseph. Modern villas and hotels have recently been erected in various parts. Palmetto straw goods are largely manufactured in St Augustine, the palmetto being one of the characteristic features of the surrounding landscape, to which orange and lemon trees also contribute. The climate is remarkably equable, the mean temperature for winter being 58°, and for the other seasons 68°, 80°, and 71° respectively. Frosts seldom occur, though that of 1835 killed many of the orange-

| trees.

In 1880 the total population of the city was 9293, but in winter northern visitors swell the number to

7000 or 8000.

+ en

Menendez de Aviles arrived off the coast of Florida on 28th August (St Augustine's day) 1565, and accordingly he gave the name of that saint to the city which he shortly afterwards founded. His first act was to attack the French settlement on St John's river, and two years later the French retaliated on St Augustine (see FLoripa,

vol. ix. 340, and Ripautt). In 1586 Drake attacked and plundered

the town, and throughout the 17th century it frequently suffered from the raids of Indians, pirates, and the English settlers of South Carolina and Georgia. Occupied by the British from 1763 to 1783, it ultimately passed to the United States in 1821. During the Civil War it changed hands three times.

ST BARTHOLOMEW, or St Bartuettemy, a French island of the West Indies, in the archipelago of the Antilles, is situated in 17° 55' 35" N. lat. and 63° 60' 15" W. long., 108 miles north-north-west of Guadaloupe, of which, poli- tically, it is a dependency. In form it is very irregular and the surface is mountainous. The soil, in spite of a scarcity of moisture, is not unfertile ; and in some of the valleys the growing of vegetables is an important industry. Bananas, cassia, tamarinds, and sassafras are exported. In modern times zine and lead ores have been found in the island, but they are not worked. Rocks and shallows make St Bartholomew difficult of access, and its port (Le Carénage), though safe during the greater part of the year,

is capable of receiving only the larger class of coasting

the left bank of the Gouet, serves as its seaport.

in considerable quantities to Paris.

vessels. The chief town is Gustavia, near the port. The population was 2942 in 1883.

St Bartholomew, occupied by the French in 1648, was ceded to Sweden in 1784 ; but it was restored to France by the treaty signed at Paris, August 1877, with the full approval of the inhabitants, who had remained French in

language and manners. Universal suffrage was introduced in 1830 and slavery abolished in 1848.

ST BRIEUC, a town of France, chef-lieu of the depart- ment of Cotes du Nord, 295 miles west of Paris by the railway from Brest, at the junction of a branch to Vannes by Pontivy. It stands 290 feet above the sea, between 1] and 2 miles from the English Channel, where Légué, on About 600 vessels, with an aggregate of 27,600 tons, enter or clear per annum; the local shipowners take part especi- ally in the Newfoundland and Iceland fisheries. St Brieuc is an old town with a considerable number of curious houses. The principal articles of trade are grain, flax, hemp, vegetables, honey, cider, butter, and eggs, which are despatched to England, and fish and game, which are sent At the fairs in bygone

days the Breton women sold their hair for trifling sums.

=

Nurseries of some size exist at St Brieuc, and in the neigh- bourhood are quarries of blue granite, giving employment to 300 workmen. St Brieuc is the seat of a bishopric in the province of Rennes, and has a cathedral dating from the 13th century, but partially rebuilt in the 18th, and extensively restored recently. The tombs of the bishops, the modern but delicately carved organ-loft, the tapestries, aud the stained-glass windows deserve mention. The old monastery of the Capuchins is occupied by the civil hos- pital, The monastery of the Cordeliers contains the lycée, a library of 30,000 volumes, and a museum of archzology

, and natural history, and the convent of the Ursulines has

_ been turned into barracks.

The episcopal palace, the pre- fecture, and the town-house were formerly private mansions, a class of old buildings which is steadily being reduced in number by the opening of new streets. A colossal image of the Virgin looks down upon the town, and the Dugues- clin boulevard, on the site of the ramparts, has a statue of that hero. The population in 1881 was 14,869 (com- mune 17,833),

z St Brieuc owes its origin and its name to the missionary St tiocus, who came from Wales in the 5th century, and whose tomb afterwards attracted crowds of pilgrims, The place was defended in

159

1375 by Olivier de Clisson against the duke of Brittany, and again attaeked by the same Clisson in 1394, the cathedral suffering greatly in both sieges. In 1592 the town was pillaged by the Spaniards, in 1601 ravaged by the plague, and in 1628 surrounded by walls, of which no traces remain. Between 1602 and 1708 the states of Brittany several times met at St Brieuc, and during the Reign

‘of Terror Chouans and Blues carried on a ruthless conflict with

each other.

ST CATHARINES, a city and port of entry of Ontario, Canada, and the capital of Lincoln county, is situated 12 miles north-west of Niagara Falls and 35 south of Toronto (by water), on the Welland Canal and the Grand Trunk and Welland branch of the Grand Trunk Railway. It is celebrated for its artesian mineral wells, and contains a convent and a marine hospital. The manu- facture of flour has long been a staple industry, and the abundant water-power is also utilized in cotton-mills, machine-shops, agricultural implement works, &c. In- corporated as a town in 1845, St Catharines had in 1861 a population of 6284, in 1871 of 7864, and in 1881 of 9631.

ST CHAMOND, a manufacturing town of France, in the department of Loire, 74 miles east-north-east of St Etienne, at the confluence of the Janon with the Gier (an affluent of the Rhone), and on the railway from St Etienne to Lyons. Besides working a considerable number of coal-mines, St Chamond employs twelve mills in the silk manufacture, and from 12,000 to 15,000 looms (mostly driven by hydraulic machinery) in lace-making, and has a variety of other manufactures. The population was 14,149 in 1881.

St Chamond, founded in the 7th century by St Ennemond or Chamond, arehbishop of Lyons, became the chief town of the Jarret, a little principality formed by the valley of the Gier. Silk- milling was introduced

in the town in the middle of the 16th cen- tury by Gayotti, a native of Bologna, and perfected towards the beginning of the 19th by Richard Chambovet. Remains are found at St Chamond of a Roman aqueduct, which eonveyed the waters of the Janon along the valley of the Gier to Lyons.

ST CHARLES, a city of the United States, the county seat of St Charles county, Missouri, is situated on the left or north bank of the Missouri 20 miles from its mouth, and 23 from St Louis by the St Louis and Omaha line of the Wabash, St Louis, and Pacific Railway, which crosses the river by a great iron bridge 6535 feet long, erected in 1871 at a cost of $1,750,000. Besides one of the largest car-factories in the United States, the industrial establishments of St Charles comprise tobacco- factories, flour-mills, hominy-mills, creameries, woollen- factories, and breweries. St Charles College (Methodist Episcopal), chartered in 1838, the Lindenwood Female College (Presbyterian), the Convent of the Sacred Heart, and the Roman Catholic public library are the principal institutions. In 1850 the inhabitants numbered only 1498; by 1870 they were 5570, and in 1880 5014 (in the township 8417).

A Spanish post was established at St Charles in 1769. As a town it dates from 1809 and asa city from 1849. The first State legislature of Missouri met in the town in 1821 and St Charles continued to be the State capital till 1826.

ST CHRISTOPHER, or St Kirts, one of the Leeward Islands, West Indies, situated in 17° 18’ N. lat. and 62° 48’ W. long. Its length is 23 miles, its greatest breadth 5 miles, and the total area 68 square miles. Mountains traverse the central part from south-east to north-west, the greatest height, Mount Misery, being about 4100 feet above sea-level. On the seaboard is Basseterre, the capital, the outlet of a fertile plain, which contains the cultivated land. The thermometer ranges from 78° to 84° Fahr. St Christopher is united with Nevis (q.v.) as one colony, with one executive and one legislative council (official and nominated) for the united presidency. In 1883 the revenue and expenditure were £34,000 and £33,000 respectively,

and the public debt was £2500. The tonnage entering and clearing was 307,000, and the imports and exports were valucd at £190,000 and £240,000 respectively per annum. The sugar exports amounted to 10,000 tons. The population of the island was about 30,000.

ST CLAIR, a borough of the United States, in Schuyl- kill county, Pennsylvania, 3 miles east of Pottsville on the Reading and Philadelphia Railroad. It mainly depends on its coal-mines. The population was 5726 in 1870 and 4149 in 1880.

ST CLOUD, a village of France, on the left bank of the Seine, 7 miles west from the centre of Paris and 94 by the railroad from Paris to Versailles, forming part of the canton of Sévres and of the arrondissement of Ver- sailles (Seine-et-Oise). Picturesquely built on a hill-slope, it overlooks the river, the Bois de Boulogne, and Paris ; and, lying amid the foliage of its magnificent park and numerous villa gardens, it is one of the favourite resorts of the Parisians. The palace of St Cloud, which had been asummer residence for Napoleon I., Louis X VIII., Charles X., Louis Philippe, and Napoleon III., was burned by the Prussians in 1870 along with part of the village. In spite of the damage inflicted on the park at the same period, magnificent avenues still make it one of the finest rural haunts in the neighbourhood of Paris. It occupies a varied tract of 960 acres, and abounds in picturesque views. Every year in September a great fair, lasting three weeks, is held in the park ; and within its precincts are situated the new national Sévres porcelain manufac- ture and the Breteuil pavilion, the seat of the interna- tional metre commission. St Cloud possesses a church, erccted about 1865, in the style of the 12th century, with an elegant stone spire; and here too has been established the upper normal school (science and letters) for the training of teachers (male) for the provincial normal schools of primary instruction. The population in 1881 was 4081, and 4126 in the commune.

Clodoald or Cloud, grandson of Clovis, adopted the monastic life and left his name to the spot where his tomb was discovered after the lapse of 1200 years, in a crypt near the present church. He had granted the domain to the church of Paris, which possessed it as a fief till the 18th century. At St Cloud Henry III. and the king of Navarre (Henry IV.) established their camp

during the League for the siege of Paris ; and there the former was assassinated by Jacques Clément. The castle was at that time only a plain country house belonging to Pierre de Gondi, archbishop of Paris. Louis XIV. bought it for his brother, the duke of Orleans, who was the originator of the palace which perished in 1870. Peter the Great of Russia was received there in 1717 by the regent, whose grandson sold the palace to Marie Antoinette. It was in the orangery at St Cloud that Bonaparte executed the coup d'état of 18th Brumaire ; and after he became emperor the palace was his favourite residence, and there he celebrated his marriage with Marie Louise. In 1815 it was the scene of the signing of the capitulation of Paris ; and in 1830 from St Cloud Charles X. issued the orders which brought about his fall. Napoleon III. was there when he received the senatusconsult which restored the empire in his favour {1st December 1852). Seized by the Prussians at the commence- ment of the investment of Paris in 1870, St Cloud was sacked during the siege.

ST CROIX, or SaintE Crorx, one of the Danish West India Islands, is situated between 17° and 18° N. lat., about 40 miles south-south-east of St Thomas. Twenty- three miles long, and with a maximum width of 6 miles, it has an area estimated at 51,168 acres. Blue Mountain, the highest peak (1100 feet), lies in the range of hills running parallel with the coast in the western half of the island. The narrower eastern end is also hilly. In the centre and towards the west the surface is undulating, and towards the south flat with brackish lagoons. With the exception of about 4000 acres, the soil is everywhere productive ; but only about one-third of the area is de- voted to sugar-growing and one-sixth to pasture-land, the greater part of the remainder being either worthless brush-

wood (the haunt of small deer) or scanty timber. Besides little Negro hamlets there are two garrison towns—Chrig. tiansted (or popularly Bassin) on the north coast, with a small harbour 15 to 16 feet deep at the entrance, and Frederiksted (popularly West End) on the west coast, with an open roadstead. The population of the island was 23,194 in 1860, 22,760 in 1870, and 18,430 in 1880, This decrease is due to the comparative failure of the sugar-crops. Destruction of the forests (or some unsus- pected cause) has

brought diminished rainfall (from 20 to 34 inches per annum); and the belt of abandoned cane. ground has been steadily increasing. To help in checking this decay the Government constructed (1876) a great central factory, to which the juice is conveyed from the plantations by a system of pipes. Apart from the official element (mostly Danish), the white inhabitants of St Croix are almost wholly British either by birth or descent.

St Croix was discovered by Columbus on his second voyage. In 1651 France entrusted it to the Knights of Malta, and in 1733 it was purchased by Denmark for 750,000 livres (167,000 rixdollars), See was abolished in 1848, and coolies began to be employed in °

ST CYR, Marsuat (1764-1830). See Gouvion Sr Cyr.

ST CYR-L'ECOLE, a village of France (Seine-et-Oise), 24 miles west of Versailles at the end of the old park of Louis XIV. It had only 2712 inhabitants in 188], and its importance is solely due to the famous military school now established in the convent which Madame de Maintenon founded for the education of noble young ladies in indigent circumstances. It was here that Racine's Hsther and Athalie were first acted, having been written expressly for the pupils. Madame de Maintenon's tomb is still preserved in the chapel. The convent was suppressed at the Revolution, and the gardens are now partly trans- formed into parade-grounds. Two advanced forts of the new enceinte round Paris are situated at St Cyr.

ST DAVID', a village of Pembrokeshire, South Wales, and the seat of a bishopric, is situated in the valley of the Alan, 16 miles north-west of Haverfordwest, the nearest railway station, and 14 miles east from the most westerly point of Wales. By some it is supposed to be the Roman Menapia. It consists of straggling and somewhat mean houses, occupying the crest of the hill above the cathedral. It was the birthplace of St David, the patron saint of Wales. 'The see, which includes nearly the whole of South Wales, was founded at least not later than the 7th century. Till the middle of the 12th century the bishops had archiepiscopal powers. The existing cathedral was begun in 1180. Its tower fell in 1220, crashing through the choir and transepts; when it was rebuilt the old western arch was retained. About the time the choir and tram septs were repaired St Thomas's chapel was added. In 1248 an earthquake caused the walls of the nave to bulge. The chapels

east of the presbytery were begun about this period, and the lady chapel between 1296 and 1328. The aisles of the nave and of the presbytery were raised by Bishop Gower (1328-1347), who set up the beautiful stone rood screen. The great window in the south tran- sept in the Perpendicular style was erected in 1384, and the roofs renewed in the Late Perpendicular between 1461 and 1522. The west front was rebuilt by Nash about the end of the 18th century, and in 1862 extensive restorations, including the rebuilding of the two western piers of the tower and of the west front, were begut under the direction of Sir G. G. Scott. The cathedral contains the tomb of Edmund Tudor, father of Henry VIL, and the shrine of St David. The total internal length of the building is 298 feet, the breadth of the nave (with aisles) 70 feet, and the breadth of the transepts 2 feet 3 inches. Parts of the rich interior decoration of the

Te >

SLE. &

SSS S

ees i or eee

fa Petree ee ee ee |

soa

a aod

nave are particularly worthy of notice. To the north of she cathedral are the picturesque ruins of the chapel of 3t Mary’s College, founded in 1377. On the other side yf the Alan are the remains of the bishop’s palace, a masterpiece of Bishop Gower, particularly noteworthy for she beautiful arcade and parapet running round the whole ouilding. It was partly unroofed by Bishop Barlow in 1536. In the centre of the village stands the ancient sross, 28 feet high, the steps of which were restored by Bishop Thirlwall in 1873. The place is without municipal yovernment, its mayor being the officer of the bishop’s manorial court. The population of the parish in 188] was 2003.

ST DENIS, a town of France, in the department of Seine, 44 miles north of Paris by the Northern Railway, which there divides into two branches leading respectively so Pontoise and Creil, is now a great manufacturing centre “or machinery, boats, railway carriages, chemical products, orinted goods, candles, beer, leather, and flour. Many of che works are supplied with water from the Crould and she Rouillon, which there fall into the Seine ; and a canal extends from the Seine to La Villette, the great inner harbour of Paris. In 1881 the population was 43,127. The name and fame of the town are derived from the ibbey founded by Dagobert on the spot where St Denis, the apostle of Paris, was interred (see below). The west ‘ront was built between 1137 and 1140. The right-hand cower is almost pure Romanesque; that on the left was sothic, and its spire was carried to a height of 280 feet, out it was struck by lightning in 1837 and its reconstruc-ion effected in so clumsy a manner that it had to be ‘aken down till it was on a level with the roof of the 1ave, The rose window, now occupied by a clock face, lates from the 13th century. Under one of the three ~~ows of arches above the main entrance runs an inscrip~~ ion recording the erection of the church by Suger with vbbatial funds and its consecration in 1140. The porch ‘ormed by the first three bays of the church contains some remains of the basilica of Pippin the Short. The nave proper (235 feet long and 57 wide) has seven bays, and lates, as well as most of the choir and transepts, from the ‘eign of St Louis. The gallery of the triforium is of open vork and is filled in with glass. The secondary apse (rond- sont) and its semicircular chapels (consecrated on 11th June 1144) are considered as the first perfected attempt t Gothic. The transepts have fine 13th-century facades, tach with two unfinished towers; if the plan had been jully carried out there would have been six towers besides . central fleche in lead. In the chapels of the nave are ‘he tombs of Louis XII. and Anne of Brittany (1591) of fenry IL. and Catherine de’ Medici, a masterpiece by yermain Pilon; of Louis of Orleans and Valentine of ‘flan, from the old church of the Celestines at Paris; of ‘rancis I. and Claude of France, one of the most splendid ombs of the Renaissance, executed under the direction of Vhilibert Delorme; and that of Dagobert, which, though \onsiderably dilapidated, ranks as one of the most curious iif medieval (13th-century) works of art. In the apse Ome stained glass of the time of Suger still remains. che crypt dates partly from Charlemagne and partly from vuger. In the centre is the vault where the coffin of the ead king used to le until, to make room for that

of his Jccessor, It was removed to its final resting-place. It is t present occupied by the coffin of Louis XVIII, the last overeign whose body was borne to St Denis and the only te whose ashes have been respected. Besides some fine “atues, the crypt contains the Bourbon vault, in which ere deposited the remains of Louis XVI. and Marie toinette, or at least whatever of them was recoverable “om the cemetery of La Madeleine, where the Chapelle

Expiatoire now stands. The treasury of St Denis has been despoiled of its richest possessions, including the books. now in the National Library ; but it still contains crosses, altar-pieces, and reliquaries, notably those of St Denis and his two companions, Rusticus and Eleutherius, the three patrons of the basilica. The chapter of St Denis is usually composed of emeritus bishops with the title of canons; but the institution is about to be abolished (1886). St Denis possesses a fine town-house and a poor- house (300 beds). Its three forts formed part of the Parisian enceinte in 1870-71, and from 23d to 26th January 1871 the place was bombarded by the Prussians, who did considerable damage to the basilica.

St Denis, the ancient Catulliacum, was a town of no pretensions till the founding of its abbey. The process of rebuilding begun in the 12th century by Abbé Suger was completed under Philip: the Bold. In the meantime St Louis caused mausoleums to be erected with figures of the princes already buried in the abbey ;. and from his time onwards to Henry II. every monarch in suc- cession had his monument. Louis XIV. reduced the abbcy to the rank of a priory; and at the Revolution it was suppressed, the tombs being violated and the church sacked (1793). Two years later all the remains and fragments that could be recovered were collected in the museum of the Petits Augustines at Paris ; but the bronze tombs had been melted down, the stained-glass windows shattered, and large numbers of interesting objects stolen or lost. Napoleon established in the monastery a school for daughters of the members of the Legion of Honour, which has continued to flourish. Louis XVIII. caused all the articles belonging to St Denis to be brought back from the museums to their original site, and added numerous other

monuments from the suppressed abbeys. But it was not till after 1848 that, under the intelligent direction of Viollet le Duc, the damage inflicted by revolutionist and unskil- ful restorer was repaired and the basilica recovered its original appearance. Charles the Bold instituted the famous fair of Landit, which was transferred from the ncighbouring plain to St Denis itself in 1552, and is still held inthe town. Sheep and parchment were formerly the staples. The abbey was pillaged by Charles the Bad, king of Navarre, in 1358, by the Burgundians and Flemings. in 1411, and by the English in 1430. A sanguinary battle, in which the Catholic leader Constable Anne de Montmorency found victory and death, was fought between Huguenots and Catholics in the neighbourhood on 10th November 1567.

ST DENIS, the capital of RKuNIoN (9.v.).

ST DIE, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondisse- ment and a bishop's see in the department of Vosges, is situated on the right bank of the Meurthe, 1030 feet above the sea, on the railway from Lunéville (32 miles north- west) to Epinal (38 miles south-west). One portion of the town was rebuilt after the fire of 1757 in the regular and monumental style of Nancy; the other has a somewhat mean appearance. Several Alsatian manufacturers having emigrated to St Dié on the annexation of their country to Germany, the town has made great progress since: 1871, and now possesses weaving factories, bleacheries, hosiery factories, engineering works, a tile work, and an extensive brewery. The cathedral has a Romanesque nave (10th century) and a Gothic choir; the portal, in red sandstone, dates from the 18th century. A fine cloister, recently restored and containing a beautifully executed stone pulpit, leads to the Petite Eglise or Notre Dame, a well-preserved specimen of early Romanesque. Other points of interest are the library, the museum, belonging to the Société Philomathique Vosgienne, the large schools, and the public fountains. The town commands an exten- sive view of the Vosges and is a convenient centre for ex- cursions. The population in 1881 was 12,677 (15,312 in the commune).

St Dié (Deodatum, Theodata, S. Deodati Fanwm) grew up round a monastery founded in the 6th century by St Deodatus of Nevers, who gave up his episcopal functions in order to retire to this place. In the 10th century the community became a chapter of canons ; and among those who

subsequently held the rank of provost or dean were Giovanni de’ Medici (afterwards Pope Leo X.) and several princes of the house of Lorraine. Among the extensive privileges enjoyed by them was that of coining money. Though they co- operated in building the town walls, the canons and the dukes of

Lorraine soon became rival competitors for the authority over St Dié. The institution of a town council in 1628, and the establish- ment under King Stanislaus of a bishopric which appropriated part of their spiritual jurisdiction, contributed greatly to diminish the influence of the canons; and with the Revolution they were completely swept away. During the 17th century the town was repeatedly sacked by the Burgundians under Charles the Bold, by the French, and by the Swedes. It was also partially destroyed by fire in 1065, 1155, 1554, and 1757. St Dié was the seat of a very early printing press.

SAINTE-BEUVE, Cuartes Avcustin (1804-1869), ‘

the most notable critic of our time, was born at Boulogne- sur-Mer on 23d December 1804. He was a posthumous child,—his father, a native of Picardy, and controller of town-dues at Boulogne, having married in this same year, at the age of fifty-two, and died before the birth of his son. The father was a man of literary tastes, and used to read, like his son, pencil in hand ; his copy of the Elzevir edition of Virgil, covered with his notes, was in his son’s possession, and is mentioned by him in one of his poems. Sainte- Beuve’s mother was half English,—her father, a mariner of Boulogne, having married an Englishwoman. The little Charles Augustin was brought up by his mother, who never remarried, and an aunt, his father’s sister, who lived with her. They were poor, but the boy, having learnt all he could at his first school at Boulogne, per- suaded his mother to send him, when he was near the age of fourteen, to finish his education at Paris. He boarded with a M. Landry, and had for a fellow-boarder and inti- mate friend Charles Neate, afterwards fellow of Oriel College and member of parliament for the city of Oxford. From M. Landry’s boarding-house he

attended the classes, first of the Collége Charlemagne, and then of the Collége Bourbon, winning the head prize for history at the first, and for Latin verse at the second. In 1823 he began to study medicine, and continued the study with diligence and interest for nearly four years, attending lectures on anatomy and physiology and walking the hospitals. But meanwhile a Liberal newspaper, the Globe, was founded in 1827 by M. Dubois, one of Sainte-Beuve's old teachers at the Collége Charlemagne. M. Dubois called to his aid his former pupil, who, now quitting the study of medicine, contributed historical and literary articles to the Globe, among them two, which attracted the notice of Goethe, on Victor Hugo's Odes and Ballads. These articles led to a friendship with Victor Hugo and to Sainte-Beuve's con- nexion with the romantic school of poets, a school never entirely suited to his nature. In the Globe appeared also his interesting articles on the French poetry of the 16th century, which in 1828 were collected and published in a volume, and followed by a second volume contain- ing selections from Ronsard. In 1829 he made his first venture as a poet with the Vie, Poésies, et Pensées de Joseph Delorme. His own name did not appear; but Joseph Delorme, that "Werther in the shape of Jacobin and medical student," as Guizot called him, was the Sainte- Beuve of those days himself. About the same time was founded the Revue de Paris, and Sainte-Beuve contributed the opening article, with Boileau for its subject. In 1830 came his second volume of poems, the Consolations, a work on which Sainte-Beuve looked back in later life with a special affection. To himself it marked and ex- pressed, he said, that epoch of his life to which he could with most pleasure return, and at which he could like best that others should see him. But the critic in him grew to prevail more and more and pushed out the poet. In 1831 the Revue des Deux Mondes was founded in rivalry with the Revue de Paris, and from the first Sainte-Beuve was one of the most active and important contributors. He brought out his novel of Volupté in 1834, his third and last volume of poetry, the Pensées d Aotit, in 1837.

from his lycée no great store.

He himself thought that the activity which he had in the meanwhile exercised as a critic, and the offence which jn some quarters his criticism had given, were the cause of the less favourable reception which this volume received,

He had long meditated a book on Port Royal. At the end of 1837 he quitted France, accepting an invitation

from the academy of Lausanne, where in a series of lectures

his work on Port Royal came into its first form of being. In the summer of the next year he returned to Paris to revise and give the final shape to his work, which, hoy. ever, was not completed for twenty years. In 1840 i. Cousin, then minister of public instruction, appointed him one of the keepers of the Mazarin Library, an appointment which gave him rooms at the library, and, with the money earned by his pen, made him for the first time in his life easy in his circumstances, so that, as he afterwards used

to say, he had to buy rare books in order to spend his in- come.

A more important consequence of his easier cir cumstances was that he could study freely and largely, He returned to Greek, of which a French schoolboy brings With a Greek teacher, M. Pantasides, he read and re-read the poets in the original,

and thus acquired, not, perhaps, a philological scholar’s knowledge of them, but a genuine and invaluable acquaint-

ance with them as literature. His activity in the Revue des Deux Mondes continued, and articles on Homer, Theo- critus, Apollonius of Rhodes, and Meleager were fruits of his new Greek studies. He wrote also a very good article in 1844 on the Italian poet Leopardi; but in general his subjects were taken from the great literature which he knew best, that of his own country, —its literature both in the past and in the contemporary present. Seven volumes of “Portraits,” contributed to the Revue de Paris and the Revue des Deux Mondes, exhibit his work in the years from 1832 to 1848, a work constantly increasing in range and value. In 1844 he was elected to the

French Academy as successor to Casimir Delavigne, and was received there at the beginning of 1845 by Victor Hugo.

From this settled and prosperous condition the revolu- tion of February 1848 dislodged him. In March of that year was published an account of secret-service money distributed in the late reign, and Sainte-Beuve was put down as having received the sum of one hundred franes. The smallness of the sum would hardly seem to suggest cor ruption ; it appears probable that the money was given to cure a smoky chimney in his room at the Mazarin Library, and was wrongly entered as secret-service money. But

on a punctilious delicacy in money matters, was indignant at the entry, and thought the proceedings of the minister of public instruction and his officials, when he demanded to have the matter sifted, tardy and equivocal. He resigned his post at the Mazarin and accepted an offer from the Belgian Government of a chair of French literature in the university of Liége. There he gave the series of lectures on Chateaubriand and his contemporaries which was after- wards (in 1861) published in two volumes. He liked Liége, and the Belgians would have been glad to keep him; put the attraction of Paris carried him back there in the autumn of 1849. Louis Napoleon was then president. Disturbance was ceasing; a time of settled government, which lasted twenty years and corresponds with the second stage of Sainte-Beuve’s literary activity, was beginning. Dr Véron, the editor of the Constitutconnel, proposed to him that he should supply that newspaper with a literaty article for every Monday; and thus the Causeris du Lundi were started. They at once succeeded, and “gav’ the signal,” as Sainte-Beuve himself says with truth, “for the return of letters.” Sainte-Beuve now lived in the sma

house in the Rue Mont-Parnasse (No. 11) which he oc®

Sainte-Beuve, who piqued himself on his independence and

‘

<<

so

the remainder of his life, and where in 1850 his mother, from whom he seems to have inherited his good -gense, tact, and finesse, died at the age of eighty-six. For three years he continued writing every Monday for the Constitutionnel ; then he passed, with a similar engage- ment, to the Moniteur. In 1857 his Monday articles began to be published in volumes, and by 1862 formed a collection in fifteen volumes; they afterwards were resumed under the title of Nouveaux Lundis, which now make a collection of thirteen volumes more. In 1854 M. Fortoul nominated him to the chair of Latin poetry at the College of France. His first lecture there was received with inter- ruptions and marks of disapprobation by many of the students, displeased at his adherence to the empire ; at a second lecture the interruption was renewed. Sainte- Beuve had no taste for public speaking and lecturing ; his frontis mollities, he said, unfitted him for it. He was not going to carry on @ war with a party of turbulent students; he proposed to resign, and when the minister would not accept his resignation of his professorship he resigned its emoluments. The Etude sur Virgile, a volume published in 1857, contains what he had meant to be his first course of lectures. He was still a titular official of public instruction ; and in 1858 his services were called for by M. Rouland, then minister of public instruction, as a lecturer (maitre de conférences) on French literature at the Keole Normale Supérieure. This work he discharged with assiduity and success for four years. In 1859 he was made commander of the Legion of Honour, having twice previously to 1848 refused the cross. During the years of his official engagement his Monday contributions to the Moniteur had no longer been continuous ; but in 1862 an arrangement was proposed by which he was to return to the Constitationnel and again supply an article there every Monday. He consented, at the age of fifty-seven, to try tlris last pull, as he called it, this ‘“dernier coup de collier”; he resigned his office at the Ecole Normale and began the series of his Vouveaue Lundis. They show no falling off in vigour and resource from the Causeries. But the strain upon him of his weekly labour was great. “Tam not a monsieur nor a gentleman,” he writes in 1864, “but a workman by the piece and by the hour.” “I look upon myself as a player forced to go on acting at an age when he ought to retire, and who can see no term to , his engagement.” He had reason to hope for relief. Ex- 1 cept himself, the foremost literary men in France had stood | aloof from the empire and treated it with a hostility more | or less bitter. He had not been hostile to it: he had accepted it with satisfaction, and had

bestowed on its official journal, the Joniteur, the lustre of his literature. The prince Napoleon and the princess Mathilde were his warm friends. A senatorship was mentioned ; its income of £1600 a year would give him opulence and freedom. But its coming was delayed, and the strain upon him con- tinued for some time longer. When at last in April 1865 | he was made senator, his health was already seriously com- promised. The disease of which he died, but of which the doctors did not ascertain the presence until his body was opened after his death—the stone—began to distress and disable him. He could seldom attend the meetings of the senate; the part he took there, however, on two famous occasions, when the nomination of M. Renan to _ the College of France came under discussion in 1867 and the law on the press in the year following, provoked the indignation of the great majority in that conservative assembly. It delighted, however, all who “belonged,” to use his own phrase, “to the diocese of free thought”; and he gave further pleasure in this diocese by leaying at the beginning of 1869 the Moniteur, injudiciously managed

pied for

—

| by the Government and M. Rouher, and contributing to a

Liberal journal, the Zemps. His literary activity suffered little abatement, but the attacks of his malady, though borne with courage and cheerfulness, became more and more severe. Pain made him at last unable to sit to write ; he could only stand or lie. He died in his house in the Rue Mont Parnasse on the 13th of October 1869. He had inherited an income of four thousand francs a year from his mother, and he left it six thousand ; to the extent of eighty pounds a year and no further had literature and the senatorship enriched him. By his will he left directions that his funeral was to be without religious rites, quite simple, and with no speeches at the grave except a few words of thanks from one of his secretaries to those present. There was a great concourse ; the Paris students, who had formerly

interrupted him, came now to do honour to him as a Liberal and a champion of free thought—a senator they could not but admit—undeniably, alas, a senator, but oh, st peu/ Yet his own account of himself is the best and truest, —an account which lays no stress on his Liberalism, no stress on his championship of free thought, but says simply: ‘Devoted to my profession as critic, 1 have tried to be more and more a good, and, if possible, an able workman.”

The work of Sainte-Beuve divides itself into three portions—his poetry, his criticism before 1848, and his criticism after that year. His novel of Volupté may properly go with his poetry.

We have seen his tender feeling for his poetry, and he always maintained that, when the ‘integrating molecule,” the foundation of him as a man of letters, was reached, it would be found to have a poetic character. And yet he declares, too, that it is never without a sort of surprise and confusion that he sees his verses detached from their context and quoted in public and in open day. They do not seem made for it, he says. This admirable critic knew, indeed, what a Frenchman may be pardoned for not willingly perceiving, and what even some Englishmen try to imagine that they do not perceive, the radical in- adequacy of French poetry. For us it is extremely interesting to hear Sainte-Beuve on this point, since it is to English poetry that he resorts in order to find his term of comparison, and to award the praise which to French poetry he refuses. ‘Since you are fond of the poets,” he writes to a friend, “I should like to see you read and look for poets in another language, in English for instance. There you will find the most rich, the most dulcet, and the most new poetical literature. Our French poets are too soon read; they are: too slight, too mixed, too corrupted for the most part, too poor in ideas even when they have the talent for strophe and line, to hold and occupy for long a serious mind.” And again: “If you knew English you would have treasures to draw upon. They have a poetical literature far superior to ours, and, above all, sounder, more full. Wordsworth is not translated ; these things are not to be translated ; you must go to the fountain-head for them. Let me give you this advice: learn English.”

But, even as French poetry, Sainte-Beuve's poetry had faults of its own. Critics who found much in it to praise yet pronounced it a poetry "narrow, puny, and stifled," and its style "slowly dragging and laborious." Here we touch on a want which must no doubt be recognized in him, which he recognized in himself, and whereby he is separated from the spirits who succeed in uttering their most highly inspired note and in giving their full measure,—some want of flame, of breath, of pinion. Perhaps we may look for the cause in a confession of his own: "I have my weaknesses ; they are those which gave to King Solomon his disgust with everything and his satiety with life. I may have regretted sometimes that

I was thus extinguishing my fire, but I did not ever pervert my heart." It is enough for us to take his con- fession that he extinguished or impaired his fire.

Yet his poetry is characterized by merits which make it readable still and readable by foreigners. So far as it exhibits the endeavour of the romantic school in France to enlarge the vocabulary of poetry and to give greater freedom and variety to the alexandrine, it has interest chiefly for readers of his own nation. But it exhibits more than this. It exhibits already the genuine Sainte- Beuve, the author who, as M. Duvergier de Hauranne said in the Globe at the time, 'sent & sa maniére et écrit comme il sent," the man who, even in the forms of an artificial poetry, remains always "un penseur et un homme @esprit." That his Joseph Delorme was not the Werther of romance, but a Werther in the shape of Jacobin and medical student, the only Werther whom Sainte-Beuve by his own practical experience really knew, was a novelty in French poetical literature, but was entirely characteristic of Sainte-Beuve. All his poetry has this stamp of direct dealing with common things, of plain unpretending reality and sincerity; and this stamp at that time made it, as Béranger said, ''a kind of poetry absolutely new in France." It found, therefore, with all its shortcomings, friends in men so diverse as Béranger, Lamartine, Jouffroy, Beyle. Whoever is interested in Sainte-Beuve should turn to it, and will be glad that he has done so.

It has been the fashion to disparage the criticism of the Critiques et Portraits Littéraires, the criticism anterior to 1848, and to saerifice it, in fact, to the criticism posterior to that date. Sainte-Beuve has himself indicated what considerations ought to be present with us in reading the Critiques et Portraits, with what reserves we should read them. They are to be considered, he says, ‘‘ rather asa de- pendency of the elegiac and romanesque part of my work than as express criticisms.” “‘ The Revue des Deux Mondes,” he adds, which published them, was young in those days, “mixed a good deal of its wishes and its hopes with its criticism, sought to explain and to stimulate rather than to judge. The portraits there of contemporary poets and romance-writers can in general be considered, whether as respects the painter or as respects the models, as youth- ful portraits only; juvenis juvenem pinxit.” They have the copiousness and enthusiasm of youth; they have also its exuberance. He judged in later life Chateaubriand, Lamartine, Victor Hugo, more coolly, judged them differ- ently. But the Critiques et Portraits contain a number of articles on personages, other than contemporary French poets and romance-writers, which have much of the sound- ness of his later work, and, in addition, an abundance and fervour of their own which are not without their attraction. Many of these are delightful reading. The articles on the Greek poets and on Leopardi have been already mentioned. Those on Boileau, Moliére, Daunou, and Fauriel, on Madame de la Fayette and Mademoiselle Aissé, may be taken as samples of a whole group which will be found to support perfectly the test of reading, even after we have accustomed ourselves to the later work of the master. Nay, his sober- ness and tact show themselves even in this earlier stage of his criticism, and even in treating the objects of his too fervid youthful enthusiasm. A special object of this was Victor Hugo, and in the first article on him in the Portraits Contemporains we have certainly plenty of en- thusiasm, plenty of exuberance. We have the epithets “adorable,” “sublime,” “supreme,” given to Victor Hugo’s poetry; we are told of “the majesty of its high and sombre philosophy.” All this is in the vein of Mr George Gilfillan. But the article next following this, and written only four years later, in 1835, is the article of a critic, and takes the points of objection, seizes the weak side of

Victor Hugo’s poetry, how much it has of what is “ creyy» “sonore,” “artificiel,” “voulu,” “ théatral,” “ violent,” z distinctly as the author of the Cawseries could seize it, “The Frank, energetic and subtle, who has mastered to perfection the technical and rhetorical resources of the Latin literature of the decadence,” is a description never to be forgotten of Victor Hugo asa poet, and Sainte-Beuye launches it in this article, written when he was but thirty years old, and still a painter of “portraits de jeunesse” only.

He had thus been steadily working and growing ; never. theless, 1848 is an epoch which divides two critics in him of very unequal value. When, after that year of revolution and his stage of seclusion and labour at Liége, he came back to Paris in the autumn of 1849 and commenced in the Constitutionnel the Causeries du Lundi, he was astonish- ingly matured. Something of fervour, enthusiasm, poetry, he may have lost, but he had become a perfect critic—a critic of measure, not exuberant ; of the centre, not pro- vincial ; of keen industry and curiosity, with “Truth” (the word engraved in English on his seal) for his motto; more- over, with gay and amiable temper, his manner as good as his matter,—the “critique souriant,” as, in Charles Mon- selet’s dedication to him, he is called.

Merely to say that he was all this is less convincing than to show, if possible, by words of his own, in what fashion he was all this. The root of everything in his criticism is his single-hearted devotion to truth. What he called ‘fictions ” in literature, in politics, in religion, were not allowed to influence him. Some one had talked of his being tenacious of a certain set of literary opinions. “I hold very little,” he answers, “ to literary opinions ; literary opinions occupy very little place in my life and in my thoughts. What does occupy me seriously is life itself and the object of it.” ‘I am accustomed incessantly to call my judgments in question anew, and to re-cast my opinions the moment I suspect them to be without validity.” “ What I have wished” (in Port Royal) “is to say not a word more than I thought, to stop even a little short of what I believed in certain cases, in order that my words might acquire more weight as historical testimony.” To all exaggeration and untruth, from whatever side it proceeded, he had an antipathy. ‘I turn my back upon the Michelets and Quinets, but I cannot hold out my hand to the Veuillots.” When he was writing for the Joniteur he was asked by the manager of the paper to review a book by an important

personage, a contributor ; his answer is a lesson for critics and paints him exactly. “TI should like to say yes, but I have an insurmountable difficulty as to this author ; he appears to me to compromise whatever he touches; he is violent, and has not the tradition of the things he talks about. Thus his article on Condorcet, which the Moniteur inserted, is odious and false ; one may be severe upon Condorcet, but not in that tone or in that note. The man has no insight—a defect which does not prevent him from having a pen with which at a given moment he can flourish marvellously. But, of himself, he is a gladiator and a desperado. I must tell you, my dear sir, that to have once named him with compliment in some article of mine or other is one of my self-reproaches as @ man of letters. Let me say that he has not attacked me in any way; it is a case of natural repulsion.” a

But Sainte-Beuve could not have been the great eriti¢ he was had he not had, at the service of this his love of truth and measure, the conscientious industry of a Bene dictine. “I never have a holiday. On Monday towards noon I lift up my head, and breathe for about an hour; after that the wicket shuts again and I am in my prison cell for seven days.” The Cauwseries were at this price They came once a week, and to write one of them as he

” wrote it was indeed a week’s work. The “irresponsible

) provider with

‘ndolent reviewer ” should read his notes to his friend and books, M. Paul Chéron of the National Library. Here is a note dated the 2d of January 1853: “ @ood-day and a happy New Year. To-day I set to work on Grimm. A little dry ; but after St Frangois de Sales” (his Monday article just finished) “‘one requires a little relief from roses. I have of Grimm the edition of his

- Correspondence by M. Taschereau. I have also the Memozrs – of Madame @’Epinay, where there are many letters of his.

But it is possible that there may be notzces of him men- tioned in the bibliographical book of that German whose name I have forgotten. I should like, too, to have the jirst editions of his Correspondence ; they came out in successive parts.” Thus he prepared himself, not for a grand review article once a quarter, but for a newspaper review once a week.

His adhesion to the empire caused him to be habitually represented by the Orleanists and the Republicans as without character and patriotism, and to be charged with baseness and corruption. The Orleanists had, in a great degree, possession of the higher press in France and of

_ English opinion,—of Liberal English opinion more especi-

ally. And with English Liberals his indifference to parlia- mentary government was indeed a grievous fault in him ; “you Whigs,” as Croker happily says, “are like quack

- doctors, who have but one specific for all constitutions.”

To him either the doctrine of English Liberals, or the doctrine of Republicanism, applied absolutely, was what he called a “fiction,” one of those fictions which “always end by obscuring the truth.” Not even on M. de Tocque- ville’s authority would he consent to receive “‘les hypothéses

_ dites les plus honorables,”—“‘ the suppositions which pass

for the most respectable.” All suppositions he demanded to sift, to see them at work, to know the place and time and men to which they were to be applied. For the France before his eyes in 1849 he thought that something “solid and stable”—un mur, ‘‘a wall,” as he said—was requisite, and that the government of Louis Napoleon sup- plied this wall. But no one judged the empire more inde- pendently than he did, no one saw and enounced its faults more clearly ; he described himself as being, in his own

_ single person, “‘ the gauche of the empire,” and the descrip- _ tion was just.

_ temper and disposition.

To these merits of mental independence, industry, measure, lucidity, his criticism adds the merit of happy Goethe long ago noticed that,

‘ whereas Germans reviewed one another as enemies whom they hated, the critics of the Globe reviewed one another

as gentlemen. This arose from the higher social develop- meut of France and from the closer relations of literature with life there. But Sainte-Beuve has more, as a critic,

| than the external politeness which once at any rate dis- | tinguished his countrymen: he has a personal charm of

—

, attracted him and he always sought to extricate it.

manner due to a sweet and humane temper. He com- plained of un peu de dureté, “a certain dose of hardness,” in the new generation of writers. The personality of an

_ author had a peculiar importance for him; the poetical

side of his subjects, however latent it might be, always This was because he had in himself the moderate, gracious, amlably human instincts of the true poetic nature. “Let me beg of you,” he says in thanking a reviewer who praised him, “to alter one or two expressions at any rate. I can- not bear to have it said that Iam the jirst in anything whatever, as a writer least of all; it is not a thing which can be admitted, and these ways of classing people give offence.” Literary man and loyal to the French Academy as he was, he can yet write to an old friend after his election: “All these academies, between you and me, are

pieces of childishness; at any rate the French Academy is. Our least quarter of an hour of solitary reverie or of serious talk, yours and mine, in our

youth, was better em- ployed ; but, as one gets old, one falls back into the power of these nothings ; only it is well to know that nothings they are.”

Perhaps the best way to get a sense of the value and extent of the work done in the last twenty years of his life by the critic thus excellently endowed is to take a single volume of the Cawseries du Lundi, to look through its list of subjects, and to remember that with the quali- ties above mentioned all these subjects are treated. Any volume will serve; let us take the fourth. This volume consists of articles on twenty-four subjects. Twenty of these are the following :—Mirabeau and Sophie, Montaigne, Mirabeau and Comte de la Marck, Mademoiselle de Scudéry, André Chénier as politician, Saint-Evremond and Ninon, Joseph de Maistre, Madame de Lambert, Madame Necker, the Abbé Maury, the Duc de Lauzun of Louis XVI.’s reign, Marie Antoinette, Buffon, Madame de Maintenon, De Bonald, Amyot, Mallet du Pan, Marmontel, Chamfort, Ruhliére. Almost every personage is French, it is true; Sainte-Beuve had a maxim that the critic should prefer subjects which he possesses familiarly. But we should re- cognize more fully than we do the immense importance and interest of French literature. Certain productions of this literature Mr Saintsbury may misjudge and over- praise ; but he is entirely right in insisting on its immense importance. More than any modern literature it has been in the most intimate correspondence with the social life and development of the nation producing it. Now it so happens that the great place of France in the world is very much due to her eminent gift for social life and development; and this gift French literature has accom- panied, fashioned, perfected, and continues to reflect. This gives a special interest to French literature, and an interest independent even of the excellence of individual French writers, high as that often is. And nowhere shall we find such interest more completely and charmingly brought out than in the Causeries du Lundi and the Nouveaux Lundis of the consummate critic of whom we have been speaking. As a guide to bring us to a knowledge of the French genius and literature he is unrivalled,—perfect, so far as a poor mortal critic can be perfect, in knowledge of his subject, in judgment, in tact, and tone. Certain spirits are of an excellence almost ideal in certain lines; the human race might willingly adopt them as its spokesmen, recognizing that on these lines their style and utterance may stand as those, not of bounded individuals, but of the human race. So Homer speaks for the human race,

and with an excellence which is ideal, in epic narration ; Plato in the treatment at once beautiful and profound of philosophical questions; Shakespeare in the present- ation of human character; Voltaire in light verse and ironical discussion. A list of perfect ones, indeed, each in his own line! and we may almost venture to add to their number, in his line of literary criticism, Sainte- Beuve. M, A.

SAINTE-CLAIRE DEVILLE, Ertenne Heyrt (1818- 1881), French chemist, was born on 11th March 1818 in the island of St Thomas, West Indies, where his father was French consul. He was educated in Paris along with his elder brother Charles at the Collége Rollin. In 1844, having graduated as doctor of medicine and doctor of science, he was appointed dean of the new faculty of science at Besancon by Thenard. In 1851 he succeeded Balard in the Ecole Normale and in the Sorbonne. He died at Boulogne-sur-Seine on Ist July 1881.

Sainte-Claire Deville began his experimental work in 1841 with investigations on oil of turpentine and balsam of tolu, in the course

of which he discovered the hydro-carbon toluene. But he soon abandoned organic chemistry, and his most important work was in inorganic and thermal chemistry. In 1850 he discovered anhy- drous nitric acid, a substance interesting not only in itself but as the first obtained of an important group, the so-called ‘fanhy- drides” of the monobasic acids. In 1855 he succeeded in obtaining aluminium in mass. This metal, of which elay is the hydrated silicate, is of course one of the most abundant of metals, but was not obtaincd in the metallic state until Wohler in 1827 decomposed its chloride by means of potassium. The aluminium thus prepared was in the form of a fine powder, and, although the isolation of the metal was of great theoretical importance, there did not seem much prospect of a practical application of the discovery. In 1845 Wohler returned to the subject and by using large quantities of material obtained small globules of an obviously metallic character. Deville, who knew only Wohler’s paper of 1827, set to work to prepare aluminium, not for the sake of the metal itself, but with the view of procuring by the action of aluminium on eliloride of aluminium a lower chloride from which a series

of new compounds corresponding to the ferrous salts might be obtained. He did not succeed in this, but he did succeed in producing globules of aluminium of considerable size. This led him to perfect the process, and ultimately he devised a method by which aluminium could be pre- pared on a large scale. The first use to which he put the metal was to make a medal with the name of Wohler and the date 1827. In connexion with the preparation of aluminium may be mentioned Deville's investigations, partly with Wohler, into the allotropic forms of silicon and: boron.

Along with Debray, Deville studied the platinum metals ; their object was on the one hand to prepare the six metals in a state of purity and on the other to obtain a suitable inetal for the standard métre. In the course of these investigations large quantities of platinum and of the alloys of platinum and iridium were fused and east, and the methods used for obtaining the necessary high temperatures were applied to the fusion of other refractory metals, such as eobalt, nickel, chromium, and manganese.

Along with Troost, Deville devised a method for determining the density of vapours at very high temperatures and applied it to the cases of sulphur, selenium, tellurium, zine, cadmium, and many other substances boiling at temperatures up to 1400°C. The interesting and important results have been already described (see CHEMIstry and Morrcuue). Deville made a large number of ingenious experiments on the artificial production of minerals. Among these may be specially mentioned the formation of apatite and isomorphous minerals and of crystallized oxides. Deville and Caron found that when the vapour of a metallic fluoride acts on fused boracie acid the fluorine and the oxygen change places, a metallic oxide remains in erystals, while the gaseous fluoride of boron escapes. In this way they prepared corundum (crystallized oxide of aluminium) and sapphire, rnby and emerald ; coloured forms of corundum were obtained by mixing small quantities of fluoride of chromium with the fluoride of aluminium. Another method discovered by Deville for the preparation of crystallized oxides is of great interest. When an amorphous oxide—such as amorphous ferric oxide —is heated to redness and exposed toa slow current of hydrochloric acid gas, it gradually changes into a crystal- line oxide of the same composition. In this way Deville obtained hematite, tinstone, periclase, and other crystalline oxides. This eonversion of an amorphous into a crystalline

substanee without change of composition, by the action of a gas (in this case hydro- chloric acid) which itself undergoes no change, is one of those mysterious processes which used to be referred to a ‘‘ catalytic force” or called ‘‘actions by contact”; like many such actions, this has been shown by Deville to belong to the same class of phenomena as dissociation.

This leads us to Deville’s greatest contribution to general chemistry. Many chemical actions have been long known which take place either in the one or the other sense according to certain conditions. For instance, if a tube containing metallic iron is heated to redness and steam passed through it, water is decomposed, black oxide of iron is formed, and hydrogen escapes. If, on the other hand, the tube is filled with black oxide of iron and hydrogen passed through, the oxide is reduced and water is formed. Both of these opposite changes occur at the very same temperature. Again, a solution of sulph-hydrate of potassium is completely decomposed by passing a eurrent of earbonie acid gas through it for a sufficient time, sulphuretted hydrogen being given off and bicarbonate re- maining in solution. But exactly the opposite happens if we begin with bicarbonate and pass sulphuretted hydrogen gas through it : carbonic acid gas escapes and the solution ultimately contains nothing but sulph-hydrate. An imperfect, unsatisfactory ex- planation of some of the phenomena of which these are examples was given by Berthollet ; it remained for Deville to give a general theory and show their relation to such physical phenomena as

1 The métre commission fused a quarter of a ton of the alloy at a single operation. ‘

SPTE-CLAIR&® Da ee 2

evaporation and condensation. work on “ Dissociation” and his theoretical discussion of the facts in papers published in the Comptes Rendus. plete and elear account of the whole subject in a lecture delivered before the Chemical Society of Paris in 1866.

This he did by his experimenta]

He gave a very com.

As illustrations we shall take a few cases as different from one

another as possible.

It has long been known that carbonate of lime—limestone—

when heated is decomposed into quicklime and carbonic acid gag and that this decomposition takes place the more quickly the more

thoroughly the carbonic acid produced is removed. Sir James Hall showed that, if the carbonate of lime is heated in a closed vessel strong enough to resist the pressure of the carbonic acid gas, it can be fused, only a small part undergoing decomposition. Deville examined this relation quantitatively and showed that, if in a closed vessel we have quicklime, carbonate of lime, and carbonic acid gas the pressure of the carbonic acid gas depends on the temperature only, and is quite independent of the quantity of the quicklime or of the carbonate of lime, as long as there is some, however little, of both, and is also qnite uninflueneed by the presence of other gases. It will be seen that this case exactly resembles that of the evaporation of water. Ina closed vessel containing liquid water and water-vapour the pressure of the water-vapowr depends on the temperature only and is independent of the quantity of liquid water, as long as there is any, and is not influenced by the presence of © other gases. In both cases, if we disturb the equilibrium and then leave things to themselves the equilibrium is restored. If in the first case we diminish the pressure of the earbonic acid gas, some carbonate of lime decomposes, yielding carbonic acid gas until the pressure is raised to what it was; if we increase the pressure, some of the carbonic acid combines with quicklime until the pressure is reduced to what it was before. In the second case, if we diminish the pressure, some of the liquid water evaporates ; if we increase it, some of the water-vapour condenses, and so the pressure is restored. Rise of temperature eauses in the one case evaporation of water, in the other decomposition of carbonate of lime,—in both increase of pressure. Lowering of temperature causes in the one case condensa- tion of water-vapour, in the other combination of quicklime and carbonic acid gas,—in both diminution of pressure.

As asecond instance we may take the dissociation of water. Just as water-vapour condenses into liquid water under certain condi- tions, but always

with the evolution of heat (latent heat of vapour), so the mixture of oxygen and hydrogen in the proper proportion to form water combines, under certain conditions, to form water-vapour, but always with the evolution of heat (heat of eombination). In both cases we have change of state but no change of composition, and in both we have evolution of leat. In the first case we can reverse the process: heat the liquid water, heat becomes latent, liquid water changes into water-vapour. There isa certain definite pressure of water-vapour corresponding to the temperature: raise the temperature, more water evaporates, the pressure of water- vapour increases. It occurred to Deville, to whom both changes were equally physical, that in the second case the process should be reversible also,—that on heating the water-vapour it ought to decompose into oxygen and hydrogen, heat disappearing here also, and that, as there is a definite pressure of water-vapour correspond: ing to the tenrperature (often called the tension of water-vapour), s0 there should be a definite ratio of the pressure of hydrogen and oxygen to that of water-vapour (the tension of dissociation). Deville showed in the most conclusive manner that this is the case and devised ingenious arrangements for proving the actual occurrence of dissociation.

Another case very fully investigated by Deville is that already mentioned,—viz., the action of water-vapour on iron, and of hydrogen on oxide of iron. He showed that, for a fixed temper ature, water-vapour and hydrogen are in equilibrium in presence of iron and oxide of iron when the pressures of the two gases, hydrogen and water-vapour, are in a certain ratio quite independent of the quantity of the iron or of the oxide of iron, as long as there is some ofeach. Ifthe ratio is changed, say by increasing the pressure of the water-vapour, chemical action takes place : water is decomposed, oxide of iron is formed, and hydrogen set free. Again, if the pressure of the water-vapour is diminished, part of the hydrogen acts on oxide of iron, reducing it and forming water. In both cases the ratio of pressures is restored. This gives an easy explanation of the appa rently anomalous results mentioned above. When a current of hydrogen is passed over oxide of iron the water- vapour produced is swept away as fast as it is formed ; the ratio of the pressure of hydrogen to that of watcr-vapour is therefore always greater than that required for equilibrium and reduction of iron, and formation of water goes on continuously until all the oxide of iron is reduced. In the same way, a current of water-vapour carries away the

hydrogen as fast as it is produced; the ratio of the pressure of hydrogen to that of water-vapour is always less than that required for equili- brium, and the oxidation of iron and production of hydrogen go% on until no metallic iron remains. Exactly the same explanation applies to the action ‘of carbonic acid gas on solution of sulph-

hydrate of potassium, and of sulphuretted hydrogen on solution of

| bicarbonate of potassium. Equilibrium results when the pressures

ii BE

a

—

_ divided and

of the gases are in a certain ratio; if the equilibrium is disturbed chemical action takes place in the direction which tends to restore the equilibrium by reproducing the ratio of pressures. :

The apparatus devised by Deville for detecting and measuring dissociation illustrates his remarkable ingenuity. We shall instance only one example in addition to those already mentioned.

One of the great difficulties in observing dissociation depends on its reversible character. A compound may indeed decompose when raised to a high temperature ; but, if, as we cool it again, reunion oceurs, it is not easy to prove that any chemical change took place. One of the ways in which Deville got over this difficulty was by the use of his “hot and cold tube.” Inside a porcelain tube he placed a metal tube of smaller diameter, so that their axes coincided, leaving an annular space between them. This annular space was closed at both ends, but, by means of side tubes near the ends, could be filled with any gas, or a current of gas could be passed through it. The porcelain tube was raised to a high tempcrature by being placed in a furnace, while the internal metal tube was kept cold by running water through it. By this means he proved the dissociation of carbonic acid gas,

carbonic oxide, and sulphurous acid gas,—the carbon or sulphur being deposited on the outer wall of the cold internal tube, and thus kept at a temperature below that at which recombination could take place.

Deville's observations on dissociation and his generalizations from them have a very direct bearing on the kinetic theory of gases, and it is a fact of interest in the history of science that Deville did not recognize the validity of that theory. Our estimate of the inge- nuity, skill, and patience shown in his experimental work, and of the genius and sound judgment which directed his theoretical conclusions, is perhaps raised when we recollect that he was neither led in the first nor biassed in the second by ideas derived from the kinetic theory, and his hostile or at least neutral attitude towards it gives perhaps greater value to the evidence that his work has contributed to its soundness.

Deville's works were published in the Annales de Chimie et de Physique and in the Comptes Rendus. He further published a volume, entitled De 1' Alumi- nium ; i Propriétés, &., Paris, 1859, and the lecture On Dissociation already referred to.

STE MARIE-AUX-MINES. See Marxircn.

SAINTES, a town of France, the chef-lieu of an arron- dissement in the department of Charente-Inférieure, on the left bank of the Charente, 88 feet above the sea and 45 miles south-east of La Rochelle by the railway from Nantes to Bordeaux. It occupies a delightful position and is of interest for its Roman remains. Of these the best preserved is the triumphal arch of Germanicus, although it has been removed and rebuilt stone by stone. The amphitheatre is larger than those of Nimes, Bordeaux, and Pompeii, and in area (~~89 of an acre) is surpassed only by the Colosseum. The external ellipse was 436 feet long and 354 broad. Rubble embedded in cement is the material of the building, which dates probably from the close of the Ist or the beginning of the 2d century. Measures have been taken to keep the ruins, now made picturesque by trees, from further injury or decay. The capitol was destroyed after the capture of the town from the English by Charles of Alengon, brother of Philip of Valois, in 1330. An ancient hypogeeum is still preserved, as well as numer~~ ous traces of the channels by which water was conveyed to private houses. The antiquarian museum

contains 7000 medals and numerous sculptured pieces. Saintes was a bishop’s see till 1790; the cathedral of St Peter, rebuilt at the close of the 12th century, was almost destroyed by the Huguenots in 1568, As rebuilt between 1582 and

_ 1585 the interior of the church has an unattractive appear- | ance,

| Eutropius (which was founded in the close of the 6th

The tower is 236 feet high. The church of St

century, rebuilt in the 11th, and had its nave destroyed in the Wars of Religion) stands above a very interesting well- lighted crypt, the largest in France after that of Chartres, adorned with richly sculptured capitals and containing the tomb of St Eutropius (4th or 5th century). Notre Dame,

| splendid example of the architecture of the 11th and

12th centuries, with a noble round clock-tower, is unfortu- nately occupied _by the military authorities, who have mutilated the interior. The town, which was

at one time at the head of the department, is still the seat of the courts of assize and has a court-house. Other public buildings are a town-house (Renaissance), a hospital, and a library. Small vessels ascend the river as far as Saintes, which has an advantageous situation between Angouléme and Cognac higher up and Taillebourg and Rochefort farther down, and is the seat of iron and copper foundries, factories for agricultural instruments, cooperages, and skin- dressing establishments. The population in 1881 was 13,341 (15,763 in the commune).

Saintes (Mediolanum or Mediolanium), the capital of theSantones, was a flourishing town before Cexsar’s conquest of Gaul. Chris- tianity was introduced by St Eutropius, its first bishop, in the middle of the 3d century.

Charlemagne rebuilt its cathedral. The Normans burned the town in 845 and 854. Richard Cceur de Lion fortified himself within its walls against his father Henry II., who captured it after a destructive siege. It was not till the reign of

Charles V. that Saintes was permanently recovered from the English. The Protestants did great damage during the Wars of Religion.

ST ETIENNE, an industrial and manufacturing town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Loire, 312 miles south-south-east of Paris and 36 miles south-south-west of Lyons by rail, with a branch line to Le Puy. The coalfield of St Etienne is the richest in France after that of Valenciennes and Pas de Calais, giving employment to 12,000 miners and 5000 workmen at the pit-heads. There are 64 concessions worked by 28 companies, extending over an area 20 miles long by 5 in width; the mineral is of two kinds,—smelting coal (said to be the best in France) and gas coal; the yearly output is between 3,000,000 and 4,000,000 tons, but with a tendency to decrease. In the metallurgic establishments of the arrondissement, which extend all the way along the railway from Firminy to Rive-de-Gier, 5540 workmen are employed, and in 1882 61,127 tons of cast metal, 58,445 tons of iron, 10,815 tons of sheet-iron, and 131,56 kinds were manu- [— : ZS factured. The last- named industry, carried on accord- ing to the Besse- mer and Martin processes, yields } nearly a third of the whole French production of steel. Military and naval material, railway plant, and articles of general mer- chandise are all madeat St Etienne, and its name is especially associ- ated with large castings, bomb- } proof plates, ship- armour, masts, and Jf pieces of machin- ery. The national : ; gun-factory, under Plan of St Etienne. the direction of artillery officers and employing 4300 workmen, is almost exclusively devoted to the produc- tion of rifles and revolvers for the army. A certain number of gun-makers not engaged in the factory turn out from 80,000 to 90,000 firearms (hunting-pieces, revolvers, &c.) per annum. Hardware is manufactured by 60 firms, employing 7000 workmen (who are not, how- ever, exclusively occupied with this department) ; leading articles are locks (known as Forez locks), common cutlery, files, nails, bolts, anvils, vices. Hemp cables for mines,

Mes shy an V, aG Poa We

hats, pottery, and lime are among the miscellaneous manu-

factured products of the town, which is besides a great

centre of the ribbon trade, with a testing-house (condition) for examining the silk, From 500 to 600 tons of silk, valued at £1,200,000 to £1,400,000, are used per annum, and the manufactured articles reach a value ranging from £2,800,000 to £3,200,000. The ribbons, laces, trimmings (in silk, cotton, and india-rubber) produced in the arron- dissement of St Etienne are valued at £4,000,000, and form four-fifths of the total French production. With the exception of a few factories where machinery is employed, the whole manufacture is carried on by persons with small means. About 5C00 looms (Jacquard's permitting thirty- six pieces to be woven at once) and 40,000 workmen are employed. Besides the old abbey church of Valbenoite (outside of the town) with its nave dating from the 13th century, the public buildings comprise a Protestant church, a synagogue, a town-house (finished under the second empire and decorated with statues of the ribbon trade and metallurgy), a school of mines (1816), with a mineralogical and geological collection, and a "palace of the arts," with a museum and library rich in old MSS. and collections in connexion with artillery and natural history. Near Valbenoite in the wooded gorge of the Furens is the reservoir of Gouffre d'Enfer, formed by a dam (1861-1866) 328 feet long, 131 high, and 131 wide at the base, and capable of storing about 70,000,000 cubic feet of water. The population of the town was 28,000 in 1764; by 1876 it was 126,019, but it had decreased to 114,962 (123,813 in the commune) in 1881.

At the close of the 12th century St Eticnne was only a parish of the Pays de Gier belonging to the abbey of Valbenoite. By the middle of the 14th century the coal trade had reached a certain development, and by the close of the eentury the town was sur- rounded with walls and had consuls. A hundred years later it had three growing suburbs. The Wars of Religion stimulated the manufacture of arms, and about the same period the ribbon trade sprang into existence. It was not till the 18th century, however, that

the town entered on its era of prosperity. The royal manu- factory of arms was established in 1764. In 1789 they were pro- ducing at the rate of 12,000 muskets per annum ; between September 1794 and May 1796 they delivered 170,858 ; and 100,000 was the annual average throughout the whole period of the empire, The first railways opened in France were the line between St Etienne and Andrezieu on the Loire in 1828 and that between St Etienne and Lyons in 1831. In 1856 St Etienne became the administrative centre of the department instead of Montbrison. Among the local celebrities are Francis Garnier, who conquered Tongking in 1873,

and several engravers who have given cminence to the St Etienne school of engraving.

ST EUSTATIUS, or St Evstacue, one of the Dutch West India Islands, a dependency of Curagao, lying north- west of St Kitts in 17° 50’ N. lat. and 62° 40’ W. long., consists of two volcanic cones and an intervening valley, and contains the small town of Orangetown and two forts. The population, which from 7600 in 1786 had decreased to 1741 (about 1000 Negroes), was again 2247 in 1882. Between 300 and 400 vessels visit the island annually. Yams and sweet potatoes are exported (5187 and 3010 tons in 1882). The Dutch occupied St Eustatius in 1635, and, after frequent French and English irruptions, were confirmed in their possession of it in 1814.

SAINT-EVREMOND, CHarLes DE MARGUETEL DE SAINT-DENIS, SEIGNEUR DE (1613-1703), was born at Saint- Denis-le-Guast near Coutances, the seat of his family in Normandy, on 1st April 1613. He was a younger son, but took his designation from one of the smaller estates of the family and appears to have had a sufficient portion. He was a pupil of the Jesuits at the Collége de Clermont, Paris, then a student at Caen. For a time he followed the law at the Collége d’Harcourt. He soon, however, took to arms and in 1629 went with Bassompierre to Italy. He served through great part of the Thirty Years’ War, chiefly in Germany, and, meeting Gassendi at Paris, became

strongly imbued with his doctrines. He was present at Rocroy, at Nordlingen, and at Lens. For a time he was attached to Condé, but is said to

have offended him b

some satirical speech or speeches. During the Fronde Saint-Evremond, unlike most of his contemporaries, never changed sides, but was a steady royalist. The duke of Candale (of whom he has left a very severe portrait) gave him some appointments in Guienne, and Saint-Kvremond is said to have saved 50,000 livres in less than three years, He was one of the numerous victims of the fate of Fouquet, His letter to Créqui on the peace of the Pyrenees, which is said to have been discovered by Colbert's agents at the seizure of the superintendent's papers, seems a very in- adequate cause for exile, and it has been supposed that there was more behind ; but nothing is known certainly. Saint-Evremond went to Holland and England, where he was received with open arms by Charles II., and was pen- sioned, He found himself very much at home in England, and though after James II.'s flight to France Saint- Evremond was invited to return he declined. Hortense Mancini, the most attractive of Mazarin's strangely attrac- tive group of nieces, came to England and set up a salon for love-making, gambling, and witty conversation, and here Saint-Evremond was for many years at home. He died on Michaelmas Day 1703, and was buried in West- minster Abbey, where his monument still is in Poet's Corner close to that of Prior.

Saint-Evremond is perhaps the most remarkable instance of the curious 17th-century fancy for circulating literary work in manu- script or clandestinely. He never himself authorized the printing of any of his works during his long lifetime, though Barbin in 1668 published an unauthorized collection. But he empowered Des Maizeaux to publish his works after his death, and they duly appeared, the earliest form and date being 3 vols. 4to, 1705. They were often reprinted in various forms during the first half of the 18th century. Saint-Evremond, however, had made his mark and estab- lished his influence long before the earliest of these books appeared. He was an older man than Pascal, a very much older man than Anthony Hamilton, and he probably preceded the first, as he certainly long preceded the second, in the employment for literary purposes of a singularly light, polished, and_graceful irony, which taught a great deal to Voltaire, but which Voltaire was never able to imitate with quite the air of good company which distinguishes his teacher. The masterpiece of Saint-Kvremond's style

in this respect is the so-called Conversation du Maréchal ad' Hocquincourt avec le Pere Canaye (the latter a Jesuit and Saint- Evremond's master at school), which has been frequently classed with the Lettres Provinciales, but which with less of moral purpose and of cutting reproof even excels those famous compositions in dramatic power and in subtle good-humoured irony. The remainder of Saint-Evremond's works are desultory in the extreme. Some ela- borate letters contain the exposition of an Epicurean philosophy of life which had a very great influence on the polite soeiety of his day. Others, and the most important of all, exhibit the writer as a literary critic of singular discrimination and taste. His com- parisons of Corneille and Racine, his remarks on English drama (ehicfly that of Ben Jonson), his sketches of criticism on Roman character and literature, all show a remarkable union of acute and orderly generalization with freedom from the merely academic spirit which had in his time already begun to beset France. Altogether, Saint-Evremond may be said with greater right to deserve the phrase which used to be applied to Sir William Temple. He 1s the first master of the genteel style in French literature, and the lively poignancy of his irony prevents this gentility from ever becoming insipid. His influence indeed was hardly less in his adopted than in his native country, and it may be traced in the Queen Anne essayists to a not much less degree than in Hamilton and Voltaire.

Saint-Evremond's complete works have not recently been reprinted, but there are selections by Hippeau, Giraud, and others.

ST GALL, in area the sixth (789 square miles), i actual population the fourth (210,491), and in relative density of population the tenth of the Swiss cantons, was formed in 1803 out of the two independent communities of the "town" and the "abbey " (including Toggenburg); Rapperswyl, Uznach, Gaster, Sargans, Gams, Rheinthal, Sax (with Forsteck), which belonged to Zurich, and Wer- denberg, which belonged to Glarus. It encloses the canton

of Appenzell, extending between the Lake of Constance and the Lake of Zurich on the west, and being bounded by the Rhine on the east, while in

the south-west lies the valley occupied by the Wallenstatt Lake and the Linth Canal. The Rhine separates St Gall from Tyrol, and the rest of its frontier is conterminous in succession with Grisons, Glarus, Schwyz, Zurich, and Thurgau. In alti- tude the canton ranges from 1306 feet above the sea (the height of the Lake of Constance) to 10,660 feet in the Ringelspitz of the Sardona group. The arable area is not sufficient to supply the local demand for grain; but the stock-breeding and especially the manufacturing indus- tries, to which a large part of the population is devoted, make up for any agricultural deficiency. Rorschach and Rapperswyl are lake ports; Wyl, Lichtensteig, Altstatten, and Uznach markets of some importance for local pro- jucts. Ironstone is worked in the Gonzen district, and chere are quarries at Rorschach and Bolligen, Mels and Degersheim. Ragatz, the well-known watering-place, is supplied with mineral water from Pfaffers. The people of 3t Gall are three-fifths Roman Catholic and two-fifths Protestant (126,164 and 83,441 in 1880), but, in spite of this and considerable diversities of culture and character ‘rom district to district, a fair degree of harmony has ulti- nately been secured even in the treatment of educational ‘yuestions. The constitution dates from 1861 and was vartially revised in 1875. After being abolished for many years, the death-penalty was re-enacted in 1882. Besides the city of St Gall there were in the canton in 1880 three communes with upwards of 5000 inhabitants each,—Tablat 8092), Wattwyl (a seat of the cotton manufacture, 5283), ud Straubenzell (5026).

ST GALL (German Sankt Gallen), capital of the above anton, occupies along with its suburbs St Fiden, Neudorf, ind Langgasse (to the east), and Lachen and Vonwil (to she west), an area 4 miles long by 1 broad in the high- and valley of the Steinach, which descends north-east .0 the Lake of Constance. On a pillar in the market- olace are the following details :—Lat. 47° 25’ 36” N.; long. (° 2° 27″ KE, from Paris (9° 22’ 41” Green.) ; height above he sea, 2196°6 feet ; mean annual temperature, 45°6; an- ual rainfall, 50 inches ; air-distance from Zurich 39 miles, rom Geneva 174, The only town—not village—in Europe vhich has a higher position than St Gall is Madrid. The Jhief building in St Gall is the abbey, of which (as it ‘vas. originally arranged) a ground plan and description jre given in vol. i. pp. 12, 13. The abbey church, since /846 the Roman Catholic cathedral, was entirely rebuilt n the latter part of the 18th century in the rococo style.

Partly from the desire to include within the choir the jpmbs of the two founders and partly from the hostility vhich long existed between town and tonsure, both the owers (217 feet) are placed at the east end and the main ntrance is in the north side. The whole church has a pngth of 400 feet (with the sacristy 454 feet), and a ‘readth in the nave of 95 feet, a disproportion which is onsiderably disguised by the arrangement of the interior. mong the internal decorations are two colossal statues f St Desiderius and St Mauritius, the original patrons ‘f the church, whose relics were brought from Scotland. ther buildings of importance are the (Protestant) church {St Lawrence, partially rebuilt (1851-53) according to _lans by the Swiss poet Johann G. Miiller, the Government fices on the east side of the abbey-court (where Schéll’s nous relief of the cantons of St Gall and Appenzell is to 8 seen), the town-house, the offices of the Mercantile irectorium (a, 17th-century institution to which the town wes much of its commercial prosperity), the great cantonal :hool—comprising a gymnasium, a technical school (pre- ‘uatory to the polytechnicum at Zurich), and a mercantile

school—the cantonal reformatory of St Jacob, the hospitals, and the infantry and cavalry barracks. In the town park, part of which is occupied by the botanic gardens, stands the public museum, containing natural history collections, the industrial collections and industrial drawing-school of the Mercantile Directorium, the picture gallery of the Art Society, and the antiquarian collections of the Historical Society. The museum of the East Swiss Geographical Commercial Society is located in the cantonal school. – Besides the abbey library, famous for its ancient MSS. (original of the Miebelungenlied, &c.), there is a town library (Bibliotheca Vadiana), founded by the reformer Joachim de Watt or Vadianus. In spite of its position and climate, St Gall is the seat of extensive industries and trades. About 45,000 persons in the surrounding cantons are engaged in the manufacture of embroidered goods, mainly muslins, for the St Gall capitalists, who also em- ‘ploy some 6000 or 7000 women in chain-stitch and hand embroidery. In 1872 6384 machines were at work in this department in the town and vicinity, and in 1882 14,883. The value of textile fabrics and embroidered goods annu- ally exported from St Gall is £3,600,000 to £4,000,000. All round the town the meadows are used as

bleaching- grounds for the webs. In 1870 the population was 16,675, in 1880 21,438.

The abbey of St Gall was named after its founder, a follower of St Columba, who along with Columban left Ireland on the destruc- tion of Bangor and finally settled down in the midst of the great forest which then stretched from the Lake of Constance to the Santis Mountains, for the purpose of converting the Alemanns. On his death on 16th October 625 this apostle of Celtic Christianity was buried in his oratory, and in the 9th century the spot thus con- secrated became the site of the monastic buildings erected by Abbots Gozbert and Grimoald. The foundation was already a wealthy one, and it soon became a great centre of literary and artistic culture, attracting numerous pupils and receiving the homage of dukes and emperors. In the 10th century the abbey and its cluster of houses were surrounded with a wall, which in 954 had to defend the settlc- ment against an attack by a band of Saracens. In the reign of Rudolph of Hapsburg the town obtained a recognition of its com- munal independence from Abbot Ulrich and from the emperor ‘him- self a variety of important privileges. An alliance defensive and offensive was formed in 1312 with Zurich, Constance, and Schaff- hausen ; and, although the prosperity of the town received a severe check by a great conflagration in 1314, the vigour with which the burghers prosecuted the newly introduced linen manufacture soon made it one of the most flourishing towns of Switzerland. About the middle of the 14th century the burghers began to share in the government of the town; and in 1457 they bought up all the claims of the abbots to territorial jurisdiction. In 1454 St Gall joined the confederation of the Swiss towns, Zurich, &. Abbot Ulrich VIIT. determined to remove the abbey to Rorschach ; but the inhabitants of St Gall, Appenzell, &c., combined to destroy his new buildings, and, though St Gall was besieged by the abbot’s supporters and had to pay grievous damages (1490), the treaty which it signed bound the abbots never to attempt to remove the relics of the founder. The abbey, which had purchased the countship of Toggenburg, passed at the Reformation into the hands of the town (1529), but it was restored to the abbots in 1530; and, when in 1712 in the ‘‘Toggenburg War” Zurich and Bern devastated the abbey and its possessions, the townsfolk remained neutral. The final dissolution of the abbey occurred in 1798. Under the French, St Gall was the chief town of the canton of Santis.

SAINT-GERMAIN, Comre bE (d. 1780), a celebrated adventurer of the 18th century who by the assertion of his discovery of some extraordinary secrets of nature exercised considerable influence at several European courts. Of his parentage and place of birth nothing is definitely known ; the common version is that he was a Portuguese Jew. It was also commonly stated that he obtained his money from discharging the functions of spy to one of the Euro- pean courts. He knew nearly all the European languages, spoke good German and English, excellent Italian, French (with a Piedmontese accent), and Portuguese and Spanish with perfect purity. Grimm affirms him to have been the man of the best parts he had ever known. His knowledge of history was comprehensive and minute, and his accom-

2A. == 22

plishments as a chemist, on which he based his reputation, were undoubtedly real and considerable. The most re- markable of his professed discoveries was of a liquid which could prolong life, and by which he asserted he had lived 2000 years. At the court of Louis XV., where he ap- peared about 1748, he exercised for a time extraordinary influence, but, having interfered in the dispute between the houses of Austria and France, he was compelled in June 1760, on account of the hostility of the duke of Choiseul, to remove to England. He appears to have resided in London for one or two years, but was at St Petersburg in 1762, and is asserted to have played an important part in connexion with the conspiracy against the emperor Peter IIl. in July of that year. He then went to Germany, where, according to the Mémoires authentiques of Cagliostro, he was the founder of freemasonry, and initiated Cagliostro into that rite. After frequenting several of the German courts he finally took up his residence in Schleswig-Holstein, where he and the landgrave Charles of Hesse pursued together the study of the “secret” sciences. He died at Schleswig in 1780.

Saint-Germain figures prominently in the correspondence of Grimm and of Voltaire. Sec also Oettinger, Graf Saint-Germain, 1846; Biilau, Geheime Geschichten und rathselhafte Menschen, vol. 1. cap. X11.

Sp GERMAIN-EN-LAYE, a town of France, in the department of Seine-et-Oise, 8 miles north of Versailles and 13 west of Paris by rail. Built on a hill on the left bank of the Seine, nearly 200 feet above the river, and on the edge of a forest 10,000 to 11,000 acres in extent, St Germain has a healthy and bracing air, which makes it a favourite place of summer residence with the Parisians. It had 15,545 inhabitants in 1881 (15,790 in the commune). The terrace of St Germain, constructed by Lenétre in 1672, is 7900 feet long and 100 feet wide, is planted with lime trees upwards of a hundred years old, and affords an extensive view over the valley of the Seine as far as Paris and the surrounding hills; hence it ranks as one of the finest promenades in Europe. It was also after Lendtre's plans that the "parterre" promenade was laid out between the castle and the forest and the "English garden" (by which it is approached). The history of St Germain centres in the castle, now occupied by a museum of national antiquities.

A monastery in honour of St Germain, bishop of Paris, was built in the forest of Laye by King Robert. Louis VI. erected a castle close by. Burned by the English, rebuilt by Louis IX., and again by Charles V., this castle did not reach its full development till the time of Francis I., who may be almost regarded as the real founder of the building. A new castle was erected by Henry IL. ; but it was demolished by the count of Artois, and there remains only the so-called Henry IV. pavilion, now used as an_ hotel, and known as the place where Thiers died, 3d September 1877. The old castle, on the contrary, is being completely restored to the state in which it was under Francis I. The chapel, dating from 1240, is older than the Sainte Chapelle at Paris, and is worthy of note for its rose and other windows. The museum, which will occupy forty rooms, contains a chronological series of artistic and industrial products from the earliest prehistoric times. In the church of St Germain is a mausoleum erected by Queen Victoria to the memory of James II. of England, who found in the old castle (now demolished) an asylum after the Revolution of 1688. In one of the public squares is a statue of Thiers. The town is the scat of one of the cavalry garrisons which surround Paris. At no great distance in the forest is the Couvent des Loges, a branch of the educational establishment of the Legion of Honour (St Denis). The féte des Loges is one of the most popular in the neighbourhood of Paris. Henry II., Charles IX., and Margaret of Navarre were born at St

Germain, as well as Louis XIV., who is said to have removed from this place to Versailles to get away from

the sight of the clock-tower of St Denis, the church where he was to be buried.

ST HELENA, an island in the Atlantic in 15° 55’ 26” S. lat. and 5° 42’ 30” W. long. (Ladder Hill Observa- tory), lies 1140 miles from Africa, 1800 from America, 700 south-east of the island of Ascension (the nearest land), and 4000 from Great Britain, of which it has been

a dependency since 1651. The area is about 45 square miles, the extreme length from south-west to north-east being 104 miles and the extreme breadth 84. The island is a very ancient volcano, greatly changed by oceanic abrasion and atmospheric denudation. The northern rim of the great crater still forms the principal ridge, with the culminating summits of Diana’s Peak (2704 feet) and High Peak (2635); the southern rim has been altogether washed away, though its débris apparently keeps the sea shallow (from 20 to 50 fathoms) for some 2 miles south-east of Sandy Bay, which hypothetically forms the centre of the ring. From the crater wall outwards water-cut gorges stretch in all directions, widening as they approach the sea into valleys, some of which are 1000 feet deep, and measure one-eighth of a mile across at bottom and three- eighths across the top (Melliss). Along the enclosing hill- gides caves have been formed by the washing out of the

Map of St Helena.

softer rocks. High Hill (2823 feet) and High Knoll (1903) are lateral cones. Many dykes and masses of basaltic rock seem to have been injected “subsequently to the last vol canic eruptions from the central crater.” Among the more remarkable instances are the Ass’s Ears and Lot’s Wile, picturesque pinnacles standing out on the south-east part of the crater ridge, and the Chimney on the coast to the south of Sandy Bay. In the neighbourhood of Man and Horse (south-west corner of the island), throughout an area of about 40 acres, scarcely 50 square yards exist not crossed by a dyke. On the leeward side of St Helena the sea-face is

generally formed by cliffs from 600 to 1000 ° feet high, and on the windward side these heights often increase to full 2000 feet, as at Holdfast Tom, Stone Top, and Old Joan Point. Limited deposits of calcareous sand-stones and stalagmitic limestones occur at certain points, as on Sugar-Loaf Hill; they probably consist of particles of shells blown by the wind from some primeval beach, long since destroyed.

As regards its vegetation, St Helena is divided into three 20m', —(1) the coast zone, extending inland for a mile toa mile and 4 half, formerly clothed with a luxuriant vegetation, but now "dry, barren, soilless, lichen-coated, and rocky," with little save prickly pears, wire grass, and Mesembryanthemum ; (2) the middle zone (400- 1800 feet), extending about three-quarters of a mile inland, not so rocky, with shallower valleys and grassier slopes,—the English broom and gorse, brambles, willows, poplars, Scotch pines, &c., being the prevailing forms; and (3) the central zone, about 3 miles long and 2 wide, the last refuge for the most part of that marvellous

hich has been for enerations the admiration and sorrow of ia Aeeenist. We iis: to Mr W. B. Helmsley (who has sum- marized all that is known on the matter in his report on the botany of the Atlantic Islands)," the certainly indigenous species of plants are 65, the probably indigenous 24, and the doubtfully indigenous 5 ; total 94. Of the 38 flowering plants 20 are shrubs

ll trees. ane pgenliar to the island ; and the same is true of 12 of the 27 vascular cryptogams (a remarkable proportion). Since the flora began to be studied, two species—Melhania melanoxylon and Acalypha rubra—are known to have become extinct 5 and at least two others have probably shared the same fate — Heliotropium pennifolium and Demazeria obliterata. Melhania melanoxylon, or ''native ebony," once abounded in parts of the island now barren ; but the local legislation decided that goats were of more value than ebony. Its beautiful congencr Melhania erythroxylon (''red- wood") was still tolerably plentiful in 1810, but is now reduced to a few specimens. Very rare, too, has become Pelargoniwm eotyledonis, called " Old Father Live-for-ever," from its retaining vitality for months without soil or water. Commidendron robustum ("'gumwood "),

a tree about 20 fect high, once the most abundant in the island, was represented in 1868 by about 1300 or 1400 examples ; and Commidendron rugosum (‘‘scrubwood”’) is confined to somewhat limited regions. Both these plants are characterized by a daisy- or aster-like blossom, which looks very strange on a tree. In general the affinities of the indigenous flora of St Helena were described by Sir Joseph Hooker as African, but Mr Bentham points out that the important element of the Compositz shows, at least in its older forms, a connexion rather with South America. The exotic flora introduced from all parts of the world gives the island almost the aspect of a botanic garden. The oak, thoroughly naturalized, grows alongside of the bamboo and banana. As con- tributing largely to the general physiognomy of the vegetation must be mentioned—the common English gorse ; Rubus pinnatus, probably introduced from Africa about 1775 ; Hypochzxris radieata, which above 1500 feet forms the dandelion of the country ; the beautiful but aggressive Buddleia madagascariensis ; Physalis peru- viana ; the common castor-oil plant ; and the pride of India. The peepul is the principal shade tree in Jamestown, and in Jamestown valley the date-palm grows freely. Orange and lemon trees, once common, are now scarce. The attempt (1869-71) to introduce cinchona cultivation failed. Potatoes are probably the staple pro- duction of the St Helena farmers, and as many as three crops per annum are sometimes obtained.

The fauna of St Helena is only second in interest to its flora. Besides domestic animals the only land mammals are rabbits, rats, and mice, the rats being especially abundant and building their nests in the highest trees. Probably the only endemic land bird is the wire bird, Zgialitis sanctz helene ; the averdevat, Java sparrow, cardinal, ground-dove, partridge (possibly the Indian ehukar), pheasant, and guinea-fowl are allcommon. The pea-fowl, at one time not uncommon in a wild state, is long since extermi- nated. Though fresh water abounds in the island in the form of springs, rivulets, and streams, there are no freshwater fish, beetles, orshells. Ofsixty-five species of sea-fish caught off the island seven- teen are peculiar to St Helena ; economically the more important kinds are guard, eel, cod, mackerel, tunny, bullseye, cavalley, flounder, hog-fish, mullet, and skulpin. Mr Wollaston, in Coleoptera Sancte Helene, 1877, shows that out of a total list of 203 species of beetles 129 are probably aboriginal and 128 peculiar to the island, —an individuality perhaps unequalled in the world. More than

two-thirds are weevils and a vast majority wood-borers, a fact which bears out the tradition of forests having once covered the island. The Hemiptera and the land-shells also show a strong residuum of peculiar genera and species. A South-American white ant (Termes tenuis, Hagen.), introduced from a slave-ship in 1840, soon became a real plague at Jamestown, where a considerable portion of the public library fell a prey to its voracity. The honey- bee, which throve for some time after its introduction, again died out. (Comp. Wallace, Island Life.)

The population of St Helena was 6444 in 1871 and 5059 (2617 males, 2442 females) in 1881; it consists of Government officials, of old-established residents (“ yamstalks”) of somewhat composite origin, European and Asiatic, and of the descendants of Negroes landed from the West African slave-ships subsequent to 1840. The only town—Jamestown (3000 inhabitants)—lies in a deep valley on the north-west coast, and there is a village in the neighbouring he 8 Valley. Ladder Hill, the seat of the garrison, is so called rom the almost precipitous ladder-like wooden stair by which its height of 600 feet can be scaled. Longwood, where Napoleon died in 1821, is a farmhouse in an elevated plain (2000 feet high), about 3 miles inland from Jamestown.

d St Helena was discovered by the Portuguese navigator Jodo Be Nova on the 21st of May 1501. The island received its first nown inhabitant in 1513 in the person of Fernandez Lopez, a

1 Voyage of H.M.S. Challenger, Botany, vol. i.

With the cxception of Scirpus nodosus, all the 38 |

Portuguese of good family, who preferred being marooned to re- turning to Europe after the barbarous mutilation to which he had been subjected for some misdemeanour. Cavendish (1588), Kendall (1591), and Lancaster (1593) were the earliest English visitors. The Dutch, who had for some time been in possession of the island, withdrew in 1651, but on two occasions (1665 and 1673) managed to expel the forces of the English East India Company, which had at once seized the abandoned prize. The company,

having procured a second charter of possession on 16th December 1673, remained the governing authority till 22d April 1834, when St Helena passed into the hands of the British crown. In 1832 it had purchased the freedom of the slaves (614) for £28,062. Asa port of call the island continued to prosper till the opening of the Suez Canal, which, by altering the route to the East Indies, deprived the people of their means of subsistence. The revenue has decreased from £13,931 in 1874 to £10,421 in 1884, the expenditure from £14,521 to £10,806, the value of imports from £53,874 to £41,816, and of exports from £4006 to £1436. Halley the astronomer in 1676 left his name to Halley's Mount; and Maskelyne and Waddington

visited the island in 1761.

See Seale, Geognosy of Saint Helena (folio plates), 1834; Brooke, History of Saint Helena, 1808 and 1824; Beatson, Tracts, &c., 1816; Darwin, Geological Observations on Volcanic Islands, 1844; Melliss, Saint Helena, 1875.

ST HELEN'S, a market-town and municipal and parlia- mentary borough of south-west Lancashire, England, is situated on a branch of the London and North-Western Railway, 21 miles west by south of Manchester and 10 east-north-east of Liverpool. It is the principal seat in England for the manufacture of crown, plate, and sheet glass, and has extensive copper smelting and refining works, as well as chemical works, iron and brass foundries, and potteries. There are collieries in the neighbourhood. The town, which is entirely of modern origin, obtained a charter of incorporation in 1868. A town-hall was erected in 1873, and there are also a public library and various institutes for affording instruction and amusement to the working-class population. Extensive drainage works have been carried out under a local Act. The corporation are the owners of the waterworks and gasworks. Enfranchised in 1885, St Helen's returns one member to the House of Commons. The population of the borough (area, 6586 acres) in 1871 was 45,134, and in 1881] it was 57,403.

ST HELIER. See Jersey, vol. xiii. p. 635.

SAINT-HILAIRE. See Grorrroy Saint-HILAIRE,

SAINT-HILAIRE, Aucuste DE (1799-1853), French botanist and traveller, was born at Orleans on 4th October 1799. He began to publish memoirs on botanical subjects at an early age. In 1816-22 and in 1830 he travelled in South America, especially in south and central Brazil, and the results of his personal study of the rich flora of the regions through which he passed appeared in several books and numerous articles in scientific journals. These works are most valuable from the copious information they afford not only about the plants and other natural products but also about the native races he encountered. Those by which he is best known are the Flora Brasiliz Meridionalis (3 vols. folio, with 192 coloured plates, 1825-32), published in conjunction with A. de Jussieu and Cambesséde, Mstozre des plantes les plus remarquables du Brésil et de Paraguay (1 vol. 4to, 30 plates, 1824), Plantes usuelles des Brésilvens (1 vol. 4to, 70 plates, 1827-28), also in conjunction with De Jussieu and Cambesséde, Voyage dans le district des Diamants et sur le littoral du Brésil (2 vols. 8vo, 1833). His numerous articles in journals deal largely with the plants of Brazil and the general characters of its vegetation ; but Saint-Hilaire also aided much in establishing the natural system of classification on the firm basis of structural characters in the flowers and fruits; and that he recognized the importance of the study of anomalies in this view is shown in more than one of his writings. His Lecons de Botanique, comprenant principalement la Morphologie Vége- tale, published in 1840, is a very comprehensive and clear exposition of botanical morphology up to 1840 and of its application to systematic botany. He died at Orleans on 30th September 1853.

172

ST IVES, a seaport and borough of west Cornwall, England, is situated at the west entrance of the beautiful St Ives Bay on the Bristol Channel, 7 miles north of Penzance. The older streets are narrow and irregular, but on the slopes above there are modern terraces with good houses. ‘The town takes its name from St Hya or Ia, an Irish virgin who is said to have arrived in the bay in the 5th century. The parish church of St Andrew is in the Early Perpendicular style of the 15th century. In the churchyard is an ancient cross recently restored. A town-hall was erected in 1832. The town is the head- quarters of the pilchard fishery. The port has suffered greatly from the accumulation of sand. A stone pier was built by Smeaton in 1767 ; a

breakwater was commenced in 1816 but abandoned ; and a wooden pier, which was commenced in 1865, is still unfinished. Formerly the town was called Pendenis or Pendunes. Its charter of incorporation, granted by Charles I. in 1639, was forfeited in 1685, but was renewed by James II. in 1686. From the reign of Jolin until 1832 it sent two members to par- liament, and one from 1832 until 1885, when it was merged in the St Ives division of the county. The popu- lation of the municipal borough (area, 1890 acres) in 1871 was 6965, and in 1881 it was 6445.

ST JEAN BAPTISTE, a suburb of Montreal, Canada, under a separate municipality. It Hes north-north-east of Mount Royal Park and is hardly a mile from the centre of the city. The population in 1881 was 5874.

ST JEAN D'ACRE. See Acre.

ST JEAN D'ANGELY, a town of France, the chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Charente-Infé- rieure, on the right bank of the Boutonne (a right-hand affluent of the Charente) and on the railway from Taille- bourg (12 miles south-west) to Niort (30 miles north). The town, which is badly planned and built, contains the remains of a Benedictine abbey, destroyed in 1568; the existing church corresponds to but a part of the large old abbey church erected in the 13th century. The harbour admits vessels of 30 to 40 tons burden, and wine and brandy are exported. The population was 6538 in 1881 (7279 in the commune).

St Jean owes its origin to a castle of the 7th century, which the dukes of Aquitaine used as a lodge for boar-hunting in the neigh- bouring forest of Angeri. Pippin, son of Louis le Debonnaire, turned it into a monastery, where he deposited the head of John Baptist. This relic attracted hosts of pilgrims ; a town grew up, took the name St Jean d'Angeri, afterwards d'Angély, was fortified in 1131, and in 1204 received from Philip Augustus a communal charter. The possession of the place was disputed between French and English in the Hundred Years' War, and between Catholics and Protestants ata later date. Louis XIII. took it from the Protestants in 1629 and deprived it of its fortifications, its privileges, and its very name, which he wished to change into Bourg-Louis.

ST JOHN, capital of St John county and the largest city of the province of New Brunswick, is strikingly situated at the mouth of the river of the same name, in 45° 146” N. lat. and 66° 3’ 30” W. long (see vol. xvii., plate IV.). It stands on an elevated rocky peninsula which projects into the harbour for a considerable distance. The latter, which is protected by batteries and never freezes, is well equipped with wharves and docks, and is capable of accommodating ships of the largest size. Its entrance is guarded by Partridge Island, lying 2 miles south of the city, and containing the quarantine hospital and light- house. About 1} miles north of the lighthouse is situated the Beacon, and below the town east of the channel is the breakwater, 2250 feet long: The St John river enters the harbour through a rocky and sharply defined gorge, 100 yards wide and about 400 long, having a total fall of about 17 feet, which is passable to ships for forty-five minutes during each ebb and flow of the tide. The river has alternately an inward and an outward fall twice

every twenty-four hours, the high-water tide level imme. diately below the gorge being 6 to 8 feet higher than the average level above the gorge. The river is here spanned by a stanch suspension bridge 640 feet long and 100 fee; above low-water level, and a cantilever railway bridge, 2260 feet long, with a river span of 825 feet, was opened

Plan of St John, New Brunswick.

in 1885. The city, approached from the sea, presents a bold and picturesque appearance, and, next to Quebec,

| possesses more natural beauty than any other town in

Canada. There are three large public squares, and the streets (lighted with gas and the electric light) are regularly laid out. The water supply is derived from Little river, 5 miles distant, and brought to the city by three separate mains with an aggregate capacity estimated at 10,000,000 gallons daily ; the present daily consumption (including that of the city of Portland)-is 5,000,000 gallons. The works, which are owned by the city, cost $992,326. The water supply of St John (West) is derived from Spruce Lake. St John

(East) has also an admirable sewerage system. On the 20th of June 1877 two-fifths of St John (about 200 acres) were destroyed by a fire, which in nine hours burned over $27,000,000 worth of property. The city was quickly rebuilt, and on a much grander scale, many brick and stone edifices taking the place of the old land- marks, which were principally composed of wood, The chief buildings are—the Roman Catholic cathedral, Trinity, St Andrew's, the Stone, St David's, the Centenary, Ger- main Street Baptist, and Leinster Street Baptist churches, the custom-house, post-office, city-hall, savings bank, Wiggins's Orphan Asylum, Victoria skating-rink, lunatic asylum, Victoria and Madras schools, the Masonic and Oddfellows' halls, the young men's Christian association building, the general public, the epidemic, and the marine hospitals, the court-house, jail, police office, and mechanics institute (with a reading-room, library, and museum). There are thirty-three places of worship (Church of England 6, Roman Catholic 3, Presbyterian 7, Wesleyan Methodist 5, Baptist 6, Congregationalist 1, Methodist Episcopal 1, Christian Brethren 1, Disciples of Christ 2, and Christ- adelphians 1); the educational institutions consist of a grammar-school, a Madras school, Baptist seminary, and

——

=

several public and private schools and academies. St John has also a free public library, numerous religious, charitable, scientific, and literary societies, and three daily newspapers. Carleton, on the opposite side of the river, and connected with the east side by ferry, is included within the corpora- tion limits, and is represented in the common council. The population in 1871 was 28,805, in 1881 it was 26,127 (males 12,263, females 13,864), the decrease being caused

by the great fire of 1877, when many persons left the city:

St John is the entrepot of a large extent of country, rich in minerals, agrieultural produee, and timber. It is the seat of an extensive business connexion, and possesses first-class means of communication both by

steamships and sailing vessels and by rail- ways. Of late years its maritime and manufacturing interests have been greatly extended. The chief articles of manufacture are iron- castings, steam engines and locomotives, railway cars, coaches and carriages, machinery, edge-tools, nails and tacks, cotton and woollen goods, furniture, wooden ware, leather, boots and shoes, soap and candles, agricultural implements, lumber, sugar-boxes, paper, boats, sails, &. The fisheries afford employment to about 1000 men, and shad, salmon, holibut, cod, herrings, alewives, sturgeons, and haddock eomprise the chief varieties taken. The exports ($4,310,576 in 1884) consist of fish, lumber, woollen and cotton goods, manu- factured articles, &c. ; the imports ($4,621,691 in 1884) are tobaccos, sugar and molasses, spirits and malt liquors, dried fruits, coffee, tea, silks, velvets, &c. The following figures represent the move- ment of the coasting trade in 1884 :—vessels arrived 1864, tonnage 117,566, men 7340; vessels departed 1941, tonnage 105,050, men 6875. The number of entrances from foreign ports was 1904 (486,471 tons), of clearances 1961 (517,415 tons). The vessels on the re- gistry books (31st December 1884) numbered 677, with a tonnage of 251,136; 58 vessels were built in that year with a tonnage of 18,989. The taxable property in 1885 was—real estate $9,122,000, personal $9,153,300, income $2,833,900, total $21,109,200. The corporation affairs are managed by a mayor, elected by the people annually, and a city council of eighteen members. St John city and county return three members to the House of Commons of Canada, and six members to the House of Assembly of New Brunswick. The climate, though healthy, is changeable, the pleasantest season being the autumn. The highest temperature observed since 1860 was 87° Fahr., and the lowest — 22° Fahr., the mean temperature for spring, summer, autumn, and winter respect- ively being 36°°9, 58°, 45°, and 20° °6. The number of schools is 81, with 4171 pupils (average daily attendance 2722). Besides the libraries belonging to the city and the mechanics' institute, there are large collections of books open to members of the young men's Christian association and the Church of England institute. Navi- gation on St John river opens on 15th April and closes on 26th November.

De Monts visited St John in 1604, but it was not until 1635 that a regular settlement of the place was made, when Charles de la Tour founded a colony, which existed under French rule, with varying fortunes, until 1758, when it finally passed under British control. In 1764 the first Scottish

settlers arrived in New Bruns- wick, and in 1783 the Loyalists landed at St John and established the city. It was called Parr Town, in honour of Governor Parr, until 1785, when it was ineorporated with Conway (Carleton) under royal charter, as the city of St John.

ST JOHN, CHARLES WILLIAM GuorcE (1809-1856), naturalist and sportsman, was the son of General the Hon. Frederick St John, second son of Frederick, second viscount Bolingbroke, and was born 3d December 1809. He was educated at Midhurst School, Sussex, and about 1828 obtained a clerkship in the treasury, but, after joining some friends in various expeditions to the Highlands of Scotland, he found his duties so irksome that he resigned in 1834; The same year he married a lady with some fortune, and was thus enabled to gratify his taste for the life of a sportsman and naturalist. He ultimately settled in the “Laigh ” of Moray, ‘‘ within easy distance of mountain sport, in the midst of the game and wild animals of a low country, and with the coast indented by bays of the sea, and studded with freshwater lakes, the haunt of all the common wild fowl and many of the rarer —_ In 1853 a paralytic seizure permanently deprived a of the use of his limbs, and for the benefit of his

ealth he removed to the south of England. He died at Wooston near Southampton on 22d July 1856.

He wrote several books on sport, whieh record the results of accurate observations on the habits and peculiarities of the birds

and wild animals of the Highlands. They are written in a pleasant and graphic style, and illustrated with engravings, many of them from pen-and-ink sketches of his own, in which the traits and features of the animals are depicted, though in rough outline, yet with almost the vividness of life. His works are Wild Sports and Natural History of the Highlands (1846, 2d ed. 1848, 3d ed. 1861) ; Tour in Sutherland (1849, 2d ed., with recollections by Captain H. St John, 1884); Notes of Natural History and Sport in Morayshire, with Memoir by C. Innes (1863, 2d ed. 1884).

SAINT-JOHN, Henry. See BoLIncBRoKE.

ST JOHN, James Avcustus (1801-1875), traveller and author, was born in Carmarthenshire, Wales, on 24th September 1801. After attending a village grammar-school he received private instruction from a clergyman in thie classics, and also acquired proficiency in French, Italian, Spanish, Arabic, and Persian. At the age of seventeen he went to London, where he obtained a connexion with a Plymouth newspaper, and, along with James Silk Buckingham, became editor of the Oriental Herald. In 1827, along with D. L. Richardson, he founded the London Weekly Review, which was subsequently purchased by Colburn and transformed into the Court Journal. About 1829 he left London for Normandy, and in 1830 published an account of his experiences there under the title Journal of a Residence in Normandy (2 vols.). After spending some time in Paris and Switzerland he set out for Nubia and Egypt, visiting the second cataract in a small vessel. He made important discoveries in regard to volcanic agencies on both sides of the Nile, and found traces of volcanic agency in the Libyan Desert. He also explored the antiquities connected with the religion of ancient Egypt. The results of his journey were published under the titles Zyypt and Mohammed Ali, or Travels in the Valley of the Nile (2 vols., 1834), Egypt and Nubia, (1844), and Isis, an Egyptian Pilgrimage (2 vols., 1853). He died on 22d September 1875.

St John was also the author of Lives of Celebrated Travellers (1830), Anatomy of Society (1831), History, Manners, and Customs of the Hindus (1831), Margaret Ravenscroft, or Second Love (3 vols., 1835), The Hellenes, or Manners and Customs of Ancient Greece (1842), Sir Cosmo Digby, a novel (1844), Views in Borneo (1847), There and Back Again in Search of Beauty (1853), The Nemesis of Power (1854), Philosophy at the Foot of the Cross (1854), The Preach- ing of Christ (1855), The Ring and the Veil, a novel (1856), Life of Louis Napoleon (1857), History of the Four Conquests of England (1862), Weighed in the Balanee, a novel (1864), and Life of Sir oh alter Raleigh (1868). He also edited, with notes, various English classics.

Of his four sons, all of some literary distinction—Percy Boling- broke, Bayle, Spenser, and Horace Roscoe—the second, BAYLE ST JOHN (1822-1869), predeceased him. He was educated privately, and began contributing to the periodicals when only thirteen. At the age of twenty he wrote a series

of papers for Fraser under the title ‘De Re Vehiculari.” To the same magazine he contributed a series of essays on Montaigne, and, after continuing his studies on the same subject for some time, he published in 1857 Montaigne the Essayist, a Biography, in 4 volumes. In 1846 he passed through France and Italy on his way to Egypt, where, during a residence of two years, he wrote The Libyan Desert (1849). On his return he settled for some time in Paris and published Two Years in a Levantine Family (1850) and Views in the Oasis of Siwah (1850). After a second visit to the East he published Village Life in Egypt (1852), From this time he continued until twelve months of his death to reside in France, and as the result of his residence there published Purple Tints of Paris: Characters and Manners in the New Empire (1854), The Louvre, or Biography of a Musewm (1855), and the Subalpine Kingdom, or Experiences and Studies in Savoy (1856). He was also the author of Yravels of an Arab Merchant in the Soudan (1854), Maretimo, a Story of Adventure (1856), and Memoirs of the Duke of Saint-Simon in the Reign of Lowis XIV. (4 vols., 1857). 5

SAINT JOHN OF JERUSALEM, KNicHTs oF THE OrDER oF (see KnicutHoop). In the year 1023 certain merchants of Amalfi obtained permission from the caliph of Egypt to establish a hospital in Jerusalem for the use of “poor and sick Latin pilgrims.” The hospice prospered far beyond the hopes of its founders, and grateful travellers spread its fame throughout Europe and sent offerings to

its funds, while others voluntarily remained behind to assist actively in its pious purposes. With its increased utility organization became necessary, and in this organiza- tion is to be found the origin of the Order of Saint John. When Jerusalem was taken by Godfrey de Bouillon (see Crusapgs), his wounded soldiers were tended by Peter Gerard, rector of the Amalfi hospital of St John, and the more wealthy of the crusaders eagerly followed the example of their leader in endowing so useful and so practical an institution. Many of the Christian warriors sought per- mission to join the ranks of the fraternity. At the pro- posal of Gerard a regularly constituted religious body was formed; the patriarch of Jerusalem invested every approved candidate with a black robe bearing on the breast an eight-pointed white cross and received in return a vow of poverty, obedience, and chastity. In 1113 Pope Paschal II. formally sanctioned the establishment of the order by a bull. Five years later Gerard was succeeded by Raymond du Puy, and under his auspices the monastic knights took a fresh oath to become militant defenders of the cause of the Cross. During the first century of its existence the fraternity thus acquired a religious, republican, military, and aristocratic charactcr. The rules introduced by Raymond du Puy became the basis of all subsequent regulations ; the lead- ing members of the hospital or master’s assistants were formed into an all-powerful council, which divided the order into knights of justice, chaplains, and serving brethren. There was also an affiliation of religious ladies (dames) and of donats or honorary members. The income of the body corporate was derived from landed property in all parts of Europe. To facilitate the collection of rents, commanderies (first called preceptories) were formed. These gradually acquired the character of branch establish- ments where candidates were received and the same obser- vances practised as in the

parent convent. Raymond du Puy twice repulsed the advancing Turks; and Hugh de Payens, fired by the successes of the Hospitallers, founded the sister order of the Temple. In 1160 Raymond du Puy died. The rule of his immediate successors was unevent- ful; Gilbert d'Ascali greatly weakened the influence of the order by joining (1168) in an ill-fated expedition to Egypt. Roger Desmoulins, the eighth master, was killed fighting against Saladin before Jerusalem, while his suc- cessor, Garnier de Napoli, died of the wounds he received in the decisive battle of Tiberias, which led to the surrender of Jerusalem to the Moslems in 1187. The seat of the order was now transferred to Margat, a town which still remained in the possession of the Christians, and it becomes difficult to trace the frequent changes of the mastership. The dangerous enmity which arose between the Hospitallers and the Templars necessitated the energetic intervention of the pope. In 1216 Andrew, king of Hungary, was received into the order. The brief occupations of Jeru- salem by the emperor Frederick IT. (1228) and by Richard of Cornwall (1234) had little appreciable effect on the waning fortunes of the Hospitallers. A savage horde from the borders of the Caspian advanced against the Christians, and in the final struggle with the Chorasmians the masters of both orders—united before the common enemy—fell with nearly the whole of their followers (1244), William de Chateauneuf, elected to the mastership by the few sur- vivors, repaired to Acre only to take part in the fruitless crusade of Louis of France. The truce between the rival orders was doomed to be of short duration. In 1259 their armies met in a general engagement, and victory rested with the Hospitallers. A brief period of success in 1281 was powerless to avert the fall of Margat, and in 1289 Acre alone remained in the hands of the Christians. John de Villiers, a man of singular ability, became at this criti- cal juncture master of the order. An overwhelming force

was sent from Egypt to besiege Acre, which only fell after a desperate resistance. Under cover of the arrows of their archers the knights sailed for Cyprus (1291). Repeated acts of prowess by sea still served to remind the Moslem corsairs of the survival of their implacable foes. De Villiers died three years later and was succeeded by Odon de Pins, who tried

ineffectually to restore the purely con- ventual character of the order. William de Villaret

‘(elected in 1300) shared the dangers of an expedition to

Palestine and prepared for the conquest of Rhodes, which was effected in 1310 by his brother and successor. The revenues of the Hospitallers were now augmented from the confiscated estates of their old rivals the Templars, Fulk de Villaret was attacked at Rhodes by Osman, ruler of Bithynia, but with the assistance of Amadeus of Savoy he defeated the invaders. A serious difference which aroge between De Villaret and his subordinate knights enabled Pope John XXII. to appoint his nominee John de Villa- nova (1319). It was at this period that the order was divided into the seven langues of France, Provence, Au- vergne, Italy, Germany, England, and Aragon. In 1346 De Gozon became grand-master. His administration and that of his immediate successors are only remarkable for a perpetual struggle for supremacy with the papal court. In 1365 Raymond Beranger captured Alexandria in con- cert with the king of Cyprus, but the victors contented themselves with burning the city. Philibert de Naillae had no sooner been elected grand-master than he was sum- moned to join the European crusade against the sultan Bajazet, and took part in the disastrous battle of Nicopolis The Greek emperor unfortunately invoked the aid of Timur, who overthrew Bajazet, but followed up his success by an attack on Smyrna, the defence of which had been entrusted to the knights. Smyrna was taken and its brave garrison put to the sword. In 1440 and 1444 De Lastic defeated two expeditions sent against him from Egypt. Nine years later Constantinople fell at last into the hands of the Turks. It was evident to the knights that an attack on their sanctuary would follow the triumph of Islam, but it was not till 1480 that the long-dreaded descent on Rhodes took place. Fortunately for the order, Peter d’Aubusson was grand-master, and the skilfully planned attack of the three renegades was valorously repulsed. The heroic D’Aubusson recovered from his wounds, restored the shattered fortifications, and survived till 1503. Nearly twenty years passed away before the sultan Solyman de- termined to crush the knights, who had just elected L’Isle d’Adam as their chief. After a glorious resistance, D’Adam capitulated and withdrew with all the honours of war to Candia (Crete). Charles V., when the news of the disaster reached him, exclaimed, “

Nothing in the world has been so well lost as Rhodes,” and five years later (1530), with the approval of the pope, ceded the island of Malta and the fortress of Tripoli in Africa to the homeless knights. Peter Dupont succeeded D’Adam in 1534, and in the following year took a prominent part in the emperor’ famous expedition against Tunis. The position in Tripoli was from the first precarious, and it was surrendered to the corsair Dragut in 1551. In 1557 John La Valette was chosen grand-master. The construction of fresh fortt- fications was hastened and every precaution taken against a surprise. On the 18th May 1565 the Turkish fleet under the redoubtable Dragut appeared in sight and one of the most celebrated sieges in history began. It was finally raised on the 8th September after the death of Dragut and 25,000 of his followers. The city of Valetta afterwards rose on the scene of this desperate struggle. La Valette died in 1568, and no events of importance mark the grand-masterships of De Monte (1568), De la Cassiére (1572), and Verdala (1581). During their terms

2 >_> ~ EE

——

, sent to the grand-master in vain.

SAI—SAI

of office the cathedral, the auberges, the hospital, and many remarkable edifices were built. Another city gradu- ally arose on the opposite shores of the grand harbour, and the once barren island became almost imperceptibly the site of one of the strongest fortresses and most flourishing commercial communities in the Mediterranean. Verdala was succeeded by Martin Garces (1595), but it was reserved for Alof de Vignacourt to revive for a time the military reputation of the order. Vasconcellos, De Paula, and Lascaris were all aged men when, one after another, they were called to the supreme power, and their election (with a view to secure frequent vacancies) contributed to weaken the vitality of the fraternity. Lascaris lived till the age of ninety-seven, built the fortifications of Floriana, en- dowed Valetta with a public library, and resisted the grow- ing encroachments of the Jesuits. Martin de Redin and Raphael Cottoner ruled each for three years. Nicholas Cottoner was elected in 1663, and the knights of St John

once again distinguished themselves in the siege of Candia. The losses which the order sustained in the repulse of the allies before Negropont (1689) was the indirect cause of the death of Caraffa, who was succeeded by Adrian de Vignacourt (1690), Raymond Perellos (1697), Zondodari 1720), De Vilhena (1722), Despuig (1736), and Pinto tray Emmanuel Pinto was a man of no mean ability and of considerable force of character. He steadily resisted all papal encroachments on his authority, expelled the Jesuits from Malta, and declined to hold a chapter-general. After the brief rule of Francis Ximines, Emmanuel de Rohan became grand-master (1775). He assembled a chapter-general, erected the Anglo-Bavarian langue, and sent his galleys to relieve the sufferers from the great earth- quake in Sicily. The order never perhaps seemed to all outward appearances more prosperous than when the storm of the French Revolution broke suddenly upon it. In 1792 the Directory decreed the abolition of the order in France and the forfeiture of its possessions. Five years afterwards De Rohan died. He had taken no pains to conceal his sympathy for the losing cause in France and his court had become an asylum and home for many French refugees. His successor Ferdinand Hompesch was perhaps the weakest mau ever elected to fill a responsible position in critical times. On the 12th April 1798 the French Government resolved on the forcible seizure of Malta. Warnings were Within two months

from that date the island was in the hands of Bonaparte,

and Hompesch was permitted to retire to Trieste with some of the most cherished relics of the order.

Subsequent to the departure of Hompesch a number of the knights who had taken refuge at St Petersburg elected the emperor Paul grand-master. Notwithstanding the patent illegality of the pro- ceeding the proffered honour was eagerly accepted and duly an- nounced to all the courts of Europe (October 1798). Hompesch was induced to resign in the following year. On the death of Paul an arrangement was arrived at which vested the actual nomination in the pope. From 1805 to 1879 only lieutenants of the order were appointed, who resided first at Catania, then at Ferrara, and finally at Rome. In 1879 Leo XIII. made Giovanni Battista Ceschi grand-

master, and he actually rules over portions of the Italian and German langwes and some other scattered groups of the ancient fraternity.

Two other associations also trace their origin from the same parent stock — the Brandenburg branch and the English langue. The former can claim an unbroken existence since its establishment in 1160. In 1853 the king of Prussia (in whom the right of nomina- ao had been vested since 1812) restored the original bailiwick of

pe and the assembled commanders elected Prince Charles of Prussia Herrn Meister, who notified his election to the lieutenant of the grand-master at Rome. The ‘‘ Johanniter” did good service a the German campaigns of 1866 and 1870. As regards the English i 1 Elizabeth c, 24 annexed to the crown all the property of e order in England. After the restoration of the Bourbons the

F i F — knights met once more in chapter-general and elected a _ permanent capitular commission, which was officially recognized

y both Louis

XVIII. i iati those. and the pope. After certain negotiations,

ch langues, acting in accord with those of Aragon

175

and Castile, agreed to the resuscitation of the dormant langue of England (1827-1831), and Sir Robert Peat was appointed lord prior, taking the customary oath de jidelt administratione in the Court of King’s Bench. During the past half century the good work done by the modern knights—now (1886) once more located in St John’s Gate, Clerkenwell—can honourably compare with the memorable deeds of their predecessors. The establishment of the hospice at Jerusalem is due to the energy and zeal of Sir Edmund Lechmere, who has been mainly instrumental in collecting at St John’s Gate the unrivalled historical literature of which the order can boast. There are few subjects of study which present so rich and so varied materials as the annals of the knights of St John. The archives still

preserved in Malta are almost unique in their value and completeness, and each grand-master patronized and encouraged the industrious historiographers who sought to perpetuate the faine of the order to which they belonged. The work of Giacomo Bosio is an elaborate and generally trustworthy record of events from the time of Gerard down to the year 1571. Bartolomeo del Pozzo treats with equal care the period between 1571 and 1636. Editions of these volumes were published in Rome, Naples, Verona, and Venice. The Abbé Vertot concludes his elaborate history with the year 1726. His book enjoyed a considerable popularity, was published in English with the original plates in 1728, but can hardly claim the confidence to which Bosio and Del Pozzo are both entitled. From the 16th century down to the appearance of the famous Codice of De Rohan (1782) we have a series of publications on the subject of the statutes of the order. A fresh compilation seenis generally to have followed each assembly of the chapter- general. Before the time of De Rohan the best-known edition was that of Borgofante (1676), but Bosio produced a translation from the Latin in 1589 when residing at Rome as agent of the grand-master, and another was printed at the press of the order in Malta in 1718. The Memorie de' Gran Maestri by Bodoni (Parma, 1780) may also be consulted with advantage. For information con- cerning the archeology of the order and the antiquities of Malta itself reference should be made to Abela and Ciantar's Malta Illustrata, dedicated to Em. Pinto in 1772; to Raphael Caruana's Collezione di monumenti e lapidi sepolcrali di militi Gerosolimitant nelle chiesa di San Giovanni (Malta, 1838-40) ; to De Bois- gelin's Malia (8 vols.); and to Les Monwmens des Grands Mattres, by Villeneuve-Bargemont (Paris, 1829). The last-named writer has, however, drawn largely on his own imagination for the earlier part of the information he professes to give. In English the most noteworthy treatises concerning the knights are John Taaffe's History of the Order of Malia (London, 1852, 4 vols.) and General Porter's History of the Knights of Malta of the Order of St John of Jerusalem (London, 1883). The Rev. W. R. Bedford has recently published a valuable account uf the great hospital at Valetta. A useful guide to the contents of the Malta Record Office is to be found in M. Delaville Le Roulx's Archives de VOrdre de St Jean de Jerusalem (Paris, 1883). (A. M. B.) ST JOHN'S, the capital of Newfoundland, is situated on the eastern shore of the island, 60 miles north of Cape Race, in 47° 33' 33" N. lat. and 52° 45' 10" W. long. (see vol. xvil., plate V.). It is 10° 52' east of Halifax,

and stands on what is nearly the most eastern point of America, —Cape Spear, 5 miles south of St. John's, alone projecting a little farther towards the Old World. It is 1000 miles nearer than New York to England, and but 1640 from the coast of Ireland. The approach to the harbour of St John's presents one of the most picturesque views along the coast of America. In a lofty iron-bound coast a narrow open- ing occurs in the rocky wall, guarded on one side by Signal Hill (520 feet) and on the other by South Side Hill (620 feet), with Fort Amherst lighthouse on a rocky promontory at its base. The entrance of the Narrows is about 1400 feet in width, and at the narrowest point, between Pancake and Chain Rocks, the channel is not more than 600 feet wide. The Narrows are half a mile in length, and at their termination the harbour trends suddenly to the west, thus completely shutting out the swell from the ocean. Vessels of the largest tonnage can enter at all periods of the tide. The harbour is a mile in length and nearly half a mile in width. At its head is a dry dock, recently completed at a cost of $550,000 ; it is 600 feet in length, 83 in breadth, and 26 in depth, capable of admitting the largest steamers afloat. The city is built on sloping ground on the northern side of the harbour, on the southern side of which the hills rise so abruptly from the water that there is only room for a range of warehouses and oil-factories. Three principal streets, winding and irregular, follow the sinuosities of the harbour and of one another the whole length of the city, and these are intersected by a number of cross-streets. Water Street, the principal business locality, presents a very substantial, though not handsome, appearance, the houses being of stone or brick. Shops, stores, and counting-houses occupy the ground floor, while many of the merchants and shop- keepers live in the upper stories. Fish-stores, warehouses, and wharves project from behind on the side next the

harbour. The city, three-fourths of which are still of

wood, is rapidly extending in several directions, and in recent years many dwelling-houses of an improved descrip- tion have been erected. There is an abundant supply of

excellent water, brought in pipes from a lake 5 miles off.

Epidemics are rare, and the city is very healthy. Of the public buildings the most important are Government House, a substantial and spacious building erected in 1828 by the Imperial Government ; the colonial building (1847), con- taining the chambers of the legislature and Government offices; the atheneum (1877), containing a public hall, library, reading-room, savings bank, museum, &c. The foundation of a new post-office was laid in the same year. The churches are—the Church of England and Roman Catholic cathedrals, St Thomas's and St Mary's (Church of England), St Patrick's, three Methodist churches, St Andrew's Presbyterian church, and the Congregational church. The manufacture of seal and cod oils has long been carried on upon an extensive scale. Of late years other manufactures have been introduced, and have made considerable progress. There are three iron-foundries, two large machine-shops, two boot and shoe factories, a nail-factory, three furniture-factories, two tobacco- factories, soap-works, two tanneries, and a large and well-equipped factory for the manufacture of cables, ropes, twines, nets, seines, &c. The export trade in fish of various kinds, fish oils, seal oil, and seal skins is very large ; the greater part of all the imports into Newfound- land also arrives at St John's. The city is not yet (1886) incorporated, the Colonial Board of Works having charge of all civil affairs. The population, which in 1780 was 1605, had in 1801 increased to 3420, in 1812 to 7075, in 1835 to 15,000, and in 1874 to 23,890, and in 1884 it was 28,610 (Roman Catholics, 17,693; Episcopalians, 5741; Methodists, 3715; Presbyterians, 973; Congrega- tionalists, 465; other denominations, 23). The census last mentioned also shows the population of the whole island and Labrador to be 197,589, being an increase of 36,209 since 1874, or at the rate of about 22 per cent. in ten years. The population of the Atlantic coast of Labrador, which is under the jurisdiction of Newfound- land, was 4211,—1347 being Eskimo.

ST JOHNSBURY, a township of the United States, capital of Caledonia county, Vermont, on the Passumpsic river (a tributary of the river Connecticut), about 50 miles south of the Canadian frontier, and on the railway between Boston (205 miles) and Quebec. St Johnsbury is the seat of perhaps the largest scale-factory in the world, which employs about 600 hands and works up 4000 tons of iron per annum. The township contains an atheneum, public library (10,000 vols.), and art gallery. The popu- lation has increased from 2758 in 1850 to 4665 in 1870 and 5800 in 1880. The

three villages are distinguished as St Johnsbury (3360 in 1880), St Johnsbury Centre, and St Johnsbury East. Founded in 1786, the township received its name in honour of St John de Crévecceur, French consul at New York, and a benefactor of Vermont.

ST JOSEPH, a city of the United States, capital of Buchanan county, Missouri, on the right bank of the Missouri, 260 miles west by north of St Louis. It is an important railway junction, possessing since 1873 a great road and railway bridge over the river constructed of iron; in the extent of its wholesale business it ranks as the second city in the State; and among its manufac- turing establishments are flour-mills, starch-works, boot and shoe factories, pork-packing establishments, waggon-fac- tories, a distillery, &c. Besides a city-hall and market-house, it contains a court-house (1875), an opera-house, a State lunatic asylum (1874), an agricultural and mechanical ex- position association, a Roman Catholic cathedral, and five public libraries. The population was 8932 in 1860, 19,565

(1512 coloured) in 1870, and 32,431 (3227 coloured) in

1880.

Founded in 1843 by Joseph Robidoux, a French Roman Catholic who had settled in the district some years previously as a trader, St Joseph in 1846 was made the county seat, and before 1857, when it received its first city charter, became well known as ile great point of departure for emigrants bound for California and the West. During the Civil War, when it was fortified by the Federals, its natural development was considerably checked, but this revived as soon as tlie struggle was over.

SAINT-JUST, Anrorne (1767-1794), French revoly. tionary leader, was born at Decize in the Nivernais on 25th August 1767. He was educated at Soissons, and showed his character at school as ringleader of a plot to set the school buildings on fire. Saint-Just was caught red- handed in the act of incendiarism, and, refusing to exhibit any tokens of submission, was ignominiously expelled, His education, however, does not appear to have been neglected ; and the reports and speeches of his short and stormy

political career exhibit not a little scholarship, and in particular considerable acquaintance with ancient history. Intoxicated with republican ideas, Saint-Just threw himself with enthusiasm into the political troubles of his time, had himself appointed an officer in the National Guard, and by fraud—he being yet under age—admitted as a member of the electoral assembly of his district, Ambitious of fame, he in 1789 published twenty cantos of licentious verses under the title of Organt, and this work was afterwards reissued under the title of J/y Pastimes; or The New Organt. From that year onwards, however, the open turbulence of his youth gave place to a rigor- ously stoical demeanour, which, united to a policy tyran- nical, uncompromisingly thorough, and pitilessly severe, became the marked and startling characteristic of his life. He now entered into correspondence with Robespierre, who thenceforward became his hero and ideal. Robes- pierre invited him to Paris, felt flattered by his worship,

saw that he suited his purpose, and in a short time the

two became hand and glove. Thus supported, Saint- Just became deputy of the department of Aisne to the national convention, where he made his first speech— gloomy, fanatical, remorseless in tone—on 19th November 1792. He had but twenty months to live; but into these he seemed to crowd the life of twenty years. In the convention, in the Jacobin Club, and among the popu- lace his relations with Robespierre became known, and he was dubbed the “St John of the Messiah of the People.” Hardly a week passed without the attention of France being arrested by his attitude or his utterances. Both were anxiously watched, as the unfailing indication of the trend of Robespierre’s designs. His appointment as a member of the committee of public safety now placed him at the very height and centre of the political fever-heat. In the name of this committee he was charged with the drawing up of reports to the convention upon the absorbing themes of the overthrow of the party of the Gironde, thereafter, when even the “ Mountain” seemed to have fallen in pieces, of the Hébertists, and finally, as the tragic sequel to the rupture between Robes pierre and Danton, of that denunciation of the latter which consigned him and his followers to the guillotine. What were then called reports were far less statements of fact than appeals to the passions; in Saint-Just’s hands they furnished the occasion for a display of fanatical dar- ing, of gloomy eloquence, and of

undoubted genius ; and —wwith the shadow of Robespierre behind them—they served their turn. Once a flash of cruel humour lighted up his angry retorts, and it became memorable. Des moulins, in jest and mockery, said of Saint-J ust—the youth with the beautiful cast of countenance and the long fair locks—‘“ He carries his head like a Holy Sacrament.”

“And J,” savagely replied Saint-Just, ‘‘ will make him carry his like a Saint-Denis.” The threat was not vain: -Desmoulins accompanied Danton to the scaffold. The same ferocious inflexibility animated Saint-Just with reference to the external policy of France. He proposed that the national convention should itself, through its com- mittees, direct all military movements. This was agreed to, and Saint-Just was despatched to Strasburg, in com- any with Lebas, to superintend operations. It was suspected that the enemy without was being aided by treason within. Saint-Just’s remedy was direct and terrible: he followed his experience in Paris, “organized the Terror,” and soon the heads of all suspects were falling under the guillotine. The conspiracy was defeated, and the armies of the Rhine and the Moselle having been inspirited by suc- cess —Saint-Just himself taking a fearless part in the actual fighting—and having effected a junction, the frontier was delivered. Later, with the army of the North, he wrought similar magical changes in the aspect of affairs. Before the generals he placed the terrible dilemma of victory over the enemies of France or trial by the dreaded revolution- ary tribunal ; and before the eyes of the army itself he organized a force which was specially charged with the slaughter of those who should seek refuge from the enemy by flight. Success again crowned his terrible efforts, and Belgium was gained for France. Meanwhile affairs in Paris looked gloomier than ever, and. Robespierre recalled Saint Just to the capital. As the storm was gathering Saint-Just gave it direction by mooting the dictatorship of his master as the only remedy for the convulsions of society. At last, at the famous sitting of the 9th Ther- midor, he ventured to present as the report of the com- mittees of general security and public safety a document expressing his own views, a sight of which, however, had been refused to the other members of committee on the previous evening. Then the storm broke. He was vehemently interrupted, and the sitting ended with an order for Robespierre’s arrest (see RoBESPIERRE). On the follow- ing day, 28th July 1794,

twenty-two men, nearly all young, were guillotined. Robespierre was one, aged thirty-six ; SaintJust another, aged twenty-six.

In 1800 there was published at Strasburg a work from the pen of Saint-Just entitled Fragments on Republican Institutions. It isa crude mixture of his opinions on social and political topics.

ST KILDA, the largest islet of a small group of the

” Outer Hebrides, Scotland, 40 miles west of North Uist, in

| 07° 48° 35” N, lat. and 8° 35’ 30” W. long. It measures 3 miles from east to west and 2 from north to south, and has an area of 3000 to 4000 acres. Except at the landing- place on the south-east, the cliffs rise sheer out of deep water, and on the north-east side the highest eminence in the island, Conagher or Conna-Ghair, forms a gigantic precipice, 1220 feet high from sea to summit. According to Professor Judd, St Kilda is probably the core of a Tertiary voleano ; but, besides volcanic rocks, it is said to contain hills of sandstone in which the stratification is very distinct.t While the general relief is peculiarly bold and picturesque, a certain softness of scenery is produced by the richness of the verdure. The inhabitants are an

industrious Gaelic-speaking community (110 in 1851, and

77 in 1881). They cultivate about 40 acres of land (potatoes, oats, barley), keep about 1000 sheep and 50 West Highland cows, and catch puffins and other sea-fowl. Coarse tweeds and blanketing are manufactured for home use. The houses are collected in a little village at the

head of the East Bay, which contains a Free church, a

manse, and the factor’s house. The island is practically inaccessible for eight months of the year. eee othe yer,

| 1 No trained geologist seems to have visited the island subsequent | to Maeculloch.

St Kilda, or, as it was originally called, Hirt (Hirth, Hyrtha), seems to have been in the possession of the Macleods for 400 or even 500 years. In 1779 it changed hands along with Harris, and again in 1804 and in 1871 (to Macleod of Macleod). The fendal superior is Lord Dunmore, who receives one shilling of feu-duty. From 1734 to 1742 Lady Grange was confined on St Kilda by com- mand of her high-handed husband (see Proceed. Soc. Scot. Antiq., x. aud xi.). David Mallet makes the island the scene of his Amyntor and Theodore, or the Hermit. See works on St Kilda by Rev. K. Macaulay (1764), L. MacLean (1838), J. Sands (1876 and 1877), and George Seton (1878).

ST KILDA, a watering-place in Victoria, Australia, on the east shore of Hobson's Bay, 34 miles south of Mel- bourne, with which it is connected by a railway. The borough had an area of 1886 acres and a population of 11,662 in 1881. The sea-beach is bordered by an esplan- ade; there is a large public park ; and portions of the sea have been fenced-in to protect bathers from sharks. A town-hall, an assembly hall, a library, and the large Episco- pal church of All Saints are among the public buildings.

ST KITTS. See St CuRisTopHER.

SAINT-LAMBERT, Jean Francois DE (1716-1803), French poet, was born at Nancy in 1716, and died at Paris in 1803. During great part of his long life he held various employments at the court of Stanislaus of Poland, when that prince was established in Lorraine. He also served in the French army, and then betook himself to literature, producing among other things a volume of de- scriptive verse, Les Saisons (wildly overpraised at the time, and now never read), many articles for the Encyclopédie, and some miscellaneous works in verse and prose. Saint- Lambert's chief fame, however, comes from the strange fate which made him the successful rival in love of the two most famous men of letters in France, not to say in Europe, during the 18th century. The infatuation of the marquise du Chatelet for him and its fatal termination are known to all readers of the life of Voltaire. His subse- quent courtship of Madame d'Houdetot, Rousseau's Sophie,

‘though hardly less disastrous to his rival, was less dis-

astrous to the lady, and continued for the whole lives of himself and his mistress. They survived till the present century as a kind of irregular Baucis and Philemon, illus- trating the manners of the vanished régime, which had been not unjustly celebrated, and vindicating its constancy from a very general opinion.

ST LAWRENCE. The river St Lawrence? in North Plate America, taken in connexion with the great lakes, offers to lV-

trading vessels the most magnificent system of inland

navigation in the world. Its total length from the source Length.

of the St Louis river, which discharges into Fond du Lac at the head of Lake Superior, to Cape Gaspé is 2100 miles. The river St Louis springs from the same spacious plateau in Minnesota that gives birth to the Mississippi and the Red River of the North. The intermediate distances be- tween the source of the St Lawrence and its mouths are shown in Table I. According to the most recent surveys the approximate area of the basin of the St Lawrence is 510,000 square miles, of which 322,560 belong to Canada and 187,440 to the United States.

Lake Superior, the most westerly of the lakes, is the Lake In addition to Superior.

largest body of fresh water in the world. the river Nipigon, which may be regarded as the chief source of the upper St Lawrence, and the St Louis and Pigeon rivers, which constitute the international boundary, it receives its waters from 200 rivers, draining an aggregate of 85,000 square miles,* including its own area of 32,000.

2 The name given by Jacques Cartier, who ascended the river in 1535 as far as Montreal.

3 The magnitudes and altitudes of the great lakes are derived from the Report of the Canadian Canal Commission, February 1871; the engineering

data relating to canals have been mainly obtained from other annual reports published by the Canadian Government and from the annual reports of the chief of engineers, United States army.

TasiE I.—Distances of Sections of St Lawrence. widened and deepened, and a new lock constructed, 515 feet lon and 80 wide,—the width of the gates being 60 fect, the lift of the

lock 18, and the depth of water on the mitre sills17. There jg now everywhere a navigable depth of 16 feet from Lake Superior Local T Sections of Navi- 3 Bs – through St Mary’s Falls Canal and St Mary’s river to Lake Huron Name. aon ‘ gation. £%|£95| | In 1888 the registered tonnage passing the canal was 2,049,995 ay 3S =,3| | tons,—the annual increase of tounage during the previous fifteen # |2ax%| | years having averaged 107,313 tons. The United States Govern. |] | | ment enginecrs have already presented a project for still further Source of St| Fond du Lac | St Louisriver …... 152} 152 | improvements, namely, to replace the old locks by one only with Louis river } a a “ Fond du Lac | Pointe aux) Lake Superior …... 390 | 542 alae? 700 feet and a width of 70, and with a depth of 21 feet Pins : x : Saulte St Pane aux | St Joseph’s I.) St Mary’sriver …... Sp |p Beye Lake Huron is 270 miles long and 105 broad and le Bs M ins 5 5 3 ma a ee Lake Huron …....| 270} 867] | an area of 23,000 square miles (the area of its basin, Hur, St Mary | Sarnia …... oe [Sear and Detroit) 76 | 943 including the lake, being Fg 4,000), 4 mean depth variously river es . – Amerherst- | Port Golborne, Lake Erie …..... 232 } 1175 | | stated at from 700 to 1000 feet, and an altitude above the bur : Niagara Port Coliiernd Port Dalhousie, Welland Canal …... 27 | 1202 her = oe ee ge a i Ae eS lies river entirely within the region of Canada, whilst ee Port Dalhousie Kingston ….! Lake Ontario …..... 170 | 1372 y é & 4 under Bay Kingston… | Prescott |... Head of canal section | 59 | 1481 | | and Saginaw Bay on the west and south-west are in the Prescott …. | Montreal +9 gal eee Canal! 119 | 1550 State of Michigan. The north and north-east shores 6t Montreal…. | Three Rivers Head of econ navi- 86 | 1686 | | Lake Huron are mostly composed of sandstones and lime. Paenes ate. 2. stones, and where metamorphic rocks

are found the surface Three Rivers | Quebec …... a tidal flow to| 74 | 1710 | | is broken and hilly, rising to elevations of 600 feet or more Quebee ….|Cape Chat .. os 266 | 1976 | | above the lake, unlike in this respect the southern shores Cape Chat ..| Cape Gaspé ..) Mouth of river St) 124) 2100) | skirting the peninsulas of Michigan and south-western Cape Gaspé .. Belle Isle} ..] Mouth of the Gulf of| 486 | 2586 Ontario, which are comparatively flat and of great fertility, H wrence

As in Lake Superior, regular terraces corresponding to

Its leneth is 390 miles, its greatest breadth 160, and its former water-levels of the lake run for miles along the mean breadth 80. Its mean depth is 900 feet and its altitude shores of Lake Huron at heights of 120, 150, and 200 feet; above the sea-level 600 feet. Its coast is generally rock- and deposits of fine sand and clay containing freshwater bound. Numerous islands are scattered about the north shells rise to a height of 40 feet or more above the present side of the lake, many rising precipitously to great heights level of the water. At several places these deposits extend from deep water,—some presenting castellated walls of to a distance of 20 miles inland. ‘The chief tributaries of

1 ins + eat : leva- | the lake on the Canadian side are the French river from ie ee A ‘ a oe Lake Nipissing, the Severn from Lake Simcoe, the Muskoka, |

and Huronian rocks to the north along the shore abound in and the Nottawasaga, all emptying into Georgian Bay; | silver, copper, and iron ores. The United States side is ce United States side the Thunder Bay river, the | generally lower and more sandy than the opposite shore, | “70’s and the Saginaw. _ , and is also especially rich in deposits of native copper and Lake Michigan is entirely in the territory of the United Late bads of red hematite iron ores. Both these minerals-are | tes. It has a maximum breadth of 64 uals and its a extensively worked. Unfossiliferous terraces occur abun- length is 345 miles from the north-west corner of Indiana dantly on the margin of the lake; at one point no fewer and the north part of Illinois to Mackinaw, where it com- ; : : 3 : Z

than seven occur at intervals up to a height of 33 feet ree hese with Lake Huron by a strait 4 miles wide above the present level of the water. Lake

Superior is its narrowest part. Its depth is variously stated fe i subject to severe storms and the effect of the waves upon 700 to I 80 0 feet. Its altitude above sea-level 3s (oi the sandstone of the “picture rocks” of Grand Island pre- Its basin is 70,040 square miles in area, of which the lake sents innumerable fantastic and very remarkable forms. pees n> : ee . its tributaries a ee iy The lake never freezes, but cannot be navigated in winter | > . miles in length. The country =. wal ” mi on account of the shore ice. At the west end of the lake, | 1S *°T the most part low ee a ae — at the mouth of the St Louis, is situated the city of Duluth, Siena 7 ae i Dab iy ma ea a place of considerable importance as the eastern terminus lying in horizontal strata and never rising mto bold ¢ 4 of the Northern Pacific Railway, and of the St Paul and Along the south shore are Post-tertiary beds of clay an Duluth Railway, which runs to St Paul on the Mississippi, sand lying a few feet above the level of the lake, the wile 155 miles couthef Duluahi2 of which probably at one time found their way by the

= St Mary’s river, 55 miles long, is the only outlet from valleys of the Illinois and the Mississippi into the Gulf of

Mary’s Lake Superior, and its course to Lake Huron is but a Mexico.

: : ; ‘ : : i i i is si at the south- je succession of expansions into lakes and contractions into Pes: mh ie ee pate Se hs ee am et ‘rivers. St Mary’s rapids, which in a distance of half a | pork it is the largest markct in the world. In 1883 12,015 vessels

mile absorb 18 feet out of the total fall of 22 feet between | with a tonnage of 3,980,837 tons cleared from the harbour. Com the two lakes, are avoided by a ship canal, constructed | P&™™g the decades of 1864-73 and 1874-88 the total export m

iW 1955 quarters of wheat and corn from Chicago was as follows :— As originally built, the canal was 1 mile long, had a width of 100 Lake. Rail. Total feet at the water line and a depth of 12 feet. The locks were two 1864-73 ….....++43,884,196 6,328,337 50,212,533 in number, combined, each 350 feet in length, 70 in width, with 1874-83 ……... 66,265,175 27,342,140 93,607,315 a lift of 9 feet. At the time the canal was made these dimensions 110,149,371 33,670,477 143,819,848″

were suflicient to pass any vessel on the lakes fully laden, but by . : 799 1870 it became necessary to provide for more rapid lockage and In 1883 the export of grain by the lakes amounted to 6, 850, 7 for the passage of larger vessels. Accordingly the old canal was quarters (of which 68-1 per cent. were shipped direct to Buffalo an only 6-3 per cent. to Kingston and Montreal) as against 8, 146,000 sent by rail. The first appropriation for the harbour of Chicago, 1 The distance from Belle Isle to Liverpool is 2234 statute or 1942. | $$ _____—_———_——___ geographical miles. is 313 feet above the level of Lake Superior, and in some parts 18 UP 2 Lake Nipigon is situated 50 miles to the north of Lake Superior, | wards of 500 feet in depth. The lake is thickly studded with islands ; into which it drains by the river Nipigon ; it is still very little known | its shores are undulating and sometimes hilly ; and owing to its numer except from the report of Professor Bell of the Geological Survey. It ‘ ous indentations its coast-line measures 580 miles.

ik |

i in 1883, was expended in cutting a straight outlet from the ee river into He lake. The available depth was only 2 feet, but since then the harbour accommodation has been extended, by

| means of piers, dredging, and a breakwater, to accommodate vessels

t draught. ‘ Of Ee rocks at Chicago, as well as at othcr lake and river

j f cribs or boxes, composed of logs 12 ar eee icith atone, and Joined to each anes ae hey have finally settled down, by a continuous timber superstructure

raised a few feet above the level of the water. On this plan break-

waters, piers at the mouths of rivers, and wharves have been built within the last sixty years at the most important points along the shores of the St Lawrence lakes, as well as at most of the river harbours communicating with the Atlantic; and experience has proved that no cheaper and better system could have been devised for such localities. i, The St Lawrence leaves Lake Huron by the St Clair lrjver at Sarnia, and after a course of 33

miles enters – | Lake St Clair, 25 miles long, and terminating at the head of the Detroit river, near the city of Detroit in Michigan. Eighteen miles farther on the St Lawrence, with a descent of 11 feet, enters Lake Erie. The navigation through the St Clair river is easy throughout, but in Lake St Clair there are extensive sandbanks covered with a depth of water varying from 6 to 10 feet. Previous to , 1858 much inconvenience was experienced in navigating the lake owing to its insufficient depth; but at the end of that year the Governments of the United States and Canada dredged a canal through the bed of the lake, which is of soft material, to a minimum depth of 12 feet, with a width of 800 feet. This channel has since been deepened to 16 feet over a width of 200 feet, and works are now in progress to deepen the rocky shoal called the "Time-Kiln Crossing" in the Detroit river to 18 feet, to enable vessels drawing 15 feet to pass with safety from lake to lake in stormy weather.

The peculiar features of Lake Erie are its shallowness and the clayey nature of its shores, which are generally low. The south shore is bordered by an elevated plateau, through which the rivers, which are without importance as regards Lake Erie, have cut deep channels. The mean depth of the lake is only 90 feet and its maximum depth 204. Owing to its shallowness it is easily disturbed by the wind, and is therefore the most dangerous to navigate of all the great lakes, Its length is 250 miles and its greatest breadth 60. The area of the basin of Lake Erie is 39,680 square miles, including 10,000 square miles, the area \ of the lake. Its waters are 564 feet above the sea and 330 above Lake Ontario. The extreme difference observed ' in the level of the lake between 1819 and 1838 was 5 feet

2 inches, but the average annual rise and fall (taken on

a mean of twelve years) is only 1 foot 14 inches. The

mean annual rainfall is 34 inches. The navigation of

Lake Erie usually opens about the middle of April and

closes early in December. Besides the Erie and the _ Welland Canals, the lake has two other great canal systems

on its south shore,—the Ohio and Erie Canal, from Cleve- land to Portsmouth, and the Miami and Erie Canal, from

Toledo to Cincinnati.

| Buffalo (population, 171,500 in 1883) is situated at the north- _ east angle of Lake Erie, and is therefore much exposed to the violence of south-west winds, in which direction the lake has a

\) fetch” of 200 miles. Thus more than ordinary care has been _ taken to provide safe harbour accommodation for the large fleets of — constantly arriving at Buffalo from the upper lakes. The Buffalo river, which has been made navigable for more than a mile, A ee at its mouth by a breakwater, 4000 feet long, built at wad half a mile from the shore. The harbour thus formed allows the entrance of vessels of 17 feet draught as against 18 in 1853.

| ot only is the port situated at the head of the Erie Canal and within an hour’s sail of the Welland Canal, but it is the western | ae of the New York Central, Eric, and several other railways. || The possession of these exceptional advantages has constituted | Buffalo the great commercial centre of the inland seas of North America. For the six years ending 1883 the yearly average ship- ments of wheat and corn received by lake at Buffalo, by the Erie

ie | k |

|

)

| }

Fr LAWRENCE

|

Canal, and by rail from elevators was 5,555,000 quarters by canal and 2,320,000 by rail, or 70°20 and 29°80 per cent. respectively. There are 38 elevators in the city, comprising storage, transfer, and floating elevators, with a combined storage capacity of 1,125,000 quarters and a daily transfer capacity of 333,000 quarters. During the ten years ending 1883 the annual average number of lake vessels arriving and departing from Buffalo Creek numbered 7488, the aggregate tonnage was 4,165,098 tons, and the average size of eraft 560 tons,

In 1883 the enrolled tonnage of the United States vessels for the northern lakes, and the enrolled registered tonnage of steam and sailing vessels in the province of Ontario, including tugs and barges on the Ottawa river and barges at Kingston, were as follows (Table II.) :—

United States. Canada, < Aggregate Aggregate ee Tonnage. Ib Tonnage. Sailing vessels …..... 1373 310,454 452 44,000 Steam vessels …..... 1149 304,649 Alay 64,000 Doe 615,103 804 108,000

Freight propellers are now rapidly doing away with sailing vessels, or causing them to be converted into barges or consorts. The rapid increase in their tonnage capacity has been remarkable. In 1841 there was only 1 freight propeller with a tonnage of 128 tons; in 1850 there were 50 with an average of 215 tons, in 1860 there were 197 with an average of 340 tons, and in 1880 there were 202 with an average of 689 tons.

The Erie Canal connects Lake Erie with the Hudson river at Erie Troy and Albany and with Lake Ontario at Oswego. The move- Canal. ment of freight of all kinds by the canal was 3,602,535 tons in 1878, and 3,587,102 in 1883, and the average annual movcment from 1874 to 1883 was 3,447,464 tons. This canal was constructed in 1825 by the State of New York, for the passage of vessels of 60 tons ; but by the year 1862 it was sufficiently enlarged to allow of the passage of vessels of 240 tons. The dimensions and capacity

of the canal and its two principal feeders are given in Table III. :—

Size of Canal. No. & Size of Locks, ; $2 \8sléel% ’ Sh . fs go Ss Bl) os 4 : Locality. mo | ae | ais a8 Ss 8 ct = ax lsh | ce || Se |e oe =I = me) “7)eS | Ro]

OF | zy o = a Balen) 4 Feet. | Feet. | Feet Feet. | Feet. | Feet Buffalo to Albany ….| 351 70 56 7 iy 110 18 655 Oswego to Syracuse ..| 38 70 56 if 18 110 18 155 Lake Champlain to Al-| 66 50 35 5 20 100 18 180 bany

455

Albany to New York | 145 by the Hudson river

The cost of construction, maintenance, and management of the 455 miles of canal up to 30th September 1873 amounted to £17,460,000. A project has for some time been under serious consideration for the enlargement of one tier of the present locks and the deepening of the canal so that between Buffalo and Albany there would no- where be a less depth than 8 feet. The estimated cost of this work is about £1,600, 000.

The Welland Canal flanks the Niagara river and is 27 miles in Welland

length from Port Colborne on Lake Erie to Port Dalhousie on Lake Canal. Ontario. It was opened in 1833 for the navigation of small vessels and was first enlarged in 1844. Vessels, however, continucd to increase in size until in 1860 there were 341 with an aggregate tonnage of 143,918 tons which were unable to pass through the enlarged canal. In 1870 the number that could not pass had increased to 384, with an aggregate tonnage of 194,685 tons; in 1880 to 460, with an aggregate tonnage of 287,342 tons; and in 1883 (notwithstanding the completion of the second enlargement in 1882) to 557, with an aggregate tonnage of 398,808 tons. The cost of the canal including its maintenance up to 30th June 1883 was $20,859,605. Its dimensions are now as follows :—number of lift locks, 25 ; dimensions, 270 by 45 feet ; total rise of lockage, 8263 feet ; depth of water on sills, 12 feet. The movement of freight of all kinds by the canal was 1,330,629 tons in 1878 and 827,196 in 1883, and the average annual movement for the decade ending 1883 was 986,441 tons. This serious falling off in traffic is partly due to the numerous competitors by lake and rail which have sprung up during the last ten years for the transportation of products to the east, but principally to the deepening of the channels and harbours of the upper lakes, a work that has encouraged the construction of

River Niagara.

a class of vessels that cannot make use of the Welland Canal even after its last enlargement. In order to meet this strong competition the Government of the Dominion of Canada was called upon still further to deepen the canal so as to allow the passage of the largest existing lake vessels without lightering ; and in 1886 contracts were concluded for deepening it to 14 feet.

The Niagara river flows from Lake Erie to Lake Ontario in a northerly direction, Its width between Buffalo and Fort Erie (the site of the international iron-trussed rail- way bridge ; see sketch map of Niagara river in vol. xvii. p. 472) is 1900 feet and its greatest depth 48. At this point the normal current is 53 miles an hour,—the ex- treme variation in the level of the river when uninflu- enced by the wind being only 2 feet. During south-west gales, however, the water occasionally rises as much as 4 feet in a few hours, and at such times the current attains a maximum velocity of 12 miles an hour. Two miles below the bridge the river is divided into two arms by Grand Island, at the foot of which they reunite and spread over a width of 2 or 3 miles. The river then becomes studded with islands, until about 16 miles from Lake Erie, after a total fall of 20 feet, it narrows again and begins to descend with great velocity. This is the com- mencement of the rapids, which continue for about a mile with a total descent of 52 feet. The rapids terminate in the great cataract of Niagara, the fall of which on the American side is 164 feet and on the Canadian side 150 feet. The falls are divided by Goat Island, which rises 40 feet above the water and extends to the very verge of the precipice, where the total width of the river, including the island, is 4750 feet. The Horse-Shoe Fall on the Canadian shore is 2000 feet long, and the depth of water on the crest of the fall is about 20 feet. The American fall is only one-half that length, and discharges less than one-fourth the volume of the Horse-Shoe Fall. United, they discharge nearly 400,000 cubic feet per second or 41,000,000 tons per hour. The upper layer of the escarp- ment down which this enormous mass of water leaps con-sists of hard limestone about 90 feet thick, beneath which lie soft shales of equal thickness, which are continually being undermined by the action of the spray, driven violently by gusts of wind against the base of the preci-pice. In consequence of this action and that of the frost, portions of the

incumbent rock overhang 40 feet, and often, when unsupported, tumble down, so that the falls do not remain absolutely stationary in the same spot. Sir C. Lyell in 1842 came to the conclusion that the cataract was receding at an average rate of 1 foot annually, “in which case it would have required 35,000 years for the retreat of the falls from the escarpment at Queens-town to their present site.” From the foot of the falls to Queenstown, a distance of about 7 miles, the river descends 104 feet through a gorge from 200 to 300 feet deep and from 600 to 1200 feet wide. Midway in this deep defile the turbulent waters strike against the cliff on the Canadian side with great violence, and, being thus deflected from west to north, give rise to the dangerous eddy called the “Whirlpool.” The escarpments end abruptly at Queens- town, where the waters suddenly expand to a great width, and finally, 7 miles farther on, tranquilly flow into Lake Ontario.

About one-third of a mile below the cataract a carriage- road suspension bridge (built in 1869 by Mr Samuel Keefer) spans the river with a single opening of 1190 feet, at a height of 190 feet above the water; and 2 miles lower down Roebling’s celebrated railway and road suspension bridge (completed in 1855) crosses the river at a height of 245 feet above the water with a single span of 800 feet. In November 1883 a double-track railway three-span iron and stcel cantilever bridge, situated about 100 yards above Roebling’s bridge, was completed for the

aT LAW ER Ce

New York Central and Michigan Central Railways. The total length of the bridge is 910 feet and that of the centre span 470 feet. The height from the water to the level of the rails is 239 feet.

Lake Ontario is the easternmost and smallest of the Lay great lakes of the St Lawrence system. Its basin draing Ontariy 29,760 square miles, including the lake surface of 6700 square miles. The length of the lake is 190 miles, its greatest width 52 miles, its mean depth 412 feet, and its elevation above the sea 234 feet. It never freezes except near the shore. Its chief tributaries are the Trent on the north shore and the Genesee and the Oswego on the south shore, and its chief ports, Toronto, the capital of Ontario, 32 miles north of Port Dalhousie, at the foot of the Welland Canal; Oswego, at the

south-east angle of the lake; and Kingston, at its north-east extremity, 52 miles north of Oswego. .

Trent river navigation is a term applied to a series of reaches which do not, however, form a connected system of navigation, and which in their present condition are efficient only for local use. The series is composed of a chain of lakes and rivers extending from Trenton, at the mouth of the Trent on the Bay of Quinte, north shore of Lake Ontario, to Lake Huron. The new works (which will have locks 134 feet by 83 feet with a depth of 5 fect on sill) will give communication between Lakefield, 94 miles from Peter- boro, and Balsam Lake, the headwaters of the system, opening up a total of about 150 miles of direct and lateral navigation.

The port of Oswego has been in direct communication with the

Hudson river since 1822, by means of a canal of small capacity as far as Syracuse, and thence by the Erie Canal to Troy and Albany. It is now proposed by the United States Government to enlarge this route under the name of the Oneida Ship Canal, so that vessels arriving from the Welland Canal with cargoes of 50,000 bushels of wheat may be able to tranship them at Oswego into steam barges holding 25,000 bushels, or into barges to be towed with a capacity of 28,000 bushels. The length of the proposed route by the Oneida Lake and Durhamville is 200 miles, with a lockage of 609 feet; and its estimated cost, including 20 ascending and 47 descending locks (each 170 by 28 by 84 feet), is $25,218,857. The Government of the Dominion of Canada has also under consideration the follow- ing projects to connect the St Lawrence with Lake Huron :—(1) the Ottawa and Georgian Bay Canal, from Montreal, by the Ottawa and Lake Nipissing, to French river ; (2) the Toronto and Georgian Bay Canal, by way of Lake Simcoe ; (3) the Hur -Ontario Canal, from Hamilton to Lake Huron, near Port Franks.

Kingston, being the port of transhipment for Montreal Kingsto: of three-fourths of the grain that arrives from the upper to Mont lakes, is a place of some commercial importance. Formerly lake vessels were sent from Chicago to Montreal through the St Lawrence canals without breaking bulk. But it was afterwards found cheaper to transfer grain at Kingston, and to send it down the St Lawrence in barges, the cost of such transfer being only

half a cent per bushel. Kings- ton is also at the south terminus of the Rideau Canal, which connects it with the city of Ottawa.

This canal, 126 miles long, has 33 locks ascending 292 feet and 14 descending 165, and admits vessels 130 by 30 feet drawing 43 feet of water. It was constructed in 1826-82 by the British Govern- ment ata cost of about $4,000,000, chiefly with a view to the defence of the province, but since the opening of the St Lawrence canals it has become of comparatively little importance as a means of transport,—the distance from Montreal to Kingston being 68 miles longer by the Rideau and Ottawa Canals than by the St Lawrence.

Almost immediately aftcr leaving Kingston that part of the St Lawrence commences which is called the Lake of a Thousand Islands. In reality they number 1692, and extend for 40 miles below Lake Ontario. At this point the Laurentian rocks break through the Silurian, am reach across the St Lawrence, in this belt of islands, to unite with the Laurentian Adirondack region in the State of New York. Near Prescott, a town on the Canadian side about 60 miles below Kingston, begins the chain of the St Lawrence canals proper, which were constructed to overcome a total rise of 2064 feet,—the number of locks being 27 and the total length of the six canals 434 miles,

The canals are called, in the order of their descent, the “Galops, “Rapid Plat,” and “ Farran’s Point,” with an aggregate length 0

st- PAW REN C EH

5 oc (the three forming with their intervening 15 miles of Ee ation what is called the Williamsburg Canals), the é¢ Cornwall,” 114 miles long, the fas Beauharnois,” connecting Lakes St Louis and St Francis, 112 miles long, and the ‘‘ Lachine,” 83 miles long. The locks of the first five canals, constructed in 1845-48, are 200 feet in length, with a depth of from 7 to 10 feet on their sills at exceptionally low water, and, with the exception of the “Galops” and “Cornwall,” which are 55 feet wide, their width is 45 feet. The Lachine Canal was begun in 1821 and com- pleted in 1824 for the navigation of vessels drawing 43 feet, but it was not until 1843-48 that it was widened and deepened to the dimensions of the upper canals. It has lately been still further enlarged, and is already provided with locks 270 by

40 feet, with an available depth of 14 feet. The canal was closed on 1st December 1882 and opened on 1st May 1883,—the navigation having been interrupted as usual by the ice for a period of five months. The cost to the provincial and Dominion Government of tl.e six canals, including their maintenance to 30th June 1883, was $14,454,508. The five upper canals are now being enlarged to the dimensions of

the jmproved Lachine Canal.

Near Cornwall, on the left bank, 50 miles below Pres- cott, the intersection of the parallel of 45° determines the point where the St Lawrence and its lakes (Lake Michigan excepted), having been an international boundary from the head of Lake Superior, become exclusively Canadian. Immediately below Cornwall the river flows through Lake St Francis, which has a length of about 30 miles and a width varying from 2 to 5 miles. In the long reach of the river below the lake it has been calculated by the Canadian canal commissioners that the mean volume of water discharged is 510,000 cubic feet per second. Ten miles below the foot of Lake St Francis, near the head of the island of Montreal, the river flows into Lake St Louis, which receives the main body of the Ottawa river, a small fraction of whose waters is delivered into the St Lawrence at the foot of the island 35 miles lower down the stream.

The Ottawa river, which is 600 miles long, drains 60,000 square miles, and contributes a volume of 90,000 cubic feet per second to the St Lawrence, of which it is the largest tributary. Between Lake St Louis and the city of Ottawa, the capital of the Dominion, and perhaps the largest market for lumber in the world, the St Anne’s lock (234 miles from Montreal), Carillon Canal, Chute-a- Blondeau Canal, and the Grenville Canal (633 miles from Montreal) have been constructed, and are now enlarged to 200 by 45 feet, with a depth of 9 feet on their sills, except the Chute-’-Blondeau Canal, whose single lock has still its original dimensions of 130 by 32 feet with only 6 feet on its sill. The total lockage between the Lachine Canal and Kingston by the Rideau Canal (the entrance to which is 1194 miles from Montreal) is 509 feet (345 rise, 164 fall) and the number of locks is 55. On the upper Ottawa—the Culbute Canal and L’Islet rapids—there are two locks 200 feet long, 45 wide, and 6 deep, with a lift of 18 to 20 feet. The

cost of the Ottawa canals, including the Rideau Canal, to 30th June 1883 was $9,126,125.

After leaving Lake St Louis the St Lawrence dashes wildly down the Lachine rapids, a descent of 42 feet in 2 miles, and 8 miles farther on, after passing beneath the 25 spans of the Victoria Tubular Railway Bridge, which has a length of 9144 feet, reaches the quays of Montreal, 198 miles below Kingston. In the beginning of the pre- sent century vessels of over 300 tons burden were unable to reach the city, but by deepening Lake St Peter and the shoals in the St Lawrence between Quebec and Montreal the latter las been made accessible to vessels of 4000 tons burden and drawing 25 feet of water. Work is being steadily continued and will not cease until a depth of 274 feet is attained, so as to enable the largest vessels afloat to reach the long stretch of new deep-water quays. In 1883 the tonnage of the 660 sea-going vessels which visited

the port was 664,263 tons, of which 605,805 belonged to 264 steamships, so that only 9 per cent. of the freight arriving from sea was carried in sailing vessels. The St Lawrence has an average width of 1? miles for 46 miles from Montreal down to Sorel on the right bank, at which point it is joined by the Richelieu river, a tributary that drains 9000 square miles.

The Richelieu river is made navigable from its mouth to Lake Richelieu Champlain, a distance of 81 miles to the United States boundary, river and by a dam and lock at St Ours, half a mile long (14 miles above canal.

Sorel), and a canal of 12 miles in length 32 miles farther up the river, known as the Chambly Canal. These give a navigable depth of 7 feet, allowing vessels 114 feet long, 23 broad, and drawing 64 feet of water, to pass through the canal from end to end. The cost of the works to 80th June 1867 was $756,249. The total length of navigation between Montreal and New York by the Richelieu Canal, Lake Champlain, the Champlain and Erie Canal, Albany, and the Hudson river is 456 miles. The Richelieu Canal, which already carries a freight of 350,000 tons annually, is to be enlarged, and a canal is to be constructed from Lake St Louis at Chaugh-nawaga, above Lachine, to St Johns on the Richelieu river, in con- uexion

with the Chambly Canal, to connect the St Lawrence with Lake Champlain by a new channel, which it is proposed should have the same dimensions as the improved Welland Canal. The cost of the proposed Chaughnawaga Canal, which would have a length of 32 miles and a lockage of only 29 feet, is estimated at

$5,500,000.

Iinmediately below Sorel the river flows into Lake St Sorel to Peter, 20 miles in length by 9 in width, through which Quebec.

prior to 1851 no vessel drawing more than 11 feet could pass. Since then a cutting 300 feet wide has been dredged to a depth of 25 feet. At Three Rivers, 86 miles below Montreal, the St Lawrence first meets the tide and receives from the north the waters from the St Maurice, which drains about 16,000 square miles. Nearing Quebec, the river, which maintains an average width of 14 miles from Lake St Peter, narrows into a width of three-quarters of a mile at Cape Diamond, on the left bank, 160 miles below Mont- real. The depth here is 128 feet and the rise of spring tides 18 feet.

The lower town of Quebec, which has extensive harbour accommodation, is built on reclaimed land around the base of the cape, one of its sides being washed by the river St Charles, which here flows into the St Lawrence. At the mouth of the St Charles the Princess Louise embankment, 4000 feet long by 300 wide, encloses a tidal area of 20 acres, having 24 feet of depth at low water. Connected with it is a wet dock, which is to have a permanent depth of 27 feet with an area of 40 acres. On the opposite side, at Pointe Levis, the Lorne graving-dock is nearly completed. Its dimensions are 500 feet in length, 100 in width, and 254 feet depth of water on its sill, During the year ending June 1884 the departures for sea of vessels from Quebec were 698, with an aggregate burthen of 686,790 tons.

The Canadian Government have sanctioned the proposal to con- struct a railway bridge across the St Lawrence within a few miles of Quebec, at a point where the river narrows to a width of 2400 feet at high water. The area of the waterway at high water is 200,000 square feet and at low water 160,000. For a width of about 1400 fect in the centre of the channel the water shelves rapidly from either shore into deep water, until it attains a

maxi- mum depth of nearly 200 feet. The proposed bridge, as designed by Messrs Brunlees, Light, & Claxton Fidler, will consist of three principal spans, entirely of steel, resting on masonry piers founded on therock. The central span will have a clear width of 1442 feet, the underside of the superstructure being 150 feet above high water.

Seven miles below Quebec the St Lawrence is 4 miles Below wide and divides into two channels at the head of the Quebec.

Island of Orleans, nearly opposite which, on the north shore, are the celebrated falls of Montmorency, with a perpendicular descent of 240 feet and a width of 50 feet. At the foot of the island, which is 22 miles long, the river expands to a width of 11 miles. This width increases to 16 miles 90 miles farther on, at the mouth of the river Saguenay, which drains an area of 23,716 square miles.

About 260 miles below Quebec, between Pointe des Monts on the north and Cape Chat on the south, the St Lawrence has a width of 30 miles, and, as this expanse is doubled 30 miles farther seaward, Cape Chat has been considered by many geographers as the southern extremity of an imaginary line of demarcation between the St Lawrence river and the gulf of the same name. It may, however, be assumed, with more propriety perhaps, taking the con- figuration of the gulf into special account, that Cape Gaspé, about 400 miles below Quebec and 430 miles from the Atlantic at the east end of the Straits of Belle Isle, is the true mouth of the St Lawrence river.

It has been calculated by Darby, the American hydro- grapher, that the mean discharge from the St Lawrence river and gulf, from an area rather largely estimated at 565,000 square miles, must be upwards of 1,000,000 cubic feet per second, taking into account the mean discharge at Niagara, which is 389,000 cubic feet per second from a drainage area of 237,000 square miles, and bearing in mind the well-ascertained fact that the tributaries of the lower St Lawrence, coming from mountainous woody regions where snow falls from 4 to 8 feet in depth, deliver more water per square mile than its upper tributaries.

The great prosperity and growth of Canada are owing no doubt to its unrivalled system of intercommunication by canal and river with the vast territories through

which the St Lawrence finds its way from the far-off

regions of the Minnesota to the seaboard. This great auxiliary of the railways (by means of which trade is now carried on at all seasons) must therefore be prominently taken into account in considering the transport routes of the future, their chief use being, as far as the conveyance of traffic over long distances is concerned, to augment, in the shape of feeders, the trade of the river, as long as it keeps open, and when it closes to continue the circulation of commerce by sledges until the ice breaks up and restores the river to its former activity. By the published statistics of the harbour commissioners of Montreal it appears that during the ten years 1870-79 the opening of the navigation at Montreal varied between 30th March and Ist May, and the close of the navigation between 26th November and 2d January, and that, whilst the first arrival from sea varied from 20th April to 11th May, the last departure to sea only varied from 21st November to 29th November during the ten years. (co. A. H.) According to the chief geographer of the United States Geological Survey, the following were the principal data for the St Lawrence lakes in 1886. Area of basin of St Lawrence 457,000 square miles, of which 330,000 belong to Canada and 127,000 to the United States. Lake Superior—area 31,200 square miles, length 412 miles, maximum breadth 167 miles, maximum depth 1008 feet, altitude above sea-level 602 feet. Lake Huron—area 21,000 square miles, 263 miles long, 101 broad, maximum depth 702 feet, altitude 581 feet. Lake Michigan—area 22,450 square miles, maximum breadth 84 miles, length 345 miles, maximum depth 870 feet, altitude 581 feet. Lake St Clair—29 miles long. Lake Erie—area 9960 square miles, length 250 miles, maximum breadth 60 miles, maximum depth | 210 feet, height above sea-level 578 feet and above Lake Ontario 326 feet. Lake Ontario—area 7240 square miles, length 190 miles, breadth 54 miles, maximum depth 738 feet, elevation 247 feet. In 1885 the enrolled vessels on the St Lawrence lakes belonging to the United States numbered 2497 (steam 1175, sailing

1322) with an aggregate burthen of 648,988 tons (steam 335,859 tons, sailing 313,129 tons).

ST LEONARDS is the name given to the western and more modern part of Hasrines (¢.v.), a watering-place on the coast of Sussex, England. St Leonards proper, which formed only a small part of the district now included under that name, was at one time a separate township. The population of St Leonards in 1881 was 7165.

ST LEONARDS, Epwarp Burtrensnaw SucpEn, Lorp (1781-1875), lord chancellor of England, was the son of a hairdresser in Duke Street, Westminster, and was born in

February 1781. After practising for some years as a cop. veyancer, he was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn in 1807 having already published his well-known treatise on the Law of Vendors and Purchasers. In 1822 he was made king's counsel and chosen a bencher of Lincoln's Inn, He was returned at different times for various boroughs to the House of Commons, where he made himself pro. minent by his opposition to the Reform Bill of 1839. He was appointed solicitor-general in 1829, was named lord chancellor of Ireland in 1834, and again filled the same office from 1841 to 1846. Under Lord Derby's first administration in 1852 he became lord chancellor and was raised to the peerage as Lord St Leonards. In this posi- tion he devoted himself with energy and vigour to the reform of the law; Lord Derby on his return to power in 1858 again offered him the same office, which from con-siderations of health he declined. He continued, however, to take an active interest especially in the legal matters that came before the House of Lords, and bestowed his particular attention on the reform of the law of property. He died at Boyle Farm, Thames Ditton, 29th January 1875,

Lord St Leonards was the author of various important legal publications, many of which have passed through several editions, Besides the treatise on purchasers already mentioned, they include

Powers, Cases deeided by the House of Lords, Gilbert on Uses, New Real Property Laws, and Handybook of Property Law.

ST LO, a town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Manche, on the right bank of the Vire, 195 miles west by north of Paris by the railway which here breaks up into two branches for Coutances and Vire respectively. The old town stands on a rocky hill (110 feet high) commanding the river; the modern town spreads out below, Notre Dame is a Gothic building of the 14th century, with portal and two towers of the 15th. In the town- house is the Torigny marble, commemorating the assem- blies held in Gaul under the Romans and now serving as a pedestal for the bust of Leverrier the astronomer, who was born at St L6. The museum has some good pictures, and in the abbey of St Croix there are windows of the 14th century. The Champs de Mars isa fine tree-planted place. Horse-breeding, cloth and calico weaving, wool spinning, currying and tanning, are the local industries. The population in 1881 was 9889 (10,121 in the commune).

St Lé, founded in the Gallo-Roman period, was originally called Briovira (bridge on the Vire), and afterwards St Etienne, the present name being from one of its bishops (Lo, Laudus), who lived in the 6th century. By the time of Charlemagne the town was already surrounded with walls and contained the abbey, which was sacked by the Normans. In 1141 it fell into the hands of Geoffrey Planta- genet. But in 1203 the castle opened its gates to Philip Augustus, and, weaving being introduced, St L6 soon became a flourishing industrial centre. In the middle of the 14th century Edward II. of England captured the town and according to Froissart obtained immense booty. It was again taken by the English in 1417, but the victory of Formigny (1450) restored it permanently to France. The hearty welcome it gave to the Reformation brought upon St L6 new disasters and new sieges. The revocation of the Edict of Nantes led to the emigration ofa part of the inhabitants. In 1800 the town was made the centre of the department, but by Napoleon’s orders it was deprived of its fortifications.

ST LOUIS, the capital of Senegambia or Senegal, West Africa, and known to the natives as far as Timbuktu as N’dar, is built on an island 10 sea-miles above the mouth of the Senegal river, near the right bank, which is there a narrow strip of sand—the Langue de Barbarie— occupied by the villages of N’dar Toute and Guet N’dar. Two bridges on piles connect the town with the villages; and the Pont Faidherbe, 2132 feet long and constructed in 1863, affords communication with Bouetville, a suburb and the terminus of

the railway, on the left bank. The houses of the European portion of St Louis have for the most part flat roofs, balconies, and terraces. Besides the governor’s residence the most prominent buildings are the cathedral, the great mosque, the court-house, and the

er LOUIS

various barracks and offices connected with the army. The town also contains the Senegal bank (1855), a Govern-

_ ment printing-office (1855), a chamber of commerce (1869), _ a public library, and an agricultural society (1874). The round beehive huts of Guet N’dar are mainly inhabited

by native fishermen. N’dar Toute consists of villas with | gardens, and is frequented as a summer watering-place.

There is a pleasant public garden in the town, and the neighbourhood is rendered attractive by alleys of date- palms. As there are no natural wells on the island, and the artesian well at the north side of the town gives only brackish water, St Louis used to be dependent on rain-

tanks and the river (and except during the rainy season

the water in the lower part of the river is salt); but in 1879 1,600,000 francs were appropriated to the construc-

tion of a reservoir at a height of 300 feet above the sea,

_ 734 miles from the town.

The mouth of the Senegal being

closed by a bar of sand with extremely shifting entrances – for small vessels, the steamships of the great European — lines do not come up to St Louis, and passengers, in order to meet them, are obliged to proceed by rail to Dakar, on _ the other side of Cape Verd. Ordinary vessels have often

_— 1. ——

a ——

to wait outside or inside the bar for days or weeks and

partial unloading is often necessary. It is proposed to construct a pier opposite Guet N’dar. The population of St Louis was 15,980 in 1876 and 18,924 in 1883. Though founded in 1662, the town did not receive a municipal government till August 1872. See SENEGAL. ST LOUIS, a city of the United States, chief city of the State of Missouri, is situated on the west bank of the Mississippi river, 20 miles below its confluence with the Missouri river and 200 miles above the influx of the Ohio, in 38° 38’ 36 N. lat. and 90° 12’ 17” W. long. It is distant by river about 1200 miles from New Orleans, and 729 from St Paul at the head of navigation on the Missis- sippl, and occupies a position near the centre of the great basin through which the mingled flood of the Mississippi and Missouri and their extensive system of tributaries is carried to the Gulf of Mexico. The site embraces a series of undulations extending westwards with a general direction nearly parallel to the river, which at this point makes a wide curve to the east. The extreme length in a straight line is 17 miles, the greatest width 6°60 miles, the length of river front 19°15 miles, and the area (including con- siderable territory at present suburban in character) 624 square miles. The elevation of the city directrix above the waters of the Gulf of Mexico is 428 feet, that of the highest point of ground in the city above the directrix is 203 feet ; the extreme high-water mark above the directrix is 7 feet 7 inches, and the extreme low-water mark below

_ the same is 33 feet 9% inches. The elevated site of the

$$$

_ the blocks follow in numerical order.

city prevents any serious interruption of business by high water, even in seasons of unusual floods.

The plan of the city is rectilinear, the ground being laid out in blocks about 300 feet square, with the general direc- tion of street lines north-south and east-west. The wharf or river front is known as the Levee or Front Street,

the next street west is Main Street, and the next Second, and thence the streets going north-south are, with few excep- tions, in numerical order (Third, Fourth, &e.). Fifth Street has recently been named Broadway. The east-west streets bear regular names (Chestnut, Pine, Washington, Franklin, and the like). Market Street is regarded as the middle of the city, and the numbering on the intersecting streets Commences at that line, north and south respectively. One hundred house numbers are allotted to each block, and The total length of paved streets in St Louis is 316 miles, of unpaved streets and. roads 427, total 743 miles. In the central streets, subject to heavy traffic, the pavement is of granite blocks ;

wood, asphalt, and limestone blocks and Telford pave- ments are also used. There are nearly 300 miles of mac-

p> 7 Z|

1, Four Courts. 7. Union Depét.

2. City Hall. – 8. First Presbyterian Church.

3. Exposition Building. 9. Temple of the Gates of Truth. 4. Custom House. 10. St Peter and Paul Church.

5. Washington University. 11. Lindell Hotel.

6. Court House. {| 12. Southern Hotel.

adamized streets, including the roadways in the new limits. The length of paved alleys is about 66 miles. The city has an extensive sewer system (total length 223 miles), and, owing to the elevation of the residence and business dis- tricts above the river, the drainage is admirable. The largest sewer, Mill Creek (20 feet wide and 15 feet high), runs through the middle of the city, from west to east, following the course of a stream that existed in earlier days. The water-supply is derived from the Mississippi; the water

is pumped into settling basins at Bissell's Point, and thence into the distributing pipes, the surplus flowing to the storage reservoir on Compton Hill, which has a capacity of 60,000,000 gallons. The length of water-pipe is nearly 250 miles; the capacity of the low-service engines which pump the water into the settling basins is 56,000,000 gallons in twenty-four hours, and that of the high-service engines which supply the distributing system 70,000,000 gallons. The average daily consumption in twenty-four hours is nearly 28,000,000 gallons. The works, which are owned by the city, cost over $6,000,000. Among the more

important public buildings are the new custom-house and post-office, erected at a cost of over $5,000,000 ; the mer- chants' exchange, which contains a grand hall 221 feet 10 inches in length by 62 feet 10 inches in width and 60 feet in height ; the court-house, where the civil courts hold their sessions ; the four courts and jail, in which building are the headquarters of the police department and the chambers of the criminal courts; the cotton exchange ; the new ex- position and music-hal] building on Olive Street, erected by public subscription ; and the Crow Museum of Fine Arts. The present city-hall is a large but hardly orna- mental edifice. The mercantile library, on Fifth and Locust Streets, contains nearly 65,000 volumes and also a valuable art collection. The public school library in the polytechnic building has about 55,000 volumes. There are six handsome theatres and various other smaller places of amusement. The public school system of St Louis includes the kindergarten (for which St Louis has become somewhat celebrated), the grammar-schools (including eight grades, of a year each), and a high school, besides the normal school and a school for deaf mutes. The public schools naturally absorb much the largest number of pupils; but the parochial schools and the private schools gathered about the Washington university are also much frequented. The number of pupils in 1883-84 was in the normal school 64, high school 783, grammar-schools 52,280, total in day schools 53,127 ; total in day and evening schools 56,366. The total number of public school buildings is 104, and the value of property used for school purposes $3,229,148; all the school edifices are substantial and convenient, and many architecturally attractive. The receipts of the public school system for 1884 were $941,332, and the

total ex- penditure $934,609, the amount paid to teachers being $632,873. Of parochial schools there are about 75. The Washington and St Louis universities are old and well- established institutions. There are also the Mary Institute and the manual training school, both connected with Wash- ington university, the college of the Christian Brothers, convent seminaries, and numerous medical colleges. In addition there are art schools, singing and gymnastic societies, and other similar organizations and establish- ments. There are published in St Louis four daily news- papers in English and four in German, and also a number of weekly publications.

There are 16 Baptist churches, 8 Congregational, 13 Episcopal, 25 German Evangelical and Lutheran, 6 Hebrew congregations, 18 Methodist Episcopal, 8 Methodist Episcopal Church (South), 25 Presbyterian, 45 Roman Catholic, and 3 Unitarian. Many of the buildings are of imposing proportions, built of stone, massive in character, and with lofty spires. The Roman Catholic cathedral, built in 1830, is the oldest church now in use. On the high ground in the central-western portion of the city (Stoddard's Addition) will be found most of the costly church build- ings, whilst in the northern and southern portions of the city there are very few indeed.

The parks and squares of St Louis number 19, covering nearly 2100 acres. Tower Grove Park, in the south-western suburbs, containing about 266 acres, was presented by Mr Henry Shaw. The smaller parks are situated to the east of Grand Avenue, and the driving parks in the suburbs, —O'Fallon Park (158 acres) at the northern extremity of the city, Forest Park (1372 acres) west of the central portion, Tower Grove in the south-west, and Carondelet (180 acres) in the south. In the immediate vicinity of Tower Grove Park are the Missouri Botanical Gardens, established by Mr Henry Shaw, and containing the most extensive botanical collection in the United States. In addition to the parks, the Fair Grounds in the north-west should be mentioned, where the annual fair is held, and

where there is a permanent zoological department, An aniphitheatre, capable of seating between 20,000 ang 30,000 spectators, and a race-course with a most elabo. rate grand stand, are among the other features. There are

various beer-gardens in the city, largely frequented as pleasure-resorts. There are about 120 miles of street raij. ways in operation.

The following table shows the population of St Louis at different periods :—

DOD cierto see eee 925: | 1856. .c.n0seeeeeee 125,200 WSUOos. ses aoaceenee ees 1,400 | 1866)... .cccceeeee 204,327 TS 20s eee 4,928 | 1870 (United States

S80 cocicdteeen coeiokes 5,862 CeHSUS) ..a0.2 ee 310,864 DCRR set onsee concn 16,469 | 1880 ence 350,518 UG15) Usmemeeted saan orocone 74,489

The figures of the United States census are strictly con- – fined to municipal limits, and do not include the residents of East St Louis and of various suburban localities, pro- perly a part of the city population. In 1880 the popula. tion (179,520 males, 170,998 females) was divided as follows :— native, 245,505; foreign-born, 105,013. Of the latter 36,309 came from Great Britain (28,536 Irish) and 54,901 from Germany. The death-rate per thousand in 1882 was 19°6, in 1883 it was 20°4, and in 1885 (population being estimated at 400,000) it was 19-7.

The police force, including detectives and employés, numbers about 500 men. The fire brigade numbers 250 men, with 22 engine. — houses. The city has three public hospitals, an asylum for the insane, a poorhouse, a workhouse for the confinement and employ- ment of prisoners charged with petty offences, and a house of refuge which is a reformatory institution for juvenile offenders and for the education of children thrown upon the care of the city by abandonment or otherwise. The number of asylums, hospitals, and other institutions supported by private charity is very large,

Government and Finance.—St Louis is not included in any county of the State, but exists as a separate municipality. It was formerly embraced in St Louis county, and was within the jurisdiction and taxing power of a city and county government. The State con- stitution was revised in 1875 and two years later the separation of the city and the county government was effected, the former being reorganized under the present charter. The city

levies and collects municipal and State revenues within its limits, and manages its own affairs, free from all outside control, except that of the legis- lature of the State. The voters of the city have the right to amend the charter at intervals of two years at a general or special election, —provided the proposed amendments have been duly sanctioned and submitted to the people by the municipal assem- bly. The legisla- tive power of the city is in the hands of acouncil and a house of delegates, styled collectively the municipal assem- bly. The council is composed of thirteen mem- bers, elected for four years by the voters of the F city generally, lo" and the house of delegates con- sists of one mem- ber from each of the twenty-eight wards, elected for two years, The following officers are elected for a term of four years : — mayor, comptroller, au- ditor, treasurer, | registrar, col- lector, recorder of deeds, inspector of weights and measures, sheriff, coroner, marshal, public administrator, president of the board of assessors, and pre

Fia. 2.—St Louis and environs.

i

!

sident of the board of public improvements. The elective officers, including the members of the board of public improvements, are nominated by the mayor and approved by the council, and the appointments are made at the beginning of the third year of the mayor's term, so as to remove the distribution of municipal patron- age from the: influences of a general city election. The power of the mayor and council touching appointments to office and removals js subject to certain reciprocal checks.

The bonded debt of St Louis at the close of the fiscal year, 13th April 1885, was $22,016, 000. This debt is reduced each year by the operation of the sinking fund. The city has no floating debt. 'The receipts for the fiscal year ending 13th April 1885, deducting proceeds of revenue bonds and special deposits, were $5,659,086, or 'with balance in treasury at opening of year $6,514,877. The total expenditure was $5,681,557. The city tax rate for the year 1884 was $1°75 on the $100. During the last few years the rate of in- terest on the bonded debt has been reduced from 6 and 7 per cent. to 5 per

cent., and more recently to 4 per cent. Most of the out- standing bonds are held in England and Germany. All appropria- tions are rigidly limited to the available means, and the increase

‘of the bonded debt is forbidden by law. In 1860 the taxable ‘valuation was $69,846,845, in 1870 it was $147,969,660, in 1880 $160,493,000, and in 1885 $207,910, 350.

Commerce.—Subjoined are a few of the more important facts and figures respecting the commerce of St Louis. In 1884 there were 6,440,787 tons of freight received by rail and 520,350 by river, making a total of 6,961,137 tons. In the same year there were shipped by rail 3,611,419 tons and by river 514,910 tons (total 4,126,829). The total receipts of grain for 1884, including wheat reduced to flour, were 52,776,832 bushels, as against 51,983,494 bushels in the previous year. During 1884 the amount of flour manufactured was 1,960,737 barrels, and the amount that changed hands 4,757,079 barrels ; 302,534 bales of cotton, 19,426 hogsheads of tobacco, and 118,484,220 Ib of sugar were received ; and 193,875,479 Tb of pork in various forms were shipped. There are thirteen tobacco manufactories, with a production in 1884 of 22,631,104 fb. In live stock, lumber, hides, wool, salt, lead, and a long list of other com- moditics the business is largc and increasing. Extensive stock- yards arc established in the northern part of the city, and also in East St Louis, where they are known as the national stock-yards, and cover a space of over 600 acres. In 1884 there were imported—cattle, 450,717 ; sheep, 380,822 ; pigs, 1,474,475 ; horses and mules, 41,870. ‘The shipments in the same year were—cattle, 315,433 ; sheep, 248,545 ; pigs, 678,874 ; horses and mules, 39,544. There are twelve grain elevators, with a total capacity for bulk grain of 10,950,000 bushels and 415,000 sacks. The coal received during the year amounted to 52,349,600 bushels. The foreign value of imports for the year was $2,586,876, and the collections at the custom-house were $1,468,495.

__ Among the more important manufactures may be mentioned those of iron and steel, glass, flour, sugar, beer, bagging, prepared foods, tobacco, boots and shoes, furniture, planed and sawed lumber, wire and wire-work, carriages and waggons, foundry and machine- shop products, hardware, agricultural implements, &c. Meat pack- ing is also an important industry.

The summary of manufactures _in the United States census of 1880 shows 2924 establishments, ‘having a capital of $50,832,885; amount paid in wages during the year, $17,748,532 ; value of materials, $75,379,867 ; value of pro- ducts, $114,333,375. These figures ought probably to be largely increased now (1886). In the wholesale grocery trade St Louis is ‘ahead of nearly all the inland cities of the Union. There are be- tween twenty and thirty wholesale houses, and it is estimated that the annual salcs exceed $30,000,000. The Belcher sugar -refinery is able to turn out 1200 barrels a day. The capital employed in the wholesale and retail dry goods establishments is estimated at between $10,000,000 and $12,000,000, and the annual amount of business at $35,000,000 to $40,000,000. The brewing business of St Louis has had an astonishing development, and its product is shipped to all parts of the world. It employs over $8,000,000 of capital, and pays out in wages over $2,000,000 per annum. The ale and beer shipments during 1884 numbered 1,834,545 packages. The brick-making industry has recently become important, and the hard red brick for building and the fire brick produced in St Louis are among the best to be found in the United States. In 1884 | there were eighteen State banks and six national banks represent- mg—capital and surplus, $14,742,123 ; savings and time deposits, $9,102,021 ; current deposits, $29,000,691 ; circulation, $674,150 ; total, $53,518,985. The clearings for 1884 amount to $785,202,177, and the balances to $125, 260,945, making a total of $910, 463,122. | Raiheays. —St Louis is one of the most important railroad Dom In the United States ; the nineteen lines which run traius ri 0. the Union depét represent nearly 20,000 miles of railway. ec Union passenger depot, contiguous to the business centre of the city, is connected with ‘the bridge over the Mississippi by a jtunnel. The buildings are of a tem orar h a : hd _temporary character, and are not \? cquate to the enormous business transacted; a new depét of ‘Mposing proportions is now in contemplation. Over 150 passen-

;

ty

SF bOuUTLS

185

ger trains arrive and depart daily. The tunnel already referred to commences a few hundred yards east of the Union depét. It has double tracks throughout its length, which is about 1 mile, and is supplied with electric lights, ventilating shafts, and the best ap- pliances for safety and convenience. It is leased by the Wabash, St Louis, and Pacific and the Missouri Pacific Railroad Companies, which are also the lessees of the bridge. The bridge across the Mississippi river at St Louis is one of the most remarkable struc- tures in the world in character and magnitude. It consists of three arches, the two side spans being 502 feet in the clear and the centre span 520 feet, and carries a roadway for ordinary traffic 54 feet wide and below this two lines of rail. The dimensions of the abutments and piers are as follows :—

Dimensions at Dimensions at Height } Founda- foundation. top. from foun- |tion below Say nea a | NN Suen | CUUOMNLO mexizenic Length.|Thickness.| Length. Thickness | top of M. | low water. tte fuer 1.) Wetted. | fb. ns fia in: ft. in. East abutment; 83 70 6 64 3h | 47 6 192 9 93 3} East pier…... 82 60 0 63 0 24 0 197 1} 86 2} | West pier ….] 82 48 0 63 0 24 0 172 14) 61 2 West abutment) 94 62 8% | 64 3h 47 6 112 8} 13 3}

The foundations of abutments and piers rest on solid rock. The two piers and the east abutment were sunk by means of pneumatic eaissons. The greatest depth below the surface at which work was done was 110 feet, the air-pressure in the caisson being 49 fb. Each arch consists of four equal ribs ; each rib is composed of two circular members, 12 feet apart, which are connected by a singlo system of diagonal braces. The circular members consist of steel tubes, which are 12 feet long and 18 inches in diameter ; each tube is composed of 6 steel staves, varying in thickness between 1,3, and

‘2% inches. These staves are held together by a steel envelope,

a quarter of aninch thick. The tubes are joined together by coup- lings, and the end tubes are rigidly connected with wrought-iron skewbacks, which are fixed to the masonry by long bolts. The arches were erected without using any false work. Work on the bridge was commenced March 1868, and it wasopened for traffic on 4th July 1874. The total cost of bridge and approachcs was $6,536, 730. The traffic across the bridge is rapidly

developing. In 1876 the gross earnings were $448,447 (loaded waggons, 45,027; railway passengers, 496,686); in 1884 the gross earnings were $1,520,483 (loaded waggons, 172,730; railway passengers, 1,333,360); a total of 2,225,994 tons was carried ; and the total number of cars which crossed the bridge was 472,324.

History.—The first permanent settlement on the site of St Louis was made in February 1764, and was in the nature of a trading post, established by Pierre Laclede Lignest. Long prior to this event there had been some exploration of the vast regions of the Mississippi and its tributaries by Marquette, Joliet, La Salle, Hennepin, and others ; but, although a few widely separated mili- tary and trading posts had been established, there was no accurate knowledge of the character and resources of the country. Laclede's expedition was nearly contemporaneous with the treaty of Paris, 1768, by which the title of France to the regions in the valley of the Mississippi was practically extinguished, Spain becoming owner of all Louisiana west of the Mississippi, and England of all territory east of that river, exccpting New Orleans. The few French forts north of the Ohio were nominally surrendered to the English, in- cluding Vincennes, Cahokia, Kaskaskia, and Fort de Chartres ; but there was no immediate formal assertion of English control, and French sentiments and manners and customs remained undis- turbed. In 1771 St Louis was formally occupied by a small body of Spanish troops, commanded by Don Pedro Piernas, and a period of somewhat over thirty years of Spanish rule followed, during which few local events of noteworthy character occurred. On 25th May 1780—the festival of Corpus Christi—the post, or village, was attacked by Indians, and about thirty of the citizens were killed ; but the savages were beaten off and did not renew the attack. In 1800 Spain ceded back to France all her territory of Louisiana, and three years later—30th April 1803—France ceded to the United States all her right, title, and interest in the territory for eighty million francs. At this time St Louis and the adjacent districts had a population of not over 3000, and the total population of Upper Louisiana was between 8000 and 9000, including 1300 Negroes. There were not over 200 houses in the embryo city, which con- sisted mainly of two streets parallel to the river. For fifty or sixty years after the landing of Laclede the progress of the town was necessarily slow. In 1810 the population was less than 1500, and in 1830 it had not reached 6000.

From the latter date progress became steady and rapid, and the real growth of the city was com- pressed within half a century. An extensive conflagration occurred in 1849, which destroyed most of the business houses on the Levee and Main Street. During the Civil War the commercial advance- ment of St Louis was seriously retarded ; but the city continued to expand in population owing to its advantageous geographical position. (D. H. M‘A,)

ST LUCIA, a West India island, discovered by Colum- bus in 1502, is situated in 13° 50’ N. lat. and 60° 58’ W. long., and has a length of 42 miles and a maximum breadth of 21. Pigeon Island, formerly an important military post, lies at its northern extremity. Originally inhabited by Caribs, St Lucia was settled by the English in 1639, and, after many alternations of English and French possession, surrendered to the British arms in 1794. Sir John Moore was governor till1797. St Lucia was subsequently in French possession, but was finally restored to Great Britain in 1803. The scenery consists of mountain, valley, and forest; two cone-shaped rocks rise out of the sea to a height of 3000 feet, and near them are craters of extinct volcanoes and a solfatara. The island is considered a good coaling station for mail-steamers and war-ships ; there is a good harbour on the west coast, below Castries, the capital (population, 5000). The total population was 40,532 in 1883, of whom 1000 were white, mostly French. St Lucia forms part of the general government of the Windward Islands (from which Barba- dos is excluded) ; it has a legislative council composed of officials and crown nominees. The annual revenue and ex- penditure were £43,026 and £36,652 respectively in 1883, the debt (principally for Central Sugar Factory) being £32,400. The tonnage of vessels entered and cleared was 438,688 ; the total imports were valued at £191,191 and the exports (sugar, 7600 tons; cocoa, 307,120 ib) at £213,823. The Usine or Central Factory system has been established with Government assistance.

ST MALO, a seaport town of France, on the English Channel, on the right bank of the estuary of the Rance, is situated in 48° 39’ N. lat., 51 miles by rail north-north- west of Rennes. It is the administrative centre of an

arrondissement in the department of Ille-et-Vilaine and a first-class garrison town, surrounded by ramparts of the 13th, 16th, and 17th centuries, which are strengthened with great towers at the principal gates. The granite island on which St Malo stands communicates with the mainland only on the north-east by a causeway known as the “Sillon ” (furrow), 650 feet long, and at one time only 46 feet broad, though now three times that breadth. This causeway forms part of the site of Rocabey, an in- dustrial suburb more extensive, though less populous, than the town itself. In the sea round about lie other granite rocks, which have been turned to account in the defences of the coast; on the islet of the Grand Bey is the tomb (1848) of Chateaubriand. The rocks and beach in the circuit of St Malo are continually changing their appear- ance, owing to the violence of the tides. Equinoctial spring-tides sometimes rise 50 feet above low-water level, and during storms the sea sometimes washes over the ramparts. The harbour of St Malo lies south of the town in the creek separating it from the neighbouring town of St Servan. It has a wet dock with from 20 to 25 feet of water (30 feet in spring-tides), and a mile of quays. Additional works are projected, to make the area of the dock 42 acres and the length of quays 14 miles. Among French seaports St Malo stands twelfth in commercial importance, but first in the number of seamen on its register. The annual imports and exports together amount to 184,000 tons, and 3000 tons of shipping are built yearly. Besides fitting out fishing-boats for Newfound-land, St Malo exports grain, colza-seed, cider, butter, tobacco, and various kinds of provisions to the Channel Islands, with which it is connected by a regular steamboat service. The coasting vessels have a tonnage of about 30,000. Communication between St Malo and St Servan is maintained by a revolving bridge. St Malo is largely frequented for sea-bathing, but not so much as Dinard, on the opposite side of the Rance. Paramé, to the east of

St Malo, has recently sprung into importance. The interjop of St Malo presents a tortuous maze of narrow streets and of small squares lined with high and sometiines quaint buildings. The old house in which Duguay-Trouin wags born deserves to be noted. Above all rises the stone spire which since 1859 terminates the central tower of the cathedral. The castle, which defends the town towards the “‘Sillon,” is flanked with four towers,

and in the centre rises the great keep, an older and loftier structure which was breached in 1378 by the duke of Lancaster, St Malo has statues to Chateaubriand and Duguay-Trouin, The museum contains remains of the ship “La Petite Her. mine,” in which Jacques Cartier sailed for the discovery of Canada; and the natural history museum possesses a remarkable collection of from 6000 to 7000 European birds. The population of St Malo in 1881 was 10,89] (commune, 11,212).

In the 6th century the granite island on which St Malo now stands was the retreat of Abbot Aaron, who gave asylum in his monastery to Malo (Maclovius or Malovius), a Cambrian priest, who came hither to escape the episcopal dignity, but afterwards became bishop of Aleth (now St Servan); the see was transferred to St Malo only in the 12th century. Jealous of their independence, the inhabitants of St Malo played off against each other the dukes of Brittany and the kings of France, who alternately sought to bring them under subjection. During the troubles of the League they hoped to establish a republican government in their city, and on the night of 11th March 1590 they extcrminated the royal garrison and imprisoned their bishop and the canons. But four years later they surrendered to Henry IV. of France. During the following century the maritime power of St Malo attained some importance. In November 1693 the English vainly bombarded St Malo for four consecutive days. In July 1695 they renewed the attempt, but were equally unsuccessful. The people of St Malo had in the course of a single war captured upwards of 1500 vessels (several of them laden with gold and other treasure) and burned a considerable number more. Enriched by these successes and by the wealth they drew from Peru, the shipowners of the town not only supplied the king with the means necessary for the famous Rio de Janeiro expedition conducted by Duguay-Trouin in 1711, but also lent him £1,200,000 for carrying on the War of the Spanish Sue- cession. In June 1758 the English sent a third expedition against St Malo under the command of Marlborough, and inflicted a loss of £480,000 in the harbour. But another expedition undertaken in the following September received a complete check. In 1/78 and during the wars of the empire the St Malo privateers resumed their activity. In 1789 St Servan was scparated from St Malo and in 1790 St Malo lost its bishopric. During the Reign of Terror the town was the scence of sanguinary executions, Among the celebrities born in St Malo are Jacques Cartier,

Duguay-Trouin, Surcouf, and Mahé de la Bourdonnais—all four of naval fame— Maupertuis, Chateaubriand, the Abbé de Lamennais, and Broussais.

ST MARTIN, one of the Lesser Antilles (West Indies), part of which (20 square miles) belongs to France and forms a dependency of Guadeloupe, while the remainder (18 square miles) belongs to Holland and along with Saba, &c., is a dependency of Curacao. Situated in 18° N. lat. and 63° W. long., it ascends to a height of 1380 feet above the sea, and has a comparatively small cultivable arca. The great saltpans of the Dutch portion produced in 1882 276,434 tons of salt, and there are similar saltpans in the French portion. Sugar and live-stock (horses, cattle, sheep, goats, and pigs) are also exported. The chief settlement and anchorage in the French portion is Marigot, in the Dutch Philippsburg. The population in 1882 was 7083 (French portion 3724, Dutch 3359). Occupied by French freebooters in 1638 and by the Spaniards between 1640 and 1648, St Martin was divided between the French and Dutch in this latter year.

SAINT-MARTIN, Lovis Craupe ps (1743-1803), known as “le philosophe inconnu” from the fact that all his works were published under that name, was born ab Amboise of a poor but noble family, on the 18th January 1743. By his father’s desire he tried first law and then the army as a profession. While in garrison at Bordeaux, he came under the influence of Martinez Pasqualis, a Port

_ by water and 40 by rail.

» less than 13.

| © o’s 41

guese Jew, who taught a species of mysticism drawn from cabbalistic sources, and endeavoured to found thereon a secret cult with magical or theurgical rites. In 1771 Saint-Martin left the army in order to become a social preacher of mysticism. His conversational powers made him welcome in the most aristocratic and polished Parisian salons ; but his missionary zeal led him to England, Italy, and Switzerland, as well as to the chief towns of France. At Strasburg in 1788 he met Charlotte de Boecklin, who ‘nitiated him in the writings of Jacob Boehme, and at the same time

inspired in his breast a semi-romantic attach- His later years were devoted almost entirely to the chief works and to the translation of He died at Aunay, near Paris, on the

ment. ; composition of his those of Boehme.

93d October 1803.

His chief works are—Letére a un ami sur la Révolution Francaise ; Eclair sur Vassociation humaine ; De Vesprit des choses ; AMinistére de Vhomme-esprit. Other treatises appeared in his Guvres post- humes (1807). Saint-Martin regarded the French Revolution as a sermon in action, if not indeed a miniature of the last judgment ; its result was to be the regeneration of society by a destruction of its abuses. His ideal society was ‘‘a natural and spiritual theo- cracy,” in which God would raise up men of mark and endowment, who would regard themselves strictly as ** divine commissioners ”

} to guide the people through the crises of their history. This mystical dictatorship was to rest entirely upon persuasion. In like manner all ecclesiastical organization was to disappear, giving place to a purely spiritual Christianity, the doctrines of which constitute a species of theosophy. Their philosophical basis in Saint-Martin is the assertion of a faculty superior to the reason, which he calls the moral sense, and from which we derive our knowledge of God. In man, and not elsewhere, is to be found the key to the divine nature. God exists as an eternal personality, and the creation is an overflowing of the divine love, which was unable to contain itself. The human soul, the human intellect or spirit, the spirit of the mniverse, and the elements or matter are the four stages of this divine emanation, man being the immediate reflexion of God, and nature in turn a reflexion of man. Man, however, has fallen from his high estate, and matter is one of the consequences of his fall. But the divine love, united to humanity in Christ, will work the final regeneration or restoration of all things.

Comp. Gence, Notice biographique (1824); Caro, Essai sur la vie et les doctrines de Saint-Martin (1852) ; Sainte-Beuve, Causeries de Lundi, vol.

x. p. 190; Matter, Saint-Martin, le philosophe inconnu (1862); Franck, La philosophie mystique en France @ la fin du dix-huitiéme siécle (1866).

ST MAUR-SUR-LOIRE, founded by St Maurus (see Mavrus), was the first Benedictine monastery in Gaul. It was situated on the left bank of the Loire about 15 miles below Saumur. About the middle of the 9th century it was reduced to ruins by the Normans; shortly before

_ the event and in anticipation of it the relics of the saint

were transferred to St Maur-les-Fossés near Paris. St | Maur-sur-Loire was afterwards restored and fortified, but the only extant remains consist of a part of the church and a few shattered columns.

ST MICHAEL'S. See Azores, vol. iii. p. 171.

ST NAZAIRE, a town of France, in the department of Loire Inférieure, and a port on the right bank of the Loire near its mouth. It has rapidly grown since the new docks rendered it the outport or detached harbour of Nanres (q.v.), from which it is distant 29 miles west-north-west

Begun in 1845 and opened in 1857, the first basin has an area of 26 acres and 1 mile of quays ; and the depth varies from 20 to 25 feet. To the north of the first basin a new dock (Penhouet), 56 acres

| in extent and with 14 miles of quay, was constructed be-

tween 1864 and 1881, at a cost of nearly £1,000,000. It communicates with the older basin by a passage 82 feet wide and 673 long. The harbour can admit vessels of 23 feet draught at every tide, the depth of water on the sill varying from 26 to 30 feet at high tide, and never being The town is the terminus of the General Transatlantic Company, whose steamers connect France

with Mexico, the Antilles, and the Isthmus of Panama. | The total imports and exports amount to about 1,600,000 tons annually, valued at £24,000,000. The staple articles

imported are coals from Great Britain (500,000 tons), grain, sugar, coffee, rice, timber (from the North), phos- phates, and guano. Pit-props, salt, and preserved foods are exported. The town being of recent origin, its indus- tries are only in process of development; but it already contains shipbuilding yards, large ironworks, artificial fuel factories, sawmills, a flour-mill, and extensive commercial warehouses. There are no edifices of historical or architect- ural note with the exception of a granite dolmen, 10 feet long and 5 broad, resting horizontally on two other stones sunk in the soil, above which they rise 64 feet. The population was 16,314 in 1881 (19,626 in the commune).

According to certain remains discovered on excavating the docks, St Nazaire seems to occupy the site of the ancient Corbilo, placed by Strabo among the more important maritime towns of Gaul, and probably fonnded by the Pheenicians. It was in the harbour of Corbilo that Crassus by Czsar's order built the fleet by which, in 56 B.c., Brutus routed the 220 vessels of the Venetian insurgents. At the close of the 4th century the site of Corbilo was occupied by Saxons, and, their conversion to Christianity being effected one or two hundred years later by St Felix of Nantes, the place took the name of St Nazaire. It was still only a little '"bonrg" of 3000 inhabitants when it was chosen as the site of the new harbour for Nantes, because the ascent of the Loire was becoming more and

more difficult. In 1868 the sub-prefecture was transferred to St Nazaire from Savenay.

ST NICOLAS, a town of Belgium, in the district of Dendermonde, in the province of East Flanders, 19} miles from Ghent by the railway to Antwerp. It is a well-built, modern-looking place, with a very spacious market-place, famous as the spot where Philip the Fair swore in 1497 to maintain the privileges of Waesland, of which St Nicolas was the capital. From a comparatively small village, with only 5000 inhabitants in 1661, it has grown into a large manufacturing centre, with wool and cotton mills, needle-factories, &c., and a population (in 1876) of 24,729. The more conspicuous buildings are the town-hall and two of the churches.

ST OMER, a town and fortress of France, chef-lieu of the department of Pas-de-Calais, situated.on the Aa (which flows into the North Sea), 177 miles north of Paris by the railway to Arras, Hazebrouck, and Calais, at the junction of a line to Boulogne. Before the modifications made in the defensive system of the frontier the place was a fortress of the first class. At St Omer begins the canalized portion of the Aa, which reaches the sea at Gravelines, and under its walls it connects with the Neuffossé, which ends at the Lys. There are two harbours outside and one within the city. St Omer has wide streets and spacious squares, but little stir of life. The old cathedral is the most curious church in Artois; it belongs almost entirely to the 13th, 14th, and 15th centuries. Of its four portals the finest, dating from the 13th and 14th centuries, was decorated with statuettes, unfortunately mutilated during the Revolu- tion. In spite of the spoliations of the 18th century, the contents of the church still comprise interesting paintings, a Virgin in wood of the 12th century (the object of numer- ous pilgrimages, and solemnly crowned in 1875), a colossal statue of Christ seated between the Virgin and St Jolin (13th century, originally belonging to the cathedral of Thérouanne and presented by Charles V.), fine stained glass and mosaics, interesting tombstones, the cenotaph of St Omer, and numerous ex-votos, distinguished by their an- tiquity, originality, and delicacy of workmanship. The clearing of the church from the encroachments of other buildings has led to the reconstruction of the apsidial chapel of the Sacred Heart in the purest Gothic style. Of St Bertin, the church of the abbey (built between 1326 and 1520 on the site of previous churches), where Childeric III. retired to end his days, nothing now remains but some arches and a tower, 190 feet high, which serves to adorn the public gardens (once possessed by the monks). Several

other churches or convent chapels are of interest, but it is enough to mention St Sepulchre’s (14th century) for the sake of its beautiful stone spire and stained-glass windows. A fine collection of records, a picture gallery, and a theatre are all accommodated in the town-hall, built of the materials of the abbey of St Bertin. Among the five hospitals the military hospital is of note as occupying the college opened by the English Jesuits in 1592 and known as the place where O’Connell received his education. The

old episcopal palace is used as a court-house. Several learned societies exist in the town; the public library contains 20,000 volumes and 1000 MSS. The arsenal is an extensive series of buildings. Besides 30,000,000 to 40,000,000 tobacco- pipes exported to America and the colonies, St Omer manufactures cloth, hosiery, and tulle, cambric, and muslin embroideries. Its trade (and it is the seat not only of a tribunal but also of a chamber of commerce) is mainly in provisions for England, the products of the local industry, and those of the paper-mills, flour-mills, distilleries, and sugar-factories in the vicinity, especially along the banks of the Aa. The suburb of Haut Pont to the north of St Omer is inhabited by a special stock, which has remained faithful to the Flemish tongue, its original costume, and its peculiar customs, and is distinguished by honesty and industry. The ground which these people cultivate has been reclaimed from the marsh, and the légres (¢.e., the square blocks of land) communicate with each other only by boats floated on the ditches and canals that divide them. At the end of the marsh, on the borders of the forest of Clairmarais, are the ruins of the abbey founded in 1140 by Thierri d'Alsace, to which Thomas a Becket betook himself in 1165. To the south of St Omer on a hill commanding the Aa lies the camp of Helfaut, often called the camp of St Omer. On 15th June 1884 a statue was erected to Jacqueline Robin, a heroine who in the time of Louis XIV. saved St Omer from foreign occupation. The population of the town was 20,479 in 1881 (21,556 in the commune).

Near a castle named Sithiu, Omer, bishop of Thérouanne, erected churches and the monks of Luxeuil established monasteries in the 7th century; and in the 9th century the village thus originated took the name of its founder St Omer. The Normans laid the place waste in 861 and 881, but ten years later found town and monastery surrounded by walls and safe from their attack. Situ- ated on the borders of territories frequently disputed by French, Flemish, English, and Spaniards, St Omer long continued subject to siege and military disaster. In 1071 Philip I. put all to sword and flame. Burned in 1136, captured in 1198 by Richard and Baldwin IX., attacked in 1214 by Ferrand of Portugal, in 1302 and 1803 by the Flemish, in 1337 and 1339 by the English, and in 1477 by Louis XI., St Omer at last fell in 1487 into the hands of Charles VIII. 'Two years later it was recovered by the arch- duke Maximilian ; and Charles V. strengthened its ramparts with bastions. The French made five futile attempts against it between 1551 and 1596, and had

no better success in 1638 (under Richelieu) or in 1647. But on 26th April 1677, after seventeen days' siege, Louis XIV. forced the town to capitulate; and the peace of Nimeguen permanently confirmed the conquest. From time to time the people of St Omer (Audomarois) still celebrate the entrance into the town of William Cliton, count of Flanders, from whom in 1127 they obtained a cominunal charter granting them numerous privileges. St Omer ceased to be a bishopric in 1790.

SAINTONGE (Santonia, Santonensis tractus), an old province of France, of which SAINnTEs (q.v.) was the capital, was bounded on the N.W. by Aunis, on the N.E. by Poitou, on the E. by Angoumois, on the 8. by Guienne, and on the W. by Guienne and the Atlantic. It now forms a small portion of the department of Charente and the greater part of that of Charente Inférieure.

ST OUEN, an industrial district in the outskirts of Paris, on the right bank of the Seine, 1 mile above St Denis. It had 17,718 inhabitants in 1881. The docks (6 acres in area), where the boats from the lower Seine discharge, are connected by rail with the Northern and Eastern lines at Paris and with the circular railway near Batignolles.

The importance of St Ouen is mainly due to its industria} establishments,—foundries and forges, steam-engine fac. tories, dyeworks, waxcloth works, potteries, &c. ; it has also the steam-pumps for supplying the upper quarters of Paris with water from the river, a racecourse, and a fine cast] occupying the site of the building in which Louis XV]qj. signed (2d May 1814) the declaration by which he pro. mised a charter to France.

ST PAUL, a city of the United States, second city of Minnesota, a port of entry and the capital of the State and of Ramsey county, is situated in 44° 52' 46" N. lat. and

.93° 5' W. long., on the Mississippi river, 2150 miles from

its mouth, 10 below the falls of St Anthony, the natural head of navigation, and 360 north-west of Chicago. The ground on which the city is built rises

from the river in a series of terraces, the ascent being in many places pre. cipitous and not easily adapted to urban uses. The city is mainly confined to the second and third terraces, but ig gradually spreading over the elevated plateau beyond. The difficulties of the situation have much increased the cost of erecting large business structures, circumscribed the busi- ness quarter, and impeded the railway companies in secur. ing convenient and adequate facilities. The city site is underlaid with a thick stratum of bluish limestone, which comes near the surface, and which, while it renders excava- tion expensive, furnishes unlimited supplies of building material of a fair quality. The streets of the older portions

SAS

Plan of St Paul.

1. State Capitol. 6. Chamber of Commerce.

2. U.S. Custom-House and 7. Rice Park. Post-Office. 8. Smith Park.

laid out. The chief public buildings are the State capitol (built in 1882), the United States custom-house and post- office, the city-hall, and the city-market. A handsome opera house and a chamber of commerce building are conspicuous features. In 1885 there were seventy-one church orgamiza- tions,—9 Episcopal, 7 Presbyterian, 4 Congregational, 12 Methodist, 12 Lutheran, 2 Jewish, 7 Baptist, 11 Roman Catholic, 1 Unitarian, 4 Evangelical, 1 Swedenborgian, and 1 Disciples of Christ. Besides the charitable institu tions connected with the church organizations there are an orphan asylum, a home for the friendless, a Swedish hospital, a women's Christian home, and a Magdalen home. Of periodical publications there were issued in 188) 5 dailies, 17 weeklies, and 7 monthlies. The city has (1886) eleven banks, of which six are national with an aggregate paid-up capital of $5,200,000, and five State institutions with a paid-up capital of $1,150,000. St Paul is an m- portant railway centre, dividing with Minneapolis the ter- minal and distributing business of no less than fifteen lines owned by six different corporations and having an aggre gate length of 15,818 miles. The navigation of the uppe Mississippi acts as a check upon the rates charged by the

3. City-Hall. 4, City-Market. 5. Opera-House.

mene

ad

ailway companies. The traffic at the port of St Paul in

884 was—tons landed, 45,800 ; tons shipped, 13,300 ; ‘assengers carried, 34,625. ‘T’wo lines of steamers ply vetween St Paul and St Louis and intermediate points. “he average season of navigation lasts six and a half jonths. The city has within its corporate limits, but re- aoved some miles from the city proper, two colleges— {acalester (Presbyterian) and Hamline (Methodist)—both nly partially endowed or supplied with buildings. There _re twenty-two public school buildings, built at an aggre- -ate cost of $663,000. There are also several academies and eminaries under private or denominational management. *he public park system of St Paul is as yet undeveloped, out an area of 250 acres has been secured near Lake Como ‘o be laid out as pleasure-grounds. Rice Park and Smith ark are public squares in the central portion of the city, astefully adorned with walks and shrubbery. ‘The popula- ion of St Paul, according to the United States census, was 340 in 1850, 10,600 in 1860, 20,300 in 1870, and 41,473 n 1880 (males 22,483, females 18,990). According to he State census, it was 111,334 in 1889.

St Paul is a commercial rather than a manufacturing city. The jobbing trade for the year 1884 reached a total of about $65,000,000, in increase of 50 per cent. in four years. In the same year manu- actures valued at $20,000,000 were produced, the principal items eing agricultural implements, boots and shoes, machinery, sash, loors, and blinds, waggons and carriages. There is a large flour- nill, capable of producing 700 barrels daily. The lack of water-ower and the high cost of fuel are drawbacks to the growth of nanufactures. The main thoroughfares have recently been paved, or the most part with blocks of white cedar, and stone sidewalks

re rapidly replacing wooden ones. The water-supply is obtained rom a group of small lakes lying north of the city limits, and the yorks are owned and managed by the city. The drainage is xcellent. For governmental

purposes the eity consists of eight vards, each of which elects three members of council. The chief of ‘olice and all subordinate members of the force are appointed by he mayor, who is elected by popular vote in May of each alternate rear. The aggregate assessed valuation of real and personal pro- erty in St Paul was $60,463,000 in 1884. The total bonded debt if the city on 81st March 1885 was officially stated at $3,027,141. – The first settlement on the site of St Paul was in 1838, when an inimportant trading-post was established there by adventurers. In 1841 a Jesuit missionary built a log chapel and dedicated it to jt Paul (whence the name of the hamlet). The site of the future ity was surveyed and laid out in 1849-50. About this time (1851) fhe Sioux Indians ceded to the United States all lands held by hem between the Mississippi and Big Sioux rivers. Prior to this ession the white population in the then Territory of Minnesota jad not reached a total of 6000, but the removal of the aborigines ‘vas promptly followed by a notable influx of white settlers. With | Popa of some 2800 in 1854 the town obtained a fully organ- zed city government. Upon the admission of Minnesota to the Jnion in 1858 St Paul was designated as the capital. The city vas originally confined to the east bank of the river, but in 1874 ‘y popular vote a portion of Dakota county was transferred to tamsey county, and West St Paul on the west bank of the Missis- aye then containing some 3000 inhabitants, became a part of St aul proper. In 1884 an Act of the State legislature extended the jeographical boundaries of the city so as to embrace all territory n Ramsey county westward to the line of Hennepin county, and

‘irtually to the corporate limits of the “sister” city Minneapolis, 0 miles distant.

oe PAUL, a remarkable volcanic island which, along ivith the island of New Amsterdam, is situated in the ndian Ocean about midway between Africa and Australia, F little to the north of the ordinary route of the steamers rom Plymouth (via Cape Town) to Adelaide. Its exact osition as determined by the Transit of Venus Expedition a 1874 is 38° 42’ 50” 8, Lat. and 77° 32’ 29” E, Long. ~~hough the distance between the two islands St Paul and New Amsterdam is only 50 miles, they belong to two eparate eruptive areas characterized by quite different vroducts; and the comparative bareness of St Paul is in triking contrast to the dense vegetation of New Amster~~ lam. St Paul is 14 miles long from north-west to south- ast and its coast-line is

estimated at 5 nautical miles. In hape it is almost an isosceles triangle with a circle inscribed

tangentially to the north-east side,—the circle (3940 feet in diameter) being the volcanic crater which previous to 1780 formed an inland lake, but which, since the sea broke down its eastern barrier, has become practically a land-locked bay entered by a narrow but gradually widening passage not quite 6 feet deep. The highest ridge of the island is not more than 820 feet above the sea. On the south-west side the coasts are inaccessible. According to M. Vélain, the island originally rose above the ocean as a mass of rhyolithic trachyte similar to that which still forms the Nine Pin rock to the north of the entrance to the crater. Next followed a period of activity in which basic rocks were produced by submarine eruptions—lavas and scorie of anorthitic character, palagonitic tuffs, and basaltic ashes ; and finally from the crater, which must have been a vast lake of fire like those in the Sandwich Islands, poured forth quiet streams of basaltic lavas. The island has been rapidly cooling down in historic times. Dr Gillian (Lord Macartney's visit, 1793) mentions spots still too warm to walk on where no trace of heat is now perceptible; and the remarkable zone of hot subsoil extending westwards from the crater has lost most of the more striking characteristics recorded by Hochstetter in 1857, though it is still easily distinguished by its warmth-loving vegetation, —Sphagnum lacteolum and Lycopodium cernuum.

The general flora of the island is exceedingly meagre. If we leave out of view the potato, carrot, parsley, eabbage, &e., intro- duced by temporary inhabitants, the list comprises Umbcllifere, 1; Composite, 2; Plantaginacexr, 2; Cyperacce, 2; Graminacce, 2; Lycopodiacex, 1; ferns, 2; and from 35 to 40 species of mosses and lichens. The only plants really abundant are an Jsolepsis nodosa (Cyperacew) and one or two grasses. None of the trees (oak, apple, mulberry, pine, &c.) introduced at different periods have succeeded. The cabbage, which grows pretty freely in some parts, shows a tendency to become like the Jersey variety. The

“pigs mentioned by Hochstetter have died out; but goats, cats,

rats, and mice continue to flourish,—the cats, which feed mainly on birds and fish, living in apparent amity and in the same holes with the rats. House-flies, bluebottles, slaters, &c., literally swarm. But nothing is so characteristic of St Paul as the multitude of its sea-fowl,—albatrosses, petrels of many kinds, puffins, penguins, &c. The neighbouring waters teem with life, and, while the various genera of the seal family are no longer a source of wealth, a number of vessels (50 to 80 tons) from the Mascarene Islands still yearly carry on the fisheries off the coasts, where Chetlodactylus fasciatus (in shoals), Latris hecateta (cabot or poisson de fond), and Mcndosoma elongatwm afford a rich harvest. The stories told about gigantic sea creatures were curiously confirmed by the Venus Expedition finding on the shore a Cephalopod (since named JMouchczis sancti pault) which measured upwards of 22 feet from the end of its body to the tip of its longest arm.

The island now known as New Amsterdam was probably that sighted on 18th March 1522 by the companions of Magellan as they sailed back to Europe under the command of Sebastian del Cano; and in 1617 the Dutch ship ‘‘ Zeewolf” from Texel to Bantam discovered the island which, instead of the name “ Zeewolf” then bestowed on it, soon after began to be called on the charts St Paul. The designation ‘‘New Amsterdam” is derived from the vessel in which Van Diemen sailed between the islands in 1633. The first navigator to set foot on St Paul was Willem van Vlaming in 1696. Lord Macartney spent a day exploring it in 17938, his guide being a marooned Frenchman, Captain Péron, whose narrative of his sojourn from 1st September 1792 to 16th December 1795 is a document of great value (Jfémoires du Capitaine Péron, vol. i., Paris, 1824). In 1843 the governor of Réunion took possession of the islands with a detachment of marines,—seal-catehing and the fisheries having attracted to them a considerable floating popula- tion. In June 1871 the British frigate ‘‘ Megera ” was wreeked at the mouth of the crater and most of the 400 souls on board had to reside on the island for upwards of three months. Landing on 23rd September 1874, a French Transit of Venus expedition remained on St Paul till 8th January 1875, and a visit of much

importance was paid to New Amsterdam.

See Vélain, Description géol. de la presqu’tle d’ Aden, desiles de la Réunion, de St Paul, &c. (Paris, 1878), and his papers in Archives de la zoologie experimentale, 1877, and in Comptes Rendus, Acad. des Sc., 1875; Sauvage on the fishes in Arch. Zool. Exp., 1879-80.

0

ST PAUL DE LOANDA. See Loanpa. ST PAUL’S ROCKS, not to be confounded with the island of St Paul in the Indian Ocean, are a number of small islands in the Atlantic, nearly 1° north of the equator and

540 miles from South America, in 29° 15’ W. long. Their outline is irregular, and as they are only separated by narrow but deep chasms they have the appearance of being one island. ‘The whole space occupied does not exceed 1400 feet in length by about half as much in breadth. Besides sea-fowl—two species of noddy (Anous stolidus and Anous melanogenys) and a booby or gannet (Sula leucogaster)— the only terrestrial inhabitants are insects and spiders. Fish are abundant, seven species (one, Holocentrum sancti pauli, peculiar to the locality) being collected by the “Challenger” during a brief stay. Darwin (On Volcanic Islands, p. 32) decided that St Paul’s Rocks were not of volcanic origin; more modern investigators—Renard, A. Geikie, and Wadsworth—maintain that they probably are eruptive. See Reports of the Voyage of H.M.S. Chal- lenger- Narrative of the Cruise, vol. 1.

ST PETER PORT, the capital of the island of GUERNSEY (g.v.) ; its population was 16,658 in 1881.

ST PETERSBURG, a government of north-western Russia, at the head of the Gulf of Finland, stretching along its south-eastern shore and the southern shore of Lake Ladoga. It is bounded by Finland and Olonetz on the N., Novgorod and Pskoff on the E. and S., Esthonia and Livonia on the W., and has an area of 20,750 square miles. It is hilly only on its Finland border, the re- mainder being flat and covered with marshy forests, with the

exception of a plateau of about 350 feet high in the south, the Duderhof hills at Krasnoye Selo reaching 550 feet. A great number of parallel ridges of glacier origin intersect the government towards Lake Peipus and northwards of the Neva. Silurian and Devonian rocks appear in the south, the whole covered by a thick glacial deposit with boulders (bottom moraine) and by thick alluvial de- posits in the valley of the Neva. The government skirts the Gulf of Finland for 130 miles. The bays of Cronstadt, Koporye, Luga, and Narva afford good anchorage, but the coast is for the most part lined with reefs and sandbanks ; to the east of Cronstadt the water becomes very shallow (18 to 20 feet). The chief river is the Neva, which receives only a few small tributaries; the Luga and the Narova also enter the Gulf of Finland. The feeders of Lake Ladoga—the Volkhoff, the Syass, and the Svir, the last two forming part of the system of canals connecting the Neva with the Volga—are important channels of com- merce, as also is the Narova (see PskorF). Marshes and forests cover about 40 per cent. of the surface (70 per cent. at the end of the 18th century).

The population (apart from the capital) was 635,780 in 1882, 82-7 per cent. being Russians, 15°0 Finns, 0°5 Esthonians, and 1°8 per cent. German colonists who have immigrated since 1765. Twenty per cent. are Protestants ; the remainder mostly belong to the Greek Church ; but there are also more than 20,000 Nonconformists, about 6000 Catholics, and 1500 Jews. Agriculture is at a low stage and very unproductive ; the Germans, however, get advantage from it. The Finns rear cattle to some extent. Manufactures are especially developed in the districts of Tsarskoye Selo and Yamburg,—cottons, silks, paper, ironware, and machinery (at Kolpino) being the chief products. Several large manufacturing establishments—especially at Cronstadt—are maintained by the state for military purposes. The government is subdivided into eight districts, the chief towns of which are St Petersburg (see below), Gdoff (3150 inhabitants), Luga (1650), Novaya Ladoga (4100), Peterhof (7950), Schliisselburg (10,400), and Yamburg (3250). Gatchina (10,100), Narva (8610), Oranienbaum (3600), and Pavlovsk (3400) have no districts. Cron- stadt and the capital form separate governorships. Okhta, Kolpino,

Pulkova, and Krasnoye Sclo, though without municipal institutions, are worthy of mention.

ST PETERSBURG, capital of the Russian empire, is situated in a thinly-peopled region at the head of the Gulf of Finland, at the mouth of the Neva, in 59° 56’ N. lat. and 30° 40’ E. long., 400 miles from Moscow, 696 from Warsaw, 1138 from Odessa, and 1338 from Astrakhan. The city covers an area of 21,195 acres, of which 12,820

belong to the delta proper of the Neva; 1330 acres ape under water. The Neva, which leaves Lake Ladoga at its south-west angle, flows in a wide and deep stream for 36 miles south-west and north-west, describing a curve to the south. Before entering the Gulf of Finland, it takes for 24 miles a northerly direction ; then it suddenly tums and flows south-west and west, forming a peninsula oy

which the main part of St Petersburg stands, dividing into several branches. It discharges remarkably pure water at the rate of 1,750,000

itself sub. a body of cubic feet

per second, by a channel from 400 to 650 yards in width and so deep (maximum depth, 59 feet) that large vessels approach its banks. The chief branch is the Great Neva, which flows south-west with a width of from 400 to 709

yards and a maximum depth of 49 feet (discharge, cubic feet per second). The other branches are

1,267,000

the Little

Neva, which along with the Great Neva forms Vasilyevskiy

Fic. 1.—Environs of St Petersburg.

(Basil’s) Island, and the Great Nevka, which with the

Little Neva forms Peterburgskiy Island and

sends out

three other branches, the Little Nevka, the Middle Nevka, and the narrow Karpovka, enclosing the islands Elaghin, Krestovskiy, Kamennyi, and Aptekarskiy (Apothecaries'

Island). Smaller branches of the Great and

the Little

Nevas form the islands Petrovskiy, Goloday, and numerous smaller ones ; while a broader navigable channel forms the Gutueff and several islands of less size in the south-west. Two narrow canalized channels or rivers—the Moika and the Fontanka—as also the Catherine, Ligovskiy, and Obvodnyi Canals (the last with basins for receiving the

surplus of water during inundations), intersect

the main-

land. All the islands of alluvial origin are very low, their highest points rising only 10 or 11 feet above the average

level of the water. Their areas are rapidly

increasing

(572 acres having been added between 1718 and 1864), and the wide banks which continue them towards the sea

are gradually disappearing. The mainland is higher than the islands. At a height of from 7

not much to 20 feet

(seldom so much as 29) the low marsh land stretches back to the hills of the Forestry Institute (45 to 70 feet) on the right and to the Pulkova and Tsarskoye Selo hills on the left. The river level being subject to wide oscillations

and rising several feet during westerly gales,

extensive

portions of the islands, as also of the mainland, are flooded every winter ; water in the streets of Vasilyevskiy Island

is a common occurrence. In 1777, when the 10-7 feet, and in 1824, when it rose 13°8 feet,

Neva rose nearly the

whole of the city was inundated. But, owing to the com

struction of canals to receive a large amount

of surplus

water, and still more to the secular rising of the sea-coast

no similar occurrence has since been witnessed.

Broad sandbanks at the mouth of the river, leaving but

a narrow channel 7 to 20 feet deep, prevent th

of larger ships; their cargoes are discharged at

e entrance

Cronstadt

:

snd brought to St Petersburg in smaller vessels. A ship ranal, completed in 1885 at a cost of 10,265,400 roubles ‘£1,026,500), is intended to make the capital a seaport. Beginning at Cronstadt, it terminates at Gutueff Island in , harbour capable of accommodating fifty sea-going ships ata time. It is 22 feet deep, 174 miles in length, and from 70 to 120 yards broad at the bottom, and is pro- tected by huge submarine dams.

Communication between the banks of the Neva is main- tained by only two permanent bridges,—the Nicholas and the Alexander or Liteinyi, the latter 467 yards long; both are fine specimens of architecture. Two other bridges — the Palace and the Troitskiy (720 yards)—across the Creat Neva connect the left bank of the mainland with Vasilyevskiy Island and the fortress of St Peter and St Paul; but, being built on boats, they are removed during the autumn and spring, and intercourse with the islands then becomies very difficult. Several wooden or floating bridges connect the islands, while a number of stone bridges span the smaller channels; their aggregate number is ninety. In winter, when the Neva is covered with ice 2 to 3 feet thick, temporary roadways for carriages and pedestrians are made, and artificially lighted. Numerous iboats also maintain conimunication, and smiall steamers ply in summer between the more distant parts of the capital. A network of tramways (about 80 miles) inter- sects the city in all directions, reaching also the remoter islands and suburbs, and carrying about 45,000,000 pass- engers yearly. Omnibuses and public sledges maintain the traffic in winter. In 1882 hackney carriages numbered 7930 in summer and rose to 14,780 in winter, when thou- sands of peasants come in from the neighbouring villages with their small Finnish horses and plain sledges.

The Neva continues frozen for an average of 147 days in the year (25th November to 21st April). It is unnavigable, however, for some time longer on account of the ice from Lake Ladoga, which is sometimes driven by easterly winds into the Neva during several days at the end of April or in the beginning of May. The climate of St Petersburg is very changeable and unhealthy. Frosts are made much more trying by the wind which accompanies them ; ind westerly gales in winter bring with them oceanic moisture and warmth, and so melt the snow before and after hard frosts. The summer is hot, but short, lasting hardly more than five or six weeks; a hot day, however, is often followed by cold weather : changes of temperature amounting to 35° Fahr. within twenty-four hours are not uncommon. In autumn a cold dampness continues for several weeks, and in spring cold and wet weather alternates

with a few warm days. The following figures will give a more ‘complete idea of the climate :—

January. July The Year

Mean temperature, Fahr…..... 15°°4 64°°0 38°°6 Row, aces Goa 0°9 2°6 18°8 Amount of cloud, percentage…..... 80 53 67

Ee eMIP ONIN Se)... 6. oo ote eee n eee ee es S.W. W. W. Numbenloft rainy days …....+.— 12-5 12°7 150°6 Average daily range of temperature, Fahr. 2°-2 10°-2 Ore IBEUNci@ INGE Gy oper 89 7 81

. The bulk of St Petersburg is situated on the mainland, on the eft bank of the Neva, including the best and busiest streets, the “ichest shops, the great bazaars and markets, the palaces, cathedrals, und theatres, as well as all the railway stations, except that of the ‘Finland Railway. From the Liteinyi bridge to that of Nicholas ‘I. a granite embankment runs along the left bank of the Neva, pr by palaces and large private houses. About midway, sehind a range of fine houses, stands the admiralty, the very centre of the capital. Formerly a wharf, on which Peter I. caused his arst Baltic ship to be built in 1706, it is now the seat of the “ministry of marine and of the hydrographical department, the new ulmiralty standing farther down the Neva on the same bank. A ie ee how partly a garden, surrounds the admiralty on the |e ame : and east. ‘To the west, opposite the senate, stands – pa to Peter I., ereeted in 1782, and now backed by ‘alma ire, of St Isaac. A bronze statue, a masterpiece by vallo let, represents the founder of the city on horseback, at full P y ascending a rock and pointing to the Neva; the pedestal é a ae granite monolith, 44 feet long, 22 wide, and 27 high, a te rom Lakhta, a village on the shore of the Gulf of Finland. is a ln of the admiralty are several buildings of the ministry ; ee and to the east the Winter Palace, the work of Rastrelli 764), a fine building of mixed style; but its admirable proportions

hide its huge dimensions. It communicates by a gallery with the Hermitage Fine Arts Gallery. A broad semicircular square, adorned by the Alexander I. column, separates the palace from the general staff and foreign ministry buildings; the column, the work of Montferrant, is a red granite monolith,

84 feet high, supported by a huge pedestal. Being of Finnish rappa-kivi (from Piterlaks), it disintegrates rapidly, and has had to be bound with massive iron rings concealed by painting. The range of palaces and private houses facing the embankment above the admiralty is interrupted by the large macadamized ‘‘ Field of Mars,” formerly a marsh, but transformed at incredible expense into a parade-ground, and the Lyetniy Sad (summer-garden) of Peter I. The Neva embankment is continued to the west toa little below the Nicholas bridge under the name of ‘‘ English embankment,” and farther down by the new admiralty buildings.

The topography of St Petersburg is very simple. Three long streets, the main arteries of the capital, radiate from the admiralty, —the Prospekt Nevskiy (Neva Prospect), the Gorokhovaya (Peas’ Street), and the Prospekt Voznesenskiy (Ascension Prospect). Three girdles of canals, roughly speaking concentric, cross these three streets,—the Moika, the Catherine, and the Fontanka; to these a number of streets run parallel,—the Great and the Little Morskaya, the Kazanskaya, the Sadovaya (Garden Street), and the Liteinaya, continued west by Prospekts Zagorodnyi and Rizh- skiy (Riga). The Prospekt Nevskiy is a very broad street running straight east-south-east for 3200 yards from the admiralty to the Moscow railway station, and thence 1650 yards farther, bending a little to the south, to the Smolnyi convent, again reaching the Neva at Kalashnikoff harbour. The part first mentioned owes its picturesque aspect to its width, its rich shops, and still more its animation. But the houses which border it architecturally leave very much to be desired. And neither the cathedral of the Virgin of Kazan (an ugly imitation on a small scale of St Peter’s in Rome), nor the still uglier Gostinyi Dvor (a two-storied quadrilateral building filled with second-rate shops), nor the Anitchkoff Palace (which looks like immense barracks), nor even the Catholic and Dutch churches do anything to embellish it. About midway between the public library and the Anitchkoff Palace an elegant square conceals the old-fashioned Alexandra theatre ; a profusely adorned memorial to Catherine II. does not beautify it much. The Gorokhovaya is a narrow and badly paved street between gloomy houses occupied mostly by artisans. The Voznesenskiy, on the contrary, though as narrow as the last, has better houses. In its north part it passes into a series of large squares connected with that on which the monument of Peter I. stands. One of them is oecupied by the cathedral of St Isaac (of Dalmatia)

and another by the memorial to Nicholas I., the gorgeousness and bad taste of which strangely contrast with the simplicity and significance of that of Peter I. The general aspcct of the cathedral is undoubtedly imposing both without and within ; its red granite colonnades are not devoid of a certain grandiose character ; but on the whole this architectural monument, built between 1818 and 1858 aecording to a plan of Montferrant, under the personal direction of Nicholas I., does not correspond either with its costliness (23,000,000 roubles) or with the efforts put forth in its decoration by the best Russian artists. The pictures of Briiloff, Bruni, and many others whieh eover its walls are deteriorating rapidly and their place is being taken by mosaics. The entire building, notwithstanding its vast foundations and pile-work, is subsiding unequally in the marshy ground,, and the walls threaten soon to give way.

The eastern extremity of Vasilyevskiy Island is the centre of commercial activity ; the stock exchange is situated there as well as the quays and storehouses. The remainder of the island is occu- pied chiefly by scientific and educational institutions,—the academy of science, with a small observatory (where some astronomical ob- servations are carried on, notwithstanding the tremors of the earth), the university, the philological institute, the academy of the first corps of cadets, the academy of arts, the marine academy, the min- ing institute, and the central physical observatory, all facing the Neva. Peterburgskiy Island contains the fortress of St Peter and St Paul, opposite the Winter Palace, scparated by a channel from its ‘‘kronverk,” the glacis of which is used asa park. The fortress is now merely a state prison. A cathedral which stands within the fortress is the burial-place of the emperors and the imperial family. The mint is also situated within the fortress. The remainder of the island is meanly built, and is the refuge of the poorer officials (tchinovniks) and of the intellectual proletariat. Its northern part, separated from the main island by a narrow channel, bears the name of Apothecaries’ Island, and is occupied by a botanical garden of great scientific value and several fine private gardens and parks. Krestovskiy, Elaghin, and Kamennyi Islands, as also the opposite right bank of the Great Nevka (Staraya and Novaya Derevnya), are occupied by public gardens and parks and by summer houses (datchis). Owing to the heat and dust during the short summer the middle-class inhabitants and the numerous officials and clerks emigrate to the datchis,

the wealthier families to the islands, and the poorer to Staraya and Novaya Derevnya Polustrovo, Kushe-

leva, and as far as the first two or three railway stations of the principal railways, especially that of Finland. The mainland on the right bank of the Neva above its delta is known as Vyborg- skaya Storona (Viborg Side), and is connected with the main city by the Liteinyi bridge, closely adjoining which are the buildings of the military academy of medicine and spacious hospitals. The small streets (many of them unpaved), with numerous wooden houses, are inhabited by students and workmen ; farther north are great textile and iron factories. Vast orchards and the yards of the artillery laboratory stretch north-eastwards, while the railway and the highroad to Finland, running north, lead to the park of the Forestry Institute. The two villages of Okhta, on the right

a\e. op a Ys ~

Koa

LIES | Gl Ug

VT Haasicraaesieg | gE

=

fj

Wolly \

x

Fic. 2.—Plan of St Petersburg.

. Stock Exchange. 7. Physieal Observatory. Academy of Sciences. 8. Winter Palace. . University. 9. Statue of Peter I.

ao woot

. Academy of First Corps of | 10. Senate and Synod. Cadets. 11. Cathedral of St Isaac.

. Academy of Arts. 12. General Staff Buildings.

. Mining Institute. 13. Hermitage Gallery of Art.

parts are squares and streets, the aggregate length of the latter being 283 miles. More than half of them are lighted by gas, the remainder with kerosene. Except in a few principal streets, which are paved with wood or asphalt, the pavement is usually of granite boulders, and is bad and very difficult to keep in order. Many streets and embankments in the suburbs are unpaved. Nearly all the more populous parts have water led into the houses (4733 houses in 1883), and the same begins to extend also to the right bank of the Neva. In 1883 7,091,500,000 gallons of water, mostly from the Neva, very pure on the whole,! were supplied by seven- teen steam-engines to the left-bank portion of the city (9423 gallons per inhabitant). The number of houses in 1881 was 22,229 inhabited and 16,983 uninhabited. Of the former 18,816 belonged to private persons and 3148 to societies or the crown. The houses are mostly very large: of the private houses no fewer than 169 had from 400 to 2000 inhabitants each; the contrary holds good

1 For analyses, see Journ. Russ. Chemical Soc., vol. xv. 567.

bank, are suburbs ; higher up, on the left bank, are several factopioe (Alexandrovsk) which formerly belonged to the crown, where playing-cards, cottons, glass, china, ironware, and so on are ma; The true boundary of St Petersburg on the south is the Obvodny} Canal; but wide tracts covered with orchards, cemeteries, and factories, or even unoccupied spaces, are included in the city in that direction, though they are being rapidly covered with buildings, Of the 21,195 acres covered by St Petersburg 1160 remain un- occupied. The gardens and parks, public and private, take up 798 acres, to which must be added Aptekarskiy, Petrovskiy, Elaghi and Krestovskiy Islands, which are almost quite covered with Nearly 30 per cent. of the total area of the most densely populated

vende

Z2 Y Ck _ TZ

- ial aap

Scale of 1 English Milo~ “ ”

. Cathedral of Virgin of Kazan.

. Military Storerooms. . Town-house.

. Theatres (Great and Mariinski).

16. Gostinyi Dvor. 23. Moscow Railway Station. 17. Public Library. 24. Medical Academy.

18. Anitchkoff Palace. 25. Hospital.

19. Orphanage. 26. Courts of Justice.

20. General Post-Office. 27. House of Detention.

of the out-lying parts, where 2005 houses had fewer than 20 inha- bitants each. On 27th December 1881 the population of St Petersburg was 861,303, exclusive of the suburbs, and 929,100 including them, thus showing an increase of 29 per cent. since 1869. The census of 1881 having been made with great accuracy, the following interest- ing results may be relied upon.? The density of population varies from 1 inhabitant per 93 square feet to 1 per 17,346 square feet (on Peterburgskiy Island) ; the average is 1 per 1068 square feet. Less than a third of the aggregate population (29°8 per cent.) were born in the capital, the remainder coming from all parts of Russi or being foreigners. The males are to the females in the proportion of 122 to 100; at the same time the married men and women corr stitute respectively 49 and 39 per cent. of the population, the numbers of the unmarried or widowed being respectively 48 and 4 per cent. for men, and 56 and 5 for women. The proportion

a 2 See St Petersburg according to the Census of 1881, and the Statistical Yearbook of St Petersburg for 1883, St Petersburg, 1884.

| 7) PETERSBURG

uildren issmall. The distribution of the population according to

ze is as follows:—

Under 5 years ….+.— 7-9 per cent. | From 16 to 20 years ..12°2 per cent. ‘From 6tol0 years .. 5°7 5, 5 MZ IGtCIGO st .255°2;, 55 fil dole op ge Seen Above 50 years…..... fo

rtality at St Petersburg beine very high (34:2 in 1883, Mes in 1868-82), af the number of births only 31:1 er 1000, the deaths are in excess of the births by 2500 to 3000 in yerage years ; in 1883 there were 26,320 births (1151 still-born) ind 30,150 deaths. It must not be inferred, however, from these ‘gures that the population of St Petersburg would die out if not scruited from without. The larger number of the workmen who me every year to the capital leave their families in the provinces, nd the births which occur do not appear among the births of the ipital, while the deaths very oftendo. The chief mortality is due) chest diseases, which prove fatal on the average to 9000 persons nnually; diseases of the digestive organs also prevail largely ; ‘uropeau and perhaps also Asiatic cholera is almost endemic, an verage of 8700 deaths annually being due to this cause. Infectious iseases such as typhus (from 4280 to 5100 deaths during the last ‘Ww years), diphtheria, and scarlet fever (3500 deaths) are common. iwing to a notable increase of these three infectious diseases the aortality figures for the last few years are above the average. Of 8,212 deaths nearly two-fifths (12,369) were among children under ve. Another critical age seems to be that between 21 and 25. The umber of marriages in 1883 was 6183 (only 7°1 per 1000 inhabit- nts) ; out of a total of 26,320 births 7977 (30 per cent.) were illegiti- nate; and no fewer than 31 per cent. of all children, both legitimate ‘nd illegitimate, born at St Petersburg are nursed in the foundlings’ ome, which sends most of them to be brought up in villages. More aan 100,000 persons enter the public hospitals annually.? ; ‘ An interesting feature of the Russian capital is the very high roportion of people living on their own earnings or income (““‘in- ependent”), as compared with those who live on the earnings or

icome of some one else (‘‘dependent”). Whereas at Paris and erlin only 34 and 50 per cent. respectively belong to the former utegory, the proportion is reversed at St Petersburg: only 33 per ont., 282,678 persons in all, have not thcir own means of support 18 per cent. of the men and 51 of the women). The proportion of mployers to employed, as also the extent of their respective families, re as follows :—

Various Trade. industries. Hous’ IMPIGUGEEIee lee eisssssc++e 8,858 19,508 28,366 Theimimmlies os… 5.5… 20,857 38,153 59,010 Clerksieiisctieriascsis. 2.065 > Soot 5,581 9,178 Their families . 4,163 7,491 11,654 NV OF KMS Uaioe «es «= « 37,559 195, 850 233,409 THELBRMMIINIES Te. cs eee 11,997 56,856 68,853 Independent workers …..... 8,336 28,954 37,290 THEMBEOMMICS! occ… eee 4,470 17,806 22,276

Only a few industrial cstablishments employ more than twenty ‘orkmen, the average being less than ten and the figure seldom illing below five. The great factories are beyond the limits of St ,etersburg, which contains a busy population of artisans grouped ‘1 small workshops. The proportions of various professions to the « population are as follows :—workmen, 1 in 3; servants, 1 in

; Scholars, 1 in 12; soldiers, 1 in 25; officials, 1 in 61; reutiers,” 1 in 76 ; female teachers, 1 in 186 ; male teachers, 1 in 31; policemen, 1 in 208 ; surgeons, 1 in 608 ; advocates, 1 in 1261; dothecaries, 1 in 1588; pawnbrokers, 1 in 1846; savants or litté- ueurs, 1 in 2121; lawyers, 1 in 2700. In respect of classes, 40°7 er cent. of the aggregate population belong to the “peasants,” JO are myeshchane (burgesses) and artisans, 12°38 are ‘‘ nobles,” ‘4 “merchants,” and 3°1 foreigners. The various religions are »presented by 84°9 per cent. Orthodox Greeks, 9°9 Protestants, 3°3 ‘oman Catholics, and 1°9 various (16,826 Jews). On the whole, te Orthodox population are not great frequenters of the churches, | hich are far less numerous than in Moscow. pS Petersburg is well provided with scicntific and educational istitutions, as also with libraries and museums. The intellectual ‘fe of the educated classes is vigorous, and, although 36 per cent. ‘ the population above six ycars old are unable to read, the work- en. tust be counted among the most intelligent classes in Russia.

_otwithstanding the hardships and prosecutions it is periodically ‘tbjeeted to, the university exercises a pronounced influence on the fe of St Petersburg. In 1882 it had eighty professors and 2165 ‘udents (968 in physics and mathematics, 776 in law). The medi- ul faeulty forms a scparate academy, under military jurisdiction, ith about 1500 students. There are, moreover, a philological insti- ite, a technological institute, a forestry academy, an engineering ademy, two theological academies (Greek and Roman Catholic), ee

oe mortality tables according to the Separate diseases are given in the uistical Yearbook. Very careful researches into the sanitary conditions of

€ city are given in the now suppressed Sbornik Sudebnoit Meditsi Mag vod. Jurisprudence) and Zaorovje (Eealth). ileal

an academy of arts, five military academies, a high school of law aud a lyceum. Higher instruction for women is represented by a medical academy (now ordered to be closed), by a frec university with 914 students in 1882, the standards of instruction and cxami- nation in both being equal to those of the other universities, and by higher pedagogical courses. For secondary education there are twelve classical gymnasia for boys and nine for girls, with four private gymnasia and three progymnasia, eight ‘‘real schools,”’ five seminaries for teachers, ten military schools, three German gym- nasia, and five other schools. For primary education there are 156 niunicipality schools (7225 scholars in 1883), 16 schools of the zemstvo, and about 450 others maintained either by public institu- tions or by private persons ; 19,400 boys and girls received instruc- tion in 431 public schools in 1884, the aggregate cost being £24,765 ; about 70 institutions for receiving the younger children of the poorer classes and several private ‘‘ kindergartens’ must be added to the above. The scientific institutions are numerous. The academy of sciences, opened in 1726, has rendered immense service in the exploration of Russia.2 The oft-repeated reproach that it keeps its doors shut to Russian savants, while opening them too widely to German ones, is not without foundation ; but the services rendered to science by the Germans in connexion with the academy are undoubtedly very great. The Pulkova astronomical observa- tory, the chief physical (meteorological)

observatory (with branches throughout Russia and Siberia), the astronomical observatory at Vilna, the astronomical and magnetical observatory at Peking, and the botanical garden,? all attached to the academy of sciences, issuc every year publications of the highest scientific value. The Society of Naturalists and the Physical and Chemical Society, though less than twenty years old, have already issued most valuable publica- tions, which are not so well known abroad as they deserve to be. The still more recently founded geological committee is ably push- ing forward the gcological survey of the country; the Mineralogical Society was founded in 1817. The Geographical Society, with four sections (923 members) aud branch societies for West and East Sibcria, Caucasus, Orenburg, the north-western and south-western provinces of European Russia, all liberally aided by the state, is well known for its valuable work, as is also the Entomological Society. There are four medical societies, and an Archeological Society (since 1846), an Historical Society, an Economical Society (120 years old), Gardening, Forestry, Technical, Navigation Socie- ties, and others, as also several scientific committees appointed at the ministries. The scientific work of the hydrographical depart- ment and of the general staff is well known. On the whole, there is access to all these societies, as well as to their museums and libraries. At St Petersburg classical music always finds first-rate performers and attentive hearers. The conservatory of music gives a superior musical instruction. The Musical Socicty is also worthy of notice. Art, on the other hand, has not freed itself from the old scholastic methods at the academy. Several independent artistic societies seek to remedy this drawback, and are the true cradle of the Russian genre painters.

The imperial public library, open free for 347 days in the year, though far behind the British Museum and the Bibliothéque Nationale in the number of volumes, nevertheless contains rich collections of books and MSS. Its first nucleus was the library of the Polish republic seized in 1795 (262,640 volumes and 24,574 prints), collected mostly by Archbishop Zalusski of Kieff. It has been much enriched since then by purchases and donations, and now (1886) contains more than 1,000,000 volumes, a remarkable collection of 50,000 “‘ Rossica” (everything published in Russia), and 40,000 MSS., some of which are very valuable and unique. The library of the academy of sciences, also open every day, contains more than 500,000

volumes, 13,000 MSS., rich collections of works on Oriental languages, and valuable collections of periodical publica- tions from scientific societies throughout the world. The library of the council of state is also open to the public ; while several libraries of scientific societies and departments of the ministries, very rich in their special branches, are easily accessible. Those of the hydro- graphical department, the academy of art, the musical conserva- tory, the university (150,000 vols.), are especially valuable to the student. Nearly thirty private circulating libraries, which have to contend with many restrictions, supply the students for a small fee with everything printed in Russia, if not prohibited by Govern- ment. The museums of the Russian capital have a marked place among those of Europe. That of the academy of science, witli more than 100,000 systematically classified natural history speci- mens; that of the Mineralogical Society, giving a full picture of the geology of Russia ; the Asiatic museum, with its rich collections of Asiatic MSS. and coins ; and several others are of great scientific value. The Hermitage Art Gallery contains a first-rate collection of the Flemish school, some pictures of the Russian school (the re- mainder being at the academy of arts), some good specimens of the

2 Sukhomlinoff, ‘‘ History of the Academy of Sciences,” in its Memoirs

(Russian), vol. xxvi., 1876, and the same year in its Mémoires in German. 3 Trautvetter, ‘‘ History of the Botanical Garden,” in Memoirs of the same,

1873, vol. ii. XXT. — 25

Italian, Spanish, and old French schools, and especially invaluable treasures of Greek and Scythian antiquities, as also a good collection of 200,000 engravings. ‘The old Christian and old Russian arts are well represented at the museum of the academy of arts. Besides these there are many other museums—pedagogical, medical, engin- eering, agricultural, forestry, marine, technical. ‘ ;

The press is represented by about 120 periodicals, including those of the scientific societies ; the right of publishing political papers is a monopoly in the hands of the very few editors who are able to procure the necessary

authorization. The publication of literary and scientific works, after having developed rapidly in 1859-69, is now greatly on the decrease owing to the oppressive measures of the censorship. In the development of the Russian drama St Petersburg has played a far less important part than Moscow, and the stage at St Petersburg has never reached the same standard of excellence as that of the older capital. On the other hand, St Petersburg is the cradle of Russian opera and Russian music. There are only four theatres of importance at St Petersburg—all imperial —two for the opera and ballet, one for the native drama, and one for the French and German drama.

St Petersburg is much less of a manufacturing city than Moscow or Berlin. The annual production of all the manufactures in the government of St Petersburg, chiefly concentrated in or around the capital, was in 1879 valued at £16,768, 600 out of £110,294,900 for the empire, against £19,500,000 in the government of Moscow. The chief manufactured goods are cottons (£8,073,000) and other textile fabrics (altogether £3,762,500), machinery (£2,355,800), rails (£1,342,300), tobacco and spirits (about £1,200,000 each), leather, sugar, stearine candles, copper and gum wares (from £850,000 to £450,000 cach), and a variety of smaller articles. The minor trades are greatly developed. No exact statistics of the internal trade can be given, except for the import and export of articles of food. In 1883 31,176,000 cwts. of grain and flour were imported by rail or river, of which 18,680,450 were re-exported and 2,809,900 sent to the interior. The exports in 1882 were valued at £1,864,980 from St Petersburg and at £6,557,017 from Cronstadt, the aggregate thus being £8, 421,997, in which articles of food, chiefly corn, represented £4,214,312, raw and half raw produce £4,009,446, and manufactured wares £197,520. The value of the imports was—to St Petersburg £8,616,383 and to Cronstadt £116,316. Among the total imports articles of food were valued at £1,941,393, raw and half raw produce at £4,009,090 (chiefly coal), and manufactured wares at £1,082,698. Cronstadt and St Petersburg were visited in the same year by 2195 ships of 951,000 tons (780 ships, 152,730 tons, from Great Britain). The coasting trade was represented by 702 vessels (119,300 tons) entered. The commercial fleet numbered only 43 steamers (14,000 tons) and 49 sailing vessels (8200 tons).

Six railways meet at St Petersburg. Two run westwards along both banks ‘of the Gulf of Finland to Hangéudd and to Port Baltic ; two short lines connect Oranienbaum, opposite Cronstadt, and Tsarskoye Selo (with Pavlovsk) with the capital; and two great trunk-lines run south-west and south-east to Warsaw (with branches to Riga and Smolensk) and to Moscow (with branches to Novgorod and Rybinsk). All are connected in the capital, except the Finland Railway, which has its station on the right bank of the Neva. Moreover, the Neva is the great channel for the trade of St Petersburg with the rest of Russia, by means of the Volga and its tributaries. The importance of the traffic may best be seen from the following figures, showing in cwts, the amount imported by different channels :— ‘

| | : All kinds

Corn and flour. Firewood. A aoe

PR ns eine Fosgate 11,061,000 20,891,000 59,331,000 BaltictRallwaye 22.0 0.— << 311,000 301,000 3,532,000 Moscow Railway …..... 12,558,000 482,000 21,056,000 Warsaw Railway …....- 312,000 157,000 2,353,000

No less than 1,162,230 pieces together with 7,337,000 cwts of timber were supplied in the same year via the Neva. The aggre- gate exports by rail and the Neva amounted to 11,382,000 cwts.

The average income of the St Petersburg municipality was £581,425 in 1880-82 (£577,856 in 1884),—that is, 13°7s. (6°84 roubles) per inhabitant, as against 35°8s. at Berlin and 98°2s. at Paris. The indirect taxes yield but 1s. per inhabitant (57s. at Paris). The average expenses for the same years reached £574,479 (£572,162 in 1884), distributed as follows :—20 per cent. of the whole for the police (10 at Paris and 27°5 at Berlin), 8 for administration, 16 for paving, 7 for lighting, 5 for public instruction, 2°6 for charity, and 8 for the debt (7 at Berlin and 37 at Paris). The municipal affairs are in the hands of a municipality, elected by three categories of electors (see Russta), and is practically a department of the chief of the police. The city is under a separate governor-general, whose authority, like that of the chief of police, is all the more unlimited since it has not been accurately defined by law.

St Petersburg is surrounded by several fine residences, mostly im- perial palaces with large and beautiful parks. Tsarskoye Selo, 16

ef PETER RY BW eo

miles to the south-east, and Peterhof, on the Gulf of Finland

summer residences of the emperor. Pavlovsk has a fine palace a parks, open to the public, where summer concerts attract thousand of people. Oranienbaum is now a rather neglected place. Pulkoy j on a hill 5 miles from St Petersburg, is well known for its der vatory; while several villages north of the capital, such as Pargoloyo, Murino, &c., are visited in summer by the less wealthy inhabitant :

History. —The region between Lake Ladoga and the Gulf of Finland was inhabited in the 9th century by Finns and gom, Slavonians. Novgorod and Pskoff made efforts to retain their dominion over this region, so important for their trade, and iu the 13th and 14th centuries they built the forts of Koporye (j

.. porye (in the present district of Peterhof), Yam (now Yamburg), and Oryeshek (now Schliisselburg) at the point where the Neva issues from Lake Ladoga. They found, however, powerful opponents in the Swedes, who erected the fort of Landskroua at the junction of the Okhta and the Neva, and in the Livonians, who had their fortress at Narva. Novgorod and Moscow successively were able by con. tinuous fighting to maintain their supremacy over the region south of the Neva throughout the 16th century ; but early in the 17th century Moscow was compelled to cede it to Sweden, which erected a fortress (Nyénschanz) on the Neva at the mouth of the Okhta, In 1700 Peter I. began his wars with Sweden. Orycshek was taken in 1702, and next year Nyénschanz. Two months later (29th June 1708) Peter I. laid the foundations of a cathedral to St Peter and St Paul, and of a fort which received his own name (in its Dutch transcription, ‘‘Piterburgh’’). Next year the fort of Cronslott was erected on the island of Kotlin, as also the admiralty on the Neva, opposite the fortress. The emperor took most severe and almost barbarous measures for increasing his newborn city. Thousands of people from all parts of Russia were removed thither and died in erecting the fortress and building the houses. Great numbers of artisans

and workmen were brouglit to St Petersburg to form the Myeshchanskaya villages, which raised the population to 100,000 inhabitants. All proprietors of more than ‘500 souls” were ordered to build a house at St Petersburg and to stay there in the winter. The construction of stone-houses throughout the rest of Russia was prohibited, all masous having to be sent to St Peters. burg. After Peter I.’s death the population of the capital rapidly decreased ; but foreigners continued to settle there. Under Eliz. beth a new series of compulsory measures raised the population to 150,000, which figure was nearly doubled during the reign of Catherine II. Since the beginning of the present century the population has steadily increased (364,000 in 1817, 468,600 in 1837, 491,000 in 1856, and 667,000 in 1869). The chief embellish- ments of St Petersburg were effected during the reigns of Alexander I. (1801-25) and Nicholas I. (1825-55).

When Peter I., desirous of giving a ‘‘ European” capital to his empire, laid the first foundations of St Petersburg on the marshy islands of the Neva, in land not fully conquered and remote from the centres of Russian life, it is hardly possible that he could have foreseen the rapid development it has since undergone: it has now a population approaching a million and commands more than one- sixth of the foreign trade and manufactures of Russia. In point of fact, there is no capital in Europe so disadvantageously situated with regard to its own country as St Petersburg. Desolate wilder- nesses begin at its very gates and extend for hundreds of miles to the north and east. ‘To the south it has the very thinly peopled regions of Pskoff and Novgorod,—the marshy and woody tracts of the Valdai Heights. For 400 miles in each of these three directions there is not a single city of any importance; and towards the west, on both shores of the Gulf of Finland, are foreign peoples who have their own centres of gravitation in cities on or nearer t0 the Baltic. With the provinces of Russia the capital is connected only by canals and railways, which have to traverse vast tracts of inhospitable country before reaching them. But St Petersburg possesses, on the other hand, one immense advantage in its site, which has proved of great moment, especially in the present cet: tury of development of international traffic. Ruled by the idea of creating a new Amsterdam—that is, a meeting-place for traders nationalities—and a great export market for Russia, Peter I. could have selected no better place. St Petersburg has been for nearly 150 years the chief place of export for raw produce from the most

productive parts of Russia. The great central plateau which forms the upper basins of all the chief Russian rivers had no other outlet to the sea than the estuary of the Neva. The natural outlet might indeed have been the Black Sea; but the rivers to the southwar are either interrupted by rapids like the Dnieper, or are shallow like the Don ; while their mouths and the entire coast-region remained till the end of the 18th century in the hands of Turkey. _ As for the Caspian, it faced Asia, and not Europe. The commercial outlet of the central plateau was thus the reverse of the physical. From the earliest years of Russian history trade had taken this northem direction. Novgorod owed its wealth to this fact ; and as far bac as the 12th century the Russians had their forts on Lake Ladoga and the Neva. In the 14th and 15th centuries they already eX changed their wares with the Dantzic merchants at Nu or AU

|

for what is now Vasilyevskiy Island. By founding + Petersburg Peter I. only restored the trade to its old but dis- arded channels. ‘The system of canals for connecting the upper ‘olea and the Dnieper with the great lakes of the north completed che work ; the commercial mouth of the Volga was transferred to he Gulf of Finland, and St Petersburg became the export harbour or more than half Russia. Foreigners hastened thither to take ‘ossession of the growing export trade, to the exclusion of the >yssians ; and to this circumstance the Russian capital is indebted yr its cosmopolitan character. But its present extensive and west- turopean aspect has not been achieved, nor is it maintained, without “vast expenditure of the national resources. — It cost hundreds of ‘housands of human lives before the marshy islands at the mouth f the Neva could be rendered fit to receive a million inhabitants nd be brought into connexion with the remainder of Russia ; and ery many mote are annually sacrificed for the maintenance of this apital on its unhealthy site, under the 60th parallel, hundreds of riles distant from the centres of Russian life. ~ The development of the railway system and the rapid coloniza- ion of southern Russia now operate, however, adversely to St otersburg. Its foreign trade is not actually decreasing, but the ery rapid growth in the exports of Russia within the twenty years efore 1886 was entirely to the benefit of other ports more highly avoured by nature, such as Riga and especially Libau, while the apid

inerease of population in the Black Sea region is tending to hift the Russian centre of gravity: new centres of commercial, ndustrial, and intellectual lifc are being developed at Odessa and »ostoff, The revival of Little Russia is another influence operating i the same direction.

Another important factor in the growth of the influence of St etersburg on Russian life was the concentration of all political ower in the hands of an absolute Government and in the narrow jreles surrounding the chief of the state. As Yuriy Dolgorukiy alt the neeessity of creating for a new phase of national history— hat of a centralized state—a new capital, Moscow, free from the nunieipal and republican traditions of the old Russian towns, so eter 1. felt the necessity of again creating a fresh capital for a hird phase of the country's progress,—a capital where the rising mperial power would be free from the control of the old boyar amilies. St Petersburg fully answers to this need. For more than .eentury and a half it was the real centre of political life and of oolitieal thought, impregnated with the conception of a powerful entral Government. In so strongly centralized a state as Russia yas, and still is, and for the phase of life which the empire has vassed through during the last two centuries, it mattered little vhether the capital was some hundred miles away from the natural entres of life and without the support of a dense and active sur- ounding population. Bureaucracy, its leading feature, was simply 'einforeed by the remoteness of the capital. But these circumstances \re at present undergoing a change. Since the abolition of serfdom nd in eonsequence of the impulse given. to Russian thought by his reform, the provinces are coming more and more to dispute he right of St Petersburg to guide the political life of the country. t has been often said that St Petersburg is the head of Russia and foscow its heart. The first part at least of this saying is true. jn the development of thought and in naturalizing in Russia the "esults of west European reflection St Petersburg has played through ut the present century a prominent part. Attracting to itself from he provinees the best intellects of the country, it has powerfully 'ontributed towards familiarizing the reading public with the eachings of west European science and philosophy, and towards jving to Russian literature that liberality of mind and freedom rom the trammels of tradition that have so often been noticed by vest Europeans. St Petersburg has no traditions, no history beyond hat of the palace conspiracies, and nothing in its past can attract he writer or the thinker. But, as new centres of

intellectual novement and new currents of thought develop again at Moscow nd Kieff or arise anew at Odessa and in the eastern provinces, hese plaees claim the right to their own share in the further de- velopment of intellectual life in Russia ; and it would not be sur- prising if the administrative and intellectual centre of the empire, ‘fter Its migrations successively from Kieff, Novgorod, and Pskoff 0 Moseow, and thence to St Petersburg, were again to follow a new “hovement towards the south. (P. AL K,)

ST PIERRE. See Rtunion, vol. xx. p. 493. ST PIERRE. See Martiniqvg, vol. xv. p. 586.

_ SAINT-PIERRE, Cuartes Intniz Caster, Appt DE | 1658-1743), a French writer of much ingenuity and influ- “nce, who is not unfrequently confounded with the author if Paul et Virginie, was born near Barfleur on the 18th of February 1658. His father was bailli of the Cotentin, snd Saint-Pierre, who was educated by the Jesuits, appears 0 have had an easy entrance to the best literary and olitical society of the capital. He was presented to the

‘he then name

abbacy of Tours, which a century before the poet Des- portes had held, and was elected to the Academy in 1699. But in 1718, in consequence of the political offence given by his Polysynodie, he suffered the very rare penalty of expulsion from that body. He died at Paris in 1743.

Saint-Pierre’s works (collected shortly before his death in eighteen volumes and originally published chiefly in the second and third decades of the 18th cettury) are almost entirely occupied with an acute and inventive, though generally visionary, criticism of politics, law, and social institutions. They had a great influence on Rousseau, who has left elaborate examinations of some of them, and has repro- duced not a few of their ideas in his own work. The titles are almost sufficient to show their nature. The chief are

Projet de Paix Perpetuelle (appositely published at Utrecht in 1718) and Poly- synodie (a severe stricture on the Government of Louis XIV., with projects for the adininistration of France by a system of councils for each department of government), together with a crowd of memorials and projects for stopping duelling, for equalizing taxa- tion, for treating mendicancy, for reforming education and spelling, &c. Unlike the later reforming abbés of the phdlosophe period, Saint-Pierre was a man of very unworldly character and quite destitute of the Frondeur spirit. He was also a nan of not a little intellectual power, and, as in the case of every such man who gives his fancy free course in the construction of political Utopias, not a few of his wishes and ideas have been realized in course of time. But it is difficult to give him much credit for practical grasp of politics.

SAINT-PIERRE, Jacques Hunri BERNARDIN DE (1737- 1814), French man-of-letters, was born at Havre on 19th January 1737 and was educated at Caen. After a fashion commoner with English than with French boys, he took an early fancy to the sea, and his uncle, a ship captain, gave him the opportunity of gratifying it. But a single voyage to Martinique was enough for him and he went back to school. He next wanted to be a missionary ; but his parents, who had probably taken the measure of his enthusiasms from his sea experiences, objected, and he became an engineer. He served in the army, but was dismissed for insubordination, and, after quarrelling with his family, was in some difficulty. But in 1761 he obtained an appointment at Malta, which also he did not hold long. The most rolling of stones, he appears at St Petersburg, at Warsaw, at Dresden, at Berlin, holding brief commis- sions as an engineer and rejoicing in romantic adventures, But he came back to Paris at the age of thirty even poorer than he set out. He then passed two years in literary work, supporting himself in an unknown fashion, and in 1768 (for he seems to have been as successful in obtaining appointments as in losing them) he set out for the Isle of France (Mauritius) with a Government commission and reniained there three years, returning home in 1771. These wanderings supplied Bernardin with the whole of what may be called his stock-in-trade, for, though he lived more than forty years longer, he never again quitted France. He was very poor, and indeed it is not easy to discover from his biographers what he lived upon, for, though he was an unwearied solicitor of employments and “ gratifications,” he received but little, and his touchy and sensitive tempera- ment frequently

caused him to quarrel with what little he did receive. On his return from Mauritius he was intro- duced to the society of D'Alembert and his friends, and continued to frequent it. But he took no great pleasure in the company of any literary man except Rousseau, of whom in Jean Jacques's last years he saw much, and on whom he formed both his own character and still more his style to a considerable degree. His first work of any im- portance, the Voyage & [Ile de France, appeared in 1773 and gained him some reputation. It is the soberest and therefore the least characteristic of his books. The Etudes de la Nature, which made his fame and assured him of literary success, did not appear till ten years later, his masterpiece Paul et Virginie not till 1787, and his other masterpiece (which, as much less sentimental and showing not a little humour, some persons may be allowed to prefer), the Chaumiére Indienne, not till 1790. In 1792 he married

a very young girl, Félicité Didot. For a short time in 1792 he was superintendent of the Jardin des Plantes and again for a short time professor of morals at the Ecole Normale in 1794. Next year he became a member of the Institute. After his first wife's death he married, in 1800, when he was sixty-three, another young girl, Désirée de Pelleport, and is said to have been very happy with her. He still continued to publish, and was something of a favourite with Napoleon. On the 21st of January 1814 he died at Eragny near Pontoise, where he had in his last years chiefly lived and where he had a house, so that he cannot have been ill off.

It has been hinted that Bernardin de Saint-Pierre's personal character was not entirely amiable; it may be added that his literary character has not in all English eyes sufficed to atone for it. Englishmen, and not Englishmen only, have been found to pro- nounce Paul et Virginie gaudy in style and unhealthy, not to say unwholesome, in tone. Perhaps Bernardin is not fairly to be judged by this famous story, in which the exuberant sensibility of the time finds cqually exuberant expression. The Chawmiére and some passages in the Etudes de la Natwre proper may be thought to exhibit the real merits of his style to greater advantage. The historic estimate (the sole estimate that is of much worth in com- parative literary criticism) at once disengages the question from its difficulties. Where Bernardin is of merit

and importance is in his breaking away from the dull and arid vocabulary and phrase which more than a century of classical writing had brought upon France, in his genuine and vigorous preference of the beauties of nature to the mere charms of drawing-room society, and in the attempt which he made, with as much sincerity as could fairly be expected from a man of his day, to reproduce the aspects of the natural world faithfully. After Rousseau, and even more than Rousseau, Ber- nardin was in French literature the apostle of the return to nature, and, though in him and his immediate follower, Chateaubriand, there is stil! much manncrism and unreality, he should not and will not lack the credit due.

Aimé Martin, disciple of Bernardin and the second husband of his second wife, published a complete edition of his works in 18 volumes (Paris, 1818-20), afterwards increased by additional correspondence, &c. Paul et Virginie, the Chaumiére Indienne, &c., have been separately reprinted in innumerable forms.

ST PIERRE anp MIQUELON, two islands 10 miles off the south coast of Newfoundland (see vol. xvii. pl. V.), at the entrance of Fortune Bay, are, with five lesser islets, the last remnant of the North American colonies of France. Both are rugged masses of granite, with a few small streams and lakelets, a thin covering of soil, and scanty vegetation. Miquelon (area, 45,542 acres) consists of Great Miquelon in the north and Little Miquelon, Langlade, or Langley in the south; previous to 1783 they were separate islands divided by a navigable channel, but they have since become connected by a dangerous sandbar. St Pierre (6420 acres) has a good harbour and roadstead, the latter, protected by fle aux Chiens, affording shelter, except in north-east storms, to the largest vessels. The small but busy town of St Pierre climbing the steep hill above the harbour is mainly built of wood; but it has a cathedral (of wood), an English chapel, a governor’s resi- dence, and various administrative offices, including the American terminus of the French Atlantic cable. Cod- fishing, to which the settlement owes its prosperity, was prosecuted in the five years 1878-82, on an average, by 4560 fishermen (mainly from Dunkirk and other French ports), and produced 3876 tons of dried and 157,754 tons of undried cod, with 450 tons of cod-liver oil. The total exports and imports were valued, respectively, at 9,218,278 and 4,441,817 francs in 1865, and 17,164,153

and 11,062,617 francs in 1883. The foreign trade in 1883 was valued at 10,218,473 francs. The population of the islands was 5564 (town of St Pierre 4365) in 1883; but the number is often above 10,000 in the fishing-season.

St Pierre and Miquelon, with 3000 inhabitants, were ceded to England along with Newfoundland in 1713; but on the English conquest of Canada they were assigned to France as a fishery depot. Destroyed by the English in 1778, restored to France in 1783, again depopulated by the English in 1793, recovered by France in 1802 and lost in 1803, the islands have remained an undisputed French possession since 1816.

ST PIERRE-LES-CALAIS, a suburb of Cazats (gn) with a population of 30,786 in 1881. a

ST POL DE LEON, a town of France, in the arrond. issement of Morlaix and department of Finistére, not fay from the shores of the English Channel, 132 miles north. west of Morlaix by the railway to Roscoff. This quiet episcopal city, old but modernized, is mainly of interest on account of its cathedral and the church of Notre Dame though it also contains an episcopal palace (1712-50), seminary (1691), and a hospital (1711). The cathedral, classed as an historical monument, belongs largely to the 13th century. Besides the west front, with its portico and its two towers with granite spires 180 feet high, the principal points of architectural interest are the traceried window of the south transept (with its glass) and the rect. angular apse, and in the interior the stalls of the choir (16th century) and the fascicled pillars and vault-archeg of the nave. On the right of the high altar is a wooden shrine containing the bell of St Pol de Léon (6 b 10 oz, in weight), which has the repute of curing headache and diseases of the ear, and at the side of the main entrance js a huge baptismal font, popularly regarded as the stone coffin of Conan Meériadec, king of the Bretons. Notre Dame de Creizker has a 15th-century spire, 252 feet high, which crowns the central tower. The north poreh is a fine specimen of the flamboyant style. The population of the town in 1881 was 3739 and of the commune 6659,

St Pol de Léon, or Fanum Saneti Pauli Leonini, was formerly a place of considerable importance. The barony of Léon, in the possession of the dukes of Rohan, gave them the right of presiding

in the provincial states alternatively with the duke of La Tremouille, baron of Vitré.

ST QUENTIN, a manufacturing town of France, the chef-lieu of an arrondissement and in population (45,697 in 1881) the largest town in the department of Aisne, stands on the right bank of the Somme, at the junction of the Somme Canal with the St Quentin Canal (which

‘unites the Somme Canal with the Scheldt), 954 miles north-

east of Paris by the railway to Brussels and Cologne, with branch lines to Guise (on the Oise) and Epéhy on the Flanders and Picardy railway. Built on a slope, with a southern exposure, the town is crowned by the collegiate church of St Quentin, one of the finest Gothic buildings of the north of France, which was erected between 1114 and 1477, and has, like some English cathedrals, the somewhat rare peculiarity of double transepts. The length of the church is 436 feet and the height of the nave 131. The magnificent clerestory windows are supported by a very elegant triforium. The baptismal chapel contains a fine stone retable. The choir has a great resemblance to that of Rheims, and, like the chapels of the apse, has been decorated with polychromic paintings. Under the choir is a crypt occupying the site of an older crypt constructed in the 9th century, of which only the three vaults with the tombs of St Quentin and his fellow-martyrs remain. ‘The town-house of St Quentin is a splendid building of the 15th and 16th centuries, with a flamboyant facade, adomed with curious sculptures. Behind the central gable rises bell-tower with chimes. ‘The council-room is a fine hall with a double wooden ceiling and a huge chimneyplece half Gothic half Renaissance. The old buildings of the Bernardines of Fervaques now provide accommodation for the courts, the learned societies, the school of design, the museum, and the library, and contain a large hall for public meetings. St Quentin is the centre of an indus- trial district which employs 130,000 workmen in 800 factories, and manufactures the fortieth part of the cotton imported into France, producing goods to the value 0 about £3, 500,000, mainly calicoes, percales(glazed cottons), cretonnes, jaconas,

twills, piqués, muslins, cambrics, gaUz wool-muslins, Scotch cashmeres, and merinos. Other

4

¢

ustries are the making of embroideries by machinery and by hand, turning billiard-balls, and engine-building.

“gt Quentin, the Augusta Veromanduorum of the Romans, stood ‘at the meeting-place of five roads of military importance. In the 3d century it was the scene of the martyrdom of Caius Quintinus, who had come as a preacher of Christianity, and in the reign of Dagobert the martyr’s tomb became under the influence of St Eloi a place of pilgrimage. After it had been thrice ravaged by the Normans the town was surrounded by walls in 883. It became under Pippin, grandson of Charlemagne, one of the principal domains ‘of the county of Vermandois, and in 1103 was constituted a commune. In 1195 it was incorporated with the royal domain and about the same time received an increase of its privileges. From 1420 to 1471 St Quentin was occupied by the Burgundians. Its capture by the Spaniards on the day of St Lawrence, 1557, was the success which Philip II. of Spain commemorated by building the Escorial. Two years later the town was restored to the French, and in 1560 it was assigned as the dowry of Mary Stuart. The forti- fications erected under Louis XIV. were demolished between 1810 and 1820. During the Franco-Prussiau War St Quentin repulsed the German attacks of 8th October 1870; and on 19th January 1871 it was the centre of the great battle fought by General Faid- herbe, one of the last episodes of the campaign.

ST SEBASTIAN. See SAN SEBASTIAN.

ST SERVAN, a cantonal town of France, in the depart- ment of Ille-et-Vilaine, on the right bank of the Rance to the south of St Malo, from which it is separated by a creek lt least a mile wide (see St Mato). In population (10,691 inhabitants in 1881; 12,867 in the commune) St Servan is slightly the smaller town of the two. It is not enclosed by walls, and with its new houses, straight wide streets, and numerous gardens forms quite a contrast

to its neigh- bour. In summer it attracts a number of seaside visitors. The floating dock will when finished have an area of 27 acres and one mile of quays. The creek on which it opens is dry at low water, but at high water is 30 to 40 feet deep. Another port on the Rance, to the south-west of the town ‘at the foot of the tower of Solidor, is used by the local guard-ship. This tower, erected in the close of the 14th century by Duke John IV. for the purpose of contesting the claims of Josselin de Rohan, bishop of St Malo, to the temporal sovereignty of the town, consists of three distinct towers formed into a triangle by loop-holed and machico- lated curtains. At the north-west point of St Servan stands the “city fort” and near by are the ruins of the cathedral of St Peter of Aleth, the seat of a bishopric from the 6th to the 12th century. The church is modern

(1742-1842),

: The northern quarter of St Servan, called ‘‘the City,” occupies the site of the city of Aleth, which at the close of the Roman empire \supplanted Corseul as the capital of the Curiosolites. Aleth was a bulwark of Druidism in those regions and was not Christianized till the 6th century, when St Malo became its first bishop. On the removal of the bishopric to St Malo Aleth declined; but the houses that remained standing became the nucleus of a new com- munity, which placed itself under the patronage of St Servan, apostle of the Orkneys. In 1758 the place was occupied by Marl- borough. It was not till 1789 that St Servan became a separate \ one from St Malo with a municipality and police of its own. | SAINT-SIMON, Craupe Henri, Comte pe (1760- 1825), the founder of French socialism, was born at Paris on 17th October 1760. He belonged to a younger branch (of the family of the celebrated duke of that name. His education, he tells us, was directed by D’Alembert. At the age of nineteen he went as volunteer to assist the | American colonies in their revolt against Britain. From his youth Saint-Simon felt the promptings of an eager ambition, His valet had orders to awake him every morn- ing with the words, “Remember, nionsieur le comte, that you have great things to do”; and his ancestor Charle- —— appeared to him in a dream foretelling a remarkable | uture for him. Among his early schemes was one to | unite the Atlantic and the Pacific by a canal, and another | to coustruct a canal from Madrid to the sea. He took no ee of

any importance in the Revolution, but amassed a little fortune by land speculation,—not on his own account,

however, as he said, but to facilitate his future projects. Accordingly, when he was nearly forty years of age he went through a varied course of study and experiment, in order to enlarge and clarify his view of things. One of these experiments was an unhappy marriage, which, after a year's duration, was dissolved by the mutual consent of the parties. Another result of his experiments was that he found himself completely impoverished, and lived in penury for the remainder of his life. The first of his numer- ous writings, Lettres un Habitant de Genéve, appeared in 1803; but his early writings were mostly scientific and political. It was not till 1817 that he began in a treatise entitled LZ' Industrie to propound his socialistic views, which he further developed in L'Organisateur (1819), Du Systéme Industriel (1821), Catéchisme des Industriels (1823). The last and most important expression of his views is the Nouveau Christianisme (1825). For many years before his death in 1825 (at Paris on 19th May) Saint-Simon had been reduced to the greatest straits. He was obliged to accept a laborious post for a salary of £40 a year, to live on the generosity of a former valet, and finally to solicit a small pension from his family. In 1823 he attempted suicide in despair. It was not till very late in his career that he attached to himself a few ardent disciples.

As a thinker Saint-Simon was entirely deficient in system, clearness, and consecutive strength. But his great influence on modern thought is undeniable, both as the historic founder of French socialism and as suggest- ing much of what was afterwards elaborated into Comtism. Apart from the details of his socialistic teaching, which are vague, inconsistent, and unsystematic, we find that the ideas of Saint-Simon as to the reconstruction of society are very simple. His opinions were conditioned by the French Revolution and by the feudal and military system still prevalent in France. In opposition to the destructive liberalism of the Revolution he insisted on the necessity of a new and positive reorganization of society. So far was he from advocating fresh social revolt that he appealed to Louis XVIII. to

inaugurate the new order of things. In opposition, however, to the feudal and military system, the former aspect of which had been strengthened by the restoration, he advocated an arrangement by which the industrial chiefs should control society. In place of the medieval church the spiritual direction of society should fall to the men of science. What Saint-Simon desired, therefore, was an industrialist state directed by modern science. In short, the men who are fitted to organize society for productive labour are entitled to bear rule in it. The social aim is to produce things useful to life ; the final end of social activity is "'the exploitation of the globe by association." The contrast between labour and capital so much emphasized by later socialism is not present to Saint-Simon, but it is assumed that the industrial chiefs, to whom the control of production is to be committed, shall rule in the interest of society. Later on the cause of the poor receives greater attention, till in his greatest work, The New Christianity, it becomes the central point of his teaching and takes the form of a religion. It was this religious development of his teach- ing that occasioned his final quarrel with Comte. Previous to the publication of the Wouveau Christianisme, Saint- Simon had not concerned himself with theology. Here he starts from a belief in God, and his object in the treatise is to reduce Christianity to its simple and essential elements. He does this by clearing it of the dogmas and other excrescences and defects which have gathered round both the Catholic and Protestant forms of it, which he subjects to a searching and ingenious criticism. "The new Christian organization will deduce the temporal insti- tutions as well as the spiritual from the principle that all

o

men should act towards 'one another as brethren." Ex- pressing the same idea in modern language, Saint-Simon propounds as the comprehensive formula of the new Christianity this precept—"The whole of society ought to strive towards the amelioration of the moral and physical existence of the poorest class; society ought to organize itself in the way best adapted for attaining this end." This principle became the watchword of the entire school of Saint-Simon ; for them it was alike the essence of religion and the programme of social reform.

During his lifetime the views of Saint-Simon had very little influence; and he left only a very few devoted disciples, who continued to advocate the doctrines of their master, whom they revered as a prophet. An important departure was made in 1828 by Bazard, who gave a “complete exposition of the Saint-Simonian faith ” in a long course of lectures at Paris in the Rue Taranne. In 1830 Bazard and Enfantin were acknowledged as the heads of the school; and the fermentation caused by the revolu- tion of July of the same year brought the whole movement prominently before the attention of France. Early next year the school obtained possession of the Globe through Pierre Leroux, who had joined the school, which now numbered some of the ablest and most promising young men of France, many of the pupils of the Ecole Poly- technique having caught its enthusiasm. The members formed themselves into an association arranged in three grades, and constituting a society or family, which lived out of a common purse in the Rue Monsigny. Before long, however, dissensions began to arise in the sect. Bazard, a man of logical and more solid temperament, could no longer work in harmony with Enfantin, who desired to establish an arrogant and fantastic sacerdotalism with lax notions as to marriage and the relation of the sexes. After a time Bazard seceded and many of the strongest supporters of the school followed his example. A series of extravagant entertainments given by the society during the winter of 1832 reduced its financial resources aud greatly discredited it in character. They finally re- moved to Menilmontant, to a property of Enfantin, where they lived in a communistic society, distinguished by a peculiar dress. Shortly after the chiefs were tried and condemned for proceedings prejudicial to the social order ; and the sect was entirely broken up (1832). Many of its members became famous as engineers, economists, and men of business. The idea of constructing the Suez Canal, as carried out by Lesseps, proceeded from the school.

In the school of Saint-Simon we find a great advance both in the breadth and firmness with which the vague and confused views of the master are developed ; and this progress is due chiefly to Bazard. In the philosophy of history they recognize epochs of two kinds, the critical or negative and the organic or constructive. The former, in which philosophy is the dominating force, is charac- terized by war, egotism, and anarchy ; the latter, which is controlled by religion, is marked by the spirit of obedience, devotion, associa-

“tion. The two spirits of antagonism and association are the two great social principles, and on the degree of prevalence of the two depends the character of an epoch. The spirit of association, how- ever, tends more and more to prevail over its opponent, extending from the family to the city, from the city to the nation, and from the nation to the federation. This principle of association is to be the keynote of the social development of the future. Hitherto the law of humanity has been the “exploitation of man by man” in its three stages, slavery, serfdom, the proletariat ; in the future the aim must be “the exploitation of the globe by man associated to man.” Under the present system the industrial chief still exploits the proletariat, the members of which, though nominally free, must accept his terms under pain of starvation. This state of things is consolidated by the law of inheritance, whereby the insttuments of production, which are private property, and all the attendant social advantages are transmitted without regard to personal merit. The social disadvantages being also transmitted, misery becomes here- ditary. The only remedy for this is the abolition of the law of

inheritance, and the union of all the instruments of labour in a social fund, which shall be exploited by association. Society thus

> AI T-

os 1M ON

becomes sole proprietor, intrusting to social groups and social fune- tionaries the management of the various properties. The right of succession is transferred from the family to the state. The school of Saint-Simon insists strongly on the claims of merit; the

advocate a social hierarchy in which each man shall ho placed according to his capacity and rewarded according to his works

This is, indeed, a most special and pronounced feature of the Saint. Simon socialism, whose theory of government is a kind of spiritual or scientific autocracy, degenerating into the fantastic sacerdotalism of Enfantin. With regard to the family and the relation of the sexes the school of Saint-Simon advocated the complete emancipa. tion of woman and her entire cquality with man. The socia) individual” is man and woman, who are associated in

the eXercise of the triple function of religion, the state, and the family. In its official declarations the school maintained the sanctity of the Chris. tian law of marriage. On this point Enfantin fell into a prurient and fantastic latitudinarianism, which made the school a scandal to France, but many of the most prominent members besides Bazard refused to follow him. Connected with these doctrines was their famous theory of the "rehabilitation of the flesh," deduced from the philosophic theory of the school, which was a species of Pan- theism, though they repudiated the name. On this theory they rejected the dualism so much emphasized by Catholic Christianity in its penances and mortifications, and held that the body should be restored to its due place of honour. It is a vague principle of which the ethical character depends on the intcrpretation ; and it was variously interpreted in the school of Saint-Simon. 1¢ was certainly immoral as held by Enfantin, by whom it was developed into a kind of sensual mysticism, a system of free love with a reli- gious sanction.

An excellent edition of the works of Saint-Simon and Enfantin was begun by survivors of the sect in Paris (1865), and now numbers forty vols. See Reybaud, Etudes sur les Réformateurs modernes (7th edition, Paris, 1864); Janet, Saind- Simon et le Saint-Simonisme (Paris, 1878); A. J. Booth, Saint-Simon and Saint Simonism (London, 1871).

SAINT-SIMON, Lovis pE Rovuvray (or Rovvroy), Duc pe (1675-1755), was born at Versailles on 16th January 1675. He was the son of Claude de Saint-Simon, who represented a family which had been established for many centuries at La Ferté Vidame, between Mortagne and Dreux, and which claimed descent from Charlemagne. Claude de Saint-Simon had been a page of Louis XHI, and, gaining the king's favour as a sportsman, had received various preferments and was finally created due et pair. This peerage is the central fact in Saint-Simon's history, and it is impossible to understand him without under- standing it. To speak, as one of his few biographers in English has spoken, of ''a young duke of recent creation," and of the apparent absurdity of such a young duke taking the aristocratic views which characterized Saint-Simon through life, is to show the most deplorable ignorance of the facts. The French peerage under the old régime was a very peculiar thing, difficnlt to comprehend at all, but quite certain to be miscomprehended if any analogy of the English peerage, such as is

implied in the observation just quoted, is imported into the consideration. No two things could be more different in France than ennobling a man and making him a peer. No one was made a peer who was not ennobled, but men of tle noblest blood in France and representing their houses might not be, and in most cases were not, peers. Derived at least traditionally and imaginatively from the douze pairs of Charlemagne, the peers were supposed to represent the chosen of the noblesse, and gradually, in an indefinite and constantly disputed fashion, became associated with the parlement of Paris as a quasi-legislative (or at least law-registering) and directly judicial body. But the peerage was further com- plicated by the fact that not persons but the holders of certain fiefs were made peers. Strictly speaking, neither Saint-Simon nor any one else in the same case was made a peer, but his estate was raised to the rank of a duché pairié or a comté patrie as the case might be. If all analogies were not deceptive, the nearest idea of a French peerage © the old kind may be obtained by an English reader if he takes the dignity of a Scotch or Irish representative peel then supposes that dignity to be made hereditary, and then limits the heritableness of it not merely to descent

‘ q sut to the tenure in direct succession of certain estates. “+ must of course be understood that the peers were not slected but nominated. Still they were in a way a stand- ng committee representative of the entire body of nobles, and it was Saint-Simon’s lifelong ideal and at times his sractical effort to convert them into a sort of great council yf the nation. These remarks are almost indispensable -o illustrate his life, to which we may now return. His mother, Claude de Saint-Simon’s second wife, was Charlotte je PAubespine, who belonged to a family not of the yidest nobility but which had been distinguished in the sublic service at least since the time of Francis I. Her son Louis was well educated, to a great extent by her- self, and he had had for godfather and godmother no ess persons than Louis XIV. and the queen. After some cuition by the Jesuits (especially by Sanadon, the editor of

Horace), he betook himself in 1692, at the age of seventeen, |

so the career of arms, entering the mousquetaires gris. He was present at the siege of Namur, and next year his ther died. He still continued in the army and was present at the battle of Neerwinden. But it was at this very time

that he chose to begin the crusade of his life by instigating, if not bringing, an action on the part of the

eers of France against Luxembourg, his victorious general, ona point of precedence. He fought, however, another ampaign or two (not under Luxembourg), and in 1695 married Gabrielle de Durfort, daughter of the maréchal be Lorges, under whom he latterly served. He seems to have regarded her with a respect and affection not very usual between husband and wife at the time; and she sometimes succeeded in modifying his aristocratic crotchets. But as he did not receive the promotion he desired he flung up his commission in 1702. Louis, who was already becoming sensitive on the point of military ill-success, and who was not likely to approve Saint-Simon's ltigiousness on points of privilege, took a dislike to him, and it was only indirectly and by means of establishing interest with the dukes of Burgundy and Orleans that he was able to keep something of a footing at court. He was, however, intensely interested in all the transactions of Versailles, and by dint of a most heterogeneous collection of instru- ments, ranging from dukes to servants, he managed to obtain the extraordinary secret information which he has handed down to us about almost every event and every per- onage of the last twenty years of the "grand monarque." ee own part appears to have been entirely subordinate. He was appointed ambassador to Rome in 1705, but the Appointment was cancelled before he started. At last he attached himself to the duke of Orleans and, though this 'was hardly likely to conciliate Louis's good will to him, .t gave him at least (what was of the first importance in shat intriguing court) the status of belonging to a definite oarty, and it eventually placed him in the position of tried 'rend to the acting chief of the state. He was able, more- ver, to combine attachment to the duke of Burgundy with chat to the duke of Orleans. Both attachments were no Hloubt all the more sincere because of his undying hatred 0 "the bastards," that is to say, the illegitimate sons of Louis XIV. It does not appear that this hatred was 'ounded on moral reasons or on any real fear that these astards would be intruded into the succession. The true vause of his wrath was that they had precedence of the peers.

The death of Louis seemed to give Saint-Simon a chance of realizing his hopes. The duke of Orleans was at once vcknowledged regent and Saint-

Simon was of the council of regency, but no steps were taken to carry out his avourite vision of a France ruled by the nobles for its 3ood (it must always be understood that Saint-Simon's 'deal was in no respect an aristocratic tyranny except of jhe beneficent kind), and he had little real influence with

oA inh T-

the regent. He was indeed gratified by the degradation of "the bastards," and in 1721 he was appointed ambassador to Spain to arrange for the marriage (not destined to take place) of Louis XV. and the infanta. His visit was splendid ; he received the grandeeship, and, though he also caught the smallpox, he was quite satisfied with the business. After his return he had little to do with public affairs. His own account of the cessation of his intimacy with Orleans and Dubois, the latter of whom had never been his friend, is, like his own account of some other events of his life, obscure and rather suspicious. But there can be little doubt that he was practically ousted by the favourite. He survived for more than thirty years; but little is known of his life. His wife died in 1743, his eldest son a little later ; he had other family troubles, and he was loaded with debt. When he died, at Paris on 2d March 1755, he had almost entirely outlived his own generation (among whom he had been one of the youngest) and the prosperity of his house, though not its notoriety. This last was in strange fashion revived by a distant rela- tion born five years after his own death, Claude Henri, Comte de Saint-Simon, the subject of the preceding article.

It will have been observed that the actual events of Saint-Simon's life, long as it was and high as was his position, are neither very numerous nor very noteworthy. If nothing more had been known about him than was known at the time of his death he would certainly not have deserved mention at length here. Saint-Simon is, however, an almost unique example of a man who has acquired great literary fame entirely by posthumous publications. He was an indefatigable writer, and not merely from the time he left the army but much earlier he began to set down in black and white all the gossip he collected, all his interminable legal disputes of precedence, and a vast mass of unclassified and almost unclassifi- able matter. Most of his

manuscripts came into the possession of the Government, and it was long before their contents were pub- lished in anything like fulness. Extracts and abstracts, however, leaked out and parts of the manuscript were sometimes lent to privileged persons, so that some notion of the unique value of Saint-Simon got abroad within twenty or thirty years of his death. Partly in the form of notes on Dangeau's Journal, partly in that of original and independent memoirs, partly in scattered and multi- farious tracts and disquisitions, he had committed to paper an amount of matter which has probably never been exceeded by any one except a professional journalist, if indeed the parallel will hold even there. The new edition now publishing of the Memoirs with the notes on Dangeau is estimated to eontain thirty large octavo volumes. Besides this, M. Drumont, M. Faugére, and other in- dependent workers are bringing out series of Guvres Inédites of a less gossiping and more technical character found in different re- ceptacles of the public archives. But the mere mass of these pro- ductions is their least noteworthy feature, or rather it is most remarkable as contrasting with their character and style. The voluminous writer is usually thought of as least likely to be eharacterized by an original and sparkling style. Saint-Simon, though careless and sometimes even ungrammatical, ranks among the most striking memoir writers of France, the eountry richest in memoirs of any in the world. His pettiness, his absolute injustice to his private enemies and to those who espoused publie parties with which he did not agree, the bitterness which allows him to give favourable portraits of hardly any one, his omnivorous appetite for gossip, his lack of proportion and perspective, are all lost sight of in admiration of his extraordinary genius for historical narrative and character-drawing of a certain sort. He has been compared to Tacitus, and for once the comparison, so often made aud generally so ludicrously out of place, is just. In the midst of his enormous mass of writing phrases scarcely inferior to the Roman's occur frequently, and here and there passages of sustained description equal for intense concentration of light and life to those of Tacitus or of any other historian. As may be expected from the vast extent of his work, it is in the highest degree unequal. But he is at the same time not a writer who ean be ''sampled" easily, inasmuch as his most characteristic phrases sometimes occur in the midst of long stretches of quite uninteresting matter. Hence he has been even since his discovery more praised than read, and better liked by critics than by the general reader. A few eritical studies of him, especially those of

Sainte-Beuve, are in fact the basis of much, if not most, that has been written about him. Yet no one is so little to be taken at second-hand. Even his most famous passages, such as the account of the death of the dauphin or of the bed of justice where his enemy the duke of Maine was degraded, will not give a fair idea of his talent. These are his gallery pieces,

his great ‘‘ machines,” as French art slang calls them. Much more noteworthy as well as more frequent are the sudden touches which he gives. The bishops are ‘‘cuistres violcts” ; M. de Caumartin “porte sous son manteau toute la fatuité que M. de Villeroy étale

feu

sur son baudrier ”; another politician has a ‘‘ mine de chat faché 3 a third is hit off as ‘‘comptant faire” (‘‘he would still be doing,” though Saint-Simon certainly did not know that phrase). In short, the interest of the Jemoirs, independent of the large addition of positive knowledge which they make, is one of constant surprise at the novel and adroit use of word and plhiase. It is not super- fluous to inform the English reader that some of Macaulay’s most brilliant portraits and sketches of incident are adapted and some-

times almost literally translated from Saint-Simon.

The 1st edition of Saint-Simon (some scattered pieces may have been printed before) appeared in 1788. It was a merc selection in three volumes and was much cut down before it was allowed toappear. Next year four more volumes made their appearance, and in 1791 a new edition, still further increased. The whole, or rather not the whole, was printed in 1829-30 and reprinted some ten years later. The real creator of Saint-Simon, as far as a full and exact text is concerned, was M. Chéruel, whose edition in 20 volumes dates from 1856 and was reissued again revised in 1872. So immense, however, is the mass of Saint- Simon's MSS. that still another recension has been found necessary, and is now being published by M. de Boislisle in the series of Grands Ecrivains, but with M. Chéruel's sanction and assistance. Even this, as above noted, will not ex- haust available Saint-Simoniana, and it may be doubted whether it will be possible for many years to place a complete edition on the shelves. It must, however, be admitted that the matter other than the Memoirs is of altogether inferior interest and may be pretty safely neglected by any one but professed antiquarian and historical students. For criticism on Saint-Simon there is nothing better than Sainte-Beuve's two sketches in the 3d and 15th volumes of the Causeries du Lundi. The latter was written to accompany M. Chéruel's 1st edition. In English by far the most accurate treatment is in a recent Lothian prize essay by H. Cannan (Oxford and London, 1885). (G. SA.)

ST THOMAS, one of the Danish West India Islands, lies 36 miles east of Porto Rico (Spanish) and 40 north- north-west of St Croix (Danish), with its principal town (Charlotte Amalie) in 18° 20' 27" N. lat. and 64° 55' 40" W. long. It is 13 miles long from east to west, with an average breadth of 3, and is estimated to have an area of 33 square miles. The highest point, West Mountain, is 1586 feet above the sea. Previous to the abolition of slavery in 1848 the island was covered with sugar planta- tions and dotted with substantial mansions; but now a few vegetables, a little fruit, and some guinea grass are all that it produces. Greengroceries are imported from the United States, poultry and eggs from the neighbouring islands. Nor is the exceptional position which St Thomas has hitherto enjoyed as a commercial depét any longer secure ; the value of the imports in 1880 was less than one-half of what it was in 1870, and the merchants of Venezuela, Porto

Rico, San Domingo, Hayti, &c., who used to purchase in St Thomas, now go direct to the markets of the United States and Europe. The Royal Mail Com- pany, which at an early date chose the island as the princi- pal rendezvous for its steam-packets in that part of the world, and whose example was followed by other important lines, removed its headquarters to Barbados in 1885. The harbour lies about the middle of the south coast and is nearly landlocked ; its depth varies from 36 to 18 feet. A floating dock, 250 feet in length, was completed in 1875 ; there is in addition a steam-slip capable of taking up a vessel of 1200 tons. Along the north side of the harbour lies Charlotte Amalie, popularly known as St Thomas, the only town on the island. In 1880 the inhabitants of the island numbered 14,389 (males 5757, females 8632), of whom about a sixth are white, of various nationalities ; the rest have nearly all more or less of Negro blood. English has gradually become almost the exclusive lan- guage of the educated classes, and is used in the schools and churches of all the various communities. The curious Creole speech of the Negroes, which contained a mixture of broken Dutch, Danish, English, &c., though it wag re- duced to writing by the Moravian missionaries subsequent to 1770, is rapidly dying out.!_ About a third of the popu- lation are Roman Catholics, and the rest mainly Protestants of the Lutheran, Dutch Reformed, Moravian, and English Episcopal Churches. The Jewish community, 500 or 600 strong, has a synagogue. There are in the town two

? See specimens and analysis by Dr E. Pontoppidan, in Zéschr. Ee Ethnol., Berlin, 1881.

hospitals, a public reading-room and library, a Government college (1877), a Roman Catholic college (St Thomas), a Moravian school, and a small theatre. A quarantine lazq. retto is maintained on Lighthouse or Muhlenfeldt Point, The general health of the town is good. The climate varies little all the year round, the thermometer seldom falling below 70° or rising above 90°. In the “hurricane” months—August, September, and October—south winds, accompanied by sultry heat, rain, and thunder, are not yp. common ; throughout the rest of the year the wind blows between

east and north, Earthquakes are not unfrequent, but they do little damage in comparison with cyclones, which sometimes sweep over the island.

St Thomas was discovered by Columbus in 1498, and at that time was inhabited by two tribes, the Caribs and the Arrowauks, In 1657 it was colonized by the Dutch, and after their departure for New York it was held by the English in 1667. The Danish West India and Guinea Company took possession in 1671, and some eight years later began the introduction of slave labour,]f was succeeded in 1685 by the so-called Brandenburgh Company, the principal shareholders of which were Dutch. The colony was strengthened by French refugees from St Christopher's after the revocation of the edict of Nantes. The neutrality of Denmark led to the prizes of the various belligcrents being brought to its port for sale. In 1754 the king of Denmark took the management of the colony into his own hands, and in 1764 he threw open the port to vessels of all nations. The neutrality of Denmark again favoured it in the war of 1792; and it became the only market in the West Indies from which the products of the colonies could be conveyed to the north of Europe. In 1801 the island was held by the British for ten months, and it was again in their possession from the latter part of 1807 to 1815. At that time the harbour was three or four times a year the rendezvous for homeward-bound English ships, from 200 to 400, as the case might be, which waited there for their convoys. The South American War of Independence led a number of Spaniards to settle at St Thomas. A great but temporary stimulus was given to its commerce during the American Civil War. In 1871 the Danish Government removed the headquarters of their West India possessions from St Croix to St Thomas.

ST THOMAS (Portuguese, Séo Thomé), a volcanic island in the Gulf of Guinea (West Africa), lies immediately north of the equator and in 6° 40' E. long. From the Gaboon, the nearest point of the mainland, the distance is 166 miles, and from the Cameroons 297. The extreme length of the island is 32 miles and the breadth from west to east 21; the area is estimated at 355 square miles. From the coast it rises pretty uniformly towards the lofty and verdant mountains, in the midst of which the peak of St Thomas towers to a height of 6000 feet. At leasta hundred streams great and small rush down the mountain- sides through deep-cut ravines, many of them forming beautiful waterfalls, such as those of Blu-blu, &e., on the Agua Grande. The

bi-seasonal climate of the tropics ob- tains a comparatively normal development on the island, which, however, has a very evil repute of unhealthiness, probably owing to the fact that the chief town occupies 4 peculiarly malarial site on the coast. The first object of European cultivation in St Thomas was sugar, and to this the colony owed its prosperity in the 16th century; but now it is quite displaced by coffee and cocoa, introduced in the beginning of the 19th century. In 1879-80 the export of coffee was 3,778,580 Ib and of cocoa 1,026,746 Tb. Vanilla and cinchona bark both succeed well, the latter between 1800 and 3300 feet of altitude. Though nearly the whole surface of the island is fitted for cultivation, only about a fifth part is really turned to account. Along with Principe, St Thomas forms a Portuguese province, to which are attached the little island of Rolas and the petty fort of Ajuda on the Guinea coast.

The town of St Thomas, the capital of the province, is situated on the north-east coast of the island, and the neighbouring distncts form the only well-peopled region. In 1878 the population in the island was 18,266, of whom 1200 were white. The great bulk con sisted of a mixture of Negroes from various parts of the West Coast, mainly introduced as slaves, and now all using @ Negro Portuguese—“‘ lingua de 8. Thomé.” On the south-west coast até

ed

Eee en ere

Se oe

Lae

So

Ra Me! —

|

r 00 Angolares, descendants of a shipload of Angola slaves ie at Sete Pedras in 1544, who still retain their Bunda speech

: iar customs.

ed was discovered about the close of 1470 by the Portu- ‘yese navigators Jodo de Santarem and Pero de Escobar, who in ‘re beginning of the following year discovered Annobom (“Good ear i bney found St Thomas uninhabited. The first attempts + colonization were Jodo de Paiva’s in 1485; but nothing perma- ‘ent was accomplished till 1493, when a body of criminals and of ‘oung Jews torn from their parents to be baptized were sent to the Hands and the present capital was founded by Alvaro de Carminha. onsiderable progress had been made by the 16th century ; but in ‘567 the settlement was attacked by the French, and in 1574 the ngolares began those raids which only ended with their subjuga- ‘on in 1693. In 1595 there was a slave revolt; and from 1641 to 844 the Dutch, who had plundered the capital in 1600, held pos- sssion of the island. The French did great damage in 1709; and the course of the century internal anarchy reduced St Thomas

) a deplorable state.

See Dr Greeff’s papers in Petermann’s Mitteilungen, 1884, and Globus, 1882, ol. xlii,

SAINT-VICTOR, Pav bE (1827-1883), one of the hief masters of a very ornate style in recent French litera- ure, was born at Paris in 1827 and died there in 1883. {e was of noble birth and inherited the title of count, but arely used it, his political principles being democratic. vaint-Victor began as a dramatic critic on the Pays in 851 and subsequently wrote in many journals. In 1870, -uring the last days of the second empire, he was made aspector-general of fine arts. Almost all Saint-Victor’s vork consists of reprinted articles, the best known, and on he whole the best, being the collection entitled Hommes t Dieux (1867). His death interrupted the publication f an elaborate work, partly reprinted, partly developed rom formerly printed papers, entitled Les Deux Masques, 1 which the author intended to survey the whole dramatic terature of ancient and modern times. Saint-Victor’s ictual critical faculty was considerable, though rather one-ided; but his position in French literature is likely to e, in an inferior degree, something like that of Mr Ruskin a English. He owed a good deal to Théophile Gautier, ut he carried ornateness to a pitch far beyond Gautier’s, —a pitch which may sometimes deserve the epithet “barbaric,”

ST VINCENT, an island in the West Indies, discovered |

y Columbus in 1498, is situated in 13° 10’‘N. lat. and 0° 57’ W. long., 100 miles to the west of Barbados; it 3 18 miles in length, 11 in breadth, and has an area of (32 square miles, Volcanic hills cross the island from orth to south, intersected by beautiful and fertile valleys. n the north-west is the Souffriere, a volcanic mountain 3000 feet), of which the last violent eruption was in 812; the crater is 3 miles in circumference and 500 feet 1 depth. The climate is humid and tolerably healthy iverage rainfall nearly 80 inches), In 1627, when Charles granted St Vincent to the earl of Carlisle, it was peopled y Caribs ; in 1672 it was given to Lord Willoughby, and 1 1722 was granted, along with other islands, to the Juke of Montagu by George I. After hostilities with the ‘rench and Caribs, it passed definitively to Great Britain t 1783, Immigrants were afterwards introduced and antations cultivated ; the chief products are sugar, rum, Olasses, and arrowroot. ‘The capital is Kingstown (popu- ‘tion, 5993), the total population of the island being 7,200, including 2700 Europeans and 30,000 Africans. he island was formerly under the general government of 1e Windward Islands, Barbados being headquarters ; but . 1885 Barbados was made a separate government, and renada, St Vincent, Tobago, and St Lucia were placed ider a governor. The legislative council of St Vincent | Composed. of official members and others nominated by © crown. In 1883 the revenue and expenditure were Spectively £34,509 and £32,962, the debt being £2840. je tonnage entered and cleared was 172,989, the imports

and exports being valued at £148,286 and £166,752 re- spectively (sugar exports, 9250 tons).

ST VINCENT, Siz Joun Jervis, Eart (1734-1823), a distinguished naval officer, was born at Meaford, Stafford- shire, on 9th January 1734, His father was counsel and solicitor to the admiralty and treasurer of Greenwich hos- pital. Young Jervis was destined for the law, but early showed such a strong predilection for the sea that he ran away from school in order to become a sailor. Accordingly in 1748 he was placed on board the “

Gloucester” under Commodore Townsend. Six years later he rose to be lieutenant, and in 1759 he distinguished himself so much at the siege and capture of Quebec that he was promoted to the rank of commander. In the following year he was made a post-captain. He commanded the “ Foudroyant” in July 1778, when the memorable rencontre took place between Admiral Keppel and Count d’Orvilliers, and bore a very distinguished part in that action. In 1782, while in command of the same vessel, he captured the French ship “ Pégase,” of 74 guns and 700 men, off Brest Harbour, and was rewarded for his exploit by being made Knight Com- panion of the Bath. In 1784 he entered parliament as member for Launceston, and he afterwards sat for Yar- mouth. Conjointly with Sir Charles Grey, Jervis was appointed to command an expedition sent out in 1793 against the French Caribbee islands, and, though the rainy season and the yellow fever prevented the full success of the British, they were able to obtain possession of Mar- tinique and St Lucia, and to hold Guadaloupe for a short time. In 1795 Jervis became full admiral and succeeded Lord Wood in command of the British fleet in the Medi- terranean, where he rendered important service in blockad- ing the French fieet in Toulon, and protecting English trade in the Levant. On 14th February 1797 he won his most. celebrated victory. With only fifteen ships of the line, seven frigates, and two sloops he encountered off Cape St Vincent a Spanish fleet of twenty-six sail of the line, twelve frigates, and a brig, and completely defeated it, capturing four of the enemy’s largest ships. For this great triumph, which had a most important effect on the prosecution of the war, Jervis was created a peer by the title of Earl St Vincent. He still further distinguished himself some months later by his resolute and sagacious conduct in re- pressing a mutiny in his fleet when off Cadiz. In June 1799 he resigned his command in consequence of ill-health, but was shortly afterwards placed at the head of the: Channel fleet. On the formation of the Addington ministry in 1801 he was made first lord of the admiralty, and in that important office, which he held for three years, the great capacity for business with which he was endowed by nature shone forth in all its lustre. By means of the cele- brated commission of naval inquiry he was enabled to ex- pose a vast extent of corruption in the public service and to lay the foundation of a system of economical administration. He grappled boldly with the monstrous and deep-rooted abuses brought to light, and by his vigour, honesty, and energy succeeded in rectifying them. In 1806, at the age of seventy-two, Lord St

Vincent was again called upon to take the command of the Channel fleet and to head an expedition to the court of Portugal, in which he displayed great talents and address. Advanced age and impaired health led to his final retirement from public life in 1807, but he survived till 13th March 1823, when he died in his ninetieth year.

See Brenton, Life of Earl St Vincent ; Lord Brougham, States- men of the Times of George ILI.

ST VITUS'S DANCE! or CHorza, a disorder of the

1 This name was originally employed in connexion with those remarkable epidemic outbursts of combined mental and physical ex- citement which for a time prevailed among the inhabitants of some parts of Germany in the Middle Ages. It is stated that sufferers from

nervous system occurring for the most part in children, and characterized mainly by involuntary jerking move- ments of the muscles throughout almost the entire body. It is to be regarded as a functional nervous disorder of wide extent, the manifestations of which appear not merely in disturbance affecting the motor apparatus but in various associated morbid phenomena of cerebral origin. Among the predisposing causes age is important, chorea being essentially an ailment of childhood and more par- ticularly of the period in which the second dentition is taking place. The greater number of the cases occur between the ages of nine and twelve. It is not often seen in very young children nor after puberty; but there are many exceptions to this rule. It is twice as frequent with girls as with boys. Hereditary predisposition to nervous troubles is apt to find expression in this malady in youth, more especially if the general health becomes lowered. Of exciting causes strong emotions, such as fright, ill-usage or hardship of any kind, insufficient feeding, overwork or anxiety, are among the most common ; while, again, some distant source of irritation, such as teething or intestinal worms, appears capable of giving rise to an attack. It is an occasional but rare complication of pregnancy. The connexion of chorea

with rheumatism is now universally recognized, and is shown not merely by its frequent occur- rence before, after, or during the course of attacks of rheumatic fever in young persons, but even independently of this by the liability of the heart to suffer in a similar way in the two diseases.

The symptoms of St Vitus's dance are in some instances developed suddenly as the result of fright, but much more frequently they come on insidiously. They are usually preceded by changes in the temper and disposition, the child becoming sad, irritable, and emotional, while at the same time the general health is somewhat impaired. The first thing indicative of the disease is a certain awkward- ness or fidgetiness of manner together with restlessness, the child being evidently unable to continue quiet, but frequently moving the limbs into different positions. In walking, too, slight dragging of one limb may be noticed. The convulsive muscular movements usually first show themselves in one part, such as an arm or a leg, and in some instances they may remain localized to that limited extent, while in all cases there is a tendency for the dis- orderly symptoms to be more marked on one side than on the other. When fully developed the phenomena of the disease are very characteristic. The child when standing or sitting is never still, but is constantly changing the position of the body or limbs in consequence of the sudden and incoordinate action of muscles or groups of them. The shoulder is jerked up, the head and trunk twisted about, the limbs crossed suddenly and changed again, the fingers keep moving restlessly, while the face is distorted with grimaces, frowning and smiling irregularly. These Symptoms are aggravated when purposive movements are attempted or when the child is watched. Speech is affected both from the incoordinate movements of the tongue and from phonation sometimes taking place during an act of inspiration. The taking of food becomes a matter of difficulty, since much of it is lost in the attempts to convey it to the mouth, while swallowing is also inter- fered with owing to the irregular action of the pharyngeal muscles. When the tongue is protruded it comes out in a jerky manner and is immediately withdrawn, the jaws at the saine time closing suddenly and sometimes with con- this dancing mania were wont to resort to the chapels of St Vitus (more than one in Swabia), the saint being believed to possess the power of curing them. The transference of the name to the disease now under consideration was a manifest error, but so closely has the association

now become that the original application of the term has been comparatively obscured.

ST VITUS’s Bees

siderable force. In locomotion the muscles of the limbs act incoordinately and there is a marked alteration of the gait, which is now halting and now leaping, and the chilg may be tripped by one limb being suddenly jerked jy front of the other. In short, whether at rest or in motion the whole muscular system is seen to be deranged jn its operations, and the term “insanity of the muscles” not inaptly expresses the condition, for they no longer act jn harmony or with purpose, but seem, as Trousseau ey. presses it, each to have a will of its own and to be exergjs. ing this for different objects at one time. The muscles of organic life (involuntary muscles) appear scarcely, if at all, affected in this disease, as, for example, the heart, the rhythmic movements of which are not as a rule impaired, But the heart may suffer in other ways, especially from inflammatory conditions similar to those which attend upon rheumatism and which frequently lay the foundation of permanent heart-disease. In severe cases of St Vitus’s dance the child comes to present a distressing appearance from the constant restlessness and disorderly movement, and the physical health declines. Usually, however, there is a remission of the symptoms during sleep. The mental condition of the patient is more or less affected, as shown in emotional tendencies, irritability, and a somewhat fatuous expression and bearing, but this change is in general of transient character and ceases with convalescence.

This disease occasionally assumes a very acute and aggravated form, in which the disorderly movements are so violent as to render the patient liable to be injured and to necessitate forcible control of the limbs or the employ- ment of anesthetics to produce unconsciousness. Such cases are of very grave character, if, as 1s common, they are accompanied with sleeplessness, and they may prove rapidly fatal by exhaustion. In the great majority of cases of St Vitus’s dance, however, complete recovery is to be anticipated sooner or later, the symptoms usually con- tinuing for from one to two months, or even sometimes much longer.

The nature of this disease has given rise to much dis- cussion and there still remains considerable difference of opinion as to its true pathology. The fact

that the vast Majority of cases recover would seem to show that there could have been no profound change in the structural integrity of the nerve-centres, while in those instances where a fatal result takes place post-mortem examination reveals no constant morbid condition. A theory supported by high authority has referred the cause of the malady to the plugging up of minute blood-vessels in the motor centres of the brain (a condition not unlikely to occur im rheumatic inflammation affecting the lining membrane of the heart), and such a change has been seen in a few instances. Ina still larger number, however, no appear ances of this kind have been observed, but simply vascular changes of a congestive character widely diffused through out the central nervous system, accompanied with evidences of slight inflammatory action. Dr Dickinson, whose views, founded upon carefully conducted investigations, are those most widely accepted, concludes as follows: “We see 2 chorea a widely distributed hyperemia [i.c., congestion] of the nervous centres, not due to any mechanical imischane but produced mainly by causes of two kinds,—one @ morbid, probably a humoral influence, which may affect the nervous centres as it affects other organs and tissues, the other, irritation in some mode usually mental but some times what is called reflex, which especially belongs to am disturbs the nervous system, and affects persons differently, according to the inherent mobility of their nature.”

For the treatment of St Vitus’s dance the remedies pro posed have been innumerable, but it is doubtful whether any of them have much control over the disease, whl

.

|

r suitable hygienic conditions tends to recover of self. These conditions, however, are all-important, and cabrace the proper feeding of the child with nutritious tht diet, the absence of all sources of excitement and |noyance, such as being laughed at or mocked by other jildren, and the rectification of any causes of irritation 4d of irregularities in the general health. For a time, ad especially if the symptoms are severe, confinement to .e house or even to bed may be necessary, but as soon as yssible the child should be taken out into the open air id gently exercised by walking. Of medicinal remedies ue

most serviceable appear to be zine, arsenic, and iron, pecially the last two, which act as tonics to the system

id improve the condition of the blood. They should be yntinued during the whole course of the disease and con- ilescence, if they do not disagree. As sedatives in cases sleeplessness, bromide of potassium and chloral are of se. Many other agents, such as conium, belladonna, rychnia, the salts of silver, &c., have been recommended, it they do not seem to possess any special advantages. 1 long-continued cases of the disease- much benefit will > obtained by a change of air as well as by the employ- ‘ent of moderate gymnastic exercises. Bearing in mind 1e weakened condition of the muscles as the result of the horeic movements, the employment of friction and of ectricity is also likely to be beneficial. After recovery ie general health of the child should for a long time sceive attention, and care should be taken to guard yainst excitement, excessive study, or any exhausting ondition, physical or mental, from the fact that the ‘sease is apt to recur and that other nervous disorders -ill more serious may be developed from it.

In the rare instances of the acute form of this malady, ‘here the convulsive movements are unceasing and violent, ie only measures available are the use of chloral or aloroform inhalation to produce insensibility and muscular slaxation, but the effect is only palliative and does not event the fatal result which in most such cases quickly ipervenes. (50,5)

ST UBES. See SzruBat. |. SAIS. See Eeyrr, vol. vii. p. 768. ; |. SALADIN. See Eeyprt, vol. vii. pp. 753-754. | SALAMANCA, a province of Spain, which until 1833

_ rmed part of that of Leon, is bounded on the N. by Amora and Valladolid, on the E. by Avila, on the S. by aceres, and on the W. by Portugal. It has an area of 40 square miles. The population in 1877 was 285,500 ; it by the year 1886 it was estimated that it had decreased » about 270,000. Salamanca belongs almost entirely to e basin of the Douro, its principal rivers being the srmes, which follows the general slope of the province wards the north-west, and after a course of 135 miles dws into the Douro, which forms part of the north-west oundary ; the Yeltes and the Agueda, also tributaries of ‘e Douro; and the Alagon, an affluent of the Tagus. The brthern part of the province is flat, and at its lowest pint (on the Douro) is 488 feet above sea-

level. The ‘ghest point (in the Sierra de Peiia de Francia) is 5692 et above the sea. The rainfall is irregular ; but where 1s plentiful the soil is productive and there are good irvests of wine, oil, hemp, and cereals of all kinds. The Tn harvest is always good, rain or norain. The principal salth of the province consists in the forests of oak and (estuut, which cover the hills in its southern part. Sheep id cattle also find good pasturage there; and wool and erino of medium quality are grown. Gold is found in © streams, and iron, lead, copper, zinc, coal, and rock {ystal in the hills, but owing to the difficulties of trans- rt and other causes the mines are only partially de- “oped. The manufactures of the province are few and

ade

t

mostly of a low class, intended for home consumption, such as frieze, coarse cloth, hats, and pottery. The cloth manufactories of Bejar turn out a material of superior quality. The tanning of hides is carried on pretty extensively, and cork and flour are exported via Santander and Barcelona. The province is traversed by a railway line to Portugal, passing Medina del Campo and Ciudad Rodrigo to Figueira da Foz. Administratively the province is divided into eight partidos judiciales, and it has 388 ayuntamientos; of these last only two besides Salamanca, the capital, have a population exceeding 5000,—Bejar (11,099) and Ciudad Rodrigo (6856). It is represented in the cortes by three senators and seven deputies. Apart from that of Leon the province has little history till the Peninsular War, when the battles of Ciudad Rodrigo, Fuentes de Ofioro, and Salamanca were fought on its soil.

SALAMANCA (Salmantica, Elmantica), the capital of the above province, lies on the banks of the Tormes, 172 miles north-west of Madrid by rail. The river is here crossed by a bridge 500 feet in length built on twenty-six arches, fifteen of which are of Roman origin, while the remainder date from the 16th century. The town was of importance in times as remote as 222

B.c., when it was captured by Hannibal from the Vettones; and it afterwards became under the Romans the ninth station on the Via Lata from Merida to Zaragoza. It passed successively under the rule of the Goths and the Moors, till the latter were finally driven out about 1055. The city is still much the same in outward appearance as when its tortuous streets were thronged with students. The university was naturally the chief source of wealth to the town, the popu- lation of which in the 16th century numbered 50,000. Its decay of course reacted on the townsfolk, but it fortunately also arrested the process of modernization, so that the city retains most of its old features and is now one of the most picturesque in Spain. The ravages of war alone have wrought serious damage, for the French in their defensive operations at the siege almost destroyed the western quarter. The ruins still remain, and give an air of desolation which is not borne out by the real condi- tion of the inhabitants, however poverty-stricken they may appear. The magnificent Plaza Mayor, built by Andres Garcia de Quifiones at the beginning of the 18th century, and capable of holding 20,000 people to witness a bull- fight, is one of the finest squares in Europe. It is surrounded by an arcade of ninety arches on Corinthian columns, one side of the square being occupied by the municipal buildings. The decorations of the facades are in the Renaissance style, and the plaza as a whole is a fine sample of plateresque architecture. But the old and new cathedrals (see below) are the chief objects of interest in the city.

In the Middle Ages the trade of Salamanca was not insignificant, and the stamped leather-work produced there is still sought after. Its manufactures are now of little consequence, and consist of china, cloth, and leather. The transport trade of the town is, however, of more import- ance, and shows signs of increasing. But any great revival can only take place when communication with the coast is considerably improved, a result which will no doubt be promoted by the recent opening of the line to the coast of Portugal. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 18,007, and in 1886 was estimated at about

20,000.

The old cathedral is a cruciform building of the 12th century, begun by Bishop Gerdnimo, the confessor of the Cid. Its style of architecture is that

Late Romanesque which prevailed in the south of France, but the builder showed much originality in the construc- tion of the dome, which covers the crossing of the nave and tran-

septs. The inner dome is made to spring, not from immediately above the arches, but from a higher stage of a double arcade pierced.

with windows. The thrust of the vaulting is borne by four massive pinnacles, and over the inner dome is an outer pointed one covered with tiles. The whole forms a most effective and graceful group. On the vault of the apse is a fresco of Our Lord in Judgment by Nicolas Florentino. ‘The reredos, which has the peculiarity of fitting the curve of the apse, contains fifty-five panels with paint- ings mostly by the same artist. There are many fine monuments in the south transept and cloister chapels. An adjoining building, the Capilla de Talavera, is used as a chapel for service according to the Mozarabic rite, which is celebrated there six times a year. On the north of and adjoining the old church stands the new cathedral, built from designs by Juan Gil de Ontation. Begun in 1513 under Bishop Francisco de Bobadilla, but not finished until 1734, itisa notable example of the late Gothic and Plateresque styles. Its length is 340 feet and its breadth 160 feet. The intcrior is fairly Gothic in character, but on the outside the Renaissance spirit shows itself more clearly, and is fully developed in the dome. Everywhere the attempt at mere novelty or richness results in feebleness. The main arch of the great portal consists of a simple trefoil, but the label above takes an ogee line, and the inner arches are elliptical. Above the doors are bas-reliefs, foliage, &c., which in exuberance of design and quality of workmanship are good examples of the latest efforts of Spanish Gothic. The church contains paintings by Navar- rete, Becerra, and Morales, and some overrated statues by Juan de Juni. The treasury is very rich, and amongst other articles pos- sesses a custodia which is a masterpiece of goldsmith’s work, and a bronze crucifix, of undoubted authenticity, which was borne before the Cid in battle. The tower is too unsafe to allow of the ring- ing of its great bell, which weighs over 23 tons. The intcrest of Salamanca centred in its university, founded by Alfonso IX. about 1200 and for four centuries one of the chief seats of European

learning. Of the university buildings the facade of the library (80,000 volumes, exclusive of MSS.) is a peculiarly rich example of late 15th-century Gothic. The cloisters are light and elegant ; the grand staircase ascending from them has a fine balustrade of foliage and figures. The Colegio de Nobles Irlandeses, formerly Colegio de Santiago Apostol, was built in 1521 from designs by Ibarra. best period of the Renaissance. The Jesuit College is an immense and ugly Renaissance building begun in 1614 by Juan Gomez de Mora. The Colegio Viejo, also called San Bartolomé, was rebuilt in the 18th century, and now serves as the governor's palace. The convent of Santo Domingo, sometimes called San Esteban, shows a mixture of styles from the 13th century onwards. The church is Gothic with a plateresque facade of great lightness and delicacy. It is of purer design than that of the cathedral ; nevertheless it shows the tendency of the period. The reredos, one of the finest Renaissance works in Spain, contains statues by Salvador Carmona, and a curious bronze statuette of the Virgin and Child on a throne of champlevé enamel of the 12th century. The chapter-house, built by Juan Moreno in 1637, and the staircase and sacristy are good examples of later work. The convent of the Augustinas Recoletas, begun by Fontana in 1616, is in better taste than any other Renaissance building in the city. The church is rich in marble fittings and contains several fine pictures of the Neapolitan school, especially the Conception by Ribera over the altar. The convent of the Sancti Spiritu has a good door by Berruguete. There is also a rather effective portal to the convent of Las Duefias. The church of S. Marcos is a curious circular building with three eastern apses ; and the churches of S. Martin and S. Matteo have good early doorways. Many of the private houses are untouched ex- amples of the domestic architecture of the prosperous times in which they were built. Such are the Casa de las Conchas, the finest example of its period in Spain; the Casa de la Sal, with a magnificent courtyard and sculptured gallery ; and the palaces of Maldonado, Monterey, and Espinosa. (Si 183, 183.)

SALAMANDRA. In the nomenclature of zoology this name designates a genus of animals belonging to the verte- brate class Amphibia. The genus was first defined under this name by Laurenti.) It will be seen on referring to the taxonomic synopsis of the class given at the end of the article Ampuipia that the genus Salamandra belongs to the first tribe Mecodonta of the fifth division Salaman- drida, The diagnosis of the genus is as follows :

—no fronto-squamosal arch in the skull; tongue large, adherent below, free at the sides and slightly so behind 3 toes five ; tail cylindrical. There are three species, distinguished as follows :—(1) S. maculosa, Laurenti, tail not so long as rest of body, colour black with yellow spots 3; (2) 8. atra, Laurenti, tail not so long as rest of body, colour uniform black ; (3) S. caucasica, Waga, tail longer than rest of

1 Synopsis reptilium emendata, &c., Vienna, 1768.

The double arcaded cloister is a fine piece of work of the –

body. In all the species the body is plump and rounded, and there is no dorsal crest or fin; the head is depressed, its greatest width being at the angle of the jaws; the snout is rounded. The vent is a longitudinal slit, the borders of which in the male are slightly swollen. The skin is smooth and shining ; at the junction of the head and neck is a pronounced fold of skin called the gular fold. The swollen patches of skin behind the tympana, caused by the presence of large cutaneous glands, and known as parotids, are well developed and exhibit the openings of the glands as distinct pores. Similar gland-openings form a series along either side of the body. In the first two species there is also a longitudinal series of warts on each side; these are wanting in S. caucasica. Depressions of the skin between the vertebree are present, and are known as costal grooves. The palatine teeth-series are S-shaped, and the anterior ends of the two series do not meet.?_ 88. maculosa is the largest of the three species, attaining a length of 7 to 84 inches, SS. atrais about 44 and S. caucasica about 6 inches in length.

The genus is confined to the western sub-region of the palzarctic region, extending over almost the whole of Europe, especially the central and southern parts, and occurring also in Algiers and Syria. The spotted species is the commonest and most widely distributed, being found in nearly all parts of Germany, France, Italy, and Spain. The genus is entirely absent from the British Islands. The black salamander, S. ara, is confined to the Alps of Central Europe, and there only occurs between the limits of 2500 to 10,000 feet of altitude; it is found in the mountains of South Germany, France, Switzerland, and Austria. S. caucasica is only known from one

specimen, which was obtained from the Caucasus and was sent to the Paris Museum by Dr Waga.?

The food of Salamandra consists of worms and insects, and, like British frogs and toads, the animals can only exist in damp shady localities. As in all Salamandrida, the process of reproduction is commenced by a true copulation, which takes place in spring and summer. The seminal fluid is passed into the female cloaca, where it is received into a tube-shaped receptaculum seminis. The eggs are thus fertilized in the oviduct, but the development takes place under somewhat different conditions in the two species S, maculosa and S. atra. Both species are vivipar- ous; in the former thirty to forty eggs undergo develop- ment in the oviducts at one time, and they are brought forth and deposited in stagnant or sluggishly-flowing water when they have reached a stage similar to that of adult Perennibranchiata, the newly-born larve having long feather-like external gills and a length of 12 to 15 mm. (one-third to one-half an inch). After a period of aquatic life, the larvee pass through a metamorphosis: the limbs appear; the gill slits close up; and the young animals, having reached the adult condition, leave the water for a terrestrial life. In S. atra only the two lowest eggs which pass into the oviducts, one in the duct of each side, under- go development. The rest of the eggs fuse into a mass of yolk material and are devoured by the two developing larvee. In this way the larve are provided with nutriment during the later stages of development, for in this species they are retained within the body of the mother until they have reached the air-breathing condition and are in all respects similar to the parents. This peculiarity in the process of reproduction bears an obvious relation to the physical conditions of the habitat of S. atra. In the elevated regions that the species inhabits stagnant and

2 For a figure of S. maculosa, see Latreille, ist. Nat. des Sal. de France, Paris, 1800, pl. i.; Daudin, Hist. Nat. d. Reptiles, pl. xevii. f. 1. For S. atra, see Laur., op. cit., pl: ake. 2:

3 See Waga, Rev. Mag. Zool., 1876, p. 826.

sluggish waters are wanting, and therefore the process of reproduction that occurs in S. maculosa is rendered im- possible. The black Salamandra has become adapted to its environment (1) by the slight changes in colour and structure which distinguish it from the spotted, and (2) by a modification in its reproductive processes, which elimi- nates the aquatic stage of existence from the life-history of the individual. It is to be noted that the stage character- ized by the presence of pinnate external gills is exhibited by the larva during its development in the oviduct, and the gills doubtless there perform their function. Fraulein von Chauvin! made the experiment of taking the larvee of S. atra from the pregnant female when they were in the branchiate condition, and placing them in water to see if they would survive and pass through their metamorphosis under these circumstances. On one occasion the experi- ment was perfectly successful in the case of one specimen ; the rest of the larvze died.

The tailed Amphibia of Europe have from the very earliest times down to the present day been almost universally known in popular language as salamanders, and identified in the popular mind with the salamander of myth and fable.? Besides the species of Sala- mandra there are, according to Boulanger (Brit. Mus. Cat., 1881), eighteen other species of Urodela in Europe, of which fourteen belong to the genus TRITON (q.v.). Chioglossa lusitaniea, Bocage, is distinguished by having a tongue supported anteriorly by a pro- tractile median pedicle and free everywhere else, and by having its tail cylindrical at the base but compressed at the end. It occurs in Spain and Portugal. Salamandrina perspicillata, Tschudi, occurs in Italy ; like Chioglossa, it belongs to the Mecodonta and is distin- guished by the following characters :—tougue large, subtriangular, free everywhere except on anterior median line; toes four; tail slightly compressed ; a strong bony fronto-squamosal arch. Spelerpes fuseus, Strauch, occurs in Italy and in France in the Alpes Maritimes.

SALAMIS, in modern times called by the people KoAotp: (a ring-shaped cake), and by purists ZaAapis, is an island in the Saronic Gulf, off the coast of Attica, Greece. It is said to have been called in ancient times by other names,—Sciras, which associates it with the worship of Athena Sciras ; Cychreia, which connects it with the Eleusinian cultus and the sacred serpent (Kvyxpeidys o¢is) of Demeter; and Pityussa. There was a small

stream, Bocarus or Bocalia, in the island. The city, which bore the same name as the island, was originally situated on the south coast opposite Aagina, but was afterwards trans- ferred to a promontory on the east side nearer Athens. The transference corresponds to a total change in the

1 See Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zoologie, vol. xxvii. p. 534, and C. von Siebold, ibid., p. 536; M. v. Chauvin, zbid., vol. xxiv.

2 Aristotle (7. A., v. 19) cites the salamander, which " when it walks through fire extinguishes it," as a proof that some animal frames are incombustible, and A®lian (Naé. An., ii. 31) will have it that those who work with forges are familiar with this fact and when their bellows fail to quicken the flame know to look for a salamander and put things right by killing it. According to this form of the fable the salamander, as Alian expressly says, is not born of fire, nor does it live therein. On the contrary, according to Pliny (H. W., x. 67 sq., xxix. 4) it is of a cold complexion and emits a cold venom like aconite, but so virulent that even bread baked with wood of a tree on which a salamander has crept is poisonous. The touch of its saliva even on the foot, says Pliny, causes the hair to fall out. So Dioscorides speaks of salamander prepared in oil as a depilatory ; comp. Petronius, c. 107, and Burman's notes, and for late survivals in Europe of the belief in a deadly lizard, identified with the salamander, Bochart, Hierozoicon, bk. iv. c. 1. That the salamander extinguishes fire appears also in the PHYSIOLOGUS (g.v.), and so became a common part of medizval animal lore; but the Arabic Physiologus (Land, Anec. Syr., iv. 166) speaks instead of a stone that quells fire. This stone is asbestos, the salamander of Marco Polo (i. 215, Yule), of whose fibres a sort of incombustible cloth was made, which was represented in the East as made of the hair of the salamander or of its plumage ; for the Arabs mixed up the sala- mander fable with that of the PHa@nrx (g.v.) and were not sure whether it was beast or bird. In later story the salamander is represented as born and living in fire and so the name is used by cabbalistic moderns for the spirits of that element. Salamander's wool or hair as a name for asbestos occurs in Bacon and other English writers. Francis I. chose as his emblem a salamander with the motto, "J'y vis et je l'éteins."'

political relations of Salamis. It was originally connected, not with Attica, but with Augina and with Megara, the competitors of Athens in the struggle for supremacy in the Saronic Gulf. The most prominent heroes of the island, Telamon, Ajax, and Teucer, were Atacide from figina. But about the end of the 7th century B.c. the war between Athens and Megara for the possession of Salamis was, under the guidance of Solon, determined in favour of Athens. A line of the Ziad (ii. 558) is said to have been interpolated by the Athenians in support of their claim to the island, while the Megarian version of the passage was quite different. The priestess of Athena Polias might not eat Attic cheese, but it was lawful for her to eat foreign or Salaminian cheese. Salamis, having come so late into the hands of the Athenians, retained, like Eleusis, more local independence than the other demes. The island remained subject to Athens in later history, except during the period 318 to 232 B.c., when it was abandoned to the Macedonian rule. The name of Salamis is famous chiefly on account of the great sea-fight, 480 B.c., in which the allied Greeks defeated the Persians under Xerxes. The battle took place beside the town of Salamis and the island of Psyttaleia, at the south-eastern end of the straits.

A city on the east coast of Cyprus, near the river Pedizus, said to have been founded by the Salaminian Teucer, son of Telamon, was also called Salamis.

SAL AMMONIAC. See Ammontac, vol. i. p. 741.

SALDANHA, JoXo Cartos SALDANHA DE OLIVEIRA E Daun (1791-1876). See Portuaat, vol. xix. pp. 553-554.

SALE, an urban sanitary district of Cheshire, England, on the Bridgewater Canal and the Mersey, about 5 miles south of Manchester. At the beginning of the 19th cen- tury the greater part of the township was still waste and unenclosed. It owes its increase in population to the neighbourhood of Manchester and contains a number of handsome villas belonging to the wealthier classes. The Moorsland pleasure-grounds in the neighbourhood cover 104 acres. There are national and British schools and a literary institute. Market gardening is extensively carried on. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 2006 acres) in 1871 was 5573, and in 1881 it was 7915.

SALE is one of the forms of Conrract (¢.v.). The law of contract is accordingly applicable as a whole to the law of sale. But the importance of the contract of sale demands a fuller treatment. The law of the United Kingdom and of the United States is based upon the Roman law in its later stage, as modified by the pretors and by legislation. But there are some considerable dif- ferences. In Roman law sale originally meant nothing more than barter; but the introduction of coined money converted the contribution of one of the contracting parties into price (pretium), as distinguished from article of sale (merx) contributed by the other (see Roman Law, vol. xx. pp. 700-701). Sale fell under the head of consensual contracts, 7.e., those in which the causa or that which made the contract enforcible was consent. In all con- tracts of this class (except mandatum) consent really de- noted valuable consideration. The law in the case of movables and immovables was as far as might be the same. The price must be definite. Reduction of the terms to writing was optional; if a writing was used, either party was at liberty to withdraw before the com- pletion of the writing. If earnest or deposit (arrha)— often a ring, sometimes a part of the price—was given, it was by the legislation of Justinian made the measure of forfeit on rescission, the buyer losing what he had given as arrha, the seller restoring double its value. The seller did not warrant title ; his contract was not rem dare, to give the thing, but prestare emptorc rem habere lacere, to

5 42 be

guarantee the buyer possession ; the transfer was of vacua | a sale appears to be the Statute of Enrolments (27 Hen.

possessio, not of property. The buyer was secured by a covenant duple stipulatio against eviction by a superior title, limited to double the price where there was no fraud by the seller. There was a warranty of quality by the seller. He was bound to suffer rescission or to give com- pensation at the option of the buyer if the thing sold had undisclosed faults which hindered the free possession of it. The damages to which he was liable differed according as he was guilty of bad faith (dolus) or not. If guilty he was liable for all consequential damage, if innocent only for the diminution in the value of the thing sold by reason of its unsoundness. Thus, if a seller

knowingly sold an infected sheep and the whole flock caught the disease and died, he would be liable for the value of the flock; if he was ignorant of the defect, he would be liable only for the difference in value between a sound and an unsound sheep. Mere overpraise did not amount to dolus ; nor was inade- quacy of price in itself a ground of rescission. When the agreement was complete it was the duty of the seller to deliver the thing sold (rem tradere). In case of a sale on credit, the delivery must be made at the time appointed. Prior to delivery the seller must take due care of the thing sold, the care which a reasonably prudent householder (bonus paterfamilias) was expectcd to exercise. Delivery did not pass property in the full sense of the word, but rather vacua possessio secured by duple stipulatio. Risk of loss (periculum rei venditex) after agreement but before delivery fell upon the buyer. On the other hand, he was entitled to any advantage accruing to the thing sold be- tween those dates. It was the duty of some one to pay the price ; the obligation was discharged if payment were made by the debtor or by any other person, whether authorized or not by the debtor, and even against his*will. The duties of buyer and seller might be varied by agree- ment, the only restriction being that the seller could not by any agreement be relieved from liability for dolus.

Sale in English law may be defined to be “a transfer of the absolute or general property in a thing for a price in money ” (Benjamin, On Sales, p. 1). The words “absolute or general” are inserted because there may be both a general and a special property in certain cases, and a transfer of the special property would not be a sale. The above definition, though applied in the work cited only to sales of personalty, seems to be fully applicable to sales of any kind of property. The rules as to legality, capacity of parties, assent, and fraud depend upon the law of Con- TRACT (q.v.), of which sale is a particular instance. In- capacity is either absolute or relative, the latter being a bar only in the individual case, ¢.g., the incapacity of a person in a fiduciary position (see Trust), The capacity of parties tends to become more extended as law advances ; thus in England the Roman Catholic, the alien, and the married woman have all been relieved within a compara- tively recent period from certain disabilities in sale and purchase which formerly attached to them.

In England, for historical reasons (see Reax Estate), there is a considerable difference in the law as it affects real and personal estate. The main principles of law are perhaps the same, but the sale of real estate is a matter of greater expense and intricacy than the sale of personal estate, and depends to a large extent upon legislation inapplicable to the latter. It appears, therefore, better to treat the two kinds of sale separately.

Real Estate.—At common law it was not necessary that there should be written evidence of a contract of sale. The publicity of the feoffment obviated the necessity of writing, which was not essential to the validity of a feoff- ment until the Statute of Frauds (see FEOFFMENT). The earliest statute making a written instrument essential] to

VIII. c. 16). The bargain and sale operating under the Statute of Uses, and enrolled under the Statute of Enrol- ments in the High Court of Justice or with the custos rotulorum of the county, is no longer in use; a bargain and sale at common law is a mode of conveyance some- times used by executors exercising a power of sale. Such a bargain and sale must be by deed since 8 and 9 Vict. c. 106, but need not be enrolled. There was no compre- hensive legislative enactment dealing with all cases of sale of real estate until section 4 of the Statute of Frauds. Since that date a contract for the sale of real estate must be in writing (see Fraup, where the provisions of the Act are set out). Sales by auction are within the statute, the auctioneer being the agent of both parties (see AUCTION). In an ordinary case of the sale of real estate the contract is formally drawn up on the basis of particulars and con- ditions of sale, which ought fairly to represent the actual state of the property. The statute, however, is satisfied by informal agreements, such as letters, if they contain the means of determining the property, the parties, and _ the price. The price must be a sum of money. If it is another estate, the contract is one of exchange ; if no con- sideration passes, it is a gift. The price may be left to be determined by a third person, as by arbitration. For the way in which payment of the price may be made, see PayMENntT. The formation of a binding contract of sale is the most important stage in the transfer of real estate. From the moment at which the parties are bound by the contract the sale is made ; the purchaser has the equitable estate in the subject-matter of the contract (see Equity), the vendor holding in trust for him, subject to the pay- ment of the purchase

money, for which the vendor! has alien. The price becomes personal estate of the vendor and the land real estate of the purchaser. ‘The latter has the right to accidental benefits and the burden of accidental losses accruing before completion of the purchase. The rights defined by the contract descend to the representa- tives of a deceased vendor or purchaser. In most cases the personal representative of a deceased vendor may convey the property under 44 and 45 Vict. c. 41, s. 4. After the contract it becomes the duty of the vendor to deliver an abstract of title, to satisfy the purchaser’s reasonable requisitions as to any question arising on the title of the purchaser, and to pay a deposit, usually ten per cent. of the price fixed, within a certain time, the remainder being paid on completion,—that is, the execution of the conveyance and payment of the balance of the price. He also prepares the conveyance, which since 8 and 9 Vict. c. 106 must be by deed. The costs of execution of the conveyance are paid by the vendor. Any of these duties may be varied by special agreement. ‘The sale is not in ordinary cases avoided because the purchaser is in default in payment of the purchase money on the day appointed. The purchaser does not forfeit his rights if he be ready to complete within a reasonable time after the day fixed for completion and to pay interest on the sum overdue. This rule is an old doctrine of equity, and is generally expressed by saying that time is not of the essence of the contract. As a general rule, any real estate is capable of sale, unless it is altogether extra commercium, as a church or public building. There are, however, a few exceptions introduced by the legislature, such as estates tail not barred, estates which by Act of Parliament are inalienable (see Reax Estate), and crown lands, of which all grants for more than thirty-one years are in general void by 1 Anne st.1,c.7. Sales of pretended titles to land are void by 32

the parties to a contract of sale of real estate. Where the sale is of personal estate, “buyer” and “seller” may be used as well.

oA Ee

Hen. VIII. c. 9. The sale of land to be held in mortmain would be void as contrary to the policy of the Mortmain Acts (see CHARITIES, CORPORATION). The rights and liabilities of vendors and purchasers have been considerably affected by recent legislation, the principal Acts dealing

with the subject being the Vendor and Purchaser Act, 1874, and the Conveyancing Act, 1881. A period of forty years has been substituted for the period of sixty years previously necessary as the root of title,—that is to say, in most cases an abstract showing title for forty years is sufficient. In an abstract of title to leaseholds, the title is to commence with the lease or underlease, in an abstract of title to enfranchised lands, under a contract to sell the freehold, with the deed of enfranchisement. Recitals twenty years old are evidence, except so far as they can be proved to be inaccurate, and recitals of documents dated prior to the commencement of the abstract are to be taken as correct, and their production is not to be required. The expenses of evidence required in support of the abstract and not in the vendor's possession are thrown upon the purchaser. The Conveyancing Act, 1881, further protects the purchaser by implying in a conveyance by a beneficial owner on sale for valuable consideration covenants for right to convey, quiet enjoyment, freedom from encum- brances, and further assurance. In a conveyance of lease- holds a covenant for the validity of the lease is implied. These covenants protect the purchaser much in the same way as the implied warranty in the sale of personalty. The Act also gives the mortgagee, where the mortgage is by deed, the power of sale generally inserted in mortgage deeds (see Mortcace). .

The remedies of the vendor are an action for the price or for specific performance according to circumstances. There is also a remedy by mandamus against public com- panies refusing to complete. Specific performance is a remedy introduced by the Court of Chancery to enforce contracts for the sale or purchase of real estate, it being considered that in such cases the common law action for damages was an insufficient remedy. Strictly, it is only an exercise by the court of its jurisdiction over trustees, the vendor being after the contract, as has been said, a trustee for the purchaser. By the Judicature Act, 1873, actions of specific performance are specially assigned to the Chancery Division. A county court has jurisdiction where the purchase money does not exceed £500. In spite of the Statute of Frauds, specific performance may in some cases be decreed where a parol contract has been followed by part performance and where the position of the parties has been materially altered on the faith ofthe contract. Actions for the price or for specific performance are subject to the purchaser's right to compensation for deficiency of quality or quantity or of the vendor's

interest in the property. The question whether in a particular case the purchaser is entitled to rescind the contract or only to compensation is often a very difficult one. The remedies of the purchaser are an action for specific perform- ance, for rescission of the contract or for damages (in case of fraud), for a return of the deposit, or for expenses. On the principle of caveat emptor, the sale is not avoided by mere commendatory statements, statements of opinion, or non-disclosure of patent defects. Non-disclosure of latent defects or material misrepresentation of facts, on the faith of which the purchaser entered into the contract, will as a rule be a ground for rescission or for damages, and this irrespective of fraud, as a contract for the sale of land is a contract wbherrimex fidei. Where the sale goes off or the vendor without fraud fails to make a good title, the pur- chaser can only recover the deposit, if any, and any ex- penses to which he may have been put; he cannot recover damages for the loss of his bargain. Certain frauds by a

vendor or his solicitor or agent in order to induce the pur- chaser to accept a title render the offender guilty of a misdemeanour, as well as liable to an action for damages (22 and 23 Vict. c. 35, s. 24). By the Vendor and Pur- chaser Act, 1874, either a vendor or a purchaser of real or leasehold estate in England may obtain on a summary application the decision of a judge of the Chancery Division on any question connected with the contract, not being a question affecting its existence or validity. (See Sugden, Vendors and Purchasers; Dart, Vendors and Purchasers ; Fry, Specific Performance.)

Personal Estate—At common law, as in the case of real estate, writing was not essential to the validity of a contract of sale. The common law is thus stated by Blackstone: “A contract of sale implies a bargain, or mutual understanding and agreement between the parties as to terms; and the law as to the transmutation of property under such contracts may be stated generally as follows. If the vendor says the price of the goods is £4 and the vendee says he will give £4, the bargain is struck ; and, if the goods be thereon delivered or tendered, or any part of the price be paid down and accepted (if it be but a penny), the property in the goods is thereupon trans- muted and vests immediately in the bargainee; so that in the event of their

being subsequently damaged or de- stroyed he and not the vendor must stand to the loss. This supposes (it will be observed) the case of a sale for ready money ; but, if it be a sale of goods to be delivered forthwith, but to be paid for afterwards, the property passes to the vendee immediately upon the striking of the bargain without either delivery on the one hand or payment on the other" (Stephen, Commentaries, vol. ii. bk. ii. pt. 11. ch. v.). Earnest may have been originally the same as the Roman arrha; it was never, however, part payment, as arrha might have been,—in fact, the Statute of Frauds specially distinguishes it from part payment. The giving of earnest has now fallen into disuse. The price need not be fixed ; if not fixed, a reasonable price will be presumed. Though writing was in no case necessary at common law, it has become so under the provisions of various Acts of Parliament, prominent among which is the Statute of Frauds, ss. 4 and 17 (see Conrract, Fraup). Section 17 of the Statute of Frauds was extended to execu- tory contracts of sale by Lord Tenterden's Act, 9 Geo. IV. c. 14, The sale of horses in market overt must be entered in a book kept by the toll-keeper (2 and 3 Ph. and M. c. 7, 31 Eliz. c. 12). The sale of ships must by the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, be made by bill of sale in a certain form. Contracts for the sale of shares in a joint-stock banking company are void unless the contract sets forth in writing the numbers of the shares on the register of the company or (where the shares are not distinguished by numbers) the names of the registered proprietors (29 and 30 Vict. c. 29). Bills of sale of goods must be in writing in a certain form and registered under the Bills of Sale Acts, 1878 and 1882.1 Asa general rule the property in goods passes by the contract of sale. This general rule is subject to the following important exceptions: (1) where the vendor is to do anything to the goods for the purpose of putting them into that state in which the purchaser is bound to accept them, the property does not pass until performance of the necessary acts; (2) the same is the case where the goods are to be weighed, tested, or measured ; (3) where the purchaser is bound to do anything as a condition on which the passing of the property depends, the property does not pass until the condition is fulfilled, even though the goods may be actually in the possession of the buyer; (4) where an executory contract for the

1 Bills of sale have been included here solely on account of their name ; they are in reality mortgages.

sale of goods is made, the property does not pass until appropriation of specific goods by the vendor in completion of the contract; (5) where the vendor reserves to himself the jus disponendi or future power of dealing with the goods, as by making a bill of lading deliverable to his order, the property does not pass until the jus disponendi is exercised in favour of the purchaser; (6) where there is fraud on the part of the vendor or purchaser, the sale is voidable, not void; it may be affirmed and enforced or rescinded. In sales of personalty, unlike sales of real estate, time is usually of the essence of the contract. A sale of goods may be accompanied by an express warranty or collateral contract as to the title to or quality of the goods. No special form of words is necessary to create a warranty, nor need it be in writing. An implied warranty of title—that is, an affirmation that the vendor has a right to sell—exists certainly in executory contracts of sale. It most probably exists in executed contracts,! the exceptions to the rule having in recent times become by judicial decision more numerous than the cases falling under the old rule, that there was no such warranty. Warranty of quality exists either by statute or at common law. The Merchandise Marks Act, 1862, implies a warranty from the existence of trade-marks on chattels that the trade- mark is genuine, and from the existence of any statement respecting number, quantity, weight, place, or country that such statement is not in any material respect false. The rules as to warranty of quality at common law cannot be better stated than in the language of the clear and full judgment of the Court of Queen’s Bench in Jones v. Just (Law Reports, 3 Queen’s Bench, 197).

‘* First, where goods are in esse and may be inspected by the buyer, and there is no fraud on the part of the seller, the maxim caveat emptor applies, even though the defect which exists in them is latent and not discoverable on examination, at least where the seller is neither the grower nor the manufacturer. The buyer in such case has the opportunity of exercising his judgment upon the matter, and if the result of the inspection be unsatisfactory, or if he distrusts his own judgment, he may if he chooses require a warranty. In such a case it is not an implied term of the contract of sale that the goods are of any particular quality or are merchant- able. So in the case of the sale in a market of meat which the buyer had inspected, but

which was in fact diseased and unfit for food, although that fact was not apparent on examination and the seller was not aware of it, it was held that there was no implied warranty that it was fit for food, and that the maxim caveat emptor applied. Secondly, where there is a sale of a definite existing chattel specifically described, the actual condition of which is capable of being ascertained by either party, there is no implied warranty. Thirdly, where a known described and defined article is ordered of a manufacturer, although it is stated to be required by the purchaser for a particular purpose, still if the known de- scribed and defined thing he actually supplied there is no warranty that it shall answer for the particular purpose intended by the buyer. Fourthly, where a manufacturer or dealer contracts to supply an article which he manufactures or produces, or in which he deals, to be applicd to a particular purpose, so that the buyer necessarily trusts to the judgment or skill of the manufacturer or dealer, there is in that case an implied warranty that it shall be reasonably fit for the purpose to which it is to be applied. In such a case the buyer trusts to the manufacturer or dealer, and relies upon his judgment and not upon his own. Fifthly, where a manufacturer undertakes to supply goods manufactured by him- self or in which he deals, but which the vendee has not had the opportunity of inspecting, it is an implied term in the contract that he shall supply a merchantable article. And this doctrine has been held to apply to the sale of an existing barge by the dealer which was afloat but not completely rigged and furnished ; there, inasmuch as the buyer had only seen it when built and not during the course of the building, he was considered as having re- lied on the judgment and skill of the builder that the barge was reasonably fit for use.”

The case of sale by sample is peculiar to personalty.

1 An executed contract passes title, an executory gives a right. A purchase for ready money in a shop is an executed contract, an order for a certain chattel to be made is an executory contract. The con-

sideration for such a contract is the express or implied i for the chattel on completion. ” – aor

SA LH

In such a sale the vendor warrants the quality of the bulk to be equal to that of the sample. There are certain kinds of sale which are governed by special legislation, chiefly on grounds of public policy. A sale contrary to the pro- visions of any of the Acts is generally void in the same way as though it were illegal at common law, on the principle of the maxim Lx turpi causa non oritur actio. The sale of certain public offices is forbidden by 5 and 6 Edw. VI. c. 16, 49 Geo. III. c. 126, and other Acts dealing with special offices. A sale by a tradesman in the way of his ordinary business upon Sunday is illegal under 29 Car. II. c. 7. The same is the case with the sale of intoxicating liquors during prohibited hours, whether on Sundays or week days (31 and 38 Vict. c. 49, s. 6). No action can be brought to recover any debt alleged to be due in respect of the sale of any ale, &c., consumed on the premises where sold (30 and 31 Vict. c. 142). The sale of game in the close season or by an unlicensed person is forbidden by 1 and 2 Will. IV. c. 32. The sale of spirits to a person apparently under the age of sixteen is made penal by 35 and 36 Vict. c. 94,8. 7. These cases are only given as examples; there are numerous other enactments dealing with, inter alia, sales of anchors and chain cables, adulterated food and drugs, explosives, and poisons. Every sale by weight or measure must be accord- ing to one of the imperial weights or measures ascertained by the Weights and Measures Act, 1878; if not so made, the sale is void (41 and 42 Vict. c. 49, s. 19).

The remedies of the vendor are of two kinds, judicial against the purchaser, extra-judicial against the goods. Judicial remedies are either by action for non-acceptance where the property has not passed or by action for the price where it has passed. The extra-judicial are (1) a lien for the price, so that, in the absence of agreement to the contrary or assent to a sub-sale, the vendor need not deliver the goods until the price is paid; (2) the right of stoppage 7m transitu. This right is universally acknow- ledged by the commercial law of civilized nations. It arises on the insolvency of the purchaser before the goods have reached his possession, and is defeasible only by transfer, whether by way of sale or pledge, of the bill of lading or other document of title to a bona fide indorsee for value. The protection afforded at common law to the bona fide transferee has been extended by the Bills of Lading Act, 1855, and by the Factors Act, 1877. There is no general right of resale by the vendor on default of the purchaser. The remedies of the buyer are an action for damages for non-delivery, for conversion, for breach of warranty,

for misrepresentation, &c., according to cir- cumstances. He has also a remedy analogous to specific performance under the Mercantile Law Amendment Act, 1856. The.Act gives power to the court or a judge, in an action for breach of contract to deliver specific goods, to order execution to issue for the delivery of the goods with- out giving the defendant the option of retaining them upon paying the damages assessed. The buyer has further a right to reject goods where they are different in kind or quality from those which he had a right to expect. He is entitled to keep them for a sufficient time to give them a fair trial. It should be noticed that the effect of mis- representation in the sale of real and personal property is not the same. As a rule innocent misrepresentation of facts does not give a right to rescind the sale, since a representation is, like an express warranty, not an integral part of the contract. A representation may, however, if so intended by the parties, become a condition a breach of which will avoid the sale. See Story's, Blackburn's, and Benjamin's treatises on the sale of personal property, especially Benjamin's, which is now the recognized text- book on the subject.

SALE

It may be useful to recapitulate shortly the main points of difference between Roman and English law. They have all been noticed in the preceding part of this article. (1) Arrha was not the same as earnest. (2) Written contracts were not necessary in Roman law under any circumstances, (8) There was no warranty of title in Roman law: the transfer was of vacua possessio, not of ownership ; in Eng- land there is a warranty of title (unless the parties other- wise intend) on sales of personalty, but not on sales of real property, though the covenants for title practically amount to a warranty. (4) There was a warranty of quality extending to undisclosed defects in Roman law beyond anything recognized by English law. (5) By Roman law the property did not pass until traditio; even then it was only property in a modified sense; it was rather vacua possessio secured by duplex stipulatio; by English law the property in specific ascertained goods vests by the contract in the buyer. (6) A sale by a person who was not the owner was not good in Roman law; it is good in certain cases in English law (see below).

There are certain kinds of sale which it is proposed to consider separatcly on account of the exceptional circumstances in which they stand.

Compulsory Sale.—As a general rule sale is a matter of contract between the parties, and no one can be forced to sell against his will, But in this, as in other matters, the right of the state comes in. Under the powers of the Lands Clauses and other Acts the state, cxercising its right of eminent domain, may force an owner to sell for the purpose of public improvements, —such as railways. The power of compulsory sale is less common where the interests of the state are not involved; an example occurs in the Partition Act, 1868, under which the court may order a sale instead of a division, even though some of the parties interested dissent.

Judicial Sale.—Under this head may be grouped all those sales which are made under the authority and by the direction of a court of justice. In regard to real property the most important example is the sale by order of the Chancery Division. Such a sale may be ordercd either under the original jurisdiction of the court or under the provisions of certain Acts of Parliament, such as the Lunacy Regulation Act, 1853, the Partition Act, 1868, the Settled Estates Act, 1877, or the Settled Land Act, 1882 (see Serrun- MENT). The Conveyancing Act, 1881, provides for freeing any land from encumbrances on sale by the court, on payment into court of a sum to meet the encumbrance. The Act also makes the order for sale conclusive in favour of a purchaser in almost every case. The abstract of title in a sale by the court is submitted to one of the conveyancing counsel of the Chancery Division, and the particulars and conditions are settled in judges' chambers. The sale is generally by public auction, the auctioneer being appointed by the judge. The regulations for the conduct of sales by the court will be found in the Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, Ord. hi. r. 1-13.

The Bankruptcy Act, 1883, gives power toa trustee acting under the authority of a court of bankruptcy to sell all or any part of the property of a bankrupt by public anction or private contract. Simi- lar rights are given by the Scotch Bankruptcy Act, 1856. Judicial sales of the property of a debtor in Scotland are regulated by 19 and 20 Vict. c. 92. The term "judicial sale" does not seem to be used asa technical term in English as it is in Scotch law.

In admiralty actions a vessel may be sold under a commission of ap- praisement and sale issued by the court. The practice is now regulated by Ord. li. r. 14-16. Similar powers may be exercised in an action of sett in Scotland. A common instance ofa judicial sale is the sale by a sheriff of an execution debtor's goods under a writ of fiert facias or venditiont exponas. Where the execution is for a sum above £20 the sale is, unless the court otherwise orders, to be by public auction. Where the sheriff has seized and a claim by interpleader is set up, the court may order a sale of the whole or part of the goods (Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, Ord. lvii. r. 12), The same rules (Ord. 1. r. 2) give a valuable power to the court or a judge of ordering a sale of any goods of a perishable nature, or such as for any reason it may be desirable to have sold at once.

Sale by Persons not Owners.—English law in general agrees with the rule in Dig. 1. 17, 54, 'Nemo plus juris ad alium transferre potest quam ipse haberet," and a purchaser takes his purchase subject to informalities in the title. To this rule there are several excep- tions, in which title may be given by persons who are limited Owners or not owners at all. An example of sale by a limited owner is a sale by a tenant for life under the powers given by the Settled Land Act, 1882. Under the same head would fall sales by persons having a qualified right of sale under particular circum- stances, such as a sheriff, the master of a ship in a foreign port, or

a pawnee in default of payment (see Puepcx). Sales by persons not owners at all must as a rule, in order to be valid, be made to purchasers ignorant of the defect of title on the part of the vendor, In the case of real estate a bona fide purchaser for valuable con- sideration without notice, actual or implied, of any adverse title is protected. This ison the principle that equity assists the person in possession of the legal estate. In the case of personal property title may be passed by a person not owner under the Factors Acts and in the case of stolen goods. The effect of the Factors Acts is to enable title to be given by the vendor or vendee or any person on his behalf while he is in possession of the documents of title (see Factors). The lawas to the sale of stolen goods will be found under THEFT.

Pre-emption.—This is a right of purchasing some particular property given to some particular person in priority to the public. It is conferred either by agreement between parties or by law. Thus by the Lands Clauses Act, 1845, before the promoters of an undertaking dispose of superfluous lands not required for the pur- poses of the undertaking they must (with certain exceptions) first. offer to sell the same to the person then entitled to the lands from which the same were originally severed. In the United States pre- emption is very important in its connexion with the homestead law (see HomEsTEaD). In international law the right is exercisable by a belligerent nation over property not strictly contraband, but which would still be of advantage to the enemy. The goods are not seized and condemned, but purchased by the capturing nation at a reasonable compensation. The right of pre-emption is given to. the admiralty by 27 and 28 Vict. c. 25, s. 38 (see CONTRABAND). The old crown prerogative of purveyance and pre-emption was a right of buying up provisions and other necessaries for the royal household at a valuation even without the eonsent of the owner, and also of impressing horses and carriages for the king's service on the public roads upon paying a settled price to the proprietor. The right was relinquished by the Act abolishing the feudal tenures

.(12'Car. IT. c. 24),

Scotland.—The law of Scotland follows the Roman law more closely than does English law. Thus in Scotch as in Roman law the contract of sale is called a consensual contract ; the sale is not complete until delivery, and market overt does not afford any pro- tection. Writing is essential to the sale of heritable property, not by any statnte, as in England, but by the ancient unwritten law. fei interventus may, however, in some cases, like part performance in England, supply the place of writings. The vendor is bound on eompletion to supply a sufficient progress of titles. In addition to the protection afforded to the purchaser by the progress of titles the statutory form of warrandice in 31 and 32 Vict, ec. 101, s. 8 implies, unless specially qualified, absolute warrandice as regards the lands and writs and evidents, and warrandice from fact and deed as regards the rents,—that is to say, that a good title to the land has been conveyed, and that the granter has not done and will not do anything contrary to the writ as regards the rents (see Watson, Law Diet., s.v. ''Warrandice"). In the case of movables writing is

not necessary for a good contract of sale, except where the sale is of a ship, or the parties agree to reduce the terms to writing. The Mercantile Law Amendment (Scotland) Act, 1856 (19 and 20 Vict. c. 60), has made important changes in the law of Scotland. ‘‘The statute was passed for the purpose of assimilating the law of Scotland to that of England” (Lord Watson, in M‘Bain v. Wallace, Law Reports, 6 Appeal Cases, 588). By section 1 goods after sale but before delivery are not attachable by the creditors of the seller. By section 2 the sub-purchaser may demand that delivery be made to him instead of to the original purchaser, without pre- judice to the right of retention of the seller. By section 3 the seller of goods may attach the goods while in his own possession at any time prior to the date when the sale of such goods shall have been intimated to him. By section 5 the English principle of caveat emptor is introduced: ‘‘ where goods shall be sold the seller, if at the time of the sale he was without knowledge that the same were of defective or of bad quality, shall not be held to have warranted their quality or sufficiency, but the goods, with all faults, shall be at the risk of the purchaser, unless the seller shall have given an express warranty of the quality or sufficiency of such goods, or unless the goods have been expressly sold for a specified and par- ticular purpose, in which case the seller shall be considered, with- out such warranty, to warrant that the same are fit for such pur- pose.” The right of retention corresponds closely to the right of lien in England, but rests upon the simpler ground of undivested property (see Watson, Law Dict., s.v. “Sale”). Criminal liability for fraud seems to be carried farther in Scotland than in England (see FRAuD).

United States.—The law as to the sale of real estate agrees gener- ally with English law. It is considerably simplified by the system of REGISTRATION (¢.v.). The covenant of warranty, unknown in England, is the principal covenant for title in the United States. It corresponds generally to the English covenant for quiet enjoy- ment. The right of judicial sale of buildings under a mechanic’s lien for labour and materials is given by the law of many States.

The sale of public lands is regulated by Act of Congress (Revised Statutes, 2358-2379). In the law of sale of personal property American law is also based upon English law. The principal dif- ferences are that the law of market overt (see THEFT) is not recog- nized by the United States, and that an unpaid vendor is the agent of the vendee to resell on non-payment, and is entitled to recover the difference between the contract price and the price of resale. The law of Louisiana (Civil Code, § 3194) gives the unpaid vendor a still greater right in his preferential claim for the price against the creditors of the purchaser, if the property still remains in the latter's possession. Warranty of title is not carried as far as in England. United States decisions draw a distinction between goods in the possession and goods not in the possession of the vendor at the time of sale. Thcre is no warranty of title of the latter. The Statute of Frauds has been construed in some respects differently from the English decisious. The differences will be found in Mr Benjamin's work. As to unlawful sales, it has been held that a sale in a State where the sale is lawful is valid in a State where it is unlawful by statute, even though the goods are ee,

tate. , SALEIYER (in Mancassarese Sildyara, in Buginese Sildja), also called T'ana-dowang ("Land of Shrimps "), is a Dutch island separated from the south coast of Celebes (East Indies) by a strait 8 miles wide, which in the west monsoon is used by vessels bound for the Moluccas, the Philippines, and China. With a length of 46 miles and general breadth of 9, the area is estimated at 315 square miles. Along the east side of the island is a belt of voleanic rock ; the west side is of limestone or coralline formation. The highest point seems to be Haru on the east coast, but estimates of its altitude vary from 1000 to 3000 feet. 'There are no navigable rivers, and many of the streams dry up in the west monsoon. Besides most of the ordinary tropical fruits, the cultivated plants comprise Indian corn, barley, potatoes, tobacco, coffee, and indigo, and among the trees are cocoanut and areng palms, kanari, ebony, and teak (the last considered the property of the Dutch Government). Horses, buffaloes, goats, and sheep are kept, and pigs and deer exist in a wild state. The population of Saleiyer and dependencies, mainly a mixed race of Mancassars, Buginese, and natives of Luvu and Buton, was in 1869 55,147, and in 1880 66,276. They use the Mancassar language, are for the most part nominally Mahommedans (though many heathen customs survive), and support themselves by agriculture, fishing,

seafaring, trade, the preparation of salt (on the south coast), and the weaving of clothing materials. Field work is largely performed by a servile class. Raw and prepared cotton, tobacco, trepang, tortoise-shell, cocoanuts and cocoanut oil, and salt are the principal articles of export.

The island is divided into nine regencies :—Tanette, Batammata

(Batangmata; including the former regency of Onto), Buki, Mare- Mare, Bonéya—all five in the north—Bontobangung, Balla-bulo,

Layolo, and Barambarang—in thesouth. Panggiliyang or Benteng ~

on the west coast, often called also Saleiyer, is the capital of the island. It stands in 6° 3’ 3”S. lat. and 120° 31’ 48” E. long., and possesses the best harbour on the whole coast, being protectcd by Pulo Pasi or Hog Island (also Sariwa or Pulo Babi). To the Salciyer group belong a variety of small islands, for the most part uninhabited—Tana Jampéya (the largest of all with a good anchor- age at Maringi Bay), Gowang, Malimbu, &c. Previous to the Dutch occupation the Saleiyers were subject to the king of Ternate.

SALEM, a British district of India, in Madras presi- dency, lying between 11° 1’ and 12° 57’ N. lat. and 77° 32’ and 79° 5’ E. long. It embraces an area of 7653 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by Mysore and North Arcot, on the 8. by Coimbatore and Trichinopoly, on the E. by Trichinopoly and South and North Arcot, and on the W. by Coimbatore and Mysore. Except towards the south, the district is very hilly, with large plains lying between the several ranges. Salem is described as consisting of three distinct tracts of country, known as the Talaghat, the Béramahdl, and the Balaghat. The Talaghat is situated below the Eastern Ghats on the level of the Carnatic gencr- ally ; the Béramahdl includes the whole Salem face of the Ghats and a wide tract of country at their base; and the

Balaghat is situated above the Ghats on the tableland of Mysore. The western part of the district is very mountain- ous, some of the ranges attaining an elevation of between 5000 and 6000 feet. Amongst the chief ranges are the Shevaroys, the Kalrayans, the Melagiris, the Kollimalais, the

Pachamalais, and the Yelagiris. The chief rivers are the Cauvery with its numerous tributaries, and the Pennar and Palar; the last, however, only flows through a few miles of the Tirupatur tdluk, situated in the north-western corner of the district. The forests are of considerable value and their area is roughly estimated at 2251 square miles. The geological structure of the district is mostly gneissic, with a few irruptive rocks in the form of trap dykes and granite veins. Magnetic iron ore is common in the hill regions, and corundum and chromate of iron are also obtainable. The qualities of the soil differ very much ; in the country immediately surrounding the town of Salem a thin layer of calcareous and red loam generally prevails, through which quartz rocks appear on the surface in many places. The climate, owing to the great difference of elevation, varies considerably ; on the hills it is cool and bracing, and for a great part of the year very salubrious ; the average rainfall is about 38 inches. Salem has about 1400 miles of road, and the length of railway line within the district is 134 miles.

In 1881 the population was 1,599,595 (males 778,483, females 821,112); Hindus numbered 1,531,855, Mohammedans 51,092, and Christians 16,567. Besides Salem (see below), the capital, the district contains three other towns with a population exceeding 10,000 each, viz., Daringambadi (15,426), Tirupatur (14,278), and Shendamangalam (12,575). Of the total area of the district only 1,283,190 acres were under cultivation in 1883-84; but of these 187,408 acres were twice cropped. The staple crops are rice and ragi; other important crops are pulscs and seeds. The chief industry is weaving, which is carried on in almost every large town aud village. Carpets of great beauty and superior workmanship are made in the Salem jail. Good iron and steel arc made, but only ona small scale. The gross revenue of the district in 1883-84 was, £260,364, the land-tax contributing £211,062 of the amount. Though Salem has no connected history, there are few parts of Southern India that contain more spots of interest for English students. As at present composed it was acquired by the treaty of peace with Tipu Sultan in 1792 and the partition treaty of Mysore in 1799. By the former the Talaghat and Baramahal were ceded, and by the latter the Balaghat, or what is now the Osur ¢dluk.

SALEM, chief town of the above district, situated in 11° 39’ 10” N. lat. and 78° 11’ 47° E. long., is @ buy trading place, with a considerable weaving

industry. It is tolerably well built and is prettily situated on the river Tirumanimuttar, 900 feet above sea-level, in a long valley enclosed by the Shevaroy hills, which are 6 miles distant. The population of the town in 1881 was 50,667 (malcs 24,584, females 26,083).

SALEM, a city of the United States, capital of Essex county, Massachusetts, is built on a peninsula between two inlets of the sea (North river and South river), in 42° 31′ 18” N. lat. and 70° 53’ 53” W. long., 16 miles north by east of Boston, on the Eastern Railroad. In the latter part of the 18th and the early part of the 19th century Salem was the seat of a flourishing foreign commerce, especially with the East Indies; but, its comparatively shal- low harbour failing to accommodate the larger vessels of modern times, it has been supplanted by Boston and has to content itself with a good share of the coasting trade. Its industrial activity has, on the other hand, increased, and it now possesses steam cotton-mills, jute-factories, extensive tanneries, and various minor manufactories. The main interest, however, of Salem consists in its historical and literary associations and the institutions by which they are represented. Best known of these institutions is the Peabody Academy, founded in 1867 with funds provided by the well-known philanthropist. The academy at once purchased and refitted the East India Marine Hall, origin-

ally built in 1824 by the East India Marine Society (1799), which consisted of captains and supercargoes who had doubled either Cape Horn or the Cape of Good Hope; and .the building now contains under the trusteeship of the academy the collections of the old East India Museum and those of the Essex Institute, illustrating the zoology, natural history, and archeology of the county. The ethno- graphical collections, such as that dealing with Corea, are especially valuable. The American Naturalist has been the organ of the academy since 1867. The Peabody Institute, not to be confounded with the academy, is in the village of Peabody (Danvers), about 2 miles distant from Salem and about midway between the house in which the philanthropist was born and the grave, in Harmony Grove cemetery, in which he was buried. The institute contains various personal relics of the founder, such as the famous portrait of Queen Victoria. Plummer Hall, a fine building in Essex Street, erected out of funds left to the Salem

Atheneum by Miss Plummer, contains the libraries of the Athenzeum, the Essex Institute, and the South Essex Medical Society, making an aggregate of 50,000 volumes. Behind this hall is the frame of the oldest church edifice in New Eng- land, erected in 1634 for Roger Williams. Other buildings of note in Salem are a State normal school, the city hall, the court-house, St Peter's Episcopal church, the custom- house, in which Nathaniel Hawthorne once acted as clerk, and several of the private houses (such as ‘‘ Dr Grimshawe's house," the dwelling really occupied by Dr Peabody, Mrs Hawthorne's father) which, while not exactly prototypes, have lent much of their verisimilitude to the localities of Hawthorne's fiction. The house in which the novelist was born is 21 Union Street. Salem had 24,117 inha- bitants in 1870, 26,063 in 1875, and 27,563 in 1880.

Naumkeag (Eel Land) was the Indian name of the district in which Salem stands, and is still used familiarly by the inhabitants. The first house was built by Roger Conants from Cape Ann in 1626, and two years later a settlement was formed by John Endicott and called Salem, "from the peace they had and hoped in it." In 1630 Governor Jolin Winthrop introduced a large body of colonists from England, including the brave and beautiful Arabella Johnson, daughter of the earl of Lincoln, who died shortly afterwards. In 1661 the Quakers were persecuted at Salem, and in 1692 the town was the scene of Cotton Mather's terrible proceedings against witch- craft: nineteen persons were hanged on Gallows Hilland Giles Cory was pressed to death. It was in Salem that in 1774 the house of representatives of Massacliusetts resolved themselves into a sovereign political power. The town obtained a city charter in 1836. Few cities of the United States have given more eminent men to the world—Timothy Pickering, secretary of state (1795-1880), General Israel Putnam, F. T. Ward of China celebrity, John Rogers the sculptor, Bowditch the astronomer and mathematician, Maria S. Cummins the novelist, W. H. Prescott the historian, and Nathaniel Hawthorne.

SALEM, a city of the United States, the county seat of Salem county, New Jersey, on a small stream of the same name, by which it has steam communication with Phil- adelphia (on the Delaware), 44 miles distant to the north- north-east by rail. While Salem depends mainly on the agricultural prosperity of the surrounding district, it also contains foundries

and machine-shops, fruit-canning estab- lishments, glass-ware factories, oil-cloth factories, &c. The population was 3052 in 1850, 4555 in 1870, and 5056 in

1880,

A colony settled on the site of Salem in 1641 was replaced by a Swedish fort, and this passed through the Dutch to the English. One of the Quakers who in 1673 bought Lord Berkeley's half of New Jersey gave the place its present name and restored the settle- ment, which in 1682 was declared a port of entry. In 1778 the town was plundered by Colonel Manhood.

SALEM, a city of the United States, the capital of Oregon, in Marion county, on the east bank of Willamette river, 53 miles south of Portland by the Oregon and California Railroad. It lies in a fertile prairie district, adorned with copses, and possesses a good source of water- power in Mill Creek. The capitol, a rather imposing edifice

with a tower 180 feet high, erected in 1875-76, occupies a fine site above the city; other public buildings are the Willamette University (Methodist), which grants degrees in medicine, science, and general literature, the opera-house, the Roman Catholic school for girls, the State penitentiary, and State schools for the deaf and dumb and the blind. Lumber, woollen goods, flour, leather, brass castings, furni- ture, linseed oil, and building materials are the chief articles of manufacture and trade. The population was 2538 in 1881. Settled in 1834, incorporated in 1853, Salem be- came the State capital in 1860.

SALEP (Arab. sahleb, Gr. épxis), a drug extensively used in the East as a nervine restorative and fattener, and also much prescribed in paralytic affections, probably owed its original popularity to the belief in the so-called "' doctrine of signatures." In Europe it is chiefly used as a demulcent drink, but is also supposed to possess nutrient properties ; it may be employed with advantage in inflammatory condi- tions of the mucous membrane, as in bronchitis, diarrhcea, cystitis, and other urinary disorders. It consists of the tuberous roots of various species of Orchis and Hulophia,

which are decorticated, washed, heated until horny in ap- pearance, and then carefully dried. The most important constituent of salep is a kind of mucilage which it yields to cold water to the extent of 48 per cent. This mucilage in its chemical reactions is more nearly allied to cellulose than to gum, since when dry it is readily soluble in ammoniacal solution of copper; when boiled with nitric acid it yields oxalic but not mucic acid. Salep also con- tains sugar and albumen, and when fresh traces of a volatile oil; dried at 100° C. it yields 2 per cent. of ash, chiefly the phosphates and chlorides of potassium and calcium.

Salep was formerly imported into Europe from the Levant, but in 1760 the French chemist Geoffroy discovered its true nature and showed how it might be prepared from the species of Orchis indi- genous to France. That used in Germany is obtained from plants growing wild in the Taunus Mountains, the Westerwald, the Rhon, the Odenwald, and Franconia. Grecian salep is chiefly collected in Macedonia. In Asia Minor the tubers are collected near Melassa and Mughla, and about 330 tons are annually exported from Smyrna. The salep of the Bombay market, which is imported principally from Persia, Cabul, and northern India, occurs in three forms, palmate, large ovoid, and small ovoid tubers on strings, all more or less horny and translucent. Salep is also produced on the Nilgiri (Neilgherry) Hills and in Ceylon. Besides the above-men- tioned forms, elongated cylindrical tubers, usually in pairs and undecorticated, are occasionally met with. The palmate tubers are the most highly esteemed, being valued at ten rupees per pound. This variety is known in the Bombay market.as Persian salep. It is probably derived chiefly from 0. latifolia, L., although O. macu- lata, L., O. saccifera, Brongn., and O. conopsea, L., also afford pal- mate tubers. The species known to yield ovate salep are O. mascula, 0. Morio, O. pyramidalis, O. ustulata, O. militaris, O. coriophora, L., and O. longicruris, Link. All these species are natives of the greater part of central and southern Europe, Turkey, the Caucasus, and Asia Minor, O. latifolia extending to western India and Tibet and Q. conopsca to the Amur, in the extreme east of Asia. Salep is not easily reduced to powder, being both hard and tough, and is therefore usually ground between millstones. This difficulty is said to belessened if the salepis first soaked in cold water until soft and then rapidly dricd. As the powdcr does not mix readily with water, the authors of Pharmacographia (2d ed. p. 656) recommend that it should be first mixed

with 13 parts of rectified spirits of wine (brandy or other strong spirit would answer equally well), 40 parts of cold water being then added quickly and the mixture boiled. In these proportions salep affords a thick jelly.

SALERNO, a city of Italy and the chief town of a pro- vince of its own name (formerly Principato Citeriore), is beautifully situated on the west coast 34 miles south-east of Naples, and presents a fine appearance with the ruins of its old Norman castle on an eminence 905 feet above the sea and its background of graceful limestone hills. The town walls were destroyed in the beginning of the 19th cen- tury; the seaward portion has given place to the Corso Garibaldi, the principal promenade. Among the con- spicuous buildings are the theatre, the prefecture, and the

cathedral of St Matthew (whose bones were brought from Pestum to Salerno in 954), begun in 1076 by Robert Guis- card and consecrated in 1084 by Gregory VII. In front is a beautiful quadrangular court (112 by 102 feet), sur- rounded by arcades formed of twenty-eight ancient pillars mostly of granite ; and the middle entrance into the church is closed by a remarkable bronze door of 11th or 12th century Byzantine work. The nave and two aisles end in apses. Two magnificent marble ambos, the larger dating from 1175, several specimens of ancient mosaic, and the tombs of Gregory VII. and Queen Margaret of Durazzo deserve to be mentioned. In the crypt is a bronze statue of St Matthew. The lofty aqueduct, one of whose arches is now used by the railway, is a building of 1320; the present water-supply is provided by a canal formed in 1865. A fine port constructed by Giovanni da Procida in 1260 was destroyed when Naples became the capital of the king- dom, and remained blocked with sand till after the unifica- tion of Italy. A series of works, especially those decreed in 1880, have provided an inner harbour of 40 acres (depth 12 to 22 feet), an outer harbour (22 to 25 feet), and wharves to the extent of £468 feet. In 1884 180 vessels (29,078 tons) entered and 173 (28,069) cleared. Silk and cotton spinning are the principal industries. The population was 19,905 in 1870 and 22,328 (commune, 31,245) in 1881. A Roman colony was founded at Salerno (Salernum) in 194 B.c. to keep the Picentines in check, but the city makes no figure in history till after the Lombard conquest. Dismantled by

order of Charle- magne, it became in the 9th century the capital of an independent principality, the rival of that of Benevento, and was surrounded by strong fortifications. The Lombard princes, who had frequently defended their city against the Saracens, succumbed before Robert Guiscard, who took the castle after an eight months' siege and made Salerno the capital of his new territory. The removal of the court to Palermo and the sack of the city by the emperor Henry VI. in 1194 put a stop toits development. The position which the medical school of the Civitas Hippocratica (as it called itself on its seals) held in medieval times has been described under MEDICINE, vol. xv. pp. 806-807. Salerno university, founded in 1150, and long one of the great seats of learning in Italy, was closed in 1817, SALES, Frangors DE (1567-1622), see vol. ix. p. 695. SALFORD. See Mancuzsrer, vol. xv. p. 459 sq. SALICIN, the bitter principle of willow bark, was dis- covered by Leroux in 1831. It exists in most species of Salix and Populus, and has been obtained to the extent of 3 or 4 per cent. from the bark of S. helix and S. pentandra. According to Herberger, the bark of the young branches affords salicin in larger proportion than that of the trunk and contains less of the other ingredients which interfere with its extraction. Salicin is prepared from a decoction of the bark by first precipitating the tannin by milk of lime, then evaporating the filtrate to a soft extract, and dissolving out the salicin by alcohol.

As met with in commerce it is usually in the form of | It is neutral to test paper, |

glossy white scales or needles. inodorous, unaltered by exposure to the air, and has a persistently bitter taste.. It is soluble in about 30 parts of alcohol or water at the ordinary temperature, and in 0°7 of boiling water or in 2 parts of boiling alcohol, and more freely in alkaline liquids. It is also soluble in acetic acid without alteration, but is insoluble in chloroform and benzol. From phloridzin it is distinguished by its ammoniacal solution not becoming coloured when exposed to the air. Cold sulphuric acid dissolves salicin, forming a bright red solution. When salicin is heated with sul- phuric acid and potassium bichromate, salicylic aldehyde (C;H,O,) is formed, which possesses the odour of meadow- Sweet flowers (Spirza Ulmaria, I.)

Salicin is chiefly used in medicine as an antipyretic in acute rheumatism, for which it is given in doses of 5 to 30 grains. Its action is less powerful than that of Sat CYLIC AcrD (9.v.), and its depressing effect on the circulation is less marked. It is also given for headache and for ague,

SA L—S AL

Salicin is a glucoside, having the composition C\3H,,0,, and is uot precipitated by the alkaloidal reagents. It has been prepared artificially from helicin, synthesized from sodium, salicyl-aldehyde, and aceto-chlorhydrose, being the first glucoside that has been arti. ficially prepared (Journ. Chem. Soc., 1884, p. 489). According to Binz, it may be split up by digestion with emulsin or saliva into salicylic alcohol (saligenol, C,H,O.) and glucose ; heating it gently with dilute sulphuric acid produces a similar effect, Salicylic alcohol is converted by oxidizing agents into salicylic acid. This acid is formed when salicin is taken internally, since salicin is eliminated from the system partly in the form of salicylic and salicyluric acids, and partly as saligenin.

SALIC LAW, anp orner Barpartan Laws. The (1) Lex Salica is one of those Teutonic laws of the early Middle Ages which are known as leges barbarorum, among which we also reckon the (2) Lex Ripuariorum or Ribuart- orum, (3) Ewa (Lex) Francorum Chamavorum, (4) Lex Alamannorum, (5) Lex Bajuvariorum, (6) Lex Frisionum, (7) Lee Angliorum et Werinorum, h.e., Lhuringorum, (8) Lex Saxonum, (9) Leges Anglo-Saxonum, (10) Lea Bur- gundionum, (10a).Lea Romana Burgundionum, (11) Lex Wesigothorum, (lla) Breviarium Alarici, (11b) dictum Theodorict, (12) Leges Langobardorum, and to a certain extent (13) Leges Wallix. All these laws may in general be described as codes of procedure and of rights, which regulated for some indefinite period the internal affairs of the several Teutonic tribes whose names they bear.

(1) The Sadie Law originated with the Salian Franks, often simply called Salians, the chief tribe of that con: glomeration of Teutonic peoples known as FRANKS (q.v.).

Aurel., c. 7), after which date we find them carrying on an almost uninterrupted struggle with the Roman empire, till 486, when they finally

established a kingdom of their own in provinces which had previously been considered Roman. The Salian Franks first appear under their specific name in 358, when they had penetrated westwards as far as Toxandria (Texandria, now Tessenderloo, in Limburg, the region to the south and west of the lower Meuse), where they were subdued by the emperor Julian (Ammian., xvii. 8). As regards their previous history nothing is known with certainty, though it seems probable that the Franks who occupied the Batavian island c. 290, and were there conquered in 292 by Constantius Chlorus (Paneg. imcerti auth. c. 4), and thence transplanted into Gaul, were the Salian Franks. We find, moreover, such un-

oe hicrLt Aw

mistakable evidence of a connexion between the Sigambri

and the Salii! that the latter are by some regarded as the descendants of the Sigambri whom Tiberius removed in 8 z.c. from their home on the right bank of the Rhine ; and it is argued that he did not transform them into the Gugerni, nor place them on the Merwede, a stream and locality near Dordrecht and Zwijndrecht, but transplanted them into the region now called the Veluwe, between the Utrecht Vecht and the Eastern Yssel, where the Romans probably made of them what the Batavi had been for years past —their allies—perhaps on the same condition as the latter, who merely furnished the Romans with men and arms. This accounts for the Sigambrian cohort in the Thracian War in 26 4.p. Some think, however, that the Salians were a separate tribe of the Franks who merely coalesced with the Sigambri (comp. Watterich, Die Ger- manen des Rheins; Waitz, Verfass., ii. 24). In 431 the Frankish (Salic) king Chlodio (Chlojo, Chlogio), said to have been a son (or the father) of Merovech, the founder of the Merovingian dynasty (Greg. Tur., 11. 9), took Cam- brai and advanced his dominion as far as the Somme (Greg., 7b. ; Sid. Apoll., v. 211 sg.), though still acknow- ledging Roman supremacy. Childerich reigned from 457 to 481, and resided at Tournai, where his grave was dis- covered in 1653. His son Clovis (Chlovis, Chlodovech) in 486 extended his empire to the Seine (Greg. Tur., il. 43, 27). For an account of him, see vol. ix. pp. 528, 529.

We have very few means of ascertaining when the Salic Law? was compiled, and how long it remained in force. Our knowledge of the code is

derived—(i.) from ten texts, preserved in a comparatively large number of manuscripts, chiefly written in the 8th and 9th centuries ; (ii.) from allusions to a Salic Law in various charters and other documents. But the Latin texts do not contain the original Salic Law. This is clear (a) from the allusions we find in them to a “Lex Salica” and “Antiqua Lex,” which can hardly be anything but references to another and earlier Lex Salica ; (6) from a certain peculiarity and awkwardness in the construction of the Latin, which, though it is so-called Merovingian, and therefore very corrupt, would have been different if the texts were original compilations ; (c) from a number of words, found in nearly every paragraph of certain groups of the MSS., and now known as “ Malberg glosses,” which are evidently the re- mains of a vernacular Salic Law, and appear to have been retained in the Latin versions, in some cases because the translators seemed doubtful as to whether their Latin terms correctly rendered the meaning of the original, in other cases because these words had become legal terms, and indicated a certain fine. We do not know whether the original Frankish law-book was ever reduced to writing, or merely retained in, and handed down to posterity from, the memory of some persons charged with the preservation of the law. All that we know of such an original is con- tained in a couple of prologues (apparently later than the texts themselves) found in certain MSS. of the existing

1 “Detonsus Vachalim [the river Waal] bibat Sicamber” (Sid. Apoll., Carm., xiii. 31). “ Ut Salius jam rura colat flexosque Sicambri In falcem curvent gladios’” (Claudian, De Laude Stilic., i. 222). According to the Gesta Franc., c. 1, the Franks at one time inhabited the town of Sicambria. The earliest Frankish kings, who were undoubtedly kings of the Salian Franks, are often called Sigambri, and always with the object of honouring them. St Remigius, when he baptized Clovis, exhorted him, ‘‘Mitis depone colla Sicamber ” (Greg. Tur., ii. 31). Venantius Fortunatus (vi. 4) says to King Chari- bert, “Cum sis progenitus clara de gente Sygamber.” For further evidence, comp. Waitz, Verfass., ii. 22 sq.

2 The origin of the name Salicus, Salius, is uncertain. It is not improbable that it was derived from the river Yssel, called in the Middle Ages Isloa, Hisloa, Isla, Isela, Isalia. The region about Deventer, in the east of Holland,

is still called Salland, though it is nowhere expressly said that the Salians ever lived there.

213

Latin versions. One of them states that four men ‘in villis que ultra Renum sunt per tres mallos (judicial as- semblies) convenientes, omnes causarum origines sollicite discutiendo tractantes, judicium decreverunt,” which must refer to a period before 358, as in that year the Salian Franks had already crossed the Rhine and occupied the Batavian island and Toxandria. Another prologue says that the Salic Law was compiled (dictare) while the Franks were still heathens (therefore before 496), and afterwards emended by Clovis, Childebert, and Chlotar. Nor can it be stated with certainty when the Latin translations which we now possess were made, but it must have been after Clovis had extended his power as far as the Loire (486-507), as in chapter 47 the boundaries of the Frankish empire are stated to be the Carbonaria Silva (in southern Belgium between Tournai and Liége) and the Loire.®

There exist five Latin recensions, more or less different. (i.) The earliest of the code (handed down in four MSS. with little difference, and very likely compiled shortly after Clovis extended his empire to the Loire) consists of sixty- five chapters (with the Malberg glosses). In the course of the 6th century a considerable number of chapters appear to have been added (under the title of ‘‘ edicts” or “decrees”), some of which are ascribed to Clovis, and the remainder to his successors before the end of the cen- tury. One of them (chap. 78) may with some certainty be ascribed to Hilperic (c. 574). Some others seem to have originated with Childebert I. and Chlotar I. (whose joint reign lasted from 511 to 558), and are known collectively as ‘“Pactus Childeberti et Chlotharii.” From internal evi- dence we may infer that this first version dates from a time when Christianity had not yet become general among the Franks. (ii.) Two MSS. contain a second recension, having the same sixty-five chapters (with the Malberg glosses) as the first, but with numerous interpolations and additions, which point to a later period. Especially may this be said of the paragraph (in chap. 13) which pronounces fines on marriages between near relatives, and which is presumed to have been embodied in the Lex Salica from an edict of

Childebert IT. issued in 596. In chapter 55 paragraphs six and seven speak of a “basilica,” of a “basilica sancti- ficata,” and of a “basilica ubi requiescunt reliquiz,” but it is more than doubtful whether we have here any evi- dences of Christianity, though a later recension (the fourth) altered “basilica” into “ecclesia,” the “‘reliquiz” into “‘reliquize sanctorum,” and thereby gave a decidedly Chris- tian aspect to the clause. (iii.) A third recension is con- tained in a group of nine MSS. (divided into two classes), three of which have the same text (with the Malberg glosses) as the MSS. of the first and second recensions, divided, however, systematically into ninety-nine chapters, while the other six MSS. have the same ninety-nine chapters, with very little difference, but without the Mal- berg glosses. This text seems to have been arranged in Pippin’s or Charlemagne’s reign (c. 765-779). The clause on marriages between near relatives mentioned above is not found in this recension. On the other hand, we find in chapter 55 (=77) fines pronounced on the murder of a presbyter and deacon (no bishop yet mentioned), while the six MSS. of the second class do not contain chapter 99 (“De Chrenecruda”), but merely say that the symbolism described in that chapter had been observed in heathen times, and was to be no longer in force. (iv.) The fourth version (handed down in a great number of MSS., and embodying in seventy chapters substantially the whole of the previous versions) is usually called Lex Salica Emen- data, as the text bears traces of having been emended (by Charlemagne), which operation seems to have consisted in

3 Some explain Ligeris to be the river Leye, a branch of the Scheldt, in which case the compilation would fall between c. 453 and 486.

eliminating the Malberg glosses from the text, correcting the Latin, omitting a certain number of paragraphs, and inserting some new ones. In chapter 55 the bishop is mentioned with the presbyter and the deacon. (v.) Finally, we have a fifth text, which seems an amalgamation of the previous recensions, more especially of the second, third, and fourth, but here and there with considerable differences. It was published in 1557, at Basel, by Bas. Joh. Herold (Originum ac Germanicarum Antiguitatum Libri) ; but no trace of

the Fulda and other MSS. which the editor says that he used has hitherto been found.

The Salic code consists of enactments regarding procedure in lawsuits (chaps. 1, 18, 26, 37, 46-53, 56, 57, 60), judicial fines and penalties for various kinds of theft and kidnapping (2-8, 10-12, 21- 93, 27, 28, 33-35, 38-40, 55, 61), for offences, injuries, &c., to per- sons, animais, and property (9, 15-17, 19, 20, 24, 25, 29-32, 36, 41-48, 64, 65); it regulates the ‘‘wergeld” (a word found only in the text published by Herold; all the other texts have Jeodis, leudis= people, associate of the people) of all classes of persons living under the Salic Law (41-43, 54, 63), the share of the kindred in the composition for homicide (58-62), the devolution of property and inheritance (59), migration from one village to another (45), &c.

The Salic Law speaks of (a) freeborn persons (ingenwus Francus, Salicus Francus), with a wergeld of 200 solidi, which was tripled when such a person served in the army, and the latter amount again tripled when the person killed was an officer of the king ; (6) serfs (Zett or litt), who enjoyed personal freedom though belonging to some master, and © puert regis (probably serfs in the service of the king), both with a wergeld of 100 solidi; (@) the Roman popu- lation, not yet placed on the same footing with the Francus (yos- sessores with a wergeld of 100 solidi; éributariz, perhaps=eolont, with a wergeld of 624 solidi); (¢) slaves (servz), with a wergeld of 30 solidi ; and a variety of other persons belonging to one or other of these classes (puer crinitus, class a ; poredrius, faber ferrarius, aurifex, &c., class ¢). An aristoeraey is not mentioned. The people lived together in villages (ehap. 45) ; they cxercised agri- culture and reared cattle (2-5, 27, &c.); they hunted and fished (6, 33); vineyards and gardens were known to them (27, 6, &c.) ; and gold work and iron work are mentioned (10). The chief of the state was a king ; his officers included the grajfio, who was chief of a pagus (shirc); sacebaro, chief of a hundred (both with a wergeld of 600 solidi; the latter could also be a puer regis, in which case he had a wergeld of 300 solidi) ; thunginus or centen- erius, chief of a hundred, but probably elected by the people from among themselves, as his wergeld seems to have been the ordinary one. The judicial assembly was called mallus, the place where it as- sembled matlloverg, the party in a suit gamallus, the councillor of the assembly rachineburgus, an officer who had

to advise upon the sen- tence to be pronounced, and to value the property in question.

The famous clause in the Salic Law by which, it is commonly said, women are precluded from succession to the throne, and which alone has become known in course of time as the Salic Law, is the fifth paragraph of chapter 59 (with the rubric “De Alodis”), in which the succession to private property is regulated. The chapter opens with four (five) paragraphs in which it is enacted that—(1) if a man died without male issue, his mother (so in first recension ; the second to fifth have “pater aut mater”) would succeed to the inheritance (in hereditatem succedat) ; (2 failing her (the father and mother), his brother (brothers) or sister (sisters); (3) failing these, the sister of the mother : (4) when there was no sister of the mother, the sisters (sister) of the father ; and (5), failing these, the nearest relative. After this the fifth paragraph reads as follows :—

First Second Third Fourth Fifth recension. recension. recension. recension. recension. Deterravero| De terra] De terra | De terra De terra vero

nulla in muli-} vero Salica| vero Salica | vero Salica | Salica, in muliere[portioaut] | in mulicre | nulla in mu- nullaportio | rem nulla portio hereditas non | nulla per- | licre heredi- hereditatis | hereditatis transpertinebit, sed | tinet portio, | tatis transeat mulieri it, sed hoe virilis ad virilem sex- | sed qui fra- porcio, sed ad | veniat sed | sexus acquirit, um qui fratres | tres fuerint, | virilis sexus | ad virilem | hoc est, filii in fuerint tota | et ad virile} tota terral | sexum tota | ipsa hereditate terra perti- | sexu —_— tota proprietatis terres here-|succedunt. Sed neat. terra per-} sux possede- | ditas per- | ubi inter nepotes

tineat. ant. veniat. aut pro nepotes post longum tem- pus de alode ter- re contentio sus- citatur, non per stirpes sed per ca-

X __’ pita dividantur.

1 Text B reads: “ proprietas perveniat.” an ial

It seems clear that the first four paragraphs of the chapter, which admit women to a share in the inheritance, refer to private, movable property, and that, by the fifth paragraph, the inheritance of land was exclusively confined to males. We know that this exclusion of women from landed property was hardly a rule anywhere in the Frankish empire, and certainly not in the 6th century, but it obtained more or less afterwards, especially during the feudal period, when all the owners of landed property (¢.e., the tenants of fiefs) were lable to military service. We do not know when this exclusion of women from landed property began first to be applied and extended to an exclusion from the succession of thrones, as we do not read of such a notion until the middle of the 14th century during the controversy between Edward III. and Philip of Valois, when it was alleged to be derived from the Salic Law. It will be observed that the word Salica is not found in the oldest existing recension, but appears first in the second text, which some would ascribe to the end of the 6th century. Nor is the word found in the corresponding paragraph (56,4) of the Lex Ripuaria, which was based on the Salic Law. This addition (retained in all the other recensions, also in the so-called Lex Emen- data) was no doubt made for some purpose, but we do not know whether it was made by a scribe, nor what parti- cular notion it was intended to convey, nor whether it was this special word which gave rise to the idea of women being precluded from the succession of thrones.

The various texts of the Lex Salica, arranged in parallel columns, with a commentary on the Malberg glosses, were published in 1880, under the title Lex Saliea: the Ten Texts with the Glosses, and the Lex Emendata, ed. J. H. Hessels, with notes on the Frankish words in the Lex Salica by H. Kern, 4to, London, 1880; comp. also Gco. Waitz, Das alte Recht der salischen Franken, 8vo, Kiel,

1846 ; Rud. Sohm, Die frank. Reiehs- und Gerichts-Vi erfassung, 8Vvo, Weimar, 1871; Pardessus, Loi Salique, 4to, Paris, 1843.

Having treated of the Salic Law somewhat minutely, we need only say a few words about each of the other leges barbarorum, as they all present somewhat similar features, and hardly differ except in the time of their compilation, the amount of fines, the number and nature of the crimes, the number, rank, duties, and titles of the officers, &c.

(2) The Ripuarian Law, or Law of the Ripuarian Franks (Lex Ripuaria or Riboaria, L. Ripuariorum or fibuariorum, L. Ripu- ariensis or Ribuariensis), or inhabitants of the river-banks, was in foree among the East or Rhenish Franks in the Provincia Ribuaria, also called Ducatus or Pagus Ribuarius (see vol. ix. yp: 723), of which Cologne was the chief town. It has much in common with the Salie Law ; in fact, chapters 32-64 are, with the exception of some necessary modifications and additions, merely a repetition of the corresponding chapters of the Salie Law, and even follow the same arrangement, so that this part of the code is hardly anything but the Salic Law revised by order of the kings of Austrasia. Professor Sohm (whose edition, published in 1883 in Alon. Germ. Hist., Legg., vol. v. part 2, is based on nearly forty MSS., written between the 8th and the 11th eentury) divides the eighty-nine chapters of this code into four distinct portions, ascrib- ing the first portion (chaps. 1-31), which contains enactments not met with in the Salic Law, to the first part of the 6th century, the second (chaps. 32-64) to the second part of the same eentury (c. 575), the third (chaps. 65-79) to the 7th century, and the fourth (chaps. 80-89) to the beginning of the 8th century. This result practically agrees with the statements found in a prologue in certain MSS. (which contain some of the barbarian eodes), where it is said that the ‘‘ Leges Francorum (=Lex Ripuariorum), Alamannorum, ct Bajuvariorum ” were compiled at ChAlons-sur-Marne at the dicta- tion of Thierry I. (511-534), by wise men learned in the law of his kingdom, and that the codes werc afterwards revised and amended by Childebert I., Chlotar I., and Dagobert. Charlemagne promul- gated some additional ehapters to the Ripuarian Law in 803 (fon. Germ. Hist., Lege., i. 117). We may here observe that the Salic and Ripuarian Laws were to some extent introduced into England by the Norman Conquest, as appears from the Laws of Henry I., where we find enactments ‘‘secundum Legem Salicam ” and “ secun- dum Legem Ripuariam” ; comp. Leg. Hen. I., capp. 87, $$ 9, 10, 11 (word for word =L. Sal., tit. 43), 89, 90 § 4 (Sy ipso) and 83 § 5 (=L, Sal., tit. 55 § 4).

a

Sek te (haw

(3) With the Ripuarian Law the Lex Franeorum Chamavorum is intimately connected. The two MSS. in which it is preserved call it ‘‘ Notitia vel commemoratio de illa ewa (law) que se ad Amorem habet.” Amor is the district called Hamarlant, Hamalant, Ham- melant, Hamuland, in the 9th century. This name was derived from the Chamavi, a German state mentioned by Tacitus (Anz, xiii, 55; Germ.,c. 33, 34), which aftcrwards constituted a part of the Frankish empire. In the 9th century Hamalant was a part of the Pagus Ribuariorum. The whole code consists of only forty- eight short paragraphs, which are apparently nothing but state- ments made in answer to the ‘‘ missi dominici”” whom Charlemagne despatched to the various nations of his empire to inquire into their condition and to codify their respective laws. It may therefore be ascribed to the beginning of the 9th century (802 or 803). Professor Sohm has published it as an appendix to the Lex Ripuaria (Mon. Germ. Hist., Legg., vol. v. part 2, p. 269).

(4) The Lex Alamannorwm was (according to the prologue men- tioned above) first compiled by the East-Frankish king Thierry (511-584), and afterwards improved and renewed by Childebert I. (511-558), Chlotar I. (558), and Dagobert I. (622-638). Although not much reliance can be placed on this statement, the researclies of Professor Merkel, who edited the code from forty-eight MSS. (Mon. Germ. Hist., Legg., vol. iii.), show that some kind of code called Pactus (of which he published three fragments) was com- piled for the Alamanni in the reign of Chlotar I. (537-561). Under Chlotar II. (613-622) a more complete code, consisting of seventy- five chapters, was compiled, which was revised under Dagobert (628) and augmented with chapters 76-97; it was again altered and angmented under the Alamannic duke Landfrid (d. 730), whose work Merkel calls Lex Alamannorum Lantfridana, and finally aug- mented in the Carolingian period (hence called Lex Alamannorum Karolina sive reformata), perhaps early in the 9th century. The code consists of 97 (in some MSS. 98, 99, 105, and 107) chapters.

(5) The Lex Bajuvariorum, or Pactus Bawarorum, had the same origin as the Lex Alamannorum, if we accept the somewhat un- reliable statement of the prologue spoken of above. It seems probable that some kind of code was compiled for the Bavarians during the reigns of Clovis’s sons. Those paragraphs which treat of ecclesiastical affairs and the position of the

Bavarian dukes to- wards the Frankish kings (tit. il. chap. xx. § 3) have clearly been inserted in Dagobcrt's time, if not later. There is a great similarity between certain provisions of the Bavarian and the Alamannic codes, and also some paragraphs of the former have been derived from the earliest recension of the Lex Wisigothorum. Some addi- tions were made by Duke Thassilo II. (763-775), some by Charle- magne (803), some by King Louis (c. 906), and, finally, some by Duke Henry II. (end of 10th ccntury). The emperor Henry III. is alleged to lave granted the law of the Bavarians to the Hunga- rians in 1044. It consists of twenty-one chapters, each containing several paragraphs. Professor Merkel distinguishes three different recensions of the code and various additions, which he edited in 1863 from thirty-five MSS. for the Mon. Germ. Hist., Legg., iti. p. 188 sq.

: (6) For the Lex Frisionwm, see vol. ix. p. 789.

(7) The Lex Angliorum et Werinorum, hoc est, Thuringorum, con- sists of seventeen chapters. Early editions of this code contained some legal decisions identical with those of Judge Wlemarus in the appendix to the Lex Frisionum (L. Angl. Jud. Wlem., 1, 2, 6, 7=L. Fris., 22, §§ 54, 55, 86; Addit., i. 18), from which circum- stance it was inferred that the compilation, or at least the revision, of both codes took place at one and the same time (802-808). But Richthofen, who edited the work in Mon. Germ. Hist. (Legg., y. p. 103), and who rejects these legal decisions of Wlemarus as not 'belonging to this code at all, is of opinion (p. 115) that the code was not written even at the end of the 9th century. Opinions have differed also as to the region where the law originated. Some ascribe it to the Angli and Werini, who inhabited the Holstein and Schleswig regions ; others attribute it to Thuringia propcr; and in more recent times it has been ascribed to Thuringia on the left bank of the Rhine (=South Holland, Brabant, &c.). It was also argued that the code must havc originated in a region where Frisian and Frankish elements had become mixed, both in language and in law, and where the Frankish preponderated. That the code originated in South Holland was inferred from its agreement in some respects with the Lex Chamavorum, which originated in the region of the lower Rhine and the Yssel. And the law may have come to be in force among the allied tribes on the Elbe in northern Thuringia, even though it originated in South Holland. If it originated in Thuringia, it must have been transplanted to the

Holstein and Schleswig regions; and it was used by the Danes, as is clear from Canute bringing it over to England when he con- quered the country in 1013.1 But in England the code was simply called “ Lex Werinorum, h.e., Thuringorum,” but no longer “ Anglorum,” as the Danes called the whole Anglo-Saxon popula-

1 Comp. Canuti Consttt. de Foresta, c. 33, *“*Emendet secundum pretium

hominis mediocris, quod secundum Legem Werinorum, 7.e., Thuringorum [=L. Angl. and Werin., i, 2] est 200 solidorum.”

tion which they had conquered “Angli,” and the law which they found in force Lex Anglorum ” (Legg. Edw. Conf., c. 30). Hence it has been concluded that what was called in England Lex Danornm is nothing but the Lex Werinorum. When the Normans conquered England in 1066 they soon recognized that this Lex Danorum and the Law of the Norwegians (Lex Noricoruin or Norwegensium), who had migrated to England in earlier times, were practically one and the same. Hence William I., declaring that the population which he had brought over with him from Normandy werc also originally Norwegians, resolved to abrogate the Anglo-Saxon laws and to leave only that of the Danes in force (Legg. Edw. Conf., c. 30),—a plan which only the most persevering entreaties of the Anglo-Saxon barons could induce him to abandon. The latest edition of this code (1875) is by K. F. von Richthofen, who is decidedly against the South Holland origin of the law.

(8) The Lea Saxonwm consists of nineteen chapters or sixty-six articles or paragraphs, and appears to be composed of three essential parts, the oldest of which (arts. 1-28) seems to have existed before the later additions known as the Capitulare Paderbornense (de partibus Saxoniz) of 785 (or 777) and the Capitulare Saxonicum of 797 (in which a ‘‘Lex Saxonum” and ‘‘Kwa Saxonum” are referred to; comp. chaps. 38 and 7, 8, 10); the second part (arts. 24-60) must have bcen compiled after that date; and the third (arts. 61-66) was eaeey added in 798, when Charlemagne had removed a part of the Saxon nobility as hostages from their own country ; while the whole was united into one code at the diet of Aix-la-Chapelle in 802-803 (Merkel,

Zea Saxonwm, Berlin, 1853). The enactments of this code are far more severe than those of any other of the barbarian laws, and it often inflicts capital punish- ment for crimes which the other laws punish with mere pecuniary fines, as, for instance, theft and incendiarism. This rigour Charle- magne softened by reserving to himself the right of asylum and pardon, but it was cxpressly retained and granted anew by Conrad II, (1024-1089). The code was edited in 1875 by Von Richthofen in Mon. Germ. Hist., Legg., v. p. 1 sq.

(9) The Leges Anglo-Saxonwm are for a great part written in Anglo-Saxon, and as such may be reckoned among the most ancient monuments of the Teutonic language. They appeared mostly in the form of constitutions promulgated by the various kings (some- what like the Frankish capitularies), with the co-opcration of an assembly of leading men (‘‘sapientes,” Beda, H. Z., ii. 5), and fre- quently also of the clergy (coneiliwm, synodus). They may be divided into two classes,—secular and ecclesiastical laws. Some- times they are mere judicial sentences (dém) or treaties of peace (frid). The earliest laws we have are those of Athelbert, king of Kent (c. 561) ; then follow those of Hlodhaer (c. 678) and Eadric (c. 685), Wihtraed (c. 691), Ine (after 688), Alfred (after 871), Eadward (after 901), Atthelstan (after 924), Eadmund (after 941), Edgar (after 959), Aithelred II. (after 978), the Danish Canute (after 1017), William the Conqueror (after 1066). Then follow two collections of laws, the so-called “ Leges Edwardi Confessoris” and ‘‘Leges Henrici I.,” which, drawing from the Anglo-Saxon Law, represent the modifications which had been made in the earliest laws during the Norman period, and the introduction of new elements derived from the Salic and Ripuarian Laws. Besides these there are a good many canons and other ecclesiastical ordi- nances enacted under the archbishops Theodore and Ecgbert and King Edgar, &c. ; comp. ENGLAND, vol. viii. pp. 285, 303. There is an edition of these laws by B. Thorpe (fol., London, 1840), another by Dr Reinh. Schmid (Die Gesetze der Angel- Sachsen, 2d ed., 8vo, Leipsic, 1858).

(10) The compilation of the Lex Burgundionwm is usually as- cribed to Gundobald (d. 516), whence it is also called Lea Gundo- bada (corrupted Gombata, Fr. Loi Gombette). It consists, according to its first prologue, of a collection of constitutions cnacted partly by the earlier kings of Burgundy,

partly by Gundobald, and revised by a general Burgundian diet. This agrees with the statements contained in its second prologue, which itself may be 1egarded as an independent constitution or edict to the counts and judges re- garding the introduction of the law. In the rubric which it bears in the MSS. it is said that it was promulgated at Lyons on 29th March in the second ycar of Gundobald (some MSS. read Sigis- mund). As the year of Gundobald's accession is supposed to be 465, the promulgation must have taken place in 467, or, if we assume that the year is meant in which Gundobald became sole king of Burgundy (478), the date of the law would be 480, while it would be 517 if we adopt the reading ''Sigismnnd " of some of the MSS. But as the law in its present state contains decrees both of Gundobald and of Sigismund we can only regard the whole as a compilation effected by the latter. In early editions the law was divided into eighty-nine chapters, with two additamenta, the first of which (consisting of twenty chapters) was ascribed to Sigismund, the second (of thirteen chapters) to his brother and successor, the last king of the Burgundians, Godomar. But Professor Bluhme (who published the law in 1863, in Mon. Germ. Hist., Legg., iii. 497) places chap. i. (De causis itineribus et aliis servitutibus) and chap. xix. (De liberali causa) of the first additamentum as chaps.

xvii. and xliv. in ''Papianus" ; chap. xx. as chap. evi. (extrava- gant) and its remaining chapters as chapters Ixxxix. tocv. The second additamentum is placed as chap. cvii., the old chap. lxxxix. as chap. cviii., and a new ehapter cix. (a decree of Sigismund De collectis" of 516) added. It was Gundobald's intention that his law should decide all cases between Burgundians and between them and Romans ; in all other cases the latter would only use Roman law (comp. second preface), of which the Lex Burgundionum con- tains many traces, and even the Burgundians were allowed to use Roman law (comp. L. Burg., titt. 43, 60, 55 § 2). { the Burgundian Law is purer than that of all the preceding bar- barian codcs, and we find in it a distinct tendency to treat Romans with greater leniency and to make.them equal to the Burgundians in the eye of the law. Through Gundobald's political relations with Alaric II., the Lex Burgundionum influenced the West-Gothic legislation, of which traces are found in the Lex Wisigothorum and the

interpretatio to Alaric's Breviarium. Charlemagne promul- gated in 813 a Capitulare Aquisgranum (A/on., Legg., i. 817) re- garding the Lex Burgundionum, though the text was not altered. Agobart, bishop of Lyons, complained to Louis the Pious respecting certain abuses caused by the Burgundian Law (Bouquet, vi. 356), but no remedy was effected. On the other hand, towards the end of the 9th century the law had gradually fallen into disuse like all the other barbarian laws, thongh it is said that the emperor Conrad II. revived and confirmed it. See, besides Professor Bluhme's edition, Hubé, Hist. de la formation de la lot Bowrguignonne, Paris, 1867.

(10a) In the second preface to the Lex Burgundionum (published in 502) the Roman subjects of the Burgundian king were promised a codification of their own laws. This work appears to have been promptly executed and was published under the title Lex Romana Lurgundionum, perhaps before the compilation of the Breviarium Alarici (506). This colleetion is also known as Papianus, of which uame (found already in MSS. of the 9th century) no satisfactory explanation has hitherto been offered, some, perhaps wrongly, sup- posing that it is a corruption of the name of Papinianus, the Roman jurist. It was published by Professor Bluhme as an appendix to the Lex Burgundionum (Mon. Germ. Hist., Legg., iii. p. 579).

(11) As regards the Lex Wisigothorum (also called Forum Judi- cum, Judicum Liber, Forum Judiciale, &c.), we know with certainty from Isidore of Seville (Hist. Goth. Hisp., 504) that Eurie (466-483) was the first Gothic king who gave written laws to the West Goths. It would therefore be erroneous to ascribe (with Mariana, Hist. de Espafa, v. 6) their first written laws to Euric's son, Alaric Te, though it seems probable that the latter, by adding his own laws to those of his father, was really the first author of a West-Gothic codification. Isidore refers to the collection of laws (as it had been preserved up to the end of the 5th and the beginning of the 6th century) as the Laws of Euric, though we must assume that the statutes of the kings who succeeded Euric had already been added to his collection. Isidore also tells us (Hist. Goth. Hisp., 606-624) that Leovigild (d. 586) revised Euric's Laws. As Isidore was bishop of Seville from 599 to 636, and may therefore be said to have been a contemporary of Leovigild, his testimony may be accepted as conclusive, though a much later but

untrustworthy tradition would have it that the revision was executed by Leovi- gild's son, Reccared I. (the first Catholic king of the Goths), who died in 601, whereby the whole population of Spain was equalized in point of law. According to Spanish traditions of the 12th century, the West-Gothic collection of laws was again revised, under Sisenand, by the fourth council of Toledo (633), a revision on which Isidore seems to have exercised some influence. It is un- certain, however, whether the code was then systematically arranged and divided into twelve books, as we now have it, or whether this was done under Chindaswinth (d. 652) or under his son Receswinth (d. 672). The several books of the code are divided (in imitation of the codes of Theodosius and Justinianus) into tituli, and those again into ehapters or constitutions. From Leovigild down to Egica (d. 701) and his son and coregent Witiza (d. ¢. 701, the last king of the Goths before the invasion of the Moors) every constitu- tion bears the name of the king who promulgated it, while those dating from before Leovigild have the word "antiqua" prefixed to them instead of the name of a king. This designation is said to have been commenced by Erwig (680-687), who thereby wished to prevent the clergy from claiming the code as their work. Of the texts which existed before the fourth council of Toledo only one small fragment has come down to us, the Paris National Library (No. 1278). Somme regard this as the remainder of the supposed recension of Reccared I. ; others regard it as a fragment of the Laws of Euric, though it could in no case be the Laws of Euric themselves, but at most their codification by Alaric ir The fragment was known to the Benedictines (Nouv. Traité de Diplom., i. 483, iii. 52, 152, note 1), and was published in 1847 by Professor Bluhme (Die Westgoth. Antiqua oder das Gesetzbuch Reecared's I, Halle). The text is undoubtedly older than those enactments which we find designated as ‘‘ antiqua," so that it could hardly be placed Iater than the commencement of the

The Latinity of

in a palimpsest preserved in.

S A LI C. 4iiew W

6th century, z.¢c., shortly after the compilation of the Breviarium Alarici (506). Hence the text called "antiqua" may be regarded as a modification of

that of the Paris palimpsest, and was probably not made before the end of thé 6th or the beginning of the 7th century. Roman law, which is so conspicuous in the later text, may already be traced in that of the palimpsest (taken from the Breviarium Alarici), and also in the ‘‘antiqua” constitutions, in which we find even traces of Justinian’s law. The Lex Wisi- gothorum (the first code in which Roman law and Teutonic law were systematically combined) was no doubt regarded, after Leovigild and Receared I., as a code for the Goths as well as for the Romans, without abolishing the Breviarium among the Romans. But King Chindaswinth ordained that the Lex Wisigothorum should be the sole code for both nations, prohibiting at the same time the use of the Roman law, thereby materially promoting the ainalgamation of the two nations. It remained in force in Spain throughout the Middle Ages, and was translated into Spanish (Castilian) under Ferdinand III. (1229-1234, or 1241) under the title Fuero Juzgo, or Fuero de Cordova.

Editions: (1) Fuero Judzgo en Latin e Castellano cotejado con los mas antiguos y preciosos Codices por la Real Academia Espaiiola, Madrid, 1815, fol. ; (2) in Portugalie Monumenta Historica, vol. i., Lisbon, 1856, fol.

(lla) Here also we may mention a Lex Romana compiled for the Roman population, just as in Burgundy. It is also known as Liber Legum, Liber Legum Romanorum, and as Lex Theodostt or Corpus Theodosianum. It received the latter name because the Codex Theodosianus served as its basis. It imcludes also excerpts from novellz of Theodosius, Valentinian, Marcian, Majorian, Severus, and from the Jnstitutiones of Gaius, the Sententix of Paulus, the Codices Gregorianus and Hermogenianus, &e. Ina MS. of the 10th century it is called Breviarium, and the title Breviarium Alariei or Alaricianwm has become general since the 16th century. The com- pilers of the Breviarium are not known, but it was published in

the twenty-second year of Alaric II., ¢.e., on 5th February 506, at

Aire (Atures) in Gascony. It was also used in other western pro- vinces of the Roman empire, and was imitated, excerpted, and altered in other places. One recension, probably dating from the 9th eentury, is known (from the

place where the MS. was found) as the Lex Romana Utinensis. The best edition is that of G. Haenel, Lea Romana Wisigothorum, Berlin, 1847.

(11b) We have also a code for the Eastern Goths compiled by command of Theodoric after 506, but before 526, and known as Ldictwm Theodoriei. It consists of 155 chapters (with a few addi- tions), which are in reality an epitome of Roman law. It was published in 1875, in Aon. Germ. Hist., Legg., v. p. 145 sq., ed. by Professor Bluhme.

(12) Leges Langobardorwm.—The first trace of Lombardic law is an edict of Rothar, consisting of 388 chapters, and promulgated at a diet held at Pavia on 22d November 643. This was followed by laws of Grimoald (668), nine chapters ; Liutprand (713-735), six books ; Ratchis (746), nine chapters ; Aistulphus (e. 755), fourteen chapters. Additions were also made by Charlemagne and _ his successors down to Lothair II. In the manuscripts the texts are arranged, some in a chronological, some in a systematical order. The latter arrangement is already found in a MS. of the 9th century. The systematic collection, which was used chiefly in Bologna at lectures and for quotations and was known as Lombarda (Liber Langobardz s. Lombardz), appears to have been made in the 11th century. The text as it exists at present is very corrupt, as a number of glosses (some of great antiquity) and formule, added in the first instance by those who had to use the code to explain certain enactments of the law, afterwards found their way into the’ text. Towards the end of the 12th and down to the beginning of the 16th century, various glosses and commentaries on the Lom- bard made their appearance. The first commentaries were those of Ariprand and of Albertus (second half of 12th century). The later commentators (Carolus de Tocco, ¢. 1200; Andreas of Barulo, é. 1230; Blasius de Morcone of Naples, before 1338 ; Boherius and Johannes Nenna of Bari, ¢. 1540) refer frequently to Roman law. Of the Edictum Rotharis a Greek translation was made, of which only fragments have been preserved (comp. C. E. Zacharia, Frag- menta versionis Greee Legum Rotharis, Langob. regis, ex. cod. Paris. Gree., No. 1348, Heidelberg, 1835).

Editions: (1) C. Baudus a Vesme, Edicta regum Langobardorum, Turin, 1855, reprinted by J. F. Neigebaur, Munich, 1855, 1856; (2) Mon. Germ. Hist., Lege., iv. (1868), by Friedr. Bluhme and Alfr. Boretius; (3) Fr.

Bluhine, Edictus cetereque Langobardorum leges, Hanover, 1870; comp. Merkel, Geschichte des Lombardenrechts, Berlin, 1850.

(13) The Leges Wallix do not belong to the Teutonic family of codes ; but it is not out of place to mention them here. There is, comparatively speaking, no great distance of time between the leges barbarorum and the Laws of ‘Wales, while the contents of the latter show a similar, nay alinost the same, idea of law as the former ; and, apart from the fact that Wales became permanently connected at the end of the 13th century with a Teutonic people, the Anglo-Saxons, it has been noticed that in Wales Roman and Germanic, but no traces of a specific Welsh, law are found. King Howel Dda (i.c., the Good), who died in 948, is the originator of

the Welsh code. In the preface it is stated that Howel, ‘‘ seeing the laws and customs of the country violated with impunity, sum- moned the archbishop Menevia, other bishops and the chief of the clergy, the nobles of Wales, and six persons (four laymen and two clerks) from each coniot, to meet at a place called Y Ty Gwyn ar Dav, or the white house.on the river Tav, repaired thither in person, selected from the whole assembly twelve of the most experienced persous, added to their number a clerk or doctor of laws, named Bligywryd, and to these thirteen confided the task of examining, retaining, expounding, and abrogating. Their compilation was, when completed, read to the assembly, and, after having been con- firmed, proclaimed. Howel caused three copies of them to be written, one of which was to accompany the court for daily use, another was deposited in the court at Aberfraw, and a tlurd at Dinevwr. The bishops denounced sentence of excommunication against all transgressors, and soon after Howel himself went to Rome attended by the archbishop of St David’s, the bishops of Bangor and St Asaph, and thirteen other personages. The laws were recited before the pope and confirmed by his authority, upon which Howel and his companions returned home.” All this conld not have been effected before Howel had subjected Wales to his own rule, therefore uot before 948. We have three different recen- sions of the code, one for Venedotia or North Wales, another for Dimetia or South Wales, a third for Gwent or North-East Wales. We do not know liow far these recensions were uniform in the

beginning ; but a variance must have occurred shortly after, for the manuscripts in which the codes are preserved differ greatly from each other. The code was originally compiled in Welsh, but we have no older MSS. than the 12th century, and even the earliest ones (especially tlose of the Venedotia recension) contain many interpolations. The Latin translations of the code would seem to be very old, though even here we have no earlier MSS. (belonging to the Dimetia recension) than the 13th eentury. The Latin text is much shorter than the Welsh, but we do not know whether this abridgment was made on purpose, or whether the translation is an imitation of an earlier text. The texts preseut only a few traces of Roman law, which, however, are evidently additions of a later period. The whole body of Welsh laws was published in one volume by An. Owen under the direction of the commissioners on the public records (fol., London, 1841).

For further information on the barbarian codes, see Heinr. Zoepfl, Deutsche Rechtsgeschichte, 8vo, Brunswick, 1860, vol. i. p. 8 sg., whose clear and able treatment of the subject has been taken as the basis of paragraphs 4-13 above ; comp. also Stobbe, Geschichte der deutschen Rechtsquellen, 8vo, Gis,”

1860.

SALICYLIC ACID, an organic acid found in nature, in the free state, in the flowers of the meadow-sweet (Spirea Ulmaria, L.) and, combined with methylic ether, in the leaves of the wintergreen (Gaultheria procumbens, L.) and Andromeda Leschenaultit, in the bark of the sweet birch (Betula lenta, L.), and in several species of Viola, It was discovered in 1838 by Piria, who prepared it artificially by the decomposition of Satctn (q.v.). It is remarkable as being the first organic compound occurring in nature which has been prepared artificially on the large scale as a commercial article. During the last few years it has been extensively used in medicine as a remedy for acute rheuniatism, either alone or in the form of its sodium salt. Possessing powerful antiseptic properties and being poisonous only in large doses (the medicinal dose being from 5 to 30 grains), it is capable of manifold uses in the arts and manufactures. In the proportion of from 1 to 10 per cent. it prevents the development of bacteria in fluids containing them, and if added to the extent of 1 part in 60 it will destroy their life. It

also kills Zorula, and prevents the souring of beerand milk. It hinders the chemical changes brought about by the action of vegetable ferments or enzymes such as amygdalin and sinnigrin, and consequently can prevent the formation of essential oil of almonds or of oil of mustard, &c. Plants watered with its solution speedily die. The addition of a little of the acid to glue renders it more tenacious ; skins to be used for making leather do not undergo decomposition if steeped in a dilute

1 There is no historical foundation for the legendary laws of a prince Dymal (or Dyvnwal) Moel Mud, nor for the Laws of Marsia, which are said to belong to a period before the Roman invasion, even so early as 400 years before Christ. An English translation by the side of the Welsh text of the so-called triads of Dyvnwal Moel Mud is given by Owen, The Ancient Laws of Wales, London, 1841, p. 680.

solution ; butter containing a small quantity of it may be kept sweet for months even in the hottest weather. It also prevents the mouldiness of preserved fruits and .has been found useful in the manufacture of vinegar. Unless the perfectly pure acid be employed the addition of salicylic acid to articles of food must be considered dangerous, some persons being peculiarly susceptible to its action.

Salicylie acid is met with in commerce in two forms, ‘natural ”

and “artificial.” The former occurs as handsome prismatie crystals resembling those of strychnin, but considerably larger, usually about half an inch in length ; the latter is met with as light minute crystals bearing some resemblance to sulphate of quinine, but smaller. The natural acid is prepared by decomposing the volatile oil of wintergreen or of the sweet birch by a strong solution of potassiun hydrate, and treating the resulting potassium salicylate with hydro- chloric acid, which liberates the salicylie acid. The artificial acid is prepared according to Robbe’s patent process by passing carbonic anhydride through sodium phenoxide (carbolate) heated in a retort, with certain precautions respecting temperature to prevent the for- mation of para-hydroxybenzoie acid. It is subsequently purified and recrystallized. An improvement has recently been made on this process by substituting

sodium phenol for sodium phenoxide, the whole of the phenol being in this case converted into salicylic acid. Formerly this acid was met with in commerce contaminated with phenol, rosolic, and para-oxybenzoie acids, but is now prepared in a perfectly pure condition. The presence of the first-named impurity may be detected by its odour and by the melting-point being lower than when pure, the second by the pink tinge it com- miunicates to the acid, and the third by its comparative insoluhility in boiling chloroform, by the greater solubility of its calcium salt, and by its giving a yellow precipitate with ferric chloride. Sali- ceylic acid when pure should be free from odour and should dissolve completely in alcohol, and its solution, when spontaneously evapo- rated without contact with air, should yield crystals having colour- less points. It has a specific gravity of 1:45 and fuses at 155° C. (311° Fahr.); above that temperature it is converted into phenol and carbonic anhydride. Its chemical formula is C,H, (OH)CO,H. It is soluble in 760 parts of cold water, in 4 of rectified spirits of wine, and in 200 of glycerin, also in olive and castor oils, in melted fats and vaseline. Alkaline salts of citric, acetie, and phosphoric acids render it more soluble in water, possibly from the base com- bining with it. An aqueous solution of salicylie acid gives a deep violet colour with ferric salts. The methyl, ethyl, and amy] ethers of the acid are used in perfumery, and the calcium salt if kept for some time and then distilled with water yiclds a liquid which has a strong odonr of roses (Dingler, Polytechn. Journ., ccexvii. ». 136). : When administered internally salicylic acid rapidly lowers the bodily temperature and reduces the pulse rate, blood pressure, and rapidity of respiration, causing death when given iu excessive doses by paralysis of the respiratory organs. It is excreted in the urine partly as salicylic and partly as salicyluric acid, communicating to it a brown colour by reflected and a grecu one by transmitted light. When taken for some time it produces deafness, giddiness, headache, and noises in the ears, like quinine. Taken internally in medicinal doses it possesses the same properties as salicin and sodium salicylate (see below), but is much less used in medicine. Applied externally, it has a marked action on thickened epidermis, and is hence used for the cure of eorns and warts, to relieve pain and destroy fetor in ulcerated cancer, and also in certain skin diseases in which an antiseptic is useful, as in psoriasis, eczema, intertrigo, lupus, and ringworm. Taken as snuff it relieves hay fever.

Salicylate of sodium (NaC,H;0,) is more frequently used in medi- cine than salicylie acid because less irritating to the mucous mem- branes. Itis prepared by neutralizing a solution of sodium carbonate with salicylic acid. It occurs in commerce as small white crystalline plates with a slight pearly lustre, having a sweetisli saline taste and mildly alkaline reaction. It is soluble in 1‘5 parts of water and 6 of alcohol at 15° C. (59° Fahr.), but much more so in boiling water and alcohol. It is chiefly employed medicinally as a remedy for acute rheumatism, in which it lowers the temperature and allays pain. It is also useful in headache and in phlegmasia alba; its cholagogic action and its power of rendering the bile more fluid indicate its usefulness in the treatment of gall stones. It has been found of service in Meniére’s disease. Alcohol or other stimulants are often given with it to prevent the depressing influence on the heart’s action which is eaused by large doses. Ammonia is, how- ever, unfit for this purpose (Martindale, Extra Pharmacopeia, 3:1 ed., p. 57). Like salicylic acid, it produces when given in full doses subjective auditory phenomena, but these symptoms are relieved by the use of ergot and hydrobromie acid. In a few persons it causes most disagreeable visions whenever the eyes are shut, and in others it has even produced delirium. In its action on bacteria it is about one-third less powerful than salicylic acid.

Xe —— 25

218

SALIERI, Anronto (1750-1825), dramatic composer, was born at Legnano, Italy, August 19, 1750. In 1766 he was taken to Vienna by a former ‘ Kapellmeister ” named Gassmann, who introduced him to the emperor Joseph, and fairly prepared the way for his subsequent success. His first opera, Le Donne Letterate, was produced at the Burg-Theater in 1770. On Gassmann’s death in 1774, he received the appointment of Kapellmeister and com- poser to the court; and on the death of Bonno in 1788 he was advanced to the dignity of ‘‘ Hofkapellmeister.” He held his offices with honour for fifty years, though he made frequent visits to Italy and Paris, and composed for many important European theatres. His chef euvre was Zarare (afterwards called Axur, Re Ormus), a work which was preferred by the public of Vienna to Mozart’s Don Giovanni, though it is, in

reality, quite unworthy of comparison with that marvellous inspiration. It was first produced at Vienna, June 8, 1787, and strangely enough, considering the poverty of its style, it was revived at Leipsic in 1846, though only for a single representation. His last opera was Die Neger, produced in 1804. After this he devoted himself to the composi- tion of church music, for which he had a very decided talent. Salieri lived on friendly terms with Haydn, but was a bitter enemy to Mozart, whose death he was sus- pected of having produced by poison ; but no particle of evidence was ever forthcoming to give colour to the odious accusation. He retired from office, on his full salary, in 1824, and died at Vienna May 7, 1825. None of Salieri's works have survived the change of fashion. He gave lessons In composition both to Cherubini and Beethoven ; the latter dedicated to him his Three Sonatas for Piano- forte and Violin, Op. 12.

SALIT. See Mars.

SALISBURY, or New Sarum, a city and municipal and parliamentary borough, the county town of Wiltshire, Eng- land, is situated in a valley at the confluence of the Upper Avon, the Wily, the Bourne, and the Nadder, on the Great Western and South Western Railways, 80 miles west-south- west of London. The city at the beginning was regularly laid out by Bishop Poore and still retains substantially its original plan. In the centre is the market-place, a large and handsome square, from which the streets branch off at right angles, forming a series of quadrangles facing a thoroughfare on each side, and enclosing in the interior a space for courts and gardens. The streams flowed un- covered through the streets till the visitation of cholera in 1849 led to their being arched over. The cathedral of St Mary was originally founded on the hill fortress of Old Sarum by Bishop Herman, when he removed the see from Sherborne between 1075 and 1078. The severe drought in 1834 caused the old foundations to be dis- covered. Its total length was 270 feet ; the nave was 150 feet by 72, the transept 150 feet by 70; and the choir was 60 feet in length. In 1218 Bishop Poore procured a papal bull for the removal of the cathedral to New Sarum, For this various reasons have been given,—the despotism of the governor, the exposure to high winds which drowned the voice of the officiating priest, the narrow space for houses, and the difficulty of procuring water. Until the Reforma- tion service still continued to be performed in the old church. A wooden

chapel of St Mary was commenced at New Sarum in the Easter-tide of 1219, and the founda- tions of the new cathedral were laid by Bishop Poore, 28th April 1220. It was dedicated at Michaelmas 1258, the whole cost having amounted to 40,000 marks, or £26,666. The cloisters, of great beauty, and the late Early English chapter-house were added by Bishop Walter de la Wyle (1263-74). The tower from near the ridge was built in the Decorated style by Bishop Wyville about 1331,

and the spire was added between 1335 and 1375. It is the highest in England (404 feet), and is remarkable both for its beauty of proportion and the impression it conveys of lightness and slenderness. The chapel built by Bishop Beauchamp (1450-82), that built by Lord Hungerford in 1476, and the fine campanile were all ruthlessly demolished by the architect James Wyatt, 1782-1791. The cathedral as a whole is a unique specimen of Early English, having the advantage of being practically completed as it now stands within a remarkably short period. For lightness, simplicity, grace, and unity of design it is not surpassed in England. It is in the form of a Greek or double cross, and comprises a nave of ten bays with aisles and a lofty northern porch ; two transepts, one of three and the other of two bays, while both have eastern aisles for chapels ; a choir of three bays with aisles; a presbytery of three bays with aisles ; and a lady-chapel of two bays. The total length of the building is 449 feet, the length of the nave being 229 feet 6 inches, of the choir 151 feet, and of the lady-chapel 68 feet 6 inches, while the principal transept has a length of 203 feet 10 inches, and the eastern transept of 143 feet. The width of the nave is 34 feet 4 inches, and of the principal transept 50 feet 4 inches. The library, built by Bishop Jewel (1560-71), contains about 5000 volumes and several MSS. of great interest. In the close, occupying an area of half a square mile, and possessing a finely-shaded mall, are the episcopal palace, an irregular structure begun by Bishop Poore but of various dates, the deanery house, and other buildings. The three parish churches are St Martin’s, with square tower and spire, and possessing a Norman font and portions of Early English in the choir ; St Thomas’s (of Canterbury), founded in 1240 as a chapel to the cathedral, and rebuilt in the 15th century, a handsome building in the Perpendicular style; and St Edmund’s, founded as the collegiate church of secular canons in

1268, but subse- quently rebuilt in the Perpendicular style and lately restored at a cost of £6000. The residence of the college of secular priests is now occupied by the modern ecclesiastical college of St Edmund's, founded in 1873. St John's chapel, founded by Bishop Bingham (1228-46), is now occupied by a dwelling-house. There is a beauti- ful chapel attached to the St Nicholas hospital, founded in the reign of Richard II. The poultry cross, or high cross, an open hexagon with six arches and a central pillar, was erected by Lord Montacute before 1335. In the market-place is Marochetti's statue to Lord Herbert of Lea. The principal secular buildings are the court-house, the market-house, the Hamilton Hall, the county jail, and the theatre. Among the specimens of ancient domestic architecture still remaining may be mentioned the banqueting hall of J. Halle, wool merchant, built in 1470, and Audley House, belonging also to the 15th cen- tury, and repaired in 1881 as a diocesan church house. There are a large number of educational and other charities, including the bishop's grammar school, Queen Elizabeth's grammar school, Talman's girls' school, the St Nicholas hospital, founded in the reign of Richard II., and Trinity hospital, founded by Agnes Bottenham in 1379. At one time the city possessed woollen and cutlery manufactures, but these have now declined ; and, although the manufac- ture of hardware and of boots and shoes is still carried on, it is on its shops for the supply of the neighbouring villages and its agricultural trade that it now principally depends. The population of the city and municipal borough (area 616 acres) in 1871 was 12,903, and that of the parliamentary borough (area 676 acres) 13,839; in 1881 the numbers were 14,792 and 15,680.

Salisbury and its neighbourhood are remarkably rich in relics of antiquity. To say nothing of Old Sarum and the scanty ruins of

the royal ag of Clarendon, Milford Hill and Fisherton are two of the richest fields in the country for paleolithic implements. In the Blackmore Museum Salisbury possesses one of the finest colleetions of prehistorie antiquities in England; its splendid gathering of objeets from the mounds in the New World is pro- bably unsurpassed. The fortress of Old Sarum (Searobyrig, t. ¢., Sear-borough, probably ‘“‘the dry eity”; Sarisberie in Domesday) is of

very early date, and was undoubtedly held by the Belge before it beeame an important fortress of the Romans (Sorbiodunum). It 6eeupied a conical mound rising abruptly from the valley, and its fossee and ramparts, whieh still remain, are about a mile in eirenm- ference. Various Roman roads branehed out from it in different directions. Near it Cynric won a great vietory over the Britons in 552. It was burned and saeked by Swend in 1003. In the great plain beneath William the Conqueror in 1070 reviewed his army after his victories ; and it was here that he took the oath of fealty from all English landholders ou the completion of Domesday in 1086. Old Sarum eontiunued to have the privilege of returning two members to parliament until 1832, although latterly not a single house remained within its limits. New Sarum grew up round the new eathedral founded in the 13th century. In 1227 it reeeived from Henry III. a eharter conferring on it the same freedom and liberties as Winchester. The duke of Buekingham was exeeuted at Salisbury in 1484. During the Civil War it was held alternately by both parties. Salisbury first sent members to parliament in 1295, and various parliaments have been held there. The Redistribution Aet of 1885 deprived it of one of its two vepreseutatives.

See Description of Salisbury Cathedral, 1719 and 1787; Rawlin, Salisbury, 1718; M. E. Walcott, Memorials of Salisbury, 1865; W. Henry Jones, Fasti Ec- clesiw Sarisberiensis, 1879; W. Henry Jones, Diocesan History of Salisbury, 1880.

SALISBURY, Rozpert, Earn or. See CEcIx. SALIVA, SALIVARY GLANDS. See Nutrition. SALLEE. See Rasir.

SALLUST (86-34 B.c.). Sallust is the generally accepted modern form of the name of the Roman his- torilan Caius Sallustius Crispus. 86 B.c. was the year of his birth, and the old Sabine town of Amiternum at the foot of the Apennines was his birthplace. of a good plebeian family, and entered public life at a comparatively early age, obtaining first the questorship, and then being elected tribune of the people in 52 B.c., that year of political turbulence in which Clodius was killed by Milo. Sallust was opposed to Milo and to Pompey’s party and to the old aristocracy of Rome. From the first he was a decided partisan of Czesar’s, and to Cesar he owed such political advancement as he attained. Unless he was the victim of violent

party misrepresentation, he seems to have been morally worth- less. In 50 B.c. the censors exercised their power of removing him from the senate on the ground of gross immorality. A few years afterwards, however, no doubt through Czesar's influence, he was restored to his position, and in 46, in which year Cesar was for the third time consul, he was pretor, and was with Ceesar in his African campaign, which ended in the decisive victory of Thapsus over the remains of the Pompeian party and in the suicide of Cato. Sallust remained for a time in Africa as governor of the province of Numidia, which, it would seem, Cesar gave him as a reward for good service. It was said that he enriched himself at the expense of the provincials, but the charge, as far as we know, was never substantiated, though it was rendered highly probable by the fact that he returned to Rome the following year a very rich man, able to purchase and lay out in great splendour those famous gardens on the Quirinal known as the "horti Sallustiani,' which became subsequently an imperial residence. He now retired from public life and devoted his leisure to letters, for which he had always had a taste, and certainly considerable ability. The fruits of his industry have come down to us in the shape of a history of the famous Catiline conspiracy, of an account of the war with Jugurtha, and of some fragments of a larger work— '' histories," as the Romans called them, "' memoirs," as we should style them. His history of the Catiline conspiracy

He came.

Pa BS)

was his first published work; it is the history of tlic memorable year 63, when Cicero as consul bafiled and confounded Catiline by making all men believe that he was an arch-conspirator against the liberties of his country, who, under specious pretexts of relieving poverty and distress, was really aiming at making himself a tyrant and a despot. Sallust adopts the view whicli was no doubt the usually accepted one, and he writes accordingly as a political partisan, without giving us a clear insight into the causes and circumstances which gave Catiline a consider- able following, and led many to think that his schemes were more respectable than those of a mere wild revolu- tionist. He does not explain to us at all adequately what Catiline's plans and views were, but simply paints the man as the deliberate foe of all

law, order, and morality. Catiline, it must be remembered, had been of Sulla's party, to which Sallust was opposed. There may be truth in Mommsen's suggestion that he was particularly anxious to clear his patron Cesar of all complicity in the conspiracy. Anyhow, the subject was quite one to his taste, as it gave him the opportunity of showing off his rhetoric at the expense of the old Roman aristocracy, whose degeneracy he dehghted to paint in the blackest colours. His history, again, of the war with Jugurtha, though a valuable and interesting monograph, is not a satisfactory performance. We may assume that he had collected materials and put together notes for it during his governorship of Numidia. Here too we find him dwelling on the feebleness of the senate and of the aristocracy, and dropping too often into a tiresome moralizing and philosophizing vein, his besetting weakness, but altogether failing us in those really im- portant details of geography and even chronology which we naturally look for in the historians of military opera- tions and campaigns. In all this Sallust is no better than Livy. Of his Histories, said to have been in five books, and to have commenced with the year 78 B.c. (the year of Sulla's death), and to have concluded with the year 66, we have but fragments, which are, however, enough to show the political partisan, who took a keen pleasure in describ- ing the reaction which followed on the dictator's death against his policy and legislation. It is unfortunate that the work has not come down to us entire, as it must have thrown much light on a very eventful period, embracing the war against Sertorius, the campaigns of Lucullus against Mithradates of Pontus, and the victories of the great Pompey in the East. A few fragments of his works were published for the first time from a manuscript in the Vatican early in the present century. We have also two letters (Duae epistolae de Republica ordinanda) addressed to Cesar, letters of political counsel and advice, which have been cominonly attributed to Sallust, but as to the authenticity of which we must suspend our judgment.

The verdiet of antiquity was on the whole favourable to Sallust as an historian and as a man of letters. In certain quarters he was deeried ; his brevity was said to be obscurity, and his fondness for old words and phrases, in whieh he is said to have imitated his contemporary Cato, was ridieuled as an affectation. Tacitus, however, speaks highly of him (Anz., iii. 30); and, to do hini justice, we must remember that he struck out for himself almost a new line in literature, as up to his time nothing of mueli

value had been done for Roman history, and his predeeessors had been little better than elironielers and annalists of the ‘‘dry-as-dust” type. Sallust aimed at being something like a Roman Thueydides, and, though he falls far short of the great Greek historian, and drifts now and again into mere rhetoric and pedantry, we may at least congratulate ourselves on the possession of his Catiline and Jugurtha, and we must feel that fortune has been unkind in depriving us of his larger work, his Histories.

SALMASIUS, Ctauprus (1588-1653), in the verna- cular SAUMAISE, the most distinguished classical scholar of his day, was born at Semur-en-Auxois in Burgundy, April 15, 1588. His father, a counsellor of the parle-

ment of Dijon, gave him an excellent education, and sent

him at the age of sixteen to Paris, where his promise excited the especial interest of Casaubon. After hardly overcoming his father's opposition, he proceeded in 1606 to the university of Heidelberg, nominally to be initiated into jurisprudence under Godefroy, but in fact entirely devoted to classical studies. The atmosphere of the place probably had its influence in inducing him to embrace Protestantism, the religion of his mother; and his first publication was an edition of a work by Nilus Cabasilas, archbishop of Thessalonica, against the primacy of the pope, with a similar tract by Barlaam. The Latin trans- lation of these works, although apparently assigned to Salmasius on the title page, is not by him. In 1609 he edited Florus, with notes compiled in ten days. In the following year he returned to France, and nominally pur- sued the study of jurisprudence to qualify himself for the succession to his father's post, which he eventually lost on account of his religion. Nothing important proceeded from his pen until 1620, when he published Casaubon's notes on the Augustan History, with copious additions of his own, equally remarkable for learning and acumen. In 1623 he married Anna Mercier, a Protestant lady of a distinguished family; and in 1629 he produced his magnum opus as a critic, his commentary on Solinus's Polyhzstor, or rather on Pliny, to whom Solinus is indebted for most of his materials. Greatly as this work may have been overrated by his contemporaries, it is still a monument of stupendous learning and conscientious industry. Salmasius learned Arabic to qualify himself for the botanical part of his task, and was so unwilling to go to press without having con- sulted a rare treatise by Didymus that the third part: of his commentary, De Herbis et Plantis, did not appear in his lifetime. He was now ostensibly as well as actually devoted to philology, and foreign universities vied with each other in endeavouring to secure his services. After declining overtures from Oxford, Padua, and Bologna, he closed in 1631 with a proposal from Leyden, offering an entirely honorary professorship, with a stipend of two thousand (afterwards raised to three thousand) livres a year, merely to live in Holland and refute the Annals of Baronius. This latter stipulation he never fulfilled. Shortly after his removal to Holland, he composed, at the request of Prince Frederick of Nassau, his treatise on the military system of the Romans, which was not published until 1657. Other works followed, mostly philological, but including a denunciation of wigs and hair-powder, and a vindication of moderate and

lawful interest for money, which drew down upon him many expostulations from | lawyers and theologians. It prevailed, however, with the Dutch Church to admit money-lenders to the sacrament. His treatise De Primatu Pape (1645), accompanying a republication of the tract of Nilus Cabasilas, excited a warm controversy in France, but the Government declined to suppress it. Notwithstanding his Protestantism and the opposition of the papal nuncio, he had already been made a royal counsellor and a knight of St Michael, and great | offers had been made to induce him to return, which, sus- pecting that he was to be charged with the composition of a panegyric on Richelieu, he honourably declined.

In November 1649 appeared the work by which Salmasius is best remembered, his Defensio Regia pro Carolo I. His advice had already been sought on English and Scotch affairs, and, inclining to Presbyterianism or a modified Episcopacy, he had written against the Independ- ents. It does not appear by whose influence he was induced to undertake the Defensio Legia, but Charles IL, low as his exchequer was, defrayed the expense of printing, aud presented the author with £100. The first edition was anonymous, but the author was universally known. A French translation which speedily appeared under the |

| Salmasius,

name of Le Gros was the work of Salmasius himself. This celebrated work, in our day principally famous for the reply it provoked from Milton, even in its own added little to the reputation of the author. Salmasius injured his character for consistency by defending absolute monarchy, and knew too little of English history and politics to argue his cause with effect. He deals chiefly in generalities, and most inappropriate illustrations from Biblical and classical history. Not caring sufficiently for his theme to rise to the heights of moral indignation, he is as inferior to Milton in earnestness as in eloquence and the power of invective. Milton had, no doubt, a great advantage in encountering a personality, at whose head vituperation could be launched, while Salmasius is fighting abstractions and indicting a people. But the reply to Milton, which he left unfinished at his death, and which was published by his son in 1660, is insipid as well as abusive. Until

the appearance of Milton's rejoinder in March 1651 the effect of Salmasius's work was no doubt considerable ; and it probably helped to procure him the flattering invitation from Queen Christina which induced him to visit Sweden in 1650. Christina loaded him with gifts and distinctions, but upon the appearance of Milton's book was unable to conceal her conviction that he had been worsted by his antagonist. Milton, addressing Christina herself, ascribes Salmasius's withdrawal from Sweden in 1651 to mortification at this affront, but this appears to be negatived by the warmth of Christina's subsequent letters and her pressing invitation to return. The claims of the university of Leyden and dread of a second Swedish winter seem fully adequate motives. Nor is there any foundation for the belief that Milton's invectives hastened his death, which took place on September 3, 1653, from an injudicious use of the Spa waters. He was at the time engaged upon his reply to Milton ; this he does not seem to have reckoned among the MSS. which, feeling that he had expressed himself with undue asperity, he directed his wife to burn after his decease. He left several sons, but his posterity did not attain the third generation.

Nothing, to modern ideas, can scem more singular than the literary dictatorship exercised by a mere classical scholar, who shone principally as a commentator, and whose independent works, though highly respectable, evince no especial powers of mind. Salmasius was far enough from being a Grotius, a Leibnitz, or even a Casaubon. As a commentator and verbal critic, however, he is entitled to very high rank. His notes on the Augustan

History and Solinus display not only massive erudition but massive good sense as well; his perception of the meaning of his

_ author is commonly very acute, and his corrections of the text are

frequently highly felicitous. His manly independence was shown in many circumstances of his life, and the general bias of his mind was liberal and sensible. He was accused of sourness and sullenness of temper; but the charge, if it had any foundation, is extenuated by the wretched condition of his health. His biographer Clément enumerates seven classes of disorders which pursued him throughout his life, and which render his industry and productiveness the more extraordinary. Papillon catalogues eighty books published by Salmasius himself, or from his MSS., or to which he

contributed notes; eighteen manuscripts which he himself saw in the library of M. de la Mare ; forty-three more mentioned by others; ninety-three works with MS. notes by which should now be in the National Library of France ; and fifty-nine books projected or contemplated.

The life of Salmasius was written at great length by Philibert de la Marc, counsellor of the parlement of Dijon, who inherited his MSS. from his son. Papillon says that this biography left nothing to desire, but it has the capital fault of never having been printed. It was, however, used by Papillon himself, whose account of Salmasius in lis Bibliotheque des Auteurs de Bourgogne (Dijon, 1745) is by far the best extant. There is an éloge by Clément prefixed to his edition of Salmasius's Letters (1656), and another by Morisot, inserted in his own Letters. Clément's notice contains many interesting facts, but it is marred by an extravagant admiration for its subject, perhaps excusable if he really believed that his hero was born in 1596, and edited Florus at thirteen. It 1s remarkable, however, that Clément passes over the Defensio Regia almost without notice, whether from feeling that it was unworthy of Salmasius, or because discussion

of the subject was discouraged in Holland during the existenee of the English Commonwealth. R. G.

SALMON. It will be convenient to consider this in connexion with the other members of the great family of fishes to which it belongs. See SALMoNIDZ.

SA UM ON TD A

SALMONID. The distinguishing features of this family of fishes are described in technical language in the article IcuTHyoLocy (vol. xii. p. 693), and it is un- necessary to repeat the definition. The most conspicuous of the external characteristics is the presence of two dorsal fins, of which the anterior is well developed and supported by the usual jointed bones known as fin-rays, while the posterior is thick and fleshy, rounded in outline, and desti- tute of rays. 'The posterior fin is thus a rudimentary organ, and it is commonly called the adipose fin. There are two other families of fishes which resemble the Salmonide in the arrangement of the dorsal fins—the Percopside and Haplochitonidz ; but the former consists of

only one species, found in the United States, and the latter is confined to the southern hemisphere. Aiongst British fishes a Salmonoid can be always recognized by its dorsal fins.}

The Salmonide retain the open communication of the air-bladder with the intestine, and the original posterior position of the pelvic fins,—features which characterize the division of Yeleoster known as Physostomi. In the great assemblage of bony fishes known as Physoclisti, these features are lost in the adult condition. It is known that in all cases the air-bladder develops in the young fish as an outgrowth or diverticulum from the intestine; and it is obvious from a survey of Vertebrates in general that the posterior limbs belong originally to the neighbourhood of the anus. It follows therefore that in these features the Salmomdz, and all the Physostomi, are more similar to the early ancestors of the bony fishes than are those species in which the air-bladder is closed and the pelvic fins have an anterior position.

In the Salmonide the characteristic Teleostean pseudo- branchia is present. This organ is the diminished remnant of the series of gill-lamellze belonging to the posterior face of the hyoid arch, as the pseudobranchia in Elasmobranchs is the rudiment of the series of gill-lamellz belonging to the posterior face of the mandibular arch.2 The bones known as maxille form portion of the boundary of the upper jaw in Salmonidez ; in many fishes they are excluded from the jaw margin by the backward prolongation of the premaxille. There are no scales on the head in this family, and there are no fleshy filaments or “‘barbels” in the neighbourhood of the mouth as there are in many bony fishes—for example, the Cod, in which a single short barbel is attached beneath the lower jaw. The pyloric append- ages, cecal diverticula of the intestinal tube immediately behind the stomach, are nearly always present in consider- able numbers. In the female Salmon the oviduct, the tube connecting the ovary with the exterior, is wanting ; the eggs when ripe escape from the surface of the ovary into the abdominal cavity and pass thence to the exterior through a pair of apertures in the body wall situated one on each side of the anus; these apertures are the abdominal pores. In the male salmon there is a duct to the testis, and the semen is extruded through it in the usual way. Fertilization takes place outside the body, the spermatozoa and eggs uniting in the water.

Distribution.—Salmonide are found both in the sea and in fresh water. Most of the marine species inhabit the deeper parts of the ccean. Many of the freshwater forms pass a portion of their lives in the littoral parts of the sea, ascending rivers when adult every year in order to deposit

1 It is interesting to observe that a peculiarity of the dorsal fins is often a family eharaeter among the bony fishes. Thus the speeies of the Cod family (Gadidz) have usually three separate dorsal fins similar in shape and size. The Blenniidaw are characterized by the presence of a continuous dorsal fin extending almost the whole length of the baek. The Clupeida or Herrings all have a single triangular dorsal fin in the middle of the baek.

This at least is the view till recently aeeepted by most morpho- logists ; its correctness is questioned by Anton Dohrn.

their spawn ; that is to say, many species are anadromous. Some are confined entirely to fresh water. The Salmonide are, with the exception of one species indigenous to New Zealand, peculiar to the temperate and arctic regions of the northern hemisphere. Fossils belonging to the family are found in strata of Mesozoic age. Osmerus occurs in the greensand of Ibbenbiiren, and the schists of Glarus and Licata. Mallotus villosus, indistinguishable from the living Capelin, occurs abundantly in clay in Greenland, the geological age of the bed being unknown. Osmeroides acrognathus and Aulolepis are fossil genera occurring in the chalk near Lewes in Sussex, and were probably deep-sea Salmonoids. The introduction of certain species into new areas by human agency, which has been effected recently, and is still going on, will be described in another section.

Synopsis of Genera.

The following five genera include British species :—

1. Salmo, Artedi (Salmon and Trout). Scales small. Cleft of mouth wide; maxilla extending backward to below or behind the eye. Dentition well developed ; conical teeth on the jaw bones, on the vomer and palatines, and on the tongue; none on the pterygoid bones. Anal fin short, with fourteen or

fewer rays. Pyloric appendages numerous. Ova large. Dark transverse bands, known as “parr marks,” present on the sides of the body in the young stages of life.

2. Osmerus, Cuv. (Smelts). Scales of moderate size. Cleft of the mouth wide; maxilla long, extending to or nearly to the hind margin of the orbit. Dentition well developed; teeth on the maxilla and premaxilla smaller than those on the mandible; transverse series of teeth on the vomer, several of whieh are large and fang-like ; a series of conical teeth along the palatine and pterygoid bones; strong fang-like teeth on the front of the tongue, several longitudinal series of smaller ones on its posterior part. Pyloric appendages short and few in number. Ova small.

3. Coregonus. Scales of moderate size. Cleft of mouth small; maxilla rather short, not extending back beyond the orbit. Teeth minute, or absent altogether. Anterior dorsal fin with few rays. Pyloric appendages numerous. Ova small.

4. Thymallus, Cuv. (Graylings). Similar to Coregonus, but having a long anterior dorsal with many rays. Small teeth on jaws, vomer, aud palatine bones.

5. Argentina, Cuv. Scalesrather large. Cleft of mouth small; maxilla not extending to below the orbit. Teeth wanting on jaws; minute teeth on the head of the vomer and fore part of the palatines; series of small curved teeth on each side of the tongue. Dorsal fin short, in advance of the pelvic. Pylorie appendages few or in moderate numbers. Ova small. The most conspicuous peculiarity of this genus is the flattening of the sides to plane surfaces bordered by keeled ridges, so that the transverse section of the fish is hexagonal.

The following eleven genera include no British species :—

6. Oncorhynchus, Suckley (Ann. Lyc. Nat. Hist., 1861). Simi- lar to Salmo, except that the anal fin has more than fourteen rays.?

7. Brachymystax, Giinther. Intermediate between Salmo and Coregonus.

8. Luciotrutta, Giinther. Migratory trout from North America.

9. Plecoglossus, Schlegel. Body covered with very small scales. Cleft of mouth wide; maxilla long. Dentition feeble ; premaxilla with few small conical teeth. Ends of mandibles separate at the chin, the mucous membrane between them forming folds and pouches. Tongue very small, with minute teeth.

10. Retropinna, Gill. Similar to Osmerus.

11 and 12. Hypomesus, Gill, and Thaleichthys, Girard, are allied genera.

13, Mallotus, Cuv. (Capelin). Scales minute, somewhat larger along the lateral line and along each side of the belly. In mature males those scales become elongate, lanceolate with projecting points. Cleft of mouth wide ; maxilla very thin, lamelliform, extending to below middle of eye. Dentition very feeble ; teeth in single series. Pyloric appendages very short, few. Ova small.

14. Salanx, Cuv. Body elongate, compressed, naked, or with smal], exceedingly fine deciduous scales. Head elongate and much depressed, terminating in a long, flat, pointed snout. Cleft of mouth wide. Jaws and palatine bones with conical teeth, some of those on premaxilla and mandibles being enlarged ; no teeth on vomer ; tongue with single series of curved teeth. Antcrior dorsal fin far behind ventral, in front of anal ; adipose small. Pseudo- branchie well developed; air-bladder none. Alimentary canal quite straight ; pyloric appendages none. Ova small.

3 This is the generic distinetion adopted by Dr Giinther. Suekley's original diagnosis was the prolongation of both jaws in the males.

15. Microstoma, Cuv. Body elongate, cylindrical, covered with large thin silvery scales. Cleft of mouth very small; premaxilla very small; maxille very short and broad. Eye very large. Narrow series of very small teeth in the lower jaw and across the head of the vomer ; no other teeth. Dorsal fin short, inserted behind the ventrals, but before the anal; adipose fin present

in most young specimens, frequently absent in old ones. Pseudo- branchiz well developed; air-bladder large. Pyloric appendages absent ; mucous membrane of stomach with numerous large papille. The genus is allied to Argentina. ; :

16. Bathylagus, a genus of deep sea Salmonoids discovered by the “Challenger” in the Atlantic and Antarctic Oceans at depths of 1950 and 2040 fathoms.

Speetes.

1. Genus Salmo. The difficulty of defining and distinguishing the species of this genus is considerable, and much diversity of opinion on the subject exists among ichthyologists. Many of the species are extremely variable, so that some individuals of one resemble the more aberrant individuals of another; the species are seldom separated by conspicuous differences. The individuals of a given species vary considerably with age and sex, and also with habitat and external conditions. Many of the species are capable of breeding together and producing fertile offspring. The characters which are most constant, and on whose differences the distinction of species chiefly rests, are as follows :—(1) the form of the preoperculum (the horizontal breadth of this bone at its lower portion is always small in the young, but in the adult it is greater in some species than in others; (2) width and strength of maxillary in adult); (8) size of tecth; (4) arrangement and per- manence of vomerine teeth ; (5) form of caudal fin; (6) pectoral fins ; (7) size of scales; (8) number of vertebra ; (9) number of pyloric appendages.

In all the species of Salmo there are tecth in the vomer. In the Salmons proper and in the Trouts there are, in the young, tecth both on the head and body of that bone, but in some spccies on the body only; some of the teeth on the body arc deciduous, and are in most of the speeies shed at an early age. In the Charrs there are teeth on the head of the vomer but none on the body of the bone at any period of life, and nonc of the vomerine teeth are deciduous. The species of true Trout are confined to fresh water, and are not migratory. In accordance with these peculiarities some zoologists have divided the genus Salmo into three subgenera,—Salmo sensu restricto, Fario, and Salvelinus. But modern authorities retain only two subdivisions,

—the subgenera Salmo, including inigratory Salmon and non-migratory Trout, and Salvelinus, the Charrs.

A. Subgenus Sarmo.—A vast number of species of Salmo have been described ; in the Brit. Mus. Cat. Dr Giinther distingnishes fifty-two, of which seven are confined to the British Islands and four are found both in the British Islands and other parts of the world. Myr Day on the other hand considers that all the indi- genous Salmon and Trout of the British Islands belong to two species, Salmo salar and Salmo trutta,—Salmo levenensis and Salmo fario being varieties of the latter ; the rest of the described ao speeies he considers as local varicties or subvarieties of

ese.

(1) Salmo salar, L. (the Salmon). B. dhe e ak, 1a P. 14; V. 9; L. lat. 120; L. transverse 22-28; Vert. 59-60; Cee.

eee

pyl. 58-77.) Attains to a length of 4 to 5 feet ; female mature ata length of about 15 inches, Preoperculum with a distinct lower limb and with the angle rounded. Head of vomer subpentagonal, as long as broad, toothless ; the body of the bone with single series of small teeth which are gradually lost from behind forwards so that older examples only have from one to four left. Hind part of body elongate and covered with relatively large scales. Young with about eleven dusky transverse bars on the sides ; half-grown and old specimens silvery, with small black spots in small number ; spawning males with numerous large black and red spots, some of the red spots confluent into more or less extensive patches, especi- ally on the belly. An anadromous species, inhabiting temperate Europe southwards to 43° N. lat.; not found in Mediterranean ; in Asia and America southwards to 41° N. lat.

No varieties of Salmo salar are recognized in Europe, but in North America there occurs one Salmonoid which is considered by different authorities either as a variety or a sub-species, viz., Salmo salar, var. sebago, L. lat. 115. Body and dorsal and caudal fins with subquadrangular or subcircular black spots. Is non-migra- tory and occurs in some of the lakes of Maine

and New York in the United States ; these lakes have no communication with the

sea. This form is called variously the Landlocked Salmon or the Schoodic Salmon.

1 In the formula usually preeedin i i ipti i g the diagnosis or deseription of as eeies of fish, B= umber of branehiostegal rays; D=number of ova in dorsal ah § IPS peli Beka me ive in anal fin; V=ditto in ventral] fin; L lat = n eales along the lateral line ; L. transverse= . ‘in tl oblique transverse row of the widest part of t Wied pMtheupie ee

below the line in the fraction being those of the seales above and below the

SALMON I’D Ai

The true Salmo salar on the American shore of the Atlantic is sometimes called the Penobscot Salmon.

(2) Salmo trutta, Fleming; Salmo eriox, Parnell (Fishes of Firth of Forth) (Sea-Trout, Salmon-Trout, Bull-Trout). B. 11; D. 13; A. 11; P. 15; V. 9; L. lat. 120; L. transverse 24-26; Vert, 59- 60; Cec. pyl. 49-61. Attains to a length of about 3 feet; female mature at a length of 10 to 12 inches. Head of vomer triangular, as broad as long, toothless, body of the bone with a longitudinal ridge armed with a single series of teeth, which are deciduous ; generally only the two or three anterior ones found in examples of more than 20 inches in length. Silvery, sometimes immaculate, usually with more or less numerous X-shaped spots; spots on the head and dorsal fin round and readily disappearing. Young (parr) with nine or ten dusky cross bars ; grilse with top of dorsal and pectoral and with hind margin of caudal black. A migratory species, occurring in the rivers falling into the Baltic and German Ocean; numerous in Scotland, less frequent in English and Irish rivers.

(8) Salmo eambricus, Donov. (Brit. Fishes) (the Sewen of Couch, Salmon Peal). B. 10-11; D. 14; A. 11-12; P. 16; V. O°. iaie 120-125; L. transverse -? %—; Vert. 59; Czc. pyl. 39-47. Attain- ing to a length of 3 feet; female mature at a length of from 12 to 13 inches. Preoperculum with a distinct

lower limb, with the angle rounded aud with the hind margin convex or undulated, subvertical. Head of vomer triangular, broader than long, toothless in adult examples, armed with a few teeth across its hinder margin in young ones; body of the bone with a sharp longitudinal ridge, in the sides of which the teeth are inserted, forming a single series, and alternately pointing to right and left. In pure-bred specimens these teeth are lost in the grilse state, so that only the two or three anterior remain in specimens more than 12 or 18 incheslong. Fins of moderate length ; caudal fin forked in parr stage, slightly emarginate in grilse, truncate in mature specimens. ‘This specics loses the parr marks very early, when only 5 to 6 inches long ; itis then bright silvery. Greenish on the back, with few small round black spots on the head and sides. This coloration remains nearly unaltcred during the further growth of the fish, but the spots become more irregular, indistinctly X-shaped. An anadromous species, occurring in rivers of Norway, Denmark, Wales, and Ireland. Mr Day (Fishes of Great Brituin) considers this form as merely a variety of Salmo trutta.

(4) Salmo fario, L. (Trout). varieties :—

(a) Salmo fario gaimardi; Salmo gaimardi, Cuv. and Val.; Salmo trutta, Gaimard (Voy. Isl. and Groenl., Atl. Poiss., pl. 15,

Dr Giinther distinguishes two

fig. A). D. 18-14; A. 11-12; P.14; V. 9; L. lat. 120; L. trans- verse 3%; Cee. pyl. 33-46; Vert. 59-60. Largest specimen

observed, 15 inches; female mature at a length of 7 or 8 inches. Head of vomer triangular, small, broader than long ; vomerine tecth in a double series sometimes disposed in a zigzag line, persistent throughout life. Sides with numerous round or X-shaped black spots ; upper surface and sides of the head and the dorsal, adipose, and caudal fins usually with crowded round black spots ; dorsal, anal, and ventral with a black and white outer edge. Found in Iceland, North Britain, Ireland, Scandinavia.

(6) Salmo fario ausonit; Salmo ausonit, Cuv. and Val. (the common River-Trout). Formulaas ina, but Vert. 57-58. Attains to a length of 30 inches; female mature at a length of 8 inches. A non-migratory species, inhabiting

numerous fresh waters of Central Europe, Sweden, and England, and rivers of the Maritime Alps.

The following forms are peculiar to the British Islands :—

(5) Salmo levenensis, Walker (Wern. Mem., i. p. 541) (Loch Leven Trout). D.18; A. 11; P. 14; V. 9; L. lat. 118; 1. tee verse $5; Cac. pyl. 68-80; Vert. 59. Maximum length 21 inches. Teeth moderately strong ; the head of the vomer triangular with a transverse series of two or three teeth across its base; the teeth of the body of the vomer form a single series and are persistent throughout life. Upper parts brownish or greenish olive ; sides of the head with round black spots; sides of the body with X-shaped, sometimes rounded, brown spots. Dorsal and adipose fins with numerous small brown spots. A non-migratory species, inhabiting Loch Leven and other lakes of southern Scotland and northern England. This species is considered by Mr Day as a variety of S. trutta. s

(6) S. brachypoma, Giinther; S. eriox, Parnell (Fish. Firth of Forth). D. 18; A. 10-11; P. 14; V. 9; L. lat. 118-128; L. trans- verse $$; Cac. pyl. 45-47; Vert. 59. Preoperculum with scarcely a trace of lower limb. Teeth rather strong; those of the vomer in double sevies, but in zigzag line. Most of them are lost in specimens 17 inches long, only a few of the antcrior remaining, Sides of the body with X-shaped or ocellated black spots, some red spots along and below the lateral line ; dorsal fin with ronnd black spots. Dorsal, anal, and ventral fins with a white and black outer margin in young examples. A migratory species, from the rivers Forth, Tweed, and Ouse. According to Mr Day, itis identical with the White Salmon of Pennant and Salmo albus of Ouv. and Val.,

SALMONID &

all of them being considered by Day as a variety, S. albus, of Salmo trutta,

(7) S. gallivensis, Giinther. An anadromous spccies from Galway, distinguished by the aeutely pointed but not elongate snout, broad convex head, small eye, feeble teeth, feeble maxillary and mandible, and by extremely thin and short pyloric appendages, which are not longer than one

inch nor thicker than a pigeon’s quill. According to Day a varicty of §. fario.

(8) S. ferox, Jard. and Selby (Edinb. New Philos. Journal, 1835, xvili.). A non-migratory species inhabiting the large lochs of the north of Scotland and several lakes of the north of England, Wales, and Ireland. Preoperculum crescent-shaped, the hinder and lower margins passing into each other without forming an angle. According to Day a varicty of 8. fario.

(9) S. oreadensis, Giinther, from Loch Stennis in Orkney.

(10) S. stomachieus, Giinther (the Gillaroo). From lakes of Ireland. Thick stomach. Feeds on shells (Limneus, Ancylus).

(11) S. nigripinnis, Giinther. Non-migratory species inhabiting mountain pools of Wales, also Lough Melvin, Ireland.

Day mentions also the following varieties of S. fario:—

S. cornubiensis, Walb., Artedi ;

Swaledale trout, from Swaledale, Yorkshire ; and

Crassapuill trout, from Loch Crassapuill, Sutherlandshire.

Many species of Salmo exist which are confined to limited areas in the continent of Europe. An account of these is given in the Brit. Mus. Catalogue, which also contains references to the litera- ture. One of these, S. maerostigma, Duméril, is a non-migratory form occurring in Algeria, and is the southernmost species of the Old World. Three non-migratory species exist in the rivers belonging to the basin of the Adriatic. In the Alpine lakes of central Europe five species are known, which resemble in habits the forms found in British lakes, ascending the streams which feed the lakes, in order to spawn. Two of these species inhabit the Lake of Constanee, one the Lake of Geneva. Fuarto argenteus, Cuy. and Val., found in the Atlantie rivers of France, is con- sidered by Dr Gtinther a distinct species, by Mr Day as a synonym of S. trutta. One niigratory specics is known from the

Kidfjord river in Norway; two land-locked species from Lake Wener in Sweden.

The species of Salmo belonging to the Pacific Coast of North America have been described by Richards in Fawn. Bor. Amer, by Suckley in Nat. Hist. Washington Territory, and by Girard in Proc. Acad. Nat. Se. Philad. Only one species need be mentioned here, and that on account of the importance it has acquired in connexion with the work of the United States Fish Commission :-—

Salmo trideus, Gibbons (Proe. Cal. Ac. Nat. Se., 1855, p. 36); Salar tridea, Givard (Proc. Acad. Nat. Sc. Philad., 1856, p. 220 and U.S, Pae. Rk. h. Hxplor.—Fish, p. 321, pl. 73, f. 5, and pl. 74) (the Californian, Mountain, or Rainbow Trout). B. 10; D. 14; A. 14; L. lat. 140. Caudal deeply emarginate. Body and dorsal and caudal fins with numerous small black spots. A non-migratory specics in rivers of Upper California.

For the same reason as in the preceding easc, the following species of the eastern slope of the North American continent is introduced :—

Salmo namayeush, Penn (Aret. Zool., ii. p. 189), Cuv. and Val. (xxi. p. 348) (Lake Trout). B. 11-12; D. 13-14; A. 12; V.9; L. lat. 220. Praoperculum very short, without lower limb; head very large. out life, and in single series. Inhabits all the great lakes of the northern part of North America.

B. Subgenus SALvELINUS :—

Salmo alpinus, L. (the Charr, Yarrell, Brit. Fishes, 3d ed.). Deis; Aw 12; P, 13; VY. 10; L. lat. 195-200; Vert. 59-62; Cee. pyl. 86-42. Body slightly compressed and elongate. Length of head equal to height of body in mature specimens and two- ninths or one-fifth of total length ; maxillary extends but little beyond the orbit in the fully adult fish. Eye one-half, or less than one-half, of the width of the interorbital space. Teeth of moderate sizc. Inhabits lakes of Scandinavia, Scotland (Helier Lake, Hoy Island, Orkneys; Sutherlandshire ; Loch Roy, Inver- ness-shire), and probably Iceland.

S, killinensis, Giinther (Proe. Zool. Soe., 1865, p. 699). D. 14- fee io; PF 13, V.9; L. lat. 180; Vert, 62; Cee. pyl. 44— 52. Head, upper parts, and fins

brownish black ; lower parts with an orange-coloured tinge in the male; sides with very small, light, inconspicuous.spots. Anterior margins of the lower fins white or light-orange-coloured. Loch Killin, Inverness-shire. Considered by Mr Day as a variety of S. alpinus.

S. willughbii, Giinther (Proe. Zool. Soc., 1862, p. 46, pl. 5); Charr, Willughby (Hist. Pise., p. 196), Penn (Brit. Zool.), and Yarrell (Brit. Fish., 3d ed.) (the Charr of Windermere). D. 12- 13; A. 12; P. 18-14; V. 9-10; L. lat. 165; Vert. 59-62; Cee. pyl. 32-44. Sides with red dots; belly red; pectoral, ventral, and anal with white margins. Lake of Windermere ; Loch Bruiaeh (Scotland). Considered by Mr Day as a variety of S. alpinus,

S. perisit, Gtinther (Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., 1865, p. 75);

Tecth strong ; those on the vomer persistent through-

223

Torgoch, Willughby (Hist. Pise.) and Penn (Brit. Zool.) (the Horoch or RedCharr), 3D) igeeA, 12> P12: V. 9; LL. lat. 170; Vert. 61; Cac. pyl. 36. Sides with numerous red dots ; belly red in the mature fish; pectoral, ventral, and anal with white margins. Lakes of North Wales (Llauberris). Considered by Mr Day asa variety of S. alpinus.

S. grayi, Giinther (Proc. Zool. Soe., 1862, p. 51). D. 13; A. 12; P, 138-14; V. 9; L lat. 125; Vert. 60; Cee. pyl. 37. Sides with scattered light-orange-eoloured dots; belly uniform silvery whitish, or with a light-red shade ; fins blackish. Lough Melvin, Ireland. Considered by Mr Day as a variety of S. alpinus.

S. eolii, Giinther (Proc. Zool. Soe., 1863) (Cole’s Charr, Couch, iis, Brit, ies). Wadd: A Awe P. 18s V.. OF Laie 160 ; Vert. 63; Cec. pyl. 42. Blnish black above; sides silvery with seattered light-salmon-coloured dots; belly reddish ; fins black, the anal and the paired fins with a reddish tinge, the anal ond ventrals with a narrow whitish margin. A small spceies 7 to 8 inches long from Loughs Eske and Dan, Ireland. Considered by Mr Day as a variety of 8. alpinus.

The above are all the British species.

S. wmbla, L. (Syst. Nat.), Cuv. and Val. D. 12; A. 12-13; P. 14; V.9; L. lat. 200; Vert. 65; Cec. pyl. 36. Commonly called in French Ombre Chevalier. Lower parts whitish or but slightly tinged with red. Lakes of Constance, Neuch4tel, and Geneva. Considered by Mr Day as identical with 8. alpinus. Other species have been described from lakes in Europe and Asia, but are imper- fectly known ; for an aceount of them sce Giinther's Catalogue.

The following American species of Charr is one of those cultivated by the Amerieau Fish Commission :—

S. (Salvelinus) fontinalis, Miteh. (Trans. Lit. and Phil. Soe., New York, i. p. 435), Cuv. and Val. (xxi. p. 266) (Brook Trout). B. 12; D. 12; A. 10; L. lat. 200; Cec. pyl. 34. No median series of teeth along the hyoid bone. Propereulum short in longitudinal direetion, with the lower limb very indistinct. Rivers and lakes of British North America, and of the northern parts of the United States. Introdueed in Britain.

2. Of the genus Osmerus only three species are described in the Brit. Mus. Cat., one of which is British :—

Osmerus eperlanus, Laeép., Linn. (the Smelt; Fr., Eperlan ; Scotch, Sparling or Spirling). B.8; D.11; A. 13-16; P.11; V. 8; L. lat. 60-62; L. transverse 74; Cec. pyl. 2-6; Vert. 60-62. Height of body much less than length of the head, which is a quarter or two-ninths of the total length to base of caudal fin. Snout pro- duced. Vomerine teeth and anterior lingual teeth large, fang-like ; posterior mandibular teeth larger than the anterior ones, which form a double series, the inner series containing stronger teeth than the outer one. Back transparent, greenish ; sides silvery. Adult size 10 or 12 inches. Coasts and numerous fresh waters of northern and central Europe.

Osmerus viridescens, Lesueur, another species scareely distinct from O. eperlanus, but with scales a little smaller, occurring on the Atlantic side of the United States.

Osmerus thaleichthys, Ayres, oeeurs abundantly in the Bay of San Francisco.

3. Of Coregonus forty-one species are described in the Brit. Mus. Cat. Your species are found in Britain :—

C. oxyrhynchus, Kroyer, Linn., Cuv. and Val. (xxi.). Called the Houting in Holland. B. 9; D. 14; A. 14-15; L. lat. 75-81; L. transverse 24°; Vert. 58. Snout produced, with the upper jaw protruding beyond the lower, and in adult specimens produced into a fleshy cone. Length of the lower limb of operculum 13 to 1} times that of the upper. Pectoral as long as the head without snout. Found on coasts and in estuaries of Holland, Germany, Denmark, and Sweden. Captured recently (three speeimens only) in Lineolnshire, near Chichester, and at the mouth of the Medway.

C. elupeoides, Lacépede ; C. pennantii, Cuv. and Val. (the Gwy- niad of Lake Bala, Schelly of Ullswater, Powan of Loch Lomond; somctimes called the Freshwater Herring). B.9; D. 14-15; A. 13- 16; L. lat. 73-90; L. transverse 7%; Cae. pyl. 120; Vert. 38/20. Snout with upper jaw not produced. Pectoral larger than the head. Fins black or nearly so. Lakes of Great Britain.

C. vandesius, Riehards (Faun. Bor. Amer.); C. albwla, Cuv. and Val. (the Vendace), D. 11; A. 18; V. 11; L. lat. 68-71; L. transverse ;8;; Vert. 56. Castle Loch, Lochmaben in Dumfries- shire.

C. pollan, Thompson (Proc. Zool. Soe., 1835), Cuv. and Val. (the Pollan), D. 18-14; A. 12-18; V. 12; L. lat. 80-86; L. transverse #3 Vert. 60-61. Two jaws of same length. Teeth if present very minute. Bluish along the baek, silvery along the sides and beneath. Usual length ot adults 10 to 11 inches, maximum 13 inehes. Ireland, in Loughs Neagh, Erne, Derg, Corrib, and the Shannon.

Thirty-seven species of Coregonus have bcen distinguished besides these four. Some are migratory ; but the greater number are inhabitants of large lakes. The anadromous species are confined to the Arctic Sea, and the greater number belong to the coast and

rivers of Siberia. Several distinct species occur in the lakes of Sweden; a few are found in the lakes of Switzerland and central Europe. C. hiemalis is peculiar to the Lake of Constance. Several species inhabit the great freshwater lakes connected with the river St Lawrence of North America, and the lakes farther to the north. One of these is cultivated by the American Fish Commission :—

Coregonus clupeiformis, Mitchell, Dekay (New York Fauna, Fish), Cuv. and Val., Agassiz (Lake Superior) (the Shad Salmon, Freshwater Herring, Whitefish). D. TOR Aas: L. Tat: 76-77; L. transverse 38; The snout is pointed, and there is an appendage to the ventral fin which is half as long as the fin itself. Length of adult 11 to 18 inches. Lakes Erie and Ontario.

4, Only one species of Thymallus occurs in the British Islands :-—

Thymallus vulgaris, Nilsson; Thymallus vewillifer, Cuv. and Val. (the Grayling; French, Z'Ombre; Italian, Temelo). B. 7-8; D. 20-23; A. 18-16; P. 16; V. 10-11; L. lat. 75-85; L. transverse ,2-°, ; Cec. pyl. 22; Vert. 39/22, Length of head two- ninths or one-fifth of total length to base of caudal ; posterior dorsal rays somewhat produced in adult. Grows to 15 inches in length. A freshwater fish, common in many of the rivers of England, introduced into some of those of southern Scotland ; absent from Ireland. It is widely distributed in central and northern Europe, occurring in Lapland, Sweden, Lake of Constance, the Isar, and the Danube. Adult size about 15 inches.

Thymallus eliani, Cuv. and Val. (@duaddos, A., xiv. 22), occurs in Lago Maggiore. One species has been described from Siberia, and two are known inhabiting Lake Michigan and the waters of British North America.

5. Of Argentina four species are described in the Brit. Mus. Cat., namely : —Argentina stlus, Nilsson, occurring off the north-west coast of Norway, Argentina sphyrena, L., from the Mediterranean, Argentina hebridica, Nilsson, found on the coasts of Norway and Scotland, and Argentina lioglossa, Cuy.and Val. According to Mr Day, two of these, 4. sphyrena and A. hebridica are identical, the species ranging from the coast of Norway and east and west shores of Scotland to the Mediterranean. The following is the formula of A. hebridica, Nilsson, according to Giinther :—D. 9-11; A. 18

(12) ; P. 18-14; V. 11; L. lat. 52-53; Cee. pyl. 14-20; Vert. 52. scales with minute spines.

6. The species of Oncorhynchus are all anadromous, and are con- fined to American and Asiatic rivers flowing into the Pacific. O. quinnat, Richardson = 0. ehowteha occurs in the river Sacra- mento, and is cultivated by the American Fish Commission.

7, 8. For Brachymystax and Luciotrutta, see p. 221 above.

9. Plecoglossus comprises small aberrant freshwater species abundant in Japan and the island of Formosa.

10. Retropinna contains but one species, R. rtehardsonit, which is known as the New Zealand Smelt. It is common on the coasts of New Zealand, ascending estuaries. Like Osmerus eperlanus, it is landlocked in fresh water in some localities.

11, 12. The species of Hypomesus and Thaleichthys occur on the Pacific coast of North America. Thaleichthys pacifieus, Girard, is caught in vast numbers in the neighbourhood of Vancouver Island; it is extremely fat, and is used as a torch when dried, and also as food. It is called locally the Eulachan or Oulachan.

13. Of Mallotus only one species is described by Giinther :—

Mallotus villosus, Cuv. and Val., Miill. (the Capelin ; French, Capelan). B. 8-10; D. 18-14; A. 21-23; P. 18-20; V. 8; Cee. pyl. 6; Vert. 68. Brownish on the back, silvery on the sides. Operculum silvery with minute brown dots. Shores of Arctic North America and of Kamchatka.

14. Of the genus Salanx two species are known:—Salanx chinensis, Giinther, Osbeck, which is common on the coast of China aud called “ Whitebait” at Macao, and Salanz microdon, Bleeker, from the rivers of Jeddo.

_ 15. Microstoma.—ZJf, rotundatum, Risso, is marine and occurs in the Mediterranean ; it is not anadromous. It is the only species of the genus

known, unless the Microstomus grinlandicus,

escribed by Reinhardt, from the Sea of Greenland, really belongs to this genus, ss

16. For Bathylagus, see p. 222 above.

Life History of the Salmon and Allied Species.

Up to a period not many years past, when our knowledge of the breeding and life history of the salmon and kindred species was based entirely on desultory observations of the fish in their natural conditions, there existed a great deal of uncertainty and diversity of opinion on the subject. Within the last twenty or thirty years the extensive practice of salmon-culture has removed nearly all obscurity from the phenomena, and the history of Salmonoids 1s now more accurately known than that of most other fishes.

The salmon proper, Salmo salar, breeds in thé shallow running waters of the upper streams of the rivers it ascends. The female when about to deposit her eggs, scoops out a trough in the gravel of the bed of the stream. This she effects by lying on her side and ploughing into the gravel by energetic motions of her body. She

The |

SALMONTID &

then deposits her eggs in the trough ; while she is engaged in these operations she is attended by a male, whio sheds milt over the eggs as the female extrudes them, fertilization being, as in the great majority of Zeleostei, external. The parent fish then fill up the trough and heap up the gravel over the eggs until these are covered to a depth of some feet. The gravel heap thus formed is called a ‘‘redd.” The period of the year at which spawning takes place in the British Isles, and in similar latitudes of the northern hemi- sphere, varies to a certain extent with the locality, and in a given locality may vary in different years; but, with rare exceptions, spawning is confined to the period between the beginning of September and the middle of January.

The eggs of Salmo salar are spherical and non-adhesive ; they are heavier than water, and are moderately tough and elastic. The size varies slightly with the age of the parent fish, those from full- sized females being slightly larger than those from very young fish. According to rough calculations made at salmou-breeding establish- ments, there are 25,000 eggs to a gallon; the diameter is about a quarter of an inch. It is usually estimated that a female salmon produces about 900 eggs for each pound of her own weight; but this average is often exceeded.

The time between fertilization and hatching, or tle escape of the young fish from the egg-membrane, varies considerably with the temperature to which the eggs are exposed. It has been found that at a constant temperature of 41° F. the period is 97 days; but the period may be as short as 70 days and as long as 150 days without injury to the health of the embryo. I+ follows therefore that in the natural conditions eggs deposited in the autumn are hatched in the early spring. The newly hatched fish, or ‘‘alevin,” is provided with a very large yolk-sac, and by the absorption of the yolk contained in this the young creature is nourished for some time ; although its mouth is fully formed and open, it takes no food. The alevin stage lasts for about six weeks, and at the end of it the young fish is about 14 inches long. During the next period of its life the young salmon is called a “ parr,” and is dis-

| tinguished by the possession of a number of dark transverse marks

along the sides, known as “parr marks.” These marks occur in the young stage of many species ainong the Salmontdx. The parr doubles its lengtli in about four months.

The great majority of parr remain in fresh water for two years after hatching, at the end of which time tliey are about 8 inches in length. The second spring after they are hatched they develop a coating of bright silvery scales which completely conceals the pur marks, and they pass into a stage in which they are known as “smolts.” The smolt is similar to the adult salmon in all respects except size, and the young salmon, as soon as the smolt stage is reached, migrates down the rivers to the sea.

The above facts have been established within recent years by accurate observation and experiment. Not very long ago it was a disputed question

whether the parr was the young salmon or a distinct species of fish. That the former view was correct was first experimentally proved by Mr John Shaw, gamekeeper to the duke of Buccleuch, Drumlanrig, Dumfriesshire, who in 1833 isolated

| several parrs in a pond, and found that in April 1834 they changed

into smolts ; an account of this experiment was published in the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh. The question is now of merely historical interest, for at the present time large num- bers of parr are hatched at various fish-hatching establishments every season. By observation at these establishments, the know- ledge of the history of the parr and the migration of tlie smolt which had been gained by the study of the fish in their natural conditions has been rendered more accurate and complete.! It has been conclusively ascertained that some parr become smolts and migrate to the sea in the spring following that in which they were hatched, while the great majority remain in the parr stage until the second spring, and a few do not attain to the smolt condition until the third year. The male parr when only 7 or 8 inches in length is often sexually mature, the milt being capable of fertilizing the ova of an adult female salmon.

The migration of smolts to the sea takes place in all rivers at about the same time of the year, viz., between March and June. Sometimes the smolts are observed descending in large shoals. Formerly angling for the descending smolts was a recognized sport, but their capture is now illegal. It is the opinion of the most competent authorities that the smolts increase with wonderful rapidity in size and weight when they reach the sea, and then return to the rivers after a few months, during the same year, as ‘“grilse,” which name is given to sexually mature salmon up to a little over 5 Ib in weight. It is surprising that a smolt weighing only a few ounces should increase to 3 or 4 or even 6 Ib in about three months. Nevertheless it has been proved by actual experi- ment that this is the fact. At Stormontfield, in May 1855, 1300 snlolts were marked by cutting off the adipose fin, and 22 of these

1 The first important series of experlments on the growth and life history of the salmon was made at the salmon-hatehery of Stormontfield near Perth in

1862 and some previous years. The results are detailed in a work entitled Stormont- Jeld Experiments, 1862.

oa he ONT D

were recaptured the same summer as grilse, weighing from 8 1b upwards. It might be supposed that some smolts do not return as grilse till the summer following the year of their descent, the time of their stay in the sea being variable, as is the period spent by parr in the rivers. But all the evidence is against this supposi- tion; grilse never commence ascending till late in summer; if they had been morc than a year in the sea, some would probably ascend early in the season, as do the larger salmion. At the same time it must be borne in mind that a fish which remained in the sea a year after descending as a smolt might not be recognized as a grilse, having reached the size of a small salmon,

The grilse, after spawning in autumn, return again to the sea in the winter or following spring, and reascend the rivers as mature spawning salmon in the following year. Both salmon and grilse after spawning are called “kelts.” The following recorded experi- ment illustrates the growth of grilse into salmon :—a grilse-kelt of 2 tb was marked on March 31, 1858, and recaptured on August 2 of the same year as a salmon of 8 ib.

The ascent of rivers by adult salmon is not so regular as that of grilse, and the knowledge of the subject is not at the present time complete. Although salmon scarcely ever spawn before the month of September, they do not ascend in shoals just before that season ; the time of ascent extends throughout the spring and suinmer. A salmon newly arrived in fresh water from the sea is ealled a clean salmon, on account of its bright, well-fed appearance ; during their stay in the rivers the fish lose the brilliancy of their scales and detcriorate in condition. The time of year at which clean salmon ascend from the sca varies greatly in different rivers ; and rivers are, in relation to this subject, usually denominated early or late. The Scottish rivers flowing into the German Ocean and Pentland Firth are almost all early, while those of the Atlantic slope are late. The Thurso in Caithness and the Naver in Suther- Tandshire contain fresh-run salmon in December and January ; the same is the case with the Tay. In Yorkshire salmon commence their ascent in July, August, or September if the season is wet,

but if it is dry their migration is delayed till the autumn rains set in, In all rivers more salmon ascend immediately after a spate or flood than when the river is low, aud more with the flood tide than during the ebb.

In their ascent salmon are able to pass obstructions, such as water- falls and weirs of considerable height, and the leaps they make in surmounting such impediments and the persistence of their efforts are very remarkable. In a great many rivers anadromous Salmon- oids have been excluded from the upper reaches by artificial obstructions, such as dams and weirs, constructed for the purpose of utilizing the water of the stream, or to obtain water power, or simply to facilitate the capture of the fish. Other rivers have been rendered uninhabitable to salmon by pollutions. The state of the Thames within the boundaries of London has since the beginning of the present century exeluded Salmonoids entirely from the river; but every season salmon and grilse arc taken in or near the Thames estuary, and there is no doubt that if the water could again be rendered moderately elear, and if fish-ways were provided at the impassable weirs, the upper waters of the Thames would again be frequented by salmon and migratory trout.

The life history of Salmo trutta and S. eambrieus is very similar to that of Salmo salar. The river trout, 8. fario, makes a redd in the shallower parts of streams in the same manner as the salmon, the only difference being that the mound of gravel forming the redd is smaller, the egg lying from one to two feet below the surface. The breeding period of the trout varies in different rivers, within the limits of September and March.1_ ‘The number of eggs pro- duced by each female is about 800 for every pound of the parent’s weight ; about 40,000 of the eggs make a gallon, so that they are considerably smaller than those of S. salar. The trout of Loch Leven, S. levenensis, ascend the streams feeding the loch, in order to spawn, at the end of September and beginning of October. The habits of other species of lake trout are similar to those of S. levenensis.

The charrs differ from lake trout in the fact that they do not ascend streams in order to spawn, but form their redds in the gravelly shallows of the lakes they inhabit. The spawning period of the eharr of the Cumberland lake district is from the beginning of November to the beginning of December. The eggs of the charr have been found to hatch in from 60 to 90 days, the

great majority in 70 days, at an average temperature of 40° F. The American species, 8. fontinalis, breeds at about the samc time as S. fario; its eggs are only half the size of those of the latter.

The smelt, O. eperlanus, is a gregarious fish and exhibits regular migrations in mostestuaries. It is common in the Solway, the Firth of Forth, the rivers of Norfolk, and the estuary of the Thames. In most places where it is found it remains in the fresh and brackish water from August until May, spawning about the month of April, and afterwards deseending to the sea for the

Tlowietonn, is at 44°1—Salmo fario, 71 days; S. levenensis, 72; S. fontinalis, 73; S. salar, 77.

summer. At Alloa on the Forth smelts are taken in large numbers by seine nets in spring, before and during the spawning period. There is a regular fishery for them at the same season on the Solway Firth and in Norfolk. The food of the smelt consists chiefly of young fish, especially young herrings, and crustaceans. The eggs are small, yellowish in colour, and adhesive, not adhering by the surface merely as is the case with those of the herring, but each egg posscssing a short thread the end of which becomes attached to planks, stones, or other solid objects in the water. According to Mr Day the eggs are deposited near the high-water mark of spring-tides, so that they must be exposed to the air during the ebb. ‘The smelt when in the sea is largely eaten by the picked dog-fish (Acanthias vulgaris). The species is absent from the southern coast of England and from Ireland, the smelt recorded as occurring on those coasts being probably the atherine (Atherina), often called the sand-smelt. 0. eperlanus is abundant ou the coast of Finland, and also iscommon there in freshwater lakes, in whieh it remains all the year round. It isalso common on the Atlantic coast of France. It is of intcrest to note that the smelt in Britain and on other coasts, when not confined to fresh water, is, in its migration, intermediate between anadromous Salmonide, which ascend to near the sources of rivers, and such fish as the herring, whieh approach the shore to spawn but do not usually enter rivers. The smelt as a rule ascends estuaries only as far as the region of brackish water.

The various species of Coregonus resemble the charr in their habits, spawning in the autumn in the shallows of the lakes they inhabit ; their ova are small, and, as mentioned in PiscicuLTURE (q.v.), are non-adhesive and of almost the same specific gravity as fresh water, so that they are semi-buoyant.

The grayling, Thymallus vulgaris, is in Britain exclusively fluviatile ; in Scandinavia it is found also in lakes. It is met with chiefly in clear streams with sandy gravels or loamy beds. It was introduced not many years ago into the Tweed by the marquis of Lothian, and thrives there. It is absent from the Thames, but.is common in most of the rivers of England and Wales —e.g., the rivers of Yorkshire, the Severn, and the Wye. It is absent from Ireland. It feeds on insects and their larvae, crustaceans, and small molluscs. It breeds in April and May, depositing its ova on the surface of the gravel in the shallows, not in aredd. The ova are smaller than those of the trout, and vary in colour from white to deep orange, and they hatch from the twelfth to the fourteenth day after extrusion. The fry grow to 4 or 5 inches in length by August, and by the following autumn to 9 or 10 inches.

Salmon Fishery Legislation.

In England and Wales the common law is that every person has an equal right to fish for salmon in the sea and in navigable tidal rivers, while the proprietors of the soil on the banks of rivers which are not navigable have the exclusive right of fishing in them. The erection of stake-nets, or other fixed engines for the capture of salmon in estuaries or on the sea-coast is necessarily incompatible with the maintenance of the publie right of fishing, and has therefore from very early times been regarded as illegiti- mate. There has consequently been a eonstant conflict between legislation and private interest over this point. By Magna Charta all fishing weirs were abolished except on the sea-coast, but the object of this seems to have been rather the protection of the freedom of navigation than the advantage of the salinon fisheries or the maintenance of a public right. In later times fixed engines were repeatedly declared illegal and their erection prohibited by statute. Finally in 1861 they were definitively abolished in all cases except where legal right to maintain them could be conelusively proved. ‘The Salmon Fishery Act of 1861, of which the prohibition Just referred to was

one of the clauses, was based upon the report of a royal commission appointed in 1860 to inquire into the condition of the salmon fisheries, and it forms the basis of the regulations at present in force, all previous legislation being by it expressly abolished and superseded. It prohibited the capture of unclean and unseasonable salmon, made a uniform close season for England and Wales, ordained a weekly close season of forty- two hours, provided for the erection of fish-passes and regulated the use of fishing weirs on non-navigable rivers, vested the eentral authority of the salmon fisheries in the Home Office, and provided for the appointment of inspcetors. In 1863 an Act was passed prohibiting the exportation of salmon during the elose time. In 1865, as it was found useless to legislate without machinery to enforee the law, an Act was passed to constitute fishery districts under the control of local boards of conservators appointed by the magistrates in quarter-sessions. These boards were empowered to enforce a licenee duty on fishing implements used in public waters. One or two minor salmon fishery Acts were passed in succeeding years, but the next important piece of legislation on the subject was the Act of 1878, the two most im- portant provisions of which are (1) that fishermen in public waters for every £50 of licence duty which they pay elect a member of the

local board of conservators, and (2) that each board of conservators may make bye-laws for the regulation and improvement of the fisheries within its own district. The annual close time for salmon in England and Wales at present for nets commences Aug. 14-Sept. 30 and closes Feb. 2-April 1, varying in different districts within the limits given; for rods the close time is Sept. 30—Novy. 29 to Feb, 1-May 1. The law as regards close time for fixed engines was amended in 1879. The mcthod of fishing followed in the English and Welsh estuarics is in consequence of the above course of legislation that of sweep-nets worked from shore by boats; a licence duty has to be paid for each net, and stake-nets along the coast are very rare. An inspector of salmon fisheries appointed by the Home Office reports annually. ;

In Scotland the salmon fishery customs in one respect differ much from those of England: stake nets are the common and universal means of salmon capture in estuaries, although sweep nets are also employed. The reason of this is that originally all the salmon fishings belong to the crown or the grantees of the crown. The principal Acts regulating Scottish salmon fisherics are those of 1862 and 1868, but, as the previous statutes have never bcen repealed, the law on the subject is somewhat confused. Scotland has been divided into fishery districts managed by district boards. An annual close time of 168 days is enforced, lasting for nets from August 26 to September 14 until February 5 to February 25, and for rods from September 14 to November 20 until January 11 to February 25. The weekly close time lasts thirty-six hours, from Saturday night till Monday morning. The construction of eruives, mill-ladcs, dams, and water wheels and the size of the meshes of nets are all regulated. In 1882 the management of the salmon fisherics was placed together with that of the sea fisheries under the control of the reconstituted Scottish Fishery Board, to which power was given to appoint an inspector of salmon fisheries ; by this official an annual report of the condition of the fisheries is presented through the Fishery Board to the Home Office.

The principal Act relating to Irish fisheries is that of 1863. Special Fishery Commissioners are responsible for the carrying out of the legal regulations. The country is divided like England and Scotland into fishery districts under the jurisdiction of boards of conservators, by whom clerks and water bailiffs are appointed.

Introduction of Species to New Areas by Human Agency.

Within the past few years, since great activity has been ex- hibited in pisciculture generally, and especially in the culture of Salmonidz, various experiments have been made in the trans- portation of eggs or young fry of valuable species from their native habitats to distant parts of the world. The Amierican so- called brook trout, S. fontinalis, has been imported somewhat largely into Britain by various salmon fishery proprietors. It thrives well in various places in England, Scotland, and Wales where it has been set free, —for example, in Norfolk rivers, near Guildford in Surrey, and in the stock ponds at Howietoun.

_ In Nature, July 16, 1885, an account was given of the introduc- tion of the fry of the American landlocked salmon (S. salar, var. sebago) to the upper watcrsof the Thames. Eggs of S. namayeush, S. sebago, 8. fontinalis, and Coregonus albus have becn successfully forwarded from the hatcheries of the American Fish Commission to the Deutsche Fischerei-Verein in Berlin, and to the Société d'Acclimatation at Paris.

The common trout of Britain, S. fario, was introduced with complete success into Tasmania nearly twenty years ago by Frank Buckland, and is now abundant in the Tasmanian streams, although it is reported to be much less valucd as food there than at home. From Tasmania the eggs were transported to the rivers in Otago, New Zealand, where they also thrive and breed (see Trans, of Otago Institute, 1878). In 1866 Mr Francis Day introduced the fry of the same species into the rivers of the table-land of the Nilgiris in the neighbourhood of Madras. The experiment on this occasion failed, but two years later the establishment of the species in the district in question was successfully accomplished by Mr M'Ivor, who imported the fry from Scotland.

Salmon Culture.

For the artificial culture of Salmonoids the reader is referred to the article PIscIouLTURE. The following account of the salmon and trout hatcheries in Scotland is abridged from a paper read before the Scottish Fisheries Improvement Association in Edin-

burgh, 26th November 1884, by J. Barker Duncan, the honorary secretary to the Association ;

SALMONID &#

The principal institution of its kind in Scotland at present is the Howietoun Fishery, belouging to Sir J. Gibson Maitland, who commenced it in 1873, Howie- toun is about four miles from Stirling. The establishment contains thirty-two fish ponds and a large hatching-house; there are also four ponds at Craigend, and one of 9 acres at Goldenhove, where fish are reared to their adult condition, The hatching-boxes are of wood, and the eggs are kept during development on glass grilles. 'The water supply is abundant, about a

million gallons of spring water flowing through the ponds every twenty-four hours, The eggs hatched in greatest numbers are those of the Loch Leven trout, but Salmo salar and the common trout (Salmo fario) are also extensively rcared. The American brook trout, S. fontinalis, is also cultivated. More than ten millions of ova are annually treated at thishatchery. In 1884 ninety thousand young fish were distributed to various parts of Great Britain and Ireland, and two consignments of trout and one of salmon ova were successfully sent to New Zealand.

The Solway Fishery, belonging to Mr Joseph J. Armistead, was established in 1881, to supersede the Trentdale Fishery near Keswick, Cumberland. It is sitn- ated near the Solway in Kirkcudbrightshire. Various kinds of trout and charr, salmon and sea-trout, grayling, and other freshwater fish are bred. The hatching- house is fitted to hatch about a million ova. Small and large quantities of ova are supplied to applicants for purposes of stocking or for experiments in fish culture.

The Stormontfield Ponds were establishcd in 1853 by proprictors of Tay fisheries, They are situated about 5 miles above Perth on the Tay and occupy about 2 acres of ground. The Stormontfield experiments above referred to were carried out at these ponds undcr the direction of Mr Robert Buist. The establishment is now almost superseded by the Dupplin Hatchery, but is still used tosome extent. The hatching-boxes, 360 in number, are in the open air, and the eggs are placed on gravel at the bottom of the boxes ; a larger percentage of loss occurs with this system than when glass grilles arc used. ‘Two of the ponds at Stormontfield are stocked with parr from the Dupplin Hatchery, about 20,000 being placed in them in 1884; the parr are fed with ground liver, and are liber- ated in the river and its tribntaries when two years old.

The Dupplin Hatchery was instituted in 1882 by the Tay district board at Newmill, Dupplin Castle, on the river Earn, a tributary of the Tay. The hatching-house is supplied with spring water, and contains about 300,000 ova, The glass grille system is adopted here, and the fry are liberated in the Tay and its tributaries when about forty days old.

There is a hatchery for Loch Leven trout erected in 1883 by the Loch Leven Angling Association, situated about 800 yards from the loch, beside a small

stream. Inthe season of 1884-85 about 220,000 eggs were laid down. The fry are turned into the feeders of the loch five or six weeks after hatching. Before the erection of this hatchery Loch Leven was several times stocked with fry from the Howietoun Fishery. The great effect of stocking on the produce of Loch Leven is shown by the following figures :—in 1884 over [5,000 trout were taken in the loch during the season from April to September; during the preceding ten years the lake had been supplied with some thousands of fry in five several seasons; previous to 1874 no attempt at stocking had bcen made, and in that year the total catch was about 5000.

In May 1884 the Linlithgow Palace Loch Hatchery was opened by its proprietor, Mr A. G. Anderson, fish merchant, Edinburgh, who holds a lease of the loch tor angling purposes from the crown. The hatchery is intended chiefly to stock the loch, and is capable of containing about 600,000 ova. Experiments on the cultiva- tion of Salmo salar, var. sebago, from America, arc also to be made here.

A private hatchery belonging to the marquis of Ailsa, capable of hatching about 250,000 ova, is situated at Culzean in Ayrshire. Salmon ova are obtained from the rivers Doon, Stinchar, and Minnock, and the fry turned again into those rivers when about six weeks old. Charr, S. fontinalis, and Loch Leven trout are also hatched to stock the hill lochs of the estate of Culzean. Accord- ing to Mr Young the number of salmon in the Doon has been considerably increased by the artificial stocking from this establishment.

Another private hatchery, with a capacity of 50,000, is maintained on the Loch- buy estate, Isle of Mull, for the purpose of stocking the rivers and lakes on the property.

The Aberdeen Hatchery was established in Aberdeen by the district boards of the rivers Dee and Don. From 15,000 to 20,000 fry are hatched here every ycar and are conveyed 10 to 40 miles up the rivers Dee and Don and then liberated.

Various proprietors in Scotland have at various times erected small hatching- houses on the rivers of their estates for the purpose of stocking, but these have not been inaintained. The above-mentioned are the only

salmon-rearing estab- lishments of any importance at present in operation in Scotland.

Salmon Disease.

During the last few years salmon in a great many rivers have been observed to be suffering from an epidemic cutaneous discase from which large numbers have died. So faras is known this disease in its epidemic form is quite a new phenomenon ; there can be little doubt that it must have occurred as a sporadic affection in former times, but it seems on the other hand probable that such mor- tality among salmon as has taken place in some recent seasons must have attracted attention if it occurred, even when accurate observation was rare. ‘The disease was first noticed in 1877 in the Esk and the Nith, flowing into the Solway Firth, and since then it has destroyed very large numbers of salmon in almost every river in Britain. The disease consists in ulcerations of the skin, which begin at one or several spots on the head and body, and ultimately extend to the whole surtace of the fish. The diseased parts of the skin are found when examined to be covered with a fungoid growth, with the mycelium of a fungus consisting of plaited lyphe which extend into and ramify through the tissue of the derma and cpidermis, causing the cells to die, until the super- ficial tissues decay and slough off, and inflammation and bleeding are produced in the deeper and surrounding parts. It is certain that the injury to the skin and flesh of the salmon is caused by the fungus. If a section of the edge of an affected spot be made, and examined microscopically, the cells are seen to be perfectly normal and healthy beyond the region to which the hyphe extend, and the growing points of the hyphe are seen to be penetrating between and distorting these uninjured cells. It is evident therefore that the morbid alteration of the tissues follows the attack of the hyphe and does not precede it. The external superficial part of the mycclium covering a diseased spot of the skin bears the fructification of the fungus. This consists of zoosporangia, which are the enlarged blind terminal parts of certain of the hyphe,

that stand out perpendicular to the surface of the mycelium. Each zoosporangium contains a multitude of spherical spores. These spores are of

the kind technically called zoospores, each on its escape from the sporangium moving about actively by means of two vibratile cilia. The zoosporangium emits the zoospores by an aperture at its end, and when it has emptied itself the hypha begins to grow again at the base of the cmpty membrane and sends up through the cavity of the old zoosporangium a new sprout which becomes a second spore capsule. This feature is characteristic of the genus Saprolegnia, belonging to the Oosporee, various kinds of which are well known to botanists; they usually occur in dead insects or other invertebrate animals in water: the dead bodies of the common house-fly when in a sufliciently moist place almost invariably produce a luxuriant crop of Sapro- legnia. ‘ The commonest species of Saprolegnia is S. ferax, and the salmon fungus has usually received the samc name, as though it were a proved fact that it was identical with that species. But the species of a Saprolegnia can only be ascertained from the characters of its oosporangia, which are quite different from the zoosporangia and are produced much more rarely, and whose contents, the oospores, are fertilized by the contents of simultaneously produced autheridia. Mr Stirling has observed the oosporangia of salmon fungus (sce his papers in Proc. Roy. Soc. Hd., 1878 and 1879), but his description is not sufficient to put the identification of the species beyond a doubt. From Prof. Huxley’s experiments it is evident that the salmon fungus may reproduce for very many gencrations without the appearance of oospores. The salmon fungus grows with great luxuriance on other animal substances. Ina diseased salmon the fungus seems to be confined to the skin and not to give rise to bacteria-like bodies in the internal organs. What are the condi- tions which favour the infection of salmon in a river is a question to which at present no answer can be given. Until it is known under what conditions the Saprolegnia exists in a river before infecting the salinon, the conditions which favour or prevent salmon disease cannot be ascertained. The fungus may have its permanent nidus in decaying vegetable substances, but at present it has not been determined whether it is possible to cultivate the salmon Saprolegnia on vegetable matter; or the disease may be propagated sporadically among the fish, Salmonoids and others, which are permanent residents of the rivers ; or its abundance may depend on the amount of dead animal matter that is available for its nutrition. There is probably always some Saprolcgnia in every river ; the secondary conditions which determine

whether or not the fungus shall multiply on the anadromous salmon to such an

extent as to cause an epidemic have yet to be ascertained. Literature.—Albert Giinther, Catalogue of Fishes in Brit. Mus., London, 1866, yol. vi.; Id., Introduction to Study of Fishes, Edinburgh, 1880; Francis Day, Fishes of Great Britain and Ireland, London and Edinburgh, 1880 to 1884, vol. ii. The following papers of the Conferences of the International Fisheries Exhibition, London, 1883, also contain valuable information :—“ Fish Culture,” by Francis Day; ‘‘Salmon Fisheries,” by Charles 8. Folger; ‘‘ Culture of Salmonidx,” by Sir James Maitland; ‘‘Salmon and Salmon Fisheries,” by David Mine Home. For a most complete and valuable memoir on the salmon discase sce the paper by Prof. Huxley, Quart. Jour. Mic. Sci., 1882. (Geis CD)

SALOME, widow of Alexander Jannzeus, and queen of Judea from 79 to 69 B.c. (see IsRAEL, vol xiii. p. 424). Another Salome is the daughter of Herodias mentioned in Matt. xiv. 6. Her father was Herod, son of Herod the Great and Mariamme, and she became successively wife of her father’s brother the tetrarch Philip (son of Herod the Great by Cleopatra; see Hrrop Purttp), and of Aristobulus.

SALONICA, or Satonrgr (Ital. Salonicco, Turkish Selanik, Slav. Solun, the ancient Thessalonica), during the Roman empire the capital of the province of Macedonia, and still one of the most important cities of European Turkey, the chief town of an extensive vilayet which includes the sanjaks of Salonica, Serres, Drama, and Monastir, and has an aggregate population of 1,500,000. Salonica lies on the west side of the Chalcidic peninsula, at the head of the Gulf of Salonica (Sinus Thermaicus), on a fine bay whose southern edge is formed by the Calamerian heights, while its northern and western side is the broad alluvial plain produced by the discharge of the Vardar and the Inje-Karasu, the principal rivers of western Macedonia. Built partly on the low ground along the edge of the bay and partly on the hill to the north (a compact mass of mica schist), the city with its white houses enclosed by white walls runs up along natural ravines to the castle of the Seven Towers (Heptapyrgion), and is rendered pictur- esque by numerous

domes and minarets and the foliage of elms, cypresses, and mulberry trees. The hill of the

Heptapyrgion is dominated by a second and that by a third eminence towards the north. The commercial quarter of the town, lying naturally to the north-west, towards the great valleys by which the inland traffic is conveyed, is now pierced by broad and straight streets paved with lava; and the quay extends from the north-west of the city for four-fifths of a mile to the Kauli-Kule (Tower of Blood), or as it is now called Ak-Kule (White Tower). The old Via Egnatia traverses the city from what is now the Vardar Gate to the Calamerian Gate. The houses are for the most part insignificant wooden erections covered with lime or mud. Two Roman triumphal arches used to span the Via Egnatia. The arch near the Vardar Gate—a massive stone structure probably erected after the time of Vespasian— was destroyed about 1867 to furnish material for repairing the city walls; an imperfect inscription from it is now preserved in the British Museum.! The other arch, popu- larly called the arch of Constantine, but by Leake assigned to the reign of Theodosius, consisted of three archways built of brick and faced with marble. It is now in q very dilapidated state.? A third example of Roman architecture —the remains of a white marble portico supposed to have formed the entrance to the hippodrome—is known by the Judzeo-Spanish designation of Las Incantadas, from the eight Caryatides in the upper part of the structure. The conspicuous mosques of Salonica have nearly all an early Christian origin; the remarkable preservation of their mural decorations makes them very important for the history of Byzantine architecture. The principal are those dedicated to St Sophia, St George, and St Demetrius.

St Sophia (Aya Sofia), formerly the cathedral, and probably erected by Justinian’s architect Anthemius, was converted into a mosque in 1589. It is cased with slabs of white marble. The whole length of the interior is 110 feet. The nave, forming a Greek cross, is surmounted by a hemispherical dome, the 600 square yards of which are covered with a rich mosaic representing the Ascension. St Demetrius, which is probably older than the time of Justinian, consists of a long nave (divided into three bays by

massive square piers) and two side aisles, each terminating eastward in an atrium the full height of the nave, in a style not known to occur in any other church. The columns of the aisles are half the height of those in the nave. The internal decoration is all produced by slabs of different-coloured marbles. St George's, conjecturally assigned by Messrs Pullan and Texier to the reign of Constantine, is circular in plan, measuring internally 80 feet in diameter. The external wall is 18 feet thick, and at the angles of an inscribed octagon are chapels formed in the thickness of the wall, and roofed with waggon-headed vaults visible on the exterior; the eastern chapel, however, is enlarged and developed into a bema and apse projecting beyond the circle, and the western and southern chapels constitute the two entrances of the building. The dome, 72 yards in circumference, is covered throughout its entire surface of 800 square yards with what is the largest work in ancient mosaic that has come down to us, representing a series of fourteen saints standing in the act of adoration in front of temples and colonnades, The Eski Juma, or Old Mosque, is another interesting basilica, evidently later than Constantine, with side aisles and an apse without side chapels. The church of the Holy Apostles and that of St Elias also deserve mention. Of the secular buildings, the Caravanserai, usually attributed to Amurath II., probably dates from Byzantine times.

The prosperity of Salonica has all along been largely that of a commercial city. During the Christian centuries before the Mohammedan conquest the patron saint of the city was also the saint of a great market or fair to which merchants came from all parts of the Mediterranean, and even from countries beyond the Alps. At the beginning of the present century a large export trade was carried on in woollen and cotton fabrics, white and red yarns, grain, wool, tobacco, yellow berries, silk fabrics, sponges, &c. ; and silk gauze was manufactured in the city. Direct British trade with Salonica began after the Greek war of independence. Woven fabrics are at present imported from England, Austria, Germany, Switzerland, and Italy; sugar mainly from Austria ; coffee from South America (partly direct); petroleum from America and Russia ; soap from Greece and Crete; metal goods from England, France, and Austria; and coal from England. The exports com-

1 See Trans. Roy. Soc. Lit., vol. viii., new series, 1878. 2 See Newton's Travels, &c., in the Levant, vol. i. p. 122. 3 See Stuart's Athens, vol, iii, pl.

45, for engraving.

prise cereals (wheat, barley, oats, maize, rye), tobacco, wool, Lorton, poppy = opium, cocoons, prunes, and timber. In 1884 the industrial establishments were steam flour-inills, a cotton- spinning factory (employing 500 hands and sending its goods to Constantinople, Smyrna, and Beyrout), a distillery, several large soap-works, a nail factory, an iron-bedstead factory, and a number of brick and tile works. :

In Salonica the several nationalities have schools of their own: the Grecks, for example, lave a normal school, a gymnasium, and ninc other schools (one for girls) ; and even the Bulgarians, though their members are comparatively small, have two normal schools. The Jewish community (about 50,000) is of Spanish origin, and still preserves its Judeo-Spanish written in Hebrew characters. Besides their own schools they have the advantage of a large school supported by the Jewish Mission of the Established Churcli of Scotland (instituted about 1860). The total population of Salonica was estimated by Tozer about 1865 as 60,000. It has since in- creased probably to 90,000 or 100,000. The railway opencd to Kiuprili (1862 miles) in 1873 is now extended 75 miles to Mitrovitza. : ;

History.—The older name of Thessalonica was Therma (in allu- sion to the hot-springs of the neighbourhood). It was a military and commercial station on a main line of communication between Rome and the East, and had reached its zenith before the seat of empire was transferred to Constantinople. It became a Roman colonia in the middle of the 3d century, and in the later defence of the ancicnt civilization against the barbarian inroads it played a considerable part. In 390 Thessalonica was the scene of the dreadful massacre perpetrated by command of Theodosius. Constantine re- paired the port, and probably enriched the town with some of its buildings, During the iconoclastic reigns of terror it stood on the defensive, and succeeded in saving the artistic treasures of its churches: in the 9th century Joseph, one of its bishops, dicd in chains for his defence of image-worship. In the 7th century the Slavonic tribes strove to capture the city, but in vain even when it was thrown into confusion by a terrible earthquake which lasted several days. It was the attempt made to transfer the whole

Bul- garian trade to Thessalonica that in the close of the 9th century caused the invasion of the empire by Simeon of Bulgaria. In 904 the Saracens from the Cyrenaica took the place by storm; the public buildings were grievously injured, and the inhabitants to the number of 22,000 were carried off and sold as slaves through- out the countries of the Mediterranean. In 1185 the Normans of Sicily, having landed at Dyrrhachium and marched across country, took Thessalonica after a ten days' siege, and perpetrated endless barbarities, of which Eustathius, then bishop of the see, has left us an account. In 1204 Baldwin, conqueror of Constantinople, con- ferred the kingdom of Thessalonica on Boniface, marquis of Mont- ferrat ; but eighteen years later Theodore, despot of Epirus, one of the natural enemies of the new kingdom, took the city and had himself there crowned by the patriarch of Macedonian Bulgaria. On the death of Demetrius (who had been supported in his endea- vour to recover his father's throne by Pope Honorins III.) the empty title of king of Salonica was adopted by several claimants. In 1266 the house of Burgundy received a grant of the titular kingdom from Baldwin II. when he was titular emperor, and it was sold by Eudes IV. to Philip of Tarentum, titular emperor of Romania in 1320. The Venetians, to whom the city was transferred by one of the Paleologi, were in power when Sultan Amurath appeared, and on the Ist of May 1430, in spite of the desperate resistance of the inhabitants, took the city, which had thrice previ- ously been in the hands of the Turks. The body of St Demetrius, the patron saint, who from the time of his death under Maximian in the 4th century had exercised a marvellous influence on the popu- lar imagination, was hacked to pieccs, though even the Moham- medans attributed virtue to the famous oil from which the saint obtained the title of Myroblete. In 1876 the F rench and German cousuls at Thessalonica were massacred by the Turkish populace,

Besides Tafel's monograph, Dtssertatio de Thessalonica (Berlin, 1889), see Holland's Travels (1815); Grisebach, Rumelien und Brussa, 1889; Bowen's Mount Athos, Thessaly, and Epirus (1852); Boeckh, ¢. I. G., vol. ii.; Texier and Pullan, Byzantine Architecture (1864); Tozer, Highlands of Turkey, 1869.

SALOP. See Suropsutre, .

SALSETTE, a large island to the north of Bombay, with an area of 241 square miles. It lies between 19° 2’ 30” and 19° 18’ 30” N. lat. and between 72° 51’ 30” and 73° 3’ E. long.; it is connected with Bombay Island by bridge and causeway. Salsette is a beautiful, picturesque, and well-wooded tract, its surface bemg well diversified by hills and mountains, some of .considerable elevation, while it 1s rich in rice fields. In various parts of the island are romantic views, embellished by the ruins of Portuguese churches, convents, and villas > its cave antiquities still form a subject of interest.

Ss A L—

roa taal U

At the ccnsus of 1881 Salsette had a population of 108,149 (males 58,540, females 49,609); Hindus numbered 74,736 and Mohammedans 7,036. The island was taken from the Portuguese by the Mahrattas in 1789, and from them the British captured it in 1774; it was formally annexed to the East India Company’s dominions in 1782 by the treaty of Salbai.

SALT. Common salt, or simply salt, is the name given to the native and industrial forms of sodium chloride (NaCl). The consideration of this important substance naturally falls under two heads, relating respectively to sea salt or “bay” salt and “rock” salt or mineral salt. As actually found, however, the one is probably derived from the other, most rock salt deposits bearing evidence of having been formed by the evaporation of Jakes or seas at former (often remote) geological periods. ‘This is seen from their stratified nature, with their interposed beds of clay, which could only have been deposited from solution. The crystals of selenite (hydrated calcium sulphate), moreover, which they contain can only have been formed in water and can never since have been subjected to any considerable amount – of heat, otherwise their water of crystallization would have been driven off. The beds also of potassium and magnesium salts found at Stassfurt and other places, interposed be- tween or overlying the rock salt deposits, are in just the position in which one would naturally expect to find them if deposited from salt water. Finally, the marine shells often occurring abundantly in the surrounding rocks of contemporary periods also testify to the former existence of large neighbouring masses of salt water.

Sea Salt.— Assuming a degree of concentration such that each gallon of sea water contains 0°2547 bb. of salt, and allowing an average density of 2°24 for rock salt, it has been computed that the entire ocean if dried up would yield no less than 4,419,360 cubic miles of rock salt, or about four- teen and a half times the bulk of the entire continent of Europe above high-water mark, mountain masses and all. The proportion of sodium chloride in the water of the ocean, where it is mixed with small quantities of other salts, is on the average about 33°3 per 1000 parts, ranging from 29 per 1000 for the polar seas to 35°5 per 1000 or more at the equator. Enclosed seas, such as the Mediterranean, the Red Sea, the Black Sea, the Dead Sea, the Caspian, and others, are dependent of course for the proportion and qual- ity of their saline matter on local circumstances. Forch- hammer found the following quantities of solid matter in the water of various seas :—

MORE Seay… mekauneeeneee 32°80 grammes per litre, Cattegat and Sound……..... 15°12 .

1) ee AA 4°81 as Mediterranean ….....66 37°50 40 Aculanibicec eee ee 34°30 a

BIRGER (Sede eec vcr ta eee 15‘89 5 Caribbean Sea ….....0..0.c00. 36°10

At one time almost the whole of the salt in commerce was produced from the evaporation of sea water, and in- deed salt so made still forms a staple commodity in many countries possessing a seaboard, especially those where the climate is dry and the summer of long duration. In Portugal a total of over 250,000 tons is annually made in the salt works of St Ubes (Setubal), Alcacer do Sal, Oporto, Aneyro, and Figueras. Spain, with the salt works of the Bay of Cadiz, the Balearic Islands, &c., makes 300,000 tons. Italy has salt works in Sicily, Naples, Tuscany, and Sar- dinia, producing 165,000 tons. In France, between the “‘marais salants du midi” and those on the Atlantic, 250,000 to 300,000 tons are annually produced, besides those of Corsica. The “Salzgirten” of Austria produce collectively from 70,000 to 100,000 tons annually at various places on the Adriatic (Sabioncello, Trieste, Pirano, Capo d’Istria, &c.). In England and Scotland the industry has of late

SALT

years greatly fallen off under the competition of the rock- salt works of Cheshire, but some small manufactories still exist, at North Shields and elsewhere, where salt is made by dissolving rock-salt in sea water, and evaporating the solution to crystallization by artificial heat.

The process of the spontaneous evaporation of sea water has been very carefully studied by Usiglio on Mediterranean water at Cette. The density at first was 1:02. Primarily but a slight deposit is formed (none until the concentration arrives at specific gravity 1:0509), this deposit consisting for the most part of calcic carbonate and ferric oxide. This goes on till a density of 1°1315 is attained, when hydrated calcium sulphate begins to deposit, and continues till specific gravity 1°2646 is reached. At a density of 1°218 the volume of the sea water has become reduced to +255ths of what it was at first, and from this moment the deposit becomes augmented by sodium chloride, which goes down mixed with a little magnesium chloride and sulphate. At-specific gravity 1°2461 a little sodium bromide has begun also to deposit. At specific gravity 1°311 the volume of the water is only ;}$%yths of what it was at first, and it is thus composed :—

Magnesium sulphate ….....~~: ». 11°45 per cent. Magnesitim) CHIOKIAG socccacoccccccccoccsers 1DcDSe 5, otlwum CHIGHAEC se. occcenccss css oscccaeneinn 15°98 $5 OMIM DROME Gy: oc. c.cscceteossseg cise: 2°04 . Potassium: chloride:.....24).c.cs:0~~ - 00.005 3°30 sy;

Up to the time then that the water became concentrated to specific gravity 1°218 only 0°150 of deposit had formed, and that chiefly composed of lime and iron, but between specific gravity 1:218 and 1°313 there is deposited a mixture of—

Callen SUPHAbE oo. ssncssaenees seoeaca=s 0°0283 per ceut.

Magmesinnr sulphate …... 00.0.0… 00.008 00624 _—,,

Magnesium chloride…..... 0°0153 35

SOCUM CHLOTAG:. 6 6.00005, s.asseccoace ens ZHAOT ys

OGM POMC 5 cc acsicecisies vere esecinins’s 0°0222 Pe 2°8389

Ie

And of this we see that about 95 per cent. is sodium chloride. Up to this point the separation of the salts has taken place in a fairly regular manner, but now the temperature begins to exert an influence, and some of the salts deposited in the cold of the night dissolve again partially in the heat of the day. By night the liquor gives nearly pure magnesium sulphate ; in the day the same sulphate mixed with sodium and potassium chlorides is deposited. The mother-liquor now falls a little in density to a specific gravity of 1°3082 to 1°2965, and yields a very mixed deposit of magnesium bromide and chloride, potassium chloride, and magnesium sulphate, with the double magnesium and potassium sulphate, corresponding to the kainite of Stassfurt. There is also deposited a double mag- nesium and potassium chloride, similar to the carnallite of Stassfurt, and finally the mother-liquor, which has now again risen to specific gravity 1°3374, contains only pure magnesium chloride.

The application of these results to the production of salt from sea water is obvious. A large piece of land, varying from one or two to several acres, barely above high-water mark, is levelled, and if necessary fore with clay so as to prevent the water from perco- lating and sinking away. In tidal seas a “jas” (as the storage reservoir is called) is constructed alongside, similarly rendered im- pervious, in which the water is stored and allowed to settle and concentrate to a certain extent. In non-tidal seas this storage basin is not required. The prepared land is partitioned off into large basins (adernes or muants) and others (called in France aires, ewutllets, or tables salantes) which get smaller and more shallow in proportion as they are intended to receive the water as it becomes more and more concentrated, just sufficient fall being allowed from one set of basins to the other to cause the water to flow slowly through them. The flow is often assisted by pumping. The sea salt thus made is collected into small heaps on the paths around the basins or the floors of the basins themselves, and here it under- goes a first partial purification, the more deliquescent salts (espe- cially the magnesium chloride) being allowed to drain away. From these heaps it is collected into

larger oncs, where it drains further, and becomes more purified. Here it is protected by thatch till required for sale.

The salt is collected from the surface by means of a sort of wooden scoop or scraper which the workman pushes before him, but in spite of every precaution some of the soil on which it is pro- duced is inevitably taken up with it, communicating a red or grey tint. Sea salt is thence known in many of the French markets as sel gris, and frequently contains as much as 15 per cent. of impurity. Yet such is the ignorance and prejudice of many people that they will buy it in preference to the purer article from the evaporation of rock-salt brine, asserting its action to be milder and more even. Even if this were true they forget that mud ought to be cheaper than salt. The salt made on the coast of Brittany possesses the following composition :—

229

Sodium, ein omit eee ee eeee easton ses 87°97 per cent. Magnesimmm cliloridien ss… «4… 2eseee0 sos 1°58 e Magnesium sulphate ….....0.005 0°50 FA Cateriin, Sal WAG iaiseccnss gtiaiceneaweareinn 1°65 59 ImSo leet, Oe: ee Mean an eee 0°80 5 WPAILGT Yo. tae eet ont Ne ee ny eben 2 7°50 i

Generally speaking this salt goes into commerce just as it is, but in some cases it is taken first to the refinery, where it either is simply washed and then stove-dried before being sent out or is dis- solved in fresh water and then boiled down and crystallized like white salt from rock-salt brine. The salt of the “salines du midi” of the south-east of France is far purer than the above, however, its composition being as follows :—

; Dodie CHLONGS. A ces o. 60. dese ere c00.ceee 95°11 per cent. Mages ChIG I. 505 si05 shes siecucee. 0°23 . Magnesiony sul pliate….0..cecncoooeenee f.. 1°30 if Calornat SNPs scsi. ons csesdtels Sons 0°91 “3 S Wnk70) [bil 0) (Nae, Mee or oe ee nee een 0°10 #3 Pec ee ee ion ag 2°35 5

This is perhaps partly owing to the fact that of late years, by way of obviating the above-mentioned cause of impurity, a species of moss has been introduced there with some success from Portugal and forms a bed on

which the salt is deposited. The mother- liquors from the crystallization of the common salt contain still a little sodium chloride and most of the bromine and iodine of the sea water, all the potassium salts, much magnesium sulphate, and a large quantity of magnesium chloride. They are often thrown away as useless, but lately, in the south of France, in the “salines du midi,” they have been used for the production of certain chemicals by a system of ulterior treatment introduced by M. Merle and still continued by his successor M. Pechinet.

As soon as the water arrives at specific gravity 1:2407 and has deposited most of its salt, it is drawn off and stored in large tanks of 50,000 or 60,000 cubic metres capacity. From these it is withdrawn in successive portions, and artificially cooled to 0°4° Fahr. Under these circumstances, indeed at any temperature below 26° Fahr., a double decomposition takes place between the sodium chloride and the magnesium sulphate—crystallized sodium sulphate being thus separated. After being withdrawn and freed from the mother-liquor by a hydro-extractor, this sulphate, which contains two atoms of water, is then rendered anhydrous by heating in a reverberatory furnace. From the refrigerating vessel the water now passes to an ordinary evaporating pan, where the remaining salt is precipitated by boiling, collected, and purified by the hydro- extractor. Here the water attains a specific gravity 1:2680, and, being spread out in a thin layer on a smooth level bed of cement or concrete, deposits on cooling all its potassium as the double chloride of potassium and magnesium, the same as the carnallite of Stassfurt.

Fig. 1 represents the usual form of an Austrian “ Salzgarten” at Capo d’Istria. It is a parallelogram of 2 to 3 acres in extent

— = = —— = = = a

Fie. 1.—Plan of Austrian Salzgarten.

surrounded by a dyke or sea-wall a, The sea water enters by the sluice 6, and passes into the wide fosse c, where, clarifying by settlement, it passes by the openings f into a sextuple series of large basins divided by the scparations d, first-of all entering the

largest ones g,h,z, and then passing by the canals 7 into the other basins &,%, 1,7. The flow of the water from one set of basins to the other is regulated by the sluices ¢,e¢,¢. As it passes from one set of basins to another it becomes more and more concentrated, till at last in the basins m, m the salt deposits. The mother-liquor or

» AE T

“bittern” is then run off into », and thence into the sea. In France it is often stored as already stated for future treatment. In case of heavy rain, the already concentrated water is rnn into the covered cisterns s, s, which serve to hold it till the return of fine weather.

TABLE I.—Pereentage Analyses of Sea Salts from Well-known Localities.

Marais .

aera iyeeseeveseccsce st St Ubes. ~~ Salants de ae Be Cadiz. | S. Felice Trapani.

l’Ouest.

IAUIPHOTIDY sssessccsenss llenry. Berthier. Karsten Henry. g Rs Henry. Ree Watts. | Schrétter and Pohl. Sodium chloride….} 96°00 | 95°19| 89°19] 95°86! 92°46] 96°50} 95:95 87°97 96°40 95°11 92°11] 95°91] 96-05 Magnesium chloride| 0°50 apes oe 0°24 0°55 0°32 0°35 i Bye) 0°20 0°23 ee 0°46 0°50 Magnesitumsulphate| 0°45 1°69 6°20 0°35 0°66 0°25 0°60 0°50 0°45 1°30 0°99 0°40 Osyil Sodium sulphate….} ... mer nee so sae 20¢ oF fee es soe as 2s ose Calcium sulphate… G35 0°56 0°81 1°30 2°28 0°88 1°90 1°65 0°91 0°33 0°49 0°45 uenbOle «cu sveesncieee «ce Aee = 0°20 2°10 3°10 1°95 a 50 2°35 6°30 2°58 DE Insoluble matters…| 0°90 2°45 3°60 0°15 0°95; 0:10 0) 0°80 0°10 O27 0°16 0°07 LORE 5 apeeemenerarc wen a eT) ope ee nee WS Besse mes 5c8 a ieee : ae

Rock-Salt.—This appears to occur in almost every formation, except in the Primary rocks, strictly so called. The oldest deposit of which the age may

be considered to have been anything like precisely determined may be said to be the great salt range of the Punjab, which is regarded as belonging to the Permian; and that lately discovered at Middlesbrough in Yorkshire, immediately overlying the magnesian limestone, may be probably referred to the same period. In the northern counties of England there are frequent instances of brine springs rising from the Carboniferous and contiguous formations. The Cheshire and Worcestershire salt-beds are by some attributed to the Permian ; more generally, however, they are referred to the Trias. Those of West New York and Gooderich (Canada) are said to belong to the Salina period of the Upper Silurian. The deposits of the Vosges, Salzburg, and others of central Germany and Austria are considered to belong to the Trias; that of Bex in Switzerland to the Lias. Those of Wieliczka in Poland, Cardona in Spain, and some Algerian formations are admitted to be Creta- ceous. Those of Bayonne, Dax, and Camarade, in the Pyrenees, are probably Tertiary, while the Dead Sea, Lake Elton in Astrakhan, the Bitter Lakes of the Isthmus of Suez, the Kara Boghaz on the shores of the Caspian, the Limans of Bessarabia south of Odessa, the Runn of Cutch, and certain formations of the Sea of Azoff, &c., are instances of salt formations now in actual progress, The frequent association of bitumen and petroleum with rock-salt and brine is one of the most noticeable features in the geology of those substances, and seems to point to some unknown condition of the formation of the two first named. The Dax salt is close to the bitumen deposits of Bastenés and Gaujac. Borings made at Dax, as well as at Salies about 20 miles distant (where also salt exists), gave vent to an efflux of inflammable gas which continued for several weeks, and the water of several springs in that neighbour- hood is tainted with petroleum. Bitumen and petroleum occur near Volterra in Tuscany, where a large deposit of salt is being worked. In Walachia the two occur in the same formation. In the United States of America and in the south of Russia petroleum and brine are found in many places either actually associated or in near proximity ; petroleum has recently been discovered not far from the salt deposits of Hanover, and one of the beds of rock-salt at Nancy is strongly coloured by bitumen, while almost all rock-salt has a more or less perceptible bituminous odour when struck or rubbed. In the province of Sze- chuen, China, are some remarkable salt springs, where the brine is accompanied by such an efflux of inflammable gas that the latter serves as fuel for its evaporation ; and

other springs accompanied by the same phenomenon exist |

in the same region. In fact, instances without end might be cited of the two occurring together, and it would appear that petroleum for some mysterious reason can only be formed in presence of salt.

The chief rock-salt districts of Europe may be classified as follows :—(1) the Carpathians ; (2) Austrian and Bava- rian Alps ; (3) West Germany ; (4) Vosges; (5) Jura; (6) Swiss Alps; (7) Pyrenees and the Spanish or Celtiberian Mountains ; (8) the British salt deposits; (9) isolated deposits and springs in Russia, Turkey, Italy, é&c.

The Carpathian district may be subdivided into the Moldo- Walachian, Transylvanian, Galician, and Hungarian sections. They form probably the richest and most extensive of the European salt fields and by them alone the entire continent might be supplied for ages. The Transylvanian and Walachian mines are specially numerous and rich. Thousands of tons of salt, in the form of brine from the springs which are common throughout the country, are allowed to run to waste, no important factory existing in the country for its evaporation. The rock is in fact in itself so pure that simply ground it meets all requirements of public consumption. In Galicia the principal mines and those of most historical interest are at Wieliczka and Bochnia. The former, which is justly the most celebrated in the world, is situated 9 miles from Cracow and has been worked continuously for six hundred years. The mass of salt is calculated to be 500 miles long, 20 miles broad, and 1200 feet thick. It is on the north-west side of a ridge of hills, an offset of the Carpathians. The salt is stoped out in longitudinal and transverse galleries, and large vaulted chambers, supported by massive pillars. Explosives are not used in this or any of the other mines of the district. The salt is sold just as it comes from the mine, or else finely ground and packed in casks or sacks. The mine is divided into four levels, and is 284 yards deep and 1 mile 1279 yards long by 830 yards wide. All the grinding and packing is done within it. It is stated that the collective length of the galleries and chambers is no less than 30 English miles and the total yield 55,067 tons per annum. These mines employ from eight hundred to one thousand persons, many of whom live permanently under ground ; the lower levels contain streets and houses and constitute a complete village. Travellers have given glowing descriptions of the crystal vaults, sparkling

aisles, and fairy palaces of this mince. The salt is greyish, and somewhat resembles granite in appearance.

In the well-known district of the Austrian and Bavarian Alps the mine of Salzburg (Salzkammergut) is perhaps the most familiar. The Austrian portion of the district includes the towns of Aussee, Ischl, Hallstadt, and Hallein, and the Bavarian includes Berchtesgaden, Reichenhall, Traunstein, and Rosenheim. In the last-named salt is made from brine conveyed in pipes from Berchtesgaden, passing by Reichenhall, 15 miles in all, with a total fall of 1552 feet. There are also large salt works at Hall near Innsbruck. Here, as in the Carpathian region, most of the rock- salt is sold merely ground, or in lumps, and the trade is, as in other parts of Austria-Hungary, a strict Government monopoly, producing an annual revenue of two and a quarter to two and a half milHious sterling.

The German mines are numerous ; they extend north and south from Segeberg in Holstein to Sulz on the Neckar, and east and west from Kreuznach to Halle. Brine springs and small workings lie scattered all over the country. But two formations of special importance are Stassfurt in Saxony and the Liineburg Heath in

sa LT

Hanover. Fig. 2 represents a section of the Stassfurt beds, and will give an idea of their formation. It appears less than most others to have been subjected to denudation since being formed,

voweee and consequently better than many

ao «others illustrates the formation of such iy acne deposits. Overlying the salt properly

so ealled (¢) is a thin band of anhydrite, and above this b, c, d, beds of variously – col- oured clay, red and grey, eon- taining highly deliquescent salts, forming

= three distinct

~ ¢ 27 i ¥ aha Meets A fs 7 layers. The EE ae as lowest,d, called

7 fu 7p 62 LEE i

- polyhalite, ” contains ‘some

Fig. 2.—Seetion of Stassfurt Salt-Beds. watem éhlo- ride and. with it other deliquescent chlorides. Next to this comes c, the “kieserite” region, about 304 yards thick—here are chiefly potassium and magnesium sulphates; and lastly we have 6, the upper layer or “carnallite” region, 23 yards thick, containing almost exclusively the double potassium and magnesium chlorides, together with other deliquescent salts, nodules of boracite, &c. 1 has been computed that a sea depth of 124 miles would be required for the production of such a series as this.

The Vosges, which is a very important district, supplied a large part of the east of France with salt, till lost by the war of. 1870- 1871, since which time Nancy has gained considerably in import- ance. Geologically speaking, Nancy is included in this basin.

In Switzerland the chief salt district lies on the right bank of the Rhone, near the Lake of Geneva. The principal centres are Aigle, Roche, and Bex, the last being the most important.

The Pyrenees are rich on both sides in brine springs and rock- salt formations. In the south-west of France we have the rock- salt of Dax and Villefranche, and the brine springs of Salies and Briscous, as well as that of Camarade. In Spain both rock-salt and brine are plentiful, as is indicated by the frequent recurrence of the syllable “Sal” in the names of towns (Salinas, Salinillas, Poza de la Sal, &c.).

The Celtiberian or exclusively Spanish district includes various towns scattered over Spain—Salinas de Saelices (Guadalajara), Villafafila (Zamora), Torreximeno, Cazorla, and Hinojares (Jaen), &c.; but perhaps the most remarkable deposit of salt in Spain is that of Cardona in the province of Barcelona, 45 miles north-west of that city. Here is a veritable mountain composed of a bed of remarkably pure salt 142 to 164 yards thick, and forming two masses, each about a mile in circumference. ‘The salt is as

usual stratified, and bears very strong evidence of denudation. It is chiefly pure white, but in parts varies from light-blue to brick-red. It is extracted by an open-air working like stone from a quarry.

There are some brine and rock-salt deposits which can hardly be classified as belonging to any particular district. Such are—in France, at the foot of the Alps, the brine springs of Moutiers and Castellane ; in Italy, Volterra; in Sicily, Nicosia and Mussomeli ; in Croatia, Szambor; in Bosnia, Tusia; in Russia, Bachmutz on the Donetz, Balachna on the Volga, Staraya-Russa near Lake Ilmen, Eupatoria and other places in the Crimea; in Prussia, Walters- dorff, Sperenberg, &c.

The chief centres of manufacture in England are at Northwich, Middlewich, Winsford, and Sandbach in Cheshire, Weston-on-Trent in Staffordshire, Stoke Prior and Droitwich in Worcestershire, and Middlesbrough in Yorkshire! Dunecrne near Carrickfergus in Ireland also possesses a large deposit of salt. The Cheshire and Worcestershire salt deposits are up to the present time by far the most important, the Duncrue deposit being only partially worked. Although brine springs have been known to exist in both these counties ever since the Roman occupation, and salt had been made there from time immemorial, it was not till 1670 that rock-salt about 30 yards thick was discovered at Marbury near Northwich by some men exploring for coal, at a depth of 34 yards. In 1779 three beds of rock-salt were discovered at Lawton, separated from one another by layers of indurated clay. The Marston mine, the property of Messrs Rigby and Fletcher of Northwich, is the largest and perhaps the oldest (there are twenty-five in England altogether where rock-salt is raised). It was worked for abont a hundred years in only its upper bed, but in 1781 its owners decided on sinking farther, and, after traversing a layer of indurated clay intersected with small veins of salt 104 yards thick, they came on another of

1 The termination ‘‘ wich” in English place-names often points to ancient salt manufacture,—the word “wich” (creek, bay; Icel. vik) having acquired a special sense in English usage. In Germany the various forms of the non-Teutonic words Hall, Halle occurring iu place-names point in the same way to ancient salt-works.

rock-salt. This—the bed which has continued to be worked ever sinee—is 38 to 37 yards thick. Bencath it are others, but they are thin and impure. The total depth of the mine to the bottom of the lower level is 120 yards. At Winsford, where the same formation seems to recur, it is 159 yards from the surface. The Marston mine covers an area of about 40 acres. The salt is first reached at 85-40 yards in the Northwich district, and the upper layer is 25-50 yards in thickness (Marston 23-26 yards); it has above it, apparently lying in the recesses of its surface, a layer of saturated brine. This is the brine which is raised at the various pumping stations in Northwich and elsewhere around, and which serves when evaporated to produce white salt. The beds are reached by sinking through the clays and variegated marls typieal of this formation. The salt is blasted out with gunpowder. The Middlesbrough deposit bids fair soon to become of very great importance. It was discovered by Messrs Bolekow and Vaughan in boring for water in 1862 at a depth of 400 yards, but was not utilized, and was again found by Messrs Bell Bros. at Port Clarence at a depth of 376 yards, and is being now worked by them, the heat used for evaporation being the waste gases of their blast furnaces. Encouraged by their suecess the Newcastle Chemical Company have also bored on the opposite side of the river. They failed at first to find the salt, but ultimately succeeded by a fresh boring. The extent of the bed is not yet ascertained, but evidently by the failure of the Newcastle Chemical Company at first it cannot extend far to the north. Its thickness has been proved in so far as the spot where Messrs Bell Bros. made their boring is concerned. These gentlemen have introduced the method employed at Nancy of raising the salt in the form of brine without the trouble or expense of sinking a shaft. In Cheshire the surfaee-water trickling through the overlying strata dissolves the salt, which is subsequently pumped as brine, but here the great depth aud imper- meability of the strata precludes this, so another method has been resorted to. A bore is made into the salt, and lined with tubing in the usual manner, and this tube where it traverses the salt is pierced with holes. Within this is hung loosely a second tube of much smaller dimensions so as to leave an annular space between the two. Through this space the fresh surface water finds its way, and dissolving the salt below rises in the inner tube as brine, but only to such a level that the two columns bear to one another the relation of ten to twelve, this being the inverse ratio of the respec- tive weights of saturated brine and fresh water. For the remaining distance the brine is raised by a

pump. At first, while the cavity remains small, there is some difficulty in getting a continuous supply of brine of full strength, but this ceases to be the case as the solution chamber (as it is called) becomes enlarged. The fresh water, however, as it descends rises to the surface of the salt, tending rather to dissolve its upper layers and extend superficially, so that after a time the superineumbent soil, being without support, falls in. These interior landslips, besides choking the pipes and breaking the communication, often produce sinkings at the surface, such as occurred some time ago at Dieuze (Lorraine). The same inconvenience is beginning to make itself felt in the environs of Nancy, and a similar one produces on a larger scale the sinking and subsidences at Winsford and Northwich so much complained of. The deposits of salt in the United States are unimportant. The country possesses no really considerable salt industry, but is supplied so far as interior consumption is coneerned to a small extent by brine springs. The principal supplies, however, are derived from England and the shores of Spain and Portugal. The same remark applies to Canada. South Ameriea possesses several salt deposits and brine springs, but also takes all its supplies from Europe. Asiatic Russia is very abundantly supplied with salt, as likewise is China; and Persia is perhaps one of the countries most abundantly endowed with this natural and useful product. British India cannot be said to be similarly favoured. In the north, it is true, is the great salt range of the Punjab, as well as the Sambhur Lake, and salt is obtained from sea-water at many places along its extensive seaboard ; but India is not well supplied in many parts, and is dependent largely for this article on the Cheshire salt works. In fact this export is one of the most im- portant branches of their trade.

Table Il. (see next page) is from Spon’s Encyclopedia of the In- dustrial Arts, &c. The clay and insoluble matters given for the Stassfurt salt seem to be somewhat abnormally large.

Rock-salt is probably the origin of more than half the salt manu- factured in the world. It oceurs in all degrees of purity, from that of mere salty clay to that of the most transparent crystals. In the former case it is often diffieult to obtain the brine at a density even approaching saturation, and, as at Moutiers in Savoy and in several of the German salt works, chambers and galleries are excavated within the saliferous bed to increase the dissolving

surface, and water let down fresh is pumped up as brine. Many brine springs also occur in a more or less saturated condition. In such cases the water is sometimes caused to trickle over faggots arranged under large open sheds called “ graduation houses ” (Gradirhéduser), whereby a more extensive surface of evaporation is obtained, and

pA DL T

Tape II.—Percentage Composition of Roek-Salt from Well-known Localities.

(SOc on gee eee Germany. France. _|Stassfurt,) ong Wie- White Marston : Schwabisch-Hall, ou ee “Salins, Vic, Lorraine. Dax. Hall, cake, roel es ae aks alata Wiirtemberg. | Bavaria. roc Lorraine. Galicia. Fe Mee —— Mathie , Authority… Fehling. Bischof. oy dp bene Berthier. Cordier. | M@xwell-| pischof. | Bischof. Lc eeuee sie sre ; | oe ’ ee Se a | ee ee Sodium chloride …... 99°97 | 98°81| 99:85| 94°57] 97-05} 99°30| 97°80] 97:45} 96°97] 99°43 | 100-00 96°70 Calcium chloride…... . 0°02 traee oe = =. ms, ame is 0°25 a 0°68 Magnesium ehloride… trace 0°15 0°97 0°45 : 0°51 0°12 trace Potassium chloride…. — a = = oe nS =a ve trace #e trace Calcium sulphate …... O-O2t)” (Orta 0°89 1°50 0°50 0°30 0°25 0°23] 10F20 0°25 Magnesium sulphate.. eis im trace 2°30 Fos ee Magnesium carbonate 0°15 Calcium carbonate…. 0°16 ahs Ferric chloride …..... 0°01 Clay or insoluble MOSULETS: vec.0.ccne ee dle WO 0°80 3°35 an3 0°20 2°28 Water or loss……..... 0°22 1:00 wm

the brine becomes rapidly concentrated. Fig. 3 shows one of these “Gradirhauser.” It consists of a long shed, the floor of which is a shallow cistern kept filled with the brine to be concentrated, the body of the house being occupied by a single or double row of

Fie. 3.—Gradirhaus,

faggots of blackthorn ¢, and above these a trough or troughs 3, into which the brine is pumped; escaping from these into the channel é, it is allowed to flow or drip slowly over the faggots, and finds its way back to the basin beneath. The shed has its sides open and exposed to the prevailing winds, and, the brine being thus spread over a large surface, there is much scope

for evaporation, and it becomes rapidly concentrated. Several such sheds are often built in series, and the brine, being conveyed from one to the other as it becomes denser, attains at last a specitie gravity of about 1°18, when it is stored in large cisterns till required for evaporation. This is done in large iron pans by the method to be hereafter de- scribed when speaking of rock-salt brine. The usc, however, of the “graduation houses” is dying out, except in particular localities where competition from sea salt or purer rock-salt is difficult, as both their construction and their maintenanec are expensive. The purer rock-salt is often simply ground for use, as we have seen to be the ease at Wieliczka and elsewhere, but it is more frequently pumped as brine, produced either by artificial solution as at Middlesborough and other places, or by natural means as in Cheshire and Worcestershire. One great drawback to the use of even the purest rock-salt simply ground is its tendency to revert to a hard unwieldy mass, when kept any length of time in sacks. This is partly but not wholly obviated by packing in casks, which, however, are dear and not always obtainable. As usually made, white salt from rock-salt may be classified into two groups :—(1) boiled: known as fine, table, lump, stoved lump, superfine, basket, butter, and ehcese salt (Fr. sel fin-fin, sel & la minute, &c.); (2) unboiled : common, chemical, fishery, Scotch fishery, extra fishery, double extra fishery, and bay salt (Fr. sel de 12, 24, 48, 60, and 72 heures). All these names are derived from the size and appear- ance of the crystals, their uses, and the modes of their production, The boiled salts, the crystals of which are small, are formed in a medinm constantly agitated by boiling. The fine or stoved table salts are those white masses with which we are all familiar. Basket

salt takes its name from the conical baskets from which it is allowed to drain when first it is “drawn” from the pan. Butter and cheese salts are not stove-dried, but left in their more or less moist condition, as being thus more easily applied to their respec- tive uses. Of the unboiled salts the first two, corresponding to the Fr. sel de 12 hewres and sel de 24 heures, show by their English names the uses to which they are applied, and the others, the applications of which are equally shown by their names, increly | depend for their quality on the length of time which elapscs between successive “drawings,” and the temperature of the evapora- tiou. The time varies for the unboiled salts from twelve hours to three or fonr weeks, the

larger crystals being allowed a longer time to form, and the smaller ones being formed more quickly. The temperature varies from 55° to 180° Fahr.

One striking difference between the manufaeture of salt from rock-salt brine as carried on in Britain and on the Continent lies in the almost exclusive use in the latter case of closed or covered pans, except in the making of fine salt, whercas in Britain open ones are employed. With open pans the vapour is free to diffuse itself into the surrounding atmosphere, and the evaporation is perhaps more rapid. When covered pans are used, the loss of heat by radiation is less, and the salt made is also elcaner. In works published in France and Germany the statement is frequently made that it would be impossible to sell there a grain of salt manufactured by English methods, but one is fairly justified in doubting this assertion, seeing the ease with which the publie are induced to purchase the sed gris of the marais salants. In fact, it is eustomary in some places to make a special article, which is sold in competition with sea salt, by mixing with the purer one 10 or 12 per cent. of mud or earth. The most advantageous mode of evaporation would evidently be to cause the heated gases from the furnace to pass over the surface of the liquid itself. No wearing- out of the pans need thus be feared, no lowering of the conductive power by incrustation, but the vapour as fast as formed would diffuse itself into heated air in rapid motion, this air being far from its point of saturation and greedy of moisture. The plan, however, which was tricd in Britain by Otto Pohl and in Germany by Born has hitherto been a failure, the salt being for one thing very much soiled with the soot and other products of combustion. Again, this mode of evaporation hardly consorts with the slow progress and perfect stillness required for the prodnction of the larger-grained salts, and gives only fine salt.

Figs. 4 and 5 represent a French pan, while fig. 6 is a British pan, only diffcring from the Continental ones in not being covered in, and in usually having three or four fires in place of two or three, and a separate chamber beyond the pan in which the salt is stoved, heated by the flues conveying the furnaee gases to the chimney after leaving the pan. The first two represent a pan of 64 feet long by 214 feet wide filled with brine, &c., and with circulating fiues beneath for economy of heat. This pan, a, is supported all round its lower edges on a wall and on the pillars }, 6, and heated by two fires ¢, e. The flame and the heated gases of each fire circulate in the

flues p, », p, in which are holes at various convenient points for cleaning ; thus then these gases are made to traverse the length of the pan three times before arriving at the chimneys n, ” or the drying floors 0, 0. The channels ¢, ¢ beneath the fiues (fig. 5) serve to warm the air which feeds the fires, and, entering at the further end of the pan, traverses them and issues warm into the ash pit g, which is of course otherwise closed by the door h. The steam, collecting beneath the cover m, of which the upper portion ¢ is attached to the timbers of the roof,

mae LT

issues by the chimney &, while below a series of shutters allow access for the various manipulations. The two drying floors 0, 0 are each heated by three flues q, 9, q,

:

| Oy. AK)

LEZ

hey

Se

L

WES

= | NN | ISS OOM YY

I.SCOoAG

i

Ae

SSS” €6>@BOMDHH AD

SSSR NY S SS S S

Fic. 4. Drawing in transverse section of a Fishery Salt Pan, with all the latest improvements, as used in France.

continuations of those below the pan, within which circulate the heated gases on their way to the main chimney, and on this floor is spread the salt to be dried. The floor of a pan is generally at first slightly arched towards the centre, so that when new a pan

Fic. 5.—The same in longitudinal seetion.

is rather deeper at the sides than in the middle, but they soon flatten out and warp in all directions on being fired. This warp- ing is a great inconvenience, opening communications between the flues and in- terfering sadly with the ar- rangenients of these _— latter just described, somuch so that some makers prefer simple iron or brick supports placed here and there, without any de- . finite arrange- On the Continent the pan is often suspended by iron rods from the beams of the roof. The warping or buckling, the scaling, and the formation of “cats,” as the workmen call the sort of stalactites of salt which form in the flues, arising from leaks in the pan, are perhaps among the worst annoyances of the saltmakers, The pans are of ordinary

Fic. 6.— British Salt Pan. whieh the salt is drawn.

H, H, hurdles into

233

boiler plates riveted together. The plates vary in size, but usually are 2 feet by 4 feet, and rather smaller over tlie fire. The grate, which should be such as to produce a moderate and diffused heat, is of the ordinary kind, and the firing is usually done from a pit below the end of the pan. In England they use “slack” sometimes called ‘‘ burgey”; abroad they use all kinds of fuel— wood, coal, lignite, and turf; and they also in many places are in the habit of protecting the pan from the more intense heat immediately over the fire ¢ by a guard ¢ at that particular part. As a means of pro- ducing a diffused

and gentle heat without smoke, water gas will probably come to be used by and by. On the Continent the flues are often 2 or 2} feet high, and in Britain they are usually half that height. As, however, a slow and regular draught is to be aimed at, on the principle enunciated by Mr Fredk. Siemens, the Continental plan seems the more rational. Space does not here admit of a description of the so-called machine pans—the clay paus of the Cheshire Amalgamated Salt Company or Otto Pohl's system. !

In Britain the brine is so pure that, keeping a small stream of it running into the pan to replace the losses by evaporation and the removal of the salt, it is only necessary occasionally (not often) to reject the mother-liquor when at last it becomes too impure with magnesium chloride ; but in some of the works on the Con- tinent, especially those of North Germany, the mother-liquor not only contains more of this impurity but becomes quite brown from organic matter on concentration, and totally unfit for further service after yielding but two or three crops of salt crystals. Some- times, to get rid of these impurities, the brine is treated in a large tub (bessoir) with lime; on settling it becomes clear and colourless, but the dissolved lime forms a skin on its surface in the pan, retards the evaporation, and impedes the crystallization. At times sodium sulphate is added to the brine, producing sodium chloride and magnesium sulphate by double decomposition with the magnesium chloride. A slight degree of acidity seems more favourable to the crystallization of salt than alkalinity ; thus it is a practice to add a certain amount of alum, 2 to 12 fb. per pan of brine, especially when, asin fishery salt, fine crystals are required. The salt is ''drawn" from the pan and placed (in the case of boiled salts) in small conical baskets hung round the pan to drain, and thence moulded in square boxes, and afterwards stove-dried, or (in case of unboiled salts) ''drawn" in a heap on to the **hurdles," on which it drains, and thence is carried to the store.

In most Continental countries a heavy tax is laid on salt; and the coarser as well as the finer crystals are therefore often dried so as not to pay duty on more water than can be helped.

The brine used in the salt manufacture in England is very nearly saturated, containing 25 or 26 per cent. of sodium chloride, the utmost water can take up being 27 per cent.; and it ranges from 38 to 42 ounces of salt per gallon.

In some other countries, as has been explained, the brine has to be concentrated before use, and every ounce per gallon by which the brine is below saturation indicates a difference of cost in the production from it of salt of about 43d. to 44d. per ton. Subjoined are four analyses of brine taken from Messrs Richardson and Watts's Chemistry applied to the Arts and Manufactures :—

Cheshire. Worcestershire. Constituents in 100 Parts

Bae Marston. | Wheelock. | Droitwich.| Stoke. Chloride of sodium…..... 25°322 | 25°333 | 22°452 | 25:492

Chloride of potassium….. As ee das 3 Bromide of sodium…..... '011 020 trace trace Iodide of sodium…. .....| trace trace trace trace

Chloride of magnesium…) ... 7y ass = Sulphate of potash…..... trace trace trace trace Sulphate of soda…..... "146 390 594

Sulphate of magnesia….. eis oe oe tes Sulphate of limes. ...5….. 391 "418 387 261 Carbonate of soda…. ..... 036 re 115 016 Carbonate of magnesia….| +107 '107 034 034

Carbonate of manganese..| trace trace So re Carbonate of lime…..... trace trace trace trace Phosphate of lime…..... trace | trace trace trace Phosphate of ferric oxide.| trace trace trace trace

AMMMUINAS of. .cie cus ces otee trace trace oa es UNGRES, jcecsae deanveda «cee awe trace trace 26'013 | 26°049 | 23°378 | 26°397

The price of salt at the works may be said to range froin 4s. 6d. to 6s. per ton, the former being less than the cost price as given before the British parliamentary commission in 1881. It is there stated to be—brine, 6d.; labour, 10d.; fuel 3s. ; rent, intcrest, &c., 1s. ; total, 5s. 4d. Thus the margin for profit is but small, almost the only gain being said to accrue from the lightering, most of the salt manufacturers doing the carriage in their own " flats."

1 See Spon''s Encyclopedia of the Industrial Arts, &c. XI. — 30

Saltmaking is by no means an unhealthy trade, some slight sore- | and believed that the presence of salt in the soil invested a district

ness of the eyes being the only affection sometimes complained of ; indeed, the atmosphere of steam saturated with salt in which the workmen live seems specially preservative agaist colds, rheumatism, neuralgia, &c. It is said that wages are rather better and employment more regular in Worcestershire than in Cheshire. ; ;

The parliamentary commission above referred to was appointed with a view to the investigation of the causes of the disastrous subsidences which are constantly taking place in all the salt districts, and the provision of a remedy. It led to no legislative action ; but the evil is recognized as a grave one. At Northwich and Winsford scarcely a house or a chimney stack remains straight. Houses are keyed up with “shaps,” “ face plates,” and ‘‘ bolts, and only kept from falling by leaning on one another. The doors and windows have become lozenge-shaped, the walls bulged, and the floors crooked. Buildings have sunk,—some of them dis- appearing altogether. Lakes have been formed whiere there was solid ground before, and incalculable damage done to property in all quarters. At the same time it is difficult to sce how this gricvance can be remedied without inflicting serious injury, almost ruin, upon the salt trade. The workings in Great Britain represent the abstraction of rather more than a cubic mile of rock every five years, and of this by far the larger part is in Cheshire. :

Manley gives the following statistics of the production of salt in England for 1881 :—

Northwich……. oeoets PR ec neanc en ca 500,000 tons,

: WHOL a.c..c0cc ccvecoesee caveceneve 1,000,000 ,, Cheshire…….. IMBUIVEGITED: «<6 ossecc-scasieceveccs-s 30,000 2. Wheelock and Lawton…..... 100,000 ,,

Staffordshire… Shirleywick and Weston-on-Treut 4,000 _,, Ver ditesteaihie ID SRO AW AiG) tsa cscnaseonosonmcscdanpastmec 115,000 ,, OE PPS VORTEC Deen BRIO... o/c eer nteek laa 105,000 _,, MGA eee peeesec sence 1,854,000 ,,

He also gives the following details of the salt exported for years ending Dec. 31, 1881 to 1883 inclusive, quoted from the archives of the Salt Chamber of Commerce, whence the importance of the salt trade in England may be judged :—

1881. | 1882. 1883.

From Liverpool :— Tons Tons. Tons. To United States 228,891 223,602 239,459 », British North America… anor 80,784 81,716 99,352 3, West Indies and South America 15,556 23,953 25,413 spU MUDNIGR eres scecegeresensacsdasesceseiev ees 25,181 34,287 36,896 Fe UUSHMIN IER ss. ccsss ersestare stseccesere 324,109 274,866 316,327 PsP MUS LIUILAES os Scoaicesssseccesceureevecses 23,872 17,232 10,860 3, Baltic and North Europe…..... 100,957 116,509 107,978

», France and Mediterranean…..... 1,187 5,001 a

», Holland and Belgium…..... 67,780 67,334 72,353 COWsEWisteresseouteressscsescsersssseee ses cs 41,653 32,462 46,753 Total from Liverpool…..... —| 909,970 876,962 958,194 From Runcorn …..... 148,122 146,716 141,021 », Western Dock…. 85,545 68,147 87,954 Grand! Lobale «..c.02.csvcscerssesenne 1,143,637 1,091,825 1,187,169

F. M. L.

Ancient History and Religious Symbolism. Taare as _ use of salt appears to us, it must have been quite unattainable to primitive man in many parts of the world. Thus the Odyssey (xi. 122 sq.) speaks of inlanders (in Epirus?) who do not know the sea and use no salt with their food. In some parts of America, aud even of India (among the Todas), salt was first introduced by Europeans ; and there are still parts of central Africa where the use of it is a luxury confined to the rich. Indeed, where men live mainly on milk and

flesh, consuming the latter raw or roasted, so that its salts are not lost, it is not necessary to add sodium chloride, and thus we understand how the Numidian nomads in the time of Sallust and the Bedouins of Hadramaut at the present day never eat salt with their food. On the other hand, cereal or vegetable diet calls fora supplement of salt, and so does boiled meat. The important part played by the mineral in the history of commerce and religion depends on this fact; at a very carly stage of progress salt became a necessary of life to most nations, and in many cases they could procure it only from abroad, from the sea-coast, or from districts like that of Palmyra where salty incrustations are found on the surface of the soil. Sometimes indeed a kind of salt was got from the ashes of saline plants (eg., by the Umbrians, Aristotle, Met., ii. p. 459), or by pouring the water of a brackish stream over a fire of (saline) wood and collecting the ashes, as was done in ancient Germany (Tac., Ann, xiii. 57), in Gaul, and in Spain (Plin., H. W., xxxi. 7, 82 sq.); but these were imperfect surrogates. Among inland peoples a salt spring was regarded as a special gift of the gods. The Chaonians in Epirus had one which flowed into a stream where there were no fish ; and the legend was that Heracles had allowed their forefathers to have salt instead of fish (Arist., wt supra). The Germans waged war for saline streams,

with peculiar sanctity and made it a place where prayers were most readily heard (Tac., ut sup.). That a religious significance was attached to a substance so highly prized and which was often obtained with difficulty is no more than natural. And it must also be remembered that the habitual use of salt is intimately con- nected with the advance from nomadic to agricultural life, i.c., with precisely that step in civilization which had most influence on the cults of almost all ancient nations. The gods were worshipped as the givers of the kindly fruits of the earth, and, as all over the world ‘‘bread and salt” go together in common use and common phrase, salt was habitually associated with offerings, at least with all offerings which consisted in whole or in part of cereal clements. This practice is found alike among the Greeks and Romans and among the Semitic peoples (Lev. ii. 138); Homer calls salt ‘‘ divine,” and Plato names it ‘‘a substance dear to the gods” (Timeus, p. 60; comp. Plutarch, Sympos., v. 10). As covenants were ordinarily made over a sacrificial meal, in which salt was a necessary element, the expression ‘‘a covenant of salt” (Numb. xviii. 19) is easily

understood ; it is probable, however, that the preservative qualities of salt were held to make it a peculiarly fitting symbol of an enduring compact, and influenced the choice of this particular clement of the covenant meal as that which was regarded as sealing an obligation to fidelity. Among the ancients, as among Orientals down to the present day, every meal that included salt had a certain sacred character and created a bond of piety and guest friendship between the participants. Hence the Greek phrase Gaas kal TpameCay mapaBalvery, the Arab phrase ‘‘there is salt between us,” the expression ‘‘to eat the salt of the palace” (Ezra iv. 14, Rev. Ver.), the modern Persian phrase namak harém, “ untrue to salt,” z.¢., disloyal or ungrateful, and many others.

It has been plausibly conjectured that the oldest trade routes were created for traffic in salt ; at any rate salt and incense, the chief economic and religious necessaries of the ancient world, play a great part in all that we know of the ancient highways of commerce. Thus one of the oldest roads in Italy is the Via Salaria, by which the produce of the salt pans of Ostia was carried up into the Sabine country. Herodotus’s account of the caravan route uniting the salt-oases of the Libyan desert (iv. 181 sq.) makes it plain that this was mainly a salt-road, and to the present day the caravan trade of the Sahara is largely a trade in salt. The salt of Palmyra was an important element in the vast trade between the Syrian ports and the Persian Gulf (see PALMYRA, vol. xviii. p. 200), and long after the glory of the great merchant city was past “the salt of Tadmor” retained its reputation (Mas‘idi, viii. 398). In like manner the ancient trade between the Hgean and the coasts of southern Russia was largely dependent on the salt pans at the mouth of the Dnieper and on the salt fish brought from this district (Herod., iv. 58; Dio Chrys., p. 487). In Pheenician commerce salt and salt fish—the latter a valued delicacy in the ancient world—always formed an important item. The vast salt mines of northern India were worked before the time of Alexander (Strabo, v. 2, 6, xv. 1, 830)and must have been the centre of a wide- spread trade. The economic importance of salt is further indi- cated by the almost universal prevalence in ancient and medizval times, and indeed in most countries down to the present day, of salt taxes or of Government monopolies, which have not often been directed, as they were in ancient Rome, to enable every one to pro- cure so necessary a condiment at a moderate price. In Oriental systems of taxation high imposts on salt are

never lacking and are often carried out in a very oppressive way, one result of this being that the article is apt to reach the consumer in a very impure state largely mixed with earth. “The salt which has lost its savour” (Mat. v. 18) is simply the earthy residuum of such an impure salt after the sodium chloride has been washed out.

Cakes of salt have been used as money in more than one part of the world, —for example, in Abyssinia and elsewhere in Africa, and in Tibet and adjoining parts. See the testimony of Marco Polo (bk. ii. ch. 48) and Col. Yule’s note upon analogous customs elsewhere and on the use of saltas a medium of exchange in the Shan markets down to our own time, in his translation of Polo, ii. 48 sq. In the same work interesting details are given as to the importance of salt in the financial system of the Mongol emperors (ii. 200 Sq.). (W. Ras)

SALTA, capital of a province of the same name in the Argentine Republic, with a population of about 20,000 (1881), is a well-built town occupying a somewhat in- salubrious situation, 3780 feet above the sea, at the con- fluence of the Rio de la Sillata and Rio de Arias, head streams of the Rio Salado (there called Rio Pasaje or Juramanto), about 820 miles north-west of Buenos Ayres. The town, founded by Abreu in 1582, was originally known as San Clemente de Nueva Castilla, took the name of San Felipe de Lerma when Hernando de Lerma removed it to

its present site, and began to be called Salta in the 17th century. A large trade is carried on with Bolivia.

SALTCOATS, a seaport and watering-place of Ayr- shire, Scotland, contiguous to Ardrossan, and 19 miles north of Ayr. It possesses a good sea-beach, and of late years has become a favourite watering-place. The town received a charter as a burgh of barony in 1528, but afterwards lost its privileges and fell into decay. At a very early period marine salt was manufactured, and salt- pans were erected by Sir Robert Cunningham in 1656, but that industry has now ceased. A harbour was also constructed and for a considerable time there was a large shipment of coal, but the trade has now passed to Ardrossan. The population, 4624 in 1871, in 1881 was

5096.

SALTILLO, the capital of the state of Coahuila in Mexico, 65 miles south-west of Monterey by the Mexican National Railway, on the slope of a hill overlooking a fertile valley. It has well-paved streets, several good public buildings, and cotton factories and other industrial establishments. The population is about 17,000.

SALT LAKE CITY (originally Great Salt Lake City), a city of the United States, the capital of Utah Territory and the metropolis of Mormonism, stands nearly in 41° N. lat. and 112° W. long., at a height of 4250 feet above the sea, on the brow of a slight decline at the western base of the Wahsatch range, and on the right bank of the Jordan, a stream which flows from Utah Lake into Great Salt

Lake.’ By the Utah Central Railroad the city is 36 milessouth of Ogden fx 3 Ti Junction on the — = wo Centreville

Union and Central = Pacific Railroad, and F

it is the terminus of F the Southern and E Western Utah Rail- SALT LAKE C roads. The city is PRedke Tarp yorata t* laid out chessboard fashion, with all the streets 137 feet wide and all the blocks 40 rods square. Shade and fruit trees have

Environs of Salt Lake City.

been freely planted, and on each side of every north and south street flows a stream of pure water in an open channel. With the exception of some modern erections, the houses

are nearly all of sun-dried bricks. The largest and ugliest public building is the tabernacle, with its huge oval wooden dome. It is said to accommodate 8000 to 10,000 persons, and has the second largest organ in America. Within the same enclosure as the tabernacle are the endowment house, where the initiation ceremonies of Mormonism are performed, and the new Mormon temple (1874-5) erected at a cost of $10,000,000. Other conspicuous buildings are the city-hall, used as the Territorial capitol, the

theatre, Walker’s opera house, the Salt Lake pavilion, the museum, the Deseret. university, several hospitals, and the city prison. The population was 5000 in 1850, 8230 in 1860, 12,813 in 1870, and 20,768 in 1880 (86 coloured).

When Great Salt Lake City was founded in July 1847 (cf. MormonisM, vol. xvi. p. 827) the whole region lay far beyond the

advancing wave of western civilization. But the city did not long remain the isolated oasis in the desert which its first settlers made

1 This lake, about 10 miles from the city, the principal body of water in the Great Fremont basin, is 70 miles long by 45 miles broad, has an area of 1900 square miles, and lies 4200 feet above the sea. The water of the lake contains about 64 times more than the average solid constituents of sea water, being almost as heavily impregnated (22°4 per cent.) as that of the Dead Sea (24°5 per cent.). The salt is used in the city without artificial refining.

it; and it now has a considerable non-Mormon population, a United States garrison at Camp Douglas (between 2 and 3 miles distant), and United States judges.

SALTPETRE, or Nirrate or Potash (KNO,), is a salt obtained as a commercial product in three different ways. (1) It occurs as an efflorescence on the surface or in the superficial stratum of the soil in many parts of the world, but specially to a great extent in the Ganges valley and other parts of India. (2) It is obtained in a semi-artificial manner in nitraries or saltpetre plantations. These consist of heaps of decomposing animal matter mixed with lime ashes, road scrapings, and other rubbish covered over from rain, and from time to time damped with the runnings from stables and other urine. Such heaps develop within them small proportions of the salt and other nitrates, and are, in effect, artificial imitations of the saltpetre-bearing soil of India. They were formerly very common in Switzerland, France, Germany, and Sweden. (3) A large quantity of saltpetre is now

prepared from Chili saltpetre, the nitrate of soda, by

double decomposition of the soda salt with another salt of potash. See Nurrrocen, vol. xvii. p. 518, and GUNPOWDER, vol. xi. pp. 319, 323. Saltpetre is of importance in numerous industries, among the most prominent of which are gunpowder manufacture and pyrotechny. It is also used as an oxidizing agent in glass- making and in metallurgical operations. In the curing of meat it is extensively employed with common salt and sugar, and it also occupies an important place in pharmacy.

In the year 1884 337,708 ewt. of saltpetre was imported into the United Kingdom, the estimated value being £306,113. Of this amount 200,065 cwt. came from Bengal and British Burmah alone, and 78,545 cwt. of converted saltpetre came from Germany. During each of the two years 1883 and 1884 the imports of Chili saltpetre, under the name of cubic nitre, excecded 2,000,000 cwt., nearly the whole supply coming from Bolivia and Peru.

SALUS (Safety), a goddess worshipped in various parts of ancient Italy. At Rome a temple adorned with paintings by Fabius surnamed the Painter (Pictor) was dedicated to her in 302 B.c.; and public prayers were offered to her on behalf of the Roman people and the emperor. In 180 B.0., on the occasion of a plague, vows were made to Apollo, Asculapius, and Salus. Here the special attribute of the goddess appears to be “health”; and in later times she was identified with the Greek goddess of health, Hygeia, On coins of Tiberius, Nero, &c., she is represented as a young maiden with the symbol of Hygeia, a serpent drinking out of a goblet.

SALUTATIONS, or greetings, are customary forms of kindly or respectful address, especially on meeting or parting or on occasions of ceremonious approach. Ety- mologically the word salutation (Lat. salutatio, “ wishing health”) refers to words spoken, but the conventional gestures are even more purposeful, and both should be considered together. The principal modes of saluting, when classified, fall into a few groups, with well-defined meanings, the examination of which explains the practice of any particular tribe or nation.

Forms of salutation frequent among savages and _bar- barians may last on almost unchanged in civilized custom, or may be found in modified shapes,

while in other cases they may have disappeared altogether and been replaced by new greetings. The habit of affectionate clasping or embracing is seen at the meetings of the rude Andamaners and Australians, or where the Fuegians in friendly salute hug “like the grip of a bear.”1 This natural gesture appears in old Semitic and Aryan custom :— ‘‘ Esau. ran to meet him (Jacob) and embraced him, and fell on his neck, and kissed him, and they wept” (Gen. xxxiii. 4); so, when Ulysses makes himself known, Philcetius and Eumzus epg ere ae ee aie oe ia

1 W. P. Snow, in Trans. Hthnol. Soc., n. s., vol. i. p. 263.

cast their arms round him with kisses on the head, hands, and shoulders (Odyss., xxi. 223) :—

KAatov tp dud ’Odvoqt datpporr xeipe Baddrre,

rs “a ral kbveoy éyamaduevor Kepadrry Te Kal dos. bs 8 abrws OSuceds Kepards kal xetpas Exvocev.

The embrace continues habitual through later ages, and, though in modern times a good deal restricted, it still marks the meetings of near kinsfolk and lovers. But the kiss, associated with it in passages like those just cited, has no such universality. The idea of the kiss being an instinctive gesture is negatived by its being unknown over half the world, where the prevailing salute is that by smelling or sniffing (often called by travellers “rubbing noses”), which belongs to Polynesians, Malays, Burmese and other Indo-Chinese, Mongols, &c., extending thence eastward to the Eskimo and westward to Lapland, where Linnzus saw relatives saluting by putting their noses together.!_ This seems the only appearance of the habit in Europe. On the other hand the kiss, the salute by tasting, appears constantly in Semitic and Aryan antiquity, as in the above cases from the book of Genesis and the Odyssey, or in Herodotus’s description of the Persians of his time kissing one another—if equals on the mouth, if one was somewhat inferior on the cheek (Herod., 1.134). In Greece in the classic period it became customary to kiss the hand, breast, or knee of a superior. In Rome the kisses of inferiors became a burdensome civility (Martial, xii. 59):—

“Te vicinia tota, te pilosus Hircoso premit osculo colonus.”

The early Christians made it the sign of fellowship: “greet all the brethren with an holy kiss” (1 Thess. v. 26; cf. Rom. xvi. 16, &c.); and this may even now be seen among Anabaptists, who make an effort to retain primitive Christian habit. It early passed into more ceremonial form in the kiss of peace given to the newly baptized and in the celebration of the Eucharist?; this is retained by the Oriental Church. After a time, however, its indiscriminate use between the sexes gave rise to scandals, and it was restricted by ecclesiastical regulations—men being only allowed to kiss men, and women women, and eventually in the Roman Church the ceremonial kiss at the communion being only exchanged by the ministers, but a relic or cross called an osculatorvum or pax being’ carried to the people to be kissed.? While the kiss has thus been adopted as a religious rite, its original social use has continued. Among men, however, it has become less effusive, the alteration being marked in England at the end of the 17th century by such passages as the advice to Sir Wilfull by his London- bred brother :—“in the country, where great lubberly brothers slabber and kiss one another when they meet ; . . . “Tis not the fashion here.”£ The kiss on both cheeks between parents and children on Continental railway plat- forms now surprises the undemonstrative Englishman, who, when servants sometimes kiss his hand in southern Europe, 1s even more struck by this relic of servileages. Court cere- nonial keeps up the kiss on the cheek between sovereigns and the kissing of the hand by subjects, and the pope, like a Roman emperor, receives the kiss on his foot, A curious trace which these osculations have left behind is that when ceasing to be performed they are still talked of by way of politeness: Austrians say, “kiiss d’Hand !” and Spaniards, “beso a Vd. las manos!” “TI kiss your hands!”

Strokings, pattings, and other caresses have been turned to use as salutations, but have not a wide enough range to make them important. Weeping for joy, often occurring naturally at meetings, is sometimes affected as a salutation 15. E, Smith, Linnaus’s Tour in Lapland, vol. i. p. 315.

Bingham, Antiquities of the Chr. Church, bk. xii. c. 4, xv. c. 3.

3 The latter term has supplied the Irish language with its term for

a, es pog, Welsh poc ; see Rhys, Revue Celtique, vol. vi. p. 43. Congreve's Way of the World, Act iii.

SALUYTA TRONS

but this seems to be different from the highly ceremonious weeping performed by several rude races when, meeting after absence, they renew the lamentations over those friends who have died in the meantime. The typical case is that of the Australians, where the male nearest of kin presses his breast to the new comer's, and the nearest female relative, with piteous lamentations, embraces his knees with one hand, while with the other she scratches – her face till the blood drops. Obviously this is no joy- weeping, but mourning, and the same is true of the New Zealand tangi, which is performed at the reception of a distinguished visitor, whether he has really dead friends to mourn or not.®

Cowering or crouching is a natural gesture of fear or inability to resist that belongs to the brutes as well as man ; its extreme form is lying prostrate face to ground. In barbaric society, as soon as distinctions are marked between master and slave, chief and commoner, these tokens of submission become salutations. The sculptures of Egypt and Assyria show the lowly prostrations of the ancient East, while in modern Dahomey or Siam subjects crawl. before the king, and even Siberian peasants grovel and kiss the dust before a noble. A later stage is to suggest, but not actually perform, the prostration, as the Arab bends his hand to the ground and puts it to his lips or forehead, or the Tongan would touch the sole of a chief's foot, thus symbolically placing himself under his feet. Kneeling prevails in the middle stages of culture, as in the ceremonial of China; Hebrew custom sets it rather apart as an act of homage to a deity (1 Kings xix. 18; Isa. xlv. 23); medizeval Europe distinguishes between kneeling in worship on both knees and on one knee only in homage, as in the Boke of Curtasye (15th century) :—

" Be curtayse to god, and knele doun On bothe knees with grete deuocioun ; To mon pou shalle knele opon pe toi, pe toper to py self pou halde alon."

Bowing, as a salute of reverence, appears in its extreme in Oriental custom, as among the ancient Israelites: "bowed himself to the ground seven times"

(Gen. xxxiii. 3).7 The Chinese according to the degree of respect implied bow kneeling or standing. The bowing saluta- tion, varying in Europe from something less than the Eastern salaam down to the slightest inclination of the head, is interesting from being given mutually, the two saluters each making the sign of submission to the other, which would have been absurd till the sign passed into mere civility. Uncovering is a common mode of saluta- tion, originally a sign of disarming or defencelessness or destitution in the presence of a superior. Polynesian or African chiefs require more or less stripping, such as the uncovering to the waist which Captain Cook describes in Tahiti.? Taking off the hat by men has for ages been the accepted mode in the Western world, done in a frequent, demonstrative way by such as make a show of politeness, and who by being “free of cappe and full of curtesye” pay cheaply social debts ; but modern society has modcrated this bowing and scraping (the scrape is throwing back the right leg as the body is bent forward), as well as the curtseys (courtotsie) of women. Eastern nations are apt to see disrespect in baring the head, but insist on the feet being uncovered; the importance attached to entering barefoot is well known to English officials in India; Burmah was agitated for years by “the great shoe

° Grey, Journals, vol. ii. p. 255.

8 A. Taylor, New Zealand, p. 221.

7 See the Egyptian bow with one hand to the knee; Wilkinson, Anc, Eg.

8S. Wells Williams, Middle Kingdom, vol. i. p. 801.

® See references to these customs in Tylor, Harly History of Man- kind, ch. iti,

question,” whether Europeans should be called on to conform to native custom, rather than their own, by taking off their shoes to enter the royal presence.) Grasping hands is a gesture which makes its appearance in antiquity as a legal act symbolic of the parties joining in compact, peace, or friendship ; this is well seen in marriage, where the hand grasp was part of

the ancient Hindu ceremony, as was the "'dextrarum junctio" in Rome, which passed on into the Christian rite. In the classic world we see it passing into a mere salutation, as where the tiresome acquaintance met by Horace on his stroll along the Via Sacra seizes his hand (Hor., Sat., i. 9) :— " Arreptaque manu, ' Quid agis, duleissime rerum ?'"

Giving the right hand of fellowship (Gal. ii. 9) passed naturally into a salutation throughout Christendom, and spread, probably from Byzantium, over the Moslem world. The emphatic form of the original gesture in "striking hands" is still used to make the greeting more hearty. The variety called in English "shaking hands" (Germ. Hénde-schiitteln) only appears to have become usual in the . Middle Ages.2_ In the Moslem legal form of joining hands, the parties press their thumbs together. This has been adopted as a salute by African tribes. But it has been especially English traders and missionaries who of late years have introduced shaking hands far and wide in the world, so that even such rude peoples as Australians and Hottentots, Eskimo and Fuegians, unite in practising this modern civilized custom.

As to words of salutation, it is found even among the lower races that certain ordinary phrases have passed into formal greetings. Thus among the Tupis of Brazil, after the stranger's silent arrival in the hut, the master, who for a time had taken no notice of him, would say " Zre- woubé ?" that is, "Art thou come?" to which the proper reply was, ""Yes, I am come!"* Many formulas express difference of rank and consequent respect, as where the Basuto salute their chiefs with "Zama sevata/" i.e., "Greeting, wild beast!" Congo negroes returning from a journey salute their wives with an affectionate Okowe / but they meekly kneeling round him may not repeat the word, but must say Ka/ ka/®> Among cultured nations, saluta- tions are apt to be expressions of peace and goodwill, as in the Biblical instances, "Is it well with thee?" (2 Kings iv. 26); "Peace to thee, and peace to thine house," &c. (1 Sam. xxv. 6; see Ezraiv. 17). Such formulas run on from age to age, and the latter may be traced on to the Moslem greeting, Saldém 'alaikum/ 'The peace be on you," to which the reply is Wa-alaikum as-salém/ 'And on you be the peace (sc. of God)!" This is an example how a greeting may become a pass-word among fellow- believers, for it is usually held that it may not be used by or to an infidel, From an epigram of Meleager (Anth., ed. Jacobs, vii. 119; cf Plautus, Pen., v., passim) we learn

that, while the Syrian salutation was Shelam (‘Peace !”), the Phoenicians greeted by wishing life (378 11n, the sin, &c., of Neo-Punic gravestones). The cognate Babylonian form, “O king, live for ever!” (Dan. iii. 9), represents a series of phrases which continue still in the Vivat rex/ “Long live the king!” The Greeks said xaipe, “Be joyful !” both at meeting and parting; the Pythagorean dycatvew and the Platonic ed rparrew wish health; ata later time dordlomat, “T greet!” came into fashion. The Romans applied Salve / “Be in health!” especially to meeting, and Vale/ “Be well!” to parting. In the modern civilized world, everywhere, the old inquiry after health appears, the “How do you do?” be- coming so formal as often to be said on both sides without

‘Shway Yoe, The Burman, vol. ii. pp. 158, 205.

2 See Tylor in Macmillan’s Mag., May 1882, p. 76.

3 Lane, Mod. Ey., vol. i. p. 219. 4 Jean de Lery, part ii. p. 204. > Magyar, Reise in Sud-A frika. 6 Cf. vol. xvi. p. 5538, note 1.

either waiting for an answer. Hardly less wide in range is the set of phrases “Good day!” “Good night!” &c., varying according to the hour, and translating into every language of Christendom. Among other European phrases, some correspond to our “welcome!” and “farewell!” while the religious element enters into another class, exemplified by our “Good-bye!” (“God be with you!”), and French Adieu/ Attempts have been made to shape European greetings into expressions of orthodoxy, or even tests of belief, but they have had no great success. Examples are a Protestant German salutation “Lobe Jesum Christum /” answered by “In Euigkeit, Amen/” and the formula which in Spain enforces the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception, “Ave Maria purisima /” answered by “Sin pecado concebida !” On the whole, though the half-meaningless forms of salu- tation may often seem ridiculous, society would not carry them on so universally unless it found them useful. In fact, they serve the substantial purpose of keeping up social intercourse, and establishing relations between the parties in an interview, of which their tone may strike the key note. Montaigne, a master of the courtesy of an age more ceremonious than ours,

truly asserts their importance, “C’est au demourant une trés utile science que la science de l’entregent.” (z. B. T.)

SALUZZO, or Satucss, a city of Italy, at the head of a circondario in the province of Cuneo, 424 miles south of Turin (with which it is connected by railway and a steam tramway), is situated 600 to 650 feet above the sea, just where the last hills of the Monte Viso die away into the plain between the Po and its tributary the Vraita. The upper town preserves some part of the fortifications which protected it when, previous to the plague of 1630, the city had upwards of 30,000 inhabitants; and the hill is crowned by the ruins of an ancient castle. The more im- portant castle of the marquises (in which according to the legend the patient Griselda was confined) is in the lower town and now serves as a penitentiary. Besides the cathedral (Gothic, 1480 —1511), with the tombs of the old marquises, other conspicuous buildings are the churches of San Giovanni (formerly San Domenico) and San Bernardo (the former the finest architectural monument of the marquisate), the old town-house (1462), the new town-house (formerly belonging to the Jesuits), and the theatre (1829). To the north of the city lies the abbey of Staffarda (1130— 1737). The population of the city was 10,145 (commune 16,237) in 1880.

By some authorities Saluzzo is identified with Augusta Vagien- norum. The line of its marquises began (1142) with Manfred, son of Boniface, marquis of Savoua, aud continued till 1548, when the death of Gabriel, imprisoned by Henry II. of France in the eastle of Pinerolo, allowed city and territory to be seized by the French. The marquises of Saluzzo being great opponents of the house of Savoy, and frequently taking part in the struggles between France and the empire, the eity often had to suffer severely from the fortunes of war. Henry IV. restored the marquisate to Charles Emmanuel I. of Savoy at the peace of Lyons in 1601. Among the eelebrities of Saluzzo are Silvio Pellico (whose statue, 1868, gives name to the Piazza del Statuto), Bodoni the famous printer, and Casalis the historian of Sardinia. The history of the marquisate was written by Delfino Muletti, 5 vols., 1829-1833.

SALVADOR. See San Satvapor..

SALVAGE is “the reward which is earned by those who have voluntarily saved or assisted in saving a ship or boat, or their apparel, or any part thereof; or the lives of persons at sea; or a ship’s cargo or any part thereof from peril; or a wreck from total loss” (Roscoe, Admiralty Law and Practice, p. 13). The word salvage is indiffer- ently used to denote the claim, the reward, or the property saved. Salvage is interesting as being perhaps the one case in Iinglish law in which a person may become liable to a claim upon him for services rendered to him without his request, express or implied. Salvage may be either military or civil. Claims for military salvage, 2.c., salvage

on recapture (for which see Prize), are decided by a prize court. The tribunal for determining cases of civil salvage, the usual kind, is a court having admiralty jurisdiction. In England or Ireland the High Court of Justice (Admiralty Division), in Scotland the Court of Session, have cognizance of salvage claims to any amount. The Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, confers jurisdiction on justices of the peace to arbitrate on claims not exceeding £200, or where the value of the property saved does not exceed £1000. Certain county courts named by order in council have by the County Courts Admiralty Jurisdiction Act, 1868, jurisdiction in any claim in which the value of the property saved does not exceed £1000, or in which the amount claimed does not exceed £300. The jurisdiction of the inferior courts is protected by provisions depriving the suitor in the High Court of his costs without a certificate from the judge in cases where the claim might have been made before justices or in a county court. In addition there are various local tribunals exercising a more or less limited jurisdiction in sal- vage claims. Such are the Commissioners within the Cinque Ports, the Court of Passage of the city of Liverpool, and the Royal Courts of Jersey and Guernsey, besides the various Vice-Admiralty Courts throughout the British empire.

The rules which guide the courts in the award of salvage are reducible to a few simple principles, depending partly upon the general maritime law, partly upon the Merchant Shipping Acts, 1854 and 1862. (1) The salvage services must have been rendered within the jurisdiction of the

ADMIRALTY (¢.v.). (2) There must be no legal duty on the part of the salvors to render assist- ance. Therefore there must be very meritorious and exceptional services on the part of the crew, or even of a pilot, a passenger, or the crew of a tug, to entitle any of them to salvage. The same is the case with the officers and crew of a queen's ship, coastguardsmen, &c., who are bound by their position to assist. (3) The property must have been in peril, and rescued by the salvors. (4) The services must have been successful. Of course where a request for help has actually been made, and the property perishes, the right of remuneration nevertheless survives, on the ordinary principles of contract. The basis of salvage proper is service independently of contract.

If these conditions be satisfied, salvage claims take priority of all others against the property saved, and give the salvorsa maritime lien upon such property, enforceable by an action im rem. Salvage of life from a British ship or a foreign ship in British waters ranks before salvage of goods. In distributing the salvage reward the court considers (1) the extent of the peril of the property saved, (2) its value, (3) the nature of the services. This is subject to any contract, not inequitable, made between the parties. Seamen cannot abandon their right to salvage unless they specially engage themselves on a ship to be employed on salvage duty. Salvage of life is rewarded at a higher rate than salvage of property. Misconduct of salvors may operate as a bar to their claim. Salvage reward is commonly apportioned between the officers and crew of the salving ship, its owners, and other persons assisting. The amount is at the discretion of the distri- buting authority. It seldom exceeds in the whole one- half the value of the property saved. Apportionment for salvage services rendered within. the United Kingdom, where the sum does not exceed £200, due by agreement or the order of justices, may be made by the receiver of wreck on application of the parties liable to pay it.

Salvage is a term also applicd by analogy to property not saved at sea, but from fire on land, and also to property recovered from destruction by the aid of voluntary payments. The person making the last advance is entitled to priority in the nature of quasi-

forfeiture of a policy of insurance. Charges in favour of a solicitor upon property recovered or preserved by his means have been several times declared by the courts to be in the nature of salvage of this kind.

The law of the United States is in general agreement with that of England. The court of admiralty jurisdiction is the district court. The area in which salvage services may be rendered is much wider than in England, as it includes the great freshwater navigable rivers and lakes. This difference arises from the greater importance of inland navigation in the United States. See RIPARIAN Laws.

SALVIAN, a Christian writer of the 5th century, was born in Gaul, and most probably in the neighbourhood of Treves or Cologne (De Gub. Dei, vi. 8, 13). His birth has been conjecturally assigned to the period from 390 to 420. He was probably brought up as a Christian, though of this there is no absolute proof. Zschimmer considers his writings to show that he had made a special study of the law; and this is the more likely as he appears to have been of noble birth and could describe one of his relations as being “of no small account in her own district and not obscure in family” (£p, i.). He was already a Christian when he married Palladia, the daughter of heathen parents, Hypatius and Quieta, whose displeasure he incurred by persuading his wife to retire with him to a distant monastery, which is almost certainly to be identified with that so lately founded by St Honora- tus at Lerins. For seven years there was no communica- tion between the two branches of the family, till at last, when Hypatius had become a Christian, Salvian wrote him a most touching letter in his own name, his wife’s, and that of his little daughter Auspiciola, begging for the renewal of the old affection (Zp. iv.). This whole letter is a most curious illustration of Salvian’s reproach against his age that the noblest man at once forfeited all esteem if he became a monk (De Gub., iv. 7; of. viii, 4),

It was presumably at Lerins that Salvian made the acquaintance of St Honoratus (0d. 429), St Hilary of Arles (0b. 449), and St Eucher of Lyons (0b, 449), That he was a friend of the former and wrote an account of his life we learn from St Hilary (Vita Hon., ap. Migne, 1.1260), To St Eucher’s two sons, Salonius and Veranus, he acted as tutor in consort with St Vincent of Lerins. As he succeeded St Honoratus and St Hilary in this office, this

date cannot well be later than the year 426 or 427, when the former was called to Arles, whither he seems to have summoned Hilary before his death in 429 (Lucherw Instructio ad Salonium, ap. Migne, 1. 773; Salv., Ep. ii.). Salvian continued his friendly intercourse with both father and sons long after the latter had left his care ; it was to Salonius (then a bishop) that he wrote his explana- tory letter just after the publication of his treatise Ad Licclesiam ; and to the same prelate a few years later he dedicated his great work, the De Gubernatione Dei. The above facts, as will be seen, render it almost certain that he must have been born a good deal before 420. If French scholars are right in assigning Hilary's Vita Honorati to 430, Salvian, who is there called a priest, had probably already left Lyons for Marseilles, where he is known to have spent the last years of his life (Genn., ap. Migne, lviii. 1099). It was probably from Marseilles that he wrote his first letter—presumably to Lerins—begging the comniunity there to receive his kinsman, the son of a widow of Cologne, who had been reduced to poverty by the barbarian in- vasions. It seems a fair inference from this letter that Salvian, acting up to the precepts of his own treatise Ad Ecclesiam, had divested himself of all his property in favour of that society and, having no longer any possessions of his own, sent his relative to Lerins for assistance (Zp. i., with which compare Ad Eccles., ii. 9, 10; iii. 5). It has been

salvage, as the continued existence of the property at all may be | conjectured that Salvian paid a visit to Carthage ; but this

due to him, e.9.,

the case of a payment made to prevent the | is a mere inference based on the minute details he gives of

the state of this city just before its fall (De Gub., vii., viii.). He seems to have been still living at Marseilles when Gen- nadius wrote under the papacy of Gelasius (492-496).

Of Salvian's writings there are still extant two treatises, entitled respectively De Gubernatione Dei and Ad Ecclesiam, and a series of nine letters. 'The

De Gubernatione, Salvian's greatest work, was published after the capture of Litorius at Toulouse (489), to which he plainly alludes in vii. 10, and after the Vandal conquest of Car- thage in the same year (vi. 12), but before Attila's invasion (450), as Salvian speaks of the Huns, not as enemies of the empire, but as serving in the Roman armies (vii. 9). The words '" proximum bellum " seem to denote a year very soon after 439. In this work Salvian deals with the same problem that had moved the eloquence of St Augustine and Orosius. Why were these miseries falling on the empire? Could it be, as the pagans said, because the age had forsaken its old gods? or, as the semi-pagan creed of some Chris- tians taught, that God did not constantly overrule the world he had created (i. 1)? With the former Salvian will not argue (iii. 1). To the latter he replies by asserting that, "just as the navigating steersman never looses the helm, so does God never remove his care from the world." Hence the title of the treatise. In books i. and ii, Salvian sets himself to prove God's constant guidance, first by the facts of Scripture history, and secondly by the enumeration of special texts declaring this truth. Having thus "laid the founda- tions" of his work, he declares in book iii. that the miscry of the Roman world is all due to the neglect of God's commandments aud the terrible sins of every class of society. It is not merely that the slaves are thieves and runaways, wine-bibbers and gluttons,—the rich are worse (iv. 8). It is their harshness and greed that drive the poor to join the Bagaude and fly for shelter to the barbarian invaders (v. 5 and 6). Mverywhcere the taxes arc heaped upon the needy, while the rich, who have the apportioning of the impost, escape comparatively free (v. 7). The great towns are wholly given up to the abominations of the circus and the theatre, where decency is wholly set at nought, and Minerva, Mars, Neptune, and the old gods are still worshipped (vi. 11; ¢f. vi. 2 and viii. 2). Treves was almost destroyed by the barbarians; yet the first petition of its few surviving nobles was that the emperor would re-establish the circus games as a remedy for the ruined city (vi. 15). And this was the prayer of Christians, whose baptismal oath pledged them to renounce ''the devil and his works. . . the pomps and shows (spectacula) '? of this wicked world (vi. 6). Darker still were the iniquities of Carthage, surpassing even the unconcealed liceutious- ness of Gaul and Spain (iv. 5); and more fearful to Salvian than all clse was it to hear men swear '' by Christ" that they would commit a crime (iv. 15). It would be the atheist's

strongest argument if God left such a state of society unpunished (iv. 12),—especially among Christians, whose sin, since they alone had the

Scriptures, was worse than that of barbarians, even if equally | But, as a matter of fact, the latter had |

wicked, would be (v. 2). at least some shining virtues mingled with their vices, whereas the Romans were wholly corrupt (vii. 15, iv. 14). With this iniquity of the Romans Salvian contrasts the chastity of the Vandals, the piety of the Goths, and the ruder virtues of the Franks, the Saxons, and the othcr tribes to whom, though heretic Arians or unbelievers, God is giving in reward the inheritance of the empire (vii. 9, 11,

21).

dox barbarians as was rife in Gaul seventy years later.

Ad Keclesiam is sufficiently explained by its common title, Contra Avaritiam. It is quoted more than once in the De Gubernatione. Salvian published it under the name of Timothy, and explained his motives for so doing in a letter to his old pupil, Bishop Salonius (Zp. ix.). This work is chiefly remarkable because in some places it seems to recommend parents not to bequeath anything to their children, on the plea that it is better for the children to suffer want in this world than that their parents should be damned in the next (iii. 4). Salvian is very clear on the duty of absolute self-denial in the case of sacred virgins, priests, and monks (ii. 8-10). Several works mentioned by Gennadius, notably a poem “in morem Grecorum”’ on the six days of creation (hexacmeron), and certain homilies composed for bishops, are now lost (Genn., 67).

The Ad Ecclesiam was first printed in Sichard’s Antidoton (Basel, 1528); the De Gubernatione by Brassican (Basel, 1530), The two appeared in onc volume at Paris in 1575. Pithceus added variz lectioncs and the first scven letters (Paris, 1580); Ritterhusius made various conjectural emendations (Altorf, 1611), and Baluze many more based on MS, authority (Paris, 1663-1669). Numcrous other editions appeared from the 16th to the 18th century, all of which are now superseded by the excellent ones of C. Halm (Berlin, 1877) and F. Pauly (Vienna, 1883). The two oldest MSS. of the De

Gubernatione belong to the 10th century (Cod. Paris, No. 13,385) and the 13th (Brussels, 10,628); of the Ad Ecclesiam to the 10th (Paris, 2172) and the 11th (Paris, 2785); of Epistle LX. to the 9th (Paris, 2785); of Epistle VIII. to the 7th or 8th century (Paris, 95,959) and to the 9th or 10th century (Paris, 12,237, 12,236). Of the first seven epistles there is only one MS. extant, of which one part is now at Bern (No. 219), the other at Paris(No. 3791). See Histoire Littéraire de France, vol. ii,; Zschim- mer's Salvianus (Halle, 1875). Salvian's works are reprinted (after Baluze) in Migne's Cursus Patrologiz, vol.liii. For bibliography see T. G. Schoencmann's Bibliotheca Patrum (ii. 823) and the prefaces to the editions of Halm and Pauly. Gennadius, St Hilary, and St Eucher may be consulted in Migne, vols. lviii. and 1. (CurATrea-)

It is curious that Salvian shows no such hatred of the hetero- |

SALWIN HILL TRACTS, a district in the Tenasserim division of British Burmah, extending from the northern portion of the province southwards to Kaw-ka-rit on the Salwin river, and occupying the whole of the country between that river on the east and the Poung-loung mountains on the west. The district contains an area of about 4646 square miles, and is bounded on the north by the Kareng-ni state, on the east by Zeng-mai, on the south by Amherst and Shwe-gyeng and on the west by Shwe- gyeng and Toung-gni. From the annexation of Pegu until 1872 the Hill Tracts formed a subdivision of the Shwe-gyeng district, but in that year it was constituted into a separate jurisdiction. Nearly the whole district is a mass of mountains intersected by deep ravines, the only level land of any considerable extent being found in the valley of the Rwon-za-leng, while every part of the country is covered with dense forest.

The Hill Tracts are drained by three principal rivers, the Salwin, Rwon-za-leng, and Bhi-leng, fed by numerous mountain torrents which rush down narrow ravines. 'The Salwin is the largest river in the Tenasserim division. Its source has never been explored, but it appears to take its rise far north in the Himalayas or in the mountains which form their extension eastward. After traversing the Chinese province of Yunnan and the Shan and Kareng-ni states to the south, it enters British Burmah at its extreme north- eastern

corner, and for some distance marks the eastern limits of the province. It has a known course of about 700 miles, but its breadth seldom exceeds 100 yards, and in some parts the bed does not occupy more than 30 yards. The Salwin is greatly obstructed by rapids, and is not navigable by large craft for more than 100 miles from its mouth. The Rwon-za-leng, which rises in the extreme north, is navigable with some difficulty in the dry season as far as Pa-pwon, the administrative headquarters ; the Bhi-leng is not navigable within the limits of the district except by small boats and rafts.

Of the total area of the district only 21 square miles are culti- vated ; the chief crops are rice and betel-nuts. The revenue of Salwin amounted in 1883-84 to only £1964, of which £940 were raised from the land-tax. The population in 1881 was returned at 30,009 (males 15,509, females 14,500).

SALZA, HERMANN Von (c. 1180-1239), one of the most illustrious knights of the Teutonic order, was a scion of the house of Langensalza in Thuringia, where he was born about 1180. He was a faithful and influential councillor of the emperor Frederick IL., and took a prominent part in the contemporary affairs of the German empire. The events of his life are involved in the history of the TEUTONIC ORDER (g.v.), of which he was elected master in 1210 or 1211.

SALZBRUNN, a small German watering-place, visited annually by about 4000 patients, is situated in Silesia, 30 miles to the south-west of Breslau. Its alkalo-saline springs, which are especially efficacious in pulmonary complaints, were known as early as 1316, but afterwards fell into disuse until their merits were once more dis- covered at the beginning of this century. The resident population in 1880 numbered 5777.

SALZBURG, capital of the present Austrian crownland and formerly of the archbishopric of the same name, occu- pies a position of singular beauty on the Salzach, 87 miles south-east of Munich, and 154 miles west by south of Vienna. The river, flowing north-west from the glaciers of the Salz- burg Alps to the Bavarian plain, passes at this point between two isolated hills, the Ménchsberg (1732 feet) on the left and the Capuzinerberg (2132 feet) on the right; in the lovely valley so formed, and stretching into the plain beyond, lies Salzburg. The picturesque and wooded con- fining hills, the lofty citadel of Hohen-Salzburg, rising like a Greek acropolis above the

towers and spires of the city at its foot, and the magnificent background of the Salzburg Alps, overhanging the broad plain, make Salzburg the most beautifully situated town in Austria or Germany. The older and main part of the city lies on the left bank of the Salzach, in a narrow semicircular plain at the base of the

Ménchsberg ; the newer town is on the right bank at the foot of the Capuzinerberg, which is separated from the river by the narrow suburb of Stein. At the south end of the old town, below the Nonnberg, or south-east spur of the Ménchsberg, is the suburb of Nonnthal ; and at the north end is Miilln. The steep sides of the Ménchsberg rise directly from amidst the houses of the town, some of which have cellars and rooms hewn out of the rock ; and the ancient cemetery of St Peter, the oldest in Salzburg, is bounded by a row of vaults cut in the side of the hill. The narrowest part of the ridge, which has a length of above two miles, is pierced by the Neu Thor, a tunnel 436 feet long and 23 feet broad, completed in 1767, to form a convenient passage from the town to the open plain. The south end of the Ménchsberg is occupied by the imposing Hohen-Salzburg, a citadel originally founded in the 9th century, though the present buildings, the towers of which rise 400 feet above the town, date chiefly from 1496- 1519. The streets in the older quarters are narrow,

crooked, and gloomy ; but the newer parts of the city, especially those laid out since the removal of the fortifica- tions about 1861, are handsome and spacious.

Owing to

Plan of Salzburg.

the frequent fires the private buildings of Salzburg are comparatively modern ; and the present flat-roofed houses, lavishly adorned with marble, are, like many of the public buildings, monuments of the gorgeous taste of the prince archbishops of the 17th and 18th centuries. The style of the houses, the numerous open squares, and the abundant fountains give an Italian air to the town. Both sides of the river are bordered by fine

promenades, planted with trees; and a public park has been laid out to the north of the new town. The Salzach is spanned by four bridges, including a railway bridge.

Salzburg is full of objects and buildings of interest. The cathedral, one of the largest and most perfect specimens of the Renaissance style in Germany, was built in 1614-28 by the Italian architect Santino Solari, in imitation of St Peter's at Rome. On three sides it is bounded by the Dom-Platz, the Capitel-Platz, and the Residenz-Platz; and opening on the north-east and north-west of the last are the Mozart-Platz and the Markt-Platz. In the Mozart-Platz is a statue of Mozart, who was born in Salzburg in 1756. On one side of the Residenz-Platz is the palace, an irregular though imposing building in the Italian style, begun in 1592 and finished in 1725. It is now oecupied by the grand-duke of Tus- eany. Opposite is the Neu Bau, begun in 1588, in which are the Government offices and the law courts. The palace of the present archbishops is in the Capitel-Platz. Across the river, with its

French garden adjoining the public park, is the Mirabell palace, formerly the summer residence of the prince arehbishops. Built in 1607, and restored after a fire in 1818, it was presented to the town in 1867 by the emperor Franeis Joseph. The building elose to the Neu Thor, now the cavalry barracks, was formerly the sumptuous stables of the archbishops, built in 1607 to accom- modate 130 horses. Beside it is an amphitheatre, partly hewn out of the rock of the Ménchsberg in 1698, known as the Summer Riding School. The Winter Riding School, in the adjacent build- ing, has its ceiling decorated with the painting of a tournament, dating from 1690. The town-house of Salzburg was built in 1407 and restored in 1675. Other interesting secular buildings are the Chiemseehof, founded in 1305 and rebuilt in 1697, formerly the palace of the suffragan bishop of Chiemsee, and now the meeting- place of the Salzburg diet ; the united school-building, erected in 1873 ; St John's hospital ; the Carolino-Augusteum museum ; and the handsome Curhaus, erected in the public park in 1868.

Of the twenty-four churches the majority are interesting from their antiquity, their architecture, or thcir associations. Next to the cathedral, the

chief is perhaps the abbey church of St Peter, a Romanesque basilica of 1127, tastelessly restored in 1745. It con- tains monuments to St Rupert, and to the “ Monk of Salzburg,” a religious poet of the latter half of the 14th century. St Margaret’s, in the midst of St Peter’s churchyard, built in 1485, and restored in 1865, is situated near the cave in the side of the Ménchsberg, said to have been the hermitage of St Maximus, who was martyred by the pagan Heruli in 477. The Franciscan chureh, with an

| elegant tower built in 1866, is an interesting example of the trans- _ ition style of the 13th century, with later baroque additions.

St Sebastian’s, on the right bank, built in 1505-12 and restored in 1812, contains the tomb of Paracelsus, whose house stood in the

| Platzl, or square at the north end of the chief bridge. The oldest

and most important of the eight convents (four for each sex) at Salzburg is the Benedictine abbey of St Peter, founded about 582 by St Rupert as the nucleus of the city. It contains a library of 40,000 volumes, besides MSS. The Capuchin monastery, dating from 1599, gives name to the Capuzinerberg. The oldest nunnery is that founded on the Nonnberg by St Rupert in 585. The single Protestant church in Salzburg was not built until 1865,

A theological seminary is the only relic now left of the univer- sity of Salzburg, founded in 1623 and suppressed in 1810. A con- siderable number of other educational institutions, lay and clerical, have their seat in the town. The public library contains 62,000 voluines and a collection of MSS., and the museum library contains 10,000 volumes. The number of benevolent and charitable insti- tutions is large. Salzburg carries on a variety of small manufac- tures, including musical instruments, iron-wares, marble ornaments, cement, artificial wool, &c. Its trade has become more important since direct railway communication has been opened with Munich and Vienna. A large number of tourists visit Salzburg annually; and its baths also attract many visitors. Itis the seat of important judicial and administrative departments, and also of an archbishop, with a cathedral chapter and a consistory. In 1880 the population (including the suburbs) was 20,336.

The origin and development of Salzburg were alike ecclesiastical, and its history is involved with that of the archbishopric to which it gave its name. The old Roman town of Juvavum was laid in ruins, and the incipient Christianity of the district overwhelmed, by the pagan Goths and Huns. The nucleus of the present city was the monastery and bishopric founded here about 700 (some say about 582) by St Rupert of Worms, who had been invited by Duke Theodo of Bavaria to preach Christianity in his land. The modern name of the town, due like several others in the district to the abundance of salt found there, appears before the end of the 8th century. When Charlemagne took possession of Bavaria in 798 he made Bishop Arno of Salzburg an archbishop. Thenceforward the dignity and power of the see steadily increased. Before the end of the 11th century Arno's successors had been named primates of Germany and perpetual papal legates ; in the course of time they obtained high secular honours also ; and in 1278 Rudolph of Haps- burg made the archbishops imperial princes. The able and ambi- tious line of prince archbishops, chosen from the noblest families of Germany, eagerly enlarged their possessions by purchase, exchange, and gift, and did not hesitate to come into warlike collision with the rulers of Bavaria and Austria, or even with the emperor himself. They took an active share in the affairs of the empire, and held au influential position in the electoral college. As a constituent of the German empire, Salzburg embraced an area of 3700 square miles, with a population of 250,000. The last independent archbishop was Hieronymus, count of Colleredo, elected in 1772, who ruled with energy and justice but without poprlarity. The see was secularized by the peace of Lunéville in 1802.

The strife between lord and people had always been keen ia Salzburg ; and in 1511 the archbishop, Leonhard, was besieged in Hohen-Salzburg by the inhabitants. The Peasants' War also raged within the see. From the beginning an orthodox stronghold of the Roman Catholic faith, Salzburg expelled the Jews in 1498,

and energetically opposed the Protestant Reformation. Under Wolfgang Dietrich many Protestant citizens were driven from the town and their houses demolished. In spite, however, of rigorous persecution the new faith

spread in sccret, especially among the landward subjects of the archbishop, and a new and more searching edict of expulsion was issued by Arch- bishop Von Firmian in 1727. The Protestants invoked the aid of Frederick William I. of Prussia, who procured for them permission to sell their goods and to emigrate ; and in 1731 and 1732 Salzburg parted to Prussia with about 30,000 industrious and peaceful citizens. About 6000 of these came from the capital.

By the peace of Lunéville Salzburg was given to the archduke of Austria and grand-duke of Tuscany in exchange for Tuscany ; and its new owner was enrolled among the electoral princes. In the re- distribution following the pcace of Pressburg in 1805, Salzburg fell to Austria. Four years later it passed to Bavaria, but the peace of Paris in 1814 restored it to Austria, to which it has since belonged. Under the designation of a duchy the territory formed the depart- ment of Salzach in Upper Austria until 1849, when it was made a separate crown-land, with the four departments of Salzburg, Zell, Tamsweg, and St Johann. In 1861 the management of its affairs was cntrusted to a local diet, consisting of the governor, the arch- bishop, and twenty-five representatives. The area of the duchy is 2762 square miles and the population in 1880 was 163,570, almost exclusively Roman Catholic and of German stock. (F. MU.)

SALZKAMMERGUT, a district in the south-west angle of Upper Austria, between Salzburg and Styria, famous for its fine scenery, forms a separate imperial domain about 250 square miles in area, and with a population of over 18,000. The beauty of its lofty mountains, sequestered lakes, and green valleys has made it one of the favourite tourist resorts of Europe, and has gained for it the title of the “ Austrian Switzerland”; but it owes its name (literally “salt-exchequer property”) and its economic importance to its extensive and valuable salt mines. The chief lakes are the Traunsee or Lake of Gmunden, the Lake of Hallstatt, the Attersee or Kam- mersee (the largest lake in Austria), the Mondsee, and the St Wolfgang Lake. The principal mountains are the Dachstein (9849 feet), Thorstein (9659 feet), the Todte Gebirge with the summits of Priel (8238 feet) and others, and the Hollengebirge (6371 feet). The Schafberg (5840 feet) or “ Austrian Rigi” and the Traunstein (5548 feet), isolated peaks among the lakes, are well-known tourist points. In the very heart of the salt-yielding district lies the

fashionable spa of Ischl; but the capital of the Salzkammergut is Gmunden, situated on the Traunsee at the exit of the Traun, the chief river of the district. Cattle-rearing and forestry are carried on to a certain extent by the people, but between 6000 and 7000 of them are engaged in the salt-mines and evaporating works, which yield annually about 60,000 tons of salt. The sale of the salt is an Austrian crown-monopoly. The most important salt-works are at Ischl, Hallstatt, Ebensee, and Aussee. See Sarr.

SALZWEDEL, an ancient town of Prussian Saxony, lies on the Jeetze, a tributary of the Elbe, 32 miles to the north-west of Stendal. It is an industrial place of some importance, with linen, cotton, and woollen manufactures, carries on a brisk river trade in grain, and possesses a fine Gothic church of the 13th century. But its chief claim to notice lies in the fact that it was for about a century (c. 1070-1170) the capital of the Old or North Mark (also for a time called the “Mark of Soltwedel”), the kernel of the Prussian state. The old castle, perhaps founded by Charlemagne, was purchased in 1864 by the king of Prussia, anxious to preserve this interesting relic. Salzwedel was also a member of the Hanseatic League, and at the beginning of the 16th century seems to have engrossed great part of the inland commerce of North Germany, The population in 1880 was 8780.

SAMANID DYNASTY, the name of the third among those native dynasties which sprang up in the 9th and 10th centuries in the eastern portions of Persia, and, although

nominally provincial governors under the suzerainty of the caliphs of Baghdad, succeeded in a very short time in estab- lishing an almost independent rule over the vast territories round the Oxus and Jaxartes. The Ma’mun, Harin-al- rash{d’s son, to whose patronage the Tahirid family owed their supremacy in Khorasin and Transoxiana (820-872, 205-259 a.H.) appointed three sons of Saman, originally a Tartar chief who claimed descent from the old Sdésdnian kings, governors of Herdt and some districts beyond the Oxus ; and these soon gained such an ascendency over all rival clanships that in 872, when the Tdhirids were over- thrown by the Saffarids under the leadership of Ya‘kub b. Laith (868-878), they were strong enough to retain in their family the governorship of Transoxiana,

with the official sanction of the caliph Mo‘tamid (870-892), and to establish a semi-royal court in Bokhard, the séat of the new Samanid government. During the reign of Ya‘kub’s brother ‘Amr b. Laith (878-900) Isma‘il b. Ahmad, SAman’s great-grandson (892-907, 279-295 a.H.), crossed the Oxus with a powerful army, invaded the territory of the Saffarids, sent “Amr as prisoner to Baghdad, and gradually extended his rule over Khorasin, Khwarizm, Jurjan, and the neigh- bouring countries. His successors, all renowned by the high impulse they gave both to the patriotic feelings and the national poetry of modern Persia (see Persia, vol. xviii. p. 655 sg.), were Ahmad b. Isma‘il (907-913, 295-301 A.H.); Nasr II. b. Ahmad, the patron and friend of the great poet Rudagi (913-942, 301-331 a.n.); Nuh L. b. Nasr (942-954, 331-343 a.m.) ; ‘Abd al-Malik I. b. Nuh (954-961, 343-350 a.4.); Manstir I. b. Nuh, whose vizier Bal’amt translated Tabari’s universal history into Persian (961-976, 350-366 a.u.); Nth IL b. Mansur, whose court-poet Dakiki commenced the Shdéhndma (976-997, 366-387 a.H.); Mansur IT. b. Nuh (997-998, 387-389 A.H.); and ‘Abd al-Malik II. b. Nuh (999), with whom the Samanid dynasty came to a rather abrupt end. The rulers of this powerful house, whose silver dirhems had an extensive currency during the 10th century all over the northern part of Asia, and were brought, through Rus- sian caravans, even so far as to Pomerania, Sweden, and Norway, where Samdanid coins have lately been found in great number, suffered in their turn the fate they had pre- pared for their predecessors ; they were overthrown by a more youthful and vigorous race, that of Sabuktagin, which founded the illustrious Ghaznawid dynasty and the Mussul- man empire of India. Under ‘Abd al-Malik I. a Turkish slave, Alptagin, had been entrusted with the government of Bokhara, but, showing himself hostile to ‘Abd al-malik’s successor Mansur I., he was compelled to fly and to take refuge in the mountainous regions of Ghazna, where he soon established a semi-independent rule, to which, after his death in 977 (367 a.u.), his son-in-law Sabuktagin, like- wise a former Turkish slave, succeeded. Nuh II., in order to retain at least a nominal sway over those Afghan territories, confirmed him in-his high position and even invested Sabuktagin’s son Mahmud with the governorship of Khorasan, in reward for the powerful help they had given him in his desperate struggles with a confederation of disaffected nobles of Bokhdéré under the leadership of Féik and the troops of the Dailamites, a dynasty that had arisen on the shores of the Caspian Sea and wrested already from the hands of the

S4mdanids all their western provinces. Unfortunately, Sabuktagin died in the same year as Nuh IT. (997, 387 a.u.), and Mahmid, confronted with an internal contest against his own brother Isma‘il, had to withdraw his attention for a short time from the affairs in Khordsén and Transoxiana. This interval sufficed for the old rebel leader Fa’ik, supported by a strong Tartar army under Iekkhan, to turn Nuh’s successor Manstr II. into a mere puppet, to concentrate all the XXI. — 31

power in his own hand, and to induce even his nominal master to reject Mahmud’s application for a continuance of his governorship in Khordsin. Mahmud refrained for the moment from vindicating his right; but, as soon as, through court intrigues, Mansur IU. had been dethroned, he took possession of Khorasan, deposed Manstir’s suc- cessor ‘Abd al-Malik IJ., and assumed as an independent monarch for the first time in Asiatic history the title of “sultan.” The last descendant of the house of Samdan, Prince Muntasir, a bold warrior and a poet of no mean talent, carried on for some years a kind of guerilla warfare against both Mahmud and Ilekkhan, who had occupied Transoxiana, till he was assassinated in 1005 (395 a.H.). Transoxiana itself was annexed to the Ghaznawid realm eleven years later, 1016 (407 a.H.).

SAMAR. See PuiLipprne Istanps, vol. xviii. p. 752.

SAMARA, a government of south-eastern Russia, on the left bank of the lower Volga, bounded on the north by Kazaii, on the west by Simbirsk and Saratoff, on the east by Ufa and Orenburg, and on the south by Astrakhan, the Kirghiz Steppes, and the territory of the Ural Cossacks. The area is 58,320 square miles, and the population in 1882 was 2,224,093.

The geology of Samara is not yet fully known. Carboniferous limestones (Upper ?) occupy large tracts in the north-east and east. When approaching the Volga the zechstein appears in wide islands surrounded by the (probably Triassic) variegated marls and sands. Some Jurassic deposits are mentioned about the Samarsk- aya Luka. Cretaceous deposits, which cover large tracts on the right bank of the Volga, appear on the left bank only in the south-east of Samara. Older Tertiary deposits appear also in the very south of Samara ;

while Pliocene limestones and sandy clays, whieh cover the Obshchiy Syrt and Ust-Urt, protrude north as a narrow strip, reaching the bend of the Volga. The Glacial bouldcr-clay of middle Russia does not extend as far south-east as Samara, and the Post-Glacial deposits, not yet fully investigated, are represented by loess, black earth, and lacustrine formations. It is now established that during Post-Glacial times the Aral-Caspian sea extended in a wide gulf oceupying the broad depression of the Volga as far north as the Samarskaya Luka, Caspian mussels having been traced as far as Samara. The soil is on thie whole very fertile. All the northern part of the government is covered with a thick sheet of black earth; this becomes thinner towards the south, clays—mostly fertile—appearing from beneath ; salt clays appear in the south-east.

Samara is inadequately watered, especially in the south. The Volga flows for 550 miles along its western border. Its tributaries the Great Tcheremshan (220 miles), the Sok (195 miles), the Samara (340 miles), with its sub-tributaries, and the smaller tributaries the Motcha, Elan-Irghiz or Tchagra, and Little Irghiz are not navigable, partly on aceount of their shallowness, and partly because of water-mills. When the water is high, boats can

enter some of them to a distance of 15 to 30 miles. The Great Irghiz alone, which has an exceedingly winding course of 335 miles, is navigated to Kutchum, and rafts are floated from Nikolaevsk. The banks of both Karamans are densely peopled. The Great and Little Uzefi water south-eastern Samara and lose themselves in the Kamysh sands before reaching the Caspian. A few lakes and marshes occur in the river-valleys, and salt marshes in the south-east.

The whole of the region is rapidly drying up. The forests, which are disappearing, are extensive only inthenorth. Altogether they still eover an area of 3,048,000 acres, or 8 per cent. of the . whole surface ; prairie and grazing land occupies 11,495,000 acres, and only 4,193,000 acres are uncultivable.

The climate is one of extremes, especially in the steppes, where the depressing heat and drought of summer are followed in the winter by severe

frosts, often accompanicd by snow-storms, The average temperature at Samara (53° 11’ N. lat.) is only 39°-2 (January, 9°3; July, 70°°4).

The population, which was only 1,388,500 in 1853, has almost doubled since then, mostly in consequence of immigration ; it reached 2,224,093 in 1882, and must now (1886) be about 2,250,000. Only 139,300 of these live in towns, the remainder being distri- buted over 4,470 villages, which are often very large, no fewer than 150 ranging in population from 2000 to 6000. The Great Russians, who have immigrated in compact masses, now constitute 65 per cent. of the population ; the Little Russians, who were settled by the Government about the salt lakes, number about 30,000; and the White Russians, also sent to Samara from West Russia, may number about 15,000. A special feature of Samara is its popula- tion of German colonists, from Wiirtemberg, Baden, Switzerland, and partly also from Holland and the Palatinate, whose immigration dates from the invitation of Catherine II. in 1762. Protected as they were by free and extensive grants of land, by exemption from military service, and by self-government, they have developed rich colonies of Catholics, Protestants, Unitarians, Anabaptists, Moravians, and Mennonites, most of which have adopted the Russian village- community system, slowly modified by the existence of a special capital reserved for the purchase of land for the increasing popula- tion.! They now constitute 40 per cent. of the population of the district of Novo-Uzeii, and 9 per cent. of that of Nikolaevsk, their aggregate number reaching 150,000. The Moksha and Erzya Mord- vinians, now nearly quite Russified, gathered in Samara during the reign of Peter I., when they abandoned in great numbers the left bank of the Volga; they constitute about 10 per cent. of the popu- lation. ‘Some 70,000 Tehuvashes and 1500 Votyaks may be added to the above. The Turkish stem is represented by some 100,000 Tartars, 70,000 Bashkirs, and a few Kirghizes. Some baptized Kal- mucks were settled in 1730 at Stavropol; and about 600 Adyghe Circassians, settled at Novo-Uze, may still be found there, All these varied elements, living in close juxtaposition, nevertheless continue to maintain their own ethuographical features; the Mord- vinians alone have lost their ethnological individuality and rapidly undergo a modification of type as they adopt the life of Russian peasants. As regards religion, the great bulk of the population are Orthodox Greeks; the Nonconformists, who still retain their numerous and widely celebrated communities and

monasteries on both the rivers Uzefi, number several hundred thousands (officially 100,000); next come Mohammedans, 12 per cent.; a variety of Protestant sects, 5 per cent.; Roman Catholics, about 2 per cent. ; and, lastly, some 4000 pagans.

The chief occupation is agriculture,—summer wheat, rye, oats, millet, oil-yielding plants, and tobacco being the principal crops. Owing to its great fertility, Samara usually has a surplus of grain for export, varying from 14 to 4 million quarters (cxelusive of oats) annually. In 1883, which was an average year for summer wheat, but under the average for winter rye, the total crops were—wheat, 3,219,600 quarters; rye, 717,800; oats, 1,800,000; barley, 127,300; and other grains, 1,310,000. Notwithstanding this production, varying from 5,000,000 to 9,000,000 quarters of grain (exclusive of oats) for a population of only 2} millions, Samara is periodi- cally liable to famine to such an extent that men die by thousands of hunger-typhus, are compelled to send (as in 1879) to adjoining provinces to purchase orach as food, or are forced to go by hundreds of thousands in search: of employment on the Volga, while millions of quarters of corn are nevertheless exported. The population have no store of corn, or reserve capital for years of scarcity (there were in 1882 only 245,100 quarters of corn in the public granaries, and 503,022 roubles of capital for that purpose), and some 210,000 males have in all only 845,000 acres of arable and pasture land. But even this soil, although all taxed as arable, is often of such quality that only 50 to 55 per cent. of it is under crops, while the peasants are compelled to rent from two to two and a half million aeres for tillage from large proprietors. At present 8,549,000 acres, or about one-quarter of the total area of

1 See the interesting work of M. Clauss on “Our Colonies” (Russian),

Samara, purchased from the crown or from the Bashkirs at nomi- nal prices —very often a few copecks per acre—are in the hands of no more than 1704 persons. The aggregate taxes exacted from the peasants amounting to 5,782,870 roubles (1879), that is to say, from 8 to 10 roubles per male, they are, when account is taken of the advances received during scarcity, reduced to absolute destitu- tion whenever the crops are short, so as to be compelled

to sell their last horse and cow. In 1880 the arrears reached 7,000,000 roubles, to which must be added about 8,000,000 roubles of advances, and in 1882, out of the 1,196,646 roubles proposed to be levied by the zemstvos, 376,643 remained in arrears. The general impoverish- ment may be judged from the death-rate, which for several years has ranged from 46 to 48 per thousand. In 1879 61,488 families were compelled to abandon their homes and disperse throughout Russia in search of employment; while 100,000 families were left wholly destitute of cattle in 1880. Notwithstanding an increase of population by nearly one-third during the last twenty years the numbers of sheep and cattle decreased by about one-half from 1863 to 1882.

The manufactures of Samara are unimportant, the aggregate production (chiefly from tanneries, flour-mills, tallow-melting houses, and distilleries) in 1882 reaching only 7,671,000 roubles (£767,100). Petty trades, especially the weaving of woollen cloth, are making progress in the south. The culture of oil-yielding plants is developed in several districts, as is also that of tobacco (10,690 acres, yielding 101,980 cwts., in 1884). Trade is very active—corn, tallow, potash, salt, and some woollen cloth being exported ; the imports of raw cotton from Central Asia by the Orenburg railway to be forwarded to the interior of Russia are increasing. The aggregate value of merchandise shipped on the Volga and its tributaries within the government reached 27,025,000 roubles in 1882; while 9,100,000 cwts. of merchandise were carried in both directions on the Orenburg railway. The chief loading places are Samara, Stavropol, Batakova, and Pokrovsk on the Volga, Staro- Mainsk on the Maina, and Ekaterininsk on the Bezentchuk.

The government is divided into seven districts, the chief towns of which, with population as estimated in 1879, are—Samara (63, 400 inhabitants), Bugulma (13,000), Bugurustan (18,000), Buzutuk (10,500), Nikolaevsk (9,900), Novo-Uzefi (9700), and Stavropol (4265). Serghievsk (1000) also has municipal institutions ; its mineral waters are becoming more and more frequented. Pokrov- skaya Stoboda (20,000), Ekaterinenstadt, Gtushitza, and Alexan- droff Gay, each with more than 5000 inhabitants, the loading place of Batakova (2500), and several others, although still but villages, liave more importance than most of the above towns.

The territory now occupied by Samara was until last century the abode of nomads. The Bulgarians who occupied it until the 13th century were followed by Mongols of the Golden Horde. The Russians penetrated thus far in the 16th century, after the defeat of the principalities of Kazaii and Astrakhan. ‘To secure com- munication between these two cities, the fort of Samara was erected in 1586, as well as Saratoff, Tsaritsyn, and the first line of Russian forts, which extended from Byetyi Yar to the neighbour- hood of Menzelinsk near the Kama. A few settlers began to gather under its protection. In 1670 it was takeu by the insur- gent leader Stenka Razin, whose name is still remembered in the province. In 1782 the line of forts was removed a little farther east, so as toinclude Krasnyi Yar and parts of what is now the district of Bugurustan, The Russian colonists also advanced eastwards as the forts were pushed forwards and increased in number. The southern part of the territory, however, remained still exposed to the raids of the nomads. In 1762 Catherine II. invited foreigners, especially Germans, and Nonconformists who had left Russia, to settle within the newly-annexed territory. Emigrants from various parts of Germany responded to the call, as also did the Raskolniks, whose communities on the Irghiz soon became the centre of a formidable insurrection of the peasantry which broke out in 1775 under Pugatcheff and was supported by the Kalmucks and the Bashkirs. After the insurrection, in 1787, a new line of forts from Uzei to the Volga and the Urals was erected to protect the southern part of the territory. At the end of the 18th century Samara became an important centre for trade. As soon as the southern part of the territory became quict, great numbers of Great and Little Russians began to settle there—the latter by order of Government for the transport of salt obtained in the salt lakes. In the first half of the present century the region was rapidly colonized. In 1847-50 the Government introduced about 120 Polish families; in 1857-59 Mennonites from Dantzic also founded settlements; and in 1859 a few Circassians were brought hither by Government; while an influx of Great Russian peasants continued and still goes on. The territory of Samara remained long under Kazaii, or Astrakhan, or Simbirsk and Oren- burg. The separate government dates from 1851. (GEOG ES)

SAMARA, capital of the above government, is situated on the slopes of the left bank of the Volga, 743 miles to the south-east of Moscow, at the mouth of the Samara

and opposite the hills of Zheguleff. It is one of the most important towns of the lower Volga for its trade, and its importance cannot fail to increase as the railway to Central Asia advances eastwards. Its population rose from 34,500 in 1869 to 63,400 in 1879. Samara is built mostly of wood, and large spaces remain vacant on both sides of its broad unpaved streets. Its few public buildings are insignificant. A number of the inhabitants support them- selves by agriculture and gardening, for which they rent large areas in the vicinity of the town. The remainder are engaged at the harbour, one of the most important on the Volga. Three fairs are held annually, with aggregate returns exceeding 2,000,000 roubles. Samara is becoming more and more a resort for consumptives on account of its koumiss establishments (see vol. xvi. pp. 305-6).

SAMARANG. See Java, vol. xiii. p. 606.

SAMARCAND. See SAMARKAND.

SAMARIA (Heb. pnw, Shdmérin; LXX. Sapdpeta, except in 1 Kings xvi. 241), the capital of Northern Israel from the time of Omri to the fall of the kingdom, which was consummated in the long siege of the royal city by Shalmaneser (2 Kings xvii. 5) and its capture by his successor Sargon (c. 721 3B.c.). The choice of Samaria as his capital by the warlike and energetic prince to whom the kingdom of Ephraim mainly owed its greatness is easily understood. It stands in the very centre of Palestine and of the country of the dominating tribe of Joseph, and, built on a steep and almost isolated hill, with a long and spacious plateau for its summit, was naturally a position of much strength, commanding two of the most important roads—the great north and south road which passes immediately under the eastern wall, and the road from Shechem to the maritime plain which runs a little to the west of Omri’s capital. The hill of Samaria is separated from the surrounding mountains (Amos iii. 9) by a rich and well-watered plain, from which it rises in successive terraces of fertile soil to a height of 400 or 500 feet. Only on the east a narrow saddle, some 200 feet beneath the plateau, runs across the plain towards the mountains ; it is at this point that the traveller coming from Shechem now ascends the hill to the village of Sebastiya (now pronounced Sebastfya), which occupies only

the extreme east of a terrace beneath the hill top, behind the crusading church of John the Baptist, which is the first thing that draws the eye as one approaches the town. The hill-top, the longer axis of which runs westward from the village, rises 1450 feet above the sea, and commands a superb view towards the Mediterranean, the mountains of Shechem, and Mount Hermon. The situation as a whole is far more beautiful than that of Jerusalem, though not so grand and wild. The line of the ancient walls has not been determined, the chief visible ruins being of the time of Herod ; but, if they followed the natural lines of defence, the city may have been almost a mile in length from east to west. ;

The foundation of the new capital was speedily followed by the wars with Damascus, in which repeated ineffectual sieges by the Syrians proved the value of the stronghold; and even the Assyrians, as has been mentioned, reduced the place with difficulty. During part of the struggle with Damascus the kings of Israel often resided at Jezreel, which was nearer the seat of war; but Omri's city never lost its pre-eminence. While it stood, Samaria and not Jerusalem was the centre of Hebrew life, and the prophets

sometimes speak of it as also the centre of corrupt Jehovah- worship and idolatry (Hos. viii. 5, Mic. i. 5, Isa. x. 10). The

1 The first 6 in Shémerén can hardly represent the old pronunciation. In 1 Kings xvi. 24, the name of the city is derived from that of Shemer, from whom Omri bought the site, and here LXX. seems to have origin- ally had Zaywepdy or Zewepdy (Cod. Vat. Saeunpwv), afterwards corrected to Souopéy (as in Lagarde's edition of Lucian's text) from the Hebrew tradition (compare Field's Hexapla on the passage). The Assyrian monuments have Samirina.

ashera of Samaria, which was not removed by the house of Jehu, is mentioned in 2 Kings xiii. 6 ; and Hos. viil. 5 seems to speak of ealf-idols there, unless the prophet is already using the name of Samaria for the kingdom as a whole, as later writers often do. Ultimately, in the Greek period, the name of Samaria or Samaritis was applied to the whole tract of whieh it is the centre—the region between Judea and Galilee, the country of

the SAMARITANS (9.v.) ; and the New Testament uses Samaria in this sense. The city of Samaria was Hellenized by Alexander, who settled Macedonian colonists in it. It beeame a fortress and was twice taken by siege in the wars of the Diadoehi (by Ptolemy I. in 312 and by Demetrius Poliorcetes about 296). Under the Ptolemies Samaria was the head of a separate provinee, and it continued to bea strong city till Johu Hyrcanus took and utterly destroyed it after a ycar's siege (c. 110 B.C.; see Jos,, Ant., xiii. 10, 2 sg.). Taken from the Jews by Pompey, Samaria was one of the ruined cities which Gabinius ordered to be restored (Jos., Ant., xiv. 5,3); then given by Augustus to Herod the Great, it was refounded by him on a splendid seale probably in 27 B.c., the autumu of which year, according to Sehiirer's calculations, is the probable epoch of the new eity of Sebaste, as it was now called in honour of Augustus. Many remains of Herod's buildings, described by Josephus (Aznt., xv. 8,5; B. J., i, 21, 2), still remain; the most notable belong to a long colonnade just above the line of Herod's wall and those of the great temple of Cesar. The tombs of John the Baptist, Elisha, and Obadiah were visited at Samaria in the time of Jerome (see OBADIAH), and that of St John must have been shown there still earlier, for it was violated by Julian. The old crusading church, now a mosque, was built over the tomb of the Baptist, who is revercnced as a prophet by the Moslems, A view and plan of the church, with details, are given in the Survey of W. Pal. (Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 211 sq.), where also there is a plan of the city. (W. R. 8.) SAMARITANS. This term, which primarily means "inhabitants of Samaritis or the region of Samaria," is specially used, as in the New Testament and in Josephus, as the name of a peculiar religious community which had its headquarters in the Samaritan country, and is still represented by a few families (about 150 souls) at Nabulus, the ancient Shechem.~ They regard themselves as Israelites, descendants of the ten tribes, and claim to possess the orthodox religion of Moses, accepting the Pentateuch and transmitting it in a text which for the most part has only microscopic variations from the Torah of the Jews. But they regard the Jewish temple and priesthood as schismati- cal, and declare that the true sanctuary of God's choice is not Zion but Mount Gerizim, overhanging Shechem (John iv. 20); here they had a temple which was destroyed by John Hyrcanus about 128 z.c. (Jos., Ant., xiii. 9, 1), and on the top of the mountain they still celebrate the pass- over. The sanctity of this site they prove from their Pentateuch, reading Gerizim for Ebal in Deut. xxvii. 4.

With this change the chapter of Deuteronomy can be interpreted with a little straining as a command to select Gerizim as the legitimate sanctuary (comp. ver. 7); and accordingly in Exod. xx. and Deut. v. a commandment taken from Deut. xxvii. is inserted at the close of the decalogue. Thus on their reckoning the tenth command- ment is the direction to build an altar and do sacrifice on Gerizim,—from which of course it follows that not only the temple of Zion but the earlier temple of Shiloh and the priesthood of Eli were schismatical. Such at least is the express statement of the later Samaritans; the older Samaritans, as they had no sacred books except the Penta- teuch, probably ignored the whole history between Joshua and the captivity, and so escaped a great many difficulties, The contention that the Pentateuch is a law given by Moses for a community worshipping on Mount Gerizim is of course glaringly unhistorical. By the (unnamed) sanc- tuary of God's choice the Deuteronomist certainly designed the temple of Zion ; and the priestly law, which is through- out based on the practice of the priests of Jerusalem before the captivity, was reduced to form after the exile, and was first published by Ezra as the law of the rebuilt temple of Zion. The Samaritans must therefore have derived their Pentateuch from the J ews after Ezra's reforms, i.e., after 444 Bc. Before that time Samaritanism cannot have

existed in a form at all similar to that which we know; but there must have been a community ready to accept the Pentateuch. In point of fact the district of Mount Ephraim was not entirely stripped of its old Hebrew popu- lation by the Assyrian captivity, and the worship of Jehovah went on at the old shrines of Northern Israel side by side, or even interfused, with the old heathenish rites of the new settlers whom the Assyrians brought to fill up the lands desolated by war. The account of the religious condition of the country given in 2 Kings xvii. 24 sg. dwells only on the partial adoption of Jehovah-worship by the foreigners who had come into the land, but by no means implies that the foreigners constituted the whole population. Josiah extended his reforms beyond the limits of Judea proper to Bethel and other Samaritan cities (2 Kinys xxiii. 19), and the narrative shows that at that date things were going on at the Northern sanctuaries much as they had done in the time. of Amos and Hosea. Toa considerable extent his efforts to make

Jerusalem the sanctuary of Samaria as well as of Judea must have been successful, for in Jer. xli, 5 we find fourscore men from Shechem, Shiloh, and Samaria making a pilgrimage to “the house of Jehovah,” after the catastrophe of Zedekiah. And so it is not surprising to find that the people of this district came to Zerub- babel and Joshua after the restoration, claiming to be of the same religion with the Jews and asking to be asso- ciated with them in the rebuilding of the temple. Their overtures were rejected by the leaders of the new theocracy, who could not but fear the results of interfusion with so large a mass of men of mixed blood and very questionable orthodoxy ; and so the Jehovah-worshippers of Samaria were thrown into the ranks of “the adversaries of Judah and Benjamin ” (Ezra iv.). Nevertheless, down to the time of Nehemiah, the breach was not absolute ; but the expul- sion from Jerusalem in 432 z.c. of a man of high-priestly family who had married a daughter of Sanballat made it so; and it is more than probable, as has been explained in IsRAEL, vol. xiii. p. 419, that this priest is the Manasseh of Josephus, who carried the Pentateuch to Shechem, and for whom the temple of Gerizim was built. For, though the story in Josephus (Ant., xi. 8) is falsely dated and mixed with fable, it agrees with Neh. xiii. in too many essential points to be wholly rejected, and supplies exactly what is wanted to explain the existence in Shechem of a community bitterly hostile to the Jews, and yet constituted in obedience to Ezra’s Pentateuch.

When we consider what difficulties were met with in the introduction of Pentateuchal orthodoxy even at Jerusalem, the foundation of a community of the Law in the Samaritan country, among the mixed populations whom the Judean leaders did not venture to receive into fellowship, must appear a very remarkable exploit. The Samaritan religion was built on the Pentateuch alone; and the fact that they did not receive even those prophetic books and historical narratives which originated in Northern Israel (all which have been preserved to us only by the Jews) shows that, before they received the Pentateuch, their Jehovah-worship was a mere affair of traditional practice, uninspired by prophetic ideas and unsupported by written record of the great deeds of Jehovah in time past. Jt can hardly in any respect have risen above the level of the popular religion of North Israel as described and condemned by Hosea and Amos. In Judea the duty of conformity to the Pentateuch was enforced by appeal to the prophets and to the history of the

nation’s sins and chastisements, and the acceptance of a vast and rigid body of ordinances was more easy because they came as the consolidation and logical develop- ment of a movement that had been in progress from the days of Isaiah. Among the Samaritans, on the other hand, the acceptance of the Pentateuch implied a tremendous

breach of continuity. They must indeed have felt that they had fallen behind the Judzans in religious matters, and the opportunity of putting themselves on a par with them by securing a copy of the institutes of Moses and the services of a Judean priest would naturally be grasped at. But what is remarkable is that, having got the Pentateuch, they followed it with a fidelity as loyal and exact as the Jews themselves, save in the one matter of the change of the sanctuary. No concessions were made to heathenism or to the old lax Jehovah-worship ; the text of the sacred book was transmitted with as much conscientiousness as was practised by Jewish scribes in the first centuries after Ezra;! and even from the unwilling witness of their enemies the Jews we can gather that they fulfilled all righteousness with scrupulous punctiliousness so far as the letter of the written law was concerned, though of course they did not share in the later developments of the oral law, and so were heretics in the eyes of the Pharisees.”

That it was possible to establish such a community on such a soil is a remarkable evidence that in that age the tendency to a legal religion was favoured by general causes, not confined to Judea alone ; it must be remembered that elaborate hierocracies sprang up after the fall of the old nationalities in many parts of western Asia (comp. PRIEST, vol. xix. p. 729). At the same time it must be remembered that, as Ezra could not have succeeded without Nehemiah, Manasseh had Sanballat’s civil authority to back him. It is probable, too, that Josephus is right in assuming that he was strengthened by a considerable secession of Judzeans, and it is not to be supposed that the “Samaritans” ever embraced anything like the whole population of the Samaritan country. Samaria itself was Hellenized in the time of Alexander ; and in Ecclus. 1. 26 the foolish people that dwell at Shechem are distinguished from the inhab- itants of the Samaritan hill-

country in general. The Samaritans, like the Jews, throve and multiplied under the discipline of the law, but at no time in their history do they appear to have had the political importance that would have accrued to so closely knit a religious body if it had held all the fertile Samaritan district.

Jews and Samaritans were separated by bitter jealousies and open feuds (Jos., Ant., xii. 4, 1), but their internal development and external history ran closely parallel courses till the Jewish state took a new departure under the

1 This appears especially by comparison of the Samaritan Pentateuch with the Septuagint. It is not of course to be wondered at that the Judean text is on the whole superior to the Samaritan, for the Samaritans had no opportunity of revising their text by Judean copies. The Samaritan character is an independent development of the old Hebrew writing as it was about the time when they first got the Pentateuch. This in itself is an indication that from the first their text ran a separate course, and that there was no opportunity of checking corruptions that had got into it by reference to different recensions. In Judza also there were important variations between MSS. down to the time of the Septuagint and even later, and in many cases the Septuagint readings agree with the Samaritan Pentateuch, showing an affinity between the sources of these two texts. But ultimately the Jewish scribes were able to constitute or rather to select an authoritative text, and whether by good luck or by judgment the text they chose was on the whole one of a singularly good type. The Samaritans never had opportunity to do anything of this kind.

2 Compare, for details and references, Nutt, Fragments of a Samaritan Targum, p. 87 sq., 42 sg., and Schiirer, Gesch. des Jiidischen Volkes, p. 7 ~~ Josephus (Ant., xi. 8, 7) says they received Judszeans who were accused of ritual irregularities, but, as he adds that the fugitives pro- fessed that they were falsely accused, it is plain that even this partisan writer did not venture to represent them as indifferent to ritual orthodoxy. No doubt, in addition to the legal ordinances, the Samaritans retained some ancient traditional practices, as they certainly introduced some new observances. Their passover, for example, has some peculiar features, one of which, viz., the application of the sacrificial blood to the faces of the children, has an exact parallel in the old Arabic ‘akika. See the account of an eye-witness (Prof. Socin) in Badeker’s Palestine.

® So all Greek MSS. The old Latin substitutes Mount Edom ; the Syriac has ‘‘Gbel,” which may mean Ebal or the Edomite country.

Maccabees. The religious resemblance between the two bodies was increased by the adoption of the institution of the synagogue, and from the synagogue there certainly grew up a Samaritan theology and an exegetical tradition. The latter is embodied in the Samaritan Targum or Aramaic version of the Pentateuch, which in its present form is, according to Néldeke’s investigations, not earlier than the fourth Christian century, but in general agrees with the readings of Origen’s 75 Sapaperixdv. For the dogmatic views of the Samaritans our sources are all late; they embrace hymns and other books of little general interest, and mainly at least of medieval origin. Like the Jews, too, the Samaritans had a haggada; indeed the Arabic books they still possess under the name of chronicles are almost entirely haggadic fable with very little admixture of true tradition, The recent date of all this literature seems to show that the old Samaritans had not nearly so vigorous an intellectual life as the Jews, though what life they had moved in similar lines; indeed, having no sacred book but the Pentateuch, and having passed through no such national revival as that of the Maccabees, they lacked two of the most potent influences that shaped the development of Judaism. On the other hand, they shared with the Jews the influence of a third great intellectual stimulus, that of Hellenism.

Samaritans as well as Jews were carried to Egypt by Ptolemy Lagi; the rivalry of the two sects was continued in Alexandria (Jos., Ant., xii. 1, 1), and Hellen- ized Samaritans wrote histories and epic poems in Greek with exactly the same patriotic mendacity which charac- terizes Jewish Hellenism. Of this, the oldest surviving Samaritan literature, some fragments have been preserved in the remains of Alexander Polyhistor.*

The troubles that fell on the Jews for their fidelity to the law, under Antiochus Epiphanes, were not escaped by the Samaritans (2 Mac. v. 23, vi. 2); the account in Josephus (Ant., xii. 5, 5) which makes them voluntarily exchange their religion for the worship of the Grecian Zeus is certainly a malignant falsehood.®

Under the Maccabees their relations with Judza. became very bitter, and they were severely chastised by Hyrcanus, who destroyed their temple. Hostilities between the two nations recurred from time to time; and in the New Testa- ment, in Josephus, and in Jewish tradition we see how deep-seated was their mutual abhorrence. But, with all this, the sects were too nearly alike not to have much in common. The Roman yoke galled both in the same way ; the Samaritan false prophet whose movement Pilate put down with cruel slaughter (Jos., Ant., xviii. 4, 1), and pro- bably also Simon Magus and Dositheus (Orig., Cont. Cels., i. p. 44), are parallel phenomena to the false Messiahs that arose among the Jews. The original views of the Samaritans were like those of the Sadducees, and they did not believe in a resurrection or a Messiah; but it was impossible for their faith to survive under the cruel pres- sure of foreign bondage without absorbing something from Jewish eschatology. And so too, in the struggle of the Jews with Vespasian, perhaps also in that with Hadrian, the Samaritans forgot their old feud, and took part against the Romans. They seem also to have shared in great measure in the subsequent dispersion, for in later times we hear of Samaritans and Samaritan synagogues not only in Egypt but in Rome, and in other parts of the empire.

4 See especially Friedlinder, Hellenistische Studien (1875), p. 82 sq. An Egyptio-Samaritan fragment has also been suspected by Ewald to be imbedded in the Sibyllina, xi. 289-244.

5 See Appel, Questiones de Rebus Samaritanorum, 1874, p. 87 sq.

§ Josephus calls them Cuthzans (from 2 Kings xvii. 30), and will not admit that they are of Hebrew blood at all; the Rabbins use the same name, but are not always so positive in calling them pure Gen- tiles. The groundless accusation of dove-worship (which makes their religion that of the Syrian Aphrodite) arose in post-Mishnic times,

The Christian emperors made hard edicts against them as well as the Jews, and at length excluded them from the public service. Under these circumstances they naturally came to be mainly traders and merchants' clerks ; in Con- stantinople "a Samaritan" meant ''a banker's clerk." In their old homes they still remained numerous enough to make a serious insurrection under Justinian (529 a.D.). Its suppression was followed by very stern decrees against the whole sect, and Europe heard little more of the Samaritans till, towards the close of the 16th century, Western scholars took an interest in the few congregations that still remained in the East, at Cairo and Damascus as well as at Nabulus. It was found that during the Middle Ages they had formed an Arabic literature of considerable size but of little intrinsic worth, and had continued faith- fully to preserve their scriptures. Since then their num- bers have been constantly on the wane, and they have almost lost their old learning, which was never very

considerable.

Samaritan Literature.—Of this a full account is given, along with a sketch of Samaritan history, in the introduction to Nutt's Fragments of a Samaritan Targum (1874). The following list confines itself to what has been printed. (a) The; Hebrew- Samaritan Pentateuch, z.e., the Hebrew text in Samaritan reccn- sion and character, was first printed in the Paris polyglott. On the nature of this recension, see Gesenius, De Pent. Sam. origine, &c. (1815). A list of variations from the Massoretic text is given by Petermann, Hebr. Formenlchre nach der Ausspraehe der Samaritaner (1868). (6) Targum, also in the Paris and London polyglotts, but in very corrupt form. A critical edition of the whole is still lacking ; the best text of part is that given by Nutt from a Bodleian MS. The dialect, apart from the corruptions of the text, differs little from other Palestinian Aramaic. (e) Aramaic having been supplanted in Palestine by Arabic, an Arabic version of the Pentateuch was

made by Abfi Said about 1100 a.p. The first three books have been edited by Kuenen (1851-54). On this version, see especially De Sacy in Mém. Acad. Inscr. et Belles-Lettres, vol. xlix. (d) The so-called Samaritan book of Joshua is an Arabic chronicle going down to Roman times, but of almost no historical use. It may date from the 13th century. Juynboll edited it in 1848 from a Leyden MS.; there are other MSS. in the British Museum and in Trinity College, Cambridge. (e) Another short chronicle, El-Tolidoth, published by Neubauer in Jour. As. (1869), seems to have used the Jewish Book of Jubilees. Both (d) and (e) with some other sources were used by— (f) The Chronicle of Abulfath, written in 1355, and continued by later hands ; edited by Vilmar (Gotha, 1865). (g) A collection of hymns was published by Gesenius (Carmina Samaritana, 1824). Other liturgical pieces have been published by Heidenheim. (h) Specimens of Samaritan writings on Hebrew grammar were published by Noldeke in the Géttinger Nachrichten (1862).

For the Samaritans in general, see Nutt, op. cit.; Juynboll, Comm. in Hist. Gentis Samar., Leyden, 1846; Appel, De Rebus Samaritanorum sub imperto Romano peractis, De Sacy published inthe Wotices et Extraits, xii. (1831), all the correspondence of the Samaritans with European scholars, and other matcrial about the modern Samaritans. For the modern Samaritans see also Petermann's Reisen, vol. i. (1860). For Makrizi's account of the Samaritans, see De Sacy, Chrest, Ar., vol.i. Other literature in Nutt and very fully in Kautzsch's article in Herzog-Plitt, vol. xifi. cw. R.S.)

SAMARKAND, a city of Central Asia, anciently Mar- canda, the capital of Sogdiana, then the residence of the Sdémanids, and subsequently the capital of Timur, is now chief town of the Zerafshan district of the Russian dominions. It lies in a richly cultivated region, 185 miles south- west of Tashkend, and 145 miles east of Bokhara, in 39° 39' N. lat. and 67° 17' E. long., 2150 feet above the sea, in the valley of the Zerafshan, at the point where it issues from the extreme western spurs of the Tian-Shan before entering the steppes of Bokhara. The Zerafshan now flows about three or four miles to the north of the city, supplying its extensive gardens with water.

Marcanda, a great city, whose walls had a compass of 90 stadia, was destroyed by Alexander the Great. It re- appears as Samarkand at the time of the conquests of the Arabs, when it was finally reduced by Kotaiba ibn

Moslim in 93 a.H. (711-712 a.p.). Under the Sdmanids it became a brilliant seat of Arabian civilization. Its schools, its savants, were widely renowned ; it was so populous that, when besieged by Jenghiz Khan in 121 9, it is reported to

have been defended by an army of 110,000 men. De- stroyed and pillaged by the great conqueror, its population was reduced to one-quarter of what it had been, but it still reckoned 25,000 families within its walls. The great conqueror Timur made it his residence, and the inhab-

4, of p Seale of ie a Mite

J Bartholomew, Eaint Plan of Samarkand. 1, Governor's house; 2, Burying-place of Russian soldiers who fell in the defence of 1868; 3, College of Ulug-beg; 4, College of Shir-dar;

5, College of Tilla-kari; 6, Grave of Timur; 7, Grave of Timur's wives.

itants rose to 150,000. The magnificent buildings of the epoch of the successors of Timur, which still remain, testify to its former wealth. But new invaders again re- duced it to ruin, so that at the beginning of last century it is reported to have been almost without inhabitants. It fell under Chinese dominion, and subsequently under that of the emir of Bokhara, suffering again and again from wars which were fought for it and around it. But no follower of Islam enters it without feeling that he is on holy ground, although the venerated mosques and beautiful colleges of Samarkand are falling into ruins, its high influ- ence as a seat of learning has vanished, and its very soil is profaned by infidels. It was not without a struggle that the Mohammedans permitted the Russians to take posses- sion of their holy city ; and, while other cities of Central Asia submitted almost without striking a blow, Samarkand revolted in 1868, the Russian garrison shut up in the citadel being rescued only by the timely arrival of a corps despatched from Tashkend.

The present city, which is but a wreck of its former self, is quadrangular in shape and is enclosed by a low. wall 9 miles long. The citadel rises in the west, and to the west- ward of this again the Russians have laid out their

new town, with broad streets and boulevards radiating from the citadel, while a pretty public garden, carefully irrigated, occupies the centre.

The central part of Samarkand is the Righistan—a square limited by the three madrasahs (colleges) of Ulug-beg, Shir-dar, and Tilla- kari; in its architectural symmetry and beauty this is rivalled only by some of the squares of Italian cities. Though differing in detail, thegreat lines of the three colleges are the same. An immense doorway decorates the front of each of these large quadri- lateral buildings. A high and deep-pointed porch, whose summit almost reaches the top of the lofty louis, is flanked on each side by a broad quadrilateral pillar of the same height, subdivided into three sections, each of which has its own style of decoration. Two fine columns, profusely decorated, in turn flank these broad pillars. On each side of the high doorway are two lower archways connect- ing it with two elegant towers, narrowing towards their tops and slightly inclined. The whole of the fagade and also the interior courts are profusely decorated with enamelled bricks, whose colours —blue, green, pink, or golden, but chiefly turquoise-blue—are wrought into the most fascinating designs, in striking harmony with the whole and with each part of the building. In the recess of the deep doorway is the wide door, with proportions of remark- able elegance, and above it are the broad decorations filling up the upper part of the arch. Over the interior are bulbed or melon-like domes, perhaps too heavy for the facade. The cool and shady

courts are surrounded by three stories of small rooms, each having ouly one opening—the door. The majestic buildings are now merely the dwellings of mollahs, who live ou the revenues of the Wakf lands at Katty-kurgan.

The college of Shir-dar (built in 1601) takes its name from the two lions, or rather tigers, figured on the top of its doorway, which is richly decorated with green, blue, red, and white enamelled bricks. It is the most spacious of the three, and 128 mollahs inhabit its 64 apartments. The Tilla-kari (“dressed in gold”), built in 1618, has 56 rooms. But the most renowned of the three madrasahs is that of Ulug-beg, built in 1420 or 1434, by Timur, the grandson of the great conqueror. It is smaller than the others, but it was

to its school of mathematics and astronomy that Samar- kand owed its wide renown in the 15th century.

A winding street running north-east from the Righistan leads to a much larger square having the college of Bibi-khanym on the west, the graves of Timur's wives on the south, and a clean bazaar on the east. The college was crected in 1888 by a Chinese wife of Timur, and is said to have once sheltered as many as a thousand students. It covers a large arca, and has three mosques connected by a quadrangular building containing the students' rooms. The archway and towers of its fagade are considered by Vambéry as a model for such buildings, and its decorations resist the destructive influences alike of time and of man. One of its imosques still raises its high bulbed donie above the outer walls, which are falling into ruins, and now give accommodation to the carts and the bazaar of traders in cotton. The lofty ruins of the grave of Timut's wives are really grand.

To the north, outside the walls of Samarkand, but close at hand, is the Hazreti Shah-Zindeh—the summer-palace of Timur; and near this is the grave of Shah-Zindeh, or, more precisely, Kotham ibn al-Abbas ibn 'Abd al-Mottalib, a famous companion of the Prophet. This was already a famous shrine in the 14th century (Ibn Batuta, ili. 52); it is believed that the saint still lives in the mosque, and will one day rise for the defence of his religion. The Hazreti Shah-Zindeh covers a wide arca oma terrace reached by forty marble steps. A series of galleries and rooms lead to the hall containing the relics of the saint. The decoration of the interior halls is marvellous.

Another street running south-west from the Righistan leads to the Gur-Emir —the grave of Timur. This consists of a chapel crowned with an elegant dome, enclosed by a wall and fronted by an archway. Time and earthquakes have greatly injured this fine building ; one of the minarets is already in ruins. The interior consists of two apartments paved with white marble, the walls being covered with elegant turquoise arabesques and inscriptions in gold. The chief room is of great beauty, and its decorations, of a bolder style than the others, are in strict harmony with the im- pression it is designed to produce. A large pyramidal piece of jade broken into two covers the grave of Timur, which has by its side that of his teacher, Mir Seid Berke, and

those of several members of his family, all enclosed bya marble railing. A dark and narrow flight of steps leads down to the crypt, also ornamented with arabesques, where the graves are placed in the same order as in the upper hall.

The citadel is situated on the west of the city, upon a hill whose steep slopes render it one of the strongest in Central Asia. Its walls, 8000 yards in circuit and about 10 feet high, enclose a space of about 4 square miles. It contained the palace of the emir of Bokhara,—a vulgar modern building now transformed into a hos- pital, —and the audience hall of Timur,—a long narrow court, sur- rounded by a colounade, and containing the Keuk-tash, a grey stone 10 feet long, 4 feet broad, and 43 feet high, reported to have been brought from Brussa. On it Timur used to take his seat, surrounded by his numerous vassals; from it more recently the emirs of Bokhara also were wont to dispense their terrible justice.

Ruins of former buildings—heaps of plain and enamelled bricks, among which Greco-Bactrian coins have been found—cover a wide area all around the present city, and especially on the west and north. The name of Aphrosiab is usually given to these ruins, which extend for nearly three miles to the westward of the prescnt Russian town; this suburb of Samarkand was enclosed by a wall, the ruins of which can be traced for seven or eight miles. Five miles to the south-west of Samarkand is the college Khodja Akrar ; its flower ornamentation in enamelled brick is one of the most beautiful of Samarkand. Rye is now grown in its courts, and its artistic ornamentation is going to ruin. To the north-north-east are the Tchupan-ata Hills, the chief of which has on its summit the grave of Daniar Polvan. On the right bank of the Zerafshan stands the village of Dehbid, peopled by descendants of Mahkdum Aazam (died in 1542), who possess a beautiful khanka (monastery), with pretty avenues of trees planted by Nezr Divabeghi in 1632. As for the famous Baghitchi-naran (the garden of plane trees), only the ruins of its palace now mark its former position ; the trces have disappeared. Of the Greco-Armenian library said to have been brought to Samarkand by Timur no traces have been discovered, and Vambery regards the whole legend as a fable invented by Armenians. Every trace of the renowned high school Kalinder- khany has also disappeared.

The present Moslem city is an intricate labyrinth of narrow winding streets, having on both sides clay walls conccaling dirty court-yards and miserable houses. The population was estimated at 36,000 in 1879; it consists of Tajiks (Iranians) and Sarts or Uzbegs. The Europeans numbered 5380. Some 300 Jews occupy a separate quarter, remarkable for its filth. Numbers of Arabs, Persians, Afghans, Hindus, Kiptchaks, and Tsigans (Gipsies) may be met with in the streets. The chief occupation of the inhabitants is gardening; the gardens beyond the walls are extensive and very well kept. There is also a certain amount of manufacturing in- dustry ; the workshops, which are small, are thus enumerated by M. Kostenko :—for metallic wares, 12; for tallow and soap, 34; tanneries, 30; potteries, 37; for various tissues 246. Those for dycing and the manufacture of harness, boots, and silver and gold wares are also numerous. The best harness, ornamented with turquoises, and the finer products of the goldsmith's art, are imported from Bokhara or Afghanistan. The products of local potteries are very fine.

The bazaars of Samarkand, the chief of which is in the centre of the town, close by the Righistan, are more animated and kept with much greater cleanliness than those of Tashkend or Namangan. The trade carried on by local or Bokhara merchants is very brisk, the chief items being cotton, silk, wheat and rice, horses, asses, fruits, and cutlery. Wheat, rice, and silk are exported chiefly to Bokhara ; cotton to Russia, via Tashkend. Silk-wares and excel- lent fruits are imported from Shahri-Syabs, and rock-salt from Hissar. (ES AN, UG)

SAMBALPOR, or Sumpvtpoor, a British district in the chief-commissionership of the Central Provinces of India, between 21° 2' and 21° 57' N. lat. and between 83° 16' and 84° 21' E. long. Exclusive of attached native states by which it is surrounded, Sambalpur contains an area of 4521 square miles. Including the native states, it is bounded on the north by Chutia Nagpur, on the east and south by Cuttack district, Bengal, and on the west by the Bilaspur and Raipur districts. The Mahdnadi, which is the only important river in the district, flows through it, dividing it into unequal parts. The greater portion of Sambalpur is an undulating plain, with ranges of rugged hills running in every direction, the largest of which is the Bard

Pahaér, a mountain chain covering an area of 350 square miles, and attaining at Dibrigarh a height of 2267 feet above the plain. The Mahdnadi affords means of water cominuuication for 90 miles ; its principal tributaries in Sambalpur are the Ib, Keli, and Jhird. To the west of the Mahanadi the district is well cultivated. The soil of the district is generally light and sandy. It is occupied for the greater part by crystalline metamorphic rocks ; but part of the north-west corner is composed of sandstone, limestone, and shale. Gold dust and diamonds have been found near Hirakhuda or Diamond Island, at the junction of the Ib and Mahanadi. The climate of Sambalpur is considered very unhealthy ; its average temperature is 79”, and its average annual rainfall is 584 inches.

The census of 1881 disclosed a population of 693,499 (346,549 males and 846,950 females). Hindus numbcred 632,747 and Mohammedans 2966. The only town in the district with a population exceeding 5000 is SAMBALPUR, the administrative headquarters, with 13,939 inhabitants, situated in 21° 27’ 10” N. lat. and 84° 1’ E. long., on the north bank of the Mahanadi. It has much improved since 1864, when a cart could only with great ditficulty pass through the main street. Of the total area of the district 1125 square iniles are cultivated, and of the portion lying waste 888 are cultivable. Rice forms the staple crop; other pro- ducts are food grains, oil-seeds, cotton, and sugar-cane. The manu- factures are few and of no great value. The gross revenue in 1883- 84 was £22,445, of which the land contributed £11,388.

Sambalpur lapsed to the British in 1849, who immediately adopted a system of exaction and confiscation by raising the revenue assessments one-fourth and resuming the land grants, religious and others. Great dissatisfaction was the consequence, and the Brahmans, who form a numerous and powerful community, made an appeal, but obtained no redress. In 1854 a second land settlement again raised the assessments everywhere one-fourth. This system of exaction produced its natural results. On the outbreak of the mutiny in 1857 a general rising of the chiefs took place, and it was not until the final arrest of Surandra 8a, a chief who for some years had been the cause of great disturbances, in

1864 that tranquillity was restored; since then the district has enjoyed profound peace.

SAMNITES, a people of ancient Italy, whose name figures conspicuously in the early history of Rome. — They occupied an extensive tract in the centre of the peninsula, which derived from them the name of Samnium. The territory thus designated was a wholly inland district, bounded on the north by the Marsi, Peligni, and Fren- tani, who separated them from the Adriatic, on the east by Apulia, on the south by Lucania, and on the west by Campania and Latium. But the Samnites were from an early period a numerous and powerful nation, and formed rather a confederacy of tribes than a single people. Hence the name is sometimes used in a wider sometimes in a more limited sense,—the Hirpini, espe- cially, who occupied the southernmost portion of their territory, being sometimes included amongst them, some- times distinguished from them. But according to the usual acceptation of the term—excluding the Frentani, who, though unquestionably of Samnite origin, were not usually regarded as belonging to the Samnite nation— they consisted of three principal tribes :—the Caraceni in the north, the Pentri, who may be termed the Samnites proper, in the centre, and the Hirpini in the south. Almost the whole of Samnium, as thus defined, was a rugged, mountainous country, and, though the Apennines do not in this part of their range attain to so great an elevation as farther north, they form irregular masses and groups, filling up almost the whole territory, and in great part covered with extensive forests. On the side of Campania alone the valley of the Vulturnus was richer and more fertile, and opened a natural access from the south into the northern regions of Samnium, while the Calor, a tributary of the same river, which flows from the east past Benevento, afforded in all ages a similar route into the upland districts of the Hirpini. Between the two, occupying the centre of the Pentrian territory and the very heart of Samnium, was the great mountain mass now known as the Monte Matese, of which the highest summit attains to an elevation of 6600 feet, and which must in all ages have been a region presenting peculiar difficulties of access.

All ancient writers agree in representing the Samnites as a people of Sabine origin, who migrated at an early period to the region of which we find them in the occupa- tion when they first appear in history. The period of this emigration is wholly unknown, but, if we can trust the tradition reported by Strabo, that it was the result of a vow to send forth the produce of a “sacred spring” (see SABINES), it could hardly have been in the first instance very humerous, and it is probable that the invaders estab- lished themselves in the midst of an Oscan population, with whom they gradually coalesced. It is certain that no very long interval elapsed before the Samnites in their turn found themselves exceeding the resources of their barren and rugged territory, and extending their dominion over the more fertile and accessible regions by which they were surrounded. ‘The first of these movements was pro- bably that by which they occupied the land of the Frentani, a fertile district along the shores of the Adriatic, between the northern part of Samnium and the sea. The Hirpini also were in the first instance almost certainly a later offshoot of the central Samnite people, though they continued always in such close connexion with them that they were generally reckoned as forming part of the Samnite confederacy, and almost uniformly took part with the more central tribes in their wars against Rome. The Frentani, on the contrary, generally either stood aloof from the contest or secured their own safety by an alliance with Rome.

To a later period belong the emigrations that gave rise to the two powerful nations of the Lucanians and Cam-

panians. At the time when the Greek colonies were established in southern Italy the native tribes that occu- pied the regions to the south of Samnium were the (Enotrians and other Pelasgic races, and it was not till after the middle of the 5th century 3.c. that the pressure of the Lucanians from the interior began to make itself felt in this quarter. From this time they gradually extended their power throughout the whole country to the Gulf of Tarentum and the Sicilian Straits. It was pro- bably at a somewhat earlier period (about 440 to 420 B.c.) that they effected the conquest of the fertile country to the west, intervening between the mountain regions of Samnium

and the sea. Here they found an Oscan popula- tion, with whom they seem to have speedily coalesced, and thus gave rise to the people known thenceforth as Campanians, or ‘inhabitants of the plain.” But in this case also the new nationality thus constituted had no political connexion with the parent state, and retained its independent action both for peace and war. The first mention of the Samnites themselves in Roman history occurs in 354, when they concluded a treaty of alliance with the rising republic.

But it was not long before the course of events brought the two rival powers into collision. The Samnites, who appear to have been still actuated by aggressive tenden- cies, had attacked the Sidicini, a petty tribe to the north of Campania, and the latter, feeling unable to cope with so powerful an adversary, invoked the assistance of the Campanians. These, however, were in their turn attacked by the Samnites, and sustained so crushing a defeat, under the very walls of Capua, that they were compelled to implore the aid of Rome. Their request was granted, though not without hesitation, and thus began (in 343) the first of the long series of the Samnite Wars, which ultimately led to the establishment of the Roman domination over the whole of southern Italy. The events of these wars, which are related in all histories of Rome, can only be very briefly noticed here. ‘The first contest was of short duration; and after two campaigns the Romans were willing not only to conclude peace with Samnium but to renew the previously existing alliance, to which the Samnites continued faithful throughout the great struggle which ensued between the Romans and thie allied Campanians and Latins. The Second Samnite War was of a very different character. Both nations felt that it was a struggle for supremacy, and, instead of being brought toa close within three years, it lasted for more than twenty years (326-304), and was marked with considerable vicissitudes of fortune, among which the celebrated disaster of the Caudine Forks (321) stands most conspicuous. Nor was the struggle confined to the two leading powers, many of the neighbouring nations espousing the cause of the one side or the other, and often with fluctuating faith, in accordance with the varying fortunes of the war. The result, however, was on the whole favourable to the Roman arms, notwithstanding which they were willing to conclude peace in 304, on con- dition of the renewal of the previously existing alliance. This interval of tranquillity was of short duration, and little more than five years elapsed between the end of the Second Samnite War and the

commencement of the Third (298). In this fresh contest they received a formidable auxiliary in a large body of Gauls, who had recently crossed the Alps, and, together with their countrymen the Senones, espoused the cause of the Samnites against Rome. Their combined forces were, however, defeated in the great battle of Sentinum (294), and after several successive cam- paigns the consul M. Curius Dentatus was able to boast of having put an end to the Samnite Wars (290), after they had lasted more than fifty years. It is true that a few

years later the Samnites again appear in arms, though rather as auxiliaries than: principals, and the name of Fourth Samnite War is given by some historians to the memorable contest which, commenced in 282 by the Lu- canians, assumed a wholly different aspect when Pyrrhus, king of Epirus, appeared in Italy as their auxiliary. But the power of the Samnites was evidently broken, and after the final defeat of Pyrrhus they appear to have offered little resistance. Their final submission was made in 272, and according to the usual Roman policy was secured by the establishment in their territory of the two important colonies of Ausernia and Beneventum.

During the Second Punic War, Samninm became the frequent theatre of hostilities. The Hirpini were among the first of the ltalian tribes to declare in favour of Hannibal after the battle of Canne (216); but their example was not followed by the more

owerful tribe of the Pentri, and when Hannibal was finally Liven out of Central Italy the Samnites were speedily reduced to submission. From this time we hear no more of them till the great outbreak of the Italian nations, commonly known as the Social War (90), in which they bore a prominent part. Two of the most distinguished of the Italian leaders, C. Papius Mutilus and C. Pontius Telcsinus, were of Samnite birth, and after the fall of Corfinium the Samnite town of Bovianum became the temporary capital of the confederates. Their submission had not indeed been completed when the civil war between Marius and Sulla gave a fresh character to the contest. The Samnites warinly espoused the cause of the former, and it was the defeat of their leader C. Pontius Telesinus at the Colline Gate of Rome that secured the victory of Sulla and sealed the fate of the Samnite nation (82).

Not content with putting all his Samnite prisoners to the sword, the ruthless conqucror organized a systematic devas- tation of the whole country, with the avowed object of extirpating the very name of the Samnites, as the eternal enemies of Rome. To such an extent was this cruel purpose carried into effect that more than a hundred years afterwards, in the time of Strabo, the whole country is described as being in a state of utter desolation, flourishing towns being reduced to mere villages, while others had altogether ceased to exist. Nor does it appear probable that it ever recovered this severe blow; and, though some attempt was made to revive its prosperity by the establishment of Roman colonies within its limits, none of these attained to any importance. The name of Samnium was indeed retained as that of a distinct province throughout the greater part of the Roman empire, and is still found in Cassiodorus. But under the Lombard rule the whole of this part of Italy was included in the duchy of Benevento, which continued to subsist as an independent state long after the fall of the Lombard kingdom in the north of Italy. During the revolutions of the Middle Ages all trace of the name is lost ; and, though it was revived in the last century as the official designation ofa part of the region comprised within the ancient limits, pre- viously known as the Contado di Molise, this was a mere piece of official pedantry, and the namc has again disappeared from the modern maps of Italy.

Very few towns of importance existed at any period within the limits of Samnium, and many of those mentioned in history had disappeared in the continual wars with which the country was ravaged. The only names that are worthy of special notice are— Aufidena, in the north, the capital of the Caraceni, the ruins of which still exist a few miles from Castel di Sangro; Bovianum (stil called Bojano), the ancient capital of the Pentri, in the heart of Monte Matese ; Seepinum (Sepino), in the same neighbourhood ; Misernia, in the valley of the Vulturnus, still known as Isernia ; Aquilonia (Lacedogna), in the land of the Hirpini, near the frontier of Apulia ; and Compsa (Conza), on the borders of Lucania, near the sources of the Aufidus. Beneventum alone has retained its ancient consideration as well as name, an advantage which it derives from its position on the Via Appia, commanding the entrance to the mountain district of the Hirpini.

The language of the Samnites, like that of their parents the Sabines, must clearly have been closely related to that of the Oscans, and the two nationalities appear to have amalgamated so readily that before the historical period there was probably little difference in this respect. Several of the most important of the inscriptions that remain to us have been found within the limits of the Samnite territory, and may be considered as Sabello-Oscan in their character, rather than purely Oscan. See for these the articles Iraty and Latin LANGUAGE. (EK. H. B.)

SAMOA. See Navicators' Isuanps.

SAMOS, one of the principal and most fertile of the islands in the Algean Sea that cfésely adjoin the mainland of Asia Minor, from which it is separated by a strait of

only about a mile in width. It is about 27 miles in length, by about 14 in its greatest breadth, and is occupied throughout the greater part of its extent by a range of mountains, of which the highest summit, near its western extremity, called Mount Kerkis, attains to the height of 4725 feet. This range is in fact a continuation of that of Mount Mycale on the mainland, of which the promontory of Trogilium, immediately opposite to the city of Samos, formed the extreme point. Various mythical legends were current to account for the original settlement of the city of Samos, and to connect its founders with the Greek heroic genealogies ; but the earliest record that has any claim to an historical character is that of the occupation of the island by a colony of Ionian settlers under a leader named Procles, at the time of the great Ionian emigration to Asia Minor (about 1050 B.c.). In the historical period Samos figures as a purely Ionic city, and was one of the most influential members of the Ionic confederacy. In the five centuries that intervened from its first settlement to the reign of Polycrates, Samos had rapidly attained to a great height of power and prosperity, had founded colonies at Perinthus and other places on the Propontis, as well as at Nagidus and Celenderis in Cilicia, and possessed a powerful navy, including, according to Thucydides (i. 13), the first triremes that ever were constructed. It was a Samian named Colzus also who was the first Greek that ventured to penetrate between the Pillars of Hercules into the ocean

beyond, and brought back a vast amount of wealth from these previously unknown regions (Herod., iv. 152). Samos was doubtless protected by its insular position from conquest by the Persian general Harpagus; nor did it follow the example of the two other great islands of Chios and Lesbos by voluntary submission to the Persian monarch. On the contrary, it not only preserved its independence for a period of more than twenty years longer, but it was precisely in this interval that it rose to the highest pitch of power and prosperity under the enlightened and able, though tyrannical, government of the despot PoLycratxs (¢.v.). Under his government Samos became “the first of all cities Hellenic or barbaric,” and was adorned with three of the greatest public works that had ever been executed by Greeks—an aqueduct tunnelled through a mountain for a length of 7 stadia, a mole of more than 2 stadia in length for the protection of the harbour, and a temple (that of Hera) exceeding all others in size. How far these great works belong to the time of Polycrates cannot be determined with certainty ; but there is little doubt that they were enlarged and com- pleted, if not commenced, under his government. He was

‘also the first to lay claim to the sovereignty of the Augean

Sea, or thalassocraty, which at that time there was none to dispute with him.

After the death of Polycrates (522 B.c.) Samos fell under the power of his brother Syloson, who established himself in the sovereignty with the support of a Persian army, but this revolution was not accomplished without a massacre of the citizens, which must have given a heavy blow to the prosperity of the island. Henceforth it con- tinued to be tributary to Persia till the great battle of Mycale (480), which not only freed the Samians from the Persian yoke, but became the beginning of a fresh era of great prosperity, during which they, like the neighbouring Chians and Lesbians, were admitted as members of the Athenian confederacy, on free and equal terms, without payment of tribute. An abrupt termination was, however, put to this state of things in 439, when, the Samians having given offence to the Athenians, their city was besieged and taken by Pericles, who compelled them to raze their fortifications, to give up their ships of war, to furnish hostages, and to pay the expenses of the war. From

this time therefore Samos became a mere dependency of Athens, and continued in this subordinate condition throughout the Peloponnesian War ; but after the victory of the Spartans at Aigospotami, the city was besieged and taken by Lysander (404), and as usual an oligarchy was set up under Spartan control. Other revolutions, however, quickly followed. The victory of Conon at Cnidus in 394 restored the democracy, but the peace of Antalcidas shortly afterwards (387) placed the island under the government of a Persian satrap, and thus exposed it to the attacks of the Athenians, who sent an expedition against it under Timotheus, one of their ablest generals, who after a siege of eleven months reduced the whole island and took the capital city. A large part of the inhabitants were expelled, and their place supplied by Athenian emigrants (366). From this time we hear but little of Samos. It passed without resistance under the yoke of Alexander the Great, and retained a position of nominal autonomy under his successors, though practically dependent, sometimes on the kings of Egypt, sometimes on those of Syria. After the defeat of Antiochus the Great at the battle of Magnesia (190), it passed with the rest of Ionia to the kings of Per- gamum, but, having in an evil hour espoused the cause of the pretender Aristonicus, it was deprived of its freedom, and was united with the Roman province of Asia (129). Henceforth it of course held only a subordinate position, but it seems to have always continued to be a flourishing and opulent city. We find it selected by Antony as the headquarters of his fleet, and the place where he spent his last winter with Cleopatra, and a few years later it became the winter quarters of Augustus (21-20), who in return restored its nominal freedom. Its autonomy, however, as in many other cases under the Roman empire, was of a very fluctuating and uncertain character, and after 70 A.D. it lapsed into the ordinary condition of a Roman provincial town. Its coins, however, attest its continued importance during more than two centuries, and it was even able to contest with Smyrna and Ephesus the proud title of the “first city of Ionia.” It still figures prominently in the de- scription of the Byzantine empire by Constantine Porphyro- genitus, but little is known of it during the Middle Ages. During the Greck War of Independence Samos bore a conspicu- ous part, and it was in the strait between the island and Mount Myeale that Canaris achieved one of his most celebrated exploits by setting fire to and blowing up a Turkish frigate,

in the presence of the army that had been assembled for the invasion of the island, a sueeess that led to the abandoninent of the enterprise, and Samos held its own to the very end of the war. On the conclusion of peace the island was indeed again handed over to the Turks, but since 1835 has held an exceptionally advantageous position, being in faet self-governed, though tributary to the Turkish empire, and ruled by a Greek governor nominated by the Porte, who bears the title of "Prince of Samos," but is supported and controlled by a Greck eouncil and assembly. The prosperity of the island bears witness to the wisdom of this arrangement. It now contains a population of above 40,000 inhabitants, and its trade has rapidly in- creased. Its principal article of export is its wine, which was celebrated in aneient times, and still enjoys a high reputation in the Levant. It exports also silk, oil, raisins, and other dried fruits. The ancient capital, which bore the name of the island, was situated on the south coast, directly opposite to the promontory of Mycale, the town itself adjoining the sca and having a large artificial port, the remains of which are still visible, as are the ancient walls that surrounded the summit of a hill which rises immediately above it, and now bears the name of Astypalea. This formed the acropolis of the ancient city, which in its flourishing times occupied a wide extent, covering the slopes of Mount Ampelus down to the shore. From thence a road led direct to the far-famed temple of Hera (Juno), which was situated close to the shore, where its site is still marked by a single column, but even that bereft of its eapital. This miserable fragment, which has given to the neighbouring headland the name of Capo Colonna, is all that remains of the temple that was extolled by Herodotus as the largest he had ever seen, and which vied in splendour as well as in celebrity with that of Diana at Ephesus. But, like the Ephesian Artemis, the goddess worshipped at Samos was really a very

purely Greek cities, and was unquestionably in the first instance a native Asiatic deity, who was identified, on what grounds we know not, with the Hera of the Olympic mythology. Her image, as we learn from coins, much resembled that of the Ephesian goddess, and was equally remote from any Greek coneeption of the beautiful and stately Hera. Though so little of the temple remains, the plan of it has been ascertained, and its dimensions found fully to verify the assertion of Herodotus, as compared with all other

Greek tem- ples existing in his time, though it was afterwards surpassed by the later temple at Ephesus.

The modern capital of the island was, until a recent period, at a place called Khora, about two miles from the sea, and the same distance from the site of the ancient city ; but since the change in the political condition of Samos the capital has becn transferred to Vathy, situated at the head of a deep bay on the north coast, which has become the residence of the prince and the scat of government. Here a new town has grown up, well built and paved, with a con- venient harbour, and already numbers a population of 6000.

Samos was celebrated in ancient times as the birth-place of Pythagoras, who, however, spent the greater part of his life ata distance from his native country. His name and figure are found on coins of the city of imperial date. It was also conspicuous in the history of art, having produced in early times a school of sculptors, commencing with Rhecus and Theodorus, who are said to have invented the art of casting statucs in bronze, and to have introduced many other technical improvements. The architeet Rhecus also, who built the temple of Hera, was a native of the island. At a later period Samos was noted for the manufaeture of a particular kind of red earthenware, so much valued by the Romans for domestic purposes that specimens of it generally occur wherever there are remains of Roman settlements.

All the particulars that are recorded concerning Samos in ancicnt times are collected by Panofka (Res Samiorum, Berlin, 1822). A full description of the island, as it existed In his time, will be found in Tournefort (Voyage du Levant, 4to, Paris, 1717), and more recent accounts in the works of Ross (Reisen auf den

Griechischen Insein, vol. ii., Stuttgart, 1848) and Guérin (Patmos et Samos, Paris, 1856), (E. H

SAMOTHRACE was the ancient name of an island in the northern part of the Augean Sea, nearly opposite to the mouth of the Hebrus, and lying north of Imbros and north-east of Lemnos. It is still called Samothraki, and though of small extent is, next to Mount Athos, by far the most important natural feature in this part of the Augean, from its great elevation—the

group of mountains which occupies almost the whole island rising to the height of 5240 feet. The highest summit, named by Pliny Saoce, is estimated by him at an elevation of 10 Roman miles. Its conspicuous character is attested by a well-known passage in the Jdiad (xiii. 12), where the poet represents Poseidon as taking post on this lofty summit to survey from thence the plain of Troy and the contest between the Greeks and the Trojans. This mountainous character and the absence of any tolerable harbour—Pliny, in enumerating the islands of the Augean, calls it ‘ importuos- issima omnium”—prevented it from ever attaining to any political importance, but it enjoyed great celebrity from its connexion with the worship of the CaBrri (q.v.), a mysterious triad of divinities, concerning whom very little is really known, but who appear, like all the similar deities venerated in different parts of Greece, to have been a remnant of a previously existing Pelasgic mythology, wholly distinct from that of the Greeks. Herodotus expressly tells us that the “ orgies” which were celebrated at Samothrace were derived from the Pelasgians (ii. 51). These mysteries, and the other sacred rites connected there- with, appear to have attracted a large number of visitors, and thus imparted to the island a degree of importance which it would not otherwise have attained. The only occasion on which its name is mentioned in history is during the expedition of Xerxes (B.c. 480), when the Samo- thracians sent a contingent to the Persian fleet, one ship of which bore a conspicuous part in the battle of Salamis (Herod., viii. 90). But the island appears to have always enjoyed the advantage of autonomy, probably on account of its sacred character, and even in the time of Pliny it ranked as a free state. Such was still the reputation of its mysteries that Germanicus endeavoured to visit the island,

different divinity from the one that presided over Argos and othcr | but was driven off by adverse winds (Tac., Ann., ii, 54).

Ss AM—SAM

No modern traveller appears to have visited Samothrace till the year 1858, when it was fully explored by Conze, who published an account of it, as well as the larger neighbouring islands, in 1860. The ancient eity, of which the ruins are ealled Paleopoli, was situ- ated on the north side of the island close to the sea; its site is clearly marked, and considerable remains still

exist of the ancient walls, which were built in massive Cyclopean style, but no vestiges are found of temples or other public buildings. The modern village is on the hill above. The island is at the present day very poor and thinly peopled, and has scarcely any trade; but a con- siderable sponge fishery is carried on around its coasts by traders from Smyrna (Conze, Seise auf den Inseln des Thrakischen Meeres, Hanover, 1860).

The similarity of name naturally led to the supposition that Samothrace was peopled by a colony from Samos in Ionia, and this is stated as an historical fact by some Greek writers, but is rejected by Strabo, who considers that in both cases the name was derived from the physical conformation of the islands, Samos being an old word for any lofty height (Strabo, x. 2, p. 457). The same charaeteristic is found in Cephallenia, which was also called Samos in the time of Homer.

SAMOYEDES, a Ural-Altaic stock, scattered in small groups over an immense area, from the Altai Mountains down the basins of the Obi and Yenisei, and along the shores of the Arctic Ocean from the mouth of the latter river to the White Sea. They may be subdivided into two main groups. (A) Those inhabiting the southern parts of the governments of Tomsk and Yeniseisk have been so much under Tartar influence as to be with difficulty separated from the Tartars; their sub-groups are the Kamasin Tartars, the Kaibals, the Motors, the Beltirs, the Karagasses, and the Samoyedes of the middle Obi. (B) Those inhabiting the subarctic region form three separate sub-groups :—(a) the Yuraks in the coast-region from the Yenisei to the White Sea; (b) the Tavghi Samoyedes, between the Yenisei and the Khatanga; (c) the Ostiak Samoyedes, intermingled with Ostiaks, to the south of the others, in the forest regions of Tobolsk and Yeniseisk. Their whole number may be estimated at from 20,000 to 25,000.

The proper place of the Samoyedes among the Ural-Altaians is very difficult to determine. As to their present name, signifying in its present Russian spelling ‘‘self-eaters,” many ingenious theories have been advanced, but the current one, proposed by Schrenk, who derived the name ‘‘Samo-yedes” from ‘‘Syroyadtsy, ” or “raw-eaters,” leaves much to be desired. Perhaps the etymology ought to be sought in quite auother direction, namely, in the like- ness to Suomi. The names assumed by the

Samoyedes themselves are Hazovo and Nyéinyiiz. The Ostiaks know them under the names of Orghoy, or Workho, both of which recall the Ugrians ; the name of Hui is also in use among the Ostiaks, and that of Yaron among the Zyrians.

The language now spoken by the Samoyedes is, like the Finnish languages, agglutinative, but in both lexicon and grammar it differs so widely from these that Prof. Ahlqvist does not regard the simi- larity as greater than, for instance, that between Swedish and Persian. Much remains to be done for the study of Samoyedic, but it may be regarded as the most remote cousin of the Ugrian. It is a sonorous speech, pleasant to the ear. No fewer than three separate dialects and a dozen sub-dialects are known in it.

The conclusions deducible from their anthropological features— apart from the general difficulty of arriving at safe conclusions on this ground alone, on account of the variability of the ethnological type under various conditions of life—are also rather indefinite. The Samoyedes are reeognized as having the face morc flattened than undoubtedly Finnish stocks; their eyes are narrower, their complexion and hair darker. Zuyeff describes them as like the Tunguscs, with flattened nose, thick lips, little beard, and black, hard hair. At first sight they may be mistaken for Ostiaks, — especially on the Obi; but they are undoubtedly different. Castrén considers them as a mixture of Ugrians with Mongolians, and M. Zograf as brachycephalic Mongolians. Quatrefages classes them, together with the Voguls, as two families of the Ugrian sub-branch, this last, together with the Sabmis (Laponians), forming part of the Ugrian or Boreal braneh of the yellow or Mongolic race.

It is certain that formerly the Samoyedes oceupied the Altai Mountains, whence they were driven northwards by Turco-Tartars —probably at the time of the rise of the empire of the Huns, that is, before the present era. Their further and later migration towards the north may be said to be going on still. Thus, the Kaibals left the Sayan Mountains and took possession of the Abakan steppe (Minusinsk region), abandoned by the Kirghizes,

in the earlier years of last century, and in north-eastern Russia the Zyrians are still driving the Samoyedes farther north, towards the Arctic coast. Since the researches of Sehrenk it may be con- sidered as settled that in historical timcs the Samoyedes were inhabitants of the so-called Ugria in the Northern Urals, while it would result from M. Radloft's extensive researehes that the numberless graves containing remains of the Bronze Period which are scattered throughout West Siberia, on the Altai, and on the Yenisei in the Minusinsk region, are relies of a nation which he considers as Ugro-Samoyedes. This nation, very numerous at that epoch,—which preceded the Iron-Period civilization of the Tureo- Tartars,—were pretty well acquainted with mining; the remains of their mines, sometimes 50 fect deep, and of the furnaces where they melted copper, tin, and gold, are very numerous; their weapons of a hard bronze, their pots (one of which weighs 75 tb), and their melted and polished bronze and golden decorations testify toa high development of artistie feeling and industrial skill, strangely eontrasting with the low level reached by their earthen- ware. 'They were not nomads, but husbandmen, and their irriga- tion canals are still to be seen. They kept horses (though in small

"numbers), sheep, and goats, but no traces of their rearing horned

cattle have yet been found. The Turkish invasion of southern Siberia by the Tukus, Khagases, and Uigurs, which took place in the 5th century, drove them farther north and probably reduced most of them to slavery,—these slaves seeming to have taught mining to their masters,

At present they are disappearing, and have almost entirely lost their earlier civilization. M. Polyakoff quite rightly observes that the Samoyedes, who now maintain themselves by hunting and fishing on the lower Obi, partly mixed in the south with Ostiaks, recall the condition of the inhabitants of France and Germany at the epoch of the reindcer. Clothed in skins, like the troglodytes of the Weser, they make use of the same implements in bone and stone, eat carnivorous animals—the wolf included—and cherish the same superstitions (of which those regarding the teeth of the bear are perhaps the most characteristic) as were eurrent among the Stone-Period inhabitants of western Europe. Their heaps of reindeer horns and skulls—memorials of religious ceremonies—are exactly similar to those dating

from the similar period of civiliza- tion in northern Germany. Their huts often resemble the well- known stone huts of the Esquimaux; their graves are mere boxes leftinthe tundra. The religion is fetichism mixed with Shamanism, the shaman (¢adji-bet) being a representative of the great divinity, the Num. The Yalmal peninsula, where they find so great facilities for hunting, is especially venerated by the Obi Ostiak Samoyedes, and there they have one of their chief idols, Khese. They are more independent than the Ostiaks, less yielding in character, although as hospitable as their neighbours. Reduced almost to slavery by Russian merchants, and brought to the extreme of inisery by the use of ardent spirits, they are disappearing rapidly, small-pox complet- ing the work of destruction. They still maintain the high standard of honesty mentioned by historical documents; and, while the Russians plunder even the stores of their shamans, the Samoyedes never will take anything left in the tundra or about the houses by their “civilized” neighbours. The Yurak Samoyedes are courag- eous and warlike ; they offered armed resistance to the Russian invaders, and it is only since the beginning of the century that they have paid tribute. The exact number of the Ostiak Samoyedes is not known; the Tavghi Samoyedes may number about 1000, and the Yuraks, mixed with the former, are estimated at 6000 in Obdorsk (about 150 settled), 5000 in European Russia in the tundras of the Mezefi, and about 350 in Yeniseisk.

Of the sonthern Samoyedes, who are completely Tartarized, the Beltirs (8070 in 1859) live by agrieulture and cattle-breeding in thie Abakan steppe. They profess Christianity, and speak a language elosely resembling that of the Sagai Tartars. The Kaibals, or Koibals, can hardly be distinguished from the Minusinsk Tartars, and support themselves by rearing cattle. Castrén considers that three of their stems are of Ostiak origin, the remaindcr being Samoyedic. The Kamasins, in the Kansk distriet of Yeniseisk, are either herdsmen or agriculturists. They speak the Samoyede language, with an admixture of Tartar words, and some of their stems contain a large Tartar element. The very interesting nomadic tribe of Karagasses, in the Sayan Mountains, is quite dis- appearing ; the few representatives of this formerly much more numerous stem are rapidly losing their anthropological features, their Turkish language, and their distinctive dress. The Motors are now little more than a memory. One portion of the tribe emi- grated to China and was there exterminated ; the

remainder have disappeared among the Tuba Tartars and the Soyotes. The Samoyedes on the Obi in Tomsk may number about 7000; they have adopted the Russian manner of life, but have difficulty in carrying on agriculture, and are a poverty-stricken population with little prospect of holding their own.

SAMPIERDARENA (population in 1881, 19,501). See Genoa, vol. x. p. 157.

SAMSON (Hebrew, Shimshon), the great enemy of the Philistines, is reckoned as one of the judges of Israel in two editorial notes which belong to the chronological scheme of the book of Judges (xv. 20, xvi. 31); but his story itself, which is a self-contained narrative by a single hand (Jud. xiii. 2-16, 31a), represents him not as a judge but as a popular hero of vast strength and sarcastic humour, who has indeed been consecrated from his birth as the deliverer of Israel, and is not unaware of his voca- tion, but who yet is inspired by no serious religious or patriotic purpose, and becomes the enemy of the Philistines only from personal motives of revenge, the one passion which is stronger in him than the love of women. In his life, and still more in his death, he inflicts great injury on the oppressors of Israel, but he is never the head of a national uprising against them, nor do the Israelites receive any real deliverance at his hands. his exploits is plainly taken from the mouths of the people, and one is tempted to conjecture that originally his Nazarite vow was conceived simply as a vow of revenge, which is the meaning it would have in an Arab story. Our narrator, however, conceives his life as a sort of prelude to the work of Saul (xiii. 5), and brings out its religious and national significance in this respect in the opening scene (ch. xili.), which is closely parallel to the story of Gideon, and in the tragic close (ch. xvi.) ; while yet the character of Samson, who generally is quite for- getful of his mission, remains much as it had been shaped in rude popular tale in a circle which, like Samson him- self, was but dimly conscious of the national and religious vocation of Israel.

The name of Samson (Shamshon, of which the Masso- retic Shimshén is a more modern pronunciation, and later than the LXX., who write Sapyov) means “solar,” but neither the name nor the story lends any solid support to

Steinthal’s fantastic idea that the hero is a solar myth (compare Wellhausen-Bleek, p. 196). He is a member of an undoubtedly historical family of those Danites who had their standing camp near Zorah, not far from the Philistine border, before they moved north and seized Laish (compare xill, 25 with xviii. 8, 11,12). The family of Manoah had an hereditary sepulchre at Zorah, where Samson was said to lie (xvi. 31), and their name continued to be associated with Zorah even after the exile, when it appears that the Manahethites of Zorah were reckoned as Calibbites. The name had remained though the race changed (1 Chron. il. 52, 54). One of Samson’s chief exploits is associated with a rock called from its shape “the Ass’s Jawbone,” from which sprung a fountain called En-hakkore, “ the spring of the partridge,” and these names have influenced the form in which the exploit is told. The narrative of Samson’s marriage and riddle is of peculiar interest as a record of manners ; specially noteworthy is the custom of the wife remaining with, her parents after marriage (cf. Gen. ii. 24).

SAMUEL (°$19%, Shémiél),! a seer and “judge” of Israel in the time of the Philistine oppression. His history, as told in the first book of Samuel (compare Psalm xcix. 5; Kcclus. xlvi. 13 sq.), is too familiar to call for repetition here, and a critical estimate of his place in Hebrew history has been given in IsRAzEL, vol. xiii. p. 403. There remain, however, one or two points of detail which may be noticed here. His birthplace was Ramah, or, as it is called in the Hebrew text of 1 Sam. i. 1, Ha-Ramathaim (Ramathem, 1 Macc. xi. 34; Arimatheea, Mat. xxvii. 57); the identity

eee

1 This is one of an obscure class of proper names (Syyop, Syeyy, &c.), the analogy of which seems to exclude the idea that it is softened from ONY, “‘heard of God.” It seems rather to mean “ name of El,” z.e., ‘“ manifestation of God’s power or will.” Compare the title

The story of

of the two names is supported by the Septuagint, which has Arimathaim for Ramah in several passages. Ramah, which appears in 1 Kings xy. 17 as a

stronghold on the frontier of the kingdoms of Ephraim and Judah, is probably identical with the modern El-Raém, about 5 miles north of Jerusalem, on a hill on the east side of the main road to Shechem and the north. Ramah was also the place where Samuel usually resided in his later days, and from which he made a yearly circuit through a very limited district in the immediate neighbourhood, “judging Israel” (1 Sam. vii. 16). None of the cities which he visited is more than a few miles from Ramah. Ramah, according to 1 Sam. i. 1 (where the text is to be corrected by the Septuagint), was a town in the district of Zuph, belonging to the tribe of Ephraim (comp. 1 Sam. ix. 5 and 1 Sam. x. 2, where the grave of Rachel lies on the frontier between Ephraim and Benjamin ; a different localization is given in Gen. xxxv. 19, 20, unless the identification of Bethlehem and Ephrath there is a later gloss).

The original text of 1 Sam. i. 1 does not seem to say explicitly that Samuel’s father was an Ephrathite (ze., of the tribe of Ephraim), though his city was Ephrathite ; and 1 Chron. vi. 28, 33 [vi. 13, 18] makes him a Levite, apparently because a post-exile family of singers traced their stock from him. The old accounts certainly repre- sent Samuel even as a child as doing priestly service at Shiloh, girt with the ephod and wearing the priestly robe (métl, E. V. “coat,” 1 Sam. ii. 18 sg.), but at that early date priesthood was by no means confined to Levites, and the story certainly implies that it was not by birth but only by his mother’s vow that he was dedicated to the service of the sanctuary. On Samuel’s relation to the prophets, see vol. xix. p. 815. Compare also SAMUEL, Books oF.

SAMUEL, Booxs or. The Hebrew Book of Samuel, like the Hebrew Book of Kings, is in modern Bibles divided into two books, after the Septuagint and Vulgate, whose four books of “kingdoms” answer to the Hebrew books of Samuel and Kings. The connexion between the books of Samuel and Kings has been spoken of in the article Kines (q.v.). These two books, together with Judges, are made up of a series of extracts and abstracts from various sources worked over from time to time by successive editors, and freely handled by copyists down to a comparatively late date, as the variations between the Hebrew text and the Septuagint show. The main redac- tion of Judges and Kings has plainly been made under the influence of the ideas of the book of Deuteronomy, and 1t was in connexion with this

redaction that the history from the accession of Solomon onwards was marked off as a separate book (see Kines). In Samuel the Deuteronomistic hand is much less prominent, but in 1 Sam. vii. 2-4, and in the speech of Samuel, ch. xii., its characteristic pragmatism is clearly recognizable; the nature of the old narrative did not invite frequent inser- tions of this kind throughout the story. So, too, the chronological system which runs through Judges and Kings is not completely carried out in Samuel, though its influence can be traced (1 Sam. iv. 18, vii. 2, xiii. 1 s¢., xxvil. 7, 2 Sam. ii. 10 sg., v. 4 sg.). In 1 Sam. xii. 1, in the note “Saul was —— years old when he became king and reigned [two] years over Israel” (lacking in LXX.), one of the numbers has been left blank and the other has been falsely filled up by a mere error of the text ; the similar note in 2 Sam. ii. 10 seems also to have been filled up at random ; it contradicts and disturbs the context. But, though the book of Samuel has been much less systematically edited than Kings, unsystematic addi-

Shem Baal, “‘name of Baal,” given to Astarte on the epitaph of | tions to and modifications of the oldest narratives were

Eshinunazar,

made from time to time on a very considerable scale, and

SAN—SAN

in this book, as in Judges, we not seldom find two accounts of the same events which not only differ in detail but plainly are of very different date.

The book as a whole may be divided into three main sections :—(1) Samuel and Saul, 1 Sam. i—xiv.; (2) The rise and kingdom of David, 1 Sam. xv.-2 Sam. viil.; (3) The personal history of David’s court at Jerusalem (mainly from a single source, which also includes 1 Kings i, ii.), 2 Sam. ix.xx. Finally, the appendix, 2 Sam. xxi.~~xxiv., must have been added after the book of Kings had been separated from the context to which 1 Kings i.,, ii. origin~~ ally belonged. As the greater part of the book of Samuel is oceupied with the lustory of David, which has been dis- cussed at length in his article, and with that of Samuel and Saul, the chief points of which have been critically examined in tlie article IsRaxEL, a very brief resumé of the

contents of each of the main sections must here suffice.

I. The story ofSamuel’s birth, consecration to the serviee of the sanetuary at Shiloh, and prophetie calling (1 Sam. i.-iii.) connects itself through the propheey of the rejection of the house of Eli (iii, 11 sg.) with the history of the disaster of Ebenezer and the capture and restoration of the ark (iv. 1-vii. 1). But the seeond of these two seetions does not seem to have been originally written as the sequel to ehaps. i.-ili. ; in it we lose sight of Samuel and his propheey altogether. The song of Hannah (ii. 1-10) and the propheey of the nameless man of God (ii. 27-36) are later insertions (see Wellhausen-Bleek, Hini., p. 207).

Chap. vii., with its Deuteronomistie introduetion (verses 2-4) and its aceount of a vietory at Ebenezer (the counterpart of the defeat in chap. iv.) whieh delivered Israel from the Philistines during all the days of Samuel, is inconsistent with the position of the Philistine power at the aceession of Saul. The chapter in its present form must be late, though hardly post-exilic, and it is the neeessary introduetion to the later and less authentie account of the way in whieh Saul eame to the kingdom (chaps. viii., x. 17- 27, xil.). Itshould be noted, however, that, though Samuel is taken by the late narrator to have a widespread authority, inconsistent with the faets diselosed in the older narrative of the ehoice of Saul, the sphere assigned to him in vii. 16, 17 is very narrow and agrees with chap. ix.

Of the beginnings of the kingship of Saul we have a twofold aeeount, the older being that in ix. 1-x. 16, xi. The relative value of the two aeeounts has been already diseussed in IsRAEL, vol. xiii. p. 403. The older history is eontinued in ehaps. xiii., xiv., but here xiii. 7-15—a doublette of the account of the rejection of Saul in ehap. xiv.—is eertainly foreign to the original eontext. The summary of Saul’s exploits in xiv. 47 sg. is written by an admirer, who appears to ascribe to him some of David’s vietories. But this does not affeet the value of the preceding more detailed narrative, which is plainly based on a full and authentie tradition.

I]. The account of the eampaign against Amalek (chap. xv.) does not merely supply details supplementary to xiv. 48 but puts the war with Agag in quite a different light by laying the chief weight on Saul’s disobedienee to Samuel and rejection by the prophet. This passage is closely allied to 1

Sam. xxviii. 3-25, which, however, is no part of the original story of Saul's defeat and death, as appears by comparing the position of the two armies in xxviii. 4 and xxix. 1. Chap. xv., in like manner, is probably no original part of the narrative of David's rise, to whieh it now forms the introduetion, and both passages, though relatively ancient addi- tions, represent a type of religious thought and a view of propheey whieh ean hardly be older than the epoch of Elisha (comp. Propuet, vol. xix. p. 816). The anointing of David (xvi. 1-13) presupposes ehap. xv., and is consistent with what follows only if we suppose that the meaning of Samuel's aet was not understood at the time. The older history repeatedly indieates that David's kingship was predieted by a divine oracle, but would hardly lead us to place the prediction so early (1 Sam. xxv. 30, 2 Sam. iii. oF v. 2 compared with 1 Sam. xvii. 28, xviii. 23).

The story of David's introduction to Saul is told in two forms (xvi. 14-23; xvii. 1-xviii.5). In the former David is already a man of approved courage and parts when he is attracted to the eourt; in the latter he is an obseure and untried shepherd lad (as in ehap. Xvi.) when he volunteers to meet Goliath. In the Hebrew text the eontradietion between the two aeeounts is absolute, but the Septuagint omits xvii. 12-31, xvii. 55-xviii. 5, which greatly lessens if it does not entirely remove the diffieulty.1_ The rise of Saul's jealousy against David (xviii. 6-30) and the open breach between them, with David's flight from the eourt (xix., Xx.), are very confused in the Hebrew text. Some serious difficulties are eseapeil

1 A further difficulty is caused by 2 Sam. xxi. 19, which makes Elhanan the Bethlehemite slayer of Goliath.

by following the Septuagint recension, but others remain, and there is a good deal of eonfusion also in the accounts of David's life as an outlaw (xxi.—xxvi.)and with Achish (xxvii.). For details see DAvip, vol. vi. p. 838 sg. The narrative is largely made up of detached aneedotes, and sometimes there were two divergent aneedotes based on a single incident. This is elear as regards the two stories of David's generosity to Saul (xxiv., xxvi.) and still more clear where the LXX. omits one of two parallel aneedotes (see Davin, ut supra), while the same account may perhaps be given of the

twofold narrative of David's flight from Saul and of his betaking himself to Aehish. At the same time there is sufficient eonnexion to show that the doublettes and additions are strung on an original thread of eontinuous history—a history of David, whieh becomes more free from foreign aeeretions at the point when the outlaw and refugee acquires, through the death of Saul, a position of eom- manding importanee. Saul's defeat and death (1 Sam. xxviii. 1, 2, xxx.) are related as part of the history of David, which runs on from this point with little evidence of editorial additions to the elose of 2 Sam. vy. The summary deecount of David's war and governnient in 2 Sam. viii. appears to be the continuation of the same doeument ; ehaps. vi. and vii., on the other hand, seem to have an independent source.

III. The history of David's court, a vivid pieture of eveuts whieh must be referred in substanee if not in form toa contem- porary observer, is in its origin a distinet book from the life of David that eloses with 2 Sam. viii. It extends over 2 Sam. ix.- 1 Kings ii. with very little appearance of interpolation except the great appendix, 2 Sam. xxi.-xxiv., and is throughout one of the most admirable remains of aneient history.

The appendix is made up of various pieces, —chap. xxiv. appearing to attach itself directly to xxi. 1-14, while xxi. 15 sg. is akin in subject to xxiii. 8sg.; the two poems, chap. xxii. (Psalm xviii.) and xxilil. 1-7, have no relation to the context, so that we can only say of them that they were aeeepted as Davidie at the time—posterior to the Deuteronomistie redaetion —when the miscellaneous matter of the appendix was ineorporated with our book.

In this rapid sketch it has not been attempted to notice all the minor marks of editorial retouching found in one or both of the two great recensions of the text. For all details the reader must refer principally to Wellhausen's repeated studies of the book, first in his Text der Biicher Samuelis, 1871, then in the fourth edition of Bleek's Hinleitung, 1878, and finally in his Prolegomena to the History of Israel (Eng. tr., 1885). Of earlier works on the subject the relative parts of Ewald's Geschichte are the most important. The commentaries of Thenius (ist ed. 1842, 2d ed. 1864) and Keil (1864,

Eng. tr. 1866) are not very satis- factory. In English Prof. Kirkpatrick's short commentary (in the Cambridge

Bible for Schools) will be found useful. See also F. H. Woods in Studia Biblica, Oxford, 1885.

SANAA (San'4), the capital of Yemen in Arabia, and seat of the Turkish governor of that province, is situated in 15° 22' N. lat. and 44° 31' E. long., in a well-watered upland valley, 4000 feet above the sea and six to nine miles broad, running north and south between two table- lands. The western table-land, over which lies the road to the port of Hodaida on the Red Sea, rises 1200 feet above the town, the eastern (J. Nokom) is some 300 feet higher, and crowned by the ruins of the fortress Birdsh, which local tradition connects with the name of Shem, son of Noah, to whom the foundation of the city is attri- buted by Hamdant, Jazirat, p. 55. Under Mount Nokom in the valley is the hill Ghomdan with the citadel, which Halévy in 1870 found in ruins. The ancient fortress of Ghomdan, which is often referred to by poets, and is described in extravagant terms by later writers, is said to have been destroyed by the caliph "Othman. The city proper, which is walled, extends from the citadel on the east to the garden and ruined palace of the imam Motawakkil on the west. Beyond this is the quarter known as Bir al"Azab, where the imams had their pleasure gardens, adjoining which, to the south, is the ancient Jewish settle- ment (Ka' al-Yahtd). In Niebuhr's time (1763) the two last were open suburbs, but they have since been walled in. Though Sanaa isa very old town, the earliest buildings now standing are perhaps those which date from the Turkish occupation (1570-1630)—some mosques, parts of the fortifications, the aqueduct. In last century, under the independent imams of Yemen, as the capital of the coffee country and the most fertile region of Arabia, it was, with its palaces and gardens, its mosques, caravanserais, and good private houses, by much the first city of the peninsula. The Wahhab{ movement and Turko-Egyptian intervention in the affairs of Yemen shook the power of

the imdms and diminished the prosperity of their capital, but Cruttenden in 1836 still estimated the population at 40,000, or, with the three neighbouring towns of Rauda, Jiraf, and Wady Dahr, at not less than

70,000. In 1870, when the imamate had been extinct for twenty years, and the town was governed by an elected sheikh and had lost its provinces, Halévy found it much decayed, with many of the palaces and public buildings demolished or used as quarries, but still presenting a comely aspect, with good streets, houses, and mosques. In 1872, having been hard pressed by the Bedouins for several years, Sanaa opened its gates to the Turks, who were then engaged in the reconquest of Yemen. In the following year Millingen estimated the population at only 20,000.

The climate is good, though the extreme dryness of the air is trying. Rain usually falls in January and June, and more copiously in the end of July; the markets are well supplied with grain and fruit; vineyards were formerly numerous, but were largely given up after an attack of vine disease some thirty years ago.

Arabic writers give many discordant and fabulous traditions about the oldest history of Sanaa and its connexion with the ancient kingdom of Himyar. But most agree that its oldest name was Azal, which seems to be the same word with Uzal in Gen. x. 27. A Himyarite nation of Auzalites occurs in a Syriac writer of the 6th century. The better-informed Arab writers knew also that the later name is due to the Abyssinian conquerors of Yemen, and that it meant in their language “fortified” (Bakri, p. 606 ; Noldeke, Gesch. d. Pers. u. Arab., p. 187). Sanaa became the capital of ‘the Abyssinian Abraha (c. 580 A.D.) who built here the famous church (Kalés), of whose splendour the Arabs give exag- gerated pictures, and which was destroyed two centurics later by order of the caliph Mansur (Azraki, p. 91).

SANA’L Abulmajd Majdid b. Adam, commonly known as the hakim or philosopher Sané’i, the earliest among the great Stfic poets of Persia, was a native of Ghazna or Ghaznin (in the present Afghanistan), and flourished in the reigns of the Ghaznawid sultans Ibrahim (1059— 1099, 451-492 a.n.), his son Mas‘ud (1099-1114), and his grandson Bahramshah, who, after some years of desperate struggle among members of his own family, ascended the throne in 1118 (512 a.u.) and died after a long and prosperous reign in 1152 (547 a.u.). The exact dates of the poet’s birth and death are uncertain, Persian autho- rities giving the most conflicting statements. At any rate, he must have been born in the beginning of the second half of the

11th century and have died between 1131 and 1150 (525 and 545 a.n.). He gained already at an carly age the reputation of a very learned and pious man and of an accomplished minstrel. Like his con- temporaries Mas‘ud b. Sa‘d b. Salman (died 1131), Hasan of Ghazna (died 1179), and Uthman Mukhtari (died 1149 or 1159), who was his master in the poetical art, he com- posed chiefly kasidas in honour of his sovereign and the great men of the realm, but a peculiar incident made him for cver abandon the highly remunerative although often perilous career of a court-panegyrist, and turn his poctical aspirations to higher and less worldly aims. One day, when he was proceeding to the royal palace to pre- sent an encomiastic song to Sultan Ibrdhim, he was taunted by a half-mad but witty jester, who proposed a toast to the poet’s blindness, because with all his learning and picty he had as yet only succeeded in flattering kings and princes, who were mere mortals like himself, and entirely misinterpreted God’s motive in creating him. Sandi was so struck with the appropriateness of this satirical remark that he forthwith gave up all the luxuries of court-life, retired from the world, and devoted himself after the due performance of the pilgrimage exclusively to devotional exercises, pious meditations, and the com- position of Stific poctry in praise of the Godhead and the divine unity. Tor forty ycars he led a life of retirement

| and poverty, and, although Sultan Bahramshah offered him not only a high position at court, but also his own sister in marriage, he remained faithful to the austere and solitary life he had chosen. But, partly to show his gratitude to the king, partly to leave a lasting monu- ment of his genius behind him, that might act as a stimulus to all disciples of the pantheistic creed, he began to write his great doublerhymed poem on ethics and religious life, which has served as model to Farid-uddin ‘Attar’s and Jaldl-uddin Rémi’s Sufic masterpieces, the Hadikat-ulhakikat, or “Garden of Truth” (also called Alkitdb alfakhri), in ten cantos, dealing with the following topics :—unity of the Godhead, the divine word, the excellence of the prophet, reason, knowledge and faith, love, the soul, worldly occupation and inattention to higher dutics, stars and spheres and their symbolic lore, friends and foes, separation from the world, &c. One of Sana’f’s earliest disciples, who wrote a preface to this work, ‘Ali al-Raff4, alias Muhammed b. “Ali

Rakkam, assigns to its composition the date 1131 (525 a.#.), which in a consider- able number of copies appears as 1140 (535 a.u.), and states besides that the poet died immediately after the completion of his task. Now, Sandi cannot possibly have died in 1131, as another of his mathnawis, the Tarik-1-tahkik, or " Path to the Verification of Truth," was composed, according to a chronogram in its last verses, in 1134 (528 a.u.), nor even in 1140, if he really wrote, as the Atashkada says, an elegy on the death of Amir Mu'izzi; for this court-poet of Sultan Sanjar lived till 1147 or 1148 (542 a.u.). It seems, therefore, that Taki Kashi, the most accurate among Persian biographers, is right after all in fixing Sana'f's death in 1150 (545 a.n.), the more so as 'Alf al-Raff4 himself distinctly says in his preface that the poet breathed his last on the 11th of Sha'ban, "which was a Sunday," and it is only in 1150 that this day happened to be the first of the week. Sandi left, besides the Z/adikah and the Tarik 7-tahkik, several other Sufic mathnawis of similar purport :—for instance, the Sair ul'ibdéd ild@'lma dd, or " Man's Journey towards the Other- World" (also called Kundz-urrumiz, "The Treasures of Mysteries") ; the 'Ishkndma, or " Book of Love;" the 'A&dlndma, or "Book of Intellect ;" the Kérndéma, or "Record of Stirring Deeds," &c.; and an extensive diwan or collection of lyrical poetry. His tomb, called the " Mecca" of Ghazna, is still visited by numerous pilgrims.

Sana'i's Hadikah still lacks a critical edition, for which 'Abd- ullatif al-"Abbasi's commentary (completed 1632 and preserved in a somewhat abridged form in several copies of the India Office Library) would form an excellent basis. See, on the poet's life and works, Ouseley, Biogr. Notices, pp. 184-187 ; Rieu's and Fliigel's Catalogues, &c.

SAN ANTONIO, a city of the United States, incor- porated in 1873, the county-seat of Bexar (Bejar) county and the principal centre of western Texas, is situated in the fertile plain watered by the head-streams of the San Antonio river, which, after a course of 200 miles, falls into the Gulf of Mexico at Espiritu Santo Bay. It is an im- portant junction for several of the Texan railways, lying on the main routes from the States to Mexico, 153 miles north of the frontier at Laredo. San Antonio proper, or the business part of the city, lies between the San Autonio and the San Pedro, and has been nearly all rebuilt since 1860. Chihuahua (formerly San Antonio de

Valero), west of the San Pedro, is still almost exclusively Mexican ; and Alamo, on somewhat higher ground to the east of the San Antonio, is largely inhabited by Germans. The total popu- lation of the city was in 1870 12,256 (1957 coloured) and 20,550 (3036) in 1880. Newspapers are published in English, German, and Spanish. Flour, beer, meat- extract, icc, candles, and soap are the local manufactures.

SA N—

On the site of Chihuahua a fort, San Fernando, was erected by the Spaniards in 1714, and four years later the mission of the Alamo (poplar tree) was established in its vicinity. Both fort and mission were afterwards transferred to the other side of the San Pedro,—the fort taking the name of the mission, which was thus destined to become famous in the Texan war, when in 1836 a garrison attacked by a superior Mexican force perished rather than surrender. German immigration began about 1845.

SANCHEZ. Three persons of this name once enjoyed considerable literary celebrity :—(1) Francisco SANCHEZ

(Sanctius) (1523-1601), successively professor of Greek

and of rhetoric at Salamanca, whose Mznerva, first printed at that town in 1587, was long the standard work on Latin grammar ; (2) Francisco SancHEz, a Portuguese physician of Jewish parentage, professor of philosophy and physic at Toulouse, where he died at the age of seventy in 1632, whose ingenious but sophistical writings (Quod nihil scitur, 1581) mark the high-water of reaction against the dogmatism of the traditional schools of his time; (3) Toomas Sancwez of Cordova (1551-1610), Jesuit and casuist, whose treatise De Matrimonio (Genoa, 1592) is more notorious for its repulsive features than celebrated for its real learning and ability.

SANCHO I. (1154-1211) and SANCHO II. (1208- 1248), kings of Portugal from 1185 and 1223 respectively. See PorTUGAL, vol. xix. p. 541-2.

SANCHUNIATHON, (that is, jmp, “the god Sak- kun hath given”) is the name of the pretended author of the Pheenician writings said to have been used by PHILo Bysiius (g.v.). See also Puanicta, vol. xviii. p. 802.

SAN CRISTOBAL DE LOS LLANOS, otherwise known as CrupAD Real, chief town of the Mexican state of Chiapas, stands in a fertile valley on the eastern slope of the central mountain range 450 nuiles east-south-east from the city of Mexico. It was founded in 1528 under the name of Villa Real, and received its present name in 1829. Its inhabitants, variously estimated as numbering from 8000 to 12,000, are chiefly employed in rearing cattle. Coarse woollen and cotton stuffs, and also common earthenware, are manufactured.

SANCROFT, Wituiam (1616-1693), archbishop of Canterbury, was born at Fressingfield in Suffolk 30th January 1616, and entered Emmanuel College, Cambridge, in July 1634. He became M.A. in 1641 and fellow in 1642, but was ejected in 1649 for refusing to accept the "Engagement." He then remained abroad till the Resto- ration, after which he was chosen one of the university preachers, and in 1663 he was nominated to the deanery of York. In 1664 he was installed dean of St Paul's. In this situation he set himself with unwearied diligence to repair the cathedral, till the fire of London in 1666 necessitated the rebuilding of it, towards which he gave £1400. He also rebuilt the deanery, and improved its revenue. In 1668 he was admitted archdeacon of Canterbury upon the king's presentation, but he resigned the post in 1670. In 1677, being now prolocutor of the Convocation, he was unexpectedly advanced to the archbishopric of Canterbury. He attended Charles II. upon his deathbed, and " made to him a very weighty exhortation, in which he used a good degree of freedom." He wrote with his own hand the petition presented in 1687 against the reading of the Declaration of Indulgence, which was signed by himself and six of his suffragans. For this they were all committed to the Tower, but after a trial for misdemeanour they were acquitted. Upon the withdrawal of James II. he concurred with the Lords in a declaration to the prince of Orange for a free parliament, and due indulgence to the Protestant dissenters. But, when that prince and his consort were declared king and queen, he refused to take the oath to them, and was accordingly suspended and deprived. From 5th August 1691 till his death on Novem-

ber 24, 1693, he lived a very retired life in his native place. He was buried in the churchyard of Fressingfield, where there is a Latin epitaph to his memory.

He published Fur Predestinatus (1651), Modern Polities (1652), and Three Sermons (1694). Nineteen Familiar Letters to Mr North (afterwards Sir Henry North) appearedin 1757. He is characterized by Macaulay as ‘‘an honest, pious, narrow-minded inan.”

SANCTUARY is the Christian representative of the classical AsyLum (q.v.), and was no doubt suggested in the first instance by the cities of refuge of the Levitical law. Originally every church or churchyard was a sanctu- ary for criminals. In England about thirty churches, from a real or pretended antiquity of the privilege, acquired special reputation as sanctuaries, ¢.g., Westminster Abbey and Beverley Minster. ‘‘The precincts of the Abbey,” says Dean Stanley, “were a vast cave of Adullam for all the distressed and discontented in the metropolis who desired, according to the phrase of the time, to take West- minster.” The sanctuary seats at Hexham and Beverley and the sanctuary knocker at Durham are still in exist- ence. The protection afforded by a sanctuary at common law was this:—a person accused of felony might fly for the safeguard of his life to sanctuary, and there before the coro- ner, within forty days, confess the felony and take an oath of abjuration entailing perpetual banishment into a foreign Christian country. The sanctuary being the privilege of the church, it is not surprising to find that it did not ex- tend to the crime of sacrilege, nor was it held to extend to high or petit treason. The law of abjuration and sanctuary was regulated by numerous and intricate statutes. A list of them will be found in Coke, Jnstztutes, vol. ili. p. 115. Finally it was enacted by 21 Jac. Ic. 28, § 7, that no sanctuary or privilege of sanctuary should be admitted or allowed in any case. The privilege of sanctuary as pro- tecting from civil process extended to certain places, parts or supposed parts of royal palaces, such as White Friars or Alsatia, the Savoy, and the Mint. The privilege of these places was abolished by 8 and 9 Will. IIT c. 27, and 9 Geo. I. c. 28. (See Stephen, Mist. of the Crim. eae vol, i, C. Xail.),

In Scotland religious sanctuaries were abolished at the Reforma- tion. But the debtor still finds sanctuary from diligence in Holyrood House and its

precincts. The sanctuary docs not protect criminals, or even all debtors, e.g., not crown debtors or fraudulent bankrupts; and a meditatio fugxe warraut may be executed within the sanctuary. After twenty-four hours' residence the debtor must enter his name in the record of the Abbey Court in order to entitle him to further protection. Under the Act 1696, c. 5, insolvency concurring with retreat to the sanctuary constitutes notour bank- ruptcy (see Bell, Commentaries, vol. ii. p. 461).

SAND, GEorcr. See DUDEVANT.

SANDALWOOD, a fragrant wood obtained from various trees of the natural order Santalacex and from the genera Santalum and Fusanus. The principal commercial source of sandalwood is Santalum album, L., a native of India, but it is also yielded by S. Freycinetianum, Gaud., and S. pyrularium, A. Gray, in the Hawaiian Islands, S. Zomei, Seem., and S. austro-caledonicum, Viell., in New Caledonia, and §. insulare, Bert., in Tahiti. The wood of S. lati folium, Benth., and also that of Fusanus spicatus, R. Br., have been exported from south-west Australia, and that of Eremophila Mitchell, of the natural order Myoporineex, from Queensland, but these have little odour and are chiefly used for cabinet work. Sandalwood is also said to be pro- duced in Nossi-Bé, and has been imported into London from Zanzibar, and into Germany from Venezuela, but of the botanical source of these varieties little is at present known. The use of sandalwood dates as far back at least as the 5th century B.c., for the wood is mentioned under its Sanskrit name " chandana" in the Nirukta, the earliest extant Vedic commentary. It is still extensively used in India and China, wherever Buddhism prevails, being em-

ployed in funeral rites and religious ceremonies ; compara- tively poor people often spend as much as 50 rupees on sandalwood for a single cremation. Until the middle of the 18th century India was the only source of sandal- wood. The discovery of a sandalwood in the islands of the Pacific led to a considerable trade of a somewhat piratical nature, resulting in difficulties with the natives, often ending in bloodshed, the celebrated missionary John Williams, amongst others, having fallen a victim to an indiscriminate retaliation by the natives on white men visiting the islands.

The loss of life in this trade was at one time even greater than in that of whaling, with which it ranked as one of the most adventurous of callings. About the year 1810 as much as 400,000 dollars is said to have been received annually for sandalwood by Kame- hameha, king of Hawaii. The trees consequently have become almost extinct in all the well-known islands, except New Caledonia, where the wood is now cultivated. Sandal-wood of inferior quality derived from Pusanus acuminatus was exported from south-west Australia in 1884 to the extent of 2620 tons, valued at an average of about £8 per ton, genuine sandalwood being worth in China from £12 to £40 per ton.

In India sandalwood is largely used in the manufacture of boxes, fans, and other ornamental articles of inlaid work, and to a limited extent in medicine as a domestic remedy for all kinds of pains and aches. The oil is largely used as a perfume, few native Indian attars or essential oils being free from admixture with it. In the form of powder or paste the wood is employed in the pigments used by the Brahmans for their distinguishing caste-marks.

During the last few years oil of sandalwood has largely replaced copaiba, both in the United Kingdom and on the Continent, in the treatment of various diseases of the mucous membrane. Three varieties are distinguished in trade—East-Indian, Macassar, and West-Indian. The first- named is derived from S. album, the second probably from another species of Santalum, and the third from a wood imported from Puerto Cabello in Venezuela. Bucida capttata, a Combretaceous plant, is known in the West Indies as sandalwood ; but the odour of the wood as well as of the oil, which is quite distinct from that of the true sandalwood, has more resemblance to that of a Myrorylon. Inferior qualities of the oil are said to be adulterated in Germany with the oil of red cedar wood (Juniperus virginiana).

In India sandalwood is produced in the dry tracts of country in Mysore and Coimbatore, north and north-west of the Nilgiri Hills, also farther eastward in the districts of Salem and North Arcot, where the tree grows from the sea-level up to an elevation of 3000 feet. In the first-named district the wood is a Government monopoly and can only be felled by the proper officers, this privilege having been retained since 1770, when it was

conferred by treaty with Hyder Ali on the East India Company. The Mysore sandalwood is shipped from Mangalore to the extent of about 700 tons annually, valued at £27,000. In the Madras Presidency—although there is now no monopoly—sandalwood, by the careful management of the forest department, has been made to yield an increasing revenue to the Government, as much as 5474 tons having beeu furnished by the reserved forests in 1872-8. The tree is propagated by seeds, which, however, must be placed where they are intended to grow, since the secdlings will not bear trans- plantation, probably on account of deriving their nourishment parasitically by means of tuberous swellings attached to the roots of other plants. The trees are cut down when between eighteen and twenty-five years old, at which period they have attained their maturity, the trunks being then about one foot in diameter. The felling takes place at the end of the year, and the trunk is allowed to remain on the ground for several months, during which time the white ants eat away the valueless sapwood but lIcave the fragrant heartwood untouched. The heartwood is then sawn into billets about 2 or 24 feetlong. These are afterwards more carefully trimmed at the forest depéts, and left to dry slowly in a close warehouse for some weeks, by which the odour is improved and

|

the tendency of the wood to split obviated. An annual auction of the wood takes place, at which merchants from all parts of India congregate. The largest pieces are chiefly exported to China, the small pieces to Arabia; and those of medium size are retained for use in India. China imported into the treaty ports 66,287 piculs (of 1834 tb) of sandalwood in 1872. As much as 700 tons are annu- ally imported into Bombay from the Malabar coast, of which about 450 tons are again exported. The oil, which is distilled chiefly at Mangalore from the roots and chips, is also imported into Bombay to the extent of 12,000 tb annually.

Red Sandalwood, known also as Red Sanders Wood, is the pro- duct of a small Leguminous tree, Pterocarpus santalinus, native of Southern India, Ceylon, and the Philippine Islands. The wood is obtained principally from Madras, in ccrtain parts of which province it is regularly cultivated, coming

into the market in the form of irregular billets of heartwood, 8 or 4 feet in length. A fresh surface of the wood has a rich deep red colour, which on exposure, however, assumes a dark brownish tint. Under the influence of alkaline solutions, alcohol, or strong acctic acid, red sandalwood yields up to 16 per cent. of a resinoid body, santalin or santalic acid C,;H,,0; (?), which substance is the tinctorial principle of the wood. Santalin is quite insoluble in cold water; it neutralizes alkalies, and with them forms uncrystallizable salts. In its pure condition santalin forms minute prismatic crystals of a beautiful ruby colour. The wood also contains small proportions of colourless crystalline principles—santal, CgH,O3, and pterocarpin, C,7H,,0;—and of an amorphous body having the formula CyAj,0,. In medizval times red sandalwood possessed a high reputation in medicine, and it was valued as a colouring ingredient in many dishes. Now it isa little used as a colouring agent in pharmacy, its principal application being in wool-dyeing and calico-printing. Several other species of Plerocarpus, notably P. indicus, contain the same dyeing principle and can be used as substitutes for red sandal- wood. The barwood and camwood of the Guinea Coast of Africa, presumably the produce of one tree, Baphia nitida (Pterocarpus angolensis of De Candolle), called santal rouge d'Afrique by the French, are also in all respects closely allied to the red sandalwood

of Oriental countries.

See Seemann, Flora Vitiensis, pp. 210-215 ; Pharm. Journ.and Trans., 1885-86; Pharmacographia, 24 ed., p. 599; Dymock, Materia Medica of Western India, p. 617; Jour. Soc. Arts, 1875, p. 641; Seemann, Voyage of the ‘‘ Herald,” 1853, p. 83; Seemann, Jour. Botany, 1864, p. 218; Erskine, Jslands of the W. Pacific, 1853, p. 143, 326, 390, and Appendix, p. 478, 486; Martin, Natives of the Tonga Islands, 1817, pp. 319-333; Birdwood, Bombay Products, p. 306; Madras Jury Reports, 1857; Hawkes, Report on Oils of India, p. 38.

SANDARACH is a resinous body obtained from the small Coniferous tree Callitris quadrivalvis, native of the north-west regions of Africa, and especially characteristic of the Atlas Mountains. The resin, which is procured as a natural exudation on the stems, and also obtained by making

incisions in the bark of the trees, comes into commerce in the form of small round balls or elongated tears, transparent, and having a delicate yellow tinge. It isa little harder than mastic, for which it is sometimes substituted, and does not soften in the mouth like that resin; but, being very brittle, it breaks with a clean glassy fracture. Sandarach has a faintly bitter resinous taste, and a pleasant balsamic odour. It consists of a mixture of three distinct resins, the first readily soluble in alcohol, constituting 67 per cent. of the mass, while the second dis- solves with more difficulty, and the third is soluble only in hot alcohol. Sandarach is imported chiefly from Mogador, and is an important ingredient in spirit varnishes. It is also used as incense, and by the Arabs medicinally asa remedy for diarrhcea. An analogous resin is procured in China from Callitris sinensis, and in South Australia, under the name of pine gum, from C. Fezssvz.

SANDBACH, a town and urban sanitary district of Cheshire, is situated on the Trent and Mersey Canal, and on the London and North-Western Railway, at the junc. . tion for Northwich, 25 miles east-south-east of Chester and 5 north-east of Crewe. In the market-place are two ancient obelisks, dating, according to some, from the 7th century. The principal public buildings are the parish church of St Mary, in the Perpendicular style, with a tower rebuilt 1847-9, the grammar school, the public reading rooms, and the town-hall. Anciently the town was celebrated for its ale. The principal industry was formerly silk throwsting, but this is now discontinued, and the inhabitants are chiefly employed in the salt-works and

alkali-works. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 2694 acres) in 1871 was 5259, and in 1881 it was

5493.

SAND-BLAST. The erosive influence of driven sand is turned to useful account for several industrial purposes by means of an apparatus devised, about 1870, by Mr B. C. Tilghman of Philadelphia. Tilghman’s sand-blast con- sists of a contrivance for impelling, with graduated degrees of velocity, a jet or column of sand, by means of com- pressed air or steam, against the object or surface to be acted on. The apparatus is principally adapted for

obscuring, engraving, and ornamenting glass, but accord- ing to the velocity with which the sand is impelled it may be used to carve deep patterns in granite, marble, and other hard stones, to bite into steel, &c., and even to cut aud perforate holes through these and other most refrac- tory materials. Sheets of glass 4 feet wide are obscured at the rate of 3 feet per minute, with a blast of air having a pressure of 1 ib per inch. With the aid of tough elastic stencils, patterns and letters are engraved on flashed glass, globes for lamps and gaslights are ornamented, druggists' bottles are lettered, &c.! Driven with moderate velocity against a metal surface, the sand produces by its impact a fine uniform pitted appearance without removing the metal; and in this way it is used for "frosting" plated goods. A strong blast is largely used for sharpen- ing files, which, as they leave the cutter, have always a shght backward curve or "burr" on their cutting edges which blunts their biting effect. By directing a blast of very fine sand, mixed with water into a thin mud, with steam pressure of 70 ib, at an angle against the back of the teeth, this burr is ground off, the shape of the teeth is improved, and the file is rendered very keen. While the use of steam for impelling the sand-blast is most simple and economical, many practical difficulties have hitherto been found in the way of its employment, and conse- quently for obtaining high pressure of air costly apparatus was required, thus limiting the applications of the agency. In 1884 Mr Mathewson patented an apparatus in which, by an ingenious exhaust arrangement, the impelling steam is swept away, leaving only cool, dry sand to strike against the object acted on; and the success of this device has already opened up a wider field for the employment of the sand-blast.

SANDBY, Paur (1725-1809), founder of the English school of water-colour painting, was descended from a branch of the Sandbys of Babworth, and was born at Nottingham in 1725. After commencing his artistic studies in London, in 1746 he was appointed by the duke of Cumberland draughtsman to the survey of the Highlands. In 1752 he quitted this post, and retired to Windsor, where he occupied himself with the production of water- colour drawings of scenery and picturesque architecture, which brought him under the notice of Sir Joseph Banks, who gave him his patronage, and subsequently commis- sioned him to bring out in aquatinta (a method of engrav- ing then peculiar to Sandby) forty-eight plates drawn during a tour in Wales. Sandby displayed considerable power as a caricaturist in his

attempt to ridicule the opposition of Hogarth to the plan for creating a public academy for the arts. He was chosen a foundation- member of the Royal Academy in 1768, and the same year was appointed chief drawing-master to the Royal Military Academy at Woolwich. He held this situation till 1799, and during that time he trained many artists

- In 1875 inscriptions were cut by means of the blast on 150,000 tombstones of soldiers killed in the American Civil War. Cast-iron letters were fastened by shellac on the marble, the sand was driven by steam pressure of 90 Ib, and the stone was cut, in four minutes, to a depth of a quarter of an inch, leaving the letters in relief.

Zo

who afterwards gained a name in their profession. Sandby will be best remembered, however, by his water-colour paintings. They are topographical in character, and, while they want the richness and brilliancy of modern water- colour, he nevertheless impressed upon them the originality of his mind. In his later pieces, in particular, decided progress is observable in richness and in harmony of tinting, and they also show a measure of poetic feeling, due, in great part, to the influence of Cozens. His etchings, such as the Cries of London and the illustrations to Ramsay's Gentle Shepherd, and his plates, such as those to Tasso's Jerusalem Delivered, are both numerous and carefully executed. He died in London on the 9th

November 1809.

SANDEAU, Lionarp Syrvarw Jutes (1811-1882), a French novelist of much grace and not a little power, was born at Aubusson (Creuse) on February 9, 1811. He made acquaintance as an art student with Madame Dudevant (George Sand), who had just taken to an unrestrained literary life at Paris. The intimacy did not last long, but it produced Mose et Blanche (1831), a novel written in common, and from it George Sand took the idea of the famous nom de guerre by which she is and always will be known. Sandeau's subsequent work showed that he could run alone, and for nearly fifty years he continued to produce novels and to collaborate in plays. His best works are Marianna (1839), Le Docteur Herbeau (1841), Cathérine

(1845), Mademoiselle de la Seigligre and Made- leine (1848), La Chasse au Roman (1849), Sacs et Parche- mins (1851), La Maison de Penarvan (1858), La Roche aux Mouettes (1871). The famous play of Le Gendre de M. Poirier is only one of several which he wrote with

mile Angier,—the novelist usually contributing the story and the dramatist the theatrical working up. Meanwhile Sandeau, who had accepted the empire, but who never took any active part in politics, had been made conserva- teur of the Mazarin library in 1853, elected to the Academy in 1858, and next year appointed librarian of St Cloud. At the suppression of this latter office, after the fall of the empire, he was pensioned. He died on the 24th of April 1882. He was never a very popular novelist, judging by the sale of his works; and the peculiar quiet grace of his style, as well as his abstinence from sensational incident, and his refusal to pander to the French taste in fictitious morals, may be thought to have disqualified him for popularity. But his literary ability has always been recognized by competent judges. His skill in construc- tion was very great ; his character-drawing, though pure, is eminently free from feebleness and commonplace ; and of one particular situation—the tragical clashing of aristo- cratic feeling with modern tendencies—he had an extra- ordinary mastery, which he showed without any mere repetition, but in many different studies.

SANDEC. See Nrv-SanpEc.

SAND-EEL or Sanp-Launez. The fishes known under these names form a small isolated group (Ammo- dytina), distantly related to the cod-fishes. Their body is of an elongate-cylindrical shape, with the head terminat- ing in a long conical snout, the projecting lower jaw form- ing the pointed end. A low long dorsal fin, in which no distinction between spines and rays can be observed, occupies nearly the whole length of the back, and a long anal, composed of similar short and delicate rays, com- mences immediately behind the vent, which is placed about midway between the head and caudal fin. The caudal is forked and the pectorals are short. The total absence of ventral fins indicates the burrowing habits of these fishes. The scales, when present, are very small; but generally the development of scales has only proceeded to the formation of oblique folds of the integuments.

The eyes are lateral and of moderate size ; the dentition is quite rudimentary.

Sand-eels are small littoral marine fishes, only one species attaining a length of 18 inches (Ammodytes lanceo- latus). They live in shoals at various depths on a sandy bottom, and bury themselves in the sand on the slightest alarm. They are able to do this with the greatest ease and rapidity whilst the bottom is covered with water. Many of those which live close inshore are left by the receding tide buried in the sand, and are then frequently dug out froma depth of one or two feet. Other shoals live in deeper water ; when they are surprised by fish of prey or porpoises, tlicy are frequently driven to the surface in such dense masses that numbers of them can be scooped out of the water with a bucket or hand-net. In fact, this used to be, in the Channel Islands, the common practice of the fishermen to provide themselves with bait. Some species descend to a depth of 100 fathoms and more ; and the greater sand-eel is not rarely taken on the mackerel line far out at sea near the surface. Sand-eels are very rapacious, destroying a great quantity of fry and other small creatures, such as the lancelet (Branchiostoma), which lives in similar localities. They are excellent eating, and are much sought after for bait.

Sand-eels are common in all suitable localities of the North Atlantic ; a species scarcely distinct from the European common sand-launce occurs on the Pacific side of North America, another on the cast coast of South Africa. On the British coasts three species are found :—the Greater Sand-Eel (Ammodytes lanceolatus), distinguished by a tooth-like bicuspid prominence on the vomer ; the Common Sand-Launce (A. tobianws), from five to seven inches long, with unarmed vomer, even dorsal fin, and with the integu- ments folded ; and the Southern Sand-Launce (A. siculus), with unarmed vomer, smooth skin, and with the margins of the dorsal and anal fins undulated. The last species is common in the Mediterranean, but local farther northwards. It has been found near the Shetlands at depths from 80 to 100 fathoms, and is generally distinguished from the common species by

the fishermen of the Channel Islands, who have a tradition that it appeared suddenly on their coasts some fifty years ago.

637.

SANDEMANIANS. See Guas, vol. x.

SANDERSON, Rozsert (1587-1663), bishop of Lin- coln, and one of the worthies celebrated by Izaak Walton, was born at Rotherham, Yorkshire, in 1587. He was edu- cated at the grammar school of his native town and at Lincoln College, Oxford, took orders in 1611, and was promoted successively to several benefices. On the recom- mendation of Laud he was appointed one of the royal chaplains in1631, and as a preacher was a great favourite with the king. In 1642 Charles created him regius pro- fessor of divinity at Oxford, with a canonry of Christ Church annexed. But the civil war prevented him until 1646 from entering on the office; and in 1648 he was ejected by the visitors whom the parliament had com- missioned, He recovered these preferments at the Restora- tion, and was promoted to the bishopric of Lincoln, but lived only two years to enjoy his new dignities, dying in his seventy-sixth year in 1663. His most celebrated work is his Cases of Conscience, deliberate judgments upon points of morality submitted to him. Some of these cases, notably that of Sabbath observance, and that of signing the " En- gagement" to the Commonwealth, were printed surrepti- tiously during his lifetime, though drawn up in answer to private spiritual clients; and a collection, gradually enlarged in successive editions, was published after his death. They are extremely interesting specimens of English casuistry, distinguished not less by moral integrity than good sense, learning, and close, comprehensive, and subtle reasoning. His practice as a college lecturer in logic is better evidenced by these "cases" than by his Compendium of Logic published in 1615. A complete edition of Sanderson's works was edited by Dr Jacobson in 1854 (Oxford Press). To this the reader may be referred

for his sermons and his occasional tracts on public affairs during the troubled period of his middle life and old age.

SAND-GROUSE, the name! by which are commonly known tle members of a small but remarkable group of birds frequenting sandy tracts, and having their feet more or less clothed with feathers after the fashion of Grouss (vol. xi. p. 221), to which they were originally thought to be closely allied, and the species first described were by the earlier systematists invariably referred to the genus Tetrao. Their separation therefrom is due to Temminck, who made for them a distinct genus which he called Pterocles,? and his view, as Lesson tells us (Z'raité, p. 515), was subsequently corroborated by De Blainville ; while in 1831 Bonaparte (Saggio, p. 54) recognized the group as a good Family, Pediophali or Pteroclidx. Further investiga- tion of the osteology and pterylosis of the Sand-Grouse revealed still greater divergence from the normal Gallinz (to which the true Grouse belong), as well as several curious resemblances to the Pigeons ; and in the Zoological Society's Proceedings for 1868 (p. 303) Prof. Huxley pro- posed to regard them, under the name of Pteroclomorphe, as forming a group equivalent to the Alectoromorphe and Peristeromorphx, for reasons already briefly stated (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 46). The Pteroclidz consist of two genera—VPrterocles, with about fifteen species, and Syrrhaptes, with two. Of the former, two species inhabit Europe, P. arenarius, the Sand-Grouse proper, and that which is usually called P. alchata, the Pin-tailed Sand- Grouse. The European range of the first is practically limited to Portugal, Spain, and the southern parts of Russia, while the second inhabits also the south of France, where it is generally known by its Catalan name of ‘‘ Ganga," or locally as ‘‘ Grandaulo," or, strange to say, " Perdrix d' Angleterre." Both species are also abundant in Barbary, and have been believed to extend eastwards through Asia to India, in most parts of which country they seem to be only winter-visitants; but in 1880 Herr Bogdanow pointed out to the Academy of St Petersburg (Bulletin, xxvii. p. 164) a slight difference of coloration between eastern and western examples of what had hith- erto passed as P. alchata; and the difference, if found to be constant, may require the specific recognition of each, while analogy would suggest that a similar difference might be found in examples of P. arenarius. India, more- over, possesses five other species of Pterocles, of which however only one, P. fasctatus, is peculiar to Asia, while the others inhabit Africa as well, and all the remaining species belong to the Ethiopian region —one, P. personatus, being peculiar to Madagascar, and four occurring in or on the borders of the Cape Colony.

The genus Syrrhaptes, though in general appearance resembling Pterocles, has a conformation of foot quite unique among birds, the three anterior toes being encased in a common “podotheca,” which is clothed to the claws with hairy feathers, so as to look much like a fingerless glove. The hind toe is wanting. The two species of Syr- rhaptes are S. tibetanus—the largest Sand-Grouse known— inhabiting the country whence its trivial name is derived, and S. paradoxus, ranging from Northern China across Central Asia to the confines of Europe, which it occa-

1 It seems to have been first used by Latham in 1783 (Synopsis,

iv. p. 751) as the direct translation of the name Tetrao arenarius given by Pallas,

- He states that he published this name in 1809; but hitherto re- search has failed to find it used until 1815.

3 Some more recent writers, recognizing the group as a distinct Order, have applied to it the name ‘‘ Pterocletes,” while another calls it Heteroclite, The former of these words is based on a grammatical misconception, while the use of the latter has long since been other- wise preoccupied in zoology. If there be need to set aside Prof. Huxley’s term, Bonaparte’s Pediophili (as above mentioned) may be accepted, and indeed has priority of all others.

sionally, and in a marvellous manner, invades, as has been already briefly described (Birps, vol. ili. p. 770).1 Though its attempts at colonization in the extreme west have failed, it would seem to have established itself of late years in the neighbourhood of Astrakhan (Zdis, 1882, p. 220). It appears to be the “ Barguerlac ” of Marco Polo (ed. Yule, i. p. 239); and the ‘ Loung-Kio” or “ Dragon’s Foot,” so unscientifically described by the Abbé Huc (Souvenirs dun Voyage dans la Tartarie, i. p. 244), can scarcely be anything else than this bird.

Externally all Sand-Grouse present an appearance so distinctive that nobody who has seen onc of them can be in doubt as to any of the rest. Their plumage assimilates in general colour to that of the ground they frequent,

being above of a dull ochreous hue, more or less barred or mottled by darker shades, while bencath it is frequently varied by belts of deep brown intensifying into black. Lighter tints are, however, exhibited by some species,—the drab merging into a pale grey, the buff brightcning into a lively orange, and streaks or edgings of an almost pure white relieve the pre- vailing sandy or fawn-coloured hues that especially characterize the group. The sexcs seem always to differ in plumage, that of the male being the brightcst and most diversified. The expression is decidedly Dove-like, and so is the form of the body, the long wings contributing also to that effect, so that among Anglo-Indians these birds are commonly known as " Rock-Pigeons." The long wings, the outermost primary of which in Syrrhaptes has its shaft produced into an attenuated filament, are in all the species worked by exceedingly powerful muscles, and in several forms the middle rectriccs are likewise protracted and pointed, so as to give to their wearers the name of Pin-tailed Sand-Grouse.? The nest is a shallow hole in the sand. Three seems to be the regular ule ment of eggs laid in each nest, but there are writers who dcclar (most likely in error) that the full number in some species is four. These eggs are of peculiar shape, being almost cylindrical in the middle and nearly alike at each end, and are of a pale earthy colour, spotted, blotched, or marbled with darker shades, the markings being of two kinds, one superficial and the other more deeply seated in the shell. The young are hatched fully clothed in down (P. Z. S. 1866, pl. ix. fig. 2), and though not very active would appear to be capable of locomotion soon after birth. Morphologically generalized as the Sand-Grouse undoubtedly are, no one can contest the extreme specialization of many of their features, and thus they form one of the most instructive groups of birds with which ornithologists are acquainted. The remains of an extinct species of Pterocles, P. scpultus, intermediate apparently between P. alchata and P. guttwralis, have been recognized in the Miocene caves of the Allier by Prof. A. Milne-Kdwards (Ois. foss. dela France, p. 294, pl. clxi. figs. 1-9); and, in addition to the other authorities on this very interesting group of birds already cited, reference may be madc to Mr Elliot's "Study" of the Family (P. Z. S., 1878, pp. 233-264) and Dr Gadow, "On certain points in the Anatomy of Pterocles" (op, cit., 1882, pp. 312-332). (A. N.)

SANDHURST, a city of Victoria, Australia, in the county of Bendigo, is situated in 36° 46' S. lat. and 144° 17' E. long., at a height of 758 feet

above the sea, on Bendigo Creek (a sub-tributary of the Murray), 10032 miles north-north-west of Melbourne by the railway to Echuca. Built on an exhausted part of old goldfields of Bendigo (1851), and long better known by that name, Sandhurst, which became a municipality in 1855, a borough in 1863, and a city in 1871, has been gradually working itself clear of the irregularity and disorder characteristic of abandoned mines and quartz-crushing enterprises. Pall Mall, the principal street, consists of good houses of two and three stories; and, besides banks, insurance offices, hotels, and churches (many of which are

1 Some slight additions to and corrections of that account may here be given. A sixth example is stated (Jbis, 1871, p. 223) to have been killed in Europe in 1859, namely, at Perpignan in France. One is believed to have been obtained at or near Archangel (Zbis, 1873, p. 66); but the report of one in Sicily proves to have been a mistake, and Rimini, on the Adriatic, remains the most southern Italian locality reached in 1863. Sinee 1872 a male obtained near Modena in May 1876 (Zbis, 1881, p. 206), and a pair, one of which was shewn to the writer, in the county of Kildare in Ireland, the following October (Zoologist, 1877, p. 24), are all that are known to have occurred in Western Europe.

2 These were separated by Bonaparte (Comptes Rendus, xlii. p. 880) as a distinct genus, Pteroclurus, which later authors have justly seen no Treason to adopt.

substantial buildings), there are in Sandhurst Govern- ment and municipal offices, a hospital, a benevolent asylum, a mechanics' institute and school of mines, a theatre, and several halls. Rosalind Park, opposite Pall Mall, the Camp Reserve, and the Botanical Gardens are the principal pleasure grounds. A good supply of water has been secured by the construction of five large reser- voirs capable of storing in the aggregate upwards of 622,600,000 gallons. Besides gold-mining, which in the Sandhurst district employs 6800 miners, the local indus- tries are brewing, iron-casting, coach-building, the working of bricks and tiles and earthenware, and tanning. The population of the city (which is divided into three wards —

Sutton, Darling, and Barkly) was 28,662 in 1881. The value of rateable property is £1,663,910.

SAN DIEGO, a city and port of entry of the United States, chief town of San Diego county, California, 15 miles north of the Mexican frontier. It has a land-locked harbour 5} miles long and next to San Francisco the best on the Pacific coast of the States, is the selected terminus of the Texas and Pacific Railroad, and has recently become a fashionable winter resort owing to the remarkable steadi- ness of its winter climate (mean anoual temperature 62°). San Diego was founded by Roman Catholic missionaries in 1769. In 1880 it had only 2637 inhabitants, but they have since increased to upwards of 5000. In the county is a lake of boiling mud half a mile long by 500 yards wide.

SAN DOMINGO, or Santo Dominco. See Hayrt.

SANDOMIR, or SEpomIERz, a town of Russian Poland, in the province of Radom, is one of the oldest towns of Poland, being mentioned in annals as early as 1079 ; from 1139 to 1332 it was the chief town of the principality. Under Casimir ITI. it received extensive privileges and reached a high degree of prosperity and strength. In 1429 it was the seat of a congress for the establishment of peace with Lithuania, and in 1570 the well-known ‘“Con- sensus Sandomiriensis” was held there for uniting the Lutherans, Calvinists, and Moravian Brethren. Subse- quent wars, and especially the Swedish, ruined the town still more than numerous conflagrations, and in the second part of the 18th century it had only 2060 inhabitants. It is now a quite unimportant place, but retains a few remark- able monuments of its past. The beautiful cathedral, rising on a high hill above the Vistula, and facing the plains of Galicia, was built between 1120 and 1191; it was rebuilt in stone in 1360, and is thus one of the oldest monuments of old Polish architecture. The churches of St Paul and St James are fine relics of the 13th century. In 1881 the population was 6265, or, including the suburbs, 14,710.

SANDOWAY, a district in the south of the Arakan division of British Burmah, ceded to the British by treaty in 1826, embracing an area of 3667 square miles, and bounded on the north by the Ma-i river, on the west by the Bay of Bengal, on the east by the Arakan Mountains, and on the south by the Khwa river. The whole face of the country is mountainous, the

Arakan range sending out spurs which reach down to the coast. Some of the peaks in the north attain an elevation of over 4000 feet. Not more than one-eighteenth part of the surface can be called plain ; and, except there, where rice cultivation is carried on, and on the hill-sides, where clearings are made for toungya or nomadic cultivation, the country is covered with dense forest. There is nothing in the district that can be called a river, the streams draining it being but mountain torrents to within a few miles of the coast; the mouth of the Khwa forms a good anchorage for vessels of from 9 to 10 feet draught. So far as is known of the geology of the district, the rocks in the Yoma range and its spurs are metamorphic, and comprise clay, slates, ironstone, and in- durated sandstone ; towards the south, ironstone, trap, and

rocks of basaltic character are common ; veins of steatite and white fibrous quartz are also found in the district.

Only 135 square miles of the total area are cultivable, and of these but 75 are cultivated. The chief crops are rice, sesamum, tobacco, cotton, sugar-cane, dhant palms, and yams. The revenue in 1883-84 was £13,978, the land tax realizing £6749 of that amount. — This mountainous and forest-clad country, with such a small cultivable area, is sparscly inhabited, the population as returned by the census of 1881 being only 64,010 (males 32,706, females 31,304); of this number 56,458 were Buddhists. There are no towns with a popula- tion exceeding 2000. Sandoway, the chief town and headquarters, on the river of the same name, in 18° 27’ 35” N. lat. and 94° 24’ 36” E. long.,-is a very ancient town, and is said to have been at one time the capital of a kingdom, or more probably of a petty chieftainship.

SANDPIPER (Germ. Sandpfeifer), according to Willughby in 1676 the name given by Yorkshiremen to the bird now most popularly known in England as the “ Summer-Snipe,”—the Zringa hypoleucos of Linnzus and the Zotanus, Actitis, or Tringoides hypoleucus of later writers,—but probably even in Willughby’s time of much wider signification, as for more than a century it has certainly been applied to nearly all the smaller kinds of the group termed by modern ornithologists Lamicolz which are not Provers (vol. xix, p. 227), or SNIPES (q.v.), but may be said to be intermediate between them. Placed by most systematists in the family Scolopacede, the

birds commonly called Sandpipers seem to form three sections, which have been often regarded as Subfamilies— Totanine, Tringine, and Phalaropodine, the last indeed in ‘some classifications taking the higher rank of a Family— Phalaropodidz. This section comprehends three species only, known as Phalaropes or swimming Sandpipers, which are at once distinguished by the membranes that fringe their toes, in two of the species forming marginal lobes,! and by the character of their lower plumage, which is as close as that of a Duck, and is obviously connected with their natatory habits. The distinctions between Jotaninz and Tringine, though believed to be real, are not so easily drawn, and space is wanting here to describe them minutely. The most obvious may be said to lie in the acute or blunt form of the tip of the bill (with which is associated a less or greater development of the sensitive nerves running almost if not quite to its extremity, and therefore greatly influencing the mode of feeding) and in the style of plumage—the Tringine, with blunt and flexible bills, mostly assuming a summer-dress in which some tint of chestnut or reddish-brown is very prevalent, while the Zotaninex, with acute and stiffer bills, display no such lively colours. Furthermore, the 7’ringinz, except when actually breeding, frequent the sea-shore much more than do the Zotanine.? To the latter belong the GREEN- SHANK (vol. xi. p. 173) and RepsHanx (vol. xx. p. 317), as well as the Common Sandpiper of English books, the ‘‘Summer-Snipe” above-mentioned, a bird hardly exceed- ing a Skylark in size, and of very general distribution throughout the British Islands, but chiefly frequenting clear streams, especially those with a gravelly or rocky bottom, and most generally breeding on the beds of sand or shingle on their banks. It usually makes its appearance in May, and from thence during the summer-months may be seen in pairs skimming gracefully over the water from one bend of the stream to another, uttering occasionally a

1 These are Phalaropus fulicarius and P. (or Lobipes) hyperboreus, and on that account were thought by some of the older writers to be allied to the Coors (vol. vi. p. 841). The third species is P. (or

Sleganopus) wilsont. All are natives of the higher parts of the northern hemisphere, and the last is especially American, though perhaps a straggler to Europe. 7

2 There are unfortunately no English words adequate to express these two sections. By some British writers the Tringing have been indicated as ‘‘Stints,” a term cognate with Stunt and wholly inapplic- able to nay, of them, while recent American writers restrict to them the name of Sandpiper,” and call the Totaning, to which that name is especially appropriate, “ Willets.” ‘

|

shrill but plaintive whistle, or running nimbly along the margin, the mouse-coloured plumage of its back and wings making indeed but little show, though the pure white of its lower parts often renders it conspicuous. ‘The nest, in which four eggs are laid with their pointed ends meeting in its centre (as is usual among Limicoline birds), is seldom far from the water’s edge, and the eggs, as well as the newly-hatched and down-covered young, so closely resemble the surrounding pebbles that it takes a sharp eye to discriminate them, Later in the season family-parties may be seen about the larger waters, whence, as autumn advances, they depart for their winter-quarters. The Common Sandpiper is found over the greater part of the Old World, In summer it is the most abundant bird of its kind in the extreme north of Europe, and it extends across Asia to Japan. In winter it makes its way to India, Australia, and the Cape of Good Hope. In America its place is taken by a closely kindred species, which is said to have also occurred in England—7. macularzus, the “ Peetweet,” or Spotted Sandpiper, so called from its usual cry, or from the almost circular marks which spot its lower plumage. In habits it is very similar to its congener of the Old World, and in winter it migrates to the Antilles and to Central and South America. Of other Zotanine, one of the most remarkable is that to which the inappro-priate name of Green Sandpiper has been assigned, the Totanus or Helodromas ochropus of ornithologists, which most curiously differs (so far as is known) from all others of the group both in its osteology® and mode of nidifica- tion, the hen laying her eggs in the deserted nests of other birds, —Jays, Thrushes, or Pigeons,—but nearly always at some height (from 3 to 30 feet) from the ground (Proc. Zool, Society, 1863, pp. 529-532). This species occurs in England the whole year round, and is pre- sumed to have

bred here, though the fact has never been satisfactorily proved, and our knowledge of its erratic habits comes from naturalists in Pomerania and Sweden ; yet in the breeding-season, even in England, the cock-bird has been seen to rise high in air and perform a variety of evolutions on the wing, all the while piping what, without any violence of language, may be called a song. ‘This Sandpiper is characterized by its dark upper plumage, which contrasts strongly with the white of the lower part of the back and gives the bird as it flies away from its dis- turber much the look of a very large House-Martin. The so-called Wood-Sandpiper, 7’. glareola, which, though mucli less common, is known to have bred in England, has a considerable resemblance to the species last mentioned, but can at once be distinguished, and often as it flies, by the feathers of the axillary plume being white barred with greyish-black, while in the Green Sandpiper they are greyish-black barred with white. It is an abundant bird in most parts of northern Europe, migrating in winter very far to the southward.

Of the section Zringine the best known are the KNor (vol. xiv. p. 129) and the Dunlin, 7. alpina. The latter, often also called Ox-bird, Plover’s-Page, Purre, and Stint,— names which it shares with some other species,—not only breeds commonly on many of the elevated moors of Britain, but in autumn resorts in countless flocks to the shores, where indeed a few may be seen at almost any time of year. In seasonal diversity of plumage it is scarcely excelled by any bird of its kind, being in winter of a nearly uniform ash- grey above and white beneath, while in summer the feathers of the back are black, with deep rust-coloured edges, and a broad black belt occupies the breast. The

3 It possesses only a single pair of posterior ‘‘emarginations” on its sternum, in this respect resembling the RuFF (supra, p. 54). Among the PLOVERS (vol. xix. p. 227) and Syipzs (q.v.) other similarly ex- ceptional eases may be found.

Dunlin varies considerably in size, and to some extent |

according to locality, examples from North America being almost always recognizable from their greater bulk, while in Europe, besides the ordinary

form, there appears to be a smaller race which has received the name of T'. schinzt, but no other difference is perceptible. In the breeding- season, while performing the amatory flights in which like all Sandpipers he indulges, the male Dunlin utters a most peculiar and far-sounding whistle, quite impossible to syllable, and somewhat resembling the continued ringing of a high-toned but yet musical bell. Next to the Dunlin and Knot the commonest British Tringine are the Sander- ling, Calidris arenaria (to be distinguished from every other bird of the group by wanting a hind toe), the Purple Sandpiper, 7'. striata or maritima, the Curlew-Sandpiper, T. subarquata, and the Little and Temminck's Stints, 7' minuta and 7'. temmincki, but want of space forbids more than the record of their names; and for the same reason no noticecan here be taken of the many other species, chiefly American,! belonging to this group. Two other birds, however, must be mentioned. These are the Broad-billed Sandpiper, 7, platyrhyncha, of the Old World, which seems to be more Snipe-like than any that are usually kept in this section, and the marvellous Spoon-billed Sandpiper, Hurinorhynchus pygmzus, whose true home has still to be discovered, according to the experience of Baron Nordenskjold in the memorable voyage of the " Vega." i, H.)

SANDROCOTTUS (Cuanpracupta), founder of the Maurya kingdom in India. See Iyp1a, vol. xii. p. 787, and Persia, vol. xviil. p. 586.

SANDUSKY, a city of the United States, the capital of Erie county, Ohio, lies at the mouth of Sandusky river, 210 miles by rail north-east of Cincinnati, and is hand- somely built of limestone from the subjacent strata on ground rising gradually from the shore of Lake Erie. The court-house and the high school are both of considerable architectural note. Besides being the centre of a great vine-growing district, Sandusky has the largest freshwater fish market in the United States, is the seat of the State fish-hatchery (which annually puts about 3,000,000 young whitefish into the lake), and has attained a reputation for the manufacture of such wooden articles as handles, spokes, "bent work" for carriages, carpenters' tools, &c. The city is coextensive with Portland township. Its population was 13,000 in 1870 and 15,838 in 1880.

SANDWICH, an English borough, market-town, and Cinque Port, is situated in the east of Kent, opposite the Downs, on a branch of the South-Eastern Railway, and on the Stour, 2 miles from the sea, 12 miles east of Canter- bury, and 4 north-west of Deal. The streets are narrow and the houses irregularly built. The old line of the walls on the land side is marked by a public walk. The Fishers' Gate and a gateway called the Barbican are interesting ; but the four principal gates were pulled down in thie last century. St Clement's church has a fine Norman central tower, and St Peter's, said to date from the reign of King John, has interesting medieval monuments. The grammar school founded by Sir Roger Manwood in 1564 is now in abeyance. There are three ancient hospitals; St Bar- tholomew's has a fine Early English chapel of the 12th

1 A "Monograph of the Tringew of North Ameriea" by Prof. Coues was published in the Proceedings of the Philadelphia Aeademy for 1861 (pp. 190-205), but is of eourse new out of date. Schlegel's list of '* Seolopaces" in the Muséum des Pays-Bas is the best general description we have, but that is only a few years later (1864), and requires much modifieation to be put on a level with the knowledge of the present day. The very rare Tinga leueoptera of the older systematists, figured by Latham (Synopsis, pl. 82), the type of the genus Prosobonia of Bonaparte, seems to be really a Ralline form (Comptes Rendus, xxxi, p. 562 and xliii. p. 598).

century. Until the beginning of the 16th century Sand- wich was of considerable importance as a port, but after the filling up of the harbour with sand about the begin- ning of the 16th century it fell into decay. The principal industries of the town are market-gardening, tanning, wool-sorting, and brewing. Coal, timber, and iron are imported. Sandwich returned two members to parliament till 1880, and was merged in the St Augustine's division of the county in 1885. The parliamentary borough, which included Deal and Walmer (area 2684 acres), had in 1881 a population of 15,655, while that of the municipal borough (area 706 acres) was 2846.

In the Norman survey Sandwich is deseribed asa borough. It rose into importance on the deeline of the Portus Rutupensis, its name denoting the

situation on the sands. The Danes frequently attacked it in the 10th and 11th centuries; and it was repeatedly plundered by the French in the 15th century. It was fortified by Edward VI. Sandwich was ineorporated by Edward the Confessor, and received its last charter from Charles II.

SANDWICH, Epwarp Monrtacv, Earn oF (1625— 1672), general and admiral, was the son of Sir Sidney Montagu, youngest brother of Edward Lord Montagu of Boughton, and was born 27th July 1625. In August 1643 he raised a regiment in the service of the Parliament, with which he specially distinguished himself at Marston Moor, Naseby, and the siege of Bristol. He was a member of the ‘Little Parliament” (1653), and one of the committee for regulating the customs. In November he was elected to the council of state. In the first Pro- tectorate parliament he sat for Huntingdonshire. In January 1656 he succeeded Penn as admiral, and he was associated with Blake in his expedition to the Mediter- ranean in the same year. After the treaty with France against Spain in 1657 he held command of the fleet sent to prevent the relief of the three coast towns—Gravelines, Mardike, and Dunkirk—besieged by the French, and was successful in defeating an attempt by a great Spanish force to retake Mardike. After the death of Cromwell he was sent with a fleet to the North Sea to enter into negotiations with the Northern powers, but, communi- cations having been opened with him on behalf of Charles II., he returned to England only to find that the conspiracy of Sir George Booth had miscarried, where- upon, after a lame explanation, he was dismissed from his command. At the Restoration, having commanded the fleet which conveyed the king to England, he was made Knight of the Garter, and soon afterwards elevated to the peerage as Baron Montagu of St Neots, Viscount Hin- chinbroke, and Earl of Sandwich, During the war with the Dutch in 1664-65 he commanded the Blue squadron under the duke of York, and specially distinguished him- self in the great battle of 3d June 1665. After his return to England he was sent to negotiate a peace between Spain and Portugal, and also a treaty of commerce with Spain. Ona renewal of the war in 1672 he again com- manded the Blue squadron under the duke of York, and during the fight in Southwold Bay, on the 28th May, his ship, the Royal James, was set on fire by the Dutch, when he leaped overboard and was drowned. His body was found a fortnight afterwards, and was interred in Henry VII.’s Chapel, Westminster Abbey,

Lord Sandwich’s translation of a Spanish work on the Art of Metals by Alvaro Alonso Barba (1640) appeared in 1674, Several of his letters during the Spanish negotiations have been published in Arlington’s Letters, and various letters to him by Cromwell will be found in Carlyle’s Cromwell. See also Original Letters and Negotiations of Sir Richard Fanshawe, the Earl of Sandwieh, the Earl of Sunderland, and Sir William Godolphin, wherein Diverse Matters between the Three Crowns of England, Spain, and Portugal from 1608 to 1678 are set in a elear light.

SANDWICH, Joun Montacu, Fourta Eari oF (1718-1792), was born 3d November 1718, and succeeded

his grandfather in the earldom, 20th October 1729. He was educated at Eton and at Trinity College, Cambridge, which he entered in 1735. After a voyage round the Medi- terranean, he returned to England and began to take an active interest in politics as a supporter of Sir Robert Walpole. A clear and lucid rather than a brilliant debater, his style of address always won the attention of his audience, and his accurate knowledge secured their respect. The high opinion the Government entertained of his judgment and his diplomatic abilities was evidenced by his appointment in 1746 as plenipotentiary to the congress at Breda, which was continued till peace was negotiated at Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748. On his return he became first lord of the admiralty, retaining the post until June 1751. He held the same office from 1763 to 1765, and again from 1771 till the dissolution of Lord North’s administration in 1782. He died 30th April 1792. His Voyage Round the Mediterranean was pub- lished posthumously in 1799, accompanied with a memoir.

SANDWICH ISLANDS. See Hawaran IsLanps.

SANDYS, Gzorez (1577-1644), famous in the reigns of James I. and Charles I. as a traveller and a metrical translator. He was born in 1577, the youngest son of an archbishop of York, studied at St Mary Hall, Oxford, and afterwards probably at Corpus Christi, and began his travels in 1610. The record of them was a substantial contribu- tion to geography and

ethnology, written in a style always interesting and often eloquent, interspersed with versified scraps of quotations from classical authors.

by way of Mount Sinai to Palestine, and back to Venice by way of Cyprus, Sicily, Naples, and Rome. Later on

in his life he published translations of Ovid's Metamor- | phoses, the first book of the #neid, and various books of

Scripture. His verse was praised by Dryden, and de-

servedly so, for it has vitality as well as a clearly marked |

rhythm. He died in 1644. Selections from his poetry were published by the Rev. H. J. Todd in 1839.

SAN FERNANDO, formerly Ista pz Lzon, a fortified city of Spain, in the province of Cadiz, near the head of the inner bay, and 94 miles by rail from the city of Cadiz (see vol. iv. p. 627), is a modern town with straight and level streets, two churches, two hospitals, several barracks, and a school of navigation, with an observatory. It has considerable trade in the salt produced in the neighbouring "salinas." The population within the municipal limits (which include the " poblacion" of San Carlos and the naval arsenal of La Carraca) was returned as 26,346 in 1877.

SAN FRANCISCO, a city of the United States, the largest commercial city of California and of the Pacific coast, is situated in 37° 47' 22-55 N. lat. and 122° 25' 40"°76 W. long., on the end of a peninsula which has the Pacific Ocean on one side and the Bay of San Francisco on the other. The width of this tongue of land within the city limits is about 6 miles, and its whole length about 26. The original site of San Francisco was so uninviting that many of the pioneers doubted if a place of much importance could ever spring up there. The hills (Russian Hill, 360 feet; Telegraph Hill, 294 feet; and a number of others, ranging from 75 to 120 feet) were barren and precipitous, and the interspaces, especially on the westerly side, were made up largely of shifting sand-dunes ; on the east side, however, the land sloped gently towards the bay, and there was the further advantage of a small cove extending inland nearly to the present line of Montgomery Street. This cove

has since been filled up and built over. After an attempt to found the commercial metropolis at Benicia, 30 miles north on the Straits of Carquinez, it was evident that no other place within easy distance from the ocean possessed so many advantages for the site of a city as this barren

He travelled | from Venice to Constantinople, thence to Egypt, thence |

peninsula. The Bay of San Francisco is reached from the ocean through the Golden Gate, a strait about 5 miles long and averaging 1 mile in width, with a depth of 30 feet on the bar at the entrance and from 60 to 100 feet within. The bay, which extends past the city in a south- south-east direction for about 40 miles, is about seven miles wide in front of the city, while its greatest width is 12. Connected with the Bay of San Francisco on the north by a strait 3 miles wide is San Pablo Bay, about 10 miles in length and the same in breadth, having at its extreme northerly end Mare Island, the site of the navy yard. This bay, again, is connected by the Straits of Carquinez with Suisun Bay, 8 miles long and 4 wide. The total length of these bays and connecting straits is 65 miles. This great inland water, sheltered and for the most part navigable by the largest craft, receives the two great

Washington Corners \ oltission San Jose

Environs of San Francisco.

rivers of California, the Sacramento and the San Joaquin. In the Bay of San Francisco are Alcatraz Island (30 acres), strongly fortified ; Angel Island (800 acres), fortified; and Yerba Buena, or Goat Island (about 300 acres).

The presidio or fortified settlement of San Francisco was founded on 17th September 1776, and the mission (San Francisco de los Dolores) in the following October. In 1830 the population of the presidio consisted of about fifty Spanish soldiers and officers; these added to the number at the mission made an aggregate population of about 200. Beechy, who visited the harbour and presidio in 1826, has left the following description :—

“The governor’s abode was in a corner of the presidio, and formed one end of a row of which the other was oceupied by a chapel ; the

“opposite side was broken down, and little better than a heap of

rubbish and bones, on which jackals, dogs, and vultures were con- stantly preying. he other two sides of the quadrangle contained stone houses, artificers’ shops, and the jail, all built in the humblest style with badly burned brieks and roofed with tiles. The chapel and the Government house were distinguished by being whitewashed.”

SAN FRANCISCO

The presidio enclosure was about 300 yards square. In 1834, when it was secularized and began to be known by the secular name of Yerba Buena, the mission Dolores had a population of 500. In the summer of 1846 an American man-of-war took possession of the place. In the early part of 1849 the inhabitants numbered about 2000, and the embryo city had already come to be known by its future name of San Francisco. In consequence of the dis- covery of gold in California a strong drift of population set in towards the placer mines, and at the end of 1849 there were 20,000 people in the city. The first legislature of California granted a charter to San Francisco on 1st May 1850. Prior to that date the government of the pueblo had been administered by an alcalde. The pueblo grant originally made by the king of Spain contained four square (Spanish) leagues of land; this grant was subsequently confirmed to San Fran- cisco by an Act of Con-

west, a distance of 3 miles or more. The more important streets are paved for the most part with cobble stones and basalt blocks ; but asphalt on a stone or concrete founda- tion has begun to be used. Among the public buildings and institutions of San Francisco are the mint, appraisers' stores, subtreasury, custom-house, merchants' exchange, stock exchange, city-hall, industrial school, house of correc- tion, almshouse, Masonic Temple, new Oddfellows' building, safe deposit, and seven theatres and opera-houses. The Palace Hotel cost $3,250,000, and can accommodate 1200 guests. The city has eleven public squares. Its greatest attraction is the Golden Gate Park of 1050 acres, 3 miles long and half a mile wide, having the ocean for its extreme westerly boundary. The greater part of this area was for- merly a shifting sand-dune. An extensive glass-house in a central position is filled with the rarest tropical and semi-

& . 5 , Seale of Yards gress. The jurisdiction F1{_| yt : —] as ' ed 24 of the municipality ex- H OO qopoSeaoo = mee tends over the islands in | Government ee oo ae = nen a the bay. The area in- |**"™™ is ?

eluded in the limits of the city exceeds the original

four square leagues con- siderably, including what were originally denomi- nated 'swamp and over- flowed lands" (see Dwi- nelle's Colonial History).

In the first stages of its history the buildings of the city were chiefly of wood,—in many cases the frames and coverings having been brought from the Atlantic States round Cape Horn in sailing vessels. Within a few months of the establish- mentof municipal govern- ment the city suffered severely on more than one occasion from fire. The fire of 4th May 1850 destroyed property to the value of about $3,000,000; another in the following month was still more destructive ($4,000,000); and the damage resulting from a third in September was estimated at $500,000.

AU

rio noe ae noo pane aaa aaa ° peag Oe Boob eS er aro EX, 2 noob ppobepnok see poy . Sob eaa CL) oboe png "DS A ass oo BeSos esos osaan

ERC Jit Seccecccecsecseecess isoeccsscecae BEE = oS ean oad SE WWG caer BO SORRY a o

=

| Boo XG Be SN.

ne a

ane aus GU

ie i ae ia nL ae » Se

San Francisco (north-eastern part).

These occurrences naturally led to the employment of more substantial building material in some cases, granite being imported from China for some buildings, and iron and brick being used to a considerable extent on others; but to this day nearly all the private dwellings of the city are of wood. Since 1850, however, the damage from fire in the portion of the city occupied by private houses has been remarkably small,—partly because of the use of red- wood instead of pine. In the business houses erected recently the increase of solidity and costliness has been very marked.

Throughout a considerable part of the city the streets are laid out in rectangular form, and nowhere with any reference to the natural elevations. The most important business thoroughfare is Market Street, extending from the water front at the ferry landings to the hills on the

tropical plants and shrubs; a large part of the area is planted with forest trees, or is laid down in grass; the walks and drives are well planned and well kept.

San Francisco is traversed in various directions by horse railroads, which extend from the water front to the suburbs. There are also‘50 miles of wire cable roads, which are yearly increasing, These cable tramways extend 2 miles on Clay Street, overcoming an elevation of 120 feet. The cost of their construction and equip- ment has ranged from $100,000 to $125,000 per

mile. The speed is usually about 5 miles an hour. San Fran- cisco is the terminus of two continental railways, viz., the Union and Central Pacific and the Southern Pacific ; while a third, the Atlantic and Pacific, enters the city over a leased line from Mohave. Two narrow-gauge lines and one broad-gauge, each less than a hundred miles long, to

important points in the State, are connected with the city

by means of ferries. ;

The population of San Francisco, as shown by the census returns, was 34,000 in 1850; in 1860, 56,802 ; in 1870, 149,473; and in 1880, 233,959 (182,608 males, 101,351 females) ; in 1885 it was estimated, on the basis of the school census, at 275,000 (Chinese, 30,000). At the last presidential election (1884) the total vote cast in the city was 50,167, the total foreign vote being 25,254; of these 12,837 were British (10,206 of them Irish) and 7052 Germans. Of the 90,468 children in the city under seventeen reported for the fiscal year 1884-85, 50,973 had foreign-born parents, and 15,460 more had one parent of foreign origin. In social customs, trade usages, amuse- ments, and religious observances, the large foreign popu- lation of San Francisco contributes materially to the formation of its liberal and cosmopolitan character.

Administration, &c.—In July 1856 the city and county, which until then had maintained separate governments, were consolidated in one organization. The government is administered by a mayor and a board of twelve supervisors, with the usual officers common to municipal and county organizations. There is also a superior court having twelve departments, with one judge for each, a police court, and justices' courts. The supreme court of the State holds a number of terms each year in San Fraricisco. The U.S. district and eircuit courts also hold regular terms in the city. There is a well-organized and efficient police force of 400 men. On 1st July 1884 the fire department had 315 men. The city is supplied with gas by two companies. Water is supplied by the Spring Valley Company, principally from San Mateo county. The water is brought in three lines of wrought-iron pipe; the largest, which connects the Crystal Springs reservoir

with the city, is 44 inches in diameter and 23 miles in length. The daily consumption of water is about 18,000,000 gallons. The company is able to supply 25,000,000 gallons daily.

Finance.—The assessment roll of personal property in 1885 showed a value of $56,634, 860,—that of real estate and improve- ments being returned at $171,433,126. The actual value is not less than $350,000,000. The debt of the municipality is 34 million dollars. There are twelve incorporated commercial or discount banks, with an aggregate paid-up capital of $21,047,965, and a surplus (1st July 1885) of $8,945,647. The total assets are set down at $50,894,972. There are alsoa number of private banks. There are eight savings banks, all but one of these having some paid-up capital, the aggregate of which is $1,651,200. These banks on the 1st of July 1885 held deposits to the amount of $52,577,746 ; they had also a surplus beyond the paid-up capital of $2,067,209. ‘The banks having a subscribed and paid-up capital pay regular dividends on the entire amount of nominal capital aud about 44 per cent. per annum to depositors.

Commerce.—The exports by water for the fiscal year 1884-85 amounted to $37,170,800, and the imports to $37,171,100; the items of import and export by rail bring the total up to $80,000,000, The duties collected on imports were $6,610,400. The treasure shipped amounted to $17,540,000 ; and the exports of quicksilver were 14,900 flasks, valued at $438,800. The receipts of treasure from all productive sources west of the Missouri, including Mexico, reached a total of $40,253,635, and the coinage at the mint in San Franciseo was of the value of $23,750,000, with an addition of $1,500,000 on foreign account. The sailing ships entering the port numbered 619 (604,200 tons) ; the steamers were 225. Among the imports were—coffee, 19,505,800 ib; sugar, 152,374,870 ib; eoal, 900,000 tons ; lumber, 297,234,000 feet (92,754,000 feet red- wood, 177,305,000 feet pine, the remainder miscellaneous). The exports of wheat were 1,001,900 tons, valued at $26,791,500; this quantity was exported in 366 ships, the freights to Europe ranging from 25s. to 48s. 6d. per ton. British iron sailing vessels have the preference for wheat exportation, and obtain the highest rates. A much larger class of vessels is employed in this trade than formerly, the cargoes now averaging about 3000 tons. There are regular steamship lines connecting San Francisco with Mexican, Central American,

Australian, Hawaiian, Japanese, and Chinese ports, and with the chief port of British Columbia. The Pacific Whaling Company owus five or six ships, principally steamers, employed in the Arctic whale fishery. The same company has also extensive works for refining the oil in San Francisco. There is one stone dry dock admitting vessels of 6000 tons, and two or more floating docks which ean take on vessels from 500 to 800 tons burthen. A sea-wall is in process of construction by State authority round the deep-water front to prevent the shoaling of the water in the slips resulting in part from the gradual washing down of debris from the hills and steep slopes of the city. =

Manufoctures.—For many years manufactures made slow pro-

|

SAN FRAN G@ESCO

gress, The city was remote from the great centres of population, and labour was very costly. But these disadvantages have been gradually overcome. In 1875 there were 18,000 persons employed in manufacturing cstablishments, and the value produced was $40,000,000. In 1885 38,919 persons were so employed, and the estimated value for the business year ending lst July was $86,417,200. Subjoined are some of the leading manufactures, with the number of persons employed and the annual value of their production :—bags, 300, $1,500,000 ; boots and shoes, 3500, $5,300,000; cigar-boxes, 260, $5,000,000; wooden boxes, 350, $1,000,000 ; brass-foundries, 350, $535,000; breweries, 450, $2,450,000 ; cigars, 8000, $4,850,000 ; clothing, 1900, $3,750,000 ; coffee and spices, $900,000; cordage and ropes, 150, $600,000 ; crackers, 150, $620,000; dry docks (stone), 6, $675,000 ; flour, 175, $2,230,000; foundries, 2000, $5,500,000; furs, 170, $500,000 ; furniture, 1000, $2,000,000; gas-works, 460, $12,000,000; harness, 440, $1,150,000; jewellery, 165, $600,000; linseed oil, 55, $600,000; picklesand fruits, 2000, $1,700,000 ; provision-packing, 250, $1,900,000; rolling-mills, 550, $1,880,000 ; sashes, doors, &c., 1550, $5,010,000; ship-yards, 200, $503,000; shirts, 2550, $1,000,000 ; soap, 190, $715,100 ; sugar-refineries, 360, $8,700,000 ; tanneries, 835, $1,700,000; tinwares, 180, $525,000; woollen- mills, 1500, $1,900,000. In the laundries, it may be added, 985 whites and 1300 Chinese were employed.

Churches and Charities.—There are 70 Protestant churches in the city, representing nearly all the denominations of the country. Besides these there are 19 Roman Catholic churches and a number of chapels connected with the various hospitals and schools. There are 7 synagogues aud 1 Greek church (Russian), Including the chapels, the total number of places of worship may be set down at 100. With few exceptions, the church edifices are not imposing. In consequence of the rapid growth of tlie city wood has been employed in a majority of cases, but this is now being discarded for stone. The asylums and beuevolent associations are numerous and well-supported. The more prominent of these institutions are the Protestant Orphan Asylum (214 children), Catholic Orphan Asylum, Pacific Hebrew Orphan Asylum, Magdalen Asylum, Old People's Home, Ladies' Protection and Relief Society, Little Sisters' Infant Shelter, Seamen's Friends Society, San Francisco Benevolent Society, Ladies' United Hebrew Benevolent Society, San Francisco Fruit and Flower Mission, Young Men's Christian Association, Pacific Homeopathic Dispensary, Lying-in Hospital. Besides these there are a great number of associations which care for their members, and in some instances provide the best medical attend- ance in private hospitals. Nearly all classes of forcign nativity have established benevolent associations; British, French, and German institutions have large resources, and are managed with great efficiency. Nearly all the secret orders (Masonic, Oddfellows, &c.) devoted in whole or in part to works of benevolence are strongly represented.

Public Schools.—The first public school was established in April 1849. There are now sixty-one free schools, with 43,265 pupils and an average daily attendance of 32,188. The number of children in the city between the ages of five and seventeen years according to the census report of 1880 was 69,000. The number of teachers, male and female, employed in the public school department was 7834, the number of schoolhouses 65, and the expenditure for the fiscal year $817,168. The public schools are graded, the highest grades being two high schools for boys and girls respectively. Besides the day schools a number of evening schools are provided. There are upwards of 25,000 children who are to a large extent provided with instruction in public and private schools other than those belonging to the free-school department. There are about 100 schools in the city, of all grades, which are supported wholly by fees and voluntary contributions. Of

these the Roman Catholies have the greatest number, the latter includ- ing two colleges and a number of convent schools, The Protestant denominations also have a number of classical and secondary schools of great excellence. The public-school system of the State culminates in the university of California, which has an aggregate endowment equal to about $3,000,000. The institution is situated in the beautiful suburban town of Berkeley, on the opposite side of the bay (named in honour of Bishop Berkeley). Instruction is furnished free to all pupils who comply with the terms of admis- sion. There are also a number of professional schools in the city, chief among which are the law, medical, and dental departments of the university, the Cooper Medical College, the Hahnemann Medical College, the San Francisco Theological Seminary, and an art school with an average attendance of about 75 students. The late James Lick left a bequest of $540,000 for the endowment of a School of Mechanic Arts, and among other bequests a large one for the Academy of Sciences, founded in the early pcriod of the city. The public-school department of San Francisco is under the immediate supervision of a superintendent and twelve school directors, one for each ward of the city. There are eighteen public libraries, including the free library with 52,970 volumes. The Mercantile Library Association has 52,000 volumes, the Mcchanics'

Institute 35,000, the Oddfellows' Library Association* 39,000, and the Law Library 23,355. There is also a rich and extensive State mincralogical collection. (W. C. B.)

SANGALLO, the surname of a Florentine family, several members of which became distinguished in the fine arts.

I. Grunrano pi Sancatto (1443-1517) was a dis- tinguished Florentine architect, sculptor, tarsiatore, and inilitary engineer. His father, Francesco di Paolo Giam- berti, was also an able architect, much employed by Cosimo de' Medici. During the early part of his life Giuliano worked chiefly for Lorenzo the Magnificent, for whom he built a fine palace at Poggio-a-Cajano, between Florence and Pistoia, and strengthened the fortifications of Flor- ence, Castellana, and other places. Lorenzo also employed him to build a monastery of Austin Friars outside the Florentine gate of San Gallo,

a nobly designed structure, which was destroyed during the siege of Florence in 1530. It was from this building that Giuliano received the name of Sangallo, which was afterwards used by so many Italian architects. While still in the pay of Lorenzo, Giuliano visited Naples, and worked there for the king, who highly appreciated his services and sent him back to Florence with many handsome presents of money, plate, and antique sculpture, the last of which Giuliano presented to his patron Lorenzo, who was an enthusiastic collector of works of classic art. After Lorenzo's death in 1492, Giuliano visited Loreto, and with great constructive skill built the dome of the church of the Madonna, in spite of serious difficulties arising from its defective piers, which were already built. In order to gain strength by means of a strong cement, Giuliano built his dome with pozzolana brought from Rome. Soon after this, at the invitation of Pope Alexander VI., Giuliano went to Rome, and designed the fine panelled ceiling of 8. Maria Maggiore. He was also largely employed by Julius II., both for fortification walls round the castle of 8. Angelo, and also to build a palace adjoining the church of S. Pietro in Vincoli, of which Julius had been titular cardinal. Giuliano was much disappointed that Bramante was preferred to him- self as architect for the new basilica of St Peter, and this led to his returning to Florence, where he was warmly received by the gonfaloniere Pier Soderini, and did much service to his native state by his able help as a military engineer and builder of fortresses during the war between Florence and Pisa. Soon after this Giuliano was recalled to Rome by Julius [L, who had much need for his military talents both in Rome itself and also during his attack upon Bologna. For about eighteen months in 1514-1515 Giuliano acted as joint-architect to St Peter's together with Raphael, but owing to age and ill-health he resigned this office about two years before his death in 1517. But little remains to enable one to judge of Giuliano's talents in the artistic side of his profession; the greater part of his life was spent on military works, in which he evidently showed great skill and practical knowledge of construction.

II. Antonio pr Sancatto (14487-1534) was the younger brother of Giuliano, and took from him the name of Sangallo. Toa great extent he worked in partnership with his brother, but he also executed a number of inde- pendent works. As a military engineer he was as skilful as Giuliano, and carried out important works of walling and building fortresses at Arezzo,

Montefiascone, Florence, and Rome. His finest existing work as an architect is the church of S. Biagio at Montepulciano, in plan a Greek cross with central dome and two towers, much resembling, on a small scale, Bramante's design for St Peter's. He also built a palace in the same city, various churches and palaces at Monte Sansavino, and at Florence a range of monastic buildings for the Servite monks,

Antonio retired early from the practice of his profession, and spent his latter years in farming.

III Francesco pi SANGALLO (1493-1570), the son of Giuliano di Sangallo, was a pupil of Andrea Sansovino, and worked chiefly as a sculptor. His works have for the most part but little merit,—the finest being his noble effigy of Bishop Leonardo Bonafede, which lies on the pavement of the church of the Certosa, near Florence. It is simply treated, with many traces of the better taste of the 15th century. His other chief existing work is the group of the Virgin and Child and St Anne, executed in 1526 for the altar of Or San Michele, where it still stands.

IV. Bastrano pi Saneatto (1481-1551), Florentine sculptor and painter, was a nephew of Giuliano and Antonio. He is usually known as Aristotile, a nickname he received from his air of sententious gravity. He was

_at first a pupil of Perugino, but afterwards became a

follower of Michelangelo. His life is given at great length by Vasari, in spite of his being an artist of very mediocre powers.

V. ANTONIO DI SANGALLO, the younger (?~~1546), another nephew of Giuliano, went while very young to Rome, and became a pupil of Bramante, of whose style he was after~~ wards a close follower. He lived and worked in Rome during the greater part of his life, and was much employed by several of the popes. His most perfect existing work is the brick and travertine church of S. Maria di Loreto, close by Trajan's column, a building remarkable for the great beauty of its proportions, and its noble effect pro- duced with much simplicity. The lower order is square in plan,

the next octagonal ; and the whole is surmounted by a fine dome and lofty lantern. The lantern is, however, a later addition. The interior is very impressive, considering its very moderate size. Antonio also carried out the lofty and well-designed church of 8. Giovanni dei Fiorentini, which had been begun by Jacobo Sansovino. The east end of this church rises in a very stately way out of the bed of the Tiber, near the bridge of 8S. Angelo; the west end has been ruined by the addition of a later facade, but the interior is a noble example of a somewhat dull style. Great skill has been shown in successfully building this large church, partly on the solid ground of the bank and partly on the shifting sand of the river bed. Antonio also built the Cappella Paolina and other parts of the Vatican, together with additions to the walls and forts of the Leonine City. His most ornate work is the lower part of the cortile of the Farnese palace, afterwards completed by Michelangelo, a very rich and well-proportioned specimen of the then favourite design, a series of arches between engaged columns supporting an entablature, an arrangement taken from the outside of the Colosseum. A palace in the Via Giulia built for himself still exists under the name of the Palazzo Sacchetti, but is much injured by alterations. Antonio also constructed the very deep and ingenious rock-cut well at Orvieto, formed with a double spira! staircase, like the well of Saladin in the citadel of Cairo.

For other architects called Sangallo who lived during the 16th century see Ravioli, Notizie sui lavori….. dei nove Da San Gallo, Rome, 1860. (J. H. M.)

SANGERHAUSEN, an ancient town of Prussian Saxony, is situated on the Gonna, near the south base of the Harz Mountains, and 30 miles to the west of Halle. In 1880 it contained 9136 inhabitants, chiefly occupied in the manufacture of beetroot sugar, machinery, buttons, &c., in agriculture, and in the coal and copper mines of the neighbourhood. Sangerhausen is one of the oldest towns in Thuringia, being mentioned in a document of the 10th century. The Romanesque church of St Ulrich is said to have been founded by Louis the “Springer,” margrave of Thuringia, in 1079.

SANHEDRIN. See SYNEDRIUM.

SANITATION. See Hycienz and Sewace.

SAN JOSE, the capital of Costa Rica, Central America, stands 3900 feet above the sea, in a beautiful valley sur- rounded by mountains, on the west side of the main range about 15 miles north-west of Cartago (the ancient capital), with which it is connected by a railway (1884). Since 1870 the cathedral has been restored, a handsome market- place with offices for the municipality erected, the barracks rebuilt and fortified, and several of the streets macadam-

ized. San José is the seat of the national bank (founded |

in 1873) and of a university, to which a medical school and a museum are attached. The population is estimated at from 20,000 to 25,000. As a city it dates from the

latter half of the 18th century ; it became the capital after |

the destruction of Cartago by earthquake in 1841.

SAN JOSE, a city of the United States, capital of Santa Clara county, California, lies 40 miles south-east of San Francisco and 8 miles from the southern end of San

“ranci in the heart of the beautiful Santa Clara | j Se ee ed | in a bare, sandy, and undulating country, on the left bank

Valley. It is at this point that the railways from the two sides of the bay meet. The main part of the city occupies a gently rising plateau between the Coyote and Guadalupe rivers. Among the principal buildings are a fine court- house, a theatre, a city-hall, two markets, a music-hall, the State normal school, the Methodist ‘university of the Pacific,” and a number of large colleges and schools. Besides three public parks in the city San José possesses a tract of 400 acres in Penitencia Cafion, 7 miles east, reserved for a similar purpose. (founded in 1884 on the top of Mount Hamilton) is 12 miles distant, and the Almaden quicksilver mines about 14 miles. The

population of the city was 9089 in 1870, and 12,567 (township 18,103) in 1880.

Founded by the Spanish missionaries in 1777, San José remained a small village of adobe huts till the annexation of the country to the United States. The first session of the legislature of California was held in the town in 1849-50.

SAN JUAN BAUTISTA. See Porro Rico.

SAN JUAN DE LA FRONTERA, the capital of a province of the Argentine Republic, is situated 2310 feet above the sea in a great bend of the Rio de San Juan, 95 miles north of Mendoza and 730 miles from Buenos Ayres, with which it is about to be connected by rail (1886). It is mostly built of sun-dried bricks, has a cathedral, several churches and schools, two banks, and a botanical garden, and carries on a considerable trade with Chili by the Patos and Uspallata passes. Population estimated at 20,000

1881).

San – was founded in 1561 by Captain Castillo on a site 4 miles to the north, which had to be abandoned owing to inundations and is now called Pueblo Viejo. From 1776 to 1820 the city was in the government of Mendoza. President Sarmiento bestowed special attention on this his native town and gave his name to its

principal school, famous throughout the republic for its excellent equipment.

SAN JUAN DEL NORTE. See Greytown.

SAN JUAN (or HARO) ISLANDS, an archipelago (San Juan, Orcas, Shaw, Lopez, Blakely, Cypress, &c.) lying between Vancouver Island and the mainland of North America, which were’ for many years the subject of dispute between the British and the United States Governments, aud were finally assigned to the latter country by the arbitration of the emperor of Germany (21st October 1872). Geographically the cluster certainly belongs to the mainland, from which it is separated by Rosario Channel, generally

much under 50 fathoms in depth, while Haro Strait, separating it from Vancouver Island, has depths ranging from 100 to 190 fathoms. In 1873 the islands, formerly considered Territory, were made the separate county of San Juan. Of the total area of 200 square miles, about 60 are in San

 Juan, 60 in Orcas, and 30 in Lopez.

The population was 554 in 1870 and 948 in 1880.

See Papers relating to the Treaty of Washington, vol. v., 1872, and the map in Petermann's Afttiheilungen, 1873.

SANKT JOHANN. See SaaRBrRvcKen.

SANKT POLTEN, a small town, and the seat of a bishop, in Lower Austria, is situated on the Treisen, a tributary of the Danube, 61 miles west of Vienna by rail, It contains an interesting old abbey church, founded in 1030 and restored in 1266 and again at the beginning of the 18th century. There are several religious educational

institutions in the town, and a military academy for

engineers. The inhabitants, 10,015 in number, carry on some trade, and the manufacture of iron: wire, paper, weapons, &c. The name is said to be a corruption of Traisma ad S. Hippolytum, from a convent that formerly stood here. The history of the bishopric has been written in two volumes by Kerschbaumer (Vienna, 1875-6).

SAN LUCAR DE BARRAMEDA, a town of Spain, in the province of Cadiz, and 27 miles by sea from that city,

of the Guadalquivir, not far from its mouth. It stands

partly on the flat bank of the river and partly on the

rising ground behind, the summit of which is crowned by an old Moorish castle. There is an old parish church dating from the 14th century. The other

buildings have

no special interest, and the place as a whole is dull and _ lifeless, having lost much of the commercial importance it

formerly possessed. It is now chiefly dependent on the trade in its wines, which is still considerable. Many of the inhabitants are employed in agriculture and fishing, The population within the municipal boundaries was 21,918 in 1877.

SAN LUIS POTOSI, a city of Mexico, capital of the state of the same name, is situated at a height of 6200

| feet on the eastern edge of the great plain of Anahuac, in

part of Whatcom county, Washington |

a valley running north and south, 160 miles north-west of Queretaro. It is a great centre for the “ diligence” traffic, and in 1885 was connected by rail with Tampico, a pro- mising harbour on the Gulf of Mexico. The city proper, which has a rather imposing Oriental appearance, is laid out with great regularity ; the streets are well-paved, and the houses, usually two stories in height, are frequently fine specimens of old Spanish architecture. But suburbs of wretched hovels spread over a considerable area. Among the conspicuous buildings are the cathedral, the Government house, with a front in rose-coloured stone, the city-hall, the mint, the churches of El Carmen, San Fran- cisco, &c., and the recently erected “American” hotel, which, with tramways, telephones, and electric light, is a symptom of the Occidentalizing that is rapidly taking place in the inland cities of Mexico. The Instituto Cientifico is a kind of university for the teaching of law, medicine, and the exact sciences. Plaza Hidalgo takes its name from the statue to the martyr of Mexican independence. A considerable trade is carried on in cattle, hides, and tallow. The population is stated at 30,000, or with the suburbs 60,000.

Founded in 1586, San Luis Potosi has played an important part in the Mexican civil wars. In 1863 it was the seat of the national

government under Juarez, and after being occupied by Bazaine was recovered by Juarez in 1867.

SAN MARINO, the smallest independent republic in Europe, has an area of 33 square miles (Strelbitsky), lies between the provinces of Forli and Pesaro-Urbino, and consists of part of the eastern spurs of the Apennines. Monte Titano, the central and culminating summit, has three peaks (M. Guaita, Cucco, and Gista), the three Penne of San Marino—a name evidently identical with the Celtic Penn or Benn, but translated by the canting heraldry of the republic's coat of arms as three " feathers." The two

streams (Marecchia and Ausa) which pass through Rimini to the sea have their head-waters partly in the north and west of San Marino, while its south-eastern valleys are drained by the sources of the Marano. Farming and stock-raising occupy the bulk of the population (total, 5700 in 1850, 7816 in 1874), and their wines and oxen are botli highly prized. The city of San Marino (1600 inhabitants), formerly reached only by a mule-track but since 1875 by a good carriage-road, is a quaint little place with steep and narrow streets and picturesque but gloomy houses of undressed stone, and containing five churches, a council- hall, an audience chamber, a law court, a little theatre, a museum, and a library. square (Pianello) stands a white marble statue of Liberty, presented by the duchess of Acquaviva. At the foot of the city-hill lies the Borgo di San Marino (the commercial centre of the republic); and other municipal villages are Serravalle, Faetano, and Montegiardino, each with remains of its castle and fortifications.

The republic is governed by a great council (Generale-Consiglio- Principe) of 60 members (20 nobles, 20 burgesses, 20 rural land- owners) named for life by the council itself. From this body is elected the Council of Twelve, which with the assistance of a legal adviser decides in the third and last resort. Two captains-regent elected every six months (one from the nobles, one from the other two classes) represent the state, which also has its home secretary, its minister of foreign affairs, its chancellor of the exchequer, an army of 950 men, and a regular budget. By treaty with Italy (1872) San Marino, instead of maintaining a customs line of its own, receives a certain proportion of the Italian customs revenue, and, agreeing not to grow

tobacco, is allowed to purchase foreign tobacco duty free. To avoid any difficulty about copyright there is no printing press in the republic.

San Marino derives its name from a certain Dalmatian mason who, along with a comrade immortalized by the neighbouring castle and cathedral of San Leo, settled in this region in the 3d century. The bones of Marinus are said to have been removed to Pavia by the Lombard king Astolphus and restored to the little city on

Mount Titanus by Pippin; but the first authentic document proving |

the existence of the community dates from 885. Situated as a bulwark between the hostile honses of Montefeltro and Malatesta, San Marino fortunately attached itself to the stronger party, which in the 15th century placed its representative on the ducal throne of Yrbino. The assistance which it rendered Duke Fedcrigo and his allies, the king of Naples and the pope, against Sigismondo Malatesta was rewarded in 1463 with the castles and territories of Serravalle, Factano, and Montegiardino. On the annexation of Urbino to the States of the Church (1631), the independence of San Marino was acknowledged; and the unauthorized assertion of papal jurisdiction by Alberoni in 1739 was disallowed by Clement XII. on February 5th 1740. In 1797 Napoleon I. decided to preserve this “échantillon de république;” and in 1854 it was protected from the designs of Pius IX. by the interference of Napoleon III. At the unification of Italy, Cibrario, a citizen in the service of the house of Savoy, helped to secure excellent terms for San Marino.

See Melchiorre Deltico, Memorie storiche . . . di San Marino; Marino Fattori,

Ricordi storict . . . . 1869; Count Bruc, St Marin, Paris, 1876; Bent, A Freak of Freedom, 1879 ; Casati, La repubblica di San Marino, Milan, 1881.

SAN MARTIN DE JOSE (1778-1850), Chilian gene- ral, was born at Yapeyu, on the Uruguay river, February 25, 1778. Inhis eighth or ninth year he accompanied his own family to Spain for his education, and being intended for the military profession was admitted into the college of nobles at Madrid. He saw active service and gained dis- tinction in the war of

independence, and had risen to the rank of lieutenant-colonel when in 1811 he returned to La Plata. Entering the service of the insurgents there he was

entrusted with raising a troop of cavalry, and afterwards |

was appointed to the chief command of the army acting in Upper Peru against the forces of the viceroy of Lima.

After re-establishing his health at Cordova in 1814, he |

proceeded in 1815 to take command of Cuyo, where he organized an expedition for the liberation of Chili (see vol. v. p. 618). He crossed tha mountains early in 1817, and, after gaining a brilliant victory at Chacabuco on 12th February, was pressed by the people of Chili to take the supreme command, and gained a still more brilliant victory at Maypé, 5th April 1818. After organizing the govern-

In the centre of the principal |

ment of Chili he sailed with the squadron under Lord Cochrane for Peru, 21st August 1820, and, capturing Lima, drove the Spaniards from the coast and assumed the title of “Protector” of Peru in 1821, but resigned it a year afterwards, and, sailing secretly for Europe, spent the remainder of his life in absolute seclusion near Paris. He died at Boulogne, 17th August 1850.

See Biographical Sketch of General San Martin attached to

Peruvian Pamphlet, being an exposition of the Administrative Labours of the Peruvian Government, 1828.

SAN MICHELE, MicuEte (1484-1559), oneof the ablest architects of his time, learnt the elements of his profession from his father Giovanni and his uncle Bartolommeo, who both practised as architects at Verona with much success. Like almost all the enthusiastic students of that time he went at an early age to Rome to study classic sculp- ture and architecture. His great talents soon became known, and he designed and carried out a very large

number of works at Verona, Venice, and other places. Among his earliest are the duomo of Montefiascone (an octagonal building surmounted with a cupola), the church of San Domenico at Orvieto, and several palaces at both places. He also executed a fine tomb in S. Domenico.} He was no less distinguished as a military architect, and was much employed by the signoria of Venice, not only at home, but also in strengthening the fortifications of Corfu, Cyprus, and Candia.2_ One of Sanmichele's most graceful designs is the Cappella de' Peregrini in the church of S. Bernardino at Verona—square outside and circular within, of the Corinthian order. He built a great number of fine palaces at Verona, five of which still exist, as well as the graceful Ponte Nuovo. His last work, begun in 1559, was the round church of the Madonna di Campagna, a mile and a half from Verona on the road to Venice. Like most other distinguished architects of his time he wrote a work on classic architecture, Zi Cinque Ordine del? Architettura, printed at Verona in 1735. Sanmichele to some extent followed the earlier style of Brunelleschi; his work is always refined and his detail delicate. His chief pupil was his nephew Bernardino.

See Ronzani and Luciolli, Fabbriche. .. . di M. Sammichele, Venice, 1832 ; and Selva, Elogio di Sanmichele, Rome, 1814. See

SAN MIGUEL (8. Satvapor), or St MicHaE's. AzorEs, vol. i. p. 171.

SANNAZARO, Jacopo (1458-1530), one of the poets of the Renaissance in Italy, was born in 1458 at Naples of a noble family, said to have been of Spanish origin, which had its seat at San Nazaro near Pavia. His father died during the boyhood of Jacopo, who was accordingly brought up in a very plain way at Nocera Inferiore. He afterwards studied at Naples under Pontanus, when, according to the fashion of the time, he assumed the name Actius Syncerus, by which he is occasionally referred to. After the death of his mother he went abroad,—driven, we are told, by the pangs of despised love for a certain Carmosina, whom he has celebrated in his verse under various names ; but of the details of his travels nothing is recorded. On his return he speedily achieved fame as a poet and place as a courtier, receiving from Frederick III. as a country residence the Villa Mergillina near Naples. When his patron was compelled to take refuge in France in 1501 he was accompanied by Sannazaro, who did not return to Italy till after his death

(1504). The later years of the poet seem to have been spent at Naples without interruption or memorable incident. He died on April 27,

1530.

The Areadia of Sannazaro, begun in early life and published in 1504, is a somewhat affected and insipid Italian pastoral, in which

1 See Della Valle, Storia del Duomo di Orvieto, Rome, 1791. 2 See Bartoldi, Sanmichele al servizio della repubblica Veneta. 3 See Giuliari, Cap. de' Peregrini, Verona, 1816.

See vol. xi. Plate III.

in alternate prosc and verse the scenes and occupations of pastoral life arc described. His now seldom read Latin poem De Partu Virginis, which gained for him the name of the "' Christian Virgil," appeared in 1526, and his collected Sonetti e Canzoni in 1530.

SAN REMO, a town and seaport of northern Italy, at the head of a circondario in the province of Porto Maurizio on the Western Riviera, 16? miles by rail east of Mentone and 84} south-west of Genoa. Climbing the slope of a steep hill, it looks south over a small bay of the Gulf of Genoa, and, protected towards the north by hills rising gradually from 500 to 8000 feet, has the reputation of being in climate one of the most favoured places on the whole coast. The narrow stair-like streets of the old town, with their lofty houses, arched gateways, and flying buttresses, form a fine contrast to the modern districts of villas and hotels which have sprung up since about 1860. Besides the Gothic cathedral of San Siro, the buildings of most interest are the Madonna della Costa, crowning the highest part of the old town, the town-house, and the hospital for cutaneous diseases founded by Charles Albert. The port, formed by two moles, both lengthened since 1880, was at one time much more important, its annual movement having sunk from about 1000 in 1866 to 388 small vessels in 1884. The population of the commune (10,012 in 1861) was 16,055 in 1881,—12,285 in the city proper, and 1717 in the suburbs Poggio and Verezzo.

San Remo, identified by Girolamo Rossi (Storia della Citta) with a Greek Leucothea and a Roman Matistra, was Christianized by St Ormisdas and his pupil St Sirus. Rebuilt after the expulsion of the Saracens from Liguria, it took the name of San Romolo from its 6th-century bishop whose death-day, 13th October, is stil] a local féte. In what way Romulus was supplanted by Remus is not clearly ascertained. In 1544 the town was attacked by Barbarossa, and in 1625 by the French and Savoyards. The Genoese, against whose encroachments it had long defended its independence, sub-

jugated it in 1753 ; and in 1797 it was incorporated in the district of Palms of the Ligurian republic.

SAN SALVADOR, or Satvapor (Repidblica del Sal- vador), the smallest but most densely peopled of the republics of Central America, has a coast-line of 160 miles along the Pacific from the mouth of Rio de la Paz to that of the Goascoran in the Gulf of F onseca, and is bounded inland by Guatemala on the west and Honduras on the north and east. Its length from east to west is 140 miles, and its average breadth about 60 miles, Its area is estimated at 7225 square miles, and in 1883 it contained 613,273 inhabitants (290,870 males, 322,403 females). With the exception of a comparatively narrow seaboard of low alluvial plains, the country consists mainly of a plateau about 2000 feet above the sea, broken by a large number of volcanic cones, geologically of more recent origin than the main chain of the Cordillera which lies farther to the north. The principal river of the republic is the Rio Lempa, which, rising near Esquipulas in Guate- mala and crossing a corner of Honduras, enters Salvador north of Cital4. After receiving from the right the surplus waters of the Laguna de Cuija, a vast lake belonging partly to Guatemala and partly to Salvador, it flows for nearly a degree of longitude eastward through a magnificent and luxuriant valley between the plateau and the Cordillera, and then turning somewhat abruptly south skirts the base of the volcano of Siguatepeque and reaches the Pacific in 88° 40’ W. long. Among its numerous tributaries are the Rio Santa Ana, rising near the city of that name, the Asalguate, which passes the capital San Salvador, the Sumpul, which forces its way like the Lempa itself athwart the mountains from Honduras, and the Torola, draining the north-eastern corner of Salvador and part of Honduras. The Lempa is even in the dry season a considerable river with a rapid current, and for

two-thirds of its course it could easily be made navigable for steamers. The Rio

San Miguel drains the country |

between the Gulf of Fonseca and the basin of the Lempa. The volcanic mountains do not form a chain but a series of clusters :—the Izalco group in the west—including Izaleo (formed in 1770), Marcelino, Santa Ana, Naranjos, Aguila, San Juan de Dios, Apaneca, Tamajaso, and Lagunita; the San Salvador group, about 30 miles to the east ; Cojute- peque to the north-east and the San Vicente group to the east of the great volcanic lake of Ilopango; the Siguate- peque summits to the north-east of San Vicente; and the great south-eastern or San Miguel group—San Miguel, Chinameca, Buenapa, Usulatan, Tecapa, Taburete. Caca- guateque and Sociedad volcanoes in the north-east belong to the inland Cordillera.

The volcanic forces in Salvador have not as yet spent themselves. The Izalco vent still acts as a safety valve, and the neighbourhood of the capital is so subject to tremblings and rockings of the earth as to have acquired the name of the swinging mat or ham- mock. The city itself has been destroyed by earthquake in 1594, 1658, in 1719, and in 1854. San Miguel is described as one of the most treacherous burning mountains in America, sometimes several years in complete repose and then all at once bursting out with terrific fury (Scherzer). “In 1879-1880 the Lake of Tlopango was the scene of a remarkable series of phenomena. With a length of

3 miles and a breadth of 44, it forms a rough parallelogram with deeply indented sides, and is surrounded in all directions by steep mouutains except at the points where the villages of Asino and Apulo occupy little patches of level ground. Between 31st Decem- ber 1879 and 11th January 1880 the lake rose four feet above its level. The Jiboa, which flows out at the south-east corner, became, instead of a very shallow stream 20 feet broad, a raging torrent which soon scooped out for itself in the volcanic rocks a channel 30 to 35 feet deep. A rapid subsidence of ‘the lake was thus pro- duced, and by the 6th of March the level was 342 feet below its maximum. Towards the centre of the lake a volcanic centre about 500 feet

in diameter rose 150 feet above the water, surrounded by a number of small islands. A number of villages were ruined by the accompanying earthquakes. The lake, originally stocked by the early Spanish settlers, had become the great fish-pond of the republic, On the outbreak of the volcanic forces, the fish fled towards the sides, and on the receding of the waters their dead bodies were left behind in such quantitics that at Asino several hundred men were employed for days burying them to avoid a pestilence.

It is less to these natural catastrophes than to political instability that the comparative backwardness of Salvador to develop its resources of soil and minerals must be ascribed ; and considerable progress has in many respects been made since the middle of the century. Coffee is now the principal export (to the value of $1,056,000 in 1873, $3,416,104 in 1883). Indigo, for a long time the staple of the country and exported to the annual value of $20,000,000, is still extensively cultivated (exports in 1883 $1,812,594). As this indigo is generally quoted in the market as Guatemalan, so another valuable product of Salvador is always designated Balsam of Peru (see vol, iii. p. 293), though the tree from which it is obtained grows naturally nowhere else in the world except in a limited part of the Salvadorian seaboard known as the Balsam coast. It was exported in 1883 to the value of $538,612. Other productions of less importance are tobacco, sarsaparilla, india-rubber, and sugar. The silver mines have been and may again be of some account ; and coal has been discovered inland. On the whole the trade of the country has greatly in- creased : the imports and exports, $1,306,378 and $1,991,650 respectively in 1859, were $2,401,463 and $5,861,053 in 1883. At the time of Dr Scherzer’s visit, there was not a bridge in the country ; there are nowa considerable number of good iron bridges on the new roads between the principal citics. The first railway, that from Acajutla to Sonsonate (15 miles) was opened in 1882, and has since been continued in the direction of Santa Ana, the chief commercial town. Telegraphic communication has been estab- lished between the more important towns, and in J uly 1882 the Central and North American Company landed its cable at La Libertad. Acajutla, La Libertad, and La Union or San Carlos de la Union (in the Gulf of Fonseca) are the principal harbours. Besides the capital San Salvador, with 14,059inhabitants, there were in 1878, according to the census, 68 places in the republic with over 2000 each—Santa Ana (29,908), Nahuizalco (9988), San Vicente (9957), San Miguel (9842),

Metapan (9782), Chalchuapa (8171), Ahuachapan (7930), Nuevo San Salvador (7337), &c. There are three universities—San Salvador, Santa Ana, and San Miguel, with funds partly provided by a quarter of the customs,— a girls' college at Santa Ana, and a fair number of secondary and primary schools. Salvador received this name from Pedro Alvaredo, who, when he conquered it for Spain in 1525-26, found it arich and populous country. Its independence of the Spanish

crown dates from 1842; in 1853 it obtained the eonstitution under which (in a modified form) it now exists as a sovereign state. General Barrios, having in 1858 obliged the president Santin del Castillo to abdicate, secured his own permanent appointment to the office in 1860; but in 1863-4 he failed in his endeavour to defend his capital against the Guatemalans, and when he returnedin 1864 to attack Ducfias, the Guatemalan protégé, he was defeated and put to death. "Pronunciamientos " have since been the too general preliminaries of presidential elections ; but there has been no serious war, and the finances of the republic have usually a balance on the right side.

See Scherzer, Travels in Central America (1857); Sonnenstern, Descripcion del estado del Salvador (New York, 1859, with a good map reproduced in Berlin Zeitsch. fiir Geographie, 1860); Dollfus and Montserrat, Voy. géologique dans les republiques de Guatémala et de Salvador (1868); Blairet, Le Sa/vador (1872); Frantzius's translation of De Palacio, San Salvador and Honduras in 1576 (1873); Guzman, Apuntamtentos sobre la geogr. fisica de la rep. del Salvador, 1883.

SANSANDING, or Sansanpvic, a town in the interior of Western Africa, on the north bank of the Niger, in 13° 40' N. lat. and 6° 25' W. long., and included in the "empire" of Segu. It was visited by Mungo Park in 1796, and in 1865 by Mage and Quintin, who witnessed the stand it made against a siege by Ahmedu, sultan of Segu, from whom it had revolted. The population is esti- mated at 30,000 to 40,000.

SAN SEBASTIAN, a seaport of Spain, capital of the province of Guipuzcoa, 42 miles north-north-west of Pamplona, and 402 miles by rail from Madrid. It occupies a narrow isthmus, terminated towards the north by

a lofty conical rock called Urgull or Orgullo, and flanked on its eastern side by the river Urumea, here crossed by a bridge, and on the other by a bay (La Concha), which forms the harbour. The summit of ‘the hill is crowned by a fort (Castillo de la Mota), and the landward side of the town was formerly defended by solid ramparts.

The houses are almost all modern, built uniformly in straight streets and regular squares, so as to present an appearance quite unlike most Spanish towns. There are two large churches, a court-house, a theatre, hospitals, barracks, &c. The manufactures of the place are insigni- ficant ; and the harbour is small, and not easily accessible, though well protected by a mole and small island. There is a considerable trade in English and French goods, —corn and other articles being exported. During summer the town is much frequented, especially by the wealthier inhabitants of Madrid, for sea-bathing, and tent-like huts are set up for the purpose on the shore of the bay. From its position and strength San Sebastian has been long a place of much importance, and has sustained several sieges. The most memorable of these was in August 1813, when the British, under Wellington, took it by storm. The population within the municipal boundaries was 21,355 in 1877,

SAN SEVERO, a city of Italy, in the province of Foggia, and at one time the chief town of the Capitanata, lies at the foot of the spurs of Monte Gargano, and has a station on the railway to Brindisi, 36 miles south-east of Termoli and 17 north of Foggia. It is the see of a bishop (since 1580), and has a handsome cathedral and some re- mains of its old fortifications. In 1880 the population was 19,756 (20,382 in commune).

San Severo dates from the Middle Ages. It was laid in ruins by Frederick II., and in 1053 was the scene of a victory by Robert Guiscard over the papal troops under Leo IX. The overlordship was held in succession by the Benedictines of Torre Maggiore abbey, the Knights Templars, the crown of Naples, and the Sangro

family (commendatories of Torre Maggiore). In 1627, and again in 1828 and 1851, the town suffered from earthquakes.

SANSKRIT LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE

PART IL—SANSKRIT LANGUAGE.

a is the name applied by Hindu scholars to the ancient literary language of India. The word samskyita is the past participle of the verb kar, “to make” (cognate with Latin creo), with the preposition sam, “together” (cog. dua, duds, Eng. “same”), and has probably to be taken here in the sense of ‘“ completely formed” or “accurately made, polished,”—-some noun meaning “speech” (esp. bhdshd) being either expressed or understood with it. The term was, doubtless, origin- ally adopted by native grammarians to distinguish the literary language of the educated classes from the uncul- tivated popular dialects—the forerunners of the modern vernaculars of northern India—which had, from an early period, developed side by side with it, and which were called (from the same root kar, but with different preposi- tions) Prdkrita, 7.e., either “derived” or “natural, common” forms of speech. But this designation of the literary idiom, being evidently intended to imply a language regulated by conventional rules, also involves a distinction between the grammatically fixed language of Brahmanical India and an earlier, less settled, phase of the same language exhibited in the Vedic writings. For greater convenience the Vedic language is, however, usually included in the term, and scholars generally distinguish between the Vedic and the classical Sanskrit. The Sanskrit language, with its old and modern descendants, represents the easternmost branch of the great Indo-Germanic, or Aryan, stock of speech. – Philological research has clearly established the fact that the Indo- Aryans must originally have immigrated into India from the north-west. In the oldest literary documents handed down by them their gradual advance can indeed be traced

from the slopes of eastern Kabulistan down to the land of the five rivers (Punjab), and thence to the plains of the Yamuna (Jumna) and Gang& (Ganges). Numerous special coincidences, both of language and mythology, be- tween the Vedic Aryans and the peoples of Iran also show that these two members of the Indo-Germanic family must have remained in close connexion for some considerable period after the others had separated from them.

The origin of comparative philology dates from the time when European scholars became accurately acquainted with the ancient language of India. Before that time classical scholars had been unable, through centuries of learned research, to determine the true relations between the then known languages of our stock. This fact alone shows the importance of Sanskrit for comparative re- search. Though its value in this respect has perhaps at times been overrated, it may still be considered as the eldest daughter of the old mother-tongue. Indeed, so far as direct documentary evidence goes, it may rather be said to be the only surviving daughter ; for none of the other six principal members of the family have left any literary monunients, and their original features have to be reproduced, as best they can, from the materials supplied by their own daughter languages: such is the case as regards the Iranic, Hellenic, Italic, Celtic, Teutonic, and Letto-Slavic languages. To the Sanskrit the antiquity and extent of its literary documents, the transparency of its grammatical structure, the comparatively primitive state of its accent system, and the thorough grammatical treatment it has early received at the hand of native scholars must ever secure the foremost place in the com- parative study of Indo-Germanic speech.

The Sanskrit alphabet consists of the following sounds :— (a) Fourtcen vowels, viz.:— | i Ten simple vowels: a 4, 17, ud, 77, 1 (f) ; and Four diphthongs : é dt, 6 au. (b) Thirty-three consonants, viz. :— Five series of mutes and nasals : guttural: kkhg gh n palatal: c eh j jh ih lingual: tthd dhn dental: tthd dhn labial: p ph b bh m ; Four semivowels: y 7 Z v (w) ; Three sibilants : palatal §, lingual sh, dental s; and A soft aspirate: 4. (c) Three unoriginal sounds, viz.:— __ or visarga (h), a hard aspirate, standing mostly for original sor7r; and two nasal sounds of less close contact than the mute-nasals, viz., anusvdra (m) and anundsika (m).

Alphabet.

Os Vowls. | As regards the vowels, a prominent feature of the language is the

‘S prevalence of a-sounds, these being about twice as frequent as all the others, including diphthongs, taken together (Whitney).

The absence of the short vowels @ and ¢ from the Sanskrit alpha- bet, and the fact that Sanskrit shows the a-vowel where other vowels appear in other languages,—e.g., bharantam = $é€povra, ferentem ; janas = yévos, genus, —were formerly eonsidered as strong evidence in favour of the more primitive state of the Sanskrit vowel system as compared with that of the sister languages. Recent research has, however, shown pretty con- clusively from certain indications in the Sanskrit language itself that the latter must at one time have possessed the same, or very nearly the same, three vowel-sounds, and that the differentiation of the original a-sound must, therefore, have taken place before the separation of the languages.

The vowels é and 6, though apparently simple sounds, are classed as diphthongs, being contracted from original dz and dw respectively, and liable to be treated as such in the phonetic modifications they have to undergo before any vowel except d.

As regards the consonants, two of the five scries of mutes, the palatal and lingual series, are of secondary (the one of Indo-Iranian, the other of purely Indian) growth.

The palatals are, as a rule, derived from original gutturals, the modification being generally due to the influence of a neighbouring palatal sound 7 or y, or (a): g., carati=Lat. eurrit; janu= yévu, genu, knee. The surd aspirate ch, in words of Indo-Germanic origin, almost invariably goes back to original sk: ¢.g., chid- (chind-)=scindo, oxi€w ; chéyad=orid.

The palatal sibilant § (pronounced sh) likewise originated from a guttural mute &, but one of somewhat different phonetic value from that represented by Sanskrit & orc. The latter, usually designated by #? (or q), is frequently liable to labialization (or dentalization) in Greek, probably owing to an original pronunciation kw (qu): €.g., katara=nérepos, uter ; while the former (x1) shows invariably « in Greek, and a sibilant in the Letto-Slavic and the Indo-lranian languages: c.g., Svan (Sun)=xéwv (xv), canis, Germ. hund; dasan=Séxa, decom, Goth. tathun.

The non-original nature of the palatals betrays itself even in Sanskrit by their inability to occur at the end of a word,—e.9., acc. vdcam = Lat.

vocem, but nom. vdék = vox,—and by otherwise frequently reverting to the guttural state.

The linguals differ in pronunciation from the dentals in their being uttered with the tip of the tongue turned up to the dome of the palate, while in the utterance of the dentals it is pressed against the upper teeth, not against the upper guins as is done in the English dentals, whieh to Hindus sound more like their own linguals. The latter, when occurring in words of Aryan origin, are, as a rule, modifications of original dentals, usually accom- panied by the loss of an 7 or other adjoining eonsonant ; but more commonly they occur in words of foreign, probably non-Aryan, origin. Of regular occurrence in the language, however, is the change of dental n into lingual , and of dental s into lingual sh, when preceded in the same word by certain other letters.

The sonant aspirate 4 is likewise non-original, being usually derived from original sonant aspirated mutes, especially gh: ¢.9., hamsa—=xhy (for xayvs), anser, Germ. gans; aham = eéydv, cgo, Goth. 7k.

Phonetic The contact of final and initial letters of words in the same sen- changes, tence is often attended in Sanskrit with considerable euphonic modifications ; and we have no means of knowing how far the prac- tice of the vernacular language may have corresponded to these phonetic theories. There can be no doubt, however, that a good deal in this respect has to be placed to the account of grammatical reflexion ; and the very facilities which the primitive structure of the language offered for grammatical analysis and an insight into the principles of internal modification may have given the first

impulsc to external modifications of a similar kind. None of the cognate languages exhibits in so transparent a

Conson- ants.

Ke aT

manner as the Sanskrit the cardinal principle of Indo-Germanie word- formation by the addition of inflexional endings—either case- endings or

personal terminations (themselves probably original roots)—to stems obtained, mainly by means of suffixes, from mono- syllabie roots, with or without internal modifications.

There are in Sanskrit declension three numbers and seven cases, Declen._ not counting the voeative, viz., nominative, ‘accusative, instru- gion, mental, dative, ablative, genitive and locative. As a matter of fact, all these seven cases appear, however, only in the singular of a-stems and of the pronominal declension. Other noun-stemis have only one case-form for the ablative and genitive singular. In the plural, the ablative everywhere shares its form with the dative (except in the personal pronoun, where it has the same ending as in the singular), whilst the dual shows only three different case- forms—one for the nominative and accusative, another for the instruniental, dative, and ablative, and a third for the genitive and locative.

The declension of a-stems, corresponding to the first and second Latin declensions, is of especial interest, not so much on account of its being predominant from the earliest time, and becoming more and more so with the development of the language, but because it presents the greatest number of alternative forms, which supply a kind of test for determining the age of literary productions, a test which indeed has already been applied to some extent by Professor Lanman, in luis exeellent Statistical Account of Noun Inflexion in the Veda. These alternative case-forms are :—

(1) dsas and ds for the nominative plural masc. and fem.: «¢g., asvdsas and asvds=cqut (eque). The forms in dsas,—explained by Bopp as the sign of the plural as applied twice, and by Schleicher as the sign of the plural as added to the nominative singular, — occur to those in 4s (¢.e., the ordinary plural sign as added to the a-stem) in the Rigveda in the proportion of 1 to 2, and in the peculiar parts of the Atharvaveda in that of 1 to 25, whilst the ending 4s alone remains in the later language.

(2) 4 and dni for the nominative and accusative plural of neuters : as yugd, yugdni=Cuyd, juga. The proportion of the former ending to the latter in the Rik is 11 to 7, in the Atharvan 2 to 3, whilst the classical Sanskrit knows only the second form.

(8) ébhts and dis for the instrumental plural masc. and neuter: €.g., devébhis, devdis. In the Rik the former forms are to the latter in the proportion of 5 to 6, in the Atharvan of 1 to 5, while in the later language only the contracted form is used. The same contraction is found in other languages ; but it is doubtful whether it did not originate independently in them.

(4) 4 and du for the nominative and accusative dual masc.: c¢.g., ubhd, ubhdu=&ugdw. In the Rik forms in 4 outnumber those in du more than eight times; whilst in the Atharvan, on the contrary, those in du (the only ending used .in the classical language) occur five times as often as those in 4. :

(5) @ and ena (end) for the instrumental singular masc. and neut.: as ddnd, ddénena=dono. The ending ena is the one invariably used in the later language. It is likewise the usual form in the Veda; but in a number of cases it shows a final long vowel which, though it may be entirely due to metrical requirements, is more probablya relic of the normal instrumental ending 4, preserved for prosodic reasons. For the simple ending 4, as compared with that in ena, Prof. Lanman makes out a proportion of about 1 to 9 in the Rigveda (altogether 114 cases); while in the peculiar parts of the Atharvan he finds only 11 cases.

(6) dm and dnaém for the genitive plural: ¢.g., (asvdm), asvdndm =tnrav, cquum (equorum). The form with inserted nasal (donbt- less for andm, as in Zend aspandm), which is exclusively used in the later language, is also the prevailing one in the Rik. There are, however, a few genitives of a-stems in original 4m (for a-dm), which also appear in Zend, Prof. Lanman enumerating a dozen instances, some of which are, however, doubtful, while others are merely eonjectural.

The Sanskrit verb system resembles that of the Greck in variety Verh and completeness. While the Greek exccls in nicety and definite- system. ness of modal distinction, the Sanskrit surpasses it in primitiveness and transparency of formation. In this part of the grammatical system there is, however, an even greater differenee than in the noun inflexion between the Vedic and the classical Sanskrit. While the former shows, upon the whole, the full complement of modal forms exhibited by the Greek, the later

language has prac- tically discarded the subjunctive mood. The Indo-Aryans never succeeded in working out a clear formative distinction between the subjunctive and indicative moods; and, their syntactic requirements becoming morc and more limited, they at last contented themselves, for modal expression, with a present optative and imperative, in addition to the indicative tense-forms, and a little-used aorist optative with a special “precative” or “benedictive” meaning attached to it.

Another part of the verb in which the later language differs widely from Vedic nsage is the infinitive. The language of the old hymns shows a considerable variety of case-forms of verbal abstract nouns with the function of infinitives, a eertain number of which

can still be traced back to the pareut language, as, for instance, such dative forms as jfv-dse=viv-ere; sGh-adhydi=ztxeoba ; dd’- mane=Sdpnevar; dd’-vane=Sodva. Further, ji-shé, “to conquer, ” for ji-sé, apparently an aorist infinitive with the dative ending (parallel to the radical forms, such as yudh-é, “to fight,” dris’-é, “to see”), thus corresponding to the Greek aorist infinitive Adoa (but ef. also Latin da-re, for dase, es-se, &c.). The classical Sanskrit, on the other hand, practically uses only one infinitive form, viz., the accusative of a verbal noun in tu, ¢.g., sthatum, etum, correspond- ing to the Latin supinum datum, itwm. But, as in Latin another ease, the ablative (dati), of the same abstract noun is utilized for a similar purpose, so the Vedic language makes two other cases do duty as infinitives, viz., the dative in tave (e.g., ddtave, and the anomalous éavdi), and the gen.-abl. in tos (datos). A prominent feature of the later Sanskrit syntax is the so-called gerund or inde- clinable participle in tv@, apparently the instrumental of a stem in tva (probably a derivative from that in tw), as well as the gerund in yc (or tya aftcr a final short radical vowel) made front compound verbs. The old language knows not only such gcrunds in tvd, using them, however, very sparingly, but also corresponding dative forms in tvaya (yuktvdya), and the eurious contracted forms in tvi’ (kritvt, “to do”). And, besides those in ya and tya, it frequently uses forms with a final long vowel, as bhid-yd, i-

tyd, thus show- ing the former to be shortened instrumentals of abstract nouns in 7 and ¢i.

The Sanskrit verb, like the Greek, has two voices, active and middle, called, after their primary functions, parasmai-pada, “word for another,” and aétmane-pada, “ word for one’s self.” While in Greek the middle forms have to do duty also for the passive in all tenses except the aorist and future, the Sanskrit, on the other hand, has developed for the passive a special present-stem in ya, the other tenses being supplied by the corresponding middle forms, ‘with the exception of the third person singular aorist, for which a special form in ¢ is usually assigned to the passive.

The present-stem system is by far the most important part of the whole verb system, both on account of frequency of actual occur- rence and of its excellent state of preservation. It is with regard to the different ways of present-stem formation that the entire stock of assumed roots has been grouped by the native grammarians under ten different classes. These classes again naturally fall under two divisions or “ conjugations,” with this characteristic difference that the one (the second) retains the same stem (ending in a) through- out the present and imperfect, only lengthening the final vowel before terminations beginning with v or m (not final); while the other shows two different forms of the stem, a strong and a weak form, according as the accent falls on the stem-syllable or on the personal ending: ¢.g., 3 sing. bhdra-ti, pépe:—2 pl. bhdra-tha, pépete ; but é-ti, elo.—i-thd, tre (for iré) ; 1 sing. strné-mi, ordp- vipi—l pl. strmu-mds (ordpyvpes).

As several of the personal endings show a decided similarity to personal or demonstrative pronouns, it is highly probable that, as might indeed be a priori expected, all or most of them are of pronominal origin,—though, owing to their exposed position and consequent decay, their original form and identity cannot now be determined with certainty. The active singular terminations, with the exception of the second person of the imperative, are unaccented and of comparatively light appearance ; while those of the dual and plural, as well as the middle terminations, have the accent, being apparently too heavy to be supported by the stem-accent, either because, as Schleicher supposed, they are composed of two different pronominal elements, or otherwise. The treatment of the personal endings in the first,

and presumably older, conjuga- en may thus be said somewhat to resemble that of enclitics in

teek,

In the imperfect, the present-stem is increased by the augment, consisting of a prefixed &. Here, as in the other tenses in which it appears, it has invariably the accent, as being the distinctive element (originally probably an independent demonstrative adverb “then ”) for the expression of past time. This shifting of the

Paws K RT

2th

sydm=—Lat. siem, stm; while in the second conjugation and throughout the middle it is 4, probably a contraction of ya: ¢. Gre bhares = pépars.

Besides the ordinary perfect, made from a reduplicated stem, with distinction between strong (active singular) and weak forms, and a partly peculiar set of endings, the later language makes large use of a periphrastic perfect, consisting of the accusative of a feminine abstract noun in 4 (-ém) with the reduplicated perfect forms of the auxiliary verbs kar, “to do,” or as (and occasionally bha), “to be.” Though more particularly resorted to for the derivative forms of conjugation—viz., the causative (including the so-called tenth conjugational class), the desiderative, intensive, and denominative—this perfect-form is also commonly used with roots beginning with prosodically long vowels, as well as with a few other isolated roots. In the Rigveda this formation is quite unknown, and the Atharvan offers a single instance of it, from a causative verb, with the auxiliary kar. In the Vedic prose, on the other hand, it is rather frequent,! and it is quite common in the later language.

In addition to the ordinary participles, active and middle, of the rednplicated perfect,—e.g., jajan-van, yeyouv-ws ; bubudh-énd, menvo-evo,—there is a secondary participial formation, obtained by affixing the possessive suffix vat (vant) to the passive past participle: ¢.9., krita-vant, lit. “having (that which is) done.” A secondary participle of this kind occurs once in the

Atharvaveda, and it is occasionally met with in the Braéhmanas. In the later langnage, however, it not only is of rather frequent occurrence, but has assumed quite a new function, viz., that of a finite perfect- form; thus kritavdén, kritavantas, without any auxiliary verb, meau, not “having done, but “he has done,” “they have done.”

The original Indo-Germanic future-stem formation in sya, with primary endings,—e. g., ddsydti = 8éce: (for 5écer1), —is the ordinary tense-form both in Vedic and classical Sanskrit,—a preterite of it, with a conditional force attached to it (dddsyat), being also common to all periods of the language.

Side by side with this future, however, an analytic tense-form makes its appearance in the Brahmanas, obtaining wider currency in the later language. This periphrastic future is made by means of the nominative singular of a nomen agentis in tar (ddtar, nom. ddtd=Lat. dator), followed by the corresponding present forms of as, “to be” (ddtd-’smi, as it were, datwrus swm), with the excep- tion of the third persons, which need no auxiliary, but take the respective nominative of the noun.

The aorist system is somewhat complicated, including as it does augment-preterites of various formations, viz., a radical aorist, sometimes with reduplicated stem,—e.9., dsthéim = éorny ; srudht =Karv0:; ddudrot; an a-aorist (or thematic aorist) with or without reduplication, —e.g., drieas =%aures ; dpaptam, ef. repvov; and several diffcrent forms of a sibilant-aorist. In the older Vedic language the radical aorist is far more common than the a-aorist, which becomes more frequently used later on. Of the different kinds of sibilant-aorists, the most common is the one which makes its stem by the addition of s to the root, either with or without a connecting vowel 7 in different roots: ¢g., root ji— 1 sing. djdisham, 1 pl. Gjdishma ; dkramisham, dkramishma.

As regards the syntactic functions of the three preterites,—the imperfect, perfect, and aorist,—the classical writers make virtually no distinction between them, but use them quite indiscriminately, In the older language, on the other hand, the imperfect is chiefly used as a narrative tense, while the other two generally refer to a. past action which is now complete,—the aorist, however, more frequently to that which is only just done or

completed. The perfect, owing donbtless to its reduplicative form, has also not infrequently the force of an iterative, or intensive, present.

The Sanskrit, like the Greek, shows at all times a considerable Word power and facility of noun-composition. But, while in the older forma- language, as well as in the earlier literary products of the classical tion.

word-accent seems to have contributed to the further reduction of the personal endings, and thus caused the formation of a new, or secondary, set of terminations which came to be appropriated for

Secondary tenses and moods generally. As in Greek poetry, the augment is frequently omitted in Sanskrit.

The mood-sign of the subjuuctive is &, added to (the strong form of) the tense-stem. Ifthe stem ends already in &, the latter be- comes lengthened. As regard the personal terminations, some persons take the primary, others the secondary forms, while others again may take either the one or the other. The first singular active, however, takes ni instead of mi, to distinguish it from the indicative. Bunt besides these forms, showing the mood-sign 4, the subjunctive (both present and aorist) may take another form, without any distinctive modal sign, and with the secondary endings, being thus identical with the augmentless form of the preterite.

The optative invariably takes the secondary endings, with some peculiar variations. In the active of the first conjugation, its mood- sign is yd, affixed to the weak form of the stem: e. g., root as, —

period, such combinations rarely exceed the limits compatible with the general economy of inflexional speech, during the later, arti- ficial period of the language they gradually become more and more excessive, both in size and frequency of use, till at last they absorb almost the entire range of syntactic construction.

One of the most striking features of Sanskrit word-formation is that regular interchange of light and strong vowel-sounds, usually designated by the native terms of guna (quality) and vriddht (increase). The phonetic process implied in these terms consists in the raising, under certain conditions, of a

radical or thematic light vowel 7z, u, 7, /, by means of an inserted a-sound, to the diphthongal (guna) sounds di (Sanskr. é), dw (Sanskr. 6), and the

a

1 Tt also shows occasionally other tense-forms than the perfect of the same periphrastic formation with kar.

Accentua- tion.

combination ar and al respectively, and, by arepetition of the same process, to the (vriddhi) sounds dz, du, ar, and al respectively. ‘Thus from root vid, “to know,” we have véda, “ knowledge,” and therefrom vdtdika ; from yug, yéga, yddgika. While the inter- change of the former kind, due mainly to accentual causes, was un- doubtedly a common feature of Indo-Germanic speech, the latter, or vriddhi-change, which chiefly occurs in secondary stems, is pro- bably a later development. Moreover, there can be no doubt that the vriddhi-vowels are really due to what the term implics, viz., to a process of “increment,” or vowel-raising. The same was univer- sally assumed by comparative philologists till a few years ago, as regards the relation between the guna-sounds a (2) and du (6) and the respective simple 7- and u-sounds. According to a recent theory, however, which has already received a considerable amount of acceptance, we are henceforth to look upon the heavier vowels as the original, and upon the lighter vowels as the later sounds, produced through the absence of stress and pitch. The grounds on which this theory is recommended are those of logical consist- ency. In the analogous cases of interchange between r and ar, as well as / and al, most scholars have indeed becn wont to regard the syllabic 7 and } as weakened from original ar and al, while the native grammarians represent the latter as produced from the former by increment. Similarly the verb as (és), “to be,” loses its vowel wherever the radical syllable is unaccented: ¢.g., dsti, Lat. est —smds, s(w)mus ; opt. sydm, Lat. siém (stm). For other analo- gous cases of vowel-change, see Purtonoey, vol. xviii. p. 783 sq. On the strength of these analogous eases of vowcl-modification we are, therefore, to accept some such equation as this :— dsmi: smds=Sépxoua : %p(a)kov=Aclrw : Arweiv

=émi (eft): imds (tuev for ivév)

=evyw: puyeiv

=déhmi (1 milk) : duhmds.

Acquiescence in this equation would sccm to involve at least one important admission, viz., that original root-syllables contained no simple z- and 2-vowels, except as the second element of the diphthongs at, et, ot; au, eu, ou. We ought no longer to speak of the roots vid, “to know,” dik, “to show, to bid,” dhugh, “to milk,” yug, “to join,” but of veid, deik, dhaugh or dheugh, yeug, &c. Nay, as the same law would apply with equal force to suffixal vowels, the suffix nw would have to be called naw or new; and, in explaining, for instance, the irregularly formed delevipi, Sefeviper, we might say that, by the affixion of vev to the root Sei, the present-stem d:cved was obtained (d:cvedur), which, as the stress was shifted forward, became 1 plur. dicvuyéo(s),—the subsequent modifications in the radical and formative syllables being due to the effects of “analogy” (cf. G. Meyer, Gricch. Gramm., § 487). Now, if there be any truth in the “agglutination” theory, accord- ing to which the radical and formative elements of Indo-Germanic speech were at one time independent words, we would have to be prepared for a pretty liberal allowance, to the parent language, of diphthongal monosylables such as detk ned, while simple com- binations such as dik nu could only spring up after separate syllable-words had beeome united by the force of a common accent. But, whether the agglutinationists be right or wrong, a theory in- volving the priority of the diphthongal over the simple sounds can hardly be said to be one of great prima facie probability ; and one may well ask whether the requirements of logical consistency might not be satisfied in some other, less improbable, way.

Now, the analogous cases which have called forth this theory turn upon the loss of a radical or suffixal a (2), occasioned by the shifting of the word-accent to some other syllable: ¢9., acc. matdram, instr. mdtra; wéropat, émrduny; dépxopat, 23p(a)koy ; dsmi, smds. Might we not then assume that at an early stage of noun and verb inflexion, through the giving way, under certain conditions, of the stem a (2), the habit of stem-gradation, as an clement of inflexion, came to establish itself and ultimately to extend its

sphere over stems with 7- and w-vowels, but that, on meeting here with more resistance! than in the a (2)-vowel, the stem-gradation then took the shape of a raising of the simple vowel, in the “strong” cases and verb-forms, by that saie a- element which constituted the distinctive element of those cases in the other variable stems? In this way the above equation would still hold good, and the corresponding vowel-grades, though of somewhat different genesis, would yet be strictly analogous.

The accent of Sanskrit words is marked only in the more import- ant Vedic texts, different systems of notation being used in different works. Our knowledge of the later accentuation of words is entirely derived from the statements of grammarians. As in Greek, there are three accents, the uddtta (“raised,” é.¢., acute), the anuddita (“not raised,” ¢.¢., grave), and the svarita (“sounded, modulated,” t.é., circumflex). ‘The last is a combination of the two others,

1 We might compare the different treatment in Sanskrit of an and in bases (mirdhdni-mardhna; vaddini-vadind); for, though the latter are doubtless of later origin, their inflexion might have been influenced by that of the former. Also a comparison of such forms as (devd) devandm, (agni) agnindm, and (dhentt) dheniinam, tells in favour of the 7- and u-vowels, as regards power of resistance inasmuch as it does not require the accent in order to remain intact. i

K kat

its proper use being confincd almost entirely to a vowel preceded by a semivowcl y or v, representing an original acuted vowel. Hindu scholars, however, also include in this term the accent ofa grave syllable preceded by an acuted syllable, and itself followed by a grave.

The Sanskrit and Greek accentuations present numerous coin- cidences. Although the Greek rule, confining the accent within the last three syllables, has frequently obliterated the original likeness, the old features may often be traced through the later forms. Thus, though augmented verb-forms in Greek cannot always have the accent on the augment as in Sanskrit, they have it invariably as little removed from it as the accentual restrictions will

allow: ¢.g., dbharam, @pepov; dbhardma, édépoper ; dbharé- mahi, épepducba.

The most striking coincidence in noun declension is the accentual distinction made by both languages between the ‘‘ strong” and ‘‘weak”’ cases of monosyllabic nouns, —the only difference in this respect being that in Sanskrit the accusative plural, as a rule, has the accent on the case-ending, and consequently slows the weak form of the stem: ¢.g., stem pad, 70d; padam, 1é5a; padas, wodds ; padt, wodl; pddas, wédes; padds, wédas; paddim, roddéy ; patsti, woot. In Sanskrit a few othcr classes of stems (especially present participles in ant, at), accented on the last syllable, are apt to yield their accent to heavy vowel (not consonantal) termina- tions; compare the analogous accentuation of Sanskrit and Greck stems in tér: pitéram, warépa ; pitré, warpéds ; pitdras, marépes ; pitrshu, marp(d)or.

Tlie vocative, when heading a sentence (or verse-division), has invariably the accent on the first syllable; otherwise it is not accented.

Finite verb-forms also, as a rule, lose their accent, except when standing at the beginning of a sentence or verse-division (a vocative not being taken into account), or in dependent (mostly relative) clauses, or in conjunction with certain particles. Of two or more co-ordinate verb-forms, however, only the first is nnaccented.

In writing Sanskrit the natives, in different parts of India, generally employ the particular character used for writing their own vernacular. The character, however, most widely understood and employed by Hindu scholars, and used invariably in European editions of Sanskrit works (unless printed in Roman letters) is the so-called Devandgart, or ndgart (‘‘town”-script) of the gods.

The origin of the Indian alphabets is still enveloped in doubt. The oldest hitherto known specimens of Indian writing are five rock-inscriptions, containing religious edicts in Pali (the Prakrit used in the Buddhist scriptures), issued by the emperor Asoka (Piyadasi) of the Maurya dynasty, in 253-251 B.c., and scattered over the area of northern India from the vicinity of Peshawar, on the north-west frontier, and Girnar in Guzerat, to Jaugada and Dhauli in Katak, on the eastern coast. The most western of

these inscriptions—called, from villages near it, the Kapurdagarhi or Shahbaz-garhi inscription—is executed in a different alphabet from the others. It reads from right to left, and is usually called the Arian P4li alphabet, it being also used on the coins of the Greek and Indo-Scythian princes of Ariana; while the other, which reads from left to right, is called the Indian Pali alphabet. The former, which is manifestly derived from a Semitic (probably Aramean) source, has left no traces on the subsequent development of Indian writing. The Indo-Péli alphabet, on the other hand, from which the modern Indian alphabets are derived, is of uncertain origin. The similarity, however, which several of its letters present to those of the old Phenician alphabet (itself probably derived from the Egyptian hieroglyphics) suggests for this alphabet also—or at least for the germ of it—the probability of a Semitic origin, though, already at Asoka's time, the Indians had worked it up to a high degree of perfection and wonderfully adapted it to their peculiar scientific ends. As to the probable time and channel of its introduction, no satisfactory theory has yet been proposed. Considering, however, the high state of perfection it exhibits in the Maurya and Andhra inscriptions, as well as the wide area over which these are scattered, it can hardly be doubted that the art of writing must have been known to and practised by the Indians for various purposes long before the time of Agoka. The fact that no reference to it is found in the contemporary literature has probably to be accounted for by a strong reluctance on the part of the Brahmans to commit their sacred works to writing.

The invention of the nnmeral figures, which used to be generally ascribed to the Indians, has also been rendered doubtful by more recent research.

An excellent Sanskrit grammar, dealing with the language historically, has been published by Prof. W. D. Whitney. Of other English grammars, dealing almost exclusively with the classical Sanskrit, those of Profs. Max Miiller, Monier Williams, and F. Kiethorn are now most widely used.

The best dictionary is the great Sanskrit-German Worterbuch, published at St Petersburg, in 7 vols., by Profs. Béhtlingk and Roth. Largely based on this

great thesaurus are the Sanskrit-English dictionaries by Prof. M. Williams and the late Prof. Th. Benfey.

Written char- acters.

hitas,

ses of

ts.

LITERATURE. |

pans K RTT

273

PART IL—SANSKRIT LITERATURE.

The history of Sanskrit literature labours under the same disadvantage as the political history of ancient India, from the total want of anything like a fixed chronology. As there are extremely few well-ascertained political facts until comparatively recent times, so in that whole vast range of literary development there is scarcely a work of importance the date of which scholars have succeeded in fixing with absolute certainty. The original composition of most Sanskrit works can indeed be confidently assigned to certain general periods of literature, but as to many of them, and these among the most important, scholars have but too much reason to doubt whether they have come down to us in their original shape, or whether they have not rather, in course of time, undergone alterations and additions so serious as to make it impossible to regard them as genuine witnesses of any one phase of the development of the Indian mind. Nor can we expect many important chronological data from the new materials which will doubtless yet be brought to light in India. Though by such discoveries a few isolated spots may

indeed be lighted up here and there, the real task of |

clearing away the mist which at present obscures our view, if ever it can be cleared away, will have to be performed by patient research—by a more

minute critical examina- tion of the multitudinous writings which have been handed down from the remote past. In the following sketch it is intended to take a rapid view of the more important works and writers in the several departments of literature.

In accordance with the two great phases of linguistic development above referred to, the history of Sanskrit literature readily divides itself into two principal periods, the Vedic and the classical. It should, however, be noted that these periods partly overlap each other, and that some of the later Vedic works are included in that period on account of the subjects with which they deal, and for their archaic style, rather than for any just claim to a higher antiquity than may have to be assigned to the oldest works of the classical Sanskrit.

I. Tue Vepic Periop.!

The term veda—+.e., “knowledge,” (sacred) “lore ”— embraces a body of writings the origin of which is ascribed to divine revelation (sruti, literally “hearing ”), and which forms the foundation of the Brdhmanical system of religious belief. This sacred canon is divided into three or (according toa later scheme) four coordinate colleetions, likewise called Veda:—(1) the Rig-veda, or lore of praise (or hymns); (2) the Sdma-veda, or lore of tunes (or chants); (3) the Yajur-veda, or lore of prayer ; and (4) the Atharva-veda, or lore of the Atharvans. Each of these four Vedas consists primarily of a collection (samhitd) of sacred, mostly poetical, texts of a devotional nature, called mantra. This entire body of texts (and particularly the first three collections) is also frequently referred to as the tray? vidyd, or threefold wisdom, of hymn (rich), tune or chant (sdman), and prayer (yajus),—the fourth Veda, if at all included, being in that case classed together with the Rik.

The Brahmanical religion finds its practical expression chiefly in sacrificial performances. The Vedic sacrifice requires for its proper performance the attendance of four officiating priests, each of whom is assisted by one or

J. Muir’s Original Sanskrit Tects, 5 vols., 2d ed., forms the most complete general survey of the results of Vedic research.

2 The combiuation ch, used (in conformity with the usual English

practice) in this sketch of the literature, corresponds to the simple c in the scheme of the alphabet, p. 270.

more (usually three) subordinate priests, viz.:—(1) the Hotar (i.e. either “sacrificer,” or “invoker”), whose chief business is to invoke the gods, either in short prayers pronounced over the several oblations, or in liturgical recitations (sastra), made up of various hymns and detached verses ; (2) the Udgdtar, or chorister, who has to perform chants (stotra) in connexion with the hotar’s recitations ; (3) the Adhvaryu, or offering priest par excel- lence, who performs all the material duties of the sacrifice, such as the kindling of the fires, the preparation of the sacrificial ground and the offerings, the making of obla- tions, &c.; (4) the Brahman, or chief “ priest,” who has to superintend the performance and to rectify any mistakes that may be coinmitted. Now, the first three of these priests stand in special relation to three of the Vedic Samhitas in this way, that the Samhitas of the SAdmaveda and Yajurveda form special song and prayer books, arranged for the practical use of the udgatar and adhvaryu respectively; whilst the Rik-samhita, though not arranged for any such practical purpose, contains the entire body of sacred lyrics whence the hotar draws the material for hig recitations. The brahman, on the other hand, had no special text-book assigned to him, but was expected to be familiar with all the Samhitds as well as with the practical details of the sacrificial performance. In point of fact, however, the brahmans, though their attendance at Vedic sacrifices was required, can scarcely be said to have formed a separate class of priests: their office was probably one which might be held by any priest of the three other classes who had acquired the necessary qualification by additional study of the other Samhitds and manuals of ritual. In later times, when the votaries of the fourth Veda pressed for recognition of their Samhita as part of the sacred canon, the brahman priest was claimed by them as specially connected with the Atharva- veda. It is perhaps for this reason that the latter is also called the Lrahmaveda,—though this designation may also be taken to mean the Veda of spells or secret doctrines (6rahman). It sometimes happens that verses not found in our version of the Rik-samhité, but in the Atharva- veda-samhita, are used by the hotar; but such texts, if they did not actually form part of some other version of the Rik,—as Sayana in the

introduction to his commentary on the Rik-samhita assures us that they did, —were prob- ably inserted in the liturgy subsequent to the recogni- tion of the fourth Veda.

The several Samhitas have attached to them certain Brah- theological prose works, called Brdhmana, which, though ™?4s-

subordinate in authority to the Mantras or Samhitas, are like them held to be divinely revealed and to form part of the canon. The chief works of this class are of an exegetic nature,—their purport being to supply a dogmatic exposi- tion of the sacrificial ceremonial in so far as the particular class of priests for whose enlightenment the Brahmana is intended is concerned in it. Notwithstanding the un- interesting character of no small part of their contents, the Br&hmanas are of considerable importance, both as regards the history of Indian institutions and as " the oldest body of Indo-European prose, of a generally free, vigorous, simple form, affording valuable glimpses backward at the primitive condition of unfettered Indo-European talk" (Whitney).

More or less closely connected with the Brahmanas (and Aran-

in a few exceptional cases with Sambhitas) are two classes ¥

of treatises, called Arapyaka and Upanishad. The Aran- V

yakas, z.e., works "relating to the forest," being intended

to be read by those who have retired from the world and XXI. — 35

shads.

Different

recen- sions.

Vedin-

gas,

lead the life of anchorites, do not greatly differ in char- acter and style from the Brahmanas, but like them are chiefly ritualistic, treating of special ceremonies not dealt with, or dealt with only imperfectly, in the latter works, to which they thus stand in the relation of supplements. The Upanishads, on the other hand, are of a purely specu- lative nature, and must be looked upon as the first attempts at a systematic treatment of metaphysical ques- tions. The number of Upanishads hitherto known is very considerable (about 170); but, though they nearly all pro- fess to belong to the Atharvaveda, they have to be assigned to very different periods of Sanskrit literature,—some of them being evidently quite modern productions. The oldest treatises of this kind are doubtless those which form part of Vedic Samhités, Brahmanas, and Aranyakas, though not a few others which have no such special con- nexion have to be classed with the later products of the Vedic age.

As the sacred texts were not committed to writing till a much later period, but were handed down orally in the Brahmanical schouls, it was inevitable that local differences of reading should spring up, which in course of time gave rise to a number of independent versions, more or less differing from one another. Such different text-recen- sions, called sakhd (7.e., branch), were at one time very numerous, but only a limited number of them have sur- vived. As regards the Samhitds, the poetical form of the hymns, as well as the concise style of the sacrificial formulas, would render these texts less liable to change, and the discrepancies of different versions would chiefly consist in various readings of single words or in the different arrangement of the textual matter. The diffuse ritualistic discussions and loosely connected legendary illustrations of the Brahmanas, on the other hand, offered scope for very considerable modifications in the traditional matter, either through the ordinary processes of oral transmission or through the special influence of indi- vidual teachers.

An original Brahmana, then, may be characterized as a series of theoretic discourses, composed by recognized authorities on ritualistic matters, such as might be delivered or referred to in connexion with practical instruction in the sacrificial art. The growing intricacy of the ceremonial, however,

could not fail, in course of time, to create a demand for treatises of a more practical tendency, setting forth, in concise and methodical form, the duties of the several priests in the sacrificial perform- ances. But, besides the purely ceremonial matter, the Brahmanas also contained a considerable amount of matter bearing on the correct interpretation of the Vedic texts ; and, indeed, the sacred obligation incumbent on the Brahmans of handing down correctly the letter and sense of those texts necessarily involved a good deal of serious grammatical and etymological study in the Brahmanical schools. These literary pursuits could not but result in the accumulation of much learned material, which it would become more and more desirable to throw into a system- atic form, serving at the same time as a guide for future research. These practical requirements were met by a class of treatises, grouped under six different heads or subjects, called Veddngas, 7.e., members, or limbs, of the (body of the) Veda. None of the works, however, which have come down to us under this designation can lay any just claim to being considered as the original treatises on their several subjects; but they evidently represent a more or less advanced stage of scientific development.

to a class of writings called sdra, «.¢., “string,” consisting Sttras,

as they do of strings of rules in the shape of tersely expressed aphorisms, intended to be committed to memory. The Satras form a connecting link between the Vedic and the classical periods of literature. But, although these treatises, so far as they deal with Vedic subjects, are included by the native authorities among the Vedic writ- ings, and in point of language may, generally speaking, be considered as the latest products of the Vedic age, they have no share in the sacred title of srute or revelation. They are of human, not of divine, origin. And yet, as the production of men of the highest standing, and pro- foundly versed in Vedic lore, the Sftras are naturally regarded as works of great authority, second only to that of the revealed scriptures themselves ; and their relation to the latter is expressed in the generic title of Smriti, or Tradition, usually applied to them.

The six branches of Vedic science, included under the term Vedanga, are as follows :—

(1) Stkshd, or Phonetics. representing this subject is assigned to a small treatise ascribed to the great grammarian Panini, viz., the Pdniniyd Sikshd, extant in two different (Rik and Yajus) recensions. But neither this treatise nor any other of the numerous siksh4s which have recently come to light can lay claim to any very high age. Scholars, however, usually include under this head certain works, called Prdtisdkhya, we., “belonging to a certain sdkhdé or recension,” which deal minutely with the phonetic peculiarities of the several Samhités, and are of great importance for the textual criticism of the Vedic Samhitas.

(2) Chhandas, or Metre. dah-sttra of Pingala the starting-point of prosody. The Vedic metres, however, occupy but a small part of this treatise, and they are evidently dealt with in a more original manner in the Nidana-sitra of the Samaveda, and in a chapter of the Rik-pratisakhya. For profane prosody, on the other hand, Pingala’s treatise is rather valuable, no less than 160 metres being described by him.

3) Vydkarana, or Grammar. is said to be the Vedanga; but it marks the culminating point of grammatical research rather than the beginning, and besides treats chiefly of the post-Vedic language.

(4) Nirukta, or Etymology. Yaska’s Nirukta is the Ety- traditional representative of this subject, and this important ™0!08y.

work certainly deals entirely with Vedic etymology or ex- planation. It consists, in the first place, of strings of words in three chapters:—(1) synonymous words; (2) such as are purely or chiefly Vedic ; and (3) names of deities. These lists are followed by YAska’s commentary, interspersed with numerous illustrations. Ydska, again, quotes several pre- decessors in the same branch of science ; and it is probable that the original works on this subject consisted merely of lists of words similar to those handed down by him. (5) Jyotisha, or Astronomy.

connexion with the performance of sacrifices, the metrical treatise which has come down to us in two different recen- sions under the title of

Jyotisha, ascribed to one Lagadha, or Lagata, seems indeed to be the oldest existing systematic treatise on astronomical subjects. With the exception of some apparently spurious verses of one of the recensions, it betrays no sign of the Greek influence which shows itself in Hindu astronomical works from about the third century of our era; and its date may therefore be set down as probably not later than the early centuries after Christ.

The privileged position of Phonetic

Tradition makes the Chhan- Metre.

Panini’s famous grammar Gramma

Although astronomical Astro- calculations are frequently referred to in older works in 7°”!

Though a few of them are composed in metrical form— (6) Kalpa, or Ceremonial. ‘Tradition does not single Cere- especially in the ordinary epic couplet, the anushtubh | out any special work as the Vedanga in this branch of monial. sloka, consisting of two lines of sixteen syllables, or of | Vedic science; but the sacrificial practice gave rise to a

two octosyllabic pAdas, each—the majority of them belong | large number of systematic sfitra-manuals for the several

igveda- mhita,

LITERATURE. |

classes of priests. The most important of these works have come down to us, and they occupy by far the most prominent place among the literary productions of the sfitra-period. The Kalpa-sftras, or rules of ceremonial, are of two kinds:—(1) the Srauta-stitras, which are based on the Sruti, and teach the performance of the great sacri- fices, requiring three sacrificial fires; and (2) the Smérta- stitras, or rules based on the smriti or tradition. The latter class again includes two kinds of treatises :—(1) the Grihya-siitras, or domestic rules, treating of ordinary family rites, such as marriage, birth, name-giving, &c., connected with simple offerings in the domestic

fire ; and (2) the Sdmaydcharika- (or Dharma-) stitras, which treat of customs and temporal duties, and are supposed to have formed the chief sources of the later law-books. Besides, the Srauta-sitras of the Yajurveda have usually attached to them a set of so-called Sulva-sitras, ve, “rules of the cord,” which treat of the measurement by means of cords, and the construction, of different kinds of altars required for sacrifices. These treatises (the study of which has been successfully taken up by Prof. Thibaut of Benares) are of considerable interest as supplying import- ant information regarding the earliest geometrical opera- tions in India. Along with the Sftras may be classed a large number of supplementary treatises, usually called Parisishta (wapadiropeva), on various subjects connected with the sacred texts and Vedic religion generally.

After this brief characterization of the various branches of Vedic literature, we proceed to take a rapid survey of the several Vedic collections.

A. Rigveda.1—The Rigveda-samhita has come down to us in the recension of the Sakala school. Mention is made of several other versions ; and regarding one of them, that of the Bashkalas, we have some further information, according to which it seems, how- ever, to have differed but little from the Sakala text. The latter consists of 1028 hymns, including eleven so-called Vélakhilyas, which were probably introduced into the collection subsequently to its completion. The hymns are composed in a great variety of metres, and consist, on an average, of rather more than 10 verses each, or about 10,600 verses altogether. This body of sacred lyrics has been subdivided by ancient authorities in a twofold way, viz., either from a purely artificial point of view, into eight ashtakas of about equal length, or, on a more natural principle, based on the origin of the hymns, and invariably adopted by European scholars, into ten books, or mandalas, of unequal length. Tradition (not, however, always tiustworthy in this respect) has handed down the names of the reputed authors, or rather inspired “seers” (7ishi), of most hymns. ‘These indications have enabled scholars to form some idea as to the probable way in which the Rik-samhita originated, though much still remains to be cleared up by future research.

In the first place, mandalas ii.—vii. are evidently arranged on a uniform plan. Each of them is ascribed to a different family of rishis, whence they

are usually called the six ‘‘family-books ”:— il., the Gritsamadas; iii., the Visvamitras or Kusgikas; iv., the Vama- devyas; v., the Atris; vi., the Bharadvajas; and vii., the Vasishthas. Further, each of these books begins with the hymns addressed to Agni, the god of fire, which are followed by those to Indra, the Jupiter Pluvius, whereupon follow those addressed to minor deities— the Visve Devah (“all-gods ”), the Maruts (storm-gods), &c. Again, the hymns addressed to each deity are arranged (as Prof. Delbriick has shown) in a descending order, according to the number of verses of which they consist.

The first mandala, the longest in the whole Samhita, contains 191 hymns, ascribed, with the exception of a few isolated ones, to sixteen poets of different families. Here again the hymns of each author are arranged on precisely the same principle as the

1 The Rigveda has been edited, together with the eommentary of Sayana (of the 14th eentury), by Max Miiller, 6 vols., London, 1849-74. The same seholar has published an edition of the hymns, both in the eonnected (samhit4) and the disjoined (pada) texts, 1873. An edition in Roman transliteration was published by Th. Aufrecht, Berlin, 1861-3 (2d ed. 1877). Part of an English translation (ehiefly based on Sayana’s interpretation) was brought out by the late Prof. H. H. Wilson (vols. i.-iii., 1850-1857) and continued by Prof. E. B. Cowell (vol. iv., 1866, bringing up the work to mandala viii. hymn 20). We have also the first volume of a translation, with a running commentary, by M. Miiller, containing the hynins to the Maruts or storm-gods. Complete German translations have been published by Hi. Grassmann (1876-7) and A. Ludwig (1876).

o #iMS KET

“family-books.” The eighth and ninth books, on the other hand, have a special character of their own. To the SAmaveda-samhita, whieh, as we shall see, consists almost entirely of verses chosen from the Rik for chanting purposes, these two mandalas have contributed a mueh larger proportion of verses than any of the others. Now, the hymns of the eighth book are ascribed to a number of different rishis, mostly belonging to the

Kanva family. The productions of each poet are usually, though not always, grouped together, but no other principle of arrangement has yet been discovered. The chief peculiarity of this mandala, however, consists in its metres. Many of the hymns are composed in the form of stanzas, called pragdtha (from ga, ‘‘to sing”), consisting of two verses in the brihatt and satobrihatt metres ; whence this book is usually known under the designation of Pragéthah. The other metres met with in this book are likewise such as were evidently considered peculiarly adapted for singing, viz., the gdyatrt (from gd, “to sing ”) and other chiefly octosyllabic metres. It is not yet clear how to account for these peculiarities ; but further research may perhaps show that either the Kanvas were a family of udg4tars, or chanters, or that, before the establishment of a common system of worship for the Brahmanical community, they were accustomed to carry on their liturgical service exclusively by means of chants, instead of using the later form of mixed recitation and chant. Oue of the rishis of this family is called Pragatha Kanva ; possibly this sur- name ‘‘pragatha” may be an old, or local, synonym of udgatar, or perhaps of the chief chanter, the so-called Prastotar, or pre- centor. The ninth mandala, on the other hand, consists entirely of hymns (114) addressed to Soma, the deified juice of the so-called “moon-plant” (Sarcostemma viminale, or Asclepias acida), and ascribed to poets of different families. They are called pavamdnt, “purificational,” because they were to be recited by the hotar while the juice expressed from the soma plants was clarifying. The first sixty of these hymns are arranged strictly according to their length, ranging from ten down to four verses; but as to the remaining hymns no such principle of arrangement is observable, except perhaps in smaller groups of hymns. One might, therefore, feel inclined to look upon that first section as the body of soma hymns set apart, at the time of the first redaction of the Samhita, for the special purpose of being used as pavamdnyah,—the remain- ing hymns having been added at subsequent redactions. It would not, however, by any means follow that all, or even any, of the latter hymns were actually later productions, as they might previously have formed part of the family collections, or might have been overlooked when the hymns were first collected. Other mandalas (viz., i., vili., and x.) still contain four entire hymns addressed to Soma, consisting together of 58 verses, of which only a single one (x. 25, 1) is found in the Samaveda-samhité, as also some 28

isolated verses to Soma, and four hymns addressed to Soma in conjunction with some other deity, which are entirely unrepresented in that collection.

The tenth mandala contains the same number of hymns (191) as the first, which it nearly equals in actual length. ‘The hymns are ascribed to many rishis, of various families, some of whom appear already in the preceding mandalas. The traditional reeord is, however, less to be depended upon as regards this book, many names of gods and fictitious personages appearing in the list of its rishis. In the latter half of the book the hymns are clearly arranged according to the number of verses, in decreasing order,—occasional exceptions to this rule being easily adjusted by the removal of a few additional verses. A similar arrangement seems also to suggest itself in other portions of the book. This mandala stands somewhat apart from the preceding books, both its lan- guage and the general character of many of its hymns betraying a comparatively modern origin. In this respect it stands about on a level with the Atharvaveda-samhité, with which it is otherwise closely connected. Of some 1350 Rik-verses found in the Atharvan, about 550, or rather more than 40 per cent., occur in the tenth mandala. In the latter we meet with the same tendencies as in the Atharvan to metaphysical speculation and abstraet conceptions of the deity on the one hand, and to superstitious practices on the other. But, although in its general appearance the tenth mandala is decidedly more modern than the other books, it contains not a few hymns which are little, if at all, inferior, both in respect of age and poetic quality, to the generality of Vedic hymns.

It has become the custom, after Roth’s example, to call the Rik-samhita (as well as the Atharvan) an historical collection, as compared with the Samhitas put together for purely ritualistic pur- poses. And indeed, though the several family collections which make up the earlier mandalas may originally have served ritual ends, as the hymnals of eertain clans or tribal confederacies, and although the Samhita itself, in its oldest form, may have been intended as a common prayer-book, so to spcak, for the whole of the Brahmanieal community, it is certain that in the stage in which it has been finally handed down it includes a certain portion of hymn material (and even some secular poetry) which could never have been used for purposes of religious service. It may, therefore, be assumed that the Rik-samhita contains all of the nature of popu-

lar lyrics that was accessible to the collectors, or seemed to them worthy of being preserved. The question as to the exact period when the hymns were collected cannot be answered with any approach to accuracy. For many reasons, however, which cannot be detailed herc, scholars have come to fix on the year 1000 B.C. as an approximate date for the collection of the Vedic hymns, From that time every means that human ingenuity could suggest was adopted to secure the sacred texts against the risks connected with oral transmission. But, as there is abundant evidence to show that even then not only had the text of the hymns suffered corruption, but their language had become antiquated to a considerable extent, and was only partly understood, the period during which the great mass of the hymns were composed must have lain considerably further back, and may very likely have extended over the earlier half of the second millenary, or from about 2000 to 1500 B.c.

As regards the people which raised for itself this imposing monu- ment, the hymns exhibit it as settled in the regions watered by the inighty Sindhu (Indus), with its eastern and western tributaries. The land of the five rivers forms the central home of the Vedic people ; but, while its advanced guard has already debouched upon the plains of the upper Ganga and Yamuna, those who bring up the rear are still found loitering far behind in the narrow glens of the Kubha (Cabul) and Gomat! (Gomal). Scattered over this tract of land, in hamlets and villages, the Vedie Aryas are leading chiefly the life of herdsmen and husbandinen. The numerous clans and tribes, ruled over by chiefs and kings, have still constantly to vindicate their right to the land but lately wrung from an inferior race of darker hue; just as in these latter days their kinsmen in the Far West are everon their guard against the fierce attacks of the dispossessed red-skin. Not unfrequently, too, the light-coloured Aryas rage internecine war with one another,—as when the Bharatas, with allied tribes of the Panjab, goaded on by the royal sage Visvamitra, invade the country of the Tritsu king Sudas, to be defeated in the “ten kings’ battle,” through the inspired power of the priestly singer Vasishtha. The priestly office has already become one of high social

importance by the side of the political rulers, and to a large extent an hereditary profession; but it does not yet present the baneful features of an exclusive caste. The Aryan housewife shares with her husband the daily toil and joy, the privilege of worshipping the national gods, and even the triumphs of song-craft, some of the finest hymns being attributed to female seers,

The religious belief of the people consists in a system of natural symbolism, a worship of the elementary forces of nature, regarded as beings endowed with reason and power superior to those of man. In giving utterance to this simple belief, the priestly spokesman has, however, frequently worked into it his own speculative and mystic notions. Indra, the stout-hearted ruler of the cloud-region, receives by far the largest share of the devout attentions of the Vedic singer. His ever-renewed battle with the malicious demons of darkness and drought, for the recovery of the heavenly light and the rain-spending cows of the sky, forms an inexhaustible theme of spirited song. Next to him, in the affections of the people, stands Agni (ignis), the god of fire, invoked as the genial inmate of the Aryan household, and as the bearer of oblations, and mediator between gods and men. Indra and Agni are thus, as it were, the divine representatives of the king (or chief) and the priest of the Aryan community ; and if, in the arrangement of the Samhita, the Brahmanical collectors gave precedence to Agni, it was but one of many avowals of their own hierarchical pretensions. Hence also the hymns to Indra are mostly followed, in the family collections, by those addressed to the Viéve Devah (the ‘‘all-gods”’) or to the Maruts (Mavors, Mars), the warlike storm-gods and faithful com- panions of Indra, as the divine impersonation of the Aryan free- men, the vi or clan. But, while Indra and Agni are undoubtedly the favourite figures of the Vedic pantheon, there is reason to believe that these gods had but latcly supplanted another group of deities who play a less prominent part in the hymns, viz., Father Heaven (Dyaus Pitar, Zebs warhp, Jupiter); Varuna (odpavos), the all- embracing firmament; Mitra (Zend. Mitlra), the genial light of day; and Savitar (Saturnus) or Sfirya (4éA10s), the vivifying sun.

Of the Brahmanas that were handed down in the schools of the

manas of Bahvrichas (i.e., “ possessed of many verses”), as the followers of Rigveda. the Rigveda are called, two have come down to us, viz., those of

the Aitareyins and the Kaushitakins. The Aitareya-bréhmana} and the Kaushitaki- (or Sénkhdyana-) brdhmana evidently have for their groundwork the same stock of traditional exegetic matter. They differ, however, considerably as regards both the arrange- ment of this matter and their stylistic handling of it, with the exception of the numerous legends common to both, in which the discrepancy is comparatively slight. There is also a certain amount of material peculiar to each of them. The Kaushitaka is, upon the whole, far more concise in its style and more systematic in its arrangement—merits which would lead one to infer that it

eae een a Bert translation, by M. Haug, 2 vols., Bombay, 1863. An ic man transliteration, with extracts from the comment: h published by Th. Aufrecht, Bonn, 1879, ee

is probably the more modern work of the two. It consists of thirty chapters (adhydya); while the Aitareya has forty, divided into eight books (or pentads, panchakd, of five chapters each). The last ten adhydyas of the latter work are, however, clearly a later addition,—though they must have already formed part of it at the time of Panini (c. 400 B.c. %), if, as seems probable, one of his grammatical sitras, regulating the formation of the names of Brahinanas, consisting of thirty and forty adhydyas, refers to these two works. In this last portion occurs the well-known legend (also found in the Sankhayana-siitra, but not in the Kaushitaki- bréhmana) of Sunahsepa, whom his father Ajigarta sells and offers to slay, the recital of which formed part of the inauguration of kings. While the Aitareya deals almost exclusively with the Soma sacrifice, the Kaushitaka, in its first six chapters, treats of the several kinds of haviryajiia, or offerings of rice, milk, ghee, &c., whereupon follows the Soma sacrifice in this way, that chapters 7-10 contain the practical ceremonial and 11-30 the recitations (Sastra) of the hotar. Sayana, in the introduction to his com- mentary on the work, ascribes the Aitareya to the sage Mahiddsa Aitareya (son of Itara), also mentioned

elsewhere as a philosopher ; and it seems likely enough that this person arranged the Brahmana and founded the school of the Aitareyins. Regarding the author- ship of the sister work we have no information, except that the opinion of the sage Kaushttaki is frequently referred to in it as authoritative, and generally in opposition to the Paingya—the Braéhmana, it would seem, of a rival school, the Paingins.

Each of these two Braéhmanas is supplemented by a “ forest- portion,” or Aranyaka. The Attareydranyaka? is not a uniform production. It consists of five books (dranyaka), three of which, the first and the last two, are of a liturgical nature, treating of the eeremony called mahdévrata or great vow. The sccond and third books, on the other hand, are purely speculative, and are also styled the Bahvricha-bréhmana-upanishad, Again, the last four chapters of the second book are usually singled out as the Aitareyopanishad,? ascribed, like its Brahmana (and the first book), to Mahidasa Aitareya ; and the third book is also referred to as the Samhitd-upanished. The fourth and fifth books are doubtless of later origin, being composed in siitra-form. Even native authorities exclude them from the sacred canon, and ascribe them to Aéva layana and Saunaka respectively, of whom more further on. As regards the Kaushitaki-dranyaka, our MS. material is not yct sufficient to enable us to determine its exact extent and arrange- ment. It would, however, seem that there are two different recensions of this treatise, a shorter one, consisting of nine, and a longer one of fifteen, adhydyas. Four of these, variously placed at the beginning or end, or after the second adhydya, constitute the highly interesting Kaushitaki- (brdhmana-) upanishad,* of which we possess two different recensions. The remaining portions of the Aranyaka seein to correspond, to some extent, to the cere- monial sections of the Aitareya-dranyaka.

Of Kalpa-sdtras, or manuals of sacrificial ceremonial, composed Sfitras of for the use of the hotar priest, two different sets are in existence, Rigveda.

the Asvaldyana- and the Sénkhdyana-sttra. Each of these works follows one of the two Brahmanas of the Rik as its chief authority, viz., the Aitareya and Kaushitaka respectively. Both consist of a Srauta- anda Grthya-sdtra. Asvalayana seems to have lived about the same time as Panini,—his own teacher, Saunaka, who com- pleted the Rik-pratisakhya, being probably

intermediate between the great grammarian and Y4dska, the author of the Nirukta. Saunaka himself is said to have been the author of a Srauta-sfltra (which was, however, more of the nature of a Brahmana) and to have destroyed it on seeing his pupil's work. A Grihya-siitra is still quoted under his name by later writers. The Aévalfyana Srauta-sitra > consists of twelve, the Grihya® of four, adhyayas. Regarding Sankhayana still less is known; but he, too, was doubtless a comparatively modern writer, who, like Agvaléyana, founded a new school of ritualists. Hence the Kaushitaki-brahmana, adopted (and perhaps improved) by him, also goes under his name, just as the Aitareya is sometimes called Aévaliyana-bréhmana. The Sankhayana Srauta-siitra consists of eighteen adhyayas. The last two chapters of the work are, however, a later addition,® while the two preceding chapters, on the contrary, present a com- paratively archaic, brahmana-like appearance. The Grihya-siitra' consists of six chapters, the last two of which are likewise later appendages. The Sdmbavya Grihya-sitra, of which a single MS.

2 Edited, with SAéyana's commentary, by Rajendralala Mitra, in the Bibliotheca Indica, 1875-76. The first three books have been translated by F. Max Miiller in Sacred Books of the East, vol. i.

3 Edited and translated by Dr Réer, in the Bibl. Ind. The last chapter of the second book, not being commented upon by SAéyana, is probably a latcr addition.

4 Text, commentary, and translation published by E. B. Cowell, in the Bibl. Ind. Also a translation by F. Max Miiller in Sacred Books of the East, vol. i.

5 Both works have been published with the commentary of Gargya Narayana, by native scholars, in the Bibl. Ind. Also the text of the Grihya, with a German translation by A. Stenzler.

6 See A. Weber's analysis, Ind. Studien, ii. p. 288 sq. This work, with its commentaries, is only accessible in manuscript.

7 Edited, with a German translation, by H. Oldenberg (Jnd. Stud., vol. XV-), who also gives an account of the Simbavya Grihya.

is at present known, secms to be closely connected with the preceding work. Prof. Biihler also refers to the Rigveda the Vasishtha-dharmasdstra,' composed of mixed stitras and couplets. A few works remain to be noticed, bearing chiefly on the textual form and traditionary records of the Rik-samhité. In our remarks on the Vedangas, the Pratisakhyas have already been referred to as the chief repositories of siksha or Vedic phonetics. Among these works the Rik-prdatisdkhya? occupies the first place. The original composition of this important work is ascribed to the same Sékalya from whom the vulgate recension of the (Sakala) Samhita takes its name. He is also said to be the author of the existing Pada-patha (i.e., the text-form in which each word is given uncon- nected with those that precede and follow it),—which report may well be credited, since the pada-text was doubtless prepared with a view to an examination, such as is presented in the Pratisakhya, of the phonetic modifications undergone by words in their syntactic combination. In the Pratisakhya itself, Sdkalya's father (or Sakalya the elder) is also several times referred to as an authority on phonetics, thongh the younger Sakalya is evidently regarded as having improved on his father's theories. Thus both father and son probably had a share in the formulation of the rules of pronunciation and modification of Vedic sounds. The completion or final arrangement of the Rik-pratisakhya, in its present form, is ascribed to Saunaka, the reputed teacher of Agvalayana. _Saunaka, however, is merely a family name ("descendant of Sunaka"), which is given even to the rishi Gritsamada, to whom nearly the whole of the second mandala of the Rik is attributed. How long after Sakalya this particular Saunaka lived we do not know; but some generations at all events would seem to lie between them, considering that in the meantime the Sakalas, owing doubtless to minor differences on phonetic points in the Samhita text, had split into several branches, to one of which, the Saisira (or Saisiriya) school, Saunaka belonged. While Sakalya is referred to both by Yaska and Panini, neither of these writers mentions Saunaka. It

-seems nevertheless likely, for several reasons, that Panini was

acquainted with Saunaka’s work, though the point has by no means been definitively settled. The Rik-pratisikhya is composed in mixed glokas, or couplets of various metres, a form of composi- tion for which Saunaka seems to have had a special predilection. Besides the Pratisakhya, and the Grihya-stitra mentioned above, eight other works are ascribed to Saunaka, viz., the Brihad- devatd, an account, in epic élokas, of the deities of the hymns, which supplies much valuable mythological information; the Rig-vidhdna, a treatise, likewise in epic metre, on the magic effects

of some seventy-five verses, some of which have been taken from Khila hymns, whilst others which also occur in the Atharvan or Yajurveda, as well as such not otherwise found, may perhaps have formed part of some other recension of the Rik. The Sdéimaveda- samhitd* is divided into two chief parts, the pérva- (first) and the uttara- (second) arehika. The second part contains the texts of the saman-hymns, arranged in the order in which they are actually required for the stotras or chants of the various Soma sacrificcs. The first part, on the other hand, contains the body of tune-verses, or verses used for practising the several s’mans or tunes upon,—the tunes themselves being given in the Grdma-geya-gdna (1.e., songs to be sing in the village), the tune-book specially belonging to the Pirvarchika. Hence the latter includes all the first verses of those triplets of the second part which had special tunes peculiar to them, besides the texts of detached sdmans occasionally used outside the regular ceremonial, as well as such as were perhaps no longer required but had been so used at one time or other. The verses of the Pfirvarchika are arranged on much the same plan as the family-books of the Rik-samhité, viz., in three sections containing the verses addressed to Agni, Indra, and Soma (pava- médna) respectively,—each section (consisting of one, three, and one adhyayas respectively) being again arranged according to the metres, Hence this part is also called Chhandas- (metre) drehika. Over and above this natural arrangement of the two Archikas, there is a purely formal division of the texts into six and nine prapathakas respectively, each of which, in the first part, consists of ten decades (dasat) of verses. We have two recensions of the Samhita, belonging to the Randyantya and Kauthuma schools, and differing but slightly from each other. Besides the six prapathakas (or five adhyayas) of

the Pfirvarchika, some schools have an addi- tional “forest” chapter, called the Aranyaka-samhitd, the tunes of which—along with others apparently intended for being chanted by anchorites—are contained in the Aranya-géna. Besides the two tune-books belonging to the Pfirvarchika, there are two others, the Vha-géna (“ modification-songs”)and Uhya-gdna, which follow the order of the Uttararchika, giving the several saman- hymns chanted at the Soma sacrifice, with the modifications the tunes undergo when applied to texts other than those for which they were originally composed. The Saman hymnal, as it has come down to ns, has evidently passed through a long course of develop- ment. The practice of chanting probably goes back to very early times ; but the question whether any of the tunes, as given in the Ganas, and which of them, can lay claim to an exceptionally high antiquity will perhaps never receive a satisfactory answer.

The title of Bréhmana is bestowed by the Chhandogas, or Sama- followers of the Samaveda, on a considerable number of treatises. veda- In accordance with the statements of some later writers, their brah-

of Vedic hymns and verses; the Pdda-vidhdna, a similar treatise, apparently no longer in existence ; and five different indexes or catalogues (anukramant) of the rishis, metres, deities, sections

Samhita,

} |]

(anuvdka), and hymns of the Rigveda. It is, however, doubtful whether the existing version of the Brihaddevata is the original one; and the Rigvidhdéna would seem to be much more modern than Saunaka’s time. As regards the Anukramanis, they seem all to have been composed in mixed glokas; but, with the exception of the Anuvakanukramant, they are only known from quotations, having been superseded by the Sarvénukrama, or complete index, of Kdiydyana. Both these indexes have been commented upon by Shadgurusishya, towards the end of the 12th century of our era.

B. Séma-veda.—The term séman, of uncertain derivation, denotes a solemn tune or melody to be sung or chanted to a rzeh or verse. The set chants

(stotra) of the Soma sacrifice are as a rule performed in triplets, either actually consisting of three different verses, or of two verses which, by the repetition of certain parts, are made, as it were, to form three. The three verses are usually sung to the same tune ; but in certain cases two verses sung to the same tune had a different siman enclosed between them. One and the same saman or tune may thus be snng to many different verses ; but, as in teaching and practising the tunes the same verse was invariably used for a certain tune, the term “saman,” as well as the special technical names of sémans, are not unfrequently applied to the verses themselves with which they were most commonly con- nected, just as one would quote the beginning of the text of an English hymn, when the tune usually sung to that hymn is meant. The Indian chant somewhat resembles the Gregorian or Plain Chant.3 Each siman is divided into five parts or phrascs (prastéva or prelude, &c.), the first four of which are distributed between the several chanters, while the finale (nidhana) is sung in unison by all of them.

In accordance with the distinction between rieh or text and séman or tune, the siman-hymnal consists of two parts, viz., the Sdmaveda-samhitd, or collection of texts (rich) used for making up siman-hymns, and the Gdna, or tune-books, song-books. The textual matter of the Samhita consists of somewhat under 1600 different verses, selected from the Rik-samhita, with the exception

1 Text with Krishnapandita’s commentary, published at Benares ; translation by G. Bithler in Sacred Books, vol. xiv.

2 Edited, with a French translation, by A. Regnier, in the Journal Asiatique, 1856-8; also, with a German translation, by M. Miiller, 1869.

3 Burnell, Arsheyabrahmana, p. xli.

number was usually fixed at eight; but within the last few years manas.

one new Brahmana has been recovered, while at least two others which are found quoted may yet be brought to light in India. The majority of the Samaveda-brahmanas present, however, none of the characteristic features of other works of that class; but they are rather of the nature of sfitras and kindred _ treatises, with which they probably belong to the same period of

literature. Moreover, the contents of these works—as might indeed be expected from the nature of the duties of the priests for whom they were intended—are of an extremcly arid and technical character, though they all are doubtless of some importance, either for the textual criticism of the Samhita or on account of the legendary and other information they supply. These works arc as follows: —(1) the Téndya-mahd- (or Praudha-) brdhmana,® or " great" Brahmana,—usually called Panchavimsa-brdhmana from its ''con- sisting of twenty-five" adhyayas—which treats of the duties of the udgatars generally, and especially of the various kinds of chants ; (2) the Shadvimsa, or "twenty-sixth," being a supplement to the preceding work,—its last chapter, which also bears the title of Adbhuta-bréhmana,® or "book of marvels,' is rather interesting, as it treats of all manner of portents and evil influences, which it teaches how to avert by certain rites and charms; (8) the Sémavt- dhdna,'? analogous to the Rigvidhana, descanting on the magic effects of the various sAmans; (4) the Arsheya-bréhmana, a mere catalogue of the technical names of the samans in the order of the Pirvarchika, known in two different recensions ; (5) the Devatd- dhydya, which treats of the deities of the simans ; (6) the Chhdndo-gya-brdhmana, the last eight adhyayas (3-10) of which constitute the important Chhandogyopanishad ;° (7) the Samhitopanishad- bréhmana, treating of various subjects connected with chants ; (8)

4 Edited and translated by J. Stevenson, 1843 ; a critical edition, with Gcrman translation and glossary, was published by Th. Benfey, 1848; also an edition, with the Ganas and Sayana's commentary, by Satyavrata Simasrami, in the Bibl. Ind., in 5 vols.

5 Edited with S&yana's commentary, by Anandachandra Vedantavagisa, in the Bibl. Ind., 1870-74.

6 A, Weber, "Omina et Portenta," Abhandlungen of Berlin Royal Academy of Sciences, 1858.

7 The works enumerated under 3, 4, 5,7, 8 have been edited by A. Burnell; 8 also previously by A. Weber, ind. St., iv.

8 Edited and translated by Dr Roer, Bibl. Ind.; also translated by M. Miiller, Sacred Books of the East, i.

Sama- veda- sfitras.

Samhitds of Black Yajur- veda,

the Vaméa-brdéhmana, a mere list of the Sdmaveda teachers. To these works has to be added the Jaimintya- or Talavakéra- brdhmana, discovered by the late Dr A. Burnell, but as yet only known by a few extracts. From Prof. Whitney's account of it,! the work stands much on a level with the Brahmanas of the Rik and Yajurveda. A portion of it is the well-known Kena- (or Talavakdra-) upanishad, on the nature of Brahman, as the supreme of deities. ; J ;

If the Sdmaveda has thus its ample share of Brahmana-literature, though in part of a somewhat questionable character, it is not less richly supplied with sfitra-treatises, some of which probably belong to the oldest works of that class. There are three Srauta- stitras, which attach themselves more or less closely to the Panchaviméga-brahmana:—Maégaka's Arsheya-kalpa, which gives the beginnings of the sAmans in their sacrificial order, thus supplement- ing the Arsheya-brihmana, which enumerates their technical names ; and the Srauta-stitras of Ldtydyana? and Drdhydyana, of the Kauthuma and RA&nayaniya schools respectively, which differ but little from each other, and form complete manuals of the duties of the udgatars. Another siitra, of an exegetic character, the Anupada-sdira, likewise follows the Panchavimésa, the difficult passages of which it explains. Besides these, there are a con- siderable number of sitras and kindred technical treatises bearing on the prosody and phonetics of the sdma-texts. The more important of them are—the Riktantra, apparently intended to serve as a Pratisakhya of the Samaveda; the Niddna-sdtra,' a

treatise on prosody ; the Pushpa- or Phutlla-sétra, ascribed either |

to Gobhila or to Vararuchi, and treating of the phonetic modi- fications of the rich in the samans ; and the Sématantra, a treatise on chants, of a very technical nature. Further, two Grihya-sitras, belonging to the Samaveda, are hitherto known, viz., the Dréhyé- yana-grihya, ascribed to Khadira, and that of Gobhila* (who is also said to have composed a Srauta-stitra), with a

supplement, entitled Karmapradipa, by Katyayana. To the SAmavcda seems further to belong the Gautama-dharmasdstra,> composed in siitras, and apparently the oldest existing compendium of Hindu law.

C. Yajur-veda.—This, the sacrificial Veda of the Adhvaryu priests, divides itself into an older and a younger branch, or, as they are usually called, the Black (Zrishna) and the White (swkla) Yajurveda. Tradition ascribes the foundation of the Yajurveda to the sage Vaigampayana. Of his disciples three are specially named, viz., Katha, Kalapin, and Yaska Paingi, the last of whom again is stated to have communicated the sacrificial science to Tittiri. How far this genealogy of teachers may be authentic cannot now be determined ; but certain it is that in accordance therewith we have three old collections of Yajus-texts, viz., the Kdthaka, the Kdlépaka or Maitrdyanit Samhitd,' and the Taittirtya-samhité.? The Kathaka and Kalapaka are frequently mentioned together ; and the author of the " great commentary "' on Panini once remarks that these works were taught in every village. The Kathas and Kalapas are often referred to under the collective name of Charakas, which apparently means '' wayfarers" or itincrant scholars ; but according to a later writer (Hemachandra) Charaka is no other than Vaigampayauna himself, after whom his followers would have been thus called. From the Kathas proper two schools seem early to have branched off, the Prachya- (eastern) and Kapishthala- Kathas, the text-recension of the latter of whom has recently been discovered in the Kapishthala-katha-samhitd. The Kalapas also soon became subdivided into numerous different schools. Thus from one of Kalapin's immediate disciples, Haridru, the Haridraviyas took their origin, whose text-recension, the Héri- dravika, is quoted together with the Kathaka as carly asin Yaska's Nirukta ; but we do not know whether it differed much from the original Kalapa texts. As regards the Taittiriya-samhita, that collection, too, in course of time gave rise to a number of different schools, the text handed down being that of the Apastambas; while the contents of another recension, that of the Atreyas, are known from their Anukramani, which has been preserved.

_The four collections of old Yajus texts, so far known to us, while differing more or less considerably in arrangement and verbal points, have the main mass of their textual matter in common. This common matter consists of both sacrificial prayers (yajus) in verse and prose and exegetic or

illustrative prose portions (brah- mana). A prominent feature of the old Yajus texts, as compared with the other Vedas, is the constant intermixture of textual and exegetic portions. The Charakas and Taittiriyas thus do not recognize the distinction between Samhitd and Brahmana in the sense of two separate collections of texts, but they have only a Samhita, or collection, which includes likewise the exegetic or

1 Proceedings of Am. Or. Soc., May 1883.

oe Edited with Agnisvamin's commentary, and the v. ll. of the Drahyayana-sitra, by Anandachandra Vedantavagisa, Bibl. Ind., 1872. : : 'Two chapters published by A. Weber, Ind. St., viii. P Edited with a commentary, by Chandrakanta Tarkalankara, Bibl. Ind. Edited by A. Stenzler ; translated by G. Biihler, Sacred Books, vol. ii. 6 In process of publication by L. v. Schroeder. 7 Partly published, with Sayana's commentary,

in Bibl. Ind. by E. Récr, E, B. Cowell, &¢.,

Brahmana portions. The Taittiriyas seem at last to have been impressed with their want of a separate Brahmana and to have set about supplying the deficiency in rather an awkward fashion: instead of separating from each other the textual and exegetic portions of their Samhita, they merely added to the latter a supplement (in three books), which shows the same mixed con- dition, and applied to it the title of Taittirtya-brdhmana.® But, though the main body of this work is manifestly of a supple- mentary nature, a portion of it may perhaps be old, and may once have formed part of the Samhita, considering that the latter con- sists of seven ashtakas, instead of eight, as this term requires, and that certain essential parts of the ceremonial handled in the Brahmana are entirely wanting in the Samhita. Attached to this work is the Taittiriya-dranyaka,? in ten books, the first six of which are of a ritualistic nature, while of the remaining books the first three (7-9) form the Tatttirtyopanishad (consisting of three parts, viz., the Sikshavalli or Samhitopanishad, and the Anandavalli and Bhriguvalli, also called

together the Varuni- upanishad), and the last book forms the Narayaniya- (or Yajfiki-) upanishad.

The Mattrayani Samhitd, the identity of which with the original Kalapaka has been proved pretty conelusively by Dr L. v. Schroder, who attributes the change of name of the K4lapa- Maitrayaniyas to Buddhist influences, consists of four books, attached to which is the Maztri- (or Mattrdyant) upanishad.? The Kéthaka, on the other hand, consists of five parts, the last two of which, however, are perhaps later additions, containing merely the prayers of the hotar priest, and those used at the horse-sacrifice. There is, moreover, the beautiful Katha- or Kdthaka-upanishad," which is also ascribed to the Atharvaveda, and in which Dr Réer would detect allusions to the Sankhya philosophy, and even to Buddhist doctrines.

The defective arrangement of the Yajus texts was at last remedied by a different school of Adhvaryus, the Vajasaneyius. The reputed originator of this school and its text-recension is YAajfiavalkya Vajasaneya (son of Vajasani). The result of the re- arrangement of the texts was a collection of,sacrificial mantras, the Véjasaneyi-samhitd, and a Brahmana, the Satapatha. On account of the greater lucidity of this arrangement, the VAjasaneyins called their texts the White (or clear) Yajurveda,—the name of Black (or obscure) Yajus being for opposite reasons applied to the Charaka texts. Both the Samhita and Brahmana of the Vajasaneyins have come down to us in two different recensions, viz., those of the Madhyandina and Kdnva schools ; and we find besides a consider- able number of quotations from a Vajasaneyaka, from which we cannot doubt that there must have been at least one other recension of the Satapatha-brahmana. The difference between the two extaut recensions is, on the whole, but slight as regards the subject-matter ; but in point of diction it is quite sufficient to make a comparison especially interesting from a philological point of view. Which of the two versions may be the more original cannot as yct be determined ; but the phonetic and grammatical differences will probably have to be accounted for by a geographical separation of the two schools rather than by a difference of age. In several points of difference the Kanva recension agrees with the practice of the Rik-samhita, and there probably was some connexion between the Yajus school

of Kanvas and the famous family of rishis of that name to which the eighth mandala of the Rik is attributed.

The Vdjasaneyi-samhité™ consists of forty adhydyas, the first eighteen of which contain the formulas of the ordinary sacrifices. The last fifteen adhydyas are doubtless a later addition,—as may also be the case as regards the preceding seven chapters. The last adhyaya iscommonly known under the title of Vajasaneyi-samhita- (or Isavasya-) upanishad.!? Its object seems to be to point out the fruitlessness of mcre works, and to insist on the necessity of man's acquiring a knowledge of the supreme spirit. The sacrificial texts of the Adhvaryus consist, in about equal parts, of verses (rich) and prose formulas (yajus). The majority of the former occur likewise in the Rik-samhita, from which they were doubtless extracted. Not unfrequently, however, they show considerable discrepancies of reading, which may be explained partly from a difference of recen- sion and partly as the result of the adaptation of these verses to their special sacrificial purpose. As regards the prose formulas, though only a few of them are actually referred to in the Rik, it is quite possible that many of them may be of high antiquity.

The Satapatha-bréhmana,™ or Brahmana of a hundred paths, derives its name from the fact of its consisting of 100 lectures (adhyaya), which are divided by the Madhyandinas into fourtcen, by

8 Edited, with Sayana's commentary, by Rajendralala Mitra, Bibl. Ind.

® Text and translation published by E. B. Cowell, Bibi. Ind.

10 Text, commentary, and translation published by E. Rier, Bibl. Ind.

11 Edited, in the Madhyandina recension, with the commentary of Mahidhara, and the v. ll. of the Kanva text, by A. Weber, 1849. a Translation by E. Récr, Bibl. Ind.; by F. M. Miiller, Sacred Books of the

'ast, i.

13 Edited by A. Weber, who also translated the first chapter into German. In Sacred Books of the East, a translation, by J. Eggeling, is being published,

—2 vols., containing the first four books, having appeared.

Samhita

of White

Yajur- veda,

Brah- mana of White Yajur- veda,

va NS

the Kanvas into seventeen books (kinda). The first nine books of the former, corresponding to the first eleven of the Kanvas, and consist- ing of sixty adhyayas, form a kind of running commentary on the first eightcen books of the Vaj.~~Samhita; and it has been plausibly suggested by Prof. Weber that this portion of the Bralhmana may be referred to in the Mahabhashya on Pan. iv. 2, 60, where a Sata~~ patha anda Shashti-patha (7.e., ‘‘ consisting of 60 paths”) are men-

ioned together as objects of study, and that consequently it may at one time have formed an independent work. This view is also supportcd by the circumstance that of the remaining five books (10-14) of the Madhyandinas the third is called the middle one (madhyama); while the Kanvas apply the same epithet to the middlemost of the five books (12-16) preceding their last one. This last book would thus seem to be treated by them as a second supplement, and not without reason, as it is of the Upanishad order, and bears the special title of Brihad- (great) dranyaka.} Except in books 6-10 (M.), which treat of the construction of fire-altars, and recognize the sage Sandilya as their chief authority, Yajnavalkya’s opinion is frequently referred to in the Satapatha as authoritative. This is especially the case in the later books, part of the Brihad-aranyaka being even called Yajfiavalkiya-kanda. As regards the age of the Satapatha, the probability is that the main body of the work is considerably older than the time of Panini, but that some of its latter parts were considered by Panini’s critic Katyayana to be of about the same age as, or not much older than, Panini. Even those portions had probably been long in existence before they obtained recognition as part of the canon of the White Yajus.

The contemptuous manner in which the doctrines of the Charaka-adhvaryus are repeatedly animadverted upon in the Satapatha betrays not a little of the odiwm theologicwm on the part of the divines of the Vajasaneyins towards their brethren of the older schools. Nor was their animosity confined to mere literary war- fare, but they seem to have striven by every means to gain ascendency over their rivals. The consolidation of the Brahmanical hicrarchy and the institution of a common system of ritual worship, which called forth the liturgical Vedic collections, were doubtless consummated in the so-called Madhya-deéga, or '* middle country," lying between thc Sarasvati and the confluence of the Yamuna and Ganga ; and more espccially in its western part, the Kuru-kshetra, or land of the Kurus, with the adjoining territory of the PanchAlas, between the Yamuna and Gangd. From thence the original schools of Vaidik ritualism gradually extended their sphere over the adja- cent parts. The Charakas seem for a long time to have held sway

in the western and north-western regions ; while the Taittiriyas .

in course of time spread over the whole of the peninsula south of the Narmada (Nerbudda), where their ritual has remained pre- eminently the object of study till comparatively recent times. The Vajasaneyins, on the other hand, having first gained a footing in the lands on the lower Ganges, chiefly, it would seem, through the patronage of King Janaka of Videha, thence gradually worked their way westwards, and eventually succceded in superseding the older schools north of the Vindhya, with the exception of some isolated places where even now families of Brahmans are met with which profess to follow the old Samhitas.

In Kalpa-sdtras the Black Yajurveda is particularly rich ; but, owing to the circumstances just indicated, they are almost entirely confined to the Taittiriya schools. The only Srauta-sfitra of a Charaka sehool which has hitherto been recovercd is that of the Manavas, a subdivision of the Maitrayantyas. The Ménava-srauta- sdtra® seems to consist of eleven books, the first nine of which treat of the saerificial ritual, while the tenth contains the Sulva-stitra ; and the eleventh is made up of a number of supplements (pari- sishia). The Mdnava-grihya-sitra is likewise in existence

; but so far nothing is known, save one or two quotations, of a Médnava-dharma-sitra, the discovery of which ought to solve some important questions regarding the development of Indian law. Of stitra- works belonging to the Kathas, a single treatise, the Kéthaka- grihya-stitra, isknown; while Dr Jolly considers the Vishnu-smriti,® a compendium of law, composed in mixed stitras and slokas, to be nothing but a Vaishnava recast of the Kathaka-dharma-stitra, which seems no longer to exist. As regards the Taittirlyas, the Kal- pa-stitra most widcly accepted among them was that of Apastamba, to whose school, as we have seen, was also due our existing rcecen- sion of the Taittirlya-samhitéa. The. pastamba-kalpa-sitra consists of thirty yrasna (questious); the first twenty-five of these consti-tute the Srauta-siitra*; 26 and 27 the Grihya-sfitra ; 28 and 29 the Dharma-stitra®; and the last the Sulva-siitra. Prof. Biihler has tried to fix the date of this work somewhere between the 5th and 8rd

1 The text, with Sankara's commentary, and an English translation, published by E. Réer, Bibl. Ind.

2 Sec P. v. Bradke, Z. D. M. G., vol. xxxvi. A MS. of a portion of the Srauta- sfitra, with the commentary of the famous Mimamsist Kumiarila, has been photo- lithographed by the India Office, under Goldstiicker's supervision.

3 Edited and translated by J. Jolly.

'4 In course of publication, by R. Garbe, in Bibl. Ind.

5 G. Biihler has published the text with extracts from Haradatta's eommentary, also a translation in Sacred Books of the East,

centurics B.c.; but it can hardly yet be considercd as definitcly settled. Considerably more ancient than this work arc the Baudhd- yana-kalpa-sitra,® which consists of the same principal divisions, and the Bhdradvdja-stttra, of which, however, only a few portions have as yet been discovered. The Hiranyakesi-sitra, which is more modern than that of Apastamba, from which it differs but little, is likewise fragmentary ; and several other Kalpa-

sfitras, especially that of Laugakshi, are found quoted. ‚The recognized compendium of the White Yajus ritual is the Srawta-sitra of Katyfyana,’ in twenty-six adhydyas. This work is supplemented by a large number of secondary treatises, likewise attributed to Katydyana, among which may be mentioned the Charana-vytha,® a statistical account of the Vedic schools, which unfortunatcly has come down to us in a very unsatisfactory state of preservation. A manual of domestic rites, closely connected with Katy4yana’s work, is the Kdliya-grihya-sitra,® ascribed to Paraskara. To Katydyaua Ewe further owe the Vdjasancyi-prdtisdkhya,” and a catalogue (anukra- mant) of the White Yajus texts. As regards the former work, it is still doubtful whether (with Weber) we have to consider it as older than Panini, or whether (with Goldstiicker and M. Miiller) we are to identify its author with Panini’s critic. The only cxisting Pratisakhya! of the Black Yajus belongs to the Taittiriyas. Its author is unknown, and it confines itself entirely to the Taittiriya- samhita, to the exclusion of the Brahmana and Aranyaka.

D. Atharva-veda.—The Atharvan was the latest of Vedic col- lections to be recognized as part of the sacred canon. That it is also the youngest Veda is proved by its language, which, both from a lexical and a grammatical point of view, marks an inter- mediate stage between the main body of the Rik and the Brah- mana period. It is not less manifest from the spirit of its contents, which shows that the childlike trust of the early singer in the willingness of the divine agents to comply with the earnest request of their pious worshipper had passcd away, and in its place had sprung up a superstitious fear of a host of malevolent powers, whose baleful wrath had to be deprecated or turned asidc by incantations and magic contrivances. How far some lower form of worship, practised by the conquered race, may have helped to bring about this change of religious belief it would be idle to inquire ; but it is far from improbable that the hymns of the Rik reflect chiefly the religious notions of the more intelligent and educated minority of the community, and that superstitious practices like those disclosed by the greater part of the Atharvan and a portion of the tenth book of the Rik had long obtained among the people, and became the more prevalent the more the spiritual leaders of the people gave themselves up to theosophic and metaphysical specula- tions, Hence also verses of the Atharvaveda are not unfrequently used in domestic (grihya) rites, but very seldom in the

Srauta ceremonial. But, even if these or such like spells and incantations had long been in popular use, there can be no doubt that by the time they were collected they must have adapted themselves to the modifications which the vernacular language itself had under- gone in the mouths of the people.

This body of spells aud hymns is traditionally connected with two old mythic priestly families, the Angiras and Atharvans, their names, in the plural, serving either singly or combined (Atharvangirasas) as the oldest appellation of the collection. Instead of the Atharvans, another mythic family, the Bhrigus, are similarly connected with the Angiras (Bhrigvangirasas) as the depositaries of this mystic science. The current text of the Atharva-samhitd'*—apparently the recension of the Sannaka school —consists of some 750 different pieces, about five-sixths of which is in various metres, the remaining portion being in prose. The whole mass is divided into twenty books. The principle of dis- tribution is for the most part a merely formal one, in books i.—xiii. pieces of the same or about the same number of verses being placed together in the same book. The next five books, xiv.— xviii., have each its own special subject :—xiv. treats of marriage and sexual union; xv., in prose, of the Vratya, or religious vagrant ; xvi. consists of prose formulas of conjuration ; xvii. of a lengthy mystic hymn; and xviii. contains all that relates to death and funeral rites. Of the last two books uo account is taken in the Atharva-pratisikhya, and they indeed stand clearly in the relation of supplements to the original collection. The eighteenth book evidently was the result of a subsequent gleaning of pieces similar and a translation by G. Thibaut, in the Benares Pandit, 1875. The Dharma-sitra has been translated by G. Biihler, Sacred Books, xiv.

7 Edited by A. Weber. 8 Weber, Ind. Stud., iii.

®° Text and German translation by A. Stenzler. :

10 Edited, with Uvata's commentary, and a German translation, by A. Webcr, Ind. Stud., iv.

11 The work has been published by W. D. Whitney, with a translation and a com- mentary by an unknown author, called Tribhashyaratna, 7.e., "' jewel

of the three commentaries," it being founded on three older commentaries by Vararuchi, (?Katyayana), Mahisheya, and Atreya.

12 Edited by Profs. Roth and Whitney, 1856. The second vol., which was to contain the Varize Lectiones, remains still unpublished. Prof. Whitney, how- ever, has lately brought out an Index Verborum to the work. The first three books have been translated into German by Prof. Weber, Ind. Stud., vols. iv., xiii, xvii.

Atharva- veda-

samhita,

Atharva- The only Brahmana of the Atharvan, the Gopatha-bréhmana,? is language over the whole breadth of northern India. Such, veda- probably one of the most modern works of its class. It consists of | however, has been the case in the history of all nations; brah- two parts, the first of which contains cosmogonic speculations, | and there is no reason 'why, even with the existence of mana, interspersed with legends, apparently taken from other Brah- | joa) dialects, the literary language should not have kept manas, and general instructions on religious duties and observ- | . ee 2 1 lan : h b ¥ ances ; while the second part treats, in a very desultory manner, | 12 touc with the ages = India, as elsewhere, ut for the of various points of the sacrificial ceremonial. fact that from a certain time that language remained alto- Atharva- The Kalpa-sfitras belonging to this Veda comprise both a manual | gether stationary, allowing the vernacular dialects more veda- of Srauta rites, the Vaiténa-sdtra,? and a manual of domestic rites, and more to diverge from it. Although lincuistic research sfitras, the Kausika-sitra.+ The latter treatise is not only the more inter- 8 Fall : oe : esting of the two, but also the more ancient, being actually quoted | had been successfully carried on in India for centuries, the in the other. The teacher Kausika is repeatedly referred to in the | actual grammatical fixation of Sanskrit seems to have taken work on points of ceremonial doctrine. Connected with this Sitra place about contemporaneously with the first spread of are upwards of seventy Parisish{as, or supplementary treatises, | Buddhism; and indeed that popular religious movement mostly in metrical form, on various subjects bearing on the per- y : : : Pe formance of grihya rites. The last, sfitra-work to be noticed in undoubtedly exercised a powerful influence on the

linguistic connexion with this Veda is the Saunaktya Chaturddhydyikd,® | development of India. being a Pratisakhya of the Atharva-samhita, so called from its con- oe of we gerees eer Although Saunaka can hardly A. Poetical Literature. e credited with being the actual author of the work, considerin : : : that his opinion is B dudisd in the only rule where his aoe 1, Epie Poems. —The Hindus, like the Greeks, possess two The appears, there is no reason to doubt that it chiefly embodies the | great national epics, the Raémdyana and the Mahdbhdrata. national et ee of Cay a — were afterwards perfected | The Rdmdyana, ee. poem “ relating to Rima,” is ascribed “i y members of his school. ether this Saunaka is identical with Alaaes . i the writer of that name to whom the final redaction of the SAkala- e the poet Valmiki; and, allowance being made for later pratisakhya of the Rik is ascribed is not known ; but it is worthy additions here and there, the poem indeed presents the of note that on at least two points where Sakalya is quoted by | appearance of being the work of an individual genius. In eet a to – referred le seas than | its present form it consists of some 24,000 Slokas, or é€ Klk- pratisakhya, Saunaka is quoted once in the VAjasaneyi- ; : +s . pritigslehya bart oa pomitle ome tyivans Tait the Chater. | 452000 lines of sixteen syllables, divided into seven books. Adhyayika in view, though his reference does not quite tally with (I.) King Dagaratha of Koégala, reigning at Ayodhy4 (Oudh), _ the respective rule of that work. has four sons born him by three wives, viz., Rama, Bharata, and bes Another class of writings already alluded to as traditionally | the twins Lakshmana and Satrughna. RAma, by being able to

to those of the earlier books, which had probably escaped the collectors’ attention; while the last book, consisting almost entirely of hymns to Indra, taken from the Rik-samhita, is nothing more than a liturgical manual of the recitations and chants required at the Soma sacrifice. ;

The Atharvan has come down to us in a much less satisfactory state of preservation than any of the other Samhitas, and its interpretation, which offers considerable difficulties on account of numerous popular and out-of-the-way expressions, has so far received comparatively little aid from native sources. A com- mentary by the famous Vedic exegete Sdyana, which has

lately come to light in India, may, however, be expected to throw light on some obscure passages. Even more important is the discovery, some years ago, through the exertions of Sir William Muir, of an entircly different recension of the Atharva-samhita, preserved in Kashmir. This new recension,! suppesed to be that of the Paippalida school, consists likewise of twenty books (kanda), but both in textual matter and in its arrangement it differs very much from the current text. A considerable portion of the latter, including unfortunately the whole of the eighteenth book, is wanting; while the hymns of the nineteenth book are for the most part found also in this text, though not as a separate book, but scattered over the whole collection. Possibly, therefore, this recension may have formed one of the sources whence the nineteenth book was compiled. The twentieth book is wanting, with the exception of a few of the verses not taken from the Rik. As a set-off to these shortcomings the new version offers, however, a good deal of fresh inatter, amounting to about one-sixth of the whole. From the Mahabhashya and other works quoting as the beginning of the Atharva-samhita a verse that coincides with the first verse of the sixth hymn of the current text, it has long been known that at least one other recension must have existed; but owing to the defective state of the Kashmir MS. it cannot be determined whether the new recension (as seems likely) corresponds to the one referred to in those works.

connected with the Atharvaveda are the numerous Upanishads § which do not specially attach themselves to one or other of the Samhitas or Brahmanas of the other Vedas. The Atharvana- upanishads, mostly composed in glokas, may be roughly divided into two classes, viz., those of a purely speculative or general pantheistic character, treating chiefly of the nature of the supreme spirit, and the means of attaining to union therewith, and those of a sectarian tendency. Of the former category, a limited number —such as the Pragna, Mundaka, and Mandtkya-upanishads—have

1 It is in the hands of Prof. R. v. Roth, who has given an account of it in his academic dissertation, ‘‘ Der Atharvaveda in Kaschmir,’’ 1875. * Edited, in the Bibl. Ind., by Rajendralala Mitra.

2 Text and a German translation published by R. Garbe.

4 This difficult treatise is about to be published by Prof. Bloomfield. Two sections of it have been printed and translated by A. Weber

Omina et Portenta," 1859. ,

5 Edited and translated by W. D. Whitney.

§ For a full list of existing translations of and

essays on the Upani- shads, sce Introd. to Max Miiller's Upanishads, : '

Sacred Books, i.

Kei ?®

probably to be assigned to the later period of Vedic literature ; whilst the others presuppose more or less distinctly the existence of some fully developed system of philosophy, especially the Vedanta or the Yoga. The sectarian Upanishads, on the other hand—identifying the supreme spirit either with one of the forms of Vishnu (such as the Nardyana, Nrisimha-taépantya, Rama- tapantya, Gopala-tapaniya), or with Siva (e.g. the Rudropanishad), or with some other deity—belong to post- Vedic times.

[LITERATURE,

Il. THe Crassicat Periop.

The classical literature of India is almost entirely a pro- duct of artificial growth, in the sense that its vehicle was not the language of the general body of the people, but of a small and educated class. It would scarcely be possible, even approximately, to fix the time wlien tle literary idiom ceased to be understood by the common people. We only know that in the 3d century B.c. there existed several dialects in different parts of northern India which differed considerably from the Sanskrit; and Buddhist tradition, moreover, tells us that Gautama Sakyamuni himself, in the 6th century B.c., made use of the local dialect of Magadha (Behar) for preaching his new doctrine. Not unlikely, indeed, popular dialects, differing perhaps but slightly from one another, may have existed as early as the time of the Vedic

hymns, when the Indo-Aryans, divided into clans and tribes, occupied the Land of the Seven Rivers; but such dialects must, at any rate, have sprung up after the extension of the Aryan sway and

bend an enormous bow, formerly the dreaded weapon of the god Rudra, wins for a wife Sita, danghter of Janaka, king of Vidcha (Tirhut). (II.) On his return to Ayodhya he is to be appointed heir-apparent (yuva-raja, ¢.e., juvenis rex); but Bharata's mother persuades the king to banish his eldest son for fourteen years to the wilderness, and appoint her son instead. Separation from his favourite son soon breaks the king's heart; whereupon the ministers call on Bharata to assume the reins of government. He refuses, however, and, betaking himself to Rama's retreat on the Chitraktita mountain (in Bundelkhund), implores him to return ; but, unable to shake Rama's resolve to complete his term of exile, he consents to take charge of the kingdom in the meantime. (III.) After a ten years' residence in the forest, Rama attracts the attention of a female demon (Rakshasf) ; and, infuriated by the rejection of her advances, and by the wounds inflicted on her by Lakshmana, who kecps Rama company, she inspires her brother Ravana, demon- king of Ceylon, with love for Sita, in consequence of which the latter is carried off by him to his capital Lank&. While she resolutely rejects the Rakshasa's addresses, Rama sets out with his brother to her rescue. (1V.) After numerous adventures they

va NS

enter into an alliance with Sugriva, king of the monkeys; and, with the assistance of the monkey-general Hanuman, and Ravana's own brother Vibhishana, they prepare to assault Lanka. (V.) The monkeys, tearing up rocks and trees, construct a passage across the straits— the so-called Adam's Bridge, still designated RAama's Bridge in India. (VI.) Having crossed over with his allies, Rama, after many hot encounters and miraculous deeds, slays the demon and captures the stronghold ; whereupon he places Vibhishana on the throne of Lanka. To allay Rama's misgivings as to any taint she might have incurred through contact with the demon, Sita now undergoes an ordeal by fire; after which they return to Ayodhya, where, after a triumphal entry, Rama is installed. (VII.) In the last book—probably a later addition—Rama, seeing that the people are not yet satisfied

of Sita’s purity, resolves to put her away ; whereupon, in the forest, she falls in with Valmiki himself, and at his hermitage gives birth to two sons. While growing up there, they are taught by the sage the use of the bow, as well as the Vedas, and the Ramayana as far as the capture of Lanka and the royal entry into Ayodhya. Ultimately Rama discovers and recognizes them by their wonderful deeds and their likeness to himself, and takes his wife and sons back with him.

The Mahdbhdrata, we, “the great (poem or feud) of the Bharatas,” on the other hand, is not so much a uni- form epic poem as a miscellaneous collection of epic poetry, consisting of a heterogeneous mass of legendary and didactic matter, worked into and round a central heroic narrative. The authorship of this work is aptly attributed to Vydsa, “the arranger,” the personification of Indian diaskeuasis. Only the bare outline of the leading story can here be given.

LITERATURE. |

In the royal line of Hastinapura (the ancient Delhi)—claiming descent from the moon, and hence called the Lunar race (somavamésa), and counting among its ancestors King Bharata, after whoni India is called Bharata-varsha (land of the Bharatas)—the succession lay between two brothers, when Dhritarashtra, the elder, being blind, had to make way for his brother Pandu. After a time the latter retired to the forest to pass the remainder of his life in hunting ; and Dhritarashtra assumed the government, assisted by his uncle Bhishma, the Nestor of the poem. After some years Pandu died, leaving five sons, viz., Yudhishthira, Bhima, and Arjuna by his ehief wife Kunti, and the twins Nakula and Sahadeva by Madri. The latter having burnt herself along with her dead husband, Kunti returned with the five princes to Hastinapura, and was well received by the king, who offered to have his nephews brought up together with his own sons, of whom he had a hundred, Duryodhana being the eldest. From their great-grandfather Kuru both families are called Kauravas; but for distinction that name is more usually applied to the sons of Dhritarashtra, while their cousins, as the younger line, are named, after their father, Pandavas. The rivalry and varying fortunes of these two houses form the main plot of the great epopee. The Pandu prinees soon proved themselves greatly superior to their

cousins ; and Yudhishthira, the eldest of them all, was to be appointed heir-apparent. But, by his son's advice, the king, good-natured but weak, induced his nephews for a time to retire from court and reside at a house where the unserupulous Duryodhana meant to destroy them. They escaped, however, and passed some time in the forest with their mother. Here Draupadi, daughter of King Drupada, won by Arjuna in open contest, became the wife of the five brothers. On that occasion they also met their cousin, Kunti's nephew, the famous Yadava prince Krishna of Dvaraka, who ever afterwards remained their faithful friend and confidential adviser. Dhrita- rashtra now resolved to divide the kingdom between the two houses ; whereupon the Pandavas built for themselves the city of Indraprastha (on the site of the modern Delhi). After a time of great prosperity, Yndhishthira, in a game of dice, lost everything to Duryodhana, when it was settled that the Pandavas shonld retire to the forest for twelve years, but should afterwards be restored to their kingdom if they suceeeded in passing an additional year in disguise, without being recognized by anyone. During their forest-life they met with many adventures, among which may be mentioned their encounter with King Jayadratha of Chedi, who had carried off Draupadi from their hermitage. After the twelfth year has expired they leave the forest, and, assuming various disguises, take serviec at the court of king Virata of Matsya. Here all goes well for a time till the queen's brother Kiehaka, a great warrior and commander of the royal forces, falls in love with

1 There are several eomplete editions published in India, the handiest in 4 vols., Calcutta, 1834-9. Numerous episodes from it have been printed and translated by European scholars. There is a Freneh translation, by H. Fauehe, of about one half of the work; but it must be used with caution. An English translation is being brought out at Calcutta by Pratap Chundra Roy.

Draupadi, and is slain by Bhima. The Kauravas, profiting by Kichaka's death, now invade the Matsyan kingdom, when the Pandavas side with king Virata, and there ensues, on the field of Kurukshetra, a series of fierce battles, ending in the annihilation of the Kauravas. Yudhishthira now at last becomes yuva-raja, and eventually king,—Dhritarashtra having resigned

and retired with his wife and Kuntti to the forest, where they soon after perish in a conflagration. Learning also the death of Krishna, Yudhishthira himself at last becomes tired of life and resigns his crown ; and the five princes, with their faithful wife, and a dog that joins them, set out for Mount Meru, to seek admission to Indra's heaven. On the way one by one drops off, till Yudhishthira alone, with the dog, reaches the gate of heaven; but, the dog being refused admittauee, the king declines entering without him, when the dog turns out to be no other than the god of Justice himself, having assumed that form to test Yudhishthira's constancy. But, finding neither his wife nor his brothers in heaven, and being told that they are in the nether world to expiate their sins, the king insists on sharing their fate, when this, too, proves a trial, and they are all reunited to enjoy perpetual bliss.

Whether this story is partly based, as Lassen sug- gested, on historical events,—perhaps a destructive war between the neighbouring tribes of the Kurus and Pan- chalas,—or whether, as Dr A. Holtzmann thinks, its prin- cipal features go back to Indo-Germanic times, will pro- bably never be decided. The complete work consists of upwards of 100,000 couplets,—its contents thus being nearly eight times the bulk of the Ziad and Odyssey com- bined. It is divided into eighteen books, and a supple- ment, entitled Harivamsa, or genealogy of the god Hari (Krishna-Vishnu). In the introduction, Vy4sa, being about to dictate the poem, is made to say (i. 81) that so far he and some of his disciples knew 8800 couplets ; and further on (i. 101) he is said to have composed the collection relating to the Bharatas (bhArata-samhita), and called the Bhdratam, which, not including the episodes, consisted of 24,000 slokas. Now, as a matter of fact, the portion relating to the feud of the rival houses constitutes somewhere between a fourth and a fifth of the work; and it is highly probable that this portion once formed a separate poem, called the Lhdrata. But, whether the former statement is to be understood as implying the existence, at a still earlier time, of a yet shorter version of about one-third of the present extent of the leading narra- tive cannot now be determined. While some of the episodes are so loosely connected with the story as to be readily severed from it, others are so closely interwoven with it that their removal would seriously injure the very texture of the work. This, however, only shows that the original poem must have undergone some kind of revision, or perhaps

repeated revisions. Thatsuch has indeed taken place, at the hand of Brahmans, for sectarian and caste purposes, cannot be doubted.

The earliest direct information regarding the existence of epic poetry in India is contained in a passage of Dion Chrysostom (c. 80 4.D.), according to which “even among the Indians, they say, Homer’s poetry is sung, having been translated by them into their own dialect and tongue ;” and “the Indians are well acquainted with the sufferings of Priam, the lamentations and wails of Andro- mache and Hecuba, and the prowess of Achilles and Hector.” Now, although these allusions would suit either poem, they seem on the whole to correspond best to certain incidents in the Mahdbhédrata, especially as no direct mention is made of a warlike expedition to a remote island for the rescue of an abducted woman, the resem- blance of which to the Trojan expedition would naturally have struck a Greek becoming acquainted with the general outline of the Rdmdyana. Whence Dion derived his information is not known ; but as many leading names of the Mahabharata and even the name of the poem itself 2 are already mentioned in Paénini’s grammatical rules, it is

2 Viz., as an adj., apparently with “war” or “poem” understood.

not ouly certain that the Bharata legend must have been current in his time (?¢. 400 B.c.), but most probable that it existed already in poetical form, as undoubtedly it did at the time of Patanjali, the author of the “great comment- ary” on Panini (c. 150 B.c.). The great epic is also mentioned, both as Bhdrata and Mahdbhdrata, in the Grihya-sitra of A&valayana, whom Lassen supposes to have lived about 350 8.c. Nevertheless it must remain uncertain whether the poem was then already in the form in which we now have it, at least as far as the leading story and perhaps some of the episodes are concerned, a large portion of the episodical matter being clearly of later origin. It cannot, however, be doubted, for many reasons, that long before that time heroic song had been diligently cultivated in India at the courts of princes and among Kshatriyas, the knightly order, generally. In tlie Mahdbhdrata itself the transmission of epic legend is in some way

connected with the Satas, a social class which, in the caste-system, is defined as resulting from the union of Kshatriya men with Braéhmana women, and which supplied the office of charioteers and heralds, as well as (along with the Magadhas) that of professional minstrels. Be this as it may, there is reason to believe that, as Hellas had her dowdoé who sang the xAéa dvdpaév, and Iceland her skalds who recited favourite sagas, so India had from olden times her professional bards, who delighted to sing the praises of kings and inspire the knights with warlike feelings. But if in this way a stock of heroic poetry had gradually accumulated which reflected an earlier state of society and manners, we can well understand why, after the Bréhmanical order of things had been definitely established, the priests should have deemed it desirable to subject these traditional memorials of Kshatriya chivalry and prestige to their own censorship, and adapt them to their own canons of religious and civil law. Such a revision would doubtless require considerable skill and tact; and if in the present version of the work mucli remains that seems contrary to the Brahmanical code and pretensions —e.g., the polyandric union of Draupadi and the Pandu princes—the reason probably is that such legendary, or it may be historical, events were too firmly rooted in the minds of the people to be tampered with ; and all the clerical revisers could do was to explain them away as best they could. Thus the special point alluded to was represented as an act of duty and filial obedience, in this way, that, when Arjuna brings home his fair prize, and announces it to his mother, she, before seeing what it is, bids him share it with his brothers. Nay, it has even been suggested, with some plausibility, that the Brah- manical editors have completely changed the traditional relations of the leading characters of the story. For, although the Pandavas and their cousin Krishna are con- stantly extolled as models of virtue and goodness, while the Kauravas and their friend Karna—a son of the sun-god, born by Kuntt before her marriage with Pandu, and brought up secretly as the son of a Sita—are decried as monsters of depravity, these estimates of the heroes' characters are not unfrequently belied by their actions,—especially the honest Karna and the brave Duryodhana contrasting not unfavourably with the wily Krishna and the cautious and somewhat effeminate Yudlishthira. These considerations, coupled with certain peculiarities on the part of the Kauravas, suggestive of an original con-nexion of the latter with Buddhist institutions, have led Dr Holtzmann to devise an ingenious theory, viz. that the traditional stock of legends was

first worked up into its present shape by some Buddhist poet, and that this version, showing a decided predilection for the Kuru party, as the representatives of Buddhist principles, was after- wards revised in a contrary sense, at the time of the

KEI?

Brahmanical reaction, by votaries of Vishnu, when the Buddhist features were generally modified into Saivite tendencies, and prominence was given to the divine nature of Krishna, as an incarnation of Vishnu. The chief objec- tion to this theory probably is that it would seem to make such portions as the Bhagavad-gitd ("song of the holy one")—the famous theosophic episode, in which Krishna, in lofty and highly poetical language, expounds the doctrine of faith (bhakti) and claims adoration as the incarnation of the supreme spirit—even more modern than many scholars may be inclined to admit as at all necessary, considering that at the time of Patanjali's Mahdbhdshya the Krishna worship, as was shown by Prof. Bhandarkar, had already attained some degree of develop- ment. Of the purely legendary matter incorporated with the leading story not a little, doubtless, is at least as old as the latter itself. Some of these episodes—especially the well-known story of Nala and Damayanti, and the touching legend of Savitri—form themselves little epic gems, of which any nation might be proud. There can be no doubt, however, that this great storehouse of legendary lore has received considerable additions down to comparatively recent times, and that, while its main portion is considerably older, it also contains no small amount of matter which is decidedly more modern than the Raémédyana.

As regards the leading narrative of the Rdmdyana, while it is generally supposed that the chief object which the poet had in view was to depict the spread of Aryan civilization towards the south, Mr T. Wheeler has tried to show that the demons of Lanka against whom Réauia's expedition is directed are intended for the Buddhists of Ceylon. Prof. Weber, moreover, from a comparison of Rama's story with cognate Buddhist legends in which the expedition to Lanka is not even referred to, has endeavoured to prove that this feature, having been added by Valmiki to the original legend, was probably derived by him from some general acquaintance with the Trojan

cycle of legends, the composition of the poem itself being placed by the same scholar somewhere about the beginning of the Christian era. Though, in the absence of positive proof, this theory, however ably supported, can scarcely be assented to, it will hardly be possible to put the date of the work farther back than about a century before our era; while the loose connexion of certain passages in which the divine character of Rama, as an avatar of Vishnu, is especially accentuated, raises a strong sus- picion of this feature of Rama's nature having been intro- duced at a later time.

A remarkable feature of this poem is the great variation of its text in different parts of the country, amounting in fact to several distinct recensions. The so-called Gauda recension, current in Bengal, which differs most of all, has been edited, with an Italian translation, by G. Gorresio ; while the version prevalent in western India, and pub- lished at Bombay, has been made the basis for a beautiful poetical translation by Mr R. Griffith. This diversity has never been explained in a quite satisfactory way; but it was probably due to the very popularity and wide oral diffusion of the poem, Yet another version of the same story, with, however, many important variations of details, forms an episode of the Mahdbhdrata, the relation of which to Valmiki's work is still a matter of uncertainty. To characterize the Indian epics in a single word :— though often disfigured by grotesque fancies and wild exaggerations, they are yet noble works, abounding in passages of remarkable descriptive power, intense pathos, and high poetic grace and beauty; and, while, as works of art, they are far inferior to the Greek epics, in some respects they appeal far more strongly to the romantic

mind of Europe, namely, by their loving appreciation of natural beauty, their exquisite delineation of womanly love and devotion, and their tender sentiment of mercy and forgiveness.

2. Purdnas and Tantras.—The Purdnas are partly legendary partly speculative histories of the universe, compiled for the purpose of promoting some special, locally prevalent form of Brahmanical belief. sometimes

styled a fifth Veda, and may indeed in a certain sense be looked upon as the scriptures of Brah- manical India. The term purdna, signifying “old,” applied originally to prehistoric, especially cosmogonic, legends, and then to collections of ancient traditions generally. The existing works of this class, though recog- nizing the Brahmanical doctrine of the Trimarti, or triple manifestation of the deity (in its creative, preservative, and destructive activity), are all of a sectarian tendency, being intended to establish, on quasi-historic grounds, the claims of some special god, or holy place, on the devotion of the people. have pressed into their service a mass of extraneous didac- tic matter on all manner of subjects, whereby these works have become a kind of popular encyclopedias of useful knowledge. It is evident, however, from a comparatively early definition given of the typical Purana, as well as from numerous coincidences of the existing works, that they are based on, or enlarged from, older works of this kind, more limited in their scope, and probably of a more decidedly tritheistic tendency of belief, Thus none of the

“LITERATURE. |

They are |

For this purpose the compilers |

Puranas, as now extant, is probably much above a

thousand years old, though a considerable proportion of their materials is doubtless much older, and may perhaps in part go back to several centuries before our era.

In legendary matter the Puranas have a good deal in common with the epics, especially the Mahdbhdérata,—the compilers or revisers of both classes of works having evidently drawn their materials from the same fluctuating mass of popular traditions, They are almost entirely composed in epic couplets, and indeed in much the same easy flowing style as the epic poems, to which they are, however, geatly inferior in poetic value.

According to the traditional classification of these works, there are said to be eightcen (mahd-, or great) Purdnas, and as many Upa-purdnas, or

subordinate Puranas. The former are by some authorities divided into three groups of six, according as one or other of the three primary qualities of external existence—goodness, darkness (ignorance), and passion—is supposed to prevail in them, viz., the Vishnu, Néradtya, Bhdgavata, Garuda, Padma, Varéha,— Matsya, Karma, Linga, Siva, Skanda, Agni, — Brahmdénda, Brahma- vawaria, Mérkandeya, Bhavishya, Vamana, and Brahma-Purénas. In accordance with the nature of the several forms of the Trimtirti, the first two groups chiefly devote themselves to the commenda- tion of Vishnu and Siva respectively, whilst the third group, which would properly belong to Brahman, has been largely appro- priated for the promotion of the claims of other deities, viz., Vishnu in his sensuous form of Krishna, Devi, Ganega, and Strya. As Prof. Banerjea has shown in his preface to the Mdr- kandeya, this seems to have been chiefly effected by later additions and interpolations. The insufficiency of the above classification, however, appears from the fact that it omits the Véyu-purdna, probably one of the oldest of all, though some MSS. substitute it for one or other name of the second group. The eighteen principal Puranas are said to consist of together 400,000 couplets. In Northern India the Vaishnava Puranas, especially the Bhdgavata and Vishpu,' are by far the most popular. The Bhagavata was formerly supposed to have been composed by Vopadeva, the grammarian, who lived in the 18th century. It has, however, been shown? that what he wrote was a synopsis of the Purana,

} There are several Indian editions of these two works. The Bhagavata has been partly printed, in an édition de luxe, at Paris, in 3 vols., by E. Burnouf, and a fourth by M. Hlauvette-Besnault. Of the Vishnup. there is a translation by H. H. Wilson, 2d ed. enriched with valuable notes by F. Hall. Several other Puranas have been printed in India; the Markandeya and Agni Puranas, in the Bidl. Ind., by Prof. Banerjea and Rajendralala Mitra respectively.

Rajendralala Mitra, Votices of Sansk. MSS., ii. 47.

K Bit 283

and that the latter is already quoted in a work by Balléla Sena of Bengal, in the 11th century.

From the little we know regarding the Upa-puranas, their char- acter does not seem to differ very much from that of the principal Puranas. One of them, the Brahménda-purdna, contains, as an episode, the well-known Adhydima-Ramdyana, a kind of spiritual- ized version of Valmiki's poem. Besides these two classes of works there is a large number of so-called Sthala-purdnas, or chronicles recounting the history and merits of some holy 'place " or shrine, where their recitation usually forms an important part of the daily service. Of much the same nature are the numerous Méhdimyas (literally '' relating to the great spirit "), which usually profess to be sections of one or othcr Purana. Thus the Devi- mahdtmya, which cclebrates the victories of the great goddess Durga over the Asuras, and is daily read at the temples of that deity, forms a section, though doubtless an interpolated one, of the Markandeya-purana.

The Yantras, which have to be considered as a later Tantras,

development of the sectarian Puranas, are the sacred writings of the numerous Sédtas, or worshippers of the female energy (Sakti) of some god, especially the wife of iva, in one of her many forms (Parvati, Devi, Kali, Bhavani, Durga, &c.). This worship of a female repre- sentation of the divine power appears already in some of the Puranas; but in the Tantras it assumes quite a peculiar character, being largely intermixed with magic perform- ances and mystic rites, partly, it would seem, of a grossly immoral nature. This class of writings does not appear to have been in existence at the time of Amarasimha (6th century); but they are mentioned in some of the Puranas. They are usually in the form of a dialogue between Siva and his wife. Their number is very large; but they still await a critical examination at the hands of western scholars. Among the best known may be mentioned the Rudra yamala, Kuldrnava, Syamd-rahasya, and Kalikd-tantra.

3. Modern Epics.—A new class of epic poems begin to Modern make their appearance about the 5th or 6th century of epics.

our era, during a period of renewed literary activity which has been fitly called? the Renaissance of Indian literature. These works differ widely in character from those that had preceded them. The great national epics, composed though they were in a language different from the ordin- ary

vernaculars, had at least been drawn from the living stream of popular traditions, and were doubtless readily understood and enjoyed by the majority of the people. The later productions, on the other hand, are of a decidedly artificial character, and must necessarily have been beyond

| the reach of any but the highly cultivated. They are, on

the whole, singularly deficient in incident and invention, their subject matter being almost entirely derived from the old epics. Nevertheless, these works are by no means devoid of merit and interest; and a number of them display considerable descriptive power and a wealth of genuine poetic sentiment, though unfortunately often clothed in language that deprives it of half its value. The simple heroic couplet has mostly been discarded for various more or less elaborate metres ; and in accordance with this change of form the diction becomes gradually more complicated,—a growing taste for unwieldy com- pounds, a jingling kind of alliteration, or rather agnomina- tion, and an abuse of similes marking the increasing artificiality of these productions.

The generic appellation of such works is kévya, which, meaning “poem,” or the work of an individual poet (4avi), is already applied to the Rémdyana. Six poems of this kind are singled out by native rhetoricians as standard works, under the title of Mahd- kévya, or great poems. Two of these are ascribed to the famous dramatist Kélidasa, the most prominent figure of the Indian Renaissance, and truly a master of the poetic art. He is said to have been one of the nine literary “ gems” at the court of Vikrama- ditya, now generally identified with King Vikramaditya Harsha of Ujjayini (Ujjain or Oujein), who reigned about the middle of the 6th eentury, and seems to have originated the Vikramaditya cra, reckoned from 56 B.c. Of the poets whose works have come down

3M. Miiller, India: What can it teach us? note G.

to us Kalidasa appcars to be one of the carliest; but there can be little doubt that he was preceded in this as in other departments of poetic composition by many lesser lights, eclipsed by the sun of his fame, and forgotten. Of the

six ‘‘great poems named below the first two are those attributed to Kalidisa. (1) The Raghu- vamésa,! or “race of Raghu,” celebrates the ancestry and decds of Rama. The work, consisting of nineteen cantos, is manifestly incomplete; but hitherto no copy has been discovered of the six additional cantos which are supposed to have completed it. (2) The Kuméra-sambhava? or “the birth of (the war-god) Kumara” (or Skanda), the son of Siva and Parvati, consists of eight cantos, the last of which has only recently becn made public, being usually omitted in the MSS., probably on account of its amorous character rendering it unsuitable for educational purposes, for which the works of KAliddsa are extensively used in India. Nine additional cantos, which were published at the same time, have been proved to be spurious. Another poem of this class, the Nalodaya,® or “vise of Nala,”—describing the restoration of that king, after having lost his kingdom through gambling, —is wrongly ascribed to Kalidasa, being far inferior to the other works, and of a much more artificial character. (3) The Kirdtdrjuniya,*, or combat between the Pandava prince Arjuna and the god Siva, in the guise of a Kirata or wild mountaineer, is a poem in eighteen cantos, by Bharavi, probably a contemporary of Kalidasa, being mentioned, together with him in an inscription dated 634 A.D. (4) The Sisupdla-badha, or slaying of Sisupala, who, being a prince of Chedi, reviled Krishna, who had carried off his intended wife, and was killed by him at the inauguration sacrifice of Yu- dhishthira, is a poem consisting of twenty cantos, attributed to Magha,® whence it is also called Maghakdvya. (5) The Rdvana- badha, or “slaying of Ravana,” more commonly called Bhatti- kdvya, to distinguish it from other poems (especially one by Pravarasena), likewise bearing the former title, was composed for the practical purpose of illustrating the less common gram- matical forms and the figures of rhetoric and poetry. In its closing couplet it professes to have been written at Vallabhi, under Sridharasena, but, several princes of that name being mentioned in inscriptions as having ruled there in the 6th and 7th cen- turies, its exact date is still uncertain. Bhatti, apparently the author’s name, is usually identified with the well-known gram- marian Bhartrihari, whose death Prof. M. Miiller, from a Chinese statement, fixes at 650 A.D., while others make him Bhartrihari’s son. (6) The Naishadhiya, or Naishadha-charita, the life of Nala, king of Nishadha, is ascribed to Sri-Harsha (son of Hira), who is supposed to have lived in the latter part of the 12th century. A small portion of the simple and noble episode of the Mahdbhd- rata is here

retold in highly elaborate and polished stanzas, and with a degree of lasciviousness which (unless it be ehiefly due to the poct's exuberance of fancy) gives a truly appalling picture of social corruption. Another highly esteemed poem, the Aéghava- pandaviya, composed by Kavirdja ("king of poets"),—whose date is uncertain, though some scholars place him later than the 10th century,—is characteristic of the trifling uses to which the poet's art was put. The well-turned stanzas are so ambiguously worded that the poem may be interpreted as relating to the leading story of either the Rémdyana or the Mahdbhdrata.

A still more modern popular development of these artificial poems are 'the numerous so-called Champds, being compositions of mixed verse and prose. As specimens of such works may be men- tioned the Champé-bhdrata in twelve cantos, by Ananta Bhatta, and the Champi-rdmdyana or Bhoja-champa, in five books, by Bhojaraja (or Vidarbharaja) Pandita, being popular abstracts of the two great epics.

Very similar in character to the artificial epics are the panegyrics, composed by court pocts in honour of their patrons. Such pro- ductions were probably very numerous; but only two of any special interest are hitherto known, viz., the Srt-Harsha-charita, composed in ornate prose, by Bana, in honour of Siladitya Harshavardhana (ec. 610-650 a.p.) of Kanyakubja (Kanauj), and the Vikramdnka- charita,® written by the Kashmir poet Bilhana, about 1085, in honour of his patron, the Chalukya king Vikramaditya of Kalyana, regarding the history of whose dynasty the work supplies much valuable information. In this place may also be mentioned, as composed in accordance with the Hindu poetic canon, the Rdja- tarangint,' or chronicle of the kings of Kashmir, the only important

1 Edited, with a Latin transl., by F. Stenzler; also text, and com- mente, by 8. P. Pandit. Text and Latin transl. published by F. Stenzler ; Engli transl, by R. T. H. Guiffith, e me ae 3 Text, with comm, and Latin transl., edited by F. Benary; Engl. ee in verse, by Dr Taylor. ditions of this and the three following e cine ie ollowing poems have been pub 5 sige ae = paper on Kalidasa, calls Magha "a contem- porary of the Bhoja of the 11th century." 6 Hdited by G. Biihl ? Published at Calcutta; also, S never

historical work in the Sanskrit language, though even here con- siderable allowance has to be nade for poetic licence and fancy. The work was composed by the Kashmirian poet Kalhana, about 1150, and was afterwards continued by three successive supple- ments, bringing down the history of Kashmir to the time of the emperor Akbar. Unfortunately the two existing editions were prepared from very imperfect MS. materials; but Dr Bihler's discovery of new MSS., as well as of some of the works on which Kalhana's poem is based, ought to enable the native scholar (Prof. Bhandarkar) who has undertaken a new edition to put the text in a more satisfactory condition.

4, The Drama.—The early history of the Indian drama Drama,

is enveloped in obscurity. The Hindus themselves ascribe the origin of dramatic representation to the sage Bharata, who is fabled to have lived in remote antiquity, and to have received this science directly from the god Brahman, by whom it was extracted from the Veda. The term bharata—(?) 2.e., one who is kept, or one who sustains (a part)—also signifies "an actor"; but it is doubtful which of the two is the earlier,—the appellative use of the word, or the notion of an old teacher of the dramatic art bearing that name. On the other hand, there still exists an extensive work, in epic verse, on rhetoric and dramaturgy, entitled MWdtya-sdstra, and ascribed to Bharata. But, though this is probably the oldest theoretic work on the subject that has come down to us, it can hardly be referred to an earlier period than several centuries after the Chris- tian era. Not improbably, however, this work, which pre- supposes a fully developed scenic art, had an origin similar to that of some of the metrical law-books, which are generally supposed to be popular and improved editions of older sitra-works. We know that such treatises existed at the time of Panini, as he mentions two authors of Vata-sitras, or "rules for actors," viz., Silélin and Kriségva. Now, the words nata and ndtya—as well as ndtaka, the common term for "drama "-——being derived from the root nat (nart) "to dance," seem to point to a pantomimic or choral origin of the dramatic art. It might appear doubtful, therefore, in the absence of any clearer definition in Panini's grammar, whether the " actors' rules" he mentions did not refer to

mere pantomimic performances. Fortun- ately, however, Patanjali, in his “great commentary,” speaks of the actor as singing, and of people going “to hear the actor.” Nay, he even mentions two subjects, taken from the cycle of Vishnu legends—viz., the slaying of Kamsa (by Krishna) and the binding of Bali (by Vishnu)—which were represented on the stage both by mimic action and declamation. Judging from these allu- sions, theatrical entertainments in those days seem to have been very much on a level with our old religious spectacles or mysteries, though there may already have been some simple kinds of secular plays which Patanjali had no occa- sion to mention. It is not, however, till some five or six centuries later that we meet with the first real dramas, which mark at the same time the very culminating point of Indian dramatic composition. In this, as in other depart- ments of literature, the earlier works have had to make way for later and more perfect productions ; and no trace now remains of the intermediate phases of development.

Here, however, the problem presents itself as to whether the existing dramatic literature has naturally grown out of such popular religious performances as are alluded to by Patanjali, or whether some foreign influence has intervened at some time or other and given a different direction to dramatic composition. The question has been argued both for and against the probability of Greek influence ; but it must still be considered as sub judice. There are doubtless some curious points of resemblance between the Indian drama and the Modern Attic (and Roman) comedy, viz., the prologue, the occasional occurrence of a token of recognition, and a certain corre-

with a French transl., by A. Troyer, | spondence of characteristic stage figures (especially the

Viddshaka, or jocose companion of the hero, presenting a certain analogy to the servus of the Roman stage, as does the Vita of some plays to the Roman parasite)—for which the assumption of some acquaintance with the Greek comedy on the part of the earlier Hindu writers would afford a ready explanation. On the other hand, the differences between the Indian and Greek plays are perhaps even greater than their coincidences, which,

moreover, are scarcely close enough to warrant our calling in question the originality of the Hindus in this respect. Certain, however, it is that, if the Indian poets were indebted to Greek playwrights for the first impulse in dramatic composition, in the higher sense, they have known admirably how to adapt the Hellenic muse to the national genius, and have produced a dramatic literature worthy to be ranked side by side with both the classical and our own romantic drama. It is to the latter especially that the general character of the Indian play presents a striking resemblance, much more so than to the classical drama. The Hindu dramatist has little regard for the "'unities " of the classical stage, though he is hardly ever guilty of extravagance in his disregard of them. The dialogue is invariably carried on in prose, plentifully interspersed with those neatly turned lyrical stanzas in which the Indian poet delights to depict some natural scene, or some temporary physical or mental con- dition. The most striking feature of the Hindu play, however, is the mixed nature of its language. While the hero and leading male characters speak Sanskrit, women and inferior male characters use various Prakrit dialects. As regards these dialectic varieties, it can hardly be doubted that at the time when they were first employed in this way they were local vernacular dialects; but in the course of the development of the scenic art they became permanently fixed for special dramatic purposes, just as the Sanskrit had, long before that time, become fixed for general literary purposes. Thus it would happen that these Prakrit dialects, having once become stationary, soon diverged from the spoken vernaculars, until the difference between them was as great as between the Sanskrit and the Prakrits. As regards the general character of the dramatic Prakrits, they are somewhat more removed from the Sanskrit type than the Pali, the language of the Buddhist canon, which again is in a rather more advanced state than the language of the Asoka inscriptions (c. 250 B.c.). And, as the Buddhist sacred books were committed to writing about 80 B.c., the state of their language is attested for that period at latest; while the grammatical fixation of the scenic Prakrits has probably to be referred to the early centuries of our era.

The existing dramatic literature is not very extensive. The uumber of plays of all kinds of any literary value will scarcely amount to fifty. The reason for this paucity of dramatic produc- tions doubtless is that they appealed to the tastes of only a limited class of highly cultivated persons, and were in

consequence but seldom acted. As regards the theatrical entcrtainments of the common people, their standard seems never to have risen much above the level of the religious spectacles mentioned by Patanjali. Such at least is evidently the case as regards the modern Bengali juras—described by Wilson as exhibitions of some incidents in the youthful life of Krishna, maintained in extempore dialogue, interspersed with popular ‘songs—as well as the similar rdsas of the western provinces, and the rough and ready performances of the bhanrs, or professional buffoous. Of the religious drama Sanskrit literature offers but one example, viz., the famous Gitagovinda,! composed by Jayadeva in the 12th century. It is rather a mytho-lyrical poem, which, however, in the opinion of Lassen, may be considered as a modern and refined specimen of the early form of dramatic composition. The subject of the pocm is as follows:—Krishna, while leading a cowherd’s life in Vrin- davana, is in love with Radha, the milkmaid, but has been faith- less to her for a while. Presently, however, he returns to her

1 Ed., with a Latin transl., by C. Lassen; Engl. transl. by E. Arnold.

eeaNs KR T

t

“whose image has all the while lingered in his breast,” and after much earnest entreaty obtains her forgiveness. The emotions appropriate to these situations are expressed by the two lovers anda friend of Radha in melodious and passionate stanzas of great poetic beauty. Like the Song of Solomon, the Gitagovinda, moreover, is supposed by the Hindu commentators to admit of a mystic inter- pretation ; for, ‘‘as Krishna, faithless for a time, discovers the vanity of all other loves, aud returns with sorrow and longing to his own darling Radha, so the human soul, after a brief and frantic attachment to objects of sense, burns to return to the God from whence it came” (Griffith).

The Mrichchhakatikd,? or “earthen toy-cart,” is by tradition placed at the head of the existing dramas; and a certain clumsiness of construction seems

indeed to justify this distinction. Accord- ing to several stanzas in the prologue, the play was composed by a king Sfidraka, who is there stated to have, through Siva's favour, recovered his eyesight, and, after seeing his son as king, to have died at the ripe age of a hundred years and ten days. Accord- ing to the same stanzas, the piece was enacted after the king's death ; but it is probable that they were added for a subsequent performance. In Bana's novel Kddambart (c. 630 A.p.), a king Siidraka, probably the same, is represented as having resided at Bidis& (Bhilsa)—some 130 miles east of Ujjayint (Ujjain), where the scene of the play is laid. Charudatta, a Brahman merchant, reduced to poverty, and Vasantasen4, an accomplished courtezan, meet and fall in love with each other. This forms the main story, which is interwoven with a political underplot, resulting in a change of dynasty. The connexion between the two plots is effected by means of the king's rascally brother-in-law, who pur- sues Vasantasena with his addresses, as well as by the part of the rebellious cowherd Aryaka, who, having escaped from prison, finds shelter in the hero's house. The wicked prince, on being rejected, strangles Vasantasena, and accuses Charudatta of having murdered her; but, just as the latter is about to be executed, his lady love appears again on the scene. Meanwhile Aryaka has succeeded in deposing the king, and, having himself mounted the throne of Ujjain, he raises Vasantasena to the position of an honest woman, to enable her to become the wife of Charudatta. The play is one of the longest, consisting of not less than ten acts, some of which, however, are very short. The interest of the action is, on the whole, well sustained; and, altogether, the piece presents a vivid picture of the social manners of the time.

Sddraka.

In Kalidasa (? c. 550 A.D.) the dramatic art attained its highest KAliddsa,

point of perfection. From this accomplished poet we have three well-constructed plays, abounding in stanzas of exquisite tenderness and fine descriptive passages, viz., the two well-known mytho- pastoral dramas, Sakuntalé in seven and Vikramorvast? in five acts, and a piece of court intrigue, distinctly inferior to the other two, entitled Mélavikdgnimitra,* in five acts. King Agnimitra, who has two wives, falls in love with Malavik4, maid to the first queen. His wives endeavour to frustrate their affection for

each other, but in the end Malavika turns out to be a princess by birth, and is accepted by the queens as their sister.

In the prologue to this play, Kalidasa mentions Bhasa and Saumilla as his predecessors in dramatic composition. Of the former poet some six or seven stanzas have been gathered from anthologies by Prof. Aufrecht, who has also brought to light one fine stanza ascribed to Ramila and Saumila.

Sri Harsha-deva—whom Dr F. Hall has proved to be identical with King Siladitya Harshavardhana of Kanyakubja (Kanauj), who reigned in the first half of the 7th century—has three plays attributed to him. Most likely, however, he did not write any of them himself, but they were only dedicated to him as the patron of their authors. Such at least seems to have been the case as regards the Ratndévali,> which was probably composed by Bana. It is a graceful drama of genteel domestic manners, in four acts, of no very great originality, the author having been largely indebted to Kalidasa's plays. Ratnavali, a Ceylon princess, is sent by her father to the court of King Vatsa to become his second wife. She suffers shipwreck, but is rescued and received into Vatsa's palace as one of queen Vasavadatta's attendants. The king falls in love

2 Edited by F. Stenzler, translated by H. H. Wilson; German by O. Bohtlingk and L. Fritze; French by P. Regnand.

3 Both these plays are known in different, recensions in different parts of India. The Bengali recension of the Sakuntald was translated by Sir W. Jones, and into French, with the text, by Chézy, and again edited critically by R. Pischel, who has also advocated its greater antiquity. Editions and translations of the western (Devanagari) re- cension have been published by O. Bohtlingk and Mon. Williams. The Vikramorvast has been edited critically by 8, P. Pandit, and the southern text by R. Pischel. It has been translated by H. H. Wilson and E. B. Cowell.

4 Edited critically by S. P. Pandit; transl. by C. H. Tawney, and previously into German by A. Weber.

5 Edited by Taéranatha Tarkavdchaspati, and by ©. Cappeller in Bohtlingk's Sanskrit-Chrestomathie ; translated by H. H. Wilson.

Harsha- deva.

Bhava- bhiti.

Bhatta Nara- yana,

with her, and the queen tries to keep them apart from each other ; but, on learning the maiden's origin, she becomes reconciled, and recognizes her as a "sister." According to H. H. Wilson, "the manners depictured are not influenced by lofty principle or pro- found reflexion, but they are mild, affectionate, and elegant. MG may be doubted whether the harams of other eastern nations, either in ancient or moderu times, would afford materials for as favourable a delineation." Very similar in construction, but.distinctly in- ferior, is the Priyadarsikd, in four acts, lately published in India, having for its plot another amour of the same king. The scene of the third play, the Vdagdénanda,! or "joy of the serpents" (in five acts), on the other hand, is laid in semi-divine regions, Jimiitavahana, a prince of the Vidyaddharas, imbued with Buddhist principles, weds Malayavati, daughter of the king of the Siddhas, a votary of Gauri (Siva's wife). But, learning that Garuda, the mythic bird, is in the habit of consuming one snake daily, he resolves to offer himself to the bird as a victim, and finally succeeds in converting Garuda to the principle of ahimsa, or abstention from doing injury to living beings; but he himself is about to succumb from the wounds he has received, when, through the timely intervention of the goddess Gauri, he is restored to his former condition. The piece seems to have been intended as a compromise between Brahmanical (Saiva) and Buddhist doctrines, being thus in keeping with the religious views of king Harsha, who, as we know from Hwen-tsang, favoured Buddhism, but was very tolerant to Brahmans. It begins with a benedictory stanza to Buddha, and concludes with one to Gauri. The author is gene-

rally believed to have been a Buddhist, but it is more likely that |

he was a Saiva Brahman, possibly Bana himself. Nay, one might almost feel inclined to take the hero's self-sacrifice in favour of a Naga as a travesty of Buddhist principles.

Bhavabhfiti, surnamed Sri-kantha, “whose throat is beauty (eloquence),” was a native of Padmapura in the Vidarbha country (the Berars), being the son of the Brahman Nilakantha, and his wife Jatikarni. He is said to have passed his literary life at the court of Yasovarman of Kanauj, who is supposed to have reigned in the latter part of the 7th and beginning of the 8th century. Bhavabhiti was the author of three plays, two of which, the Mahdviracharita? (“life of the great hero”) and the Uttarardma- charita? (“later life of Rama”), in seven acts each, form together a dramatized version of the story of the Rémdyana. The third, the Mdlati-mddhava,* is a domestic drama in ten acts, representing the fortunes of Madhava and MAlati, the son and daughter of two ministers of neighbouring kings, who from childhood have been destined for each other, but, by the resolution of the maiden’s royal master to marry her to an old-and ugly favourite of his, are for a while threatened with permanent separation. The action of the play is full of life, and abounds in stirring, though some- times improbable, incidents. The poet is considered by native pandits to be not only not inferior to Kaliddsa, but even to have surpassed him in his Uttarardmacharita. But, though he ranks deservedly high as a lyric poet, he is far inferior to KAlid4sa as a dramatic artist. Whilst the latter delights in depicting the gentler feelings and tender emotions of the human heart and the peaceful scenes of rural life, the younger poet finds a peculiar attraction in the sterner and more imposing aspects of nature and the human character. Bhavabhiti’s language, though polished and felicitous, is elaborate and artificial compared with that of Kalidasa, and his genius is sorely shackled by a slavish adherence to the arbitrary rules of dramatic theorists.

Bhatta Narayana, surnamed Mrigaraja or Simha, “the lion,” the author of the Ventsamhdra® (“the seizing by the braid of hair”), is a poet of uncertain date.

the five Kanauj Brahmans whom king Adistira of Bengal, desirous |

of establishing the pure Vaishnava doctrine, invited to his court, and from whom the modern Bengali Brahmans are supposed to be descended. The date of that event, however, is itself doubtful; while a modern genealogical work fixes it at 1077, Lassen refers it to the beginning of the 7th century and Grill to the latter part of the 6th. If it could be proved that the poet is

identical with the Narayana whom Bana (c. 630) mentions as being his friend, the question would be settled in favour of the earlier calculations. The play, consisting of six acts, is founded on the story of the Mahdbhd-rata, and takes its title from the insult offered to Draupadi by one of the Kaurava princes, who, when she had been lost at dice by Yudhishthira, dragged her by the hair into the assembly. The piece 1s composed in a style similar to that of Bhavabhiti's plays, though less polished, and inferior to them in dramatic construction and poetic merit. ee

1 Edited by MAdhava Chandra Ghosha, and translated by P. Boyd, with a preface by E. B. Cowell.

? Edited by F. H. Trithen (1848), lated by J. Piekford.

3 Edited at Calcutta; transl. by H. H. Wilson and C. H. Tawney.

= Edited by R. G. Bhandarkar, 1876; translated by H. H. Wilson. > Edited by J. Grill, 1871.

and twice at Calcutta; trans-

Tradition makes him one of |

jeaviete

KERIT

The Hanuman-ndétaka is a dramatized version of the story of Rama, interspersed with numerous purely descriptive poetic pas- sages. It consists of fourteen acts, and on account of its length is also called the Alahd-ndtaka, or great drama. Tradition relates that it was composed by Hanuman, the monkey general, and inscribed on rocks; but, Valmiki, the author of the Rémdyana, being afraid lest it might throw his own poem into the shade, Hanuman allowed him to cast his verses into the sea. Thence fragments were ultimately picked up by a merchant, and brought

[LITERATURE,

| to King Bhoja, who directed the poet Damodara Misra to put them

together, and fill up the lacune ; whence the present composition originated. Whatever particle of truth there may be in this story, the “great drama” seems certainly to be the production of different hands. “The language,” as Wilson remarks, “is in general very harmonious, but the work is after all a most disjointed and non- descript composition, and the patchwork is very glaringly and clumsily put together.” It is nevertheless a work of some interest, as compositions of mixed dramatic and declamatory passages of this kind may have been common in the early stages of the dramatic The connexion of the poet with King Bhoja, also confirmed

| by the Bhoja-prabandha, would bring the composition, or final redac-

| tion, down to about the 10th or 11th century.

There are, however,

_ two different recensions of the work, a shorter one commented upon

by Mohanadasa, and a longer one arranged by Madhustfidana. A Damodara Gupta is mentioned as having lived under JayApida of Kashmir (755-86); but this can scarcely be the same author.

The JIfudradrdkshasa,® or " Rakshasa (the minister) with the signet," is a drama of political intrigue, in seven acts, partly based on historical events, the plot turning on the reconciliation of Rakshasa, the minister of the murdered king Nanda, with the hostile party, consisting of prince Chandragupta (the Greek Sandrocotius, 315-291 B.c.), who succeeded Nanda, and his minister Chanakya. The plot is developed with considerable dramatic skill, in vigorous, if not particularly elegant, language. The play was composed by Visikhadatta, prior, at any rate, to the 11th century, but perhaps as early as the 7th or 8th century, as Buddhism is referred to in it in rather complimentary terms.

The Prabodha-chandrodaya,' or "the moon-rise of intelligence," composed by Krishnamisra about the 12th century, is an allegorical, play, in six acts, the dramatis persone of which consist entirely of abstract ideas, divided into two conflicting hosts.

Of numerous inferior dramatic compositions we may mention as the best—the Anarghya-rdghava, by Murari; the Béla-rémdyana, one of six plays (three of which are known) by Rajagekhara; and the Prasanna-rdghava, by Jayadeva, the author of the rhetorical treatise Chandrdéloka, Abstracts of a number of other pieces are given in H. H. Wilson's Hindu Theatre, the standard work on this subject. The dramatic genius of the Hindus may be said to have exhausted itself about the 14th century.

5. Lyrical, Descriptive, and Didactic Poetry.—We have Lyric already alluded to the marked predilection of the mediaeval Poet'y-

Indian poet for depicting in a single stanza some peculiar physical or mental situation. The profane lyrical poetry consists chiefly of such little poetic pictures, which form a prominent feature of dramatic compositions.

Numerous poets and poetesses are only known to us through such de- tached stanzas, preserved in native anthologies or manuals of rhetoric, Thus the Saduktikarndmrita,' or " ear- ambrosia of good sayings," an anthology compiled by Sridhara Dasa in 1205, contains verses by four hundred and forty-six different writers; while the Sérngadhara- paddhati, another anthology, of the 14th century, contains some 6000 verses culled from two hundred and sixty-four different writers and works. These verses are either of a purely descriptive or of an erotic character; or they have a didactic tendency, being intended to convey, in an attractive and easily remembered form, some moral truth or useful counsel. An excellent specimen of a longer poem, of a partly descriptive partly erotic character, is Kalidasa's Megha-dita,® or "cloud messenger," in which a banished Yaksha (demi-god) sends a love-message across India to his wife in the Himalaya, and describes, in verse-pictures, the various places and objects over which the messenger, a

6 Edited (Bombay, 1884) by K. T. Telang, who discusses the date of the work in his preface. .

? Translated by J. Taylor, 1810; by T. Goldstiicker into German, 1842. Edited by H. Brockhaus, 1845.

8 Rajendralala Mitra, Notices, iii. p. 184.

° Text and transl., by H. H. Wilson; with vocabulary by &. Johnson.

PANS

cloud, will have to sail in his airy voyage. This little masterpiece has called forth a number of more or less suc- cessful imitations, such as Lakshmid4sa's Suka-sandega, or '*parrot-message," lately edited by the maharaja of Travan- core. Another much admired descriptive poem by Kalidasa is the Mitu-samhdra,! or "collection of the seasons," in which the attractive features of the six seasons are suc- cessively set forth.

As regards religious lyrics, the fruit of sectarian fervour, a large collection of hymns and detached stanzas, extolling some special deity, might be made from Puranas and other works. Of independent productions of this kind

only a few of the more important can be mentioned here. Sankardcharya, the great VedAntist, who probably lived in the 7th century, is credited with several devo- tional poems, especially the Ananda-lahari, or “ wave of joy,” a hymn of 103 stanzas, in praise of the goddess Par- vati. The Strya-sataka, or century of stanzas in praise of Sarya, the sun, is ascribed to Maydra, the contemporary (and, according to a tradition, the father-in-law) of Bana (in the early part of the 7th century). The latter poet himself composed the Chandikdstotra, a hymn of 102 stanzas, extolling Siva’s consort. The Khandapragasti, a poem celebrating the ten avatdras of Vishnu, is ascribed to no other than Hanumf&n, the monkey general, himself. Jayadeva’s beautiful poem Gitagovinda, which, like most productions concerning Krishna, is of a very sensuous character, has already been referred to.

The particular branch of didactic poetry in which India is especially rich is that of moral maxims, expressed in single stanzas or couplets, and forming the chief vehicle of the Niti-sdstra or ethic science. Excellent collections of such aphorisms have been published,—in Sanskrit and German by Dr v. Boéhtlingk, and in English by Dr J. Muir. Probably the oldest original collection of this kind is that ascribed to Chanakya,—and entitled Rdjanitisa- muchchaya, “collection on the conduct of kings ”—tradi- tionally connected with the Machiavellian minister of Chandragupta, but (in its present form) doubtless much later—of which there are several recensions, especially a shorter one of one hundred couplets, and a larger one of some three hundred. Another old collection is the Kadmandakiya-Nitisdra,? ascribed to Kamandaki, who is said to have been the disciple of Chanakya. Under the name of Bhartrihari have been handed down three centuries of sententious couplets, one of which, the niti-sataka, relates to ethics, whilst the other two, the sringéra- and vairdgya-satakas, consist of amatory and devotional verses respectively. The WViti-pradipa, or “lamp of conduct,” consisting of sixteen stanzas, is ascribed to Vetdlabhatta who is mentioned as one of nine gems at Vikramaditya’s court (c. 550 a.p.). The Amard-sataka, consisting of a hundred stanzas, ascribed to a King Amaru (sometimes wrongly to Sankara), and the Chaura-suratapanchdsikd, by Bilhana (11th century), are of an entirely erotic character.

6. Fables and Narratives.—For purposes of popular in- struction stanzas of an ethical import were early worked up with existing prose fables and

popular stories, pro- bably in imitation of the Buddhist jdtakas, or birth-stories. A collection of this kind, intended as a manual for the guidance of princes (in usum delphint), was trans- lated into Pahlavi in the reign of the Persian king Chosru Nushirvan, 5381-579 a.p.; but neither this translation nor the original is any longer extant. A Syriac transla- tion, however, made from the Pahlavi in the same century, under the title of “Qualilag and Dimnag”—from the

1 The first Sanskrit book published (by Sir W. Joncs), 1792. Text and Latin transl. by P. v. Bohlen. Partly transl., in verse, by R, T. H. Griffith, Specimens of Old Indian Poetry.

2 Idited by Rajendralila Mitra, Bibl. Ind.

Sanskrit ‘‘Karataka and Damanaka,” two jackals who play an important part as the lion’s counsellors—has been discovered and published. The Sanskrit original, which probably consisted of fourteen chapters, was after- wards recast,—the result being the existing Panchatantra,? or “five books” (or headings). A popular summary of this work, in four books, the Hitopadega,* or “ Salutary counsel,” is ascribed to the Brdhman Vishnusarman. Other highly popular collections of stories and fairy tales, interspersed with moral maxims, are—the Vetdla-pan- chavimsati or ‘ twenty-five (stories) of the Vetala” (the original of the Baital Pachisi), ascribed either to Jambhala Datta, or to Sivadésa (while Prof. Weber suggests that Vetala-bhatta may have been the author), and at all events older than the 12th century, since Somadeva has used it ; the Suka-saptati, or “seventy (stories related) by the parrot,” the author and age of which are unknown; and the Simhdsana-dvdtrimsikd, or “thirty-two (tales) of the throne,” being laudatory stories regarding VikramAditya, related by thirty-two statues, standing round the old throne of that famous monarch, to King Bhoja of Dhara to dis- courage him from sitting down onit. This work is ascribed to Kshemankara, and was probably composed in the time of Bhoja (who died in 1053) from older stories in the Maharashtra dialect. The original text has, however, undergone many modifications, and is now

known in several different recensions. Of about the same date are two great storehouses of fairy tales, composed entirely in lokas, viz., the Vrihat-kathé, or ‘‘ great story,” by Kshemendra, also called Kshemankara, who wrote c. 1020-40, under King Ananta, and the Kathd-sarit-sdgara,® or ‘‘the ocean of the streams of story,” composed by Somadeva, in the beginning of the 12th century, to console the mother of King Harshadeva on her son’s death. Both these works are based on a work in the Paisdchi dialect, of the 6th century, viz., Gunddhya’s Vrihat-kathd.

In higher class prose works of fiction the Sanskrit literature is extremely poor; and the few productions of this kind of which it can boast are of a highly artificial and pedantic character. These include the Dasakumdra-charita,® or ‘‘ the adventures of the ten princes,” composed by Dandin, about the 6th century, and the Vdsavadatta,’ by Subandhu, the contemporary of the poet Bana (c. 620), who himself wrote the first part of a novel, the Kédambari,§ afterwards completed by his son.

B. Screnriric LITERATURE.

J. Law (Dharma).—Among the technical treatises of the later Law.

Vedic period, certain portions of the Kalpa-sitras, or manuals of ceremonial, peculiar to particular schools, were referred to as the earliest attempts at a systematic treatment of law subjects. These are the Dharma-sitras, or ‘‘rules of (religious) law,” also called Sdmaydchérika-sitras, or ‘‘rules of conventional usage (samaya- Achara).” It is doubtful whether such treatises were at any time quite as numerous as the Grihyasitras, or rules of domestic or family rites, to which they are closely allied, and of which indeed they may originally have been an outgrowth. That the number of those actually extant is comparatively small is, however, chiefly due to the fact that this class of works was supplanted by another of a more popular kind, which covered the same ground. The Dharmasitras consist chiefly of strings of terse rules, containing the essentials of the science, and intended to be committed to memory, and to be expounded orally by the teacher—thus forming, as it were, epitomes of class lectures. These rules are interspersed with couplets or ‘‘githas,” in various metres, either composed by the author himself or quoted from elsewhere, which generally give the substance of

the preceding rules. One can well understand why such couplets should gradually have become more popular, and

3 Edited by Kosegarten, G. Biihler, and F. Kielhorn; transl. by Th. Benfey, E. Lancereau, L. Fritze.

4 Edited and transl. by F. Johnson.

5 Edited by H. Brockhaus; transl. by C. H. Tawney.

6 Edited by H. H. Wilson ; freely translated by P. W. Jacob.

7 Edited by F. Hall, Bibl. Ind.

8 Edited by Madana Mohana Sarman, and by P. Peterson.

should ultimately have led to the appearance of works entirely composed in verse. Such metrical law-books did spring up in large numbers, not all at once, but over a long period of time, extending probably from about the beginning of our era, or even earlier, down to well-nigh the Mohammedan conquest ; and, as at the timc of their first appearance the epic impulse was particularly strong, other metres were entirely discarded for the epic Ssloka. These works are the metrical Dharma-Sdstras, or, as they are usually called, the Smriti, ‘‘recollection, tradition,” —a term which, as we have seen, belonged to the whole body of Sitras (as opposed to the Srwéz, or revelation), but which has become the almost exclusive title of the versified institutes of law (and the few Dharmasitras still extant). Of metrical Smritis about forty are hitherto known to exist, but their total number probably amounted to at least double that figure, though some of these, it is true, are but short and insignificant tracts, while others are ouly different recensions of one and the same work,

With the exception of a few of these works—such as the Agni-, Yama-, and Vishnu-Smritis—which are ascribed to the respective gods, the authorship

of the Smritis is attributed to old rishis, such as Atri, Kanva, Vydsa, Sandilya, Bharadvaja. It is, how- ever, extremely doubtful whether in most cases this attribution is not altogether fanciful, or whether, asa rule, there really existed a traditional connexion between these works and their alleged authors or schools named after them. The idea, which early sug- gested itself to Sanskrit scholars, that Smritis which passed by the names of old Vedic teachers and their schools might simply be metrical recasts of the Dharma- (or Grihya-) sfitras of these schools, was a very natural one, and, indeed, is still a very probable one, though the loss of the original Stitras, and the modifications and additions which the Smritis doubtless underwent in eourse of time, make it very difficult to prove this point. One could, how- ever, scarcely account for the disappearance of the Dharmasitras of some of the most important schools except on the ground that they were given up in favour of other works; and is it likely that this should have been done, unless there was some guarantee that the new works, upon the whole, embodied the doctrines of the old authorities of the respective schools? Thus, as regards the most important of the Smritis, the Mdnava-DharmaSsastra,' there exist both a Srauta- and a Grihya-sfitra of the Manava school of the Black Yajus, but no such Dharmasiitra has hitherto been discovered, though the former existence of such a work has been made all but certain by Prof. Biihler's discovery of quotations from a Manavam, consisting partly of prose rules, and partly of couplets, some of which occur literally in the Manusmriti, whilst others have been slightly altered there to suit later doctrines, or have been changed from the original trishtubh into the epic metre. The idea of an old law-giver Manu Sv4yambhuva,—" sprung from the self-exist- ent (svayam-bhil)" god Brahman,—reaches far back into Vedic antiquity: he is mentioned as such in early texts; and in Yaska's Nirukta a $loka occurs giving his opinion on a point of inheritance. But whether or not the Manava-Dharmasiitra embodied what were supposed to be the authoritative precepts of this sage on questions of sacred law we do not know; nor can it as yet be shown that the Manusmriti, which seems itself to have undergone considerable modifications, is the lineal descendant of that Dharmasttra. It is, however, worthy of note that a very close connexion exists between the Manusmriti and the Vishnusdstra; and, as the latter is most likely a modern, only partially remodelled, edition of the Sfitras of the Black Yajus school of the Kathas, the close relation between the two works would be easily understood, if it could be shown

that the Manusmriti is a modern development of the Sfitras of another school of the Charaka division of the Black Yajurveda.

The Manava Dharmagastra consists of twelve books, the first and last of which, treating of creation, transmigration, and final beatitude, are, however, generally regarded as later additions. In them the legendary sage Bhrigu, here called a MAanava, is intro- duced as Manu's disciple, through whom the great teacher has his work promulgated. Why this intermediate agent should have been considered necessary is by no means clear. Except in these two books the work shows uo special relation to Manu, for, though he is occasionally referred to in it, the same ig done in other Smritis. The question as to the probable date of the final redaction of the work cannot as yet be answered. Dr Burnell has tried to show that it was probably composed under the Chalukya king Pulakesi, about 500 a.p., but his argumentation is anything but convincing, From several glokas quoted from Manu by Varahamihira, in the 6th century, it would appear that the text which the great astronomer had before him differed very considerably from our Manusmriti. It is, however, possible that he referred eithor to the Brihat-Manu (Great M.) or the Vriddha-

SSeS

1 The standard edition is by G. C. Haughton, with Sir W. Jones's translation, 1825; the latest translations by A. Bumell and G. Biihler. There is also a critical essay on the work by F. Johantgen. On the relation between the

Dharmasiitras and Smritis see especially West iihler, Di i 8d ed., i. p. 87 39. Pp y West and Biihler, Digest ef Mindu Law,

K RIF

Manu (Old M.), who are often found quoted, and apparently represent one, if not two, larger recensions of the Smriti. The oldest existing commentary on the Mdnava-Dharmasistra is by Medhatithi, who is first quoted in 1200, and is usually supposed to have lived in the 9th or 10th century. He had, however, several predecessors to whom he refers as pérve, "the former ones."

Next in importance among Smritis ranks the Ydjravalkya Yajita-Dharmaséstra.* Its origin and date are not less uncertain,—except valkya,

that, in the opinion of Prof. Stenzler, which has never been ques- tioned, it is based on the Manusmriti, and represcuts a more advanced stage of legal theory and definition than that work. Yajiavalkya, as we have seen, is looked upon as the founder of the Vajasaneyins or White Yajus, and the author of the Satapatha- brahmana. In the latter work he is represented as having passed some time at the court of King Janaka of Videha (Tirhut); and in accordance therewith he is stated, in the introductory couplets of the Dharmasastra, to have propounded his legal doctrines to the sages, while staying at Mithila (the capital of Videha). Hence, if the con- nexion between the metrical Smritis and the old Vedic schools be areal one and not one of name merely, we should expect to find in the Ya- jfiavalkya-smriti special coincidences of doctrine with the Katiya- sitra, the principal Siitra of the Vajasaneyins. Now, somesufficiently striking coincidences between this Simriti and Paraskara's Kédtiya- Grihyasttra have indeed been pointed out; and if there ever existed a Dharmasfitra belonging to the same school, of which no trace has hitherto been found, the points of agreement between this and the Dharmagastra might be expected to be even more numerous. As in the case of Manu, glokas are quoted in various works from a Brihat- and a Vriddha-Ydéjiavalkya. The YAajtavalkya-smriti consists of three books, corresponding to the three great divisions of the Indian theory of law :—échéra, rule of conduct (social and caste duties); vyavahdra, civil and criminal law; and prdyaschitta, penance or expiation. There are two important commentaries ou the work :—the famous Mitdékshard,? by Vijhanesvara, who lived under the Chalukya king Vikramaditya of Kalyana (1076-1127); and another by Apararka or Aparaditya, a petty Silara prince of the latter half of the 12th century.

The Pardsara-smriti eontains no ehapter on jurisprudence, but Pardsara.

treats only of religious duties and expiations in 12 adhyayas. The deficiency was, however, supplied by the famous exegete Madhava (in the latter half of the 14th century), who made use of Paragara's text for the compilation of a large digest of religious law, usually called Pardsara-mddhaviyam, to

which he added a third chapter on vyavahara,4 or law proper. Besides the ordinary text of the Parasara-smriti, consisting of rather less than 600 couplets, there is also extant a Brihat-Pardsarasmriti, probably an amplification of the former, containing not less than 2980 (according to others even 3300) glokas, The Néradiya-Dharmaséstra, or Néradasmriti, is a work of a more practical kind; indeed, it is probably the most systematic and business-like of all the Smritis. It does not con- cern itself with religious and moral precepts, but is strictly con- fined to law. Of this work again there are at least two diiferent recensions. Besides the text translated by Dr Jolly, a portion of a larger recension has come to light in India. This version has been commented upon by Asahaya, “the peerless”—a very esteemed writer on law who is supposed to have lived before Me- dhatithi (? 9th century)—and it may therefore be considered as the older recension of the two. But, as it has been found to contain the word dindra, an adaptation of the Roman denarius, it cannot, at any rate, be older than the 2d century; indeed, its date is prob- ably several centuries later.

Whether any of the Dharmasgastras were ever used in India as actual “codes of law” for the practical administration of justice is very doubtful ; indeed, so far as the most prominent works of this class are concerned, it is highly improbable. No doubt these works were held to be of the highest authority as laying down the principles of religious aud civil duty; but it was not so much any single text as the whole body of the Smriti that was looked upon as the embodiment of the divine law. Hence, the moment the actual work of codification begins in the 11th cen- tury, we find the jurists engaged in practically showing how the Smritis confirm and supplement each other, and in reconciling seenling contradictions between them. This new phase of Indian jurisprudence commences with Vijfianegvara’s Mitdkshard, which, though primarily a commentary on Y4jfiavalkya, is so rich in original matter and illustrations from other Smritis that it is far more adapted to serve as a code of law than the work it professes to explain. This treatise is held in high esteem all over India, with the exception of the Bengal or Gaudiya school of law, which recognizes as its chief authority the digest of its founder, Jimfita- vahana, especially the chapter on succession, entitled Déyabhdga.®

2 Edited, with a German transl., by F. Stenzler.

3 Transl. by H. T. Colebrooke.

4 The seetion of this chapter on inheritance (dfya-vibhfga) has been translated by A. C. Burnell, 1868.

® See West and Biihler, Digest, i.p.55. A different view is expressed by A. Burnell, Déyavibhdga, p. xiii. 6 Transl. by H. C. Colebrooke, 1810.

LITERATURE. |

Based on the Mitékshara are the Snvritt-chandrikd,! a work of great common-sense, written by Devanda Bhatta, in the 13th cen- tury, and highly esteemed in Southern India; and the Véra- mitrodaya, a compilation eonsisting of two chapters, on Achdra and vyavahara, made in the first half of the 17th century by Mitramisra, for R&ja Virasimha, or Birsinh Deo of Orchha, who murdered Abul Fazl, the minister of the emperor Akbar, and author of the Ain2 Akbari. There is no need here to enumerate any more of the vast number of treatises on special points of law, of greater or less merit, the more important of which will be found mentioned in English digests of Hindu law.

IJ, PurtosopHy.—The Indian mind shows at all times a strong disposition for metaphysical speculation. In the old religious lyrics this may be detected from the very first. Not to speak of the abstract nature of some even of the oldest Vedic deities, this propensity betrays itself in a certain mystic symbolism, tending to refine and spiritualize the original purely physical character and activity of some of the more prominent gods, and to impart a deep and subtle import to the rites of the sacrifice. The primitive worship of more or less isolated elementary forces and phenomena had evidently ceased to satisfy the religious wants of the more thoughtful minds. Various syncretist tendeneies show the drift of religious thought to be towards some kind of unity of the divine powers, be it in the direction of the pantheistic idea, or in that of an organized polytheism, or even towards monothcism. In the latter age of the hymns the pantheistic idea is rapidly gaining ground, and finds vent in various cosmogonic speculations ; and in the Brahmana period we see it fully developed. The fundamental conception of this doctrine finds its expression in the two synonymous terms brahman (neutr.),

originally “power of growth,” then “devotional impulse, prayer,” and diman (masc.), “breath, self, soul.”

The recognition of the essential sameness of the individual souls, emanating all alike (whether really or imaginarily) from the ultimate spiritual essence (parama-brahman) “as sparks issue from the fire,” and destined to return thither, involved some important problems. Considering the infinite diversity of individual souls of the animal and vegetable world, exhibiting various degrees of perfection, is it conceivable that each of them is the immediate efflux of the Supreme Being, the All-perfect, and that each, from the lowest to the highest, could re-unite therewith directly at the close of its mundane existence? The difficulty implied in the latter question was at first met by the assumption of an iuter- mediate state of expiation and purification, a kind of purgatory ; but the whole problem found at last a more comprehensive solu- tion in the doctrine of transmigration (samsdra). Some scholars have suggested ? that mctempsychosis may have been the prevalent belief among the aboriginal tribes of India, and may have been taken over from them by the Indo-Aryans. This no doubt is quite possible; but even in that case we can only assume that speculative minds seized upon it as offering the most satisfactory Gf not the only possible) explanation of the great problem of phenomenal existence. It is certainly a significant fact that, once established in Indian thought, the doctrine of metempsychosis is never again called in question, —that, like the fundamental idea on which it rests, viz., the essential sameness of the immaterial element of all sentient beings, the notion of samsdra has become an axiom, a universally conceded principle of Indian philosophy. Thus the latter has never quite risen to the heights of pure thought ; its object is indeed jadsd, the search for knowledge ; but it is an inquiry (mimdmsd@) into the nature of things undertaken not solely for the attainment of the truth, but with a view to a specific object,—the discontinuance of samsira, the cessation of mundane existence after the present life. Every sentient being, through ignorance, being liable to sin, and destined after each ex- istence to be born again in some new form, dependent on the actions committed during the immediately preceding life, all mundane existence thus is the source of ever-renewed suffering; and the task of the philosopher is to discover the means of attaining moksha, ‘‘release” from the bondage of material existence, and yoga, “union” with the Supreme Self,—in fact,

salvation. It is with a view to this, and this only, that the Indian metaphysician takes up the great problems of life,—the origin of man and the universe, and the relation between mind and matter.

It is not likely that these speculations were viewed with much favour by the great body of Brahmans engaged in ritualistic practices. Not that the metaphysicians actually discountenanced the ceremonial worship of the old mythological gods as vain and nugatory. On the contrary, they expressly admitted the propriety of sacrifices, and commended them as the most meritorious of human acts, by whieh man could raise himself to the highest degrees of mundane existence, to the worlds of the Fathers and the Devas. Nevertheless, the facet that these were only higher grades from which the individual self would still be liable to relapse into the vortex of material existence,—that the final goal

1 The section on inheritance has been transl. by T. Kristnasawmy Iyer, 1866. 2 See, eg., A. E. Gough, The Philosophy of the Upanishads, p. 24.

lay beyond even those worlds, unattainable through aught but a perfect knowledge of the soul's nature and its identity with the Supreme Self,—this faet of itself was sufficient to depreciate the merit of the sacrificial cult, and to undermine the authority of the saered rituals, ‘‘Know ye that Self,” exhorts one of those old idealists,? “and have done with other words ; for that (knowledge) is the bridge to immortality!” Intense self-contemplation being, morcover, the only way of attaining the all-important knowledge, this doctrine left little or no room for those mediatorial offices of the priest, so indispensable in ceremonial worship ; and indeed we actually read of Brahman sages resorting to Kshatriya princes to hear them expound this, the true doctrine of salvation. But, in spite of their anti-hierarchical tendency, these speculations con- tinued to gain ground; and in the end the body of treatises pro- pounding the pantheistic doctrine, the Upanishads, were admitted into the sacred canon, as appendages to the ceremonial writings, the Brahmanas. The Upanishads thus form literally ‘‘the end of the Veda,” the Vedanta; but their adherents claim this title for their doctrines in

a metaphorical rather than in a material sense, as “the ultimate aim and consummation of the Veda.” In later times the radical distinction between these speculative appendages and the bulk of the Vedic writings was strongly accent- uated ina new classification of the sacred scriptures. According to this scheme they were supposed to consist of two great divisions, —the Karma-kdnda, i.e., ‘the work-section,” or practical ecere- monial (exoteric) part, consisting of the Samhitas and Bréahmanas (including the ritual portions of the Aranyakas), and the Jidna- kdnda, ‘‘the knowledge-section,” or speculative (esoteric). part. These two divisions are also called respectively the Pérva- (‘‘former’’) and Uttara- (‘‘latter,” or higher+) kdnda; and when the speculative tenets of the Upanishads came to be formulated into a regular system it was deemed desirable that there should also be a special system corresponding to the older and larger portion of the Vedic writings. Thus arose the two systems—the Pirva- (or Karma-) mimémsd, or ‘former (practical) speculation,” and the Uitara- (or Brahma-) mimdmséd, usually called the Vedanta philo- sophy.

It is not yet possible to determine, even approximately, the Philo- time when the so-called Darsanas (literally ‘‘demonstrations”), sophical And, though system.

or systems of philosophy, were first formulated. they have certainly developed from the tenets enunciated in the Upanishads, there is considerable doubt as to the exact order in which these systems succeeded each other. The authoritative exposés of the systems have apparently passed through several redactions ; and, in their present form, these sfitra-works® evi- dently belong to a comparatively recent period, being probably not older than the early centuries of our era. Dy far the ablest general review of the philosophical systems (except the Vedanta) produeed by a native scholar is the Sarva-darsana-sangraha® (‘‘ summary of all the Darganas”), composed in the 14th century, from a Vedantist point of view, by the great exegete Madhava Aeharya.

Among the different systems, six are generally recognized as orthodox, as being (either wholly or for the most part) consistent with the Vedic religion, —two and two of which are again more closely related to each other than to thie rest, viz. :—

(1) Pérva-mimémsd (IMlimdmsd), and (2) Uttara-mimdmsd

(Vedanta) ; (8) Saénkhya, and (4) Yoga ; (5) Nydya, and (6) Vatseshika.

(1) The (Parva-) Mimdmsd is not a system of philosophy in the Mi- proper sense of the word, but rather a system of dogmatic criticism m4msa.

and scriptural interpretation. It maintains the eternal existenee of the Veda, the different parts of which are minutely classified. Its principal object, however, is to ascertain the religious (chiefly ceremonial) duties enjoined in the Veda, and to show how these duties must be performed, and what arc the special merits and rewards attached to them. Hence arises the necessity of determin- ing the principles for rightly interpreting the Vedic texts, as also of what forms its only claim to being classed among speculative systems, viz., a philosophical examination of the means of, and the proper method for arriving at, accurate knowledge. The founda- tion of this school, as well as the composition of the Stitras or aphorisms which constitute its chief doctrinal authority, is ascribed to Jaimini. The Stitras were commented on by Sabara Svamin ; and further annotations (vérttika) thereon were supplied by the great theologian Kumarila Bhatta, who is supposed to have lived in the (6th or) 7th century, and to have worked hard for the re- establishment of Brahmanism. According to a popular tradition his self-immolation was witnessed by Sankaraicharya. The most

3 Mundaka-upanishad, ii. 2, 5.

4 Cf. Mundaka-upanishad, i. 4, 5, where these two divisions are ealled ‘‘the lower (apara) and the higher (para) knowledge.”

5 These works have all been printed with commentaries in India; and they have been partly translated by J. Ballantyne, and by K. M. Banerjea. The best general view of the systems is to be obtained from H. C. Colebrooke’s account, Misc. Essays, i., 2d ed., with Prof. Cowell’s notes. Compare alsothe brief abstract given in Goldstiieker’s Literary Remains, vol.i. A very useful classified index

of philosophical works was published by F. Hall, 1859. 6 Edited in the Bibl. Ind.; translated by E. B. Cowell and A. E. Gough, 1882.

approved general introduction to the study of the Mimamsé is the inetrical Jaimintya-Nydya-malé-vistara,* with a prose commentary, both by Madhava Acharya. This distinguished writer, who has already been mentioned several times, was formerly supposed, from frequent statements in MSS., to have been the brother of Sayana, the well-known interpreter of the Vedas. The late Dr Burnell? has, however, made it very probable that these two are one and the same person, Sdyana being his Telugu, and MAdhavaicharya his Brahmanical name. In 1331 he became the jagadguru, or spiritual head, of the Smartas (a Vedantist sect founded by Sankaracharya) at the Math of Sringer!, where, under the patronage of Bukka, king of Vidyanagara, he composed his numerous works. He sometimes passes under a third name, Vidyaranya-svamin, adopted by him on becoming a sannydsin, or religious mendicant. , i

(2) The Vedénta philosophy, in the comparatively primitive form in which it presents itself in most of the Upanishads, con- stitutes the earliest phase of systematie metaphysical speculation. In its essential features it remains to this day the prevalent belief of Indian thinkers, and enters largely into the religious life and convictions of the people. Itis an idealistic monism, which derives the universe from an ultimate conscious spiritual principle, the one and only existent from eternity—the Aman, the Sclf, or the Purusha, the Person, the Brahman. It is this primordial essence or Self that pervades all things, and gives life and light to them, “without being sullied by the visible outward impurities or the miscries of the world, being itself apart,”—and into which all things will, through knowledge, ultimately resolve themselves. ‘The wise who perceive him as being within their own Self, to them belongs cternal peace, not to others.”? But, while the com- mentators never hesitate to interpret the Upanishads as being in perfect agreement with the Vedantic system, as claborated in latcr times, there is often considerable difficulty in accepting their explanations. In these treatises

only the leading features of the pantheistic theory find utterance, generally in vague and mystic though often in singularly powerful and poetical language, from which it is not always possible to extract the author's real idea on fundamental points, such as the relation between the Supreme Spirit and the phenomenal world,—whether the latter was actually evolved from the former by a power inherent in him, or whether the process is altogether a fiction, an illusion of the individual self. Thus the Katha-upanishad? offers the following summary :— ''Beyond the senses [there are the objects; beyond the objects] there is the mind (manas) ; beyond the mind there is the intellect (buddhi) ; beyond the intellect there is the Great Self. Beyond the Great One there is the Highest Undeveloped (avyaktam) ; beyond the Undeveloped there is the Person (purusha), the all-pervading, characterless (alinga). Whatsoever knows him is liberated, and attains immortality." Here the Vedantist commentator assures us that the Great Undeveloped, which the Sankhyas would claim as their own primary material principle (pradhana, prakriti), is in reality Mfdyd, illusion (otherwise called Avidya, ignorance, or Sakti, power), the fictitious energy which in conjunction with the Highest Self (Atman, Purusha) produees or constitutes the lsvara, the Lord, or Cosmic Soul, the first emanation of the Atman, and himself the (fictitious) cause of all that seems to exist. It must remain doubtful, however, whether the author of the Upanishad really meant this, or whether he regarded the Great Undeveloped as an actual material principle or substratum evolved from out of the Purusha, though not, as the Sankhyas hold, coexisting with him from eternity. Besides passages such as these which seem to indicate realistic or materialistie tendencies of thought, which may well have developed into the dualistic Sankhya and kindred systems, there are others which indicate the existence even of nihilist theories, such as the Bauddhas—the Sinya-vddins, or affirmers of a void or primordial nothingness— profess. Thus we read in the Chhandogya-upanishad > :—' The existent alone, my son, was here in the beginning, one only, with- out a second. Others say, there was the non-existent alone here in the beginning, one only, without a second,—and from the non- existent the existent was born. But how could this be, my son ? How could the existent be born from the non-existent? No, my son, only the existent was here in the beginning, one only, with- out a second,"

The foundation of the Vedanta system, as “the completion of the Veda,” is naturally ascribed to Vyasa, the mythic arranger of the Vedas, who is said to be identical with Badardyana, the reputed author of the Brahma- (or Sértraka-) sitra, the authorita- tive, though highly obscure, summary of the system. The most distinguished interpreter of these aphorisms is the famous Malabar theologian Sankara Acharya (7th or 8th century), who also eommented on the principal Upanishads and the Bhagavadgita, and is said to have spent the greater part of his life in wandering all over India, as far as Kashmir, and engaging in disputations

1 Edited by Th, Goldstiickcr, completed by E. B. Cowell.

2 Vamsa-brahmana, Introd. 3 Katha- i ii £013,101 1687. – wo ii. 5, 11-13

KRI® (LITERATURE, with teachers—whether of the Saiva, or Vaishnava, or less orthodox persuasions—with the view of rooting ont heresy and re-establishing the doctrine of the Upanishads. His controversial triumphs (doubtless largely mythical) are related in a number of treatises current in South India, the two most important of which are the Sankara-dig-vijaya (“Sankara’s world-conquest”), ascribed to his own disciple Anandagiri, and the Sankara-vijaya, by Ma- dhavacharya. In Sankara’s philosophy® the theory that the material world has no real existence, but isa mere illusion of the individual sonl wrapt in ignorancc,—that, therefore, it has only a practical or conventional (vydvahdrika) but not a transcendental or true (pdramarthika) reality, —is strictly enforced. To the question why the Supreme Self (or rather his fictitious development, the Highest Lord, or cosmic soul) should have sent forth this phantasma- gory this great thinker (with the author of the Siitras’) can return no better answer than that it must have been done for sport (/i7d), without any special motive—since to ascribe such a motive to the Supreme Lord would be limiting his self-sufficiency, —and, that the process of creation has been going on from all eternity. Sankara’s Sdriraka-mimdmsd-bhdshya has given rise to a large number of exegetic treatises, of which Vachaspati-misra’s § exposition, entitled Bhématt,? is the most esteemed. Of numerous other commentaries

on the Brahma-siitras, the Sri-bhdshya, by Ramanuja, the founder Rama- of the Sri-Vaishnava sect, is the most noteworthy. This religious nuja,

teacher, who probably flourished during the first half of the 12th century, caused a schism in the Vedanta school. Instead of adher- ing to Sankara's orthodox advaita, or non-duality doctrine, he put forth the theory of visishtddvaita, i.e., non-duality of the (two) distinct (principles), or, as it is more commonly cxplained, non-duality of that which is qualificd (by attributes). According to this thcory the Brahman (which is identical with Vishnu) is neither devoid of form and quality, nor is it all things ; but it is endowed with all good qualities, and matter is distinct from it; bodies consist of souls (chi) and matter (achit) ; and God is the soul. With this theory is combined the ordinary Vaishnava doctrine of periodical descents (avatéra) of the deity, in various forms, for the benefit of creatures. In Ramanuja's system con-

siderable play is also allowed to the doctrine of faith (bhakti). Bhakti,

This phase of Indian religious belief, which has attached itself to the Vedanta theory more closely than to any other, and the origin of whieh some scholars are inclined to attribute to Christian influence, seems first to make its appearance very prominently in the Bhagavadgitd, the episode of the AMahdbhdrata, alrcady referred to, and is even more fully developed in some of the Puranas, especially the Bhagavata. In the Séndilya- (Bhakti-) sdtra," the author and date of which are unknown, the doctrine is systematically propounded in one hundred aphorisms. According to this doctrine mundane existence is due to want of faith, not to ignorance; and the final liberation of the individual soul can only be effected by faith. Knowledge only contributes to this end by removing the mind's foulness, unbelief. Its highest phase of development this doctrine probably reached in the religious creed of the Bhaktas, a Vaishnava sect founded, towards the end of the 15th century, by Chaitanya, whose followers subsequently grafted the Vedanta speculations on his doctrine. A popular summary of the Vedanta doctrine is the Veddnia-sdra_ by Sadananda, which has been frequently printed and translated."

(3) The Sénkhya,™ or "enumerative " system, probably derives Sankhya,

its name from its systematic cnumeration of the twenty-five principles (¢attva) it recognizes, —consisting of twenty-four material and an independent immaterial principle. In opposition to the Vedanta school,

which maintains the eternal cocxistence of a spiritual principle of reality and an unspiritual principle of unreality, the Sankhya assumes the eternal cocxistence of a material first cause, which it calls either mdla-Prakriti (fem.), “chief Originant” (Nature), or Pradhdna, “the principal” cause, and a plurality of spiritual elements or Selves, Purusha, The system recognizes no intelligent creator (such as the Fsvara, or demiurgus, of the Vcdénta)—whence it is called nirisvara, godless; but it conceives the Material First Cause, itself unin- telligent, to have become developed, by a gradual process of evolution, into all the actual forms of the phenomenal universe, excepting the souls. Its first emanation is buddhi, intelligence ; whence springs akamkédra, consciousness ; thence five elementary particles (tanmdtra) and eleven organs of sense ; and finally, from the elementary particles, five elements. The souls have from all eternity been connected with Nature,—having in the first place become invested with a subtile frame (Jinga-, or sikshma-, sartra), consisting of seventeen principles, viz., intelligence, eonsciousness, elementary particles, and organs of sense and action, including oe EE a ee

6 P. Deussen, Das System des Vedanta, 1883, A. E. Gough, The Philosophy of the Upanishads, also follows chiefly Sankara’s interpretation.

7 Brahmasfitra, iii, 1, 32-34.

8 Prof. Cowell assigns him to about the 10th century. 9 Bibl. Ind.

10 Text, with Svapnegvara’s commentary, edited by J. R. Ballantyne; transl. by E. B. Cowell. H Last by G. A. Jacob.

12 E, Roer, Lecture on the Sdnkhya Philosophy, Calentta, 1854; B. St Hilaire, Mémoire sur le Sankhya, 1852.

SANS

mind. Invested with this subtile frame, they, for the sake of fruition, connect themselves ever anew with Nature, thus, as it were, creating for themselves ever new forms of material existence ; and it is only on his attaining perfect knowledge, whereby the ever-changing modes of intelligence cease to be reflected on him, that the Purusha is liberated from the miseries of Samsiira.

The reputed founder of this school is the sage Kapila, to whom tradition ascribes the composition of the fundamental text-book, the (Sdnkhya-stira, or) Sdnkhya-pravachana,' as well as the Tativa-samdésa, a mere catalogue of the principles. That the Sitras have undergone subsequent modifications might be inferred from the fact that they twice refer to the opinion of Pafichagikha, who elsewhere is stated to have received his instruction from Asuri, the disciple of Kapila, as well as from the sage himself. Of the eommentaries on the Stitras, that by Vijfidna Bhikshu,? a writer probably of the 16th century, is the most approved. An independent treatise by the same author, the Sdnkhya-séra,? consisting of a prose and a verse part, is probably the most valuable compendium of Sinkhya doctrines. Another admirable and highly-estcemed treatise is [évara-krishna's Sénkhya-kdrikd,3 which gives, in the narrow eompass of seventy-five slokas, a lucid and eomplete sketch of the system. Though nothing certain is known regarding its authoy* this work must be of tolerable antiquity, considering that it was commented upon by Gaudapada,® the preceptor of Govinda, who, on his part, is said to have been the teacher of SankarAchérya.

(4) The Yoga system is merely a schismatic branch of the preceding school, holding the same opinions on most points treated in common in their Stitras, with the exeeption of one important point, the existence of God. To the twenty-five principles (éaétva) of the Nirigvara Sankhya, the last of which was the Purusha, the Yoga adds, as the twenty-sixth, the Nirguna Purusha, or Self devoid of qualities, the Supreme God of the system. Hence the Yoga is called the Sesvara (theistical) Sdnkhya. But over and: above the purely speculative part of its doctrine, which it shares with the sister school, the theistic Sankhya has developed a complete system of mortification of the senses—by means of prolonged apathy and abstraction, protracted rigidity of posture, and similar practices, many of which are already alluded to in the Upanishads, —with the view of attaining to an ecstatic vision of, and reunion (yoga) with, the Supreme Spirit. It is from this portion of the system that the school derives the name by which it is more generally known. The authoritative Stitras of the Yoga, bearing the same title as those of the sister school, viz., Sinkhya-pravachana, but more commonly called Yoga-sdstra, are ascribed to Patafijali, who is perhaps identical with the author of the "great commentary" on Panini. The oldest commentary on the Sitras, the Pétattjala-bhdshya, is attributed to no other than Vyasa, the

mythic arranger of the Veda and founder of the Vedanta. Both works have again been commented upon by Vachaspati-migra, Vijfiana-bhikshu, and other writers.

(5) (6) The Nydya® and Vaiseshika are but separate branches of one and the same school, which supplemeut each other and the doctrines of which have virtually become amalgamated into a single system of philosophy. The special part taken by each of the two branches in the elaboration of the'system may be briefly stated in Dr técr's words :—"'To the Nydya belong the logical doctrines of the forms of syllogisms, terms, and propositions; to the Vai

The followers of these schools generally recognize seven categories (paddrtha) :—substance (dravya), quality (guna), action (karma), generality (sémdnya), particularity (viscsha), intimate relation (sumavdya), and non-existence or negation (abhdva). Substances, forming the substrata of qualities and actions, are of two kinds :— eternal (without a cause), viz., space, time, ether, soul, and the atoms of mind, earth, water, fire, and air; and non-eternal, com-

es LITERATURE. |

I Transl. by J. R. Ballantyne ; 2d ed. by F. Hall. 2 Edited by F. Hall.

3 Edited by C. Lassen, 1832, Translations by H. T. Colebrooke and J. Davies.

4 One writer makes him the pupil of Panehasikha, whilst another even Identifies him with Kalidasa; cf. F. Hall, Sdnkhyasdra, p. 29.

5 Transl. by Il. H. Wilson. A Chinese translation of a eommentary resembling that of Gaudapfda is said to have been made during the Ch'en dynasty, 557-583 A.D. (M. Miiller, Zndia, p. 360).

§ Besides Colebrooke's Zssay, with Cowell's notes, see Ballantyne's translation of the Tarka-Sangraha and the introduetion to Rver's translation of the Bhashdparichheda, und his artiele, Z. D. M. ey RRs

prising all compounds, or the things we perceive, and which must have a cause of their existence. Causality is of three kinds :— that of intimate relation (material cause); that of non-intimate relation (between parts of a compound); and instrumental causality (effecting the union of component parts). Material things are thus composed of atoms (anw), .c., ultimate simple substances, or units of space, eternal, unchangeable, and without dimension, character- ized only by “ particularity (visesha).” It is from this predication of ultimate “ particulars” that the Vaiéeshikas, the originators of the atomistic doctrine, derive their name. The Nydya draws a clear line between matter and spirit, and has worked out a careful and ingenious system of psyehology. It distinguishes between individual or living souls (jivétman), which are numerous, infinite, and eternal, and the Supreme Soul (Paramétman), which is one only, the seat of eternal knowledge, and the maker and ruler (fsvara) of all things. Itis by his will and agency that the un- conscious living souls (soul-atoms, in fact) enter into union with the (material) atoms of mind, &c., and thus partake of the pleasures and sufferings of mundane existence. On the Hindu syllogism compare Prof. Cowell’s notes to Colebrooke’s Essays, i. p. 314.

The original collection of Nydya-sdtras is ascribed to Gotama, and that of the Vaiseshika-sdtras to Kanada. The etymological meaning of the latter name seems to be “little-eater, particle- eater,” whence in works of hostile critics the synonymous terms Kana-bhuj or Kana-bhaksha are sometimes derisively applied to him, doubtless in allusion to his theory of atoms. He is also occasionally referred to under the name of KAsyapa. Both stitra-works have been interpreted and supplemented by a number of writers, the commentary of Viévandtha on the Nydya and that of Sankara-migra on the Vaiscshika Stitras being most gencrally used, There are, moreover, a vast number of separate works on the doctrines of these schools, especially ou logic. Of favourite elementary treatises on the subject may be mentioned Kegava- misra’s Tarka-bhdshd, the Tarka-sangraha,’? and the Bhdshd-parichheda.® A large and important book on logic is Gangesga’s Chintémani, which formed the text-book of the celebrated Nuddea school of Bengal, founded by Raghun4tha-siromani about the beginning of the 16th century. An interesting little treatise is the Kusumdijali,® in which the

author, Udayana Acharya (about the 12th century, according to Prof. Cowell) attempts, in 72 couplets, to prove the existence of a Supreme Being on the principles of the Nydya system.

As regards the different heretical systems of Hindu philosophy, there is no occasion, in a sketch of Sanskrit literature, to enter into the tenets of the two great anti-Brahmanical sects, the Jainas and Buddhists. While the original works of the former are written entirely in a popular (the Ardha-magadht) dialect, the northern Buddhists, it is true, have produced,a considerable body of litera- ture,!° composed in a kind of hybrid Sanskrit, but only a few of their sacred books have as yet been published; and it is, more- over, admitted on all hands that for the pure and authentic Bauddha doctrines we have rather to look to the Pali scriptures of the southern branch. Nor ean we do more here than briefly allude to the theories of a few of the less prominent heterodox systems, however interesting they may be for a history of human thought.

The Chdrvékas, an ancient seet of undisguised materialism, who deny the existence of the soul, and consider the human person (purusha) to be an organic body endowed with sensibility and with thought, resulting from a modification of the eomponent material elements, ascribe their origin to Brihaspati; but their authoritative text-book, the Barhaspatya-sdtra, is only known so far from a few quotations.

The Pdichardtras, or Bhagavatas, are an early Vaishnava sect, in which the doctrine of faith, already alluded to, is strongly developed. Hence their tenets are defended by Ramanuja, though they are partly eondemned as heretical in the Brahma-sitras. Their recognized text-book is the Nérada-Patchardtra. Aecording to their theory the Supreme Being (Bhagavat, Vasudeva, Vishnu) became four separate persons by successive production. While the Supreme Being himself is indued with the six qualities of know- ledge, power, strength, absolute sway, vigour, and encrgy, the three divine persons successively emanating from him and from one another represent the living soul, mind, and conscionsness respectively.

The Pasupatas, one of several Saiva (M&heSvara) sects, hold the Supreme Being (févara), whom they identify with Siva, to be the creator and ruler of the world, but not its material cause. With the Sinkhyas they admit the

notion of a plastie material cause, the Pradhdna; while they follow Pataijali in maintaining the exist- ence of a Supreme God.

7 Edited and translated by J. R. Ballantyne.

8 Edited and translated, with eommentary, by E. Réer.

9 Edited and translated, with eommentary, by E. B. Cowell.

10 See B, H. Hodgson, The Languages, Literature, and Religton of Nepal and Tibet.

ll Lalita-vistara, edited and partly translated by Rajendralala Mitra; Maha-vastu, edited E. Senart; Vajra-parichheda, edited M. Miiller; Saddharma-pundarika, translated by E. Burnouf (‘‘ Lotus de la bonne loi”); and H. Kern, Sacred Books of the East, 12 Edited by K. M. Banerjea.

Heretical systems.

GRAM- MAR.

Panini.

292

Ill. Grammar (Vydkarana).—We found this subject enumcr- ated as one of the six “limbs of the Veda,” or auxiliary sciences, the study of which was deemed necessary for a correct interpreta- tion of the sacred Mantras, and the proper performance of Vedic rites. Linguistic inquiry, phonetic as well as grammatical, was indeed early resorted to both for the purpose of elucidating the meaning of the Veda, and with the view of settling its textual form. ‘he particular work which came ultimately to be looked upon as the “veddnga” representative of grammatical science, and las ever since remaincd the standard authority for Sanskrit grammar in India, is Panini’s Ashtédhydyt,) so called from its “consisting of cight lectures (adhydya),” of four pddas each, For a comprehensive grasp of linguistic facts, and a penetrating insight into the structure of the vernacular language, this work stands probably unrivalled in the literature of any nation, —thougli few

other languages, it is true, afford such facilities as the Sans- krit for a scientific analysis. Panini's system of arrangement differs entirely from that usually adopted in our grammars, Viz., according to the so-called parts of speech. As the work is eom- posed in aphorisms intended to be learnt by heart, economy of inemory-matter was the author's paramount consideration. His object was chiefly attained by the grouping together of all eases exhibiting the same phonetic or formative feature, no matter whether or not they belonged to the same part of speech. For this purpose he also makes use of a highly artificial and ingenious system of algebraic symbols, consisting of technical letters (ana- bandha), used chiefly with suffixes, and indieative of the ehanges which the roots or stems have to undergo in word-formation.

It is self-evident that so eomplicated and eomplete a system of linguistic analysis and nomenclature could not have sprung up all at once and in the infancy of grammatical science, but that many generations of scholars must have helped to bring it to that degree of perfection which it exhibits in Panini's work. Accordingly we find Panini himself making reference in various places to ten dif- ferent grammarians, besides two schools, which he callsthe "eastern (prdfichas)" and "northern (udafchas)" grammarians. Perhaps the most important of his predecessors was Sakatdyana,? also mentioned by YAaska—the author of the Nirukta, who is likewise supposed to have preceded Panini—as the only grammarian (vaiyd- karana) who held with the etymologists (nairwkta) that all nouns are derived from verbal roots. Unfortunately there is little hope of the recovery of his grammar, which would probably have enabled us to determine somewhat more exactly to what extent Panini was indebted to the labours of his predecessors, There exists indeed a grammar in South Indian MSS., entitled Sabddénusdsana, which is ascribed to one Sakatayana ;* but this has been proved * to be the production of a modern Jaina writer, which, however, seems to be

artly based on the original work, and partly on Panini and others. Panini is also called Dakshiputra, after his mother Dakshi. As his birthplace the village Salitura is mentioned, which was situated some few miles north-west of the Indus, in the country of the Gandharas, whence later writers also call him Sélaturiya, the formation of which name he himself explains in his

grammar. Another name sometimes applied to him is Salanki. Inthe Kathé-saritsdgara, a modern collection of popular tales mentioned above, Panini is said to have been the pupil of Varsha, a teacher at Pata- liputra, under the reign of Nanda, the father (?) of Chandragupta (315-291 B.c.). The real date of the great grammarian is, how- ever, still a matter of uncertainty. While Goldstiicker® attempted to put his date back to ante-Buddhist times (about the 7th century B.c.), Prof. Weber holds that Panini's grammar cannot have been composed till some time after the invasion of Alexander the Great. This opinion is chiefly based on the occurrcuce in one of the Sfitras of the word yavandnt, in the sense of "the writing of the Yavanas (Ionians)," thus implying, it would seem, such an acquaintance with the Greek alphabet as it would be impossible to assume for any period prior to Alexander's Indian campaign (326 B.c.). But, as it is by no means certain® that this term really applies to the Greek alphabet, it is scarcely expedient to make the word the corner-stone of the argument regarding Panini's age. If Patafijali's "great commentary" was written, as seems highly probable, about the middle of the 2nd century B.c., it is hardly possible to assign to Panini a later date than about 400 B.c. Though this grammarian registers numerous words and formations as peculiar to the Vedic hymns, his chief concern is with the ordi- nary speech (dhdshé) of his period and its literature; and it is noteworthy, in this respect, that the rules he lays down on some important points of syntax (as pointed out by Profs. Bhandarkar and Kielhorn) are in accord with the practice of the Brahmanas rathcr than with that of the later classical literature. :

1 Printed, with a eommentary, at Calcutta; also, with notes, indexes, and an instructive introduction, by O. Béhtlingk.

2 I.e., son of Sakata, whence he is also called Sakatangaja.

3 Compare G. Biihler's paper, Orient und Occident, p. 691 sq.

4 A. Burnell, On the Aindra School of Sanskrit Grammarians.

: pagsie his ed . Sanskrit Literature, 1861.

ee Lassen, ind. Alt.. i, p. 723; M. Miiller, Zist. o aye Uibeape ;

Weber, Ind. Stud., v. p. 2 sg. : ANS eae Mon

SANS KEI

|

[LITERATURE,

Panini’s Sitras continued for ages after to form the centre of grammatical activity. But, as his own work had superseded those of his predecessors, so many of the scholars who devoted them- selves to the task of perfecting his system have sunk into oblivion. The earliest of his successors whose work has come

down to us (though perhaps not in a separate form), is Katyayana, Katy4- the author of a large collection of concise critical notes, called yana.

Varttika, intended to supplement and correct the Siitras, or give them greater precision. ‘The exact date of this writer is likewise unknown; but there can be little doubt that he lived at least a century after Panini. During the interval a new body of literature seems to have sprung up,’— accompanied with considerable changes of language,—and the geographical knowledge of India extended over large tracts towards the south. Whether this is the same Katyayana to whom the Vajasaneyi- pratisakhya (as well as the Sarvanukrama) is attributed, is still doubted by some scholars.® Katyayana being properly a family or tribal name, meaning “the descendant of Katya,” later works usually assign a seeond name Vararuchi to the writers (for there are at least two) who bear it. The Kathdsaritsagara makes the author of the Varttikas a fellow-student of Panini, and afterwards the minister of King Nanda; but, though this date might have fitted Katyayana well enough, it is impossible to place any reliance on the statements derived from such a source. Katyayana was succeeded again,

doubtless after a considerable interval, by Patafijali, the author of Patanjali

the (Vydkarana-) Mahd-bhdéshya,? or Great Commentary. For the great varicty of information it incidentally supplies regarding the literature and

manners of the period, this is, from an historical and antiquarian point of view, one of the most important works of the classical Sanskrit literature. Fortunately the author's date has becn settled by synchronisms implied in two passages of his work. In one of them the use of the imperfect—as the tense referring to an event, known to people generally, not witnessed by the speaker, and yet capable of being witnessed by him—is illus- trated by the statement, ''The Yavana besieged Saketa," which there is reason to believe can only refer to the Indo-Bactrian king Menander (144-c. 124 B.c.), who, according to Strabo, extended his rule as far as the Yamuna.!° In the other passage the use of the present is illustrated by the sentence, "We are sacrificing for Push- pamitra,"—this prinee (178-c. 142 3.c.), the founder of the Sunga dynasty, being known to have fought against the Greeks.!° We thus get the years 144-142 B.c. as the probable time when the work, or patt of it, was eomposed. Although Patafijali probably gives not a few traditional grammatical examples mechanically repeated from his predecessors, those here mentioned are fortun- ately such as, from the very nature of the ease, must have becn made by himself. The Mahabhashya is not a continuous com- mentary on P4nini's grammar, but deals only with those Sifitras (some 1720 out of a total of nearly 4000) on which Katyayana had proposed any Varttikas, the eritieal discussion of which, in con- nexion with the respective Sfitras, and with the views of other gram- marians expressed thereon, is the sole object of Patafijali's com- mentatorial remarks. Though doubts have been raised as to the textual condition of the work, Prof. Kielhorn has elearly shown that it has probably been handed down in as good a state of pre- servation as any other classical Sanskrit work. Patafijali is also called Gonardiya,—which name Prof. Bhandarkar takes to mean "a native of Gonarda," a place, according to the same scholar, probably identical with Gonda, a town some 20 miles north-west of Oudh, —and GonikAputra, or son of Gonika. Whether there is any connexion between this writer and the reputed author of the Yogasdstra is doubtful. The Mahabhashya has been commented upon by Kaiyata, in his Bhdshyapradipa, and the latter again by Nagojibhatta, a distinguished grammarian of the earlier part of the last century, in his Bhdshya-pradtpoddyota.

Of running commentaries on Panini's Siitras, the oldest extant Kasika and most important is the Késikad Vritti,™ or ''comment of Kasi vritti.

(Benares),” the joint production of two Jaina writers of probably the first half of the 7th century, viz., JayAditya and Vamana, each of whom composed one half (four adhyayas) of the work. The chief commentaries on this work are Haradatta Misra’s Padamafjart, which also embodies the substance of the Mahabhashya, and Jinendra-buddhi’s Nydsa.”

Educational requirements in eourse of time led to the appearance Modern of grammars, chiefly of an elementary character, constructed on a grammars.

7 F, Kielhorn, Kétydyana und Patanjali, 1876. The Sangraha, a huge mettical work on grammar, by VyAdi, which is frequently referred to, doubtless belongs to this period.

8F.9., A. Weber. Goldstticker and M. Miiller take the opposite view.

9 Part of this work was first printed by Ballantyne; followed by a lithographed edition, by two Benares pandits, 1871; and a photolithographie edition of the text and commentaries, published by the India Office, under Goldstiicker’s supervision, 1874; finally, a critical edition, now in progress, by F. Kielhorn. Fora review of the literary and antiquarian data supplied by the work, sce A. Weber, Ind. Stud., xiii, 298 sg. The author’s date has been frequently dis- cussed, most thoroughly and suecessfully by R. G. Bhandarkar in several papers. See also A. Weber, Hist. of J. L., p. 228. 10 Lassen, Ind. Alt., ii. 341, 362.

1 Edited by Pandit Bala Sastri, Benares, 1876-78. 12 As itis quoted by Vopadeva, it cannot be Jater than the 12th eentury.

» Paribdshendusekhara.?

more practical system of arrangement—the principal heads under which the grammatical matter was distributed usually being— rules of euphony (sandhi); infiexion of nouns (xdéman), gene- rally including composition and secondary derivatives; the verb (akhydta) ; and primary (krid-anta) derivatives. In this way a number of grammatical schools? sprang up at different times, each recognizing a special set of Siitras, round which

gradually gathered a more or less numerous body of commentatorial and subsidiary treatises. As regards the grammatical material itself, these later grammars supply comparatively little that is not already contained in the older works,—the difference being mainly one. of method, and partly of terminology, including modifications of the system of technieal letters (anwbandha). Of the grammars of this descrip- . tion hitherto known the Chdndra-vydkarana is probably the oldest,—its author Chandra Acharya having flourished under King Abhimanyu of Kashmir, who is usually supposed to have lived towards the end of the 2d century,? and in whose reign that grammarian is stated, along with others, to have revived the study of the Mahabhashya in Kashmir. Only portions of this grammar, with a commentary by Anandadatta, have as yet been recovered.

The Kétantra,' or Kdldpa, is ascribed to Kumara, the god of war, whence this school is also sometimes called Kawmdra. The real author probably was Sarva-varman, who also wrote the original commentary (vritti), which was afterwards recast by Durgasimha, and again commented upon by the same writer, and subsequently by Trilochana-dasa. The date of the Katantra is unknown, but it will probably have to be assigned to about the 6th or 7th century. lt is still used in many parts of India, especially in Bengal and Kashmir, Other grammars are—the Sdrasvatt Prakriyd, by Anubhiti Svarfipacharya; the Sankshipta-sdra, composed by Kramadisvara, and corrected by Jumara-nandin, whence it is also called Jawmara; the Haima-vydkarana,* by the Jaina writer Hemachandra (1088-1172, according to Dr Bhao Daji); the Mugdha-bodha,® composed, in the latter part of the 13th century, by Vopadeva, the court pandit of King Mahadeva (Ramaraja) of Devagiri (or Deoghar); the Siddhdnta-kaumudi, the favourite text-book of Indian students, by Bhattoji Dikshita (17th cen- tury); and a clever abridgment of it, the Laghu- (Siddhénta-) kawmudi,® by Varadaraja.

Several subsidiary grammatical treatises remain to be noticed. The Paribhdshds are general maxims of interpretation presupposed by the Sfitras. Those handed down as applicable to Panini's system have been interpreted most ably by Nagojibhatta, in his In the case of rules applying to whole groups of words, the complete lists (gana) of these words are given in the Ganapdtha, and only referred to in the Sfitras. Vardha- mana's Ganaratna-mahodadhi,' a eomparatively modern recension of these lists

(1140 a.p.), is valuable as offering the only available eommentary on the Ganas which contain many words of unknown meaning. The Dhdtupdathas are complete lists of the roots (dhdtz) of the language, with their general meanings. The lists handed down under this title,? as arranged by Panini himself, have been com- mented upon, amongst others, by Madhava. The Unddi-sitras are rules on the formation of irregular derivatives. The oldest work of this kind, commented upon by Ujjvaladatta,!° is by some writers ascribed to Katyayana Vararuchi, by others even to Sdkatdyana. The oldest known treatise on the philosophy of grammar and syntax is the Vékya-padiya,4 composed in verse, by Bhartrihari (?7th century), whence it is also called Harikdrikd. Of later works on this subject, the Vaiydkarana-bhishana, by Konda- bhatta, and the Vaiydkarana-siddhdnta-maijisha, by Nagoji-bhatta, are the most important.

TV. Lexicocrapny.—Sanskrit dictionaries (osha), invariably composed in verse, are eithcr homonymous or synonymous, or partly the one and partly the other. Of those hitherto published, Sasvata's Anekirtha-samuchchaya,' or " collection of homonyms," is probably the oldest. While in the later homonymic vocabu- laries the words are usually arranged according to the alphabetical order of the final (or sometimes the initial) letter, and then accord- ing to the number of syllables, SAsvata's principle of arrangement —viz., the number of meanings assignable to a word—seems to be more primitive. 'The work probably next in time is the famous Amara-kosha (''immortal treasury") by Amara-simha, one of "the nine gems" at the court of King Vikramaditya (¢. 550 A.D.). This dictionary consists of a synonymous and a short homonymous part ; whilst in the former the words are distributed in sections

1 Dr Burnell, in his Aindra School, proposes to apply this term to all grammars arranged on this plan.

2 Prof. Bhandarkar, Early Iistory of the Dekhan, p. 20, proposes to fix him about the end of the 3d century. 3 Ed., with comm., by J. Eggeling.

4 Part ed. and transl. by lt. Pischel. 5 Ed. by O. Buhtlingk, 1847.

6 Ed. and transl. by J. R. Ballantyne. For othcr modern grammars sec Colebrooke, Zssays, ii. p. 44; RAjendralila Mitra, Descriptive Catalogue, i.,

Grammar. 7 Ed. and transl. by F. Kiclhorn.

8 Ed. by J. Eggcling. 9 Ed. by N. L. Westergaard.

10 Text and commentary, cd. by Th. Aufrecht.

11 In course of publication, with commentaries, at Benares.

12 Ed. by Th. Zachariae.

13 Edited by Ii. T, Colebrooke (1808), and by L. Deslongchamps (1839-45).

pa ws Kat tT

according to subjects, as heaven and the gods, time and seasons, &c., in the latter they are arranged according to their final letter, without regard to the number of syllables. This Kosha has found many commentators, the oldest of those known being Kshira- svémin.44 Among the works quoted by commentators as Amara's sourees are the Z'rikdénda and Utpalini-koshas, and the glossaries of Rabhasa, Vyadi, Katyayana, and Vararuchi. A Kosha ascribed to Vararuchi,—whom tradition makes one of the nine literary ''gems," and hence the contemporary of Amara-simha,— consisting of ninety short sections, has been printed at Benares (1865) in a collection of twelve Koshas. The Abhidhéna-ratna- mald,° by Haldyudha; the Visvaprakdsa, by Maheévara (1111); and the Abhidhdna-ehintémani® (or Haima-kosha), by the Jaina Hemachandra, seem all three to belong to the 12th century. Somewhat earlier than these probably is Ajaya Pala, the author of the (homonymous) Néndrtha-sangraha, being quoted by Var-dhamana (1140 A.p.). Of more uncertain date is Purushottama Deva, who wrote the Trikdyda-sesha, a supplement to the Amarakosha, besides the Hérdvalt, a collection of uncommon words, and two other short glossaries. Of numerous other works of this class the most important is the Aedint, a dictionary of homonyms, arranged in the first place according to the finals and the syllabie length, and then alphabetically. Two important dietionaries, compiled by uative scholars of the present cen- tury, are the

Sabdakalpadruma by Radhakanta Deva, and the Véchaspatya, by Tarandtha Tarka-vichaspati.

V. Prosopy (Chhandas).—The oldest treatises on prosody have already been referred to in the account of the technical branches of the later Vedic literature. Among more modern treatises the most important are the Mryita-sanjivant, a commentary on Pingala's Siitra, by Halayudha (perhaps identical with the author of the glossary above referred to); the Vritta-ratndkara, or ''jewel-mine of metres," in six chapters, composed before the 13th century by Kedara Bhatta, with several commentaries ; and the Chhando-maijari, likewise in six chapters, by Gangadasa. The Srutabodha, ascribed, probably wrongly, to the great Kalidasa, is a comparatively insignificant treatise, dealing only with the more common metres, in such a way that each couplet forms a specimen of the metre it describes. The V7ritta-darpana treats chiefly of Prakrit metres. Sanskrit prosody, which is probably not surpassed by any other either in variety of netre or in harmonions- ness of rhythm, recognizes two classes of metres, viz., such as con- sist of a certain number of syllables of fixed quantity, and such as are regulated by groups of breves or metrical instants, this latter class being again of two kinds, according as it is or is not bound by a fixed order of feet. A pleasant account of Sanskrit poetics is given in Colebrooke's Essays, vol. ii. ; a more complete and systematic one by Prof. Weber, Jnd. Stud., vol. viii.

VI. Music (Sangita).—The musical art has been practised in India from early times. The theoretic treatises on profane music now extant are, however, quite modcrn productions. The two most highly esteemed works are the Sangita-ratndkara (" jewel- mine of music"), by Sarngadeva, and the Sangita-darpana (" mirror of musie"), by Damodara, Each of these works consists of seven chapters, treating respectively of—(1) sound and musical notes (svara); (2) melodies (7déga); (8) music in connexion with the human voice (praktrnaka) ; (4) musical conipositions (prabandha) ; (5) time and measure (¢é/a) ; (6) musical instruments and instrn- mental music (vddya); (7) dancing and acting (nritta or nritya). The Indian octave consists like our own of seven chief notes (svara) ; but, while with us it is subdivided into twelve semi-tones, the Hindu theory distinguishes twenty-two intervals (sruti, audible sound). 'There is, however, some doubt as to whether these

srutis are quite equal to one another,—in which case the intervals between the chicf notes would be unequal, since they consist of either two or three or four grwtis,—or whether, if the intervals between the chief notes be equal, the s2tis themselves vary in duration between quarter-, third-, and semi-tones. There are three scales (yrdéma), differing from each other in the nature of the chief intervals (either as regards actual duration, or the number of grutis or sub-tones). Indian music consists almost entirely in melody, instrumental accompaniment being performed in unison, and any attempt at harmony being confined to the continuation of the key-note. A number of papers, by various writers, have been reprinted with additional remarks on the subject, in Sourindro Mohun Tagore's Hindu Music, Calcutta, 1875. Compare also" Hindu Music," reprinted from the Hindoo* Patriot, September 7, 1874.

VIL. Ruertonic (Alankéra-sdstra).—Treatises on the theory of

14 A grammarian of this name is mentioned as the tutor of King JayApida of Kashmir (755-786 A.D.); but Kshira, the commentator on Amara is placed by Prof. Aufrecht between the llth and 12th centuries, because he quotes the Sabdanusdsana ascribed to Bhojaraja.

15 Ed, by Th. Aufrecht (1861) 16 Ed, by 0, Bohtlingk and C. Rieu (1847).

Prosopy.

Music.

RHET-

294 sa ND

literary composition are very numerous. | Indeed, a subject of this description—involving such nice distinctions as. regards the various kinds of poetic eomposition, the particular subjects and characters adapted for them, and the different sentiments or mental condi- tions eapable of being both depictured and called forth by them— could not but be congenial to the Indian mind. H. H. Wilson, in his Theatre of the Hindus, has given a detailed account of these theoretic distinctions with special reference to the

drama, which, as the most perfect and varied kind of poetic production, usually takes an important place in the theory of literary composition. The Bharata-séstra has already been alluded to as probably the oldest extant work in this department of literaturc. Another comparatively ancient treatise is the Kévyddarsa,' or "mirror of poetry," in three chapters, by Dandin, the author of the novel Dagakumaracharita, who probably flourished not long after KAliddsa (whose Prakrit poem Setubandha he quotes) in the 6th century. The work consists of three chapters, treating—(1) of two different local styles (rit) of poetry, the Gaudi and the Vaidarbhi (to which later critics add four others, the Pdfiehali, Magadht, Latt, and Avantika) ; (2) of the graces and ornaments of style, as tropes, figures, similes ; (8) of alliteration, literary puzzles, and twelve kinds of faults to be avoided in composing poems. Another treatise on rhetoric, in Stitras, with a commentary entitled Kéavydlankdra-vritti, is ascribed to Vamana. Prof. Cappeller, to whom we owe an edition of this work, is inclined to fix it as late as the 12th century ; but it may turn out to be somewhat older.

Kn iF

(identified by him with Socrates, so often confounded in the Middle Ages with Hippocrates) was probably not composed till after the Mohammedan conquest, and that, so far from the Arabs (as they themselves declare) having derived some of their knowledge of medical science from Indian authorities, the Indian Vaidyasastra was nothing but a poor eopy of Greek medicine, as transmitted by the Arabs. But even though Greck influence may be traced in this asin other branches of Indian seience, there can be no doubt,® at any rate, that both Charaka and Susrnta were known to the Arab Razt (c. 982 A.D.), and to the author of the Fihrist (completed 987 A.D.), and that their works must therefore have cxisted, in some form or other, at least as early as the 9th eentury. Among the numerous later medical works the most important general compendiums are Vagbhata's Ashfdnga-hridaya, 'the heart of the cight-limbed (body of medical science)," and Bhava Miéra's Bhdéva-prakdsa ; while of special treatises may be mentioned MAdhava's system of nosology, the Rugvinischaya, or Médhava-nidéna, and Sarngadhara's compendium of therapentics, the Sdrngadhara-samhitd. Materia medica, with which India is so lavishly endowed by nature, is a favourite subject with Hindu medical writers, —the most valued treatise

being the Rija-nighantu, by the Kashmirian Narahari. The best general view of this branch of Indian science is eontinued in T. A. Wise's Commentary on Hindu Medicine, 1845, and in his History of Medicine, vol. i., 1867; but the whole subject, including the principal original works, still awaits a critical investigation.

[LITERATURE,

IX. AsrRoNoMY AND MATHEMATICS.—Hindu astronomy may Asrpo- be broadly divided into a pre-scientific and a scientific period. yomy While the latter clearly presupposes a knowledge of the researches ayp of Hipparchus and other Greek astronomers, it is still doubtful Marne. whether the earlier astronomical and astrological theories of Indian yarncs,

The Kdavydlankéra, by the Kashmirian Rudrata, must have been composed prior to the 11th century, as a gloss on it (by Nami), which professes to be based on older commentaries, was written in 1068. Dhananjaya, the author of the Dasa- réipa,? or '"'ten forms (of plays)," the favourite compendium of

MeEpI- CINE,

dramaturgy, appears to have flourished in the 10th century. In the concluding stanza he is stated to have composed his work at the court of King Mufija, who is probably identical with the well- known M4lava prince, the uncle and predecessor of King Bhoja of Dhara. The Dasgartipa was early commented upon by Dhanika, possibly the author's own brother, their father's name being the same (Vishnu). Dhanika quotes Rajasekhara, who is supposed to have flourished about 1000 a.p.,3 but may after all have to be put somewhat earlier. The Sarasvatt-kanthdbharana, ''the neck-ornament of Sarasvati (the goddess of eloquence)," a treatise, in five chapters, on poetics generally, remarkable for its wealth of quotations, is ascribed to King Bhoja himself (11th century), pro- bably as a compliment by some writer patronized by him. The Kdvya-prakdsa,* 'the lustre of poetry," another esteemed work of the same elass, in ten sections, was probably eomposed in the 12th century,—the author, Mammata, a Kashniirian, having been the maternal uncle of Sri-Harsha, the author of the Naishadhiya. The Sdhitya-darpana,® or '' mirror of composition," the

standard work on literary criticism, was composed in the 15th century, on the banks of the Brahmaputra, by Visvanatha Kaviraja. The work consists of ten chapters, treating of the following subjects :—(1) the nature of poetry ; (2) the sentence; (3) poetic flavour (rasa); (4) the divisions of poetry ; (5) the functions of literary suggestion ; (6) visible and audible poetry (chiefly on dramatic art); (7) faults of a 7 (8) merits of style ; (9) distinction of styles ; (10) ornaments of style. J

VIII. MEpIcINE (Ayur-veda, Vaidya-sdstra).—Though the early cultivation of the healing art is amply attested by frequent allu- sions in the Vedic writings, it was doubtless not till a much later period that the medical practice advaneed beyond a certain degree of empirical skill and pharmaceutic routine. From the simultaneous mention of the three humours (wind, bile, phlegm) in a varttika to Panini, (v. 1, 38), some kind of humoral pathology would, however, seem to have been prevalent among Indian physicians several centuries before our era. The oldest existing work is supposed to be the Charaka-samhité,§ a bulky cyclopedia in Slokas, mixed with prose sections, which consists of eight ehapters, and was probably composed some centuries after Christ. Of equal authority, but probably somewhat more modern, is the Susruta (-samhitd),”? which Susruta is said to have received from Dhanvantari, the Indian /Esculapius, whose name, however, appears also among the ‘‘nine gems”’ (c. 550 a.p.). It consists of six chapters, and is likewise composed in mixed verse and prose,—-the greater simplicity of arrangement, as well as some slight attention paid in it to surgery, betokening an advance upon Charaka. Both works are, however, characterized by great prolixity, and contain much matter which has little connexion with medicine. The late Prof. E. Haas, in two very suggestive papers,® tried to show that the work of Suéruta

1 Ed. with eommentary, by Premachandra Tarka bt. . 2 Edited by Fitzcdw. Tiel, Bibl. Ind., 1865, sil ointesil 3 R. Pischel, Gétt. Gel. A., 1883; G. Biihler, Ind. Ant., 1884, p. 29. 4 Ed. by Mahesa Chandra Ny4yaratna, 186s. 5 Text and translation in Bibl. Ind. . = Anabel hil nea Cale., 1877. ud, by Madhusfidana Gupta, 1835-37, and by Jiba vi ya, 1875 8 Z. D.M. G., 1876, p. 617 sq°s 1877, p. 647 89. ‘NeeeaesAs alee ee

writers were cntirely of home growth or partly derived from foreign sources. From very ancient (probably Indo-European) times chronological calculations were based on the synodical revolutions of the moon,—the difference between twelve such revolutions (making together 354 days) and the solar year being adjusted by the in- sertion, at the time of the winter solstice, of twelve additional days. Besides this primitive mode the Rigveda also allndes to the method prevalent in post- Vedic times, according to which the year is divided into twelve (sévana or solar) months of thirty days, with a thir- teenth month intercalated every fifth year. This quinquennial cycle (yuga) is explained in the Jyotisha, regarded as the oldest astronomical treatise. An institution which occupies an important part in those early speculations is the theory of the so-called lunar zodiac, or system of lunar mansions, by which the planctary path, in accordance with the duration of the moon's rotation, is divided into twenty-seven or twenty-eight different stations, named after certain constellations (nakshatra) which are found alongside of the ecliptic, and with which the moon (masc.) was supposed to dwell successively during his circuit, The same institution is found in China and Arabia; but it is still doubtful!® whether the Hindus, as some scholars hold, or the Chaldeans, as Prof. Weber thinks, are to be credited with the invention of this theory. The principal works of this period are hitherto known from quotations only, viz., the Gdrgt Samhitd, which Prof. Kern would fix at ¢ 50 B.c., the Néradi Samhitd, and others.

The new era, which the same scholar dates from c. 250 A.D., is marked by the appearance of the five original Siddhantas (partly extant in revised redactions and in quotations), the very names of two of which suggest Western influence, viz., the Paitémaha-, Sirya-," Vasishtha-, Romaka- (t.e., Roman), and Paulisa-sid- dhéntas. Based on these are the works of the most distinguished Indian astronomers, viz., Aryabhata,!? probably born in 476 ; Varaha-mihira,!® probably 505-507; Brahma-gupta, who completed his Brahma-siddhénta in 628; Bhatta Utpala (10th century), distinguished especially as commentator of Vardha-mihira; and Bhaskara Acharya, who finished his great course of astronomy, the Siddhdnta-siromani, in 1150. In the works of several of these writers, from Aryabhata onwards, special attention is paid to mathematical (especially arithmetical and algebraic) computa- tions; and the respective chapters of Bhaskara's eompendium, viz., the Lilévatt and Vija-ganita, still form favourite textbooks of these

subjects. The question whether Aryabhata was acquainted with the researches of the Greek algebraist Diophantus (¢. 360 A.D.) remains still unsettled; but, even if this was the case, algebraic science seems to have been carried by him beyond the point attained by the Greeks. (J. E.)

9 See Prof, Aug. Miiller's paper, 7. D. M. G., 1880, p. 465.

1© See especially Prof. Whitney's essay on the Lunar Zodiae, in his Oriental and Linguistic Studies.

11 The Sérya-siddhdnta, translated by (W. D. Whitney and) E. Burgess, 1860.

12 The Aryabhatiya, edited by H. Kern, 1874.

13 The Brihat-samhitd and Yogaydtrd, editcd and translated by EH. Kern; the Laghu-jadtaka, edited by A. Weber and H. Jacobi.

14 A translation of both treatises, as well as of the respective chapters of Brahma-gupta's work, was published (1817) by H. T. Colebrooke, with an import- ane wee on the Algebra of the Hindus," reprinted in the Misc. Essays,

Sipe sg.

= sae

SANSON, Nicozas (1600-1667), a French carto- grapher, who, while it is a mistake to call him the creator of French geography, attained a great and well-deserved eminence in his profession. He was born of an old Picardy family of Scottish descent, at Abbeville, on December 20, 1600, and was educated by the Jesuits at Amiens. The mercantile pursuit by which he first sought to make his living proved a failure, but in 1627 he was fortunate enough to attract the attention of Richelieu by a map of Gaul which he had constructed while still in his teens, and through the cardinal's influence he was appointed royal engineer in Picardy and geographer to the king. How

highly his services were appreciated by his royal patrons is shown by the fact that when Louis XIII. came to Abbeville he preferred to become the guest of Sanson (then employed on the fortifications), instead of occupying the sumptuous lodgings provided by the town. Sanson's success was embittered by a quarrel with the Jesuit Labbe, whom he accusedof plagiarizing him in his Pharus Galliz Antique, and by the death of his eldest son Nicolas, killed during the disturbances of the Fronde (1648). He died at Paris July 7, 1667. Two younger sons, Adrien (died 1708) and Guillaume (died 1703), suc- ceeded him as geographers to the king.

Sanson's principal works are Gallizw Antique Descriptio Geo- graphica, 1627; Britannia, 1638, in which he seeks to identify Strabo's Britannia with Abbeville (!) ; Za France, 1644 ; In Pharwm Gallie Antique Philippi Labbe Disquisitiones, 1647-1648; and Geographia Sacra. In 1692 Jarllot collected Sanson's maps in an Atlas Nouveau. His cartography is generally bold and vigorous.

SANSOVINO, AnpRrea Contuccr DEL Monte (1460- 1529), an able Florentine sculptor, who lived during the rapid decline of plastic art which took place from about the beginning of the 16th century; he was the son of a shep- herd called Niccolo di Domenico Contucci, and was born in 1640 at Monte Sansavino near Arezzo, whence he took his name, which is usually softened to Sansovino. He was a pupil of Antonio Pollaiuolo, and during the first part of his life worked in the purer style of 15th-century Florence. Hence his early works are by far the best, such as the terra-cotta altar-piece in Santa Chiara at Monte Sansavino, and the marble reliefs of the Annunciation, the Coronation of the Virgin, a Pieta, the Last Supper, and various statuettes of saints and angels in the Corbinelli chapel of 8. Spirito at Florence, all executed between the years 1488 and 1492. From 1491 to 1500 Andrea worked in Portugal for the king, and some pieces of sculpture by him still exist in the monastic church of Coimbra.1 These early reliefs show strongly the influence of Donatello. The beginning of a later and more pagan style is shown in the statues of St John baptizing Christ which are over the east door of the Florentine baptistery. This group was, however, finished by the weaker hand of Vincenzo Danti. In 1502 he executed the marble font at Volterra, with good reliefs of the Four Virtues and the Baptism of Christ. In 1505 Sansovino was invited to Rome by Julius II. to

make the monuments of Cardinal Ascanio Maria Sforza and Cardinal Girolamo della Rovere for the retro-choir of S. Maria del Popolo. The architectural parts of these monuments and their sculptured foliage are extremely graceful and executed with the most minute delicacy, but the recumbent effigies show the beginning of a serious decline in taste. Though skilfully modelled, they are uneasy in attitude, and have completely lost the calm dignity and simple lines of the earlier effigies, such as those of the school of Mino da Fiesole in the same church. These tombs had a very important influence on the monumental sculpture of the time, and became models

1 See Raczinski, Les Arts en Portugal, Paris, 1846, p. 344.

which for many years were copied by most later sculptors with increasing exaggerations of their defects. In 1512, while still in Rome, Sansovino executed a very beautiful group which shows strongly the influence of Leonardo da Vinci, both in the pose and in the sweet expression of the faces; it isa group of the Madonna and Child with St Anne, now over one of the side altars in the church of S. Agostino. From 1513 to 1528 he was at Loreto, where he cased the outside of the Santa Casa in white marble, covered with reliefs and statuettes in niches between engaged columns; a small part of this gorgeous mass of sculpture was the work of Andrea himself, but the greater part was executed by Montelupo, Tribolo, and others of his numerous school of assistants and pupils. Though the general effect of the whole is very rich and magnificent, the individual pieces of sculpture are both dull and feeble, showing the unhappy results of an attempt to imitate Michelangelo’s grandeur of style. The earlier reliefs, those by Sansovino himself, are the best, still retaining some of the sculpturesque purity of the older Florentines. He died in 1529.

SANSOVINO, Jacoro (1477-1570), was called San- sovino after his master Andrea (see above), his family name being Tatti. Born in 1477, he became a pupil of Andrea in 1500, and in 1510 accompanied him to Rome, devoting himself there to the study of antique sculpture. Julius IT. employed him to restore damaged statues, and while working in the Vatican he made a full-sized copy of the Laocoon group, which was afterwards cast in bronze, and is now in the Uffizi at Florence. In 1511 he returned to Florence, and began

the statue of St James the Elder, which is now in a niche in one of the great piers of the Duomo. Under the influence of his studies in Rome he carved a nude figure of Bacchus and Pan, now in the Bargello, near the Bacchus of Michelangelo, from the contrast with which it suffers much. Soon after the com- pletion of these works, Jacopo returned to Rome, and designed for his fellow-citizens the grand church of 8. Giovanni dei Fiorentini, which was afterwards carried out by Antonio Sangallo the younger. A marble group of the Madonna and Child, now at the west of 8. Agostino, was his next important work. It is heavy in style, and quite with- out the great grace and beauty of the Madonna and St Anne in the same church by his master Andrea. In 1527 Jacopo fled from the sack of Rome to Venice, where he was welcomed by his friends Titian and Pietro Aretino; henceforth till his death in 1570 he was almost incessantly occupied in adorning Venice with a vast number of magnificent build- ings and many second-rate pieces of sculpture. Among the latter Jacopo's poorest works are the colossal statues of Neptune and Mars on the grand staircase of the ducal palace, from which it is usually known as the " Giants' Staircase." His best are the bronze doors of the sacristy of St Mark, cast in 1562; inferior to these are the series of six bronze reliefs round the choir of the same church, attempted imitations of Ghiberti's style, but unquiet in design and unsculpturesque in treatment. In 1565 he completed a small bronze gate with a graceful relief of Christ surrounded by Angels; this gate shuts off the altar of the Reserved Host in the choir of St Mark's.

Jacopo's chief claim to real distinction rests upon the nunierous fine Venetian buildings which he designed, such as the public library, the mint, the Scuola della Miseri- cordia, the Palazzo de' Cornari, and the Palazzo Delfino, with its magnificent staircase,—the last two both on the grand canal; a small loggia which he built at the foot of the great Campanile, richly decorated with sculpture, has recently been pulled down and much damaged, but is being rebuilt. Among his ecclesiastical works the chief are the church of 8. Fantino, that of 8. Martino, near the

arsenal, the Scuola di §. Giovanni degli Schiavoni, and, finest of all, the church of 8. Geminiano, near St Mark's, a very good specimen of the

Tuscan and Composite orders used with the graceful freedom of the Renaissance. —

The otherwise prosperous course of the artist's life was interrupted by one serious misfortune. In 1545 the roof of the public library, which he was then constructing, gave way and fell in; on account of this he was im- prisoned, fined, and disniissed from the office of chief architect of the cathedral, to which he had been appointed by a decree of the signoria on April 7, 1529. Owing, however, to the intervention of his friends, Titian, Pietro Aretino, and others, he was soon set at liberty, and in 1549 he was restored to his post. He did good service to the cathedral of St Mark's by strengthening its failing domes, which he did by encircling them with bands of iron, Sansovino's architectural works have much beauty of proportion and grace of ornament, a little marred in some cases by an excess of sculptured decoration, though the carving itself is always beautiful both in design and execution. He used the classic orders with great freedom and tasteful invention—very different from the dull schol- asticism of most of his contemporaries. His numerous pupils were mostly men of but little talent.

SANTA ANNA, Antonio Lopez pe (1798-1876), for many years a prominent figure in the troubled politics of Mexico, was born at Jdlapa on February 21, 1798, Having entered the army, he joined the party of IruRBIDE (g.v.) in 1821, and gained distinction and promotion by the part he took in the surprise and capture of Vera Cruz. In the following year he quarrelled with his chief and himself became leader of a party, but without in the first instance achieving success. In 1828, however, he sided with Guerrero, who made him war minister, and also commander-in-chief after a successful operation against the Spaniards in 1829. He successively accomplished the overthrow of Guerrero in favour of Bustamante and of Bustamante in favour of Pedraza, and finally in March 1833 was hiniself elected president. In 1836 he was defeated and taken by the Texan revolutionists, but returned to Mexico the following year. In 1844, after considerable vicissitudes, he was deposed and banished, but he was brought back once more to the presidential chair in 1846. This second term of office lasted till the fall of Mexico in 1847, when he resigned. He was niade presi- dent again in 1853, but finally abdicated in 1855. In 1867 he took part in "

pronunciamientos” which led to his banishment. In 1874 he was permitted to return to his native soil, where he died two years afterwards.

SANTA CRUZ. See Samnt Crorx. For Santa Cruz DE SantrIaco see Canary Istanps, vol. iv. p. 799; and for Santa Cruz or Nirenpr Istanp see New HEBRIDES, vol. xvii. p. 395.

SANTA FE, a city of the Argentine Republic, capital of the province of Santa Fé (38,600 square miles; 189,000 inhabitants), occupies an area of 400 acres, 90 miles north of Rosario, on the north-east or left bank of the

Rio Salado at its junction with the Paran4, in a district:

subject to periodical inundations. It is the seat of the governor, the bishop, and the legislature, and contains a cathedral, a Jesuits’ church (1654) and college (the latter an important institution with 400 boarders), a new bishop’s palace, a town-hall (with a fine tower), extensive infantry barracks, and a large market. A foundry, a macaroni-factory, oil-factories, and tile-works are the chief industrial establishments. The population in 1881 was 10,400, a decrease since 1869. Santa Fé was founded in 1573 by Juan de Garay.

SANTA FE, a city of the United States, capital of New Mexico, stands in a wide plain surrounded by moun-

tains about 7000 feet above the sea, in 35° 41’ N. lat. and 105° 46’ W. long., near the Santa Fé Creek, which joins the Rio Grande del Norte 14 or 15 miles farther south- west. It is connected by a branch line (18 miles) with the Atchison, Topeka, and Santa Fé Railroad at Lamy Junction, 835 miles from Atchison. The houses are mainly constructed of adobe, and the irregularity of the plan shows how recently the city has come under the influence of “American” progress. Among the more noteworthy buildings are the new capitol, for which funds were voted in 1883, the Roman Catholic cathedral, erected since 1870, and the old governor’s palace, a long low edifice occupying one side of the principal plaza, which now con- tains a soldiers’ monument in honour of those who fell in the service of the

United States. Santa Fé isan important ceutre of trade, and the development of the mining in- dustries in the vicinity is rapidly increasing its prosperity. The population was 6635 in 188].

Onc of the oldest cities of North America, Santa Fé de San Francisco was the capital of New Mexico from 1640, but reinained in comparative seclusion till the carly part of the present century, when it becaine a main station on what was called the Santa I'é Trail—the trade route between tlfe United States and Mexico, or more especially between St Louis and Chihuahua.

SANTA FE DE BOGOTA. See Bocori.

SANTAL PARGANAS, Tue, a British district in the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, forming the southern portion of the Bhagalpur division, and lying between 23° 48' and 25° 19' N. lat., and between 86° 30' and 87° 58' E. long. The total area of the district is 5456 square miles; it is bounded on the north by the districts of Bhagalpur and Purniah, on the east by Maldah, Murshi- dabad, and Birbhum, on the south by Bardwdn and Manbhuim, and on the west by Hazdribagh and Bhaégalpur. Three distinct types of country are represented within the area of the Santal Parganas; in the east a sharply defined belt of hills stretches for about a hundred miles from the Ganges to the Naubil River; west of this point a rolling tract of long ridges with intervening depressions covers an area of about 2500 square miles; while the third type is exemplified by a narrow strip of flat alluvial country about 170 miles long, lying for the most part along the loop line of the East Indian Railway. The Rajmahal Hills are the only range of any importance in the district, and occupy an area of 1366 square miles; but they nowhere exceed 2000 feet in height. Several other hill ranges occur, which are with few exceptions covered almost to their summits with dense jungle; they are all difficult of access; there are, however, numerous passes through all the ranges. Coal and iron are found in almost all parts of the country, but the coal is of such inferior quality that all attempts to work it have failed. Wild animals, including tigers, leopards, bears, hyzenas, deer, and wild pig, with a variety of small game, are common almost everywhere. The climate varies: the alluvial tract has the damp heat and moist soil characteristic of Bengal, while the undulating and hilly portions are swept

by the hot westerly winds of Behar, and are very cool in the winter months. The average annual rainfall is over 50 inches. The district is traversed on the east by the loop line, and on the west by the chord line, of the East Indian Railway ; the total length of railway is about 130 miles.

The census of 1881 disclosed a total population in the Santal Parganas of 1,568,093 (males 785,380, females 782,763) ; Hindus numbercd 847,590, Mohammedans 108,899, and Christians 3057.

The total number of persons belonging to the aboriginal tribes was 605,517, of whom the great majority (537,546) were Santals,

as TS

SAN—SAN

For an account of this interesting tribe, see INDIA, vol. xii. p. 778 The population is almost entirely rural; only two towns contain over 5000 inhabitants each, viz., Deoghar, which is the only municipality, with a population of 8015, and Shahebgunge with 6512. The administrative headquarters are at Naya Dumka.

Rice forms the staple crop of the Santal Parganas, and is largely grown in the alluvial strip of country which runs along the eastern boundary of the district. Other crops are millets, wheat, barlcy, maize, various pulses and oil-seeds, jute, flax, sugar-cane, cotton, and indigo. The district is singularly destitute of any local manufactures: iron is roughly smelted by Kol settlers from Chutia Nagpur; coarse cloth is woven as a domestic manufacture, and bell-metal utensils are made to a small extent ; indigo is also manufactured. ‘The trade is carried on by means of permanent markets. Exports consist chiefly of ricc, Indian corn, oil seeds, tasar-silk cocoons, lac, small-sized timber, and hill bamboos; while European piece goods, salt, and brass or bell-metal utensils for house- hold use compose the bulk of the imports. In 1888-84 the gross revenue of the district amounted to £45,487, of which the land- tax ylelded £22, 556.

The Santals have been known to the British since the latter part of the 18th century. In 1832 two Government officials were deputed to demarcate with

solid masonry pillars the present area of the Daman-i-Koh, or skirts of the Kills. The permission to Santals to settle in the valleys and on the lower slopes of the Daman stimulated Santal. immigration to an enormous extent. The Hindu money-lender soon made his appcarance amongst them, and led to the rebellion of 1855-56. The insurrection was not quelled without bloodshed, but it led to the establishment of a form of administration congenial to the immigrants ; and a land settlement has since been carried out on conditions favourable to the occupants of the soil.

SANTA MARIA. See Capva.

SANTA MAURA, or Levcapia (Aevxdda, ancient Aevkas), one of the Jonian Islands, with an area of 110 square miles and a population (1880) of 25,000 (20,892 in 1870), lies off the coast of Acarnania (Greece), immediately south of the entrance to the Gulf of Arta. It first appears in history as a peninsula (Odyssey, xxiv. 378), and, if the statements of ancient authorities be accepted literally, it owed its existence as an island to the Corinthians, whose canal across the isthmus was again after a long period of disuse opened up by the Romans. But it is probable rather that Leucas was then as now separated from the mainland by a shallow lagoon (two feet or less). During the English occupation a canal for boats of four to five feet draught was formed from Fort Santa Maura to the town, but the 16-feet-deep ship canal which it was proposed (1844) to carry right across the lagoon or subinerged isthmus to Fort Alexander was only partially excavated! Santa Maura, measuring about 20 miles from north to south and 5 to 8 miles in breadth, is a rugged mass of limestone and bituminous shales (partly Tertiary), rising in its principal ridges to heights of 2000 and 3000 feet, and presenting very limited areas of level ground. The grain crop suffices only for a few months' local consumption; but olive oil of good quality is produced to the extent of 30,000 to 50,000 barrels per annum; the vineyards (in the west especially) yield 100,000 barrels of red wine (bought mainly by Rouen, Cette, Trieste, and Venice); the currant, introduced about 1859, has gradually come to be the principal source of wealth (the crop averag- ing 2,500,000 ib); and small quantities of cotton, flax, tobacco, valonia, &c., are also grown. 'The salt trade, for- merly of importance, has suffered from Greek customs regulations. Though to a large extent unlettered and superstitious, the inhabitants are industrious and well-

behaved. The chief town (5000 inhabitants) properly called Amaxikhi, but more usually Santa Maura, after the neighbouring fort, is situated at the north-east end of the island opposite the lagoon. In the south-west is the village of Vasiliki, where a wharf protected by a mole

- As a six hours' shortening of the steam-passage between the Levant and the Adriatic would be effected by such a channel the scheme has again been taken up. According to M. Pyat, the engineer employed to report, the dredging could be done for 1,200,000 francs.

was built in 1877-78 for shipping the currant crop. Re- mains of Cyclopean and polygonal walls exist at Kaligoni (south of Amaxikhi), probably the site of the ancient acropolis of Neritus (or Nericus), and of the later and lower Corinthian settlement of Leucas. From this point a Roman bridge seems to have crossed to the mainland. Between the town and Fort Santa Maura extends a remarkably fine Turkish aqueduct partly destroyed along with the town by the earthquake of 1825. Forts Alex-

'ander and Constantine commanding the bridge are relics

of the Russian occupation ; the other forts are of Turko- Venetian origin. The magnificent cliff, some 2000 feet high, which forms the southern termination of the modern island still bears the substructions of the temple of Apollo Leucatas (hence the modern name Capo Ducato). At the annual festival of Apollo a criminal was obliged to plunge from the summit into the sea, where, however, an effort was made to pick him up; and it was by the same heroic leap that Sappho and Artemisia, daughter of Lygdamis, are said to have ended their lives.

SANTANDER, a province in the north of Spain, on the shores of the Bay of Biscay, bounded on the E. by Biscaya, on the §. by Burgos and Palencia, and on the W. by Leon and Oviedo. 'The area is 2113 square miles. The province is mountainous in character, being traversed from east to west by the Cantabrian chain, which in the Picos de Europa reaches a height of over 8700 feet, and sends off numerous branches to the sea. On the north side of the range the streams are all short, the principal being the Ason, the Miera,

the Pas, the Besaya, the Soja, and the Nansa, which flow into the Bay of Biscay; part of the province lies to the southward of the watershed, and is drained by the upper Ebro. The valleys of Santander are fertile, and produce various kinds of grain, maize, pulse, hemp, flax, and vegetables. Oranges, lemons, grapes, figs, and other fruits flourish, and forests of oak, chestnut, walnut, and fir cover the hills. Ricli pasturage for cattle and swine and a good supply of game are also found among them, and the fisheries along the coast are likewise productive. Foreign capital has been success- fully applied to the development of lead, coal, and iron mines ; and the mountains contain quarries of limestone, marble, and gypsum, and abound with mineral springs. The district was part of the Roman province of Cantabria, which, after passing under the empire of the Goths, became the principality of the Asturias. The portion called Asturia de Santa Juliana, or Santillana, was included in the kingdom of Old Castile, and, on the subdivision of the old provinces of Spain in 1833, became the province of Santander. The people are of a purer race than in parts of Spain subjected by the Moors, and both in mental and physical qualities show their Teutonic ancestry. The industries of the country are consequently in a flourishing condition, and, besides the natural products above men-

‘tioned, there are foundries, breweries, distilleries, tanneries ;

cotton, linen, cloth, and flour mills; brick and tile works; and manufactories of hats, soap, buttons, preserves, and chocolate. The province is traversed from north to south by the railway and high road from Santander by Palencia to Madrid ; the highest point on the railway (Venta de Pazozal) is 3229 feet above the sea. For purposes of administration the province is divided into eleven partidos judiciales, containing 103 ayuntamientos, and returns two senators and five deputies to the cortes. The population in 1877 numbered 235,299. Besides Santander, the capital, the only places having within the municipal boundaries a population exceeding 5000 are Castro-Urdidles (7623), Valle de Pielagos (5500), Torrelavega (7192), and Valderredible (7240). Santofia has 4428, and Laredo 4384. Santillana (1776) has a fine Roman- XX. — 38

esque church and cloister (12th century), and was the birthplace of the architect Juan de Herrera.

SANTANDER (Portus Blendium, Fanum S. Andre), capital of the above province, 316 miles by rail from Madrid, is the seat of a bishopric and one of the chief seaports of Spain. The population in 1877 numbered 41,000, having almost doubled in the preceding quarter of a century, and the trade of the port has increased in an even greater proportion. The town is situated on the inside of a rocky peninsula, which separates it from the Bay of Biscay and forms a magnificent harbour from 2 to 3 miles wide and 4 miles long. The entrance is at the eastern extremity of the promontory, and, though some- what difficult for sailing vessels in certain winds, has depth of water sufficient for the largest ships. The total burthen of the vessels entered in 1882 amounted to 104,449 tons British and 500,342 tons of other nations. The chief exports consisted of iron ore (20,966 tons) to Great Britain, and wine (191,400 galls.) and olive oil (8000 galls.) to France. The city is divided into an upper and a lower town, and contains few buildings of interest. The cathedral was originally a Gothic structure, but has been so altered by later additions that little of the old work remains. In the crypt, or Capilla del Cristo de Abajo, there is a font of Moorish workmanship which has some interest. The castle of S. Felice contains a prison which was probably the first example of the radiating system of construction. Besides these buildings there are the theatre, which was formerly a convent, the hospital, and the Jesuits' church. The city is essentially modern, and its chief features are its well-built houses, its quays, and its factories. In addition to the manufactures of the province mentioned above, Santander has gas-works, phosphorus, sulphuric acid, and sail manufactories, and a large cigar factory, formerly a convent, where over 1000 hands are employed. Besides being a trading port Santander is also a watering-place which enjoys peculiar advantages of climate. The bathing establishment of the Sardinero, on the seaward side of the strip of land the town is built on, offers all the attractions usual to Continental watering-places. There is communication by rail with Madrid and by steamer with Liverpool, London, and Ham- burg, as well as with Havana and the seaports of Spain.

The port was in 1753 made one of the “ puertos habilitados” or ports privileged to trade with America, and in 1755 it was created a ‘‘ciudad.” Charles V. landed here in 1522 when he came to take pos- session of the Spanish crown, and from this portCharlesI. of England embarked on his return from his ill-fated visit ¢xcognito in search of a wife. The city was sacked by the French under Soult in 1808; but so little gratitude did the people show to their English allies that it was with the greatest difficulty supplics were found for the troops.

SANTAREM, a city and bishop’s see of Portugal, in the province of Estremadura, on the declivities of the right bank of the Tagus, 463 miles by rail from Lisbon. It has the ruins of an old castle, well known in Portuguese history as a royal residence, especially in the Middle Ages, and several of its churches are of historic and architectural interest. A considerable trade is carried on, and the popu- lation was 7001 in 1878.

Santarem, so named after a certain St Irene, is identified with the ancient Scallabis Presidium Julium. The death of Diniz Ts and the birth, abdication, and death of Don Henrique the cardinal king, all occurred in the city; it gave its name to Joao de Santarem, one of the 15th-century navigators ; and Fernando I. and Cabral, discoverer of Brazil, were buried within its walls. The Miguelists were completely routed here by Napier and Villaflor in 1834,

SANTAREM, a city of Brazil, at the head of a comarca in the province of Pard, is situated on the right bank near the mouth of the Rio Tapajés, a right-hand tributary of the Amazon. It is a clean and neat-looking place, with rows of whitewashed houses in the European town, clusters of palm-thatched huts in the Indian suburb, a large church, the ruins of a stone fort, and, standing apart,

the municipal buildings with tne court-house. As the Rio Tapajés is navigable for steamers to the rapids, 170 miles above Santarem, and for boats to within a short distance of Diamantino, the town carries on a considerable trade with Matto Grosso and the country along the banks, The population and importance of the place, originally founded by a Jesuit

missionary for his converts in 1661, and made a city in 1848, are steadily increasing. SANTERRE, Jean Baptiste (1650-1717), French painter, born at Magny near Pontoise in 1650, was a pupil of Bon Boulogne. . He began life as a_portrait- painter, but refused to paint any except those who pleased his taste; he was incapable of managing the large com- positions then in vogue, but enjoyed for half a century a great reputation as a painter of the nude. He had opened his studio to a class of young girls, to whom he gave lessons, and who served him as models. Much, however, of Santerre's work of this class was destroyed by himself in a fit of lively repentance after a serious illness which attacked him late in life. He died at Paris on November 21,1717. His paintings, in consequence of his extreme care in choice of vehicles and pigments, have stood well. His Portrait of a Lady in Venetian Costume (Louvre), and his Susanna at the Bath (Louvre, engraved by Porporati), the diploma work executed by him in 1704, when he was received into the Academy, give a good impression of Santerre's taste and of his elaborate and careful method. SAN THIAGO. See Carz Verb Isianps, vol. v. p. 60. SANTIAGO, the capital of Chili, and the chief town of a province of its own name (now 5223 square miles in extent, reduced in 1883 by the formation of the new pro- vince of O'Higgins), is situated in 33° 26' 42" S. lat. and 70° 40' 36" W. long., at a height of about 1830 feet above the sea, in a wide and beautiful plain between the main range of the Andes and the less elevated heights of Cuesta del Prado, 115 miles east of Valparaiso by rail. In the

1 of Santa Lucia, with

Environs of Santiago,

its two fortresses,—recently converted into a pleasure- ground, with theatres, restaurants, and monuments; and immediately to the north-north-west and north-east are those known as Colina, Renca, and San Cristébal. The snow-clad range of the Andes, in which the summits of La Chapa and Los Amarillos are conspicuous, is visible from Santiago, A turbid mountain stream, the Mapocho, flows west through the heart of the city to join the Colina and ultimately the Maipé or Maipo ; its floods were some- times, as in 1609 and 1783, the cause of great damage till the construction of a solid embankment was undertaken

a

as

under the government of Ambrosio O'Higgins; it is now crossed by several handsome bridges, the oldest of which, a structure of eleven arches, dates from 1767-1779, From the very first Santiago was laid out with great regularity in parallelograms ; but owing to the frequency of earth- quakes the dwelling-houses are seldom built of more than a single story in height. The cathedral, situated in the Plaza de la Independencia, is the oldest of the churches. Originally erected by Pedro Valdivia and rebuilt by Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza, it was destroyed by the earthquake of 1647 and rebuilt on a new plan subsequent to 1748. It is 351 feet long by 92 feet wide, but has no very striking features. Among the other ecclesiastical buildings are the church of San Agustin, erected in 1595 by Cristdébal de Vera and in modern times adorned with a pillared portico; the churches of San Francisco, La Merced, and Santo Domingo, dating from the 18th century; the Augustine nunnery founded by Bishop Medellin in 1576; the Carmen Alto, or church of the Carmelite nunnery, an elegant little Gothic building; the stately church of the Reformed Dominicans, rich in marble monolithic columns; and the chapel erected in 1852 to the memory of Pedro Valdivia next to the house in which he is reputed to have lived. The public cemetery, recently secularized, has a large number of marble and bronze monuments,—mostly from Italy. Among the secular buildings the more noteworthy are the palace of the intendency, the old presidential palace (popularly Las Cajas), the congress buildings, the mint, the palace of justice, the municipal theatre. The present university of Santiago dates from 1842,—the older Uni- versidad de San Felipe, which had been established in 1747, having been closed in 1839. It occupies a fine building in the Alameda, and alongside stands the great National Institute of Secondary Education. In 1882 the university was attended by 920 students and the institute by 1059. The city also contains a school of arts and trades (1849), a musical conservatorio (1849), a national museum, a military school established in 1842 and enlarged on the abolition of the naval military school at Valparaiso in 1872 (now re-established), and a school of

agriculture founded by the Agricultural Society chartered in 1869. The National Library is a noble collection of books dating from 1813, especially rich in works relating to America; there is also a good library in the National Institute. Besides the official journal, Santiago has four daily papers, as well as various reviews and other serials. Besides the Alameda, a great tree-planted avenue decorated with statues (the Abbé Molina, Generals San Martin, Carrera, O'Higgins, and Freire, &c.), the principal open spaces in Santiago are the Plaza de la Independencia, the Canadilla, a broad tree-bordered avenue, the Alameda de Yungay, the Campo de Marte (where are the Penitentiary, a prison built and administered according to the most approved modern principles, and the large Artillery Park), the Quinta Normal de Agricultura, which comprises zoological and botanical gardens, and the large area in which the Inter- national Exhibition of 1875 was held. As the Mapocho was unfit for drinking, water was introduced about 1865 by an aqueduct 5 miles long. The prevailing winds at Santiago are from the south and south-west. On an average rain falls for 216 hours in the course of the year, mostly between May and September. Snow and hail are both extremely rare. Earthquakcs are so frequent that as INany as twenty-seven or thirty shocks are sometimes registered in a year. Those which have proved really disastrous are the earthquakes of 17th March 1575, 13th May 1647, 8th July 1730, 19th November 1822, and 20th February 1835. The population of Santiago, which was returned in 1865 as 168,553 (79,920 males and 88,633 females), had increased to 200,000 in 1883.

It was in February 1541 that Pedro de Valdivia, one of Pizarro's captaius, founded the city of Santiago del Nuevo Estremo in accordance with a vow he had made at Cuzco. The place has all along held an important position in Chilian history, but perhaps none of the events with which it is associated sent such a sensation through the world as the burning of the Jesuit church with the loss of more than two thousand lives in the flames (8th December 1868).

SANTIAGO DE COMPOSTELLA, the former capital of Galicia, in the north-west of Spain, situated in 42° 52' 30" N. lat. and 8° 30' 6" W. long., 514 miles west- by-south from Lugo, and 32 miles south-by-west from Corunna, in the province of that name. It lies on the eastern slope of the Monte Pedroso, surrounded by mountains which draw down incessant rain

that gives the granite buildings of its deserted streets an extra tint of melancholy and decay. The city is still the seat of a university and of an archbishopric, which lays claim to the primacy of all Spain, but its former glories have quite departed. In the Middle Ages its shrine, which contained the body of St James the Great, was one of the most famous in Europe, and gathered crowds of pilgrims from all parts. The city became, in fact, the focus of all the art and chivalry of neighbouring Christendom, and a spot where conflicting interests could meet on neutral ground. But the days of pilgrimages are past, and, though the Congregation of Rites declared in 1884 that the cathedral still enshrines the veritable body of the apostle, pilgrims are scarcely more often seen than in any other cathedral town. The trade of Santiago can never have been otherwise than dependent on the crowds of pilgrims who visited the shrine. It now only survives in the silversmiths' shops on the Plaza de los Plateros, which still have a steady sale for artistic pieces of peasant jewellery. Otherwise it consists in mere local traffic in cattle, linen, silk, leather, hats, and paper. There is communication by rail with the little seaport of Carril on the west coast. The population within the municipal boundaries was 23,000 in 1885.

The relics of the saint were said to have been discovered in 835 by Theodomir, bishop of Iria, who was guided to the spot by a star, whence the name (Campus Stellz). A chapel was forthwith erected, and the bishopric was transferred thither by a special bull of Pope Leo II]. A more substantial building was begun in 868, but was totally destroyed in 997 by Almanzor, who, however, respected the sacred relics. On the reconquest of the city by Bermudo Ill. the roads which led to it were improved by that monarch, and pilgrims began to flock to the shrine, which fast grew in reputation. In 1078 the erection of the present cathedral was begun during the episcopate of Diego Pelaez, and was con- tinued until 1188, when the western doorway was completed. It is a cruciform building in the Romanesque style, 280 feet long, 60 feet wide, and 70 feet high, and keeps its original form in the interior, but is disfigured externally by much poor late work. Besides the classic dome and clock-tower, the two western towers have been raised to a height of 220 feet and crowned with cupolas, and between them has been erected a classic portico, above which is a niche containing a statue of St James. The facade was the work of Casas y Noboa in 1738, and the statue was by Ventura Rodriguez in 1764. The design is mediocre, and gains its

chief effect from forming part of an extended architectural composition on the Plaza Mayor, a grand square which is surrounded on all sides by public buildings. The ground rises to the cathedral, which is reached by a magnificent quadruple flight of steps, flanked by statues of David and Solomon. Access to the staircase is given through some fine wrought-iron gates, and in the centre; on the level of the Plaza, is the entrance to a Romancsque chapel, La Iglesia Baja, constructed under the portico and contemporary with the cathedral. To the north and south, and in a line with the west front, are dependent buildings of the 18th century, grouping well with it. Those to the south contain a light and elegant arcade to the upper windows, and serve as a screen to the cloisters, built in 1533 by Fonseca, afterwards archbishop of Toledo. They are said to be the largest in Spain, and are a fair example of the latest Gothic. The dclicate sculpture over the heads of the windows and along the wall of the cloister is very noticeable. On the north of the cathedral is the Plazuela S. Juan, where the peasants collcct to do their marketing. Here is the convent of S. Martin, built in 1636, which, after serving as a barrack, is now used as an ecclesiastical seminary, restored to the church. It has

a tolerable cloister and bell-tower. The north side of the cathedral | 46’S. lat. and 64° 19’ W. long., 520 feet above the sea,

is much overlaid by classieal and Churrigueresque work ; and the same treatment has been applied to the east end, where is the Puerta Santa, which is kept elosed, except in jubilee years, when it is opened by the archbishop. The corner of the south transept on the Plaza de los Plateros has been mutilated by the erection of the elock-tower, but the fagade is fortunately preserved intact. Perhaps the chief beauty of the cathedral, however, is the Portico de la Gloria, behind the western classic portal. Itis a work of the 12th century, and probably the utmost development of which round- arehed Gothie is capable. The shafts, tympana, and archivolts of the three doorways which open on to the nave and aisles are a mass of strong and nervous sculpture. The design is a general repre- sentation of the Last Judgment, and the subjects arc all treated with a quaint grace which shows

the work of a real artist. Faint traees of colour remain and give a tone to the whole work. The cathedral is at such a height from the ground that it is probable that, until the erection of the present grand staircase, the portico conld not be reached from the Plaza, but stood open to the air. There are no marks of doors in the jambs, and the entrance to the chapel beneath would have been blocked by any staircase which differed much in plan from the present one. The interior of the church is one of the purest and best examples of Romanesque work to be met with in Spain. The absence of a clerestory throws an impressive gloom over the barrel-vaulted roof, which makes the building seem larger than it is. A passage leads from the north transept to the Parroquia of San Juan, or La Corticela, a small but interesting portion of the original foundation. Many fine examples of metal work are in the cathedral, as, for instance, the two bronze ambos in the choir by Juan B. Celma of 1563, the gilt chandeliers of 1763, and the enamelled shrines of Sts Cucufato and Fructuoso. In the Capilla del Relicario are a gold crucifix, dated 874, containing a piece of the true cross, and a silver gilt custodia of 1544. The Hospicio de los Reyes, on the north of the Plaza Mayor, for the reception of pilgrims, was begun in 1504 by Enrique de Egas under Ferdinand and Isabella. It consists of two Gothic and two classic court-yards with a chapel in the centre. The gateway is fine, and there is some vigorous carving in the eourt-yards, one of which contains a graceful fountain. The suppressed Colegio de Fonseca and the adjoining convent of S. Gerdnimo have good Renaissance doorways. The university, which was created in 1504 by a bull of Pope Julius II., has fair Renaissance buildings, which date from 1532. Those of the Seminario (1777) have no merit. The chapel of the convent of S. Francisco, the cloisters of the half-ruined S. Augustin, the belfry of S. Domingo, the church of S. Feliz de Celorio, which is a modernized building of the 14th century, and the facades of several houses of the 12th and 13th centuries are also good examples of different arehitectural styles.

SANTIAGO (or ST JAGO) DE CUBA, a city and sea- port of Cuba, at one time the capital of the whole island, and now the chief town of the eastern department, is situated in 19° 57’ 7” N. lat. and 75° 54’ 3” W. long. (lighthouse), on a fine bay on the south coast. The spaci- ous and well-defended harbour is accessible to the largest vessels, but silt near the wharf allows only those drawing less than 14 feet to come alongside. The city,

which climbs a hill-side 150 feet above the bay, has considerably im- proved since 1870, though its streets are still badly paved. It contains the largest cathedral in the island, a theatre, a custom-house, barracks (1858-1880), and hospitals. Foundries, soap-works, tan-yards, and cigar factories are the only industrial establishments. The exports were valued in 1867 at £1,650,000, in 1882 at £1,032,200, and in 1883 at £722,632. Besides sugar, which forms about two- thirds of the whole, the principal articles are cocoa, rum, tobacco and cigars, coffee, honey and wax, mahogany, and copper-ore —this last at one time to the extent of 25,000 tons per annum, but now in greatly diminished quantity. The copper mines Lomas del Cobre lie on the other side of the bay inland from Punta de Sal. The estimated population is between 24,000 and 30,000.

_ Founded by Diego Velazquez in 1514, and incorporated as a city in 1522, Santiago is memorable mainly for the French oecupation and ransom in 1553, and the affair of the ship ‘‘Virginius” in 1873, which resulted in the Spanish Government paying an indemnity

to the United States for the murder of Captain Fry and his companions.

SANTIAGO DEL ESTERO, chief town of the province of Santiago in the Argentine Republic, is situated in 27°

on the banks of the Rio Dulce. It is the residence of the provincial governor and the seat of the legislature, and it ranks as the oldest European city in the republic, having been founded by Aguirre in 1552. The most conspicuous building is the cathedral, whose dome contrasts strangely by its size and evident costliness with the poverty of the rest of the town. The population is about 8000 (most of whom have a great deal of Indian blood in their veins). The railway from Rosario to Santiago (689 miles) was opened in 1884. ; SANTILLANA, INico Lopzz pz Menpoza, Marquis oF (1398-1458), Castilian poet, was born at Carrion de los Condes in Old Castile on August 19, 1398. His father, Don Diego Hurtado de Mendoza, grand admiral of Castile, having died while Iiigo was still quite young, the boy was brought up by his uncle Don Alfonso Enriquez. From his twentieth year onwards he became an increasingly prominent figure at the court of Juan II. of Castile, dis- tinguishing himself both in civil and military service; he was created Marques de Santillana and Conde del Real de Manzanares for the part he

took in the battle of Olmedo in 1445. In the protracted struggle of the Castilian nobles against the preponderating influence of Alvaro de Luna he showed great moderation, but ultimately in 1452 he joined the combination which effected the fall of the favourite in the following year. From the death of Juan II. in 1454 Mendoza took little part in public affairs, devoting himself mainly to the pursuits of literature and to pious meditation. He died at Guadalajara on March 26, 1458.

Mendoza was the first to introduce the Italian sonnet into Castile, but his productions in this class are somewhat conven- tional in style and have little to recommend them beyond the charm of smooth versification. He was much more successful in the serranilla or highland pastoral after the Provengal manner. His long-popular Centilogwio (1494), consisting of oue hundred proverbs, each rendered in an eight-line stanza, was prepared at the request of Juan II. for the instruction of Don Enrique, the heir-apparent. To the same didactic category belong the Didlogo de Bias contra Foriwna (1448) and the Doctrinal de Privados (1453). The Comedieta de Ponza is a Dantesque dream-dialogue, in octave stanzas, founded on the disastrous sea-fight off Ponza in 1435, when the kings of Aragon and Navarre along with the infante of Castile

were taken prisoners by the Genoese. The works of Santillana have been edited with commentaries by Amador de los Rios (Madrid, 1852).

SANTINI, Grovannr (1787-1877), Italian astronomer, born 30th January 1787 at Caprese, in the province of Arezzo, was from 1813 director of the observatory at Padua. He wrote Elementi di Astronomia (2 vols. 1820, 2d ed. 1830), Zeoria degli Stromenti ottict (2 vols. 1828), and a great many scientific memoirs and notices, among which are five catalogues of telescopic stars between +10° and — 15° declination, from observations made at the Padua observatory. He died June 26, 1877.

SANTO DOMINGO. See Hayrt.

SANTORIN. See TuEra.

SANTOS, a city and seaport of Brazil in the province of Sao Paulo, is situated on the north side of the island of Sio Vicente or Engua-Guacu,

which forms the west side of the harbour-bay (an inlet 34 miles deep, with soundings varying from 4 to 10 fathoms). It is a well-built town with wide airy streets, and most of the better classes have their residences at Barra Fort (4 miles out) and other suburban villages. Commercially the town has grown to great importance as the terminus of the whole railway system of this part of Brazil—the Santos and Jundiahy line (1867) running inland 87 miles and connecting with the Sao Paulo and Rio de Janeiro Railway and various other lines. The export of coffee (the great staple) in- creased from 344,800 60-kilogramme bags in 1862-3 to 537,478 in 1872-3 and 1,932,194 in 1883-4. The value of the coffee was estimated at £1,630,275 in 1870—71, and at

£3,632,838 in 1878-79. The export and import trade is estimated to circulate £10,000,000 a year. The popula- tion has increased since 1870 from 9000 to about 15,000.

As the eity of Sao Vicente, the first permanent Portuguese settle- ment in Brazil, began to deeline from its position as eapital of the southern provinees, Santos, founded by Braz Cuba in 1548-46, gradually took its place. In the 17th eentury it was besieged by the Dutch and English. The provineial assembly passed an enaetment by whieh the eity was to be ealled Cidade de Bonifacio in honour of José Bonifacio d'Andrade e Silva, the national patriot, to whom it had given birth, but the older name of Santos held its ground.

SAO LEOPOLDO, a German colony in the province of Rio Grande do Sul, Brazil, founded in 1824. It is connected with Porto Alegre by rail and also by the Rio do Jinos, a small but deep and navigable river. The inhabitants of the town and sixteen neighbouring settle- ments number in all about 20,000, and are engaged in cattle-breeding and in the culture of grain, arrow-root, and

ar. "SAONE. See RHoNE.

SAONE, Haute-, a department in the north-east of France, formed in 1790 from the northern portion of Franche Comté, and traversed by the river

Saéne. Situated between 47° 14’ and 48° 1’ N. lat. and between 5° 21 and 6° 49’ E. long., it is bounded N. by the department of the Vosges, E. by the territory of Belfort, S. by Doubs and Jura, and W. by Céte-d’Or and Haute-Marne. On the north-east, where they are formed by the Vosges, and to the south along the course of the Ognon the limits are natural. The highest point of the depart- ment is the Ballon de Servance (3900 feet), and the lowest the confluence of the Sadne and Ognon (610 feet). The general slope is from north-east to south-west, the direction followed by those two streams. In the north-east the department belongs to the Vosgian formation, consisting of pine-clad mountains of sandstone and granite; but throughout the greater part of its extent it is composed of limestone plateaus 800 to 1000 feet high pierced with crevasses and subterranean caves, into which the rain water disappears to issue again as springs in the valleys 200 feet lower down. In its passage through the depart- ment the Sadne receives from the right the Amance and the Salon from the Langres plateau, and from the left the Coney, the Lanterne (augmented by the Breuchin which passes by Luxeuil), the Durgeon (passing Vesoul), and the Ognon. The north-eastern districts are cold in climate and have an annual rainfall ranging from 36 to 48 inches. ‘Towards the south-west the characteristics become those of the Rhone valley generally. At Vesoul and Gray the rainfall only reaches 24 inches per annum.

Out of a total of 1,319,570 aeres 664,846 are arable, 375,999 under forest, 153,278 natural meadows and orehards, and 31,752 vine- yards. The agricultural population numbers 180,893 out of a total of 295,905. They possess 22,331 horses, 152,609 eattle, 63,000 sheep, 72,678 pigs, 7094 goats, more than 19,000 dogs, and 15,915 beehives (40 tons 15 cwts. of honey in 1881). Wheat is the staple crop—2,727,425 bushels in 1883; next come oats, 3,188,322 bushels ; potatoes, 8,175,673 bushels; wine, mostly of middling quality, 4,887,652 gallons (average vintage for the last ten years 6,086,652 gallons); rye, 449,308 bushels; barley, 396,940 ; meslin, 276,251; buekwheat, 63,945; maize, 64,924; millet, 154; eolza, 456 tons; beetroot, 26,365 tons; pulse, 5662 bushels; hemp, linen, tobaceo, hops. The woods, whieh cover more than a quarter of the department, are eomposed of firs in the Vosges and beeeh trees, oaks, wyeh elms, and aspens in the other districts. Kirsehwasser is manufactured at Fougerolles from the native eherries. The industrial population number 51,477 ; 550 workmen raise

143,842 tons of iron-ore yearly ; eopper, silver, and Manganese exist in the department, and gold oceurs in the bed of the Ognon. Rock-salt mines yield annually 11,000 tons of salt and the materials for a considerable manufacture of sulphurie, hydroehloric, and nitric acids, sulphate of soda, ehloride of lime, and Epsom and Glauber salts. Coal mines, with their principal centre at Ronchamp, give employment to more than 2000 workmen, and in 1883 yielded 212,680 tons of coal. Peat, limestone, plaster,

building-stone, marble, porphyry, granite, syenite, and sandstone are all worked in the department. The green porphyry pedestal of Napoleon's sarcophagus at Les Invalides and the syenite columns of the Grand Opera in Paris were eut at Servanee. Of the many mineral waters of Haute-Saéne the best known are the hot springs of Luxeuil, whieh, with their sixteen saline and two chalybeate sourees, diseharge over 127,000 gallons in the 24 hours and are used for bathing and drinking. Besides forty-seven iron-working establishments (smelting furnaees, foundries, and wire-drawing mills, produeing in 1883 4875 tons of iron smelted by wood-fuel, 286 tons of refined iron and 1040 tons of sheet-iron, &e.), Haute- Sadne possesses eopper-foundries, engineering works, steel-foundries, and faetories for produeing tin plate, nails, pins, files, saws, serews, shot, ehains, agrieultural implements, loeks, spinning machinery, edge tools, &e. Window-glass is manufaetured by 105 workmen and glass wares by 300, pottery and earthenware by 220 to 230. There are also about 100 brick and tile works; the paper-mills employ 329 hands, and the 21 eotton-mills (66,700 spindles and 2518 looms, of which 154 are hand-looms) upwards of 2000. Print-works, fulling mills, hosiery faetories, and straw-hat factories are also of some aeeount ; as well as sugar-works, dye-works, saw-mills, stareh-works, ehemieal works, oil-mills, tanyards, and flour-mills. The department exports wheat (893,000 bushels), eattle, iron, wood, pottery, kirsehwasser, and eooper's wares. The Sadne provides a navigable ehannel of 40 miles, whieh is about to be eonneeted with the Moselle and the Meuse by the Canal de l'Est in eourse of eonstruction along the valley of the Coney. Gray is the great emporium of the water-borne trade, estimated at 200,000 tons per annum. 'The department has 186 miles of national roads, 3313 miles of other roads, and 235 miles of railway—the Paris-Mulhouse and Naney-Gray railways, erossing at Vesoul, and various other lines. There are three

arrondissements,—Vesoul, Gray (7254 in- habitants in the town), Lure (4360),—28 cantons, 583 communes. Haute-Sadne is in the distriet of the 7th eorps d'armée, and in its legal, ecclesiastical, and edueational relations depends on Besangon. Lnxeuil (4376 inhabitants), the most important plaee after the sub- prefeetures, is eelebrated for its abbey, founded by St Columban in 590.

SAONE-ET-LOIRE, a department of the east central region of France formed in 1790 from the. districts of Autunois, Brionnais, Chalonnais, Charollais, and MAconnais previously belonging to Burgundy. Lying between 46° 9' and 47° 9' N. lat., 3° 37' and 5° 27' E. long., it is bounded on the N. by the department of Céte d'Or, E. by that of Jura, 8.E. by Ain, 8. by Rhéne and Loire, W. by Alher and Niévre. The two streams from which it takes its name bound the department on the south-east and on the west respectively. Between these the continental watershed between the Mediterranean and the Atlantic called the Charollais Mountains runs south and north. Its altitude (2500 feet on the south) diminishes to the north in the direction of Céte-d'Or. The culminating point of the department is in the heights of Morvan, on the border of Niévre (2960 feet). The lowest point, where the Sadne leaves the department, is under 550 feet. The Sadne crosses the department from north to south, and receives on its right the Dheune, followed by the Canal du Centre and the Grosne, and on its left the Doubs and the Seille. The Loire only receives one important affluent from the right, the Arroux, which is increased by the Bourbince, whose valley is followed by the Canal du Centre. The average temperature is slightly higher at Macon than at Paris—the winters being colderand the summer hotter. The yearly rainfall (382 inches, increasing towards the hilly districts) is distributed over 135 days; there are 25 days of snow and 27 of storm.

Of a total-area of 2,116,311 aeres (this is one of the largest of the Freneh departments) 1,079,395 are arable, 371,866 forest, 292,287 natural meadows and orehards, and 106,111 vineyards. In 1880 the live-stoek eomprised 26,000 horses, 6000 asses and mules, 75,000 bulls and oxen, 150,000 eows and heifers, 56,000 ealves, 216,000 sheep, 175,000 pigs, 50,000 goats, 35,000 beehives (yielding 214 tons of honey and 52 tons of wax). The white Charollais oxen are one of the finest Freneh breeds, equally suitable for labour and fattening. No fewer than 366,252 of the

inhabitants of the de- partment out of a total of 625,559 depend on agriculture. In 1883 there was produced 3,678,276 bushels of wheat, 22,890 meslin, 1,022,037 rye; in 1880 210,375 bushels of barley, 754,875 buck-wheat, 809,325 maize, 101,970 millet, 2,107,187 oats, 13,359,307 potatoes, 38,500 pulse, 70,936 tons of beetroot, 206 tons hemp, 195

tons hempsced, 135,300 bushels colza-seed, 3177 tons colza oil. In 1883 the vintage yielded 22,636,636 gallons of wine, the average quantity of reeent years being 21,809,018 gallons. The red wines of MAeonnais (especially those of Thorins) are those in highest repute; Pouilly produees the best white wines. The industrial elasses are represented by 150,983 individuals. The coal-basin of Creusot, the sixth in importance in France, produced in 1882 1,269,783 tons. A pit at Epinac is 3937 feet deep. lron-ore was extracted in 1882 to the amount of 28,654 tons. Slate, limestone, pbuilding-stone, millstones, granite, marble, marl, plaster, bitu- minous sehists, peat, kaolin, manganesc (4360 tons per annum), and certain precious stones are also found in the department. The most celebrated mineral waters are those of Bourbon-Laney, six out of the seven springs being thermal. They are strongly saline. Metal-working is principally carried on at Creusot, which, with its 13,000 workmen and its 13 smelting furnaces, 100 puddling ovens, 4 Bessemer apparatuses and 4 Martin’s ovens, &c., produced in 1882 63,989 tons of iron (965 tons of rails, 21,984 tons of sheet-iron) and 99,828 tons of stcel (72,085 tons of rails, 7056 tons of sheet- iron). The engine works produce all sorts of maehincs, including about 100 locomotives. The Chalon braneh works turn out ships, boats, bridges, and boilers. Other foundries and forges in the de- partment produced in 1882 175,113 tons of cast iron and certain quantities of copper and bronze. The cotton manufacture employs 14,000 spindles and 2000 looms, silk 2900 spindles and 2500 hand- looms, wool-spinning 850 spindles. Other industrial establish- ments are potteries, tile-works, glass-works (6,000,000 bottles at Epinac alone), distilleries, oil-works, mineral-oil works, cooperages, tanneries, flour-mills, sugar-works—the total number being 850 with 1872 steam engines of 27,780 horse-power. The commerce of the department, especially as regards its exports, deals mainly with eoal, metals, machinery, wine, cattle, bricks, pottery, glass. It is facilitated by five navigable streams

(181 miles),—Loire, Arroux, Saénc, Doubs, Seille,—the Canal du Centre which unites Chilon-sur-Sadne with Digoin on the Loire, aud the canal from Roanne to Digoin and the lateral Loire Canal, both following the main river valley. The total length of the canals is 90 miles. There are 365 miles of national road, 7098 of other roads, and 487 miles of railway. Sadne-et-Loire forms the dioeese of Autun ; it is part of the district of the 8th corps d'armée (Bourges), and its uni- versity is that of Lyons. It is divided into five arrondissements, —Macon, Chalon-sur-Saéne, Autun, Charolles (8350 inhabitants in the town), Louhans (4280),—50 cantons, and 589 communes; the most populous commune is Creusot (28,000 inhabitants, 16,000 in the town). Montceau-les-Mines (4560) is also a mining centre. Cluny (3500) is celebrated for its abbey, now occupied by the nor- mal sehool of secondary instruction, and Paray-le-Monial (300) for its pilgrimage.

SAO PAULO, a city of Brazil, capital of a province of

the same name, is situated on the north-western slope of the Serra do Mar, on a left-hand tributary of the Tiete, a confluent of the Paranda. It is an old and irregularly built city, with some picturesque old churches and con- vents. The centre of the provincial railway system, 86 miles distant from Sanvros (¢.v.), its seaport on the Atlantic coast, and 143 miles from Rio de Janeiro, the city has developed very rapidly within recent years. One of the two academies of law which Brazil possesses is seated at Sao Paulo. The most important public buildings are the cathedral, the provincial governor's and the bishop's palaces, and the theatre. A new system of water-supply and drainage was constructed in 1879-80 by English engineers under a Brazilian company. The population of the city in 1879 numbered about 35,000. _ Hounded by the Jesuits as a college, Sio Paulo was made a town in 1560 instead of Santo André, destroyed by order of Mendo de Sa. In 1711 it became a city, in 1740 a bishopric, and in 1823 an "imperial eity."

SAO PEDRO DO RIO GRANDE DO SUL. Sce Rio GRANDE Do SUL.

SAPOR (SHAptr or SHAHPUHR), the name of three Sasdnian kings. See Persia, vol. xviii. pp. 608-610.

SAPPAN WOOD is one of several red dyewoods of commerce, all belonging to the Leguminous genus Cexsal- pina, or to the closely allied

genus Peltophorum. It isa native of tropical Asia and the Indian Archipelago, but, as It 1s one of the most esteemed of the red dyewoods, its cultivation has been promoted in the West Indies and Brazil. The wood is somewhat lighter in colour than Brazil wood and its other allies, but the same tinctorial |

principle, brazilm, appears to be common to all. See Brazit Woop, vol. iv. p. 241.

SAPPHIRE, a blue transparent variety of corundum or native alumina. It differs, therefore, from the Oriental ruby mainly in its colour. The colour varies from the palest blue to deep indigo, the most esteemed tint being that of the blue cornflower. It often happens that a crystal of sapphire is particoloured, and hence a fine cut stone may derive its tint from a deep-coloured portion at the back, instead of being uniformly tinted throughout. The sapphire is dichroic, and the colour of a fine velvety stone may be resolved by means of the dichroiscope into an ultramarine blue and a yellowish-green. The origin of the blue colour of the sapphire has not been satis- factorily determined, for, although oxide of cobalt may produce it, and is invariably used for colouring imitations of the stone, yet the presence of cobalt is not always revealed in the analysis of the sapphire. According to lapidaries the hardness of the sapphire slightly exceeds that of the ruby, and it is therefore the hardest known mineral, excepting diamond. In consequence of its great hardness it was generally mounted by the ancients in a partially rough state, the surface being polished but not cut. Notwithstanding its hardness it has been occasion- ally engraved asa gem. There seems no doubt that the ancient ocdmdepos, as well as the sapphire (20) of the Old Testament (Job xxviii. 6), was our lapis lazuli, while the modern sapphire seems to have been known under the name of taxwGos or hyacinthus (King).

The finest sapphires are obtained from Ceylon, where they occur with other gem-stones as pebbles or rolled crystals in the sands of rivers. The sapphires have generally preserved their crystalline form better than the associated rubies. Some of the slightly-cloudy Ceylon sapphires display when cut en cabochon an opalescent star of six rays, whence tliey are called

star-sapphires or asterias. The principal localities in Ceylon yielding sap- phires are Rakewana, Ratnapura, and Satawaka. A few years ago sapphires were discovered in Siam (in the pro- vince of Battambong), but the stones from this locality are mostly dull and of too dark a colour. In Burmah they occur in association with rubies, but are much less numerous. They have also been recently found in Pal- dar, north of the Chandrabagha range. The sapphire is widely distributed through the gold-bearing drifts of Victoria and New South Wales, but the colour of the stones is usually too dark. Some of the finest specimens have come from the Beechworth district in Victoria. Coarse sapphire is found in many parts of the United States, and a few stones fit for jewellery have been obtained from Corundum Hill, Macon county, North Carolina, and from the other localities mentioned under Rusby. The sapphire also occurs in Europe, being found in the basalts of the Rhine valley and of Le Puy in Velay, but not sufficiently fine for purposes of ornament. The sapphire has been artificially reproduced by similar methods to those described in the article Ruby.

SAPPHO (in Attic Greek Sarda, but called by herself Wdrdo, which is necessitated by the metre also in Anthol., ix. 190, though Alczeus, himself an AZolian and her contemporary, calls her Sarda), incomparably the greatest poetess the world has ever seen, was a native of Lesbos, and probably both was born and lived at Mytilene. For the idea that she migrated thither from Eresus is merely a conjecture to explain a perfectly imaginary difli- culty caused by the grammarians who invented another Sappho, a courtesan of Eresus, to whom to ascribe the current scandals about the poetess. She was the daughter of Scamandronymus and Cleis, of whom nothing more is known. The epistle of Sappho to Phaon, ascribed to

Ovid, says that her ‘‘ parent” died when she was six years old; if Frag. 90 refers to Sappho’s own mother, which is very doubtful, this “parent” must be her father. Her date cannot be certainly fixed, but she must have lived about the end of the 7th and beginning of the 6th cen- turies B.c., being contemporary with Alczus, Stesichorus, and Pittacus, in fact with the culminating period of AZolic poetry. But of her life very little else is

known. One of her brothers, Charaxus, who was engaged in the wine- trade between Lesbos and Naucratis in Egypt, fell in love there with a courtesan named Doricha and surnamed for her beauty Rhodopis, whom he freed from slavery and upon whom he squandered his property. Sappho wrote an ode on this, in which she severely satirized and rebuked him. Another brother, Larichus, was public cup-bearer at Mytilene,—a fact for which it was necessary to be evyevyjs, so that we may suppose Sappho to have been of good family. For the rest it is known that she had a daughter, named after her grandmother Cleis, and that she had some personal acquaintance with Alcweus. He addressed her in an ode of which a fragrant is preserved : ‘“ Violet-weav- ing, pure, sweet-smiling Sappho, I wish to say somewhat, but shame hinders me;” and she answered in another ode: ‘“‘Hadst thou had desire of aught good or fair, shame would not have touched thine eycs, but thou wouldst have spoken thereof openly.” Further than this everything is enveloped in doubt and darkness. The well-known story of her love for the disdainful Phaon, and her leap into the sea from the Leucadian promontory, together with that of her flight from Mytilene to Sicily, which has been con- nected with her love for Phaon, rests upon no evidence that will bear examination. Indeed, we are not even told whether she died of the leap or not. All critics again are agreed that Suidas was simply gulled by the comic poets when he tells us of her imaginary husband, Cercolas of Andros. The name of Sappho was by these poets con- sistently dragged in the dirt, and both the aspersions they cast on her character and the embellishments with which they garnished her life passed for centuries as undoubted history. Six comedies entitled Sappho, and two Phaon, were produced by the Middle Comedy ; and, when we consider, for example, the way in which Socrates was caricatured by Aristophanes, we are justified in put- ting no faith whatever in any accounts of Sappho which depend upon such authority, as most of our accounts appear to do.

Welcker! was the first to examine carefully the evidence upon which the current opinion of Sappho’s character rested. He found it easy to disprove, in his opinion, all the common accusations against her moral character, but unfortunately, not content with disproving actual state- ments, went on to uphold Sappho as a model of feminine virtue. Bergk and Mure both combated his views, and in the Mheinisches Museum for 1857 may be found the issucs between him and the latter clearly stated on both sides,

unfortunately with considerable acrimony. It is plain to the impartial reader that both of the controver- sialists have gone decidedly too far, but it can hardly be denicd, however much we should naturally desire to think otherwise, that Mure has very considerably the best of it. We owe thanks to Welcker for clearing the history of Sappho from several fictions, but further than this it is impossible to go; we owe thanks to Mure for preferring truth to sentiment, but we cannot disregard some points of Welcker's argument so completcly as he docs. In fact, the truth appears to be that Sappho was not, as the Attic comedy represented her, a woman uttcrly abandoned to vice, and only distinguished among the corrupt com-

pear von einem herrschenden Vorurtheil befreyt, Gottingen,

munity of Lesbos by exceptional immorality and the gift of song,—that indeed she was not notoriously immoral at all, but no worse and perhaps better than the standard of her age and country required. 'This seems clearly indi- cated by the epithet ayva, with which Alczeus addressed her. On the other hand, not merely tradition but the character of her extant fragments, with the other evidence adduced by Mure, constrain us to resign the pleasant dream of Welcker, K. O. Miiller, and their followers,—an ideal and eminently respectable head of a poetic school, with a matronly regard for her pupils, who meant by her own poems anything but what she said, and was more careful to inculcate virtue than unlimited indulgence in passion.

To leave this disagreeable question, we will next indicate briefly all that is known of her position in Lesbos. She was there the centre of a brilliant society and head of a great poetic school, for poetry in that age and place was cultivated as assiduously and apparently as successfully by women as by men. Her most famous pupils were Erinna of Telos and Damophyla of Pamphylia. Besides them we know the names of Atthis, Telesippa, Megara, Gongyla, Gyrinna, Dica, Mnasidica Eunica, and Anactoria, to whom the second ode, eis épwpevay, is said to have been addressed. The names also of two of her rivals are pre- served—Andromeda and Gorgo; but whether they also presided over similar schools or not is very doubtful, as that idea of them depends on the authority of Maximus Tyrius, which is quite worthless on this point.

In antiquity the fame of Sappho rivalled that of Homer. She was called “the poetess,” as he was called “the poet.” Different writers style her “the tenth Muse,” “the flower of the Graces,” ‘a miracle,” “the beautiful,” the last epithet referring to her Writings, not her person, which is said to have been small and dark. Her poems were arranged in nine books, on whiat principle is uncertain ; she is said to have sung them to the Mixo- Lydian mode, which she herself invented. The few remains which have come down to us amply testify to the justice of the praises lavished upon Sappho by the ancients. The perfection and finish of every line, the correspondence of sense and sound, the incomparable com- mand over all the most delicate resources of verse, and the exquisite symmetry of the complete odes raise her into the very first rank of technical poetry at once, while her direct and fervent painting of passion, which caused Longinus to quote the ode to Anactoria as an example of the sublime, has never been since surpassed, and only approached by Catullus and in the Veta Nuova. Her fragments also bear witness to a profound feeling for the beauty of nature; we know from other sources that she had a peculiar delight in flowers, and especially in the rose. The ancients also attributed to her a considerable power in satire, but in hexameter verse they considered her inferior to her pupil Erinna.

The fragments of Sappho have been all preserved by other authors incidentally. An independent fragment, ascribed to her by Blass but rejected by Bergk and of very doubtful authenticity, has been diseovered on a papyrus in the Egyptian museum at Berlin (see Rhein. Mus. for 1880, p. 287; Bergk, vol. iii. p. 704); but even if really hers it is too fragmentary to be of any value. The best edition of Sappho is to be found in Bergk’s Pociae Lyrtet Graeet, vol. iii., 4th ed., Leipsic, 1882. The only separate edition and the only complete translation in English is that of Mr Wharton

(London, 1885), in which it is unfortunately impossible for the general reader to place much reliance. (J, A. PL.)

SARABAND (Ital. Sarabanda, Zarabanda; Fr. Sara- bande), a slow dance, generally believed to have been imported from Spain in the earlier half of the 16th cen- tury, though attempts have sometimes been made to trace it to an Eastern origin. ‘The etymology of the word is very uncertain. ‘The most

probable account is that the dance was named after its inventor—a cclebrated danccr

of Seville, called Zarabanda. During the 16th and 17th centuries the saraband was exceedingly popular, alike in Spain, France, Italy, and England. Its music was in triple time—generally with three minims in the bar—and almost always consisted of two strains, each beginning upon the first beat, and most frequently ending on the second or third. Many very fine examples of it will be found among the Suites and Partitas of Handel and J. S. Bach; but by far the finest we possess is that which Handel first composed for his overture to Almira, and afterwards adapted to the words " Lascia, ch'lo pianga," in Rinaldo.

SARACENS was the current designation among the Christians of Europe in the Middle Ages for their Moslem enemies, especially for the Moslems in Europe. In earlier times the name of Saraceni was applied by Greeks and Romans to the troublesome nomad Arabs of the Syro- Arabian desert who continually harassed the frontier of the empire from Egypt to the Euphrates. It is easy to understand how, after Islam, the name came to be extended to the Moslem enemies of the empire in general, but no satisfactory explanation has been given of the reason why the Romans called the frontier tribes Saracens. It is most natural to suppose that they adopted some name of a tribe or confederation and used it in an extended sense, just as the Syrians called all these northern nomads by the name of the tribe of Tayyi'. The common derivation from the Arabic shark, " eastern," is quite untenable. Springer suggests that the word may be simply shoraké, " allies."

SARAGOSSA. See Zaracoza.

SARAKHS. See Persta, vol. xviii. p. 618.

SARAN, or Sarvn, a British district in the lieutenant- governorship of Bengal, lying between 25° 40' and 26° 38' N, lat. and 83° 58' and 85° 14' E. long. It forms one of the north-western districts of the Patna division in the Behar province, and comprises an area of 2622 square miles. Sdran is bounded on the north by the district of Gorakhpur in the North-Western

Provinces, on the east by the Bengal districts of Champaran and Tirhut, on the south by the Ganges, separating it from Shdéhdbéd and Patna districts, and on the west by Gorakhpur. It is a vast alluvial plain, possessing no mountains, and scarcely any hill or even undulations, but with a general inclina- tion towards the south-east, as indicated by the flow of the rivers in that direction. The rivers and watercourses are very numerous, few tracts being better supplied in this respect. The principal rivers besides the Ganges are the Gandak and Ghagrd, which are navigable throughout the year. There is little or no waste land, and the district has long been noted for the high state of its cultivation. Saran is beautifully wooded; mango trees are very numerous ; and it yields large crops of rice, besides other cereals, tobacco, opium, indigo, cotton, and sugar-cane. Though possessing no railways or canals, the district is well provided with roads. ‘There is very little jungle; large game is not met with, but snakes are very numerous. Saran is subject to blight, flood, and drought ; its average annual rainfall is 45 inches. The administrative head- quarters are at Chhapra.

_ The eensus of 1881 returned the population at 2,280,382 (1,083,565 males and 1,196,817 females); Hindus numbered De 010,958, Mohammedans 269,142, and Christians 282. The popu- lation is entirely agrieultural ; there are only three towns with more than 10,000 inhabitants, viz., Chhapra (51,670), Sewan (18,319), and Revelganj (12,493). Manufaetures are few and of little aeeount ; the principal are indigo, sugar, brass-work, pottery, saltpetre, and eloth. The eommeree of Saran consists ehiefly in the export of raw produce, of which the chief articles are oil-seeds, indigo, sugar, and grain of all sorts except rice; the imports eonsist prineipally of rice, salt, and European piece-goods. Revelganj is the chief trading

mart. The gross revenue of the distriet in 1883-84 amounted to £203,734, of which the land eontributed £122,612. Saran formerly

constituted one district with Champaran. The revenue areas of the two distriets were not finally separated until 1866, but the magis- terial jurisdictions were first divided in 1837.

SARAPIS. See Serapis.

SARATOFF, a government of south-eastern Russia, on the right bank of the lower Volga, having Penza and Simbirsk on the north, Samara and Astrakhan on the east, and the Don Cossacks, Voronezh, and Tamboff on the west. The area is 32,624 square miles, and the popula tion (1882) 2,113,077. The government has an irregular shape ; and a narrow strip, 140 miles long and from 20 to 45 miles wide, extending along the Volga as far south as its Sarepta bend, separates from the river the territory of the Don Cossacks. Saratoff occupies the eastern part of the great central plateau of Russia, which gently slopes towards the south so as imperceptibly to merge into the steppe region; its eastern slope, deeply cut into by ravines, abruptly falls towards the Volga. As the higher parts of the plateau range from 700 to 900 feet above the sea, while the Volga flows at an elevation of only 20 feet at Khvatynsk in the north, and is 48 feet beneath sea-level at Sarepta, the steep ravine-cut slopes of the plateau give a hilly aspect to the banks of the river. In the south, and especially in the narrow strip above mentioned, the country assumes the characteristics of true elevated steppes, intersected with waterless ravines.

Every geological formation from the Carboniferous up to the Miocene is represented in Saratoff ; the older ones are, however, mostly concealed under the Cretaceous, whose fossiliferous marls, flint-bearing clays, and iron-bearing sandstones cover broad areas. The Jurassic deposits sel- dom make their appearance from beneath them. Eocene sands, sandstones, and marls, rich in marine fossils and in fossil wood, extend over large tracts in the east. The boulder-clay of the Finland and Olonetz ice-sheet penetrates in Saratoff as far south-east as the valleys of the Medvye- ditsa and the Sura; while extensive layers of loess and other deposits of the Lacustrine or Post-Glacial period appear in the south-east and elsewhere above the Glacial deposits. Iron-ore is abundant; chalk, lime, and white pottery clay are extracted to a limited degree. The mineral waters at Sarepta, formerly much visited, have been super- seded in public favour by those of Caucasus.

Saratoff is well watered, especially in the north. The Volga, from 1 to 7 miles in width, separates it from Samara and Astrakhan for a length of 500 miles; its tributaries are but small, except the Sura, which rises in Saratoff and serves for the northward transit of timber. The tributaries of the Don are more important; the upper Medvyeditsa and the Khoper, which both have a

south- ward course parallel to the Volga and water Saratoff each for about 200 miles, are navigated notwithstanding their shallows, ready-made boats being brought in separate pieces from the Volga for that purpose. – The Ilovla, which flows in the same direction into the Don, is separated from the Volga only by a strip of land 15 miles wide; Peter I. proposed to utilize it as a channel for connecting the Don with the Volga, but the idea was never carried out, and the two rivers are now connected by the railway (52 miles) from Tsaritsyn to Kalatch which crosses the southern ex- tremity of Saratoff.

Lakes and marshes occur only in a few river-valleys. The region is rapidly drying up, and the forests diminish- ing. In the south, about Tsaritsyn, where the hills were densely covered with them a few centuries ago, they have almost wholly disappeared. In the north they still cover more than a third of the surface, the aggregate area under wood being reckoned at 2,661,000 acres. The remainder is distributed as follows :—arable land, 11,509,000 acres ; prairies and pasture lands, 3,799,000; uncultivable,

2 Se ee

peek ek TO FP F 305

2,049,800.

peasants' houses are made of clay, the corner posts and door and window frames being largely shipped from the wooded districts of the middle Volga. The climate is severe and quite continental. The average yearly tempera- tures are 41°°5 at Saratoff (January, 12°-4; July, 71°:5) and 44°-4 at Tsaritsyn (January, 13°-2; July, 74°-6). The average range of temperature is as much as 119°. The Volga is frozen for an average of 162 days at Saratoff and 153 days at Tsaritsyn. The soil is very fertile, especially in the north, where a thick sheet of black-earth covers the plateaus ; sandy clay and salt clay appear in the south.

The population is very various, emigrants from all parts of Russia being mixed with Finnish and Tartar stems and with German colonists. The Great Russians constitute 75 per cent. of the popu- lation, Little Russians 7 per cent., Germans 7, Mordvinians 6, and Tartars 3°5 per cent. The Tchuvashes

may numbcr about 11,000, Mescheriaks about 3000, and Poles about 5000. All are uncqually distributed, Little Russians being more numerous in the districts of Atkarsk, Batashoff, Tsaritsyn, and Kamyshin (18 to 13 per cent.),

the Mordvinians in Kuznctsk and Petrovsk (16 per cent.), and the

Germans in Kamyshin (40 per cent.). The immigration of the Germans took place in 1763-1765, and their wealthy colonies have the aspect of minor West-European towns (see SAMARA). :

Only 285,140 of the population reside in ten towns, the remainder (1,827,937) being distributed over 5602 villages, of which some have from 5000 to 12,000 inhabitants, and no less than 150 reckon more thau 2000. The annual mortality is 42 per 1000 (1882), but this high figure is more than compensated for by the births, which in the same year were 51 per 1000. The chief occupation is agriculture. More than one half of the arable land (6,210,000 acres) was under crops in 1881. In 1884 the returns were rye, 3,374,000 quarters (1,608,300 in 1883) ; wheat, 850,700 ; barley, 103,400 ; oats, 1,657,700 (2,432,700 in 1883) ; and various, 764,400. Drought, and sometimes also noxious insects, causc great fluctuations in the harvest ; but nevertheless almost every season leaves a considerable balance of corn forexport. Oil-yielding plants arc also cultivated ; linseed in all districts except Tsaritsyn ; mustard, both for grain and oil, extensively about Sarepta and in the Kamyshin district ; and sunflower (140,000 quarters) in the northern districts. Gardening is a considerable source of income around Saratoff, Volsk, Atkarsk, and Kamyshin. The molokandis- senters have great plantations of water-inelons, melons, pumpkins, &c. The peasants of Saratoff are no better off than those of the other governments of south-east Russia (see SAMARA). Years of scarcity are common, and invariably mean ruin for the peasants. Cattle-breeding, formerly a large source of income, is rapidly falling off. Between 1877 and 1882 there was a decrease of 271,000 head, and murrain swept away large numbers of cattle in 1883.

Manufactures are developing but slowly, the chief of them, those dealing with animal produce, being checked by the falling off in cattle-brecding. The 6500 industrial manufacturing establishments of Saratoff employed an aggregate of only 17,500 workmen, with an annual production of but

20,973,500 roubles (£2,097,350) in 1882. The most considerable were—cottons, £17,200 ; woollen cloth, £64,480 ; tanneries, £85,830; tallow, soap, wax-candles, flour, £1,217,800 ; oils, £125,360 ; distilleries, £255,780 ; iron, £15,390 ; and machinery, £37,195. Various petty tradesare rapidly develop- ing among the peasantry. Shipbuilding is carried on in the Volga villages ; wooden vessels and implements are made in the north, and pottery in several villages ; and quite recently the fabrication of lead-pencils has been added at Buturlinovka. Very many peasants have still every year to leave their homes in search of work on the Volga and elsewhere. An active trade is carried on by the mer- chants of the chief towns,—corn, hides, tallow, oils, being exported ; the merchants of Saratoff, morcover, are intermediaries in the trade of south-east Russia with the central provinces. The chief ports are Saratoff, Tsaritsyn, Kamyshin, and Khvatynsk.

Saratoff is divided into 10 districts, the chief towns of which and their populations in 1882 were as follows:—Saratoff (112,430 inhabit- auts); Atkarsk (7610); Batashoff (10,090); Kamyshin (14,460); Khvatynsk (17,650); Knznetsk (17,930); Petrovsk (15,020); Ser- dobsk (10,360); Tsaritsyn (31,220); and Volsk or Voljsk (34,930). The German colony of Sarepta, although without municipal insti- tutions, is a lively little town with 5650 inhabitants, which carries on an active trade in mustard, woollen cloth, and varions manufac- tured wares. Dubovka (13,450 inhabitants) derives its importance from its traffic with the Don ; the villages Samoitovka in the district of Batashoff and Kotoyar in Volsk have each more than 11,000 inhabitants ; Batanda and Arkadak are important grain-markcts.

The district of Saratoff has been inhabited since at least the Neolithic Period ; its inhabitants of a later epoch have left numerons bronze remains in the kurgans, but the question of their ethnological position is still unsettled. In the 8th and 9th centuries the half-

Such is the scarcity of timber that the | nomad Burtases peopled the territory and recognized the authority

of the Khazar princes. Whether the Burtases were the ancestors of the Mordvinians—as some ethnologists are inclined to admit— has not yet been determined. At the time of the Mongolian inva- sion, the Tartars took

possession of the territory, and one of their settlements around the khan's palace at Urek, 10 miles from Sara- toff, seems to have had some importance, as well as those about Tsaritsyn and Dubovka. The incursions of the Crimean Tartars devastated the country about the 15th century, and after the fall of. Kazafi and Astrakhan the territory was annexed to Moscow. Sara- toff and Tsaritsyn, both protected by forts, arose in the second half of the 16th century; but the forests and deep ravines of the terri- tory continued for two centuries more to give shelter to numerous bands of squatters, Raskolniks, aud runaway serfs, who did not recognize the authority of Moscow; they sometimes robbed the caravans of boats on the Volga and were ready to support the insur- rections both of Razin and of the impostors of the 18th century. Dmitrievsk (now Kamyshin) and Petrovsk were founded about thie end of the 17th century, and a palisaded wall was erected between the Volga and the Don, while other lines of military posts were kept in the north and west. A special "voisko" of Volga Cossacks was founded in 1731, but as they also joined the rebellions they were soon transferred to the Terek. Regular colonization may be said to have begun only at the end of the 18th century, when Catherine IJ. called back the runaway dissenters, invited German colonists, and ordered her courtiers to settle here their serfs, deported from central Russia. In this way the population of the lieutenancy, which extended also along the left bank of the Volga, reachcd 640,000 in 1777. It exceeded one million in 1817. In 1851 the territory on the left bank of the Volga was transferred to the new Samara government. ; (P. A. K.)

SARATOFYF, capital of the above government, situated on the right bank of the Volga, 532 miles by rail to the south-east of Moscow, has become one of the most import- ant cities of eastern Russia, and ranks among the very few Russian cities which have more than 100,000 inhabitants. It is picturesquely situated on the side of hills which come close down to the Volga. One of these, the Sokotova Hill (560 feet) is liable to frequent landslips, which are a con- tinual source of danger to the houses of poorer inhabitants at its base. The terrace on which Saratoff is built being intersected by two ravines, the city is divided into three parts ; the outer two may be considered as suburbs. A large village, Pokrovskaya, with about 20,000 inhabitants, situated on the opposite bank of the Volga, though in the government of Samara, is in reality a suburb of Saratoff. Apart from this

suburb, Saratoff had in 1882 a population of 112,430 (49,660 in 1830, and 69,660 in 1859). It is better built than many towns of central Russia. Its old cathedral (1697) is a very plain structure, but the new one, completed in 1825, is fine, and has a striking cam- panile. The theatre and the railway station are also fine buildings. The streets are wide and regular, and there are several broad squares. A new fine-art gallery was erected in 1884 by the Russian painter Bogoluboff, who has be- queathed to the city his collection of modern pictures and of various objects of art. A school of drawing and the public library are in the same building, which has received the name of " Radistcheff's Museum" (in memory of Radis- tcheff, the author prosecuted by Catherine IL).

Agriculture and gardening are still the support of a section of the population, who rent land in the neighbourhood of the city. The culture of the sunflower deserves special mention. The local manufacturing establishments do not keep pace with the rapidly increasing trade, and their aggregate production cannot be esti- mated at more than £450,000. The distilleries are first in import- ance ; next come the manufactures of liqueurs (£160,000), flour- mills (about £40,000), oil-works (£56,000), and tobacco-factories (abont £40,000). The city has not only a trade in corn, oil, hides, tallow, woollen cloth, wool, fruits, and various raw produce exported from Samara, but also a trade in salt from Crimea and Astrakhan, which is in the hands of the Samara merchants, and in iron from the Urals and wooden wares from the upper Volga governments. Saratoff also supplies south-eastern Russia with manufactured articles and grocery wares imported from central Russia. The traffic of the port was estimated at about 5,700,000 roubles in 1882. The shallowness of the Volga opposite the town, and the immense shoals along its right bank are, however, a great drawback. Vast sand-banks, which formerly lay above the city, have gradually shifted their position, and it is supposed that in a

a= 55

few years Saratoff will be situated on a shoal about 1 mile wide. In 1882 and 1883 steamers were compelled to discharge cargoes 50 miles below Saratoff or at the Pokrovskaya suburb on the left bank,—so that a branch

railway for conveying the cargoes of the steamers has now been constructed south of the city.

The town of Saratoff was founded at the end of the 16th century, ou the left bank of the Volga, some seven miles above the present site, to which it was removed about 1605. The place it now occupies (Sarytau, or Yellow Mountain) has been inhabited from a remote antiquity. Although founded for the maintenance of order in the Volga region, Saratoff, which was not fortified, was several times pillaged in the 17th and 18th centuries. Razin took it, and his followers kept it until 1671; the insurgent Cossacks of the Don under Butavin and Nekrasoff pillaged it in 1708 and Pugatcheff in 1774. After being placed under Kazaii and later under Astra- khan, it became the chief town of the Saratoff government in 1797.

SARATOGA SPRINGS, a village of the United States, whose mineral waters, apart from any charm of situation, have rendered it one of the most fashionable of summer resorts. It lies in the east of Saratoga county, New York, 186 miles by rail north of New York city, on a level plateau in the valley of the Hudson, not far from the junction of this river with the stream discharging from Saratoga Lake. The number and size of its hotels (some of which are among the largest in the world and can accommodate upwards of 1000 guests) and the large influx of wealthy and fashionable visitors, bringing its

10 Congress Spring 1l Cobonbiar

Scale of $Mile

#9 200

Plan of Saratoga Springs.

population up to 30,000, render Saratoga Springs anything rather than a “village.” Its resident inhabitants even num- bered 8421 in 1880 and the township contained 10,820. There are Presbyterian, Baptist, Methodist, Episcopal, and Roman Catholic churches, a large town-hall, a high school and other educational institutions, a fire department build- ing, a circular railway, and numerous private mansions. Congress Park was laid out in

1875-6. In J uly and August the racecourse of the Saratoga Racing Association attracts the best patronage of the American turf.

_The Indians seem at an early date to have kuown of the medi- cinal virtues of the High Rock Spring, and in 1767 Sir William Johnson, carried thither by a party of Mohawks, was restored to health by drinking its waters. General Schuyler cut a road through the forest from Schuylerville, and in 1784 erected the first frame house in the neighbourhood of the springs. Hotels began to be built about 1815. _ New springs have from time to time been discovered, and their number has also been increased by boring, so that now there are 28 inall. They rise ina stratum of Potsdam sandstone underlain by Laurentian gneiss, &c., and reach the surface by passing through a bed of blue clay. All are charged with carbonic acid gas. The following are among the most notable:

SA R—SAR

—Congress Spring in Congress Park, discovered in 1792 (chloride of sodium, biearbonates of lime and magnesium); Washington or Champagne Spring (1806) ; Columbian Spring (1806); Hathorn Spring (1868) ; Pavilion Spring (1839); Putnam Spring ; Geyser Spring (bored in 1870 to a depth of 140 fect and spouting 25 feet into the air); Glacier, spouting spring (bored in 1871 to 300 feet); Flat Rock Spring, known as early as 1774, but lost, and only recovered in 1884, The water from several of the springs is largely bottled and exported. The Geyser Spring (14 miles S.W.) and White Sulphur Spring and Eureka Spring (14 miles E.) are beyond the limits of the accompanying plan.

SARAWAK, a territory in the north-west of Borneo, which, reclainied from piracy and barbarism by the energy of Sir James Brooks (g.v.), was converted into an inde- pendent and prosperous state. With an area estimated at from 35,000 to 40,000 square miles, it has a population of about 250,000. The coast extends from Tanjong Datu, a prominent cape in 2° 3’ N. lat., northwards to the frontier of Brunei in 3° 10’—a distance in a straight line of about 280 miles, but, following the sinuosities, about 400 miles. Inland tlie boundaries towards the Dutch territory are hypothetically determined by the line of watershed between the streams flowing north-west and those flowing east-south-east and south-west, but the frontier

districts are to a considerable extent unexplored. Towards the coast there are tracts of low alluvial land; and some of the rivers reach the sea by deltas out of all proportion to the length of their course. The surface of the country soon, however, begins to rise and to be diversified with irregular. hills, sometimes of rounded sandstone, some- times of picturesque and rugged limestone. The Bongo Hills, in the residency of Saraéwak, are about 3000 feet high; and along the frontier, where the Seraung Mountains, the Klinkong Mountains, the Batang Lupar Mountains, &c., are supposed to form more or less continuous ranges, there are altitudes of from 4000 to 8000 feet. In some of the limestone mountains there are caves of enormous extent (a detailed account will be found in Boyle, Adven- tures among the Dyaks of Borneo, 1865). The Rejang is the largest river in Sarawak. Its sources are only 120 or 130 miles directly inland near Mount Lawi, Mount Marud (8000 feet), and Gura Peak; but it flows obliquely south- west for 350 miles, and the principal branches of its delta (the Eyan river and the Rejang proper) embrace a territory of 1600 square miles with a coast-line of 60 miles. In their upper course the headwaters have a rapid descent, and none of them are navigable above Balleh where the Rejang is deflected westward by the accession of the Balleh river. Left-hand tributaries from a low line of hills to the south—the Katibas, Nymah, Kanowit, and Kajulan rivers—continue to swell the main stream ; but there are no tributaries of any importance from the right hand, the country in that direction being drained directly seawards by a number of short rivers—the Oya, Mukah, Balinean, Tatau, and Bintulu,—of which the first three rise in the Ulat-Bulu Hills (3600 feet). At the apex of the Rejang delta lies the village and government of Sibu, and at the mouth of the Rejang branch is the important village and shipping-port of Rejang. Passing over the small river basins of the Kalukah and the Saribas we reach the Batang Lupar, which ranks next to the Rejang, and is navigable for large vessels as far as Lingga, about 30 miles from its mouth—the bar having 34 fathoms water at high tide. The value of the navigable portion of the Batang Lupar is, however, greatly lessened by the formidable bores to which it is subject; they begin about three days before full moon and change, and last about three days, rushing up the river with a crest about 6 feet high for a distance of 60 miles. In several of the other rivers a similar phe- nomenon is observed. The broad mouth of the Batang Lupar opens in the angle where the coast, which has run nearly north and south from the delta of the Rejang, turns

abruptly west; and all the rivers which reach the sea between this point and Tanjong Datu—the Sadong, the Samarahan, the Sardwak (with its tributaries the Senna, the Samban, the Poak, &c.), the Lundu, are short.

The mineral wealth of Sarawak is not unimportant. Gold washing has long been carried on in the central residency, though not with more than moderate success ; and more recently a fairly prolific gold-field has been opened in the neighbourhood of Marup, on the Batang Lupar, where there is a flourishing Chinese settle- ment. Of much greater value are the antimony ores which occur more especially in the district of the headstreams of the Sarawak, in the most various localities, occasionally as dykes in situ, but more frequently in boulders deep in the clayey soil, or perched on tower-like summits and craggy pinnacles, accessible ouly by ladders. Those rich deposits have, however, been largely exhausted, and no new ones have been discovered in other parts of the terri- tory, so that the Borneo Company (which has the monopoly of this and other minerals in the country) has been tempted to erect local furnaces to reduce the poorer qualities of ore and the refuse of the mines to regulus on the spot. A deposit of cinnabar was dis-covered by Mr Helms in 1867, at Tegora, at the foot of the Bongo Mountains, but no other occurrence of this ore of quicksilver in the territory has yet been reported. In 1876 quicksilver was exported to the value of 108,050 dollars, and in 1879 to 76,620. Coal has been worked for many years at the government mines of Simunjun, on the banks of a right-hand affluent of the Sadong; and there is known to exist at Silantck up the Lingga river (a left-hand affluent of the Batang Lupar) a very extensive coal-field, whose products, still intact, could be brought down for shipment at Lingga by a railway of some 18 miles in length. Diamonds arc occasionally found, and copper, manganese, and plumbago have been discovered, but not in paying quantitics.

Like the rest of Borneo, Sarawak is largely covered with forest and jungle. The bilian or ironwood is not only used locally but exported, especially from the Batang Lupar district, to China, where it is highly valued as a house-building and furniture timber. Gutta-percha, india-rubber (gztta-

susw), and birds' nests are also exported, but in diminishing quantities ; and their place is being taken by gambier and pepper, the cultivation of which was intro- duced by the rajah. Gambier figured at 20,461 piculs in the exports of 1881 and at 22,432 in 1884, and pepper at 28,807 piculs in 1881 and 43,490 in 1884. 'The territory of Sarawak is said to furnish more than half the sago produce of the world, and most of it is grown on the marshy banks of the Oya, Mukah, and other rivers of the northern residency of Sarawak to the distance of about 20 milesinland. 'The total value of the exports of Sarawak in 1884 was 1,145,248 dollars (1,071,528 from Kuching), that of the imports 1,083,255 dollars. Natuna and Dutch vessels are the most numerous in the shipping returns.

The government is an absolute monarchy—the present rajah being the nephew of Sir James Brooke. The rajah is assisted by a supreme council of six, consisting of two chief European residents and four natives, nominated by himself; there is also a general council of fifty, which meets once every three years or oftener if required. For administrative purposes the country is divided into eight districts corresponding to the number of principal river basins. Threc chief districts are presided over by European officers. The military foree—some 250 men—is under the control of an English commandant. There is also a small police force, and the Government possesses a few small steam vessels, The civil servicc is regularly organized, with pensions, &c. The revenue is in a satisfac- tory state, showing 64,899 dollars to the good in the period between 1875 and 1884. In 1884 the revenuc was 276,269 dollars and the expenditure 289,291. Roman Catholics and Protestants both have missions in Sarawak ; and the English bishop of Singapore and Labuan is also styled bishop of Sarawak. The population consists of Malays, Chinese, Land Dyaks, Sea Dyaks, and Milanows. " With- out the Chinainan," says the rajah (Pall Mall Gazette, 19th Septem- ber, 1883) ''we can do nothing." When not allowed to form secret societies he is easily governed, and this he is forbidden to do on pain of death, The Dyaks within the territory have given up head- hunting. The Milanows, who live in the northern districts, have adopted the Malay dress and in many cases have become Moham- medans; they are a quiet, contented, and laborious people. Slavery still prevails in Sarawak, but arrangements are made for its entire abolition in 1888. Kuching, the capital

of Sarawak, on the Sardwak river, is a place of 12,000 inhabitants and is steadily growing.

History.—In 1839-40 Sarawak, the most southern province of the sultanate of Brunei, was in rebellion against the tyranny of the governor, Pangeran Makota, and Muda Hassim had bcen sent to restore order. The insurgents held out at Balidah or Blidah fort in the Siniawan district, and there James Brooke first took part in the affairs of the territory. By his assistance the insurrection was suppressed, and on September 24th he was appointed chief of Sard- wak, In1843 Captain Keppel and Mr Brooke expelled the pirates

from the Saribas river and in 1844 they defeated those on the Batang Lupar, to whom Makota had attached himself. In 1849 another severe blow was struck by the destruction of Sirib Sahib's fort at Patusan. The Chinese, who had begun to settle in the country about 1850 (at Bau, Bidi, &c.), made a violent attempt to massacre the English and seize the government, but they were promptly and severely crushed after they had done havoc at Kuching. During Sir James Brooke's absence in England (1857— 1860) his nephew Captain J. Johnson (who had taken the name Brooke, and is generally called Captain Brooke) was left in author- ity ; but a quarrel afterwards ensued and Sir James Brooke was in 1868 succeeded by Charles Johnson (or Brooke), a younger nephew. The independence of Sarawak had been recognized after much controversy by England in 1863 and previously by the United States.

Sce Charles Brooke, Ten Years in Sardwak, 1866; Gertrude L. Jacob, The Raja of Sardwak, 1876; Spenser St John, Life in the Forests of the Far East, 1862, and Life of Sir James Brooke, 1879; elms, Pioneering in the Far East, 1882; "Notes on Sardwak," in Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc., 1881, by W. M. Crocker.

SARDANAPALUS was, according to the account of Ctesias (preserved by Diodorus, 23 sq.), the last king of Nineveh, and he is described in terms that have made his naine proverbial as the type of splendid and luxurious effeminacy. Ctesias's story cannot be called historical ; but the name Sardanapalus seems to be a corruption of Assurbanipal (see vol. iii. p. 188).

SARDINE. SeePitcHarp. Another of the Clupeidx (C. scombrina) is the “oil-sardine” of the eastern coast of the Indian Peninsula.

SARDINIA (Ital. Sardegna, Fr. Sardaigne, Span. Cerdena, called by the ancient Greeks “Iyvotca, from a fancied resemblance to the print of a foot), an island in the Mediterranean, about 140 miles from the west coast of Italy, of which kingdom it forms a part. It is separated from the island of Corsica by the Strait of Bonifacio, which is about 74 miles wide, and only about 50 fathoms deep. Sardinia Hes between 8° 4’ and 9° 49’ E. long., and extends from 38° 55’ to 41° 16’ N. lat. The length from Cape Teulada in the south-west to Cape Longo Sardo in the north is about 160 miles, the breadth from Cape Comino to Cape Caccia about 68 miles. The area of the island is 9187 square miles,—that of the department (com- partumento), including the small islands adjacent, being 9294 square miles. It ranks sixth in point of size among the islands of Europe, coming next after Sicily.

The greater part of the island is mountainous, especially in the east, where the mountains stretch almost continu- ously from north to south, and advance close up to the coast. The elevations, however, are not so high as in the sister island of Corsica. The culminating point is Monte Gennargentu, which rises, about 22 miles from the east coast, almost exactly on the parallel of 40° N., to the height of 6250 feet, and is consequently little more than two-thirds of the height of the chief peaks of Corsica. On the east side the principal breach in the continuity of the mountains occurs in the north, where.a narrow valley opening to the east at the Gulf of Terranova cuts off the mountains of Limpara in the extreme north-east. The western half of the island has more level land. The prin- cipal plain, that of the Campidano, stretches from south- east to north-west, between the Gulf of Cagliari and that of Oristano, and nowhere attains a greater elevation than 250 feet. At both ends it sinks to a much lower level, and has a number of shallow lagoons encroaching on it from the sea. In the corner of the island situated to the south-west of the Campidano there are two small isolated mountains rising to the height of from 3000 to 4000 feet, which are of importance as containing the chief mineral wealth of the island. A small valley runs between them from the southern end of the Campidano to Iglesias, the mining centre of Sardinia. North of the Gulf of Oristano mountains again

appear. The extinct volcano of Monte Ferru there rises to the height of 4400 feet, and the streams of basalt which have issued from it in former

ages form the ridge or saddle, about 2000 feet high, con- | plain of the Campidano, the west coast opposite the island

necting this mountain with the highland area on the east. Still further north a trachytic plateau, intersected by numerous deep river valleys, occupies a considerable tract, advancing up to the plain of Sassari on the north coast.

Scale of English Miles

10 20 0

Asinara |,

Gulf of Asinara

Map of Sardinia.

The rivers are numerous but short. The principal is the Oristano, which enters the gulf of the same name on the west coast.

Geologically the island is composed mainly of granite and other crystalline rocks. Granite predominates espe- cially in the east, and the mountains of that part of the island were apparently at one time continuous with the similarly constituted mountains of Corsica. Granitic spurs likewise extend to the south-west, and appear in the capes of Spartivento and Teulada. Altogether this rock is estimated to cover one-half of the entire surface. In the west of the island the principal crystalline rocks are porphyritic in structure; sedimentary deposits are com- paratively unimportant, and such as are present are mainly either of very ancient or of recent geological date. Silurian formations attain their most considerable development in the south-west round Iglesias, where there occurred the contemporaneous porphyritic outpourings containing the most numerous mineral veins of the island.

Between the deposits of Silurian and those of Cretaceous times there are none of any consequence except a few patches of Devonian round the slopes of Gennargentu, interesting as containing some beds of true coal. The members of the Cretaceous system occupy considerable tracts in the south- west, east (round the Gulf of Orosei), and north-west (in the mountains of Nurra), and a smaller area in the south- west (in the island of San Antioco). Tertiary formations are still more largely developed. They cover the whole

of San Antioco, and the narrow valley in the north-east already mentioned. The basalts of Monte Ferru are also of Tertiary date, and it does not appear to have been till that epoch that Sardinia formed a single island.

In variety of mineral wealth the southern half of Sardinia is the richest province of Italy, and it stands second in the annual value of its mineral products. The chief minerals are sulphates of lead more or less argenti-ferous (galena), sulphates and silicates of zinc, ordinary iron pyrites, sulphates of iron and copper, of antimony, and of arsenic, besides cobalt, nickel, and silver. The coal on the flanks of Gennargentu is of good enough quality to furnish a valuable fuel, and is found in sufficiently thick seams to be workable if only the means of transport were present, but its situation is such as to render it of no economical importance. In the Tertiary deposits of the south-west there are some veins of manganese ore, and also some beds of lignite which are worked as a source of fuel for local use. The mineral wealth of Sardinia- was known in ancient times, and mines were worked both by the Carthaginians and the Romans. During the Middle Ages they were for the most part neglected, but the industry was revived in modern times, and has been greatly developed in recent years. Upwards of 70 mines have now been opened, most of them in the district of which Iglesias is the centre, but a few near the southern part of the east coast, where Muravera is the chief town. The mines are mostly of argentiferous lead, silver, zinc, and iron. The ores are mainly exported in the raw state, only the inferior sorts being smelted in the island. Among other mineral products are building stones (granite, marble, &c.), alabaster, and salt.

The climate of Sardinia is similar to that of the rest of the Mediterranean region, and the southern half of the island shares in the nearly rainless

summers characteristic of the southern portions of the Mediterranean peninsulas. At Cagliari there are on an average only seven days on which rain falls during June, July, and August. Through- out the island these months are the driest in the year, and hence vegetation on the lower ground at least is generally at a standstill during that period, and shrubs with broad leathery leaves fitted to withstand the drought (the so- called maguis) are as characteristic here as in Corsica and on the mainland. Winter is the rainiest season of the year ; but the heat and drought of summer (mean tempera- ture 95° F.) make that the most unpleasant of the seasons, while in the low grounds the prevalence of malaria renders it a most unhealthy one, especially for visitors. Autumn, which is prolonged into December, is the most agreeable season ; there is then neither heat nor cold, nor mist nor fever, and at that period birds of passage begin to immi- grate in large numbers.

The agricultural products of the island are greatly inferior to what might be expected in view of the natural fertility of the soil. Two causes are assigned for this. The first is the minute subdivision of the land, which, as in Corsica, is carried to such an extent that where an owner has as much as 100 acres his property is divided into 25 or 30 lots surrounded by parcels of land belonging to other owners. In such circumstances it is neither possible to apply adequate capital to the cultivation of the ground, nor for the owners to acquire the requisite capital. The second cause is the malaria which renders certain districts possessed of a fertile soil quite uninhabitable; and this second cause can be remedied only when a remedy has been found for the first, for, as the malaria is undoubtedly one cause of diminished cultivation, it is equally certain that want of cultivation is one of the causes of the malaria. In ancient times Sardinia was one of the granaries of Rome ; now cereals take a comparatively unimportant place among the exports, and this export is balanced by a considerable import of the same commodity. The chief products of agriculture are wheat, barley, and beans, the last furnishing an important element of the food of the people. Olives run wild in many places, and are grown in sufficient abundance to meet the local demand.

Sas

ar

Sw DIN TA

Almonds, oranges, and citrons arc also largely cultivated, and the oranges of San Vito, near Muravera, and of Milis, a few miles to the north of Oristano, are noted for their excellence ; the white wines of the banks of the Oristano are of good repute ; and among other products of the island are mulberries, tobacco, madder, and hemp. Forests of oak, cork-oak, firs, and pines, though greatly redueed in extent, still cover, it is said, about one-fifth of the surfaee. The rearing of live-stock reeeives more attention than agriculture proper. No artificial pasture-grasses are grown, but the natural pastures beside the numerous rivers yield abundance of food, except during the dry season, when the horses, asses, cattle, sheep, and goats have to content themselves with straw, some dried beans, and a little barley. Most attention is bestowed on horses. At one time the Sardinian Government endeavoured to keep a stud on the island for rearing horses for the Piedmontese cavalry, but the persons employed (natives of the main- land) were unable to withstand the malaria. There are some large private establishments for the rearing of horses, however, and the tending of live-stock generally forms so important a part of the occupations of the people that animals rank next after minerals among the exports of the island. Of the wild animals, the wild sheep known as the musimon, or European mufflon, formerly an inhabitant of all the mountains of the Mediterranean peninsulas and islands, and now confined to Sardinia and Corsica, is the most interesting. Among the noxious aninials are scorpions and tarantulas.

The lagoons near the coast on the sonth and west abound in mullets, eels, niussels, and crabs, which are caught in great numbers by the natives, while the fisheries round Sardinia, as round Corsica, are in the hands of Italians from the mainland. The anehovy, sardine, and coral fisheries are all lucrative. The coral is said to be of excellent quality, and is exported to the markets of Genoa and Marscilles.

The external commerce of the island has nearly trebled itself in the twenty-five years 1856-81, tle imports and exports each amount- ing in the latter year to about £1,500,000 (about £2, 4s. per head of population). This increase is chiefly owing to the development of the mining industry, orcs

making up nearly one-third of the total valne of the exports. Live animals make up about a fourth of the total value, and cereals, which come next in order, about one- seventh. Thechief imports are cotton and other manufactures and colonial products. The inland trade has been greatly promoted within the last fifty years by the construction of roads and railways. Before 1828 there were no roads at all in the island; the tracks which existed could be traversed only on foot or on horseback. But upwards of 1500 miles of national and provincial roads, all well made and well kept, have since then been con- structed. Of railways, introduced since 1870, there are now 265 miles in all (equal to about 1 mile of railway for every 34 square miles of surface).

For administrative purposes Sardinia, like the rest of Italy, is divided into provinces and circles (circondarii). The following

table gives the names of these divisions with the population accord- |

ing to the last census (end of 1881) :—

Circles. Communes. Population. Cireles. Communes.| Population. Cagiiari…..... a8 158,336 || Sassari…..... 24 88,312 IsleSiAas ….....0 24 17,373 Alghero…..... 20 43,624 LANUSE!.....64 48 64,816 NOKO..,...-<5.. 33 59,794 Oristano …..... 106 125,110 (PATON. veces es 21 41,193

——_—_— |__| Tempio…..... 9 28,444 Prov. Cagliari 257 420,635 ‘ —|—_—_-— Prov. Sassari 107 261,367

The whole population of the department is thus 682,002, equal to about 74 to the square mile, Sardinia being the least populous of all the great divisions of the kingdom, in which the average

density is 255 to the square mile. The population is, however, increasing at a rather more rapid rate than on the mainland. Betwcen 1871 and 1881 it increased by about 46,000, or 7°18 per cent., while the average rate of increase throughout the kingdom was only 6°16 per cent.

The inhabitants of Sardinia are a hardy race, of about middle height, and of dark complexion. They are little accustomed to hard work, but this is one of

the consequences of the backward state of their eivilization and of the impediments already indicated to the development of the resources of the island. Education, as in many other parts of Italy, is very far behind, notwithstanding the law whieh makes elementary education compulsory; but here, as throughout the kingdom, it is rapidly extending. In 1880-81 only 37,197 children, or less than one-eighteenth of the popula- tion, were in attendance at the elementary schools, but this number was double what it had been in 1861-62. At Cagliari there is a university, attended by from 300 to 400 students.

The people are lively in their disposition, fond of music and poetry, remarkably hospitable, and strong in their family attach- ments. With this last trait, however, is connected the chief blot on their charactcr—thcir addiction to the practice of the vendetta,

which prevails here as in Corsica, and according to which an outrage on one's honour is wiped out in blood, and the cause of one member of a family is taken up by the rest, so that the death of one victim leads to the sacrifice of many others. But the practice is said to be becoming every day more rarc, and never to be resorted to except in case of serious offence.

The capital of the island is Cagliari, but Sassari in the north has an equally large population (about 34,000). The other chief towns are Tempio, Alghero, Iglesias, and Oristano. Cagliari, Alghero, and Castel Sardo are fortified.

The antiquities of the island are numerous and of peculiar interest. The most remarkable of these are the monuments called nurhags (variously spelled also nuraghe, nuraght, &c.), of which there are upwards of 3000 seattered over the island. They are round structures having the form of truncated cones, and are generally built of the hardest materials the island supplies (granite, basalt, trachyte, limestone, &c.). The stone is roughly hewn into large blocks, which are laid in regular horizontal courses but not cemented. The blocks in the lower courses are sometimes more than three feet in length. Entrance is obtained by a very low opening at the base to an inner chamber ; and, when there are two or, as in some cases, three stories, these

are connected by means of a spiral staircase. The origin and use of these structures are both matters of speculation. The rarity of human remains in them is against the idea that they were used as tombs, while the absence of any relics pertaining to a religious ceremonial is equally adverse to the supposition that they were used as temples. Next to the nurhags the most interesting of the remains of antiquity are the so-called tombs of the giants, which appear to have been actually used as plaees of burial, although, as the name given to them indi- cates, their dimensions are greatly in excess of those of the human body. Besides these there are tombs the structure of which leads to the belief that they must be relics of an Egyptian colony.

History.—According to Prof. Crespi, of the university of Cagliari, the tombs just referred to are not the only signs of an early Egyptian settlement in the island of Sardinia, Various remains are said to prove beyond doubt that Egyptians must have founded at least two colonies in very remote times —one at the ancient town of Tharrus on the small peninsula of San Marco at the northern extremity of the Gulf of Oristano, and the other at Caralis, the present Cagliari. But even before the Egyptians Prof. Crespi believes that the Phoenicians had established a colony on the small island of San Antioeo, and had built there the town of Sulcis, the ruins of which are still to be seen near the town of San Antioco. Of Pheenicians and Egyptians, however, there are no trustworthy historical records, and the first settlers whose arrival is historically accredited were the Carthaginians, who succeeded in making themselves masters of the island under Hasdrubal in 512 B.c. The island remained in Carthaginian hands for upwards of two hundred and seventy years, and then passed into those of the Romans, who took advantage of the war in which Carthage was involved with her mercenary troops after the close of the First Punic War to seize the island (238 B.c.). Thenceforward the island remained in possession of the Romans till near the fall of the empire of the West, when Sardinia also began to suffer from the ravages of the northern hordes by which Italy was at that time overrun and the empire of the West overthrown. About the middle of the 5th century the island was oecupied by the Vandals under Genseric, but in the first half of the following century these were expelled by Belisarius. Very soon after, however, Goths succeeded the Vandals, and after these had in their turn been driven out by Narses the natives managed to expel the Romans and to achieve their independence (665). The Sardinians thereupon

elected the leader in the revolt against Rome king of the island, and by him the island was divided into the four grand-judicatures of Cagliari, Arborea, Torres, and Gallura, The grand-justices or rulers of these four divisions continued to retain a considerable amount of power during a large part of the Middle Ages. But from the carly part of the 8th century down to the middle of the 11th their influence was greatly impaired by repeated inroads of the Saracens, who landed now on one coast now on another, and kept the inhabitants in a constant state of alarm. This state of matters was at last pnt an end to by the Genoese and Pisans, who, acting under the sanction of the pope, despatched a fleet. against that of the Saracens. A battle ensued in the Bay of Cagliari ; the Saracens were eompletely defeated, and the allies landed on the island (1050). Very soon the Pisans adroitly managed. to rid themselves of the Genoese, and to gain possession of almost the entire island, deposing the grand-justices of Cagliari, Torres, and Gallura. With the Pisans the greater part of the island remained till 1325, when the pope gave Sardinia to the king of Aragon, who combined with the grand-justice of Arborea to drive out the former rulers. But, this being accomplished, war soon broke out betwecn the two, and numerous successes were gained by the grand-justice Marian IV. and his daughter Eleonora acting as regent on behalf of her son Marian V., a minor. The Aragonese seemed to be on the point of being driven out of the island when Eleonora died of

the plague (1403), and soon after the whole island became an Aragonese (after the union of the crowns of Aragon and Castile a Spanish) province. It remained Spanish till the treaty of Utrecht in 1713, when it was ceded to the house of Austria, by which in 1720 it was handed over to Victor Amadeus II., duke of Savoy, in exchange for the island of Sicily. Shortly before the date of this acquisition the duke of Savoy (see Savoy) had had the title of king conferred upon him, and when the cession of Sardinia took place the title was changed to that of king of Sardinia, With this kingdom the island ultimately became merged in the kingdom of a La Marmora, Voyage en Sardaigne (Paris, 2d ed., 1837-57); Roissard de Bellet, La Sardaigne & vol d oiseau (Paris, 1884); Robert Tennant, Sardinia and its Resources (Lond., 1885). (G. G. C.)

SARDIS (ai Sdpdes), the capital of the kingdom of Lydia, the seat of a conventus under the Roman empire, and the metropolis of the province Lydia in later Roman and Byzantine times, was situated in the middle Hermus valley, at the foot of Mount Tmolus, a steep and lofty spur of which formed the citadel. It was about 20 stadia (24 miles) south of the Hermus. The earliest reference to Sardis is in the Perse of Aischylus (472 B.c.); in the Jliad the name Hyde seems to be given to the city of the Meeonian (7.e., Lydian) chiefs, and in later times Hyde was said to be the older name of Sardis, or the name of its citadel. It is, however, more probable that Sardis was not the original capital of the Meonians, but that it be- came so amid the changes which produced a powerful Lydian empire in the 8th century .c. The city, but not the citadel, was destroyed by the Cimmerians in the 7th century, by the Athenians in the 6th, and by Antiochus the Great in the 3d century; once at least, under the emperor Tiberius, it was destroyed by an earthquake ; but it was always rebuilt, and continued to be one of the great cities of western Asia Minor till the later Byzantine time. Its importance was due, first to its military strength, secondly to its situation on an important high- way leading from the interior to the Agean coast, and thirdly to its commanding the wide and fertile plain of the Hermus. ‘The early Lydian kingdom was far advanced in the industrial arts (see Lypra), and Sardis was the chief seat of its manufactures. The most important of these trades was the manufacture and dyeing of delicate woollen stuffs and carpets. The statement that the little stream Pactolus which flowed through the market-place rolled over golden sands is probably little more than a metaphor, due to the wealth of the city to which the Greeks of the 6th century B.c. resorted for supplies of gold; but trade and the practical organization of commerce were the real sources of this wealth. After Constantinople became the capital of the East a new road system grew up connecting the provinces with the capital. Sardis then lay rather apart from the great lines of communication and lost some of its importance. It still, however, retained its titular supremacy, and continued to be the seat of the metro- politan bishop of the province. It is enumerated as third, after Ephesus and Smyrna, in the list of cities of the Thracesian thema given by Constantine Porphyrogenitus in the 10th century ; but in the actual history of the next four centuries it plays a part very inferior to Magnesia ad Sipylum and Philadelphia, which*have to the present day retained their pre-eminence in the district, The Hermus valley began to suffer from the

inroads of the Seljuk Turks about the end of the 11th century ; but the successes of the Greek general Philocales in 1118 relieved the district for the time, and the ability of the Comneni, together with the gradual decay of the Seljuk power, re- tained it in the Byzantine dominions. The country round Sardis was frequently ravaged both by Christians and by Greeks during the 13th century. Soon after 1301 the Seljuk emirs overran the whole of the Hermus and Cayster valleys, and a fort on the citadel of Sardis was handed over to them by treaty. Finally in 1390 Philadelphia, which

had for some time been an independent Christian city, surrendered to Sultan Bayazid's mixed army of Ottoman Turks and Byzantine Christians, and the Seljuk power in the Hermus valley was merged in the Ottoman empire. The latest reference to the city of Sardis relates its capture (and probable destruction) by Timur in 1402. _ Its site is now absolutely deserted, except that a tiny village, Sart, merely a few huts inhabited by semi-nomadic Yuruks, exists beside the Pactolus, and that there isa station of the Smyrna and Cassaba Railway a mile north of the principal ruins.

The ruins of Sardis, so far as they are now visible, are chiefly of the Roman time; but probably few ancient sites would more richly reward the excavator with remains of all periods from the early pre-Hellenic time downwards. On the banks of the Pac- tolus two columns of a temple of the Greek period, probably the great temple of Cybele, are still standing. More than one attempt to excavate this temple, the last by Mr G. Dennis in 1882, have been made and prematurely brought to an end by lack of funds, The necropolis of the old Lydian city, a vast series of mounds, some of enormous size, lies on the north side of the Hermus, four or five miles from Sardis, a little south of the sacred lake Coloe ; here the Mzonian chiefs, sons, according to Homer, of the lake, were brought to sleep beside their mother. The series of mounds is now called Bin Tepe (Thousand Mounds). Several of them have been opened by modern excavators, but in every case it was found that treasure-seekers of an earlier time had removed any articles of value that had been deposited in the sepulchral chambers.

SARDONYX, a name applied to those varieties of onyx, or stratified chalcedony, which exhibit white layers alternating with others of red or

brown colour. The brown chalcedony is known to modern mineralogists as sardand the red as carnelian. The simplest and commonest type of sardonyx contains two strata,—a thin layer of white chalcedony resting upon a ground of either carnelian or sard; but the sardonyx of ancient writers generally presented three layers—a superficial stratum of red, an intermediate band of white, and a base of dark brown chalcedony. The sardonyx has always been a favourite stone with the cameo-engraver, and the finest works have usually been executed on stones of five strata. Such, for instance, is tle famous Carpegna cameo, in the Vatican, representing the triumph of Bacchus and Ceres, and re- puted to be the largest work of its kind ever executed (16 inches by 12). When the component layers of a sardonyx are of fine colour and sharply defined, the stone is known in trade as an “Oriental sardonyx ”—a term which is used without reference to the geographical source whence the stone is obtained. A famous ancient locality for sard was in Babylonia, and the name of the stone appears to be connected with the Persian word sered, ‘yellowish red,” in allusion to the colour of the sard, Pliny, relying on a superficial resemblance, derives the name from Sardis, reputed to be its original locality. The sardonyx is frequently stained, or at least its colour heightened, by chemical processes. Imitations are fabri- cated by cementing two or three layers of chalcedony together, and so building up a sardonyx; while baser counterfeits are formed simply of paste. See Onyx, vol. Vik. p. 00.

SARGASSO SEA. See Atiantic, vol. ili, pp. 20, 26.

SARGON, king of Assyria, 722-705 3.c. (Isa. xx. 1). See Basytonta, vol. iii. p. 187, and Israxt, vol. xiii. p. 412 sq.

SARI. See MazanpaRAn.

SARMATIANS (avpopdrar, Svppdrot, Sarmatee). In the time of Herodotus (iv. 110-117) the steppes between the Don and the Caspian were inhabited by the Sauromate, a nomadic horse-riding people, whose women rode, hunted, and took part in battle like the men, so that legend (pre- sumably the legend of the Greek colonists on the Black Sea) represented the race as descendants of the Amazons by Scythian fathers. It is recounted both by Herodotus

and by Hippocrates (De Aer., 17) that no maiden was | allowed to marry till she had slain a foc (or three foes), after which she laid aside her masculine habits. The Scythians, we are told, called the Amazons Oiéprara, which seems to be an Iranian name and to mean “lords of man,” and it is reasonable to think that the word was applied to the Sarmatian viragos by the Scythians, who themselves kept women in great subjection, and thus expressed their surprise at the dominating position of the female sex among thcir neighbours beyond the Don. But in spite of the difference of their customs in this point Scythians and Sarmatians spoke almost the same language (Herod. iv. 117), and, whatever difficulty still remains as to the race of the Scythians, their language and religion are now gencrally held to have been of Iranian character (see Scyruia). That the Sarmatians, at least, were of Median origin is the express opinion of Diodorus (ii. 43) and Pliny. From their seats east of the Danube the Sarmatians at a later date moved westward into the lands formerly Scythian, one branch, the “transplanted” Iazyges (I. pera- vaotai) being settled between the Danube and the Theiss at the time of the Dacian wars of Rome, while other Sarmatian tribes, such as the Maite on the eastern shores of Lake Meotis and the Roxolani between the Don and the Dnieper, ranged over the steppes of southern Russia. The country of Sarmatia, however, as that term is used for example by Ptolemy, means much more than the lands of the Sarmatians, comprising all the eastern European plain from the Vistula and the Dniester to the Volga, whether inhabited by nomad Sarmatians, by agricultural Slavs and Letts, or even by Finns. This Sarmatia was arbitrarily divided into an Asiatic and a European part, east and west of the Don respectively.

SARNO, a city of Italy, in the province of Salerno, 30 miles east of Naples by rail, lies at the foot of the Apennines uear the sources of the Sarno, a stream con- nected by canal with Pompeii and the sea. Besides the cathedral, a basilica erected in 1625 at some distance from the city, Sarno has several interesting churches and the ruins of a medizeval castle. Paper, cotton, silk, linen, and hemp are manufactured. The population of the town in 1881 was 11,445. Previous to its incorporation with the domains of the

crown of Naples, Sarno gave its name to a countship held in succession by the Orsini, Cappola, Suttavilla, and Colonna families.

SARPI, Pierro (1552-1623), was born at Venice, August 14, 1552, and was the son of a small trader, who left him an orphan at an early age. Quiet, serious, devoted to study, endowed with great tenacity of applica- tion and a prodigious memory, the boy seemed born for a monastic life, and, notwithstanding the opposition of his relatives, entered the order of the Servi di Maria, a minor Augustinian congregation of Florentine origin, at the age of thirteen. He assumed the name of Paolo, by which, with the epithet Servita, he was always known to his con- temporaries. In 1570 he sustained no fewer than three hundred and eighteen theses at a disputation in Mantua, with such applause that the duke attached the youthful divine to his service by making him court theologian. Sarpi spent four years at Mantua, applying himself with the utmost zeal to mathematics and the Oriental languages. He there made the acquaintance of Olivo, formerly secre- tary to a papal legate at the council of Trent, from whom he learned much that he subsequently introduced into his Mistory. After leaving Mantua for some unexplained reason, he repaired to Milan, where he enjoyed the pro- tection of Cardinal Borromeo, another authority in the council, but was soon transferred by his superiors to Venice, as professor of philosophy at the Servite convent. In 1579 he was sent to Rome on business connected with

dll

the reform of his order, which occupied him several years, and brought him into intimate relations with three successive popes, as well as the grand inquisitor and other persons of influence. The impression which the papal court made upon him may be collected from his sub- sequent history. Having successfully terminated the affairs entrusted to him, he returned to Venice in 1588, and passed the next seventeen years in quiet study, occasionally interrupted by the part he was compelled to take in the internal disputes of his community. In 1601 he was recommended by the Venetian senate for the small bishopric of Caorle, but the papal nuncio, who wished to obtain it for a protégé of his own, informed the pope that Sarpi denied the immortality of the soul, and had controverted the authority of Aristotle. An

attempt to procure another small bishopric in the following year also failed, Clement VIII. professing to have taken umbrage at Sarpi's extensive correspondence with learned heretics, but more probably determined to thwart the desires of the liberal rulers of Venice. The sense of injury, no doubt, contributed to exasperate Sarpi's feelings towards the court of Rome, but a man whose master passions were freedom of thought and love of country could not have played any other part than he did in the great contest which was impending. For the time, however, he tranquilly pursued his studies, writing those notes on Vieta which establish his proficiency in mathematics, and a metaphysical treatise now lost, which, if Foscarini's account of it may be relied upon, anticipated the sensa- tionalism of Locke. His anatomical pursuits probably date from a somewhat earlier period. They illustrate his versatility and thirst for knowledge, but are far from possessing the importance ascribed to them by the affection of his disciples. His claim to have anticipated Harvey's discovery rests on no better authority than a memorandum, probably copied from Czesalpinus' or Harvey himself, with whom, as well as with Bacon and Gilbert, he maintained a correspondence. The only physiological discovery which can be safely attributed to him is that of the contractility of the iris. It must be remembered, however, that his treatises on scientific subjects are lost, and only known from imperfect abstracts.

The prudent Clement died in March 1605; and after one ephemeral succession and two very long conclaves Paul V. assumed the tiara with the resolution to strain papal prerogative to the uttermost. At the same time Venice was adopting measures to restrict it still further. The right of the secular tribunals to take cognizance of the offences of ecclesiastics had been asserted in two remarkable cases; and the scope of two ancient laws of the city of Venice, forbidding the foundation of churches or ecclesiastical congregations without the consent of the state, and the acquisition of property by priests or religious bodies, had been extended over the entire territory of the republic. In January 1606 the papal nuncio delivered a brief demanding the unconditional sub- mission of the Venetians. The senate having promised protection to all ecclesiastics who should in this emergency aid the republic by their counsel, Sarpi presented a memoir, pointing out that the threatened censures might be met in two ways,—de facto, by prohibiting their publication, and de jure, by an appeal to a general

council, The document was received with universal applause, and Sarpi was immediately made canonist and theological counsellor to the republic. When in the following April the last hopes of accommodation were dispelled by Paul's excommunica- tion of the Venetians and his attempt to lay their dominions under an interdict, Sarpi entered with the utmost energy into the controversy. He prudently began by republishing the anti-papal opinions of the famous

canonist Gerson. In an anonynious tract published shortly afterwards (Risposta di un Dottore in Teologia) he laid down principles which struck at the very root of the pope's authority in secular things. This book was promptly put upon the Index, and the republication of Gerson was attacked by Bellarmine with a severity which obliged Sarpi to reply in an Apologia. The Considerazioni sulle Censure and the Z'rattato dell' Interdetto, the latter partly prepared under his direction by other theologians, speedily followed. Numerous other pamphlets appeared, inspired or controlled by Sarpi, who had received the further appointment of censor over all that should be written at Venice in defence of the republic. His activity registers the progress of mankind, and forms an epoch in the history of free discussion. Never before in a religious controversy had the appeal been made so exclusively to reason and history; never before had an ecclesiastic of his eminence maintained the subjection of the clergy to the state, and disputed the pope's right to employ spiritual censures, except under restrictions which virtually abrogated it. In so doing he merely gave expression to the convictions which had long been silently forming in the breasts of enlightened men, and this, even more than his learning and acuteness as a disputant, insured him a moral victory. Material arguments were no longer at the pope's disposal. The Venetian clergy, a few religious orders excepted, disregarded the interdict, and discharged their functions as usual. The Catholic powers refused to be drawn into the quarrel. At length (April 1607) a compromise was arranged through the mediation of the king of France, which, while salving over the pope's dignity, conceded the points at issue. The great victory, however, was not so much the defeat of the papal preten- sions as the demonstration that interdicts and excommuni- cations had lost their force. Even this was not wholly satisfactory to Sarpi, who

longed for the toleration of Protestant worship in Venice, and had hoped for a separa- tion from Rome and the establishment of a Venetian free church by which the decrees of the council of Trent would have been rejected, and in which the Bible would have been an open book. But the controversy had not lasted long enough to prepare men's minds for so bold a measure. The republic rewarded her champion with the further distinction of state counsellor in jurisprudence, and, a unique mark of confidence, the liberty of access to the state archives. These honours exasperated his adversaries to the uttermost; and after citations and blandishments had equally failed to bring him to Rome he began to receive intimations that a stroke against him was preparing in that quarter. On October 5 he was attacked by a band of assassins and left for dead, but the wounds were not mortal. The bravos found a refuge in the papal territories. Their chief, Poma, declared that he had been moved to attempt the murder by his zeal for religion, a degree of piety and self-sacrifice which seems incredible in a bankrupt oil-merchant. * Agnosco stylum Curiz Romane," Sarpi himself pleasantly said, when his surgeon commented upon the ragged and _inartistic character of the wounds, and the justice of the observa- tion is as incontestable as its wit. The only question can be as to the degree of complicity of Pope Paul V., a good man according to his light, but who must have looked upon Sarpi as a revolted subject, and who would find casulsts enough to assure him that a prince is justified in punishing rebels by assassins when they are beyond the reach of executioners,

_The remainder of Sarpi's life was spent peacefully in his cloister, though plots against him continued to be formed, and he occasionally spoke of taking refuge in England. When not engaged in framing state papers, he

SA RYE

devoted himself to scientific studies, and found time for the composition of several works. A Machiavellian tract on the fundamental maxims of Venetian policy (Opinione come debba governarsi la repubblica di Venezia), used by his adversaries to blacken his memory, though a contemporary production, is undoubtedly not his. It has been attributed to a certain Gradenigo. Nor did he complete a reply which he had been ordered to prepare to the Squttinio della Laberta Veneta, which he perhaps found

unanswerable. In 1610 appeared his Wistory of Ecclesiastical Benefices, “in which,” says Ricci, “he purged the church of the de- filement introduced by spurious decretals.” In the follow- ing year he assailed another abuse by his treatise on the right of asylum claimed for churches, which was immediately placed on the Inde. In 1615 a dispute between the Venetian Government and the Inquisition respecting the prohibition of a book led him to write on the history and procedure of the Venetian Inquisition; and in 1619 his chief literary work, the History of the Council of Trent, was printed at London under the name of Pietro Soave Polano, an anagram of Paolo Sarpi Veneto. The editor, Marco Antonio de Dominis, has been accused of falsifying the text, but a comparison with a MS. corrected by Sarpi himself shows that the alterations are both unnecessary and unimportant. This memorable book, together with the rival and apologetic history by Cardinal Pallavicini, is minutely criticized by Ranke (History of the Popes, appendix No. 3), who tests the veracity of both writers by examining the use they have respectively made of their MS. materials. The result is not highly favourable to either, nor wholly unfavourable ; neither can be taxed with deliberate falsification, but both have coloured and suppressed. They write as advocates rather than historians, Each had access to sources of information denied to the other ; so that, although it may be true ina sense that the truth lies between them, it cannot be attained by taking the middle way between their statements. Ranke rates the literary qualities of Sarpi’s work very highly. “Sarpi is acute, penetrating, and sarcastic; his arrangement is exceedingly skilful, his style pure and unaffected. In power of description he. is without doubt entitled to the second place among the modern historians of Italy. I rank him immediately after Machiavelli.” Sarpi never acknowledged his authorship, and baffled all the efforts of the Prince de Condé to extract the secret from him. He survived the publication four years, dying on January 15, 1623, labouring for his country to the last. The day before his death he had dictated three replies to questions on affairs of state, and his last words were “Esto per- petua.” His posthumous History of the Interdict was printed at Venice the year after his death, with the disguised imprint of Lyons.

Sarpi’s services to mankind are nowacknowledged by all except the most extreme Ultramontane partisans ; and of his general character it is enough to say that even theologieal hatred has been unable to fix the least personal

imputation upon him. To the highest qualities of the scholar, the statesman, and the patriot he added charity, mag- nanimity, and disinterestedness. The only point on which his con- duct may be thought to require apology is the reserve in which he shrouded his religious opinions. Great light has been thrown upon his real belief and the motives of his conduct by the letters of Chris- toph von Dohna, envoy of Christian, prince of Anhalt, to Venice, pub- lished by Moritz Ritter in the Briefe wnd Acten zur Geschichte des dreissigéhrigen Kricges, vol. ii. (Munich, 1874). Sarpi told Dohna that he greatly disliked saying mass, and cclebrated it as seldom as possible, but that he was compelled to do so, as he would other- Wise seem to admit the validity of the papal prohibition, and thus betray the cause of Venice. ‘This supplics the key to his whole behaviour; he was a patriot first and a‘religious reformer after- wards. He was most anxious to obtain liberty of Protestant worship at Venice, but scareely proceeded beyond good wishes, partly from prudence, partly from being “rooted” in what Diodati described to Dohna as “the most dangerous maxim, that God docs not regard cxternals so long as the mind and heart are right before

i

SAR—SAR

Him.” “It is of little avail,” adds Diodati, “to dispute with him,

for all blows fall ineffectually upon the sweetness and maturity of |

affections and spirit whieh raise him above well nigh every emotion.” Sarpi had another maxim, which he thus formulated to Dohna: ‘‘Le falsité non dico mai mat, ma la verita non a ognuno.” It must further be considered that, though Sarpi admired the English prayer-book, he was neither Anglican, Lutheran, nor Calvinist, and might have found it difficult to accommodate

himself to any Protestant church. On the whole, the opinion of Le

Courayer, “qu’ il était Catholique en gros et quelque fois Protestant en détail,” seems not altogether groundless, though it can uo longer be accepted as a satisfactory summing up of the question. His discoveries in

natural seience have been overrated, but his scientific attainments must have been great. Galileo would not have wasted his time in corresponding with a man from whom he could learn nothing ; and, though Sarpi did not, as has been asserted, invent the telescope, he immediately turned it to practical account by eonstructing a map of the moon.

Sarpi's life was written by his enthusiastic disciple, Father Fulgenzio Micanzio, whose work does honour to his heart, but is both meagre and uncritical. Bianchi-Giovini's modern biography (1836) is greatly marred by digressions, but is on the whole the most satisfactory extant, though inferior in some respects to that by Miss Arabella Georgina Campbell (1869), a labour of love, enriched by numerous references to MSS. unknown to Bianchi-Giovini. The numcrous mis- prints which disfigure the English edition of this work have been corrected in an Italian translation, T. A. Trollope's Paul the Pope and Paul the Friar (1861) is in the main a mere abstract of Bianchi-Giovini, but adds a spirited account of the conclave of Paul V. 'Ihe incidents of tlie Venetian dispute from day to day are related in the contemporary diaries published by Enrico Cornet (Vienna, 1859). Giusto Fontanini's Storia Arcana della Vita di Pietro Sarpi (1863), a bitter libel, is nevertheless important for the letters of Sarpi it contains, as Griselini's Memorie Anedote (1760) is from the author's access to Sarpi's un- published writings, afterwards unfortunately destroyed by fire. Foscarini's History of Venetian Literature is important on the same account. Sarpi's memoirs on state affairs remain in the Venetian archives. Portions of his correspondence have been printed at various times, and incdited Icttcrs from him are of frequent occurrence in public libraries. The King's Library in the British Museum has a valuable collection of tracts in the. Interdict controversy, forined by Consul Smith. (R. G.)

SARRAZIN, Jacques (1588-1660), French painter, born at Noyon in 1588, was a pupil of the father of Simon Guillain, but he went to Rome at an early age and worked there under a Frenchman named Anguille. Start- ing thus, Sarrazin speedily obtained employment from Cardinal Aldobrandini at Frascati, where he won the friendship of Domenichino, with whom he afterwards worked on the high altar of St Andrea della Valle. His return to Paris, where he married a niece of Simon Vouet's, was signalized by a series of successes which attracted the notice of Sublet des Noyers, who

entrusted to him the work by which Sarrazin is best known, the decoration of the great portal and dome of the western facade of the interior court of the Louvre. The famous Caryatides of the attic show, especially in the way in which the shadows are made to tell as points of support, the profound and intelligent study of Michelangelo's art to which Sarrazin had devoted all the time he could spare from bread- winning whilst in Rome. He now executed many commis- sions from the queen and from all the chief personages of the day, devoted much time to painting, and was an active promoter of the foundation of the Academy. The mauso- leum for the heart of the Prince de Condé in the Jesuit church of the Rue Saint Antoine was his last considerable work (see Lenoir, Musée des Monuments Francais, v. 5); he died 3d December 1660, whilst it was in progress, and the crucifix of the altar was actually completed by one of his pupils named Gros.

SARSAPARILLA, a popular alterative remedy, prepared from the long fibrous roots of several species of the genus Smilax, indigenous to Central America, and extending from the southern and western coasts of Mexico in the north to Peru in the south. These plants grow in swampy forests seldom visited by European travellers, and, being dicecious and varying much in the form of leaf in different individuals, they are but imperfectly known to botanists, ouly two species having been identified as yet with any degree of certainty. These are Smilax officinalis, Kth., and S. medica, Schlecht. and Cham., which yield respectively the so-called "Jamaica" and the Mexican varieties. The introduction of sarsaparilla into European medicine dates from the middle of the 16th century. Monardes, a physi-

cian of Seville, records that it was brought to that city from New Spain about 1536-45, that a better sort soon afterwards came from Honduras, and that an excellent variety of a darker colour, and consisting of larger roots, was subsequently imported from Guayaquil. Sarsaparilla must have come into extensive use soon afterwards, for Gerard, about the close of the century, states that it was imported into England from Peru in great abundance.

When boiled in water the root affords a dark extractive matter, the exact nature of which has not been determined; the quantity of extract yielded by

the root is used as a criterion of its quality. Boiling alcohol extracts from the root a neutral substance in the form of crystalline prisms, which crystallize in scales from boiling water. This body, which is named parillin, is allied to the saponin of quillaia bark, from which it differs in not exciting sneezing. The presence in the root of starch, resin, and oxalate of lime is revealed by the use of the microscope. Sarsaparilla ig chiefly used in medicine in the form of decoction and fluid extract. It is regarded by many as a valuable alterative and diaphoretic in chronic rheumatism, syphilis, and various skin diseases, but by others as possessing little if any remedial value. It is frequently prescribed in com- bination with powerful medicines, such as iodide of potassium or bichloride of mercury.

The varieties of sarsaparilla met with in commerce at present are the following :—Jamaica, Lima, Honduras, Guatemala, Guayaquil, and Mexican. Of these the first-named is the most highly esteemed, as yielding the largest amount of extract, viz., from 33 to 44 per cent. ; it is the only kind admitted into the British pharmacopeia. On the Continent, and more especially in Italy, the varieties having a white starchy bark, like those of Honduras and Guatemala, are preferred. ‘‘ Jamaica” sarsaparilla is not produced there, but derives its name from the fact that Jamaica was at one time the emporium for sarsaparilla, which was brought thither from Honduras, New Spain, and Peru. Sarsaparilla is grown toa small extent in Jamaiea, and is oecasionally exported thence to the London market in small quantities, but its orange colour and starchy bark are so different in appearance from the thin reddish-brown bark of the genuine drug, that it does not meet with a ready sale. The Jamaica sarsaparilla of trade is collected on the Cordilleras of Chiriqui, in that part of the isthmus of Panama which adjoins Costa Rica, where the plant yielding it grows at an elevation of 4000 to 8000 feet, and is brought down to Boca del Toro on the Atlantie coast for shipment. It is met with in commerce in the form of hanks about 18 inches long and 4 inches in diameter, loosely wound round with a long root of the same drug. Theroot bark is of a reddish-brown colour, thin and shrivelled, and there is an abundance of rootlets, which are technically known by the name of ‘‘beard.” Lima sarsaparilla resembles the Jamaica kind, but the roots are of a paler brown colour, and are formed into cylindrical bundles of similar length, but only about 2} inches in diameter. Honduras sarsaparilla occurs in the form of cylindrical rolls about 80 inches

long and 4 or niore in diameter, closely wound round with a long root so as to form a neat bundle. The roots are less wrinkled, and the bark is whiter and more starchy, than in the Jamaica kind. It is exported from Belize to the extent of about 10,000 fb annually. Guatemala sarsaparilla is very similar to that of Honduras, but has a more decided orange hue, and the bark shows a tendency to split off. Guayaquil sarsaparilla is obtained chiefly in the valley of Alausi, on the western side of the equatorial Andes. The roots are roughly packed in large bales and are not made into separate hanks, and the chump or rootstock is often allowed to remain attached to the roots. The bark is thick and furrowed, and of a pale fawn colour internally ; the rootlets are few, and the root itself is of larger diameter than in the other kinds. Somctimes there is attached to the rootstock a portion of stem, which is round and not prickly, differing in these respeets from that of Smilax officinalis, which is square and prickly. Mexican sarsaparilla also is not made up into hanks, but is packed in straight lengths of about 3 feet into bales, the ehump and por- tions of an angular but not square stem being frequently attached to the roots. The latter are slender, shrivelled, and nearly devoid of rootlets. This kind of sarsaparilla is collected on the eastern slope of the Mexican Andes throughout the year, and is the pro- duee of Smilax medica, Sehlecht. and Cham.

The collection of sarsaparilla root is a very tedious business; a single root takes an Indian half a day or sometimes even a day and a half to unearth it. The roots extend horizontally in the ground on all sides for about 9 feet, and from these the earth has to be carefully scraped away and other roots cut through where such come across them. A plant four years old will yield 16 fb of fresh

root, and a well-grown one from 32 to 64 fb, but more than half the | (average quantity 3,883,330). Fodder was grown to the amount

weight is lost in drying. The more slender roots are generally Icft, and the stem is cut down near to the gronnd, the crown of the root being covered with leaves and earth. Thus treated, the plant con- tinues to grow, and roots may again be cut from it after the lapse of two years, but the yield will be smaller and the roots more slender and less starchy. In some varieties, as the Guayaquil and Mexican, the whole plant, including the rootstock, is pulledup. The Indians are guided in their selection of roots by the number of stems arising from the roots, by the thinness of the leaves, and the close- ness with which the stem is beset with prickles. :

In several species of Smilax the roots become thickened here and there into large tubcrous swellings 4 to 6 inches long, and one or two inches in thickness. These tubers form a considerable article of trade in China, but are used to a limited extent only on the Continent, under the name of China root, althongh introduced into Europe about the same time as sarsaparilla. China root is obtained both in China and India from Smilax glabra and S. laneexfolia, Roxburgh, and S. China, L. A similar root is yielded by &. pseudo-China, L., and S. tamnotdes in the United States from New Jersey southwards ; by S. baldisiana, Kth., in the West Indies, and by S. Japieanga and S. syringoides, Griseb., and S. Brasiliensis, Spreng., in South America. All these are used as an alterative remedy in the localities where they grow. The amount of China root exported to Europe from Canton in 1872 was only 51,200 fb, althongh in the same year as much as 1,367,733 Ib was exported from the city of Hankow to other Chinese ports. In 1882 Bombay imported from China 945 ewts. of the root. The name of Indian sarsaparilla is given to the roots of Hemidesmus indicus, R. Br., an Asclepiadaceous plant indigenous to India. These roots are readily distinguished from those of true sarsaparilla by their loose cracked bark and by their odour and taste, recalling those of melilot.

SARTHE, a department of the north-west region of France, formed in 1790 out of the eastern part of Maine, 29 communes of Anjou, and portions of Perche. Situated between 47° 35’ and 48° 30’ N. lat., and between 0° 25’ W. and 0° 55 E. long., it is bounded N. by the depart- ment of Orne, N.E. by Eure-et-Loir, E. by Loir-et-Cher, 8S. by Indre-et-Loire and Maine-et-Loire, and W. by Mayenne. The Sarthe, a sub-tributary of the Loire, flows in a south- westerly direction through the department ; and the Loir, which

along with the Sarthe joins the Mayenne to form the Maine above Angers, traverses its southern borders. The general slope of the country is from north to south-west. While the highest point (on the boundary towards Orne) is 1115 feet, the lowest, where the Loir leaves the depart- ment, is only 65. The hills that separate the streams rise as they advance north-east into Perche, or north-west into what are magniloquently called the Alpes Mancelles (1080 feet high). The Sarthe flows past Le Mans and Sablé, re- ceiving the Merdereau and the Végre from the right, and the Orne and the Huisne from the left. The Loir passes La Fléche, and along its chalky banks caves have been hollowed out which, like those along the Cher and the Loire, serve as dwelling-houses and stores. The mean annual temperature differs but slightly from that of Paris. There are in the year 145 days of rain (with 12 of snow), 56 of frost, 180 of fogs, 20 of hail, and 14 of storm. The rainfall is about 24 inches, or rather below the average for France.

Ofa total surface of 1,533,760 acres, 982,635 acres in the depart- ment are arable, 198,517 under wood, 190,176 in meadows and grass, 42,000 in moors, and 22,284 in vineyards. In 1881 the live stock comprised 61,400 horses, 6524 asses or mules, 182,195 cattle, 49,373 sheep (wool-clip 83 to 84 tons), 79,737 pigs, 24,369 goats, 12,898 hives (76 tons of honey, 214 tons wax). Poultry (capons, geese, &c.) form one of the most remunerative products of the de- partment, which sends yearly to Paris 250,000 fowls and 100,000 geese, and consumes or disposes of 10,000,000 eggs. The horses are, like those of Perche (percherons), famous for speed combined with strength. There are three distinct districts :—the corn lands to the north of the Sarthe and the Huisne; the moorlands, partly planted with pine, between those two streams and the Loir ; and the wine-growing country to the south of the Loir. In 1883 the grain crop yielded 2,813,387 bushels of wheat, 951,039 of meslin, (14,248 of rye, 2,317,760 of barley, 1,993,049 of oats, 30,880 of maize, and 59,680 of buckwheat; and therc were 9,536,312 bushels of potatoes and 92,521 of beans, pease, &c., 81,664 tons of beetroot, 4794 tons of hemp, and 6 of flax. In 1884 cider was produced to the extent of 15,473,414 gallons (average quantity per annum in previous years 8,628,444 gallons), and wine to 4,347,134 gallons

of 381,110 tons; and there were considerable supplics of chestnuts and hazel nuts—Chateau du Loir being the principal market for the former.

From the forests, which consist mainly of oaks, witch-elms, chestnut-trees, pines, and beeches, material is drawn to the value of £140,000. The agriculture of the district has made great pro- gress through the opening up of roads, improvements, draining, and irrigation. Besides mines of anthracite and coal (21,205 tons in 1882), iron-ore, marble, freestone, slate, millstones, clay, marl, lime, tuffeau (a kind of white chalky tuff), magnesia, and peat are all worked. The staple industry is the weaving of hemp and flax (3395 spindles, 4400 looms, 400 being power-looms). The cotton manufacture ranks next (8700 spindles, 185 looms, of which 100 are power-looms), while the woollen manufacture employs only 350 spindles and 161 looms. In the paper-mills 569 workmen are engaged, and the value of the paper and cardboard produced was £180,880 in 1881. Jron-foundries, copper and bell foundries, potteries, tile-works, glass-works and stained glass manufactorics, currieries, engine and carriage factories, wire-gauze factorics, flour- mills, and distilleries are also carried on; and altogether about 256 steam-engines with 2480 horse-power are employed in those establishments. The commerce of the department is facilitated by 99 miles of navigable river (Sarthe and Loir), 250 miles of national roads, 6707 miles of other roads, and 352 miles of railway.

With its 438,917 inhabitants (1881) Sarthe has exactly the average density of population in France. From 1801 (380, 821) to 1866 (465,615) the number was on the increase, but since that date there has been a decline. The department forms the diocese of Le Mans, has its court of appeal at Angers, and its university authorities at Caen, and constitutes part of the territory of the fourth corps d’armée with its headquarters at Le Mans. ‘he four arrondissements are named from Le Mans, the chief town; LaFléche (9424 inhabitants), famous for its prytanée militaire; Mamers (6070 inhabitants) ; and St Calais (3600). There are 33 cantons and 387 communes. Sablé (6000 inhabitants) contains a castle built for Colbert by Mansart; and hard by was the celebrated Benedictine abbey of Solesmes,

SARTI, Giuseppe (1729-1802), musical theorist and composer, was born at Faenza, Italy, December 1, 1729, educated—according to the best accounts —by Padre Martini, and appointed organist of the cathedral of Faenza before the completion of his nineteenth year. Resigning his appointment in 1750, Sarti devoted himself with ardour to the study of dramatic music, and

in 1751 produced his first opera, Pompeo, with great success. His next works, J7 Ré Pastore, Medonte, Demofoonte, and L'Olimpiade, assured him so brilliant a reputation that in 1753 King Frederick V. of Denmark invited him to Copenhagen, with the appointments of hofkapellmeister and director of the opera. In 1765 he travelled to Italy for the purpose of engaging some new singers; and mean- while the death of King Frederick put an end for the time to his engagement.! He was recalled to Copenhagen in 1768, and for some years enjoyed an extraordinary amount of court favour; but, though he carefully abstained from politics, the disasters from which both court and country so cruelly suffered at this critical period gradually undermined his position, and in 1775 he was banished from Denmark in disgrace. During his residence in Copenhagen Sarti composed a great number of operas, most of which were fairly successful, though few survived the epoch of their production. On his return to Italy in 1775 he was appointed director of the Ospedaletto—the most important music school in Venice ; this post, however, he relinquished in 1779, when, after severe competition, he was elected maestro di cappella at the cathedral of Milan. Here he exercised his true vocation,—composing, in addition to at least twenty of his most successful operas, a vast quantity of sacred music for the cathedral, and educating a number of clever pupils, the most distinguished of whom was Cherubini, who was never weary of singing his praises as the most accomplished musician and first teacher of the age.

In 1784 Sarti was invited by the empress Catherine II. to St Petersburg. On his way thither he stopped at

1 It was probably during this temporary suspension of duty that he made the attempt to establish himself in London, but failed to obtain a hearing at the King's Theatre.

— ~_ _ SE —

_ 2 + -_— ~~ Ee

;

SAR—SAR B15

Vienna, where the emperor Joseph II. received him with marked favour, and where he made the acquaintance of Mozart. He reached St Petersburg in 1785, and at once took the direction of the opera, for which he composed many new piecccs, besides some very striking sacred music, including a Ze Deum for the victory at Otchakoff, in which he introduced the firing of real cannon. He remained in Russia seventeen years; but by the end of that time his health was so broken by the climate that he solicited permission to return. The empress and her successor Paul I. had then been some time dead ; but the emperor Alexander dismissed Sarti with all possible honour, and he quitted the country in 1802 with a liberal pension and letters of nobility granted to him by the empress Catherine. His most successful operas in Russia were Armida and Olega, for the latter of which the empress herself wrote the libretto. Sarti did not live to reach Italy, but died at Berlin, July 28, 1802.

There can be no doubt that Cherubini owed much of his stupen- dous learning to the judicious teaching of Sarti, who was an accomplished mathematician and physicist as well as a musician, and whose works, if they lack the impress of true genius, show

extraordinary talent, and are marked throughout by faultless taste, combined with technical skill of the highest order.

SARTO, ANDREA DEL (1487-1531). This celebrated painter of the Florentine school was born in Gual- fonda, Florence, in 1487, or perhaps 1486, his father Agnolo being a tailor (sarto): hence the nickname by which the son is constantly designated. The family, though of no distinction, can be traced back into the 14th century. Vannucchi has constantly been given as the sur- name,—according to some modern writers, without any authority, but it seems rather difficult to accept this dictum. There were four other children of the marriage. In 1494 Andrea was put to work under a goldsmith. This occupation he disliked. He took to drawing from his master’s models, and was soon transferred to a skilful woodcarver and inferior painter named Gian Barile, with whom he remained until 1498. Barile, though a coarse- grained man enough, would not stand in the way of the advancement of his promising pupil, so he recommended him to Picro di Cosimo as draughtsman and colourist. Piero retained Andrea for some

years, allowing him to study from the famous cartoons of Leonardo da Vinci and Michelangelo. Finally Andrea agreed with his friend Francia Bigio, who was somewhat his senior, that they would open a joint shop; at a date not precisely defined they took a lodging together in the Piazza del Grano. Their first work in partnership may probably have been the Baptism of Christ, done for the Florentine Com- pagnia dello Scalzo, a performance of no great merit, the beginning of a series, all the extant items of which are in monochrome chiaroscuro. Soon afterwards the partnership was dissolved. From 1509 to 1514 the brotherhood of the Servi employed Andrea, as well as Francia Bigio and Andrea Feltrini, the first-named undertaking in the portico of the Annunziata three frescos illustrating the life of the founder of the order, S. Filippo Benizzi. He executed them in a few months, being endowed by nature with remarkable readiness and certainty of hand, and unhesitat- ing firmness in his work, although in the general mould of his mind he was timid and diffident. The subjects are the Saint Sharing his Cloak with a Leper, Cursing some Gamblers, and Restoring a Girl possessed with a Devil. The second and third works excel the first, and are impulsive and able performances.. These paintings met with merited applause, and gained for their author the pre-eminent title “Andrea senza errori” (Andrew the unerring),—the correctness of the contours being parti- cularly admired. After these subjects the painter pro- ceeded with two others—the Death of St Philip, and the

Children Cured by Touching his Garment,—all the five works being completed before the close of 1510. The youth of twenty-three was already in technique about the best fresco-painter of central Italy, barely rivalled by Raphael, who was the elder. by four years. Michelangelo’s Sixtine frescos were then only in a preliminary stage. Andrea always worked in the simplest, most typical, and most trying method of fresco—that of painting the thing once and for all, without any subsequent dry-touching. He now received many commissions. The brotherhood of the Servi engaged him to do two more frescos in the Annunziata at a higher price; he also painted, towards 1512, an Annunciation in the monastery of 8. Gallo.

The’ “ Tailor’s Andrew” appears to have been an easy- going plebeian, to whom a modest position in life and scanty gains were no grievances. As an artist he must have known his own value ; but he probably rested content in

the sense of his superlative powers as an executant, and did not aspire to the rank of a great inventor or leader, for which, indeed, he had no vocation. He leda social sort of life among his compeers of the art, was intimate with the sculptor Rustici, and joined a jolly dining-club at his house named the Company of the Kettle, also a second club named the Trowel. At one time, Francia Bigio being then the chairman of the Kettle-men, Andrea recited, and is by some regarded as having composed, a comic epic, “The Battle of the Mice and Frogs”—a rechauffé, as one may surmise, of the Greek Batrachomyomachia, popularly ascribed to Homer. He fell in love with Lucrezia (del Fede), wife of a hatter named Carlo Recanati; the hatter dying opportunely, the tailor’s son married her on 26th December 1512. She was a very handsome woman, and has come down to us treated with great suavity in many a picture of her lover- husband, who constantly painted her as a Madonna and otherwise; and even in painting other women he made them resemble Lucrezia in general type. She has been much less gently handled by Vasari and other biographers. Vasari, who was at one time a pupil of Andrea, describes her as faithless, jealous, overbearing, and vixenish with the apprentices. She lived to a great age, surviving her second husband 40 years.

By 1514 Andrea had finished his last two frescos in the court of the Servi, than which none of his works was more admired—the Nativity of the Virgin, which shows the influence of Leonardo, Domenico Ghirlandajo, and Fra Bartolommeo, in effective fusion, and the Procession of the Magi, intended as an amplification of a work by Baldovinetti; in this fresco is a portrait of Andrea him- self. He also executed at some date a much-praised Head of Christ over the high altar. By November 1515 he had finished at the Scalzo the allegory of Justice, and the Baptist Preaching in the Desert, —followed in 1517 by John Baptizing, and other subjects. Before the end of 1516 a Pieta of his composition, and afterwards a Madonna, were sent to the French Court. These were received with applause; and the art-loving monarch Francis J. suggested in 1518 that Andrea should come to Paris. He journeyed thither towards June of that year, along with his pupil Andrea Sguazzella, leaving his wife in Florence, and was very cordially received, and for the first and only time in his life was handsomely remunerated. Lucrezia, however, wrote urging his return to Italy. The king assented, but only on the understanding that his absence from France was to be short; and

he entrusted Andrea with a sum of money to be expended in purchas- ing works of art for his royal patron. The temptation of having a goodly amount of pelf in hand proved too much for Andrea's virtue. He spent the king's money and some of kis own in building a house for himself in Flor-

ence. This necessarily brought him into bad odour with Francis, who refused to be appeased by some endeavours which the painter afterwards made to reingratiate him- self. No serious punishment, however, and apparently no grave loss of professional reputation befell the defaulter. In 1520 he resumed work in Florence, and executed the Faith and Charity in the cloister of Lo Scalzo. These were succeeded by the Dance of the Daughter of Herodias, the Beheading of the Baptist, the Presentation of his Head to Herod, an allegory of Hope, the Apparition of the Angel to Zacharias (1523), and the monochrome of the Visitation. This last was painted in the autumn of 1524, after Andrea had returned from Luco in Mugello,—to which place an outbreak of plague in Florence had driven him, his wife, his step-daughter, and other relatives. In 1525 he painted the very famous fresco named the Madonna del Sacco, a lunette in the cloisters of the Servi ; this picture (named after a sack against which Joseph is represented propped) is generally accounted his master- piece. His final work at Lo Scalzo, 1526, was the Birth of the Baptist, executed with some enhanced elevation of

style after Andrea had been diligently studying Michel-

angelo's figures in the sacristy of S. Lorenzo. In the following year he completed at S. Salvi, near Florence, a celebrated Last Supper, in which all the personages seem to be portraits. This also is a very fine example of his style, though the conception of the subject is not exalted. It is the last monumental work of importance which Andrea del Sarto lived to execute. He dwelt in Florence

throughout the memorable siege, which was soon followed

by an infectious pestilence. He caught the malady, struggled against it with little or no tending from his wife,

who held aloof, and died, no one knowing much about it at the moment, on 22d January 1531, at the comparatively He was buried unceremoniously

early age of forty-three. in the church of the Servi.

Various portraits painted by Andrea are regarded as likenesses

of himself, but this is not free from some doubt. One is in the London National Gallery, an admirable half-figure, purchased in 1862. Another is at Alnwick Castle, a young man about twenty years of age, with his elbow onatable. Another at Panshanger may perhaps represent in reality his pupil Domenico Conti. Another youthful portrait is in the Uffizi Gallery, and the Pitti Gallery contains more than one. Among his more renowned works not already specified arc the following. The Virgin and Child, with St Francis and St John the Evangelist and two Angels, now in the Uffizi, painted for the chureh of S. Francesco in Florence ; this is termed the Madonna di S, Francesco, or Madonna delle Arpie, from certain figures of harpies which are decoratively introduced, and is rated as Andrea's masterpiece in oil-painting. The altar- piece in the Uffizi, painted for the monastery of 8. Gallo, the Fathers Disputing on the Doctrine of tho Trinity—Sts Augustine, Dominic, Francis, Lawrence, Sebastian, and Mary Magdalene— & very energetic work. Both these pictures are comparatively early—towards 1517. The Charity now in the Louvre (perhaps the only painting which Andrea executed while in France). The Pieta, in the Belvedere of Vienna; this work, as well as the Charity, shows a strong Michelangelesque influence. At Poggio a Caiano a celebrated fresco (1521) representing Julius Cxsar recciving tribute, various figures bringing animals from foreign lands—a striking perspective arrangement ; it was left unfinished by Andrea, and was completed by Alessandro Allori. Two very remarkable paintings (1523) containing various incidents of the life of the patriarch J oseph, executed for the Borgherini family. In the Pitti Gallery two Separate compositions of the Assump- tion of the Virgin, also a fine Pieth. In the Madrid Museum the Virgin and Child, with J oseph, Elizabeth, the infant Baptist, and an Archangel. In the Louvre the Holy Family, the Baptist pointing upwards. In the Berlin Gallery a portrait of his wife. In Panshanger a fine portrait named Laura. The second picture in the National Gallery ascribed to Andrea, a Holy Family, is by Some critics regarded as the work rather of one of his

seliolars— we hardly know why. A very noticcable incident in the life of Andrea del Sarto relates to the copy, which he produced in 1523, of the portrait group of Leo X. by Raphael; it is now in the Naples Museum, the original being in the Pitti Gallery. Ottaviano de Medici, the owner of the original, was solicited by Duke Frederick II. of Mantua to present it to him. Unwilling to part

with so great a pictorial prize, and unwilling also to disoblige the duke, Ottaviano got Andrea to make the copy, which was con- signed to the duke as being the original. So deceptive was the imitation that even Giulio Romano, who had himself manipulated the original to some extent, was completely taken in; and, on showing the supposed Raphael years afterwards to Vasari, who knew the facts, he could only be undeceived when a private mark on the canvas was named to him by Vasari, and brought under his eye. It was Michelangelo who had introduced Vasari in 1524 to Andrea's studio. He is said to have thought very highly of Andrea's powers, saying on one oecasion to Raphael, ‘‘ There is a little fellow in Florence who will bring sweat to your brow if ever he is engaged in great works.”

Andrea had true pictorial style, a very high standard of correct- ness, and an enviable balance of executive endowments. The point of technique in which he excelled least was perhaps that of dis- criminating the varying textures of different objects and surfaces. There is not much elevation or ideality in his works—much more of reality. His chiaroseuro is not carried out according to strict rule, but is adjusted to his liking for harmony of colour and fused tone and transparence ; in fresco more especially his predilection for varied tints appears excessive. It may be broadly said that his taste in colouring was derived mainly from Fra Bartolommeo, and in form from Michelangelo ; and his style partakes of the Venetian and Lombard, as well as the Florentine and Roman—some of his figures are even adapted from Albert Diirer. In one way or other he continued improving to the last. In drawing from nature, his habit was to sketch very slightly, making only such a memorandum as sufficed to work from. The scholars of Andrea were very numerous ; but, according to Vasari, they were not wont to stay long, being

domiueercd over by his wife ; Pontormo and Domenico Puligo may be mentioned.

In our account of Andrea del Sarto we have followed the main lines of the

narrative of Crowe and Cavaleaselle, supplemented by Vasari, Lanzi, and others, There are biographies by Biadi (1829) and by Von Reumont, (W. M. BR.)

SASANIANS. See Persra.

SASINE. See Srtsmn.

SASSARI, the chief town of the northern province of the island of Sardinia (Italy), is situated in the midst of orange and olive groves at a height of 650 feet above the sea, 125 miles from Porto Torres, on the railway to Chilivani, a junction on the main line from Terranova to Cagliari. Till about 1860-65 it was surrounded by a high wall built in the 14th century and strengthened by twenty- six large square towers from 60 to 80 feet high. The castle dates from 1327-133]. Originally built in the first half of the 15th century, when the see of Turris (Porto Torres) was removed to Sassari, the cathedral was restored in 1531 and received a new facade in the 18th century. The city besides contains a municipal palace, re- built since 1820, an episcopal palace dating originally from the 13th century, and a university (faculties of law and medicine, with 87 students in 1881-2) founded by Philip III. of Spain in 1617, as well as barracks, law courts, hospitals, and asylums. There is a white marble fountain —Fonte di Rosello—on the east side of the town, sur- mounted by a statue of St Gavinus, patron saint of the city, and from this source water is still hawked about the streets, though waterworks have recently been constructed by the municipality at a cost of upwards of £60,000. Most of the streets are narrow and tortuous, and vehicles are generally drawn by oxen. Sassari is separated by a low and swampy stretch of country from its port at Porto Torres—a village on the site of Zurrts Lnbisonis, Colonia Julia, with a basilica of the 11th century (8S. Gavino) and the ruins of a temple of Fortune now called Palazzo del Re Barbaro. The population of the city was 22,945 in 1862, and 31,596 in 1881,

Sassari appears in the archives of the monastery of San Pietro di Silki in 1118 as Tathari, and the local pronunciation is still Tatari. In 1294 the town was declared an independent republic, and a very liberal code of laws was published in 1316 (edited by Don Pasquale Tola, Cagliari, 1850). Sassari was sacked by the French in 1527, and in 1796 the Sardinian popular party seized the city, expelied the viceroy, and dismantled the castle and “ palaces, ”

SASSERAM, a subdivision of the Shahabad district, Bengal, India, between 24° 31’ and 25° 23’ N. lat., and between 83° 33’ and 84° 30’ E, long., with an area of 1493

2 é-. ae ae

oa

square miles, and a population in 1881 of 519,207 (males 253,757, females 265,450). This subdivision consists of four thanahs or stations, viz., Sasseram, Khargar, Dhan- gion, and Dehree. The thanah of Sasseram has an area of 691 square miles, and a population (1881) of 155,760 (75,031 males, 80,729 females). It contains the tomb of the Afghan Sher Shah, who conquered Humayun, and subsequently became emperor of Delhi.

SATALI, Apatta, or ANDALIYEH, one of the principal towns on the south coast of Asia Minor, giving the name of Gulf of Adalia to the great bay which the ancients styled Mare Pamphylicum. Arranged like a Greek theatre round the harbour, it presents an unusually picturesque appearance against its background of mountains; and it is enclosed by a triple wall of modern construction, strengthened by a ditch and square towers. Several of the mosques and churches, seventeen in number, are of interest, and contain remains of Roman work. The population was estimated by Spratt at 13,000, of whom 3000 were Greeks. Though the physical changes produced on this part of the coast by the tufaceous deposits of the rivers render the ancient descriptions quite inapplicable to the present town, there is little doubt that Satali not only

_preserves the name but occupies the site of Attaleia, which

was founded by Attalus IJ. Philadelphus, king of Perga- nium, and became one of the principal cities of Pamphylia. At an early date it was the see of a Christian bishop. SATARA, or SatraRAH, a British district in the central division of the Bombay presidency, India, between 16° 50’ and 18° 10’ N. lat. and 73° 45’ and 75° E. long. It has an area of 4988 square miles,‘and is bounded on the north by the river Nira and the states of Bhor and Phaltan, on the east by Sholapur district, on the south by the Varna river separating it from Kolhapur and Sangli states, and on the west by the SahyAdri mountains, which separate it from the Concan districts of Kolab& and Ratnagiri. The Satara district contains two main systems of hills, the

SahyAdri range and its offshoots, and the Mahadeo range and its offshoots; the former runs through the district from north to south, and the Mahddeo range starts about 10 miles north of Mahdbaleshwar and stretches east and south-east across the whole breadth of the district. ‘The Mahddeo Hills are bold and abrupt, present- ing in many cases bare scarps of black rock and looking at a distance like so many hill fortresses. Within the limits of Sdtéra are two river systems—the Bhima system in a small part of the north and north-east, and the Kistna system throughout the rest of the district. (See Kisrna.) The hill forests have a large store of timber and firewood. The whole of Sdtdra falls within the Deccan trap area; the hills consist of trap intersected by strata of basalt and topped with laterite, while, of the different soils on the plains, the commonest is the black loamy clay con- taining carbonate of lime. This is a very fertile soil, and when well watered is capable of yielding heavy crops. Satara district contains some important irrigation works,— including the Kistna Canal, open for 35 miles. In some of the western parts of the district the average annual rainfall exceeds 200 inches; but on the eastern side water is scanty, the rainfall varying from 40 inches in Satara town to less than 12 inches in some places farther east. There is no railway, but the West Deccan Railway, which is in course of construction, will put the district into com- munication with Poona and Belgaum, and will run through Satara for about 100 miles. The tiger, panther, bear, and sambhar deer are found in the west near the Sahyédris, and the hyzena, wolf, leopard, and smaller game in the east. According to the last census returns (1881) the population of Satira district was 1,062,350 (532,525 males and 529,825 females). Lindus numbered 1,008,918, Mohammedans 36,712, and Christians

886. Four towns had more than 10,000 inhabitants, —Satara (see below), Wai 11,676, Karad 10,778, Tasgaon 10,206. About two- thirds of the Hindus consist of Kunbis and Mahrattas, who during the period of Mahratta ascendency furnished the bulk of the armies; and the Mavlds, who formed Shivaji’s best soldiers, were drawn from the hill tribes of Satara district. Agriculture supports more than three-fourths of the people; the soil is fertile, and joar forms the staple food ; rice is grown in the western valleys, and in the south and east cotton is raiscd. In 1882-83, of 1,384,255 acres

held for tillage, 270,244 were fallow or under grass, while of the remaining 1,114,011 acres 39,757 were twice cropped; cecreals, consisting chicfly of joar and bajra, occupied 898, 206 acres, pulses 159,211 acres, oil-seeds 42,001 acres, and miscellaneous crops the remainder. Besides blankets and coarse cotton cloth the chief exports are grain, tobacco, oil-seeds, chillics, molasses, and a little raw cotton ; the imports are piece-goods, hardware, salt, and dates. The gross revenue of the district in 1883-84 amounted to £268,779, of which the land contributed £228,749.

Ou the overthrow of the Jadhav dynasty in 1312 the district passed to the Mohammedan power, which was consolidated in the reign of the Bahmani kings. On the fall of the Bahmanis towards the end of the 15th century each chief set up for himself until the Bijapur kings finally asserted themselves, and under these kings the Mahrattas arose, and laid the foundation of an independent kingdom with Satara as its capital. Intrigues and dissensions in the palace led to the ascendency of the peshwas, who removed the capital to Poona in 1749, and degraded the raja of Satara into the position of a political prisoner. The war of 1817 closed the career of the peshwas, and the British then restored the titular raja, and assigned to him the principality of Satara. In conse- quence of political intrigues, he was deposed in 1839, and his brother was placed on the throne. This prince dying without male heirs, the state was resumed by the British Government.

SATARA, chief town and headquarters of the above district, is situated in 17° 41’ 25” N. lat. and 74° 2’ 10” E. long., intmediately below a remarkably strong hill fort on the summit of a small, steep, rocky hill. It takes its name from the seventeen walls, towers, and gates whicli the Satara fort was supposed to possess. With a height of 2320 feet above sea-level, Sdtara is about 60 miles from the coast, and 69 miles south of Poona. Since the death of the last raja in 1848 the population has con- siderably decreased; still Satara contained in 1881 some 28,601 inhabitants (14,558 males and 14,043 females).

SATIN-WOOD, a beautiful light-coloured hard wood having a rich silky lustre, sometimes finely mottled or grained, the produce of a large tree, Chloroxylon Swietenia, native of India and Ceylon. A similar wood, known under the same name, is obtained in the West Indies, the tree yielding which

is said to be Maba guianensis. Satin- wood was in request for rich furniture about the end of the 18th century, the fashion then being to ornament panels of it with painted medallions and floral scrolls and borders. Now it is used for inlaying and small veneers, and most largely in covering the backs of hair and clothes-brushes and in making small articles of turnery.

SATIRE. Satire, in its literary aspect, may be defined as the expression in adequate terms of the sense of amuse- ment or disgust excited by the ridiculous or unseemly, provided that humour is a distinctly recognizable element, and that the utterance is invested with literary form. With- out humour, satire is invective ; without literary form, it is mere clownish jeering. It is indeed exceedingly difficult to define the limits between satire and the regions of literary sentiment into which it shades. The lofty ethical feeling of a Johnson or a Carlyle borders it on the one hand, the witty sarcasm of a Talleyrand, rancorous or good-natured, on the other; but, however exalted the satirist's aims, or amiable his temper, a basis of contempt or dislike is the groundwork of his art. This feeling may be diverted from the failings of man individual to the feebleness and imper- fection of man universal, and the composition may still be a satire ; but if the element of scorn or sarcasm were entirely eliminated it would become asermon. That this expression of aversion is of the essence of satire appears from the fact | that the literary power which, the more it is exerted upon

grave and elevatcd subjects, removes them further and further from the domain of satire can confer satiric dig- nity upon the most scurrilous lampoon. The distinction between the intellectual form and the raw material of satire is admirably illustrated by a passage in an accom- plished novelist. The clever young lady happening to compare a keen and bright person to a pair of scissors, her unrefined companion is for the moment unable to under- stand how a human being can resemble a piece of cutlery ; but suddenly a light breaks in upon her, and, taking up a broken pair of scissors from the table, she imitates the halting gait of a lame lady, declaring that Mrs Brown resembles that particular pair of scissors to the life. The first interlocutor could have been satirical if she would ' the second would if she could. The nice and delicate per- ception of the former type of character

may be fairly driven into satire by the vulgarity and obtuseness of the second, as in the case of Miss Austen; and it may be added that the general development of civilization, repressing high- handed wrongs against which ridicule is no defence, and encouraging failings which can be effectually attacked in no other manner, continually tends to make satire more congenial to the amiable and refined, and thus exalt its moral tone and purpose.

The first exercise of satire was no doubt sufficiently coarse and boisterous. It must have consisted in gibing at personal defects ; and Homer's description of Thersites, the earliest example of literary satire that has come down to us, probably conveys an accurate delineation of the first satirists, the carpers and fault-finders of the clan. The character reappears in the heroic romances of Ireland, and elsewhere; and it is everywhere implied that the licensed backbiter is a warped and distorted being, readier with his tongue than his hands. The verdict of unso- phisticated man on satire is clearly that it is the offspring of ill-nature ; to redeem and dignify it by rendering it the instrument of morality or the associate of poetry was a development implying considerable advance in the literary art. The latter is the course adopted in the Old Testa- ment, where the few passages approximating to satire, such as Jotham's parable of the bramble and Job's ironical address to his friends, are embellished either by fancy or by feeling. An intermediate stage between personal ridi- cule and the correction of faults and follies seems to have been represented in Greece by the Margites, attributed to Homer, which, while professedly lampooning an individual, practically rebuked the meddling sciolism impersonated in him. In the accounts that have come down to us of the writings of Archilochus, the first great master of satire (about 700 B.c.), we seem to trace the elevation of the instrument of private animosity to an element in public life. Though a merciless assailant of individuals, Archilochus was also a distinguished statesman, naturally for the most part in Opposition, and his writings seem to have fulfilled many of the functions of a newspaper press. Their extraordinary merit is attested by the infallible judgment of Quintilian eight hundred years after their com- position; and Gorgias's comparison of them with Plato's persiflage of the Sophists proves that their virulence must have been tempered by grace and refinement. Archilochus also gave satiric poetry its accepted form by the invention of the iambic trimeter, slightly

modified into the scazonic metre by his successors. Simonides of Amorgus, about a generation later, and Hipponax, a century later still, were distinguished like Archilochus for the bitterness of their attacks on individuals, with which the former combined a strong ethical feeling, and the latter a bright active fancy. All three were restless and turbulent, aspiring and discon- tented, impatient of abuses and theoretically enamoured

of liberty; and the loss of their writings, which would |

| is so much beside.

[he

have thrown great light on the politics as well as the manners of Greece, is exceedingly to be lamented. With Hipponax the direct line of Greek satire is interrupted ; but two new forms of literary composition, exceedingly capable of being rendered the vehicles of satire, almost simultaneously make their appearance. Fable is first heard of in Asiatic Greece about this date ; and, although its original intention does not seem to have been satirical, its adaptability to satiric purposes was soon discovered and turned to account. A far more important step was the elevation of the rude fun of rustic merrymakings to a literary status by the evolution of the drama from the Bacchic festival, The means had now been found of ally- ing the satiric spirit with exalted poetry, and their union was consummated in the person of a poet who combined humour with imagination in a degree never again to be rivalled until Shakespeare. Every variety of satire is exemplified in the comedies of Aristophanes ; and if he does not rank as the first of satirists it is only because he Such affluence of poetical genius could not be perpetual, any nore than the peculiar political and social conditions which for a time made such fearless and uncontrolled satire possible. Through the half-way house of mythological parody the comedy of public life passes into the comedy of manners, metrical still, but approxi- mating more closely to prose, and consequently to satire on its own side of the line which it is convenient if not strictly logical to trace between dramatists and ordinary satiric writers. The step from Menander to Lucilius is not a long one, but it was not destined to be taken by a Greek.

A rude form of satire had existed in Italy from an early date in the shape of the Fescennine verses, the rough and licentious pleasantry of the vintage and harvest, which, lasting down to the 16th century, inspired Tansillo's Vendemmiatore. As in Greece, these eventually, about 364 B.C., were developed into a rude drama, originally intro- duced as a religious expiation. This was at first, Livy tells us (vii. 2), merely pantomimic, as the dialect of the Tuscan actors imported for the occasion was not under- stood at Rome. Verse, "like to the Fescennine verses in point of style and manner," was soon added to accompany the mimetic action, and, with reference to the variety of metres employed, these probably improvised compositions were entitled Saturz, a term denoting miscellany, and derived from the satura lanz, "a charger filled with the first-fruits of the year's produce, anciently offered to Bacchus and Ceres." The Romans thus had originated the name of satire, and, in so far as the Fescennine drama consisted of raillery and ridicule, possessed the thing also; but it had not yet assumed a literary form among them. Livius Andronicus (240 8.c.), the first regular Latin dra- Matic poet, appears to have been little more than a trans- lator from the Greek. Satires are mentioned among the literary productions of Ennius (200 B.c.) and Pacuvius (170 B.C.), but the title rather refers to the variety of metres employed than to the genius of the composition. The real inventor of Roman satire is Caius Lucilius (148-103 3.c.), whose Satirz seem to have been mostly satirical in the modern acceptation of the term, while the subjects of some of them prove that the title continued to be applied to miscellaneous collections of poems, as was the case even to the time of Varro, whose " Sature" included prose as well as verse, and appear to have been only partially satirical, The fragments of Lucilius preserved are un- fortunately very scanty, but the verdict of Horace, Cicero, and Quintilian demonstrates that he was a very consider- able poet. It is needless to dwell on compositions so universally known as the Satires of Lucilius's successor Horace, in whose hands this class of composition received

ee

SATIRE

an cntirely new development, becoming genial, playful, and persuasive. ‘‘Arch Horace strove to mend.” The didactic element preponderates still more in the philo- sophical satires of Persius, the propagandist of Stoicism, a writer whose intensity, dramatic gift, obscurity, and abruptness render him, like the Browning and Meredith of our own days, the luxury of the few and the despair of the many. Yet another form of satire, the rhetorical, was carried to the utmost limits of excellence by Juvenal, the first example of a great tragic satirist. Nearly at the same time Martial, improving on earlier Roman models now lost, gave that satirical turn to the epigram which it only exceptionally possessed in Greece, but has ever since retained. The brevity, pregnancy, and polish of the Latin tongue were never more felicitously exemplified than by this gifted writer. About the same time another variety of satire came into vogue, destined to become the most important of any. The Milesian tale, a form of entertainment probably of Eastern origin, grew in the hands of Petronius and Apuleius into the satirical romance, immensely widening the satirist’s field and exempting him from the restraints of metre. Petronius’s “Supper of Trimalchio” is the revelation of a new vein, never fully worked till our days. As the novel arose upon the ruins of the epic, so dialogue sprung up upon the wreck of comedy. In Lucian comedy appears adapted to suit the exigencies of an age in which a living drama had become impossible. Lucian’s position as a satirist is something new, and could not, from the nature of the case, have been occupied by any of his predecessors. For the first time since the origin of civilization society felt apprehensive of impending dissolution, and its fears found an interpreter in the Sophist of Samosata, ‘the Voltaire of paganism,” an universal censor and mocker, devoid of the Christian’s hope of general renovation, and unable to foresee the new social order which the barbarian conquest was destined to create. Next to his wit, Lucian’s special note is his sturdy love of truth and demand for genuinencss in all things. With him antique satire expires as a distinct branch of literature,—though mention should be made of the sar- casms and libels with which the population of Egypt were for centuries accustomed to insult the Roman conqueror and his parasites. An exceedingly curious specimen, a denunciation of the apostate poet Hor-Uta—a kind of Egyptian ‘‘ Lost Leader ”—composed under Augustus, has recently been published by M. Revillout from a demotic papyrus.

It is highly interesting to remark how, after the great deluge of barbarism has begun to retire, one form of satire after another peeps forth from the receding flood, the order of development being determined by the circum- stances of time and place. In the Byzantine empire, indeed, the link of continuity is unbroken, and such raillery of abuses as is possible under a despotism finds vent in the pale copies of Lucian published in Ellissen's Analekten. The first really important satire, however, is a product of Western Europe, recurring to the primitive form of fable, upon which, nevertheless, it constitutes a decided advance. Reynard the Fox, a genuine expression of the shrewd and homely Teutonic mind, is a landmark in literature. It gave the beast-epic a development of which the ancients had not dreamed, and showed how cutting ridicule could be conveyed in a form difficult to resent. About the same time, probably, the popular instinct, perhaps deriving a hint from Rabbinical litera- ture, fashioned Morolf, the prototype of Sancho Panza, the incarnation of sublunar mother-wit contrasted with the starry wisdom of Solomon; and the 7%ll Hulenspiegel is a kindred Teutonic creation, but later and less significant. Piers Ploughman, the next great work of the class, adapts

| the apocalyptic machinery of monastic and anchoritic vision to the purposes of satire, as it had often before been adapted to those of ecclesiastical aggrandizement. The clergy were scourged with their own rod bya poet and a Puritan too earnest to be urbane. Satire is a distinct element in Chaucer and Boccaccio, who nevertheless cannot be ranked as satirists. The mock-heroic is successfully revived by Pulci, and the political songs of the 14th and 15th cen- turies attest the diffusion of a sense of humour among the people at large. The Renaissance, restoring the knowledge and encouraging the imitation of classic models, sharpened the weapons and enlarged the armoury of the satirist. Partly, perhaps, because Erasmus was no poet, the Lucianic dialogue was the form in the ascendant of his age. Erasmus not merely employed it against supersti- tion and ignorance with infinite and irresistible pleasantry, but fired by his example a bolder writer, untrammelled by the dignity of an arbiter in the republic of letters. The ridicule of Ulric von Hutten's Epistole Obscurorum Virorum is annihilating, and the art there for the first time fully exemplified though long previously

introduced by Plato, of putting the ridicule into the mouth of the victim, is perhaps the most deadly shaft in the quiver of sarcasm. It was afterwards used with even more pointed wit though with less exuberance of humour by Pascal, the | first modern example, if Dante may not be so classed, of a great tragic satirist. Ethical satire is vigorously represented by Sebastian Brant and his imitator Alexander Barclay ; but in general the metrical satirists of the age seem tame in comparison with Erasmus and Hutten, though including the great name of Machiavelli. Sir Thomas More cannot be accounted a satirist, but his idea of an imaginary common- wealth embodied the germ of much subsequent satire. In the succeeding period politics take the place of literature and religion, producing in France the Satyre Ménippée, elsewhere the satirical romance as represented by the Argems of Barclay, which may be defined as the adaptation of the style of Petronius to state affairs. In Spain, where no freedom of criticism existed, the satiric spirit took refuge in the novela picaresca, the prototype of Le Sage and the ancestor of Fieldmg; Quevedo revived the medi- eval device of the vision as the vehicle of reproof; and Cervantes's immortal work might be classed as a satire were it not so much more, About the same time we notice the appearance of direct imitation of the Roman satirists in English literature in the writings of Donne, Hall, and Marston, the further elaboration of the mock- heroic by Tassoni, and the culmination of classical Italian satire in Salvator Rosa. The prodigious development of the drama at this time absorbed much talent that would otherwise have been devoted to satire proper. Most of the great dramatists of the 17th century were more or less satirists, Moliére perhaps the most consummate that ever existed; but, with an occasional exception like Les Précieuses Ridicules, the range of their works is too wide to admit of their being regarded as satires. The next great example of unadulterated satire is Butler's Hudibras, and perhaps one more truly representative of satiric aims and methods cannot easily be found. At the same period dignified political satire, bordermg on invec- tive, received a great development in Andrew Marvell's Advices to a Painter, and was shortly afterwards carried to perfection in Dryden's Absalom and Achitophel ; while the light literary parody of which Aristophanes had given the pattern in his assaults on Euripides, and which Shakespeare had handled somewhat carelessly in the Midsummer Night's Dream, was effectively revived in the duke of Buckingham's Pehearsal. In

France Boileau was long held to have attained the ne plus ultra of the Horatian style in satire and of the mock-heroic, but Pope was soon

to show that further progress was possible in both. The polish, point, and concentration of Pope remain unsur- passed, as do the amenity of Addison and the daring yet severely logical imagination of Swift; while the History of John Bull and the Pseudologia place their friend Arbuth- not in the first rank of political satirists. The 18th century was, indeed, the age of satire. Serious poetry had for the time worn itself out ; the most original geniuses of the age, Swift, Defoe, and Richardson, are decidedly prosaic, and Pope, though a true poet, is less of a poet than Dryden. In process of time imaginative power revives in Goldsmith and Rousseau ; meanwhile Fielding and Smollett have fitted

the novel to be the vehicle of satire and much beside, and | | indeed transplanted to America by Russell Lowell, whose

the literary stage has for a time been almost wholly en- grossed by a colossal satirist, a man who has dared the universal application of Shaftesbury's maxim that ridicule is the test of truth. The world had never before seen a satirist on the scale of Voltaire, nor had satire ever played such a part asa factor in impending change. The parallel with Lucian is in some respects very close. Toleration was Voltaire's idol, as truth was Lucian's ; and thus, aiming more than his predecessor at the practical reformation of manners and institutions, his work was less purely negative. He was nevertheless a destroyer, and as utterly out of sympathy with the positive spirit of science for which he was preparing the way as Lucian could possibly be with Goths or Christians. As a master of sarcastic mockery he is unsurpassed ; his manner is entirely his own; and he is one of the most intensely national of writers, notwith- standing his vast obligations to English humorists, states- men, and philosophers. English humour also played an important part in the literary regeneration of Germany, where, after Liscow and Rabener, direct imitators of Swift and the essayists, Lessing, imbued with Pope but not mastered by him, showed how powerful an auxiliary satire can be to criticism,—a relation which Pope had somewhat inverted. Another great German writer, Wieland, owes little to

the English, but adapts Lucian and Petronius to the 18th century with playful if somewhat mannered grace. Kortum's Jobsiad, a most humorous poem, innovates suc- cessfully upon established models by making low life, instead of chivalry, the subject of burlesque. Goethe and Schiller, Scott and Wordsworth, are now at hand, and as imagination gains ground satire declines. Byron, who in the 18th century would have been the greatest of satirists, is hurried by the spirit of his age into passion and description, bequeathing, however, a splendid proof of the possibility of allying satire with sublimity in his Vision of Judgment. Moore gives the epigram a lyrical turn; Béranger, not for the first time in French literature, makes the gay chanson the instrument of biting jest; and the classic type receives fresh currency from Auguste Barbier. Courier, and subsequently Cormenin, raise the political pamphlet to literary dignity by their poignant wit. Peacock evolves a new type of novel from the study of Athenian comedy. Miss Edgeworth skirts the confines of satire, and Miss Austen, the most refined and delicate of all observers of manners, seasons her novels with the most exquisite satiric traits. Washington Irving revives the manner of The Spectator, and Tieck brings irony and persiflage to the discussion of critical problems. Two great satiric figures remain,—one representative of his nation, the other most difficult to class. In all the characteristics of his genius Thackeray is thoroughly English, and the faults and follies he chastises are those especially charac- teristic of British society. Good sense and the perception of the ridiculous are amalgamated in him ; his satire is a thoroughly British article, a little over-solid, a little wanting in finish, but honest, weighty, and durable. Posterity will go to him for the humours of the age of Victoria, as they

go to Addison for those of Anne's. But Heine hardly belongs to any nation or country, time or place. He ceased to be a German without becoming a Frenchman, and a Jew without becoming a Christian. Only one portrait really suits him, that in Tieck's allegorical tale, where he is repre- sented as a capricious and mischievous elf; but his song is sweeter and his command over the springs of laughter and tears greater than it suited Tieck's purpose to acknow- ledge. In him the satiric spirit, long confined to established literary forms, seems to obtain unrestrained freedom to wander where it

will, nor have the ancient models been followed since by any considerable satirist except the Italian Giusti. The machinery employed by Moore was

Biglow Papers represent perhaps the highest moral level yet attained by satire. In no age has the spirit of satire been so generally diffused as in the 19th century, but many of its eminent writers, while bordering on the domains of satire, escape the definition of satirist. The term cannot be properly applied to Dickens, the keen observer of the oddities of human life; or to George Eliot, the critic of – its emptiness when not inspired by a worthy purpose; or to Balzac, the painter of French society ; or to Trollope, the mirror of the middle classes of England. If Sartor Ltesartus could be regarded as a satire, Carlyle would rank among the first of satirists; but the satire, though very obvious, rather accompanies than inspires the composition, The number of minor satirists of merit, on the other hand, is legion, and but few can be mentioned here. Poole, in his broadly farcical Little Pedlington, has rung the changes with inexhaustible ingenuity on a single fruitful idea; Jerrold's comedies sparkle with epigrams, and his tales and sketches overflow with quaint humour; Mallock has made the most of personal mimicry, the lowest form of satire ; Samuel Butler holds an inverting mirror to the world's face with imperturbable gravity; Courthope reproduces the airy grace and sonorous melody of the Attic comedy ; and the anonymous writer of the "' Barnum " Christmas number of Truth has resuscitated with equal effect its reckless fun and personality. One remarkable feature of the age is the union of caricature with literature to a degree incon- ceivable before the improvements in wood-engraving. All large capitals now have their comic illustrated journals, destined for the most part to be the marvels and stumbling- blocks of posterity. Punch, however, has become almost a national institution, and has fostered the genius of two pictorial satirists of the first rank, Leech and Tenniel. The present tendencies of the civilized world seem highly favourable to the influence of satire as a factor in human affairs, but unfavourable to the production of satiric masterpieces. Satire is the inevitable concomitant of free- dom of speech, which must continue to prevail and diffuse itself unless checked by military or socialistic despotism. But as the privilege of the many it is less likely to be the resource of the few; and it may happen that the press, dealing with follies of the day as they arise, will more and more forestall the satire that springs from meditation and study. The

principal security is the originality and robust- ness of true satiric genius, which, having defied prisons and scaffolds in the past, may find the means of eluding public impatience and satiety in the future. (R. G.)

SATRAP. See Persia, vol. xviii. pp. 569, 583.

SATURN, an ancient Italian god, whom the Romans, and till recently the moderns, identified with the Greek god Cronus.

1. Cronus was the youngest of the Titans, the children of Sky (Uranus) and Earth (Gea). Besides the Titans, Sky and Earth had other children, the Cyclopes and the Hundred-handers. _ When the Cyclopes and the Hundred-handers proved troublesome, Sky thrust them back into

—_—_

D ae Uh N

a2 1

the bosom of Earth. This vexed Earth, and she called on | the temple probably formed a portion of a new temple

her sons to avenge her on their father Sky. They all shrank from the deed save Cronus, who waylaid and muti- lated his father with a sickle or curved sword. From the drops of blood which fell to the earth sprang the Furies and the Giants. Cronus now reigned in room of Sky. His wife was Rhea, who was also his sister, being a daughter of Sky and Earth. Sky and Earth had fore- told to Cronus that he would be deposed by one of his own children, so he swallowed them one after another as soon as they were born. Thus he devoured Hestia, Demeter, Hera, Hades, and Poseidon. But when Rhea had brought forth Zeus, the youngest,! she wrapped up a stone in swaddling clothes and gave it to Cronus, who swallowed it instead of the babe. When Zeus, who had been hidden in Crete, grew up, he gave his father a dose which compelled him to disgorge first the stone and then the children whom he had swallowed. The stone was preserved at Delphi; every day it was anointed and on festivals it was crowned with wool. Zeus and his brothers now rebelled against Cronus, and after a ten years’ struggle they were

victorious. Cronus and the Titans were thrust down to Tartarus, where they were guarded by the Hundred-handers. According to others, Cronus was rcinoved to the Islands of the Blest, where he ruled over the departed heroes, judging them in conjunction with Rhadamanthus. Plutarch (De Def. Orac., 18) mentions a story that the dethroned monarch of the gods slept on an island of the northern seas guarded by Briareus and surrounded by a train of attendant divinities. The reign of Cronus was supposed to have been the happiest time of the world, the golden age, when men lived like gods, free from toil and grief and the weakness of old age (for death was like sleep); and the earth too brought forth abundantly without cultivation. There are few traces of the worship of Cronus in Greece. Pausanias, in his descrip- tion of Greece, mentions only one temple of Cronus; it stood at the foot of the Acropolis at Athens and was sacred to Cronus and Rhea jointly. The Athenians cele- brated an annual festival in his honour on the 12th of Hecatombeon. A mountain at Olympia was called after him, and on its top annual sacrifices were offered to him at the spring equinox.

The idea that Cronus was the god of time—an idca which appears in antiquity—seems to have arisen from asimple confusion between the words Cronus and Chronus (“time”). Curtius derives Cronus from the root kra, meaning ‘‘to accomplish.” Cronus may perhaps have been a god of some aboriginal half-savage tribe which the Greeks conquered. Hence the savage traits in his legend, his conquest by Zeus, and the scanty traces of his worship in Greece. The myth of the mutilation of Sky by Cronus may be a particular form of the widespread story of the violent separation of Sky and Earth by one of their children (compare MytTHoLocy). Other forms of this myth are found in New Zealand, India, and China. Parallels to the swallowing and disgorging incident are to be found in the folk-lore of Bushmen, Kaffres, Basutos, Indians of Guiana, and Eskimo.

2. Saturn and his wife Ops were amongst the oldest deities of ancient Italy. He is said to have had an altar at the foot of the Capitol before Rome was founded. Saturn was a god of agriculture, his name being derived from serere, “to sow.” The identification of Saturn with

. Cronus gave rise to the legend that after his deposition by

Zeus (Jupiter) Saturn wandered to Italy, where he ruled as king in the golden age and gave the name Saturnia to the country. Janus, another of the most ancient gods of Italy, is said to have welcomed him to Rome, and here he settled at the foot of the Capitol, which was called after him the Saturnian Hill. His temple stood at the ascent from the Forum to the Capitol and was one of the oldest buildings in Rome, but the eight remaining columns of

1 So Hesiod. But aceording to Homer Zeus was the eldest of the ehildren of Cronus and Rhea,

built in the imperial times. The image of Saturn in this temple had woollen bands fastened round its feet all the year through, except at the festival of the Saturnalia ; the object of the bands was probably to detain the deity: Similarly there was a fettered image of Enyalius (the War God) at Sparta, and at Athens the image of Victory had no wings, lest she might fly away. The mode of sacrifice at this temple was in so far peculiar that the head of the sacrifice was bare as in the Greek ritual, instead of being covered, as was the usual Roman practice. Legend said that the Greek ritual was introduced by Hercules, who at the same time abolished the human sacrifices previously offered to Saturn. Others said that the rule had been observed by the Pelasgians before. Under or behind the temple was the Roman treasury, in which the archives as well as the treasures of the state were preserved. Dionysius Halicarnensis (Ant. om., i. 34) tells that there were many

sanctuaries of Saturn in Italy and that many towns and

places, especially mountains, were called after him. The oldest national form of verse was known as the Saturnian. Like many other figures in Roman mythology, Saturn is said to have vanished at last from earth. His emblem was a sickle. The substitution of a great scythe for the sickle, and the addition of wings and an hour-glass, are modern. Ops (“plenty”), wife of Saturn, was an earth-goddess, as appears from the custom observed by her supplants of sitting and carefully touching the earth while they made their vows to her. As goddess of crops and the harvest she was called Consiva, and under this name had a sanctuary at Rome, to which only the Vestals and the priest were admitted. As Saturn was identified in later times

with Cronus, so was Ops with Rhea. Another goddess mentioned as wife of Saturn was Lua, a goddess of barrenness. She was one of the deities to whom after a victory the spoils of the enemy were sometimes dedicated and burned.

Saturnalia.—This, the great festival of Saturn, was celebrated on the 19th, but after Ceesar's reform of the calendar on the 17th, of Decembcr. Augustus decreed that the 17th should be sacred to Saturn and the 19th to Ops. Henceforward it appears that tlic 17th and 18th were devoted to the Saturnalia, and the 19th and 20th to the Opalia, a festival of Ops. Caligula added a fifth day, "the day of youth" (dies juvenalis), devoted no doubt to the sports of the young. But in popular usage the festival lasted seven days. The time was one of general joy and mirth. The woollen fetters were taken from the feet of the image of Saturn, and each man offered a pig. During the festival schools were closed; no war was declared or battle fought ; no punishment was inflicted. In place of the toga an undress garment was worn. Distinctions of rank were laid aside: slaves sat at table with their masters or were actually waited on by them, and the utmost fircedom of speech was allowed them. Gambling with dice, at other times illegal, was now permitted and practised.? All classes cxchanged gifts, the commonest being wax tapers and clay dolls. These dolls were especially given to children, and the makers of them held a regular fair at this time. Varro thought that these dolls repre- sented original sacrifices of human beings to the infernal god. There certainly was, as we have secn, a tradition that human sacrifices were once offered to Saturn, and the Greeks and Romans gave the name of Cronus and Saturn to a particularly crucl Phe- nician Baal, to whom, e.g., children were sacrificed at Carthage. The Cronus to whom human sacrifices are said to have been offered in Rhodes was most probably a Baal, for there are un- mistakable traces of Pheenician worship in Rhodes. It may be conjectured that the Saturnalia was originally a celebration of the winter solstice. Hence the legend that it was instituted by Romulus under the name of the Brumalia (brwma=winter solstice). The prominence given to candles at the festival points to the custoin of making a new fire at this time. The custom of solemnly kindling fires at the summer solstice (Eve of St John) has prevailed in most parts of Europe, notably in Germany, and there are traces (of which the yule-log is one) of the observance of a similar custom at the winter solstice. In ancient Mexico a

new fire was kindled, amid great rejoicings, at the end of every period of fifty-two years.

The designation of the planets by the names of gods is at Icast as

2 It is curious to find a similar rule with a similar exception in Nepal. Sec H. A. Oldfield, Sketches from Nepal, vol. ii. pp. 358 sq. XXI. — 41

oon

old as the 4th century B.c. The first certain mention of the star of Cronus (Saturn) is in Aristotle (Afetaphysics, p. 1073b, 35). The name also occurs in the Epinomis (p. 987b), a dialogue of uncertain date, wrongly ascribed to Plato. In Latin, Cicero (1st century B.c.) is the first author who speaks of the planet Saturn. The applica- tion of the name Saturn toa day of the week (Saturni dies, Saturday) is first found in Tibullus (i. 3, 18). (J. G. FR.)
SATYR. In ancient Greek mythology the satyrs were spirits, half-human half-bestial, that hauuted the woods and mountains, companions of Pan and Dionysus. Fancy represented them as strongly built, with flat noses, pointed ears, and the tails of horses or goats. They were a roguish

and wanton but faint-hearted folk, lovers of wine and |

wonien, ever roaming the wild to the music of pipes and cymbals, castanets and bagpipes, dancing with the nymphs or pursuing them, striking terror into men, whose cattle they killed and whose women tliey made love to. In the earlier Greek art they appear as old and ugly, much like wild apes; but in later art, especially in works of the Attic school, this savage character is softened into a more youthful and graceful aspect. There is a famous statue supposed to be a copy of a work of Praxiteles, representing a graceful satyr leaning against a tree with a flute in his hand. In Attica there was a species of drama known as the Satyric drama; it parodied the legends of gods and heroes, and the chorus was composed of satyrs. Euripides’s play of the Cyclops is the only extant exaniple of this kind of drama. The symbol of the shy and timid satyr was the hare. In some districts of modern Greece the spirits known as Calicantsars offer points of resemblance to the ancient satyrs ; they have goats’ ears and the feet of asses or goats, are covered with

hair, and love women and the dance. The herdsmen of Parnassus believe in a demon of the mountain who is lord of hares and goats.

In the Authorized Version of Isa. xiii. 21, xxxiv. 14 the word “satyr” is nsed to render the Hebrew sé‘trim, “hairy ones.” A kind of demon or supernatural being known to Hebrew folk-lore as inhabiting waste places is meant ; a practice of sacrificing to the sé‘irtm is alluded to in Lev. xvii. 7, where E. V. has “ devils.” They correspond to the “shaggy demon of the mountain-pass ” (azabb al-akaba) of old Arab superstition. But the satyrs of the gloomy Semitic deserts, faith in which is not yet extinct, are much more terrible than those of Greece.

SAUL, son of Kish, king of Israel. (See Israzt, vol. xiii. p. 403 sg.) The name of Saul’s father Kish (wp) seems to be identical with the Arabic proper name and god- name Kais.

SAUMAISE. See Sarmasius.

SAUMAREZ, James SaAUMAREZ or SAUSMAREZ, BARON DE (1757-1836), English admiral, was descended from an old family, and was born at St Peter Port, Guernsey, 11th March 1757. Many of his ancestors had distinguished themselves in the naval service, and he entered it as mid-shipman at the age of thirteen. For his bravery at the attack of Charleston in 1775 on board the “ Bristol” he was raised to the rank of lieutenant, and he was pro- moted commander for his gallant services off the Dogger Bank, 5th August 1781, when he was wounded. In com- mand of the “ Russell,” he contributed to Rodney’s victory over De Grasse, 12th April 1782. For the capture of “La Réunion,” a French frigate, in 1793 he received the honour of knighthood. While in command of a small squadron he was on 5th June 1794 attacked by a superior French force on the way from Plymouth to Guernsey, but by his seamanship and coolness succeeded in gaining a safe anchorage in the harbour of that island. After being promoted to the “Orion” of 74 guns in 1795, he took part in the defeat of the French fleet off L’Orient, 22d June, distinguished himself in the battle of Cape St Vincent in February 1797, and was present at the blockade of Cadiz from February 1797 to April 1798, and at the battle of the Nile, Ist August 17 98, where he was wounded. On his return from Egypt he received the

cominand of the ‘‘ Cesar,” 84 guns, with orders to watch the French fleet off Brest during the winters of 1799 and 1800. In 1801 he was raised to the rank of rear-admiral of the blue, was created a baronet, and received the command of a small squadron which was destined to watch the movements of the Spanish fleet at Cadiz. To prevent a fleet of British merchantmen from falling into the hands of the enemy, he engaged the French and Spanish fleets, which outnumbered his own small squadron by two to one, inflicting on them a severe defeat with a loss of 3000 men. Regarding this achievement Lord Nelson remarked that “a greater action was never fought.” For his services Saumarez was rewarded with the order of the Bath, and he also received the freedom of the city of London, together with a magnificent sword. In 1803 he received a pension of £1200 a year. On the outbreak of the war with Russia in 1809 he was entrusted with the command of the Baltic fleet, and in recognition of his services Charles XIII.. of Sweden bestowed on him the grand cross of the military order of the Sword. At the peace of 1814 he attained the rank of admiral; and in 1819 he was made rear- admiral, in 1821 vice-admiral of Great Britain. He was raised to the peerage as Baron de Saumarez in 1831, and died at Guernsey, 9th October 1836.

See Memoirs of Admiral Lord de Saumarez, by Sir John Ross, © 2 vols., 1838.

SAUMUR, a town of France, at the head of an arrondissement in the department of Maine-et-Loire, is situated on an island and on the left bank of the Loire, 38 miles south-west of Tours, and 27 miles south-east of Angers, A large metal bridge connects the Tours-Angers railway with that of Montreuil-Bellay by which Saumur communi- cates with Poitiers and Niort. Two stone bridges (755 and 905 feet long) also unite the town on the island with the two banks of the river. Several of the Saumur churches are interesting. St Pierre, of the 12th century, has a 17th-century fagade and a Renaissance nave; and Notre Dame of Nantilly (often visited by Louis XI.) hasa remarkable though greatly damaged facade, « doorway and choir of the 12th century, and a nave of the 11th. Both these churches contain curious tapestries, and in the latter, fixed in the wall, is the copper cross of

Gilles de Tyr, keeper of the seals to St Louis. St Jean is a charming httle building in the Angevine Gothic style. Notre Dame of Ardiliers, of the 16th century, was enlarged in the following century by Richelieu and Madame de Montespan. The town-house is an elegant 16th-century edifice; and the whole town is rich in graceful and interesting examples of the best period of French domestic architecture. The castle, built between the 11th century and the 13th, and remodelled in the 16th, is used as an arsenal and powder magazine. There is also an interesting almshouse, with its chambers in part dug out in the rock. The cavalry school, founded in 1768, and after various interruptions reorganized in 1824 and 1853, has at the present time (1886) 400 pupils, of whom 125 are officers. Other establishments are a public library, a museum of natural history and local Roman and Celtic antiquities, a horticultural garden, with a school of vines in which eight hundred kinds of grapes are cultivated. Saumur carries on a large trade in sparkhng white wines grown in the neighbourhood, as well as in brandy, grain, flax, and hemp; and it manufactures enamels and rosaries. The population in 1881 was 13,439 (14,186 in the commune).

The Saumur caves along the Loire and on both sides of the valley of the Thouet (a left-hand tributary) must have been occupied at a very remote period. The Tour du Trone (9th century) served as a place of refuge for the inhabitants of the surrounding district during foreign invasions, and became the nucleus of a monastery built by monks escaped from St Florent le Vieil. On the same

site rose the castle of Saumur two hundred years later, The town fell into the hands of Foulques Nerra, duke of Anjou, in 1025, and

passed in the 13th century into the possession of the kings of France, to whom it remained constantly faithful. The English failed to capture it during all the course of the Hundred Years’ War. After the Reformation the town became the metropolis of Protestantism in France and the seat of a theological seminary, illustrated by many distinguished names. The school of Saumur, as opposed to that of Sedan, represented the more liberal side of

French Protestantism (Cameron, Amyraut, &c.). In 1628 the forti- fications were dismantled ; and the revocation of the edict of Nantes reduced the population from 25,000 to 6000.

SAUNDERSON, Nicnozas (1682-1739), mathema- tician, was born at Thurlstone, Yorkshire, in January 1682. When about a year old he lost his sight through small- pox; but this did not prevent him from acquiring, by the help of kind friends, a good knowledge of Latin and Greek, and pursuing with assiduity and success the study of mathematics. In his twenty-fifth year he commenced lecturing in Cambridge on the principles of the Newtonian philosophy, and, though he was not a member of any of the colleges, the university authorities placed no impedi- ment in his way. In November 1711 he was selected to succeed Whiston, the Lucasian professor of mathematics in Cambridge, after having had the degree of master of arts conferred upon him to render him eligible for the appointment. He was created doctor of laws in 1728 by

‘command of George II, and in 1736 was admitted a

member of the Royal Society. He died of scurvy on the 19th of April 1739.

Saunderson possessed the friendship of many of the eminent mathematicians of the time, such as Newton, Halley, De Moivre, Cotes, and for the first of these he entertained a profound venera- tion. Whether from an inflexible love of truth, or from a motive less exalted, he was accustomed to speak his sentiments regarding persons very freely, and friends as well as enemies were criticized without reserve. As is frequently the case with the blind, his senses of hearing and touch were extraordinarily acute, and he could carry on mentally long and intricate arithmetical or algebraical cal- culations. He devised for his own use a palpable arithmetic, an account of which is given in his elaborate Elements of Algebra (2 vols. 4to, Cambridge, 1740), which he did not live to publish. Of his other writings, prepared for the use of his pupils, the only one which has been published is The Method of Fluxions (1 vol. 8vo, London, 1756). At the end of this treatise there is given, in Latin, an explanation of the principal propositions of Sir Isaac Newton’s philosophy.

SAURIANS. See REprTizes.

SAURIN, Jacqurs (1677-1730), one of the group of great French preachers of the 17th century (see FRANCE, vol. ix. p. 662), was born at Nimes on January 6th 1677, studied at Geneva, settled in London in 1701 as one of the pastors of the Walloon church, and died at The Hague, on December 30, 1730, whither he had gone to defend himself before the synod against a trumped-up charge of heterodoxy. Besides collections of Sermons, on miscellaneous texts, he wrote Discours sur les événements les plus mémorables du Vieux et du Nouveau Testament (Amsterdam, 1720-28), a work which, as continued by Beausobre and Roques, became popular under the name of Saurin's Bible.

SAUROPSIDA. This name was introduced by Huxley in his Introduction to the Classification of Animals, 1869, to designate a province of the Vertebrata formed by the union of the Aves with the Reptilia. In his Elements of Comparative Anatomy, 1864, he had used the term "Sauroids" for the same.province. The five divisions of the Vertebrata—Pisces, Amphibia, Reptilia, Aves, and Mammalia—are all distinctly definable, but their relations to one another differ considerably in degree. The Amphibia are more similar to the Pisces than to any of the other divisions, and the Aves are closely allied to the Keptilia, and thus three provinces—Jchthyopsida,

Sauropsida, and Mammalia—are formed.

The characters which distinguish the Sawropsida, that is, which are common to birds and reptiles, and not found combined in

the other classes, have been thus summarized by Huxley :—no |

323

branchiz at any period of existence ; a well-developed amuion and allantois present in the embryo; a mandible composed of many bones and articulated to the skull by a quadrate bone ; nucleated blood-corpuscles ; no separate parasphenoid bone in the skull ; and a single occipital condyle. In addition to these principal characters, others exist which are found in all birds and reptiles, but are not exclusively confined to them. The oviduct is always a Miillerian duct separate from the ovary and opening from the body cavity.

The adult kidney is a metanephros with separate ureter ; the mesonephros and mesonephric duct become in the adult male the efferent duct of the testis. The intestine and the repro- ductive and urinary ducts open into a common cloaca. There is usually an exoskeleton in the form of scales ; in the birds the scales take the form of fcathers. There are two aortic arches in reptiles, in birds only one,—the right. The heart is usually trilocular, becoming quadrilocular in erocodiles and birds. In all the eggs are meroblastic and large, possessing a large quantity of yolk; in all the egg is provided in the oviduct with a layer of albumen and outside this with a horny or calcareous shell. In a few cases the egg is hatched in the oviduct, but in these cases there is no intimate connexion between the embryo and the walls of the duct. Fertilization takes place internally, occurring at the upper end of the oviduct previously to the deposition of the albuminous layer and egg shell. ;

Comparative anatomy clearly shows that birds are reptiles which have become specialized in adaptation to the function of flight. This conclusion has been con- firmed in the most surprisingly complete manner by the discovery of fossil forms intermediate between birds and reptiles. Two points of specialization in addition to the transformation of the fore limbs into wings are conspicuous in birds,—the reduction of the tail and the absence of teeth. Archxopteryx is a flying feathered animal with a long reptilian tail. In the Rocky Mountain region numerous toothed birds have been recently discovered, and have been studied and described in a masterly fashion by Prof. O. C. Marsh. These forms belong to the Mesozoic period. For further details see REPTILES and Birps.

SAUSSURE, Horactz Brenepict DE (1740-1799), one of Switzerland’s most celebrated physicists, was born in Geneva on February 17, 1740.1 His youth was passed at his father’s farm, where he early acquired a love for the study of nature. Following the example of his father and of his uncle Charles Bonnet, with whom he was associated in a research on the leaves of plants, he devoted himself at first to botany. Thus he was led to make the acquaintance of Haller, who was not long in discerning and appreciating his rare powers as an observer. In 1762, when only twenty-two years of age, Saussure was elected to the chair of philosophy at Geneva, where, along with another professor, he taught logic and physics alter- nately. But his

natural leanings were all towards the study of external nature; and he took advantage of all available opportunities of travelling to thoroughly explore the mountains, valleys, and lakes of his native land, and to visit those of foreign countries, with the view of widen- ing and deepening his conception of the constitution of the world. The Society of Arts of Geneva was founded by Saussure in 1772,*and in 1774, at the invitation of the Government, he elaborated a plan for the reform of the system of teaching in his native town; but this was too radical in its nature to be adopted. In 1786 he resigned his professorship to his friend and fellow-worker Pictet. While honouring his country by his devotion to laborious scientific investigations, he exhibited his patriotism by

1 His father, Nicolas de Saussure (1709-90), an agriculturist of unusually liberal opinions and wide sympathies, when a young man had applied himself to literary pursuits, and especially to the study of writings bearing on farming. He resided all his life at his farm of Conches, on the Arve, near Geneva. As a memberof the eouncil of Two Hundred he took part in public affairs. Most of his writings were of a practical character, bearing on the growth and diseases of grain and other farm produce. His last work, On Fire, the Principle

| of Fecundity in Plants and of Fertility in the Earth, published in

1782, was more speculative in its nature.

untiring diligence in the exercise of his duties as a mem- ber of the council of Two Hundred, and afterwards of the National Assembly. In consequence of over-exertion in this work his health began to failin 1794; but, although deprived of the use of his limbs, he continued to revise the concluding volumes of his great work on Alpine physio- graphy, which were published in 1796. Latterly his mind became enfeebled, and when he was offered a chair of philosophy by the French Government in 1798 he had lapsed into a condition of partial imbecility. He died on January 22, 1799, at the age of fifty-nine, leaving two sons and a daughter.

The Alps formed the centre of Saussure’s investigations. They forced themselves on his attention as the grand key to the true theory of the earth; but, as year by year his mass of facts assumed ever-growing dimensions, his generalizations became more guarded, until finally he eaine to consider a simple recording of observations as the only justifiable course. As a young man he had roamed in search of plants through many remote valleys and over the ‘‘montagnes maudits” as his unappreciative fellow- dwellers by the lakes called the suow-eapped summits around them. It had been his dream, he says, sinee he was twenty to ascend Mont Blanc ; and he accomplished the feat on 3d August 1787. This was the second time that the ascent of that mouutain, until then deemed inaccessible, was made in that year.

Saussure found among the Alps opportunity for studying geology in a manner never previously attempted. The inclination of the strata, the nature of the rocks, the fossils, and the minerals reecived his closest attention. He acquired a thorough knowledge of the chemistry of the day, watching for the brilliant scries of discoverics and the improvements in processes of analysis that brought the science into such dazzling prominence during the last quarter of the eighteenth century ; and he applicd all to the study of minerals, water, and air. Saussure’s geological observations made him a firm believer in the Neptunian theory: he regarded all roeks and minerals as deposited from aqueous solution or suspeusion, and in view of this lie attached mueh importance to the study of meteorologieal conditions. He earried barometers and boiling-point thermometers to the summits of the highest mountains, and estimated the relative humidity of the atmosphere at different heights, its temperature, the strength of solar radiation, the composition of air and its transparency. Then, following the preeipitated moisture, he investigated the temperature of the carth at all depths to which he could drive his thermometer staves, the course, conditions, and temperature of streams, rivers, glaeicrs, and lakes, even of the sea. He invented a great number of instruments for these purposes, tested them, and investigated the theory of their aetion. The most beautiful and complete of his subsidiary rescarches is deseribed in the Essai sur l’‘Hygrométric, published in 1783. Init he records experiments made with various forms of hygrometer in all elimates and at all temperatures, and supports the claims of his hair-hygrometer against all others. He invented and improved many kinds of apparatus, ineluding the magneto- meter, the cyanometer for

estimating the blueness of the sky, the diaphanometer for judging of the clearness of the atmosphere, the anemometer, and the mountain eudiometer. His modifica- tions of the thermometer adapted that instrument to many purposes: for aseertaining the temperature of the air he used one with a fine bulb hung in the shade or whirled by a string, the latter form being converted into an evaporometer by inserting its bulb into a piece of wet sponge and making it revolve in a eircle of known radius at a known rate; for experiments ou the carth and in deep water he employed large thermometers wrapped in non-conducting coatings so as to render them extremely sluggish, and capable of long retaining the temperature once they had attained it. By the use of these instruments he showed that the bottom water of deep lakes is uniformly eold at all seasons, and that the annual heat wave takes six months to penetrate to a depth of 30 feet in the earth. He reeognized the immense advan- tages to meteorology of high-level observing stations, and when- ever it was practieable he arranged for simultaneous observations being made at different altitudes for as long periods as possible. It is perliaps as a geologist that Saussure worked most; he ex- amined all the formations he met with much eare and exact- ness ; and although his ideas on matters of theory were in many cases very erroneous he was instrumental in greatly advancing that science.

Saussure’s work is collected and summarized in his four large volumes of Voyages dans les Alpes. This book is arranged in the form of a narrative of the author’s various journeys, interspersed with accounts of the observations made and descriptions of the apparatus employed. At the end there isa long list of ‘‘agenda,” or subjects for investigation, which he anticipated would throw light on the theory of the earth. These agenda are of value as

exhibiting not only the scope and definite focussing of Saussure’s mind but his almost prophctie foresight, sinee subsequent seientifie work has advanced. in each departinent very nearly on the lines there laid down.

His life was written by Senebier in 1801, by Cuvier for the Biographie Universelle, and by De Candolle in Decade Philosophique, No. Xv., translated in the Philosophical Magazine, [i.] iv. 96.

SAUSSURE, Nicotas Tutopore pe (1767-1845), eldest son of Horace Benedict de Saussure, was born on October 14, 1767, at Geneva, and is known chiefly for his work on the chemistry of vegetable physiology. He was a shy man, who lived quietly and avoided society ; yet like his ancestors he was a member of the Geneyan representative council, and gave much attention and thought to public affairs. He took a deep interest in the improvement of education, but deprecated the introduc tion of science teaching into schools, on the ground that it would divert the children's minds from the study of the classical languages and mathematics. He latterly became more of a recluse than ever, and died in April 1845.

When a young man Nicolas Théodore accompanied his father in the Alpine journeys and assisted him by the careful determination of many physieal eonstants. He was attracted to chemistry by Lavoisier's brilliant conceptions, but he did not beeome great as an originator. He took a leading share in the rapid succession of improvements which rendered the processes of ultimate organic analysis trustworthy. He fixed the eomposition of ethylic alcohol, ether, and some other commonly oecurring substanees, thereby advancing the knowledge of pure chemistry. He also studied fer-mentation, the conversion of stareh into sugar, and many other processes of minor importance. The greater number of his 36 published papers deal with the chemistry and physiology of plants, the nature of soils, and the conditions of vegctable life. These were published under the title Recherches Chimiques sur la Végéta- tion, and were acknowledged to display remarkable ability.

SAVAGE, Ricuarp (1697-1743), a mediocre poet and notorious literary character of the time of Pope, associated with Pope in the publication of the Dunciad. He had nearly reached the end of his career when Johnson went up to London, made his acquaintance, and was fascinated by his vivacity and knowledge of the world. After his death, Johnson gave his romantic history of himself in one of the most elaborate and best of the Lives of the Poets—a fine example of the great moralist's searching analysis and tolerant judgment of eccentric character. Johnson apparently accepted Savage's account of himself and his strange persecution by his alleged mother, the countess of Macclesfield, without hesitation, describing her as a "wretch who had, without scruple, proclaimed herself an adulteress, and

who had first endeavoured to starve her son, then to transport him, and afterwards to hang him.” Boswell was less credulous, made inquiries after his cautious manner in various quarters, and indi- cated pretty clearly that he considered Savage an impostor, although he could not explain why, if the unnatural story were not true, the countess could have allowed it to be put three times in print unchallenged during her lifetime (see Boswell’s Life, chap. v.). After Boswell, Malone and Bindley nibbled at the paradox, but it was not subjected to thorough examination till 1858, when Mr Moy Thomas discovered the original manuscript depositions in the earl of Macclesfield’s divorce suit at Doctors’ Commons, and also the proceedings in the House of Lords. The results of Mr Thomas’s researches, prosecuted with rare acuteness and industry, appeared in Notes and Queries, November and December 1858. To Johnson’s Infe and these papers the reader may be referred for the strange story and the elaborate and complete exposure of its inconsistencies and improbabilities. The conclusion which Boswell hinted at, but was prevented by his rever- ence for Johnson from expressing, that Savage was an impostor, is irresistible.

SAVANNAH, a city of the United States, the capital

of Chatham county, Georgia, and the largest city in the

i

State, is situated on the right or southern bank of the | Savannah river, 12 miles in a straight line and 18 miles by water from the ocean. By rail it is 104 miles south- west of Charleston, 8.C. Stretching about three miles along the river, opposite Hutchinson’s Island, and extend- ing inland 1} miles, Savannah has au area of 34 square iniles. The site is partly formed by a bold bluff of sand about a mile long, which les 40 feet above low-water mark, ending abruptly at either extremity, but ‘slopes inland for several miles with a very gentle and regular declivity.” Though laid out in parallelograms, Savannah has less than usual of the monotony of system, no fewer than twenty-four small public parks or gardens being dis- tributed throughout the city, and most of its streets being well shaded with trees. In the south is Forsyth Park (30 acres), with a fountain after the model of that

in the Place de la Concorde, Paris, and a monument to the memory of the Confederate slain. Johnson Square con- tains a Doric obelisk, in memory of General Nathaniel Greene and Count Pulaski, the corner stone of which was laid by Lafayette in 1825; and in Monterey Square, on the spot where Pulaski fell in 1779, rises a more elaborate inonument—a statue of Liberty displaying the national banner, on the top of a marble shaft 55 feet high. The focus of commercial life in Savannah is the so-called Bay, a narrow street built at the foot of the river bluff, with its top stories opening on the higher level behind. Among the more conspicuous buildings are the custom-house and post office, the city exchange, the court-house, Oglethorpe United States barracks, Chatham academy, St Andrew's hall, the library hall of the Georgia Historical Society, the Savannah medical college, the Roman Catholic cathedral, and St John's Episcopal church. Besides being the second cotton port in the States, Savannah has a large trade in rice, timber, resin, and turpentine, the value of its exports being $29,850,275 in 1873, and $21,527,235 in 1880. Planing mills, foundries, and flour-mills are the chief industrial establishments. The harbour has in Tybee Roads a depth of 31 feet and 38 feet at mean low and high water, and the bar 19 and 26 feet. The population, 5195 in 1810, was 15,312 in 1850, 28,235 in 1870, and 30,709 (15,654 coloured) in 1880.

Savannah was settled in February 1733 under General Ogle- thorpe.

SAVARY, Anne JEAN Marie Rens (1774-1833), duke of Rovigo, was born at Marcq, in the canton of Grandpré and department of Ardennes, on 26th April 1774. He was educated at the college of St Louis in Metz, where he gained a scholarship. When a youth of sixteen he became a volunteer in a cavalry regiment. His first military ex- periences were with the army of the Rhine under Custine ; he distinguished himself under Moreau and Férino, and by 1797 had reached the rank of major. In the next year, under Desaix, he took part in the Egyptian expedition, and he followed the same general in the second Italian campaign, and at the great battle of Marengo (14th June 1800). He had by this time attracted the favourable notice of Napoleon, who detected not only his soldierly powers but his singular gifts in the region of diplomacy and intrigue. For Savary the plans and will of Napoleon formed a law which obliterated every other, and in pre- sence of which political and moral scruple had no place. So early as 1800, while

only twenty-six years of age, he was appointed a colonel and the commander of that legion

ont

which was afterwards to form the picked bodyguard of the emperor. In 1803 he was general of brigade, and in 1804 he was charged with the execution of the Duc d'Enghien. Savary in his Afemoirs (published in Paris in 1828, 8 vols. 8vo) avows that all he did was to convey to Vincennes a letter whose contents he did not know, and early next morning, in obedience to the orders of a superior officer, to have the duke shot. The other side of the story is that he knew all about it,—that of set purpose, and in order to prevent an appeal to Napoleon's clemency, he hastened the execution ; and it is certain that, unlike a man merely under orders, he himself went straight to Bonaparte to report the death. Savary was the hand which Napoleon employed in the delicate negotiations with the emperor Alexander about the time of the battle of Austerlitz in 1805. At Jena in 1806 he distinguished himself by his successful pursuit of the retreating Prus- sians ; he rendered signal service by the siege of Hameln, which he forced to capitulate on 20th November; and, finally, the severe defeat which he inflicted upon the Russian forces at Ostrolenka, on 16th February 1807, was his crowning victory. Among other honours and rewards, he received a pension of 20,000 francs. After the peace of Tilsit he was despatched to St Petersburg ; but shortly thereafter—the Napoleonic scheme for the crown of Spain being now apparently complete—he was recalled, was created duke of Rovigo, and started for Madrid. His deceitful intrigue was soon successful, and Joseph Bonaparte ascended the Spanish throne. From 1808 to 1810 he was again beside Napoleon in the many and changing scenes of his exploits; but on the 8th of June of the latter year France itself, now fully alive to the vast and mysterious power he had learned to wield, was startled by his appointment as successor to Fouché in the ministry of police. His administration, however, was not a success. After the overthrow of Napoleon, he desired to accompany his master to St Helena, but this was refused, and he was imprisoned at Malta. He escaped thence to Smyrna, thereafter wandered about the east of Europe, and finally embarked for England, which he reached in 1819. Three years before he had been condemned to death by default; and, learning this, he proceeded to Paris to

clear himself of the sentence, in which he succeeded, being also reinvested with his rank and dignities. He retired to Rome, where he remained till 1831, when he was appointed commander-in-chief of the African army, and entrusted with the administration of Algeria. His duties were successfully performed, but he returned in March 1833 in weak health to Paris, where he died on the 2d of June.

SAVIGLIANO, a city of Italy, in the province of Cuneo, 314 miles by rail south of Turin, lies in a plain between the Maira and the Mellea (head-streams of the Po) 1081 feet above the sea. It still retains some traces of its ancient walls, demolished in 1707, and has a fine col- legiate church (Sant' Andrea, dating at least from the 11th century, but in its present form comparatively modern), a triumphal arch erected in honour of the marriage of Victor Amadeus I. with Christine of France, and in the Taffini palace paintings by the 16th-century local artist Giovanni Mollineri (Mulinari, [1 Caraccino). Savigliano has long been a place of considerable industrial activity; its modern manufactures comprise paper, silk, and beer. The population was 9932 in 1881 (commune 17,150).

First mentioned in 981 as Villa Savilliani, Savigliano appears in the 12th century as a member of the Lombard leagne. Its name perpetually erops upin the history of Piedmont and Savoy. It was besieged and taken by the dnke of Savoy in 1347 and again in 1367; and in the 16th and 17th centuries it suffered severely from French

garrisons. Charles Emmanuel I. died in 1630 at Savigliano, where the Piedmontese senate had met to escape the pestilence.

5326

SAVIGNY, Frieprich Cari von (1779-1861), was born at Frankfort-ou-the-Main on February 21, 1779. He was descended from an ancient family, which figures in the history of Lorraine, and which derived its name from the castle of Savigny near Charmes in the valley of the Moselle. When Lorraine passed into the possession of France, his family attached itself to Ger- many, and his ancestors filled important official posts in Nassau and other German states. His great-grandfather wrote a work, La Dissolution de la Réunion, as a protest against the conquests of Louis XIV. ; his

grandfather was “ Regierungsdirector ” at Zweibriicken, and his father was a noble of the empire and “ Kreisgesandter” of several princes of the diet of the circle of the Upper Rhine. His father, Carl Ludwig von Savigny, died in 1791, his mother in 1792, and he was brought up and educated by his guardian, Herr von Neurath, assessor of the Reichs- kammergericht or imperial chamber at Wetzlar, a master of the “Staatsrecht” of the time.

In 1795 Savigny went to study at Marburg, and derived great advantage, as is gratefully recorded by him, from the teaching and friendship of Professors Weis and Bauer. For six months he studied at Gottingen. It is noted as a curious circumstance that, though Hugo, the great civilian, was there lecturing, Savigny did not attend his course. He suffered much for two or three years from ill-health. Savigny visited, after the fashion cf German students, Jena, Leipsic, and Halle; and he returned to Marburg, where, on December 31, 1800, he took his doctor’s degree. His inaugural dissertation was entitled De Concursu Delictorum Formali.) At Marburg he lectured as privat-docent on criminal law, the pandects, the law of succession, obligations, and the methodology of law. In 1803 he published his famous treatise, Das Recht des Besitzes, or the right of possession. It was at once hailed by Thibaut asa masterpiece ; jurists recognized that the old uncritical study of Roman law was at an end. It quickly obtained a European reputation, and still remains a prominent landmark in the history of jurisprudence. It was the fountain-head of a stream of literature which has not yet ceased to flow. Austin, no partial judge, pro- nounced it to be “of all books upon law, the most con- summate and masterly.” In 1804 Savigny married Kuni- gunde Brentano, the sister of Bettina von Arnim and Clemens Brentano the poet. In that year he visited Paris, chiefly with a view to make researches in the National Library into the life of the jurist Cujas, whom he greatly admired. In a letter to be found in his miscel- laneous works he explains the ground of his admiration. “Dans Vhistoire de la jurisprudence moderne, il n’y a pas d’époque plus brilliante que celle du 16™° sidcle, C’est alors que la science du droit eut véritablement un grand et noble caractére qu’elle n’a pas retrouvé depuis.” A story not without significance as to his character relates to this period of his life. On hig way to Paris, a box containing papers in which were the results of laborious researches was stolen from his carriage. He bore the loss with equanimity,

and managed with the assistance of Jacob Grimm, his wife, and one of her sisters to do much to re- pair the loss,

In 1808 he was appointed by the Bavarian Government ordinary professor of Roman law at Landshut, where he remained a year and a half, and where he left many pleasant memories. In 1810 he was called, chiefly at the instance of William von Humboldt, to Berlin to fill the chair of Roman law, and assist in organizing the new university. One of his services was to create, in con- 1 The object of his investigation is thus described: “Delicta

concurrere dicuntur, ubi de pluribus legum Violationibus, quarum honnisi unus est reus, in eodem judicio puniendis agitur,”

Pa vVviIGw yY

nexion with the law faculty, a “Spruch-Collegium,” or university court, competent to deal with cases remitted to it by the ordinary courts; and he took an active part in its labours. This was the busiest time of his life, He

| was engaged in lecturing, in the government of the uni-

versity (of which he was the third rector), and as tutor to the crown prince in Roman, criminal, and Prussian law. Not the least important consequence of his residence in Berlin was his friendship with Niebuhr and Eichhorn, In 1814 appeared his pamphlet Vom Beruf unserer Zeit fiir Glesetagebung und Rechtswissenschaft. It was a protest against the demand for codification, and in particular against the extension of the Code Napoléon to Germany. Fired with the hope that a day of resurrection for the national life of Germany was at hand, Thibaut had written a pamphlet urging the necessity of forming a code for Germany. Savigny wrote a reply, in which were laid down some principles with which wise advocates of codi- fication might well agree. ‘TI regard,” he said, “the law of each country as a member of its body, not as a garment merely which has been made to please the fancy, and can be taken off at pleasure and exchanged for another.” He laid stress upon the connexion of the present and the past and the consequent limitations of the power of legis- lation. But in the course of his argument he confounded the errors of codifiers in France, Austria, and Prussia, and especially the defects in the Code Napoléon, with the necessary incidents of codification.

Put at its highest, his argument comes to little more than others had before crudely expressed by saying, “We are not wise enough to compose a code,” 2

In 1815 he founded, with Eichhorn and Géschen, the Zeitschrift fiir geschichtliche Rechtswissenschaft, the organ of the new historical school, of which he was the represen- tative. In 1816, while on his way to Rome as envoy of Prussia, Niebuhr made at Verona the celebrated dis- covery of the lost text of Gaius. He communicated to Savigny the fact, and also his conjecture that it was the work of Ulpian. Savigny made known the discovery to the world in an article in the Zeitschrift, and pointed out Gaius as the real author. Géschen, Bekker, and Holl- weg actually deciphered the manuscript; but there is some truth in Hugo’s saying, “ Without Savigny one would not have had Gaius.”

The record of the remainder of Savigny’s life consists of little else than a list of the merited honours which he received at the hands of his sovereign, and of the works which he published with indefatigable activity.

In 1815 appeared the first volume of his Geschichte des Rémischen Rechts im Mittelalter ; the last did not appear until 1831. This work, to which his early instructor, Weis, had first prompted him, was originally intended to be a literary history of Roman law from Irnerius to the present time. His design was in some respect narrowed ; in others it was widened. He saw fit not to continue the narrative beyond the 16th century, when the separation of nationalities disturbed the foundations of the science of law. His treatment of the subject was not merely that of a bibliographer ; it was philosophical. It revealed the con- tinuity in the history of Roman law ; and it was an emphatic protest against the habit of viewing the law of a nation as an arbitrary creation, not connected with its history and con- dition. It was the parent of many valuable works which continued Savigny’s investigations.3 In 1817 he was ap- pointed a member of the commission for organizing the Prussian provincial estates, and also a member of the department of justice in the Staatsrath, and in 1819 he

2 See Austin’s criticisms in Lectures, ti. 698.

3 See Von Mohl’s Staatswissenschaft, vol. iii. p. 55. For a some- what less favourable view, see Gans’s Vermtschte Schriften.

became a member of the supreme court of cassation and revision for the Rhine Provinces. In 1820 he was made a member of the commission for revising the Prussian code. In 1822 a serious nervous illness attacked Savigny, and compelled lim to seek relief in travel. He always con- sidered that he had benefited much by the homceopathic treatment of Dr Necker, and he remained a firm believer in homeeopathy. In 1835 he began his elaborate work on tle modern system of Roman law. The eighth and last volume appeared in 1849.

In March 1842 he ceased to perform his duties as professor in order to become “Grosskanzler” of Prussia ; and in that position he carried out several important law reforms in regard to bills of exchange and divorce (a subject on which he had meditated much). He held that office until 1848, when he resigned, not altogether to the regret of his friends, who had seen his energies with- drawn from jurisprudence without being able to flatter themselves that he was a great statesman. In 1850, on the occasion of the jubilee of his obtaining his doctor’s degree, appeared in five volumes his Vermischte Schriften, consisting of a collection of his minor works published between 1800 and 1844. This event gave rise to much enthusiasm throughout Germany in honour of “the great master” and founder of modern jurisprudence. Professor Scheurl, in his Hinige Worte ciber Savigny, notes the fact that on the 31st of October Luther first revealed to the world the light of evangelical truth, and Savigny on that day began his work as a law reformer. In 1853 he pub- lished his treatise on Obligations, a supplement to his system of modern Roman law. Savigny died at Berlin on October 25, 1861. His son, Carl Friedrich von Savigny, born September 19, 1814, was Prussian minister of foreign affairs in 1849. He represented Prussia in important diplomatic transactions, especially in 1866, and died February 11, 1875.

In the history of jurisprudence Savigny's great works are the Ticeht des Bestizes and the Beruf unserer Zeit fiir Gesetegebung. The former marked an epoch in jurisprudence. Prof. Ihering says: "With the Recht des Besitzes was the juridical method of the Romans regained, and modern jurisprudence born." It marked a great advance both in results and method, and it rendered obsolete a large literature. Savigny sought to prove that in Roman law possession had always reference to usucapion or to interdicts, that it is not a right to continue in possession, but to immunity from violence, and that possession is based on the consciousness of unlimited power, These and other propositions were maintained with great acuteness: and unequalled ingenuity in interpreting and harmonizing the Roman jurists. The book also seeks to solve the problem of general interest, common to almost evcry system of jurisprudence, why possession, rightful or wrongful, as distin- guished from property, should be protected. This general problem suffers by being almost solely discussed with reference to Roman law. His leading principle, that every "exercise of force" is illegal, is not incontestible, and, if true, it does not clear up the whole problem. The attempt to treat the historical accidents of Roman law as juridical necessities is the weak side of a work in other respects masterly; and there is a difficulty in understanding Austin's eulogy that it was of all books he knew " the least alloyed with error and imperfection." The controversy which has been carried on in Germany by Ihering, Baron, Gans, and Bruns shows that many of Savigny's conclusions have not been accepted. The Beruf unserer Zeit expresses the idea, un- familiar in 1814, that law is part and parcel of national life, and combats the notion, too much assumed by French jurists, espe- cially in last. century, and countenanced in practice by Bentham, that law might be arbitrarily imposed on a country irrespective of its state of civilization and past history. Of even greater value than his services in founding or consolidating "the historical school of jurisprudence " is the emphatic recognition in his works of the fact that the practice and theory of jurisprudence cannot be divorced without injury to both. Writing at a time when the influence of Hegel was in the ascendant, and in a city where he was official philosopher, Savigny was not carried away by meta-physical theories. In all his writings there is not a word betraying acquaintance with the labours of his great contemporary, Bentham, nor had Bentham more than the most superficial knowledge of

‘ See Windscheid, Lehrbuch des Pandektenrechts, i. 489.

him (see Gans’s Riickblicke auf Personen). Perhaps a study of both would do more than anything else to aid in the construction of a true science of jurisprudence, consisting neither of platitudes and logomachies nor of a worthless catalogue of legal curiosities. (J. Mt.)

SAVILE. See Hatrrax, vol. xi. p. 386.

SAVILE, Str Henry (1549-1622), a learned English- man, was the second son of Henry Savile, and was born at Over Bradley, near Halifax, Yorkshire, 30th November 1549. He entered Brasenose College, Oxford, whence he was elected to Merton College in 1561, where he took his degree in Arts and was chosen fellow. After graduating M.A. in 1570, he voluntarily read lectures on mathematics in the university. He was proctor in 1575 and 1576, travelled on the Continent collecting MSS. in 1578, and on his return was tutor to Elizabeth in Greek and mathe- matics. He was warden of Merton College from 1585 until his death, and in 1596 was chosen provost of Eton College. He was offered preferment by James I. after his accession in 1604, but would accept nothing more than the honour of knighthood. After the death of his son Henry he devoted his fortune to the promotion of learn- ing. In 1619 he founded lectures on mathematics and astronomy at Oxford, and he also made various other benefactions to the university, including the foundation of a mathematical library for the professors, and the gift of several rare MSS. and printed books to the Bodleian. He died at Eton College 19th February 1622, and was buried in the chapel there. In recognition of his great services to the university, a public speech and verses were made in his praise, which were soon afterwards published under the title Ultima Linea Savilir.

Savile was held in the highest esteem by all the learned of his time. He published Four Books of the Histories of Cornelius Tacitus, and the Life of Agricola, with Notes, dedicated to Queen Elizabeth (1581); A View of Certain Military Matters, or Com- mentaries concerning Roman Warfare (1598) ; Rerum Anglicarum Seriptores post Bedam (1596) ; an excellent edition of Chrysostom, 8 vols. (1613); Mathematical Lectures on Huclid’s

Elements (1621); and Oratio eoram Elizabetha Regina Oxoniw habita anno 1592 (1658). In 1618 he published, with a Life, Bradwardin's work De Causa Dei contra Pelagium et de Virtute Causarwm; and he translated into Latin King James's Apology for the Oath of Alle- gianee. He also left several manuscripts written by order of King. James, all of which are in the Bodleian library.

SAVINGS BANKS (Fr. caisses @épargne; Germ. Spar- Lassen) are institutions for the purpose of receiving small deposits of money and investing them for the benefit of the depositors at compound interest. They are, in general, managed by benevolent persons, who seek no remunera- tion for their services. They originated in the latter part of the 18th century —a period marked by a great advance in the organization of provident habits in general (see Frrenpty Societies). They had been, however, one of the many excellent projects suggested by Daniel Defoe in 1697. 'The earliest institution of the kind in Europe was one established at Brunswick in 1765 ; it was followed in 1778 by that of Hamburg, which still exists, in 1786 by one at Oldenburg, in 1790 by one at Loire, in 1792 by that of Basel, in 1794 by one at Geneva, which had but a short existence, and in 1796 by one at Kiel in Holstein. In Great Britain, in 1797, Jeremy Bentham revived De- foe's suggestion under the name of "Frugality Banks," and in 1799 the Rev. Joseph Smith put it in action at Wendover. 'This was followed in 1801 by the addition of a savings bank to the friendly society which Mrs Priscilla Wakefield had established in 1798. Savings banks were shortly after established in London, Bath, Ruthwell in Dumfriesshire, Edinburgh, Kelso, Hawick, Southampton, and many other places. By 1817 they had become nunierous enough to claim the attention of the legislature, and Acts of Parliament were passed for their management and control, Their progress in the United Kingdom since that date is shown by the following statement :—

oan Numb f ee | Amount of For Wea j : age of | f ae Eanaon: Dapubitors. Papal. Deposits. Popuinctons 20, tion. | 7 BS fee Se 1821 | 20,893,584 [Not known… 4,740,188 |0 4 6 1831 | 24,028,584 429,400 | 2 | 14,698,685 012 3 1841 | 26,730,929 } 841,204; 38 | 24,536,971 ,018 4 1851 | 27,390,629 |

1,161,838 4 30,445, 568 1 3} 1861 | 28,927,485 | 1,609,102 | 6 41,542,219 | 1 8 9 |

From this date the progress of the post office savings banks has also to be brought into account, statistics of which have already been given under Post Orrice :—

Number of Depositors. |Pereent- 7 : age of Year. | Population, ricemaaie Post Offiee 5 = Popula. Savings Banks. | Savings Banks. ion.

1871 31,845,379, 1,404,078 1,303,492 2,707,570 84

1881 | 35,241,482) 1,532,486 2,607,612 4,140,098 Wy Meksee || oR aage 1,582,474 3,333, 675 4,916,149

Sass nnnUnnennnermmmesnenemnereeeeeeeeeeer UO

Amount of Deposits.

of Popula- | ae Trustee Post Offiee Total, tion. | POSiEor. Savings Banks. | Savings Banks. aé Be ae es ob Gall ds 1871 | 38,820,458 17,025,004 55,845,462 1115 0; 21 1881 | 44,137,855 36,194,495 80,332,350 |2 5 7 19 1884 | 45,840,887 44,773,773 90,614,660 18

On the 24th April 1886 the funds in the hands of the National Debt Commissioners on account of trustee savings banks were £46,162,515, and post office savings banks £49,881,896, a total of £96,044,411.

To these may be added the cash and assets in the hands of the banks and the postmaster-general, which at the beginning of the previous year amounted to £7 64,804, and also the following investments in stock on account of depositors :—trustee savings bank, £729,522 3 post office savings bank, £2,626,928 ; total, £3,356,450 ;—making the aggregate funds belonging to depositors in savings banks more than £100,000,000.

The largest savings bank in the United Kingdom is that at Glasgow, as shown by the following table of the 21 principal banks :—

Deposits on | Deposit | Number of 20th Novem- | Accounts Transactions ber 1884, Open. in the Year, a ee petite 3,686,607 | 127,651] 523,399 Bee i cectes cee 2,080,788 | 80,667] 336,281 ey 1,858,468 | 68,162) 210,898 O peadBoneaobacdsadhrooese 1,412,547 59,970 232,375 1,351,839} 29,999] 38,350 1,263,577 | 65,301 104,311 SOOBCOCHOREO RAO BNA DG BBAR NE REE 1,054,601 | 34,217 35,230 Cee ode an, 957,164 | 32,389 74,150 (eroree 885,195 | 31,880] 97,386 apiesisnecaeceer 776,188 | 21,998 40,952 – AGN RI et 653,875] 19,561 54,871 ee te ei 628,903 | 27,597 82,414 INOLEIMANAMY.. <6. ccesseccess ces 607,708 | 22,811 40,114 LIPS ca ae 572,209 | 24,3929 83,433 econ ce tne wee 539,695 | 14,168 29,286 oe ee, a 523,154} 18,995 23,675 Deane 521,615 | 23,532| 39,438

Banks with less capital but a large number of depositors—

Ni, 3 nia: 396,151] 32,668 sbedcosnEeccesh ay onanconer 474,089} 22,119

caeuErice 301,713} 20,895

Rec eere es cassie ee ee 326 296 | 18,531

20,872,382 | 797,438 | 2,294 463

SAVINGS BAW Re

From this table some interesting conclusions may be drawn as to the operations of savings banks in the larger towns, These 21 banks have together more than 50 per cent. of the depositors, more than 45 per cent. of the deposits, and more than 65 per cent. of the transactions of all the 411 savings banks of the United Kingdom.

The progress of savings banks and the large amount that the deposits have now reached are evidence of the general fitness of the organization for its purpose. So far as regards trustee savings banks, the provisions of the Acts of 1817 are still to a great extent the same as those by which they are now regulated, though the law has been frequently amended in matters of detail, and twice (1828 and 1863) consolidated. Its main feature is the requirement that the whole of the funds should be invested with the Government through the Commissioners for the Reduction of the National Debt. The local

management of the banks has been left entirely to the trustees, who are precluded from receiving any remuneration for their services or making any profit. They are, however, required to furnish the commissioners with periodical] returns of their transactions. This blending of private management with state control has had many advantages in knitting together class and class, and in many places the voluntary trustees and managers have been able to render real service to the depositors in various ways. A new savings bank requires for its establishment. the coll sent of the National Debt Commissioners and the eerie ficate of the registrar of friendly societies to its rules é but since the opening of the post office savings banks in 1861 few have been established, and many old savings banks have been closed, not being able to offer to their depositors the same advantages as the new system. The savings banks, which numbered 640 in 1861, have thus been reduced to 411, and their capital has been maintained rather by the accumulation of interest than by fresh deposits.

The legislation of 1817, among other inducements to thrift, offered that of a bounty to the savings bank depositor in the shape of a rate of interest in excess of that given to the ordinary public creditor, or—which is the same thing—in excess of that which eould be earned by the investment of the deposits in the purchase of Government stock. The interest offered in the first instanee was 3d. per day, or £4, 11s. 3d. per cent. per annum ; and that rate continued to be granted until the passing of the Aet of 1828 (9 Geo. IV. e. 92). That Act reduced the rate of interest allowed to the trustees of savings banks to 24d. per day, or £3, 16s, 0$d. per annum, and prohibited them from allowing more to their depositors than 27d. per day, or £38, 83, 54d. per annum, requiring them to pay the surplus, if any, into a separate fund held by the National Debt Commissioners, but bearing no interest. In 1844 the interest to trustees was further reduced to 2d. per day, or £3, 5s. per cent., the maximum to be allowed to depositors being fixed at £3, 0s. 10d. Finally, in 1880 the interest to trus- tees has been reduced to £3, and that to depositors to £2, 15s.

The result of the bonus on thrift offered by the earlier statutes was a loss to the state, which ought to have been inade good by an annual vote. Between 1817 and 1828 the difference between the interest eredited and that earned amounted to £744,363 ; and this led to the reduction in the rate of interest

effeeted by the Act of the latter year. The deficiency, instead of being paid off, was allowed still to accumulate, and as the price of stoek rose and the deposits increased fresh deficiencies arose, so that by 1844 the deficieney, which would have been 13 millions by the mere accumulation of interest on the previous £744,363, had become £3,179,930. The reduction of interest in 1844 was about enough to make the fund self-supporting, though savings banks are always, as Mr Scratchley clearly shows, liable to loss from the fact that deposits are in excess when the funds are high and withdrawals when they are low; but the past deficiency was still allowed to accumulate, and it was not till 1880 that the plan was adopted of voting the deficiency every year. Had the accumulated defi- ciency been then liquidated, there would have been no necessity for an annual vote. The bad political economy of the legislators of 1817 has left us this legacy of annual deficits. Had they provided the bounty at their own expense instead of that of

their descendants, there would have been little to be said against it.

Organiza tion,

Interest.

°

,

SAVINGS BANKS

329

;

, Limita- The offer of a bonus on thrift was of necessity accompanied by | that these deposits were made with a fraudulent intention. The sion of provisions to guard against its being used by others than the | registrar in Ireland felt bound to act on this determination, and jeposits. classes it was intended to encourage. This was done by limiting | refused to award payment of the deposits. The High Court of the amount that each depositor should be permitted to pay in. | Justiceand the Court of Appeal refused to

grant a mandamus, for In the first instance, in England the limit was fixed at £100 for | the law would not assist a wrongdoer. But parliament itself the first year, and £50 a year afterwards. In 1824 these limits | voted £1000, or half the amount of the forfeiture, the legislature were reduced to £50 for the first year, £30 a year afterwards, and | thus providing a remedy for an injustice it had itself committed. £200 in the whole. In 1828 the limit was adopted which still | Another curious case was that of a young woman, the daughter of remains in force of £30 a year or £150 in the whole, allowed by | a postmaster, who in order that her father might be provided addition of interest to increasc to £200 but no further. Attempts | with funds to meet business claims as they became due, purloined have been frequently made to raise the annual limit to £50, but | money from him and invested it in false names in the post office have always been defeated. This is to be regretted, for the limit | savings bank kept at his house. In this case, the postmaster him- is of doubtful utility, now that the rate of interest has been so | self not being the guilty party, no forfeiture took place. reduced as to prevent loss to the state. It is within the common Among the benefits conferred by the legislature upon depositors Settle- experience of savings banks managers that persons come to deposit | in savings banks has been that of exemption from the jurisdiction ment of an amount exceeding £30 and are disappointed when they find | of the ordinary courts of law in cases of dispute with the trustees. disputes. they cannot do so. The Act of 1882, permitting investment in | By the Acts of 1817 disputes were to be settled by arbitration. Government stock, may diminish the mischief. By that of 1828 the barrister appointed to certify the rules of the “Oceupa- With the view of showing to what extent savings banks are | savings banks (then and until his death in 1870 Mr John Tidd ‘tions of used by the classes for which they were intended, a return was | Pratt) was made umpire in case of difference of opinion between deposi- published for the year 1852, showing (as nearly as could be ascer- the arbitrators. By that of 1844 the arbitrators were abolished, tors. tained) the number of depositors belonging to various occupations, | and an original and final jurisdiction was conferred upon the’ and the amount of their deposits, as follows :— barrister. By an Act of 1876 the functions of the barrister in this respect were conferred upon the registrar of friendly societies. Depositors.| Deposits. | Average.| | This in effect makes no change in the law, for the offices of barrister Sere iad their Asetants, ‘small as and registrar have been always held by the same

persons. As early farmers, clerks, mechanics, and artisans as 1832 it was determined in the case of Crisp v. Sir Henry not described as journeymen, and their Bunbury that the effect of these enactments is to oust the juris- Fe at secvscocesesoeeae renee ces sovcnreneessossersces 296,407 | £8,144,206 £27 diction of all the superior courts of law and equity, and the author- omestic servants, charwomen, nurses, : a ’ and laundresses……ss- ssseesomressseseeere 257,711 | 6,907,388 QT ity of that decision has never been shaken or even doubted. Minors having accounts in their own Since 1876 the registrar of friendly societies has made 147 Jurisdic- i ee cumiepnen 182,636 | 2,426,195 18 awards in cases of disputes with savings banks, in addition to 169 tion of mechanics, and their wives…….....| 152,057 | 4,354,080 29 on disputes with the post office savings bank. As the writer of registrar. Females described only as married the present article is one of the two persons in whom this jurisdic- women, Widows, OF SpinsterS…....++++++.- 138,858 | 4,037,458 29 tion is vested for England, he hopes he may be excused for express- PH coll eae ee este, bud ing the opinion that its exercise has been highly beneficial to CMAIE ALLISANS.....-s0ssceversscenccesscreees 24,859 580,202 23 5 : 2 ane Trust accounts (principally for minors), depositors in savings banks. The costs of the award are limited including all joint accounts……..... 22,347 417,786 19 by treasury warrant to a few shillings, never exceeding £1. The Soldiers, sailors, boatmen, fishermen, procedure is simple and elastic, and the results are believed to be policemen, letter carriers, revenue Saninteeror The central offic ti ist det : officers, pensioners, railway men, and y: ; €, acting as registrar, aetermines ULE? WHE GS one oe 21,525 739,248 34 law and fact, and adjusts all the equities of each case. Reference Persons engaged in education, male and to the index to the registrar’s decisions appended to the chief ais of inaspoudent 10,497 827,795 ae registrar’s report for 1883, or to Mr Forbes’s useful work, will show means, professional men, and their that many interesting questions of law have had to be determined WIVES, -ncon-senssoreseessessrssn ees oo SS: 20,961 579,528 28 with regard to so small a matter as the ownership of a savings oe Sees tle and persons Without any f bank deposit. PE ORCESCENGINON scccvensececsccseusscescsseecce a 1,394,351 | Questions between husband and wife as to property including Other occ0ocCOCOIORE OEE PoE 1,188,147 |£29,908,237 | £25 deposits in savings banks are now, under the Married Women’s provi- : ━━━━

~ | Property Act, settled by the judges of county courts. Where a sions. Not two per cent. of the deposits, therefore, either in number | depositor, as often happens, is of illegitimate birth, a special pro or amount, are made by classes whom it may be supposed it was | vision is made by the Savings Bank Act in favour of his relatives, the intention of the legislature to exclude. to whom the solicitor to the treasury may award his deposits. It Deposi: When a person comes with his first deposit to a savings bank | is open to any depositor to nominate a person to whom the amount tors he is required to sign a declaration, setting forth his name, | due to him at his death shall be payable, provided it does not declara- address, and occupation, that he desires to become a depositor on | exceed £100 and the nominee is not an officer or servant of the tion, _ his own account, and that he has no money in any other savings | bank, unless indeed such officer or servant is related to the bank. If this declaration be not true, the deposits are liable to | depositor. This privilege, derived from the Provident Nomina- be forfeited ; but it is to be feared that few depositors take the | tions and Small Intestacies Act passed in 1883, is not yet | trouble to read what they are signing, or think much about the | sufficiently known to the bulk of depositors, and has not been used } meaning of it. If the depositor cannot write, the actuary of the | to any large extent, but may be expected in time to become very savings bank will usually ask him a few questions, such as his | valuable. It is an extension of a privilege enjoyed by members of age, mother's maiden name, &c., which may tend to identify him, | friendly societies since 1855, and also by industrial and provident i or defeat any attempt to personate him for the purpose of with- | societies and trade unions. drawal. The enactment that deposits are to be forfeited if the A painful chapter in the history of savings banks is that Frauds by declaration be false was qualified in 1863 by a provision that the | occupied by the frauds of actuaries, which have caused losses to actuaries. forfeiture should not be enforced unless in the opinion of the | depositors of not less than £150,000. It too often happens that, appointed barrister (now the solicitor to the treasury) the deposits | where the only supervision is that of honorary officers, a paid) had been made with a fraudulent intention. servant may commit frauds unchecked over a long period of time. | Fraudu- The consequence of the determination by the solicitor to the | In the case of a savings bank at Rochdale, £71,715 was stolen by | lent _ treasury that the deposits have been made with the "fraudulent" | the actuary, and £37,433 of

this loss had to be borne by the ‘ deposits. intention which the Act contemplatcs is out of all proportion to depositors. In one at Dublin the loss was £56,000, and in onc at the nature of the offence committed, being in fact the forfeiture of | Tralee £36,000. These unhappy events must have greatly dis-

| j

all the deposits. The prohibition of double deposits arose when the state was granting a rate of interest greater than that which it earned upon the investment of the money, and it has now ceased to have any real reason whatever, the rate of interest being less than earned. The intention to ‘‘defraud” now means merely the intention to evade a restriction that has ceased to be necessary, not an intention to deprive anybody of anything that belongs to him. Ifit be thought desirable to sanction by the infliction of a penalty the law that these institutions should be used only for the savings of the poorer classes, the loss of interest would be a suflicient if not an extravagant penalty, without forfeiture of the principal. Indeed, the present excessive penalty has, in one re- markable casc, defeated itself. This was the caso of a depositor in an Irish savings bank, who invested in fictitious names the sum of £2000. The solicitor to the treasury felt compelled to declare

couraged the poor, and checked the progress of savings banks. There is, however, the compensating fact that the savings made by the people of Rochdale since 1849, when the savings bank there was closed, have taken the more favourable direction of promoting the great co-operative enterprises of that town. Savings banks, valuable and important as their benefits are, are still only elementary teachers of providence, and it is well for the workman to learn not mercly to save money but to employ his savings to advan- tage. The stringent legislation as to audit of 1863 has diminished frauds on savings banks, and they are now rarely heard of.}

In connexion with savings banks, and as auxiliaries to them, are Penny An ordinary savings bank will not accept a deposit banks.

penny banks.

1 Since the above was written the disclosure of frauds of long standing in the Cardiff savings bank has taken place. toa ge

Army

330

of less than 1s. (or in some cases 5s.) on account of the expense

PAVING S BAN KS

in 1878 to 65,735 in 1888,

Their transactions for the year

of management, It seems to have occurred to Dr Chalmers to | 1883 were— deposits, £724,028 ; withdrawals, £842,288, Taking supplement the work of the Edinburgh Old Savings Bank by | the two classes of savings banks together, the number of depositors establishing in a Free Church congregation in Edinburgh a bank, | on 81st December 1888 was 136,089, the amount of capital managed entirely by voluntary agency, in which a deposit of 1d. | £2,818,122, and the average for each depositor £20, 14s. The

or 6d., or any sum not exceeding 10s., would be received. When the deposit amounted to £1, the owner was requested to transfer it to the savings bank, and the funds were invested with the savings bank to the extent of £100 a year or £300 in the whole. Similar banks, called “ territorial savings banks,” were established in other congregations. An organization of penny banks has existed in Glasgow for thirty years, and another has been set on foot in Liverpool by the exertions of Mr T. Banner Newton, the able actuary of the savings bank there. On 20th November 1885 there were 178 such banks open in Liverpool, with 17,492 depositors. When a deposit reaches £1 it is transferred to the depositor’s credit in the Liverpool Savings Bank. The amounts thus transferred were £56,122, and £8432 remained to the credit of depositors in the penny banks. ‘he transactions of the year num- bered 677,686 and amounted to £42,194. Penny banks require no certificate from the registrar or other legal organization, but if they desire to deposit more

than the limit above mentioned the per- mission of the National Debt Commissioners must first be obtained.

Savings banks for the army were established in 1842, and are

andnavy now regulated by Acts of Parliament—22 and 23 Vict. c. 20 (1859),

cent. of the population, depositor, the rate of interest being 44 per cent.

1904 depositors or 6 deposits or £13 each.

number of depositors per cent. of the population was 15. The rate of interest given to depositors is 4 per cent. bank of Melbourne alone had, on the 30th June 1885, deposits amounting to £1,225,758, belonging to 58,129 depositors. transactions averaged 1078 per diem.

The savings The In New South Wales the depositors in June 1883 were 66,604

or 8 per cent of the population, and the deposits £2,805,856 or £42 per depositor, the rate of interest being 4 per cent. in the post office savings bank and 5 and 6 per cent. in other banks.

In Queensland the depositors were 26,642 or 10 per cent. of the

population, and the deposits £1,086,685 or £41 per depositor, the rates of interest being 4 and 5 per cent.

In South Australia the depositors were 46,388 or nearly 16 per and the deposits £1,500,249 or £32 per

In Western Australia, on the 31st December 1882, there were per cent. of the population, having £24,838

In Tasmania the depositors in June 1883 were 17,231 or 14 per

cent. of the population, and their deposits £380,343 or £22 each,

savings 26 and 27 Vict. c. 12 (1863), for the Royal Navy and Marines by | the rate of interest being 34 per cent. in the postal banks, and banks, 29 and 80 Vict. c. 43 (1866), and for seamen generally by 17 and | slightly higher in the general savings bank. 18 Vict. c. 104, § 180 (1854), 18 and 19 Vict. c. 91, § 817 (1855), In New Zealand the depositors were 69,966 or 13 per cent. of and 19 and 20 Vict. ec. 41 (1856). Into these, or indeed into any | the population ; and their deposits £1,687,739 or £24 each. The trustee or post office savings bank, seamen's wages may be paid | rate of interest is from 4 to 5 per cent. : under allotment notes by 48 and 44 Vict. ce. 16, § 3 and sch. 1 The general total for the Australian colonies is 365,828 depositors (1880). The amounts in the hands of the National Debt Commis- | or 12 per cent. of the population, and £10,304,145 deposits sioners belonging to depositors in savings banks of these various | which is £28 on the average for each depositor. i classes at 28d September 1885! were :— In the Dominion of Canada, according to a paper read at the Canada. Military savings banks …….....c.ccceescseseoes £285,631 Montreal meeting of the British Association by Mr J. C. Stewart, Naval savings banks …….....ccccccccceeesessuee 175,445 the old established savings banks in the cities of Montreal and Seamen's savings banks …….....cs0ccccsaee ae 188,816 Quebec have £2,000,000 sterling, belonging to 42,297 depositors ; a the post office savings banks established in 1868 have £2,650,000, Jk a en £599,892 belonging to 66,682 depositors; and the chartered banks also Private Voluntary savings banks, unconnected with the Government, | Teceive deposits on the savings bank system. savings have also been established, the most important of which are the United States. According to the report for 1884 of Mr Henry W. United banks, Yorkshire Penny Bank and the National Penny Bank. The | Cannon, comptroller of thecurrency, there were on the 30th November States, depositors in these rely solely on the character of the persons by 1882 in the United States of America forty-two savings banks, with whom they are managed, and in some institutions of the kind | Capital amounting to £800,000 ($5=£1) and having £8,700,000 have met with severe disappointment in conséquence. As they deposits, and 625 savings banks without capital having £192,000,000 are under no responsibility to the state, these institutions make no | deposits. In the six years 1876-82 the number of savings banks returns to parliament, and no trustworthy information as to the | With capital had increased from twenty-six to forty-two, but their extent of their operations can be given. capital had

diminished 20 per cent., while their deposits had Railway The railway companies, which are private corporations em- | imereased 16 per cent. On the other hand, the number of savings savings powered by special Acts of Parliament, have in several cases banks without capital had diminished from 691 to 625, but their banks. availed themselves of these Acts to take powcr for establishing | “eposits had increased 14 per cent. Of the aggregate deposits, the savings banks for the benefit of their servants. The Manchester, | 422 Savings banks in the New England States held £87,500,000, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire Railway Savings Bank has been estab. | the 179 in the Middle States £98,500,000, the 9 in the Southern lished 25 years, and has 2443 depositors, whose accounts amounted | States £660,000, and the 57 in the Western States and Territories on 31st March 1885 to £249,282 ; its transactions for the year were | £14,000,000. In the latter two groups the banks with and with- — £66,702 deposits, £38,756 withdrawals, in number 26,596, Six | Out capital are nearly equal in number and in the amount of other railway companies have submitted the rules of their savings | deposits ; in the former two groups banks with capital are the banks to the registrar of friendly societies in pursuance of their | ¢XCeption, being only one in sixty of the whole. private Acts, and the aggregate of their annual returns for the | _ Savings banks in the United States differ from those in the year 1884-5 is as follows :_— United Kingdom in the manner in which their funds are invested, Deposits during the year…..... ca . £171,946 not being limited to Government securities, Thus, of the 200 Repayments ….eceec ccs, Og ge £111,399 millions sterling of deposits only 46 millions was invested in Balance due to depositors… £661,177 United States bonds, viz, New England, £6,900,000; Middle Number of depositors… 3.799 States, £35, 800,000; Western States, £400,000; Pacific States and Increase during the year …....ccccccccceseccs ss, “749 Territories, £2,900,000, : Number of transactions (estimate ee ee 61.621 A statement of the aggregate resources and liabilities of 686 Imberemt cremlitediieveis…caisiaiiseiosieks cee. £24,033 savings banks in 1884 (£236,000,000) is furnished, showing :— In addition, five other banks had been established by srettleway || Dep este ts cactinsa.+.,.0iscongegaeene en ee eee seve £215,000, 000 companies without reference to the registrar, and these in 1876 | Surplus fund……....00.. soe 17,000,000 received £72,505 deposits and had 4120 depositors. The total | Undivided) profit, ...cccccecscccsereseseeuesey 3,000,000 deposits in railway savings

banks may therefore be estimated at a | Other liabilities 00… cccsccccsssssceeesscessssseseecs 1,000, 000 million sterling, Provided for as follows :— Austral- British Colonies,—The thirtcen savings banks in the colony of | Loans on real estate…...0.0…cccsccesscscssesesseseeeees 72,000,000 asia. Victoria had on the 3d December 1882 a capital of £1,970,855, | Loans on personal and collateral SOCUNILY =. -cescustueer: 28,000,000 In the following year, however, the withdrawals exceeded the | United States bonds…..... aisiaoe cashes tire ra ee 39,000, 000 deposits, reducing the deposits to £1,785,990. The number of | State, municipal, and other bonds and stocks …..... 44,000,000 depositors, however, has steadily inereased from 24,187 in 1878 to | Railroad bonds and stocks. .....cscssecssssesesssescesees 10,000,000 70,354 in 1888, Of these 39,404 were males aiid 90, 950 Tomales: || AME St0CK vee… cscocaneesee-scenmeeses eee, Het ne 8,000,000 1618 depositors had balances over £200, amounting to £407,932. Se ee REE R ce here se ancc oso 7,000,000 The transactions of the year 1883, weite—deposits, £1,857,678; | Other ags6te.. 0… cc ccscesavesesieee ecsetesveuesen 14,000,000 withdrawals, £1,610,576. The deposits in the post office savings | Due from banks… ..00..0…....ccccscscessssssscceessssseseecescs 11, 000, 000 banks of Victoria also reached their highest amount in TSH2, whon, [OWS .. 0.0… ccusiceestss.s ate 8,000,000

they were £1,150,391, falling in 1883 to £1,0382,132. In them also the number of depositors has steadily increased from 34,360

iF rT RSF aa oa this information we are indebted to the authorities of the National Debt

According to the report of the comptroller for 1885 (which has reached us since the above was written) the deposits have in- creased during the year to £220,000,000, and the total assets to £240, 000,000.

Brazil.

Prussia,

Franee.

In New England the depositors number 36 in every 100 of the population, and the average amount of cach account is £66, or £24 for each individual if distributed over the entire population. In New York State the deposits would give £17 per head if distributed in like manner.

The following table gives for each State the number of depositors, and the amount and average of deposits, in 1885.:—

Deposits.

State. Depositors. Average.

106,000 121,000 39,000 826,000 116,000 252,000 1,165,000 87,000 136,000 78,000 7,000 35,000 9,000 12,000 82,000

£6,500,000

8,700,000 2,200,000 52,500,000 10,200,000 18,100,000 87,400,000 4,800,000 7,000,000 5,700,000 100,000 2,500,000 400,000 600,000 11,700,000

Meinsétis…..... Rhode Islamd: .....5c0:00 New Hey ccc cesses Pennsylvania…....++++ Maryland,.....-.-s00e8 District of Columbia…. PE coc ccsecsccssess FVITMMES OLE: car csoorere esa (Chilitora 00k: pogganeneaoneenee

3,071,000

218,400,000

Brazil.—The savings banks of the empire of Brazil have been made instruments in the gradual extinction of slavery in that country. Since 1871 each slave is allowed certain hours a week to labour for his own benefit, and when his earnings deposited in the savings bank amount to a given sum the remainder of the price of his emancipation is provided by the state out of public funds. The children of slave mothers, who since 1871 have been born free, are also encouraged to place their earnings in schoo] savings

banks. By a law passed on the 14th August 1885, immediate enfranchisement at the cost of the state is conferred upon slaves employed in agricultural establishments, upon condition of their remaining with the master at fixed wages for five years and paying half the wages into the savings bank towards repayment of the price paid for their freedom.

Continent of Europe.—In several of the countries of Europe savings banks have been established and are flourishing. In Prussia the first savings bank was founded by the municipality of Berlin in 1828. In 18388 they were taken under the supervision of the Government. ‘Their formation has been much aided by an association called the “Central Union” for the good of the industrious classes, A great variety of investments is permitted. In 1874 there were 979 banks, having 2,059,000 depositors and £49,315,000 of deposits, being a little over £2 per head of the population. Besides savings banks, there are the credit banks established by the late Herr Schultz-Delitzsch, which perform a similar function.

In France 79 per cent. of the deposits are invested in the public debt, on which interest at the rate of 4 per cent. is guaranteed, but the savings banks are private institutions ; 19 per cent. arc invested in mortgages and 2 per cent. on municipal securities, Post office savings banks also exist. The average amount of each deposit account is smaller than in England, 79 per cent. of the deposits being under £20 as against 63 per cent. The follow- ing statement shows the progress of savings banks in France since their first regulation by law in 1835 :—

Number Per Date, of Banks,, Number of Amount of | Head of

including) Depositors. Deposits. Popula-

Branches. tion.

Bah

430 351,808 7,695,293 4 6

Ab 1850 | 540 565,995 5,572,738 il ,, 1860] 688 | 1,218,122 15,054,184 | 8
8 . 1870 | 1121 j; 2,079,141 25,280,000 on 1320 | 3,173,721 40,646,656 | 22

0

The depositors now number nearly five millions. were greatly affected by the Revolution of 1848 and by the Franco- German War. Previous to the former event, the deposits had risen ou 81st December 1845 to £15,822,164, falling on 31st December

Savings banks

1849 as low as £2,965,802. In the early part of 1870 they had risen to £28,800,000 or 15s. for every individual of the population. The separation of Alsace and Lorraine reduced the deposits. Postal savings banks were established in 1875, but only as auxiliaries of the ordinary savings banks ; school savings banks, mainly through the enlightened cxertions of M. de Malarce, were commenced in 1874. These are now established in 23,222 schools, have 488,674 depositors and £451,402 deposits. A national

ddl

postal savings bank was instituted on 9th April 1881, and was extended to Corsica on 1st March 1882 and to Algeria and Tunis from 1st April 1884. On 81st December 1883 it had already 374,970 depositors and £3,097,200 deposits. The Paris savings bank had on 31st December 1882 440,728 depositors and £8,518, 433 deposits.

In Italy, at the end of 1872, 282 savings banks were in existence, Italy.

of which 142 were principal banks and the rest branches. With two exceptions, all are managed without profit to the promoters or guarantors. In 1825 there were 11 savings banks in which £108,000 had been deposited ; in 1850 the deposits amounted to £1,600,000, and in 1872 to £17,860,000, belonging to 676,327 depositors. Of these funds, 21 per cent. was invested on mortgage, 10 per cent. only in the public debt, 11 per cent. in obligations of local authorities, 12 per cent. in shares and bonds of companies, 16 per cent. in bills of exchange, 15 per cent. in loans on public funds and commercial securities, 11 per cent. in current accounts, and 4 per cent. otherwise. The average rate of interest allowed to depositors is 44 per cent. The transactions of the year were—deposits £7,911,000, withdrawals

£6,514,000. The system of school savings banks has been adopted in many com- munes. In addition, deposits are made in popular banks and other establishments of credit, and post office savings banks have also been established.

In Denmark savings banks are private institutions, but must Denmark.

not be managed for profit, nor invest in foreign securities ; and they are required to make annual returns to Government. In 1860 the amount of deposits was £3,221,000; by 1871 it had increased to £6,651,081, and by 31st March 1881 to EU (OY ot The savings banks have increased in number during the ten years from 188 to 446, and the depositors from 285,991 to 492,296. Twenty-six banks have more than £100,000 deposits. The oldest and largest is that of Copenhagen, established Ist May 1820, having £2,320,892 deposited, which has increased from £832,874 in the ten years. The number of depositors has increased from one in six to one in four of the population, and the deposits from £3, 14s. 8d. to £6, 9s. per head of the population. The transac- tions of the year ending 31st March 1881 were —deposits £8, 141,627; withdrawals £6,702,470. Of the deposit accounts, 74 per cent. are under £23 and 15 per cent. above £23 and under £43. One half of the funds are invested on mortgage. The reserve funds of the banks had increased in ten years from £226,329 to £665,597. The following are statistics of savings banks in other European

Other

countries as published by the Italian Government a few years ago:— European

Number of | Amount of Deposit Deposits on

0

Accounts on : enle. 1st January. ie ara.

Number

Country. Population.

132,000

£2,510,000

5,336,000

Belgium (1874)..... 10

Austria (1874) (Cis-

Leithan provinces)| 21,366,000 | 275 1,269,000 53,931,000 Hungary (1878)..... 15,417,000 | 282 ne 15,209,000 Saxony (1872)..... 2,556,000 | 156 517,000 | 11,445,000 Thuringia (1878)....) 899,000] 7 33,000 | 1,897,000 Mecklenburg (1872)| 557,000] 31 91,000 | 1,072,000 Hamburg (1874)....., 870,000} 8 81,000! 1,616,000 Bremen (1878)..... 135,000; 4 48,000 | 1,404,000 Liibeck (1878)..... 52,000} 2 14,000 138,000 Bavaria (1869)..... 4,824,000 | 260 279,000 2,490,000 Wiirtemberg (1874)| 1,818,000 | 121 ae 2,766,000 Baden (1874)..... 1,461,000 | 99 141,000; 4,142,000 Alsace and Lorraine

RTO See 1,549,000] ... 41,000} 288,000 Holland (1872)..... 8,579,000 | 240 99,000 1,127,000 Sweden (1878)..... 4,297,000 | 271 | 563,000} 6,035,000 Norway (1878) ..... 1,750,000 | 262 | 220,000] 5,201,000 Switzerland (1872)..} 2,669,000 | 312 542,000 | 11,581,000

Russia (1872) (cer- tain governments

56,408,000 1,838,000

126,881,000 |2376

71,000 18,000

735,000 346,000

36

4,159,000 |123, 928,000

countries.

M. de Malarce has obtained for the Dictionnaire des Finances Aggre- some more recent statistics, the details of which have not yet gate.

reached us, but from information he has been so good as to com- municate we infer an increase in deposits during the last 10 years in twelve European states of £123,000,000,—making the aggregate of savings bank deposits for all countries, as far as ascertained, £725 ,000,000. (E. W. B.) SAVOIE, a department of south-eastern France, formed in 1860 of the districts of Upper Savoy, Savoy proper, Tarentaise, and Maurienne, which formed the southern part of the province of Savoy in the kingdom of Sardinia.

do2

Situated between 45° 5’ and 45° 55’ N. lat. and between 5° 37’ and 7° 5’ E. long., it is bounded N. by the depart- ment of Haute-Savoie, N.W. by Ain, W. by Isére, 8. by Hautes-Alpes, and §.E. and E. by Piedmont (Italy), the limits for the most part consisting of ridges of the Alps, and on the N.W. being determined by the Rhone and its affluents the Fier and the Guier. The highest point in the Vanoise group of mountains is 12,668 feet above the sea, while the Rhone leaves the department at a height of 695 feet, and the Istre about 800. Some details in regard to the orography will be found under Atps (q.v.). The Isére flows east and west through the Tarentaise valley by Bourg St Maurice, Moutiers, Albertville, and Montmelian ; its principal tributary the Arc flows along the Maurienne valley used by the Mont Cenis Railway. The lake of Bourget discharges into the Rhone by the Saviéres canal. The climate of the department varies according to altitude and exposure. At Chambéry and Aix-les-Bains the average temperature is a little lower than that of Paris, but the rainfall is about 65 inches per annum, and this aniount goes on increasing as the higher regions are reached.

With a total area of 1,423,254 acres, Savoy comprises 434,921 acres of uncultivated ground, 239,700 acres of arable, 205,105 in forests, 172,980 in meadows, 27,183 in vineyards. More than the half of the inhabitants (194,704 out of 266,438) are engaged in agriculture. In 1881 there were in the department 97,487 cows, 19,328 oxen, 2570 horses, 3156 asses, 4207 mules, 98,826 shecp, (40 tons of wool), 19,428 pigs, 25,527 goats. About 1,

870,000,000 gallons of milk are produeed and 2463 tons of butter and 5911 tons of cheese are manufactured, of a total value of £500,000. From the 19,600 beehives were obtained in 1881 87 tons of honey and 16 of wax. The grape ripens up to an altitude of 2625 feet, and is cultivated to an altitude of 3940. Several growths of Savoy are in great repute and the vineyards were (before the invasion of the phylloxera) one of the most important products of the department, Tobacco is also cultivated. In 1883 the crops comprised wheat, 404,665 bushels ; meslin, 104,500 ; rye, 679,668 ; barley, 212,883 ; buckwheat, 20,641; maize, 245,245 ; oats, 722,067; potatoes, 1,244,603 ; pulse, 54,120 ; chestnuts, 72,036 ; bectroot, 14,040 tons ; tobaeco, 350 tons ; hemp, 585 tons ; colza-seed, 284 tons; hemp- seed, 195 tons ; wine, 3,895,496 gallons (annual average 4,128,520 gallons) ; cider, 187,258 gallons (average 69,058 gallons). Not-withstanding deplorable clearances, Savoy still possesses consider- able woods of pine, larch, beech, &c. The chestnut, of which the finest specimens are in the neighbourhood of Aix-les-Bains, grows, as do also the walnut and hazel, to a height of 3600 feet, the oak to 3900, the elm and the ash to 4250, the fir to 4900, and the pine to 7200, The department contains one of the richest deposits of spathic iron in Europe, and the Creusot Company employs 700 hands in working it. Argentiferous lead and copper have also been occasionally worked. The Maurienne and the Tarentaise are rich in anthracite, and yielded in 1882 16,687 tons of fuel. Peat covers 1413 acres, with a thickness varying from 8 inches to 8 feet, and there are rich beds of different kinds of marble, fifty-two quarries of building stone, and quarries of limestone, plaster, cement, and slate, as well as deposits of black lead, jet, asbestos, tale, mica, ochre, sulphate of baryta, zine, antimony, arsenie, manganese, titanium, sulphur. The department is particularly rieh in mineral waters, and the most famous, those of Aix-les- Bains (hot sulphurous) were frequented in the time of the Romans. The waters at Marlioz in the neighbourhood are sulphurous or alkaline (iodine, bromine). Those of Challes near Chambéry rank among the most powerful of the natural sulphurous waters. The Salins-Moutiers waters in the Tarentaise are hot, saline, and rich in various minerals ; the hot springs of Brides-les-Bains in the same region are rich in the sulphates of soda and calcium, Silk is the leading object of industry in the department (31 tons of cocoons in 1883). The winding of the cocoons, the milling of the silk (3500 “‘tavalles ” and spindles), and the weaving of the silk-fabrics (808 looms, 55 being hand-

looms) employ more than 1700 workmen, and the goods manufactured are valued at £380,000. Chambéry produces 71,000 yards of high-class gauze, 3000 yards of velvct, 18,000 yards of handkerchiefs, and some 800,000 yards of taffetas and varions other silk stuffs. Linen manufactures employ 400 looms, woollen manufactures 1850 spindles, The peasants manufacture about 125,000 yards of coarse woollen stuffs from their home-grown wool. The blast furnaces and iron-works produced in 1881 176 tons of manufaetured iron. Tanneries, paper-mills, paper- pulp factories, brick-works, saw-mills, flour-mills, &c., are all of some Importanee in the department, which counts altogether sixty- one establishments with steam-engines of (aggregate) 271 horse power. The number of inhabitants engaged in industrial pursuits

is 24,482, in commerce 14,016. are imported ; eattle, cheese, building materials, mineral waters, silk stuffs, tanned leather, and

Coal, skins, cotton, provisions butter, wood, stones, and various

paper are exported. There are 204 miles of national roads, 2518 miles of other roads, and 150 miles of railroad. The population was 266,438 in 1881. The department forms the three dioceses of Chambéry (archbishopric), Moutiers, and St J ean-de-Maunrienne ; the court of appeal and university academy are at Chambéry, and the headquarters of the corps d’armée to which it belongs (the 14th) areatGrenoble. There are four arrondissements, —Chamhé (16,000 inhabitants in the town), Albertville (5000), Moutiers (2000), St Jean-de-Maurienne (3000),—29 cantons, and 828 com- munes, Aix-les-Bains (4741), owing to its hot springs, is the most important place in the department.

SAVOIE, Havrve-, a frontier department of France, formed in 1860 from the old provinces of Genevois, Chablais, and Faucigny, which constituted the northerm half of the duchy of Savoy in the kingdom of Sardinia. Situated between 45° 40’ and 46° 25’ N. lat. and between 5° 50’ and 7° 2’ E. long., it is bounded N. by the Lake of Geneva, E. by the Valais canton, S.E. by the duchy of Aosta (Italy), S. and S.W. by the department of Savoie, W. by the department of Ain, from which it is separated by the Rhone, and

N.W. by the canton of Geneva, Almost everywhere except in the last direction the boundaries are natural. The greater portion of the depart- ment is occupied by mountains usually under 8000 feet in height ; but it includes Mont Blanc (15,781 feet), while the confluence of the Fier with the Rhone is only 950 feet above the sea. The streams are torrential, and they all

join the Rhone either directly or by the Lake of Geneva

or the Isére. Most important is the Arve which crosses the department from south-east to north-west from Mont Blanc to Geneva by Chamonix, Sallanches, and Bonneville, receiving from the right the Giffre and from the left the Borne. The Dranse falls into the Lake of Geneva between Evian and Thonon. Direct tributaries of the Rhone are the Usses and the Fier, the outflow of the Lake of Annecy. Passing Mégéve, to the south-west of Chamonix, the Arly goes to the Isére. A remarkable variety of climate is produced by the differences of altitude and exposure; it is mildest on the banks of the Lake of Geneva. Annecy has a moderate temperature, lower than that of Paris; but some parts of the shores of the lake, well sheltered and having a good exposure, form health resorts even in winter. The rainfall on the Lake of Geneva hardly exceeds 24 inches ; it is three times as heavy in the mountains,

Of the total area of 1,066,229 acres 345,959 acres are arable, 214,990 woodland, 182,206 uncultivated, 95,880 pasturage, 91,432 meadows, 21,252 vineyards. The live stock in 1880 comprised 9774 horses, 98,171 cows or heifers, 11,272 calves, 18,769 pigs, 25,331 goats, 33,000 sheep (wool-clip 41 tons), 21,525 hives (104 tons of honey, 38 of wax). Cheese is produced to the value of £220,000, and butter to £132,000. The harvest in 1888 included —wheat, 1,472,381 bushels; meslin, 196,510; rye, 190,503. For 1880 the returns were—barley, 136,043 bushels ; buckwheat, 88,178; maize, 10,928 ; oats, 793,721; potatoes, 3,730,800; pulse, 42,507; chestnuts, 66,462; besides bectroot, hemp, flax, and colza. In 1883 the vintage was 3,221,834 gallons, the average for 1873- 1882 being 3,199,570, and cider was produced to the amount of 757,922 gallons (average 742,808). Tobacco is successfully grown in a part of the department (Rumilly). Though much of the wood has been cut down, Haute-Savoie still contains fine pine forests below 7200 feet of altitude, and fir, larch, and beech woods below 5000

feet, the limit of the elm and ash being 4250, and that of the oak 4000. Splendid walnuts and chestnuts are to be found as high up as 2950 feet and hazels as high as 3600. Argentiferous lead ores and copper, iron, and manganese ores exist, but are not mueh worked. About 1000 tons of anthracite and lignite were raised in 1882, and 12,405 tons of asphaltic limestone. Jasper and other beautiful marble, freestone largely used in the buildings of Lyons and Chambéry, limestone, and slates are all quarried, Mineral waters of varions kinds abound (Amphion and Evian, chalybcate ; St Gervais at the foot of Mont Blanc, hot, sulphurous, and chaly- beate; Menthon, sulphurous; La Caille, hot, sulphurous). Cotton manufacture is carried on at Annecy, where one establishment has 20,000 spindles, 600 power-looms, and 100 hand-looms, employing

= E

2

500 workers. Some 500,000 or 600,000 yards of silk stuffs are woven throughout the department by some 850 workers; and wool-spinning and wool manufactures are also carried on. In the iron industry 1921 tons of cast-iron and 1956 tons of malleable iron were manufactured in 1882. Clock-making, taught in two special schools, employs 2000 hands. Tanneries, paper-mills, tile-works, and flour-mills are numerous. About two-thirds of the cantons have the advantage of belonging to the neutral customs zone—that is, have the right of introducing foreign goods duty free, with the exception of powder and tobacco. Coal, cotton, metals, and provisions are imported; cheese, cattle, timber, leather, asphalt, building stone, and calico are exported. The national roads make a total of 193 miles, other roads 3100 miles, and the railways—Annccy to Aix-les-Bains and to Annemasse, on the line from Bellegarde to Evian—96 miles. With its 274,087 inhabitants (1881), who all speak French and are almost exclusively Roman Catholics, Haute-Savoie is only about one-tenth bclow the average density of France. It forms the diocese of Annecy; the court of appeal and the university academy are at Chambéry, and the department -is included in the 14th corps d’armée district (Grenoble). There are 4

arrondissements—Annecy (population of town 11,000), Bonneville (2270), St Julien (1500), and Thonon (5440),—-28 cantons, and 314 communes.

SAVONA, a city of Italy, in the province of Genoa, 254 miles west of that town, and 91 miles south of Turin by rail, is after Genoa and Nice the most important of the cities of the Riviera. The greater part of the town is now modern, consisting of handsome gardens, boulevards, and well-paved broad streets lined with massive arcades and substantial houses, built in enormous square blocks from four to five stories high. It is surrounded with green-clad hills and luxuriant orange groves. On the Rock of St George stands the castle built by the Genoese in 1542, now used as a military prison. The cathedral (1589-1604) is a late Renaissance building with a dome of modern con- struction. In the Cappella Sistina stands the magnificent tomb erected by Sixtus IV. to his parents. Facing the cathedral is the Della Rovere palace erected by Cardinal Giulio della Rovere (Julius II.) as a kind of university, and now occupied by the prefecture, the post-office, and the courts. San Domenico (or Giovanni Battista) built by the Dominicans, occupies the site of the very ancient church of Sant' Antonio Abate. Several of the churches have paintings of some merit, and there is a municipal picture-gallery occupying part of the extensive buildings of the civil hospital of St Paul. The Teatro Chiabrera, erected in 1853 in honour of the lyric poet Chiabrera, who was born in Savona, and is buried there in the church of San Giacomo, has its facade adorned with statues of Alfieri, Goldoni, Metastasio, and Rossini. The town-house (with the public library founded by the bishop of Savona, Maria di Mari, in 1840), the episcopal palace, and the harbour tower surmounted by a colossal figure of the Virgin also deserve mention. As early as the 12th century, the Savonese built themselves a sufficient harbour ; but in the 16th century their rivals the Genoese, fearing that Francis I. of France intended to make it a great seat of Mediterranean trade, rendered it useless by sinking at its mouth vessels filled with large stones. The modern harbour, dating from 1815, has since 1880 been provided with a dock excavated in the rock, 986 feet long 460 wide and 23 feet deep; and other extensions are in progress. In 1884 1012 vessels (349,462 tons) entered and 988 (346,337 tons) cleared—the steamers being respectively 298 (273,237 tons) and 294 (270,953). The opening of the railway to Bra (1878) at once gave Savona an advantage over Genoa as a port for supplying Turin and Piedmont. A large import

trade has since grown up, especially in coals (300,000 tons from Great Britain and France), which can be loaded directly from the ship into the trucks. The exports are confined to the products of the local industries, fruit, hoop-staves, &c. The potteries which have been long established at Savona export their earthenware to all parts of Italy; and there are glass-

works, soap-works, and one of the largest iron-foundries in North Italy. Shipbuilding is also carried on, The population of the commune, which includes the suburbs of Fornaci, Lavagnola, Legino and Zinola, and San Bernardo, was 19,611 in 1861 and 29,614 in 1881, that of the city at the latter date being 19,120.

Savona ig the Savo where, according to Livy, Mago stored his booty in the Second Punic War. In 1191 it bought up the terri- torial claims of the Marquises Del Carretto. Its whole history is that of a long struggle against the preponderance of Genoa. In 1746 it was captured by the king of Sardinia, but it was restored to Genoa by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle. Columbus, whose ancestors came from Savona, gave the name of the city to one of the first islands he discovered in the West Indies.

SAVONAROLA, Grrotamo (1452-1498). The roll of Italian great men contains few grander names than that of Savonarola, and the career of this patriot-priest, re- former, and statesman is one of the strangest pages of Italy’s history. Amid the splendid corruptions of the Italian Renaissance he was the representative of pure Christianity, the founder and ruler of an ideal Christian republic, and, when vanquished by the power of Rome, suffered martyrdom for the cause to which his life had been dedicated. His doctrines have been the theme of interminable controversies and contradictory judgments. He has been alternately declared a fanatic bent on the revival of medieval barbarism and an enlightened pre- cursor of the reformation, a true Catholic prophet and martyr and a shameless impostor and heretic. It is enough to say here that his best biographers and critics. give satisfactory proofs that he was chiefly a reformer of morals, who, while boldly denouncing Papal corruptions, preserved an entire belief in all the dogmas of the Roman Catholic Church.

Girolamo Savonarola was born at Ferrara 21st September 1452, the third child of Michele Savonarola and his wife Elena Bonaccossi of Mantua. His

grandfather, Michele Savonarola, a Paduan physician of much repute and learning, had settled in Ferrara at the invitation of the reigning marquis, Nicholas III. of Este, and gained a large fortune there. The younger Michele was a mere courtier and spendthrift, but Elena Savonarola seems to have been a woman of superior stamp. She was tenderly loved by her famous son, and his letters prove that she retained his fullest confidence through all the vicissitudes of his career.

Girolamo was a grave precocious child, with an early passion for learning. He was guided in his first studies by his wise old grandfather the physician ; and, in the hope of restoring their fallen fortunes, his parents intended him for the same profession. Even as a boy he had in- tense pleasure in reading St Thomas Aquinas and the Arab commentators of Aristotle, was skilled in the subtle- ties of the schools, wrote verses, studied music and design, and, avoiding society, loved solitary rambles on the banks of the Po. Grass-grown Ferrara was then a gay and bustling town of 100,000 inhabitants, its prince Borso d'Este a most magnificent potentate. To the mystic young student all festivities were repulsive, and although reared in a courtier-household he early asserted his individuality by his contempt for the pomp and glitter of court life. At the age of nineteen, however, he had as yet no thought of renouncing the world, for he was then passionately in love with the child of a friendly neighbour, a Strozzi exiled from Florence. His suit was repulsed with disdain ; no Strozzi, he was told, might stoop to wed a Savonarola. This blow probably decided his career, but he endured two years of misery and mental conflict before resolving to abandon his medical studies and devote himself to God's service. He was full of doubt and self-distrust ; disgust for the world did not seem to him a sufficient

qualification for the religious life, and his daily prayer was, "Lord! teach me the way my soul should walk." But in 1474 his doubts were dispelled by a sermon heard at Faenza, and his way was clear. Dreading the pain of bidding farewell to his dear ones, he secretly stole away to Bologna, entered the monastery of St Domenico and then acquainted his father with his reasons for the step. The world's wickedness was intolerable, he wrote; through- out Italy he beheld vice triumphant, virtue despised. Among the

papers he had left behind at Ferrara was a treatise on “Contempt of the World,” inveighing against the prevalent corruption and predicting the speedy vengeance of Heaven. His novitiate was marked by a fervour of humility. He sought the most menial offices, and did penance for his sins by the severest austerities. According to contemporary writers he was worn to a shadow.

All portraits of this extraordinary man are at first sight almost repulsively ugly, but written descriptions tell us that his gaunt features were beautified by an expression of singular force and benevolence. Luminous dark eyes sparkled and flamed beneath his thick, black brows, and his large mouth and prominent nether lip were as capable of gentle sweetness as of power and set resolve. He was of middling stature, dark complexion, had a nervous system of exceeding delicacy and the sanguineo-bilious temperament so often associated with genius. His manners were simple, his speech unadorned and almost homely. His splendid oratorical power was as yet unrevealed; but his intellectual gifts being at once recognized his superiors charged him with the instruction of the novices, instead of the humbler tasks he had wished to fulfil. He passed six quiet years in the convent, but his poems written during that period are expressive of burning indignation against the increasing corruptions of the church and profoundest sorrow for the calamities of his country.

In 1482 he reluctantly accepted a mission to Ferrara, and, regarding earthly affections as snares of the evil one, tried to keep aloof from his family. His preachings attracted slight attention there, no one—as he later remarked—being a prophet in his own land. An outbreak of hostilities between Ferrara and Venice, fomented by Pope Sixtus IV., soon caused his recall to Bologna. Thence he was despatched to St Mark’s in Florence, the scene of his future triumph and downfall.

Lorenzo the Magnificent was then (1482) at the height of his power and popularity, and the Florentines, dazzled by his splendour and devoted to pleasure and luxury, were docile subjects to his rule. At first Savonarola was enchanted with Florence. Fresh from the gloom of Bologna, sickened by the evils wrought on Italy by the scandalous nepotism of the pope, and oppressed by some natural human anxiety as to his reception in a strange

city, the gaiety and charm of his novel surroundings lifted a weight from his soul. His cloister, sanctified by memories of St Antonine and adorned -with the inspired paintings of Fra Angelico, seemed to him a fore-court of heaven. But his content speedily changed to horror. The Florence streets rang with Lorenzo's ribald songs (the "canti carnascialeschi "); the smooth, cultured citizens were dead to all sense of religion or morality ; and the spirit of the fashionable heathen philosophy had even infected the brotherhood of St Mark. In 1483 Savonarola was Lenten preacher in the church of St Lorenzo, but his plain, earnest exhortations attracted few hearers, while all the world thronged to Santo Spirito to enjoy the 'elegant rhetoric of Fra Mariano da Genazzano. Discouraged by this failure in the pulpit, Savonarola now devoted himself to teaching in the convent, but his zeal for the salvation

SAWVORN HOLA

of the apathetic townsfolk was soon to stir him to fresh efforts. Convinced of being divinely inspired, he had begun to see visions, and discovered in the Apocalypse symbols of the heavenly vengeance about to overtake this sin-laden people. In a hymn to the Saviour composed at

this time he gave vent to his prophetic dismay. The papal chair was now filled by Innocent VIII, whose rule

was even more infamous than that of his predecessor

Sixtus IV.

Savonarola's first success as a preacher was gained at St Gemignano (1484-85), but it was only at Brescia in the following year that his power as an orator was fully

revealed. Ina sermon on the Apocalypse he shook men's

souls by his terrible threats of the wrath to come, and drew tears from their eyes by the tender pathos of his assurances of divine mercy. A Brescian friar relates that a halo of light was seen to flash round his head, and the

citizens remembered his awful prophecies when in 1512 their town was put to the sack by Gaston de Foix.

Soon, at a Dominican council at Reggio, Savonarola had occasion to display his theological learning and subtlety. The famous Pico della Mirandola was particularly impressed by the friar's attainments, and is said to have urged Lorenzo de' Medici to recall him from Lombardy, When Savonarola returned to Florence in 1490, his fame as an orator had gone there before him. The cloister garden was too small for the crowds attending his lectures, and on the Ist August 1490 he gave his first sermon in the church of St Mark. To quote his own words, it was "a terrible sermon," and legend adds that he foretold he should preach for eight years.

And now, for the better setting forth of his doctrines, to silence pedants, and confute malignant misinterpretation, he published a collection of his writings. These proved his knowledge of the ancient philosophy he so fiercely condemned, and showed that no ignorance of the fathers caused him to seek inspiration from the Bible alone. The Triumph of the Cross is his principal work, but everything he wrote was animated by the ardent spirit of piety evidenced in his life. Savonarola's sole aim was to bring mankind nearer to God.

In 1491 he was invited to preach in the cathedral, Sta Maria del Fiore, and his rule over Florence may be said to begin from that date. The anger and uneasiness of Lorenzo de' Medici gave testimony to his power. Five of the leading men of Florence were sent to urge him to moderate his tone, and in his own interest and that of his convent to show more respect to the head of the state. But Savonarola rejected their advice. "Tell your master," he said in conclusion, " that, albeit Iam a humble stranger, he the lord of Florence, yet I shall remain and he depart." Afterwards, in the presence of many witnesses, he fore- told that stupendous changes impended over Italy,—that Lorenzo, the pope, and the king of Naples were all near unto death.

In the July of the same year he was elected prior of St Mark's. As the convent had been rebuilt by Cosimo, and enriched by the bounty of the Medici, it was considered the duty of the new superior to present his homage to Lorenzo. Savonarola, however, refused to conform to the usage. His election was due to God, not Lorenzo; to God alone would he promise

submission. Upon this the sovereign angrily exclaimed: “This stranger comes to dwell in my house, yet will not stoop to pay me a visit.” Nevertheless, disdaining to recognize the enmity of a mere monk, he tried various conciliatory measures. All were rejected by the unbending prior, who even refused to let his convent profit by Lorenzo’s donations. The Magnifico then sought to undermine his popularity, and Fra Mariano was employed to attack him from the pulpit. But the

Te ee eee

SA VON

preacher’s scandalous accusations missed their mark, and Savon- arola took up the challenge; his eloquence prevailed, and Fri Mariano was silenced. But the latter, while feigning

disgusted his hearers without hurting his rival.

indifference, was thenceforth his rancorous and determined

foe.

In April 1492 Lorenzo de’ Medici was on his deathi- bed at Careggi. Oppressed by the weight of his crimes, he needed some assurance of divine forgiveness from

trustier lips than those of obsequious courtiers, and

summoned the unyielding prior to shrive his soul. Savonarola reluctantly came, and, after hearing the agitated confession of the dying prince, offered absolution upon three conditions. Lorenzo asked in what they consisted. First, “You must repent and feel true faith in God’s mercy.” Lorenzo assented. Secondly, “You must give up your ill-gotten wealth.” This too Lorenzo promised, after some hesitation ; but upon hearing the third clause, “ You must restore the liberties of Florence,” Lorenzo turned his face to the wall and made no reply. Savonarola waited a few moments and then went away. And shortly after_his penitent died unabsolved.

Savonarola’s influence now rapidly increased. Many adhereuts of the late prince came over to his side, disgusted by the violence and incompetency of Piero de’ Medici’s rule. All state affairs were mismanaged, and Florence was fast losing the power and prestige acquired under Lorenzo. The same year witnessed the fulfilment of Savonarola’s second prediction in the death of Inno- cent VIII. (July 1492); men’s minds were full of anxiety, and the scandalous election of Cardinal Borgia to the papal chair heralded the climax of Italy’s woes. The friar’s utterances became more and more fervent and impassioned. Patriotic solicitude combined with close study of Biblical prophecies had stirred him to a pious frenzy, in which he saw visions and believed himself the recipient of divine revelations. It was during the delivery of one of his forcible Advent sermons that he beheld the celebrated vision, recorded in contemporary medals and engravings, that is almost a symbol of his doctrines. A hand appeared to him bearing a flaming sword inscribed with the words: “Gladius Domini supra terram cito et velociter.” He heard supernatural voices proclaiming mercy to the faithful, vengeance on the guilty, and mighty cries that the wrath of God wasat hand. Then the sword bent towards the earth, the sky darkened, thunder pealed, lightning flashed, and the whole world was wasted by famine, bloodshed, and pestilence. It was probably the noise of these sermons that caused the friar’s temporary removal from Florence at the instance of Piero de’ Medici. He was presently addressing enthusiastic congregations at Prato and Bologna. In the latter city his courage in rebuking the wife of Bentivoglio, the reigning lord, for interrupting divine service by her noisy entrance nearly cost him his life. Assassins were sent to kill him in his cell; but awed, it is said, by Savonarola’s words and demeanour they fled dismayed from his presence. At the close of his last sermon the undaunted friar publicly announced the day and hour of his departure from Bologna ; and his lonely journey on foot over the Apennines was safely accomplished. He was rapturously welcomed by the community of St Mark’s, and at once proceeded to re-establish the discipline of the order and to sweep away all abuses. For this purpose he obtained, after much difficulty, a papal brief emancipating the Dominicans of St Mark from the rule of the Lombard vicars of that order. He thus became an independent author- ity, no longer at the command of distant superiors. Thoroughly reorganizing the convent, he relegated many of the brethren to a quieter retreat outside the city, only

retaining in Florence those best fitted to aid in intellectual labour. To render the convent self-supporting, he opened schools for various branches of art, and promoted the study of Oriental languages. His efforts were completely successful; the brethren's enthusiasm was fired by their superior's example ; religion and learning made equal pro- gress; St Mark's became the most popular monastery in Florence, and many citizens of noble birth flocked thither to take the vows.

Meanwhile Savonarola continued to denounce the abuses of the church and the guilt and corruption of man- kind, and thundered forth predictions of heavenly wrath. The scourge of war was already at hand, for in 1494 the duke of Milan demanded the aid of France, and King Charles VIII. brought an army across the Alps. Piero de' Medici, maddened with fear, and forgetting that hitherto Florence had been the firm friend of France, made alliance with the Neapolitan sovereign whose kingdom was claimed by Charles. Then, repenting this illjudged step, he hurried in person to the French camp at Pietra Santa, and humbled himself before the king. And, not content with agreeing to all the latter's demands, he further promised large sums of money and the surrender of the strongholds of Pisa and Leghorn.

This news drove Florence to revolt, and the worst excesses were feared from the popular fury. But even at this crisis Savonarola's influence was all-powerful, and a bloodless revolution was effected. Piero Capponi's declara- tion that "it was time to put an end to this baby govern- ment" was the sole weapon needed to depose Piero de' Medici. The resuscitated republic instantly sent a fresh embassy to the French king, to arrange the terms of his reception in Florence. Savonarola was one of the envoys, Charles being known to entertain the greatest veneration

for the friar who had so long predicted his coming and

declared it to be divinely ordained. He was most respect- fully received at the camp, but could obtain no definite pledges from the king, who was bent on first coming to Florence. During Savonarola's absence Piero de' Medici had re-entered the city, found his power irretrievably lost, and been contemptuously but peaceably expelled. It is a proof of the high esteem in

which Savonarola's convent was held that, although the headquarters of the victorious popular party, Piero's brother, Cardinal Medici, entrusted to its care a large share of the family treasures.

Returning full of hope from Pietra Santa, Savonarola might well have been dismayed by the distracted state of public affairs. There was no Government, and revolted Pisa was secretly favoured by the monarch who was knocking at the gates of Florence. Nevertheless, with the aid of Capponi, he guided the bewildered city safely through these critical days. Charles entered Florence on the 17th November 1494, and the citizens' fears evaporated in jests on the puny exterior of the "threatened scourge." But the exorbitance of his demands soon showed that he came as a foe. All was agitation; disturbances arose, and serious collision with the French troops seemed inevitable. The signory resolved to be rid of their dangerous guests ; and, when Charles threatened to sound his trumpets unless the sums exacted were paid, Capponi tore up the treaty in his face and made the memorable reply: "Then we will ring our bells." The monarch was cowed, accepted moderate terms, and, yielding to Savonarola's remonstrances, left Florence on the 24th November.

The city was now free but in the utmost disorder, its commerce ruined, its treasury drained. After seventy years' subjection to the Medici it had forgotten the art of self-government, and felt the need of a strong guiding hand. So the citizens turned to the patriot monk whose

words had freed them of King Charles, and Savonarola became the lawgiver of Florence. The first thing done at his instance was to relieve the starving populace within and without the walls; shops were opened to give work to the unemployed ; all taxes, especially those weighing on the lower classes, were reduced; the strictest admini- stration of justice was enforced, and all men were exhorted to place their trust in the Lord. And, after much debate as to the constitution of the new republic, Savonarola's influence carried the day in favour of Soderini's proposal of a universal or general government, with a great council on the Venetian plan, but modified to suit the needs of the city. The Florentines' love for their great preacher was enhanced by gratitude on this triumphant defence of their rights. The great

council consisted of 3200 citizens of blameless reputation and over twenty-five years of age, a third of the number sitting for six months in turn in the hall of the Cinquecento expressly built for the pur- pose. There was also an upper council of eighty, which in conjunction with the signory decided all questions of too important and delicate a nature for discussion in the larger assembly. These institutions were approved by the people, and gave a fair promise of justice. Savonarola's programme of the new government: was comprised in the following formula :—(1) fear of God and purification of manners ; (2) promotion of the public welfare in pre- ference to private interests; (3) a general amnesty to political offenders ; (4) a council on the Venetian model, but with no doge. At first the new machinery acted well; the public mind was tranquil, and the war with Pisa—not as yet of threatening proportions—was enough to occupy the Florentines and prevent internecine feuds. Without holding any official post in the commonwealth he had created the prior of St Mark's was the real head of the state, the dictator of Florence, and guarded the public weal with extraordinary political wisdom. At his instance the tyrannical system of arbitrary imposts and so-called voluntary loans was abolished, and replaced by a tax of ten per cent. (la decima) on all real property. The laws and edicts of this period read like paraphrases of Savonarola's sermons, and indeed his counsels were always given as addenda to the religious exhortations in which he denounced the sins of his country and the pollution of the church, and urged Florence to cast off iniquity and become a truly Christian city, a pattern not only to Rome but to the world at large. His eloquence was now at the flood. Day by day his impassioned words, filled with the spirit of the Old Testament, wrought upon the minds of the Florentines and strung them to a pitch of pious emotion never before—and never since—attained by them. Their fervour was too hot to be lasting, and Savonarola's un- compromising spirit roused the hatred of political adver- saries as well as of the degraded court of Rome. Even now, when his authority was at its highest, when his fame filled the land, and the vast cathedral and its precincts lacked space for the crowds flocking to hear him, his enemies were secretly preparing his downfall. _ Pleasure-loving Florence was completely changed. Ab- Juring pomps and vanities, its citizens observed the ascetic regime of the cloister; half the year was devoted to abstinence and few dared to eat meat on the fasts ordained by Savonarola. Hymns and lauds rang in the streets that had so recently echoed with Lorenzo's dissolute songs. Both sexes dressed with

Puritan plainness ; husbands and Wives quitted their homes for convents ; Marriage became an awful and scarcely permitted rite ; mothers suckled their own babes ; and persons of all ranks—nobles, scholars, and artists—renounced the world to assume the Dominican robe. Still more wonderful was Savonarola's influence over children, and their response to his appeals is a proof

PAY ON Aga 2

of the magnetic power of his goodness and purity. He organized the boys of Florence in a species of sacred militia, an inner republic, with its own magistrates and officials charged with the enforcement of his rules for the holy life. It was with the aid of these youthful enthu- siasts that Savonarola arranged the religious carnival of 1496, when the citizens gave their costliest possessions in alms to the poor, and tonsured monks, crowned with flowers, sang lauds and performed wild dances for the glory of God. In the same spirit, and to point the doctrine of renunciation of carnal gauds, he celebrated the carnival of 1497 by the famous "burning of the vanities" in the Piazza della Signoria. A Venetian merchant is known to have bid 22,000 gold florins for the doomed vanities, but the scandalized authorities not only rejected his offer but added his portrait to the pile. Nevertheless the artistic value of the objects consumed has been greatly exaggerated by some writers. There is no proof that any book or painting of real merit was sacrificed, and Savonarola was neither a foe to art nor to learning. On the contrary, so great was his respect for both that, when there was a question of selling the Medici library to pay that family's debts, he saved the collection at the expense of the convent purse.

Meanwhile events were taking a turn hostile to the prior. Alexander VI. had long regretted the enfranchise- ment of St Mark's from the rule of the Lombard Dominicans, and now, having seen a transcript of one of Savonarola's denunciations of his crimes, resolved to silence this daring preacher at any cost. Bribery was the first weapon employed, and a cardinal's hat was held out asa bait. But Savonarola indignantly spurned the offer, replying to it from the pulpit with the prophetic words: "No hat will I have but that of a martyr, reddened with my own blood."

So long as King Charles remained in Italy Alexander’s concern for his own safety prevented all vigorous measures against the friar. But no Borgia ever forgot an enemy. He bided his time, and the transformation of sceptical Florence into an austerely Christian republic claiming the Saviour as its head only increased his resolve to crush the man who had wrought this marvel. The potent duke of Milan, Ludovico Sforza, and other foes were labouring for the same end, and already in July 1495 a papal brief had courteously summoned Savonarola to Rome. In terms of equal courtesy the prior declined the invitation, nor did he obey a second, less softly worded, in September. Then came a third, threatening Florence with an interdict In case of renewed refusal. Savonarola disregarded the command, but suspending his sermons went to preach for a while in other Tuscan cities. But in Lent his celebrated sermons upon Amos were delivered in the duomo, and again he urged the necessity of reforming the church, striving by ingenious arguments to reconcile re- bellion against Alexander with unalterable fidelity to the Holy See. All Italy recognized that a mortal combat was going on between a humble friar and the head of the church. What would be the result? Savonarola’s voice was arousing a storm that might shake even the power of Rome! Alive to the danger, the pope knew that his foe must be crushed, and the religious carnival of 1496 afforded a good pretext for stronger proceedings against him. The threatened anathema was, for some reason, deferred, but a brief uniting St Mark’s to a new Tuscan branch of the Dominicans now deprived Savonarola of his independent power. However, in the beginning of 1497 the Piagnoni were again in office, with the prior’s staunch friend, Francesco Valori, at their head. In March the aspect of affairs changed. The Arrabbiati and the Medicean faction merged political differences in their

common hatred to Savonarola. Piero de’ Medici’s fresh attempt to re-enter Florence failed; nevertheless his followers continued their intrigues, and party spirit in- creased in virulence. The citizens were growing weary of the monastic austcrities imposed on them, and Alexander foresaw that his revenge was at hand.

A signory openly hostile to Savonarola took office in May, and on Ascension Day his enemies ventured on active insult. His pulpit in the duomo was defiled, an ass's skin spread over the cushion, and sharp nails fixed in the board on which he would strike his hand. The outrage was discovered and remedied before the service began ; and, although the Arrabbiati half filled the church and even sought to attempt his life, Savonarola kept his com- posure and delivered a most impressive sermon. But the incident proved the bitterness and energy of his foes, and the signory, in feigned anxiety for the public peace, be- sought him to suspend his discourses. Shortly afterwards the threatened bull of excommunication was launched against him, and Fra Mariano was in Rome stimulating the pope's wrath. Savonarola remained undaunted. The sentence was null and void, he said. His mission was divinely inspired ; and Alexander, elected simoniacally and laden with crimes, was no true pope. Nevertheless the reading of the bull in the duomo with the appropriate, terrifying ceremonial made a deep impression on the Florentines. And now, the Arrabbiati signory putting no check on the Compagnacci, the city returned to the wanton licence of Lorenzo's reign. But in July Savonarola's friends were again in power and did their best to have his excommunication removed. Meanwhile party strife was stilled by an outbreak of the plague. 'The prior of St Mark's used the wisest precautions for the safety of his two hundred and fifty monks, sustained their courage by his own, and sent the younger men to a country retreat out of reach of contagion. During this time Rome was horror-struck by the mysterious murder of the young duke of Gandia, and the bereaved pope mourned his son with the wildest grief. Savonarola addressed to the pontiff a letter of condolence, boldly urging him to bow to the will of Heaven and repent while there was yet time.

The plague ended, Florence was plunged in fresh troubles from Medicean intrigues, and a conspiracy for the restoration of Piero was discovered. Among the five leading citizens concerned in the plot was Bernardo del Nero, a very aged man of lofty talents and position. The gonfalonier, Francesco Valori, used his strongest influence to obtain their condemnation, and all five were put to death. It is said that at least Bernardo del Nero would have been spared had Savonarola raised his voice, but, although refraining from any active part against the prisoners, the prior would not ask mercy for them. This silence proved fatal to his popularity with moderate

men, gave new adherents to the Arrabbiati, and whetted the fury of the pope, Sforza, and all potentates well disposed to the Medici faction. He was now interdicted from preaching even in his own convent and again summoned to Rome. As before, the mandate was disobeyed. He refrained from public preaching, but held conferences in St Mark's with large gatherings of his disciples, and defied the interdict on Christmas Day by publicly celebrating mass and heading a procession through the cloisters.

The year 1498, in which Savonarola was to die a.

martyr's death, opened amid seemingly favourable auspices. The Piagnoni were again at the head of the state, and by their request the prior resumed his sermons in the duomo, while his dearest disciple, Frs Domenico Buonvicini, filled the pulpit of St Lorenzo. Scaffoldings had to be erected to accommodate Savonarola's congregation, and the Arrab- biati could only vent their spite by noisy riots on the

ee OF: &

piazza outside the cathedral. For the last time the carnival was again kept with strange religious festivities, and many valuable books and works of art were sacrificed in a second bonfire of "vanities." But menacing briefs poured in from Rome; the pope had read one of Savonarola's recent sermons on Exodus; the city itself was threatened with interdict, and the Florentine ambas- sador could barely obtain a short delay. Now too the Piagnoni quitted office; the new signory was less friendly, and the prior was persuaded by his adherents to retire to St Mark's. here he continued to preach with unabated zeal; and, since the women of Florence deplored the loss of his teachings, one day in the week was set apart for them. The signory tried to conciliate the pope by relating the wonderful spiritual effects of their preacher's words, but Alexander was obdurate. The Florentines must either silence the man themselves, or send him to be judged by a Roman tribunal.

Undismayed by personal danger, Savonarola resolved to appeal to all Christendom against the unrighteous pontiff, and despatched letters to the

rulers of Europe adjuring them to assemble a council to condemn this antipope. The council of Constance, and the deposition of John XXIIL, were satisfactory precedents still remembered by the world. One of these letters being intercepted and sent to Rome by the duke of Milan (it is said) proved fatal to the friar. The papal threats were now too urgent to be disregarded, and the cowed signory entreated Savonarola to put an end to his sermons. He reluctantly obeyed, and concluded his last discourse with the tenderest and most touching farewell. Perhaps he foresaw that he should never again address his flock from the pulpit.

The Government now hoped that Alexander would be appeased and Florence allowed to breathe freely. But although silenced the prophet was doomed, and the folly of his disciples precipitated his fate. A creature of the Arrabbiati, a Franciscan friar named Francesco di Puglia, challenged Savonarola to prove the truth of his doctrines by the ordeal of fire. At first the prior treated the pro- vocation with merited contempt, but unfortunately his too zealous disciple Fras Domenico accepted the challenge. And, when the Franciscan declared that he would enter the fire with Savonarola alone, Fra Domenico protested his willingness to enter it with any one in defence of his master's cause. So, as Savonarola resolutely declined the trial, the Franciscan deputed a convert, one Giuliano dei Rondinelli, to go through the ordeal with Fra Domenico. There were long preliminary disputes. Savonarola, per- ceiving that a trap was being laid for him, discountenanced the "experiment" until over-persuaded by his disciple's prayers. Perhaps because it was a mere reductio ad absurdum of his dearest beliefs, he was strangely perplexed and vacillating with regard to it. With his firm convic- tion of the divinity of his mission he sometimes felt assured of the triumphant issue of the terrible ordeal. Alternately swayed by impassioned zeal and the prompt- ings of reason, his calmer judgment was at last overborne by the fanaticism of his followers. Aided by the signory, which was playing into the hands of Rome, the Arrabbiati and Compagnacci pressed the matter on, and the way was now clear for Savonarola's destruction.

On the 7th April 1498 an immense throng gathered in the Piazza della Signoria to enjoy the barbarous sight. Two thick banks of combustibles forty yards long, with a narrow space between, had been erected in front of

the palace, and five hundred soldiers kept a wide circle clear of the crowd. Some writers aver that the piles were charged with gunpowder. Not only the square but every window, balcony, or housetop commanding a glimpse of it was filled with eager spectators. The Dominicans

from one side, the Franciscans from the other, marched in solemn procession to the Loggia dei Lanzi, which had been divided by a hoarding into two separate compartments. The Dominicans were led by Savonarola carrying the host, which he reverently deposited on an altar prepared in his portion of the loggia, and when Fra Domenico was seen to kneel before it the Piagnoni burst into a song of praise. The magistrates signalled to the two champions to advance. Fra Domenico stepped forward, but neither Rondinelli nor Fra Francesco appeared. The Franciscans began to urge fantastic objections. The Dominican's vestments might be bewitched, they said. Then, when he promptly changed them for a friar's robe, they pretended that his proximity to Savonarola had probably renewed the charm. He must remove the cross that he wore. He again complied,—was ready to fulfil every condition in order to enter the fire. But fresh obstacles were suggested by the Franciscans, and, when Savonarola insisted that his champion should bear the host, they cried out against the sacrilege of exposing the Redeemer's body to the flames. All was turmoil and confusion, the crowd frantic. And, although MRondinelli had not come, the signory sent angry messages to ask why the Dominicans delayed the trial. Meanwhile the Arrabbiati stirred the public dis- content and threw all the blame on Savonarola. Some Compagnacci assaulted the loggia in order to kill him, but were driven back by Salviati's band. The foreign soldicry, fearing an attack on the palace, charged the excited mob, and the tumult was temporarily checked. It was now late in the day, and a storm shower gave the authorities a pretext for declaring that heaven was against the ordeal. The crafty Franciscans slipped away un- observed, but Savonarola raising the host attempted to lead his monks across the piazza in the same solemn order as before. On this the popular fury burst forth. De

frauded of their bloody diversion, the people were wild :

with rage. Fra Girolamo’s power was suddenly at an end. These Florentines who had worshipped him as a saint turned on him with rabid hate. Neither he nor his brethren would have lived to reach St Mark’s but for the devoted help of Salviati and his men. They were pelted, stoned, and followed with the vilest execrations. Against the real culprits, the dastardly Franciscans, no anger was felt; the zealous prior, the prophet and lawgiver of Florence, was made the popular scapegoat. Notwith- standing the anguish that must have filled his heart, the fallen man preserved his dignity and calm. Mounting his own pulpit in St Mark’s he quietly related the events of the day to the faithful assembled in the church, and then withdrew to his cell, while the mob on the square outside was clamouring for his blood.

The next morning, the signory having decreed the prior’s banishment, Francesco Valori and other leading Piagnoni hurried to him to concert measures for his safety.

Meanwhile the Government decided on his arrest, and no |

sooncr was this made public than the populace rushed to the attack of the convent. The doors of St Mark’s were hastily secured, and Savonarola discovered that his adherents had secretly prepared arms and munitions and were ready to stand a siege. The signory sent to order all laymen to quit the cloister, and a special summons to Valori. After some hesitation the latter obeyed, hoping by his influence to rally all the Piagnoni to the rescue. But he was murdered in the street, and his palace sacked by the mob. The monks and their few remaining friends made a most desperate defence. In vain Savonarola besought them to lay down their arms. Fri Benedetto the painter and others fought like lions, while some hurled tiles on the assailants below. When the church was finally

Domenico, armed with an enormous candlestick, guarding him from the blows of the mob. Profiting by the smoke and confusion a few disciples dragged their beloved master to the inner library and urged him to escape by the window. He hesitated, seemed about to consent, when a cowardly monk, one Malatesta Sacramoro, cried out that the shepherd should lay down his life for his flock. Thereupon Savonarola turned, bade farewell to

the brethren, and, accompanied by the faithful Domenico, quietly surrendered to his enemies. Later, betrayed by the same Malatesta, Fra Silvestro was also seized. Hustled, insulted, and injured by the ferocious crowd, the prisoners were conveyed to the Palazzo Vecchio, and Savonarola was lodged in the tower cell which had once harboured Cosimo de' Medici.

Now came an exultant brief from the pope. His well- beloved Florentines were true sons of the church, but must crown their good deeds by despatching the criminals to Rome. Sforza was equally rejoiced by the news, and the only potentate who could have perhaps saved Savonarola's life, Charles of France, had died on the day of the ordeal by fire. Thus another of the friar's prophecies was verified, and its fulfilment cost him his sole protector.

The result of the trial was a foregone conclusion. The signory refused to send their prisoners to Rome, but they did Rome's behests. Savonarola's judges were chosen from his bitterest foes. Day after day he was cruelly tortured, and in his agony, with a frame weakened by constant austerity and the mental strain of the past months, he made every admission demanded by his tormentors, But directly he was released from the rack he always withdrew the confessions uttered in the delirium of pain. And, these being too incoherent to serve for a legal report, a false account of the friar's avowals was drawn up and published instead of his real words. .

Though physically unable to resist torture, Savonarola's clearness of mind returned whenever he was at peace in his cell. So long as writing materials were allowed him he employed himself in making a commentary on the Psalms, in which he restated all his doctrines. His doom was fixed, but some delay was caused by the pope's unwillingness to permit the exccution in Florence. Alex- ander was frantically eager to see his enemy die in Rome. But the signory remained firm, insisting that the false prophet should suffer death before the Florentines whom he had so long led astray. The matter was finally com- promised. A second mock trial was held by two apostolic commissioners specially appointed by the pope. One of the new judges was a Venetian general of the Dominicans, the other a Spaniard. Meanwhile the trial of Brothers Domenico and Silvestro was still in progress. The former remained nobly faithful to his master and himself. No

extremity of torture could make him recant or extract a syllable to Savonarola's hurt; le steadfastly repeated his belief in the divinity of the prior's mission. Fra Silvestro on the contrary gave way at mere sight of the rack, and this seer of heavenly visions owncd himself and master guilty of every crime laid to their charge.

The two commissioners soon ended their task. They had the pope's orders that Savonarola was to die "even were he a second John the Baptist." On three successive days they "examined" the prior with worse tortures than before. But he now resisted pain better, and, although more than once a promise to recant was extorted from him, he reasserted his innocence when unbound, crying out, "My God, I denicd Thee for fear of pain." On the evening of May 22 sentence of death was pronounced on him and his two disciples. Savonarola listened unmoved to the

awful words, and then quietly resumed his interrupted stormed Savonarola was seen praying at the altar, and Fra |

devotions. Fra Domenico exultcd in the thought of dying

ae

SA V—SAV

by his master's side; Fra Silvestro, on the contrary, raved with despair.

The only favour Savonarola craved before death was a short interview with his fellow victims. This, after long debate, the signory unwillingly granted, and meanwhile a monk was sent to shrive all the three. The memorable meeting took place in the hall of the Cinquecento. During their forty days of confinement and torture eacli one had been told that the others had recanted, and the false report of Savonarola's confession had been shown to the two monks. The three were now face to face for the first time. Fra Domenico's-loyalty had never wavered, and the weak Silves- tro's enthusiasm rekindled at sight of his chief. Savonarola prayed with the two men, gave them his blessing, and ex- horted them by the memory of their Saviour's crucifixion to submit meekly to their fate. Midnight was long past when Savonarola was led back to his cell. Jacopo Niccolini, one of a

religious fraternity dedicated to consoling the last hours of condemned men, remained with him. Spent with weakness and fatigue he asked leave to rest his head on his companion's lap, aud quickly fell into a quict sleep. As Niccolini tells us, the martyr's face became serene and smiling asa child's. On awaking he addressed kind words to the compassionate brother, and then prophesied that dire calamities would befall Florence during the reign of a pope named Clement. The carefully recorded prediction was verified by the siege of 1529.

The execution took place the next morning. A scaffold, connected by a wooden bridge with the magistrates' rostrum, had been erected on the spot where the piles of the ordeal had stood. At one end of the platform was a huge cross with faggots heaped at its base. As the prisoners, clad in penitential haircloth, were led across the bridge, wanton boys thrust sharp sticks between the planks to wound their feet. First came the ceremonial of degradation. Sacerdotal robes were thrown over the victims, and then roughly stripped off by two Dominicans, the bishop of Vasona and the prior of Sta Maria Novella. To the bishop's formula, '"'I separate thee from the church militant and the church triumphant," Savonarola replied in firm tones, " Not from the church triumphant; that is beyond thy power." By a refinement of cruelty Savonarola was the last to suffer. His disciples' bodies already dangled from the arms of the cross before he was hung on thé centre beam. Then the pile was fired. For a moment the wind blew the flames aside, leaving the corpses untouched. "A miracle," cried the weeping Piagnoni; but then the fire leapt up and ferocious yells of triumph rang from the mob. At dusk the martyrs' remains were collected in a cart and thrown into the Arno.

Savonarola's party was apparently annihilated by his death, but, when in 1529-30 Florence was exposed to the horrors predicted by him, the most heroic defenders of his beloved if ungrateful city were Piagnoni who ruled their lives by his precepts and revered his memory as that of a saint,

Savonarola's writings may be classed in three categories :—(1) humerous scrmons, collected mainly by Lorenzo Violi, one of his most enthusiastic hearers; (2) an immense number of devotional and moral essays and some theological works, of which Jl T'rionfo della Croce is the chief; (8) a few

short poems and a political treatise on the government of Florence. Although his faith in the dogmas of the Roman Catholic Church never swerved, his strenuous protests against papal corruptions, his reliance on the Bible as his surest guide, and his intense moral carnestness un- doubtedly connect Savonarola with the movement that heralded the Reformation.

Sce Rudelbach, Hieronymus Savonarola und seine Zeit, aus den Quellen dargestellt (1835); Karl Meier, Girolamo Savonarola, aus grossentheils hand- schriftlichen Quellen dargestellt (1836); Padre Vincenzo Marchese, Storia di S. Marco di Firenze (1855); F. T. Perrens, Jéréme Savonarola, sa vie, ses prédi- cations, ses écrits (1858); R. R. Madden, The Life and Martyrdom of Girolamo Savonarola, etc. (1854); Bartolommeo Aquarone, Vita di Fra Gerenimo Savon- arola (1857); Pasquale Villari, Za Storia di Girolamo Suvonarola e dé suot tempi (1882), : (L. V.)

339

SAVOY. The history of the house of Savoy shows ina striking manner how the destinies of a nation may depend on the fortunes of a princely family. During eight centu- ries, and through all changes of fortune, the princes of Savoy have kept one end steadily in view, and, in the words of Charles Emmanuel III., have “treated Italy as an artichoke to be eaten leaf by leaf.” The ambitions of princes and the interests of the people have fortunately tended in the same direction, and their work is now per- fected in the glory of their house and the freedom of the state.

The descent of HumpErt the Whitehanded, the founder of the family, is uncertain, but lle was most probably a son of Amadeus, the great-grandson of that Boso of Provence (879) who was father of the emperor Louis the Blind. In reward for services rendered to Rudolph III. of Arles, Humbert obtained from him in 1027 the counties of Savoy and Maurienne, and from the emperor Conrad the Salic Chablais and the Lower Valais. His territories, therefore, all lay on the north-western slopes of the Alps. On his death in 1048 he was succeeded perhaps by his eldest son AmapEus I., but eventually by his fourth son OtHO, who, by his marriage with Adelaide, sole heiress of the marquis of Susa, obtained the counties of Turin and the Val d’Aosta, and so acquired a footing in the valley of the Po. His wife’s

rank, too, as marchioness made the family guardians of the frontier by authority of the king of Italy, as they had been before by possession of territory, and was the foundation of their subsequent power as ‘“‘warders” of the Alps. Otho was succeeded in 1060 by his son AMAbDzEvs IT., who maintained a judicious neutral- ity between his brother-in-law the emperor Henry IV. and the pope. In reward for his mediation between them he obtained from the former after Canossa the province of Bugey. The accession of his son Humperr II. in 1080 brought fresh increase of territory in the valley of the Tarantaise, and in 1091 this prince succeeded to the dig- nities of his grandmother Adelaide, when he assumed the title of prince of Piedmont. Amatzus III. came to the throne in 1103, and in 1111 his states were created counties of the empire by Henry V. On his way home from the crusades in 1149 Amadeus died at Nicosia, and was suc- ceeded by his son Humperr III. This prince did not follow the example of Amadeus II., but took the part of the pope against Barbarossa, who accordingly ravaged his territories until Humbert’s death in 1188. The guardians of his son THomas acted more discreetly, and reconciled their ward and the emperor. He reinained Ghibelline all his life, and received from Henry VI. accessions of territory in Vaud, Bugey, and Valais, with the title of imperial vicar in Piedmont and Lombardy. He was followed in 1233 by AmapEvs IV., whose wife was the beautiful Cecilia of Beaux, surnamed Passe Rose. A campaign against the inhabitants of Valais ended in the annexation of their district, and his support of Frederick II. against the pope caused the erection of Chablais and Aosta into a duchy. In 1253 his son Bontracr succeeded to his states at the age of nine, but, after giving proofs of his valour by defeat- ing the troops of Charles of Anjou before Turin, he was taken prisoner and died of grief (1263).

The Salic law now came into operation for the first time, and Prrer, the uncle of Boniface, was called to the throne. This prince, on the marriage of his nieces Eleanor and Sancha of Provence with Henry III. of England and Richard, earl of Cornwall, had visited England, where he had been created earl of Richmond, and built a palace in London afterwards called Savoy House. His brothers Boniface and William were also appointed, the former to the see of Canterbury, and the latter to the presidency of the council. In return he recognized the claims of Richard to the impe-

Y

Genealogical Table of the House of Savoy.

HUMBERT = ANCILL the White-handed, 5th in descent from Boson of Provence (879), d. 1048.

| AmADEvs I, (?) ad, 1060.

AmADEvs II., d. 1080. ee | If., the Fat, d. 1103.

| OrHo= Adelaide, dr. and heiress of Oderic Manfred

2

marquis of Susa, d. 1091.

| Bertha=emperor Ilenry IV.

| AMADEUS III. =Mathilda, dr. of d, 1149, | Guignes VI. of Albon.

Humbert IIT. =4 wives. the Saint, d. 1188,

THOMAS = Beatrice of Geneva. 1177-1233.=Margarct of Faucigny.

| Alice =Louis VI. of France. or Adclaide

| Mathilda = Affonso Henriques,

Ist king of Portugal.

———————— eee

AmApeEus IV. =Cécile de Beaux, Thomas=Joan of Flanders. Peter=Agnes of Purp I, = Alice of Boniface, Beatrice =Raymond- 1197-1253, ‘*Passc- Rose.” 1199-1259, =Beatrice di Fieschi. earl of | Faucigny. 1208-1285. Merania. archbishop of Bérenger Richmond, Canterbury, IV. of 1203-1268,

ad. 1270, Provence. |! | BoniIFAcE, Thomas. AMADEUS V.=Sibylla. Beatrice = Guy Eleanor Sancha Margaret Beatrice 1244-1263 the Great, | =Mary of Brabant. Vienne. =Henry III. =Rich., earl =S. Louis = Charles 1249-1323. of England. of Cornwall, of France. of Anjou. | Philip, prince Louis. EpWAR?= Blanche of AyYMon= Yolande of Aune= Andronicus III., of Achaia. the Liberal, | Burgundy. the Peaceful, | Montferrato. emperor of 1284-1329, 1291-1343, Constantinople. Joan=John III. AMADEUS VI.=Bonne de John of Brittany. the Green Count,] Bourbon. Paleologus.

1333-1383, ;

AMADEUS VII.=Bonne de Berry. the Red Count,

1360-1391,

AMADEvS VIII.=Mary of Burgundy. the first duke, after- | wards Pope Felix V.,

1383-1450,

Lovis= Anne of Lusignano.

1402-1465.

AMADEUs IX.=Yolande, dr. of Pixie II.= Margaret of Bourbon=Claudinc de Penthievre. 1436-1472, Charles VII. of Bresse, of France. 1438-1497, | Puitizert, CuARLES I,=Blanche of Pritizert II.= Yolande

1465-1482;

14€8-1489, | Montferrato. 1480-1504. dr. of Chas. I.

| CuAR.eEs IT, Yolande.

1488-1496,

Louisc= Charles of

| Philip, founder of the house of Nemours.

CHARLES III. = Beatrice of the Good, Portugal.

1486-1553, .

Angouléme.

Francis I, of France.

EMMANUEL PHILIBERT= Margaret, dr. of the Iron-headed, Francis I. of France.

1528-1580.

CHARLES EMMANUEL I, =Catherine, dr. of the Great, 1562-1630, | Philip II. of Spain.

Victor Amapets I,=Christina, dr. of 1587-1637, Tfenry IV. of France,

Francis Hyacinth,

CuARLes EmMANvuEL II.= Mary of

1632-1638,

1634-1675. Savoy-Nemours,

Victor AMADews IT. = Mary of Orleans, king of Sardinia, gd. dr, of Chas, I, 1666-1732, abd. 1730. of England.

CnARLES EMMANUEL IIJ.=Annc of Sulzbach, 1701-1773. and two others.

Victor AMADEUS III. =Marie Antoinette 1727-1796, | of Spain.

—_—

Cuartes EMMANUELIV., Victor Emuanvet I.

1741-1820, abd. 1802. 1759-1824, abd. 1820, 1765-1831.

Clotilde = Prince Napoleon.

b. 1845. 6, 1844.

CHARLES FELIX,

Humpenrr I. =Mary of Savoy.

| Thomas Francis=Mary of Bourbon. of Savoy-Carignano,

1596-1656,

| Emmanuel Philibert= Ange Catharina

Eugene Maurice =Olympla 1631-1709, Este.

1633-1708, Mancini.

Victor Amadeus= Victoria Francesca

Prince Engene, 1690-1766. of Savoy.

1663-1736.

Louis Victor = Christina of Hessc. 1721- ? .

Victor Amadeus= Mary Josephine

Mary=Prince de 1743-1780. | of Lorraine-Armagnac.

1749-1792. Lainballe.

Charles Emmanuel=Mary Christina 1770-1800. of Saxony.

CuARLES ALBERT= Maria Theresa 1798-1849, of Tuscany.

Victor EMMANUEL II. = Adelaide, dr. of the first king of Italy, | Archduke Raincr 1820-1878. of Austria,

| Amadcus, 0, 1845.

Maria Pia = Louis, king of Spain, 1870-73.

&, 1847, king of Portugal.

SAVOY ‘ Charles VII.

rial throne, and received from him Kyburg in the diocese of Lausanne, conveniently near to the county of Geneva, which had been willed to him by the last count. But this increase of territory only brought new anxieties, for Peter’s short reign was occupied in reducing refractory vassals to obedience. At his death in 1268 he was succeeded by his brother Puitip I., who died in 1285, when their nephew AmapeEus V. came to the throne. This prince, surnamed the Great, united Baugé and Bresse to his states in right of his wife Sibylla, and later on Lower Faucigny and part of Geneva. For his second wife he inarried Mary of Bra- bant, sister of the emperor Henry VIL, from whom, in reward for his services in North Italy, he received the seigneury of Aosta. His life was passed in continual and victorious warfare, and one of his last exploits was to force the Turks to raise the siege of Rhodes. In commemoration of his victory it is said that he substituted for the eagles in his arms the letters F.E.R.T. (Portitudo ejus Rhodum tenuit), He died in 1323 while making preparations for a campaign in aid of his nephew, the emperor of the East. Hisson EpwarpD succeeded him, and, dying in 1329, was followed by his brother Aymon. This prince died in 1848, when his son Amaprus VI. ascended the throne. His reign was, like his grandfather’s, a series of petty wars, from which he came out victorious and with extended terri- tory, until, accompanying Louis of Anjou on his expedition against Naples, he died there of the plague (1383). The reign of his son AmaprEus VII. promised to be as glorious as those of his ancestors, but it was cut short by a fall from his horse in 1391. Before his death, however, he had received the allegiance of Barcelonnette, Ventimiglia, Villafranca,.and Nice, so gaining access to the Mediter- ranean.

His son AmapEus VIII. now came to the throne, under the guardianship of his grandmother Bonne de Bourbon. On attaining his majority he first directed his efforts to strengthening his power in the outlying provinces, and in this he was particularly successful. The states of Savoy now extended from the Lake of Geneva to the Mediterranean, and from the Sadne to the Sesia. Its prince had therefore considerable power, and Amadeus threw all

the weight of this on the side of the emperor. Sigismund was not ungrateful, and in 1416 erected the counties of Savoy and Piedmont into duchies. At this time too the duke recovered the fief of Piedmont, which had been granted to Philip, prince of Achaia, by Amadeus V.,and his power was thus thoroughly consolidated. The county of Vercelli afterwards rewarded him for joining the league against the duke of Milan, but in 1434 a plot against his life made him put into execution a plan he had long formed of retiring toa monastery. He accordingly made his son Louis lieutenant-general of the dukedom, and assumed the habit of the knights of S. Maurice, a military order he had founded at the priory of Ripaille. But he was not destined to find the repose he sought. The prelates assembled at the council of Basel voted the deposition of Pope Eugenius IV., and elected Amadeus in his place. Felix V., as he was now called, then abdicated his dukedom definitively, but without much gain in tem- poral honours, for the schism continued until the death of Eugenius in 1447, shortly after which it was healed by the honourable submission of Felix to Nicholas V-. The early years of Lovis's reign were under the guidance of his father, and peace and prosperity blessed his people ; but he afterwards made an alliance with the dauphin which brought him into conflict with Charles VII. of France, though a lasting reconciliation was soon effected. His son Amapzus IX. succeeded in 1465, but, though his virtues led to his beatification, his bodily sufferings made him assign the regency to his wife Yolande, a daughter'of

He died in 1472, when his son PHILIBERT I. succeeded to the throne and to his share in the contests of Yolande with her brother and brothers-in-law, who tried to deprive their nephew of his rights. His reign lasted only ten years, when he was succeeded by his brother CHARLES I. This prince raised for a time by his valour the droop- ing fortunes of his house, but he died in 1489 at the age of thirty-one, having inherited from his aunt, Charlotte of Lu- signano, her pretensions to the titular kingdoms of Cyprus, Jerusalem, and Armenia. He was succeeded by his son Cuartes [J., an infant, who, dying in 1496, was followed by Purtip II., brother of Amadeus IX. He died in 1497, leaving Puitipert II., who succeeded him, and CuarLes III, who ascended the throne on his brother's death in 1504. In spite of himself Charles was drawn into the wars of the period, for in the quarrel

between Francis I. and the pope he could not avoid espousing the cause of his nephew. But the decisive victory of Francis at Mari- gnano gave the duke the opportunity of negotiating the conference at Bologna which led to the conclusion of peace in 1516. So far well, but Charles was less fortunate in the part he took in the wars between Francis I. and Charles V., the brother-in-law of his wife. He tried to maintain a strict neutrality, but his attendance at the emperor's coronation at Bologna in 1530 was imperative in his double character of kinsman and vassal. The visit was fatal to him, for he was rewarded with the county of Asti, and this so displeased the French king that, on the revolt of Geneva to Protestantism in 1532, Francis sent help to the citizens. Bern and Freiburg did lhkewise, and so expelled the duke from Lausanne and Vaud. Charles now sided definitely with the emperor, and Francis at once raised some imaginary claims to his states. On their rejection the French army marched into Savoy, and, finding the pass of Susa unfortified, descended on Piedmont and seized Turin (1536). Charles V. came to the aid of his ally, and invested the city, but, being him- self hard pressed, was obliged to make peace. [I'rance kept Savoy, and the emperor occupied Piedmont, so that only Nice remained to the duke. On the resumption of hostilities in 1541 Piedmont again suffered. In 1544 the treaty of Crespy restored his states to Charles, but the terms were not carried out and he died of grief in 1553. His only surviving son EMMANUEL PHILIBERT succeeded to the rights but not the domains of his ancestors. Since 1536 he had attached himself to the service of the emperor, and had already given promise of a brilliant career. On the abdication of Charles V. the duke was appointed governor of the Low Countries, and in 1557 the victory of St Quentin marked him as one of the first generals of his time. Such services could not go unrewarded, and the peace of Cateau-Cambresis restored him his states, with certain exceptions still to be held by France and Spain. One of the conditions of the treaty also provided for the marriage of the duke with the lovely and accomplished Margaret of France, sister of Henry II. The evacuation of the places held by them was faithfully carried out by the contracting powers, and Emmanuel Philibert occupied himself in strengthening his military and naval forces, until his death in 1580 prevented the execution of the ambitious designs he had conceived. His son CHARLES EMMANUEL I., called the Great, being prevented by Henry III. from retaking Geneva, threw in his lot with Spain, and in 1590 invaded Provence and was received by the citizens of Aix. His

intention was doubtless to revive the ancient kingdom of Arles, but his plans were frustrated by the accession of Henry IV. tothe throne of France. After effecting with Henry an exchange of Bresse and Bugey for the marquisate of Saluzzo he kept up an intermittent war with him until 1609, when, disgusted with the

B42

behaviour of Spain, he made a treaty with France against Philip. But he could not remain faithful for long, and, siding first with one and then with the other, he found himself in almost the same straits as his grandfather, when death put an end to his ambitions and failures in 1630. The first care of his son Victron AMADEUS was to free himself from the double burden of his enemy and his ally, so he concluded peace in 1631. In 1635, however, Richelieu determined to drive the Spaniards out of Italy, and offered the duke the alternatives of war or Milan. He gave but a half-hearted assent to the schemes of France, and, without gaining Milan, died in 1637, leaving by his wife Christina of France Francis Hyacinth, a minor, who only survived till the following year, and Cuartes EMMANUEL II, whose legitimacy was unfortunately rather doubtful. The regency of Christina resembled that of Yolande in the same need for guarding her son’s interests against the pretensions of his uncles, Louis XIII. and the princes of Savoy. But fortune favoured her, and on the duke’s reaching his majority in 1648 the wars of the Fronde occupied all the attention of Mazarin. The brunt of the conflict with Spain consequently fell upon Savoy, and was borne not ingloriously until the conclusion of peace. Charles Emmanuel occupied the remaining part of his reign in repairing the ravages caused by twenty-four years of warfare, and died in 1675, leaving an only son, Victor Amavevs IT., whose minority was as peaceful as his father’s had been the reverse. He married Mary of Orleans, the daughter of Henrietta of England, and consequently the legitimate heiress to the English crown on the death of Anne and on the exclusion of the Pretender. For a time he united with Louis XIV. in persecuting the Protestants, but the overbearing behaviour of his ally made him join the coalition of Augsburg in 1690. His campaign against Louis was carried on with varying results until 1695, when he accepted proposals of peace. This defection led to the peace of Ryswick in 1697, and in reward he received from Louis the territories then occupied by France. In 1700 he

sided with France against Austria, but, an extension of territory in the Milanese not being granted by Louis, he went over to the enemy in 1703. The generalship of his relative Prince Eugene proved too much for the French, and in 1706 they were defeated before Turin and driven across the frontier. The peace of Utrecht afterwards con- firmed the duke in the possession of the places granted on his joining the coalition, including the long-coveted Mont- ferrato, and endowed him besides with the crown of Sicily. Austrian influenc2s now replaced Spanish in the peninsula, and Charles VI. persuaded him to exchange his kingdom for that of Sardinia. This was accordingly effected in 1720 by the treaty of Madrid, and afterwards proved the very salvation of the house of Savoy. In 1730 the king abdicated in favour of his son, in order to marry the countess of San Sebastian, at whose instigation he after- wards tried to regain the crown, but he died in 1732. CuarLes Emmanvet III. continued his father's intrigues to obtain possession of Milan, and joincd the league of France and Spain against Austria in 1732. But he used the victories of the allied forces over the imperialists in such a half-hearted way that it seemed as if he did not wish to break finally with Austria. In the end he only gained from the treaty, which he signed in 1739, the Novarese and Tortona, instead of Milan. The death of Charles VI. in 1740 gave him the chance of expelling the Austrians from Italy, but, though he at first claimed Milan from Maria Theresa, he ended in 1742 by espousing her cause. The complete defeat of the French in 1747 led to the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, by which Charles Emmanuel received the Upper Novarese and Vigevano, after which he remained at peace until his death in 1773, His son

Vicror AmapEvs III. succeeded him, and devoted the early years of his reign to the improvement of the admin- istration and the reorganization of his army. The time soon came for him to use the weapon he had created, and on the outbreak of the Revolution in France he headed the coalition of Italian princes against her. The house of Savoy thus assumed the headship of Italy, but for the time without much gain, for Napoleon's brilliant victories of 1796 ended in the peace of Paris, by which Savoy, along with Nice, was given to France. Victor Amadeus died shortly afterwards, and was succecded by his son CHartzs EmmanveL IV. The fever of the

Revolution spread to Piedmont, and in 1798 nothing was left to the king but to retire to Sardinia. In 1802 he abdicated in favour of his brother, Vicror EMMaNvEL I., who, in his island kingdom, protected by the English fleet, became the symbol of the coalition against France. The king returned to Turin in 1814, and in the following year took possession again of Savoy. The anti-revolutionary measures which were adopted by the Italian princes on their return caused a spirit of rebellion to spring up among their subjects. The freedom of the individual and the unity of the nation thus came to be considered objects to be attained at one and the same time. The influence of Austria was paramount in the Peninsula, but an insurrection broke out at Turin in 1820 demanding war with her, and, rather than embroil himself both with his people and with Austria, Victor Emmanuel abdicated in favour of his brother, CHartxs Feurx. The general insurrection was suppressed, and for the next few years Italy suffered everything possible at the hands of various petty princes, whose fears and weakness left them no weapon but persecution. In 1831 Charles Felix died without issue, and in him the elder branch of the family ended. He was succeeded by CHARLES ALBERT, of the line of Savoy-Carignano, which was founded by Thomas Francis, son of Charles Emmanuel the Great, and grandfather of Prince Eugene. The first care of Charles Albert was to reorganize his military and naval forces in readiness for the conflict with Austria which he foresaw. At the same time he put down the conspiracies which would have forced his hand, among which the most famous was that of Mazzini and Ramorino in 1834, The French revolution of 1848 fanned the embers of Italian patriotism, and Charles Albert, without any aid, began the War of Independence. Victory at first followed his arms, but he was defeated at last by the Austrians at Custozza. In the next year he was again driven into war with the Austrians, and, after his defeat at Novara, he abdicated in favour of his son, Vicror Emmanvet II. From this point the history of the house of Savoy has been told in the article Iraty (vol. xiii. pp. 489 sg.). (H. B. B.)

SAVOY. For the French departments of Savoy and Upper Savoy see Savore and Savors, Haute.

SAW. See Saws.

SAWANTWARL or SAWUNTWARRIE, a uative state forniing the southern part of the Concan division of the Bombay presidency, India, and lying between 15° 37’ and 16° 16’ N. lat. and between 73° 36’ and 74° 21’ BE. long. It has a total area of about 900 square miles, and is bounded on the north and west by Ratnagiri district, on the east by the Sahyddri Mountains, and on the south by the Portuguese territory of Goa. The general aspect of the country is strikingly picturesque. Its surface is broken and rugged, interspersed with densely-wooded hills ; in the valleys are gardens and groves of cocoa-nut and betel-nut palms. SAwantwéri has no rivers of any considerable size ; the chief streams are the Karli on the north and the Terekhol on the south, both navigable for small craft. The climate is humid and relaxing, with an average annual rainfall of over 130 inches. The forests and wooded

—=——

slopes of the Sahyadris contain large numbers of wild animals, including the tiger, panther, leopard, bear, hyena, &c. Snakes and other reptiles also abound. The state possesses no railway ; but there is an excellent trunk road through the territory.

The census of 1881 returned the population of Sawantwari at 174,433 (males 86,061, females 88,372) ; Hindus numbered 166,080, Mohammedans 3970, aud Christians 4213. Agriculture supports the greater part of the population. The staple product is Tice, but excepting rice none but the coarsest grains and pulses are raised, both soil, which is stony, and climate being against the cultivation of wheat and other superior grains ; oil seeds, hemp, and pepper are also grown. The gross revenue of the state in 1883-84 amounted to about £84,000. Before the establishment of Portuguese power (1510) Sawantwari was the highway of a great traffic; but during the 16th and 17th centuries trade suffered much from the rivalry of the Portuguese, and in the disturbances of the 18th century it almost cntirely disappeared. Since the establishment of order under the British (1819), trade has con- siderably developed. The present chief being a minor, the ad- ministration has been in the hands of the British since 1869.

SAW-FISH. See Ray, vol. xx. p. 299.

SAW-FLIES (Lenthredinidx). This subdivision of the Hymenoptera is characterized by possessing a sessile abdomen which hides the base of the posterior legs. The antenn vary in their structure and in the number of their joints, The ovipositor is modified to form two saws, which when at rest lie ina sheath formed of two valves. The larvee resemble caterpillars, but may be distinguished

Turnip Saw-Fly (Athalia spinarum). Saw-F ly (magnified, with lines to left showing natural size), caterpillars, pupa, and pupa-case.

by their greater number of legs; usually 9 to 11 pairs are present. When alarmed they have the habit of rolling themselves up in a spiral fashion ; some also dis- charge a thin fluid from lateral pores situated above the spiracles. The females place their eggs in small incisions made by means of their saws in the soft parts of leaves. Usually one egg is placed in each slit. Some species merely attach their eggs in strings to the extcrior of the leaves. With each incision a drop of fluid is usually excreted, which serves to excite a flow of sap to the wounded part. The egg is said to absorb this sap, and so to increase in size. One genus (Nematus) alone forms galls. These occur in the young leaves of the willow, a tree which the true gall-flies do not attack. Mematus ventricosus resembles the bees and wasps in the fact that the parthenogenetic ova produce only males; as a rule in the animal kingdom the absence of fertilization results in the production of females.

The injury which the saw-flies inflict upon crops or young trees is almost entirely brought about by the voracious habits of the larve. These possess well devel- oped mouth-appendages, by means of which they gnaw their way out of the leaf in which they have been hatched, and then eat it. In this way the Turnip Saw-Fly (Athalia spinarum), not to be confused with the Turnip Fly (Phyllo- treta nemorum), attacks the leaves of the turnip, often completely consuming the leafage of acres at a time. The Pine Saw-Fly (Lophyrus pint) causes great damage to

plantations of young Scotch firs, devouring the buds, the leaves, and even the bark of the young shoots. Other species infest currant and gooseberry bushes, consuming the soft parts of the leaves, and leaving only the tough veins. The only effectual remedy in most cases is to col- lect and kill the larvze when they first appear. Syringing the affected parts with hot water or tobacco water is also recommended.

SAWS. Blades of steel with serrated edges have been used from time immemorial to rend or divide substances of various kinds, including metals and stone; but the principal modern use of the saw is tu, divide wood. Modern saws are of the finest steel, but the ancients used bronze saws, and among uncivilized nations saws have been made with flakes of flint imbedded in a wooden blade, and held in place by means of bitumen (see Grimshaw, History, &c., of Saws), while obsidian has been used by the Mexicans, and shark's teeth and even notched shelis form the saws of certain savage islanders. The pyramid-builders in Egypt cut granite and other hard stones by means of bronze saws set with jewels (see vol. xx. p. 124).

Space would fail to describe minutely the various adaptations of the saw to mechanical uses. It is indispens- able to the carpenter, the furniture-manufacturer, the watch- maker, and manipulator of metals. It is one of the most trustworthy tools of the surgeon's case, while without it the dentist would of necessity drop back to the barbarous customs of a past century. Iron, horn, pearl, india-rubber,

'and the thousand and one conveniences of civilized life are

dependent upon this useful instrument, which is but an exaggeration after all of the sharpest of knives, whose edge when examined under the microscope exhibits an array of saw teeth so minute as to present a smooth plane to the unassisted eye. As the chief use of the tool is to saw wood, the enormous timber industry of America has given an impetus to the improvement of the saw and its manufacture, which has no parallel elsewhere.

Saws may be classified as (1) straight (reciprocating in action), having a flat blade and straight edge, making a plane cut, or (2) circular or disk-like,

cutting at right angles to the motion, or (3) cylindrical or barrel-shaped, with a convex edge cutting parallel to its axis, or (4) band-saws, being a continuous ribbon or band running upon an upper and lower pulley, making a plane or curved cut, with a straight edge parallel to the axis of motion. The oldest and commonest, with the widest range of adaptability, is the straight saw, with reciprocating rectilinear blade. In this class is included the ordinary hand-saw with its varying range of uses from fine to coarse and from rip to cross-cut, and with teeth of forms as various as are the different duties which it is calculated to perform. ‘The teeth are long or short, cutting one way or both ways according to the “ pitch ” or ‘‘ set ” which may be given, and which should be adapted to both the kind and character of the timber to be sawn. The “pitch” of a saw-tooth is the angle of the point with reference to the blade, and is found by sub- tracting the back angle from the front, 60° being the generic angle of saw-teeth, which, however, may be variously placed. From the smallest hand-saw to the largest “ mill-saw” the same general rules apply. In the largest saws of this class may be named the “pit-saw,” used in the earliest manufactures of lumber or timber, and worked by one person standing over the log and drawing upward while another in the pit below follows with the downward or cutting thrust. From the pit-saw we advance to the ‘‘ gate-saw ” used in the earlicr adaptation of motive power to the cutting of timber, thence to the ‘‘muley-saw,”! suspended without strain upon a pitman beneath, having its upper end hung in slides pendent from a heavy beam above. These saws must of necessity be thick, to sustain the heavy thrusts which they are expected to endure, and are consequently of ‘‘ heavy gauge,” this being based upon the different sizes of wire, the largest gauge representing the

1 According to some writers the term “muley” (or mulay) is de- rived from the German ‘‘Miihlsige,” mill-saw, but, as this form of saw, when introduced, differed only from the ordinary mill-saws long in use in the manner in which it was hung (free from strain), the name may have been given to signify ‘‘hornless,” indicating the absence of the ponderous gate which was the essential feature of strained saws.

thinner blade ; ¢.g., a 4-gauge saw is much thicker than an 8-gauge, &c. From the necessity for more rapid production grew the "‘ gang- saw," a modification of the gate, differing from it only in length and thickness (less than one-third the thickness of the ordinary gate-saw and but about two-thirds its length). A large number of these, varying from 2 to 40, are strained in a gate or frame, at sueh distances apart as the thickness of lumber demands, and the log is wholly made into boards in one operation. Of the recipro- cating class of saws is the ‘‘ eross-cut," used for eutting across the grain of the timber or wood to be converted into shorter lengths. The length, breadth, "‘piteh," and ‘‘set" of saws vary according to the use which is to be made of them and the kind of timber which is to be manipnlated. _ In a cross-cut saw the eutting edge strikes the fibre at right angles to its length, and while its pitch 1s but slight (if any) it must sever from each side before dislodging the sawdust. ‘‘A slitting or ripping saw has the cutting edge about at aright angle to the fibre of the wood, severing it in one piece,—the throat of the tooth wedging out the piece." In slitting saws the ‘‘rake" is all in front, in the cross-cut on the side.

The circular saw is of comparatively recent origin, its introduc- tion dating from 1790, when Brunel first announecd the principle. At first only circular saws of small diameter were used ; but, from the small "‘ buzz-saw" of the watchmaker and fine metal worker, or the ripping saw of the planing-niill or carpenter shop, where small diameters have to be divided, the circular saw has passed to the saw-mill, where, in diameters of from 12 to 30 inches, it is the needful instrument for edging or ripping the lumber which drops from the log in an imperfect condition, requiring finer manipulation to prepare it for market; or in diameters of from 40 to 84 inches it may be found as the main saw ofthe mill for rending the logs as they come from the forest into shapes and sizes adapted for the various purposes of the builder. It is capable of dividing logs into boards one inch thick or upwards at as high a rate as 60,000 superficial feet in a day of twelve hours, while a straight (muley or gate) saw would give only 5000 to 8000 feet. In the chief lumber sections of the United States saws of 60

inches diameter are in most eommon use ; upon the Pacific eoast

saws of 8 feet diameter arc not unknown, Attempts to work large circular saws in nests or gangs have not hitherto proved successful, but three, four, or five saws of 30 inches diameter hung on a single shaft or “arbor” may be used to trim and divide the boards or planks thrown off from a log.

Barrel saws, for the manufacture of staves for barrels, pails, or tubs, are in tlie form of a straight-sided barrel with both heads removed, and the stave ends of one head serrated.

For the manufacture of veneers, where valuable timber is to be economically manipulated, we have the segment-saw, constructed by bolting segments of saw-blades upon the outer rim of a east- iron centre, forming a eircular saw of the desired diameter, but with a cutting edge of so light a gauge as to waste but little of the valuable timber to be sawed, the cast-iron centre insuring the requisite stiffness and strength. With these saws veneers searcely thicker than a sheet of paper may be cut, the width being accord- ing to the size of the log; such saws are often from 80 to 100 inches in diameter.

Circular saws of the larger size are often eonstrnucted with ‘inserted ” teeth. A disk of stcel of suitable size, having slots cut in its periphery of the exact size and shape of the tooth which is to be inserted, may have these tceth removed as often as the wear upon them may require, without reducing the diameter of the plate. The teeth of lumber saws have to be sharpened with the file at least three or four times in twelve hours’ work, and a saw of five feet in diameter is rapidly reduced in size with a great loss of efficiency. In the insert tooth plate new teeth cost only about three eents (14d.) each, and the saw plate remains of its original diameter. Inserted teeth are of varions forms and shapes, from that of the ordinary saw tooth, held in place by a rivet at the root of the tooth, to a “ehisel point” held by an ingenious system of wedging.

Band-saws have for many years been used for continuous and rapid cutting in the planing mill or other wood-working estab- lishment, where serolls or fancy lines and eurves were to be followed, requiring great flexibility of the saw-blade. Of late, and notakly within the past two years (1884-85), successful endeavours have been made to adapt them to lumber manufacture. The band-saw is a continuous blade or ribbon running over

pulleys above and below, forming a ‘stecl belt” whose serrated edge is always “in the cut.” These saws are usually from a half inch in width (for shop work) to six and eight inches wide for the heavier work of the saw-inill, and in the latter have a eutting capacity of from 30,000 to 40,000 superficial feet in twelve hours. They are extremely thin (usually 16-gauge), and the kerf produced is so much less than that of the upright or the cirenlar that a saving of at least 20 per cent. of timber is claimed in their use.

Saws used by surgeons, butchers, and in all branches of manu- facture are but modifications of one of the varieties above described and do not demand more extended description.

Ws

Saw-Mills are factories for tlie conversion of forest trees Saw- The earliest form of saw-mil] mills.

into lumber and timber. was unquestionably the saw-pit, still found in a modified form in shipbuilders’ yards, the log being raised on trestle horses instead of one of the sawyers being sunk in the pit. Saws were run by windmill-power as early as the 13th century ; and the use of water-power soon followed. The primitive water saw-mill consisted of a wooden pitman attached to the shaft of the water-wheel, the log to be sawed being placed on rollers sustained by a framework over the wheel, and being fed forward on the rollers by means of levers worked by hand. Good authorities mention saw-mills running by water-power in Germany as early as 1322. In 1663 an attempt to establish a mill in England was abandoned owing to the opposition of the sawyers, and no further attempt was made till 1768, when a mill was erected at Limehouse, but was soon destroyed by a mob. North America, with its vast forests, may be aptly termed the home of saw-mills. As early as 1634 a saw-mill was erected at the falls of the Piscataqua, near the line divid- ing Maine from New Hampshire. This was no doubt the pioneer of the vast array of mills which subsequently made Maine famous as a lumber-producing State for many years. from about the same date several mills were erected along the Atlantic coast of America, a description of one being that of all. In these mills the saw was attached by a long pitman from the wheel shaft to a ponderous gate, running in woodeu slides upon two heavy posts, crossed above by a beam connecting the two

sides of the mill-frame. The mill-carriage on which the log lay was pushed towards the saw by a rack and pinion, &c., moved by a feed-wheel. The daily capacity of these mills was from 500 to 1500 superficial feet. The first great improvement upon this class of mills was in the introduc- tion of two or more saws to the gate, the general character of the methods remaining the same. With the demand for more rapid production came improvements in the “gang” feature, and the wonder of the age was the “Yankee gang,” so arranged, by placing half the saws facing in one direction and the other half in the opposite, that two logs were worked up in one movement of the carriage, or, aS in the “slabbing” gang, the outsides or slabs were cut from one log, which was then turned upon its flattened sides to the other set of saws which cut it into boards. The “stock” gang, “pony” gang, “slab- bing” gang, and “Yankee” gang are favourites with saw-mill proprietors, because of the uniform character of the lumber produced, and the saving of timber realized from the use of saws of scarcely one-third the thickness of the gate, muley, or circular.

Gang-saws are seldom thicker than 14-gauge, and are success- fully worked at 18-gange, making a saw-kerf or waste of but 3 inch, whereas the ordinary gate, muley, or circular takes y%y inch, The niuley was introduced later than the gang, and was received with great favour, entering into more general use be- cause of its comparative cheapness and adaptability where the sawyer had not to deal with large qnantities of lumber. The muley mill dispensed with the ponderous gate and heavy posts of the saw-frame. While the lower portion of the mill is arranged much as in the use of the gate-saw, with the addition of necessary slides, the upper end of the saw is guided in a strong iron frame pendent from the weigh-beam overhead. On each side of this frame are slides in which are placed boxes, attached by a noddle pin and strap to the upper end of the saw, keeping the tool in line with the cut, and the cutting is accomplished wholly by the downward thrust, the motion of the crank beneath imparting a forward motion to the blade in its cutting functions and a retreating motion as it rises from the cut. By an ingenious arrangement of the slides an increased oscillation may be imparted, the object being to cause the saw- teeth to hug the timber closer on tle downward or eutting thrust, and to recede and run clear of the timber on the upward motion, thus decreasing the friction. Muley-saws are usually run at

a speed of 300 revolutions of the driving wheel per minute, and the daily eapacity may be stated at about 5000 superficial feet.

SAWS

Water-powcr was used almost exclusively in saw-mills until 1835, after which year steam was rapidly substituted, until at the present time it is as difficult to find a water-power saw-mill as it is to find a gate or muley.

The use of the circular as the main saw of a mill is of compara- tively recent origin, the experimental point in its introduction having been passed only about the year 1855. Since that time it has rapidly reached the highest efficiency. Driven by engines of from 25 to 100 horse-power the circular saw-mill, under proper management, turns out from 20,000 feet per day for smaller to 50,000 and 60,000 feet per day for larger mills, in addition to running the double-edgers and trimming saws, requisite for trimming off the rough edges and bad ends of the lumber produced.

The modern saw-mill stands upon the banks of a river or pond, at an elevation usually of twelve feet from the level of the land to the saw-floor. The logs are floated from the forest (often many hundred miles distant from the mill) down the river, in lengths as desired. Piling driven at convenient distances in the water serves to hold the long pieces of timber, which, secured to the piles by heavy chains, form a strong ‘‘boom,” floating into which the logs are penned or ‘‘ boomed ” until required. From the rear end of the mill, at the second story or saw-floor, a ‘jack ladder ” is constructed of heavy timber, the lower ends resting in the bottom of the stream upon a bed of timber heavily weighted. Upon the sides of the jack ladder are laid ribbons of iron forming a track for the log car, which, strongly constructed and with its top cross sections or ‘‘ bunks” heavily studded with j-headed bolts, is run under the water at a depth to allow the log to float over it in such manner that, as the chain running to the ‘ bull-wheel * in the mill is wound up, the spikes of the car catch upon the under-side of the log or logs, whieh thus load themselves and are hauled up the incline to the mill floor. Here they are rolled upon skids leading to the saw-carriage, and are soon running rapidly their course of manufacture. Loaded upon the “ head-blocks,” by a quick motion of a lever upon the standard, the “setter” inserts an iron ‘‘ dog,” which holds the log firmly in place ready for advancing to

the saw. This is accomplished by one of several methods :—(1) by rack and pinion worked by ‘‘cone feed,” in which a belt is moved upon two parallel cones to impart a more rapid or a slower motion to the pinion shaft ; (2) by ‘‘rope feed,”

a rope, usually of wire, being attached to each end of the mill –

carriage, and passing over pulleys in the floor to a drum bencath, so arranged as to be under control of the sawyer in its feeding movement or in reversal to ‘‘ gig” the earriage back to its first position ; or (3) by “steam feed.” This is the more modern and rapid means employed, and is sometimes termed ‘‘ lightning feed.” A steam cylinder of 8 or 10 inches diameter is laid upon the floor of the mill beneath the saw-carriage, its piston connecting with the carriage. Steam being admitted to the driving end of the cylindcr

(the length of which is according to the length of timber to be,

sawed, sections being added or removed at pleasure) the saw carriage is driven with lightning speed, both in the cutting feed and reversing “gig.” ‘Thirty ordinary cuts per minute, on 12 inches feed to the revolution of the saw, may be attained with this adaptation. As the limit of capacity for work with a circular saw is practically the ability of the operators to remove the lumber, 60,000 to 70,000 feet per day is no unusual cut, while a rate of 100,000 fect per day has been maintained (for a short period) by a single circular. The lumber as it drops from the saw falls upon ‘‘ live rolls,” a series of iron or wooden rollers connected by chain belts, which carry it within reach of the “edger,” who rapidly passes that portion which requires “ edging ” or splitting through the ‘‘double-edger,” to a carriage or truck on which it is pushed to the piling ground, or, in some mills, to another series of live rolls which take it to the front of the ‘‘trimmer,” an ingenious arrangement of table, beneath which are several saws which advance or recede at the operator’s pleasure, cutting the lumber to even and uniform lengths, or, trimming off such defects as may exist in the end of the piece. Ordinary lengths are 12, 14, 16, and 18 feet, and by use of the trimmer all superfluous ends are removed, leaving each piece of uniform length with its fellows. The waste of the log, consisting of the “slabs” and edgings, are carefully gone over, and such as are suitable for that purpose go to the ‘‘ lath” machines, where they are cut into strips four feet in length, 3 inch thick, and 14 inches wide, for lath and plaster work. In the sawing of logs, imperfce- tions are often discovered in the timber, unfitting it for ordinary uses, and in many mills it is customary to saw such timber into ‘Ceants” of usually six inches thickness. These cants are turned over to a ‘‘butting saw,” where they are cut into lengths of 16 inches (in some localities 18 inches) and turned over to the shingle mill to be manufactured into shingles. Shingles are tapering pieces 8 inch thick at one end, and yy inch at the other, and are used as a roof covering in lieu of slating or tiles. They are laid in uniform courses, with 44 to 5 inches of the butt end laid to the weather, and are good for from 20 to 80 years’ wear upon a roof. An

adjunct to the circular saw is often found in a top or upper saw, overhanging the main’ circular a little in advance of its track, for the purpose of enabling

larger logs to be handled than the diameter of an ordinary circular will permit. The upper saw cuts into the top of the log in a line with the cut of the lower or main saw, thus increasing the depth of the cut. In California, where logs of 8 and 10 feet diameter are not unusual (larger logs being quartered by the use of gunpowder or other explosive, timber as mucli as 20 and even 25 feet in diameter being found in the redwood forests), an ingenious arrangement of four saws placed one higher than the other, some horizontal and others vertical, permits the handling of huge trees which until recently were not considered available. A thoroughly modern saw-mill embraces all which has been said regarding the circular, with the addition of the ‘‘gang” feature, for, while a majority of the saw-mills of North America are single “circulars,” many of them have a rotary upon each side of the mill floor, the log-jack being in the centre of the building rolling its logs either to the right hand or the left. The larger mills have in addition to the rotaries from one to four gangs. In these cases the log usually goes first to the circular, where the slabs of two sides are removed, leaving a flat cant, which is then transferred to the gangs. These mills are fully equipped with all the modern patent improvements. The logs are drawn from the water by an endless chain running in a Y-shaped log slide, the chains being provided either with spikes or concave chairs which hold the log from slipping back. One log follows the other in endless succession. On its arrival at the log deck on the mill floor, the manipulation of a lever causes an arm or arms to rise through the floor against the side of the log, which is partially raised and thrown with considerable force upon the skids leading to the saw carriage. When one log has been sawed, another is loaded by the simple touch of a lever in the hands of the sawyer, causiug arms to rise in the skids under the log, which is thrown upon the carriage ready for thesaw. When the first slab has been removed, the sawyer’s touch of a lever brings through the floor the ‘‘ nigger,” a piece of strong timber, iron-bound and with sharp teeth or spikes protruding from its front face. Its motion tends slightly forward as it advances to a height of five or six feet above the floor, its spiked surface catching the side or face of the log, turning it instantly to any desired position. If the log is simply to be “canted” for the gang the two opposite sides or slabs are removed, and as the last cut is complete a hook thrown over the rear end of the cant prevents its return with the saw carriage and it drops upon rolls which move it so far out of the way of the returning carriage with its fresh load as is necessary to start it in an opposite

direction to the gang which is to complete its manu- facture. Until now, and until it shall emerge from the gang, no hand of man has necessarily touched the log. Machinery guided by human intelligence has done all the work. When the log reached the carriage it was dogged, not with the old-fashioned lever dog driven by a mallet, but by the simple movement of a lever. It was brought to its proper position before the saw by nicely adjusted set works, which graduated its position to one- eighth of an inch. After the slab was removed, if another cut was required the same set works moved it forward with lightning quickness, leaving it at the exact point, toa nicety, requisite for the production of just the thickness desired for the next piece. From the water to the pile in the millyard hands have necessarily been employed in actual handling of the product only at the edger and the trimmer, and in assorting the qnalities upon the tram-car which removes it from the mill. Machinery, guided by human intclligence, has done all the heavy work. A mill answering closely to our description was recently burned at Bay City, Michigan, the yearly production of which for several. years past has been 40,000,000 fect of lumber, besides shingles, lath, pickets, &c., cut from the slabs and waste. The total production of the saw-

‘mills of the United States approximates 26,000,000,000 feet

annually.

The “band” saw-mill is rapidly working its way into public favour because of the economy attending its use. The band saw is a long ribbon of steel, six to eight inches in width, running over large pulleys above and below, the upper pulley running almost vertically above the lower, the saw acting as a belt between the two and as the driving power to the upper wheel. These saws are very thin and have a manufacturing capacity of from 80,000 to 40,000 feet per day, with the consumption of 25 to 40 per cent. less power than is required for the ordinary circular saw of the same daily capacity for work. The main advantage found in the use of the band-saw is in the saving of timber (20 per cent.). The set works do not differ from those of rotary mills, and either cone, rope, or steam feed may be used in connexion with it.

A useful adjunct to the many saw-mills, which produce more waste than can be consumed in raising the necessary steam, is the “slab-burner” or

‘‘hell,” a large circular brick furnace often 50 feet in height by 25 feet internal diameter, erected conveniently near the saw-mill, into which by chain carriers leading to an opening at a sufficient height from the bottom, the sawdust,

cdgings, worthless slabs, and debris of the mill are conveyed, to be

destroyed by fire. ; ; ; ; Shingle Mélls.—A standard shingle is four inches wide, and all

computations of quantity are based upon that width, although the individual shingle may be six or eight inches wide oras much as 18 inches, in the latter case counting 44 shingles. A shingle mill differs from a saw-mill in the adaptations of machinery. Saws of 16-gauge, 40 inches in diameter, are most commonly employed. In cases where shingle manufacture is carried on in connexion with the saw-mill, the process of preparing the blocks has already been described. A majority of the shingles manufactured, however, are made in mills built for the special purpose. Logs suitable, usually of a medium quality, are placed before a “bolting” or “drag” saw, which severs them into the required length. The block is then stripped of its bark and sap by splitting off a section of the outer circumference to the heart wood, with axes; it is next quartered, and the inside section of heart, which is never sound, removed; and then it goes to the machine for manufacture. The machines are sometimes horizontal, sometimes vertical, but all work upon the same principle, viz., that of a tilting table, allowing a thick butt anda thin point to be alternately taken. The shingles as they drop from the saw are rough-edged, and require to be ‘*jointed,’”’ generally upon a rapidly revolving wheel, upon the face of which are secured four well-balanced knives, which, as the shingle is pressed against them, eat away the imperfect edge with great rapidity, leaving a straight smooth edge, which when laid upon a roof makes a good joint with its fellows. The edging or jointing process is often performed with small saws in place of the wheel-

jointer. The shingles are usually packed in bunches con- taining the equivalent of one quarter thousand 4-inch pieces, and are more used for roof coveriug than any other material in the United States or Canada. (Ge Wore) SAXE, Maurice, Comte pE (1696-1750), marshal of Franee, was the natural son of Augustus IL. of Saxony and the countess Aurora of Kénigsmark. An entry in the parish registers of Goslar shows that he was born in that town, 28th October 1696. In 1698 the countess sent him to Warsaw to his father, who had been elected king of Poland the previous year, but on aeeount of the unsettled condition of the country the greater part of his youth was spent outside its limits, a yearly ineome being assigned him, This enforced separation from his father made liim more independent of his eontrol than he would otherwise have been, and had an important effect on the character of his future career. At the age of twelve he was present, under the direction of the count of Schulen- burg, in the army of Eugene, at the sieges of Tournay and Mons and tle battle of Malplaquet, but the achievements ascribed to him in this campaign are chiefly fabulous. A proposal to send him at the close of it to a Jesuit college at Brussels was relinquished on aceount of the strong protests of his mother; and, returning to the camp of the allies in the beginning of 1710, he displayed a eourage so impetuous as to call forth from Eugene the friendly admonition not to confound rashness with valour. After receiving in 1711 formal recognition from his father, with the rank of count, he accompanied him to Pomerania, and in 1712 he took part in the siege of Stralsund. As he grew up to manhood he was seen to bear a strong resem- blance to his father, both in person and character. His grasp was so powerful that he could bend a horse-shoe with his hand, and to the last his energy and enduranee were unsubdued by the severe bodily illnesses resulting from his many excesses. The impetuosity noted by Eugene manifested itsclf in his private life in a dissolute- ness only slightly tempered by his generosity and good humour. In his military carecr during his mature years it was indicated only in his blindness to danger and his unmoved calm amidst the blackest lowerings of misfor- tune, for it was tempered by the “vigilance, forethought, Sagacious precaution” which Carlyle notes as ‘singular in so dissolute a man.” In 1714 a marriage was arranged between him and one of the richest of his father’s subjects, the Countess von Loeben, but her immense fortune he dissipated so rapidly that he was soon heavily in debt, and, having given her more serious grounds of complaint

against him, he consented without defenee to an annul- ment of the marriage in 1721. Meantime, after serving in a eampaign against the Turks in 1717, he had in 1719 gone to Paris to study mathematics, and in 1720 obtained the office of “maréchal de camp.” In 1725 negotiations were entered into for his election as duke of Courland, at the instance of the duchcss Anna Ivanovna, who offered him her hand. He was chosen duke in 1726, but declin- ing marriage with the duchess found it impossible to resist her opposition to his claims, although, with the assistance of £30,000 lent him by the French aetress Adrienne Lecouvreur, lis relations with whom form the subject of the drama of that name by Seribe and Legouvé, published in 1849, he raised a force by which he maintained his authority till 1727, when he withdrew and took up his residence in Paris. On the outbreak of the war in 1734 he served under Marshal Berwick, and for a brilliant exploit at the siege at Philippsburg he was in August named lieutenant-general. It was, how- ever, with the opening of the Austrian Succession War in 1741 that he first rose into prominence. In eommand of a division forming the advance guard of an army sent to invade Austria, he on the 19th November surpriscd Prague during the night, and took it by assault before the garrison were aware of the presence of an enemy, a coup de main which at onee made him famous throughout Europe. After capturing on the 19th April 1742 the strong fortress of Eger, he received leave of absence, and went to Russia to push his claims on the duchy of Cour- land, but obtaining no sueeess returned to lis eommand. His exploits had been the sole redeeming feature in an unsuccessful campaign, and on 26th March 1743 his merits were reeognized by lus promotion to be marshal of Franee. In 1744 he was chosen to command the expedition to England in behalf of the Pretender, which assembled at Dunkirk but did not proceed farther. After its abortive issue le reeeived an independent eommand in the Netherlands, and by dexterous manceuvring succeeded in continually harassing the superior forces of the enemy without risking a decisive battle. In the following year he made a rapid march on Tournay, and, when the allies sent an army of 60,000 under the duke of Cumberland to its relief, gave them battle 11th May, without relaxing the siege, from a strongly entrenched position at Fonte- noy. The contest raged from early morning till two o’clock, when, by a eharge at a eritical moment which annihilated a

column of the enemy, fortune was decided in his favour. During the battle he was unable on account of dropsy to sit on horseback exeept for a few minutes, and was carried about in a wicker basket. In recognition of his brilliant achievement the king conferred on him the castle of Chamford for life, and in April 1746 he was naturalized. The eampaign of 1746 was signalized by the eapture of Antwerp on the Ist June, the eapture of Namur in September, and the total rout of Prinee Charles at Rauconx 11th October. Having on the 12th January 1747 been made marshal-general, he in the following campaign won the victory of Lawfeldt over the duke of Cuniberland, and on 16th September he stormed Bergen-op- zoom. In May 1748 he captured Maestrielit after a month's siege. After the peace, he lived in broken health chiefly at Chamford, and he died there 30th November 1750.

Maurice de Saxe was the author of a work on military science, Mes Réveries, described by Carlyle as ''a strange military farrago, dictated, as I should think, under opium," published posthumously in 1757 (last ed., Paris, 1877). His Lettres e¢ Mémoires Choisis appeared in 1794. Many previous crrors in former biographies were corrected and additional information supplicd in Carl von Weber's Moritz, Graf von Sachsen, Marschall von Frankreich, nach archivalischen Quellen (Leipsic, 1863), and in Taillandier's Maurice de Saxe, étude historique @ apres les doewments des Archives de Dresde (1865). Sce also Carlyle's Frederick the Great,

See

SA X—SAX

SAXE-ALTENBURG (Germ. Sachsen-Altenburg), a

Plate V. duchy in Thuringia, and an independent member of the

German empire, consists of two detached and almost equal parts, separated from each other by a portion of Reuss (junior line), and bounded on the 8. and W. by the grand- duchy of Saxe-Weimar-Hisenach, on the N. by Prussia, and on the E. by the kingdom of Saxony. There are in addi- tion 12 small exclaves. The total area is 510 square miles (about half the size of Cheshire in England), of which 254 are in the east or Altenburg division

and 256 in the west or Saal-Hisenberg division. The former district, traversed by the most westerly offshoots of the Erzgebirge and watered by the Pleisse and its tributaries, forms an undu- lating and fertile region, containing some of the richest agricultural soil in Germany. The western district, through which the Saale flows, is rendered hilly by the beginnings of the Thuringian Forest, and in some measure makes up by its fine woods for the comparatively poor soil. The mineral wealth of Saxe-Altenburg is scanty; lignite, the chief mineral, is worked mainly in the eastern district.

According to the returns for 1883, 584 per cent. of the entire duchy was occupied by arable land, and 274 per cent. by forests, of which four-fifths were coniferous. The chief crops were rye (42,317 acres, yiclding 20,412 tons), oats (36,807 acres, 22,996 tons), barley (21,390 acres, 18,912 tons), wheat (17,490 acres, 9724 tons), and potatoes (19,870 acres, 113,209 tons). The cattle- raising and horse-breeding of the duchy are of considerable import- ance. In 1883 the duchy contained 9934 horses, 60,335 cattle, 20,996 sheep, 46,387 pigs, and 12,420 goats. About 35 per cent. of the population are directly supported by agriculture. The manufactures of the duchy are very varied, but none is of any great importance ; woollen goods, gloves, hats, porcelain and carthen- ware, and wooden articles are the chief products. ‘Trade in these, and in horses, cattle, and agricultural produce, is tolerably brisk. The chief scats of trade and manufacture are Altenburg the capital (29,422 inhabitants in 1885), Ronneburg (5485 inhabitants in 1880), Schmélln (6394), Géssnitz (4949), and Meuselwitz (3402) in the Altenburg division; and Eisenburg (6277), Roda (3465), and Kabila (2999) in the Saal-Eisenburg division. Besides these there are the towns of Lucka (1505) and Orlamiinde (1461), and 449 villages, of which Russdorf (1781), in an exclave, is the largest.

Next to the two principalities of Reuss, Saxc-Altenburg is the most densely peopled part of Thuringia. In 1880 the population was 155,036, or 304 per square mile. Of these 154,187 were Protestants, 741 Roman Catholics, 33 Jews, and 75 of other sects. The population in 1885, according to a provisional return of the census of that year, was 161,129. In the west division the popu- lation (49,788) is wholly Teutonic, but in the east (111,341) there is a strong Wendish or Slavonic element, still to be traced in the peculiar manners and costume of the country-people, though these are

gradually being givenup. The farmers and peasant-proprictors of the cast division (Altenburger Bauern) are an industrious and well-to-do class, but like similar classes in other countries they are said to be avaricious and purse-proud. Their holdings are seldom divided ; a custom corresponding to BorovuGH-ENGLisH (q.v.), though not supported by law, obtains among them ; and sometimes the elder brothers are employed by the youngest as servants on the paternal farm. The destitution to which the disinherited children are often reduced by this custom is seriously prejudicial to morality. The Altenburg peasants are pleasure-loving, and in spite of their avarice are said to gamble for very high stakes, especially at the complicated card-game of “skat,” now universal in Germany, which many believe to have been invented here.

Saxe-Altenburg is a limited hereditary monarchy, its constitu- tion resting on a law of 1831, subsequently modified. The diet consists of 30 members, elected for 3 years, of whom 9 are returned by the highest taxpayers, 9 by the towns, and 12 by the country districts. The franchise is enjoyed by all males over 25 years of age who pay taxes. The duke has considerable powers of initiative and veto. The government is carried on by a ministry of three members, of whom two administer justice and finance respectively, aud the third all the other departments of home and foreign affairs. The budget for 1884-86 estimated the yearly income at £127,180 and the yearly expenditure at £125,530. The Altenburg troops are united with the contingents of Schwarzburg, Rudolstadt, and the two Reusses to form the 7th Thuringian infantry regiment of the imperial army. Saxe-Altenburg has onc vote in the Reichstag and one in the federal council.

After the conquest of the Wends, the present Altenburg district became an imperial possession, lying partly in the Pleissengau and

partly in the Voigtland, while the west district was divided among ~

a number of small nobles. The margrave of Saxony obtained permanent possession of Altenburg about 1329, and the west division was also early incorporated with his dominions. Both districts were among the lands assigned to the Ernestine line of the house of Saxony by the convention of

Wittenberg in 1547 (see SAxoNY). From 1603 till 1672 there existed an independent duchy of Altenburg; but in 1826, when the present division into the four Saxon duchies was made, both Altenburg and Lisen- burg belonged to Gotha. Duke Frederick, who exchanged Saxe- Hildburghausen for the present duchy of Saxe-Altenburg in 1826, was the founder of the reigning line. A constitution was granted in 1831 in answer to popular commotion ; and greater concessions were extorted by more threatening disturbances in 1848. The second duke (Joseph) abdicated in 1848 in favour of his brother George. Under Ernest, who succeeded his father as fourth duke in 1853, a period of violent reaction set in, so that even now the constitution is considerably less liberal than it was in 1849. In 1873 the long-disputed question as to the public domains was settled, two-thirds of these being now regarded as belonging to the duke in fidetconmisswm and in lieu of a civil list.

SAXE-COBURG-GOTHA (Germ.

of the German empire, consists of the two formerly separate duchies of Coburg and Gotha, which lie at a distance of 14 miles from each other, and of eight small scattered exclaves, the most northerly of which is 70 miles from the most southerly. The total area is 760 square miles (about 2 square miles more than the county of Surrey in England), of which 217 are in Coburg and 543 in Gotha, The duchy of Coburg is bounded on the S.E., S., and §.W. by Bavaria, and on the other sides by Saxe- Meiningen, which, with part of Prussia, separates it from Gotha. The considerable exclave of Konigsberg in Bavaria, 10 miles south, belongs to Coburg. Lying on the south slope of the Thuringian Forest, and in the Franconian plain, this duchy is an undulating and fertile district, reaching its highest point in the Senichshéhe (1716 feet) near Mirsdorf. Its streams, the chief of which are the Itz, Steinach, and Rodach, all find their way into the Main. The duchy of Gotha, more than twice the size of Coburg, stretches from the south borders of Prussia along the northern slopes of the Thuringian Forest, the highest summits of which (Grosse Beerberg, 3225 feet ; Schneekopf, 3179 feet; Inselberg, 2957 feet) rise within its borders. The more open and level district on the north is spoken of as the ‘‘open country” (“das Land”) in contrast to the wooded hills of the ‘“ forest” (“der Wald”). The Gera,

Hérsel, Unstrut, and other streams of this duchy flow to the Werra or to the Saale.

In both duchies the chief industry is agriculture, whicli employs 38 per cent. of the entire population. According to the returns for 1883, 584 per cent. of the area was occupied by arable land, 10 per cent. by meadow-land and pasture, and 30 per cent. by forest. In the same year the chief crops were oats (43,715 acres, yielding 19,229 tons), barley (37,387 acres, 20,148 tons), rye (29,077 acres, 12,048 tons),' wheat (24,255 acres, 9,272 tons), and potatoes (24,546 acres, 116,695 tons). A small qnantity of hemp and flax is raised (less than 1000 acres of cach), but a considerable quantity of fruit and vegetables is annually produced. Cattle-breeding is an im- portant resource, especially in the valley of the Itz in Coburg. In 1883 the two duchies contained 8187 horses, 58,196 cattle, 73,249 sheep, 51,549 pigs, and 27,015 goats. The mineral wealth of Saxe- Coburg-Gotha is insignificant ; small quantities of coal, lignite, ironstone, millstone, &c., are annually raised. There are also salt- works and some deposits of potter's clay.

The manufactures of the duchies, especially in the mountainous parts less favourable for agriculture, are tolerably brisk, but there is no large industrial centre in the country. Iron goods and machinery, safes, glass, earthenware, chemicals, and wooden articles, including large quantities of toys, are produced; and – various branches of textile industry are carried on. Ruhla (two- fifths of which is situated in Saxe-Weimar-Lisenach) is famous for its meerschaum pipes and cigar-holders, which are exported to all parts of the world; and the maps of Perthes's geographical institute at Gotha mayalso be reckoned among the national products. Coburg (15,791 inhabitants in 1881) and Gotha (28,100 in 1885) are the chief towns of the duchies, to which they respectively give name; the latter is the capital of the united duchy. There are seven other small towns, and 820 villages and hamlets. The villages of Fried-

Sachsen-Koburg- See Gotha), a duchy in Thuringia, and an independent member Plate V.

See Plate V.

riehroda and Ruhla and the Inselberg and Schneckopf and other picturesque points annually attraet an increasing number of sum- mer visitors and tourists. Neudietendorf or Gnadenthal is a Moravian settlement founded in 1742.

The population in 1880 was 194,716, or 256 per square mile, of whom 56,728 (261 per square mile) were in Coburg and 137,988 (254 per square mile) in Gotha. In the former duchy the people be- long to the Franconian and in the latter to the Thuringian branch of the Teutonic family. In 1880 there were 192,025 Lutherans, 2062 Roman Catholics, 490 Jews, and 139 others. In 1885 the population was 198,717,—-57,355 in Coburg and 141,362 in Gotha.

Saxe-Coburg-Gotha is a limited hereditary monarchy, its con- stitution resting on a law of 1852, modified in 1874. For its own immediate affairs each duchy has a separate diet (in Coburg of 11, in Gotha of 19 members); but in more important and general matters a common dict, formed of the members of the separate diets, meeting at Coburg and Gotha alternately, exercises authority. The members are elected for four years; the franchise is extended to all male taxpayers of twenty-five years of age and upwards. The ministry has special departments for each duchy, but is under a common president. In finance the duchies are also separate, the budget in Coburg being voted fora term of six years, and in Gotha for four years. After long disputes between the duke and the Government a compromise was effected in 1855, by which the greater part of the public lands is regarded as a fideicommisswm in the possession of the reigning duke, while the income from the rest is regarded as statc-revenue. There are thus two budgets for each duchy. The annual income of the public lands in Coburg is estimated for the period 1886-92 at £20,700, and the expenditure at £11,900 ; in Gotha (period 1886-90) the same source is estimated to yield £102,621 and to cost £61,996 ;—together producing a surplus of £49,425, of which the duke receives £29,700 and the state-treasury £19,725. The annual state-revenue in the samc periods was estimated for Coburg at £51,520, or £2246 more than the estimated expenditure, and in Gotha at £106,020, or £2244 nore than the cxpenditure. Saxe-Coburg-Gotha enjoys a very large private

fortune, amasscd chiefly by Ernest I., who sold the principality of Lichtenberg to Prussia in 1834 for an annual payment of £12,000. The congress of Vienna had bestowed the principality upon him in recognition of his services in 1818. directly connected with five of the royal houses of Europe, and the

actual rulers or the heirs of three kingdoms trace their descent

from it. The succession is hereditary in the male line; and by the deed of succession of 1855 the heir to the throne is the duke of Edinburgh, nephew of the present duke.

History.—The elder line of Saxe-Coburg was founded in 1680 by Albert, the second son of Ernest the Pious. On his dying child- less in 1699, however, the line became extinct, and his possessions became the subject of vehement contention amongst the other Saxon houses, until they were finally distributed at the end of the 18th century. The John Ernest, the seventh son of Ernest the Pious, who originally ruled in Saxe-Saalfeld. His two sons, ruling in common, acquired possession of Coburg, and, changing their residence, styled them- selves dukes of Saxe-Coburg-Saalfeld. Under the son and successor of the survivor (who introduced the principle of primogeniture), Ernest Frederick I. (1764-1800), the land was plunged into bankruptcy, so that an imperial commission was appointed on his death to manage the finances. The measures adopted to redeem the country's credit were successful, but imposed so much hardship on the people that a rising took place, which had to be quelled with the aid of troops from the electorate of Saxony. The duke Francis Frederick Antony died in December 1806, and was suc- ceeded by his son Ernest III. (1806 -1844), although the country was occupied by the French from 1807 until the peace of Tilsit in 1816. In the redistribution of the Saxon lands in 1826, Ernest resigned Saalfeld to Meiningen, receiving Gotha in exchange and assuming the title of Ernest I. of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha. The linc of Saxe-Gotha had been founded in 1680 by the eldest son of Ernest the Pious, and had become extinct in 1825. When Ernest II. (b. 1818) succeeded in 1844 both the public finances and the private fortune of the ducal family (see above) were flourishing. In his reign various liberal reforms have been achieved, and the union of the duchies has been made closer.

SAXE-MEININGEN (Germ. Sachsen-Meiningen), a duchy in Thuringia, and an independent member of the German empire, consists ehiefly of an irregular crescent- shaped territory, which, with an average breadth of 10 miles, stretches for over 80 miles along the south-west slope of the Thuringian Forest. The convex side rests upon the duchy of Coburg, and is in part bounded by Bavaria, while the concave side, turned towards the north, contains portions of four other Thuringian states and Prussia be-

Besides the civil list the duke of

The house of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha is

present reigning family is the posterity of

tween its horns, which are 46 miles apart. The districts of Kranichfeld, 15 miles north-west, and Kamburg, 22 miles due north of the eastern horn, together with a number of smaller scattered exclaves, comprise 74 of the 953 square miles now belonging to the duchy (about the size of county Down in Ireland). The surface on the whole is hilly, and is partly occupied by offshoots of the Thuringian Forest; the highest summits are the Kieserle (2851 feet) and the Bless (2834 feet). The chief streains are the Werra, which traverses the south and east of the duchy, and various tributaries of the Main and the Saale, so that Saxe-Meiningen belongs to the basins of the three great rivers Weser, Rhine, and Elbe.

The soil is not very productive, although agriculture flourishes in the valleys and on the level ground; grain has to be imported to meet the demand. In 1883 only 41°8 per cent. of the total area (in 1878, 41°6) was devoted to agriculture, while meadow land and pasture occupicd 11 per cent. ‘The chief grain crops in 1883 were rye (44,442 acres, yiclding 16,112 tons), oats (42,447 acres, 17,343 tons), wheat (25,252 acres, 9033 tons), and barley (19,015 acres, 94,456 tons). The cultivation of potatoes is very general (31,006 acres, 143,327 tons). Tobacco, — and flax (in 1888, 997 acres) are also raised. The Werrathal and the other fertile valleys produce large quantities of fruit. Sheep and cattle raising is a tolerably important branch of industry throughout the duchy ; horses are bred in Kamburg. In

1883 Saxe-Meiningen contained 5174 horses, 66,733 cattle, 58,940 sheep, 45,136 pigs, and 26,817 goats. The extensive and valuable forests, of which 75 per cent. are coniferous trees, occupy 41°9 per cent. of the entire area. Nearly one half of the forests belong to the state and about one- third to public bodies and institutions, leaving little more than a sixth for private owners, The mineral wealth of the duchy is not inconsiderable. Iron, coal, and slate are the chief minerals worked. There are salt-works at Salzungen and Sulza, the former the most important in Thuringia; and the mineral water of Friedrichshall is well known. ‘The manufacturing industry of Saxe-Meiningen is very active, especially in the districts of Sonne- berg, Grafenthal, and Saalfeld. Iron goods of various kinds, glass and pottery, school-slates, marbles, &c., are produced ; the abund- ant timber fosters the manufacture of all kinds of wooden articles, especially toys ; and textile industry is also carried on to a slight extent,

The capital of the duchy is Meiningen (in 1881 11,227 inhab- itants), Of the sixteen other towns (Salzungen, Wasungen, Hildburghausen, Kisfeld, Sonneberg, Saalfeld, Péssneck, Kamburg, &c.) none has so many as 10,000 inhabitants. ‘There are 392 villages and hamlets. In 1880 the population was 207,075 (217 per square mile), of whom 30 per cent. lived in communities of more than 2000. Asin the other Saxon duchies the population is almost exclusively Lutheran; in 1888 202,970 belonged to that confession, 2274 were Roman Catholics, 204 of other Christian sccts, and 1627 Jews.

Saxe-Meiningen is a limited monarchy, its constitution resting on a law of 1829, subsequently modified. The diet, elected for six years, consists of 24 members, of whom 4 are elected by the largest landowners, 4 by those who pay the highest personal taxes, and 16 by the other electors. The franchise is enjoyed by all domiciled males over twenty-five years of age who pay at least a minimum of taxes. The government is carried on by a ministry of five, with departments for the ducal house and foreign affairs, home affairs, justice, education and public worship, and finance. The returns of the statc- lands and the ordinary state-revenue are treated in separate budgets. The estimate for the period 1884-86 puts the annual income from the former at £105,340 and the annual ex- penditure at £77,915, while the annual income and expenditure of the latter are balanced at £145,148. Half of the surplus

of £27,425 is credited to each fund. The duke's civil list of £19,714 (394,286 marks) is paid out of the returns from the state-lands, at one time in the possession of the reigning house. Saxe-Meiningen has one vote in the federal council and sends two deputies to the reichstag.

The original territory of the duchy of Saxe-Meiningen, founded in 1680 by Bernhard, third son of Ernest the Pious, consisted of what is now the western horn of the duchy, from Henneberg northwards, Bernhard was succeeded in 1706 by his three sons; but by 1746 the only survivor was the youngest, Antony Ulrich, who reigned alone until his death in 1763, The duchy had mean- while been considerably increased in extent ; but contentions and petty wars with the other Saxon principalities on questions of inheritance, the extravagance of the court, and the hardships of the Seven Years' War plunged it into bankruptcy and distress, A happier time was enjoyed under Charlotte Amalie, Antony's wife, who ruled as regent for her two sons Charles (1775-1782) and George

we

see Plate V.

(1782-1803), and also under these princes themselves. George, who had introduced the prineiple of primogeniture, was suceeeded by his infant son Bernhard Erich Freund, born in 1800. The war with Franee at the beginning of the present century, with its attendant quartering of troops, conscription, and levies of money, joined with cattle-disease and seanty harvests in once more plunging the eountry into distress, from whieh it but slowly re-covered. . Bernhard had already spontaneously granted a liberal constitution to his subjeets in 1824, when large additions (530 square miles) consequent upon the redistribution of the Saxon lands in 1826 more than doubled his possessions and rendered re-

organization necessary. Among the additions to Saxe-Meiningen

were the duchy of Hildburghausen (whence the full title of the present duchy is Saxe-Meiningen-Hildburghausen), whieh had been founded in

1680 by Ernest, the sixth son of Ernest the Pious; the prineipality of Saalfeld, which, founded by John Ernest, Ernest's seveuth son, in 1680, had been united to Coburg in 1735 ; and the distriets of Themar, Kranichfeld, Kamburg, and other smaller territories. Saxe-Meiningen, like the other Saxon duchies, entered the Confederation of the Rhine in 1806 ; but in 1866, unlike its neighbours, it declared for Austria in the war against Prussia. The land was at once occupied by Prussian troops, and Bernhard abdieated (September 1866) in favour of his son George, who made peace with Prussia and entered the North German Confederation. In 1871 the dispute which had lasted since 1826 between the duke and the diet as to the respective rights of each to the state-lands was terminated by a compromise.

SAXE-WEIMAR-EISENACH (Germ. Sachsen- Weimar- Eisenach), the largest of the Thuringian states, is a grand- duchy and a member of the German empire. It consists of the three chief detached districts of Weimar, Eisenach, and Neustadt, and twenty-four scattered exclaves, of which Allstedt, Oldisleben, and Ilmenau belonging to Weimar, and Ostheim belonging to Eisenach, are the chief. The first and last named of these exclaves are 70 miles apart; and the most easterly ofthe other exclaves is 100 miles from the most westerly. The total area of the grand-duchy is 1387 square miles (or slightly larger than Wiltshire in England), of which 678 are in Weimar, 465 in Eisenach, and 244 in Neustadt.

The district of Weimar, which is at once the largest division and the geographical and historical kernel of the grand-duchy, is a roughly circular territory, situated on the plateau to the north-east of the Thuringian Forest. It is bounded on the N. and E. by Prussia, on the S. and W. .by the Schwarzburg Oberherrschaft and detached portions of Saxe-Altenburg, and lies 23 miles east of the nearest part of Eisenach, and 7 miles north-west of the nearest part of Neustadt. The exclaves of Allstedt and Oldisleben lie in Prussian territory 10 miles to the north and north-west respectively ; Ilmenau as far to the south- west. The surface is undulating and destitute of any striking natural features, although the valleys of the Saale and Ilm are picturesque. The Kickelhahn (2825 feet) and the Hohe Tanne (2641 feet) rise in Hmenau ; but the Grosser Kalm (1814) near Remda, in the extreme south, is the highest point in the main part of Weimar. The broad-based Ettersburg (1519 feet), a part of which is known as " Herder's Hill" after

the poet, rises on the Ilm plateau, near Ettersburg, where Schiller finished his Maria Stuart. The Saale flows through the east of the district, but, although the chief river hydrographically, it yields in fame to its tributary the Im. The Unstrut joins the Saale from Oldisleben and Allstedt. The chief towns are Weimar, the capital, on the Ilm; Jena, with the common university of the Thuringian states, on the Saale; and Apolda, the ‘‘ Manchester of Weimar,” to the west.

Eisenach, the second district in size, and the first in point of natural beauty, stretches in a narrow strip from north to south on the extreme western boundary of Thuringia, and includes parts of the church lands of Fulda, of Hesse, and of the former countship of Henneberg. It is bounded on the N. and W. by Prussia, on the 8. by Bavaria (which also surrounds the exclave of Ostheim), and on the E. by Saxe-Meiningen and Saxe-Gotha, The

north is occupied by the rounded hills of the Thuringian Forest, while the Rhién Mountains extend into the southern part. The chief summits of the former group, which is more remarkable for its fine forests and picturesque scenery than for its height, are the Wartburg Hill (1355 feet), the north-western termination of the system, Ottowald (2103 feet), Wachstein (1801 feet), Ringberg (2106 feet), Hohe Vogelheid (2378 feet), and the Glockner (2211 feet). Among the Rhén Mountains in Eisenach the loftiest summits are the Elnbogen (2677 feet), Bayer- berg (2359 feet), Hohe Rain (2375), and the Glaserberg (2231 feet). The chief river is the Werra, which flows across the centre of the district from east to west, and then bending suddenly northwards, re-enters from Prussia, and traverses the north-eastern parts in an irregular course. Its chief tributaries in Eisenach are the Horsel and the Ulster. Eisenach is the only town of importance in this division of the grand-duchy.

Neustadt, the third of the larger divisions, is distin- guished neither by picturesque scenery nor historical interest. It forms an oblong territory, about 24 miles long by 16 broad, and belongs rather to the hilly district of the Voigtland than to Thuringia. It is bounded on the N. by Reuss (junior line) and Saxe-Altenburg, on the W. by Saxe-Meiningen and a Prussian exclave, on the 8. by the two Reuss principalities, and on the E. by the

kingdom of Saxony. The Kesselberg (1310 feet) near the town of Neustadt is the chief eminence. This district lies in the basin of the Saale, its chief streams being the White Elster, the Weida, and the Orla. Neustadt, Auma, and Weida are the principal towns.

Agriculture forms the chief oecupation of the inhabitants in all parts of the duchy, though in Hisenach and Ilmenau a large proportion of the area is eovered with forests. According to the returns for 1883, 56°3 per eent. of the entire surface was oceupied by arable land, 25°8 per eent. by forests, 8°8 by pasture and meadow-land, and 4°1 per cent. by buildings, roads, and water. Only 5 per cent. was unproductive soil or moorland. These figures indicate that Saxe-Weimar-Eisenach has nearly as large a pereentage of arable land as Saxe-Altenburg, and, notwithstanding the extensive woods in Eisenaeh and Ilmenau, a lower proportion of forest than any other Thuringian state. In 1888 the chief grain erops were oats (80,682 aeres, yielding 38,271 tons), barley (78,067 aeres, 45,249 tons), rye (72,607 aeres, 29,006 tons), and wheat (47,732 acres, 19,949 tons). About 50,000 acres were planted with potatoes, yielding 287,627 tons, or nearly 4 per cent. per acre less than the average of the five years immediately preceding. Al the grain erops were slightly above the average of the same period. The 79,405 acres devoted to hay produced 98,910 tons. Among the other crops were beetroot for sugar (8602 acres), flax (1300 acres), and oil-yielding plants (4562 acres). Fruit grows in abund- ance, especially in the neighbourhood of Jena, in the valley of the Gleisse, and on the lower I!m; 1070 acres, mostly on the banks of the Saale, were occupied with vines. Of the forests 38°5 per eent. are deeiduous and 61°5 per eent. coniferous trees; fully a half of the former are beeches. The greater part of the forests belong to the Government. Cattle-raising is earried on to a considerable extent, especially in Eisenach and Neustadt, while the sheep- farming centresin Weimar. The grand-ducal stud-farm in Allstedt maintains the breed of horses. In 1883 the duchy contained 17,271 horses, 110,092 cattle, 145,442 sheep, 101,443 pigs, and 41,291 goats. Although iron, copper, cobalt, and lignite are worked, the mineral wealth is trifling. Salt is also worked at different places.

The manufacturing industries in the grand-duehy are consider- able; they employ 37°3 per eent. of the population. The most important is the textile

industry, whieh centres in Apolda, and employs more than 20,000 hands throughout the eountry. The produetion of woollen goods (stockings, cloth, underclothing) forms the leading branch of the industry; but cotton and linen weaving and yarn-spinning are also carried on. Large quantities of earthenware and crockery are made, especially at Ilmenau. The microscopes of Jena, the scientific instruments (thermometers, barometers, &c.) of Ilmenau, and the pipes and cigar-holders of Ruhla (partly in Gotha) are well known. Leather, paper, glass, eork, and tobacco are among the less prominent manufactures. There are numerous breweries in the duchy. The volume of trade is not very great, although some of the productions (chiefly those first mentioned) are exported all over Europe, and in some cases to other continents as well. The chief imports, besides

colonial goods, are wool for the manufactures, hides, coal, meer- schaum (from Smyrna and Vienna), amber, horn, &c. LEisenach and Weimar are tlic chief seats of trade. é

The population in 1880 was 309,577, or 223 per square mile, of whom 297,785 were Lutherans, 10,267 Roman Catholics, 327 Christians of other sects, and 1248 Jews. The Thuringian and Frauconian branches of the Teutonic family are both represented in the duchy. According to the employinent census of 1882, agriculture, forestry, and fishing supported 135,200 or 44 per cent. of the population; industrial pursuits, 114,835 or 87°83 per cent.; trade, 23,939 or 7°8 per cent.; service, 4086 or 1°3 per cent.; official, military, and professional employments, 16,066 or 5-2 per cent.; while 13,597 persons or 4°4 per cent. made no returns.

Saxe-Weimar-Kisenach is a limited hereditary monarchy, and was the first state in Germany to reccive a liberal constitution. This was granted in 1816 by Charles Augustus, the patron of Goethe, and was revised in 1850, The diet consists of one chamber with thirty-one members, of whom one is chosen by the nobility, four by owners of land worth at least £150 a year, five by those who derive as much from other sources, and twenty-one by the rest of the inhabitants. The diet meets every three years; the deputies are elected for six years. The franchise is enjoyed by all domi- ciled citizens over twenty-five years of age. The governincnt is carried on by a ministry

of three, holding the portfolios of finance, of home and foreign affairs, and of religion, education, and justice, with which is combined the ducal household. The budget for the finance-period 1834-86 estimated the yearly income at £308,586 and the yearly expenditure at about £1560 less. ‘he public debt is more than covered by the active capital. The ducal house receives a civil list of £46,500. ‘The Saxe-Weimar family is the oldest branch of the Ernestine line, and hence of the whole Saxon house. By treaties of succession the grand-duke is the next heir to the throne of Saxony, should the present Albertine line become extinct. He is entitled to the predicate of “royal highness.” By a treaty with Prussia in 1867, which afterwards became the model for similar treaties between Prussia and other Thuringian states, the troops of the grand-duchy were incorporated with the Prussian army.

In early times Weimar, with the surrounding district, belonged to the counts of Orlamiinde, and from the end of the 10th century until 1067 it was the seat of a line of counts of its own. It afterwards fell to the landgrave of Thuringia, and in 1440 passed into the possession of Frederick the Mild, elector of Saxony. Involved after the convention of Wittenberg (1547) in the com- plicated and constantly shifting succession arrangements of the Ernestine dukes of Saxony, who delayed the introduction of primogeniture, Weimar does not emerge into an independent historical position until 1640, when the brothers William, Albert, and Ernest the Pious founded the principalities of Weimar, Hisenach, and Gotha. Eisenach fell to Weimar in 1644, and, although the principality was once more temporarily split into the lines Saxe-Weimar, Saxe-Eisenach (1672-1741), and Saxe- Jena (1672-1690), it was again reunited under Ernest Augustus (1728-1748), who secured it against future subdivision by adopting the principle of primogeniture. His son of the same name who succeeded died in 1758, two years after his marriage with Anna Amalia of Brunswick. Next year the duchess Amalia, although not yet twenty years old, was appointed by the emperor regent of the principality and guardian of her infant son Charles Augustus (1758-1828). The reign of the latter, who assumed the govern- ment in 1775, is the most brilliant epoch in the history of Saxe- Weimar. A gifted and intelligent patron of literature and art, Charles Augustus attracted to his court the leading authors and scholars of Germany. Goethe, Schiller, and Herder were members of the illustrious society of the capital, and the

university of Jena became a focus of light and learning, so that the hitherto obscure little state nema the eyes of all Europe.! The war with France was fraught with danger to the continued existence of the priuci- pality, and after the battle of Jena (October 14, 1806) it was mainly the skilful management of the duchess Louise that dissuaded Napoleon from removing her husband from among the reigning princes. In 1807 Saxe-Weimar-Eisenach entered the Confederation of the Rhine, and was promoted from a principality (Fiirstenthum) to a duchy (Herzogthum). In the following campaigns it suffered greatly ; and in 1815 the congress of Vienna recompensed its ruler with an addition to his territory of 660 square miles (includ- ing most of Neustadt) with 77,000 inhabitants, and with the title of grand-duke (Grossherzog). On the restoration of peace Charles Augustus redeemed his promise of granting a liberal constitution (1816). Freedom of the press was also granted, but after the festival of the Wartburg in 1819 it was seriously curtailed. Charles Frederick (1828-1853) continued his father's policy, but his reforms

bs An article on Saxe-Weimar-Eisenach would hardly be complete without Goethe's famous lines :-—

"* Klein ist unter den Fiirsten Germaniens freilich der meine, Kurz und schmal ist sein Land, missig nur was er vermag;

Aber so wende nach innen, so wende nach aussen die Krifte Jeder, da wir' ein Fest Deutscher mit Deutschen zu sein,"

were neither thorough enough nor rapid enough to avert political commotion in 1848. A popular ministry received power, and numerous reforms were carried through. Reaction sect in under Charles Alexander, who succeeded his father in 1853, and the union of the statc-lands and crown-lands was repealed, though both were appointed to remain under the samc public management. In 1866 the grand-duchy joined Prussia against Austria, although its troops were then garrisoning towns in the Austrian interest ; later it entered the North German Confederation. The press restric- tions were removed in 1868 and the tendency of recent legislation has been liberal, (F. MU.)

SAXIFRAGE (Saxifraga), a genus of plants which gives its name to the order of which it is a member. There are nearly 200 species distributed in the teinperate aud arctic parts of the northern hemisphere, frequently at considerable heights on the mountains. They are mostly herbs with perennial rootstocks, leaves in tufts, or, on the flower-stalks, scattered. The arrangement of the flowers is very various, as also are the size and colour of the flowers themselves. They have a calyx with a short tube, five petals, ten (or rarely five) stamens springing, like the petals, from the edge of the tube of the calyx. The pistil is partly adherent to the calyx-tube, and is divided above into two styles. The ovules are numerous, attached to axile placentas. The seed-vessel is capsular. Many species are natives of Britain, some alpine plants of great beauty (S. oppositifolia, S. nivalis, S. atzoides, &c.), and others, like S. granulata, frequenting meadows and low ground, while S. tridactylites may be found on almost any dry wall. Many species are in cultivation, including the Bergenias or Megaseas with their large fleshy leaves and copious panicles of rosy or pink flowers, the numerous alpine species, such as S. pyramidalis, S. Cotyledon, &e., with tall panicles studded with white flowers, and many others. —-

SAXO GRAMMATICUS, the celebrated Danish his- torian and poet, belonged to a family of warriors, his father and grandfather having served under king Valdemar YT' (d. 1182). He himself was brought up for the clerical profession, entered about 1180 the service of Archbishop Absalon as one of his secretaries, and remained with him in that capacity until the death of Absalon in 1201. At the instigation of the latter he began, about 1185, to write the history of the Danish Christian kings from the time of Sven Estridsén, but later Absalon prevailed on him to write also the history of the earlier, heathen times, and to combine both into a great work, Gesta Danorum. The archbishop died before the work was finished, and there- fore the preface, written about 1208, is dedicated to his successor Archbishop Andreas, and to King Valdemar II. Nothing else is known about Saxo's life and person Ba chronicle of 1265 calls him " mire et urbane eloquentix clericus ;" and an epitome of his work from about 1340 de- scribes him as "egregius grammaticus, origine Sialandus sf that he was a native of Zealand is probably correct, inas- much as, whereas he often criticizes the Jutlanders and the Scanians, he frequently praises the Zealanders. The surname of "Grammaticus" is probably of later origin,

scarcely earlier than 1500, apparently owing to a mistake. The title of “ provost (dean) of Réskilde,” given him in the 16th century, is also probably incorrect, the historian being confounded with an older contemporary, the provost of the same hame. Saxo, from his apprenticeship as the archbishop’s secretary, had acquired a brilliant but some- what euphuistic Latin style, and wrote fine Latin verses, but otherwise does not seem to have had any very great learning or extensive reading, His models of style were Valerius Maximus, Justin, and Martianus Capella, especi- ally the last. Occasionally he mentions Bede, Dudo, and Paulus Diaconus, but does not seem to have studied them or any other historical works thoroughly, and he neither understands nor is interested in scientific research, in gene- ral history, or even in chronology. He wrote because he

did not like his countrymen to be behind other nations through the want of an historian, and because he wished to perpetuate the record of the exploits of the Danes. His sources are partly Danish traditions and old songs, partly the statements of Archbishop Absalon, partly the accounts of Icelanders, and, lastly, some few earlier, but scanty, sources, being lists of Danish kings and short chronicles, which furnished him with some reliable chronological dates. He considered traditions as history, and therefore made it his chief business to recount and arrange these, by the help of the lists of the kings, into a connected whole. His work, therefore, is a loosely connected series of biographies of Danish kings and heroes; he dwells with predilection on those periods during which Danish kings were said to have made great conquests, and he represents these con- querors as the paragons of their times.

The first nine books comprise ‘‘Antiquity,” that is, traditions of kings and heroes of the half-mythical time up to about 950. Here we have traditions about Fredfrode, about Amleth (Hamlet) and Fenge, about Rolf Krake, Hadding, the giant Starkather, Harald Hildetann, and Ragnar Lodbrok. In this earlier history Saxo has also embodied myths of national gods who in tradition had become Danish kings, for instance, Balder and Hother, and of foreign heroes, likewise incorporated in Danish history, as the Gothic Jarmunrik (A. S. Eormenric), the Anglian Vermund (A. 8. Gérmund) and

Uffe (A. S. Offa), the German Hedin and Hild, &c. Frequently the narrative is interrupted by translations of poems, which Saxo lias used as authentic sources, although they are often only a few generations older than himself. In the later books (x.-xvi.) of his work he follows to a greater extent historical accounts, and the more he approaches his own time the fuller and the more trustworthy his relation becomes ; especially brilliant is his treatment of the history of King Valdemar and of Absalon. But his patriotism often makes him partial to his countrymen, and his want of critical sense often blinds him to the historical truth.

Saxo's work was widely read during the Middle Ages, and several extracts of it were made for smaller chronicles. It was published for the first time, from a MS. afterwards lost, in Paris, 1514, by the Danish humanist Christiern Pedersen; this edition was reprinted at Basel, 1534, and at Frankfort, 1576. Oflater editions may be mentioned that of Stephen ftephanius, Sord, 1644, that of C. A. Klotz, Leipsic, 1771, and that of P. E. Miiller and J. M. Velsehow, Copenhagen, 1839. No complete MS. any longer exists; yet of late small fragments have been found of three MSS. The most remarkable of these is the fragment found at Angers, in France, written shortly aftcr 1200, perhaps by Saxo himself or under his superintendence ; herc several corrections are found above the lines, showing how the author varied and polished his

_ Latin style.

Plate V.

SAXON DUCHIES. For the four Saxon duchies, SaxeE-ALTENBURG, SAXE-COBURG-GoTHA, SAXE-MEININGEN, and SAxE-WEIMAR-EISENACH, see those headings.

SAXONS, Law or THE. See Saric Law.

SAXONY is the name successively given in German history to a medieval duchy in northern Germany, to a later electorate which afterwards became the present kingdom of Saxony (described below), and to a ducal province of Prussia. The last was formed directly out of part of the second in 1815,

but the connexion between the first and second, as will be seen from the present article, is neither local nor ethnographical but political.

The Saxons (Lat. Saxones, Ger. Sachsen), a tribe of the Teutonic stock, are first mentioned by Ptolemy as occupy- ing the southern part of the Cimbrian peninsula between the Elbe, Eider, and Trave, the district now known as Holstein. The name is most commonly derived from ‘‘sahs,” a short knife, though some authorities explain it as meaning “settled,” in contrast to the Suevi or “ wander- ing” people. By the end of the 3d century, when we hear of a “Saxon Confederation” embracing the Cherusci, Chauci, and Angrivarii, and perhaps corresponding to the group of tribes called Ingzevones by Tacitus, the chief seat of the nation had been transferred south of the Elbe to the lands on both sides of the Weser now occupied by Oldenburg and Hanover. The Saxons were one of the most warlike and adventurous of the Teutonic peoples,

and they not only steadily extended the borders of their home, but made colonizing and piratical excursions by sea far and wide. In 287 they assisted the Menapian Carausius to make himself master of Romanized Britain, where he assumed the title of Augustus; and on the Continent they came into collision with the Roman empire under both Julian and Valentinian, the latter of whom de- feated them in 373 so far south as Deutz, opposite Cologne. Their settlements along the coast of France extended to the mouth of the Loire, and, though these were soon absorbed by the Franks, their expeditions to England finally resulted in the foundation of lasting kingdoms (Hssex, Sussex, Wessex) (see ENGLAND, vol. viii. pp. 268 sq.).1 About the beginning of the 5th century part of the Flemish coast became known as the Litus Saxoniwm, from the settlements of this people. The Saxons who remained in Germany (Alt-Sachsen or Old Saxons) gradually pushed their borders further and further until they approached the Rhine, and touched the Elbe, the North Sea, and the Harz Mountains. In 531 they joined their neighbours the Franks in a suc- cessful expedition against the Thuringians, and received as their spoil the conquered territory between the Harz and the Unstrut. Their settlements here were, however, forced to acknowledge the supremacy of the Franks, and from this period may be

dated the beginning of the long strife between these two peoples which finally resulted in the subjugation of the Saxons. During the reigns of the weak Merovingian kings who succeeded Lothair I. on the Frankish throne, the Saxons pushed into northern Thur- ingia, afterwards known as the Alt-Mark. Pippin the Short obtained a temporary advantage over them in 753 and imposed a tribute of three hundred horses, but their final conquest was reserved for Charlemagne. At this time the Saxons did not form a single state under one ruler, but were divided into the four districts of Westphalia to the west of the Weser, Eastphalia chiefly to the east of that river, Engern or Angria along both banks, and Nordal- bingia in Holstein. The gaus were independent, each having an ealdorman of its own; and they only combined in time of war or other emergency to choose a herzog, or common leader. The people were divided into the ‘“frilinge” or “‘frone,” who possessed the land, the “‘liti” or ‘‘lazzi,” a semi-freed class, and the serfs, who had no rights. The “edilinge” were the chiefs, but had no political advantages over the “frilinge.” Their religion was a simple type of northern heathenism. See GERMANY, vol. x. pp. 473 and 477 sq.

In 772 Charlemagne, induced partly by a desire to protect his kingdom from the incursions of hostile neigh- bours and partly by a proselytizing spirit, began the sub- jugation of the Saxons. The war, waged on both sides with the utmost ferocity, lasted in a series of campaigns with but brief intervals for thirty-one years. Repeatedly conquered and baptized, the Saxons rose again and again in revolt as soon as Charlemagne withdrew his troops, threw off their forced allegiance to Christianity, and under various leaders, of whom Wittekind or Widukind is the most famous, struggled fiercely to regain their independ- ence. Charlemagne was too strong and his measures too relentless. On one occasion he butchered 4500 captives in cold blood, as a revenge and a warning. Wittekind surrendered and was baptized in 785; and after what is called the Second Saxon War, which broke out in 792, resistance died away about 803. The Saxons were allowed

1 Though the Saxons were not the first to effect the foundation of a Teutonie kingdom in England, they were the first to attempt it; and hence their name was applied (as it still is) by the Celtie inhabitants of the British islands to all Teutonie settlers. A similar general use of the name survives in Transylvania, where the German inhabitants

are ealled ‘‘Saxons,” although only a small proportion of them traee their deseent from the Saxon braneli of the Teutonic family.

302

a considerable amount of freedom by their sagacious con- queror. The first Capitulare Saxonicum, issued at Pader- born in 788, while very strict in maintaining Christianity and in punishing all rebellion, confirmed a great number of Saxon customs and laws. After 803 the laws were made milder, and no tribute except tithes was demanded. The people lived according to their former laws,’ under grafs appointed by Charlemagne ; various bishoprics were founded, of which Osnabriick (783), Verden (786), and Bremen (787) are the earliest; and tranquillity was still further secured by transplanting colonies of Saxons to other parts of the kingdom, and introducing Frankish colonies to take their place in Saxony. The land now gradually became an integral portion of the kingdom of the Franks.? Under Louis the German, to whom Saxony had fallen at the treaty of Verdun in 843, it was harassed by the inroads of the Normans and Slavs on either side, and, in order to cope with these, herzogs or dukes were appointed about 850 to keep the Saxon Mark, a narrow territory in Nordalbingia, on the west bank of the Elbe. These herzogs, remembering their predecessors or their ancestors (Ludolf, the first duke of Saxony, is said to have been a descendant of Wittekind), rapidly extended their power beyond the mark over the rest of Saxony, and thus founded the powerful duchy of Saxony. Otto the Illus- trious, who succeeded his brother Bruno as duke in 880, added Thuringia to the duchy, and attained such a pitch of power that he was offered the crown of Germany in 911. He refused the honour on the score of old age, but his son Henry the Fowler accepted it in 919, and founded the line of Saxon empcrors which expired with Henry II. the Pious in 1024. Otto the Great, son of Henry L., bestowed the duchy of Saxony upon Hermann Billing or Billung, in whose family it remained till 1106. The power and in- fluence of Saxony during this period depended partly on the favour of the emperors, but chiefly on the sagacity and energy of the successive dukes. The Saxons were hostile to the Franconian emperors who succeeded the Saxon house, and in 1073 they rose in revolt against Henry IV. They were at first successful, but in 1075, at the battle of Langensalza, they were defeated by the emperor. The rebels were severely punished,

though Otto of Nordheim, one of their leaders, was made administrator of the ducliy. Taking advantage of Henry IV.'s troubles with the pope, they again rebelled and espoused the cause of Rudolf of Swabia; but in 1087, on the resignation of Hermann of Luxemburg, whom they had chosen king, they made peace once morc with the emperor. Magnus was the last duke of the Billing line. The emperor Henry V. now (1106) presented the lapsed duchy to Lothair, count of Supplin- burg, who rapidly became the most powerful prince in Germany, and in 1125 was placed on the imperial throne by the influence of the papal party. Two years after his elevation he assigned the duchy of Saxony to his power- ful son-in-law Henry the Proud, who was already duke of Bavaria and had inherited the private possessions of the Billings in Saxony, in right of his mother, who was a daughter of Magnus. Henry had aspired to be emperor in 1138, and his successful rival Conrad IIL, wishing to reduce his power, alleged that it was unlawful for one prince to hold two duchies, and ordered him to resign Saxony. On his refusal, the emperor immediately de- clared both duchies to be forfeited. Henry died before the ensuing war was ended, and Conrad compromised iin: Mei mE een ote

1 The Lez Saxonum, 19 titles of which have survived, was reduced to writing under Charlemagne. See under SALtc Law.

2 The Weliand (Saviour), a religious poem ascribed to an unknown Saxon poet of the 9th century, is often cited as a proof of the rapid

Christianization of the Saxons. It is also almost the only relic of their dialect,

matters by appointing his opponent's young son, after- wards known as Henry the Lion, to the duchy of Saxony, compensating Albert the Bear, the former imperial candi- date, with the independence of the North Mark of Saxony, afterwards called Brandenburg (see Prussia, vol. xx. p. 2). In 1155 Henry received Bavaria from his cousin and per- sonal friend the emperor Frederick Barbarossa, and thus became second only to the emperor in

power. He added considerably to the extent of Saxony by conquest among the Wends, east of the Elbe, where the boundary had always been a fluctuating one. But Henry was not only powerful, he was also arrogant, and incurred the jealousy of the other princes, so that, when he quarrelled with the emperor and his lands were declared forfeited in 1180, he had no allies to assist him in his resistance. Westphalia, the principal part of Saxony, went to the archbishop of Cologne, the Saxon Palatinate to the landgrave of Thur- ingia, and other portions to other princes. A small district round Lauenburg, north of the Elbe, was assigned with the title of duke of Saxony to Bernhard of Ascania, son of Albert the Bear. Henry was reduced to submission in 1181; but his duchies could not be restored, and he was forced to content himself with Brunswick and Liine- burg. The duchy of Saxony was never restored in the old sense, in which it had been one of the four principal duchies of the empire, and embraced the territories now occupied by Westphalia, Oldenburg, Hanover, the Harz, and parts of Mecklenburg and Holstein. The new creation never rose to any importance. Bernhard of Ascania (1181-1212), before his accession as duke of Saxony, had held Anhalt and Wittenberg, to the south- east of Saxony, and separated from it by the Mark of Brandenburg; and when his grandsons John and Albert II. divided their inheritance in 1260 the latter placed his seat at Wittenberg, and two tiny duchies arose—Saxe- Lauenburg and Saxe-Wittenberg. Saxe-Lauenburg was now the only part of the great duchy which retained the name; while Saxe-Wittenberg, the nucleus of the later electorate, transferred the name to entirely new soil. Both duchies claimed the electoral privileges, including the office of grand marshal (Erzmarschall), which had belonged to the original duke of Saxony, but the Golden Bull of 1356 confirmed the claims of Wittenberg. Rudolph IL. (about 1370) is the first duke who formally styles himself elector (princeps elector). The small electorate was made still smaller in 1411 by the formation of Anhalt into a separate principality. In 1422 the Ascanian line became extinct with Albert IIL, and in 1423 the emperor Sigismund conferred their lands and titles upon Frederick, margrave of Meissen, and landgrave of Thur- ingia, to whom he was deeply indebted both for money and assistance in the Hussite wars. The new and more honourable style of elector of Saxony superseded Frede- rick’s other titles, and the term Saxony gradually spread over all his other possessions, which included the country now known under that name. The early history of the electorate and

kingdom of Saxony is thus the early history of the Mark of Mcissen, the name of which now lingers only in a solitary town on the Elbe.®

3 A different and considerably later use of the name Saxony may be conveniently mentioned here, for, though not based upon any political or ethnographical considerations, it is frequently referred to in German history. When Maximilian (1493-1519) formed the ten great im- perial administrative circles, that part of the empire to the east of the Weser and north of the Erzgebirge was divided between the circles of Lower and Upper Saxony. The former, occupying the north-west of this territory, included the Harz principalities, Magdeburg, Brunswick, Mecklenburg, Bremen, and Holstein; the latter, besides Thuringia, the electorate of Saxony and Brandenburg, embraccd the conquered Slavonic lands to the east and north, including Lusatia and Pome-

rania, The lands which still preserve the name of Saxony are thus all within the limits of these circles.

HISTORY. |

Among the mountains of Lusatia, in the south of the Saxon province of Bautzen, there exist to this day about 50,000 Wends, possessing characteristics and spcaking a language of their own. These curious people are the relics of a vast Slavonic horde which, appearing on the borders of the kingdom of the Hermunduri or Thuringians about the 4th century, pressed into their territories on the downfall of that kingdom in the 6th century, and scttled themselves between the Spree and the Saale. They were known as the Sorbs or Sorabi, and the country, which included the whole of the modern kingdom of Saxony, was called Sorabia. Warlike and persistent, their influence has never been obliterated, and, though conquered, their stock has neither been exterminated nor absorbed. They were skilled in agriculture and cattle-brceding, and soon improved the fertile soil of their new settlements. Some writers are disposed to recognize their influence in the strong bent to agricultural and industrial pursuits which has ever since characterized the inhabitants of this part of Germany ; and less doubtful traces have been left in the popular superstitions and legends, and in the local names. For more than a hundred years after their first collision with the German kingdom the Sorbs repulsed all attacks, but in 928 Henry the

Fowler, the first Saxon emperor, crossing the Elbe, devastated the land of the Dalc- minzians, and built the strong castle of Misnia or Meissen, which thenceforward formed the centre of a gradually increasing mark against the heathen. For two hundred years the office of margrave of Meissen was not hereditary, but in 1123 Count Conrad of Wettin obtained the succession for his house, and founded a line of princes whose descendants still occupy the throne. Itis said, though on very doubtful grounds, that Conrad was a scion of the family of the old Saxon hero Wittekind. In 1156, when Conrad abdicated and set the pernicious example of dividing his lands among his sons, his possessions extended from the Neisse and the Erzgebirge to the Harz and the Saale. During these two centuries the state of the country had but slowly improved. The Sorbs had been reduced to a condition of miserable serfdom, and the best land was in the hands of Frankish peasants who had been attracted by its fertility. Agriculture was encouraged by the ecclesiastics, especially by Bishop Benno, who occupied the see of Meissen (founded in 961) about the time of the conquest of England by the Normans. In the reign of Otto the Rich (1157-1190) the first silver mines were discovered, and the famous mining town of Freiberg founded. Trade also received its first encouragement ; the great fairs of Leipsic were protected ; and roads were made and towns fortified with the produce of the mines. Otto’s grandson, Henry the Illustrious (1221-1288), whose mother Jutta was a Thuringian princess, reunited most of Conrad’s lands by inheriting part of Thuringia (the rest went to the duke of Brabant) and the Pleissnerland, as the district on both banks of the upper course of the Pleisse was called. He too lost the chance of founding a magnificent kingdom in the heart of Germany, by sub- dividing his territories, which stretched in a compact mass from the Werra to the Oder and from the mountains of Bolicmia to the Harz. The consequences of this policy of subdivision, which was followed by his successors, were bitter family fcuds and petty wars, seriously hampering the development of the country. Frederick the Grave (1824-1847) was the last prince of the house of Wettin who was sole ruler of all the ancestral lands of his house. The next powerful figure is Frederick the Warlike, who became margrave in 1881. Besides the Mark he possessed the Osterland, the territory to the north-west of the present kingdom, stretching from the Saale at Weissenfels to the Elbe at Torgau, and embracing the plain of Leipsic. Frederick, in whose reign the university of Leipsic was founded, had acquired his surname by his

energetic support of Sigismund, especially in the Hussite wars. As we have seen, that emperor's desire to attach to hiniself so powerful an ally led him to bestow the vacant electoral duchy of Saxe- Wittenberg upon the margrave in 1428. Despite the troublous state of public affairs, the internal prosperity of the land had steadily advanced. Most of the chief towns had by this time been founded, —Leipsic, Erfurt, Zwickau, and Freiberg being the most conspicuous. Chemnitz had begun its textile industry. The condition of the peasants was still far below that of the burghers of the towns; many of them were mere serfs. The church retained the high pitch of power which it had early attained in Meissen, and religious institutions were numerous all over the most fertile districts. In spite of fresh discoveries of silver, the pecuniary wants of the princes had to be occasionally supplied by contributions called "bedes" from the nobles and ecclesiastics, who were summoned from time to time to meet in a kind of diet.

Frederick's new dignities as elector, combined with his personal qualities, now made him one of the most powerful princes in Germany; had the principle of primogeniture been established in the country as he left it, Saxony and not Brandenburg might have been the leading power in the empire to-day. He died in 1428, just in time to

escape the grief of seeing his lands cruelly ravaged by

the Hussites in 1429 and 1430. The division of territory between his two sons, Frederick the Mild (1428-1464) and William, once more called forth destructive internecine wars (the " Briiderkrieg "), in which the former for a time forgot his surname. It was in 1455, during this war, that the knight Kunz von Kaufungen carried into execu- tion his bold, though only momentarily successful, plan of stealing the two young sons of the elector Frederick. Ernest and Albert, the two princes in question, succeeded to their father's possessions in 1464, and for twenty years ruled peacefully in common. The land rapidly prospered during this respite from war. Trade made great advances, encouraged by an improved coinage, which was one of the consequences of the silver discoveries on the Schneeberg. Several of the powerful ecclesiastical principalities were at this time held by members

of the Saxon electoral house, so that the external influence of the electorate corresponded to its internal prosperity. Matters were not suffered to continue thus. The childless death of their uncle William in 1482 bequeathed Thuringia to the two princes, and the younger Albert insisted upon a division of the common possessions. In August 1485 the Partition of Leipsic took place, which resulted in the foundation of two Saxon lines, the Ernestine and the Albertine. The lands were never again united. Ernest divided the lands into two portions, and Albert chose. Apart from the electoral duchy of Wittenberg, which necessarily went to Ernest as the elder brother, the lands were divided into Thuringia, half of the Osterland, and Naumburg and the Voigtland on the one hand, and Meissen and the remaining parts of eastern Saxony on the other. To Ernest's deep chagrin, Albert chose Meissen, the old ancestral lands of the Wettins. The former only survived his vexation a year.

The electorate remained at first with the Ernestine line. Ernest was succeeded by his son Frederick the Wise (1486-1525), one of the most illustrious princes in German history. Under his rule Saxony was perhaps the most influential member of the German empire ; and on the death of Maximilian the imperial crown itself was offered to him, but he vindicated his character by refus- ing it. In this reign Saxony became the cradle of the Reformation. The elector's wise tolerance and subsequent protection and hearty support of Luther are well known to every reader. He is said to have remained unmarried out of love to his brother John, who succeeded him. He died during the horrors of the Peasants' War. John (1525-1532) was an even more enthusiastic favourer of the Reformed doctrines, and shared the leadership of the Schmalkald League with Philip of Hesse. His son, John Frederick the Magnanimous (1532-1547), might with equal propriety have been surnamed the Unfortunate. He took part in the Schmalkald War, but in 1547 was captured at Miihlberg by the emperor Charles V., and forced to sign the capitulation of Wittenberg. This deed transferred the electorate and nearly all the Saxon lands to the Albertine line, whose astute representative had taken the imperial side. Only a few scattered territories in Thuringia were reserved for John Frederick's sons, and on these were afterwards founded the Ernestine duchies of Weimar, Gotha, &. For the second time in the history of the Saxon electorate, the younger line on a division ultimately

secured the highest dignity, for the Wittenberg line had been junior to the Lauenberg line. The Albert- ine line is now the royal line of Saxony.

The Albertine Maurice became elector after the capitula- tion of Wittenberg. He was the grandson of the founder of his house, and had been preceded on the throne of Meissen by his uncle George (1500-1539) and by his father Henry (1539-1541). George was a zealous Roman Catholic, and had vainly endeavoured to stem the Reformation in

his dominions ; Henry was an equally devoted Protestant. Maurice (1541-1553) was also a Protestant, but he was too astute to permit his religion to blind him to his political interests. His ruling motive seems to have been

ambition to increase his personal power and the consequence of his country. He refused to join the Schmalkald League with the other Protestant princes, and made a secret treaty with the emperor instead. By invading the Ernestine lands in John Frederick’s absence during the Schmalkald War, he forced that prince to return hastily from the Danube, and thus weakened the army opposed to the Though he was compelled to retreat before his indignant and surprised kinsman, his fidelity to the emperor was rewarded, as we have seen, at the capitulation

emperor.

of Wittenberg. All the lands torn from the Ernestines

were not, however, assigned to Maurice ; he was forced to acknowledge the suzerainty of Bohemia over the Voigtland

and the Silesian duchy of Sagan, and to renounce his own superiority over the Reuss dominions.

Zeitz. Recognizing as a Protestant sovereign that the

best alliance for securing his new possessions was not with the Roman Catholic emperor but with the other Pro-

testant princes, Maurice now began to withdraw from the former and to conciliate the latter. In 1552, suddenly marching against the emperor at Innsbruck, he extorted from him the peace of Passau, which accorded religious freedom throughout Germany. Thus, at the close of his life (he died of a wound in battle in 1553), Maurice came to be regarded as the champion of German national and religious freedom. Amid the distractions of outward affairs, Maurice had not neglected the internal interests of Saxony. ‘To the already conspicuous educational advant- ages in the country he added the three grammar schools (Fiirstenschulen) at Pforta, Grimma, and Meissen; and for administrative purposes, especially for the collection of the taxes which had now become practically annual, he divided the country into the four “circles” of the Electorate, Thuringia, Leipsic, and Meissen. In 1542 the first coal mine was opened, Over two hundred convents were suppressed in Saxony; Leipsic, Wittenberg, Jena, and Erfurt had each a university; books began to increase, and, the Saxon dialect became the ruling dialect of German in virtue of Luther’s translation of the Bible. Augustus I. (1553-1586), brother of Maurice, was one of the best domestic rulers that Saxony ever had. He increased the area of the country by the “circles” of Neustidt and the Voigtland, and by parts of Henneberg and the silver-yielding Mansfeld, and he devoted his long reign to the development of its resources. He visited all parts of the country himself, and personally encouraged agriculture ; he introduced a more economical mode of mining and smelting silver ; he favoured the importation of finer breeds of sheep and cattle ; and he brought foreign weavers from abroad to teach the Saxons. Under him lace-making began on the Erzgebirge, and cloth-making flourished at Zwickau. He was the first to fortify the Kénigstein, the one fortress in modern Saxony, and he built other castles. With all his virtues, however, Augustus was an intolerant Lutheran, and used very severe means to exterminate the Calvinists ; in his electorate he is said to have expelled one hundred and eleven Calvinist preachers in a single month. Under his son Christian I. (1586-1591) the chief power was wielded by the chancellor Crell, who strongly favoured Calvinism, but, when Christian IT. (1591-1611) came to the throne a mere child, Orell was sacrificed to the Lutheran nobles. The duke of Weimar was made regent,

and continued the persecution of crypto-Calvinism, in spite of the breach with

SAXON DT

The Roman Catholic prelates were moreover reinstated in the three great bishoprics of Meissen, Merseburg, and Naumburg-

[uistory.

the Reformed imperial diet which this course involved. Christian IT. was succeeded by his brother John George I. (1611-1656), under whom the country was devastated by the Thirty Years' War. John George was an amiable but weak prince, totally unfitted to direct the fortunes of a nation in time of danger. He refused the proffered crown of Bohemia, and, when the Bohemian Protestants elected a Calvinist prince, he assisted the emperor against them with men and money. The Restitution Edict, however, in 1629, opened his eyes to the emperor's projects, and he joined Gustavus Adolphus. Saxony now became the theatre of war. The first battle on Saxon soil was fought in 1631 at Breitenfeld, where the bravery of the Swedes made up for the flight of the Saxons. Wallenstein entered Saxony in 1632, and his lieutenants Holk and Gallas plundered, burned, and murdered through the length and breadth of the land. After the death of Gustavus Adolphus at the battle of Liitzen, not far from Leipsic, in 1632, the elector, who was at heart an imperialist, detached himself from the Swedish alliance, and in 1635 concluded the peace of Prague with the emperor. By this peace he was confirmed in the possession of Upper and Lower Lusatia, a district of 180 square miles and half a million inhabitants, which had already been pledged to him as a reward for his services against the Bohemians. Lusatia had once belonged to Conrad of Meissen, whose descendants, however, had lost it to Brandenburg at the beginning of the 14th century. Saxony had now to suffer from the Swedes a repetition of the devastations of Wallenstein. No other country in Germany was so terribly scourged by this terrible war. Immense tracts were rendered absolutely desolate, and whole villages vanished from the map ; the people were tortured to reveal their treasures, or from wanton brutal- ity; famine was followed by plague; civilization was thrown back and barbarism revived. In eight years the population sank from three to one and a half millions. When

the war was at length ended by the peace of Westphalia in 1648, Saxony found that its influence had begun to decline in Germany. Its alliance with the Catholic party deprived it of its place at the head of the Protestant German states, which was now taken by Brandenburg. John George's will made the decline of the electorate even more inevitable by detaching from it the three subsidiary duchies of Saxe-Weissenfels, Saxe- Merseburg, and Saxe-Zeitz in favour of his younger sons. By 1746, however, these lines were all extinct, and their possessions had returned to the main line. Saxe-Neustidt was a short-lived branch from Saxe-Zeitz, extinct in 1714, The next three electors, who each bore the name of John George, had uneventful reigns. The first made some efforts to heal the wounds of his country ; the second wasted the lives of his people in foreign wars against the Turks ; and the third was the last Protestarit elector of Saxony. John George IV. was succeeded by his brother Frederick Augustus I., or Augustus the Strong (1694— 1733). This prince was elected king of Poland as Augustus IT. in 1697, but any weight which the royal title might have given him in the empire was more than counterbalanced by the fact that he, though the ruler of an almost exclusively Protestant electorate, became a Roman Catholic in order to qualify for the new dignity. The connexion with Poland was disastrous for Saxony. In order to defray the expenses of his wars with Charles XIL, which resulted from his Polish policy, Augustus pawned and sold large districts of Saxon territory, while he drained the electorate of both men and money. Fora year before the peace of Altranstédt in 1706, when Augustus gave up the crown of Poland, Saxony was occupied by a Swedish army, which had to be supported at an expense of twenty-

three million thalers. 'The wars and extravagance of the elector-king, who regained the Polish crown in 1709, are said to have cost Saxony a hundred million thalers. From this reign dates the privy council (Geheimes Kabinet), which lasted till 1830. The caste privileges of the estates (Stéinde) were increased by Augustus, a fact which tended to alienate them more from the people, and so to decrease their power. Boéttger made his famous discovery in 1710, and the manufacture of porcelain was begun at Meissen, and in this reign the Moravian Brethren made their settlement at Herrnhut (1722). Frederick Augustus IT. (1733-1763), who succeeded his father in the

electorate, and was afterwards elected to the throne of Poland as Augustus III., was an indolent prince, wholly under the influence of Graf von Briihl. Briihl was an incompetent statesman and an extravagant financier, who yet contrived to amass large sums for his private purse. Under his ill- omened auspices Saxony sided with Prussia in the First Silesian War, and with Austria in the other two. It gained nothing in the first, lost much in the second, and in the third, the Seven Years' War (1756-1763), again became the scene of war and suffered renewed miseries. The country was deserted by its king and his minister, who retired to Poland. By the end of the war it had lost 90,000 men and a hundred million thalers ; its coinage was debased and its trade ruined ; and the whole country was in a state of frantic disorder. The elector died seven months after his return from Poland ; Briihl died twenty- three days later. The elector's son and successor, Frederick Christian, survived his father only two months, leaving a son, Frederick Augustus III. (1763-1827), a boy of thirteen. Prince Xaver, the elector's uncle, was appointed guardian, and he set himself to the sorely-needed work of healing the wounds of the country. The foundation of the famous school of mining at Freiberg, and the improve- ment of the Saxon breed of sheep by the importation of merino sheep from Spain, were due to his care. Frederick assumed the government in 1768, and in his long and eventful reign, which saw the electorate elevated to the dignity of a kingdom, though deprived of more than half its area, he won the surname of the Just. As he was the first king of Saxony, he is usually styled Frederick Augustus I. The first ten years of his active reign passed in peace and quiet; agriculture, manufactures, and industries were fostered, economical reforms instituted ; and the heavy public debt of forty million thalers was steadily reduced. In 1770 torture was abolished. When the Bavarian succession fell open in 1777, Frederick Augustus joined Prussia in protesting against the absorp- tion of Bavaria by the Austrian emperor, and Saxon troops took part in the bloodless " potato-war." The elector commuted his claims in right of his mother, the Bavarian princess Maria Antonia, for six million florins, which he spent chiefly in redeeming Saxon territory that had been pawned to other German states. When Saxony joined the Fiirstenbund in 1785, it had an area of 15,185 square miles and a population of nearly 2,000,000, but its various parts had not yet been combined into a homogeneous whole, for the two Lusatias, Querfurt, Henneberg, and the ecclesiastical foundations of Naumburg and Merseburg had each a separate diet and government,

independent of the diet of the electorate proper. In 1791 Frederick declined the crown of Poland, although it was now offered as hereditary even in the female line. He remembered how unfortunate for Saxony the former Polish connexion had been, and he mistrusted the attitude of Russia towards the proffered kingdom. Next year saw the beginning of the great struggle between France and Germany. Frederick's conduct throughout was perhaps more pusillanimous than self-seeking, but it entailed its own

SAXON Y

By

punishment. His first policy was one of selfish abstention, and from 1793 until 1796, when he concluded a definite treaty of neutrality with France, he limited his contribution to the war to the bare contingent due from him as a prince of the cmpire. When war broke out in 1806 against Napoleon, 22,000 Saxon troops shared the defeat of the Prussians at Jena, but the elector immediately afterwards snatched at Napoleon's offer of neutrality, and abandoned his former ally. At the peace of Posen (11th December 1806) Frederick entered the Confederation of the Rhine, assuming the title of king of Saxony, and promising a contingent of 20,000 men to Napoleon.

No change followed in the internal affairs of the new kingdom, except that Roman Catholics were admitted to equal privileges with Protestants. Its foreign policy was dictated by the will of Napoleon, of whose irresistibility the king was too easily convinced. In 1807 his sub- mission was rewarded with the duchy of Warsaw and the district of Cottbus, though he had to surrender some of his former territory to the new kingdom of Westphalia. The king of Saxony's faith in Napoleon was momentarily shaken by the disasters of the Russian campaign, in which 21,000 Saxon troops had shared, and in 1813 he began to lean towards an alliance with Austria. Napoleon's victory at Ltitzen (May 2, 1813), however, suddenly restored all his awe for that great general, and the Saxon king and the Saxon army were once more at the disposal of the French. After the battle of Bautzen, Napoleon's headquarters were successively at Dresden and Leipsic. During the decisive battle at the latter town in October 1813, the popular Saxon feeling was displayed by the desertion of the Saxon troops to the side of the allies. Frederick was taken prisoner in Leipsic, and the government of his

kingdom was assumed for a year by the Russians, who promptly turned its resources against its late French ally. Saxony was now regarded as a conquered country. Nothing but Austria's vehement desire to keep a powerful neighbour at a distance from her boundaries, preserved it from being completely annexed by the Prussians, who had succeeded the Russians in the government. As it was, the congress of Vienna assigned the northern portion, consisting of 7800 square miles, with 864,404 inhabitants to Prussia, leaving 5790 square niiles, with a population of 1,182,744 to Frederick, who was permitted to retain his royal title. He was forced to acquiesce in the dismemberment of his kingdom, and to console himself with the reflexion that his share, though the smaller half, was richer, more populous, and more beautiful than the other.

From the partition in 1815 to the war of 1866 the history of Saxony is mainly a narrative of the slow growth of constitutionalism and popular liberty within its limits. Its influence on the gencral history of Europe ceased when the old German empire was dis- solved. In the new empire it is too completely overshadowed by Prussia to have any objective importance by itself. Frederick lived twelve years after the division of his kingdom. The com- mercial and industrial interests of the country continued to be fostered, but only a few of the most unavoidable political reforms were grantcd. 'The fact that some of these had not been granted before is more significant than that they were granted now. Religious equality was extended to the Reformed Church in 1818, and the separate dict of Upper Lusatia abolished. Frederick Augustus was.succeeded by his septuagenarian brother Antony (1827-1836), to the great disappointment of the people, who had expected a more liberal era under Prince Frederick Augustus, the king's nephew. Antony announced his intention of following the lines laid down by his predecessor. He accorded at first only a few trifling reforms, which were far from removing the popular discontent, while he retained the unpopular minister Hinsiedel and continued the encouragement of the Roman Catholics. The old feudal arrangement of the diet, with its inconvenient divisions, was retained, and the privy council continued to be the depository of power. Anactive opposition began to make itself evident in the diet and in the press, and in 1830 riots in Leipsic and Dresden impresscd the king with the necessity of concession. Einsiedel was cashiered, Prince Frederick Augustus assumed as co-regent, and a

constitution promised. Aftcr consultation with the diet the king promulgated a new constitution on September 4, 1831, which is the basis of the present government. An offer from Metternich of Austrian arms to repress the discontent by force had becn refused. The feudal estates were replaced by two chambers, largely clective, and the privy eouncil bya responsible ministry of six departments. Bernhard von Lindenau was the head of the first responsible eabinet, and the first constitutional assembly sat from January 27, 1838, till October 30, 1834. While Saxony's political liberty was thus enlarged, its commerce and credit were stimulated by the construction of railways. Antony had died in 1836, and Frederick Augustus IT. (1836-1854) became sole king. Growing interest in politics produced dissatisfaction with the compromise of 1831, and the liberal opposition grew in numbers and influence. The burn- ing questions were the publicity of legal proceedings and the freedom of the press ; and on these the Government sustained its first crushing defeat in the lower or second chamber in 1842. Lindenau resigned in 1848.. Religious considerations as to the recognition of the German Catholics and a new constitution for the Protestant Church began to mingle with purely political questions, and Prince John, as the supposed head of the Jesuit party, was insulted at a review of the communal guards at Leipsic in 1845. The military rashly interfered, and several innocent spectators were shot. The bittcrness which this oceurrence provoked was intensified by a political reaction which was initiated about the same time under Von Kénneritz. Warned by the sympathy excited in Saxony by the revolutionary events at Paris in 1848, the king dismissed his reactionary ministry, and a liberal cabinet took its place in March 1848. The disputed points were now conceded to the country. The privileges of the nobles were eurtailed ; the administration of justice was put on a_ better foot- ing ; the press was unshackled ; publicity in legal proceedings was granted ; trial by jury was introduced for some special cases ; and the German Catholics were recognized. The feudal character of the first chamber was abolished, and its members made mainly elective from among the highest tax-payers, while an almost universal suffrage was introduced for the second chamber. The first demand of the overwhelmingly democratic diet returned under this reform bill was that the king should accept the Frankfort constitution. Frederick, alleging the danger

of acting without the coneurrence of Prussia, refused, and dissolved the diet. A public demonstration at Dresden in favour of the Fraukfort constitution was prohibited as illegal on May 2, 1849. This at once awoke the popular fury. The mob seized the town and barricaded the streets ‘ Dresden was almost destitute of troops ; and the king fled to the Konigstein. The rebels then proceeded to appoint a provisional Government, consisting of Tzschirner, Heubner, and Todt, though the true leader of the insurrection was the Russian Bakunin. Meanwhile Prussian troops had arrived to aid the Government, and after two days’ fierce street fighting the rising was quelled. The bond with Prussia now became closer, and Frederick entered with Prussia and Hanover into the temporary “alliance of the- three kings.” He was not sincere, however, in desiring to exclude Austria, and in 1850 accepted the invitation of that power to send deputies to Frankfort. The first chamber immediately protested against this step, and refused to consider the question of a pressing loan. The king retorted by dissolving the diet and summoning the old estates abolished in 1848. When a quorum, with some difficulty, was obtained, another period of retrograde legislation set in. The constitution of the chambers has never been restored to the basis of 1848. The king himsclf was carried away with the reactionary current, and the pcople remained for the time indifferent. Von Beust became ministcr for both home and foreign affairs in 1852, and under his guidance the policy of Saxony became more and more hostile to Prussia and friendly to Austria. Saxony was not, however, able to withdraw from the eustoms union, which indeed eonferred the very highest benefit on its trade and manufactures. The sudden death of the king, by a fall from his carriage in Tyrol, left the throne to his brother John (1854-1873), a learned and accomplished prince, whose name is known in German literature as a translator and annotator of Dante. His brother’s ministers kept their portfolios, but their vicws gradually be- came somewhat liberalized with the spirit of the times. Beust, however, still retained his federalistic and philo-Austrian views. When war was declared between Prussia and Austria in 1866, Saxony declined the former’s offer of neutrality, and, when a Prussian force crossed the border, the Saxon army under the kin g and the crown prince joined the Austrians in Bohemia. The entire kingdom, with the solitary exception of the Konigstein, was Occupied by the Prussians. On the conclusion of peace Saxony lost no territory, but had to pay a war indemnity of teu million thalers, and was compelled to enter the N orth-German Confedera- tion. Its army and its

postal and telegraph system were placed under the eontrol of Prussia, and its representation at foreign courts was entrusted to the Prussian embassics, Beust was forced to resign; and liberal measures in both church and state were actively carricd through. John was succecded in 1873 by his

elder son Albert (born 1828), who had won distinction as a general in the wars of 1866 and 1870. Under this prinee the general course of politics has presented nothing of special importance, except perhaps the stcady spread of the doctrines of social democracy, which has flourished especially in Saxony. As a loyal member of the new German empire, Saxony has gradually transferred its sympathies from its old ally Austria to its new leader Prussia. In 1877 Leipsic was chosen as the seat of the supreme court of law for the empire.

The political history of the parts of Saxony left by the capitula-

_tion of Wittcnberg to the Ernestine line, which occupy the region

now generally styled Thuringia (Thiiringen), is mainly a recital of partitions, reunions, redivisions, and fresh combinations of territory among the various sous of the suecessive dukes. The principle of primogeniture was not introduced until the end of the 17th century, so that the Protestant Saxon dynasty, instead of building up a single compact kingdom for itself, has split into four petty duchies, of no political influence whatever. In 1547 the ex-elector John Frederick the Magnanimous was allowed to retain Weimar, Jena, Hisenach, Gotha, Henneberg, and Saalfeld. Altenburg and a few other districts were added to the Ernestine possessions by the treaty of Naumburg in 1554, and other addi- tions were made from other sources. John Frederick, who had retained and transmittcd to his descendants the title of duke of Saxony, forbade his sons to divide thcir inheritance; but his wishes were respected only until after the death of his eldést son in 1565. The two survivors then founded separate jurisdictions at Weimar and Coburg, though arrangements were made to exchange territories every three years. In 1596 Saxe-Coburg gave off the branch Saxe-Hisenach ; and in

1603 Saxe-Weimar gave off Saxe- Altenburg, the clder Weimar line ending and the younger begin- ning with the latter date. By 1638 Weimar had absorbed both Coburg and Eisenach ; Altenburg remained till 1672. J ohn, duke of Saxe-Weimar, who died in 1605, is regarded as the common ancestor of the present Ernestine lines. In 1640 his three surviving sons ruled the duchies of Weimar, Eisenach, and Gotha. Eiscnach fell in in 1644 and Altenburg in 1672, thus leaving the dukes of Saxe-Weimar and Saxe-Gotha to become the ancestors of the modern ruling houses. Saxe-Weiiar was still repeatedly divided ; in 1668 a Saxe-Marksuhl appears, and about 1672 a Saxe-Jena and a new Saxe-Hisenach. All these, however, were extinct by 1741, and their possessions returned to the main line, which had adopted the principle of primogeniture in 1719. . The present grand-duchy of SAXE-WEIMAR-EISENACH is separately noticed.

Saxe-Gotha was even more subdivided ; and the climax was reached about 1680, when Gotha, Coburg, Meiningen, Romhild, Kisenberg, Hildburghausen, and Saalfeld were each the capital of a duchy. By the beginning of 1825 only the first three of these and Hildburghausen remained, the lands of the others having been divided after much quarrelling. In that year the Gotha line expired, and a general redistribution of the lands of the ‘‘ Nexus Gothanus,” as this group of duchies was called, was arranged on 12th November 1826. The duke of Hildburghausen gave up his lands entirely for Altenburg and became duke of SAXE-ALTENBURG ; the duke of Coburg exchanged Saalfeld for Gotha and became duke of Saxse-Conpure-GoTHA; and the duke of Saxre-Mrinrncen received Hildburghausen, Saalfeld, and some other territories, and added Hildburghausen to his title. These duchies are separatcly noticed. See also THURINGIA.

GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS,

The kingdom of Saxony, the history of which has been traced above, is the third constituent of the German empire in point of population, and the fifth in point of area. With the exception of the two small exclaves of Zicgelhein in Saxe-Altenburg and Leibsehwitz on the borders of Reuss, Saxe-Weimar, and Saxe- Altenburg, it forms a compact whole of a triangular shape, its base extending from north-east to south-west, and its apex pointing north-

west. It lies between 50°10’ and 51° 29’ N. lat. and between 11° 53’ and 15° 4’ E. long. The total area is 5789 square miles (about half the size of Belgium), or 2°7 per cent. of the entire empire ; its greatest length is 180 miles, and its greatest breadth 93 miles. Its frontiers have a circuit of 760 miles. On the south it is bounded by Bohemia, on the west by Bavaria and the Thuringian states, and on the remaining sides by Prussia. Except on the south, where the Erzgebirge forms at once the limit of the kingdom and of the empire, the boundaries are entirely political. For administrative purposes the kingdom of Saxony is divided into the four districts of Bautzen in the south-east, Dresden in the north-east, Leipsic in the north-west, and Zwickau in the south-west.

Physical Features. —Saxony belongs almost entirely to the central mountain region of Germany, only the districts along the north border and around Leipsie descending into the great North- European plain. The average clevation of the country is not, however, great; and it is morc properly described as hilly than as mountainous. The ordinary estimates return one-fifth of the area as

plain, two-fifths as hill country, and two-fifths as mountain land. The slope is very regularly from south-east to north-west, in the direc- tion of the shorter axis. The chief mountain range is the Erzgebirge, stretching for 90 miles along the sonth border, and reaching in the Fichtelbergs (3979 fcet and 3953 feet) the highest elevation in the kingdom. The west and south-west half of Saxony is more or less oceupied by the ramifications and subsidiary groups of this range, one of which is known from its position as the Central Saxon chain, and another lower group still farther north as the Oschatz group. The south-east angle of Saxony is occupied by the mountains of Upper Lusatia (highest summit 2600 feet), which form the link between the Erzgebirge and Riesengebirge in the great Sudetic chain. North-west from this group, and along both banks of the Elbe, which divides it from the Erzgebirge, extends the picturesque mountain region known as the Saxon Switzerland. The action of water and ice upon the soft sandstone of which the hills here are chiefly composed has produced remarkable formations of deep gorges and isolated fantastie peaks, which,

however, though both beautiful and interesting, by no means recall the characteristics of Swiss scenery. The highest summit attains a height of 1830 feet ; but the more interesting peaks, as the Lilienstein, Konigstein, and the Bastei, are lower. With the trifling exception of the south-east of Bautzen, which sends its waters by the Neisse to the Oder, Saxony lies wholly in the basin of the Elbe, which has a navigable course of 72 miles from south-east to north-west through the kingdom. Comparatively few of the numerous smaller streams of Saxony flow directly to the Elbe, and the larger tributaries only join it beyond the Saxon borders. The Mulde, formed of two branches, is the second river of Saxony; others are the Black Elster, the White Elster, the Pleisse, and the Spree. There are no lakes of any size, but mineral springs are very abundant. The best known is at Bad Elster in the Voigtland.

Olimate.—The climate of Saxony is generally healthy. It is mildest in the valleys of the Elbe, Mulde, and Pleisse, and severest in the Erzgebirge, where the district near Johanngeorgenstadt is known as Saxon Siberia. The average temperature, like that of central Germany as a whole, varies from 48° to 50° Fahr.; in the Elbe valley the mean in summer is from 62° to 64°, and in winter about 30°; in the Erzgebirge the mean temperature in summer is from 55° to 57°, and in winter 23° or 24°. The Erzgebirge is also the rainiest district, 274 to 334 inches falling per annum; the amount decreases as we proceed northwards, and Leipsic with an annual fall of 153 to 214 inches enjoys the driest climate.

Soil,—Saxony is one of the most fertile parts of Germany; and in regard to the productive occupation of its soil it stands among the most advanced nations of the world. Only 1 per cent. of the total area is waste or unused. According to the returns for 1883, 55-7 per cent. of the area is under agriculture, 11 ‘7 in pasture and meadow, 27‘4 under forest, and 4‘2 occupied by buildings, roads, and water. The lowest lands are the most productive, and fertility diminishes as we ascend towards the south, until on the bleak crest of the Erzgebirge cultivation ceases altogether. Saxon agriculture, though dating its origin from the Wends, has received its full development only in the present century. Long fettered by antiquated customs, the land was subdivided into small parcels and subjected to vexatious rights. But in 1834 a law was passed providing for the union of

the scattered lands belonging to each proprietor, and that may be considered the dawn of modern Saxon agriculture, which has now reached a very high pitch of excellence. It has been fostered both publicly and privately, and a special official secretary assists the minister of the interior in attending to this branch of national prosperity. In 1883 the agricultural lands in Saxony were divided among 192,000 farmers or proprietors, of whom only 758 held 250 acres and upwards, 28,200 between 25

and 250 acres, and the rest less than 25 acres. The small pro-.

prietors held 28°7 per cent. of the total area, the middle class 572, and the large owners 14°1. The richest grain districts are near Meissen, Grimma, Bautzen, Dobeln, and Pirna. The chief crop is rye, but oats are hardly second to it. Wheat and barley are grown in considerably less quantity. Very large quantities of potatoes are grown, especially in the Voigtland. Beet is chiefly grown as fecding stuff for cattle, and not for sugar. Flax (8270 acres in 1888) is grown in the Erzgebirge and Lusatian mountains, where the manufacture of linen was at one time a flourishing domestic industry. Saxony owes its unusual wealth in fruit to the care of the paternal elector Augustus (1553-1586), who is said never to have stirred abroad without fruit seeds for distribution among the peasants and farmers. Enormous quantities of cherries, plums, and apples are annually borne by the trees round Leipsie, Dresden, and Colditz. The cultivation of the vine in Saxony is respectable for its antiquity, though the yield is insig- nificant. Wine is said to have been grown here in the 11th century; the Saxon vineyards, chiefly on the banks of the Elbe near Meissen and Dresden, occupied 2515 acres in 1883.

Live Stock.—According to returns made for 1883 Saxony con- tained 126,886 horses, 651,329 cattle, 149,037 sheep, 355,550 pigs, and 116,547 goats. Thc brecding of horses is carried on to a very

sh xk ON Y 307

limited extent in Saxony, more than nine-tenths of the horses required being imported. Cattle-rearing, which has been an industry since the advent of the Wends in the 6th century, has attained very considerable importance on the extensive pastures of the Erzgebirge and in the Voigtland. Sheep-farming

has consider- ably declined within the last few decades, as in most parts of northern Germany. While other classes of domestic animals have retained very much the same proportion to the number of the human population, sheep have decreased from one to every six inhabitants in 1861 to one to every twenty in 18838. In 1765 the regent Prince Xaver imported 300 merino sheep from Spain, and

‘ go improved the native breed by this new strain that Saxon sheep

were eagerly imported by foreign nations to improve their flocks, and “Saxon electoral wool” became one of the best brands in the market. The high level was not long maintained; flock-masters began to pay more attention to quantity than to quality of wool, and the Saxon wool has accordingly deteriorated. In 1868 no less than 1,166,130 lbs. of wool were offered for sale in the wool markets of Saxony, of which Leipsic and Dresden are the chief; in 1884 only 276,843 lbs. were offered. Swine furnish a very large proportion of the flesh-diet of the people. Geese abound particularly round Leipsic and in Upper Lusatia, poultry about Bautzen. Bee-keeping flourishes on the heaths on the right bank of the Elbe; in 1883 there were 53,756 bee-hives in Saxony. Game is not now very abundant; hares and partridges are shot in the plains to the north-west.

Forests.—The forests of Saxony are extensive, and have long been well cared for both by Government and by private proprietors. The famous school of forestry at Tharandt was founded in 1811. The Voigtland is the most densely wooded portion of the kingdom, and next comes the Erzgebirge. About 8,379,200 acres, or 85 per cent. of the whole forest land, were planted with coniferous trees ; and about 1,439,700 acres or 15 per cent. with deciduous trees, ainong which beeches and birches are the commonest. About 30 per cent. of the total belongs to Government.

Minerals. —The mineral wealth of Saxony is very considerable ; and its mines are among the oldest in Germany. Silver was raised in the 12th century, and argentiferous lead is still the most valuable ore mined; tin, iron, and cobalt rank next; and coal is one of the chief exports. Copper, zinc, and bismuth are also worked. Saxon mines now produce about 6 per cent. of the gross quantity, and about 8 per cent. of the aggregate value of metals raised in Germany. ‘The country is divided into four mining districts :—Freiberg,

where silver and lead are the chief products ; Altenberg, where tin is mainly raised; Schneeberg, yielding cobalt, nickel, and ironstone; and J ohanngeorgenstadt, with ironstone and silver mincs. ‘There are in all 236 mines, but in 1888 only 150 of these were in operation, employing 8615 hands. In 1870 253 mines employcd 9132 hands. The total value of metal raised in Saxony in 1883 was £288,200 ; in 1870 it was £314,916, Coal is found principally in two fields,—one near Zwickau, and the other in the circle of Dresden. Brown coal or lignite is found chiefly in the north and north-west, but not in sufficiently large quantities to be exported. The number of coal- mines is steadily decreasing, though the numbers of miners and the gross produce are both on the increase. The following table shows the output in tons sinee the years named :—

Anthraeite. Value.

Hands. Coal. Lignite.

346 | £1,088, 625

345 1,363,780 280 1,510,863

1870 | 242 | 16,811 | 2,608,705 | 506,687 1880 | 189 | 19,625 | 3,622,007 | 590,119 1883 | 166 | 20,136 | 4,088,484 | 648,044

Peat is especially abundant on the Erzgebirge. Immense quantities of brieks are made all over the country. Excellent sandstone for building is found on the hills of the Elbe ; in 1883 266 quarries employed 1848 hands. Fine porcelain clay occurs near Meissen, and coarser varieties elsewhere. A few precious stones are found among the southern mountains. Saxony has no salt-mines. Industries. —The Central-European position of Saxony has fostered its commerce ; and its manufactures have been encouraged by the abundant water-power throughout the kingdom. Nearly one-half of the motive power used in Saxon factories is supplied by the streams, of which the Mulde, in this respect, is the chief. The early foundation of the Leipsic fairs, and the enlightened policy of the rulers of the country, have also done inuch to develop its commercial and industrial resources. Next to agriculture, which supports about 20 per cent. of the population, by far the most important industry is the textile. Saxony carries on 26 per cent. of the

whole textile industry in Germany, a share far in excess of its proportionate population. Prussia, which has more than nine times as many inhabitants, carries on 45 per cent., and no other state more than 8 per cent. Nearly 18} per cent. of the population were engaged in this industry in 1882, by far the largest proportion in any German state except Reuss (alterer L.inie), which had 36 per cent. so engaged. The chief seats of the

manufacture are Zwickau, Chemnitz, Glauchau, Meerane, and Hohenstein in the south of Zwiekau, and Camenz, Pulsnitz, and Bischofswerda in the north of Dresden. The centre of the cotton manufacture (especially of cotton hosiery) is Chemnitz ; cotton-muslins are made throughout the Voigtland, ribbons at Pulsnitz and its neighbourhood. Woollen cloth and buekskin are woven at Camenz, Bischofswerda, and Grossenhain, all in the north-east, woollen and half-woollen underelothing at Chemnitz, Glauchau, Meerane, and Reichenbach ; while Bautzen and Limbach produce woollen stockings. Linen is manufactured chiefly in the mountains of Lusatia, where the looms are still to some extent found in the homes of the weavers. The coarser kinds only are now made, owing to the keen English competition in the finer varieties. Damask is produced at Gross-Schénau and Neu-Schénau. Lace- making, discovered or introduced by Barbara Uttmann in the latter half of the 16th century, and now fostered by Govern- ment schools, has long been an important domestic industry among the villages of the Erz Mountains. Straw-plaiting occupies 6000 hands on the mountain slopes between Gottleuba and Lockwitz. Waxcloth is manufactured at Leipsic, and artificial flowers at Leipsic and Dresden. Stoneware and carthenware are made at Chemnitz, Zwickau, Bautzen, and Meissen, porcelain (“ Dresden china”) at Meissen, chemicals in and near Leipsie. Débeln, Werdau, and Lossnitz are the chief seats of the Saxon leather trade ; cigars are very extensively made in the town and district of Leipsic, and hats and pianofortes at Leipsic, Dresden, and Chemnitz. Paper is made chiefly in the west of the kingdom, but docs not keep pace with the demand. Machinery of all kinds is produced, from the sewing-machines of Dresden to the steam- locomotives and marine-engines of Chemnitz. The last-named place, though the centre of the iron-manufacture of Saxony, has to import every pound of iron by railway. The leading branch is the machinery used in the

industries of the country—mining, paper- making, and weaving. The very large printing trade of Leipsic eneourages the manufacture of printing-presses in that city. In 1883-84 Saxony contained 744 active breweries and 683 distil- leries. The tendency in this branch of industry is to extinguish the smaller establishments, and to form large joint-stock com- panies. The smelting and refining of the metal ores is also an important industry. The chief smelting works, at Freiberg, employed 1377 hands in 1888.

Prade.—Leipsic, with its famous and still frequented fairs, is the focus of the trade of Saxony. The fur trade between eastern and western Europe and the book-trade of Germany centre here. Chemnitz, Dresden, Plauen, Zwickau, Zittau, and Bautzen are the other chief commercial eities. The principal exports are wool, woollen, eotton, and linen goods, and the other produce of the factories and of the mines.

Communication.—The roads of Saxony are numerous and good. In 1888 there were 2304 miles of road in the kingdom. Saxony was the first German state to encourage and develop a railway system, and, although at first private enterprise led the way, the Saxon lines are now almost exclusively in the hands of Govern- ment. The first railway, between Leipsic and Althen, was opened on April 24, 1837. In 1837 there were 9 miles of state railway ; in 1840, 71 miles; in 1850, 250; in 1870, 685; in 1880, 1184; and in 1884, 1355 miles, which, together with 75 miles of private line, mostly worked by the state, employed 24,400 hands. There are no canals in Saxony, and the only navigable river is the Elbe.

Popwlation.—In 1880 the population of Saxony was 2,972,805, or

% per cent. of the total population of the German empire, on 2°7 per cent. of its area. The provisional returns of the census of 1885 gave a population of 3,179,168. With the exeeption of the free towns, Saxony is the most densely peopled member of the empire, and its population is increasing at a more rapid rate than is the case in any of the larger German states, In 1880 Saxony had 513°5 inhabitants per square mile, nearly three times as many as Bavaria ; Prussia had 202°8, and the average for the empire was 216°7. More than half (56 per cent.) of the people live in communities of over 2000 inhabitants. The following table shows the distribu- tion of the

population among the four administrative districts, It will be noticed that the industrial district of Zwickau is the most densely peopled.

ee

‘ : ee aes ee Population. vere ‘Miles. SanMenes Mile. Bauitaenk,,.....0-351,326 9538 368 °6 Dresden ARB ater 808,512 1675 482°7 ee 707,826 1377 514°0 Zwiekau……..... 1,105,141 1784 619-4

a ee ee ee | The growth of the population since 1815, when the kingdom received its present limits has been as follows :—in 1815, 1,178,802; in 1880, 1,402,066 ; in 1840, 1,706,275; in 1864, 2,344,094; and in 1875, 2,760,586, The number of marriages per 1000 inhabitants is between 8 and

Sax Ox TF

[GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

9; the birth-rate is 48, and the death-rate 30 per thousand, The annual increase of the population, on the average of the five years between 1875 and 1880, is at the rate of 1°48 per cent, The death-rate in Saxony is the highest in Germany, but its birth-rate is also the highest, except in the small state of Reuss (alterer Linie). In 1883, out of 132,209 births, 16,990, or 12°8 per cent., were illegitimate, and 4935, or 3°7 per cent., were still-born, and these rates represent tolerably accurately the average of the last few years. In the relative number of suicides (311 per 1,000,000 inhabitants) Saxony ranks highest among the European states (see Morselli, Jnt. Sez. Ser., vol. xxxvi.). In 1884 1114 persons, of whom 861 were males, committed suicide. In the same year 17,706 persons were punished as vagrants.

The preponderating industrial activity of Saxony fosters the tendeney of the population to concentrate in towns; with the exception of the free towns and Anhalt, no German state has so large a proportion of urban population, ¢.¢., inhabitants residing in communities of 2000 persons and upwards. In the empire as a whole 41°4 per cent. of the population is urban in this sense ; in Saxony the proportion rises to 56°6 per cent. The largest towns are Dresden (245,515 inhabitants), the capital since the middle of the 16th century,

Leipsic (170,076), and Chemnitz (110, 693). Eighteen other towns, chiefly in the manufacturing district of Zwickau, have over 10,000 inhabitants, and thirty-five between 5000 and 10,000. The main results of the industrial census of 1882, which shows an increase of population since 1880 of 42,000, are summarized in the following table, which gives the number of persons (including wives, families, and dependants) supported by the several occupations, and the percentage of the total population :—

Occupations. Persons. | Percentage.

. Agriculture, forestry, and fishing……. . Tiduigteial pumenntge, ...1vemesteann NOG 5 aa waaay Domestic servants and general labourers . Official, military, and professional classes . Not returned under any occupation…

602,378 1,695,895 360,675 58,584 148,361 153,929

2 OU CO DD Et

The people of Saxony are chiefly of pure Teutonic stock ; a pro- portion are Germanized Slavs, and in the south of Bautzen there are still about 50,000 Wends, who retain their peculiar customs and language. In some villages near Bautzen hardly a word of German is spoken.

fieligious Statistics.—About 97 per cent. of the inhabitants of Saxony are Protestants ; between 6000 and 7000 are J ews, and the remainder, including the royal family, are mostly Roman Catholics. According to the religious census of 1880, 2,886,806 were livangeli- cals, 74,333 Roman Catholics, 1467 German Catholics, 620 Angli- cans, 453 Greck Catholies, 6518 Jews, and 339 ‘‘others.” The Evangelical-Lutheran or State Church had 1180 pastors and 1393 places of worship in 1884. 1ts head is the minister ‘‘de evangelicis ” so long as the king is Roman Catholic ; and its management is vested in the Evangelical Consistory at Dresden. Its representative assembly, consisting of twenty-nine clergymen and thirty-five lay- men is called a synod (Synode). The Roman Catholic Church has enjoyed the patronage of the reigning family since 1697, though it was the peace of Posen (1806) which placed it on a level with the Lutherans. By the peace of Prague, which transferred Upper Lusatia to Saxony in 1635,

stipulations were made in favour of the Roman Catholics of that region, who are ecclesiastically in the Jurisdiction of the cathedral chapter of St Peter at Bautzen, the dean of which has ex officio a seat in the first chamber of the diet. The other districts are managed by an apostolic vicariate at Dresden, under the direction of the minister of public worship. Two nunneries in Bautzen are the only conventual establishments in Saxony, and no others may be founded. Among the smaller religious sects the MorAvVIAN BRETHREN (q.v.), whose chief scat is at Herrnhut, are perhaps the most interesting. In 1868 civil rights were declared to be independent of religious confession.

Education. —Saxony claims to be one of the most highly educated countries in Europe, and its foundations of schools and universities were among the earlicst in Germany. Of the four universities founded by the Saxon electors at Leipsic, Jena, Wittenberg, and Erfurt, only the first is included in the present kingdom of Saxony. It is second only to Berlin in the number of its students. The endowed schools (Fiirstenschulen) at Meissen and Grimina have long enjoyed a high reputation. Besides these there are 12 other gymnasia, 13 realschulen of the first class, and 19 of the second class, the organization of which resembles that already described in detail under Prussra. ‘There are nearly 4000 elementary and pre- paratory schools ; and education is compulsory. Of 8856 recruits in 1883-84 only 18 (‘15 per cent.) were unable to read and write. Saxony is particularly well-equipped with technical schools, the textile industries being especially fostered by numerous schools of weaving, embroidery, lace-making, &c. ; but the mining academy ot. Freiberg and the school of forestry at Tharandt are probably the

most widely known. The conservatory of music at Leipsic enjoys a world-wide reputation ; not less the art-collections at Dresden. Constitution.—Saxony is a constitutional monarchy and a member of the German empire, with four votes in the federal council and twenty-threc in the reichstag. The constitution rests on a law promulgated on 4th September 1831, and subsequently ameuded. The crown is hereditary in the Albertine Saxon line, with reversion to the Ernestine line, of which the duke of Saxe- Weimar is

now the head. The king enjoys a civil list of 2,940,000 marks or £147,000, while the apanages of the crown, including the payments to the other members of the royal house, amount to £15,670more. The legislature (Standeversammlung) is bicameral,— the constitution of the co-ordinate chambers being finally settled by a law of 1868 amending the enactment of 1831. The first chamber consists of the adult princes of the blood, five hereditary members from among the nobility, representatives of the Lutheran and Roman Catholic Churches, a representative of Leipsic university, twelve representatives of proprietors with landed property of an annual value of at least £150, elected for life, and ten representa- tives of the same class nominated for life by the crown, the chief magistrates of the eight principal towns, and five other life members, chosen without any restrictions by the king. The second chamber consists of thirty-five members from the towns and forty-five from the country, elected for six years. All male citizens twenty-five years old and upwards who pay one thaler (8s.) per annuin in taxes have the suffrage ; and all above thirty years of age who pay 10 thalers in annual taxes are cligible as members of the diet. ‘The chambers must be convened at least once every two years ; and extraordinary meetings take place at every change of ruler and on other special occasions. One-third of the members of

the second chamber retire at the end of every period of two years. |

With the exception of the hereditary and some of the ex-officio members of the first chamber, the members of the diet are entitled to an allowance (12s.) for their daily expenses, as well as their travelling expenses. The executive consists of a responsible min- istry (Gesammtministerium), with the six departments of justice, finance, home affairs, war, public worship and education, and foreign affairs. The minister of the royal household does not belong to the cabinet. The constitution also provides for the formation of a kind of privy council (Staatsrath), consisting of the cabinet ministers and other members appointed by the king.

For administrative purposes Saxony is divided into four Kreishauptmannschaften or governmental departments, subdivided into fifteen Amtshauptmannschaften and one hundred and sixteen Aemter. The cities of Dresden and Leipsic form departments by themselves. The

supreme court of law for both civil and criminal cases is the Oberlandes-Gericht at Dresden, subordinate to which are seven other courts in the other principal towns and one hundred and five inferior tribunals. The German imperial code was adopted by Saxony in 1879. Leipsic is the seat of the imperial supreme court.

Finance.—The Saxon financial period embraces a space of two years. For 1884-5 the “ordinary” budget showed an income of £3,496,000, balanced by the expenditure, which included a reserve fund of £29,400. The chief sources of income were taxes (£1,377,293, including £899,975 of direct taxes), state-railways (£1,357,890), and the public forests and domains (£359,171). Lotterics brought in £232,270, and the royal porcelain manufacture £17,500. The chief expenditure was on the interest (£1,135,681) and sinking fund (£410,000) of the national debt. The “ extraordinary” budget, applying exclusively to public works, showed an income and expenditure tallying at £882,800. The national debt, incurred almost wholly in making and buying railways, amounted on Ist January 1885 to £32,670,300, mostly paying interest at the rate of 4 per cent.

Army.—The Saxon army is modelled on that of Prussia. It forms the 12th army corps in the imperial German army, and con- sists of the 23rd and 24th divisions, with headquarters at Dresden and Leipsic respectively. On its peace-footing the Saxon contingent includes 20,500 infantry, 4180 cavalry, and 3000 artillery ; in war it has 75,800 infantry, 6680 cavalry, and 8050 artillery.

The statistical information in the above article has been derived chiefly from the Xalendar und statistisches Jahrbuch fiir das Kénigreich Sachsen (Dresden, 1875-86) and the Zeitschrift des Kéniglichen Sdchsischen statistischen Bureau (Dresden, 1855-85). The Staatshandbuch ftir das Kénigreich Sachsen is an annual official register. Engelhardt’s Vaterlandskunde fiir Schule und Haus im Koénigreich Sachsen (Dresden, 8d cd. by Flathe, 1877) contains a comprehensive account of the country and its resources; and Daniel’s Handbuch der Geographie

Leipsic, 1881) clearly summarizes the principal points. The standard history of axony is Béttiger’s Geschichte des Kurstaats und K6nigreichs Sachsens (8 vols., Gotha, 3d ed., edited and continucd by Flathe, 1867-73), Brandes’s

Grundriss der Sdichsischen Geschichte (Leipsic, 1860) is a succinct but soniewhat dry sum- mary. Other leading works on the subjects are Gretschel, Geschichte des Séichsischen Staats und Volks (3 vols., Leipsic, 2d ed., continued by Bulau, 1862-63); Meynert, Geschichte des Stichsischen Volks (2 vols., Leipsic, 1833-85) 5 Heinrich, Sdchsische Geschichte (2 vols., Leipsic, 1810-12); and Weissc, Geschichte der Kursdchsischen Staaten (7 vols., Leipsic, 1802-12). The publication of the Codex Diplomaticus Saxonix Regi was begun in 1864 under the carc of Gersdorf, and has been continued undcr Posse and Emerisch. Posse has also published Die Markgrafen von Meissen und das Haus Wettin bis zu Konrad dem Grossen (Leipsic, 1881); and Emerisch is the cditor of the Neue Archiv fiir Sdchsische Geschichte (Leipsie, 6 vols.), whieh contains full information as to works on the

history of the country. Weber's older Archiv ftir die Stichsische Geschichte appeared in 1864 sq.; and a still older periodical publication on the subject is Von Braun's Monatlicher Auszug aus der Geschichte des Kur- und Firstlichen Hauses Sachsens (6 vols., Langensalza, 1778-81). See also Tutschmann's Atlas zur Geschichte der Sdchsischen Lander (Grimma, 1852). (F. MU.)

SAXONY, Prussran (Germ. Provinz Sachsen), one of the central provinces of the kingdom of Prussia, consists mainly of what was formerly the northern part of the kingdom of Saxony (ceded to Prussia in 1815), but also comprises the duchy of Magdeburg, the Altmark, and other districts, the connexion of which with Prussia is of earlier date. The area of the province is 9750 square miles. On the W. it is bounded by Hesse-Nassau, Hanover, and Brunswick, on the N. by Hanover and Brandenburg, on the E. by Brandenburg and Silesia, and on the 8S. by the kingdom of Saxony and the small Thuringian states. It is, however, very irregular in form, entirely surrounding parts of Brunswick and the Thuringian states, and itself possessing several 'exclaves," while the northern portion of the province is almost entirely severed from the southern by the duchy of Anhalt. The major part of the province is flat and belongs to the great North- German

plain, but the western and south-western districts are hilly, including parts of the Harz (with the Brocken, 3417 feet) and the Thuringian Forest. About nine- tenths of Prussian Saxony belongs to the system of the Elbe, the chief feeders of which within the province are the Saale and the Mulde, but a small district on the west drains into the Weser. The saltwater lakes between Halle and Eisleben are the only lakes of the kind in Prussia.

Saxony is on the whole the most fertile province of Prussia, and excels all the others in its produce of wheat and beetroot sugar (as well as in salt, brown coal, and copper), but the nature of its soil is very unequal. The best crop-producing districts lie near the base of the Harz Mountains, such as the ‘ Magdeburger Borde” and the ‘Goldene Aue,” and rich pasture lands occur in the river valleys, but the sandy plains of the Altmark, in the north part of the province, yield but a scanty return for the husbandman’s toil.

Of the total area of the province 61 per cent. is occupied by arable land, 18 per cent. by meadows and pastures, and 20°5 per cent. by forests. Wheat and rye are raised in such abundance as to allow of a considerable export, while the other grain crops meet the local demand. The beetroot for sugar is grown chiefly in the district to the north of the Harz, as far as the Ohre, and on the banks of the Saale; and the amount of sugar produced (upwards of 400,000 tons in 1883-84) is nearly as much as that of all the rest of Prussia together. Flax, hops, and seeds for oil are also cultivated to some extent, and large quantities of excellent fruit are grown at the foot of the Harz and in the valleys of the Unstrut and the Saale. The market-gardening of Erfurt is well-known throughout Germany. Wine, of indifferent quality, is produced in the vicinity of Naumburg. Saxony is comparatively poor in timber, though there are some fine forests in the Harz and other hilly districts. Cattle-rearing is carried on with success in the river valleys, and more goats are met with here than in any other part of Prussia. The live-stock census for 1883 gave the following figures :—horses, 182,485; cattle, 624,973; sheep, 1,390,915; pigs, 719,627 ; goats, 261,225. (Compare the tables under Prussia, vol. xx. p. 14.)

The principal underground wealth of Prussian Saxony consists of its salt and its brown coal, of both of which it possesses larger stores than any other part of the German empire. The rock-salt mines and brine springs (the chief

of which are at Stassfurt, Schonebeck, Halle, &c.) produced in 1883-4 no less than 256,000 tons of salt, while the annual output of brown coal amounts to about 8 million tons, or more than the entire yield of the rest of Germany. Prussian Saxony also possesses three-fourths of the wealth of Germanyin copper, the yield in 1883 amounting to 445,000 tons of ore and 11,000 tons of the pure metal. The copper inincs are found chiefly in the Harz district. Theother mineral resources include silver (one-third of the total German yield), pit-coal, pyrites, alum, plaster of Paris, sulphur, alabaster, and several varieties of good building-stone. Numerous mineral springs occur in the Harz.

In addition to the production of sugar already noted, the most important industries are the manufactures of cloth, leather, iron and steel wares (chiefly at Suhl and Sdémmerda), spirits (Nord-

See Plate V.

hausen), chemicals (Stassfurt), and starch. Beer is also brewed extensively in Prussian Saxony, where the annual consumption per head (107 quarts) is considerably in excess of the average for the kingdom. Trade is much facilitated by the great waterway of the Elbe, as well as by a very complete system of railways, The chief articles are wool, grain, sugar, salt, lignite, and the principal manufactured products named above. ;

The population of the province of Saxony in 1880 was 2,312,007, including 2,154,663 Protestants, 145,518 Roman Catholics, and 6700 Jews ; in 1885, according to provisional census returns, the population was 2,427,968. The great bulk of the inhabitants are of unmixed German stock, but many of those in the east part of the province have Wendish blood in their veins. The province belongs to the more thickly populated parts of Germany, the average being 237 persons to the square mile, and the ratio of the urban population to the rural is about as 44 to 54. The occupation census of 1882 gives the following percentages for the different classes of the population : —agricultural, 36°78; industrial, 35°18 ; trade, 8°15; domestic servants and day labourers, 8°70; official and professional, 5°12.

Prussian Saxony is divided into the three government districts of Magdeburg, Merseburg, and Erfurt. Magdeburg is the most important town and the headquarters of an army corps, but the provincial chambers meet at Merseburg. The province sends twenty members to the reichstag and thirty-eight to the Prussian house of representatives. The religious control of the district is in the hands of a consistory at Magdeburg; the Roman Catholics belong to the diocese of Paderborn. The university of Halle holds a high rank among German seats of learning, and the other educa- tional requirements of the province are adequately provided for. The illiterate recruits of this province in 1888-4 numbered only 13 out of a total of 7868, equivalent to 0°17 per cent. The prin- cipal towns are Magdeburg (about 150,000 inhabitants, including Neustadt and Buekau), Halle (81,869), Erfurt (58,307), Halberstadt (34,048), Nordhausen, Miihlhausen, and Aschersleben,

The history of the present Prussian province of Saxony as such dates only from 1815, and is, of course, merely of local interest. The previous history of its constituent parts, of considerable more interest and importance, must be sought for under the various headings that will suggest themselves, such as SAXONY (supra), Prussia, Macpesure, ErFurt, &c. It is, however, worth noting that the province comprises the Altmark or old North Mark that formed the kernel of the Prussian state (see Prussta, vol. xx. p. 2), and also the old bishoprics on the Elbe and Saale, from which as a centre the Christianization of Germany mainly spread. And the leading position of this part of Germany in promoting the Reformation should also be remembered.

SAY, Jean Baptiste (1767-1832), an eminent French political economist, was born at Lyons 5th January 1767. His father, Jean Etienne Say, was of a Protestant family which had originally belonged to Nimes, but had removed to Geneva for some time in consequence of the revocation of the edict of Nantes. Young Say was intended to follow a commercial career, and was accordingly sent, with his brother Horace, to England, and lived first at Croy- don, in the house of a merchant, to whom he acted as clerk, and afterwards at London, where he was in the service of another employer. When, on the death of the latter, he returned to France, he was employed in the office of a life assurance company directed by Claviére, afterwards known in politics. It was Claviére who called his attention to the Wealth of

Nations, and the study of that work revealed to him his vocation. His first literary attempt was a pamphlet on the liberty of the press, pub- lished in 1789. He worked under the celebrated Mira- beau on the Courrier de Provence. In 1792 he took part as a volunteer in the campaign of Champagne; in 1793 he assumed, in conformity with the Revolutionary fashion, the pre-name of Atticus, and became secretary to Claviére, then finance minister. He married in 1793 Mlle. Deloche, daughter of a former avocat au conseil ; the young pair were greatly straitened in means in consequence of the depreciation of the assignats. From 1794 to 1800 Say edited a periodical entitled La Décade philosophique, lit- téraire, et politique, in which he expounded the doctrines of Adam Smith. He had by this time established his reputation as a publicist, and, when the consular govern- ment was established in the year VIII (1799), he was selected as one of the hundred members of the tribunate,

and resigned, in consequence, the direction of the Decade. He published in 1800 Olhie, ow Essai sur les moyens de réformer les meeurs d’une nation.

In 1803 appeared his principal work, the Traité @ Economie Politique. In 1804, having shown his unwill- ingness to sacrifice his convictions for the purpose of furthering the designs of Napoleon, he was removed from the office of tribune, being at the same time nominated to a lucrative post, which, however, he thought it his duty to resign. He then turned to industrial pursuits, and, having made himself acquainted with the processes of the cotton manufacture, founded at Auchy, in the Pas de Calais, a spinning-mill which employed four or five hundred persons, principally women and children, He devoted his leisure hours to the improvement of his economic treatise, which had for some time been out of print, but which the censorship did not permit him to republish; and in 1814 he availed himself (to use his own words) of the sort of liberty arising from the entrance of the allied powers into France to bring out a second edition of the work, dedicated to the emperor Alexander, who had professed himself his pupil. Inthe same year the French Government sent him to study the economic condition of Great Britain. The results of his observations during his journey through England and Scotland appeared in a tract De

VAngleterre et des Anglais; and his conversations with distinguished men in those countries contributed, he tells us, to give greater correctness to the exposition of prin- ciples in the third edition of the Traité, which appeared in 1817. A chair of industrial economy was founded for him in 1819 at the Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers, in which he lectured with ability and success. In 1831 he was made professor of political economy at the Collége de France. He published in 1828-30 his Oours Complet d'Economie Politique pratique, which is in the main an expansion of the Z'raité, with practical applications. In his later years he became subject to attacks of nervous apoplexy, which increasingly reduced his strength. He lost his wife, to whom he was fondly attached, in January 1830; and from that time his health constantly declined. When the revolution of that year broke out, he was named a member of the council-general of the department of the Seine, but found it necessary to resign that position. He died at Paris 16th November 1832, leaving behind him a well-earned reputation for private worth and polit- ical integrity.

Say was essentially a propagandist, not an originator. His great service to mankind lies in the fact that he disseminated throughout Europe by means of the French language, and popularized by his clear and easy style, the economic doctrines of Adam Smith. It is true that his French panegyrists (and he is not himself free from censure on this score) are unjust in their estimate of Smith as an expositor ; they give falsc or exaggerated ideas of his obscurity, his prolixity, and his want of method ; and they accordingly extol too highly the merits of Say. Those merits are, however, real and considerable ; his writings were without doubt very effective in diffusing throughout Continental Europe a taste for economic inquiry and a knowledge of its principal results. On the side of the philosophy'of science Say is weak ; his observations on that subject are usually commonplace or superficial. Thus he accepts the shallow dictum of Condillac that toute science se réduit & wne langue bien faite. He recognizes political economy and statistics as alike sciences, and represents the distinction between them as having never been made before him, though he quotes what Smith had said of political arithmetic. Whilst always deserving the praise of honesty, sincerity, and independence, he is very inferior to his great predecessor in breadth of view on moral and political questions. In his general conception of human affairs there is a tendency to regard too exclusively the material

side of things, whieh made him pre-eminently the economist of the French liberal bourgeoisie ; thus Storch justly censures the levity with which he doubts the necessity of a public religious cultus, suggesting that enlightened nations might dispense with it “as the Pacific islanders do.” He is inspired with the dislike and jealousy of Governments so often felt and expressed by thinkers formed in the social atmosphere of the last century. Soldiers are for him uot merely

| |

unproduetive labourers, as Smith ealled them; they are rather “destruetive labourers.” ‘‘A nation might,” he says, “strietly speaking, subsist without a government, each profession exchang- ing the fruits of its labours with the products of the labours of others,’—a remark whieh betrays the notion that eeonomic coin- eides with soeial life. Taxes are uneompensated payments ; they are plagues like hail, war, or depredation; they may fitly be deseribed as of the nature of robbery. When he says, “ Lorsqu’ on vous vend un privilége, comme le droit de ehasse, ou seulement de port d’arines, on vous vole votre droit naturel d’étre armé pour le vous vendre aprés l’avoir volé,” we see that we are still in the region of the jus naturz, which lies at the basis of all the old eeonomics.

Say is considered to have brought out the importanee of eapital as a factor in production more distinetly than the English eeono- mists, who unduly emphasized labour. The special doctrines most eommonly mentioned as due to him arc—(1) that of ‘‘immaterial produets,” and (2) what is ealled his ‘‘théorie des débouchés.” Objecting, as Germain Garnier had done before him, to Smith’s well-known distinetion between produetive and unproduetive labour, he maintains that, produetion consisting in the ereation or addition of a utility, all useful labour is productive. He is thus led to reeognize immaterial produets, whose charaeteristie quality is that they are consumed immnediately and are incapable of aeeumu- lation ; under this head are to be ranged the services rendered either by a person, a capital, or a portion of land, as, ¢.g., the advantages derived from medical attendanee, or from a hired house, or from a beautiful view. But in working out the consequenees of this view Say is not free (as Storeh has shown) from

obseurities and inconsistencies ; and by his eomprehension of these immaterial produets within the domain of economies he is confirmed in the error of regarding that seience as filling the whole sphere whieh really belongs to sociology. His ‘‘théorie des débouchés ” amounts to this, that, produets being, in last analysis, purehased only with produets, the extent of the markets (or outlets) for home produets is proportional to the quantity of foreign produetions; when the sale of any commodity is dull, it is beeause there is not a sufficient number, or rather value, of other eommodities produced with which it eould be purehased. Another proposition on whieh Say insists is that every value is consumed and is ereated only to be consumed. Values ean therefore be accumulated only by being reproduced in the eourse or, as often happens, by the very aet of eonsumption ; henee his distinetion between reproduetive and unproduetive con- sumption. We find in him other correetions or new presentations of views previously aeeepted, and some useful suggestions for the improvement of nomenelature.

_Say’s writings occupy vols. ix.-xii. of Guillaumin’s Collection des Principauz Economistes. Among them are, in addition to those already mentioned, Catéchisme d’ Economie Politique, 1815; Petit Volume contenant quelques apercus des Hommes et de la Société, Lettres & Malthus sur différens sujets d’ Economie Politique, 1820; Epitomé des Principes de Economie Politique, 1831. A volume of Mélanges et Correspondance was published posthumously by Charles Comte, author of the Traité de Législation, who was his son-in-law. To the above must be added an addition of Storch’s Cours d’ Economie Politique, which Say published in 1823 without Storch’s authorization, with notes embodying a ‘feritique amérce et virulente,” a procceding which Storch justly resented.

The last edition of the Tratté d’ Economie Politique which appeared during the life of the author was the 5th (1826); the 6th, with the author’s final corrections, was edited by the eldest son, Horace Emile Say, himself known as an economist, in 1846. The work was translated into English ‘‘from the 4th edition of the French’ by C. R. Prinsep (1821), into German by Ludwig Heinrich yon Jakob (1807) and by C. Ed. Morstadt (1818, and 1830), and, as Say himself informs us, into Spanish by José Queypo. The Cours d’ Economie Politique pratique, from which Morstadt had given extracts, was

translated into German by Max Stirner (1845). The Catéchisme and the Petit Volume have also been translated into several European Janguages. An English version of the Zettres a Malthus appears in vol. xvii. of the Pamphileteer, 1821. (J. K. 1.)

SCALA NOVA, Scata Nuova, or (Turkish) Kusx- ADASSI, also known as New Ephesus, a harbour on the west coast of Asia Minor, in the vilayet of Aidin, opposite the island of Samos. Before the opening of the Smyrna-Aidin railway its excellent roadstead was largely fre- quented by vessels trading with the Anatolian coast, and it has often been proposed to connect it with this system by a branch line, and thus enable it to compete with Smyrna as a trading centre. The population is estimated at 7000 to 10,000, of whom about 3000 are Greeks.

SCALIGER. For some account of the great Della Scala (Lat. Scaliger) family, the reader is referred to the article Verona. ‘The name has also been borne by two scholars of extraordinary eminence in the world of letters.

I. Junius Casar Scaricer (1484-1558), so distin- guished by his learning and talents that, according to De Thou, no one of the ancients could be placed above him and the age in which he lived could not show his equal, was, according to his own account, a scion of the illustrious house of La Scala, for a hundred and fifty years princes of

Verona, and was born in 1484 at the castle of La Rocca on the Lago de Garda. At the age of twelve he was presented to his kinsman the emperor Maximilian, and placed by him among his pages. He remained for seventeen years in the service of the emperor, following him in his expeditions through half Europe, and distin- guishing himself no less by personal bravery as a soldier than by military skill as a captain. But he was unmind- ful neither of letters, in which he had the most eminent scholars of the day as his instructors, nor of art, which lie studied with considerable success under Albert Diirer. In 1512 he fought at the battle of Ravenina, where his father and elder brother were killed. He there displayed prodigies of valour, and received the highest honours of chivalry from his imperial cousin, the emperor conferring upon him with his own hands the spurs, the collar, and the eagle of gold. But this was the only reward he obtained for his long and faithful devotion. He left the service of Maximilian, and after a

brief employment by another kinsman, the duke of Ferrara, he decided to quit the military life, and in 1514 entered as a student at the university of Bologna. He determined to take holy orders, in the expectation that he would become in due time cardinal, and then be elected pope, when he would wrest from the Venetians his principality of Verona, of which the republic had despoiled his ancestors. But, though he soon gave up this design, he remained at the university until 1519. The next six years he passed at the castle of Vico Nuova, in Piedmont, as a guest of the family of La Rovere, at first dividing his time between military expeditions in the summer, in which he achieved great successes, and study, chiefly of medicine and natural history, in the winter, until a severe attack of rheumatic gout brought his military career to a close. Henceforth his life was wholly devoted to study. In 1525 he accompanied M. A. de la Rovére, bishop of Agen, to that city as his physician. Such is the outline of his own account of his early life. It was not until some time after his death that the enemies of his son first alleged that he was not of the family of La Scala, but was the son of Benedetto Bordone, an illuminator or schoolmaster of Verona; that he was educated at Padua, where he took the degree of M.D.; and that his story of his life and adventures before arriving at Agen was a tissue of fables. It certainly is supported by no other evidence than his own statements, some of which are inconsistent with well-ascertained facts.

The remaining thirty-two years of his life were passed almost wholly at Agen, in the full light of contemporary history. They were without adventure, almost without incident, but it was in them that he achieved so much distinction that at his death in 1558 he had the highest scientific and literary reputation of any man in Europe. A few days after his arrival at Agen he fell in love with a charming orphan of thirteen, Andiette de la Roque Lobejac. Her friends objected to her marriage with an unknown adventurer, but in 1528 he had obtained so much success as a physician that the objections of her family were over- come, and at forty-five he married Andiette, who was then sixteen. The marriage proved a complete success; it was followed by twenty-nine years of almost uninterrupted happiness, and by the birth of fifteen children.

A charge of heresy in 1538, of which he was acquitted by his friendly judges, one of whom was his friend Arnoul Le Ferron, was almost the only

event of interest during these twenty-nine years, except the publication of his books, and the quarrels and criticisms to which they gave rise.

In 1531 he printed his first oration against Erasmus, in defence of Cicero and the Ciceronians. It is a piece of

vigorous invective, displaying, like all his subsequent writings, an astonishing knowledge and command of the Latin language, and much brilliant rhetoric, but full of vulgar abuse, and completely missing the point of the Ciceronianus of Erasmus. The writer's indignation at finding it treated with silent contempt by the great scholar, who thought it was the work of a personal enemy—Aleander —caused him to write a second oration, more violent, more abusive, with more self-glorification, but with less real merit than the first. The orations were followed by a prodigious quantity of Latin verse, which appeared in successive volumes in 1533, 1534, 1539, 1546, and 1574; of these, a friendly critic, Mr Pattison, is obliged to approve the judgment of Huet, who says : "par ses poésies brutes et informes Scaliger a deshonoré le Parnasse ;" yet their numerous editions show that they commended them- selves not only to his contemporaries but to succeeding scholars. A brief tract on comic metres (De Comicis Dimensionibus) and a work De Causis Lingux Latine— the earliest Latin grammar on scientific principles, and following a scientific method—were his only other purely literary works published in his lifetime. His Poetics was left unpublished, and only appeared in 1561 after his death. With many paradoxes, with many criticisms which are below contempt, and many indecent displays of violent personal animosity,—especially in his reference to the unfortunate Dolet, over whose death he gloated with brutal malignity, —it yet contains much acute criticism, and shows that for the first time a writer had appeared who had formed an adequate idea of what such a treatise ought to be, and how it ought to be written.

But it is as a philosopher and a man of science that J. C. Scaliger ought to be judged. His tastes were for metaphysics and physics rather than for literature. Classical studies he regarded as an agreeable relaxation from

severer pursuits. Whatever the truth or fable of the first forty years of his life, he had certainly been a most close and accurate observer, and had made himself acquainted with many curious and little-known pheno- mena, which he had stored up in a most tenacious memory, and which he was able to make use of with profit. His scientific writings are all in the form of commentaries, and it was not until his seventieth year that (with the exception of a brief tract on the De Jnsomniis of Hippocrates) he felt that any of them were sufficiently complete to be given tothe world. In 1556 he printed his Dialogue on the De Plantis attributed to Aristotle, and in 1557 his Exercitationes on the work of Cardan, De Subtilitate. His other scientific works, Commentaries on Theophrastus's History of Plants and Aristotle's History of Animals, he left in a more or less unfinished state, and they were not printed until after his death. They are all marked by the same characteristics : arrogant dogmatism, violence of language, irritable vanity, a constant tendency to self- glorification, which we expect to find only in the charlatan and the impostor, are in him combined with extensive real knowledge, with acute reasoning, with an observation of facts and details almost unparalleled. He displays every- where what Naudé calls "an intellect teeming with heroic thought." But he is only the naturalist of his own time. That he anticipated in any manner the inductive philo- sophy cannot be contended; his botanical studies did not lead him, like his contemporary Gesner, to any idea of a natural system of classification, and he rejected with the utmost arrogance and violence of language the discoveries of Copernicus. In metaphysics and in natural history Aristotle was a law to him, and in medicine Galen, but he was not a slave to the text or the details of either. He has thoroughly mastered their principles, and is able to see when his masters are not true to themselves, He

ScatLteh.:

corrects Aristotle by himself. He is in that stage of learning when the attempt is made to harmonize the written word with the actual facts of nature, and the result is that his works have no real scientific value. Their interest is only historical. His Hxercitationes upon the De Subtilitate of Cardan (1557) is the book by which Scaliger is best known as a philosopher. Its numerous editions bear witness to its popularity, and until the final fall of Aristotle's physics it continued a popular text-book; as late

as the middle of the seventeenth century an elaborate commentary upon it was published by Sperling, a professor at Wittenberg. We are astonished at the encyclopedic wealth of knowledge which the Lxercitationes display, at the vigour of the author's style, at the accuracy of his observations, but are obliged to agree with Naudé that he has committed more faults than he has discovered in Cardan, and with Nisard that his object seems to be to deny all that Cardan affirms and to affirm all that Cardan denies. Yet it is no light praise that writers like Leibnitz and Sir William Hamilton recognize J. C. Scaliger as the best modern exponent of the physics and metaphysics of Aristotle. He died at Agen 21st October 1558.

2. JosEPH JusTUS SCALIGER (1540-1609), the great- est scholar of modern times, was the tenth child and third son of Julius Cesar Scaliger and Andiette de la Roque Lobejac (see above). Born at Agen in 1p40, he was sent when twelve years of age, with two younger brothers, to the college of Guienne at Bordeaux, then under the direction of Jean Gelida. An outbreak of the plague in 1555 caused the boys to return home, and for the next few years Joseph was his father's constant com- panion and amanuensis. The composition of Latin verse was the chief amusement of Julius in his later years, and he daily dictated to his son from eighty to a hundred lines, and sometimes more. Joseph was also required each day to write a Latin theme or declamation, but in other respects he seems to have been left to his own devices. The Latin verse of Julius, faulty as it is in all that constitutes poetry, yet displays a more extensive knowledge of the Latin language, and a greater command of its resources, than is to be found in the verse of any of his contemporaries; and this constant practice in writing and reading or speaking Latin, under the super- vision of one who knew the language thoroughly, was probably the foundation of Joseph's Latin scholarship. But the companionship of his father was worth more to him than any mere instruction. He learned from Julius what real knowledge was, and that it did not consist in discussions on words and phrases; and to his father he owed it that he was not a mere scholar, but something more—an acute observer, never losing sight of the actual world, and aiming not so much at correcting texts as at laying the foundation of a science of historical criticism.

In 1558, on the death of his father, he proceeded to Paris, and spent four years at the university there. Of his life at Paris we know but little. Hitherto

he had not studied Greek. Now he felt that not to know Greek was to know nothing. It was in the literature of Greece that he must look for the true key of antiquity, and he forthwith began to attend the lectures of Turnebus. But after two months he found out his mistake. He had much to learn before he could be in a position to profit by the lectures of the greatest Greek scholar of the time. He shut himself up in his chamber, and determined to teach himself. He read Homer in twenty-one days, and then went through all the other Greek poets, orators, and historians, forming a grammar for himself as he went along. From Greek, at the suggestion of Postel, he proceeded to attack Hebrew, and then Arabic; of both he acquired a respect- able knowledge, though not the critical mastery which he

~

possessed in Latin and Greek. The name of Dorat then stood as high as that of Turnebus as a Greek scholar, and far higher as a professor. He has left nothing to justify his reputation as a scholar; but as a teacher he un- doubtedly possessed the highest qualifications. He was able not only to impart knowledge, but to kindle enthu- siasm for his subject in the minds of his hearers and pupils. It was to Dorat that Scaliger owed the home which he found for the next thirty years of his life. In 1563 the professor recommended him to Louis de Chastaigner, the young lord of La Roche Pozay, as a companion in his travels. A close friendship sprung up between the two young men, which remained unbroken till the death of Louis in 1595. The travellers first pro- ceeded to Rome. Here they found Muretus, who, when at Bordeaux and Toulouse, had been a great favourite and occasional visitor of Julius Cesar at Agen. Muretus soon recognized Scaliger’s merits, and devoted himself to making his stay at Rome as agreeable as possible, intro- ducing him to all the men that were worth knowing. After visiting a large part of Italy, the travellers passed to England and Scotland, taking as it would seem La Roche Pozay on their way, for Scaliger’s preface to his first book, the Conjectanea in Varronem, is dated there in December 1564. Scaliger formed an unfavourable opinion of the English. Their inhuman disposition, and inhos- pitable treatment of foreigners, especially impressed him. He was also disappointed in finding

few Greek manu- scripts and few learned men. It was not until a much later period that he became intimate with Richard Thompson and other Englishmen. In the course of his travels he had become a Protestant. His father, though he lived and died in the communion ~~of the Church of Rome, had been suspected of heresy, and it is probable that Joseph's sympathies were early enlisted on the side of Protestantism. On his return to France he spent three years with the Chastaigners, accompanying them to their different chateaux in Poitou, as the calls of the civil war required their presence. In 1570 he accepted the invita~~ tion of Cujas, and proceeded to Valence to study juris- prudence under the greatest living jurist. Here he re- mained three years, profiting not only by the lectures but even more by the library of Cujas, which filled no less than seven or eight rooms and included five hundred manuscripts.

The massacre of St Bartholomew—occurring as he was about to accompany the bishop of Valence on an embassy to Poland—induced him with other Huguenots to retire to Geneva, where he was received with open arms, and was appointed a professor in the academy. He lectured on the Organon of Aristotle and the De Minibus of Cicero with much satisfaction to the students but with little to himself. He hated lecturing, and was bored to death with the importunities of the fanatical preachers ; and in 1574 he returned to France, and made his home for the next twenty years in the chateaux of his friend the lord of La Roche Pozay. Of his life during this period we have for the first time interesting details and notices in the Lettres francaises inédites de Joseph Scaliger, edited by M. Tamizey de Larroque (Agen, 1881), a volume which adds much to our knowledge of Scaliger's life. Constantly moving from chateau to chateau through Poitou and the Limousin, as the exigencies of the civil war required, occasionally taking his turn as a guard when the chateau was attacked, at least on one occasion trailing a pike on an expedition against the Leaguers, with no agcess to libraries, and frequently separated even from his own books, his life during this period seems in one aspect most unsuited to study. He had, however, what so few contemporary scholars possessed—leisure, and freedom from pecuniary

cares. In general he could devote his whole time to study ; and it was during this period of his life that he composed and published the books which

showed how far he was in advance of all his contemporaries as a scholar and a critic, and that with him a new school of historical criticism bad arisen. His editions of the Catalecta (1574), of Festus (1576), of Catullus, Tibullus, and Propertius (1577), are the work of a man who writes not only books of instruction for learners, but who is determined himself to discover and communicate to others the real meaning and force of his author. Discarding the trivial remarks and groundless suggestions which we find in the editions of nearly all his contemporaries and predecessors, he first laid down and applied sound rules of criticism and emendation, and changed textual criticism, from a series of haphazard and frequently baseless guesses, into a "rational procedure subject to fixed laws" (Pattison). But these works, while proving Scaliger's right to the foremost place among his contemporaries as far as Latin scholarship and criticism were concerned, did not go beyond mere scholarship. It was reserved for his edition of Manilius (1579), and his De Hmendatione Temporum (1583), to revolutionize all the received ideas of the chronology of ancient history,—to show for the first time that ancient chronology was of the highest importance as a corrector as well as a supplement to historical narrative, that ancient history is not confined to that of the Greeks and Romans, but also comprises that of the Persians, the Babylonians, and the Egyptians, hitherto neglected as absolutely worthless, and that of the Jews, hitherto treated as a thing apart and too sacred to be mixed up with the others, and that the historical narratives and fragments of each of these, and their several systems of chronology, must be carefully and critically compared together, if any true and general conclusions on ancient history are to be arrived at. It is this which constitutes his true glory, and which places Scaliger on so immeasurably higher an eminence than any of his contemporaries. Yet, while the scholars of his time admitted his pre-eminence, neither they nor those who immediately followed seem to have appreciated his real merit, but to have considered his emendatory criticism, and his skill in Greek, as constitut- ing his claim to special greatness. "Scaliger's great works in historical criticism had overstepped any power of appreciation which the succeeding age possessed ' (Pattison). His commentary on Manilius is really a treatise on the astronomy of the ancients, and it forms. an introduction to the De Emendatione Temporum, in which he examines by the light of modern and Copernican science the

ancient system as applied to epochs, calendars, and computations of time, showing upon what principles they were based.

In the remaining twenty-four years of his life he at once corrected and enlarged the basis which he had laid in the De Emendatione. With incredible patience, some- times with a happy audacity of conjecture which itself is almost genius, he succeeded in reconstructing the lost Chronicle of Eusebius—one of the most precious remains of antiquity, and of the highest value for ancient chronology. This he printed in 1606 in his Thesaurus Temporum, in which he collected, restored, and arranged every chronological relic extant in Greek or Latin. In 1590 Lipsius retired from Leyden, where for twelve years he had been professor of Roman history and antiquities. The university and its protectors, the states-general of Holland and the prince of Orange, resolved to obtain Scaliger as his successor. He declined their offer. He hated the thought of lecturing, and there were those among his friends who erroneously believed that with the success of Henry IV. learning would flourish, and

Protestantism be no bar to distinction and advancement. The invitation was renewed in the most gratifying and flattering manner a year later. Scaliger would not be required to lecture. The university only wished for his presence. He would be in all respects the master of his time. This offer Scaliger provisionally accepted. About the middle of 1593 he started for Holland, where he passed the remaining thirteen years of his life, never returning to France. His reception at Leyden was all that he could wish. A handsome income was assured to him. He was treated with the highest consideration. His rank as a prince of Verona was recognized. Placed midway between The Hague and Amsterdam, he was able to obtain, besides the learned circle of Leyden, the advant- ages of the best society of both these capitals. For Sealiger was no hermit buried among his books; he was fond of social intercourse with persons of merit and intelligence, and was himself a good talker.

For the first seven years of his residence at Leyden his reputation was at its highest point. His literary dictator- ship was unquestioned. It was greater in kind and in extent than that of any man since the revival of letters— greater

even than that of Erasmus had been. From his throne at Leyden he ruled the learned world, and a word from him could make or mar a rising reputation. The electric force of his genius drew to him all the rising talent of the republic. He was surrounded by young men eager to listen to and profit by his conversation, and he enjoyed nothing better than to discuss with them the books they were reading, and the men who wrote them, and to open up by his suggestive remarks the true methods and objects of philological and historical study. He encouraged Grotius when only a youth of sixteen to edit Capella; the early death of the younger Douza he wept as that of a beloved son; Daniel Heinsius, from being his favourite pupil, became his most intimate friend. But Scaliger had made numerous enemies. He hated ignorance, but he hated still more half learning, and most of all dishonesty in argument or in quotation. Himself the soul of honour and truthfulness, with a single aim in all his writings, namely, to arrive at the truth, he had no toleration for the disingenuous arguments, and the mis- statements of facts, of those who wrote to support a theory or to defend an unsound cause. Neither in his conversa- tion nor in his writings did he conceal his contempt for the ignorant and the dishonest. His pungent sarcasms were soon carried to the ears of the persons of whom they were uttered, and his pen was not less bitter than his tongue. He resembles his father in his arrogant tone towards those whom he despises and those whom he hates, and he despises and hates all who differ from him. He is conscious of his power as a literary dictator, and not always sufficiently cautious or sufficiently gentle in its exercise. Nor, it must be admitted, was Scaliger always right. He trusted much to his memory, which was occasionally treacherous. His emendations, if frequently happy, were sometimesabsurd. In laying the foundations of a science of ancient chronology, he relied sometimes upon groundless, sometimes even upon absurd hypotheses, frequently upon an imperfect induction of facts. Some- times he misunderstood the astronomical science of the ancients, sometimes that of Copernicus and Tycho Brahe. And he was no mathematician. But his enemies were not merely those whose errors he had exposed, and whose hostility he had excited by the violence of his language. The results of his system of historical criticism had been adverse to the Catholic controversialists, and to the authenticity of many of the documents upon which they had been accustomed to rely. The Jesuits, who aspired to be the expounders of antiquity, the source of all

SPCALICRS

scholarship and criticism, perceived that the writings and authority of Scaliger were the most formidable barrier to their claims. It was the day of conversions. Muretus in the latter part of his life professed the strictest ortho- doxy; Lipsius had been reconciled to the Church of Rome; Casaubon was supposed to be wavering; but Scaliger was known to be hopeless, and as long as his supremacy was unquestioned the Protestants had the victory in learning and scholarship. A determined attempt must be made, if not to answer his criticisms, or to disprove his statements, yet to attack him as a man, and to destroy his reputation. This was no easy task, for his moral character was ab- solutely spotless,

After several scurrilous attacks by the Jesuit party, in which coarseness and violence were more conspicuous than ability, in 1607 a new and more successful attempt was made. Scaliger's weak point was his pride. Brought up by his father, whom he greatly reverenced, in the belief that he was a prince of Verona, he never forgot this him- self, nor suffered it to be forgotten by others. Naturally truthful, honourable, and virtuous in every respect, he conceived himself especially bound to be so on account of his illustrious ancestry. In 1594, in an evil hour for his happiness and his reputation, he published his Epistola de Vetustate et Splendore Gentis Scaligere et J. C. Scaligert Vita. In 1607 Gaspar Scioppius, then in the service of the Jesuits, whom he afterwards so bitterly libelled, published his Sealiger Hypobolimexus ("The Supposititious Scaliger"), a quarto volume of niore than four hundred pages, written with consummate ability, in an admirable and incisive style, with the entire disregard for truth which Scioppius always displayed, and with all the power of that sarcasm in which he was an accomplished master. Every piece of gossip or scandal which could be raked together respecting Scaliger or his family is to be found there. The author professes to point out five hundred lies in the Hpistola de Vetustate of Scaliger, but the main argument of the book is to show the falsity of his pretensions to be of the family of La Scala, and of the narrative of his father's early life, and to hold up both father and son to contempt and ridicule as impudent impostors. 'No stronger proof," says Mr Pattison, "can be given of the impressions produced by this powerful philippic, dedicated to the defamation of an individual, than that it has been the source from which the biography of Scaliger, as it now stands in our

biographical collections, has mainly flowed.” To Scaliger the blow was crushing. Whatever the case as to Julius, Joseph had undoubtedly believed himself a prince of Verona, and in his E£pistola had put forth with the most perfect good faith, and without inquiry, all that he had heard from his father as to his family and the early life of Julius. It was this good faith that laid the way for his humiliation. His Estola is full of blunders and mistakes of fact, and, relying partly on his own memory partly on his father’s good faith, he has not verified one of the statements of Julius, most of which, to speak most favourably, are characterized by rhodomontade, exaggeration, or inaccuracy. He immediately wrote a reply to Scioppius, entitled Confutatio Fabulz Burdonum. It is written, for Scaliger, with unusual moderation and good taste, but perhaps for that very reason had not the success which its author wished and even expected. In the opinion of the highest and most competent authority, Mr Pattison, “as a refutation of Scioppius itis most complete”; but there are certainly grounds for dissenting, though with diffidence, from this judgment. Scaliger undoubtedly shows that Scioppius has committed more. blunders than he has corrected, that his book literally bristles with pure lies and baseless calumnies ; but he does not succeed in

adducing a single proof either of his father’s descent from the La Scala family, or of any single event narrated by Julius as happening to himself or any member of his family prior to his arrival at Agen. Nor does he even attempt a refutation of what seems really to be the crucial point in the whole controversy, and which Scioppius had proved, as far as a negative can be proved,—namely, that William, the last prince of Verona, had no son Nicholas, the alleged grandfather of Julius, nor indeed any son who could have been such grandfather. But whether complete or not, the Confutatco had no success ; the attack of the Jesuits was successful, far more so than they could possibly have hoped. Scioppius was wont to boast that his book had killed Scaliger. It certainly embittered the few remaining months of his life, and it is not improbable that the mortifi- cation which he suffered may have shortened his days. The Confutatio was his last work. Five months after it ap- peared, “on the 21st of January, 1609, at four in the morning, he fell asleep in Heinsius’s arms. The aspiring spirit ascended before the

Infinite. The most richly stored intellect which had ever spent itself in acquiring know- ledge was in the presence of the Omniscient” (Pattison). Of Joseph Scaliger the only biography in any way adequate is that of Jacob Bernays (Berlin, 1855). It was reviewed by the late Mark Pattison in an excellent article in the Quarterly Review, vol. cviii. (1860). Mr Pattison had made many MS. collections for a life of Joseph Scaliger on a much more extcnsive scale, which it is greatly to be regretted he left unfinished, and in too fragmentary a state to be published. The present writer has had access to aud made much use of these MSS., which include a life of Julius Caesar Scaliger written some years since. Jor the life of Joseph, besides the reccntly published letters above referred to, the two old collections of Latin and French letters and the two Sealigerana are the most important sources of information. For the life of Julius Cesar the letters edited by his son, those subsequently published in 1620 by the President de Maussac, the Sealigerana, and his own writings, which are full of autobio- graphical matter, are the chief authorities. M. De Bourousse de Lafiore’s Etude sur Jules César de Leseale (Agen, 1860) and M. Magen’s Documents sur Julius Cesar Sealiger et sa famille (Agen, 1878) add important details for the lives of both father and son. The lives by M. Charles Nisard—that of Julius in Les Gladiateurs de la République des Lettres, and that of Joseph in Le Triwmvirat Littéraire aw setziéme siécle—are equally unworthy of their author and their subjects. Julius is simply held up to ridicule, while the life of Joseph is almost wholly based on the book of Scioppius and the Sealigerana. A complete list of the works of Joseph will be found in his life by Bernays. (R. C. C.) SCAMMONY. Under this name the dried juice of the root of Convolvulus Scammonia, L. (cxapwvia), is used in medicine.1 It appears to have been known to the Greeks as early as the 8d century B.c., and is supposed to have been one of the medicines recommended to Alfred the Great by Helias, patriarch of Jerusalem (Cockayne Leech- doms, vol. ii. pp. xxiv., 289, 175; 273, 281). The scam- mony plant is a native of the countries of the eastern part of the Mediterranean basin, growing in bushy waste places, from Syria in the south to the Crimea in the north, its range extending westward to the Greek islands, but not to northern Africa or Italy. It isa twining perennial, bearing flowers like those of Convolvulus arvensis, and having irregularly arrow-shaped leaves and a thick fleshy root. The drug is collected principally in Asia Minor, and near Aleppo in Syria, although a little is obtained from the neighbourhood of Mount Carmel and

the Lake of Tiberias. The principal places of export are Smyrna and Aleppo (Scanderoon), but the drug often bears in commerce the name of the district where it was collected, ¢.g., Broussa, Angora, &c. Formerly Aleppo scammony was considered the best and commanded the highest price, but at present the purest article comes from Smyrna. The very variable quality of the drug has led to the use of the resin prepared directly from the root, which affords it to the extent of 54

1 Jt was formerly called diagrydion, probably from Sdxpu, a tear, in allusion to the manner the juice exudes from the incised root,

‘per cent., and an establishment for its manufacture was founded at Broussa in 1870. The dried root is also exported to England, and the resin prepared from it there. By purification the resin can be obtained almost white. The crude resin obtained from the root, being free from gum, does not present a milky appearance when rubbed with a wetted finger, and is thus easily distinguished from the natural product.

Scammony is used in medicine as a safe but energetic purgative, and is frequently prescribed in combination with calomel and colocynth. Its medicinal activity is due to the resin scammonin, which is also called jalapin from its occurrence in the root of the male jalap (Jpomexa orizabensis), and of Tampico jalap (J. simulans) (see JALAP). The export of scammony from Smyrna in 1881 was only 97 boxes, valued at £544, the amount having decreased of late years owing to the increased export of the root from Syria. More than half of this quantity was taken by England, about one-fourth by France, and the remainder by Italy, America, and Austria.

The drug is obtained from the root by slicing off obliquely one or two inches from the crown and allowing the milky juice which exudes to drain into a small shell (generally that of a freshwater mussel), which is inserted in the root just below the base of the incision. To prevent the juice from becoming soiled, the earth is scraped away so as to leave exposed four or five inches of the root. The shells are collected in the evening and their contents emptied into a copper or leathern vessel,—the scrapings from the

surface of the root, consisting of Ha) dried tears, being added. On the average, about one drachm is afforded by each incision; a plant four years old may give two drachms; in rare cascs as much as twelve drachms has been obtained from a single large root. The collection usually takes place when the plant is in flower towards the end of summer. The product of different roots naturally varies in quality, and the peasants therefore, on arrival at their homes, render it uniform by mixing it with a knife. It is then spread out in the air todry. Sometimes the gathering of several days is allowed to accumulate, and then moistened, kneaded, and made up into cakes. During the drying it appears to undergo a kind of fermentation, which gives the drug a slightly porous appearance and dark colour. Frequently it is adulterated by adding 40 per cent. of flour and earthy matter. Itthen assumes a paler colour and opaque appear- ance, and loses its brittleness. This adulterated article is known as ‘¢skilip,” and the pure article as “virgin” scammony. The latter is met with in the form of flattened pieces half an inch or more in thickness, with a blackish, resinous fracture, thin fragments being translucent. Externally it is often covered with a greyish powder. The odour, when a piece is freshly broken, is cheesy; when chewed, it leaves an acrid sensation in the throat. Scammony of good quality should yield to ether 80 to 90 per cent. of resin; the remain- der consists of gum and mineral matter.

SCANDERBEG, 7.¢, Iskander (Alexander) Bey, is the Turkish name and title of Gzorce Castriota, the youngest son of John Castriota, lord of an hereditary prin- cipality in Albania. He was born about the year 1404, and as a boy was sent as a hostage to the Ottoman court, where he was brought up as a Mohammedan for the Turkish military service. He early distinguished himself as a soldier and received high promotion under Amurath II. In 1443 he was of the expedition against the Mag- yars, but shortly after taking .the field he heard of his father’s death and resolved to strike a blow for freedom. Availing himself of the opportunity afforded by John Hunyady’s defeat of the Turks at Nish, he forced from the principal secretary of the sultan a firman making him governor of Croya, his native town, and forthwith left the camp with 300 Albanian horsemen. Once master of the place, he abjured Islam and proclaimed his independence. The Albanians soon recognized him as their head, and flocked to his standard, and pasha after pasha was vainly sent to crush him. Amurath IJ. in person

unsuccessfully besieged him in 1450, and Mohammed II. found it neces- sary to grant him favourable terms of peace in 1461. Instigated by the legates of Pius II. and the ambassadors of the Venetian republic, Scanderbeg again proclaimed war in 1464, and at least was successful in repelling the

Territory.

sultan, who had invaded Albania. He died in January 1467 at Alessio, leaving an infant son named John, whom he commended to the care of the Venetians. After a twelve years' war, the Turks finally gained possession of Croya, the representatives of Scanderbeg settling in Calabria.

SCANDEROON (Iscanperty), or ALEXANDRETTA, lies girdled by green hills on the picturesque bay of the same name, the ancient Simus IJssicus, at the extreme north of the Syrian coast, where it forms an angle with that of Asia Minor. Alexandretta succeeded an older town of Alexandria (Little Alexandria), founded by Alexander the Great, but does not perhaps occupy quite the same site. The harbour is the best on the Syrian coast, and steamers call at it regularly, but the town is scourged with fever and has only some 2500 inhabitants, mainly Greek Christians. Jt is the port of Aleppo, and would naturally be the port of an ' Euphrates railway."

SCANDINAVIAN LANGUAGES. By this expres- sion we understand the closely allied languages which are and have been spoken by the Germanic population in Scandinavia, and by the inhabitants of the countries that have been wholly or partially peopled from it. At present the territory of these languages embraces—Sweden, except the most northerly part (Lapland and inland parts of Vesterbotten, where Finnish and Lappish exclusively or chiefly prevail); certain islands and districts on the coast of western and southern Finland, as well as Aland;} a small tract on the coast of Esthonia, where Swedish is spoken, as it is also to some extent in the Esthonian islands of Dagé, Nargé, Nukké, Ormsé, and Ragé;2 Gammal- svenskby ("Galsvenskbi") in southern Russia (govern- ment of Kherson),? a village colonized from Dagé; the Livonian island of Runé,* where Swedish is spoken, as it formerly was on the island of Osel; Norway, except certain regions in the northern part of the country, peopled by Finns and Lapps (diocese of Tromsé); Den- mark, with the Faroes, Iceland, and Greenland,

where, however, Danish is only spoken by a very small part of the population; the northernmost part of Schleswig; and, finally, several Scandinavian colonies in the United States of North America. Scandinavian dialects have besides been spoken for varying periods in the following places:

SCA—SCA

If this view be correct, the Scandinavian languages “have had an existence of more than four thousand years.® But we do not know anything about them during the period before the birth of Christ. It is only from that epoch we can get any infurmation concerning the language of the old Scandinavians, which seems by that time not only to have spread over Denmark and great parts of southern and middle Sweden and of (southern) Norway, but also to have reached Finland (at least Nyland) and Esthonia. In spite of its extension over this considerable geographical area, the language appears to have been fairly homogeneous throughout the whole territory. Con- sequently, it may be regarded as a uniform language, the

mother of the younger Scandinavian tongues, and accord- The ingly has been named the primitive Scandinavian (urnor- primitive

disk) language. The oldest sources of our knowledge of this tongue are the words which were borrowed during the first centuries of the Christian era (some of them perhaps even earlier) by the Lapps from the inhabitants of central Sweden and Norway, and by the Finns from their neighbours in Finland and Esthonia, and which have been preserved in Finnish and Lappish down to our own days.®

amount to several hundreds, with a phonetic form of a very primitive stamp ; as Finn. terva (O. Sw. tiera, Germ. theer), tar; atro (O. Sw. ar), oar; kansa (O. H. G. hansa), people; napakaira (O. H. G. nabagér, O. Sw. navar), auger ; nekla (Got. népla, O. Sw. nal), needle; ansas (Got. ans, O. Sw. as), beam; Lapp sajet (Got. satan, O. Sw. sa), sow ; garves (O. H. G. garawér, O. Sw. gor), finished ; dwvres (O. Sax. diuri, O. Sw. dyr), dear ; saipo (O. Ta. G. sezfa, Sw. sapa), soap. These words, with those mentioned by contemporary Roman and Greek authors, are the oldest existing traces of any Germanic language. Wrested from their context, however, they throw but little light on

the nature of the original northern tongue. But a, series of linguistic monuments have come down to us dating from the end of the so-called early Iron Age (about 450 a.p.),— the knowledge and the use of the oldest runic alphabet (with twenty-four characters) having at that period been

propagated among the Scandinavians by the southern

These borrowed words, denoting chiefly Borrowed utensils belonging to a fairly advanced stage of culture, words.

Norwegian in certain parts of Ireland (800-1300 a.p.) and northern Scotland, in the Isle of Man, the Hebrides (800-1400, or longer), the Shetland Islands (800-1800), and the Orkneys (800-1800);5 Danish in the whole of

Germanic tribes. In fact we still possess, preserved down

to our own times, primitive northern runic inscriptions, Runic

the oldest upon the utensils found at Thorsljerg, dating inscrip- back to about 300 a.p.!°, which, together with the MS. tions.

Age.

Schleswig, in the north-eastern part of England (the ‘‘Danelag”), and in Normandy (900-1000, or a little longer) ;° Swedish in Russia (from the end of the 9th to the beginning of the 11th century).? At what epoch the Germanic population settled in Scandinavia we cannot as yet even approximately decide. It is quite certain, how- ever, that it already existed there before the Christian éra,—nay, most probably as early as the beginning of the so-called Stone Age (three thousand years before Christ),

1 See A. O. Freudenthal, Om Svenska allmogemalet <1 Nyland, 1870 ; Ueber den Narpesdialect, 1878.

2 A. O, Freudenthal, Upplysningar om Radgé- och Wichterpalmdilet, 1875 ; H. Vendell, Laut- und Formlehre der Schwedischen Mundarten in den Kirchspielen Ormsé und Nukké, 1881,

3 H. Vendell, ‘‘Om och fran Gammalsvenskby” (Finsk Tidskrift, 1882). * H. Vendell, Runéimdalets Yud- och Jormlira, 1882-6.

° J. J. A. Worsaae, Minder om de Danske og Nordmendene ¢ fingland, Skotland, og Irland, 1851;

g Worsaae, ic.; J. C. H. R. Steenstrup, Danclag, 1882; Es. Tegnér, ‘‘Norrmiin eller Danskar i N ormandie,” and ‘‘ Ytterligare om de nordiska ortnamnen i Normandie”’ (Nordisk Tidskrift, 1884),

7 V. Thomsen, Ryska rikets grundliggning genom Skandinaverna, 1882 (The Relations between Ancient Russia and Scandinavia,

1877); 8. Bugge, ‘‘Oldsvenske navne i Rusland”’ (Arkiv for Nordisk Filologt, ii. 1885).

fragments of Ulfila’s Gothic translation of the Bible, about two hundred years later in date, constitute the oldest veritable monuments of any Germanic tongue. These runic inscriptions are for the most part found on stone-monuments (sometimes on rocks) and bracteates (gold coins stamped on one side and used for ornaments), as well as on metallic and wooden utensils, weapons, and ornaments. Up to this time there have been discovered more than one hundred, but of these only about one-half give us any information concerning the language, and most of them are only too short. The longest one, the stone-monument of Tune, in south-eastern Norway, con- tains only sixteen words. Their language is somewhat later in character than that of the oldest words borrowed by the Lapps and Finns: accented ¢, for example, is already changed into a (¢f. mariz = Goth. mérs, renowned ; but the Finn. borrowed word nékla = Goth. népla, needle), and the voiced s into a kind of r (cf. dagar= Goth. dags,

8 O. Montelius, ‘“‘Om vara forfaders invandring til] Norden” (Nordisk Tidskrift, 1884).

° W. Thomsen, Ueber den Kinfluss der Germ. Sprachen auf dite Finnisch-Lappischen, 1870.

10 0. Montelius, Die Kultur Schwedens in vorchristlicher Zeit, 1885.

11 See the plates in G. Stephens’s Mandbook of Old Northern Runic Monuments, 1884.

day ;~~but Finn. armas = Goth. arms, poor). On the other hand, in all essential matters it is much earlier in character than the language of contemporary Gothic manuscripts, and no doubt approaches more nearly than any Germanic idiom the primitive form of the Germanic tongue. For the sake of comparison, we give a Gothic translation of one of the oldest of the primitive Scandinavian inscriptions, that on the golden horn of Gallehus, found on the Danish~~ German frontier, and dating from about 400 a.p.:—

Scand.: EK HLEWAGASTIZ. HOLTINGAR. HORNA, TAWIDO ; Goth.: tk hliugasts. hultiggs. haurn. tawida ; Engl.: I, Hlewagastir, son of Holta, made the horn ;

as well as the inscription on the stonemonument of Jdrsbdrg in western Sweden, which is at least a hundred years later :—

Scand. : uBAA 111TE. WARITU ;

Goth. : war hita, hrabns wit jah tk airils rands writu ;

Engl. : In memory of Hitan. We both, Harabanar and I Erilar, wrote the runes.

NARABANAR WIT IAll EK ERILAR RUNOR

transformed its character, This change is especially noticeable in the dropping of unaccented vowels, and in the introduction of a certain vowel harmony of different kinds (“ Umlaut”, vowel changes, caused by a following z (/) or « (w), as kveedi for kwéSi, poem, and “ Brechung”, as healpa instead of helpa, to help), different assimilations of conson- ants (as U/, nn for lp, np; ll, wn, rr, and ss for 7R, mR, rR, and sk), dropping of w before o and w (as 07%, ulfr for word, word, wulfR, wolf), simplified

inflexion of the verbs, a new passive formed by means of affixing the reflexive pronoun sz to the active form (as kalla-sk, to call one's self, to be called), &c.

At this epoch, therefore, the primitive Scandinavian language must be considered as no longer existing. The next two centuries form a period of transition as regards the language as well as the alphabet which it employed.

We possess some inscriptions belonging to this period in Period of which the old runic alphabet of twenty-four characters is transition.

still used, and the language of which closely resembles that of the primitive Scandinavian monuments, as, for

Relation Although very brief, and not yet thoroughly inter- | example, those on the stones of Stentoften and Ljorketorp, to other preted,! these primitive Scandinavian inscriptions are both from southern Sweden, probably dating from the lan-

nevertheless sufficient to enable us to determine with some

10th century, and being the longest inscriptions yet found

ems certainty the relation which the language in which they with the old runic alphabet. On the other hand, inscrip- are written bears to other languages. Thus it is proved | tions have come down to us dating from about the middle that it belongs to the Germanic family of the Indo-Euro- | of the 9th century, in which the later and exclusively pean stock of languages, of which it constitutes an inde- | Scandinavian alphabet of sixteen characters has almost pendent and individual branch. Its nearest relation being | completely superseded the earlier alphabet, from which it the Gothic, these two branches are sometimes taken | was developed, while the language not only differs widely together under the general denomination Hastern Germanic, | from the original Scandinavian, but also exhibits dialec- as opposed to the other Germanic idioms (German, English, | tical peculiarities suggesting the existence of a Danish- Dutch, &c.), which are then called Western Germanic, | Swedish language as opposed to Norwegian, as the

form Dialects. The most essential point of correspondence between the | 7uvw/f on the stone at /lemlise in Denmark, which in a Gothic and Scandinavian branches is the insertion in certain | Norwegian inscription would have been written hruulf cases of gg before w and j (ggj in Gothic was changed | corresponding to ro/f in Old Norwegian literature. into ddj), as in gen. plur. O. H. G. zwetio, O. Engl. twega | These differences, however, are unimportant, and the (two), compared with O. Icel., O. Norw. tveggja, O. Sw., | Scandinavians still considered their language as one and O. Dan. twiggje, Goth. twaddjé; and, still, in Germ. trew, | the same throughout Scandinavia, and named it Donsk Engl. true, compared with Sw., Norw., Dan. trygg, Icel. | twnga, Danish tongue. But when Iceland was colonized tryggr, Goth. triggws. However, even in the primitive | at the end of the 9th and the beginning of the 10th Scandinavian age the difference between Gothic and | century, chiefly from western Norway, a separate (western) Scandinavian is more clearly marked than the resem- | Norwegian dialect gradually sprang up, at first of course blance ; thus, for example—just to hint only at some of.| only differing slightly from the mother-tongue. It was the oldest and most essential differences—Goth. nom. sing, | not until the introduction of Christianity (about 1000 ending in -s corresponds to primitive Scandinavian -aR, rR | 4D.) that the language was so far differentiated as to (as Goth. dags, day, gasts, guest = Scand. dagar, gastir) ; | enable us to distinguish, in runic inscriptions and in the Goth. gen. sing. in -¢s to Scand. -as (as Goth. dagis, day’s = literature which was then arising, four different dialects, Scand. dagas) ; Goth. dat. sing. in -a to Scand. ~~e (as Goth. which have ever since existed as the four literary lan~~ kaurna, corn=Scand. kurne); Goth. Ist pers. sing. pret. guages—lIcelandic, Norwegian, Swedish, and Danish. Of in -da to Scand. -do (as Goth. tawida, did =Scand. tawido), | these the latter two, often comprehended within the name As early as the beginning of the so-called later Iron of Eastern Seandinanan, as well as the former two, Western Age (about 700 a.p.) the primitive Scandinavian language Scandinavian, or, to use the Old Scandinavians’ own name, Trans- had undergone a considerable transformation, as is proved Norrgnt mal, Northern tongue, are very nearly related to ‘Sa for example by the remarkable runic stone at Istaby in | each other. ‘The most important differences between the Ditfer-

two branches, as seen in the oldest preserved documents, ences are the following :—(1) In E. Scand. far fewer cases of Labi “ Umlaut,” as vdri, W. Scand. veri, were ; land, W. Scand. ,n4 lond (from landu), lands; (2) E. Scand. “ Brechung” of Western

2 into 7 (or 0) before ng(w), nk(w), as siunge, W. Scand. Scandi-

the south of Sweden, with the inscription—

AFATR HARIWULAFA HAPUWULAFR HAERUWULAFIA WARAIT RUNAR PAIAR ;

Engl.: In memory of Hariwulfr, Hapuwulfr, son of Heruwulfr, wrote these runes,

Here, ¢.g., we find nom, sing. in -aR changed into -7 (cf. navian,

hapuwulafr with holtingar on the golden horn), and the plural ending -or into -ar (cf. runaR with runor on the Jirsbirg-stone). At the beginning of the so-called Viking Period (about 800 a.p.) the Scandinavian language seems to have undergone an extraordinarily rapid development, which in a comparatively short time almost completely

1 For the interpretations we are principally indebted to Prof, 8S. Bugge’s ingenious investigations, who in 1865 satisfactorily suc- ceeded in deciphering the inscription of the golden horn, and by this Means gained a fixed starting-point for further researches. A short review of their most important results is given by F, Burg, Die dlteren Nordischen Runeninschriften, 1885.

syngva (from singwa), to sing; (3)in E. Scand. mp, nk, nt are In many cases not assimilated into pp, kk, tt, as krumpen, W. Scand. kroppenn, shrunken ; enkie, W. Scand. ekkja, widow ; bant, W. Scand. batt, he bound ; (4) in E. Scand. the dative of the definite plural ends in -omen instead of W. Scand. -onom, as in handomen, hendonom, (to) the hands; (5) in E. Scand. the simplification of the verbal inflexional endings is far further advanced, and the passive ends in -s for ~~sk, as in kalles, W. Scand. kadllask, to be called In several of these points, and indeed generally speaking, the Western~~

~~Scandinavian languages have pre~~ served the more primitive forms, as may be seen in the

Icu- LANDIC.

Old Iee- landic.

Sourees.

Form of

the lan- guage.

368

oldest Eastern Scandinavian runic inscriptions, dating from a period before the beginning of the literature, as well as in many modern Eastern Scandinavian dialects, For, having regard to the Scandinavian dialects generally, we must adopt quite a different classification from that indicated by the dialects which are represented in the literature. We now pass on to review the latter and their history.

I, IcrtaAnpic.—In ancient times Icelandic was by far the most important of the Scandinavian languages, in form as well as in literature. To avoid ambiguity, the language before tho Reforma- tion (about 1580-40) is often called Old Icelandic.

1. Old Icelandic was spoken not only in Iceland, but also in Green- land, where Icelandic colonists lived for a lengthened period (983- about 1400). Our knowledge of its character is almost exclusively derived from the remarkably voluminous literature,! dating from the middle of the 12th century, and written in the Latin alphabet, adapted to the special requirements of this language. Nothing is preserved of older runic literature.? Indeed, Old Icelandic pos- sesses only very few runie monuments (about forty), all of them almost worthless from a philological point of view. The oldest, the inscription on the church door of Valpjdfstadr, dates from the beginning of the 13th ecntury,? and is consequently later than the oldest preserved manuscripts* in the Latin alphabet, some of which

are as old as the end of the 12th century. A small frag- ment (Cod. AM. 2387, fol.) of a Book of Homilies (of which a short specimen is given below) is considered the oldest of all. About contemporary with this is the oldest part of an inventory entitled Reykjaholts mdldage. From about 1200 we possess a fragment (Cod. Reg. old sign. 1812) of the only existing Old Icelandic glossary, and from the first years of the 18th century the Stockholm Book of Homilies (Cod. Holm. 15, 4to), which from a philological point of view is of the greatest importance, chiefly on account of its very accurate orthography, which is especially noticeable in the indica- tion of quantity; from the early part of the same century comes the fragment (Cod. AM. 325, 2, 4to) entitled grip (“ abridgment” of the history of Norway), probably a copy of a Norwegian original, also orthographically important. Among later manuscripts we may mention, as philologically interesting, the Annales Regi (Cod. Rog. 2087) from the beginning of the 14th century, orthographically of great value; the rich manuscript of miscellanies, Hauwksbdk (Codd. AM. 3871, 544, 675, 4to), a great part of which is written with THaukr Erlendsson’s (+1334) own hand; and, above all, threc short essays, in which some Icelanders have tried to write a grammatical and orthographical treatise ou their own mother-tongue, all three appearing as an appendix to the manuscripts of the Prose Edda. The oldest and most important of these essays (preserved in tho Cod. Worm. from about 1330) is by an unknown author of about 1150, and is probably intended to be a continuation of a lost work of the first grammarian of Iceland, péroddr Runamcistari (who flourished at the beginning of the 12th century); the second (the oldest known manuscript of which is preserved in the Cod. Ups., c. 1290) is perhaps the work of the famous Snorri Sturloson (+1241) ; the third (the oldest manuscript in Cod. AM. 748, 4to, of the begin- ning of the 14th century) is by Snorri’s nephew Olafr Hvitaskald (+1259), and is no doubt based partly upon Pérodd’s work above mentioned, partly and ehiefly upon Priscian and Donatus.®

The oldest form of the Icelandic language is, however, not pre- served in the above-mentioned earliest manuscripts of the end of the 12th century, which are written in the language of their own age, but in far later ones of the 18th century, which contain poems by the oldest Icelandic poets, such as the renowned Egill Skalla- grimson (about 930) and the unknown authors of the so-called Hdda-songs. In spite of the late date of the manuscripts, the

metrieal form has been the means of preserving a good deal of the ancient language. But, as already remarked, during the 10th and 11th centuries this dialect differs but little from Norwegian, though in the 12th this is no longer the case.

We may here contrast a specimen of the above-mentioned oldest Icelandie manuscript (from the end of the 12th century) with an almost contemporary Norwegian one (Cod. AM. 619; see below):—

1 A complete catalogue of the literature edited hitherto is given by Th. MGbius, Catalogus Librorum Islandicorum et Norvegicorum Aitatis Mediz, 1856, and Ver- zeichniss der . . . altisldindischen und altnorwegischen… von 1855 bis 1879 erschienenen Schriften, 1880. Compare IcELAND.

3 an y ee eeu | ie ac ae den Oldislandske literatur, 1883,

ee Kr. Kualun slands fortidslevninger" (in the Aarddge Oldkyndighed, 1882). a one ee

4 An account of all the oldest Icclandic manuscripts (to about 1230) is glven by J. Hoffory in the Gétt. Gel. Anz., 1884, p. 478 sq.

5 A short review of the most important Old Icelandic manuscripts (and their editions), classed according to subjects, is given by O. Brenner, Altnordisches Handbuch, pp. 13 sg. The principal collections of manuscripts are—1l, the Arnamagnzan (AM.) in Copenhagen, founded by Arni Magniisson (+1730); 2, the collection of the Royal Library (Reg.) in Copenhagen, founded by Th. Torfzus (+1719) and Brynjélfr Sveinsson (+1674); 8, the Delagardian collection (Delag, or Ups.) at Upsala, founded in 1651 by Magnus Gabriel de la Gardie; 4, the

Stockholm collection (Holm,), founded by Jén Rugman (in 1662 Eggertson (in 1682). (: – = . ares

Iccl.—"n pat es vitanda, at allt ma andlega merkiase oc fyllasec i oss, pat es til kirkio bunings epa pionosto parf at haua, ef ver liuom sva hreinlega at vér sem verper at callasc gops mustere.

SCANDINAVIAN LANGUAGES

Norw.—En pat er vitanda, at allt ma andlega merkiase oc fyllasc i os, pat er til kirkiu bunings eda til pionasto parf at hafa, ef vér lifum sva reinlega, at vér sem verdir at kallasc guds mysteri.

Engl,-—And thatis to be known that all that is needed for the decoration of the church or the service may, spiritually, be found and imitated within us, if we live so cleanly that we are worthy to be called

God’s temple.

Apart fron the fact that the language is, generally speaking, arehaie, we find in the Icelandic text two of the oldest and most essential characteristics of Icelandic as opposed to Norwegian, viz., the more complete vowel assimilation (pionosto, pionasto ; ef. also, c.g., Icel. Kollopom, Norw. kalladwm, we called) and the retention of initial 2 before 7 (hretnlega, reinlega), 1, and ». Other differ- ences, some of which occur at this period, others a little later, are— in Icel. lengthening of a, 0, % before lf, lg, lk, lm, and Zp (as Icel. halfr, Norw. and oldest Icel. halfr, half); later still, also of a, 2, 2, and y before ng and nk; Icel. & and cy for older g and @y (as in Icel. dénu, heyra, Norw. and oldest Icel. déma, to deem, héyra, to hear); Icel. termination of 2nd plur. of verbs in -3 (p) or -t, but Norw. often in -r (as Icel. taki, -t, Norw. takir, yon take). These points may be sufficient to characterize the language of the earlier ‘elassical” period of Icelandic (about 1190-1350). At the middle of the 18th century the written language undergoes material changes, owing in a great measure, no doubt, to the powerful influenec of Snorri Sturloson. Thus in unaccented syllables 7 now appears for older e, and wu (at first only when followed by one or more eon- sonants belonging to the same syllable) for 0; the passive ends iu -2 for ~~sk. The other differences from Norwegian, mentioned above as occurring later, are now completely established. With the begin~~ ning of the 14th century there appear several new linguistic pheno- mena: au is inserted between final 7 and a preceding consonant (as in rékur, mighty); 9 (pronounced as an open 0) passes into 6 (the character 6 was not introduced till the 16th century), or before ng, nk into au (as long, figll, pronounced laung, fidll) ; e before ng, nk passes into e7; a little later é passes into ze, and the passive changes its termination from -z, oldest -sk, into -z¢ (or -zs¢)

(as in kallazt, to be called). The post-classical period of Old Icelandic (1350-1530), which is, from a literary point of view, of but little iunportance, already shows marked differences that are eharacter- istic of Modern Icelandic ; as early as the 15th century we find ddl – for 77 and 71 (as falla, pronounecd faddla, to fall), dd for an and rn (as horn, pron. hoddn, horn); about the year 1500 ve after passes into vo, in other positions to vé (as hvelpr, pron. xvolpur, whelp; kvern, pron. kvdrn, mill), ete.

Although dialectical differences are not altogether wanting, they Dialects.

do not occur to any great extent in the Old Icelandie literary language. Thus, in some manuscripts we find /¢ replaced by /st (oft, ofst, often) ; in manuscripts from the western part of the island there appears in the 18th and 14th centuries a tendency to change If, rf into 1b, rb (tolf, tolb, twelve ; porf, perb, want), &c. To what extent the language of Greenland differed from that of Iceland we cannot judge from the few runic monuments which have come down to us from that colony.

Apart from the comparatively inconsiderable attempts at a Gram- grammatical treatment of Old Icelandic in the Middle Ages which matical we have mentioned above, grammar as a science can only be said treat- to have commenced inthe 17th century. The first grammar, written ment.

by the Icelander Runolphus Jonas (+1654), dates from 1651. His contemporary and compatriot Gudmund Andres (+1654) compiled the first dictionary, which was not, however, edited till 1688 (by the Dane Petrus Resenius, +1688). The first scholars who studied Old Icelandie systematically were H. K. Rask (1787-1832), whose works 6 laid the foundation to our knowledge of the language, and his great contemporary Jac. Grimm, in whose Deutsche Grammatik (1819 sq.) particular attention is paid to Icclandic. Those who since the time of Rask and Grimm have principally deserved well of Icelandic grammar are—the ingenious and learned Norwegian P. A. Munch, 1863,’ to whom we really owe the normalized orthography that has hitherto been most in use in editing Old Icelandic texts; the lcarned Icelander K. Gislason, whose works are chiefly devoted to phonetic researches ;8 the Danish scholars K. J. Lyngby (+1871), the anthor of an essay ® whieh is of funda- mental importanco in Icelandic orthography and phonetics, and L, F. A. Wimmer, who has

rendered great services to the study of the etymology.!® The latest Icelandic grammar is by the Swede Ad. Noreen.” As lexieographers the first rank is held by the

6 .g., Veiledning til det Islandske sprog, 1811; in a new, much improved Swedish edition, Anvisning tit Isldndskan, 1818.

7 Fornswenskans och Fornnorskans sprakbyggnad, 1849, and (along with C. R. Unger) Norrénasprogets grammattk, 1847,

8 Especially Um frumparta Islenzkrar tingu ¢ fornéld, 1846.

® Den Oldnordiske udtale, 1861. 10 Fornnordisk formidra, 1874.

11 Alttsldndische und altnorwegische Grammatik unter Berticksichtigung des Urnordischen, 1884.

‘alects.

q

1 ae

jatial jeat-

Jent,

BCANDINAVIAN LANGUAGES

Icelanders Sy. Egilsson (+1852),1 G. Vigfiisson,? and J. porkels son,* and the Norwegian J. Fritzner.4

2. Modern Icelandic is generally datcd from the introduction of the Reformation into Iceland; the book first printed, the New Testament of 1540, may be considered as the earliest Modern Icelandic document. Although, on account of the exceedingly conservative tendency of Icelandic orthography, the language of Modern Icclandic litcrature still seems to be almost identical with the language of the 17th century, it has in reality undergone a constant and active development, and, phonetically regarded,

has changed considerably. Indeed, energetic efforts to bring about an orthography more in accordance with phonetics were made during the years 1885-47 by the magazine entitled Hélnir, where we find such authors as Jonas Hallgrimsson and Konr. Gislason ; but these attempts proved abortive. Of more remarkable etymological changes in Modern Icelandic we may note the following :—already about the year 1550 the passive termination -z¢ (-zst) passes into the till then very rare termination ~~st (as in kallast, to be called) ; y, §, and ey at the beginning of the 17th century coincided with 2, 4, and ei; the long vowels d, &, and 6 have passed into the diph~~ thongs au (at least about 1650), az (about 1700), ow (as mdi, language, mela, to speak, stdéld, chair); g before 1, j is changed into dj (after a consonant) or 7 (after a vowcl),—e.g., liggia, to lie, ezg?, not; in certain other cases g has passed into gw or w,—e.g., ldgur, low, Yuga, to lie; initial g before n is silent,—e.g., (g)naga, to gnaw; kn has passed into hn,— é.g., kuitr, knot; ps, pt into fs, ft; bb, dd, gg are pronounced as bp, dt, gk, and Ul, rl, nn, rm now in most positions – (not, however, before d, ¢, and s, and in abbreviated names) as dél, din,— as fjall, mountain, bjérn, bear ; f before n is now pronounced as bp, — ashrafn, raven, &c. Both in vocabulary and syntax we find early, €.g., in the lawbook Jénsbék, printed in 1578(—80), Danish exercis- ing an important influence, as might be expected from political circumstances. In the 18th century, however, we meet with purist tendencies. As one of the leading men of this century may be mentioned the poet Eggert Olafsson (+1768), whose poems were not printed till 1832. Worthy of mention in the history of Modern Icelandic language are the learned societies which appeared in the same century, of which the first, under the name of ‘* Hid ésyuilega,” was established in 1760. At this time archaic tendencies, going back to the Old Icelandic of the 18th and 14th centuries, were continually gaining ground. In our century the following havo won especial renown in Icelandic literature :— Bjarne Porarenseu (+1841), Iceland’s greatest lyric poet, and Jénas Hallgrimsson (+1845), perhaps its most prominent prose-author in modern times.®

The dialectical differences in Modern Icelandic are comparatively trifling and chiefly phonetic. The Westland dialect has, for exainple, ,preserved the Old Icelandic long a, while the other dialects have changed it to the diphthong aw; in the Northland dialect initial kn is preserved, in the others changed into hn; in the northérn and western parts of the island Old

Icelandic hw appears as kv, in a part of south-eastern Iccland as x, in the other dialects as xw,—e.g., hvelpr, whelp. Asa matter of curiosity it may be noted that on the western and eastern coasts traces are found of a French-Icelandic language, which arose from the long sojourn of French fishermen there.

Owing to the exclusive interest taken in the ancient language, but little attention is given even now to the granimatical treatment of Modern Icelandic. Some notices of the language of the 17th century may be obtained from the above-mentioned grammar of Runolphus Jonas (1651), and for the language of the 18th from Rask's grammatical works. For the language of our own time there is hardly anything to refer to but N. Fridriks- son's works, J/slenzk mdlmyndalgsing, 1861, and Skgring hinna almennu mdalfredislegu hugmynda, 1864, which, however, are not especially devoted to the modern state of philology ; compare also B. Magnusson Olsen's valuable paper ‘‘ Zur neuislandischen Grammatik" (Germania, xxvii., 1882).

II. NorwkGian or Norst.—The Old Norwegian language (till the Reformation) was not, like the modern language, confined to Norway and the Faroes, but was, as already stated, for some time

1 Lexicon poeticum, 1854-60.

2 An Icelandic-English Dictionary, based on the MS. collections of the late R. Cleasby, 1869-74.

3 Supplement ttl Islandske ordbpger, 1876 and 1879-85,

4 Ordbog over det Gamle Norske sprog, 1862-67 ; new ed., 1883 sq,

5 Sce R. Arpi, "Islands yngre literatur och sprik" (Sprdkvetenskapliga sdll-skapets forhandlingar, 1883-85).

6 Notices of the Modern Icelandic pronunciation are also to be found in II. Sweet's Handbook of Phonetics, 1877, Chr, Vidstcen's Oplysninger om Bygde- maalene t Hardanger, 1885, and R. Arpi's above-quoted paper.

spoken in parts of Ireland and the north of Scotland, the Isle of Man, the Hebrides, Shetland, and Orkney (in the last two groups of islands it continued to survive down to modern times), and also in certain parts of western Sweden as at present defined (Bohuslan, Sarna in Dalarna, Jimtland, and Harjedalen).

Our knowledge of it is due only in a small measure to runic Sources.

inscriptions,' for these are comparatively few in number (a little more than one hundred) and of trifling importance from a philological point of view, especially as they almost wholly belong to the period between 1050 and 1850,8 and consequently are contemporary with or at least not much earlier than the earliest literature. The whole literature preserved is written in the Latin alphabet. The earliest manuscripts are not much later than the oldest Old Icelandic ones, and of the greatest interest. On the whole, however, the earlicst Norwegian literature is in quality as well as in quantity incomparably inferior to the Icclandic. It amounts merely to about a score of different works, and of these but few are of any literary value. A small fragment (Cod. AM. 655, 4to, Fragm. ix., A, B, C), a collection of legends, no doubt written a little before 1200, is regarded as the earliest extant manuscript. From the very beginning of the 18th century we have tho Norwegian Book of Homilies (Cod. AM. 619, 4to) and several fragments of law-books (the older Gulapingslaw and the older Lidsivapingslaw). The chief manuscript (Cod. AM. 248B., fol.) of the principal work in Old Norwegian literature, the Speculwm Regale, or Konungsskuggsjé ('* Mirror for Kings"), is a little later. Of still later manuscripts the so-called legendary Olafssaga (Cod. Delag. 8, fol.), from about 1250, deserves mention. The masses of charters which—occurring throughout the whole Middle Age of Norway ° from the beginning of the 18th century—afford much information, especially concerning the dialectical differences of the language, are likewise of great philological importance.

As in Old Icclandic so in Old Norwegian we do not find the Form of most primitive forms in the oldest MSS. that have come down the lan- to us; for that purpose we must recur to somewhat later ones, guage.

containing old poems from times as remote as the days of Brage Boddason (the beginning of the 8th century) and pjédolfr of Hvin (end of tho same century). It has already been stated that the language at this epoch differed so little from other Scandinavian dialects that it could scarcely yet be called by a distinctive name, and also that, as Icelandic separated itself from the Norwegian mother-tongue (about 900), the difference between the two languages was at first infinitely small—as far, of course, as the literary language is concerned. From the 18th century, however, they exhibit more marked differences ; for, while Icelandic develops to a great extent independently, Norwegian, owing to geographical and political circumstances, is considerably influenced by the Eastern Scandinavian languages. The most important differences between Icelandic and Norwegian at the epoch of the oldest MSS. (about 1200) have already been noted. The tendency in Norwegian to retain the use of the so-called w-Umlaut has already been mentioned. On the other hand, there appears in Norwegian in the 13th century another kind of vowel-assimilation, almost unkuown to Icclandic, the vowel in terminations being in some degree influenced by the vowel of the preceding syllable. Thus, for instance, we find in some manuscripts (as the above-mentioned legendary Olafssaga) that the vowels ¢, o and long a, #, ¢ are followed in terminations by e, 0; 2, uw, y, and short a, &, ¢, on the other hand, by 7, w,—-as in béner, prayers, konor, women ; but ttdir, times, tungur, tongues. The same fact occurs in certain Old Swedish manuscripts. When Norway had been united later with Sweden under one crown (1819) we meet pure Suecisms in the Norwegian literary language. In addition to this, the 14th century exhibits scveral differences from the old language??: al, 7m are sometimes assimilated into 72, n,—as kall (elder karl), man, konn (korn), corn, prestanner (prestarnir), the priests; 7 passes into y before 7, 1,—as hyrdtr (hirdir), shepherd, lykyl (lykiilt), key ; final -r after a consonant is changed into -er or -x7, sometimes only -¢, ~~#,—as hester (hestr), horse; b¢ker (békr), books; the names polleifer (Porleifr), Gudleife (Gudleifr). About the beginning of the 15th century initial &v occurs for old hv (not, however, in pronouns, which take kv only in western Norway), as the local name @vitesetd (hvttr, white). During the 15th century, Norway being united with Denmark, and at intervals also with Sweden, a great many Danisms and a few Suecisms are im~~ ported into the language. As Suecisms we may mention the ter- mination

-in of the 2d pers. plur. instead of -ir, -78 (as vilin, you will), the pronoun jak instcad of ek, J. The most important Danisms

7 For these see especially Nicolaysen, Vorske fornievninger, 1862-66.

8 The oldest are those on the Valdby- (Larvik) and Strand- (Aafjord) stones, both from pagan times. The latest rune-stones are from the end of the 14th century. Owing to influence of tho learned such stones appear again in the 17th century, é.g., in Telemarken.

» On the Old Norwegian manuscripts see the works cited in notes 4, 5, page 368; for the literature hitherto edited sce note 1, page 368.

10 The present writer is indebted to Prof. Joh. Storm for the following remarks on the history of the Norwegian lkinguage and its dialects during the 14th and

15th centurics. XXI. — 47

Dialeets.

Gram- matical treat- ment.

370

are the following: 0, d, and g are substituted for y, ¢, and i, —as in the local names Nadb¢ (earlier Napa), Tvede sogn (preita sékn) ; -a in terminations passes into ~~e,—as hegre (hayra), to hear, sdghe (spkja), to scek ; single Danish words are introduced,—as jek (ek), I, se (sd), to see ; spgrge (spyrja), to ask, &c. Towards the end of the Middle Ages the Danish influence shows an immense Increase, which marks the gradual decline of Norwegian literature, until at last Norwegian as literary language is completely supplanted by Danish, During the 15th century Norway has hardly any litera~~ ture exeept charters, aud as early as the end of that century by far the greatest number of these are written in almost pure Danish. In the 16th century, again, charters written in Norwegian occur only as rare exceptions, and from the Reformation onward, when the Bible and the old laws were translated into Danish, not into Norwegian, Danish was not only

the undisputed literary language of Norway, but also the colloquial language of dwellers in towns and of those who had learned to read. For the rise in reeent times of a new Norwegian language, employed in literature and spoken by the educated classes, see p. 3738. f

Dialectical differences, as above hinted, occur in great number in the Norwegian charters of the 13th, 14th, and 15th centuries. Especially marked is the difference between the language of western Norway, which, in many respeets, shows a development parallel to that of Ieelandie, and the language of eastern Norway, which exhibits still more striking correspondences with contem- porary Old Swedish. The most remarkable characteristics of the eastern dialects of this epoch are the following :—a is changed into gz in the pronouns penn, this, bet, that, and the particle ber, there (the latter as early as the 13th century), and later on (in the 14th century) also in terminations after a long root syllable, —as senda, to send, Adyrx, to hear (but gera, to do, vita, to know); ta passes (as in Old Swedish and Old Danish) into iwz—as hizwrta (Icel. hyarta), heart; y sometimes passes into iw before 1, 1,—as hiwrder, shep- herd, Zykiul, key, instead of hyrSir, lykyl (older still, hirdir, lykill; see above, p. 369); final -r after a consonant often passes into -ar, sometimes only into -a,—as prestar (prestr), priest, bpkar (békr), books, dat. sing. brg8a (drgdr), (to a) brother; ¢/ passes into tsl, sl, —as lisla (litle), (the) little, the name Afsle, Asie (Atle); ys gives a ‘‘thick” s-sound (written /s),—as Bardols, genitive of the name Bergpérr; nd, id are assimilated into nn, 1/,—as bann (band), band, the local name Westfoll (Vestfold) ; and (as far back as the 13th century) traces occur of the vowel assimilation, ‘‘tiljevning,” that is so highly characteristic of the modern Nor- wegian dialects, —as voko, vuku, for vaku, (Icel. vpko, -u), accusative singular of vaka, wake, mykyll for mykill, much. On the other land, as characteristics of the western dialects may be noted the following : —final -r after a consonant passes into -wr, -or, —as velwur (vetr), winter, rettwr (réttr), right, aftor (aftr), again ; s/ passes into tl,—as sytila (s§sla), charge ; hvis changed into kvalso in pronouns, —as kver (hverr), who, kvassu (hversu), how.

This splitting of the language into dialects seems to have continued to gain ground, probably with greater rapidity as a Norwegian literary language no longer existed. Thus it is very likely that the’present dialectical division was

in all essentials accom- plished about the year 1600; for, judging from the first work on Norwegian dialectology,} the Sgndfjord (Western Norway) dialect at least possessed at that time most of its present features. A little clog-calendar of the year 1644 seems to prove the same regarding the Valders (Southern Norway) dialect. How far the Old Norwegian dialects on the Faroes, in Ireland and Scotland, on the Scottish islands, and on the Isle of Man differed from the mother-tongue it is impossible to decide, on account of the few remnants of these dialects which exist apart from local names, viz., some charters (from the beginning of the 15th century onward) from the Faroes? and Orkneys,' and a few runic inscriptions from the Orkneys (thirty in number)' and the Isle of Man (fourteen in number).° These runic inscriptions, however, on account of their imperfect ortho- graphy, throw but little light on the subject. Of the Orkney dialect we know at least that initial 2, hn, hr still preserved A in the 13th century,—that is, two hundred years longer than in Norway.

Old Norwegian grammar has hitherto always been taken up in connexion with Old Icelandic, and confined to notes and appen- dices inserted in works on Icelandic grammar. A systematic treatise on Old Norwegian grammar is still wanting, with the exception of a short work by the Danish scholar N. M. Petersen (+ 1862), which, although brief and decidedly antiquated, deserves all praise. A most valuable collection of materials exists, how- ever, in the Norwegian charters, carefully and accurately edited by the Norwegian scholars Chr. Lange (+1861) and C. R. Unger,' and in a few texts edited with diplomatic accuracy.®

1 Chr, Jensen's Norsk dictionarium eller glosebog, 1646.

2 See Diplomatarium Norvegicum vol. i. u. 589 and 591.

3 See Dipl. Norv., i. n. 308.

4 See P. A. Muneh, Samlede afhandlinger, iv. 516 sq.

5 See Muneh, Sami. afh., iii, 181 sq.

& Det Danske, Norske, og Svenske sprogs historte, part ii. pp. 1-96 (ed. 1830).

? Diplomatarium Norvegicum, 1857 sq.; 10 vols. have already appeared.

8 Compare the prefaces to Vigftisson’s edition of the Eyrbyggjasaga (1864),

Il], Swepisu.—The Pre-Reformation language is called Old Swenisx,

Swedish.

1. Old Swedish.—The territory of the Old Swedish compre- Old

hended—({1) Sweden, except the most northerly part, where Swedish,

Lappish (and Finnish ?) was spoken, the most southerly (Skane, Halland, and Blekinge—see below, p. 378), and certain parts of western Sweden (see above, p. 369); (2) extensive maritime tracts of Finland, Esthonia, and Livonia, with their surrounding islands; and (8) certain places in Russia, where Swedish was spoken for a short time. of onr knowledge of Old Swedish are those words, almost ex- clusively personal names (nearly one huudred), which were introduced into the Russian language at the foundation of the Russian realm by Swedes (in 862), and which are for the most part somewhat influenced by Russian phonetic laws, pre- served in two Russian documents of the years 912 and 945,9—as Igor (O. Sw. Ingvar), Rurik (Ar¢rikr), Oleg (Hialge, secondary form of Helge), Olga (Hialga, Helga). Of about the same date, but of an infinitely greater variety, are the runic inscriptions, amounting in number to about two thousand, which have been found cut on stones (rarely wood, metal, or other materials) almost all over Sweden, though they occur most frequently (about half of the total number) in the province of Uppland, next to whicli come Sodermanland, Ostergdtland, and Gotland, with about two hundred each. For the most part they are tombstones or monu- ments in memory of deceased relatives, rarely public notices. Their form is often metrical, in part at least. Most of them are anonymous, in so far that we do not know the name of the engraver, though, as a rule, the name of the man who ordered them is recorded, Of the engravers named, about seventy in nuniber, the three most productive are Ubir, Bali, and Asmundr Karasun, all three principally working in Upland ; the first-mentioned name is signed on about

forty, the others on nearly twenty stones each. These inscriptions vary very much in age, belonging to all centuries of Old Swedish, but by far the greatest number of them date from the 11th and 12th centuries. From heathen times—as well as from the last two centuries of the Middle Ages—we havc com- paratively few. ‘T’lie oldest are probably the Ingelstad inscrip- tion in Ostergétland, and the Gursten one found in the north of Smaland.!° The rune stone from Rok in Ostergdtland prob- ably dates from the first half of the 10th century. Its inscrip- tion surpasses, all the others both in length (more than one hundred and fifty words) and in the importance of its contents, which are equally interesting as regards philology and the history of culture; it is a fragment (partly in metrical form) of an Old Swedish heroic tale! From about the year 1000 we possess the inscriptions of Asmundr Karasun, and from about 1050 the so-called Ingvar monuments (about twenty in number), erected most of them in Sédermanland, in honour of the men who fell in a great war in eastern Europe under the eommand of a certain Ingvar ; the stones cut by Bali belong to the same period. Somewhat later are the inscriptions cut by Ubir, and about contemporary with them, viz., from the beginning of the 12th century, is the remarkable inscription on the door-ring of the church of Forsa in Helsingland, containing the oldest Scandinavian statute !* now preserved, as well as other inscriptions from the same province, written in a particular variety of the common runic alphabet, the so-called “ staflésa ” (stafiless, without the perpendicular staff) runes, as the long genealogical inscription on the Malstad-stone. The inscrip- tions 1 of the following centuries are of far less philological interest, because after the 18th century there exists another and more fruit- ful source for Old Swedish, viz., a literature in the proper sense of the word, which was only in a limited degree written in runes. Of the runic literature hardly anything has been preserved to our days,4 while the literature in the Latin letters is both in quality and extent incomparably infcrior to Old Icelandic, though it, at least in quantity, considerably surpasses Old Norwegian. In age, however, it is inferior to both of them, beginning only in the 18th century. The oldest of the extant manuscripts is a codex of the Older Vestgitalaw (Cod. Holm. B 59), written about the year 1290, and philologically of the greatest importance. Not much later is a codex of the Uplandslaw (Cod. Ups. 12) of the year 1300. Of other works of value from a philological point of view we

only mention a codex of the Sédermannalaw (Cod. Holm. B 58) of about 1380, the two manuscripts containing a

Keyser's and Unger's editions of the legendary Olafssaga (1849), and Bariaams Saga ok Josaphats (1851), Unger's ed. of pidrekssaga (1853), and Th. Mébius's essay Ueber die altnordische Sprache, pp. 15-18 (1872).

9 See V. Thomsen, Ryska rikets grundliggning, especially p. 114 sq.; 8S. Bugge, " Oldsvenske navne i Rusland" (Arkiv f. Nord. Filol., ii.).

10 Kindly communicated by Prof. 8. Bugge.

11 See S. Bugge, "Tolkning af runeindskriften pa Rékstenen" (Antiqvarisk Tidskrift f. Sverige, v., 1878).

12 See 8S. Bugge, Runeindskriften paa ringen t Forsa Kirke, 1877.

13 For the runie inseriptions in general, see above all J. G. Liljegren, Runur- kunder, 1833; J. Géransson, Bautil, 1750; R. Dybeek, Svenska runurkunder, 1855-59, and Sverikes runurkunder, 1860-76; and the Journals of the antiquarian soeieties in Sweden.

14 See L. F. Leffler, " Fornsvenska runhandskrifter " (Nordisk Tidskrift, 1879).

The oldest but also the most meagre sources Sources,

collection of legends generally named Cod. Bureanus (written a little after 1350) and Cod. Bildstenianus (between 1420 and 1450), and the great Oxenstiernian manuscript, which consists chiefly of a collection of legends written for the most part in 1385. The very numerous Old Swedish charters, from 1843 downwards, are also of great importance.' Form of Old Swedish, during its earliest pre-literary period (900-1200), the lan- retains quite as original a character as contemporary Old Icelandic guage, and Old Norwegian. The first part of the inscription of the Rok- stone running thus — AFT UAMUp STANTA RUNAR pAR IN VARIN FAI FApPLA AFT

FAIKIAN SUNU,? and probably pronounced— eft Wamdéd standa rinar pér ; en Warenn fade fader eft feighian sunu, would, no doubt, have had the same form in contemporary Icclandic, except the last word, which would probably have had the less original form sun. The formal changes of the Swedish language during this period are, generally speaking, such as appear about the same time in all the members of the group,—as the change of soft R into common r (the Rok-stone runar, later rwnar, runes ; this appeared earliest after dental consonants, later aftcr an accented vowel), and the change of sp into s¢ (in the 10th century raispi, later reisti, raised); or they are, at least, common to it with Norwegian, —as the dropping of & before /, n, and 7 (in the 10th century hraur, younger rr, cairn), and the changing of nasal vowels (the long ones latest) into non-nasalized. A very old specific Swedish charac- teristic, however, isthe splitting up of 7 into 7 before ngw, nkw,— as siunga, to sing, stwnka, to sink, from primitive Scandinavian singwan, sinkwan (Icel.-Norw. syngvd, sékkva). But the case is altogether different during what we may call the classical period of Old Swedish (1200-1350), the time of the later runic inscriptions andthe oldestliterature. During this period the language is already distinctly separate from the (literary) Icelandic-Norwegian (though not yet from Danish). The words of the Older Vestgétalaw— FALDER KLOCK NIDER I HOVOP MANNI, BOTI SOPCN MARCHUM PRIM, EN HAN FAR BAN AF—* would in contemporary Icelandic be— fellr klukka nidr i héfud manni, beti sékn mérkum prim, ef hann fer bana af. : These few words exhibit instances of the following innovations in Swedish :—d is inserted between J (nn) and a following r (as 6 between m and J, 7, and p between m and ¢, n,—as hambrar, Icel. hamrar, hammers, sampt, Icel. samt, together with); an auxiliary vowel is inscrted between final 7 and a preceding consonant; @ in terminations is often changed into #; a w in the final syllable causes no change of a preceding a; the present tense takes the vowel of the infinitive (and the preterite subjunctive that of preterite indicative plural). Other important changes, appearing at the same time, but probably, partly at least, of a somewhat older date, are the following :—all diphthongs are contracted (as dgha, Icel. auga, eye; dréma, Icel. drdyma, to dream; sten, Icel. steinn, stone—traces of which we find as early as the 12th century); ¢ has passed into # (as knw, Icel. kné, knee); ta into t#, as in Eastern Norwegian (as Aiwrta, Icel. hjarta, heart); dt into y after 7, and a consonant +1 (as flygha, Icel. Jyiiga, to fly); the forms of the three persons singular of verbs have

assimilated (except in the so-called strong pretcrite); the 2d pers. plur. ends in -in for -i3, and the passive voice in -s for the earlier -sk; the dat. plur. of substantives with suffixed article ends in -umin (Iecl. ~~onom, as sunumin, sunonom, to the sons). The transition to the 14th century is marked by important changes :— short , ¢.g., passed into 6 in many positions (as dér for dyr, door, &c.), and the forms of the dative and the accusative of pronouns gradually became the same. The number of borrowed words is as yet very limited, and is chiefly confined to ecclesiastical words of Latin and Greek origin, introduced along with Christian~~ ity (as kors, cross, bref, epistle, skolt, school, prester, priest, almosa, alms). At the middle of the 14th century the literary language undergoes a remarkable reform, developing at the same time to a “riksspra k,” a uniform language, common to the whole country. The chief characteristics of this later Old Swedish are the follow- ing:—the long a has passed into 4 (that is, an open 0), and vo (except before rd, rt) into 76 (as své, sea, lake); at the same time there appears a so-called law of vowel balance, according to which the vowels ¢ and w are always found in terminations after a short root syllable, and—at least when no cousonant fol- lows—e and o after a long onc (as Gudi, to God, tl salu, for sale, but ¢ garpe, in the court, for visso, assuredly); g and & (sk) before

palatal vowels are softened into dj and tj (st); & and ¢in unac- cented syllables often pass into gh, dh (as Sverighe for Sverike, Sweden, litedh for litet, a little); the articles pen (or hin), the, and (a little later) en, a, come into use ; the dual pronouns vanish; the relative zr, that, is changed with swm; the present participle takes a secondary form in ~~s (as gangandes, beside gangande, going). A little later the following changes appear :— a short vowel is length~~ encd before a single consonant, first when the consonaut belongs to the same syllable (as hat, hate), afterwards also when it belongs to the following one (as hata, to hate) ; an auxiliary vowel is in- serted between Jor 1 and a preceding consonant (as gavel, gable, oken, desert) ; short 7, ending a syllable, passes into ¢ (as leva, to live) ; th passes into ¢; a new conjugation is formed which has no infini- tive termination, but doubles the sign of the preterite (as bo, bodde, bott, to dwell, dwelt, dwelt). Owing to the political and com- mercial state of the country the language at this period is deluged with borrowed words of Low German origin, mostly social and industrial terms, such as the great number of verbs in -era (¢.9.,

hantera, to handlc), the substantives in -ert (réveri, robbery), -inna (forstinna, princess), ~~het (fromhet, piety), be~~ (betala, to pay), and a great many others (len, weak, smaka, to taste, grover, big, pung, purse, tukt, discipline, bruka, to use, tvist, quarrel, stével, boot, arbeta, to work, frokoster, lunch, &c.). Owing to the political cir- cumstances, we find towards the end of the period a very powerful Danish influence, which extends also to phonetics and etymology, so that, for example, nearly all the terminal vowels are supplanted by the uniform Danish e, the hard consonants 7, t, & by 0, d, g as in Danish, the second person plural of the imperative ends in -er, beside -en (as tagher, for older takin).

Dialectical differences incontestably occur in the runic inscrip- Dialects. tions as well as in the literature ; in the former, however, most of them are hidden from our eyes by the character of the writing, which is, from a phonetic point of view, highly unsatisfactory, indicating the most different sounds by the same sign (for cxam- ple, 0, #, y, and 6 are denoted by one and the same rune) ; in the literature again they are reduced to a minimum by the awakening desire to form a uniform literary language for the whole country, and by the literary productivity and consequent predominant influence of certain provinces (as Ostergotland). This question, moreover, has not hitherto been investigated with sufficient care.* Only one distinct dialect has been handed down to us, that of the island of Gotland, which differs so essentially from the Old Swedish of the mainland that it haswith good reason been characterized, under the name Forngutniska, as in a certain sense a separate language. Forngut- Materials for its study are very abundant’: on one hand we niska. possess more than two hundred runic inscriptions, among them a very remarkable onc of the 12th or 13th century, counting upwards of three hundred runes, cut on a font (now in Aakirkeby on the island of Bornholm), and representing the life of Christ in a series of pictures and words ; on the other hand a literature has becn pre- served consisting of a runic calendar from 1328, the law of the island (from about 1350), a piece of traditional history, and a guild statute. The language is distinguished from the Old Swedish of the mainland especially by the following characteristics :—the old diphthongs are preserved (¢.g., auga, eye, droyma, to dream, stain, stone), and a new triphthong has arisen by the change of 7@ into tau (as fliauga, to fly); the long vowels ¢, @, 6, have passed into t, ¢, y (as kni, knee, mela, to speak, dyma, to deem); short o

rarely occurs except before 7, being in other positions changed into u; wis dropped before 7 (as raipt, wrath); the genitive singular of feminines in -« ends in -wr for ~~u (as kirkiur, of the church). Owing to the entire absence of documentary evidence it is impos~~ sible to determine how far the dialects east of the Baltic, which no doubt had a separate individuality, differed from the mothcr- tongue.

The first to pay attention to the study of Old Swedish ® was the The study Swedish savant J. Bureus (+1652), who by several works (from of Old 1599 onwards) called attention to and excited a lively interest in Swedish. the runic monuments, and, by his edition (1634) of the exccllent Old Swedish work Um Styrilsi Konunga ok Hofpinga, in Old Swedish literature also, His no longer extant Speeimen Primariz Linguxe Seantziane gave but a very short review of Old Swedish inflexions, but is remarkable as the first essay of its kind, and is perhaps the oldest attempt in modern times at a grammatical treat- ment of any old Germanic language. The study of runes was very popular in the 17th century ; M. Celsius (+1679) deeiphered the « stafiless”” runes (see above, p. 370), and J. Hadorph (+1693), who also did good work in editing Old Swedish texts, copied more than a thousand runic inscriptions. During the 18th century, again, Old Swedish was almost completely neglected ; but in the present century the study of runes has been well represented by the col- lection of the Swede Liljegren (+1837) and by the Norwegian §.

Se a ee eS 4 Sec especially K. J. Lyngby, Antiqu. Tidskr., 1858-60, pp. 242 sq. and 260 sq.; J. E. Rydqvist, Sv. Sprakets lagar, iv. 153 sq.; L. F. Leffler, Om v-omljudet, 1877, pp. 87 sqg., 55, 76; 8. Bugge, Runeindskriften fra Forsa, p. 49 sq.; A. Kock, Studéer ¢ Fornsvensk Yudldra, i., 1882, pp. 55 sq., 144 sq., 159 sq., 238. 5 See C. Save, Guiniska urkunder, 1859; J. G. Liljegren, Runurkunder, 1833. 6 See A, Noreen, “Apergu de Phistoire de Ja science linguistique Suédoise” (Le Muséon, ii., 1883).

1 The Old Swedish monuments are for the most part published in the following collections :—Svenska fornskrifisdllskapets samlingar, 84 parts, 1844-84; Cc. J. Schiyter, Samling af Sveriges gamila lagar, vols. i.-vii. and x.—xii., 1827-69 ; Svenskt Diplomatarium, 6 vols., 1829-78, new series, 2 vols., 1875-84.

2 In memory of Wdméd these runes stand; and Warenn, his father, wrote them in memory of his son, (by destiny) condemned to death.

3 If the bell fall down on anybody's head, the parish pays a fine of three marks should he die from it.

Bugge's ingenious interpretation and grammatical treatment of some of the most remarkable inseriptions. Old Swedish literature has also been made the object of grammatical researches. A first outline of a history of the Swedish language is to be found in the work of N. M. Petersen (1880) mentioned above (p. 370), and a scheme of an Old Swedish grammar in P. A. Munch's essay, Fornswenskans och Fornnorskans sprakbyggnad (1849); but Old Swedish grammar was never treated as an independent branch of science until the appearance of J. E. Rydqvist's (t+ 1877) monu- mental work Svenska sprékets lagar (in 6 vols., 1850-83), which was followed in Sweden by a whole literature on the same subject. Thus phouetics, which were comparatively neglected by Rydqvist, have been investigated with great success, especially by L. F Leffler and A. Kock; while the other parts of grammar have been treated of above all by K. F. Soderwall, the chief of contemporary Old Swedish seholars, His principal work, Ordbok dfver Svenska medeltidsspraket (1884 sq.), nowin course of publication, gives the list of words in the later Old Swedish language, and—taken along with the Ordbok till samlingen af Sveriges gamla lagar (1877), by C. J. Schlyter, the well-known cditor of Old Swedish texts, which con- tains the vocabulary of the oldest literature—it worthily meets the demand for an Old Swedish dictionary. An Old Swedish grammar, answering the requirements of modern philology, is still needed.}

girl, tima, to happen, &c,

as fager, fair, hdrja, to ravage, later, manners, snille, genius, tdrna, In addition to this, owing to huinanistic influence, learned expressions were borrowed from Latin during the whole 16th and 17th centuries; and from German, chiefly at the Reformation and during the Thirty Years' War,

numberlcss words were introduced,—as sprdk, language, tapper, brave, prakt, magnifi- cence, hurtig, brisk, &c.; among these may be noted especially a great number of words beginning in an-, er-, for-, and ge-. Owing to the constantly increasing political and literary predominance of France French words were largely borrowed in the 17th century, and to an equally great extent in the 18th ; such are affér, business, respekt, respect, talang, talent, charmant, charming, &c. Inthe 19th century, again, especially about the middle of it, we anew mect with conscious and energetic efforts after purism both in the forma- tion of new words and in the adoption of words from the old language (id, diligence, mala, to speak, fylking, battle-array, &c.), and from the dialects (bliga, to gaze, lis, flake, skrabbig, bad, &c.). Consequently, the present vocabulary differs to a very great extent from that of the literature of the 17th century. As for the sounds aud grammatical forms, on the other hand, comparatively few important changes have taken place during the last two centuries. In the 18th century, however, the aspirates dh and gh passed into d and g (after 7 and r into /),—as lag for lagh, law, bréd for brédh,

Modern 2. Modern Swedish.—The first complete translation of the Bible, | bread ; hv passed into v (in dialects already about the year 1600),—Swedish, edited in 1541 by the brothers Olaus and Laurentius Petri, and | as valp for hvalper, whelp ; Y likewise into 7,—thus Jjuster, leister, g generally called the Bible of Gustavus I., may be regarded as the | occurs written juster. In our time rd, rl, rn, rs, and rt are passing oureeS earliest important mouument of this. Owing to religious and poli- | into simple sounds (“supradental” d, 7, n, s, and t), while the tical circumstanccs, and to the learned influence of humanism, theo- | singular of the verbs is gradually supplanting the plural. A

logical and historico-political works preponderate in the Swedish | vigorous reform, slowly but firmly carried on almost uniformly literature of the following period, which therefore affords but | during all periods of the Swedish langnage, is the throwing back

scanty material for philological research. It is not until the | of the principal accent to the beginning of the word in cases where

middle of the 17th century that Swedish literature adequately | previously it stood nearer the end, a tendency that is characteristic exemplifies the language, for at that period literature first began | of all the Scandinavian languages, but no doubt espeeially of

to be cultivated as a fine art, and its principal representatives, such | Swedish. In the primitive Scandinavian age the accent was

as Stiernhielm, Columbus, and Spegel, were in reality the first to | removed in most simple words'; the originally accented syllable,

study it as a means of cxpression and to develop its resources. | however, preserved a musically high pitch and stress. Thus there Amongst the authors of the 18th century we have to mention in | arose two essentially different accentuations,—the one, with un-

the first place Dalin, who was to some extent the creator of the | accented final syllable, as in Icel. stigr (Gr. oretyeis), thou goest,

prose style of that cpoch ; while of the end of the century Kellgren | the comparative betre (¢f. Gr. rdocwv from raxds), better, the

and Bellman are the most noteworthy examples, representing the | other, with secondary stress and high pitch on the final, as in Icel.

higher and the more familiar style of poetry respectively. The | pret. plur. duSom (Sanskr. bubudhimd), we bade, part. pret. bitenn language of the 19th century, or at any rate of the middle of it, is | (Sanskr. bhinnds), bitten. The same change afterwards took place

best represented in the works of Wallin and Tegnér, which, on | in those compound words that had the principal accent on the

account of their enormous circulation, have had a greater influence | sccond member, so that such contrasts as German urtheil and

than those of any other authors. erthetlen were gradually brought into conformity with the former

Form of _ As to the language itself the earliest Modern Swedish texts, as | accentuation. At the present day it is quite exceptionally (and the lan- Gustavus I.'s Bible, differ considerably from the latest Old Swedish | chiefly in borrowed words of later date) that the principal accent guage. oncs.? We find a decided tendency to exterminate Danisms and | in Swedish is on any other syllable than the first, as in lekdmen,

reintroduce native and partially antiquated forms. At the same

body, vdlsigna, to bless.

time there appear several traces of a later state of the language: all genitives (singular and plural), ¢.g., end in ~~s, which in earlier times was the proper ending of only certain declensions. In spite of the archaistic efforts of many writers, both in forms and in voca~~

The scientific study of Modern Swedish? dates from Sweden's The glorious epoch, the last half of the 17th century. The first regular study of Swedish grammar was written in 1684 (not edited till 1884) in Modern Latin by Er. Aurivillius ; the first in Swedish is by N. Tiallman, Swedish.

bulary, the language nevertheless underwent rapid changes during the 16th and 17th centuries. Thus sf and sj (original as well as derived from sk before a palatal vowel) assimilate into a simple sh- sound ; dj (original as well as derived from g before a palatal vowel), at least at the end of the 17th century, dropped its d-sound (com- pare such spellings as diufwer, gidttar, envogé, for jufver, udder, Jjittar, giants, envoyé, envoy); Ay passcs into 7 (such spellings are found as fort for hjort, hart, and hjdrpe for jarpe, hazel grouse); 6 and p inserted in such words as himblar, heavens, hambrar, hammers, jaémpn, even, sampt, together with (see above, p. 371), are dropped ; the first person plural of the verb takes the form of the third person (as vi fara, foro, for vi farom, forom, we go, went); by the side of the pronoun J, you, there arises a secondary form Ni, in full use in the spoken language about 1650; the adjective gradually loses all the case-inflexions ; in substantives the nomin- ative, dative, and accusative take the same form as early as the middle of the 17th century ; in the declension with suffixed article the old method of expressing number and case both in the substan- tive and the article is changed, so that the substantive alone takes the

number-inflexion and the article alone the case-ending ; neuter substantives ending in a vowel, which previously had no plural ending, take the plural ending -n, some -er,—as bi-n, bees, bagert-er, bakeries. About the year 1700 the Old Swedish inflexion may, in general, be considered as almost completely given up, although a work of sueh importanee in the history of the language as Charles XII.'s Bible (so-called) of 1708 (edited by Bishop J. Svedberg) by a kind of conscious archaism has preserved a good many of the old forms. To these archaistic tendencies of certain authors at the end of the 17th century we owe the great number of Old Swedish and Icelandie borrowed words then introduced into the language, — ee eee een

1 A. Noreen has an Old Swedish grammar in preparation.

2 The printed characters are also considerably ehanged by the introduction

of the new letters & (with the transl. of the New Testament of 1526), and @, é (both already in the first print in Swedish of 1495) for aa, x, ¢$.

ry

1696. Nothing, however, of value was produced before the great work of Rydqvist mentioned above, which, although chiefly dealing with the old language, throws a flood of light on the modern also. Among the works of late years we must call spccial attention to the researches into the history of the language by K. F. Sdderwall,4 F, A. Tamm,' and A. Kock.® But little study, and that only in isolated parts, has been devoted to the grammar of the modern language, if the advanced state of philology is considered. A good though short abstract is given in H. Sweet's essay on "Sounds and Forms of Spoken Swedish " (Zrans, Phil. Soe., 1877- 79). Attempts to construct a dictionary were made in the 16th cen- tury, the carliest being the anonymous Variarwm Rerum Voeabula cum Sueca Interpretatione, in 1538, and the Synonymorum Libellus by Elavus Petri Helsingius, in 1587, both of which, however, followed German originals. The first regular dictionary is by H. Spegel, 1712; and in 1769 Joh. Ihre (+ 1780), probably the greatest philological genius of Sweden, published his Glossariwm Sviogoticum, which still remains the most copious Swedish dictionary in existence. In the present century the diligent lexicographer A. F. Dalin has published several useful works. At present the Swedish Academy has in preparation a

gigantie dic- tionary on about the same plan as Dr Murray's New English Dictionary ; there will also appear as soon as possible a complete list (with grammatical and etymological notes), drawn up by A. Andersson, Ad. Norecn, and F. A. Tamm, of the words in use in the present language. The characteristic differences between the Swedish literary language used in Finland and that of Sweden are exhibited in the Finsk Tidskrift, vol. xix. pts. 5, 6, 1885 ("Studier pi Svensk sprakbotten i Finland," by Karl Lindstrém).

3 See A. Noreen, ''Apercu," é&e.; H. Hernlund, Férslag och dtgdrder tilt Svenska skriftsprakets reglerande, 1883,

4 Hufoudepokerna af Svenska sprakets utbildning, 1870

® Several essays on the borrowed words in Swedish.

6 Sprakhistoriska undersékningar om Svensk akcent, i., 1878, fi,, 1884-5,

DANISH.

Old Danish.

Sources.

Dialects.

Form of the lan-

guage.

Gram- matical treat- meut,

SCANDINAVIAN LANGUAGES

IV. Dantsu, like Swedish, is divided into the two great Pre- and Post-Reformation epochs of Old and Modern Danish.

1. Old Danish.—The territory of Old Danish included not only the present Denmark, but also the southern Swedish pro- vinces of Halland, Skane, and

Blekinge, the whole of Schles- wig, and, as stated above, for a short period also a great part of England, and Normandy. The oldest monumcuts of the lan- guage are runic inscriptions, altogether abont 250 in number.? The oldest of them go as far back as to the beginning of the 9th century, the Snoldelev-stone for instance on Sealand, and the Fleml¢se-stone on Fiiuen. From about the year 900 date the very long inscriptions of Tryggevelde (Sealand) and Glavendrup (Fiinen); from the 10th century we have the stoncs of Jel- linge (Jutland), in memory of two of the oldest historical kings of Denmark (Gorm and Harald) ; while from about 1000 we have

a stone at Dannevirke (Schleswig), raised by the conqueror of

England, Sven Tjuguskegg. Relics of about the same age are the words that were introduced by the Danes into English, the oldest of which date from the end of the 9th century, the time of the first Danish settlement in England ; most of these are to be found in the early English work Ormwulum.* No Danish literature arose before the 13th century. The oldest manuscript that has come down to us dates from the end of that century, written in runes and containing the law of Skane. From about the year 1300 we possess a manuscript written in Latin characters and containing ‘Valdemar’s and Erik’s laws of Sealand, the Flensborg manuscript

of the law of Jutland, and a manuscript of the municipal laws of

Flensborg. These three manuscripts represent three different dialects,—that, namely, of Skane, Halland, and Blckinge, that of Sealand and the other islands, and that of Jutland and Schleswig. There existed no uniform literary language in the Old Danish period, although some of the most important works of the 15th century, such as Michael’s Poems and the Rhymed Chronicle (the first book printed in Danish, in 1495), on account of their excellent diction, contributed materially to the final preponderance of their dialect, that of Sealand, towards the Reformation.

As to the form of the language, it hardly differs at all during the period between 800 and 1200 a.p. from Old Swedish. It is only in the oldest literature that we can trace any marked differ- ences; these are not very important, and are generally attributable to the fact that Danish underwent a little earlier the same changes that afterwards took place in Swedish (¢g., 4

in hv and fy in Danish was mute as early as the end of the 14th century; ¢. p. 872, above). The laws referred to above only agree in differing from the Swedish laws in the following points:—the nominative already takes the form of the accusative (as kad/, calf, but Old Sw. nom. kalver, acc. kalf); the second person plural ends in ~~@ (as képx, but Old Sw. képin, you buy) ; in the subjunctive no differ~~ ences are expressed between persons and numbers. Among them- selves, on the contrary, they show considerable differences ; the law of Skane most nearly corresponds with the Swedish laws, those of Sealand keep the middle place, while the law of Jutland exhibits the most distinctive individuality. The Skane law, ¢.g., retains the vowels a, 7, % in terminations, which otherwise in Danish have become uniformly #; the same law inserts 6 and d between certain consonants (like Old Sw.; see p. 371), has pre- served the dative, and in the present tense takes the vowel of the infinitive; the law of Jutland, again, does not insert d and d, and has dropped the dative, while the present tense (undergoing an “ Umlaut”) has not always accepted the vowel of the infinitive; in all three characteristics the laws of Sealand fluctuate. After 1350 we meet an essentially altered language, in which we must first note the change of &, p, ¢ after a vowel into g, 6, d (as tag, roof, Ugbe, to ron, zde, to cat); th passes into ¢ (as ting, thing), gh into w (as law for dagh, guild) and into 7 (as vet for wegh, way); id, nd are pro- nounced like 2, nn; sis the general genitive ending in singular and plural, &c. The vocabulary, which in earlier times only borrowed a few and those mostly ecclesiastical words, is now

—chiefly owing to the predominant influence of the Hanse towns—

inundated by German words, such as those beginning with bc-, bi-, ge-, for-, and und-, and ending in -hed, and a great number of others, as live, to become, ske, to happen, fri, free, krig, war, buxer, pantaloons, ganske, quite, &c.

An Old Danish grammar is still wanting, and the preparatory studies which exist are, although excellent, but few in number, being chiefly essays by the Danes K. J. Lyngby and L. hy Be Wimmer, with N. M. Petersen’s treatise Det Danske, Norske, og Svenske sprogs historie, vol, i. (1829), one of the first works that paid any attention to Old Danish, which till then had been com- pletely neglected. A dictionary on a large scale covering the whole of

Old Danish literature, except the very oldest, by O. Kalkar, has been in course of publication since 1881 ; older and smaller is Chr. Molbech's Dansk Glossariawm (1857-66).

a 1 See P. G. Thorsen, De Danske runemindesmerker, i., 1864, ii., 1879-81; L. F. A. Wimmer, " Runeskriftens Oprindelse" (Aarbdger for Nordisk Oldkyndighed, 1874). 2 See E. Brate, * Nordische Lehuwiérter im Orrmmulum" (Paul-Braune's Bettrage, x., 1884).

oto

2. Modern Danish. —The first important monument of this is the Modern translation of the Bible, by Chr. Pedersen, Peder Palladius, and Danish. others, the so-called Christian HII.'s Bible (1550), famous for the Sources. unique purity and excellence of its language, the dialect of Sealand, then incontestably promoted to be the language of the kingdom.

The first secular work deserving of the same praise is Vedel's translation of Saxo (1575). The succceding period until 1750 offers but few works in really good Danish ; as perfectly classical, however, we have to mention the so-called Christian V. '*s Law of Denmark (1683). For the rest, humanism has stamped a highly Latin-French character on the literature, striking even in the works of the principal writer of this period, Holberg. But about

the year 1750 there begins a new movement, characterized by a reaction against the language of the preceding period and purist tendencies, or, at least, efforts to enrich the langnage with new- formed words (not seldom after the German pattern), as omkreds, periphery, selustendighed, independence, valgsprog, devise, digter,

poet. The leading representatives of these tendencies were Kilschow

and Sneedorf. From thcir time Danish may be said to have acquired its present essential features, though it cannot be denied

that several later authors, as J. Ewald and Ohlenschlager, have exercised a considerable influence on the poetical style. As the

most important differences between the grammatical forms of the Form of 18th and 19th centuries on one hand and those of the 16th and 17th the lan- centuries on the other may be noted the following :—most neuter guage, substantives take a plural ending ; those ending in a vowel form

their plural by adding -r (as riger, for older rige, plural of rige, kingdom), and many of those ending in a consonant by adding -e

(as huse for hus, of hus, house) ; substantives ending in -ere drop

their final -e (as dommer for dommere, judge); the declension with suffixed article becomes simplified in the same way as in Swedish

(see above, p. 372) ; the plural of verbs takes the singular form (as

drak for drukke, we drank); and the preterite subjunctive is sup- planted by the infinitive (as var for vaare, were). The first Modern Danish grammar is by E. Pontoppidan, 1668, but in Latin ; the Gram- first in Danish is by the famous Peder Syv, 1685. The works of matical the self-taught J. Hgjsgaard (eg.,

by Th. M@bius (1871). The vocabnlary of the 16th and 17th centuries is collected in Kalkar's Ordbog, mcntioned above, that of

the 18th and 19th centuries in the voluminous and as yet unfinished dictionary of Videnskabernas Selskab, and in C. Molbech's Dansk ordbog (2d ed. 1859).?

As already mentioned (p. 370), Danish at the Reformation Dano- became the language of the literary and educated classes of Nor- Norway and remained so for three hundred years, although wegian. it cannot be denied that many Norwegian authors even during this period wrote a language with a distinct Norwegian colour, as for instance the prominent prose-stylist Peder Claussgn Friis (+1614), the popular poct Peder Dass (1708), and, in a certain degree, also the two literary masters of the 18th century, Hol- berg and Wessel. But it is only since 1814, when Norway gained her independence, that we can clearly perceive the so- called Dano-Norwegian gradually developing as a distinct offshoot of the general Danish language.

The first representatives of this new language are the writer of popular life M. Hansen (1842), the poet H. Wergeland (+ 1845), and above all the tale-writer P. C. Asbjgrnsen fe 1885). In our own days it has been further developed, especially by the great poets Ibsen and Bjgrnson and the novelist Lie ; and it has been said, not without reason, to have attained its classical perfection in the works of the first-named author. This language differs from Danish particularly in its vocabulary, having adopted very many Norwegian provincial words (6000 to 7000), less in its inflexions, but to a very great extent in its pronunciation. The most striking differences in this re- spect are the following :—Norwegian p, 4, k answer to Danish 8, d, g in cases where they are of later date (see above),—as ddpe, Danish Jdbe, to run, liten, D. liden, little, bak, D. bag, back) ; to Danish &, g before palatal vowels answer Norwegian f, j ; 7 (point- trill, not back-trill as in Danish) is assimilated in some way with following ¢ (d), 7, n, and s into so-called supradental sounds (see p. 872); both the primitive Scandinavian systems of accentuation are still kept separate from a musical point of view, in opposition to the monotonous Danish. There are several other character-istics, nearly all of which are points of correspondence with Swedish.4 Dano-Norwegian is grammatically treated by J. L¢kke (Modersmaalets formlzre, 1855), K. Knudsen (Dansk-Norsk sprog- lzere, 1856), and K. Brekke (Bidrag til Dansk-Norskens lydlzre, 1881), and others.

At the middle of this century, however, far more advanced pre- Nor-tensions were urged to an independent Norwegian language. By wegian-

Form of the lan- guage.

Nor- 3 Sec L(udvig) Wimmer), ‘Det Danske Sprog,” in Nordisk Conversations- . lexikon, 3d ed,, 1885; T. Strim, Dansk Literaturhistorie, 2d ed., 1878, We SEINE

4 See J. A. Lundell, ‘ Norskt sprik” (Nordisk Tidskrijt, 1882).

DIALECTS.

BYE: the study of the Modern Norwegian dialects and their mother language, Old Norwegian, the eminent philologist J. Aasen was led to undertake the bold project of constructing, by the study of these two

sources, and on the basis of his native dialect (Séndmgre), a Norwegian-Norwegian (“ Norsk-Norsk ”) language, the so-called “Tandsmal.” In 1853 he exhibited a specimen of it, and, thanks to such excellent writers as Aasen himself, the poets O. Vinje and K. Janson, and the novelist A. Garborg, as well as a zealous pro- pagandism of the society “ Det Norske Samlag ” (founded in 1868), there has sinee arisen a valuable though not very large literature in the “Landsmal.” But it isnowhere spoken.’ Its grammatical structure and vocabulary are exhibited in Aasen’s Norsk gram- matik, 1864, and Norsk ordbog, 1878.

SCANDINAVIAN DIALECTS. —As above remarked, the Scandinavian dialects are not grouped, so far as their relationship is concerned, as might be expected judging from the liter- ary languages. Leaving out of account the Icelandie dialects and those of the Faroes, each of whieh constitutes a separate group, the remainder may be thus classified *—

(1) West-Norwegian Dialects, —spoken on the western coast of Norway between Christiansand and Molde.

(2) North-Scandinavian,—the remaining Norwegian and the Swedish dialects of Vestmanland, Dalarna, Norrland, Finland, and Russia,

(3) The dialects on the island of Gotland.

(4) Middle-Swedish,—spoken in the rest of Sweden, except the southernmost parts (No. 5).

(5) South-Scandinavian,—spoken in the greater part of Smaland and Halland, the whole of Skane, Blekinge, and | Denmark, and the Danish-speaking part of Schleswig. This group is distinctly divided into three smaller 2% groups,—the dialects of southern Sweden (with the island of Born- holm), of the Danish islands, and of Jutland (and Schleswig).

The study of the Modern Scandinavian dialects has been very unequally prosecuted. Hardly anything has been done towards the investigation of the Icelandic dialects, while those of the Faroes have been studied ehiefly by Hammershaimb. The Norwegian dialects have been thoroughly examined by Aasen, whose works give a general account of them ; while in our own days Joh. Storm, above all, displays an unwearying activity, especially | in the minute investigation of their phonetic / constitution, to which Aasen had paid but scant attention. The substance of these researches in the Norwegian dialects has re- cently been presented in a magazine, called Norvegia, of which the first volume is in course of publication ; it employs an alpha- bet invented by Storm. For the study of Danish dialeets but little has been done, Molbech's Dialect-Lexicon of 1841 being very deficient. The Schleswig dialect,on thecon- | 7 trary, has been admirably treated of by E. |& Hagerup (1854) and K. J. Lyngby (1858). At present two important works are in pre- paration,—H. F. Feilberg's great dictionary of the dialect of Jutland, and J. C. Espersen's of the dialect of Bornholm. There is no country in which the dialects have been and are studied with greater zeal and more fruit- ful results than in Sweden? during the last hundred and fifty years. Archbishop E. Benzelius the younger (+1743) made collec- – ig M4 og eine tions of dialeet words, and on his work igs ~~ *** 4 based the dialectical dictionary of Ihre of 1766. An excellent work considering its age is 8. Hof's Dialectus Vestrogothica, 1772. The energy and zeal of C. Siive (essays on the dialects of Gotland and Dalarne) inspired these studies with extraordinary animation at the middle of the 19th century ; in 1867 J. E. Rietz published a voluminous dialect dictionary ; the number of special essays, too, increased yearly. From 1872 so-called " landsmalsforeningar " (dia-

a ema Cations, Seeman iat tenatntiticinmeaie nieces a io ane aM ns | 1 See J. Storm, ‘‘Det Norske maalstraey” (Nordisk Tidskrift, 1878). *See J. A. Lundell, “Om de Svenska folkmalens frandskaper ”

(Antropologiska Sektionens Tidskrift, 1880).

3 See J. A. Lundell, “‘Ofversikt af de senaste artiondenas vark-

samhet for kannedom om folkmal” (Svenska Landsmilen, i., 1880).

J. Bartholomew, Edin?

1. Old Town Hall. 2, Custom House.

5. News Room.

6. Theatre Royal. 7. Police Station. 8. Museum.

SCA—SCA

lect societies) were founded among the students at the universities of Upsala, Lund, and Helsingfors (at Upsala alone 13), for a systematic aud thorough investigation of dialects. We find remarkable progress in scientifie method—espccially with regard to phonetics—in the eonstantly increasing literature; special mention maybe made of the detailed descriptions of the dialects of Varmland, Gotland, and Dalarna by Ad. Noreen, and A. F. Freudenthal’s monographson the . Finnish and Esthonian Swedish dialeets. Since 1879 the Swedish dialect societies have published a magazine on a eomprehensive plan, De Svenska Landsmélen, edited by J. A. Lundell, who has invented for this purpose an excellent phonetic alphabet (partially based on C. J. Sundevall’s work Om phonctiska bokstdfver, 1855). (A. NO.)

SCARBOROUGH, a parliamentary borough of England, frequently called “the Queen of Watering Places,” situ-

Scale of % a Mile | <8 Seam’ D>

9. St Mary’s Church. 10. Christ Do. 11. St Thomas’ Do. 12, Independ’t Do.

13. Rom. Cath. Ch.

14, Post Office.

15. York City and

County Bank.

ated on the east coast of Yorkshire, in the North Riding, 40 miles from York, and between 54° 15’ 0” and 54° 17’ 15” N. lat. and 0° 22’ 25” and 0° 26’ 24” W. long. Its two parts, north and south, each with a fine stretch of sand and bay, are divided by a rocky promontory 300 feet above the sea, on which stand the remains of the castle. The cliff is much exposed to denudation by the sea, which has been proceeding during the present century at the rate of 1 yard in 17 years. The plateau forming the castle yard in 1190, according to William of Newburgh, comprised 60

16. Savings Bank.

17. Sea-Bathing In- firmary.

18. Theatre.

SCA—SCA

acres, but it is not now more than 17 acres 10 perches, or Lhe first castle was built in the Anglo-Norman period, and is referred to as being in decay in 1154—a fact which throws back its origin earlier than 1136, the date assigned for its erection by William Le Gros, earl of Albemarle

43 acres, including store yards, dykes, and holms.

The list of its The streets

and Holderness, its first known governor. governors stretches from that date to 1832.

of the older part of the town, immediately south of the castle hill, come down to the sea, but the newer parts of the south as well as the north side

are built upon rising A deep valley (Ramsdale) which divides the south side is bridged from St Nicholas Cliff to the South Cliff. The approach by rail is through the upper part of this valley, by the side of which there is a marsh known as

ground.

the Mere. The town is thus situated ina kind of basin,

which opens out to the north towards extensive and lofty

moorland ranges. The modern period of its history dates

from 1620, when Mrs Farren, a lady resident, first discovered The town contained 30,504 inhabi- tants in 1881, but during the season, which lasts from May to October, its population is augmented by from ten

its mineral springs.

to twenty thousand visitors, for whose convenience there is increasingly ample accommodation. The Grand Hotel, fronting the sea on the south bay, stands on St Nicholas Cliff, at the north side of the Ramsdale valley, and is one of the largest in England. An aquarium (1877) stands beneath the Cliff Bridge, and close by is the museum, a Roman-Doric rotunda, built in 1828. The spa saloon, opened in 1800, contains a hall in the Italian- Renaissance style, a theatre, and refreshment rooms. There is a. promenade in front protected by a sea wall. The south spring is aperient but contains some iron, while the north or chalybeate spring is more tonic in its pro- perties. The waters, however, are seldom taken now, the town being mainly frequented for the sea-bathing. The grounds of the present spa are tastefully laid out. A foreshore road, made in 1878 by the corporation, and shortly to be extended round the castle cliff to the north side, makes an excellent drive or promenade. The north side has fine sands, a hoist, and a promenade pier, but is not so attractive as the south side, nor are the houses there of so good a character and style. The salubrity of Scarborough is attested by its vital statistics. The mean annual mortality from 1873 to 1882 was 18-4 per 1000. The death-rate from consumption in all England is 2-4 per 1000; amongst the indigenous population of Scar- borough from 1873 to 1882 it was 1°7

per 1000. The mean annual temperature is 47°9 Fahr. In December, January, and February it is only 0°6° colder than Brighton, whilst in the summer months Brighton is 3°6 warmer.

The town is a royal borough, its charter of incorpora- tion dating from 1161. It returned two members to parliament from 1283 to 1885, when one of the seats was taken away. The limits of the municipal and_parlia- mentary boroughs coincide,—the area being 2348 acres, the population 24,259 in 1871 and 30,504 in 1881.

Shipbuilding, salt-manufacture, and knife-making were formerly cominon, but the only craft now remaining is jet-manufacture. The fishing trade is, however, very considerable. Disputes about dues for the old pier and the fish-tithe occupy a conspicuous place in the town records ; the pier seems to have suffered greatly in the various sieges to which the town, after it was walled, became exposed. The old town-hall in St Nicholas Street, the new town-hall in Castle Road, the market-hall in St Helen's Square, in the Tuscan style, and the new post office in Huntriss Row are conspicuous amongst the public buildings. There are two theatres. Of the monastic buildings belonging to the Grey Friars, Dominicans, and Carmelites there are no remains, but the parish church of St Mary, conspicuously situated on a mound to the south of Castle Hill, occupies the site of the old Cistercian monastery. The old church was made the site of a battery in the siege of the castle in 1644, and one of its towers fell in 1659. The

restoration of the present building took place in 1850. There are other churches and chapels of a much more recent date, including a Roman Catholic church. The racecourse is on the top of a hill, commanding fine views of the moors and of the sca.

The old name of the town was written Skardeburge. It is not mentioned in Domesday Book, but it was probably waste, as Tosti, count of Northumberland, had ravaged and burnt it some time previously. _Thorklen mentions it as having been ravaged by Adelbrecht, king of Northumberland, and by Harold Hardrada. Douglas, the Scottish chief, also burnt it in 1818. Henry II. com- pelled the count of Aumale to surrender the castle in 1155.

King John visited the castle in 1206 and 1216, and the “house and castle of Scarborough” are mentioned in 1228. When not used as a temporary royal residence the castle was a royal prison. In 1312 the earl of Pembroke besieged it, and in the Pilgrimage of Grace insurrection (1536) it was unsuccessfully besieged by Sir Robert Aske. A detailed survey of it, made in 1538, is still extant, the castle yard and land therein described, with the buildings, corresponding with a survey made in 1839. It was again besieged in 1644-45 and in 1648. In 1655 George Fox the Quaker was imprisoned in the castle. In 1645 the town was captured by assault, and in later years its inhabitants were much impoverished by military exactions and expenses. A view of the town and castle in 1485 is still extant. The precise date when the town-walls were dismantled is not known. In 1780 Daniel Defoe, writing from the place, said: “The town is well-built, pleasant, and populous, and we found a great deal of company here, drink- ing the waters, who have not only come from the north of England but from Scotland.”

See History of Scarborough Spaw, 1679; Gent’s History of Scarborough, 1735; Hinderwell’s History of Scarborough, 1798; Cole’s Scarbrough Worthies, 1820; Constitution and Byelaws of the Corporation of Scarbrough, 1827; Brief History of St Mary’s, Scarbrough, 1845; The Geology of Scarbrough, by C. Fox Strang- ways, 1880; Flora of Scarbrough, by G. Masser, 1881; and Scarborough as a Health Resort, by A. Haviland, 1883.

SCARLATTI, Atessanpro (1659-1725), composer of sacred and dramatic music, was born at Trapani in Sicily in 1659, and became in early youth a pupil of Carissimi. In 1680 Queen Christina of Sweden appointed him her maestro di cappella, and commissioned him to write his first opera, L’Onesta nell’ Amore, for performance at her palace in Rome. In 1693 he produced his first oratorio, IT Dolori di Maria-sempre Vergine. In the following year he was appointed maestro di cappella to the viceroy of Naples, and from that time forward his works multiplied with astonishing rapidity, his time being spent partly in Naples and partly in Rome, where he entered the service of Cardinal Ottoboni, as private maestro di cappella. His prodigious fertility of invention did not, however, tempt him to write carelessly. On the contrary he did his best to neutralize the evil caused by the founders of the monodic school, whose insane hatred of counterpoint

and form reduced their dramatic music to the dreary level of monotonous declamation. He was by far the most learned contrapuntist of his age; and it was to this circumstance that his compositions owed their resistless power. More- over, his sense of form was as just as his feeling for harmony, and to this he was indebted for the originality of many of his finest conceptions. He has been credited with two very important inventions—accompanied recita- tive and the da capo. That he really did invent the first there is very little doubt. Instances of the latter have been found of earlier date than most of his works, but he was certainly the first to bring it into general use. He also struck out ideas in his orchestral accompaniments which must have seemed bold indeed to the musicians of the period, using obbligato passages and other combina- tions previously unknown, and introducing ritornelli and. sinfonie with excellent effect. In 1707 Scarlatti was appointed principal maestro di cappella at Santa Maria Maggiore, and soon afterwards he was invested by the pope with the order of the Golden Spur, with which Gluck and Mozart were afterwards honoured. He resigned his appointment after two years' service, and died at Naples October 24, 1725.

Very few of Scarlatti's works have been published. His com- positions include 115 operas (41 only of which are now known to exist, and these only in MS.), 200 masses 9 oratorios, more than

500 cantatas, and innumerable smaller pieces, both sacred and secular. MSS. of three of his operas, Gerone, Il Flavio Cuniberio, and La Teodora Augusta, are preserved in the library of Christ Church, Oxford; and Zt Prigioniero Fortwnato forms part of the " Dragonctti Collection " in the British Museum.

SCARLATTI, Domenico (1683-1757), son of the pre- ceding, was born at Naples in 1683, and studied music first under his father and then under Gasparini. He began his career by composing a few operas, among them Amleto, produced at Rome in 1715, and remarkable as the earliest known attempt to pose Shakespeare's hero as the primo uomo of adramma per la musica. But his real strength lay in the excellence of his performances on the harpsichord and organ. During Handel's first sojourn in Italy in 1708-9 D. Scarlatti was invited to a trial of skill with him on both instruments at the

palace of Cardinal Ottoboni, and all present decided that the harpsichord performances terminated in a drawn battle, though Handel had a decided advantage on the organ. The justice of the verdict cannot be doubted ; for, whenever Scarlatti was afterwards praised for his organ-playing, he used to cross himself devoutly and say, “ You should hear Handel!”

On the death of Bai in 1715 D. Scarlatti was appointed maestro di cappella of St Peter’s in Rome. In 1719 he conducted the performance of his Narciso at the King’s Theatre in London, and in 1721 he played with great success in Lisbon. He then returned to Naples; but in 1729 he was invited to Madrid, with the appoint- ment of teacher to the princess of Asturias, and remained there twenty-five years, returning in 1754 to Naples, where he died in 1757.

D. Scarlatti’s compositions for the harpsichord are almost in- numerable, and many of them have been published. In the character of their technique they are infinitely in advance of the age in which they were written and played ; and many of them are difficult enough to tax the powers of the best performers of the present day.

SCARLET FEVER and Scartatina are names applied indifferently to an acute infectious disease, characterized by bigh fever, accompanied with sore throat and a diffuse red rash upon the skin. This fever appears to have been first accurately described by Sydenham in 1676, before which period it had evidently been confounded with small- pox and measles.

In connexion with the causation of this disease, the following points have been ascertained. (1) It isa highly contagious malady, the infective material being one of the most subtle, diffuse, and lasting known in fevers. It would seem that the disease is communicable from an early period of its occurrence, all through its progress, and especially during convalescence when the process of desquamation is proceeding, and when the shed-off epidermis which contains the germs of the disease in great abundance is apt to be inhaled, to become attached to articles of clothing, to find entrance into food, or to be transmitted in other ways to healthy persons. (2) It is a disease for the most part of early life, young children being specially susceptible; but adults may also suffer if they have not had this fever in childhood. (3) It occurs both in isolated cases (sporadically) and in

epidemics. (4) One attack in general, although not always, confers immunity from a second. (5) Certain constitutional conditions act as predisposing causes favouring the development of the fever. Thus, where overcrowding prevails, and where the hygienic state of children is ill attended to, the disease is more likely to prevail and spread, and to assume unfavourable forms. Further, in the puerperal state in women there appears to be a special susceptibility to suffer in a dangerous manner should there be exposure to the infection of the fever. As to the nature of the infecting agent, nothing positive is known, although from the analogy of similar diseases it is

probable that specific micro-organisms or germs are concerned in its production.

The period of incubation in scarlet fever (that is, the time elapsing between the reception of the poison and the development of symptoms) appears to vary. Sometimes it would seem to be as short as one or two days, but in most instances it is probably about a week. The invasion of this fever is generally sudden and sharp, consisting in rigors, vomiting, and sore throat, together with a rapid rise of temperature and increase in the pulse. Occasionally, especially in young children, the attack is ushered in by convulsions. These premonitory symptoms usually continue for about twenty-four hours, when the characteristic eruption makes its appearance. It is first seen on the neck, chest, arms, and hands, but quickly spreads all over the body, although it is not-distinctly marked on the face, This rash consists of minute thickly-set red spots, which coalesce to form a general diffuse redness, in appearance not unlike that produced by the application of mustard to the skin. In some instances the redness is accompanied with small vesicles containing fluid. In ordinary cases the rash comes out completely in about two days, when it begins to fade, and by the end of a week from its first appearance it is usually gone. The severity of a case is in some degree measured by the copiousness and brilliancy of the rash, except in the malignant varieties, where there may be little or no eruption. The tongue, which at first was furred, becomes about the fourth or fifth day denuded of its epithelium and acquires the peculiar ‘strawberry ”

appearance characteristic of this fever. The interior of the throat is red and somewhat swollen, especially the uvula, soft palate, and tonsils, and a considerable amount of secretion exudes from the inflamed surface. There is also tenderness and slight swelling of the glands under the jaw. In favourable cases the fever departs with the dis- appearance of the eruption and convalescence sets in with the commencement of the process of ‘‘desquamation” or peeling of the cuticle, which first shows itself about the neck, and proceeds slowly over the whole surface of the body. Where the skin is thin the desquamation is in the form of fine branny scales; but where it is thicker, as about the hands and feet, it comes off in large pieces, which sometimes assume the form of casts of the fingers or toes. The duration of this process is variable, but it is rarely complete before the end of six or eight weeks, and not unfrequently goes on for several weeks beyond that period. It is during this stage that complications are apt to appear, particularly those due to cold, such as inflam- mation of the kidneys; and all throughout its continuance there is the further danger of the disease being communi- cated to others by the cast-off epidermic scales.

Scarlet fever shows itself in certain well-marked varieties, of which the following are the chief :—

1. Searlatina Simplex is the most common form; in this the symptoms, both local and general, arc moderate, and the case usually runs a favourable course. It is always, however, to be borne in mind that the duration and the infectiveness of the disease, in- cluding its convalescence, are uninfluenced by the mildness of the attack. In some rare instances it would seem that the evidences of the disease are so slight, as regards both fever and rash, that they escape observation and only become known by the patient subsc- quently suffering from some of the complications associated with it. In such cases the name latent scarlet fever (searlatina latens) is applicd.

2. Scarlatina Anginosa is a more severe form of the fever, par- ticularly as regards the throat symptoms. The rash may be well marked or not, but it is often slow in developing and in subsiding, There is intense inflammation of the throat, the tonsils, uvula, and soft palate being swollen and ulcerated, or having upon them mein- branous patches not unlike those of diphtheria, while externally the gland tissnes in the neck are enlarged and indurated and

not unfrequently become the seat of abscesses. There is difficulty in opening the mouth ; an acrid discharge exudes from the nostrils and excoriates the lips; and the countenance is pale and waxy-

eo whet Pay ik

looking. This form of the disease is marked by great prostration of strength, and it is much more frequently fatal than the preceding.

8. Scarlatina Maligna is the most serious form of all. The malignancy may be variously displayed. Thus a case of scarlatina anginosa may acquire such a severe character, both as to throat and general symptoms, as rapidly to produce profound exhaustion and death. But the typically malignant forms are those in which the attack sets in with great violence and the patient sinks from the very first. In sucli instances the rash either does not come out at all or is of the slightest amount and of livid rather than scarlet appearance, while the throat symptoms are often not prominent. Death in such cases may take place in from twenty- four to forty-eight hours, and is frequently preceded by great eleva- tion of the tempcrature of the body and by delirium, coma, or other nervous symptoms. A further example of a malignant form is occasionally observed in cases where the rash, which had previously been well-developed, suddenly recedes, and convulsions or other nervous phenomena and rapid death supervene.

The complications and effects of scarlet fever are, as already indicated, among the most important features in this disease, and, although their occurrence is exceptional, they appear with sufficient frequency, and are of such a nature, as ought to make the medical attendant carefully watch every case for any of their early indications. The most common and serious of these is inflammation of the kidneys, which may arise during any period in the course of the fever, but is specially apt to appear in the con- valescence, while desquamation is in progress. Its onset

is sometimes announced by a return of feverish symptoms, —

accompanied with vomiting and pain in the loins; but in a large number of instances it occurs without these and comes on insidiously. One of the most prominent symptoms is slight swelling of the face, particularly of the

eyelids, which is rarely absent in this complication. If the urine is examined it will probably be observed to be diminished in quantity and of dark smoky or red appear- ance, due to the presence of blood; while it will also be found to contain a large quantity of albumen. This, together with the microscopic examination which reveals the presence of tube casts containing blood, epithelium, &c., testifies to a condition of acute inflammation of the kidney (glomerular and tubal nephritis). In favourable cases these symptoms may soon disappear, but they may on the other hand prove extremely serious,—the risks being the suppression of urine, leading to uremic poisoning and causing convulsions which may terminate fatally, or, further, the rapid development of general dropsy, and death from this cause. Although thus a very formidable complication, it is yet one which is amenable to treatment, and by the prompt and judicious application of remedies lives may often be saved, even in desperate circumstances. Occasionally this condition does not wholly pass off, and consequently lays the foundation for Bricut's DisEass (g.v.). Another of the more common complications or results of scarlet fever is suppuration of the ears, due to the extension of the inflammatory process ~~from the throat along the Eustachian tube into the middle ear. This not unfrequently leads to permanent ear~~ discharge, with deafness from the disease affecting the inner ear and temporal bone, a condition implying a degree of risk from its proximity to the brain. Other maladies affecting the heart, lungs, pleura, &., occasionally arise in connection with scarlet fever, but they are of less common occurrence than those previously mentioned. Apart, however, from such definite forms of disease there may remain as the result of scarlet fever simply a general weakening of health, which may render the patient delicate and vulnerable for a long time.

In the treatment of scarlet fever, one of the first require- ments is the isolation of the case, with the view of prevent- ing the spread of the disease. In large houses this may be possible, but in most instances it can only be satisfactorily accomplished by sending away those other members of the

O17 family who have not suffered from the fever. The establishment in many large towns of hospitals for infec- tious diseases, which provide accommodation for patients of all classes, affords the best of all opportunities for thorough isolation. In large families, where few or none of

the members have had the disease, the prompt removal of a case to such an hospital will in many instances prevent the spread of the fever through the household, as well as beyond it, and at the same time obviate many difficulties connected with the cleansing and purification of the house, which, however carefully done, may still leave remaining some risk in the case of a fever the contagious power of which is so intense.

When, however, the patient is treated at home, the sick room should contain only such furniture as may be re- quired, and the attendants should come as little as possible in contact with other members of the household. Should other children be in the house, they should be kept away from school during all the time that the risk of infection continues. The possibility of the fever being communi- cated by letters sent from the sick room should not be forgotten by those in attendance. Disinfectants, such as car- bolic acid, Condy's fluid, &c., may be used freely in the room and passages, and all body or bed clothes when removed should be placed at once in boiling water, or in some disin- fecting fluid. In convalescence, with the view of preventing the transmission of the desquamated cuticle, the inunction of the body with carbolized oil (1 in 40) and the frequent use of a bath containing soda are to be recommended.

All books, toys, &c., used by the patient during the illness should be carefully destroyed or given to fever hospitals, as their preservation has frequently been known to cause an outbreak of the disease at a subsequent time. With respect to the duration of the infective period, it may be stated generally that it is seldom that a patient who has suffered from scarlet fever can safely go about before the expiry of eight weeks, while on the other hand the period may be considerably prolonged beyond this, the measure of the time being the completion of the pro- cess of desquamation in every portion of the surface of the body. As to general management during the progress of the fever,—in favourable cases little is required beyond careful nursing and feeding. The diet all through the fever and convalescence should be of light character, con- sisting mainly of milk food. Soups may be taken, but solid animal food should as far as possible be avoided. During the febrile stage a useful drink may be made by a weak solution of chlorate of potash in water (1 drachm to the pint), and of this the patient may partake freely. In the more severe forms of the disease, where the throat is much

affected, the application with a brush of a strong solution of Condy's fluid or other disinfectant, such as boroglyceride, glycerine of carbolic acid, quinine, &c., may be required, or gargling with these substances when this can bedone. In the malignant variety, where the eruption is not appearing, or is but ill developed, stimulants inter- nally, and the hot bath or pack, may sometimes afford a chance, or the hypodermic use of pilocarpin,—although it must be confessed that in such cases little can be expected from any remedies. The treatment of the kidney com- plication and its accompanying dropsy is similar to that for acute Bright's disease. Depletion by leeching or cup- ping the loins, and the promotion of cutaneous action by a hot air bath or a hot wet pack, or by pilocarpin, are the most useful measures, and will often succeed in saving life. The abscesses of the neck which occasionally occur as complications should be opened antiseptically, while the ear disorders, which are apt to continue long after the termination of convalescence, will demand the special attention of the aurist. (oh 0-4.)
XXI. — 48

378

SCARRON, Paur (1610-1660), poet, dramatist, novel- ist, and husband of Madame de Maintenon, was born or at least baptized on the 4th July 1610. His father, of the same name, was a man of position, and a member of the parlement of Paris. Paul the younger (who is said to have quarrelled with his stepmother) became an abbé, was not ill-allowanced, and travelled to Rome in 1634. He returned and became a well-known figure in literary and fashionable society. A wild story used to be told of his having (when in residence at his canonry of Le Mans) tarred and feathered himself as a carnival freak, of his having been obliged to take refuge from popular wrath in a swamp, and of his consequent deformity from rheumatism. The simple fact seems to be that in 1637 he had an attack of fever with the usual sequele of rheumatic attacks, and that he put himself into the hands of a quack doctor. This at least is how Tallemant tells the story, though he substitutes a less creditable disease for fever. What is certain is that Scarron, after having been in perfect health for nearly thirty years, passed twenty more in a state of miserable deformity and pain. His head and body were twisted, and his legs became useless. Nevertheless he bore up against his sufferings with invincible courage, though they were complicated by his

inheriting nothing from his father, and by the poverty and misconduct of his sisters, whom he supported. For a few years he really held a benefice at Le Mans, but was then in no case to play pranks. It is said, however, that here he conceived the idea of the Roman Comique and wrote the drama of Jodelet, which gave a nickname to the actor who performed it. In 1646 he returned to Paris and worked hard for the booksellers, from the name of one of whom he is said to have called literature pleasantly his " marquisat de Quinet." He had also a pension from Mazarin and one from the queen, but lost both from being accused of "Frondeur" sentiments. The most singular action of his life remains to be told. In his early years he had been, as hinted, something of a libertine, and a young lady of some family, Céleste Palaiseau, had openly lived with him. But in 1652, sixteen years after he had become almost entirely paralysed, he married a girl of much beauty and no fortune, Francoise or Francine d'Aubigné, granddaughter of Agrippa d'Aubigné, after- wards famous as Madame de Maintenon. Scarron's house was, both before and after the marriage, a great centre of society, despite his narrow means. Yet only the most malignant and unscrupulous libellers of the future favourite accuse her of light conduct during the eight years of her marriage to this strange husband, and the well-informed author of the Historiettes distinctly acquits her of any such. But Scarron, who had long been able to endure life only by the aid of constant doses of opium, was at length worn out, and died on the 6th October 1660.

Scarron's work is very abundant, and, written as it was under pressure of want and pain, it is very unequal. The piece most famous in his own day, his Virgile Travesti (1648-53), is now thought, and not unjustly, a somewhat ignoble and unprofitable waste of singular powers for burlesque. But the Roman Comique (1651) is a work the merit of which can be denied by no competent judge who has read it. Unfinished, and a little desultory, this history of a troop of strolling actors is almost the first French novel, in point of date, which shows real power of painting manners and character, and is singularly vivid. It furnished Théophile Gautier with the idea and with some of the details of his Capitaine Fracasse. Scarrou also wrote some shorter novels of merit, which are thought to have inspired Moliére and Sedaine. Of his plays Jodelet (1645) and Don Japhet d' Arménie (1653) are the best. Both these and the others which he wrote are of course somewhat antiquated in style, but with Corneille's Menteur they stand above

everything else in comedy before Moliére. He also produced many miscellaneous pieces.

Scarron is generally spoken of and thought of as a representative writer of burlesque, but in reality he possessed in abundance the faculty of true comedy. The most complete edition of his works is

held to be that of 1737 (10 vols., Amsterdam), but his more celebrated pieces, including all those mentioncd above, have been frequently reprinted.

SCAUP,—the wild-fowler's ordinary abridgment of Scaup-Duck, meaning a Duck so called " because she feeds upon Scaup, i.e, broken shelfish," as may be seen in Willughby's Ornithology (p. 365); but it would be more proper to say that the name comes from the '' Mussel- scaups," or " Mussel-scalps,!" the beds of rock or sand on which Mussels (Mytilus edulis, and other species) are ageregated,—the Anas marila of Linneus and Fuligula maria of modern systematic writers, a very abundant bird around the coasts of most parts of the northern hemisphere, repairing inland in spring for the purpose of reproduction, though so far as is positively known hardly but in northern districts, as Iceland, Lapland, Siberia, and the fur-countries of America. It was many years ago believed (Hdin. WV. Philos. Journal, xx. p. 298) to have been found breeding in Scotland, but assertions to that effect have not been wholly substantiated, though apparently corroborated by some later evidence (Proc. N. H. Soc. Glasgow, ii. p. 121, and Proc. Phys. Soc. Edinburgh, vii. p. 203). The Scaup- Duck has considerable likeness to the PocHarD (vol. xix. p. 252), both in habits and appearance ; but it much more generally affects salt-water, and the head of the male is black, glossed with green, and hence the name of " Black- head," by which it is commonly known in North America, where, however, a second species or race, smaller than the ordinary one, is also found, the Fuligula afinis. The female Scaup-Duck can be readily distinguished from the Dunbird or female Pochard by her broad white face. (A. N.)

SCEPTICISM signifies etymologically a state of doubt or indecision in the face of different mutually conflicting statements (axémropat, I consider, reflect, hesitate, doubt). It is implied, moreover, that this doubt is not

merely a stage in the road to certainty and true knowledge. The provisional suspense of judgment recommended by Descartes and others as the true beginning of philosophy is no more than a passing phase of the individual's mind in his search for truth. But the doubt of the sceptic is professedly the last result of investigation; it is the renunciation of the search for truth on the ground that truth or real knowledge is unattainable by man. An account of the chief historical appearances of scepticism and its different motives will serve to illustrate and amplify this statement, and will lead up to any further considera- tions of a general nature. At the outset, and in general terms, scepticism may be summarily defined as a thorough- going impeachment of man's power to know—as a denial of the possibility of objective knowledge.

Trust, not distrust, is the primitive attitude of the mind. Histori- What is put before us, whether by the senses or by the °#! ap-

g Pearances,

statements of others, is instinctively accepted as a veraciou: report, till experience has proved the possibility of decep- tion. In the history of philosophy, in the same way, affirmation precedes negation; dogmatism goes before scepticism. And this must be so, because the dogmatic systems are, as it were, the food of scepticism; without them it would be without motive, without a basis oper- andi. Accordingly, we find that sceptical thought did not make its appearance till a succession of positive theories as to the nature of the real, by their mutual incon- sistency, had suggested the possibility that they might all alike be false. sophy was, in great part, such a negative reaction against the luxuriance of self-confident assertion in the nature- philosophies of the preceding age. Though scepticism as a definite school of opinion may be said, in accordance

1 **Scalp" primarily signifies a shell; ¢f Old Dutch schelpe and Old Fr. escalope (Skeat, Htymol. Dictionary, p. 528).

The Sophistic epoch of Greek philo- The

Scr PrPTICIS M

with old precedent, to date only from the time of Pyrrho of Elis, there can be no doubt that the main currents of Sophistic thought were sceptical in the wider sense of that term. The Sophists were the first in Greece to dissolve knowledge into individual and momentary opinion (Prota- goras), or dialectically to deny the possibility of know- ledge (Gorgias). In these two examples we see how the weapons forged by the dogmatic philosophers to assist in the establishment of their own theses are sceptically turned against philosophy in general. As every attempt to rationalize nature implies a certain process of criticism and interpretation to which the data of sense are subjected, and in which they are, as it were, transcended, the anti- thesis of reason and sense is formulated early in the history of speculation. The opposition, being taken as absolute, implies the impeachment of the veracity of the senses in the interest of the rational truth proclaimed by the philosophers in question. Among the pre-Socratic nature-philosophers of Greece, Heraclitus and the Eleatics are the chief representatives of this polemic against the "lying witness" of the senses. The diametrical opposi- tion of the grounds on which the veracity of the senses is impugned by the two philosophies (viz., by Heraclitus because they testify to an apparent permanence and identity in things, by the Eleatics because they testify to an apparent multiplicity and change) was in itself sugges- tive of sceptical reflexion. Moreover, although these philo- sophers are not in any sense themselves sceptical, their arguments are easily susceptible of a wider application. Accordingly we find that the arguments by which Heraclitus supported his theory of the universal flux are employed by Protagoras to undermine the possibility of objective truth, by dissolving all knowledge into the momentary sensation or persuasion of the individual. The idea of an objective flux, or law of change constituting the reality of things, is abandoned, and subjective points of sense alone remain,— which is tantamount to eliminating the real from human knowledge.

Still more unequivocal was the sceptical nihilism ex- pressed by Gorgias in his three celebrated theses :—(1) nothing exists; (2) if anything existed, it would be un- knowable; (3) if anything existed and were knowable, the knowledge of it could not be communicated. The arguments of his book, " Concerning the Non-existent, or Nature," were drawn from the dialectic which the Eleatics had directed against the existence of the phenomenal world. But they are no longer used as indirect proofs of a universe of pure

and unitary Being. The prominence given by most of the Sophists to rhetoric, their cultiva- tion of a subjective readiness as the essential equipment for life, their substitution of persuasion for conviction, all mark the sceptical undertone of their teaching. This attitude of indifference to real knowledge passed in the younger and less reputable generation into a corroding moral scepticism which recognized no good but pleasure and no right but might.

What Socrates chiefly did was to recreate the instinct for truth and the belief in the possibility of its attain- ment. The scientific impulse thus communicated was sufficient to drive scepticism into the background during the great age of Greek philosophy (7.¢., the hundred years preceding Aristotle's death, 323 s.c.). The captious logic of the Megaric school,—in which the Eleatic in- fluence was strong,—their devotion to eristic and the elab- oration of fallacies, was indeed in some cases closely related to sceptical results. The school has been considered with some truth to form a connecting link with the later scep- ticism, just as the contemporary Cynicism and Cyrenaicism may be held to be imperfect preludes to Stoicism and Epicureanism. The extreme nominalism of some of the

379.

Cynics also, who denied the possibility of any but identical judgments, must be similarly regarded as a solvent of knowledge. But with these insignificant exceptions it holds true that, after the sceptical wave marked by the Sophists, scepticism does not reappear till after the exhaustion of the Socratic impulse in Aristotle.

The first man in antiquity whose scepticism gave name

to his doctrine was Pyrrho of Elis (about 360-270 B.c.). Pyrtho.

Pyrrho proceeded with the army of Alexander the Great as far as India, in the company of Anaxarchus, the Democritean philosopher. He afterwards returned to his native city, where he lived in poor circumstances, but: highly honoured by his fellow-citizens. Pyrrho himself left no writings, and the accounts of his doctrine are mainly derived from his pupil Timon of Phlius (about 325-235 B.c.). Timon is called the Sillographist, from his satirical

poem (3/AAoz), in which all the philosophers of Greece are held up to ridicule, with the exception of Xenophanes, who honestly sought, and Pyrrho, who succeeded in finding, the truth. Other disciples are mentioned besides Timon, but the school was short-lived, its place bemg presently taken by the more moderate and cultured doubt of the New Academy. Zeller sums up Pyrrho's teaching in three propositions: We know nothing about the nature of things; hence the right attitude towards them is to withhold judgment; the necessary result of withholding judgment is imperturbability. The technical language of the school expresses the first position by the word dxaradyyia; things are wholly incompre- hensible or inaccessible; against every statement the opposite may be advanced with equal justice (icooGevera rav \éyov). The sceptical watchword which embodies the second position is érox/, reserve of judgment, or, as it is put by Timon, oddév paAdov, that is, no one assertion is truer than another. This complete suspense of opinion is also expressed by the terms dppeyia, or equilibrium, and daca, or refusal to speak, as well as by other expressions, The Pyrrhonists were consistent enough to extend their doubt even to their own principle of doubt. They thus attempted to make their scepticism universal, and to escape the reproach of basing it upon a fresh dogmatism. Mental imperturbability (drapagia) was the result to be attained by cultivating such a frame of mind. The happiness or satisfaction of the individual was the end which dominated this scepticism as well as the contem- porary systems of Stoicism and Epicureanism, and all three philosophies place it in tranquillity or self-centred indif- ference. Scepticism withdraws the individual completely into himself from a world of which he can know nothing. It is men's opinions or unwarranted judgments about things, say the sceptics, which betray them into desire, and painful éffort, and disappointment. From all this a man is delivered who abstains from judging one state to be preferable to another. But, as complete inactivity would have been synonymous with death, it appears to have been admitted that the sceptic, while retaining his consciousness of the complete uncertainty enveloping every step, might follow custom in the ordinary affairs of life.

strictly, of the Middle Academy, under Arcesilaus and ¢% Carneades, founders respectively of the so-called second 4 and third Academies) differed very little from that of the Pyrrhonists. The differences asserted by later writers are not borne out on investigation. But the attitude main- tained

by the Academics was chiefly that of a negative criticism of the views of others, in particular of the some- what crude and imperious dogmatism of the Stoics. They also, in the absence of certainty, allowed a large scope to probability as a motive to action, and defended their doctrine on this point with greater care and skill. The

The scepticism of the New Academy (or, to speak more Scepti-

sm of

the

cademy.

Arcesi- laus.

Car- neades.

whole position was stated with more urbanity and cul- ture, and was supported, by Carneades in particular, by argumentation at once more copious and more acute. It seems also true that the Academics were less overborne than the Pyrrhonists by the practical issue of their doubts (imperturbability) ; their interest was more purely intel- lectual, and they had something of the old delight in mental exercitation for its own sake. Arcesilas or Arcesilaus (about 315-240 B.c.) made the Stoic theory of irresistible impressions (favraciat katadyrrixat) the special object of his attack. Mere irresistibleness (xarddyyus), he maintained, is no criterion of truth, since false perceptions may equally possess this power to sway the mind. He seems chiefly to have supported his position by adducing the already well-known arguments of former philosophers against the veracity of the senses, and he evidently held that by these arguments the possibility of knowledge in general was sufficiently subverted. We can know nothing, he concluded,—not even this itself, that we know nothing. He denied that the want of knowledge reduces us to inaction. Notions influence the will immediately, apart from the question of their truth, and, in all questions of conduct, probability (rd evAoyov) is our sufficient guide, as it is our highest

attainable standard. It is stated that Arcesilaus made his negative criticism merely a preliminary to the inculcation of a modified Platonism. But this account, though not in itself incredible, is not borne out by any evidence at our disposal. The theory of Carneades (213-129 B.c.) repre- sents the highest development of Academic scepticism. The dogmatic system which Carneades had in view was that of Chrysippus, the Stoic, whose main positions, whether in the theory of knowledge, in morals, or in theology, he subjected to an acute and thorough-going criticism. As to the criterion of truth, Carneades denied that this could be found in any impression, as such; for in order to prove its truth an impression must testify, not only to itself, but also to the objects causing it. We find, however, admittedly, that in many cases we are deceived by our impressions; and, if this is so, there is no kind of impression which can be regarded as guaranteeing its own truth. According to his own examples, it is impossible to distinguish objects so much alike as is one egg to another ; at a certain distance the painted surface seems raised, and a square tower seems round; an oar in water seems broken, and the neck-plumage of a pigeon assumes different colours in the sun; objects on the shore seem moving as we pass by, and so forth. The same applies, he argued, to purely intellectual ideas. Many fallacies cannot be solved, and we cannot, for example, draw any absolute distinction between much and little, or, in short, between any quantitative differences. Our impressions, therefore, furnish us with no test of truth, and we can derive no aid from the operations of the understanding, which are purely formal, combining and separating ideas without giving any insight into their validity. Besides this general criticism of knowledge, Carneades attacked the cardinal doctrines of the Stoic school,—their doctrine of God and their proof of divine providence from the evidences of design in the arrangements of the universe. Many of his arguments are preserved to us in Cicero’s Academics and De Natura Deorum. His criticism of the contradictions involved in the Stoic idea of God really constitutes the first discussion in ancient times of the personality of God, and the difficulty of combining in one conception the characters of infinity and individuality. As a positive offset against his scepticism, Carneades elaborated more fully the Academic theory of probability, for which he employed the terms gudacis and wifavdrns. Being necessarily ignorant of the relation of ideas to the

objects they represent, we are reduced to judging them by their relation to ourselves, z.e., by their greater or less clearness and appearance of truth. Though always falling short of knowledge, this appearance of truth may be strong enough to determine us to action. Carneades recog- nized three degrees of probability. The first or lowest is where our impression of the truthfulness of an idea is derived simply from the idea itself; the second degree is where that impression is confirmed by the agreement of related ideas; if a careful investigation of all the individual ideas bears out the same conclusion, we have the third and highest degree of probability. In the first case, an idea is called probable (wifavy); in the second, probable and undisputed (mifavy kat daepiomacros) ; in the third, probable, undisputed, and tested (aia) Kat dmepiamactos Kal mepuwdevxnevn). The scepticism of Carneades was expounded by his successor Clitomachus, but the Academy was soon afterwards (in the so-called fourth and fifth Academies) invaded by the Eclecticism which about that time began to obliterate the distinctions of philosophical doctrine which had hitherto separated the schools. Cicero also, who in many respects was strongly attracted by the Academic scepticism, finally took refuge in a species of Eclecticism based upon a doctrine of innate ideas, and on the argument from the consensus gentium.

The later scepticism—which is sometimes spoken of as the third sceptical school—claimed to be a continuation of the earlier Pyrrhonism. Ainesidemus, though not abso- lutely the first to renew this doctrine, is the first of whose doctrine anything is known. He appears to have taught in Alexandria about the beginning of the Christian era. Among the successors of Alnesidemus, the chief names are those of Agrippa, whose dates caunot be determined, and the physician Sextus Empiricus (about 200 a.p.), whose Pyrrhonic Hypotyposes, and his work Adversus Mathematicos, constitute a vast armoury of the weapons of ancient scepticism. They are of the utmost value as an historical record. With Saturninus, the pupil of Sextus, and Favorinus, the grammarian, ancient scepticism may be said to disappear from history. What speculative power remained was turned entirely into Neoplatonic channels. To Ainesidemus belongs the first enumeration of the ten so-called tropes (rpdzox), or modes of sceptical argument, though the arguments themselves were, of course, current before his time. The first trope appeals to the different constitution of different animals as involving

different modes of perception; the second applies the same argument to the individual differences which are found among men; the third insists on the way in which the senses contradict one another, and suggests that an endowment with more numerous senses would lead toa different report as to the nature of things; the fourth argues from the variability of our physical state and mental moods; the fifth brings forward the diversities of appearance due to the position and distance of objects ; the sixth calls attention to the fact that we know nothing directly, but only through some medium, such as air or moisture, whose influence on the process cannot be elimi- nated ; the seventh refers to the changes which the sup- posed object undergoes in quantity, temperature, colour, motion, &c.; the eighth really sums up the thought which underlies the whole series, when it argues from the rela- tivity of all our perceptions and notions ; the ninth points out the dependence of our impressions on custom, the new and strange impressing us much more vividly than the customary ; the tenth adduces the diversity of customs, manners, laws, doctrines, and opinions among men. AMnesidemus likewise attacked the notion of cause at con- siderable length, but neither in his arguments nor in the

Later scepti- cism of antiquity.

Sceptical tropes.

Com- parison of ancient and modern scepti- cism.

scCrErPTICinsn

numerous objections brought against the notion by Sextus Empiricus do we meet with the thought which furnished the nerve of modern scepticism in Hume. The practical result of his scepticism /Mnesidemus sought, like the Pyrrhonists, in drapagic. He is somewhat strangely said to have combined his scepticism with a revival of the philosophy of Heraclitus ; but the assertion perhaps rests, as Zeller contends, on a confusion. To Agrippa is attri- buted the reduction of the sceptical tropes to five. Of these, the first is based on the discrepancy of human opinions ; the second on the fact that every proof itself requires to be proved, which implies a regressus in injint- tum; the third on the relativity of our knowledge, which varies according to the constitution of the percipient and the circumstances in which he

perceives. The fourth is really a completion of the second, and forbids the assump- tion of unproven propositions as the premises of an argu- ment. It is aimed at the dogmatists, who, in order to avoid the regressus in infinitum, set out from some principle illegitimately assumed. The fifth seeks to show that reasoning is essentially of the nature of a circulus im pro- bando, inasmuch as the principle adduced in proof requires itself to be supported by that which it is called in to prove. The attack made in several of these five tropes upon the possibility of demonstration marks this enumeration as distinctly superior to the first, which consists in the main of arguments derived from the fallibility of the senses. The new point of view is maintained in the two tropes which were the result of a further attempt at generaliza- tion. Nothing is self-evident, says the first of these tropes, for, if all things were certain of themselves, men would not differ as they do. Nor can anything be made certain by proof, says the second, because we must either arrive in the process at something self-evident, which is impossible, as has just been said, or we must involve ourselves in an endless regress.

When we review the history of ancient thought, we find, as Zeller puts it, that “the general result of all sceptical inquiries lies in the proposition that every asser- tion may be opposed by another, and every reason by reasons equally strong—in the icocGévea trav Adywv. Or, as the same thing may be expressed, what all sceptical proofs come back to is the relativity of all our ideas. We can never know the nature of things as they are, but always only the manner in which they appear tous. The criterion of the sceptic is the appearance. Not even his own proof can claim truth and universal validity : he does not assert; he only seeks to relate how a thing strikes him at the present moment. And even when he expresses his doubts in the form of universal statements they are intended to be included in the general uncertainty of knowledge” (Phil. d. Griechen, iii. 2, p. 58). Both Zeller and Hegel, it may be added, remark upon the difference between the calm of ancient scepticism and the perturbed state of mind evinced by many modern sceptics. Universal doubt was the instrument which the sceptics of antiquity recommended for the attainment of complete peace of mind ; rest and satisfaction can be attained, they say, in no other way. By the moderns, on the other hand, doubt is portrayed, for the most part, asa state of unrest and painful yearning. Even Hume, in various noteworthy passages of his Z’eatise, speaks of himself as recovering cheerfulness and mental tone only

by forgetful- ness of his own arguments. His state of universal doubt, so far from being painted as a desirable goal, is described by him as a “malady” or as “ philosophical melancholy and delirium.” The difference might easily be interpreted either as a sign of sentimental weakness on the part of the moderns or as a proof of the limitation of the ancient sceptics which rendered them more easily satisfied in the

absence of truth. It seems to prove, at all events, that the ancient sceptics were more thoroughly convinced than their modern successors of the reasonableness of their own attitude. But whether the ancients were the better or the worse sceptics on that account is a nice question which need not be decided here. It may be doubted, however, whether the thoroughgoing philosophical scepti- cism of antiquity has any exact parallel in modern times, with the single exception possibly of Hume’s Treatise on Human Nature. It is true we find many thinkers who deny the competency of reason when it ventures in any way beyond the sphere of experience, and such men are not unfrequently called sceptics. This is the sense in which Kant often uses the term, and the usage is adopted by others,—for example, in the following definition from Ueberweg’s History of Philosophy:—‘The principle of scepticism is universal doubt, or at least doubt with regard to the validity of all judgments respecting that which lies beyond the range of experience.” ‘The last characteristic, however, is not enough to constitute scepticism, in the sense in which it is exemplified in the ancient sceptics. Scepticism, to be complete, must hold that even within experience we do not rationally conclude but are irration- ally induced to believe. ‘‘In all the incidents of life,” as Hume puts it, “we ought still to preserve our scepticism. If we believe that fire warms, or water refreshes, ’tis only because it costs us too much pains to think otherwise” (Treatise, bk. i. iv. 7). This tone, which fairly represents the attitude of ancient sceptics, is rare among the moderns, at least among those who are professed philosophers. It is more easily matched in the unsystematic utterances of a man of the world like Montaigne.

One form of scepticism, however, may be claimed as Scepti-

an exclusively modern growth, namely, philosophical a im €

scepticism in the interests of theological faith. These ; sceptics are primarily Apologists. “de bonne foy”; it is simply a means to the attainment of a further end. They find that the dogmas of their church have often been attacked in the name of reason, and it may be that some of the objections urged have proved hard to rebut. Accordingly, in an access of pious rage, as it were, they turn upon reason to rend her. They deny her claim to pronounce upon such matters ; they go further, and dispute her prerogative altogether. They endeavour to show that she is in contradiction with her-self, even on matters non-theological, and that everywhere this much vaunted reason of man (la superbe raison) is the creature of custom and circumstance. Thus the ‘im- becility ” of reason becomes their warrant for the reception by another organ—by faith—of that to which reason had raised objections. ‘The Greeks had no temptation to divide man in two in this fashion. When they were sceptics, their scepticism had no ulterior motives ; it was an end in itself, But this line of argument was latent in Christian thought from the time when St Paul spoke of the “foolishness” of preaching. Tertullian fiercely re-echoed the sentiment in his polemic against the philo- sophers of antiquity :—“ Crucifixus est Dei filius ; non pudet, quia pudendum est. Et mortuus est Dei filius ; prorsus credibile est, quia ineptumest. Et sepultus resurrexit; certum est, quia impossibile est.” But, as Christianity became firmly established, Christian writers became more tolerant of speculation; and, instead of

1 This turn of thought is not confined, however, to Christian thinkers; it appears also in the Arabian philosophy of the East. Al- Ghazzali (Algazel) (1059-1111) in his TahGfot al- Fildsifa (‘The Collapse of the Philosophers”) is the advocate of complete philo- sophical scepticism in the interests of orthodox Mohammedanism—an orthodoxy which passed, however, in his own case into a species of mysticism. He did his work of destruction so thoroughly that Arabian philosophy died out after his time in the land of its birth.

: o 6 : interest Their scepticism is not of faith,

Theory of the twofold nature of truth.

Pascal.

flaunting the irreconcileable opposition of reason and dogma, they laboured to reduce the doctrines of the church toa rational system. This was the long task essayed by Scholasticism ; and, though the great Schoolmen of the 13th century refrained from attempting to rationalize such doctrines as the Trinity and the Incarnation, they were far from considering them as essentially opposed to reason. It was not till towards the close of the Middle Ages that a sense of conflict between reason and revelation became widely prevalent and took shape in the essentially sceptical theory of the twofold nature of truth. Philo- sophical truth, as deduced from the teaching of Aristotle, it was said, directly contradicts the teaching of the church, which determines truth in theology ; but the contradiction leaves the authority of the latter unimpaired in its own sphere. It is difficult to believe that this doctrine was ever put forward sincerely; in the most of those who professed it, it was certainly no more than a veil by which they sought to cover their heterodoxy and evade its consequences. Rightly divining as much, the church condemned the doctrine as early as 1276. Nevertheless it was openly professed during the period of the break up of Scholastic Aristotelianism. Pomponatius, the Alex- andrist of Padua (00. 1525), was one of its best known advocates.

The typical and by far the greatest example of the Christian sceptic is Pascal (1623-1662). The form of the Pensées forbids the attempt to evolve from their detached utterances a completely coherent system. For, though he declares at times “Le pyrrhonisme est le vrai,” ‘‘Se moquer de la philosophie c’est vraiment philosopher,” or, again, “ Humiliez-vous, raison impuissante, taisez-vous, nature imbécile,” other passages might be quoted in which he assumes the validity of reason within its own sphere. But what he everywhere emphatically denies is the possibility of reaching by the unassisted reason a satis- factory theory of things. The contradictions which meet us everywhere are summed up and concentrated in the nature of man. Man is a hopeless enigma to himself, till he sees himself in the light of revelation as a fallen creature. The fall alone explains at once the nobleness and the meanness of humanity; Jesus Christ is the only solution in which the baffled reason can rest. These are the two points on which Pascal’s thought turns. “There is nothing which is more shocking to our reason” than

the doctrine of original sin; yet, in his own words, “le noeud de notre condition prend ses replis et ses tours dans cet abime; de sorte que ’homme est plus inconcevable sans ce mystére que ce mystére n’est incon- cevable & homme.” Far, therefore, from being able to sit in judgment upon the mysteries of the faith, reason is unable to solve its own contradictions without aid from a higher source. In a somewhat similar fashion, in the present century, Lamennais (in the first stage of his speculations, represented by the Lssai sur Indifférence en Matiére Religieuse, 1817-21) endeavoured to destroy all rational certitude in order to establish the principle of authority; and the same profound distrust of the power of the natural reason to arrive at truth is exemplified (though the allegation has been denied by the author) in the writings of Cardinal Newman. In adifferent direction and on a larger scale, Hamilton’s philosophy of the con- ditioned may be quoted as an example of the same religious scepticism. Arguing from certain antinomies, said to be inherent in reason as such, Hamilton sought to found theology (in great part at Jeast) upon our nescience, and to substitute belief for knowledge. He also imitated Pascal at times in dilating upon the “impotence” and “imbecility” of our faculties; but, as with Pascal, this was rather in reference to their incapacity to evolve an

SCEP TI Cita

“absolute” system than to their veracity in the ordinary details of experience. The theological application and development of Hamilton’s arguments in Mansel’s Bampton Lectures On the Limits of Religious Thought marked a still more determined attack, in the interests of theology, upon the competency of reason.

Passing from this particular vein of sceptical or semi- Sceptics sceptical thought, we find, as we should expect, that the in 16th

downfall of Scholasticism, and the conflict of philosophical theories and religious confessions which ensued, gave a decided impetus to sceptical reflexion. One of the earliest instances of this spirit is afforded by the book of Agrippa of Nettesheim (1487-1535), De Incertitudine et Vanitate Scientiarum. Sceptical reflexion rather than systematic scepticism is what meets us in Michel de Montaigne (1533-1592), though the elaborate

presentation of sceptical and relativistic arguments in his ‘“‘ Apologie de Raimond Sebond ” (£ssais, ii. 12), and the emblem he recommends —a balance with the legend, ‘Que scay-je ?”—might allowably be adduced as evidence of a more thoroughgoing Pyrrhonism. In his “tesmoynages de nostre imbécillité,” he follows in the main the lines of the ancients, and he sums up with a lucid statement of the two great arguments in which the sceptical thought of every age resumes itself—the impossibility of verifying our faculties, and the relativity of all impressions! The argument from the mutability of opinions and customs was probably the one which appealed most strongly to himself. In the concluding lines of this essay, Montaigne seems to turn to ‘‘nostre foy chrestienne” as man’s only succour from his native state of helplessness and uncertainty. But undoubtedly his own habitual frame of mind is better represented in his celebrated saying—‘‘ How soft and healthful a pillow are ignorance and incuriousness…. for a well-ordered head.” More inclined than Montaigne to give a religious turn to his reflexions was his friend Pierre Charron (1541-1603), who in his book De la Sagesse systematized in somewhat Scholastic fashion the train of thought which we find in the Zssais. Francois Sanchez (1562-1632), professor of medicine and _philo- sophy in Toulouse, combated the Aristotelianism of the schools with much bitterness, and was the author of a book with the title Quod nihil scitur. Of more or less isolated thinkers, somewhat later in point of time, who wrote in the same sceptical spirit, may be mentioned the names of Frangois de la Mothe le Vayer (1588-1672), whose Cing Dialogues appeared after his death under the pseudonym of Orosius Tubero ; Samuel Sorbiére (1615-1670), who trans- lated the Hypotyposes Pyrrhonex of Sextus Empiricus ; Simon Foucher (1644-1696), canon of Dijon, who wrote a History of the Academics, and combated Descartes and Malebranche from a sceptical standpoint. The work of Hieronymus Hirnhaim of Prague (1637-1679), De Typho Generis Humani sive Scientiarum Humanarum Inani ac Ventoso Tumore, was written in the interests of revelation. This is still more the case with the bitter polemic of Daniel Huet (1630-1721), Censura Philosophie Carte- sane, and his later work, Zraité Philosophique de la Faiblesse de VEsprit Humain. The scepticism of Joseph Glanvill (1636-1680), in his two works The Vanity of Dogmatizing (1661) and Scepsis Scientifica (1665), has more interest for Englishmen. Glanvill was not a sceptic at all

1 “Pour juger des apparences que nous recevons des subjects, il nous fauldra un instrument judicatoire ; pour verifier cet instrument, il nous y fault de la demonstration ; pour verifier la demonstration, un instrument ; nous voyla au rouet… Finalement il n’y a aulecune constante existence, ny de nostre estre ny de celuy des objects ; et nous, et nostre jugement, et toutes choses mortelles, vont coulant et roulant sans cesse ; ainsin, il ne se peult establir rien de certain de Yun 4 laultre, et le jugeant et le jugé estants en continuelle mutation et bransle” (Hssais, Garnier, i. 570).

and 17th centuries,

Hume.

SCHrrericCcirs M

points, seeing that he was full of enthusiasm for the advance of physical science and for the newly-founded Royal Society. But he attacked unsparingly the Aristotel- ianism of the schools, which was still dominant at Oxford. Against this, and also against the materialistic dogmatism of Hobbes, he invoked the weapons of scepticism ; and he was led by his own arguments to query “whether there be any science in the sense of the dogmatists.” He based this conclusion partly upon the ground that our knowledge of causes, being derived simply from “ concomitancy,” is far from being “‘infallibly conclusive.” “The causality itself,” he says, anticipating Hume, “is insensible” ; accordingly, “the foundation of scientifical procedure is too weak for so magnificent a superstructure.” More celebrated than any of the above was Pierre Bayle (1647- 1706), whose scepticism lay more in his keen negative criticism of all systems and doctrines which came before him as literary historian than in any theoretic views of his own as to the possibility of knowledge. Bayle also paraded the opposition between reason and revelation ; but the argument in his hands is a double-edged weapon, and when he extols the merits of submissive faith his sincerity is at least questionable.

Hume, the most illustrious and indeed the typical sceptic of modern times, is treated at length in a separate article. Here, therefore, it is only necessary to point out shortly in what his scepticism consists. It is sometimes placed, as we have seen it is by Kant, in his distrust of our ability and right to pass

beyond the empirical sphere. But the mere denial of the possibility of "divinity or school meta- physics," as we find it in the Znguiry, combined with an apparent confidence in "experimental reasoning concern- ing matter of fact and existence," does not constitute scepticism, but rather what would now be called agnosticism or positivism. It is essential to the sceptical position that reason be dethroned within experience as well as beyond it, and this is undoubtedly the result at which Hume arrives in his larger and more thorough- going work. More generally, therefore, his scepticism may be considered to lie in his relation to preceding philosophy. The Treatise is a reductio ad absurdum of the principles of Lockianism, inasmuch as these principles, when consistently applied, leave the structure of experience entirely "loosened" (to use Hume's own expression), or cemented together only by the irrational force of custom. Hume's scepticism thus really arises from his thorough- going empiricism. Starting with " particular perceptions " or isolated ideas let in by the senses, he never advances beyond these "distinct existences." Each of them exists on its own account; it is what itis, but it contains no reference to anything beyond itself. The very notion of objectivity and truth therefore disappears ; the Scheon or appearance of the moment is the only reality. Hume's analysis of the conceptions of a permanent world and a permanent self reduces us to the sensationalistic relativism of Protagoras. He expressly puts this forward in various passages as the conclusion to which reason conducts us. The fact that the conclusion is in "direct and total opposition" to the apparent testimony of the senses is a fresh justification of philosophical scepticism. For, indeed, scepticism with regard to the senses is considered in the Inquiry to be sufficiently justified by the fact that they lead us to suppose "an external universe which depends not on our perception," whereas "this universal and primary opinion of all men is soon destroyed by the slightest philosophy." Scepticism with regard to reason, on the other hand, depends on an insight into the irrational character of the relation which we chiefly employ, viz., that of cause and effect. It is nota real relation in objects but rather a mental habit of belief engendered by frequent

repetition or custom. 'This point of view is applied in the Z'reatise universally. All real connexion or relation, therefore, and with it all

possibility of an objective system, disappears ; it is, in fact, excluded by Hume ad initio, for “the mind never perceives any real connexion among distinct existences.” Belief, however, just because it rests, as has been said, on custom and the influence of the imagination,! survives such demonstrations. ‘“ Nature,” as Hume delights to reiterate, ‘‘is always too strong for principle.” ‘Nature, by an absolute and uncontrollable necessity, has determined us to judge as well as to breathe and feel.” The true philosopher, therefore, is not the Pyrrhonist, trying to maintain an impossible equilibrium or suspense of judgment, but the Academic, yielding gracefully to the impressions or maxims which he finds, as matter of fact, to have most sway over himself. ‘I may— nay, I must—yield to the current of nature, in submitting to my senses and understanding ; and in this blind sub- mission I show most perfectly my sceptical principles,” for, after all, “‘if we believe that fire warms or water refreshes, ’tis only because it costs us too much pains to think other- wise,” @

The system of Kant, or rather that part of his system Sceptical expounded in the Critique of Pure Reason, though side of expressly distinguished by its author from scepticism, has ase been included by many writers in their survey of sceptical oa theories. The difference between Kant, with his system of pure reason, and any of the thinkers we have passed in review is obvious; and his limitation of reason to the sphere of experience suggests in itself the title of agnostic or positivist rather than that of sceptic. Yet, if we goa little deeper, there is substantial justification for the view which treats agnosticism of the Kantian type as essentially sceptical in its foundations and in its results. For criticism not only limits our knowledge to a certain sphere, but denies that our knowledge within that sphere is real; we never know things as they actually are, but only as they appear to us. Our knowledge, in Kant’s language, does not show us “the inward essence of the object in itself, but only the relation of the object to the subject.” But this doctrine of relativity really involves a condemnation of our knowledge (and of all knowledge), because it fails to realize an impossible and self-contradictory ideal. The man who impeaches the knowing faculties because of the fact of relation which they involve is pursuing the phantom of an apprehension which, as Lotze expresses it, does not apprehend things, but is itself things; he is desiring not to know but to Ge the things themselves. If this dream or prejudice be exploded, then the scepticism originating in it—

and a large proportion of recent sceptical thought does so originate—loses its raison @étre.? The prejudice, however, which meets us in Kant is, in a some- what different form, the same prejudice which is found in Preju- the tropes of antiquity—what Lotze calls “ the inadmissible a

relation of the world of ideas to a foreign world of objects.” es

1 “Belief is more properly an act of the sensitive than of the cism cogitative part of our nature.” rests.

2 Much the same conclusion is reached in what is perhaps the ablest English exposition of pure philosophic scepticism since Hume —Mr Arthur Balfour’s Defence of Philosophic Doubt (1879). ‘* The reader may wish to know,” says Mr Balfour, ‘‘what constitute the ‘claims on our belief’ which I assert to be possessed alike by science and theology, and which I put forward as the sole practical founda- tion on which our convictions ultimately rest… . Whatever they may be, they are not rational grounds of conviction. .. It would be more proper to describe them as a kind of inward inclination or impulse” (pp. 816-7).

3 It may be as well to add that the sceptical side of Kantianism is mainly confined to the Critique of Pure Reason, but this side of Kantian thought has been most widely influential. The remarks made above would not apply to the coherent system of idealism which may be evolved from Kant’s writings and which many would consider alone to deserve the name of Kantianism or Criticism.

Function of scepti- cism.

384

For, as he rightly points out, whether we suppose idealism or realism to be true, in neither case do the things them- selves pass into our knowledge. No standpoint is possible from which we could compare the world of knowledge with such an independent world of things, in order to judge of the conformity of the one to the other. But the abstract doubt ‘whether after all things may not be quite other in themselves than that which by the laws of our thought they necessarily appear” is a scepticism which, though

admittedly irrefutable, is as certainly groundless. No arguments can be brought against it, simply because no arguments can be brought to support it; the scepticism rests on nothing more than the empty possibility of doubting. This holds true, even if we admit the ‘independent ” existence of such a world of things. But the independence of things may with much greater reason be regarded as itself a fiction or prejudice. The real “objective” to which our thoughts must show con- formity is not a world of things in themselves, but the system of things as it exists for a perfect intelligence. Scepticism is deprived of its persistent argument if it is seen that, while our individual experiences are to be judged by their coherence with the context of experience in general, experience as a whole does not admit of being judged by reference to anything beyond itself.

To the attack upon the possibility of demonstration, inasmuch as every proof requires itself a fresh proof, it may quite fairly be retorted that the contradiction really lies in the demand for proof of the self-evident, on which all proof most ultimately depend. It is of course always possible that in any particular case we may be deceived ; we may be assuming as self-evidently true what is in reality not so. But such incidental lapses are found to correct themselves by the consequences in which they involve us, and they have no power to shake our trust in the general validity of reason. It may, however, be granted that the possibility of lapse throws us open to the objections, ingenuous or disingenuous, of the sceptic; and we must remain exposed to them so long as we deal with our first principles as so many isolated axioms or intui- tions. But the process of self-correction referred to points to another proof—the only ultimately satisfactory proof of which first principles admit. Their evidence lies in their mutual interdependence and in the coherence of the system which they jointly constitute.

Of a scepticism which professes to doubt the validity of every reasoning process and every operation of all our faculties it is, of course, as impossible as it would be absurd to offer any refutation. Here, as Butler incisively put it, “we can go no further. For it is ridiculous to attempt to prove the truth of those very perceptions whose truth we can no otherwise prove than by other per- ceptions of exactly the same kind with them, and which there is just the same ground to suspect, or to attempt to prove the truth of our faculties, which can no otherwise be proved than by means of

those very suspected faculties themselves.” This absolute scepticism, indeed, can hardly be regarded as more than empty words; the position which they would indicate is not one which has ever existed. In any case, such scepticism is at all times sufficiently refuted by the imperishable and justifiable trust of reason in itself. The real function of scepticism in the history of philosophy is relative to the dogmatism which it criticizes. And, asa matter of fact, it has been seen that many so-called sceptics were rather critics of the effete systems which they found cumbering the ground than actual doubters of the possibility of knowledge in general. And even when a thinker puts forward his doubt as absolute it does not follow that his successors are bound to regard it in thesame light. The progress

of thought may show it to be, in truth, relative, as when the nerve of Hume’s scepticism is shown. to be his thoroughgoing empiricism, or when the scepticism of the Critique of Pure Reason is traced to the unwarrantable assumption of things-in-themselves. When the assump- tions on which it rests are proved to be baseless, the parti- cular scepticism is also overcome. In like manner, the apparent antinomies on which such a scepticism builds will be found to resolve themselves for a system based ona deeper insight into the nature of things. The serious thinker will always repeat the words of Kant that, in itself, scepticism is “not a permanent resting-place for human reason.” Its justification is relative and its func- tion transitional.

Authorities.—Ancient scepticism is fully treated in the relative parts of Zeller’s Philosophie der Griechen, with which may be com- pared Zimmermann’s Darstellung d. Pyrrhonischen Philosophie (1841), and Ueber Ursprung wu. Bedeutung d. Pyrrh. Phil. (1848) ; Wachsmuth, De Timone Phliasio (1859); Geflers, De

SCEPTRE. Though the sceptre is now used prin- cipally as one of the insignia of royalty, the word origin- ally had a more extended méaning. Among the early Greeks the oxymrpov was simply a long staff used by aged men (Jd, xviii. 416; Herod., i. 196), and thus came to be used as a sign of authority by officials of many kinds —judges, military leaders, priests, heralds, and others. It is frequently represented on Greek painted vases as a long staff, tipped with metal in some ornamental fashion, and is borne by

some of the gods. Among the Etruscans sceptres of great magnificence were used by the kings and also by the upper orders in the priesthood. Many repre- sentations occur on the walls of the painted tombs of Etruria. Some specimens which still exist are among the finest examples known of ancient jewellery. The British Museum, the Vatican, and the Louvre possess Etruscan gold sceptres of the most minute and elaborate workman- ship. Some of these are hollow gold batons, about nine to twelve inches long and half an inch in diameter, com- pletely covered with that very delicate ornament for which the Etruscan goldsmiths were so famed, produced by soldering thousands of microscopically minute globules of gold arranged in rich patterns on to the plain gold cylinder which forms the ground. One magnificent speci- men in the gold-ornament room of the British Museum has its top formed like a flower, with outer petals of beaten gold and an inner core made by a large emerald ; it is of the greatest beauty both in workmanship and design.

The sceptre of the Romans, like most of their insignia of rank, is said to have been derived from the Etruscans. An old and more Latinized form of the word is scepio (see Liv., v. 41). Under the republic an ivory sceptre (sceptrum eburneum) was one of the marks of consular rank. It was also used by victorious generals who re- ceived the title of imperator, and this use still survives in the modern marshal’s baton. In Roman paintings the long staff-like sceptre is frequently represented in the hands of Jupiter and Juno, as chief of the gods.

Under the empire the sceptrum Augusti (Suet., Galba, i.) was specially used by the emperors. It was often of ivory, tipped with a gold eagle (Juv., Saé., x. 43), and is frequently shown on medallions of the later empire, which have on the obverse a half-length figure of the emperor, holding in one hand the short eagle-tipped sceptre and in the other the orb surmounted by a small figure of Victory. The older staff-like form of sceptre still survived under

the name hasta pura; it is shown on the reverses of many Roman coins.in the hand of deities and of the emperor or empress, though originally the hasta pura had a very different use, being simply a mark of distinction given

by Roman generals to soldiers who had shown unusual bravery (Tac., Ann., ili. 21). After the introduction of Christianity as the state religion, the imperial sceptre was frequently tipped with a cross instead of the eagle, though both were used. All through the Middle Ages both these forms survived, and sceptres of gold studded with jewels were used by most sovereigns of Europe. The gold sceptre of Charlemagne, a magnificent specimen of early jeweller's work, still exists among the regalia at Vienna, Some medizeval sceptres were of crystal or ivory mounted in gold. Several fine ancient examples existed among the regalia of England till after the death of Charles I., when the whole set were broken up and melted by order of the Parliament.

At the Restoration, four new sceptres were made for the coronation of Charles II. (see Archaxologia, xxix. p. 262); and these still exist among the regalia in the Tower. They are—(1) the so-called St Edward's staff of gold, 4 feet 7 inches long, set with jewels, and surmounted with a cross and orb—a copy of the older one which contained in the orb a fragment of the true cross (this sceptre is borne in front of the sovereign during the processional part of the ceremony of coronation); (2) a gold sceptre tipped with a cross, which at the coronation is placed in the sovereign's right hand by the archbishop of Canter- bury; (3) a similar sceptre tipped with a gold dove, which is placed in the sovereign's left hand ;! (4) a small gold jewelled sceptre for the queen consort. Nos. (1) and (2) are both studded with diamonds. In addition to these four, there is a gold-mounted ivory sceptre, which was made for the queen of James II.; it is tipped with a gold dove and is studded with jewels. A sixth gold sceptre is that which was made for the queen at the coronation of William and Mary.

Among the Scottish regalia at Edinburgh a fine 15th- century gold sceptre still exists; and others of the same or earlier date are preserved among the royal insignia of several European countries.

SCHADOW, a distinguished name in the annals of Ger- man art.

I. Jonann Gottrriep ScHapow (1764-1850), an eminent sculptor, was born in 1764 in Berlin, where his father was a poor tailor. His first teacher was an inferior sculptor, Tassaert, patronized by Frederick the Great ; the master offered his daughter in marriage, but the pupil preferred to elope with a girl

to Vienna, and the father-in- law not only condoned the offence but furnished money wherewith to visit Italy. The young man made the most of advantages which in those days fell to the lot of few: he gained in competition a prize for a group of Perseus and Andromeda; three years' study in Rome formed his style, and in 1788 he returned to Berlin to succeed his former master, Tassaert, as sculptor to the court and secretary to the Academy. Prussia in rising into a great kingdom had need for much sculpture, and Schadow brought timely talent and exceptional training. Over half a century, crowded with commissions, he persistently produced upwards of two hundred works, varied in style as in subjects. Among his ambitious efforts are Frederick the Great in Stettin, Bliicher in Rostock, and Luther in Wittenberg. His portrait statues include Frederick the Great playing the flute, and the crown-princess Louise and

1 Both these sceptres (or rather the older ones) were shown, one in each hand of the fine bronze effigy of Edward III. in Westminster Abbey, but as a rule royal effigies were represented with only one sceptre.

her sister. His busts, which reach a total of more than one hundred, comprise seventeen colossal heads in the Walhalla, Ratisbon ; from the life were modelled Goethe, Wieland, and Fichte. Of church monuments and memorial works thirty are enumerated ; yet Schadow hardly ranks among Christian sculptors. He is claimed by classicists and idealists: the quadriga on the Brandenburger Thor and the allegorical frieze on the facade of the Royal Mint, both in Berlin, are judged among the happiest growths from the antique. Fauns, nymphs, cupids, and figures of fancy, scattered among plain portrait work, kept alive to an advanced age early associations formed in Italy. Schadow, as director of the Berlin Academy, gave proof of intellectual powers which made him a leader and secured many and devoted followers. Personal influence he extended and fortified by his books. He wrote on the proportions of the human figure, on national physiognomy, &c.; and many volumes by himself and others describe and illustrate his method and his work. He died, full of honours, at Berlin in 1850.

II. Ruporepn Scuapow (1786-1822), sculptor, son of the preceding, was born in Rome in 1786. His father, who returned to Berlin in 1788, was his first master. Rudolph in 1810 obtained the pension for Rome and received

kindly help from Canova and Thorwaldsen. His talents were versatile: his first independent work was a figure of Paris, and it had for its companion a spinning girl. Following the example set by leading German artists then settled in Rome, he exchanged the Protestant for the Catholic faith, and gave pledge of his convictions by statues of John the Baptist and of the Virgin and Child. In Eng- land he became known by bas-reliefs executed for the duke of Devonshire and for the marquis of Lansdowne. His last composition, commissioned by the king of Prussia, was a colossal group, Achilles with the Body of Penthesilea; the model, universally admired for its antique character and the largeness of its style, had not been carried out in marble when in 1822 the artist died in Rome.

Ill. Frieprich Witnerm Scuapow (1789-1862), painter, born in 1789 in Berlin, was the second son of Johann Gottfried Schadow the sculptor, from whom he received his earliest instruction. In 1806-7 he served as a soldier ; in 1810 he went with his elder brother Rudolph to Rome. He became one of the leaders among the German pre-Raphaelite brethren who eschewed classicism and the Ttalian Renaissance and sought to rebuild Christian art on the principles and practice of early and purer times. Following the example of Overbeck and others, he joined the Catholic Church, and held that an artist must believe and live out the truths he essays to paint. The sequel showed that Schadow was qualified to shine less as a painter than as a teacher and director. The Prussian consul, General Bartholdi, befriended his young com- patriots by giving them a commission to decorate with frescos a room 24 feet square in his house on the Pincian Hill. The artists engaged were Schadow, Cornelius, Overbeck, and Veit; the subject selected was the story of Joseph and his brethren, and two scenes, the Bloody Coat and Joseph in Prison, fell to the lot of Schadow. These well-studied and sound wall-paintings brought re- nown to the brethren, who were further fortified by the friendship of Niebuhr and Bunsen; the former writes— “They are all men of talent,” and “Schadow is parti- cularly refined and intellectual.” Schadow was in 1819 appointed professor in the Berlin Academy, and his ability and thorough training gained devoted disciples, To this period belong pictures for churches, In 1826 the pro- fessor was made director of the Dtisseldorf Academy, and so highly were his character and teachings esteemed that some of the best scholars accompanied their master. The

high and sacred art matured in Rome Schadow trans- planted to Diisseldorf ; he reorganized the Academy, which in a few years grew famous as a centre of Christian art to which pupils flocked from all sides. In 1837 the director selected, at request, those of his scholars best qualified to decorate the chapel of St Apollinaris on the Rhine with frescos, which when finished were accepted as the fullest and purest manifestation of the Diisseldorf school on its spiritual side. To 1842 belong the Wise and Foolish Virgins, in the Stadel Institute, Frankfort; this large and important picture is carefully considered and wrought, but lacks power. Schadow's fame indeed rests less on his own creations than on the school he formed ; he imparted to others nobility of conception, beauty of form, refine- ment and delicacy in expression and execution. Yet the master in Ditisseldorf encountered opposition: a reaction set in against the spiritual and sacerdotal style he had established ; a younger generation rose who stigmatized his system as narrow and bigoted ; and in 1859 the party of naturalism and realism after a severe struggle drove the venerable director from his chair. Schadow died at Diissel- dorf in 1862, and a monument in the platz which bears his name was raised at the jubilee held to commemorate his directorate. (5.7 AS) SCHAFARIK (in Bohemian Sarakrx), Paut Josery (1795-1861), was by origin a Slovak, and was born in 1795 at Kobeljarova, a village of northern Hungary, where his father was a Protestant clergyman. It was not till his sixteenth year that any enthusiasm was aroused in him for the language and literature of his race. At this time an essay of Jungmann's fell into his hands, and at once gave a direction to his studies. His first production was a volume of poems in Bohemian entitled The Muse of Tatra with a Slavonic Lyre, published at Levocza in 1814. After this we find him collecting Slovak songs. In 1815 he began a course of study at the university of Jena, and while there translated into Czech the Clouds of Aristophanes and the Maria Stuart of Schiller. In 1817 he came to Prague and joined the literary circle of which Dobrovsky, Jungmann, and Hanka were members. In 1819 he was appointed headmaster of the high school at Neusatz (Novi Sad) in the south of Hungary; he remained occupied with the duties of this office till 1833. But besides his educa- tional functions he busied himself with the

study of Servian literature and antiquities, and acquired many rare books and manuscripts. In 1826 his Geschichte der Slawischen Sprache und Literatur nach allen Mundarten appeared at Pesth. This may truly be called an epoch-making book in the history of Slavonic studies. It was the first attempt to give anything like a systematic account of the Slavonic languages, the knowledge of which was at that time in such a rudimentary state that even Schafarik is not able to classify properly the Bulgarian language, but has grouped it with Servian. In 1833 appeared his Serbesche Lesekirner oder historisch-kritische Beleuchtung der Serbischen Mundart, and in 1837 his great work Slovanské StarozZitnosti ("Slavonic Antiquities"), by which he is at the present time best known. The " Antiquities" have been translated into Polish, Russian, and German, and we are promised an English version shortly from the pen of Mrs Alexander Kerr. This valuable work was enlarged and improved in the second edition, which appeared among the collected works of Schafarik, edited by Jiretek after the author's death. In 1840 he published in conjunction with Palacky Dee altesten Denkmiiler der Béhmischen Sprache, in which he defended the authenticity of those Bohemian docu- ments which have been declared spurious by some scholars. In the year 1837 poverty compelled him to accept the uncongenial office of censor of Czech publications, which he abandoned in 1847 on becoming custodian of the

Prague public library. In 1842 he published his valuable work Slovansky Ndrodopis, which gives a complete account of Slavonic ethnology. In 1848 he was made professor of Slavonic philology in the university of Prague, but resigned it in the following year, probably from causes in some way connected with the political troubles of that period, of which Prague was one of the centres. He was then made keeper of the university library, in which office he con- tinued till his death in 1861. He had long been in broken health,—his pains of body being augmented by brain dis- ease, which had been brought on by his severe literary labours and also by family anxieties. His latter days were devoted to philology, one of the chief subjects treated of by him being the antiquity of the Glagolitic alphabet, about which he held very different opinions at various periods of his life. He was also for some time conductor of the "Journal" of the Bohemian

Museum, and edited the first volume of the Vybor, or selections from old Czech writers, which appeared under the auspices of the literary society in 1845. To this he prefixed a grammar of the Old Bohemian language. His correspondence with Pogodin has been published by Prof. Nil Popoff of Moscow among the letters of that eminent scholar.

Schafarik was a man of the purely literary type, —an indefatigable worker, an enthusiast, and a sincere patriot. The study of Slavonic philology and ethnology has advanced since his time, but the greater part of his work is permanent and monumental. Besides his collected writings (Sebrané Spisy), which were reprinted at Prague after his death during the years 1862-1865, a posthumous work by him also made its appearance, edited by J. Jiretek, Geschichte der Stidslawischen Literatur.

-SCHAFFHAUSEN, in area (111-7 square miles) and actual population (38,348) the 19th and in relative density of population the 7th of the cantons of Switzer- land, forms the most northern angle of the Swiss territory, and lies on the right or German side of the Rhine, which separates it from the cantons of Thurgau and Zurich. It is divided into three distinct portions by spurs of the grand-duchy of Baden, which also possesses the small enclave of Biisingen on the Rhine. Geologically it belongs for the most part to the Swabian Jura, and directly or indirectly it all drains to the Rhine, which forms its famous falls in the neighbourhood of the chief town (see RuINs, vol. xx. p. 519). In the broad straths of the Klettgau vine-growing and agriculture go hand in hand (the wines of Hallau being in high repute); the more elevated districts of Rauden and Reyat (highest point 3040 feet above the sea) raise the grain-production of the canton above the home demand, and also provide large quantities of potatoes, hemp, and fruit. Under a careful regime the forests are recovering from a state of comparative exhaustion. The Schaffhausen cattle are partly Swabian and partly Swiss; Klettgau has a special breed of pigs of its own. Manufacturing industries have their best development at Schaffhausen-Neuhausen. The population, which increased from 35,300 in 1850 to 38,348 in 1880, is almost exclusively of German speech (230 individuals only using other languages). Protestants are to Roman Catholics as 8 to 1 (33,897 and 4154); the latter are attached to the bishopric of Basel. Schaffhausen has been a member of the Swiss confederation since 1501. By the new constitution of 1876 it

became remarkably democratic. The great council consists of representatives of the people elected for four years at the rate of one for every five hundred inhabitants. On the petition of any thousand of the electors, a measure may be introduced to the chamber or submitted to the direct vote of the citizens. The five members of the administration are also popularly elected. Education is well endowed, primary education being compulsory. A reformatory for destitute children is maintained at Friedeck, near Buch.

SCH—SCH

SCHAFFHAUSEN, the capital of the above canton, is situated on the bank of the Rhine, 303 miles by rail west of Constance and 60 east of Basel, and communicates by a bridge with the village of Feuerthalen (1000 inhabitants) +n Zurich. It is a city of contrasts—medizval architec- ture of the true Swabian type and modern manufactures mingling curiously together. The cathedral, formerly the church of the abbey of All Saints (Allerheiligen), is a massive basilica founded in 1104 and completed in 1453 ; its great bell (1486) bears the inscription V2vos voco, mortuos plango, fulgura frango, which suggested Schiller's "Song of the Bell" and_ the opening of Longfellow's Golden Legend. On the Rebhiigel above the town rises the castle of Manoth (1564-1590) with bomb-proof case- mates, and a tower whose top is reached by a spiral ascent up which one can ride or drive. In Herrenacker Platz stands the Imthurneum, a building erected (1864) and pre- sented to the town by a Swiss citizen, resident in London, for the 'promotion of zsthetic and scientific culture"; it contains a theatre, concert-rooms, &c. The public library (28,000 volumes) possesses the printed and MS. collections

of Johann von Miiller, who was born at Schaffhausen in 1752, and his monument adorns the promenade of the Vesenstaub. In the museum is preserved the famous Kesvlerloch "find." Among the industrial establishments of the city and vicinity are ironworks, waggon and carriage factories, woollen and cotton factories, breweries, distilleries, and champagne factories. The population of the commune was 10,303 in 1870 and 11,795 in 1880.

Schaffhausen (Latinized as Scafusia or Greeized into Probatopolis) first appears in the 9th century, and had already attained the rank of an imperial eity in 1264.

SCHALCKEN, Goprrrep (1643-1706), genre and por- trait painter, was born at Dort in 1643, and studied under Van Hoogstraten, and afterwards under Gerhard Douw, whose works his earlier genre-pictures very closely resemble. He visited England and painted several portraits, of which the half-length of William III., now in the Museum, Amsterdam, is a good example. In this work he shows an effect of candle-light, which he also introduced— frequently with fine effect—in many of his subject-pictures. These may be studied in the collections at Buckingham Palace, the Louvre, Vienna, and Dresden. He executed several Scriptural subjects—such as that of the Wise and Foolish Virgins, at Munich—of very indifferent merit. He died at The Hague in 1706.

SCHAMYL (i.e, SAMUEL), prophet and hero of the Caucasian mountaineers, was born in 1797. See Caucasus, vol. v. p. 258. After his defeat and capture he passed ten years in Russia, where he was well treated. In 1870 he went on pilgrimage to Mecca, and died at Medina in March of the following year.

SCHANDAU, a small town of Saxony, is situated on the right bank of the Elbe, at the mouth of the little valley of the Kirnitzsch, 21 miles to the south-east of Dresden, and 4 miles from the Bohemian frontier. Its position in the heart of the romantic ‘Saxon Switzer- land” gives it an importance to which on other grounds it is not entitled, and thousands of tourists make it their headquarters in summer, The stationary population in 1880 was 3301.

SOHARNHORST, Gernarp Jonann Davip VoN (1756-1813), Prussian general, celebrated as the author of the so-called “Kriimpersystem,” or short-service system (see vol. ii. p. 594), by which the Prussian nation was prepared for the war of liberation, was a Hanoverian by birth, and served in the Hanoverian army from 1778 to 1801, when he passed into Prussian service, and soon became the leader in the reconstruction of its forces. In the war with France in 1813 he accompanied Bliicher as

chief of the general staff, but received a severe wound m the first battle (Grossgérschen), which soon after was followed by his death. ‘The first part of an extensive and important biography of Scharnhorst by Lehmann has recently appeared (Leipsic, 1886).

SCHASSBURG (Hung. Segesvdr), chief town of the Transylvanian county of Nagy-Kiikiillo, Hungary, stands on the river Nagy-Kiikiillo, 24 miles east-south-east of Maros-Vasarhely, in 46° 10’ N. lat, 24° 47° E. long. It consists of two parts,—the one which formerly served as a fortress on the top of a hill, and the other in the valley below,—the two being connected by a covered passage. Schissburg is the seat of various public offices and of a district court of justice; its other institutions include a Franciscan convent, a Protestant upper gymna- sium, a teachers’ institute and seminary, two savings banks, a free library, hospital, barracks, &e. As a station on the eastern system of the Hungarian State Railways, Schassburg has a good woollen and linen trade, as well as exports of wine and fruit. Among its principal buildings an old Gothic church and the lofty town-hall are specially worthy of mention. The population in 1884 amounted to 8810, the majority being Germans (Saxons), and the remainder Roumanians and Hungarians.

Schiissburg was founded by Saxon colonists at the end of the 12th eentury ; its Latin name was Castrum Sex. The most important event in its history was the battle on the 31st July 1849, in whieh the Hungarian army under Bem was defeated by the overwhelming numbers of the Russian General Liiders. The great national poet, Petofi, was last seen, and is generally believed to have met his end, in this engagement.

SCHAUMBURG-LIPPE. See Lippe.

SCHEELE, Karn Wirtneim (1742-1786), an eminent chemist, was born at Stralsund, the capital of Pomerania, which then belonged to Sweden, on the 19th December 1742. His father was a merchant, and Karl Wilhelm was the seventh of a family of eleven. In due time the boy was sent to school, but he did not care for the languages, and as he showed a strong taste for pharmacy he was apprenticed at the age of fourteen to an apothecary in Gothenburg, called Bauch, with whom he stayed for eight years. He was thoughtful and silent, and very punctual and precise in discharge of his duties. His spare

time and great part of his nights were devoted to the experimental examination of the different bodies which he dealt with, and the careful study of the standard works on chemistry. By these means he acquired a large store of knowledge and great practical skill and manipulative dexterity. In 1765 he removed to Malm, and resided for five years with Kalstrém, an apothecary, whence he removed to Stockholm, to Scharenberg, also an apothecary. While here he wrote out an account of his experiments with cream of tartar, from which he had isolated tartaric acid, and sent it to Bergman, the leading chemist in Sweden. Bergman some-how neglected it, and this caused for a time a reluctance on Scheele's part to become acquainted with that savant, but the paper, through the instrumentality of Retzius, was ultimately communicated to the Academy of Sciences at Stockholm. In 1771 Scheele finished an elaborate inquiry into the composition of the beautiful mineral fluor-spar, and showed that it consisted of lime and a peculiar acid which he called fluor acid. He misunderstood, however, the true character of the decomposition he had effected, and gave an erroneous explanation of it. His experiments had been conducted in glass vessels, and he was not aware that what he actually got was the fluo-silicic acid. This mistake was subsequently pointed out and corrected by some other chemists. He left Stockholm in 1773 and took up his residence at Upsala. Here he made the acquaintance of Gahn, assessor of mines at Fahlun, through whose mediation he was at length introduced to

088

Bergman ; the two soon became excellent friends. In 1774 Scheele published his epoch-making investigation into the black oxide of manganese, which had occupied him for two or three years, and in 1775 his memoirs on benzoic and arsenicacids. Inthe same year he left Upsala, in order to settle at K6piug, a small place at the western extremity of Lake Malar. Having heard that an apothe- cary's shop was vacant, he applied for it, passed a brilliant examination before the medical college, and was appointed. But, instead of a small flourishing business, he found that he had to face confusion and debt. Undismayed he set to work, introduced order and some prosperity, and in two years bought the business from the widow of the former proprietor. During this unfortunate period Scheele must have worked very hard, for in spite of debt and diffi- culties he published in 1777

his treatise upon Air and Fire, one of the most remarkable books in the whole range of chemical literature, whether its originality, its close reasoning, the number of discoveries which it contains, or the enormous amount of experimental work it represents bé considered. About this time Bergman obtained for him from the Academy a grant, Scheele's appreciation of which was shown by his reserving one-sixth for his personal wants and devoting the remainder to his experiments.

Subsequent to this period, and for the remaining nine years of his life, the only events to be recorded are the papers which he composed. Every year he published two or three, and almost every one contained a capital discovery, either the explanation of a phenomenon or reaction previously misunderstood or the description of some new compounds. He was at the zenith of his now European fame asa profound chemist and unfailing experimenter, and in the best years of his life, when his career was suddenly arrested. The common account is that his unremitting work, especially at night, exposing him to cold and draughts, induced a rheumatic attack, to which in the course of a couple of months he succumbed. Possibly his strength had been exhausted by long years of privation and neglect of himself. He had intended, as soon as his circumstances should enable him, to marry the widow of his predecessor. His illness, however, increased very fast, and it was on his death-bed that he carried out his design on the 19th May 1786. Two days later he died, bequeathing to his wife what property he had acquired. He was only forty-four years of age.

The discoveries with which Scheele enriched chemistry are numerous and important. Reference has been already made to the discovery of tartaric acid and of the composition of fluor-spar. The analysis of manganese oxide in 1774 led him to the discovery of chlorine and of baryta (terra ponderosa, as it was called), to indi- vidualizing the salts of manganese itself, ineluding the green and purple compounds with potash, and to the explanation of how manganese colours and decolorizes glass. In 1775 he showed how to prepare benzoic acid by precipitating it from a solution in lime, and he investigated arsenic acid and its reactions with different sub- stances, discovering arseniuretted hydrogen and the green colour "Schecle's green,"—a process for preparing which on the large seale he published in

1778. Other researches of this period were con- eerned with the nature of quartz, clay, and alum, and with an

animal concretion or caleulus from which he got for the first time urie acid.

The treatise on Air and Fireappearedin1777. Itis unnecessary now to enter into Scheele's argument, for, however admirably it be worked out, it started from an erroneous basis, and it is equally impossible in limited space even to enumerate the experiments and the discoveries which fill this book, and which have remained as permanent acquisitions to science through all subsequent changes of theory. Among the most important of these is his demonstra- tion that the air consists mainly of two gases, —one which supports the burning of bodies, the other which preventsit. This he showed both analytically and synthetically. His "empyreal," or ''fire-air," or oxygen, he obtained for his synthesis from acid of nitre, from saltpetre, from black oxide of manganese, and from several other bodies. After the discovery of this substance Scheele applied it to account for a great number of actions, and especially for its function in respiration and the growth of plants. He went through a long

series of actions, seemingly the most diverse in character, trying to bring them under one general law and making at every step the most acute and far-reaching observations and discovering new compounds and new reactions. Thus he incidentally made and described sulphuretted hydrogen gas, and he explained the chemical effect of light upon compounds of silver and other substances.

In 1778 he proposed a new method of making calomel and powder of algaroth. He also examined a mineral, molybdana nitens, which had been supposed to contain lead, but which he showed was quite distinet, and he got from it molybdic acid. He demonstrated in 1779 that plumbago consists almost solely of carbon, and he published a record of estimations of the amount of pure air, é.¢., of oxygen, contained in the atmosphere, which he had carried on daily during the entire year of 1778. In 1780 he showed that the acidity of sour milk was due to a peculiar acid, now ealled lactic acid ; and from milk sugar, by boiling it with nitric acid, he obtained mucic acid.

His next discovery, in 1781, was the com- position of tungsten, since called scheelite, which he found consisted of lime combined with a peculiar acid —tungstic acid. The follow- ing year he examined the mode of producing ether, and in 1783 discovered glycerin, the sweet principle of fats and oils. In 1782— 1783 appeared a research which—of all those Scheele conducted — exhibits his experimental genius at its very best. By a wonderful succession of experiments he showed that the colouring matter of Prussian blue could not be produced without the presence of a substance of the nature of an acid, to which was ultimately given the name of prussic acid. He showed how this body was vom- posed, described its properties and compounds, and mentioned its smell and taste, utterly unaware of its deadly character. Nothing but a study of Scheele's own memoir can give an adequate notion of the manner in which he attacked and solved a problem – so difficult and complicated as this was at the period in the history of chemistry when Scheele lived. In 1784-85-86 he returned to the subject with which he had begun his career, that of the vegetable acids, and described four new ones—citric, malic, oxalic, and galliec acids.

The preceding is a bare list of the more prominent of Scheele's discoveries, for it must be remembered that he was not merely the first to prepare these bodies, but that he made all the compounds of them possible at the time and explained the conditions under which he produced them. Notable as is the list, and of supreme im- portanee as are most of the bodies themselves, no conception ean be gathered from it of Scheele's immense power of experimental re- seareh,—a power that has seldom, if ever, been surpassed. Tis natural endowments were cultivated by unwearicd practice and un- divided attention; for scientific work was at once his occupation and his relaxation. To appreciate this fully his own account of his researches must be studied. It will thus be seen that his dis- coveries were not made at haphazard, but were the outcome of experiments carefully planned to substantiate the accuracy of theoretical views at which he had arrived. He thus saved himself unnecessary labour; his.experiments tell decisively on the question at issue, and he reached his conelusions by the shortest and simplest means. At the same time he left nothing in doubt if experiment would establish it; he grudged no labour to.make the truth indis- putable ; and he evidently never considered his work complete about any body unless he could both unmake and remake it. For him chemistry was both an

analytic and a synthetic science, and he shows this prominently in his researches on Prussian blue.

His accuracy, qualitative and quantitative,—considering his primitive apparatus, his want of assistanec, his place of residence, the undeveloped state of chemical and physical science, —was un- rivalled. The work he executed left hardly anything to be added to it: it was as thoroughly done as it was in the power of an all- conscientious man to do. The one aim of Scheele's life—and he never swerved from it—was the experimental discovery of the truth in nature. Like many other short-lived men of genius he compressed into his few years an amount of work of the greatest originality ; but how he managed to do it isa mystery to the less- gifted. What he might have achieved had he lived a little longer ean only be surmised; but it may be supposed that, under the newer theory of combustion to which he himself had unwittingly contributed so much, he would have made certainly no fewer and no less important discoveries than those which were the outcome of

its erroneous predecessor.

Scheele's papers appeared first in the Zransactions of the Swedish Academy of Sciences, in Crell's Veue Entdeckungen and Annalen, and in other periodicals. A list_of them is given in Fuchs's Repertorium der chemischen Litteratur, J ena, 1806-1808; in Reuss's Repertorium Commentationum, vol. iii, Gbttingen, 1803; and in Poggendorfi's Biographisch-literarisches Iandwérterbuch, Leipsic, 1863, They were collected and published in French, English, Latin, and German : Mémoires de Chymie, 2 vols., Paris, 1785-88; Chemical £ssaus, by Thomas Beddoes, 1 vol., London, 1786; Opuscula, translated by Sehafer, cditcd by Hebenstreit, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1788-89; Sdmmtliche Werke, edited by Hermbstiidt, 2 vols., Berlin, 1793. The Yreatise on Air and Fire appeared in German, Upsala and Leipsic, 1777, and again in 1782; in English, by J. R. Forster, London, 1780; in French, by Dietrich, Paris, 1781. (J. F.)

SCHEFFER, Ary (1795-1858), Dutch painter, who was born at Dort on 10th February 1795, represents the senti-

mental phase of the Romantic movement in France.

After the early death of his father, a poor painter, Ary was taken to Paris and placed in the studio of Guérin by

his mother, a woman of great energy and character. The

moment at which Scheffer left Guérin coincided with the He had little sympathy with the directions given to it by either of its most conspicuous representatives, Sigalon, Dela-

commencement of the Romantic movement.

croix, or Gericault, and made various tentative efforts—

Gaston de Foix (1824), Suliot Women (1827)—before.

he found his own path. Immediately after the exhibition of the last-named work he turned to Byron and Goethe, selecting from Faust a long series of subjects which had an extraordinary vogue. Of these, we may mention Margaret at her Wheel; Faust Doubting ; Margaret at the Sabbat ; Margaret Leaving Church ; the Garden Walk ; and lastly, perhaps the most popular of all, Margaret at the Well. The two Mignons appeared in 1836; and Francesca da Rimini, which is on the whole Scheffer's best work, belongs to the same period. He now turned to religious subjects: Christus Consolator (1836) was followed by Christus Remunerator, the Shepherds Led by the Star (1837), The Magi Laying Down their Crowns, Christ in the Garden of Olives, Christ Bearing his Cross, Christ Interred (1845), St Augustine and Monica (1846), after

which he ceased to exhibit, but, shut up in his studio, con—

tinued to produce much which was first seen by the outer world after his death, which took place at Argenteuil on the 15th June 1858. At the posthumous exhibition of his works there figured the Sorrows of the Earth, and the Angel Announcing the Resurrection, which he had left unfinished. Amongst his numerous portraits those of La Fayette, Béranger, Lamartine, and Marie Amélie were the most noteworthy. His reputation, much shaken

by this posthumous exhibition, was further undermined by the sale of the Paturle Gallery, which contained many of his most celebrated achievements ; the charm and facility of their composition could not save them from the con- demnation provoked by their poor and earthy colour and vapid sentiment. Scheffer, who married the widow of General Baudrand, was only made commander of the Legion of Honour in 1848,—that is, after he had wholly withdrawn from the Salon. His brother Henri, born at The Hague 27th September 1798, was also a fertile painter.

See Vitet's notice prefixed to Bingham's publication of works of A. Scheffer ; Etex, Ary Scheffer; Mrs Grote, Life of A. Scheffer ; Julius Meyer's Geschichte der franzdsischen Kunst.

SCHELDT, or Scuenpe (Fr. Escaut, Lat. Scaldis, O. Dutch Schoude or Schouwe), a river of north-west Europe, belonging for 75 miles of its course to France, 137 to Belgium, and 37 to the Netherlands. Rising at a height of 295 feet above the sea, in a small lake (7 square miles) at the old abbey of St Martin, near Catelet, in the French department of Aisne (Picardy), it becomes navigable by the junction of the St Quentin Canal, below Catelet, and passes by Cambray, Denain (where it receives the Selle), Valenciennes, at the mouth of the Rouelle, Condé, at the mouth of the Haisne or Henne, and Chateau l'Abbaye, at the mouth of the Scarpe. Entering Belgium between Mortagne and Hollain, it continues by Fontenoy, Tournay, and Oudenarde to Ghent, where it is joined by the Lys from the left, and by the canals which unite this town with Sas and Bruges. At Ghent the tide rises 3} feet and lasts for four hours; and it would ascend much farther were it not for sluices. But the river, instead of proceeding straight towards the sea, as it appears to have done perhaps as late as the time of Charlemagne, makes a great bend towards the east to Dendermonde (the mouth of the Dender) and Antwerp, whence it again turns north- west and loses itself in the estuaries among the islands of

Zealand. The whole of the lowlands to the north of Ghent are so intersected with canals, and the natural channels are so intermingled with those partially or entirely artificial, that it is impossible to discover with. certainty what has been the real history of the lower course of the Scheldt.! The Hont

or Western Scheldt, the principal estuary by which nearly all Belgium commerce is conveyed, was probably opened up by a storm in 1173 and about 1058 must have been a mere narrow creek.

“The Eastern Scheldt, which then received most of the

river, has gradually diminished in importance, and since the construction of the railway bridge across it between the mainland and South Beveland in 1867 has become completely obstructed with sands. At Antwerp the depth at high water is 49 feet.

Between 1648 and 1792 the Dutch closed the mouths of the Scheldt against foreign commerce. The emperor Joseph of Austria, at that time ruler of Antwerp, protested agaiust this action in 1788,. but in 1784, by the treaty of Fontainebleau, he recognized, in return for concessions of territory and 94 million florins, the right of the Dutch to adhere to the terms of the peace of Westphalia. In 1792 by conquest of Dumouriez, and in 1795 by treaty between France and Holland, the Scheldt was declared open. During the union of Holland and Belgium the question naturally lay in abeyance. When Belginm became independent (1839) Holland so far resumed her exclusive policy, but in 1863 the dues which she was allowed to levy by the treaty of separation were capitalized by Belgium paying 17,141,640 florins, a sum which was largely repaid to Belgium by twenty other countries who felt they had an interest in the free navigation of the Scheldt. Great Britain’s share was 8,782,320 francs.

See Vifquain, Des Voices Navigables en Belgique, 1842 ; Wauvermans, ‘Sur les Variations de ’Escaut au XVI. siécle,” in Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr. @ Anvers, vol.

i.; Raemdonck, ‘‘L’Hist. du Cours de PEscaut,” and Verstraete, “Cours Primitif de I’Escaut,” both in Bull. de la Soc. Belgede Géogr., 1878.

SCHELLING, Frrmeprich WinHetm JOSEPH VON (1775-1854), a distinguished German philosopher, was born on 27th January 1775 at Leonberg, a small town of Wiirtemberg, otherwise notable as scene of the early years of Kepler’s life. Through both parents he was connected with families of distinction in the Protestant church com- munity. His father, a

solidly trained scholar of Oriental languages, was called in 1777 as chaplain and professor to the cloister school of Bebenhausen, near Tiibingen, a pre- paratory seminary for intending students of theology at Ttibingen. Here Schelling received his earliest education and gave the first evidences of what afterwards so eminently distinguished him, remarkable precocity and quickness of intellect. From the Latin school at Niirtin- gen, whither he had been sent in his tenth year, he was returned in two years as having already acquired all the school could give him, and his father with regret was compelled to allow him at so abnormally young an age to study with the seminarists at Bebenhausen. In 1790, with special permission, for he was yet three years under the prescribed age, Schelling entered the theological seminary at Tiibingen, where he had as fellow students, contemporary as scholars though elder in years, Hegel and Hélderlin. The character and direction of his studies may be gathered sufficiently from the titles of the essays which for various purposes were accomplished during the five years of his student career. In 1792 he graduated in the philosophical faculty with a thesis Antiquissimi de prima malorum humanorum origine philosophematis explicands tentamen criticum et philosophicum; in 1793 he contri- buted to Paulus's Memorabilien a paper Ueber Mythus, historische Sagen, und Philosopheme der diltesten Welt; and in 1795 his thesis for his theological! degree was De Marcione Paullinarum epistolarum emendatore. The in- fluence of these early studies over his later literary career

1 Bylandt, Belpaire, Renard, and Wauvermans impugn, and Des Roches, Vifquain, Van Raemdonck and Verstraete maintain, the existence within historic times of a direct main-river channel from Ghent northward to the sea.

has been often exagverated, but doubtless they contributed to strengthen his natural tendency to dwell rather on the large historico-speculative problems than on the difficulties of abstract thinking. Before the date of his last essay noted above, a new and much more important influence had begun to operate on him. In conjunction with some of his fellow-students he wasin 1793 studying the Kantian system. 'The difficulties or imperfections of that system he claims soon to have perceived, and no doubt the per- ception was

quickened by acquaintance with the first of those writings in which Fichte put forward his amended form of the critical philosophy. The "' Review of Aineside- mus" and the tractate On the Notion of Wassenschaftslehre found in Schelling's mind most fruitful soil. With characteristic zeal and impetuosity Schelling had no sooner grasped the leading ideas of Fichte's new mode of treating philosophy than he threw together the thoughts suggested to him in the form of an essay, which appeared, under the title Veber die Méglichkeit einer Form der Philo- sophie iiberhaupt, towards the end of 1794. There was nothing original in the treatment, but it showed such power of appreciating the new ideas of the Fichtean method that it was hailed with cordial recognition by Fichte himself, and gave the author immediately a place in popular estimation as in the foremost rank of existing philosophical writers. The essay was followed up in 1795 by a more elaborate writing, Vom Ich als Princip der Philosophie, oder tiber das Unbedingte wm menschlichen Wissen, which, still remaining within the limits of the Fichtean idealism, yet exhibits unmistakable traces of a tendency to give the Fichtean method a more objective application, and to amalgamate with it Spinoza's more realistic view of things.

The reputation so quickly gained led soon to its natural result. In midsummer 1798 Schelling was called as extraordinary professor of philosophy to Jena, and thus stepped into the most active literary and philosophical circle of the time. The intervening period had not been unfruitful. While discharging for two years at Leipsic the duties of companion or tutorial guardian to two youths of noble family, Schelling had contributed various articles and reviews to Fichte and Niethammer's Journal, and had thrown himself with all his native impetuosity into the study of physical and medical science. From 1796 date the Briefe tiber Dogmatismus und Kriticismus, an admirably written critique of the ultimate issues of the Kantian system, which will still repay study ; from 1797 the essay entitled Neue Deduction des Naturrechts, which to some extent anticipated Fichte's treatment in the Grundlage des Naturrechts, published in 1796, but not before Schelling's essay had been received by the editors of the Journal. The reviews of current philosophical literature were afterwards collected, and with needful omissions and corrections appeared under the title " Ab- handlungen zur Erlauterung des Idealismus der Wissen- schaftslehre" in Schelling's Philos. Schriften, vol. 1., 1809. The studies of

physical science bore rapid fruit in the Ldeen zu einer Philosophie der Natur, 1797, and the treatise Von der Weltseele, 1798, the drift of which will be noted later.

Schelling's professoriate in Jena lasted till the early part of 1803. His lectures were extraordinarily attrac- tive; his productive powers were at their best; and the circumstances of his surroundings developed forcibly the good and evil qualities of his character. Of his writings during this period a merely chronological notice will mean- while suffice. In 1799 appeared the Lirster Entwurf eines Systems der Naturphilosophie, with an independent and sub- sequent Hinleitung ; in 1800 the System des transcenden- talen Idealismus, in form one of the most finished, in substauce one of the most satisfactory of his works; in

the same year, in the Zeitschrift fiir spekulative Physik, edited by him, "Allgemeine Deduction des dynamischen Processes"; and in 1801 the Darstellung meines Systems der Philosophie; in 1802, in the Meue Zettschr. fiir spek. Physik, the '"Fernere Darstellungen aus dem System der Philo- sophie"; also in 1802 the dialogue Bruno and the excellently written Vorlesungen tiber die Methode des akademischen Studiums. In conjunction with Hegel, who in 1801 at Schelling's invitation had come to Jena, he edited the Kritisches Journal fiir Philosophie, the greater part of which was written by Hegel. Regarding the authorship of certain articles in the volume and a half of this Journal a discussion of no great significance has arisen, concerning which perhaps the best statement is that by Schelling's son in the preface to vol. v. of the Sdmmtliche Werke, Abth. i.

The philosophical renown of Jena reached its culminat- ing point during the years of Schelling's residence there, in no small measure through the imposing force of his character and teaching. Recognized as of the first rank among living thinkers he was received with every mark of distinction, and his intellectual sympathies soon united him closely with some of the most active literary tenden- cies of the time. With Goethe, who viewed with interest and appreciation the poetical fashion of treating fact characteristic of the Naturphilosophie, he continued on excellent terms, while on the other hand he was repelled by Schiller's less expansive disposition, and failed

alto- gether to understand the lofty ethical idealism that animated his work. By the representatives of the Romantic school, then in the height of their fervour and beginning their downward course, he was hailed as a most potent ally, and quickly became par excellence the philo- sopher of the Romantic type. The Schlegels and their friends, who had found at least one fundamental prin- ciple of Romantic strain in Fichte, had begun to be dis- satisfied with the cold and abstract fashion of viewing nature that seemed necessarily to follow from the notion of the Wrssenschaftslehre, and at the same time the deep- seated antagonism of character between Fichte and the impetuous litterateurs of the Romantic school was begin- ning to be felt. In Schelling, essentially a self-conscious genius, eager and rash, yet with undeniable power, they hailed a personality of the true Romantic type, and in his philosophy a mode of conceiving nature adequate to the needs of poetic treatment. During the Jena period the closest union obtained between Schelling and those who either at Jena or at Berlin carried on warfare for the Romantic idea. With August Wilhelm Schlegel and his gifted wife Caroline, herself the embodiment of the Romantic spirit, Schelling's relations were of the most intimate kind. Personal acquaintance made at Dresden before Schelling began his professorial career at Jena rapidly developed into a warm friendship, to which circum- stances soon gave a new and heightened colour. Caroline Schlegel, a woman of remarkable receptive and apprecia- tive power, emotional to excess, and full of the ardent ill- balanced sympathies that constituted the Romantic tone, felt for Schelling unbounded admiration. In him she found the philosophic view which gave completeness and consistency to the tumultuous literary and personal feel- ings that animated her, and she was not less attracted by the dominating force of his personal character. It is pro- bable that in the early stages of their friendship a future marriage between Schelling and Caroline's young daughter, Auguste Bohmer, was, if not definitely understood, yet vaguely contemplated by both, and that in consequence neither was fully aware of the nature of the feelings springing up between them. 'The untimely death of Auguste in the summer of 1800, a death in which Schel- ling's rash confidence in his medical knowledge was unfer-

tunately involved, while a severe blow to both, drew them much more closely together, and in the following year, A. W. Schlegel having removed to Berlin, and Caroline remaining in Jena, affairs so developed themselves that quietly, amicably, and in apparently the most friendly manner, a divorce was arranged and carried to its comple- tion in the early summer of 1803. On the 2d June of the same year Schelling and Caroline, after a visit to the former's father, were married, and with the marriage Schelling's life at Jena came to anend. It was full time, for Schelling's undoubtedly overweening self-confidence and most arrogant mode of criticism had involved him in a series of virulent disputes and quarrels at Jena, the details of which are in themselves of little or no interest, but are valuable as illustrations of the evil qualities in Schelling's nature which deface much of his philosophic work. 'The boiling fervour which the Romanticists prized is deplorably ineffective in the clear cold atmosphere of speculation.

A fresh field was found in the newly-constituted uni- versity of Wiirzburg, to which he was called in September 1803 as professor of "Naturphilosophie," and where he remained till April 1806, when the Napoleonic conquests compelled a change. The published writings of this period (Philosophie und Religion, 1804, and Ueber das Ver- hiiltniss des Realen und Idealen in der Natur, 1806), and still more the unpublished draft of his lectures as con- tinued in volumes v. and vi. of the Sdimmtliche Werke, exhibit an important internal change in his philosophic views, a change which was accentuated by the open breach on the one hand with Fichte and on the other hand with Hegel. Schelling's little pamphlet Darlegung des wahren Verhiiltnisses der Naturphilosophie zur verbesserten FMicht- ischen Lehre was the natural sequel to the difference which had brought the correspondence of the former friends to a close in 1803, and to Fichte's open condemnation in the Grundztige d. gegenwirt. Zeitalters. Hegel's preface to the Phiinomenologie des Geistes was in like manner the sequel to the severe treatment which in his Jena lectures he had bestowed on the emptiness of the Schellingian method, and with the appearance of that work correspond- ence and friendship between the two ceased, and- in Schelling's mind there remained a deeply rooted sense of injury and injustice.

The Wirzburg professoriate had not been without its inner trials. Schelling had many enemies, and his irre- concilable and lofty tone of dealing with them only increased the virulence of their attacks. He embroiled himself with his colleagues and with the Government, so that it was doubtless with a sense of relief that he found external events bring his tenure of the chair to a close. In Munich, to which with his wife he removed in 1806, he found a long and quiet residence. A position as state official, at first as associate of the academy of sciences and secretary of the academy of arts, afterwards as secretary of the philosophical section of the academy of sciences, gave him ease and leisure. Without resigning his official position he lectured for a short time at Stutt- gart, and during seven years at Erlangen (1820-27). In 1809 Caroline died, and three years later Schelling married one of her closest, most attached friends, Pauline Gotter, in whom he found a true and faithful companion.

During the long stay at Munich (1806-1841) Schel- ling's literary activity seemed gradually to come to a standstill. The "Aphorisms on Naturphilosophie" con- tained in the Jahriiicher der Medicin als Wissenschaft (1806-8) are for the most part extracts from the Wiirz- burg lectures; and the Denkmal der Schrift von den gottlichen Dingen des Herrn Jacobi was drawn forth by the special incident of Jacobi's work. The only writing

of significance is the " Philosophische Untersuchungen tiber das Wesen der menschlichen Freiheit," which appeared in the Philosophische Schriften, vol. i. (1809), and which carries out, with increasing tendency to mysticism, the thoughts of the previous work, Philosophie und Religron. In 1815 appeared the tract Ueber die Gottheiten zu Samo- thrake, ostensibly a portion of the great work, Die Weltalter, on which Schelling was understood to be engaged, a work frequently announced as ready for publication, but of which no great part was ever written. Probably it was the overpowering strength and influence of the Hegelian system that constrained Schelling to so long a silence, for it was only in 1834, after the death of Hegel, that, in a preface to a translation by H. Beckers of a work by Cousin, he gave public utterance to the antagonism in which he stood to the Hegelian and to his

own earlier conceptions of philosophy. The antagonism certainly was not then a new fact; the Erlangen lectures on the history of philosophy (Stimmt. Werke, x. 124-5) of 1822 express the same in a pointed fashion, and Schelling had already begun the treatment of mythology and religion which in his view constituted the true positive complement to the negative of logical or speculative philosophy. Public attention, which had been from time to time drawn to Schelling's prolonged silence, was powerfully attracted by these vague hints of a new system which promised something more positive, as regards religion in particular, than the apparent results of Hegel's teaching. For the appearance of the critical writings of Strauss, Feuerbach, and Bauer, and the evident disunion in the Hegelian school itself, had alienated the sympathies of many from the then dominant philosophy. In Berlin particularly, the headquarters of the Hegelians, the desire found expression to obtain officially from Schelling a treatment of the new system which he was understood to have in reserve. The realization of the desire did not come about till 1841, when the appointment of Schelling as Prussian privy councillor and member of the Berlin Academy, gave him the right, a right he was requested to exercise, to deliver lectures in the university. The opening lecture of his course was listened to by a large and most appreciative audience ; and thus, in the evening of his career, Schelling found himself, as often before, the centre of attraction in the world of philosophy. The enmity of his old foe H. E. G. Paulus, sharpened by Schelling's apparent success, led to the surreptitious publication of a verbatim report of the lectures on the philosophy of revelation, and, as Schelling did not succeed in obtaining legal condemnation and suppression of this piracy, he in 1845 ceased the delivery of any public courses. No authentic information as to the nature of the new positive philosophy was obtained till after his death in 1854, when his sons began the issue of

his collected writings with the four volumes of Berlin

lectures :—vol. i., Introduction to the Philosophy of Mytho- logy (1856) ; ii., Philosophy of Mythology (1857); iti. and iv., Philosophy of Revelation (1858).

Whatever judgment one may form of the total worth of Schelling as a philosopher, his place in the history of that important move- ment called

generally German philosophy is unmistakable and assured. It happened to him, as he himself claimed, to turn a page in the history of thought, and one eannot ignore the actual advance upon his predecessor achieved by him or the brilliant fertility of the genius by which that achievement was accomplished. On the other hand it isnot to be denied that Schelling, to whom an unusually long period of activity was accorded, nowhere succeeds in attaining the rounded completeness of scientific system. His philosophical writings, extended over more than half a century, lie before us, not as parts of one whole, but as the successive maili- festations of a restless highly endowed spirit, striving continuously but unsuccessfully after a solution of its own problems. Such unity as they possess is a unity of tendency and endeavour ; they are not parts of a whole, and in some respects the final form they assumed is the least satisfactory of all. Hence it has come about

that Schelling remains for the philosophic student but a moment of historical value in the development of thought, and that his works have for the most part ceased now to have more than historic interest. Throughout his thinking bears the painful impress of hurry, incompleteness, and spasmodic striving after an ideal which could only be attained by patient, laborious, and methodic effort. Brilliant contributions there are without doubt to the evolution of a philosophic idea, but no systematic fusion of all into a whole. It is not unfair to connect the apparent failings of Schelling's philosophizing with the very nature of the thinker and with the historical accidents of his career. In the writ- ings of his early manhood, for example, more particularly those making up Naturphilosophie, one finds in painful abundance the evidences of hastily-acquired knowledge, impatience of the hard labour of minute thought, over-confidence in the force of individual genius, and desire instantaneously to present even in crudest fashion the newest idea that has dawned upon the thinker. Schelling was prematurely thrust into the position of a foremost productive thinker; and when the lengthened period of quiet meditation was at last forced upon him there unfortunately lay before him a system which achieved what had dimly been involved in his ardent and impetuous desires. It is not possible to acquit Schelling of a certain disingenuousness in regard to the Hegelian

philosophy ; and if we claim for him perfect disinterestedness of view we can do so only by imposing on him the severer condem- nation of deficient insight.

It was a natural concomitant of this continuous hurry under which Schelling's successive efforts at constructive work were carried out that he should have been found at all stages supporting himself by calling to his aid the forms of some other system. The successive phases of his development might without injustice be characterized by reference to these external supports. Thus Fichte, Spinoza, Jakob Boehme and the Mystics, and finally, the great Greek thinkers with their Neoplatonic, Gnostic, and Scholastic commen- tators, give respectively colouring to particular works in which Schelling unfolds himself. Atthe same time it would be unjust to represent Schelling as merely borrowing from these external sources, There must be allowed to him genuine philosophic spirit and no small measure of philosophic insight. Of the philosophic affatus he was in no want; and it might be fairly added that, under all the differences of exposition which seem to constitute so many differing Schellingian systems, there is one and the same philo- sophie effort and spirit. But what Schelling did want was power to work out scientifically, methodically, the ideas with which his spirit was filled and mastered. Hence he could ounly find expression for himself in forms of this or that earlier philosophy, and hence too the frequent formlessness of his own thought, the tendency to relapse into mere impatient despair of ever finding an adequate vehicle for transmitting thouglit.

It is thus, moreover, a matter of indifference how one distributes or classifies the several forms and periods of Schelling's philosophic activity. Whether one adopts as basis the external form, 7.e., the foreign mode of speculation laid under contribution, or endeavours to adhere closely to inner differences of view, the result is very niuch the same. There is one line of speculative thought, in the development of which inevitable problems call for new methods of handling, while the results only in part can claim to have a place accorded to them in the history of philosophy. It is fair in dealing with Schelling's development to take into account the indications of his own opinion regarding its more significant momenta. In his own view the turning points seem to have been —(1) the transition from Fichte's

method to the more objective conception of nature,—the advance, in other words, to Natur- philosophie ; (2) the definite formulation of that which implicitly, as Schelling claims, was involved in the idea of Naturphilosophie, viz., the thought of the identical, indifferent, absolute substratum of both nature and spirit, the advance to Identitétsvhilosophic ; (3) the opposition of negative and positive philosophy, an opposi- tion which is the theme of the Berlin lectures, but the germs of which may be traced back to 1804, and of which more than the germs are found in the work on freedom of 1809. Only what falls under the first and second of the divisions so indicated can be said to have discharged a function in developing philosophy ; only so much constitutes Schelling's philosophy proper. A very brief ee of the characteristic features of the three studia must here suffice.

(1) Naturphilosophie.—The Fichtean method had striven to exhibit the whole structure of reality as the necessary implication of self-consciousness. The fundamental features of knowledge, whether as activity or as sum of apprehended fact, and of conduct had been deduced as elements necessary in the attainment of self- consciousness. Fichtean idealism therefore at once stood out negatively, as abolishing the dogmatic conception of the two real worlds, subject and object, by whose interaction cognition and practice arise, and as amending the critical idea which retained with | dangerous caution too many fragments of dogmatism ; positively, as insisting on the unity of philosophical interpretation

and as supplying a key to the form or method by whicli a completed philosophic system might be constructed. Butthe Fichtean teach- ing appeared on the one hand to identify too closely the ultimate ground of the universe of rational conception with the finite, indi- vidual spirit, and on the other hand to endanger the reality of the world of nature by regarding it too much after the fashion of sub- jective idealism, as mere moment, though necessitated, in the existence of the finite thinking mind. It was almost a natural consequence that Fichte never succeeded in amalgamating with his own system the esthetic view of nature to which the Kritik of Judgment had pointed as an essential component in any complete philosophy. :

From Fichte’s position Schelling started. From Fichte he derived the ideal of a completed whole of philosophic conception ; from Fichte he derived the formal method to which for the most part he continued true. The earliest writings tended gradually towards the first important advance. Nature must not be con- ceived as merely abstract limit to the infinite striving of spirit, as a mere series of necessary thoughts for mind. It must be that and more than that. It must have reality for itself, a reality which stands in no conflict with its ideal character, a reality the inner structure of which is ideal, a reality the root and spring of which is spirit. Nature as the sum of that which is objective, intelligence as the complex of all the activities making up self- consciousness, appear thus as equally real, as alike exhibiting ideal structure, as parallel with one another. The philosophy of nature and transcendental philosophy are the two complementary portions of philosophy as a whole.

Animated with this new conception Schelling made his hurried rush to Naturphilosophie, and with the aid of Kant and of frag- mentary knowledge of contemporary scientific movements, threw off in quick succession the Zdeen, the Weltseele, and the Erster Entwurf. Naturphilosophie, which thus became an historical fact, has had scant mercy at the hands of modern science; and un- doubtedly there is much in it, even in that for which Schelling alone is responsible, for which only contempt can be our fecling. Schelling, one must say, had neither the strength of thinking nor the acquired knowledge necessary to hold the balance between the abstract treatment of cosmological notions and the conercte researches of special science. His efforts after a construction of natural reality are bad in themselves and gave rise to a wearisome flood of perfectly useless physical speculation. Yet it would be unjust to ignore the many brilliant and sometimes valuable thoughts that are scattered throughout the writings on Naturphilosophie,— thoughts to which Schelling himself is but too frequently untrue. Regarded merely as a criticism of the notions with which scientific interpretation proceeds, these writings have still importance and inight have achieved more had they been untainted by the tendency to hasty, ill-considered, @ priort anticipations of nature.

Nature, as having reality for itself, forms one conipleted whole. Its manifoldness is not then to be taken as excluding its funda- mental unity;

the divisions which our ordinary perception and thought introduce into it have not absolute validity, but are to be interpreted as the outcome of the single formative energy or: complex of forces which is the inner aspect, the soul of nature. Such inner of nature we are in a position to apprehend and constructively to exhibit to oursclves in the successive forms whicli its development assumes, for it is the same spirit, though uncon- scious, of which we become aware in self-cousciousness. It is the realization of spirit. Nor is the variety of its forms imposed upon it from without; there is neither external teleology in nature, nor mechanism in the narrower sensc. Nature is a whole and forms itself ; within its range we are to look for no other than natural explanations. The function of Naturphilosophie is to exhibit the ideal as springing from the real, not to deduce the real from the ideal. Tle incessant change which experience brings before us, taken in conjunction with the thought of unity in productive force of nature, leads to the all-important conception of the duality, the polar opposition through which nature expresses itself in its varied products. The dynamical series of stages in nature, the forms in which the ideal structure of nature is realized, are matter, as the equilibrium of the fundamental expansive and contractive forces ; light, with its subordinate processes, magnetism, electricity, and chemical action; organism, with its component phases of reproduc- tion, irritability, and sensibility.

Just as nature exhibits to us the series of dynamical stages of processes by which spirit struggles towards consciousness of itself, so the world of intelligence and practice, tlie world of mind, exhibits the series of stages through which self-consciousness with its inevitable oppositions and reconciliations develops in its idcal form. The theoretical side of inner nature in its successive grades from sensation to the highest form of spirit, the abstracting reason which emphasizes the difference of subjective and objective, leaves

1 The briefest and best account in Schelling himself of Naturphilosophie is that contained in the Linleitung zu dem Erster Entwurf (S. W., iii.). The fullest and most lucid statement of Naturphilosophie is that given by K. Fischer in his Gesch. d. n. Phil., vi. 483-692.

recognized by the latter as the reconciler of idealism and realism.

an unsolved problem which receives satisfaction only in the prac- tical, the individualizing activity. The practical, again, taken in

conjunction with the theoretical, forces on the question of the

reconciliation between the free conscious organization of thought and the apparently necessitated and unconscious mechanism of the

objective world. In the notion of a teleological connexion and in that which for spirit is its subjective expression, viz., art and genius, the subjective and objective find their point of union.

(2) Nature and spirit, Naturphilosophie and J'ranscendentalphito- sophie, thus stand as two relatively complete, but complementary parts of the whole. It was impossible for Schelling, the animating principle of whose thought was ever the reconciliation of differences,

not to take and to take speedily the stcp towards the conception of

the uniting basis of which nature and spirit are manifestations, forms, or consequences. For this common basis, however, he did not succeed at first in finding any other than the merely negative expression of indifference. The identity, the absolute, which

underlay all difference, all the relative, is to be characterized –

simply as neutrum, as absolute undifferentiated self-equivalence. It lay in the very nature of this thought that Spinoza should now offer himself to Schelling as the thinker whose form of presentation came nearest to his new problem. The Darstellung meines Systems, and the more expanded and more careful treatment contained in the lectures on System der gesummten Philosophie und der Natur- philosophie insbesondere given in Wiirzburg, 1804 (published only in the Samméliche Werke, vol. vi. p. 181-576), are thoroughly Spinozistic in form, and to a large extent in substance. They are not without value, indeed, as extended commentary on Spinoza. With all his efforts, Schelling does not succeed in bringing his conceptions of nature and

spirit into any vital connexion with the primal identity, the absolute indiffcrence ofreason, No true solution could be achieved by resort to the mere absence of distinguishing, differencing feature. The absolute was left with no other function than that of removing all the differences on which thought turns. The criticisms of Fichte, and more particularly of Hegel (in the “Vorrede” to the Phdnomenologie des Geistes), point to the fatal defect in the conception of the absolute as mere featureless identity.

(3) Along two distinct lines Schelling is to be found in all his later writings striving to amend the conception, to which he re- inained true, of absolute reason as the ultimate ground of reality. It was necessary, in the first place, to give to this absolute a char- acter, to make of it something more than empty sameness ; it was necessary, in the second place, to clear up in some way the relation in which the actuality or apparent actuality of nature and spirit stood to the ultimate real. Schelling had already (in the System der ges. Phil.) begun to endeavour after an amalgamation of the Spinozistic conception of substance with the Platonic view of an ideal realm, and to find therein the means of enriching the bare- ness of absolute reason. In Bruno, and in Philos. w. Religion, the saine thought finds expression. In the realm of ideas the abso- lute finds itself, has its own nature over against itself as objective over against subjective, and thus is in the way of overcoming its abstractness, of becoming concrete. This conception of a differ- ence, of an internal structure in the absolute, finds other and not less obscure expressions in the mystical contributions of the Menschliche Fretheit and in the scholastic speculations of the Berlin lectures on mythology. At the same time it connects itself with the second problem, how to attain in conjunction with the abstractly rational character of the absolute an explanation of actuality. Things,—nature and spirit,—have an actual being. They exist not mercly as logical consequence or development of the absolute, but have a stubbornness of being in them, an antagonistic feature which in all times philosophers have been driven to recog- nize, and which they have described in varied fashion. The actu- ality of things is a defection from the absolute, and their existence compels a reconsideration of our conception of God. There must be recognized in God as a completed actuality, a dim, obscure ground or basis, which can only be described as not yet being, but as con- taining in itself the impulse to externalization, to existence. It is through this ground of Being in God Himsclf that we must

find explanation of that independence which things assert over against God. And it is easy to sce how from this position Schclling was led on to the further statements that not in the rational conception of God is an explanation of cxistence to be found, nay, that all rational conception extends but to the form, and touches not the real, that God is to be conceived as act, as will, as something over and above the rational conception of the divine. Hence the stress laid on will as the realizing factor, in opposition to thought, a view through which Schelling connects hiniself with Schopenhaucr and Von Hartmann, and on the ground of which he has been Finally, then, there emerges the opposition of negative, ¢.¢c., merely rational philosophy, and positive, of which the content is the real evolution of the divine as it has taken place in fact and in history and as it is recorded in the varied mythologies and religions of man- kind. Not much satisfaction can' be felt with the exposition of either as it appears in the voluines of Berlin lectures.

Schelling''s works were collected and published by his sons, in 14 vols., 1856-61. For the life good materials are to be found in the three vols., dws Schelling's Leben in Briefen, 1869-70, in which a biographie sketch of the philosopher's early life is given by his son, and in Waitz, Karoline, 2 vols.,1871 An interesting little work is Klaiber, Hélderlin, Hegel, u. Schelling in ihren Schwdbischen Jugend- jahren, 1877. The biography in Kuno Fiseher's volume is complete and admir- able. Apart from the expositions in the larger histories of modern philosophy, in Michelet, Erdmann, Willm, and Kuno Fischer, and in Haym's Romantische Schule, valuable studies are—Rosenkranz, Schelling, 1843; Noack, Schelling und die Philosophie der Romantik, 2 vols., 1859; Frantz, Schelling's positive Philosophie, 3 vols., 1879-80; Watson, Schelling's Transcendental Idealism, 1882. (R. AD.) .

SCHEMNITZ (Hung. Selmeczbénya), a mining town in the Cis-Danubian county of Hont, Huagary, lies about 65 miles north from Budapest, in 48° 27' N. lat., 18° 52' E. long., on an elevated site, 2300 feet above the level of the sea. Its institutions include a Roman Catholic and a Protestant gymnasium, a high school for girls, a court of

justice, a hospital, and several benevolent and scientific

societies. Schemnitz owes its chief importance to the fact of its being the mining centre of the kingdom. Con- nected with this local industry are important Government institutions, such as various mining superintendencies, a chemical analytical laboratory, and an excellent academy of mining and forestry (with a meteorological observa- tory and a remarkable collection of minerals), attended by pupils from all countries of Europe and also from America, ‘The mines are chiefly the property of the state and the corporation; the average yield annually is— gold, 232 ib; silver, 45,000 ib; lead, 11,600 cwt.; copper, 180 cwt. Iron, arsenic, &c., to the value of about £150,000 are also produced. There are also flourishing potteries where well-known tobacco pipes are manufactured. With Schemnitz is conjoined the town of Bélabanya ; their united population in 1884 was 15,265, chiefly Slovaks, of whom nearly 3000 were engaged in mining.

Schemnitz, which was already noted for its mines in the time of the Romans, has played considerable part in the history of Hungary. The archives of the town contain many interesting documents. ‘After the Tartar invasion in the 12th century it was colonized by Germans, but had become quite Slavonized before the academy of mining was founded by Maria Theresa (1760). The school of forestry was added in 1809. The corporation is wealthy, having received special commercial privileges from the crown in considera- tion of pecuniary aid afforded in times of emergency.

SCHENECTADY, a city of the United States, county seat of Schenectady county, New York, in the valley of the Mohawk river, 17 miles by rail north-west of Albany, with which it is also connected by the Erie Canal. It is best known as the seat of Union College, an institution founded in 1795 by a union of several religious sects, and now possessed of large endowments, extensive buildings, and a valuable library, and along with the Albany medical and law schools, &c., forming the Union University. Besides manufacturing locomotives, iron bridges, and agricultural implements, Schenectady has shawl, hosiery, carriage, and varnish factories. ‘The population was 9579 in 1860, 11,026 in 1870, and 13,655 in 1880.

Occupying the site of one of the council grounds of the Mohawks, Schenectady was chosen as a Dutch trading post in 1620, was chartered in 1684, and became a borough in 1765 and a city in 1798. In 1691 it was burned by the French and Indians, and sixty-three of its inhabitants massacred.

SCHETKY, Joun ALEXANDER (1785-1824), a younger brother of J. C. Schetky (see below), studied medicine in Edinburgh university and drawing in the Trustees' Academy. As a military surgeon he served with distinc- tion under Lord Beresford in Portugal. He contributed excellent works to the exhibitions of the Royal Academy and of the Water-Colour Society, and executed some of the illustrations in Sir W. Scott's Provincial Antiquities. He died at Cape Coast Castle, 5th September 1824, when preparing to follow Mungo Park's route of exploration.

SCHETKY, Joun Curisrtan (1778-1874), marine painter, descended from an old Transylvanian family, was born in Edinburgh on the 11th of August 1778. He studied art under Alexander Nasmyth, and after having

travelled on the Continent he settled in Oxford, and taught for six years as a drawing-master. In 1808 he obtained a post in the military college, Great Marlow, and three years later he received a congenial appointment as professor of drawing in the naval college, Portsmouth, where he had ample opportunities for the study of his favourite marine subjects. From 1836 to 1855 he held a similar professorship in the military college, Addiscombe. To the Royal Academy exhibitions he contributed at intervals from 1805 to 1872, and he was represented at the Westminster Hall competition of 1847 by a large oil- painting of the Battle of La Hogue. He was marine painter to George IV., William IV., and Queen Victoria. Among his published works are the illustrations to Lord John Manners's Cruise tn Scotch Waters, and a volume of photographs from his. pictures and drawings issued in 1867 under the title of Veterans of the Sea. He died in London, on the 28th of January 1874.

One of his best works, the Loss of the Royal George, painted in 1840, is in the National Gallery, London, and the United Scrvice

Club possesses another important marine subjeet from his brush. His memoir by his daughter was published in 1877.

SCHEVENINGEN, a fishing village and watering-place in Holland, on the North Sea, about two miles from The Hague, with which it is connected by a shaded avenue with a tramway. ‘There is a fine sandy beach below the line of dunes that separate the village from the sea. The terrace crowning the dunes serves as a promenade. Popu- lation in 1879, 7713. Scheveningen has a considerable herring fleet. In a naval engagement off the coast in 1673 De Ruyter defeated the combined forces of the French and English.

SCHIAVONETTI, Luier (1765-1810), engraver, was born at Bassano in Venetia, on April 1, 1765. After having studied art for several years he was employed by Testolini, an engraver of very indifferent abilities, to execute imitations of Bartolozzi’s works, which he passed off as his own. In 1790 Testolini was invited by Bartolozzi to join him in England, and, it having been discovered that Scliiavonetti, who accompanied him, had executed the plates in question, he was taken by Bartolozzi into his employment, and, having greatly improved under his instruction, he became an eminent engraver in both the line and the dot manner, “ developing an individual style which united grandeur with grace, boldness, draughtsman- like power, and intelligence with executive delicacy and finish.” Ainong his early works are four plates of subjects from the French Revolution, after Benazech. He also produced a Mater Dolorosa after Vandyck, and Michel- angelo’s cartoon of the Surprise of the Soldiers on the Banks of the Arno. From 1805 to 1808 he was engaged in etching Blake’s designs to Blair’s Grave, which, with a portrait of the artist engraved by Schiavonetti after T. Phillips, R.A., were published in the last-named year. The etching of Stothard’s Canterbury Pilgrims was one of his latest works, and on his death on the 7th of June 1810 the plate was taken up by his brother Niccolo, and finally completed by James Heath.

SCHIEDAM, a town of the Netherlands, in the pro- vince of South Holland, not far from the confluence of the Schie with the Maas, 3 miles by rail from Rotterdam. It is best known as the seat of a great gin manufacture, which,

carried on in more than two hundred distilleries, gives employment besides to malt-factories, cooperages, and cork- cutting establishments, and supplies grain refuse enough to feed about 30,000 pigs. Other industries are ship-building, glass-blowing, and candle-moulding. Schiedam, which has recently been growing rapidly towards the south- west in the Nieuw-Frankenland, is not behind the larger of the Netherlands cities in the magnificence of its private

residences, but none of its public buildings are of much note. It is enough to mention the Groote or Jans-Kerk, with the tomb of Cornelis Haga, ambassador to Turkey, the old Roman Catholic church, the synagogue, the town- house, the exchange, the Musis Sacrum, the post office (Blaauwhuis), and a ruined castle (Huis te Riviere). The population of the commune increased from 9157 in 1811 to 12,360 in 1840, 21,103 in 1875, 23,035 in 1880, and 24,321 in 1884; the population of the town was 18,854 in 1870.

Schiedam, which first appears in a document of 1264, obtained privileges from Floris V. in 1275, and gradually acquired im- portance as a commereial town. In the 16th century it had a eon- siderable share in the herring fishery aud carried on salt-making, brick-making, and weaving, and began to turn its attention to dis- tilling. The town was flooded in 1775.

SCHIEFNER, Franz Anton (1817-1879), linguist, was born at Reval, in Russia, on the 18th July 1817. His father was a merchant who had emigrated from Bohemia at the end of last century. He received his education at the grammar school of his native place, where also his subsequent colleague, the celebrated naturalist Karl Ernst von Baer, had been brought up. He matricu- lated at St Petersburg as a law student in 1836, but while qualifying for this profession he pursued with keen in- terest the study of the classics, and subsequently devoted himself at Berlin, from 1840 to 1842, exclusively to Eastern languages. On his return to St Petersburg in 1843 he was employed in teaching the classics in the First Grammar School, and soon afterwards received a post in the Imperial Academy, where in 1852 the cultivation of the Tibetan language and literature was assigned to him as his special function. Simultaneously he held from 1860 to 1873 the professorship of classical languages in the Roman Catholic theological seminary. From 1854 till his death he was an

extraordinary member of the Imperial Academy. He died after a fortnight's illness on the 16th November 1879.

Schiefner made his mark in literary research in thrce directions. First, he contributed to the Memoirs and Bulletin of the St Petersburg Academy, and brought out independeutly, a number of valuable articles and larger publications on the language and literature of Tibet. He possessed also a remarkable acquaintanec with Mongolian, and when death overtook him had just finished a revision of the New Testament in that language with which the British and Foreign Bible Society had entrusted him. Further, he was one of the greatest authorities ou the philology and ethnology ofthe Finnic tribes. He edited and translated the great Finnic epic Kalevala; he arranged, eompleted, and brought out in twelve volumes the literary remains of Alexander Castrén, bearing on the languages of the Samoyedie tribes, the Koibal, Karagass, 'Tungusian, Buryat, Ostiak, and Kottic tongues, and prepared several valuable papers on Finnie mythology forthe Imperial Academy. In the third place, he made himself the exponent of recent investigations into the languages of the Caucasus, which, thanks to his lueid analyses, have now been placed within reaeh of European philologists. Thus he gave a full analysis of the Tush language, and in quick succes- sion, from Baron P. Uslar's investigations, comprehensive papers on the Awar, Ude, Abkhasian, Tchetehenz, Kasi- Kumiik, Htirkanian and Kiirinian languages. He had also eompletely mastered the Ossetie, and brought out a number of translations from that language, several of them accompanied by the original text. For many of his linguistical investigations he had, with as much tact as patience, availed himself of the presence in St Petersburg of natives (soldiers chiefly) of the distriets on the languages of whieh he happened to be engaged. The importance, however, of the vast mass of linguistical material thus opened up by him, and of the results to which his investigations led, has not yet been fully realized, except so far, perhaps, as his numerous con- tributions to our knowledge of Eastern fables are concerned, for which branch of literature he evinced throughout his works a keen appreciation.

With a rare philological acumen, which with equal facility grasped the morphological and idiomatie parts of a language, Schiefner eombined an indefatigable industry and a love of research which never flagged. He

visited England three times for purposes of research, —in 1863, 1867, and 1878,—when he endeared himself to all who were brought in contact with him by his modesty and _single- heartedness, his animated and spirited conversation, and his un- swerving devotion to his various literary pursuits.

SC H—SCH

The following list of his works has been drawn up from biographical notices which appeared in the Athenzwm for 24th January 1880, and in the Bulletin of the St Petersburg Academy, xxvi. pp. 30-44:—Bemerkungen zum Poley'schen Text des Devimahatmya, 1846; Beitradge zur Krittk des Bhartrihart aus Carngad- hara's Paddhati, 1847; (with A. Weber), Varia Lectiones ad Bohlenii editionem Bhartriharis sententiarum pertinentes, 1850; Ueber die logischen und grammat- ischen Werke des Tandjur, 1847; Ueber Indra's Donnerkeil, 1848 ; Nachirdge zu den von O. Béhilingk und J. Schmidt verfassten Verzeichnissen der auf Indien und Tibet beztigitchen Handschriften und Holzdrucke im astatischen Museum der k, Akademie der Wissenschaften, 1848; Hine tibettsche Lebensbeschreibung Cakya- munt's, 1848; Ueber das Werk "' Roya tcher rol pa," 1848-50; Tibetische Studien, 1851-64; Ueber eine eigenthiimliche Art der tibetischen Compostita, 1856 ; Veber Pluralbezeichnungen im Tibetischen, 1877; Ueber die Verschlechterungs-Perioden der Menschheit nach buddhistischer Anschauungsweise, 1851; Bericht tiber die neueste Biichersendung aus Peking, 1851; Das buddhistische Stitra der 42 Sdize aus dem Tibetischen tibersetzt, 1851; Ergdnzungen und Berichtigungen zu J. Schnvidt's Ausgabe des Dsanglun, 1852; Ueber das Werk ** Histoire de la vte de Hiouen-thsang," 1853; Bericht tiber die wissenschaftliche Thdtighkett des Herrn Professors Wassiljew, 1854; Uber die nepalischen, assamischen, und ceylonischen Miinzen des asiatischen Museums, 1854; Ein kleiner Beitrag zur mongoltschen Paldographie, 1856; Sprachliche Bedenken gegen das Mongolenthum der Skythen, 1856; Bericht tiber Prof. Wassiljew's Werk tiber den Buddhismus, 1856; Ueber die unter dem Namen 'Geschichte des Ardshi Bordshi Chan," bekannte mongolische Méarchensammlung, 1857; Carminis indici Vimalapracnotiara ratnamald versio tibetica, mit deutscher Uebersetzung, 1856; Buddhistische T'riglotte, 1859, Ueber ein indisches Krdhenorakel, 1859; Ueber die hohen Zahlen der Buddhisten, 1862; Jiischke's Bemithungen um eine Handschrift des Gesar, 1868; Térandihe de

doctrine buddhice in India propagatione narratio tibetica, 1868 (German, 1869); Veber einige morgenldindische Fassungen der Rhampstniisage, 1869 ; Zur buddhist- ischen Apokalyptik, 1874; Bharatz# responsa, ttb. et latine, 1874 ; Mahakaijdjana und Kénig Tchanda-pradjota, 1875; Indische Ktinstleranekdoten, 1875; Indische Erzadhlungen, 1876-77 (an English translation of these by W. R. 8. Ralston ap- peared in 1882); Ueber Vasubandhu's Gathdsangraha, 1878 ; Ueber eine tibetische Ulandschrift des India Louse, 1879; Ueber das Bonpo-Sétra, 1880; Zur Sampo- mythe, 1850; Kleine Bettrdge zur finnischen Mythologte, 1852; Zur ehstnischen Mythologte, 1854; Ueber den Mythengehali der Jinnischen Marchen, 1855; Ueber die Heldensagen der minussinischen Tataren, 1858 ; Heldensagen, &c., rhythmisch bear- beitet, 1859; Zum Mythus vom Weltuntergange, 1859; Ueber die ehstnische Sage vom Kalewi-poeg, 1860; Zur russischen Heldensage, 1861; Ueber Kalewa und die Kalewingen, 1862; Kalevala, deutsch in_rhythmischer Form, 1852; Ueber das Thier "tarvas" im finnischen Epos, 1848-49; Die Lieder der Woten, metrisch iibertragen, 1856; Ueber das Wort "'sampo" im jinnischen Epos, 1861; Versuch einer ostjakischen Sprachlehre, 1849-1856; Grammattk und Worterverzeichnisse der samojedischen Sprachen, 1854-1855; Grundztige einer tungustschen Sprachlehre, 1856; Versuch einer burjitischen Sprachlehre, 1857; Versuch einer koibalischen und karagassischen Sprachlehre, 1857; Versuch einer jeniset-ostjakischen und kottischen Sprachlehre, 1858; Das 13-monatliche Jahr und die Monatsnamen der sibirischen Volker, 1856; Ueber die Sprache der Jukagiren, 1859-71; Bettrage zur Kenniniss der tungusischen Mundarten, 1859; Tungusische Miscellen, 1874; Ueber die von G. von Maydell gesammelten tungusischen Sprachproben, 1874; A. Czeka- nowskt's tungusisches Wérterverzeichniss, 1877; Ueber sibtrische Eigenthumszeichen, 1855-1859; Kurze Charakteristik der Thuschsprache, 1854; Versuch uber die Thusch- sprache, 1856; Versuch tiber das Awarische, 1862; Ueber Baron Usiar's neuere linguistische Forschungen, 1863; Versuch tiber die Sprache der Uden, 1863; Aus- fiihrlicher Bericht tiber Baron Uslar's abchasische Studien, 1863 ; Tschetschenzische Studien, 1864; Ausfithrlicher Bericht tiber Baron Uslar's Kasikumiikische Studien, 1866; Iltirkanische Studien, 1871; Awarische Studien, 1872; Kérinische Studien, 1873; Awarische Texte, 1873; Ossetische Sprtichworter, 1862; Ossetische Texte, 1863; Zwei ossetische Thiermdrchen, 1864; Ossetische Sagen und Mdarchen, 1867.

SCHILLER, Jonann CuristopH Friepricn (1759- 1805), German dramatist and poet, was born at Marbach, in Wiirtemberg, on the 10th or 11th (probably 10th) November 1759. His grandfather and great-grandfather had been bakers in Bittenfeld, a village at the point where the Rems flows into the Neckar; and the family was probably descended from Jacob Georg Schiller, who was born in Grossheppach, another Swabian village, in 1587. Schiller's father, Johann Kaspar Schiller, who was about thirty-six years of age when his son was born, was a man of remarkable intelligence and energy. In 1749, after the War of the Austrian Succession, in which he had served as a surgeon in a Bavarian regiment of hussars, he went to visit a married sister at Marbach, a little town on the Neckar; and here, a few months after his arrival, he married Elizabeth Dorothea Kodweiss, a girl of seventeen, the daughter of the landlord of the inn in which he had a lodging. She had great sweetness and dignity of character, and exercised a strong influence over her husband, who, although essentially kind and thoroughly honourable, was apt to give way to a somewhat harsh and imperious temper. They had six children, of whom the eldest, Christophine, was born eight years after their marriage. Next came Schiller, and after him were born four daughters, of whom only two, Louisa and Nanette, survived infancy.

Until Schiller was four years of age his mother lived with her parents in Marbach, while his father served in the Wiirtemberg army, in which he gradually rose to the rank of major. In 1764 the elder Schiller was joined by his family at Lorch, a village on the eastern border of Wiirtem- berg, where he served for about three years as a recruiting officer. Afterwards he was transferred to Ludwigsburg,

adherent of the

and in 1775 he was made overseer of the plantations and nursery gardens at the Solitude, a country residence of the duke of Wiirtemberg, near Stuttgart. The duties of this position were congenial to the tastes of Major Schiller, and he became widely known asa high authority on the subjects connected with his daily work.

At Lorch Schiller had been taught by the chief clergy- man of the village, Pastor Moser, whose name he after- wards gave to one of the characters in Die Aduber. When the family settled in Ludwigsburg he was sent to the Latin school, which he attended for six years. He took a good place in the periodical examinations, and was much liked by his masters and fellow-pupils, for he was active, intelli- gent, and remarkable for the warmth and constancy of his affections. At a very early age he gave evidence of a talent for poetry, and it was carefully fostered by his mother, who was herself of a poetic temperament. His parents intended that he should become a clergyman, but this decision was abandoned at the request—practically by the order—of the duke of Wiirtemberg, who insisted on his being sent to the military academy, an institution which had been established at the Solitude for the training of youths for the military and civil services. Schiller entered this institution early in 1773, when he was between thirteen and fourteen years of age, and he remained in it until he was twenty-one. For some time he devoted himself to the study of jurisprudence, but the subject did not interest him, and in 1775, when a medical faculty was instituted at the academy, he was allowed to begin the study of medicine. In that year the academy was transferred from the Solitude to Stuttgart.

Schiller was often made wretched by the harsh and narrow discipline maintained at the academy, but it had no permanently injurious effect on his character. With several of his fellow-students he formed a lasting friend-ship, and in association with them, notwithstanding the vigilance of the inspectors, he was able to read many forbidden books, including some of the writings of Rousseau, Klopstock's Messiah, the early works of Goethe, translations of a few of Shakespeare's plays, and a German translation of Macpherson's rendering of the poems of Ossian. Under these influences he became an ardent school which was then protesting vehemently against traditional restrictions on indi- vidual freedom; and he contrived to make opportunities for the expression, in more or less crude dramas and poems, of his secret thoughts and aspirations. For about two years work of this kind was interrupted by the pres- sure of professional studies; but in the last year of his residence at the academy he resumed it with increased fervour. In this year he wrote the greater part of Due Réuber, the most striking passages of which he read to groups of admiring comrades.

On the 14th December 1780 Schiller was informed that he had been appointed medical officer to a grenadier regiment in Stuttgart, and he almost immediately began his new duties. He was not a very expert doctor, and he was too passionately devoted to literature to take much trouble to excel in a profession which he disliked. Dve Réuber was soon finished, and in July 1781 it was published at his own expense, some persons of his acquaintance having become security for the necessary amount. This famous play is ill-constructed, and contains much boyish extravagance, but it is also full of energy and revolutionary fervour, and it captivated the imagina- tion of many of Schiller's contemporaries. Harly in 1782 it was represented at the Mannheim theatre, and it was so warmly applauded that Schiller, who had stolen away from Stuttgart to see his play, began to think it might be possible for him to devote his time wholly to the work of

a dramatist. By and by he was persuaded to go again to Mannheim without leave; and for this offence, of which the duke of Wiirtemberg was informed, he was condemned to two weeks' arrest. Shortly afterwards he was per- emptorily forbidden to write books, or to hold communica- tion with persons who did not reside in Wirtemberg. This tyrannical order filled him with so much indignation that he resolved at all costs to secure freedom, and on the 17th September 1782, accompanied by his friend Streicher, a young musician, he fled from Stuttgart.

Schiller had now before him a time of much distress and anxiety. In the course of a few weeks he finished Fiesco, a play which he had begun at Stuttgart; but Dalberg, the director of the Mannheim theatre, declined to put it on the stage, and the unfortunate poet knew not how he was to obtain the means of living. At the same time it was thought probable that a request for his extradition might be addressed to the elector of the Palatinate. In this perplexity Schiller wrote to Frau von Wolzogen, a friend at Stuttgart, asking to be allowed to take refuge in her house at Bauerbach, a village in the Thuringian Forest, within two hours' walk of Meiningen. This request was granted, and at Bauerbach Schiller remained for nearly seven months, working chiefly at the play which he ultimately called Cabale und Ivebe and at Don Carlos.

In July 1783 Schiller returned to Mannheim, and this time he obtained from Dalberg a definite appointment as dramatic poet of the Mannheim theatre. esco, which was soon represented, was received rather coldly, but for this disappointment Schiller was amply compensated by the admiration excited by Cabale und Liebe. These two plays express essentially the same mood as that which prevails in Die Rduber, but they indicate a striking advance in the mastery of dramatic methods. This is especially true of Cabale und Lvebe, which still ranks as one of the most effective acting plays in German literature.

In addition to his dramas Schiller wrote a good many lyrical poems, both before and during his residence at Mannheim. Few of these pieces rise to the level of his early plays. For the most part they are excessively crude in sentiment and style, while in some his ideas are so vague as to be barely intelligible. Perhaps the best of them are the poems entitled Die ILreundschaft and Rousseau, both of which have the merit of expressing thoughts and feelings that were within the range of the writer's personal experience.

Schiller's engagement with Dalberg was cancelled in August 1784, and, as he had now a heavy burden of debt, he thought for some time of resuming the practice of his profession, but in the end he decided to try whether he could not improve his circumstances by issuing a periodi- cal, Thalia, to be written wholly by himself. This plan he accomplished, the first number being published in the spring of 1785. It contained the first act of Don Carlos and a paper on "The Theatre as a Moral Institution," which he had read on the occasion of his being admitted a member of the German Society, a literary body in Mannheim, of which the elector palatine was the patron.

Meanwhile, he had been corresponding with four.

admirers who had written from Leipsic to thank him for the pleasure they had derived from his writings. These friends were C. G. Kérner, L. F. Huber, and Minna and Dora Stock. Weary of incessant struggle, Schiller pro- posed to visit them; and K6rner, the leading member of the party, not only encouraged him in this design, but readily lent him money. Accordingly, in April 1785 Schiller left Mannheim, and for some months he

lived at Gohlis, a village in the Rosenthal, near Leipsic. In the summer of the same year Korner and Minna Stock were

married, and settled in Dresden, taking with them Dora, Minna's sister. Schiller and Huber also went to Dresden, and Schiller remained there nearly two years. Almost every day he spent the afternoon and evening at Korner's house, and he derived permanent benefit from this in- timate intercourse with the kindest and most thoughtful – friends he had ever had. While in Dresden, he published in Thalia several prose writings, among others Philoso- phische Briefe, in which he set forth with enthusiasm some of his opinions about religion, and a part of the Geester- seher, a romance, which, although written in a brilliant style, was so imperfectly planned that' he was never able to finish it. He also issued Don Carlos, which he completed early in 1787. A considerable interval having passed between the writing of the earlier and that of the later parts of this play; Don Carlos represents two different stages of intel- lectual and moral growth. It lacks, therefore, unity of design and sentiment. But it has high imaginative quali- ties, and the Marquis Posa, through whom Schiller gave utterance to his ideas regarding social and political progress, is one of the most original and fascinating of his creations. Posa is not less revolutionary than Karl Moor, the hero of Die Réuber, but, while the latter is a purely destructive force, the former represents all the best reconstructive energies of the 18th century.

In July 1787 Schiller went to Weimar, where he was cordially welcomed by Herder and Wieland. For several years after this time he devoted himself almost exclusively to the study of history, and in 1788 he published his Geschichte des Abfalls der vereinigten Nrederlande von der Spanischen Regierung. This was followed by a number of minor historical essays (published in Zhalia), and by his Geschichte des dreissigjihrigen Krieges, which appeared in 1792. These writings secured for Schiller a high place among the historians of his own time. In every instance he derived his materials from original authorities, and they were presented with a freedom, boldness, and energy which made them attractive to all classes of readers. One result of the publication of his history of the revolt of the Netherlands was his appointment to a professorship at the university of Jena, where he

delivered his introductory lecture in May 1789. He lived in Jena for about ten years, and during that time frequently met Fichte, Schel- ling, the two Schlegels, Wilhelm von Humboldt, and many other writers eminent in science, philosophy, and literature.

On the 22d of February 1790 Schiller married Char- lotte von Lengefeld, whom he had met at Rudolstadt about two years before. She was of a tender and affectionate nature, bright and intelligent, and Schiller found in her love and sympathy a constant source of strength and happiness. They had four children, the eldest of whom was born in 1793.

About a year after his marriage he was attacked by a dangerous illness, and from this time he was always in delicate health, suffering frequently from paroxysms of almost intolerable pain. In the autumn of 1793 he went with his wife to Wiirtemberg in the hope that his native air might do him good; and he did not return to Jena until the spring of the following year. He was enabled to obtain this period of rest through the kindness of the hereditary prince of Augustenburg and the minister Count von Schimmelmann, who had jointly begged to be allowed to place 3000 thalers at his disposal, to be paid in yearly instalments of 1000 thalers. Schiller heartily enjoyed his visit to his native state, where he had much pleasant inter- course with his father, mother, and sisters, and with some of bis earlyfriends. He did not again see hisfather and mother, the former of whom died in 1796, the latter in 1802.

The Geschichte des dreissigjthrigen Krieges was the last

C6 Ta. Loi fh R

important historical work written by Schiller. He abandoned history in order to study philosophy, which, under the impulse communicated by Kant, was then exciting keen interest among the educated classes of Germany. Schiller’s philosophical studies related chiefly to esthetics, on which he wrote a series of essays, some of them being printed in Neue Thalia (issued from 1792 to 1794), others in the Horen, a periodical which he began in 1794 and continued until 1798. The most remarkable of these essays are a paper on “ Die Anmuth und Wiirde,” a series of letters addressed to the prince of Augustenburg on “Die asthetische Erziehung des Menschen,” and a treatise on ‘“ Die Naive und Sentimentalische Dichtung.” In philosophical

speculation Schiller derived inspiration mainly from Kant, but he worked his way to many independent judgments, and his theories have exercised considerable influence on those German writers who have dealt with the ultimate principles of art and literature. Goethe was of opinion that in “Die Naive und Senti- mentalische Dichtung” Schiller had laid the foundation of modern criticism. In that powerful essay the vital dis- tinction between classical and romantic methods was for the first time clearly brought out.

Schiller had been introduced to Goethe in 1788, but they did not begin to know one another well until 1794, when Goethe was attracted to Schiller by a conversation they had after a meeting of a scientific society at Jena. Afterwards their acquaintance quickly ripened into inti- mate friendship. To Schiller Goethe owed what he him- self called “‘a second youth,” and this debt was amply repaid, for by constant association with the greatest mind of the age Schiller was encouraged to do full justice to his genius. Moreover, his intellectual life was enriched by new ideas, and he was led by Goethe’s indirect influence to balance his speculative judgments and idealistic concep- tions by a keener and more accurate observation of the facts of ordinary life. :

During the years which followed his departure from Mannheim Schiller had written An die Mreude, Die Gotter Griechenlands, Die Kiinstler, and other lyrical poems, all of which are of very much higher quality than the poems of his earlier period. But he had been so absorbed by labours of a different kind that he had had little time or inclination for his proper work as a poet. Now, stimu- lated by intercourse with Goethe, he began to long once more for the free exercise of his creative faculty ; and from 1794 he allowed no year to pass without adding to the list of his lyrical writings, Among the lyrics pro- duced in this the last and greatest period of his career the foremost place belongs to the Lied von der Gilocke, but there is hardly less imaginative power in Das Ideal und das Leben, Die Ideale, Der Spazergang, Der Genius, Die Erwartung, Das Eleusische Fest, and Cassandra. Few of Schiller’s lyrics have the charm of simple and spontaneous feeling ; but as poems giving expression to the results of philosophic contemplation the best of them are unsur- passed in modern literature. Schiller had a passionate faith in an eternal ideal world to which the human mind has access; and the contrast between ideals and what is called reality he

presents in many different forms. In developing the poetic significance of this contrast his thoughts are always high and noble, and they are offered in a style which is almost uniformly grand and melodious.

In 1796 Schiller and Goethe together wrote for the Musenalmanach (an annual volume of poems, issued for several years by Schiller) a series of epigrams called Xenien, each consisting of a distich, Most of them were directed against contemporary. writers whom the poets disliked, and much animosity was excited by their sharply satirical tone. A higher interest attaches to

Votivtafeln, another series of epigrams, written at the same time as the Xenien. They are among the most suggestive of Schiller's writings, for, as he explains in the introductory epigram, they embody truths which he had found helpful in the experience of life. Soon after finish- ing these fine poems Schiller began, in rivalry with Goethe, to write his ballads, which surprised even his most ardent admirers by the boldness of their conceptions and by the graphic force of their diction, As a writer of ballads Goethe yielded the palm to Schiller, and this

judgment has been confirmed by the majority of later

critics.

Schiller never intended that Don Carlos should be his last drama, and from 1791 he worked occasionally at a play dealing with the fate of Wallenstein. He was unable, however, to satisfy himself as to the plan until 1798, when, after consulting with Goethe, he decided to divide it into three parts, Wallensteins Lager, Die Piccolomini, and Wallensteins Tod. Wallensteins Lager was acted for the first time at the Weimar theatre in October 1798, and Die Piccolomini in January 1799. In April 1799 all three pieces were represented, a night being given to each. The work as a whole produced a profound impression, and it is certainly Schiller's masterpiece in dramatic literature. He brings out with extraordinary vividness the ascendency of Wallenstein over the wild troops whom he has gathered around him, and at the same time we are made to see how the mighty general's schemes must

necessarily end in ruin, not merely because a plot against him is skilfully pre- pared by vigilant enemies, but because he himself is lulled into a sense of security by superstitious belief in his supposed destiny as revealed to him by the stars. Wallen- stein is the most subtle and complex of Schiller's dramatic conceptions, and it taxes the powers of the greatest actors to present an adequate rendering of the motives whieh explain his strange and dark career. The love-story of Max Piccolomini and Thekla is in its own way not less impressive than the story of Wallenstein with which it is interwoven. Max and Thekla are purely ideal figures, and Schiller touches the deepest sources of tragic pity by

his masterly picture of their hopeless passion and of their

spiritual freedom and integrity.

Wallenstein was received with so much favour that Schiller resolved to devote himself in future mainly to the drama; and in order to be near a theatre—partly, too, that he might have more frequent opportunities of inter- course with Goethe—he transferred his residence, in December 1799, from Jena to Weimar, where he spent the rest of his life. He took with him to Weimar three acts of Maria Stuart, and early in the summer of 1800 he finished it at Ettersburg, a country house of the duke of Weimar. 'The technical qualities of Maria Stuart are of the highest order, but the subject does not seem to have interested Schiller very deeply, and it cannot be said either that the characters are finely conceived or that the closing scenes of Queen Mary's life are presented in a truly poetic spirit. In his next play, Die Jungfrau von Orleans, completed about a year afterwards, Schiller had a more congenial theme, and the vigour with which he handled it commanded the warm admiration of Goethe. The scenes in which the maid is misled by her passion for Lionel are slightly perplexing, as they do not appear to accord with the essential qualities of her character ; but in the earlier and later parts of the play Schiller displays splendid dramatic art in revealing the lofty courage and enthusiasm with which she fulfils her mission. In Dire Braut von Messina, which was acted for the first time at the Weimar theatre in March 1803, Schiller attempted to combine romantic and classical elements. The experiment is not perfectly successful, and even in its most striking

passages the play is remarkable rather for brilliant rhetoric than for pure poetry. His last original drama, Wilhelm Tell, the first representation of which took place in March 1804, is in some respects greater than any of those which preceded it, Wallenstein excepted. It has some obvious faults of construction, but these defects do not seriously mar the impression produced by its glowing picture of a romantic and truly popular struggle for freedom. :

Besides his complete original plays, Schiller left some dramatic sketches and fragments, the most important of which, Demetrius, has been finished in Schiller's manner by several later writers. He also produced German versions of Macbeth, of Gozzi's Turandot, of two comedies by Picard, and of Phédre. Wis renderings of Picard's comedies are entitled Der Parasit and Der Neffe als Onkel.

In his last ycars Schiller received many tokens of growing fame. In 1802 he was raised to noble rank, and in 1804 he was informed that if he pleased he might be invited to settle in Berlin on advantageous terms. He went with his family to the Prussian capital, but the only result of the negotiations into which he entered was that the duke of Weimar, alarmed at the prospect of losing him, doubled his salary of 400 thalers. His health was at this time completely undermined, and from the summer of 1804 work was often rendered impossible by serious illness. On the evening of the 29th April 1805 he returned from the Weimar theatre in a state of high fever, and from this attack he was unable to rally. He died on the 9th May 1805, in his forty-sixth year.

Schiller was tall, slight, and pale, with reddish hair, and eyes of an uncertain colour, between light-brown and blue. At the military academy he acquired a manner somewhat formal, like that of a soldier; but in carrying on conversa- tion that interested him he became eager and animated. He had little appreciation of humour, and even in the treatment of subjects which he made his own he was apt to recur too frequently to the same ideas and the same types of character. But when he is at his best he is excelled among the poets and dramatists of Germany only by Goethe in the power with which he expresses sublime thoughts and depicts the working of ideal passions. As

a man he was not less great than as a writer. He started in life with high aims, and no obstacle was ever formidable enough to turn him from paths by which he chose to advance to his goal. Terrible as his physical sufferings often were, he maintained to the last a genial and buoyant temper, and those who knew him intimately had a con- stantly increasing admiration for his patience, tenderness, and charity. With all that was deepest and most humane in the thought of the 18th century he had ardent sympathy, and to him were due some of the most potent of the influences which, at a time of disaster and humilia- tion, helped to kindle in the hearts of the German people a longing for a free and worthy national life.

There have been many editions of Schiller's collected works. The first was issued in twelve volumes at Stuttgart and Tiibingen in 1812-15, the editor being his friend C. G. Korner. There are also a good many volumes of Schiller's correspondence, the most interesting being his correspondence with Goethe. Of the bio- graphics of Schiller, Carlyle's—publishcd in 1825—was one of the carlicst. Scealso Schillers Leben, by Frau von Wolzogen, Schiller's sister-in-law; Schdllers Leben, by Hoffmeister (extended by Viehoff) ; Schillers Leben, by Boas; Sehillers Leben und Werke, by Palleske ; Schillers Leben, by H. Diintzer; and Schiller, by J. Sime (in " Yoreign Classics for English Readers"). (J. SL)

SCHINKEL, Karu Frrepricu (1781-1841), architect and painter, and professor in the academy of fine arts at Berlin from 1820, was born at Neuruppin, in Brandenburg, on March 13, 1781, and died at Berlin, on October 9, 1841. He is esteemed one of the most original of modern German architects. His principal buildings are in Bertin (g.v.) and its neighbourhood. They include the Bauakademie,

which contains a museum of his designs. His Sammlung archatektonischer Entwiirfe (1820-1837 ; 3d ed. 1857-58) and Werke der hiheren Baukunst (1845-6 ; new ed. 1874) exemplify his style.

SCHIRMER, Frieprich Winieim (1802-1866), land- scape artist, was born in 1802 in Berlin. Asa youth he painted flowers in the royal porcelain factory ; afterwards he became a pupil of F. W. Schadow in the Berlin

Academy, but his art owed most to Italy. His first journey across the Alps was taken in 1827; his sojourn extended over three years; he became a disciple of his countryman Joseph Koch, who built historic landscape on the Poussins, and is said to have caught inspiration from Turner. In 1831 Schirmer established himself in Berlin in a studio with scholars ; in 1839 he was appointed professor of landscape in the academy; in 1845 he again visited Italy, but duties soon brought him back to Berlin. Illness compelled him in 1865 to seek a southern clime; he grew worse in Rome, and died on his way home in 1866.

Schirmer's plaee in the history of art is distinctive : his sketches in Italy were more than transcripts of the spots ; he studied nature with the purpose of composing historic and poctic landseapes. On the completion of the Berlin Museum of Antiquities eame his opportunity : upon the walls he painted classic sites and temples, and elueidated the eollections by the landscape scenery with which they were historieally assoeiated. His supreme aim at all times was to make his art the poetic interpretation of nature. His pictnres appeal to the mind by the ideas they embody, by beauty of form, harmony of line, significance of light and colour. In this construe- tional landscape German critics discover "motive," ''inner mcan- ing," ''the subjective," "the ideal." And Schirmer thus formed asechool. Nevertheless at times he painted poor pictures, partly because he deemed technique secondary to conception.

SCHIRMER, Jonann Wituetm (1807-1863), land- scape painter, was born in 1807, at Jiilich in Rhenish Prussia. This artist, only a namesake of the preceding, had similar aim and career. He first was a student, and subse- quently became a professor in the academy of Diisseldorf. In 1854 he was made director of the art school at Carlsruhe, where in 1863 he died. He travelled and sketched in Italy, and aimed at historic landscape after the manner of the Poussins. His Biblical landscapes with figures are held in good esteem.

SCHIZOMYCETES, a term proposed by Nigeli in 1857 to include all those minute organisms known as Bacteria, Microphytes, Microbes, &c., and allied forms. These terms have been used at various times by different authors with widely different meanings in detail, but it is now agreed that

the Schizomycetes are minute vegetable organisms devoid of chlorophyll and multiplying by repeated bipartitions. They consist of single cells, which may be spherical, oblong, or cylindrical in shape, or of filamentous or other aggre- gates of such cells. True spores oceur in several, but no trace whatever of sexual organs exists. From their mode of growth, division, and spore-formation (in part), as well as their habit of forming deliquescent, swollen cell-walls, and other peculiarities, there can be no doubt of the close alliance between the Schizomycetes and certain lower Algzx; whence both groups have been conjoined under the name Schizophyta. No one character except the want of chlorophyll—which of course entails physiological differ- ences—separates the Schizomycetes from other Schizophyta; morphologically and phylogenetically the two groups are united. From this point of view we relegate all the so- called bacteria which contain chlorophyll (e.g., Engelmann's Bactervum chlorinum, Van Tieghem's B. viride and Bacillus virens, Cohn's Micrococcus chlorinus, &c.) to the Alge.

Schizomycetes, then, are saprophytic or parasitic Schizo- phyta devoid of chlorophyll, though they may secrete other colouring matters. In size their cells are commonly about 0-001 mm. (called 1 micro-millimetre = 1) in diameter, or from two to five times that length ; but smaller ones and

a few larger are known. The various shapes assumed by the cells are shown in fig. 1; the filamentous and other aggregates will be described below.

Fig. 1.—Typical forms of Schizomycetes. (After Zopf.) a, Micrococcus; b, Macrococcus or "Monas"; c, Bacterium; d, Bacillus; e, Clostridium; f, Monas okenii; g, Leptothrix; h, t, Vibrio; k, Spiriltum; 1, '' Spirulina" (a form of Beggiatoa alba); m, " Spiromonas" (Warming); n, Spirocheie; 0, Cladothrix. The granules in 6, f, and / are particles of sulphur.

Schizomycetes are ubiquitous as saprophytes in still ponds and ditches, in running streams and rivers, and in the sea, and especially in drains, bogs, refuse heaps, and in the soil, and wherever organic infusions are allowed to stand for a short time. Any liquid (blood, urine, milk, beer, &c.) containing organic matter, or any solid food- stuff (meat, preserves, vegetables, &c.), allowed to stand exposed to the air soon swarms with bacteria, if moisture is present and the temperature not abnormal. Though they occur all the world over in the air and on the surface of exposed bodies, it is not to be supposed that they are by any means equally distributed, and it is questionable whether the bacteria suspended in the air ever exist in such enormous quantities as was once believed. The evidence to hand shows that on heights and in open country, especially in the north, there may be few or even no Schizomycetes detected in the air, and even in towns their distribution varies greatly ; sometimes they appear to exist in minute clouds, as it were, with interspaces devoid of any, but in laboratories and closed spaces where their cultivation has been promoted the air may be considerably laden with them. Of course the distribution of bodies so light and small is easily influenced by movements, rain, wind, changes of temperature, &c. As parasites, certain

Schizomycetes inhabit and prey upon the organs of men

and animals in varying degrees, and the conditions for

their growth and distribution are then very complex.

Plants appear to be less subject to their attacks,—possibly,

as has been suggested, because the acid fluids of the

higher vegetable organisms are less suited for the develop- ment of Schizomycetes ; nevertheless some are known to be parasitic on plants. Schizomycetes exist in every part of the alimentary canal of animals, except, perhaps, where acid secretions prevail ; these are by no means necessarily harmful, though, by destroying the teeth for instance,

certain forms may incidentally be the forerunners of damage which they do not directly cause.’

Little was known about these extremely minute organ- History.

isms before 1860. Leeuwenhoek figured Bacteria as far back as the 17th century, and O. F. Miiller knew several important forms in 1773, while Ehrenberg in 1830 had advanced to the commencement of a scientific separation and grouping of them, and in 1838 had proposed at least sixteen species, distributing them into four genera. Our modern more accurate though still fragmentary knowledge of the forms of Schizomycetes, however, dates from Cohn’s brilliant researches, the chief results of which were pub- lished at various periods between 1853 and 1872; Cohn’s classification of the Bacteria, published in 1872 and ex- tended in 1875, has in fact dominated the study of these organisms almost ever since. He proceeded in the main on the assumption that the forms of Bacteria as met with and described by him are practically constant, at any rate within limits which are not wide: observing that a minute spherical Micrococcus or a rod-like Bacillus regularly pro- duced similar micrococci and bacilli respectively, he based his classification on what may be considered the constancy of forms which he called species and genera. As to the constancy of form, however, Cohn maintained certain reser- vations which have been ignored by some of his followers.

| The fact that Schizomycetes produce spores appears to

have been discovered by Cohn in 1857, though it was expressed dubiously in 1872; these spores had no doubt been observed previously. In 1876, however, Cohn had seen the spores germinate, and Koch, Brefeld, Pratzmowski, Van Tieghem, De Bary, and others confirmed the discovery in various species.

The supposed constancy of forms in Cohn’s species and genera, received a violent shock when Lankester in 1873 pointed out that his Bacterium rubescens (since named Beggiatoa roseo-persicina, Zop{) passes through conditions which would have been described by most observers influ- enced by the current doctrine as so many separate “ species” or even “ genera,”—that in fact forms known as Bacterium, Micrococcus, Bacillus,

Leptothriz, &c., occur as phases in one life-history. Lister put forth similar ideas about the same time; and Billroth came forward in 1874 with the startling view that the various “form-species” and ‘ form- genera” are only different states of one and the same organism. From that time to the present the discussion as to the limits of ‘species ” among the Schizomycetes has been maintained ; much extravagance has resulted, as well as valuable additions to our knowledge of the forms. Klebs (1875) and Nageli (1877) upheld similar views to those suggested by Lankester ; and the researches of Cien- kowski, Zopf, Kurth, and De Bary have rendered it clear that forms employed by Cohn to define genera and species (it should be borne in mind that Cohn recognized their provisional nature) occur as phases in one and the same life-history. Zopf showed (1882) that minute spherical “cocci,” short rodlets (“bacteria”), longer rodlets (‘‘ba- cilli”), and filamentous (“leptothrix”) forms as well as curved and spiral threads (“vibrio,” ‘‘spirillum”), &c., occur as vegetative stages in one and the same Schizomy- cete (cf. fig. 16). In the meantime, while various observers were building up our knowledge of the morphology of the Schizomycetes, others were laying the foundations of what is known of the relations of these organisms to fermenta-

1 See De Bary, Morphologie und Biologie der Pilz, 1884, and Vorlesungen tiber Bacterien, 1885; Zopf, Die Spaltpilze, 3d ed., 1885 ; Cohn, Beitr. zur Biol. der Pfl., Hft. 2, 1872; Magnin, Les Bactéries, 1878 ; Burdon-Sanderson, Quart. Jour. Micros. Sc., 1871 ; Tyndall, Floating Matter of the Air, 1881 ; Miflet, in Cohn’s Beitr. zur Biol., tii. Hft. i., 1879; Pasteur, Jour. de Chim. et de Phys.,

ser. iii., 1862 ; Miquel, Comptes Rendus, 1878, and Annuaire de I’ ob- servatoire de Montsouris, 1877 sq.

tion and disease, —that ancient Will-o’-the-wisp ‘“ spontane- ous generation” being revived by the way. When Pas- teur in 1857 showed that the lactic fermentation depends on the presence of an organism, it was already known from the researches of Schwann (1837) and Helmholtz (1843) that fermentation and putrefaction are intimately con- nected with the presence of organisms derived from the air, and that the preservation of

putrescible substances de- pends on this principle. In 1862 Pasteur placed it beyond reasonable doubt that the ammoniacal fermentation of urea

is due to the action. of a minute Schizomycete ; in 1864

this was confirmed by Van Tieghem, and in 1874 by Cohn, who named the organism JMicrococcus uree. Pasteur and Cohn also pointed out that putrefaction is but a special case of fermentation, and before 1872 the doctrines of Pasteur were established with respect to Schizomycetes. Meanwhile two branches of inquiry had arisen, so to speak, from the above. In the first place, the ancient question of “spontaneous generation” received fresh impetus from the difficulty of keeping such minute organisms as bacteria from reaching and developing in organic infusions; and, secondly, the long-suspected analogies between the pheno- mena of fermentation and those of certain diseases again made themselves felt, as both became better understood. Needham in 1745 had declared that heated infusions of organic matter were not deprived of living beings; Spal- lanzani (1777) had replied that more careful heating and other precautions prevent the appearance of organisms in the fluids. Various experiments by Schwann, Helmholtz, Schultz, Schroeder, Dusch, and others led to the refutation, step by step, of the belief that the more minute organ- isms, and particularly bacteria, arose de novo in the special cases quoted. Nevertheless, instances were adduced where the most careful heating of yolk of egg, milk, hay- infusions, &c., had failed,—the boiled infusions, &c., turn- ing putrid and swarming with Schizomycetes after a few hours.

Ih 1862 Pasteur repeated and extended such experi- ments, and paved the way for a complete explanation of the anomalies; Cohn in 1872 published confirmatory results ; and it became clear that no putrefaction can take place without Schizomycetes. In the hands of Brefeld, Burdon-Sanderson, De Bary, Tyndall, Roberts, Lister, and others, the various links in the chain of evidence grew stronger and stronger, and every case adduced as one of ‘‘spontaneous generation” fell to the ground when examined. No case of so-called “spontaneous genera- tion” has withstood rigid investigation ; but the discussion contributed to more exact ideas as to the ubiquity, minuteness, and high powers of resistance to physical agents of the spores of Schizomycetes, and led to more exact ideas of antiseptic treatments.

Methods were also improved, and the application of some of them to surgery at the hands of Lister, Koch, and others has yielded results of the highest importance.

Long before any clear ideas as to the relations of Schizomycetes to fermentation and disease were possible, various thinkers at different times had suggested that resemblances exist between the phenomena of certain diseases and those of fermentation, and the idea that a virus or contagium might be something of the nature of a minute organism: capable of spreading and reproducing itself had been entertained. Such vague notions began to take more definite shape as the ferment theory of Cagniard-Latour (1828), Schwann (1837), and Pasteur made way, especially in the hands of the last-named savant. From about 1870 onwards the “germ theory of disease” has passed into acceptance. Rayer in 1850 and Davaine had observed the bacilli in the blood of animals dead of anthrax (splenic fever), and Pollender discovered

S CHT Beat Ory its

them anew in 1855. In 1863, imbued with ideas derived from Pasteur’s researches on fermentation, Davaine re- investigated the matter, and put forth the opinion that the anthrax bacilli caused the splenic fever; this was proved to result from inoculation. Koch in 1876 pub- lished his observations on Davaine’s hacilli, placed beyond doubt their causal relation to splenic fever, discovered the spores and the saprophytic phase in the life-history of the organism, and cleared up important points in the whole question (figs. 10 and 11). In 1870 Pasteur had proved that a disease of silkworms was due to a ferment-organism of the nature of a Schizomycete ; and in 1871 Oertel showed that a Mucrococcus already known to exist in diphtheria is intimately concerned in producing that disease. In 1872, therefore, Cohn was already justified in grouping together a number of “pathogenous” Schizomycetes. Thus arose the foundations of the modern “germ theory of disease”; and, in the midst of the wildest conjectures and the worst of logic, a nucleus of facts was won, which has since grown, and is growing daily. Septiceemia, tuberculosis, glanders, fowl-cholera, relapsing fever, and a few other diseases are now brought definitely within

the range of biology,.and several other contagious and infectious diseases are known to be also due to Schizomycetes.

Other questions of the highest importance have arisen from the foregoing. A few years ago Pasteur showed' that Bacillus anthracis cultivated in chicken broth, with plenty of oxygen, and at a temperature of 42-43° C. lost its virulence after a few "generations," and ceased to kill even the mouse; Toussaint and Chaveau confirmed, and others have extended the observations. More remarkable still, animals inoculated with such "attenuated" bacilli proved to be curiously resistent to the deadly effects of subsequent inoculations of the non-attenuated form. In other words, animals vaccinated with the cultivated bacillus showed immunity from disease when reinoculated with the deadly wild form. The questions as to the causes and nature of the changes in the bacillus and in the host, as to the extent of immunity enjoyed by the latter, &., are now burning,—Metschnikoff's recent observations (1884), show- ing that the white corpuscles eliminate the bacilli from the blood, being one of the most startling contributions to the answers.

Another burning question has already been in part touched upon. Experiments have shown that Schizomy- cetes are pleomorphic; they are also very sensitive, so to speak, to the influences of the environment. The investi- gations of Cohn, Pasteur, Koch, Nageli, Kurth, De Bary, and others leave no doubt that many Schizomycetes are sensibly affected by the media in which they are cultivated: not only are the forms modified, but also the physiological activity varies in degree, and even in kind. These and similar facts seem to be largely responsible for recent ideas as to the possibility of being able to cultivate or "educate" certain Schizomycetes. One case only need be referred to. Bacillus anthracis and B. subtilis are only distinguish- able with great difficulty morphologically (cf. figs. 10-12) ; the former is parasitic in its vegetative stages, the latter is always a saprophyte. Now JB. anthracis, as said, can become harmless by cultivation, and so it has been thought that the two forms were convertible. Buchner even went so far as to declare that he had transformed B. anthracis into B. subtilis, z.¢., that the differences which botanists detect are only due to the influence of the environment at the time. These assertions cannot be regarded as proved ; but the question whether harmless forms can become edu- cated, as it were,

to a parasitic mode of life within periods which we can control is of course of the highest import- ance. Such area few of the questions now under discussion, together with others as to the mode of action of patho-

genic Schizomycetes, as to the nature of immunity, and as to the limitation of “species” among such simple forms. MorpPHoLoey.—Sizes, Forms, Structure, &c.—The Schizo- mycetes consist of single cells, or of filamentous or other groups of cells, according as the divisions are completed at once or not. While some unicellular forms are less than 1p (001 mm.) in diameter, others have cells measuring 4h or 5p or even 7p or 8y in thickness, while the length may vary from that of the diameter to many times that measure- ment. In the filamentous forms the individual cells are often difficult to observe until reagents are applied (e.., fig. 14), and the length of the rows of cylindrical cells may be many hundred times greater than the breadth. Simi- larly, the diameters of flat or spheroidal colonies may vary from a few times to many hundred times that of the indivi- dual cells, the divisions of which have produced the colony.

‘orm and The shape of the individual cell (fig. 1) varies from that of “tructure. a minute sphere to that of a straight, curved, or twisted

filament or cylinder, which is not necessarily of the same diameter throughout, and may have flattened, rounded, or even pointed ends. The rule is that the cells divide in one direction only—z.e., transverse to the long axis—and therefore produce aggregates of long cylindrical shape ; but in rarer cases iso-diametric cells divide in two or three directions, producing flat, or spheroidal, or irregular colonies, the size of which is practically unlimited. As to the structure of the cell, little more can be said than that it consists of a mass of homogeneous or very slightly granular protoplasm, with a pearl-like lustre, and without vacuoles; this is enveloped by a membranous envelope, which is so delicate as to be scarcely perceptible. In the actively vegetating or mobile conditions this cell wall appears very thin and sharp, and is extremely flexible and elastic, but at other times it is swollen and diffluent, fur- nishing the intercellular gelatinous matrix of the zoogloea condition (fig. 3). Itis doubtful whether the thin envelope closely applied to the protoplasm is not always simply the innermost layer of a very

diffluent covering, which is con- tinuously thickening and throwing off its outermost swollen and disorganized lamelle. The facts to hand seem to show that, while in some cases this envelope consists mainly of cellulose, in others (zoogloea of Bacteria, e.g.) it contains relatively large proportions of nitrogenous compounds. In some cases the cell-walls form a lamel- lated sheath. No cuticularization occurs, nor are deposits of lime or silex known in the cell walls. Colouring pigments, however (red, yellow, and even green and blue), are sometimes met with, and a rusty or brown tinge is in some cases produced by the precipitation of iron oxides in the walls. In the typical Schizomycetes the protoplasmic contents (which are said to consist largely of a peculiar substance named mycoprotein) are colourless, or more rarely tinged with colouring matters—bright red, yellow, &c.—which cannot be mistaken for chlorophyll. The few forms described as containing a green pigment, allied to or identical with chlorophyll, will not be considered here, but relegated to the Algw. The occurrence of starch or a granulose-like substance in some Bacteria is undoubted ; it yields a deep blue colour with iodine solutions, is diffused in bands or patches, and arises in cases where

Dee eS SS ee

1 In addition to the foregoing, compare Nigeli, Untersuchungen tber niedere Pilze, 1882; Buchner, ibid., and in Virch. Arch,, xci., 1883 ; Niageli, Theorie der Gdéhrung, 1879; Chaveau in Comptes Rendus, 1879-1884 ; Davaine, ibid., 1863-64 and 1873; E. Ray Lankester, Quart. Jour. of Micros. Sc., 1873 and 1876 (also valuable papers in Q. J. M. S. from 1870 to 1884); Pasteur, numerous papers in Comptes Rendus—especially 1862 and 1877—and in Ann. de Chim. et Phys., 1858, 1862, &c.; Koch in Cohn’s Beitr., ii. Aft, 2, 1876; Kurth, Bot. Zeitung, 1883; Schiitzenberger, Fermentation, 1876; Metschnikoff, Virch. Arch., 1884; Nature, various papers from 1871 to 1878.

the Schizomycete is nourished by a matrix which does not contain starch. ‘Trécul noticed this formation of amyloid substance in Clostridium, Van Tieghem in a Spirillum, and several other cases are known; Ward detected starch in a Bacillus found in decaying coffee seeds, and in other media

devoid of starch. In the filamentous Schizomycetes (Beggiatoa, e.g.) are found extremely minute dark gran- ules; Cramer and Cohn have shown that these consist of sulphur in fine crystals (fig. 14). Oily or fatty substances and minute granules of undetermined nature occur in the protoplasm, but no nucleus has as yet been discovered in any Schizomycete.

Vegetative States—While many forms are fixed to a Vegetative substratum, others are free; and in certain conditions States.

single cells or groups may be motile. In some cases the movements are mere oscillations, in others there are rapid movements of translation, sometimes ascribed to the action of flagella or cilia; these movements are of course not to be confounded with the dancing “Brownian motion” observed in the case of all such minute bodies suspended in fluids. Cilia have now been described in some of the smallest Bacteria by several good observers (Dallinger and Drysdale,” Cohn, Koch, Zopf), though, on account of their extreme fineness, and the difficulty of fixing them, much discussion has taken place as to their nature, functions, origin, numbers, and even existence ; that they occur is proved by the photographs, but whether they are not sometimes mere filaments drawn out from the cell-walls is very doubtful (figs. 2 and 12). While some Schi- zomycetes appear to have no active stage, and many are only motile under certain conditions when

swarming, others Fre. re of motile and ciliated forms of Schizo-

: mycetes. (After Zopf.) 1, Micrococcus with one

are described as cilium; 2, the same dividing ; 3, group of swarming

possessing two or macrococci of Beggiatoa roseo-persicina (Bacterium

: rubescens of Lankester); 4, bacterium-like motile

even three dis- form of the same; 7, 8, 9, and 10, other forms of the

] 1 game (8 is dividing); 5, bacillus-like motile form

tinctactiveforms. Goch): 6, motile chain of hay bacilli (Brefeld)—each

When vigorously terminal rodlet has one cilium; 11, spdillum form growing and di- viding, the Schi- zomycetes aS a

with one cilium at each end; 12, stouter spirillum- like form with two cilia at each end; 138, ‘ ophido- monas” form (Warming), The granules in 8, 4, 7, 8, 9, 12, and 18 are particles of sulphur. rule present certain definite forms, which are at any rate so constant under constant conditions that they can be figured and described with such accuracy and certainty that good observers have regarded them as fixed species, or at least as ‘‘form-species” or “‘form-genera.” We now know, however, that many Schizomycetes pass through several such phases, and we may therefore regard them in these cases as “vegetative forms,” which pass into one another too gradually to admit of their being employed as sharply distinctive of genera.

As the chief of these forms may be mentioned the following (see fig. 1) :—

2 Dallinger and Drysdale, Monthly Micros. Jour., 1875. ‘ XXII. — 51

.

Cocci: spherical or spheroidal cells, which, according to their Growth and Division.—Whatever the shape and size Reproduce. — (not very be ey bass ra SNE of as Micro- of the individual cell, cell-filament, or cell-colony, the tion. cocct, Macrococct, and perhaps Monas forms. : F Me

Rods or rodlets : slightly is es considerably elongated cells immediate ‘ visible – wes which are cylindrical, biscuit-shaped, or somewhat fusiform. | sults of active nutrition The cylindrical forms are short, ¢.¢., only three or four | are elongation of the times as long as broatl (Bacterium), “eee coke i, the | cell and its division biscuit-shaped ones are Bactcria in the early stages of divi- | . sion, Clostridia, &e., are spindle-shaped. into two equal halves,

Filaments (Leptothrix forms) really consist of elongated cylindri- | @CrOss the long axis, cal cells which remain united end to end after division, and | by the formation of a they may break up later into elements such as those septum, which either described above. Such filaments are not always of the

: same diameter throughout, and their segmentation varies : : considerably. They may be free, or attached at one (the | mains intact “basal”) end.

Curved and spiral forms. Any of the elongated forms described above may be curved, or sinuous, or twisted into a corkscrew- like spiral instead of straight. If the sinuosity is slight we have the Vibrio form; if pronounced, and the spiral wind- | ing well marked, the forms are known as Spirillwm, Sptrochxtc, &c. These and similar terms have been applied partly to individual cells, but more often to filaments con- sisting of several cells; and much confusion has arisen from the difficulty of defining the terms themselves. Various | Fic, 4.—A, branch of a zooglea of Cladothrix dichotoma (cf. fig. 8, F), x 540.

splits at once or re- for a

observers have, moreover, described particular cases where | Sane on it Meer a short and —= Vioris (a) and « a vee ’ Ce Ca sys : orms ©, some of which are curved like Vibrio and Spirillum, the the cells pe eell filaments exhibit irregularities of form > | same, but the rodlets breaking up into eoeei. (After Zopf.) , such “involution forms,” “torula forms,” &c., appear to be | : sted sche – i+ cases. has BR j ‘ shorter or longer time. This process is then repeated, n addition to the above, however, certain Schizomycetes presen scl “ry Hoe alas aggregates in the form of plates, or solid or hollow and irregular and : the first case the separated cells assume the characters of the

parent-cell whose @ 6

division gave rise // to them; in the 4¢%

second case they form filaments, or,

if the further elon- gation and divisions

of the cells proceed £ in different direc 6 ©

%

tions, plates or sphe- fice

—o

~

fn f i

4

roidal or other- shaped colonies. It not unfrequently happens, however, that groups of cells K

+a

iti oti tay HH

z . break away from 0 ® "8008 their former con- 4 0 : J _nexion as longeror “> ¢ 2g) i Q shorter straight or o E curved filaments, or ¢ 3g 0 as solid masses. In y b H G

a

ae fila —_ tous… 5.—Types of Spore-formation in Schizomyeetes. forms this frag- (After Zopf.) A, various stages in the develop- 2 ” * ment of the endogenous spores in a Clostridium mentation into (Bacilius)—the small letteis indieate the order. B, | multicellular pleces endogenous spores of the hay bacillus. C, a chain f 1] h of cocct of Leuconostoc mesenterioides, with two

or equal length or «resting spores,” 4.e., arthrospores. (After Van nearly 80 is a nor- Tieghem.) D,a motile rodlet with one cilium and with a spore formed inside. E, spore-formation in

mal phenomenon, Vibrio-like © and Spirillum-like (a, 6, d) Schizo- 0 myeetes. F, long rod-like form containing a spore

each partial fila- (these are the so-called ‘‘Kédpfchenbacterien” of ment repeating the Germanauthors). G, Vibrio form with spore. (After soe

Prazmowski.) H, Clostridium—one cell eontains

growth, division, two spores (Prazmowski). I, Spiritiwm eontaining ; many spores (a), which are liberated at 6 by the

and fragmentation renin up : te parent eells. K, gornilnneete of ‘ as before (cf. figs. 15 the spore of the hay bacillus (B. swbté/és),—the axis Fig. 8.—Types of Zoogloes. (After Zopf.) A, mixed zooglea found as a and 16) Finall of growth of the germinal rodlet is at right angles pellicle on the surface of vegetable infusions, &c.; it consists of various forms, 2 MAaHY, to the long axis of the spore. L, germination of and eontains eocei (a) and rodlets, in series (6 and c), &c. (x 540). B,egg-shaped | such filaments may spore of Clostridium butyricum—the axis of growth mass of zooglea of Beggiatoa roseo-persicina (Bacterium rubescens of —_” : jal coincides with the long axis of the spore. Lankester); the gelatinous swollen walls of the large crowded cocci are fused reax up Into their

(980) gelatinous envelope. C, reticulate zooglea of the same | individual cells, forming “ baciti,” “bacteria,” or “cocci” as

D, E, H, eolonics of Afyconostoc enveloped in diffluent matrix x 540). F,’ branched fruticosc zooglcea of Cladothrizx (slightly magnified). the case may be. By these means hundreds of thousands of

G, zoog] i ; a) “ae ieee fi . in tablets, | DUterium merismopedioides, Zopf, containing cocel arranged | cells may be produced in a few hours, and, according to the branched colonies. This may be due to the successive divisions 1 Brefeld has observed that a bacterium may divide once every half

rich ees in two or three planes instead of only across the long axis | hour, and its progeny repeat the process in the same time, One (—) or to displacements of the cells after division (as in the | bacterium might thus produce in twenty-four hours a number of zooglea conditions, &e., see fig. 3). segments amounting to many millions of millions.

Zooglaex.

species and the conditions (the medium, temperature, é&e.), enormous collections of isolated cells may cloud the fluid in which they are cultivated, or form deposits below or films on its surface ; A valuable charac- ‘ tersaresometimes® °° , obtained frome 3 o % theseappearances. When these dense ales “swarms ” of ve-

getative cells be-

come fixed in 4 yy¢. 6.—Charactcristic groups of Micrococci. (After matrix of their Cohn.) A, Micrococcus prodigiosus. B, M. vaccine.

own swollen con- tiguous cell-walls, they pass over into a sort of resting state as a so-called zoogloea (fig. 3).

One of the most remarkable phenomena in the life- history of the Schizomycetes is the formation of this zoogloea stage, which corresponds to the “ palmella” con- dition of the lower Alge. This occurs as a membrane on the surface of the medium, or as irre-

highly magnified.)

gular clumps or branched masses (sometimes several

inches across) sub- é merged in it, and ° consists of more or less gelatinous ma- trix enclosing in- numerable ‘ cocci,” “ bacteria,” or other

“ af

elements of there. 7.—Ascococcus bilirothit. (After Cohn.) It : . forms irregular colonies of zooglea containing

Schizomycete COD- innumerable micrococei. (x 65.)

cerned, Formerly

regarded as a distinct genus—the natural fate of all the various forms—the zoogloea is now known to be a sort of resting condition of the

Schizomycetes, the various elements being glued together, as it were, by their enormously swollen and diffluent cell-walls becoming con-

Fig. 8.—Bactertum zopfii. (After Kurth.) A, coils of the filamentous (lepto-

thriz) stage still actively growing. B, the same coils observed a few hours later ; the filaments have become cut up into segments by septa, the segments separating as rodlets (bacteria). C, the same coils a few hours later still; the rodlets broken up into yet shorter segments or cocci. (x 740.)
tiguous. The zoogloea is formed by active division of single or of several mother-cells, and the progeny appear to go on secreting the cell-wall substance, which then

C, zooglea stage of a Micrococcus, forming a close membrane on infusion —Pasteur's Mycoderma. (Very

'ent species,—spherical,

absorbs many times its volume of water, and remains as a consistent matrix, in which the cells come to rest. The matrix—7.e., the swollen cell-walls—in some cases consists mainly of cellulose, in

others chiefly of '" my- " at coprotein," the substance ie said to be met with in (2) the protoplasm ; the ma- aA trix in some cases is EA horny and resistent, in we

others more like a thick solution of gum. It is intelligible from the mode of formation that foreign bodies may be- come entangled in the gelatinous matrix, and compound zoogloese may arise by the apposition ig, %Puslva, meter, (sto stl of several distinct forms, growing and dividing (baciili); b, a pair of a common event in ma- Meili setvely growing end, dlvgingy cerating troughs (fig. 3, four segments) after treatment with alco- A). Characteristic forms holic iodine solution; c, d, e, 7, successive may be assumed by the

young zoogleea of differ-

stages in the development of the spores; r, a rodlet segmented in four, each segment containing one ripe spore; g}, g?, 9%, early stages in the germination of the spores (after being dricd several days); 14, A, 4, k,l, and m, successive stages in the germina- tion of the spore. (@ xX 250; all the rest

ovoid, reticular, filament- x 600.)

ous, fruticose, lamellar, &c.,—but these vary considerably as the mass increases or comes in contact with others. Older zoogloez may precipi- tate oxide of iron in the matrix, if that metal exists in small quantities in the medium. Under favourable conditions the elements in the zooglwa again become active, and move out of the matrix, distribute themselves in the surrounding medium, to grow and multiply as before' (fig. 4). If the zoogloea is formed on a solid substratum it may become firm and horny; immersion in water softens it as described above.

Fie. 10.—Bacillus anthracis. (After Koch.) A, Baciili mingled with blood-

corpuscles from the blood of a Guinea pig; some of the baciilt dividing. B,

the rodlets after three hours' culture in a drop of aqueous humour. They

grow out into long leptothrix-like filaments,*which become septate later, and

spores are developed in the segments. (x 650.)

Spores.—Spores or resting-cells are now known in many Spores. Schizomycetes (fig. 5). They may be formed in two ways. In Leuconostoc, Bacterium zopfit, Crenothrix, Beggratoa, and Cladothrix the spore is simply one of the smallest segments ("cocci") into which the filament at length breaks up. De Bary terms such forms "arthrosporous" (cf. figs. 8, 13, 14, and 16). In others the formation of the spore is "endosporous" (De Bary). It begins with the appearance of a minute granule in the protoplasm of a vegetative cell; this granule enlarges, and in a few

hours has taken to itself all the protoplasm, secreted a dense envelope, and is a ripe ovoid spore, smaller than the mother-cell, and lying loosely in it (cf. figs. 9, 11, and 12).

Pleomorphism.—As already stated, some Schizomycetes Pleo- have been shown to present as vegetative forms, or phases morph- in one and the same life-history, “cocci,” “bacteria,” *™

In the case of the simplest and most minute Schizomycetes (Micrococcus, &ec.) no definite spores have been discovered ; any one of the y vegetative micrococci may commence } a new series of cells by growth and | division. We may call these forms { “ asporous,” at any rate provisionally.

The spore may be formed in short or long segments, the cell-wall of which may undergo change of form to accom- modate itself to the contents. As a rule only one spore is formed in a cell, and the process usually takes place in a bacillar segment. In some cases the spore-forming protoplasm gives a blue reaction with iodine solutions. The spores may be developed in cells which are actively swarming, the movements not being interfered with by the process (fig. 5, D). The so-called “Kopfchenbacterien” of older writers are simply bacterioid segments with a spore at one end, the mother cell-wall having adapted itself to the outline of > the spore (fig. 5, F). The ripe spores Fre, 11—A, Bacitius an- of Schizomycetes are spherical, ovoid, yor miore Hanon or long-ovoid in shape, and extremely (, fig. 10), ie minute (e.g., those of Bacillus subtilis tiiped, fos «pedis measure 0°0012 mm. long by 0:0006 was a — mm. broad according to Zopf), highly a little too small— they refractive and colourless (or very dark, fiamster transversely ae probably owing to the high index of ste sage ea. X Fee) refraction and minute size). Themem- (fter “De Bate | 7 i, brane may be relatively thick, and even ‘tagments of filaments exhibit shells or strata.

The germination of the spores has now been observed in several forms with care. The spores are capable of germination at once, or they may be kept for months and

with ripe spores; 2-5, successive stages in the germination of the spores, the remains of the spore attached to the germinal rodlets. (x 600.)

even years, and are very resistent against desiccation, heat

and cold, &c. In a suitable medium and at a proper tem- perature the germination is completed in a few hours. The spore swells and elongates, and the contents grow forth to a cell like that which produced it, in some cases clearly break- ing through the membrane, the remains of which may be

\ \ \ \ VN Hi pt AN } i) /) W\ \\ \ Wi

\

i} i \ / Ly} | Fic. 12.—Bacillus subtilis. (After Strasburger). A, zooglea pellicle (x 500). B, motile rodlets (x 1000). ©, development of spores (x 800),

seen attaclied to the young germinal rodlet(figs. 5,9,and 1 L in other cases the surrounding membrane of the spore swells and dissolves. The germinal cell then grows forth into the

forms typical for the particular Schizomycete concerned.!

|

1 Cohn, Beitrige zur Biologie, passim ; Zopf, Die S; } spalispilze, 3d ed., 1885; De Bary, Morph. und Biol, der Pilze, &., 1884, and

“leptothrix-filaments,” and even spiral and curved forms known as “ spirillum,” ‘“‘ vibrio,” &c. On the other hand, several Schizomycetes which have been long and diligently investigated by the best observers show no such pleo- morphism. As examples of the latter we may select Bacillus megaterium (fig. 9) and numerous Micrococct which produce similar cells generation after generation. A remarkable example of a pleomorphic form is Clado- thriz dichotoma (fig. 16). According to Zopf this species passes successively through the stages known as “coccus,” “bacterioid,” ‘bacillar,” and “ leptothrix,” by mere elongation and division by transverse septa; the observer named declares that these

simple filaments have formerly names (Leptothrix parasitica f

31

TO Oo.0S Reg t0%.

received generic and specific

Son ey

o

1S, ctor a Pate ts

a iC)

oa prac tian

&

S

6

€ fore) EERE:

Ton,

ony eel SSea seine Ek Puabal re cor Sor QO

eae

eS He ESE ES

a ae

ase ae

Fig. 14.

Fic. 13.—Crenothrix kiihniana. a to e, cocci or spores,—c, d, and e, dividing ; J to n, filamentous stage. The filaments vary in shape, diameter, &c., and are fixed below; at 7 to m is seen the common investing sheath; m and j, the segments separating and escaping; in m the segments divide up still further eet ee as minute cocct or spores—all stages of division are seen.

x 600.

Fie. 14.—Beggiatoa alba, (After Zopf.) 1, a group of attached filaments (x 540); 2, a filament breaking up ; 3, 4, 5, portions of filaments treated with methyl- violet so as to show the septa, which are usually obscured by the sulphur granules in the filaments; in 5 some of the segments are undergoing longi- tudinal as well as transverse divisions prior to forming cocci (spores); 6, cocci becoming isolated (x 900).

and L. ochracea, Kiitz.). Certain of the threads then

partially break up, and the portions become slightly dis-

placed from the linear series ; these portions go on growing in a direction at an angle with the previous one, but still in contact, and thus produce the “ false-branching” to which Cladothriz owes its name. Finally the filaments break up into segments corresponding with the septa which have been formed across them. This fragmentation is peculiar in that the filaments separate first into shorter filaments, then into rodlets, and finally into “cocci.”

Portions of the filaments or branches may become separated

and travel with a gliding movement, or even become

more active and swarm by means of cilia. Such portions may break up into shorter filaments or rods which also

i Re Senet MN A

Vorlesungen tiber Bacterien, 1885. The enormous and scattered

literature on the morphology of Schizomycetes is collected to a great extent in the works cited.

EE

swarm. But, in addition to these straight and more or less rigid forms (which, it will be noticed, simulate Ehren- berg and Cohn's "genera" Micrococcus, Bactervum, Bacillus,

and Leptothric so

that any of them observed alone would undoubtedly have been formerly placed f apart in one of those " gene- fy ra"), it is interesting to find [/ that some of the filaments(become spirally twisted and simulate Spirdlum, Spwro- chete, and Vibrio, the dis- ° tinctions depending on the relative length and thick-

ness of the filament,

closeness or steepness of Moreover these twisted filaments also break up into shorter gliding or ciliated portions, which at length fall into rodlets and

the coils.

"cocci" as before.

A branched zoogloea form also occurs, and this con-

Vibrio according to stances. other species which

other Schizomycetes have now been shown to be more

or less pleomorphic, and the researchesof Lankester, Nageli, Zopf, Miller, Kurth, De Bary, and others

have laid the foun-

dation for a know- ledge of the cir- cumstances which induce the changes in form referred to ; it is at least certain that alterations in the nutritive me- dium, in the quan- tity of oxygen at the disposal of the organism, and in the temperature, &c., play their part in the matter.

It by no means follows, however, that because some species are pleomor- phic all must be so, and still less that no species of Schizo- mycetes—or only one—exist at all; those who deny the existence of species among the Schizo- mycetes on the evi- dence to hand must,

to be logically consistent, deny the existence of species But even if that be allowed, some name of similar intention must be employed to denote any group

altogether.

In Lankester's Bacterium rubescens we have an-

of organisms which within our experience exhibit periodi- cal repetitions of a process of development, 7.¢., all the individuals of successive generations go through the same phases periodically. It matters not that variations—ill-defined deviations from an average or "'type"—occur on the part of individuals or generations; the periodically repeated life-history or development marks what we term a Species.

The difficulties presented by such minute and simple organisms as the Schizomycetes are due partly to the few "characters" which they possess, and partly to the dangers of error in manipulating them ; it is anything but an easy matter either to trace the whole development of a single form or to recognize with certainty any one stage in the development unless the others are known. This being the case, and having regard to the minuteness and

ubiquity of these organisms, we should be very careful in accepting evidence as to the continuity or otherwise of any two forms which falls short of direct and uninterrupted observation. The outcome of all thesc considerations is that, while recognizing that the “genera” and “species” as defined by Cohn must be recast, we are not warranted in uniting any forms the continuity of which has not been directly observed ; or, at any rate, the strictest rules should be followed in accepting the evidence adduced to render the union of any forms probable.!

CLASSIFICATION. —The limits of this article prevent our ex- Classifi- amining in detail the system of classification proposed by Cohn, cation, or the modifications of it followed by other authorities. Zopf, in the third editjon of his work (1885), proposes a scheme based on the modern views as to the pleomorphism: we must refer to the original for the details, simply remarking that, apart from the ex- treme views accepted by the author, his system is impracticable to a degree and recognized by him as provisional only. Indeed any such classification must be provisional, for we are at the threshold only of a knowledge of the Schizomycetes.

The best starting-point for a modern classification of these organisms is that suggested by De Bary—the two modes of forma- tion of the spores,—and as a provisional scheme, and simply to facilitate comparison of the groups, we might perhaps employ De Bary’s two groups, and a third one to include those simple forms which show no trace of spore-formation. Many gaps exist, and many changes will probably have to be made. Meanwhile it

might be advisable to classify the Schizomycetes provisionally as follows : —

closely

and the

di é : ~”” Fia. 15.—Beggiatoa alba, (After Zopf.) tains cocci, bacterium-like cCurvea and spiral forms. G, D, separ

: ated spirally-wound pieces, which are or bacillar rods, or filaments freaking up still further in H. E,

resembling Leptothrix or motile spiri/lum form with a cilium at

: each end. (x 540.) circum-

is variable in a high degree. Many

| a

Group A. Aspores.

There are no spores distinct from the vegetative cells. I. Coccacna (figs. 6 and 7). Genera: 1, Micrococcus (and Streptococcus); 2, Sarcina (and Zopf's Merismopedia) ; 3, Ascococcus.

Group B. Arthrospores (De Bary).

The vegetative cells differ in shape, size, growth, or other eharacters from the spores: the latter are produced by segmenta- tion.

II. ARTHROBACTERIACER,

Genera: 4, Bacterium (fig. 8); 5, Leuconostoc; 6, Spirochete (1). ILI. LeprorricHEs. Genera: 7, Crenothrix (fig. 13); 8, Beggiatoa (figs. 14 and 15); 9, Phragmidothrix (2); 10, Leptothrix. IV. CLADOTRICHER. Genus: 11, Cladothrix (fig. 16).

Grovr ©. Endosporesx (De Bary).

Genera: 12 (figs. 9-12), Bacillus (and Clostridium); 18, Vibrio (2); 14, Spirillwm (at least in part).?

ive)

Sm,

Fig. 16.—Cladothriz dichotoma. A, branched plant, the branches in part spiral and of the form known as Vibrio (a) or Spirtilum (6) (slightly magnified). B, a long coiled branch more highly magnified. C, portion of branch resembling Spirillum at one end and Vibrio at the other. D, coiled

branches,— a, not segmented ; 6, ¢, segmented into rodlets and cocci. E, Spirochexte-like portions preaking up into rodlets and cocci.

a ee Ee Se

1 Ray Lankester, Quart. Jour. Micr. Sc., 1873 and 1876; Nageli and Buchner, Wiedere Pilze, 1882; Billroth, Untersuchungen tiber die Vegetationsformen der Coccobacteria septica, Berlin, 1874; Klebs, numerous papers in Archiv f. exp. Pathol. und Pharmacol. ; Kurth, Bot. Zeitung, 1883; Prazmowski, Biol. Centralblatt, 1884; Zopf, Zur Morph. der Spalipflanzen, Leipsic, 1882; Cienkowski, Zur Morpho- logie d. Bacterien, 1876.

2 Wor the definitions of the genera (and species) the reader is re- ferred to the special works, especially those of Zopf and De Bary ; also Winter-Rabenhorst, Kryptogamen Flora—Pilze, i., 1881; and Grove, Synopsis of the Bacteria and Yeast-Fungi, 1884.

Nutri- Nutrition.—Having no chlorophyll, the Schizomycetes of course | factor ; and other conditions also affect the matter, e.g., slightly tion, depend on other organisms for their carbonaceous food, and are | acid media are more fatal than neutral or feebly alkaline ones, either saprophytes—z.¢., live on the remains of dead organisms— | denser less so than thin ones (ceteris paribus), and so on. or parasites—z.e., obtain their food direct from living organisms. To illustrate the importance of these facts we may note Tyn- Pasteur, Nigeli, and others have shown that these organisms can | dall’s method of ‘discontinuous heating”: by boiling the soln- derive their carbon from very numerous and widely different | tions containing the spores for 5-10 minutes daily all the life was organic substances, ¢.g., sugars of all kinds, mannite, glycerine, | destroyed in two or three days, though an exposure of an hour or tartaric and other vegetable acids, &c., and even from ethyl- | more toa temperature of 100° C. did not kill the spores if not alcohol, benzoic, salicylic, and carbolic acids to some extent. | repeated. The explanation is that the spores which resist the Carbonic, formic, and oxalic acids, cyanogen, urea, and oxamide | first or second short boiling have time to begin germinating in are, however, useless for this purpose. The nitrogen and carbon | the interval, and they then succumb at once when the liquid is together may be obtained from leuciu, asparagin,

methylamine, | again boiled.} &c., or the nitrogen alone from these or urea, and compounds of Light, Electricity, Gravitation, &c.—The relations between these ammonia with vegetable acids or phosphorus. The best nutritive | and the functions of Schizomycetes have been partly investigated, substances are proteids (peptones) and sugars (glucoses); others | but the results must be passed over here. A few of the higher must be passed over here. The nature of the particular Schizo- | genera show polarity—or at any rate difference between base and mycete has to be studied as well as the solution, and external | apex.? agents affect the matter also. Certain minerals are of course Effects of Chemical Agents. —Oxygen. —Pasteur showed that, while Chem- necessary,-—sulphur, phosphorus, potassium (or rubidium or | some Schizomycetes require free oxygen like other plants, there istry. cesium), and calcium (or magnesium, barium, or strontium) being | are some which necd none, or at most very little—the extreme case indispensable. As one of many suitable nutritive solutions we | is perhaps still doubtful ; but ‘‘anaerobiotic” forms like Bacillus may select the following :— butyricus stand in sharp contrast to such exquisitely “ aerobiotic” . . : ones as Lacterium aceti, Bacillus subtilis, &c. A few are known to fee eee aia Me aaa flourish best—or at any rate they are more active—when supplicd THESMUMESUO MALO nena te eeerceeet eee 0°04 Cs, th ; fs th esvith, eae ag W@oteNern CGC Gt sa. iciis

406

PHystoLoay.—As in the case of other plants, we are here concerned with the functions of the Schizomycetes and their relations to the environment; for convenience, the subject may be treated under various headings. Limitation of space prevents our doing more than touch lightly upon such matters as the action of the Schizomycetes as ferments, and their relations to disease, though both subjects belong strictly to the physiology of their nutrition and actions on the euvironment.

the best average temperature is about $5° C., but the optimum may differ for each species and for each function. The same is generally true for the minimum and maximum temperatures, which have to be determined separately also. Remarkable phenomena are con- nected with the death-points of certain Bacilli, &c. The spores of some of these forms have been

frozen for days or weeks without injury, and some are said to have resisted temperatures as low as ~ 100° C., or even lower: it appears to be all but impossible to kill such spores by cold, High temperatures are more fatal; but the

SCHL ZO YC’ ts

spores of Bacilli have germinated after the fluid containing them was boiled for an hour, and even a temperature of 110° C. and higher has been withstood. The vegetative states are less re- sistent ; nevertheless the bacilli of anthrax were not killed by heating the fluid to 75-80° for an hour or more. Speaking generally, ripe spores are most resistent and germinating ones least so; dry cells or spores resist extreme temperatures better than normally saturated ones. Of course time is an important

Pasteur, Ann. de Chimie, 1862.

2 See Engelmann, Unters. aus d. Physiol. Lab. eu Utrecht, 1882; Cohn and Mendelssohn in Bettr. zur Biol. d. Pf, iti. Hft. 1, 1879; Pfetfer, Pflanzen-phystologie, ii. p. 156, 1881.

3 See Pasteur, Comptes Rendus, 1861-62; Nigeli, Theorie der Gahring , 1879; Schiitzenberger, Fermentation, 1876; Engelmann, Bot. Zeitung, 1881 and 1882; Pfeffer, Phanzenphysiologie, 1881.

4 See Pasteur, Comptes Rendus, 1883; Kurth, ‘Bacterium zopfii,” in Bot. Zeitung, 1883; Brefeld, Schtmmelpilze, iv.; sce also the literature on distribu- tion and oecurrence of Schizomycetes.

5 See Woodhead and Hare, Pathological Mycology, i., 1885. Further literature is there quoted.

Fermen-

| tation.

Rela- tions to disease.

SCHIZOMYCETES

attraction on the organism the reader is referred to his treatise, “Tocomotorische Richtungsbewegungen durch chemische Reize,” in Unters. aus dem bot. Inst. zu Tubingen, i. Hft. 3, 1884.

Fermentation and Putrefaction.—The growth and development of a Schizomycete in any organic medium results in a breaking down of the complex food-matcrials into simpler bodies, which may then become oxidized and still further decomposed. Such processes are known as fermentation in the wider sense. The particular kind of fermentation depends on the medium and on the species of Schizomycete, and may be affected by other eircum- stances ; as the process goes on volatile substances may escape and others remain behind. Where proteid substances are being decom- posed by Schizomycetes and evil-smelling gases escape, the fer- mentation is spoken of as putrefaction ; in certain cases, where intense oxidation follows and still further consumes the products of decomposition, the process has becn termed eremocausis. In a few instances a process of reduction sets in, as when sulphur salts are decomposed by Beggiatoa. The theory of FERMENTATION (9.v.) cannot be treated in detail here, but it is important to note that side by side, with the actions referred to another kind of action may goon. Many Schizomycetes excrete what are called “soluble ferments,” which are capable of changing proteids into peptones, sugar into glucose, and so on. These processes of inversion, Xc., result simply in an alteration of the proteid, &c., from the non-diffusible and non-assimilable condition to the diffusible and assimilable one, and are in no way destructive as are the fermenta- tions described above. Nevertheless it is the custom to speak of both as cases of fermentation ; the one series of changes renders the medium less and less capable of supporting life at every stage, the other series does not do so, yet the same name is frequently given to both kinds of action. It is a curious fact that the same Schizomycete may produce a different fermentation in each of two different media. The various fermentations are distinguished and valued according to the products which result; these bye-products are usually injurious to the ferment organism as they accumulate, and often complicate the investigation.

Of important fermentations due to Schizomycetes may be men- tioned those concerned in the making of vinegar and cheese, in the preparation of flax,

hemp, &c., in the souring and diseases of beer, wines, &c., the destruction of sugars, preserved food, &. Others are of importance in the soil, and in the destruction of organic matter in ponds, rivers, drains, &c. In fact, much of the raison d'étre of sanitary science may be referred here; and it may turn out to be still more true than we now know that Schizomycetes are important in agriculture.

In pathology the changes due to these organisms are at length being duly recognized. Apart from the comparatively harmless actions of those forms normally existing in the alimentary canal— Leptothriz aids in the decay of teeth, &e.—it is now ccrtain that some invasions are dangerous. The injurious effects of some Schizomycetes when introduced into open wounds, &c., against which the brilliant labours of Lister have been so successfully directed, are acknowledged everywhere; but it is important to recognize that on the whole the diseases due to organisms in the blood depend fundamentally upon changes of the same category as those referred to. Of course the fluids of a living body present complicated conditions, and the action of a patlogenous Schizo- mycete cannot be treated and studied simply as a typical fermenta- tion; but, although the conditions presented are involved and special, it cannot be doubted that common principles lie at the base of all the phenomena, and that the fluids of the diseased organism must be treated, so to speak, as fermentable media.

Numerous other fermentations of scicntific interest are due to Schizomycetes : ¢.g., those in which colours are formed, certain eases of phosphorescence, the ammoniacal fermentation of urine, &e.

ScHIZOMYCETES AND D1skASE.—The presence of Schizomycetes in the blood, tissnes, or organs of animals and man suffering from certain specifie diseases is admitted, and has naturally suggested the question—Are they accompaniments only or have they any causal relations to the diseased conditions? Their constancy in given cases excluded the former view. Next arose the discussion as to how the causal connexion comes about and in what it consists, a discussion which is still going on as to the details. The chief points now cstablished may be expressed generally somewhat as follows.

In a given specific disease, due to the action of a definite Schizomycete, the latter may be conceived to be injurious in

a

1 Watson Cheyne, Antiseptic Surgery, 1882; Duclaux, Chimie Biologique, 1883 ; Fitz, '* Ueber Sehizomyecten-Guhrungen," various papers in Ber. ad, deutsch. chem. Gesellschaft, 1876-1884; Lister, Pharm. Jour., 1877; Niageli, Theorie der Géhrung, 1879; Wortmann, Zeitschr. f. phystol. Chemie, Vi. ; Schtitzenberger, Fermentation, 1876; Museulus, " Ueber die Gahrung des Harnstoffs," in Pfliiger's Archiv, xif.; Pasteur, Ann, de Chim. et Phus., 1858, and various papers in Comptes Rendus, also Etudes sur ia Biére, 1876, and Etudes sur le Vin, 1866; Sehldssing and Mtintz, Comptes Rendus, \xxxiv., 1xxxix.; Pasteur: his Life and Labours, London, 1885; Sehrocter in Cohn's Beitr. zur Biol., Hft. 2, 1872; Van Tieghem, " Baetllus Amylobacter," in Comptes Rendus, 1879.

several ways. If it robs the blood or tissues of oxygen or of any other valuable constituent, or if its activity results in the excre- tion of poisonous substances or in their formation as products of degradation of the matrix, or if it simply acts more or less as a mechanical obstruction or irritant, —in any of these cases harm may result to the delicately adjusted organism of the host. It being known that Schizomycetes act thus in nutrient pabula outside the body, their rapid growth and multiplication inside can of course only be explained as due to their success in the pabula there met with, and are indications that they produce changes there which must result in abnormality so far as the host is concerned. This does not end the matter, however. The living tissues of a healthy animal exert actions which are antagonistic to those of the parasitic invader ; and itis now generally admitted that the mere admission of a Schizomycete into an animal does not necessarily cause disease. Were it otherwise it is difficult to see how the higher organisms could escape at all. Schizomycetes abound all over, about and around us; many, of course, are unable to live in the fluids of the body, but manyare able todoso. Something must therefore be placed to the action of the tissues of the host, which when healthy can "resist" the attempts of a Schizomycete to settle, grow, and multiply with fatal effect. Much can

undoubtedly be explained by this struggle for existence between the cells of the parasite and those of the healthy tissues invaded. But the higher organisms, again, present obstacles of other kinds to the lodgment of Schizo- mycectes: ciliary actions, active excretions, isolating processcs of tissue-formation, &c., may be mentioned. Thus not every Schizo- mycete met with in the body can do harm.

But even when a Schizomycete has gained acccss to the blood- vessels, lymph-passages, &c., and has succeeded in establishing itself and multiplying, there are other facts to be taken into

| account before we dismiss the question as to its relations to disease,

The rapidity of its growth may vary according to many circum- stances, —temperature, oxidation, &c.,—as well as the still partially obstructive action of the invaded organisin ; whether the parasite excretes a poison, or simply robs the host, or distributes injurious agents of any kind, it is clear that everything which favours it aids in intensifying its action. And this may be local or general also according to complex circumstances. Of course sores, open wounds, &c., niay render the access of a given Schizomycete very easy, and pave the way for its success in the tissues, &c., different strata of which may be exerting less and less resistance to its attacks. The study of this subject has led to the methods of modern surgery devised by Lister. It may be mentioned that Schizomycetes which produce bad effects on injured or dead tissues of wounds are not uecessarily able to live in the healthy organism, however deadly the poisonous products of their action may be when they succeed in establishing themsclves.

All these and many other facts, then, point to the conclusion that the mere presence of a Schizomycete in an organ or tissue is not sufficient proof of its causal relation to disease, and lead us to the following requirements to be satisfied before any such relation can be admitted (Koch) :—(1) given a specific disease in which a definite Schizomyccte is constantly detected, and with a constant disposition with respect to the tissues, organs, &c.,—this organism should be absent from animals free from the disease ; (2) the Schizomycete should be cultivated in nutrient media outside the body, kept pure for several “generations,” and obtained in some quantity by these means; (3) inoculation of a small amount of this pure cultivation should

reproduce the specific disease in a healthy animal; (4) the same foreign elements as before should be clearly detected in the tissues of the now diseased subject, and in the saine relations as before.

The satisfying of all these requirements is difficult, and the necessity of overcoming the difficulties has led to what may almost be termed a special branch of medical art. At the same time the majority of the principles which are here becoming recognized have long been known to biologists, and especially to botanists, and there are still numerous indications of a waut of botanical training on the part of writers on these subjects. It is impossible here to even mention all the methods devised for staining, prepar- ing, and examining tissues, &c., and the Schizomycetes they contain, or for cultivating these minute organisms under constant conditions on sterilized potatoes, bread-paste, jelly, blood-seram, &c., or in animal infusions or fluids, &c. Some of the more important points in cultivation have already been referred to; the litera- ture must be consulted for further details.* (H. M. W.)

2 Only a few authorities can be mentioned here, for the literature on pathogen- ous Sehizomyectes and methods is simply enormous; further references may be made to the works of Babes, Koch, Davaine, Pasteur, Chauveau, Bollinger, Fehleisen, Klein, Gaffky, Miller, Rosenbach, Oertel, Obermeyer, Burdon- Sanderson, Toussaint, Waldcyer, Watson Cheyne, Dreschfeld, and many others. Fliigge, ‘‘ Ferment und Mikroparasiten,” in Ziemssen’s Handbuch der Hygiene, Leipsie, 1883 ; Magnin, Zes Bactertes, Paris, 1878; Klein, Micro-organisms and Disease, 1884; Woodhead and Hare, Pathological Mycology, 1885. Valuable papers are also to be found in the following periodieals :—Brit. Med. Jour., Trans. of the Pathol. Soc. Virchow’s Archiv, Archiv f. exp. Pathol., Centralbl. f. d. med, Wiss., Bull. de V Acad, de Med., Deutsche med. Wochenschrift, The Lancet, Quart. Jour, of Micr. Sc., and others.

SCHLAGINTWEIT-SAKUNLUNSKI, Hermann von (1826-1882), the eldest of a band of brothers, all more or less noted as scientific explorers or students of foreign countries, sons of an oculist of Munich. Hermann was born on the 13th of May 1826. His first scientific labours were studies in

the Alps, carried on between 1846 and 1848 in association with his brother Adolf (born January 9, 1829). The publication of the Studien wber die physikalische Geographie der Alpen in 1850 founded the scientific reputation of the two brothers, and their reputa- tion was increased by their subsequent investigations in the same field, in which the third brother Robert (born Oct. 27, 1837) also took part. Soon after the publication of the Neue Untersuchungen tiber die phys. Geog. u. Geol. der Alpen (1854, 4to), the three brothers received, on the recommendation of Alex. von Humboldt, a commission from the East India Company to travel for scientific pur- poses in their territory, and more particularly to make observations on terrestrial magnetism. Their explorations extended over the period 1854-57, during which they travelled, sometimes in company, sometimes separately, in the Deccan and in the region of the Himalayas, even prosecuting their investigations beyond the frontiers of the Company's territory into the region of the Karakorum and Kuenlun Mountains. Hermann and Robert were the first Europeans who crossed the latter mountains, and it was in honour of that achievement that the former had the title or surname of Saktinltinski bestowed upon him (in 1864). The two returned to Europe in the summer of 1857, but Adolf, who remained to prosecute his explora- tions in Central Asia, was put to death by the emir of Kashgar on the 26th of August. Between 1860 and 1866 Hermann and Robert published in four volumes the "Results of a Scientific Mission to India and High Asia." The extensive collections of ethnography and natural history made by them were ultimately deposited in the Burg at Nuremberg through the intervention of the king of Bavaria (May 1877). Hermann spent the last years of his life chiefly in literary and scientific activity, partly at Munich partly at the castle of Jagernburg near Forchheim. He died at Munich on the 19th of January 1882.

His brother Robert was appointed professor of geography at Giessen in 1864, but his academical labours were sometimes inter- rupted by travels, especially in the United States, which furnished him with material for more or less important works. He died at Giessen, June 6, 1885. Of two other brothers, one, Edward (born March 23, 1831), killed in battle at Kissingen in 1866, made him- self known by an account of the Spanish expedition to Morocco in 1859-60. Emil (born July 7, 1835) is the author of several learned works relating to India and Tibet.

SCHLANGENBAD. See Scuwaxsacu.

SCHLEGEL, Avcusr Witurtm von (1767-1845), German poet, translator, and critic, was born on the 8th September 1767 at Hanover, where his father, J. Adolf Schlegel, was a pastor. He was educated at the Hanover gymnasium and at the university of Géttingen. Having spent some years as a tutor in the house of a banker at Amsterdam, he went to Jena, where he was made a pro- fessor, and received from the duke of Weimar the title of "Rath." Here he began his translation of Shakespeare, which was ultimately completed, under the superintend- ence of Tieck, by Tieck's daughter Dorothea and Count Baudissin. A revised edition of this rendering, which is considered one of the best poetical translations in the German language, has been issued by the German Shake- speare society. At Jena Schlegel contributed to Schiller's periodicals the Horen and the Musenalmanach; and with his brother Friedrich he conducted the Atheneum, which ranked among the most powerful organs of critical opinion in Germany. He also published a volume of poems, and carried on a rather bitter controversy with Kotzebue. At

this time the two brothers were remarkable for the vigour and freshness of their ideas, and commanded respect as the leaders of the rising Romantic school. In 1802 Schlegel went to Berlin, where he delivered lectures on art and literature; and in the following year he issued Ion, a tragedy in the antique style, which gave rise to a suggestive discussion on the principles of dramatic poetry. About the same time appeared his Spanish Theatre, in which he presented admirable translations of five of Calderon's plays ; and in another volume he gave transla- tions of Spanish, Portuguese, and Italian lyrics. In 1807 he attracted much attention in France by an essay in the French language, in which he compared Racine with Euripides. His lectures on dramatic art and literature, which have been translated into most European languages, were delivered at Vienna in 1808. Meanwhile he had been travelling in France, Germany, Italy, and other countries with Madame de Staél, who owed to him many of the ideas which she embodied in her work, De V Allemagne. In 1813 he acted as the secretary of the crown prince of Sweden, through whose influence the right of his family to noble

rank was revived. Schlegel was made a professor at the university of Bonn in 1818, and during the remainder of his life he occupied himself chiefly with Oriental studies, although he continued to lecture on art and literature, and in 1828 he issued two volumes of critical writings. In 1823-30 he published the Indische Bibliothek ; and as separate works appeared (1823) the Bhagavad-Gita with a Latin translation, and (1829) the Ramdjana. Schlegel was twice married—first to a daughter of Prof. Michaelis of Gottingen, then to a daughter of Prof. Paulus of Heidelberg. Both wives separated from him soon after their marriage. He died at Bonn on the 12th May 1845. As an original poet Schlegel is unimportant, but as a poetical translator he has rarely been excelled, and in criticism he exercised a strong influence by the emphasis with which he marked the distinction between classical and romantic literature. By his study of Sanskrit he helped to prepare the way for the development of the science of language.

In 1846-47 Schlegel's German works werc issued in twelve volumes by Bocking. There is also an edition of his (uwres, écrites en francais, and of his Opuscula Latina.

SCHLEGEL, Jonann Exsas (1718-1749), a German dramatic writer, was born at Meissen on the 28th January 1718. He was educated at Schulpforta and at the uni- versity of Leipsic. In 1743, having finished his studies, he became private secretary to his relative, Von Spener, the Saxon ambassador at the Danish court. Afterwards he was made professor extraordinary at the academy of Sorde, where he died on the 13th August 1749, Schlegel was a contributor to the Bremischen Beitrdge, and for some time, while he was living in Denmark, he edited a weekly periodical, Der Fremde. He was also known as a writer of clever poetical epistles. Incomparably his best works, however, are his dramas, which did much to prepare the way for the dramatic achievements of Lessing, by whom his genius was warmly appreciated. He wrote two lively and well-constructed comedies, the Triumph der guten Frauen and the Stumme Schinheit, the latter in alexandrines, the former in prose. Hermann and Kanut (in alexandrines) are generally considered his best tragedies.

His works were edited after his death by his brother, J. H. Schlegel, who had a considerable reputation as a writer on Danish history. Another

brother, J. Adolf Schlegel, an eminent preacher,

and author of some volumes of verse, was the father of August Wilhelm and Friedrich von Schlegel.

SCHLEGEL, Kart WitHELM Friepricn von (1772- 1829), known chiefly as an historian of literature, was the brother of August Wilhelm von Schlegel. He was born

at Hanover on the 10th March 1772. Having studied at Gottingen and Leipsic, he attracted some attention by a book on the Griechen und Rémer (1797), which was praised by Heyne. This work was soon followed by his Geschichte der Poesie der Griechen und Rémer. At Jena, where he lectured as a privat-docent at the university, he contributed to the Athenzum many striking critical articles, and a number of lyrical poems which were afterwards included in a volume entitled Gedichte. Here also he wrote Lucinde, an unfinished romance, which was held by some of the best of his contemporaries to be of a deeply immoral tendency, and Alarcos, a tragedy, in which he attempted without much success to combine romantic and classical elements. In 1802 he went to Paris, where he edited Europa, lectured on philosophy, and carried ou Oriental studies, some results of which he embodied in a well-known book, Ueber die Sprache und Weiasheit der Indier. In 1803 he and his wife joined the Roman Church, and from this time he became more and more opposed to the principles of political and religious freedom. He went to Vienna in 1808, and in the following year was engaged as imperial court secretary at the head- quarters of the archduke Charles. At a later period he was for some time councillor of legation in the Austrian embassy at the Frankfort diet, but in 1818 he returned to Vienna. Meanwhile he had published two series of lectures, Ueber die neuere Geschichte (1811) and Geschachte der alten und neuen Literatur (1815). After his return to Vienna from Frankfort he edited Concordia, and began the issue of his Stimmtliche Werke. He also delivered lectures, which were republished in his Philosophie des Lebens (1828) and in his Philosophie der Geschachte (1829). He died on the 11th January 1829 at Dresden, where he was delivering the course of lectures which appeared in 1830 under the title Phzlosophische Vorles- ungen, insbesondere tiber die

Philosopae der Sprache und des Wortes. His own collection of his works included ten volumes, and to this number five volumes were added after his death. A permanent place in the history of German literature belongs to Friedrich Schlegel and his brother August Wilhelm as the critical leaders of the Romantic school, which derived from them most of its governing ideas as to the characteristics of the Middle Ages, andas to the methods of literary expression. In their writings, too, there is the fullest and most impres- sive statement of the mystical spiritual doctrines of the Romantic school. Of the two brothers, August Wilhelm did the highest permanent service to his countrymen by his translations from Shakespeare and Calderon. The best of Friedrich's works is his Geschichte der alten und neuen Literatur, in which was presented for the first time a systematic account of the development of European literature as a whole.

Friedrich Schlegel's wife, Dorothea, a daughter of Moses Men- delssohn, was born at Berlin about the year 1770, and died at Frankfort in 1839. She was an eccentric but remarkably clever woman, and wrote or editcd several works, issued by her husband, — the unfinished romance Florentin (1801), the first volume of the Sammlung romantischer Dichtungen des Mittelalters (2 vols., 1804), and Lother und Maller (1805). By her first marriage she had a

son, Philip Veit, who became one of the most eminent painters of his day in Germany.

SCHLEICHER, Aveust (1821-1868), born at Meinin- gen on February 19, 1821, studied at the universities of Leipsic and Tibingen, became extraordinary professor of philology in Prague in 1850, removed to Jena as ordinary professor in 1857, and died there December 6, 1868. His work is characterized in the article Puttoxoey, vol. xviii.

: SCHLEIDEN, Marrmtas (1804-1881), was born at Hamburg in 1804. He studied law at Heidelberg and

practised as advocate in Hamburg till 1831, but not succeeding he studied botany and medicine at Gottingen and Berlin, and graduated in Jena in

1839, where he afterwards became professor of botany (1846-50). In 1863 he was called to Dorpat, but resigned the following year and returned to Germany, where he lived as a private teacher. He died at Frankfurt in 1881. His title to remembrance is twofold. Uniting the labours of two centuries of workers in vegetable histology, from Malpighi and Grew to Mirbel and Robert Brown, he proved that a nucleated cell is the only original constituent of the plant embryo, and that the development of all vegetable tissues must be referred to such cells, thus preparing the way for the epoch-making cell theory of Schwann; and his Prin- ciples of Scientific Botany, which went through several editions (1842-50), did much to shake the tyranny of the purely systematic Linnean school, whose accumulations he was accustomed irreverently to describe as "' hay." Despite a certain inability to criticize and verify his own hypotheses, he gave, both by his speculative activity and by the introduction of improved technical methods, so vivid an impulse to the younger botanists of his time as to have earned from De Bary the title of reformer of scientific botany. His botanical labours practically ceased after 1850, when he entered on various philosophical and historical studies. See ScHWANN.

SCHLEIERMACHER, Frieprich DanieL ERNst (1768-1834), theologian and philosopher, was the son of a Prussian army-chaplain of the Reformed confession, and was born November 21, 1768, at Breslau. In his fifteenth year the boy, who was of a weak constitution, was placed by his parents in a Moravian school at Niesky in Upper Lusatia, and two years later in the seminary of the same sect at Barby near Halle. Here Moravian theology proved inadequate to satisfy the deep religious needs and awak- ening intellect of the youth. It was particularly the doctrines of eternal punishment, of the deity and the substitutionary sufferings of Christ, and of the total corruption of human nature that were stumbling-blocks to him. He was also unable to make his own the peculiar religious experiences of his Moravian and pietistic teachers. The efforts of his strictly orthodox father and of the heads of the seminary to lead him to crush his doubts as sinful, and to shun modern theology and literature, tended only to strengthen his desire to explore the great world of know- ledge. Reluctantly his father gave him permission to leave Barby for the university of Halle, and the correspond- ence between the father and the son on this painful crisis in Friedrich's life supplies a striking illustration of a typical phase of distressing modern mental history. When Schleiermacher entered the

university of Halle (1787) the reign of pietism there had ceased, having given way to the rationalistic philosophy of Wolf with the critical theology of Semler, though the new philosophy of Kant was rapidly displacing Wolf's. As a student he pursued an independent course of reading and neglected to his permanent loss the study of the Old Testament and the Oriental languages. But he frequented the lectures of Semler and of J. A. Eberhard, acquiring from the former the principles of an independent criticism of the New Testa- ment and from the latter his love of Plato and Aristotle. At the same time he studied with great earnestness the writings of Kant and Jacobi. He commenced thus early his characteristic habit of forming his opinions by the process of patiently examining and weighing the positions of all thinkers and parties. But with the receptivity of a great eclectic he combined the reconstructive power of a profoundly original thinker. While yet a student he began to apply ideas gathered from the Greek philosophers in a reconstruction of Kant's system. At the completion

of his three years' course at Halle he obtained through the influence of the court-chaplain Sack an appointment as private tutor in the family of Count Dohna-Schlobitten, which he held upwards of two years, developing in a culti- vated and aristocratic household his deep love of family and social life. After short engagements in tuition and as locum tenens to a clergyman of the small town of Landsberg, he received (1796) the appointment of chaplain to the Charité Hospital in Berlin, a position which he held nearly six years, and which offered no scope for the development of his powers as a preacher. He was the more induced to seek the satisfaction of his mental and

spiritual necessities in the cultivated society of Berlin, and

in profound philosophical studies. This was the period in which he was constructing the framework of his pluloso- phical and religious system. It was the period too when he made himself widely acquainted with art, literature, science, and modern culture generally. He was at that time profoundly affected by German Romanticism, as represented by his friend Friedrich Schlegel, and it required all the energy of his moral nature and the

force of his intellect to preserve himself from its moral and mental extravagances. Of this his Conjidential Letters on Schlegel's Lucinde (1801), as well as his perilous relation to Eleonore Grunow, the wife of a Berlin clergyman, are proof and illustration. Gradually his sound moral nature, his deep religiousness, and his powerful intellect enabled him to emancipate himself entirely from the errors and weaknesses of a transient phase of mental and _ social history, and to appropriate at the same time the elements of truth and goodness which it possessed in rich measure. Romanticism unlocked for him the divine treasures of life and truth which are stored in the feelings and intuitions of the human soul, and thus enabled him to lay the founda- tions of his philosophy of religion and his ethical system. It enriched his imagination and life too with ideals ancient and modern, which gave elevation, depth, and colour to all his thought. Meantime he studied Spinoza and Plato, and was profoundly influenced by both, though he was never a Spinozist; he made Kant more and more his master, though he departed on fundamental points from him, and finally remodelled his philosophy ; with some of Jacobi's positions he was in sympathy, and from Fichte and Schelling he accepted ideas, which in their place in his system, however, received another value and import. The literary fruit of this period of intense fermentation and of rapid development was his "epoch-making" book, Reden tiber die Religion (1799), and his "'new year's gift" to the new century, the Monologen (1800). In the first book he vindicated for religion an eternal place amongst the divine mysteries of human nature, distinguished it from all current caricatures of it and allied phenomena, and de- scribed the perennial forms of its manifestation and life in men and society, giving thereby the programme of his subsequent theological system. In the Monologen he threw out his ethical manifesto, in which he proclaimed his ideas as to the freedom and independence of the spirit, and as to the relation of the mind to the world of sense and imperfect social organizations, and sketched his ideal of the future of the individual and society. In 1802, to his great advantage morally and intellectually, Schleier- macher exchanged the brilliant circle of Berlin Romanticists for the retired life of a pastor in the little Pomeranian town of Stolpe. Here he remained two years, which were full of pastoral and literary work, as well as rich in personal and moral progress. He relieved Friedrich Schlegel entirely of his nominal responsibility for the translation of Plato, which they had together undertaken, and regarded the completion of it as

the work of his life. The first volume was published in 1804, and the last (the

Republic) in 1828, At the same time another work, Grund- linten einer Kritik der bisherigen Sittenlehre (1803), the first of his strictly critical and philosophical productions, occupied him. ‘This work is a severe criticism of all previous moral systems, especially those of Kant and Fichte, Plato’s and Spinoza’s finding most favour; its leading principles are that the tests of the soundness of a moral system are the completeness of its view of the laws and ends of human life as a whole and the harmonious arrangement of its subject-matter under one fundamental principle; and, though it is almost exclusively critical and negative, the book announces clearly the division and scope of moral science which Schleiermacher sub- sequently adopted, attaching prime importance to a “‘Gtiterlehre,” or doctrine of the ends to be obtained by moral action. But the obscurity of the style of the book as well as its almost purely negative results proved fatal to its immediate success. In 1804 Schleiermacher removed as university preacher and professor of theology to Halle, where he remained until 1807, and where he quickly obtained a reputation as professor and preacher, and exercised a powerful influence in spite of the contradictory charges of his being an atheist, Spinozist, and pietist. In this period he wrote his dialogue the Weihnachtsfeier (1806), a charming production, which holds a place midway between his Heden and his great dogmatic work the Christliche Glaube, and presents in the persons of its speakers phases of his growing appreciation of Christianity as well as the conflicting elements of the theology of the period. After the battle of Jena he returned to Berlin (1807), was soon appointed pastor of the Trinity Church there, and the next year married the widow of his friend Willich. At the foundation of the Berlin university (1810), in which he took a prominent part, he was called to a theological chair, and soon became secretary to the Academy of Sciences. He was thus placed in a position suited to his powers and in domestic and social surroundings adapted to meet the wants of his rich nature. At the same time he approved himself in the pulpit and elsewhere as a large-hearted and fearless patriot in that time of national calamity and humiliation, acquiring a name and place in his country’s annals with Arndt,

Fichte, Stein, and Scharn- horst. He took a prominent part too in the reorganiza- tion of the Prussian church, and became the most powerful advocate of the union of the Lutheran and Reformed divisions of German Protestantism. The twenty-four years of his professional career in Berlin were opened with his short but important outline of theological study (Kurze Darstellung des theologischen Studiums, 1810), in which he sought to do for theology what he had done for religion in his Reden. While he preached every Sunday, he also gradually took up in his lectures in the university almost every branch of theology and philosophy—New Testament exegesis, introduction to and interpretation of the New Testament, ethics (both philosophic and Christian), dogmatic and practical theology, church history, history of philosophy, psychology, dialectics (logic and metaphysics), politics, pedagogy, and esthetics. His own materials for these lectures and his students' notes and reports of them are the only form in which the larger proportion of his works exist,—a circumstance which has greatly increased the difficulty of getting a clear and harmonious view of fundamental portions of his philo- sophical and ethical system, while it has effectually deterred all but the most courageous and patient students from reading these posthumous collections. Asa preacher he produced a powerful effect, yet not at all by the force of his oratory but by his intellectual strength, his devotional spirit, and the philosophical breadth and unity of his thought. In politics he was an earnest friend of

Philoso- phical systenl.

SCHLETDERMACHER

liberty and progress, and in the period of reaction which

followed the overthrow of Napoleon he was charged by

the Prussian Government with "'demagogic agitation" in conjunction with the great patriot Arndt. At the same time he prepared for the press his chief theological work Der christliche Glaube nach den Grundsdtzen der evan-

gelischen Kirche (1821-22; 2d edition, greatly altered, 1830-31). The fundamental principle of this classical work is, that religious feeling, the sense of absolute dependence on God as communicated by Jesus Christ

through the church, and not the creeds or the letter of Scripture or the rationalistic understanding, is the source and law of dogmatic theology. The work is therefore

simply a description of the facts of religious feeling, or of

the inner life of the soul in its relations to God, and

these inward facts are looked at in the various stages of

their development and presented in their systematic con- nexion. The aim of the work was to reform Protestant theology by means of the fundamental ideas of the Reden, to put an end to the unreason and superficiality of both supernaturalism and rationalism, and to deliver religion and theology from a relation of dependence on perpetually changing systems of philosophy. Though the work added to the reputation of its author, it naturally aroused the increased opposition of the theological schools it was sntended to overthrow, and at the same time Schleier- macher's defence of the right of the church to frame its own liturgy in opposition to the arbitrary dictation of the monarch or his ministers brought upon him fresh troubles. He felt himself in Berlin more and more isolated, although his church and his lecture-room con- tinued to be largely attended. But he prosecuted his translation of Plato and prepared a new and greatly altered edition of his Christliche Glaube, anticipating the latter in two letters to his friend Liicke (in the Studien und Kritiken, 1829), in which he defended with a masterly hand his theological position generally and his book in particular against opponents on the right and the left. The same year he lost his only son—a blow which, he said, "drove the nails into his own coffin." But he continued to defend his theological position against Hengstenberg's party on the one hand and the rationalists Von Colln and D. Schulz on the other, protesting against both subscrip- tion to the ancient creeds and the imposition of a new rationalistic formulary. In the midst of such labours, and enjoying still full bodily and mental vigour, he was carried off after a few days' illness by inflammation of the lungs. He died thinking '"'the profoundest speculative ideas which were one with his deepest religious feeling," and partaking of the sacrament of the Lord's supper, February 12, 1834.

Schleiermacher’s friend, the naturalist and poet Steffens, has left the following description of his appearance about the beginning of the century : —“ Schleiermacher was of small stature, a little deformed, yet hardly enough to disfigure him ; all his movements were animated, and his features in the highest degree expressive; a certain keen- ness in his glance produced perhaps a repellent effect; indeed, he appeared to see through every one; his face rather long, all his features sharply cut, the lips firmly closed, the chin projecting, the eyes animated and flashing, his look always serious, collected, and thoughtful.”

Sehletermacher’s Philosophical System.—A_ great antithesis lies at the basis of all thought and life—that of the real and the ideal, of organism, or sense, andintellect. But the antithesis is not abso- lute, for in life and being both elements are united—though with- out its presence life and thought would be impossible. In the

actual world the antithesis appears as reason and nature, in each of which, however, there is a combination of its two elements—the

ideal and the real,—the reason having a preponderance of the first and nature a preponderance of the second. At the basis of nature

lies universal reason as its organizing principle, and when reason

becomes a conscious power in man it finds itself in conflict as well as in harmony with external nature. The whole effort and end of human thought and action is the gradual reduction of the realm and the power of this antithesis in the individual, the race, and the world. Though the antithesis is real and deep, the human mind cannot admit its absolute nature ; we are compelled to sup- pose a transcendental reality or entity in which the real and the ideal, being and thought, subject and object, are one. Conscious- ness itself involves the union of the antithetic elements, and prior to moral action nature is found organized and reasou manifested

_or symbolized therein. We are ourselves proofs of the unity of the

real and the ideal, of thought and being, for we are both, our self-consciousness supplying the expression of the fact. As we have in ourselves an instance of the identity of thought and being, we must suppose a universal identity of the ideal and real behind the antithesis which constitutes the world. This supposition is the basis of all knowledge, for thought becomes knowledge only wheu it corresponds to being. The supposition may be called a belief, but it is so only in the sense in which belief appears in the religious department, where it is the ultimate ground of all action. The supposition is the basis of all ethics, for without the conviction of the correspondence of thought and reality action would be fruitless and in the eud impossible. It isabove all the substance of religious feeling, which is the immediate consciousness of the unity of the world, of the absolute oneness behind the infinite multiplicity of contrasts ; indeed, it is the religious conviction of the unity which is the best guarantee of the truth of the suppositions of philosophy. It is "the religious consciousness of the unity of the intellectual and physical world in God" which is to overcome the scepticism of the critical philosophy. But, though this unity must be laid down as the basis of knowledge, it is absolute and transcendental. In contrast with the "world," as the totality of being in its differen- tiation, this absolute unity, or God, in whom the real as manifold, and the spirit as one, find their unifying base, by its very nature is unphenomenal, indefinable, and inconceivable. The idea is outside the boundary of thought, though its necessary postulate, and it is no less inaccessible to religious feeling, though it is its life and soul. Neither member of the antithesis of the real and the ideal must be conceived as producing the other; they are both equally existent and equally constituent elements of the world; but in God they are one, and therefore the world must not be identified with Him. The world and God are distinct, but correlative, and neither can be conceived without the other. The world without God would be "chaos," and God without the world an empty "phan- tasm." But though God is transcendent and uuknowable He is immanent in the world. In self-consciousness God is present as the basis of the unity of our nature in every transition from an act of knowledge to an act of will, and vice versa. As far as man is the unity of the real and the ideal, God isin him. He is also in all things, inasmuch as in everything the totality of the world and its transcendental basis is presupposed by virtue of their being and correlation. The unity of our personal life amidst the

multiplicity of its functions is the symbol of God's immanence in the world, though we may not conceive of the Absolute as a person. The idea of the world as the totality of being is, like the correlative idea of God, only of regulative value ; it is transcendent, as we uever do more than make approaches to a knowledge of the sum of being. The one idea is the transcendental terminus a quo and the other the transcendeutal terminus ad quem of all knowledge. But though the world cannot be exhaustively known it can be known very extensively, and though the positive idea of God must always remain unattainable we are able to reject those ideas which involve a contradiction of the postulate of the Absolute. Thus the pan- theistic and the theistic conceptions of God as the supreme power, as the first cause, as a person, are alike unallowable, since they all bring God within the sphere of antithesis and preclude His absolute unity. On the other hand, the world can be known as the realm of antithesis, and it is the correlative of God. Though He may not be conceived as the absolute cause of the world, the idea of absolute causality as symbolized in it may be taken as the best approximate expression of the coutents of the religious conscious- ness. The unbroken connexion of cause and effect throughout the world becomes thus a manifestation of God. God is to be sought only in ourselves and in the world. He is completely immanent in the universe. It isimpossible that His causality should haveany other sphere than the world, which is the totality of being. "No God without a world, and no world without God." The divine omni- potence is quantitatively represented by the sum of the forces of nature, and qualitatively distinguished from them only as the unity of infinite causality from the multiplicity of its finite phenomena. Throughout the world—not excepting the realm of mind—absolute necessity prevails. As a whole the world is as good and perfect as a world could possibly be, aud everything in it, as occupying its necessary place in the whole, is also good, evil being only the necessary limitation of individual being.

Schleiermacher's psychology takes as its basis the phenomenal dualism of the ego and the non-ego, and regards the life of man as

the interaction of these elements with their interpenetration as its infinite destination. The dualism is therefore not absolute, and, though present in man's own constitution as composed of body and soul, is relative only even there. The ego is_ itself both body and soul,—the conjunction of both constitutes it; our " organization " or sense nature has its intellectual element, and our "intellect" its organic element. There is no such thing as "pure mind" or "pure body." The one general function of the ego, thought, becomes in relation to the non-ego either receptive or spon- taneous action, and in both forms of action its organic, or sense, and its intellectual energies co-operate ; and in relation to man, nature, and the universe tho ego gradually finds its true individuality by becoming a part of them, "every extension of consciousness being higher life." The specific functions of the ego, as determined by the relative predominance of sense or intellect, are either functions of the senses (or organism) or functions of the intellect. The former fall into the two classes of feelings (subjective) and perceptions (objective) ; the latter, according as the receptive or the spontaneous element predominates, into cognition and volition. : being is the object and in volition it is the purpose of thought : in the first case we receive (in our fashion) the object of thought into ourselves; in the latter we plant it out into the world. Both cogni- tion and volition are functions of thought as well as forms of moral action, It is in those two functions that the real life of the ego is manifested, but behind them is sedf-conseiowsness permanently present, which is always both subjective and objective—conscious- ness of ourselves and of the non-ego. This self-consciousness is the third special form or function of thought,—which is also called feeling and immediate knowledge. In it we cognize our own inner life as affected by the non-ego. As the non-ego helps or hinders, enlarges or limits, our inner life, we feel pleasure or pain. Esthetic, moral, and religious feelings are respectively produced by the reception into consciousness of large ideas, —nature, mankind, and the world ; those feelings are the sense of being one with these vast objects. Religious feeling therefore is the highest form of thought and of life ; in it we are conscious of our unity with the world and God; it is thus the sense of absolute dependence. Schleiermacher's doctrine of knowledge accepts the fundamental principle of Kant that knowledge is bounded by experience, but it seeks to remove Kant's scepticism as to knowledge of the Ding an sich, or Sein, as Schleiermacher's term is. The idea of knowledge or scientific thought as distinguished from the passive

form of thought—of esthetics and religion—is thought which is produced by all thinkers in the same form and which corresponds to being. All knowledge takes the form of the concept (Begrif) or the judgment (Urtheil), the former conceiving the variety of being as a definite unity and plurality, and the latter simply connecting the concept with certain individual objects. In the concept there- fore the intellectual and in the judgment the organic or sense element predominates. The universal uniformity of the production of judgments presupposes the uniformity of our relations to the outward world, and the uniformity of concepts rests similarly on the likeness of our inward nature. This uniformity is not based on the sameness of either the intellectual or the organic functions alone. but on the correspondence of the forms of thought and sensation with the forms of being. The essential nature of the concept is that it combines the general and the special, and the same combination recurs in being; in being the system of sub- stantial or permanent forms answers to the system of concepts and the relation of cause and effect to the system of judgments, the higher concept answering to “force” and the lower to the pheno- mena of force, and the judgment to the contingent interaction of things. The sum of being consists of the two systems of snb- stantial forms and interactional relations, and it reappears in the form of concept and judgment, the concept representing being and the judgment being in action. Knowledge has under both forms the same object, the relative difference of the two being that when the conceptual form predominates we have speculative science and when the form of judgment prevails we have empirical or historical science. Throughout the domain of knowledge the two forms are found in constant mutual relations, another proof of the funda- mental unity of thought and being or of the objectivity of know- ledge. It is obvious that Plato, Spinoza, and Kant liad contri- buted characteristic elements of their thought to this system, and directly or indirectly it was largely indcbted to Schelling for fundamental conceptions.

Schletermacher’s Ethics. —Next to religion and theology it was to the moral world, of which, indeed, the phenomena of religion aud theology were in his systems only constituent elements, that he specially devoted himself. In his earlier essays he endeavoured to point out the defects of ancient and modern cthical thinkers, particularly of Kant and Fichte, Plato and Spinoza only finding favour in his eyes. He failed to discover in previous moral systems any necessary basis in thought, any completeness as

regards the phenomena of moral action, any systematic arrangement of its parts, and any clear and distinct treatment of Specific moral acts and relations. His own moral system is an attempt to supply

these deficiencies,

In cognition –

SCHLEICHER A2Crnee

It connects the moral world by a deductive process with the fundamental idea of knowledge and being ; it offers a view of the entire world of human action which at all events aims at being exhaustive; it presents an arrangement of the

matter of the science which tabulates its constituents after the

model of the physical sciences ; and it supplies a sharply defined

treatment of specific moral phenomena in their relation to the

fundamental idea of human life as a whole. Schleiermacher defines ethics as the theory of the nature of the reason, or as the scientific treatment of the effects produced by human reason in the world of nature and man. Asa theoretical or speculative science it is purely descriptive and not practical, being correlated on the one hand to physical science and on the other to history. Its method is the same as that of physical science, being dis- tinguished from the latter only by its matter. The ontological basis of ethics is the unity of the real and the ideal, and the psychological and actual basis of the ethical process is the tendency of reason and nature to unite in the form of the complete organiza- tion of the latter by the former. The end of the ethical process is that nature (7.¢., all that is not mind, the human body as well as external nature) may become the perfect symbol and organ of mind. Conscience, as the subjective expression of the presupposed identity of reason and nature in their’ bases, guarantees the practicability of our moral vocation. Nature is preordained or constituted to become the symbol and organ of mind, just as mind is eudowed with the impulse to realize this end. But the moral law must not be conceived under the form of an “

imperative” or a “Sollen” ; it differs from a law of nature only as being descriptive of the fact that it ranks the mind as conscious will, or zweekdenkend, above nature. Strictly speaking, the antitheses of good and bad and of free and necessary have no place in an ethical system, but simply in history, which is obliged to compare the actual with the ideal, but as far as the terms “good” and “bad” are used in morals they express the rule or the contrary of reason, or the harmony or the contrary of the particular and the general. The idea of “free ” as opposed to necessary expresses simply the fact that the mind can propose to itself ends, though a man cannot alter his own nature. In contrast to Kant and Fichte and modern moral philosophers Schleiermacher reintroduced and assigned pre-eminent importance to the doctrine of the summum bonum, or highest good. It represents in his system the ideal and aim of the entire life of man, supplying the ethical view of the conduct of individuals in relation to society and the universe, and therewith constituting a philosophy of history at the same time. Starting with the idea of the highest good and of its constituent elements (Giter), or the chief forms of the union of mind and nature, Schleiermacher’s system divides itself into the doctrine of moral ends, the doctrine of virtuc, and the doctrine of duties ; in other words, asa development of the idca of the subjection of nature to reason it becomes a description of the actual forms of the triumphs of reason, of the moral power mani- fested therein, and of the specific methods employed. Every moral good or product has a fourfold character: it is individual and universal ; it is an organ and symbol of the reason, that is, it is the product of the individual with relation to the, community, and represelts or manifests as well as classifies and rules nature. The first two characteristics provide for the functions and rights of the individual as well as those of the community or race. Though a moral action may have these four characteristics at various degrees of strength, it ceases to be moral if one of them is quite absent. Allinoral products may be classified according to the predominance of one or the other of these characteristics. Universal organizing action produces the forms of intercourse, and universal symbolizing action produces the various forms of science ; individual organiz- ing action yiclds the forms of property and individual symboliz- ing action the various representations of feeling, all these constitut- ing the relations, the productive spheres, or the social conditions of moral action. Moral functions cannot be performed by the indi- vidual in isolation but

only in his relation to the family, the state, the school, the church, and society, —all forms of human life which ethical science finds to its hand and leaves to the science of natural history to account for. The moral process-is accomplished by the various sections of humanity in their individual spheres, and the doctrine of virtue deals with the reason as the moral power in each individual by which the totality of moral products is obtained. Schleicrmacher classifies the virtues under the two forms of Gesinnung and Fertigkeit, the first consisting of the pure ideal element in action and the second the form it assumes in relation to circumstances, each of the two classes falling respectively into the two divisions of wisdom and love and of intelligence and appli- cation. In his system the doctrine of duty is the description of the method of the attainment of ethical ends, the conception of duty as an imperative, or obligation, being excluded, as we have seen. No action fulfils the conditions of duty except as it combines the three following antitheses : reference to the moral idea in its whole extent and likewise to a definite moral sphere; connexion with exist- ing conditions and at the same time absolute personal production ; the fulfilment of the entire moral vocation every moincnt though

Religious _ system.

¢

4

i

SC H—SCH

Duties are divided with reference to the principle that every mau make his own the entire moral problem and act at the same time in an existing moral society. This condition gives four general classes of duty: duties of general association or duties with reference to the community and duties of vocation (Berufspflicht)—both with a (in which the indi-

it can only be done in a definite sphere.

(Rechtspflicht), universal reference, duties of the conscience vidual is sole judge), and duties of love or of personal association.

It was only the first of the three sections of the science of ethics —the doctrine of moral ends—that Schleiermacher handled with approximate completeness ; the other two sections were treated In his Christian Ethics he dealt with the subject the Christian consciousness instead of from that the cthical phenomena dealt with arc the light on each other, while the Christian system treats more at length and less aphoristically

very summarily. from the basis of of reason generally ; same in both systems, and they throw

the principal cthical realities—church, state, family, art, science, and society. Rothe, amongst other moral philosophers, system substantially, macher's. worked out in its psychological relations.

Schletermacher's Religious System.—From Lcibnitz, Lessing,

Fichte, Jacobi, and the Romantic school he had imbibed a pro- found and mystical view of the inner depths of the human per- sonality. The ego, the person, is an individualization of universal reason; and the primary act of self-consciousness is the first con- junction of universal and individual life, the immediate nuion or Thus every

marriage of the universe with incarnated reason, person becomes a specific and original representation of the uni- verse and a compendium of humanity, a microcosmos in which the world is immediately reflected. While therefore we cannot, as we have seen, attain the idea of the supreme unity of thought and being by either cognition or volition, we can find it in our own personality, in immediate self-consciousness or (which is the same in Schleiermacher's terminology) feeling. Feeling in this higher sense (as distinguished from "organic" sensibility, Empfindung), which is the minimum of distinct antithetic consciousness, the cessation of the antithesis of subject and object, constitutes like-

wise the unity of our being, in which the opposite functions of

cognition and volition have their fundamental and permanent background of personality and their transitional link. Having its seat in this central point of our being, or indeed consisting in the essential fact of self-consciousness, religion lies at the basis of all thought and action. At various periods of his life Schleier- macher uscd different terms to represent the character and relation of religious feeling. In his earlier days he called it a feeling or intuition of the universe, consciousness of the unity of reason and nature, of the infinite and the eternal within the finite and the temporal. In later life he described it as the feeling of absolute

dependence, or, as meaning the same thing, the consciousness of

being in relation to God. In our consciousness of the world the feelings of relative dependence and relative independence are found; we are acted upon, but we also react. In our religious conscious- ness the latter element is excluded, and everything within and without us is referred to its absolute cause, that is, God. But, when we call this absolute cause God, the name stands solely as indicating the unknown source of our receptive and active existence ; on the one hand it means that the world upon which we cau react is not the source' of the feeling, on the other, that the Absolute is not an object of thought or knowledge. This feeling of absolute dependence can arise only in combination with other forms of con- sciousness. We derive the idea of a totality by means of its parts, and the trauscendental basis of being comes to us through the agency of individual phenomena. As in every affection of our being by individual phenomena we are brought into contact with the whole universe, we are brought into contact with God at the same time as its transcendental cause. This religious fecling is not know- ledge in the strict sense, as it is purely subjective or immediate ; but it lies at the basis of all knowledge. As immediate know- ledge, however, it is no more than the consciousness of the unity of the world, a unity which can never be reached by human inquiry. Religious truths, such as the determination of all things by God, are simply the implications of the feeling of absolute dependence. While that feeling is the characteristic of religion generally, this assumes various forms as the religions of the world. 'The so-called natural as distinguished from positive reli- gion, or the religion of reason, is a mere abstraction. All religions are positive, or their characteristics and value are mainly deter- mined by the manner in which the world is

conceived and imagined. But these varying conceptions with their religious meaning become religiously productive only in the souls of religious heroes, who are the authors of new religions, mediators of the religious life, founders of religious communities. For religion is essentially social. It everywhere forms churches, which are the necessary instruments and organs of its highest life. The specific feature of Christianity is its mediatorial element, its profound feeling of the striving of the finite individual to reach the unity of the infinite

bases his with important departures, on Schleier- In Beneke's moral system his fundamental idea was

system the antithetic

whole, and its conception of the way in which Deity deals with this effort by mediatorial agencies, which are both divine and human. It is the religion of mediatorial salvation, and, as Schlciermacher emphatically taught in his riper works, of salvation through the mediation of Christ ; that is, its possessors are con- scious of having been delivered by Jesus of Nazareth from a cou- dition in which their religious consciousness was overridden by the sense-consciousuess of the world and put into one in which it domi- nates, and everything is subordinated to it. The consciousness of being saved in this sense is now transmitted and mediated by the Christian church, but in the case of Jesus, its originator, it was an entirely new and original factor in the process of religious develop- ment, and in so far, like every new and higher stage of being, a supernatural revelation. It was at the same time a natural attain- ment, in as far as man's nature and the universe were so constituted as to involve its production. The appearance of the Saviour in human history is therefore as a divine revelation neither absolutely supernatural nor absolutely beyond reason, and the controversy of the 18th century between the rationalists and supernaturalists rests on false grounds, leads to wrong issues, and each party is right and wrong (see RATIONALISM). As regards Chistian theology, itis not its business to formulate and establish a system of objective truth, but simply to present in a clear and connected form a given body of Christian faith as the contents of the Christian consciousness. Dogmatic theology is a connected and

accurate account of the doc- trine held at a particular time in a given sectionof the Christian church. But such doctrines as constitute no integral part of the Christian consciousness—e.g., the doctrine of the Trinity—must be excluded from the theological system of the evangelical theologian. As regards the relation of theology and philosophy, it is not one of dependence or of opposition on either side, but of complete inde- pendence, equal authority, distinct functions, and perfect harmony. Feeling is not a mental function subordinate to cognition or voli- tion, but of equal rank and authority; yet feeling, cognition, and volition alike conduct to faith in the unknown Absolute, though by different paths and processes.

The marked feature of Schleiermacher's thought in every depart- ment is the effort to combine and reconcile in the unity of a conceptions of other thinkers. He is real- istic and idealistic, individualistic and universalistic, monistic and dualistic, sensationalist and intellectualist, naturalist and super- naturalist, rationalist and mystic, gnostic and agnostic. He is the prince of the Vermittler in philosophy, ethics, religion, and theology. But he does not seek to reconcile the antitheses of

thought and being by weakening and hiding the points of

difference ; on the contrary, he brings them out in their sharpest outlines, His method is to distinctly define the opposing elements and then to seek their harmonious combination by the aid of a deeper conception. Apart from the positive and permanent value of the higher unities which he succeeds in establishing, the light and suggestiveness of his discussions and treatment of the great points at issue in all the principal fields of human thought, un- satisfactory as many of his positions may be considered, make him one of the most helpful and instructive of modern thinkers. And, since the focus of his almost universal thought and inquiry and of his rich culture and varied life was religion and theology, he must be regarded as the classical representative of modern effort to reconcile science and philosophy with religion and theology, and the modern world with the Christian church.

Schleiermacher's collected works have been published in three sections: I. Theological, II. Sermons, 1II. Philosophical and Miscellaneous, Berlin, 1835-64, in 30 vols. Of lives of him the best are his own correspondence.

Aus Schleter- macher's Leben in Briefen, published by W. Dilthey (Berlin, 1858-1863, in 4 vols., Eng. transl. by Rowan); Leben Schleiermacher's by Wilhelm Dilthey (vol. i., the period from 1768-1804, all published as yet); Mriedrich Schletermacher, etn Lebens- u. Charakterbild, by D. Schenkel (Elberfeld, 1868). The accounts and critiques of his philosophy, ethics, and theology are numerous; some of the most valuable are—J. Schaller, Vorlesungen uber Schleiermacher (Halle, 1844); Weis- senborn, Darstellung und Kritik der Schletermacherschen Glaubenslehre (1849) ; Sicgwart, "Schleiermacher's Erkenntnisstheorie und ihre Bedeutung fiir die Glaubenslehre," in the Jahrbo. f. Deut. Theol., vol. ii. pp. 267-827, 829-864 ; Zeller, '¢Sehleicrmacher's Lehre von der Perséniichkeit Gottes," in the Theol. Jahrbb., 1842, pp. 263 sg.; F. Vorlander, Schleiermacher's Sittenlehre (Marburg, 1851) ; W. Bender, Schleiermachers Theologte mit thren philosophischen Grundlagen (1876-78). See also the historics of philosophy and theology by Zcller, Ueberweg, Chalybseus, Dorner, and Gass, and the article by the last-named in Herzog's Encyklopddie. (Ce aS)

SCHLESWIG (Danish Slesviy), the capital of the Prussian province of Schleswig-Holstein, is situated at the west end of the long narrow arm of the sea called the Schlei, 30 miles to the north-west of Kiel. The town consists mainly of a single street, 33 miles long, forming a semicircle round the Schlei, and is divided into the Altstadt (with the Holm), the Lollfuss, and the Friedrichsberg. The principal church, erected aS a cathedral about 1100, but renewed in the Gothic style in the 15th century, contains a very fine carved oak altar- screen, regarded as the most valuable work of "art im

Schleswig-Holstein. Between Friedrichsberg and Lollfuss is the old chateau of Gottorp, now despoiled of its art treasures and used as barracks. The former commercial importance of the town has disappeared, and the Schlei now affords access to small vessels only. Fishing and the manufacture of a few articles of common use are the chief occupations of the inhabitants. The population in 1885 was 15,187, all Protestants except about 250 Roman Catholics and 70 Jews.

Schleswig (ancient forms Sltesthorp, Sliaswic, t.e., the town or bay of the Slia or Schlei) is a town of very remote origin, and seems to have been a

trading place of considerable importance as early as the 9th century. It served asa medium of commercial intercourse between the North Sea and the Baltic, and was known to the old Arabian geographers. The first Christian church in this district was built here by Ansgarius about 850, and it became the seat of a bishop about a century later. The town also became the seat of the dukes of Schleswig, but its commerce gradually dwindled owing to the rivalry of Liibeck, the numerous wars in which the district was involved, and the silting up of the Schlei. At the partition of 1544 the old chateau of Gottorp, originally built in 1160 for the bishop, became the residence of the ducal or Gottorp line of Schleswig-Holstein, which remained here till expelled by Frederick IV. in 1718. From 1731 to 1846 it was the seat of the Danish governors of the duchies. In the wars of 1848 and 1864 Schleswig was an important strategical point on account of its proximity to the Danewerk, and was occupied by the different contending parties in turn. It has been the capital of Schleswig- Holstein since its incorporation by Prussia.

To the south of Schleswig are the scanty remains of the Danewerk or Dannewirke, a line of entrenchments between the Schlei and the Treene, believed to have been originally thrown up in the 9th century or even earlier, and afterwards repeatedly strengthened and enlarged. After the union of Schleswig and Holstein it lost its importance as a frontier defence, and was allowed to fall into disrepair. The Danewerk was stormed by the Prussians in 1848, but was afterwards so greatly extended and strengthened by the Danes tliat it would have been almost impregnable if defended by a sufficient number of troops. In the war of 1864, however, the Danish army was far too small for this task, and General de Meza abandoned the Danewerk without striking a blow, a step which caused deep disappointment to the Danes and led to the dismissal of the general. Since then the works have been entirely levelled.

SCHLESWIG-HOLSTEIN, a maritime province in the north-west of Prussia, formed out of the once Danish duchies of Schleswig-Holstein and Lauenburg, is bounded on the W. by the German Ocean, on the N. by Jutland, on the E. by the Baltic, Liibeck, and Mecklenburg, and on the 8, by Mecklenburg and the lower course of the Elbe (separating it from Hanover). It thus consists of the southern half of the Cimbric peninsula, and forms the

connecting link between Germany and Denmark. In addition to the mainland, which decreases in breadth from south to north, the province includes several islands, the most important being Alsen and Fehmarn in the Baltic, and Rém, Sylt, and Fohr in the North Sea. The total area of the province is 7280 square miles, 450 of which belong to the small duchy of Lauenburg in the south-east corner, while the rest are divided almost equally between Holstein to the south of the Hider and Schleswig to the north of it. From north to south the province is about 140 miles long, while its breadth varies from 90 miles in Holstein to 35 miles at the narrower parts of Schleswig.

Schleswig-Holstein belongs to the great North-German plain, of the characteristic features of which it affords a faithful reproduction in miniature, down to the continua- tion of the Baltic ridge or plateau (see Germany) by a range of low wooded hills skirting its eastern coast and culminating in the Bungsberg (570 feet), a little to the north of Eutin. This hilly district contains the most productive land in the province, the soil consisting of diluvial drift or boulder clay. The central part of the province forms practically a continuation of the great Liineburg Heath, and its thin sandy soil is of little use in cultivation. Along the west coast extends the “ Marsh-

land,” a belt of rich alluvial soil formed by the deposits of the German Ocean, and varying in breadth from five to fifteen miles. It is seldom more than a few feet above the sea-level, while at places it is actually below it, and it has consequently to be defended by an extensive system of dykes or embankments, 25 feet high, resembling those of Holland. The more ancient geological formations are scarcely met with in Schleswig-Holstein. The contrast between the two coast-lines of the province is very marked. The Baltic coast, about 300 miles in length, has generally steep well-defined banks and is very irregular in form, being pierced by numerous long and narrow fjords, which run deep into the interior of the land and often afford excellent harbours. The islands of Alsen and Fehmarn are separated from the coast by very narrow channels. The North Sea coast (200 miles), on the other hand, is very low and flat, and its smooth outline is interrupted only

by the estuary of the Eider and the peninsula of Eiderstedt. Dunes or sand-hills, though rare on the protected main- land, occur on Sylt and other islands, while the small unprotected islands called “ Halligen” are being gradually washed away by the sea. The numerous islands on the west coast probably formed part of the peninsula at no very remote period, and the sea between them and the mainland is very shallow and full of sandbanks. The climate of Schleswig-Holstein is mainly determined by the proximity of the sea, and the mean annual tempera- ture, varying from 45° Fahr. in the north to 49° Fahr. in the south, is rather higher than is usual in the same latitude. Rain and fog are frequent, but the climate is on the whole very healthy. The lower course of the Elbe forms the southern boundary of Holstein for 65 miles, but the only river of importance within the pro- vinee is the Eider, which rises in Holstein, and after a course of 120 miles falls into the North Sea, forming an estuary 3 to 12 miles in breadth. It is navigable from its mouth as far as Rendsburg, and the waterway between the two seas is completed by a canal from Rendsburg to Kiel. The new Baltic Canal, which is to be navigable for large vessels, will also intersect Holstein. There are numerous lakes in north-east Holstein, the largest of which are the Ploner See (12 square miles) and the Selenter See (9 square miles).

Of the total area of the province 58°3 per cent. is occupied by tilled land, 28°5 per cent. by meadows and pastures, and only 6°4 per cent. by forests. ‘The ordinary cereals are all cultivated with success and there is generally a considerable surplus for exportation ; rape is grown in the marsh lands and flax on the east coast, while large quantities of apples and other fruit are raised near Altona for the Hamburg and English markets. In 1883 the province contained 156,534 horses, 727,505 cattle, 320,768 sheep, 268,061 pigs, and 42,580 goats. The marsh lands afford admirable pasture, and a greater proportion of cattle (65 per 100 inhabitants) is reared in Schleswig-Holstein, mainly by small owners, than in any other Prussian province. Great numbers of fat cattle are exported to England. The Holstein horses are also in request, but sheep- farming is comparatively neglected. Bee-keeping is found a productive industry, and in 1883 the province possessed 113,836 hives. The hills skirting the bays of the Baltic coast are generally pleasantly wooded, but the forests are nowhere of great extent except in the duchy of Lauenburg. The fishing in the Baltic is productive ; Eckernforde is the chief fishing station in Prussia. The oysters from the beds on the west coast of

Schleswig are widely known under the misnomer of ‘‘ Holstein natives.” The mineral resources of the province are almost confined to a few layers of rock-salt near Segeberg. The manufacturing industry is also insignificant and does not extend much beyond the large towns, such as Altona, Kiel, and Flensburg. The shipbuilding of Kiel and other seaports is, however, important ; aud lace is made by the peasants of North Schleswig. The commerce and shipping of Schleswig-Holstein, stimulated by its position between two seas, as well as by its excellent harbours and waterways, are much more prominent than its manufactures. Kiel is the chief seaport of Prussia, while an oversea trade is also carried on by Altona and Flensburg. The main exports are grain, cattle, horses, fish, and oysters, in return for which come timber, coal, salt, wine, and

pe

colonial produce. The trading fleet of Schleswig-Holstein in 1884 consisted of 713 vessels (142 steamers), with a total burthen of 115,600 tons; more than half the ships belonged to the North Sea coast, but 90 per cent. of the steamers and 65 per cent. of the tonnage must be credited to the Baltic.

The population of the province in 1880 was 1,127,149, compris- ing 1,111,383 Protestants, 8903 Roman Catholics, and 3522 Jews. he urban and rural communities are in the proportion of 4 to 6. About 38 per cent. of the population are supported by agriculture, 26 per cent. by manufacturing industry, 10 per cent. by trade, while 12 per cent. are domestic servants and day-labourers, 6 per cent. is absorbed by the official and professional classes, and 54 per cent. by those who returned no occupation. The great bulk of the Holsteiners and more than half the Schleswigers are of genuine German stock, but there are about 150,000 Danes in the north part of Schleswig. Among the Germans the prevalent tongue is Low German, but the North Frisians on the west coast of Schleswig and the North Sea islands (about 30,000 in all) still speak a Frisian dialect, which, however, is gradually dying out. The peninsula of Angeln, between the Gulf of Flensburg and the Schlei, is supposed to have been the original seat of the English, and most

observers profess to see a striking resemblance between this

district and the counties of Kent and Surrey. The peasants of Dithmarschen also retain many of their ancient peculiarities. The boundary between the Danish and German languages is approxi- mately a line between Flensburg and Tondern ; not more than 15 per cent. of the entire population of the province speak Danish as their mother-tongue. The chief educational institution in

Schleswig-Holstein is the university of Kiel; and the excellenee of

the ordinary school system is proved by the fact that in 1883-84 the Schleswig-Holstein recruits showed a smaller proportion of illiter- acy (0°11 per cent.) than those from any other part of the German empire. Schleswig is the official capital of the province, but Altona and Kiel are the largest towns, the former being also the headquarters of an army corps and the latter the chief naval station of Germany. Kiel and Fricdrichsort are fortified, and the old lines of Diippel are also maintained. The province sends ten members to the reichstag and nineteen to the Prussian house of deputies. The provincial estates meet in Rendsburg.

History.—The history of the southern part of the Cimbric peninsula is the record of a struggle between the Danes and the Germans, ending in the meantime in favour of the latter. The earliest inhabitants of whose existence we have any trace seem to have been of German stock, and German authorities maintain that it was the emigration to England of the Jutes and Angles that first gave the Scandinavian or Danish element scope to develop in the district. In the early part of the ninth century we find Charlemagne in conflict with the Danish rulers of South Jutland or Schleswig 1 and establishing a ‘‘ Danish mark ” between the Eider and the Schlei. Some attempt to introduce Christianity was also made at this time by Bishop Ansgarius, but it was not till the middle of the following century that the new creed found anything approaching to general acceptance. In 1027 the Danish king Knud (the English Canute) obtained from Conrad the recognition of Schleswig’s independence of the empire, and henceforth the Eider became the recognized boundary between Germany and Denmark (‘‘Eidora Romani terminus imperii”). Schleswig, though a Danish province, was not merged in the other possessions of Denmark, but enjoyed a certain

measure of independence under the rule of viceroys or dukes cliosen from the younger sons of the royal house. One of the most vigorous of these rulers was Knud Laward (1115-1131), who extended his sway over the Wendish district of Wagria (see below) and held it as a fief of the German empire. He was thus the first ruler of Schleswig to hold that singular double relationship to the king of Denmark and the German empire which afterwards became so important a factor in the history of the country. Valdemar, son of Knnd, became king of Denmark, and Knud's grandson, King Valdemar I1., conferred the duchy of South Jutland or Schleswig on his son Abelin 1232. The terms of this investment afterwards became a fertile subject of dispute between the dukes and the crown, the former maintaining that they held their land as an hereditary and inalienable fief, while the kings argued that the fief was revocable at pleasure. The dukes, however, assisted by their kinsmen, the counts of Holstein, succeeded in establishing their position and finally remained in undisputed possession of theirduchy. In 1326 Duke Valdemar V. of Schleswig was raised to the throne of Denmark through the influence of his uncle, Count Gerhard of Holstein, to whom in return he eeded his duchy. Valdemar had to abdicate in 1330 and received his duchy back again, granting, however, the "'Constitutio Valde- maria," which ensured the rights of eventual succession in Schleswig to the Holstein counts. This compact came to fruition in 1875, when the male ducal line became extinct, and Margaret of Denmark formally recognized the union of the two territories in 1386. Henceforth we have the same prince ruling over Schleswig and

1The name of Schleswig did not come into general use for this part of the Cimbric peninsula until the end of the 14th century.

Holstein, holding the first as a fief of the Danish crown and the other as a fief of the German empire.

The history of Holstein before its union with Schleswig has been partly indicated in the foregoing paragraph. Nordalbingia, or the land to the north of the Elbe, was inhabited by the Saxons, under whom it was divided into four gaws or hundreds :—-DITHMARSCHEN (q.v.) on the west, Holstein proper or Holtsaten ('men of the forest") in the middle, Wagria on the east, and Stormarn on the south. The Nordalbingians were the last of the Saxons

to be sub- dued by Charlemagne (804), who gave Wagria to his Wendish allies the Obotrites, and established a Wendish mark on their frontier at the same time that he established a Danish mark on the Hider. The other three gaus were incorporated with the duehy ef Saxony, Dithmarschen being ineluded in the countship of Stade while Holstein and Stormarn had a count of their own. In 1110 the countship of Holstein was conferred upon Adolphus I. of Schauenburg, who founded the influential line that eventually ruled over Schleswig-Holstein. Wagria was added to Holstein by Adolphus IJ. about 1140. In the beginning of the 18th century the Danish kings extended their sway over all Gcrman territory to the north of the Elbe, and their conquests were confirmed by an imperial grant in 1214. This state of affairs, however, was of no long continuance, and Adolphus III. of Holstein succeeded in re- establishing his independence in 1225. The Holstein family now became split up into several branch-lines, of which that of Rendsburg proved the most lasting and important. A daughter of this line married Duke Abel of Schleswig, and the Holstein counts lent faithful aid to their kinsmen in resisting the encroach- ments and claims of the kings of Denmark. In the distraeted state of Denmark at the beginning of the 14th century Count Gerhard of Holstein became the practical ruler of the kingdom, but

preferred to place the crown on the head of his nephew Valdemar.

Legally speaking, Holstein remained a mediate fief of Saxony; but with the deeline of the Saxon duehy this relationship became obscured, and, when the Holstein lands were ereated a duchy in 1474, the new duke held his lands directly from the emperor.

In 1448 the royal line of Denmark became extinct, and the erown was offered to Adolphus VII. of Schleswig-Holstein, who refused it for himself but exerted his influence to secure it for his nephew Christian of Oldenburg. Adolphus died in 1459, leaving no sons. Christian was the legal heir of Schleswig, but his claims to Holstein were by no means so strong. The estates of Schleswig- Holstein, however, decided in his favour on the plea that the duchies? could not be separated, and cxacted from him a confirma- tion of this indissoluble connexion. It was also formally stipulated that the duchies should never be actually incorporated with the kingdom of

Denmark, while the hereditary nature of the fief was given up and the estates acquired the right to choose as their duke any one of Christian's descendants. This Succession Act was the basis of the union of the two duchies for the next four hundred years, and the practical eontradiction between their own inseparable connexion and their feudal duty to different sovereigns is at once the cause and the explanation of the complicated " Schleswig- Holstein question."

Now follows a series of endless shiftings, divisions, and reunions of the two duchies. After 1580 the various eollateral lines of the Oldenburg family thus formed are represented by two main branches,—the royal or Gliickstadt line and the Gottorp or ducal line. In the division of Schleswig-Holstein between these two no regard was paid to the boundary of the Eider ; each of them ruled over detached parts of both duchies, though the whole of Schleswig was still under the sovereignty of Denmark and the whole of Holstein under that of Germany. Practically Schleswig came to be regarded merely as a part of Denmark, while Holstein's connexion with Germany preserved for it a flicker of independence. In 1660 Denmark became an absolute monarchy and the principle of female succession was acknowledged. As in Schleswig-Holstein the right of inheritance was confined to the male line, the policy of Denmark was vigorously directed towards doing away as far as possible with all separate rights in the duchy and to getting the Gottorp or ducal portions into the possession of the crown. This policy was naturally more suceessful in Schleswig than in Holstein, and in 1721 Frederick IV. was able to gain the guarantce of the powers for the incorporation of the whole of Schleswig with the Danish monarchy. He had, however, to give up his claim to Holstein. In 1762 the Holstein-Gottorp line succeeded to the throne of Russia in the person of Peter II1., and this led in 1773 to an agreement by which the Gottorp line resigned its share of Holstein to the king of Denmark in exchange for Oldenburg and Delmen- horst. The whole of Schleswig-Holstein thus came once more under the sway of a ruler who was at the same time king of Denmark.

The period from 1778 to 1846 was one of peace for the duchies,

with considerable progress in material prosperity. The fall of the ae

2 This use of the term “duchies” anticipates a little, as Ilolstein was not made a duchy till 1474. Dithmarschen, indeed, which was supposed to be a part of ducal Holstein, was not subdued till 1559.

German empire in 1806 released Holstein for a time from any con- nexion with a power outside of Denmark, but in 1815 the Danish monarch had to entcr the German Confederation for Holstein and for the recently acquired duchy of LAvENBURG (q.v.). A strong feeling of German patriotism gradually arose in Holstein, affecting part of Schleswig also, and dissatisfaction with the delay of the Danish crown in recognizing the constitutional rights of the duchies led to the events forming the recent history of Schleswig-Holstein. These will be found described with some detail in the articles DENMARK (vol. vii. pp. 88, 89) and GERMANY (vol. x. pp. 507, 509-512). (J. F. M.) SCHLETTSTADT, a small town in Lower Alsace, stands on the Ill, 26 miles to the south of Strasburg. It possesses two fine churches, relics of a period of former importance, and carries on manufactures of wire gauze, and a considerable trade in country produce. The popu- lation in 1880 was 8979 (7755 Roman Catholics), showing a slight decrease since it has passed into German hands. Schlettstadt is a place of very early origin, and became a free town of the empire in the 13th century. In the 15th century it was the scat of a celebrated academy, founded by Agricola, which contributed not a little to the revival of learning in this part of Germany ; Erasmus of Rotterdam was one of its students. In 1634 the town came into the possession of France, and it was afterwards fortified by Vauban. It offered little resistance, however, to the Germans in 1870, and the fortifications have been razed. SCHLOZER, Avcusr Lupwic von (1735-1809), German historian, was born at Gaggstedt, in the county of Hohenlohe-Kirchberg, on the 5th July 1735. Having studied at the universities of Wittenberg and Géttingen, he went in 1755 as a tutor to Stockholm, and afterwards to Upsala; and while in Sweden he wrote in the Swedish language an Hssay on the History of Trade (1758). In 1759 he returned to Gdéttingen, where he began the study of medicine. Afterwards he went to St Petersburg with Miiller, the Russian historiographer, as Miiller’s literary assistant and as tutor in his family. Here Schlozer learned the Russian language and devoted him- self to the study of Russian history;

and in 1762 he was made an adjunct of the Academy and a teacher at the Rasumovski educational institute. A quarrel with Miiller placed him in a position of some difficulty, from which he was happily delivered by a call to a professor- ship at the university of Géttingen. He began his career at Gottingen in 1767, and soon ranked among the foremost historical writers of his day. His most import- ant works were his Al/gemeine nordische Geschichte (1772) and his translation of the Russian chronicler Nestor to the year 980 (1802-9). He awoke much intelligent interest in universal history by his Weltgeschichte im Auszuge und Zusammenhange (17 92-1801); and in several works he helped to lay the foundations of statistical science, He also produced a strong impression by his political writings, the Briefwechsel (10 vols. 177 6-82) and the Staatsanzeigen (18 vols., 1782-93). In 1804 he was ennobled by the emperor of Russia. He withdrew from active life in 1805, and died on the 9th September 1809. See Zermelo, August Ludwig Schlézer (1875), and Wesendonk, Dic Begriindung der neuern deutschen Geschichtschreibung durch Gatterer und Schlézer (1876). Schlozer's daughter, Dorothea, born on the 10th August, 1770, was one of the most learned women of her time, and received in 1787 the degree of doctor. She was recognized as an authority on several subjects, especially on Russian comage. After her marriage with Rodde, the burgo- master of Liibeck, she devoted herself to domestic duties. She died on the 12th July 1825. Schlézer's son Christian (born 1774, died 1831) was a professor at Bonn, and published Anfangsgriinde der Staatswirthschaft (18046) and his father's Oeffentliches und Privat-Leben aus Originalurkunden (1828).
_SCHMALKALDEN, a town of Prussia, in the pro- vince of Hesse-Nassau, lies about 30 miles to the south- west of Erfurt, and in 1885 contained 6788 inhabitants, chiefly employed in the manufacture of hardware articles. It still possesses the inn in which the important Pro- testant League of Schmalkalden or Smalkald was concluded

in 1531, and also the house in which the articles were drawn up in 1537 by Luther, Melanchthon, and other Reformers. Seo GERMANY, vol. x. p. 498, and Lurunr, vol. Kv. ip. 63.

SCHNEIDEMUHL (Polish Pila), a small town of Prussia, in the province of Posen, lies on the Ciiddow, 45 miles north of Posen and 140 miles east by north of Berlin. It is a railway junction of some importance, carries on a trade in wood, grain, and potatoes, and pos- sesses an iron foundry, several glass works and machine- shops, and other industrial establishments. In 1885 the population was 12,259, of whom 7700 were Protestants and about 1000 Poles.

SCHNORR VON KAROLSFELD, Junius (1794- 1872), of a family of artists, was born in 1794 at Leipsic, where he received his earliest instruction from his father, a draughtsman, engraver, and painter. At seventeen he entered the Academy of Vienna, from which Overbeck and others of the new school who rebelled against the old conventional style had been expelled about a year before. In 1818 he followed the founders of the new school of German pre-Raphaelites in the general pilgrimage to Rome. This school of religious and romantic art abjured modern styles with three centuries of decadence, and reverted to and revived the principles and practice of earlier periods. At the outset an effort was made to recover fresco painting and “monumental art,” and Schnorr soon found oppor- tunity of proving his powers, when commissioned to decorate with frescos, illustrative of Ariosto, the entrance hall of the Villa Massimo, near the Lateran. His fellow- labourers were Cornelius, Overbeck, and Veit. His second period dates from 1825, when he left Rome, settled in Munich, entered the service of King Louis, and trans- planted to Germany the art of wall-painting learnt in Italy. He showed himself qualified as a sort of poet- painter to the Bavarian court; he organized a staff of trained executants, and set about clothing five halls in the new palace with frescos illustrative of the Wibelungenlied. Other apartments his prolific pencil decorated with scenes from the histories of Charlemagne, Frederick Barbarossa, and Rudolph of Hapsburg. These vast and interminable compositions display the master’s merits and defects : they are creative, learned in composition, masterly in drawing, but exaggerated in thought and extravagant in style. Schnorr’s third period is marked by his “Bible Pictures” or Scripture History in 180 designs. The artist was a Lutheran, and took a broad and unsectarian view which won for his Pictorial Bible ready currency throughout Christendom. The merits are unequal: frequently the compositions are crowded and confused, wanting in harmony of line and symmetry in the masses; thus

they suffer under comparison with Raphael's Bible. Chrono- logically speaking, the style is severed from the simplicity and severity of early times, and surrendered to the florid redundance of the later Renaissance. Yet throughout are displayed fertility of invention, academic knowledge with facile execution ; and modern art has produced nothing better than Joseph Interpreting Pharaoh's Dream, the Meeting of Rebecca and Isaac, and the Return of the Prodigal Son. The completion of the arduous work was celebrated in 1862 by the artists of Saxony with a festival, and other German states offered congratulations and presented gifts.

Biblical drawings and cartoons for frescos formed a natural prelude to designs for church windows. The painter's renown in Germany secured commissions in Great Britain. Schnorr made designs, carried out in the royal factory, Munich, for windows in Glasgow cathedral and in St Paul's cathedral, London. This Munich glass provoked controversy: medivalists objected to its want

Chrono- logical limits.

of lustre, and stigmatized the windows as coloured blinds and picture transparencies. But the opposing party claimed for these modern revivals "the union of the severe and excellent drawing of early Florentine oil-paintings with the colouring and arrangement of the glass-paintings of the latter half of the 16th century." Schnorr's busy life closed at Munich in 1872.

SCHOLASTICISM is the name usually employed to denote the most typical products of medizval thought. The final disappearance of ancient philosophy may be dated about the beginning of the 6th century of our era. Boetius, its last representative in the West, died in 525, and four years later the Athenian schools were closed by order of the emperor Justinian. Before this time Christian thought had already been active in the fathers of the church, but their activity had been entirely devoted to the elaborating and systematizing of theological dogmas. Although the dogmas unquestionably involve philosophical assumptions, the fathers deal with them throughout simply as churchnien, and do not profess to supply for them a philosophical

or rational basis. Only incidentally do some of them—like Augustine, for example—digress into strictly philosophical discussion. After the centuries of intellectual darkness during which the settlement of the new races and their conversion to Christianity proceeded and the foundations of the modern European order were being laid, the first symptoms of renewed intellectual activity appear contemporaneously with the consolidation of the empire of the West in the hands of Charlemagne. That enlightened monarch endeavoured to attract to his court the best scholars of Britain and Ireland (where the classical tradition had never died out), and by imperial decree (787) commanded the establishment of schools in connexion with every abbey in his realms. Peter of Pisa and Alcuin of York were his advisers in directing this great work, and under their fostering care the opposition long supposed to exist between godliness and secular learning speedily disappeared. Besides the cele- brated school of the Palace, where Alcuin had among his hearers the members of the imperial family and the dignitaries of the empire as well as talented youths of humbler origin, we hear of the episcopal schools of Lyons, Orleans, and St Denis, the cloister schools of St Martin of Tours, of Fulda, Corbie, Fontenelle, and many others, besides the older monasteries of St Gall and Reichenau. These schools became the centres of medieval learning and speculation, and from them the name Scholasticism is derived. They were designed to communicate instruction in the seven liberal arts which constituted the educational curriculum of the Middle Ages—grammar, dialectic, and rhetoric forming the trivium of arts proper, while geometry, arithmetic, astronomy, and music constituted the quadrivium of the sciences. The name doctor scholas- ticus was applied originally to any teacher in such an ecclesiastical gymnasium, but, as the study of dialectic or logic soon became the object of absorbing interest to the best intellects of the time, it tended to overshadow the more elementary disciplines, and the general acceptation of “doctor” came to be one who occupied himself with the teaching of logic and the discussion of the philo- sophical questions arising therefrom. The philosophy of the later Scholastics is more extended in its scope ; but to the very end of the medieval period philosophy centres in the discussion of the same logical problems which began to agitate the teachers of the 9th and 10th centuries.

Scholasticism in the widest sense thus extends from the 9th to the end of the 14th or the beginning of the 15th century—from Erigena to Occam and his followers. The belated Scholastics who lingered beyond the last-mentioned date served only as marks for the obloquy heaped upon

A417

the schools by the men of the new time. But, although every systematic account of Scholasticism finds it necessary to begin with Erigena, that philosopher is of the spiritual kindred of the Neoplatonists and Christian mystics rather than of the typical Scholastic doctors. In a few obscure writings of the 9th century we find the beginnings of dis- cussion upon the logical questions which afterwards proved of such absorbing interest ; but these are followed by the intellectual interregnum of the 10th century. The activity of Scholasticism is therefore mainly confined within the limits of the 11th and the 14th centuries. It is clearly divisible (by circumstances to be presently explained) into two well-marked periods,—the first extending to the end of the 12th century and embracing as its chief names Roscellinus, Anselm, William of Champeaux, and Abelard, while the second extended from the beginning of the 13th century to the Renaissance and the general distraction of men's thoughts from the problems and methods of Scho- lasticism. In this second period the names of Albertus Magnus, Thomas Aquinas, and Duns Scotus represent (in the 13th century and the first years of the 14th century) the culmination of Scholastic thought and its consolidation into system.

It is a remark of Prantl's that there is no such thing as Logic philosophy in the Middle Ages; there are only logic and and theology. If pressed literally the remark is hypereritical, aad for it overlooks two facts,—in the first place that the main objects of theology and philosophy are identical, though the method of treatment is different, and in the second place that logical discussion commonly leads up to meta- physical problems, and that this was pre-eminently the case with the logic of the Schoolmen. But the saying draws attention in a forcible way to the two great in- fluences which shaped medizval thought—on the one side the traditions of ancient logic, on the other the system of Christian theology. Scholasticism opens with a discussion of certain points in the Aristotelian logic; it speedily

begins to apply its logical distinctions to the doctrines of

the church; and when it attains its full stature in St Thomas it has, with the exception of certain mysteries, rationalized or Aristotelianized the whole churchly system. Or we might say with equal truth that the philosophy of St Thomas is Aristotle Christianized. It is, moreover, the

attitude of the Schoolmen to these two influences that

yields the general characteristic of the period. Their

attitude throughout is that of interpreters rather than of

those conducting an independent investigation. And though they are at the same time the acutest of critics, and offer the most ingenious developments of the original thesis, they never step outside the charmed circle of the system they have inherited. They appear to contemplate the universe of nature and man not at first hand with their own eyes but in the glass of Aristotelian formule. Their chief works are in the shape of commentaries upon the writings of "the philosopher."[1] Their problems and. solutions alike spring from the master's dicta—from the need of reconciling these with one another and with the conclusions of Christian theology.

The fact that the channels of thought during the Middle Reason Ages were determined in this way by the external influence 224 of a twofold tradition is usually expressed by saying that ee reason in the Middle Age is subject to authority. It ee has not the free play which characterizes its activity in Greece and in the philosophy of modern times. Its con- clusions are predetermined, and the initiative of the individual thinker is almost confined, therefore, to formal details in the treatment of his thesis. From the side of the church this characteristic of the period is expressed in the saying that reason has its proper station as the hand-

1 'The common designation of Aristotle in the Middle Ages.

maid of faith (ancilla fider). But it is only fair to add that this principle of the subordination of the reason wears a different aspect according to the century and writer referred to. In Scotus Erigena, at the beginning of the Scholastic era, there is no such subordination con- templated, because philosophy and theology in his work are in implicit unity. According to his memorable expres- sion, “Conficitur inde veram esse philosophiam veram religionem, conversimque veram religionem esse veram philosophiam ” (De Divisione Naturae, i. 1). Reason in its own strength and with its own instruments evolves a system of the universe which coincides, according to Erigena, with the teaching of Scripture. For Erigena, therefore, the speculative reason is the supreme arbiter (as he himself indeed expressly asserts) ; and in accordance with its results the utterances of Scripture and of the church have not infrequently to be subjected to an alle- gorical or mystical interpretation. But this is only to say again in so many words that Erigena is more of a Neoplatonist than a Scholastic. In regard to the Scholastics proper, Cousin suggested in respect of this point a threefold chronological division,—at the outset the absolute subordination of philosophy to theology, then the period of their alliance, and finally the beginning of their separation. In other words, we note philosophy gradually extending its claims. Dialectic is, to begin with, a merely secular art, and only by degrees are its terms and distinc- tions applied to the subject-matter of theology. The early results of the application, in the hands of Berengarius and Roscellinus, did not seem favourable to Christian orthodoxy. Hence the strength with which a champion of the faith like Anselm insists on the subordination of reason. ‘To Bernard of Clairvaux and many other con- servative churchmen the application of dialectic to the things of faith at all appears as dangerous as it is impious. At a later date, in the systems of the great Schoolmen, the rights of reason are fully established and amply acknow- ledged. ‘The relation of reason and faith remains, it is true, an external one, and certain doctrines—an increasing number as time goes on —are withdrawn from the sphere of reason. But with these exceptions the two march side by side; they establish by different means the same results. For the conflicts which accompanied the first intrusion of philosophy into the theological domain more profound and cautious thinkers with a far ampler appa- ratus of knowledge had substituted a harmony. “The constant effort of Scholasticism to be at once philosophy and theology”! seemed at last satisfactorily realized. But this harmony proved more apparent than

real, for the further progress of Scholastic thought consisted in a with- drawal of doctrine after doctrine from the possibility of rational proof and their relegation to the sphere of faith. Indeed, no sooner was the harmony apparently established by Aquinas than Duns Scotus began this negative criti- cism, which is carried much farther by William of Occam. But this is equivalent to a confession that Scholasticism had failed in its task, which was to rationalize the doc- trines of the church. The two authorities refused to be reconciled. The Aristotelian form refused to fit a matter for which it was never intended ; the matter of Christian theology refused to be forced into an alien form. The Scholastic philosophy speedily ceased therefore to possess a raison @étre, and the spread of the sceptical doctrine of a twofold truth proclaims the destruction of the fabric erected by medieval thought. The end of the period was thus brought about by the internal decay of its method and principles quite as much as by the variety of external causes which contributed to transfer men's interests to other subjects.

‘ Milman's Latin Christianity, ix. 101.

SCHOLAS? Tel ss

But, although the relation of reason to an external authority thus constitutes the badge of medieval thought, it would be in the last degree unjust to look upon Scholas- ticism as philosophically barren, and to speak as if reason, after an interregnum of a thousand years, resumed its rights at the Renaissance. Such language was excusable in the men of the Renaissance, fighting the battle of classic form and beauty and of the many- sidedness of life against the barbarous terminology and the monastic ideals of the schools, or in the protagonists of modern science protesting against the complete absorp- tion of human talent by metaphysics—an absorption never witnessed to the same extent before or since. The new is never just to the old; we do not expect it to be so. It belongs to a later and calmer judgment to recognize how the old contained in itself the germs of the new; and a closer study of history is invariably found to diminish the abruptness of the picturesque new beginnings which furnish forth our current divisions of epochs and periods. In the schools and universities of the Middle Age the intellect of the semi-barbarous European peoples had been trained for the work of the modern world. It had advanced from a childish rudeness to an

appreciation of the subtlest logical and metaphysical distinctions. The debt which modern philosophy owes to the Schoolmen for this formal training has been amply acknowledged even by a writer like J. S. Mill. But we may go further and say that, in spite of their initial acceptance of authority, the Scholastics are not the antagonists of reason; on the contrary they fight its battles. As has often been pointed out, the attempt to establish by argument the authority of faith is in reality the unconscious establishment of the authority of reason. Reason, if admitted at all, must ultimately claim the whole man. Anselm's motto, Credo ut intelligam, marks well the distance that has been traversed since Tertullian's Credo quia absurdum est. The claim of reason has been recognized to manipulate the data of faith, at first blindly and immediately received, and to weld them into a system such as will satisfy its own needs. Scholasticism that has outlived its day may be justly identified with obscurant- ism, but not so the systems of those who, by their mighty intellectual force alone, once held all the minds of Europe in willing subjection. The scholastic systems, it is true, arc not the free products of speculation ; in the main they are summe theologix, or they are modified versions of Aristotle. But each system is a fresh recognition of the rights of reason, and Scholasticism as a whole may be justly regarded as the history of the growth and gradual eman- cipation of reason which was completed in the movements of the Renaissance and the Reformation. Indeed, the widening of human interests which then took place is not without its prelude in the systems of the second period of Scholasticism. The complementary sciences of theology and philosophy remain, of course, the central and dominat- ing interest; but Albertus Magnus was keenly interested in natural science, and a system like that of Aquinas is as wide as Aristotle's in its range, and holds no part of nature to lie outside its inquiries.

In speaking of the origin of Scholasticism—name and thing—it has been already noted that medieval specula- tion takes its rise in certain logical problems. 'To be more precise, it is the nature of " universals" which forms the central theme of Scholastic debate. This is the case almost exclusively during the first period, and only to a less extent during the second, where it reappears in a somewhat different form as the difficulty concerning the principle of individuation. Otherwise expressed, the question on which

centuries of discussion were thus expended concerns the nature of genera and species and their relation to the individual. On this, Nominalists and

Scholags- ticism not unpro gressive,

“ Uni- yersals.”

Por- phyry’s | Isagoge.

Extent of the early School- men’s know- ledge.

SCHOLASTIC IS M

Realists take opposite sides; and, exclusively logical as the point may at first sight seem to be, adherence to one side or the other is an accurate indication of philosophic tendency. The two opposing theories express at bottom, in the phraseology of their own time, the radical diver- gence of pantheism and individualism—the two extremes between which philosophy seems pendulum-wise to oscil- late, and which may be said still to await their perfect reconciliation. First, however, we must examine the form which this question assumed to the first medieval thinkers, and the source from which they derived it. A single sentence in Porphyry’s /sagoge or “introduction” to the Categories of Aristotle furnished the text of the pro- longed discussion. The treatise of Porphyry deals with what are commonly called the predicables, 7.¢., the notions of genus, species, difference, property, and accident ; and he mentions, but declines to discuss, the various theories that have been held as to the ontological import of genera and species. In the Latin translation of Boetius, in which alone the Jsagoge was then known, the sentence runs as follows :—‘ Mox de generibus et speciebus illud quidem sive subsistant, sive in‘solis nudis intellectibus posita sint, sive subsistentia corporalia sint an incorporalia, et utrum separata a sensibilibus an in sensibilibus posita et circa haec consistentia, dicere recusabo ; altissimum enim negotium est hujusmodi et majoris egens inquisitionis.” The second of these three questions may be safely set aside; the other two indicate with sufficient clearness three possible positions with regard to universals. It may be held that they exist merely as conceptions in our minds (in solis nudis intellectibus) ; this is Nominalism or Conceptualism. It may be held, in opposition to the Nominalistic view, that

they have a substantial existence of their own (subdsistentia), independent of their existence in our thoughts. But Realism, as this doctrine is named, may be again of two varieties, according as the substan- tially existent universals are supposed to exist apart from the sensible phenomena (separata a sensibtlibus) or only in and with the objects of sense as their essence (in sensibilibus posita et circa haec consistentia). The first form of Realism corresponds to the Platonic theory of the transcendence of the ideas; while the second reproduces the Aristotelian doctrine of the essence as inseparable from the individual thing. But, though he implies an ample previous treat- ment-of the questions by philosophers, Porphyry gives no references to the different systems of which such dis- tinctions are the outcome, nor does he give any hint of his own opinion on the subject, definite enough though that was. He simply sets the discussion aside as too difficult for a preliminary discourse, and not strictly relevant to a purely logical inquiry. Porphyry, the Neoplatonist, the disciple of Plotinus, was an unknown personage to those early students of the Lsagoge. The passage possessed for them a mysterious charm, largely due to its isolation and to their ignorance of the historic speculations which sug- gested it. And accordingly it gave rise to the three great doctrines which divided the medizval schools :—Realism of the Platonic type, embodied in the formula universalia ante rem; Realism of the Aristotelian type, universalia in re; and Nominalism, including Conceptualism, expressed by the phrase wniversalra post rem, and also claiming to be based upon the Peripatetic doctrine.

To forma proper estimate of the first stage of Scholastic discussion it is requisite above all things to have a clear idea of the appliances then at the disposal of the writers. In other words, what was the extent of their knowledge of ancient philosophy? Thanks to the researches of Jourdain and others, it is possible to answer this question with something like precision. To begin with, we know that till tho 13th century the Middle Age was ignorant

of Greek, and possessed no philosophical works in their Greek original, while in translations their stock was limited to the Categories and the De Interpretatione of Aristotle in the versions of Boetius, and the 7%mezus of Plato in the version of Chalcidius. ‘To these must be added, of course, Boetius’s translation of Porphyry’s Isagoge already referred to. The whole metaphysical, ethical, and physical works of Aristotle were thus unknown, and it was not till the 12th century (after the year 1128) that the Analytics and the J’opics became accessible to the logicians of the time. Some general information as to the Platonic doctrines (chiefly ina Neoplatonic garb) was obtainable from the commentary with which Chalcidius (6th cent.) accompanied his translation, from the work of Apuleius (2d cent.) De Dogmate Platonis, and indirectly from the commentary of Macrobius (c. 400) on the Somnvum Scipionis of Cicero, and from the writings of St Augustine. As aids to the study of logic, the doctors of this period possessed two commentaries by Boetius on the Jsagoge (Ad Porphyrium a Victorino translatum and In Porphyrium a se translatum), two commentaries by the same author on the De Interpretatione and one on the Categories, as well as another, mainly rhetorical, Ad Ciceroms Topica. To these are to be added the following original treatises of Boetius:—ZIntroductio ad Categoricos Syllogismos, De Syllo- gismo Categorico, De Syllogismo Hypothetico, De Divisione, De Definitione, and De Differentus Topicis, the last dealing almost exclusively with rhetoric. There were also in circu- lation two tracts attributed to St Augustine, the first of which, Principia Dialecticae, is probably his, but is mainly grammatical in its import. The other tract, known as Categoriae Decem, and taken at first for a translation of Aristotle’s treatise, is really a rapid summary of it, and certainly does not

belong to Augustine. To this list there must be added three works of an encyclopedic character, which played a great part as text-books in the schools. Of these the oldest and most important was the Satyricon of Marcianus Capella (close of 5th century), a curious medley of prose and allegorical verse, the greater part of which is 3, treatise on the seven liberal arts, the fourth book dealing with logic. Similar in its contents is the work of Cassio- dorus (468-562), De Artibus ac Disciplinis Liberalium Literarum, of which the third work referred to, the Origines of Isidore of Seville (ob. 636), is little more than a re- production. The above constitutes without exception the whole material which the earlier Middle Age had at its disposal.

The grandly conceived system of Erigena (see ERIGENA Erigena.

stands by itself in the 9th century like the product of another age. John the Scot was. still acquainted with Greek, seeing that he translated the work of the pseudo-Dionysius; and his speculative genius achieved the fusion of Christian doctrine and Neopla- tonic thought in a system of quite remarkable meta- physical completeness. It is the only complete and inde- pendent system between the decline of ancient thought and the system of Aquinas in the 13th century, if indeed we ought not to go further, to modern times, to find a parallel. Erigena pronounces no express opinion upon the question which was even then beginning to occupy men’s minds; but his Platonico-Christian theory of the Eternal Word as containing in Himself the exemplars of created things is equivalent to the assertion of uniwersalia ante rem. His whole system, indeed, is based upon the idea of the divine as the exclusively real, of which the world of individual existence is but the theophany ; the special and the individual are immanent, therefore, in the general. And hence ata much later date (in the begin- ning of the 13th century) his name was invoked to cover the pantheistic heresies of Amalrich of Bena. Erigena

and Mysticism)

Influ- ence of Boetius.

does not separate lis Platonic theory of pre-existent exemplars from the Aristotelian doctrine of the universal as im the individuals. As Ueberweg points out, his theory is rather a result of the transference of the Aristotelian conception of substance to the Platonic Idea, and of an identification of the relation of accidents to the substance in which they inhere with that of the individuals to the Idea of which, in the Platonic doctrine, they are copies (Hist. of Philosophy, i. 363, Eng. trans.). Hence it may be said that the universals are in the individuals, constitut- ing their essential reality (and it is an express part of Erigena's system that the created but creative Word, the second division of Nature, should pass into the third stage of created and non-creating things); or rather, perhaps, we ought to say that the individuals exist in the bosom of their universal. At all events, while Erigena's Realism

is pronounced, the Platonic and Aristotelian forms of the »

doctrine are not distinguished in his writings. Prantl has professed to find the headstream of Nominalism also in Scotus Erigena ; but beyond the fact that he discusses at considerable length the categories of thought and their mutual relations, occasionally using the term ' voces" to express his meaning, Prantl appears to adduce no reasons for an assertion which directly contradicts Erigena's most fundamental doctrines. Moreover Erigena again and again declares that dialectic has to do with the stadia of a real or divine classification :—" Intelligitur quod ars illa, quae dividit genera in species et species in genera resolvit, quae duadexrixy dicitur, non ab humanis machinationibus sit facta, sed in natura rerum! ab auctore omnium artium, quae verae artes sunt, condita et a sapientibus inventa " (De Divisione Naturae, iv. 4).

The immediate influence of Erigena's system cannot have been great, and his works seem soon to have dropped out of notice in the centuries that followed. The real germs of Realism and Nominalism, as they took shape in medieval thought, are to be found in the 9th century, in scattered commentaries and glosses (mostly still in manu- script) upon the statements of Porphyry and Boetius. Boetius in commenting upon Porphyry had already started the discussion as to the nature of universals. He is definitely anti-Platonic, and his language sometimes takes even a nominalistic tone, as when he declares that the species is nothing more than a thought or

conception gathered from the substantial similarity of a number of dissimilar individuals. The expression “substantial simi- larity” is still, however, sufficiently vague to cover a multitude of views. He concludes that the genera and species exist as universals only in thought ; but, inasmuch as they are collected from singulars on account of a real resemblance, they have a certain existence independently of the mind, but not an existence disjoined from the singulars of sense. ‘Subsistunt ergo circa sensibilia, intelliguntur autem praeter corpora.” Or, according to the phrase which recurs so often during the Middle Ages, “universale intelligitur, singulare sentitur.” Boetius ends by declining to adjudicate between Plato and Aristotle, remarking in a semi-apologetic style that, if he has ex- pounded Aristotle’s opinion by preference, his course is justified by the fact that he is commenting upon an intro- duction to Aristotle. And, indeed, his discussion cannot claim to be more than semi-popular in character. The point in dispute has not in his hands the all-absorbing importance it afterwards attained, and the keenness of later distinctions is as yet unknown. In this way, how- ever, though the distinctions drawn may still be compara- tively vague, there existed in the schools a Peripatetic tradition to set over against the Neoplatonic influence of John the Scot, and amongst the earliest remains of Scho- lastic thought we find this tradition asserting itself some-

what vigorously. There were Nominalists before Roscel- linus among these early thinkers,

Alcuin, the first head of the school of the Palace, does nothing more in his Dialectic than abridge Boetius and the other commentators. But in the school of Fulda, pre-

sided over by his pupil Hrabanus Maurus (776-856), there Hrabanus are to be found some fresh contributions to the discussion, Maurus.

The collected works of Hrabanus himself contain nothing new, but in some glosses on Aristotle and Porphyry, first exhumed by Cousin, there are several noteworthy expressions of opinion in a Nominalistic sense. The author interprets Boetius’s meaning to be “Quod eadem res individuum et

species et genus est, et non esse univer- salia individuis quasi quoddam diversum.” He also cites, apparently with approval, the view of those who held Porphyry’s treatise to be not de quinque rebus, but de quinque vocibus. A genus, they said, is essen- tially something which is predicated of a subject; but a thing cannot be a predicate (res enim non praedicatur). These glosses, it should be added, however, have been attributed by Prantl and Kaulich, on the ground of diver- gence from doctrines contained in the published works of Hrabanus, to some disciple of his rather than to Hrabanus himself. Fulda had become through the teaching of the latter an intellectual centre. studied there under Haimon, the successor of Hrabanus, and afterwards taught at Auxerre, wrote glosses on the margin of his copy of the pseudo-Augustinian Categoriae, which have been published by Cousin and Hauréau. He there says in words which recall the language of Locke (Essay, iii. 3) that because proper names are innumerable, and no intellect or memory would suffice for the knowing of them, they are all as it were comprehended in the species (“‘Sciendum autem, quia propria nomina primum sunt innumerabilia, ad quae cognoscenda intellectus nullus seu memoria sufficit, haec ergo omnia coartata species com- prehendit, et facit primum gradum”). Taken in their strictness, these words state the position of extreme Nominalism ; but even if we were not forbidden to do so by other passages, in which the doctrine of moderate Realism is adopted (under cover of the current distinction between the singular as felt and the pure universal as understood), it would still be unfair to press any passage in the writings of this period. As Cousin says, ‘“ Realism and Nominalism were undoubtedly there in germ, but their true principles with their necessary consequences remained profoundly unknown ; their connexion with all the great questions of religion and politics was not even suspected. The two systems were nothing more as yet than two different ways of interpreting a phrase of Porphyry, and they remained unnoticed in the obscurity of the schools. ... It was the 11th century which gave Nominalism to the world.” !

Remi or Remigius of Auxerre, pupil of Eric, became Remi.

the most celebrated professor of dialectic in the Parisian schools of the 10th century. As he reverted to Realism, his influence, first at Rheims and then in Paris, was doubtless instrumental in bringing about the general

acceptance of that doctrine till the advent of Roscellinus as a powerful disturbing influence. ‘There is one genus more general than the rest,” says Remi (apud Hauréau, De la Philosophie Scolastique, i. 146), “beyond which the intellect cannot rise, called by the Greeks oicia, by the Latins essentia. The essence, indeed, comprehends all natures, and everything that exists is a portion of this essence, by participation in which everything that is hath its existence.” And similarly with the intermediate genera. “Homo est multorum hominum substantialis unitas.” Remigius is thus a Realist, as Hauréau remarks,

1 Ouvrages inédits d’ Abdélard, Introd., p. Ixxxv. —_

Eric or Heiricus, who Eric.

not so much in the sense of Plato as in the spirit of Parmenides, and Hauréau applies to this form of Realism Bayle’s description of Realism in general as “le Spinosisme non developpé.” The 10th century asa whole is especially marked out asa dark age, being partly filled with civil troubles and partly characterized by a reaction of faith against reason. In the monastery of St Gall there was

considerable logical activity, but nothing of philosophical

interest is recorded. The chief name of the century is that of Gerbert (died as Pope Sylvester IT. in 1003). He studied at Aurillac under Otto of Clugny, the pupil of Remigius, and later among the Moors in Spain, and taught afterwards himself in the schools of Tours, Fleury, Sens, and Rheims. He was a man of universal attainments, put only his treatise De Rationali et Ratione uti need be mentioned here. It is more interesting as a display of the logical acquirements of the age than as possessing any direct philosophical beating. The school of Chartres, founded in 990 by Fulbert, one of Gerbert’s pupils, was distinguished for nearly two centuries not so much for its dialectics and philosophy as for its humanistic culture. The account which John of Salisbury gives of it in the first half of the 12th century, under the presidency of Theodoric and Bernard, gives a very pleasant glimpse into the history of the Middle Ages. Since then, says their

regretful pupil, “less time and less care have been |

bestowed on grammar, and persons who profess all arts, liberal and mechanical, are ignorant of the primary art, without which a man proceeds in vain to the rest. For albeit the other studies assist literature, yet this has the sole privilege of making one lettered.”?

Hitherto, if dialectical studies had been sometimes viewed askance by the stricter churchmen it was not because logic had dared to stretch forth its hands towards the ark of God, but simply on the ground of the old opposition between the church and the world: these secular studies absorbed time and ability which might have been employed for the glory of God and the service of the church. But now bolder spirits arose who did not shrink from applying the distinctions of their human wisdom to the mysteries of theology. It was the excite- ment caused by their attempt, and the heterodox con- clusions which were its first result, that lifted these

Scholastic disputations into the central position which,

they henceforth occupied in the life of the Middle Ages. And whereas, up to this time, discussion had been in the main of a purely logical character, the next centuries show that peculiar combination of logic and theology which is the mark of Scholasticism, especially in the period before the 13th century. For reason, having already asserted itself so far, could not simply be put under a ban. Orthodoxy had itself to put on the armour of reason; and so panoplied its champions soon proved themselves superior to their antagonists on their own battlefield.

One of the first of these attacks was made by Berengarius of Tours (999-1088) upon the doctrine of transubstantiation ; he denied the possibility of a change of substance in the bread and wine without some corre- sponding change in the accidents. Berengarius had studied at Chartres, where his exclusive devotion to dialectic caused Fulbert more than once to remonstrate with his pupil. According to the testimony of his oppo- nent and former fellow-student, Lanfranc, he seems even in his student days to have been by temperament a rebel against authority. “When we were in the schools together,” says Lanfranc, “it was your part always to collect authorities against the Catholic faith.” M. de

See SSS SS ae 1 Metalogicus, i. 27, quoted in Poole’s Illustrations ef Medizval

Thought.

‘eates of that doctrine.

421

Rémusat characterizes his view on the Eucharist as a specific application of Nominalism (“un nominalisme special ou restreint & une seule question”). More inti- mately connected with the progress of philosophical thought was the tritheistic view of the Trinity propounded by Roscellinus as one of the results of his Nominalistic theory of knowing and being. The sharpness and one- ! sidedness with which he formulated his position were the immediate occasion of the contemporaneous crystallization of Realism in the theories of Anselm and William of Champeaux. Henceforth discussion is carried on with a full consciousness of the differences involved and the issues at stake; and, thanks to the heretical conclusion disclosed by Roscellinus, Realism became established for several centuries as the orthodox philosophical creed. Roscellinus (ob. c. 1125) was looked upon by later times as the originator of the sententia vocum, that is to say, of Nom- inalism proper. Unfortunately, we are reduced for a knowledge of his position to the scanty and ill-natured notices of his opponents (Anselm and Abelard). From these we gather that he refused to recognize the reality of anything but the individual; he treated “the universal substance,” says Anselm, as no more than “ flatum vocis,” a verbal breathing or sound; and in a similar strain he denied any reality to the parts of which a whole, such as a house, is commonly said to be composed. The parts in the one case, the general name or common attributes in the other, are only, he seems to have argued, so many subjective points of view from which we choose to regard that which in its own essence is one and indivisible, existing in its own right apart from any connexion with other individuals. ‘This pure individualism, consistently interpreted, involves the denial of all real relation what- soever ; for things are related and classified by means of their general characteristics. Accordingly, if these general characteristics do not possess reality, things are reduced to a number of characterless and mutually indifferent points. It is possible, as Hauréau maintains, that Roscel- linus

meant no more than to refute the untenable Realism which asserts the, substantial and, above all, the inde- pendent existence of the universals. Some of the expres- sions used by Anselm in controverting his position favour this idea, since they prove that the Realism of Anselm himself embraced positions discarded by the wiser advo- Anselm upbraids Roscellinus, for example, because he was unable to conceive whiteness apart from its existence in something white. But this is precisely an instance of the hypostatization of abstrac- tions in exposing which the chief strength and value of Nominalism lie. Cousin is correct in pointing out, from the Realistic point of view, that it is one thing to deny the hypostatization of an accident like colour or wisdom, and another thing to deny the foundation in reality of those "true and legitimate universals" which we under- stand by the terms genera and species. "The human race ig not a word, or, if it is, we are driven to assert that there is really nothing common and identical in all men— that the brotherhood and equality of the human family are pure abstractions, and that, since individuality is the sole reality, the sole reality is difference, that is to say, hostility and war, with no right but might, no duty but interest, and no remedy but despotism. These are the gad but necessary consequences which logic and history impose upon Nominalism and Empiricism."? It is not for a moment to be supposed that the full scope of his doctrine was present to the mind of Roscellinus ; but Nominalism would hardly have made the sensation it did had its assertions been as innocent as Hauréau would make them. Like most innovators, Roscellinus stated his posi- 2 Ouvrages inédits d' Abélard, Introd., p. evi.

tion in bold language, which emphasized his opposition to accepted doctrines ; and his words, if not his intentions, involved the extreme Nominalism which, by making universality merely subjective, pulverizes existence into detached particulars. And, though we may acquit Roscel- linus of consciously propounding a theory so subversive of all knowledge, his criticism of the doctrine of the Trinity is proof at least of the determination with which he was prepared to carry out his individualism. If we are not

perfect goodness and truth and justice, by participation in which all earthly things are judged to possess these qualities. In this way he rises like Plato to the absolute Goodness, Justice, and Truth, and then proceeds in Neo-platonic fashion to a deduction of the Trinity as involved in the idea of the divine Word.

Besides its connexion with the speculations of Anselm, the doctrine of Roscellinus was also of decisive influence within the schools in crystallizing the opposite opinion.

William of Champeaux is reputed the founder of a William

prepared to say that the three Persons are one thing—in definitely formulated Realism, much as Roscellinus is of Cham-

which case the Father and the Holy Ghost must have William of P°@™*

Anselm.

been incarnate along with the Son—then, did usage permit, he says, we ought to speak of three Gods.

It was this theological deduction from his doctrine that drew upon Roscellinus the polemic of his most celebrated opponent, Anselm of Canterbury (1033-1109). Roscel- linus appears at first to have imagined that his tritheistic theory had the sanction of Lanfranc and Anselm, and the latter was led in consequence to compose his treatise De Inde Trimtatis. From this may be gathered, in a some- what indirect and incidental fashion, his views on the nature of universals. ‘‘ How shall he who has not arrived at understanding how several men are in species one man comprehend how in that most mysterious nature several persons, each of which is perfect God, are one God?” The manner in which humanity exists in the individual was soon to be the subject of keen discussion, and to bring to light diverging views within the Realistic camp; but St Anselm does not go into detail on this point, and seems to imply that it is not surrounded by special difficulties. In truth, his Realism, as has just been seen, was of a somewhat uncritical type. It was simply accepted by him in a broad way as the orthodox philosophic doctrine, and the doctrine which, as a sagacious

churchman, he perceived to be most in harmony with Christian theology. But Anselm's heart was not in the dialectical subtleties which now began more and more to engross the schools. The only logical treatise which he wrote, De Grammatica, falls so far below the height of his reputation that it leads Prantl into undue depreciation of Anselm's eminence as a thinker. Anselm's natural element was theology, and the high metaphysical questions which are as it were the obverse of theology. Hauréau calls him with truth "the last of the fathers"; the sweep of his thought recalls St Augus- tine rather than the men of his own time. On the other hand, as the first to formulate the ontological argument for the existence of God, he joins hands with some of the profoundest names in modern philosophy. This celebrated argument, which fascinated in turn Descartes, Leibnitz, and Hegel, not to mention other names, appears for the first time in the pages of Anselm's Proslogium. To Anselm specially belongs the motto Credo ut intelligam, or, as it is otherwise expressed in the sub-title of his Pros- logium, Fides quaerens intellectum. 'His method," says Cousin (p. ci.), "is to set out from the sacred dogmas as they are given by the hand of authority, and without at any time departing from these dogmas to impregnate them by profound reflexion, and thus as it were raise the darkness visible of faith to the pure light of philo- sophy." In this spirit he endeavoured to give a philo- sophical demonstration not only of the existence of God but also of the Trinity and the Incarnation, which were placed by the later Scholastics among the "mysteries." The Christological theory of satisfaction expounded in the Cur Deus Homo falls beyond the scope of the present article. But the Platonically conceived proof of the being of God contained in the Monologium shows that Anselm's doctrine of the universals as substances in things (unzver- salia in re) was closely connected in his mind with the thought of the wniversalia ante rem, the exemplars of

regarded as the founder of Nominalism. Champeaux (1070-1121) was instructed by Roscellinus himself in dialectic. His own activity as a teacher belongs to the first years of the 12th century. He lectured in Paris in the cathedral school of Notre Dame till the year 1108, when he retired to the priory of St Victor on the outskirts of Paris. But soon afterwards, unable to resist the importunities of his friends and pupils, he resumed his lectures there, continuing them till his removal to the see of Chalons in 1113, and

thus laying the foundation of the reputation which the monastery soon acquired. Unfortunately none of the philosophical works of William have survived, and we are forced to depend for an account of his doctrine upon the statements of his opponent Abelard, in the Historia Calamitatum Mcarum, and in certain manuscripts discovered by Cousin. From these sources it appears that William professed successively two opinions on the nature of the universals, having been dislodged from his first position by the criti- cism of Abelard, his quondam pupil, There is no obscurity about William's first position. It is a Realism. of the most uncompromising type, which by its reduction of individuals to accidents of one identical substance seems to tremble on the very verge of Spinozism. He taught, says Abelard, that the same thing or substance was present in its entirety and essence in each individual, and that individuals differed no whit in their essence but only in the variety of their accidents, ''Erat autem in ea sententia de communitate universalium, ut eandem essen- tialiter rem totam simul singulis suis inesse adstrueret individuis, quorum quidem nulla esset in essentia diver- sitas, sed sola multitudine accidentium varietas." Thus "'Socratitas" is merely an accident of the substance '"'humanitas," or, as it is put by the author of the treatise De Generibus et Speciebus,! "Man is a species, a thing essentially one (res una essentialiter), which receives certain forms which make it Socrates. This thing, remaining essentially the same, receives in the same way other forms which constitute Plato and the other individuals of the species man ; and, with the exception of those forms which mould that matter into the individual Socrates, there is nothing in Socrates that is not the same at the same time under the forms of Plato. . . . According to these men, even though rationality did not exist in any individual, its existence in nature would still remain intact " (Cousin, Introduction, &e., p. exx.). Robert Pulleyn expresses the same point of view concisely when he makes the Realist say, "Species una est substantia, ejus vero individua multae personae, et hae multae personae sunt illa una substantia." But the difficulties in the way of treating the universal as substance or thing are so insuperable, and at the same time so obvious, that criticism was speedily at work upon William of Champeaux's position. He had said expressly that the universal essence, by the addition

1 This treatise, first published by Cousin in his Ouvrages inédits @ Abélard, was attributed by him to Abelard, and he was followed in this

opinion by Hauréau ; but Prantl adduces reasons which seem satisfactory for believing it to be the work of an unknown writer of somewhat later date (see Prantl, Geschichte d. Logik, ii. 148).

individuum, sed et illud aliter et aliter attentum species et genus et generalissimum est." Adelard of Bath (whose treatise De Eodem et Diverso must have been written between 1105 and 1117) was probably the author or at all events the claborator of this doctrine, and he sought by its means to effect a reconciliation between Plato and Aristotle :—"Since that which we see is at once genus and species and individual, Aristotle rightly insisted that the universals do not exist except in the things of sense. But, since those universals, so far as they are called genera and species, cannot be perceived by any one in their purity without the admixture of imagination, Plato main- tained that they existed and could be beheld beyond the things of sense, to wit, in the divine mind. Thus these men, although in words they seem opposed, yet held in reality the same opinion." Prantl distinguishes from the

of the individual forms, was individualized and present secundum totam suam quantitatem in each individual. But if homo is wholly and essentially present in Socrates, then it is, as it were, absorbed in Socrates ; where Socrates is not, it cannot be, consequently not in Plato and the other individua hominis. This was called the argumeut of the homo Socraticus; and it appears to have been with the view of obviating such time and space difficulties, emphasized in the criticism of Abelard, that William latterly modified his form of expression. But his second position is enveloped in considerable obscurity. Abelard says, 'Sic autem correxit sententiam, ut deinceps rem eamdem non essentialiter sed individualiter diceret." In other words, he merely sought to avoid the awkward con- sequences of his own doctrine by substituting ''individu- aliter" for "essentialiter" in his definition. If we are to

Theory Whether this view is to be traced to William or not, it of indif- is certain that the theory of "indifference" or ''non- Porretanus, or, from his birthplace, Poitiers, also called de !@ ference. difference" (indifferentia)

was a favourite solution in the | Pictaviensis, 1075-1154), who was also a pupil of Bernard's, * °°"

put a sense upon this new expression, William may pro- bably have meant to recall any words of his which seemed, by locating the universal in the entirety of its essence in each individual to confer upon the individual an inde- pendence which did not belong to it—thus leading in the end to the demand for a separate universal for each individual. In opposition to this Nominalistic view, which implied the reversal of his whole position, William may have meant to say that, instead of the universal being multiplied, it is rather the individuals which are reduced to unity in the universal. The species is essentially one, but it takes on individual varieties or accidents. it, however, we are more ill-natured, we may regard the phrase, with Prantl, as simply a meaningless makeshift in extremities; and if so, Abelard's account of the subse- quent decline of William's reputation would be explained. But there is in some of the manuscripts the various read- ing of "indifferenter" for " individualiter," and this is accepted as giving the true sense of the passage by Cousin and Rémusat (Hauréau and Prantl taking, on different grounds, the opposite view). According to this reading, William sought to rectify his position by assert- ing, not the numerical identity of the universal in each individual, but rather its sameness in the sense of indis- tinguishable similarity. Ueberweg cites a passage from his theological works which apparently bears out this view, for William there expressly distinguishes the two senses of the word "same." Peter and Paul, he says, are the same in so far as they are both men, although the humanity of each is, strictly speaking, not identical but similar. In the Persons of the Trinity, on the other hand, the relation is one of absolute identity.

ealistic schools soon after his time. The inherent dif_i- culties of Realism, brought to light by the explicit state- ment of the doctrine and by the criticism of Abelard, led to a variety of attempts to reach a more satisfactory formula. John of Salisbury, in his account of the con- troversies of these days (Metalogicus, ii, 17) reckons up nine different views which were held on the question of the universals, and the list is extended by Prantl (ii. 118) to thirteen. In this list are included of course all shades of opinion, from extreme Nominalism to extreme Realism. The doctrine of

indifference as it appears in later writers certainly tends, as Prantl points out, towards Nominalism, inasmuch as it gives up the substantiality of the universals. ‘The universal consists of the non-different elements or attributes in the separate individuals, which alone exist substantially. If we restrict attention to these non-different elements, the individual becomes for us the species, the genus, &c.; everything depends on the point of view from which we regard it. ‘“ Nihil omnino est praeter

teaching of the school of Chartres, on the study of the ancients. 1167), called by John of

poetic gloss upon the Temacus.

system of indifference the “status ” doctrine attributed by according to which the universal is essentially united to the individual, which may be looked upon, ¢g., as Plato, man, animal, &e., according to the “status” or point of view which we assume. expression for the same position, and the same may doubt- less be said of the theory which employed the outlandish word “ maneries” (Fr. maniére) to signify that genera and species represented the might be regarded. which such views embody make them what Hauréau calls “the Peripatetic section of the Realistic school.”

John of Salisbury to Walter of Mortagne (0d. 1174),

But this seems only a different

different ways in which individuals The concessions to Nominalism representative of

Somewhat apart from current controversies stood the humanistically nourished

He endeavoured, according to John of

to reconcile Plato and Aristotle; but his

of the divine thought. are little more than a William of Conches, a pupil of Bernard’s, was more eclectic in his views, and, devoting himself to

psychological and physiological ques- tions, was of less importance for the specific logico-meta-

they exist in the supersensible world His Megacosmus and Microcosmus

physical problem. But Gilbert de la Porrée (Gilbertus Gilbert

and who was afterwards for about twenty years chancellor of the cathedral of Chartres before he proceeded to lecture in Paris, is called by Hauréau the most eminent logician of the Realistic school in the 12th century and the most profound metaphysician of either school. The views which he expressed in his commentary on the pseudo-Boetian treatise, De Trinitate, are certainly much more important than the mediatizing systems already referred to. The most interesting part of the work is the distinction which Gilbert draws between the manner of existence of genera and species and of substances proper. He distinguishes between the quod est and the quo est. Genera and species certainly exist, but they do not exist in their own right as substances. What exists as a sub- stance and the basis of qualities or forms (quod est) may be said substare; the forms on the other hand by which such an individual substance exists qualitatively (quo est) subsistunt, though it cannot be said that they substant. The intellect collects the universal, which exists but not

Bernard of Chartres (0b. Bernard Salisbury “ perfectissimus inter of

Platonicos seculi nostri,” taught at Chartres in the begin- Ces: ning of the 12th century, when William was still lectur- ing at St Victor. Salisbury, doctrine is almost wholly derived from the former through St Augustine and the commentary of Chalcidius. The universalia in re have little place in his thoughts, which are directed by preference to the eternal exemplars as

Abelard.

as a substance (est sed non substat), from the particular things which not merely are (sunt) but also, as subjects of accidents, have substantial existence (substant), by con- sidering only their substantial similarity or

conformity. The universals are thus forms inherent in things—“ native forms,” according to the expression by which Gilbert’s doctrine is concisely known. The individual consists of an assemblage of such forms ; and it is individual because nowhere else is exactly such an assemblage to be met with. The form exists concretely in the individual things (sensibilis in re sensibil’), for in sensible things form and matter are always united. But they may be conceived abstractly or non-sensuously by the mind (sed mente con- cipitur insensibilis), and they then refer themselves as copies to the Ideas their divine exemplars. In God, who is pure form without matter, the archetypes of material things exist as eternal immaterial forms. In this way Gilbert was at once Aristotelian and Platonist. The dis- tinctions made by him above amount to a formal criticism of categories, and in the same spirit he teaches that no one of the categories can be applied in its literal sense to God. Gilbert was also the author of a purely logical work, De Sex Principis, in which he criticized the Aristotelian list of the ten categories, drawing a distinction between the first four—substance, quality, quantity, and relation (i.e, according to Gilbert, indeterminate or potential rela- tion)—which he called formae inhaerentes, and the remain- ing six, which he maintained belong to an object only through its actual relation to other objects (respectu alte- rius). To these six, therefore, he gave the name of formae assistentes. This distinction was adopted in all the schools till the 16th century, and the treatise De Sex Principiis was bound up with the Jsagoge and the Categories.

But by far the most outstanding figure in the contro- versies of the first half of the 12th century is Abelard (Petrus Abzelardus, also called Palatinus from Pallet, the place of his birth, 1079-1142). Abelard was successively the pupil of Roscellinus and William of Champeaux, and the contrast between their views doubtless emphasized to him at an early period the extravagances of extreme Nominalism and extreme Realism. He speedily acquired a reputation as an unrivalled dialectician, the name Peri- pateticus being bestowed upon him in later years to signify this eminence. Almost before he had emerged from the pupillary state, he came forward in public as the acute and vehement critic of his masters’ doctrines, especially that of William of Champeaux, whom Abelard seems ultimately to have superseded in Paris. About Abelard’s own system there is far from being perfect unanimity of opinion, some, like Ritter and Erdmann, regarding it as

a moderate form of Realism,—a return indeed to the position of Aristotle,—while others, like Cousin, Rémusat, Hauréau, and Ueberweg, consider it to be essentially Nominalistic, only more prudently and perhaps less consistently ex- pressed than was the case with Roscellinus. His position is ordinarily designated by the name Conceptualism, though there is very little talk of concepts in Abelard's own writings ; and Conceptualism, Hauréau tells us, "c'est le nominalisme raisonnable." There can be no doubt, at all events, that Abelard himself intended to strike out a via media between the extreme Nominalism of Roscellinus and the views of the ordinary Realists. As against Realism he maintains consistently Res de re non praedicatur ; genera and species, therefore, which are predicated of the individual subject, cannot be treated as things or sub- stances. This is manifestly true, however real the facts may be which are designated by the generic and specific names ; and the position is fully accepted, as has been seen, by a Realist like Gilbert, who perhaps adopted it first from Abelard. Abelard also perceived that Realism, by separ-

ating the universal substance from the forms which indi- vidualize it, makes the universal indifferent to these forms, and leads directly to the doctrine of the identity of all beings in one universal substance or matter—a pantheism which might take either an Averroistic or a Spinozistic form. Against the system of non-difference Abelard hag a number of logical and traditional arguments to bring, but it is sufficiently condemned by his fundamental doctrine that only the individual exists in its own right. For that system still seems to recognize a generic sub- stance as the core of the individual, whereas, according to Cousin's rendering of Abelard's doctrine, " only individuals exist, and in the individual nothing but the individual." The individual Socrates may be said to be made Socrates by the form Socratitas; now "the subject of this form is not humanity in itself but that particular part of human nature which is the nature of Socrates. The matter in the individual Socrates is therefore quite as much indi- vidual as his form" (p. clxxiv.). Holding fast then on the one hand to the individual as the only true substance, and on the other to the traditional definition of the genus as that which is predicated of a number of individuals (quod praedicatur de pluribus), Abelard declared that this definition of itself condemns the

Realistic theory ; only a name, not a thing, can be so predicated,—not the name, however, as a jlatus vocis or a collection of letters, but the name as used in discourse, the name as a sign, as having a meaning—in a word, not vox but sermo. Sermo est praedicabils. By these distinctions Abelard hoped to escape the consequences of extreme Nominalism, from which, as a matter of history, his doctrine has been dis- tinguished under the name of Conceptualism, seeing that it lays stress not on the word as such but on the thought which the word is intended to convey. Moreover, Abelard evidently did not mean to imply that the distinctions of genera and species are of arbitrary or merely human imposition. His favourite expression for the universal is "quod de pluribus natum est praedicari" (a translation of Aristotle, De Interpretatione, 7), which would seem to point toa real or objective counterpart of the products of our thought ; and the traditional definitions of Boetius, whom he frequently quotes, support the same view of the concept as gathered from a number of individuals in virtue of a real resemblance, What Abelard combats is the substantiation of these resembling qualities, which leads to their being regarded as identical in all the separate individuals, and thus paves the way for the gradual undermining of the individual, the only true and indivisible substance. But he modifies his Nominalism so as to approach, though somewhat vaguely, to the position of Aristotle himself. At the same time he has nothing to say against the Platonic theory of universalia ante rem, the Ideas being interpreted as exemplars, existing in the divine understanding before the creation of things. Abelard's discussion of the problem (which it is right to say is on the whole incidental rather than systematic) is thus marked by an eclecticism which was perhaps the source at once of its strength and its weakness. Rémusat characterizes his teaching as displaying "rather an origin- ality of talent than of ideas," and Prantl says that in the sphere of logic his activity shows no more independence than that of perhaps a hundred others at the same time. But his brilliant ability and restless activity made him the central figure in the dialectical as in the other discussions of his time. To him was indirectly due, in the main, that troubling of the Realistic waters which resulted in so many modifications of the original thesis; and his own somewhat eclectic ruling on the question in debate came to be tacitly accepted in the schools, as the ardour of the disputants began to abate after the middle of the century.

Abelard's application of dialectic to theology betrayed the Nominalistic basis of his doctrine. He zealously combated the Tritheism of Roscellinus, but his own views on the Trinity were condemned by two councils (at Soissons in 1121 and at Sens in 1140). Of the alterna- tives—three Gods or wna ves—which his Nominalistic logic presented to Roscellinus, Roscellinus had chosen the first; Abelard recoiled to the other extreme, reducing the three Persons to three aspects or attributes of the Divine Being (Power, Wisdom, and Love). For this he was called to account by Bernard of Clairvaux (1091-1153), the recognized guardian of orthodoxy in France. Bernard declared that he ''savoured of Arius when he spoke of the Trinity, of Pelagius when he spoke of grace, and of Nestorius when he spoke of the person of Christ." "While he laboured to prove Plato a Christian, he showed himself a heathen." Nor can it be said that the instinct of the saint was altogether at fault. The germs of Rational- ism were unquestionably present in several of Abelard's opinions, and still more so, the traditionalists must have thought, in his general attitude towards theological questions. "A doctrine is believed," he said, "not because God has said it, but because we are convinced by reason that it is so." "Doubt is the road to inquiry, and by inquiry we perceive the truth." (" Dubitando enim ad inquisitionem venimus, inquirendo veritatem percipimus.") The application of dialectic to theology was not new. Anselm had made an elaborate employment of reason in the interest of faith, but the spirit of pious subordination which had marked the demonstrations of Anselm seemed wanting in the argumentations of this bolder and more restless spirit; and the church, or at least an influential section of it, took alarm at the encroachments of Rational- ism. Abelard's remarkable compilation Sic et Mon was not calculated to allay their suspicions. In bringing together the conflicting opinions of the fathers on all the chief points of Christian dogmatics, it may be admitted that Abelard's aim was simply to make these contradic- tions the starting point of an inquiry which should deter- mine in each case the true position and wa media of Christian theology. Only such a determination could enable the doctrines to be summarily presented as a system of thought. The book was undoubtedly the precursor of the famous Books of Sentences of Abelard's own pupil Peter Lombard and others, and of all the Summae Theologiae with which the church was presently to

abound. But the anti- nomies, as they appeared in Abelard's treatise, without their solutions, could not but seem to insinuate a deep-laid scepticism with regard to authority. And even the pro- posal to apply the unaided reason to solve questions which had divided the fathers must have been resented by the more rigid churchmen as the rash intrusion of an over-confident Rationalism. :

Realism was in the beginning of the 12th century the dominant doctrine and the doctrine of the church ; the Nominalists were the innovators and the especial repre- sentatives of the Rationalistic tendency. In order to see the difference in this respect between the schools we have only to compare the peaceful and fortunate life of William of Champeaux (who enjoyed the friendship of St Bernard) with the agitated and persecuted existence of Roscellinus and, in a somewhat less degree, of Abelard. But now the greater boldness of the dialecticians awakened a spirit of general distrust in the exercise of reason on sacred subjects, and we find even a Realist like Gilbert de la Porrée arraigned by Bernard and his friends before a general council on a charge of heresy (at Rheims, 1148). Though Gilbert was acquitted, the fact of his being brought to trial illustrates the growing spirit of suspicion. Those heresy-hunts show us the worst side of St Bernard,

yet they are in a way just the obverse of his deep mystical piety. This is the judgment of Otto of Freising, a con- temporary :—" He was, from the fervour of his Christian religion, as jealous as, from his habitual meekness, he was

in some measure credulous ; so that he held in abhorrence those who trusted in the wisdom of this world and were

too much attached to human reasonings, and if anything alien from the Christian faith were said to him in reference

to them he readily gave ear to it." The same attitude is maintained by the mystical school of St Victor. Hugo Hugo of St Victor (1097-1141) declares that '"the uncor- of St rupted truth of things cannot be discovered by reason- — ing." The perils of dialectic are manifold, especially in ennai: the overbold spirit it engenders. Nevertheless Hugo, by

the composition of his Summa Sententiarum, endeavoured

to give a methodical or rational presentation of the con- tent of faith, and was thus the first of the so-called Sum- mists. Richard of St Victor, prior of the monastery from 1162 to 1173, is still more absorbed in mysticism, and his successor Walter loses his temper altogether in abuse of

the dialecticians and the Summists alike. The Summists have as much to say against the existence of God as for

it, and the dialecticians, having gone to school to the pagans, have forgotten over Aristotle the way of salvation. Abelard, Peter Lombard, Gilbert de la Porrée, and Peter

of Poitiers he calls the ‘four labyrinths of France.”

This anger and contempt may have been partly justified Decline by the discreditable state into which the study of logic °f leet. had fallen. The speculative impulse was exhausted which marks the end of the 11th and the first half of the 12th century,—a period more original and more interesting in many ways than the great age of Scholasticism in the 13th century. By the middle of the century, logical studies had lost to a great extent their real interest and application, and had degenerated into trivial displays of ingenuity. On the other hand, the Summists} occupied themselves merely in the systematizing of authorities. The mystics held aloof from both, and devoted themselves to the practical work of preaching and edification. The intellect of the age thus no longer exhibited itself asa unity ; disintegration had set in. And it is significant of this that the ablest and most cultured representative of the second half of the century was rather an historian of opinion than himself a philosopher or theologian. John of Salisbury (Johannes John of Sarisberiensis) was educated in France in the years Salisbury. 1136—48—in Paris under Abelard (who had then returned to Paris, and was lecturing at St Geneviéve) and Robert of Melun, at Chartres under William of Conches, then again in Paris under Gilbert de la Porrée and Robert Pulleyn.

The autobiographical account of these years contained in his Metalogicus is of the utmost value as a picture of the schools of the time; it is also one of

the historian’s chief sources as a record of the many-coloured logical views of the period. John was a man of affairs, secretary to three successive archbishops of Canterbury, of whom Becket was one. He died in 1180 as bishop of Chartres. When a pupil there, he had imbibed to the full the love of class- ical learning which was traditional in the school. An ardent admirer of Cicero, he was himself the master of an elegant Latin style, and in his works he often appears a

1 Among these may be mentioned Robert Pulleyn (ob. 1150), Peter Lombard (0b. 1164), called the Afagister Sententiarum, whose work became the text-book of the schools, and remained so for cen- turies. Hundreds of commentaries were written upon it. Peter of Poitiers, the pupil of Petcr the Lombard, flourished about 1160-70. Other names are Robert of Melun, Hugo of Amicns, Stephen Langton, and William of Auxerre. More important is Alain de Lille (Alanus de Insulis), who died at an advanced age in 1203. His De Arte seu de Articulis Catholicae Fidei is a Swmma of Christian theology, but with a greater infusion than usual of philosophical reasoning. Alanus was acquainted with the celebrated Laber de Causis.

er

more as a cultivated humanist than as a Scholastic divine. His Policraticus, it has been said, “is to some extent an encyclopedia of the cultivated thought of the middle of the 12th century.” The JAfetalogicus is a defence of logic against those who despised all philo- sophical training. But John recoiled from the idle casuistry which occupied his own logical contemporaries ; and, mindful probably of their aimless ingenuity, he adds the caution that dialectic, valuable and necessary as it is, is ‘like the sword of Hercules in a pigmy’s hand ” unless there be added toit the accoutrement of the other sciences. Catholic in spirit rather than dogmatic, John ranks him- self at times among the Academics, “ since, in those things about which a wise man may doubt, I depart not from their footsteps.” The list which he gives of things which may be doubted (quae sunt dubitabilia sapientt) is at once curious and instructive. It is not fitting to subtilize overmuch, and in the end John of Salisbury’s solution is the practical one, his charitable spirit pointing him in particular to that love which is the

fulfilling of the law. The first period of Scholasticism being thus at an end, there is an interval of nearly half a century without any

S>CHOLATW TT iter

of Aphrodisias, of Philoponus, annotated in the same sense by the same hands. This was the rich but dangerous present made by the Mussulman school to the Christian" (i. 382). To these must be added the Neoplatonically inspired Jons Vitae of the Jewish philosopher and poet Ibn Gebirol, whom the Scholastics cited as Avicebron and believed to be an Arabian.

By special command of Raimund, archbishop of Toledo, the chief of these works were translated from the Arabic through the Castilian into Latin by the archdeacon Dominicus Gonzalvi with the aid of Johannes Avendeath (=ben David), a converted Jew, about 1150. About the same time, or not long after, the Lzber de Causis became known—a work destined to have a powerful influence on Scholastic thought, especially in the period immediately succeeding. Accepted at first as Aristotle's, and actually printed in the first Latin editions of his works, the book is in reality an Arabian compilation of Neo- platonic theses. Of a similar character was the pseudo- Aristotelian 7heologia which was in circulation at least as early as 1200.

The first effects of this immense acquisition of new First

material were markedly unsettling on the doctrinal ortho- effects of doxy of the time. The apocryphal Neoplatonic treatises ye and the views of the Arabian commentators obscured for the fee first students the genuine doctrine of Aristotle, and the 13th :

Extension noteworthy philosophical productions. The cause of the of know- new development of Scholasticism in the 13th century ledge of was the translation into Latin for the first time of the " complete works of Aristotle. An inventory has been given

of the scanty stock of works accessible to students in the 9th century. The stock remained unenlarged till towards the middle of the 12th century, when

the remaining trea- tises of the Organon became known. Abelard expressly states that he knew only the Categories and the De Inter- pretatione ; but it seems from passages adduced by Prantl that he must, before the date of his Dialectica, have had some indirect and hearsay knowledge of the contents of the other treatises, though without being able himself to con- sult a copy. The books made their way almost noiselessly into the schools. In 1132 Adam de Petit-Pont, it is stated, made a version of the Prior Analytics. Gilbert de la Porrée, who died in 1154, refers to the Analytics as currently known. His disciple Otto of Freising carried the Analytics, the Topica, and the Soph. Elenchi from France to Germany, probably in the translation of Boetius. John of Salisbury was acquainted with these and also with newer and more literal translations. But, while the fuller knowledge of the ancient logic resulted in an increase of formal acuteness, it appears to have been of but small benefit to serious studies till there was added to it a know- ledge of the other works of Aristotle. This knowledge came to the Scholastics in the first instance through the medium of Arabian philosophy. (See ARABIAN PHIto- sopHy.) The doctrines and the works of Aristotle had been transmitted by the Nestorians to the Arabs, and among those kept alive by a succession of philosophers, first in the East and afterwards in the West. The chief of these, at least so far as regards the influence which they exerted on medizval philosophy, were Avicenna, Avem- pace, and Averroes. The unification by the last-men- tioned of Aristotle's active intellect in all men, and his consequent denial of individual immortality are well known. The universal human intellect is made by him to proceed from the divine by a series of Neoplatonic emanations. In the course of the 12th century the writings of these men were introduced into France by the Jews of Andalusia, of Marseilles, and Montpellier. " These writings contained," says Hauréau, "the text of the Organon, the Physics, the Metaphysics, the Ethics, the De Anima, the Parva Naturalia, and a large number of other treatises of Aristotle, accompanied by continuous commentaries. There arrived besides by the same channel the glosses of Theophrastus, of Simplicius, of Alexander

century opens with quite a crop of mystical heresies. The mystical pantheism taught at Paris by Amalrich of Bena (0b, 1207 ; see AMatRicH and Mysticism), though based by him upon a revival of Scotus Erigena, was doubtless connected in its origin with the Neoplatonic treatises which now

become current. The immanence of God in all things and His incarnation as the Holy Spirit in themselves ap- pear to have been the chief doctrines of the Amalricans. They are reported to have said, “Omnia unum, quia quicquid est est Deus.” About the same time David of Dinant, in a book De Vomis (rendered by Albertus De Dinsionrbus), taught the identity of God with matter (or the indivisible principle of bodies) and nous (or the indivisible principle of intelligences)—-an extreme Realism culminating in a materialistic pantheism. If they were diverse, he argued, there must exist above them some higher or common element or being, in which case this would be God, nous, or the original matter. The spread of the Amalrican doctrine led to fierce persecutions, and the provincial council which met at Paris in 1209, after con- demning the heresies of Amalrich and David, expressly decreed “that neither the books of Aristotle on natural philosophy, nor commentaries on the same, should be read, whether publicly or privately, at Paris.” In 1215 this prohibition is renewed in the statutes of the university of Paris, as sanctioned by the papal legate. ‘“ Et quod legant libros Aristotelis de dialectica tam veteri quam de nova. . . Non legantur libri Aristotelis de metaphysica et naturali philosophia, nec summa de iisdem.” Permission is thus given to lecture on the logical books, both those which had been known all along and those introduced since 1128, but the veto upon the Physics is extended to the AMeta- physics and the summaries of the Arabian commentators. By 1231, however, the fears of the church were beginning to be allayed. A bull of Gregory IX. in that year makes no mention of any Aristotelian works except the Physics. As these had been “prohibited by the provincial council for specific reasons,” they are not to be used in the university ‘till such time as they have been examined and purged of all suspicion of errors.” Finally, in the year 1254, we find the university officially prescribing how many hours are to be devoted to the explanation of the Metaphysics and the principal physical treatises of Aristotle. These dates cnable us to measure accurately the stages by

Mendi- , cant | friars.

John of Rochelle.

doctrine of the Afetaphysics. – Hales (ob. 1245), the

ScHOLE®Tacis’

which the church accommodated itself to, and as it were took possession of, the Aristotelian philosophy. Growing knowledge of Aristotle's works and the multiplication of translations enabled students to distinguish the genuine Aristotle from the questionable accompaniments with which he had made his first appearance in Western Europe. Fresh translations of Aristotle and Averroes had already been made from the Arabic by Michael Scot and Hermannus Alemannus, at the instance of the emperor Frederick II.; so that the whole body of Aristotle's works was at hand in Latin translations from about 1210 to 12265. Soon afterwards efforts began to be made to secure more literal translations direct from the Greek. Robert Grosseteste (0b. 1253) was one of the first to stir in this matter, and he was followed by Albertus Magnus and Thomas Aquinas. Half a century thus sufficed to remove the ban of the church, and soon Aristotle was recognized on all hands as "the philosopher" par eacellence, the master of those that know. It even became customary to draw a parallel between him as the praecursor Christi m naturalibus and John the Baptist, the praecursor Christe m graturtis.

This unquestioned supremacy was not yielded, however, at the very beginning of the period. The earlier doctors who avail themselves of Aristotle's works, while bowing to his authority implicitly in matters of logic, are generally found defending a Christianized Platonism against the So it is with Alexander of first Scholastic who was acquainted with the whole of the Aristotelian works and the Arabian commentaries upon them. He was more of a theologian than a philosopher; and in his chief work, Summa Uni- versae Theologiae, he simply employs his increased philo- sophical knowledge in the demonstration of theological doctrines. So great, however, did his achievement seen that he was honoured with the titles of Doctor Irrefraga- bilis and Theologorum Monarcha, Alexander of Hales be- longed to the Franciscan order, and it is worth remarking that it was the mendicant orders which now came forward as the protagonists of Christian learning and faith and, as it were, reconquered Aristotle for the church. During the first half of the 13th century, when the university of Paris was plunged in angry feuds with the municipality, feuds which even led at one time (1229) to the flight of the students in a body, the friars established teachers in their convents in Paris. After the university had settled its quarrels these continued to teach, and soon became formidable rivals of the

secular lecturers. After a severe struggle for academical recognition they were finally admitted to all the privileges of the university by a bull of Alexander IV. in 1253. The Franciscans took the lead in this intellectual movement with Alexander of Hales and Bonaventura, but the Dominicans were soon able to boast of two greater names in Albert the Great and Thomas Aquinas. Still later Duns Scotus and Occam were both Franciscans. Alexander of Hales was succeeded in his chair of instruction by his pupil John of Rochelle, who died in 1271 but taught only till 1253. His treatise De Anima, on which Hauréau lays particular stress, 1s interesting as showing the greater scope now given to psychological discussions. This was a natural result of acquaintance with Aristotle's De Anima and the numerous Greck and Arabian commentaries upon it, and it is observable in most of the writers that have still to be mentioned. Even the nature of the universals is no longer discussed from a purely logical or metaphysical point of view, but becomes connected with psychological questions. And, on the whole, the widening of intellectual interests is the chief feature by which the second period of Scholasti- cism may be distinguished from the first. Tn some respects

but display a similar

just as the

427

there is more freshness and interest in the speculations General which burst forth so ardently in the end of the 11th and character the first half of the 12th century. Albert and Aquinas — e no doubt stood on a higher level than Anselm and Abelard, period. not merely by their wider range of knowledge but also by

the intellectual massiveness of their achievements ; but it

may be questioned whether the earlier writers did not possess a greater force of originality and a keener talent. Originality was at no time the strong point of the Middle

Ages, but in the later period it was almost of necessity buried under the mass of material suddenly thrust upon

the age, to be assimilated. On the other hand, the influence of this new material is everywhere evident in

the wider range of questions which are discussed by the doctors of the period. Interest is no longer to the same extent concentrated on the one question of the universals.

Other questions, says Hauréau, are “ placed on the order

of the day,—the question of the elements of substance,

that of the principle of individuation, that of the origin of

the ideas, of the manner of their existence in the human understanding and in the divine thought, as well as various others of equal interest” (i420). Some of these,

it may be said, are simply the old Scholastic problem in a different garb ; but the extended horizon of which Hauréau speaks is amply proved by mere reference to the treatises

of Albert and St Thomas. They there seek to reproduce

for their own time all the departments of the Aristotelian system.

John of Rochelle was succeeded in 1253 by John Bona- Fidanza, better known as Bonaventura (1221-74), who ventura. had also been a pupil of Alexander of Hales. But the fame of “the Seraphic Doctor ” is connected more closely with the history of mysticism (see Mysticism) than with the main stream of Scholastic thought. Like his master, he defended Plato—or what he considered to be the Platonic theory—against the attacks of Aristotle. Thus he de- feuded the universalia ante rem as exemplars existent in the divine intelligence, and censured Aristotle’s doctrine of the eternity of the world. Among the earlier teachers and writers of this century we have also to name William William of of Auvergne (0b. 1249), whose treatises

De Universo and Avvetene. De Anima make extensive use of Aristotle and the Arabians, Platonic leaning. The existence of ‘ntellections in our minds is, he maintains, a sufficient demonstration of the existence of an intelligible world, ideas of sense are sufficient evidence of a sensible world, This archetypal world is the Son of God and true God. Robert Grosseteste, important in the sphere Grosse- of ecclesiastical politics, has been already mentioned as teste. active in procuring translations of Aristotle from the Greek.

He also wrote commentaries on logical and physical works

of Aristotle. Michael Scot, the renowned wizard of popular Michael tradition, earned his reputation by numerous works on S¢ct. astrology and alchemy. His connexion with philosophy

was chiefly in the capacity of a translator. Vincent of Vincent of Beauvais (ob. 1264) was the author of an encyclopedic work Beauvais. called Speculum Majus, in which, without much independent

ability, he collected the opinions of ancient and medieval

writers on the most diverse points, transcribing the fragments of their works which he deemed most interesting.

Albertus Magnus introduces us at once to the great age Albert of Scholasticism. Born in Swabia in 1193, he lived to the and great age of eighty-seven, dying at Cologne in 1280. The

except where their differences make it necessary ; and in giving an account of their common system it will be well to present it at once in its most perfect form. Albert was ‘the first Scholastic who reproduced the whole philosophy of Aristotle in systematic order with constant reference to the Arabic commentators, and who remodelled it to meet the requirements of ecclesiastical dogma” (Ueberweg, i. 436). On this account he was called by his contemporaries “‘the Universal Doctor.” But in Albert it may be said that the matter was still too new and too multifarious to be thoroughly

mastered. The fabric of knowledge is not fitly jointed together in all its parts ; the theologian and the philosopher are not perfectly fused into one individual, but speak sometimes with different voices. In St Thomas this is no longer so; the fusion is almost perfect. The pupil, entering into his master's labours, was able from the first to take a more compre- hensive survey of the whole field; and in addition he was doubtless endowed with an intellect which was finer, though it might not be more powerful, than his master's, Albert had the most touching affection for his distinguished scholar. When he went to Paris in 1245 to lecture and to take his doctor's degree, his pupil accompanied him ; ond, on their return to Cologne, Aquinas taught along with his master in the great Dominican school there. At a later date, when Aquinas proceeded to Paris to lecture inde- pendently, he occupied the Dominican chair at the same time that Bonaventura held the Franciscan professorship. They received the degree of doctor in the same year, 1257. Rivals in a manner though they were, and differing on points of philosophy, the Angelic and Seraphie Doctors were united in friendship and Christian charity.

The monotheistic influence of Aristotle and his Arabian commentators shows itself in Albert and Aquinas, at the from Outset, in the definitive fashion in which the "mysteries " philo- Of the Trinity and the Incarnation are henceforth detached sophy. from the sphere of rational or philosophical theology. So

long as the Neoplatonic influence remained strong, attempts were still made to demonstrate the doctrine of the Trinity, chiefly in a mystical sense as in Erigena, but also by orthodox churchmen like Anselm. Orthodoxy, whether Catholic or Protestant, adopted Thomas's distinction. The existence of God is maintained by Albert and Aquinas to be demonstrable by

'* Mys- teries " excluded

reason ; but here again they reject the ontological argu-

ment of Anselm, and restrict themselves to the a posteriori proof, rising after the manner of Aristotle from that which is prior for us (xpérepov mpds neas) to that which is prior by nature or in itself (wpdrepov dice). God is not fully comprehensible by us, says Albert, because the finite is not able to

grasp the infinite, yet he is not alto- gether beyond our knowledge; our intellects are touched by a ray of his light, and through this contact we are brought into communion with him. God, as the only self-subsistent and necessary being, is the creator of all things. Here the Scholastic philosophy comes into con- flict with Aristotle's doctrine of the eternity of the world. Albert and Aquinas alike maintain the beginning of the world in time; time itself only exists since the moment of this miraculous creation. But Thomas, though he holds the fact of creation to be rationally demonstrable, regards the beginning of the world in time as only an article of faith, the philosophical arguments for and against being inconclusive.

The question of universals, though fully discussed, no longer forms the centre of speculation. The great age of Scholasticism presents, indeed, a substantial unanimity upon this vexed point, maintaining at once, in different senses, the existence of the universals ante rem, in re, and post rem. Albert and Aquinas both profess the moderate

has since generally

Aristotelian Realism which treats genera and species only as substantiae secundae, yet as really inherent in the individuals, and constituting their form or essence. The universals, therefore, have no existence, as universals, in rerum natura; and Thomas endorses, in this sense, the polemic of Aristotle against Plato's hypostatized abstrac- tions. But, in the Augustinian sense of ideas immanent in the divine mind, the universal ante rem may well be admitted as possessing real existence. Finally, by abstraction from the individual things of sense, the mind is able to contemplate the universal apart from its accom- paniments (animal sine homine, asino, et aliis speciebus) ; these subjective existences are the wniversalia post rem of the Nominalists and Conceptualists. But the difficulties which embarrassed a former age in trying to conceive the mode in which the universal exists in the individual reappear in the systems of the present period as the pro- blem of the principium individuationis. The universal, The as the form or essence of the individual, is called its principle quidditas (its "what-ness" or nature);

but, besides pos- ae sessing a general nature and answering to a general defi- “°4U¥™ nition (z.¢., being a “what”), every man, for example, is this particular man, here and now. It is the question of the particularity or “ this- ness ” (haecceitas, as Duns Scotus afterwards named it) that embarrasses the Scholastics, Albert and Aquinas agree in declaring that the principle of individuation is to be found in matter, not, however, in matter as a formless substrate but in determinate matter (materia signata), which is explained to mean matter quan- titatively determined in certain respects. ‘The variety of individuals,” says Albert, “depends entirely upon the division of matter” (individuorum multitudo Jit omnis per divisionem materiae) ; and Aquinas says “the principle of the diversity of individuals of the same species is the quantitative division of matter ” (divisio materiae secundum quantitatem), which his followers render by the abbreviated phrase materia quanta. A tolerably evident shortcoming of such a doctrine is that, while declaring the quantitative determination of matter to be the individual element in the individual, it gives no account of how such quantitative determination arises. Yet the problem of the individual is really contained in this prior question ; for determinate matter already involves particularity or thisness. This difficulty was presently raised by Duns Scotus and the real- istically-inclined opponents of the Thomist doctrine. But, as Ueberweg points out, it might fairly be urged by Aquinas that he does not pretend to explain how the individual is actually created, but merely states what he finds to be an invariable condition of the existence of individuals. Apart from this general question, a difficulty arises on the Thomist theory in regard to the existence of spirits or disembodied personalities. This affects first of all the existence of angels, in regard to whom Aquinas admits that they are immaterial or separate forms (formae separatae). They possess the principle of individuation in themselves, he teaches, but plurality of individuals is in such a case equivalent to plurality of species (im eis tot sunt species quot sunt imdividua). The same difficulty, however, affects the existence of the disembodied human spirit. If individuality depends in matter, must we not conclude with Averroes that individuality is extinguished at death, and that only the universal form survives? This conelu- sion, it is needless to say, is strenuously opposed both by Albert and Thomas. Albert wrote a special treatise De Unitate Intellectus contra Averroistas, and Thomas in his numerous writings is even more explicit. It is still admis- sible, however, to doubt whether the hateful consequence does not follow consistently from

the theory laid down. Aquinas regards the souls of men, like the angels, as immaterial forms; and he includes in the soul-unit, so to

Duns Scotus.

So HO Ls iC TS

speak, not merely the anima rationalis of Aristotle, but also the vegetative, sensitive, appetitive, and motive functions. The latter depend, it is true, on bodily organs during our earthly sojourn, but the dependence is not necessary. ‘The soul is created by God when the body of which it is the entelechy is prepared for it. It is the natural state of the soul to be united to a body (Animae prius con- venit esse unitam corport quam esse a& corpore separa- tam), but being immaterial it is not affected by the dis- solution of the body. The soul must be immaterial since it has the power of cognizing the universal ; and its immor- tality is further based by St Thomas on the natural longing for unending existence which belongs to a being whose thoughts are not confined to the “here ” and “now,” but are able to abstract from every limitation.

Thomism, which was destined to become the official philosophy of the Roman Catholic Church, became in the first instance the accepted doctrine of the Dominican order, who were presently joined in this allegiance by the Augustinians. The Franciscan order, on the other hand, early showed their rivalry in attacks upon the doctrines of Albert and Aquinas. One of the first of these was the Reprehensorium seu Correctorium Fratris Thomae, published in 1285 by William Lamarre, in which the Averroistic consequences of the Thomist doctrine of individuation are already pressed home. More important was Richard of Middletown (died about 1300), who anticipated many of the objections urged soon after him by Duns Scotus. This renowned opponent of the Thomist doctrine was born in the second half of the 13th century, and after achieving an extraordinary success as a lecturer in Oxford and Paris died at an early age in the year 1308. His system is conditioned throughout by its relation to that of Aquinas, of which it is in effect an elaborate criticism. The chief characteristic of this criticism is well expressed in the name bestowed on Duns by his contemporaries—Doctor Subtilis. It will be sufficient therefore to note the chief points in which the two great antagonists differ. In general it may be said that Duns

shows less confidence in the power of reason than Thomas, and to that extent Erdmann and others are right in looking upon his system as the beginning of the decline of Scholasticism. For Scholasticism, as perfected by Aquinas, implies the har- mony of reason and faith, in the sense that they both teach the same truths. To this general position Aquinas, it has been seen, makes several important exceptions ; but the exceptions are few in number and precisely defined. Scotus extends the number of theological doctrines which are not, according to him, susceptible of philosophical proof, including in this class the creation of the world out of nothing, the immortality of the human soul, and even the existence of an almighty divine cause of the universe (though he admits the possibility of proving an ultimate cause superior to all else). His destructive criticism thus tended to reintroduce the dualism between faith and reason which Scholasticism had laboured through cen- turies to overcome, though Scotus himself, of course, had no such sceptical intention. But the way in which he founded the leading Christian doctrines (after confessing his inability to rationalize them) on the arbitrary will of God was undoubtedly calculated to help in the work of disintegration. And it is significant that this primacy of the undetermined will (voluntas superior intellectu) was the central contention of the Scotists against the Thomist doctrine. Voluntary action, St Thomas had said, is action originating in self or in an internal principle. As com- pared with the animals, which are immediately determined to their ends by the instinct of the moment, man deter- mines his own course of action freely after a certain pro- cess of rational comparison (ex collatione quadam rationis).

429

It is evident that the freedom here spoken of is a freedom from the immediacy of impulse—a freedom based upon our possession of reason as a power of comparison, memory,

and forethought. Nothing is said of an absolute freedom Freedom of the will; the will is, on the contrary, subordinated to of the the reason in so far as it is supposed to choose what pall reason pronounces good. Accordingly, the Thomist doctrine may be described as a moderate determinism.

To this Scotus opposed an indeterminism of the extremest type, describing the will as the possibility of determining itself motivelessly in either of two opposite senses. Trans- ferred to the divine activity, Thomas's doctrine led him to insist upon the perseitas bont. The divine will is, equally with the human, subject to a rational determination ; God commands what is good because it is good. Scotus, on the other hand, following out his doctrine of the will, declared the good to be so only by arbitrary imposition.

It is good because God willed it, and for no other reason ; had He commanded precisely the opposite course of con- duct, that course would have been right by the mere fact

of His commanding it. Far removed from actuality as such speculations regarding the priority of intellect or will

in the Divine Being may seem to be, the side taken is yet

a sure index of the general tendency of a philosophy. Aquinas is on the side of rationalism, Scotus on the side

of scepticism.

While agreeing with Albert and Thomas in maintaining the threefold existence of the universals, Duns Scotus attacked the Thomist doctrine of individuation. The dis- tinction of the universal essence and the individualizing determinations in the individual does not coincide, he maintained, with the distinction between form and matter. The additional determinations are as truly ''form" as the universal essence. If the latter be spoken of as quidditas, the former may be called Aaecceitas. Just as the genus becomes the species by the addition of formal determina- tions called the difference, so the species becomes the individual by the addition of fresh forins of difference. As animal becomes homo by the addition of humanitas, so homo becomes Socrates by the addition of the qualities signified by Socratitas. It is false, therefore, to speak of matter as the principle of individuation ; and if this is so there is no longer any foundation for the Thomist view that in angelic natures every individual constitutes a species apart. Notwithstanding the above doctrine, how- ever, Scotus holds that all created things possess both matter and form—the soul,

for example, possessing a matter of its own before its union with the body. But the matter of spiritual beings is widely different from the matter of corporeal things. In his treatment of the con- ception of matter, Duns shows that he inclined much more to the Realism which makes for pantheism than was the case with the Aristotelianism of Thomas. A perfectly formless matter (materia prima) was regarded by him as the universal substratum and common element of all finite existences. He expressly intimates in this connexion his acceptance of Avicebron's position. Ego autem ad post- Honem Avicebronis redeo, that is, to the Neoplatonically conceived Fons Vitae of the Jew Gebirol.

In the end of the 13th century and the beginning of the Thomists 14th the Thomists and Scotists divided the philosophical a4 Scot- and theological world between them. Among the Thomists ** may be named John of Paris, igidius of Lessines (wrote in 1278), Bernard of Trilia (1240-92), and Peter of Auvergne. More important was Aigidius of Colonna (1247-1316), general of the Augustinian order, surnamed Doctor Funda- hissimus or Fundamentarius. Herveus Natalis (0b. 1323) and Thomas Bradwardine (0b. 1349) were determined oppo- nents of Scotism. Siger of Brabant and Gottfried of Fon- taines, chancellor of the university of Paris, taught Thomism

William of Occam.

at the Sorbonne; and through Humbert, abbot of Prulli, the doctrine won admission to the Cistercian order. Among the disciples of Duns Scotus are mentioned John of Bas- solis, Franciscus de Mayronis (0b. 1327), Antonius Andrez (ob. c. 1320), John Dumbleton and Walter Burleigh (1275-1357) of Oxford, Nicolaus of Lyra, Peter of Aquila, and others. Henry Goethals or Henry of Ghent (Hen- ricus Gandavensis, 1217-93), surnamed Doctor Solennis, occupied on the whole an independent and pre-Thomist position, leaning to an Augustinian Platonism. Gerard of Bologna (0b. 1317) aud Raoul of Brittany are rather to be ranked with the Thomists. So also is Petrus Hispanus (died 1277 as Pope John XXI.), who is chiefly important, however, as the author of the much-used manual Saum- mule Logicales, in which the logic of the schools was expanded by the incorporation of fresh

matter of a semi- grammatical character. Petrus Hispanus had predecessors, however, in William of Shyreswood (died 1249 as chan- cellor of Lincoln) and Lambert of Auxerre, and it has been hotly disputed whether the whole of the additions are not originally due to the Byzantine Synopsis of Psellus. By far the greatest disciple of Aquinas is Dante Alighieri, in whose Divina Commedia the theology and philosophy of the Middle Ages, as fixed by Saint Thomas, have received the immortality which poetry alone can bestow. Two names stand apart from the others of the century— Raymond Lully (1234-1315) and Roger Bacon (1214- 94). The Ars Jfagna of the former professed by means of a species of logical machine to give a rigid demonstration of all the fundamental Christian doctrines, and was intended by its author as an unfailing instrument for the conversion of the Saracens and heathen. Roger Bacon was rather a pioneer of modern science than a Scholastic, and persecution and imprisonment were the penalty of his opposition to the spirit of his time.

The last stage of Scholasticism preceding its dissolution is marked by the revival of Nominalism in a militant form. This doctrine is already to be found in Petrus Aureolus (ob. 1321), a Franciscan trained in the Scotist doctrine, and in William Durand of St Pourgain (0d. 1332), a Dominican who passed over from Thomism to his later position. But the name with which the Nominal- ism of the 14th century is historically associated is that of the “Invincible Doctor,” William of Occam (0b. 1347 , who, as the author of a doctrine which came to be almost universally accepted, received from his followers the title Venerabilis Inceptor. The hypostatizing of abstractions is the error against which Occam is continually fighting. His constantly recurring maxim—known as Occam’s razor —is Entia non sunt multiplicanda praeter necessitatem. The Realists, he considers, have greatly sinned against this maxim in their theory of a real universal or common element in all the individuals of a class. From one abstraction they are led to another, to solve the difficul- ties which are created by the realization of the first. Thus the great problem for the Realists is how to derive the individual from the universal. But the whole inquiry moves in a world of unrealities. Everything that exists, by the mere fact of its existence, is individual (Quaelibet res, co ipso quod est, est haec res). It is absurd therefore to seek for a cause of the individuality of the thing other than the cause of the thing itself. The individual is the only reality, whether the question be of an

individual thing in the external world or an individual state in the world of mind. It is not the individual which needs explanation but the universal. Occam reproaches the “modern Platonists” for perverting the Aristotelian doctrine by these speculations, and claims the authority of Aristotle for his own Nominalistic doctrine. The uni- versal is not anything really existing ; it is a terminus or

predicable (whence the followers of Occam were at first called Terminists). It is no more than a “mental con- cept signifying univocally several singulars.” It is a natural sign representing these singulars, but it has no reality beyond that of the mental act by which it is pro- duced and that of the singulars of which it is predicated, As regards the existence (if we may so speak) of the uni- versal 7m mente, Occam indicates his preference, on the ground of simplicity, for the view which identifies the concept with the actus intelligendi (“une modalité pas- sagére de l’Ame,” as Hauréau expresses it), rather than for that which treats ideas as distinct entities within the mind. And in a similar spirit he explains the wniversalia ante rem as being, not substantial existences in God, but simply God’s knowledge of things—a knowledge which is not of universals but of singulars, since these alone exist realiter. Such a doctrine, in the stress it lays upon the singular, the object of immediate perception, is evidently inspired by a spirit differing widely even from the moderate Realism of Thomas. It is a spirit which dis- trusts abstractions, which makes for direct observation, for inductive research. Occam, who is still a’ Scholastic, gives us the Scholastic justification of the spirit which had already taken hold upon Roger Bacon, and which was to enter upon its rights in the 15th and 16th centuries. Moreover, there is no denying that the new Nominalism not only represents the love of reality and the spirit of induction, but also contains in itself the germs of that empiricism and sensualism so frequently associated with – the former tendencies. St Thomas had regarded the knowledge of the universal as an intellectual activity which might even be advanced in proof of the immortality of the soul. Occain, on the other hand, maintains in the spirit of Hobbes that the act of abstraction does not pre- Suppose any activity of the understanding or will, but is a spontaneous secondary process by which the first act (perception) or the state it leaves behind (habitus derelictus ex

primo actu= Hobbes's "decaying sense") is naturally followed, as soon as two or more similar representations are present.

In another way also Occam heralds the dissolution of Scholasticism. The union of philosophy and theology is the mark of the Middle Ages, but in Occam their sever- ance is complete. A pupil of Scotus, he carried his master's criticism farther, and denied that any theological doctrines were rationally demonstrable. Even the exist- ence and unity of God were to be accepted as articles of faith. The Centiloguium Theologicum, which is devoted to this negative criticism and to showing the irrational consequences of many of the chief doctrines of the church, has often been cited as an example of thoroughgoing scepticism under a mask of solemn irony. But if that were so, it would still remain doubtful, as Erdmann remarks, whether the irony is directed against the church or against reason. On the whole, there is no reason to doubt Occam's honest adhesion to each of the two guides whose contrariety he laboured to display. None the less is the position in itself an untenable one and the parent of scepticism. The principle of the twofold nature of truth! thus embodied in Occam's system was unquestionably adopted by many merely to cloak their theological unbelief; and, as has been said, it is significant of the internal dis- solution of Scholasticism. Occam denied the title of a science to theology, emphasizing, like Scotus, its practical character. He also followed his master in laying stress on the arbitrary will of God as the foundation of morality.

1 This principle appeared occasionally at an earlier date, for exam- ple in Simon of Tournay about 1200. It was expressly censured by Pope John XXI. in 1276. But only in the period following Occam did it become a current doctrine,

Spread of Nominal- church and the constituted authorities.

ism,

The "last of the Schol- astics."

Nominalism was at first met by the opposition of the In 1339 Occam's treatises were put under a ban by the university of Paris, and in the following year Nominalism was solemnly con- demned. Nevertheless the new doctrine spread on all hands. Dominicans like Armand de Beauvoir (0d. 1334) and Gregory of Rimini accepted it. It was taught in Paris by Albert of Saxony (about 1350-60) and Marsilius of Inghen (about 1364-77, afterwards at Heidelberg), as well as by Johannes Buridanus, who was rector of the uni- versity as early as 1327. We find, however, as late as 1473 the attempt made to bind all teachers in the univer- sity of Paris by oath to teach the doctrines of Realism ; but this expiring effort was naturally ineffectual, and from 1481 onward even the show of obedience was no longer exacted. Pierre d'Ailly (1350-1425) and John Gerson (Jean Charlier de Gerson, 1363-1429), both chancellors of the university of Paris, and the former a cardinal of the church, are the chief figures among the later Nominalists. Both of them, however, besides their philosophical writings, are the authors of works of religious edification and mystical piety. They thus combine temporarily in their own persons what was no longer combined in the spirit of the time, or rather they satisfy by turns the claims of reason and faith. Both are agreed in placing repentance and faith far above philosophical knowledge. They belong indeed (Gerson in particular) to the history of mysticism rather than of Scholasticism, and the same may be said of another cardinal, Nicolaus of Cusa (1401-64), who is sometimes reckoned among the last of the Scholastics, but who has more affinity with Scotus Erigena than with any inter- vening teacher. The title "last of the Scholastics" is commonly given to Gabriel Biel, the summarizer of Occam's doctrine, who taught in Tiibingen, and died in the year 1495. The title is not actually correct, and might be more fitly borne by Francis Suarez, who died in 1617. But after the beginning of the 15th century Scholasticism was divorced from the spirit of the time, and it is useless to follow its history further. As has been indicated in the introductory remarks, the end came both from within and from without. The harmony of reason and faith had given place to the doctrine of the dual nature of truth. While this sceptical thesis was embraced by philosophers who had lost their interest in religion, the spiritually minded sought their satisfaction more and more in a mysticism which frequently cast stself loose from ecclesiastical trammels. The 14th and 15th centuries were the great age of German mysticism, and it was not only in Germany that the tide set this way.

Scholasticism had been the expression of a universal church and a common learned language. The university of Paris, with its scholars of all nations numbered by thousands, was a symbol of the intellectual unity of Christendom; and in the university of Paris, it may almost be said, Scholasticism was reared and flourished and died. But the different nations and tongues of modern Europe were now beginning to assert their individuality, and men's interests ceased to be predominatingly ecclesiastical. Scholasticism, therefore, which was in its essence ecclesiastical, had no longer a proper field for its activity. It was ina manner deprived of its accustomed subject-matter and died of inanition. Philosophy, as Hauréau finely says, was the passion of the 13th century ; but in the 15th humanism, art, and the beginnings of science and of practical discovery were busy creating a new world, which was destined in due time to give birth to a new philosophy.

Authorities. Besides the numerous works dealing with indi-

vidual philosophers, the chief histories of Scholasticism arc those of Hauréau (De la Philosophie Scolastique, 2 vols., 1850; revised

and expanded in 1870 as Histoire de la Phil. Scol.), Kaulich (Geschichte d. schol. Philosophie) and Stéckl (Gesch. der Phil. des Mittelaiters). Supplementary details are given in Hauréau's Singularités Historiques et Littératres, 1861, and in R. L. Poole's Lllustrations of the History of Mediwval Thought (1884). The accounts of medieval thought given by Ritter, Erdmann, and Ucherweg in their general histories of philosophy are exceedingly good. There are also notices of the leading systems in Milman's History of Latin Christianity; and the same writers are considered from the theological side in many works devoted to theology and the history of dogma. Jourdain's Recherches Critiques sur U Age et l Origine des Traductions Latines Aristote (Paris, 1819 ; 2d edition, 1843), Rousselot's Etudes sur la Philosophie dans le Moyen-Age (1840-42), Cousin's Introduction to his Owvrages imédits Abédlard (1836), and Prantl's Geschichte der Logik um Abendlande (4 vols., 1855-70) are invaluable aids in studying the history of medieval thought. (A. SE.)

SCHOMBERG, Frepertck ARMAND, DUKE oF (c. 1619-1690), marshal of France and English general, was descended from an old family of the Palatinate, and was born about 1619. He began his military career under Frederick Henry, prince of Orange, and after his death in 1659 entered the service of France, acquiring ultimately a reputation as a general second only to that of Turenne and the prince of Condé. In Paris he made the acquaint- ance of Charles II., who according to his own account “admitted him to great familiarities with him.” In 1660 he was sent to Portugal, and on his way thither passed through England to concert with Charles measures for supporting that country in the contest with Spain. For his services to Portugal he was in 1668 made a grandee, and received a pension of £5000 a year. In 1673 he was invited by Charles to England, with the view of taking command of the army, but so strong was the general sentiment against the appointment as savouring of French influence that it was not carried into effect. He therefore again entered the service of France, and after his capture of Bellegarde, 29th July 1675, received the rank of marshal. In subsequent campaigns he continued to add to his reputation until the revocation of the edict of Nantes (22d October 1685) compelled him as a Protestant to quit his adopted country. Ultimately he was chosen commander- in-chief of the forces of the elector of Brandenburg, and with the elector’s consent he joined the prince of Orange on his expedition to England in 1688, as second in com- mand to the prince. The following year he was made a knight of the Garter, created successively baron, marquis, and duke, and received from the House of Commons a vote of £100,000. In August he was appointed com- mander-in-chief of the expedition to Ireland against James II. After capturing Carrickfergus he marched unopposed through a country desolated before him to Dundalk, but, as the bulk of his forces were raw and undisciplined as well as inferior in numbers to the enemy, he deemed it imprudent to risk a battle, and entrenching himself at Dundalk declined to be drawn beyond the circle of his defences. Shortly afterwards pestilence broke out, and when he retired to winter quarters in Ulster his forces were in a more shattered condition than if they had sustained a severe defeat. At the same time competent authorities were agreed that the policy of masterly inactivity which he pursued was the only one open to him. In the spring he began the campaign with the capture of Charlemont, but no advance southward was made until the arrival of William. At the Boyne (July 1, 1690) Schomberg gave his opinion against

the determination of William to cross the river in face of the opposing army. In the battle he held command of the centre, and, while riding through the river without his cuirass to rally his men, was surrounded by a band of Irish horsemen and met instantaneous death. He was buried in St Patrick's cathedral, Dublin, where there is a monument to him, with a Latin inscription by Dean Swift. Schomberg was generally regarded in Eng-

land with great respect, and his manners and bearing rendered him universally popular.

SCHONBEIN, Curistian Friepricu (1799-1868), from 1828 professor of chemistry at Basel, is known as the discoverer of OZONE (@.2.).

SCHONEBECK, a town of Prussian Saxony, on the left bank of the Elbe, 9 miles above Magdeburg. It contains manufactories of chemicals, machinery, percussion caps, starch, white lead, and various other articles, but is chiefly noted for its extensive salt springs and works, which pro- duce about 70,000 tons of salt per annum. Large beds of rock-salt also occur in the neighbourhood, in which shafts have been sunk to a depth of more than 1200 feet. There is a harbour on the Elbe here, and a brisk trade is carried on in grain and timber. In 1885 Schénebeck con- tained 13,316 inhabitants (including the adjoining com- munities of Salze, Elmen, and Frohse, about 20,000).

SCHONEBERG, a so-called Prussian " village," in the province of Brandenburg, is now really a suburb of Berlin, which it adjoins on the south-west. It contains the royal botanic garden, a large maison de santé, and manufactories of paper collars, enamels, railway rolling-stock, and chem- icals. The population in 1880 was 11,180. The founda- tion of Alt-Schéneberg is ascribed to Albert the Bear (12th century), while Neu-Schéneberg was founded by Frederick the Great in 1750 to accommodate some Bohemian weavers, exiled for their religion (cf. Rrxporr).

SCHONGAUER, or SHozn, Martin (1450-c. 1488), the most able engraver and painter of the early German school. His father was a goldsmith named Casper, a native of Augsburg, who had settled at Colmar, where the chief

part of Martin’s life was spent.1 Schongauer estab- lished at Colmar a very important school of engraving, out of which grew the “little masters” of the succeeding gene- ration, and a large group of Nuremberg artists. As a painter, Schongauer was a pupil of the Flemish Roger Van der Weyden the Elder, and his rare existing pictures closely resemble, both in splendour of colour and exquisite minute- ness of execution, the best works of contemporary art in Flanders. Among the very few paintings which can with certainty be attributed to him, the chief is a magnificent altarpiece in the church of St Martin, at Colmar, repre- senting the Virgin and Child, crowned by Angels; with a background of roses—a work of the highest beauty, and large in scale, the figures being nearly life size. The Colmar Museum possesses eleven panels by his hand, and a small panel of David with Goliath’s Head in the Munich Gallery is attributed to him. The miniature painting of the Death of the Virgin in the English National Gallery is probably the work of some pupil.2 In 1488 Schongauer died at Colmar, according to the register of St Martin’s church.

The main work of Schongauer’s life was the production of a large number of most highly finished and beautiful engravings, which were largely sold, not only in Germany, but also in lTtaly and even in England. In this way his influence was very widely extended. Vasari speaks of him with much enthusiasm, and says that Michelangelo copied one of his cngravings—the Trial of St Anthony.? Schongauer was known in Italy by the names “Bel

1 The date of Schongauer’s birth is usually given wrongly as c. 1420; he was really born about thirty years later, and is mentioned by A. Diirer as being a young apprentice in 1470. His portrait in the Munich Pinakothek is now known to be a copy by Burgkmair, painted after 1510, from an original of 1483,—not 1453 as has been sup- posed. The date of Schongauer’s death, 1499, written on the back of the panel by Burgkmair is obviously a blunder; see Hensler in Naumann’s Archiv, 1867, p. 129, and Wurzbach, M. Schongauer, Vienna, 1880. These contradict the view of Goutzwiller, in his Martin Schongauer et son Ecole, Paris, 1875. Cf. Schnaase, “Gesch. M. Schongauers,” in the Mitthetl. der K. K. Commission, 1863, No. 7.

? Another painting of the same subject in the Doria Palace in Rome (usually attributed to Ditrer) is given to Schongauer by Crowe and Cavalcaselle,

Flemish Painters, London, 1872, p. 359; but the execution is not equal to Schongauer's wonderful touch.

3 An interesting example of Schongauer's popularity in Italy is

Martino" and "Martino d'Anversa." His subjects are always religious ; more than 130 prints from copper by his hand are still known, and about 100 more are the production of his bottega.4 Most of his pupils' plates as well as his own are signed M+S8. Among the most beautiful of Schongauer's engravings are the serics of the Passion and the Death and Coronation of the Virgin, and the series of the Wise and Foolish Virgins; as much as £420 has been given for a fine state of the Coronation plate. All are remarkable for their miniature-like treatment, their brilliant touch, and their chromatic force. Some, such as the Death of the Virgin and the Adoration of the Magi, are richly-filled compositions of many figures, treated with much largeness of style in spite of their minute scale. Though not free from the mannerism of his age and country, Schongauer possessed a rare feeling for beauty and for dignity of pose; and in technical power over his graver and copper plate he has never been surpassed.

The British Museum possesses a fine collection of Schongauer's prints. Fine facsimiles of his engravings have been produced by Amand-Durand with text by Duplessis, Paris, 1881.

SCHOOLCRAFT, Henry Rows (1793-1864), a North- American traveller, ethnologist, and author, was born 28th March 1793 at Watervliet (now called Guilderland), Albany county, New York, and died at Washington 10th December 1864. After studying chemistry and mineralogy at college he had several years' experience of their practical applica- tion, especially at a glass-factory of which his father was manager, and in 1817 published his Vitreology. In the following year he was appointed to the Geological Survey of Missouri and Arkansas, and in 1819 he published his View of the Lead Mines of Missouri. Soon after he accom- panied General Cass as geologist in his expedition to the Lake Superior copper region, and evinced such capacity for good exploring work on the frontier that in 1823 he was appointed "agent for Indian affairs." He then married the granddaughter of

an Indian chief; and during several years' official work near Lake Superior he acquired a vast fund of accurate information as to the physique, language, social habits, and tribal institutions of the American natives. From 1828 to 1832 Schoolcraft was an active member of the

Michigan legislature, during the same period delivering lec-

tures on the grammatical structure of the Indian language, which procured him the gold medal of the French Institute. In 1832 also, when on an embassy to some Indians, he ascer- tained the real source of the Mississippi to be Lake Itasca.

Previous to 1832 he had published Travels in the Central Por- tions of the Mississippi Valley, and in 1839 appeared his Algic Researches, containing "'Memoirs of a Residence of Thirty Years with the Indian Tribes," and also, notably, ''The Myth of Hia- watha and other Oral Legends,"—probably the first occurrence of the name immortalized (in 1855) in Longfellow's poem. School- craft's literary activity was indeed remarkable, since, besides his ethnological writings, he composed a considerable quantity of poetry and several minor prose works, especially Notes on the Lroquois (1848), Statistics of the Six Nations (1845), Scenes and Adventures in the Ozark Mountains (1853). His principal book, Historical and Statistical Information respecting the Indian Tribes of the United States, illustrated with 336 well-executed plates from original drawings, was issued under the patronage of Congress in six quarto volumes, from 1851 to 1857. It is a vast mine of ethnological researches as to the Red Men of America, systemati- cally arranged and fully, if not exhaustively, detailed, —describing not only their origin, history, and antiquities, but the physical and mental " type," the tribal characteristics, the vocabulary and grammar, the religion aud mythology. Schoolcraft's diplomatic work on the Indian frontier was important,—more than sixteen millions of acres being added to the States' territory by means of treaties which he negotiated.

SCHOOLS. See Epucation, Buinp, DEAF anp Dump, CoNSERVATORY, &c., and the relative sections of the articles on individual countries and states.

given by the lovely Faenza plate in the British Museum, on which is painted a copy of Martin's beautiful engraving of the Death of the Virgin ; see PoTTERY, vol. xix. p. 627.

4 See Bartsch, Peintre Graveur, and Willshire, Ancient Prints, best edition of 1877. According to a German tradition Schongauer was the inventor of printing from metal plates ; he certainly was one of the first who brought the art to perfection. See an intcresting article by Sidney Colvin in the Jahrbuch der k. preussischen Kunstsammlung, vi. p. 69, Berlin, 1885,

Meaning of "school."

method

_ of work- ing.

Byzan- tine in- fluence.

i ue word "school" as applied to painting! is used with various more or less comprehensive meanings. In its widest sense it includes all the painters of one country, of every date,—as, for example, 'the Italian school." In its narrowest sense it denotes a group of painters who all worked under the influence of one man,—as, for example, "the school of Raphael." In a third sense it is applied to the painters of one city or province who for successive generations worked under some common local influence, and with some general similarity in design, colour, or technique,—as, for example, " the Florentine school," ' the Umbrian school." For many reasons the existence of well-defined schools of painting is now almost wholly a thing of the past, and the conditions under which the modern artist gains his education, finds his patrons, and carries out his work have little in common with those

| Medieval which were prevalent throughout the Middle Ages. Painters

in the old times were closely bound together as fellow- members of a painters' guild, with its clearly defined set of rules and traditions; moreover, the universal system of apprenticeship, which compelled the young painter to work for a term of years in the bottega or studio of some estab- lished freedman of the guild, frequently caused the impress of the genius of one man to be very clearly stamped on a large number of pupils, who thus all picked up and fre- quently retained for life certain tricks of manner or peculi- arities of method which often make it difficult to distinguish the authorship of a special painting. The strong similar- ity which often runs through the productions of several artists who had been fellow-pupils under the same master was largely increased by the fact that most popular painters, such as Botticelli or Perugino, turned out from their botteghe many pictures to which the master himself

contributed little beyond the general design,—the actual _

execution being in part or even wholly the work of pupils or paid assistants. It was not beneath the dignity of a great painter to turn out works at different scales of prices to suit rich or poor, varying from the well-paid-for altar- piece given by some wealthy donor, which the master would paint wholly with his own hand, down to the humble bit of decorative work for the sides of a wedding cassone, which would be left entirely to the *prentice hand of a pupil. In other cases the heads only in a picture would be by the master himself or possibly the whole of the principal figures, the background and accessories being left to assistants. The buyer sometimes stipulated in a carefully drawn up contract that the cartoon or design should be wholly the work of the master, and that he should himself transfer it on to the wall or panel. It will thus be seen how impossible it is always to decide whether a picture should be classed as a piece of bottega work or as a genuine production of a noted master ; and this will explain the strange inequality of execution which is so striking in many of the works of the old masters, especially the Italians. Among the early Flemish and Dutch painters this method of painting does not appear to have been so largely practised, probably because they considered minute perfection of workmanship to be of paramount importance.

1. Jtalian.

In Italy, as in other parts of Europe, the Byzantine school of painting was for many centuries universally prevalent,? and it was not till quite the end of the 13th

1 For classical painting, see ARCHHOLOGY, vol. ii. p. 3438 sq. 5 see also Fresco, MuRaAL DxEcoRATION, TEMPERA, and the articles on separate painters.

2 This is especially the case with the numerous pupils of Perugino.

8 See MuRAL DecoratTION, vol. xvii. p. 43 sq.

‘Giunta Pisano, |||

century that one man of extraordinary talent—Giotto— broke through the long-established traditions and inaugu- rated the true Renaissance of this art. According to Vasari, it was Cimabue who first ceased to work in the Byzantine manner; but the truth is that his pictures, though certainly superior to those of his predecessors, are thoroughly charac- teristic specimens of the Byzantine style. Ghiberti, in his Commentary (a century earlier than Vasari’s work), with greater accuracy remarks that both Duccio of Siena and Cimabue worked in the Byzantine manner, and that Giotto was the first who learnt to paint with naturalistic truth.

In the 12th and the early part of the 13th century Pisa Lucca and Lucca were the chief seats of what rude painting then ex- and Pisa isted in Italy. A number of works of this date still exist, chiefly painted Cruci- fixions treated in the most con- ventional By- zantine manner.

who was paint- ing in the first half of the 13th century, was @& little superior to the otherwise dead level of hieratic conven- tionalism. He is said to have been Cimabue’s master. In the 14th century painting in Pisa was either Flor- entine or Sien-

LSS G

Tesusluyoleiel

F1q. 1.—Centre of a triptych, by Duccio di Buonin- ‘ segna,—the Madonna with Angels, and, above, ese in style. David and six Prophets, (National Gallery,

No city, not London.) ere even Florence, was so fertile as Siena in native painters during the 13th and 14th centuries. The earliest, work- ing before 1300, did not emanci- patethemselves from the old Byzantine man- nerism ; Guido da Siena, Duc- cio (see fig. P 1) and Segna | di Buoninsegna é possessed many of the peculi- | arities of the old school,—its rigid attitudes, |= its thin stiff | folds, and its greenish dows in flesh tints. the first half of — Madonna, by Cimabue. thel 4thcentury Gallery.)

a number of very able painters were carrying on at Siena a parallel development to that which Giotto had inaugurated XXII. — 55

.

Fig. 2.

434

at Florence ; chief among them were Simone di Martino, Lippo Memmi, and especially Ambrogio Lorenzetti, «a

dleareh of Sant

painter of both panels and large frescos, which show rich and noble imaginative power and much technical skill. It is important to note that Ambrogio and probably other painters of his time were, like the ear- lier Pisan Niccola, beginning to study the then rare ex- amples of classical ff sculpture. Ghiberti, in his Commentary, | speaks with enthu-

: f heb Fig. 4.—Fresco over a door siasm of the beauty the convent of 8. Marco at Florence, by Fra of an antique statue Angelico—Christ meeting St Domenic and

which he knew only St Francis. _ from a drawing by Ambrogio Lorenzetti. In the second half of the 14th century Siena produced a large

Ls iEPEIY,

Fic. 5.—Picture on canvas in the ‘Uffizi, Florence, Birth of Venus,

number of more mediocre painters; but these were suc- ceeded by an abler generation, among whom the chief were

aS

“by Botticelli—the

(National Gallery.)

perhaps Sano di Pietro and Matteo di Giovanni, whose grand altarpiece (No. 1155), recently acquired, is one of

SCHOOLS OF PATRTING

the glories of the English National Gallery. cellent masters were ,

working at Siena throughout the 15th century and even later; the last names of any real note are those of Peruzzi and Beccafumi. Sodo- ma, though he settled in Siena in 1501, does not belong to the school of Siena ; his early life was passed at Milan, chiefly under the influence of Da Vinci. His talent was developed at Rome among the fol- y lowers of Raphael.

On the whole the Fic. 7.—Portrait head, by Ghirlandaio, from Florence, Florentine school one of his frescos in the retro-choir of 8S, surpasses ons import- Maria Novella, at Florence.

ance all others throughout Italy.

Many ex-

LN

| {

Cimabue, though he

o-called School of Pan, by Signorelli, the of his easel pictures. (Berlin Gallery.) did not emancipate himself from the Byzantine manner, was a painter of real ==y”— = genius (see fig. 2). #7)

Giotto is perhaps = (| the most important _ 4}! painter in the his- tory of the develop- ment of art, for during the whole of the 14th century the painters of Flor- ence may be said to have been his pupils and imitators (see fig. 3). Orcag- na alone developed rather a different line, more richly de- ! corative in style and @ brighter in colour,— ‘ a link between the art of Giotto and

that of Siena. In the LS \ ; | 4

15th century Flor- Fic. 9.—Fresco of Isaiah, by Michelangelo, ence reached its pe- from the vault of the Sistine Chapel.

riod of highest artistic splendour and developed an almost

A cesar fist

7

Fia. 8.—The most beautiful

£

(

2 » | aos

Ce ke:

16th century the Umbrian school produced many painters of great importance <= grouped around a : nuniber of different centres, such as Gub- bio, where Ottaviano Nelli lived; San Se- verino, with its two Lorenzos; Fabriano, famed for its able masters Allegretto Nuzi and Gentile da Fabriano ;_ Foligno, whence Niccolo took his name; and above |, all Borgo San Sepol- 14 cro, where Piero della | Francesca was born. f Piero was one of the most charming of all painters for his deli- cate modelling, ten- der colour, and beauty } of expression (see fig. 10). His masterpiece, a large altar-painting of the Madonna en- throned, with stand- si ; y Y ing saints at the side

andin fronta kneeling ae a / yy Y} g portrait of Duke Fed- Fic. 12.—Centre of triptych, by Perugino erigo da Montefeltro, painted for the Certosa near Pavia, (Na. in the Brera gallery, tional Gallery.)

naturalistic school, which appears to have been inaugurated by Masolino and Masaccio. Some few painters, such as Fra "Angelico (see fig. 4) and his pupil Benozzo Gozzoli, produced more purely sacred and decorative work, follow- ing the lead of Orcagna. As Baron Rumohr has pointed out, the main bulk of the Florentine 15th-century painters may be divided into three groups with different character- 'stics. The first, including Masolino, Masaccio, Lippo Lippi, Botticelli, Filippino Lippi, and their pupils, aimed especially at strong action, dramatic force, and passionate expression (see figs. 5 and 6). The second, including Baldovinetti, Ros- :

selli, Ghirlandaio, and his pupils, are remarkable for real- istic truth and vigor- ous individuality (see fig. 7). To the third | belong Ghiberti, who & began lifeas apainter, § Pollaiuolo,! Verroc- chio, and his pupils Leonardo da Vinci and Lorenzo di Credi, —a group largely in- fluenced by the prac- tice of the arts of the goldsmith and the sculptor. Signorelli, whose chief works | are at Orvieto and = | Monte Oliveto near = i Siena, was remark- Fic. 10.—Baptism of Christ, by Piero della | able for his know- Francesca. (National Gallery.)

| ledge and masterly treatment of the nude (see fig. 8), and had much influence on the early development of | Michelangelo, whose gigantic

genius in later life produced i the most original and powerful works that the modern | world has seen (see fig. 9). Andrea del Sarto was one i of the last artists of the golden age of painting in I Florence; the soft beauty of his works is, however, often marred by a monotonous mannerism. To him are wrongly attributed many paintings by Puligo and other scholars,

SSS SS

Se

SSS SS

es

GD ILM Pr aE ON Le 5 Fic. 11.—The Adoration of the Shepherds, by Fiorenzo di | (Gallery at Perugia.) who imitated his style with various degrees of closeness. The 16th century in Florence was a period of the most rapid decline and was for long chiefly remarkable for 1ts feeble caricatures of Michelangelo's inimitable style. Umbria. Between the end of the 14th and the beginning of the 1 It is interesting to note how Ant. Pollaiuolo's fine figure of St Sebastian in the National Gallery (London) resembles the statue of the same saint in Lucca cathedral by Matteo Civitale.

~ oe ——— =<

Fic. 13._The Madonna between St John Baptist and St Mary Mag- dalene, by Andrea Mantegna, on canvas. (National Gallery.)

is, strange to say, attributed to his pupil Fra Carnovale." Ty OO

2 The attribution of this magnificent picture to Fra Carnovale rests wholly on a statement, evidently erroneous, of Pungileoni ; and hence many other works by Piero, such as the St Michael in the National Gallery, are wrongly given to Carnovale. Tt is doubtful whether any genuine picture by the latter is now known ; if the Brera picture were really by him he would not only be greater than his master Piero, but would be one of the chief painters of the 15th century.

Padua.

Arezzo,

Venice.

436

Gentile da Fabriano worked in the purely religious and richly decorative style that characterized Fra Angelico at Perugia. Fiorenzo di Lorenzo (see fig. 11) and Bonfigli prepared the way for Perugino (see fig. 12) and his pupils Pinturicchio, Raphael, Lo Spagna, and others. Timoteo Viti was another Umbrian painter of great ability, whose portrait by Raphael in black and red chalk is one of the most beautiful of the drawings in the Print Room of the British Museum.

The Paduan school is chiefly remarkable for the great name of Andrea Mantegna, the pupil of Squarcione ; his firm and sculpturesque draw- [% ¥ ing is combined with great beauty of colour and vigor- ous expression (see fig. 13). His pupil Montagna also studied under Gian. Bellini at Venice. Andrea Mantegna influenced and was influenced FF by the Venetian school; to him are attributed many of the early paintings of his brother-in-law Gian. Bellini, such as the Vatican Pieta, and other works more remarkable ff for vigour than for grace.

The school of Arezzo was B early in its development. Margaritone, who is absurdly overpraised by his fellow- | townsman Vasari, was an artist of the most feeble abilities. In the 14th cen- tury Arezzo produced such Crivelli, 1476. able painters as Spinello di lery.)

Luca, Niccolo di Gerini, and Lorenzo di Bicci. In the 15th century it possessed no native school worth re- cording.

Venice did not come into prominence till the 15th cen- tury; the Vivarini family of Murano were at work about the middle of it, and were perhaps influ- enced by the Ger- man style of a con- temporary painter from Cologne, known as Johannes Aleman- Bi nus, who had settled 4 in Venice.

Some years later the tech- nical methods of Flanders were intro- duced by Antonello of Messina, who is said to have learnt the secret of an oil

i = ZB Fic. 14.—Centre of retable,

by (National Gal-

Van Eycks.} velli, an able though mannered painter of SSS the second half of Fic.15.—Portrait of Doge Loredano, by Gian, the 15th century, Bellini. (National Gallery.)

adhered to an earlier type than his contemporaries (see fig. 14). Gian. Bellini is one of the chief glories of

2 Antonello certainly possessed technical knowledge beyond that of his contemporaries in Venice, namely, that of glazing in transparent oil colours over a tempera ground, and he must either in Italy or in Flanders have come in contact with some painter of the Flemish school ; many of the chief Flemish painters visited Italy in the 15th century.

SCH OQ LS OF "PATER Via

the Venetian school (see fig. 15); as are also in a second- brother Gentile and his pupil Vittore

ary degree his

fa. 16.—So-called Sacred and Profane Love, by Titian. (Borghese Gallery, Rome.)

Carpaccio.? In the following century Venice possessed a school which for glory of colour and technical power has never been rivalled, r= 5 though it soon lost the sweet religious sentiment of the ear- lier Venetians. The chief names of this epoch are Palma Vecchio, Giorgione, Titian (see fig. 16), and Lorenzo Lotto, }i/ —the last a magnifi- cent portrait painter, > a branch of art in which Venice occu- pied the highest rank. In the 16th century 'Tuintoretto and Paul Veronese were supreme (see [477 fig.17). Inthe 17th

and 18th centuries

i fy Hee TT =f

Venice — produced | – K\; SSS iis some fairly good Fria. 17.—Various saints, by Paul Veronese. work. (Brera Gallery, Milan.)

The Brescian school has bequeathed two very illustrious names,—Moretto and his pupil Moroni, both portrait painters of extraordinary power during the 16th century (see fig. 18). Mo- te retto also painted some fine large altar-pieces, remark- able for their deli- cate __ silver – grey tones and refined modelling. Ro- manino was an ex- tremely able painter § of frescos as well as § of easel pictures. §

The school of § Verona, which ex- isted from the 13th to the 17th century, contains few names of highest import- ance; except that of Pisanello, the chief (Wle_=_===— Z were painters of the Fic. 18,—Portrait of a Tailor, by Moroni. end of the 15th and (National Gallery.) the early part of the 16th century, as Domenico and Fran- cesco Morone, Bonsignori, Girolamo dai Libri, and Cavaz-

a ar ee

? It should be noted that there are a large number of forged signa- tures of Gian. Bellini, many of them attached to their own pictures by his pupils, such as Catena and Rondinelli.

ny

Brescia.

a Verona.

‘Bologna.

ScreoOoLSs OF PAINTENG

zola. Paul Veronese, though at first he painted in his native town, soon attached himself to the Venetian school.

Ferrara possessed a small native school in the 15th and 16th centuries, Cosimo Tura, Ercole Grandi, Dosso Dossi, and Garofalo being among the chief artists. The paintings of this school are often vigorous in drawing, but rather mannered, and usually somewhat hard in colour. After

G

SIN we

KN! . i i }

Sy a

Francia Gallery.)

1470 there was an intimate connexion between the schools of Ferrara and Bologna.

The Bologna school existed, though not in a very char- acteristic form, in the 14th century. : Francia and Lorenzo Costa of Fer- rara were its chief painters at the end of the 15th century (see fig. 19). It was, however, in the 16th and 17th centuries that Bologna took a leading place as a school of | Italian painting, the beginning of ‘ which dates from about 1480, when several able painters from Ferrara settled in Bologna. The three Car- acci, Guido (see fig. 20), Domeni- 2 chino, and Guercino were the most Fra. 20. —Eece Homo, by admired painters of their time, and ey (National Gal- continued to be esteemed far be- mi yond their real value till about the middle of the 19th century. Since then, however, the strong reaction in favour of earlier art has gone to the other extreme, and

the real merits of the Bolognese school, such as their

powerful drawing and skilful though visibly scholastic composition, are now usually overlooked. Both Modena and Parma possessed me- diocre painters in the § 14th and 15th cen- turies. In the 16th Correggio and his pupil Parmigiano attained to a very high degree of popu- larity. Correggio, who was largely in- fluenced by the Fer- rara-Bologna school, is sometimes weak in drawing and affected % in composition, but will always be es-}

teemed for the rich softness of his model- aa

Se

ling and the delicate Fic. 21.—The Education of Cupid, by Cor-

pearly tone of his flesh reggio. (National Gallery.)

tints. Fig. 21 is an excellent example of his style, though

much injured by repainting.

437

The small school of Cremona occupies only a subordi- Cremona. nate position. Boccaccino was its ablest painter ; his rare works are remarkable for conscientious finish, combined with some provincial mannerism.

In the 15th and early part of the 16th century Milan Milan. had one of the most im- portant schools inItaly. Its first member of any note was Vincenzo Fop- pa, who was painting in 1457 and was the founder of the early school. Ambrogio Bor- { gognone (born c. 1455) was an artist of great merit and strong reli- } gious sentiment. He followed in the foot- steps of Foppa, and his } pictures are remarkable for the calm beauty of the faces, and for their f delicate colour (see fig. 22), which recalls the} manner of Piero della Francesca. Leonardo da Vinci, thoughtrained yg, 22.—The Mystic Marriage of St in Florence, may be said Catherine of Alexandria and St Cather- to have created the ine of Siena to Christ, by Ambrogio

later Milanese school. Borgognone. (National Gallery.)

Fig. 23 shows one of the very few pictures by his hand which still exist. The marvellous and almost universal genius of Leo- nardo caused his influence to be powerfully — ex- tended, not only among his im- mediate pupils, but also among almost all the Lombard paint- ers of his own and the succeed- ing generation. His closest fol- lowers were Sa- laino, Luini, Ce- sare da Sesto, Beltraffio, and§ Marco d'Oggi-§ ono, and in a lesser degree An drea Solario Gaudenzio Fer rari, and So doma, who intro duced a newstylet of

painting into Siena. Solario also studied in Flanders, and in Venice under Gian. Bel- lini, so that a curiously composite style is visible in some of his magnificent portraits (see fig. 24). Most of the pictures and many drawings usually attributed to Da Vinci are really the work of his pupils and imitators. Luini, in his magnificent frescos, was one of the last painters who preserved the religious dignity and simplicity of the older medieval schools. Fresco painting was practised by the Milanese after it had been generally abandoned elsewhere.

‘

oe Se Fic. 23.—The Madonna with the Rocks, by Leo- nardo da Vinci. (National Gallery.)

Rome.

Naples,

German school,

438

Rome has always been remarkable for its absence of native talent in any of the oe res : fine arts, and nearly all the members of the so-called – Roman school came from = other cities. This school at . first consisted of the per- sonal pupils of Raphael,— Fran. Penni, Da Imola, Giv- : lio Romano, and Del Vaga. ; Sassoferrato and Carlo Ma- ratta were feeble but very popular painters in the 17th century. The early history of the @33 Re Neapolitan school is mostly “4—3).5Rm SASS mythical; it had no indi- FiG. 24.— Portrait of a Venetian vidual existence till the 16th aa by Andrea Solario. ; National Gallery) century, and then chiefly in the person of Caravaggio. During the 15th cen- tury many works of the Van Eycks and other Flemish painters were imported into Naples; some of these were afterwards claimed by the vanity of native writers as paintings by early Neapolitan artists, for whom ima- ginary names and his- Sy aoe tories were invented. The Spaniard Ribera, Salvator Rosa, and Giordano were its chief | members in the 17th century.

2. German.

It was especially at | Cologne in Westphalia }/ | and in the Rhine pro- vinces generally that German painting was developed at an early time. William of Col- ogne, who died about fy 1378, painted panels with much delicacy and richness of colour (see fig. 25). A number of large and highly finished Riis ee | altarpieces were painted Fig. 25.—St Veronica, by William of in this part of Germany Cologne. (National Gallery.) during the 15th century, but the names of very few of the painters of that time Tia ie are known. Artists such as Schongauer, Von Meckenen, Cra- f nach, and others were more at home in the engraving of copper and than in painting, and to some extent the same might be said of Albert Diirer, anf artist of the highest f and most varied ta- lents, who especially excelled as a portrait | painter (see fig. 26), The Hans Holbeins, father and son, es- pecially the latter, attained the highest rank as portrait painters ; nothing

a?

SCHOOLS OF PATTI se

can exceed the vivid truthfulness and exquisite work- manship of the por- traits by the younger Holbein (see fig. 27),

who also painted very

beautiful —_ religious pictures. Since his time Germany has

produced few note- = worthy painters, In the 19th century Overbeck was remark- able for an attempt to revive the long == dead religious spirit ° in painting, and he' attained much popu- larity, which, however, has nowalmost wholly died away.

3. Flemish.

Hubert and Jan The Van van Eyck, who were Fic. 27.—Portrait of an Unknown Lady, by Eycks Holbein. (The Hague Gallery.) me ein ginning of the 15th century, were artists of the very —a highest rank; with pepe a their

unrivalled tech-} nical skill, their ex quisite finish, and the} splendour of thei colour, they produced f works which in some respects even sur

other artists ever lavished time and patient labour quite

to which Jan van Eyck did upon some Yr

of his works, such LPL Ue jE Z, as the Arnolfini and Fic. 28.—Portrait, by Jan van Eyck ; 1433. other portraits in the (National Gallery.)

Fic. 29.—The Entombment of Christ, by Van der Weyden the elder, (National Gallery.)

kneeling Donor in the Louvre. This last is one of the

PC EHROOLS OF PATNTING

loveliest pictures in the world, both as a figure painting and from its exquisite miniature landscape and town in the distance, all glowing with the warm light of the setting sun. The elder Van der Weyden was a most able pupil of the Van Eycks; he occasionally practised a very different technical method from that usually employed in Flanders,— that is to say, he painted in pure tempera colours on un- primed linen, the flesh tints especially being laid on ex- tremely thin, so that the texture of the linen remains unhidden. Other colours, such as a smalto blue used for draperies, are applied in greater body, and the whole is left uncovered by any varnish. A very perfect example of this exists in the National Gallery (see fig. 29). The special method used a

with such success by Z Z the Van Eycks and their school was to paint the whole pic- EE ture carefully in tem- pera and then to glaze it over in trans- E& parent oil colours ; the use of oil! as ak

medium was com- mon in the 13th century and even

earlier (see Murau Decoration). To the school of the Van Eycks belong} a number of other SG LOE MB very talented paint- Fig 30.—St Mary Magdalene, attributed to ers, who inherited the younger Van der Weyden.

(National much of their mar- Gallery.) vellous delicacy of finish and richness of colour ; the chief of these were Memling, Van der Meire, and the younger Van der Weyden, to whom is attributed No. 654 in the National Gallery (see fig. 30). The colour of this lovely picture is magnificent beyond all description. Quintin Matsys (Massys) and Gheerardt David also produced works of great beauty and ex- traordinary finished execution." At the beginning © of the 16th century Flemish art ~~*began to, © lose rapidly in vigour, . a weaker style being © substituted under the influence of Italy. To this period belong Mabuse, Van Orley, and Patinir, who ap*~~ *pear to have been special admirers of Raphael's latest man- ner. In the latter half of the century Antonjj : Mor, usually known Fic. 31.—Portrait by Rubens, known as the as Antonio Moro, was "Chapeau de Poil." (National Gallery.)*

a portrait painter of the very highest rank. A por-

1 Blaborate directions for painting in oil are given by the German monk Theophilus (Sched. div. art., i. 37, 38), who wrote in the 12th century. ' ; ;

2 Though the elder Van der Weyden and other Flemish painters of his time visited Italy, the Italian style of painting appears to have had. very little influence on their vigorous works. The weaker Flemish painters of the 16th century, on the contrary, were close imitators of the Italians and produced pictures of a rather feebly pretty type.

trait of Queen Mary of England at Madrid, and one of a youth of the Farnese family at Parma, are real masterpieces of portraiture. Hep spent some time in | England. The Breu- {ij ghel family in the Hil] 16th and 17th cen- ji turies produced feeble Min} works finished with | microscopic _ detail. Rubens and his pupil Vandyck in the 17th century were among the greatest portrait painters the world has ever seen (see | figs. 31 and 32), and ¢ had many able fol- % lowers on the Con-§ WESAALLD:

tinent and in Eng- Fie.32.—Portrait of Cornelius Van der Geest, land. by Vandyck or Rubens. (National Gallery.)

4, Dutch.

This school was chiefly remarkable for its painters of Dutch genre subjects, often treated with a very ignoble realism, school. especially by the various members of the Teniers family. Rembrandt, the greatest painter of the school, developed a quite original style, remarkable for the force shown in his effective treatment of light and shade. The vigorous life and technical skill shown in some of his por- traits have never been – surpassed (see fig. & 33). Asa rule, how- ZY ever, he cared but | little for colour, and used the etching 7 needle with special | / enjoyment and dex- terity. Terburg, Ger- hard Dou(Douw), and Wouwerman had more sense of beauty, and worked with the most miniature-like deli- Fic. 33.—Portrait of an Old Woman, by cacy. Another school Rembrandt. (National Gallery.) excelled in landscape, especially Ruysdael and Hobbema (see figs. 34 and 35). Vandevelde was remarkable for

BS Ze Bt

Fia. 34.— Landscape, by Ruysdael.

(National Gallery.)

his sea-pieces, and Paul Potter for quiet pastoral scenes

with exquisitely painted cattle. Throughout the 17th

Spanish school.

440

century the painters of the Dutch school far outnumbered

ir

ih

Fic. 35.—View of Middelharnis in Holland, by Hobbema. (National Gallery.)

those of any other, and many of them reached a very fair average of skill.

5. Spanish. The early Spanish painters of the 15th and 16th centuries were merely feeble imitators of Italian art. Many of them, such as Juan de Juanes, studied in Italy. Ribalta and Zurbaran were per- haps the first able

artists who deve- loped a _ national style. The latter is

remarkable for his paintings of monks ; fig. 36 shows one of the best examples. His large altarpieces are less successful. Velazquez, one of the greatest masters of skilful execution the world has seen, was alike great in portraiture (see fig. 37) and in large figure . subjects. His early religious paintings, executed under the influence of Ribalta, are far inferior to his later works, the best of which are at Madrid. Murillo is usually rather un- dervalued; he was very unequal in his work, and is well represented nowhere 4 except at Seville. No words can de- scribe the exquisite religious beauty and

*pathos of his great * picture of Christ on Fig. 37.—Portrait of Philip IV. of Spain, by*

this Cries "ben: ding Velazquez. (National Gallery.) down to embrace St Francis.

Fig. 36.—Franeiscan Friar, by Zurbaran. (National Gallery.)

Goya, who lived into the

19th century, was an artist of great power, haunted by a hideous imagination. Fortuny, a very clever young painter, who died in Rome in 1874, was remarkable for his daring use of the most brilliant colour, with which his pictures are studded like a mosaic. His success has caused him to have countless imitators, most of whom reproduce the faults rather than the merits of his work. His influence on modern Continental art has been very great.

6. French.

French art, like that of Spain, was almost wholly under French Italian influence during the 15th and 16th centuries, school, Nicolas Poussin, in the 17th century, was the first to develop a native style, though he was much influenced by Titian. His best works are bacchanalian scenes, of which

one of the finest is in the National Gallery (sce fig. 38).

9E| Ba m2

od

Fiq@. 38.—Bacchanalian Scene, by Nicolas Poussin, (National Gallery.)

When at his best his flesh painting resembles that of Titian, but it is frequently marred by unpleasant hot colouring. Claude Lorrain is remarkable for his beauti- ful and imaginative landscapes,—often wanting in a real study of nature (see fig. 39). His finest works are in

Fic. 30.— Landscape, by Claude Lorrain. (National Gallery.)

England (see p. 445). Throughout the 18th century the French school was very prolific, but shared the mediocrity of the age, the corruption and artificiality of which im- pressed themselves strongly on the painting of the time. The most popular artists of that century were Watteau, Boucher, Greuze, Claude Vernet, Fragonard, and David, the reviver of the pseudo-classic style. In the first half of the 19th century Prud'hon, Ingres, Horace Vernet, and Delaroche—artists of only moderate merit—were in great repute, and more deservedly the very brilliant landscape painter Rousseau, Millet, though little valued during his lifetime, is now highly appreciated. Regnault, a very able

sero OLS -OFr, Pa TNTING

painter, who while yet young was killed at the siege of Paris in 1871, belongs to the latest development of French art. At present (1886) Paris possesses by far the most im- portant school of art existing, and French painters on the whole are supreme in power of drawing and in technical skill. Unhappily these great merits are often counter- balanced by false

sentimentalism or excessive realism, and especially by gross sensuality. Art in France—that is, in Paris—is now in a state of the most prolific activity, and is branching out into new and startling phases, such as the impressionist style, in which form is suppressed for the sake of colour, and the naturalist school, which leans rather to what is ugly or even loathsome; to the latter belong some of the technically ablest painters alive.! As in Spain and Italy, the influence of Fortuny is strong in Paris, and Parisian influence now extends very widely, as the Ecole des Beaux-Arts is resorted to by art students from all countries except Germany.

7. British.

The modern Bri- tish? school begins with the painters of miniature portraits in the 16th and 17th # centuries, among whom the earliest 3 were Nicholas Hil- liard and Isaac Oli- ver, artists of some | note in the reign of Elizabeth. Many } very beautiful minia- tures were produced by them and by the younger Peter Oli- ver, who rose into celebrity under '\ oats | the Commonwealth. Fic. "40.—Portrait of Dr Johuson, by Rey- Other able portrait olds. (National Gallery. A replica of painters of the 17th _ this exists in Pembroke College, Oxford.) century were the Scotch Jamesone, a pupil of Rubens, Wiliam Dobson, a SRR ANS pupil of Vandyck,? § AE and Samuel Cooper ; but the chief court painters after the Restoration were the Flemish Sir Peter Lely and Sir God- frey Kneller, whose influence on art in England was disas- trous. The 18th fe century produced | many painters of the | highest merit, as Hogarth, who stands unrivalled as a cari- caturist and moral- ist, Reynolds and his i rival Gainsborough, Fie. 41.—Portrait of Mrs Siddons, by Gains- notable among the borough. (National Gallery.) chief portrait painters of the world (see figs. 40 and

1A few years ago a gold medal was won at the Salon by a picture of this class,—a real masterpiece of technical skill. It represented Job as an emaciated old man covered with ulcers, carefully studied in the Paris hospitals for skin diseases.

2 For medieval painting in England, see MuRAL DECORATION, vol.

xvii. p. 45. 8 Vandyck lived and worked in England from 1632 to 1641.

41), and Richard Wilson, the founder of the English school of landscape, the chief artistic speciality of the country. The three brothers Smith of Chichester, Gainsborough, and later in the a

century John (Old) Crome of Norwich and James Ward, were all landscape _, painters of great (YZ ability. England has since the 18th cen- tury been specially _ famed for its school – of water-colour paint- ers, of which Paul Sandby was one of the founders; he was A followed by Wheat-' ae ley, Webber, Girtin, /\\ and Prout. Sir Henry

yy Raeburn was a Scot-— r ' tish portrait painter \

of the highest rank (see fig. 42), but Fre. 42.—Portrait of Rev. Arch. Alison, by Sir was far less ad- H. Raeburn. (National Portrait Gallery.) mired in England than the very feeble Lawrence. Little favour of many of the most popular

nS Fe bay

Fig. 43.—The Temeraire towed to her last Moorings, by Turner. (National Gallery.)

painters of that time, as West, Barry, Fuseli, North- cote, and Shee, who practised what was considered the highest branches of art, such as _ histori- cal painting. William Blake, in spite of his wonderful poet- = ical and ima- ginative power, |: lived and died with very inade- quate recogni- tion. To the first & half of the 19th

Turner, ' greatest of all NYS

landscape paint- \ ers (see fig. 43), \ \

and his very Fic. 44.—Portrait, by Danie Gabriel Rossetti.

able contempo-

raries Constable, J. J. Chalon, Copley Fielding, and Stan- XXI. — 56

field. Scotland produced two of the chief painters of this time—Sir William Allan and Sir David Wilkie. Mulready was a fine draughtsman, skilful in composition, but weak in colour. Etty's scholastic drawing recalls the merits and faults of the Bolognese school, and he is frequently very fine in colour. Eastlake was weak in drawing and feeble in composition. Sir Edwin Landseer excelled in animal painting, especially in his rendering of the texture of hair and fur, but was frequently rather harsh in colour and commonplace in motive. David Roberts is worthy of note for his very clever water- colours of architectural scenes, J. F. Lewis for his ex-

quisitely finished Oriental subjects, and J. 8. Raven for his grand and imaginative landscapes, which, however, are very little known. Dante Gabriel Rossetti (see fig. 44), who died in 1882, was one of the chief painters of the century, both for the richness of his colouring and for his strong poetical imagination ; he was one of the founders of the Pre-Raphaelite "brotherhood " (see Rossertr), whose rise, development, and widespread influence on painting in Britain have been the chief artistic events in this century, and have produced a few painters whose earnestness of purpose and originality of power give them a foremost and absolutely unique position in modern Europe.

List or PAInrers.

The following lists give the chief painters classified according to their schools in

chronological order.1

1. Ltalian Schools. ?

(i.) Lucca and Pisa.

Lotharius and Ranuecius of Lucca, known only from a document, a treaty with Pisa, signed by them in

1228,

Bonaventura Berlinghieri,3 f1.1235-44.

Enrico of Pisa, miniatures, f1.1238.

Marco Berlinghieri, miniatures ina MS. Bible, 1.1250.

Barone Berlinghieri, several crucifixes, f1.1240-84.

Deodati Orlandi of Lucca, f1.12S8-1301.

Giunta Pisano, first half of 13th cen- tury.

Talo Vanni, second half of 14th cen- tury.

The names of many other Pisan painters of the later part of the 13th century are recorded in documents, but no paintings by them are known to exist.

(ii.) Siena.4

Guido da Siena, f1.1220.

Diotisalvi, f1.1270.

Duccio di Buoninsegna, 1.1300.

Segna di Buoninsegna, 1.1305.

Simone di Martino, ¢.12S5-¢.1344.

Lippo Memmi, d.c.1357.

Berna, fl.early 14th century.

Pietro Lorenzetti, f1.1320-c.1348.

Ambrogio Lorenzetti, Pietro's brother, f1.1330, d.c.1348.

Niccolo di Segna, 1.1342.

Jacopo di Mino, f1.1342.

Lippo Vanni, f1.1350-¢.1376.

Niccolo di Buonaccorso, £1.1350-88.

Bartolo di Fredi, f1.1353-1410.

Luca di Tommé, £1.1367.

Paolo di Giovanni, f1.13S0.

Meo da Siena, 1.1380.

Taddeo di Bartolo, 1363-1422,

Andrea di Bartolo, f1.1380, 4.1428,

Gregorio Cecchi, f1.1400.

Martino di Bartolomeo, f1.1403, d.1433.

Domenico di Bartolo, d.1449,

Stefano di Giovanni, f1.142S, 4.1450.

Giovanni di Paolo, ¢.1403-1482.

Sano di Pietro, 1406-81.

Lorenzo di Pietro (Vecchietta), 1410- 80, better known as a sculptor.

Matteo di Giovanni, 1420-95,

Benvenuto di Giovanni, 1436-1518.

Francesco di Giorgio, b.1439.

Neroccio di Landi, 1447-1500.

Pietro di Domenico, 1457-1501.

Bernardino Fungai, 1460-1516,

Andrea di Niccolo, 1460-1529,

Girolamo di Benvenuto, 1470-1524.

Giacomo Pacchiarotto,5 b.1474,

Girolamo del Pacchia,5 1477 to after

1521. 3

eee

1 When the years ofa painter's birth and death are unknown, fl. for "flourished" is put before the date, which is taken either from existing dated pictures or from documentary records.

2 Of recent years a more careful search for documents relating to Italian art has done much to correct the dates of many painters' lives ; hence in niany cases the years of a painter's birth and death given in the following list differ from those in most previous works on the subject.

3 The three Berlinghieri were of a Milanese family, but worked mostly at Lucea.

4 Most valuable assistance in the preparation of this list of Sienese painters was given by Mr C. Fairfax Murray.

5 The works of these two painters are frequently confounded ; a chromolitho-

Giov. Ant. Bazzi (Sodoma), 1477-1549 ; though not of the Sienese school, he had much influence on the Sienese painters in the early part of the 16th century.

Baldassare Peruzzi, 1481-1537.

Domenico Micharino (Beccafumi),

1486-1550.

The most important Sienese painters during the second half of the 16th and the 17th centuries were Arcangiolo Salimbeni, Alessandro Casolani, Pietro Savi, Ventura Salimbeni, Francesco Vanni, Francesco Rustici, Rutilio Manetti, Astolfo Petrazzi, and Raf- faello Vanni.6

(iii.) Florence.

Andrea Tafi, 1213-21294 (Vasari).

Coppo di Marcovaldo, f1.1261-75.

Gaddo Gaddi, 1239-1312 (according to Vasari).

Giovanni Gualtieri (Cimabue), 1240- ? 1302.

Giotto di Bondone, 1276-1337.

Taddeo Gaddi, ?1300 to after 1366.

Puccio Capanna, first half of 14th century.

Buonamico Christofani (Buffalmacco), first half of 14th century.

Giovanni Jacobi da Milano, 1.1365.

Giottino (real name doubtful), first half of 14th century.

Jacopo Landini, ¢.1310-c.1390,

Agnolo Gaddi (son of Taddeo Gaddi), 14th century.

Andrea Oreagna, ¢.1316-¢.1376, and his brothers Lionardo? (f1.1332-47) and Jacopo.

Francesco Traini, chief of Oreagna's pupils, f1.1341-45.

Antonio Longhi(Veneziano), f1.1370-87.

Gherardo Starnina, 1354, d. after 1406.

Giuliano d'Arrigo (Pesello), 1367 to after 1427,

Tommaso di Fini (Masolino), b.1383.

Lorenzo Monaco, f1.1404-13.

Fra Angelico (Guido di Vicchio), 1387-

1455,

Andrea del Castagno, 1390-1457.

Paolo Uccello, ¢.1396-1475.

Tommaso di 8. Giovanni (Masaccio),

1402-29,

Fra Lippo Lippi, ¢.1412-69.

Francesco di Pesello(Pesellino), 1422-57.

Alesso Baldovinetti, 1422-99.

Domenico Veneziano, f1.1438, 4.1461.

Benozzo Gozzoli, 1424, d. after 1485.

Andrea Verrocchio, 1482-¢.1488.

Antonio Pollaiuolo, 1433-98.

Cosimo Rosselli, 1439-1507.

Luca Signorelli (Da Cortona), 1441- 1523 ; his principal pupil was Girolamo Genga, 1476-1551.

Pietro Pollaiuolo, 1443, d. before 1496.

Sandro Botticelli, 1447-1515.

Domenico Bigordi (Ghirlandaio), 1449- 94. His works were closely imitated by his pupil and brother-in-law Bastiano Mainardi.

Lorenzo di Credi, 1459-1537. His chief scholar was Sogliani, 1492-1544,

Filippino Lippi, 1460-1504.

Piero di Cosimo, 1462-1521.

Raffaellino del Garbo, 1466-1524.

Francesco Granacci, 1469-1543.

Giuliano Bugiardini, 1471-1554.

Mariotto Albertinelli, 1474-1515.

Fra Bartolomeo della Porta, 1475-1517.

graph of a fresco by Pacchia—a scene

froin the life of St Catherine—has been published by the Arundel Society as being from a work of Pacchiarotto,

§ See Lanzi, Painting in Italy, Bohn's

ed., vol. i. p. 290.

7 Wrongly called Bernardo by Vasari.

Michelangelo Buonarroti, 1475-1564.

Francesco di Cristofano (Francia Bigio), 1482-1525,

Nidolfo Ghirlandaio, 1483-1560.

Andrea del Sarto, 1487-1531. His scholar Puligo closely imitated his style.

J mene Carucci da Pontormo, 1494-

1557.

Giulio Clovio of Dalmatia, miniaturist,

1498-1578,

Angelo Bronzino, 1502-72.

Marcello Venusti, d.c.1580.

Daniele da Volterra, 1509-66.

Francesco de' Rossi (called Del Salvi- ati), 1510-63.

Giorgio Vasari, art historian, 1512-74,

Alessandro Allori, 1535-1607.

Orazio Lomi de' Gentileschi, 1562-1646.

Cristoforo Allori, 1577-1621,

Carlo Dolci, 1616-86. The other Florentine painters of the

later part of the 16th and 17th centuries

are of little importance.

(iv.) Umbria.

Oderisio of Gubbio, miniaturist (Dante, Pur., xi. 79), f1.1264-¢.1299.

Guido Palmerucci (Gubbio), 1280-c.

1345,

Allegretto Nuzi, f1.1346-85.

Gentile da Fabriano, b. between 1360 and 1370, d.1450.

Ottaviano Nelli, f1.1410-34.

Lorenzo da San Severino, b.1374, fi.

1400.

Piero Borghese (Della Francesea), c. 1415 to after 1494.

Fra Carnovale, pupil of P. Borghese, second half of 15th century.

Benedetto Bonfigli, £1.1450-96.

Niccolo of Foligno,8 f1.1458-99.

Lorenzo da San Severino the younger, f1.1480-96,

Melozzo da Forli, 1488-94.

Fiorenzo di Lorenzo, f1.1470-99. Giovanni Santi (father of Raphael), pupil of Melozzo da Forli, 4.1494. Pietro Vannucci (Perugino), 1446-1524. Bernardino di Betto (Pinturicchio),

1454-1513.

Marco Palmezzano of Forli, 0.1456, d. after 1537.

Andrea Alovigi (L'Ingegno), f1.1484.

Lodovico Angeli, fl.14S1-1506.

Giovanni di Pietro (Lo Spagna), 1.1503, d. in or before 1530.

Giannicola Manni, f1.1498, d.1544.

Timoteo Viti, 1469-1523.

Raphael Sanzio, 1483-1520 ; belonged to the Perugian school only during the first few years of his career.

Less important Umbrian painters of the 15th century were Giov. Boccati, Girolamo di Giovanni, Matteo da Gualdo, Bartolomeo di Tommaso, and Pietro Antonio, also a number of third- rate painters who belonged to the school of Perugino.

(v.) Padua.

Guariento, f1.1316-65.

Justus of Padua (Giusto Giovanni), c. 1330-1400, apparently a follower of Giotto.

Francesco Squarcione, 1394-1474.

Gregorio Schiavone, second half of 15th century.

Andrea Mantegna, 1431-1506. His chief pupils were his son Francesco (b. c. 1470, died after 1517), Carlo (called) del Mantegna, Gioy. Fran. Carotto, and Francesco Bonsignori of Verona

(1455-1519).

8 Wrongly called Alunno by Vasari.

Bartolomeo Montagna (f1.1487, d.1523), a pupil of Mantegna and Gian. Bel- lini, founded a school at Vicenza, to which belonged Giovanni Speranza and Benedetto Montagna, the latter an able engraver.

(vi.) Arezzo.

Margaritone di Magnano9 (according to Vasari), 1216-93.

Mantano di Arezzo, £1.1305-10.

Jacopo di Casentino, ¢.1310-¢.1390.

Spinello di Luca (Aretino), chief pupil of Casentino,10 ¢.1330-1410,

Niccolo di Pietro Gerini, d. before 1389. His son Lorenzo was also a painter.

Lorenzo di Bicci, f1.1370-1409.

Parri Spinelli, early 15th century.

Bicci di Lorenzo, 1.1420, 4.1459.

Bartolomeo della Gatta, c.1410-91. His pupils Domenico Pecori and Niccolo Soggi were men of but little talent.

(vii.) Venice.

Niccolo Semitecolo, f1.1351-1400.

Lorenzo Veneziano, £1.1357-79.

Stefano Veneziano, f1.1369-81.

Jacobello del Fiore, £1.1400-39.

Johannes Alemannus, probably of Cologne, f1.1440 sq.

Jacopo Bellini, 1395-1470; and his two sons—

Gentile Bellini (1421-1507) and

Giovanni Bellini (1426-1516). Gio- vanni's closest imitator was Niccolo Rondinelli.

Giovanni Vivarini of Murano, f1.1440-47,

Antonio Vivarini, f1.1440-70.

Bartolomeo Vivarini, 1.1459-98,

Alvise Vivarini, f1.1464-1503.

Antonello da Messina, ¢.1444-¢.1493.

Carlo Crivelli, f1.1468 to after 1500.

Mansueti, f1.1494-1500.

Vittore Carpaccio, ¢.1450 to after 1522. His chief pupil was Lazzaro Sebastiani.

Marco Marziale, f1.1492-1507,

Marco Basaiti, f1.1470-1520.

Francesco Torbido (Moro), 1486-1546.

Vicenzo Catena, 1.1495, d. after 1531.

Cima da Conegliano, f1.1489-1517.

Macrino d'Alba, £1.1496-1508.

Bartolomeo Veneziano, fl.¢.1505-30.

Marco Belli, f1.1511.

Francesco Bissolo, f1.1500-28.

Pellegrino da San Daniele, ¢.1465-1547.

Andrea Previtali, f1.1506, d.1528,

Lorenzo Lotto, ¢.1476-1555.

Giorgio Barbarelli (Giorgione), 1477-

1511.

Tiziano Vecellio, 1477-1576.

Jacopo Palma (Vecchio), 1480-1528.

Giov. Ant. Licinio (Pordenone), 1483-

1539.

Sebastiano Luciani (Del Piombo), 1485-

1547.

Girolamo da Treviso, 1497-1544.

Bonifacio. There were three painters of this name,—Bonifacio of Verona, d.1540 ; another Veronese Bonifacio,

9 Margaritone, a very bad painter, much overpraised by Vasari, belongs really to no special school; his works are inferior to contemporary and earlier paintings of the Byzantine school. The National Gallery possesses an ugly but interesting example of his work, signed 'Margarit' de Aritio." Some other painters born at Arezzo belong to the Florentine school, among them Giorgia Vasari, a very feeble imitator of Michel- angelo.

10 These two painters belong rather to the Florentine school.

4.1553, both pupils of Palma Vecchio, and a Venetian, who was painting after 1579, probably a son of one of the elder Bonifacios.

Girolamo da Santacroce, f1.1520-48.

Paris Bordone, 1500-71.

Jacopo da Ponte (Bassano), 1510-92. Four of his sons were painters.

Jacopo Robusti (Tintoretto), 1512-94.

Bernardino da Pordenone, 1520-70.

Andrea Schiavone, 1522-82.

Paolo Cagliari (Veronese), 1528-88.

Battista Zelotti, ¢.1532-92.

Jacopo Pahna (Giovane), 1544-1628.

Alessandro Varotari(Padovanino),1590-

1650.

Sebastiano Ricci, 1660-1734.

Giov. Batt. Tiepolo, 1696-1770.

Antonio Canale (Canaletto), 1697-1768.

Francesco Zuccherelli, 1702-93.

Francesco Guardi, 1712-93.

Bernardo Bellotto, 1720-80, nephew of Canaletto and a close imitator of his style.

(viii.) Brescia.

Vincenzo Foppa, 1.1450-66 (see also Milan).

Vincenzo Civerchio of Crema, f1.1495-

1540.

Fioravante Ferramola, end of 15th cent.

Girolamo Romani (11 Romanino), c¢. 1486 -¢,1566.

Girolamo Savoldo, ¢.1487 to after 1540.

Alessandro Buonvicino (Moretto), 1498-

1555.

a Batt. Moroni of Bergamo, ¢.1525-

8.

(ix.) Verona.

Turone da Verona, fi.1360.

Altichiero da Zevio and Giacomo degli Avanzi, 14th century. The other Veronese painters of the 14th cen- tury were of little artistic power.

Vittore Pisano (Pisanello), 1380 – c.1455. His chief pupils were Stefano da Zevio, Giovanni Oriolo, and Bono of Ferrara (see Ferrara).

Domenico Morone, d. after 1503.

Liberale da Verona, 1451-1536.

Francesco Bonsignori, 1455-1519.

Niccolo Giolfino, ¢.1465 to after 1518.

Francesco Morone, 1473-1529.

Girolamo dai Libri, 1474-1556.

Paolo Morando (Cavazzola), 1486-1522. Paolo Veronese and his imitator

Battista Zelotti, a native of Verona,

pelong rather to the Venetian school.

(x.) Ferrara.

Cosimo Tura, 1430-71496.

Francesco Cossa, latter part of 15th century.

Bono da Ferrara, f1.1461, pupil of Pis- anello.

Francesco Bianchi, ¢.1445-1510.

Ercole Grandi! (or Roberti), ¢.1445, d. before 1513.

Giovanni Oriolo, f1.1449 to after 1461, pupil of Pisanello.

Lorenzo Costa, 1460-1535, belongs rather to the Bolognese school.

Gian. Battista Bartucci, fl.c.1506.

Dosso Dossi, 1480-1560. His brother Gianbattista was also a painter.

Lodovico Mazzolino da Ferrara, 1478- ? 1530.

Francesco Zaganelli da Cotignola, fl. 1505-18, and his brother Bernardino.

Benvenuto Tisio (Garofalo), 1481-1559.

Giovanni Battista Benvenuti (LiOrto- lano), early part of 16th century.

Girolamo Carpi, 1501-56.

(xi.) Bologna.

Guido da Bologna, f1.1177.

Ventura, f1.1197-1217.

Ursone, fi.1226-48.2

Vitale da Bologna, f1.1320-50.

Lippo Dalmasii, f1.1376 to after 1410.

Simone (called) de' Crocifissi, f1.1370.

Giacomo degli Avanzi, fl. later part of 14th century, also classed with Veronese school.

Jacopo di Paolo, early 15th century.

Marco Zoppo, fi.1471-98.

Francesco Raibolini (called Francia after his master), ¢.1450-1517.

Lorenzo Costa of Ferrara, 1460-1535.

Francesco Primaticcio, 1504-70.

Ludovico Caracci, 1555-1619.

Agostino Caracci, 1558-1601.

Annibale Caracci, 1560-1609.

1 As Comm. Morelli has pointed out, Grandi's signature and the date 1531 on a picture of the Entombment, formerly in the Borghese cea in Rome, are a forgery,— Grandi really having died long before; it may, however, "be by the younger painter of the same name.

2See Malvasia, Felsina Pittrice, Bologna, 1678.

Guido Reni, 1575-1642.

Francesco Albani, 1578-1660.

Domenico Zampieri (Domenichino),

1581-1641.

Francesco Barbieri (Guercino), 1591-

1666.

Guido Cagnaccio, 1601-81.

Pier Fran. Mola, 1612-68.

Elisabetta Sirani, 1638-65.

(xii.) Modena and Parma.

Tommaso da Modena, f1.1350-60. Barnabo da Modena, f1.1360-80. Bartolomeo Grossi, 1.1462.

Jacopo Loschi, fl.c.1460.

Cristoforo Caselli, 1.1499.

Lodovico da Parma, pupil of Francia of Bologna, early 16th century.

Mazzuola, thrce brothers, Michele, Pierilario, and Filippo, early 16th century.

Antonio Allegri (Correggio), 1493-1534, closely connected with the Ferrara school.

Francesco Mazzuola (Parmigiano), 1504-40. His pupil Girolamo Mazzuola closely imitated his works.

(xiii.) Cremona.

Francesco Tacconi, f1.1464-90.

Altobello Melone, f1.1515-20.

Boccaccio Boccaccino, f1.1496, d.1525.

Giulio Campi, 1500-72.

(xiv.) Milan.

Vincenzo Foppa, f1.1450-66 (see also Brescia).

Ambrogio Bevilacqua, fl.1486.

Vincenzo Civerchio (see Brescia), closely connected with early Milanese school.

Francesco Bianchi (Il Frare), 1447-1510.

Bernardo Zenale da Treviglio, d. after

1521.

Leonardo da Vinci, 1452-1519. To his school belong Bernardino Luini (. 1470 to after 1530), Sodoma (1477- 1549), Andrea da Solario (¢. 1458 to after 1515), and more directly Gian. Pietrino, Ambrogio Preda, Cesare da Sesto (1480-1521), Marco d'Oggiono (c. 1470-1549), Andrea Salaino, and Giov. Ant. Beltraffio (1467-1516).

Ambrogio da Fossano (Borgognone), ¢. 1455-1528 ; his two brothers were his pupils and assistants.

Bartolomeo Suardi. (Bramantino) (fl. 1495-1529) and

Gaudenzio Ferrari (1485-1549) were also influenced by Leonardo. Ferrari's chief pupils were :-—

Bernardino Lanini (¢.1508-¢.1578) and Giov. Paolo Lomazzo, the Milanese art historian, whose Trattato della Pintura was published in 1584. Ambrogio Figino was an able scholar of Lomazzo, together with Cristoforo Ciocca.

Ercole Procaccini, 1520-90.

Bernardino Campi, 1522-90.

Camillo Procaccini, 1546-1626.

Giov. Batt. Crespi, 1557-1683.

A number of inferior Milanese painters lived in the 16th century.3

(xv.) Rome.

Raphael Sangio, 1483-1520, who in his early youth belonged first to the Perugian and then to the Florentine school, was the founder of the so-called Roman school, which at first consisted almost wholly of his pupils.

Giov. Fran. Penni (il Fattore), 1468-

1528.

Innocenzo da Imola, 1490-1549.

Polidoro da Caravaggio, 1495-1543.

Giulio Pippi de' Giannuzzi (Romano),

1498-1546.

Perino del Vaga, 1500-47.

Federigo Barocci, 1528-1612.

Cesare d'Arpino, 1567-1640.

Bartolomeo Schedone, 1580-1615.

Giov. Lanfranco, 1581-1647.

Bart. Manfredi, 1581-1617.

Pietro da Cortona, 1596-1669.

Andrea Sacchi, 1598-1661.

Gianbattista Salvi (Sassoferrato), 1605-

85.

Carlo Maratta, 1625-1713.

Paolo Pannini, 1691-1764.

(xvi.) Naples.

The names of Simone Napoletano, Colantonio, and other native painters who were supposed to have worked in the 14th and 15th centuries appear to be those of wholly mythical personages. Michelangelo da Caravaggio, 1569-1609. Ghee Ribera (Lo Spagnaletto), 1588-

1656.

Aniello Falcone, 1594-1665.

3 See Lanzi, Hist. of Painting, Bohn's ed., ii, p. 499 sq.

Salvator Rosa, 1615-73. Luca Giordano, 1632-1705.

2. German School.

Wilhehm of Herle or William of Cologne, f1.1358, d.c.1378.

Stephen Lochner, fl.1442, d.1451.

Master of Liesborn, f1.1465.

Michael Wohlgemuth, 1434-1519.

Master of the Lyversberg Passion, fl.

1463-80.

Israel von Meckenen, ¢.1440-1503.

Martin Schongauer, 1450 4-88.

Matthias Grtinewald, ¢.1460 to after

1529.

Master Christophorus, f1.1500-10.

Master of the Death of the Virgin, fl. 1515, d.1556.

Hans Holbein the elder, ¢.1460-1523, and his brother Sigmund Holbein, c. 1465 to after 1540.

Albrecht Diirer, 1471-1528.

Lucas Cranach, 1472-1553.

Hans Burekmair, 1478-1531.

Hans Fuss (Von Kulmbach), pupil of A. Diirer, d.c.1522.

Albrecht Altdorfer, b. before 1480-1538.

Hang Leonhard Schaufelin, 1490-1540.

Hans Holbein the younger, 1497-1548.

Hans Sebald Beham, 1500-50, and his brother Barthel Beham, 1502-¢.1540.

Heinrich Aldegrever, 1502-58.

Virgil Solis, 1514-62.

Lucas Cranach the younger, 1515-86."

Jost. Amman, 1531-91.

Heinrich Golzius, 1558-1617.

Johann Rottenhammer, 1564-1623.

Adam Elshaimer, 1574-1620.

Joachim von Sandrart, 1606-88.

Balthasar Denner, 1685-1747.

Christ. Will. Ernst Dietrich, 1712-74.

Anton Raphael Mengs, 1728-78.

Peter von Cornelius, 1783-1867.

Johann Fried. Overbeck, 1789-1869.

Fried. Wil. von Schadow, 1789-1862.

Julius Schnorr, 1794-1872.

Wilhelm von Kaulbach, 1805-74.

Karl Fried. Lessing, 1808-80.

3. Flemish School.

Melchior Broederlam, f1.1382-¢.1400.

Tiubert van Eyck, b.c.1366, d-after 1426.

Jan van Byck, younger brother of Hubert, d. after 1440.

Margaret van Eyck, a younger sister of the above, died soon after Hubert.

Petrus Christus, a pupil of the Van Eycks, f1.1447-71.

Dierick Bouts, ¢.1391-1475.

Roger van der Weyden the elder, ¢.

1400-64.

Gerard van der Meire, ¢.1410 to after

1474.

Hans Memling, ¢.1430, d. before 1495.

Roger van der Weyden the younger, ¢.

1450-1529.

Hugo van der Goes, fl.1467, d.1482.

Justus of Ghent, f1.1451-70.

Gheerardt David, c.1455-1523.

Quintin Matsys, 1466-1531.

Jan Gossart de Mabuse, 1470-1582.

Bernard van Orley, 1470-1541.

Jan Mostert, 1474-1556.

Henri de Bles, 1480- ¢.1550.

Joachim da Patinir, b. between 1485 and 1490, d. 1524.

Jan van Schoreel, 1495-1562.

Michiel Coxcie, 1499-1592.

Lambert Lombard (Sustermann), 1506 to after 1566.

Marinus van Romerswale, 1.1535 to after 1567.

Pieter Pourbus, 1510-83.

Antonij Mor (Antonio Moro), 1512-77.

Pieter Breughel, c.1520-69.

Paul Bril, 1556-1626.

Pieter Breughel, 1564-1637.

Peter Paul Rubens, 1577-1640.

Frans Snyders, 1579-1657.

Kasper de Crayer, 1582-1669.

David Teniers,5 1582-1649.

Jan (called ‘ Velvet”) Breughel, c.

1589 -¢.1642.

Jacob Jordaens, 1593-1678.

Lucas van Uden, 1595-1672.

Anton Vandyck, 1599-1641.

Adriaan van Utrecht, 1599-1652.

Philippe de Champaigne, 1602-74.

Jan van Essen, 1606-65.

Jan Fyt, 1609-61.

David Teniers the younger, 1610-94.

Jacobus van Artois, 1618 to after 1684.

Gonzales Coques, 1614-84.

Pieter van der Faes (Sir Peter Lely),

1618-80.

aie 4 Not 1420, as is usually supposed. Schongauer is mentioned by A. Durer as being a young apprentice in 1470. 5 The Teniers, though Flemish by birth and education, belong more closely to the Dutch school.

443

Abraham Teniers, 1629-71. Gerard de Lairesse, 1641-1711. Jean Francois Millet, 1642-80. Cornelis Huysmans, 1648-1727. Jan van Bloemen, 1662-1740.

A large number of Flemish painters, many of them pupils of Rubens, lived in the 17th century, but they are of little importance.

4, Duteh School.

Albert van Ouwater, early part of 15th century.

Gerard of Haarlem, end of 15th century.

Hieronymus van Aeken, ¢.1460-1518.

Lucas (Jacobsz) van Leyden, 1494-1533.

Jan van Schoreel, 1495-1562.

Marten van Heemskerck (1498-1574), Cornelis van Haarlem (1562-1688), Cor- nelis van Poelenburg (1586-1667) and Gerard van Honthorst (1592-? 1666), though Dutch by birth, were feeble imitators of Italian schools.

Frans Hals, 1584-1666.

Thomas de Keyser, ¢.1595-¢.1660.

Cornelis Janssen, ¢.1596-1665.

Jan van Goyen, 1596-1656.

Jan de Heem, 1603-50.

Albert Cuyp, 1605-91.

Rembrandt van Rijn or Ryn, 1606-69.

Emanuel de Witte, 1607-92.

Jan Wynants, d. after 1674.

Gerhard Terburg, 1608-81.

Salomon Koning, 1609-68.

Jan Both ¢.1610-56, and his younger brother Andries Both.

Adrian van Ostade, 1610-85.

Ferdinand Bol, 1611-81.

Bart. van der Helst, 1613-70.

Gerhard Dou, 1618-75.

Aart van der Neer, c.1619 to after 1691.

Philip de Koninck, 1619-89.

Philip Wouwerman, 1619-68.

Jan Battista Weenix, 1621-60.

Isaac van Ostade, 1621-49.

Gerbrandt van der Eckhout, 1621-74.

Nicholas Berchem, 1624-83.

Paul Potter, 1625-54.

Jacob Ruysdael, 1625-81.

Jan Steen, 1626-79.

Karel Dujardin, 1630-78.

Gabriel Metsu, 1630 to after 1667.

Ludolf Backhuizen, 1631-1709.

Nicholas Maes, 1632-93.

Pieter de Hooch, 1632-81.

Jan van der Meer, 1632-95.

Me Vandevelde the younger, 1633-

fe

J = ae, Capelle, ¢.1635 to after

680.

Frans van Mieris the elder, 1635-81. His sons Jan and Willem were both painters.

Melchior de Hondecoeter, 1636-95.

Jan Hackaert, c.1636-1708.

Jan van der Heyden, 1637-1712.

Meindert Hobbema, 1638-1709.

Adrian Vandevelde, 1639-72.

Gaspard Netscher, 1639-84.

Daniel Mytens the younger, c.1644- c.1688.

Jan Weenix, 1644-1719.

Jan van Huchtenburg, 1646-1733.

Van der Plaas, 1647-1704.

Wil. van Mieris, 1662-1744.

Jan van Huysum, 1682-1749.

a van Mieris the younger, 1689-

1763.

Jan van Os, 1744-1808.

A large number of mostly third-rate painters existed in the 16th and 17th centuries.

5. Spanish School.

Antonio del Rincon, 1446-1500.

Alonso Beruguete, 1480-1561.

Luis de Vargas, 1502-68.

Juau de Juanes (Vicente Joanes), 1506- 79, His chief pupil was Borras.

Luis de Morales, ¢.1510-86.

Alonso Sanchez Coello, ¢.1512-90.

Gasper Becerra, 1520-70.

Francisco de Ribalta, ¢.1550-1628.

Juan de las Roelas, 1558-1625.

Francisco Pacheco, 1571-1654.

Francisco de Herrera the elder, b. 1576, and his son known as Fran- cisco 'El Mozo."

Eugenio Caxes, 1577-1642.

Juan de Ribalta, 1597-1628.

Francisco Zurbaran, 1598-1662.

Diego Velazquez de Silva, 1599-1660.

Francisco Collantes, 1599-1656.

Espinosa, 1600-80.

Alonso Cano, 1601-67.

Juan Carrefio de Miranda, 1614-85.

Bartolome Esteban Murillo, 1618-82.

Juan de Valdes, 1630-91.

Claudio Coello, 1635-93.

Francisco Goya, 1746-1828.

Mariano Fortuny, 1838-74.

444

6. French School.

René, king of Anjou, 1408-80, learned painting in Italy, and is said to have practised the art in France.

Jean Fouquet, b. between 1415 and 1420, belongs also to the Italian school. Jean Clouet of Tours, fl.1480; his son

Jean Clouet the younger, ¢.1485-1545,

and grandson Francois Clouet (Janet),

Jean de Gourmont, f1.1557.

Jean Cousin, c.1500-c.1589.

Ambroise Dubois, 1543-1615.

Antoine le Nain, and his brother Louis, f1.1629-77.

Simon Vouet, 1590-1649.

Francois Perrier, 1590-1656.

Nicolas Poussin, 1594-1665.

Jacques Stella, 1596-1657.

Jacques Blanchard, 1600-38.

Valentin de Boullongne, 1600-34.

Claude Gelée (Lorrain), 1600-82.

Charles Antoine Dufresnoy, 1611-65.

Pierre Mignard (Le Romain), 1612-95.

Gaspar Dughet (called Poussin after his brother-in-law Nicolas), 1618-75.

Eustache le Sueur, 1616-55.

Sébastien Bourdon, 1616-71.

Charles le Brun, 1619-90.

Jacques Courtois (Le Bourguignon),

1621-76.

Jean Jouvenet, 1644-1717.

Jean Baptiste Santerre, 1651-1717. Inferior French painters who worked

in the 17th and 18th centuries were the

Boullongne (father and two sons),

Nicolas de Largilliére, Hyacinthe

Rigaud, Nicolas Lancret, Pierre Sub-

leyras, Carl van Loo, Claude Vernet,

ald Madame le Brun.

Antoine Watteau, 1684-1721.

Jean Baptiste Pater, 1699-1736.

Francois Boucher, 1704-70.

Jean Baptiste Greuze, 1725-1805.

Jean Honoré Fragonard, 1732-1806.

Jacques Louis David, 1748-1825. He carried to its highest point the dull pseudo-classic style inaugurated by Joseph-Marie Vien, 1716-1809.

Many other painters of fourth-rate talent worked and obtained much pupularity throughout the 18th century. Pierre Paul Prud'hon, 1758-1823, Francois Marius Granet, 1775-1849. Jean Augustin Ingres, 1780-1867. Horace Vernet, 1789-1863.

Théodore Géricault, 1791-1824,

Léopold Robert, 1794-1835.

Ary Scheffer, 1795-1858.

Paul Delaroche, 1797-1856.

Eugéne Delacroix, 1799-1863.

Alexandre Gabriel Decamps, 1803-60.

Théodore Rousseau, 1812-67,

Jean Francois Millet, 1814-75.

Henri Regnault, 1843-71.

7. British School.

Nicholas Hilliard, 1547-1619 (minia- turist).

Isaac Oliver, 1555-1617 (miniaturist).

George Jamesone, 1586-1644, pupil of Rubens (portraits).

Peter Oliver, 1601-60 (niniaturist).

Robert Walker, d.c.1660 (portraits),

Samuel Cooper, 1609-72 (portraits),

John Hoskins, d.1664 (portraits).

William Dobson, 1610-46, follower of Vandyck.

Isaac Fuller, 4.1672 (portraits).

Henry Stone, 1616-53 (portraits).

Robert Streater, 1624-80 (portraits).

Henry Anderton, 1630 to after 1665 (portraits).

John Riley, 1646-91 (portraits).

Sir Peter Lely, came to England in 1641.

Sir Godfrey Kneller, 1646-1728 (por- traits),

John Greenhill, 1649-76 (portraits).

John Michael Wright, c.1655-1700.

Jonathan Richardson, 1665-1745 (por- traits).

Charles Jervas, 1675-1739 (portraits).

Sir James Thornhill, 1676-1734 (wall decoration).

William Aikman, 1682-1731.

William Hogarth, 1697-1764 (satirist).

8. Scott, d.1772.

Francesco Zuccarelli, 1701-88 (land- scape),

Thomas Hudson, 1701-79, Reynolds's Inaster.

James Wootton, 4.1765 (animals).

Three brothers Smith of Chichester, 1707-66 (landscape),

Francis Hayman, 1708-66.

Allan Ramsay, 1709-84.

Richard Wilson, 1713-82, founder of the English school of landscape.

Sir Joshua Reynolds, 1723-99 (por- traits).

George Stubbs, 1724-1806 (animals).

Francesco Bartolozzi, 1725-1815 (en- graver),

Francis Cotes, 1725-70.

Paul Sandby, 1725-1809 (water-colour).

Thomas Gainsborough, 1727-88 (por- traits and landscape).

Nathaniel Hone, 1730-84 (niniatures).

Nathaniel Dance, second half of 18th century.

Joseph Wright of Derby, 1734-97 (night scenes),

Gcorge Romney, 1734-1802 (portraits).

Johann Zoffany, 1735-1810.

John Singleton Copley, 1737-1815.

Benjamin West, 1738-1820.

Richard Cosway,1740-1821 Gniniatures).

Angelica Kaufmann, 1741-1807 (por- traits).

Hackert, 1741-1800 (water-colour).

James Barry, 1741-1806.

Henry Fuseli, 1741-1825.

Mary Moser, 1744-1819 (flower painter).

David Allan 1744-96.

James Northcote, 1746-1831.

F. Wheatley, 1747-1801 (water-colour).

John Smith, 1750-1812 (water-colour).

Robert Smirke, 1752-1845,

John Webber, 1752-93 (water-colour).

John Cozens, 1752-99 (water-colour).

Thomas Bewick, 1753-1828 (wood-en- graver),

Sir George Beaumont, 1753-1827 (por- traits).

Sir William Beechey, 1753-1839.

Henry Bone, 1755-1834 (miniatures on enamel).

Gilbert Stuart, 1755-1828.

Thomas Stothard, 1755-1834.

Sir Henry Raeburn, 1756-1828 (por- traits).

James Gillray, 1757-1815 (caricaturist).

William Blake, 1757-1828 (poetry).

T. Rowlandson, 1757-1827 (caricaturist).

John Hoppner, 1759-1810.

John Opie, 1761-1807.

Edward Bird, 1762-1819.

Samuel Woodforde, 1763-1817.

George Morland, 1764-1804 (animals),

N. Pococke, 1765-1821. John (Old) Crome, 1769-1821, founder of the Norwich school of landscape Sir Thomas Lawrence, 1769-1830 (portraits). :

H. Howard, 1769-1847.

James Ward, 1769-1859 (landscape).

Thomas Phillips, 1770-1845.

Sir Martin Shee, 1770-1850.

George Clint, 1770-1854.

H. W. Williams, 1773-1829 (classical buildings).

Henry Thomson, 1773-1843.

Thomas Girtin, 1773-1802 (landscape).

Thomas Hargreaves, 1775-1846 (minia- tures).

Joseph Mallord William Turner, 1775-

1851.

John Constable, 1776-1887 (landscape).

John Varley, 1777-1842 (water-colour).

John James Chalon, 1777-1854 (land- scape).

John Christian Schetky, (marine).

John Jackson, 1778-1831 (landscape).

William Payne, f1.1786-90 (water- colour).

John Thomson, 1778-1840.

James Laurent Agasse of Geneva, c.

1779-1846,

Sir Augustus Callcott, 1779-1844.

Andrew Wilson, 1780-1848.

Alfred Chalon, 1780-1860(water-colour).

J. 8. Cotman, 1780-1843 (water-colour),

John Simpson, 1782-1847.

Sir Willian Allan, 1782-1850 (portraits).

1778-1874

PicTURE GALLERIES OF EUROPE. The following list gives some indication of the manner

cover nearly the whole of his short working life.

SCHOOLS Of PRBiravae

C. Wild, 1782-1835 (water-colour).

Thomas Uwins, 1782-1857,

De Wint, 1783-1849 (water-colour).

Samuel Prout, 1783-1825 (water-colour),

Sir David Wilkie, 1785-1841.

W. Milton, 1786-1839.

B. R. Haydon, 1786-1846.

Will. Mulready, 1786-1863.

A. Fraser, 1786-1865.

George Jones, 1786-1869.

William Etty, 1787-1849.

Copley Fielding, 1787-1855 (landscape).

Sir J. Watson Gordon, 1788-1864.

W. Collins, 1788-1847.

John Martin, 1789-1854 (imaginative landscape).

Sir John Gordon, 1790-1865.

H. P. Briggs, 1792-1844.

John Linnel, b.1792.

Francis Danby, 1793-1861.

David Cox (senior), 1793-1858 (water- colour).

Sir Charles Eastlake, 1793-1865.

G. 8. Newton, 1794-1835.

C. R. Leslie, 1794-1859.

J. F. Herring, 1795-1865.

David Roberts, 1796-1864 (architecture and landscape).

Clarkson Stanfield, 1798-1867 (land- scape).

James Holland, 1800-70.

George Cattermole, 1800-68 (water- colour).

William Simson, 1800-47 (water-colour).

R. P. Bonington, 1801-28.

Sir Edwin Landseer, 1802-73 (animals).

George Lance, 1802-64 (still life).

Sir Francis Grant, 1803-78,

Horatio Macculloch, 1805-67 scape).

Sir Daniel Macnee, 1806-82.

William Dyce, 1806-64.

Sir George Harvey, 1866-76.

John Fred. Lewis, 1806-76 (Oriental scenes).

Thomas Dunean, 1807-45.

Joseph Nash, 1807-78 (architecture).

Aaron Penley, 1807-70 (water-colour).

Thomas Creswick, 1811-69 (landscape).

Edw. Will. Cooke, 1811-80 (marine).

Daniel Maclise, 1811-70.

Will. James Muller, 1812-45 (water- colour).

Willian Brodie, 1815-81.

James Drummond, 1816-77.

A. L. Ege, 1816-63.

John Phillip, 1817-67.

Thos. Seddon, 1821-56 (Pre-Raphaelite),

Samuel Bough, 1822-78 (landscape).

Thos. Leeson Rowbothain, 1823-75 (water-colour).

Dante Gabriel Rossetti, 1828-82 (Pre- Raphaelite),

John Samuel Raven, 1829-77 (land- scape).

(and-

In the Venetian

Gallery, number of highly important London, of them signed and dated ;

in which the existing pictures of various schools are distri- buted among the chief galleries of Europe.

The National Gallery, London, contains for its size a very large pictures of the Italian schools, many in fact, as a representative collection, embracing

as it does well-chosen specimens of every school and in- cluding many paintings of very rare masters, it is hardly surpassed by any gallery in the world. Though weak in paintings of Giotto and his school, it possesses many early Sienese pictures of great interest and exceptional importance (see fig. 1), and a collection unrivalled out of Italy of the works of the best Florentine painters of the 15th century, as Paolo Uccello, Lippo Lippi, Pollaiuolo, Signorelli, Botticelli, Lorenzo di Credi, and others (see fig. 6). Of the very few existing easel pictures by Pisanello! the National Gallery contains one (signed), St George and St Anthony. The portrait by Andrea del Sarto is one of his finest works, —full of life and expression and rich in tone. In addition to a large painting on canvas of the school of Michelangelo—Leda and the Swan 2—the National Gallery possesses two unfinished pictures, a Madonna and Angels and an Entombment of Christ, both of which, in spite of many adverse criticisms, appear to be genuine works of Michel- angelo, the former in his early, the latter in his later manner—a very remarkable possession for one gallery, seeing that the only other genuine easel painting by him is the circular panel of the Madonna in the tribune of the Uffizi (Florence). No four pictures could better represent Raphael's highly varied manners than the miniature Knight's Dream, the Ansidei Madonna, the St Catherine, and the Garvagh Madonna, which in the dates of their execution

1 Some small panels attributed to Pisanello in Rome and clsewhere are of very doubtful genuineness,

2 Not exhibited ; it is probably a pupil's copy of the marble group of the same subject designed by Michelangelo. e a nay

school the National Gallery is almost unrivalled: it contains ~~*a large number of fine examples of Crivelli (see fig. 14),—Venice not possessing one ; two rare panels by Marziale, both signed and dated (1500 and 1507); the finest specimens of Giovanni Bellini (see fig. 15) and his school which exist out of Venice ; one of Titian's noblest works,—the Ariadne and Bacchus, finished in 1523 for the duke of Ferrara, together with two other fine pictures of earlier date ; and the masterpiece of Sebastiano del Piombo, his Raising of Lazarus, partly designed by Michelangelo. The smaller schools of Ferrara and Cremona are well represented by examples of nearly all their chief*~~

~~painters. Of the Umbrian school the gallery pos~~ sesses two or rather three important, though much injured, panels by Picro della Francesca (see fig. 10), a fine picture by Fiorenzo di Lorenzo, as well as one of Perugino's best works, the triptych from the Certosa near Pavia (see fig. 12), and other paintings by him. Correggio is represented by three fine pictures, classical and re- ligious, specimens of unusual excellence (sce fig. 21). Of the Bolognese school there are three works by Francia, one signed (see fig. 19), and specimens of the painters of the later school, — Annibale Caracci, Guido (see fig. 20), and others. Paul Veronese's Dream of St Helena and the group of portraits of the Pisani family, arranged as the scene of the family of Darius before Alex- ander, are among his finest works. The three pictures by Lotto are excellent examples of his supreme talents in portraiture ; and no collection outside Brescia and Bergamo is so rich in the noble portrait pictures of Moretto'and his pupil Moroni. Leonardo da Vinci (the rarest of the great masters) is represented by a very beautiful picture® which appears to have been partly finished by

3 In addition to the strong internal evidence in favour of this picture being at least in part a genuine work of Da Vinci, it is expressly mentioned as being by him in the Trattato della Pittura (ii. 17 and iv. 1), written by the Milanese

Lomazzo before 1584. The painting was then in the church of S. Francesco at Milan, where it remained till 1796.

'dampton iPourt.

cen oLS OF PATNTING

a pupil; with slight alterations it is the same in design as the Vierge aux Rochers in the Louvre (see fig. 28). Leonardo's use of almost monochromatic colouring differs strongly from the style of his pupils and imitators Luini, Andrea da Solario (see fig. 24), and Beltraffio, all of whom are represented by excellent and characteristic examples. Of the earlier Milanese school the gal- lery contains two magnificent examples by Ambrogio Borgognone, —the Marriage of St Catherine especially being a work of the highest importance and beauty (see fig. 22). The gallery possesses yare examples of the early German masters (see fig. 25, by

William of Cologne), though it is weak in the works of the later Germans, as Albert Diirer, who is represented only by one portrait, which is signed (see fig. 26), and Hans Holbein the younger, who is totally absent except for the noble portrait lent by the duke of Norfolk.? The collection is, however, unusually rich in fine examples of early Flemish art,—of the Van Eycks and their school (see fig. 28). The portrait of Jean Arnolfini and his wife (signed and dated) is one of Jan van Eyck's noblest works on a small scale,—only surpassed, perhaps, by the Madonna and Worshipper in the Louvre. The En- tombment of Christ by Van der Weyden the elder (see fig. 29), the three or more examples of Memling, the Exhumation of St Hubert by Dicrick Bouts, the Reading Magdalene by Van der Weyden the younger (see fig. 30), and the Saints and Donor by Gheerardt David are all unrivalled examples of these great painters. The delicate

little panel of the Madonna by Margaret van Eyck is a work of

much interest. The later Flemish and Dutch schools are equally well represented, especially by a number of noble portraits by Rem- brandt (see fig. 38), Rubens, and Vandyck ; a portrait of an old woman, the "' Chapeau de Poil," and the portrait of Van der Geest (wrongly called Gevartius) are among the finest works of these three masters (see figs. 31 and 32). Hobbema, Ruysdael, De Hooge, Wouwerman, and others of their school are very richly represented (see figs. 84 and 35). Of the Spanish school the National Gallery contains an excellent portrait head of Philip IV. (sce fig. 87) by Velazquez, a full-length of the same king, not wholly by his hand, and also two pictures of sacred subjects and a curious boar-hunting scene of much interest, but of inferior beauty. The examples of Murillo, like most out of Seville, are but third-rate specimens of his power. The Kneeling Friar as an example of Zurbaran's work is unrivalled either in Spain or out of it (see fig. 36). Among the pictures of the French school a number of fine landscapes by Claude Lorrain and a very masterly Bacchanalian Scene by Nicolas Poussin are the most notable (see figs. 38 and 39). The English school is hardly represented in a manner worthy of the chief national collec- tion, but it is supplemented by a large number of fine paintings in the South Kensington Museum. The chief treasures in this branch

*ossessed by the National Gallery are Hogarth's series of ** Marriage & la Mode," some noble portraits by Reynolds and Gainsborough, and an unrivalled collection of Turner's works of all periods (see figs. 40, 41, and 48).*

The royal gallery at Hampton Court (London), among a large number of inferior paintings, contains some of great value, especially the Baptism of Christ, an early work of Francia, a most magnificent portrait of Andrea Odoni by Lor. Lotto, both signed, and a portrait of a youth attributed to Raphael. The chief treasure of the palace is the grand series of decorative paintings (nine in number) executed in tempera on canvas by Andrea Mantegna in 1485-92 for the duke of Mantua, but much injured by repainting. The equally celebrated cartoons designed by Raphael for tapestry to decorate the Sistine Chapel are now moved to the South Kensington Museum. The gallery also possesses several fine examples of Tintoretto, many good Flemish and Dutch pictures, some small but fine examples of Holbein and his school, and a number of historically interesting works by English painters of the 17th century. The portrait of a Jewish Rabbi by Rembrandt is one of his finest works,—a perfect masterpiece of portraiture.

The Dulwich gallery is especially rich in works of the Dutch school, and contains some noble portraits by Gainsborough and Reynolds, as well as an interesting early work by Raphael, —the predella with seven small subjects painted in 1504 as part of the large altarpiece for the monastery of St Anthony in Perngia ; the main part of this large retable, which is the property of the heirs of the duke of Ripalda, has been for many years deposited but not exhibited in the National Gallery. The National Portrait Gallery? at Kensington contains many paintings of different schools which are valuable both as works of art and from their interest as portraits. The Royal Academy has placed in the attics of Burlington House its valuable collection of diploma pictures, and in an adjoining room a few treasures of earlier art, among them a large cartoon of the Madonna and St Anne by Leonardo da Vinci,—similar in subject to, but different in design from, an unfinished picture by him in the Louvre, and a copy of his Cenacolo at Milan by his pupil Marco d'Oggiono, of priceless value now that the original is an utter wreck. In the same room isa very beautiful but un-

1 etn Sal ee ee 1 England generally is, however, very rich in the works of Holbein, —chiefly portraits. 2 Now temporarily moved to Bethnal! Green.

finished piece of sculpture by Michelangelo, a circular relief of the Madonna.

England is especially rich in collections of drawings by the old Other masters. The chief are those in the British Museum, in the Taylor British Buildings at Oxford, and in the possession of the Queen and of Mr collec- Malcolm of Poltalloch. Among the collection in Windsor Castle tions. are eighty-seven portraits in red chalk by Holbein, all of wonderful beauty. The celebrated " Liber Veritatis," a collection of original drawings by Claude Lorrain, is in the possession of the duke of Devonshire at Chatsworth. In Buckingham Palace is a fine collec- tion of paintings of the Flemish and Dutch schools. An almost incredibly large number of fine paintings of all schools are scattered throughout the private galleries of Britain ; an account of the chief of these is given by Dr Waagen, Treasures of Art in Britain, London, 1854. But many of the collections described by Dr Waagen have since been moved or dispersed; the Peel and Wynn Ellis pictures have been purchased by the National Gallery, which has also acquired important pictures from the sales of the Eastlake, Barker, Novar, Hamilton, and Blenheim collections. The largest private galleries which still exist in England are those of the duke of Westminster (Grosvenor House), the duke of Sutherland (Stafford House), the earl of Ellesmere (Bridgewater House), and the marquis of Exeter (Burghley House). The public gallery at Liverpool contains some very important Italian pictures, as does also the growing collection in Dublin. The Edinburgh National Gallery possesses a few speci- mens of early masters, among them part of the great altarpiece by the unknown 'Master of Liesborn," a picture of St Hubert by the 'Master of Lyversberg," some fine Dutch pictures, and Gains- borough's masterpiece, the portrait of the Hon. Mrs Graham, to- gether with many examples of the excellent portraits by David Allan and Sir Henry Raeburn. In the palace of Holyrood is pre- served a very beautiful altarpiece, with portraits of James III. and his queen and other figures. It is supposed to have been painted about 1480 by Van der Goes of the school of the Van

Eycks. Eng- land is especially rich in the finest examples of Nicolas Poussin and Claude Lorrain; the paintings by the latter in Grosvenor House, the National Gallery, and elsewhere in the country are unrivalled by those of any foreign gallery.

The Louvre is rich in works of nearly all schools, and especially Louvre, in fine examples of Signorelli, Mantegna, Raphael, Titian, Paul Veronese, Correggio, and the later Bolognese painters. Its chief glory is the possession of some of the very rare works of Da Vinci,— La Vierge aux Rochers, the Virgin and St Anne, and the wonder- ful portraits of Mona Lisa and La belle Ferronniére. It is chiefly weak in cxamples of the earlier Venetian painters, not possessing a single genuine work by Giovanni Bellini. It contains some very beautiful frescos by Botticelli and by Luini, and the finest work of Murillo which exists out of Seville,—the Virgin in Glory. The later Flemish and Dutch schools are well represented: the small painting of the Virgin with a kneeling Worshipper by Jan van Eyck is one of the loveliest pictures in the world ; but the Louvre is otherwise deficient in paintings of his school. The portraits by Holbein, Rubens, and Vandyck are of great importance. In the French school the Louvre is of course unrivalled: the paintings of Nicolas Poussin and Claude Lorrain are the best among them; but the general average of merit is very low. The Louvre also possesses a magnificent collection of drawings by the old masters.

The Berlin gallery, now rapidly being added to, contains a large German number of very important Italian pictures; among them is Sig- galleries. norelli's finest easel picture (see fig. 8),—a classical scene with Pan and other nude figures playing on pipes, a masterpiece of powerful drawing. The gallery is more especially rich in works of the German, Flemish, and Dutch schools, including six panels from the large altarpiece of the Adoration of the Lamb at Ghent by Hubert and Jan van Eyck. The Dresden gallery is mainly rich in paint- ings of the Flemish and Dutch schools, but also contains some fine Italian pictures. Raphael's Madonna di San Sisto is the chief glory of the collection, together with many fine examples of Giorgione, Palma Vecchio, Titian, Paul Veronese, and Correggio, and a number of works of the later Bolognese school. The gallery is especially remarkable for its genuine examples of that very rare master Giorgione. The Pinakothek at Munich possesses some good Italian pictures, among

them four by Raphael and a number of fine Titians. It contains a large collection of German, Dutch, and Flemish paint- ings, with a number of fine portraits by Albert Diirer and Vandyck. It is especially rich in works of Lucas Cranach the elder, of Mem- ling, of Roger van der Weyden, of Wohlgemuth, and of Rembrandt.' The Cassel gallery is mainly rich in Flemish and Dutch paintings. The small Wallraf-Richartz Museum at Cologne contains a few paintings of great interest to the student of early German art.

The Belvedere Gallery at Vienna is exceptionally rich in works Austria, of the Venetian school, especially of Palma Vecchio, Titian, and Paul Veronese. Holbein, Rubens, Vandyck, and other masters of the Flemish and Dutch schools are richly represented. Vienna also contains some large private galleries, chiefly rich in Flemish

3 A most valuable catalogue of the Munich pictures, well illustrated with photographs, has recently been published.

St Peters- burg.

Belgium and Hol- land.

Spain

Rome.

446

and Dutch pictures, and a magnificent collection of drawings by old masters. The Budapest gallery (Eszterhazy collection) contains many fine Venetian and some Florentine pictures, with a large number of Flemish and Dutch works.

The Gallery of the Hermitage at St Petersburg is one of the

largest and most important in Europe; though weak in pictures of

the early Italian schools, it contains fine examples of Luini, Raphael, Titian, Paul Veronese, and the Bolognese school, and is extraordi- narily rich in

paintings by Murillo, Rembrandt, Rubens, Vandyck, and the later Flemish and Dutch schools generally. The many galleries of Belgium and Holland are mostly rich in the works of local schools. Rubens and many fine examples of his pupil Vandyck. The church of St Bavon at Ghent contains the masterpiece of the Van Eycks, the main part of a large altarpiece in many panels with the Adora- tion of the Lamb as the central subject ; this is only rivalled in point cf size and beauty by the Fountain of Salvation painted by Jan van Eyck about 1482, and now in the museum of the Santis- sima Trinidad at Madrid. Among the many fine Flemish and

Dutch pictures in the musenm at The Hague is a half-length of

an unknown lady by Holbein, which is one of the most beautiful portraits in the world (see fig. 27),

The gallery of Madrid is in some respects unrivalled both from

its widely representative character—at least as regards the later schools—and from the number of exceptional masterpieces which it contains ; it possesses, however, very few specimens of Italian art earlier than 1500. In the works of the later Italian masters it is very rich, possessing four important works by Raphael, —the Madonna called La Perla (once at Hampton Court in the collection of Charles I.), the Virgin of the Fish, the Virgin of the Rose, and Christ on His way to Calvary (Lo Spasimo). No other gallery con- tains so many fine specimens of Titian's paintings; it includes a scene of Bacchus at Naxos, with a nude sleeping figure of Ariadne in the foreground, the companion to the magnificent Ariadne in the English National Gallery, but surpassing it in beauty and per- fection of preservation. The third picture of the trio painted for the duke of Ferrara is also at Madrid ; it is known as the Sacrifice to Fecundity, and consists of a large group of nude infants sporting or sleeping, a perfect miracle for its wealth of colour and unrivalled flesh painting. In addition to these wonderful pictures there are some splendid portraits by Titian, and many of his later works, showing a sad decadence in his old age. The gallery also contains many important works of Paul Veronesc and others of the Venetian school, and a very fine collection of Flemish and Dutch pictures, including a number of noble portraits by Antonio Moro, Rubens, aud Vandyck, together with some of Claude Lorrain's best land- scapes. In the Spanish

schools the Madrid gallery is unrivalled ‘ it contains a number of poor but interesting paintings by Juan de Juanes, the best collection of the works of Ribera (Spagnoletto), and the chief masterpieces of Velazquez. It is in Madrid alone that the greatness of Velazquez can be fully realized, just as the marvellous talents of Murillo are apparent only in Seville. Among the many wonderful paintings by Velazqnez in this gallery the chief are the Crucifixion, the Tapestry Weavers (Las Hilanderas), the Surrender of Breda (Las Lanzas), the Drinking Peasants (Los Borrachos), the portrait group known as Las Menifias, and many magnificent por- traits. The gallery also contains a number of Zurbaran’s works, and many by Murillo, none of which are among his finest paintings. The best picture by Murillo at Madrid is the scene of St Elizabeth of Hungary tending the Lepers, preserved in the Academia de San Fernando. Seville alone contains the real masterpieces of Murillo, a very unequal painter, who produced a large number of third-rate works, such as are to be seen in many of the chief galleries of Europe, but who at his best deserves to rank with the greatest painters of the world. It is impossible to describe the wonderful rich tone, the intense pathos, and the touching religious feeling of such pictures as the Crucified Christ embracing St Francis, or the appari- tion of the Infant Saviour to St Anthony of Padua, in the Seville gallery, and the larger composition of the latter scene in the cathedral. Other very noble works by Murillo exist in the monastic church of La Caridad. The Seville gallery also contains several of Zurbaran’s chief pictures, and some by other painters of the Spanish school. The other chief gallery of Spain, that at Valencia, contains a number of weak but historically interesting pictures of early Spanish artists, —feeble imitations of the style of Francia and other Italian painters. It possesses also many pictures by Ribalta and other later and unimportant masters of the Valencian school.

The Vatican Gallery, though not large, contains a very large pro- portion of important pictures, such as a portrait group in fresco by Melozzo da Forli, the unfinished monochromatic painting of St Jerome by Da Vinci, the finest of Raphael’s early works,—the Coronation of the Virgin, the Madonna di Foligno, and the Trans- figuration. The Coronation of the Virgin by Pinturicchio is one of his best panel pictures, and a portrait of a Doge by Titian a master- piece of portraiture. The Last Communion of St Jerome by

Do- menichino is his finest work. The chapel of San Lorenzo, painted by Fra Angelico (see FIESOLE), the Appartamenti Borgia by Pintu-

Antwerp possesses the masterpieces of

SCHOOLS OF PRBAWWe We

ricchio, the stanze by Raphael, and the Sistine angelo are described in the articles on these painters. The Capitol contains but few works of much merit; the chief are a very beauti- ful series of frescos of Apollo and the Muses in separate panels, life- size, by some painter of the school of Perugino, probably Lo Spagna ; they are remarkable for grace of drawing and extreme delicacy of colour. The Rape of Europa, by Paul Veronese, is a fine replica of that in the doge's palace at Venice. The gallery also contains some of the ehief works of Guercino and Guido and a very noble portrait by Velazquez. The Borghese Gallery is perhaps the most important private collection in the world. It is rich in Florentine pictures of the 15th century, and possesses the celebrated Entombment by Raphael. A small panel of St Stephen by Francia (signed) is of unusual beauty and interest,—very highly finished and magnificent in colour ; it seems to show the influence of Jan van Eyck ; it is one of Francia's earliest works, and is very far superior to those of his later style. The great glory of the gallery is the (so-called) Sacred and Profane Love by Titian (see fig. 16), one of the most beautiful pictures in the world both for design and colour, and a marvel for its rich warm rendering of flesh; it appears to be a portrait of the same lady repeated twice,—nude and draped. It belongs to a somewhat earlier period than the bacchanal trio in Madrid and London. This gallery contains also one of Vandyck's finest portraits, that of Catherine de' Medici, and other excellent portraits of the Venetian school. The Danae by Correggio is an interesting example, very weak in drawing, but remarkable for the fine pearly tones of the flesh. The Corsini Gallery, now the property of the municipality of Rome, contains some good panels by Fra Angelico, but is mainly strong only in the later Bolognese paintings. It also possesses a rich collection of early Italian engravings. The Doria Gallery is large, but contains only a small proportion of valu- able pictures. Some paintings by Niccolo Rondinelli are of much interest ; they show him to have been an able pupil and close imitator of Giovanni Bellini, to whom many paintings

in various galleries are attributed which are really the work of pupils. A beautiful Madonna in the Doria Palace by Rondinelli has a cartellino inscribed with Bellini's name. The chief treasures of this collection are the portraits of two Venetians attributed to Raphael, and that of Pope Innocent X. by Velazquez,—the latter a marvel of dashing and alinost too skilful execution. There is also a fine portrait of Andrea Doria by Scbastiano del Piombo, well modelled, but rather wanting in colour. The Sciarra-Colonna Palace contains a few good pictures, among them a very fine portrait of a violin-player by Raphael, and a graceful painting of Modesty and Vanity by Luini, attributed to Da Vinci, as is often the case with Luini's pictures. The Colonna, Barberini, and other private galleries of Rome contain but little that is noteworthy. The church of S. Maria sopra Minerva eontains some splendid frescos by Lippo Lippi; some of Pintu- ricchio's chief frescos are in the churches of S. Maria del Popolo and S, Maria in Ara Coli; and the monastery of 8. Onofrio possesses a very lovely fresco of the Madonna and a kneeling Donor, attributed to Da Vinci,—probably a pupil's work.

The Florentine Accademia delle Belle Arti eontains a most valu- able collection of early Florentine and other 15th-century pictures, including the finest panel picture by Gentile da Fabriano,—the Adoration of the Magi,—a rare example of Verrocchio, partly painted by his pupil Da Vinci, some magnificent examples of Botticelli, good specimens of Fra Angelico, Ghirlandaio, Signorelli, Lippo Lippi, Fra Bartolomeo, and a group of saints by Andrea del Sarto, one of his best works. The magnificent galleries in the Uffizi and Pitti Palaces contain an unrivalled collection of the great Florentine painters of all dates. In the Uffizi are several fine paintings by Raphael,—the Madonna del Cardellino, a portrait of Julius IT., and an exquisitely finished head of an unknown lady. Among the many fine examples by Titian is his portrait of a nude lady reclining (Danae),—a most wonderful work. In the same room (La Tribuna) is the circular panel of the Madonna and St Joseph, an early work by Michelangelo, showing the influence of Signorelli. Many of Botticelli's finest works are in this gallery, and the Uffizi also possesses an almost unrivalled collection of drawings by Italian painters of all dates. The Pitti Palace contains some of the chief works of Raphael,—the early Madonna del Gran Duca, and por- traits of Angelo Doni and his wife, the portraits of Cardinal Bibiena and Leo X. (in his later manner), the Madonna della Seggiola, and the miniature Vision of

Ezekiel. The portrait of a nun, attributed to Da Vinci, but probably the work of a pupil, is a work of extra- ordinary finish and refinement. The Magdalen and the lady's portrait (La Bella) by Titian are among his best works. Both these collections contain some good Flemish and Dutch pictures. In the church of Santa Croce are the chief works of Giotto, in S. Maria Novella the best pictures of Orcagna and Ghirlandaio, and in the monastery of 8. Marco the principal frescos of Fra Angelico. Some of the chief frescos of Spinello Aretino, much repainted, cxist in the sacristy of S. Miniato, and the most important frescos of Andrea del Sarto are in the church of 8. Annunziata.

The small galleries at Perugia and Siena are of great interest for their collections of rare works by painters of the local schools. The

Chapel by Michel.

Florence

Smaller Italian galleries.

ice.

Sem oOoLs OF \PAINTING 447

small collection at Pisa also possesses some curious early panels by local painters ; in the church of S. Caterina is a magnificent altar- piece by Fran. Traini, Orcagna's chief pupil. At Prato are the finest frescos of Lippo Lippi. The gallery at Bologna 'contains some of Francia's chief works, the St Cecilia of Raphael, and a number of examples of the Caracci and others of the later Bolognese school. ° Parma is specially rich in the works of Correggio and Parmigiano ; unhappily the great frescos by the former in the cathedral have almost wholly perished. The small collection at Ferrara possesses interesting examples of paintings of the local school. Brescia and Bergamo are very rich in fine works of Moretto and Moroni, and also possess a number of fine Venetian paintings of various dates.

Padua has but a small and unimportant gallery, but. the town is rich in frescos by Giotto, Altichiero, and Jacopo Avanzi, and most noble frescos by Andrea Mantegna. Mantua also contains some grand frescos by Mantegna in the Castello di Corti, and a large quantity of showy and cleverly executed wall and ceiling paintings by Giulio Romano in the Palazzo del Té. The Verona gallery con- tains some few good examples of the local school. The church of S. Zenone possesses a magnificent altarpiece by Mantegna ; and in S Anastasia is the wreck of a fine fresco of St George and the Dragon by Pisancllo, The Vicenza collection contains little of value-except some good examples of Bart. Montagna. The Turin gallery possesses a few good pictures, especially some fine panels by

Botticelli and splendid portraits by Vandyck. Many of Vandyck's. finest works exist in the various palaces of Genoa. The large gallery at Naples contains an unusual proportion of bad pictures ; there are, however, some fine works of Titian and some interesting examples of the early Flemish school which have been in Naples ever since the 15th century. The only painting of much importance in the gallery at Palermo is a very beautiful triptych of the school of Van Eyck.

Venice is extraordinarily rich in the works of its own school, with the exception of those of Crivelli, who is completely absent. The works in Venice of the Bellini family, of Carpaccio and others of Gian. Bellini's pupils, of Titian, Tintoretto, and Paul Veronese, are among the chief glories

of the world. The Grimani breviary, in the doge's library, contains a very beautiful series of miniature pictures of the school of Memling.

The Brera Gallery at Milan contains a large number of master- pieces, especially of the Lombard and Venetian schools, among them the chief work of Gentile Bellini, St Mark at Alexandria, some uurivalled portraits by Lorenzo Lotto, and very important examples of Moretto's religious paintings. One of its greatest treasures is the altarpiece painted for the duke of Montefeltro by Piero della Francesca, and wrongly attribnted to his pupil Fra Carnovale. The celebrated Sposalizio is the most iniportant work of Raphael, executed wholly under the influence of Perugino. The gallery is especially rich in works of the pupils and imitators of Leonardo and other Milanese painters. The Biblioteca Ambrogiana contains some priceless drawings by Leonardo da Vinci and a large number of his autograph MSS., selections from which have been published by Dr Richter, London, 1883. Another important MS. of Da Vinci from the same library, the Codice Ailantico, is now (1886) in course of publication in Rome in its entirety.

This very scanty sketch of the contents of the chief galleries of Europe will give some notion of the places where the works of special schools and masters can best be studied. In some cases there is but little choice: the greatuess of Giotto can only be fully realized in Florence and Padua, of Carpaccio and Tintoretto in Venice, of Signorelli at Orvieto and Monte Oliveto, of Fra Angelico in Florence, of Correggio in Parma, of Velazquez in Madrid, and of Murillo in Seville.

List of Works to be consulted.1—PAaINTING GENERALLY.—Agincourt, Histoire del' Art, Paris, 1811-23; Bell, Schools of Painting, London, 1842; Blanc, His- toire des Peintres de toutes les Ecoles, Paris, 1848-76 ; Buchanan, Memoirs of Painting, London, 1824; Chabert, Galerie des Peintres, Paris, 1822; Daryl, Dictionary of Painters, London, 1878 ; Duchesne, Museum of Painting, Paris, 1829-34: Eastlake, Handbook of Painting, 4th ed., London, 1874; Gérling, Geschichte der Maleret, Leipsic, 1867; Havard, Histoire de la Petnture, Paris, 1882; Mrs Heaton, Concise History of Painting, London, 1872; Heinrich, Leben und Werke der beriihmtesten Maler, Berlin, 1854; Lecarpentier, Galerie des Peintres Céleébres, Paris, 1810-21; Ménard, M[istotre des Beaux-Arts, Paris, 1873 ;

Montabert, Traité de la Petnture, Paris, 1820-515 Parrocel, Annales de la Peinture, Paris, 1862; Destreman, Histoire del Art, Paris, 1882; Diderot, Hssais sur la Peinture, Leipsic, 1862 ; fméric-David, La Peintwre Moderne, 1862; Michiels, La Peinture du IVme aw XVIme Siécle, Brussels, 1853 5 Mintz, Histoire de la Petnture, Paris, 1881; Stendhal, Histoire de la Peintwre, Paris, 1860 ; Miss K. Thompson, Handbook to Picture Galleries of Europe, 3d ed., London, 1880 ; Wornum, History of Painting, London, 1847, and Epochs of Painting, 1864 ; Eckl and Atz, Die Madonna als Gegenstand christlicher Kunstmaleret, Brixen, 1883 ; Hotho, Gesch. der chrisilichen Maleret, Stuttgart, 1873; Argens, Examen des Ecoles de Peinture, Berlin, 1768.; Hobbes, Pickure-Collector's Manual, London, 1849; Bryan, Dictionary of Painters, London, 1865; Sivet, Dictton. Hist. des Peintres, Paris, 1855; Bartsch, Peintre graveur, Vienna, 1802-21; Sorg, Gesch. der christlichen Malerei, Berlin, 1853; Waagen, Treaswres of Art in Britain, London, 1854-57; Rebre, Kunstgeschichte des M ittelalters, Leipsic, 1885. Harty Meni ava Scuoots.—Mullooly, Paintings in S. Clemente, Rome, 1866; Perret, Catacombes de Rome, Paris, 1852-57 ; De Rossi, Roma Sotterranea, Rome, 1864-80 ; Didron, Manuel d'Iconographie Chrétienne, Paris, 1845 (in this is printed the 11th-century MS. Epunvela rijs 6 wypagikis, on the hieratic rules of Byzan- tine art); Bayet, La Peinture Chrétienne en Orient, Paris, 1879; Carter, Specimens of Ancient Sculpture and Painting, London, 1812; Pownall, "Ancient Painting OOO ela SS

in England," in Archewologia, ix. p. 141, and other papers in the same publica- tion ; the Vetusta Monwmenta, published by the Society of Antiquaries, has valuable reproductions of the 14th-century wall-paintings in St Stephen's Chapel, Westminster, which are now destroyed, except a few fragments in the British Museum; many articles on medizval painting occur in the volumes of the Archeological Journal, and in the Proceedings of many other socicties in England and abroad. Ira.1an ScHOOLS GENERALLY.—Crowe and Cavalcaselle, History of Painting in Italy, London, 1864-66, and History of Painting in North Italy, 1871; Woermann and Woltmann, History of Painting, ed. by 8. Colvin, Loudon, 1880; Kugler, Handbook of Painting, London, 1874; Lanzi, Storia pittorica, Florence, 1822; Rosini, Storia della Pittura Italiane, Pisa, 1839-47 ; Rumohr, Italientsche Forschungen, Berlin, 1826-31 ; Forster, Denkmale ital.

Malerei, Leipsic, 1870-73 ; Dohme, Kunst und Ktinstler Ital., Berlin, 1878; Burck- hardt, The Cicerone, best ed. London, 1879 ; Coindet, Histoire de la Peinture en Italie, Paris, 1861; Liitbke, Gesch. der ital. Maleret, Stuttgart, 1878 ; Ottley, Italian School, London, 1823; W. B. Scott, Pictwres by Italian Masters, London, 1876; Mrs Jameson, Harly Italian Painters, London, 1859 ; Symonds, Renais- saice tn Italy (Fine Arts), London, 1877 ; Tytler, Old Masters and their Pictures, London, 1873; Bernasconi, Storia d. Pittwra Italiana, Pisa, 1864 ; Clément, La Peinture Italtenne, Paris, 1857 (on early painters); Pascoli, Vite det Pittori, Rome, 1736; Poynter, Painting, Early Christian, &e., small handbook, London, 1882; L. Scott, Renatssance in Italy, small handbook, London, 1883; Richter, Ttalian Art in the Nattonal Gallery, London, 1883; Frizzoni, L'Arte Italiana nella Gal. Nat. di Londra, Milan, 1880, published in the Archivio Storico di Milano; Reiset, in the Gaz. des B.~~Arts for 1877, gives a valuable series of articles entitled ' Une Visite aux Musées de Londres" ; Morelli, Italian Masters in German Galleries, trans., London, 1883, and his valuable series of articles on the Borghese Gallery in Liitzow's Zettschrift fur bildende Kunst. This very able art critic, who also writes under the name of ' Lermolieff," has developed a somewhat new system of criticism, based on minute observation of the way in which each painter treated details, such as the haud and ear,—in most cases (according to Morelli) a safer guide than the general impression derived from the whole effect or spirit of a picture, and less misleading than a judgment formed from technical peculiarities ; the Comm. Morelli, aided by a good know~~ *ledge of the documentary history of art, has thus been enabled to give back to their right authors many paintings which for long have been wrongly nained. ITALIAN SPECIAL ScHoois.—Bordiga, Opere del Gaud. Ferrari, Milan, 1835; Pagani, Le Pitture dit Modena, Modena, 1770; Vedriani, Pittori, &c., Modanest, Modena, 1662; Zaist, Pittori Cremonesi, Cremona, 1774; Graselli, Biog. det Pittort Cremonesi, Creinona, 1827 ; Arco, Delle Arti di Mantova, Mantua, 1857- 58; Coddé, Dizionario dei Pittort Mantovani, Mantua, 1837; Pozzo, Vite det Pittort Veronesi, Verona, 1718; Ferri, Pittori Milanesit, Rome, 1868; Rio, L. da Vinet et son Ecole, Paris, 1855 ; Moschini, La Pittura in Padova, Padua, 1826 ; Bodoni, Pitture Parmensi, Parma, 1809; Offd, Vita del Parmigtanino, Parma, 1784; Leoni, Pittwre di Correggio, Modena, 1841; Pungileoni, Memorie storiche di Correggio, Parma, 1817-21; Malvasia, Felsina Pittrice, Bologna, 1678; Barotti,*

Pitture di Ferrara, Ferrara, 1770; Laderchi, La Pitiwra Ferrarese, Ferrara, 1856 5 Bariflaldi, Vite det Pittori Ferrarest, Ferrara ; Mesnard, La Peinture a Sienne, Paris, 1878; Della Valle, Lettere Sanesi, Venice, 1782-86; Lasinio, Pittwre… di Siena, Florence, 1825; Milanesi Documenti dell' Arte Senese, 1858 ; Boullier, L' Art Vénitien, Paris, 1870; W. B. Scott, Pictures by Venetian Painters, London, 1875 ; Ruskin, St Mark's Rest, London, 1879, Stones of Venice, 1856, and Guide to principal Pictures at Venice, 1878 ; Zanetti, Storia d. Pittura Veneziana, Venice, 1771; Longhi, Vite det Pittori Veneztant, Venice, 1762 ; Ridolfi, Maraviglie dell' Arte, Venice, 1648 ; Verci, Pittori, &c., di Bassano, Venice, 1775; Tassi, Vite dei Pittort, &e., Bergamaschi, Bergamo, 1793 ; Chizzola, Pitture di Brescia, Brescia, 1809; Calvi, Vita di Francia, Bologna, 1812, and Vita di Fran. Barbiert (Guercino), 1808; Ratti, Pittura, &c., in Genova, Genoa, 1780; Pascoli, Vitc dei Pittori, &c., Perugini, Rome, 17325 Mariotti, Lettere Pittoriche Perugine, Perugia, 1788 ; Fiorillo, Gesch. der Malerei in Toscana, Berlin, 1850; Marchese, Pittort Domenicani, Florence, 1845; Ricci, Mem. di Melozzo da Forli, Forli, 1834 5 Reggiani, Mem. stor. d. Arti della Marea di Ancona, Macerata, 1834; Doinenici, Vite dei Pittort Napoletam, Naples, 1840-46, —not trustworthy in its account of supposed early Neapolitan painters ; Crowe and Cavalecaselle, Life of Titian, London, 1878, and Life of Raphael, 1880-85 ; Vischer, L. Signorelli und die ital. Renaissance, Leipsic, 1879. GERMAN, FLEMISH, AND DutcH ScHooLs.—Bode, Frans Hals und seine Schule, Leipsic, 1871, Die Kiinstler von Haarlem, 1872, and Gesch. der holldndischen Maleret, 1883 ; Birger, Etudes sur les Peintres Hollandais, Paris, 1859; Burnet, Rembrandt and his Works, London, 1859; Scheltema, Rem- brand, Redevoering, &c., Amsterdam, 1845; Fairholt, Homes, dc., of the Dutch Painters, London, 1871; R. Gower, Figure Painters of Holland, London, 1880 ; Vlavard, L' Art Hollandats, Paris, 1879, and Histoire dela Peinture Hollandaise, Paris, 1882; Kramm, Levens en Werken der Hollandische Kunstschilders, Amster- dam, 1857-64; Rathgeber, Annalen der niederldndischen Malerei, Gotha, 1842- 44; Renouvier, Les Peintres de l'Ancienne Ecole Hollandaise, Paris, 1857; Van Mander, Le Livre des Peintres, Paris, 1884 ; Riegel, Beitrdge zur niederlindischen Kunstgeschichte, Berlin, 1882, Van BEynden, Geschtedenis der vaterlandsche Schilderkunst, Amsterdam, 1842 ; Vloten, Nederlands Schilderkunst, Amsterdam, 1874; Van Gool, Nieuwe Schouburq der Kunstschilders, Amsterdam, 1858 ; Hotho, Gesch. der deutschen und

niederlind. Malerei, Berlin, 1840-43 ; Descamps, La Vie des Peintres Flamands, Paris, 1753-64; Dehaisnes, L'Art Chrét. en Flandre, Douai, 1860; Fétis, Les Artistes Belges, Brussels, 1857 ; Fromentin, Les Maitres autrefois, Paris, 1876; Saint-Germain, Guide de Tubleaux, Ecole 'Allemande, &c., Paris, 1841; Heéris, Histoire de VEcole Flamande, Brussels, 1856; Houssaye, Histoire de la Peinture Flamande, &c., Paris, 1866; Michiels, Les Peintres Brugeois, Brusscls, 1846, Histoire de la Peinture Flamande, &c., 1847, and L'Ecole Anvers, Paris, 1877 ; Potvin, L' Art Flamand, Paris, 1868 ; Rooses, Gesch. der Malerschule Antwerpens, Munich, 1880 ; Stanley, Principal Painters of Dutch and Flemish Schools, London, 1855 ; Head, Handbook of Painting, German, Flemish, and Dutch, London, 1846 ; Waagen, Die deutschen und niederlandischen Malerschulen, Stuttgart, 1862; Kugler, Handbook of Painting, 2d ed., London, 1874; Crowe and Cavalcaselle, Early Flemish Painters, London, 1872; J. Smith, Catalogue of Works of Dutch, Flemish, and French Painters, London, 1829-42 ; Sandrart, L' Accademia Tedesca, Nuremberg, 1675-79 ; Lindau, Lucas Cranach, Leipsic, 1883 ; Heller, Cranach's Leben und Werke, Nuremberg, 1804 ; Willigen, Les Artistes de Haarlem, Haarlem, 1870 ; Woltmann, Hans Holbein, Berlin, 1865 ; Wornum, Life of Holbein, London, 1866 ; Thausing, Albrecht Diirer, Berlin, 1872-76: Mrs Heaton, Life of A. Diver, London, 1881; Heller, Leben und Werke 'A. Diirers, Leipsic, 1831; Innstadten, Darstellung der Gesch. der Malerei, Vienna, 1853; Knirim, Die Hartzmalerei, &c., Leipsic, 1839; Passavant, Beitrdge zur Kenntniss, &c., Berlin, 1846 ; Houbraken, Nederlandsche Kunstschilders, Amster- dam, 1718-21 ; Immerzeel, De Levens cn Werken der Hollandsche, &c., Amsterdam, 1849-48; Weale, Notes sur Jean Van Eyck, London, 1861 ; Carton, Les trois Van Eyck, Bruges, 1848 ; Heinecken, Neue Nachrichten von Kiinstlern, Dresden, 1768-71; Gwinner, Kunst und Kunstler in Frankfurt, Frankfort, 1862; Merlo, Nachrichten von dem Leben, &c., kélnischer Kiinstler, Cologne, 1850 ; Busscher, Corporation des Peintres & Gand, Brussels, 1853 ; Taurel, L'Art en Hollande, é&c., Amsterdam, 1872; Burget, Musées de la Hollande, Brussels, 1858-60; Aus'm Weerth, Kunstdenkmdler des christ. Mittelalters, Leipsic, 1857-60; Saint-Germain, Guide de Tableaux (German, Flemish, and Dutch), Paris, 1841 ; Dohme, Bode, and others, Gesch. der deutschen Kunst, Berlin, 1885; W. B. Scott,

The Little Masters, London, 1879. MopDERN GERMAN ScHooLs.— Bouniol, L' Art chrétien et

1 For further lists of authorities see the various articles on the separate painters.

Ecole Allemande, Paris, 1856; Ormos, Peter von Cornelius, é&c., Berlin, 1866; Ranzoni, Malerei in Ween, Vienna, 1873; Riegel, Gesch. der deutschen Kunst, Hanover, 1876; Wustmann, Gesch. der Maleret in Leipzig, Leipsic, 1879; Schasler, Die Wandgemalde von Kaulbachs, Berlin, 1854; Pecht, Deutsche Kiinstler, Nordlingen, 1877-81; Leixner, Die moderne Kunst, Berlin, 1878; Rosenberg, Gesch. der mod. Kunst, Leipsic, 1882. SPANISH Scnoot.—Head, Handbook of Painting (Spanish), London, 1847 ; Stirling, Annals of the Artists of Spain, London, 1848, and Velasquez and his Works, 1855 ; O Neil, Dictionary of Spanish Painters, London, 1833 ; Montecuccoli, Storia della Pittura in Ispagna, Modena, 1841; Cuinberland, Eminent Painters in Spain, London, 1782 ; Laforge, Des Arts en Espagne, Lyons, 1859; W. B. Scott, Murillo and the Spanish School, London, 1872; Curtis, Murillo and Velasquez, London, 1883; Davies, Life Of Murillo, London, 1819; Viardot, Les Principaux Peinires de UEspagne, Paris, 1839; Eusebi, Las diferentes Escuelas de Pintura, Madrid, 1823; Malpica, El Arte de la Pintura, Madrid, 1874; Bermudez, Dictonario de las Bellas Artes en Espana, Madrid, 1800; Robinson, Early Portuguese Painting, Bungay, 1866; Davillier, Mariano Fortuny, sa Vie, &c., Paris, 1875. FRENCH ScHoot.—Mrs M. Pattison, Renaissance of Art in France, 1879; La Chavignerie, Dictionnaire de U Ecole Frangaise, Paris, 1883; Béraud, Annales de l' Ecole Francaise, Paris, 1827; Berger, L'Ecole Francaise, Paris, 1879; Dufour, Peintres Parisiens auc XIV et XV Siecles, Paris, 1879; Parrocel, Annales de la Pcinture, Paris, 1862; De Saint-Germain, Trois Siécles de la Peinture en France, Paris, 1808 ; Laborde, Renaissance des Arts a la Cour de France, Paris, 1850-55; Goncourt, L' Art dans le XVIIIme Siécle, Paris, 1880-84. Moprrn Frencu ScHoo.,— Chesneau, La Peintwre Francaise au XIXme Siécle, Paris, 1862; Claretie, LP' Art Francais Contemporain, Paris, 1876; Pesquidoux, L'Art au XIXme Siécle, Paris, 1881; Jourdan, Les Peintres Francais, Paris, 1859 ; Laforge, La

Peinture en France, Paris, 1856; Laurent-Pichat, L'Art en France, 1859; Leclereq, L' Ecole Francaise, Paris, 1881; Merson, La Peinture en France, 1861; Meyer, Gesch. der mod. franzdsischen Malerei, Leipsic, 1867 ; Rosenberg, Gesch. der mod, Kunst, Leipsic, 1884; Wurzbach, Die franzdsischen Maler, Stuttgart, 1879. British ScHoot.—Graves, Dictionary of British Artists from 1760 to 1880, London, 1881; Redgrave, Painters of the English School, London, 1866,

and Dictionary of Artists (English), 1878; W. B. Scott, Our British Landscape Painters, London, 1872; Shepherd, British School of Painting, London, 1880; Walpole, Anecdotes of Painting in England, London, 1861; Wodderspoon, J. Crome and his Works, Norwich, 1858 ; Chesneau, La Peinture Anglaise, Paris, 18825; Clayton, Hnglish Female Artists, London, 1876 ; Cunningham, Lives of British Painters, ed. Mrs Heaton, 1879; Dallaway, Painting in England, London, 1849; Hannay and others, Works of Hogarth, London, 1860; Hoare, Academic Annals of Painting, London, 1805-9 ; Dumas, Modern Artists, Paris, 1882 ; Ruskin, Modern Painters, London, 1851-60; Our Living Painters (anon.), London, 1859 ; Monkhouse, Masterpieces of English Art, London, 1868 ; Britton, Fine Aris of the English School, London, 1812 ; Brock-Arnold, Gainsborough and Reynolds, London, 1881: Leslie and Taylor, Life and Times of Reynolds, London, 1865; Conway, Reynolds and Gainsborough, London, 1886. EARLy TREATISES on PaIntiInc.—Theophilus, Diversarum Artium Schedula, trans., London, 1847 : Cennino Cennini, Tratiato della Pitiura, trans., together with other early docu- ments on painting by Mrs Merrifield, Treatises on Painting, London, 1848; Eastlake, Materials for History of Oil Painting, 1847-69; the Commentary of Lorenzo Ghiberti, containing a short history of Florentine art, has been pub- lished (in French) by Perkins, Ghiberti ei son Ecole, Paris, 1836; Filarete, Trattato del? Architetiura, &c., written at Florence, 1464, Pretiosa Margarita, edited by Aldus, Venice, 1546; Da Vinci, Tratiato della Pittura, Bologna, 1786, and selections from forty-two autograph MSS. at Milan, edited by Richter, London, 1883; Lomazzo, Trattato d. Pittura, Milan, 1584; Vasari, Vite dei Pittori, first complete edition, Florence, 1568, best edition by Milanesi, Flor- ence, 1878-82; Morelli, Notizia d'Opere di Disegno .. . scritta da un Anonimo (a

work of the 16th century) ; Bassano, 1800, best edition by Frizzoni, Bologna, 1884; Bellori, Vite dei Pittori, Rome, 1672; Ridolfi, Maravigtie del? Arte, Venice, 1648; Baldinucci, Professori del Disegno, Florence, 1681-88: Du Fresnoy, Art of Painting, London, 1695: Van Lairesse, Art of Painting, trans., London, 1738; Piles, Divers Ouvrages sur la Peinture, Paris, 1755. For the bibliography of painting, see Weigel, Kunstcatalog, Leipsic, 1833 and following years; and Reumont, Notizie bibliografiche det Lavori publ. in Germania tratt. d. Belle Arti, Florence, 1847-63. (J. H. M.)

SCHOPENHAUER, Arruur (1788-1860), was born in Dantzic (117 Heiligen-Geist Strasse) on 22d February 1788. Doomed for the first thirty years of his career to find his works ignored with galling silence, he came, from the year 1845 onwards, to be looked up to by a scanty but devoted following as, what he himself claimed to be, the founder of the first true philosophy. Historical criticism has done much to dispel his pretensions to originality, and logical examination has demonstrated the incongruities lurking in his system. But the fact of his dominant influ- ence on contemporary thought remains undiminished after every such disparaging analysis. He consoled himself for the neglect of his own generation by the assurance that his would be the philosophy of the future. His ideas, recommended by the mastery of language and brilliance of illustration which entitle him to a first class in literature, have become the burden of much of our current speculation, and have leavened to an unusual extent the view of life and of the universe which animates the average educated world and finds expression in literary art.

His father, Heinrich Floris Schopenhauer, the youngest of a family to which the mother had brought the germs of mental malady, was a man of strong will and originality, vehement and resolute in the extreme, and so proud of the independence of his native town that when Dantzic in 1793 surrendered to the Prussians he and his whole establishment withdrew to Hamburg. The mother of the future philosopher was Johanna Henriette Trosiener. Both parents belonged to the mercantile aristocracy, the bankers and traders, of Dantzic. Johanna, who at the age of twenty accepted a husband of forty, was as yet undeveloped in character ; and perhaps he hoped that her want of love, which she did not conceal, might be com- pensated by the community of tastes and interests which, under his guidance, would grow

up between them, But the radical rift in the wedded heart could not be stopped up by a merely intellectual cement. The two children of the marriage, Arthur born in 1788 and Adele in 1796, bore (according to the theory of the former 1) the penalty of their parents' incompatibilities. While they inherited from their mother a high degree of intelligence and literary style, they were burdened by an abnormal urgency of desire and capacity for suffering, which no doubt took different phases in the man and the woman, but linked them together in a common susceptibility to ideal pain.

In the summer of 1787, a year after the marriage, the

a ee 1 Die Welt als Wille, ii. c. 48.

elder Schopenhauer, whom conmercial experiences had made a cosmopolitan in heart, took his young wife ona tour to western Europe. It had been his plan that the expected child should see the light in England, but the intention was frustrated by the state of his wife's health, and they had to beat a hasty retreat homewards in early winter. The name of Arthur, given to the child in St Mary's at Dantzic, was chosen because it remains the same in English, French, and German. The first five years of his life Arthur spent under the care of his mother, chiefly in their country house at Oliva, about 4 miles west of Dantzic. There, at the foot of the prettily wooded sand- hills which look out upon the dim Baltic, the young mother enjoyed a life of leisure, dissipating the long solitary hours with her horses, the gondola on the pond, the foun- tains, and the lambs, or with the French novels her husband put amply at her disposal. It was only on Saturday and Sunday that he would quit his office in town and come down, generally in company with a friend or two, to get a glimpse of his wife and son. The latter was often taken on a visit for weeks to the manor-house, between Dantzic and the sea-coast, where his maternal grandparents lived. After 1793 the father never set foot in his old home 3 but Johanna was allowed every four years to revisit the scenes of her youth.

During the twelve years they had their home at Ham- Ham- burg (1793-1805) the Schopenhauers made frequent ex- burg The year after his sister's birth Arthur was Pe™4

cursions, taken by his father to France, and left for two years (1797-99) as a boarder with M. Gregoire, a merchant of Havre, and friend of the Hamburg house. The boy formed a fast friendship with his host's son, Anthime, and grew so familiar with French that by the end of his sojourn he had almost forgotten his mother-tongue. The youthful friends lost sight of each other for long years; and when the Frenchman sought to renew their corre- spondence in the evening of life they found that they had drifted far asunder ; and unworthy suspicions led Schopen- hauer to dismiss his old comrade in abrupt silence. Arthur returned alone by sea to Hamburg, and for the next four years had but indifferent training. When he reached the age of fifteen the scholarly and literary instincts began to awaken, and he became anxious to be initiated into the fraternity of the liberal arts and sciences. But his father,

'steeped in that old pride of caste which looks down upon

the artist and the writer of books as mere means or instru- ments to decorate and diversify the life of business, was unwilling a son of his should worship knowledge and truth

lengthened tour, of which Johanna has given an account, to Holland, England, France, and Austria.

« boarder with a Rev. Mr Lancaster at Wimbledon.

him most pleasure was the last,—a solitary pedestrian

joined his mother at Dantzic, September 1804, where he was confirmed.

At Hamburg in the beginning of 1805 he was placed in the office of a merchant called Jenisch. He had only been there for three months when his father, who had shown symptoms of mental alienation, fell or threw himself from an elevated opening of his warehouse into the canal. After his death the young widow (still under forty) got affairs wound up, and, leaving Arthur at Hamburg, proceeded. with her daughter Adele in the middle of 1806 to Weimar, where she arrived only a fortnight before the tribulation which followed the victory of Napoleon at Jena, At Weimar her talents, hitherto held in check, found an atmo- sphere to stimulate and foster them;

her esthetic and literary tastes formed themselves under the influence of Goethe and his circle, and her little salon gained a certain celebrity. Arthur, meanwhile, was left at his desk in Hamburg, cursing his prosaic lot, and smuggling literature under the ledger; the hot blood of youth was turning his thoughts to morbid cynicism, and his easy-minded mother, alarmed at his discontent, adopted the advice of her friend Fernow, and offered him a release from the loathed task- work, He hastened to make up lost ground, and at the age of nineteen began to decline mensa with Doering at Gotha. But the wantonness and restiveness which he had grown familiar with in the lax schooling of the world would not let him alone: he allowed his satirical pen to play on one of the teachers of the grammar-school, and pro-fessional etiquette required Doering to dismiss his pupil. After a plain but gentle rebuke for his folly, his mother settled him at Weimar—not in her own house, for, as she told him, she was content to know that he was well and could dispense with his company—but with the Greek scholar Passow, who superintended his classical studies. This time he made so much progress that in the course of two years he became a tolerable scholar, and read Greek and Latin with fluency and interest.

In 1809 his mother handed over to him (aged twenty- one) the third part of the paternal estate, a sum of 19,000 thalers, which, being invested in good securities, yielded him from the first a yearly income of more than 1000 thalers= £150. Possessed of this fair patrimony, Schopen- hauer in October 1809 entered the university of Gottingen, with a clear plan of acquiring all that machinery of know- ledge which schools can give. The direction of his philo- sophical reading was fixed by the advice of Professor G. E. Schulze to study, especially, Plato and Kant. For the former he soon found himself full of reverence, and from the latter he acquired the standpoint of modern philo- sophy. The names of " Plato the divine and the marvel- lous Kant" are conjunctly invoked at the beginning of his earliest work. But neither the formal exercises of the class-room nor the social and hygienic recreations which he did not fail to combine with them filled his hours to the exclusion of the ideas which began to formulate them-

Sscmorrnhrr ih ATER

as ends in themselves. Accordingly he offered his son the choice between the classical school and an excursion to England.

Six months were spent in England, and Arthur, while his parents proceeded as far as Scotland, was left for a few weeks as He found English ways dull and precise and the religious observances exacting; and his mother had—not for the last time—to talk seriously with him on his unsocial and wilful character. Perhaps the part of the tour which gave

stroll along the ridge of the Riesengebirge, just before he

AA9

selves in him. Contempt for the superficiality of human life settled itself more and more deeply in his heart, with the sense of a bitterness tainting the very source of being, and the perception that the egoism of individuals seeks for nothing better than to push on the load of misery from one to another, instead of making an effort to re- duce the burden. These pessimistic reflexions (which his mother found eminently unsocial) were naturally concomi- tant with groundless nervous terrors; sudden panics would dash over his mind, and even in those days he had begun to keep loaded weapons always ready at his bedside. As a philosopher has said, 'the sort of philosophy we choose depends on the sort of people we are ; for a philosophical system is not a dead bit of furniture: it draws its life from the soul of the man who has it." He was a man of few acquaintances, amongst the few being Bunsen, the subsequent scholar-diplomatist, and Bunsen's pupil, W. C. Astor, the son of Washington Irving's millionaire hero. Even then he found his trustiest mate in a poodle, and its bearskin was an institution in his lodging. Yet, precisely because he met the world so seldom in easy dialogue, he was unnecessarily dogmatic in controversy ; and many a pottle of wine went to pay for lost wagers. But he had made up his mind to be not an actor but an onlooker and eritic in the battle of life; and, when Wieland, whom he met on one of his excursions, suggested doubts as to the wisdom of his choice, Schopenhauer replied, 'Life is a ticklish business ; I have resolved to spend it in reflecting upon it."

After two years at Gdttingen, he took two years at Berlin, where the university had been founded only four years before. Here also he dipped

into divers stores of learning, notably classics under Wolf. In philosophy he heard Fichte and Schleiermacher. Between 1811 and 1813 the lectures of Fichte (subsequently published from his notes in his Wachgelassene Werke) dealt with what he called the "facts of consciousness" and the "theory of science," and struggled to present his final conception of philosophy. These lectures Schopenhauer attended,—at first, it is allowed, with interest, but afterwards with a spirit of opposition which is said to have degenerated into con- tempt, and which in after years never permitted him to re- fer to Fichte without contumely. Yet the words Schopen-

hauer then listened to, often with baffled curiosity, certainly helped to give direction to the current of his speculation.

Schopenhauer did not find the city of intellect at all to

his mind, and was lonely and unhappy. One of his inter-

ests was to visit the hospital La Charité and study the evidence it afforded of the interdependence of the moral and the physical in man. In the early days of 1813 sym- pathy with the national enthusiasm against the French carried him so far as to buy a set of arms; but he stopped short of volunteering for active service, reflecting that Napoleon gave after all only concentrated and untram- melled utterance to that self-assertion and lust for more life which weaker mortals feel but must perforce disguise. Leaving the nation and its statesmen to fight out their freedom, he hurried away to Weimar, and thence to the quiet Thuringian town of Rudolstadt, where in the inn Zum Ritter, out of sight of soldier and sound of drum, he wrote, helped by books from the Weimar library, his essay for the degree of doctor in philosophy. On the 2d of October 1813 he received his diploma from Jena; and in the same year from the press at Rudolstadt there was published—without winning notice or readers—his first book, under the title Ueber die vierfache Wurzel des Satzes Satz vom

vom zureichenden Grunde, in 148 pages 8vo. sa enden Schopenhauer's monograph On the Fourfold Root of the Prin- Grunde. ciple of Sufficient Reason urged that, in discussing the principle of necessary connexion, philosophers had failed to distinguish betwecn

XXI. — 57

Rupture with his mother.

450

reason as ground of belief and reason as cause of a fact. The prin- ciple gives expression to the law that nothing Singular and uncon- nected can be an object for us but only as forming part in a system. This law has four main roots, according to the four classes of objects, in cach of which a special form of connexion prevails. These

objects are—(1) real objects of perception, where the relation of

cause aud effect requires each state to be dependent on its ante- cedent ; (2) propositions, which are tied together as premiscs and conclusions ; (3) the formal conditions of perception, viz., space and time, where cach part is intuitively seen to be in reciprocal depend- ence on every other; (4) voluntary agents, where the law of motiva- tion prescribes the dependence of action upon the idea of an object presented to the character of the agent.1 Modifying the Kantian theory, that things are mental projections, he emphasizes the intel-

lectual operation which elevates sensation to perception. The feelin g

of alteration in an organ is taken by the intellect, whose one category is causality, to refer to a real, ¢.¢., material object which generatcs the change in our body. But the reference is an intuitive interpretation of a felt modification in the organism. Hence the

important place assigned to the human body: it is the first of

objects, the ‘immediate object,” the means by which all other objects come within consciousness. external perceptions, the body further serves as an instrument for separating phantasm from fact. To detect and scare away hallucina- tion we have only to realize the presence of our bodies. with motives Schopenhauer touches upon the relation between volition and cognition. The ego—which is the subject that knows —is a mere correlative

to the known object: object perceived and subject perceiving are not two things, but one, perpetually dividing

itself into two poles; and what are called the several faculties of

*the ego are only an inference or a reflex from the several classes of mental object. The "I" in 'I know" is already the implication and virtual presence of knowledge. But the "I will" is a new fact,—the revelation of another aspect of the world, the first fact of inner and real existence. In this perception there is given us the unity of the volitional self with the knowing subject; and this identity of the '*I" who "will" with the "I" who "know" is in Schopenhauer's words the miracle par excellence (das Wunder kar' efox7v, § 43).*

In November 1813 Schopenhauer returned to Weimar, and for a few months boarded with his mother. But the strain of daily association was too much for their antagon- istic natures. The mother felt herself génée in the pre- sence of a disputatious and gloomy son; she missed the ease of her emancipated life; and her friends found their movements watched by a suspicious eye, which was ready to surmise evil in the open and light- hearted style of housekeeping. In short, his splenetic temper and her volatility culminated in an open rupture in May 1814. From that time till her death in 1838 Schopenhauer never saw his mother again. It was during these few months at Weimar, however, that he made some acquaintances de- stined to influence the subsequent course of his thought. Conversations with the Orientalist F. Mayer directed his studies to the philosophical speculations of ancient India. In 1808 Friedrich Schlegel had in his Language and Wis- dom of the Old Hindus brought Brahmanical philosophy within the range of European literature. Still more in- structive for Schopenhauer was the imperfect and obscure Latin translation of the Upanishads which in 1801-2 Anquetil Duperron had published from a Persian version of the Sanskrit original. Another friendship of the same period had more palpable immediate effect but not so per- manent. This was with Goethe, who succeeded in securing his interest for those investigations on colours on which he was himself engaged. Schopenhauer took up the subject in earnest, and the result of his reflexions (and a few ele- mentary observations) soon after appeared (Easter 1816) as a monograph, Ueber

das Sehen und die Farben. The essay, which must be treated as an episode or digression from the direct path of Schopenhauer's development, due to the potent deflecting force of Goethe, was written at Dresden, to which he had transferred his abode after the

1 This classification Schopenhauer subsequently modified,—substitnt- ing for the first and fourth a graduated scale rising from cause proper (in inorganic nature) to stimulus (in vegetative life) and motive (in

the animal world), the last again being either intuitive motive, as in the lower animals, or rational motive, as in man.

As a perpetual correlative of

In dealing

SCHOPEHENEA2U

rupture with his mother. It had been sent in MS. to Goethe in the autumn of 1815, who, finding in it a trans. formation rather than an expansion of his own ideas, in- clined to regard the author as an opponent rather than an adherent.

The pamphlet begins by re-stating with reference to sight the Essay on general theory that perception of an objective world rests upon an Sight instinctive causal postulation, which even when it misleads still and remains to haunt us (instead of being, like errors of reason, open Colours, to extirpation by evidence), and proceeds to deal with physiological colour, 7.e., with colours as felt (not perceived) modifications of the action of the retina. First of all, the distinction of white and black, with their mean point in grey, is referred to the activity or inactivity of the total retina in the graduated presence or absence of full light. Further, the eye is endowed with polarity, by which its activity is divided into two parts qualitatively dis- tinct. It is this circumstance which gives rise to the phenomenon of colour. All colours are complementary, or go in pairs; each pair makes up the whole activity of the retina, and so is equivalent to white ; and the two partial activities are so connected that when the first is cxhausted the other spontaneously succeeds. Such pairs of colour may be regarded as infinite in

number; but there are three pairs which stand out prominently, and admit of casy expres- sion for the ratio in which each contributes to the total action. These are red and green (each=}), orange and blue (2:1), and yellow and violet (3:1).2 This theory of complementary colours as due to the polarity in the qualitative action of the retina is followed by some criticism of Newton and the seven colours, by an attempt to explain some facts noted by Goethe, and by some reference to the external stimuli which cause colour.

The grand interest of his life at Dresden was the com- position of a work which should give expression in all its aspects to the idea of man's nature and destiny which had been gradually forming within him. Without cutting himself altogether either from social pleasures or from art, he read and took notes with regularity. More and more he learned from Cabanis and Helvetius to see in the will and the passions the determinants of intellectual life, and in the character and the temper the source of theories and beliefs. The conviction was borne in upon him that scien- tific explanation could never do more than systematize and classify the mass of appearances which to our habit-blinded eyes seem to be the reality. To get at this reality and thus to reach a standpoint higher than that of etiology was the problem of his as of all philosophy. It is only by such a tower of speculation that an escape is possible from the spectre of materialism, theoretical and practical; and so, says Schopenhauer, "the just and good must all have this creed: I believe in a metaphysic." The mere reasonings of theoretical science leave no room for art, and practical prudence usurps the place of morality. The higher life of esthetic and ethical activity—the beautiful and the good —can only be based upon an intuition which penetrates the heart of reality. Towards the spring of 1818 the work was nearing its end, and Brockhaus of Leipsic had agreed to publish it and pay the author one ducat for every sheet of printed matter. But, as the press loitered, Schopen- hauer, suspecting treachery, wrote so rudely and haughtily to the publisher that the latter broke off correspondence with his client. In the end of 1818, however, the book Welt als appeared (with the date 1819), in 725 pages 8vo, with the Wie

title Die Welt als Wille und Vorstellung, in four books, aan

with an appendix containing a criticism of the Kantian

philosophy. : The first book of The World as Will and Idea resumes the argu- Book i.

ment of the earlier work, that all objects are constituted by intel-

lectual relations, describable as forms of the causal principle. As

So apprehending a world of objects, man is said to possess in-

telligence (Verstand), the perception of individual sequences and

coexistences. It is a faculty he sharcs with the animals, and by its

means the world presents itself as an endless number of objects in

space and time bound together by necessary laws of causality. But

man has also the power of reason (Vernunft), by which he generalizes,

the vehicle of this generalization being language. By mcans of

2 Tn this doctrine, so far as the facts go, Schopenhauer is indebted to a paper by R. Waring Darwin in vol. Ixxvi. of the Transactions of the Philosophical Society.

seHnerrHN HA UE R

language and reasoning he rises out of the animal immersion in the present and is able to anticipate the future. He forms general ideas and thus can preserve and communicate abstract knowledge. But reason, though its "laws of thought" have a formal truth of their own, has no independent value either as theoretical or as practical. In the former aspect it gives rise to scientific knowledge —the knowledge of facts and sequences not in their single occur- rences but as instances of a general law. By means of the general truths thus arrived at we can deduce or prove. But a proof is, after all, only a means of showing the disputatious that something which they deny is inseparably bound up with something they admit. It is a mistake, therefore to substitute for the ocular demonstration of which geometry is susceptible a syllogistic reasoning which may compel assent but cannot

inspire insight. Singular experiences are the true workers which support the luxury of general ideas, and reasoning cannot claim to be more than a re-arrangement of pro- ducts from other fields.

Reason is equally important and equally limited as a factor in conduct. It enables us, as it were, to lead a second life, guided by general principles and not by single appetitions. Such a life is what is called a life according to reason, typified in the ideal of the Stoic sage. The wise man carries out the items of conduct accord- ing to a general plan and is superior to the impulses of the moment. But here too the general rests upon the particular ; a systematic happiness takes the place of single and conflicting pleasures, but still can only justify itself by procuring pleasure. Thus, unless there be a new perception of life's meaning, rcasoning cannot make a man virtuous, it can only make him prudent ; it tclls him how to reckon with his natural character, but it cannot show him how to amend it.

Book ii. is an attempt to name that residual reality which is pre- supposed but not explained in every scientific explanation, whether setiological or morphological. The key is found im the conscious- ness of ourselves as exerting will. What to the inner conscious- ness is volition is to the outer perception a bodily movement. And as each act of volition is perceived in a bodily motion, so will as a whole is by us perceived as body. This consciousness that my body is my will objectified—my will translated into terms of scien- tific apprehension—is the " philosophical truth " of truths. And, generalizing this truth, we conclude that, as our eorporeal frame is the visibility of our mode of will, so everything is some grade in the objectification of the will. While the etiology of science accounts for the familiar complex by a simpler and more abstract phase, philosophy uses the clearer and more conspicuous instance to explain the more rudimentary. The law of motivation is taken as a key to open the incomprehensibility of mere causation, and in the stone we presume a feeble analogue of what we know as will. The will as such, apart from its objectification in animals, knows nothing of motives, which, though they explain the special circum- stances, presuppose the underlying and originative force. No doubt a false idea of simplicity has often led theorists to reduce all sciences in the last resort to applied mathematics, in which the mysterious something called force was eliminated and only the forms of space and time and motion left.

But, though it is doubtless possible to reduce the list of original forces, we cannot get rid of an inexplic- able activity. Hence the original force or will is beyond the range of causality ; every cause is only an "occasional cause," and but states the temporal conditions of operation of the eternal energy. While each several act has an aim, the collective will has none.

The numerical differences of objects do not touch the underlying activity. It is felt in one oak as much as in a million, for time and space are only semblance for (animal) intelligence. And there- fore, instead of wondering at the uniformity pervading the in- stances of any objectification of will, we should remember that the will-force operating in all is the same, and reveals its inner identity in the common law. For the same reason the adaptations of the parts of an organic body or of one organie body to another are only the consequences of the unity of will. Just as the series of actions throughout a life are only the utterances of one original character, and so intrinsically interdependent, so the grades of objectification in nature are the expression of one identical will, which forms the conditions of existence as well as the living creatures accommodating themsclves to them. Will, which appears in its lowest grade of objectification as the physical forces of inorganic nature, rises in the vegetative world to a peculiar sympathetic response to the stimulation by external circumstances, and in the animal world produces for itself a special organ, the brain, which possesses the power of presenting under the forms of sense and in- tellect that objective manifestation of will which we call the world of our experience. With the existence of the animal brain, the world emerged into time and space. It was a step necessitated by the growing complexity of type in the will-products, which could neither exist nor preserve their kind without this new instrument which substituted conscious adaptation for unconscious teleology. In this strange mythology by which Schopenhauer replaces the mystery of creation we see the magic world of will, weaving ever higher complexities of material existence, brought at length by

stress of circumstances to forge a material organ which shows the sense-world as the objectification of the will. In this one material organ the will has come to see itself expanded into a complicated order of time and place.

But at first the brain and its function, knowledge, are solely employed in the service of the will.

Book iti. shows how the intellect is emancipated from this bond- Book tii. age to the will. When we contemplate an object simply for its own sake, forgetting everything and ourselves even in the vision, then what we have before us is no longer one thing among many but a type, not one of a class but an ultimate individuality, not a par- ticular but an adequate embodiment of the universal. Instead of the general concept or class-notion we have the Platonic 'idea "— one image into which all the essential life of the object has been concentrated. To realize this individual which has not entered into the bonds of individuation, this universal which is not a mere genus but the eternal truth of the individual, is the province of genius. The man of genius, neglecting the search for relationships between things—unpractical and to practical judgment sometimes seeming to have a touch of maduess—instead of seeking to classify a thing or find out what it is for, looks at it for its own sake and sees the one type or ideal which is seeking for expression in its various and contingent manifestations. Such genius begets art. Yet so much at least of genius is in all men that they can follow where the artist leads and see through his eyes. Everything as thus contemplated disinterestedly for its own sake and in its per- manent significance is beautiful. Yet one thing is more beautiful than another. For there are objects which more than others facili- tate the quiescence of desire and present to us their permanent character without suggesting or stimulating appetite. The sense of sight is more independent than others of associations of desire, the past and distant purer from self-interest than the present. Those objects are specially beautiful where the significant idea is most clearly presented in the individual form. Indeed, when a certain effort is required to keep out of sight the general bearing of the object on the will, then the object, where the perception of genius still sees the perfect type in the single form, is called sublime.

The several arts fall naturally into an order which rises from the passive enjoyment in the contemplation of inorganic forces to the active perception of will in its most complex types. Architecture seeks in works dedicated to human use to give expression to the fundamental features of physical force, e.g., cohesion, weight, &c., and to that end it intensifies the appearance of

strain by refusing the forces an easy and immediate lapse into their natural tendency. In short, it seeks to show resistance visible. Sculpture presents the beauty and grace of the human form, 7.¢., the 'idea " of that form as a whole and in the single movements. Here the "idea" is not derived by comparison and abstraction of obscrved forms ; but we, as ourselves the will seeking manifestation, anticipate by our ideal the meaning of the imperfect phases and lay down an a priort eanon of beauty. While sculpture gives expression to the more generic type in figure and motion, painting aims at repre- senting action. But even historical pictures scek in a given scene to present not the historical importance of the action but its per- manent meaning. Poetry, which uses an arrangement of general concepts to convey an "idea," or moulds reality out of abstractions, gives us the central and abiding truth which history usually dis- sipates in a host of particulars and relations. In lyric poetry the individual subject of will presents himself as the subject of artistic perception: his own experience is displayed as typical and universal. In tragedy the truth shown is the inner conflict at the very root of the will. The hero is exhibited as brought to see the aimlessness of all will; and by suffering he learns resignation. Music, unlike the other arts, is an image of the movement of will not yet ob- jectified ; and in its elements and harmonies we have a parallel to the stages and complexities of the actual world. Hence the ex- planation of music would be a philosophy of the worlds

But art, though it affords an interval of rest from the drudgery Book iv. of will-service, cannot claim to be more than a transient consola- tion. Book iv. indicates a surer way of release. It reminds us that our life is the phenomenon of the will,—a phenomenon which begins at birth and ends at death, and of which every instant is a partial birth and a partial death. But the cessation of the indi- vidual life is not an annihilation of the will ; our essential being is indestructible. The manifestation of the will in human Hie is spread out and disposed in an endless multitude of actions. Ex- perience sums up these in a single formula,—the maxim of our empirical character ; and that result itself is the type or idea which reveals the one unalterable utterance of will, which is the intel- ligible character! It is this immemorial act which fixes our empirical character, which gives the consistency and regularity of our acts. Velle non discitwr. Character is given (by an ante- phenomenal act) ; it is not acquired. If in one sense we can speak of an

“acquired character,” we mean thereby that we now under- stand what manner of men we are, that we have learned the best and worst of ourselves. But, though the character is given once

NN.

1 The terms are borrowed from Kant,

Visit to Ttaly.

452

for all in the beginning, knowledge is not useless. We can learn to adopt new means though the end of will remains unaltered. It is this new knowledge which causes repentance, when we see we have adopted undue methods to attain our aim. The survey of the phenomena of life in the light of their principle shows that all life is a ceaseless battle for existence between individuals, that happi- ness is only negative, viz., a relief from pain, that life is a tragedy. But the natural man, immersed in the sense of life, plays the egoist as if he were the centre of existence and the will to life spoke in him alone. In such a spirit he not merely acts as if affirming his own will to life, but as if he denied that of others. He com- mits injustiee. The sense of wrong-doing, he may feel, is the wit- ness of consciousness to the identity between himself and others ; it is the appearance of moral law and gives rise to that sense of right which is the beginning of ethics. But for the most part practical reflexions note only the evils caused by egoisin, and induce the suffercrs to form a law to produce by repression the same results as morality attains by stimulation. Thus penal law, as opposed to moral law, aims only at checking intrusions upon the rights of others, and the whole political organization is only an instrument for checking cgoism by egoism, for making each seek the welfare of all because it includes his own. Its justice is temporal ; it adds an additional pain by legislative machinery, with aview to the welfare of the greater number.

But there is another and an eternal justice. Here there is no separation of time and place between the wrongdoer and the sufferer. This eternal justice reveals itself to him who, having seen through “the veil of Maya,” has found that in the world of truth the divisions between individuals fall away,

and that he who does wrong to another has done the wrong to his own self. The persuasion of this doctrine of eternal justice is so ingrained in human nature that we welcome the punishment that overtakes the victorious evildocr. Similar lessons are hidden in the myths of transmigration of souls. The secret sense that the pains of others are in reality not alien constitutes the torments of remorse which visit the wicked. The good man, on the contrary, who has been brought to sec through the veil of individuality into the unity of all being, will not merely practise justice, —he will be animated by a universal benevolence. Instead of ows or the blind lust of life (seen at its strongest in sexual appetite), he has learned, by means of self-knowledge, that dyar% which is pitying love, or caritas generts humant.

Such benevolence only alleviates the misery of others. It culmi- nates in self-sacrifice, which is carried out by voluntary and com- plete chastity, by utter poverty, by mortification, by fasting, and last of all by death. Such a course of life, however, is seldom taught by instruction alone, and the broken will generally comes only where a mighty shock of grief reveals the inevitable pain of existence and brings a quietive to the lust of life. Yet the victory over the will to life is not attained once for all; the supremacy must he retained by a career of asceticism. Such ascetics, in whom the will to life was deadened and the body remained as a mere empty semblance, were the saints and mystical devotees of all ages. They had crucified the ficsh with its affections and lusts. Their will had been emancipated from the bondage to which in life it was subject, had been released from the objectification in corporeity and restored to its original infinity. In such saints alone has the essen- tial freedom of the will appeared on the temporal scene, but appeared only to destroy the old Adam and bring in the new birth. By the lively knowledge of the truth of things the will has denied itself, has passed into a stage where the objective world is as if it were not,—the stage which was when will as yet had not gone forth to objectify itself in a world and when knowledge had not yet mirrored the reality in an idea, when, in short, nothing was.

Long before the work had come to-the hands of the public, Schopenhauer had rushed off to Italy and ex- changed the labours of giving the gospel of renunciation a metaphysical basis for the gaiety of southern life and the influences of classic art. At Venice, where he first lingered for a while, he

found himself a fellow-denizen with Lord Byron; but, except for a solitary chance when his jealousy was stirred by the outspoken admiration of his fair Venetian companion for the handsome Briton who rode past them on the Lido, the two insurgent apostles of the Weltschmerz never came across each other's path. At Rome, where he passed the depth of winter, he saw the first copies of his book. It found him in assiduous attend- ance on the art galleries, the opera, and theatre,—turning from the uncongenial companionship of his romantic coun- trymen and gladly seizing every chance of conversing in English with Englishmen. In March 1819 he had gone as far as Naples and Pestum. On his way homewards

SCH OP PD.) 270.

he was startled by receiving at Milan a letter from his sister announcing that in consequence of the failure of the Dantzic house a large part of his own and his mother's and nearly the whole of his sister's fortune were endangered. This change of circumstances was a heavy blow to the ladies, and he himself was almost induced by the mischance to qualify himself to teach in the university at Heidelberg in July 1819. But he sternly refused the compromise of seventy per cent. offered by the insolvent firm, and was so angrily suspicious with his sister who accepted it that he ceased to correspond with her for about fourteen years. Fortunately his determined and skilful assertion of his rights was crowned, after a long dispute, with success. He recovered the whole debt, receiving in principal and interest the sum of 9400 thalers.

After some stay at Dresden, hesitating between fixing Appoint. himself as university teacher at Gottingen, Heidelberg, ment at

or Berlin, he finally chose the last-mentioned. In his ex- amination before the faculty (disputatio pro venia legendi) he enjoyed what he reckoned the satisfaction of catching up Hegel (who had just been appointed professor) in a lax use of a technical term ("animal" for "organic" functions). And in his first and only course of lectures he had the further satisfaction of selecting as his hours the same times (12 to 1 on Monday, Wednesday, and Friday) as Hegel had taken for his principal class. This course on the first principles of philosophy or knowledge in general, given in the summer of 1820, was not a success,—indeed did not reach its natural end, and, though

the notice of lecture was repeated during his stay in Berlin up to 1831, the lecture- room knew him no more. Brilliant as he was in powers of luminous illustration and characteristic as is his style, he was wanting in the patient exposition of a subject for its own sake and not as the field for exemplifying a favourite thesis. The result of his experiences in 1820-21, which he attributed to Hegelian intrigues, was to intensify his suspicions of his colleagues, one of whom, F. E. Beneke (another alleged victim to Hegel's jealousies), he accused of garbled quotations in his review of The World as Will and Idea. Except for some attention to physiology, the first two years at Berlin were wasted. In May 1822 he set out by way of Switzerland for Italy. After spending the winter at Florence and Rome, he left in the spring of 1823 for Munich, where he stayed for nearly a year, the prey of illness and isolation. When at the end of this wretched time he left for Gastein, in May 1824, he had almost en- tirely lost the hearing of his right ear. Dresden, which he reached in August, no longer presented the same hospitable aspect as of old, and he was reluctantly drawn onwards to Berlin in May 1825. ~

The place had unpleasant associations of many kinds, but one disagreeable incident of his former stay now re- turned to him in a judicial award of pains and penalties. One day, about a year after his first settlement in Berlin, on 12th August 1821, on returning to his lodging he found three women standing in the passage in front of his room door. The event had annoyed him before, and his land- lady had promised it should not occur again. On this occasion accordingly Schopenhauer ordered them out of what he held to be his own "stair-head," walked into his room, and emerged in a few minutes with hat and stick as he had entered. One of the women was still on the spot, —a semptress, forty-seven years old, a friend of the land- lady, and occupant of a small chamber adjacent to that of Schopenhauer. This person he ejected; and when she returned to pick up a piece of cloth (there stood a chest of drawers belonging to her in the passage) he put her forcibly out again, upon which she fell with a shriek that alarmed the house. Next day she lodged an action against him for personal injuries ; and, after a variety of opposing deci-

sions, the final issue was in 1826 to award the complainant compensation (with five-sixths of costs and a small sum for medical expenses) to the amount of a quarterly aliment of fifteen thalers, which sum she received till her death, fifteen years afterwards.

The six years (1825-31) at Berlin were a dismal period in the life of Schopenhauer. In vain did he watch for any sign of recognition of his philosophic genius. Hegelianism reigned in the schools and in literature and basked in the sunshine of authority. It was a bad time for an independent thinker who ignored the state and the yearlong alliance between philosophy and theology. Thus driven back upon himself, Schopenhauer fell into morbid medita- tions, and the world which he saw, if it was stripped naked of its disguises, lost its proportions in the distorting light. The sexual passion had a strong attraction for him at all times, and, according to his biographers, the notes he set down in English, when he was turned thirty, on marriage and kindred topics are unfit for publication. He had in opening manhood been so fascinated by a Weimar actress that he declared he would take her to his home though he found her breaking stones on the roadside. Later years had nipped the freshness of his enthusiasm, and casual experiences generated an overweening misogyny, which, while allowing woman her place in the natural economy, regarded the /ady as the invention of a false civilization. Yet in the loneliness of life at Berlin the idea of a wife as the comfort of gathering age sometimes rose before his mind,—only to be driven away by cautious hesitations as to the capacity of his means, and by the shrinking from the loss of familiar liberties. He continued his bachelordom, and found consolation in less onerous associations. At home he tuned his flute; he dined, and it might be conversed, with his fellow-guests at the Hotel de Russie ; he read for hours at the royal library, and gave his evenings to the theatres. But he wrote nothing material. In 1828 he made inquiries about a chair at Heidelberg ; and in 1830 he got a shortened Latin version of his physio- logical theory of colours inserted in the third volume of the Scriptores Ophthalmologict Minores (edited by Radius).

Another pathway to reputation was suggested by some remarks he saw in the seventh number of the Lorewgn Review, in an article on Damiron's French Philosophy in the 19th Century. With reference to some statements in the article on the importance of Kant, he sent in very fair English a letter

to the writer, offering to translate Kant's principal works into English. He named his wages and enclosed a specimen of his work. His corre- spondent, Francis Haywood, made a counter-proposal which so disgusted Schopenhauer that he addressed his next letter to the publishers of the review. When they again referred him to Haywood, he applied to Thomas Campbell, then chairman of a company formed for buy- ing up the copyright of meritorious but rejected works. Nothing came of this application.' A translation of selec- tions from the works of Balthazar Gracian, which was published by Frauenst&dt in 1862, seems to have been made about this time.?

In the summer of 1831 cholera raged at Berlin, and Schopenhauer fled to Frankfort. About a year later he adjourned to Mannheim. But after eleven months' ex- perience of the latter he decided, from a carefully weighed list of comparative advantages, in favour of Frankfort. And there, accordingly, for the rest: of his life he remained. He resumed correspondence with his sister, who was liv- ing with her mother in straitened circumstances at Bonn. "SS pei ieee eaaada aaa Ee

1 [Tt was not till 1841 that a translation of Kant's Kritik in English appeared.

2 He also projected a translation of Hume's Essays and wrote a preface for it. '

vulgar charlatans.

which during his subsequent career he his three predecessors Fichte, Schelling, but above all

At first the good people of Frankfort knew him, not as the celebrated philosopher, but as the son of the famous Johanna Schopenhauer,? and as the companion of a familiar poodle. The day had not yet risen when, as he had pro- phesied to his mother (who joked at his book on " four- fold root" as smelling of the apothecary), his works would be read of all, and hers only be used by the grocer to wrap his goods in. The sense of unappreciated

work, aggravated by ill health and by pecuniary worry about his Dantzic property, sank deep into a heart that was yearn- ing for outward recognition. He seemed to see around him none but enemies, a world mainly filled with knaves and fools, where a true man was rarer than an honest woman, and where the very touch of society was so perilous that irony and reserve were imposed on every one who re- tained his self-respect. In solitude he devoured his own soul. At the hotel table a stranger might occasionally be drawn into listening to his vigorous monologue; but it

was seldom he was thus encouraged to discourse. Ground- less fears of hidden dangers made him see himself and

every other independent genius the aim of a conspiracy of He would never entrust his neck to the barber's hand; and he succeeded in secreting his valuables so thoroughly that some of them were after his death recovered only after much search.

Ever since the publication of The World as Wall and

Idea he had silently waited for some response to his message. charged to utter.

He had uttered the word he felt himself As the years passed he noted down every confirmation he found of his own opinions in the

writings of others, and every instance in which his views appeared to be illustrated by new researches. Full of the

conviction of his idea, he saw everything in the light of

it, and gave each apergu a place in his alphabetically arranged note-book. life may be called a commentary, an excursts, or a

Everything he published in later

scholium to his main book; and many of them are decidedly of the nature of commonplace books or collec- tanea of notes. But along with the

accumulation of his illustrative and corroborative materials grew the bitter-ness of heart which found its utterances neglected and other names the oracles of the reading world. The gathered ill-humour of many years, ageravated by the confident assurance of the Hegelians, found vent at length

in the introduction to his next book, where Hegel's works are described as three-quarters utter absurdity and one-

quarter mere paradox,—a specimen of the language in used to advert to

Hegel. This work, with its wild outcry against the philo- sophy of the professoriate, was entitled Ueber den Willen in der Natur, and was published in 1836.

The eight essays which go under the title of The Willin Nature Will in seek to show that his theory has the unique distinction of finding Nature. in physical science testimony to its metaphysical doctrines that will is the primary basis of all nature and intellect a derivative phenomenon. Often a trivial similarity of phrases serves to establish in his judgment an agreement of radical view. In the second essay he argues for the origin of animal organization from will, pointing out how in growing creatures the tendency to use an organ appears before the organ itself is formed, and maintaining that, instead of seeking the protoplasm of the animal kingdom in a mere lump of vitalized matter, to be moulded by external conditions, we should

8 Johanna Schopenhauer (1766-1838) was in her day an authoress ~ of some reputation. Besides editing the memoirs of Fernow, she published Votes on Travels in England, Scotland, and Southern France (1813-17); Johann van Eyck and his Successors (1823); three romances, Gabriele (1819-20), Die Tante (1828), and Sidonia (1828), besides some shorter tales. These novels teach the moral of renunciation (Entsagung). Her daughter Adele (1796-1849) seems to have had a brave, tender, and unsatisfied heart, and lavished on her brother an affection he sorely tried. She also was an authoress, publishing in 1844 a volume of Haus-, Wald-, und Feld-Méhrchen, full of quaint poetical conceits, and in 1845 Anna, a novel, in two vols.

look for it in the immemorial act of will which is the timeless origin of living beings. The third essay represents the intellect— or "the world as idea "— as having its origin in the narrow partition which in men and animals is interposed between the stimulation of a cause and the reaction which supervenes. From this realistic standpoint intellect seems an interloper in nature, an accident associated with the fortunes of man, and made victorious in the genius which can behold the world "'in maiden meditation, fancy- free." The fourth essay traces the grades of disproportion between cause and effect from inorganic to organic nature. Where there is causality there is will; but for us the more obviously the one shows itself the less is the other remarked. Another paper seeks to connect animal magnetism (mesmerism, hypnotism) and magic with the doctrine that in each of us the whole undivided will re- tains its miraculous potency.

In 1837 Schopenhauer sent to the committee entrusted with the execution of the proposed monument to Goethe at Frankfort a long and deliberate expression of his views, in general and particular, on the best mode of carrying out the design. But his fellow-citizens passed by the remarks of the mere writer of books. More weight was naturally attached to the opinion he had advocated in his early criticism of Kant as to the importance, if not the superiority, of the first edition of the Aritek ; in the col- lected issue of Kant's works by Rosenkranz and Schubert in 1838 that edition was put as the substantive text, with

supplementary exhibition of the differences of the second.

delusion. It is rcally a responsibility for our character, which we have gradually learned experimentally to know, and which go known serves as a court of appeal against single actions, or, in other words, becomes a conscience. That character is the supra- temporal action of that will which we and all things are. Thus this question of the freedom of the will, which is "a touchstone for distinguishing the profound from the superficial thinker," is solved by the Kantian distinction of empirical and transcendental world, In the words of Malebranche, "La liberté est un mystére,"

The essay on the foundation of morality is an attempt to present the fundamental fact of the moral consciousness and to. show its metaphysical bearings. It includes a lengthy criticism of Kant's system of ethics as only the old theological morality under a disguise of logical formule. Kant, according to his critic, though he struck a severe blow at eudemonism, made the mistake of founding ethics on ideas of obligation and respect, which are meaningless apart from a positive sanction. His categorical im- perative is attributed to reason,—a power which we only know as human, but which Kant regards as more than human and borrows from the "rational psychology," which itself had received it from theology. The moral spring should be a reality and a fact of nature, whereas Kant seeks it in the subtilties of general ideas, forgetting that reasoning is one thing and virtue another. And, when Kant has to illustrate the application of his rule for discover- ing the categorical imperative, he is forced to have recourse to con- siderations of self-interest.

After this examination, Schopenhauer preludes his exposition by the sceptical survey of so-called virtuous actions as due in the vast majority of instances to other than moral motives, and by a dis- integration of the average conscience into equal parts of fear of

Two In 1841 he published under the title Die becden Grund- | man, superstition, prejudice, vanity, and custom. The mainspring Main probleme der Ethik two essays which he had sent in a pie eenante ole ses a 5 se a apes YS Prob- . ⸮ : A atred or the malice which arises through egoistic conflicts. " Bu

lens of i Se sli EGU doch for de rizes offered. A The first ee though these are the predominant springs of conduct, there are Ethics, 1 answer to the question "Whether man's free will can | cases of unselfish kindness. It is in sympathy, or in our as it were

be proved from self-consciousness," proposed by the Nor- wegian Academy of Sciences at Drontheim. His essay was awarded the prize, and the author elected a member of the society. But proportionate to his exultation in this first recognition of his merit was the depth of his mortification and the height of his indignation at the result of the second competition. He had sent to the Danish Academy at Copenhagen in 1839 an essay "On the

Foundations of Morality" in answer to a vaguely worded subject of discussion to which they had invited candidates. His essay, though it was the only one in competition, was refused the prize on the grounds that he had failed to examine the chief problem (7.c., whether the basis of morality was to be sought in an intuitive idea of right), that his explanation was inadequate, and that he had been wanting in due respect to the swmmi philosophi of the age that was just passing. This last reason, while probably most effective with the judges, only stirred up more furiously the fury in Schopenhauer's breast, and his preface is one long fulmination against the ineptitudes and the charlatanry of his béte noire, Hegel.

In the essay on the freedom of the will Schopenhauer shows

that the deliverance of self-consciousness, "I can do what I will," is a mere statement of our physical freedom, or the sequence of

substituting ourselves for another who is in pain, that we find the impulse which gives an action a truly moral value. The influence of sympathy has two degrees: either it keeps me back from doing wrong to others, and in this sense leads to justice as a moral virtue (whereas civil justice prevents from suffering wrong) ; or sympathy may carry me on to positive kindness, to philanthropy or love of the human kind. It is on sympathy—the feeling of one identical nature under all the appearance of multiplicity—that the two car- dinal virtues of justice and benevolence are based. Schopenhauer notes especially that his principle extends to the relation between man and animals, and that a mistaken conception of human dignity has been allowed to hide the fundamental community of animal nature.

In 1844 appeared the second edition of The World as Will and Idea, in two volumes. The first volume was a slightly altered reprint of the earlier issue; the second consisted of a series of chapters forming a commentary parallel to those into which the original work was now first divided. The longest of these new chapters deal with the primacy of the will, with death, and with the meta- physics of sexual love. But, though only a small edition was struck off (500 copies of vol. i. and 750 of vol. ii.), the report of sales which Brockhaus rendered in 1846 was unfavourable, and the price had afterwards to be reduced.

Yet there were faint indications of coming Dawning

fame, and the eagerness with which each new tribute recog- from critic and admirer was welcomed is both touching a and amusing. From 1843 onwards a jurist named F. genius. Dorguth had trumpeted abroad Schopenhauer's name.

outward act upon inner resolve, in the absence of physical restraint. 'The statement of self-consciousness concerns the will merely a parte post, the question of freedom, on the contrary, a parte ante." Self-consciousness throws no light on the relation of volition to its anteccdents. If, on the other hand, we turn to the objects of the

outer senses, we find that it is part and parcel of their very nature to be not free but necessitated, governed, in short, by the principle of causation. But in the ascending scale of causation cause and effect become more and more heterogeneous, their connexion more unintelligible. This is seen in motivation, especially where the motives are not immediate perceptions but general abstract ideas. It is in the possibility of a conflict of motives that man's freedom of choice consists. But, because we can by a feat of abstraction keep an image of one course of action before us and neglect the other concrete conditions of behaviour, there grows up an illusion that the mere initial solicitation or velleity might, if we pleased, become actual will. Hence the delusion that we are free to will and not to will. Still the necessitating cause or motive is only the rule under which the real force or radical will operates. In this radical will consists our being, and on it action is consequent : operari sequitur esse. By our original character acting in certain circumstances of motive our actions are inevitably determined. But the sense of responsibility for our conduct is not altogether a

In 1844 a letter from a Darmstadt lawyer, Joh. August Becker, asking for explanation of some difficulties, began an intimate correspondence which went on for some time (and which was published by Becker's son in 1883). But the chief evangelist (so Schopenhauer styled his literary followers as distinct from the apostles who published not) was Frauenstidt, who made his personal acquaintance in 1846. It was Frauenstidt who succeeded in finding a publisher for the Parerga und Paralipomena, which appeared at

Berlin in 1851 (2 vols. pp. 465, 531). Yet for this bulky collection of essays, philosophical and others, Schopenhauer received as honorarium only ten free copies of the work. Soon afterwards, Dr E. O. Lindner, assistant editor of the Vossische Zeitung, began a series of Schopenhauerite articles. Amongst them may be reckoned

a translation by Mrs Lindner of an article by John Oxen- ford which appeared in the Westminster Review for April 1853, entitled "Iconoclasm in German Philosophy," being an outline of Schopenhauer's system. In 1854 Frauen- stidt's Letters on the Schopenhauerean Philosophy showed that the new doctrines were become a subject of discus- sion,—a state of things made still more obvious by the university of Leipsic offering a prize for the best exposi- tion and examination of the principles of Schopenhauer's system. Besides this, the response his ideas gave to popular needs and feelings was evinced by the numerous correspondents who sought his advice in their difficulties. And for the same reason new editions of his works were called for,—a second edition of his degree dissertation in 1847, of his Essay on Colours and of Phe Will in Nature in 1854, a third edition of The World as Will and Idea in 1859, and in 1860 a second edition of The Main Problems of Ethics.

of those ardent followers who find in his doctrine that religion of which they stand in need.

It is a religion which owns no connexion with theism His or pantheism. Unlike Spinoza and Hegel and the other religion.

leaders of modern speculation, Schopenhauer disdains the shelter of the old theology. His religion is cosmic and secular; it finds its saints in Buddhist and Christian monasticism, in Indian devotees and 19th-century "beau- tiful souls," and holds the one to be no nearer or more impressive as an example than the other. Of Judaism he has no good to say: its influence on Christianity has been pernicious. The new faith is a ministry of art and of high thinking, which may be rendered by all those who by plain living and

unselfish absorption in the great mean- ing and typal forms of the world have slain the root of bitterness that constantly seeks to spring up within them. It is far from being a worship of the blind force which lies at the back of phenomena: it is a "re-implication " of the

Conven- In these later years Schopenhauer had at length realized | individual into the absolute from which life has separated tional that peace which can be given in the world; he had | him. Each seeker after this reunion is himself (when he oe m become comparatively master of himself. His passions | has learnt wisdom by experience and self-restraint) the very and his had slackened their strain, and he was no longer the | being who has become all things ; and if the "cosmic will" | pessi- = victim of unavailing regrets. Asa youth he had known | may be termed God (an impossible identification) then he . none of those ties which give the individual an esprit de knows God more intimately than he knows anything else. vm, COMPS & Sense of community which he never quite loses. | And here if anywhere it may be said, "He serveth best

Wandering about from place to place throughout Europe, with no permanent home sweetened by the different phases of family affection, with no reminiscences of com- radeship in schoolboy days, with no sentiment of the dues of nationality, Schopenhauer is the fitter interpreter of that modern cosmopolitanism which disdains the more special ties of common life and mutual obligation as being obstacles to free development. In exaggerated self-con- sciousness, he looks down upon the common herd who live the life of convention and compromise, and puts the

who loveth best all things both great and small." Yet love in this creed is second to knowledge; the odz pro-

fanum vulgus of the misanthrope is heard from the soli-

tary's shrine, and instead of the service of humanity we have the contemplation of the eternal forms, and the ele- vation to that world where self ceases to be separated from other selves, and where, in the ultimate ecstasy of know- ledge, all things positive and definite disappear and there is a being which the sensuous soul of man fails to dis- tinguish from non-being.

supreme value on that higher intellectual life which leisure and means permit him to enjoy. A subtler egoism, which emancipates itself from the lusts and the duties of the world, takes the place of the vulgar self-seeking of the multitude and of the self-devotion of the patriot or

It is often said that a philosophic system cannot be Relation rightly understood without reference to the character and of the circumstances of the philosopher. The remark finds ample pees

ames 0 Oyo sopher application in the case of Schopenhauer. The conditions to pis

of his training, which brought him in contact with the system.

philanthropist. Tosuch a mind the friction of professional duties seems irksome: the bonds of matrimony and the duties incumbent on social membership are so many checks on freedom of thought and resolution. The indi- vidualist recognizes none of those minor morals and parochial or provincial duties which appropriate three- fourths of our conduct. In the wide universe he sees himself and others, none more akin to him than another, beings not bound by external ties, and united only in the fundamental sameness of their inner nature. To ordinary mortals, absorbed in "the trivial round, the common tasik," the links that bind individuals are forged by the petty ordinances and observances of society. But to those whom temper and circumstances have denied local and partial associationship, the craving for totality is so keen that it makes them seek their higher country in that far- off world (strangely called " intelligible ") where their per- sonality disappears in the one being of the universe. Thus wide is the antagonism between the eudzemonism of civilization, with aspirations towards perfecting our homes and bodies, so that in all things comfort may be established, and the pessimistic asceticism of Schopen- hauer, which sees the perfection of life not in the abun- dance of those things which we eat and drink and where- with we are clothed but in a deadening of passion, negation of the would-live-and-enjoy, and an existence in a calm ecstasy of beatific vision, of knowledge not abstract but lively intuition. It is this protest of Schopenhauer against the vanity of the aims prescribed by conventional civilization and enlightenment which has gained him some

realities of life before he learned the phrases of scholastic language, give to his words the stamp of self-seen truth and the clearness of original conviction. They explain at the same time the naiveté which set a high price on the products his own energies had turned out, and could not see that what was so original to himself might seem less unique to other judges. Pre-occupied with his own ideas, he chafed under the indifference of thinkers who had grown blasé in speculation and fancied himself persecuted by a conspiracy of professors of philosophy. It is not so easy to demonstrate the connexion between a man's life and doctrine. But it is at least plain that in the case of any philosopher, what makes him such is the faculty he has, more than other men, to get a clear idea of what he himself 's and does. More than others he leads a second life in the spirit or intellect alongside of his life in the flesh,— the life of knowledge beside the life of will. It is inevl-table that he should be especially struck by the points in which the sensible and temporal life comes in conflict with the intellectual and eternal. It was thus that Schopenhauer by his own experience saw in the primacy of the will the fundamental fact of his philosophy, and found in the en- grossing interests of the selfish éows the perennial hin- drances of the higher life. For his absolute individualism, which recognizes in the state, the church, the family only so many superficial and incidental provisions of human craft, the means of relief was absorption in the intellectual and purely ideal aims which prepare the way for the cessa- tion of temporal individuality altogether. But theory is one thing and practice another ; and he will often lay most

Habits of

life.

456 Ss C HOG

stress on the theory who is most conscious of defects in the practice. It need not therefore surprise us that the man who formulated the sum of virtue in justice and bene- volence was unable to be just to his own kinsfolk and reserved his compassion largely for the brutes, and that the delineator of asceticism was more than moderately sensible of the comforts and enjoyments of life.

Having renounced what he would call the superstitions of duty to country, to kindred, and to associates, except in so far as these duties were founded on contract (and that, according to him, all duties imply), it was natural that he should take steps to minimize that friction which he so easily excited, and which had induced his voluntary exile from the arena. His regular habits of life and care- ful regard to his own health remind us of the conduct of the bachelor Kant. He would rise between seven and eight both summer and winter, sponge himself, bathing his eyes carefully, sit down to coffee prepared by his own hands, and soon get to work. He wasa slow reader. The classics were old friends, always revisited with pleasure. He only read original works—the classics of pure literature—avoid- ing all books about books, and especially eschewed the more modern philosophers. Hume in English and Helvétius and Chamfort in French he found to his mind in their sceptical estimates of ordinary virtue. Mystical and ascetic writ- ings, from Buddhism and the Upanishads to Eckhart and the Deutsche Theologie, commended themselves by their in- sistence on the reality of the higher life. Their example of will-force drew his favourable notice to the phenomena of mesmerism, just as his sympathy with the lower brethren of man made him an interested observer of a young orang- outang shown at Frankfort in 1834. He was familiar with several literatures, English certainly not the least. The names of Shakespeare, Scott, Byron, Calderon, Petrarch, Dante, are frequent in his pages. What he read he tried to read in the original,—or anywhere but in a German trans- lation. Even the Old Testament he found more impress- ive in the Septuagint version than in Luther's rendering. The hour of noon brought cessation from his contempla- tions, and for half an hour he solaced himself on the flute. At one o'clock he sat down to dinner in his inn, and after dinner came home for an hour's siesta. After some light reading he went out for a stroll, alone, if possible country- wards, with cane in hand, cigar lit, and poodle following. Occasionally he would stop abruptly, turn round or look back, mutter something to himself, so as to leave on the passer-by the impression that he was either crack-brained orangry. Like Kant, he kept his lips closed on principle. His walk over, he retired to the reading-room and studied the Z'mes,—for he had been always somewhat of an Anglo- maniac, and had learnt this habit of English life from his father. In winter he would sometimes attend the opera.

N haw an

gave an exaggerated importance to trifles, which the sweep of business and customary duty clear away from the ordinary man's memory.

It was not till he was fifty years of age that he set up Person rooms and furniture of hisown. These abodes he changed details,

at Frankfort about four times, living latterly on the street which runs along the Main. On the mat in his chamber lay his poodle,—latterly a brown dog, which had succeeded the original white one, named Atma (the World- Soul), of which he had been especially fond. These dogs had more than once brought him into trouble with his landlord. In a corner of the room was placed a gilt statuette of Buddha, and on a table not far off lay Duperron's Latin translation of the Upanishads, which served as the prayer-book from which Schopenhauer read his devotions. On the desk stood a bust of Kant, and a few portraits hung on the walls. The philosopher's person. was under middle size, strongly built and broad-chested, with small hands. His voice was loud and clear; his eyes blue and somewhat wide apart ; the mouth full and sensuous, latterly becoming broad as his teeth gave way. The high brow and heavy under-jaw were the evidence of his contrasted nature of ample intellect and vigorous im- pulses. In youth he had light curly hair, whereas his beard in manhood was of a slightly reddish tint. He always dressed carefully as a gentleman, in black dress- coat and white necktie, and wore shoes. In his later years his portrait was taken more than once, and by several artists, and his bust was modelled somewhat to his own mind in 1859. Reproductions of these likenesses have made familiar his characteristic but unamiable features.

In 1854 Richard Wagner sent him a copy of the Ring of the Nibelung, with some words of thanks for a theory of music which had fallen in with his own conceptions. Three years later he received a visit from his old college friend Bunsen, who was then staying in Heidelberg. On his seventieth birthday congratulations flowed in from many quarters. In April 1860 he began to be affected by occasional difficulty in breathing and by palpitation of the heart. Another attack came on in autumn (9th September), and again a week later. On the evening of the 18th his friend and subsequent biographer, Dr Gwinner, sat with him and conversed. On the morning of the 21st

September he rose and sat down alone to breakfast ; shortly afterwards his doctor called and found him dead in his chair. By his will, made in 1852, with a codicil dated February 1859, his property, with the ex- ception of some small bequests, was devised to the above- mentioned institution at Berlin. Gwinner was named executor, and Frauenstidt was entrusted with the care of his manuscripts and other literary remains.

The philosophy of Schopenhauer, like almost every system of the Philo-

Between eight and nine he took supper, with a half-bottle of light wine (he avoided his country's beer), at a table by himself,

With his low estimate of the average human being, his

19th century, can hardly be understood without reference to the sophy ideas of Kant. Anterior to Kant the gradual advance of idealism from had been the most conspicuous feature in philosophic speculation. Kant to That the direct objects of knowledge, the realities of experience, Schopen- were after all only our ideas or perceptions was the lesson of every hauer.

sympathies were aristocratic. He left the bulk of his fortune to an institution at Berlin for the benefit of those who had suffered on the side of order during the revolu- tionary struggles of 1848-49. But in so doing it was not his sympathy with kings but his recognition of the merits of public security which gave the motive to his actions. With all his eulogy of voluntary poverty, he did not agree to being deprived of his property by the malice or cupidity of others, and fears of the loss of his means haunted him not less keenly than other imaginary terrors,—the fancied evils distracting him no less perhaps than would have done those domestic and civil obligations from which he endeavoured to hold himself free. The Nemesis of his social ldécheté fell upon him; and, like all solitaries, he

thinker from Descartes to Hume. And this doctrine was gencrally understood to mean that human thought, limited as it was by its own weakness and acquired habits, could hardly ae to cope suc- cessfully with the problem of apprehending the real things. The idealist position Kant scemed at first sight to retain with an even stronger foree than ever. But it is darkest just before the dawn ; and Kant, the Copernicus of philosophy, had

really altered the aspects of the doctrine of ideas. It was his purpose to show that the forms of thought (which he sought to isolate from the peculiarities incident to the organic body) were not merely customary means for licking into convenient shape the data of perception, but entered as underlying elements into the constitution of objects, making expericnee possible and determining the fundamental strue- ture of nature. In other words, the forms of knowledge were the main factor in making objects. By Kant, however, these forms are generally treated psychologically as the action of the several faculties of a mind. Behind thinking there is the thinker. But

SCH@ORWENAAUER

in his successors, from Fichte to Hegel, this axiom of the plain man is set aside as antiquated. Thought or conception without a sub- ject-agent appears as the principle,—thought or thinking in its universality without any individual substrata in which it is em- This is the step of advance which is required alike by Fichte when he asks his

bodied : 7 voety or véqots is to be substituted for vods.

reader to rise from the empirical ego to the ego which is subject- object (#. ¢., neither and both), and by Hegel when he tries to sub- stitute the Begriff or notion for the Vorstellwng or pictorial concep- tion. As spiritism asks us to accept such suspension of ordinary mechanics as permits human bodies to float through the air and

part without injury to their members, so the new philosophy of

Kant's immediate successors requires from the postulant for initia- tion willingness to reverse his customary beliefs in quasi-material subjects of thought.

But, besides removing the psychological slag which clung to Kant's ideas from their matrix and presenting reason as the active principle in the formation of a universe, his successors carried out with far more detail, and far more enthusiasm aud historical scope, his principle that in reason lay the a priort or the anticipation of the world, moral and physical. Not

content with the barren asser- tion that the understanding makes nature, and that we can construct science only on the hypothesis that there is reason in the world, they proceeded to show how the thing was actually done. But to do so they had first to brush away a stone of stumbling which Kant had left in the way. This was the thing as it is by itself and apart from our knowledge of it,—the something which we know, when and as we know it not. This somewhat is what Kant calls a limit-eoncept. It marks only that we fecl our knowledge to be inadequate, and for the reason that there may be another species of sensation than ours, that other beings may not be tied by the special laws of our constitution, and may apprehend, as Plato says, by the soul itself apart from the senses. But this limitation, say the successors of Kant, rests upon a misconception. The sense of inadequacy is only a condition of growing knowledge in a being subject to the laws of space and time; and the very feeling is a proof of its implicit removal. Look at reason not in its single temporal manifestations but in its eternal operation, and then this universal thought, which may be called God, as the sense-condi- tioned reason is called man, becomes the very breath and structure of the world. Thus in the true idea of things there is no irreduc- ible residuum of matter: mind is the Alpha and Omega, at once

| the initial postulate and the final truth of reality.

| In various ways a reaction arose against this absorption of every- thing in reason. In Fichie lumself the source of being is primeval activity, the groundless and incomprehensible deed-action (That- Handlung) of the absolute ego. The innermost character of that ego is an infinitude in act and effort. 'The will is the living principle of reason," he says again. "In the last resort," says Schelling (1809), in his Inquzries into the Nature of Human Freedom, 'there is no other being but will. Wollen ist Ursein (will is primal being); and to this alone apply the predicates fathomless, eternal, independent of time, self-aflirming." It is unnecessary to multiply instances to prove that idealism was never without a protest that there is a heart of existence, life, will, action, which is presupposed by all knowledge and is not itself amenable to ex- planation. We may, if we like, call this element, which is assumed as the basis of all scientific method, irrational,—will instead of reason, feeling rather than knowledge.

It is under the banner of this protest against rationalizing idealism that Schopenhauer advances. But what marks out his armament is its pronounced realism. He fights with the weapons of physical doctrine and on the basis of the material earth. He

| knows no reason but the human, no intelligence save what is ex- hibited by the animals. He knows that.both animals and men have come into existence within assignable limits of time, and that there was an anterior age when no eye or car gathered the life of the universe into perceptions. Knowledge, therefore, with its | yehicle, the intellect, is dependent upon the existence of certain | nerve-organs located in an animal system; and its function is originally only to present an image of the interconnexions of the manifestations external to the individual organism, and so to give to the individual ina partial and reflected form that feeling with other things, or innate sympathy, which it loses as organization becomes more complex and characteristic. Knowledge or intellect, therefore, is only the surrogate of that more intimate unity of feeling or will which is the underlying reality—the principle of all existence, the essence of all manifestations, inorganic and organic. And the perfection of reason is attained when man has transcended those limits of individuation in which his knowledge at first pre- sents him to himself, when by art he has risen from single objects to universal types, and by suffering and sacrifice has penetrated Schopen- to that innermost sanctuary where the euthanasia of consciousness

hauer is reached,—the blessedness of eternal repose. and Her- In substantials the theory of Schopenhauer may be compared bert with a more prosaic statement of Mr Herbert Spencer (modernizing

Spencer. Hume). All psychical states may, according to him, be treated as

A57

incidents of the correspondence between the organism and its en- vironment. In this adjustment the lowest stage is taken by reflex action and instinct, where the ehange of the organs is purely automatic. As the external complexity increases, this automatie regularity fails ; there is only an incipient excitation of the nerves. This feeble echo of the full response to stimulus is an idea, which is thus only another word for imperfect

*organization or adjustment. But gradually this imperfect correspondence is improved, and the idea passes over again into the state of unconscious or organic memory. Intellect, in short, is only the consequence of insufficient response between stimulus and action. Where action is entirely automatic, feeling does not exist. It is when the excitation is partial only, when it does not inevitably and immediately appear as action, that we have the appcarance of intellect in the gap. The chief and fundamental difference between Schopenhauer and Mr Spencer lies in the refusal of the latter to give this '"'adjustment is or 'automatic action" the name of will. Will according to Mr Spencer is only another aspect of what is reason, memory, or feel- ing,—the difference lying in the fact that as will the nascent ex- citation (ideal motion) is conceived as passing into complete or full motion. But he agrecs with Schopenhauer in basing conscious- ness, in all its forms of reason, feeling, or will, upon ** automatic movement,—psychical change," from which cousciousness emerges and in which it disappears.*

What Schopenhauer professed, therefore, is to have dispelled Main the claims of reason to priority and to demonstrate the relativity tenden- Science, he reminds us, is based on final ciesof his inexplicabilities ; and its attempts by theories of evolution to find system.

and limitation of science.

an historical origin for humanity in rudimentary matter show a misconception of the problem. In the successions of material states there can nowhere be an absolute first. The true origin of man, as of all else, is to be sought in an action which is everlasting and which is ever present: nec te quesiveris extra. There is a source of knowledge within us by which we know, and miore intimately than we can ever know anything extcrnal, that we will and _fecl. That is the first and the highest knowledge, the only knowledge that can strictly be called immediate ; and to ourselves we as the subject of will are truly the "immediate object." It is in this seuse of will—of will without motives, but not without conscious- ness of some sort—that reality is revealed. Analogy and experi- ence make us assume it to be omnipresent. It is a mistake to say will means for Schopeuhauer only force. It means a great deal more; and it is his contention that what the scientist calls force is really will. In so doing he is only following the line predicted

by Kant! and anticipated by Leibnitz. If we wish, said Kant, to give a real existence to the thing in itself or the noumenon we can only do so by investing it with the attributes found in our own

internal sense, viz., with thinking or something analogous thereto.

It is thus that Fechner in his "day-view " of things sees in plants and planets the same fundamental "soul"' as in us—that is, "one simple being which appears to none but itself, in us as elsewhere wherever it occurs self-luninous, dark for every other eye, at the least connecting sensations in itself, upon which, as the grade of soul mounts higher and higher, there is constructed the conscious- ness of higher and still higher relations."? It is thus that Lotze declares? that 'behind the tranquil surface of matter, behind its rigid and regular habits of behaviour, we are forced to seek the glow of a hidden spiritual activity." So Schopenhauer, but ina way all his own, finds the truth of things in a will which is indeed unaffected by conscious motives and yet cannot be separated from some faint analogue of non-intellectual consciousness.

In two ways Schopenhauer has influenced the world. He has shown with unusual lucidity of expression how feeble is the spon- taneity of that intellect which is so highly lauded, and_how over- powering the sway of original will in all our action. He thus re- asserted realism, whose gospel reads, "In the beginning was appetite, passion, will," and has discredited the doctrinaire belief that ideas have original force of their own. This creed of naturalism is dangerous, and it may be true that the pessimism it implies often degenerates into cynicism and a cold-blooded denial that there is any virtue and any truth. But in the crash of established creeds and the spread of political indifferentism and social disin- tegration it is probably wise, if not always agreeable, to lay bare the wounds under which humanity suffers, though pride would prompt their concealment. But Schopenhauer's theory has another side. If it is daringly realistic, it is no less audacious in its ideal- ism. The second aspect of his influence is the doctrine of redemp- tion of the soul from its sensual bonds, first by the medium of art and second by the path of renunciation and ascetic life. It may be difficult in each case to draw the line between social duty and individual perfection. But Schopenhauer reminds us that the welfare of society is a temporal and

subordinate aim, never to be allowed to dwarf the full realization of our ideal being. Man's duty is undoubtedly to join in the common service of sentient

1 Kritik (Trans. Anal.), bk. ii., Appendix. 2 Ueber die Seelenfrage, p. 9, Leipsic, 1861. 3 Mikrokosnvus, vol. i. p. 408 (2d ed.).

beings ; but his final goal is to rise above the toils and comforts of the visible creature into the vast bosom of a peaceful Nirvana. Bibliography.— The works of Schopenhauer were published after his death by J. Frauenstiidt in 6 volumes (Leipsic, 1874). Besides these, several papers and aphorisms appeared in 1834, Aus Schopenhauer's handschrifilichem Nachlass, by the same editor. The best biography of Schopenhauer is that by Gwinner ; second and much enlarged edition in 1878. See also Frauenstidt and Lindner, 'Arthur Schopenhauer ; von thm; tiber thn (1863) ; O. Busch, A. Schopenhawer (1878) ; K. Peters, Schopenhauer als Philosoph (1880), and Willenswelt und Welt- wille (1888) ; and Koeber, Schopenhauer's Erloswngslehre (1881). A list of works on Schopenhauer is given by Balan, Schopenhauer-Literatur (1880). See also

PESSIMISM. ,, (W. W.)

SCHROTER, Jonann Hirronymus (1745-1816), amateur astronomer, principally known by his physical observations of the moon and planets (see OBSERVATORY, under Lilienthal).

SCHUBERT, Franz Perer (1797-1828), composer of vocal and instrumental music, was born at Vienna 31st January 1797. For the foundation of his general educa- tion he was indebted to his father, a schoolmaster in the Leopoldstadt ; but the beauty of his voice attracted so much attention that in 1808 he was received into the choir of the imperial chapel, and during the five years which followed he was taught to sing and to play the violin in the choristers' school called the "Convict." No attempt seems to have been made to teach him com- position, but, through the kind intervention of an

older chorister, he was supplied with music-paper, and thence- forward he wrote incessantly, as his fancy dictated, with- out any help whatever, always carefully signing and dating his MSS., which extend back as far as 1810. When his voice broke in 1813 Schubert left the "Convict," and, to avoid the conscription, taught for three years in his father's school. This, however, in nowise damped his zeal for composition. Even at this early period his invention was inexhaustible and the rapidity of his pen almost in- credible. In 1815 he composed 2 symphonies, 5 operas, and no less than 137 songs (67 of which have been pub- lished), besides a multitude of other important pieces. Yet so little was his genius appreciated that when in 1816 he applied for an appointment at a Government music school, with a salary equal to about twenty guineas a year, he was rejected as "imperfectly qualified."

In 1818 Count Johann Eszterhazy secured the services of Schubert as resident teacher of music to his daughters, for one of whom the young composer has been supposed —on very insufficient authority—to have entertained a romantic, and of course utterly hopeless, affection. The appointment was of great importance to him, for he was poor, almost to starvation; yet it led to no permanent improvement in his prospects: in fact his life was one long bitter disappointment from beginning to end. He wrote on, year after year, producing music of indescribable beauty in such enormous quantities that but for the dated MSS. we should refuse to believe the accounts transmitted to us by his biographers. He wrote because, when his genius inspired him with an idea, he could not refrain. Yet he scarcely ever looked at his compositions after they were finished, and very rarely heard any of them performed. Very little of his dramatic music was given to the world. Two little operettas—Dre Zwillingsbriider and Die Zauberharfe —harely escaped failure in 1820; and the beautiful incidental music to Madame von Chezy's Rosamunde survived but two representations in 1823. Of his greater operas not one was placed upon the stage dur- ing his lifetime. With his songs he was more fortunate. Many of them were published, and their fresh bright melo- dies were irresistible. They were produced by hundreds, and with a rapidity bordering upon the miraculous. Among the MSS. seven or eight may be found dated on the same day; yet even in these he never repeated him- self : every one was the result of a new inspiration, com- mitted to paper at the moment of conception, laid aside immediately afterwards, and so completely forgotten that

he has been known to ask who was the composer of one of his own Lieder not very long after he had composed it. And this wonderful facility of production led to no un- worthy form of treatment. The original MS. of Hari, Hark, the Lark was written at a "'beer-garden," on the back of a bill of fare, the moment after the composer had read the words for the first time; and there are strong reasons for believing that Who zs Sylvia ?—one of the most perfectly finished songs on record—and Come, thou Monarch of the Vine, were produced on the same occasion. But the success of the songs did not make Schubert a prosperous man, All his life long he suffered from grind- ing poverty. Though he received an actual commission to write his greatest dramatic work, /erabras, for the court theatre at Vienna, it was rejected in 1824 for the weakness of its libretto. Once, and once only, a chance seemed open to him. He was accepted in 1826 as a candi- date for the vacant post of conductor to the court theatre, and requested to compose some music as a test of his powers. At the rehearsal the part he had designed for the prima donna was found too trying for her voice, and he was requested to alter it. "I will alter nothing," said Schubert ; and his refusal to listen to reason cost him the coveted appointment. .

Of Schubert's ten symphonies not one made its mark during his lifetime ; yet the stamp of genius is upon these as plainly as upon his songs. It is true that in works of large dimensions genius loses half its power if unsupported by learning ; and Schubert was not learned enough to turn his inspirations to the best account. His ideas came so quickly that the knowledge he possessed was not sufficient to enable him to arrange them in that perfect order which forms the chief charm of the symphonies of Mozart and Beethoven. And the same element of weakness is dis- cernible in his sonatas and other long pieces of chamber music. But these are all true works of genius, precious and imperishable.

It was not to be wondered at that under his heavy trials Schubert's health failed rapidly. After recovering from more than one serious attack of illness, he was seized with a sudden access of delirium while at supper on 13th October 1828; and on 19th November he died, leaving behind him a few clothes and other possessions, which were officially valued at sixty-three

Vienna florins (= £2, 10s.). His grave at the Ortsfriedhof, bought by the scanty savings of his brother Ferdinand, lies within a few feet of that of Beethoven.

Schubert's works, now (1886) in course of publication in a com- plete series by Messrs Breitkopf & Hartel of Leipsic, include 18 dramatic pieces, 8 sacred compositions, 10 symphonies, 24 piano- forte sonatas, a vast collection of songs, of which 457 are already

published, and a multitude of other works which are too numerous to mention.

SCHULTENS. 'Three Dutch Orientalists of this name have an honourable place among the scholars of the 18th century. The first and most important, ALBERT SCHULTENS (1686-1750), was born at Groningen in 1686. He studied for the church at Groningen and Leyden, applying him- self specially to Hebrew and the cognate tongues. His dissertation on The Use of Arabic in the Interpretation of Scripture (1706) indicates the point of view which pre- vailed with the school of Arabists of which he was founder, and which differentiates his aims from those of REIskE (g.v.). After a visit to Reland in Utrecht, he returned to Groningen (1708); then, having taken his degree in theology (1709), he again went to Leyden, and devoted himself to the study of the MS. collections there till in 1711 he became pastor at Wassenaer. Parochial work was little to his taste, and in 1713 he took the Hebrew chair at Franeker, which he held till 1729, when he was transferred to Leyden as rector of the collegium

theologicum, or seminary for poor students. From 1732 till his death (at Leyden on 26th January 1750) he was professor of Oriental languages at Leyden. Schultens was the chief Arabic teacher of his time, and in some sense a restorer of Arabic studies, but he differed from Reiske and De Sacy in mainly regarding Arabic as a handmaid to Hebrew, His chief work was to vindicate the value of comparative study of the Semitic tongues against those who, like Gousset, regarded Hebrew as a sacred tongue with which comparative philology has nothing to do. Schul- tens, on the other hand, certainly went much too far in his appeals to Arabic for the interpretation

of the Old Testa- ment ; the laws of comparative Semitic philology were not yet known, so that the comparison of roots was often guess- work, and the value of the exegetical tradition in Hebrew was not accurately determined. Hence he did not leave so much of permanent value for Hebrew grammar and lexico- graphy as might have been expected from his learning; but the systematic illustration of phrases and modes of thought from Arabic literature, ¢.g., in his Liber Jobs, has a higher value, which has been too much overlooked in the reaction against the extravagances of the school he founded.? Albert's son, JonN Jamus Scuunrens (1716-1778), became professor at Herborn in 1742, and afterwards suc- ceeded to his father's chair. He was in turn succeeded by his son, Henry ALBERT SCHULTENS (1749-1793), a man of great parts, who, however, left comparatively little behind him, having succumbed to excessive work while preparing an edition of Meidani, of which only a part

_ appeared posthumously (1795).

SCHULTZE, Max JoHann S1zeMUND (1825-1874), German microscopic anatomist, was born at Freiburg in Breisgau (Baden) on 25th March 1825. He studied at Greifswald and Berlin, and was appointed extraordinary professor at Halle in 1854 and five years later ordinary professor of anatomy and histology at Bonn. He died at Bonn 16th January 1874. His contributions to biology were numerous and varied. He founded and edited the important Archi fiir mikroskoptsche Anatomie, to which he contributed many papers, and advanced the subject generally, by refining on its technical methods. He also contributed to the knowledge of the Protozoa (see Foraminifera, Prorozoa). He will be longest remem- hered, however, by his reform of the cell theory. Uniting Dujardin's conception of animal sarcode with Von Mohl's of vegetable protoplasma, he pointed out clearly their identity, and included them under the common name of protoplasm. He thus reorganized the theory as established by Schwann, diminished the importance of the cell-wall and nucleus, and laid down the modern definition of the cell as "a nucleated mass of protoplasm with or without a cell-wall" (see PRoropLasm and Scawann). An obituary notice of Schultze is given in Arch. mikr. Anat., 1875.

SCHUMACHER, Hetnrich Curistian (17 80-1850), astronomer, born at Bramstedt in Holstein, 3d September 1780, was director of the Mannheim observatory from 1813 to 1815, and then became professor of astronomy in Copenhagen. From 1817 he directed the triangulation of Holstein, to which a few years later was added a com- plete geodetic survey of Denmark; the latter was left in- complete by Schumacher, but was finished after his death. For the sake of the survey an observatory was established at Altona (see OBsERVATORY) and Schumacher resided there permanently, chiefly occupied with the publication

1 A. Schultens's chief works are Origines Hebrew (2 vols., 1724, WSs) 2d ed., 1761, with the De defectibus lingue Hebreex (Ist ed., 1731) ; Com. on Job, 1737 ; Com. on Proverbs, 1748 ; Hebrew grammar (Insti- tutiones), 17387; Vetus et regia via Hebraizandi, 1738 5; Monwnenta vetustiora Arabum (1740—extracts from Nowairi, Masudi, &c.); ed. of Beha-ed-din's Life of Saladin ; his Opera Minora (1769) and a Sylloge Dissertationum (1772, 1775) appeared posthumously.

of Ephemerides (11 parts, 1822-32) and of the journal Astronomische Nachrichten, of which he lived to edit thirty- one volumes, and which still continues to be the principal astronomical journal. Schumacher died at Altona on 28th December 1850.

SCHUMANN, Rosert (1810-1856), musical critic and

composer, was born at Zwickau, Saxony, on &th June

1810. In deference to his mother's wish, he made a pre-

tence of studying for the law, until he had completed his twentieth year; but in reality he took so little pains to acquaint himself with the mysteries of jurisprudence and so much to master the technical difficulties of the piano-forte that when the day of examination drew near it was evident that he could not hope to pass with credit. His mother therefore wisely gave up her cherished project, and in the summer of 1830 permitted him to settle for a time in Leipsic that he might receive regular instruction from Friedrich

Wieck, the most accomplished and success- ful teacher of the pianoforte then living in North Germany. Under Wieck's superintendence Schumann would doubt- lessly have become a pianist of the highest order had he not endeavoured to strengthen the third finger of his right hand by some mechanical contrivance the secret of which he never clearly explained. But the process failed most signally, and the hand became so hopelessly crippled that the young artist was compelled to give up all thought of success as a performer and to devote himself thenceforward to the study of composition, which he cultivated diligently under the guidance of Heinrich Dorn.

This change of purpose led him to direct his attention

to subjects connected with the higher branches of art which he had previously very much neglected. Moreover, it gave him time and opportunity for the development of a peculiar talent which he soon succeeded in turning to

excellent account,—the talent for musical criticism. His first essays in this direction appeared in the form of con- tributions to the Allgemeine musikalische Zeitung ; but in 1834 he started a journal of his own, entitled Die Neue Zeitschrift fiir Musik, and to this from time to time he contributed critiques of the most profound character, some- times openly written under his own name, sometimes ostensibly emanating from an imaginary brotherhood called the Davidsbund, the members of which were living men and women, Schumann's most intimate friends, though the society itself existed only in his own fertile imagination. His time was now fully occupied. He composed with in- exhaustible ardour, and by the exercise of his extraordi- nary critical faculty struck out for himself new paths, which he fearlessly trod without a thought of the reception his works were likely to meet with from the public. The habit of passing a just Judgment upon the works of others led him to judge his own productions with relentless severity ; and it may be safely said that he was harder upon himself than upon any candidate for public favour whose attempts he was called upon to criticize.

Schumann's first great orchestral work was his Symphony in Bb, produced in 1841,—the year after his marriage with Clara Wieck, now so well known

to the world as Madame Clara Schumann, the accomplished pianiste, to whose fault-

less interpretation of her husband's works we are indebted

for our fullest appreciation of their inherent beauty. Another symphony, in D minor, and an orchestral over- ture, scherzo, and finale, appeared in the same year and from this time forward works on an equally grand scale appeared in rapid succession, culminating with his first and only opera, Genoveva, which, though completed in 1848, was not produced until 1850. In 1843 Schumann was appointed professor of composition in Mendelssohn's newly founded conservatory of music at Leipsic. Two years after Mendelssohn's death he endeavoured to obtain the appoint-

ment of director of the Gewandhaus concerts, but was rejected in favour of J. Rietz. In 1850 he was invited to Diisseldorf as musical director—a post in which Mendels- sohn had greatly distinguished himself many years pre- viously. Schumann retained this until 1853, when his mental powers began to decline rapidly through a disease of the brain from which he had long suffered, and of which he died at Endenich, near Bonn, 29th July 1856.

Sehumann's position in the history of German music is very important and marks the last stage but one of its progress towards its present condition. His style was very advanced and strikingly original. His published works include one opera, four symphonies, five overtures, a series of scenes from Faust, and other choral and orchestral works written on a very extensive scale, and a large quantity of songs, pianoforte pieces, and other smaller works of the highest excellence and beauty.

SCHWABE, Samuxzt Huzinricu (1789-1875), German amateur astronomer, was born on 25th October 1789 at Dessau, where he died on 11th April 1875; he observed the sun-spots regularly from 1826 and pointed out (in 1843) the periodicity in the number of these objects.

SCHWALBACH, or LANGENSCHWALBACH, a favourite German health resort, in the Prussian province of Hesse- Nassau, is pleasantly situated in

the deep valley of the Miinzenbach near its junction with the Aar, 12 miles north- west from Wiesbaden, with which it has regular communi- cation by diligence. Besides a large kursaal, the town has four churches, a synagogue, a real school, and a higher school for girls. The three principal springs, which are largely impregnated in varying proportions with iron and carbonic acid (compare MineraL WATERS), are connected by promenades. The permanent population of the town was 2811 in 1880, and the number of visitors reaches about 5000 annually.

About 44 miles to the south of Schwalbach is SCHLANGEN- BAD (360 inhabitants), the thermal springs of which are efficacious in nervous complaints and attract about 2000 visitors (chiefly ladies) every year The water is used externally only.

SCHWANN, Turopor (1810-1882), author of the cell theory in physiology, was born at Neuss in Rhenish Prussia on 7th December 1810. His father was a man of great mechanical talents; at first a goldsmith, he afterwards founded an important printing establishment. Schwann inherited his father's mechanical tastes, and the leisure of his boyhood was largely spent in constructing little machines of all kinds. He studied at the Jesuits' college in Cologne and afterwards at Bonn, where he met Johannes Miller, in whose physiological experiments he soon came to assist. He next went to Wiirzburg to continue his medical studies, and thence to Berlin to graduate in 1834. Here he again met Miiller, who had been meanwhile trans- lated to Berlin, and who finally persuaded him to enter on a scientific career and appointed him assistant at the anatomical museum. Schwann in 1838 was called to the chair of anatomy at the Roman Catholic university of Louvain, where he remained nine years. He then went as professor to Liége, where, in spite of brilliant offers from many German universities, he led a very quiet un- eventful life, broken only by the international commemora- tion of the fortieth anniversary both of his professoriate and the publication of his magnum opus, till his death on 11th January 1882. He was of a peculiarly gentle and amiable character and remained a devout Catholic through- out his life.

It was during the four years spent under the influence of Miiller at Berlin that all Schwann's really valuable work was done. Miiller was at this time

preparing his great book on physiology, and Sehwann assisted him in the experimental work required. His attention being thus directed to the nervous and muscular tissues, besides making such histological discoveries as that of the envelope of the nerve-fibres which now bears his name, he initiated thosc researches in muscular contractility since so elaborately worked

out by Du Bois Reymond and others. He was thus the first of Miiller's pupils who broke with the traditional vitalism and worked towards a physico-chemical explanation of life. Miller also directed his attention to the process of digestion, which Schwann showed to depend essentially on the presence of a ferment called by him pepsin, thus not only practically bringing the subject up to its modern state but preparing for the subsequent advances in medical treatment made by Roberts. Schwann also examined the question of spontaneous generation, which he aided greatly to disprove, and in the course of his experiments discovered the organic nature of yeast. His theory of fermentation was bitterly attacked and ridiculed by Liebig, but has been, after the lapse of a quarter of a century, triumphantly confirmed. In fact the whole germ theory of Pasteur, as well as the antiseptic application of Lister, is thus traceable to the influence of Schwann. Once when dining with Schleiden, in 1837, the conversation turued on the nuclei of vege- table cells). Schwann remembered having seen similar structures in the cells of the notochord (as had 'becn shown by Miiller) and instantly seized the importance of connecting the two phenomena. The resemblance was confirmed without delay by both observers, aud the results soon appeared in the famous Microscopic Investiga- tions on the Accordance in the Structure and Growth of Plants and Animals (Berlin, 1839 ; trans. Sydenham Society, 1847), and the cell theory (see MorpPHoLocy) was thus definitely constituted. – In the course of his verifications of the cell theory, in which he traversed the whole field of histology, he proved the cellular origin and de- velopment of the most highly differentiated tissues, nails, feathers, enamels, &c. Although mistaken in his view of the origin of new cells, his generalization at once became the foundation of all modern histology, and in the hands of Virchow

(whose cellular pathology is an inevitable deduction from Schwann) has afforded the meauis of placing modern pathology on a truly scientific basis.

An excellent account of Schwann's life and work is that by Léon Frédérieq (Liége, 1884).

SCHWANTHALER, Lupwic Micuazn (1802-1848), German sculptor, was born in Munich on 26th August 1802. His family had been known in Tyrol by its sculptors for three centuries ; young Ludwig received his earliest lessons from his father, and the father had been instructed by the grandfather. The last to bear the name was Xaver, who worked in his cousin Ludwig's studio and survived till 1854, For successive generations the family lived by the carving of busts and sepulchral monuments, and from the condition of mechanics rose to that of artists.

From the Munich gymnasium Schwanthaler passed as a student to the Munich academy; at first he purposed to be a painter, but afterwards reverted to the plastic arts of his ancestors. His talents received timely encourage- ment by a commission for an elaborate silver service for the king's table. Cornelius also befriended him; the great painter was occupied on designs for the decoration in fresco of the newly erected Glyptothek, and at his suggestion Schwanthaler was employed on the sculpture within the halls. Thus arose between painting, sculpture, and architecture that union and mutual support which characterized the revival of the arts in Bavaria. Schwan- thaler in 1826 went to Italy as a pensioner of King Louis, and on a second visit in 1832 Thorwaldsen gave him kindly help. His skill was so developed that on his return he was able to meet the extraordinary demand for sculp- ture consequent on King Louis's passion for building new palaces, churches, galleries, and museums, and he became the fellow-worker of the architects Klenze, Gartner, and Ohlmiiller, and of the painters Cornelius, Schnorr, and Hess. Owing to the magnitude and multitude of the plastic products they turned out, over-pressure and haste in design and workmanship brought down the quality of the art. The works of Schwanthaler in Munich are so many and miscellaneous that they can only be briefly indi- cated. The new palace is peopled with his statues: the throne-room has twelve imposing gilt bronze figures 10 feet high ; the same palace is also enriched with a frieze and with sundry other decorations modelled and painted from his drawings. The sculptor, like his contemporary painters, received help from trained pupils. The same prolific artist also furnished the old Pinakothek with twenty-five marbles, commemorative of as many great painters; likewise he

supplied a composition for the pediment of the exhibition pbuilding facing the Glyptothek, and executed sundry figures for the public library and the hall of the marshals. Sacred art lay outside his ordinary routine, yet in the churches of St Ludwig and St Mariahilf he gave proof of the widest versatility. The Ruhmeshalle afforded further gauge of unexampled power of production ; here alone is work which, if adequately studied, might have occupied a lifetime; ninety-two metopes, and, conspicuously, the giant figure of Bavaria, 60 feet high, rank among the boldest feats of physical force. A short life of forty-six years did not permit serious undertakings beyond the Bavarian capital, yet time was found for the groups within the north pediment of the Walhalla, Ratisbon, and also for numerous portrait statues, including those of Mozart, Jean Paul Richter, Goethe, and Shakespeare. Schwanthaler died at Munich in 1848, and left by will to the Munich academy all his models and studies, which now form the Schwan- thaler Museum. The sculptor's style may be designated ag romantic-classic or modern-antique, and its conventional 'deal stands far removed from the schools of naturalism and of realism.

SCHWARZ, or ScHWARTZ, CHRISTIAN FRIEDRICH (1726-1798), Protestant missionary to India, was born on Sth October 1726 at Sonnenburg, in the electorate of Brandenburg, Prussia. After attending the grammar school of his native town and an academy at Kiistrin, he in 1746 entered the university of Halle. Having learned Tamil to assist in a translation of the Bible into that lan- guage, he was led to form the intention of becoming a missionary to India. He received ordination at Copen- hagen on the 8th August 1749, and, after spending some time in England to acquire the English language, embarked early in 1750 for India, and arrived at Trichinopoly on the 30th July. Tranquebar was for some time his head- quarters, but he paid frequent visits to Tanjore and Tri- chinopoly, and in 1766 removed to the latter place. Here he acted as chaplain to the garrison, who erected a church for his general use. In 1769 he secured the friendship of the rajah of Tanjore, who, although he never embraced Christianity, afforded him every countenance in his mis- sionary labours.

Shortly before his death he committed to Schwarz the education of his adopted son and successor. In 1779 Schwarz undertook, at the request of the Madras Government, a private embassy to Hyder Ali, the chief of Mysore. When Hyder invaded the Carnatic, Schwarz was allowed to pass through the enemy's encampment without molestation. After twelve years in Trichinopoly he removed to Tanjore, where he spent the remainder of his life. He died on 13th February 1798. Schwarz's direct success in making converts exceeded that of any other Protestant missionary in India, in addition to which he succeeded in winning the esteem of Mohammedans and Hindus. The rajah of Tanjore erected a monument, exe- cuted by Flaxman, in the mission church, in which he is represented as grasping the hand of the dying missionary and receiving his benediction. A splendid monument to Schwarz by Bacon was placed by the East India Company in St Mary's church at Madras.

See Remains of Schwarz, with a sketch of his life, 1826; Memoirs of Life and Correspondence, by H. N. Pearson, 1834, 3d ed. 1839 ; Life, by H. N. Pearson, 1855.

SCHWARZBURG-RUDOLSTADT, a small Thuringian principality and an independent member of the German empire, shares with Schwarzburg-Sondershausen the posses- sions of the old house of Schwarzburg, consisting of the upper barony (Oberherrschaft) in Thuringia, on the Gera, Tim, and Saale, and the lower barony (Unterherrschaft), an isolated district on the Wipper and Helbe, about 25 miles to the north, surrounded by the Prussian province

the Prussian army since the convention of 1867. has one vote in the Reichstag and onc in the federal council.

of Saxony. See plate V. As the dignity of prince is held in virtue of the Oberherrschaft alone, a share of both baronies was given to each sub-line of the main house. The total area of Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt is 363 square miles, of which 283 are in the upper and 80 in the lower barony ; the chief towns in the former district are Rudolstadt (8747 inhabitants), the capital, and Blankenburg (1889), and in the latter Frankenhausen (4985). Both

baronies are hilly, but no great height is anywhere attained. The scenery of the Thuringian portion of Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt attracts many visitors annually, the most beautiful spots being the gorge of the Schwarza and the lovely circular valley in which the village of Schwarzburg nestles at the foot of a curiously isolated hill, crowned by the ancient castle of the princely line. Cattle-rearing and fruit-growing flourish in the lower barony, while the upper barony is finely wooded. Of the whole country 44 per cent. is under forest (mainly coniferous trees), and 41 per cent. is devoted to agricul- ture. The chief grain crops are rye, oats, and barley, but in 1883 thrice as much ground was occupied by potatoes as by all these three together. The live-stock returns in 1883 showed 19,831 cattle, 39,024 sheep, 19,544 pigs, 14,420 goats, and 2813 horses. Agriculture and forestry support about 35 per cent. of the population, and mining and cognate industries about 10 per cent. Trade and manufactures are insignificant ; iron, lignite, cobalt, alum, and vitriol are among the mineral productions. In 1880 the population was 80,296 (an increase of 1779 since 1875), or about 221 to the square mile. Of these 79,832 were Protestants.

Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt is a limited hereditary sovercignty, its constitution resting on laws of 1854 and 1870, though a diet has met at intervals since 1816. The present diet consists of sixtcen members elected for six years, four chosen by the highest taxpayers, the others by general election. The diet must be summoned every three ycars. The budget for 1885-87 estimated revenue and ex- penditure each at £101,210 ; £57,670 was the estimated income from the public lands and forests. The public debt was £230,350. The troops of Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt have been incorporated with The principality

Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt is the cadet branch of the family. In 1710 the count was made a prince, in spite of the remonstrances of

the elector of Saxony, although he was prevented from taking his scat in the imperial college until 1754.

The principality entered

the Confederation of the Rhine in 1807 and the German League in

1815.

In 1819 it redeemed the Prussian claims of superiority by surrendering portions of its territory.

SCHWARZBURG-SONDERSHAUSEN, a small Thur-

ingian principality and an independent member of the

German empire, shares the old Schwarzburg lands with Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt, as explained in the preceding article. Its total area is 333 square miles, of which 133 are in the upper and 200 in the lower barony. The chief towns are Arnstadt (10,516 inhabitants), which at one time gave name to a line of counts, in the latter district, and Sondershausen (6110), the capital, in the former. The general description of the nature and resources of Schwarz- burg-Rudolstadt applies also to this principality, except that 58 per cent. of the whole is devoted to agriculture and 30 per cent. to forests, only about two-fifths of which are coniferous trees. The chief crops are oats, barley, wheat, and rye; but here also by far the most land is planted with potatoes. In 1883 the principality contained 21,205 cattle, 54,276 sheep, 22,884 pigs, 11,372 goats, and 4283 horses. About 39 per cent. of the population are sup- ported by agriculture and forestry, and about 5 per cent. by mining. In 1880 the population was 71,107 (an increase of 3627 since 1875), or about 213 to the square mile. Of these 70,450 were Protestants.

Schwarzburg-Sondershausen 1s a limited hereditary sovereignty, its constitution resting on a law of 1857. The diet consists of five representatives elected by the highest taxpayers, five by general election, and not more than five nominated for life by the prince.

The first ten members are elected for four years, which is also the financial period. There is a ministry with five departments—for the prince's houseliold, domestic atfairs, finance, churches and schools, and justice. The budget for each year in the period 1884-87 estimated the income at £112,475 and the expenditure at £1000 less. The public debt in 1885 was

£199,625. The troops of Schwarzburg-Sondershausen have been incorporated with the Prussian army by convention since 1867. The principality has one vote in the Reichstag and one in the federal council.

The house of Schwarzburg is one of the oldest and uoblest in Germany ; and tradition traces its descent from Witikind and the kings of the Franks. Kafernburg, from whom the counts of Schwarzburg sprang about the beginning of the 13th century. The name Giinther became the distinctive name for the members of this house (corresponding to Heinrich in the Reuss family), the various Giinthers being at first distinguished by numbers and afterwards by prefixed names. Various subdivisions and collateral lines were formed, but by 1599 all were extinct but the present two. Count Giinther XL., who died in 1552, was the last common ancestor of both lines. Scliwarz- burg-Sondershausen is the senior line, although its possessions are the smaller.

imperial prince by the emperor Leopold I. The prince had to pay

7000 thalers to the elector of Saxony and 3500 to the duke of

Saxe-Weimar, and numerous disputes arose in connexion with the superiorities thus indicated. In 1807 Schwarzburg-Sondershausen entered the Confederation of the Rhine and became a sovereign state. In 1816 it joined the German League, and redeemed with portions of its territory all rights of superiority claimed by Prussia. Its domestic government has gradually, though not very quickly, improved since that time,—the oppressive game-laws in particular having been abolished. A treaty of mutual succession was made between the two families in 1713.

SCHWARZENBERG, Kart Puiuirp, Prince oF (iii. 1820), Austrian field-marshal, was born on 15th April 1771 at Vienna. He fought in 1789 under Lacy with distine- tion against the Turks and became major in 1792. In the French campaign of 1793 he held command of a por- tion of the advanced guard under the duke of Coburg, and in 1794 his impetuous charge at the head of a cavalry regiment greatly contributed to the victory of Cateau-Cambrésis. After the battle of Wirzburg in September 1796 he was raised to the rank of major-general, and in 1799 to that of field-marshal in command of a division. At the defeat of Hohenlinden in 1800 his promptitude and

courage saved those under his command from being sur- rounded and taken prisoners. In the war of 1805 he held command of a division under General Mack, and when Ulm capitulated to Napoleon in October he cut his way through the hostile lines with some cavalry regiments. At the special request of the emperor Alexander he under- took an embassy to St Petersburg in 1808, but two days before the battle of Wagram he arrived in the camp and assumed command as general of the cavalry. After the peace of Vienna he was sent to Paris to negotiate a marriage between Napoleon and the duchess Maria Louisa. From this time he secured Napoleon's special confidence and esteem, and at his request took command of the Austrian auxiliary corps in the Russian campaign. In August he received the command of the seventh or Saxon army corps; after gaining some slight advantages over the Russians, he was compelled to retreat before superior forces to the duchy of Warsaw, where, according to instructions from Napoleon, he remained for some months inactive at Pultusk. In 1813 he was appointed commander-in-chief of the allied forces, and, after defeating Napoleon at Leipsic in October, carried the campaign to a successful issue by entering Paris in March 1814. On the conclusion of the war he became president of the Aulic Council. He died from paralysis at Leipsic on 15th October 1820.

See Prokesch-Osten, Denkwiirdigkeiten aus dem Leben des Feld- marschalls Fiirsten Schwarzenberg, Vienna, 1823; Berger, Das Firstenhaus Schwarzenberg, Vienna, 1866.

SCHWEGLER, Atserr (1819-1857), historical, philo- sophical, and theological writer, one of the first and most distinguished of the pupils of F.C. Baur and of the dei minores of the Tiibingen school. He was born at Michel-

Its historical ancestors were the counts of

In 1697 the count was raised to the dignity of

SC H—SCH

bach in Wtirtemberg on 10th February 1819, the son of a country clergyman, and entered the university of Tiibin- gen in 1836 as a student of

theology, though with a pre- dominant liking for classical philology. Under Baur's influence he devoted himself to the study of ecclesiastical history, and his first work was Der Montanismus wu. die christliche Kirche des 2ten Jahrhunderts (1841), in which he was the first to point out that Montanism was much more than an isolated outbreak of eccentric fanaticism in the early church, though he introduced fresh misconcep- tions by connecting it with Ebionitism as he conceived the latter. This work, with other essays, brought Schwegler into conflict with the authorities of the church, in conse- quence of which he gave up theology as his professional study and chose that of philosophy. In 1843 he com- menced in the Tiibingen university the career of a teacher (privat-docent) of philosophy and classical philology, and in 1848 was made extraordinary professor of the latter subject and soon after ordinary professor of history. His death took place on 5th January 1857.

His principal theological work was Das nachapostolische Zcitalter (2 vols., 1846). It was this book which first put before the world, with Schwegler's characteristic boldness and clearness, the results of the critical labours of the earlier Tiibingen school in relation to the first development of Christianity. Carl Schwarz says of it, "This work—full though it was of youthful exaggerations and pro- vocations, partisan as it was in its line of argument, untrue and abstract as its contrast of Paulinism and Petrinism was, and arbi- trary as was its use of those party names—produced nevertheless by its masterly literary form (which reminds us of Strauss), and by its easy handling and presentation of all the important data, a power- ful impression, and, although in many points of detail it is out of date, it may still be regarded as one of the 'standard works' of the school." Schwegler published also an edition of the Clementine

Homilies (1847), and of Eusebius's Ecclesiastical History (1852), In the department of philosophy we have an edition of the Afeta-

physics of Aristotle, with a translation and commentary (4 vols.,

1847-48), the well-known sketch of the History of Philosophy (1848), and a posthumous Geschichte der Gricch. Philosophie (1859). In history he commenced a Lémische Geschichte (vols. i.~~iii., 1853~~ 58, 2d ed., 1869), which he brought down only to the laws of Licinius.

SCHWEIDNITZ, a manufacturing and trading town of Lower Silesia in Prussia, is picturesquely situated on the left bank of the Weistritz, 28 miles south-west of Breslau. Well built, with wide streets, the town contains several old churches (one of which has a tower 338 feet high) and an ancient town-house with a tower 130 feet high, The surrounding country is fertile and highly cultivated, and the large quantities of flax and hemp there raised encourage an active weaving industry in the town. Beetroot for sugar, grain, and fruit are also grown. The manufacture of furniture, leather gloves, machinery and tools, carriages, nuts and screws, needles, and other hard- ware goods is carried on, The beer of Schweidnitz has long been famous under the name of "Schwarze Schéps," and in the 16th century it was exported as far as Italy. Schweidnitz is the chief grain market of the district. The population in 1885 was 23,775 (an increase of 6 per cent. since 1880); in 1816 it was 10,046.

Schweidnitz, dating from about the 11th century, received town rights in 1250. About 1278 it became the capital of a principality, with an area of 935 square miles, which belonged to Bohemia from 13538 till 1741, when it passed into the possession of Prussia. The "Polerei of Schweidnitz" is the name given to the riotous revolt of the town, in 1520-22, against a royal edict depriving it of the right of coining its own money. The town was four times besieged aud taken in the Seven Years' War; and in 1807 it was captured by the French, who demolished the fortifications. In 1816 new works were raised, but in 1864 they were converted into a public park,

SCHWEINFURT, a manufacturing town of Lower Franconia in Bavaria, is situated on the right bank of the

Main, 22 miles north-east of Wiirzburg. The Renaissance town-house in the spacious market-place dates from 1570 ;

+t contains a library and a collection of antiquities. St John's church isa Gothic edifice with a lofty tower ; St Galvator's was built about 1720. Schweinfurt is well furnished with benevolent and_ educational institutions, including a gymnasium founded by Gustavus Adolphus. The Main is here spanned by two bridges. The chief manufacture is paint ("Schweinfurt

green" is a well-known brand in Germany), introduced in 1809; but beer, sugar, machinery, soapand other drysalteries, straw-paper, vinegar, é&c., are also produced. Cotton-spinning and. bell-founding are carried on; and the Main supplies water-power for numerous saw, flour, and other mills. Schweinfurt carries on an active trade in the. grain, fruit, and wine produced in its neighbourhood, and it is the seat of an important sheep and cattle market. Riickert the poet (d. 1866) was born here in 1788. The population in 1880 was 12,601, of whom one-fourth were Roman Catholics.

Schweinfurt is mentioned in 790, and in the 10th century was the seat of a margrave. It fell later to the counts of Henneberg ; but, receiving town rights in the 13th century, it maintained its independence as a free imperial city with few interruptions until 1803, when it passed to Bavaria. 'Assigned to the grand-duke of Wiirzburg in 1810, it was restored to Bavaria in 1814. In the Thirty Years' War it was occupied by Gustavus Adolphus, who erected fortifications, remains of which are still extant.

SCHWELM, a town of Westphalia, in Prussia, is situated on the river of the same name, 22 miles east of Diisseldorf and 27 north-east of Cologne. Lying close to the Harkort iron and sulphur mines, within the populous and rich mineral district on the lower Rhine, it carries on iron- founding, wire-drawing, and the manufacture of machinery of various kinds, besides an active trade in iron, steel, and brass goods. Scarcely less important are its manufactures of ribbons, damask, cord, and paper. In the neighbour- hood are chalybeate springs, resorted to by invalids. The population in 1880 was 12,127, one-fourth of whom were Roman Catholics. Schwelm is said to have existed as early as 1085, though it did not receive town-rights until

1590.

SCHWENKFELD, Caspar (1490-1561), of Ossing, as he called himself from his property at this place in the principality of Liegnitz in Silesia, one of the first and noblest representatives of Protestant mysticism in the 16th century, was born in 1490. He was of noble descent, and acquired at Cologne and other universities an education greatly superior to that possessed by most noblemen of his time, After leaving the university he served in various minor courts of Silesia, finally entering the service of the duke of Liegnitz, over whom his influence was great. Though he was

educated as a strict Catholic, the writings of Tauler and Luther produced a profound impression upon him, so that in 1522 he visited Wittenberg, where he made the acquaintance of Carlstadt and Thomas Miinzer, spirits destined to be more congenial to him than Luther himself. On his return to Liegnitz he joined in an active propaga- tion of the principles of the Reformation in the principality and in Silesia. But very early Schwenkfeld uttered warn- ings against the abuse of the doctrine of justification by faith. The Protestant controversy as to the Eucharist (1524) revealed his disagreement with Luther on that critical point. He sought to establish a via media between the doctrines of Luther and Zwingli, and vainly hoped to obtain for it Luther's acceptance. He as vainly sought to secure Luther's adoption of a strict rule of church discip- line, after the manner of the Moravian Brethren. Mean- while the Anabaptists obtained a footing in Silesia, and suspicions of Schwenkfeld's sympathy with them were aroused. Letters and writings of his own (1527-28) proved him to hold strongly anti-Lutheran heresies, and both Catholics and Lutherans urged the duke of Liegnitz to dismiss him. He voluntarily left Liegnitz in 1529, and

took up his abode at Strasburg for five years amongst the numerous Reformed clergy there. In 1533, inan important synod, he defended against Bucer the principles of religious freedom as well as his own doctrine and life. But the heads of the church carried the day, and, in consequence of the more stringent measures adopted against dissenters, Schwenkfeld left Strasburg for a time. While residing in various cities of south Germany he kept up a wide corre- spondence with the nobility particularly, and in Wiirtem- berg propagated his views personally at their courts. In 1535 a sort of compromise was brought about between himself and the Reformers, he promising not to disturb the peace of the church and they not to treat him as a dis- turber, The compromise was of only short duration. His theology took a more distinctly heterodox form, and the publication (1539) of a book in proof of his most charac- teristic doctrine—the deification of the humanity of Christ led to the active persecution of him by the Lutherans and his expulsion from the city of Ulm. The next year (1540) he published a refutation of the attacks upon his doctrine with a more elaborate exposition of it, under the title Grosse Confession. His book was very inconvenient to the Protestants, as it served to emphasize the differences be- tween the Lutherans and Zwinglians as regarded the Eucha- rist at a moment when

efforts were being made to reconcile them. An anathema was accordingly issued from Schmal- kald against Schwenkfeld (together with Sebastian Franck) ; his books were placed on the Protestant " index" ; and he himself was made a religious outlaw. From that time he was hunted from place to place, though his wide connexions with the nobility and the esteem in which he was held by numerous followers and friends provided for him secure hiding-places and for his books a large circulation. An attempt in 1543 to approach Luther only increased the Reformer's hostility and rendered Schwenkfeld's situation still more precarious. He and his followers withdrew from the Lutheran Church, declined its sacraments, and formed small societies of kindred views. He and they were frequently condemned by Protestant ecclesiastical and political authorities, especially by the Government of Wiirtemberg. His personal safety was thereby more and more imperilled, and he was unable to stay in any place for more than ashort time. At last, in his seventy-second year, he died at Ulm, on 10th December 1561, surrounded by attached friends and declaring undiminished faith in his views.

Schwenkfeld left behind him a sect (who were called subsequently by others Schwenkfeldians, but who called themselves " Confessors of the Glory of Christ") and numerous writings to perpetuate his ideas. His writings were partially collected in four folio volumes, the first of which was published in the year 1564, containing his principal theological works. Erbkam states that his unprinted writings would make more than another four folios. His adherents were to be found at his death scattered throughout Germany. In Silesia they formed a distinct sect, which has lasted until our own times. In the 17th century they were associated with the followers of Jacob Bohme, and were undisturbed until 1708, when an inquiry was made as to their doctrines. In 1720a commission of Jesuits was despatched to Silesia to convert them by force. Most of them fled from Silesia into Saxony, and thence to Holland, England, and North America. Frederick the Great of Prussia, when he seized Silesia, extended his protection to those who remained in that province. Those who had fled to Philadelphia in Pennsylvania formed a small community under the name of Schwenkfeldians ;

and Zinzendorf and Spangenberg, when they visited the United States, endeavoured, but with little success, to convert them to their views. This community still exists in Pennsylvania, and according to information obtained from their ministers by Robert Barclay they consisted in 1875 of two congregations of 500 members, with three meeting-houses and six ministers. Their views appear to be substantially those of the English Society of Friends. See Robert Barelay's Inner Life of the Religious Societies of the Com- monwealth, London, 1876, pp. 226-247.

Schwenkfeld's mysticism was the cause of his divergence from Protestant orthodoxy and the root of his peculiar religious and

theological position. It led him to oppose the Lutheran view of the value of the outward mcans of grace, such as the ministry of the word, baptism, the Eucharist. He regarded as essential a direct and immediate participation in the grace of the glorified Christ, and looked on an observance of the sacraments and religious ordi- nances as immaterial. He distinguished betwcen an outward word of God and an inward, the former being the Scriptures and perish- able, the latter the divine spirit and eternal. In his Christology he departed from the Lutheran and Zwinglian doctrine of the two natures by insisting on what he called the Vergottung des Fleisches Christi, the deification or the glorification of the flesh of Christ. The doctrine was his protest against a separation of the human and the divine in Christ, and was intimately connected with his mystical view of the work of Christ. He held that, though Christ was God and man from His birth from the Virgin, He only attained His complete deification and glorification by His ascension, and that it is in the estate of His celestial Vergottwng or glorification

that He is the dispenser of His divine life to those who by faith'

become one with Him. This fellowship with the glorified Christ rather than a less spiritual trust in His death and atonement is with him the essential thing. His peculiar Christology was based upon profound theological and anthropological ideas, which contain the germs of some recent theological and Christological speculations.

See Arnoldt, Kirchen- und Ketzer-Historie (Frankfort, ed. 1700); Salig, Historie der Augsburg. Confession ; Erbkam, Gesch. der prot. Sekten (1848); Dorner, Gesch. d. prot. Theol. (1867); also Erbkam's artiele in Herzog's Realencyklopddie, Robert Barclay's work quoted above, and Beard's Hibbert Lectures (1883).

SCHWERIN, the capital and one of the most attractive cities of the grand-duchy of Mecklenburg-Schwerin, is prettily situated at the south-west corner of the Lake of Schwerin (14 miles long and 3$ miles broad), 110' miles north-west of Berlin. The town is closely surrounded and hemnied in by a number of lakelets, with high and in some cases well-wooded banks; and the hilly environs are occupied by meadows, woods, and pretty villas. The old and new towns of Schwerin were only united as one city in 1832; and since that date the suburb of St Paul and another outer suburb, known as the Vorstadt, have grown up. Though Schwerin is the oldest town in Mecklenburg, its aspect is comparatively modern,—a fact due to destructive fires, which have swept away most of the ancient houses. The most conspicuous of the many fine buildings is the ducal palace, a huge irregularly penta- gonal structure with numerous towers (the highest 236 feet), built in 1844-57 in the French Renaissance style. It stands on a small round island between Castle Lake and the Lake of Schwerin, formerly the site of a Wendish fortress and of a later medieval castle, portions of which have been skilfully incorporated with the present building. The older and much simpler palace; the opera-house, rebuilt after a fire in 1882; the Government buildings, erected in 1825-34 and restored in 1865 after a fire; and the museum, in the Greek style, finished in 1882, all stand in the "old garden," an open space at the end of the bridge leading to the new palace. Among the other secular buildings are the palace of the heir-apparent (built in 1779 and restored in 1878), the large arsenal, the ducal stables, the gymnasium, the town-house, the artillery- barracks, the military hospital, &c. The cathedral was originally consecrated in 1248, though the present building —a brick structure in the Baltic Gothic style, with an unfinished tower—dates for the most part from the 15th century. Since 1837 Schwerin has been once more the residence of the grand-duke, and the seat of government and of various high tribunals,—a fact which has had con-siderable influence on the character of the town and the tone of its society. Neither the manufacturing industry nor the trade of Schwerin is important.

Jn 1885 the popu- lation was 32,031—including about 700 Roman Catholics and 400 Jews—an increase of 6°4 per cent. since 1880.

Schwerin is mentioned as a Wendish stronghold in 1018, its name (Zwarin or Swarin) being a Slavonic word equivalent to " game- preserve." The Obotrite prince Niclot, whose statue is placed above the portal of the palace as the ancestor of the present reigning family, had his residence here. The town, founded in 1161 by Heury the Lion in opposition to this pagan fortress, reccived town-

'and powers on the wane, he revisited Vienna.

rights in 1167. From 1170 to 1624 it gave name toa bishopric ; and it was also the capital of the duchy of Schwerin, which forms the western part of the grand-duchy of Mecklenburg-Schwerin. Destructive fires, the hardships of the Thirty Years' War, and the removal of the court to Ludwigslust in 1756 seriously depressed the town. It owes its revival and many of its chief buildings to the grand-duke Paul Frederick (1837-42), to whom a statue by Rauch was crected in 1859.

SCHWIND, Morrrz von (1804-1871), a painter of the romauitic school, was born in Vienna in 1804. He received rudimentary training and led a joyous careless life in that gay capital ; among his companions was the musician Schubert, whose songs he illustrated. In 1828 he removed to Munich, and had the advantage of the friendship of the painter Schnorr and the guidance of Cornelius, then director of the academy. In 1834 he received the com- mission to decorate King Louis's new palace with wall paintings illustrative of the poet Tieck. Healso found in the same palace congenial sport for his fancy in a " Kinder- fries"; his ready hand was likewise busy on almanacs, é&c., and by his illustrations to Goethe and other writers he gained applause and much employment. In the revival of art in Germany Schwind held as his own the sphere of poetic fancy. To him was entrusted in 1839, in the new Carlsruhe academy, the embodiment in fresco of ideas thrown out by Goethe; he decorated a villa at Leipsic with the story of Cupid and Psyche, and further justified his title of poet-painter by designs from the Wiebelungen- lied and Tasso's Gerusalemme for the walls of the castle of

Hohenschwangau in Bavarian Tyrol. From the year 1844 dates his residence in Frankfort; to this period belong some of his best easel pictures, pre-eminently the Singers' Contest in the Wartburg (1846), also designs for the Goethe celebration, likewise numerous book illustrations. The conceptions for the most part are better than the execution. In 1847 Schwind returned to Munich on being appointed professor in the academy. Eight years later his fame was at its height on the completion in the castle of the Wartburg of wall pictures illustrative of the Singers' Contest and of the History of Elizabeth of Hungary. The compositions received universal praise, and at a grand musical festival to their honour Schwind himself played among the violins. In 1857 appeared his exceptionally mature "'cyclus" of the Seven Ravens from Grimm's fairy stories. In the same year he visited England to report officially to King Louis on the Manchester art treasures. And so diversified were his gifts that he turned his hand to church windows and joined his old friend Schnorr in designs for the painted glass in Glasgow cathe- dral. Towards the close of his career, with broken health To this time belong the '"'cyclus" from the legend of Melusine and the designs commemorative of chief musicians which de- corate the foyer of the new opera-house. Cornelius writes, "You have here translated the joyousness of music into pictorial art." Schwind's genius was lyrical; he drew inspiration from chivalry, folk-lore, and the songs of the people ; his art was decorative, but lacked scholastic train- ing and technical skill. Schwind died at Munich in 1871, and his body lies in the old Friedhof of the same town.

SCHWYZ, one of the forest cantons of Switzerland, ranking fifth in the confederation. It extends from the upper end of the Lake of Zurich on the north to the middle reach of the Lake of Lucerne on the south ; on the west it touches at Kiissnacht the northern arm of the latter lake, and at Arth the Lake of Zug, while on the east it stretches to the ridges at the head of the Muottathal, which divide it from Glarus. Its total area is 350-7 square miles, of which 254°9 are classed as "productive land" (193°3 of this being pasture or arable land) and 95:8 as "unpro- ductive land" (glaciers and lakes occupying 21 square

miles). The highest point is the Grieseltstock or Faulen (9200 feet); the summit of the Rigi (Rigi Kulm) is also within its limits. In 1880 the population (nearly equally divided between the two sexes) was 51,235, an increase of 3530 since 1870. The only towns of any size are Einsiedeln (population, 8401) and the capital, Schwyz (6543). German is the mother-tongue of 49,631 of the inhabitants, and there is an Italian colony of 1377. The Roman Catholics number 50,266, the Protestants but 954, 'Till 1814 the canton formed part of the diocese of Constance; since that time it is practically (though not formally) included in that of Chur. Besides a monastery of Capuchin friars and four nunneries, the canton boasts of the great Benedictine abbey of Einsiedeln, which grew up round the cell of the hermit St Meinrad (d. 863) ; it received its first charter in 946 from Otho L, and contains a black statue of the Virgin, which attracts about 150,000 pilgrims annually. In Schwyz primary education is free and compulsory, the state also giving grants in aid of secondary instruction. The population are mainly engaged in pastoral occupations, the chief article of export (largely to north Italy) being a special breed of cattle, which enjoys a very high reputation in the confederation. The only railways in the canton are the portion of the St Gotthard line between Kiissnacht, Immensee, and Sisikon, and the line from Arth to the summit of the Rigi.

The valley of Schwyz first appears in history in 970. Later a community of free men is found settled at the foot of the Mythen, possessing common lands and subject only to the count of the Zurich gau, as the representative of the emperor ; from the Hapsburgs Steinen in 1269 and Arth (completely) in 1354 bought their free- dom and became part of the free community of Schwyz. The early history of Schwyz consists mainly of struggles with the abbey of Einsiedeln about rights of pasture. In 1240 the inhabitants obtained from Frederick II. the " Reichsfreiheit," é.c., direct depend- ence on the emperor, being thus freed from the Hapsburg counts of the Zurich gaz. In 1278 the younger branch of the house of Hapsburg sold all its property and rights in the valley to the elder

branch, which a few months later obtained the empire, and in April |

1291 bought the rights of the Alsatian abbey of Murbach over Lucerne. Schwyz took the lead in making the famous league of 1st August 1291 with

the neighbouring districts of Uri and Unter- walden, for which its position and the free spirit of its inhabitants specially fitted it. An attack by Schwyz on Einsiedeln was the excuse for the Austrian invasion which on 15th November 1315 was gloriously beaten back in Morgarten Pass. In the history of the Teague Schwyz was always to the front, so that its name in a dialectal form (Schweiz) was applied by foreigners from the 14th century onwards to the league as a whole, though it formed part of its formal style only from 1803. Soon after the victory of Sempach (1386) the men of Schwyz began to extend their borders. In 1394 they acquired the town of Kinsiedeln (becoming in 1397, and finally in 1484, the "protectors" of the great abbey) and in 1402 Kissnacht, while in 1412-37 they won the '" March," and in 1440 Wollerau and Pfaffikon,—all on or near the Lake of Zurich. All these districts were governed by Schwyz as subjects, not as equals or allies, supreme power resting with the " Landsgemeinde " (or assenibly of all citizens of full age) of Schwyz, which is first mentioned in 1294. Schwyz joined the other forest cantons in opposing the Reformation, and took part in the battle of Cappel (1531), in which Zwingli fell. In 1586 it became a member of the Golden or Borromean League, formed to continue the work of Charles Borromeo in carrying out the counter-Reformation. In 1798 Schwyz, including Gersau (free since 1390), formed part of the 'Tell gau" or 'République Telliane, : set up by the French, which a week later gave way to the " Helvetic republic," though the free men offered a valiant resistance under Aloys Reding. In 1799 it was the scene of the disastrous retreat from Altdorf to Glarus made over the Kinzigkulm and Pragel Passes by the Russians under Suwaroff in face of the French army. Schwyz steadily resisted all proposals for the revision of the federal constitution of 1815, joined the league of Sarnen in 1882, and, when religious disputes had further complicated matters, the " Sonderbund" (1843 and 1845), which was only put down by the war of November 1847. The constitution of 1848 was revised in 1855, 1876 (when membership of one of the twenty-nine " Gemeinde" or communes became the political qualification), and 1884.

SCIACCA, a town of Italy, in the province of Girgenti, Sicily, 28 miles south-east of Castelvetrano (Selinus) and 37 north-west of Girgenti, lies on the south coast on a steep

historian of Sicily. rible feud between the Perollos (lords of Sciacca) and the counts

rocky decline, and with its walls and castles has from a distance an imposing appearance. The cathedral was founded in 1090 by Julia de Hauteville, daughter of Roger L, who had presented her with the lordship of Sciacca on her marriage with Perollo; and two other churches, 8. Salvadore and S. Maria delle Giummare, date from the same period, In the cliffs are excavated granaries in which under the Spanish viceroys the grain used to be stored under Government control. To the east of the town, at the foot of Monte 8. Calogero, are the hot wells (sulphur- ous and saline) of Sciacca; and the steam that breaks forth from the top of the hill seems to have been used (as

it still is) for vapour baths from a remote (possibly Phoenician) period. The population was 21,451 (22,195

including Marina) in 1881.

Sciacca was the birthplace of Tommaso Fazello (1498-1570), the In the 15th century it was the seene of a ter-

of Luna. SCIATICA. See Neurateata, vol. xvii. p. 364. SCILLY ISLES, a group of islands, about forty in number, in the county of Cornwall (see vol. vi. plate IX.),

England, are situated about 25 miles west by south of

Land's End and 40 west from Lizard Point, in 50° N. lat. and 6° W. long. They are composed wholly of granite,— outliers of the granite highlands of Cornwall. There are some metalliferous veins or lodes, but none that could ever have yielded much iron. On account of the mild climate the vegetation is remarkably luxuriant. The mean average temperature in winter is about 45° and in summer about 58°. Fuchsias, geraniums, and myrtles attain an immense size, and aloes, cactus, and the prickly pear grow in the openair. The inhabitants devote their attention principally to the cultivation of early

potatoes for the London market. Asparagus and other early vegetables, as well as flowers, are also largely cultivated. Lobsters are caught and sent to London, but the fishing industry is of comparatively minor importance.

The total area of the islands is 3560 acres, with a population in 1871 of 2090, and in 1881 of 2320, including 276 persons on board vessels. The inhabited islands are St Mary's (area about 1500 acres), Tresco (700), St Martin's (550), St Agnes (350), and Bryher (300). The principal town, Hugh Town in St Mary's, occupies a sandy peninsula crowned by the height called the Garrison, with Star Castle, erected in the time of Elizabeth. It possesses a harbour and pier with a roadstead affording anchorage for large vessels. The coast-line is wild and picturesque, with precipitous headlands and many extensive caves. On Tresco there are remains of an abbey ; and St Agnes has a lighthouse 72 feet in height. On the islands there are numcrous rude pillars and circles of stones, similar to those in Cornwall.

The Scilly Isles are probably the Cassiterides or '¢Tin Islands" of the Greeks (see vol. xviii. p. 806). The islands were granted in 936 by Athelstan to the monks settled at Tresco, but on the endowment of the abbey of Tavistock the greater portion of them were included amongst its possessions. In the reign of Elizabeth they were divided amongst several proprietors. During the Civil War Hugh Town held out for the king, and in 1645 afforded shelter for a time to Prince Charles until he escaped to Jersey. In 1649 they were taken possession of by Sir J ohn Grenville, a Royalist, who made use of them as a convenient shelter, whence he issued to sweep the neighbouring seas, until in 1651 he was forced to surrender toa fleet under Blake and Sir John Ayscue. In ancient times a frequent haunt of pirates, the islands were afterwards notorious for smuggling. On the suppression of smuggling Mr Augustus J. Smith did much to introduce order and encourage habits of industry amongst the inhabitants.

SCINDE. See Srnp.

SCIO, the Italian name of an island on the west coast of Asia Minor, called by the Greeks Chios (7 Xios, 's 71) Xéo) and by the Turks Saki Adasi; the soft pronunciation of x before « in Modern Greek, approximating to sk, caused Xfo to be Italianized as Scio. Scio, which is about 30 miles long

from north to south, and varies in breadth from 8 to 15 miles, is divided into a larger northern part

and a smaller southern part, called respectively apanomerta XXII. — 59

466

and katomeria. The island is rugged and well deserves the epithet "craggy " (wairaddecoa) applied to it in the Homeric hymn. The southern part is less rocky than the northern, and the wealth of the island is concentrated there. The figs of Chios were noted in ancient times, but wine and gum mastic have always been its most important products. The climate is almost perfect, the atmosphere delightful and healthy; oranges, olives, and even palms grow freely. The finest wine was grown on the north- western coast, in the district called by Strabo Ariusia, and was known in Italy as wnwm Arvisiwm. The population of Chios has always been far greater than its resources could feed; the people have therefore been forced to import the necessaries of life in exchange for their wine and mastic and fruit, and alike in ancient and modern times they have been known as merchants and traders. Pottery of Chios and Thasos was exported to Illyria (Strab., p. 317) and doubtless elsewhere ; it formed or contained the cargo of outward-bound trading ships. Thasian ware is familiar in museums, where the stamped handles of Thasian amphoree have been collected in thousands; but no pottery has yet been identified as of Chian manufacture. An incidental proof of the importance of Chian handicrafts lies in the fact that early in the 7th century B.c. Glaucus of Chios discovered the process of soldering iron, and the iron stand of a large crater whose parts were all connected by this process was constructed by him, and preserved as one of the most interesting relics of antiquity at Delphi. The long line of Chian sculptors in marble, Bupalus and Athenis, sons of Archermus, son of Micciades, son of Melas, bears witness to the fame of Chian art in the period 660 to 540 B.c. The Winged Victory of Micciades and Archermus, which was dedicated at Delos, is still preserved,—the most im- portant attested work extant of archaic Greek art. Marble quarries also were worked in the island. In literature the chief glory of Chios was the school of epic poets called Homeride, who carried on and gave an Ionic tone to the traditional art of the older Molic bards. Cinzethus is said to have written

the Homeric Hymn to Apollo of Delos, and is believed by some modern critics to have exer- cised great influence on the text of the Zdzad and Odyssey. The Chian recension of these poems (Xéa "Exdoous) was in later times one of the standard texts. Jon the tragic poet, 'Theopompus the historian, and other writers maintained the position of Chios in literature during the classical period. The chief city of Chios has always borne the same name as the island. It is situated near the middle of the eastern coast, and at the present day contains about 17,000 inhabitants. A theatre and a teniple of Athena Poliuchus existed in the ancient city. About 6 miles north of the city there is a curious monument of antiquity, commonly called "the school of Homer"; it is a very ancient sanctuary of Cybele, with an altar and a figure of the goddess with her two lions, cut out of the native rock on the summit of a hill. On the west coast there is a monastery of great wealth with a church founded by Constantine IX, (1042-54). Starting from the city and encompassing the island, one passes in succession the pro- montory Posidium ; Cape Phane, the southern extremity of Chios, with a harbour and a temple of Apollo; Notium, probably the south-western point of the island ; Laii, opposite the city of Chios, where the island is narrowest; the town Bolissus (now Volisso), the home of the Homerid poets ; Melcena, the north-western point ; the wine-growing district Ariusia ; Cardamyle (now Cardhamili) ; the north-eastern promontory was probably named Phlium, and the mountains that cross the northern part of the island Pelineus or Pelleneus. The situation of the small towns Lenconium, Delphinium, Caucasa, Ceela, and Polichne is uncertain ; probably most of them were in the southern part. The island is subject to earthquakes ; a very destructive shock occurred in March 1881. The history of Chios is very obscure. According to Pherecydes, the original inhabitants were Leleges, while according to other accounts Thessalian Pelasgi possessed the island before it becanie an Ionian state. The name A'thalia, common to Chios and Lemnos in very early time, suggests the original existence of a homogeneous population in these and other neighbouring islands. Cinopium, a mythical hero, son of Dionysus or of Rhadamanthus, was an early king of Chios. His successor in the fourth generation, Hector,

united the island to the Ionian confederacy (Pausan., vii. 4), though Strabo (p. 633) implies an actual conquest by Ionian settlers. 'The name Hector and the fountain Helene (probably at the modern Thelena in the north) might be expected in the island of the Homeride. 'The regal government was at a later time exchanged for an oligarchy or a democracy, but nothing is known as to the manner and date of the change. As in most other states of Greece, tyrants sometimes ruled in Chios; the names of Amphiclus and Polytecnus are mentioned. The early relations of Chios with other states are very obscure, but it seems to have been an ally of Miletus, and to have been at enmity with the Phoceo-Samian alliance, to which the neighbouring Erythre belonged. The same form of the Ionian dialect was spoken in Chios and in Erythre.

When the Persians appeared on the Ionian coast Chios willingly submitted, refused to thcir old enemies the Phoceans, who were fleeing from the Persian yoke, a refuge on their islands Cnusse, and even surrendered the Lydian fugitive Pactyes in defiance of all religious scruples. Strattis, tyrant of Chios, followed Darius in his Scythian expedition. The Chians joined in the Jonian rebellion against the Persians (500-495) and supplied 100 ships. After the Persian victory at Lade the island was most severely treated, the towns and temples burned, and many of the pcople enslaved. At Salamis (480) the Chian ships, led by the tyrant Strattis, served in the Persian fleet. After the battle of Mycale (479) the island became free and a democratic government no doubt took the place of the tyranny. Chios was the most powerful state after Athens in the Delian confederacy, and it was an ally on equal terms of the Athenian empire, paying no tribute, but furnishing ships in casc of war. It remained a faithful ally of the Athenians till the year 412, when, encouraged by the weakness caused in Athens by the Sicilian disasters, it Joined the Lacedemonians. Its fleet then consisted of fifty ships.) The Athenians defeated them in three battles, at Bolissus, Phane, and Leuconium, but could not reconquer the island. Finding the Spartan hegemony more op- pressive than the Athenian, Chios returned to the Athenian con- nexion in 394, but soon afterwards deserted and joined the Thebans. In the wars of Alexander the Great, Memnon, supported by the oligarchical party, held the island for the Persians. It was afterwards involved in the rapid vicissitudes of Ionian history, falling under the power of various dynasties among the diadocht. In the Mithradatic wars it

favoured the Roman alliance, and the king's general Zenobius fined the island 2000 talents and carried off a great number of the population into slavery in Pontus. It had many centuries of peaceful prosperity under Roman and Byzantine rule. The Genoese held it from the 14th century till in 1566 the Turks conquered it and the third great Chian disaster and massacre occurred. Except for a brief Venetian occupation in 1694, Chios has remained in Turkish hands till the present day. A fourth massacre afflicted the island in 1822, when the Turks repressed with fire and sword the attempted Greek insurrection. Till this terrible event the island was ruled very leniently by the Turks; the internal government was left in the hands of five archons, three Greek and two Catholic, while two resident Turkish officials represented the sultan and received through the archons the stipulated tribute. (W. M. RA.)

SCIPIO. 'The Scipios,! a memorable name in Roman history, were a branch of the ancient and noble family of the Cornelii. It was in Rome's wars with Carthage that they made themselves specially famous.

1. Postrus Cornexius Scrpio, the father of the Elder Africanus, was the first Roman general to encounter Hannibal in battle. He was consul in 218 B.c., the first year of the Second Punic War, and, having Spain for his province, he went with an army to Massilia (Marseilles) with the view of arresting the Carthaginian's advance on Italy. Failing, however, to meet his enemy, he hastened back by sea to Cisalpine Gaul, leaving his army under the command of his brother Cneius Scipio, who was to harass the Carthaginians in Spain and hinder them from support- ing Hannibal. In a sharp cavalry engagement in the upper valley of the Po, on the Ticinus, he was defeated and severely wounded, and it is said he owed his life to the bravery of his son, then a mere stripling. Again, in the December of the same year, he witnessed the complete defeat of the Roman army on the Trebia, his colleague Sempronius having insisted on fighting contrary to his advice. But he still retained the confidence of the Roman people, since his term of comniand was extended, and we

find him with his brother in Spain in the following year,

1 The name means a "stick" or "staff."

winning victories over the Carthaginians and strengthen- ing Rome's hold on that country, till 212 or 211. The details of these campaigns are not accurately known to us, but it would seem that the ultimate defeat and death of the Scipios were due to the desertion of the Celtiberi, bribed by Hasdrubal, Hannibal's brother.

2. Pusiius Cornetius Scrrio AFRICANUS THE ELDER.— After having been present at the disastrous battles of the Ticinus, the Trebia, and Cann, and having after that last crushing defeat had the spirit to remonstrate with several Roman nobles who advocated giving up the struggle and quitting Italy in despair, Scipio, at the age of twenty-four, offered to take the command of the Roman army in Spain the year after his father's death. The people already had an intense belief in him, and he was unanimously elected. All Spain west of the Ebro was in the year of his arrival (210) under Carthaginian control, but fortunately for him the three Carthaginian generals, Hasdrubal (Hannibal's brother), Hasdrubal the son of Gisgo, and Mago (also Hannibal's brother), were not disposed to act in concert. Scipio was thus enabled to surprise and capture New Carthage, the headquarters of the Carthaginian power in Spain, from which he obtained a rich booty of war stores and supplies, with a particularly good harbour. The native Spanish tribes now became friendly, and Scipio found use- ful allies among them. In the following year he fought Hasdrubal somewhere in the upper valley of the Guadal- quivir, but the action could hardly have been a decisive one, as soon afterwards the Carthaginian crossed the Pyrenees at the head of a considerable army on his way to Italy. Next year another battle was fought in the same neigh- bourhood, and Scipio's success appears to have been suffi- ciently decided to compel the Carthaginian commanders to fall back on Gades, in the south-western corner of Spain. The country was now for the most part under Roman influ- ence, a result due even more to the statesmanlike tact of Scipio than to his military ability. With the idea of striking a blow at Carthage in Africa, the Roman general paid a short visit to the Numidian princes, Syphax and Masinissa, but at the court of Syphax he was foiled by the presence of Hasdrubal, the son of Gisgo, whose daughter Sophonisba was married to the Numidian chief. On his return to Spain Scipio had to quell a mutiny which had broken out

among his troops. Hannibal's brother Mago had meanwhile sailed for Italy, and Scipio himself in 206, after having established the Roman ascendency in Spain, gave up his command and returned to Rome to stand for the consulship, to which he was unanimously elected the following year, the province of Sicily being assigned to him. By this time Hasdrubal with his army had perished on the Metaurus, and Hannibal's movements were restricted to the south-western extremity of Italy. For Rome the worst part of the struggle was over. The war was now to be transferred by Scipio from Italy to Africa. He was himself eagerly intent on this, and his great name drew to him a number of volunteers from all parts of Italy. There was. but one obstacle: the old-fashioned aristocracy of Rome did not like him, as his taste for splendid living

A67

drove the Carthaginian army out of the field. There was an attempt at negotiation, but the war party prevailed and Hannibal was recalled from Italy. The decisive battle was fought near the Numidian town of Zama in 202 and ended in Hannibal's complete defeat. Peace was con- cluded with the Carthaginians in the following year on terms which strictly confined their dominion to a compara- tively small territory in Africa, almost annihilated their fleet, and exacted a heavy war contribution. In fact, the independence of Carthage was destroyed, and it became simply a rich commercial city. The old-fashioned and narrow-minded aristocrats who were in sympathy with the " delenda est Carthago" policy subsequently announced by Cato thought these terms too lenient ; but Scipio was too great and too generous a man to lend himself to the base work of utterly extinguishing an ancient and noble centre of civilization. Rome was now perfectly safe from attack. It was a great Mediterranean power: Spain and Sicily were Roman provinces, and the north of Africa was under a Roman protectorate. Such was the end, after seventeen years, of the Second Punic War. Scipio was welcomed back to Rome with the surname of Africanus, and he had the moderation and good sense to refuse the many honours which the people would have thrust upon him. For some years he lived quietly and took no part in politics. In 190 his brother Lucius Scipio was consul and, on the under- standing that he should have the benefit of the military skill and experience of Africanus, he was entrusted with the war in

Asia against Antiochus. The two brothers brought the war to a conclusion by a decisive victory at Magnesia in the same year. Meanwhile Scipio's political enemies had gained ground, and on their return to Rome a prosecution was started against Lucius on the ground of misappropriation of moneys received from Antiochus. As Lucius was in the act of producing his account-books his brother wrested them from his hands, tore them in pieces, and fiung them on the floor of the senate-house. He was then himself accused of having been bribed by Antiochus, but he reminded his accusers that the day was ill chosen, as it happened to be the anniversary of his great victory over Hannibal at Zama. 'There was an outburst of enthusiasm, and Scipio was once again the hero and the darling of the Roman people, who, it is said, crowded round him and followed him to the Capitol. After all, however, he ended his days, as a voluntary exile in all probability, at Liternum on the coast of Campania, dying, it would seem, in 183, the year of Hannibal's death, when a little above fifty years of age. Scipio's wife was Aimilia, daughter of the 'Amilius Paullus who fell at Cannee and who was the father of the conqueror of Macedonia. By her he had a daughter, Cornelia, who became the mother of the two famous Gracchi.

Spain, Northern Africa, the so-called province of Asia, were added to Rome's dominion during his life. Scipio lived to see Rome develop from a mercly Italian power to be in fact the mistress of the world, aud he himself greatly contributed to this result. Among Rome's great generals we must rank him after Cesar. He knew how to plan a campaign as well as how to fight a battle, and he had the faculty of inspiring his soldiers with confidence and enthusiasm. He never had to make head against such tremendous

and Greek culture was particularly offensive to them. A party in the senate would have recalled him, but the popular enthusiasm was too strong for them. A commis- sion of inquiry was sent over to Sicily, and it found that he was at the head of a well-equipped fleet and army. At the commissioners' bidding he sailed in 204 from Lilybeeum (Marsala) and landed on the coast of Africa near Utica. Carthage meanwhile had secured the friendship of the powerful Numidian chief Syphax, whose advance com- pelled Scipio to raise the siege of Utica and to entrench luimself on the shore between that

place and Carthage. Next year he surprised and utterly defeated Syphax and

difficulties as his great antagonist, and his achievements, great as they were, must be distinctly ranked beneath the marvellous suc- cessesof Hannibal. Still the story was told that, in a conversation between the two generals at the court of Antiochus, Hannibal, who had named Alexander as the first and Pyrrhus as the second among military commanders, confessed that had he beaten Scipio he should have put himself before either of them. It seems to be at any rate certain that the two great men respected and admired each other, and it is much to Scipio's credit that he withstood the mean persc- cution with which the Roman senate followed up the Carthaginian. It may be that he had rather too much aristocratic hauteur for a statesman in time of peace, but against this we must set the pleasing fact that he was a man of great intellectual culture and could speak and write Greek just as well as his native Latin. He wrote his

own memoirs in Greek. There must indeed have been a wonderful charm about the man, and there was a belief that he was a special favourite of heaven and held actual communication with the gods. It is quite possible too that he himself honestly shared this belief ; and so it was that to his political opponents he could be harsh and arrogant and towards others singularly gracious and sympathetic. For a time he enjoyed a popularity at Rome which no one but Cesar ever attained. ;

3. Pusiivs Cornevius Scorpio AFRICANUS THE YouncER.—This Scipio, also one of Rome's greatest generals, was the younger son of /®milius Paullus, and he fought when a youth of seventeen by his father's side at Pydna, 168,—the battle which decided the fate of Macedonia and made northern Greece subject to Rome. He was adopted by the eldest son of Scipio Africanus the Elder, and from him took the name Scipio with the surname Africanus. In 151, a time of defeat and disaster for the Romans in Spain, which as yet had been but very imper- fectly subjugated, he served with credit in that country and obtained an influence over the native tribes similar to that which the elder Scipio, his grandfather by adoption, had acquired nearly sixty years before him. In the next year an appeal was made

to him by the Carthaginians to act as arbiter between them and the Numidian prince Masinissa, who, backed up by a party at Rome, was incessantly encroaching on Carthaginian territory. Rome's policy in Africa was to hold the balance between Masinissa and Carthage, and, when it was seen that Carthage, as the result of several years of peace, was again becoming a prosperous and powerful city, there grew up a feeling at Rome that the Numidian king must be supported and their old rival thoroughly humiliated. Marcus Cato and his party would hear of no compromise; Carthage, they said, must be de- stroyed if Rome was to be safe. It was easy to find a pretext for war in the disputes between Carthage and Masinissa. In 149 war was declared, and the Cartha- ginians felt it to be a life-and-death struggle: every man

and every woman laboured to the uttermost for the defence.

of the city with a furious enthusiasm. The Roman army, in which Scipio at first served in a subordinate capacity, was utterly baffled. In the following year he was elected consul, while yet under the legal age, for the express purpose of giving him the supreme command. After two years of desperate fighting and splendid heroism on the part of the defenders, the famished garrison could no longer hold the walls: Carthage was captured, and the ruins of the city were burning for seventeen days ; Rome decreed that the place should be for ever desolate. On his return to Rome Scipio became the subject of violent political attacks, against which he successfully defended himself in speeches (no longer extant) that ranked as brilliant specimens of oratory. In 134 he was again consul, with the province of Spain, where a demoralized Roman army was vainly attempting the conquest of Numantia on the Douro. Scipio, after devoting several months to the discipline of his troops, reduced the city by blockade. The fall of Numantia, which was utterly destroyed in 133, established the Roman dominion in the province of Hither or Nearer Spain, the eastern portion of that country. Rome meanwhile was shaken by the great political agitation of the Gracchi, whose sister Sempronia was Scipio's wife. Scipio himself, though not in sympathy with the extreme men of the old conservative party, was decidedly opposed to the schemes of the Gracchi. "J ustly slain" (jure ceesum) is said to have been his answer to the tribune Carbo, who asked him before the people what he thought of the death of Tiberius Gracchus. This gave dire

offence to the popular party, which was now led by his bitterest foes. Soon afterwards, in 129, he was found dead in bed on the morning of a day on which he had in- tended to make a speech on a point connected with the

SCcI—SCO

agrarian proposals of the Gracchi,—"'a victim of political assassination" Mommsen confidently pronounces him. The mystery was never cleared up, and there were political reasons for letting the matter drop.

The Younger Scipio, great general and great man as he was, is for ever associated with a hideous work of destruction at Carthage, which we feel he might have done more to avert. Yet he wasa man of culture and refinement ; he gathered round him such men as the Greek historian Polybius, the philosopher Panetius, and the poets Lucilius and Terence. And at the same time, according to Polybius and Cicero, he had all the good sterling virtues of an old- fashioned Roman, and steadily set his face against the increasing luxury and extravagance of his day. As a speaker he seems to have been no less distinguished than as a soldier. He spoke remarkably good and pure Latin, and he particularly enjoyed serious and intel- lectual conversation. There seems to have been nothing mean or grasping about him. After the capture of Carthage he gave back to the Greek cities of Sicily the works of art of which Carthage had robbed them. He did not avail himself of the many opportunities he must have had of amassing a fortune. Though politically opposed to the Gracchi, he cannot be said to have been a foe to the interests of the people. He was, in fact, a moderate man, in favour of conciliation, and he was felt by the best men to be a safe political adviser, while, as often happens in such cases, he could not help offending both parties.

4, Scipios are continually appearing in Roman history in more or less prominent positions down to the time of the empire. One of them, Scipio Nasica (Nasica denoting an aquiline nose), contemporary of the Younger Africanus, in- stigated the murder of Tiberius Gracchus, whom the people were bent on re-electing (133) to the tribuneship. Though he was pontifex maximus at the time, the senate, to save him, had to get him away from Rome, and he left never to return, dying soon afterwards in Asia. (w. J. B.)

SCIRE FACIAS, in English law, is a judicial writ founded upon some record directing the sheriff to make it known (scire facias) to the party against whom it is brought, and requiring the latter to show cause why the party bringing the writ should not have the advantage of such record, or why (in the case of letters patent and grants) the record should not be annulled and vacated. Proceedings in scire facias are regarded as an action, and the defendant may plead his defence as in an action. The writ is now of little practical importance; its principal uses are to compel the appearance of corporations aggregate in revenue suits, and to enforce judgments against share- holders in such companies as are regulated by the Com- panies Clauses Act, 1845, or similar private Acts, and against garnishees in proceedings in foreign attachment in the lord mayor's court. Proceedings by scire facias to repeal letters patent for inventions were abolished by the Patents, Designs, and Trademarks Act, 1883, and a petition to the court substituted.

SCOPAS. See Arco oey, vol. ii. p. 360.

SCORESBY, Wittiam (1789-1857), English arctic explorer and physicist, was born near Whitby, Yorkshire, on 5th October 1789. His father, also named William, who achieved distinction as an arctic whaler, was the son of a farmer near Crompton, Lancashire, where he was born on 3d May 1760. He went to sea when he was twenty years of age, and became one of the most prominent and successful, as well as daring, of arctic whale-fishers. In 1823 he retired with an ample competency, and died in 1829. Young Scoresby made his first voyage with his father to Greenland in 1800, when he was only eleven years of age. On his return, up to 1803, he diligently pursued his education, acquiring a very fair knowledge of mathematics and navigation. From 1803 he was his father's constant companion to the whale-fishery. On 25th May 1806, as chief officer of the "Resolution," he succeeded in reaching 81° 30' N. in 19° E. long., the farthest point north attained by any navigator up to that date. On his return, during the following winter, Scoresby attended the natural philosophy and chemistry classes in Edinburgh

_-

university, as he did again in 1809, when he added several other subjects. In his voyage of 1807 he commenced, as in all subsequent voyages he continued, the study of the meteorology and natural history of the polar regions ; among the earlier results are his original observations on snow crystals. In 1809 Professor Jameson of Edinburgh brought Scoresby's arctic papers before the Wernerian Society of that city, of which he was at once elected a member. Soon after attaining his majority, in 1811, Scoresby was promoted to the command of the '" Resolu- tion," and in the same year married the daughter of a shipbroker. In 1813 he changed the "Resolution" for the "Esk," in both vessels bringing home large and pro- fitable captures. In his voyage of 1813 Scoresby ascer- tained that the temperature of the polar ocean is warmer at considerable depths than it is on the surface. Each subsequent spring found Scoresby in search of whales, and no less eagerly of fresh additions to scientific knowledge. His letters of this period to Sir Joseph Banks no doubt gave the first impulse to the modern search for the north- west passage. In 1819 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, and among other papers of the year was one communicated to the Royal Society of London through Sir Joseph Banks, "On the Anomaly in the Variation of the Magnetic Needle," touching upon a subject of the first scientific importance. In 1820 appeared Scoresby's History and Description of the Arctic Regions, in which he gathers up the results of his own observation, as well as those of previous navigators, and which still remains a standard authority. In his voyage of 1822 to Greenland, among other scientific work, Scoresby surveyed 400 miles of the east coast, between 69° 30' and 72° 30' N., with so much accuracy that the Govern- ment expeditions of the next year were unable to make any substantial correction, although they attempted to ignore his work. This was the last of Scoresby's arctic voyages. On his return he found his wife dead, and this event, acting upon his naturally pious spirit along with other influences, decided him to enter the church. After two years of residence in Cambridge, he in 1825 was ordained and on 17th July was appointed curate of Bass- ingby. Meantime had appeared at Edinburgh, in 1823, his Journal of a Voyage to the Northern Whale-Fishery, including Researches and Discoveries on the Hastern Coast of Greenland. The faithful and successful discharge of his clerical duties at Bassingby, in the mariners' chapel at Liverpool, at Exeter, and at Bradford did not prevent Scoresby from taking as much interest in science as he did during his whaling

voyages. In 1824 the Royal Society elected him a fellow, and the Paris Academy of Sciences an honorary corresponding member. From the first he was an active member and official of the British Association, to which he made several important contributions, one being "An Exposition of some of the Laws and Phenomena of Magnetic Induction." To the progress of terrestrial mag- netism especially Scoresby is recognized as having largely contributed. Of the sixty papers which follow his name in the Royal Society list many are more or less connected with this department of research, But his observations extended into many other departments, including certain branches of optics. In order to obtain additional data for his theories on magnetism he made a voyage to Aus- tralia in 1856, the results of which were published in a posthumous work,—Journal of a Voyage to Australia for Magnetical Research, edited by Archibald Smith (1859). He made two visits to America, in 1844 and 1848; on his return home from the latter visit he made some valuable observations on the height of Atlantic waves, the results of which were given to the British Association. Scoresby interested himself much in social questions, especially the

improvement of the condition of factory operatives. He also published numerous works and papers of a religious character, a list of which, as well as of his many scientific papers, is appended to the Life of William Scoresby by his nephew, Dr R. E. Scoresby-Jackson (1861). In 1850 he published a work on the Franklin expedition, urging the prosecution of the search for the missing ships, and giving the valuable results of his own experience in arctic naviga- tion. Scoresby was twice married after the death of his first wife,—to Miss Elizabeth Fitzgerald in 1828, and in 1849 to Miss Georgina Kerr. After his third marriage Scoresby built a villa at Torquay, where he spent the remainder of his life, and where he died, 21st March 1857. He was a man of simple but deep piety, amiable, cheerful, and guileless.

SCORPION. See ArnacHNipA, vol. il. p. 281 sq.

SCOT, MicwazL, whose fame as a magician has sur- rounded his history with legend, is sometimes claimed by the Italians as a native of Salerno and by the Spaniards as a native of Toledo; but there is no reason to doubt the Scottish origin to which his name testifies. Scottish tradi- tion is unanimous in identifying him with Sir Michael Scot of Balwearie in Fifeshire, but the

ascertainable dates place some difficulties in the way of this. The traditional date of Scot's birth is 1190, but this does not harmonize well with the embassy to Norway attributed to Sir Michael Seot in 1290. Some accordingly have fixed the date of his birth approximately as 1214, but apparently without any further reason than is afforded by the supposed date of his death in 1291. But Jourdain! refers to certain manu- script translations of Scot's which are expressly dated "1917 at Toledo." This would accord fairly well with the date 1190, the translations being executed by Scot soon after the conclusion of his student period. Scot is said to have studied at Oxford, whence he proceeded, as was usual, to Paris, then the centre of medieval learning, devoting himself especially to philosophy and mathematics. Du Boulay, the historian of the university of Paris, adds that he received the degree of doctor of theology and ac- quired a brilliant reputation in that faculty. There is no evidence of this, however, in his writings. At Toledo, where he also studied, Scot acquired a knowledge of Arabic. It is not likely that his knowledge extended to Greek and the other Eastern tongues mentioned by the earlier bibliographers. His knowledge of Arabic was sufficient to open up to him the Arabic versions of Aris- totle and the multitudinous commentaries of the Arabians upon them, with which Western Christendom had only lately become acquainted in Latin translations (see ScHo- Lasticism). It also brought him into contact with the original works of Avicenna and Averroes. His own first work was done as a translator. He was one of the savants whom Frederick II. attracted to his brilliant court, and at the instigation of the emperor he superintended (along with Hermannus Alemannus) a fresh translation of Aris- totle and the Arabian commentaries from Arabic into Latin. There exist translations by Scot himself of the Historia Animalium, the De Anima, and De Celo, along with the commentaries of Averroes upon them. This connexion with Frederick and Averroes—both of evil reputation in the Middle Ages—doubtless contributed to the formation of the legend which soon enveloped Michael Seot's name. His own books, however, dealing as they do almost exclusively with astrology, alchemy, and the occult sciences generally, are mainly responsible for his popular reputation. The chief of these according to the more critical views of recent investigators are Super Auc- torem Sphere, printed at Bologna in 1495 and at Venice in 1631; De Sole et Luna, printed at Strasburg, 1622,

1 Recherches sur les anciennes traductions Latines @ Aristote, p. 133.

in the Theatrum Chimicum, and containing more alchemy than astronomy, the sun and moon being taken as the images of gold and silver; De Chiromantia, an opuscule often published in the 15th century ; and, perhaps best known of all, De Physiognomia et de Hominis Procreatione, which saw no fewer than eighteen editions between 1477 and 1660. 'This treatise is divided into three books, of which the first deals with generation according to the doctrine of Aristotle and Galen, the second with the signs by which the character and faculties of individuals may be determined from observation of different parts of the body. The Physiognomia (which also exists in an Italian translation) and the Super Auctorem Sphere expressly bear that they were undertaken at the request of the emperor Frederick. To the above list should be added certain treatises in manuscript,—De Signis Planetarum ; Contra Averrhoem in Meteora; Notitia Convinctionis Mundi Ter- restris cum Ceoelesti, et de Definitione utriusque Mundi; De Presagus Stellarum et Elementaribus. Michael is said to have foretold (after the double-tongued manner of the ancient oracles) the place of Frederick's death, which took place in 1250. The Italian tradition makes Scot die in Sicily not long afterwards, stating that he foretold the manner of his own death. Jourdain is inclined to agree with this approximate date, observing that Scot is spoken of by Albert the Great as if he were already dead, and that Vincent of Beauvais (d. c. 1268) quotes him with the epithet '"vetus." But the generally received tradition makes him return by way of England (where he was re- ceived with much honour by Edward I.) to his native country. The ordinary account gives 1291 as the date of Scot's death. According to one tradition he was buried at Holme Cultram in Cumberland ; according to another, which Sir Walter Scott has followed in the Lay of the Last Minstrel, in Melrose Abbey. In the notes to that poem, of which the opening of the wizard's tomb forms the most striking episode, Scott gives an interesting ac- count of the various exploits attributed by popular belief to the great magician. "In the south of Scotland any work of great labour and antiquity is ascribed either to the agency of Auld Michael, of Sir William Wallace, or the devil." He used to feast his friends with dishes brought by spirits from the royal kitchens of France and Spain and other lands. His

embassy to France alone on the back of a coal-black demon steed is also celebrated, in which he brought the French monarch to his feet by the effects which followed the repeated stamping of his horse's hoof. Other powers and exploits are narrated in Folengo's Macaronic poem of Merlin Coccaius (1595). But Michael's reputation as a magician was already fixed in the age im- mediately following his own. He appears in the Inferno of Dante (canto xx. 115-117) among the magicians and soothsayers— ' Quell' altro, che ne' fianchi é cosi poco, Michele Scotto fu ; che veramente Delle magiche frode seppe il giuoco."*

He is represented in the same character by Boccaccio, and is severely arraigned by John Pico de Mirandola in his work against astrology, while Naudé finds it necessary to defend his good name in his Apologie pour les grands per- sonnages faussement accusés de magie.

SCOT, Recivaxp (c. 1538-1599), was the son of Richard, third son of Sir John Scot of Scotshall, Smeeth (Kent), studied at Hart Hall in Oxford, and afterwards lived in studious retirement at Smeeth, dying in 1599. He was the author of a very remarkable book, The Discoverie of Witchcraft, the object of which was to put an end to the cruel persecution of witches, by showing that "there will be found among our Witches only two sorts ; the one sort being such by imputation, as so thought of by others (and

these are abused and not abusers), the other by acceptation, as being willing so to be accounted, and these be meer Coseners." This thesis is worked out in sixteen books, with great learning and acuteness, in a spirit of righteous indignation against the witchmongers. Scot was far in advance of his time, and his book, of which the first edition appeared in 1584, was burned by order of King James I. The book is still interesting, not only as having anticipated Bekker by a century, but for the great mass of curious details as to every branch of so-called witchcraft which it contains. It also takes up natural magic and conjuring at considerable length (bk. xiii.), and contains an argument against "alchymistry " (bk. xiv.). , Scot also published in 1574 A perfite Platforme of a Hoppe Garden (3d ed. 1578), which is noteworthy as having originated the cultivation of the hop in England.

‘ Discourse concerning Angels and Spirits.” See B. Nicholson’s Scot’s Discovery of Witchcraft, London, 1886.*

SCOTER, a word of doubtful origin, perhaps a variant of “Scout,” one of the many local names shared in com- mon by the GuituEMor (vol. xi. p. 262) and the Razorsitt, (vol. xx. p. 302), or perhaps primarily connected with Coor (vol. vi. p. 341),! the English name of the Anas nigra of Linneus, which with some allied species has been justifiably placed ina distinct genus, demia (often misspelt Oidemia) —a name coined in reference to the swollen appearance of the base of the bill. The Scoter is also very generally known around the British coasts as the “Black Duck” from the male being, with the exception of a stripe of orange that runs down the ridge of the bill, wholly of that colour. In the representative American form, *. ameri- cana, the protuberance at the base of the bill, black in the European bird, is orange as well. Of all Ducks the Scoter has the most marine habits, keeping the sea in all weathers, and rarely resorting to land except for the purpose of breed- ing. Even in summer small flocks of Scoters may generally be seen in the tideway at the mouth of any of the larger*

_ British rivers or in mid-channel, while in autumn and

winter these flocks are so increased as to number thousands of individuals, and the water often looks black with them. A second species, the Velvet-Duck, . fusca, of much larger size, distinguished by a white spot under each eye and a white bar on each wing, is far less abundant than the for- mer, but examples of it are occasionally to be seen in com- pany with the commoner one, and it too has its American counterpart, *. velvetina; while a third, only known as a straggler to Europe, the Surf-Duck, W. perspicillata, with a white patch on the crown and another on the nape, and a curiously particoloured bill, is a not uncommon bird in North-American waters. All the species of @demia, like most other Sea-Ducks, have their true home in arctic or subarctic countries, but the Scoter itself is said to breed occasionally in Scotland (Zoologist, s.s. p. 1867). The females display little of the deep sable hue that charac- terizes their partners, but are attired in soot-colour, varied, especially beneath, with brownish white. The flesh of all these birds has an*

exceedingly strong taste, and, after much controversy, was allowed by the authorities to rank as fish in the ecclesiastical dietary (cf. Graindorge, Traité de Vorigine des Macreuses, Caen, 1680; and Correspond- ence of John Ray, Ray Soc. ed., p. 148).

1 In the former case the derivation seems to be from the O. Fr. Lscoute, and that from the Latin auscultare (comp. Skeat, Etymol. Dictionary, p. 588), but in the latter from the Dutch Koet, which is said to be of Celtic extraction —cwtiar (op. cit., p. 184). The French Macreuse, possibly from the Latin macer, indicating a bird that may be eaten in Lent or on the fast days of the Roman Church, is of double signification, meaning in the south of France a Coot and in the north a Scoter. By the wild-fowlers of parts of North America Scoters are commonly called Coots.

|

A471

SCOTLAND

PART I.—HISTORY.

1. Roman Period.—The first certain lines of the history of Scotland were written by the Romans. Their account of its partial conquest and occupation for more than three hundred years gives the earliest facts to which fixed dates can be assigned. The invasion commenced

-by Julius Cesar reached in Agricola's last campaign

limits never afterwards exceeded. It was in the last year of Vespasian's life that Julius Agricola, the ablest general bred in his camp, came to command the army in Britain. Landing in midsummer 78, he at once commenced a cam- paign against Wales. In his second campaign he passed the Solway and, defeating the tribes of Galloway, introduced rudiments of Roman civilization in the district where Ninian taught the rudiments of Christianity three centuries later. This was the first conquest within modern Scotland. Two main roads, of which traces can still be seen, mark lis advance: the western, from Carlisle through Dumfries and Lanark, extends across the

Clyde to Camelon on the Carron; and the eastern, from Bremenium (High Rie- chester) in Northumberland, passes through Roxburgh and Lothian to the Forth at Cramond. Next year Agri- cola subdued unknown tribes, reached the estuary of the Tay, and occupied camps at various points of central Scotland, in the future shires of Stirling and Perth. Traces of them are still visible at Bochastle near Callander, Dalginross near Comrie, Fendoch on the Almond, Inver- almond at the junction of the Almond with the Tay near Perth, Ardargie on the north of the Ochils, and the great camp at Ardoch south of Crieff. The fourth year of his command was devoted to the construction of a line of forts between the Forth and the Clyde. This barrier, strength-

ened by a wall in the reign of Antoninus Pius, guarded

the conquests already made against the Caledonians—the general Latin name of the northern tribes of the forests and mountains, the Highlanders of later times—and, in connexion with camps already occupied in the lowlands of Perthshire, formed the base for further operations, In the fifth year Agricola crossed the Clyde, and, without inaking any permanent conquest on the western mainland, viewed from Cantyre the coast of Ireland. Statements by one of its chiefs as to the character and factions of that country, whose ports were already known to Roman mer- chants, led to the opinion communicated to Tacitus by Agricola, that with a single legion and a few auxiliaries he could reduce it to subjection. The number of legions in the Roman army of Britain was fixed at five, besides auxiliaries and cavalry,—a total of perhaps 50,000 men. The resistance of northern Britain explains why the easier conquest was not undertaken. A year was required to explore the estuaries of the Forth and the Tay with the fleet. The absence of camps indicates that no attempt was made to conquer the peninsula of Fife, perhaps a separate kingdom; and Agricola prepared to advance against the Caledonians. Two years' fighting, although Tacitus chronicles only an assault on the advanced camp of the IXth legion (at Lintrose (?) near Coupar Angus), passed before the final engagement known in history as the battle of the Grampians (84). It was probably fought in the hilly country of the Stormont near Blairgowrie, the Celts descend- ing from strongholds in the lowest spurs of the Grampians and attacking the Romans, whose camp lay near the junc- tion of the Isla and the Tay. It

decided that the Roman conquest was to stop at the Tay. Galgacus, the Caledonian leader, was, according to the Roman historian, defeated ; but in the following winter Agricola retreated to the

camps between the Forth and the Clyde, while the fleet 78-120. was sent round Britain. Forth and rounding the northern capes, it returned after establishing the fact, already suspected, and of so much consequence in future history, that Britain was an island,— planting during its progress the Roman standard on the Orkneys, which had for several centuries been known by report, and sighting Shetland, the Thule of earlier navi- gators. Agricola, with one legion—probably the TXth, which had suffered most— was now recalled by Domitian.

Starting probably from the

The absence of any notice of Britain for twenty years

implies the cessation of further advances,—a change of policy due to the reverses in the Dacian War and the financial condition of the empire.

The indefatigable Hadrian came to Britain (120) with Ha-

the VIth legion, named Victrix, which replaced the IXth, drian's He began, and his favourite general Aulus Plautorius Nepos completed, between the mouth of the Tyne near Newcastle and the Solway near Carlisle, the great wall of stone (see Haprian, WALL or), about 80 miles in length, 16 feet high, and 8 feet thick, protected on the north by a trench 34 feet wide and 9 deep, with two parallel earthen ramparts and a trench on the south, — proving the line required defence on both sides. Massive

wall.

fragments of the wall, its stations, castles, and protecting camps, with the foundation of a bridge over the North Tyne, may be still seen. It was garrisoned by the Vith legion, and by the XIth and XXth, which remained throughout the whole Roman occupation. The conquests of Agricola in what is modern Scotland were for a time abandoned. Hadrian's wall was the symbol of the strength of Rome, and also of the valour of the northern

Britons. There must have been a stubborn resistance to induce the conquerors of the world to set a limit to their province, though the roads through the wall showed they did not intend this limit to be permanent. 'The first step had been taken. 'The country between the Tyne and Solway and the Forth and Clyde, including the southern Lowlands of Scotland, was now within the scope of Roman history, if not yet of Roman civilization. The country north of the last two rivers remained barbarous and unknown under its Celtic chiefs. Hadrian had thus resumed the task of Agricola, in one of the rapid campaigns by which he consolidated the empire through visits to its most distant parts ; but it +s doubtful whether he passed beyond the wall, which continued to separate the Romans from the barbarians. In the reign of his successor, Antoninus Pius, Lollius Urbicus recovered the country from the wall of Hadrian to the forts of Agricola, and built an earthen rampart about half the length of the southern wall, 20 feet high and 24 thick, protected on the north by a trench 40 feet wide and 20 deep. It was known later as Grim or Graham's dyke. Remains may yet be seen between Carriden near Borrowstounness on the Forth and West Kilpatrick on the Clyde, with forts either then or sub- sequently erected at intermediate stations, connected by a military road on the south of the wall.

About this period Ptolemy composed the first geography of the Ptolemy's world, illustrated by maps—probably constructed somewhat later geography. —of Ireland and Britain, still called Albion.t South of modern Scotland the plan and description of the distances are generally

accurate, but north of the Solway (Itune stuarium) and the Wear (? Vedra) the island is figured as lying west and east instead 2? EE ee

1 His information must have come from Roman officers, who, we know, studied this branch of the military art, as maps have been found painted on the porticos of their villas.

161-3864.

Taeitus's aeeount of inha- bitants.

Hadrian to Severus.

of north and south. Learned ingenuity corrects this error and, by other modifieations and the use of a few points deemed certain, applies the names of Ptolemy to places on the map of modern Seotland. But the certain points are almost confined to the Clyde (Glotta Aistuarium), the Forth (Bodcra Aistuarium), the Tay (Tava A'stuarium), and perhaps the Wear (Vedra) and the Nith (Novius), the Caledonian Wood (Caledonia Silva), and the Orkneys (Orcades). Even if the other identifications were clear, it would not add much to our knowledge of aneient Scotland. The names of Ptolemy are names on his map and in books only. No tribe (exeept the Caledonii), no town, no river (except the Forth and Clyde and Tay), no island (exeept the Orkneys), was, so far as we know, called before or since by the names which there appear. No in- scription or coin confirms them. No mountains in this land of mountains are to be found on the plan of the geographer. Etymo- logical conjeeture, after allowance for mispronunciation and errors of transcribers, fails to reconeile the names of Ptolemy with the oldest names of Celtic origin still retained by the rivers and hills. Yet the attempt represents the highest knowledge embodied in writing to which the Romans attained of this distant and disputed part of the empire, for the Itineraries, except the forged one attri- buted to Richard of Cirencester, stop at Hadrian's wall. His treatise remained until the revival of learning the only written geographical description of the country from which the learned could picture northern Britain. With all its imperfeetions and mistakes, it conveyed in rough outline the figure of a country to the west of the European continent, to the north of the Roman province of Britain, to the east of Ireland, surrounded by the German Ocean, the Northern Ocean, and the Irish Channel, with bold promontories and many rivers (several tidal), peopled by various tribes, its towns chiefly on the rivers or the coast, and in its centre the vast forest to which the Caledonians gave or from which they received their name, itself the northern part of the largest British island, with groups of smaller isles lying off its northern and western shores. This region was unknown to Cesar and imperfectly known to Tacitus,—the only writer of the first century to whom we can resort. Yet the deseription of the Britons by the greatest historical genius of Rome, based on the account of one of its greatest generals, attempts a discrimination between the Celtic tribes first and those afterwards conquered, which may perhaps be applied

to the inhabitants of the north as contrasted with those of the south of Britain.

“Whether the inhabitants of Britain were indigenous or foreigners, being barbarian, they did not take the trouble to inquire. The different character of their bodily appearance in different parts of the island gave rise to arguments. The red hair and big limbs of the natives of Caledonia point toa German origin. The coloured faces of the Silures, their hair generally plaited, and Spain being opposite give credit to the opinion that the ancient Iberi had migrated and occupied these settlements. Those nearest the Gauls were like them, whether on account of the enduring force of descent or the position of the sky determining in lands adjoin- ing the character of the races. On a general view it is credible that the Gauls occupied the neighbouring island. You may detect the same sacred rites and superstitions. There is not much difference in their language. There is the same daring in demand- ing, the same fear in declining danger. The Britons exhibit greater fierceness, as a long peace has not yet softened them. For we have heard that the Gauls also were distinguished in war, until sloth came with ease and valour was lost with freedom. This too has been the case with the Britons formerly conquered. The rest remain what the Gauls were. Their strength is in their foot ; some tribes, however, fight also from chariots. The noble drives ; lis followers are in front. Formerly they obeyed kings. Now they are distracted by parties and factions amongst their chiefs, and the want of eommon counsel is most useful to us. An agree- ment between two or three states to resist a common danger is Tare ; so while they fight singly the whole are defeated.”

In the account of the battle of the Grampian Mount and the speech of Galgacus there is little that is local or individual. What the Celtie chief said in an unknown tongue ean scarcely have been literally interpreted to the Romans. The historian trained in oratory embodies in Latin eloquence the universal sentiments of freedom. It may be thought, however, that the soil and air of Scotland favour independence of aetion and thought, and that the words, whether of Tacitus or of Galgacus, contain an unconscious prophecy of passages in its future annals and traits in the char- acter of its people not yet obliterated. In the first century of the Christian era Seotland was the scene of events which belong to universal history.

The necessity of the walls of Hadrian and Antonine to protect the Roman province soon appeared. It is doubt- ful how long or during what intervals the country between them remained subject. Few coins of emperors later than Antonine have been found to the north of Hadrian's wall.

SCOVLARD

[HISTORY.

In the reign of Aurelius, the philosophic emperor, war was not encouraged ; but Calphurnius Agricola had to be sent (161) as legate and propretor to Britain to prevent incur- sions of the northern tribes. In that of Commodus a more formidable invasion passed the wall, but Ulpius Marcellus drove back the Britons and repaired it, gaining for Commodus the title of Britannicus. While Septimius Severus was removing rivals from his path, his legate, Virius Lupus, purchased peace (201) from the Meate, a tribe of central Scotland now first named, who along with the Caledonii supersede the older designations of Tacitus and Ptolemy for the population in the vicinity and to the north of Antonine's wall, until in the latter half of the 4th century the Picts and Scots appear. Seven years later

(208) Severus, with his sons Caracalla and Geta, came, Severus

hke Edward I. in his last campaign, worn out in body in but not in spirit, to Britain. After repairing the breaches in Hadrian's wall he not only reconquered the country between it and the wall of Antonine, which he restored, but, passing beyond the steps of Agricola, carried the Roman eagles to the most northern points they reached. The traces of Roman roads from Falkirk to Stirling, through Strathearn to Perth, thence through Forfar, Mearns, and Aberdeen to the Moray Firth, and of Roman camps at Wardykes (Keithock), Raedykes (Stonehaven), Norman Dykes (on the Dee), and Raedykes on the Ythan belong to this period and represent an attempt to subdue or overawe the whole island. The historian Dion does not conceal the failure of the enter- prise, which he ascribes to the illness that terminated in the death of Severus at York (211). He adds a little to our knowledge of the Caledonians by describing the painting of their bodies with forms of animals, their scanty clothing and iron ornaments, their arms —a sword, small shield, and spear, without helmets or breastplates—their

chariots, and their mode of warfare by rapid attack and as rapid retreat to the forest and the marsh. Being without towns, they lived on the produce of herds and the chase, not on fish, though they had plenty. Their mode of government he calls democratic, doubtless from the absence of any conspicuous king rather than of chiefs.

From the death of Severus to the accession of Constan- Constan- tius Chlorus, a period of nearly a century, the history of tius to of the depart-

northern Britain is unknown, In the first (305) two years of his reign Constantius defeated the tribes p between the walls called by Eumenius the Panegyrist "the Caledonians and other Picts,"—a name now first heard, and by this association identified with the Caledo- nians. Next year Constantius died at York; and for more than fifty years a veil is again drawn over northern Britain. It was during this period that Constantine was converted to Christianity, which his father Constantius had favoured during the persecutions of Diocletian. So rapid was the progress of the church in the British province that only ten years after the martyrdom of St Alban Celtic bishops of York, London, and Caerleon— probably the place of that name on the Usk—were present at the council of Arles. In 360 the Scots are for the first time named, by Ammianus Marcellinus, who records their descent along with the Picts upon the Roman pro- vince in terms which imply that they had before passed the southern wall. Four years later the Picts, Saxons, Scots, and Attacotts are said by the same writer to have caused the Britons perpetual anxiety ; but Theodosius, father of the emperor of the same name, repulsed them

1 Papinian, the great jurist, then administered justice at York. Whether the Roman Jaw so introdueed survived in any part of modern England is a problem not yet solved; it certainly did not beyond the wall. The Roman substratum of Scottish law was of later origin, derived ehiefly from the eanon law of the elureh.

Britain,

omans,

times using, the deserted wall of Hadrian, they caused it 368-6th to acquire their name,—a name of awe to the provincial cent.

and recovered the country between the walls, which became (368) a fifth province of Britain, called in honour

ects of jman upa-

of the reigning emperor Valentia. It remained so for a very brief space: the revolt of Maximus (391), which reduced the Roman troops to two legions, led to fresh raids of the Picts and Scots. A legion sent by Stilicho drove them back to the northern wall. But it was soon recalled, and the garrisons were permanently removed prior to 409.

The Roman empire in Britain left widely different results in the southern and in the northern portions of the island. The former became an organized, and in the centres of population a civilized province, in which Latin was spoken by the educated, the arts cultivated, Roman law administered, and Christianity introduced. The latter, with the partial exception of the district south of Antonine's wall, remained in the possession of barbarous heathen races, whose customs had altered little since Roman writers described them as similar to, though ruder than, those of the Celts in Gaul before its conquest. The condition of the population be- tween the walls was probably intermediate between that of the southern provincial Britons and that of the northern savages of the same original Celtic stock, more nearly resembling the latter, perhaps not unlike the condition of the people of Wales, which the Romans in like manner overran, but could not hold, or of Afghanistan as compared with British India. No Roman towns existed, and only one or two villas have been found north of York, and quite near to that place. The camp, the altar, the sepulchral monument, possibly a single temple (the mysterious Arthur's Oven or Julius's Hof on the Carron, now destroyed, but described by Boece and Buchanan and figured by Camden), the stations along the wall, the roads with their milestones, a number of coins (chiefly prior to the 2d century), and a few traces of baths are the only vestiges of Roman occupation in this part of Britain. So completely had Britain passed beyond the serious attention of

Britons and their English conquerors. Their language, though Celtic, is still a problem difficult to solve, as so few words have been preserved. Its almost complete absorp- tion in that of the Gaels or Scots suggests that it did not differ widely from theirs, and with this agrees the fact that Columba and his followers had little difficulty in preaching to them, though they sometimes required an interpreter. Some philologists believe it to have been more allied to Cymric, and even to the Cornish variety ; but the proof is inconclusive.

The Scots came originally to Ireland, one of whose Scots or names from the 6th to the 13th century was Scotia ; Gaels.

Scotia Major it was called after part of northern Britain in the 11th century had acquired the same name. Irish traditions represent the Scots as Milesians from Spain. Their Celtic name Gaidhil, Goidel, or Gael appears more akin to that of the natives of Gaul. They had joined the Picts in their attack on the Roman province in the 4th century, and perhaps had already settlements in the west of Scotland; but the transfer of the name was due to the rise and progress of the tribe called Dalriad, which migrated from Dalriada in the north of Antrim to Argyll and the Isles in the beginning of the 6th century. Their language, Gaidhelic, was the ancient form of the Irish of Ireland and the Gaelic of the Scottish Highlanders. No clear conclusion has been reached as to the meaning of Briton, Cruithne, Scot, and Gael.

the emperor of the East that in the beginning of the 6th century Belisarius, Justinian's general, sarcastically offered it to the Goths in exchange for Sicily ; while Procopius, the Byzantine historian, has nothing to tell of it except that a wall was built across it by the ancients, the direction of which he supposes to have been from

The order of the arrival of the three divisions of the Order of Celtic race and the extent of the islands they occupied are @'tival of

uncertain. Bede in the beginning of the 8th century gives ee

north to south, separating the fruitful and populous east from the barren serpent-haunted western district, and the strange fable that its natives were

excused from tribute to the kings of the Franks in return for the service of ferrying the souls of the dead from the mainland to the shores of Britain.

the most probable account.

“This island at the present time contains five nations, the Angles, Britous, Scots, Picts, and Latins, each in its own dialect cultivat- ing one aud the same sublime study of divine truth. . .. The Latin tongue by the study of the Scriptures has become common to all the rest. At first this island had no other inhabitants but the Britons, from whom it derived its name, and who, carried over into

retsor 2, Barly Celtic Period to Union of Picts and Scots by ee Pe eae By meee or ritons. 77 : ceeamntiian’ ritain, as is reported, from Armorica, possessed themselves of the Kenneth Macalp oe It 1s to the Celts, the first known southern parts. When they had made themselves masters of the inhabitants of Britain, that our inquiry next turns. This greatest part of the island, beginning at the south, the Picts from people were not indigenous, but came by sea to Britain. | Scythia, as is reported, putting to sea in a few long ships, were | A conjecture, not yet proved, identifies as inhabitants of ae by the pas been a ee of viene a a ome _ | the northern coast of Ireland, where, finding the nation of the Scots, Britain before the Celts a branch of the race now repre they begged to be allowed to settle among them, but could not sented in Europe only by the Basques. Amongst many | succeed in obtaining their request. The Scots answered that the names of British tribes in Latin writers three occur, two | island could not contain them both, but ‘we can give you good with increasing frequency, as the empire drew near itg | advice what to do: we know there is another island not far from close —- Britons, Picts, and Scots—denoting distinct ours, to the east, which we often see at a distance, when the days ; u ae ng are clear. If you go thither you will obtain a settlement, or, if any branches of the Celts. Britain was the Latin name for | should oppose, you shall have our aid.’ The Picts accordingly, the larger island and Britons for its inhabitants ; Albion, | sailing over into Britain, began to inhabit the northern part of the % niore ancient title, has left traces in English poetry, island. In process of time Britain, after the Britons and Picts, and in the old name Alba or Albany for northern Scot- received a third nation, the Scots, who, migrating from

Ireland : : : y ; : under their leader Renda, either by fair means or force secured land. The Britons in Roman times occupied, if not the | those settlements amongst the Picts which they still possess.” whole island, at least as far north as the Forth and Clyde. | ‘There is,” he says in another passage, “a very large estuary of the Their language, British, called later Cymric, survives in er nek ewe re Pea ie me we ee . : which gulf runs from the west far into the land, where to this day UM as saga and the Breton of Brittany. =! stands the strong city of the Britons called Alclyth. The Scots which became extinct in the 17th century, was a dialect | arriving on the uorth side of the estuary settled themselves there

of the same speech. Its extent northwards is marked by | as in their own country.” the Cumbraes—the Islands of Cymry in the Clyde—and This statement in its main points (apart from the Cumberland, a district originally stretching from the Clyde | country from which the Picts are said to have come) is to the Mersey. confirmed by Latin authors, in whose meagre notices the ictsor The Picts, a Latin name for the northern tribes who Picts appear before the Scots are mentioned, and both Jruithne. preserved longest the custom of painting their bodies, | occur later than the Britons; by the legends of the three

called themselves Cruithne. Their original settlements appear to have been in the Orkneys, the north of Scot- land, and the north-east of Ireland—the modern counties of Antrim and Down. They spread in Scotland, before or shortly after the Romans left, as far south as the Pentland Hills, which, like the Pentland Firth, are thought to pre- serve their name, occupied Fife, and perhaps left a de- tachment in Galloway. Often crossing, probably some-

Celtic races ; by the narratives of Gildas and Nennius, the only British Celtic historians, the Irish Annals, and the Pictish Chronicle. It is in harmony with the facts con- tained in the Life of Columba, written in the 7th century, but based on an earlier Zzfe, by one of his successors, Cumine, abbot of Iona, who may have seen Columba, and must have known persons who had. The northern Britain brought before us in connexion with Columba in the latter XXI. — 60

5th and

ATA

half of the 6th century is peopled by Cruithne or Picts in

6thcents. the north and central Highlands, having their chief royal

Conver- sion to Chris- tianity.

Ninian.

fort on the Ness, and by Scots in Argyll and the Isles, as far north as Iona and on the mainland Drumalban, the mountain ridge which separates Argyll from Perth and Inverness; there isa British king ruling the south-west from the rock on the Clyde then known as Alclyth or Alclyde, now Dumbarton ; and Saxony, under Northum- brian kings, is the name given to the district south of the Forth, including the eastern Lowlands, where by this time Angles had settled. The scarcity of Celtic history? belonging to Scotland indicates that its tribes were less civilized than their Irish and Welsh kin.

Tt is in the records of the Christian church that we first touch historic ground after the Romans left. Although the legends of Christian superstition are almost as fabu- lous as those of heathen ignorance, we can follow with reasonable certainty the conversion of the Scottish Celts. Three Celtic saints venerated throughout Scottish history —Ninian, Kentigern, Columba —Patrick, the patron saint of Ireland, David, the patron saint of Wales, and Cuthbert, the apostle of Lothian and patron saint of Durham, be- longing to the Celtic Church, though probably not a Celt, mark the common advance of the Celtic races from heathenism to Christianity between the end of the 4th and the end of the 6th century. The conversion of Scot- land in the time of Pope Victor I. in the 2d century is unhistoric, and the legend of St Rule (Regulus) having brought the relics of St Andrew in the reign of Constan- tius from Achea to St Andrews, where a Pictish king built a church and endowed lands in his honour, is, if historical at all, antedated by some centuries. There is no proof that amongst the places which the Romans had not reached, but which had accepted Christianity when Tertullian wrote, there was any part of modern Scotland ; but, as Christian bishops from

Britain without fixed local- ity begin to appear in the 4th century, possibly the first converts in Scotland had been made before its close.

Ninian (q.v.), the son of a British chief in Galloway already

Christian, after converting or reforming his countrymen—one of his converts being Tudwalla, king of Alclyde (? Tothael, father of

1 Of the three branches of the Celts which appear as the first known inhabitants of Scotland the native records are scanty and of late date. Respecting the Britons nothing remains except the History of Gildas in the 6th and that of Nennius in the 9th century, of which very small parts relate to Scotland ; the poems of Aneurin and Taliessin, commonly called Welsh bards, but perhaps natives of Strathclyde ; the lives of saints ; and a fragment of criminal law, eommon to them and the Scots, preserved at the time of its suppression by Edward I.

Dealing with the Picts there is a Latin Chronicle of the 10th cen- tury and additions of later date, containing a valuable list of kings in their own language, and the entries in the Book of Deer of the gifts to that monastery by the Pictish mormaers (chicfs) of Buchan ; but the earliest of these is in an old form of Gaelic.

The Scots are noticed in the Life of Columba, the Duan Albanach of the 11th century, a Latin Chronicle of the 12th century, a few poems treating of their origin and migration, later Latin tracts de- scribing their settlement in Scotland, and the lives of saints, not written in their existing form till the 12th century. But a consider- able amount of legendary material, chiefly consisting of additions to or glosses on the earlier sources, has been collected. When all is told, Scotland has nothing to compare with the Irish Annals and the Welsh Triads, whose fulness of detail and fabulous antiquity in the early portions raise suspicions as to the later which are perhaps undeserved. It has no equivalent to the collection of laws contained in the Senchus Mor or Kain Patrick of Ireland and the Dimetian and Venedotian codes of Wales, where, in the midst of a crowd of minute customs implying a long settlement in western lands, there are traces of others that seem to have come with the Celts from their far-off Eastern birth- place. From these sources—especially from the Irish Annals, and in particular the Annals of

Tigernach, who died in 1088, the Synchronisms of Flann Mainistreach, who died in 1056, the Annals of Innisfallen, compiled in 1215, and of Ulster, compiled in 1498, but from older authorities—the dearth of proper Scottish material has been supple- mented ; but this source of information has to be used with caution. The whole materials are collected in the Chronicles of the Picts and Scots, edited by Mr Skene for the lord clerk register of Scotland.

SCOTLAND

[HISTORY.

Rydderick Hael)—and organizing a diocese, went as a missionary to the southern Picts, who lived amongst or near the mountains north of the Forth and Clyde in the modern counties of Stirling, Perth, and Forfar. His fame grew with the church, and as far north as Shetland, as far south as Westmoreland and Northumber- land, churches were dedicated in his name. His wonder-working relics in the shrine of Candida Casa (at Whithorn? in Galloway) became an object of pilgrimage for more than a thousand years. Three other missionaries belong to the period between Ninian and Kentigern, his successor amongst the Britons of the west: Palladius, sent to the Christians in Ireland by Pope Celestine, died at Fordoun in Mearns labouring amongst the Picts, and his disciples Serf and Ternan converted respectively the Picts of Fife and those of the lowlands of Aberdcen.

his bounty to the church. Columba visited Kentigern at the cemetery of Ninian, on the Molendinar Burn, where courtesies were interchanged between these representatives of the two branches of the Celtic Church in western Scotland, shortly before the British bishops declined at the meeting at St Augustine's oak to submit to the Roman missionary who had converted the Saxons of southern England. Jocelyn of Furness states that Kentigern was at Rome seven times and obtained the privilege of being the pope's vicar free from subjection to any metropolitan. The prince of Cumbria is even said to have acknowledged his precedency. These are inventions of a later age ; but the large possessions, extending over the whole western kingdom, conferred by Rydderick, and after a long lapse of time found by the inquest of David I. when prince of Cumbria to have belonged to the see, may be historical. He died about the beginning of the 7th century, and a

long period of darkness hides the British kingdom and church of Strathclyde. St PaTrick (g.v.), succeeding where Palladius failed, Christianized Ireland in the middle of the 5th century. A passage in his Confession, if all of it applies to Scotland, seems to prove the existence of the church in Scotland for two generations before Patrick's birth, and the allowance during these of marriage to the clergy.

Scotland gave Patrick to Ireland, and Ireland returned the gift in Columba,

Columba. A rare good fortune has preserved in Adamnan's Life the tradition of the acts of the greatest Celtic saint of Scotland, and a picture of the monastic Celtic Church in the 6th and 7th centuries, —an almost solitary fragment of history between 'the last of the Roman and the first of the Anglo-Saxon historians. Born in 521 at Gartan in Donegal, CoLuMBA (q.v.) spent his boyhood at Doire Eithne near Gartan, his youth at Moville on Strangford Lough under Abbot Finian, called the foster-father of the Irish saints from the number of his disciples. Here he was ordained deacon, and, after completing his education under Gemmian, a Christian bard, at the monastery of Clonard, he received priest's orders. In 561 he took part in the battle of Culdrevny (in Connaught), when the chiefs of the Hui Néill (Dalriad Scots), his kindred, defeated Diarmid (Diarmait), a king of eastern Ireland. Excommunicated by the synod of Teltown in Meath, the country of Diarmid, for his share in the battle—according to one account fought at his instance —and moved by missionary zcal, he crossed two years afterwards the narrow sca which separates Antrim from Argyll with twelve companions and founded the monastery of Iona (Hy), on the little island to the west of Mull, given him by his kinsman Conall. The Dalriad Scots, who had settled in the western islands of Scotland and in Lorn early in the 6th century, were already Christians ; but Columba soon after visited the Pictish king Brude, the son of Mailochon, at Craig Phadrich, the isolated hill fort on the Ness, whom he converted, and from whom he received a confirmation of Conall's grant. Columba, on the death of Conall, gave the sanction of religion to the succession of his cousin Aidan, and at the council of Drumceat in Derry obtained the exemption of the Dalriads of Iona from tribute, though they were still bound to give military service to the Irish king, the head of the Hui Néill. He frequently revisited Ireland and took part in its wars: the militant spirit is strongly marked in his character ; but most of his time was

devoted to the administration of his monastery of Iona, and to the planting of other churches and religious houses in the neighbouring isles and mainland, till his death in 597. None of the remains now found in almost evcry island—not even those in Jona itself—date from his time, when wood was still used for building. But the original foundations of the churches of Skye and Tiree were his work ; those extending from Bute and Cantyre—on Islay, Oronsay, Colonsay, Mull, Eigg, Lewis, Harris, Benbecula, and even the distant St Kilda—to Loch Arkaig on the northern mainland of Scottish Dalriada are to be ascribed to him or his immediate followers or successors in the abbacy, as well as those in the country of the Picts, from the Orkneys to Deer in Buchan. The churches which received his name farther south were latcr foundations in his honour. The inost celebrated of his disciples were Baithene, his successor as abbot ; Machar, to whom the church of Aberdcen traces its origin ;

2 In a cave at Glasserton rude crosses incised on stone—probably a font—and the letters SANCT.NI.P. (?) have recently been found.

KENTIGERN (q.v.) of Strathclyde was sup- Kentj. ported by Rydderick or Roderick, called Hael (“the Liberal’) from gern,

I EE

seo rL AW D

Cormac, the navigator, the first missionary to the Orkneys, who perhaps reached the Faroes and Iceland ; and Drostan, the founder of the Scottish monastery of Deer. ‘Celtic The character of the Celtic Church of Columba was, like its Church of mother church in Ireland, modified by migration to a country only Columba. in small part Christian. It was a missionary church, not diocesan but monastic, with an abbot who was a presbyter, not a bishop, for its head, though the office of bishop for ordination existed, and bishops were, in Ireland at least, more numerous than in the later church. It spread, not by the erection of parishes and the care of parochial clergy, but by the reproduction of similar monasteries, the homes of those who adopted a religious life, the only schools in an age of war. It preferred islands for its monasteries for safety, and, in the case of some of its members, who sought, in the language of those times, “a desert in the ocean,” as hermitages ‘

where they might live and die apart from the world. But these were exceptions. The idea of the Celtic monastery was that of a Christian celibate society. Its inmates regarded themselves as being, and often were, members of a family or clan, preserving the customs of their race so far as consistent with celibacy and religious discipline. Of eleven successors of Columba as abbot nine were of his kin. The rule, though its confession is primitive, adapted to an infant and isolated church planted in a heathen world, did not differ greatly from that of later orders. Implicit obedience to the superior, poverty, chastity, hospitality, were the chief precepts. The observance of Easter according to the ancient cycle, the use of the semicircular instead of the coronal tonsure, and a peculiar ritual for mass and baptism were its chief deviations from the practice of the catholic church as fixed by the council of Nice, to which it yielded in the beginning of the 8th century ; frequent prayer, the singing of psalms and hymns, the reading of Scripture, the copying and illuminating of MSS., the teaching of children and novices, and the labour to provide and prepare the necessary food (the ser- vice of women being excluded) were the occupations of the monks. A similar conventual system of which St Bridget, abbess of Kildare, was foundress enlisted the fervour of her sex, and had followers in Darlugdach, abbess of Kildare, who founded Abernethy, in Abba at Coldingham, and in Hilda at Lindisfarne. It was a form of Christianity fitted to excite the wonder and gain the affection of the heathen amongst whom the monks came, practising as well as preaching the self-denying doctrine of the cross. The religion of the Celts is a shadowy outline on the page of history. Notices of idols are rare. They had not the art nccessary for an ideal representa- tion of the human form, though they learnt to decorate the rude stone monuments of an earlier age with elaborate tracery. They had no temples. The mysterious circles of massive stones, with no covering but the heavens, may have served for places of worship, as well as memorials of the more illustrious dead. The names of

A75

When we pass to civil history our knowledge is restricted 597-685. to a list of names.and battles; but the labours of recent scholars allow a brief account of the Celtic races from the end of the 6th to their union in the middle of the 9th century, in part hypothetical, yet a great advance on the

absolute blank which made historians of the 18th century decline the task in despair.

The Britons, whose chief king had ruled at Alclyde, were separated from their fellow-countrymen, the Cymry in Wales, shortly after Columba's death by the rapid advance of the Anglian kingdom of Northumberland, founded in the middle of the 6th century by Ida of Bamborough. One of his successors, Ethelfred, struck the blow, completed by the wars of the next king, Edwin, which severed modern Wales from British Cumbria and Strathclyde. Even Mona, the holy isle of both heathen and Christian Britons, became Anglesey, the island of the Angles. A later incursion towards the end of the century reached Carlisle and sepa- rated the kingdom of Alclyde, which had for its boundary the Catrail or Picts' trench between Peel Fell and Gala- shiels, from English Cumbria (Cumberland south of the Solway), and reduced for a short time Strathclyde to a subject province. When Bede wrote in 731 an Anglian bishopric had been established at Whithorn, which con- tinued till 803. The decline of the Northumbrian king- dom in the 8th century enabled the kings of Strathclyde to reassert their independence and maintain their rule within a restricted district more nearly answering to the valley of the Clyde, and in Galloway, in which there are some faint indications of a Pictish population, till it was united to the kingdom of Scone by the election of Donald, brother of Constantine IL., king of the Scots, to its throne.

Of the Scots of Dalriada somewhat more is known. Their history is interwoven with that of the Picts and meets at many points that of the Angles of Northumber- land, who during the 7th and the beginning of the 8th century, when their kings were the greatest in Britain, endeavoured to push their boundaries beyond the Forth

gods are conspicuously absent, though antiquaries trace the worship of the Sun in the Beltane fires and other rites ; but in the account of their adversaries we read of demons whom they invoked. Divination by rods or twigs, incantations or spells, strange rites connected with the elements of

water and of fire, "choice of weather, lucky times, the watching of the voice of birds,' are mentioned as amongst the practices of the Druids, a priestly caste revered for superior learning and, if we may accept Cesar as an authority, highly educated. This, rather than fetish or animal worship, appears to have been their cult. It was, so far as scanty indi- cations allow a generalization, by an empirical knowledge of the minor and secondary rather than the greater phenomena of nature that the Druids of Britain and Ireland exercised influence, — the tempest and its clements—wind and rain and snow, thunder and lightning—rather than the sun, moon, and stars. Whatever its precise form, this religion made a feeble resistance to the Chris- tian, taught by the monks, with learning drawn from Scripture and some acquaintance with Latin as well as Christian literature, and enforced by the example of a pure life and the hope of a future world. The charms of music and poetry, in which the Celt de- lighted, were turned to sacred use. Columba was a protector of the bards,—himself a bard.

' Jt ig not with the 'screod' our destiny is, Nor with the bird on the top of the twig, Wor with the trunk of a knotted tree, Wor with a 'seadan' hand in hand.

I adore not the voiec of birds,

Nor the 'screod' nor destiny nor lots in this world, Nor a son nor chance nor woman ;

My Druid is Christ the Son of God,

Christ, Son of Mary, the Great Abbot,

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost."

Adamnan relates miracles of Columba scarcely above the level of the practices of the Druids. But superstition is not vanquished by superstition. Celibacy was a protest against the promiscuous intercourse for which Christian fathers condemn the Celts. Fasts and vigils contrasted with the gross, perhaps cannibal, practices still in use. The intense faith in Christ, of lives such as Patrick's and Columba's; won the victory of the cross.

and the Clyde. The history of this kingdom—see Nort#- North-

UMBERLAND (Kincpom or)—forms part of that of Scot- land during these centuries. It planted in LoTHIAN (q.v.) the seed from which the civilization of Scotland grew. To an early period of the contest between the Angles and the Britons, and to the country between the Forth and the Tweed and Solway, perhaps belong the battles magnified by successive poets who celebrated the hero of British medi- seval romance. Whether these battles were really fought +n southern Scotland and on the borders, and Arthur's Seat was one of his strongholds, still "unknown is the grave of Arthur." Before Edwin's death (633) his kingdom extended to the Forth, and the future capital of Scotland received the name of Edwinsburgh from him in place of the Mynyd Agned and Dunedin of the British and Gaelic Celts. During the reign of Oswald (635-642) the North- umbrians were reconverted by Aidan, a monk whom Oswald summoned from Iona, and who became monastic bishop of Lindisfarne—a southern Tona—from which the Celtic form of the Christian church spread amongst the Angles of the north and east of England, until the council of Whitby and the election of Wilfrid to the see of York restored the Roman ritual and diocesan episcopacy, when Colman, their Celtic bishop at Lindisfarne, retired with his monks to Iona. Oswald's brother Oswy extended the dominion of Northumberland over a portion of the country of the northern Picts beyond the Forth. In his reign lived CurHpert (g.v.), the apostle of Lothian, where the monas- tery of St AZbba at Coldingham, the church on the Bass, the three churches of St Baldred at Auldham, Tynning- hame, and Preston, and the sanctuary of Wedale (Stow) kept alive the memory of the Celtic Church. His name

umbrian

supre- macy.

476

685-756. is preserved in St Cuthbert's church at Edinburgh and in

Early Pictish annals.

Kirkeudbright. tions, the earliest records of Anglian speech, one on the cross of Bewcastle in Cumberland, commemorating Alfred, a son of Oswy, the other, taken perhaps from a poem of Czedmon, at Ruthwell in Dumfries. Neither the Tweed nor the Solway was at this period a line of division. was succeeded by his son Egfrid (685), against whom the Picts successfully rebelled; and the Scots and a considerable

part of the Britons also recovered their freedom. Anglian

bishops, however, continued to hold the see of Whithorn

during the whole of the 8th century. The Northumbrian

kings, more successful in the west than in the east, gradually advanced from Carlisle along the coast of Ayr, and even took Alclyde. In what is now England their power declined from the middle of the 8th century before the rise of Mercia. Shortly before the commencement of the 9th century the descents of the Danes began, which led to the conflict for England between them and the Saxons of Wessex. The success of the latter under Alfred and his descendants transferred the supremacy to the princes of the southern kingdom, who, gradually advanc- ing northwards, before the close of that century united all England under their sceptre.

Before its fall Northumberland produced three great men, the founders of English literature and learning, though two of them wrote chiefly in Latin, —Czedmon, the monk of Whitby, the first English poet ; Bede, the monk of Jarrow, the first English historian; and Alcuin, the monk of York, whose school might have become the first English university, had he not lived in the decline of Northumbrian greatness and been attracted to the court of Charlemagne. It is to this early dawn of talent among the Angles of Northumberland that England owes its name of the land of the Angles and its language that of English. The northern dialect spoken by the Angles was the speech of Lothian, north as well as south (in North- umberland) of the Tweed, and was preserved in the broad Scotch of the Lowlands, while modern English was formed from the southern dialect of Alfred, Chaucer, and Wycliffe. This early Teutonic civilization of the lowland district of Scotland, in spite of the Danish wars, the Celtic conquest, and border feuds, never died out, and it became at a later time the centre from which the

Anglo-Saxon character permeated the whole of Scotland, without suppressing, as in England, the Celtic. Their union, more or less complete in different districts, is, after the difference in the extent of the Roman conquest, the second main fact of Scottish history, distinguishing it from that of England. Both, to a great degree, were the result of physical geography. The mountains and arms of the sea repelled invaders and preserved longer the ancient race and its customs.

It is necessary, before tracing the causes which led to the union of races in Scotland, to form some notion of northern Scotland during the century preceding Kenneth Macalpine, during which—the light of Adamnan and Bede being withdrawn—we are left to the guidance of the Pictish Chronicle and the Irish Annals. The Picts whom Columba converted appear to have been consolidated under a single monarch. Brude, the son of Mailochon, ruled from Inverness to Iona on the west and on the north to the Orkneys. A sub-king or chief from these islands appears at his court. The absence of any other Pictish king, the reception of the Columbite mission. in Buchan under Drostan, a disciple of Columba, and perhaps Columba himself, the foundation of the church of Mortlach near Aberdeen by Machar, another of his disciples, favour the conclusion that the dominion of Brude included Aberdeen as wellas Moray and Ross. Its southern limits are unknown,

SCOTLAND

To the same period belong two inscrip-

Oswy

[HISTORY.

The Picts} of Stirling, Perth, and Forfar, corresponding to Strathearn and Menteith,—Athole and Gowrie, Angus and Mearns, had been already converted by Ninian in the 5th century—may have already come under a single king ruling perhaps at Abernethy, with mormaers under him. It seems certain that Abernethy was earlier than Dun- keld a centre of the Celtic Church distinct from Jona, and the seat of the first three bishops of Scotland. Its round tower cannot be safely ascribed to an earlier date than the 9th century, but may have been preceded by a church dedicated to St Bridget either in the 5th by Nechtan Morbet, or in the 6th century by Garnard, son of Donald, a later Pictish king. Although there exists a complete list of the Pictish kings from Brude, son of Mailochon, to Brude, son of Ferat, conquered by Kenneth Macalpine, and of the Scots of Dalriada from Aidan (converted by Columba) to Kenneth Macalpine, with their regnal years, it is only here and there that a figure emerges suffi-ciently distinct to enter history. Parts of these lists are fictitious and others

doubtful, nor do we know over what extent of country the various monarchs ruled. Of the figures more or less prominent amongst the Pictish kings are Brude, the son of Derili, the contemporary of Adam- nan, who was present at the synod of Tara when the law called Kain Adamnan, freeing women from military service, was adopted, and who died in 706, being then styled king of Fortren. Nechtan, another son of Derili, was the contemporary of Bede, who gives (710) the letter of Ceolfrid, abbot of Wearmouth, to him when he adopted the Roman Easter and the tonsure. Six years later Nechtan expelled the Columbite monks from his dominions. They retired to Dalriada, as their brethren in Ncrthumberland had done when a similar change was made by Oswy. Nechtan also asked for masons to build a church in the Roman style, to be dedicated to St Peter, and several churches in honour of that apostle were founded within his territory. Shortly after, Egbert, an Anglian monk, persuaded the community of Hy (Iona) itself to conform, but too late to lead to the union of the churches of the Scots and the Picts, which were separated also by political causes.

Fifteen years later the greatest Pictish monarch, Angus Angus MacFergus, after a contest with more than one rival, Mac- gained the supremacy, which he held for thirty years ***8"*** *(731-761). In revenge for the capture of his son Brude by Dungal, son of Selvach, king of the Dalriad Scots, he attacked Argyll, and laid waste the whole country, destroy- ing Dunnad (?0n Loch Crinan), then the capital, burnt Creich (in Mull), and put in chains Dungal and Feradach, the sons of Selvach. He next conquered (739), and it is said drowned, Talorgan, son of Drostan, king of Athole, one of his rivals, and, resuming the Dalriad war, reduced the whole of the western Highlands. The Britons of Strathclyde were assailed by a brother of Angus, who A a ea a*

? But there had been a time when not one but several Pictish kings ruled the northern and central districts of Scotland, and of this we have perhaps a trace in the Pictish legend according to which Cruithne, the eponymus of the race, had seven sons,—Cait, Cee, Ciric, Fib, Fidach, Fotla, Fortren. Conjecture identifies five of these names with districts known in later history,—Cait with Caithness, Ciric with Mearns (Magh Circen, the plain of Ciric), Fib with Fife, Fotla with Athole (Athfotla), Fortren with southern Perthshire, con- necting it with a division of the same county in a tract of the 12th century. (Comp. plate VI.) Six of the divisions—Angus and Mearns,

Athole and Gowrie, Strathearn and Menteith, Fife and Fortreive, Mar and Buchan, Moray and Ross—fairly correspond to districts after- wards ruled by the Celtic mormaers of Angus, Athole, Strathearn, Fife, Mar, and Moray ; Caithness in the 9th century became Norse, and a new earl (of March) was introduced from the south of the Forth. They correspond also to seven great earldoms of Scotland, which appear with more or less distinctness on several occasions in the reigns of the Alexanders, This, at least, is a highly ingenious theory, but not certain history.

Karly

EARLY CELTIC PERIOD. |

fell in battle at Mugdoch in Stirling; and Angus, with his ally Ecbert, king of Northumberland, retaliated by burning Alclyde (756). About this time (752) Coilin Droighteach (the Bridgemaker), abbot of Iona, removed most of the relics of his abbey to Ireland, and this is the most probable date of the legend of the relics of St An- drew being brought from Patras to St Andrews, where the sons of a Pictish king, Hungus (Angus MacFergus), who was absent in Argyll, or, according to another ver- sion, Hungus himself, dedicated Kilrighmont (St Andrews)

and the district called the Boar's Chase to St Andrew.

The ascription of the foundation to an earlier king of the same name in the 4th century was due to the wish to give the chief bishopric of Scotland an antiquity greater than Iona and Glasgow, greater even than Canterbury and York. After the death of Angus MacFergus no king is connected with any event of importance except. Constantine, son of Fergus (died 820), who is said to have founded the church of Dunkeld, —226 years after Garnard, son of Donald, founded Abernethy. This fact, though the earlier date is not certain, points to the Perthshire lowlands as having been for a long time the centre of the chief Pictish mon- archy. Probably Scone was during this period, as it cer- tainly became afterwards, the political capital; and the kings latterly are sometimes called kings of Fortren. If so, the chief monarchy under the pressure of the Norse attacks had passed south from Inverness, having occupied perhaps at various times, Dunottar, Brechin, Forfar, Fort- eviot, and Abernethy as strongholds ; but it is not possible to

say whether there may not have continued to be inde- pendent Pictish rulers in the north.

The annals of Dalriada are even more perplexing than

ae of those of the Picts after the middle of the 6th century. alriad 'There is the usual list of kings, but they are too numer-

Scots.

= ee

ous, and their reigns are calculated on an artificial system. The forty kings from Fergus MacEarc to Fergus MacFerch- ard, who would carry the date of the Scottish settlement back to three centuries at least before the birth of Christ, have been driven from the pale of history by modern cri- ticism. The date of the true settlement was that of the later Fergus, the son of Earc, in 503. From that date down to Selvach, the king who was conquered by Angus MacFergus about 730, the names of the kings can be given with reasonable certainty from Adamnan, Bede, and the Irish Annals. But the subsequent names in the Scot- tish chronicles are untrustworthy, and it is an ingenious conjecture that some may have been inserted to cover the century following 730, during which Dalriada is supposed to have continued under Pictish rule. This view is not free from its own difficulties. It is hard to explain how Kenneth Macalpine, called by all Scottish records a Scot, though in Irish Annals styled (as are several of his succes- sors) king of the Picts, succeeded in reversing the conquest of Angus MacFergus and establishing a Scottish line on the throne of Scone, in the middle of the 9th century. This difficulty is supposed to be solved by the hypothesis that Kenneth was the son of a Pictish father, Alpine, but of a Scottish mother, and was entitled to the crown by a peculiarity of Pictish law, which recognized descent by the mother as the test of legitimacy. The records which speak of the destruction of the Picts are treated as later inventions, and it is even doubted whether the connexion between Alpine and Kenneth and the older race of Dalriad kings is not fictitious.'

1 The above statement is a brief outline of the reconstruction of this period of Scottish history due to two scholars who have done more than any others

to elucidate it, ‘Father Innes and Mr Skene. Their negative criticism, which destroys the fabric reared by a succession of historians from Fordun or his continuator Bowmaker to Buchanan, is a masterly work, not likely to be superseded. Whether the construc- tive part will stand is not certain, but it explains many of the facts.

sco TL AWN wD

universal.

A77

Whatever may be the solution ultimately reached as to Kenneth Macalpine’s antecedents, his accession represents

a revolution which led by degrees to a complete union of the Picts and Scots and the establishment of one kingdom —at first called Albania and afterwards Scotia—which included all Scotland north of the Forth and Clyde, except Caithness, Sutherland, Orkney and Shetland (the northern isles or Nordreyar), the Hebrides (the southern isles or Sudreyar), and Man; these fell for a time into the hands of the Norsemen. ‘This revolution had two causes or concomitants, one religious and the other poli- tical. Kenneth Macalpine in the seventh year of his reign (851) brought the relics of St Columba from Jona to a church he built at Dunkeld, and on his death he was buried at Iona. A little earlier the Irish Culdees, then in their first vigour, received their earliest grant in Scotland at Loch Leven from Brude, one of the last kings of the Picts, and soon found their way into all the principal Columbite monasteries, of which they represent a reform. The Irish monastic system did not yet give place to the Roman form of diocesan episcopacy. The abbot of Dun- keld succeeded to the position of the abbot of Iona and held it until the beginning of the 10th century, giving ecclesiastical sanction to the sovereign at Scone, as Columba had done in the case of Aidan. As early as the

beginning of the 8th century, however, a Pictish bishop of

Scotland appears at a council of Rome, and he had at least two successors as sole bishops or primates of the Celtic Church before dioceses were

formed. Scotland north of the firths thus remained at a lower stage of church organization than England, where a complete system of dioceses had been established in great part answering to the original Anglo-Saxon kingdoms or their divisions, with Canterbury and York at their head as rivals for the primacy. But the Celtic clergy who now conformed to the Roman ritual preserved some knowledge of the Latin language, and a connexion with Rome as the centre of Latin Christianity, which was certain to result in the adoption of the form of church government now almost The other circumstance which had a powerful influence on the foundation of the monarchy of Scone and the consolidation of the Celtic tribes was the descent on all the coasts of Britain and Ireland of the Norse and Danish vikings.

756-867.

Union of Picts and

Scots.

The Danes chiefly attacked England from Viking

Northumberland and along the whole east and part of the Tids.

southern seaboard; the Norsemen attacked Scotland, especially the islands and the north and west coasts, going as far south as the Isle of Man and the east and south of Ireland. It had now become essential to the existence of a Scottish Celtic kingdom that its centre should be removed farther inland. Argyll and the Isles, including Iona, were in the path of danger. No monk would have now chosen island homes for safety. In 787 the first arrival of the viking ships is noticed in the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle. Some years later the Irish Axnals mention that all "the islands of Britain were wasted and much harassed by the Danes." Amongst these were Lindisfarne, Rathlin off Antrim, Iona (794), and Patrick's island near Dublin (798). ona was thrice plundered between 802 and 826, when Blathmac, an abbot, was killed. A poem composed not long after the event states that the shrine of Columba was one of the objects in search of which the Norsemen came, and that it was concealed by the monks. It was to preserve the relics from this fate that some of them were transferred by Droighteach, the last abbot, to Ireland

and others by Kenneth to Dunkeld. For half a century the vikings were content with plunder, but in the middle of the 9th they began to form settlements. In 849 Olaf the White established himself at Dublin as king of Hii Ivar ; in 867 a Danish kingdom was set up in Northumberland ;

867-914.

Religion of Norse vikings.

Kenneth Mac- alpine.

Donald I.

478

and Harold the Fairhaired, who in 872 became sole king of Norway, soon after led an expedition against the vikings, who had already seized Orkney and Shetland, and estab- lished an earldom under Rognwald, earl of Mceri, whose son Hrolf the Ganger conquered Normandy in the begin- ning of the next century. The position of Scotland, therefore, when Kenneth united the Picts and Scots was this: central Scotland from sea to sea—Argyll and the Isles, Perthshire, Angus and Mearns, and Fife—was under the dominion of the king who had Scone for his capital ; the south-west district—the valley of the Clyde, Ayr, Dumfries, and Galloway—was under a British king at Dumbarton; the south-east district or Lothian was part of "Saxon or Sassenach Land,"—the general Celtic name for the country of the Anglo-Saxons, but now owing to the divided state of Northumberland held by different lords ; the north of Scotland was under independent Celtic chiefs, as Moray and Mar, or already occupied by Norse- men, as Caithness, Orkney and Shetland, and the Hebrides. The whole Celtic population was Christian ; but the Norse invaders were still heathen. Their religion was similar to that of their Anglo-Saxon kin, of a type higher than the paganism of the Celts. It resembled the Celtic indeed in. the absence or infrequency of idols, but a complex inythology peopled heaven with gods—Woden and Thor, Freya and Balder, and others of inferior rank—devised legends of the origin of earth and man, Valhalla the hero's paradise, and a shadowy hell for all who were not heroes. Some of its legends are coloured from Christian sources, and underneath the mythology may be detected a ruder

and more ancient superstitious belief in omens and divination,—a nature-worship more like that of the Celts. But it is the later form which represents the Norse character as it was when it came into contact with the nations of Britain,—its daring defiance of man and the gods, its struggle with, yet in the end its calm acceptance of, the decrees of fate. The Norsemen both at home and in their colonies in Scotland embraced Christianity under Olaf Tryggvason in the end of the 10th century ; but along with Christianity they retained the old heathen senti- ments and customs, which, like their language, mingled with and modified the Celtic character on the western but far more on the northern coasts and islands, where the population was largely Norse. A strain neither Celtic nor Teutonic nor Norman occasionally meets us in Scottish history : it is derived from the blood or memory of the Norse vikings.

3. Later Celtic Period: Growth of the Kingdom of Scone Jrom Kenneth Macalpine to Malcolm Canmore.—During this period, though the Celtic annals are still obscure, we can trace the united Celtic kingdom growing on all sides under Kenneth's successors,—southward by the conquest of Lothian on the east and by the union of the Strath- clyde kingdom on the west, and for a time by holding English Cumbria under the English kings, and northward by the gradual incorporation of Angus, Mearns, Moray, and possibly the southern district of Aberdeen. Kenneth Macalpine's reign of sixteen years (844-860) was a time of incessant war. He invaded Saxony (Lothian) six times, burnt Dunbar, and seized Melrose (already a rich abbey, though on a different site from the Cistercian foundation of David I.), while the Britons (of Strathclyde) burnt Dun- blane and the Danes wasted the land of the Picts as far as Cluny and Dunkeld. After they left Kenneth rebuilt the church of Dunkeld and replaced in it Columba's relics. He dicd at Forteviot and was buried at Iona.

He was succeeded by his brother Donald I. (861-863),

who, with his people the Gaels, established the laws of Aed,

son of Eachdach, at Forteviot. Aed was a Dalriad king of the 8th century ; but the contents of his laws are unknown.

SCORLARM®S

Perhaps tanistry, by which the successor to the king was elected during his life from the eldest and worthiest of his kin, usually a collateral in preference to a descendant, was one feature, for it certainly prevailed amongst the Irish and Scottish Gaels. The next king, who succeeded in accordance with that custom, was Constantine I. (863- Consten. 877), son of Kenneth. His reign was occupied with tine 1. conflicts with the Norsemen. Olaf the White, the Norse king of Dublin, laid waste the country of the Picts and Britons year after year, and in 870 reduced Aleclyde, the British capital; but, as he disappears from history, he probably fell in a subsequent raid. He is said to have married a daughter of Kenneth, and some claim in her right may account for his Scottish wars. In the south the Danish leader Halfdan devastated Northumberland and Galloway; while in the north Thorsten the Red—a son of Olaf by Audur, the wealthy daughter of Ketil Flatnose (called Finn, "the Fair," by the Celts), a Norse viking of the Hebrides, who afterwards went to Iceland and figures in the sagas—conquered the coast of Caithness and Suther- land as far as Ekkials Bakki (the Oikel). But he was killed in the following year. Constantine met with the same fate at a battle at Inverdovat in Fife in 877, at the hands of another band of northern marauders. His death led to a disputed succession. His heir, according to the custom of tanistry, was his brother Aodh, who was killed by his own people after a year. Eocha, the son of Run, a king of the Britons, claimed in right of his mother, a daughter of Kenneth, according to the Pictish law, and governed at first along with Cirie or Grig, his tutor; then Grig. Grig ruled alone, until they were both expelled from the kingdom and Donald II., son of Constantine, came to the throne (889). The Pictish Chronicle reports that during the government of Grig the Scottish Church was freed from subjection to the laws of the Picts (meaning probably from liability to secular service). Grig is also said to have subdued all Bernicia and "almost Anglia," a state- ment which if confined to the north of the Northumbrian kingdom is not improbable, for it had then fallen into anarchy through the attacks of the Danes. The church of Ecclesgreig near Montrose possibly commemorates Grig and indicates the northward extension of the monarchy of Scone. In the reign of Donald II. (889-900), son of Donald Constantine I., Scotland was again attacked by the I. Norsemen. Sigurd, the Norse earl of Orkney, seized Caithness,

Sutherland, Ross, and part of Moray, where he built the fort of Burghead, between the Findhorn and the Spey. Farther south the Danes took Dunottar, where Donald was slain. After his time the name of the kingdom of Scone was no longer Pictavia, but Albania or Alba, a more ancient title of northern Scotland, perhaps resumed to mark the growth of the Scottish-Pictish monarchy in the central and eastern Highlands.

Donald IT. was followed by Constantine IT. (900-940), Constan- son of Aodh and grandson of Kenneth, and his long reign is tine U. a proof of his power. He was the greatest Scottish king, as Angus MacFergus had been the greatest of the pure Pictish race. In the first part of it his kingdom was still beset by the Norsemen. In his third year they wasted Dunkeld and all Alba. Next year they were repulsed in Strathearn. In his 8th year Rognwald, the Danish king of Dublin, with earls Ottir and Oswle Crakaban, ravaged Dunblane. Six years later the same leaders were de- feated on the Tyne (? in East Lothian) by Constantine, who had been summoned to assist Eldred, lord of Bam- borough. Ottir was slain, but Rognwald escaped and reappears some years later as king of Northumberland. This is a battle whose site and incidents are told in a con- flicting manner by different chronicles; but it appears certain that Constantine saved his dominions from further

successor of Athelstan, expelled Olaf, son of Sitric, from 914-1014. Northumberland, and in the following year, to prevent the Cumbrians from again aiding the Danes, he 'harried. Cumberland and gave it all up to Malcolm, king of Scots, on condition that he should be his fellow-worker both on sea and land." 'This was the same policy which led his father to call in the aid of Erik Bloody-Axe. The kings of Wessex wisely granted what they could not hold to the best northern warrior, Celt or Scandinavian, under con- ditions which acknowledged more or less strictly their supremacy. The Cumbria so granted was the country south of the Solway to the Dee, but it may also have included Strathclyde, for at this period Strathclyde Waelas and Cumbrians are frequently used as equivalent names. Malcolm lent no aid to Erik Bloody-Axe, when in the reign of Eadred he tried (949) to recover Northumberland, but he joined his brother-

in-law Olaf, Sitric's son, in an expedition with the same object, when they laid waste the country as far south as the Tees. Three years later Erik again returned, and finally drove Olaf back to Ire- land, where he founded the kingdom of Dublin, which lasted till the battle of Clontarf. Malcolm died fighting either against the men of Mearns or of Moray. Three kings followed (954-971),—Indulf, son of Constantine, Duff, son of Malcolm, Colin, son of Indulf ; in the reign of Indulf the Northumbrians evacuated Edinburgh, which thenceforward was Scottish ground. A Saxon burgh, a fort, perhaps a town, was now for the first time within the Celtic kingdom.

Kenneth IT. (971-995), son of Malcolm, soon after his Kenneth accession made a raid on Northumberland as far south as '- Cleveland. The statement of two English chroniclers (John of Wallingford and Henry of Huntingdon), that Lothian was ceded to him by Eadgar on condition of homage, and that the people should still use the language of the Angles, is not mentioned in the Anglo-Saxon or any Scottish chronicle. Nor is it easy to believe the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle as amplified by Florence of Worce- ster, that Kenneth was one of the kings who rowed Eadgar on the Dee in sign of homage. At this time, in the north and west, the Orkney earls were all-powerful, and Kenneth was occupied with contests nearer his own territory, —especially with the mormaer of Angus, whose grandson, through his daughter Fenella, he slew at Dun- sinane, and in revenge for which he was himself treacher- ously killed at Fettercairn in Mearns by Fenella, whose name is still preserved in the traditions of that district. The foundation of the church at Brechin is attributed to this king.

Kenneth was followed, as he had been preceded, by insignificant kings,—Constantine, son of Colin, and Ken- neth, son of Duff. His son, Malcolm IT. (1005-34), gained Malcolm the throne by the slaughter of his predecessor Duff at HU. Monzievaird, and at once turned his arms southwards; but his first attempt to conquer northern Northumberland was repelled by Ethelred, son of Waltheof, its earl, who de- feated him at Durham. About the same time Sigurd, earl of Orkney, having defeated Finlay, mormacr of Moray, became ruler, according to the Norse saga, of "Ross and Moray, Sutherland and the dales » of Caithness. He had conflicts with other Scottish chiefs, but appears to have made terms with the kings of both Norway and Scotland, __with Olaf Tryggvason by becoming Christian and with Malcolm by

marrying his daughter. He fell at Clontarf (1014), the memorable battle near Dublin, by which Brian Boru and his son Murcadh defeated the Danish kings 11 Ireland and restored a Celtic dynasty. Malcolm conferred the earldom of Caithness on his grandson Thorfinn, the infant son of Sigurd ; and Sigurd's Orkney earldom fell to his sons, Somerled, Brusi, and Einar; while Moray again

serious attacks by the vikings. He had now to meet a more formidable foe,—the West Saxons, whose kings, the descendants of Alfred, were steadily moving northwards. In spite of his wars, Constantine found time in the early part of his reign for two important reforms,—one eccle- siastical, the other civil. In his sixth year (906) he, along with Cellach, bishop of St Andrews—the first' of twelve Celtic bishops of Scotland—swore on the Hill of Faith at Scone (906) that "the laws and discipline of the faith, and the rights of the churches and the gospel, should be pre- served on an equal footing with the Scots." This obscure notice of the Pictish Chronicle indicates the establishment or restoration of the Scottish Church, which the Pictish kings had oppressed, to an equality with that of the Pictish. Asa sign of the union the crozier of St Columba, called Cathbuadth ("victory in battle"), was borne before Con- stantine's armies. Two years later, on the death of Donald, king of the Britons of Strathclyde, Constantine procured the election of his own brother Donald to that kingdom. Though he thus strengthened church and state, Alfred's successors were too powerful for him. The Anglo- Saxon Chronicle records of Edward the Elder, that in 924, having built a fort at Bakewell, in the Peak of Derbyshire, "the king and nation of the Scots, Rognwald the North-) umbrian and others, and also the king of the Strath- clyde Welsh and his people, chose him for father and lord." His son Athelstan is related by the same authority to have subjugated all the kings in the island, amongst whom are mentioned by name Howell king of the west Welsh, Constantine king of the Scots, Owen king of Gwent, and Eldred of Bamborough, who "made peace with oaths at Emmet and renounced every kind of idolatry." These entries are not beyond suspicion, The Peak was a distant point for the Scottish king. Rognwald, the Northumbrian, died in 920, according to the Irish Annals. Howell and Constantine were already Christians and could not have then renounced idolatry. If there is any truth in the sub- mission of the Scots to Edward the Elder it did not last, for some years later the Chronicle states that Athelstan

went into Scotland with a land and sea force and ravaged a great part of it. A league of the northern kings against Athelstan was dispersed (937) by his great victory at Brunanburgh (? Wendun, between Aldborough and Knares-borough, according to Skene). The forces allied against him were those of Constantine, his son-in-law Olaf, son of Sitric (called also the Red), and another Olaf, son of Godfrey, from Ireland, besides the Strathclyde and north Welsh kings. For Athelstan there fought, in addition to his own West Saxons, the Mercians and some mercenaries from Norway, amongst them Egil, son of Skalagrim, the hero of a famous Icelandic saga. No greater slaughter had been known since the Anglo-Saxons, " proud war-smiths," as their poet calls them, overcame the Welsh and gained England. A son of Constantine was slain, four kings, and seven earls. Constantine himself escaped to Scot- land, where in old age he resigned the crown for the tonsure and became abbot of the Culdees of St Andrews. Athelstan died two years after Brunanburgh, but before his death granted Northumberland to Erik Bloody-Axe, son of Harold Haarfagr, who was almost immediately expelled by the Irish Danes. Athelstan, even after so great a victory, could not annex Northumberland, much less Scotland, to his dominions. Malcolm Constantine's successor, Malcolm I. (943-954), son of L Donald IL. began his reign by invading Moray and killing Cellach, its chief king. Meantime the Danish kings of Dublin had been endeavouring to maintain their hold on Northumberland with the aid of the Cumbrians, whose country they had already settled, and in this attempt the two Olafs had a temporary success; but Eadmund, the

1014-1058.

480

came into the possession of a Celtic mormaer, Finlay, who is called king of Alba by one of the Irish chronicles, and the Hebrides probably into that of a Norse earl, Gilli, from whom they were afterwards recovered by Thorfinn. While the Celts of Ireland were thus expelling the Danish invaders and in Scotland there was divided possession, the result of compromise and of intermarriage, England fell under the dominion of the Danish kings Sweyn and Canute. Canute committed Northumberland to Erik, a Dane, as earl; but Eadulf Cudel, a weak brother of the brave Oswulf and son of Waltheof,

the Anglian earl, still retained the northern district as lord of Bamborough. Profiting by the distracted state of northern England, Malcolm again invaded Northumberland with Owen of Cumbria, called the Bald, and by the victory of Carham

Conquest (1018) near Coldstream won Lothian, which remained

of __ from that time an integral part of Scotland. Canute, | by his son Malcolm (III.) Canmore. Macbeth reigned Lothian. on his return from a pilgrimage to Rome, is said by | seventeen years (1040-57). He was, as far as records the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle to have gone to Scotland, | state, an able monarch, who succeeded in repelling the where Malcolm and two other kings, Maelbeth and Jeh- | attacks of Siward on behalf of his grandson, who showed marc, submitted to him, but he held Scotland for only a | liberality to the church, as the foundation of himself little while. Maelbeth is supposed to be Macbeth, then | and his wife at Loch Leven testify, sent money for the mormaer of Moray, afterwards king, and Jehmarc, a Celtic | poor to Rome, and possibly went with it on a pilgrim- or Scandinavian chief in Argyll. The hold which Canute, | age; but he fell at last in the battle of Lumphanan in who was trying to grasp Norway and Denmark as well as | Mar, where the young Malcolm was aided by Tostig, son England, had upon northern Britain must have been | of Godwine, the great West Saxon earl who had become slender as well as short; but the acknowledgment of the | earl of Northumberland. A few months later, Lulach, remacy of so great a king was natural. At his death | the son of Gillecomhain, a former mormaer of Moray, who supremacy § § : ’ : yy V his overgrown empire fell to pieces, and Scotland was | had continued the war, and 1s nominally counted a king, left to itself, ‘Two years before Malcolm II. died. His | though called fatuous, was slain at Essie in Strathbogie conquest of Lothian perhaps led to the new name of | (N.W. Aberdeen), and Malcolm Canmore became king. Scotia (now generally applied to his kingdom), which | With his reign a new and clearer era of the history of was to become its permanent name. The Scotland he | Scotland commences. governed still had its centre at Scone, but included besides | The Soottishy asls had mone terse maul ol ee — ae Piast said : ment. The united monarchy of Scone lasted for two centuries in archy o the original Pictish district of ad — ce spite of its powerful neighbours, but it was

dependent almost Scone. Mearns, Fife, the southern district of Aberdeen, an entirely on the attachment of the clans to their chiefs and of the Lothian, his own conquest, while Moray and western | whole tace to the hereditary king. It was traditional, not consti- Ross, and perhaps Argyll and the Isles, owned his suze- {ublanal oa fae naspied outa theta at oma not a

; is ti neld together, but with little settled law and no local government. ee Norse oe < ai me It wanted the elements of civil life, for it had no organized towns the Orkneys, Caithness, Sutherland, and the Hebrides. or assemblies of the people. There was little commerce or trade. Whether a Cumbrian king still ruled Strathclyde and | Cattle and sheep were the chief commodities and the medium of Galloway is doubtful. After Owen the Bald, who fought | exchange. There is no trace of an independent coinage. Chris- at Carham, the next king mentioned is Duncan, son of the | tianity had not yet leavened ne whole me ags in

faleolm. 'Maéléolm TI, was monasteries were ccntres of light within Imite circles. @ : grandson and the successor of Malcolm. omre : Celtic character, alien to set and quick forms of business, was Celtic liberal to the church, as we know from his gifts to the | alive to the pleasures of the imagination, oratory, and song. Its and church of Deer ; but the foundation of Mortlach (Banff- | cardinal defect was a aed regard fos soa mes ae: ba Angi

i i devotion to a leader, whether priest, chief, or king. ie Christian Saxon a te oe —" aa gt ing Moe ie oe Anglo-Saxons of the Lothians, the N orsemen, only recently and character

eo ke ee ee ee half converted, in the islands of the north and west, brought qualities spurious, introducing into the Celtic kingdom a fully deve- | and customs into the common stock of the future Scottish people loped feudalism, which was not known in England, still | which were wanting to the Celts. The Anglo-Saxon in his original less in Scotland, till after the Conquest. As he left no heme, as in Yoel athe Lepaae a ee

7 = Naxon, as he was € € = ; male heir, Maleolm's death led iy – doubtful succession and the town a better regulated freedom,—the domestic and

civic and a perplexed period of Scottish history. f virtues. His imagination, even his poetry, had a touch of prose,

The Scottish historians and the Norse sagas can with | put he possessed the prosaic qualities of plain speech, common difficulty be reconciled. Little light can be got from | sense, and truth,—the ee Se The beard u oe either the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle or the Irish Annals. eee Westen eee OR ee The Noriiene iacronceeel Shakespeare seized the weird story of Macbeth, as told new clemeuts, the spirit of chivalry and the too rigid bonds of the by Boece and translated in Holinshed, and history can | feudal law. The changes due to these new elements began in hardly displace the tragedy, so true to the dark side of | Scotland in the reign of Malcolm Canmore, and Ter soeylre in human nature, by the meagre outline at its command, | those of his Geneeniapte. aes net colie eres "while This outline is supported by authentic evidence, and agrees | S™@dually civilized under Saxon and Norm aged

. : en. y, wheeees 8 retaining its native vigour. The result was the establishment of with the situation which existed between the death of Mal- | the independence of Scotlaud within its present bounds during the colm IT. and the accession of Malcolm Canmore. prosperous reigns of the Alexanders (1107-1285).

Duncan. Malcolm II. was succeeded by his grandson Duncan 4. Transition from a Celtic to an Anglo-Norman Feudal Malcolm

(1034-40), son of his daughter Bethoc and Crinan, a lay or secular abbot of Dunkeld; but his right was probably from the first contested by Thorfinn, who had become the most powerful of the Norse earls. If the Orkney saga could be relied upon, he had as many as eleven earls or mormaers subject to him, and a modern but unsafe in-

terpretation of one passage extends his dominion as far as Galloway. Duncan, after an unsuccessful attempt on Durham, turned his arms to the

north to check the further advance of his kinsman, but was defeated on the Pentland Firth, Moddan, whom he had tried to set up as earl of Caithness, was burnt in his own house, and Duncan him- self was killed at Bothgownan near Elgin by Macbeth, his own general, Moray, and his wife Gruoch was daughter of Bocte, son of Kenneth II.; thus he had a possible pretension to the crown if it could descend by females. But his real posi- tion appears to have been that of a successful general asserting the independence of the northern Celts against Duncan, who by his marriage with the daughter of Earl Siward, the Northumbrian earl, had shown the tendency to unite Saxon with Celtic blood which was followed

Morarchy: Malcolm Canmore and his Descendants.— a Malcolm Canmore (1058-93) spent his boyhood in Cum-”™

bria, his youth at the court of Edward the Confessor of England. He was by race only half a Celt, for his mother was an Anglo-Dane, sister of Earl Siward. The court which helped to form his character was already sub-

Macbeth was son of Finlay, mormaer of Macbeth,

CANMORE TO ALEXANDER TIL.)

ject to Norman influence. The Confessor, like Canmore, had been educated in exile, at the Norman court, and favoured the Normans. Though the course of events led Malcolm to ally himself with the Anglo-Saxon royal house, the Anglo-Saxon and Anglo-Norman periods of Scottish history were not, as in England, separated by several centuries, but were nearly contemporaneous. If Malcolm, Edgar, and the first Alexander may be regarded as Scoto- Saxon, David I. and his successors were truly Scoto-Nor- man feudal monarchs. Apart from the customs and language of Lothian, which descended from Anglian North- umberland, Scotland received scarcely any pure Saxon institutions. Those it did receive have a mixed Saxon and Norman imprint. There were no tithings, wapen- takes, or hundreds, no trial by compurgation, no frank- pledge. No witenagemot or folkmotes preceded the great council which became parliament. In short, the system of government we call the Anglo-Saxon constitution never existed in Scotland, although the court of the four southern burghs and the customs of the towns of Lothian copied from those of Newcastle, and a

similar association of burghs, the Hanse of Aberdeen, of which there are faint traces in the north, had a Teutonic origin. And some traces of Anglo-Saxon criminal law are to be found in the early Scottish charters.

Canmore ascended the throne (1058) not long before England was subjugated by William the Conqueror. The only recorded event of his reign prior to the Conquest was his quarrel with Tostig, his "sworn" brother, when he made a raid south of the Tweed and violated the peace of St Cuthbert by ravaging Lindisfarne. The early years of his reign were devoted to establishing his rule in the

northern districts, where his marriage to Ingebiorg, widow.

of Earl Thorfinn, related by the Norse but not the Scottish writers, may have aided him. Ingebiorg, already old, can- not have long survived the union, nor is the fact of the marriage certain. The victory of Hastings brought to the Scottish court as refugees Edgar Atheling, grandson of Edmund Ironside, and his three sisters. Their father, Edward, had found shelter in Hungary in the reign of Canute and married an Hungarian princess. The eldest daughter of the marriage, Margaret, became the wife (1068) of Malcolm Canmore. Her virtues more than his wars make his reign an epoch of Scottish history. This alliance and the advance of the Conqueror on North- umberland in the third year of his reign rendered a collision inevitable. Malcolm twice harried Northumber- land during the reign of the Conqueror with the view of restoring the Atheling. In the interval between these expeditions William retaliated by invading Scotland as far as Abernethy, where he forced Malcolm to do homage. After the second he sent his son Robert, who reached Falkirk ; but he returned without having accomplished anything, except that he built Newcastle as a frontier fortress. In this reign Northumberland itself was never really subdued, and William laid waste the district between the Humber and the Tees as a barrier against the northern Angles and Danes. After the Conqueror's death Malcolm prepared for war, but peace was made before he had left Lothian, and he again took an oath of homage. Next year William Rufus succeeded in reducing Cumbria south of the Solway, then held by Dolphin, lord of Carlisle, a vassal of Malcolm, rebuilt the castle of Carlisle, and made the adjoining co@ntry for the first time English. He then summoned Malcolm

to Gloucester ; but the meeting ended, like others when a summons to do homage at a distance from the border was sent to the kings of Scotland, in settling both in a more hostile attitude. Malcolm on his return raised his whole forces for the last expedition of his life, in which he was slain (1093) in an ambuscade

yCcCoTLAN D

near Alnwick by Morel of Bamborough. He left to his 1058-1097.

481

successor a kingdom bounded on the south by the Tweed, the Cheviots, and the Solway, though there was much debatable land along the borders, and the English king claimed Lothian as successor of the Northumbrian Angles, while the Scotch claimed English Cumberland as a de- pendency dating from the grant of Eadgar. Malcolm's defeat of the mother of Maelsnechtan, son of Lulach and mormaer of Moray, is the only event recorded to indicate that his relations with the Celtic population were not peaceful, but the materials are too scanty to make it clear how far the northern chiefs asserted their independence. The foundation of Mortlach by Malcolm is proof that the Aberdeen lowlands at least were within his dominion.

The brightest side of Malcolm's reign was the reform Margaret.

due to Margaret. Her life by Theodoric, a monk of Durham, or her confessor, Turgot, though coloured by par-

tiality for a good woman, the patron of the church, bears

the marks of a true portrait. The miraculous element in the lives of the Celtic saints, diminished but still present in Bede, disappears. The chief changes in the Celtic Church effected by Margaret with the aid of monks sent by Lanfranc from Canterbury were the observance of Lent, the reception of the Eucharist at Easter, which had fallen into neglect, the use of the proper ritual in the mass, the prohibition of labour on the Lord's day, and of marriage between persons related by affinity. She restored Jona, long desecrated, founded the church of Dunfermline in commemoration of

her marriage, and protected the hermits, still common in the Scottish Church. Her severe fasts and her liberality to the sick and aged are especially noted. She washed the feet of the poor and fed children with food she had prepared, procured freedom for captives, and on either side of the ferry called Queensferry after her she erected hostelries for pilgrims. Nor did her piety lead her to neglect domestic duties. The rude manners of the Celtic court were refined by her example. The education of her children, her chief care in her husband's frequent absence, was rewarded by the noble character of the saintly David and the good Queen Maude. She did not long survive her husband: hearing of his death she thanked the Almighty for enabling her to bear such sorrow, to cleanse her from sin, and after receiving the sacrament died praying. The chapel on the castle rock at Edinburgh, erected in her memory, is the oldest building now existing in Scotland, with the exception of the meagre ruins of the Celtic Church in the western Highlands.

After Malcolm's death there was a fierce contest for the crown (1093-97), which showed that the union of Celtic and Saxon blood was not yet complete in the royal house, much less in the nation. Before the corpse of Margaret

could be removed to Dunfermline for burial, Donald Bain, Donald brother of Malcolm Canmore, besieged the castle, and Bain.

its removal was only accomplished under cover of mist. Donald, who had the support of the Celts and the custom of tanistry in favour of his claim, was king nominally at least six months, when he was expelled by Duncan, son of Malcolm and Ingebiorg, assisted by an English force, in which there were Normans as well as Saxons; but his tenure was equally short, and Donald, aided by Edmund, the only degenerate son of Malcolm and Margaret, who slew his half-brother Duncan, again reigned three years. This was the last attempt of the Celts—though partial risings continued frequent—to maintain a king of their race and a kingdom governed according to their customs. Edgar Atheling, who had become reconciled to the Norman king, led an army into Scotland and by a hard-fought battle dispossessed Donald and restored his eldest nephew, Edgar, to his father's throne.

The reign of Edgar (1097-1107) was unimportant.

XXI. — 61

Its Edgar.

482

1097-1127. chief event was the cession of the Sudreyar or islands on

Alexan- der J.

the west coast to the Norse king Magnus Barefoot, who also conquered Man and Anglesea. The terms of the treaty which, after two expeditions, he extorted from Edgar were that every island was to be his between which and the mainland a helm-bearing ship could pass, and by carrying one across the mainland he included Cantyre. Magnus was killed in Ulster; but the Hebrides remained in the hands of the Norse kings or lords, and acknowledged their sway till the battle of Largs (1263). Their cession was the necessary price for the consolidation of the Scottish monarchy in the south of thekingdom. Edinburgh was the capital of Edgar, a circumstance which marked the removal of the centre of the kingdom to its southern and Saxon district. His standard had been blessed at Durham when he recovered the crown, and it was to Durham or Dunfermline, where he was buried, that his benefactions were made. Jona had passed into the hands of Magnus, but he, being a Christian, respected its sanctity. Scone was henceforth only the scene of the coronation ceremony.

Edgar, dying childless, was succeeded by his brother Alexander I. (1107-24). Educated by his mother, and after her death in England, Alexander, like his brothers, brought to the government of Scotland Saxon combined with Norman culture. The singular will by which Edgar left Cumbria to his younger brother David was not to Alexander's taste; but the support which the Saxon popu- lation and the Norman barons, now beginning to hold land in that district, gave to David forced his brother to acquiesce in the division of the kingdom. It was now restricted to Lothian, Merse, and the country beyond the firths, as far as Mar and Buchan. His hold of Moray and Ross, Sutherland and Caithness, must have been rather as suzerain than as

sovereign ; the mainland of Argyll was now or soon after in the possession of Somerled, ancestor of the lords of the Isles; the northern isles (Nordreyar) as well as the Sudreyar remained Norse. The chief towns of Alexander were Edinburgh, Stirling, Inverkeithing, Perth, and Aberdeen. At Scone he founded a monastery for canons of St Augustine; but St Andrews was still the sole Scottish bishopric. Alexander married Sibylla, a natural daughter of Henry I. of England, and secured peace with that country. His only recorded war was with the men of Mearns and Moray, who surprised him at Invergowrie. He pursued them to the Moray Firth, where a signal victory (1114) gained for him the epithet of "The Fierce." The change from the Celtic to the Roman form of church government commenced by his mother and his brother Edgar was continued. Anselm congratulated him on his accession, and asked protection for monks sent to Scotland at Edgar's request. On the death of Fothad, the last Celtic bishop of St Andrews, Alexander procured the election of Turgot, his mother's confessor and prior of Durham. His consecration was delayed through a dispute between Canterbury and York, and, having failed to effect the anticipated reforms, he went back to Dur- ham. On his death Eadmer, a monk of Canterbury and chronicler of note, was selected for the office by Ralph, archbishop of Canterbury. The choice was confirmed by the clergy and people ; but a quarrel with Alexander as to his investiture led to his return to Canterbury. Robert, prior of Scone, became bishop in the year of Alexander's death, but his consecration also had to be put off. These disputes as to the consecration and investiture of the bishop of St Andrews turned on the rival claims of Canterbury and York to be the metropolitan of Scotland, and the refusal of Alexander to cede the independence of the Scottish Church, though anxious for an English monk to organize the diocese. National feeling was already strong in Scotland, even in a king with English sympathies.

Without the aid of Turgot or Eadmer, Alexander himself laid the foundation of diocesan episcopacy. The first bishops of Dunkeld and Moray date from his reign, and the first parish on record, Ednam in Roxburghshire. At

Inchcolm, as well as Scone, he introduced the canons regular of Augustine, and on an island of Loch Tay a cell from Scone was built in memory of his wife Sibylla. He restored the '"Boar's Chase" to St Andrews and increased the endowments of Dunfermline. The offices of chancellor, constable, and sheriff also now appear ; and the mormaers of the Celtic districts are designed as earls (comites) in one of his charters. The transition from the Celtic to the feudal monarchy had begun. Alexander was a learned monarch, like his father-in-law Henry Beauclerk, pious and friendly to the church, but severe to his subjects.

David I. (1124-53), the youngest son of Malcolm and Margaret, became king at the ripe age of forty-four. He had been trained at the court of Henry I. and his sister Matilda, so that "his manners were polished from the rust of Scottish barbarity." After Edgar's death he served an apprenticeship for the royal office as earl or prince of Cumbria, where his power was little short of regal. He married a Saxon, the daughter of Waltheof, earl of Northumberland, widow of Simon de St Liz, Norman earl of Northampton, and his friends and followers were chiefly Norman. His marriage brought him the earldom of Huntingdon, and he was guardian of the earldom of Northampton during his stepson's minority, so that he entered into feudal relations with the Norman king of England. In the government of his principality he suc- ceeded in reducing a wild part of Scotland into order, using for this purpose the agency of the church.

The history of the church in Strathclyde since Kentigern's death is obscure. The records of York claim the consecra- tion of a bishop of Glasgow in the middle of the 11th and another at the commencement of the 12th century ; but they are unknown in the records of Glasgow, and were perhaps invented to support the metropolitan claim of York over that see. Glasgow certainly was restored after some considerable lapse in the person of John, the tutor of David, who at his request was consecrated by Pope Paschal II. This was a parallel step to the summons of Turgot and Eadmer to St Andrews, but David, like Alexander, main- tained the independence of his own bishopric, and, though pope after pope sent letters and legates exhorting obedience to York, neither John nor his successors yielded it. A new see erected at Carlisle by Henry I. and the restoration of Whithorn by Henry II., both subject to York, were counter measures on the part of the English

sovereigns. The independence of the Scottish from the English Church (with the exception of Galloway and some places of Lothian still under Durham)- thus asserted by the rulers of Scotland was of great moment in its subsequent history, and was promoted by the liberality of David and his brothers. The inquest by David's order by which the land of the see of Glasgow was made may refer to ancient possession, but it had the effect of a new grant. Its extent—covering lands in the dales of the Clyde, Tweed, Teviot, Annan, Nith, and in Ayrshire—corresponds to the district of Cumbria under David and, with slight deviations, to the future diocese of Glasgow. While David's province did not include all of ancient Cumbria, it did include some parts of ancient Lothian, the future shires of Berwick, Roxburgh, and Selkirk. The Cumbrian nobles were a mixed class,— some Saxon and others Norman. There were few of pure Celtic blood. .

Three years after his accession David was present at the council of London, where, along with the English barons, he swore to accept his niece Matilda as the successor of

-

David 1.

Ecclesi- astical affairs.

David and Matilda.

CANMORE TO ALEXANDER iit. |

the "White Ship." Soon after a rising of Scottish Celts under a natural son of Alexander and Angus, a grandson of the mormaer of Moray, was defeated at Stracathro (Forfar) by David's troops in his absence in England, and four years later another under Wimund, who pretended to be Malcolm MacHeth, a chief in Ross, aided by Somerled of Argyll, who had acquired some of the adjacent isles, was put down by Wimund's capture. The death of Henry I. and the claim of Stephen to the English throne led to the invasion of England by David, in support of Matilda, with an army drawn from all parts of his kingdom, —the men of Galloway, Cumbria, Teviotdale, Lothian, Lennox, the Isles, Scotia (the country south of the

Forth or Scots Water), and Moray. Their defeat at the battle of the Standard at Cuton Moor (1138) near Northallerton by the barons of northern England was due to the want of discipline of the men of Galloway, and, though signal, was not decisive. At Carlisle peace was made on condition that David's son Henry should hold Northumberland as an earldom under Stephen, with the exception of the castles of Bamborough and Newcastle. David gave hostages, but retained Carlisle and Cumberland without any condition of homage. Two years later, when Matilda seized London, David joined her; but she was unable to maintain her advantage. David was forced to return to Scotland, and did not again engage in active hostilities against Stephen. His death was preceded by that of his only son; but his power was so firm that he procured the acknowledg-

"ment of his grandson Malcolm, a boy of twelve, as successor

Diocesan and. feudal organiza- tion of kingdom.

to the Scottish crown, while William, his younger grandson, succeeded to Northumberland and the English fiefs his father had held.

The comparative peace of his last twelve years gave David opportunity for the ecclesiastical and civil organiza- tion of the kingdom. He found three and left nine bishoprics, adding to St Andrews, Moray, and Dunkeld the new sees of Glasgow, Brechin, Dunblane, Aberdeen (transferred from Mortlach), Ross, and Caithness. Closely connected with their establishment was the suppression of the Celtic Culdees at Dunkeld, St Andrews, and Loch Leven, and perhaps also at Dunblane and Dornoch, where canons regular of St Augustine became the chapters of the bishop. The abbeys, chiefly Cistercian, which he founded were Holyrood, Newbattle, Melrose, J edburgh, Kelso, Cambuskenneth, Urquhart, and Kinloss. He added to the endowments of his father and mother at Dunfermline, and so lessened the crown lands that James I. called him 'a gore saint for the crown." The division into dioceses stimulated the formation of parishes endowed by the bishops or by the lords of the manor ; but the first steps of the parochial division of Scotland are obscure. The diocesan episcopate now included the whole of Scotland except what was held by the Norsemen, who had bishops of their own for the Orkneys and the western isles, subject to the metropolitan of Drontheim. It preceded the civil division into sheriffdoms,

which also began in this reign, but took a longer period to complete. The Celtic chiefs in the north and in Galloway were as yet too powerful to allow royal officers to hold courts within their territory, and regalities with the full rights of the crown in matters of justice were more lavishly granted in Scotland than in England, where they were confined to the few palatine earls or bishops on the border. The feudal system in Scotland, erroneously antedated to the reign of Malcolm IL. or Malcolm Canmore, really took root in that of David. The king administered justice in person. The great judicial officer of state, the justiciar, who went circuits in the king's name, appears either in this or the preceding reign; so also do the seneschal or steward of the royal household

and the chamberlain who collected the royal revenues. 1127-1165.

The tenure of land by charter, of which there are a few examples by Edgar in favour of Durham and by Alexander I. in favour of Scone, now became common. 'The charters of David to the abbey of Holyrood, to Robert Bruce of Annandale, and others are in the regular style of the Norman chancery. There are also instances of subordinate grants by subjects, which the king confirms. Though no charter to a burgh is extant, David refers to Edinburgh, Perth, and Stirling as his burghs. The inquest in favour of the see of Glasgow is, by the verdict of those best acquainted with the facts, similar to the Norman inquest. The laws of the four burghs of Lothian—Berwick, Roxburgh, Edinburgh, and Stirling—are records of customs existing in this reign, while a variety of other laws called assizes, chiefly relating to tolls and matters of criminal jurispru- dence, were the legislative acts of the king, assisted by the council of his great nobles. The beginning of the feudal system in Scotland was invigorated by the personal character of David. The absence of any large body of settled Celtic or Saxon customs gave full play to its assimilative influence. In the reigns which followed Scotland became a purer example of a feudal state than England, where a large number of Teutonic customs contributed to form the commonlaw. A few of these found their way into Scotland, chiefly through the burghs or the medium of Norman charters, in which they had been incorporated. But the

Scottish common law was in the main derived from the Roman code through the canon law, and not from Anglo- Saxon customs. Though never canonized by the church, this great monarch, for his faithful administration of

justice and the purity of his domestic life, was deemed a

saint by the people.

David's grandson and successor Malcolm TV. (1154-65), Malcolm called "The Maiden," died too young to leave a permanent IV.

impression, A rising by Somerled, lord of the Isles, and the sons of Malcolm MacHeth, mormaer of Moray, was suppressed in the early years of his reign, and peace was made with Somerled in 1158. A treaty by which Malcolm surrendered Northumberland and Cumberland to Henry IL, and his following that king (who knighted him at Tours) in an-expedition to Toulouse, led to the revolt of the earl of Strathearn with five other chiefs. This brought him suddenly home. An attempt to take him by surprise at Perth failed, and next year he succeeded in reducing Moray and Galloway, whose earl, Fergus, had also taken advantage of his absence. Moray was occupied by foreign settlers (1160), amongst whom, besides Norman barons, were Flemings,—a race fitted to civilize a new country by their industry. It is to this settlement that the permanent subjection of Moray to the Scottish kings, and perhaps the peculiar dialect and character of the inhabitants of that part of Scotland, were due. Four years later Somerled again attacked the west coast, but was defeated and slain at Renfrew, when the isles south of Ardnamurchan, which he had won from Godred the Black, son of Olaf, king of Man, were divided amongst his sons Dugall, Reginald, and Angus. Next year (1165) the young king himself died at Jedburgh. While he was reproached for yielding too much to the powerful English monarch, his service abroad enabled him to obtain the necessary experience to contend with the Celtic chiefs. The reduction of Galloway and Moray more than compensated for the loss of the earldoms in northern England, the possession of which by the Scottish king must have been precarious. Before his death Bute had been taken by the steward of Scotland,—the first footing the Scotch got on the larger isles, but it was

afterwards recovered by the Norwegian king Haco and restored to Ruari, a descendant of Reginald.

Malcolm, dying childless—though he had an illegitimate

from Willimm wher a captive, and restored Scotland's ancient mantis.

The second peri ot William's reign was occupied with Intemal internal acfaurs:. Euchard's absence and John's disputes affairs, Wih tie pape uni kis own barons gave a relief from

English war. Tle snisme of the ransom tried the re-

1165-1215 son who predeceased him—was succeeded by his brother William William the Lion (1165-1214). His reign, the longest of | the Lion. any Scottish monarch, though not so uniformly successful

as that of his grandfather, was an important era in Scottish history. It is divided into nearly equal portions by the accession of Richard Coeur de Lion. The first consists of

the war with Henry IL. in which William was captured (1175), and this made him the subject of the English king for fourteen years. dependence, and, resuming the task of his predecessor, consolidated the Scottish kingdom in the north and west. William commenced his reign by taking part in the war with France as vassal of Henry IT. for the fief of Hunting-

don; but, being disappointed of the promised restoration | of the northern earldoms, he entered into negotiations with —

Louis VII. of France. This memorable event is the first authentic connexion between Scotland and France, and was

afterwards antedated by a fiction to the time of Charle- |

magne. Dictated by the situation of the two countries,

In the second he recovered his in- |

equally exposed to danger from the power of England under _

the Angevin or Plantagenet kings, the alliance between

France and Scotland continued with few breaks until the — close of the 16th century, and even in the 17th and 1Sth | was relied upon by the last of the Stuarts. France proved a

broken reed' to the Scottish kings; but the imtereourse

when war with England after the close of the 14th century shut them out from the advancing civilization of that

| William asceeet ar ge 15.000 marks.

sources Of Farimut and was met by an aid from the cerry ané Seem= Easingr by Harold, earl of Caithness, and his son Turgitm (1]?7), and another by Guthred (1211), & dexmmiam of the mormaer of Ross, were qneled. The tr

as Benry Se Pwr on Germany and Richard in England : between the two countries brought the Scottish people. —

many of Gear ctaraarr date from his reign. Legislation

- eentinmed 1 Sie incm a assizes, which required the sanction

country, into contact with the chivalrous manners of the — court and the learning of the schools of France during the ©

Warwith best period of French history. Nothing came of the alliance | England. at this time, and two years later William and his brother

David, in whose favour he resigned the earldom of Hunting- |

don, attended the coronation (during his father's life) of the younger Henry at Windsor. That ill-judged step and the murder of Becket led to a domestic revolution, and William. tempted by the promise of the earldom of Northumberland, joined the young king against his father (1173). in the sieges of Wark and Carlisle, and next year was taken

He failed

prisoner at Alnwick by Ranulph de Glanville and sent by

Henry's order to Falaise in Normandy. To precure his

release he made a treaty with Henry by which he became ©

his vassal for Scotland and all his other territories. The Scottish Church then for the first and last time owned subjection to that of England. This treaty settles the disputed question of the Scottish homage. conquest and the captivity of its king that sueh terms

It was only by

could be obtained. To secure the observance of the treaty

the four burghs of Scotland were to be placed in Henry: hands and hostages giventill their delivery. The ambigzous terms of the clause as to the church enabled the Scottish bishops to refuse obedience to the see of York, amd. Canterbury having advanced a rival claim, Henry. mot displeased to see ecclesiastics quarrel, allowed the Scotus bishops to leave the council of Norham without acknowlede- ing it. The foundation of the abbey of Arbroath in memery of Becket, whom he had known at Henry's court, was almest the only endowment of William. At home he pat dows revolts in Galloway, Ross, and Caithness. A long dispute with successive popes as to the see of St Andrews aforded a signal example of the perseverance of William. He alse procured a distinct acknowledgment of the independence af the Scottish Church and its immediate subjection to Reme alone, which Henry II., now approaching the calamicoms end of his reign, could not

prevent; nor was he able t enforce payment of the Saladin tax from the Seetush bishops. Immediately after Henry's death Richard Cour de Lion, moved by the necessity of money for the erasades, consented for a payment of 10,000 marks to the abregatien of the treaty of Falaise (1189) as having been exterted

a agzat ommci 42m Eneland, the necessity of raising money Irst Qe? cae ar amunicipal rights and to facilities for some Cscissm T oobi effairs in what afterwards grew to be ae partie. This assembly was still the curia reps O Ge was a the King, and the Scottish parlia- ment never fot ametks of tts origin. William died at Sazimg m 1714 m Ge seventy-second year of his age. Tie fen =unpamr winch he took for his seal, became his epitel ani censsemt is chivalrous and determined character. =e == Gnr exemple, which his son and grand- son followed. af cubcvaume friendly relations with the Fagctsh gers, and bis efforts to maintain the inde- pendence of xrimnt wer: rewarded by internal peace. It was aniy Gi Se mmipme districts that risings had now to te feared. "The ammmiver of shires where the king's sheriff, Teqmentiy "Iv = gmlicy wise et the time, but afterwards danzeaems Ge "uet baron of the district, administered jusiee ai ie demi aownr increases, and this, as well as Ge gow af Sui, bron mso prominence the burghs, eacl Will & oT asi where the king in his frequent progresses Sei Ice vom. and if needful summoned the qreas commen af ibe resim. The chief burghs whose charte: date pom Tins reien are Perth, Aberdeen, Inver- ness, Dmices Lemer, Irvime, Ayr, Forfar, Dundee, Acoma. Worem frverorie, Kimtore, Banff, Cullen, and Naa=. Ther smmive ond sives, spread over the whole comirt, Mari & xeet molhcr and the progress of the iaeiem Ge aa o peace. A new diocese—Argyll —was Inmet dy seperation from Dunkeld, to which Joh Be Sere Gua hon. sexi his chaplain as knowing GaeEe . amg, Soumer Ge Hebrides were still Norse, this was 2 Sep Grew She complete organization of the ort geil Gr Se seaension of the kingdom which fol- lowe I le text fen reiens, when the Isles also were aided itd a Seri.

+ —

Sesier

rs eH, We est suede a: Enmeiend for Magna Charta, which Set reacted te comm. Ex sided with the English barons, wie Tate gt greene by which

Carlisle and the county a SNorcemieram? were to te given to Alexander. In Sime =f Gos pe be besiezed Norham, while the Tacs Inseaei at Winens 'Caria a clause by which John

son of William, was crowned Alexan- i= See in ins se~erteenth year, in time to take part in der I

Bc oT

promised to render to Alexander what was his right wit reference to the marriage of his sisters and his kingdom. unless the charters of his father William authorized other wise, and this was to be decided by the judgment of #2 peers in the curia regis. The position of the Scotisr king as one of the English barons in whose favour Marnz Charta was granted is pregnant evidence of the iaci tha: he was not, like John, Henry IIL, and Edward i., = monarch with imperial tendencies, the adversary ! ie rights of the barons and the people. The Scottish mime: in this century and Bruce in the nexi were ponudsay sovereigns, and their memory supported the crowr wher it was worn by less worthy successors. Next veat J an: broke the charter, reduced by the aid of mercenaris: mm northern counties of England, and, advancing mw Ses land, stormed Berwick and burnt Roxburgh, Haadmzvern and Dunbar. On his return he pillaged Coldmgham auc set fire to Berwick. Alexander retaliated by wastmt England as far as Carlisle, which town, but noi the casttc. he took in the autumn; then, marching to Dover. ne Git homage to Louis, the son of Philip Augustus, whom ine English barons had chosen as king. Next year (1227) ae again invaded England, but made peace with Henzy 1 which was confirmed three years later at York. Aiszana= agreed to restore Carlisle, do homage for his Engst mei: and obtain release from the excommunication which ie pope had declared against the barons and ter alize Henry promised to give Alexander one of his sister: = marriage and to procure suitable husbands for the Sectmet princesses. Accordingly, Alexander married Joan. & elder daughter of John, while Margaret, his sister, Be came the wife of Hubert de Burgh, earl of Kem aAL Isabella of Roger Bigod, earl of Norfolk, both movies wa took a prominent part in the Barons War. These alizames: rendered the peace with England more secure. and allows: Alexander to devote himself to the

reducviar i periodical insurrections of the Celtic and Norse cnet a his northern and western borders. He reducen Srovwi (1222), which he created a sheriffdom, and forcer Jem earl of Caithness, to surrender part of his lands ant aT compensation for his share in the burning of Acam sae bishop. The wisdom of his settlement of Argyl! was prover by the inhabitants repelling an attack by Haco, the Nors:

ing. He was equally successful in quelling the Tismos & two chiefs of the same name, Gillescop, one in te wes the other in Moray. Five years later (1230) 2 dispmEec succession in Galloway gave him the opportunity : cma tising that turbulent province and dividing ih amonr ture coheiresses. The fall of Hubert de Burgh anc tnt B- cession of Peter des Roches to the chief piace Be council of Henry IIL changed the atiitude of that Zur towards Scotland, but Otho, the papal legate, presenvet peace by a compromise of the rival claims. 4 ht mor than a year after the death of his wife Joan WiihOT 3s5m Alexander married Mary de Couci, dauchter o 2 Prenm noble house, which counted itseli the equal of EKmo aut Alexander IIL, the child of the marriage, 'war PETTOnRA. when an infant of a year old to Margaret. danome = Henry [Il Two years laver (1244) a setions Tamu: fomented by Walter Bisset, a Scottish exile. anc cause: by a projected alliance of Alexander with France: amc the erection of castles on the border, was avertel OF TH treaty of Newcastle, by which the kings of Emgiamc emt Seotland bound themselves not to make alliance: Wizt Gi enemies of each other. The last year of his ee wee eccupied in putting down a second rismmg im Galiowas and in preparing for an expedition agams: Thace. Want the view of annexing the Hebrides; but ie dwt a re at Kerrera, in the Bay of Oban, while mustermr ne Be These expeditions, all successful, are proof af Te ace

CANMORE TO ALEXANDER III. |

arc

LAND 485 ang, who must have been called " Peace- ial" "weause Ze areserved peace with England, for he was = Zac e westike monarci, enforcing the feudal levy, which, acommimc 0 Wactiew Paris. amounted in his time to 10,000 hore ax (00060 foot, and extending the feudal civil mvesrmesm. [like ins preriecessors, he was a benefactor eo te Sear.

speciaily of the new mendicant orders, wihes: aomeseztes vere founded in all the principal towns. Th: mses muervant of fis statites were the substitution @ cma iy jary “or the ordeals of fire and water, and the rerumiem of wai by atte, with provision for the case cq wees: sani che dergy. Ee was deemed, like David, a Tpstesur ft “he deer.

Seeeanier TT (1249445) was only eight years old when be cater Tec 4 saiccession of contests for the regency nemret & aty ot aonies who favoured English influence auf & uaaiomad party was the consequence. The former cell we ita ce coronation on the pretence that the wer mec we tot a kmght; but Comyn, earl of Menez. ‘weZed «hem Sy the proposal that the bishop « & Seitew= Gowd perform both ceremonies. The pemereai af ‘ns ieseent ‘rom the Celtic line of kings was msi: xcordiing D + “stom becoming old-fashioned, for tm: Gas ame sy # Highland sennachy, to please the Goatie axineets. winie the translation of the corpse of St Merars mio » preeions shrime at Dunfermline was cal- ochaset “ewe samilar effect in the Lowlands. Henry TL Set wcet te gene to declare the coronation illegal witieas (nsomsenr. ot the pope refused. Foiled in this, Hern ekteored w York the nuptials of his daughter and Se seen Enc, wiom he asked to render homage for his fei “The eniy shat te had not come to answer such 2 qussion anf wmas advise vith his counsellors implied faz: ke: “nal counselors little likely to grant it. About dee Game Daeward “He justiciar and Robert the chan- edlier wee: Tizessecd. and the earl of Menteith held the aad pemez ty Ere pears. A secret mission of Simon de Mietsee “Sef wo ie art of Warch, Durward, and other eieeeerme “he yong ing and aneen, and at a meeting ate Geers Sse ce Comyns and their supporters were wemyea Tem sfGee(155) and other regents appointed. Tas ream “baer “he Sisitoy of St Andrews got the pope to axemeore Dnrwarti and the English regents. Next wer & ommrmse vas otlected and a joint regency qe «omating oF the queen dowager and her een, He ort of Wenteith and Durward, and the somerrers: if “ert varties. When Alexander was nearly ee te art ot Wementh died, whereupon the king took te pvemmess mo ms own hands (1261). Henry, sumer mi he tage wth jus barons, could not interfere. Geoearite a mes cesnmer his father’s project for the peimiee 6 es Zehrdes. out Eaco, the Norwegian king, seresiiea! exe Gv uresiing Scotland, when a storm, which dasemeat ma fee. amet “he cosas of the battle of Largs (1263) Sered eee prs -oeche Orkneys. where he died. Magnus toe, “Ga of War the chief Norse

feudatory, a espera "Secret che Black. submitted to Alexander, exitiom somes? che isiands held out they were reduced oe ere of Guetta and War and Alan Durward. At gas Mere He emt Zaen, coneinded a treaty at Perth "ie oe catia Ge aarrendered Wan and the Sudreyar zea marear ot 400 narss and an annual rent of 100; Geom "he Hanon ot Srontheim were reserved. From feu ome te weateen ies vere subject to Scotland. At Se peters of (S% whieh settled the crown on the Met <= Worx. Geir creat nobles, descendants of Synmaetad qtesied we vassals, and the subsequent revolts og weet Heer weer manty' vere instigated by the English Sec wy 'Greet efmi ailies m the chiefs of the Isles. i Se Genes Ver Sexancier sided his father-in-law, on

1215-1266.

Alexan- der III.

Reduction

of the western isles.

486 SCOTLAND

whose side three Scottish barons, John Comyn, Robert Bruce, and John Baliol, fought at Lewes, where the first two were taken prisoners. In the matter of the independence of his kingdom Alexander was as firm as his predecessors, and would not allow Henry himself or the legate Ottobon to collect within it a tithe for the crusade which the pope had guaranteed to the English king. On the accession of

[HISTORY.

A regency administered the kingdom for five years after Alexander's death. A conference at Salisbury between commissioners of Erik of Norway, Edward I., three of the regents, and Bruce, lord of Annandale, agreed that Margaret should be sent home unbetrothed. Her marriage to Ed- Treaty ward's son, for which a dispensation had been got from of Brig- Rome, was sanctioned by an assembly at Brigham near b@™-

1266-1292.

Edward I. (1272) Alexander attended his coronation, but neither then nor six years later, when specially summoned to Westminster, would he do homage for Scotland. The closing years of Alexander were saddened by domestic losses. His wife died in 1273, his younger son David in 1281. His only daughter, Margaret, married two years before to Erik of Norway, and his elder son, Alexander, both died in 1283. The following year the estates at Scone recognized the succession of Margaret, the Maid of Norway ; but Alexander, in hope of a male heir, married Joleta, daughter of Count de Dreux. At the festivities in Jedburgh in honour of the marriage a ghostly figure in the masque was deemed an omen of the king's death, which

Roxburgh (18th July 1290), in a treaty which made anxious provision for the independence of Scotland. This country was to remain free, and, saving the right of the king of England in the marches or elsewhere, separate from Eng- land by its lawful bounds. No parliament was to sit, and no Scottish suit to be tried, out of Scotland. Edward con- firmed this treaty by oath; but the death of Margaret in the Orkneys rendered it abortive. To prevent an armed contest for the crown, Fraser, bishop of St Andrews, invited Edward to intervene, and certain Scottish nobles made a similar request. He accordingly summoned the Scottish estates to meet him on 10th May, and the English parlia- ment on 3d June 1291, at Norham near Berwick.

When Competi-

followed from a fall near Kinghorn (1285). The prosperity of Scotland in his reign was celebrated in one of the earliest verses preserved in the Scottish dialect—

' Quhen Alysander oure kyng was dede,*

the Scots came Edward refused to judge the cause of the tion Scottish succession unless his title as superior of Scotland a was admitted. After some delay the barons and clergy aad :

gave the admission, as also did the claimants—no fewer Baliol.

Feudal Under the wise rule of three kings, extending over | the kingdom should be given to Edward; a week later Scotland. more than a century—a circumstance rare in that age— | the regent surrendered the kingdom of Scotland and the Scotland attained a degree of wellbeing before unknown, | keepers the chief castles into his hands as lord paramount. which did not return till the 18th century. The extent of | He restored possession after adding several Englishmen the revenue is attested by the returns of the sheriffs to the | to the regency. After another adjournment the com- chamberlain and by the accounts of the tax which Boiamund | petitors put in their claims. Three descendants of David, de Vicci, the pope's representative, levied from the clergy for | earl of Huntingdon, brother of William the Lion—all the crusade. Berwick, the chief Scottish port, was likened | English barons, though one, Bruce, had large estates in to Alexandria, and attained an importance it never recovered | Scotland— were alone serious. John Baliol claimed as after its union with England. Its customs were reckoned | grandson of David's eldest daughter Margaret, wife of as equal to a third of those of all England,—a statement | Alan, lord of Galloway ; Robert Bruce as son of David's hardly credible till we remember that the trade of Britain | second daughter, wife of the lord of Annandale; while was chiefly with France and Flanders, and that a harbour | David de Hastings, grandson of the third daughter Ada, for small craft was sufficient. The personal character and | contended that the kingdom was partible. This last ques- bravery of these kings subdued the turbulence of the | tion was postponed until the claims of Baliol and Bruce had outlying districts and kept in check the ambition of the | been considered. After two long adjournments it was at nobles. The bounds of the kingdom were almost as they | last decided (14th October 1292) that the case was to be now are, and the name of Scotland permanently passed to | ruled by the law of the kingdom applicable to titles of the whole country south as well as north of the Forth. | earldoms, baronies, and other indivisible inheritances, and In spite of differences of race, the unity of the nation had | "that by this law in every heritable succession the more been secured, and its independence was acknowledged by | remote by one degree descended from the eldest sister the pope and other sovereigns ; the English alone kept up | was preferable to the nearer in degree from the second." a nominal claim to rights which had for short periods been | Edward accordingly decided (17th November 1292) in Baliol held by Canute and

the Conqueror, and for longer by the | favour of Baliol. Two days afterwards the regents were a second Henry, until they were abandoned by the treaty | ordered to give sasine to Baliol; the day following he "™& of Canterbury. But now all was to be changed. Three | swore fealty to Edward at Norham; ten days after he was centuries of war, though diminishing in intensity as time | crowned at Scone; within a month he did homage to Ed- went on, display heroic character, but imply an amount of | ward at Newcastle. suffering to the people which cannot be told. Perhaps a The judgment was just, according to the principles of contest between the two proud nations which shared Britain | feudal law afterwards fixed, though then imperfectly estab- was inevitable, yet the reigns of the Alexanders suggest a | lished, in favour of primogeniture ; the acknowledgment different possibility. That the contest came when it did | of the suzerainty of Edward was a different matter. In was due to the disputed succession on the death of Mar- | the course of the proceedings Edward obtained from the garet, the Maid of Norway. This gave to the ambition of | cathedrals and religious houses of England .returns of Edward I. an opportunity to reduce the whole island to | homage by Scottish kings. No such returns were asked his sway, which he was quick to seize. from Scotland. Those from England recited the well- Maid of 5. War of Independence ; from Death of Alexander IIT. | known cases of isolated conquest followed by homage to Norway. to Accession of House of Stuart.—The Maid of Norway, | Saxon, Danish, and Norman kings, Edward the Elder and

That Scotland led in luve and le, Away wes sons of ale and brede,

Of wyne and wax, of gamyn and gle, Oure gold was changed into lede.

Cryst, born into virginite, Succour Scotland and remede

That sted in his perplexitie."

whose right was at once acknowledged (for Scotland, like England, knew no Salic law), was not to wear the crown.

than thirteen—but the representatives of the commons withheld any such acknowledgment. The court for the decision of the cause was then appointed. Forty members were named by Baliol and as many by Bruce,

between whom the competition really lay, while Edward chose twenty-four. On the following day the competitors agreed that sasine of

Athelstan, Canute and the two Williams, and the treaty of Falaise by which William the Lion surrendered the

independence of Scotland. They ignored the treaty of Canterbury by which it was restored, the clause of Magna Charta relating to Scotland and the rights of its king, the refusal of the last two Alexanders to render homage for their kingdom, and the treaty of Brigham by which Edward had acknowledged the independence of Scotland. One result of the submission to the English king over- looked by the eager competitors, but not by the lawyers who advised Edward, immediately emerged. An appeal was soon taken from the court of Baliol to the court of his superior at Westminster. Baliol referred in vain to the express clause in the treaty of Brigham that no Scottish suit was to be tried beyond Scotland; Edward replied this was an appeal from his own officers during the interregnum, but asserted his right to hear appeals in all cases. Other appeals followed, and Baliol weakly surrendered his claim to independent jurisdiction. Shortly afterwards (October 1293) he was himself summoned to Westminster as defend- ant in a suit by Macduff, son of the earl of Fife. Declin- ing to appear, he was condemned for contempt, and three of his principal castles were ordered to be seized. He again yielded and promised to attend next parliament. There could be no longer doubt what had been the effect of sub- mitting the dispute as to the crown to Edward. Instances of homage had not been difficult to find; but the records might be ransacked in vain for an example of what would now become frequent,—the adjudication by the court of the English king on the rights of Scotsmen. The exe- cution of this decision by force in Scotland carried with it at no distant date the subjection of the kingdom. Baliol quitted Westminster suddenly in 1294 to escape service in the Gascony war. By yielding in the question of appeal he had lost the confidence of the Scottish barons. In the parliament of Scone a council was appointed to con- trol him, and all fiefs held by Englishmen were forfeited. In the following year he formed an alliance against Eng- land with the French king, and his son was promised the daughter of that king's nephew,

the count of Anjou, in marriage. The Scottish army headed by six earls then invaded England, but was repulsed at Carlisle (28th March 1296), and Edward, leaving his French campaign, at once marched northwards. Before the end of March 1296 he stormed Berwick. While there the abbot of Arbroath brought him a renunciation of Baliol's homage. Dunbar was taken soon afterwards by the earl of Surrey; Rox- burgh, Jedburgh, and Edinburgh fell before the end of June ; Stirling, Perth, and Scone surrendered without a blow. At this time no Scottish town was walled and no resistance could be made against the English feudal levy led by such a general as Edward. In the churchyard of Stracathro in Forfar Baliol renounced his alliance with France, and a few days afterwards (10th July) surrendered Scotland to Anthony Beck, bishop of Durham. Edward marched as far as Elgin, but it was a conquest of Baliol, not of Scotland. This impotent monarch was carried captive with his son to London and vanishes from Scottish history. He died at one of his French fiefs twenty years afterwards, never having attempted to regain the kingdom. On his homeward march Edward took and recorded in the Ragman Rolls the homage of the Scottish nobility, and carried to Westminster the sacred stone of Scone, on which the Celtic monarchs had been crowned, and the black rood of Margaret, the hallowed relic of the Saxon line. Surrey was appointed guardian, Sir Hugh Cressingham treasurer, and William Ormsby justiciar of Scotland; the nobles were treated with lenity and the bishops bribed by the privilege of bequeathing their movables like their English brethren. The most important result of the campaign was the capture and fortification of Berwick. That city, the key to the Lothians, was the commercial capital ;

and Scotland was left without one until the rise, after the 1292-1298.

was beaten by light-armed peasants.

union, of Glasgow and the mercantile centres of the Clyde.

When the fortunes of Scotland were at the lowest, when Wallace's

the country was deserted by the king, and its nobles and

the man of the people, appeared. The second son of Sir Malcolm Wallace of Elderslie near Paisley, his name in- dicates a remote Celtic origin from a Welsh or Cambrian stock. In the spring of 1297, in revenge for the murder of his wife, Wallace slew Hazelrig, sheriff of Ayr, and burned Lanark. Collecting a band of followers animated with like patriotism, and aided by a single noble, Sir William Douglas, he surprised and drove Ormsby, the

justiciar, from Scone and Beck, the bishop of Durham,

from Glasgow. Some of the barons, headed by James the Steward, joined him, and Wallace and Douglas carried everything before them in Lennox and Galloway, —dis- tricts more favourable to the national cause than Lothian. The nobles fell away from Wallace almost as soon as Percy

appeared at the head of an English force, and Douglas, the

Steward, Bruce the future king, and others capitulated at Irvine (9th July 1297). Wallace, while engaged in the siege of the castle of Dundee, heard that Surrey and Cress-

ingham were advancing on Stirling, and he marched to its

relief, There at the bridge over the Forth near Cambus-

kenneth he won his most famous victory (11th September). The English were totally routed and Cressingham was

killed. The disparity of numbers was great, for the

English had 50,000 foot and 1000 horse, against at most

40,000 foot and only 180 horse. The generalship of

Wallace, who tempted his adversary to cross the bridge in

his face and held his troops in hand until the moment of the charge, won the day, the first in which a feudal army Wallace attempted to organize the

kingdom he had won. He assumed the title of guardian of the realm in name of the Lord John (Baliol), and associated with himself Sir Andrew Moray of Bothwell, son of the only baron who stood by him and who fell in the battle. He held the nobles in awe, while he rewarded his adherents. The grant (fortunately pre- served) of the office of constable of Dundee to Alexander Scrymzeour can scarcely have been a solitary one. He introduced better discipline in the army, and tried also to revive trade! Shortly after the battle of Stirling Wallace carried the war as far as Hexham, whose monks he protected. That he penetrated farther south and won the favour of Eleanor, Edward's wife, is one of the romantic additions to his scanty history in the poem of Blind Harry. Edward recognized the crisis and, leaving Flanders, sent a force before him under Pembroke, following in person at the head of 80,000 foot and 10,000 horse. For a brief space success attended Wallace, who defeated the English in Fife and Ayr; but the bishop of Durham retook the castle of Dirleton, and Edward himself, by the victory of Falkirk (22d July 1298), in which the nobles again proved false to the popular cause, reversed that of Stirling. Wallace took refuge in France, and, although the French king at Amiens offered to surrender him, he was soon re- leased and provided with a safe conduct to the pope. Papers found on him when captured show that he received similar letters from Haco of Norway.and Baliol. Whether he went to Rome is not certain, but he may have been one of the Scots who at this time induced Boniface VIII. to claim the superiority of Scotland. The claim was in- dignantly repelled by the English barons at the parliament of Lincoln; Edward, however, thought it prudent to lay before the pope a statement in which he advanced not only

1 A letter from him and Moray to the citizens of Liibeck and

Hamburg who sympathized with the Scottish commons has been found in the archives of Hamburg.

struggle : : de- clergy were making terms with the conqueror, Wallace, eae

1298 -1328.

Settle- ment of Scotland by Ed- ward I,

Robert the Bruce.

the instances of homage collected for use at Norham but the fable of Brute the Trojan, from whose eldest son Locrinus he claimed descent, and therefore superiority over the Scottish kings sprung from Albanactus the second as well as those of Wales descended from Camber the third. Baldred de Bisset, the Scottish commissioner at Rome, in his answer admitted the pope's right, but replied to Edward's fiction by another as bold,—the descent of the Scots from Scota, the daughter of Pharaoh. A more solid argument was founded on the treaty of Brigham. The pope delayed judgment, and in 1302 suddenly changed sides and exhorted the Scots, by several bulls, to submit. Edward had not waited for this sanction; the period be- tween the battle of Falkirk and the taking of Stirling was a continuous and bloody struggle. In person he laid waste Galloway and took Caerlaverock (1300) ; in 1302, his general Sir John Segrave, having fought a battle of doubt- ful issue with Comyn and Fraser at Roslin, Edward re- turned (1303), marched as far as Caithness, and reduced the whole east of Scotland by the capture of Stirling (24th January 1304). Scotland was subdued, yet Wallace lived, and we catch glimpses of him, in the woods of Dunferm- line, in the forest of Ettrick, in the neighbourhood of Lanark, A price was set on his head, and at last he was betrayed by a servant of Sir John de Menteith near Glasgow and taken to London, where, after a mock trial in Westminster Hall, he received the traitor's doom (23d August 1305), though he denied with truth that he had taken any oath to Edward.

This time Edward, in order to make the conquest of Scotland permanent, proceeded to incorporate it in the empire of England. With apparent fairness an assembly was summoned to Perth to elect ten representatives to attend a parliament at Westminster to treat of the affairs of Scotland. Nine commissioners came to London, where they were associated with twenty Englishmen. The result was the "Ordinacio facta per dominum regem pro stabili- tate terres Scotia" (1305). Though never fully carried out, this document, on the model of similar ordinances for Wales and Ireland, discloses Edward's designs. English nobles were appointed to administer the government of the country, and eight justices to administer the law. The law and usages of Scotland (except those of the Brets and Scots, which were abrogated) were to be observed in the meantime ; but the lieutenant (John

of Brittany, the king's nephew) and council were to amend what was contrary to God and reason, or in case of difficulty refer to Edward at Westminster. The whole country was divided into sheriff- doms, the sheriffs being removable at the discretion of the lieutenant. The office of coroner, more important then than now, was also regulated ; certain persons were nomi- nated constables of the chief castles 3; and many nobles were fined and others banished. Bruce (the competitor's grandson) was ordered to put Kildrummy Castle (Aberdeen) in charge of an officer for whom he should be responsible, The ordinance was suitable to its object,— moderate, even humane. The banishment of the nobles was limited as to time. Relief was given in the payment of fines. Many old officers were continued. Edward's aim at this time was to pacify the country he had conquered, to put down resistance, but to encourage submission. I¢ js as wrong to call him a tyrant 'as Wallace a rebel: the one was a statesman king with imperialist aims, the other a patriot leader with keen popular sympathies, The king triumphed; but before his death his well-laid plans were shattered : Scotland again rose in arms, and this time the nobles joined the people, under the leadership of Robert the Bruce.

The position, as well as the character, of Bruce con- trasted with that of Wallace. Instead of being a cadet of the ordinary landed gentry, Bruce represented a family in

which for more than two centuries the purest Norman

blood had flowed. The English branch of Skelton in Cleveland and the Scottish branch of Annandale divided their large possessions ; but those of the latter sufficed to make its head one of the most powerful nobles in Scotland, who still retained, as so many did, English fiefs. More than one of his ancestors had intermarried with the royal house of Scotland (see Roper? THE Bruce, vol. xx. p. 592). On his father's death Bruce succeeded to Annandale. He held besides several manors in England. During the early part of the War of Independence, like many barons with conflicting interests, he had wavered, sometimes supporting Wallace, more frequently

the English king. In 1303-4 he assisted Edward in the preparation for the siege of Stirling. He had been consulted with regard to the ordinance of 1305. But there were already signs of mutual distrust. The provision in the ordinance as to Kildrummy shows that Edward was aware special precautions had to be taken to secure the loyalty of Bruce, and on 11th June 1304 Bruce secretly met near Cambuskenneth Lamberton, bishop of St Andrews, and entered into a bond referring to future dangers from Edward. Of all the Scottish clergy Lamberton had been most friendly to Wallace, and this bond was a link between the two periods of the War of Independence and their leaders. Bruce had attended at Westminster when the ordinance was settled, but left sud- denly, arriving at Dumfries on the seventh day. There he met in the church of the Friars Minor John (the Red) Comyn of Badenoch, Baliol's nephew, and slew him before the high altar (10th February 1306). The die was cast, and indecision vanished from the character of Bruce. Collecting his adherents at Lochmaben and Glasgow, he passed to Scone, where he was crowned by the bishop of St Andrews. It at first seemed likely that a saying of his wife would prove true,—that he was a summer but would not bea winter king. His defeat at Methven (19th June 1306) was followed by another at Strathfillan (11th August), and Bruce took refuge in the island of Rathlin (off Antrim, Ireland). The tales of his hairbreadth escapes, his courage and endurance in all changes of fortune, were gathered by Barbour from the mouths of the people, who followed the life of their champion with the keenest in- terest. Meanwhile Edward came north and gave a fore- taste of his vengeance. But his severity strengthened the party of Bruce, which grew daily. All classes now made, with few exceptions, common cause against the enemy of all. Edward's death at Burgh-on-Sands (7th June 1307) at once changed the whole aspect of the invasion. Edward IT. wasted in the ceremony of a funeral and the diversions of a youthful court the critical moment of the war. Bruce seized his opportunity, and by the close of 1313 Berwick and Stirling alone remained English. The independence of Scotland was finally determined by the ever-memorable victory of Bannockburn (24th June 1314).

Bruce reigned fifteen years after Bannockburn and (if the Irish expedition of his brother Edward be left out of account) with almost uninterrupted success. On his return from Ireland he reduced Berwick (March 1318) and con- verted it from an English to a Scottish frontier town. His recognition

by the pope was followed by the acknow- ledgment of Flanders and France; and the long truce which Edward IT. had been forced to agree to before his death became in the new reign a formal treaty known as that of Northampton (April 1328). By its leading article Treaty of "Scotland according to its ancient bounds in the days of me Alexander ITI. shall remain to Robert, king of Scots, and 7™P™ his heirs, free and divided from England, without any sub-*

jection, servitude, claim, or demand whatsoever." In pur-

suance of another article Johanna, Edward's sister, was married to David, the infant son of Bruce, at Berwick on

—_———

David II.

Struggle against Edward Baliol,

WAR OF INDEPENDENCE. |

equal justice for poor and rich, and framed strict Acts against sedition. shipbuilding, foreseeing its future importance to Scotland. Never off his guard, amongst his most anxious legislative provisions are those relating to the defence of the kingdom, —arming all able-bodied men, prohibiting exports of arms, fortifying the towns and castles on the borders, arranging signals to give notice of invasion. Though attacked by leprosy contracted in his campaigns, he remained active to the last,—a monarch such as occurs only once in many centuries, brave, liberal, wise, and pious, like the English Alfred, the darling of the nation he had delivered. (For fuller details, see RoBERT THE Bruce, vol. xx. p. 594 sq.)

The wise provision that Bruce made for the regency secured the peaceful succession of his son David II, (1329- 70), who was the first Scottish king anointed at his coro- nation,—a privilege conceded to Bruce in a bull which reached Scotland after his death. According to the ideas of the age this placed the Scottish king on an equality with the sovereigns of Europe. quickened the sentiment of Scottish nationality, and left the country poorer

in wealth but richer in spirit. The memories of Wallace and of Bruce educated the people and produced in the next generation their earliest literature. England, unconscious of the benefit, gained by its own de- feat. But for the resistance of the Scots it might have be- come earlier than France a centralized feudal monarchy. The distinct character of the Scots—a blend of the Celt, Saxon, Norseman, and Norman—strengthened by variety the collective force of Britain. The loss which must be balanced against the gain was the bitter hatred between two races of kindred origin within one narrow isle, which for centuries retarded the progress of both, especially of the smaller kingdom.

The almost contemporaneous reigns of David IT. and Edward ITI. reversed the position of the two countries : Scotland had now one of its feeblest and England one of its most powerful kings. Had not the love of liberty become the life-blood of both nobles and commons in Scot- land it must have succumbed in the desperate struggle. After the death of Robert, Randolph, earl of Moray, governed with wisdom and vigour for three years. On his death the estates chose Donald, earl of Mar, another nephew of Bruce, whom he had passed over, foreseeing his inca- pacity. Encouraged by the divisions of the nobles, Edward, son of John Baliol, with the barons who had lost their land by espousing the English side, suddenly landed at Kinghorn. Nine days after his election, Mar was met and worsted by Baliol on Dupplin Muir (11th August 1332), where Mar him- self and many nobles were slain. Baliol was crowned at Scone; but Perth was immediately retaken, and Baliol, hav- ing been defeated at Annan by the young earl of Moray, left Scotland. Next year Edward came with a large army to his support and defeated at Halidon Hill (20th July 1333), chiefly through the skill of the archers, the Scots led by Archibald Douglas, lord of Galloway, who was now regent. Berwick capitulated and Baliol surrendered it to England, pledging in addition the castles of the Lothians, including Edinburgh and Linlithgow, in security for an annual tribute of £2000. Like his grandfather, Edward IIL. made a new ordinance for the government of Scotland, but his officers never obtained possession of their posts. Meantime David and his queen fled to France, where they remained seven years. Fortunately for Scotland a new race of patriotic leaders appeared: Moray of Bothwell handed down the

12th July. As an administrator and legislator he showed an ability not inferior to that which in his earlier years he had manifested as a warrior and a general. He obtained from the estates a settlement of the succession, reformed abuses in the feudal law, regulated the courts, providing

He also encouraged trade, especially

The War of Independence

489

traditions of Wallace and Bruce, while Robert the Steward, 1328-1365, Douglas the knight of Liddesdale, and Sir Alexander Ramsay of Dalhousie sustained the fame of Bruce, Ran- dolph, and Douglas. The attraction of a French campaign with the crown of France as prize prevented Edward from ever using his whole force against Scotland, and a French fleet made a diversion by attacking the Channel Islands and threatening the Isle of Wight. Edward retaliated by assuming the title of king of France, and after two years' preparation invaded that country from Flanders. The armies met at Vironfosse (26th September 1339), where David of Scotland was present. Never was the pomp of chivalry seen in greater splendour, but the first act of the Hundred Years' War, which seemed destined to make French and English eternal enemies and French and Scots perpetual allies, passed without a blow.

Two years later the recovery of the Scottish castles and David's the repulse of Salisbury's attempt on Dunbar made it safe captivity for David to return to Scotland, which Baliol had aban- me doned. Though scarcely eighteen, he assumed the govern- ment (30th March 1342). Before his arrival Edinburgh had fallen, and next year Roxburgh was taken by Sir Alexander Ramsay, whom David unfortunately rewarded by the sheriffdom of Teviotdale, which the knight of Liddesdale claimed, and Ramsay, seized by treachery, was Starved to death at the Hermitage by the knight of Liddesdale, who entered into correspondence with the English king, and dishonoured his name of the "Flower of Chivalry." Bullock, an ecclesiastic who had risen to the office of chamberlain under Baliol and transferred his

services to David, met the same fate at the hands of the king on a suspicion of treason. Other signs of weak government were not wanting. On the conclusion of a brief truce, David, tempted by Edward's absence, invaded England in spite of the defection of some of his chief nobles, and was defeated at Neville's Cross (17th October 1346) near Durham by the archbishop of York and the northern barons, the king and several of his nobles being taken prisoners. The rigour of David's captivity (which lasted eleven years) was relaxed so far as to allow him to return frequently to Scotland and try to persuade the people to raise his ransom, which the English king urgently required. Though Baliol was still acknowledged as nominal king by Edward, he resided in Galloway, while Robert the Steward, elected regent in the name of David, really governed, At length by the treaty of Newcastle (13th July 1354) David's ransom was agreed on, sufficient hostages being taken for its payment. Next year the French king resumed the Scottish war by sending Eugene de Garanciére with men, money, and arms. Several border engagements followed, but Edward, advancing to the frontier, took Berwick, and obtained from his puppet Baliol an absolute surrender of the Scottish kingdom for an annuity. He ravaged the Lothians in the raid called the Burnt Candlemas, but failed really to reduce the country. Edward's victory over the French at Poitiers, in which many Scots were slain, forced the Scottish parlia- ment to grant the terms dictated by the English king. Peace was finally concluded by the. treaty of Berwick (3d October 1357), and confirmed at Scone,—the ransom being raised and the condition as to hostages made more severe, David at once returned to Scotland. But his sympathies Relations had become English ; he revisited that country almost with Ed- every year, and it required all the strength of the Scottish ¥2"4 UI. estates to prevent the son of Bruce from making a surrender of his kingdom more ignominious than Baliol's. The enormous ransom pressed hard on so poor a country. An attempt to induce France to resume the war failed, and David, like a debtor dealing with a money-lender, had to renew his bills at usury. Negotiations for this purpose

1365-1390. went on till 1365, when a truce for four years was agreed

Robert iL,

to. Edward and David latterly devised schemes for pay- ment by another process,—the transfer of the crown at David's death to an English prince. At the parliament of Scone David proposed that Lionel, duke of Clarence, should be recognized as his heir; but the estates replied with one voice that no Englishman should rule Scotland, and renewed the settlement of the succession by Bruce on Robert the Steward. Hatred of foreign aggression and the weakness of the king enabled the Scottish barons to playa part similar to that taken by the nobles of England in the reigns of Johnand Henry IIL., and obtain guarantees for the constitution by limiting the monarchy. Such was probably the origin of the committees of parliament (at a later date turned to an opposite use) for legislation and for judicial business which first appear in 1367,—the statutes for the more regular administration of justice, purity of the coinage, and the revocation of the grants of royal revenues and estates. It was expressly declared that no attention was to be paid to the royal mandate when contrary to law. About this period David entered into a secret agreement with Edward, promising in return for a remission of the ransom to settle the crown on him failmg heirs of his own body, but the public negotiations for its payment went on. In the same year his marriage with his second wife, Margaret Logie, a daughter of Drummond, a lesser baron, led to a revolt. He quelled it and threw the steward and at least one of his sons into prison, making lavish grants to Margaret and her relatives. Her influence did not last long, as she was supplanted in the king's favour by Agnes of Dunbar. Margaret was divorced by the Scottish bishops, for what cause is not known, and, though her appeal to the pope succeeded, David did not. survive the decision. He died on 21st February 1370, childless, and the succession opened to Robert, son of Bruce's daughter Marjory, the first of the Stuarts who were to govern Scotland for the next two centuries.

6. House of Stuart from Robert IT. to James IV.—The descent of the house of Stuart is traced from Walter Fitz- Alan, a Norman, steward of David I. His estates were in Renfrew, to which Alexander, the fourth steward, added Bute by marriage. Walter, the sixth steward, was scarcely one of the chief nobles ; but his prowess in the War of In- dependence gained him the hand of the daughter of Bruce. Robert II. was their only son. Such was the prosperous

record of the family before it ascended the throne. Its subsequent history presents a series of tragedies of which that of Mary Stuart is only one, though the most famous. While the fate of kings excites the imagination, history must trace the growth of the nation and the slow changes which transformed the bulk of the Scottish people from loyal subjects to bitter enemies of their native kings and its kgs from patriots to tyrants.

Robert IT. (1370-90), already fifty-four, continued rather than commenced his government on the death of David IL, for he had been twice regent during David's exile and cap- tivity. He did not ascend the throne without opposition, but the memory of Bruce was too fresh to admit of his settlement being put aside. The earl of Douglas, whose great estates on the border made him more formidable as a competitor than his claim by descent from a daughter of David, earl of Huntingdon, was conciliated by the mar- riage of the king's daughter Isabella to his son and by his own appointment as justiciar south of the Forth and warden of the eastern marches. This impediment removed, the coronation proceeded, and it was followed by a public de- claration of the settlement of the crown on Robert's son John, earl of Carrick, at his father's death. A still more explicit settlement was made two years afterwards on the

king's sons by his first marriage with Elizabeth More,— John earl of Carrick, Robert earl of Fife, and Alexander lord of Badenoch ; and failing them on those of his second with Euphemia Ross,—David earl of Strathearn and Walter his brother. A question as to the legitimacy of the children by Elizabeth More rendered this declaration necessary. The first fourteen years of Robert's reign passed with scarcely anything worthy of record. The king, whose portrait is drawn by Froissart as a man "not valiant, with red bleared eyes, who would rather lie still than ride," left the cares of government to his sons, especially the second. England, after the death of Edward IIL (1377), was occupied with the necessary arrangements for a new reign and with the rising of Wat Tyler (1381). The absence of any movement in Scotland similar to this or the French Jacquerie perhaps indicates a better relation between the peasantry and the upper classes ; but

a third estate of the commons was as yet unknown in Scotland. John of Gaunt, who had invaded Scotland the year before, now took refuge there and was hospitably received in Edinburgh till the young Richard IL, by putting down the rising, made it safe for him to return. This visit led to the first entrance into the northern kingdom of the principles of Wickliffe and the Lollards, whom Gaunt favoured. The French, still anxious to incite the Scots to attack England, sent a small party of free lances, who landed at Montrose and were allowed to make a raid on their own account. They were followed by John de Vienne with 1000 men-at-arms and many followers.!_ The licence of the French knights did not promote good feeling ; but the interest of the two countries prevented a rupture. After the French left the Scots made another raid into Northumberland, in retaliation for an expedition in which Richard II. wasted the Lothians. Three years later, under the earl of Douglas, they attacked Newcastle, but were repulsed by Henry Percy, who, true to his name of Hotspur, in order to recover his pennon, pursued them to near Redes- dale, about 20 miles from their own border, and fought the battle of Otterburn (1388). Douglas himself fell, but the victory went to the dead man, for young Percy and his brother were taken captive, and the bishop of Durham would not venture to intercept the retreat of the Scots, In 1388, Robert's inactivity increasing and his son the earl of Carrick being disabled by a kick from a horse, the carl of Fife was chosen regent by the estates under condition of annually accounting to them for his administration. In April 1390 his father died. His prosperous reign rather than any personal quality except an easy disposition gained Robert the praise of Wyntoun, who, writing under his son, prays God to give him grace "To govern and uphold the land

In na war state nor he it fand,

For quhen his fadyr erdyt was

Of Scotland was na part of land

Out of Scottys mennys hand,

Outwith Berwick, Roxburgh, and Jedburgh." This prayer was only partially fulfilled. The English did not acquire more of Scotland, but the border war

was not so successful, and the royal house was the scene of tragic events which threatened to change the order of succession.

Robert III. (1390-1406)—for under that name the earl Robert of Carrick was crowned to avoid the hated name of John I:

1 Froissart gives a vivid account of the poverty of the country and the rudeness of its people. "The people set little upon the distinc- tion of their houses and said shortly how with three or four poles they would make them again, Edinburgh, though the king kept there his chief residence and it is Paris in Scotland, is not like Tournay or Val- enciennes, for in all the town there are not 4000 houses." The men Vienne brought with him had to be lodged in Dunfermline, Kelso, Dal- keith, Dunbar. On his return he was asked by the young king Charles VI. how he fared ; he said he had rather be count of Savoy or Artois than king of Scotland.

—was even less active than his father. He is briefly but truly described by an historian as a good man but not a good king. He scarcely reigned, for the regency of his brother continued after his accession till it was succeeded for a few years by that of Robert's son, on whose death the earl of Fife again became regent. There was a truce with England for nine years, during which the irrepres- sible love of fighting had to satisfy itself within Scotland. The king's younger brother, Alexander, called the Wolf of Badenoch, who had been created earl of Buchan, quarrelled with the bishop of Elgin and burnt his cathedral. The Wolf and his sons were constantly engaged in private wars. The earl died in 1394, but his son Alexander continued to defy the law, which the Government was too weak to enforce in the northern Highlands. Policy was used to suppress the violence of the clans. Such seems the ex- planation of the combat between thirty of the Clan Kay and as many of the Clan Chattan before the king on the North Inch of Perth, which ended in the slaughter of nearly all the combatants on both sides. In the council or parliament of 1398 a change was made in the Govern- ment due to the general distrust of Fife and the rising spirit of the earl of Carrick, the king's eldest son. The form of it was a compromise. The young prince was made lieutenant for three years, but with the advice of a council, of whom his uncle Fife was one; they were created dukes of

Rothesay and Albany respectively, the first of that title in Scotland. Other acts of this council were designed to restrain the monarchy by constitutional laws. Parliament was to meet annually. The king, if accused of misgovernment or breach of law, might, "to excuse his defaults," arraign his officers before the council. No one was to ride through the country with more followers than he could pay for, The grant of £11,000 for the common weal and profit of the kingdom by the three estates— barons, clergy, and burghs—was made under protest that it was not to be a precedent, and the burghs stipulated that in future they were not to pay more than under Robert IJ. In the following year the revolution took place in England which led to the deposition and death of Richard II. and the accession of Henry IV. An im- postor who had assumed the name of Richard took refuge in the- Hebrides and was received at the Scottish court. The expedition of Henry to Scotland (1400), partly due to this, was also prompted by the desire to distinguish a new reign and by the invitation of the earl of March, indignant at the preference given to the daughter of Douglas over his own as wife for Rothesay. Reviving the old claim of feudal superiority, which was now supported by the forged charters of Hardyng as well as the fictions of Geoffrey of Monmouth, Henry cited Robert to do homage at Newcastle, and, on his failing to appear, marched to Edinburgh. Rothesay successfully defended the capital, and Henry was suddenly recalled by the rising of Owen Glendower and the Percies. Next year (1401) occurred the death of Rothesay by starvation at Falkland, where he had been committed by his father at Albany's instance on account of his bad government and dissolute conduct. The declaration of the council at Edinburgh, which acquitted Albany of all concern in the death, was enough for the moment, but in after times, like Bothwell's acquittal, a corroboration of guilt. The last years of Robert were clouded by private and public misfortune. His queen, Annabella Drummond, his son-in-law, the earl of Douglas, and Trail, bishop of St Andrews, one of the wisest of his council, died within a short interval. The son of Douglas, though brave, was unequal to the task of holding the border against the Percies and the earl of March, and so constantly lost battles that he was called Archibald Tyne- man, The Scots were signally defeated at Nisbet Muir

(14th September 1402) in Merse and at Homildon Hill 1390-1413.

near Wooler by Percy, where the slain and prisoners equalled the number at Otterburn. Nor could order be maintained within Scotland itself, of which the forcible marriage of the countess of Mar by Alexander, a bastard of the Wolf of Badenoch, was an example. Afraid of Albany, and warned by the fate of Rothesay, Robert sent his remaining son James to France (1405); but the ship in which he sailed was taken by an English cruiser, and the future king was a prisoner in England for nineteen years. This last blow broke the weak heart of Robert, who died at Dun- donald and was buried at Paisley. Though his reign was inglorious, the tradition of the War of Independence still warmed the heart of the nation and produced the earliest writers in Scottish hterature,—Barbour, Fordun, and Wyn- toun. The Bruce of Barbour became the national epic.

The year after Robert's death the first martyr in Scot- land, James Resby, an English priest, was burnt at Perth by Albany, who is described by Wyntoun as "a constant Catholic." Resby was condemned at the instance of Laur- ence of Lindores, called the Inquisitor of Scotland, for forty theses from the books of Wickliffe. The Lollard doctrines continued to be secretly held by a small sect, chiefly in the west. Knox traces the descent of the first Scottish Re- formers—the Lollards of Kyle—from Wickliffe and Hus. This religious movement was destined to exercise a pro- found influence on the history of Scotland. The time when the church was a civilizing and purifying power was passing away. Its enormous wealth, a contrast to its early poverty, its developed so different from its primitive doc- trine, celibacy, and the confessional in a lax society, that was no longer moved by the fervour of a new faith, pro- duced a corruption which forced itself on minds of a reforming tendency. Catholicism allowed no place for individual reformers, and their protests, often carried to extremes, were deemed attacks upon the church itself, which became (unwillingly on the part of its best friends) the defender of its worst abuses. From first to last in Scotland the movement was popular, though not at first democratic. It did not at all or only to a slight extent change through political causes as in England.

Though he was a captive, the right of James I. (1406-37) James I.

on his father's death was at once acknowledged by a general council held at Perth; but the appointment of Albany as governor boded ill for his return.

ciliate all classes and pave the way to his own accession to the throne, which would have been his by right had the young king died. The recovery of Jedburgh (1408), iong in the hands of the English, gave the regent an easy opportunity of popularity. It was decided by a general council that its walls should be razed and the expense defrayed by a poll tax, but Albany refused to burden the people and paid it out of the royal customs. Next year Albany and Douglas (now released from captivity in Eng- land) entered into a bond of alliance. With the earls of March and Mar and others similar engagements were made; but Douglas, who had acquired the lands of March, which, however, were now restored, had to be conciliated by a grant of Lochmaben and Annandale, the patrimony of the Bruces. The more independent nobles of the north could not be so easily gained, and Donald, lord of the Isles, disappointed in a claim to the earldom of Ross, in- vaded Aberdeenshire with a great host, whose defeat by the earl of Mar at Harlaw (17th May 1412)—the Otter- burn of northern ballads—was followed by the capture of Dingwall, his chief castle on the mainland, and his final defeat at Lochgilphead.

The first Scottish university —St Andrews—was founded by bulls granted a year later at the instance of James and

He held the office Albany's thirteen years, administering it till his death so as to con- regency.

1418-1427,

Educa- tion of James I,

492

Bishop Wardlaw, who had been his tutor. The higher education had already been to some extent supplied by cathedral and monastic schools ; but Scots who sought a complete curriculum had to resort to Oxford or Paris. One of their number, Major, expresses his wonder that the Scottish prelates had not

earlier thought of a national university. That now founded was destined to play an important part in promoting the Reformation and along with the later universities in civilizing Scotland.

Little of note occurred during the remaining years of Albany's regency. His futile siege of Roxburgh (1415), soon abandoned, got the name of the Fool's Raid. Greater credit attended the Scottish arms in France, where the earls of Douglas, Buchan, and Wigtown won battles for the French king, and lands and honour for themselves ; but the defeats of Crevant and Verneuil effaced the honours of Beaugé (in Anjou), and, though the remnant of the Scots remained as the king's bodyguard, no considerable num- ber of troops from Scotland afterwards went to France. Albany died at Stirling in his eightieth year (3d September 1419). His son Murdoch assumed the regency as if heredi- tary; but, himself indolent and with lawless sons, he did not retain the influence of his father. In 1423 ambassadors sent by the Scottish parliament to England at last arranged terms for the return of James from his long exile (12th May 1423).

Exile had its uses, and, except at the beginning and again after the accession of Henry V., his captivity had not been rigorous. Sir John Pelham was his governor, and he was instructed in Latin grammar, oratory, and poetry, as well as in bodily exercises,—wrestling and the use of the spear. Though distinguished for physical strength, his bent was to the Muses, and he became pro- ficient in dancing, music, and poetry. Buchanan blames

to the magic which in that age encircled the name of king. The first parliament of James at Perth passed quietly,

but with indications of a policy long meditated and now to be put into operation.

the sheriff what lands 'pertain to the king or has per- tained" in the time of the last three kings and in whose hands they now are. The choice of the privy council was significant. It was headed by Lauder, bishop of Glasgow,

who had negotiated the king's release, but none of the greater nobles were included. In their stead appear an unusual number of minor gentry, some holding high offices, The parliament held at Perth in the following year was the scene of a coup @état (12th March). Albany, his younger son Alexander, Alan of Otterburn his secretar : and Sir John Montgomery were seized on one day, and immediately after Isabella, Albany's wife, whose father, the earl of Lennox, had already been arrested. The only one of Albany's kin still at large, his youngest son J ames, made a short resistance, burnt Dumbarton, and slew the Red Stuart of Dundonald, the king's uncle, but, being hotly pursued, fled to Ireland. Parliament, at an adjourned sitting at Stirling, proceeded to the trial of Albany and his adherents, which was held with feudal solemnity before an assize. Albany, his two sons, and Lennox were con- demned and executed on the Heading Hill. Clemency was shown to those who had not been his intimate sup- porters. Historians are divided as to the policy or neces- sity for such severity. But it secured its immediate object; it was felt that Scotland had again a king to defend his rights. James for twelve years carried out, not without murmurs, but without successful opposition, his projects of reform.

One Act forbade private James war ; another imposed the penalty of forfeiture of life and and the goods for rebellion; and a third directed an inquest by 20bles

Foreign states recognized his power. At the request James's of the Flemish estates Middelburg was restored as the foreign market for Scottish trade; in return the privileges of Policy:

this taste as carried beyond what became a king, but no- thing in his after life showed he was ever led by amuse-

When thirty he was

ments to neglect graver studies. taken by Henry V. to France with the view of detaching the Scottish allies of the dauphin, but refused to be made a tool of, saying he had as yet no kingdom and they owed him no allegiance. He proved his soldiership by the capture of Dreux. On his return to England he married (11th February 1423) Johanna Beaufort, daughter of the earl of Somerset and grand-daughter of John of Gaunt. In the Kingis Quhair he

describes his love at first sight in the language of his master Chaucer, but with original genius. The marriage facilitated his release, which was negotiated for a sum of 60,000 marks. He confirmed the treaty at Melrose and was crowned with his bride at Scone (21st May 1423) by Wardlaw,—Albany, as earl of Fife, placing him on the throne.

He lost no time in addressing himself to the task of restoring the royal authority and the obedience to the law which the long regency had weakened. From this time dates the conflict between the king and the nobles,—the latter not maintaining, as in England, constitutional rights, but contending for exorbitant privileges. The experiment of government without a king had been tried too long not to make those who had exercised unrestrained power desire its continuance. The nature of the country—divided by rivers, mountains, and arms of the sea—the absence of great cities and the number of strong castles, the close con- nexion of the principal nobles by marriage and bonds of alliance, the large jurisdiction within their territories, the clanship not only in the Highlands and on the borders but in some measure throughout the whole country, which made fidelity to the chief a natural duty, strengthened the aristocracy and weakened the crown. The sovereign had to rely on the people and the clergy, on foreign alliances, on the influence due, partly to the virtues of his predecessors, partly

the Scots were guaranteed and Flemish merchants under- took to raise part of James's ransom. Flemish artisans and manufacturers settled in Scotland. More than one embassy passed to and from Rome with regard to the affairs of the Scottish Church, which James, while strictly repressing heresy (a Bohemian doctor, Crawar, being burnt as a disciple of Hus), showed his intention of reforming. The new pope Martin V. had put an end to the schism. The bitter enemy of the English king on account of the regulations which culminated in the Statute of Preemunire, he welcomed James's advances, James, while showing his attachment to the church by founding a Carthusian monastery at Perth and a Franciscan in Edinburgh, asserted his right to remedy abuses of the ecclesiastical courts, and addressed a letter to the Bene- dictine and Augustinian monks reproaching them for laxity. To Erik of Norway he sent an embassy and obtained a commutation of the arrears due for the Hebrides under the treaty of Largs. A marriage between

the dauphin and Margaret, his infant daughter, previously arranged, was celebrated shortly before his death. He thus estab- lished friendly relations with the Continent, and, though his position as regards England could not be the same, the truce was only twice broken towards the end of his reign—by a raid of the English, who were. defeated at Peferden (1425) by the earl of Angus, and his own attempt to recover Roxburgh. During the fourteen years of his actual reign James held thirteen parliaments, prov- ing his desire to obtain the support of the nation in his reforms. In 1426 he introduced the session, a royal court for civil causes sitting in the principal towns, to provide the justice too often denied in the baronial courts. Next year he summoned a parliament to Inverness—an unusual

sc OF

STUARTS TO JAMES IV.]

| Subjuga- place of meeting—for the purpose of restoring the peace

tion of High- _ lands.

Dealings with his nobles.

of the Highlands. Its records are lost; but the chief event was the seizure of Alexander, earl of Ross, lord of the Isles, and his mother, along with as many as forty chiefs. 'Two were beheaded and a third hanged, but most of them, including the lord of the Isles, after a short im- prisonment, were released. Ross at once raised the stan- dard of rebellion and burnt Inverness, but was defeated by James at Lochaber, where the clans Chattan and Cameron deserted to the royal side. On the Sunday following the former killed in a church the whole of the latter clan who were present. Another internecine conflict took place in Caithness seven years afterwards. Such private feuds, traditional amongst the Celts, were one cause of the success of James and of the ultimate subjugation of the Highlands. So completely was the power of the lord of the Isles broken that he came as a suppliant and placed his sword in the king's hands at Holyrood. His life was spared, but he was confined to Tantallon castle. In a parliament held later in the same year at Perth an Act was passed for the re- presentation of the shires and the election of a speaker; but this imitation of the English House

of Commons was not acted on. The Scottish parliament continued to sit in one chamber of lords, clergy, and commons, and it was only in the reign of James V. that representation of the shires was admitted. The following parliament (1428) provided that an oath of fealty should be taken to the queen by all persons succeeding to lands or dignities, which shows that James knew the danger of his policy. In 1429 an Act was passed for the protection of the tillers of the ground, who were not to be removed for a year, and provision was made for arming all landowners and burgesses. The birth of twins—Alexander, who died young, and James, afterwards king —strengthened the king's position by interposing two lives besides his own against any attempt at revolution. Two years later Donald Balloch, a kinsman of the lord of the Isles, renewed the rebellion ; but, though he defeated Mar and Caithness, on the approach of James himself he fled to Ireland.

In 1434 the king applied the statute of his first parlia- ment as to the resumption of lands to which no sufficient title could be shown. 'The estates of the earl of March were forfeited on the ground that Albany had exceeded his power in restoring-them. He was created earl of Buchan with the intention no doubt of removing him from The death

LAND A493

was to spend Christmas at Perth. Before he crossed the 1427-1448.

Forth he was warned by an old Highland woman that if he passed he would never return. She tried unsuccessfully to get access to him again at the Dominican monastery at Perth, where he lodged. At midnight, when he was half undressed, Graham with 300 men surrounded the monas- tery. Their approach was heard; but it was found that the bolts had been removed by treachery. James was hastily concealed in a vault underneath the room. Before the conspirators entered a brave attempt was made by Catherine Douglas, one of the queen's maids, to bar the door with her arm, but the fragile obstacle broke and Graham burst in. The fall of another of the maids into the vault discovered the king, who fought fiercely for his life. The queen was wounded in trying to save him, ful- filling an unconscious prophecy of the Aingis Quhair. At last, after killing two of his assailants, he fell, overcome by numbers (February 1437). Vengeance speedily overtook the

murderers, who had made no provision to follow up their deed. Within a month they were all executed in a manner ‘ exceeding even the barbarous usages of the time. James was buried in the Carthusian monastery, where his doub- let was long kept as a relic and seen by the people with veneration. Such was the sad fate of the best of the Stuarts, —a king in advance of his age and too rapid in his reforms.

James IT. (1437-60), an infant of six, called “ Fiery-face ” James

from a red stain on one cheek, was crowned at Holyrood 11. five weeks after his father’s death, and there commenced one of the long minorities which the early deaths of the Stuart kings made common, and during which history is chiefly occupied with the contest for the person of the king. These have been truly represented as weakening the royal authority. The possession of power rendered the nobles impatient of restraint and accustomed to licence ; but they had also a reverse effect. When the monarch succeeded he was received with favour by the people as a deliverer from the oppression of the barons, too often petty tyrants. A rule of law allowing him to revoke grants in his minority was often used with great effect. On the whole, monarchy, in spite of the weakness and vices of the kings, was popular in Scotland until the Reformation and the fatal chain of events in which Mary was involved in- troduced a democratic tendency, which grew under the bad government of her successors. The nobles, though their word was law with their kinsmen and retainers, were seldom

favourites of the people. Archibald, fourth earl of Douglas, Struggles the greatest of the Scottish nobility and duke of Touraine fF re- in France, was lieutenant-general of the kingdom from ®&™%

the border and conciliating him for his loss. in 1435 of Alexander Stuart, earl of Mar, led to the lapse of that earldom to the crown on account of his bastardy,

and the following year the earldom of Strathearn was re- sumed on the ground that it was a male fee and did not pass to the wife of Patrick Graham, the heir-female. It was bestowed in life-rent on the king’s uncle, the earl of Athole, and Malise, the son of Patrick Graham, was made earlof Menteith. This assertion of right on the part of the king to deal with the

estates of the nobles though fortified by legal documents and recognized possession was certain to make enemies. It is more surprising that James so long succeeded in maintaining his authority than that he at last perished for doing so; but he had the people on his side. In the summer of 1436 he was obliged to relinquish the siege of Roxburgh owing to the barons' refusal of support. In October when the forfeiture of Strathearn was made in a parliament at Edinburgh, Sir Robert Graham, uncle and tutor of the young heir Malise, de- nounced the king in the boldest terms and urged the barons to seize his person; but, failing, he was banished from the court. As in other cases, this leniency was not requited. In his Highland retreat Graham formed a con- spiracy with Athole, the king's uncle, who aimed at the crown, and Sir Robert Stuart, Athole's grandson. James

James's accession till his own death the year after ; but Sir William Crichton, master of the household of James I., who was keeper of the castle of Edinburgh, where the young king was detained, appears to have exercised the chief power. Shortly after the death of Douglas James's mother carried off her son, on the pretext of a pilgrimage, to Stirling, of which Sir Alexander Livingstone of Callander © was governor. Livingstone laid siege to Edinburgh, but made terms with Crichton, who became chancellor. The alternate struggles and reconciliations of these rivals con- tinued till James was fourteen, when he favoured Douglas (the eighth earl) in order to free himself from their control. This was a time of civil or rather of private wars. The only contemporary chronicle marks almost every year with the seizure of a castle or a party fight. Douglas brought the earl of Crawford and his retainers from the Highlands, who ravaged the estates of the bishop of St Andrews, and himself besieged Edinburgh castle. The castle surrendered ; but Crichton, one of the adroit statesmen who rise after every fall, continued chancellor, and soon after, by negotiat- ing the marriage of James with Mary of Guelders (1448), ensured his favour with the court. Shortly after the cele-

1448-1466. bration of this marriage Livingstone, now chamberlain, with many of his kindred and friends, was suddenly arrested and tried before a parliament at Edinburgh ; two were exe- cuted, and the others, including

the chamberlain, attainted and placed in strict ward in Dumbarton. Douglas and Crichton received part of the forfeited estates. James was chiefly advised at this period by Bishop Kennedy, whose counsel was the old one of "divide et impera." He now determined to do to the more powerful Douglas as he had done to the Livingstones. The earl had shown no modera- tion in prosperity. His revenue and retainers equalled those of the king: 1000 horsemen were his ordinary train, and he attended tlie king's marriage with five times that number. His courts on the borders were almost parlia- ments. In the year of jubilee (1450) he went to Rome with a large suite. On his return he visited the new king of England, Edward IV. At the parliament of Edinburgh (1451) he submitted to the king's mercy, and at the request of the queen and' estates received a regrant of his lands and honours. He was already suspected of treason, and had in fact renewed a secret bond with the earls of Crawford and Ross, the most powerful nobles in the north, which threatened the royal authority. James felt a crisis had come and sum-

James's moned Douglas to Stirling at Shrovetide. There the young energetic king, in violation of hospitality and a safe conduct which rule. he had given the earl, when Douglas refused to break the bond with the other earls, struck him with his knife and killed him (21st February 1452)! An appeal to arms neces- sarily followed. Douglas's brother J ames, the ninth earl, came to Stirling and burnt great part of the town. But the clergy and commons and other nobles, some even of Douglas's own kin, not sorry at the fall of one who over- topped them, stood by the king. Parliament sanctioned James's act and declared Douglas had deserved death. At length, after repeated struggles, Crawford was defeated at the Muir of Brechin and Douglas fled to England. His estates were of course forfeited. The lordship of Douglas was granted to Angus. Ettrick Forest and Galloway were annexed to the crown. Some years later Douglas made another desperate effort against James, but after wasting Merse was totally defeated by Angus (1458).2 The energy of James in visiting all parts of his kingdom was con- spicuous during the last period of his reign. The good relations with the French and other Continental courts con- tinued, With England—one brief interruption excepted— peace had been preserved during the reign of Henry VI. Henry even agreed to restore Roxburgh and Berwick to Scotland in return for assistance against the duke of York. When Henry was taken

prisoner at N orthampton, his queen and her young son fled to Scotland, and James was called on to fulfil his engagements. He laid siege to Roxburgh, which for more than a century had defied his predecessors, and after a stout resistance it was taken; but James did not live to enjoy the triumph. When inspecting the dis- charge of a new gun it burst, and he was killed (3d August 1460). He had,not reached his thirtieth year. Char- His reign had been singularly fortunate, for he succeeded acter of (where his father failed) in restoring the royal authority and vaines'S reducing th f the nobles. Thi have b legisla. Teducing the power of the nobles. is may have been ee ee ee ES oe 1 The origin of two great families dates from the fall of Douglas. Sir James Hamilton of Cadzow deserted his kinsman for the king and received large grants of land and the king's daughter as wife. Sir Walter Scott of Kirkurd and Buccleuch, a border chief, was similarly rewarded. These were the ancestors of the dukes of Hamilton and Buccleuch.

? Tn the next reign along with the king's banished brother, Albany, he made a daring raid on Lochmaben, but being taken prisoner he ended his days as a monk at Lindores. A saying attributed to him, "Tf a man cannot better be, he may be a monk," was a sign of the change of times since Celtic kings were proud to assume the cowl.

partly due to the counsels of Kennedy, bishop of St Andrews, and Crichton; but James showed skill in govern- ment and vigour in war, though the murder of Douglas has left a stain on his character. The crown was richer at his death than it had been since the time of Alexander II, by many forfeitures secured from alienation by the Act of Annexation (1455, c. 41). The royal pre- rogative was strengthened by the first statute defining treason (1449, c. 25). Provision was made for the execu. tion of criminal justice by the king, his justiciar, and sheriffs, and of civil justice by the session. Stringent rules were laid down against violent spoliation of lands and goods (1449, c. 30). The coinage was regulated, an attempt made to preserve its standard, and to prohibit export of gold and silver (1451, c. 23). Towards the end of the reign, when war with England was impending, statutes were passed for the defence of the borders, giving the king more direct control, and declaring that the office of warden should not be hereditary. The progress of agri- culture was furthered by the famous Act for the encourage- ment of feu farm, an existing form of tenure becoming

more common, and another giving fixity of tenure to leases until the expiry of their terms notwithstanding alienation of the lands. There were also many minor laws which had for their object the welfare of the people. Though the legislation of James II. was not so large, it was perhaps as important as that of James I.

On the Sunday after his father's death James III. Minority (1460-88) was crowned at Kelso. A regency was formed of James consisting of the queen, Kennedy, and others. A parlia- Ut ment followed at Edinburgh, which was blamed by the nobles for leaving so much power in the hands of a woman : but there was a full appointment to the offices of state, and, though Mary of Guelders aimed at more than the guardianship of her son, it does not appear that she really exercised royal authority. After the defeat of Towton (29th March 1461), Henry VI. and his queen took refuge in Scotland. In return for their reception and in hope of further aid, Henry surrendered Berwick (23d April) to the Scottish king, in whose hands it remained till its final annexation to England at the close of the reign. Edward IV. retaliated by a treaty (13th February 1462) with the anished earl of Douglas, the earl of Ross, lord of the Isles, and Donald Balloch, by which Douglas was to be restored to his estates, and the whole country north of the Forth divided between the two Highland chiefs. George, earl of Angus, who had risen on the ruins of the house of Douglas, made a counter-league with Henry VL, by which he was promised an English dukedom and valuable lands between Trent and Humber, but was to preserve his alle- giance to the Scottish king. These were paper promises, and all that came of them were an ineffectual rising in the north and the relief of Alnwick, which had been besieged by the Yorkists. Next year the Lancastrian cause having received a fatal blow by the defeat of Hexham, a singular offer by Edward IV. to marry the queen dowager of Scot- land—one of the many schemes of the king-maker, earl of Warwick—was frustrated by her death or perhaps by the discovery of an intrigue with Adam Hepburn of Hales, whose wife was alive. Kennedy, who had the chief control of Scottish affairs, negotiated the release of Alexander, the king's brother, who had been taken by an English cruiser, and secured a truce between England and Scotland for fifteen years. He understood the nature of his countrymen better than any man, and was always ready to give counsel in parliament, while his learning, especially in the civil law, made

him respected by foreign powers. When he died the country wept for him as for a parent.

Before his death a plot had been formed which threw the young king into different hands. Amongst the barons

Ascend- ency of Boyd.

STUARTS TO JAMES IV. |

who received office at the commencement of the reign one of the foremost was Robert Boyd of Kilmarnock, the justiciar. Boyd determined to play the part of Livingstone in the last reign, and usurp the supreme power by seizing the person of the king. Bonds with this object were

‘ entered into between him, Fleming of Cumbernauld, Lord

Govern- ment by favour- ites.

Kennedy, a brother of the bishop, and others. While holding a court at Linlithgow James was carried off to Edinburgh by Boyd. Kennedy made a feint to save him by seizing his bridle, but was overpowered ; perhaps the attempt was real, for Kennedy afterwards separated from the Boyds. In parliament Boyd went through the form of asking pardon of the young king in presence of the estates, and was immediately entrusted with the custody of the royal person (October 1466) and that of his brothers Albany and Mar, as well as the fortresses of the kingdom. Next year he was made chamberlain, which gave him control of the revenue. The marriage of his son Thomas, created earl of Arran, with the king’s sister Mary, marked the height of his ambition. The fall of Boyd, as sudden as his rise, whom with his brother Alexander James at first favoured, was due to the same cause as that of Livingstone, —the king’s marriage and his desire when major to assert his independence. Negotiations for an English match having fallen through, an alliance with a Norwegian prin- cess was determined on, and an embassy sent to Norway by parliament. Christian of Denmark and Norway readily assented. He promised his daughter a dowry of 60,000 florins, besides a surrender of the claim of arrears of the annual payment for the Hebrides. But, as it was incon- venient to pay the dowry, both the

Orkneys and the Shetlands were mortgaged to Scotland, and have remained ever since under the Scottish crown. Two years later (July 1469) the princess Margaret arrived in Scotland, when the marriage took place. Arran on his arrival at Leith with the king's bride received a message from his wife warning him that James had conceived a great hatred against him; accordingly he fled to Denmark. In the parliament his father and his uncle, Sir Alexander Boyd, were attainted. The chamberlain saved himself by flight ; Sir Alexander was executed. The specific charge made was the seizure of the king's person ; but a general clause had reference to the immense estates they had annexed. The king's sister, divorced from Arran, was married to Lord Hamilton, who thus laid the foundation of a family whose head more than once aspired to the crown.

The refusal of parliament in 1473 to sanction the pro- posed passage of James to France, to aid Louis XI. against Charles the Bold, on the score of the expense and risk, was the first indication of the difference between the king and the nobility which led to the disasters of the close of his reign. The parliament of 1476 took a bolder step. At its adjournment it committed its whole powers to certain members, of whom the duke of Albany and the earl of Mar, the king's brothers, were the principal,—a measure which indicated a want of confidence in the king. He had shown himself, like Louis XI., disposed to govern by new men who owed their elevation to himself,—a policy which alienated the aristocracy. Of these favourites the chief were Robert Cochrane, originally, it was said, a mason, who proved himself a skilful architect ; Roger, an English musician ; and Andrews, a physician, who dealt in astrology,—all able to gratify tastes of James. There were besides a few young men of birth who gained favour by flattery or other arts. Cochrane became all powerful and disgusted the nobles by sumptuousness and arrogance, and the people by debasing the coin. He succeeded, it was reported, by relating a prophecy that a lion should be devoured by its whelps, in producing in the king's mind an aversion to his brothers, whose characters and knightly

accomplishments made them popular. and sent him to Craigmillar castle. He soon after died (1479) in Edinburgh under circumstances which gave rise to suspicion of foul play. The gift to Cochrane of the vacant earldom or its revenues strengthened the suspicion of his complicity. Albany, committed to Edinburgh castle (1480), escaped to Dunbar and thence to France. He there married Anne de la Tour d'Auvergne, whose son was the regent Albany in the reign of James V. Failing to induce Louis to do more than urge his restoration, two years afterwards he quitted France.and at Fotheringay entered into a treaty (1482) with Edward IV., by which, in return for the empty title of Alexander IV., he owned the subjection of the country to England and made other humiliating promises. Supported by the earl of Gloucester and the exiled earl of Douglas, Albany laid siege to Berwick, while James collected his forces on the Boroughmuir of Edinburgh and advanced to Lauder. There the chief nobles, indignant at the favour shown to Cochrane, mutinied, and, led by Angus, who then acquired his name of "Bell the Cat," seized Cochrane and some of the other favourites of James and hanged them before his eyes. Berwick fell and was never afterwards recovered by the Scots. The nobles, distrusting Angus, who had made secret terms with Albany and the English king, were induced by Schivas, the archbishop of St Andrews, to effect a reconciliation between the king and his brother, who received the vacant earldom of Mar and for a little became chief minister. A parliament in December ap- pointed Albany lieutenant-general, but his continued in- trigues with the English king being discovered he was attainted for treason and fled to England (1483), and thence to France. James had now a brief period of peace, during which the revolutions in England freed him from the danger of war in that quarter. New matrimonial projects were tried. It was proposed that the prince of Scotland should marry a niece of Richard III., Anne de la Pole, daughter of the duke of Suffolk, and after Richard's deposition a marriage with Elizabeth, daughter of Edward IV., was suggested. On the death of Queen Margaret James himself made an offer for the hand of the widow of Edward IV. Such proposals, though abortive, were signs of a better understanding between the two countries, or at least between their sovereigns. When the rebellion broke out in the following year the nobles and James accused each other of treasonable correspondence with England, but no assistance was got by either, for England was still scarcely released from its own civil war. In 1487 the greater part of the Scottish barons rose in arms. James had

abandoned himself to another favourite, Sir John Ramsay, whose life had been spared at Lauder. The chiefs of the party were the earls of Angus and Argyll, Blackadder, bishop of Glasgow, and the Homes and Hep- burns, powerful barons on the border. Having seized the person of the young prince, whom they already desig- nated king, they pretended to act in his name. James retreated to Aberdeenshire, for the northern barons still adhered to him. Father and son, at the head of their respective forces, first met at Blackness (May 1488) on the Forth, where a pacification was agreed to on terms which showed the king's party was the weaker. In the following month the rebellion was renewed and the king was slain at Sauchie (11th June), within sight of Bannockburn. He was buried at Cambuskenneth, being only thirty-five years of age. He did not fall, like his father, through the strength of the nobles, for they were much divided, and he commenced his independent reign master of the situation. The Wars of the Roses gave him an oppor- tunity, which he missed, of strengthening his kingdom in relation to England, whose monarchs adopted a new attitude

James seized Mar 1466-1488.

1488-1512. towards Scotland from that of the Plantagenets,—seeking alliance rather than war. His own weakness, his love of favourites and of money, his passion for music and art— perhaps inherited from his grandfather, but carried to ex- cess and not counterbalanced by the qualities of a states- man and general—proved his ruin. The rebellions, first that of his brother, then that in the name of his son, were fatal precedents in the reign of Mary Stuart.

James James IV. (1488-1513) was already sixteen when crowned IV. at Scone. His reign is an interlude in the record of almost constant battles, murders, and executions with which Scot- tish history abounds. There were not wanting causes of offence between England and Scotland, but the politic

Henry VII. avoided war and effected what previous kings

had failed in the marriage between the royal houses. James,

a popular monarch, succeeded better than any of his pre-

decessors and suécessors in keeping on good terms with

all classes. His court was one of splendour for a small country ; indeed Scotland, almost for the first time, pos- sessed a court which set the fashion of civilization and culture. The death of James III., instead of exciting the horror awakened by the death of James I., was treated with indifference, almost as a relief. The chief offices of state were distributed amongst the supporters of the young king. The first business of the parliament, which met in Edinburgh, was the treason trials. The persons put on their trial were not those who fought against but those who supported the late king. Several were condemned, but prudently treated with 'great leniency. All were charged with correspondence with England as well as with their presence at the field of Stirling (Sauchie). There followed a curious transaction called in the records "the debate and cause of the field of Stirling,"—the first debate in a Scottish parliament of which we have any account. The result was a unanimous resolution "that the slaughter committed in the field of Stirling, when our sovereign lord's father happened to be slain, was due entirely to the fault of him and his privy council divers times before the said field." There was not a single execution. Heritable officers who had fought against the prince were only sus- pended, not deposed, and the heirs of those slain were by special grace admitted to their estates. The only person who felt compunction was the young king. His frequent pilgrimages and an iron belt he wore were due to his re- morse for his father's death. The leniency of James was rewarded by the loyalty of the nobility, except a few northern barons headed by Lennox and Huntly, and these, after being defeated by James in the following year, were also treated with clemency. The only trace of rebellion

during his reign was a secret intrigue between Henry VII.

and Angus, who succeeded to the traditionary policy of

the Douglases.

A determined effort was made by parliament to put down robbery and theft by special commissions to certain lords who were to be responsible for

different districts. It was provided that the king in person should attend the justice air (eyre),—a provision which James acted upon, A new master of the mint was appointed to restore the purity of the coinage. The penalty of treason was to be imposed on those who purchased benefices from Rome. An active spirit of reform, a desire to remedy the evils of the late reign, was displayed by both the king and his advisers, The personal character of James showed itself in a liberal- ity contrasting with his father's avarice, and in a love of chivalrous display encouraging tournaments and martial exercises, as well as in the care of the navy.

From the time of Bruce we hear of ships and shipbuild- ing, natural in a country with so large a seaboard ; Scottish merchantmen now began to make distant voyages, and their ships, half privateers, half traders, were commanded

Legisla- tion.

Forma- tion of a navy.

Ss cOoOTLAN D

[HISTORY.

and manned by sailors who were a match for those of any country. The most famous commander, Wood of Largo, with the "Flower" and the ' Yellow Carvel," cleared the Forth of English pirates. Stephen Bull, an English captain, promised to take Wood dead or alive, but was captured himself; James sent him back to Henry VIIL. with a chivalrous message that the Scots could now fight by sea as well as land. Wood was made one of the king's council. By his advice James built the "Great St Michael" for a crew of 300 and 1000 men-at-arms. It exhausted all the woods in Fife except Falkland, and cost £30,000. The king's policy was not confined to building ships of war: every town was to have vessels of at least 20 tons. The navy was for the protection of trade, to which the national instinct pointed as a source of wealth.*

The marriage of James early attracted the attention of parliament, and embassies were sent to foreign courts to seek a suitable spouse ; but James

had formed a connexion with Lady Margaret Drummond, and could not be per- suaded to a political alliance. The chief events of his reign prior to his marriage to Margaret Tudor were his ex- peditions to the north-east and the western Highlands. He adopted with the chiefs a similar policy to that which had succeeded with the barons, attaching them to his person by gifts, offices, and favours, and committing to them the suppression of crime. In 1496 the impostor Perkin War- beck came to Scotland and was recognized by James, who gave him his kinswoman, Catherine Gordon, daughter of- the earl of Huntly, called for her beauty the White Rose, in marriage. Raids were twice made across the border on his behalf, but there was only one engagement of any con- sequence, at Dunse (1497), and an unsuccessful siege of Melrose. Henry VII., whose talent lay in diplomacy, ap- James's proached the Scottish king with the tempting offer of the marriage hand of his daughter Margaret. Commissioners met to m consider this at Jedburgh, and, though James refused to 'Tudor give up Perkin Warbeck, a truce was arranged, and Perkin left Scotland. The marriage of James and Margaret was soon afterwards agreed to and a peace concluded. The papal dispensation was procured in 1500, but the final treaty was not ratified till two years later (8th August 1502). Some of Henry's counséllors sought to dissuade him from the marriage, for if his son Henry died James would be next in succession to the English throne; but he replied that if so Scotland would be an accession to Eng- land and not the reverse, recalling the example of Nor- mandy and England. Margaret, a girl in her fourteenth year, made a triumphal progress to Scotland, where she was received with pomp; but the marriage was one of policy, and the young wife was discontented with her new country and her husband. Their court as it is painted in the poems of Dunbar was merry, but not moral. The licence which prevailed and was tolerated by the church was shown by the elevation of one of the king's bastards by Jane Kennedy to the archbishopric of St Andrews when a youth of eighteen. Others received rich benefices, and Jane Kennedy herself married the earl of Angus. Scottish history during the six years after the king's marriage was uneventful.

Henry VII.'s death (1509) changed the relations between Warwith Scotland and England. Henry VIII. had not liked his England. sister's marriage, and his refusal to deliver to her a legacy of jewels left by his father led to a coolness. The mutual attacks of English and Scottish privateers and border

frays increased the bad feeling. Andrew Barton's ship the "Lion," after an obstinate conflict, in which Barton was killed, was seized (1512) in the Downs by the sons of Howard, the English high admiral, and James's request for redress was met with the contemptuous answer that kings should not dispute as to the fate of pirates. But it

i

Flodden.

Scottish

| learning

at this epoch.

REFORMATION, | sc OT was Henry's Continental policy which in the end provoked the war. The struggle in Italy between Louis XII. and Pope Julius IT. gave him an opportunity, and he allied him- self with the latter and invaded France. He attempted before leaving England to secure peace with Scotland by promising to redress its grievances. But James had re- newed the old alliance with France, and the only answer given to the first embassy in 1512 was an offer to mediate between France and England. In 1513 the message was, that if Henry passed to France war would not be declared without a herald being sent. The French queen (Anne of Brittany) had given James a ring with a substantial sub- sidy, and he had already made up his mind for war. Like Henry, he longed to win his spurs. Henry went to France in June, and soon after his arrival at the camp at Térouanne, the Scottish Lord Lyon brought the threatened declaration of war (11th August 1513). The grounds stated were the seizure of Scotsmen on the borders, the refusal of Margaret's legacy, and the death of Barton. No time was lost by James in carrying the declaration into effect ; but the war was disliked by the nation. The earl of Arran, sent with the fleet to aid the French, sailed instead, in defiance of orders, to Carrickfergus. James himself called out the whole land force contrary to the advice of his council, mustering at the Boroughmuir 100,000 men according to English accounts—probably exaggerated, but doubtless as large an army as had been seen in Scotland. ° Crossing the border, he took Norham, Wark, and Ford. At the

.last of these castles the wife of Heron, the proprietor,

then a prisoner in Scotland, beguiled James by her beauty, causing him to waste several days and betraying his movements to the enemy. In the conduct of the battle (9th September 1513) which followed he committed almost every fault a general could commit,—neglecting to engage when the enemy were crossing the Till, allowing himself to be outflanked by Surrey, who got between him and the Scottish border, abandoning his strong position on the hill of Flodden, and finally exposing his own person on foot in the centre of the fight. Some Scottish writers claim that the battle was a divided success and that the total number of English killed was greater; but Hall, an exact chronicler, says 12,000 Scots fell and only 1500 English, as appeared from the book of wages when the soldiers were paid. What made Flodden so great a disaster was the quality of the Scottish loss. The king himself, his son, the arch- bishop of St Andrews, two bishops, two abbots, twelve earls, and fourteen lords, besides many knights and gentle- men, were left on the field. There was scarcely a noble family which did not mourn some of its members. Surrey did not follow up his victory by invading Scot- land, since his object was gained: the diversion by the Scots in favour of France was at an end. Scotland was again left with an infant king, scarcely more than a year old.

The character of James IV. was on the surface. An excellent observer, the Spanish ambassador Ayala, notes his good looks and agreeable manners, his knowledge of languages and history, his respect for the service of the church and its priests, his liberality and courage, '" even more than a king should have, not taking the least care of himself," his bad generalship, " beginning to fight before he had given his orders," and his wise statesmanship, deciding nothing without counsel, but acting according to his own judgment, which was generally right.

The reign of James fell within the era of the revival of learning, and Scotland, though late, came within the circle of the intellectual which preceded the religious refor- mation. It was common for Scottish scholars to complete their education and sometimes to remain teaching in the universities of France. One of these, Elphinstone, bishop of Aberdeen, who founded its university, brought another,

Hector Boece, the historian, to be first principal of King's 1512-1516.

College, Aberdeen. James himself engaged Erasmus as tutor to his son, the future archbishop. Two other Scotsmen passed to Paris in the beginning of the next reign, John Major and his pupil Buchanan, who brought back less of the critical but more of the Reforming spirit. These and other learned men neglected a reform as essential as any, — the use of the mother-tongue in their writings, and the neglect has lessened their fame; but it had its exponents in Dunbar, Henryson, Sir David Lyndsay, and Gavin Douglas. The printing press also found its way to Edin- burgh, and Chepman and Myllar published their first broad- sheets with works of Dunbar, Douglas, and the remains of the older poetry (see p. 540 sg. below).

7. The Reformation, its Antecedents and Consequences.— James V.

James V. (1513-42), scarcely eighteen months old when he succeeded, was at once crowned at Scone, where a par- liament met, chiefly attended by the clergy. The queen dowager was appointed regent,—a secret message, however, being sent to John, duke of Albany, to come from France and assume the regency. The son of the exiled brother of James ITI., Albany had by his marriage to his cousin, the heiress of De la Tour d'Auvergne, become a great noble in France, where he held the office of high admiral, and neither he nor the French king, Louis XIL, was willing that he should quit France. The Sieur de la Bastie came as his representative. The precipitate marriage of the queen, four months after the birth of a posthumous child, to the young earl of Angus, and a dispute as to the see of St Andrews, to which Margaret appointed Gavin Douglas the poet, her husband's kinsman, although Hepburn the prior had been chosen by the chapter, led the Scottish.estates to renew their request that Albany should come to Scotland. He arrived at Dumbarton on 18th May 1515 and was at once appointed regent. son, but Albany besieged Stirling and forced her to sur- of

render. Her new husband fled to France, and Margaret 4!>2™Y-

first to Dacre, warden of the marches, and then to her brother's court, where she was joined by Angus. At Harbottle in Northumberland, on her

journey south, she bore a daughter, Margaret Douglas, afterwards Lady Lennox, Darnley's mother. Henry VIII. asked the Scottish parliament to remove Albany from the regency, but was met with a decided refusal ; for, though a party of nobles, especially the border barons Lord Hume, the chamberlain, and his brother, were opposed to him, he was supported by the nation. The young duke of Ross, Margaret's younger son, having died suddenly, Albany procured a declaration from parliament that Ross's elder half-brother was illegitimate and himself next heir to the crown. Hume and his brother were seized and executed at Edinburgh (26th October 1516). These events aroused suspicion that Albany aimed at the crown; but the suspicion appears to have been unfounded. His tastes were French ; hence he quickly tired of trying to govern Scotland, and in autumn obtained with difficulty leave of absence for four months. Before leaving he put Dumbarton, Dunbar, and Inchgarvie (in the Forth) in charge of French garrisons under De la Bastie, who held the post of warden of the marches; but an interim regency was appointed. Margaret now returned to Scotland ; but she was not permitted to take part in the government. Shortly after his arrival in France Albany negotiated the treaty of Rouen (20th August) by which an alliance between France and Scotland was agreed on against England, and a promise given that the Scottish king should marry a daughter of Francis L., or if that failed another French princess. In September De la Bastie was murdered near Dunbar by Hume of Wedderburn with the connivance of Dacre. The perpe- trators were forfeited, but never brought to justice, although XI. — 63

The queen refused to give up her Regency

1516-1534.

See Plate

VI.

Struggle between Angus and Arran,

Supre- macy of Angus.

Arran, who succeeded to the office of warden, was sent for that purpose. The absence of a supreme authority gave free scope to the licence of the nobles.

A serious rising in the Highlands to support the claim of Macdonald of Lochalsh to the lordship of the Isles lasted for several years, till the death of the claimant and the vigour of the earl of Argyll, the head of a house now rising into pre-eminence, led to its suppression. The chief dis- turbances arose from the ambition of Angus: Archibald, his uncle, was chosen provost of Edinburgh ; his brother William seized the priory of Coldingham ; his uncle Gavin, though he failed to secure the primacy, retained the see of Dunkeld. Angus was supported by the earls of Crawford, Erroll, and Glamis, by Forman, archbishop of St Andrews, and most of the other bishops, except James Beaton, arch- bishop of Glasgow and chancellor, The English warden, Dacre, was also on his side and tried by intrigue and bribery to foment dissension and prevent Albany's return. The opposite faction was headed by Arran, Lennox, Eglin- ton, Cassilis, Semple, the bishop of Galloway, and the chancellor. Scotland was thus divided between an English party, strongest in the east, and a French party, chiefly in the west. Their disputes reached a crisis in a street fight in Edinburgh, which got the name of 'Cleanse the Causeway " (30th April 1520), in which Angus drove Arran out of the town and seized the castle. Sir Patrick Hamilton, a brother of Arran, was slain by Angus,—an injury never forgiven. Meantime Margaret quarrelled with her husband, and, though there was a temporary reconciliation, mutual accusations of infidelity were too well grounded to permit of its being permanent.

Next year Albany returned and the queen, who had been in secret correspondence with him, entrusted him with the custody of the young king. Henry VIII. again requested the Scottish parliament to expel Albany ; but they again refused, and Angus made terms with Albany on condition that he should himself withdraw to France. War was now declared between England and Scotland (1522) ; but, although Albany advanced with a large army as far as Carlisle, he was persuaded by Dacre to a month's truce and soon after went back to France, leaving the king in charge of a regency of which Beaton, Arran, Huntly, and Argyll were the leaders. Albany returned in the following year and again with a large force invaded England, but

failed to take Wark, while Surrey, the English commander, ravaged the border. This failure lost Albany his credit with the Scots. In 1524 he went to France on condition that if he did not come back before 3lst August his regency should end. He never returned, and during his absence Margaret carried off her son from Stirling to Edinburgh, where, although only a boy of twelve, he was declared king. Angus made an agreement with Wolsey to support the English interest ; and at a parliament in Edinburgh Albany's regency was declared at an end (12th February 1525), and Angus and Beaton obtained possession of the king's person and governed in his name. The queen, who had now openly broken with her brother, in vain appealed to France and Albany. The French were occupied with the war against the emperor; but she obtained from James Beaton, now archbishop of St Andrews, a divorce from Angus and married Henry Stuart, son of Lord Avondale, creating him Lord Methven.

For three years Angus retained the supreme power and filled all offices with his adherents. Beaton, with whom hé quarrelled, was required to resign that of chancellor, and Angus nominated himself as his successor. The indignant nobles made unsuccessful attempts to seize the person of the king, who at last, on 23d May 1528, effected his escape from Falkland, riding at night to Stirling, where he was welcomed by the governor. Before parliament met a pro-

'the bishop of Dunkeld as privy seal.

clamation forbade any Douglas to remain in the capital. A new ministry was appointed with Gavin Dunbar, now archbishop of Glasgow, who had been the king's tutor, as chancellor ; Cameron, abbot of Holyrood, as treasurer; and The Douglases were attainted and their estates divided amongst the nobles of the opposite faction. A truce was made with England for five years. During the minority and duress of James the Scottish nobility became accustomed to bribes either from England or France. The French, to which the higher clergy belonged, were in the ascendant at the court of the young king, who naturally felt ill-will towards the Douglases and leant

on Albany, and after a time on Cardinal David Beaton, bishop of Mirepoix in France and nephew of the archbishop of St Andrews, whom he afterwards succeeded. Beaton was the Wolsey of Scotland; but James V. was not Henry VITI., and the ambition of the great prelate was baffled, not by the king, but by the nation. Three months before the king's escape Patrick HamixTon (q.v.), abbot of Ferne, was burnt for heresy at St Andrews.

James, only seventeen when he gained his independence (1528), showed, like other Stuarts, activity in government, and the fourteen years of his actual rule, while not marked by outstanding events, were a period of renewed order and prosperity. He first turned to the borders, where constant wars with England had bred a race of lawless freebooters. By the severity of his measures he succeeded in doing what Angus and his predecessors had in vain tried to do. The borders continued till the union to trouble the ministers of the law ; but the clans who lived by plunder and blackmail were first really broken by the expedition of James V. But it was not only borderers who required to be taught that a king was again on the throne: Argyll, who had sought to make himself independent, was deprived of his lieutenancy and imprisoned; Bothwell, the father of Mary's husband, was beheaded for the favour he showed the borderers ; and the estates of the earl of Crawford were forfeited. James made a progress through the Highlands and was sumptuously entertained by the earl of Athole. While criminal justice was strictly enforced, a step was at last taken to organize a central civil court (15th May 1532), which had been a settled plan of the kings since James I. The College of Justice or Court of Session was founded in Edinburgh by the influence of Albany with the pope,— funds being got from the bishops' revenues for the payment of the judges. Of the fifteen judges eight, including the president, were to be clergy, and the barons were conciliated by the anomalous office of extraordinary lords.!

The relations between James and Henry VIII. continued hostile and there were mutual raids till peace was concluded in 1534. Henry was then at the critical point of his divorce from Catherine of Aragon and anxious to secure an ally. France and Spain were also competing for the favour of the Scottish monarch, and Charles V. proposed a marriage with Mary of Portugal. But he had already indicated a preference for a French alliance, selecting Mary, daughter of the duc de Vendédme. The pope addressed James as

defender of the faith, a title Henry VIII. had forfeited. The clergy by Beaton's advice granted him a large allowance out of their revenues. These inducements and the influence of Beaton and Dunbar, the two arch- bishops, kept James firm in his attachment to the old church, in spite of the temptation which Henry held out in its endowments and of the satires in which Sir David

1 There were already signs of the small beginning of the profession of lay lawyers who were to play an important part in Scottish affairs in the 17th and 18th centuries. of justice, independent alike of the baronial and ecclesiastical courts, was a much needed reform; but the latter still retained their consis- torial jurisdiction.

..

Assump. tion of govern- ment by James V,

His marriage.

The establishment of a settled system "

| Mary | Stuart.

|

REFORMATION. |

Lyndsay, his old tutor, and Buchanan, the tutor of one of his bastards, exposed its abuses. In 1537 he went to France to see his bride, but, falling in love with Madeleine, daughter of Francis I., obtained her hand instead. After an absence of nine months he returned; but the young queen died within a few weeks after landing. The following year he married Mary, dowager duchess of Longueville, daughter of Claude of Lorraine, duke of Guise. Next year (1539) Henry made another attempt to gain James through his envoy Sir Ralph Sadler, but, though the succession to the English crown in the event of Prince Edward's death was held out as a bait, James remained unmoved. In 1540 the king made a voyage round Scotland, —the first circum- navigation of his dominions by a Scottish sovereign. The

Trish are said to have offered him their crown, and the barons of the north of England, whose sympathies were Catholic, were inclined to favour him. The position was perilous for Henry, many of whose subjects still remained Catholics at heart. He made a last attempt to induce James to meet him at York, but the Scottish king would not go so far across the border. Henry now ordered the marches to be put in a state of war, and Sir James Bowes, accompanied by Angus and Sir George Douglas, crossed the border, but was defeated in Teviotdale by Huntly and Home. The duke of Norfolk advanced with a large force, and, efforts to avert war having failed, James assembled the whole Scottish army and marched to Fala on the Lammermuirs, where he was reluctantly obliged to disband his force through the refusal of the nobles to go farther ; they even thought of repeating the tragedy of Lauder, but could not agree as to the victims. James raised a smaller force and gave the command of it to Oliver Sinclair, whose promotion was ill received by the barons. Their discord allowed an easy victory to Dacre, who routed them as they were passing over Solway Moss (25th November 1542), taking Sinclair and several of the leaders prisoners. The news, brought to James at Caerlaverock, together with the disaffection of the nobles, broke his heart. A few weeks later at Falkland he heard of the birth of Mary Stuart, but the news brought him no comfort. His saying, "The crown came with a lass and will go with a lass," has passed into history, although the prophecy was not fulfilled. Outwardly his reign had been, with the exception of the closing scene, successful. He had restored order along the borders, and put down all attempts of the nobles against his person. He had maintained the church, supporting the bishops by severe laws against heresy. He had secured by his marriage the alliance of France and was on good terms with other Continental states. His powerful neighbour had not succeeded in wresting any land from Scotland. He was, like his father, a popular king, mingling with the people in their sports, and respected because of his strict administra- tion of justice. But his foreboding was not without cause. The power of the nobles had only been restrained, not de- stroyed. The aristocracy had too many heads to be cut off by one or several blows. The principles of the Reformation were gradually spreading in spite of the attempts to stifle them, and the infant to whom he left the crown had to encounter rebellion at home and the hostility of England, not the less dangerous that she was heir to the English crown and its rulers veiled their hatred of her by professions of friendship. Knox

describes James as “a blinded and most vicious king.” Buchanan, who knew him better, is more fair, ascribing his faults to his time and bad education and doing justice to the qualities which made him loved by the people.

Mary Stuart was deemed queen of Scotland from 14th December 1542 till 29th July 1567, when her son James VIL. was crowned in her stead. This period of a quarter of a century is more crowded with events than any other part

SCO TEA KD

A499

of the Scottish annals, except the War of Independence. It was the epoch of the Reformation, and it became a question of European as well as national importance which side Scotland would take. Closely connected with the religious question was the political, affecting the union of Scotland and England. The life of Mary, who united the personal charm of her race and its evil fortune, adds tragic interest to the national history. It falls into three parts,— from her birth to her return from France as the young widow of Francis II. in 1561 ; from her arrival in Scotland till her flight in 1568; and from her arrival in England till her execution in 1587; but only the second of these enters into the direct current of Scottish history. During the first Scotland was under the regency, first of Arran, then of Mary of Guise. It was rumoured that Cardinal Beaton forced James V. on his deathbed to sign a will naming him regent, or had forged such a document ; but the principal nobles proclaimed the earl of Arran heir-presumptive to the crown, governor of the realm, and tutor to the queen, and this was confirmed by parliament in the following spring. Beaton was thrown into prison, but soon released. The death of James suggested to Henry a new scheme for the annexation of Scotland by the marriage of the infant heiress to his son Edward, and he released the nobles taken

at Solway Moss on easy terms under an assurance that they

would aid him. Angus and his brother George Douglas also returned to Scotland from their long exile on the same promise. Sir Ralph Sadler, one of

the ablest English resi- dents at the Scottish court—half envoys, half spies—was sent to conduct the negotiations. Arran was tempted to favour the marriage by the offer of the princess Elizabeth for his son and the government north of the Forth. But the queen dowager, though she pretended not to be averse to it, and Beaton did all they could to counteract Henry's project. One part of it, the immediate delivery of Mary and the principal castles to the English king, was specially objected to. A mutual alliance between the two kingdoms was agreed to on Ist July 1543, and Mary was to be sent to England when ten years old. Soon after a party of the nobles opposed to the match got possession of the young queen and removed her to Stirling. The English treaty was ratified by parliament; but Beaton and his partisans did not attend, and a few days later the regent, as Sadler expresses it, revolted to the cardinal. It was evident that the assured lords, though in English pay, were not to be relied on, and Henry resolved on war. His first act— the seizure of Scottish merchantmen in English ports — roused the patriotic feeling of Scotland. Before the close of the year the Scottish estates declared the treaty with England null and renewed the old league with France. Lord Lisle was sent with a fleet to the Firth of Forth, along with Hertford (afterwards the protector Somerset) as commander of the' army, and Leith was sacked and Edinburgh burnt, though the castle held out. Lisle on his voyage home ravaged the ports of the Forth, while Hertford destroyed the towns and villages of the Lothians, aided by the English wardens, who made a raid across the border. Hertford returned the following year and de- stroyed the abbeys of Kelso, Jedburgh, Melrose, Dryburgh, Roxburgh, and Coldingham, besides many castles, market-towns, and villages. Such barbarous warfare renewed the memory of the War of Independence and the intense hatred of England, which had greatly abated. Lennox and Glen- cairn alone of the nobles sided with the English, and the Reformers saw with regret the nation driven to a French alliance as at least preferable to English conquest.

Beaton at this time really governed, imposing his will on the vacillating regent and sternly repressing heresy. George Wishart, the chief preacher of the Reformers, was seized, found guilty of eighteen articles of heresy, mostly

1534-1545.

Regency of Arran.

War with Henry VIII.

Death

of Wish- art and Beaton.

1545-1558.

Somer- set's raids.

Regency of Mary of Guise.

500

taken from Calvin, and burnt at St Andrews. The war of religion, now openly declared, could not be carried on without bloodshed on both sides. Beaton was assassinated less than three months after Wishart's death in his own castle by Norman Leslie and other young men, some with private grievances, all desiring to avenge Wishart. The effect was adverse to the Reformers. Leslie and his asso- ciates, joined by a few others, of whom Knox was one, being shut in the castle, held it for a short time against the regent, but were forced to surrender to Strozzi, the French admiral.

The death of Henry VIIT. (1547) did not put a stop to the war with England. The protector Somerset proved to be an implacable enemy, and, partly to strengthen his position as regent, determined to strike a more signal blow. Invading Scotland simultaneously with a large fleet and army, he defeated the Scottish regent at Pinkie (18th September 1547), took Edinburgh, and placed garrisons in several castles. Scotland had suffered no such reverse since Flodden. The progress of the capital was thrown back at least a century; scarcely a building remains prior to the date of his savage raids. Somerset was not in a position to follow up his advantage, for he had to return home to counteract intrigues. The young queen

was sent from Dumbarton in the following summer (August 1548) to the court of France, where she was

brought up with the children of Henry II. by Catherine de' Medici. Before she went a French force had been sent to Scotland, and in the camp at Haddington the estates had, by a majority led by the regent and queen dowager, agreed to Mary's betrothal to the dauphin. The regent was promised the dukedom of Chastelherault in return

for his part in the treaty. For two years a fierce inter-

mittent war continued between England and Scotland : but the former country was too much engaged in home affairs and the French war to send a large force, and the Scots recovered the places they had lost except Lauder. The issue of the French war was also adverse to the English, who were forced to agree to the treaty of Bou- logne (24th March 1550), in which Scotland was included. In September the queen dowager went to France and ob- tained the transfer of the regency from Arran to herself. On her return, Arran not being prepared to relinquish his office, she proved herself a skilful diplomatist, gaining over the nobles by promises and the people by abstaining from persecution of the Reformers. A single execution —that of Adam Wallace, "a simple but very zealous man for the new doctrines "—took place in 1550 under the sanction of Archbishop Hamilton, natural brother of Arran, who had succeeded Beaton; but that prelate, whose natural dis- position was towards compromise, authorized a Catechism in 1552 which minimized the distinctions in doctrine be- tween the church and the Reformers, and was conspicuous for omitting all reference to the supremacy of the pope. At this time a large section of the clergy and people were still wavering, and the necessity of retaining them by moderation and reform was evident. The death of Edward VI. and the accession of Mary in 1553 had an important influence on the progress of the Scottish Reformation. The Scottish Reformers who had taken refuge in England had to escape persecution by returning home or going abroad, and the powerful preaching of Harlaw, Willock, and Knox, who came to Scotland towards the end of 1555, promoted the new doctrines.

In the spring of 1554 the queen dowager at last suc- ceeded in obtaining from the reluctant Arran a surrender of the regency. Mary had now attained her twelfth year and a nomination by her of her mother as tutor gave the

form of law to what was really the act of the queen dowager, the French king, and the nobility. The people acquiesced,

for all classes were tired of a governor whose chief object was money. His actual investiture in the French dukedom removed any scruples in relinquishing a dangerous dignity. For the next six years the queen dowager was regent and conducted the government with such prudence that her real aims were only seen through by the most penetrating, Knox has been accused of a harsh opinion of her; but the upshot of her policy if successful would have been to subject Scotland to France and to that party in France so soon to be the relentless persecutors of the Reformers. She knew well how to bide her time, to yield when re- sistance was impolitic, to hide her real object, but this she pursued with great tenacity of purpose.

her first step was a mistake so serious as to have well-

nigh provoked revolution. In appointments to offices

she showed such preference for her own countrymen as created intense jealousy on the part of the Scottish nobility,

and would probably have led to open action but for the

fact that many Scotsmen got offices and pensions from the French king. The new regent applied herself at once to

the perennial work of every Scottish Government, the re- pression of disorder in the Highlands, and first Huntly, afterwards Argyll and Athole, were sent to Argyll and the

Isles ; but the presence of royalty was, as had before been found, the best remedy, and she made next year a circuit

in person with more success than any of her lieutenants. Under the advice of her French counsellors she now garri-

soned Dunbar with French soldiers and built a fort at Eyemouth (1556). She even ventured to propose to levy

a tax for the maintenance of a standing army; but the remonstrance of 300 barons, headed by Sir John Sandi- lands, forced her to abandon a project so fatal in that age

to liberty. Next year, at the instigation of the French

king, she endeavoured to force the country into an English

war. No time could have been worse chosen, for com- missioners from England and Scotland had actually met

at Carlisle to adjust differences between the two countries.

The Scottish barons refused to fight, and from that date, Bishop Lesley notes, the queen regent could never agree

with the nobility, and sundry of them sought by all means

to raise sedition against her and the French.

In the parliament at the close of the year commis- Mary's sioners were appointed to go to France for the marriage marriage between Mary and the dauphin. 'heir instructions were neal to obtain a promise from both to observe the liberties and (7P™ privileges of Scotland and its laws, and a ratification of the Act passed in 1548, when it was first proposed to send the young queen to France. The contract of marriage pro- vided that their eldest son was to be king of France and Scotland and the eldest daughter (should there be no son) queen of Scotland, to be given in marriage by the joint consent of the king of France and the Scottish estates,

In the event of her husband's death Mary was to be free to stay in France or return to Scotland. The marriage was solemnized at Notre Dame on 24th July 1558. But prior to the public contract a secret arrangement had been made, by which Mary, in three several deeds, made over the kingdom of Scotland to the king of France and his heirs if she died childless, assigned

to him possession of the kingdom until he was reimbursed in a million pieces of gold for her entertainment in France, and declared that, whatever documents she might afterwards sign by decree of parliament, this arrangement expressed her genuine in- tention. After the return of the commissioners the crown

REFORMATION. |

matrimonial, with the title of king, was granted by parlia- ment to the dauphin.

seo rLa N BD

O01

praying that the canons should be enforced against clergy 1557-1559,

who led scandalous lives, that there should be preach-

| Progress While statesmen were occupied with the queen's mar-| ing on every Lord's day and on holidays, that no priests of Re- riage the Reformation had been steadily advancing. Knox } should be ordained unless able to read the Catechism a laboured incessantly, preaching in Edinburgh ten days in | distinctly, that prayer should be in the vulgar tongue,

succession and making rapid visits to the central and west- ern shires. He attracted to his side representatives of the nobility and gentry, and had much support in the towns. The earl of Glencairn, Lord Lorne, Lord James Stuart, the future regent, and the laird of Dun, John Erskine, in Angus were amongst his earliest followers, as well as many of the tradesmen and artisans. Knox now openly denounced attendance at mass as idolatrous and began to administer the Lord's Supper after the manner of the Swiss Reformers. He was summoned to Edinburgh on a charge of heresy ; but, though he kept the day, the proceedings were dropped. Shortly after he was again summoned, but meanwhile had accepted a call from Geneva. In his absence he was condemned for heresy and burned in effigy at the market cross of Edinburgh. Though absent, he continued the master-spirit of the

Reformation in Scotland, and as the result of his exhortations Argyll, Glencairn, Morton, Lord Lorne, and Erskine of Dun drew up a bond (3d December 1557) to "defend the whole congregation of Christ and every member thereof . . . against Satan and all wicked power," themselves forsaking and renouncing "the congregation of Satan with all the superstition, abomination, and idolatry thereof." This was the first of many bonds or covenants in which, borrowing the old form of league amongst the Scottish nobility, the Lords of Congregation applied it to the purposes of the Reforma- tion. They afterwards passed resolutions that prayers should be read weekly in all parishes by the curates publicly, with lessons from the Old and New Testaments,

that the mortuary dues and Easter offerings should be optional, and that the consistorial process should be re- formed. Another point was included according to Lesley, —that bishops should be elected with the consent of the laity of the diocese and priests with that of their parish- ioners. The synod replied that they could not dispense with Latin in public prayer as appointed by the church,

and that the canon law must be observed as to elections

of bishops and priests. On other matters they were pre- pared to make concessions, and passed thirty-four canons in the spirit of the council of Trent directed to the due investigation and punishment of immorality of the clergy and the inspection of monasteries, better provision for preaching by bishops and priests, the remission of mortuary dues to the very poor, and the recognition of the sacrament of baptism as administered by the Reformers. A short exposition of the mass was to be published. These con- cessions proved the necessity for reform ; but, as they were silent on the principal points of doctrine, as well as on the more radical reforms in church government, they could not

'be accepted. The time of compromise, if compromise had

ever been practicable between Rome and Geneva, to which the Scottish Reformers adhered, was now past. Two events had occurred before the synod separated which hastened the crisis. On 17th November 1558 the death of Mary Tudor once more placed on the English throne a sovereign

inclined to favour the Reformation. In May, during the sittings of the synod, Knox returned to Scotland and the Scottish Reformers once more had a determined leader.

and that doctrine and the interpretation of the Scriptures should be used privately in quiet houses until God should move the prince to grant public preaching by faithful ministers. Argyll at once acted upon the resolutions and protected John Douglas, formerly a Dominican, his chap-

The regent issued about Easter (1559) a proclamation Struggle forbidding any one to preach or administer the sacraments between without authority of the bishops. Willock and other lead- C°28” 5 6 : 0 gation ing preachers having disregarded it were summoned to gndMary Stirling on 10th May. Their adherents assembled in great of Guise.*

lain, who preached at Castle Campbell in spite of the remonstrance of Archbishop Hamilton. That prelate next took a fatal step. Walter Myln, parish priest of Lunan near Montrose, an old man of eighty-two, was burnt for heresy at St Andrews (8th April 1558). He was the last Protestant martyr in Scotland. The total number of deaths was small, it is believed twenty in all; but many people were banished or forced to leave the country and many fined, while none were allowed freedom of worship. Immediately after the death of Myln there began, says Knox, “a new fervencie amongst the whole people.” Gathering courage from the popular feeling, the Lords of Congregation presented petitions in rapid succession to the regent. The first laid before her prayed “that it might be lawful to meet in public or in private for common prayer in the vulgar tongue, to interpret at such meetings hard places in Scripture, and to use that tongue in administer- ing baptism and the Lord’s Supper”; in reply permission was granted to preach in private and to administer the sacraments in the vulgar tongue. The second presented at the meeting of parliament prayed for a suspension of all Acts against heretics until a general council, that copies of the accusation and depositions should be given to all persons accused of heresy, that the accused should be allowed themselves to interpret any words charged as heretical, and should not be condemned unless found guilty of teaching contrary to Scripture. “The regent,” Knox remarks, “spared not amiable looks and good words,” but suffered the parliament to

be dissolved (2d March 1557) without any answer. In the spring a synod met in Edinburgh and a third petition was laid before it,

numbers, but mostly unarmed, at Perth, a town zealous for the Reformed opinions. Erskine of Dun went from there as a mediator to the regent at Stirling; she pro- mised, but in vague terms, that she would take some better order with the ministers if their supporters did not advance. Notwithstanding they were outlawed for not appearing on the day of trial. Next day, when the news reached Perth, Knox preached his first public sermon (11th May) since his return, inveighing against "idolatry." Hardly had he ended when a priest began mass and opened the tabernacle on the high altar. A young man called out, ' This is intolerable that, when God by His Word hath plainly damned idolatry, we shall stand and see it used." The priest struck the youth, who retaliated by throwing a stone, which broke an image. From this spark the fire kindled. The people destroyed the images in the church and then proceeded to sack the monasteries. The example of Perth was followed at many other places. The regent could not remain passive when the Congregation was sanctioning such action. But her position was one of grave difficulty. Her main support was from France, and, though she had adherents amongst the Scottish nobility, Argyll and Lord James, who were still with her at Stirling, were really committed to the Congregation. What course the new queen of England would take was still uncertain. On 11th May the regent advanced towards Perth, but the arrival of Glencairn with 2500 men from the west to aid the Congregation led to a compromise, of which the terms were these: both parties were to disband their troops; Perth was to be left open to the regent, but no French troops were to come within 3 miles; the inhabitants were*

Negotia- tions of Reform- ers with England.

502

and all controversies were to be reserved for parliament. The Congregation, however, remained distrustful ; Knox openly preached that the treaty would only be kept till the regent and her Frenchmen became the stronger, and before leaving Perth the Lords of Congregation entered into a new bond for mutual defence. The regent entered Perth the day they left (29th May), accompanied by the duke of Chastelherault and a bodyguard of French as

well as Scottish troops paid by French money. The deposition of the provost in favour of a Papist and the occupation of the town by these troops were deemed breaches of the agreement, and Argyll and Lord James now joined the Reformers and took the lead in their proceedings. Their numbers increasing, the regent felt unable to retain Perth, and quitting it marched south, followed by the army of the Congregation, to which she abandoned Stirling, Lin- lithgow, and Edinburgh, taking refuge at Dunbar. The only conflict was at the Muir of Cupar, where a small force sent to save St Andrews was quickly dispersed by the superior numbers of its opponents. It was made a condi- tion of a truce that no Frenchman should be left in Fife. The Reformers occupied Edinburgh for a few weeks, but were obliged to abandon it upon new terms of truce in- tended to preserve the status quo. Both parties were engaged in negotiations for active assistance, the one from France and the other from England. The regent had been daily expecting reinforcements, and a considerable number of troops about this time landed at Leith, which they began to fortify.

In the end of June Kirkaldy of Grange began a corre- spondence, afterwards continued by Knox, with Cecil, Percy, and Sir Herbert Croft. Their scheme was far-reaching. The young earl of Arran, though brought up in France, had become Protestant, and if he, the heir-presumptive to the Scottish crown, were married to Elizabeth the union of the two countries would be secured along with the Reforma- tion. This would be a counter-stroke to the union of France and Scotland under a Catholic, which almost at the moment became for a brief time an accomplished fact, by the dauphin succeeding as Francis II. to the French crown on the death of his father. The policy of the Guises, who continued to control the Government under the new king, almost forced Elizabeth in this direction. Mary quartered the arms of England with those of Scot- land, implying denial of Elizabeth's right both as illegiti- mate and as a heretic. But Elizabeth knew the value both of her hand and of the state, which, thanks to the ability of her ministers, was daily becoming more loyal. She had special cause for hesitating to ally herself with the Lords of Congregation. Knox had offended her by his vehement Blasts against the Regiment of Women, which, though primarily aimed against the Catholic queens, ad- mitted no exception in favour of a Protestant. Nor could Knox even when supplicating aid adopt the courtier's language to which Elizabeth was accustomed. She was really

afraid of the revolutionary principles of some of the Reformers, which seemed to threaten the throne as well as the altar. Moreover, Arran, who came secretly to the English court, did not please her, and there was an end of the matrimonial part of the scheme. The rest of it would probably also have miscarried but for the consummate statesmanship of Cecil, who saw where the interest of England lay. In August 1559 Sadler was sent with £3000 to the assistance of the Scottish Protestants. Another supply followed, but was intercepted, and in January 1560 a treaty was agreed to at Berwick between Elizabeth and the Lords of Congregation, to whom the duke of Chastel- herault had now gone over. The Scots engaged not to enter into an alliance with France, and to defend the

country against French aggression. Elizabeth was to support Scotland by an army, but no place of strength was to be left in English hands. If any were taken from the French they were to be razed or retained by the Scots, The Scots were to assist England if attacked by France, and to give hostages for fulfilment of the treaty. Next spring an English army under Lord Grey crossed the Tweed (28th March 1560), met the forces of the Congregation at Prestonpans, and invested Leith, in which the French were also blockaded by sea.

adherents. The last to go was Maitland of Lethington, the most talented but also the most cunning of the Scottish statesmen. His desertion was the sign of a lost cause. Even some of the higher clergy now conformed. Lord Erskine almost alone remained faithful. The regent's own courage never failed, and, though she received a visit from the leaders of the Congregation and consented to see Willock, she died a firm Catholic. Her misfortunes and her conciliatory policy during her long struggles to main- tain the French connexion with Scotland have gained her a lenient judgment even from Protestants, all save Knox, whose personal animosity is palpable, though his view of her policy is correct.

Her death removed the chief obstacle to peace, which Treaty of the English and the French courts had for some time de- Edin- sired, and the treaty of Edinburgh was concluded on 8th PS!

July 1560 upon terms favourable to Scotland. The mili- tary forces of both France and England were to evacuate Scotland, except a certain number of French, who were to remain in Inchkeith and Dunbar. Leith and Eyemouth were to be dismantled ; Mary and Francis were to abstain from using the arms of England. By separate articles certain concessions were granted to the nobility and people of Scotland showing the length to which the limitation of the monarchy was carried. No French or other soldiers were to be brought into the realm unless in the event of an invasion and only with the consent of the estates. Neither peace nor war was to be made without their con- sent. A council of twelve (seven chosen by the king and queen and five by the estates out of twenty-four selected by the estates) were to govern the kingdom during the absence of Mary and Francis. The chief officers of the crown were to be natives. An Act of oblivion was to be passed for all Acts since 6th March 1558. Neither the nobles nor any other persons were to assemble in arms ex- cept in cases provided by the law. The duke of Chastel- herault and his son, Arran, and all other Scots were to be restored to their French estates. With matters of religion the deputies refused to deal; but envoys were to be sent to the king and queen to lay before them the state of affairs, particularly those last mentioned.

Before parliament met an important step towards a new Reform-

organization of the church was taken. Superintendents, some lay, others clerical, were appointed for Lothian, Glas- gow, Fife, Angus, Mearns, Argyll, and the Isles. The principal ministers of the Congregation were planted in the chief towns,—Knox receiving Edinburgh as his charge. The convention parliament which assembled on 10th July and began its business on 1st August 1560 was the Reforma- tion parliament of Scotland. Like Henry VIII's famous parliament, its work was thorough. It not merely reformed abuses but changed the national creed and accomplished more in one than the English parliament did in three sessions. The parliament was the most numerous yet held in Scotland, being attended not only by nearly all the nobility but by some bishops and an unusually large nuni- ber of

lesser barons or landed gentry, representatives of the burghs. Its statutes never received the royal assent,

The regent had taken refuge in Death of Edinburgh castle, and here on 10th June she died of dropsy, Mary of She had been deserted gradually by almost all her Scottish S™s®:

Mary's return to Scotland.

REFORMATION. |

but were confirmed by the first parliament after Mary's deposition. On 18th August the Confession of Faith received the sanction of the estates. On the 24th an Act was passed declaring that the bishop of Rome had no juris- diction or authority within the realm. Another rescinded all Acts passed since James I. contrary to God's word ; and a third prohibited the mass or baptism according to the Roman rite, and ordained strict inquisition against all persons contravening the statute. The form of church government was not explicitly altered. The archbishop of St Andrews, and Dunkeld and Dunblane alone of the bishops, are said to have voted against the Confession, and Athole, Somerville, Caithness, and Bothwell alone of the nobles. 'The whole power of the state was at this time in the hands of the party of the Reformation and resist- ance was useless. The Confession of Faith, the corner- stone of the new policy both in church and state, was drawn up by Knox and five other ministers, but revised by the more moderate Reformers Lethington and Winram. 'The power of the civil magistrate was declared in terms which indicate the revision of Lethington rather than the original draft of Knox. Its language is certainly such as monarchs had been little accustomed to, though the expression is not so blunt as Knox used in preaching and conversation. Kings, princes, and magistrates in free cities are declared

to be those to whom the reformation of religion "chiefly

and most principally appertains." They are themselves to be judged by God, being appointed for the maintenance of the true religion and suppression of idolatry. Resistance to them, but only when vigilant in the execution of their office, is declared sinful.

The same persons who had prepared the Confession were entrusted with the composition of a code of ecclesi- astical polity, and a draft, after being first laid before the convention of 1560, was submitted as revised to that of the following year. This First Book of Discipline was not universally approved ; several of its provisions, especially those relating to church estates and their application to the support of the ministry, the relief of the poor, and the furtherance of education, were little to the taste of the nobility, and it was never sanctioned by the estates or fully acted on. Other parts of it were, however, embodied in the Second Book of Discipline, which became the law of the Reformed Church. It remains a memorial of the far- sighted views of Knox, its author; and the verdict of posterity has been in his favour and against the nobles who prevented its being carried out. See PRESBYTERIANISM, volwxax. p, G7 9%sq.

The death of Francis IT. (6th December 1560) materially altered the political situation. The much feared subordi- nation of Scotland to France was at last averted. Mary Stuart, only nineteen, was young enough to be influenced by a new husband and new responsibilities. Her character was not yet known, but her relations with Catherine de' Medici were not friendly, and there was little doubt that she would take advantage of the provision in her marriage articles and return to Scotland. Sir John Sandilands's mission to France to procure the royal sanction to the treaty of Edinburgh and the Acts of the Reformation parliament must have been unpalatable, and he was not favourably re- ceived. Before she left France Mary was visited by envoys of the opposite parties into which Scotland was divided. Lesley, official of Aberdeen, afterwards bishop of Ross, and lier valiant defender, was sent by the Catholic lords and bishops with a special message from Huntly, urging her to come to Aberdeen, where an army of 20,000 men would be at her disposal. But Huntly had not proved trustworthy during the regency and Mary rejected an offer which would have plunged the kingdom in war from the moment she landed. The very day after she had seen

Lesley her brother Lord James, who had been sent by 1560-1563.

the Lords of Congregation, met her at St Dizier. She received him favourably, but declined to ratify the treaty till she consulted her council. An attempt was made to capture Mary on her way to Scotland ; but, sailing from Calais on 14th August, she landed at Leith on the 19th. She was accompanied by three uncles and a considerable suite, including Castelnau the historian, Brantéme the memoir writer, and the poet Chastelard.t

On her return to Scotland Mary showed herself disposed to conciliate the Reformers provided she was allowed the exercise of her own faith. This had been guaranteed her by Lord James. His near kinship to the queen at a time when the stain of bastardy was less regarded, and his close relation with the Reformers, made him necessary to both and gave him an influence which his eminent prudence used for the good of the nation, but with an eye to his own advantage. Without thrusting himself too promi- nently forward, he led the privy council (ably supported by Lethington), and, without the name, was in fact prime minister. The title of Mar, and, when that was reclaimed by the heir of the Erskines, of Moray or Murray (9.v.), with its large territories, gave him the designation by which he is best known, as well as great wealth, which he dispersed by means not well explained. But the leaven of another influence than that of the statesman was now at work in Scottish politics. most representative Scotsman since Wallace.

mass at Holyrood, and Moray had himself to keep the chapel door to prevent its being broken. 'His best ex- cuse was," says Knox, "that he wald stop all Scotchmen to enter into the mass." Next Sunday Knox preached in Edinburgh against idolatry. "One mass was more fearful to him," he said, '"'than 20,000 armed enemies." Little likely as such sentiments were to please the young queen, a meeting between her and the preacher was arranged by Moray, the only third party present. On the matter of religion he was unbending, yet not more so than Mary. His judgment of the queen's character was, "If there be not in her a proud mind, a crafty spirit, and an indurate heart against God and His truth my judgment faileth me." In 1562 Huntly, the chief Romanist in the north, who offered to have the mass said in three counties, rebelled, being indignant at the grant to Moray of an earldom whose estates he then held. Mary, accompanied by her brother, made a progress in the north, where Huntly was defeated and slain at Corrichie, his elder son being imprisoned, his second beheaded, and the

lands of Huntly, of his kinsman the earl of Sutherland, and other barons of the house of Huntly forfeited. On her return to Edinburgh Mary again met Knox at Holyrood. He rebuked her for dancing and other frivolitiés, advised her to attend the public sermons, and told her that it was not his duty to leave his studies in order to wait at her chamber door. There were other interviews, in one of which (April 1563) only Mary seemed to yield a little. She was anxious to use his influence to quiet a threatened rising in the west, and to heal a quarrel between her half sister the countess of Argyll and her husband. Knox promised his aid, but required in return that the penal laws should be enforced against the Papists. This Mary agreed to, and her promise was also apparently kept. Hamilton, archbishop of St Andrews, and forty- seven other persons were prosecuted for hearing confession – 1 The story of Mary Stuart, which now approaches by rapid steps its climax, has been told by Mr Swinburne (see Mary, vol. xv. p. 594 sq.), and a poet may regard human character in a manner different from the historian, interpreting motives and drawing conclusions which history, whose view is limited by evidence, cannot reach. Here only

the leading facts in her personal story can be stated so far as they affect the course of Scottish history.

This was embodied in John Knox, the Knox The first and Sunday after Mary's arrival the mob tried to interrupt ™"¥:

1563-1567.

Mary's marriage to Darn- ley.

504

and celebrating the mass. Yet Knox's comment in his fistory is, 'This conference we have inserted to let the world see how Marie queen of Scotland can dissemble, and how that she could cause men to think that she bore no indignation for any controversy in religion, while that yet in her heart was nothing but venom and destruction, as short after that did appear." She was in fact corre- sponding with her uncle the cardinal of Lorraine, with the pope, with Philip IL. testifying her steadfast attachment to Papacy and her desire to restore the Catholic faith. At a last conference

Knox remonstrated against her marriage, then thought imminent, with a Papist, claiming the right of a subject "to speak out on this topic which so nearly concerned the commonwealth," remaining unmoved by the last argument of a woman, which he savagely describes as "howling and tears in greater abundance than the matter required." Nothing but perusal of the conversations can bring before us this pregnant passage of history—the abase- ment of the Scottish monarchy before the religious de- mocracy—of the woman forced to dissemble and weep be- fore the stern man believing he delivered a message from God to the head of a corrupt court. Something was allowed to Knox's sincere outspokenness. He moved men and women alike by words which, like Luther's, go straight to the realities of life. He is the typical Scottish divine framed on the model of the Hebrew prophets, and often reproduced in weaker copies. The Reformation in Scotland, in both its strength and its weakness, was his work inore than that of any other man. The Presbyterian form of government, of which his friend Calvin was the author, was introduced by Knox from Geneva and con- tinued for long to enforce discipline, first by censure and then, if need be, by excommunication and temporal punish- ment, entirely in his spirit.

Not only to Knox and the Reformers but to all classes the question of the day was the queen's marriage. Apart from her beauty, her political position rendered her hand of importance to the balance of power. It held not only the dowry of France and the possession of Scotland but a claim, which might be at any moment asserted, to the English crown. She avowed her inclination to marry, and indeed she required a man to put her in possession of her kingdom. Don Carlos, the archduke of Austria, son of Philip of Spain, Charles IX. of France, the kings of Denmark and of Sweden, the archduke Charles, second son of the emperor, were all passed in review but rejected. Elizabeth pressed the claim of her favourite Leicester,—a project supported by Cecil and Moray. In the end the fair face and fine figure of her young cousin Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley, carried the day. A party of the Scottish nobles—Athole, himself a Stuart, Morton, Crawford, Eglin- ton, and Cassilis—favoured the alliance. David Rizzio, the queen's foreign secretary, who already had great in- fluence with her, promoted it. But it was her own act, the most dangerous of many false steps in her life. Shortly before the marriage (29th July 1565) Moray attempted to seize Darnley and the queen as they rode from Perth to Callendar near Falkirk. When it was

accomplished he rose in arms with the duke of Chastelherault, the head of the Hamiltons, Argyll, and Rothes; but Mary witha large force pursued them from place to place in the Roundabout Raid, from the neighbourhood of Edinburgh through Fife, where she levied fines, and finally to Dumfries, from which Moray fled to England. He had been secretly but not vigorously supported by Elizabeth, who, when she heard of his flight, recalled her orders to Bedford, then on the marches, to place troops at the disposal of the insurgents. Mary still retained some of the popularity of a young queen, and fostered it by an apparent desire to humour the Re- formers. For the first time she attended a Protestant

sermon. But the consequences of a union between a high- spirited woman, active in mind and body beyond her sex and years, with a vain and dissolute youth were soon seen. His alienation from the queen, the murder of Rizzio, with the intrigues that preceded and followed it, the rapid growth of Bothwell's influence, the pitiable vacillations of Darnley, and his murder at Kirk of Field (10th February Murder 1567) have been sketched in the article Mary (vol. xv, of Dam- — p. 596 sq.). The authors of the last crime were Bothwell, 1° who devised it, and his servants, who executed it. Their confessions leave no doubt of their own guilt. Who were their accomplices has from that day to this been debated without conclusive answer. The great controversy is whether the nobles with Moray at their head had bound themselves to support Bothwell, as he and Mary after- wards declared, or whether Mary, possessed with passion for Bothwell and hate of Darnley, herself instigated her husband's murder. Some have thought both the queen and the nobles were implicated. The casket letters, alleged to have been found in a coffer that was given to Morton by Dalgleish when intrusted with it by Sir James Balfour for its delivery to Bothwell, must be left out in any fair examination of this question. The mode of their recovery and their production, first partially and secretly before Elizabeth's commissioners at York, then with apparent but not real publicity at Westminster (for Mary's counsellors were not allowed to see them), their contents, so different from her known writings, and the disappearance of the originals render their evidence inadmissible. What weighs most against Mary is her subsequent conduct, explicable only in favour of innocence if she was absolutely in Both- well's power from the time of the murder to the defeat of Carberry,— an hypothesis not borne out by facts. Though Lennox and his wife urged that the murderers be brought to justice, there was delay till 13th April, when Bothwell was at last brought before an assize. The trial was a sham, and his acquittal on the pretence that there was no accuser could deceive no one.

The strange wooing which commenced when Darnley was Mary's just buried, if not before, was continued by the seizure of relations Mary by

Bothwell near Cramond and her captivity in her a own castle of Dunbar—a pretence according to her adver- ely, saries, an opportunity for an outrage from which marriage was the only escape according to her defenders—at last culminated in the marriage at six in the morning, at Holy- rood, on the 15th of May 1567. It was the month when wicked women marry, said the people, writing Ovid's line on the Tolbooth walls. Before it took place she created Bothwell duke of Orkney, and pardoned him for any violence. She also wrote in palliation of his conduct to the French king. His divorce from Lady Jane Gordon had been hurried through both the bishops' court and that of the Protestant commissaries,—in the former on the false pretence that there had been no papal dispensation for his marriage to one of near kin, and in the latter on the ground of adultery. Mary had been more than once warned of the consequences of such a marriage by Lord Herries, by the faithful Melville, and by Craig, the minister who, with the utmost reluctance, proclaimed the banns. It was an act which required no warning. She had no alternative, urge her vindicators, to save her honour, and her tears on the morning of marriage are proof that she was forced; but the more scrupulous admit she should have preferred death to union with a man she must at least have known was not clear of Darnley's murder. Her enemies said then, and historians who take their side repeat, that it was the mad- ness of a passion she could not resist. The view most consistent with the facts seems to be that she accepted, not without fits of remorse, the service of the strongest sword at her disposal on the only terms on which she

could obtain it. But, if Mary cannot be acquitted of the degree of complicity implied in accepting the conse- quences of the murder, many of the leading nobles were involved in equal guilt. On 19th April a bond asserting Bothwell's innocence and urging Mary to marry him had been signed at Ainslie's tavern, not only by Bothwell's few friends, but by "'a great part of the lords." Most of those who signed had in the parliament just concluded re- ceived grants of land or remission of forfeiture, and it is urged by Mary's defenders that they were bribed to acqui- esce in Bothwell's designs. When the bond was after- wards put in evidence against them their plea was that they had been forced to sign it by Bothwell. It is con- tended on Mary's

behalf that with so many of the nobles committed to approval of the marriage she had no one on whom to rely. There is something in this argument; but it does not meet the point—Why did she rely on Bothwell? That a scheme was arranged before Darnley's murder to entrap her into this marriage, in order to pave the way for her deposition, and that the casket letters were fabri- cated to clench her guilt, has been suggested; but the

are wanting. The two Scotsmen who almost alone main- tained the character of honest men, Kirkaldy of Grange and Sir James Melville, who were so far from being un- friendly to Mary that they ultimately espoused her cause, believed that she was a willing victim and threw herself into Bothwell's arms. The narrative in her own despatch

testant party increased in Scotland until it became a 1567-1569.

majority almost representative of the whole nation; even her own son when he came to hold the sceptre, little in- clined as he was to accept Presbyterian principles, regarded her as a revolutionary element fortunately removed. Her knowledge of Babington's plot for the invasion of England is proved, though her assent to the death of Elizabeth is still an open question. By her will, confirmed by her last letters, she bequeathed the crown of Scotland and her claim to that of England to Philip II. The letters contain this modification only, that her son was to have an opportunity of embracing the Catholic faith under the guardianship of Philip to save his own throne. There was no such reservation as regards that of England. The Armada, from whose overthrow date the fall of Spain and the rise of Britain as the chief European power, was due to the direct instigation of Mary Stuart.

Meantime, in Scotland, four regencies rapidly succeeded each other during the minority of James. The deaths by violence of two regents, Moray and Lennox, the suspicion of foul play in the death of the third, Mar, and the end scarcely less violent because preceded by a trial of the fourth, Morton, mark

a revolutionary period and the im- possibility of the attempted solution by placing the govern- ment in the hands of the most powerful noble. Heredi- tary royalty, not the rule of the aristocracy, was still dominant in Scottish politics and a regency was an experiment already disparaged in the preceding reigns.

facts necessary to prove so deep a train of conspiracy

to the bishop of Dunblane does not allege that she was forced, but only that "he partlie extorted and partlie | obtained our promise to take him as our husband."

Moray, said Sir J. Melville, "was and is called the good Moray's regent," mingling with this praise only the slight qualifi- charac- cation that in his later years he was apt to be led by %™*

Mary a prisoner.

The leading nobles were not disposed to accept a new master in Bothwell, whose vices, unlike those of Darnley, were coupled with a strong instead of a weak character. They kept jealous possession of the young prince, placed in the custody of Mar in Stirling ; and, when a muster was called to enforce order on the border, secretly collected their forces to act against instead of for the queen and her husband. Within a month of her marriage she was met at Carberry Hill, near Musselburgh (15th June 1567), by a force of the confederate lords, headed by Morton and Glencairn, Ruthven and Lindsay. Mary, after a fruitless attempt at mediation by Du Croc, the French ambassador, and an offer equally vain by Bothwell to decide the issue by single combat, surrendered to Kirkaldy. Both- well rode off to Dunbar with a few followers, and Mary was conducted to Morton's camp. Once in their hands, the lords treated her as a prisoner, and confined her at Lochleven Castle, where she was forced to abdicate, sur- rendering the crown in favour of her son and committing the regency during the minority to Moray. The young king was crowned at Stirling on 29th July. The prudent Moray, who had kept out of the way in France while these events were transacted in Scotland, now returned and was installed as regent (22d August). Mary remained prisoner in Loch Leven for nearly a year. After her escape on 2d May 1568 the duke of Chastelherault and other Catholic nobles rallied

round her standard ; but on 13th May Moray and the Protestant lords met her forces at Jangside near Glasgow, and the issue of that battle forced her to fly to England, where she placed herself (19th May) in the hands of Lord Lowther, governor of Carlisle, recalling Elizabeth's promises of protection. Mary, however, found that she was really a prisoner. Like Baliol, she disappears personally from the field of Scottish history; but her life in exile, unlike his, was spent in busy plots to recover her lost throne. It became clear as time went on that she placed her whole reliance on the Catholic minority and foreign aid ; even in prison she was a menace to Elizabeth and ready to plot against her as an enemy. The Pro-

flatterers, but testifying to his willingness to listen to Melville's own counsels, This epithet bestowed by the Protestants, whose champion he was, still adheres to him ; but only partisans can justify its use. He displayed great promptness in baffling the schemes of Mary and her party, suppressed with vigour the border thieves, and ruled with a firm hand, resisting the temptation to place the crown on his own head. His name is absent from many plots of the time. He observed the forms of personal piety,— possibly shared the zeal of the Reformers, while he moder- ated their bigotry. But the reverse side of his character is proved by his conduct. He reaped the fruits of the conspiracies which led to Rizzio's and Darnley's murders. He amassed too great a fortune from the estates of the church to be deemed a pure reformer of its abuses. He pursued his sister with a calculated animosity which would not have spared her life had this been necessary to his end or been favoured by Elizabeth. The mode of production of the casket letters and the false charges added by Buchanan, "'the pen" of Moray, deprive Moray of any reasonable claim to have been an honest accuser, zealous only to detect guilt and to benefit his country. The reluctance to charge Mary with complicity in the murder of Darnley was feigned, and his object was gained when he was allowed to table the accusation without being forced to prove it. Mary remained a captive under suspicion of the gravest guilt, while Moray returned to Scotland to rule in her stead, supported by nobles who had taken part in the

steps which ended in Bothwell's deed. Moray left London His During the year between his Tegency.

on 12th January 1569. return and his death several events occurred for which he has been censured, but which were necessary for his secur- ity,— the betrayal of the duke of Norfolk and of the secret plot for the liberation of Mary to Elizabeth, the imprison- ment in Loch Leven of the earl of Northumberland, who after the failure of his rising in the north of England had taken refuge in Scotland, and the charge brought against Maitland of Lethington of complicity in Darnley's murder. Lethington was committed to custody, but rescued by XXI. — 64

1569-1575.

Regen- cies of Lennox and Mar.

Knox's work.

506

Kirkaldy of Grange, who held the castle of Edinburgh, and while there "the chameleon," as Buchanan named Maitland in his famous invective, contrary to the nature of that animal, gained over those in the castle, including Kirkaldy. Moray was afraid to proceed with the charge on the day of trial, and Kirkaldy and Maitland became partisans of the queen. The castle was the stronghold of the queen's party,—being isolated from the town and able to hold out against the regent who governed in the name of her son. This defection was mourned over by the Reformers. Knox, with the self-confidence which marked his character, sent from his deathbed to Kirkaldy a message of warning that "neither the craggy rock in which he confided, nor the carnal wisdom of the man [Maitland] whom he esteemed a demi-god, nor the assist- ance of strangers, should preserve him from being disgrace- fully dragged to ignominious punishment." It has been suspected that Maitland and Kirkaldy were cognizant of the design of Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh to murder Moray, for he had been with them in the castle. This has been ascribed to private vengeance for the ill-treatment of his wife ; but the feud of the Hamiltons with the regent is the most reasonable explanation. As he rode through Linlithgow Moray was shot (23d January 1570) from a window by Hamilton, who had made careful preparation for the murder and his own escape. Moray was buried in the south aisle of St Giles Cathedral, Edinburgh, amid gen- eral mourning.

Knox preached the sermon and Buchanan furnished the epitaph, both unstinted panegyrics. His real character is as difficult to penetrate as that of Mary. It is easy for the historian to condemn the one and praise the other according to his own religious or political creed. It is nearer truth to recognize in both the graces and talents of the Stuart race, which won devoted followers, but to acknowledge that times in which Christian divines approved of the murder of their enemies were not likely to produce a stainless heroine or faultless hero, indeed necessitated a participation in deeds which would be crimes unless they can be palliated as acts of civil war. Let us absolve, if we can, Moray and Mary of Darnley's blood. It remains indisputable that Mary ap- proved of Moray's assassination and that Moray would have sanctioned Mary's death.

Moray was succeeded in the regency by Lennox, Darnley's father, the male nearest of kin to the future sovereign, but really the nominee of Elizabeth. His brief term of office was marked by the renewal of the English war under Sussex and other generals, which made the queen's cause again the more popular. Lennox, another victim of violence, was slain (3d September 1571) in a hasty attack by one of the Hamiltons on Stirling, from which Morton, the real head of the Protestant party, who at first had been taken and threatened with the same fate, barely escaped. Mar, who had all along held the custody of the young king, was now chosen regent and held the post for a year, when he died (28th October 1572). During his regency the civil war between the queen's and the king's party continued. An English intrigue was carried on with great mystery, and never brought to a point, by Randolph and Killigrew to deliver Mary to the regent that she might be tried within her own dominions. On the death of Mar, Morton, who had been the most powerful noble during the last regency, at length reached the object of his ambition by being elected regent. On the day of Morton's election Knox died. He was "one," said Morton, "who never feared the face of man." If we condemn his violent language and bitter spirit, it is just to remember that he lived during the red heat of the struggle between Rome and the Reformation, and died before the triumph of the latter in Scotland was secure. He had felt the thongs of

SCOTLARD DY

the galleys and narrowly escaped the stake. The massacre of St Bartholomew spread consternation throughout Pro- testant Europe just before his last illness. Mary and Philip of Spain were still plotting for the destruction of all he held vital. His scheme for the reformation of the church and application of its revenues was in advance not of his own time only. He contemplated free education for children of the poor who really required such aid,— a graduated system of parish schools, burgh schools, and universities, which would have forestalled the most recent educational reform. While he introduced Presbyterian government by kirk-sessions, presbyteries, synods, and general assembly and opposed even a modified Episcopacy, he saw the advantage of the superintendence of districts by the more learned and able clergy. While he insisted on the preaching of the Word and the administration of the sacraments in the vulgar tongue, his liturgy shows his favour for forms of public prayer. Knox's first wife was English, and two of his sons took orders in the Church of England. Scottish Presbyterianism had not yet been hardened by persecution into a hatred of prelacy as bitter as that of Popery. It meant separation from Rome, but inclined to union with England, and the question of the form of church government was still open.

7

Morton, like his predecessor, favoured the Episcopal Regency

order, and, acting upon a compromise agreed to at Leith, of

a modified Episcopacy was restored. The bishops appointed "o™%»-

were declared subject to the king in temporal and to the church and general assembly in spiritual matters, and were to have the same jurisdiction as the superintendents. The assembly of Perth protested against the use of certain ecclesiastical titles, but passed over that of bishop. Most of the clergy sanctioned, though with reluctance, the ap- pointment of bishops in the hope of retaining their re- venues. 'The people called them "tulchan" bishops, from the straw counterfeit used to rob the calf of its mother's milk. Almost the whole church property remained in the hands of the landed

proprietors, Moray in the first instance and afterwards Morton receiving a lion's share. Avarice was Morton's besetting sin. In other respects he was an energetic and capable ruler. He effected at Perth, with the aid of Elizabeth's envoy, a pacification with Huntly, Chastelherault, and the Catholic nobles who supported Mary. Only the castle of Edinburgh held out, and this, aided by English artillery, he succeeded in taking after a brave resistance by Kirkaldy and Lethington. Kirkaldy and his brother were executed at the cross of Edinburgh. Lethington escaped their fate in what Melville calls "the Roman manner,"—at his own hands, perhaps by poison. The death of the bravest and the ablest Scotsman of that age put an end to the last chance of Mary's restoration by native support. Morton, now without a rival, restored order in the borders, and when an encounter occurred between the English and Scottish borderers called the Raid of the Redswyre his prudence prevented it becoming a national conflict. He appointed a commission for the reform of the law,—a far-sighted scheme, often attempted but always stopping short of success, to codify the law, which several Continental states, notably Denmark, about this period engaged in. The time was not ripe for a change which, now that it is, remains unaccomplished. But, while all seemed to favour Morton, there were undercurrents which combined to procure his fall. The Presby- terian clergy were alienated by his leaning to Episcopacy, and all parties in the divided church by his seizure of its estates. Andrew Melville, who had succeeded to the leadership of Knox, was more decided than Knox against any departure from the Presbyterian model, and refused to be won by a place in his household. His expensive buildings at Dalkeith, which got the name of

EES

James Stuart) regents.

|

(1

——————eeeaee

the Lion's Den, roused the jealousy of the nobles. The arrogance of his favourites exceeded his own. The com- mons were disgusted by a depreciation of the coinage. The powerful earl of Argyll, incensed by the recovery from his wife, the widow of Moray, of some of the crown jewels, and Athole, a Stuart and Roman Catholic, united with Alexander Erskine, governor of Stirling, who now had the custody of the young king, in a league which received so much support that Morton bent before the storm and offered to resign. The king, whose education had been forced by Buchanan, now barely twelve years of age, nominally assumed the government, but was directed by a council of nobles headed by Athole as chancellor. Morton surrendered the castle of Edinburgh, the palace of Holyrood, and the royal treasures, retiring to Loch Leven, where he busied himself in laying out gardens. But his ambition could not deny itself another stroke for power. Aided by the young earl of Mar, he got possession of Stirling castle and the person of the king, Civil war was avoided only by the influence of Bowes, the English ambassador. A nominal reconciliation was effected, and a parliament at Stirling introduced a new government. Morton, who secured an indemnity, was president of the council, but Athole remained a privy councillor in an en- larged council with representatives of both parties. Shortly afterwards Athole died, of poison it was said, and suspicion pointed to Morton. His return to power was brief, and the only important event was the prosecution of the two Hamiltons, the abbots of Arbroath and Paisley, who still supported Mary and saved their lives by flight to England. The struggle with the Presbyterian clergy continued. The Second Book of Discipline had been presented to the king before he assumed office, and, although the general assembly in 1580 condemned Episcopacy absolutely, parliament did not sanction the condemnation. The final fall of Morton came from an opposite quarter. In September 1579 Esmé Stuart, Lord D'Aubigny, the king's cousin, came to Scot- land from France, gained the favour of James by his courtly manners, and received the lands and earldom of Lennox, the custody of Dumbarton castle, and the office of chamberlain. One of his dependants, Captain James Stuart, son of Lord Ochiltree and brother-in-law of Knox, had the daring to accuse Morton at a meeting of the council in Holyrood of complicity in the murder of Darnley, and he was at once committed to custody. Some months later Morton was condemned by an assize for having taken part in that crime, and the verdict was justified by his con- fession that Bothwell had revealed

to him the design, although he denied participation in its execution. He was executed by the Maiden—a guillotine he had himself brought from England —on 2d June 1581.

From December 1580 to August 1582 the government was in the hands of Lennox and Stuart, now captain of the guard,—a small force which the estates had reluctantly allowed the king to protect his person. Their jealousy threatened but never reached an open rupture. Stuart was rewarded by the gift first of the tutory, then of the earldom of Arran in April 1581. Lennox was created duke, a title seldom granted in Scotland. Their aim, carefully concealed by nominal adherence to the Protestant faith, appears to have been the association of Mary with her son in the government, a breach with England, the renewal of the league with France, and the restoration of the Roman Church. The nobles, bribed by office or the spoils of the church, were men of too feeble character to resist, but the Presbyterian ministers were made of stronger metal. Illegal banishment of the contumacious clergy and arbitrary orders of council were followed by a rising against Epis- copacy. The proclamation of an extraordinary chamberlain air—an itinerant court of justice—to be held by Lennox

at Edinburgh on 27th August precipitated the coup @état of 1575-1585. the Raid of Ruthven, which took the usual form of Scottish revolutions,—the seizure of the king and the transfer of

power to his captors. When on a visit (22d August 1582)

to the earl of Gowrie, son of his mother's foe Lord Ruthven, Raid of at his castle of Hunting Tower near Perth, the earl his host, Ruthven. Mar, the master of Glamis, and others, taking advantage

of the absence of Lennox and Arran, surrounded the castle

with armed men and made James a prisoner, though still ostensibly treating him as king. Arran, returning to Perth

with only two followers, was seized and put in prison. Lennox, after taking refuge in the castle of Dumbarton,

fled to France, where he died in disgrace with the Catholics,

because he had conformed to the Protestant doctrine.

The government was for ten months in the hands of a new council, of which Gowrie as treasurer was the head.

There was no parliament, but a convention at Holyrood ratified the consequences of the Raid of Ruthven. A declaration was extorted from the king condoning his capture; but James, no longer a boy, chafed under the tutelage of the Protestant nobles and the admonitions of

the Protestant ministers. In June of the following year

he escaped from Falkland to St Andrews, which was held

by Colonel Stewart. Arran was recalled, the Raid of Reaction Ruthven declared treason, Gowrie executed, and the chief favour Protestant lords banished. Melville and other ministers . Epis found it necessary to fly to England. . A parliament con- = firmed the supremacy of Arran, who was created chan- cellor, and the forfeiture of the chief persons implicated

in the Ruthven Raid. The king's power was declared to extend over all estates and subjects within the realm; all jurisdictions not approved by parliament and all assemblies

and conventions without the king's licence were discharged.

A commission was granted to Patrick Adamson, archbishop

of St Andrews, and other bishops for trying ecclesiastical causes, and a form of judgment was established for depriv-

ing ministers of their benefices for worthy causes.

to their ordinary bishop or superintendent appointed by

him, under pain of forfeiture. A few subscribed uncondi- tionally, others with the qualification, "according to the Word of God"; but a large number

declined, and suffered

the penalty. Early in 1585 Adamson issued a paper de- claring the king's supremacy in matters ecclesiastical, defending the restoration of bishops, and announcing the king's intention that the bishops should hold synods twice

a year, that general assemblies should be allowed provided

they had his sanction, but that no jurisdiction was to be exercised by presbyteries. This document, which cut at

the root of the Presbyterian system and was a formal declaration in favour of the royal supremacy and Episco-

pacy, was met with vehement protests by Melville and the exiled ministers.

Meantime a series of intrigues went on between the James English and Scottish courts. Elizabeth, while osten- 24 sibly favouring the exiles, disliked their political principles. ag James and Arran, instead of leaning on the papacy as Mary did, had shown signs of accepting a solution of the problem of church government more like that of England than of Geneva. There was here ground for a compromise of the religious controversy which political reasons made so desirable. Accordingly Lord Hunsdon, a favourite courtier of Elizabeth, met Arran near Berwick in the autumn, when it was arranged that the master of Gray, then a follower of Arran and personal favourite of James, should go to London in October. At his instance Elizabeth removed the banished Scottish lords and ministers from Newcastle to London. But Gray was playing his own

game, and his suggestions that these lords might return to Scotland, and that the alliance with England should be carried out by their aid and his own influence independ- ently of Arran, were taken up by the queen, who had no personal liking for Arran, and ultimately effected. Eliza- beth sent

Wotton to Scotland, who won the confidence of James, to whom he promised a pension of £5000 a year, and while openly negotiating with Arran secretly plotted with Gray for his downfall. A mutual league between England and Scotland against the Catholics, called "the Bond anént the True Religion," was agreed to by a con- vention of estates in July 1585.

This was a turning-point in the life of James and in the history of Scotland. The choice was made between France and England, Romanism and Protestantism. It was not likely to be reversed when with Elizabeth's declining years the crown of England was thrown into the balance. The day before the conclusion of the treaty Arran was at the request of Elizabeth's envoy put in strict ward, under the pretext that he had been privy to the death of Lord Russell, son of the earl of Bedford, in a border fray, and he only escaped at the price of his estates and honours. In November the banished lords—Angus, Mar, the master of Glamis—returned, and along with them the two Hamil- tons ; and, aided by Gray, they seized the person of the king, the castle of Stirling, and assumed the government. The alliance with England was finally ratified at Berwick by Randolph. James, at the instigation of Gray, wrote a harsh letter to his mother; and at the instance of Eliza- beth he allowed George Douglas, who had been concerned in Darnley's murder, to return to Scotland. The exiled Pro- testant ministers were restored to their livings; but James was resolute in maintaining Episcopacy and enforcing the laws against all who denied the royal supremacy. Adam- son was indeed forced by a general assembly to disclaim any authority as archbishop not allowed by God's Word, and an Act was passed again dividing Scotland into presby- teries, but the king refused to subject the bishops to their jurisdiction. Mary, deserted by her son, now allowed herself through her immediate confidants, especially her secretaries Nau and Curle, to take an active though secret part in the Jesuit plots which embraced both Scotland and England in their ramifications. That which had for its aim the assassination of Elizabeth was discovered by

the king was still allowed to grant feus of church lands, the nobles and landed gentry really profited most by this measure, which gave a

parliamentary title to their estates derived from the church and the hope of future spoils. The Act was accompanied by a general revocation of all gifts made during the king's minority or by Mary after his accession. Another statute of constitutional import- ance renewed, and for the first time carried into effect, the law of James I. by which the lesser barons in the counties were excused from personal attendance and allowed to send representatives to parliament. This was a check on the nobles who had hitherto almost exclusively attended and ruled parliament. It was the first and only large deviation of the Scottish parliament from the feudal model of the curia regis.

Projects for the king's marriage had been on foot at an earlier period; but at last the choice fell upon Anne of Denmark. Elizabeth opposed the match ; but James, per- haps tempted by the offer to surrender the Danish claim to Orkney and Shetland, perhaps also not unwilling to show he could choose for himself, was married to Anne by proxy. Anne set sail for Scotland, but was driven back by a storm. Accordingly James himself went to claim his bride, when the actual marriage was at once celebrated at Copenhagen, where he spent the winter. It was a political advantage both to the king and Scotland to form a connexion with a kingdom which, though small, stood comparatively high at that time in Europe, and was completely independent both of England and of France. After the king's return the Presbyterian party was in the ascendant. It has been doubted whether the favour shown to it by James at this time was genuine, but without reason. He had been married, and the queen was crowned, by Robert Bruce, a leading minister, for whom he had a personal liking. Shortly before going to Denmark James had published a tract interpreting the Apocalypse in the well-known Protest- ant sense, Notwithstanding the failure of the Armada, the air was still full of Jesuit intrigues and Spanish plots. At no moment of his life was James less inclined towards the English form of the Reformation, which he described in a celebrated speech as retaining the superstition of the mass "without the liftings." A severe blow was given to Episcopacy in Scotland by Archbishop Adamson shortly before his death retracting in a published confession his

Walsingham's spies, and, though forgery was resorted to, it is difficult to doubt that Mary was cognizant of the design. The trial at Fotheringay could

have but one result under a statute according to which any attempt against

writings against Presbyterianism. In 1592 parliament, led Re-estab-
according to James Melville by Maitland, now Lord Thirle- lishment stane
and chancellor, re-established Presbyterian church 0! Pt

: byterian- government. General assemblies were to meet once 4 jem.

the queen's life was treason in the person for whom it was made as well as in the actual perpetrators. The execu- tion (8th February 1587) of Mary naturally roused the anger of the Catholic powers and some indignation in Scotland, which James professed to share; yet he did nothing but expostulate. In truth his own crown was threatened by the same enemies. Mary had disinherited him in favour of Philip of Spain, unless he adopted the Catholic faith. The defeat of the Spanish Armada by the sovereign and people of both countries was felt to be a providential deliverance. Nothing could have served better to efface the memory of Mary and extinguish pity for her

year, and provincial assemblies or synods, presbyteries, and sessions were confirmed. The Act of 1584 conferring jurisdiction on bishops was rescinded, but there was no formal abrogation of the office. The assembly had asked for the repeal of the Act of Annexation of 1587, but this was not conceded. The landed interests were too powerful to allow of the Reformed Church receiving the patrimony of its predecessor. Shortly after the termination of the parliament the discovery of the plot of "the Spanish blanks" showed that the danger of a Catholic rising and foreign invasion was real. The conspiracy proved abor- tive, and two of its chief promoters (Huntly and Erroll)

Majority fate. The fall of Gray, who was tried and condemned for ofJames, treachery during his English embassy and for correspond- ence with Catholic princes, left James, now of full age, without what was almost a necessity to his weak nature, —a favourite, though Sir Jolin Maitland, a younger brother of Lethington, was secretary and exercised the chief influ- ence in the government. Advantage was taken of the royal majority to pass an Act annexing to the crown all church lands under certain limited reservations. But, as all prior grants to lay impropriators were saved, and

left Scotland ; on their return three years later they publicly renounced Catholicism and conformed to the Protestant faith.

From the king's majority to his accession to the English Rela- throne, his relations to the nobles on the one hand and to ee the Presbyterian' party led by the ministers on the other chee require to be kept in view as giving the key to a singularly ana confused and changing course of events. After the death state. of Thirlestane in 1595, the king had to rely on his own counsel, of the value of which he had an overweening

The Octa- vians,

REFORMATION. |

opinion. He had studied the theory of kingcraft and wrote the Basilicon Doron expounding it. He fancied that he really governed, while he was in fact drawn this way or that by the contending forces which emerged in this revolu- tionary epoch. In spite of occasional displays of resolution, his character was at bottom weak. It was the destiny which conducted him to the English throne that saved him from the dangers of his situation in Scotland. A noble- man, who, although only connected by his mother with Mary's Bothwell, seemed to inherit the reckless daring of his predecessor in the title, thrice attempted and once for a short time succeeded in seizing the royal person and assuming the reins of government. But James, who was not without adroitness in baffling plotters by arts similar to their own, escaped from his custody. Towards the Catholic lords his policy was not to proceed to extremities, but to keep them in hand as a counterpoise to the extreme Protestant party. He prudently allowed the finances to be managed after Thirlestane's death by a committee, called from its number the Octavians, on which both Catholics and Protestants acted,—Seton, afterwards Lord Dunferm- line, the president of the session, and Lindsay of Balcarres being the leading members. With their advice James set himself against any measures which the Protestant minis- ters proposed for the restoration or increase of the revenues of the church. It was this critical point of money, the assertion of the royal supremacy in spiritual matters, and the favour the king showed to the Catholics which led to the quarrel between him and the ministers. Ata conven- tion of the estates at Falkland and then more strongly as one of a deputation sent by the ministers from

Cupar, Andrew Melville, in the spirit and manner of Knox, made his well-known speech to "' God's silly vassal" on the two kingdoms and the two kings. Although James, frightened by this vehement language, made promises that he would do nothing for the Catholic lords till they had made terms with the church, it was impossible that a quarrel, whose roots were so deep, as to the limits of the royal authority and jurisdiction in matters ecclesiastical could be appeased. Neither party to it could see how far each overstepped the bounds of reason. The king was blind to the right of freedom of conscience which Protestantism had established as one of its first principles. Melville and the ministers

diminishing the authority of the general assemblies and 1595-1603,

of conferring on parliament a competency to deal with matters ecclesiastical. Parliament in 1597 passed an Act that all ministers promoted to prelacies (7.e., bishoprics or abbacies) should have seats in parliament, and remitted to the king with the general assembly to determine as to the office of such persons in the spiritual policy and govern- ment of the kirk. Accordingly James summoned succes- sive assemblies at Perth and Dundee, where there were two sessions in 1597, and finally at Montrose in 1600, selecting those towns in order to procure a good attendance from the north, always more favourable to royalty and Hpisco- pacy and less under the influence of the Edinburgh clergy. By this and other manceuvres he obtained some concessions,

but not all that he desired (see PRESBYTERIANISM, Vol. xix. Gowrie

pp. 681-682). It was the Gowrie conspiracy (5th August 1600) whose failure gave him the courage and the ground for finally abandoning the Presbyterians and casting in his lot with the bishops. Repeated investigations at the time and since cannot be said to have completely cleared up the mystery of this outrage. The most probable solution was afforded by the discovery several years afterwards of a corre- spondence between Gowrie and Logan of Restalrig which pointed to the seizure of the

person rather than the murder of James as the object of the plot. More important than this object, which failed, was the sequel. The Ruthvens, who were chiefly implicated, were amongst the most promi- nent of the Protestant nobility, and the Presbyterian minis- ters with few exceptions refused to accept James's own account of what had happened, confirmed though it was by depositions of various noblemen who were with the king at the time. They even insinuated that the plot had not been by but against Gowrie at the king's instance. Although James by arguments and threats at last extorted an acknowledgment of the truth of his account from all the ministers except Bruce, who was deprived of his benefice and banished for his contumacy, the insult and the injuri- ous suspicions were never forgiven.

In October, with the consent of the convention of estates, he appointed three bishops to vacant sees, and they sat in parliament, though as yet without any place in the government of the church, which was still Presbyterian, and with no sanction of course from the assembly or the

ministers. James had to assume the English crown before Union of Episcopacy could really be restored. This crisis of his English career was not long delayed. Already Elizabeth's death es

was being calculated on, and her courtiers from Cecil crowns,

were equally blind to the impossibility of any form of monarchy yielding to the claim that the members of an ecclesiastical assembly should use the name of Christ and the theory of His headship over the church to give them-

Se

selves absolute power to define its relations to the state. Other occasions quickly arose for renewing the controversy. A violent sermon by Black at St Andrews gave a favour- able opportunity to James of invoking the jurisdiction of the privy council, and the preacher was banished north of the Tay. Soon afterwards a demand made on the king in consequence of a sermon of another minister, Balcan- quhal, and a speech of Bruce, the king's former favourite, that he should dismiss the Octavians, led to a tumult in Edinburgh, which gave James a pretext for leaving the town and removing the courts of justice to Linlithgow. Supported by the nobles, he

returned on New-Year's Day 1597, received the submission of the town, levying a severe fine before he would restore its privileges as a corporation and withholding from it the right of electing its own magis- trates or ministers without the royal consent. Emboldened by this success, James now addressed himself to the diffi- cult problem of church and state. He did not yet feel strong enough to restore Episcopacy, perhaps had not quite determined on that course. The ingenious scheme due to Lindsay of Balcarres was fallen on of introducing repre- sentatives of the church into parliament without naming them bishops. This would have the twofold effect of

downwards were contending for the favour of her heir. She died on 24th March 1603 and James was at once pro- claimed her successor in accordance with her own declara- tion that no minor person should ascend her throne but her cousin the king of Scots. Leaving Edinburgh on 5th April, James reached London on 6th May, being every- where received with acclamation by the people. Thus peacefully at a memorable epoch in the history of Europe was accomplished the union of South and North Britain. Often attempted in vain by conquest, it was now attained in a manner soothing the pride of the smaller country, without at first exciting the jealousy of the larger, whose interest was, as Henry VII. prophesied, sure to predominate. To James it was a welcome change from nobles who had threatened his liberty and life, and from ministers who withstood his will and showed little respect for his person or office, to the courtier statesmen of England trained by the Tudors to reverence the monarch as all but absolute,

and a clergy bound to recognize him as their head. To Advan-

Scotland, a poor country, and its inhabitants, poor also but enterprising and eager for new careers, it opened pro- spects of national prosperity which, though not at once, were ultimately realized. It was an immediate gain that

o10

end, This more than counterbalanced the loss of the court, a loss which probably favoured the independent develop- ment of the nation. For the

present no change was made in its constitution, its church, or its laws. The Reforma- tion had continued the work of the War of Independence. Scotland no longer consisted only of the prelates, the nobles, and the landed gentry. The commons, imperfectly represented in parliament by the burghs, not yet wealthy enough to be powerful, had found a voice in the assemblies of the church and leaders in its ministers and elders. Superstition did not fall with the fall of the church of Rome nor licence with the decline of the nobility. Rather, both took new forms of extreme virulence and threatened to impede the national progress; but both were exposed to the light of public discussion and the growth of public opinion. The contact with the more cultured south was of immense value. Scotland, now beginning to use in the services of the church, in the proceedings of the courts, and in printed books the vulgar tongue, which differed only as a dialect from that of England, was admitted to the freedom of the noblest language and literature in Europe, then in its prime. The arts which increase the convenience and pleasure of daily life spread northward with the increase of wealth. Science, starting on a new method taught by the great English philosopher, was intro- duced and after a time eagerly prosecuted. Commerce,

for which the Scots had a natural aptness, found new

fields, And all these benefits were procured without any sacrifice of the independent spirit which had been derived from their forefathers. Even the separate intercourse with the Continent—with France, Germany, Holland, and Scandinavia—from which Scotland had already received so much advantage, though not quite so intimate with France as before, continued. But before the blessings of the union could be fully realized a century was to inter- vene, which at times seemed to hide if not to bury them, —a century of civil war and religious controversy. At the moment when James ascended the throne and pro- claimed the virtues of peace it required no far-sighted observer to discern elements of discord which might at any moment burst in storm. To hold Papal Ireland,

 border wars and English and French intrigues were at an

Cecil, Lord Salisbury, the son of Burghley, an hereditary statesman of great ability as an administrator. But on two subjects closely connected with Scotland the king had decided opinions of his own. He desired to see Scotland bound to England, not merely by the union of the crowns, but by a union of the parliaments and laws, and if not an immediate an ultimate union of the churches. He was equally determined that the church in both countries should combine a moderate Protestant doctrine—a via media be- tween Rome and Geneva—with Episcopal government. Both desires were founded on prudent policy and might possibly have been accomplished by a stronger and wiser monarch, But the former was opposed by the jealousy of England and the pride of Scotland. The latter could not be accomplished in Scotland without force, so deep were the roots which Presbyterianism had struck. James at- tempted to carry both measures in a manner calculated to raise rather than to overcome opposition. The union scheme was brought before his first English parliament, and commissioners were appointed to treat with the Scottish commissioners nominated somewhat reluctantly by the par- liament of Perth. The commissioners met, but differences at once emerged on the topics of freedom of trade between the two countries, to which the English were averse, and the acceptance of the laws of England, which the Scots objected to. Two important points were carried by a declaration of the law rather than agreement of the com- missioners,—that subjects born in either country after the accession (post nati) should have the full privileges of sub- jects and not be deemed aliens, and that those born before should be capable of denization and so of inheriting or acquiring land in England, though not of political rights or offices. The English parliament of 1607, however, refused to sustain the decision of the Exchequer Chamber in favour of the post nati, although it consented to abolish the laws which treated Scotland as an enemy's country and made arrangements for the extradition of criminals. The reli- gious or ecclesiastical question was first brought to a point in England at the Hampton Court conference, which met on 14th January 1604, in which trifling concessions were made to the Puritans, chiefly as to the observance of Sunday and the removal of the Apocrypha from the Authorized

James's desire for political union,

Episcopal England, and Presbyterian Scotland united under one sceptre was a task of infinite difficulty, not lessened because in each there was a minority who dissented strongly

*Version. In Scotland Episcopacy was restored by a series Re-estab- of steps which were gradual only for the purpose of over- re coming opposition, not because James hesitated as to the ® ~P**

from the prevailing opinion as to church government and doctrine. The sudden separation from Rome gave birth to every variety of religious opinion, and Scotland became even more than England a land of sects. The constitution of the civil government was a problem not yet solved. In England the Tudor sovereigns had sapped the principles of the parliamentary constitution established in the times of the Plantagenets, and fortunatelyrecorded in writings which could not be forgotten. In Scotland such principles had never yet been practically adopted. Ireland was ruled as a dependency on the principle of subjection.

At this point in the treatment of some historians the history of Scotland ends. Juster views now prevail. Neither the union of crowns nor of parliaments really closes the separate record of a nation which retained sepa- rate laws, a separate church, a separate system of education, and a well-marked diversity of character. But a great part of the subsequent history of Scotland is necessarily included in that of Great Britain, and has been treated under ENGLAND (¢.v.). Considerations of space and pro- portion make it necessary that what remains should be told even more rapidly than the narrative of what preceded the accession of James to the English throne. James during the first half of his reign as sovereign of Great Britain allowed himself to be mainly guided by Robert

end in view. At length the parliament of 1612 repeated the Act of 1592, so that Episcopacy was now once more established in Scotland by law, but contrary to the wish of the majority of the nation and under circumstances which made it the symbol of absolute government. While thus resolute in favour of Episcopacy, James showed no sign of leaning to the Roman Church, although efforts to convert him had been made at an earlier period in Scot- land. The Armada, now followed by the Gunpowder Plot,

convinced him that he had nothing to hope for from the Papists but open war or secret conspiracy.

After the death of Cecil James gave way to that influence of favourites to which he had shown himself prone in his younger years ; but in the affairs of Scotland, which pro- duced much trouble and little profit, Somerset and Buck- ingham took no interest and James was his own master. After an absence of fourteen years he visited his native country. He had promised to return every three years, but the business and pleasures of the English court detained him. His main object was to carry out still further the uniformity of the church, in which the bishops had not succeeded in establishing the same service as in England.

copacy.

This object was apparently attained in 1618 by the adop- piv tion of the Five Articles of Perth (see vol. xix. p. 682), Articles but at the cost of sowing the seed of religious war. From of Perth.

SCOTLAND 511

In spite of the opposition of a convention of the estates, 1603-1637. which nearly ended in bloodshed, the king carried out the resumption of tithes for the benefit of the clergy from their

lay impropriators, The revocation in 1625 of all grants in Ecclesi- prejudice of the crown, whether before or after the Act of tical

Annexation of 1587, was superseded by a new measure, ee

LATER STUARTS. |

this time to James's death little occurred worthy of note in the history of Scotland. A parliament in 1621, held under the marquis of Hamilton as commissioner, confirmed the Five Articles, though by a majority that is narrow when the power of the king in a Scottish parliament is kept in view, and only on an assurance from the commissioner

that no further ecclesiastical innovations would be proposed. It also introduced a new mode of electing the Lords of the Articles, which practically gave the whole influence to the bishops, the nominees of the crown. As this body prepared the entire business of a parliament in which there was no power of bringing in Bills by private members, this was a long step in the direction of absolute government. James, in fact, declared in one of his speeches to the English parlia- ment that, according to the Scottish constitution, he was master of its whole proceedings, with the absolute power of initiative as well as of veto. His declaration was an ex- aggeration, for there were well-known precedents of the estates passing laws without the royal assent; but the Scottish constitution was in a fluid state without the guarantee of written charters or clearly defined rules as to the refusal of supplies, and above all without an independ- ent House of Commons to represent the wishes of the people and demand redress for their grievances. The only part of the policy of James on which it is possible to look back with satisfaction was that which concerned coloniza-

iza- tion, then called " plantation." This gave an outlet to the

increasing population, while it advanced the civilization of the countries to which the settlers went. The earliest of these schemes, the "plantation" of the Hebrides by a number of gentlemen of Fife called "undertakers," had comparatively little effect, but, apart from it, some progress was made in introducing order and law in the Highlands and islands, where the people were still in a semi-barbarous condition. More important was the plantation of Ulster, chiefly by Scottish farmers, whose descendants still retain a Scottish dialect and a Presbyterian church. But as an augury of the future the colonization of Nova Scotia, though attempted in an arbitrary manner, was of the greatest consequence. It was a commencement of the great migration to the New World across the Atlantic and to the other colonial possessions of Great Britain, in which, equally to their own profit and that of the empire, the Scottish nation in the two following centuries was to play so great a part. Qn 22d March 1625 James died, leaving to his son Charles a burden of government heavier than when he had himself undertaken it. His apparent success in carrying to a further point the absolute and arbitrary principles of the Tudor sovereigns scarcely concealed the real failure. Ireland, with difficulty kept down, was not really subdued. The

parliament of England had given unmistakable signs that it was only waiting an opportunity to restore the constitution on the old basis. The religious and political instincts of the Scottish nation, suppressed by force, were gathering strength to reassert themselves if necessary by revolutionary methods. An exhausted ex- chequer, which James had attempted to fill by monopolies, and by the sale of offices and honours and so-called bene- volences, added to the other difficulties of carrying on the government, but was fortunately, as in the time of the Plantagenets, to afford the occasion for maintaining the constitutional struggle.

8. Period of Civil Wars, Charles I. to Revolution.— Eight years after his accession Charles I. revisited Scotland (1633). During these he had pursued his father's policy. No Scottish parliament sat, though a nominal one was adjourned annually between 1628 and 1633. No general

ratified by parliament in 1633, declaring the terms on which the tithes might still be acquired and valued by the heritors. Few measures have been of greater importance in their bearing on Scottish history. The revocation alienated the nobles and landed gentry, who dreaded that when so much had been, still more might be, taken from their profits in the Reformation. The new valuation left the parochial clergy in the position of a poor class, with interests antagonistic to the gentry, whose income was diminished whenever the ministers attempted to raise their seanty stipends. The loyalty for which the Scots had been distinguished had received a shock by the removal of the court, and this was a second and more serious blow. Yet when Charles came to Edinburgh and received the crown at Holyrood (18th June 1633) he was well re- ceived. The disaffection still lay beneath the surface. Although the Five Articles of Perth were not rigidly en- forced, all the court could do was done to introduce the most obnoxious,—the practice of kneeling at the com- munion, which Presbyterians deemed a relic of the mass. The question of a liturgy was not allowed to rest. It was brought before the Scottish bishops in 1629 ; their draft was submitted to Laud, who, detecting in it Low Church doctrine as to baptism and traces of Knox's Book of Common Order, refused his approval and advocated the introduction of the English Prayer Book, by which uni- formity would be secured. Though this was not yet at- tempted, Charles took the same view as the zealous and ambitious churchman who was now his guide in ecclesi-

astical matters. When he came to Scotland Laud was in his suite, and the coronation was conducted with a ritual which "had great fear of inbringing of Popery." Edin- burgh was created a bishopric. The parliament over which Charles presided passed thirty-one Acts, "not three of which," says a contemporary, but were most "hurtful to the liberty of the subject." One in particular declared in a large sense the royal prerogative, and by an ill-omened conjunction gave the king power to regulate the apparel of churchmen. It was disputed in parliament whether this Act was carried, but the presence of the king, who took notes of the votes, overawed opposition. About a year after Charles left Scotland the trial of Lord Balmerino, which grew out of the Acts of this parliament, gave the first impulse to the Scottish revolution. That nobleman, who had possessed a copy of a petition protesting against the Acts then carried, was tried under the old Acts against leasing-making or sedition and condemned by a majority of one upon a single charge,—that of not revealing the petition and its author (March 1635). Although Charles respited the capital sentence, the condemnation deeply stirred the people, who saw almost the only mode of con- stitutional redress, that by petition, declared illegal and an act capable of innocent interpretation treated as a heinous crime. Before the trial the appointment of Spot- tiswoode as chancellor, the first ecclesiastic who held the office since the Reformation, and the admission of nine bishops to the privy council, increased the disaffection. In 1636 the Book of Canons, ratified by the king the year before, was published at Aberdeen, containing the most distinct assertion of the royal supremacy and a complete Episcopal organization.

At last on Sunday, 23d July 1637, the much-dreaded Introduc- liturgy, the use of which had been enjoined by the Canons tion of and announced on the preceding Sunday, was introduced /t" "sY-

1 assembly met, but the restoration of Episcopacy and the uniformity of the churches were steadily prosecuted by royal influence and the exercise of the royal prerogative.

?

LaAawnw®

promoting the true religion, were devised, but failed to satisfy even the least zealous Covenanters.

Anassembly at last met in Glasgow, over which Hamilton Asgom. presided, with faint hope that matters might still be accont- bly of modated. Hamilton had orders to dissolve it if it proved Glasgow. to be intractable. The members had been chosen by the

in the service of St Giles Cathedral, Edinburgh. For the most part a transcript of the English Prayer Book, it deviated slightly in the direction of the Roman ritual. Its use provoked an uproar, of which the stool flung at the dean by a woman, Jenny Geddes or Anne Mein, was the symbol, and brought the service to a close,—Lindsay, the

bishop, being with difficulty saved from the violence of the

influence of the Tables, according to a mode invented in

mob. Asimilar riot took place in Greyfriars church, where | 1597. Three ministers represented each presbytery and the bishop of Argyll attempted to use the book, There | an elder the laity of the district. The burghs also sent re- had been no such tumult since the Reformation. The | presentatives. The Covenanters had declared their inten-

privy council arrested a few rioters, but suspended the use of the service book until the king's pleasure was known, and when Laud at the king's request wrote that its use should be continued no one dared to read it in Edinburgh or throughout Scotland except in afew cathedrals. Meantime numerous supplications against it and the Canons, joined with accusations against the bishops, were sent to Charles. His only answer was the removal

of the courts and privy council to Linlithgow and an order to all ministers who signed the supplications to leave Edinburgh. There fol- lowed fresh supplications and protests, in which some of the nobility, especially Rothes, Balmerino, Loudon, Mon- trose, and a prontinent lawyer, Johnston of Warriston, joined with the ministers. Hope, the king's advocate, secretly favoured them. Traquair, a leading member of the privy council, went to London to press on Charles and Laud the gravity of the situation ; but, though ambiguous concessions were made, the king and his advisers were determined to insist on the service book. In a proclama- tion issued at Stirling (20th February 1638) the king as- sumed the responsibility of its introduction ; but the op- position was too powerful to be put down by words. Its organization, begun by commissioners headed by Rothes, continued in committees of the nobles, lesser barons, ministers, and burghs, was now called "the Tables" from those in the Parliament House, where they sat sometimes separately, sometimes collectively, and formed a standing assembly which defied the king's council. The Covenant, prepared by Alexander Henderson, leader of the ministers, and Johnston of Warriston, was revised by Rothes, Loudon, and Balmerino, and accepted by upwards of two hundred ministers who had gathered in Edinburgh. It was signed at Greyfriars church on lst March 1638, first by many of the nobles and gentry, then by three hundred ministers and a great multitude of the people. Copies were at once despatched throughout the country, and with few excep- tions, chiefly in St Andrews and Aberdeen, it was accepted by all ranks and classes. Its form was suggested by the bonds for material aid of which Mary's reign had given so many examples, but the new name pointed to a Biblical origin, and the parties were not the nobles and their retainers but God and His people. While nominally professing respect for the royal office, it was entered into, as it anxiously reiterated, for "the defence of the true religion (as reformed from Popery) and the liberties and laws of the kingdom." The spirit in which it was signed was that of a religious revival. Many subscribed with tears on their cheeks, and it was commonly reported that some signed with their blood. Charles could not relish a movement which opposed his deepest convictions as to church government and under the form of respect repudi- ated his supremacy; but, destitute of power to coerce the Covenanters, he was compelled to temporize. Hamilton as his commissioner offered to withdraw the service book and Book of Canons, to give up the Court of High Com- mission, and to allow the Articles of Perth

to remain in abeyance. A new confession called the "negative," framed on that of 1580, and a new covenant called the "king's," on the model of one drawn in 1590, which bound the signers only to stand by the king in suppressing Papists and

tion of prosecuting the bishops, and a libel laid before the presbytery of Edinburgh was read in the churches. Charles on his side announced that he challenged the mode of election and would not allow the prosecutions. He was already preparing for war. At the first sitting Alexander Henderson was chosen moderator, and Johnston of Warri- ston clerk. In spite of the commissioner's attempt to raise the question of the validity of elections, the assembly de- clared itself duly constituted. A letter from the bishops was read declining its jurisdiction, and the commissioner, while offering redress of grievances and that bishops should be responsible to future assemblies of clergy, declared that the present assembly was illegal in respect of the admission of lay representatives. Discussion was useless between a commissioner and an assembly whose power to act he denied. He accordingly dissolved it in the name of the king and left Glasgow ; but this only stimulated its mem- bers. It annulled the pretended assemblies between 1606 and 1628, condemned the service book, Book of Canons, Book of Ordinances, and the High Commission Court, de- posed the bishops on separate libels which set forth various acts of immorality or crime, many of which were false, declared Episcopacy to have been abjured in 1580, and con- demned the Five Articles of Perth. It concluded its month's labours by restoring Presbyterian church government.

The distance from such an assembly to the field of arms Appeal was short, and on 7th June 1639 the army of the Cove- toarms,

nanters under Alexander Leslie, a general trained in the service of Gustavus Adolphus, met the royal troops led by the king at Dunse Law. Charles, though slightly superior in numbers, had an undisciplined army and no money to maintain it, while Leslie had trained officers and troops animated by religious zeal. Their colours were stamped with the royal arms, and the motto "For Christ's Crown and Covenant" in golden letters. Councils of war as well as religious meetings were held daily, and the militant fervour of the Covenanting troops steadily rose. Charles declined

to engage such an army and general, and by the Pacification of Berwick (18th June) both parties agreed to disband, and Charles to issue a declaration that all ecclesi- astical matters should be regulated by assemblies, and all civil by parliament and other legal courts. On 1st August a free general assembly was to be held at Edinburgh, and on the 20th a free parliament in which an Act of Oblivion was to be passed. The assembly met as appointed and, without explicitly conforming, re-enacted the principal re- solutions of that of Glasgow, and declared that the Covenant should be subscribed by every one in office and authority. Before it separated it condemned the Large Declaration, a pamphlet by Balcanquhal, dean of Durham, published in the king's name, which gave an adverse narrative of recent events in Scotland. The parliament effected little legis- lation, but showed its disposition by abolishing Episcopacy and reforming the election of the Lords of the Articles, of whom eight were henceforth to be chosen by the nobles, lesser barons, and burghs respectively. The predominance of the king and the church was thus removed from the body which initiated all legislation, Charles had beforehand determined not to sanction the abolition of Episcopacy, and the parliament was prematurely adjourned (14th

Charles's conces- sions to theScots.

November) without the royal assent to its Acts. It was evident that the struggle between the king and the Scots

would be renewed, and both parties reluctantly had re-

course to allies whose choice showed their sense of the crisis. Charles summoned an English parliament ; but the three weeks' session of the Short Parliament was spent in a vain attempt to obtain redress for its own grievances. It separated without granting supplies, and the king had to depend on private loans. The Scots negotiated with the French king; but Richelieu prevented the unnatural alliance of the Catholic king and the Covenanters. The Scots took the first step inthe war. The army under Leslie crossed the Tweed and, forcing the passage of the Tyne at Newburn, occupied Newcastle. Charles, who had his headquarters at York, paralysed

by the want of money and new demands to summon an English parliament, was driven to accept a truce at Ripon (2d September 1640), under which the Scottish army was to receive a subsidy to relieve the northern counties from contributions. Parliament was summoned to Westminster for 3d November ; but its first act was the impeachment of Strafford. Until a pledge was given by his death that Charles would recognize the limits of monarchy, the Parliamentary leaders thought it safer that the Scots should hold the north of England. Peace was concluded by the Act immediately following that of Strafford's attainder, by which £300,000 was ordered to be raised as 'friendly assistance and relief promised to our brethren in Scotland."

The king now made up his mind to revisit Scotland, hoping there to find a way out of his English troubles. He had received a letter from Montross (¢.v.), urging him to come and gain the Scots by a moderate policy. He came to Edinburgh early in August 1641 and a parliament met under his presidency, when he not only ratified the Acts substituting a Presbyterian for the Episcopal form of church government but sanctioned important reforms. The Lords of the Articles were in future to be elected by each of the three estates separately, the burghs taking the place of the bishops ; the Court of High Commission was abolished ; arbitrary proclamations were prohibited ; the officers of state and the judges were to be chosen with the advice of parliament ; and, following an English Bill, parlia- ment was to meet every third year. During his stay in Scotland occurred 'the Incident,"—still spoken of as mysterious by historians, some of whom liken it to the English incident of the arrest of the five members. Argyll and Hamilton had led the party which carried all the measures of this parliament. Montrose had been com- mitted to the castle by the estates before the arrival of Charles on a charge of plotting against Argyll by false accusations to the king. From his prison he renewed his charges against both Argyll and Hamilton, whom he accused of treason. Charles about this time unwisely attended parliament with an unusual guard of 500 men, which gave Hamilton and Argyll a pretext for asserting that their lives were in danger and to quit Edinburgh. They soon re- turned and a favourable committee of investigation let the matter drop. Argyll was now more powerful than ever. In November the king returned to London, which

became during the next year the centre of the events which led to the Civil War.

The progress of the Civil War belongs to English history. Here only the part taken by the Scots can be stated. They were now courted by king and Parliament alike. The campaign of 1642-43 under Essex proved indecisive, and the Parliament sent commissioners headed by Sir Henry Vane to Edinburgh in the autumn of 1643, who agreed to the "Solemn League and Covenant," already accepted by the Scottish assembly and parliament, and now ratified by the English parliament and the assembly of divines

sc Oa bf 22 D

at Westminster. showed its descent from the National Covenant, bound the parties to it "to preserve the Reformed Church in Scot- land and effect the reformation of that in England and Ireland in doctrine, worship, discipline, and government according to the Word of God and the example of the best Reformed Churches." But the alliance with the Scottish Covenanters did not produce the advantage expected from it. The victory of Marston Moor was due to Cromwell and his Ironsides, who were Puritans and Independents. The Scots, who formed the centre of the Parliamentary army, were repulsed. In the autumn, although the Scots took Newcastle, the king gained ground in the west, where Essex, the general who represented the Presbyterians, narrowly escaped capture. Next year Montrose, in the briliant campaign on which his military fame rests, made a formidable diversion in the Highlands. With dazzling rapidity, at first supported only by a handful of followers, but gathering numbers with success, he erected the royal standard in Dumfries; then, passing to the Highlands, after the victory of Tippermuir he took Perth, and defeated Lord Lewis Gordon at the Bridge of Dee. Next, after ravaging the county of Argyll, he marched to Inverness, but returned to defeat Argyll at Inverlochy, won further victories at Auldearn near Nairn and Alford on the Don, and by that of Kilsyth appeared to have recovered Scot- land for Charles. The fruit of all these victories was lost by his defeat at Philiphaugh (13th September 1644) by Leslie. Meantime Charles had lost the battle of Naseby, and next year was forced to take refuge at Newark with Leslie, whom he had created earl of

Leven. As the result of his surrender he ordered Montrose, who was again raising the Royalists in the Highlands, to lay down his arms; and the Scottish army in England, no longer on good terms with the Parliament, returned to Newcastle, that, being nearer home, it might dictate the terms of its services.

Here it remained eight months, during which a strenuous Charles

attempt was made to force Charles to accept the Covenant. Alexander Henderson argued the matter with him in a singularly temperate correspondence. bound to Episcopacy by hereditary sentiment and personal conviction. Another negotiation was going on at the same time between the Scottish army and the English Parlia- ment for arrears of pay. On 30th January 1646 they surrendered the king to the English commissioners, the question of pay having been settled by the receipt of £200,000 a few days before and a like sum a few days after that date. There was no express condition which bound the two circumstances together, but their concur-

'rence cannot have been accidental.

In his captivity Charles renewed his negotiations with the Scottish estates, over which Hamilton had now ac- quired influence, and a compromise was at last agreed to at Newport in the Isle of Wight by which he promised to confirm the League and Covenant by Act of Parliament, to establish Presbyterianism and the Westminster Confes- sion, which as well as the Directory had been adopted by the Scottish parliament for three years. After that period it was to be fixed by the king and parliament what form of church government was most agreeable to the Word of God, and this after consultation with the assembly was to be established. The Scots consented that in the meantime the Covenant should not be enforced on those who had conscientious scruples, and that the king might continue to use the English service. The Covenanters who accepted these terms, and who formed the most moderate section, received the name of Engagers. Relying on the promised support from Scotland, Charles rejected the proposals of the English Parliament. That body had now broken with the army, in which the Independents and Cromwell were

This memorable document, whose name 1639-1647.

But the king was geots,

1647-1654.

Charles II.'s ac- ceptance of Cove- nant.

Crom-

well's in- vasion of Scotland.

514

fast acquiring supremacy. Their division afforded an opportunity for renewing the war, and Hamilton invaded England in the following year, but was routed at Preston (17th August 1648) by Cromwell. A party led by Argyll had opposed the compromise with Charles effected by Hamilton. They were chiefly strong in the south-west, and in the autumn of this year a band of them raised by Lord Eglinton marched to Edinburgh and were met by Argyll, who put himself at their head. Their numbers had risen to 6000, a sufficient force to give them supreme influence over the Government. It was from this—the " Whiggamore" raid—that the name of Whigs took its rise. The meeting of estates now resolved to renew the Solemn League and Covenant, and by an Act called the Act of Classes removed from the courts and all places of public trust those who had accepted the "late unlawful engagement." The English Parliament at this point took an exactly opposite course and showed signs of conciliation with the king; but the frustration of its action by the energetic policy of Cromwell was quickly followed by the trial and execution of the king. Hamilton, who had been taken after Preston, soon after shared the same fate.

The death of Charles altered in a moment the relations between England and Scotland. In the former Croniwell became all powerful, while in the latter the moderate Presbyterians attached to the principle of monarchy and the hereditary line at once proclaimed Charles II. Charles II. had been brought up with different views of royalty from those of the Covenanters, and Scotland was not pre- pared to accept a king except on its own terms. A

com- mission from the estates and from the assembly was at once set (March 1649) to The Hague, where the young king was. Charles promised to maintain the government of Scotland in church and state as settled by law, and particu- larly the Covenant, Confession of Faith, and Presbyterian system, but declared that he could not impose the Solemn League and Covenant on England and Ireland without the consent of their parliaments. The commissioners returned dissatisfied with this answer and with the presence at court of Montrose, by whom it had probably been framed. But in October Ormonde's Irish expedition failed, and Crom- well, already master of England, had reduced Ireland by force of arms; both parties felt inclined to renew the treaty. At length it was agreed that Charles should be accepted as king on condition of his subscribing the Covenant, establishing Presbyterian church government and worship, sanctioning the Acts of Parliament passed in his absence, and putting in force the law against Catholics. In return he stipulated for the free exercise of his royal authority, the security of his person, and the aid of a Scottish army. The treaty was closed in these terms on 9th May 1650, and early in June Charles set sail for Scotland. On the voyage he was forced to consent to further conditions which the Scottish parliament ordered the commissioners to impose, in particular to exclude from his court all persons within the first and second classes of the Acts of 1646 and 1649, and to keep the duke of Hamilton, brother of the late duke, and certain other persons out of Scotland. On Sunday, 23d June, at the mouth of the Spey he subscribed the Covenant and landed. Whilst Charles was negotiating with the commissioners, the expedition of Montrose, which he had encouraged but afterwards disowned, had come to an end by the capture of its gallant leader in Caithness. He was executed in Edinburgh a month before Charles reached Scotland.

Alarmed at the prospect of another Scottish invasion, Cromwell with wonderful rapidity transferred his forces from Ireland, and within a month after Charles landed crossed the Tweed and advanced to Edinburgh. Baffled in all attempts against the town by the tactics of David

Leslie, the nephew of Leven, he was forced from want of supplies to retire. His retreat was nearly cut off, but he gained an unexpected victory at Dunbar (3d September 1650) over that able general, who had been induced by the over-confidence of the ministers in his camp to descend from the Doon Hill and attack the English on level ground, So complete was the defeat that the south of Scotland fell into Cromwell's hands. Meantime Charles had attempted to escape from the restraints of the Presbyterian camp by "the Start," as it was called, from Perth to Clova, where he hoped to raise the loyal Highlanders ; but, not getting the support expected, he returned. In the beginning of next year, after renewing his subscription to the Covenant and submitting to the imposition of a day of fasting and humiliation on account of the sins of his family, he was crowned at Scone on Ist January 1651. Argyll, still the leader of the Covenanters, placed the crown on his head, a circumstance which he recalled when he lost his own. The invasion of England was now determined on,! and, Cromwell having been unable to intercept the royal army, it advanced as far as Worcester. Here, after effecting a junction with Fleetwood, Cromwell with a much smaller force routed the king's army on the anniversary of Dun- bar. Charles had a hairbreadth escape from capture, and after many adventures crossed from Brighton to France. The last great battle of the Civil War placed England in the hands of the army and its general.

Scotland offered more resistance; but Monk, whom Monk's

Cromwell had left in command, stormed Dundee and terri- oe] ration.

fied the other towns into submission. Although a nomina union was proclaimed and Scotland was allowed members in the English parliament, it was really governed as a conquered country. In 1653 the general assembly was summarily dissolved by Colonel Cotterel. Next year Monk was sent by the Protector to quell a Royalist rising, which, first under the earl of Glencairn and afterwards under Middleton, a soldier of fortune, began to show head in the Highlands. Monk, as usual, carried out effectually the work he was sent for and, partly by an indemnity which many leading Royalists accepted and partly by the defeat of Middleton at Lochgarry (25th July 1654), reduced the Highlands. He also dispersed the

general assembly, which made another attempt to sit. Strong forts were built at Leith, Ayr, Inverness, and Glasgow, and Monk

with an army of 10,000 men garrisoned the country. A Protect- council of state, containing only two Scottish members, was orate of

7

appointed, but matters of importance were referred to Scotland.

Cromwell and his English council. The administration of justice was committed to four English and three Scottish judges in place of the Court of Session, with the view of introducing English law. The use of Latin in legal writs was abolished. A sequestration court to deal with the forfeited estates sat at Leith. A separate commission was issued for the administration of criminal justice, and theft and highway robbery were stringently inquired into

1 With the view of procuring forces for the expedition, a reconcilia- tion was effected between the Royalists and the more moderate Cove- nanters by a resolution to the effect that all persons not excommunicated should be allowed to serve in the army. This new party, now called ' Resolutioners," was practically the same as that formerly known as the " Engagers."" A minority, on the other hand, became known as the "Protestors" or " Remonstrants" (compare vol. xix. p. 683). This division of the Covenanters into a moderate and an extreme section continued throughout the whole of the 17th century. The Engagers and Resolutioners were the ancestors of the Established Presbyterian Church; the Protestors or Remonstrants of the Seceders or Dissenting churches, each of which maintained with unabated confidence, however small its numbers, that it was the true church of Scotland, the only church really faithful to the Covenant and Christ as the head of the church. Both parties for long regarded Episcopalians and Romanists alike as "' malignants," standing without the pale of the chureh, with whom no compromise could be made.*

| Restora-

LATER STUARTS. |

and punished. In the church the Presbyterian form of service and the system of presbyteries and synods were allowed to continue, but the stipends of ministers depended on their being approved by a commission appointed by Cromwell. Justices of the peace were introduced for local business. Free trade and an improved postal system be- tween the two countries were established. The universities were visited. In all departments of government there was vigour and the spirit of reform, so that it was admitted even by opponents that the eight years of Cromwell's usurpation were a period of peace and prosperity. There was undoubtedly one exception. The taxation was severe. A land-tax of £10,000 a month, afterwards reduced to £6000, and levied upon the valued rent under a valuation of Charles, far exceeded any subsidy before granted to the crown, Customs and also excise duties, recently intro- duced from England, were diligently levied ; so also were the rents of the crown and bishops' lands. Altogether it was estimated that a revenue of £143,000 was collected in Scotland. But this had to be supplemented by an equal sum from England to meet an expenditure of £286,000. As nearly the whole was spent in Scotland and the burden of taxation fell on the upper classes, the nation generally did not feel it so much as might have been expected. It was a maxim of Cromwell's policy to improve the condition of the commons, and in one of his last speeches he claimed in memorable words to have effected this in Scotland. In this respect the Commonwealth and protectorate continued the political effect of the Reformation. The commonalty for the first time since the War of Independence acquired a consciousness of its existence and hope for the future.

Union of Cromwell, like former powerful rulers, aimed at uniting Seottish Scotland with England, but his proposals in this direction

anc English parlia- ments.

tion.

were premature. To Barebones's Parliament (1653), which met after the dissolution of the Long Parliament, five Scottish members were summoned, there being 134 from England, Wales, and Ireland. By the Instrument of Government and an ordinance following on it, Scotland was granted 30, while England had 400 members; but only 20 Scottish attended the

parliament of 1654, and care was taken by Monk that they should be men attached to Cromwell's interest. When in his second parliament in 1656 he tried the experiment of a House of Lords, three Scotsmen were summoned, the quota of members to the Commons remaining as before. Cromwell's idea of a parliament was an assembly to ratify, noteto discuss, his measures, and this, like his other parliaments, was speedily dissolved. Had it continued the Scottish representatives would have had little weight. Scotland continued to be governed by the council of state. On the death of the Protector his son Richard was proclaimed his successor in Scotland as well as in England, and 30 members were again returned to the new parliament, which, however, was almost immediately afterwards dissolved. The Re- storation soon followed, though in Scotland there was no need of it, for Charles II. was already king. However beneficial the rule of Cromwell may be deemed, it had a fatal defect in the eyes of a people proud of their freedom. It was iniposed and maintained by force. His death and the restoration of the ancient line of kings were looked on as a deliverance from oppression.

The hopes of the Scots from Charles II. were doomed to speedy disappointment. So far from being grateful for the support they had given him in adversity, he looked back with disgust, as his grandfather had done, on the time when he was under the yoke of the Presbyterian ministers. Cromwell had shown the possibility of govern- ing Scotland by military force and of raising a consider- able revenue from it, and Charles took advantage of both lessons. From this date rather than from the earlier or

later union Scottish history assumes a provincial character. 1654-1664.

Scotland was governed without regard to its interest or wishes according to the royal pleasure or the advice of the nobles who for the time had the ear of the king. The power of the clergy had been broken by Cromwell's policy and their own divisions, The party of the Resolutioners or moderate Presbyterians, some of whom now leant to Episco- pacy, and the party of the Remonstrants were still irrecon- cilable, and their mutual hatred

rendered the task of government easier. The burghs were not yet sufficiently organized to be a power in the state, and the nobles again resumed their old position as leaders with no rivals, for the bishops were shorn of their revenues and dependent

on royal favour. For the first two years after the Restora- Govern- tion the government of Scotland was in the hands of ment of

Middleton, who had been created an earl. The measures of retaliation were few but signal. Argyll was tried and beheaded on a charge of treason, which could not have been established but for the treachery of Monk, who gave up private letters written to him when they both were sup- porting the Commonwealth. Guthrie, a leading minister of the Remonstrants, was hanged. Johnston of Warriston, two years later, was brought back from France and exe- cuted. No hesitation was shown as to the mode of governing Scotland. Parliament, under the presidency of Middleton, passed the Rescissory Act, annulling the Acts of all parliaments since 1640, declaring the Covenant no longer binding, and imposing an oath on all persons in office, not only of allegiance but of acknowledgment of the royal prerogative restored in all its fulness over all persons and in all causes.

Middle- ton.

In August Lauderdale, who Restora-

acted as secretary for Scotland in London, wrote to the nee of privy council announcing the royal intention to restore eo Episcopacy, and, regardless of his oath, Charles sanctioned

this by the first Act of the parliament of 1662. James Sharp, minister of Crail, who had been sent on behalf of the Resolutioners to Charles before his return, allowed himself to be easily converted to Episcopacy and was re- warded by his appointment as archbishop of St Andrews ; his example was followed by other ministers of the same party. But the majority and all the Remonstrants stood firm; 350 were deprived of their livings, each of which became a centre of disaffection towards the Government, while their attachment to the Covenant was every day strengthened by persecution. The Covenant and Solemn League and Covenant were declared unlawful oaths,

and all persons speaking or writing against the royal supre- macy in matters ecclesiastical were incapacitated from office. Middleton had the immediate responsibility for these measures, and the condemnation and forfeiture of the new earl of Argyll, whose estates he coveted, under the old law against leasing-making increased the hatred with which he was regarded. His fall was due to an attempt to supplant his rival Lauderdale by the Act of Billeting, under which the Scottish parliament named by ballot twelve persons with Lauderdale at their head as incapable of holding public office. This and other Acts were carried out without the previous consent of Charles ; Lauderdale persuaded Charles that his personal authority was in danger, and Middleton was called to court and sent as governor to Tangier, where he soon after died. The earl of Rothes was now appointed commissioner, but the chief influence was in the hands of Lauderdale, who con- tinued to act as Scottish secretary in London.

The change in its rulers brought no relief to Scotland. Severe The declaration that the Covenants were illegal oaths was treat-

re-enacted and imposed on all persons in office who ha not yet taken it. The old mode of electing the Lords of the Articles, which placed the election in the hands of the bishops, the nominees of the king, was restored. Sharp,

ment of d Cove- nanters.

1664-1681.

516

not warned by the fate of Laud, procured the restora- tion of the Court of High Commission to enforce the laws against ecclesiastical offenders. Fines were imposed on all who absented themselves from their parish churches or attended the sermons of the deposed ministers. Sir James Turner was sent by the privy council to the western shires to prevent conventicles and field preaching and to enforce the law as to conformity ; and his exactions, with the burden of maintaining his soldiers quartered upon all persons suspected of favouring the ousted ministers, led to risings in Galloway, Clydesdale, and Ayr. With their ministers and a few of the gentry at their head the Covenanters marched to Edinburgh, but were defeated at Rullion Green in

the Pentlands by Dalziel, a Scottish officer whom Charles had recalled from the service of the ezar. The executions which followed, and especially that of Hugh M'Kail, a young and enthusiastic preacher, sank deeply into the spirit of the people. He was the first martyr of the Covenant as Wishart had been of the Re- formation. The use of torture, before this rare, now be- came frequent, and bonds of law-burrows were wrested from their original use to compel the principal landowners to be sureties for the peace of the whole district. Large fines continued to be extorted from all persons who re- fused to conform to the ecclesiastical laws. Next year a change in the Scottish administration, the cause of which is not well explained, but which was probably due to the fall of Clarendon and the rise of the Cabal ministry, led to

Policy of a milder but undecided policy in Scotland. Lauderdale,

indul- gence,

one of the Cabal, still directed Scottish affairs, but Rothes and Sharp were treated as responsible for the rising in the west and suspended. An indemnity was offered to all who would appear before the council and subscribe bonds to keep the peace. A rash attempt to assassinate Sharp in Edinburgh prevented this policy from being adhered to in 1668 ; but it was renewed in the following year. An in- dulgence was granted which allowed the deposed ministers who had lived peaceably to return to their manses and glebes, and to receive such a stipend as the privy council might allow. The grace of this concession was undone by a severe Act against conventicles. It favoured a con- ciliatory policy that schemes for union were in the air. Leighton, the good bishop of Dunblane, proposed a union of the churches upon the basis that the bishops were no longer to exercise jurisdiction, but to act only as perpetual moderators of presbyteries, subject to censure by the synods, and that ministers should be ordained by the bishops, but with consent of the presbyters. There was a meeting at Holyrood with some of the leading ministers, but they would listen to no compromise. The name of bishop was hateful whatever were his functions. It may be doubted whether Charles and his English advisers would have submitted to a curtailment of the bishop's office and dignity. The subject of the union of the kingdoms was again brought forward in the parliament of

1669, to which Lauderdale was sent as commissioner; and though it was not well received commissioners were appointed in the following year, who went to London in autumn to dis- cuss with English commissioners certain specified points proposed by the king. After several meetings the con- ference broke up in consequence of a demand by the Scottish members that Scotland should have the same number of members in the united as in its own parliament. The arbitrary government favoured by the want of a settled constitution in Scotland was more to the taste of the king and his advisers. Lauderdale openly boasted, as James VI. had done, that nothing could be proposed in the Scot- tish parliament except what the king through the Lords of the Articles approved. The "indulgence" entirely failed of the desired effect. The ministers who took advantage of

it were despised by the people, who continued to attend the conventicles. In 1672 an Act was passed punishing preachers at such conventicles with death and imposing fines, imprisonment, and exile for having children baptized by deprived ministers and for absence for three Sundays from the parish church. In 1675 letters of interecommun- ing were issued against about a hundred of those who attended the conventicles, both ministers and laymen, for- bidding their friends and relations to have any dealings with them under the same penalties as if they had them- selves been present at the conventicles. In 1678 Mitchell, a fanatical preacher, who had ten years before attempted the life of Sharp and mortally wounded the bishop of Orkney, was tried and executed. The feeling of the times, and the cruel manner in which a confession had been wrung from him by torture, led to his being regarded as amartyr. Prior to this year 17,000 persons had suffered fines or imprisonment for attending conventicles. A host of 10,000 men, chiefly Highlanders, was quartered in the western shires in order to force the landowners who favoured the Covenanters to enter into bonds of law-burrows.

It appears to have been the design of Lauderdale, Rising of who still governed Scotland absolutely through the privy 1679.

council (no parliament having been summoned since 1674), to force the Scots to rebel. "When I was once saying to him," relates Burnet, "' Was that a time to drive them into a rebellion?' ' Yes,' said he, ' would to God they would rebel that he might bring over an army of Irish Papists to cut their throats.'" One part of his wish was speedily fulfilled. In 1679 the rebellion so long smoulder- ing broke out. The murder of Sharp (3d May) by Hack- ston of Rathillet and a small band of Covenanters was followed by a still more stringent proclamation against field conventicles, which were declared treasonable, and the possession of arms was prohibited. This severity provokeda rising in the west. A small party led by Hamilton, a youth educated by Bishop Burnet at Glasgow, who had joined the Covenanters, burnt at Rutherglen the statutes and acts of privy council on the anniversary of the Restoration, and being allowed to gather numbers defeated Graham of Claverhouse at Loudon Hill (Ist June). The duke of Monmouth, the favourite natural son of Charles, sent with troops from England to suppress the rising, gained an easy victory at Bothwell Bridge (22d June). His desire was to follow it up by a policy of clemency, and a new indulgence was issued, but its effect was counteracted by Lauderdale. All officers, ministers, and landowners, as well as those who had taken part in the rising and did not surrender within a short space, were excepted from the indulgence. Several preachers were executed and many persons sent to the colonies, while fines and forfeitures multiplied. A new and fiercer phase of the rebellion was originated by Cargill and Cameron, two preachers who escaped at Bothwell Bridge, and, assembling their followers at Sanquhar, pub- lished a declaration renouncing allegiance to Charles as a perjured king. They were soon surprised and Cameron was killed, but Cargill continued to animate his followers, called the "Society Men" or '"'Cameronians," by his preaching, and at a conventicle at Torwood in Ayrshire excommunicated the king, the duke of York, Lauderdale, and Rothes.

The duke of York, who had become a Roman Catholic Continu-

during his residence abroad, was now sent to Scotland, partly to avoid the discussion raised by his conversion as to his exclusion from the succession. During a short stay of three months he astonished the Scots by the mildness of his administration, but on his return in the following year he revealed his

true character. The privy council renewed its proclamations against conventicles and increased the fines, which were levied by the sheriff or other magistrate under the pain of liability if they were remiss in their

Killing Times.

James VII.

LATER STUARTS. |

exaction, Military commissions were issued to Claver- house and other officers in the southern and western shires

empowering them to quarter their troops on recusants and administer martial law. Torture was freely resorted to by the privy council and the duke himself took pleasure in A parliament summoned in 1681, after passing a general Act against Popery to lull suspicion, pro- ceeded to declare the succession to be in the ordinary line of blood and unalterable on account of difference of religion The Test Act was then carried, not Its ambiguous and contradictory clauses make it an admirable instrument of tyranny, a shelter for the lax and a terror to the upright Tt was at once enforced, and Argyll, who de- clared he took it only so far as it was consistent with itself

witnessing it.

by any future law. without many attempts to modify it.

conscience.

and the Protestant religion, was tried and condemned to death for treason, but escaped from prison to Holland. Dalrymple, the president of the Court of Session, and many leading Presbyterian ministers and gentry followed his ex- ample, and found a hospitable refuge in the republic which first acknowledged toleration in religion. They there met a similar band of English exiles. The next two years were spent in plots, of which the centre was in Holland, with branches in London and Edinburgh. The failure of the Rye House Plot in 1683 led to the execution of Russell and Sidney and the arrest of Spence, a retainer of Argyll, Carstares, Baillie of Jerviswood, and

Campbell of Cess- nock. Against Campbell the proof of complicity failed, and Spence and Carstares, though cruelly tortured, revealed nothing of moment. Baillie, however, was condemned and executed upon slender proof. The Cameronians, who kept alive in remote districts the spirit of rebellion, were treated with ruthless cruelty. Although doubt has been cast on the death of Brown the carrier, shot down in cold blood by Claverhouse, and the Wigtown martyrs, two poor women tied to a stake and drowned in the Bay of Luce, the account of Wodrow has, after a keen discussion, been sustained as accurate. The conduct of the Government in Scotland gained for this period the name of the " Killing Times." The short reign of James VII. is the saddest period in the history of Scotland. He succeeded in the brief space of three years in fanning the revolutionary elements in both England and Scotland into a flame which he was powerless to quench. He declined to take the Scottish coronation oath, which contained a declaration in favour of the church then established. A submissive parliament held (28th April 1685) under the duke of Queensberry as commissioner not only overlooked this but expressed its loyalty in terms acknowledging the king's absolute supremacy. The excise was granted to the crown for ever and the land- tax to James for life. The law against conventicles was even extended to those held in houses, if five persons besides the family attended domestic worship ; while, if the meeting was outside the house, at the door or. windows, it was to be deemed a field conventicle, punishable by death. The class of persons subject to the test was enlarged. Undeterred or provoked by these terrors of the law, Argyll made a descent upon the western Highlands and tried to raise his clansmen, but, being badly supported by the officers under him, his troops were dispersed and he himself taken prisoner, when he was brought to Edinburgh, condemned, and executed under his former sentence. Next year Perth the lord chancellor, Melfort his brother, and the earl of Moray became converts to the Popish faith. The duke of Queensberry, who did not follow their example, was enabled only by the most servile submission in other points to the royal wishes to save himself and his party in the privy council from dismissal. James sent a letter to parliament offering free trade with England and an indem- nity for political offences, in return for which it was required

that the Catholics should be released from the test and the 1681-1689.

penal laws. But the estates refused to be bribed. Even the Lords of the Articles declined to propose a repeal of the Test Act. The burghs almost for the first time in a Scottish parliament showed their independence. 'The refractory parliament was at once adjourned and soon after dissolved, and James had recourse in Scotland as in England to the dispensing power. Under a pretended prerogative he issued a proclamation through the privy council, granting a full indulgence to the Romanists, and by another deprived the burghs of the right of electing magistrates. A more limited toleration was granted to Quakers and Presby- terians, by which they were allowed to worship according to their consciences in private houses. This was followed by a second and a third indulgence, which at last gave full liberty of worship to the Presbyterians and was accepted by most of their ministers ; but the laws against field con- venticles continued to be enforced. In February 1688 Renwick was executed under them at Edinburgh, A band of his followers, including women and children, were marched north and imprisoned with great cruelty in Dunnottar,

Meantime the rapid series of events which led to the Revolu- Revolution in England had reached its climax in the trial tion of and acquittal of the seven bishops. William of Orange, who aaa had long watched the progress of his father-in-law's tyranny, j saw that the moment had come when almost all classes in England as well as Scotland would welcome him as a deliverer. But the Revolution was differently received in each part of the United Kingdom. In England there was practically no opposition; in Catholic Ireland it was established by force. Scotland was divided. The Catholics, chiefly in the Highlands, and the Episcopalians led by their bishops adhered to James and formed the Jacobite party, which kept up for half a century a struggle for the principle of legitimacy. The Presbyterians—probably the most numerous, certainly the most powerful party, especi- ally in the Lowlands and burghs—supported the new settle- ment, which for the first time gave Scotland a constitu- tional or limited monarchy. Shortly before his flight James had summoned his Scottish troops to England ; but Douglas, brother of the duke of Queensberry, their com- mander-in-chief,

went over to William. Claverhouse, now Pacifica- Viscount Dundee, the second in command, who had the tion of spirit of his kinsman Montrose, after in vain urging James or to fight for his crown, returned to Scotland, followed by ‘ some thirty horsemen. In Edinburgh the duke of Gordon still held the castle for James, while the convention parlia- ment, presided over by the duke of Hamilton, was debating on what terms the crown should be offered to William. Dundee passed through Edinburgh unmolested, and en- couraged Gordon to hold out, while he himself gathered the Highland chiefs round his standard at Lochaber. Mackay, a favourite general of William, sent to oppose him, was defeated at Killiecrankie (29th July 1689), where the spirited leadership of Dundee and the dash of the Highlanders’ attack gained the day; but success was turned into defeat by a bullet which killed Dundee almost at the moment of victory. No successor appeared to take his place and keep the chiefs of the clans together. The Cameronians, organized into a regiment under Cleland, repulsed Cannon, the commander of the Highland army, at Dunkeld, and the success of Livingston, who defeated the remnant under Cameron and Buchan at the Haughs of Cromdale on the Spey, ended the short and desultory war. The castle of Edinburgh had been surrendered a month before the battle of Killiecrankie. Three forts, at Fort William, Fort Augustus, and Inverness, sufficed to keep the Highlands from rising for the next two reigns.

Meantime the convention parliament in Edinburgh had

eo ff

an

1689-1705.

William III.’s accept- ance of Scottish crown.

His gov- ernment of Scot-

land.

carried the necessary measures for the transfer of the government of Scotland to William and Mary. It declared in bolder terms than the English parliament that James had forfeited the crown and that the throne was vacant. The fifteen articles which contained the reasons for this resolution were included in a Declaration and Claim' of Right,—a parallel to the English Declaration and Bill of Rights. Besides the declarations against the Papists with which it commenced—that no Papist could be king or queen, that proclamations allowing mass to be said, Jesuit schools and colleges to be erected, and Popish books to be printed were contrary to law—it detailed each of the un- constitutional acts of James and pronounced it contrary to law. This formidable list included imposing oaths without the authority of parliament; grants without the consent of parliament ; employing officers of the army as judges throughout the kingdom; imposing exorbitant fines ; imprisoning persons without expressing the reason, and delaying trials; forfeiture upon insufficient grounds, especi- ally that of Argyll; the nomination by the king of the magistrates of burghs ; sending of royal letters to courts of justice with reference to pending cases ; granting pro- tections for debt; forcing the lieges to depone against themselves in capital crimes; the use of torture without evidence in ordinary crimes; quartering of an army in time of peace upon any part of the kingdom ; the use of law-burrows at the king's instance ; putting garrisons in private houses in time of peace without the consent of the owners and of parliament; and fining husbands for their wives. It closed with asserting that Prelacy and the superi- ority of any office in the church above presbyters were insupportable grievances and ought to be abolished, and that it was the right and privilege of subjects to protest to parliament for "remeid" of law and to petition the king, and that for redress of grievances it was necessary parlia- ment should frequently be called, with freedom of speech secured to members. As a conclusion from these premises the estates resolved that William and Mary should be de- clared king and queen of Scotland during their lives, but with the right of exercising regal power in William alone as long as he lived. After their death the crown was to pass to the heirs of the queen's body, and failing her to Anne of Denmark and her heirs, failing whom to the heirs of William. Commissioners were despatched to London to present the declaration and statement of grievances and take the royal oath to the acceptance of the crown on their terms. This was done at Whitehall in the following March (1689); but William, before taking the

oath, required an assurance that persecution for religious opinion was not intended and made a declaration in favour of toleration. By desire of William the convention was superseded by a parliament which met in June; but, with the exception of an Act abolishing Prelacy, it transacted no business of importance. The parliament of 1690 was more fruitful. It abolished the committee of the Articles, which had become an abuse inconsistent with the freedom of parlia- ment, and, while it retained a committee on motions and overtures in its place, declared that the estates might deal with any matter without referring it to this committee. The Act of Supremacy was rescinded. The Presbyterian ministers deposed since 1661 were restored and the West- minster Confession approved, though not imposed as a test except on professors. With more difficulty a solution was found for the question of church government. The Presby- terian Church' was re-established with the Confession as its formula, and patronage was placed in the heritors and elders with a small compensation to the patrons. These prudent measures were due to the influence of Carstares, the chief adviser of William in Scottish ecclesiastical matters. He was not so well advised in the conduct of

the civil government by the master of Stair, who became sole secretary for Scotland. The proclamation for calling out the militia may have been a necessary precaution, but it raised much opposition amongst the landed gentry, and

the militia was not then embodied. The massacre of the Glencoe,

Macdonalds at Glencoe by Campbell of Glenlyon was con- trary to the spirit of the indemnity offered to the High- landers. While the treachery with which it was executed may be attributed to Glenlyon, it was too plainly proved before the committee of inquiry which the Scottish parlia- ment insisted on that it had been designed by Stair and Breadalbane, and, now that the whole documents have been published, it is also proved that it had been sanctioned by William. It was intended to strike terror; but its partial success was dearly bought, for it kept alive the Jacobite

disaffection and gained for it much sympathy. The unfair Darien,

treatment of the Scots in the matters of free trade and navigation, in which the new Government appeared to follow the policy of Charles rather than that of Cromwell, and acted with an exclusive regard to the prejudices and sup- posed interests of England, reached a climax in the abandon- ment of the Scottish settlement at Darien when attacked by the Spaniards. The over-sanguine hopes of Paterson and the Scottish colonists and capitalists who supported his enterprise, so suddenly transformed into a financial disaster overwhelming to a poor country, accompanied by the loss of many lives, embittered the classes on which the Revolution settlement mainly depended for its support. It was the anxious wish of William to have effected the legislative union; but, although he twice attempted it, the last time a month before his death, the temper of the English parliament and of the Scottish people appeared to give small chance of its realization.

9. The Union and its Consequences.—The reign of Anne, Union of so far as it relates to Scotland, centred in the accomplish- parlia- In spite of the disparity of num-™:*

ment of the union. bers, both nations now met to treat on equal terms. Still there were grave difficulties, and it required all the wisdom of the ministers of the early years of Anne, aided by the glory of Marlborough's arms, to overcome national preju- dices and secure an object plainly for the benefit of both, The memories of Glencoe and Darien and the refusal of equal rights of trade led the Scottish parliament, the year after Anne's accession, to pass an Act of Security, by which, if the queen died without issue, the Scottish estates were to name a successor from the Protestant descendants of the royal line; but the successor to the English crown was expressly excluded unless there were "such conditions of government settled and enacted as may secure the honour and sovereignty of the crown and kingdom, the freedom, frequency, and power of parliament, the reli- gious freedom and trade of the nation from English or any foreign influence." Political economy had not yet taught the reciprocal advantage of free trade, and the English jealousy of Scottish traders was intense. An incident about this time warned the English ministers that Scot- land might easily revert to its old attitude of enmity. A Scottish ship of the African or Darien Company

having been seized in the Thames at the suit of the English East India Company, the "Worcester," an English East India- man, was taken in the Forth by way of retaliation, and Green, its captain, with two other officers, was executed at Leith on a charge of piracy insufficiently proved. An attempt had been already made to complete the union by a.commission, which sat frofm 10th November 1702 to 3d February 1705 ; but this miscarried through the refusal to grant free trade between the kingdoms. But again in 1705 the English parliament sanctioned the appointment of other commissioners, and new officers of state were nominated for Scotland with the express purpose of press-

Terms of compromise.

treaty of union.

Its un- popular- ity in Scotland,

UNION. |

ing the scheme forward in the Scottish parliament. Though opposed on contrary grounds by the Jacobites and the party of Fletcher of Salton, the Scottish ministry of Queensberry succeeded, by the aid of a third party nick-named the "'Squadrone Volante," in getting the consent of parliament to the appointment of commissioners by the crown. The Act expressly excepted the church from the matters with which the commission was to deal. The com- missioners, thirty-one from each country, met at Whitehall on 16th April and concluded their sittings on 23d July. The nomination by the crown had secured persons anxious to accomplish the union; experience had disclosed the cause of former failures, and the commissioners were guided by the statesmanship of Somers. It had been recognized from the first that the only settlement of the ecclesiastical question possible was to leave to each country its own church. It was wisely decided to treat the law and the courts in the same manner. These two subjects being re- moved from the scope of the treaty narrowed the debates to four main points,—the succession, trade, taxation, and the composition of the future parliament. The Scottish commissioners yielded on the first, the English on the second, and the remaining two were adjusted by a skilful The chief articles of the treaty were the settlement of both crowns according to the English Act of

Succession on Anne and her descendants, and failing them on the electress Sophia and the Hanoverian line; the establishment of free trade between England and Scotland, and the admission of the Scots to equal privileges as regards trade with other countries ; the national debt and taxation were adjusted by the imposition on Scotland of a moderate share (£48,000) of the land-tax, of which England was still to bear £200,000, and there was to be a uniform rate of custom and excise, Scotland being compensated by an equivalent of about £400,000 for becoming liable to a proportion of the English national debt, which already amounted to £16,000,000 ; forty-five representatives of Scotland were to be admitted to the House of Commons and sixteen elected peers to the House of Lords. Although the terms were on the whole favourable to Scotland, their announcement was received with dissatisfaction, especially in Edinburgh. The loss was immediate, from the aboli- tion of an independent parliament, the reduction of the capital to a provincial town, and the increase of taxation to pay the growing national debt. The gain was in the future and in part doubtful. No one contemplated the rapid and enormous extension of trade. A proud people was unwilling to admit the advantage consequent upon free intercourse with a country in which wealth and civiliza- tion were more widespread. It had a natural attachment to its own institutions, though these were less popular than the English. It feared that, notwithstanding the most solemn guarantee, neither its church nor its laws could resist the influence of a country so much larger and more populous, in which henceforth was to be the sole seat of government, and that much of its wealth and talent would be attracted to the south and become English. The last parliament of Scotland was preceded by a stormy agita- tion against the union, and began its session with numer- ous addresses praying that the treaty should not be ratified, while none were presented in its favour. The popular feeling was embodied in the speeches of Lord Belhaven from a sentimental and patriotic point of view, and of Fletcher of Salton, who represented the democratic or re- publican element latent in a portion of the nation, But common sense aided by ministerial influence prevailed. The vote on the first article was prudently taken with a proviso that it was to be dependent on the rest being carried, but it really decided the fate of the measure. The Government commanded a large majority of the peers,

perhaps more amenable to influence. They were accused by the Jacobites of being bribed, but the sums received in name of payment of arrears of pension and of debts were too small to justify the charge. The lesser barons or county members and the representatives of the burghs were nearly equally divided ; but there was a majority of four of each of these estates in favour of the article. The whole estates voted together and the total majority was thirty-five. This was increased when the last vote was taken to 41, the numbers being 110 for and 69 against, and the Act of Ratification to take effect from lst May 1707 was carried. The Presbyterian Church received an additional guarantee in an Act passed for "securing the Protestant religion and the Presbyterian Establishment."

In the English parliament there was less serious opposi- tion, proceeding chiefly from the High Church party, which was conciliated by an Act for the security of the Church of England. On 6th March 1707 the Scottish and English Acts ratifying the union received the royal assent.

Two Acts of the British parliament naturally followed the Act of Union. The Scottish privy council was abol- ished in 1708. A secretary of state for Scotland continued until 1746 to manage the Scottish department in London ; but the lord advocate, the adviser of the crown on all legal matters both in London and Edinburgh, gradually acquired a large, and after the suppression of the office of the Scottish secretary a paramount influence in purely Scottish affairs, though he was nominally a subordinate of the home secretary.1 In 1709 the law of treason was assimilated to that of England, being made more definite and less liable to extension by construction in the criminal courts. In the later years of Anne, when after the fall of Marlborough power passed from the Whig to the Tory party, two statutes were passed of a different character. Patronage was restored in the Presbyterian Church not- withstanding the protests of the assembly, and proved a fertile source of discord. A limited toleration Act in favour of the Episcopalians, permitting them to worship in private chapels, was opposed by the Presbyterians but carried.

With the union of the parliaments Scotland lost its legislative independence. Its representation in the British parliament for more than a century, based

on the freehold franchise in the counties and in the burghs controlled by town councils, which were close corporations, was a repre- sentation of special classes and interests rather than of the nation. It almost appeared as if the prophecy of Belhaven would be accomplished and there would be an end of an old song. But Scottish history was not destined yet to end. The character of the people, though their language and manners gradually became more like those of Eng- land, remained distinct. They retained a separate church and clergy. Independent courts and a more cosmopolitan system of law opened a liberal profession and afforded a liberal education to youthful ambition. A national system of parish schools, burgh schools, and universities, though inadequately endowed and far from reaching the ideal of Knox and Melville, gave opportunities to the lower as well as the higher classes of receiving at a small cost an educa- tion suited for practical uses and the business of everyday life. The Scot had been from the earliest times more in- clined to travel, to migrate, to colonize than the English- man, not that he had a less fervent love of home, but a soil comparatively poor made it necessary for many to seek their fortune abroad. This tendency which had led Scottish monks, soldiers, and professors to embrace foreign service, now found new openings in trade, commerce, colonial enter- prise in America, the East, and the West Indies, in the southern hemisphere and the exploration of unknown parts

1 In 1885 a secretary for Scotland was again appointed with a separate office at Dover House, London.

1705-1709.

Legisla- tion con- sequent on union,

Other results of union

to Scot- land.

1709-1746. of the globe. Accustomed to poverty, Scottish emigrants acquired habits of frugality, industry, and perseverance, and were rewarded by success in most of their undertak- ings. Nor, if war be regarded as

necessary to the continued existence of a nation, was it altogether absent, but the cause with which the name of Scotland became identified was the losing one. The two rebellions proved the devoted loyalty which still attached many of the Highland clans, the Catholics, and some of the Episcopalians to the descend- ants of the Stuarts. But that in 1715, preceded by an abortive attempt in 1708, was put down by a single battle; Sheriffmuir, if it could scarcely be claimed as a victory by Argyll, led to the speedy dispersal of the clans which had gathered round the standard of Mar. Thirty years later the romantic rising of the Highlanders under the Young Pretender found the Government unprepared. Once more for a brief space Holyrood was a royal court. The defeat of Cope at Prestonpans and the rapid march of the Scottish army, slightly reinforced by Catholics from the northern

Jaeobite rebel- lions.

and midland shires of England, to Derby, by which it cut.

off the duke of Newcastle's forces from the capital, made London tremble. Divided counsels, the absence of any able leader, and the smallness of their number (not more than 5000) prevented the daring policy of attacking London, which Charles himself favoured, and a retreat was deter- mined on. It was skilfully effected, and on 26th December the little army, which had left Edinburgh on 31st October and reached Derby on 4th December, arrived in Glasgow. It was not favourably received, the south-west of Scotland being the district least inclined to the Stuarts, and it marched on Stirling to assist Lord John Drummond and Lord Strathallan, who had commenced its siege, which General Hawley threatened to raise. His defeat at Falkirk was the last success of the Jacobites. The duke of Cum- berland was sent to command the royal forces, and Charles Edward was forced by Lord George Murray and the High- land chiefs to abandon the siege of Stirling and retreat to Inverness. He was at once pursued by the duke, and his defeat at Culloden (16th April 1746) scattered his followers and compelled him to seek safety in flight to the Hebrides, from which, after five months' wanderings, he escaped to France. The last rebellion within Great Britain was put down with severity. Many soldiers taken in arms were shot and no consideration was shown to the wounded. The chief officers and

*even some privates taken prisoners were tried and executed at various places in the north of England. The earls of Cromarty and Kilmarnock and Lord Balmerino were reserved for the judgment of their peers in London, and having pleaded guilty were beheaded at Tower Hill. The crafty Lovat, who had avoided appearing in arms, but was really at the bottom of the rising, though le pretended to serve both sides, was the last to suffer. An Act of indemnity was passed a few weeks after his execution. But effective measures were taken to prevent any renewal of the rebellion. The estates and titles of all who had been privy to it were forfeited. An Act was passed prohibiting the use of arms and the Highland dress ; and the abolition of the military tenure of ward-holding, un- *forigately preserved at the union, rooted out the remnants "of feudal and military power till then left in the hands of the nobles and chiefs. These changes in the law had the willing consent of the Lowland and burghal population in Scotland, to whom the lawless and freebooting habits of the Highlanders had been a cause of frequent loss and constant alarm. Somewhat later the masterly policy of Pitt enlisted the Scottish Celts in the service of the crown by forming the Highland regiments. The recollection of Glencoe and Culloden was forgotten after the common victories of the British arms in India, the Peninsula, and Waterloo. In one direction the Jacobite cause survived*

—

SCOTLAYWD

|

(HISTORY.

its defeat. Poetry seized on its romantic incidents, ideal- ized the young prince who at least tried to win his father's crown, satirized the foreign and German, the Whig and

Covenanting, elements opposed to the Stuart restoration, and substituted loyalty for patriotism. Self-sacrifice and

devotion to a cause believed right, though deserted by

fortune (qualities rare amongst the mass of any nation), dignified the Jacobites like the cavaliers with some of the nobler traits of chivalry, and the Jacobite ballads have their place in literature as one of the last expiring notes of medieval romance. Music and tradition fortu- nately preserved their charm before the cold hand of history traced the sad end of Charles Edward, the pensioner of foreign courts, wasting his declining years in ignoble plea- sures. It might be hard to say whether the first Hanover- ians or the last Stuarts least deserved that men should fight and. die for them ; but the former represented order, pro- gress, civil and religious liberty; the latter were identified with the decaying legend of the divine right of kings and the claim of the Roman Church not merely to exclusive orthodoxy but to temporal power and jurisdiction inconsist- ent with the independence of nations and freedom of con- science. Although a larger minority in Scotland than in England clung to the traditions of the past, an overwhelm- ing majority of the nation, including all its progressive elements, were in favour of the new constitution and the change of dynasty.

During the remaining half of the 18th century and the commence- Progress ment of the 19th a period of prosperity was enjoyed by Scotland, during and the good effects of the union, intercepted by the rebellions, 19thcen- became visible. The Scottish nation, without losing its indivi- tury. duality, was stimulated by contact and friendly rivalry with its English neighbour in the arts of peace. It advanced in intel- lectual as well as material respects more than in any part of its previous history. It became, through commerce, manufactures, and improved agriculture, a comparatively rich instead of a poor country. Skilful engineering made the Clyde a successful com- petitor with the Thames and the Merscy, and Glasgow became one of the most populous cities in Great Britain. The industrial arts made rapid progress, and the fine arts began to flourish. The art of saving capital and using it as a source of credit was reduced to a system. Banks, not unknown in other countries and at an earlier date, are in their modern form a Scottish invention. Besides those which sprang up in Scotland itself, the national banks of England and France owed their origin to two Scotsmen. A safe system of life insurance represented the provident habits and business talents of the nation, Adam Smith shares with the French economists the honour of founding political economy as the science of the wealth of nations. Mental philosophy became a favourite study, and a dis- tinctively

Scottish school produced thinkers who deeply influenced the later systems of the Continent. The history not of Scotland only but of England and some portions of that of Europe were written by Scotsmen in works equal to any cxisting before Gibbon. The dawn of the scientific era of the 19th century was foreshadowed by Scottish men of science, the founders of modern geology, chemistry, anatomy, physiology, and the practice of medicine. in Scotland was made the first of the great line of discoveries in the practical application of science by the use of steam as a motive- power. The same period—so varied were its talents—gave birth to two Scottish poets, of world-wide fame. Burns expressed the feelings and aspirations of the people ; Scott described both in verse and prose their history and the picturesque scenes in which it had been transacted. During the last half-century the material progress continued, but the intellectual was too brilliant to last. The preponderating influence of England even threatened to extin- guish native Scottish genius by centralizing the political and social life of the island in the English capital. Only two changes of importance occurred. The political institutions of Scotland were reformed by a series of Acts which placed the franchise on a broader basis and made the representation of the people real. The Estab- lished Church, already weakened by secessions, was further divided by a disruption largely due to the ignorance of political leaders as to the deep-scated aversion of the nation to any interference with the independence of the church, especially in matters of patronage. Educational reform has also in recent years raised the standard of the universities and schools without injuring their popular eharacter. While it would be incorrect to say that Scotland has had no inde- pendent history since the union, that history must be chiefly read in the annals of its church, its law, and its literature. Its political existence has been absorbed in that of Great Britain. (4. M.)

GEOLOGY. |

ae Oo rian »

521

PART II.—PHYSICAL FEATURES.

Scotland forms the northern portion of Great Britain and is divided from England by the rivers Sark, Liddell, and Kershope (an affluent of the Liddell), the Cheviot Hills, the river Tweed, and the liberties of Berwick. The mainland lies between 58° 40’ 30” (at Dunnet Head, Caithness) and 54° 38’ N. lat. (Mull of Galloway) and 1° 45’ 80” (Peterhead) and 6° 14’ W. long. (Ardnamurchan Point, Argyllshire). Including the islands, the extreme N. lat. is 60° 51' 30” (Outsack, Shetland) and the extreme W. long. 8° 35’ 30” (St Kilda). Its greatest length from north to south, from Durncss in Sutherland to Burrow Head in Wigtownshire, is 272 miles, and the greatest breadth from east to west, from Petcrlead in Aber- deenshire to Applecross in Ross-shire, is 155, while the narrowest part, from Grangemouth in Stirlingshire to Bowling in Dumbarton- shire, is only 304 miles wide. The total area in 1881, according to the Ordnance Survey, was 19,777,490 acres or 30,902 square miles, —the area of foreshore being 310,413 acres or 485 square miles, of water 403,846 acres or 631 square miles, and of land-surface 19,063,231 acres or 29,786 square miles. But of the water area the acreage included under lakes and rivers respectively has not been ascertained.

GEOLOGY.

In the article GroLocy (vol. x.) descriptions will be found of most of the geological formations of Scotland. All that need therefore be inserted here is a succinct summary of these formations with references to the pages of that article where fuller details are given.

The oldest rocks of Scotland and of the British Islands, known as Archean, consist chiefly of gneiss (Fundamental, Lewisian, Hebridian), which varies from a coarsely crystalline granitoid mass to fine schist. The coarse varicties are most abundant, intermingled with bands of hornblende-rock, hornblende-schist, pegmatite, eurite, mica-schist, sericite-schist, and other schistose accompaniments. In a few places limestone has been observed. No trace of any organism has ever been detected in any of these rocks. Over wide areas, particularly on the mainland, the bands of gneiss have a general north-west trend and undulate in frequent plications with variable inclination to north-east and south-west. The largest tract of Archeean rock is that which forms almost the whole of the Outer Hebrides, from Barra

Head to the Butt of Lewis. Other areas more or less widely separated from each other run down the western parts of Sutherland and Ross, and are probably continued at least as far as the Island of Rum. How far Archean rocks reappear to the east of this western belt has not yet been ascertained.

Above the Archean gneiss lies a series of redand chocolate-coloured sandstones, conzlomerates, and breccias (Cambrian or Torridon sandstone), which form a number of detached areas from Cape Wrath down the seaboard of Sutherland and Ross, across Skye, and as far as the Island of Rum (GEoLocy, vol. x. p. 330). They rise into prominent pyramidal mountains, which, as the stratification is usually almost horizontal, present in their terraced sides a singular contrast to the neighbouring heights, composed of highly plicated crystalline schists. In the Torridon district these sandstones can be secn towering bed above bed to a height of about 4000 feet, and their thickness is still greater. They have not yet yielded any recognizable fossil; their geological age is accordingly doubtful, though from their relation to the overlying fossiliferous rocks and from their own lithological characters they have with much prob- ability been classed with the Cambrian system of Wales. They are not met with anywhere else in Scotland than in the north-west Highlands.

Rocks belonging to the Silurian system occur in two distinct regions and in two very strongly contrasted conditions. They constitute nearly the whole of the southern uplands (GroLocy, vol. x. pp. 333, 337). In that belt of country they consist for the most part of greywacke, grit, shale, and other sedimentary rocks, but in the south-west of Ayrshire they include some thick lenti- cular bands of limestone. They have been thrown into many plica- tions, the long axes of which run in a general north-easterly direction. It is this structure which has determined the trend of the southern uplands. The plications of the Highlands and the chief disloca- tions of the country lave followed the same general direction, and hence the parallclism and north-easterly trend of the main topo- graphical features. Abundant fossils in certain parts of the Silurian rocks have shown that representatives of both the Lower and Upper divisions are present. By far the larger part of the uplands belongs to the former. The Upper Silurian shales and sandstones appear only along the northern and southern margins.

In the north-west Highlands the Cambrian red sandstones are overlain unconformably by several hundred feet of white quartzite with annelid tubes, followed by fossiliferous limestones and shalcs (GEoLOGY, vol. x. p. 333). The abundant fossils in these strata prove them to be of Lower Silurian age. It was believed by Murchison that, as these Silurian strata dip conformably below various schists which spread eastwards into the rest of the High- lands, they demonstrate the crystalline rocks of the Highlands to

be of later than Silurian age. Recently, however, the structure of Sutherland has been investigated anew with minute care and the result is to show that the schists believed to overlie the Silurian strata conformably have been really pushed over them and consist in part of the Archean gneiss. It has been ascertained that from the mouth of Loch Erriboll on the north coast of Sutherland south- wards to the Isle of Skye, a distance of more than 100 miles, a gigantic system of earth-movements has taken place, whereby the Silurian, Cambrian, and Archean rocks have been crumpled, inverted, dis-located, and have pushed over each other. In some places the hori- zontal displacement of these shifted masses has been not less than 10 miles. So intense has been the shearing of the rocks that their original structure has in many places been entirely destroyed. They have acquired a new schistosity, which is in a general sense parallel with the bedding of the Silurian rocks to the west of the line of disturbance. Hence the apparent conformability of the schists overlying these rocks. The total thickness of recognizable Silurian strata is about 2000 feet. The rocks that overlie them to the east of the line of disturbance in Suthcrland and Ross are fine flaggy schists, quite unlike any part of the Archzan gneiss and often strangely suggestive of altered sandstones. What are their true age and history remains still to be determined. There can be no doubt, however, that they have acquired their present schistosity since the Lower Silurian period, and hence that the present condi- tion of the metamorphic rocks of the central Highlands does not go back to Archean time. That portions of the Archwan series may have been pushed up in different parts of the Highlands is quite conceivable. But that mnch of the Highlands consists of altered sedimentary rocks like those of the Silurian uplands admits of no question. The solution of this difficult but interesting problem has the most important bearing upon the theory of meta- morphism, but it can only be attained by paticnt and

laborions mapping of the ground such: as is being prosecuted by the Geo-logical Survey.

As Scotland is the typical European region for the Old Red Old Red Sandstone a full account of this series of rocks has already becn Sand- These rocks stone.

given in the article GzoLocy (vol. x. pp. 348, 344). are grouped in two divisions, Lower and Upper, both of which appear to have been deposited in lakes. The Lower, with its abun- dant intercalated lavas and tufts, extends continuously as a broad belt along the northern margin of the midland valley, reappears in detached tracts along the sonthern border, is found again on the south side of the uplands in Berwickshire and the Cheviot Hills, occupies a tract of Lorne in Argyllshire, and on the north side of the Highlands underlies most of the low ground on both sides of the Moray Firth, stretches across Caithness and through nearly the

"whole of the Orkney Islands, and is prolonged into Shetland. The

Upper Old Red Sandstone covers a more restricted space in most of the areas just mentioned, its chief development being on the flanks of the north-eastern part of the sonthern uplands, where it spreads out over the Lammermuir Hills and the valleys of Berwick- shire and Roxburghshire.

The areas occupied by Carboniferous rocks are almost entirely Carbon- restricted to the midland valley, but they are also to be found iferous.

skirting the southern uplands from the mouth of the Tweed to that of the Nith. The subdivisions of this important system, its coal-fields and igneous rocks, have been described in the article GEOLOGY (vol. x. pp. 346, 348, 349).

Rocks assignable to the Permian system occupy only a few small Permian.

areas in Scotland. Extending from Cumberland under the Solway Firth, they fill up the valley of the Nith for a few miles north of Dumfries, and, reappearing again in the same valley a little farther north, run up the narrow valley of the Carron Water to the Lowther Hills. Other detached

tracts of similar rocks cover a considerable space in Annandale, one of them ascending the deep defile at the head of that valley. Another isolated patch occurs among the Lead Hills; and lastly, a considerable space in the heart of the Ayrshire coal-field is occupied by Permian rocks. Throughout these separate basins the prevailing rock is a red sandstone, varied in the narrow valleys with intercalated masses of breccia (GEOLOGY, vol. x. p. 351). There can be no doubt that the valleys in which these patches of red rocks lie already existed in Permian time. They seem then to have been occupied by small lakes or inlets, not unlike fjords. Numerous amphibian tracks have been found in the red sandstone of Annandale and also near Dumfries, but no other traces of the life of the time. One of the most interesting features of the Scottish development of the Permian system is the occurrence of intercalated bands of contemporaneously erupted volcanic rocks in the Carron Water, Nithsdale, and Ayrshire. The actual vents which were the sites of the small volcanoes still remain distinct, and the erupted lavas form high ground in the middle of Ayrshire. i

The Triassic system appears to be only feebly represented in Triassic.

Scotland. To this division of the geological record are assigned the yellow sandstones of Elgin, which have yielded remains of rep-

tiles, but which at the same time cannot be satisfactorily separated from similar underlying strata whieh contain Upper Old Red Sandstone fishes. There occur also below the Lias on some parts of the west coast unfossiliferous red sandstones, conglomerates, and breecias which may possibly belong to the same system. These rocks attain their greatest thickness at Gruinard Bay on the west coast of Ross, where they must be several hundred feet thick. On the east side of the country, where so many fragments of the Second- ary rocks occur as boulders in the glacial deposits, a large mass of strata was formerly exposed at Linksfield near Elgin containing fossils which appear to show it to belong to the Rhetic

beds at the top of the Trias. But it was not in place, and was almost certainly a mass transported by ice. Rheetic strata no doubt exist in situ at no great distance under the North Sea.

The Jurassic system is well represented on both sides of the Highlands. Along the east coast of Sutherland good sections are exposed showing the succession of strata. Among these the Lower and Middle Lias can be identified by their fossils. The Lower Oolite is distinguished by the occurrence in it of some coal-seams, one of whieh, 34 feet in thickness, has been worked at Brora. The Middle Oolite consists mostly of sandstones with bands of shale and limestones and includes fossils which indicate the English horizons from the Kellaways Rock up to the Coral Rag. The lower part of the Kimmeridge Clay is probably represented by sand- stones and conglomerates, forming the highest beds of the series in Sutherland. On the west side of the Highlands Jurassic rocks are found in many detached areas from the Shiant Isles to the southern shores of Mull. Over much of this region they owe their preservation in great mcasure to the mass of lavas poured over them in Tertiary time. They have been uncovered, indeed, only They comprise a con-

volcanic period was a prolonged one is shown by the great denuda- tion of the plateaus before the last eruptions took place. In the Isle of Eigg, for example, the basalts had already been deeply eroded by river-action and into the river-course a current of glassy lava (pitch- stone) flowed. Denudation has continued active ever since, and now, owing to greater hardness and consequent power of resistance, the glassy lava stands up as the prominent and picturesque ridge of the Scuir, while the basalts which formerly vose high above it have been worn down into terraced declivities that slope away from it to the sca, A remarkable feature in the volcanic phenomena was the disruption of the basaltic plateaus by large bosses of gabbro and of various granitoid rocks. These intrusive masses now tower into conspicuous groups of hills,—the Coolins in Skye, the moun- tains of Rum and Mull, and the rugged heights of Ardnamurchan.

Under the Post-tertiary division eome the records of the Ice Age, Youngest when Scotland was buried under sheets of ice which ground down, forma- striated, and polished the harder rocks over the whole country and tions.

left behind them the widespread accumulations of clay, gravel, and sand known as glacial deposits. The nature of the evidence and the deductions drawn from it have been already stated (GEOLOGY, vol. x. pp. 365-368). The youngest geological formations are the raised beaches, river-terraces, lake-deposits, peat-mosses, and other

-accumulations, which are related to the present configuration of the

country and contain remains of the plants and animals still living on its surface (GEOLOGY, vol. x. pp. 256, 290, 369).

PHYSICAL FEATURES.

The physical features of Scotland may be best realized by regard- ing the country as composed of three distinct belts of territory, differing from each other in their geological structure and con- sequently presenting striking contrasts in their scenery.

at a comparatively recent geological date. secutive series of deposits from the bottom of the Lias up to the Oxford Clay. The Lower Middle and Upper Lias consist chiefly of shales and shelly limestones, with some sandstones, well seen along

1. The Highlands, for convenience of description, are here re- The garded as embracing all that part of the country which lies west High- and north of a line drawn along the Firth of Clyde, and thence lands.

the shores of Broadford Bay in Skye and in some of the adjacent islands. The Lower Oolites are made up of sandstones and shales with some limestones, and are overlaid by several hundred feet of an estuarine series of deposits consisting chiefly of thick white sandstones, below and above which lie shales and shelly limestones. These rocks form a prominent feature underneath the basalt terraces of the east side of Skye, Raasay, and Kigg. They form the highest menibers of the Jurassic series, representing

probably some part of the Oxford clay. The next Secondary rocks (Cretaceous) succeed them unconformably.

diagonally in a north-easterly direction from the mouth of the river Clyde to the east coast at Stonehaven. Nearly the whole of this region is high ground, deeply trenched with valleys and penetrated by long arms of the sea. The only cousiderable area of lowland lies in the north-eastern counties, embracing the eastern part of Aberdeenshire and the northern parts of Bauff, Elgin, and Nairn. Along both sides of the Moray Firth a strip of lower land intervenes between the foot of the hills and the sea, while farther north the county of Caithness is one wide plain, which is prolonged into the Orkney Islands. Seen from beyond its southern margin, the area

Creta- Rocks belonging to the Cretaceous system undoubtedly at one | of the Highlands presents a well-defined ehain of hills, which rise ceous. time covered considerable areas on both sides of the Highlands, but | abruptly from the plains of the Lowlands. This is best observed : they have been entirely stripped off the eastern side, while on the | in Strathmore, but it is also conspicuous in the estuary of the Clyde, western they have been reduced to a few fragmentary patches, | where the low hills on the south contrast well with the broken line which have no doubt survived because of the overlying sheets of | of rugged mountains to the north. From any of the islands of the basalt that have protected them. Some greenish sandstones con- | chain of the Inner Hebrides the Highlands along their western sea- taining recognizable and characteristic fossils are the equivalents | front rise as a vast rampart, indented by many winding fjords and of the Upper Greensand of the south of England. These rocks | rising up to a singularly uniform general level, which sinks here are found on the south and west coasts of Mull and on the west | and there and allows glimpses to be had of still higher summits in coast of Argyllshire. They are covered by white sandstones and | the interior. The northern margin is hardly less striking when these by white chalk and marly beds, which represent the Upper | looked at from the Moray Firth, or from the plains of Caithness or Chalk of England. Enormous numbers of flints and also less | Orkney. abundant fragments of chalk are found in glacial deposits border- From a commanding summit in the interior the Highlands are High- ing the Moray Firth. These transported relics show that the | seen to differ from a

mountain chain such as the Alps, not merely land Chalk must once have been in place at no great distance, if indeed | in their inferior elevation, but essentially in their configuration and moun- it did not actually occupy part of Aberdeenshire and the neigh- | structure. They are made up of a succession of more or less nearly tains. bouring counties. parallel confluent ridges, which have, on the whole, a trend from Basaltie Above the highest Secondary rocks on the west coast come | north-east to south-west. These ridges are separated by longitudinal plateaus. terraced plateaus of basalt, which spread out over wide areas in | valleys, and each of them is likewise furrowed by transverse valleys.

Skye, Eige, Mull, and Morven, and form most of the smaller islets of the chain of the Inner Hebrides (GroLoey, vol. x. p. 362). These plateaus are composed of nearly horizontal sheets of basalt—colum- nar, amorphous, or amygdaloidal—which in Mull attain a thick- ness of more than 3000 feet. They are prolonged southwards into Antrim (Ireland), where similar basalts overlying Secondary strata cover a large territory. Occasional beds of tuff are intercalated among these lavas, and likewise seams of fine clay or shale which have preserved the remains of numerous land-plauts. The presence of these fossils indicates that the eruptions were subaerial, and a com- parison of them with those elsewhere found among older Tertiary strata shows that they probably belong to what is now called the Oligocene stage of the Tertiary series of formations, and therefore that the basalt cruptions took place in early Tertiary time. The

The portions of ridge thus isolated rise into what are termed mountains. But all the loftier eminences in the Highlands are only higher parts of ridges along which their geological structure is prolonged. It is singular to observe liow the gencral average of level of the summits of the ridges is inaintained. From some points of view a mountain may appear -to tower above all the surrounding country, but, looked at from a sufficient distance to take in its environment, it may be found not to rise much above the general uniformity of elevation. There are no gigantic dominant masses that must obviously be due to some special terrestrial disturbanee. A few apparent exceptions to this statement rise along the western seaboard of Sutherland, in Skye, and elsewhere, but an examination of their structure at once explains the reason of their prominence and confirms the rule.

The gencral surface of the Highlands is rugged. The rocks pro- Surface ject in innumerable bosses and crags, which roughen the sides and of High- The forms and colours of these roughnesses lands.

volcanic episode to which these plateaus owe their origin was onc of the most important in the geological history of Great Britain. It

appears to have resembled in its main features those remarkable out-pourings of basalt which have deluged so many thousand square miles of the western territories of the United States. The eruptions were connected with innumerable fissures up which the basalt rose and from numerous points on which it flowed out at the surface. These fissures with the basalt that solidified in them now form the vast assemblage of dykes which cross Scotland, the north of England, and the north of Ireland (GEoLogy, vol. x. p. 812). That the

erests of the ridges. depend on the nature of the rock underneath. Where the latter is hard and jointed, weathering into large quadrangular blocks, the hills are more especially distinguished for the gnarled bossy character of their declivities, as may be seen in Ben Ledi and the chain of heights to the north-east of it formed of massive grits and mica-schists. Where, on the other hand, the rock decays into smaller débris, the hills are apt to assume smoother contours, as

FEATURES. |

the slate hills that run from the Kyles of Bute to Loch Lomond. Wherever any mass of rock occurs differing much from those around it in its power of resisting decomposition it affects the scenery, rising into a prominence where it is durable, or sinking into lower ground where it is not. This relation between relative destructibility and external configuration is traceable in every part of Scotland, and indeed may be regarded as the law that has mainly determined the present topography of the country. Two The Highlands are separated into two completely disconnected regions and in some respects contrasted regions by the remarkable line of High- of the Great Glen, which runs from Loch Linnhe to Inverness. In lands. the northern portion the highest ground rises along the west coast, mounting steeply from the sea to an average height of perhaps between 2000 and

3000 feet. The watershed consequently keeps close to the Atlantic seaboard, indeed in some placcs it is not more than a mile and a half distant from the beach. From these heights, which catch the first downpour of the western rains, the ground falls eastwards, but with numerous heights that prolong the moun- tainous character, to the edge of the North Sea and the line of the Great Glen. The best conception of the difference in the general level on the two sides of the watershed may be obtained by observ- ing the contrast between the lengths of their streams. On the western side the drainage is poured into the Atlantic Ocean after flowing only a few miles, while on the eastcrn side it has to run at least 30 or 40. At the head of Loch Nevis the western stream is only 3 miles long ; that which starts from the eastern side has a course of some 18 to the Great Glen. Throughout the northern or north-western region a general uniformity of feature characterizes the scenery, betokening cven at a distance the general monotony in the structure of the underlying schists. But the sameness is relieved along the western coast of Sutherland and Ross by singular groups of cones and stacks (to be afterwards referred to), and farther south by the terraced plateaus and abrupt conical hills of Skye, Rum, and Mull. The valleys run for the most part in a north-west and south-east direction, and this is also generally true of the sea lochs.

The south-eastern region of the Highlands, being more diversi- fied in geological structure, presents greater contrasts of scenery. In the first place, its valleys chiefly run in a south-west and north- cast direction and so also do most of the lakes and sea lochs. This feature is strikingly exhibited in the western part of Argyllshire. But there are also numerous and important transverse valleys, of which that of the Garry and Tay is the most conspicuous example. Again, the watershed in this region is arranged somewhat differ- ently. It first strikes eastward round the head of Loch Laggan and then swings southward, pursuing a sinuous course till it emerges from the Highlands on the east side of Loch Lomond. But the streams flowing westward are still short, while those that run north-east and east have long courses and drain wide tracts of high ground. The Tay in particular pours a larger body of water into the sea than any other river in Great Britain. Moreover, the occurrence of many bosses of granite and other eruptive rocks gives rise to various interruptions in the monotonous scenery of the crystalline schists which constitute the greater part of the

country. But a marked contrast may be traced between the configuration of the north-eastern district and the other parts of this region. In that arca the Grampians rise into wide flat-topped heights or elevated moors often over 3000 and sometimes exceeding 4000 feet in height and bounded by steep declivities or not infrequently by precipices. Secn from an eminence on their surface, these plateaus look like fragments of an original broad tableland, which has been trenched into segments by the formation of the transverse and longitudinal valleys. Farther to the south'-west in Perthshire, Inverness-shire, and Argyllshire, they give place to the ordinary hummocky crested ridges of Highland scenery, some summits on which, however, exceed 4000 feet in elevation. For the probable meaning of this transition from broad flat-topped heights to narrow crests and isolated peaks, sce below (pp. 525-526).

Besides the principal tracts of low ground in the Highlands already referred to, there occur numerous long but narrow strips of flat land in the more important valleys. Each strath and glen is usually provided with a floor of detritus which, spread out be- tween the bases of the bounding hills, has been levelled into mceadow-land by the rivers, and furnishes as a rule the only arable

round in each district. Southern 2. The southern uplands form the most southcrly of the three uplands. transverse belts in Scottish topography. Extending from St Patrick's Channel to St Abb's Head, they constitute a well-defined belt of hilly ground, but present a striking contrast to the scenery of the Highlands. The rocks which underlie them consist almost wholly of Silurian grits, grcywackes, and shales, which have been greatly plicated, the general axis of the folds running parallel with that of the whole belt, or from south-west to north-east. These uplands, though much less elevated than the Highlands (their highest point is not more than 2764 feet above the sea), rise with scarcely less abruptuess above the lower tracts that bound them. Their north-western margin for the most part springs boldly above

the fields and moorlands of the midland valley, and its boundary for long distances continues remarkably straight. Their southern and south-castern limits are in general less prominently defined, except to the west of the Nith, where they plunge into the sea. Between the Solway Firth and the Cheviot Hills they pass under a line of high and picturesque escarpments which runs from Birrenswark in a north-east direction. In Berwickshire, however, they again tower boldly above the plain of the Merse. These up- lands are distinguished above all by the smoothness of their sur- face. They may be regarded as a rolling tableland or moorland, traversed by innumerable valleys which with gentle verdant declivities conduct the drainage to the sea. This character is impressively seen from the heights of Tweedsmuir. Wide mossy moors, lying 2000 feet or more above the sea and sometimes level as a racecourse, spread out on all sides. Their continuity, how- ever, is interrupted by numerous intervening valleys which separate them into detached flat-topped hills. Unlike the Highlands, these southern heights comparatively seldom present precipices of naked rock. Where the rock projects it more usually appears in low crags and knolls, from which long trails of grey or purple débris descend the slopes till they are lost among the grass. Hence, besides being smooth, the uplands are pre-eminently verdant. They form indeed excellent pasture-land, while the alluvial flats in the valleys and even some of the lower slopes of the hills are fitted for corn and green crops.

This uniformity of external aspect is doubtless traceable to the Their

prevalence of the same kind of rocks aud the same geological struc- geo- ture. The Silurian greywackes and shales that underlie almost logical the whole of these uplands weather generally into small angular structure. débris, and at a tolerably uniform rate of disintegration. But slight differences may readily be detected even where no feature interferes in a marked way with the general monotony. The bands of massive grit and coarse greywacke, for example, break up into larger blocks and from their greater hardness are apt to project above the general surface of the other and softer rocks. Hence their line of trend, which like that of all the other strata is in a north-easterly direction, may be followed from hill to hill even at a distance by their more craggy contours. Only in the higher tracts of these uplands are any rngged features to be seen that remind one of the

more savage character of Highland scenery. In the heights of Hartfell (2651 feet) and Whitecoomb (2695), whence the Clyde, Tweed, Annan, and Moffat Water descend, the high moorlands have been scarped into gloomy corries, with crags and talus-slopes, which form a series of landscapes all the more striking from the abrupt and unexpected contrast they present to everything around them. In Galloway, also, the highest portions of the up- lands have acquired a ruggedness and wildness morc like those of the Highlands than any other district in the south of Scotland. For this, however, there is an obvious geological reason. In that region the Silurian rocks have been invaded by large bosses of granite and have undergone a variable amount of metamorphism which has in some places altered them into hard crystalline schists. These various rocky masses, presenting great differences in their powers of resisting decay, have yielded unequally to disintegration : the harder portions project in rocky knolls, crags, and cliffs, while the softer parts have been worn down into more flowing outlines. The highest summit in the south of Scotland—Merrick (2764 feet) —consists of Silurian strata much altered by proximity to the granite, while the rest of the more prominent heights (all in Kirkcudbrightshire)—Rinns of Kells (2668 feet), Cairnsmore of Carsphairn (2612), and Cairnsmore of Fleet (2331)—are formed of granite.

The watershed of the southern uplands is of much interest in Water-

relation to their geological history. It runs from the mouth of shed of Loch Ryan in a sinuous north-easterly direction, keeping near the southern northern limit of the region till it reaches the basin of the Nith, uplands. where it quits the uplands altogether, descends into the lowlands of Ayrshire, and, after circling round the headwaters of the Nith, strikes south-eastwards across half the breadth of the uplands, then sweeps north aud eastwards between the basins of the Clyde, Tweed, and Annan, and then through the moors that surround the sources of the Ettrick, Teviot, and Jed, into the Cheviot Hills. Here again the longest slope is on the east side, where the Tweed bears the whole drainage of that side into the sea. Although the rocks throughout the southern uplands have a persistent north-east and south-west strike, and though this trend is apparent in the bands of more rugged hills that mark the outcrop of hard grits and grcywackes, nevertheless geological structure has been much less effective

in determining the lines of ridge and valley than in the Highlands. On the southern side of the watershed, in Dumfries- shire and Galloway, the valleys run generally transversely from north-west to south-east. But in the eastern half of the uplands the valleys do not appear to have any relation to the geological structure of the ground underneath.

3. Between the two belts of high ground lie the broad lowlands Central of central Scotland, or the midland valley, bounded on the north lowlands. side by the range of heights that extends from the mouth of the

Clyde to Stonehaven, on the south side by the pastoral uplands that stretch from Girvan to Dunbar. The simplest conception of the general aspect and structure of this important part of the king- dom is obtained by regarding it as a long trough of younger rocks let down by parallel dislocations between the older masses of the high grounds to the south and north. The lowest of these younger rocks are the various sedimentary and volcanic members of the Old Red Sandstone. These are covered by the successive formations of the Carboniferous system. The total thickness of both these groups of roek cannot be less than 80,000 feet, and, as most of them bear evidence of having been deposited in shallow water, it is manifest that they could only have been accumulated during a prolonged period of depression. The question arises whether this depression affected only the area of the midland valley itself, or whether it extended also over the regions to the north and south. Materials do not yet exist for a definite answer to this question ; but so far as the evidence now before us gocs there is ground for the infer- ence that, while the depression had its maximum along the line of the lowlands, it also involved some portion at least of the high grounds on either side. In other words, the Old Red Sandstone and Carboniferous rocks, though chiefly accumulated in the broad lowland valley, crept also over some part at least of the hills on either side, where a few outliers are left to tell of their former ex- tension. The central Lowlands of Scotland are thus of great geo- logical antiquity. During and since the deposition of the rocks that underlie them the tract has been the scene of repeated ter- restrial disturbances. Long dislocations, running like the ridges of the

Highlands and the southern uplands from south-west to north-east, have sharply defined its northern and southern margins. By other fractures and unequal movements of upheaval or depres- sion portions of the older rocks have been brought up within the bounds of the younger, and areas of the younger have been enclosed by the older. On the whole, these terrestrial disturbances have followed the same prevalent north-easterly trend, and hence a general tendency may be observed among the main ridges and valleys to run in that direction. The chains of the Ochil, Sidlaw, Pentland, Renfrew, Campsie, and Fintry Hills, and the valleys of Strathmore, Firth of Tay, and the basin of Midlothian, may be cited as examples. But, undoubtedly, the dominant cause in the determination of the topographical prominences and depressions of the district has been the relative hardness and softness of the rocks. Almost the whole of the eminences in the Lowlands consist of hard igneous rocks, forming not only chains of hills like those just referred to and others in Ayrshire and Lanarkshire, but isolated crags and hills like those of Stirling Castle, Edinburgh Castle, and others conspicuous in the scenery of Fife and the Lothians.

Of the three chief valleys in the central Lowlands two, those of the Tay and the Forth, descend from the Highlands, and one, that of the Clyde, from the southern uplands, Though on the whole transverse, these depressions furnish another notable example of that independence of geological structure alrcady mentioned.

We now proceed to consider the leading physical features of the country with especial reference to their distinctive aspects and their respective modes of origin. Though an eminently hilly country, Scotland is not dominated by any leading mountain chain on which all.the other topographical features are dependent. Its leading features are not the monotonous ridges of the high grounds but the valleys that have been opened through them. [If these valleys were filled up, the high grounds would once more become what they probably were at first, elevated plains or plateaus, with no strongly marked features, —no eminences rising much above nor hollows sinking much below the general surface.

Valleys.—Kven apart from any knowledge of their origin, the valleys of the country are thus seen to be its fundamental topo- graphical element, and to

deserve the first consideration in any attempt to describe and explain its physical features. The longi- tudinal valleys, which run in the same general direction as the ridges—that is, north-east and south-west—have had their trend defined by geological structure, such as a line of dislocation (the Great Glen), or the plications of the rocks (Lochs Ericht, Tay, and Awe, and most of the sea lochs of Argyllshirc). The transverse valleys run north-west or south-east and are for the most part in- dependent of geological structure. The valley of the Garry and Tay crosses the strike of all the Highland rocks, traverses the great fault on the Highland border, and finally breaks through the chain of the Ochil Hills at Perth. The valley of the Clyde crosses the strike of the Silurian plications in the southern uplands, the boundary fault, and the ridges of the Old Red Sandstone, and pursues its north-westerly course across the abundant and often powerful dislocations of the Carboniferous system.

Origin of. That valleys are essentially due to erosion and not to dislocation Seottish or subsidence of the earth's surface is a fact which has now been

valleys,

demonstrated by so overwhelming a mass of evidence from all parts of the globe that it may be accepted as one of the axioms of geology. The plications of the earth's crust which folded the rocks of the Highlands and southern uplands not improbably upraised above the sca a series of longitudinal ridges having a general north-easterly

SCOTLAND

direction. off them, first in transverse watercourses down each short slope and

[PHYSICAL The earliest rain that fell upon these ridges would run

then in longitudinal depressions wherever such had been formed during the terrestrial disturbance. Once chosen, the pathways of the streams would be gradually deepened and widened into valleys. Hence the valleys are of higher antiquity than the mountains that rise from them. The mountains in fact have emerged out of the original bulk of the land in proportion as the

valleys have been excavated. The denudation would continue so long as the ground stood above the level of the sea; but there have been prolonged periods of depression, when the ground, instead of being eroded, lay below the sea-level and was buried sometimes under thousands of feet of accumulated sediment, which completely filled up and obliterated the previous drainage-lines. When the land reappeared a new and independent series of valleys would at once begin to be eroded ; and the subsequent degradation of these overlying sedi- ments might reveal portions of the older topography, as in the case of the Great Glen, Lauderdale, and other ancient valleys. But the new drainage-lines have usually little or no reference to the old ones. Determined by the inequalities of surface of the overlying

mantle of sedimentary material, they would be wholly independent

of the geological structure of the rocks lying below that mantle. Slowly sinking deeper and deeper into the land, they might event-

ually reach the older rocks, but they would keep in these the lines

of valley that they had followed in the overlying deposits. In

process of time the whole of these deposits might be denuded from the area. regard of the geological structure of the rocks around them, and

The valleys would then be seen running in utter dis-

there might even remain' no trace of the younger formations on which they began and which guided their excavation. This is probably the explanation of the striking independence of geological structure exhibited by the Tweed and the Nith.

Among the valleys of Scotland certain prevailing characteristics General have been recognized in the popular names bestowed upon them. eharac- "Straths" are broad expanses of low ground between bounding teristics, hills usually traversed by one main stream and its tributaries, — Strath Tay, Strath Spey, Strath Conon. The name, however, has also been applied to wide tracts of lowland which embrace portions

of several valleys, but are defined by lines of heights on either side; the best example is afforded by Strathmore—the "great strath "'—

between the southern margin of the Highlands and the line of the Ochil and Sidlaw Hills. This long and wide depression, though it looks like one great valley, strictly speaking, includes portions of the valleys of the Tay, Isla, North Esk, and South Esk, all of which cross it. Elsewhere in central Scotland such a wide depres- sion is known as a "howe," as in the Howe of Fife between the Ochil and Lomond Hills.

River-gorges are characteristic features in many of the valleys of River- Scotland. In the Old Red Sandstone they are particularly proimi- gorges, nent where that formation has lain in the pathway of the streams sweeping down from the Highlands. In the basin of the Moray Firth some fine examples may be seen on®he Nairn and Findhorn, while on the west side of the Cromarty Firth some of the small streams descending from the high grounds of the east of Ross-shire have cut out defiles in the conglomerate, remarkable for their depth and narrowness. On the south side of the Highlands still more notable instances of true "cafions" in the Old Red Sandstone are to be seen where the Ericht, Isla, and North Esk enter that forma- tion. The well-known gorge in which the Falls of Clyde are situated is the best example in the midland valley.)

Types of Mountain and Hill.—While the topography of the Flat- country is essentially the result of prolonged denudation, we may topped reasonably infer that the oldest surfaces likely to be in any measure moun- preserved or indicated are portions of some of the platforms of tains. erosion which have successively been produced by the wearing away of the land down to the sea-level. Relics of these platforms seem to be recognizable both in the Highlands and among the southern uplands. Allusion has already been made to the remarkable flat- topped_moorlands which in the eastern Grampians reach heights

! For the principal rivers, the Tay, Spey, Forth, Clyde, and Tweed, see the

separate articles, and for the Dee (Aberdeen, Kirkeudbright), &c., see articles on the respective counties.

of 3000 to 4000 feet above the sea. Their most familiar example perhaps is the top of Lochnagar, where when the level of 3500 feet has been gained the traveller finds himself on a broad undulating moor, more than a mile and a half long, sloping gently southwards towards Glen Muick and terminating on the north at the edge of a range of granite precipices. The top of Ben Macdui stands upon nearly a square mile of moor exceeding 4000 feet in elevation. These mountains lie within granite areas; but not less striking examples may be found among the schists. The mountains at the head of Glen Esk and Glen Isla, for instance, sweep upward into a broad moor some 8000 feet above the sea, the more prominent parts of which have reccived special names,—Driesh, Mayar, Tom Buidhe, Tolmount, Cairn na Glasha. It would hardly be an exaggeration to say that there is more level ground on the tops of these moun- tains than in areas of corresponding size in the valleys below. That these high plateaus are planes of erosion is shown by their independence of geological structure, the upturned edges of the vertical and contorted schists having been abruptly shorn off and the granite having been wasted and levelled along its exposed sur- face. They look like fragments of the original tableland of erosion out of which the present valley-systems of the Highlands have been carved. Among the southern uplands traces of a similar tableland of erosion are in many places to be detected. The top of Broad Law in Peeblesshire, for example, is a level moor com- prising between 300 and 400 acres above the contour line of 2500 feet and lying upon the upturned edges of the greatly denuded Silurian grits and shales. An instructive example of the similar destruction of a much younger platform is to be found in the ter- raced plateaus of Skye, Eigg, Canna, Muck, Mull, and Morven, which are portions of what was probably originally a continuous plain of basalt. Though dating back only to older Tertiary time, this plain has been so deeply trenched by the forces of denudation that it has been reduccd to mere scattered fragments. Thousands of feet of basalt have been worn away from many parts of its sur- face; deep and wide vallcys have been carved out of it; and so enormously has it been wasted that it has been almost entirely stripped from wide tracts which it formerly covered and where only scattered outliers remain to prove that it once existed.

It is a curious fact, to which allusion has already been made, that broad flat-topped mountains are chiefly to be found in the eastern parts of the country. Traced westwards these forms gradu- ally give place to narrow ridges and crests. No contrast, for in- stance, can be greater than that between the wide elevated moors of the castern Grampians, and the crested ridges of western Inver- ness-shire and Argyllshire—Loch Hourn, Glen Nevis, Glencoe— or that between the broad uplands of Peeblesshire and the preci- pitous heights of Galloway. No satisfactory reason for these con- trasts can be found in geological structure alone. Perhaps the key to them is to be sought mainly in differences of rainfall. The western mountains, exposed to the fierce dash of the Atlantic rains, sustain the heaviest and most constant precipitation. Their sides are seamed with torrents which tear down the solid rock and sweep its detritus into the glens and sea lochs. The eastern heights, on the other hand, experience a less rainfall and consequently a dimi- nished rate of erosion. There is no reason to doubt that the present preponderance of rainfall in the west has persisted for an enormous duration of time.

Regarding the existing flat-topped heights among the eastern Grampians as representing what may have been the general char- acter of the surface out of which the present Highlands have been carved, we can trace every step in the gradual obliteration of the tableland and in the formation of the most rugged and individual- ized forms of isolated mountain. In fact, in journeying westwards across the tops of the Highland mountains we pass, as it were, over successive stages in the history of the origin of Highland scenery. The oldest types of form lie on the east side and the newest on the west. From the larger fragments of the denuded tableland we advance to ridges with narrow tops, which pass by degrees into sharp rugged crests. The ridges, too, are more and more trenched until they become groups of detached hills or mountains. In the progress of this erosion full scope has been afforded for the modifica- tion of form produced by variations in geological structure. Each ridge and mountain has been cut into its shape by denudation, but its actual outlines have been determined by the nature of the rocks and the manner in which they have yielded to decay. Every distinct variety of rock has impressed its own characters upon the landscapes in which it plays a part. Hence, amid the monotonous succession of ridge beyond ridge and valley after valley, consider- able

diversity of detail has resulted from the varying composition and grouping of the rocks.

The process by which the ancient tablelands of the country have been trenched into the present system of valleys and confluent ridges is most instructively displayed among the higher mountains, where erosion proceeds at an accelerated pace. The long "screes " or talus-slopes at the foot of every crag and cliff bear witness to the continual waste of the mountain sides. The headwaters of a river cut into the slopes of the parent hill. Each valley ig consequently

lengthened at the expense of the mountain from which it descends. Where a number of small torrents converge in a steep mountain recess, they cut ont a crescent-shaped hollow or half-cauldron, which in the Scottish Highlands is known as a '"'corry." Whether Corries the convergent action of the strcams has been the sole agency con- and cerned in the erosion of these striking concavities, or whether snow glens. and glacier-ice may have had a share in the task, is a question that cannot at present be satisfactorily solved. No feature in Highland scenery is more characteristic than the corries, and in none can the influence of geological structure be more instructively seen. Usu- ally the upper part of a corry is formed by a crescent of naked rock, from which long trails of débris descend to the bottom of the hollow. Every distinct variety of rock has its own type of corry, the pecu- liarities being marked both in the details of the upper cliffs and crags and in the amount, form, and colour of the screes. The Scottish corries have been occupied by glaciers. Hence their bottoms are generally well ice-worn or strewn over with moraine stuff, Not infrequently also a small tarn fills up the bottom, ponded back by a moraine. It is in these localities that we can best observe the last relics left by the retreat of the glaciers that once overspread the country. Among these high grounds also the gradual narrowing of ridges into sharp, narrow, knife-edged crests and the lowering of these into cols or passes can be admirably studied. Where two glens begin opposite to each other on the same ridge, their corries are gradually cut back until only a sharp crest separates them. This crest, attacked on each front and along the summit, is lowered with comparative rapidity, until in the end merely a low col or pass may separate the heads of the two glens. The various stages in this kind of demolition are best scen where the underlying rock is of granite

or some similar material which possesses considerable toughness, while at the same time it is apt to be split and splintered by means of its numerous trans- verse joints. 'The granite mountains of Arran furnish excellent illustrations.

Where a rock yields with considerable uniformity in all directions Forma- to the attacks of the weather it is apt to assume conical forms in tion the progress of denudation. Sometimes this uniformity is attained of moun- by a general disintegration of the rock into fine débris, which rolls tain down the slopes in long screes. In other cases it is secured by the cones. intersection of joints, whereby a rock, in itself hard and durable, is divided into small angular blocks, which are separated by the action of the elements and slide down the declivities. In many instances the beginning of the formation of a cone may be detected on ridges which have been deeply trenched by valleys. The smaller isolated portions, attacked on all sides, have broken up under the influence of the weather. Layer after layer has been stripped from their sides, and the flat or rounded top has been narrowed until it has now become the apex ofa cone. The mountain Schiehallien (3547 feet) isa noble instance of a cone not yet freed from its parent ridge. Occasionally a ridge has been carved into a series of cones united at their bases, as in the chain of the Pentland Hills. A further stage in denudation brings us to isolated groups of cones completely separated from the rest of the rocks among which they once lay buried. Such groups may be carved out of a continuous band of rock which extends into the regions beyond. The Paps of Jura, for instance, rise out of a long belt of quartzite which stretches through the islands of Isla, Jura, and Scarba. In many cases, however, the groups point to the existence of some boss of rock of greater durability than those in the immediate neighbourhood, as "hn the Cuchullins and Red Hills of Skye and the group of granite cones of Ben Loyal, Sutherland. The most impressive form of soli- tary cone is that wherein after vast denudation a thick overlying formation has been reduced to a single outlier, such as Morven in Caithness and the two Ben Griams in Sntherland, and still more strikingly the pyramids of red sandstone on the western margin of Sutherland and Ross-shire. The horizontal stratification of some of these masses gives them a curiously architectural aspect, which is further increased by the effect of the numerous vertical joints by which the rock is cleft into buttresses and recesses along the fronts of the precipices and into pinnacles and finials

along the summits. Solitary or grouped pyramids of red sandstone, rising to heights of between 8000 and 4000 feet above the sea, are mere remnants of a once continuous sheet of red sandstone that spread far and wide over the western Highlands.

Stratified rocks when they have not been much disturbed from Esearp- their original approximate horizontality weather into what are ments. called "escarpments,"—lines of cliff or steep bank marking the edge or outcrop of harder bands which lie upon softer or more easily eroded layers. Such cliffs may run for many miles across a country, rising one above another into lofty terraced hills. In Seotland the rocks have for the most part been so dislocated and disturbed as to prevent the formation of continuous escarpments, and this interesting form of rock-scencry is consequently almost entirely absent, except locally and for the most part on a compara- tively small scale. 'The most extensive Scottish escarpments are found among the igneous rocks. Where lava has been piled up in successive nearly horizontal sheets, with occasional layers of tuff

or other softer rock between them, it offers conditions peculiarly favourable for the formation of escarpments. In the wide basalt plateaus of the Inner Hebrides these conditions have been mani- fested on a great scale. The Carboniferous lavas of the Campsie and Fintry Hills and of the south of Dumfriesshire and Roxburgh- shire likewise rise in lines of bold escarpment.

Lakes.—These important features in the landscapes of Scotland present the general eharacters of the water-basins so profusely scattered over the northern parts of Europe and North America. They may be elassified in four groups, each of which has its own peculiar scenery and a distinct mode of origin—(1) glen lakes, (2) rock-tarns, (3) moraine-tarns, (4) lakes of the plains.

Glen (1) Glen lakes are those which occupy portions of glens. They lakes. are depressions in the valleys, not due to mere local heaping up of detritus, but true rock-basins, often of great depth. Much discus- sion has arisen as to their mode of origin. They have been re- garded as eaused by special

subsidence of their areas, open fissures of the ground, general depression of the central part of each mountain district from which they radiate, and by the erosive action of glacier ice. That they are not open fissures and cannot be explained by any general subsidence of a neighbouring region is ‘ now generally admitted. That glaciers have occupied the glens where these lakes exist and have worn down the rocks along the sides and bottom cannot be doubted, but whether the ice would be capable of eroding hollows so deep as many of these lakes is a question which has been answered with equal eonfidence affirma- tively and negatively. On the other hand, to suppose that each of these hollows has been eaused by a special local subsidence would involve a complex series of subterranean disturbances, for which some better evidence than the mere existence of the basins is re quired. Under any circumstances it is quite certain that the lakes must be of recent geological date. Any such basins belonging to the time of the plication of the crystalline schists would have been filled up and effaced long ago. “So rapid is the infilling by the torrents which sweep down detritus from the surrounding heights that the present lakes are being visibly diminished, and they eannot, therefore, be of high geological antiquity. It is worthy of remark that the glen lakes are almost wholly confined to the western half of the Highlands, where they form the largest sheets of fresh water. Hardly any lakes are to be seen cast of a line drawn from Inverness to Perth. West of that line, however, they abound in both the longitudinal and the transverse valleys. The most remarkable line of them is that which fills up so much of the Great Glen. Loch Ness, the largest, is upwards of 20 miles long, about 13 miles broad, and not less than 774 feet deep in the deepest part. This great depression exceeds the general depth reached by the floor of the North Sea between Great Britain and the opposite shores of the Continent. Other important longitudinal lakes are Lochs Tay, Awe, Ericht, and Shiel. The most pictur- esque glen lakes, however, lie in transverse valleys, which being eut across the strike of the rocks present greater variety, and usually also more abruptness of outline. Lochs Lomond, Katrine, and Lubnaig in the southern Highlands, and Lochs Maree and More in the north, are conspicuous examples, Rock- (2) Rock-tarns are small lakes lying in rock-basins on the sides tarns. of mountains or the summits of ridges, and on rocky platcaus or plains. Unlike the glen lakes, they have no necessary dependence upon lines of valley. On the contrary, they are scattered as it were broadcast over the districts in which they occur, and are by far the

most abundant of all the lakes of the country. Dispersed over all parts of the western Highlands, they are most numerous in the north-west, especially in the Outer Hebrides and in the west of Ross-shire and Sutherland. The surface of the Archean gneiss is so thickly sprinkled with them that many tracts eonsist almost as much of water asof land. They almost invariably-lie on strongly ice-worn platforms of rock. Their sides and the rocky islets which diversify their surface have been powerfully glaciated. They cannot be due to either fracture or subsidence, but are obviously hollows pro-duced byerosion. They have accordingly with much probability been assigned to the gouging action of the sheets of land-ice by which the general glaciation of the eountry was effected. In the southern uplands, owing probably to the greater softness and uniformity of texture among the rocks, rock-tarns are comparatively infrequent, except in Galloway, where the protrusion of granite and its associated metamorphism have given rise to conditions of rock-structure more like those of the Highlands. Over the rocky hill-ranges of the central Lowlands rock-tarns occasionally make their appearance. Moraine- (3) Moraine-tarns—smal] shects of water ponded back by some tarns. of the last moraines shed by the retreating glaciers—are confined to the more mountainous tracts. Among the southern uplands many beautiful examples may be seen, probably the best known and eertainly one of the most picturesque being the wild lonely Loch Skene lying in a recess of Whitecoomb at the head of the Moffat Water. Others are sprinkled over the higher parts of the valleys in Galloway. None occur in the central Lowlands. In the Highlands they may be eounted by hundreds, nestling in the bottoms of the corries. In the north-western counties, where the

glaciers continued longest to descend to the sea-level, lakes retained by moraine-barriers may be found very little above the sea.

(4) The lakes of the plains lie in hollows of the glacial detritus Lakes which is strewn so thickly over the lower grounds. As these of the hollows were caused by original irregular deposition rather than plains, by erosion, they have no intimate relation to the present drainage- lines of the eountry. The lakes vary in size from mere pools up to wide sheets of water several square miles in area. Asa rule they are shallow in proportion to their extent of surface. Though still sufficiently numerous in the Lowlands, they were once

greatly more so, for, partly from natural causes and partly by artificial means, they have been made to disappear. The largest sheets of fresh water in the midland valley are of this class, as Loch Leven and the Lake of Menteith.

Coast-Line.—The eastern and western seaboards of Scotland Coast- present a singular eontrast. The former is indented by a series of line, broad arms of the sca, but is otherwise tolerably unbroken. The land slopes gently down to the margin of the sea or to the edge of eliffs that have been eut back by the waves. The shores are for the most part low, with few islands in front of them, and cultivation comes down to the tide-line. The western side of the country, on the contrary, is from end to end intersected with long narrow sea lochs or fjords. The land shelves down rapidly into the sea and is fronted by chains and groups of islands. his contrast has some- times been erroneously referred to greater erosion by the waves on the western than on the eastern eoast, The true explanation, however, must be sought in the geological structure of the land. The west side of Scotland, as we have seen, has been more deeply eroded than the eastern. The glens are more numerous there and on the whole deeper and narrower, Many of them are prolonged under the sea ; in other words, the narrow deep fjords which wind so far into the land are seaward. continuations of the glens which emerge from their upper ends. The presence of the sea in these fjords is an accident. If they eould be raised out of the sea they would become glens, with lakes filling up their deeper portions, That this has really been their history can hardly admit of question. They are submerged land-valleys, and as they run down the whole western coast they show that side of the country to have subsided to a considerable depth beneath its former level. The Scottish sea lochs must be viewed in connexion with those of western Ireland and of Norway. The whole of this north-western coast-line of Europe bears witness to recent submergence. The bed of the North Sea, which at no distant date in gcological history was a land surface across which plants and animals migrated freely into Great Britain, sank beneath the sea-level, while the Atlantic ad- vanced upon the western margin of the continent and filled the sea- ward ends of what had previously been valleys open tothesun. Not: improbably the amount of subsidence was greater towards the west.

Nearly the whole coast-line of Scotland is rocky. On the east side of the country, indeed, the shores of the estuarics are gener- ally low, but the land between the mouths of these inlets is more or less precipitous. On the west side the coast is for the most part either a steep rocky declivity or a sea-wall, though strips of lower ground are found in the bays. The sea-cliffs everywhere vary in their characters according to the nature of the rock out of which they have been carved. At Cape Wrath precipices nearly 800 fect high have been eut out of the Archean gneiss. The varying tex- ture of this rock, its irregular foliation and jointing, and its rami- fying veins of pegmatite conspire to give it very unequal powers of resistance in different parts of its mass. Consequently it projects in irregular bastions and buttresses and retires into deep recesses and tunnels, showing everywhere a ruggedness of aspect which is eminently characteristic. 'In striking contrast to these precipices are those of the Cambrian red sandstone a few miles to the east. Vast vertical walls of rock shoot up from the waves to a height of 600 feet, cut by their perpendicular joints into quadrangular piers and projections, some of which even stand out alone as cathedral- like islets in front of the main cliff. The sombre colouring is relieved by lines of vegetation along the edges of the nearly flat beds which project like vast cornices and serve as nesting-places for crowds of sea-fowl. On the west side of the country the most notable eliffs south from those of Cape Wrath and the Cambrian sandstones of Sutherland are to be found among the basaltic islands, particularly in Skye, where a magnificent range of precipiccs rising to 1000 feet bounds the western coast-line. The highest cliffs in the country are found among the Shetland and Orkney Islands, The sea-wall of Foula, one of the Shetland group, and the western front of Hoy in Orkney rise like walls to heights of 1100 or 1200 feet above the waves that tunnel their base. Caithness is one wide moor, terminating almost everywhere in a range of sea-precipices of Old Red Sandstone. Along the eastern coast-line most of the cliffs are formed of rocks belonging to the same formation. Begin- ning at Stonehaven, an almost unbroken line of precipice varying up to 200 feet in height runs southwards to the mouth of the estuary of the Tay. The southern uplands plunge abruptly into the sea near St Abb's Head in a noble range of precipices 300 to 500 feet in height, and on the western side the same high grounds

—

Islands.

Influ- ences of topo- graphy on inhabit- ants.

FEATURES. |

terminate in a long broken line of sea-wall, which begins at the mouth of Loch Ryan, extends to the Mull of Galloway, and re- appears again in the southern headlands of Wigtown and Kirkeud- bright. One of the most picturesque features of the Scottish sea- cliffs is the numerous " stacks" or columns of rock which during the demolition and recession of the precipices have been isolated and left standing amidst the waves. These remnants attain their most colossal size and height on the cliffs of Old Red Sandstone. Thus the Old Man of Hoy in Orkney is a huge column of yellow sandstone between 400 and 500 feet high, forming a conspicuous landmark in the north. The coast of Caithness abounds in out- standing pillars and obelisks of flagstone.

The low shores on the west coast are not infrequently occupicd by sand-dunes. Such accumulations fringe the western margin of North and South Uist, and are found in many bays from the north of Sutherland to the coast of Ayrshire. They are more abundant on the east coast, especially on the shores of Aberdeenshire, between the mouths of the two Esks, on both sides of the mouth of the Firth of Tay, and at various places in the Firth of Forth. Raised sea-beaches likewise play a part in the coast scenery of the country. These alluvial terraces form a strip of low fertile land between the edge of the sea and the rising ground of the interior, and among the western fjords sometimes supply the only arable soil in their neighbourhood, their flat green surfaccs presenting a strong con- trast to the brown and barren moors that rise from them. Most of the scaport towns of the eountry stand upon platforms of raised beach. Considerable deposits of mud, silt, and sand are accumu- lating in most of the estuaries. In the Tay, Forth, and Clyde, where important harbours are situated, considerable expense is in-volved in dredging to remove the sediment continually brought down from the land and carried backward and forward by the tides. Wide alluvial flats are there exposed at low water.

While no islands except mere solitary rocks like May Island, the Bass Rock, and Inchkeith diversify the eastern seaboard, the western side of Scotland presents a vast number, varying in size from such extensive tracts as Skye down to the smallest sea-stack or skerry. Looked at in the broadest way, these numerous islands may be regarded as belonging to two groups or series,—the Outer and the Inner Hebrides. The Outer Hebrides, extending from Barra Head to the Butt of Lewis, consist of a continuous chain of islands composed (with the exception of a small tract in the east of Lewis) entirely of Archean rocks. Most of the ground is low, rocky, and plentifully dotted over with lakes; but it riscs into mountainous heights in Harris, some of the summits attaining elevations of 2600 feet. 'The general trend of this long belt of islands is north-north-east. The Inner Hebrides form a much less definite group. They may be regarded as beginning with the Shiant Isles in the Minch and stretching to the southern headlands of Isla, the most important members being Skye, Mull, Isla, Jura, Rum, Eigg, Coll, Tiree, and Colonsay. The irregularity of this fringe of islands has no doubt been in ehief measure brought about by its remarkable diversity of geological structure. Archean gneiss, Cambrian sandstone, Silurian quartzite, limestone, and schist, Jurassic sandstone and limestone, Cretaceous sandstone, and Tertiary basalts, gabbros, and granitic rocks all enter into the composition of the islands.

Within the limits of this article it is only possible to allude to some of the more important influences of the topography on the history of the inhabitants. How powerfully the configuration of the country affects the climate is shown in the remarkable difference between the rainfall of the mountainous west and of the lowland east. This difference has necessarily affected the eharacter and employments of the people, leading to the development of agricul- ture on the one side and the raising of sheep and cattle on the other. The fertile low grounds on the east have offered facilities for the invasions of Romans, Norsemen, and English, while the moun- tainous fastnesses of the interior and the west have served as secure retreats for the older Celtic population. While, therefore, Teutonic people have spread over the one area, the earlier race has to this day maintained its ground in the other. Not only the external configuration but the internal geological structure of the eountry has profoundly influenced the progress of the inhabitants. In the Highlands no mineral wealth has been discovered

to stiniulate the industry of the natives or to attract the labour and eapital of strangers. These tracts remain still as of old sparsely inhabited and given over to the breeding of stock and the pursuit of game. In the Lowlands, on the other hand, rich stores of coal, iron, lime, and other minerals have been found. The coal-fields have gradually drawn to them an ever-increasing share of the population. Villages and towns have there sprung recently into existence and have rapidly increased in size. Manufactures have been developed and commerce has advanced with accelerated pace. Other influences have of course eontributed largely to the development of the country, but among theni all the chief place must undoubtedly be assigned to that fortu- nate geological structure which, amid the revolutions of the past, has preserved in the centre of Scotland those fields of coal and ironstone which are the foundations of the national industry. (A, GE.)

s CO TE 2 ND

527

Climate.—In considering the climate of Scotland the first place Climate.

must be assigned to the temperature of the various districts during the months of the ycar, it being this which gives the chief charac- teristics of climate and not the mean temperature of the whole year. Thus, while the annual temperatures of the west and east coasts are nearly equal, the summer and winter temperatures are very different. At Portree (on east coast of Skye) the mean temperatures of January and July are 39° and 568, whereas at Perth they are 87°°5 and 59°0. The prominent feature of the isothermals of the winter months is their north and south direction, thus pointing not to the sun but to the warm waters of the Atlantic as the more powerful influence in determining the Scottish climate at this season through the agency of the prevailing westerly winds. The Atlantic isin truth a vast repository of heat, in which the higher temperature of summer and that of more southern latitudes are treasured up against the rigours of winter; and.in exceptionally cold seasons the ocean protects all places in its more immediate neighbourhood against the severe frosts which occur in inland situations. While this influ- ence of the ocean is felt at all seasons, it is most strikingly seen in winter; and it is more decided in proportion as the locality is surrounded by the warm waters of the Atlantic. At Edinburgh the

temperature is 27°0 and at Lerwick 32°5 higher than would otherwise be the case ; in other words, but for the ameliorating influence of the Atlantic the temperature of Edinburgh in mid- winter would only be 12°5 and of Lerwick 7°°5, or such winters as eharacterize the climates of Greenland and Iceland. The influence of the North Sea is similarly apparent, but in a lessdegree. Along the whole of the eastern coast, from the Pentland Firth southwards, temperature is higher than what is found a little inland to the west. The lowest temperature yet observed in the British Isles was ~~16°0, which occurred near Kelso in December 1879. In summer, every~~ where, latitude for latitude, temperature is lower in the west than in-the east and inland situations. In winter the inland climates are the coldest, but in summer the warmest. The course of the isothermal lines at this season is very instructive. Thus the line of 59° passes from the Solway directly northwards to the north of Perthshire and thence curves round eastwards to near Stonehaven. From Teviotdale to the Grampians temperature falls only one degree ; but for the same distanee farther northwards it falls three degrecs. The isothermal of 56° marks off the districts where the finer cereals are most successfully raised. This distribution of the temperature shows that the influence of the Atlantic in moderating the heat of summer is very great and is felt a long way into the interior of the country. On the other hand, the high lands of western districts by robbing the westerly winds of their moisture, and thus elearing the skies of eastern districts, exercise an equally striking effect in the opposite direction,—in raising the temperature.

There is nearly twice as much wind from the south-west as from the north-east, but the proportions vary greatly in different months. The south-west prevails most from July to October, and again from December to February ; accordingly in these months the rainfall is heaviest. These are the summer and winter portions of the year, and an important result of the prevalence of these winds, with their accompanying rains, which are coincident with the annual extremes of temperature, is to imprint a more strictly insular character on the Scottish climate, by moderating the heat of summer and the cold of winter. The north-east winds acquire their greatest frequency from March to June and in November, which are accordingly the driest portions of the year.

The mountainous regions of Scotland are mostly massed in the west and lie generally north and south, or approximately perpen- dicular to the rain-bringing winds from the Atlantic. Hence the westerly winds are turned out of their horizontal course, and, being thrust up into the higher regions of the atmosphere, their temperature is lowered, when the vapour is condensed into cloud and deposits in rain the water they can no longer hold in sus-pension. Thus the climates of the west are essentially wet. On the other hand, the climates of the east are dry, because the surface is lower and more level ; and the breezes borne thither from the west, being robbed of most of their superabundant moisture in eross- ing the western hills, are therefore drier and precipitate a greatly diminished rainfall. It thus happens that the driest climates in the east are those which have to south-westwards the broadest extent of mountainous ground, and that the wettest eastern climates are those which are least protected by high lands on the west. The breakdown of the watershed between the Firths of Clyde and Forth exposes southern Perthshire, the counties of Clackmannan and Kinross, and nearly the whole of Fife to the clouds and rains of the west, and their climates are consequently wetter than those of any other of the eastern slopes of the eountry. The driest elimates of the east, on the other hand, are in Tweeddale about Kelso and Jedburgh, the low grounds of East Lothian, and those on the Moray Firth from Elgin round to Dornoch. In these districts the annual rainfall for the twenty-four years ending 1883 was about 26 inehes, whereas over extensive breadths in the west it exceeds 100 inches, in Glencroe being nearly 180 inches and on the top of Ben Nevis 150 inches. (A. B.)

Popula- tion.

PART III.—STATISTICS.

Population ; Vital and Social Statistics. —At the end of the 15th century it is supposed that the population of Scotland did not exceed 500,000,—

Edinburgh having about 20,000 inhabitants, followed by Perth with about 9000, and Aberdeen, Dundee, and St Andrews each with about 4000. By the time of the Union in 1707 it is supposed to have reached 1,000,000, while according to the returns furnished by the clergy to Dr Webster in 1755 it was 1,265,380. At the time of the first Government census in 1801 it had reached 1,608,420. The increase through all the succeeding decades has been continuous, though fluctuating in amount, and in 1881 it had reached 3,735,578 (males 1,799,475, females 1,936,098),—an increase within the eighty years of 132 per cent. During the same period the population of England and Wales had increased 192 per cent., while the population of Ireland, owing to a rapid decrease since 1841, does not now differ greatly from what it was at the beginning of the century. The following table (I.) gives the areas of the various counties and of the whole of Scotland, the population in 1871 and 1881, the num- ber of persons to the square mile of land-surface in the latter year, and the increase or decrease per cent. between 1871 and 1881 :—

q Increase ; a Population. Pop. per ae

Counties, theres Sq. Mile, | Decrease

P 1881. per cent.

1871. 1881. 1871-1881

Aberdeen …... 1,262,098 } 244,608 | 267,990 187 + 9°56 EADY ec 5:< 2,184,274 75,679 76,468 24 + 1:04 EAS scesasetsre eieite 735,262 200,809 217,519 193 — 8°32 Banff pono coOdnE 413,791 62,023 62,736 98 cape 1LCTL Berwick…..... 297,161 36,486 35,392 Ti – 3:00 Jase! Sieceqresene 143,997 16,977 17,657 81 + 4:00 Caithness …... 448,867 39,992 38,865 57 = aoe Clackmannau .. 31,876 23,747 25,680 539 ap evil Dumbarton …. 172,677 58,857 76,3383 312 +27°99 Dumfries …... 705,946 74,808 76,140 72 + 1°78 Edinburgh ….| 234,996 | 398,379 | 389,164 1075 +18°51 Elgin or Moray 312,346 43,128 43,788 92 Se 153 Hiei, serena a 328,427 160,735 171,931 349 + 6°96 ORT ies occa 569,851 237,567 266,360 304 Sroleabe, Haddington …. 179,142 37,771 88,502 142 + 1°94 Inverness …... 2,767,078 88,015 90,454 22 ae 207 Ff Kincardine …. 248,195 34,630 34,464 90 – 0°48 KOMEOSS os ces 49,812 7,198 6,697 92° – 6°96

Kirkcudbright. . 610,343 41,859 42,127 47 + 0°64 Ganatk …..... 568,868 765,339 904,412 1026 =ilgeliy Linlithgow …. 81,113 40,965 43,510 363 ++ 6°21 Nairn…... seee| 127,906 10,225 10,455 58 + 2:95 Orkney and Orkney 85 | + 2°46 Shetland 638, 332 62,882 61,749 | Shetland 54 | – 6:02 Peebles …..... 227,869 12,330 13,822 39 ++12°10 ReMi ees tes 1,664,690 | 127,768 | 129,007 51 + 0:97 Renfrew…..... 162,428 216,947 263,374 1075 +21°40

Ross and Cro-

marty…....| 2,078,896 80,955 78,547 25 — 2:97 Roxburgh…... 428,464 49,407 58,442 80 ++ 8:17 Selkirk seeeretee ae 166,524 18,572 25,564 99 +37°65 Stitling .)..... 298, 579 98,218 | 112,448 251 ++14°48 Sutherland ….| 1,859,846 24,317 23,370 12 — 3°89 Wigtown …... 827,906 38,830 38,611 79 — 0°56 sc ee 19,777,490 | 2,360,018 | 3,735,578 12 | +1118

Table II. (see below) affords a comparison of the numbers of the population in 1861, 1871, and 1881 as grouped in towns, villages, and rural districts. The returns do not afford a means of comparison between earlier years than those given. A striking fact deserving of mention is that in every county in Scotland the population increased between 1801 and 1841, the increase being more than

10 per cent. in cach county, with the exception of Argyll, Perth, and Sutherland. The census returns for these years do not supply materials for an accurate estimate as to the increase of the purely rural or agricultural population, but it must have been considerable. Between 1841 and 1881 the following counties declined in population: — Argyll, Inverness, Kinross, Perth, Ross and Cromarty, Sutherland, and Wigtown,—all chiefly agricultural, and five of them in the Highlands, where much of the land was held by crofters. Only one county, Kinross, has a smaller population in 1881 than in 1801. Between 1851 and 1881 the island population, chiefly crofters, decreased by 4866, and the rural population between 1861 and 1881 by 125,583. In the following Highland counties the diminution in rural population between 1861 and 1881 was as follows :—Argyll from 60,109 to 46,081, Caithness from 28,279 to 24,309, Inverness from 74,439 to 67,355, Perth from 69,480 to 57,016, Ross and Cromarty from 59,147 to 49,882, and Sutherland from 21,560 to 18,696. In the total population of Scotland

the rate of increase was considcrably less between 1841 and 1881 than during the first forty years of the century,—42°5 to 62°9 per cent. The rates per cent. of increase in the several decades from 1801 have been as follows :—12-27, 15°82, 13°04, 10°82, 10°25, 6,9°72,and 11:18. The high rate of increase between 1871 and 1881 was due to an exceptional briskness of trade, and unless it has been maintained (which is not probable) the estimate of the registrar- general, which makes the population in 1885 number 3,907,736, must be regarded as much too sanguine. Table III. (see below) gives the population of the eight largest towns of Scotland at decennial periods since 1801. It is a curious fact that each of these towns has maintained its place in the "eight," although several towns now tread closely on the heels of Perth, whose rate of progress with that of Paisley has lagged greatly behind that of the other six.

While in England and Wales the number of persons to the square Distribu- mile in 1881 was 452 and in Ireland 159, in Scotland the number tion of was only 125, The small density of Scotland is due chiefly to the popula- In the north-western coun- tiou.

large proportion of mountainous land. ties the density was only 23 to the square mile, in the northern 34, in the west midland 68, in the southern 68, while in the north- eastern it was 115, in the cast midland 149, in the south-eastern 299, and in the south-western—Renfrew, Ayr, and Lanark—614. Table IV. (sec p. 529) shows by the excess of births over deaths the increase that should have taken place between 1861 and 1871, and between 1871 and 1881 (but for the balance of emigration over immigration), compared with the actual increase, the grouping being into towns with over 25,000 inhabitants, towns between 10,000 and 25,000, towns under 10,000 and above 2000, and rural districts. It is impossible to make a comparison between 1861 and 1881 inasmuch as the proportion of large and small towns and rural districts has varied. It must also be cxplaincd that in comparing 1861 and 1871 the census of 1861 is taken as the authority for the grouping and in comparing 1871 and 1881 the census of 1871. This table shows in both decades an actual increase in the large and in the principal towns greater than that resulting from excess of births over deaths. It is the result not only of migration from the small towns and rural districts but of the immigration of English, Irish, and foreigners, and the

return of natives of Scotland from abroad. By a comparison with Table II. it will be observed that the increase in the rural districts between the decades in Table IV. occurs only in the villages, and a closer examination of Table IV. further shows that any seeming increase is really delusive, and arises from the fact that there is no provision for the increase in

TABEE

anne eee en ee

. Increase or Decrease. Tucrease or Decrease Percentage Groep. Total Population. 1861 tols7l. 1871 to1ssl. to Total Population. | ee ee es 1861. 1871, | 1881 Actual. Percentage. Actual. Percentage. |} 1861. 1871. 1881. Si BO ec hya coy oa vient 1,616,134 1,951,704 2,306,852 +335,570 +20°76 +355,148 +18°20 52°78 | 58:09 | 61°75 Coen 339,740 386,993 447,884 + 47,253 +13°90 + 60,891 +15°78 11:09 | 11°52 | 11-99 Rural districts …....., 1,106,420 1,021,321 980,837 — 85,099 – 769 – 40,484 — 3:96 36°13 | 30°39 | 26-26 SCOHMH 2… ceo ce es 3,062,294 8,360,018 | 8,785,573 +297, 724 + 9°72 +375,555 +1118 | 100:00 | 100:00 | 100-00 TABLE III. Name, 1801. 1811. | 1921, 1831. 1841, | 1851. 1361. 1871. 1881. eae Edinburgh 136,548 132,977 | 160,302 168,121 196,979 298,38 5 os. :, |e 7 302 97 57 250,616 Leith 'a ee 136,351 25,855 25,984 30,919 33,628 44,280 59,485 68,414 GIGEBOW seca 77,058 108,224 140,432 198,030 261,004 329,097 394,864 477,156 551,415 519,965 Aberdeen …..... 26,992 34,640 43,821 56,681 63,288 71,973 73,805 88,108 105,189 113,212 Dundee… ss. cs 27,396 31,058 82,126 48,026 64, 629 78,931 90,417 118,977 140,239 152,838 ROG ase ivca cede 25,058 29,461 38,102 46,292 48,263 47,952 47,406 48,240 55,638 59,108 Greenock …..... 17,190 18,750 21,719 27,082 36,169 36,689 42,098 57,146 66,704 73,695 Perth …., 16,388 16,564 18,197

ano.do a 19,238 20,407 23,835 25, 250 25,585 28,980 31,322

Nation- ality.

Emigra-

tion.

Vital statistics.

STATISTICS. |

the number of small towns. Thus according to the grouping of 1871 the rural population of 1871 was nearly 28,000 less than the rural population of 1861 according to the grouping of 1861. It

is from the villages and small towns that the large towns are principally recruited, the purely rural population preferring as a rule to emigrate.

Table V. shows the nationalities of the people of Scotland in 1871 and 1881, with the nationalities in 1881 in those burghs which had a population of 10,000 and upwards :—

Burghs 1881.

Scotland 1871. Scotland 1881.

Nationalities, Per- Per- Per- Number. | centage ; Number. | centage | Number. | centage to Pop. to Pop. to Pop. SOO sopoaengedoo 8,061,531 | 91°117 | 8,397,759 | 90°957 1,429,012 | 87-116 lvsisih Bap apeeemees 207,770 6°184 5 5°856 | 141,626 8°634 HIMUISH 5. eee es 69,401 2°065 90,017 2°410 51,402 3°134 British colonials… 9,740} 0°290 12,874 0°345 7,768 0-473

British subjects

from abroad …. 5,068 07151 7,024 07188 4,954 0°254 Foreigners …... 4,698 07140 6,399 0171 4,171 0°302 REISE cece eiers eine 1,081 070382 1,806 0-048 882 0°054 From Channel Isles 729 0°021 949 0°025 545 0°033 NOTA)... se «ie 3,360,018 | 100°000 | 3,735,573 | 100-000 | 1,640,360 | 100-000

This table indicates not merely an actual but a proportional in-

crease in non-natives, there being an actual increase but a pro- portional decrease of natives of Ireland, and both an actual and a proportional increase of natives of England. Over the whole of Scotland the proportion

of non-natives is a little over 9 per cent., while in the burghs it is nearly 13 per cent. The number of persons of Scottish birth in Ireland in 1881 was 22,328, and in England it was 253,528,—a total in the two countries of 275,856. On the other hand, the natives of the two countries in Scotland in 1881 were together 308,762, so that therc is a smaller migra- tion from Scotland to these countries than from these countries to Scotland.

The following table (VI.) shows the emigration of persons of Scottish origin from the United Kingdom at various periods since 1853 :—

1866-70

85,621

1871-75

95,055

1856-60

59,016

1861-65

62,461

1876-80

70,596

1881-85

133,527

1853-85

568,790

1853-55

62,514

Years ….

Emigrants

Comparing 1856-60 with 1881-85 it will be seen that the number of emigrants has more than doubled,—an increase of course propor- tionately much greater than the population. There are no statistics as to the number of immigrants into Scotland ; and the significance of Table VI. is further lessened by the fact that it includes persons who may have been for some time resident in England or Ireland, or who may have been born there of Scottish parentage, and also sup- plies no information regarding emigration to the Continent. Ouly the principal ports, moreover, are included in the return.

The male population in 1881 was 1,799,475, an increase since 1871 of 12°2 percent. ; the female population 1,936,098, an increase of only 10°2 per cent. Since 1811, when there were 118°5 females to every 100 males, the proportion has been continuously diminishing, and in 1881 it was 107°6, but still greater than prevails either in England, which was 105°5, or in Ireland, which was 1043. The proportion differs greatly in different counties, being as high as 134°71 in Shetland, chiefly on account of the number of males at sea. In Scotland the proportion of female births is smaller than that of male births: in 1885 it was 100 to 105; and males preponderate in the population up till the age of twenty-five, clearly showing that the excess of females is due to male emigra- tion or the greater mortality of male occupations. The percentage

yp eon AlN ©

of illegitimate to the total number of births in 1855 was 7:8, and reached its maximum in 1865, when it was 10:2, while in 1885 it was 846. It is much higher in the lowland rural districts than in the Highland rural districts, and lowest in the large towns. The percentages of births, deaths, and marriages to population in the annual reports of the registrar-general are

in a great degree misleading, inasmuch as the estimated population generally differs greatly from the actual. They place it, however, beyoud doubt that the greatest birth, marriage, and mortality rates are in the town districts, that the smallest birth and marriage rates are in the insular districts, after which come the mainland rural districts, and that the mortality is not so high in the insular rural as in the mainland rural districts. Table VII. (see below) gives the percentage of single, married, and widowed to the total of each sex in Scotland, England and Wales, and Ireland respect- ively in 1881.

The number of blind persons in Scotland in 1881 was 3158 Blind, (males 1556, females 1602), the proportion to the total population &c.

being 1 in 1182 (males 1156, females 1208) ; the proportion in 1871 was lin 1112. The deaf and dumb in 1881 numbered 2142 (males 1149, females 993), the proportion to the total population being 1 in every 1744 as against 1 in every 1610 in 1871. The number of lunatics was returned as 8406 (males 3939, females 4467) or 1 in every 444 of the total population, the proportion in 1871 being 1 in every 494, In addition to this there were 5991 imbeciles (males 2896, females 3095), or 1 to every 623 of the population, the pro- portion in 1871 being 1 in every 727.

Table VIII. gives a classification of the population according to Occupa-

occupations in 1871 and 1881 :—

Per cent. of Total Pop.

ion. 1871. 1, Classes of Occupation 871 188 1871 reed 1. Professional …... 72,911 96,108 brill oan H, IDWS "Saoooane 159,403 176,565 4°74 4°73 SaCOMMETCIAIO =). 6 <1 114,694 132,126 3°41 8°54 4, Agricultural …... 270,008 269,537 8°04 21 De LOCUStrIall ss cs «0. – 751,281 932,653 22°36 24°97 6. Unproductive ….| 1,991,721 2,128,589 59°28 56°98

It should be explained that the apparent diminution in the pro- Pauper- portion of the nnproductive class may be accounted for by the fact ism.

that in 1871 paupers were returned in this class, whereas in 1881 they were returned under the occupation at which they used to work. The increase in the proportion of the professional and commercial classes is at least a slight indication of higher average prosperity, but this is more conclusively established by the fact that the number of paupers has for many years been steadily on the decline, the proportion being now (1886) only 2°4 of the population. The average cost of maintenance is, however, on the increase, owing entirely to the increased cost of the maintenance of the lunatic poor.

Crime, like pauperism, is also steadily declining, as is shown Crime.

by Table IX. :—

Average, 1884. Offences. Total. 1836-| 1851-| 1875-| 1880- 40. | 55. | 79. | 84, Males. | Females. Against Persom. conc. .cccee «s 751|1014| 881] 838} 905 75 980 Against property with violencc| 530} 532| 520) 524] 515 80 595 Against property without vio-

CTC OW eerste rec siace ede 1676 | 1916 | 1102] 980; 649 262 911 Against property, malicious..; 47/ 62) 122] 6&9 52 8 60 ROMEO ATCC C ea osony assie asi s/cuere close) 120) 109| 44] 48 36 6 42 OUlCTIOMCHCES net. cars ene ee 266| 247) 112] 122 82 7 89

3390 8880 |2781|2551| 2239 | 4388 | 2677

TABLE IV, Population according to || Population according to 'Increase or Decrease | Increase or Decrease Grouping in 1861. Grouping in 1871. from 1861 to 1871. from 1871 to 1881. Births | Deaths} Births | Deaths Groups. 1861-71. |1861-71.| 1871-81. |1871-81. ora aes 1861. 1871. 1871. 1881. Actual. ier Actual. asiers Deaths. Deaths. Principal towns…. 884,955 1,068,556 1,193,940 1,411,536 876,856 | 274,511 | 429,679 | 296,285 |) +183,601 | +109,345 | +217,596 | +133,394 Large towns sae 254,030 310,165 327,734 388,797 103,519 | 68,769) 150,095 | 94,498 |; + 56,185 | + 34,750] + 61,063 | + 55,597 Smailtowns .. 502,833 540,807 696,958 790,796 190,128 + 115,147 | 293,220 | 171,485 || + 37,974 | + 74,981] + 93,838 | +121,735 Rural districts . 1,420,476 1,440,490 1,141,386 1,144,444 450,288 | 247,769 | 361,357 | 203,200 |! + 20,014 | +202,519; + 3,058 | +-158,157 Scotland …... 3,062,294 8,360,018 3,360,018 8,735,573

|| 1,120,791 | 706,196 | 1,234,351 | 765,468 |’ +-297,724 | +-414,595 | +875,555 | +468,883 TABLE VII.

Scotland.

England and Wales. Treland.

Single. Married. Widowed. Single. Married. Widowed. Single. Married. Widowed. INANE S Wate aie) sieve s, cssalcuscereiaeiesns 66-281 30°441 8-278 61°932 34°628 3°440 68°714 27°501 3°785 SHG WPAN OS ar aics eielseieleleniers nile 62°854 28°957 8-189 59°226 33°282 7499 63°442 26°976 9°582

XXI, — 67

Roads.

Canals.

Rail- ways,

530

Communication.—In the 12th century an Act was passed provid- ing that the highways between market-towns should be at least 20 feet broad. Over the principal rivers at this early period there were bridges near the most populous places, as over the Dee near Aberdeen, the Esk at Brechin, the Tay at Perth, and the Forth near Stirling. Until the 16th century, however, traffic between distant places was carried on chiefly by pack-horses. The first stage-coach in Scotland was that which ran between Edinburgh and Leith in 1610. In 1658 there was a fortnightly stage-coach between Edinburgh and London, but afterwards it would appear to have been discontinued for many years. Separate Acts en- joining the justices of the peace, and afterwards along with them the commissioners of supply, to take measures for the maintenance of roads were passed in 1617, 1669, 1676, and 1686. These provisions had reference chiefly to what afterwards came to be known as “statute labour roads,” intended primarily to supply a means of communication within the several parishes. They were kept in

repair by the tenants and cotters, and, when their labour was not sufficient, by the landlords, who were required to " stent" (assess) themselves, customs also being sometimes levied at bridges, ferries, and causeways. By separate local Acts the 'statute labour'? was in many cases converted into a payment called "conversion money," and the General Roads Act of 1845 made the alteration universal. By the Roads and Bridges (Scotland) Act of 1878 the old organization for the management of these roads was entirely superseded in 18838. The Highlands had good (mili- tary) roads earlier than the rest of the country. The project, begun in 1725, took ten years to complete, and the roads were afterwards kept in repair by an annual parliamentary grant. In the Lowlands the main lines of roads have been constructed under the Turnpike Acts, the earliest of which was obtained in 1750. Originally they were maintained by tolls exacted from those who used them; but this method was—after several counties had obtained separate Acts for its abolition—superseded throughout Scotland in 1883 by the general Act of 1878, providing for the maintenance of all classes of roads by assessment levied by the county road trustees.

Scotland possesses two canals constructed primarily to abridge the sea passage round the coast,—the Caledonian and the Crinan. The Caledonian Canal, extending from south-west to north-east, a distance of 60 miles along the line of lochs from Loch Linnhe on the west coast to the Moray Firth on the east coast, was begun in 1803, opened while yet unfinished in 1822, and com- pleted in 1847, the total cost being about £1,300,000. Constructed originally to afford a quicker passage for ships to the east coast of Scotland and the coasts of Europe, it has, owing to the increased size of vessels, ceased to fulfil this purpose, its chief service having been in opening up a picturesque route for tourists, assisting local trade, and affording a passage for fishing boats between the east and west coasts. The Crinan Canal, stretching across the Mull of Cantyre from Loch Gilp to Jura Sound, a distance of 9 miles, and admitting the passage of vessels of 200 tons burden, was opened in 1801 at a cost of over £100,000. The principal boat canals are the Forth and Clyde or Great Canal, begun in 1798, between Grange- mouth on the Forth and Bowling on the Clyde, a distance of 30} miles, with a branch to Port Dundas, making the total distance 33% miles ; the Union Canal between Edinburgh and the Forth and Clyde Canal at Port Dundas, near Glasgow, completed in 1822 ; and the Monkland

Canal, completed in 1791, connecting Glasgow with the Monkland mineral district and communicating with a lateral branch of the Forth and Clyde Canal at Port Dundas. Several other canals in Scotland have been superseded by railway routes.

The first railway in Scotland for which an Act of Parliament was obtained was that between Kilmarnock and Troon (92 miles), opened in 1812, and of course worked by horses. A similar rail- way, of which the chief source of profit was the passenger traffic, was opened between Edinburgh and Dalkeith in 1831, branches being afterwards extended to Leith and Musselburgh. By 1840 the length of the railway lines in Scotland for which Bills were passed was 1914 miles, the capital being £3,122,133. The chief railway companies in Scotland are the Caledonian, formed in 1845, total capital in 1884-85 £37,999,933; the North British, of the same date, total capital £32,821,526 ; the Glasgow and South-Western, formed by amalgamation in 1850, total capital £13,230,849 ;

so Oo TLAR ®

[sTaTIsTics,

the Highland, formed by amalgamation iu 1865, total capital £4,445,316 ; and the Great North of Scotland, 1846, total capital £4,869,983. The management of the small branch lines belonging to local companies is generally undertaken by the larger companies. By 1849 there were 795 miles of railway in Scotland. The follow- ing table (X.) shows the progress since 1857 (see also RAILWay, vol. xx. pp. 226-230) :—

ad Passengers. g : & Receipts a 8 Sp ” se ES! from Year. = &5| First | Second a ae Total Se B £) Goods Total. |} Class. | Class. Clases: ES oe Trains.

1857 |1248)1,823,542/2,180,284)10,729,677|14,738,503| 916,697|1,584,781|2,501,478 1874 |2700|4,261,473/3,769,485|30,189,934|38,220,89212, 350, 5938/3, 884,424 6,235,017 1884 |2999/4,711,600 2,715,982/46,877,642|54,305,074|2, 931,737 4,426,028 7,357,760 | et ee eee ee Agriculture.—Table XI. shows the divisions of land as regards ownership according to the return (the latest) of 1873 :—

S 3 5 ke be Zl . BE £ fe Gross | & be E Owners holding each 2qa = § Annual | o@ [E< . BE BS Value. | x [Sd Be Da “| oO |\o'as ea 13) DA lO6o a Pes £ es: (hessatl aml acres) site. yaei acces 113,005 28,177) 5,800,046/205 17 ral More than 1 acre and less than 10..}| 9,471 29,327|| 1,433,106] 48 17 re " 10 r 50..| 38,4691 77,619|| 8$43,471| 10 17| “4 s 50 , 100..| 1,213) 86,483) 880,345] 4 5 100 = 500..| 2,367| 556,372/| 1,674,773] 8 0| 2:9 »» 500 a 1,000..) 826} 582,741)| 1,263,524 2 3] 8-1 », 1,000 ie 2,000..| 596] $85,242'| 1,179,756] 1 8} 4:4 2,000 :, 5,000..| 587] 1,848,378|| 1,946,507} 1 1] 9:7 yy 8,000 i 10,000 250} 1,726,869 | 1,043,519] 012) 9-1 >, 10,000 _ 20,000 159] 2,150,111)| 965,166} 0 9) 11°3 », 20,000 5 50,000 108) 3,071,728) 945,914] 0 6] 16-2 y, 80,000 » 100,000 44] 3,025,616] 588,788] 0 4] 16°0 100,000 and upwards …..... 24] 4,931,884} 623,148! 0 3) 2671 IGRI Base paneesGaunes > soontes i 06 10,740} .. 6G INOMentall ssaleerears cis case se vineinree iil 1147 a on 20 TOtal ecccss cece eee 132,136]18, 946, 694|/18,698,804] 1 0! 100-0

Scotland, as compared with either England or Ireland, is em- phatically a country of large proprietors. Taking the population of 1871 as the basis of comparison, a little over 3°9 per cent. of the population of Scotland have a share in the ownership of the soil, the proportion in England and Wales being about 5 per cent., while in Ireland it is only about 1°7. On an average each owner in England possesses 33 acres, in Scotland 148, and in Ireland 293. While in Ireland, however, only a little over one-half of the number

Owner- ship of 7 soil.

of proprietors possess less than 1 acre, and in England about five- .

*sevenths, this class in Scotland amounted to about five-sixths of the whole. They possessed only *1 per cent. of the total area, the re- maining 99°9 being possessed by 19,131 persons, while 171 persons held 58°3, and 68 persons 42°1. Whereas in England 1 and in Ireland only 3 proprietors held upwards of 100,000 acres each, in Scotland there were 24 persons who each held more than this amount, and together they possessed 26-1 per cent. of the total area. The 'excessive size of the propertics of Scotland may be partly accounted for by the fact that a large proportion of the land is so mountainous and unproductive as to be unsuitable for division into small properties; but two other causes have also powerfully co-operated with this, viz., the wide territorial authority exercised by some of the lowland nobles, as the Scotts and Douglases, and such powerful Highland nobles as the Argylls and Breadalbanes, and the stricter law of entail introduced by the Act of 1685 (see EnTarL, vol. viii. p. 452). The largest estates are thus in the hands of the old hereditary families. The almost absolute power anciently wielded by the landlords, who within their own territories were lords of regality, tended to hinder in- dependent agricultural enterprise, and it was not till after the abolition of hereditary jurisdictions in 1746 that agriculture in Scotland made any real progress.*

The following table (XII.) gives a classification of the holdings Holdings.

of Scotland in 1875 and 1880 :—

50 Acres and From 50 to 100 From 100 to 300 From 300 to 500 From. 500 to 1000 under. Acres. Acres. Acres. Acres. Above 1000 Acres. Total. a SS SS

| SS @ Area in Area in Area in Area in Area in |e Area in Area in Number. icra Number "A eves: Number Rees: Number. ores. Number. eves. Number. cee. Number. ROE. 1875 | 56,311 | 666,356 9878 697,620 | 11,828 {1,980,081 | 1967 729,885 691 427,478 126 109,675 | 80,796 | 4,611,095 1880 | 55,280 | 653,295 9726 721,844 | 12,348 | 2,082,914] 2007 750,295 661 418,650 79 114,298 | 80,101 | 4,741,296

It will be observed that nearly one-half of the total area of the hold- ings is occupied by those possessing from 100 to 300 acreseach. The holdings over 300 acres are generally sheep farms, and it is to the enterprise of the medium class of holders that the agricultural progress of Scotland is chiefly due. A society of improvers in the knowledge of agriculture was fouuded in 1723, but ceased to

exist after the Rebellion of 1745; and the introduction of new and improved methods, where not the result of private enterprise, has been chiefly associated with the efforts of the Highland Society, instituted in 1783, and latterly known as the Highland and Agri- cultural Society. A great stimulus was also afforded in the be- ginning of the 19th century by the high prices obtained during the

Land- Continental wars, and, although periods of occasional severe depres- | right to security of tenure ; but when the old feudal system of the lord and sion have occurred since then, not only has the science of agriculture | Highlands was suddenly abolished after the Rebellion of 1745 no tenant. continued rapidly to advance but the position of the large farmer | legal steps were taken for the recognition of this right, and from has until within recent years been one of increasing prosperity. | the beginning of the 19th century wholesale clearances of tenants The system of nineteen years' lease had proved, as regards both | were carried out in many districts even by the heirs of the old agricultural progress and the interests of the farmer, a much superior | Highland chiefs. In the words of the report of the crofters com- arrangement to the system of yearly tenancy so largely prevailing | mission of 1884 :—"The crofter of the present time has through in England; but it was conjoined with customs and modified by | past evictions been confined within narrow limits, sometimes on eonditions which during the period of agricultural distress prevail- | inferior land and exhausted soil. He is

subject to arbitrary ing since 1872 have caused the relations between landlord and | augmentations of money rent, he is without security of tenure, and tenant to become severely strained. The more prominent griev- | has only recently received the concession of compensation for im- ances of the farmer were the difficulty of obtaining sufficient com- | provements." The crofters in Scotland are now estimated to pensation for improvements, the inconveniences resulting from the | number 40,000 families or 200,000 persons, and many of them sup- law of hypothec (see HypoTHEC, vol. xii. p. 598), and the hardships | port themselves partly by fishing. In the struggle for existence suffered from the existence of the game laws. Hypothec was | they have had to eontend against the tendency towards the creation abolished in 1879, except as regards the Act of Sederunt ; aground | of large farms, the demand for sporting estates, the desire of game Act was passed in 1880; and, succeeding the report of the | landlords to escape the burden of poor rates, and the fact that duke of Richmond's commission in 1882, the Agricultural Holdings | they have absolutely no choice as regards the conditions imposed Act was passed in 1883, containing provisions for securing to the | on them by the landlord. In Mareh 1883 a commission was ap- tenant control in the disposition of his lease, and also compensation | pointed to inquire into the condition of the cotters and crofters in for improvements; but already it is evident that these reforms | the Highlands and islands of Scotland ; this commission gave in have failed to meet the difficulties created by the altered conditions | its report in 1884, and an Act based on their recommendations was of things, due to the increasing scarcity of land and the import- | passcd in 1886. ation of foreign produce. Notwithstanding the unsatisfactory condition of agricultural Distribu- Crofters. While the relations between the landlord and the large farmer | affairs in Scotland at present, there is no country in the world tion of

STATISTICS, |

cannot be regarded as satisfactory, the difficulties of the crofters— small holders now chiefly to be found in the western Highlands and the islands to the north and west of Scotland—have reached a more acute stage. The crofter systeni prevailing in Orkney and Shetland—described in the article on those islands—has a totally different origin from that prevailing in the Highlands. On account of the ancient relations between the Highlander and

his chief, the inheritance is claimed by the Highland crofters of an inalienable

Yearly Averages.

se eTisA ND

531

where farming is prosecuted with more skill and enterprise. On account of the great variety of soil and climate the methods in operation differ greatly in different districts, and for special details the reader is referred to the articles on the several counties. The following table (X11I.) shows the cultivated area and the areas under each kind of crop in different years, with the proportion of the acreage under each kind of crop, &c., to every 1000 acres of cultivated land for 1885 in Scotland, England, and Ireland : —

Average per 1000 Acres 1885.

crops.

1880. 1885.

1867-70. 1871-75. Scotland. | England. Ireland. Acres. Acres. Acres. Acres. Acres Acres Total aereage under crops, bare fallow, and grass 4,420,375 4,560,825 4,738,127 4,845,805 1000 1000 EMIMAMEMbMIASLULE! olsls els ols)e/clclsiel ele v1 vie 6 slelein ele 1,036,844 1,084,983 1,159,353 1,220,000 492 673 JNEL DIG GUNG so.msoeeooenoe HOoU DONE OOCoOU OIC EAGaS 8,383,531 3,475,842 3,578,774 3,625,805 508 Bee Corn crops— \WIDCES ee qseduodans conganooun ee DB OUD OHH DS 124,296 122,513 73,976 55,155 95 5 Iautley F WORE gnoecgcncugs 0nonvooD os opDAde 227,988 252,105 264,120 237,472 76 11 RRM re oe erin eeen eins 1,011,480 1,007,339 1,037,254 1,046,285 66 87 IENP® send doco nocd dboagnoncocdsnatnn cocosEDS 8,135 10,480 7,333 7,095 2 1 IEETING . dlouesun sea Sonn pnerinn COUODLNUCe mar: 23,711 26,746 19,977 23,135 16 DRO RSC ME eeieicie derclciisie ste wei s.coidels creccaaiecelesieialy 2,367 95382 227, 1,750 9 Total undercom

€rops) .....—.... 1,397,977 1,421,515 1,403,887 1,370,892 264. 104 Green crops— IPODS ene. coee.qann coopodMOdMOGnnoeUoddne 170,978 167,880 187,061 148,994 14 53 PUES PATIL SAVECLES!.,. «./+e1-1s\ele.s ce cies el seiee nie 490,598 503,709 485,987 484,213 59 20 LUE SN ooongcoocabconnenonuepanean oHDeHA OE 944 1,748 1,822 1,495 14 2; ChIRWGES oa96.0n oo TODD GOUUCODS COMOOOUTEIO OoUOEE 964 1,048 1,393 1,296 1 BS Cabbage, kohl-rabi, and rape … ..... 8,441 4,656 5,478 5,833 6 3 Wailea, Oi; "boronauce Osean rece ame 14,529 14,780 15,705 18,088 16 2 Motalwundenereenverops …. 5.20. c— ee. 681,454 693,821 697,446 659,919 110 80 GMASseS UMGACT TOUALION 4 sens cccceeeccccs cess 1,248,747 1,338,106 1,455,745 1,571,745 110 134 PSAP te tia vorsrere afeiets©cisyniecsisioie sls Giere'acoieie.avaieraiora s 1,417 731 182 41 an ff 180/05 Gu coon OOH CE NOGOC. 60 SCAB COE eC r ae aneTG 1 He ae ae 8 ao TLSUGR an vensoadacusseteeee me Mere eee 54,289 21,669 21,514 23,208 21 1

1857, 1884, and 1885, with the average yield per acre in the Yield of

The earliest year included in this table (1867) is the date at which last two years :— erops.

the agricultural statistics began to be collected and published by the Board of Trade. The work previous to this had been under- taken by the Highland and Agricultural Society of Seotland, but

Average per Acre

1857. 1884. 1885.

their returns were necessarily less complete and accurate. The iss4. | 1885. return for 1857, for example, gives the arable acreage (" acreage aa SS – under a rotation of crops") as 3,776,572; but this is clearly too Bene : ie 38607 ee nie ae ae . — . 2 = Ht) Om

much, as it exceeds that of 1885, and since 1867 there has been | | Oats ~.. 32,750,763 | 36,718,321 | 38,407,127 | 35°10 | 31°93 a gradual increase. Only a little over one-fourth of the area of | | Beans i be 1,087,760 705,398

709,577 | 32:23 | 30°67 Scotland is cultivated, while in England only one-fourth is left } | Pease . ada 38,551 37,464 | 24°74 | 21-41

. be taken into consideration Turnips .. Tons 6,690,109 7,532,77 6,496,189 | 15°53 15°39 uncultivated. It must, however, be ta Potatoes.. ,, 430,468 986,808 803,523 | 6°02 5°39

that in the agrienltural returns " permanent pasture" does not

inelude the mountainous districts whieh form such a large por- tion of the surface of Scotland, where heaths and natural grasses occupy the soil and yield a scanty herbage for sheep and cattle. In the return "' permanent pasture" is represented as occupying an area little more than a third as large as that occupied by arable land, while in England the two areas are pretty nearly equal, but as a matter of fact pasturage plays a much more im- portant part in the economy of the Scottish than of the English farmer. It will be observed that as regards the main divisions of arable land the total areas under both corn crops and green crops have becn slightly decreasing, while there has been a considerable increase in the area under rotation grasses. The fol- lowing table (XIV.) shows the yield of the principal crops in

This table being founded on estimates can, of course, only be regarded as approximately correet. The average yield of both wheat and barley is higher than that of England, while the average yield of both oats and potatoes is lower, which may be accounted for by the fact that the first two crops occupy the best soils of Scotland, while the last two occupy every variety of soil in the country. Wheat is grown chiefly in the sea-coast districts and the fertile river-valleys. The area under wheat has declined more than a half since 1867, the combined causes of this being wet seasons and increased foreign competition. Barley, for which the distilleries keep up a steady demand, and oats, the staple crop of the country, have rather increased in area since 1867. The area under potatoes— a very uncertain crop—has rather declined within recent years, and

that under turnips has considerably declined, partly owing to the increased use of artificial stuffs in cattle-feeding. The following

SsCOTLA NS

[STATISTICs.

in the Lowlands, especially in the hilly south-western districts. The grouse moors of Scotland occupy a much more extensive area, and are

*Live table (XV.) shows the number of live stock in different years, with | also much more widely distributed, while they supply sport to a stock. the average number to every 1000 acres of cultivated land in 1885 | much greater number of persons. Ptarmigan and blackcock are in Scotland and Eneland :— * | abundant in many districts ; and pheasants and partridges, as well a as hares, are carefully preserved on many estates in the cultivated Average districts. Rabbits are common throughout the whole country. Fox-Yearly Average. abet 100 | | hunting is a fashionable sport in most of the Lowland counties; but 1880. apes tee otter-hunting has almost died out. The bear, wolf, and beaver, at 1867-70. | 1871-78 Scot-|Eng-| | one time common in Scotland, have become extinct. The last wolf, i ‘ land./land.| | it is said, was killed by Sir Ewen Cameron of Lochiel in 1680. The Horas eta ee “~~ 1”~”| | wild cat is still to be found in the Highlands, and the polecat, ermine, Used solely for agricultural and pine marten exist in considerable numbers. The golden eagle I Co BE cn Beco 138,564, 186,689}/ 141,332) 141,522] 29] 30 _ vee ee eal: tenant the spe pe ti ergo? Unbroken horses and mares ut other larger birds of prey, as the osprey and the kite, are Kept FOr DEBSHINE —2-7- gl) eera| | ae a becoming seiee, In all a are more ‘aven, 300 species of birds Totalihorses’ ...—..-.< 1172,871) 178,652]| 194,013) 188,292] 39] 48) | in Scotland, including a great variety of water-fowl in the sea oan ee | al) "tuut\me twa} sala! | vandemnilancdiioelns: : af, a er ca leslie onesie Fisheries.—Details regarding the Scottish fisheries will be found Fisheries Cin calf ys sesesrorsscoq| 880,800] 992,252]| 67,195) a1o,z10l sr| 74| | under Fisuinrms (vol. ix. pp. 257-262), ‘The former Board of White Other ee old Hiei Gotaaall Hace! See! eA ae eee Fishery was abolished in 1882 and the Fishery Board of Gh DONT Sa ? , 58,9 p Scotland established, which has devoted more systematic attention MBER EPPO Hy eae] S928) SON ae, ee*

™) | to the collection of statistics and the gencral shicouiapenaiaat of the Total cattle…..... 1,022,886 /1, 127,887//1,099,286)1,176,004| 243] 189/ | industry. In 1856 the herring and deep-sea fisheries engaged only anes ile | Lia peep en neon in Scotland, oa in mii ae ee basis = or indirectly 103,804 persons, while the total estimated produce Under one year old..-+-7-[ese 149 averid|aaa0 972 Soap Tee| sas] ooo | | in 1884 was valued at £8,851/848,—the value of cured fish being se ——__|__ || | £2,279,614 (herrings, £2,121,346; cod, ling, and hake dried, Totalisheepin… <<... 6,937,977|7,161,122/|7,072,088|6, 957,198) 1436 _ 876) | £149,407 ; ditto pickled, £8861) ; of white fish sold fresh, £716,295 a : aon (haddocks, £300,712; herrings, £150,720; cod, ling, and hake, Bivens ea 153,959] 166,148) 120,925] 150,984) 31| 82 £57,445 Yorsk and amie £10,481 ; whitings, £32,808 ; sprats, This table does not indicate any constant decrease or increase in co Ce bee ; eee ans age es any of the classes of live stock. It will be observed that the average ne O7). f bi re . ne 93 ye a – - = a ae 00 ade number of cattle to the acreage of cultivated land in Scotland is = 1)3 of shell-lish, £ ne 3 alld o of liane asia Ith of about a third more than in England, and of sheep more than double ining Industries.—The chief sources of the mineral wealth of Coal, as many ; but the number of pigs in England is more than double Scotland are coal and iron, Which are generally found in convenient as many to the acreage of cultivated land as it is in Scotland, and | J¥Xtaposition. The principal coal-fields are ese ee a the number of horses is greater. The special breeds of horses in oer eae Bogle). pee ae of digging bb bi a oe a Scotland are the Shetland ponies, the Highland ponies, and the Be ET conferred 2 e a om i sia . ao mae f Clydesdale draught horses, the latter originally bred in the Clydes- N bai i Abb a nee aL f oe Me = 7 Lec ; ‘ Tae i dale district from crossing with Flemish stallions imported about oo ee a 1 us “att ms: ds Pons Pi 5 II s y ss t 4 the beginning of the 18th century. The breeds of cattle include So and a y an (a aera oe te 4 a us 4 Me the Ayrshire, which, since they are chiefly noted for their yield of ee 4 e 1st Sen HES he “808 ee oy 7 ‘oh a milk, and are specially adapted for dairy farms (which prevail people received at the church doors a species of stone whic we especially in the south-west of Scotland), have in a great mcasure burned in ples of wood ; ee the value of coal for sone supplanted the Galloway in their native district, except where these and artificer’s work was early recognized, x bid i. lie ae ‘4 are kept for feeding purposes; the polled Angus or Aberdeen, fair employed for eke a

eed eee) oF a va oe Ce a milkers, but chiefly valuable for their beef-making qualities, and century. In pid et ce ei gee i fr ed gt on this account, as well as their hardihood, in especial favour in | S°TV!¢e at the works at ~ ag me bee joe or ue the north-east of Scotland, where the art of cattle-feeding has emancipation did not take place till 1799. An Act was passed Pa reached its greatest perfection; and the west Highland breed, _ forbidding the employment of children of tender years and noted for their long horns, their shagginess, the decided character of women in underground mines, According – the census of 1851, of their various colours—black, red, dun, cream, and brindle— the number of persons engaged in connexion with coal-mining was and their power of thriving on wild and heathy pasture. The 36,973 males and 358 females (the latter employed above ground), special breeds of sheep are the fine-woolled breed, peculiar to Shet- and in 1881 the numbers were 58,340 and 401. According to the land ; the blackfaced, native to the Highland districts; and the mineral statistics of 1885 there were 69,425 persons employed in Cheviots, native to the range of hills of that name, and now the on coal-mines of 5 oe eee oaey oe vig oe and i ace favourite breed in the south of Scotland, although border Leicesters ule eat a ane PUL pay be in twenty years has a and other English breeds, as well as a variety of crosses, are kept | More than dou ed. In 1854 it was 7,488,000 tons, by 1866 it ha for winter feeding on the lowland farms. increased to 12,034,638, and in 1884 it was 21,186,688. ; Forests. | The area under orchards as returned on 4th June 1885 was 1892 hue Wass the iron industry in Scotland dates from the establish~ Irom acres and under nursery grounds 1654. Orchards, chiefly for apples, pee in 1760 of a Carron ironworks near Falkirk. The 1 are most numerous in the Carse of Gowrie and the neighbourhood | 0! Persons employed in iron-mining in 1851 was 1648, eS ea of Perth, and along the banks of the Clyde above Hamilton. manufacture 13,296; and by 1881 the numbers had increased The area under woods in 1812 was 907,695 acres, of which 501,469 respectively to 10,473 and 38,309. The total output of iron ore acres were natural woods and 406,226 planted ; by 1872 it had and ironstone in Scotland in 1884 was 1,885,376 tons, valued at declined to 734,490, but by 1881 (d.¢., by the latest return) it had £854,416, less than the estimated er in 1858, which was increased to 829,476, the principal increase having been in Aberdeen, 2,312,000 We sy valued at £750,000. There has oon bod ie cae um Perth, and Inverness, the counties where the growth of woods is

the manufacture of pig-iron since about 1866. ‘The imports of iron largest. The Board of Trade returns do not distinguish between ore were 356,380 tons in eee valued at £359,918, = — planted and natural woods, but it is well known that large cuttings 406,007 tons, valued at £356,451. The production of Meee have been made in the indigenous forests of the Hi chlands, while increased with great rapidity after the introduction of re at the same time considerable attention has been paid within the In 1796 the quantity produced was 18,640 tons, and in 1830 a Z present century to the growth of plantations in the Lowlands, partly 37,500 ; in 1840 it had naa to 241,000, in 1845 le jel _ 86 : asa covert for game; the science of forestry has made great ad- to 1,164,000 ; but = 1884 it was only 988,000, the a ustry ville vances within recent years owing to the encouragement and guid- confined to Ayrshire, Fifeshire, and Pere apc a Herne = ance of the Scottish Arboricultural Society, established in 1854, and forges in operation are confined to the a ea e ‘Tl ae and of the Highland and Agricultural Society. The modern planta- | 7" ae 22 works, 334 puddling furnaces, and 82 rol ing ae S. o 4 tions are formed chiefly of Scotch fir with a sprinkling of larch. 1884 there were 63 open-hearth steelworks in Pago a. On the botany of Scotland H. C. Watson’s Topographical Botany | 46,were in Glasgow, 10 in Holytown, 4 in Motherwell, and 3 in (1883) may be consulted. Wishaw, the quantity made in 1884 being 208,650 tons. ; Deer According to the report of the crofters commission, the area under Since about the years 1850-55 shale-mining has become a ee forests, deer forests in Scotland is 1,975,209 acres, or about one-tenth of the | Portant industry, especially in Linlithgowshire and Midlothian, ae oe game, whole area of the country. The species of deer peculiar to the | t2e total quantity raised in Scotland in 1884 being 1,469,649 Me indus- &c. Scottish Highlands is the red deer; the fallow deer is not uncommon | Valued at £370,024. Lead ore is worked at Abington in Lanark- tries.

shire and Wanlockhead in Dumfriesshire ; the dressed lead ore

1 These figures are for 1870 only. obtained amounts to 4327 tons, valucd at £34,997, and yielding

STATISTICS. |

3219 tons of lead and 20,011 ounces of silver. The amount of fire-

SseOoTrTLaAN ©

533

Spindles.

clay dug in 1884 was 463,294 tons, valued at £56,237. Stone quarry- Sonne Ree. | | eae Persons “ ially of it dst flacst Jat dli i ee 5 Loomis. employed. ing, especially of granite, sandstone, flagstone, slate, and limestone, Spinning. | Doubling.

1 is extensively carried on, but the returns of the several amounts

| raised annually are incomplete. The number of persons engaged | | jg677“ “7) Le a pee Ebi Z ae : Stee. | | ier… 7,579 19,917 77,195 in quarries in 1881 was 13,742, and the value of the materials raised | | 1878….. 205,268 | 18,495 16,756 36,476*

—

Woollen Manufactures. —Although a company of woollen weavers was | lished eotton-factories in 1785 at New Lanark, afterwards so closely cloth. incorporated by the town council of Edinburgh in 1475, the cloth | associated with the socialistic schemes of his son-in-law, Robert worn by the wealthier classes down to the beginning of the 17th | Owen, and thus laid the foundation of the industry in the two century was of English or French manufacture, the lower classes | counties, Lanark and Renfrew, which are now its principal seats wearing “ coarse eloth made at home,” in the fashion still prevailing | in Scotland. Nine-tenths of the cotton-factories of Scotland are | in the remoter districts of the Highlands. In 1601 seven Flemings | now concentrated in Glasgow, Paisley, and the neighbouring towns, | were brought to Edinburgh by commissioners from the burghs to | but the industry extends into other districts of the west of Scotland instruct the people in the manufacture of serges and broadcloth, and | and is also represented in the counties of Aberdeen, Perth, and eight years later a company of Flemings was established in the | Stirling. The following table (XVII.) gives particulars for 1850, | Canongate (Edinburgh) for the manufacture of cloth under the | 1861, 1875, and 1885 :— special

protection of the king; but, notwithstanding also the | ~~} establishment in 1681 of an English company for the manufacture Years. Factories. | Spindles. – sat Benens of woollen fabrics near Haddington, the industry for more than Le aassiealee| | Siteameniend 9 Sncateee cl Le fifty years after this made very tardy progress in the country. In 1850 . 168 1,683,093 23,564 34,325 fact its importance dates from the introduction and improvement 1861 ….....— 163 1,915,398 30,110 41,237 of machinery in the 19th century. The most important branch of ie po Se a an see ee ve trade, that of tweeds, first began to attract attention shortly | |” aes é s after 1830; though still having its principal seat in the district r furth ti : ine i : from which it takes its name, including Galashiels, Hawick, In- one Fe eam PREIS SH NS ORRO OES. nerleithen, and Selkirk, it extends to a large number of towns Silk is manufactured in Paisley and Glasgow, but the industry Silk, &e. throughout Scotland, especially to Aberdeen, Elgin, Inverness, is of minor importance, employing only about 600 persons. Floor- Stirling, Bannockburn, and Paisley. The chief seat of the hosiery | cloth is manufactured at Kirkcaldy, where also the first linoleum trade is Hawick. Carpet manufacture has had its principal seat factory in Scotland was established in 1877. in Kilmarnock since 1817, but is also carried on in Aberdeen, Ayr, Next to textile fabrics, the most important manufacture in Whisky. Bannockburn, Glasgow, Paisley, and other towns. Tartans are | Scotland is that of whisky, in which it has Ireland for its largely manufactured in Tillicoultry, Bannockburn, and Kilmarnock, | only competitor. Distillation was introduced into Seotland from and shawls and plaids are largely manufactured in several towns. | England, but by 1771 large quantities of spirits were sent to In 1850 there were in Scotland 188 woollen and worsted factories, | England from Scotland. The legal manufacture of whisky was with 233,533 spindles and 247 power-looms, employing 10,210 | greatly checked in the 19th century by occasional excessive ad- persons. Twenty-eight years later (1878) the total number of | vances in the rates of duty, but after the reduction to 2s. 43d. per factories was 246, in which there were 559,021 spinning spindles, | gallon in 1823 the number of licensed distillers rapidly increased, 62,018 doubling spindles, and 6284 power-looms, the number of } while illegal distillation became much less common. The following persons employed being 22,667, of whom 10,083 were males and | table (XVIII.) shows the number of gallons made in various years 128 584 females. since 1824 :— Linen The

manufacture of cloth from flax is of very ancient date in and jute. Scotland, and towards the close of the 16th century Scottish linen Year Gallons. Year. Gallons. Year Gallons. cloths were largely exported to foreign countries, besides having an 1894 5.108.373 1955 11.283.636 1878 17,670,460 extensive sale in England. Regulations in regard to the manufacture 1840 9,082,353 1865 13,445,752 1884 20,164,962

in 1884 was estimated at £1,030,650. The principal granite works occur in Aberdeenshire and Kirkeudbrightshire, while freestone quarries are common throughout the greater part of the Lowland district, although whinstone also is frequently used for building purposes. Large quantities of paving stones are exported from Caithness and Forfarshire, and there are very extensive slate-quarries at Ballachulish and other places in Argyllshire.

were passed in 1641 and 1661. In a petition presented to the privy council in 1684, complaining of the severe treatment of Scotsmen selling linen in England, it was stated that 12,000 persons were engaged in the manufacture. Through the intercession of the secretary of state with the king these restrictions were removed. To further encourage the trade it was enacted in 1686 that the bodies of all persons, with the exception of poor tenants and cotters, should be buried in plain linen only, spun and made within the kingdom. The Act was repeated in 1693 and 1695, and in the former year another Act was passed prohibiting the export of lint and permitting its import free of duty. At the time of the Union the annual amount of linen cloth manufactured in Scotland is supposed to have been about 1,500,000 yards. The Union gave

Principally owing to foreign competition, the linen manufacture has within recent years been in a very languid condition.

The first cotton-mill in Scotland was built at Rothesay by an Cotton.

English Company in 1778. It was soon afterwards acquired by David Dale, who was the agent in Scotland for Arkwright, and had the invaluable aid of his counsel and advice. Dale also estab-

Ale was a common beverage in Scotland as early as the 12th century, there being one or more brew-houses attached to every religious house and barony. So important was the use of the bever- age even in the beginning of the 18th century that a threatened imposition of a tax on malt in 1725 led to serious riots in Glasgow and a proposal to repeal the Union. Though ale has been super- seded by whisky as the national beverage, Seotland still possesses several large breweries, and Edinburgh ales vie in repute with those of Burton-on-Trent. The number of barrels charged with duty in Scotland in 1885 was 1,237,323, the number in England being

24,519,173.

The first sugar-refinery in Scotland was erected in 1765 in Miseel-

Greenock, where the industry made rapid progress and has still laneous its principal seat, although it is extensively carried on in Leith indus- and in a lesser degree in Glasgow and Dundec. Glass-making, tries.

a eonsiderable impetus to the manufacture, as did also the establishment of the Board of Manufactures in 1727, which applied

a

an annual sum of £2650 to its encouragement, and in 1729 established a colony of French Protestants in Edinburgh, on the site of the present Picardy Plaee, to teach the spinning and weaving of cambric. From 1st November 1727 to lst November 1728 the amount of linen cloth stamped in Scotland was 2,183,978 yards, valued at £103,312, but by the year ending 1st November 1771 it had increased to 13,672,548 yards, valued at £632,389, during the year ending 1st November 1798 to 21,297,059, valued at £850, 405, and by the year ending 1st November 1822, when the regulations as to the inspection and stamping of linen ceased, to 36, 268,530 yards, valued at £1,396,296. The counties in which the manufacture is now niost largely carricd on are Forfar, Perth, Fife, Kinross, and Clackmannan, but Aberdeen, Renfrew, Lanark, Edinburgh, and Ayr are also in a considerable degree associated with it. Dundee is the principal seat of the eoarser fabrics, Dunfermline of the table and other finer linens, while Paisley is widely known for its sewing threads. The allied

industry of jute is the staple industry of Dundee. The number of persons employed in the flax-factories of Scotland in 1837 was 15,462. The following table (XVI) gives particulars of these factories for the years 1856, 1867, and 1878 :—

introdueed in 1610 by Sir John Hay at Wemyss in Fife, is now of considerable importance, Edinburgh being celebrated for the finer branches of the manufacture. A paper-mill was erected in 1675 at Dalry Mills on the Water of Leith, in which French workmen were employed to give instruction, with the result, as was reported by the owners, that "grey and blue paper was produced much finer than ever was done before in the kingdom." The most important seat of the industry is now Valleyfield near Penicuik, where it was intro- duced in 1709. Edinburgh has since the time of the Ballantynes enjoyed a widely-extended fame for the excellence and beauty of its printing. The other manufactures prevailing in different parts of Scotland, such as those of leather, soap, earthenware and hardware, carriages, and the various implements and utensils in general use, do not call for special characterization.

Commerce and Shipping.—That Scotland had a considerable trade Shipping.

with foreign countries at a very early period may be inferred from the importation of rich dresses by Malcolm III. and the enjoy- ment of Oriental luxuries by Alexander I. David I. receives the special praise of Fordun for enriching 'the ports of his kingdom with foreign merchandise." In the 18th century the Scots had

O34

acquired a considerable celebrity in shipbuilding ; and a powerful French baron had a ship specially built at Inverness in 1249 to convey him and his vassals to the Holy Land. The principal ship- owners at this period were the clergy, who embarked the wealth of their religious houses in commercial enterprises. Definite state- ments regarding the nuinber and tonnage of shipping are, however, lacking till the 18th century. From two reports printed by the Scottish Burgh Record Society in 1881, it appears that the number of vessels belonging to the principal ports—Leith, Dundee,

Glasgow, Kirkcaldy, and Montrose—in 1656 was 58, the tonnage being 3140, and that by 1692 they had increased to 97 of 5905 tons. These figures only represent a portion of the total shipping of the king- dom. At the time of the Union in 1707 the number of vessels was 215 of 14,485 tons. The following table (XIX.) gives the numbers for various years from 1850 :—

1850. isso. || iso. |] ass, No. | Tons. No. | Tons. No. | Tons. || No.| Tons Sailing vessels} 3432 | 491,395 |] 3172 | 552,212 || 2715 | 727,942 || 2065 827,295 Steam vessels | 169 | 30,827 || 314 | 71,579 || 582 | 209,142 || 1403] se6;7s0

Total ….|3601 | 522,222 || 3486 | 628,791 | 3297 | 937,084 || 3468 1,694,075 Table XX. shows the progress of the coasting and foreign trade since 1855 :—

Coasting. Colonial and Foreign. Total.

Entered. Cleared. | Entered. Cleared. | Entered. | Cleared.

1,968,552 | 2,057,936 | 668,078 840,150 | 3,631,630 | 2,898,086 6,628,853 | 5,691,136 | 2,700,915 | 3,001,897 | 9,329,768 | 8,693,033 7,167,230 | 6,098,938 | 3,073,561 | 3,638,423 |10,240,791 | 9,737,361

Com- merce.

Table XXI. shows the great expansion of the foreign and colonial trade since 1755 :—

Year. Imports. Exports. Year. Imports. Exports.

£5,842,296

5,016,116 17,912,932 18,243,078 20,822,355

1825 1851 1874 1880 1884

1755 1790 1795 1800 1815

£464,411

1,688, 337 1,268,520 2,212,790 3,447,853

£535,576

1,235,405

976,791 2,340,069 6,997,709

£4,994,304

8,921,108 31,012,750 84,997,652 30, 600,258

The value of the imports into Scotland is only about a tenth of that of England, but this does not represent the proper proportion of foreign imports used or consumed in Scotland, as large quantities find their way to Scotland from England by rail,—nearly all the tea, for example, consumed in Great Britain being imported into London, while various other ports have almost a monopoly of certain other imports. Reckoning by the combined value of their imports and exports, the principal ports of Scotland are Glasgow, Leith, Greenock, Dundee, Grangemouth, and Aberdeen, in the order named, but for particulars regarding the trade of these and other ports reference must be made to the articles on the several towns.

Ship- For many of the most important improvements in the coustruc-building. tion of ships, especially steam vessels, Great Britain is indebted to the enterprise and skill of the Clyde shipbuilders. From the time of the construction by Mr Robert Napier of the steamers for the Cunard line, formed in 1840, the shipbuilders on the Clyde have enjoyed an unrivalled reputation for the construction of large ocean steamers, both as regards mechanical appliances and the beauty and convenience of the internal arrangements. Shipbuilding is also carried on to a considerable extent at Dundee, Leith, and Aberdeen, and to a certain degree at most of the ports of the king-

Population at different Ages.

secoTLiank &

Persons in Receipt of Education.

(STATISTICS,

dom, but within recent years the industry has been in a very fluctuating condition, the tonnage of the vessels constructed annu- ally varying between 1880 and 1885 from a little over 100,000 to nearly 300,000.

National Wealth.—The immense increase in the wealth of N ational Scotland within the last 200 years is sufficiently proved by the fact wealth, that, while in 1674 the valued rent was only £3,656, 408 Scots or £304,700 sterling, the gross annual value of the land according to the estimate in the return of 1873 was £18,698,804, or more than sixty times as much, and about fifteen times as great as the proportional increase of population. This increase is of course partly due to agricultural improvements and partly to the discovery and development of the mineral wealth in coal and iron, but it may also be accounted for by the smaller representative value of money, and by the fictitious increase in rents in towns, which does not represent an increase in absolute value. The annual value of real property assessed for income-tax under schedule A in 1843 was £9,481,000 ; the average valuc for the three years ending 5th April 1883 was £16,995,718, and for the year ending 5th April 1884 the value was £17,066,705. For the year ending 5th April 1857 the amount of property and income charged with duty was £22,563,238 ; and during the following twenty-five years it was morc than doubled, the average amount for the three years ending 5th April 1883 being £48,069,765, and for the year ending 5th April 1884 £49, 600,348, This is less than a tenth of that for the United Kingdom. The total amount of money lying in deposit in savings banks in 1884 was £7,709,471,—about a seventh part of the whole amount deposited in the savings banks of the United Kingdom. Notice of the rise and progress of banking in Scotland will be found under BANKING (vol. ili. pp, 332-336). The total paid-up capital of the Scottish banks at the dates of balance in 1885 was £9,052,000 and their total liabilities £107,882,595.

Lducation.—Notices of the existence of schools in the principal Element. towns occur as early as the 13th century. They were under the ary supervision of the chancellor of each diocese and were chiefly schools, devoted to studies preparatory for the church. Previous to the Reformation

schools for general education were attached to many religious houses. In the First Book of Discipline, 1560, a com- prehensive scheme of general education was propounded, but neither this proposal nor an Act passed in 1616 by the privy council for the establishment of a school in every parish was carried into effect ; and the system of parochial schools which prevailed till the passing of the Education Act of 1872 really dates from the Act of William and Mary in 1696 providing for the maintenance of a school in every parish at the cost of the heritors, The various religious secessions in Scotland led to the founding of a large number of denominational and subscription schools, and at the Disruption in 1843 the Free Church made provision for the supply of secular education as well as religious instruction to its adherents. The Education Act of 1872 abolished the old management of the parish schools, and provided for the creation of districts under the manage- ment of school boards elected for threc years by the ratepayers, male and female. These boards have the power to levy rates for the maintenance and erection of schools for primary instruction, elect the teachers, and cnforce the clause in regard to compulsory attendance. The maintenauce of schools is also aided by a Govern- ment grant, and the salary of the tcacher is paid partly by school fees and partly by a grant dependent upon the result of the examina- tion of the scholars by the Government inspector, the school board having the power, however, to make their own terms with the teacher. Denominational schools are permitted to receive a Govern- ment grant. The following table (XXII.) shows the proportion of persons in the receipt of education in Scotland in 1861, 1871, and 1881 :—

Percentages to the Population at cach Age.

Particulars in regard to schools under school board management are given in the following table (X XIII.) :—

ee 7 C= : o =) cS

x2 oF. fs 4 So S|n'E Bf ee Be ra 8 | ES | 88 |School| 28 [gee egiseng| 83185128 | £2 | GS |Places.| $3 [Reo se Sena Ss | ae | o's o 59 PIS K Sl eo | as ® Eley | ao ee PRAQ) Sa lda | & 1875/£551,140| 314,164 | 391,588 | 2730 | £1 15 9}! 12,958 | 3811 | 129 | 4262 1884) 938,223) 458,121 | 655,672 | 8131 | 2 1 53: 61,429 | 6220 | 1012 | 3620

All the training colleges for teachers in board schools are connected

with religious denominations—three with the Established Church, Second- three with the Free Church, and one with the Episcopal Church. ary As early as the 14th century some of the burghs had grammar- schools. schools partly under the. control of the magistrates. In 1496 an

0-5 years. |5-15 years.!15 and above.| Total. |0-5 years, |5-15 years.|15 and above.| Total. | 0-5 years. |5-15 years.} 15 and above.| Total. 417,259 | 685,912 1,959,123 3,052,294 8,666 439,388 19,002 467,056 2°08 64°05 0°96 15°25 455,620 | 776,871 MT, oe) 3,360,018 | 10,025 541,995 22,101 574,121 2°19 69°77 1°04 17-09 510,591 | 855,015 2,369,967 | 3,735,573 | 14,152 675,314 30,633 720,099 2°77 78°98 1-29 19°28

Act was passed enjoining the attendance at the schools of the eldest sons of barons and freeholders until " they be founded in perfect Latin, and thereafter to remain at the schools of arts and law" (where ecclesiastics were trained). The grammar or burgh schools enjoyed a monopoly of teaching certain branches, and private schools were frequently prohibited as interfering with their rights. Grammar-schools were chiefly devoted to instruction in Latin, and the course usually extended to five years. According to the report of the education commissioners, the number of burgh schools in 1867 was twenty-six. By the Act of 1872 their management was transferred to the school board, but they were excluded from participation in the school fund, and no provision was made for their inspection. The Act of 1878 authorized certain grants of money, and contained certain provisions for inspection, which, however, have been practically inoperative. The Educational Endowments Act of 1882 provides for a more comprehensive scheme for the

——

Presby- terian churches.

Other deno- mina- tions.

Parlia- mentary repre- senta- tion.

Law.

STATISTICS. |

promotion of secondary education, and also for a scheme of systematic inspection. These educational endowments—the result of private bequest—yield an annual income of £175,000, and, on account of the changed conditions of society, the primary objects of the donors were in a great degree frustrated by the manner in which they were being administered. Some of the best secondary schools in Scotland are under the management of trustees. For the four universities of Scotland (St Audrews, Aberdeen, Glasgow, and Edinburgh) see the articles on these cities, also UNIVERSITIES. University College in Dundee and Anderson's College in Glasgow have similar courses of instruction to the ulliversities, but possess no power to grant degrees and receive no Government aid. A notice of the various medical schools and scientific colleges will be found in the articles on the towns in which they are situated. Religion.—For an historical account of the more important religious denominations of Scotland the reader is referred to the articles SCOTLAND, CHURCH OF, FREE CuurcH oF SCOTLAND, UnitepD PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, and PRESBYTERIANISM. The bulk of the population is Presbyterian, and the following table

(XXIV.) gives particulars reported in 1885 regarding the Church of

Scotland and other churches originated by secessions from it at various times,—the " contributions" indicating the amounts raised by the churches for all purposes, and of course excluding the endowments of the Established Church :—

Church of| Free (Wels Evang. | Original 'Reformed Scotland. | Church. | Church. | Union. |Seceders.| Presby.

| — |] i

1,479 1,067 548 87 27 12

565,261 | 329,541| 177,517] 18,210 1037 £366,431 |£626,028 | £387,355 | £21,760 | £5606 | £2592

Congregations .. Members Contributions ..

The Roman Catholic Church has 327 ‘churches, chapels, and stations,” — the estimated population connected with it being over 340,000. The Episcopal Church in Scotland has about 250 churches with 80,000 members (of all ages) and nearly 30,000 communi- cants. The churches in connexion with the Congregational Union number 101, 73 of which report a membership of 10,869, the money raised for all purposes in 1884-85 being £23,027. The Baptist Union has 88 churches with 9688 members; and the Wesleyan Methodists have 26 “circuits” with 4658. There are a few other religious denominations, such as the Primitive Methodists, the Catholic Apostolic Church, and the Glassites, but the member- ship of each is comparatively small.

Government, Law, and Local Adméinistration.—By the Act of Union in 1707 Scotland ceased to have a separate parliament and its government was assimilated to that of England. In the parliament of Great Britain its representation was fixed at sixteen peers (the same number as at present) elected by the peers of Scotland at each new parliament, in the House of Lords, and at forty-five members in ‘the House of Commons,—the counties returning thirty and the burghs fifteen. The power of the sove- reign to create new Scottish peerages lapsed at the Union, and their number has already diminished by nearly one-half. By the Reform ‘Act of 1832 the number of Scottish representatives in the Commons was raised to fifty-three, the counties under a slightly altered arrangement returning thirty members as before, and the burghs, reinforced by the erection of various towns into parliamentary burghs, twenty-three; the second Reform Act (1868) increased the number to sixty, the universities obtaining representation by two members, while three additional members were assigned to the counties and two to the burghs; by the Redistribution of Seats Act of 1885 an addition of six members was made to the representation of the counties and six to that of the burghs, the total representation being raised to seventy-two. The management of Scottish business in parliament has since 1885 been under the charge of the secretary for Scotland.

‘At the Union Scotland retained its old system of law and legal administration, a system modelled on that of France ; but since the Union the laws of England and Scotland have been on many points assimilated, the criminal law of the two countries being now practically identical, although the methods of procedure are in many respects different. The Court of Session, as the supreme court in civil causes is called, dates from 1532, and was formed on the model of the parlement of Paris ; it is held at Edinburgh, the capital. Since the Union it has undergone certain modifica- tions. It consists of thirteen judges, acting in an Inner and an Outer House. The Inner House has two divisions, with four judges cach, the first being presided over by the lord president of the whole court, and the second by the lord justice clerk. In the Outer House five judges, called lords ordinary, sit in separate courts. Appeals may be made from the lords ordinary to either of the divisions of the Inner House, and, if the occasion demands, the opinion of all the judges of the Court of Session may be called for ; but whether this be done or not the decision is re- garded as a decision of the Court of Session. Appeals may be made from the Court of Session to the House of Lords. The lord justice general (lord president), the lord justice clerk, and five other

ScorLay D

judges form the High Court criminal cases, the three Lothians and of cases referred from the circuit courts. The latter meet for the south at Jedburgh, for the west at Glasgow, Inveraray, and Stirling ; at Perth, Aberdeen, Dundee, and Inverness. undertake cases to be decided before the supreme courts are either solicitors before the supreme courts or writers to the latter of whom possess certain special privileges.

authorized to plead before the supreme courts is termed an ad- vocate. The principal law officer of the crown is the lord advocate, who is assisted by the solicitor-general and by advocates-depute. The lord advocate has since

purposes of registration to each of which an examiner for inspection of registers is appointed tration,

represents missions of the peace, holds the position of high sheriff, and is a

is little more than honorary, affairs is in the hands of commissioners of supply, who were originally appointed to apportion and collect the national revenue, but who now regulate the land-tax,

535

of Justiciary, instituted in 1672, for which sits at Edinburgh for the trial of cases from

Dumfries, and Ayr; and for the north The law agents who

signet, the The lawyer

1885 ceased to have the charge of Scottish business in the House of Commons. Sec ADVOCATE, vol. i. 178. The subordinate legal courts and officials are described

under the next heading. The largest administrative area is that of the county, but for Local Scotland is partitioned into eight divisions, adminis-

by the registrar-general ; and for the carrying out of the provisions of the Lunacy Acts it is divided into twenty-two districts. Regis-

tration counties date from the Act of 1854 providing that for pur-

poses of registration the areas of the counties may be altered. For the purposes of the General Police Act of 1862 part of the area of one county may also be brought into the area of another. Certain counties have been united for parliamentary or other purposes, and certain others have been divided for parliamentary purposes, while others again for certain administrative purposes retain their old subdivisions, Lanark for assessment purposes being still divided into wards, The civil counties were originally synonymous either with sheriffdoms or stewartries. Stewartries ceased with the abolition of hereditary jurisdictions in 1748, but Kirkcudbright still retains the designation. The office of sheriff, which formerly implied a much less limited authority than at present, was in existence in the reign of David I., when the greater part of the kingdom was divided into twenty-five sheriffdoms. In the latter part of the 13th century

they numbered thirty-four. The counties now number thirty-three, of which Ross and Cromarty constitutc one, while Edinburgh is a ‘county of a city.” The highest county dignitary is the lord-

lieutenant, the office being instituted in 1782. Heis nominated by

the crown, holds office for life, except in cases of misconduct, the crown in military matters, recommends for com-

member of the police committee. Practically, however, the office and the real administration of county

control the county police, raise the militia, and levy rates to meet the county expenditure. In 1878 an Act

was passed for the creation of road trustces, who have the power to levy rates for the maintenance throughout the county of roads and bridges (see p. 580 above). in the county is under

The practical administration of the law the control of the sheriff. Sec SHERIFF. A large proportion of his duties are, however, delegated to the sheriff-substitute. At onc time the functions of the sheriff-principal were confined to one county, but by an Act passed in 1855 it was arranged that as sheriffdoms fell vacant certain counties should be grouped into districts, each under the control of one sheriff-princi- pal, and in 1870 this arrangement was further modified and ex- tended. The sheriff-clerk, appointed by the crown, has, under the Ballot Act of 1872, the charge of ballot papers in connection with the parliamentary elections, and is cwstos rotulorum. The public prosecutor for counties is the procurator ~~fiscal, who takes the initiative in regard to suspected cases of sudden death, although in this respect the law of Scotland is less strict than that of England. Justices of the peace, who are unpaid and require no special qualifi~~ cation, but who, as they are recommended by the lord-lieutenant, are generally persons of position in the county, exercise a certain subordinate jurisdiction. Their office expires on the demise of the crown. In every commission of the peace certain public officials are included. The justices of the peace hold quarter sessions, take affidavits and declarations (such as declarations of marriage), sign warrants, try petty criminal cascs (such especially as

poaching and assault), and regulate public-house licences. Under Boroveu (vol. iv. pp. 63-64) will be found an account of the history and constitu- tion of the three classes of ancient burghs in Scotland,—royal burghs, burghs of regality, and burghs of barony. Police burghs, which may include any of the other classes of burghs, are formed of those places which have adopted the General Police and Improve- ment Acts (13 and 14 Vict. c. 83 and 25 and 26 Vict. c. 101). They are governed by police commissioners, who have power to regulate all sanitary matters. They may include more than one of the other burghs and may extend into another county. Under the Improvement Act (25 and 26 Vict. c. 101) most of the burghs with over 7000 inhabitants maintain their own police. The parliament- ary burghs do not now include all the royal burghs and include various other towns in addition to them. The number of royal

burghs is seventy, and, as was to be expeeted, while some sinee their formation have enormously inereased in population and wealth, others have so deelined or made so little progress that they now rank only as villages. In 1881 there were ten royal burghs whieh had less than 1000 inhabitants eaeh and four which had less than 500 eaeh, Earlsferry (Fife) having only 286. Under the Publie Health Aet of 1867, amended in 1879, the erection of urban and rural sanitary distriets was provided for. The corporation of the burghs is formed of the provost (or lord provost), bailies, and eouncillors. Bailie eourts are held in the burghs for the trial of minor offenees. The eivil parish or parish guoad omnia, origin- ally the ecelesiastieal parish or area subject to one eure of souls, is a division of the county for registration of births, deaths, and

certain civil parishes may be elassed as burghal, landward, and mixed. Under Graham's Act (7 and 8 Viet. c. 44) a parish guoad sacra may be erected on the application of persons who have built and endowed a ehurch. For administrative purposes the oldest parish organization is that of the heritors or landowners, who are required to provide and maintain a chureh,

ehurehyard, manse, and ehurch glebe, and, before the passing of the Edueation Act in 1872, had to maintain the parochial school, In 1579 the power was granted them of assessmeut for poor relief, but in 1600 the kirk-session was united with them for these purposes. This organiza- tion still exists in those parishes, now very few in number, whieh have not adopted the Poor Law Amendment Act of 1845 ; this Aet provides for the constitution of a

marriages and for poor law administration.

The boundaries are

determined by the boundaries of the estates whieh appear to lie in the parish, but may be altered by eonsent of proprietors holding

the major value of the property in it. the areas of burghs are removed from t

Administration, local,

535,

Agricola, 471.

Agriculture, 530.

Albany, dukes of, 491,

497.

Alexander I., 482. An II., 484. fon ella.

Angus, earls of, 495, 498. Angus MacFergus, 476. Area, 521, 528. Argyll, earls of, 513, 517. Arran, earl of, 498 sq. Baliol, 486. Bannockburn, 488. Beatons, 498. Berwick, treaty of, 489. Books of Discipline, 503,

534,

Bothwell Bridge, 516. Bothwell, ear] of, 504. Boundaries, 521. Boyd of Kilmarnoek, 495. Brigham, treaty of, 486. Britons of Strathelyde,

473, 475 sq. Bruee, eompetitor, 486. Bruce, Robert, 488-489. Brunanburgh, 479. Burghs, 484, 535, Cambuskenneth, 487. Canals, 530. Celtie Church, 475. Celts, 478, 480. Charles I., 511.

op LUC, Bit, Chastelherault, duke of,

502 sq.

SCOTLAND, Cxurcu or.

Civil War, 513. Climate, 527. Coast-line, 526. Coehrane, 495. Colonization, 511, 518. Columba, 474, 475. Commerce and trade,

492, 496, 534.

Confession of Faith, 503. Congregation, Lords of, 501 sq. Constantine I., 478. os II., 478. Constantius, 472. Conversion to Christian- ity, 474. Court of Session, 498, 535. Covenant, 512. Covenanters, perseeution of, 515 sq. Criehton, William, 493. Crofters, 531. Cromwell's invasion, 514. Crops, 581. Culloden, 520. Cuthbert, 475. Dalriada, 473 sq., 477. Darnley, 504. David I., 482. » IL, 489. David, earl of Hunting- don, 484, 486. Donald I., 478. ine 275) Douglas, 487 sq., 491, 494. Dunbar, battle of, 514. Dunean, 480. Eeelesiastiea]

history, 482, 501 sq.

For all sanitary purposes hose of the parishes, and

nominees of the kirk-session Uuder th is divided into sehool-board di the civil, or the quoad sacra,

by the ratepayers.

534 above).

InveEx.

Edgar, 481.

Edinburgh, treaty of, 502.

Edueation, 534,

Emigration, 529.

Episeopacy, 507, 510.

Falaise, treaty of, 484,

Falkirk, 487.

Fisheries, 532.

Flodden, 497.

Forests, 532.

Franee, relations with, 489 sq.

Game, &e., 532.

Geography, 471, 522 sq.

Geology, 521 sq. .

Glasgow, assembly of,

512.

Glencoe, 518.

Glens, 525.

Government, 535.

Gowrie eonspiraey, 509.

Hadrian, 471, 472.

Halidon Hill, 489,

Hastings, the eompetitor,

486.

Highlands, of, 517.

Highlands, physieal fea- tures of, 522-523.

Highlands, subjugation of, 498.

Huntly, 498.

Inhabitants, early, 472.

Iona, 474 sq.

Islands, 527.

Isles, reduetion of, 485.

Jacobite risings, 520.

James I., 491. ay dah, as

paecifieation

Jaines III., 494, » IV., 496,

pa (VOLS sate, Kennedy, bishop, 494, Kenneth I. (Macalpine),

477-4758,

py aby Ze

Kentigern, 474. Killiecraukie, 517. Kirkaldy of Grange, 502. Knox, 500 sq., 508, 506, Lakes, 526, Largs, battle of, 482, 485. Lauderdale, 515. Law, 488, 535. Lennox, regents, 506, 507. Liturgy, introduction of,

511.

Livingstone, 493.

Lothian, eonquest of, 480.

Lowlands, central, 523.

Maebeth, 480.

Maitland of Lethington,

502.

Maleolm I., 479.

pp OE, EUS),

» III. (Canmore),

480.

» _IV., 483.

Manufaetures, 533,

Mar, regent, 506.

Margaret, Maid of Nor- way, 486.

Margaret, sister of the'

Atheling, 481. Margaret Tudor, 496. Mary of Guelders, 494.

In the article Prespy-

Mary of Guise, 500. Mary Stuart, 499 sq. Melville, Andrew, 506. Melville, Sir James, 505. Middleton, 515. Minerals, 532. Monk's administration,

514.

Montrose, 513. Moray, regent, 505 sq. Morton, regent, 506. Mountains, 522, 524. Nationalities, 529. Neville's Cross, 489. Neweastle, treaty

489,

Ninian, 474. Norsemen in Scotland, 477 sq., 482. Northampton, treaty of,

488.

of,"

Northumbrian maey, 475. Oceupations, 529.

supre-

| Oetavians, 509.

Otterburn, 490. Ownership of soil, 530. Parliamentary repre- sentation, 535. Pauperism, 529. Piets, 473 sq., 476 sq. Pinkie, 500. Population, 528. Presbyterianism, 504 sq. Pretenders, 520. Railways, 530. Reformation, 497, 501. Religion, 535, 536. Rivers, 524.

parochial board composed of and a proportion of persons elected e Edueation Act of 1872 the county striets, whose area corresponds with or landward, or burghal parish (see

(t. Fay

Roads, 471, 472, 530. Robert I., 488. » IL, 490. a> wld, 490; Romans in Scotland, 471. Ruthven, Raid of, 507. St Andrews, bishopric of, 474, 477, 489. Sauchie, 495. Scone, monarehy of, 477,

480.

Seots of Dalriada, 473,

477.

Severus, 472.

Sheriff, 483, 535.

Shipping, &c., 533-584.

Solemn League and Co- venant, 513,

Southern uplands, 523.

Statisties, 528 sq.

Stirling, 494, 496, 507.

Stuart, Lord James, re- gent, 501, 507.

Stuarts, 490-520.

Tacitus, on ancient in- habitants, 472.

Trade and commerce,

492, 496, 584,

Union of erowns, 509,

Union of parliaments,

515, 518.

Valleys, origin of, 524,

Vital statistics, 529.

Wallace, 487-488,

Wall of Antoninus, 471, »» 9) Hadrian, 471.

Wealth, national, 534.

William III., 517,

William the Lion, 484,

It is remarked by Dr Hill Burton, and Carlyle repeats the Period of

TERIANISM the history of the Church of Scotland was remark, that " Scots dissent never was a protest against the Mode-

brought down to the middle of the 18th century, and the story of the secessions of 1733 and 1751 was there told. We take up here the church's history at the beginning of the " Moderate" rule. Her annals during the next three- quarters of a century are singularly uneventful. In close alliance with the state, she increases in power and dignity, and becomes the home of letters and philosophy. But there is no great movement of a theological nature, no striking religious development to lend her popular interest.

The strength of the church as well as her tendency to moderation arose in great part out of the political circum- stances of the early part of the 18th century. Presbytery, being loyal to the house of Hanover, while Episcopacy was Jacobite, enjoyed the royal favour and was treated as a firm ally of the Government. The Patronage Act of 1712 threw the filling up of parishes into the hands of those well-affected to the Government, and the example of the mode of patronage practised in England may have tended to promote a disregard of the religious feelings of the people. The effect on the clergy was to encourage them to seek the friendship of the landed gentry and to regard the higher rather than the lower orders of society as their natural allies, so that they were at the same time led to liberal ways of thinking and rendered largely independent of their congregations,

principles of the church, but always tended to preserve the old principles of the church, whence the Establishment—by the progress of enlightenment as some said, by deterioration according to others—was lapsing." The secessions carried off the more fervent elements ; yet enough of the old leaven always remained to exert a powerful influence. Thus, while the church as a whole was more peaceful, more courtly, more inclined to the friendship of the world than at any former time, it contained two well-marked parties, in one of which these characteristics of the religion of the 18th century were more marked than in the other. The Moderate party, which maintained its ascendency till the beginning of the 19th century, and

impressed its character on the church, sought to make the working of the church in its different parts as systematic and regular as possible, to make the assembly supreme and enforce respect for its decisions by presbyteries, and to render the judicial procedure of the church as exact and formal as that of the civil courts. The popular party, regarding the church less from the side of the Government, had less sympathy with the rome: movements of the

age, and desired greater strictness in discipline. The main Question

rate

ascend-

enley:

subject of dispute arose at first from the exercise of patron- oe age. Presbyteries in various parts of the country were stil] P27

disposed to disregard the presentations of lay patrons, and >

to settle the men desired by the people; but legal decisions

ge.

CHURCH. |

had shown that if they acted in this way their nominee, while legally minister of the parish, could not claim the stipend. To the risk of such sacrifices the church, led by the Moderate party, refused to expose herself. By the new policy inaugurated by Dr Robertson, which led to the second secession, the assembly compelled presbyteries to give effect to presentations, and ina long series of disputed settlements the "call," though still held essential to a settlement, was less and less regarded, until it was declared that it was not

Se orl Ak D

at this time sought to procure the miscarriage of justice in dealing with such cases. That some offenders were acquitted on technical grounds is true; it was insisted that in dealing with the character and status of their members the church courts should proceed in as formal and punctilious a manner as civil tribunals and should recognize the same laws of evidence, in fact, that the same securities should exist in the church as in the state for individual rights and liberties.

necessary, and that the church courts were bound to induct any qualified presentee. The substitution of the word "'con- currence" for " call" about 1764 indicates the subsidiary and ornamental light in which the assent of the parishioners was now to be regarded. The church could have given more

The religious state of the Highlands, to which at the Re. period of the Union the Reformation had only very par- ligious tially penetrated, occupied the attention of the church dur- an ing the whole of the 18th century. In 1725 the gift called High-

the "royal bounty" was first granted, —a subsidy amounting Jands,

weight to the wishes of the people ; she professed to regard patronage asa grievance, and the annual instructions of the assembly to the commission (the committee representing the assembly till its next meeting) enjoined that body to take advantage of any opportunity which might arise for getting rid of the grievance of patronage, an injunction which was not discontinued till 1784. It is not likely that any change in the law could have been obtained at this period, and dis- regard of the law might have led to an exhausting struggle with the state, as was actually the case at a later period. Still it was in the power of the church to give more weight than she did to the feelings of the people ; and her working of the patronage system drove large numbers from the Establishment. A melancholy catalogue of forced settle- ments marks the annals of the church from 1749 to 1780, and wherever an unpopular presentee was settled the people quietly left the Establishment and erected a meeting-house. In 1763 there wasa great debate in the assembly on the pro- gress of schism, in which the popular party laid the whole blame at the door of the Moderates, while the Moderates rejoined that patronage and Moderatism had made the church the dignified and

powerful institution she had come to be. In 1764 the number of meeting-houses was 120, and in 1773 it had risen to 190. Nor wasa conciliatory attitude taken up towards the seceders. The ministers of the Relief desired to remain connected with the Establish- ment, but were not suffered to do so. Those ministers who resigned their parishes to accept calls to Relief con-gregations, in places where forced settlements had taken place, and who might have been and claimed to be recog- nized as still ministers of the church, were deposed and forbidden to look for any ministerial communion with the clergy of the Establishment. Such was the policy of the Moderate ascendency, or of Principal Robertson's adminis- tration, on this vital subject. It had the merit of success in so far as it completely established itself in the church. The presbyteries ceased to disregard presentations, and lay patronage came to be regarded as part of the order of things. But the growth of dissent steadily continued and excited alarm from time to time; and it may be questioned whether the peace of the church was not purchased at too high a price. The Moderate period is justly regarded as in some respects the most brilliant in the history of the church. Her clergy included many distinguished Scotsmen, of whom an account is given under their respective names. See Rerp (Thomas), CAMPBELL (George), Fercuson (Adam), Home (Jolin), Buair (Hugh), Ropertson (William), and Erskine (John). The labours of these men were not mainly in theology; in religion the age was one not of advance but of rest; they gained for the church a great and widespread respect and influence.

Another salient feature of the Moderate policy was the consolidation of discipline. It is frequently asserted that discipline was lax at this period and that ministers of scandalous lives were allowed to continue in their charges. It cannot, however, be shown that the leaders of the church

at first to £1000 per annum, increased in George IV.'s reign to £2000, and continued to the present day ; its original object was to assist the reclamation of the Highlands from Roman Catholicism by means of catechists and teachers. The Society for Propagating Christian Knowledge, incor- porated in 1709, with a view partly to the wants of the Highlands, worked in concert with the Church of Scotland, setting up schools in remote and destitute localities, while the church promoted various schemes for the dissemination of the Scriptures in Gaelic and the encouragement of Gaelic

students. In consequence of these efforts Roman Catho- licism now lingers only ina few islands and glens on the west coast. In these labours as well as in other directions the church was sadly hampered by poverty. The need of an increase in the number of parishes was urgently felt, and, though chapels began to be built about 1796, they were pro- vided only in wealthy places by local voluntary liberality ; for the supply of the necessities of poor outlying districts no one as yet looked to any agency but the state. In every part of the country many of the ministers were miserably poor ; there were many stipends, even of important parishes, not exceeding £40 a year; and it was not till after many debates in the assembly and appeals to the Government that an Act was obtained in 1810 which made up the poorer livings to £150 a year by a grant from the public exchequer. The churches and manses were frequently of the most miserable description, if not falling to decay.

With the close of the 18th century a great change passed over the spirit of the church. The new activity which sprang up everywhere after the French Revolution pro- duced in Scotland a revival of Evangelicalism which has not yet spent its force. Moderatism had cultivated the ministers too fast for the people, and the church had become to a large extent more of a dignified ruler than a spiritual mother. About this time the brothers Robert

and James Haldane devoted themselves to the work of pro- The Hal- moting Evangelical Christianity, James making missionary danes.

journeys throughout Scotland and founding Sunday schools; and in 1798 the eccentric preacher Rowland Hill visited Scotland at their request. In the journals of these evan- gelists dark pictures are drawn of the religious state of the country, though their censorious tone detracts greatly from their value; but there is no doubt that the efforts of the Haldanes brought about or coincided with a quickening of the religious spirit of Scotland. The assembly of 1799 passed an Act forbidding the admission to the pulpits of laymen or of ministers of other churches, and issued a manifesto on Sunday schools. These Acts helped greatly to discredit the Moderate party, of whose spirit they were the outcome ; and that party further injured their standing in the country by attacking Leslie, afterwards Sir John Leslie, on frivolous grounds,—a phrase he had used about Hume's view of causation—when he

applied for the chair of mathematics in Edinburgh. In this dispute, which made a great sensation in the country, the popular party success- fully defended Leslie, and thus obtained the sympathy of XXI.— 68

538

the enlightened portion of the community. In 1810 the Christian Instructor began to appear under the editorship of Dr Andrew Thomson, a churchman of vigorous intellect and noble character. It was an ably written review, in which the theology of the Haldanes asserted itself in a somewhat dogmatic and confident tone against all unsound- ness and Moderatism, clearly proclaiming that the former things had passed away. The question of pluralities began to be agitated in 1813, and gave rise to a long struggle, in which Dr Chalmers took a notable part, and which terminated in the regulation that a university chair or principalship should not be held along with a parish which was not close to the university seat.

The growth of Evangelical sentiment in the church, along with the example of the great missionary societies founded in the end of the 18th and the beginning of the 19th century, led to the institution of the various missionary schemes still carried on, and their history forms the chief part of the history of the church for a number of years. The education scheme, having for its object the plant- ing of schools in destitute Highland districts, came into existence in 1824. The foreign mission committee was formed in 1825, at the instance of Dr Inglis, a leader of the Moderate party ; and Dr Duff went to India in 1829 as the first missionary of the Church of Scotland. The church extension committee was first appointed in 1828, and in 1834 it was made permanent. The colonial scheme was inaugurated in 1836, and the Jewish mission in 1838, M'Cheyne and Andrew Bonar setting out in the following year as a deputation to inquire into the condition of the Jews in Palestine and Turkey and on the Continent of

SC OT bavi

[CHURCH.

carried his appeal throughout the country. By 1835 he had collected £65,626 and reported the building of sixty- two churches in connexion with

the Establishment. The keenness of the conflict as it approached the crisis of 1843 checked the liberality of the people for this object, but by 1841 £305,747 had been collected and 222 churches built.

The zealous orthodoxy of the church found at this period several occasions to assert itself. M'Leod Campbell, min- ister of Row, was deposed by the assembly of 1830 for teaching that assurance is of the essence of faith and that Christ died for all men. He has since been recognized as one of the profoundest Scottish theologians of the 19th century, although his deposition has never been removed. The same assembly condemned the doctrine put forth by Edward Irving, that Christ took upon Him the sinful nature of man and was not impeccable, and Irving was deposed five years later by the presbytery of Annan, when the out- burst of supposed miraculous gifts in his church in London had rendered him still more obnoxious to the strict censures of the period. In 1841 Wright of Borthwick was deposed for a series of heretical opinions, which he denied that he held, but which were said to be contained in a series of devotional works of a somewhat mystical order which he had published.

The influence of dissent also acted along with the rapidly Disrup-

rising religious fervour of the age in quickening in the oe d °

church that sense of a divine mission, and of the right an power to carry out that mission without obstruction from any worldly authority, which belongs to the essential con- sciousness of the Christian church. An agitation against patronage, the ancient root of evil, and the formation of

Church Europe. Of these schemes that of church extension has | an anti- patronage society, helped in the same direction. exten- most historical importance. It was originally formed to | The Ten Years' Conflict, which began in 1833 with the scheme, Collect information regarding the spiritual wants of the | passing by the assembly of the- Veto and the Chapel

country, and to apply to the Government to build the churches found to be necessary. As the population of Scot- land had doubled since the Reformation, and its distribution had been completely altered in many counties, while the number of parish churches remained unchanged, and

meet- ing-houses had only been erected where seceding congrega- tions required them, the need for new churches was very great. The application to Government for aid, however, proved the occasion of a " Voluntary controversy," which raged with great fierceness for many years and has never completely subsided. The union of the Burgher and the Antiburgher bodies in 1820 in the United Secession—both having previously come to hold Voluntary principles— added to the influence of these principles in the country, while the political excitement of the period disposed men's minds to such discussions. The Government built forty- two churches in the Highlands, providing them with a slender endowment ; and these are still known as parlia- mentary churches. Under Dr Chalmers, however, the church extension committee struck out a new line of action. That great philanthropist had come to see that the church could only reach the masses of the people effectively by greatly increasing the number of her places of worship and abolishing or minimizing seat-rents in the poorer districts. In his powerful defence of establishments against the voluntaries in both Scotland and England, in which his ablest assistants were those who afterwards became, along with him, the leaders of the Free Church, he pleaded that an established church to be effective must divide the country territorially into a large number of small parishes,

Acts, is treated in the article FREE CHURCH OF SCOTLAND. It is not therefore necessary to dwell further in this place on the consequences of those Acts." The assembly of 1843, from which the exodus took place, proceeded to undo the Acts of the church during the preceding nine years. The Veto was not repealed but ignored, as having never had the force of law; the Strathbogie ministers were recog- nized as if no sentence of deposition had gone forth against them. The protest which the moderator had read before leaving the assembly had been left on the table; and an Act of Separation and deed of demission were received from the ministers of the newly formed Free Church, who were now declared to have severed their connexion with the Church of Scotland. The assembly addressed a pastoral letter to the people of the country, in which, while declin- ing to "admit that the course taken by the seceders was justified by irresistible necessity," they counselled peace and goodwill towards them, and called for the loyal support of the remaining members of the church.

Two Acts at once passed through the legislature in answer to the claims put forward by the church. The Scottish Benefices Act of Lord Aberdeen, 1843, gave the people power to state objections personal to a presentee, and bearing on his fitness for the particular charge to which he was presented, and also authorized the presbytery

in dealing with the objections to look to the number and

character of the objectors. Sir James Graham's Act, 1844, provided for the erection of new parishes, and thus created the legal basis for a scheme under which chapel ministers might become members of church courts.

The Disruption left the Church of Scotland in a sadly Develop- maimed condition. Of 1203 ministers 451 left her, and i of among these were many of her foremost men. A third of ae her membership is computed to have gone with them. IM gince Edinburgh many of her churches were nearly empty. The 1843.

Gaelic-speaking population of the northern counties com-

so that every corner of the land and every person, of what- ever class, shall actually enjoy the benefits of the parochial machinery. This "territorial principle" the church has steadily kept in view ever since. With the view of realizing this idea he appealed to the church to provide funds to build a large number of new churches, and personally

Aboli- tion of patron- age.

Improve- ments in public

worship.

CHURCH. |

pletely deserted her. All her missionaries left her but one. She had no gale of popular enthusiasm to carry her forward, representing as she did not a newly arisen principle but the opposition to a principle which she maintained to be dangerous and exaggerated. For many years she had

much obloquy to endure. But she at once set herself to the task of filling up vacancies and recruiting the mission- ary staff. A lay association was formed, which raised large sums of money for the missionary schemes, so that their income was not allowed seriously to decline. The good works of the church, indeed, were in a few years not only continued but extended. All hope being lost that parlia- ment would endow the new churches built by the church extension scheme of Dr Chalmers, it was felt that this also must be the work of voluntary liberality. Under Dr James Robertson, professor of church history in Edinburgh, one of the leading champions of the Moderate policy in the Ten Years' Conflict, the extension scheme was transformed into the endowment scheme, and the church accepted it as her duty and her task to provide the machinery of new parishes where they were required. By 1854 30 new parishes had been added at a cost of £130,000, and from this time forward the work of endowment proceeded still more rapidly. In 1860 61 new parishes had been endowed, in 1870 150, in 1876 250, while in 1886 there were 351. In 1843 the number of parishes was 924. Of 42 parlia- mentary churches existing at that time 40 have been erected into parishes guoad sacra; hence the total number of parishes in Scotland at midsummer 1886 was 1315. By the Poor Law Act of 1845 parishes were enabled to remove the care of the poor from the minister and the kirk-session, in whom it was formerly vested, and to appoint a parochial board with power to assess the ratepayers. The Education Act of: 1872 severed the ancient tie con- necting church and school together, and created a school board having charge of the education of each parish. At that date the Church of Scotland had 300 schools, mostly in the Highlands. The church, however, continues to carry on normal schools for the training of teachers in Edinburgh, Glasgow, and Aberdeen.

In 1874 patronage was abolished. The working of Lord Aberdeen's Act had given rise to many unedifying scenes and to lengthy struggles over disputed settlements, and it was early felt that some change at least was necessary in the law. The agitation on the subject went on in the assembly from 1857 to 1869, when the assembly by a large majority condemned patronage as restored by the Act of Queen Anne, and resolved to petition parliament for its removal. The request was granted, and the right of electing parish ministers was conferred on the congrega- tion; thus a grievance of old standing, from which all the ecclesiastical troubles of a century and a half

had sprung, was removed and the church placed on a thoroughly democratic basis. This Act, combined with various efforts made within the church for her improvement, has secured for the Scottish Establishment a large measure of popular favour, and during the last quarter of a century she has grown rapidly both in numbers and in influence. This revival is largely due on the one hand to the improvement of her worship which began with the efforts of Dr Robert Lee (1804-1868), minister of Old Greyfriars, Edinburgh, and professor of Biblical criticism in Edinburgh university. By introducing into his church a printed book of prayers

a

1 Those branches of the church extension scheme which dealt with church building, and with the opening of new missions to meet the wauts of increasing populations, were taken up by a new department, ealled the home mission scheme. The home mission as the pioneer in opening up uew fields of labour, and the endowment scheme which renders permanent the religious centres that the mission has founded, are both traceable to Dr Chalmers.

and also an organ Dr Lee stirred up vehement controversies in the church courts, which resulted in the recognition of the liberty of congregations to improve their worship. A church service society, having for its object the study of ancient and modern liturgies, with a view to the prepara- tion of forms of prayer for publie worship, was founded in 1865; it has published five editions of its " Book of Common Order," which, though at first regarded with suspicion, is now recognized as a useful and respected ad- Church music has been cultivated and improved in a marked degree; a fine collection of hymns has been introduced to supplement the psalms and paraphrases. And architecture has restored the larger churches from their disfigurement by partition walls and galleries— though much still remains

to be done in this way—and has erected new churches of a style favourable to devotion.

The fervour of the church has, on the other hand, found Commit- a channel in the operations of a " Committee on Christian tee on Life and Work," appointed in 1869 with the aim of exercis- Sie 2 08 ife and ing some supervision of the work of the church throughout work, the country, stimulating evangelistic efforts, and organizing the labours of lay agents. This committee publishes a magazine of "Life and Work," which has a circulation of about 100,000, and has lately been seeking to organize young men's guilds in connexion with congregations. It was to reinforce this element of the church's activity, as well as to strengthen her generally, that Mr James Baird in 1873 made the munificent gift of £500,000. This fund is administered by a trust which is not under the control of the church, and the revenue is used mainly in aid of church building and endowment throughout the country.

The church has greatly increased of late years in liberal- ity of sentiment, and there has been no deposition for heresy since 1843. A volume of Scotch Sermons pub- lished in 1880 by ministers holding liberal views brought out the fact that the church would not willingly be led into such prosecutions. An agitation on the part of the Dissenters for disestablishment sprang up afresh after the passing of the Patronage Act and has continued ever since ; while a counter-movement was represented by a Bill, intro- duced into parliament in 1886 to declare the spiritual independence of the Church of Scotland, which, if success- ful, would, it was understood, have opened the way for a reunion of the Presbyterian bodies."

Church Membershiy.—The Church of Scotland has now (1886) Statistics 1315 parishes, 160 non-parochial churches, and 121 preaching and of mem- mission stations, in all 1596 charges. The number of presbyteries bership, is 84, and there are 16 provincial synods. The general assembly &c. consists of 252 clerical and 118 lay members elected by presbyteries, with 73 representatives of royal burghs and universities, aud 4 representatives of churches abroad, in all 447 members. In 1873 the number of communicants as returned to parliament in 1874 was 460,526; in 1878 the number as returned to parliament in 1879 was 515,786; in 1883

the nwmber returned to the assembly of 1884 was 543,969 ; in 1885, 564,435. The professors of divinity at the four Scottish universities must be ministers of the church, and students aspiring to the ministry are required to attend one of the divinity halls of the universities for three sessions, after an arts course of three years. A large number of ministers of the church are employed elsewhere than in Scotland. The Church of Scotland in England consists of 16 charges. There are 31 chaplains minis- tering to Presbyterians in the army and navy, 15 of these being stationed in India. The foreign mission employs 15 ordained and 11 unordaincd European missionaries, with a large number of native agents, in India, East Africa, and China. The Jewish mission em- ploys 6 ordained ministers, with other agents, at Constantinople, Smyrna, Salonica, Beyrout, and Alexandria. The colonial com- mittee supplies religions ordinances to emigrants from Scotland in India, Fiji, Cyprus, Mauritius, Ceylon, and the West Indies, besides assisting Presbyterian colleges in Canada and Australia. A minister of the church presides over a Scots church of old standing at Amster- dam. Two lectureships have been founded in recent times in con- nexion with the church—one by Mr James Baird (alrcady mentioned),

2 For the period since 1843 the most useful book is Dr Story's Life of Dr Robert Lee, 1870.

Finance.

Adam- nan.

-Temains (see Cettic Lrreraturg, vol. v. p. 313). In the

most accurate indication of the general progress of the body. The

far north as Aberdeen. Its earliest writer is Thomas of Ercildoune, or Thomas the Rhymer, who reached the height of his fame in 1280. The fairy tale or romance that bears his name may be regarded ag the earliest example of romance poetry in Britain. Nearly contemporary with the Rhymer were two other distinguished Scots, Michael Scor (g.v.) and John of Duns, or Duns Scorus (7.v.), both of whom, however, wrote in Latin. Three

Arthurian Arthur. romances taken from Anglo-Norman sources relating to ian ro- Sir Gawain, one of the most celebrated knights of the auees. Round Table, seem to have been composed about the end of the 13th century. These were—Syr Gawayn and the Grene Knycht, the Knightly Tale of Golagros and Gawayne, and the Awntyrs of Arthur at the Ternewathelyne. Sir Gawain's exploits were so popular in the south of Scotland that he was claimed by the people as one of their own chieftains and called the lord of Galloway. The Awntyrs of Arthur, or the adventures of King Arthur at the Tern- wadling, a small lake near Carlisle, and the Pystil of Swete Susan, a version of the apocryphal story of Susanna, are supposed to have been the productions of Sir Hew of Eglintoun about that period. The Zaill of Rauf Coilzear, in which the adventures of the emperor Charlemagne in

the other by Mr John Croall of Southfield—and these have already produced several notable contributions to Scottish theology.

An association for augumenting the smaller livings was formed in 1866, and the church now has a smaller livings scheme, which aims at bringing up to £200 a year all livings that fall below that sum. Such numbered 311 in 1885; and the sum distributed among them was £8537, which, however, was £5000 short of the sum neces. sary to accomplish fully the desired object. :

In the following details of the income of the church we give first the value of her endowments and then some figures showing the growth of her voluntary liberality. ;

Means from Endowments.—(1) From a parliamentary return ob- tained in 1874 the church is seen to derive from teinds, includ- ing the value of manses and glebes, the annual sum of £289, 413. Augmentations have been obtained since that date amounting to upwards of £10,000, but the fiars prices have declined during the same period by nearly 25 per cent., so that the total ammount so derived has not increased. The unexhausted teinds amounted in 1880 to £134,413. (2) The exchequer pays to 190 poor parishes and to 42 Highland churches, from church property in the hands of the crown, £17,040. (3) From local sources the church derives £23,501. (4) The endowments raised by the church for 342 new parishes amount to £42,500. The total endowments, not counting church buildings, amount to £383,041. : ;

Means from Voluntary Liberality.—The following table (I.) gives a view of the financial progress of certain of the schemes of the church since the secession :—

Bren Foreign fhavdation Colonial Jewish Home : : ea' | Mission. "| Sehene.|_Mission. | Mission, | | the house of a charcoal:burner named Ralph in the neigh-

1842 £6,748 £3630 £3,753 £4998 2 bourhood of Paris are related with much poetic humour,

tne ae pe Be Bd eo and the fairy tale of Orfeo and Heurodis were written in

1855 3,712 4466 3,060 2619 3,866 the early part of the 14th century and were very popular

1860 4,873 4487 3,228 2804 4,85 . ;

1865 5°89 4959 3696 5000 5389 in Scotland in former times.

de wee eee aoe su ae The War of Independence gave a new Impetus to Scot-

1880 16,270 – 11,674 4715 15,604 tish nationality and produced a corresponding effect on the

1885 13,346 | Ee 4,750 5198 9,450 literature of the country. The Brus, or metrical account

of the deeds of Robert Bruce, was written by John Bar- Barbour BOUR (9.v.), archdeacon of Aberdeen, in the latter part of the 14th century. To him we owe a translation of a medizval romance on the Zrojan War, nearly 3000 lines in length, and a large collection of metrical lives of saints, which, after being long preserved in manuscript, have re- cently been printed by Dr Horstmann. About this time was compiled the first formal history of Scotland by John of ForDun (q.v.), which was written in Latin and brought Fordu. down to the death of David I, He, however, left materials for the completion of the work, the last date of which is 1385. In 1441 a continuation of it was made by Walter

No attempt was made until 1873 to collect statistics of the whole liberality of the church; and changes introduced from time to time in the mode of stating the various sums make it impossible to give a complete comparative statement since that date. The following table (II.) shows the amount at quinquennial periods down to 1885, the church-door collections and seat-rents probably affording the

*building operations of which the values are given include only such building as is the result of voluntary effort. Under the head of '*general church objects" are included the collections for missions, for small livings, aged and infirm ministers, zenana missions, &c. These figures do not include income from trust funds or endow- ments; they state what was given in the year referred to. A number of objects of liberality are not included in the table.*

Church | General Bower or Bowmaker. The whole work was then styled Bower. Your. [Goitections.| Heats. (Bralame'sr| Gneren | oO" | tote | | she Scottehwonteon id brings the history of Scotland dow Collections. } Rents. | Building or Objects, | Objects. CE NORE OCCT Name JUSs tie nistory ol Scotland down Repairs. to 1437. A metrical history was written between 1420

and 1424 by Andrew of Wyntoun, a canon regular of St Wyn- Andrews and prior of St Serf's Inch in Loch Leven. This toun. work, known as the Orygynale Cronykil of Scotland, is pre- faced by an account of the human race from the creation, and, although for the most part its verse is homely and dull, its author occasionally describes stirring incidents with considerable power. The beautiful poem of James I. James 1. called The Kingis Quhair, written about this period, was

far in advance of the contemporary metrical chronicles.

It possesses a melody of verse unknown before and gives

the king a conspicuous place in early Scottish literature.

He is supposed to have also written A Ballad of Good Counsel and a song On Absence ; but two poems, Christis Kirk of the Grene and Peblis to the

Play, believed to have been his composition, have been recently shown by the Rev. W. W. Skeat to be by some other early poet. An allegorical poem called the Buke of the Howlat was written about 1450 by Sir Richard Holland, an adherent of the noble family of Douglas. It is a warning against pride, exemplified by the owl, decked out in the splendour of borrowed feathers, compelled on account of his insolence

to resume his original form. The poem displays some inventive and descriptive power, though marred by its alliteration, The exploits of Sir William Wallace found

1872 | £41561 | £35,295 | £31,851 £43,618 | £27,204 | £255,350 1877 | 65,827 53,094 69,800 40,117 54,572 | 373,715 1882 | 76,399 59,859 67,134 51,520 61,253 | 386,061 1885 | 80,887 63,197 59,395 60,110 61,739 | 374,576

The following sums were raised during the thirteen years 1872- 84 :— congregational and charitable purposes, £1,462,091 ; support of ordinances and supplement of stipends, £233,406; education (exclusive of sums raised for training colleges), £161,931 ; home mission work, £358,543 ; church building, £737,775 ; endowment of new parishes, £486,698 ; foreign mission work, £376,523 ; total, £3,816,962. Mr James Baird's gift is not included in this state- ment. (A, M.)*

SCOTLAND, Lrreraturez or. Literature in Scotland, as distinct from England, dates from the time of CoLUMBA (g.v.). Adamnan, abbot of Iona, who in 690 wrote in Latin the life of his predecessor, may be regarded as the first author that Scotland produced. In addition to his biography of St Columba, a long extract from a work of his on the "Holy Places " is incorporated by Bede in his ficclesiastical History, The greater part of Scotland was at that time inhabited by a Celtic population and the period from the 7th to the 13th century has left but few literary

latter part of the 13th century what may be called the ancient literary language of Scotland was used in the dis- trict between the Humber and the Forth and coastwise as

|

| | | |

~ ere

Blind Harry.

Henry- son.

Dunbar.

Gavin Douglas.

LITERATURE, |

about 1460 a worthy chronicler in Henry the Minstrel, or Blind Harry, who, born with such a serious defect, must be regarded as one of the most extraordinary individuals recorded in the annals of literature. His well-known poem, which bears the name of his hero, is in versification, ex- pression, and poetic imagery a remarkable production for that period. The grave and thoughtful poetry of Robert HeEnryson (g.v.), notary public and preceptor in the Bene- dictine convent at Dunfermline, who flourished about 1470, contrasts favourably with that of his English contempo- raries. His Testament of Cresseid was often incorporated in the old editions of the works of Chaucer, to whose poetry it is not inferior. His Robene and Makyne is the earliest specimen of pastoral poetry in the Scottish lan- guage. These, with his ables and other works, entitle him to a high place amongst the early Scottish poets. Nearly coeval with Henryson was Sir Gilbert Hay, chamberlain to Charles VI. of France, who made several translations from the works of French authors. One of these, taken from a popular French romance of Alex- ander the Great, extends to upwards of 20,000 lines. A long anonymous poem called Clariodus belongs to this period, It is a romance founded on a French original, the more material incidents of which are supposed to have happened at the English court. It abounds with illustra- tions of the manners and customs peculiar to the age of chivalry. Being nearly 3000 lines in length, it is, like the last-mentioned, an extensive specimen of the language and versification of the time. The Zhrie Tales of the Thrie Preistis of Peblis (1490), the authorship of which is un- known, are moral tales possessing considerable freshness. As a

fragment of an old version of them occurs in the Asloan MS., written in 1490, they must have existed long before the edition printed by Henry Charteris in 1603, in which form only they are now accessible. The Ledger of Andrew Halyburton, conservator of the privileges of the Scottish nation in the Netherlands, 1492-1503, is a valu- able source of information regarding the early trade of Scotland.

The close of the 15th century exhibited a consider- able growth of literary ability in the writings of William DunBar (g.v.) and his contemporaries. His works were so highly esteemed at the time he wrote that he was raised to the dignity of "the makar" or poet-laureate of Scot- land. Such of Dunbar's writings as have come down to the present time are of a miscellaneous character, in which there is much power of description and command of verse. The Thistle and the Rose and the Golden Targe are excel- lent specimens of his poetic power. His satirical poems, such as the Zwa Mariit Wemen and the Wedo and the lyt- ing with Kennedie, contain much coarse humour. Seven of his poems were the first specimens of Scottish typo- graphy, having been printed by Chepman and Myllar at Edinburgh in 1508, followed in 1509 by the well-known Breviary for the church of Aberdeen. A humorous poem called the Freiris of Berwik has been attributed to Dunbar and is usually printed with his works. Contemporary with Dunbar were a number of minor Scottish poets, of whose works only a few specimens have come down to the present time. These were Walter Kennedie, with whom he had his " flyting" or poetical contest, Sir John Rowll, Quintyne Shaw, Patrick Johnestoun, Merseir, James Afflek, and others.! The most classical of the Scottish poets was Gawyn or Gavin Douctas (g.v.), bishop of Dunkeld, whose great literary work was the translation of the dneid of Virgil into Scottish verse. To each book he prefixed a prologue;

1 Kennedie wrote The Praise of Aige and The Passioun of Christ ; Rowll, Zhe Cursing on the Steilaris af his Fowlis; Shaw, Advice to a Courtier ; Johnestoun, The Three Deid Powis; Merseir, Perrell in Paramours ; and Afflek, The Quair of Jelousy.

the one before the twelfth is an admirable descriptive poem of the beauties of May. His Palice of Honour and Kyng Hart, two allegorical poems, are able productions, the latter of which is full of dramatic vigour. Contemporary with Douglas was Sir David Lynpsay (¢.v.), Lyon king-of-arms Sir

in the feign of James V., who may be regarded as the most David His Monarchie, or Lyndsay.

popular of the early Scottish poets. ane Dialog betuix Experience and ane Courteour of the Miserabyl Estait of the Warld gives a short survey of sacred and classical history which rendered it very popular in its time. His Satire of the Thrie Estaitis is a skilfully written attempt to reform the abuses of the period, especi- ally those of the church. While some of its characters recite long and erudite political speeches, he introduces interludes of a farcical kind suited to the tastes of the times. This work may be considered the first dramatic effort of any British author. In his Zestament of Squire Meldrum he relates the adventures of his hero with mucl1 poetic fire. Lyndsay's other poems consist of appeals to the king for advancement and some jeux desprit of no great length. One of the best scholars and teachers of this period was John Major or Mair, a native of Haddington, who was principal of St Salvator's College, St Andrews. Besides being the author of learned commentaries on Aristotle, he wrote a well-known work, De historia gentis Scotorum libri sex, printed in 1521. Another Scottish author that wrote in Latin with considerable elegance was

Hector Borck (q.v.), principal of King's College, Aberdeen. Boece.

His great work, Historia gentis Scotorum a prima gentis origine, was published in Paris in 1526. It was translated into Scottish by John Bellenden, archdeacon of Moray, under the title of the Hystory and Croniklis of Scotland, printed at Edinburgh in 1536. Bellenden also translated the first five books of Livy into Scottish. The Chronicle of Boece was versified in Scottish in 1531-35 by William Stewart, a descendant of the first earl of Buchan. It was written by command of Margaret, sister of Henry VIII. of England, for the instruction of her son, the youthful James V. A Latin poem of much merit, entitled De animi tran- quillitate, was published in 1543 by Florence Wilson, master of Carpentras School. It is in

the form of a dialogue and displays much variety of knowledge, while its Latinity has long been celebrated. In an anonymous work, written in 1548 or 1549, and called the Complaynt of Scotland, the author deplores the calamities to which Scotland was then subject. These are stated to be the wrongs done to the Scottish labourers at the hands of the landholders and the clergy, the difficulties with England, and the treachery of the Scottish nobility. The work is valuable as affording a glimpse of the literature then popular in Scotland, some pieces of which are no longer to be found,—such as Zhe Tayle of the Reyde Eyttyn [red giant] vith the Thre Heydes, The Tayl of the Volfe of the Varldis End, The Tayl of the Giantis that eit Quyk Men, The Tayl of the thrie futtat Dog of Norroway, and Robyn Hude and Litil Jhone.

In 1552 there was printed at St Andrews a Catechism, that is to say ane Commone and Catholike Instructioun of the Christian People in Materis of our Catholike Faith and Religioun, written by John Hamilton, archbishop of St Andrews, the last primate of the Roman Catholic faith in Scotland.

those of Lyndsay, contain much information about the abuses of the time (1560), such as the oppressive conduct of the landholders, vexatious lawsuits, and the depredations of the Border thieves. Sir Richard deserves the thanks of posterity for the large manuscript collection of poems by Scottish authors which he and his daughter formed, and which is now preserved in the Pepysian Library, at Magdalene College, Cambridge. The name of George

The poems of Sir Richard Maitland, which are Mait- of a somewhat satirical kind, are valuable, as they, like land.

Banna- tyne.

Rolland.

Buchanan.

Lyndsay of Pit- scottie.

Lesley.

Bannatyne is inseparably connected with the history of Scottish poetry, as in 1568 he too formed an extensive collection of Scottish poetry which is certainly the most valuable now extant. It was written by hin at Edin- burgh in the time of the plague, when the dread of in- fection confined him closely at home. The Bannatyne ALS. now preserved in the Advocates' Library extends to 800 pages folio, and includes several of Bannatyne's own poems, of which the two most considerable are of an amatory character. The works of Alexander Scott, con- sisting principally of love poems, embrace also a spirited account of a Jousting betwix Adamson and Sym at the Drum, a place a little to the south of Edinburgh. The author, who was one of the most elegant poets of this period, has sometimes been called the 'Scottish Anacreon." Two poems of some merit—the Praises of Wemen and the Miseries of a Puir Scolar—were written by Alexander Arbuthnot, principal of King's College, Aberdeen, about 1570. A poem of considerable length, called the Sege of the Castell of Edinburgh, published in 1573, was by Robert Semple, who also wrote an attack on Archbishop Adamson, called the Legend of the Bishop of Sanct Androis Lyfe. To this period belong two poems of considerable length— the Court of Venus (1575), an imitation of the Palice of Honour of Gawyn Douglas, and the romance of the Seaven Seages (1578), a Scottish version of one of the most re- markable medizeval collections of stories belonging to the same class as the Arabian Nights, in which one single story is employed as a means of stringing together a multi- tude of subsidiary tales. These poems were written by John Rolland, notary in Dalkeith. One of the best Latin scholars that modern Europe has produced was George BUCHANAN (q.v.), who flourished in the middle of the 16th century. He wrote several Latin tragedies and an unrivalled translation of the Psalms. His De jure regni apud Scotos was composed to instruct James VI., to whom he had been tutor, in the duties belonging to his kingly office. His last and most important labour was his History of Scotland, originally printed in 1582, of which seventeen editions have appeared. An excellent specimen of the ancient vernacular language is the Chronicle of Scotland by Robert Lyndsay of Pitscottie. It includes the period from 1436 to the marriage of Mary to Darnley in 1565. Although its

author was a simple-minded and credulous man, he describes events of which he was an eye-witness with circumstantiality and great prolixity of detail. An- other historical work of greater importance was the De orugine, moribus, et rebus gestis Scotorum (1578) by John Lesley, bishop of Ross. A translation of this work made by Father James Dalrymple, a religious in the Scottish cloister of Ratisbon, 1596, is in course of publication by the Rev. Father E. B. Cody for the Scottish Text Society. Lesley also wrote in Scottish a History of Scotland from the death of James I. in 1436 to the year 1561. This work, intended for the perusal of Mary while in captivity in England, is written in an elegant style. The bishop was the champion of that unfortunate queen, and in 1569 wrote a Defence of the Honour of Marie Quene of Scotland and Dowager of France, with a declaration of her right, title, and interest to the succession of the crown of England.

The Reformation exerted a considerable influence on Scottish literature. Amongst the earliest Protestant writers of the country may be mentioned Alexander Ales or Alesius, a native of Edinburgh, who published several controversial works and commentaries on various parts of the Bible. But the most eminent promoter of the reform was John Knox (¢.v.), who wrote several controversial pamphlets and some religious treatises ; his great work was the fTistory of the Reformation of Religion in Scotland, first printed in 1586. One of the principal opponents of Knox was Ninian

8 CO TL Atth®

Winzet, a priest of considerable ability and one familiar Winzet,. with the scholastic learning of the age. He began life as master of Linlithgow school and subsequently became abbot of St James's at Ratisbon. He wrote séveral tracts

in which he strenuously recommended the observance of — certain popish festivals. In 1562 he published his Buke

of Four Scoir Thrie Questions tuching Doctrine, Ordour, and Maneris proponit to the Prechouris of the Protestantis in Scotland and deliverit to Jhone Knox the 20th day of Hebruary 1562. The writings of James VL, who was a James man of scholarly attainments, embrace several works both VL in poetry and prose. His earliest production, published

in 1584, when he was only eighteen, was the Lssayes of

a Prentice in the Divine Art of Poesie. This was followed

by his poetical Exercises at Vacant Houres (1591). He also wrote a great many sonnets and a translation of

the Psalms. His prose works are Demonologie (1597), BactAccov Adpov (1599), Counterblast to Tobacco, Para- phrase on Revelation, Law of Free M onarchies, &c, Among

the Scottish poets who frequented his court were William Fowler, the elegant translator of the Triumphs of Petrarch,

and Stewart of Baldinnies (Perth), a translator of Ariosto. Both these poets wrote other works which exist in MS.,

but are still unpublished. The zeal of Sir David Lyndsay Reli- and others for the reformation of the church initiated a gious religious revival, and in 1597 was published the collection Pts known as Ane Compendious Booke of Godly and Spiritual Sangs for avoiding of Sinne and Harlotrie, This very curious work is attributed to John and Robert Wedder- burn, the latter of whom was vicar of Dundee. A number

of religious poems were written about the end of the 16th century by James Melville, minister of Anstruther, after- wards of Kilrenny, both in Fife. His Morning Vision, printed in 1598, consists of paraphrases of the Lord's Prayer, the Shorter Catechism, and the Ten Command- ments. He also wrote the Black Bastel, a lamentation over

the Church of Scotland, which is dated 1611. Another religious poet was James Cockburn, a native of Lanark- shire, who wrote Gabriel's Salutation to Marie (1605), and some other poems not destitute of merit. An eminent theological writer of this era, Robert Rollock, first principal

of the university of Edinburgh, wrote many commentaries

on the Scriptures which show extensive learning. Most

are in Latin ; but one or two are in the Scottish language.

A very popular poem, the Cherrie and the Slae, first printed Mont- by Waldegrave at Edinburgh in 1597, afterwards went gomerie. through many editions. Its author was Alexander Mont- gomerie, who also wrote some translations of the Psalms and the Mlyting betwixt Montgomerie and Polwarth, in imitation of Dunbar's Flyting with Kennedie. In 1599

was published an interesting volume of poems written by Alexander Hume, entitled Hymnes or Sacred Songs, wherein

the Right Use of Poesie may be espied. One is on the defeat

of the Spanish Armada. To the beginning of the 17th century belongs a comedy in rhyming stanza, the authorship

of which is unknown,—Ane verie Excellent and Delectabill Treatise intitulit Philotus, quhairin we may perceive the Greit Inconventences that fallis out in the Marriage betuix Aige and Youth (1603). Its versification is easy and pleasant, and

its plan a nearer approximation to the modern drama than

the satire of Lyndsay. In the same year appeared the poems of Sir William ALEXANDER (¢.v.), earl of Stirling. sir_ One, called Doomsday, or the Great Day of the Lord's Judg- William ment, consists of 11,000 verses. His Monarchicke Tragedies, nce four in number, were not intended for representation on

the stage. His exhortation or Parenesis to Prince Henry (1604) is his best poem. He also wrote Recreations with

the Muses (1637), which is of a somewhat philosophical character. One of the most distinguished writers of this

era was William Drummonp (¢.v.) of Hawthornden, who

Drum- mond of Haw- thorn- den.

Hannay.

Mathe- mati- cians.

Philo- sophers.

Writers on juris- prud- ence.

Medical writers.

published Poems, amorous, funerall, divine, pastorall (161 6), and Flowers of Zion, or Spiritual Poems (1623). He also wrote a History of Scotland during the Reigns of the Five Jameses (1655), some political tracts, and the Cypress Grove, a moral treatise in prose. As a writer of sonnets he has always been highly esteemed. Nearly contemporary with Drummond was Patrick Hannay, a native of Gallo- way, who seems to have followed James to England. He published his poems in 1622, the principal of which are Philomela the Nightingale and Sheretrine and Mariana. He occupies a favourable position amongst the minor Scottish poets. After the removal of the Scottish court to London and the union of the crowns in 1608, the old language began to be considered as a provincial dialect ; and the writers subsequent to Drummond, who was the first Scottish poet that wrote well in English, take their places amongst British authors.

To the short sketch above given may be added a notice of the carly Scottish writers on mathematics, philosophy, jurisprudence, and medicine. In mathematical science the name of Joannes Sacro Bosco (John Holywood or Holybush) may be mentioned, as he is believed to have been a native of Nithsdale and a canon of the monastery of Holywood, from which he took his name. He flourished about the beginning of the 13th century, and his treatise De Sphera Mundi was very generally taught in colleges and schools. The system of astronomy and the other mathematical treatises of James Bassantie, who taught at Paris about 1560 with much success, were cclebrated in their time. The greatest of the Scottish mathe- maticians, however, was John NAPIER (q.v.) of Merchiston, who wrote on various kindred subjects, and in 1614 astonished the world by his discovery of

logarithms. In philosophy, besides the voluminous works of Duns Scotus and John Major already men- tioned, various learned commentaries on Aristotle, of which Scottish philosophy then almost entirely consisted, were published by Robert Balfour, principal of the college of Guienne ; by John Ruther- ford, professor of philosophy at St Andrews (under whom Admirable Crichton wasa pupil); and by James Cheyne, professor of philosophy at Douai. In jurisprudence a cclebrated treatise on the Feudal Law was written by Sir Thomas Craig about 1603. It was not, however, published till about half a century after his death, as the printing of any treatise on the law of Scotland while he lived seems to have becn considered as out of the question. Commentaries on some of the titles of the Pandects of Justinian, and a treatise De Potestate Pape (1609), in opposition to the usurpation of temporal power by the pope, were written by William Barclay, professor of law in the university of Angers. Another early legal work was a treatise On the Connexion between Government and Religion, by Adam Blackwood, judge of the parlement of Poitiers, who was the antagonist of Buchanan and a strenuous defender of Mary queen of Scots. In medicine the principal early Scottish works were written by Duncan Liddell, a native of Aberdeen, who in 1605 published at Helmstadt his Disputationes medicinates, containing the theses or disputations maintained by himself and his pupils from 1592 to 1606. He also published other works, which contain an able digest of the medical learning of his age. Henry Blackwood, dean of faculty to the college of physicians at Paris, wrote various treatises on medicine, of which a list will be found in Mackenzie's Lives of the Scottish Writers, but which are now only historically interesting. (J. SM.)

SCOTT, Davip (1806-1849), historical painter, was born at Edinburgh in October 1806, and studied under his father, Robert Scott, an engraver of repute in the city. For a time in his youth he occupied himself with the burin ; but he soon turned his attention to original work in colour, and in 1828 he exhibited his first oil picture, the Hopes of Early Genius dispelled by Death, which was followed by Cain, Nimrod, Adam and Eve singing their Morning Hymn, Sarpedon carried by Sleep and Death, and other subjects of a poetic and imaginative character. In 1829 he became a member of the Scottish Academy, and in 1832 visited Italy, where he spent more than a year in study. At Rome he executed a large symbolical painting, entitled the Agony of Discord, or the Household Gods Destroyed. On his return to Scotland he

continued the strenuous and unwearied practice of his art; but his productions were too recondite and abstract in subject ever to become widely popular, while the defects and exaggerations of their draftsmanship repelled connoisseurs. So the

gravity which had always been characteristic of the artist passed into gloom; he shrank from society and led a secluded life, hardly quitting his studio, his mind con- stantly occupied with the great problems of life and of his art. The works of his later years include Vasco da Gama encountering the Spirit of the Storm, a picture— immense in size and most powerful in conception—finished in 1842, and now preserved in the Trinity House, Leith ; the Duke of Gloucester entering the Water Gate of Calais (1841), an impressive subject, more complete and har- monious in execution than was usual with the artist; the Alchemist (1838), Queen Elizabeth at the Globe Theatre (1840), and Peter the Hermit (1 845), remarkable for their varied and elaborate character-painting ; and Ariel and Caliban (1837) and the Triumph of Love (1846), distin- guished by their beauty of colouring and depth of poetic feeling. The most important of his religious subjects are the Descent from the Cross (1835) and the Crucifixion— the Dead Rising (1844). In addition to his works in colour Scott executed several remarkable series of designs. Two of these—the Monograms of Man and the illustra-

tions to Coleridge's Ancient Mariner—were etched by his

own hand, and published in 1831 and 1837 respectively, while his subjects from the Pilgrim's Progress and Nichol's Architecture of the Heavens were issued after his death. Among his literary productions are five elaborate and

thoughtful articles on the characteristics of the Italian masters, published in Blackwood's M agazine, 1839 to 1841,

and a pamphlet on British, French, and German Painting,

1841. He died in Edinburgh on the 5th of March 1849.

‘As a colourist David Scott occupies a high place in the Scottish school, but the most distinctive merit of his works lies in the boldness of their conception and their imagina- tive and poetic power.

See W. B. Scott, Memoir of David Scott, R.S.A. (1850), and

J. M. Gray, David Scott, R.S.A., and his Works (1884).

SCOTT, Siz Grorce Ginpert (1811-1878), one of the

most successful ecclesiastical architects of the 19th century, was born in 1811 at Gawcott near Buckingham, where his father was rector; his grandfather was Thomas Scott

(1747-1821),

the well-known commentator on the Bible.

In 1827 young Scott was apprenticed for four years to an architect in London named Edmeston, his pupildom acted as clerk of the works at the new

and at the end of

Fishmongers’ Hall and other buildings in order to acquire a knowledge of the practical details of his profession, In Edmeston’s office he became acquainted with a fellow- pupil, named Moffat, a man who possessed considerable talents for the purely business part of an architect’s work, and the t

544

England, and in the next twenty-eight years completed an almost incredibly large number of new churches and “restorations,” the fever for which was fomented by the Hcclesiological Society and the growth of ecclesiastical feeling in England.

In 1844 Scott won the first premium in the competition for the new Lutheran church at Hamburg, a noble building with a very lofty spire, designed

strictly in the style of the 13th century. In the following year his partnership with Moffat was dissolved, and in 1847 Scott was employed to renovate and refit Ely cathedral, the first of a long series of English cathedral and abbey churches which passed through his hands. In 1851 Scott visited and studied the architecture of the chief towns in northern Italy, and in 1855 won the competition for the town-house at Hamburg, designed after the model of similar buildings in north Germany. In spite of his having won the first prize, another architect was selected to construct the building, after a very inferior design. In 1856 a competition was held for designs of the new Government offices in London : Scott obtained the third place in this, but the work was afterwards given to him on the condition (insisted on by Lord Palmerston) that he should make a new design, not Gothic, but Classic or Renaissance in style: This Scott very unwillingly consented to do, as he had Little sympathy with any styles but those of England or France from the 13th to the 15th century. In 1862-63 he was employed to design and construct the Albert Menorial, a very costly and elaborate work, in the style of a magnified 13th-century reliquary or ciborium, adorned with mInany statues and re- hiefs in bronze and marble. On the partial completion of this he received the honour of knighthood. In 1866 he competed for the new London law-courts, but the prize was adjudged to his old pupil, G. E. Street. In 187 3, owing to illness caused by overwork, Scott Spent some time in Rome and other parts of Italy. The mosaic pavement which he designed for Durham cathedral soon afterwards was the result of his study of the 13th-century mosaics in the old basilicas of Rome. On his return to England he resumed his professional labours, and continued to work almost without intermission till his short illness and death in 1878. He was buried in the nave of Westminster Abbey, and an engraved brass, designed by G. E. Street, was placed over his grave. In 1838 Scott married his cousin, Caroline Oldrid, who died in 1870; they had five sons, two of whom have taken up their father's profession.

Scott's architectural works were more numerous than those of

any other architect of the century; unfortunately for his fame, he undertook far more than it was possible for him really to design or supervise with thought and care. He carried out extensive works of repair, refurnishing, and restoration in the following buildings : —the cathedrals of Ely,

Hereford, Lichfield, Salisbury, Chichester, Durham, St David's, Bangor, St Asaph, Chester, Gloucester, Ripon, Worcester, Exeter, Rochester, the abbeys of Westminster, St Albans, Tewkesbury, and countless minor churches. He also built the new Government offices (India, Foreign, Home, and Colonial), the Mid- land Railway terminus and hotel, and a large number of private houses and other buildings. His style was (with the one exception of the Government offices) a careful copy of architectural periods of the Middle Ages, used with a profound knowledge of detail, but without much real inventive power, and consequently rather dull and uninteresting in effect. Asa "restorer" of ancient buildings he was guilty of an immense amount of the most irreparable destruc- tion, but any other architect of his generation would probably have done as much or even more harm. While a member of the Royal Academy Scott held for many years the post of professor of archi- tecture, and gave a long serics of able lectures on medixval styles, which were published in 1879, He wrote a work on Domestic Architecture, and a volume of Personal and Professional Recollections, which, edited by his eldest son, was published in 1879, and also a large number of articles and reports on many of the ancient build- ings with which he had to deal. Owing to his numerous pupils, among whom have been many leading architects, his influence was for, some time very widely spread; but it is how rapidly passing away, mainly owing to the growing reaction against the somewhat

harrow medizvalism of which he, both in theory and practice, was

the ehief exponent.

SCOTT, Joun. See Expoy, Earn or,

SCOTT, Micwart. See Scot, MIcHAEt.

SCOTT, Sir Watrer (177 1-1832), poet and novelist, was born at Edinburgh on 15th August 1771. His pedi- gree, in which he took a pride that strongly influenced the course of his life, may be given in the words of his own fragment of autobiography. "My birth was neither dis- tinguished nor sordid. According to the prejudices of my country it was esteemed gentle, as

I was connected, though remotely, with ancient families both by my father's and mother's side. My father's grandfather was Walter Scott, well known by the name of Beardie. He was the second son of Walter Scott, first laird of Raeburn, who was third son of Sir William Scott, and the grandson of Walter Scott, commonly called in tradition Awd Watt of Harden. T am therefore lineally descended from that ancient chicf- tain, whose name I have made to ring in many a ditty, and from his fair dame, the Flower of Yarrow,—no bad genealogy for a Border minstrel,"

Scott's desire to be known as a cadet of the house of Harden, and his ruling passion—so disastrous in its ultimate results—to found a minor territorial family of Scotts, have been very variously estimated. He himself, in a notice of John Home, speaks of pride of family as "natural to a man of imagination," remarking that, "in this motley world, the family pride of the north country has its effects of good and of evil." Whether the good or the evil preponderated in Scott's own case would not be easy to determine. It tempted him into courses that ended in commercial ruin; but throughout his life it was @ constant spur to exertion, and in his last years it proved itself as a working principle capable of inspiring and main- taining a most chivalrous conception of duty. If the ancient chieftain Auld Watt was, according to the anecdote told by his illustrious descendant, once reduced in the matter of live stock to a single cow, and recovered his: dignity by stealing the cows of his English neighbours, Professor Veitch is probably right in holding that Scott's Border ancestry were, as a matter of literal fact, sheep- farmers, who varied their occupation by "lifting" sheep and cattle, and whatever else was "neither too heavy nor too hot." The Border lairds were really a race of shepherds in so far as they were not a race of robbers. Professor Veitch suggests that Scott may have derived from this pastoral ancestry an hereditary bias towards the observation of nature and the enjoyment of open-air life. He certainly inherited from them the robust strength of constitution that carried him successfully through so many exhausting labours. And it was his pride in their real or supposed feudal dignity and their rough marauding exploits that first directed him to the study of Border history and poetry, the basis of his fame as a poet and romancer. His father, a writer to the signet (or attorney) in Edinburgh—the original of the elder Fairford in Red- geuntle-—was the first of the family to adopt a town life or a learned profession. His mother was the daughter of

Dr Rutherford, a medical professor in the university of Edinburgh, who also traced descent from the chiefs of famous Border clans. 'The ceilings of Abbotsford display the arms of about a dozen Border families with which Scott claimed kindred through one side or the other. His father was conspicuous for methodical and thorough in- dustry ; his mother was a woman of imagination and cul- ture. The son seems to have inherited the best qualities of the one and acquired the best qualities of the other.

The details of his early education are given with great precision in his autobiography. Stuart Mill was not more minute in recording the various circumstances that shaped

ee oT T

his habits of mind and work. We learn from himself the secret—as much at least as could be ascribed to definite ex- traneous accident—of the "extempore speed " in romantic composition against which Carlyle protested in his famous review of Lockhart's Life of Scott.! The indignant critic assumed that Scott wrote "without preparation"; Scott himself, as if he had foreseen this cavil, is at pains to show that the preparation began with his boyhood, almost with his infancy. The current legend when Carlyle wrote his essay was that as a boy Scott had been a dunce and an idler. With a characteristically conscientious desire not to get a bad example, the autobiographer solemnly declares that he was neither a dunce nor an idler, and explains how the misunderstanding arose. His health in boyhood was uncertain ;2 he was consequently irregular in his attend- ance at school, never became exact in his knowledge of Latin syntax, and was so belated in beginning Greek that out of bravado he resolved not to learn it at all.

Left very much to himself throughout his boyhood in the matter of reading, so quick, lively, excitable, and un- certain in health that it was considered dangerous to press him and prudent rather to keep him back, Scott began at a very early age to accumulate the romantic lore of which he afterwards made such splendid use. As a child he seems to have been an eager and interested listener and a great favourite with his elders, apparently having even then the same engaging charm that made him so much beloved as a man. Chance threw him in the way of many who were willing to indulge his delight in stories and ballads. Not only his own relatives—the old women at

his grandfather's farm at Sandyknowe, his aunt, under whose charge he was sent to Bath for a year, his mother—took an interest in the precocious boy's ques- tions, told him tales of Jacobites and Border worthies of his own and other clans, but casual friends of the family —such as the military veteran at Prestonpans, old Dr Blacklock the blind poet, Home the author of Douglas, Adam Ferguson the martial historian of the Roman republic—helped forward his education in the direction in which the bent of his genius lay. At the age of six

1 Latest edition in 10 vols. feap. 8vo, Edinburgh, 1847-48.

2 Dr Charles Creighton supplies us with the following medical note on Scott's early illness :—"Scott's lameness was owing to an arrest of growth in the right leg in infancy. " When he was eighteen months old he had a feverish attack lasting three days, at the end of which time it was found that he 'had lost the power of his right leg,'—7.e., the child instinctively declined to move the ailing member. The malady was a swelling at the ankle, and either consisted in or gave rise to arrest of the bone-forming function along the growing line of cartilage which connects the lower epiphysis of each of the two leg-bones with its shaft. In his fourth year, when he had otherwise recovered, the leg remained 'much shrunk aud contracted.' The limb would have been blighted very much more if the arrest of growth had taken place at the upper epiphysis of the tibia or the lower epiphysis of the femur. The narrowness and peculiar depth of Scott's head point to some more general congenital error of bone-making allied to rickets but certainly not the same as that malady. The vault of the skull is the typical 'scaphoid' or boat-shaped formation, due to premature union of the two parietal bones along the sagittal suture. When the bones of the cranium are universally affected with that arrest of growth along their formative edges, the sutures become prematurely fixed and effaced, so that the brain-case cannot expand in any direction to accommodate the growing brain. This universal synostosis of the cranial bones is what occurs in the case of microcephalous idiots. It happened to me to show to an eminent French anthropologist a specimen of a miniature or micro- cephalic skull preserved in the Cambridge museum of anatomy ; the French savant, holding up the skull and pointing to the ' scaphoid' vault of the crown and the effaced sagittal suture, exclaimed ' Voila Walter Scott!' Scott had

fortunately escaped the early closure or arrest of growth at other cranial sutures than the sagittal, so that the growing brain could make room for itself by forcing up the vault of the skull bodily. When his head was opened after death, it was observed that 'the brain was not large, and the cranium thinner than it is usually found to be.' In favour of the theory of congenital liability it has to be said that he was the ninth of a family of whom the first six died in 'very early youth,'"

545

he was able to define himself as 'a virtuoso," "one who wishes to and will know everything." At ten his collec- tion of chap-books and ballads had reached several volumes, and he was a connoisseur in various readings. Thus he took to the High School, Edinburgh, when he was strong enough to be put in regular attendance, an unusual store of miscellaneous knowledge and an unusually quickened intelligence, so that his master "pronounced that, though many of his schoolfellows understood the Latin better, Gualterus Scott was behind few in following and enjoying the author's meaning."

Throughout his school days and afterwards when he was apprenticed to his father, attended university classes, read for the bar, took part in academical and professional debating societies, Scott steadily and ardently pursued his own favourite studies. His reading in romance and history was really study, and not merely tle indulgence of an ordinary schoolboy's promiscuous appetite for excit- ing literature. In fact, even as a schoolboy he special- ized. He followed the line of overpowering inclination ; and even then, as he frankly tells us, "fame was the spur." He acquired a reputation among his schoolfellows for out-of-the-way knowledge, and also for story-telling, and he worked hard to maintain this character, which compensated to his ambitious spirit his indifferent distinc- tion in ordinary school-work. The youthful ' virtuoso," though he read ten times the usual allowance of novels from the circulating library, was carried by his enthusiasm into fields much less generally attractive. He was still a schoolboy when he mastered French sufficiently well to read through collections of old French romances, and not more than fifteen when, attracted by translations to Italian romantic literature, he learnt the language in order to read Dante and Ariosto in the

original. This willingness to face dry work in the pursuit of romantic reading affords a measure of the strength of Scott's passion. In one of the literary parties brought together to lionize Burns, when the peasant poet visited Edinburgh, the boy of fifteen was the only member of the company who could tell the source of some lines affixed to a picture that had attracted the poet's attention,—a slight but significant evidence both of the width of his reading and of the tenacity of his memory. The same thoroughness appears in another little circumstance. He took an interest in Scottish family history and genealogy, but, not content with the ordinary sources, he ransacked the MSS. preserved in the Advocates' Library. By the time he was one and twenty he had acquired such a reputation for his skill in deciphering old manuscripts that his assistance was sought by professional antiquaries.

This early, assiduous, unintermittent study was the main secret, over and above his natural gifts, of Scott's extempore speed and fertility when at last he found forms into which to pour his vast accumulation of historical and romantic lore. He was, as he said himself, "like an ignorant gamester who keeps up a good hand till he knows how to play it." That he had vague thoughts from a much earlier period than is commonly supposed of playing the hand some day is extremely probable, if, as he tells us, the idea of writing romances first occurred to him when he read Cervantes in the original. This was long before he was out of his teens; and, if we add that his leading idea in his first novel was to depict a Jacobitic Don Quixote, we can see that there was probably a long interval between the first conception of Waverley and the ultimate completion.

Scott's preparation for painting the life of past times was probably much less unconsciously such than his equally thorough preparation for acting as the painter of Scottish manners and character in all grades of society. With all

the extent of his reading as a schoolboy and a young man he was far from being a cloisteral student, absorbed in his books. In spite of his lameness

and his serious illnesses in youth, his constitution was naturally robust, his dis- position genial, his spirits high: he was always well to the front in the fights and frolics of the High School, and a boon companion in the "high jinks" of the junior bar. The future novelist's experience of life was singularly rich and varied. While he lived the life of imagination and scholarship in sympathy with a few choice friends, he was brought into intimate daily contact with many varieties of real life. At home he had to behave as became a member of a Puritanic, somewhat ascetic, well-ordered Scottish household, subduing his own inclinations towards a more graceful and comfortable scheme of living into outward con- formity with his father's strict rule. Through his mother's family he obtained access to the literary society of Edin- burgh, at that time electrified by the advent of Burns, full of vigour and ambition, rejoicing in the possession of not a few widely known men of letters, philosophers, historians, novelists, and critics, from racy and eccentric Monboddo to refined and scholarly Mackenzie. In that society also he may have found the materials for the manners and characters of St Honan's Well, From any tendency to the pedantry of over-culture he was effectually saved by the rougher and manlier spirit of his professional comrades, who, though they respected belles lettres, would not tolerate anything in the shape of affectation or senti- mentalism. The atmosphere of the Parliament House (the Westminster Hall of Edinburgh) had considerable influence on the tone of Scott's novels. His peculiar humour as a story-teller and painter of character was first developed among the young men of his own standing at the bar. They were the first mature audience on which he experi- mented, and seem often to have been in his mind's eye when he enlarged his public. From their mirthful com- panionship by the stove, where the briefless congregated to discuss knotty points in law and help one another to enjoy the humours of judges and litigants, '"' Duns Scotus " often stole away to pore over old books and manuscripts in the library beneath ; but as long as he was with them he was first among his peers in the art of providing enter- tainment. It was to this market that Scott brought the harvest of the vacation rambles which it was his custom to make every autumn for seven years after his call to the bar and before his marriage. He scoured the country in search of ballads and other relics of antiquity; but he found also and treasured many traits of living manners, many a lively sketch and story with which to amuse the brothers of "the mountain" on his return. His staid father did not much like these escapades,

and told him bitterly that he seemed fit for nothing but to be a " gangrel scrape-gut." But, as the companion of "his Liddesdale raids" happily put it, "he was makin' himsell a' the time, but he didna ken maybe what he was about till years had passed: at first he thought o' little, I daresay, but the queerness and the fun."

We may as well dispose at once of Scott's professional career. His father intended him originally to follow his own business, and he was apprenticed in his sixteenth year; but he preferred the upper walk of the legal profession, and was admitted a member of the faculty of advocates in 1792. He seems to have read hard at law for four years at least, but almost from the first to have limited his ambition to obtaining some comfortable appointment such as would leave him a good deal of leisure for literary pursuits. In this he was not disappointed. In 1799 he obtained the office of sheriff-depute of Selkirk- shire, with a salary of £300 and very light duties. In 1806 he obtained the reversion of the office of clerk of

Seo Ok

session. It is sometimes supposed, from the immense amount of other work that Scott accomplished, that this office was a sinecure. But the duties, which are fully described by Lockhart, were really serious, and kept him hard at fatiguing work, his biographer estimates, for at least three or four hours daily during six months out of the twelve, while the court was in session. He discharged these duties faithfully for twenty-five years, during the height of his activity as an author. He did not enter on the emoluments of the office till 1812, but from that time he received from the clerkship and the sheriffdom combined an income of £1600 a year, being thus enabled to act in his literary undertakings on his often-quoted maxim that "literature should be a staff and not a crutch."

Scott's profession, in addition to supplying him with a competent livelihood, supplied him also with abundance of opportunities for the study of men and manners. Char- acters of all types and shades find their way into courts of law. The wonder is that so much technical drudgery did not crush every particle of romance out of him; but such was the elasticity and strength of his powers that this daily attendance at the transaction of affairs in open court face to face with living men—under a strain of attention that would

have exhausted an ordinary man's allowance of energy—seems rather to have helped him in giving an atmosphere of reality to his representations of the life of the past.

It was not, however, as a prose writer that he was first to make a reputation. The common notion is that Scott, having made a reputation as a poet, was led to attempt romances in prose by a chance impulse, hitting upon the new vein as if by accident. The truth seems rather to be that, as it is his prose romances which give the fullest measure of his genius, so the greater part of his early life was @ conscious or unconscious preparation for writing them ; whereas his metrical romances, in every way slighter and less rich and substantial, were, comparatively speak- ing, a casual and temporary deviation from the main pur- pose of his life. According to his own account, he was led to adopt the medium of verse by a series of accidents. The story is told by himself at length and with his customary frankness and modesty in the Essay on Imita- toons of the Ancient Ballad, prefixed to the 1830 edition of his Border Minstrelsy, and in the 1830 introduction to the Lay of the Last Minstrel. The first link in the chain was a lecture by Henry Mackenzie on German literature, delivered in 1788. This apprized Scott, who was then a legal apprentice and an enthusiastic student of French and Italian romance, that there was a fresh development of romantic literature in German. As soon as he had the burden of preparation for the bar off his mind he learnt German, and was profoundly excited to find a new school founded on the serious study of a kind of literature his own devotion to which was regarded by most of his com- panions with wonder and ridicule. We must remember always that Scott quite as much as Wordsworth created the taste by which he was enjoyed, and that in his early days he was half-ashamed of his romantic studies, and pursued them more or less in secret with a few intimates. While he was in the height of his enthusiasm for the new German romance, Mrs Barbauld visited Edinburgh, and recited an English translation of Biirger's Lenore. Scott heard of it from a friend, who was able to repeat two lines— .

‘ Tramp, tramp, across the land they speed ; Splash, splash, across the sea !” The two lines were enough to give Scott a new ambition. He could write such poetry himself! The impulse was strengthened by his reading Lewis’s Afonk and the ballads in the German manner interspersed through the work. He hastened to procure a copy of Biirger, at once executed*

5s Co Ta 547

translations of several of his ballads, published two of them in a thin quarto in 1796 (his ambition being perhaps quickened by the unfortunate issue of a love affair), and was much encouraged by the applause of his friends. Soon after he met Lewis personally, and his ambition was con- firmed. ‘Finding Lewis,” he says, “in possession of so much reputation, and conceiving that if I fell behind him in poetical powers, I considerably exceeded him in general information, I suddenly took it into my head to attempt the style of poetry by which he had raised himself to fame.” Accordingly, he composed Glenjinlas, The Hve of St John, and the Gray Brother, which were published in Lewis’s collection of Zales of Wonder. But he soon be- came convinced that “the practice of ballad-writing was out of fashion, and that any attempt to revive it or to found a poetical character on it would certainly fail of success.” His study of Goethe’s Gotz von Berlichingen, ot which he published a translation in 1799, gave him wider ideas. Why should he not do for ancient Border manners what Goethe had done for the ancient feudalism of the Rhine? He had been busy since his boyhood collecting Seottish Border ballads and studying the minutest details of Border history. He began to cast about for a form which should have the advantage of novelty, and a subject which should secure unity of composition. He was en- gaged at the time preparing a collection of the Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border, The first instalment was published in 1802; it was followed by another next year, and by an edition and continuation of the old romance of Sir Tristram ; and Scott was still hesitating about subject and form for a large original work. It seems probable from a conversa- tion recorded by Gillies that he might have ended by casting his meditated picture of Border manners in the form of a prose romance. But chance at last threw in his way both a suitable subject anda suitable metrical vehicle. He had engaged all his friends in the hunt for Border ballads and legends. Among others, the

countess of Dal- keith, wife of the heir-apparent tothe dukedom of Buccleuch, interested herself in the work. Happening to hear the legend of a tricksy hobgoblin named Gilpin Horner, she asked Scott to write a ballad about it. He agreed with delight, and, out of compliment to the lady who had given this command to the bard, resolved to connect it with the house of Buccleuch. The subject grew in his fertile imagination, till incidents enough had gathered round the goblin to furnish a framework for his long-designed picture of Border manners. Chance also furnished him with a hint for a novel scheme of verse. Coleridge's fragment of Christabel, though begun in 1797—when he and Words- worth were discussing on the Quantock Hills the prin- ciples of such ballads as Scott at the same time was recit- ing to himself in his gallops on Musselburgh sands—was not published till 1816. But a friend of Scott's, Sir John Stoddart, had met Coleridge in Malta, and had carried home in his memory enough of the unfinished poem to convey to Scott that its metre was the very metre of which he had been in search. Scott introduced still greater variety into the four-beat couplet ; but it was to Christabel that he owed the suggestion, as one line borrowed whole and many imitated rhythms testify.

The Lay of the Last Minstrel appeared in January 1805, and at once became widely popular. It sold more rapidly than poem had ever sold before. Scott was astonished at lis own success, although he expected that " the attempt to return to a more simple and natural style of poetry was likely to be welcomed." Many things contributed to the extraordinary demand for the Lay. First and foremost, no doubt, we must reckon its simplicity. After the abstract themes and abstruse, elaborately allusive style of the 18th century, the public were glad of verse that

could be read with ease and even with exhilaration, verse in which a simple interesting story was told with brilhant energy, and simple feelings were treated not as isolated themes but as incidents in the lives of individual men and women, The thought was not so profound, the lines were not so polished, as in The Pleasures of Memory or

The Pleasures of Hope, but the "light-horseman sort of

stanza" carried the reader briskly over a much more diversified country, through boldly outlined and strongly coloured scenes. you had not to keep

attention on the stretch or pause and construe laboriously before you could grasp the writer's meaning or enter into his artfully condensed

No stanza required a second reading ;

sentiment. To remember the pedigrees of all the Scotts, or the names of all the famous chiefs and hardy retainers "whose gathering word was Bellenden," might have re- quired some effort, but only the conscientious reader need

care to make it. The only puzzle in the Lay was the goblin page, and the general reader was absolved from all trouble about him by the unanimous declaration of the

critics, led by Jeffrey in the Edinburgh Reve, that he

was a grotesque excrescence, in no way essential to the

story. It is commonly taken for granted that Scott acquiesced in this judgment, his politely ironic letter to Miss Seward being quoted as conclusive. This is hardly

fair to the poor goblin, seeing that his story was the germ of the poem and determines its whole structure ; but it is a tribute to the lively simplicity of the Lay that few people should be willing to take the very moderate amount of pains necessary to see the goblin's true position in the action. risky innovation. conservative reformer, careful not to offend established traditions. bellion, as Wordsworth had done, against the great artistic canon of the classical school

The supernatural element was Scott's most For the rest, he was a cautious and

He was far from raising the standard of re-

"True art is nature to advantage dressed."

To "engraft modern refinement on ancient simplicity," to preserve the energy of the old ballad without its rudeness

and bareness of poetic ornament, was Scott's avowed aim. He adhered to the poetic diction against which Words-

worth protested. His rough Borderers are "dressed to

advantage" in the costume of romantic chivalry. The baronial magnificence of Branksome, Deloraine's " shield and jack and acton," the elaborate ceremony of the com- bat between the pseudo-Deloraine and Musgrave, are concessions to the taste of the 18th century. Further, he disarmed criticism by putting his poem into the mouth of an ancient minstrel, thus pictorially emphasizing the fact that it was an imitation of antiquity, and provid- ing a scapegoat on whose back might be laid any remain- ing sins of rudeness or excessive simplicity. And, while imitating the antique romance, he was careful not to smitate its faults of rambling, discursive, disconnected structure. He was scrupulously attentive to the classical unities of time, place, and action. The scene never changes from Branksome and its neighbourhood ; the time occupied by the action (as he pointed out in his preface) is three nights and three days; and, in spite of all that critics have said about the superfluity of the goblin page, ++ ig not difficult to trace unity of intention and regular progressive development in the incidents.

The success of the Lay decided finally, if it was not decided already, that literature was to be the main busi- ness of Scott's life, and he proceeded to arrange his affairs accordingly. It would have been well for his comfort, if not for his fame, had he adhered to his first plan, which was to buy a small mountain-farm near Bowhill, with the proceeds of some property left to him by an uncle, and

divide his year between this and Edinburgh, where he had good hopes, soon afterwards realized, of a salaried appointment in the Court of Session. This would have given him ample leisure and seclusion for literature, while his private means and official emoluments secured him against dependence on his pen. He would have been laird as well as sheriff of the cairn and the scaur, and as aman of letters his own master. Since his marriage in 1/97 with Miss Charpentier, daughter of a French refugee, his chief residence had been at Lasswade, about six miles from Edinburgh. But on a hint from

the lord- lieutenant that the sheriff must live at least four months in the year within his county, and that he was attending more closely to his duties as quartermaster of a mounted company of volunteers than was consistent with the proper discharge of his duties as sheriff, he had moved his household in 1804 to Ashestiel. When his uncle's bequest fell in, he determined to buy a small property on the banks of the Tweed within the limits of his sheriffdom, There, within sight of Newark Castle and Bowhill, he proposed to live like his ancient minstrel, as became the bard of the clan, under the shadow of the great ducal head of the Scotts. But this plan was deranged by an accident. It so happened that an old schoolfellow, James Jallantyne, a printer in Kelso, whom he had already be- friended, transplanted to Edinburgh, and furnished with both work and money, applied to him for a further loan. Scott declined to lend, but offered to join him as sleeping partner. Thus the intended purchase money of Broad-meadows became the capital of a printing concern, of which by degrees the man of letters became the over- wrought slave, milch-cow, and victim.

When the Lay was off his hands, Scott's next literary enterprise was a prose romance—a confirmation of the argument that he did not take to prose after Byron had 'et him," as he put it, in verse, but that romance writing was a long-cherished purpose. He began Waverley, but a friend to whom he showed the first chapters—which do not take Waverley out of England, and describe an educa-

tion in romantic literature very much like Scott's own—

not unnaturally decided that the work was deficient in interest and unworthy of the author of the Lay. Scott accordingly laid Waverley aside. ture that he would not have been go easily diverted had he not been occupied at the time with other heavy publish-

ing enterprises calculated to bring grist to the printing

establishment. His active brain was full of projects for

big editions, which he undertook to carry through on con-

dition that the printing was done by Ballantyne & Co., the "Co." being kept a profound secret, because it might have injured the lawyer and poet professionally and socially to be known as partner in a commercial concern, Between 1806 and 1812, mainly to serve the interests of the firm, though of course the work was not in itself unattractive to him, Scott produced his elaborate editions of Dryden, Swift, the Somers Tracts, and the Sadler State papers. Incidentally these laborious tasks contributed to his pre- paration for the main work of his life by extending his knowledge of English and Scottish history.

Marmion, begun in November 1806 and published in February 1808, was written as a relief to "' graver cares," though in this also he aimed at combining with a romantic story a solid picture of an historical period. It was even more popular than the Lay. Scott's resuscitation of the four-beat measure of the old "gestours" afforded a signal proof of the justness of their instinct in choosing this vehicle for their recitations, The four-beat lines of Mar- mton took possession of the public like a kind of madness : they not only clung to the memory but they would not keep off the tongue: people could not help spouting them

We may fairly conjec-

for a good defence of these introductions.

oe On Ol lime

in solitary places and muttering them as they walked about the streets, have been offended by the pronounced politics of the poet, were on the whole better pleased than with

The critics, except J effrey, who may

the Lay.

Their chief complaint was with the "introductions" to the various cantos, which were objected to as vexatiously

breaking the current of the story.!

The triumphant success of Marmion, establishing him as facile princeps among living poets, gave Scott such a heeze, to use his own words, "as almost lifted him off his feet." He touched then the highest point of prosperity and happiness. Presently after, he was irritated and tempted by a combination of little cireumstances into the great blunder of his life, the establishment of the publish- ing house of John Ballantyne & Co. A coolness arose between him and Jeffrey, chiefly on political but partly also on personal grounds. They were old friends, and Scott had written many articles for the Renew, but its political attitude at this time was intensely unsatisfactory to Scott. To complete the breach, J effrey reviewed Mar- mon in a hostile spirit. A quarrel occurred also between Scott's printing firm and Constable, the publisher, who had been the principal feeder of its press. Then the tempter appeared in the shape of Murray, the London publisher, anxious to secure the services of the most popular littérateur of the day. The result of negotiations was that Scott set up, in opposition to Constable, "the crafty," "the grand Napoleon of the realms of print," the publishing house of John Ballantyne & Co., to be managed by a dissipated and swaggering little tailor, whom he nicknamed "Rigdumfunnidos" for his talents as a mimic and low comedian. Scott interested himself warmly in starting the Quarterly Review, and in return Murray constituted Ballantyne & Co. his Edinburgh agents. Scott's trust in Rigdumfunnidos and his brother, '" Aldiborontiphos- cophornio," and in his own power to supply all their defi- ciencies, is as strange a piece of infatuation as any that ever formed a theme for romance or tragedy. Their devoted attachment to the architect of their fortunes and proud confidence in his powers helped forward to the catastrophe, for whatever Scott recommended they agreed to, and he was too immersed in multifarious literary work and pro- fessional and social engagements to have time for cool examination of the numerous rash speculative ventures into which he launched the firm.

The Lady of the Lake (May 1810) was the first great publication by the new house. It was received with enthusiasm, even Jeffrey joining in the chorns of applause. It made the Perthshire Highlands fashionable for tourists, and raised the post-horse duty in Scotland. But it did not make up to Ballantyne & Co. for their heavy invest- ments in unsound ventures. The Edinburgh Annual register, meant as a rival to the Edinburgh Review, though Scott engaged Southey to write for it and wrote for it largely himself, proved a

failure. In a very short time the warehouses of the firm were filled with unsaleable stock. By the end of three years Scott began to write to his partners about the propriety of "reefing sails." But apparently he was too much occupied to look into the accounts of the firm, and, so far from understanding the real state of their affairs, he considered himself rich enough to make his first purchase of land at Abbotsford. But he had hardly settled there in the spring of 1812, and begun his schemes for building and planting and converting a bare moor into a richly wooded pleasaunce, than his business troubles began, and he found himself harassed by fears of bankruptcy. Rigdumfunnidos concealed the situation as

1 See Mr Hutton's Scott, in English Men of Letters Series, p. 56,

Scott advertised them originally as a separate publication.

———

s Cora 549

long as he could, but as bill after bill came due he was obliged to make urgent application to Scott, and the truth was thus forced from him item by item. He had by no means revealed all when Scott, who behaved with admir- able good-nature, was provoked into remonstrating, " For heaven's sake, treat me as a man and not as a milch-cow." The proceeds of Rokeby (January 1813) and of other labours of Scott's pen were swallowed up, and bankruptcy was inevitable, when Constable, still eager at any price to secure Scott's services, came to the rescue. With his help three crises were tided over in 1813.

It was in the midst of these ignoble embarrassments that Scott opened up the rich new vein of the Waverley novels. He chanced upon the manuscript of the opening chapters of Waverley, and resolved to complete the story. Four weeks in the summer of 1814 sufficed for the work, and Waverley appeared without the author's name in July. Many plausible reasons might be given and have been given for Scott's resolution to publish anonymously. The quaintest reason, and possibly the main one, though it is hardly intelligible now, is that given by Lockhart, that he considered the writing of novels beneath the dignity of a grave clerk of the Court of Session. Why he

kept up the mystification, though the secret was an open one to all his Edinburgh acquaintances, is more easily understood. He enjoyed it, and his formally initiated coadjutors enjoyed it; it relieved him from the annoyances of foolish compli- ment; and it was not unprofitable,—curiosity about " the Great Unknown" keeping alive the interest in his works. The secret was so well kept by all to whom it was de- finitely entrusted, and so many devices were used to throw conjecture off the scent, that even Scott's friends, who were certain of the authorship from internal evidence, were occasionally puzzled. He kept on producing in his own name as much work as seemed humanly possible for an official who was to be seen every day at his post and as often in society as the most fashionable of his professional brethren. His treatises on chivalry, romance, and the drama, besides an elaborate work in two volumes on Border antiquities, appeared in the same year with Waverley, and his edition of Swift in nineteen volumes in the same week. The Lord of the Isles was published in January 1815; Guy Mannering, written in "six weeks about Christmas," in February ; Paul's Letters to his Kinsfolk and The Field of Waterloo in the same year. Harold the Dauntless,! not to mention the historical part of the Annual Register, appeared in the same year with The Antiquary, The black Dwarf, and Old Mortality (1816). No wonder that the most positive interpreters of internal evidence were mystified. It was not as if he had buried himself in the country for the summer half of the year. On the contrary, he kept open house at Abbotsford in the fine old feudal fashion and was seldom without visitors. His own friends and many strangers from a distance, with or without introductions, sought him there, and found a hearty hospitable country laird, entirely occupied to all outward appearance with local and domestic business and sport, building and plant- ing, adding wing to wing, acre to acre, plantation to plantation, with just leisure enough for the free-hearted entertainment of his guests and the cultivation of friendly relations with his humble neighbours. How could such a man find time to write two or three novels a year, besides what was published in his own name? Even the few intimates who knew how early he got up to prepare his packet for the printer, and had some idea of the extra- ordinary power that he had acquired of commanding his faculties for the utilization of odd moments, must have

1 This poem, like the Bridal of Triermain, did not bear his name on the title-page, but the authorship was an open secret, although he tried to encourage

the idea that the author was his friend Erskine,

wondered at times whether he had not inherited the arts of his ancestral relation Michael Scot, and kept a goblin in some retired attic or vault.

Scott's fertility is not absolutely unparalleled ; the late Mr Trollope claimed to have surpassed him in rate as well as total amount of production, having also business duties to attend to. But in speed of production combined with variety and depth of interest and weight and accuracy of historical substance Scott is still unrivalled. On his claims as a serious historian, which Carlyle ignored in his curiously narrow and splenetic criticism, he was always, with all his magnanimity, peculiarly sensitive. A certain feeling that his antiquarian studies were undervalued seems to have haunted him from his youth. It was probably this that gave the sting to Jefirey's criticism of Marmion, and that tempted him to the somewhat questionable pro- ceeding of reviewing his own novels in the Quarterly upon the appearance of Old Mortality. He was nettled besides at the accusation of having treated the Covenanters un- fairly, and wanted to justify himself by the production of historical documents. In this criticism of himself Scott replied lightly to some of the familiar objections to his work, such as the feebleness of his heroes, Waverley, Ber- tram, Lovel, and the melodramatic character of some of his scenes and characters. But he argued more seriously against the idea that historical romances are the enemies of history, and he rebutted by anticipation Carlyle's ob- jection that he wrote only to amuse idle persons who like to lie on their backs and read novels. His apologia is worth quoting. Historical romances, he admits, have always been failures, but the failure has been due to the imperfect knowledge of the writers and 'not to the species of composition. If, he says, anachronisms in manners can be avoided, and "the features of an age gone by can be recalled in a spirit of delineation at once faithful and striking, . . . the composition itself is in every point of view dignified and improved; and the author, leaving the light and frivolous associates with whom a careless observer would be disposed to ally him, takes his seat on the bench of the historians of his time and country. In this proud assembly, and in no mean place of it, we are disposed to rank the author of these works. At once a master of the great events and minute incidents of history, and of the manners of the times he celebrates, as distin- guished from those which now prevail, the intimate thus of the

living and of the dead, his judgment enables him to separate those traits which are characteristic from those that are generic; and his imagination, not less accurate and discriminating than vigorous and vivid, presents to the mind of the reader the manners of the times, and in- troduces to his familiar acquaintance the individuals of the drama as they thought and spoke and acted." This defence of himself shows us the ideal at which Scott aimed, and which he realized. He was not in the least unconscious of his own excellence. He did not hesitate in this review to compare himself with Shakespeare in – respect of truth to nature. 'The volume which this author has studied is the great book of nature. He has gone abroad into the world in quest of what the world will certainly and abundantly supply, but what a man of great discrimination alone will find, and a man of the very highest genius will alone depict after he has discovered it. The characters of Shakespeare are not more exclusively human, not more perfectly men and women as they live and move, than those of this mysterious author."

The immense strain of Scott's double or quadruple life as sheriff and clerk, hospitable laird, poet, novelist, and mis- cellaneous man of letters, publisher and printer, though the prosperous excitement sustained him for a time, soon told upon his health. Early in 1817 began a series of

attacks of agonizing cramp of the stomach, which recurred at short intervals during more than two years. But his appetite and capacity for work remained unbroken. He made his first attempt at play-writing} as he was recover- ing from the first attack ; before the year was out he had completed /ob Hoy, and within six months it was followed by The Heart of Midlothian, which by general consent occupies the highest rank among his novels. The Bride of Lammermoor, The Legend of Montrose, and Ivanhoe were dictated to amanuenses, through fits of suffering so acute that he could not suppress cries of agony. Still he would not give up. When Laidlaw begged him to stop dictating he only answered, "Nay, Willie, only see that the doors are fast. I would fain keep all the cry as well as the wool to ourselves ; but as to giving over work, that can only be when I am in woollen."

“Throughout those two years of intermittent ill-health, which was at one time so serious that his life was despaired of and he took formal leave of his family, Scott’s semi- public life at Abbotsford continued as usual,—swarms of visitors coming and going, and the rate of production on the whole suffering no outward and visible check, all the world wondering at the novelist’s prodigious fertility. Mr Ruskin lately put forward the opinion that there is a distinct falling off in the quality of Scott’s work traceable from the time of his first serious illness, arguing as a proof of the healthiness of Scott’s organization that “he never gains anything by sickness; the whole man breathes or faints as one creature ; the ache that stiffens a limb chills his heart, and every pang of the stomach paralyses the brain.” Yet, when the world was not aware of the state of the novelist’s health, and novel after novel was received without any abatement of enthusiasm, but rather with growing wonder and admiration, no critic was acute enough to detect this, and it is somewhat unfortunate for the theory that Mr Ruskin has mistaken the date of Scott’s first illness and included among the masterpieces produced in perfect health Rob Roy and The Heart of Midlothian, both composed through recurrent fits of intense bodily pain. The first of the series concerning which there were murmurs of dissatisfaction was The Monastery, which was the first completed after the re-establishment of the author’s bodily vigour. The failure, such as it was, was due rather to the subject than the treatment, and The Abbot, in which Mary Queen of Scots is introduced, was generally hailed as fully sustaining the reputation of “the Great Unknown.” Kenilworth, The Pirate, The Fortunes of Nigel, Peveril of the Peak, Quentin Durward, St Ronan’s Well, fedgauntlet, followed in quick succession in the course of three years, and it was not till the last two were reached that the ery that the author was writing too fast began to gather volume. S¢ Ronan’s Well was very severely criticized and condemned. And yet Mr Leslie Stephen tells a story of a dozen modern connoisseurs in the Waverley novels who agreed that each should write down separately the name of his favourite novel, when it appeared that each had without concert named St Ronan’s Well. There is this certainly to be said for St Ronan’s, that, in spite of the heaviness of some of the scenes at the “hottle” and the artificial melodramatic character of some of the personages, none of Scott’s stories is of more absorbing or more bril- hantly diversified interest. Contradictions between con- temporary popular opinion and mature

critical judgment, as well as diversities of view among critics themselves, rather shake confidence in individual judgment on the rr ee eee ae

1 The Doom of Devorgoil. This and his subsequent dramatic sketches, Macduff's Cross, Halidon Hill, and The Ayrshire Tragedy, were slight compositions, dashed off in a few days, and afford no measure of what

Scott might have done as a dramatist if he had studied the conditions of stage representation.

sco Te

vexed but not particularly wise question which is the best of Scott's novels. There must, of course, always be in- equalities in.a series so prolonged. The author cannot always be equally happy in his choice of subject, situation, and character. Naturally also he dealt first with the subjects of which his mind was fullest. But any theory" of falling off or exhaustion based upon plausible general considerations has to be qualified so much when brought into contact with the facts that very little confidence can be reposed in its accuracy. Zhe Fortunés of Nigel comes comparatively late in the series and has often been blamed for its looseness of construction. Scott himself always spoke slightingly of his plots, and humorously said that he proceeded on Mr Bayes's maxim, "What the deuce is a plot good for but to bring in good things?" Yet so com- petent a critic as Mr Hutton has avowed that on the whole he prefers The Lortunes of Nigel to any other of Scott's novels, An attempt might be made to value the novels according to the sources of their materials, according as they are based on personal observation, documentary history, or previous imaginative literature. On this prin- ciple Ivanhoe and The Tales of the Crusaders might be adjudged inferior as being based necessarily on previous romance. But as a matter of fact Scott's romantic char- acters are vitalized, clothed with a verisimilitude of life, out of the author's deep, wide, and discriminating know- — ledge of realities, and his observation of actual life was coloured by ideals derived from romance. He wrote all his novels out of a mind richly stored with learning of all kinds, and in the heat of composition seems to have drawn from whatever his tenacious memory supplied to feed the fire of imagination, without pausing to reflect upon the source, He did not exhaust

his accumulations from one source first and then turn to another, but from first to last drew from all as the needs of the occasion happened to suggest.

Towards the close of 1825, after eleven years of brilliant and prosperous labour, encouraged by constant tributes of admiration, homage, and affection such as no other literary potentate has ever enjoyed, realizing his dreams of baronial splendour and hospitality on a scale suited to his large literary revenues, Scott suddenly discovered that the foundations of his fortune were unsubstantial. He had imagined himself clear of all embarrassments in 1818, when all the unsaleable stock of John Ballantyne & Co. was bargained off by Rigdum to Constable for Waverley copyrights, and the publishing concern was wound up. Apparently he never informed himself accurately of the new relations of mutual accommodation on which the print- ing firm then entered with the great but rashly speculative publisher, and drew liberally for his own expenditure against the undeniable profits of his novels without asking any questions, trusting blindly in the solvency of his com- mercial henchmen. Unfortunately, "lifted off their feet " by the wonderful triumphs of their chief, they thought themselves exempted like himself from the troublesome duty of inspecting ledgers and balancing accounts, till the crash came. From a diary which Scott began a few days before the first rumours of financial difficulty reached him we know how he bore from day to day the rapidly unfolded prospect of unsuspected liabilities. "Thank God," was his first reflexion, "I have enough to pay more than 20s. in the pound, taking matters at the worst." But a few weeks revealed the unpleasant truth that, owing to the way in which Ballantyne & Co. were mixed up with Con- stable & Co., and Constable with Hurst & Robinson, the failure of the London house threw upon hini personal responsibility for £130,000.

How Scott's pride rebelled against the dishonour of bankruptcy, how he toiled for the rest of his life to clear

—_— ——*s*

off this enormous debt, declining all offers of assistance and asking no consideration from his creditors except time, and how nearly he succeeded,

is one of the most familiar chapters in literary history, and would be one of the saddest were it not for the heroism of the enterprise. His

- wife died soon after the struggle began, and he suffered

other painful bereavements ; but, though sick at heart, he toiled on indomitably, and, writing for honour, exceeded even his happiest days in industrious speed. If he could have maintained the rate of the first three years, during which he completed Woodstock, three Chronicles of the Canongate, The Fair Maid of Perth, Anne of Geverstem, the Life of Napoleon (involving much research, and equal in amount to thirteen novel volumes), part of his History of Scotland, the Scottish series of Tales of a Grandfather, besides several magazine articles, some of them among the most brilliant of his miscellaneous writings, and prefaces and notes to a collected edition of his novels,—if he could have continued at this rate he might soon have freed him- self from all hig encumbrances. The result of his exertions from January 1826 to January 1828 was nearly £40,000 for his creditors. But the terrific labour proved too much even for his endurance. Ugly symptoms began to alarm his family in 1829, and in February of 1580 he had lis first stroke of paralysis. Still he was undaunted, and not all the persuasions of friends and physicians could induce him to take rest. "During 1830," Mr Lockhart says, "he covered almost as many sheets with his MS. as in 1829," the new introductions to a collected edition of his poetry and the Letters on Demonology and Witchcraft being amongst the labours of the year. He had a slight touch of apoplexy in November and a distinct stroke of paralysis in the following April; but, in spite of these warnings and of other bodily ailments, he had two more novels, Count Robert of Paris and Castle Dangerous, ready for the press by the autumn of 1831. He would not yield to the solicitations of his friends and consent to try rest and a change of scene, till fortunately, as his mental powers failed, he became possessed of the idea that all his debts were at last paid and that he was once more a free man. In this belief he happily remained till his death. When it was known that his physicians recommended a sea voyage for his health, a Government vessel was put at his disposal, and he cruised about in the Mediterranean and visited places of interest for the greater part of a year before his death. But, when he felt tliat the end was near, he insisted on being carried across Europe that he might die on his beloved

Tweedside at Abbotsford, where he expired on 21st September 1832. He was buried at Dryburgh Abbey on 26th September following.

A complete list of Scott's works is given in the Catalogue of Scott Exhibition, 1871, Edinburgh, 1872. The standard biography of Scott is that by Lockhart referred to above; see also Allan, Life of Scott, Edinburgh, 1834.

SCOTT, Wittram. See Srowett, Lorp.

SCOTT, Wryrietp (1786-1866), American general, was born near Petersburg, Virginia, 13th June 1786, the grandson of a Scottish refugee from the field of Culloden. He was a student at William and Mary College in 1805, and was admitted to the bar at Rich- mond, Virginia, in 1807. One of the sudden war excite- ments of the time changed the course of his life, and he obtained a captain's commission in the United States army in 1808. He served on the Niagara frontier throughout the war of 1812-15, and became one of its leading figures, rising rapidly through all the grades of the service to that of major-general, which was then the highest. Among other curious testimonials to his valour and conduct, he received from Princeton College in 1814 the honorary degree of doctor of laws, a distinction on

ool

which he never ceased to look with peculiar satisfaction. In 1841 he became the senior major-general of the army, and in 1855, after he had passed out of political life, the exceptional grade of lieutenant-general was created for him. His most noteworthy military achievement was his conduct of the main campaign against Mexico in 1847. Landing (9th March) at Vera Cruz with but 5500 men, he fought his way through a hostile country to the capital city of Mexico, which he captured 14th September, thereby practically ending the war. His service, however, was not confined to the army ; from 1815 until 1861 he was the most continuously prominent public man of the country, receiving and justifying every mark of public confidence in his integrity, tact, and reasonableness. At a time (1823) when duelling was almost an imperative duty of an officer, he resisted successfully the persistent efforts of a brother officer (Andrew Jackson) to force him into a

combat ; and the simple rectitude of his intentions was so evident that he lost no ground in public estimation. In 1832, when ordered to Charleston by President Jackson during the "nullification" troubles, he secured every advan- tage. for the Government, while his skilful and judicious conduct gave no occasion to South Carolina for an out- break. In like manner, in the Black Hawk Indian troubles of 1832-33, in the Canadian " Patriot War" of 1837-38, in the boundary dispute of 1838 between Maine and New Brunswick, in the San Juan difficulty in 1859, wherever there was imminent danger of war and a strong desire to keep the peace, all thoughts turned instinctively to Scott as a fit instrument of an amicable settlement, and his success always justified the choice. Such a career seemed a gateway to political preferment, and his position was strengthened by the notorious fact that, as he was a Whig, the Democratic administration had persistently tried to subordinate his claims to those of officers of its own party. In 1852 his party nominated him for the presi- dency; but, though his services had been so great and his capacity and integrity were beyond question, he had other qualities which counted heavily against him. He was easily betrayed into the most egregious blunders of speech and action, which drew additional zest from his portly and massive form and a somewhat pompous cere- moniousness of manner. He destroyed his chances of election in the North. The Southern Whigs, believing him to be under the influence of the Seward or anti-slavery wing of the party, cast no strong vote for him, and he was overwhelmingly defeated in both sections, completing the final overthrow of his party. In 1861 he remained at the head of the United States armies, in spite of the secession of his State, until November, when he retired on account of old age and infirmities. After travelling for a time in Europe, he published in 1864 his autobiography, a work which reveals the strong and weak points of his character, —his integrity and complete honesty of purpose, his inclina- tion to personal vanity, his rigid precision in every point of military precedent and etiquette, and his laborious affecta- tion of an intimate acquaintance with belles lettres. He died at West Point, New York, 29th May 1866.

The Autobiography of Lieutenant-General Winfield Seott, DL.D., in two volumes, gives the facts of his career at length. For his defeat in 1852, see Von Holst's Constitutional History, vol. iv. p. 171 of the original, p. 206 of the English translation.

SCOTUS. See Duns Scorus-and ScHOLASTICISM.

SCRANTON, a city of the United States, capital of Lackawanna county, Pennsylvania, on a plateau at the junction of the Roaring Brook and the Lackawanna river, 162 miles north of Philadelphia. It is the centre of the great coal-mining district in the country and the seat of a large number of iron and steel works, rolling-mills, blast- furnaces, &c., and extensive factories for the production of

rails, locomotives, mining machinery, steam-boilers, stoves, carriages, edge-tools, &e. A public library, a theatre, an academy of music, a hospital, a public hall, a driving park, a Roman Catholic cathedral, a home for the friend- less, and a museum of Indian stone relics are among the more prominent features of the place. The population was 9223 in 1860, 35,092 in 1870, and 45,850 in 1880,

Slocum Farm, as the site was called subsequent to 1798, saw its first blast-furnace erected in 1840 by George and Selden Scranton, who soon added a rolling-mill and the manufacture of rails. The opening of the railway in 1856 gave a great stimulus to the new town (1854), which obtained a city charter in 1866. It is divided into twenty-one wards, of which the 4th, 5th, 6th, 14th, 15th, and 18th are known as Hydc Park, the Ist, 2d, and 8d as Providence,

SCREAMER, a bird inhabiting Guiana and the Amazon valley, so called in 1781 by Pennant (Gen. Birds, p. 37) 'from the violent noise it makes,"—the Palamedea cornuta of Linneus. First made known in 1648 by Marcgrave under the name of " Anhima," it was more fully described and better figured by Buffon under that of Kamichi, still applied to it by French writers, Of about the size of a Turkey, it is remarkable for the curious "horn " or slender caruncle, more than three inches long, it bears on its crown, the two sharp spurs with which each wing is armed, and its elongated toes. Its plumage is plain in colour, being of an almost uniform greyish black above, the space round the eyes and a ring round the neck being variegated with white, and a patch of pale rufous appearing above the carpal joint, while the lower parts of the body are white. Closely related to this bird is

another first described by Linneus as a species of Parra (JACANA, vol. xiii. p. 531), to which group it certainly does not belong, but separated therefrom by Illiger to form the genus Chauna, and now known as C. chavaria, very generally in English as the 'Crested Screamer," ! a name which was first bestowed on the Serrema (¢.v.). This bird inhabits the lagoons and swamps of Paraguay and Southern Brazil, where it is called "Chaj4" or "Chaka," and is smaller than the preceding, wanting its "horn," but having its head furnished with a dependent crest of feathers. Its face and throat are white, to which succeeds a blackish ring, and the rest of the lower parts are white, more or less clouded with cinereous. According to Mr Gibson (Zbis, 1880, pp. 165, 166), its nest is a light construction of dry rushes, having its founda- tion in the water, and contains as many as six eggs, which are white tinged with buff. The young are covered with down of a yellowish brown colour. A most singular habit possessed by this bird is that of rising in the air and soar- ing there in circles at an immense altitude, uttering at intervals the very loud ery of which its local name is an imitation. From a dozen to a score may be seen at once So occupying themselves. The young are often taken from the nest and reared by the people to attend upon and de- fend their poultry, a duty which is faithfully ? and, owing to the spurs with which the Chaka's wings are armed, successfully discharged. Another very curious property of this bird, which was observed by Jacquin, who brought it to the notice of Linneus,? is its emphysematous condi- tion,—there being a layer of air-cells between the skin and the muscles, so that on any part of the body being pressed a crackling sound is heard. In Central America occurs another species, C. derbiana, chiefly distingnished by the darker colour of its plumage. For this a distinct genus, Ischyrornis, was proposed, but apparently without neces- sity, by Reichenbach (Syst. Avium, p. XX1.).

The taxonomic position of the Palamedeidx, for all will

- *Under this name its curious habits have been well described by Mr W. H. Hudson (Genéleman's Magazine, Sept. 1885, pp. 280-287). 2 Hence Latham's name for this species is "Faithful J acana,"—he Supposing it to belong to the genus in which Linneus placed it. '"Tacta manu cutis, sub pennis etiam lanosa, crepat ubique for- titer" (Syst. Naé., ed. 12, i. p. 260).*

families.” as forming a distinct “ Order,” Palamedex, which he, how-

allow to the Screamers the rank of a Family at least, has been much debated, and cannot be regarded as fixed. Their Anserine relations were pointed out by Prof. Parker in the Zoological Proceedings for 1863 (pp. 511-518), and in the same work for 1867 Prof. Huxley placed the F amily among his Chenomorphe ; but this view was contravened in 1876 by Garrod, who said, “The Screamers must have sprung from the primary avian stock as an independent offshoot at much the same time as did most of the other important Accordingly in 1880 Mr Sclater regarded them

ever, placed next to the true Anseres, from the neighbour- hood of which, as has been already stated (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 47), the present writer thinks the Palamedeidz can hardly be removed. (A. N.) SCREW. The screw is the simplest instrument for converting a uniform motion of rotation into a uniform motion of translation (see MEcHANtcS, vol. xv. p. 754). Metal screws requiring no special accuracy are generally cut by taps and dies. A tap isa cylindrical piece of steel having a screw on its exterior with sharp cutting edges; by forcing this with a revolving motion into a hole of the proper size, a screw is cut on its interior forming what is known as a nut or female screw. The die is a nut with sharp cutting edges used to screw upon the outside of round pieces of metal and thus produce male screws. More accurate screws are cut in a lathe by causing the carriage carrying the tool to move uniformly forward, thus a con- tinuous spiral line is cut on the uniformly revolving cylinder fixed between the lathe centres, The cutting tool may be

an ordinary form of lathe tool or a revolving saw-like disk.

(See Macuryx Toots, vol. xv, p. 153.)

Errors of Screws.—For scientific purposes the screw must be so regular that it moves forward in its nut exactly the same distance for each given angular rotation around its axis. As the mountings of a screw introduce many errors, the final and exact test of its accuracy can only be made when it is finished and set up for use. A large screw can, however, be roughly

examined in the following manner. (1) See whether the surface of the threads has a perfect polish. The more it departs from this, and approaches the rough torn surface as cut by the lathe tool, the worse it is. A perfect screw has a perfect polish. (2) Mount upon it between the centres of a lathe and the slip a short nut which fits perfectly. Ifthe nut moves from end to end with equal friction, the screw is uniform in diameter. If the nut is long, unequal resistance may be due to either an error of run or a bend in the screw. (3) Fix a microscope on the lathe carriage and focus its single cross-hair on the edge of the screw and parallel to its axis. If the screw runs true at every point, its axis is straight. (4) Observe whether the short nut runs from end to end of the screw without a wabbling motion when the screw is turned and the nut kept from revolving. If it wabbles the screw is said to be drunk. One can see this error better by fixing a long pointer to the nut, or by attaching to it a mirror and observing an image in it with a telescope. The following experi- ment will also detect this crror, (5) Put upon the screw two well- fitting and rather short nuts, which are kept from revolvin by arms bearing against a straight edge parallel to the axis of the screw. Let one nut carry an arm which Supports a microscope focused on a line ruled onthe other nut. Screw this combination to different parts of the screw. If during one revolution the microscope remains in focus, the screw is not drunk ; and, if the cross-hairs bisect the line in every position, there is no error of run.

Making Accurate Screws.—To produce a screw of a foot or even a yard long with errors not exceeding y/yyth of an inch is not difficult. Professor William A. Rogers of Harvard observatory has invented a process in which the tool of the lathe while cutting the screw is moved so as to counteract the errors of the lathe screw. The screw is then partly ground to get rid of local errors. But, where the highest accuracy is needed, we must resort in the case of screws, as in all other cases, to grinding. A long solid nut, tightly fitting the screw in one position, cannot be moved freely to another position unless the screw is very accurate. If grinding material is applied and the nut is constantly tightened, it will grind out all errors of run, drunkenness, crookeduess, and irregularity of size. The condition is that the nut must be long, rigid, and capable of being tightened as the grinding proceeds ; also the screw must be ground longer than it will finally be needed so that the imperfect ends may be removed.

The following process will produce a screw suitable for ruling

SC R—SCR

gratings for optical purposes. Suppose it is our purpose to produce a screw which is finally to be 9 inches long, not including bearings, and 1} inches in diameter. Sclect a bar of soft Bessemer steel, which has not the hard spots usually found in cast steel, about 13 inches in diameter and 30 long. Put it between lathe centres and turn it down to 1 inch diameter everywhere, except about 12 inches in the centre, where it is left a little over 1} inches in diameter for cutting the screw. Now cut the screw with a triangular thread a little sharper than 60°. Above all, avoid a fine screw, using about 20 threads to the inch.

The grinding nut, about 11 inches long, has now to be made. Fig. 1 represents a section of the nut, which is made of brass, or better

NAANAANANYARAAAANAANANAN AAA ANNAN

Fia. 1.—Section of grinding nut.

of Bessemer steel. It consists of four segments,—c, @, which can be drawn about the screw by two collars, 6, 6, and the screw c. Wedges between the segments prevent too great pressure on the screw. The final clamping is effected by the rings and screws, d, d, which enclose the flanges, ¢, of the segments. The screw is now placed in a lathe and surrounded by water whose temperature can be kept constant to 1° C., and the nut placed on it. In order that the weight of the nut may not make the ends too small, it must either be counterbalanced by weights hung from a rope passing over pulleys in the ceiling, or the screw must be vertical during the whole process. Emery and oil seem to be the only available grinding materials, though a softer silica powder might be used towards the end of the operation to clean off the emery and prevent future wear. Now grind the screw in the nut, making the nut pass backwards and forwards over the screw, its whole range being nearly 20 inches at first. Turn the nut end for end every ten minutes and continue for two weeks, finally making the range of the nut only about 10 inches, using finer washed emery and moving the lathe slower to avoid heating. Finish with a fine silica powder or rouge.

During the process, if the thread becomes too blunt, recut the nut by a short tap so as not to change the pitch at any point. This must of course not be done less than five days before the finish. Now cut to the proper length; centre again in the lathe under a microscope ; and turn the bearings. A screw so ground has less errors than from any other system of mounting. The periodic error especially will be too small to be discovered, though the mountings and graduation and centering of the head will introduce it; it must therefore finally be corrected.

Mounting of Screws.—The mounting must be devised most care- fully, and is indeed more difficult to make without error than the screw itself. The principle which should be adopted is that no workmanship is perfect; the design must make up for its imper- fections. Thus the screw can never be made to run true on its bearings, and hence the device of resting one end of the carriage on the nut must be rejected. Also all rigid connexion between the nut and the carriage must be avoided, as the screw can never be adjusted parallel to the ways on which the carriage rests. For many purposes, such as ruling optical gratings, the carriage must move accurately forward in a straight line as far as the horizontal plane is concerned, while a little curvature in the vertical plane produces very little effect. These conditions can be satisfied by making the ways V-shaped and grinding with a grinder somewhat shorter than the ways. By constant reversals and by lengthening or shortening the stroke, they will finally become nearly perfect. The vertical curvature can be sufficiently tested by a short carriage carrying a delicate spirit level. Another and very efficient form of ways is V-shaped with a flat top and nearly vertical sides. The carriage rests on the flat top and is held by springs against one of the nearly vertical sides. To determine with accuracy whether the ways are straight, fix a flat piece of glass on the carriage and rule a line on it by moving it under a diamond ; reverse and rule another line near the first, and measure the distance apart at the centre and at the two ends by a micrometer. If the centre measure- ment is equal to the mean of the two end ones, the line is straight. This is better than the method with a mirror mounted on the carriage aud a telescope. The screw itself must rest in bearings, and the end motion be prevented by a point bearing against its flat end, which is protected by hardened steel or a flat diamond. Collar bearings introduce periodic errors. The secret of success is so to

_ward almost indepen-

553

design the nut and its connexions as to eliminate all adjustments of the screw and indced all imperfect workmanship. The connexion must also be such as to give means of correcting any residual periodic errors or errors of run which may be introduced in the mountings or by the wear of the machine.

The nut is shown in fig. 2. It is made in two halves, of wrought iron filled with boxwood or lignum vite plugs, on which the screw is cut. To each half a long piece of sheet steel is fixed which bears against a guiding edge, to be described presently. The two halves are held to the screw by springs, so that each moves for-

dently of the other. To join the nut to the carriage, a ring is attached to the latter, vertical and which can turn round a The bars fixed midway on the two halves | against this ring at points 90° distant Hence each half docs its share independ- other in moving the carriage forward. parallelism between the serew and the tricity in the screw mountings thus the forward motion of the carriage. The which the steel pieces of the nut rest can | form as to correct any small error of run the screw. Also, by causing it to move forwards periodically, the periodic error mountings can be corrected.

In making gratings for optical purposes error must be very perfectly eliminated, since the peri- odic displacement of the lines only one- [. millionth of an inch from their mean position will pro- Fig. 2. duce ghosts ” in the spectrum.! Indeed this is the most sensitive method of detecting the existence of this error, and it is practically impos- sible to mount the most perfect of screws without introducing it. A very practical method of determining this error is to rule a short grating with very long lines on a piece of common thin plate glass; cut it in two with a diamond and superimpose the two halves with the rulings together and displaced sideways over each other one-half the pitch of the screw. On now looking at the plates in a proper light so as to have the spectral colours show through it, dark lines will appear, which are wavy if there is a periodic error and straight if there is none. By measuring the comparative amplitude of the

waves and the distance apart of two lines, the amount of the periodic error can be determined. The phase of the periodic error is best found by a series of trials after setting the corrector at the proper amplitude as determined above.

A machine properly made as above and kept at a constant temperature should be able to make a scale of 6 inches in length, with errors at no point exceeding yo¢yooth of an inch. When, however, a grating of that length is attempted at the rate of 14,000 lines to the inch, four days and nights are required and the result is seldom perfect, possibly on account of the wear of the machine or changes of temperature. Gratings, however, less than 3 inches long are easy to make. (H. A. R.)

SCRIBE, Aucustin Evcine (1791-1861), the most popular playwright of France, was born at Paris on 24th December 1791, and died there on 20th February 1861. His father was a silk merchant and he was well educated, being destined for the bar. But, having a real gift for the theatre (a gift which unfortunately was not allied with sufficient literary power to make his works last), he very soon broke away from professional study and at the age of twenty produced, in collaboration, as is common in France, the first of a series of dramas which continued for fifty years. Les Dervis (1811) is usually cited as the first play in which he took a hand, though, as for some time he did not sign his work, identification is somewhat difficult. He achieved no distinct success till 1816, when Une Nut de Garde Nationale made him in a way famous. Thence- forward his fertility was unceasing and its results pro- digious. There may be in existence a complete list of Scribe's works, but we have never seen any that pretended

to be such. He wrote every kind of drama—vaudevilles,

whose plane is 'vertical axis. of the nut bear from its axis. ! ently of the Any want of ways or eccen- scareely affects guide against be made of such due to wear of backwards and of the head and

the periodic

1 In a machine made by the present writer for ruling gratings the periodic error is entirely due to the graduation and centering of the head. The

uncorrected periodic error from this cause displaces the lines zy¢oyath of an inch, which is sufficient to entirely ruin all gratings made without correcting it.

sl, —= Fo

554

comedies, tragedies, opera-libretti. To one theatre alone he is said to have furnished more than a hundred pieces. But his life was entirely uneventful, and his election to the Academy in 1834 is almost the only incident which deserves chronicling. It ought to be said to Scribe's credit that, although he was the least original of writers and was more an editor of dramas than a dramatist, although he was for many years an object of the bitterest envy to impecunious geniuses owing to his pecuniary success, and although he never has pleased and never can please any critic who applies purely literary tests, his character stands very high for literary probity and indeed generosity. He is said in some cases to have sent sums of money for "copyright in ideas" to men who not only had not actually collaborated with him but who were unaware that he had taken suggestions from their work. His industry was untiring and his knowledge both of the mechanism of the stage and of the tastes of the audience was wonderful. Nevertheless he hardly deserves a place in literature, his style being vulgar, his characters common- place, even his plots lacking power and grasp. He wrote

a few novels, but none of any mark. The best known of Scribe's pieces after his first successful one are Une Chaine

(1842), Le Verre d' Eau (1842), Adrienne Lecowvreur (1849),

and the libretti of many of the most famous operas of

the middle of the century, especially those of Auber and Meyerbeer.

SCRIBES. See Israzt, vol. xiii. p. 419.

SCRIVENER'S PALSY. See Cramp, vol. vi. p. 543,

SCROFULA or Srruma (formerly known in England as "king's evil," from the belief that the touch of the sovereign could effect a cure), a constitutional morbid condition generally exhibiting itself in early life, and characterized mainly by defective nutrition of the tissues and by a tendency to inflammatory affections of a low type with degenerative changes in their products. The subject has been considered in most of its features under Patuo- Locy (vol. xviii. p. 405), and only a further brief reference is here necessary. Scrofula may be either inherited or acquired. Heredity is of all causes the most potent, and naturally operates with greater certainty where both parents possess the taint. As in all hereditary diseases, however, the liability may be scarcely perceptible for one or two generations, but may then reappear. Other causes refer- able to parentage may readily produce this constitutional state in children, as weakness or ill health in one or both parents, and, as seems probable, marriages of consanguinity. But, apart altogether from hereditary or congenital influ- ences, the scrofulous habit is frequently developed, especi- ally in the young, by such unfavourable hygienic conditions as result from overcrowded, cold, and dark dwellings, in- sufficient and improper food, exposure, and debauchery. Even among the old in such circumstances the evidences of scrofula may be seen to present themselves where before they had been absent.

There are two well-marked types of the scrofulous con- stitution to be often observed, especially among the young. In the one the chief features are a fair complexion with delicate thin skin, blue eyes, dilated pupils, long eyelashes, soft muscles, and activity of the circulatory and nervous system ; while in the other the skin is dark, the features heavy, the figure stunted, and all the functions, physical and mental, inactive. In many instances, however, it will be found that both types are more or less mixed together in one individual. The manifestations of scrofula generally appear in early life, and are often exhibited in young

1 This superstition can be traced back to the time of Edward the Confessor in England, and to a much earlier period in France. Samuel Johnson was touched by Queen Anne in 1712, and the same pre- Trogative of royalty was exercised by Prince Charles Edward in 1745.

children during the first dentition by inflammatory skin eruptions of obstinate character on the face and other parts ; later on in youth there appear glandular swellings either externally, as on the neck, or affecting the gland structures of the chest or abdomen, while at the same time mucous membranes and bones may become implicated. The distinctive features of the scrofulous inflammatory affections are their tendency to chronicity and to suppura- tive and degenerative changes, the affected parts either healing slowly with resulting disfigurement, as on the neck, or continuing to retain traces of the products of the diseased action, which may set up serious disturbance of the health at some future time, Further, the scrofulous constitution always influences the duration and progress of any disease from which the individual may suffer, as well as its results. Thus in pneumonia, to which the scrofulous would seem to be specially liable, the products of the inflammation are not readily absorbed as in previously healthy persons, but, remaining in the lung-tissues, are apt to undergo caseous degenerative changes, which may issue in phthisis (see PNEUMONIA and Purutsis), The connexion of scrofula with tubercle is pointed out in the article Parnonocy (loc. cit.).

Scrofula may under favourable circumstances tend to improvement as age advances, and it occasionally happens that persons who in early life showed unmistakable evi- dences of this condition appear ultimately to outgrow it, and become in all respects healthy and vigorous. The treatment is essentially similar to that described for rickets or phthisis, and is partly preventive and partly curative. It consists mainly in hygienic measures to pro- mote the health and nutrition of the young, and of suitable diet, tonics, &c., where evidences of the disease have declared themselves. See Rickrts, PHrutsts.

SCRUB-BIRD, the name (for want of a better, since it is not very distinctive) conferred upon the members of an Australian genus, one of the most curious ornithological types of the many furnished by that country. The first examples were procured by the late Mr Gilbert between Perth and Augusta in West Australia, and were described by Gould in the Zoological Society's Proceedings for 1844 (pp. 1, 2) as forming a new genus and species under the name of Atrichia clamosa, the great peculiarity observed by that naturalist being the absence of any bristles around the gape, in which

respect alone it seemed to differ from the already known genus Sphenura. In March 1866 Mr Wilcox obtained on the banks of the Richmond river on the eastern side of Australia some other examples, which proved the existence of a second species, described by Mr Ramsay in the Proceedings for that year (pp. 438-440) as A. rufescens ; but still no suspicion of the great divergence of the genus from the ordinary Passerine type was raised, and it was generally regarded as belonging to the Maluridz or Australian Warblers. However, the peculiar formation of the sternum in Atrichia attracted the present writer's attention almost as soon as that of A. clamosa was exhibited in the museum of the College of Surgeons, and at his re- quest Mr Ramsay a little later sent to the museum of the university of Cambridge examples in spirit of A. rufescens, which shewed a common structure. One of the sternal peculiarities was noticed by Mr Sclater (bis, 1874, p. 191, note); and in the present work (Brrps, iii. p. 741) the Scrub-birds were declared to form a distinct Family, Atrichudz, standing, so far as was known, alone with the Lyre-birds (see vol. xv. p. 115) as "abnormal Passeres." Much the same view was also taken the next year by Garrod, who, in the Proceedings for 1876 (pp. 516, 518, pl. i figs. 4-7), further dwelt on the taxonomic importance of the equally remarkable characters of the syringeal muscles exhibited alike by Mfenwra and Atrichia, which he accord-

———

—

ingly placed together in a division of the Acromyodian Passeres, differing from all the rest and since recognized, as has been said (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviil. pp. 40, 41), by Mr Sclater as a Sub-order Psewdoscines. A detailed anatomical description of Atrichia has, however, yet to be given, and a comparison of many other Australian types is needed ! before it can be certainly said to have no nearer ally than Menura. Both the known species of Scrub-bird are about

West-Australian Scrub-bird (Atrichia clamosa). the size of a small Thrush—A. clamosa being the larger of

the two.

upper plumage.

to violent gesticulations.

conspicuous appearance and retiring habits. (A. N.)

SCUDERY is the name of a family which is said to have been of Italian origin and to have transferred itself to Provence, but which is only known by the singular brother

and sister who represented it during the 17th century.

Grorcus DE Scupiry (1601-1667), the elder of the pair, was born at Havre, whither his father had moved from He served in the army for some time, and, though in the vein of gasconading which was almost peculiar to him he no doubt exaggerated his services, there But he con- ceived a fancy for literature before he was thirty, and during the whole of the middle of the century he was one of the most characteristic figures of Paris. Despite his own merit, which was not inconsiderable, and his sister's, which was Indeed from some stories told by men not his friends he seems to have hurt his own chances by independence of spirit. He received, however, the governorship of the fortress of Notre Dame de la Garde near Marseilles in 1643, and in 1650 was elected to the Academy. Long before he had made

Provence, in 1601.

geems little doubt that he was a stout soldier.

more, he was unlucky in his suits for preferment.

1 Forbes shewed that OrTHONYX (vol. xviii. p. 52) did not belong

to the group as at one time supposed.

This species is brown above, each feather barred with a darker shade; the throat and belly are reddish white, and there is a large black patch on the breast ; while the flanks are brown and the lower tail- coverts rufous. A. rufescens has the white and black of the fore-parts replaced by brown, barred much as is the Both species are said to inhabit the thickest "scrub" or brushwood forest ; but little has been ascertained as to their mode of life except that the males are noisy, imitative of the notes of other birds, and given The nest and eggs seem never to have been found, and indeed no example of the female of either species is known to have been procured, whence that sex may be inferred to escape observation by its in-

himself conspicuous by a letter attacking Corneille's Cid, which he addressed to that body. He was himself an industrious dramatist, L'Amour Tyrannique being the chief piece which (and that only partially) has escaped oblivion. His other most famous work was the epic of Alaric (1654). He lent his name to his sister's first romances, but did little beyond correcting the proofs. His death occurred at Paris on 14th May 1667. Scudéry's swashbuckler affectations (he terminates his introduction to the works of Théophile de Viaud by something like a challenge in form to any one who does not admit the supremacy of the deceased poet), the bombast of his style, and his various oddities have been rather exaggerated by literary gossip and tradition. Although probably not quite sane, he had some poetical power, a fervent love of literature, a high sense of honour and of friendship.

His sister MADELEINE (1607-1701), born also at Havre in 1607, was a writer of much more ability and of a much better regulated character. She was very plain and had no fortune, but her abilities were great and she was very well educated. Establishing herself at Paris with her brother, she was at once admitted to the Rambouillet coterie, afterwards established a salon of her own under the title of the Société du Samedi, and for the last half of the 17th century, under the pseudonym of "Sapho" or her own name, was acknowledged as the first blue-stocking of France and of the world. Her celebrated novels, Ariaméne ou le Grand Cyrus, Clélie, Ibrahim ou 0 Illustre Bassa, Almahide, and others are known by quotation to every one,

and were the delight of all Europe, including persons of the wit and sense of Madame de Sévigné. But for at least a century and a half they have lain unread, and their immense length has often been satirized even by persons well read in letters with the term "folio," when in fact they were originally issued in batches of small octavos, sometimes (allowing for two parts to each volume) running to a score or 80. Neither in conception nor in execution will they bear criticism as wholes. With classical or Oriental personages for nominal heroes and heroines, the whole language and action are taken from the fashionable ideas of the time, and the personages can be identified either really or colour- ably with Mademoiselle de Scudéry's contemporaries. The interminable length of the stories is made out by endless conversations and, as far as incidents go, chiefly by suc- cessive abductions of the heroines, conceived and related in the most decorous spirit, for Mademoiselle de Scudéry is nothing if not decorous. Nevertheless, although the books can hardly now be read through, it is still possible to perceive their attraction for the wits, both male and female, of a time which certainly did not lack wit. In that early day of the novel prolixity did not repel. "Sapho" had really studied mankind in her contempo- raries and knew how to analyse and describe their characters with fidelity and point. She was a real mistress of con- versation, a thing quite new to the age at least as far as literature was concerned, and proportionately welcome. She could moralize—a favourite employment of the time— with sense and propriety, and the purely literary merits of the style which clothed the whole were considerable. Madeleine survived her brother more than thirty years (scandal says that she was not sorry to be relieved from his humours), and in her later days published numerous volumes of conversations (to a great extent extracted from her novels) and short moral writings. Dryden says that he had heard of an intention on her part to translate the Canterbury Tales, and it is not impossible. She never lost either her renown or her wits or her good sense, and died at Parison 2d June 1701. It is unfortunate and rather surprising that no one has recently attempted an anthology from her immense work.

Early Chris- tian,

SCULPTURE

HE present article is confined to the sculpture of the T Middle Ages and modern times ; classical sculpture has been already treated of under ARCHAOLOGY (Cass- ICAL), vol. ii. p. 343 sg., and in the articles on the several individual artists.

In the 4th century a.p., under the rule of Constantine's successors, the plastic arts in the Roman world reached the lowest point of degradation to which they ever fell. Coarse in workmanship, intensely feeble in design, and

utterly without expression or life, the pagan sculpture of

that time is merely a dull and ignorant imitation of the work of previous centuries, The old faith was dead, and the art which had Sprung = ga We from it died with it. In the same century a large amount of sculpture was produced by Christian workmen, which, though it reached no very high standard of merit, was at least far superior to the pagan work. Although it shows no increase of technical skill or know- ledge of the human form, yet the mere fact that it was inspired and its sub- jects supplied by a real living faith was quite sufficient to give it a | vigour and a dramatic force which raise it eaxs- thetically far above the expiring efforts of pagan- ism. Fig. 1 shows a very fine Christian relief of \ the 4th century, with a |

noble figure of an arch- } angel holding an orb and asceptre. Itisaleaf from ff an ivory consular dip- tych, inscribed at the top AEXOY TIAPONTA KAT MA@O@N THN AITIAN, 'Receive these presents and having learnt the oc- casion .. .' A number of large marble sarco- phagi are the chief exist- ing specimens of this early Christian sculpture. In general design they are close copies of pagan tombs, and are richly decorated outside with reliefs, The subjects of these are usually scenes from the Old and New Testaments, From the former those subjects were selected which were supposed to have some typical reference to the life of Christ : the Meeting of Abraham and Melchisedec, the Sacrifice of Isaac, Daniel among the Lions, Jonah and the Whale, are those which most frequently occur. Among the New Testament scenes no representations occur of Christ's sufferings ;! the subjects chosen illustrate His power and beneficence: the Sermon on the Mount, the Triumphal Entry into J erusalem, and many of His miracles are

ur | Fig. 1.—Relief in ivory of the 4th century. (British Museum.)

E A partial exception to this rule is the scene of Christ before Pilate, which sometimes occurs,

frequently repeated. The Vatican and Lateran museums are rich in examples of this sort. One of the finest in the former collection was taken from the crypt of the old basilica of St Peter; it contained the body of a certain Junius Bassus, and dates from the year 359.2. Many other similar sarcophagi were made in the provinces of Rome, especially Gaul; and fine specimens exist in the museums of Arles, Marseilles, and Aix ; those found in Britain are of very inferior workmanship.

In the 5th century other plastic works similar in style were still produced in Italy, especially reliefs in ivory (to a certain extent imitations of the later consular diptychs), which were used to decorate episcopal thrones or the bindings of MSS. of the Gospels. The so-called chair of St Peter, still preserved (though hidden from sight) in his great basilica, is the finest example of the former class ; of less purely classical style, dating from about 550, is the ivory throne of Bishop Maximianus in Ravenna cathedral (see fig. 2). Another very remarkable work of

ig || Weg

— ——

2)

RFD ee

+ NS

LSS SSS oe ——

Uf |

Fig, 2.—Reliefs in ivory of the Baptist and the Four Evangelists in front of the episcopal throne of Maximianus in Ravenna cathedral.

the 5th century is the series of small panel reliefs on the doors of 8. Sabina on the Aventine Hill at Rome. They are scenes from Bible history carved in wood, and in them much of the old classic style survives.?

In the 6th century, under the By- zantine influence of Justinian, a new class of decorative sculpture was pro- duced, especially at Ravenna. Sub- —— : ject reliefs do not often occur, but } ras SOS large slabs of marble, forming screens, Pui), altars, pulpits, and the hike, were ornamented in a very skilful and ori- ginal way with low reliefs of graceful vine-plants, with peacocks and other birds drinking out of chalices, all treated in a very able and highly Fic 3.— Sixth – century decorative manner (see fig. 3 and peng from 8. Vitale the upper band of fig. 2). Byzan- % Ravenna. tium, however, in the main, became the birthplace and*

Ds

1 ammmeil

2 See Dionysius, Sac. Vat. Bas. Cryp., and Bunsen, Besch. d. Stadt Rom, 1840.

3 Various dates have been assigned to these interesting reliefs by different archeologists, but the costumes of the figures are strong evidence that they are not later than the Sth century.

_ Influence

BYZANTINE. |

seat of all the medieval arts soon after the transference thither of the headquarters of the empire. The plastic arts of Byzantium were for a while dominated by the survival of the dull classic art of the extreme decadence, but soon fresh life and vigour of conception were gained by a people who were not without the germinating seeds of a new esthetic development. The bronze statue of St Peter in his Roman basilica is an early work which shows some promise of what was to come in the far-off future ; though classical in its main lines and stiff in treatment, it possesses a simple dignity and force which were far beyond the powers of any mere copyist of classic

sculp- ture.! Very early in the 5th or 6th century a school of decorative sculpture arose at Byzantium which produced work, such as carved foliage on capitals and bands of orna- ment, possessed of the very highest decorative power and executed with unrivalled spirit and vigour. The early Byzantine treatment of the acanthus or thistle, as seen in the capitals of S. Sophia at Constantinople, the Golden Gate at Jerusalem, and many other buildings in the East, has never since been surpassed in any purely decorative sculpture ; and it is interesting to note how it grew out of the dull and lifeless ornamentation which covers the degraded Corinthian capital used so largely in Roman buildings of the time of Constantine and his sons. It was, however, especially in the production of METAL-WoRK (q.v.) that the early Byzantines were so famous, and this notably in the manipulation of the precious metals, which were then used in the most lavish way to decorate and furnish the great churches of the empire. This extended use of gold and silver strongly influenced their sculpture, even when the material was marble or bronze, and caused an amount of delicate surface-ornament to be used which was sometimes injurious to the breadth and simplicity of their reliefs. For many centuries the art of Byzantium, at least in its higher forms, made little or no progress, mainly owing to the tyrannical influence of the church and its growing suspicion of anything like sensual beauty. A large party in the Eastern Church decided that all repre- sentations of Christ must be "without form or comeliness," and that it was impious to carve or paint Him with any of the beauty and nobility of the pagan gods. Moreover, the artists of Byzantium were fettered by the strictest rules as to the proper way in which to portray each sacred figure : every saint had to be represented in a certain attitude, with one fixed cast of face and arrangement of drapery, and even in certain definitely prescribed colours. No deviation from these rules was permitted, and thus stereotyped patterns were created and followed in the most rigid and conventional manner. Hence in Byzantine art from the 6th to the 12th century a miniature painting in an illuminated MS. looks like a reduced copy of a colossal glass mosaic; and no design had much special relation to the material it was to be executed in: it was much the same whether it was intended to be a large relief sculptured in stone or a minute piece of silver-work for the back of a textus.

Till about the 12th century, and in some places much

| of Byzan- Jater, the art of Byzantium dominated that of the whole

tine art. Christian world in a very remarkable way. From Russia

to Ireland and from Norway to Spain any given work of art in one of the countries of Europe might almost equally well have been designed in any other. Little or no local peculiarities can be detected, except of course in the methods of execution, and even these were wonderfully similar everywhere. The dogmatic unity of the Catholic Church and its great monastic system, with constant interchange

of monkish craftsmen between one country and another, oo Sa eee

1 There is no ground for the popular impression that this is an antique statue of Jupiter transformed into that of St Peter by the addition of the keys.

SPOCUnr TUE

were the chief causes of this widespread monotony of style. An additional reason was the unrivalled technical skill of the early Byzantines, which made their city widely resorted to by the artist-craftsmen of all Europe,—the great school for learning any branch of the arts.

The extensive use of the precious metals for the chief works of plastic art in this early period is one of the reasons why so few examples still remain,—their great intrinsic value naturally causing their destruction. One of the most important existing examples, dating from the 8th century, is a series of colossal wall reliefs executed in hard stucco in the church of Cividale (Friuli) not far from Trieste. These represent rows of female saints bearing jewelled crosses, crowns, and wreaths, and closely resembling in cos- tume, attitude, and arrangement the gift-bearing mosaic figures of Theodora and her ladies in 8. Vitale at Ravenna. It is a striking instance of the almost petrified state of Byzantine art that so close a similarity should be possible between works executed at an interval of fully two hundred years. Some very interesting small plaques of ivory in the library of St Gall show a still

later survival of early forms. The central relief is a figure of Christ in Majesty, and closely resembles those in the colossal apse mosaic of S. Apollinare in Classe and other churches of Ravenna ; while the figures below the Christ are survivals of a still older time, dating back from the best eras of classic art. A river-god is represented as an old man holding an urn, from which a stream issues, and a reclining female figure with an infant and a cornucopia is the old Roman Tellus or Earth-goddess with her ancient attributes.?

Tt will be convenient to discuss the sculpture of the medizeval and modern periods under the heads of the chief countries of Europe.

England.—During the Saxon period, when stone build- ings were rare and even large cathedrals were built of wood, the plastic arts were mostly confined to the use of gold, silver, and gilt copper. The earliest existing speci- mens of sculpture in stone are a number of tall churchyard crosses, mostly in the northern provinces and apparently the work of Scandinavian sculptors. One very remarkable example is a tall monolithic cross, cut in sandstone, in the churchyard of Gosforth in Cumberland. It is covered with rudely carved reliefs, small in scale, which are of special interest as showing a transitional state from the worship of Odin to that of Christ. Some of the old Norse symbols and myths sculptured on it occur modified and altered into a semi-Christian form. Though rich in decora- tive effect and with a graceful outline, this sculptured cross shows a very primitive state of artistic development, as do the other crosses of this class in Cornwall, Ireland, and Scotland, which are mainly ornamented with those ingeni- ously intricate patterns of interlacing knotwork designed so skilfully by both the early Norse and the Celtic races.? They belong to a class of art which is not Christian in its origin, though it was afterwards largely used for Christian purposes, and so is thoroughly national in style, quite free from the usual widespread Byzantine influence. Of special interest from their early date—probably the 11th century —are two large stone reliefs now in Chichester cathedral, which are traditionally said to have come from the pre- Norman church at Selsey. They are thoroughly Byzantine in style, but evidently the work of some very ignorant sculptor; they represent two scenes in the Raising of

2 On early and medieval sculpture in ivory consult Gori, Thesaurus Veterum Diptychorum, Florence, 1759 ; Westwood, Diptychs of Consuls, London, 1862; Didron, Images ouvrantes du Louvre, Paris, 1871; Maskell, Ivories in the South Kensington Museum, London, 1872 ; Wieseler, Diptychon Quirintanum zu Brescia, Gottingen, 1868 ; Wyatt and Oldfield, Sculpture in Ivory, London, 1856.

3 See O'Neill, Sculptured Crosses of Ireland, London, 1857.

Church- yard crosses.

Norman period,

Effigies.

pose very awkward, and the drapery of exaggerated Byzantine character, with long thin folds. To repre- sent the eyes pieces of glass or coloured enamel were inserted; the treatment of the hair in long ropelike twists suggests a metal rather than a stone design (see fig. 4). ean iy

Fic. 4,—Relief of Christ at the tomb of Lazarus, now in Chichester cathedral ; 11th century, Byzantine style.

During the Norman period sculpture of a very rude sort was much used, especially for the tympanum reliefs over the doors of churches. Christ in Majesty, the Harrowing of Hell, and St George and the Dragon occur very fre- quently. Reliefs of the zodiacal signs were a common decoration of the richly sculptured arches of the 12th century, and are frequently carved with much power. The later Norman sculptured ornaments are very rich and spirited, though the treatment of the human figure is still very weak.2

The best-preserved examples of monumental sculpture of the 12th century are a number of effigies of knights- templars in the round Temple church in London.? They are laboriously cut in hard Purbeck marble, and much re- semble bronze in their treatment; the faces are clumsy, and the whole figures stiff and heavy in modelling ; but they are valuable examples of the

military costume of the time, the armour being purely chain-mail. Another effigy in the same church cut in stone, once decorated with paint- ing, is a much finer piece of sculpture of about a century later. The head, treated in an ideal way with wavy curls, has much simple beauty, showing a great artistic advance. Another of the most remarkable effigies of this period is that of Robert, duke of Normandy (d. 1134), in Gloucester cathedral, carved with much spirit in oak, and decorated aS 8 cA tN NO A hasan Whoa Pi saab at

1 One of these reliefs is imperfect and has been clumsily mended with a fragment of a third relief, now lost.

2 In Norway and Denmark during the 11th and 12th centuries carved ornament of the very highest merit was produced, especially the framework round the doors of the wooden churches ; these are formed of large pine planks, sculptured in slight relief with dragons and interlacing foliage in grand Sweeping curves,—perfect masterpieces of decorative art, full of the keenest inventive spirit and originality.

® See Richardson, Monumental Effigues of the Temple Church, London, 1843.

SBC ULPTUEE

Lazarus'; the figures are stiff, attenuated, and ugly, the | with painting (fig. 5),

[ENGLISH,

Most rapid progress in all the arts, especially that of sculpture, was made in England in the second half of the 13th and the begin- ning of the 14th century, large- ly under the patronage of pi.

5.—Effigy in oak of Robert, duke of Nor- HenrylIIL,who mandy, in Gloucester cathedral ; once painted employed and and gilt.

handsomely rewarded a large number of English artists, and also imported others from Italy and Spain, though these foreigners took only a secondary

position among the painters and sculptors of England. The end of the 13th century was in fact the culminating period of English art, and at this time a very high degree of excellence was reached by purely national means, quite equalling and even surpassing the general average of art on the Continent, except perhaps in France. Even Niccola Pisano could not have surpassed the beauty and technical excellence of the two bronze effigies in Westminster Abbey

modelled and cast by William Torell, a goldsmith and William citizen of London, shortly before the year 1300. These Torell

are on the tombs of Henry ITI. and Queen Eleanor, and, though the tomb itself of the former is an Italian work of the Cosmati school, there is no trace of foreign influence in the figures. At this time portrait effigies had not come into general use, and both figures are treated in an ideal way. The crowned head of Henry IIL. with noble well- modelled features and crisp wavy curls, resembles the con- ventional royal head on English coins of this and the following century, while the head of Eleanor is of re- markable, almost classic, beauty, and of great interest as showing the ideal type of the 13th century (see fig. 6).*

3

Fig. 6.—Head of the effigy of Queen Eleanor in Westminster Abbey ; bronze gilt, by William Torell.

In both cases the drapery is well conceived in broad sculp- turesque folds, graceful and yet simple in treatment. The casting of these figures, which was effected by the cire perdue process, is technically very perfect. The gold em- ployed for the gilding was got from Lucca in the shape of the current florins of that time, which were famed for their purity. Torell was highly paid for this, as well as for two other bronze statues of Queen Eleanor, probably of the same design.

Much of the fine 13th-century sculpture was used to Archi- The grandest example — is the west end of Wells cathedral, of about the middle of pa

decorate the facades of churches.

the century. It is covered with more than 600 figures in the round or in relief, arranged in tiers, and of varying sizes. The tympana of the doorways are filled with reliefs, and above them stand rows of colossal statues of kings and queens, bishops and knights, and saints both male and

4 The effigy of King John in Worcester cathedral of about 1216 is an exception to this rule; though rudely executed, the head appears to be a portrait.

> Tech-

i ‘nical methods and

materials.

ENGLISH. |

the building they are meant to decorate.

reliefs form an essential part of the design of the building to which they are affixed, and are treated in a subordinate manner to their architectural surroundings—very different from the sculpture on modern buildings, which usually looks as if it had been stuck up as an afterthought, and frequently by its violent and incongruous lines is rather an impertinent excrescence than an ornament.’ Peter- borough, Lichfield, and Salisbury cathedrals have fine examples of the sculpture of the 13th century: in the chapter-house of the last the spandrels of the wall-arcade are filled with sixty reliefs of subjects from Bible history, all treated with much grace and refinement. To the end of the same century belong the celebrated reliefs of angels in the spandrels of the choir arches at Lincoln, carved in a large massive way with great strength of decorative effect. exist in the transepts of Westminster Abbey; being high from the ground, they are broadly treated without any high finish in the details.”

It may here be well to say a few words on the technical methods employed in the execution of medieval sculpture, which in the main were very similar in England, France,and Germany. When bronze was used—in England as a rule only for the effigies of royal persons or the richer nobles—the metal

was cast by the delicate cire perdue process, and the whole surface of the figure was then thickly gilded. At Limoges in France a large number of sepulchral effigies were produced, especially between 1300 and 1400, and ex- ee to distant places. These were not cast, but were made of

ammered (repoussé) plates of copper, nailed on a wooden core and richly decorated with champlevé enamels in various bright colours. Westminster Abbey possesses a fine example, executed about 1300, in the effigy of William of Valence (d. 1296)? The ground on which the figure lies, the shield, the border of the tunic, the pillow, and other parts are decorated with these enamels very minutely treated. The rest of the copper was gilt, and the helmet was sur- rounded with a coronet set with jewels, which are now missing. One royal effigy of later date at Westminster, that of Henry V. (d. 1422), was formed of beaten silver fixed to an oak core, with the exception of the head, which appears to have been cast. The whole of the silver disappeared in the time of Henry VIII., and nothing now remains but the rough wooden core; hence it is doubtful whether the silver was decorated with enamel or not; it was probably of English workmanship.

In most cases stone was used for all sorts of sculpture, being decorated in a very minute and elaborate way with gold, silver, and colours applied over the whole surface. In order to give addi- tional richness to this colouring the surface of the stone, often even in the case of external sculpture, was covered with a thin skin of gesso or fine plaster mixed with size; on this, while still soft, and over the drapery and other accessories, very delicate and minute patterns were stamped with wooden dies (see Murat DE- CORATION, fig. 17), and upon this the gold and colours were applied; thus the gaudiness and monotony of flat smooth surfaces covered with gilding or bright colours were avoided. In addition to this the borders of drapery and other parts of stone statues were fre- quently ornamented with crystals and false jewels, or, in a more laborious way, with holes and sinkings filled with polished metallic foil, on which very minute patterns were painted in transparent varnish colours; the whole was then protected from the air by small pieces of transparent glass, carefully shaped to the right size and fixed over the foil in the cavity cut in the stone. It is difficult*

EEE EE

1 The sculpture on the new Paris opera-house is a striking instance of this; and so, in a small way, are the statues in the new reredos of Westminster Abbey and Gloucester cathedral.

2 On the whole, Westminster possesses the most completely repre- sentative collection of English medieval sculpture in an unbroken succession from the 18th to the 16th century.

3 Other effigies from Limoges were imported into England, but no other example now exists in the country.

4 In the modern attempts to reproduce the medixval polychromy these delicate surface reliefs have been omitted; hence the paiuful re- sults of such colouring as that in Notre Dame and the Sainte Chapelle in Paris and many other "restored" churches, especially in France and Germany.

sc ULTYTIVi tk

female, all treated very skilfully with nobly arranged drapery, and graceful heads designed in a thoroughly architectonic way, with due regard to the main lines of In this respect the early medieval sculptor inherited one of the great merits of the Greeks of the best period: his figures or

Other fine reliefs of angels, executed about 1260,.

009

now to realize the extreme splendour of this gilt, painted, and jewelled sculpture, as no perfect example exists, though in many cases traces remain of all these processes, and show that they were once very widely applied. The architectural surroundings of the figures were treated in the same elaborate way. In the 14th cen- tury in England alabaster came into frequent use for monumental sculpture; it too was decorated with gold and colour, though in some cases the whole surface does not appear to have been so treated. In his wide use of coloured decoration, as in other re- spects, the medieval sculptor came far nearer to the ancient Greek than do any modern artists. Even the use of inlay of coloured glass was common at Athens during the 5th century B.C.,—as, for example, in the plait-band of

some of the marble bases of the Erechtheum,—and five or six centuries earlier at Tiryns and Mycene.

Another material much used by medieval sculptors was wood, though, from its perishable nature, comparatively few early ex- amples survive ;® the best specimen is the figure of George de Cantelupe (d. 1273) in Abergavenny church. This was decorated with gesso reliefs, gilt and coloured in the same way as the stone. The tomb of Prince John of Eltham (d. 1334) at Westminster is a very finc cxample of the carly use of alabaster, both for the re- cumbent effigy and also for a number of small figures of mourners all round the arcading of the tomb. These little figures, well pre- served on the side which is protected by the screen, are of very great beauty and are executed with the most delicate minuteness ; some of the heads are equal to the best contemporary work of the son and pupils of Niccola Pisano. The tomb once had a high stone canopy of open work—arches, canopies, and pinnacles,—a class of architectural sculpture of which many extremely rich examples exist, as, for instance, the tomb of Edward II. at Gloucester, the De Spencer tomb at Tewkesbury, and, of rather later style, the tomb of Lady Eleanor de Percy at Beverley. This last is remark- able for the great richness and beauty of its sculptured foliage, which is of the finest Decorated period and stands unrivalled by any Continental example.

In England purely decorative carving in stone reached Four- its highest point of excellence about the middle of the teenth 14th century,—rather later, that is, than the best period Case

of figure sculpture. Woop-caRrvineG (q.v.), on the other hand, reached its artistic climax a full century later under the influence of the fully developed Perpendicular style.

The most important effigies of the 14th century are those Effigies.

in gilt bronze of Edward III. (d. 1377) and of Richard TI. and his queen (made in 1395), all at Westminster. They are all portraits, but are decidedly inferior to the earlier work of William Torell. The effigies of Richard II. and Anne of Bohemia were the work of Nicolas Broker and Godfred Prest, goldsmith citizens of London. Another fine bronze effigy is at Canterbury on the tomb of the Black Prince (d. 1376); though well cast and with care-

fully modelled armour, it is treated in a somewhat dull and conventional way. The recumbent stone figure of Lady Arundel, with two angels at her head, in Chichester cathe- dral is remarkable for its calm peaceful pose and the beauty of the drapery. A very fine but more realistic work is the tomb figure of William of Wykeham (d. 1404) in the cathedral at Winchester. 'The cathedrals at Rochester, Lichfield, York, Lincoln, Exeter, and many other ecclesi- astical buildings in England are rich in examples of 14th- century sculpture, used occasionally with great profusion and richness of effect, but treated in strict subordination to the architectural background.

The finest piece of bronze sculpture of the 15th century is the effigy of Richard Beauchamp (d. 1439) in his family chapel at Warwick,—a noble portrait figure, richly de- corated with engraved ornaments. The modelling and casting were done by William Austen of London, and the gilding and engraving by a Netherlands goldsmith who

5 On the tomb of Aymer de Valence (d. 1326) at Westminster a good deal of the stamped gesso and coloured decoration is visible on close inspection. One of the cavities of the base retains a fragment of glass covering the painted foil, still brilliant and jewel-like in effect.

6 The South Kensington Museum possesses a magnificent colossal wood figure of an angel, not English, but Italian work of the 14th century. A large stone statue of about the same date, of French work- manship, in the same museum is a most valuable example of the use of stamped gesso and inlay of painted and glazed foil.

Six- teenth century.

Torri- giano,

Seven- teenth century.

had settled in London, named Bartholomew Lambespring, assisted by several other skilful artists.

At the beginning of the 16th century sculpture in Eng- land was entering upon a period of rapid decadence, and to some extent had lost its native individuality. The finest series of statues of this period are those of life-size high up on the walls of Henry VII.'s chapel at West- minster and others over the various minor altars. These ninety-five figures, which represent saints and doctors of the church, vary very much in merit: some show German influence, others that of Italy, while a third class are, as it were, "archaistic " imitations of older English sculpture! (see fig. 7). In some cases the heads and general pose are graceful, and the drapery dignified, but in the main they are coarse both in design and in workmanship compared with the better plastic art of the 13th and 14th centuries. This decadence of English sculpture caused Henry VII. to invite the Florentine Torrigiano (14721-1522) to come to England to model and cast the bronze figures for his own magnificent tomb, which still exist in almost perfect preserva- tion. The recumbent effigies of Henry VII. and his queen are fine specimens of Florentine art, well modelled with life-like portrait heads and of very fine technique in the casting. The altar-tomb on which the effigies lie is of black marble, decorated with large medallion re- liefs in gilt bronze, each with a pair of saints—the patrons of Henry and : i Elizabeth of York—of very graceful — ee design. The altar and its large bal- py¢, 7.—statue (life-size) dacchino and reredos were the work of St Thomas of Canter- of Torrigiano, but were destroyed calle en during the 17th century. The : Gani had a large relief of the ~~ pe ge se Resurrection of Christ executed in painted terra-cotta, as were also a life-sized figure of the dead Christ under the altar-slab and four angels on the top angles of the bal- dacchino; a number of fragments of these figures have recently been found in the "pockets" of the nave vaulting, where they had been thrown after the destruction of the reredos. Torrigiano's bronze effigy of Margaret of Rich- mond in the south aisle of the same chapel is a very skilful but too realistic portrait, apparently taken from a cast of the dead face and hands. Another terra-cotta effigy in the Rolls chapel is also, from internal evidence, attri- buted to the same able Florentine. Another talented Florentine sculptor, Benedetto da Maiano, was invited to England by Cardinal Wolsey to make his tomb ; of this only the marble sarcophagus now exists and has been used to hold the body of Admiral Nelson in St. Paul's Cathedral. Another member of the same family, named Giovanni, was the sculptor of the colossal terra-cotta

heads of the Cesars affixed to the walls of the older part of Hampton Court Palace.

During the troublous times of the Reformation sculpture, like the other arts, continued to decline. Of 17 th-century monumental effigies that of Sir Francis Vere (d. 1607) in the north transept at Westminster is one of the best, though its design—a recumbent effigy overshadowed by a slab covered with armour, upborne by four kneeling

1 There were once no less than 107 statues in the interior of this chapel, besides a large number on the exterior 5 see J. T. Micklethwaite in Archexologia, vol, xlvii. pl. x.-xii,

Jones, appears to have been the chief English sculptor of

figures of men-at-arms—is almost an exact copy of the

tomb of Engelbert IL. of Vianden-Nassau.2 The finest

bronze statues of this century are those of Charles Villiers,

duke of Buckingham (d. 1634), and his wife at the north- ; east of Henry VII.'s chapel. The effigy of the duke, in rich armour of the time of Charles I., lies with folded hands in the usual medizval pose. The face is fine and well modelled and the casting very good. The allegorical figures at the foot are caricatures of the style of Michel- angelo, and are quite devoid of merit, but the kneeling statues of the duke's children are designed with grace and pathos, A large number of very handsome marble and alabaster tombs were erected throughout England during the 17th century. The effigies are poor and coarse, but the rich architectural ornaments are effective and often of beautiful materials, alabaster being mixed with various richly coloured marbles in a very skilful way. Nicholas Stone (d. 1647), who worked under the supervision of Inigo

his time. The De Vere and Villiers monuments are usually attributed to him.' One of the best public monuments of London is the bronze equestrian statue of Charles I. at Charing Cross, which was overthrown and hidden during the protectorate of Cromwell, but replaced at the Restora- tion in 1660. It is very nobly modelled and was pro-

duced under Italian influence by a French sculptor called

Hubert Le Sceur (d. 1670). The standing bronze statue

of James IT. behind the Whitehall banqueting room, very

poorly designed but well executed, was the work of Grinling Gibbons (1648-1721), a native of Holland, who was chiefly

famed for his extraordinary skill in carving realistic fruit

and flowers in pear and other white woods, Many rich

and elaborate works of his exist at Trinity College, Oxford,

at Cambridge, Chatsworth, and several other places in England. In the early part of the 18th century he worked

for Sir Christopher Wren, and carved the elaborate friezes

of the stalls and screens in St Paul's Cathedral and in

other London churches.

During the 18th century English sculpture was mostly in Eight- the hands of Flemish and other foreign artists, of whom eenth Roubiliac (1695-1762), Scheemakers (1691-1773), and Cnty. Rysbrack (1694-1770) were the chief. The ridiculous custom of representing Englishmen of the 18th and 19th centuries in the toga or in the armour of an ancient Roman was fatal alike to artistic merit and eikonic truth 5 and when, as was often the case, the periwig of the Georgian period was added to the costume of a Roman general the effect is supremely ludicrous. Nollekens (1737-1823), a pupil of Scheemakers, though one of the most popular sculptors of the 18th century,

was a man of very little real ability. John Bacon (1740-1799) was in some respects an abler sculptor. John Flaxman® (1755-1826) was in England the chief initiator of the classical revival. For many years he worked for Josiah Wedgwood, the potter, and designed for him an immense number of vases covered with delicate cameo-like reliefs. Many of these, taken from antique gems and sculpture, are of great beauty, though hardly suited to the special necessities of fictile ware. F'laxman's large pieces of sculpture are of less merit, but some of his marble reliefs are designed with much spirit and classic purity. His illustrations in outline to the poems of Homer, ANschylus, and Dante, based on drawings on Greek vases, have been greatly admired, but

2 See Arendt, Chateau de Vianden, Paris, 1884.

3 The Villiers monument is evidently the work of two sculptors working in very opposite styles.

- *An interesting account of many English sculptors of this time is*

given by Smith, Nollekens and his Time, London, 1829.

> See Flaxman, Lectures at the Royal Academy, London, 1829. His

designs on a small scale are the best of his works, —as, for example, the silver shield of Achilles covered with delicate and graceful reliefs,

they are unfortunately much injured by the use of a thicker outline on one side of the figures,—an unsuccessful attempt to give a suggestion of shadow. Flaxman's best pupil was Baily (1788-1867), chiefly celebrated for his nude marble figure of Eve.

*During the first half of the 19th century the preva- lence of a cold lifeless pseudo-classic style was fatal to * individual talent, and robbed the sculpture of England of all real vigour and spirit. Francis Chantrey (1782-1841) produced a great quantity of sculpture, especially sepulchral monuments, which were much admired in spite of their very limited merits.*

Allan Cunningham and Henry Weekes worked in some cases in conjunction with Chantrey, who was not wanting in technical skill, as is shown by his clever marble relief of two dead woodcocks. John Gibson (1790-1866) was perhaps after Flaxman the most success- ful of the English classic school, and produced some works of real merit. He strove eagerly to revive the poly- chromatic decoration of sculpture in imitation of the car- cumlitio of classical times. His Venus Victrix, shown at the exhibition in London of 1862 (a work of about six years earlier), was the first of his coloured statues which attracted much attention. The prejudice, however, in favour of white marble was too strong, and both the popular verdict and that of other sculptors were strongly adverse to the "tinted Venus." The fact was that Gibson's colouring was timidly applied : it was a sort of compromise between the two systems, and thus his sculpture lost the special qualities of a pure marble surface, without gaining the richly decorative effect of the polychromy either of the Greeks or of the medizval period! The other chief sculp- tors of the same very inartistic period were Banks, the elder Westmacott (who modelled the Achilles in Hyde Park), R. Wyatt (who cast the equestrian statue of Wellington, lately removed from London), Macdowell, Campbell, Mar- shall, and Bell.

During the last hundred years a large number of hono- rary statues have been set up in the Houses of Parliament, Westminster Hall and Abbey, and in other public places in London. Most of these, though modelled as a rule with some scholastic accuracy, are quite dull and spiritless, and, whilst free from the violently bad taste of such men as Bernini or Roubiliac, they lack the force and vigorous originality which go far to redeem what is offensive in the sculpture of the 17th and 18th centuries. The modern public statues of London and elsewhere are as a rule tamely respectable and quite uninteresting. One brilliant exception is the Wellington monument in St Paul's Cathe- dral, probably the finest plastic work of modern times. It _ was the work of Alfred Stevens (1817-1875), a sculptor of the highest talent, who lived and died almost unrecognized by the British public. The commission for this monu- ment was given to Stevens after a public competition ; and he agreed to carry it out for £20,000,—a quite inadequate sum, as it afterwards turned out. The greater part of his life Stevens devoted to this grand monument, constantly harassed and finally worn out by the interference of Government, want of money, and other difficulties. Though

he completed the model, Stevens did not live to see the monument set up,—perhaps fortunately for him, as it has been placed in a small side chapel, where the effect of the whole is utterly destroyed, and its magnificent bronze groups hidden from view. The monument consists of a sarcophagus supporting a recumbent bronze effigy of the duke, over which is an arched marble canopy of late Renaissance style on delicately enriched shafts. At each

1 Gibson bequeathed his fortune and the models of his chief works to the Royal Academy, where the latter are now crowded in an upper room adjoining the Diploma Gallery. "See Lady Eastlake, Life of Gibson, London, 1870.

end of the upper part of the canopy is a large bronze group, one representing Truth tearing the tongue out of the mouth of Falsehood, and the other Valour trampling Cowardice under foot (see fig. 8). The two virtues are represented

iin |

Fig. 8.—Bronze group by Alfred Stevens from the Wellington monument.

by very stately female figures modelled with wonderful beauty and vigour; the vices are two nude male figures treated in a very massive way. The whole is composed with great skill and largeness of style. The vigorous strength and sculpturesque nobility of these groups recall the style of Michelangelo, but they are far from being a mere imitation of him or any other master. Stevens's work throughout is original and has a very distinct char- acter of its own. He also designed an equestrian statue of the duke to stand on the summit of the monument, but in its present cramped position there is not sufficient room for this Owing to the many years he spent on this one work Stevens did not produce much other sculpture. In Dorchester House, Park Lane, there is some of his work, especially a very noble mantelpiece supported by nude female caryatids in a crouching attitude,

modelled with great largeness of style. He also designed mosaics to fill the spandrels under the dome of St Paul's. The value of Stevens's work is all the more conspicuous from the feeble- ness of most of the sculpture of his contemporaries.

In the present generation there are some signs of the development of a better state of the plastic arts. A bronze statue of an Athlete struggling with a Python, by Sir Frederick Leighton, is a work of great merit, almost

2 The great merit of this work can now only be seen at the South Kensington Museum, which possesses Stevens's models and (on a small scale) his design for the whole monument.

worthy to rank with the best examples of any period, and remarkable for a profound knowledge of human anatomy (see fig. 9). Unfortunately the real cire perdue process for metal casting is seldom practised in England, and this

Ls

= ™ = *ul u u i* =

Fic. 9.—Bronze statue of an athlete and python, by Sir Frederick Leighton, P.R.A., in the South Kensington Museum.

statue, as well as all other bronze works produced in Eng- land, suffers much from the disagreeable surface which results from the rude method of forming the moulds in sand. The colossal bronze lions in Trafalgar Square, de- signed by Sir Edwin Landseer, are a melancholy example of this.! :

France.—During the 12th and 13th centuries the sculp- ture of France was, on the whole, the finest in the world, and was there used in the greatest profusion. The facades of large cathedrals were completely covered with

sculptured reliefs and thick-set rows of statues in niches. The whole of the front was frequently one huge composition of statu- ary, with only sufficient purely architectural work to form a background and frame for the sculptured figures. A west end treated like that of Wells cathedral, which is almost unique in England, is not uncommon in France. Even the shafts of the doorways and other architectural accessories were covered with minute sculptured decora- tion,—the motives of which were often, especially during the 12th century, obviously derived from the metal-work of shrines and reliquaries studded with rows of jewels. The west facade of Poitiers cathedral is one of the richest ex- amples ; it has large surfaces covered with foliated carving Se ee ee er

? On English seulpture, see Carter, Specimens of Ancient Sculpture, London, 1780; Aldis, Sculpture of Worcester Cathedral, London, 1874 ; Cockerell, Iconography of Wells Cathedral, Oxford, 1851; Stothard, Monumental Efigies of Britain, London, 1817 ; Westmacott, " Sculp- ture in Westminster Abbey," in Old London (pub. by Archeological Institute), 1866, p. 159 sqg.; G. G. Scott, Gleanings from Westminster, London, 1862; Colling Art Foliage, London, 1865, with good ex- amples of medizval decorative sculpture; W. B. Scott, British School of Sculpture, London, 1872; W. M. Rossetti, " British Sculpture," in Fraser's Mag., April1861; many good illustrations of English medieval

sculpturé are scattered throughout the volumes of Archexologia, the Archeological Journal, and other societies' " Proceedings,"

century (the 12th), but rather later in date, is the very

} tonic effect of the whole facade.

and rows of colossal statues, both seated and standing, reaching high up the front of the church. Of the same

noble sculpture on the three western doors of Chartres cathedral, with fine tympanum sec ppegmes reliefs and colossal statues % attached to the jamb-shafts_ of the openings (see fig. 10). | These latter figures, with their exaggerated height and the| long straight folds of their] drapery, are designed with great skill to assist and not to break the main upward lines of the doorways. The sculptors have willingly sacri- ficed the beauty and propor- tion of each separate statue for the sake of the architec-

The heads, however, are full of nobility, beauty, and even grace, especially those that are softened by the addition of long wavy curls, which give relief to the general stiffness of the form. The sculptured doors of the north and south aisles of Bourges cathedral are fine examples of the end of the 12th century, and so were the west doors of Notre Dame in Paris till they were hopelessly injured by "restoration." The early sculpture

at Bourges is specially interesting from the existence in many parts of its original coloured decoration.

In France, as in England, the 13th century was the Thir- golden age of sculpture ; while still keeping its early dignity teenth and subordination to its architectural setting, the sculpture century. reached a very high degree of graceful finish and even sensuous beauty. Nothing could surpass the loveliness of the angel statues round the Parisian Sainte Chapelle, and even the earlier work on the facade of Laon cathedral is full of grace and delicacy. Amiens cathedral is especi- ally rich in sculpture of this date,—as, for example, the noble and majestic statues of Christ and the Apostles at the west end; the sculpture on the south transept of about 1260-70, of more developed style, is remarkable for dignity combined with soft beauty.2 The noble row of kings on the west end of Notre Dame at Paris has, like the earlier sculpture, been ruined by "restoration," which has robbed the statues of both their spirit and their vigour. To the latter years of the 13th century belong the magnificent series of statues and reliefs round the three great western doorways of the same church, among which are no less than thirty-four life-sized figures. On the whole, the single statues throughout this period are finer than the reliefs with many figures. Some of the statues of the Virgin and Child are of extraordinary beauty, in spite of their being often treated with a certain mannerism,—a curved pose of the body, which

appears to have been copied from ivory statuettes in which the figure followed the curve of the elephant's tusk. The north transept at Rheims is no less rich : the central statue of Christ is a work of much grace and nobility of form ; and some nude figures—for example, that of St Sebastian—show a knowledge of the human form which was very unusual at that- early date. Many of these Rheims statues, like those by Torell at West-

Fie. 10.—Statues on jamb of central west door of Chartres cathedral, 12th century; speci- ally designed to suit vertical lines of columns behind; all once covered with painting and gold.

| minster, are quite equal to the best work of Niccola Pisano.

es er eee ee 2 See Ruskin, The Bible of Amiens, 1878.

ud

f d

Sixteenth century.

FRENCH.]

The abbey church of St Denis possesses the largest collec- tion of French 13th-century monumental effigies, a large number of which, with supposed portraits of the early kings, were made during the rebuilding of the church in 1264; some of them appear to be "archaistic" copies of older contemporary statues.

In the 14th century French sculpture began to decline, though much beautiful plastic work was still produced.

- Some of the reliefs on the choir screen of Notre Dame at

Paris belong to this period, as does also much fine sculp- ture on the transepts of Rouen cathedral and the west end of Lyons. At the end of this century an able sculptor from the Netherlands, called Claux Sluter, executed much fine work, especially at Dijon, under the patronage of Philip the Bold, for whose newly founded Carthusian monastery in 1399 he

sculptured the great “ Moses foun- tain” in the cloister, with six life-sized statues of prophets in stone, painted and gilt in the usual medieval fashion.

| Fifteenth Not long before his death in 1411 Sluter completed a

‘century.

very magnificent altar tomb for Philip the Bold, now in the museum at Dijon. It is of white marble, surrounded with arcading, which contains about forty small alabaster figures representing mourners of all classes, executed with much dramatic power. The recumbent portrait effigy of Philip in his ducal mantle with folded hands is a work of great power and delicacy of treatment.

The latter part of the 15th century in France was a time of transition from the medizval style, which had gradually been deteriorating, to the more florid and real- istic taste of the Renaissance. To this speriod belong a number of rich reliefs and statues on the choir-screen of Chartres cathedral. Those on the screen at Amiens are later still, and exhibit the rapid ad- vance of the new style. Fig. 11 shows a statuette in the costume of the end of the 15th century, a characteristic example of the later medizeval method of treating saints in a realistic way.

In the 16th century Italian influ- ence, especially that of Benvenuto Cel- lini, was paramount in France. Jean ¥ Goujon (d. 1572) was the ablest French sculptor of the time; he combined great technical skill and refinement of modelling with the florid and affected style of the age. His nude figure of Diana reclining by a Stag, now in the Louvre, is a graceful and vigorous piece of work, superior in sculpturesque breadth to the somewhat similar bronze relief of a nymph by Cellini. Between 1540 and 1552 Goujon executed the fine monument at Rouen to Duke Louis de Brézé, and from 1555 to 1562 was mainly occupied in decorating the Louvre with sculpture. One of the most pleas- ing and graceful works of this period, thoroughly Italian in style, is the marble group of the Three Graces bearing on their heads an urn containing the heart of Henry IL. executed in 1560 by Germain Pilon for Catherine de’ Medici. The monument of Catherine and Henry II. at St Denis, by the same sculptor, is an inferior and coarser work. Maitre Ponée, probably the same as the Italian Ponce Jacquio, chiselled the

noble monument of Albert of Carpi (1535), now in the Louvre. Another very fine portrait effigy of about 1570, a recumbent figure in full armour of the duke of Montmorency, preserved in the Louvre, is the work of

Fia. 11.—Statuette of St Mary Magdalene, late 15th century ; French work, painted and gilt. !

1 See Félibien, Histoire de ? Abbaye de Saint-Denys, Paris, 1706.

Barthélemy Prieur. Francois Duquesnoy of Brussels (1594-1644), usually known as I] Fiamingo, was a clever sculptor, thoroughly French in style, though he mostly worked in Italy. His large statues are very poor, but his reliefs in ivory of boys and cupids are modelled with won- derfully soft realistic power and graceful fancy.

No sculptor of any great merit appears to have arisen in France during the 17th century, though some, such as the two Coustous, had great techni- cal skill. Pierre Puget(1622-1694) produced __ vigor- ous but coarse and tasteless work, such as his Milo de- voured by a Lion. Other sculptors of the time were Simon QGuillain, Frangois and Mi- chel Anguier, and Chas. Ant. Coyze- vox (1640-1720), the last a sculptor of Lyons who pro- duced some fine portrait busts. Fig. 12 shows a group by Clodion, whose real name was Claude Michel (c. 1745-1814). He worked largely in terra-cotta, and modelled | ‘ with Fria 12.—Bacchanal group by Clodion in great spirit and terra-cotta. invention, though . in the sensual unsculpturesque manner prevalent in his time.

In the following century Jean Antoine Houdon (1740- 1828), a sculptor of most exceptional power, produced some works of the highest merit at a time when the plastic arts had reached a very low ebb. His standing colossal statue of 8S. Bruno in 8. Maria degli Angeli at Rome is a most noble and stately piece of portraiture, full of commanding dignity and expression. His seated statue of Voltaire in the foyer of the Théatre Frangais, though sculpturesque in treatment, is a most striking piece of lifelike realism.

Houdon may in fact be regarded as the precursor of the modern school of French sculpture of the better sort. About the middle of the 18th century a revolution was brought about in the style of sculpture by the suddenly revived taste for antique art. A period of dull pseudo-classicism succeeded, which in most cases stifled all original talent and reduced the plastic arts to a lifeless form of archeology. Regarded even as imitations the works of this period are very unsuccessful: the sculptors got hold merely of the dry bones not of the spirit of classic art; and their study of the subject was so shallow and unintelligent that they mostly picked out what was third- rate for special admiration and ignored the glorious beauty of the best works of true Hellenic art. Thus in sculpture, as in painting and architecture, a study which might have been stimulating and useful in the highest degree became a serious hindrance to the development of modern art, and this not only in France but in the other countries of Europe; in France, however, the victories of Napoleon I. and his arrogant pretension to create a Gaulish empire on the model of that of ancient Rome caused the taste for

pseudo-Roman art to be more pronounced than elsewhere. Among the first sculptors of this school were Antoine Chaudet (1763-1810) and Joseph Bosio (1769-1845), The latter was largely employed by Napoleon I.: he executed with some ability the bronze spiral reliefs round the column of the Place Vendéme and the statue of Napoleon on the top, and also modelled the classical quadriga on the triumphal arch in the Place du Carrousel. Jacques Pradier of Geneva (1790-1852) produced the Chained Prometheus of the Louvre and the Niobe group (1822). He possessed great technical ability, but aimed in most of his works at a soft sensuous beauty which is specially unsuited to sculpture. Frangois Rude (1784-1855) worked in a style modelled on Graeco-Roman sculpture treated with some freedom. His bronze Mercury in the Louvre is a clever work, but his statues of Marshal Ney in the Luxembourg Gardens and of General Cavaignac (1847) in the

cemetery of Montmartre are conspicuously bad. The reliefs on the pediment of the Panthéon are by Pierre Jean David of Angers (1789-1856); his early works are of dull classic style, but later in life he became a realist and produced the most unsculpturesque results. A bronze statue of a Dancing Fisher-lad modelled by Frangois Joseph Duvet, now in the Luxembourg collection, is an able work of the genre class. Other French sculptors who were highly esteemed in their time were Ottin, Courtet, Simart, Etex, and Carpeaux.' The last was an artist of great ability, and produced an immense number of clever but often very offensive statues. He obtained the highest renown in France, and was a typical example of the sad degradation of taste which prevailed under the rule of N apoleon ITT.

The existing schools of French sculpture are by far the most important in the world. Technical skill and intimate knowledge of the human form are possessed by several living sculptors of France to a degree which has probably never been surpassed, and some of them produce works of very great power, beauty, and originality. Many of their works have a similar fault to that of one class of French painters: they are much injured by an excess of sensual realism; in many cases nude statues are simply life-studies with all the faults and individual peculiarities of one model. Very unsculpturesque results are produced by treating a statue as a representation of a naked person, — one, that is, who is obviously in the habit of wearing clothes,—a very different thing from the purity of the ancient Greek treatment of the nude. Thus the great ability of many French sculptors is degraded to suit the taste of the voluptuary. An extravagance of attitude and an undignified arrangement of the figures do much to injure some of the large groups which are full of technical merit, and executed with marvellous anatomical knowledge, This is specially the case with much of the sculpture that is intended to decorate the buildings of Paris, The group of nude dancers by Carpeaux outside the. new opera- house is a work of astonishing skill and prurient imagi- nation, utterly unsculpturesque in style and especially unfitted to decorate the comparatively rigid lines of a building. The egotism of modern French sculptors will not allow them to accept the necessarily subordinate reserve which is so necessary for architectonic sculpture, Other French works, on the other hand, err in the direc- tion of a sickly sentimentalism, or a petty realism, which is fatal to

sculpturesque beauty. The real power and merits of the modern French school make these faults all the more conspicuous.? ee ee a

1 See Chesnean, J. B. Carpeaux, sa vie, &c., Paris, 1880.

? On French sculpture see Adams, Recueil de Sculptures Gothiques, Paris, 1858; Cerf, Description de Notre Dame de fieims, Rheims,

1861 ; Bméric-David, L'Art Statuaire, Paris, 1805, and Histotre de la Sculpture Francaise, Paris, 1858 ; Guilhebaud, L' Architecture et la

PCULPRT UES

[GERMAN,

Germany.—Till the 12th century sculpture in Germany continued to be under the lifeless influence of Byzantium, tempered to some extent by an attempt to return to classical models. This is seen in the bronze pillar reliefs Bronze and other works produced by Bishop Bernward after his work, visit to Rome (see Mrrat-work, vol. xvi. p. 77). Hildes- 12th heim, Cologne, and the whole of the Rhine provinces a were the most active seats of German sculpture, especially in metal, till the 12th century. Many remarkable pieces of bronze sculpture were produced at the end of that period, of which several specimens exist. The bronze font at Liége, with figure-subjects in relief of various baptismal scenes from the New Testament, by Lambert Patras of Dinant, cast about 1112, is a work of most wonderful beauty and perfection for its time ;. other fonts in Osnabriick and Hildesheim cathedrals are surrounded by spirited reliefs, fine in conception, but inferior in beauty to those on the Liége font. Fine bronze candelabra exist in the abbey church of Comburg and at Aix-la-Chapelle, the latter of about 1165. Merseburg cathedral has a strange realistic sepulchral figure of Rudolf of Swabia, executed about 1100; and at Magdeburg is a fine efligy, also in bronze, of Bishop Frederick (d. 1152), treated in a more graceful way. The last figure has a peculiarity which is not uncommon in the older bronze reliefs of Germany : the body is treated as a relief, while the head sticks out and is quite detached from the ground in a very awkward way. One of the finest plastic works of this century is the choir screen of Hildesheim cathedral, executed in hard stucco, once rich with gold and

colours ; on its lower part is a series of large reliefs of saints modelled with almost classical breadth and nobility, with drapery of especial excellence.

In the 13th century German sculpture had made con- Thir. siderable artistic progress, but it did not reach the high teenth standard of France. One of the best examples is the °™uy "golden gate" of Freiburg cathedral, with sculptured figures on the jambs after the French fashion. The statues of the apostles on the nave pillars, and especially one of the Madonna at the east end (1260-70), possess great beauty and sculpturesque breadth. The statues both inside and outside Bamberg cathedral, of the middle of the 13th century, are nobly designed ; and an equestrian statue of Conrad III. in the market-place at Bamberg, supported by a foliated corbel, exhibits startling vigour and originality, and is designed with wonderful largeness of effect, though small in scale. The statues of Henry the Lion and Queen Matilda at Brunswick, of about the same period, are of the highest beauty and dignity of expression. Strasburg cathedral, though sadly damaged by restoration, still possesses a large quantity of the finest sculpture of the 13th century. One tympanum relief of the Death of the Virgin, surrounded by the sorrowing Apostles, is a work of the very highest beauty, worthy to rank with the best Italian sculpture of even a later period. Of its class nothing can surpass the purely decorative carving at Stras- burg, with varied realistic foliage studied from nature, evidently with the keenest interest and enjoyment.

Nuremberg is rich in good sculpture of the 14th century. Nurem- The church of St Sebald, the Frauenkirche, and the west be fagade of St Lawrence are lavishly decorated with reliefs 2° and statues, very rich in effect, but showing the germs of

Sculpture du Vme au XVime Siecle, Paris, 1851-59; Ménard, Seulp- ture Antique et Moderne, Paris, 1867 ; Didron, Annales Archéo- logiques, various articles; Félibien, Histoire de Art en France, Paris, 1856; Mrs Pattison, Renatssance of Art in France, London, 1879; Montfaucon, Monumens de la Monarchie Francaise, Paris, 1729-33 ; Jouy, Sculptures Modernes du Louvre, Paris, 1855; Reveil, Guvre de Jean Goujon, Paris, 1868 ; Viollet-le-Duc, Dictionnaire de U Architecture, Paris, 1869, art. "

Sculpture," vol. viii. pp. 97-279; Claretie, Peintres et Sculpteurs Contemporains, Paris, in progress.

GERMAN. |

that mannerism which grew so strong in Germany during the 15th century. Of special beauty are the statuettes which adorn the "beautiful fountain," executed by Hein- rich der Balier (1385-1396), and richly decorated with gold and colour by the painter Rudolf! A number of colossal figures were executed for Cologne cathedral between 1349 and 1361, but they are of no great merit. Augsburg pro- duced several sculptors of ability about this time; the museum possesses some very noble wooden statues of this school, large in scale and dignified in treatment. On the exterior of the choir of the church of Marienburg castle is a very remarkable colossal figure of the Virgin of about 1340-50. Like the Hildesheim choir screen, it is made of hard stucco and is decorated with glass mosaics. The equestrian bronze group of St George and the Dragon in the market-place at Prague is excellent in workmanship and full of vigour, though much wanting dignity of style. Another fine work in bronze of about the same date is the effigy of Archbishop Conrad (d. 1261) in Cologne cathedral, executed many years after his death. The portrait appears truthful and the whole figure is noble in style. The military effigies of this time in Germany as elsewhere were almost un- avoidably stiff and lifeless from the necessity of repre- senting them in plate ar- mour; the ecclesiastical chasuble, in which priestly effigies nearly always ap- pear, is also a thoroughly unsculpturesque form of drapery, both from its awk- ward shape and its absence of folds. Fig. 13 shows a characteristic example of these sepulchral effigies in slight relief. It is interest- ing to compare this with a somewhat similarly treated Florentine effigy, executed in Fic. 13.—Sepulehral effigy in low marble at tho beginning of Talbot Gunther of Sehvantu the next century, but of

very superior grace and delicacy of treatment (see fig. 16 below).

"Fifteenth The 15th century was one of great activity and origin- 'century. ality in the sculpture of Germany and produced many artists of very high ability. One speciality of the time was the production of an immense number of wooden altars and reredoses, painted and gilt in the most gorgeous way and covered with subject-reliefs and statues, the former often treated in a

very pictorial style.2 Wooden screens, stalls, tabernacles, and other church-fittings of the greatest elaboration and clever workmanship were largely produced in Germany at the same time, and on into the 16th century.® Jérg Syrlin, one of the most able of these sculptors in wood, executed the gorgeous choir-stalls in Ulm cathedral, richly decorated with statuettes and canopied work, be-

1 See Baader, Beitrage zur Kunstgesch. Nirnbergs ; and Rettberg, Niirnbergs Kunstleben, Stuttgart, 1854.

2 This class of large wooden retable was much imitated in Spain and Scandinavia. The metropolitan cathedral of Roskilde in Denmark possesses a very large and magnificent example covered with subject reliefs enriched with gold and colours.

8 See Waagen, Kunst und Kiinsiler in Deutschl., Leipsic, 1843-45,

tween 1469 and 1474; his son and namesake sculptured

the elaborate stalls in Blaubeuren church of 1493 and the great pulpit in Ulm cathedral. Veit Stoss of Nuremberg, though a man of bad character, was a most skilful sculptor in wood ; he carved the high altar, the tabernacle, and the stalls of the Frauenkirche at Cracow, between 1472 and 1495. One of his finest works is a large piece of wooden panelling, nearly 6 feet square, carved in 1495, with central reliefs of the Doom and the Heavenly Host, framed by minute reliefs of scenes from Bible history. It is now in the Nuremberg town-hall. Wohlgemuth (1434-1519), the master of A. Diirer, was not only a painter but also a clever wood-carver, as was also Diirer himself (1471-1528), who executed a tabernacle for the Host with an exquisitely carved relief of Christ in Majesty between the Virgin and St John, which still exists in the chapel of the monastery of Landau. Diirer also produced miniature reliefs cut in boxwood and hone-stone, of which the British Museum (print room) possesses one of the finest examples. Adam Krafft (c. 1455-1507) was another of this class of sculp- tors, but he worked

also in stone; he produced the great Schreyer monument (1492) for St Sebald's at Nuremberg, —a very skilful though mannered piece of sculpture, with very realistic figures in the costume of the time, carved in a way more suited to wood than stone, and too pictorial in effect. He also made the great tabernacle for the Host, 80 feet high, covered with statuettes, in Ulm cathedral, and the very spirited "Stations of the Cross" on the road to the Nuremberg cemetery.

The Vischer family of Nuremberg for three generations Vischer were among the ablest sculptors in bronze during the 15th family.

and 16th centuries. Hermann Vischer the elder worked mostly between 1450 and 1505, following the earlier medieval traditions, but without the originality of his son. Among his existing works the chief are the bronze font at Wittenberg church (1457) and four episcopal effigies in relief, dated from 1475 to 1505, in Bamberg cathedral ; this church also contains a fine series of bronze sepulchral monuments of various dates throughout the 15th and 16th centuries. Hermann's son Peter Vischer was the chief artist of the family; he was admitted a master in the sculptor's guild in 1489, and passed the greater part of his life at Nuremberg, where he died in 1529. In technique few bronze sculptors have ever equalled hin ; but his designs are marred by an excess of mannered realism and a too exuberant fancy. His chief early work was the tomb of Archbishop Ernest in Magdeburg cathedral (1495), surrounded with fine statuettes of the apostles under semi-Gothic canopies ; it is purer in style than his later works, such as the magnificent shrine of St Sebald at Nuremberg, a tall canopied bronze structure, crowded with reliefs and statuettes in the most lavish way. The general form of the shrine is Gothic, but the details are those of the 16th-century Italian Renaissance treated with much freedom and originality. Some of the statuettes of saints attached to the slender columns of the canopy are modelled with much grace and even dignity of form. A small portrait figure of Peter himself, introduced at one end of the base, is a marvel of clever realism: he has represented himself as a stout, bearded man, wearing a large leathern apron and holding some of the tools of his craft. In this work, executed from 1508 to 1519, Peter was assisted by his sons, as is recorded in an inscription on the base— "' Petter Vischer, Purger zu Niirmberg, machet das Werck mit seinen Sunnen, und ward*

folbracht im Jar MDXIxX . . .” This gorgeous shrine is a remarkable example of the un- commercial spirit which animated the artists of that time,

4 This great work is really a canopied pedestal to support and en- close the shrine, not the shrine itself, which is a work of the 14th century, having the gabled form commonly used in the Middle Ages for metal reliquaries.

and of the evident delight which they took in their work. Dragons, grotesques, and little figures of boys, mixed with graceful scroll foliage, crowd every possible part of the canopy and its shafts, designed in the most free and un- conventional way and executed with an utter disregard of the time and labour which were lavished on them. Other existing works by Peter Vischer and his song are the Entombment relief, signed “P. V. 1522,” in the Aegidien- kirche, the monument of Cardinal Albert (1525) in the church at Aschaffenburg, and the fine tomb of Frederick the Wise (1527) in the castle chapel at Wittenberg.

Next to Nuremberg, the chief centres of bronze sculpture were Augsburg and Liibeck.

Inns- bruck.

16th century, namely twenty-eight colossal figures round the tomb of the emperor Maximilian, which stands in the centre of the nave, representing a suc- cession of heroes and ancestors of the em- peror. The first of the statues which was completed cost 3000 florins, and so Maxi- milian invited the help of Peter Visch- er, whose skill was greater and whose work less expensive than that of the local craftsmen. Most of them, however, were executed by sculptors of whom little is now known. They differ much in style, though all are of great techni- cal merit. The finest (see fig. 14) is an ideal statue of King Arthur of Britain, in plate armour of the 14th ——~ or early 15th century, very remarkable for the nobility of the face and pose. That of Theodoric is also a very fine con- ception. Some of the portrait figures of the Hapsburgs are almost ludicrously realistic, and are disfigured by the ugly German armour of the time. From In the latter part of the 16th

century the influence of sixteenth the later Italian Renaissance becomes very apparent, and _ many elaborate works in bronze were produced, especi- 'ally at Augsburg, where Hubert Gerhard cast the fine " Augustus fountain" in 1593, and Adrian de Vries made the "Hercules fountain" in 1599; both were influenced by the style of Giovanni di Bologna, as shown in his magnificent fountain at Bologna.

In the following century Andreas Schliiter of Hamburg (b. about 1662) produced smaller bronze reliefs and acces. sories of great merit. His colossal statue of Frederick III. on the bridge at Berlin is less successful. On the whole the 17th and 18th centuries in Germany, as in England, were periods of great decadence in the plastic art ; little of merit was produced, except some portrait figures. In the second half of the 18th century there was a strong revival in sculpture, especially in the classic style ; and since then Germany has produced an immense quantity of large and pretentious sculpture, mostly dull in design and second-rate in execution, Johann Gottfried

Fic. 14.—Bronze statue of King Arthur at Innsbruck. :

of Berlin (1764-1850) finished a number of portrait figures, ©

SCULPTURE

Innsbruck possesses one of the finest series of bronze statues of the first half of the

[GERMAN, SPANISH.

some of which are ably modelled, as did also Friedrich Tieck (1776-1851) and Christian Rauch (1777-1857) ; the works of Rauch are, however, mostly weak and sentimental in style, as, for example, his recumbent statue of Queen ®& Louisa at Charlottenburg (1813) and his statues of Generals Biilow and Scharnhorst at Berlin. Friedrich Drake was the ablest of Rauch's pupils, but he lived at a very unhappy period for the sculptor's art. His chief wvrk is perhaps the colossal bronze equestrian statue of King William of Prussia at Cologne, Albert Wolff was a sculptor of more ability ; he executed the equestrian por- trait of King Ernest Augustus at Hanover,

and a Horse- man attacked by a Lion now in the Berlin Museum. Augustus Kiss (1802-1865) produced the companion group to this, the celebrated Amazon and Panther in bronze, as well as the fine group of St George and the Dragon in a courtyard of the royal palace at Berlin. The St George and his horse are of bronze; the dragon is formed of gilt plates of hammered iron. Kiss worked only in metal. The bad taste of the first half of the present century is strongly shown by many of the works of Theodore Kalidé, whose Bacchanal sprawling on a Panther's Back is a marvel of awkwardness of pose and absence of any feeling for beauty. Rietschel was perhaps the best German sculp- tor of this period, and produced work superior to that of his contemporaries, such as Haagen, Wichmann, Fischer, and Hiedel. Some revival of a better style is shown in some sculpture, especially reliefs, by Hahnel, whose chief works are at Dresden. Schwanthaler (1802-1848), who was largely patronized by King Louis of Bavaria, studied at Rome and was at first a feeble imitator of antique classic art, but later in life he developed a more romantic and pseudo-medizval style. By him are a large number of reliefs and statues in the Glyptothek at Munich and in the Walhalla, also the colossal but feeble bronze statue of Bavaria, in point of size one of the most ambitious works of modern times.! Since the beginning of the second half of the century the sculpture of Germany has made visible progress, and several living artists have produced works of merit and originality, far superior to the feeble imita- tions of classic art which for nearly a century destroyed all' possible vigour and individuality in the plastic pro- ductions of most European countries.?

Spain.—In the early medizval period the sculpture of northern Spain was much influenced by contemporary art in France. From the 12th to the 14th century many Twelfth French architects and sculptors visited and worked in to four- Spain. The cathedral of Santiago de Compostella pos- a sesses one of the grandest existing specimens in the world "™™ of late 12th-century architectonic sculpture ; this, though the work of a native artist, Mastei Mateo,' is thoroughly French in style; as recorded by an inscription on the front, it was completed in 1188. The whole of the western portal with its three doorways is covered with statues and reliefs, all richly decorated with colour, part of which still remains. Round the central arch are figures of the twenty-four elders, and in the tympanum a very noble relief of Christ in Majesty between Saints and Angels. As at Chartres, the jamb-shafts of the

doorways are decorated with standing statues of saints,—St James the elder, the patron of the church, being attached to the

1 In size, but not in merit, this enormous statue has recently been surpassed by the figure of America made in Paris and now (1886) being erected as a beacon at the entrance to the harbour of New York City.

2 On German sculpture see Foerster, Denkmale deutscher Baukunst, Leipsic, 1855 ; Wanderer, Adam Kraft and his School, Nuremberg, 1868; Rabe, Das Grabmal des J. von Brandenburg … von P. Vischer, Berlin, 1843; Reindel, Vischer's Shrine of St Sebaldus, Nuremberg, 1855 ; Liibke, Hist. of Sculpt., Eng. trans., London, 1872.

° A kneeling portrait-statue of Mateo is introduced at the back of

the central pier. 'his figure is now much revered by the Spanish peasants, and the head is partly worn away with kisses,

centuries.

Sixteenth

ITALIAN. |

central pillar. These noble figures, though treated in a somewhat rigid manner, are thoroughly subordinate to the main lines of the building. Their heads, with pointed beards and a fixed mechanical smile, together with the stiff drapery arranged in long narrow folds, recall the Aiginetan pediment sculpture of about 500 B.c. This appears strange at first sight, but the fact is that the works of the early Greek and the medieval Spaniard were both produced at a somewhat similar stage in two far distant periods of artistic development. In both cases plastic art was freeing itself from the bonds of a hieratic archaism, and had reached one of the last steps in a de- velopment which in the one case culminated in the per- fection of the Phidian age, and in the other led to the exquisitely beautiful yet simple and reserved art of the end of the 13th and early part of the 14th century,—the golden age of sculpture in France and England.

In the 14th century the silversmiths of Spain produced many works of sculpture of great size and technical power. One of the finest, by a Valencian called Peter Bernec, is the great silver retable at Gerona cathedral. It is divided into three tiers of statuettes and reliefs, richly framed in canopied niches, all of silver, partly cast and partly hammered.

In the 15th century an infusion of German influence was mixed with that of France, as may be seen in the very rich sculptural decorations which adorn the main door of Salamanca cathedral, the facade of S. Juan at Valladolid, and the church and cloisters of 8. Juan de los Reyes at Toledo, perhaps the most gorgeous examples of architectural sculpture in the world. The carved foliage of this period is of especial beauty and spirited execution ; realistic forms of plant-growth are mingled with other more conventional foliage in the most masterly manner. The very noble bronze monument of Archdeacon Pelayo (d. 1490) in Burgos cathedral was probably the work of Simon of Cologne, who was also architect of the Certosa at Miraflores, 2 miles from Burgos. The church of this monastery contains two of the most magnificently rich monuments in the world, especially the altar-tomb of King John IJ. and his queen by Gil de Siloe,—a perfect marvel of rich alabaster canopy-work and intricate under-cutting. The effigies have little merit.

In the early part of the 16th century a strong Italian

owing to the presence in Spain of the Florentine Torri- giano and other Italian artists. The magnificent tomb of Ferdinand and Isabella in Granada cathedral is a fine specimen of Italian Renaissance sculpture, somewhat similar in general form to the tomb of Sixtus IV. by Ant. Pollai- uolo in St Peter's, but half a century later in the style of its detail. It looks as if it had been executed by Torri- giano, but the design which he made for it is said to have been rejected. Some of the work of this period, though purely Italian in style, was produced by Spanish sculp- tors,—for example, the choir reliefs at Toledo cathedral, and those in the Colegio Mayor at Salamanca by Alonso Berruguete, who obtained his artistic training in Rome and Florence. Esteban Jordan, Gregorio Hernandez, and other Spanish sculptors produced a large nuniber of elabo- rate retables, carved in wood with subjects in relief and richly decorated in gold and colours. These

sumptuous masses of polychromatic sculpture resemble the 15th- century retables of Germany more than any Italian ex- amples, and were a sort of survival of an older medizval style. Alonso Cano (1600-1667), the painter, was re- markable for clever reaM®tic sculpture, very highly coloured and religious in style. Montafies, who died in 1614, was one of the ablest Spanish sculptors of his time. His finest works are the reliefs of the Madonna

SsCcURLPTUE &

567

and Saints on an altar in the university church of Seville, and in the cathedral, in the chapel of St Augustine, a very nobly designed Conception, modelled with great skill. In later times Spain has produced little or no sculpture of any merit.

Jtaly.—Till the great revival of plastic art took place in the middle of the 13th century, the sculpture of Italy was decidedly inferior to that of other more northern countries. Much of it was actually the work of northern sculptors,—as, for example, the very rude sculpture on the facade of S. Andrea at Pistoia, executed about 1186 by Gruamons and his brother Adeodatus.!

Maes Mert Mi

rl ot

Fig, 15.—Relief by Benedetto Antelami for the pulpit of Parma cathedral in 1178 ; Byzantine style.

relief by Antelami of Parma of the year 1178. Unlike the sculpture of the Pisani and later artists, these early figures are thoroughly secondary to the architecture they are de- signed to decorate; they are evidently the work of men who were architects first and sculptors in a secondary degree. After the 13th century the reverse was usually the case, and, as at the west end of Orvieto cathedral, the sculptured decorations are treated as being of primary importance, —not that the Italian sculptor-architect ever allowed

his statues or reliefs to weaken or damage their architectural surroundings, as is unfortunately the case with much modern sculpture. In southern Italy, during the 13th century, there existed a school of sculpture resembling that of France, owing probably to the Norman occupa- tion. The pulpit in the cathedral of Ravello, executed by Nicolaus di Bartolomeo di Foggia in 1272, is an import- ant work of this class; it is enriched with very noble sculpture, especially a large female head crowned with a richly foliated coronet, and combining lifelike vigour with largeness of style in a very remarkable way. The bronze doors at Monreale, Pisa, and elsewhere, which are among the chief works of plastic art in Italy during the 12th century, are described in MonrEALE and METAL-WoRK. The history of Italian sculpture of the best period is given to a great extent in the separate articles on the Pisani (g.v.) and other Italian artists. During the 13th century Rome and the central provinces of Italy produced very few sculptors of ability, almost the only men of note being the Cosmati (see Roms, vol. xx. p. 835).

During the 14th century Florence and the neighbouring cities were the chief centres of Italian sculpture, and there numerous sculptors of successively increasing artistic power lived and worked, till in the 15th century Florence had become the esthetic capital of the world, and reached a pitch of artistic wealth and perfection which Athens

1 The other finest examples of this early class of sculpture exist at Pisa, Parma, Modena, and Verona ; in most of them the old Byzantine influence is very strong.

Thir- teenth century.

Four- teenth century.

568

alone in its best days could have rivalled. The similarity between the plastic arts of Athens in the 5th or 4th cen- tury B.c. and of Florence in the 15th century is not one of analogy only. Though free from any touch of copyism, there are many points in the works of such men as Dona- tello, Luca della Robbia, and Vittore Pisanello which strongly recall the sculpture of ancient Greece, and suggest that, if a sculptor of the later Phidian school had been

surrounded by the same types of face and costume as those among which the Italians lived, he would have produced plastic works closely resembling those of the great Floren- tine masters. In the 14th century, in northern Italy, various schools of sculpture existed, especially at Verona and Venice, whose art differed widely from the contem- porary art of Tuscany ; but Milan and Pavia, on the other hand, possessed sculptors who followed closely the style of the Pisani. The chief examples of the latter class are the magnificent shrine of St Augustine in the cathedral of Pavia, dated 1362, and the somewhat similar shrine of Peter the Martyr (1339), by Balduccio of Pisa, in the church of St Eustorgio at Milan, both of white marble, decorated in the most lavish way with statuettes and subject reliefs. Many other fine pieces of the Pisan school exist in Milan. The well-known tombs of the Scaliger family at Verona show a more native style of design, and in general form, though not in detail, suggest the influence of transalpine Gothic. In Venice the northern and almost French character of much of the early 15th- century sculpture is more strongly marked, especi- ally in the noble figures in high relief which de- corate the lower story and anglesof thedoge's palace; these are mostly the work | of a Venetian named Bar- tolomeo Bon. A magni- |% ficent marble tympanum |} relief by Bon has recently | been added to the South || Kensington Museum ; it has a noble colossal figure of the Madonna, who shel- ters under her mantle a number of kneeling wor- shippers ; the background | is enriched with foliage |K@} and heads, forming a |} "Jesse tree," designed with greatdecorative skill. The cathedral of Como, |p built at the very end of [Fai |p the 15th century, is de- |g eS corated with good sculp- lk Gi, ,| tureof almost Gothicstyle, but on the whole rather dull and mechanical in de- tail,like much of the sculp- ture in the extreme north of Italy. A large quantity a of rich sculpture was pro- Fic. 16.—Florentine marble effigy in duced in Naples during ul relief

no great merit either in design or in execution, The lofty monument of King Robert (1350), behind the high altar of 8. Chiara, and other tombs in the same church

1 See Ruskin, Stones of Venice ; and Mothes, Gesch. der Bauk. u. Bildh. Venedigs, Leipsic, 1859.

So i

S

SCULPT. UU Be

[ITALIAN.

are the most conspicuous works of this period. Very beautiful sepulchral effigies in low relief were produced in many parts of Italy, especially at Florence. The tomb of Lorenzo Acciaioli (see fig. 16), in the Certosa near Florence, is a fine example of about the year 1400, which has absurdly been attributed to Donatello. Rome was very remarkable during the 14th century for its extraordinary poverty in the production of sculpture. The cluinsy effigies at the north-east of S. Maria in Trastevere are striking ex- amples of the degradation of the plastic art there about the year 1400; and it was not till nearly the middle of the century that the arrival of able Florentine sculptors, such as Filarete, Mino da Fiesole, and the Pollaiuoli, initiated a brilliant era of artistic activity, which, how- ever, for about a century continued to depend on the presence of sculptors from Tuscany and other northern provinces. It was not, in fact, till the period of full decad- ence had begun that Rome itself produced any notable artists.

For the great sculptors of Florence during the 14th and 15th centuries we refer th. # reader to the separate bio- ” ; graphical notices on the sub- Fic. 17.—Statue of St George by ject. The Pisani and Arnolfo Donatello, outside the church of del Cambio were succeeded Or San Michele at Florence.

by Orcagna and others, who carried on and developed the

Fia. 18.—Bronze colossal statue of Colleoni at Venice, modelled by Verrocchio and cast by Leopardi.

great lessons these pioneers of the Renaissance had taught. Ghiberti, the sculptor of the world-famed bap-

Fifteenth century.

[FrALIAN. SCULPTU RE 569 ‘horence. tistery gates ; Donatello, the master of delicate relief and

The 16th century was one of transition to this state of Sixteenth dignified realism (see fig. 17); Luca della Robbia, with

degradation, but nevertheless produced many sculptors of century.

his classic purity of style and sweetness of expression, came next in order. Unsensual beauty elevated by reli- gious spirit was attained in the highest degree by Mino da Fiesole, the two Rossellini, Benedetto da Maiano, and other sculptors of Florence. Two of the noblest equestrian statues the world has probably ever seen are the Gattamelata statue at Padua by Donatello and the statue of Colleoni at Venice by Verrocchio and Leopardi (see fig. 18). A third, which was probably of equal beauty, was modelled in clay by Leonardo da Vinci, but it no longer exists. Finally came Michel- angelo, who raised the sculp- ture of the modern world to its highest pitch of magni- ficence, and at the same time sowed the seeds of its rapidly approaching de- cline; the head of his David(see fig.19) is a work of unrivalled force and dig- nity. His rivals and imitators,

Baccio Bandi- Fis. 19.—Head of the colossal statue of David by salt Cieceacn Michelangelo at Florence.

2

della Porta, Montelupo, Ammanati, Vincenzo de' Rossi, and others, copied and exaggerated his faults without possessing a touch of his gigantic genius. In other parts of Italy, such as Pavia, the traditions of the 15th century lasted longer, though gradually fading. The statuary and reliefs which make the Certosa near Pavia one of the most gorgeous buildings in the world are free from the influence of Michelangelo, which at Florence and Rome was overwhelming. Though much of the sculp- ture was begun in the second half of the 15th century, the greater part was not executed till much later. The magnificent tomb of the founder, Giovanni Galeazzo Vis- conti, was not completed till about 1560, and is a gorgeous example of the style of the Renaissance grown weak from excess of richness and from loss of the simple purity of the art of the 15th century. Everywhere in this wonder- ful building the fault is the same; and the growing love of luxury and display, which was the curse of the time, is reflected in the plastic decorations of the whole church. The old religious spirit had died out and

was succeeded by unbelief or by an affected revival of paganism. Monu- ments to ancient Romans, such as those to the two Plinys on the facade of Como cathedral, or '"'heroa" to unsaintly mortals, such as that erected at Rimini by Sigismondo Pandolfo in honour of Isotta,! grew up side by side with shrines and churches dedicated to the saints. We have seen how the youthful vigour of the Christian faith vivified for a time the dry bones of expiring classic art, and now the decay of this saine belief brought with it the destruc- tion of all that was most valuable in medieval sculpture. Sculpture like the other arts became the bond-slave of the

. rich and ceased to be the natural expression of a whole

people. Though for a long time in Italy great technical skill continued to exist, the vivifying spirit was dead, and at last a dull scholasticism or a riotous extravagance of design became the leading characteristics.

1 See Yriarte, Rimini au XVme Stécle, Paris, 1880; also the article RIMINI.

great ability who were not wholly crushed by the declining taste of their time. John of Douay (1524-1608), usually known as Giovanni da Bologna, one of the ablest, lived and worked almost entirely in Italy. His bronze statue of Mercury flying upwards, in the Uffizi, one of his finest works, is full of life and movement. By him also is the Carrying off of a Sabine Woman in the Loggia de' Lanzi. His great fountain at Bologna, with two tiers of boys and mermaids, sur- mounted by a colossal statue of Neptune, a very noble work, is composed of archi- tectural features combined withsculpture, and is remark- able for beauty of proportion. He also cast the fine bronze equestrian statue of Cosimo de' Medici at Florence and the very richly decorated west door of Pisa cathedral, the latter much injured by the over-crowding of its orna- ments and the want of sculp- turesque dignity in the fig- ures ; it is a feeble copy of Ghiberti's noble productior. One of Giovanni's best works, a group of two nude figures ° fighting, is now lost. A fine a

copy in lead existed till Fia. 20.—Group by Giovanni da Bo- recently in the front quad- Ju femetym Brass Co) rangle of Brasenose Col-

lege, Oxford, of which it was the chief ornament (see fig. 20). In 1881 it was sold for old lead by the master and fellows of the college, and was immediately melted down by the plumber who bought it— a quite irreparable loss, as the only other existing copy is very inferior ; the destruction was an utterly inexcusable act of vandalism. The sculpture on the western facade of the church at Loreto and the ela- borate bronze gates of the Santa Casa are works of great technical merit by Girolamo ¢ Lombardo and his sons, about the middle of the 16th cen- tury. Benvenuto Cellini (1500- 1569), though in the main a poor sculptor, produced one work of great beauty and dig- nity,—the colossal bronze Per- seus at Florence (see fig. 21). His large bust of Cosimo de' Medici in the Bargello is mean and petty in style.

by Michelangelo ; the finest are a Piet&' in 8. Maria Pom- posa and a large Descent from the Cross in 8. Francesco,

Fiesole. Many of Bastianini's works are hardly to be dis- tinguished from genuine sculpture of the 15th century, and in some cases enormous prices have been paid for

both at Modena. The colossal bronze seated statue of Julius III. at Perugia, cast in 1555 by Vincenzo Danti, is one of the best portrait-figures of the time.

ITALIAN, |

Beven- teenth century.

The chief sculptor and architect of the 17th century was the Neapolitan Bernini (1598-1680), who, with the aid of a large school of assistants, produced an almost incredible quantity of sculpture of the most varying degrees of merit and hideousness. His chief early group, the Apollo and

Daphne in the Borghese casino, is a work of wonderful technical skill and delicate high finish, combined with soft beauty and grace, though too pictorial in style. In later life Bernini turned out work of brutal coarseness,! designed in a thoroughly unsculpturesque spirit. The churches of Rome, the colonnade of St Peter's, and the bridge of S. Angelo are crowded with his clumsy colossal figures, half draped in wildly fluttering garments,—perfect models of what is worst in the plastic art. And yet his works re- ceived perhaps more praise than those of any other sculptor of any age, and after his death a scaffolding was erected outside the bridge of S, Angelo in order that people might walk round and admire his rows of feeble half-naked angels. For all that, Bernini was a man of undoubted talent, and in a better period of art would have been a sculptor of the first rank; many of his portrait-busts are works of great vigour and dignity, quite free from the mannered extravagance of his larger sculpture. Stefano Maderna (1571-1636) was the ablest of his contempo- raries ; his clever and much admired statue, the figure of the dead S. Cecilia under the high altar of her basilica, is chiefly remarkable for its deathlike pose and the realistic treatment of the drapery. Another clever sculptor was Alessandro Algardi of Bologna (1598 ?-1654).

Fia, 22,—Colossal marble group of Theseus and a centaur, by Canova, at Vienna.

them under the supposition that they were medieval pro- ductions. These frauds were, however, perpetrated without Bastianini's knowledge.

Scandinavia, déc.—By far the greatest sculptor of the Scandi. classical revival was Bertel Thorwaldsen (1770-1844), an navian Icelander by race, whose boyhood was spent at Copenhagen, a

Eight- eenth century.

In the next century at Naples Queirolo, Corradini, and Sammartino produced a number of statues, now in the tors

chapel of 8. Maria de' Sangri, which are extraordinary

-examples of wasted labour and ignorance of the simplest

canons of plastic art. These are marble statues enmeshed in nets or covered with thin veils, executed with almost deceptive realism, perhaps the lowest stage of tricky de- gradation into which the sculptor's art could possibly fall.? In the 18th century Italy was naturally the headquarters of the classical revival, which spread thence throughout most of Europe. Canova (1757-1822), a Venetian by birth, who spent most of his life in Rome, was perhaps the leading spirit of this movement, and became the most popular sculptor of his time. His work is very unequal in merit, mostly dull and uninteresting in style, and is occa- sionally marred by a meretricious spirit very contrary to the true classic feeling. His group of the Three Graces, the Hebe, and the very popular Dancing-Girls, copies of which in plaster disfigure the stairs of countless modern hotels and other buildings on the Continent, are typical examples of Canova's worst work. Some of his sculpture is designed with far more of the purity of antique art; his finest work is the colossal group of Theseus slaying a Centaur at Vienna (see fig. 22). Canova's attempts at Christian sculpture are singularly unsuccessful, as, for ex- ample, his pretentious monument to Pope Clement XIII.

and who settled in Rome in 1797, when Canova's fame was at its highest point. He produced an immense quantity of groups, single statues, and reliefs, chiefly Greek and Roman deities, many of which show more of the true spirit of antique art than has been attained by any other modern sculptor. His group of the Three Graces is for purity of form and sculpturesque simplicity far superior to that of the same subject by Canova. No sculptor's works have ever been exhibited as a whole in so perfect a manner as Thorwaldsen's; they are collected in a fine building which has been specially erected to contain them at Copenhagen; he is buried in the courtyard. The Swedish sculptors Tobias Sergell and Johann Bystrém be- longed to the classic school ; the latter followed in Thorwald- sen's footsteps. Another Swede named Fogelberg was famed chiefly for his sculptured subjects taken from Norse mythology. W. Bissen and Jerichau of Denmark have produced some able works,—the former a fine equestrian statue of Frederick VII. at Copenhagen, and the latter a very spirited and widely known- group of a Man attacked by a Panther.

Within recent years Russia, Poland, and other countries have produced many sculptors, most of whom belong to

the modern German or French schools. Rome is still a America,

in St Peter's at Rome, that to Titian at Venice, and favourite place of residence for the sculptors of all coun- Russia,

Alfieri's tomb in the Florentine church of §. Croce. Fiesole C.

has in this century produced one sculptor of great talent, named Bastianini. He worked in the style of the great 15th-century Florentine sculptors, and followed especially the methods of his distinguished fellow-townsman Mino da

- *The Ludovisi group of Pluto carrying off Proserpine is a striking example, and shows Bernini's deterioration of style in later life. It has nothing in common with the Cain and Abel or the Apollo and Daphne of his earlier years.*

? In the present century an Italian sculptor named. Monti won much popular repute by similar unworthy tricks; some veiled statues by him in the London Exhibition of 1851 were greatly admired.

tries, but can hardly be said to possess a school of its own. The sculptors of America almost invariably study at one of the great European centres of plastic art, especially in Paris. Hiram Powers of Cincinnati, who produced one work of merit, a nude female figure, called the Greek Slave, exhibited in London in 1851, lived and worked in Florence. A number of living American sculptors now reside both there and in Rome.4

*3 See Eug. Plon, Vie de Thorwaldsen, Paris, 1867. – * On Italian and Spanish sculpture, see Vasari, Trattato della Scul-*

Wire per-

- Pointing , the H marble,

6

i

so UL Priv i

TECHNICAL METHODS OF THE SCULPTOR.

The production of bronze statues by the ctre perdue process is described in the article METAL-Work, vol. xvi. p. 72; this is now but little practised out of Paris.

For the execution of a marble statue the sculptor first models a preliminary sketch on a small scale in clay or wax. He then, in the case of a life-sized or colossal statue, has a sort of iron skeleton set up, with stout bars for the arms and legs, fixed in the pose of the future figure. This is placed on a stand with a revolving top, so that the sculptor can easily turn the whole model round and thus work with the light on any side of it. Over this iron skeleton well-tempered modelling-clay is laid and is modelled into shape by the help of wood and bone tools; without the ironwork a soft clay figure, if more than a few inches high, would collapse with its own weight and squeeze the lower part out of shape. While the modelling is in progress it is necessary to keep the clay moist and plastic, by squirting water on to it with a sort of garden syringe eapped with a finely perforated rose. When the sculptor is not at work the whole figure is kept wrapped up in damp cloths. A modern improvement is to mix the modelling-elay, not with water, but with stearin and glyeerin; this, while keeping the clay soft and plastic, has the great advantage of not being wet, and so the sculptor avoids the chill and consequent risk of rheumatism which follow from a constant manipulation of wet clay. When the clay model is finished it is cast in plaster. A "piece-mould"? is formed by applying patches of wet plaster of Paris all over the clay statue in such a way that they can be removed piecemeal from the model, and then be fitted together again, forming a complete hollow mould. The inside is then rinsed out with plaster and water mixed to the consistency of eream till a skin of plaster is formed all over the inner surface of the mould, and thus a hollow cast is made of the whole figure. The "piece-monld" is then taken to pieces and the casting set free. If skilfully done by a good formatore or moulder the plaster cast is a perfect facsimile of the original clay, very slightly disfigured by a series of lines showing the joints in the piece-mould, the sections of which cannot be made to fit together with absolute precision. Many sculptors have their clay

model cast in plaster before the modelling is quite finished, as they prefer to put the finishing touches on the plastcr east, —good plaster being a very easy and pleasant substance to work on.

The next stage is to copy the plaster model in marble. The model is set on a large block ealled a "scale stone," while the marble for the future statue is set upon another similar block. The plaster model is then covered with a series of marks, placed on all the most salient parts of the body, and the front of each '< scale stone" is covered with another series of points, exactly the same on both stones. An ingenious instrument called a pointing machine, which has arms ending in metal points or "necdles" that move in ball-soeket joints, is placed between the model and the marble block. Two of its arms are then applied to the model, one touching a point on the scale stone while the other touches a mark on the figure. The arms are fixed by screws in this position, and the machine is then revolved to the marble block, and set with its lower needle touching the corresponding point on the scale stone. The upper needle, which is arranged to slide back on its own axis, cannot reach the corresponding point on the statue because the marble block is in the way; a hole is then drilled into the block at the place and in the direction indicated by the needle, till the latter can slide forward so as to reach a point sunk in the marble block.exactly eorresponding to the point it touched on the plaster mould. This process is repeated both on the model and on the marble block till the latter is drilled with a number of holes, the bottoms of which correspond in position to the number of marks made on the surface of the model. A comparatively un-

aaa eee tura, Florence, 1568, vol. i., and his Vite dei Pittort, éc., ed. Milanesi, Florence, 1880 ; Rumohr, talienische Forschungen, Leipsic, 1827-31 ; Dohme, Kunst und Kiinstler Italiens, Leipsic, 1879; Perkins, Tuscan Sculptors, London (18665), Ttalian Sculptors (1868), and Hand-book of Italian Sculpture (1883) ; Robinson, Italian Sculpture, London, 1862; Gruner, Marmor-Bildwerke der Pisaner, Leipsic, 1858; Ferreri, L' Arco di S. Agostino, Pavia, 1832 ; Symonds, Renaissance in Italy, London, 1877, vol. iii. ; Crowe and Cavalcaselle, Hist. of Painting in Italy, London, 1866, vol. i.; Selvatico, Arch. e Scultura in Venezia, Venice, 1847 ; Ricci, Storia dell' Arch. in Italia, Modena, 1857-60; Street (Arundel Society), Sepulchral Monuments of Italy, 1878; Gozzini, Monumenti Sepolcralt della

Toscana, Florence, 1819 ; De Montault, La Sculpture Religieuse a Rome, Rome, 1870—a French edition (with improved text) of Tosi and Beechio, Monumenti Sacri di Roma, Rome, 1842; Cavallueci and Molinier, Les Della Rodbia, Paris, 1884; Cicognara, Monumenti di Venezia, Venice, 1838-40; Burges and Didron, Tconographie des Chapitaux du Palats Ducal & Venise, Paris, 1857; Richter, " Sculpture of S. Mark's at Venice," Macmillan's Mag., June 1880; Temanza, Vite degli Scultort Veneziant, Venice, 1778; Diedo and Zanotto, Monumenti di Venezia, Milan, 1839; Schulz, Denkméler der Kunst in Unter-Italien, Dresden, 1860; Brinckmann, Die Sculptur von B. Cellini, Leipsic, 1867; Hug. Plon,- Cellint, sa. Vie, &e., Paris, 1882 ; Moses and Cicognara, Works of Canova, London, 1824-28 ; Piroli, Fontana, and others, a series of engraved Plates of Canova's Works, s.l.eta.; Giulliot, Les Artistes en Espagne, Paris, 1870; Carderera y Solano, Iconografia Espafiola, Siglo XI.-XVII., Madrid, 1855-64 ; Monwmentos Arquitectonicos de Espasia, published by the Spanish Government, 1859, and still in progress.

1 Moulds made in one or few pieces, from which the cast can only be extracted by destroying thé mould, are called "spoil-moulds." A large number of casts can be made from a " piece-mould," but only one from a "spoil-mould."

oF

*skilled scarpellino or *' chisel-man" then sets to work and cuts away*

the marble till he has reached the bottoms of all the holes, beyond

which he must not cut. The statue is thus roughly blocked out,

and a more skilled scarpellino begins to work. Partly by eye and The scar-
partly with the constant help of the pointing machine, which is pellino. used
to give any required measurements, the workman almost com-

pletes the marble statue, leaving only the finishing touches to be

done by the sculptor.

Among the ancient Greeks and Romans and in the medisval Polish on period it was the custom to give the nude parts of a marble statue marble. a considerable degree of polish, which really suggests the somewhat glossy surface of the human skin very much better than the dull loaf-sugar-like surface which is left on the marble by modern sculptors. This high polish still remains in parts of the pedimental figures from the Parthenon, where, at the back, they have been specially protected from the weather. The Hermes of the Vatican Belvidere is a remarkable instance of the preservation of this polish. Michelangelo carried the practice further still, and gave eertain parts of some of his statues, such as the Moses, the highest possible polish in order to produce high lights just where he wanted them ; the artistic legitimacy of this may perhaps be donbted, and in weaker hands it might degenerate into mere trickery. It is, however, much to be desired that modern seulptors should to some extent at least adopt the classical practice, and by a slight but uniform polish remove the disagreeable crystalline grain from all the nude parts of the marble.

A rougher method of obtaining fixed points to measure from was oceasionally employed by Michelangelo and earlier sculptors. They

immersed the model in a tank of water, the water being gradually allowed to run out, and thus by its sinking level it gave a series of

contour lines on any required number of planes. In some cases

Michelangelo appears to have cut his statue out of the marble with-

out previously making a model—a most marvellous feat of skill, In modelling bas-reliefs the modern sculptor usually applies the Relief clay to a slab of slate on which the design is sketched ; the slate seulp-

forms the background of the figures, and thus keeps the relief ture.

absolutely true to one plane. This method is one of the causes of

the dulness and want of spirit so conspicuous in most modern

sculptured reliefs. In the best Greek examples there is no ab- solutely fixed plane surface for the backgrounds. In one place, to gain an effective shadow, the Greek sculptor would cut below the average surface ; in another he would leave the ground at a higher plane, exactly as happened to suit each portion of his design. Other differences from the modern mechanical rules can easily be seen by a careful examination of the Parthenon frieze and other Greek reliefs. Though the word' "bas-relief" is now often applied to reliefs of all degrees of projection from the ground, it should, of course, only be used for those in which the projection is slight ; "basso," "mezzo," and "alto rilievo" express three different degrees of salience. Very low relief is but little used by modern sculptors, mainly because it is much easier to obtain striking effects with the help of more projection.. Donatello and other 15th- century Italian artists showed the most wonderful skill in their treatment of very low relief. One not altogether legitimate method of gaining effect was practised by some medieval sculptors: the relief itself was kept very low, but was "stilted" or projected from the ground, and then undercut all round the outline. A 15th-century tabernacle for the host in the Brera at Milan is a very beautiful example of this method, which as a rule is not pleasing in effect, since it looks rather as if the figures were cut out in cardboard and then stuck on.

The practice of most modern sculptors is to do very little to the Sculp- marble with their own hands; some, in fact, have never really tors' as- learnt how to earve, and thus the finished statue is often very sistants. dull and lifeless in comparison with the clay model. Most of the great sculptors of the Middle Ages left little or nothing to be done by an assistant; Michelangelo especially did the whole of the earving with his own hands, and when beginning on a block of marble attacked it with such vigorous strokes of the hammer that large pieces of marble flew about in every direction. But skill as a earver, though very desirable, is not absolutely neccssary for a sculptor. If he casts in bronze by the cire perdue process he may produce the most perfect plastic works without touching anything harder than the modelling-wax. The sculptor in marble, however, must be able to carve a hard substance if he is to be master of his art. Unhappily some modern sculptors not only leave all mani- pulation of the marble to their workmen, but they also employ men to do their modelling, the supposed sculptor supplying little or nothing but his name to the work. In

some cases seulptors who are neither one nor the other, but who suffer under an excess of popularity, 'are induced to employ aid of this kind on account of their undertaking more work than any one man could possibly accomplish,—a state of things which is necessarily very hostile to the interests of true art. As a rule, however, the sculptor's scar- pellino, though he may and often does attain the highest skill as a carver and can copy almost anything with wonderful fidelity, seldom develops into an original artist. The popular admiration

572

for pieces of clever trickery in sculpture, such as the carving of the open meshes of a fisherman's net, or a chain with each link free and movable, would perhaps be diminished if it were known that such work as this is invariably done, not by the sculptor, but by the scarpellino. Unhappily at the present day there is, especially in England, little appreciation of what is valuable in plastic art; there is probably no other civilized country where the state does so little to give practical support to the advancement of monumental and deco- rative sculpture on a large scale—the most important branch of the art—which it is hardly in the power of private persons to further.

sc U—

sScU

Literature.—On the general history of Christian sculpture, see Agincourt, Histoire de U Art, Paris, 1823; Du Sommerard, Les Arts aw Moyen-Age, Paris. 1839-46 ; Cicognara, Storia della Scultura, Prato, 1823-44 ; Westmacott, Hand- book of Sculpture, Edinburgh, 1864; Liibke, History of Sculpture, Eng. trans., London, 1872; Ruskin, Aratra Pentelici (six lectures on sculpture), London, 1872; Viardot, Les Merveilles de la Sculpture, Paris, 1869; Arsenne and Denis, Manuel… du Sculpteur, Paris, 1858 ; Clarac, Musée de Sculpture, Paris, 1826-53 ; Demmin, Encyclopédie des Beaux-Arts plastiques, Paris, 1872-75, vol. iii. ; Didron, @uvres de Bronze du Moyen-Age, Paris, 1859; Fortnum, Bronzes in the South Kensington Museum, 1877: Finochietti, Scultura in Legno, Florence, 1873 ; Anon., Ornati del Coro di S. Pietro de' Cassinesi a Perugia, Rome, 1845. See also the lists of works given in the preceding pages, and those in the articles on individual sculptors and in that on METAL-work. (J. H. M.)

——

SCURVY, or Scorzurus, a morbid condition of the blood, manifesting itself by marked impairment of the nutritive functions and by the occurrence of hemorrhagic extravasations in the tissues of the body, and depending on the absence of certain essential ingredients in the food.

In former times this disease was extremely common among sailors, and gave rise to a frightful amount of mortality. It is now, however, of rare occurrence at sea, its cause being well understood and its prevention readily secured by simple measures. Scurvy has also frequently broken out among soldiers on campaign, in beleaguered cities, as well as among communities in times of scarcity, and in prisons, workhouses, and other public institutions. In all such instances it has been found to depend closely upon the character and amount of the food. It has been supposed that a too limited diet, either in amount or variety, might induce the disease; but an overwhelming weight of evidence goes to prove that the cause resides in the inadequate supply or the entire want of fresh vegetable matter. The manner in which this produces scurvy is not quite clear. Some high authorities have held that the insufficient supply of potash salts, in which vegetables are rich, is the procuring cause ; but it has been found that the mere administration of these salts will neither prevent nor cure scurvy. Hence,

while it is probable that this may be one of the factors concerned in the production of the disease, the want of other vegetable constituents, especially vegetable acids, is of still greater importance. Besides this essential defect, a diminution in the total amount of food, the large use of salted meat or fish, and all causes of a depressing kind, such as exposure, anxiety, bad hygiene, &c., will powerfully contribute to the development of the disease. See Dixrerics, vol. vii. pp. 207-208.

The symptoms of scurvy come on gradually, and its onset is not marked by any special indications beyond a certain failure of strength, most manifest on making effort, Breathlessness and exhaustion are thus easily induced, and there exists a corresponding mental depression. The countenance acquires a sallow or dusky hue; the eyes are sunken ; while pains in the muscles of the body and limbs are constantly present. The appetite and digestion may be unimpaired in the earlier stages and the tongue comparatively clean, but the gums are tender and the breath offensive almost from the first. These preliminary symp- toms may continue for weeks, and in isolated cases may readily escape notice, but can scarcely fail to attract atten- tion where they affect large numbers of men. In the further stages of the disease all these phenomena are aggravated in a high degree and the physical and mental prostration soon becomes extreme. The face looks haggard; the gums are livid, spongy, ulcerating, and bleeding; the teeth are loosened and drop out; and the breath is excessively fetid. Extravasations of blood now take place in the skin and other textures. These may be small like the petechial spots of purpura (see Purpura), but are often of large amount and cause swellings of the muscles in which they occur, having the appearance of extensive bruises and tending to become hard and brawny. 'These extravasa- tions are most common in the muscles of the lower extremities ; but they may be formed anywhere, and may

easily be produced by very slight pressure upon the skin or by injuries to it. In addition, there are bleedings from mucous membranes, such as those of the nose, eyes, and alimentary or respiratory tracts, while effusions of blood- stained fluid take place into the pleural, pericardial, or peritoneal cavities. Painful, extensive, and destructive ulcers are also apt to break out in the limbs. Peculiar disorders of vision have been uoticed, particularly night- blindness (nyctalopia), but they are not invariably present, nor

specially characteristic of the disease. The further progress of the malady is marked by profound exhaustion, with a tendency to syncope, and with various complications, such as diarrhoea and pulmonary or kidney troubles, any or all of which may bring about a fatal result. On the other hand, even in desperate cases, recovery may be hope- fully anticipated when the appropriate remedy can be obtained. The composition of the blood is materially altered in scurvy, particularly as regards its albumen and its red corpuscles, which are diminished, while the fibrine is increased.

No disease is more amenable to treatment both as re- gards prevention and cure than scurvy, the single remedy of fresh vegetables or some equivalent securing both these ends. Potatoes, cabbages, onions, carrots, turnips, «e., and most fresh fruits, will be found of the greatest service for this purpose. Lime juice and lemon juice are re- cognized as equally efficacious, and even vinegar in the absence of these will be of some assistance. The regulated administration of lime juice in the British navy, which has been practised since 1795, has had the effect of virtually extinguishing scurvy in the service, while similar regula- tions introduced by the British Board of Trade in 1865 have had a like beneficial result as regards the mercantile marine. It is only when these regulations have not been fully carried out, or when the supply of lime juice has become exhausted, that scurvy among sailors has been noticed in recent times. Besides the administration of lime or lemon juice and the use of fresh meat, milk, &e., which are valuable adjuvants, the local and constitutional conditions require the attention of the physician. The ulcers of the gums and limbs can be best treated by stimu- lating astringent applications; the hard swellings, which are apt to continue long, may be alleviated by fomenta- tions and frictions ; while the anemia and debility are best overcome by the continued administration of iron tonics, aided by fresh air and other measures calculated to pro- mote the general health.

SCUTAGE or Escuace was one of the forms of knight- service (see KnicHTHoop, Rea Esrarn). It was prac- tically a composition for personal service. When levied on a knight's fee it was called scutage uncertain, as its amount depended upon the present needs of the crown. Scutage certain was a socage tenure, and consisted in the payment of a sum fixed in amount and payable at regular times. Scutage appears to have been first imposed on the

occasion of the Toulouse War in 1159. Magna Charta (§ 12) forbade the levy of scutage unless per commune con- silium regni. It appears to have fallen into disuse in the reign of Edward IL, and was finally done away with by the Act abolishing feudal tenures (12 Car. IL. c. 24).

SCUTARI (Turkish, Uskidar), anciently Chrysopolis, a seaport town of Turkey in Asia, on the eastern shore of the Bosphorus, opposite Constantinople (see plan, vol. vi. p. 305), of which it is regarded as a suburb. Climbing the slopes of several hills in the form of an amphitheatre, its houses generally painted in red, distinguished by a number of mosques adorned with numerous minarets, pos- sessing some fine bazaars and public baths, and merging farther inland into burying-grounds, gardens, and villas, Scutari presents a very picturesque appearance, especially when viewed from the bridge of the Golden Horn or ap- proached from the Straits of Constantinople right in front of its most prominent point. The inhabitants are largely engaged in the manufacture of saddlery and silk, muslin, and cotton stuffs; the town also contains granaries and is prized as a fruit-market, more particularly for grapes, lemons, and figs. The population is estimated at 60,000 (entirely Mohammedan, with the exception of some Jews). The streets, especially the main street leading from the pier to the barracks, are in general much wider than those of Constantinople. The city includes eight mosques. Behind the landing-place is the Bijiik Jami (great mosque), sur- mounted by a cupola and a minaret and presenting terraces mammillated by small leaden domes. The centre of the square is adorned by a fountain of simple architecture. The mosque of Selim IIL., farther in the interior of the city, is likewise flanked by two minarets and surmounted by a cupola. The most elegant mosque, however, is the Valide Jami or mosque of the dowager sultana, surmounted by two minarets, built in 1547 by the daughter of Solyman. Another prominent mosque, on the right of the main street and south of Biijiik Jami, is Jeni Jami (new mosque). Other noticeable buildings are the barracks built by Selim IIL., forming a handsome and vast quadrangle surmounted by a tower at each angle, and whose corridors, &c., are calcu- lated to have an aggregate length of 4 miles; an old large red building now used as a military hospital, and during the Crimean War as a hospital for the English sick and wounded ; a

seraglio of the sultans; a convent of howling dervishes, a simple wooden structure of two stories front- ing a small cemetery. Other business quarters of the town deserving mention are Jeni Mahalle (new quarter) and the Dohanjilar Mejdani (tobacco merchants' square). The most characteristic feature, however, of Scutari is its immense cemetery, the largest and most beautiful of all the cemeteries in and around Constantinople, extending over more than 3 miles of undulating plain behind the town.! In the centre of the ground rises the magnificent dome, supported by six marble pillars, which Sultan Mohammed erected in memory of his favourite horse. Close to the barracks, on the Bosphorus, the scene of Miss Nightingale's labours, 8000 English dead are over- shadowed bya large granite obelisk. Immediately behind the town is the mountain of Bulgurlu clad in evergreen savins and red beeches, one of the plateaus of which is a favourite holiday resort. Its summit commands a very extensive view. In the plain of Haidar Pasha close by, between the cemetery and Kadikoi (judge's village, anciently Chalcedon), the English army lay encamped during the Crimean War. In front of Scutari, on a low-

1 The cemetery is intersected with numerous paved alleys, and the tombstones are inscribed with verses of the Koran gilded on a dark blue ground and bearing each simply the name of the deceased. The monuments of the men are distinguished each by a turban, those of the women each by a lotus leaf. The nature of the carved turban indicates the rank of the deceased and the fashion of the time to which it refers, so that the tombstones present the sculptured history of the Mohammedan head-dress from the date of the Turkish conquest. Each corpse is allowed a separate grave, never desecrated either by axe or spade. This cemetery lying in Asiatic ground is on that account

the more desired as a burial-place by pious Mahommedans, and holds half the generations of Stamboul (probably some 3,000,000 persons).

lying rock almost level with the water and about a cable's length from the shore, rises a white tower 90 feet high, now used as a lighthouse, called " Leander's Tower," and by the Turks Kiz-kulessi, or the " Maiden's Tower." The first printing press in Turkey was set up at Scutari in 1723.

Its ancient name Chrysopolis most probably has reference to the fact that there the Persian tribute was collected and reposited, as at a later date the Athenians levied there too a tenth on the ships passing from the Euxine. Its more modern name of Uskiidar, signifying a courier who conveys the royal orders from station to station, commemorates the fact that formerly Scutari was the post station for Asiatic couriers, as it is still the great rendezvous and point of departure of caravans arriving from and destined for Syria, Persia, and other parts of Asia, and the spot whence all travellers and pilgrims from Constantinople to the East begin their journeys.

SCUTARI (Turkish, Scodra; Slavic, Skadar), the capital of North Albania, at the south end of the lake of the same name, with a population of 24,500 in 1880 (mostly Mohammedans). There is only one street with any pretensions to regularity. The straggling town is built on the low flat promontory formed by the Bojana, which takes off the waters of the lake to the Adriatic, and the river which flows into the lake after crossing the plain between Scutari and the mountains of Biskassi. In winter the town is often flooded by the Bojana. The mosques and minarets are insignificant; the handsomest of the churches is the Catholic church at the north-east end. In the background is an old Venetian fortress perched on a lofty rock. The town is favourably situated for commerce, being connected by the Bojana with the Adriatic, whence its boats carry the products which descend by the Drina to the mountaineers in exchange for their wool, grain, and dyeing and building woods. There are some manufac- tures of arms and of cotton stuffs. In 1884 330 ships of 123,923 tons entered the port and 325 ships of 123,713 tons cleared.

Livy relates that Scodra was chosen as capital by the Illyrian king Gentius, who was here besieged in 168 B.c., and carried cap- tive to Rome. In the 7th century Scutari fell into the hands of the Servians, from whom it was wrested by the Venetians, and finally, in 1479, the Turks acquired it by treaty. arly in 1885 a beginning was made with the construction of a highway from the roadstead of San Giovanni de' Medici to Scutari.

SCYLAX of Caryanda in Caria was employed by Darius I. to explore the course of the Indus. He started from Afghanistan and is said by Herodotus (iv. 44) to have reached the sea and then sailed to the Gulf of Suez (comp.

Pursta, vol. xviii. p. 569). Scylax wrote an account of his explorations, which is referred to by Aristotle and other ancient writers, but must have been lost pretty early, and probably also a history of the Carian hero Heraclides, who distinguished himself in the revolt against Darius." But Suidas, who mentions the second work, confounds the old Scylax with a much later author, who wrote a refuta- tion of the history of Polybius, and is presumably identical with Scylax of Halicarnassus, a statesman and astrologer, the friend of Paneetius spoken of by Cicero (De Diw., ii. 42). Neither of these, however, can be the author of the Per- plus of the Mediterranean, which has come down to us under the name of Scylax of Caryanda in several MSS., of which the archetype is at Paris. This work is little more than a sailor's handbook of places and distances all round the coast of the Mediterranean and its branches, and then along the outer Libyan coast as far as the Carthaginians traded ; but various notices of towns and the states to which they belong enable us to fix the date with consider- able precision. Niebuhr gave the date 352-348 B.c., others bring it down a year or two later, and C. Miiller as late as 338-335, which is only possible if the writer's informa- tion was sometimes rather stale. See the discussion in Miiller's edition (Geog. Gr. Min., vol. i., Paris, 1855), and against him Unger, in Philologus, 1874, p. 29 sq., who con- Game Cre, OS ee

2 See A. v. Gutschmidt, in Rhein. Dfus., 1854, p. 141 sq.

cludes for the year 347, The latest edition is that of Fabricius (Leipsic, 1878).

SCYLLA anp CHARYBDIS. In Homer (0d, xii. 73 sq.) Scylla is a dreadful sea-monster, daughter of Cratzis, with six heads, twelve feet, and a voice like the yelp of a puppy. She dwelt in a sea-cave looking to the west, far up the face of a huge cliff. Out of her cave she stuck her heads, fishing for marine creatures and snatching the sea- men out of passing ships. was another lower cliff with a great fig-tree growing on it. Under this second rock dwelt Charybdis, who thrice a day sucked in and thrice spouted out the sea water. Between these rocks Ulysses sailed, and Scylla snatched six men out of his ship. In later classical times Scylla and Charybdis were localized

in the Strait of Messina,—Scylla on the Italian, Charybdis on the Sicilian side, In Ovid (Metam., xiv. 1-74) Scylla appears as a beautiful maiden beloved by the sea-god Glaucus and changed by the jealous Circe into a sea-monster; afterwards she was transformed into a rock shunned by seamen. There are various other ver- sions of her story. According to a late legend (Servius on Virgil, dn., ili. 420), Charybdis was a voracious woman who robbed Hercules of his cattle and was there- fore cast into the sea by Jupiter, where she retained her old voracious nature. The well-known line

"'Incidis in Scyllam cupiens vitare Charybdim " occurs in the Alewandrets of Philip Gualtier (a poet of the 13th century), which was printed at Lyons in 1558,

Another Scylla, confounded by Virgil (Ze., vi. 74 sq.) with the sea-monster, was a daughter of Nisus, king of Megara. When Megara was besieged by Minos, Scylla, who was in love with him, cut off her father's purple lock, on which his life depended. But Minos drowned the un- dutiful daughter (Auschylus, Choeph., 613 sq.; Apollodorus, m. 15,0).

Cat of Chios, a Greek geographer of uncertain date, known to us only by a few references in later writers, but perhaps identical with the Scymnus Chius of a Delphic inscription of the beginning of the 2d century B.c.,! was commonly taken to be the author of an imperfect anony- mous Paraphrasis in verse describing the northern coast of the Mediterranean, which in the first edition (Augsburg, 1600) was ascribed to Marcianus of Heraclea. Meineke showed conclusively that this piece cannot be by Scymnus. It is dedicated to a King Nicomedes, probably Nicomedes ITI. of Bithynia, and so would date from the beginning of the lst century B.c. See Miiller, Geog. Gr. Min., vol. i., where the poem is edited with sufficient prolegomena.

SCYROS, a small rocky barren island in the Agean Sea, off the coast of Thessaly, containing a town of the same name. In 469 B.c. it was conquered by the Athe- nians under Cimon, and it was probably about this time that the legends arose which connect it with the Attic hero Theseus, who was said to have been treacherously slain and buried there. A mythic claim was thus formed to justify the Athenian attack, and Cimon brought back the bones of Theseus to Athens in triumph. The inhabitants of Scyros before the Athenian conquest were Dolopes (Thuc., i. 98); but other accounts speak of

Pelasgians or Carians as the earliest inhabitants. There was a sanctuary of Achilles on the island, and numerous traditions connect Scyros with that hero, He was concealed, disguised as a woman, in the palace of Lycomedes, king of the island, when his mother wished to keep him back from the Trojan War ; he was discovered there by Odysseus, and gladly accompanied him to Troy. An entirely different cycle of legends relate the conquest of Scyros by Achilles. The actual worship on the island of a hero or god named

1 See Rhode, in Rhein. Mus., 187 9, p. 153 sq.

Within a bowshot of this cliff

Achilles, and the probable kinship of its inhabitants with a Thessalian people, whose hero Achilles also was, form the historical foundation of the legends. Scyros was left, along with Lemnos and Imbros, to the Athenians by the peace of Antalcidas (387 B.c.). It was taken by Philip, and continued under Macedonian rule till 196, when the Romans restored it to Athens, in whose possession it re- mained throughout the Roman period. It was sacked by an army of Goths, Heruli, and Peucini, in 269 a.v. The ancient city was situated on a lofty rocky peak, on the north-eastern coast, where the modern town of St George now stands. A temple of Athena, the chief goddess of Scyros, was on the shore near the town. The island has a small stream, called in ancient times Cephissus. Strabo mentions as its sole products its excellent goats and a species of variegated marble—the latter in great favour at Rome.

SCYTHE anp SICKLE. Till the invention of the reaping machine, which came into practical use only about the middle of the 19th century, scythes and sickles were the sole reaping implements. The scythe is worked with two hands with a swinging motion, while the sickle or reaping hook is held in one hand and the reaper bends and cuts the crop with a shearing or hitting motion. Of the two the sickle is the more ancient, and indeed there is some reason to conclude that its use is coeval with the cultivation of grain crops. Among the remains of the later Stone period in Great Britain and on the European continent curved flint knives have occasionally been found the form of which has led to the suggestion that they were used as sickles,

Sickles of bronze occur quite commonly among remains of the early inhabitants of Europe. Some of these are deeply curved hooks, flat on the under-side, and with a strengthening ridge or back on the upper surface, while others are small curved knives, in form like the ordinary hedge-bill. Among the ancient Egyptians toothed or serrated sickles of both bronze and iron were used. Ancient Roman drawings show that both the scythe and the sickle were known to that people, and Pliny makes the distinction plain.2 Although both imple- ments have lost much of their importance since the general introduction of mowing and reaping machinery, they are still used very extensively, especially in those countries where small agricultural holdings prevail, The principal modern forms are the toothed hook, the scythe hook, the Hainault scythe, and the common scythe. The toothed hook, which was in general use till towards the middle of the 19th century, consists of a narrow-bladed curved hook, having on its cutting edge a series of fine close-set serratures cut like file-teeth, with their edges inclined towards the heft or handle. Such sickles were formerly made of iron edged with steel; but in recent times they came to be made of cast steel entirely. To- wards the middle of the century the toothed hook was gradually supplanted by the scythe hook or smooth-edged sickle, a somewhat heavier and broader-bladed implement, having an ordinary knife edge. Both these implements were intended for "shearing" handful by handful, the crop being held in the left hand and cut with the tool held in the right. A heavy smooth-edged sickle is used for "bagging" or "clouting,"—an operation in which the hook is struck against the straw, the left hand being used to gather and carry along the cut swath. The Hainault scythe is an implement intermediate between the scythe and nnn ee

- *"Of the sickle there are two varieties, the Italian, which is the shorter and can be handled among brushwood, and the two-handed*

. Gallic sickle, which makes quicker work of it when employed on their

[the Gauls'] extensive domains ; for there they cut their grass only in the middle, and pass over the shorter blades, ~The Italian mowers ent with the right hand only" (H. W., xviii. 67).

the sickle, being worked with one hand, and the motion is entirely a swinging or bagging one. The implement con- sists of a short scythe blade mounted on a vertical handle, and in using it the reaper collects the grain with a crook, which holds the straw together till it receives the cutting stroke of the instrument. The Hainault scythe is exten- sively used in Belgium. The common hay scythe consists of a slightly curved broad blade varying in length from 28 to 46 inches, mounted on a bent, or sometimes straight, wooden sned or snathe, to which two handles are attached at such distances as enable the workman, with an easy stoop, to swing the scythe blade along the ground, the cutting edge being slightly elevated to keep it clear of the inequalities of the surface. The grain-reaping scythe is similar, but provided with a cradle or short gathering rake attached to the heel and following the direction of the blade for about 12 inches. The object of this attachment is to gather the stalks as they are cut and lay them in regular swaths against the line of still-standing corn, The reap- ing scythe, instead of a long sned, has frequently two helves, the right hand branching from the left or main helve and the two handles placed about 2 feet apart. The best scythe blades are made from rolled sheets of steel, riveted to a back frame of iron, which gives strength and rigidity to the blade. On the Continent it is still common to mould and hammer the whole blade out of a single piece of steel, but such scythes are difficult to keep keen of edge. There is a great demand for scythes in Russia, chiefly supplied from the German empire and Austria. The principal manufacturing centre of scythes and sickles in the United Kingdom is Sheffield.

SCYTHIA, SCYTHIANS. When the Greeks began to settle the north coast of the Black Sea, about the middle of the 7th century B.c., they found the south Russian steppe in the hands of a nomadic race, whom they called Scythians. An exacter form of the name was Scoloti. The inhabitants of the steppe must always have been nomads; but the life of all nomads is so much alike that we cannot tell whether the Scythians are the race alluded to in Z2., xii. 5 sq.

The name is first found in Hesiod (Strabo, vii. p. 300) about 800 B.c., and about 689 (Herod., iv. 15) Aristeas of Proconnesus knew a good deal about them in connexion with the ancient trade route leading from their country to Central Asia. From the passage of the Tanais (Don) for fifteen marches north-east through the steppe the country belonged to the nomad

Sarmatians, whose speech and way of life resembled those of the Scythians, Then came the wooded region of the Budini, who spread far inland and were probably a Finnish race of hunters with filthy habits. In this region lay Gelonus, the Greek emporium of the fur trade, round which lived the half-Grecian Geloni, prob- ably on the Volga and hardly farther south than Simbirsk. Seven more marches in the same line ran through desert, and then in the country of the Thyssagete the road turned south-east, and led first through the country of the Lyrcx, whose way of hunting (Herod., iv. 22) indicates that they dwelt between the steppe and the forest, but belonged more to the former; the road perhaps crossed the river Ural near Orenburg, and ascending its tributary the Ilek crossed the Mugojar Mountains. Beyond this in the steppe as far as the Sir-Darya and Amu-Darya the traveller was again among Scythians, who were regarded as a branch of the European Scythians. Next came a long tract of rocky soil, till the bald-headed Argippzei were reached, a race esteemed holy and seemingly Mongolian, who dwelt on the slopes of impassable mountains, probably the Belur-tagh,

1 In Herod., iv. 109, d0ctporpayéover is to be taken literally. Plan de Carpin relates the same thing of the Mongols.

and served as intermediaries in trade with the remoter peoples of Central Asia. The description of the fruit on which they subsisted (Herod., iv. 23) suits the Llzagnus hortensis, indigenous on the upper Zerafshan. Many notices of ancient writers about Scythia (e.g., as to the eight months winter and the rainy summer) suit only the lands on the first part of this trade road; moreover, the Greeks soon began to extend the name of Scythians to all the nations beyond in a northerly or north-easterly direc- tion. But such inaccuracy is not common till the fall of the Scythian race, when their name became a favourite designation of more remote and less known nations. Our best and chief informants, Herodotus and Hippocrates, clearly distinguish the Scolots or true Scythians from all their neighbours, and on them alone this article is based.

The boundaries of Scythia are, broadly speaking, those of the steppe, which had as wide a range in antiquity as at the present day, cultivable land having always been confined to the immediate neighbourhood of the rivers.

But to the west the Scythians went beyond the steppe, and held Great Wallachia between the Aluta and the Danube (Atlas and Ister). Here their northern neigh- bours were the Agathyrsians of Transylvania, who were perhaps Aryans, though in manners they resembled the Thracians. The Dniester was Scythian as far up the stream as the Greeks knew it. On the Bug were found first the mixed Graeco-Scythian Callipide and Alazones as faras Exampeeus (an eastern feeder of the Bug), then agri- cultural Scythians (Aporjpes), who grew corn for export, and therefore were not confined to the steppe. This points to south-east Podolia as their dwelling-place. Beyond them on the upper Bug and above the Dniester were the Neuri, who passed for were-wolves, a superstition still current in Volhynia and about Kieff. On the left bank of the Dnieper the " forest-land" ("YAaéa) reached as far as the modern BPereslaff; then came the Scythians of the Dnieper (the Borysthenians), who tilled the soil (of course only close to the river), and extended inland to the Panticapes (Inguletz?)2 and up the stream to the district of Gerrhi (near Alexandrovsk). Herodotus does not know the falls of the Dnieper; beyond Gerrhi he places a desert which seems to occupy the rest of the steppe. Still farther north were the wandering Androphagi (Cannibals), pre- sumably hunters and of Mordvinian race.? The nomadic Scythians proper succeeded their agricultural brethren to the east as far as the Gerrhus (Konskaya), and their land was watered by the Hypacyris (Molotchnaya). The royal horde was east of the Gerrhus and extended into the Crimea as far as the fosse which cut off Chersonesus Trachea from the rest of the peninsula, and remains of which can still be traced east of Theodosia. The southern neighbours of the royal Scythians were the savage Taurian mountaineers. Along the coast of the Sea of Azoff the. royal horde stretched eastward as far as Cremni (Tagan- rog); farther inland their eastern border was the Don. They extended inland for twenty marches, as far probably as the steppe itself, and here their neighbours were the Melanchleni (Black-cloaks).*

The true Scythians led the usual life of nomads, moving

2 Herodotus (iv. 54) makes it an eastern instead of a western feeder of the Dnieper.

3 The eastern Mordvinians (Ersians) still passed for cannibals in the time of the Arabian travellers.

4 Herodotus (iv. 56) represents the Gerrhus as a branch of the Dnieper flowing into the Hypacyris, which is not impossible (Von Baer, Histor. Fr., p. 66). But Herodotus himself never travelled beyond Olbia, and what he there learned about the rivers was necessarily vague, except for the parts which the Eastern trade route from Olbia touched. He filled up this imperfect information on analogy, suppos- ing that all these rivers came from lakes, as the Bug did, with which he knew a lake was connected called "mother" of that river (iv. 51, D2 aeabd, 57),

through the steppe from exhausted to fresh pasture- grounds, their women in waggons roofed with felt and drawn by oxen, the men on horseback, the droves of sheep, cattle, and horses folowing. They lived on boiled flesh, mare's milk, and cheese ; they never washed, but enjoyed a narcotic intoxication in combination with a vapour bath by shutting themselves up within curtains of felt and strew- ing hemp seed on heated stones. The women, in place of washing, daubed themselves with a paste containing dust of fragrant woods and removed it on the second day. Like many other barbarians, the Scythians, at least in Hippo- crates's time (ed. Littré, ii. 72), were not a specially hardy race ; they had stout, fleshy, flabby bodies, the joints con- cealed by fat, their countenances somewhat ruddy. The observation of Hippocrates that they all looked alike is one that has often been made by travellers among lower races. They were liable to dysentery and rheumatism, which they treated by the actual cautery; impotence and sterility were common, and, though the accounts vary, it is probable that the race was not very numerous (Herod., iv. 81).

Hippocrates's description has led many writers to view the Scythians as Mongolian; but the life of the steppe impresses a certain common stamp on all its nomad in- habitants, and the features described are not sufficiently characteristic to justify the assumption of so distant a Mongol migration. What remains of the Scythian lan- guage, on the other hand, furnished Zeuss with clear proofs that they were Aryans and nearly akin to the settled Iranians. The most decisive evidence is found in Herodotus (iv. 117), viz.,

that Scythians and SARMATIANS (q.v.) were of cognate speech ; for the latter were certainly Aryans, as even the ancients observed, supposing them to be a Median colony (Diod., ii. 43; Pliny, vi. 19). The whole steppe lands from the Oxus and the Jaxartes to the Hungarian pusztas seem to have been held at an early date by a chain of Aryan nomad races.

The Scythian deities have also an Aryan complexion. The highest deity was Tabiti, goddess of the hearth; next came the heaven-god Papzus, with his wife the earth-goddess Apia; a sun-god, CEtosyrus; a goddess of fecundity, Arippasa, who is compared with the Queen of Heaven at Ascalon; and two gods to whom Herodotus (iv. 59) gives the Greek names of Heracles and Ares. These deities were common to all Scythians. The royal horde had also a sea-god, Thamimasadas. In true Iranian fashion the gods were adored without images, altars, or temples, save only that Ares had as his symbol a sabre (Herod., iv. 62), which was set up on a huge altar piled up of faggots of brushwood. He received yearly sacrifices of sheep and oxen, as well as every hundredth captive. Ordinarily victims were strangled. Diviners were common, and one species of them, who came only from certain families, the Enarians or Anarians, were held in high honour. These supposed their race to have offended the goddess of heaven, who in revenge smote them with impotence; they assumed 'the dress and avocations of women and spoke with a woman's voice.!_ Divination was practised with willow withes as among the Old Germans ; the Enarians, however, used lime-tree bark. False pro- phets were tied on a waggon with burning brushwood, and the frightened team was driven forth. Oaths were sealed by drinking of a mixture of wine with the blood of the parties into which they had dipped their weapons. When the king was sick it was thought that some one had sworn falsely by the deities of his hearth,2 and the man ee ee ee

1 Reineggs in 1776 observed the same symptoms, with the same consequence of relegation among the women, in certain Nogai Tatars on the Kuban.

- *The plural (Herod, iv. 69) reminds us of the Fravashi of the king in the Avesta,*

sCYTHis

was beheaded whom the diviners, or a majority of them, pronounced to be the culprit. When the king commanded the death of a man all his male offspring perished with him (for fear of blood-revenge). He who gained a suit before the king had the right to make a drinking-cup of his adversary's skull. Actions at law thus stood on the same footing with war, for this is what one did after slay- ing a foe. The Scythians fought always on horseback with bow and arrow, and the warrior drank the blood of the first man he slew in battle, probably deeming that his adversary's prowess thus passed into him. No one shared in booty who had not brought the king a foeman's head ' the scalp was then tanned and hung on the bridle. Cap- tive slaves were blinded on the absurd pretext that this kept them from stealing the mare's-milk butter they were employed to churn.

The government was strictly despotic, as appears most plainly in the hideous customs at the burial of kings. The corpse of an ordinary Scythian was carried about among all the neighbours for forty days, and a funeral feast was given by every friend so visited. But the royal corpse was embalmed and passed in like manner from tribe to tribe, and the people of each tribe joined the procession with their whole bodies disfigured by bloody wounds, till at length the royal tombs at Gerrhi were reached. Then the king was buried along with one of his concubines, his cupbearer, cook, groom, chamberlain, and messenger, all of whom were slain. Horses, too, and golden utensils were buried under the vast barrow that was raised over the grave. Many such tumuli (called in Tatar dwrgan) have been found between the Dnieper and the sources of the Tokmak, a tributary of the Molotchnaya, Then, on the first anniver- sary, yet fifty horses and fifty free-born Scythian servants of the king were slain, and the latter were pinned upright on the stuffed horses as watchmen over the dead.

The Scythians deemed themselves autochthonous ; their patriarch was Targitaus, a son of the god of heaven by a daughter of the river Dnieper. This legend, with the site of the royal graves, points to the lower Dnieper as the cradle of their kingdom. The further legend (Herod., iv. 5) of the golden plough, yoke, battle-axe, and cup (tokens of sovereignty over husbandmen and warriors) that fell from heaven, and burned when the two eldest sons of Targitaus approached them, but allowed the youngest son to take them and become king, has been well compared by Duncker with the Iranian

conception of hvarend, the halo of majesty, which refused to be grasped by the Turanian Fraiiracé, but attached itself to pious kings like Thraétadna, The eldest brother, Lipoxais, was ancestor of the Auchate ; the second, Arpoxais, of the Catiari and Traspians ; the youngest, Colaxais (whose name seems to be mutilated), was father of the royal tribe of Paralate, and from him, too, the whole nation had the name of Scolots. Pliny (H.W., iv. 88) places the Auchatz on the upper Bug, so this seems to be the proper name of the agricultural Scythians ; if so, the Catiari and Traspians will be the Borysthenian and nomad Scythians who dwelt between the husbandmen and the royal horde. Colaxais divided his kingdom among his three sons, the chief kingdom being that in which the golden relics were kept ; and these three sons correspond to the three kings of the Scythians in the time of Darius's invasion, Viz., Scopasis, whose realm bordered on the Sarmatians ; Idan- thyrsus, sovereign of the chief kingdom ; and Taxacis,—the last two being neighbours of the Budini and the Geloni. According to the Scythians, Targitaus lived just a thousand years before the year 513 B.c.,—a legend which, taken with the tradition of autochthonism, indicates a much earlier date for the immigration of the Scythians than we should deduce from other narratives.

peGe Voi ll Pe

Aristeas of Proconnesus (Herod., iv. 13) had heard of

a migration of the Scythians into their later settlement. The one-eyed Arimaspians, who, as neighbours of the gold-guarding griffins, may be sought near the gold-fields of the Tibetan plateau, had attacked the Issedones (whom later authors are probably right in placing in the region of Kashgar and Khotan), and the latter in turn fell on the Seythians and drove them from their seats, whereupon these occupied the lands held till then by the Cimmerians. It is a probable conjecture that the branch of the royal Scythians spoken of as dwelling north of the Oxus and Jaxartes was really a part of the nation that remained in their ancient home. Aristeas's story has much internal probability ; but it is impossible to hold that the Scythian migration immediately preceded the first appearance of the expelled Cimmerians in Asia Minor, in Aristeas's own days (695 x.c.). The Scythians must have seized the steppe as far as the Dnieper centuries before, but the

older inhabitants, who were probably of one race with the Thracians, remained their neighbours in the Crimea and the extreme west till the beginning of the 7th century.

Concerning the complete expulsion of the Cimmuerians and the Scythian invasion of Asia that followed, Herodotus (iv. 11 sq. i, 103-106, iv. 1, 3 sg.) gives an account, taken from several sources, which is intelligible only when we put aside the historian's attempts to combine these. A barbarian (i.e, Median) account was that the Scythian nomads of Asia, pressed by the Massagetze, crossed the Araxes (by which Herodotus here and in other places means the Amu-Darya) and fell on Media. Taking these Scythians for Scolots and assuming, therefore, that the reference was to their first migration, Herodotus had to place the expulsion of the Cimmerians between the crossing of the Araxes and the invasion of Media, and he had heard from Greeks (of Pontus) that on the Dniester was the grave of the Cimmerian kings, who had slain each other in single combat rather than share the migration of their people. This local tradition implies that the Cimmerians reached Asia Minor through Thrace, which, indeed, is the only possible route, except by sea; Herodotus, however, is led by his false presuppositions to conduct them east- wards from the Dniester by the Crimea (where many local names preserved their memory), and so along the Black Sea coast, and then westwards from the Caucasus to Asia Minor. The Scythians, he thinks, followed them, but, losing the trail, went east from the Caucasus, and so reached Media. This he gives only as his own inference from two things—(1) that the Cimmierians settled on the peninsula of Sinope, from which their forays into Asia Minor seem to have been conducted, and (2) that the Scythians invaded Media. The Median source spoke further of a great victory of the Scythians, after which they overran all Asia, and held it for twenty-eight years (634-606), levying tribute and plundering at will, till at length the Medes, under Cyaxares, destroyed most of them after making them drunk at a banquet. Here a third, Egyptian, account comes in, viz., that King Psam- metichus (d. 611) bought off certain northern invaders who had advanced as far as Philistzea ; there is no reason to doubt that these are the Scythians of the Median account. Still more important is the evidence of certain prophecies of Jeremiah (comp. iii. 6) in the reign of Josiah (628-609), describing the approach from the north of an all- destroying nation of riders and bowmen (Jer. iv. OIsos,

V: 15 sq., vi. 1 sq., 22 sq.).2 Herodotus's twenty-eight years are simply the period between the accession of Cyaxares

2 This story may be influenced by the myth about the feast of the Sacsea (Strabo, xi. p. 512). Ctesias has it that peace was made.

2 This is Hitzig's discovery aud must be sound. Before the fall of

Nineveh the Chaldwans could not be a source of danger.

577

and the taking of Nineveh, which followed close on the overthrow of the Scythians; Justin, on the other hand, gives the Scythians eight years of sovereignty, which fits well with the interval between the first and the second. siege of Nineveh (619-609).?

A fourth account in Herodotus, which connects the O4Xeva vocos of the Enarians with the plundering of the temple of Astarte at Ascalon, is entirely apocryphal, and must come from the Greek identification of this Astarte. with the Scythian Arippasa. Yet it seems to have been chiefly this story that led Herodotus to take the Scythians of his Median source for Scolots. He is refuted by another account of Iranian origin: Ctesias (in Diod., ii. 34) tells of a long war between the Medes and the Sacz, occasioned by the defection of Parthian subjects of Media to the latter nation in the time of Astibaras (Cyaxares); so that the Scythian conquerors actually came from the east, not from the north. Herodotus's Median source closed with Cyaxares recovering his power; the story which follows about the resistance of the slaves of the Scythians to their returning lords, who cowed them by using whips instead of arms, must have come from the Pontic Greeks, and is certainly a local legend, which has nothing to do with the wars in Asia, and indeed is connected by Callistratus (Steph. Byz., s.v. Téfpar) with a war between Scythians and Thracians.

From the expedition of Darius upwards Herodotus names five generations of Scythian kings, Idanthyrsus, Saulius, Gnurus, Lycus, Spargapeithes ; the last may be contemporary with the foundation of Olbia (646 B.c.).° Under Idanthyrsus fell the invasion of Darius (513 B.c.). The motive for this

invasion cannot possibly have been revenge for the Scythian invasion of Media. It is possible that a popular war against the chief nation of the nomads, who are so hated by the Iranian peasants, seemed to Darius a good way of stimulating common feeling among his scattered subjects, and it is certain that he had quite false ideas of the wealth of Scythia, due perhaps to export of grain from the Grecian cities of the Scythian coast. Herodotus's account of the campaign is made up in a puzzling way of several distinct narratives, retouched to smooth away contradictions. Here it must suffice to refer to the article Persia (vol. xviii. p. 570), and to add that the geographical confusion in Herodotus and his exaggerated idea of the distance to which the Persians advanced seem to be due partly toa false combination between a Scythian account of the campaign and certain notices about the burning of Gelonus by enemies and about fortresses on the river Oarus which had come to him from the inland trade route, and had nothing to do with Darius, partly to a confusion between the desert reached by the Persians and that which lay between the Budini and Thyssagete.

While the Persian rule in the newly conquered districts of Europe was shaken by the Ionic revolt, the Scythians made plundering expeditions in Thrace, and in 495 pene- trated into the Chersonesus, whose tyrant Miltiades fled, but was restored after their retreat by the Dolonci (Herod., vi. 40). Darius had Abydus and the other cities of the Propontis burned lest they should furnish a base for a pro- jected Scythian expedition against Asia (Strabo, xiii. p.591); this agrees with the fact known from Herodotus (ca bla,

3 Eusebius's date (634) for the Scythians in Palestine is deduced from Herodotus.

4 It is meant to explain the origin of the fosse (Herod., iv. 3), which the slaves were said to have dug, and of a subject-race in the same district (Pliny, H.W., iv. 80), the Sindians (Amm., Mar., xxii. 8, 41 ; Val. Flac., vi. 86), or rather perhaps the Satarche.

5 That the wise ANACHARSIS (g.v.) was brother of King Saulius (Caduidas of Diog. Laert., i. 101) seems to be a mere guess of Herod- otus's Scythian informant Tunes. The story of Anacharsis's fate is coloured by that of the later king Scyles.

pu)

578

that Abydus had been retaken by Daurises a little before. In this connexion the Scythian embassy to King Cleomenes at Sparta (Herod., vi. 84) to arrange a combined attack on Asia becomes credible ; for, barbarians though they were, the Scythians had a political organization and many connexions with the Ionians of the Pontic colonies, so that their envoys may well have reached Sparta at the same time with Aristagoras (499) and served as decoys for his fantastic schemes.1

Our accounts of the Scythians begin to fail after the time of King Scyles, who affected Grecian habits and was de-

posed and finally slain for sharing in Bacchic orgies (Herod.,

iv. 78-80) ; his death fell a little before Herodotus's visit to Olbia (c. 456). We read in an unclear context (Diod., ii, 43) of a division of the Scythians into two great tribes, the Pali and the Nape, the former of whom crossed the Don from the east and destroyed the latter and also the Tanaites.? These events seem to point to a change of dynasty in the royal horde.

The Periplus ascribed to Scylax (346 B.c.) knows the Scythians as still occupying almost exactly the same limits as in Herodotus's time ; only in the east there is a small but significant change: the Sarmatians have already crossed the Don (§ 68). King Ateas still ruled Scythia in its old extent (Strabo, vii. 307), but all that we know of the events of his reign took place south of the Danube,— wars with the Triballi in Servia, with Byzantium, with the king of the Greek city of Istrus, and finally with his old ally Philip of Macedon. Philip defeated and slew Ateas near the Danube in 339 B.c. He was then over ninety years old.® .

The Scythians appear once more in the region of the Dobrudja in 313, when they helped the citizens of Callatis against Lysimachus and were defeated by him (Diod., xix. 73). All this points to a considerable advance of their frontier southwards, and in fact Pseudo-Scymnus (Ephorus) gives Dionysopolis (a little to the west of the modern Bal- tchik) as the place

where the Crobyzian and the Scythian territories met in his time (334 B.c.).4 This apparent ad- vance of the realm contrasts singularly with the distress to which Ateas was reduced by the king of the insignificant town of Istrus, an evidence that the Scythian power was really much decayed. Ateas indeed is sometimes painted as a rude barbarian lord of a poor but valiant and hardy race, and Ephorus, who mainly follows Herodotus about Scythia, yet speaks of the Scythians in contrast with the fierce Sarmatians as corresponding to Homer's description of a just and poor people feeding on milk (Strabo, vii. 302). But Aristotle, on the contrary (Hth. Nic., vii. 8), speaks of the effeminacy of the Scythian monarchs as notorious ; and indeed there can be little doubt that the Scythians crossed the Danube and settled in the Dobrudja under pressure of the Sarmatians behind them, and that the idyllic picture drawn by Ephorus presupposes the fall of their political system. Diodorus (ii. 43) tells us that the Sarmatians ex- terminated the inhabitants of most part of Scythia, and this must have taken place in the later years of Ateas, between 346 and 339.

At a later but uncertain date the great inferiority of the Scythians to the Sarmatians is illustrated by the story of Amage, the warlike consort of a debauched Sarmatian king,

who with only 120 chosen horsemen delivered Chersonesus EE ee eee ce

- *King Ariantas, whose primitive census is mentioned in Herodotus {iv. 81), seems to have flourished at this time.*

2 Pliny, H.N., vi. 50; comp. vi. 22, where we must read "Asam- patas, Palos, ab his Tanaitas et Napeos" and, below, " Satarchxos, Palos."

3 For Ateas, sec Frontin., Strateg., ti. 4, 20; Polyen., vii. 44, 1; Aristocritus, in Clem. Al., Strom., v. p. 2389; Justin, ix. 2; Lucian, Afacrob., 10; Aischines, C. Ctesiph., 128, p. 71.

4 Comp. Pliny, Z.N,, iv. 44, who calls the Scythians Aroteres,

in Tauris from the neighbouring Scythian king, slew him with all his followers, and gave the kingdom to his son (Polyzen., viii. 56). Itis, however, not quite certain whether these were a remnant of the old Scythians ; and it is still more doubtful whether the powerful Scythian kingdom of Scilurus, who brought the Greek cities of the Crimea to the verge of ruin, but was destroyed by Mithradates Eupa- tor (105), was really a kingdom of Scolots. The last cer- tain trace of true Scythians occurs about 100 B.c. in the Olbian psephisma in honour of Protogenes.5 Here they appear as a small nation west of Olbia between the Thisa-

mate and Saudarate, who are anxious to take refuge in

Olbia from the (Scordiscian) Galatians. Sourecs. —Herodotus (iv. 1-82, 97-142) and Hippocrates (De Aere,

&c., c. 17-22, in Littré's ed., ii, 66-82) are alone trustworthy, because

they carefully distinguish the Scythians from the other northern nations. Ephorus (in Strabo, vii. p. 302 sg., and Scymn., Perieg., 773-873), Diodorus (ii. 48 sq.), and Trogus (in Justin, it. 1-8, 5, 1-11, and Jordan., @et., v.-vi., x.) do not do so, and must be used with great caution.

Helps. —Ukert, Geog. d. Gr. und Rémer, iii. 2 (complete collection of materials from original sources) ; Niebuhr, Kleine Schriften, vol. i, (1828); Zeuss, Die Deutschen und die Nachbarsténune (1837)—an admirable discussion, which established the Aryan origin of the Scythians ; Boeckh, in C. Inse. Gr., ii. 81 sq. ; K. Neumann, Hel- lenen im Skythenlande (1855)—the best book, in spite of certain fundamental errors, such as the ideas that great part of the steppe was once wooded and that the Scythians were Mongols ; Miillenhoff, "Origin and Speech of the Pontic Scythians and Sarmatians," in Monatsb. d. Berl. Ak. (1866). The best account of the trade route which in the 5th century n.c. passed through a great part of what is now Russian territory is by K. E. v. Baer, Historische Fragen, &e. (1878) ; comp. also Grote, Hist. of Greece, iii. 314 sq. (1850), and Duncker, ii. 430 sg. (5th ed.). There is a class of mere amateurs, especially in east Germany, who absurdly take the Scythians to have been Slavs. (A. v. G.)

SEA. Any part of the ocean marked off from the general mass of water may be called a sea. In geography the name is loosely applied : for instance, the Arabian Sea is an open bay, Hudson's Bay is an enclosed sea. Seas proper lie within the transitional area which divides the permanent continental masses from the permanent ocean basins, and their boundaries are consequently subject to geological change, and to alteration by subsidence and elevation occurring in historic times.

Inland Seas are seas entirely surrounded by land (see Caspian Sea, Dzap Sea, and, for general discussion, LAKE).

Enclosed Seas have communication with the ocean re- stricted to one opening, which may take the form of one, two, or more straits close to each other. The best known are the White Sea of the Arctic Ocean ; the Baltic, Zuyder Zee, Hudson's Bay, Gulf of Mexico, and Mediterranean, with the Adriatic and Black Sea, of the Atlantic; the Red Sea and Persian Gulf of the Indian Ocean; and the Yellow Sea and Sea of Okhotsk of the Pacific.6 They are all cut off from general oceanic circulation and very largely from tides, but the result is not stagnation. The Baltic and Black Sea are but slightly saline on account of the number of large rivers falling into them, and the fresh surface-water flows out as a regular current, liable indeed to be checked, and even reversed for a time, but in the main persistent ; while the salt water flows in uniformly as an undercurrent. A state of equilibrium is arrived at, so that periodical fluctuations of salinity do not affect the average of a num- ber of years. The water of the Mediterranean and Red Sea is much salter than that of the ocean, which therefore flows in as a surface-current, while the dense very salt water escapes below. In the case of the Baltic and Black Sea dilution by rivers, in that of the Mediterranean and Red Sea concentration by evaporation maintains a circu-

° C. I. Gr., ii. No. 2058 ; comp. Zippel, Rim. Herrschaft in Illyrien, Jos 15s),
$ The prevalence of colour names for these seas is noteworthy.

lation. Winds and differences of barometric pressure are, as in inland seas, great factors in producing variable currents. (See Batic Sea, Buack SEA, MEDITERRANEAN Sra, Rep Sz, dc.

Partially Enclosed Seas may be (a) comparatively shallow irregular channels through which strong tides sweep, or (0) ocean basins cut off by barriers barely rising to the surface, or remaining permanently submerged, in which case there may be no break of continuity in the ocean surface to indi- cate the sea. Seas of the first description are related to shallow enclosed seas, but are much affected by tides and ocean currents ; the principal are the Kara Sea of the Arctic Ocean, Baffin Bay and North Sea of the Atlantic, Behring Sea and Japan Sea of the Pacific. They are subject to considerable temperature changes owing to their proximity to land. Seas coming under the second category combine the peculiarities of the open ocean and of deep inland seas. The Caribbean Sea of the Atlantic, the China Sea, Java Sea, and numerous small seas of the eastern archipelago of the Pacific are the best examples. Their chief peculi- arity is that the temperature of the water instead of falling uniformly to the bottom becomes stationary at some inter- mediate position corresponding to the top of the barrier. They are usually very deep. (See Nort Sza, NoRwEGIAN SA, and Pactric OcnAN.)

Other Seas.—Coral Sea, Arabian Sea, Sea of Bengal, are names, now dropping out of use, to designate parts of the ocean. "Sargasso Sea" is an expression devoid of geo- graphical meaning (see ATLANTIC OcEAN, vol. iii. p. 20).

Firths and Estuaries.—A river entering the sea by a short estuary flows over the surface, freshening it to a con- siderable extent, and, if the force of its current is not too great, the rising tide slowly forces a wedge of sea water up between river and river bed, withdrawing it rapidly when ebb sets in. In a firth that is large compared with the river falling into it, judging from results recently obtained in the Firth of Forth,! a state of equilibrium is arrived at, the water increasing in salinity more and more gradu- ally as it proceeds seawards, the disturbing influence of the tide becoming less and less, and the vertical distribution of salinity more and more uniform until the river water meets the sea, diffused through a nearly homogeneous mass with a density little inferior to that of the ocean. Between the extreme cases there are numerous gradations of estuary depending on the ratio of river to sea inlet.

Deposits.—All seas within about 300 miles of continental land, whatever may be their depth, are paved with terrige- nous débris, and all at a greater distance from shore are carpeted with true pelagic deposits (see Pactric OcEAN).

Marine Fauna and Flora.—The mixing of river with sea water produces a marked difference in the fauna and flora of seas. Where low salinity prevails diatoms abound, probably on account of the greater amount of silica dis- solved in river water, and they form food for minute pelagic animals and larvee, which are in turn preyed upon by larger creatures. In some seas, such as the North Sea, there are many celebrated fishing beds on the shallow banks of which innumerable invertebrate animals live and form an inex- haustible food-supply for edible fishes. Naturalists have remarked that in temperate seas enormous shoals of rela- tively few species are met with, while in tropical seas species are very numerous and individuals comparatively few. Organisms, such as the corals, which secrete carbonate of lime appear to flourish more luxuriantly in warmer and salter seas than in those which are colder and fresher.

The geological and dynamic aspects of seas are treated of in GroLocy (vol. x. p. 284 sg.) and GEOGRAPHY (PHYSICAL) ; and in ATLANTIC Ocean, Batic Sra, BLack Sra, INDIAN

I

1 Mill, Proc. Roy. Soc. Ed., xiii, 29, 187, and 347.

OcEAN, MEDITERRANEAN SEA, NortH Sea, NoRWEGIAN Sra, Pactric Ocean, Potar Recions, and Rep Sea the general geographical and physical characters of oceans and seas are described. In METEOROLOGY some account is given of the influence of the sea on climate, and chemical problems connected with the ocean are discussed in SEA WATER.

SEA-CAT. See Sea-Wo rr, infra.

SEA-DEVIL. See Fisninc-FrRo«, vol. ix. p. 269.

SEA-HORSE. Sea-horses (Hippocampina) are small marine fishes which, together with pipe-fishes (Syn-

gnathina), form the order of Lophobranchiate fishes, as

already noticed in IcHTHYoLoGy, vol. xii. p. 694. The gills of the members of this order are not arranged in leaf-like series as in other fishes, but form a convex mass composed of small rounded lobes attached to the branchial arches, as shown in the accompanying figure (fig. 1) of the head of a sea-horse, in which the gill-cover has been pushed aside to show the interior of the gill-cavity. Sea-

Fig. 1.—Gills of Hippocampus abdominalis.

horses differ from pipe-fishes by having a prehensile and invariably finless tail; it is long, slender, tapering, quad- rangular in a transverse section, and, like the rest of the body, encased in a dermal skeleton, which consists of horny segments, allowing of ventral, and in a less degree of lateral, but not of dorsal, flexion. The typical sea-horse (Hippo- campus) can coil up a great portion of its tail, and firmly attach itself by it to the stems of sea-weeds or other similar objects. The body is compressed and more or less elevated, and the head terminates in a long tubiform snout, at the end of which the small mouth is situated. The whole configuration of the fore part of the body, as well as the peculiar manner in which the head is joined to the neck-like part of the trunk, bears a striking resem- blance to a horse's head ; hence the name by which these fishes are generally known. Sea-horses are bad swimmers and are unable to resist currents. With the aid of their

Zs , = TO)

Fia. 2.—Phyllopteryx eques.

single dorsal fin, which is placed about the middle of the fish's body and can be put into a rapid undulatory motion, they shift from time to time to some other object near them, remaining stationary among vegetation or coral

where they find the requisite amount of food and sufficient

cover. Their coloration and the tubercles or spines on the head and body, sometimes with the addition of skinny flaps and filaments, closely resemble their surroundings, and constitute the means by which these defenceless creatures escape detection by their enemies. These protective structures are most developed in the Australian genus Phyllopteryx, one of the most singular types of littoral fishes.

Sea-horses belong to the tropics and do not extend so far north as pipe-fishes. They are abundant at suitable localities, chiefly on the coral-banks of the Indo-Pacific Ocean. Some thirty species are known, of which the majority belong to the genus Hippocampus proper. Their size varies from 2 to 12 inches in length; but in China and Australia a genus (Solenognathus) occurs the species of which attain to a length of nearly 2 feet; they, how-ever, in form resemble pipe-fishes rather than sea-horses. The species which may be sometimes seen in aquaria in Great Britain is Hippocampus antiquorum, from the Mediterranean and the coasts of Portugal and France. The food of the sea-horses consists probably of very small invertebrates and the fry of other fishes. Like the other Lophobranchiates, they take great care of their progeny. The male //ippocampus carries the ova in a sac on the lower side of the tail, in which they are hatched; in the other genera no closed pouch is developed, and the ova are embedded in the soft and thickened integument of either the abdomen or the tail.

SEAL. In the article Mammatta (vol. xv. p. 442) will be found a general account of the distinguishing character- istics of the animals constituting the sub-order Pinnipedia of the order Carnivora, and their divisions into families and genera. It only remains to give some further details respecting those members of the group to which the term "seal" is properly restricted (the sub-family Phocine), especially those which inhabit the British coasts.

Although seals swim and dive with the greatest ease, often remaining as much as a quarter of an hour or more below the surface, and are dependent for their sustenance entirely on living prey captured in the water, all the species frequently resort to sandy beaches, rocks, or ice- floes, either to

sleep or to bask in the sun, and especially for the purpose of bringing forth their young. The latter appears to be the universal habit, and, strange as it may seem, the young seals—of some species at least—take to the water at first very reluctantly, and have actually to be taught to swim by their parents. The number of young produced is usually one annually, though occasionally two. They are at first covered with a coat of very thick, soft, nearly white fur, and until it falls off they do not usually enter the water. This occurs in the Greenland and grey seal when from two to three weeks old, but in the common seal apparently much earlier. One of this species born in the London Zoological Gardens had shed its infantile woolly coat and was swimming and diving about in its pond within three hours after its birth. The movements of the true seals upon the ground or ice are very different from those of the Otariz or eared seals, which walk and run upon all four feet, the body being raised as in the case of ordinary quadrupeds. The hinder limbs (by which mainly they propel themselves though the water) are-on land always perfectly passive, stretched backwards, with the soles of the feet applied to each other, and often raised to avoid contact with the ground. Sometimes the fore limbs are equally passive, being placed close to the sides of the body, and motion is then effected by a shuffling or wriggling action produced by the muscles of the trunk. When, however, there is any necessity for a more rapid mode of progression, the animals use the fore paws, either alternately or simultaneously, pressing the palmar surface on the ground and lifting and dragging the body forwards

in a succession of short jumps. In this way they manage to move so fast that a man has to step out beyond a walk to keep up with them; but such rapid action costs con- siderable effort, and they very soon become heated and exhausted. These various modes of progression appear to be common to all species as far as has been observed. Most kinds of seals are gregarious and congregate, especially at the breeding season, in immense herds. Such is the habit of the Greenland seal (Phoca greenlandica), which resorts in the spring to the ice-floes of the North Sea, around Jan Mayen Island, where about 200,000 are killed annually by the crews of the Scotch, Dutch, and Norwegian sealing vessels, Others, like the common seal vitulina), though having a

of the British islands (Phoca

‘a ee

Fic. 1.—Common seal (Phoca vitulina).

wide geographical range, are never met with in such large numbers or far away from land. This species is stationary all the year round, but some have a regular season of migration, moving south in winter and north in summer. They are usually harmless, timid, inoffensive animals, though, being polygamous, the old males often fight des- perately with each other, their skins being frequently found covered with wounds and scars. They are greatly attached to their young, and remarkably docile and easily trained when in captivity ; indeed, although there would seem little in the structure or habits of the seal to fit it by nature to be a companion of man, there is perhaps no wild animal which attaches itself so readily to the person who takes care of and feeds it. They appear to have much curiosity, and it is a very old and apparently well-attested observation that they are strongly attracted by musical sounds, Their sense of smell is very acute, and their voice varies from a harsh bark or grunt toa plaintive bleat. Seals feed chiefly on fish, of which they consume enormous quantities ; some, however, subsist largely on crustaceans, especially species of Gammarus, which swarm in the northern seas, also on molluscs, echinoderms, and even occasionally sea-birds, which they seize when swimming or floating on the water.

Although the true seals do not possess the beautiful under-fur (“seal-skin” of the furriers) which makes the skin of the sea-bears or Otariz so precious, their hides are still sufficiently valuable as articles of commerce, together with the oil yielded by their fat, to subject them to a devastating persecution, by which their numbers are being continually diminished (see below, p. 581 sq.).:

Two species of seals only are met with regularly on the British coasts, the common seal and the grey seal. The

of ALL

common seal (Phoca vitulina) is a constant resident in all suitable localities round the Scottish, Irish, and English coasts, from which it has not been driven away by the molestations of man. Although, naturally, the most se- cluded and out-of-the-way spots are selected as their habitual dwelling- places, there are few localities where they

Fig. 2.—Skull of eommon seal, showing form of teeth.

may not be occasionally met with. Within the writer's knowledge, one was seen not many years ago lying on the shingly beach at so populous a place as Brighton, and another was lately caught in the river Welland, near Stam- ford, 30 miles from the sea. They frequent bays, inlets, and estuaries, and are often seen on sandbanks or mud- flats left dry at low tide, and, unlike some of their con- geners, are not found on the ice-floes of the open sea, nor, though gregarious, are very large numbers ever seen in one spot. The young are produced at the end of May or beginning of June. They feed chiefly on fish, and the destruction they occasion among salmon is well known to Scottish fishermen. The common seal is widely distri- buted, being found not only on the European and American coasts bordering the Atlantic Ocean but also in the North Pacific. It is from 4 to 5 feet in length, and variable in colour, though usually yellowish grey, with irregular spots of dark brown or black above and yellowish white beneath. The grey seal (Halicherus grypus) is of considerably larger size, the males attaining when fully adult a length of 8 feet from nose to end of hind feet. The form of the skull and the simple characters of the molar teeth distinguish it generically from the common seal. It is of a yellowish grey colour, lighter beneath, and with dark grey spots or blotches, but, like most other seals, is liable to great varia- tions of colour according to age. The grey seal appears to be restricted to the North Atlantic, having been rarely seen on the American coasts, but not farther south than Nova Scotia; it is chiefly met with on the coasts of Ire- land, England, Scotland, Norway and Sweden, including the Baltic and Gulf of Bothnia, and Iceland, though it does not appear to range farther north. It is apparently not migratory, and its favourite breeding places are rocky islands, the young being born in the end of September or beginning of October.

Other species of seals inhabiting the northern seas, of which stragglers have occasionally visited the British coasts, are the small ringed seal or " floe-rat" of the sealers (Phoca hispida), the Greenland or harp seal (Phoca groenlandica), the hooded or bladder-nosed seal (Cysto- phora cristata), and possibly the Bearded seal (Phoca bar- bata), though of the last there is no certain evidence. The general characters and geographical distribution of the remaining species of the group are indicated in the article MAMMALIA, vol. xv. p. 442. (w. H. F.)

SEAL FISHERIES.

From a commercial point of view seals may be divided into two groups, — hair seals and fur seals. The former are valued for the oil they yield and for their skins, which are converted into leather, and the latter for their skins alone. The fur seals are provided

with a dense soft under-fur like velvet and a quantity of long loose exterior hair, which has to be removed in dressing the hides. Hair seals are either entirely without under-fur or possess it in too small a quantity to render the skins of much commercial value as furs. The two groups correspond to the two divisions of eared seals and earless seals described above (see also vol. xv. pp. 442-448).?

Hair Seals.—The principal hair seal fisheries are those of New- foundland and Labrador (area about 200 miles), the Gulf of St Lawrence, Jan Mayen and the adjaceut seas, Nova Zembla, the White Sea and Arctic Ocean, the Caspian, and the North and South Pacific. The first-named is by far the most important. To the immense icefields borne past these shores during the spring months great herds of seals resort for the purpose of bringing forth and suckling their young. These are usually produced in the last week of February and increase rapidly in size. When born they weigh about 5 ib; in four weeks the fat beneath the skin has increased to a depth of 3 to 4 inches, and with the adhering skin weighs from 40 to 50 lb. At this age the animals are in the best condition for being taken, as the oil then yielded is of the best quality. They remain on the ice attended by their dams for about six weeks, when they begin to take to the water, and it becomes mueh more

diffieult to capture them. When a floe containing young seals is reached, the hunters take to the ice armed with a pole or "gaff," having a hook at one end and shod with iron at the other. A blow on the nose from this quickly despatches the animal ; by means of the "scalping-knife" the skin with the fat adhering is then rapidly detaehed. The fat and skins are rolled into bundles and dragged to the ship. When the ship reaches port the skins are separated from the fat and salted for export to Great Britain, where they are converted into leather. Of late years furriers have succeeded in converting a few of the finer skins into ladies' tippets. The fat was formerly thrown into huge vats, where its own weight and the heat of the sun extraeted the oil, but in the improved modern process the fat is ground into minute pieces by machinery and then steamed ; the oil, after being exposed for a time in glass- covered tanks to the action of the sun's rays, is barrelled for exportation. The greater part of it goes to England, where it is largely employed both as an illuminant and asa lubricant. It is also used for tanning purposes and in the manufacture of the finer kinds of soap.

From 8000 to 10,000 men embark annually from Newfoundland on this pursuit. The steamers, which are rapidly superseding sailing vessels, are stoutly timbered, sheathed with iron and wood, and provided with iron-plated stems; they carry from 150 to 300 men each, and make two, and sometimes when very successful even three, trips in the season. From 20 to 25 steamships in all are engaged in this industry, 6 of these being from Dundee, Scotland. The Dundee vessels arrive in Newfoundland in February and there ship their crews ; at the close of the sealing season they proceed to the northern whale fishery and return home in October. A "close time" for seals is now established by law. Sailing vessels cannot clear for this fishery before 1st March, nor can steamers before 10th March. After the young seals have taken to the water, the steamers in their second trips engage in the pursuit of the old breeding seals till the middle or end of May. These are taken either by shooting them or clubbing them when congregated in herds on the ice. This practice, which is most injurious to the fishery, has of late been partially abandoned, by an agreement among the owners of vessels not to continue operations beyond 30th April. The failures and disappointments of the voyage are numerous, many vessels returning to port with few seals or even with none. The prizes, however, are so enormous that there is no hesitation in embarking capital in the enterprise.

It is no uncommon event for a steamer to return two or three weeks after leaving port laden to the gunwale with seals. As many as 42,000 have been brought in by a single steamer, the value at two and a half dollars per seal being $105,000 (£21,875). The men on board the steamers share one-third of the proceeds of the voyage among them; the remainder goes to the owners who equip and provision the vessels. In sailing vessels the men get one-half the proceeds. The number of seals taken annually ranges from 350,000 to 500,000. In the three years 1877, 1878, and 1881 the average take was 436,418, valued at £213,937. Between 1881 and 1886 the returns fell below this average owing to the heavy ice, which comparatively few vessels succeeded in penetrating. The large number of young seals whieh escaped during these years will improve the fishery in the future.

In the seas around Newfoundland and Labrador there are four species of seals,—the bay seal, the harp, the hood, and the square flipper. The first of these frequents the mouths of rivers and harbours and is never found on the ice. The harp, so called from a curved line of dark spots on its back making a figure somewhat resembling an ancient harp, is by far the most numerous, and is par excellence the seal of commerce. The hoods, which owe their

1 Some naturalists have proposed the name Trichophocine for the hair seals and Oulophocitne for the fur seals, in allusion to the different character of the skin in the two groups.

name to a bag or hood on the nose of the males, which they can inflate at pleasure for protection, are much larger than the harps, but their oil is not of such good quality. But few square flippers are taken; they are large seals from 12 to 16 feet in length, and are believed to be identical with the great Greenland seals. The seals frequenting these seas are migratory. In May, attended by their young, they commence their northerly movements to the Greenland seas, where they spend two or three months, and in September begin their southerly migration, moving along the coast of Labrador, feeding in its fiords and bays. One division passes through the Straits of Belle Isle into the Gulf of St Lawrence, the other along the east coast of Newfoundland. By the close of the year they reach the Great Banks, their

southern headquarters, and early in February commence their northerly movement to meet the ice on which their young are to be brought forth.

The Newfoundland fishery was of slight importance till the be- ginning of the 19th century. At first the seals were taken in nets; the next method was shooting them from large boats, which left shore about the middle of April. Afterwards small schooners were employed, and a rapid expansion of the fishery followed. Over 100 of these small vessels used to leave the port of St Jolin's, and as many more the ports of Conception Bay. In 1795 the whole catch of scals was but 5000. In1805 it reached 81,000; in 1815, 126,000; in 1822, 306,983. The largest catches on record were in 1830, when 558,942 seals were taken ; in 1831, 686,836; 1843, 651,370; and in 1844, 685,530. The following table shows the number of seals taken in some recent years : —

Years. No. of Seals, Years. No. of Seals. CRG), er oe aK. 361,317 SCI etree tne ee 447,908 ALIS OURS. crerecvictaroreren cevereriee 375,282 MGS terete cto ere sieves oaree 200,500 MSBOr accecec cssatee asian ecm 359,821 ISS OW ye serecicaiieeine cole 300,350 A SIG! verereroistereseorcletelssetete 500,000 WSS Agassi ve reisieieeieacaiee cere 238,587 TIGSO} 042. artnet 223,798

Of late years an increasing number of steamers from St John's have resorted to the Gulf of St Lawrence as well as small sailing vessels from the southern ports of Newfoundland.

Next in importance is the seal fishery carried on between Green- land, Spitzbergen, and the island of Jan Mayen, —between 68° and 74° N. lat. and 8° E. and 17° W. long. In most years, however, the seals are taken mainly in the vicinity of Jan Mayen. The fishery is carried on by the British, Norwegians, Swedes, Danes, aud Germans. The number taken by the British vessels about equals that taken by all the others together. The species taken are the same as on the Newfoundland coast, the harp or saddleback and the hood or bladder-nose. The breeding season is about threc weeks later than in the ease of the Newfoundland seals, the young being brought forth between the 16th and the 22d of March. 'The method of capture is almost the same as that of the Newfoundland hunters. Steamers are now almost exclusively employed. The only British ports now engaged

in the enterprise are Dundee and Peterhead. During the twelve years 1878 to 1885 the number of British vessels taking part in it was from 14 to 21, the number of men varying from 900 to 1200, and the number of scals taken ranging from 35,000 to 75,000. The total number of seals taken by these vessels during the ten years ending 1884 was 452,013. Formerly, from 1500 to 2700 men were employed, and the number of seals taken ranged from 50,000 to 125,000. The decline has been largely caused by the reckless and barbarous way in which the fishery has been con- ducted, the practice of seal-hunters of all nations having been to reach the seals soon after the young were born, and then to watch for the mothers as they came to suckle them and shoot them with- out mercy, leaving the young to die in thousands of starvation on the ice. The consequence is that the herds are not now a twentieth part of their former size. Newfoundland hunters, on the other hand, do not disturb the seals till they are grown and about to leave their mothers, the old seals not being killed till a later date. By an international treaty between England and Norway—the two nations most interested—a "close season" has been established in the Jan Mayen fishery. The Dundee and Peterhead steamers are chiefly manned by Shetlanders, who are taken on board at Lerwick. The vessels make the ice from the 15th to the 20th March and commence the chase in the destructive way already described. They follow up the capture of the young seals in April, when they are better worth taking. Then they proceed to separate the skins from the fat. The former are salted on board, and the fat is stowed in tanks. In May the pursuit of the old seals on the ice commences and continues till the 16th, when it is time to proceed to the whale fishery. The oil is not manufactured till the vessels reach home late in the antumn. As the blubber undergoes decay in the tanks, the oil is not so good in quality as that made in New- foundland from the fresh fat.

SEAL

The Jan Mayen fishery commenced in 1840, In that year 13 British vessels and 650 men engaged in it, and 17,300 seals were taken. The Norwegians and other nationalities also took part in it. Steamers were introduced in 1858. The following table shows the growth and decline of the fishery :—

No. of N No. of

Year, | British | X90. Of | Seals |) yoo. | pritish | No.of | Seals

Views lise Men. taken. Vecsels. Men. taken. 1840 | 13 650 | 17,300 || 1875 | 20 | 1900 | 71,640 1845 | 39 | 1950 | 94'sso || isso | 74 840 | 41468 1850 | 32 | 1600 | 74.058 || iss1 | 14 840 | 23,984 1856 | 54 | 2700 | 81500 || 1sse | 15 900 | 21/092 1861 | 46 | 2300 | 10350 || 1883 | 17 | 1020 | 49°806 1865 | 26 | 1300 | 112000 || 1884 | 20 | 1200 | 497190 1870 | 22 | 1320 | 198000.

a

The Norwegian vessels are all steamers, sheathed with wood and iron, the crews averaging forty-six men. They belong principally to Ténsberg, but Tromso also sends out a number of small vessels to hunt adult seals. The total annual product has reached $300,000. Over twenty Norwegian and Swedish steamers are engaged in this fishery. Since about the year 1873 or 1874 the Norwegians and Swedes have discovered a new fishing-ground for adult seals off the coast of Greenland between Iceland and Cape Farewell. It is carried on in the months of Junc and July. The seals taken are all of the hood kind. At one time the Jan Mayen fishery averaged 200,000 seals annually among all the nationalities engaged. It does not now exceed 120,000 to 130,000.

The Danes, the Eskimo, and the half-breeds carry on a seal- fishery off the western coast of Greenland between Cape Farewell and 79° N. lat. The seals taken are chiefly the floe or spotted seal and the square flipper. Rink, in his Greenland, estimates the annual number taken at 89,000, but at present it does not exceed 50,000, as the seals are becoming scarcer. The oil is made at the Danish settlements on the coast, and the skins are dried, not salted, and both are shipped to Denmark.

The fisheries of Nova Zembla, once productive, have declined in value, and are now carried on by only five vessels, which reach the island about the end of June. The fishermen commence with hunt- ing the seal and the walrus and afterwards fish for the common trout. Five kinds of seals are found here, the chief being the Phoca vitulina and the Phoca grenlandica, The number taken is small.

The Russians carry on a seal-fishery on the eastern and western coasts of the White Sea, in the bays of the Dwina and the Mezen and on the coast of Kanin. The species is the Phoca grenlandica. These seals live in the high regions of the polar seas from May till September, and appear later in the gulfs and bays of the Arctic Ocean, where the young are born on the floating ice early in February. Soon after the hunt commences and lasts till the end of March, On the eastern coast of the White Sea the chase is pursued over a space of 230 miles. Two thousand hunters assemble at Kedy, near Cape Voronoff. High wooden towers are erected along the shore, whence observers watch the movements of the seals. Hunting sheds for the men are also erected. When a herd of seals is observed, the men go out on the ice, drawing small boats after them, and kill the young and old with clubs and guns. To approach the seals without being discovered, the hunters muffle themselves in long white shirts and advance slowly and noiselessly over the snow. 'They are often exposed to the greatest dangers, owing to the sudden movements of the ice. In following up the chase in April they use sailing boats 22 feet long, with an iron- plated bottom, which they draw up on the ice, where a vast en- campment is formed, and shooting-parties search for the seals. On the western shore of the White Sea the seal-hunt is less pro- ductive than on the eastern. The hunters meet at Devyatoe, a few miles north of the river Ponoi. About 500 men engage in the chase. The Russians take each year in the Arctic Ocean and the White Sea from 2,500,000 to 3,000,000 ib of seal blubber. Allow- ing an average of 40 tb per seal, this would imply the capture of 65,000 to 75,000 seals. The skins are made into leather.

The most extensive and valuable seal-fishery of the Russians is in the Caspian Sea, where the seals (Phoca caspica) are plentiful. They pass the summer in deep water, and in the autumn resort to the eastern basin, where the ice forms earliest and breaks up latest. Here the pairing takes place on the ice in December and January. The seals are also hunted at the months of the Volga and the Ural, and in the southern part of the sea, on the islands of the Gulf of Apsheron. There are three methods of hunting the seals,—killing them with clubs (the commonest and most successful way), shooting them on the ice, and taking them in nets. From 130,000 to 140,000 are taken annually.

A few seals are taken off the coast of California and Washington Territory. In the South Pacific, off the eoast of Chili, only a few are now taken where formerly they were captured by the thousand.

The elephant seal or sea elephant (Afacrorhinus Iconina) was formerly taken in great numbers at various places for the sake of

‘i

‘

—

SHA—SHA

its oil. This fishery is now almost a thing of the past; since about 1875 it has been earried on solely from New London in Connecticut, the fleet numbering only four or five vessels. The yield in 1880 was 42,000 gallons of oil, worth $21,420.

The average number of hair seals taken annually may be esti- mated as follows :— Bae

Newfoundland, including Labrador and the Gulf of St Lawrence 400,000

Canadian net fishery, Gulf of St Lawrence….....eeeee eens 75,000 Jan Mayen and the adjacent seas …....~~..esseee ceases 130,000 ‘Wie: usin Gikemllaidl4 oan etecon dooce es dopeoNpoocouOOnO poo BAaEoE 50,000 Nova Zembla, White Sea, and Arctic Ocean ….....~~.++6 75,000 Caspian Sa …. ce ceee cece cece eee cece cet ee ene enc es eeec cece 140,000 GEC SOUL HMIA GILL C isfelsfelcyisieieleelels elles niciele’s vcltie civ ee vivian ae 5,000 MotalimiUniber OlNGiE SEALS) <.4.00+ cree s cise sic cine viele vine $75,000

Vailieis aus, “EPSi0) joete SED sbacngnnoodocoeeodon oo $2,187,500

Fur Seals. —The fur seals occupy two distinct areas. None exist on the shores of the North Atlantic. South of the equator they extend from near the tropics to the region of antarctic ice. By far the most important and

valuable fur seal fisheries are those carried on at St Paul's and St George's Islands, belonging to the Pribyloff group,! off the coast of Alaska, at the Commander Islands in the Behring Sea, and that in the same sea 700 miles west of the Alaskan seal islets. The species found here is the northern fur seal (Callorhinus ursinus). The males attain mature size about the eighth year, when their length is from 7 to 8 fect, their girth from 7 to 8 feet, and their weight, when in full flesh, from 500 to 700 tb. The females are full grown at four years old, when they measure 4 feet in length, 23 in girth, and weigh from 80 to 100 Ib. The yearlings weigh from 30 to 40 tb. The seals resort to these islands late in spring chiefly for reproductive purposes, making their appearance from the southward. The number annually visiting St Paul's and St George's is estimated at five millions. About the middle of April the males begin to arrive and take their places along the shore in "the rookeries," as the breeding- grounds are called. The younger males are prevented from landing by the older, and are compelled either to stay in the water or to go to the uplands. By the middle of June all the males have assembled, and then the females begin to appear. Each old male seal collects from ten to fifteen or more females, whom he guards most jealously. The males fight furiously, 'so that night and day the aggregated sound is like that of an approaching railway train." By the middle of July the family circle is complete. Soon after landing the female gives birth to one pup, weighing about 6 Ib, which she nurses at wide intervals without any affection. Pairing takes place soon afterwards. No food is taken by the breeding males while on the rocks, —a period of three to four months. When the males leave after this i fast, they are reduced to half their former weight. In the end of October and middle of November all leave the island, the young males going last and by themselves.

The killing of the seals is carefully regulated. No females are killed, and only a certain number of young "' bachelor " seals whose skins are of superior quality. These younger inale seals are spread out on the slopes above the rookeries to rest. A party of men armed with clubs of hard wood quietly creep between them and the shore, and ata given signal start up with a shout and drive the seals inland. When they reach the killing-grounds near the villages, they select those that are two or three years old and seem likely to yield the most valuable fur. These they despatch with aclub. 'The skins are carefully salted for exportation. Besides the skin each seal yields

about a gallon and a half of oil. But it is not used, as its rank odour renders refining very costly. The value of the skins in the raw state varies from five to twenty-five dollars each; at times, when furs are specially fashionable, a higher price is obtained. The quality of the Alaska furs is superior, but those obtained in the South Shetland and antarctic regions are rated best. A cloak of the richest fur seal, a yard deep or more, will cost from £25 to £40. The roots of the loose exterior hairs penetrate deeper into the skin than those of the fur or short hair, and can readily be cut by paring on the fleshy side, without touching the roots of the fur ; the long hairs then drop off, leaving the valuable fur below in a sheet like pure velvet. The number of seals killed on the Pribyloff Islands is limited to 100,000 annu- ally, and with the precautions taken they increase as fast as if left to themselves, "for when the number of males is in excess, the continual fighting on the rookeries destroys many of both females and young, which get trampled to death."

Alaska was purchased from Russia by the United States in 1867. The Pribyloff Islands were leased to the Alaska Commercial Coin-

1 The sea-lion (Zumetopias stellert) is a characteristie pinniped of the Pribyloff Islands and other parts of Alaska. It has very little commercial value; but by the natives along the Behring Sea eoast of Alaska, Kamchatka, and the Kuriles it is highly prized. From the hide they make coverings for their boats; the intestines are made into garments ; the stomach walls are used as pouehes for oil ; the flesh is dried and eaten; and the whiskers are sold to the Chinese, who use them as pickers to their opium pipes, and in several ecere- monies in their joss houses.

pany of San Francisco for twenty years, from 1st May 1870, under Act of Congress approved 1st July 1870. The annual rental is $55,000 with a tax of $2°62 on each skin taken, —making the total rental $317,000 per annnm. The Alaska Commercial Company have leased the Commander Islands from the Russian Government. About 30,000 fur seals are annually taken there.

The fishery at the mouth of the Straits of Juan de Fuca and its vicinity is carried on by Americans and Canadians. The seals are eaptured in the

waters, the largest number being secured at and about Cape Flattery, to the extent of 15,000 annually. The Lobos Islands, at the mouth of the Rio de la Plata, are under the protection of the Government of Uruguay, the number of seals annually taken being limited to about 12,000. Some of the numerous islands about Cape Horn are the breeding-places of fur seals, as are also the South Shetland Islands farther south. This Cape Horn region is visited by a fleet of seven to ten vessels belonging to New London and Stonington, Connecticut, and also by a few Chilian and other South American vessels. Only occasionally does a yessel visit the South Shetlands, though the quality of skins to be secured there is very superior. The headquarters for the fleet between seasons is at Punta Arenas, or Sandy Point, in the Straits of Magellan. The American fleet in 1880 numbered nine vessels of 1192 tons. The result of the fishery was 9275 skins, worth $90,431. Early in the 19th century the Falkland Islands abounded in fur seals, but they have been exterminated. The number now (1886) annually secured there does not average more than 500; in some years only 50 skins are taken.

There are annually received at London from the Cape of Good Hope about 10,000 sealskins taken at various islands in the Southern Indian Ocean and along the south-west coast of Africa. A few fur seals are taken in the Okhotsk Sea.

Nearly all the fur-seal skins find their way to London, where they are plucked, dressed, and dyed. A few, however, are prepared in New York. At the seal islands they are salted and baled with the fur inside, and in this manner shipped to London. The annual yield of the fur-seal fisheries of the world is about 185,000.

Seals. Pribyloff Islands, Alaska …..... sc eee er eee ec ec eee ee ee ence 100,000 Gomimander EslandS …....:. ccs ccve cscs cece sssscsccaccecees 30,000 Straits of Juan de Fuca and vicinity …....0scesceeeeeeere 15,000 Lobos Islands, mouth of Rio de la Plata….....sesssesees 12,000 Patagonia, including South Shetland Islands and Straits of Magellan 15,000 Falkland Fslands … 20.00 cccccccrcc es ce cesescecececceecess 500 Cape of Good Hope, including south-west coast of Africa and islands in Southern Indian Ocean 10,000 Islands belonging to Japan …....s cece

cece cece c eect ee eee eees 2,500 TRGB eve raratetetetstietetats 185,000 At an average of $7 per Skin the annual value would be $1,295,000 Value of hair seals annually ….....~~0+..20~~ 2,187,500 Total value of hair and fur seals ….....~~+5~~ $3,482,500

See Hatton and Harvey, Newfoundland, 1883; Returns of the Jan Mayen Seal Fisheries, by Captain Adams, 1885; United States Fish Commission Reports for 1873-74 and 1874-75; J. A. Allen, Eared Seals; Charles Bryant, Habits of the Northern Fur Seal; H. W. Elliott, Seal Islands of Alaska. (M. H.

SEA LAWS, a title which came into use amongst writers on maritime law in the 16th century, and was applied by them to certain medizval collections of usages of the sea which had been recognized as having the force of customary law, either by the judgments of a niaritimie court or by the resolutions of a congress of merchants and shipmasters. 'To the former class belong the sea laws of Oléron, which embody the usages of the mariners of the Atlantic; under the latter come the sea laws of Wisby, which reflect the customs of the mariners of the North Sea and of the Baltic.

The earliest collection of such usages which was re- ceived in England is described in the Black Book of the Admiralty as the "Laws of Oléron," whilst the earliest known text is contained in the Leber Memorandorum of the corporation of the City of London, preserved in the archives of their Guildhall. These laws are in an early handwriting of the 14th century, and the title prefixed to them is La Charte d'Oleroun des Juggementz de la Meer. How and in what manner these "Judgments of the Sea" came to be collected is not altogether certain. Cleirac, a learned advocate in the parliament of Bordeaux, in the introduction to his work on Les Us et Coustumes de la Mer, first printed at Bordeaux in 1647, states that Eleanor, duchess of Guienne (the consort of Louis VII. of France, but subsequently divorced from him and married to Henry II. of England), having observed during her visit to the

Holy Land, in company with Louis, that the collection of customs of the sea contained in The Book of the Consulate of the Sea (see vol. vi. p. 317) was

held in high repute in the Levant, directed on her return that a record should be made of the judgments of the maritime court of the island of Oléron (at that time a peculiar court of the duchy of Guienne), in order that they might serve as law amongst the mariners of the Western Sea. He states further that Richard I. of England, on his return from the Holy Land, brought back with him a roll of those judgments, which he published in England and ordained to be observed as law. It is probable that the general outline of Cleirac's account is correct, as it accords with a memorandum on the famous roll of 12 Edw. IIL, "De Superioritate Maris Anglie," which, having been for many years carefully preserved in the archives of the Tower of London, is now deposited in the Public Record Office. According to this memorandum, the king's justiciaries were instructed to declare and uphold the laws and statutes made by the kings of England, in order to maintain peace and justice amongst the people of every nation passing through the sea of England: "Qua quidem leges et statuta per dominum Ricardum, quondam regem Anglia, in reditu suo a Terra Sancta correcta fuerunt, interpretata, declarata, et in Insula Oleron publicata, et nominata in Gallica lingua La Leye Olyroun."

The earliest version of these Oléron sea laws, which, according to the memorandum above mentioned, were re- ceived in England in the latter part of the 12th century, comprised certain customs of the sea which were observed in the wine and the oil trade, as carried on between the ports of Guienne and those of Brittany, Normandy, Eng- land, and Flanders, No English translation seems to have been made before the Rutter of the Sea, printed in London by Thomas Petyt in 1536, in which they are styled "the Lawes of ye Yle of Auleron and ye Judgementes of ye See." French was, in fact, a tongue familiar to the English High Court of Admiralty down to the reign of Henry VI. A Flemish text, however, appears to have been made in the latter part of the 14th century, the Purple Book of Bruges, preserved in the archives of Bruges, in a handwriting somewhat later than that of the Liber Memorandorum. Prefixed to this Flemish version is the title, "' Dit es de Coppie van den Rollen van Oleron van den Vonnesse van der Zee." Certain changes, however, have been made in the Purple Book of Bruges in the names of the ports mentioned in the original Gascon text. For instance, Sluys is in several places substituted for Bordeaux, just as in the Lutter of the Sea London replaces Bordeaux. That these sea laws were administered

in the Flemish maritime courts may be inferred from two facts. First, a Flemish translation of then was made for the use of the maritime tribunal of Damme, which was the chief Flemish entrepét of the wine trade in the 13th century. The text of this translation has been published by Adriaen Verwer under the title of the Judgments of Damme. In the second place, there is preserved in the archives of the senate of Dantzic, where there was a maritime court of old, famous for the equity of its judgments, an early manuscript of the 15th century, which contains a Flemish reproduction of the Judgments of Oléron headed "Dit is Twater Recht in Vlaenderen." So far there can be no doubt that the Judgnients of Oléron were received as sea laws in Flanders as well as in England in the 14th century. Further inquiry enables us to trace them as they followed the course of the wine trade in the North Sea and the Baltic Sea. Boxhorn, in his Chronyk van Zeelande, has published a Dutch version of them, which Van Leeuwen has repro- duced in his Batavia Illustrata, under the title of the Laws of West-Capell in Zealand. Verwer has also pub-

lished a Dutch text of them in his Vederlant's See-Rechten, accompanied by certain customs of Amsterdam, of which other MSS. exist, in which those customs are described as usages of Stavoren, or as usages of Enkhuizen, both ports of active commerce in the 15th century. Of these customs of Amsterdam, or, as they were more generally styled, 'Ordinances of Amsterdam," further mention is made below.

A new and enlarged collection of sea laws, purporting to be an extract of the ancient laws of Oléron, made its appearance in the latter part of the 15th century in Le Grant Routier de la Mer, printed at Poitiers in France by Jan de Marnef, at the sign of the Pelican. The title- page is without a date, but the dedication, which purports to be addressed by its author Pierre Garcie alias Ferrande to his godson, is dated from St Gilles on the last day of May 1483. It contains forty-seven articles, of which the first twenty-two are identical with articles of the "Judg- ments of the Sea," in the Liber Memorandorum, the re- maining articles being evidently of more recent origin. A black-letter edition of this work in French, without a date, is preserved in the Bodleian Library at Oxford, and to the last article this

colophon is appended: "Ces choses pré- cédentes sont extraictes du trés utille et profittable Roolle Doloyron par le dict Pierre Garcie alias Ferrande." An English translation is printed in the appendix to A View of the Admiral Jurisdiction, published in 1661 by Dr John Godolphin, in which the laws are described as "an Extract of the Ancient Laws of Oléron rendered into English out of Garsias alias Ferrand." Although this new text had the recommendation of an advocate who had filled the office of judge of the Admiralty Court during the Commonwealth and been appointed king's advocate- general by Charles II., it seems to have been superseded in a short time by Cleirae's Us et Coustumes de la Mer, to which was appended the following clause of authentication: 'Tesmoin le Seel de l'Isle d'Oléron, estably aux contracts de la dite Isle, le jour du Mardy apres la Feste Sainct André l'an mille deux cens soixant-six." Cleirac does not inform us from what source or under what circumstances he procured his text, nor on what authority he has adopted in certain articles readings at variance with those of Garcie, whilst he retains the same number of articles, to wit, forty- seven. The clause of authentication cannot be accepted as a warranty above suspicion, as the identical clause of authentication with the same date is appended to the early Norman and Breton versions of the rolls, which contain only twenty-six articles, Cleirac's version, however, owing probably to the superior style in which it was edited, and to the importance of the other treatises on maritime matters which Cleirac had brought together for the first time in a single volume, seems to have obtained a preference in Eng- land over Garcie's text, as it was received in the High Court of Admiralty during the judgeship of Sir Leoline Jenkyns, and an English translation of it was introduced into the English translation of the Black Book of the Admiralty made by John Bedford, the deputy registrar of the High Court, and dedicated to Sir Leoline Jenkyns. It seems to have been Bedford's intention to print this translation under the title of "Sea Laws"; but the manu- script passed into the hands of Sir Leoline Jenkyns, who gave it to the College of Advocates in 1685. The Black Book itself, which was missing for a long time from the Admiralty registry, has recently been discovered and has been replaced in the archives of the Admiralty Court. Of these two versions of the sea laws of Oléron the earlier obtained a wide-world reception, for it was translated into Castilian (fuero de Layron) by order of King Alphonso X., and a Gascon text of it is still preserved in the archives of Leghorn, apparently in a handwriting of the 15th cen-

tury, entitled ‘Asso es la copia deus Rolles de Leron de jucgemens de mar.”

The parent stock of the Wisby sea laws would appear to have been a code preserved in the chancery of Liibeck, drawn up in the Old Saxon tongue, and dated 1240. This code contains amongst many others certain articles on maritime law which are identical with articles in the Gothland sea laws, Gothland being the island of which Wisby was the chief port. This collection comprises sixty- six articles, and it is now placed beyond a doubt by recent researches, especially of Professor Schlyter of Lund, that these Gothland sea laws are a compilation derived from three distinct sources,—a Liibeck, an Oléron, and an Am- sterdam source. A Saxon or Low German text of this collection was printed for the first time in 1505 at Copen- hagen by Godfrey de Gemen, a native of Gouda in Holland, who is reputed to have set up the earliest printing-press in Copenhagen. ‘This print has no title-page, and in this respect resembles the earliest known print of Zhe Consulate of the Sea; but upon a blank leaf, which occupies the place of a frontispiece in one of two copies of Godfrey de Gemen’s text, both preserved in the royal library at Copenhagen, there has been inserted with a pen in alternate lines of black and red ink the title “‘Dat hogheste Gotlansche Water-Recht gedrucket to Koppenhaven Anno Domini M.D.V.,” and there has also been inserted on the first page of the text the introductory title “Her beghynt dat hogheste Water-Recht” (here begins the supreme sea law). Professor Schlyter has discovered a MS. (No. 3123) in the royal library at Copenhagen, which is written on parchment in a hand of the 15th century, and from which it seems probable that Godfrey de Gemen mainly derived his text, as it comprises the same number of articles, containing the same matter arranged in the same order, with this minor difference, that, whilst both the MS. and the print have the simple title “ Water-Recht ” prefixed to the first article, the MS. has also a similar title prefixed to the fifteenth. Further, as this article together with those that follow it in the MS., appears to be in a handwriting different from that of the articles that precede, the fifteenth article may justly be considered as the first of a distinct series, more particularly as they are numbered in Roman characters, beginning

with § 1, and such characters are continued with a single interruption down to the end of the MS. Although, however, the numeration of the articles of this second series is continuous and the handwriting of the MS. from the fifteenth to the sixty-sixth article is un- changed, the text of the series is not continuous, as the fortieth article commences with an introductory clause—"This is the ordinance which the skippers and merchants have resolved amongst themselves as ship law." There is no difficulty in recognizing the first division of this second series of sea laws as a Low German version of the Judg- ments of Oléron, transmitted most probably through a Flemish text. This hypothesis would account for the sub- stitution in several articles of Sluys for Bordeaux. On the other hand, the introductory clause which ushers in the fortieth article is identical with the title that is gen- erally prefixed to MSS. of the maritime Ordinances of Amsterdam, and the text of this and of the following articles down to the sixty-fifth inclusive is evidently of Dutch origin and more or less identical with Verwer's text of the usages of Amsterdam. M. Pardessus, in his valuable Collection de Lois Maritimes, published in Paris before Professor Schlyter made known the result of his researches, has justly remarked that the provisions of several articles of this last division of the sea laws are inconsistent with the theory that they originated at Wisby. It may be observed that the sixty-sixth article of the MS. is a Liibeck law identical with the first article of the first

series, which is of Liibeck origin. No colophon is ap- pended to this final article in the MS. Nevertheless, Godfrey de Gemen's edition of 1505, which breaks off in the middle of the sixty-sixth article of the MS., has the following colophon :—" Here end the Gothland sea laws, which the community of merchants and skippers have or- dained and made at Wisby, that all men may regulate themselves by them. Printed at Copenhagen, A.D. M.D.V." The question naturally suggests itself, To what MS. was Godfrey de Gemen indebted for this colophon, or is the alternative more probable that he devised it? There is no known MS. of this collection of an earlier date to which an appeal can be made as an authority for this colophon; on the contrary, the only known MSS. of which the date is earlier than Godfrey de Gemen's print, both of which are in the library of the university of Copen- hagen, are without this colophon, and one of them, which purports to have

been completed at Nykoping on the Eve of the Visitation of the Virgin in 1494, concludes with a colophon which precludes all idea that anything has been omitted by the scribe, viz., 'Here ends this book, and may God send us his grace, Amen." We are disposed to think that Gemen himself devised this colophon. He was engaged in printing for the first time other collections of laws for the Danish Government, and, as Gothland was at that time a possession of Denmark, he may have thus dis- tinguished the sea laws from another collection, namely, of land laws. Professor Schlyter, however, believes Gemen may have borrowed it from a MS. which is lost, or at all events is not known. There is some support to this view in the fact that in the archives of the guildhall of Ltibeck there is preserved a MS. of 1533 which contains a Low German version of the same collection of sea laws, with a rubric prefixed to the first article announcing them to be "the water law or sea law, which is the oldest and highest law of Wisby," and there are good reasons for supposing that the scribe of this MS. copied his text from a MS. other than the Copenhagen MS. The same observation will apply to a second MS. of a similar character preserved in the library of the gymnasium of Liibeck, which pur- ports to have been written in 1537. But as regards the Wisby sea laws little reliance can be placed on such rubrics or colophons as proofs of the facts recited in them, though they may be valuable as evidence of the reputed origin of the sea laws at the time when the scribe com- pleted the MS. In illustration of this view it may be stated that in the same year in which the more recent of these two MSS. purports to have been completed—namely, 1537— there was printed at Liibeck an enlarged edition of the sea laws consisting of seventy-two articles, being a Low German translation of a Dutch text, in which six additional Dutch laws had been inserted which are not found in the Copenhagen MS., nor have a place in Gemen's text, yet to this edition is prefixed the title, "This is the highest and oldest sea law, which the community of mer- chants and shipmasters have ordained and made at Wisby, that all persons who would be secure may regulate them- selves by it." Further, it has an introductory clause to its thirty-seventh article—" This is the ordinance which the community of skippers and merchants have resolved upon amongst themselves as slip law, which the men of Zea- land, Holland, Flanders hold, and with the law of Wisby, which is the oldest ship law." At the end of the seventy- second article there follows this colophon: "Here ends the Gothland sea law, which the community of merchants and mariners have

ordained and made at Wisby, that each may regulate himself by it. All honour be to God, MDxxxvul." Each article of this edition has prefixed to it after its particular number the word " belevinge" (judg- ment). It would thus appear that the Wisby sea laws KXI. — 74

have fared like the Oléron sea laws: they have gathered bulk with increasing years.

The question remains to be answered, How did this col- lection of sea laws acquire the title of the " Wisby sea laws" outside the Baltic? for under such title they were received in Scotland in the 16th century, as may be inferred from extracts from them cited in Sir James Balfour's System of the more Ancient Laws of Scotland, which, although not printed till 1754, was completed before his death in 1583. The text of the Wisby sea laws generally current in Eng- land is an English translation of a French text which Cleirac published in 1641 in his Us e¢ Coustumes de la Mer, and is an abbreviated, and in many respects muti- lated, version of the original sea laws. This inquiry, how- ever, would open a new chapter on the subject of the northern sea laws, and the civilizing influence which the merchants of Wisby exercised in the 13th century through their factories at Novgorod, linking thereby the trade of the Baltic to that of the Black Sea.

See Pardessus, Collection de Lois Maritimes antérieures au X VIII. Siéele (6 vols., Paris, 1828-45) ; Schlyter, Wisby Stadslag och Sjérdtt, being vol. viii. of the Corpus Juris Sueco-Gotorum Antiqui (Lund, 1853); and The Black Book of the Admiralty, ed. by Sir Travers Twiss (4 vols., London, 1871-76). Coats)

SEALING WAX. In medieval times, when the princi- pal use of sealing wax was for attaching the impression of seals to official documents, the composition used consisted of a mixture of Venice turpentine, beeswax, and colouring matter, usually vermilion. The preparation now employed contains no wax. Fine red stationery sealing wax is com- posed of about seven parts by weight of shellac, four of Venice turpentine, and three to four of vermilion. The resins are melted together in an earthenware pot over a moderate fire, and the colouring matter is added slowly with careful

stirring. The mass when taken from tlie fire is poured into oiled tin moulds the form of the sticks required, and when hard the sticks are polished by passing them rapidly over a charcoal fire, or through a spirit flame, which melts the superficial film. For the brightest quali- ties of sealing wax bleached lac is employed, and a pro- portion of perfuming matter—storax or balsam of Peru— is added. In the commoner qualities considerable admix- tures of chalk, carbonate of magnesia, baryta white, or other earthy matters are employed, and for the various colours appropriate mineral pigments. In inferior waxes ordinary resin takes the place of lac, and the dragon gum of Australia (from Xanthorrhea hastilis) and other resins are similarly substituted. Such waxes, used for bottling, parcelling, and other coarser applications, run thin when heated, and are comparatively brittle, whereas fine wax should soften slowly and is tenacious and adhesive.

SEALKOTE. See SranKor.

SEALS! (Gr. o¢payis, Lat. sigillum). During the medizval period the importance of seals was very great, as they were considered the main proofs of the authenticity of all sorts of documents, both public and private.2 That is much less the case now, the written signature being thought a safer guarantee of genuineness. In order to make illicit use or imitation of a seal difficult, the seal itself was usually locked up and guarded with special care, and in the case of royal personages or corporate bodies was often made a very complicated work of art, which it would have been almost impossible to copy exactly. One very curious precaution that was adopted is still in use with the corporate seal of the monasteries of Mount Athos. The circular matrix® is divided into four quarters, each

1 For antique seals, see Gums, JEWELLERY, and Rina.

- *Tn some cases, in the presence of witnesses, a seal which did not belong to the signer of a document was used when the right matrix was not at hand. This has naturally caused many archeological puzzles.*

> The word “seal” is often used to denote both the impression made

of which is kept by one of the four epistatad or ruling monks ; the four pieces are joined by a key-handle, which remains in the custody of the secretary. Thus it is only when all five guardians of the various parts of the matrix meet together that the complete seal can be stamped on any document. The device on the Mount Athos seal is a half-length figure of the Madonna and Child, and the imprint is made by blackening the matrix in the flame of a lamp and then pressing it on the paper or vellum itself, Medizval seals were applied in two different ways: in one the stamp was impressed in wax run on the surface of the document (Fr. plaqué or en placard) ; in the other the wax impression was suspended by cord or strips of parchment (Fr. pendant). The latter method was neces- sarily used with metal seals or bulle (see below).

For the sake of greater security in the case of plaqué seals, it was a common practice from the 12th century onwards, or even earlier, to make a cross cut in the vellum of the document, the corners of which were then turned back, thus forming a square opening, over which the wax seal was stamped; the turned-up corners helped to hold the wax in its place, and the aperture allowed a second matrix to be applied at the back. This was usually a smaller private seal called a secretwm. Thus, for example, an abbot would use on the front of a document the large corporate seal of his community, and on the back would stamp his personal seal as a secretwm.

Till the 12th century pure white beeswax was generally used, after that wax coloured green or red. The use of shellac or other harder materials, such as modern sealing- wax, is of recent date. Thus it was usual to protect the soft wax seals by some sort of "fender," often a wreath of rushes or plaited strips of paper twisted round it ; another method much employed in the 15th century was to cover the seal with leaves of oak, bay, or beech. Pendant seals were often encased in boxes of wood or cuir bowilli, which in some cases are very richly decorated. From the 13th to the 15th century original royal documents are usually on fine vellum and have green seals hung by many-coloured silk and gold thread, while office copies are on coarser vellum and have white seals hung by parchment strips. In England an important official, called the clerk of the chafe-wax, an office which still exists, was entrusted with the duty of softening the wax for state seals over a chafing-brazier. Two different methods of sealing docu- ments, either closed

or open for inspection, are recorded in the legal terms “letters secret ” and “letters patent.”

Owing to the enormous number of medizval seals which still exist, and their frequently great historical and artistic importance, it is necessary to adopt some method of classification, especially for large collections, such as that of the British Museum, which contains about 25,000 specimens, and the very important one of the Society of Antiquaries.t The chief classes are these :—(1) £ecclesi- astical.—(a) Seals belonging to offices, such as those of popes, bishops, abbots, deans, d&c.; (6) common seals of corporate bodies, such as chapters, religious colleges, monas- teries, and the like; (c) official seals without the name of the officer; (d) personal seals, with or without a name. (2) Lay.—(a) Royal seals, including those of queens and royal princes; (6) official seals in the name of the sovereign or a state official ; (c) common seals of corporate bodies, such as towns, universities, guilds, schools, hospi- tals, &c.; (d) personal seals (not being royal) with effigies, heraldry, merchants’ marks, or other devices, with or with- out a name, or with name only, or with legend only.

and the object that makes the impress. More correctly the latter is called the “ matrix,” and only the impression is called the “seal.”

4 This valuable collection has been arranged and catalogued by Dr C.8. Percival, the best modern authority on English seals,

SEALS

French Royal Seals.1—The earliest and most complete series of seals is that of the French kings. The Carlo- vingian and Merovingian monarchs mostly used antique gems or pastes,—portrait heads being selected and a legend added in the metal setting of the matrix. Charle- magne used a head of Jupiter Serapis,? Pippin the Short that of the Indian Dionysus. The British Museum pos- sesses a seal of Odo or Eudes, king of France (888-898), impressed from a fine Greek gem of the 3d century B.c., with a portrait of Seleucus IV. The oldest existing matrix ig that of Lothaire I. (c. 817), now preserved at Aix-la- Chapelle, attached to an altar-cross. It is an oval intaglio in rock crystal, with a laureated portrait and the legend J. XPE, ADIVVA. HLOTHARIVM. REG. ; it is not an antique, but is of

contemporary Byzantino-Rhenish work. Till the time of Louis VI. (1108-1137) these seals were plaqué, but he introduced pendant seals about 1108; and counter- seals at the back were first used by Louis VII. (1137-80). The grand series of round seals with an enthroned figure of the king begins with the Capet Henry I. (1031-60). The king holds a sceptre in one hand and a flower in the other. Those of the queens are frequently of a pointed oval form, with a standing portrait figure holding a flower in each hand. In the 13th and 14th centuries the French royal seals were elaborate works of art, with a finely draped figure of the king seated under a rich canopy on a throne, decorated with lions' or eagles' heads ; the king holds a sceptre in each hand, The queens' seals, of a round or pointed oval form, are also very beautiful, with a graceful figure standing between two shields under a rich canopy. After the 15th century there was a rapid decadence in the royal seals, and in the 17th and 18th centuries they were of the most tasteless style, far worse than those used in England at the same date.

English Royal Seals,—This, which is on the whole the most beautiful of all royal series, begins with the seal of Edward the Con- — fessor (see fig. 1).% The great seal of Will- iam the Norman and his successors was not plaqué, like the earlier ones, but pendant ; it has on one side an enthroned figure of a king copied from contemporary French seals, and on the re- verse the king on af horseback armed with AA spear and shield. ;

These two ways of Fic. 1.—Seal of Edward the Confessor.

representing the sovereign have been used on all the royal seals of England down to the present day. By degrees greater elaboration of ornament was introduced into the throne and its canopy. In Edward ITT.'s time niches with minute statuettes of saints were added at the sides of the obverse. The climax of magnificence was reached in the reign of Henry V. On the obverse of his seal the king

IS ZL

1 See Wailly, Eléments de Paléographie, vol. ii., pl. A.; by various authors, Trésor de Num. et de Glyptique, vol. i., Paris, 1834 (which contains also plates of English royal seals) ; Douet-d'Areq, Coll. de Sceaux del' Empire,

Paris, 1863-68; Bulletin de la Société de Sphragis- tique, Paris, v.y.; D'Anisy, Recueil de Sceaux Normands, Caen, 1835.

2 The monks of Durham also used a gem with a head of Jupiter Serapis, round which was added the legend—-CAPVT . SANCTI . OSW ALDI.

8 The English kings before the Conquest signed usually with a cross only, but a few, such as Offa, Ethelwulf, and Ethelred, occasionally used seals, especially on documents containing grants to St Denis and other French abbeys, on which they followed the French custom of affixing plaqué seals.

sits holding the orb and sceptre; the gorgeous canopy contains statuettes of the Virgin and two saints, and at each side are three rows of statuettes in minute canopied niches, each row two tiers high; about fifteen minute

figures of saints and angels are introduced into the design. On the reverse is the king on horseback, bearing a sword

and shicld; the horse, going at full speed, is clothed

with richly embroidered heraldic drapery, and on its head. and on the king's is a lion crest. After Henry V. the seals began to decrease in maguificence, and in the reign of Henry VII. the new taste of the Renaissance began to supplant the pure Gothic of the earlier seals. In the time of Philip and Mary both sovereigns appear together, seated

under canopies, or riding side by side. The great seal*

of the Commonwealth is a marvel of ugliness. On the obverse is a perspective view of the interior of the House of Commons, and on the reverse a map of Great Britain and Ireland. Cromwell's seal has an equestrian portrait of himself, and its reverse the arms of the Commonwealth between a lion and a dragon as supporters. Little is noticeable about the seals of succeeding sovereigns; that of Victoria is minutely cut, but is very poor as a work

of art.

Other English Seals.—Gilt bronze was the commonest

material for large seals, but other metals were used, such as gold, silver, and lead, also jet and ivory, especially

before the Norman Conquest. Rock crystal, carnelian, and sard were the favourites among the hard stones cut

for matrices. Large seals were usually either round or of

a pointed oval form (as in figs. 2and 3); the small secreta were sometimes square, triangular, or hexagonal, as well as round or oval.® The most elaborate and beautiful of all were those of religious corporations, such as the chapter seals of monasteries. These are among the most exquisite works of art that the Middle Ages produced, especially during the 14th century, and exceed in delicacy of work- manship and elaboration of design the finest seals of all other classes, not excepting those of the sovereigns. Fig. 2 shows the common seal of Boxgrove priory (Sussex), the matrix of which is now in the British Museum. On one side is a figure of the Virgin enthroned, and on the reverse a representation of the west front of the priory church, with open : tracery and niches contain- ing minute statuettes. This |§& elaborate matrix is made up of four distinct pieces of gilt bronze, and to form the perfect seal must have been a work requiring con- siderable skill and patience. The reverse was formed by two stamps used on two :

separate plaques of softened Fra, 2.—Fourteenth-century seal of wax: one of these formed Boxgrove priory ; reverse.

the background with the various statuettes, and the second was used to stamp the open tracery work of the front of the church; the latter when hard was fitted on to the

4 A variety of design is introduced on the reverse of one of Queen Elizabeth's seals: she is represented standing, holding the orb and sceptre, and wears a dress with enormous hoops. Her other seal has the usual equestrian portrait on the reverse.

5 Asa rule, from the 12th to the 15th century, ecclesiastical seals and those of females were of the pointed oval form, most others being circular ; there are, however, many exceptions to this rule.

6 A special English office for the blessing of seals is printed by Maskell, Mon. Ritualia, 1882, vol. ili.

impression of the background, and thus a sort of miniature model of the church was made, with its statues and the inner planes of the fagade seen through the open tracery work,—the effect being extremely rich and delicate. When the finished obverse and reverse had been fitted together, the legend was added on their edges by means of the fourth piece of the matrix, —a strip of bronze with letters cut into it on both its :

edges; first one side and then the other of this strip was pressed against the rim of the wax seal, which thus received the im- pression of the complete legend all round its edge. The seal of South- wark priory, also of the 14th cen- tury, is even more claborate, as both sides have open tracery separately applied, and thus the matrix consists of five distinct pieces. Many of the bishops' seals, though less com- plicated in design,

See

Fic. 3,—Seal of Richard de Bury, late

are of equal beauty to those of the 14th century. chapters. The common design has a standing figure

under a richly decorated canopy. Fig. 3 shows a very beautiful example, the seal of Richard, bishop of Dur- ham. The standing figure of the bishop in mass vest- ments is modelled with wonderful skill and shows ex- treme taste in the treatment of the drapery; the legend is s[igillum] RICARDI. DEI. GRA. DVNELMENSIS. EPI. A great variety of sacred subjects occur on ecclesiastical seals

Dy ye: ee Loy of

AE AGS) . aly LS uals (RS |

Sy

Fig. 4.—Seal of King's College, Cambridge.

in addition to single figures of patron saints; the most frequent were perhaps the Crucifixion, the Annunciation, the Coronation of the Virgin, and the Virgin enthroned in Heaven; small figures of kneeling worshippers were

often added. Fig. 4 shows one of the most magnificent of this class, with, in the centre, a figure of the Virgin in glory, between St Nicholas and Henry VI., each under a very rich canopy; at the sides are shields charged with England and France, and France (modern) alone, held by two monks.! This very beautiful work of art dates about the year 1443. In the 15th century the ecclesiastical seals began to fall off in richness and beauty, and after the Reformation were of little artistic value. Very hand- some seals were used by lay corporations, especially the municipalities of towns. These last frequently have a careful representation of the town itself, with its circuit of walls or that of its chief castle or cathedral, and thus often afford valuable evidence as to fences and principal buildings. Fig. 5 shows a fine example, 3 inches in diameter, —the corporate seal of Rochester, made AR, in the 13th century; Ff [PMS it has a minute re- presentation of the ¥ keep of Rochester ¥ Castle,. surrounded by an outer circuit wallanda moat. On one of the turrets of the gateway is a sentinel blowing a signal horn ; legend, SIGILLVM . CIVIVM . ROFENSIS. The reverse has the same legend repeated round the scene of the Crucifixion of St Andrew. Other corporation seals are covered with small figures under elaborate canopy work, much like those of the ecclesiastical foundations.

Seals of hospitals are often designed in a similar way, with a representation of the hospital building very minutely treated. In the 15th century seals began to be designed in a rather pictorial style, which, though very graceful, is inferior to the earlier and more architect- onic class. Very magnificent — seals were used by state officials : those of the lord high ad-

miral of England are especially fine, from the beautiful form of the ship on the ob- verse. Fig. 6 shows that of the earl of Huntingdon, who was lord high ad- miral in the reign of Henry VIII. In design it resembles those of the admirals of the previous century. On the sails are embroidered the royal arms of England.

Among private seals those of powerful barons are often large and very beautifully cut. Fig. 7 shows a silver matrix, now in the British Museum, whiclr is remarkable for the great beauty of its workmanship. Its legend is SIGILLVM . ROBERTI . FILII. WALTERI. On it an armed knight, of the time of Henry IIL, is riding over a dragon, whose tail ends in a scroll of very beautiful conventional foliage, modelled with the greatest spirit and delicacy.

1 This class of seal is often a sort of miniature reproduction of some magnificent altar retable, as in fig. 4.

Fig. 6.—Seal of Lord High Admiral Huntingdon.

A common and graceful form of private seal in the 13th and 14th centuries has simply a shield with the owner's arms on a diapered —— background, the whole enclosed with- – in many-cusped tra- cery. Fig. 8 shows an example of a fine Greco-Roman gem, —a carnelian en- graved with a female head, full face. The 14th-century owner of this has added a metal setting with the words CAPVT. MARIE . MAGDALENE, to give it a sacred meaning. The le gends of private seals or secreta were often chosen in allu- sion to their use; common phrases are "clausa secreta tego," or "lecta lege, tecta tege." Many ingenious devices were practised to enable & the same matrix to give two or more dif (hey ferent varieties of impression. In some ¥ cases the border with the legend was so Y contrived as to slide up the handle, so ay that the seal could be made either with pio, 8. — Antique or without an inscription. Others had gem used as a the border made to revolve on a swivel, Private seal. so as to supply two different legends ; and the magnificent monastic seals (as that shown in fig. 2) were arranged so as to give a perfect seal without the use of the ela- porate open tracery. In the 15th and 16th centuries mer- chants and handicraftsmen frequently employed devices connected with their trade—either some tool or badge or an arbitrary sign used as a trade-mark ; or a rebus of the owner's name

was used, such asa bolt and a tun (cask) for the name Bolton. The use of seals by the humbler classes was more common in England than abroad ; even bonds- men sometimes had seals, both before and after the Nor- man Conquest. Seals of other countries mostly followed

Fic. 7.—Seal of Robert Fitzwalter, c. 1270.

eet is the art of sailing, manceuvring, and

preserving a ship or a boat in all positions and under all reasonable circumstances, and thus involves a sound practical knowledge of all the forces by which she may be actuated and the means at command to assist or counter- act them; it is a branch of applied mechanics acquired by experience and study. The former can only be obtained thoroughly in many years spent at sea, in personal con- nexion with the work of the ship and her boats ; that such training should commence at an early age is very desir- able, if not even imperative. The practical knowledge so gained should be supplemented and improved by reading, conversation, and discussion, as the casualties which befall ships are so varied that a man may pass forty years in sea- going vessels without experiencing one-half of those which might occur. Many of the old maxims are still applicable to every class of vessel and must always remain So.

The terms "ship" and "vessel" are here intended to embrace all classes, though "ship" is generally applied to the larger without reference to form or description unless such is specified. Though the use of sails has been greatly superseded by the introduction of steam-power both in the navies of all nations and in the mercantile marine, it is still generally admitted that seamanship is best acquired

the same fashions as those of England, though of course varying in design and workmanship with each country. On the whole, the English seals were

superior during their best period (the 14th century) to those of any other country, though matrices of great beauty were produced in both Germany and France. In Italy less care and skill were usually spent on seals, partly owing to the greater use of metal bulle for important charters.

Metal Bullx.—These are necessarily not plaqué but pen- dant, and are held usually by cords passed through a hole in the seal. Lead was the metal most commonly used, but some sovereigns had bulle struck in silver or gold, either as a mark of their own dignity or to confer special honour on the recipient of a charter. An extant letter from Petrarch to Charles IV. thanks that emperor for a diploma of the rank of count, and especially for the honour shown to him by the attachment of gold bulle to the document. Lead bulle were also used by various ecclesiastical dignitaries, from patriarchs to bishops, but were rarely used by ecclesiastics of lower rank. In some cases, however, especially in Sicily and Byzantium, bulle were used by laymen of very moderate rank, A large num- ber of fine papal bull! exist dating from the 7th century onwards.? Since the time of Pope Paschal IT. they have borne heads of St Peter and St Paul; previously they had such simple devices as crosses or stars, with the name of the pontiff. Another early series of bulle begins in the 8th century with the bulle of the patriarchs of Byzantium. Those of the doges of Venice exist in large numbers, bear- ing figures of St Mark and the reigning doge kneeling before him. Existing bulle of Charlemagne have a rude profile portrait crowned with a diadem, and on the reverse the monogram of KAROLVS arranged in the form of a cross.

Consult, in addition to the works named above, Thulemarius, De Bulla Aurea, Frankfort, 1724; Romar-Biichner, Die Siegel der deutsch. Kaiser, Frankfort, 1851; Vossberg, Gesch. der preussischen Siegel, Berlin, 1843; Melly, Siegel-Kunde des Mittclalicrs, Vienna, 1846 ; Heineccius, De Sigillis, Frankfort, 1709 ; Lepsius, Sphragis- tische Aphorismen, Halle, 1842-48; Caulfield, Sigilla Ecclesia Hibernice, London, 1853 ; and more especially various articles in the Gaz. des Beaux-Arts, Archxologia, Archeological Journal, and Proceedings of other antiquarian societies. (J. H. M.)

NSHIP

on board a vessel which is dependent upon her sails. The construction and equipment of sailing ships had reached a high point of perfection at the time steam came into general use. The power derived from the steam-engine does not change any of the former conditions, but simply adds another element, confined to propulsion. directly ahead or astern (except with reversible wheels or twin screws), which when combined with sails renders a ship much more manageable and safe,—that is to say, assuming all the forces at command to be properly applied. Hence it is very desirable that all ocean-going steam vessels should have sufficient sail-power to turn them round (wear) or to enable them to sail with the wind abeam without steam, especially when fitted with single screws or with paddle wheels which do not work separately. Twin screws, of course, give a double chance as far as the engine is concerned ; but even with that advantage the loss of the rudder would leave the ship in a helpless condition if she had not efficient head and after sails to balance her on the desired course.

At present the excessive desire to make quick passages has greatly augmented the danger unavoidably attending a sea voyage, the risk as well as the violence of a collision

ee ee aS ea eee SE eS eS 1 The term "bull" for a papal charter comes from its lead bulla. 2 See Ficoroni, Piombi Anticht, Rome, 1745.

at high speed in thick weather being thereby much in- creased. Through the want of masts and sails there is a probability of total loss by drifting helplessly on a lee shore during a gale, or by foundering "in the trough of the sea." In spite of her monstrous size (22,000 tons), the "Great Eastern," in 1863 or 1864, with her six com- paratively small masts and weak sails was, after the loss of her rudder, very roughly used by the waves striking her full on the side. She was in the position which is expressed by the common sea-phrase "wallowing in the trough of the sea," from which her crew had no power to extricate her. A smaller vessel deeply laden in such a

some time, as the general usefulness of the men has been cramped. Sail drill in harbour is open to grave objec- tions: unless in a tide-way, the ship must be invariably head to wind; for reefing and furling the yards are laid Square, consequently flat aback ; both earings are hauled out at once, and as it is only for exercise they are only half secured. Even when reefing top-sails at sea either for exercise or of necessity in company with other ships, the yards are laid square to enable the men to get readily on the weather-side ; therefore, if on a wind, the sail must re- main aback or the ship must be kept away till the wind is on the beam in order to shake the sail.

position would most probably have foundered, leaving no one to tell the tale. Too much stress is laid upon the re- tardation caused by masts and rigging when steaming head to wind ; it is the pitching and plunging motion of

The foundation of all teaching of seamanship must be a Knots, knowledge of the knots, bends, and splices, and their use hitches, in the various parts of the rigging and equipment of a "4% ship. Some knots, bends, and hitches are intended to afford

Duties of

a& Sea- man.

the ship into a succession of waves that principally retards her speed, If the waves are approaching at the rate of 10 miles an hour and the ship is steaming against them at a similar rate, they will strike the bows with a force equal to 20 miles an hour. When a ship is steaming through comparatively smooth water (sheltered by land) against a gale of wind, her speed is but little reduced by the force of the wind alone, when other circumstances admit of her working full power. Storm-sails only require short masts, but these and the canvas they support should be strong, which is not the case in the merchant service generally. Every seaman is expected to be thoroughly acquainted with the rigging of the vessel in which he serves, and when in charge he should frequently examine every part, to see that it is efficiently performing the duty assigned to it, being neither too taut nor too slack, nor suffering from chafing, wet, or other injury. He should be capable of repairing or replacing any part with his own hand if necessary

and of teaching others how to do so. He need not necessarily be a navigator, though a good navigator must be a seaman; nor is it necessary that a seaman should be a shipbuilder, a mast-maker, a rope-maker, or a sail-maker, but he should possess a general knowledge of each art, especially the last ; every able seaman should be able to sew a seam and assist the ship's sail-maker in repairing sails. It is greatly to be regretted that various circumstances have brought about such a change in the system of rigging ships, in both the British navy and the mercantile marine, that those who sail in them seldom see it done. Young officers were in former times frequently entrusted with the charge of day watches, during which they would give the necessary orders for making, shorten- ing, or trimming sails, perhaps even tacking and wearing. That practice gave confidence and quickened the desire to learn more ; it was more frequently done in small than in large ships. The general adoption of the steam-engine in ships has not only diminished the value of sail-power but of seamanship also, and has produced such a change in the rig that instead of masts and yards we find only two or three poles. In the British navy so many new sciences have been introduced that seamanship takes but a low place among them at the examination of a midshipman, who has had but little boat duty and probably found the discussion of seamanship in his mess-place contrary to rule. The rapidity with which all sail and mast drill is executed, combined with the perfection of the "station bill," renders it worse than useless as a means of teaching, as it gives a false confidence which fails in the hour of necessity, when the accustomed routine is thrown out by a sail actually splitting to pieces or a spar snapping. The fact that the same men perpetually do the same thing must tend greatly to render each evolution quick so long as every one is in his accustomed place, but sickness or the absence of a party from duty will disorganize the ship for

security as long as desired, and then to be easily disengaged. Other knots, splices, and seizings are of a more permanent character, generally continuing as long as the rope will last.

A

ANS AS NY

Fig. 2. Fig. 1.—Overhand Knot. Fia, 2.—Figure-of-Eight Knot.

Overhand Knot.—Used at the end of ropes to prevent their unreeving and as the commencement of other knots. Fig. 1 represents an overhand knot hauled by aa ej an illustration of the same not hauled tight see Knot, vol. xiv. p.

» Hg. f

Figure-of-Eight Knot (fig. 2).—Used only to prevent ropes from unreeving ; it forms a large knob,

Reef Knot (see Knot, loc, cit., figs. 8 and 9).—First form an overhand knot; then take the end a over the end } and through the bight.2 This knot is so named from being used in tying the reef points of a sail, since it will not jam. Ifthe end @ were taken under the end 6, a granny's knot would be formed.

Bowline Knot.—Lay the end of a rope a over the standing part b; form with b a bight c over a; take a round behind 6 and down through the bight. This is a very useful knot, forming a loop which will not slip. Running bow- lines are formed by making a bowline round its own standing part above b. It is the most common and convenient temporary running noose. See Knot, i.¢., figs. 11 and 12.

Fig. 4.

ay bh Bowline on a Bight.

Fig. 8. Fia. 7.—Cat's-paw. Fic. 8.—Marling-Spike Hitch.

Bowline on a Bight (figs. 8, 4).—The first part is made similar to the above with the double part of the rope ; then the bight a is pulled through sufficiently to allow it to be bent over past d and come up in the position shown in fig, 4. It makes a more comfortable sling for a man than a single bight. 7

Half-Hitch.—Pass the end a round the standing part b and through the bight.

1 A person wishing to make sailor's knots need not be deterred by the want of material, as nearly all that are here represented were made, for the purpose of sketching them, with the lashing of a packing case.

2 For an explanation of this and other technical terms, see the glossary on p. 603 below.

Fig. 5. Fig. 5.—Two Half-Hitches. Fig. 6.—Double Blackwall Hitch.

SEAMANSHIP

This hitch by itself round a large object would not hold and round a small one would jam excessively. See Knot, v.02 fig. 13.

Two Half-Hitches (fig. 5).—The half-hitch repeated ; this is commonly used, and is capable of resisting to the full strength of the rope. A stop from a to the standing part will prevent it jamming.

Clove Hitch.—Pass the end a round a spar or rope and cross it over b, its standing part ; pass it round again and put the end a through the second bight. This hitch is generally used at right angles to the object and is improved by adding a half hitch with the end a round b. When pulled ina line with the spar it becomes simply two half-hitches. An illustration is given in Knot, Le, fig. 15.

Double Blackwall Hitch (fig. 6).—Pass the end a twice round the hook and under the standing part } at the last cross. The ordinary Blackwall hitch only extends to the first cross at 0, and is quickly formed by passing the hook of ajigger through the bight of a rope so that the end may be jammed between it and the standing part, as frombtoa, Used for setting up top-gallant rigging and similar light work when a slip is of little consequence.

Cat's-paw (fig. 7).—Twist up two parts of a lanyard in opposite directions and hook the tackle in the eyes i, 7. A piece of wood should be placed between the parts at g. A large lanyard should be clove-hitched round a large toggle and a strap passed round it below the toggle.

Marling-Spike Hitch (fig. 8).—Lay the end a over c; fold the loop over on the standing part 6; then pass the marling-spike through, over both parts of the bight and under the part b. Used for tightening each turn of a seizing.

OA

DANS Ve

Ay

Aes yj a ¢

2 4 4

Zen a HIN oo AN i iS ——— Zig

=SS=2 Sang ———— a SF —

Fig. 9. Fic. 9.—Fisherman's Bend. Fig. 11.—Timber Hitch.

Fig. 10. Fig. 11. Fra. 10.—Studding-Sail Halyard Bend.

Fisherman's Bend (fig. 9).—Take two turns round a spar, then a half-hitch round the standing part and between the spar and the turns, lastly a half-hitch round the standing part.

Studding-Sail Halyard Bend (fig. 10).—Similar to the above, except that the end is tucked under the first round turn; this is more snug. A magnus hitch has two round turns and one ou the other side of the standing part with the end korg the bight.

Timber Hitch (fig. 11).—Take the end a of a rope round a spar, then round pr aguas part 0, then several times round its own part c, against the lay

e rope.

SN H

~ ee

~~*OMY Sts*~~

~~*Fig. 12.*~~

~~*Fiq. 12.—Snaking. Fig. 13.—Carrick Bend.*~~

~~*Fig. 13. Fig. 14.*~~

~~*Fic. 14.—Inside Clinch. Fia. 15.—Midshipman's Hitch.*~~

~~*Snaking (fig. 12).—This consists of turns and crossings, the latter taken*~~

~~*diagonally with a marling hitch each time. Used to keep wooldings and seiz- ings in place. The same term is applied to lines between the backstays to keep a broken part from falling.*~~

~~*Carrick Bend (fig. 18).—Lay the end of one hawser over its own part to form a bight as ¢, b; pass the end of another hawser up through that bight near }, going out over the first end at c, crossing under the first long part and over its end at d, then under both long parts, forming the loops, and above the first short part at b, terminating at the end e", in the opposite direction vertically and horizontally to the other end. The ends should be securely stopped to their respective standing parts, and also a stop put on the becket or extreme end to prevent it catching a pipe or chock ; in that form this is the best quick means of uniting two large hawsers, since they cannot jam. When large hawsers have to work through small pipes, good security may be obtained either by passing ten or twelve taut racking turns with a suitable strand and securing each end to a standing part of the hawser, or by taking half as many round turns taut, crossing the ends between the hawsers over the seizing and reef-knotting the ends. This should be repeated in three places and the extreme ends well stopped. Connecting hawsers by bowline knots is very objectionable, as the bend is large and the knots jam.*~~

~~*Sheet Bend.—Pass the end of one rope through the bight of another, round both parts of the other, and under its own standing part. Used for bending small sheets to the clews of sails, which present bights ready for the hitch.*~~

~~*An ordinary net is composed of a series of sheet bends. See Knot, Lc., fig. 20. A weaver's knot is made like a sheet bend. .*~~

~~*Single Wall Knot.—Unlay the end of a rope, and with the strand a forma:*~~

~~*bight; take the next strand 6 round the end of a: take the last strand c round the end of } and through the bight made by @; haul the ends taut. A double wall against the lay (not crowned) makes a good stopper.*~~

~~*Single Wall Crowned.—Form a single wall, and lay one of the ends, a, over the knot; lay } over a, and c over 6 and through the bight of a; haul the ends taut. See Knot, l.c., fig. 22.*~~

~~*Double Wall and Double Crown,—Form a single wall crowned; then let the ends follow their own parts round until all the parts appear double; put the ends down through the knot. A very excellent and generally used cable-stopper. See Knot, l.c., fig. 23.*~~

~~*Matthew Walker.—Uniay the end of a rope. Take the first strand round the rope and through its own bight ; the second strand round the rope, through the bight of the first, and through its own bight ; the third through all three bights. Haul all taut. An easily made and useful knot. Illustrations are given in Kwot, l.c., figs. 24 and 25.*~~

~~*Inside Clinch (fig. 14).—The end is bent close round the standing part till it forms a circle and a half, when it is securely seized at a, b, and c, thus making a running eye; when taut round anything it jams the end. Itis used for securing hemp cables to anchors, the standing parts of topsail sheets, and for many other purposes. If the eye were formed outside the bight an outside clinch would be made, depending entirely on the seizings, but more ready for slipping.*~~

~~*Midshipman's Hitch (fig. 15).—Take two round turns inside the bight, the game as a half-hitch repeated ; stop up the end; or let another half-hitch be taken or held by hand. Used for hooking a tackle for a temporary purpose.*~~

~~*Fria, 16.—Turk's Head. Fic. 17.—Spanish Windlass. Fia. 18.—Slings.*~~

~~*Turk's Head (fig. 16).—With fine line (very dry) make a clove hitch round the rope; cross the bights twice, passing an end the reverse way (up or down) each time; then keeping the whole spread flat, let each end follow its own part round and round till it is too tight to receive any more. Used as an ornament variously on side-ropes and foot-ropes of jibbooms, It may also be made with three ends, two formed by the same piece of line secured through the rope and one single piece. Form with them a diamond knot; then each end crossed over its neighbour follows its own part as above.*~~

~~*Spanish Windlass (fig. 17).—An iron bar and two marling-spikes are taken ; two parts of a seizing are twisted like a cat's-paw (fig. 7), passed round the bar, and hove round till sufficiently taut. In heaving shrouds together to form an eye two round turns are taken with a strand and the two ends hove upon. When a lever is placed between the parts of a long lashing or frapping and hove round, we have what is also called a Spanish windlass*~~

~~*Slings (fig. 18).—This is simply the bight of a rope turned up over its own part ; it is frequently made of chain, when a shackle (bow up) takes the place of the bight at s and another at y, connecting the two ends with the part which goes round the mast-head. Used to sling lower yards. For boat's yards it should be a grummet with a thimble seized in at y. As the tendency of all yards is to cant forward with the weight of the sail, the part marked by an beg should be the fore-side,—easily illustrated by a round ruler and a piece of twine.*~~

~~*Fig. 21.*~~

~~*Fig. 21.—Turning in a Dead-Eye end up.*~~

~~*Fig. 19.*~~

~~*Fiq. 19.—Sprit-Sail Sheet Knot. Fig. 20.—Turning in a Dead-Bye Cutter-Stay fashion.*~~

~~*Sprit-Sail Sheet Knot (fig. 19).—This knot consists of a double wall and double crown inade by the two ends, consequently with six strands,—with*~~

the ends furned down. Used formerly in the clews of sails, now as an excellent stopper, a lashing or shackle being placed at s, and a lanyard round the head at J.

Turning in a Dead-Eye Cutter-Stay fashion (fig. 20).—A bend is made in the stay or shroud round its own part and hove together with a bar and strand ; two or three seizings diminishing in size (one round and one or two either round or flat) are hove on taut and snug, the end being at the side of the fellow part. The dead-eye is put in and the eye driven down with a commander.

Turning in a Dead-Eye end up (fig. 21).—The shroud is measured round the dead-eye and marked where a throat-seizing is hove on; the dead-eye is then forced into its place, or it may be put in first. The end beyond a is taken up taut and secured with a round seizing; higher still the end is secured by another seizing. As it is important that the Jay should always be kept in the rope as much as possible, these eyes should be formed conformably, either right-handed or left-handed. It is easily seen which way a rope would natur- ally kink by putting a little extra twist into it. A shroud whose dead-eye is turned in end up will bear a fairer strain, but is more dependent on the seizings ; the under turns of the throat are the first to break and the others the first to slip. With the cutter-stay fashion the standing part of the shroud gives way under the nip of the eye. A rope will afford the greatest resistance to strain when secured round large thimbles with a straight end and a sufficient number of flat or racking seizings. To splice shrouds round dead-eyes is objectionable on account of opening the strands and admitting water, thus hastening decay. In small vessels, especially yachts, it is admissible on the score of neatness ; in

that case a round seizing is placed between the dead-eye and the splice. The dead-eyes should be in dean 1} times the circumference of a hemp shroud and thrice that of wire; the lanyard should be half the nominal size of hemp and the same size as wire; thus, hemp-shroud 12 inches, wire 6 inches, dead- eye 18, lanyard 6 inches.

~~*Short Splice.—The most common description of splice is when a rope is lengthened by another of the sate size, or nearly so, Fig. 22 represents a splice of this kind: the strands have been unlaid, married, and passed through with the assistance of a marling- spike, over one strand and under the next, twice each way. The ca are then cut off close. o render the = : splice neater the strands Hid. 2.=hort Opllan should have been halved before turning them in a second time, the upper half of each strand only being turned in; then all are cut off smooth. LEye- Splice.—Unlay the strauds and place them upon the same rope spread at such a distance as to give the size of the eye; enter the centre strand (unlaid) under a strand of the rope (as above) and the other two in a similar manner on their respective sides of the first; taper each end and pass them through again. If neatness is desired, reduce the ends and pass them through once more; cut off smooth aud serve the part disturbed tightly with suitable hard line. Uses too numerous to mention. Cut Splice.—Made in a similar manner to an eye-splice, but of two pieces of rope, therefore with two splices, Used for mast-head pendants, jib-guys, breast backstays, and even odd shrouds, to keep the eyes of the rigging lower by one part. It is not so strong as two separate eyes, Horse-Shoe Splice.—Made similar to the above, but one part much shorter than the other, or another piece of rope is spliced across an eye, forming a horse- shoe with two long legs. Used for back-ropes on dolphin striker, backstays {one on each side), and cutter's runner pendants. Long Splice.—The strands must be unlaid about three times as much as for a short splice and married,— care being taken to preserve the lay or shape of each, Unlay one of the strands still further and follow up the vacant space with the corresponding strand of the other part, fitting it firmly into the rope till only a few inches remain. Treat the other side in a similar manner. There will then appear two long strands in the centre and a long and a short one on each side, The splice is practically divided into three distinct parts; at each the strands are divided and the corresponding halves knotted (as showu on the top of fig, 24) and turned in twice. The half strand may, if desired, be still further reduced before the halves are turned in for the second time. This and all other splices should be well stretched and hammered into shape before the ends are cut off. The long splice alone is adapted to running ropes.*~~

~~*Shroud Knot (fig, 23),—Pass a stop at such distance from each end of the broken shroud as to afford sufficient leugth of strands, when it is unlaid, to form a single wall knot on each 1 b side after the parts have been e married ; it will then appear as a c represented in the figure, the strands having been well tarred and hove taut separately. The part A en the knot on the d b opposite side and the ends B, b; me) the part c provides the knot and Pia, 30-=Shrona. ned, the ends d, d._ After the knot has been well stretched the ends are tapered, laid smoothly between the strands of the shroud, and firmly served over. This knot is used when shrouds or stays are broken. French Shroud Knot.—Marry the parts with a similar amount of end as before; stop one set of strands taut up on the shroud (to keep the parts together); and turn the ends back on their own part, forming bights. Make a single wall knot with the other three strands round the said bights and shroud; haul the knot taut first and stretch the whole; then heave down the bights close: it will look like the ordinary shroud knot. It is very liable to slip. Ifthe ends by which the wall knot are made after being hove were passed through the bights, it would make the knot stronger. The ends would be tapered and served.*~~

~~*Flemish Hye (fig. 24).—Secure a spar or toggle twice the circumference of the rope intended to be rove through the eye; unlay the rope which is to form the*~~

~~*eye about three times its circumference, at a f ((-5*~~

~~*which part place a strong whipping. Point SQ°r.*~~

~~*the rope vertically under the eye, and bind it taut up by the core if it is four-stranded rope, otherwise bya few yarns. While doing 80, arrange six or twelve pieces of spun-yarn at equal distances on the wood and exactly halve the number of yarns that have been unlaid, If it isa small rope, select two or three yarns from each side near the centre : cross them over the top at a; and half knot them tightly. So continue till all are ex- pended and drawn down tightly on the op- posite side to that from which they came, being thoroughly intermixed. Tic the pieces of aie which were placed under the eye tightly round various parts to keep the ya i eye in shape when taken off the spar, till oie Gea enle ge they are replaced by turns of marline hove on ag taut as possible, the hitches forming a central line outside the eye. Heave*~~

~~*on a good seizing of Spun-yarn close below the spar and another between six and twelve inches below the first; it may then be parcelled and served ; the eye is served over twice, and well tarred each time. As large ropes are composed of so many yarns, a greater number inust be knotted over the toggle each time; a 4-inch rope has 132 yarns, which would require 22 knottings of six each time; a 10-inch rope has 834 yarns, therefore, if ten are taken from each side every time, about twice that number of hitches will be required ; sometimes only half the yarns are hitched, the others being merely passed over. The chief use of these eyes has been to form the collars of stays, the whole stay in each case having to be rove through it,—a very inconvenient device. It is almost superseded for that purpose by a leg spliced in the stay and lashing eyes abaft the mast, for which it is commonly used at present. This eye is not always called by the same name, but the weight of evidence is in favour of calling it a Flemish eye. Ropemaker's Eye, which also has alternative names, is formed by taking out of a rope one strand longer by 6 inches or a foot than the required eye, then placing the ends of the two strands a similar distance below the dis- turbance of the one strand, that is, at the size of the eye; the single strand igs led back through the vacant space it left till it arrives at the neck of the eye, with a similar length of spare end to the other two strands. They are all seized together, scraped, tapered, marled, and served. The principal merit is neatness.*~~

~~*Mouse on a Stay,—Formed by turns of coarse spun-yarn hove taut round the stay, over parcelling at the requisite distance from the eye to form the collar 3 assistance is given by a padding of short yarns distributed equally round the*~~

~~*rope, which, after being firmly secured, especially at what is to be the under*~~

~~*part, are turned back over the first layer and seized down again, thus making a shoulder; sometimes it is formed with parcelling only. In either case it is finished by marling, followed by serving or grafting. The use is to prevent the Flemish eye in the end of the stay from slipping up any farther.*~~

~~*Rolling Hitch (fig. 25).—Two round turng are taken round a spar or large rope in the direction in which it is to be hauled and one half-hitch on the other side of the hauling part. can be put on and off quickly.*~~

~~*Round Seizing (fig. 26).—S80 named when the rope it secures does not cross another and there are three sets of turns. The size of the seizing line is about one-sixth (nominal) that of the ropes to be secured, but varies according to the number of turns to be taken. An eye is spliced in the line and the end rove through it, em- bracing both parts. If either part is to be spread open, commence farthest from that part; place tarred canvas under the seizing ; pass the a round oT pee (with much slack) as it is intended to have sai under-turns ; and pass the end back through Fic. seiainanis Seizing. them all and through the eye. Secure the eye from rendering round by the ends of its splice ; heave the turns on with a marling-spike (see fig. 8), perhaps seven or nine; haul the end through taut; and commence again the riding turns in the hollows of the first. Ifthe end is not taken back through the eye but pushed up between the last two turns (as is sometimes recommended), the riders must be passed the opposite way in order to follow the direction of the under-turns, which are always one more in number than the riders. When the riders are complete, the end is forced between the last lower turns and two cross turns are taken, the end coming up where it went down, when a wall knot is made with the strands and the ends cut close; or the end may be taken once round the shroud. Throat Seizing.—Two ropes or parts of ropes are laid on each other parallel and receive a seizing similar to that shown in fig. 21,—that is, with upper and riding, but no cross turns. As the two parts of rope are intended to turn up at right angles to the direction in which they were secured, the seizing should be of stouter line and short, not exceed- ing seven lower and six riding turns. The end is better secured with a turn round the standing part. Used for turning in dead-eyes and variously, Flat Seizing.—Commenced similarly to the above, but it has neither riding nor cross turns, fs ;*~~

~~*Racking-Seizing (fig. 27).—A running eye having been spliced round one part of the rope, the line is passed entirely round the other part, crossed back round the first part, and so on for ten to tweuty turns accord- é d_b ing to the expected strain, a every turn being hove as*~~

~~*Fic. 25.—Rolling Hitch.*~~

~~*This is very useful, as it*~~

~~*SS.*~~

~~*x yS ANOS*~~

~~*AA 4 tight as possible, after =6=6-8-65 which round turns are<<— 4 22 0922 62 26:*~~

~~*\ yj \'*~~

~~*passed to fill the spaces at the back of each rope, by taking the end a over both parts into the hollow at b, returning at c, and going over tod. When it reaches e aturn may be taken round : , that rope only, the end rove under it, and a half-hitch taken, which will form a clove hitch; knot the end and cut it close. When the shrouds are wire (which is half the size of hemp) and the end turned up round a dead-eye of any kind, wire-seizings are preferable. It appears very undesirable to have wire rigging combined with plates or screws for setting it up, as in case of accident —such as that of the mast going over the side, a shot or collision breaking the ironwork—the seainen are powerless. : Diamond Knot (figs. 28, 29).—The rope must be unlaid as far as the centre if the knot is required there, and the strands handled with great care to keep the lay in them. Three bights are turned vA up as in fig, 28, and the end of a is taken over 0b and up the bight c. The end of b is taken over c and up througha. The end b c is taken over @ and through b. When hauled taut and the strands are laid up again it will appear as in fig. 29, Any number of knots may be made on the same rope. They were used on man-ropes, the foot-ropes on the jibboom, and similar places, where it was necessary to give a good hold for the hands or feet. Turk's heads are now generally used. Double Dia- mond.—Made by the ends of a single dia-mond following their own part till the knot is repeated. Used at the upper end .. 2 side rope as an ornamental stopper- Fics. 28, 29.—Diamond Knot. Stropping-Blocks.—There are various modes of securing blocks to ropes ; the most simple is to splice an eye at the end of the rope a little longer than the block and pass a round seizing to keep it in place; such is the case with jib- pendants. As a general rule, the parts of a strop combined should*~~

~~*possess greater strength than the parts of the fall which act against it. The shell of an ordinary block should be about three times the circumference of the rope which is to reeve through it, as a 9-inch block for a 83-inch rope; but small ropes require larger blocks in proportion, as a 4-inch block for a 1-inch rope. When the work to be done is very important the blocks are much larger; brace-blocks are more than five times the nominal size of the brace.*~~

~~*CNA)*~~

~~*Fic. 27.—Racking Seizing.*~~

~~*Fia. 30.—Grummet-Strop.*~~

~~*Leading-blocks and sheaves in racks are generally smaller than the blocks through which the ropes pass farther*~~

~~*SEAMANSHIP*~~

~~*away, which appears to be a mistake, as more power is lost by friction. A clump-block should be double the nominal size of the rope. A single strop may be made by joining the ends of a rope of sufficient length to go round the block and thimble by a common short splice, which rests on the crown of the plock (the opposite end to the thimble) and is stretched into place by a jigger ; a strand is then passed twice round the space between the block and the thimble and hove taut by a Spanish windlass to cramp the parts together ready for the reception of a small round seizing. The cramping or pinching into shape is sometimes done by machinery invented by a rigger in Portsmouth dockyard. The strop may be made the required length by a long splice, but it would not possess any advantage.*~~

~~*Grummet-Strop (fig. 30).—Made by unlaying a piece of rope of the desired size about a foot more than three times the length required for the strop. Place the centre of the rope round the block and thimble; mark with chalk where the parts cross; take one strand out of the rope; bring the two chalk marks together ; and cross the strand in the lay on both sides, continuing round and round till the two ends meet the third time; they are then halved, and the upper halves half-knotted and passed over and under the next*~~

~~*strands, exactly as one part of a long splice. A piece of worn or well-stretched rope will better retain its shape, upon which success entirely depends. The object is neatness, and if three or multiples of three strops are to be made it is economical.*~~

~~*Double Strop (fig. 81).—Made with one piece of rope, the splice being brought as usual to the crown of the block, t, the bights fitting into scores some inches apart, converging to the upper part, above which the thimble receives the bights a, a; and the four parts of the strap are secured ats, s by a round seizing doubly crossed. If the block be not then on the right slew 5 (the shell horizontal or vertical) a union thimble is used with another strop, which produces the desired effect ; thus the fore and main brace-blocks, being very large and thin, are required (for appearance) to lie horizontally ; a single strop round the yard vertically has a union thimble between it and the double strop round the block, The double strop is used for large blocks; it gives more sup- port to the shell than the single strop and admits of smaller rope being used. Wire rope is much used for block-strops ; the fitting is similar. Metal blocks are also used in fixed positions; durability is their chief recom- mendation. Great care should be taken that they do not chafe the ropes which pass by them as well as those which reeve through.*~~

~~*Selvagee Strop.—Twine, rope-yarn, or rope is warped round two or more pegs placed at the desired distance apart, till it assumes the requisite size and strength ; the two ends are then knotted or spliced. Temporary firm seizings are applied in several places to pind the parts together before the rope or twine is removed from the pegs, after which it is marled with suitable material. A 1.—Doubl large strop should be warped round four or six pegs in Fi. ouhle order to give it the shape in which it is to be used. This BOD: description of strop is much stronger and more supple than rope of similar size. Twine strops (covered with duck) are used for boats' blocks and in similar places requiring neatness. Rope-yarn and spun-yarn strops are used for attaching luff-tackles to shrouds and for many similar purposes. To bring to a shroud or hawser the centre of the strop is passed round the rope and each part crossed three or four times before hooking the 'luff'; a spun-yarn stop above the centre will prevent slipping and is very necessary with wire rope. 'As an instance of a large selvagee block-strop being used,— when the "Melville" was hove down at Chusan (China), the*~~

~~main-purchase-block was double stropped with a selvagee containing 28 parts of 8-inch rope; that would produce 112 parts in the neck, equal toa breaking strain of 280 tons, which is oa than four parts of a 19-inch cable. The estimated strain it bore was 80 tons.~~

~~Stoppers for ordinary running ropes are made by splicing a piece of rope to a bolt or to a hook and thimble, unlaying 3 or 4 feet, tapering it by cutting away some of the yarns, and marling it down securely, with a good whipping also onthe end, It is used by taking a half-hitch round the rope which is to be hauled upon, dogging the end up in the lay, and holding it by hand. The rope can come through it when hauled, but cannot go back.~~

~~Whipping and Pointing.—The end of every working rope should at least be whipped to prevent it fagging out; in ships of war and yachts they are invari- ably pointed. Whipping is done by placing the end of a piece of twine or knittie-stuff on a rope about an inch from the end, taking three or four turns taut over it (working towards the end); the twine is then laid on the rope again lengthways contrary to the first, leaving a slack bight of twine; and taut turns are repeatedly passed round the rope over the first end and over the bight, till there are in all six to ten turns; then haul the bight taut through between the turns and cutit close. To point a rope, place a good whipping a few inches from the end according to size ; open out the end entirely ; select all the outer yarns and twist them into knittles either singly or two or three together ; scrape down; and taper the central part, marling it firmly. Turn every alter- nate knittle and secure the remainder down by a turn of twine or a smooth yarn hitched close up, which acts as the weft in weaving. The knittles are then reversed and another turn of the weft taken, and this is continued till far enough to look well. At the last turn the ends of the knittles which are laid back are led forward over and under the weft and hauled through tightly, making it present a circle of small bights, level with which the core is cut off smoothly. HIawsers and large ropes have a becket formed in their ends during the process of pointing. A piece of 1 to 14-inch rope about 1} to 2 feet long is spliced into the core by each end while it is open: from four to seven yarns (equal to a strand) are taken at a time and twisted up; open the ends of the becket only sufficient to marry them close in ; turn in the twisted yarns between the strands (as splicing) three times ; and stop it above and below. Both ends are treated~~

alike ; when the pointing is completed a loop a few inches in length will protrude from the end of the rope, which is very useful for reeving it. A hauling line or reeving line should only be rove through the becket as a fair lead. Grafting is very similar to pointing and frequently done the whole length of a rope, as a side-rope. Pieces of white line more than double the length of the rope, sufficient in number to encircle it, are made up in hanks called foxes ; the centre of each is made fast by twine and the weaving process continued as iu pointing. Block-strops are sometimes so covered ; put, as it causes decay, a small wove mat which can be taken off occasionally is preferable.

Sheep-Shank (fig. 82).-Formed by making a long bight in a top-gallant-back-

RA NS

DO LED Les Ghee RARER RRRBARARERa!

sg ON

DD rx ss VAaARaaays coor

fron =r SS SSaewe — SSS SUE Ss TSS SSNS SELON a way

Fic. 32,—Sheep-Shank.

stay, or any rope which it is desirable to shorten, and taking a half-hitch near each bend, as at a, a. Rope-yarn stops at }, b are desirable to keep it in place

593

till the strain is brought onit. Wire rope cannot be so treated, and it is in-jurious to hemp rope that is large and stiff.

Knotting Yarns (fig. 83).—This operation becomes necessary when a com-paratively short piece of junk is to be made into spun-yarn, or large rope into small, which is called twice laid. The end of each yarn is divided, rubbed smooth, and inar- ried (as for splicing). Two of the divided parts, .

~~as ¢, cand d, d, are passed Fia. 33.—Knotting Yarns. in opposite directions round all the other parts and knotted. The ends e and fremain passive. The figure is drawn open, but the forks of A and B should be pressed close together, the knot hauled taut, and the ends cut off.~~

~~Butt Stings (fig. 34).— Made of 4-inch rope, each pair being 26 feet in length, with an eye spliced in one end, through which the other is rove before being placed over one end of the cask; the rope is then passed round the opposite side of the cask and two half-hitches made with the end, forming another run- ning eye, both of which are beaten down taut as the tackle receives the weight. Slings for smaller casks requiring care should be of this description, though of smaller rope, as the cask cannot possibly slip out. Bale Slings are made by splicing the ends of about 3 fathoms of 8-inch rope together, which then looks like a long strop, similar to the double strop repre- sented in fig. 31,—the bights ¢ being placed under the~~

~~AX~~

~~Fia. 34.—Butt Slings. cask or bale and one of the bights a, « rove through the other and attached to the whip or tackle.~~

~~The marks on the lead-line are leather at 2, 8, and 10 fathoms, white at 5 and 15, red at 7 and 17, and blue at 13. The length of the lead is not usually included. The deep-sea line commences with 2 knots at 20, another knot being~~

~~added for every 10 fathoms, and a single knot at each intermediate 5. Log-lines should have ample stray line (distance between the log-ship and the first mark). The distance of 47 feet and a 28-second-glass were adopted to assimilate the sea furlong to the shore furlong, which was absurd. Fifty feet to half a minute would be more correct and more convenient.~~

~~_ Since space will not allow ofa full description of masting and Masting. rigging, only a few of the more important points will be noticed. The masts must be stepped before they are rigged; accordingly we will first describe the mannrr in which they are put on board in cases where the assistance of shears on hulk or jetty is not available ; at an out-port a seaman is still left to his own resources, just as he was in former times. Fixing the masts in a~~

large frigate, such as that shown in fig. 35 below, is a serious consideration, as the mainmast weighs about twenty tons.

Two suitable spars must be procured about three-fourths the length of the main-mast and about two-thirds its diameter,—the greater the housing the higher the shears. They are towed along- side or under the stern with the thicker ends forward, and par- buckled over the side or hoisted in through the stern-ports by means of a derrick, whichever is most convenient. The smaller ends are rested upon a spar across the gunnel or the break of the poop, crossed, and lashed with strong well-stretched rope (about 44 or 5 inches) passed figure-of-eight fashion, commencing at the centre, returning with riding turns as a racking seizing, and crossed again ; the turns at the extreme ends should not be so taut as the others. Care must be taken to place the seizing equidistant from each heel after they have been trimmed to fit flat upon shoes of strong oak planking; they will remain within their full spread by about 2 feet each side till after the head seizing has been secured. Lash a threefold purchase-block to the horns above the lashings, to hang down clear under the cross, so as to correspond with a twofold block to be lashed to the mast. If such blocks cannot be procured two top-blocks may be substituted for the upper block and one on the mast, reserving the fourth top-block as a lead secured to one of the shear legs or near it.1 Two purchases may be used at the same time with advantage, one block hanging on the fore, the other on the after side.

The mizzen-mast should be brought alongside with its head aft, and a sufficiently strong selvagee strop lashed on the fore side if it

1 Top-blocks in large ships are 26 inches, carrying 93-inch rope, the break- ing strain of which is 25 tons; by taking the standing part down to the mast there are three parts lifting, equal to 75 tons,—a sufficient margin over 20 tons. Twenty-two-inch blocks and an 8-inch rope would break at 54 tons. Large ships have one 26-inch and one 24-inch double block for jeers, which would

reeve an 8-inch rope. The size of a block implies the length of the shell, ofa rope its circumference, and ofa chain cable the diameter of the iron.

~~is to be lifted by one purchase, and one on each side if two are used, and as high up as the shears will allow, the limit being from heel to lashing 6 or 8 feet less than from the lower side of the purchase-~~

~~are now usually bolted on in the mast-house. The gird-line from the shear-head must be bent to the head of the mast at a suitable As the mast is hove up by the~~

~~Bow- sprit.~~

~~block to the deck. Old spars 30 having been hung over the side for the mast to rub against and the purchase fall taken round~~

~~height to act as a topping-lift.~~

~~13 capstan a stout rope from out- board must be timber-hitched round the heel so as to ease it in as it clears the gunnel, and to haul~~

~~the capstan, the mast is hove~~

~~up till the head comes above the gunnel; then two single blocks with long-tailed strops are secured round it with the gird-lines of about 4 inches and twice the length of the mast ready rove. The trestle-trees 3S~~

~~it towards the partners (mast-hole); when it has been lowered to within 2 feet of the step, a slew rope is passed three times round the mast and a "cat's-paw" formed on each side, through the eyes of which a capstan bar is passed ready to heave either way as~~

~~go~~

~~ff~~

~~P| il~~

~~—_— —< — — a — aap —< er — —~~

~~*Fic. 35.—The spars and rigging of a frigate.l1 1, the bowsprit; 2, bobstays, three pairs; 8, sprit-sail-gafls, projecting on each side of the bowsprit,—the ropes at the extremities are jib-guys and flying-jib-guys; 4, jibboom; 5, martingale-stay, and below it the flying-jib-martingale ; 6, back-ropes ; 7, flying-jibboom ; 8, fore-royal-stay, flying-jib-stay, and halyards; 9, fore-top-gallant-stay, jib-stay, and halyards; 10, two fore-top-mast-stays and fore-top-mast stay-sail halyards; 11, the fore-top-bowlines, stopped into the top and two fore-stays ; 12, two fore-tacks; 18, fore-truck; 14, fore-royal-mast, yard, and lift; 15, top-gallant-mast, yard, and lift; 16, fore-top-mast, top-sail-yard, lift, and reef-tackle ; 17, fore-top, fore-lift, and top-sail-sheet ; 18, fore-mast and fore-shrouds, nine pairs; 19, fore-sheets ;.20, fore-gaff'; 21, fore-top-mast back-stays and top-sail-tye ; 22, royal and top-gallant back-stays; 28, fore-royal-braces and main-royal-stay; 24, fore-top-gallant-braces and main-top-gallant-stay ; 25, standing parts or fore-top-sail-braces and main-top-mast-stays ; 26, hauling parts of fore-top-sail-braces and main-to -bowlines ; 27, four parts of fore-braces ; 28, main-stays; 29, main-tacks ; 80, main-truck ; 31, main-royal-braces ; 82, mizzen-royal-stay and mizzen-royal-braces ; 33, main-top-gallant-braces and mizzen-top-gallant-braces ; 34, standing parts of main-top-sail-braces and mizzen-top-mast-stay ; 35, mizzen-top-sail-braces; 86, hauling parts of main-top-sail-braces, mizzen-top-bowlines, and cross- jack-braces ; 87, main-braces and mizzen-stay ; 88, standing part of peak halyards ; 39, vangs, similar on each gaff; 40, ensign staff; 41, spanket-boom ; 42, quarter-boat's davits; 48, one of the davit topping-lifts and wind-sail; 44, main-yard-tackle; 45, a bull-rope.*~~

~~*required ; in the meantime both the heel of the mast and the step should be well coated with white lead or coal-tar. Lower and slew according to directions from below ; when the mast is stepped and brought to the desired position, place four temporary wedges, rig a triangle, trice it up by the gird-lines, un- lash the purchase or strops, overhaul down, unrig the triangle, and haul the gird-lines taut on each side.*~~

~~*The shears can be transported forward in nearly an prt posi- i tion by first pulling the heel-tackles and then ===* —————— *the guys, shifting the p56 guys forward one at a tingal time as necessary. The main-mast and the fore-mast are taken in in the same way as the mizzen-mast, described above,—*~~

~~*all three abaft the shears; but, being much longer, they require greater hoist and greater care generally.*~~

~~*To take in the bowsprit the shears are again moved forward, all the heel-tackles being led forward and extra lashings placed on the heels. A purchase nearly as strong as that to be used in lifting the bowsprit should be secured between the fore-mast-head and the shear-head, or two parts of a stout hawser may be used, the middle being clove-hitched over the horns and the ends taken round*~~

~~*—Schooner yacht. 1, bowsprit, with mar- tingale to the stem ; 2, fore-top-mast-stay, jib, and stay-fore-sail; 3, fore-gaff-top-sail; 4, fore- sail and main-stays; 5, main-gaff-top-sail; 6, main-sail; 7, end of boom.*~~

~~*outside the housing, which is generally about two-fifths of the*~~

~~*whole length. The main purchase should plumb nearly the length*~~

~~*of the housing outside the bows, and the higher the shear-head tr*~~

~~*the greater the freedom of motion. The outer purchase l attached to a strop through the hole in the cap and the guys from the cap to each cat-head alike tend to force in the bow- sprit when it is high enough ; besides this, a heel rope is put AK / f ahead of the ship nearly hori-] zontal, or at the angle (steeve) << b ae which it is intended to assume, / JSS and the ship is moved ahead ——- towards it, till the bowsprit en- == —<—<— ters in the desired position. Fia. 37.—Cutter yacht. 1, bowsprit and The directions for masting a martingale ; 2, jib,—-behind it is the large ship are more than suffi- fore-sail; 8, cross-trees and top-mast-*~~

~~*round it before it leaves the water, and a strop with a tackle*~~

~~*i . shroud; 4, pennant designating the elent for masting a Me mall one, elub to which she belongs; 5, gaff- which is so much easier.*~~

~~*into the hole and mortise. It is hoisted to about an angle of 45° before the heel is entered. A rough sketch made to scale will greatly facilitate such*~~

~~*opera- tions and ensure success. When a bowsprit is put in by shears on a hulk or jetty, it is hoisted up*~~

~~*to the bitts is used to bowse it top-sail; 6, peak of gaff, hoisted by*~~

~~*peak and throat halyards; 7, main- Rigging*~~

~~*beams well aft on either side, ready for veering as the shears are ; 7, mi sail; 8, end of boom and topping-lift. how-*~~

~~*drooped (to an angle of about 45°), then to act as the rincipal support; the fore-guys are also taken aft to assist. The fore-mast must be wedged on both decks and one or more tackles used to keep the head aft. The bowsprit cap is invariably bolted on in*~~

~~*Gammoning the bowsprit is the most important point in ; rigging a ship, as the stays of the fore-mast and main-top-mast Sprit. depend for security on the bowsprit. In large ships there are two distinct lashings (of either new stretched rope or chain) to keep the*~~

~~*the mast-house; the bowsprit is then brought under the bows with the cap end forward and slung for the main purchase a little*~~

~~*1 References are not repeated for each mast where the names and functions are identical.*~~

~~*bowsprit down ; they are passed in a similar manner over a long saddle-shaped piece of wood called a gammoning fish and through the holes in the head knees, the outer one first. One end is clinched or shackled round the bowsprit over the fore-part of the hole; the*~~

~~*Ss eatanNn® Hi P 595*~~

~~*other, being rove through the after-part of the hole, comes up on | necessary to rearrange the gird-lines, as it is obviously inconvenient Lower the aft side of the first turn on the bowsprit and down inside that | to hoist the eye of a shroud over the mast and allow it to fall down rigging.*~~

~~*part and before the turns in the hole, thus forming a double cross with the first turns outside. Every turn is set up as passed by means of a pendant through the hawse-pipe or bow-port, and a block is secured to the hole for the bobstays, which are attached to the gammoning by a selvagee or toggle, and held while the next turn is being passed by a racking seizing if rope and by nails driven through the links into the fish if chain. When the hole is full of turns—eight or ten—the whole is frapped together as tightly as possible, commencing at the lower part.*~~

~~*The clothing of a bowsprit of a large ship consists of nine strops for its own security and the fore-stays. A bobstay collar is hove on at one-third the distance between the night-heads and the outer extremity, and close outside it two bowsprit shroud collars and a fore-stay collar, then the second bobstay collar, two bowsprit shroud collars, another fore-stay collar, and the third bobstay collar ; in addition to these there is a cap bobstay, which sets up to a bolt close inside the bowsprit cap. The bobstay and bowsprit shroud collars are hove on at right angles to the spar and usually cleated in that position. But this cleating is a mistake; as the strain*~~

~~*comes upon each of them very obliquely, it is necessary that they*~~

~~*should yield in that direction before the cleats are nailed, or they will give way and slacken the rope when it is most required to be taut. Bobstays are cut to the required length, wormed and parcelled from the centre towards the ends, and served; they are rove through their respective holes in the cutwater before being spliced, which splice is tapered, parcelled, and served over, and rests on the head of the heart when it is seized in. The bobstays and bowsprit shrouds are set up by lanyards half the nominal size if rope and the same size if wire; the standing parts are secured by running eyes round the necks of the collars confining the hearts, and are set up by two luffs, one acting upon the other.*~~

~~*The cross-trees are swayed up one ata time by the two gird-lines, whose united action and a guy on deck conduct them to their places, where they drop into recesses and are bolted to the trestle-trees. When a whole top is to be got up it is placed abaft the mast (except the mizzen) with the lower side forward and the fore part upper- most ; the gird-lines are passed under it, that is, before it, each being rove up through the second hole from aft for*~~

~~*the futtock- ee and hitched tightly to its own part as it passes the lubber's iole, which part is also stopped to the hole at the fore part of the top. If it bea large top each gird-line may be taken down the fore (under) side (as before), rove up through the after-hole for the futtock-plate, down through the lubber's hole, taut up through the foremost hole, and hitched to the hoisting part, which is stopped firmly to the fore part, where a gird-line leading from the mast abaft is also stopped after the end has been made fast to the centre hole for the top-rail ; that gird-line is to keep the top clear of the trestle-trees as it goes up and to assist in placing it. There are several slightly different ways of slinging a whole top; but in all cases the gird-line blocks (after the stop is cut) hoist the fore part higher than themselves, till it falls over them and hangs as nearly horizontal as could be judged in slinging it. The final ad- justment of it in its place is done by hand, and then it is bolted to the cross-trees. The mizzen-top is put over either in a similar manner with a guy to the taffrail or sent up before the mast with the after part uppermost, a gird-line from the main-mast-head keeping it clear of the trestle-trees, which project much farther on the fore side. Tops are taken off by the reverse process ; but it is more difficult to get the hole back over the mast-head.*~~

~~*Tops are now very seldom made in one part, but in two halves, which is more convenient and equally serviceable. Each half is sent up in a similar manner to the whole top; the gird-lines are bent on precisely the same way, but one half at a time, which falls square at the side of the mast when the stop is cut instead of going over the top of the mast. After the top is bolted, it is advisable to hoist up the lower cap into the top while the whole space of the lubber's hole is still free, but not to put it on till after the lower rigging is fixed. The cap being placed near the mast with the bolts downwards and the hole for the top-mast forward, both gird- lines are brought down through the lubber's hole on the same side , that which crossed before the mast is bent on to the fore part of the cap, and that which belongs to the side on which the cap is lying is made to sling the after part fairly and is then stopped to the fore part, so that this last is hoisted up by both gird-lines end on till in the top, when, the stop at the fore end being cut, the cap hangs in front of the mast and the round hole can be placed exactly over the space between the trestle-trees where the top-mast will come up.*~~

~~*Preparatory to sending up the lower rigging on the masts it is*~~

~~*over both parts of a heavy rope which would require to be hauled up from the deck or rerove every time; therefore they are lashed to the leads in the trestle-trees for the truss falls, and a small gird- line is lashed high up abaft the mast to be worked in the top for both sets of rigging. The starboard tackle-pendant is put over first, then the port pair, next the starboard foremost pair of shrouds followed by the port pair, and so on alternately till all the shrouds are in place, ending with an odd one called a swifter on each side. Large ships have four pairs of shrouds and a swifter on each side. They are all sent up in a similar manner : the large gird-line from the trestle-tree is secured to the pendant at the extremity and to the shrouds more than the length of the mast-head below the seizing by means of a strop with a slip-rope, toggle, and down-haul ; the eye is opened to the shape of the mast-head and the after-port is stopped to the gird-line, which sways it up to the lubber's hole, when the men in the top bend the eye in the direction it is to go over the mast and make fast their small gird-line a fathom or two below the seizing, with a stop on the after part of the eye, which is cut when the pendant or shroud is fair for going over the mast-head. When the shroud is over, each eye is hardened down by a large mallet called a "commander." Ropes should be rove through the thimbles of the pendants and hauled taut when they are being driven down ; then the " up-and-down" tackles should be hooked to the short legs (which are forward), while the long legs are being lashed abaft the mast and the runner-blocks lashed to them for staying the mast by the runners. As each pair of shrouds are put over, they should be temporarily set up by the dead-eyes and lan-yards, or by a luff-tackle on each, to prevent their springing up before another pair presses upon them. It is of very great import- ance to keep each eye taut before others press on it both for pre- servation and appearance ; many an eye has been stripped of its service and parcelling through slipping out from under the weight. A piece of rounding made fast to a bolt in the hounds of the mast with an eye in the other end is very useful for keeping the back of the eye down while it is being made taut, by reeving the short eye end up through the eye of the shroud and hooking a burton from the deck to it, which is Meee upon at the same time that the shroud is set up on the other side of the ship ; when finished, that piece of rope will be jammed. The lower stays, after they have been completely fitted and the*~~

~~*hearts have been turned in, are stopped together one over the other at the fork of the collar, at the sides, and at the eyes. The gird-lines, having been put back to the mast-head, are sent down through the lubber's hole, one crossing the fore side of the mast, and are bent to both stays below the fork of collars and stopped to the eyes ; they are thus swayed up near their pag the respective eyes being lashed together by rose-lashings low down over the eyes of all the shrouds, The hearts are then carried forward, the fore to the hearts in collars round the bowsprit and the main to hearts provided for the purpose near the fore-partners, while the collars of the stays are suspended from the fore-part of the top, the collars being eased down as required to preserve a straight line between the lashing-eyes and the point where the stay is set up.*~~

~~*The following is the method employed to set up the rigging on Setting the masts. It is first drawn forward by the runners and tackles up stays.*~~

~~*(lashed to the long legs of mast-head' pendants, which are lashed together abaft the mast) till brought before the position it is intended to stand in, as the strain of the shrouds will draw it aft. Many seamen recommend, with reason, that a strain should be brought on the after-swifters while it is being stayed, to keep it more firm. The propriety of wedging the mast before the rigging is set up may be considered an open question ; it was considered lubberly forty years ago, but is now the common practice. The lanyards of the stays are in proportion smaller than those of the shrouds, since many more turns can be passed through hearts than through dead-eyes. The standing parts are made fast round the collar or strop of the lower heart by a running eye; the end is rove up through the heart in the stay and down through the lower one twice and the slack hauled through by the sail-tackle, which must be previously secured for that purpose round the lower mast-head and hung over the fore-part of the top; or the two top- burtons may be used, one for each stay. When the slack of the lanyard is through and racked, the double block of a lnff-tackle is attached by turning the bight back over a toggle or glut, as slings are represented in fig. 18. Then a selvagee strop is passed twice round both parts below the bight s (when the figure is turned up). brought up on the side of the arrow, and hooked to the luff, A cat's-paw, as shown in fig. 7, may be used with a glut placed at 9 to keep the parts open, otherwise a large rope would be injured. The single*~~

~~*block of the luff is secured to the stay as high up as it will reach by a long double-tailed selvagee, which is dogged softly at first, but terminates with close-taut turns and a spun- yarn seizing. Care must be taken to prevent kinking the rope, especially if it is wire; if hemp, it should be parcelled to pro- tect the outer yarns. The fall of the luff is connected with the*~~

~~*Lan- A lanyard for rigging with dead-eyes is half the nominal size of | lower cap, upon 'which the after-part will rest, securely lashed to yards. rope shrouds and the same size as wire rigging. The knot is inside | the bolts to prevent it slipping, while the fore-part will lean under the end of the shrond, or is first spliced to a bolt in the | against the top-mast at such a distance as to cnsnre it falling in chains and then rove through that hole; it is rove full before | the right position when the top-mast is lowered and to receive the commencing to set up. The mast having been stayed, luffs are | head of the mast between the trestle-trees as it is swayed up again placed on the shrouds with the double block down and brought to | toa convenient position for recciving the rigging. The rigging is the lanyard as above described ; the up-and-down tackle from the { swayed up by gird-lines on the cross-trees, and put over in a similar inast-head pendant is secured to the fall of the luff by a cat's-paw | manner to the lower rigging, the top-burton pendants first, then and strop and pulled up till taut enough, the foremost shroud on | the shrouds and backstays in succession, and the stays are lashed. the starboard side first, then that on the port side, and so on There is usually a chain necklace round each top-mast-head, sunk alternately till they are all nearly taut alike (the after-swifters not | in the bolsters ; one leg of each is for the top-sail-tye hanging-block quite so taut as the others), which is best ascertained by an | to shackle to, and forward there are two other legs for the jib-hal- experienced man shaking them ; if the dead-eyes are not square | yards and fore-top-mast stay-sail-halyards. After the rigging has (even) when finished, it is far better to turn them in afresh than } been placed over the top-mast-head, the cap is sent up by two gird- to have an uneqnal strain on the shronds. Ifa pair of shrouds | lines lashed as high as possible and bent to the foremost part of were set up at the same time it would be better for the eye and | the cap, with stops to the after-bolts, by which means it goes up the seizing. 'Tar should be used freely on the lanyards as they | before all, with the under-side towards the mast ; when it is high enter the dead-eyes, whether they are of iron or wood*~~

~~; it causes | enough the after-stops are cut and it slides up on the top of the~~ ~~them to slip quite as well as grease and preserves the rope, while | mast,~~ ~~assisted by men at the mast-head, who get it over the square grease causes~~ ~~it to decay. The lanyards are seized to the next | and beat it down. Directly~~ ~~the top-mast is in position to receive part till a clove hitch is taken above~~ ~~the dead-eye and the end | the rigging the top-rope pendants are rove and~~ ~~the tackles secured, seized down; the parts of the lanyard should then be~~ ~~made to | first one to relieve the hawser of the weight and then the other in~~ ~~bear an equal strain, and afterwards seized together lest any part | its~~ ~~place. Copper funnels are sometimes used to receive the top- should be~~ ~~injured. The runners should be kept taut till every- | mast rigging, similar to~~ ~~those for top-gallant-masts. thing is secured, then eased up gently, to avoid~~ ~~straining the Top-gallant and royal rigging is sometimes stripped of the~~ ~~service Top-gal- mast. Lower masts generally have an inclination to belly,—~~ ~~z.¢., | and covered with canvas, which is afterwards painted, for the sake~~ ~~lant and bend aft. Space will not admit of details being given as to the | of~~ ~~neatness; but the durability of the rope is thereby greatly royalrig- various~~ ~~parts of the rigging; the main principles follow the lines | lessened. Another~~ ~~bad practice is that of taking off one of the top- ging. of that which' has~~ ~~been already rather fully described above. | gallant-backstays, thereby~~ ~~directly diminishing the support. But The top-mast stays and rigging are set~~ ~~up by means of top-burtons | worse still is the trick of forming the eyes of~~ ~~rigging and backstays and jiggers, the top-gallant-rigging and that of all~~ ~~small vessels | by two seizings, the ends of each rope going to different sides~~ ~~of by jiggers and light appliances. the ship; this gives two eyes over the~~ ~~mast instead of four, and Lower The lower caps were supposed to have been~~ ~~swayed up by the | makes everything depend on the strength of the seizings.~~ ~~It is now cap and gird-lines and placed in position to receive the top-masts~~ ~~before the | a very common practice to cross the top-gallant rigging and set~~ ~~it top- lower rigging was put over. To fix one of them in its place, let a | up~~ ~~on opposite sides of the top, instead of reeving it through the mast. top-~~ ~~block be hoisted up lashed to the mast-head close below the | necklace on~~ ~~the top-mast and setting it up on the same side.~~

~~*sail-tackle (by one of the means described) and the sail-tackle fall led in the direction of the stay; it is pulled up steadily, the nips of the lanyards having been well tarred to make them slip through the hearts, while they are also shaken up by levers. When taut enough the lanyard is securely seized to the next part, another turn rove, set up, and seized, till the scores in the hearts are full ; then riding turns are taken. Whilst the first riding turn still bears the strain, all the seizings on the lanyards should be cut off, and others put on when each part has taken over an equal strain. After the riding turns are completed, the end of the lanyard is secured by a clove-hitch and a seizing. Where there is not a sail- tackle a long luff may be used in a similar manner, the double block being secured above the single block of the other luff. It is desirable that both stays on the masts should be set up at the same time, but it is not imperative; care should be taken that they are equally taut.*~~

~~*square on which the cap is to rest, on the side suitable to the sheave in the top-mast ; through the block reeve a suitable hawser (9 inches for a large ship) ; send the fore end down through the square hole between the trestle-trees ; lay it along the top-mast (the spare one if allowed two); reeve it through the live sheave in the heel; and hitch it round the head of the top-mast, and hawser, leaving considerable end; also place a good lashing round the mast-head and the hoist- ing-part of the hawser and seize the two parts of the hawser together about half-way up, strong enough to bear the weight of the mast. If the top-mast be much longer than the space between the deck and the trestle-tree, the lashing must be placed low enough from the head of the mast to allow it, while suspended, to project above the top outside, while the heel is guided down the main hatchway or fore-scuttle. The capstan is used to heave the mast up; when it is pointed between the trestle-trees, remove the lashing round the head, and if landed—z.¢., resting its weight on the deck— make the end of the hawser fast round the mast-head, the hitch being on the side opposite to the block, and cast off the racking lashing, leaving the mast ready to be hove up by the two parts of the hawser. If not landed, heave up 3 or 4 feet before securing the end of the hawser, so that, when that has been done and well seized, the capstan may be moved back till both parts bear an equal strain ; the racking can then be taken off without fear of a jerk. After the head of the top-mast has been hove 3 or 4 feet through the hole in the cap, it is securely lashed, commencing*~~

~~*with a clove- hitch round the mast, the ends being passed through the bolts under the cap on one side and repeated on the other, so that it will be sure to hang horizontally. Heave round the capstan till the cap is above the lower mast-head ; then steer it by means of a handspike or capstan bar in the fid-hole, while men in the top direct the head of the top-mast by handspikes, till the hole in the cap is exactly over the square of the mast, when by moving back the capstan and beating the cap down with a commander it will fit firmly in its place.*~~

~~*If the heel of the top-mast rests on the deck before the head*~~

~~*SEA WARHe a IP*~~

~~*is free from the trestle-trees, it is as well to lower it down to that position ; but, if it is too short to rest there, the up-and-down tackles must be used to suspend it by strops through the fid-hole, while the top-block is being unlashed and hooked to the after- bolt fixed for that purpose in the cap and the end of the hawser secured to the foremost bolt on the opposite side. In large ships a shore is placed under the fore-part of the cap to support the weight and resist a possible blow from the top-sail-yard. 'The top- mast may now (unless it is blowing hard) be swayed right up and fidded to prove that it will fit when required (an allowance being made for the wood swelling with wet), and sent on deck in ex- change for the other mast, which when swayed above the lower cap will have a gird-line lashed round the head and then be raised 15 or 20 feet more. One part of the gird-line should be sent down abaft all and bent on to the fore-part of the top-mast cross-trees ; by this, assisted by a guy, they can be swayed up till above the*~~

~~*This is done entirely for the sake of saving seconds in shifting the spars, either the top-gallant-mast or the top-mast. Shrouds so treated give no support to the mast whatever ; probably they act in the reverse way, as may be easily shown by drawing a straight line to represent the masts when standing upright and lines in rough proportion at right angles for the top and cross-trees. Draw the top-gallant rigging on one side from mast to cross-tree and thence to the opposite side of the top. The top-mast, having a little play in the cap and at the heel, is bound to go over some inches at the head, taking the cross-tree with it; it will then be seen that the weather side*~~

~~*of the cross-tree has approached the lee side of the top, slacking the weather and tightening the lee top- gallant rigging.*~~

~~*Getting a lower yard on board requires great care to avoid injury Lower Spars should be slung yards.*~~

~~*to the hammock netting and other things. over the side for it to rub against and slip-ropes through the ports to ease it over the gunnel. If it is to be hoisted in on the port- side, the starboard yard-arm is towed foremost. A hawser may be rove through the port top-block down through the lubber's hole and bent round the centre of the yard. The hatch of the lubber's hole must be open and a strong mat provided. Instead of the hawser the jeers may be partially rove, the standing part being secured to the yard, and also the sail-tackle from the top-mast- head to the lower yard-arm and the starboard up-and-down tackle to the starboard yard-arm, also a burton from the fore-mast to the main-yard, or from the bowsprit if it is a fore-yard. The capstan and jeers will heave up the bulk of the weight, while the other tackles cant it and ease it across the gunnel. A derrick is some- times used to keep it off the ship's side. When a ship is alongside a jetty, a guy froma strong-hold on shore removes all difficulty, and a list towards the side at which the yard is coming in is desir- able. Lower yards are usually rigged while resting across the gunnel ; they are swayed up by the jeers, and slung with strong chains—the part round the yard being connected with that round the lower mast-head by a tongue and slip, The yards must be*~~

~~*ɨ*~~

~~*- 'Single – anchor.*~~

~~*Trim and stowage.*~~

~~*SEAMANSHIP*~~

~~*prevented from canting forward with the weight and drag of the sail ; accordingly the slings, either chain or rope, should be put on with the bight coming up the fore side (see fig. 18, where the arrow indicates the fore side and the direction the sail pulls); they are generally put on the wrong way. Merchant ships are invariably fitted with iron trusses, which are fixtures on*~~

~~the mast, holding the yard at the requisite distance and acting as a universal joint. They are of great advantage where there is not a large crew.~~

~~While the rigging is progressing the disposition of all heavy weights is worthy of serious attention ; for not only ought the vessel to be brought to the draught and trim designed by the builder, or that which has by experience been-found the best, but there must not be too much strain at any one part, especially the extremities. In ships intended for sailing or steaming rapidly this is of vital importance; the bows and sterns of cutter or schooner yachts should be empty. Placing the weights in the wings of the hold will steady the rolling motion and make the intervals longer ; but this may be carried too far for stability,— especially if the vessel has a low free-board. Weights low down close to the keel will increase stability at the expense of a quick uneasy jerking motion. A yacht which carries much ballast low down will be very stiff under canvas and_may sail well in the~~

~~Solent, but would be unfit to go outside the Isle of Wight. When:~~

~~heavy weights are carried in merchant ships as part cargo, they should never be placed as a solid mass; railway bars, for instance, may be stowed gridiron fashion a foot apart, by which ineans they will occupy as much space and act upon the ship in the same way as an equal weight of provision casks.~~

~~Before bending sails all the ropes are rove ready for use. A yacht's sails if new should be scrubbed, to take the stiffness out of them. In all cases they should be set when bent and the yards braced each way (unless it is blowing too hard), or there is a risk of some- thing going wrong when they are required for use. In setting them care should be taken that no part is stretched or girt unduly.~~

~~The inner end of a chain cable is usually secured by a tongue- slip and by a short piece of cable which passes round the mast or is shackled to the keelson; it still retains the name of "clinch." The tongue should not have scope enough to reach the compressor, as it has been known to strip back the ring and slip the cable. It isa good thing to trice up the slip before the cable is stowed, so that it will be accessible at all times, either for slipping, shackling another cable, or bending a hawser. It may be thought that a~~

~~chain cable would run into the locker and stow itself, but that is a mistake ; if care is not taken to spread it evenly, it will form a pyramid with turns round the base, upon which the upper part will fall as soon as the ship leans over ; 1t will then be necessary to haul up several small bights before the cable will run clear.~~

~~A ship should never lie long at single anchor in a tide-way or during variable winds, for fear of fouling her anchor and thereby destroying its holding power. Frequently space is wanted, as ship and cable range over a large circle, with liability to foul other ships or their anchors. A long scope of cable will only keep a ship clear of her anchor during very light winds, unless assisted by close attention and correct judgment on the part of the seaman. The direction of the two streams of tide should be considered in con- nexion with the wind in order to keep the ship to leeward of her anchor each time she passes it. A strong wind blowing across the direction of the tide and acting on the hull of the ship will secure that effect ; but, when the directions of wind and tide are the same or nearly so, precaution is necessary at each turn of the tide; it is then that a buoy watching over the anchor is of great service. When the wind and tide are in the same direction the helm should be kept over to that side which will cause the ship's head to point in the direction on which she has previously passed the anchor, as the bight of the cable will be dragging that way. The force of the tide alone will cause her to shoot over considerably ; but when she is assisted by the fore-top-mast stay-sail (or stay-fore-sail in a small vessel) the sheer will be much greater. The sheet in either case is better to windward and the fore-top-sail braced sharp abox if the wind is light ; but, when the tide commences to change, the sail should be allowed to fill, or it should be taken in and the helm placed in midships. If sufficient effect has not been produced by helm and head-sails before the tide ends, the mizzen-top-sail should be set as soon as the ship falls head to wind, first braced abox to turn her stern in the desired direction and then flat aback so as to drag the cable straight. Cutters and schooners have not that ad- vantage ; they must depend on the helm and head-sails, At the end ofa weather tide the helm and stay-sail will guide the vessel past the anchor. Ifa ship should break her sheer (pass the wrong way), or during calms and variable winds should approach her anchor, the cable should be hove in, and if there is reason to sus- pect the clearness of the anchor it should be sighted, since it will be of~~

~~no use as an anchor if a turn of cable is round the fluke. When anchoring, the state of the tide must be considered in con- nexion with the depth of water ; a vessel was once left high-and- dry by the ebb-tide near Dungeness, and a large iron ship drove her own anchor through her bottom in the Solent, off Lymington.~~

~~597~~

~~The avoidance of the anchors in shallow water is another reason for mooring.~~

~~When a ship is in an exposed position, where it may become necessary to Ict go two or three anchors through stress of weather, in any part of the northern hemisphere, the bower on the port side should be used first, next the foremost one on the starboard side, and asa third the after one on the starboard side, since the ordinary wind veers with the sun, and at the end of the gale the cables will be clear of each other. In the southern hemisphere the reverse order holds good.~~

~~When a ship is likely to remain many days at an anchorage Mooring. where there is a tide or variable winds it is better to moor at once on arrival, with a scope of cable each way six or eight times greater than the depth of water, and an open hawse towards the worst wind. The two cables combined should always be much in excess of the distauce between the anchors, otherwise they will possess but little strength to resist a rectangular strain, —an error frequently com- mitted. The amount of support which cables will render under such circumstances will be in proportion to the sine of the angle contained between the anchor and the ship's bow and a line from one anchor to the other. Suppose, for example, a ship moored with anchors east and west of each other, 100 fathoms apart and having 55 fathoms on each cable, in 10 fathoms of water. With chain cables the hawse pipes would not be more than 53 fathoms from each anchor, consequently with a south wind the support given to the ship by each cable will only be 33 per cent. of the strain on the cable,—that is, say, 66 tons combined when the cables are strained up to 100 tons each. The support increases rapidly as the cable is veered ; an addition of 5 fathoms each way will (under the above circumstances) give 101 tons, and a scope of 80 fathoms each way will give 153 tons. In practice the cables by dragging over the ground, especially soft~~

~~mud, assume a direction more ahead, particu- larly when each cable has a long scope. The anchors should be placed sufficiently far apart to prevent fouling with the slack chain, but not farther, unless the water is too shallow to allow the ship to pass over her anchor at low tide. Such an anchorage is not suitable for very long ships unless special moorings are provided, for which purpose Parks's mooring-blocks are very suitable and inexpensive ; they are commonly used in Portsmouth harbour. These blocks are recommended as moorings for the use of yachts and small craft, as being trustworthy and less likely to be stolen than anchors of any kind. Should a ship that is moored with a good scope on each cable have the inisfortune to part one of them, her position-will be preferable to what it would be if parted from a single anchor, as the bight of cable dragging over. the ground will retard her progress, giving more time for another anchor to be let go. In all cases of veering cable either it should be done so freely that the ship will fall off broadside to the wind, when it may be secured while drifting, or it should be done very slowly, a few fathoms, or even a few feet ata time, the ship not being allowed to get any stern way. Veering during a squall should be avoided if possible ; it should be done in time, before the violence of the squall is felt; but, if it is intended to pay out freely till broadside on, the head-yards should be braced abox to assist and another anchor should be ready. A cable should never be secured entirely by the bitts or windlass, but the compressor and deck stoppers should participate in the strain. When unmooring, the riding cable should be veered freely to allow the ship to get directly over the lee anchor ; if it is embedded, stopper the cable while vertical and heave on the other, which must break it out.~~

~~The laborious operation of clearing hawse was mitigated or Clearing avoided by the introduction of chain cables and the invention of hawse. the mooring swivel. As the cables unshackle at every 123 or 15 fathoms, the end to be dipped round the other cable need not be long. 'There are two general methods of holding the weight of the lee cable while the turns are taken out. The simplest is to have a light tongue slip to take the flat link, but only about one-tenth the strength of the cable ; in a large ship it should have a roller at the top, so that the end of a hawser may be rove and form a standing part. The slip being fixed on the lee cable close above the turns and the hawser taut, the nearest shackle inboard is taken out, and the short end thus formed is hauled out of the hawse-pipe by the fore-bowline, or else~~

~~*by a rope from the bees of the bowsprit, a hook-rope being also attached for hauling it inboard again. JN boat should be in attendance from which to detach the hook-rope from the end of the cable, pass it round the riding-cable, and make it fast again to the end of the cable (hanging by the bowline) for hauling it back through the hawse-pipe ; thus an elbow is formed taut round the riding-cable in the reverse direction to the elbows and turns below the slip. That operation must be repeated till the same number of turns is formed above as below the slip,—observing that a cross cannot be removed, but the lee cable can be brought under the other. When the cable is taut in and shackled, the slip is knocked off, which allows the turns to drop clear. The cables will then be as they were when moored, with the addition of one or two fathoms on the lee cable. If the short end of the cable is lowered into a boat and lifted by the bowline only for each turn,*~~

~~*598*~~

~~*the operation can be performed much quicker. The second method is to lash the two cables together above the turns with a piece of old rope, which acts as the slip and is cut when done with. In rough weather when a boat cannot lie under the bows the lashing must be passed by a man on the cable (if it is not high enough, heave it up), after which both cables are hove into the same hawse-pipe, hse they are easily cleared inboard ; if there are many turns a small lashing will suffice in moderately deep water.*~~

~~*One of the objections made to slack mooring is that turns are formed below water where they are not visible. To meet this objection a piece of paper representing a ship stuck to the glass*~~

~~*SHAMANS HIP*~~

~~*under the tauter part ; this second boat, by continuing in a circle round the anchor and returning to the side of the stationary one, will cause a turn to be formed round the fluke, as represented in the figure. Both crews should again pull hard to tighten the turn round the fluke, after which, both parts being held in one boat and made equally taut, an anchor shackle (buoyed) is placed round them and shaken down by a veer-and-haul pull on both parts by the crew of one boat, while the other tows teal to keep a strain on*~~

~~*the hawser till it is nearly vertical, when the anchor is secured. The ship can then take in the two parts of the hawser and weigh it.*~~

~~*In getting a ship under way there are a few precautions which Getting should necessarily be observed. If the ship is moored, the first under-anchor to be weighed is that which it would be least convenient to way,*~~

~~*cover of a compass, with two differently coloured threads attached to paper anchors or inserted into cuts at the edge of the card,*~~

~~*Mooring- There are various ways of putting on a mooring-swivel, but | regarded by steamers. The hauling part of the cat-fall is always swivel. doiug it inboard appears to be the safest and easiest. First place | through the foremost sheave, to prevent the tackle from fouling it in the riding-cable by shackling the two short legs of the swivel ; | owing to the ship's motion through the water. The cable on the leave the two linked ends for the second cable, the end of which | second anchor should always be hove short before making sail. being hauled out of the hawse by the bowline is hauled into the | Should there be plenty of room and the wind moderate, there is no other pipe by a hook-rope and shackled to the outer long leg; the | caution necessary beyond placing leadsmen in the chains with newly stopper just inside the hawse (which had been holding the weight | marked lines, and putting the helm hard over each way to ensure its outboard of the lee cable) is then slipped and that hawse-pipe is | being clear. The after-yards should be braced up on one tack and left clear for hauling out the inner end of the lee cable, which is | the head-yards on the other, to pay her head off; in cutters and hauled in the other side and shackled to the inner (upper) long leg | schooners the stay-fore-sail is used for that purpose. If another of the swivel; it then becomes a bridle. There are thus three | vessel is at anchor too close astern to ensure gat ering way while parts of cable in that hawse-pipe ; the last, having no weight, should | ahead of her, it should not be attempted; but, by squaring the be stopped here and there to the others so as to be carried out as the | after-yards as soon as the anchor is tripped, the ship's head will swivel is veered towards the water's edge and the bridle hove up | pay off till it becomes safe to fill all the sails and pass under the square. Ships constructed as rams take in both bridles on the | stern of the other vessel. The anchor should have been catted and same side. A*~~

~~*mooring-swivel should always be taken off by first —<- Jished also during the interval ; much way should never heaving it inboard. If moored very slack, turns may form below | be on the ship till the anchor is secured, for fear of it slipping or of the swivel during a calm with still water, but they will disappear | a man falling overboard. Should rocks or shallow water be incon- with a cross strain; and if the ship is about to get under way the | veniently close astern different means must be adopted. If the swivel and turns may be hove in together. If it becomes desirable | wind blows directly on shore, offering no choice of direction, and to put on a mooring-swivel when turns are in the cables, let it be | a current runs parallel to the shore, the ship's head should be cast put on over them ; they will soon shake out. One of the bridles is | against the stream. The yards should be braced abox sharp up, sometimes taken off the swivel for the sake of clearing that side of | with as much sail set over them as the force of the wind will allow, the deck ; the error is obvious on considering that the strength of | every means being taken to heave the anchor up quickly ; and, in the remaining part is not equal to the strain which may come upon | @ well-manned ship, as soon as it is out of the ground, haul on the span, and the nip in the hawse-pipe is always the part most | board the main-tack and aft with the sheet, set jib and spanker. severely tried. The importance of frequently white-leading and | The helm being alee, keep it so as long as is required, and brace greasing all cable shackles and swivels is obvious, but, being | round the head-yards quickly; the ship will soon spring ahead. troublesome, it is much neglected. The bow of a cable shackle | Then, by keeping close to the wind, the rate of movement will be should always be forward ; if the reverse is the case, the shoulder | retarded till the anchor is secured ; then set the fore-sail. may strike the side of the hawse-pipe or get jammed under the The above is applicable in moderate weather when all or nearly Slipping compressor. The shape of a shackle bolt should be such as to pre- | all plain sail could be set. But, should there be a strong wind cable. vent it entering the wrong way ; they often go half way in and jam. | and a rough sea, it might not be possible to weigh the anchor or Anchors. _ It is desirable that every vessel should carry anchors as large as | to prevent it staving the bows if it were hove up; in that case it she can stow and work conveniently, and cables to correspond. A | must be sacrificed for the safety of the ship by passing the strongest wooden-stocked anchor is lighter when under water than an iron- | hawser from the after-port (padded with mats) to the cable,*~~

~~making stocked one of similar holding power, and the wooden stock is less | it fast by a rolling-hitch, and hauling it taut; an axe and block liable to foul when let go; but the durability of iron has nearly | should be in readiness, also guys, to prevent the spring of the rendered the wooden stock obsolete. The old-fashioned anchor | hawser breaking men's legs. The courses should be reefed and all with long shank, fluke, and stock had greater holding power and | ready for setting ; the top-sails (double or treble reefed) should be certainty of grip than the more compact dumpy anchor now in | set or sheeted home ready for setting; and all the yards should common use. Backing large anchors by smaller ones is now | be braced up on the tack it is intended to go off on. The first seldom practised, except when vessels are on shore and the anchor | opportunity should be taken when the ship is commencing a yaw is laid out on a sandy bottom; it is generally better that each | in the desired direction to slip the cable, set the fore-stay-sail and anchor should have its own cable and proportionate strain. Float- | fore-top-mast stay-sail; as soon as the top-sails fill, cut the spring, ing anchors were formerly used to keep ships' bows up ina gale ; | set the reefed courses, and the main- and mizzen-try-sails. To veer they were made of iron crossbars and three or four thicknesses of | the cable previous to aBpping would be more likely to break the strong canvas, or a spar with a heavily weighted sail, spanned | hawser. The expedient of losing an anchor should only be resorted with a stout hawser ; such a contrivance might frequently be im- | to when there is too much wind and sea to admit of weighing it provised and used to prevent a boat or small vessel from foundering. | and not too much to prevent the ship, of whatever description, from Lost Should an anchor be lost in sand or soft mud after having borne | gaining something to windward under a _ of sail. Otherwise anchors. a heavy strain, it may be buried entirely, when it can only be | her condition is made worse by the loss of the anchor ; it would be~~

~~in the directions the anchors actually bear from each other, will represent all the turns which the ship makes with the cables.~~

~~recovered by grappling the chain, if that is of sufficient length. This is best done by a small anchor with a bar of iron to assist the stock and dragged by a long scope of chain. If the anchor is on ordinary ground and only sunk as far as the shank or a little more, as shown in fig. 38, it is easily recovered~~

~~*whether there is any cable on itor not. The full length of a hawser strong enough to weigh the anchor should be used as a sweep, S with a boat at each end oe pulling very slowly or drop-*~~

~~*ping with the tide, in the*~~

~~*reverse direction to the*~~

~~*strain when it parted, so as to catch the fluke as a hook. Towing a hawser against the tide is generally waste of time, and a chain forms too narrow a bight, unless the anchor is buoyed. When the anchor is felt both boats should close together and their crews pull with all their strength for a minute or two. Then, while one boat remains stationary, keeping her part of the hawser steady, the other should cross her bows with a slack hawser, which thus passes*~~

~~=~~

~~*7 ~*~~

~~*Fig. 38.*~~

~~*sail from. At the time of unmooring the direction of the tide is very important in the case of sailing ships, and should not be dis-*~~

~~*better to decide upon riding the gale out, letting go other anchors, veering all the cable available, striking the top-masts, and bracing the yards nearly fore-and-aft. The cutting away of the lower- masts, when necessary, must always be done with great care to avoid killing people or bilging the ship with the wreckage. The lanyards of the lower rigging on one side should be cut as the ship rolls in that direction, and a few notches made in the mast on both sides 3 or 4 feet above the deck, the men running aft out of the way when it is likely to fall, for which operations they would have from eight to fourteen seconds. As soon as the mast has fallen the lanyards of the stays should be cut and the most strenuous efforts made to cut and clear every rope which would still hold the mast to the ship.*~~

~~*When weighing in rough weather with sufficient room to drift, it is better to have the anchor fully secured before making any sail ; or, if it is intended to run before the wind, the ship can be kept on her course by the jib only till the anchor is stowed. Steaming up to an anchor against strong wind or tide is objectionable, as it requires great attention and judgment to avoid jerks;*~~

~~*the same applies to steaming in a gale to ease the strain on the cable ; acon-*~~

~~*t*~~

~~*| Wearing*~~

~~*ship.*~~

~~*'Running enc : on shore. rocks, and it is apprehended that she may go to pieces or founder*~~

~~*Sei aw ANSE IP*~~

~~*stant watch should be kept to prevent the cable ever becoming slack. Fore-and-aft rigged vessels have much less difficulty in getting under way when close to a lee shore, as their main-sails can be fully set without holding wind, and directly she pays off all the sails draw.*~~

~~*If the anchors drag and the ship strikes the bottom, especially on*~~

~~*in comparatively deep water, it would be right to select the best place on shore (if there be a choice), and endeavour to thrust her into it by slipping or breaking all the cables and making sail, if there is still the means of doing so, with the view of driving her up as high as possible and so saving life; let it also be at the top of high water, if that can be waited for. When there is a heavy strain ona chain cable it is easily broken by scratching a notch with a common saw on a link that rests firmly on the bitts and then striking it with a maul or sledge-hammer.*~~

~~*The usual way of testing whether the anchors are holding or not is by dropping the lead over the side and leaving the line slack ; but the ship is liable to swing over it, causing it to be disturbed. A grapnel over the bow or from the bowsprit is preferable. Also by sitting on a cable before the bitts a trentulous motion is felt if the anchor is dragging.*~~

~~*If instead of a dead lee shore we have the wind oblique with the line of coast, and the ship from some cause too close to admit of a stern-board*~~

~~*towards it, the head-yards should be braced abox to cast her head inshore, while the after-yards are kept square ; this will cause the ship to make a long stern-board from the shore, which will not terminate till the wind is well abaft the beam. The helm up to that time may be kept in midships, as there is no reason to diminish the curve. As the stern-way is lost the helm should be put hard up, the head-yards squared, and the mizzen- top-sail kept shivering till braced up on the desired tack. The main-top-sail should be kept full. If it is necessary to get the ship round as quickly and as shortly as possible, the fore-yard, instead of being squared when about to shake, may be braced entirely round quickly so as to continue paying her bow off till the wind comes aft, then squared to allow her to come to, The jib or the fore-top-mast stay-sail (according to the weather) may be hoisted when the anchor is tripped or not, until the wind is before the beam on the desired tack; if at the former time the sheets should be hauled to windward and kept so till the ship is before the wind, then eased off till the wind comes before the beam. The spanker or mizzen-try-sail should be set as soon as it will draw the right way.*~~

~~*What has been said about trimming the sails as the ship is turned round after casting with her head inshore is equally appli- cable to a case of ordinary wearing when it is desirable to turn the ship with as little loss of ground as possible. As a general guide to the position in which the yards should be placed, it may be remembered that the pressure on the sails always acts at right angles to the yards. This may be exemplified by bracing the yards sharp up when the wind is two or three points abaft the beam. As it will then blow directly into the sails they will certainly receive greater strain, but the speed of the ship will be less than when the yards were square ; and it may be observed that considerable leeway will be caused by the lateral pressure. In wearing ship all the fore-and-aft sails should be taken in except the head-sails, and when the helm is put up the main-sail should be taken in and the mizzen-top-sail shivered,—the latter continued till it is sharp up for the new tack. A fashion has been adopted of leaving the mizzen-top-sail square till after the head-yards have been squared ; hence everything depends for a time upon the action of the rudder, and the ship sails a considerable distance before the wind and loses so much ground. The operation of wearing a cutter requires much more eare than with a square-rigged vessel on account of the heavy boom. A schooner is treated*~~

similarly, but the spars and sails are lighter in proportion to the size of the vessel. Before putting the helm up, the tack of the main-sail is triced up (the top-sail clewed up), and the peak dropped till it is nearly in a line with the boom topping-lifts, which is called scandalizing the main-sail. Both peak and boom are secured firmly in midships by means of the down- haul and sheets. Not only is the diminution of after-sail necessary to allow the vessel to pay off quickly, but the change of wind from one quarter to the other will only cause a gybe which is per- fectly under control. The jib and stay-fore-sail are gybed by haul- ing the sheets flat just before the wind is aft so as to diminish the jerk as much as possible. The peak of the main-sail is easily re-hoisted while the tack is up and the vessel luffed up to the wind. The runners and weather-boom topping-lift should be pulled up while the ship is before the wind and the top-sail-sheet hauled out as soon as the peak is up, —the tack-tackle being shifted to wind- ward and pulled down. In wearing during fine weather, especially in yachts when racing, some risk may be preferable to the loss of time and the main-sail may be kept set. As the main-sheet is usually rove through a treble block on the boom, a double block to move along the horse, and a single block on each quarter, a strong crew can man each part at the same time and haul the boom in

599

midships quickly, belaying the part which was at the lee side and is about to become the weather side directly the boom is over the leading block, while the other part is kept in hand till the gybe has been effected to lessen the jerk.

‘ The sails of all vessels are most effective when set as nearly flat Set of as practicable, and also each sail, as well as each part of a sail, sails.

should be spread at the same angle from the keel. If under that condition too much or too little weather-helm is required, the balance should be established by changing the quantity of canvas at either end or by altering the trim, not by permanently easing off a sheet, for that is as detrimental as dragging the rudder at a large angle. By altering the stand of the masts materially the angle and consequent set of all gaff-sails are thrown out.

o tack a fore-and-aft-rigged vessel is very simple; by easing off Tacking.

~~*the jib and fore-sheets at the time the helm is eased down and hauling over the main-sheet, the vessel will soon run up to the wind ; then if the fore-sheet is hauled flat over as for the former tack it will assist to pay her bow off the right way. The jib-sheet would be hauled aft while shaking, but not too soon to cause it to take the wrong way. The fore-sheet is shifted over as the other sails are about to fill, according to the speed with which the vessel is paying off. In a smart vessel, such as a cutter-yacht in smooth water and with a good breeze, there will be no occasion to retain the fore-sheet, but allow it to shake itself over similarly to the jib. Returning to the idea of tacking with difficulty,—the helm should be put hard over as the speed decreases and reversed directly stern- way commences; this remark applies to vessels of all shapes and sizes, as will also the advice not to put the helm over to a large angle while the vessel is going at great speed. At an angle of 10 degrees, more than 98 per cent. of the force on the rudder is applied to turning the vessel and 174 per cent. to retard her ; while at 80 degrees one-half the force would retard and 864 per cent. tend to turn, Hence we see the reasons for recommending close fitting, broad, tapering rudders.*~~

~~*While the vessel is in stays the weather-boom topping-lift should be pulled to take the weight of the boom, the runner-and-tackle on the weather side set up, and the lee one slacked as soon as slie is round; also shift the main taek-tackle over to windward and set it up; get a pull of the gaff-top-sail tack if necessary.*~~

~~*The jib of a cutter, yawl, or schooner with a running bowsprit is a difficult sail to handle when the vessel is under way.. If there is sea-room it is better to keep the yacht away before the wind and let go the outhaul, when the traveller will run in, or pull at the same time on the inhaul, which should be fitted with a span to keep it square. Haul the stay-fore-sail sheet over to make room to haul in the jib to leeward of it. Gather in the slack canvas smartly to keep it from getting overboard ; get hold of the luff of the sail by the stay-rope, while some hands pull on the downhaul. When the sail is perfectly under control let go the halyards and continue hauling on the stay-rope and downhaul. When there is not room to run before the wind, it is best to heave to with forc- sheet to windward while taking in or shifting a jib; by letting go the outhaul the traveller will run in and the sail can be handled as before, a good hold being always kept of the weather side, that is, the luff*~~

~~*of the sail. Ifanother jib is to be bent it should be laid along the weather side of the deck in readiness, with the tack forward and the head aft. The sheets are then untoggled from the former sail, handed across outside (to windward) of the fore-stay, and toggled to the second jib; also take the tack to the traveller, hook it, and run it out. Hook the halyards and hoist the jib up by them; then tauten the luff by the purchase while the sheet is flowing.*~~

~~*A jib-headed gaff-top-sail is ie ane for use on a wind and Gaff-top- ight winds a long yard spreads a sail.*~~

~~*commanding breeze, though for fine sheet of canvas. Such a yard should be slung at one-third from the fore-end (as a boat's dipping lug), the clew-line block secured at the length of the leech from the upper end, and the standing part of the clew-line made fast to the lower end, —this last to keep it clear of the cross-tree when being hauled down, which must always be done on the side it has been set, a tack being made if necessary to bring it to windward. On the approach of a squall the fore-sail should be hauled down by means of the downhaul and the vessel luffed up; it is dangerous to attempt bearing up at such a time until the main-sail has been scandalized ; the effect of the water on the rudder aids greatly in tripping a vessel over.*~~

~~*As bad weather comes on the main-sail must be reefed (a smaller Reefing jib having been already set) by topping up the boom, easing down sails,*~~

~~*the peak and throat, and hauling down the reef cringle to the boom by the reef-tackle ; lash the tack and tie the poiuts without rolling the slack canvas. The second and third reefs are taken in as the wind increases and the fore-sail reefed again or stowed, during which time the jib-sheet should be hauled flat, the main-tack triced up, and the vessel kept close to the wind to avoid plunging the sea over the bow. To reef the bowsprit,—house the top-mast, let the jib run in, slack the bobstays and bowsprit shrouds, take out the fid, and let the bowsprit run in one or two reefs; then refid it, set taut the gear, and set a small jib. It is at all times much more*~~

~~*Nacking.*~~

~~*Missed stays.*~~

~~difficult to steer a short vessel than a long one, but especially in a heavy sea, when the mode of treatment must be entirely different. A small vessel should be luffed up to meet every large wave in order to bow it as much as possible. She will have but little way on at the time of meeting it and will drop into it easily ; the bow will then fall off, the sails fill, and a run be made parallel to the waves till she is luffed up again. A four-oared gig has been taken through a heavy sea under oars by pulling up to meet every danger- ous crest which could not be dodged, and just before it broke over the bow backing away from it. The smallest amount of sail which can be shown by a main-sail is when it is balance-reefed ; this is accomplished by close-reefing it and lowering the jaws of the gaff close down to the boom, while the peak stretches up that part of the leech above the close-reef cringle. The plan is more frequently adopted by fishing smacks than by yachts or other well-found vessels ; they have a try-sail which, being laced on a smaller gaff, is hoisted by the same peak and throat halyards as the larger sail, and has its sheet secured to a bolt near the stern, while the boom is crutched and secured with the main-sail and the large gaff lashed toit. The try-sail admits of being reefed ; it is a safe sail either on or off the wind in rough weather. The greatest care is necessary when running before the wind to keep the vessel on her course and to avoid gybing. A vessel should never get under way without a small boat, and a cutter should never be without her legs for fear of taking the ground unexpectedly. In racing to windward, if the wind is variable, keep nearly dead to leeward of the mark vessel, as every change in the direction of the wind will then be an advantage; unless there is a tidal preference for one direction over the other, that will of course decide it.**

~~If taken aback by a change of wind, and wishing to remain on the same tack, put the helm up and haul over the fore-sheet. In a ship haul over the head-sheets and brace the head-yards abox. The way to tack a ship under favourable circumstances may here be assumed as well known, and only a few hints relative to doubt- ful cases given. A few minutes prior to the attempt set all suit- able sail, keep steadily ‘“‘rap-full” with a small helm,~~

~~so as to get as much way as possible. If the crew is large enough to list the ship, send them over to leeward, ease down fie helm slowly, haul the boom in midships, haul down the head-sails, ease off the fore- sheet, let go the head-bowlines, and check the head-braees. Directly the wind is out of the fore-top-sail, brace the head-yards sharp up again and haul the bowlines. When the wind is entirely out of the main-top-sail, let go the top-gallant bowlines (if those sails are set) and raise tacks and sheets, exeept the fore-tack, which should be raised after the main-yard has been swung. As soon as the vessel loses her way, shift the helm hard over, and send the men to their stations. If she brings the wind across her bow, hoist the head- sails with the sheets on the same side as before ; if the wind takes them well and the ship is still going round, give the order " main- sail haul," haul down the main-tack, aft the sheet, shift over the head-sails, haul the after-bowlines. As the main-top-sail fills, or before, according to the rapidity with whieh she pays off, swing the head-yards to the order of " haul off all."~~

~~If when near head to wind it is found that the bow is falling back and stern-way commencing, it is evident that she has "' missed stays." The helm in that case should not be shifted, as with stern-way it will help her to pay her bow off in the direction it was before. The head-sails should be hoisted, the main-sail and spanker taken in, the fore-sheet hauled aft, the after-yards squared. As the wind comes abaft the beam the mizzen-top-sail should be kept shivering and the main-top-sail just full; shift the helm as she gathers headway. When before the wind square the head- yards, shift over the head-sheets, and keep them flowing. Set the spanker when it will take the right way ; complete wearing as before described. This is similar to "box-hauling"; it is not necessary to braee the head-yards abox if she will fall off without. The manceuvre of putting the helm down and letting the ship shoot up in the wind before wearing is sometimes adopted for the sake of diminishing the run to leeward. HIauling all the yards at onee is very objectionable ; the sails are longer aback and have to be hauled round by main strength against the pressure of the wind.~~

~~" Club-hauling"' may oceasionally save a ship even in these days of steam, as a paddle-steamer will not turn with her head against a strong gale and a heavy sea, nor will a sailing-ship with an auxi- liary serew-propeller. It may be done when the ship is found edging down on a lee shore, too close to~~

~~*wear, and having a depth of water not exceeding 20 fathoms. It will take two or three minutes to open the hawse-pipe, get the cable clear, and procure hammer and punches for unshackling, and mauls for breaking the cable if necessary. Put the helm down and act as in ordinary tacking till she ceases to turn nearer to the wind ; then let go the anchor, whether she has entirely lost her way or not, as passing the anchor a little will give a greater swing back when the strain comes and allow more time for slipping the cable, which should be done directly the wind has crossed the bow ; at the same time swing the after- yards. If the cable has been slipped successfully, the head-yards may be hauled as soon as the after-yards have been braced up, as*~~

~~*SHAMANS ATP*~~

~~*she will soon be broadside on. It has been proposed to run a spring from the after-lee-port to the anchor, but that would take too much time.*~~

~~*"'Backing and filling" is practised in a tidal channel which is Backin too narrow to allow a ship to gather way for tacking. One top-sail, ang*~~

~~*with the jib and spanker occasionally, is generally sufficient to give § slight head or stern way, to avoid either bank or another vessel, while the tide carries her broadside against the wind ; the less sail exposed the less the lee-way. Fore-and-aft vessels having less power to get stern-way should have a boat in attendance with a line and a small anchor.*~~

~~*'*Kedging" was a frequent performance before steam-tugs were Ke*~~

~~*introdueed ; it consisted of a series of movements from one small anchor to another, previously laid out by boats. For a similar purpose harbours that were much frequented were formerly fur- nished with a suecession of warping buoys. The large ropes used for transporting ships are called hawsers, and by a strange anomaly were formerly cable-laid nine-stranded. Such rope is hard and stiff to handle ; it absorbs more wet and retains it longer, therefore is less durable ; when new the strength is far inferior to hawser-laid rope of similar size. Manila and coir hawsers float on the water and are therefore very useful.*~~

~~*lling,*~~

~~*dging,*~~

~~*Dropping through a narrow tidal channel by means of an anchor Dredg. just touching the bottom is called "dredging" or clubbing ; it ean ing,*~~

~~*be praetised in a passage which is too narrow for backing and fill- ing, such as the upper part of the Thames, where it is done every day. The vessel swings to her anchor and points her stern up (or down) the stream ; by heaving in the cable (for which the steam eapstans and windlasses afford great facility) the tide takes the ship on as fast as it is running so long as the course remains elear. When it is desirable to approach either side, a few fathoms of eable paid out will cause it to hold ; the helm and the aetion of the tide will then sheer the ship as desired, and by heaving in cable she will go on again, so that a sailing-ship should go up at half the rate of the tide at least. With a screw-steamer it is far easier, as the screw will straighten her as well as the tide, and when fairly pointed through an open space she can make a stern-board at five knots an hour while perfectly under eontrol.*~~

~~*A few words may be said about making and shortening sail in Making*~~

~~*bad weather.*~~

~~*One point holds good in all cases: the sails should and*~~

~~*never be allowed to flap, as that exposes them to the danger of shorten- splitting. The taek or luff is invariably seeured first, while the ing sail.*~~

~~*sheet bears a steady strain enough to keep the sail from shaking, Before hoisting fore-and-aft sails the sheets are steadied aft ; and, should a sheet carry away, the sail is hauled down or brailed up instantly. Spankers and try-sails should be taken in entirely by the lee-brails, the stack only of the weather-brails being at first taken down. A practice has become general in the British navy of securing the top-sail clew-line blocks to the lower cap instead of rouud the yard, for the sake of saving time when shifting top-sail- yards ; the use of the clew-lines for hauling the yard down and steady- ing it is thus lost ; this is one of many objectionable practices.*~~

~~*There has been a difference of opinion as to the mode of setting Top-sails and taking in top-sails and courses; but the same rule should apply and to all square sails alike: that which is safest for one will be safest courses.*~~

~~*for the others. Experience and the balance of opinion favour the hauling home of the weather top-gallant-sheet, top-sail-sheet, and taek of the fore-sail or main-sail first, with a good strain on the clew-lines, clew-garnets, and bunt-lines, to avoid flapping. The lee sheet may then be hauled and eased down by clew-line and bunt- line. Eaeh bowline should also be steadied taut in succession to prevent the leech from flapping. There appears to be no advan- tage in first hauling the lee-sheet partially down. The taking in of these sails has been equally a matter of dispute, and many ad- voeate taking in a top-sail in a different manner from that which they would adopt in taking in a course. Faleoner's rule was often quoted and followed in former times. It runs thus— ** And he who strives the tempest to disarm, Will never first embrail the lee yard-arm."*~~

~~*It must be remembered that the deeision there supported by the sea-poet was then a novelty, and opposed to the opinion of the practical seaman. A main-sail had been split by " letting fly" the sheet ; but that proves nothing, as all sails will split if the elew flies loose ina gale. The lee clew of an eighty-gun ship's main- top-sail was blown over the yard-arm in consequence of the weather- sheet having carried away ; that clew was hauled up first. It might not have happened had the bunt-lines been well manned and had there been a small strain on the lee bowline. Either plan will answer if the bunt-lines are well manned and the sheets eased steadily ; but that the weather clew should be set first and taken in last is preferable. ;*~~

~~*In taking in top-gallant-sails before the wind both sheets should be kept fast till the yard is down. When a top-sail is to be reefed the yard should be pointed to the wind; and for the first reef the top-gallant-sheets, bunt-line, and bowlines should be hauled taut, for the second reef the top-gallant-sail should be clewed up, to keep the sheets from knoeking the men at the yard-arms, In rough*~~

~~*Se ee! AN Ss i*~~

~~weather a preventer parrel and rolling-tackle should be put on before the men go on the yards. For a fourth reef the top-sail should be clewed up during the operation ; it will then be performed with less difficulty. The long reef-points in top-sails and courses have generally given place to the lighter and more expeditious method of having reef-lines on the sails, with beckets and toggles on the jackstay. The whole strain of the sail is thus thrown on the jackstay and small eyebolts, instead of the points being firmly tied round the yard itself. Also the slab of each reef is usually allowed to hang down and chafe at the fold ; but this can be pre- vented by fastening three or four small slab-lines on each side of each reef. Cunningham's invention for reefing top-sails is very valuable in all weakly manned ships, but it requires to be kept square upon the yard while rolling up. _ If it becomes necessary to~~

~~tween the waves reaching the vessel may be made to disagree with her own period of oscillation, or when running before the wind by braeing the yards up in opposite directions. Steamers at a reduced speed can scarcely be considered as hove to; their masts and sails are too weak to be of any use in a gale and too small in moderate winds ; they make the rudder do all the work. The best sail to scud under is elose-reefed main-top-sail, reefed fore-sail, and fore- top-mast stay-sail.~~

~~Three contingencies should always be anticipated by the captain and officer of the watch, and in some degree by every man in the crew, so that the alarm should lose half its dread and be met by prompt action,—a man falling overboard, fire, and collision, A boat's crew should be appointed in each watch, who on going on deck should see the boat ready and the plug in. If the ship be on~~

~~shift a top-sail during a gale, it should be made up on deck in the shape it would assume if furled on the yard, and stopped with spun-yarn, with the reef-earings and bowline bridles showing near~~

~~a wind and capable of tacking, on the cry "A man overboard !" the Man helm should be put down and the ship steered round on the other over- tack, with either the fore or main yards left square and the courses board.~~

~~*Joasting.*~~

~~*the ends and the clews and bunt-line toggles near the centre, where it would be slung bya slip strop. When the two earings are taken into the centre it will form four parts, and the weather top-mast studding-sail halyards being bent round it will cause it to look like alarge bale. In that state it is hoisted into the top by the sail tackle, at the same time being steadied by the studding-sail hal- yards ; there all the ropes are bent, clew-lines and bunt-lines hauled up, reef-tackles hauled out, and the sail bent to the yard before the stops are slipped or cut; then it is reefed as desired before the weather sheet is hauled home. A fore-sail or main-sail is bent in a similar manner, except that the various ropes employed on a course are bent on deck, by which ropes and the burtons it is swayed up. Studding-sails are very useful in long voyages ; their disuse on the main-mast is to be regretted, especially in long ships. A top-mast or top-gallant studding-sail is shifted "before all," by a man on the yard gathering in the sail as it is lowered to him and holding the outer leech till it cants the right way.*~~

~~*During a coasting voyage the vessel must be within a moderate distance of the shore, therefore the person in charge should con- stantly be ready to rnn for shelter when necessary, and have the moral courage to do itin time. In yachting voyages, however dis- tant, there is a natural desire to see the land and all that is worth seeing, and, being well provided with charts, such vessels can enter any harbour, when perhaps a pilot is not able to get out. A ship starting on a foreign voyage should seek " blue water" as soon as seating and keep a safe distance from all land which is liable to*~~

~~*ecome a lee shore, and not be tempted to edge in because a eertain tack is much nearer to the desired course than the other. For the choice of track and for trade winds, see NAVIGATION.*~~

~~*To heave to for the purpose of stopping is done in a cutter by easing off the jib-sheet, hauling over the weather fore-sheet, and tricing up the tack of the main-sail. A schooner is treated simi- larly : the top-sail (if she has one) is backed and the gaff-fore-sail is taken in. A ship has her courses hauled up, head-sheets eased off, and either the main or fore yard squared. Upon the latter point opinions differ. If two ships are close together, the one to wind-ward had better back the main-top-sail and the ship to leeward the fore-top-*~~

~~*sail ; they should always preserve a little headway. Boats invariably board ships on the lee side ; small vessels, when drifting fast, on the weather side. A ship at anchor in a tide-way will always present a lee side during some period; but a "weather tide" causes a dangerous sea for boats. A boat's oars should never be tossed up or forward when there is danger of their fouling, for fear of staving the boat or injuring some one in the after part.*~~

~~*When in the vicinity of a lee beach and landing by means of a boat is determined on, the oars should be manned to the utmost and the waves watched (as they always vary), and the boat forced in on the top of the third large wave, care being taken to keep her exactly end on to the sea. At the instant of touching the ground every man should jump out and begin to haul up the boat, if she is of reasonable weight ; the next wave will probably put them all out of danger. By holding on to the boat they give and receive mutual support, and avoid being sucked back by the receding water or crushed by the boat.*~~

~~*The term "hove to" as applied to a vessel in a gale of wind is derived from the desire to turn her bow up towards the wind and sea; this under all circumstances of sail should be the point aimed at, since then the seas strike the side obliquely and also the bow, which is the strongest part. The best sails to keep on a ship during a violent gale are the close-reefed main-top-sail, main- and mizzen- try-sails, and fore-stay-sail. The fore-try-sail also may do good, and is far preferable to a main-stay-sail. The pressure of the main- top-sail tends greatly to mitigate the violent motion ; also by heeling the ship she presents a higher side to keep the sea out and a sloping deck to aid the water in running off. The helm should be about one turn "a-lee," never hard down. When north of the equator ships should heave to on the starboard tack, and the reverse in southern latitudes. More sail should be made as soon as the gale moderates, to steady the ship. The violent rolling motion may sometimes be diminished by altering course, so that the period be-*~~

~~*up; she will then drift down towards the man, while the boat, which was at first on the weather side, is being lowered to pick him up. If the ship is running free the case is worse; she must be brought to the wind instantly with the head-yards square. Various plans have been devised for lowering*~~

~~*boats, many of them very good when executed by trustworthy men ; the same may be said of the old system with plain blocks and tackles ; practice and cool- ness will render either successful.*~~

~~*With regard to fire, prevention is better than cure ; lights in the Fire.*~~

~~*hold should never be without a protecting lantern, and passengers' sleeping-cabins should be lighted by lamps fixed in the bulkhead, inaccessible from the inside. Pumps and engines for extinguishing fire should be on the upper deck, for fear of being cut off by the first outbreak. Fire stations and exercise should be frequent even with the smallest crew. On the first alarm all ports and ventilators should be closed, wind-sails hauled up, hatchways closed as much as practicable, awnings and all lower sails taken in, and the ship kept before the wind, unless the fire is in the after-part, in which case the boats should be lowered at once. Many other things will present themselves to a cool head; perhaps the first order should e 'Silence !"*~~

~~*Collisions may be reckoned among those dangers against which Collision.*~~

~~*no man can guard himself, be he ever so wise and experienced ; it avails not that one ship should do what is right, unless they both do so. The laws upon the subject appear to be all that cau be desired (see " Rules of the Road," under NAVIGATION, vol. xvii. p. 277); but the mode of enforcing obedience is very lax and lenient. A purely nautical tribunal is greatly needed, and every unjustifiable deviation should be severely punished, whether followed by an acci- dent or not. It is admitted that in most cases of collision the evi- dence is so conflicting that a judge must be puzzled where to find the truth. The great increase of speed diminishes the time of approach ; the increased length of vessels demands a larger circle to turn in; the want of sail at the extremities diminishes the power of turning, throwing all the work on the rudder, which is proportionately munch smaller than it was. The perpendicular stem gives a deadly blow at the flat side, instead of first cutting down the upper works by the sloping cut-water, and probably coming to a state of rest before reaching the water's edge. Sufficient care is not taken to keep all lights from the upper deck and all places where they may disable the eyes of the officer in charge or the look-out men. Even holes have been made at the back of the bow-light box to*~~

~~*enable the officer of the watch to see them burning ; of course his eyes are thereby rendered unserviceable for seeing distant objects. Officers in the merchant service are invariably in two watches, which does not allow them sufficient time for slcep, especi- ally in windy weather. If immediate action is not taken the instant a sail or a light is reported, the officer in eharge should take bearings by the compass, by which he will soon know if the other vessel is inclined to pass ahead or astern. If it remains stationary by the compass, they must both be converging on the same spot.*~~

~~*If a ship should spring a leak at sea which may be attributable Leaks.*~~

~~*to straining and is sufficiently serious, she should be run before the wind and sea under small sail. If the pumps then clear out the water, she may run for a port or resume her voyage when the gale ceases. If the leak does not abate, though the motion of the ship is easy, it will be evident that a butt (end of a plank) has started if it is a wooden ship, or that a plate has given way if an iron ship. In that case, two stout hauling-lines should be placed under the bowsprit and head-gear, and the end of one secured to the head-earing, the other to the elew of a spare top-sail or course, also two similar ropes to the other side, each of the four ropes being marked at 10 and 15 fathoms from the sail. HIalf a hundredweight of iron (shot or furnace bars) should be attached to each clew, the ship's progress eompletely stopped, the sail thrown overboard and drawn square across the bows ; the hauling-lines on the clews being carried aft and kept square by the marks, while the ropes on the head of the sail are veered, the sail is placed like a large patch over the place desired. Should the position of the leak not be dis- covered, it might be well to place the sail under the main-mast ;*~~

~~*XXI. — 76*~~

~~*Ship on shore,*~~

~~*Rudders.*~~

~~*602*~~

~~*if this has no effect, place another sail under the fore-mast and the fore-foot. This simple device is no doubt very ancient and was prob- ably the*~~

~~*process called in the book of Acts "undergirding the ship." Sails have usually been thrummed ; but that requires much time, and the utility is questionable. If a large hole has been made by collision a spread sail would be burst by the pressure ; but, such a hole being usually at the side and partially visible, a large sail nearly in the form in which it was stowed, having the stops cut, should be thrown over before the hole end downwards, and, when sunk below the supposed depth of the fissure, brought towards it till the bight of the sail enters the vortex, when it will be sucked in violently and either disappear within the ship or block the hole; if the latter, smaller sails can be spread slack over the hole to be sucked in. 'The use of sails for the above purposes has been strangely neglected during late years, though much more frequently needed.*~~

~~*A leak can be stopped from inboard when accessible by placing over it pads of oiled or tarred canvas, tarred coal-sacks, bags of white lead, tallow, paint, clay, or any material which fits close wheu pressed by boards and shored down firmly,—that or something similar could be done when a ship is on shore. If a ship is on shore with a large hole in one part of her bottom, she might be recovered, especially if ebb-tide recedes many feet, by building a double partition with a space of about 2 feet between on eacli side of the injured part, filling the space with clay, and shoring it well, —in other words, by improvising two water-tight bulkheads ; the water having been pope out of the sound parts the rising tide would float her. When a ship is on shore with numerous cracks in her bottom, but not a clear hole, she may be floated by constant pumping, even though at first the expedient should fail to prevent the tide from ebbing and flowing in the hold. By maintaining as much as possible an inward flow the small fissures will gradually choke with weed and sand, till the inflow is so reduced as to be within the power of the pumps; hay, oakum, or dirt of any kind should be thrown over where it can be sucked into the leak. The ordinary pumps of a ship may be supplemented by nailing together four common deal boards and fitting two square valves weighted with lead, hinged and lined with leather, to rest on seats 2 feet from one end, which must be weighted on the outside as the bottom. A large hole near the top should be provided with a leather lip to shoot the water over the combings. When slung in the bights of two ropes four men jerk it up and down; the force with which it descends through the water will send a stream up the tube with less labour than baling entails.*~~

~~*Ships on shore should be secured from driving into a worse posi- tion before being freed from any weight. Hard substances such as guns and shot should not be thrown on the lee side or where the ship in hauling off might strike on them. Keep sufficient fresh water for immediate use. An anchor is usually carried out between two boats, the flukes being hung to a spar across the boats chocked up from the thwarts, while the stock is suspended across the sterns of the boats. The boats should be hauled out to a kedge anchor, while other boats support short bights of hemp cable. Good axes should be used for letting go the anchor,*~~

~~*A wooden rudder when immersed is very little heavier than water and can be shipped and unshipped by seamen with ordinary appliances ; but iron ships have siete rudders sometimes weighing as much as 20 tons. The following remarks apply to wooden rudders only. To unhang arudder remove the woodlock,—a chock recessed and nailed to the stern-post close above the upper pintle,— the use of which is to prevent it being unhung by accident. From a beam or chock above the rudder-head suspend two luff-tackles, single blocks, and two leads up, and the double blocks down to strops through the tiller hole. A few men on each Iluff-fall will easily lift the rudder the length of the pintles; and as they are drawn from the gudgeons it will swing free and may be lowered between two boats provided with spars across their gunnels; the bight of a rope will bring the heel up to a position similar to that of the head,—nearly horizontal. It can then be taken under the main-yard and hoisted in, or be carried for repair to a wharf or suit- able beach at high water. Before a rudder is taken off to be hung, two long guys are rove through holes for the purpose at the fore-part of the heel, one end of each being hitched to the band for the rudder- chains, while the other is in readiness to hand into the ship half- way forward and low down. On the rudder-head being suspended by the luff-tackles a little higher than its position when shipped, the guys will haul it to the exact line with the stern-post ; it is then Iowered into the gudgeons, the guys unrove by means of the short ends, and the woodlock replaced. Smooth water is desirable for that operation ; a little tide ina line with the keel will assist. The tiller Cie be firmly wedged or secured in the rudder-head so as to prevent any jerking motion ; for the same reason, the wheel ropes should be kept moderately taut ; they should also be rove in two parts, lashed together on top of the wheel, for convenience in shift- iug them one part at a time. band, which*~~

~~*embraces the rudder a little above the water, and are attached to a stout rope, usually stopped up round the counter ready*~~

~~*SHAMAD SHIP*~~

~~*The rudder-chains are shackled to a*~~

~~*to receive tackles, by which the ship may be steered imperfectly after the rudder-head is disabled.*~~

~~*_ The construction of a temporary rudder has always been con- sidered an interesting and highly useful piece of seamanship. One easy plan is to pass the end of a large hemp cable out of the rudder- hole or central port, haul it up to the ship's side, lash to it one or more large spars, sling the whole bundle about the centre of the spars with stout hawsers as guys, throw it overboard, and heave in a part of the cable, leaving the part with the spars lashed to the side of it far enough away not to be lifted out of the water with the pitch of the ship. The guys when rove through blocks on the spare top-sail yard-arms, which are lashed across the gunnel for the purpose, are taken to the capstan ; by this means the ship may be steered with the assistance of her sails. If there be not a hemp cable on board, the largest hawser must be used with a spare top- mast or the largest spar available.*~~

~~*Early in the 19th century Captain Edward Pakenham contrived an efficient rudder with the material in his ship. Part of a top-mast heel up formed the rudder-head and main-piece, the fid-hole becom- ing the tiller-hole. The main-piece passed through the round hole of the lower cap, which was made of elm and lined with leather, and which, being secured by a collar near the lower part, acted for pintles and gudgeons, and was drawn into place by two hawsers f, A, till it embraced the stern-post by the square intended for the mast-head (fig. 39). There should be ropes to the bolts 0, b to keep it horizontal. Another top-mast was cut, which with the re- mainder of the first made four parts in all, flat- tened and fitted together, woolded and bolted, and so forming the required width. Three pigs of ballast were let into the lower part and the 4 whole planked over and secured with spike nails. Fine weather was necessary for shipping it and a collar was built above the rudder-hole to confine the motion and to support the weight. The materials carried in modern ships may differ, but a fertile mind will*~~

~~generally find substitutes. The “ Pique” frigate, commanded by the Hon. H. J. Rous, steered across the Atlantic during sixteen days of almost continuous gales, a dis- tance of 1500 miles, by means of a cable over the stern and a Pakenham rudder during part of the time. She had been on shore in the Gulf of St Lawrence ; during the voyage she was making 20 inches of water an hour and she had also two masts aes 3 she reached St Helens in the Isle of Wight on the 13th of October 1835.~~

~~It is a difficult thing to get a lower yard from the deck into its Raising place without letting go either stays or rigging, and this the fol- main- The ‘*Thunderer,” an eighty-four yard,~~

~~owing instance will illustrate. gun ship, broke her main-yard, which was 112 feet long, completely in two, 5 feet to leeward of the slings. The broken parts were sent down, and a main-top-sail-yard crossed instead, while a reefed top- sail did duty as a course and a mizzen-top-sail over it as a main-top- sail. The parts of the main-yard were placed together on deck; the two halves of a spare anchor stock were het in on the fore and aft sides and an oak mast fish on top, with some studding-sail-booms to round it off. All parts were bolted, hooped, and woolded together, making it as strong as ever it was, entirely from the material carried in the ship. The sketch (fig. 40) represents the time of dip- ping the port yard-arm under the main-stay: ¥ represents the jeers, which bear the principal weight (total, 54 tons); f the two fore-tackles lashed to the mast-head pendants; ¢ a top-burton ; s asail-tackle to the top-mast-head ; m, m main-tackles from the mast-head pendants; J the main-lift; y a yard-~~

~~Fig. 40. tackle secured to an upper-deck beam. The main-yard was entirely~~

~~rigged before being crossed; the blocks are not shown. In a long ship the operation would be easier. When a fore-yard has to be got across from the deck, time and trouble can be saved by letting go, half at a time, all the fore-rigging and back-stays which are on that side.~~

~~When feeling the way into harbour during a thick fog, let a boat pretend to tow the ship with the deep-sea lead-line ; by this means a margin of 100 fathoms of safety will be secured. Care should be taken that every running rope in the ship be slacked previous to rain or heavy dew.~~

~~*For further information and variety of opinions see Captain Francis Liardet, R.N,, Points of Seamanship and Discipline; Robert Kipping, Masting, Mast- making, and Rigging*Ships; Vanderdecken, The Yacht Sailor; R, H. Dana, Seaman's Manual (0th ed., 1867); Captain Alston, Seamanship; Charles Bushell, Rigger's Guide ; Captain Sir George S. Nares, Seamanship (6th ed.).*~~

~~*SHiAWANS ATP*~~

~~*GLossary,.1*~~

A.B., ~~***able-bodied," signifies a trained seaman. Avast there," 'Avast heaving"), stop.***~~

~~***Back and fill, a mode of drifting safely with the tide, against the wind. Back a sail, to let the wind press it the reverse way. Backstay, a support at the side and abaft an upper mast. Bale-slings, a long strap of rope for hoisting packages. Ballast, anything carried for the sake of its weight. Banyan-day, formerly a fast-day on which oatmeal was issued in lieu of meat. Bare poles, at sea without any sail set. Barrica, a sinall cask for water in boats. Batten down, to cover the hatchways with canvas secured with battens, in order to ex- clude the sea. Beam, the extreme width. Beam-ends, a ship is on her beam- ends when inclining over atarightangle. Beara hand, make haste. Bear away and bear wp, steer farther from the wind. Bearing, direction 5 down to her bear- ings, a point in the inclination of a good ship at which she resists going further. Becket, a rope eye to receive a kuot or toggle. Bees, strong projections bolted on each side the bowsprit. Belay, to secure a rope by turns round a belaying pin or cleat. Bells, one sound is made for each half-hour from setting the watch (see "watch"). Belly, in a mast, a curve with the convex side aft. Belly-band, a broad strip of canvas across the middle of a sail, to strengthen it. Belly-stay, a rope from the centre of the mast led forward. Bend, sails are said to be bent to the yards; a kink formed in a hemp cable when stowing it; to make fast anything ; to bend on. Bentick shrouds, formerly used to assist the futtock shrouds and set upondeck. Berth, the situation ofa ship or other thing. Between wind and water, at the water's edge. Bight, a loop formed by a rope. Bilge, a gutter nearly the length of the bottom of the ship ; hence bilge-water. Binnacle, a box for the***~~

~~*compass. Bite, the anchor bites when it hooks the ground. Bitts, a rack with sheaves and pins ; cross timbers or iron to secure the cable. Block, a shell of wood or metal containing one or more sheaves. Dlue water, clear of the English Channel ; at a distance from shore. Bluff, broad, as applied to the bows. Boarding-netting, a rope net to exclude an eneiny. Bobstays, strong ropes or chains to keep the bowsprit down. Bold shore, that which has deep water close to it. Bolsters, soft wood and canvas under the eyes of the rigging. Bolt-rope, a superior description, made of fine yarn, used for roping sails. Bonnet, an addition to a try-sail (or other sail), attached by a row of beckets rove through each other. Boom-irons, supports for studding- sail-booms. Booms, spare spars (indefinitely). Both sheets aft, running before the wind. Bower anchors, the two principal anchors for use. Bowdline, a rope to bow the leech of the sail forward ; bowline-bridle, a span for the sane; to sail on a bowline, to sail close to the wind. Bowse, a violent pull. Bow, or braced abou, the head-yards crossed the reverse way of the after-yards ; box her off, to force her bow from the wind. Loa-hauling, letting the ship come to the wind, hauling round all the yards, making a stern-board, and wearing. Brace to or by, to bring the yards back a little, to make them shake or nearly so. Brace wp, to place the yards as far forward as they will go. Brail up, to take in a sail by means of brails. Break bulk, to commence discharging cargo. Break her sheer, to pass the wrong side of her anchor. Breast-fast, a security at right angles to the side. Bridle, two parts of cable from the hawse to a mooring. Bring by the lee, to fall off till the wind, after crossing the stern, packs the sails. Bring to, either to anchor or to stop by backing a sail; to connect the cable with the capstan, or a tackle to a rope. Broaching to, coming to the wind against the helin. Broadside, the whole side; the dis-charge of every gun on one side. Broadside on, the flat side against anything. Broken-backed, a state caused by weakness or strain, when the centre sinks un- duly (see "hogged"). Bucklers, shutters and bars to secure the hawse-holes at sea. Bulk, the cargo is stowed in bulk when without sacks or packages. Bull- rope, arope from the jibboom to keep a buoy or boat from the bows. Bull's- eye, a wooden fair lead or a round thick piece of glass. Bumpkin, a short spar projecting from each bow, to which the fore-tack is hauled down ; it is sup- ported by bumpkin shrouds. Bunt, the centre part of a square sail when furled. Bunt-lines, ropes froin the foot of a sail by which to haul it up. Buoy-rope, the rope*~~

~~*between the crown of the anchor and the buoy. Burton, a long purchase with a double and a single block. Bush ofa sheave, the brass lining upon which the pin rests. Butt, the end of a plank. Butt-slings, strong slings for casks. By, brace the yards by, nearly in the direction of the wind, but not so as to shake. By the bowrd, overboard entirely, as a mast going over the side. By the head or stern, drawing more water forward or aft.*~~

~~*Cable-laid, the designation of nine-stranded a Cahoose, a cook-house on deck. Cant, to turn over. Cap, a large piece of elm fitted on the top of a mast by a square hole, with a round hole for an upper mast to slide through ; with iron masts the cap is of iron. Capshore, a support to the fore-part of a lower cap. Capstan, a drum on a vertical spindle for heaving heavy weights. Careen, to heel over bottom out of water for repairs. Cast off, to let go. Cat-block and cat-fall, used in hoisting the anchor. Catharptn legs, short ropes connecting the lower parts of the futtock shrouds. Cat-head, timber-head projecting from the bow on which to hang the anchor. Cat's-paw, a slight puff of wind ; a means of hooking arope. Caval, a large cleat for securingropes. Chafing-mats, mats to protect the rigging. Chain-plate, an iron plate securing a dead-eye. Chain- pump, the largest hand-pump, which by an endless chain and valves produces acontinuous flow. Channels or chains, projections from the ship's side to spread the rigging. Chock-a-block or block and block, when the blocks of a tackle meet together. Choke-a-lugf, to pass turns of spun-yarn round both parts of the fall to prevent their moving when let go. Cleat, a piece of beech with two horns for belaying ropes; a piece of wood nailed to secure a thing from slipping. Clew-garnet, for hauling up the clew of a course. Clew-line, the rope which hauls up the clew. Clew of a sail, the corner to which the shcet is attached. Clews, an arrangement of sinall lines called knittles for hanging cots and ham- mocks. Clinch, the inner end of a cable; also a mode of fastening a hemp cable to an anchor, and for other purposes. Clubbing, dredging, or driving, each word implies dropping with the tide, while the ship is governed by the helin and an anchor scraping the bottom. Club-haul, to tack by means of letting go and losing an anchor. Coamings, the raised frame of a hatchway. Cockbill, when the anchor hangs loose from the cat-head. Collars, the upper parts of the stays and large straps round the bowsprit. Come wp, to render slack or let go. Coming wp, when the change of wind allows a nearer approach*~~

~~*to the course. Commander, a large mallet for hammering rope. Companion, a high covering over a hatchway. Compressor, a curved bar to squeeze the chain cable against a beamas a stopper. Conntng, directing the helmsman. Cownter, the angle of the stern on either side. Courses, fore-sail and main-sail of a square-rigged vessel. Crank, unstable, easily turned over. Cringle, an iron ring to confine a sail to a stay; an eye formed by a strand on the leech of a sail. Crossing the bows, passing close ahead. Cross-trees, spreaders under the tops and at the top-mast heads to support the top-gallant rigging. Crow's- foot, several spans of small rope brought to a common centre. Crow's-nest, & geat for a lookout man at the top-gallant mast-head. Crupper, a chain to*~~

~~*1 See also the explanation to fig. 35 at p. 594.*~~

~~*keep down the heel of the jibboom. Crutch, an iron rest for a boom; a metal swivel for an oar to work in. Cut and run, to cut the cable and go in haste.*~~

~~*Davit, a derrick of wood or iron to lift a weight. Deaden her way, to retard progress. Dead-eye, a clump of wood with three holes, without sheaves ; an iron frame for setting up rigging. Derrick, a single spar held by guys to lift a weight. Dog, to pass the tails of a stopper or other ropes zigzag. Dog's-ear, the leech of the sail between the reefs when allowed to stick up. Dog-vane, made of feathers for the use of the quartermaster. Dog-watch, 4 to 6 and 6 to 8 p.m.; figuratively, a short time. Dowse, to lower a sail; put out a light. Drag, applied to an anchor not holding. Draught, the depth of water required to float the ship. _ Draw, when a sail takes the wind properly. Dredging, see "clubbing." Drift, floating without guidance. Driving, dragging the anchor unavoidably in a gale; dropping intentionally with the tide and very little cable. Drop astern, to fall behind. Drop of a sail, the distance the foot is from the yard. Dunnage, firewood or valueless things placed under the cargo.*~~

~~*Earings, the upper corners of a square sail; the ropes by which they are secured tothe yard. Ease her, in steamers, go slow. Ease off, to slacken a rope. Ease the helm, move it back towards midships. Edge away, to steer*~~

~~*farther from the wind, or obliquely from a ship. HIdge in with, to steer obliquely towards something. Elbow, an angle formed by two cables orropes. Embrail, to brail up (obsolete). End for end, changing a half-worn rope, substituting a strong part fora weak. End on, in a direct line with the length of the ship. Estivador or stevedore, a man who stows holds but does not go to sea. Even keel, when a ship draws as much water forward as aft.*~~

~~*Fag-end, the end of a rope unlaid; refuse. Fatr-way, the free passage to a harbour. Fair wind, a wind which allows a ship to steer direct for her destination. Fake, one circle of a coil of rope. Fake down, to arrange a rope to and fro clear for running. Fall, ofa tackle, the part which is hauled upon. Falling off, when the change of wind obliges the ship to deviate farther from her course. False keel, an addition to the main keel, not vital to the strength of the ship. Fetch way, to move through being insecure. Jid, a piece of wood or iron to key up a mast or keep out a cutter's bowsprit ; a wooden cone used by riggers. Jill, to place the sails to the wind soas to propel the ship forward. Fish, a piece of wood or iron secured to a weak mast or yard to strengthen it. Fish-davit, a derrick for hoisting the flukes of an anchor; hence jish-block, jish- hook, fish-fall. Flat aft, when the sheet of a sail is as taut as it can be ; flatten in is the order to produce that effect. Flaw ofwind, wind sudden and un- stable in force and direction. Fleet, to rearrange a purchase for another pull. Flemish horse, a foot-rope at the yard-arm for men to stand on. Flotilla, a fleet of small vessels. Flowing sheet, the sheet eased off toa fairwind. Flush, level. Flush-decked, having neither poop nor forecastle. Foot-ropes, ropes on the yards, the jibboom, and the flying-jibboom for men to stand upon. Fore and aft, from one end to the other lengthways of the ship. Fore-and-a/t sails, those not set on yards, therefore capable of being placed in a line with the keel. Forecastle, the front part of the upper deck, but more correctly the deck built over that part; top-gallant forecastle, a short piece of deck open beneath. ore peak, under the front part of the deck; the forward extremity. Fore reach, to sail faster through the water than another when on a wind, though not gaining to windward. Forge ahead, the ship moving ahead slightly when hove to, or inacalm, or over a shoal, Foul, entangled (of a rope); contrary (of a wind); weedy (of the bottom). Foul hawse, when the cables are twisted. Frapping, an irregular*~~

~~*lashing to bind things together. Freeboard, that part which is above water. Freshen the nip, to veer a little cable, or any rope, in order to relieve the parts strained. Full and by, to steer close to the wind, keeping the sails full. Funnel, a copper sheath at the top-mast or top-gallant-mast head. Furl, to roll up square sails; other sails are stowed. Futtock-shrouds, short ropes below each top.*~~

~~*Gammoning, a strong lashing of rope or chain to secure the bowsprit down to the head knee. Gangboard, a plank with battens for people to walk upon. Gangway, the narrow deck between the quarter-deck and forecastle; the en- trance to aship; any passage kept clear. Gaskets, bands of platted rope-yarns to secure the sails when furled. Gird-lines, ropes which are on a mast when it is hoisted in and by which the shrouds are triced up. Girt, when the mooring cables are so stretched as to prevent the ship swinging freely. Glut, a piece of wood which keeps a knot or hitch from closing. Goose-neck, a crooked iron to support a studding-sail-boom. Goose-wings, the parts of a course which are exposed to the wind when confined by clew-garnets and bunt-lines only. Graft, to cover a rope with fine line in an ornamental manner. Griping, coming up to the wind against the helm. Grownd-tackle, anchors, cables, and all con- nected with them. Grow, a term applied to the direction of the cable when it is being hove in. Grwmmet, a rope ring made bya strand. Gudgeon, that part of the hanging of a rudder which is bolted to the stern-post. (wess- warp, a rope stretched taut to haul something to and fro upon. Gunnel or gunwale, the highest part of the bulwark. Guys, ropes to keep a spar or other thing in the desired position. Gybe, to let a fore-and-aft sail shift from one side to the other when nearly before the wind.*~~

~~*Halyards, ropes exclusively for hoisting sails. Hand over hand, to pull with one hand after the other; figuratively, done quickly. Handsomely, an in- junction signifying slow motion; with care. Handy billy, a small axe kept on deck. Hard down and hard-a-lee, position of the helm, the reverse of hard-a- weather and hard up. Haul on board, the usval order for hauling down the main-tack, Haul wp, altering the course more towards the wind. Havwse-holes, the openings in the bows through which the cables pass,—the iron lining is the hawse-pipe ; a large piece of wood which stops the hole at sea is the hawse- plug ; open hawse, when the*~~

~~*cables are clear of each other; a cross, when the ship has swung half round ; an elbow, when once round; a round turn, when twice round; in the hawwse, in the space close ahead. Hauser, a Jarge rope for moving a ship, now frequently of steel wire. Head-sails, the flying-jib, jib, and fore-top-mast stay-sail. Head sea, when the waves run contrary to the course though the wind may not be so. Headway, motion in the direction of the vessel's head. Heart, a block of hard wood, which takes a large rope round it and many turns of a lanyard through it. Heave down, to careen for repairs. Heave in stays, to come up in the wind for tacking. Heave short, to heave in the cable to a short scope. Heave the lead, to cast the lead to ascertain the depth. Heave the log, to throw the log over to test the speed. Heel, the lower part of a mast, spar, rudder, or stern-post. Heel chain, from the bowsprit cap to keep the jib-boom out. Helm's a-lee, a word of command implying that the helm is down. Hog, to scrub or scrape the bottom. Hogged, applied to a vessel when through weakness the bow and stern droop, so that the profile is that of a hog's back (see " broken-backed"). Home, when sheets are close down to the yard they are home; when an anchor is hove upon and draws through the ground it is said to come home. Hoops, broad wooden bands used with gaff-sails and wind-sails. Horse, a bar upou which the fore or main sheet blocks of small vessels run. Hownds, large cheeks on a mast to support the trestle -trees. Housing, of a mast, the part below the upper-deck. Hove to, an abbreviation of hove to the wind, to bow the sea; tostop. Hulk, an old vessel without inasts. Hull, the body of the vessel exclusive of masts and rigging. Hull-down, so far distant that the hull is below the horizon.*~~

~~*Inboard, any place within the ship. Jn irons, when the sails are so badly arranged that the vessel will not obey the helm. Jn the wind, too close, the sails flapping.*~~

~~*Jack-stay, a tight rope to which others are made fast. Jacob's ladder, a rope*~~

~~*ladder with wooden steps. Jaw-rope, to confine the jaws of a gaff to the mast. Jeers, a heavy purchase for swaying up the fore and main yards. Jewel-block, at the extremity of a yard for the studding-sail halyards.*~~

~~*Jew's harp, a shackle at the head of an anchor. Jigger, a small handy tackle with a double and a single block. Junk, old cable or large rope, used for making swabs, mats, spun- yarn, &c. Jury-mast, jury-yord, jury-rudder, temporary substitutes for mast, &c. Keckle, to pass old rope round a hemp cable to protect it from chafing. Kedging, to move by means of warps and kedge anchors. Keelson, a timber. inside on top of the keel. Keep away, steer farther from the wind. Keep her full, the helmsman to keep the sails full of wind. Keep your luff and keep to the wind, synonymous expressions. Kink, a knotty twist in rope; a bend in wire-rope which is difficult to straighten. Knees, angular supports of iron or wood. Knyittle-stugf, small line made by hardening two or three rope-yarns and twisting them together. Knot, a geographical mile (see art. Loa). Lacings, small lines securing sails and other things. Landfall, finding the land as expected. Landlocked, protected by land in every direction. Lanyard,*~~

~~*a rope for tightening larger ropes ; a line to fasten knives, marling-spikes, &c."*~~

~~*Larboard, the old name for the left side, now called port. Lash, to secure two or more things together by ropes. Lay to, to wait; to heave to. Lazy-guy, a rope or tackle on a spanker-boom or main-boom to keep it steady. Lead, the weight for ascertaining the depth of water. Lead, the lead of a rope is its proper direction through the blocks. Leech, either side of a square sail and the lee-side of all others (see " luff"). Leech-lines, on courses only, to haul the leech of the sail close up to the fore-side of the yard. Lee lurch, a deep roll to lee- ward. Lee shore, a shore upon which the wind blows directly and which is unsheltered. Lee side, the side farthest froin the wind, either inside or outside the ship. Under the lee, a ship is so spoken of in relatiou to the land by which it is protected ; similarly a boat may be said to be "under the lee" of a ship. Lee-way, the distance a ship drifts out of her course, indicated by the angle formed by the wake. Legs, spars carried by cutters to keep them upright when on the ground. Life-lines, small ropes to steady the men when standing on the yards, to hold by when being lowered in boats, and for similar purposes. Lift, a rope near the extremity of each yard to top it up, 1.e., lift it. Limbers, boards or plates to keep the bilge clear. List, to lean over continuously. Lizard, a lanyard with a thimble to confine another rope or*~~

~~*to slip at pleasure. Loose sails, letting them fall free to dry or for use. Lubber, a man not skilled in seamanship. Lubber's hole, an open space in the top near the eyes of the rigging, through which a man can crawl instead of going outside. Luff, an order to steer closer to the wind ; of a sail, the fore-part of a stay-sail, try-sail, or jib, and the weather-side for the time being of any square sail. Lwuf-tackle, is formed of 3-inch or 4-inch rope, a double and asingle block, and is used for various temporary purposes.*~~

~~*Make sail, to set sail. Make water, to leak. Manger, a tight enclosure to catch the water from the hawse-pipes. Man-rope, placed over the side at the gangway for people to climb up by, and at other places. Man yards, men to stand in a row on each, as a salute. Marl, to secure things together by a suc- cession of half-hitches. Marling, soft-laid white line for securing sails to the bolt-rope. JMarling-spike, an iron or copper spike used by sailmakers and riggers. Marry, to fit the strands together ready for splicing. Martingale, a tackle to keepdownaspar. Maul, a large double-headed hammer used by riggers. Messenger, an endless rope or chain froin the capstan to bring in the cable. Mid- ships, the centre, 01, when applied to the helm, the neutral point. Miss stays, to try to tack and fail. Mooring-swivel, a swivel with four short legs to ineet two cables from the anchors and two bridles froin the hawse. Mouse, a swelling or obstruction raised on a stay; also a Seizing across the point of a hook.*~~

~~*Neaped, of a ship, to be in a dock or on shore requiring more water to float than neap-tides afford. Near, a caution to the helmsman that the ship is too close to the wind. Necklace, a chain or band round a lower mast for the futtock rigging to be set up to, or round the top-mast for the top-gallant rigging to reeve through, Nip, the part of the rope which bears the chief strain; to freshen the nip is to veer out and change the place. Nipper, a selvagee, rope, or chain for binding the messenger to the cable. Norman, a block of wood placed in one of the holes of a capstan for veering a rope by. Nwn-buoy, a buoy of any material in the form of a double cone.*~~

~~*Offing, a distance from the land. Off the wind, not so close as she might be if sailing ona wind. Open, an anchorage is open when exposed to the*~~

~~*sea; the hawse when the cables are clear of each other; an object when visible, not obscured. Orlop-deck, the lowest in large ships. Out of trim, when the weights are wrongly placed. Overhaul, to slacken every part of a tackle ; to overtake; to examine.*~~

~~*Painter, the rope by which boats are made fast. Parbuckle, to hoist by rolling a thing with two ropes. Parcelling, covering a rope with strips of tarred canvas. Parrels, stout ropes covered with leather, used to confine an upper yard to the inast. Larting, breaking, as parting the cable. Pay a seam, filling it with pitch. Pay away and pay out, applied to slacking hawsers or cables. Pay down, lowering things, as the cable to be coiled or stowed. Pay off, from the wind, as by hoisting head-sail or putting the helm up; to pay and dismiss the crew. Peak, the outer part of a gaff and of a gaff-sail. Pendant, a large rope with a tackle attached. Pennant, a narrow signal flag; a long strip flown by ships of war. Pig, one part of iron ballast; the largest is 3 cwt. Pintle, a large pin bolted to the rudder, by which it is hinged. Pitching and sending signifies plunging the bow into one wave and the stern into another. Plain sail, all except studding-sails and stay-sails between the masts. Point, a plat- ting or line to tie up a reef; to secure the end of a rope with knittles. Pooped, a vessel is said to be pooped when a wave breaks over the stern. Port, the modern word for left. Press of sail, very much sail. Preventer-brace, an additional rope to support the yard during a gale. Prize, to move by a lever oraspar; a lawfulcapture. Purchase, a tackle or lever.*~~

~~*Quarter, the part of the side near the stern, hence quarter-boat; also the part of a yard between the centre and the yard-arm.*~~

~~*Rack, a frame with sheaves and belaying pins, Rake, to fire through a ship from end to end; the inclination of the masts aft. Range of cable, it was for- merly customary to haul up cable equal to the depth of water. Rap-full, the wind acting fully on every sail. Ratlins or ratlings, small lines as steps up the rigging. azee, a ship reduced in height by one or more decks. Reach, the open straight part of a river between two bends. Ready about, ready o' ready, words of warning preparatory to tacking. Reef-tackles and reef-pendants, for hauling up the leeches of top-sails and courses ready for reefing; the latter also on a boom for reefing a sail.*~~

~~*Reeving-line, a small rope rove through blocks to drag a larger one after it. Refit, general repair. Relieving tackles, placed on a tiller to assist the wheel-ropes during a gale. Rendering, slipping, not holding asa knot or fastening should. Ribs and trucks, flat boards and rollers alternating ; used for jaw-ropes and parrels. Riding between wind and tide, when balanced between the two. Riding cable, the cable bearing the strain. Rigging stoppers, for securing the standing rigging when broken. Right a vessel, to recover the upright position. Right the helm, to relinquish the position the helm is in at any moment and place it in midships. Ring-ropes, cable stoppers which pass through the ring-bolts. Robands, small tyers to fasten a top-sail or course to a jack-stay. Rogue's yarn, a thread of worsted spun in the rope to mark it; each British royal dockyard formerly used a differ- ent colour. Rolling tackle, stretched from the lee quarter of a yard to the mast, to relieve the parrel or truss from the jerking strain of the lee roll. Roping,*~~

~~*SHAMANSHAIiP*~~

~~*the bordering of every sail. Rownd down, to overhaul, to slack by hand, Rounding, old 3-inch or 4-inch rope for hack purposes. Rownd in the weather- braces, the wind becoming more favourable, to bring the yards nearer to square, Roundly, to lower or veer quickly. Round to, to come to the wind and heaye to. Round turn, a double twist in a cable ; to veer a rope round a bit-head or cleat. Round up, to shorten up a tackle; to pull upa slack rope through a block. Rouse it in, as hauling a hawser by hand without a purchase. Rowlock.*~~

~~*an opening in the gunwale of a boat foran oar. Rudder chains and pendants are shackled to a band on the rudder ready to steer the ship if the rudder-head gives way. udder coat, canvas or leather round the aperture and rudder-head to exclude the sea. Runner and tackle, a long pendant and tackle for staying lower masts; the chief support aft to a cutter's mast. Running rigging, that which is rove through blocks, or is otherwise hauled upon.*~~

~~*Saddle, a wooden rest for the heel of the jibboom and the end of the spanker boom. Sag to leeward, to make more leeway than headway. Sail close to the wind, to sail with the sails barely full. Sat? large or free, to*~~

~~*sail off the wind, as 'with a flowing sheet." Sail tackle, from the top-mast-head to sway up top-sails and top-sail-yards. Samson-post, a strong piece of elm to fit against a beam above it and in astep on the deck. Scandalize a boom main-sail, to trice up the tack and drop the peak. Scope of cable, the length veered out of the hawse. Scotchman, an iron plate to protect a part of the rigging from chafing. Scudding, running before a gale either with or without sail; the latter is described as "under bare poles." Scull, a small oar. Sculling, propelling a boat by moving the flat of the oar over the stern to and fro while changing the angle. Scupper, a passage for water to run off a deck, Scuttle, a hole in the side to admit light and air; a hole made in the side or deck to let water flowin. Sea, a wave; a long sea or a short sea has reference to the distance between the waves. Sea-boat, a vessel is said to be a good or bad sea-boat according as she behaves ina gale. Sea-room, free from land or shoals, Seizing, a small lashing. Selvagee, a strap made of yarns or small rope wound as askein and marled together. Sending, see "pitching." Sennit, a platting of threc or more rope-yarns. Serving, covering a rope closely with spun-yarn, hove on by a serving mallet. Set wp, applied to standing rigging to make it tight. Setting-fid, a large cone of wood used in fitting rigging. Sewed, to be lifted out of the water, as by running on a ledge, or being left by the tide. Shackle, a curved bar, with two eyes and a bolt, for joining chains. Shank- pointer, a stopper which holds up the fluke of an anchor at the bows. Shape @ course, to steer in the desired direction, the wind favouring. Shear-hulk, a vessel fitted permanently with shears. Shears, two large spars with their heads lashed and heels spread, for masting ships and lifting heavy weights. Sheave, a wheel of brass or lignum vite for ropes to travel on; all the fakes of a coil of rope to complete a layer. Sheer, to swerve from the course, the curve formed by the bow and stern being higher than the centre. Sheer-batton, a bar of iron to keep the dead-eyes square. Sheer off, to edge away. Sheet, the rope which holds the lee lower corner of a sail. Sheet-anchor, one of the largest, and the third for use. Sheet home, to haul the sheets of square sails to their positions. Shift the helm, put it over the otherway. Shipped, taken on board; anything fixed in its place for use. Shipshape, in a proper and seamanlike inauner. Shiver a sail, to make it shake and render it neutral. Shoot, to go ahead after the propulsion has ceased. Shorten sail, to take in some portion. Skid, a spar for something to rest or slide upon, Skin of a sail, the part ex-*~~

~~*posed when it is furled. Skipper, the old name for the master of a small vessel. Slab of a sail, the slack part which hangs down after the leech-lines are hauled up. Sleepers, timbers in the hold and strengthening pieces in the tops. Slew, to turn or cant over. Slips, ropes with toggles, shackles, and tongues, and various contrivances for letting go quickly. Small helm, when the sails are well balanced and the rudder but little used. Small sail, and snug sail, low and reduced, ready for bad weather. Sownd, to ascertain the depth of the sea, or of water in the pump-well. Span, two parts of a rope spread to divide the strain, or for making a point secure in an intermediate place. Spanish windlass, a bar of iron and two marling-spikes to heave seizings taut; tightening ropes by twisting them together by a lever. Spell, a turn or relief. Spider, a small iron outrigger, to keep the niain-brace block clear of the counter. Spilling-lines, ropes passed round a part of a sail which is flapping, to confine it. Spitfire-jib, a small storm-sail used in cutters. Splice, to join two ropes by entwining the strands. Splice the main-brace, to give a glass of grog to every man after some unusual fatigue, or on some occasion of rejoicing. Splicing-tails, a short piece of chain with three tapering tails, for splicing to a hemp cable. Spring, a hawser from the after-part to cant the ship. Spring a leak, to cause a leak by straining. Sprit-sail, formerly set on the sprit-sail-yard ; an efficient four-sided sail for boats and barges, the peak of which is held up by a spar called a sprit. Sprung, cracked, fractured. Spun-yarn, rope-yarns laid up together softly. Square-rigged, having yards and square sails, as ships and brigs have. Square sails, those set upon such yards as have lifts and braces, regardless of their proportions. Square yards, to adjust them by means of their lifts and braces. Stand by a rope, to be in readiness to let it go. Standing off and on, sailing to and fro, as off a port. Standing part, the fixed end ofarunning rope. Standing rigging, such as shrouds and stays. Stand on, to continue the same progress and course. Starboard, the right-hand side. Starboard and port tack express the direction of the wind, on the right hand and on the left respectively. Stay-satls, any sail set ona stay, except the jib, flying-jib, and fore-sails of cutters and schooners. Steady, to the helm; to keep the saine course. Steadying-lines, passed from eye-bolts in the gunnel of a boat to the slings to keep it upright. Steeve, the angle which the bowsprit forms with the horizon. Stem on, striking head foremost at right angles, the reverse of stern on. Stern-board, having considerable stern-way. Stevedore, see*~~

~~*"estivador." Stiffness, stability under canvas. Stirrup, a short rope from a yard to support a foot-rope. Stop, a light temporary seizing. Storm-sails, stay-sails and try-sails of the strongest canvas. Stranded, when one strand is broken; wrecked on a beach. Stream-anchor, about one-third to one-fourth the weight of a bower anchor. Stream the buoy, to throw over the buoy which is to watch over the anchor. Strike, to send down from aloft. Strike colours, a token of submission. Strike soundings, to succeed in reaching the bottom with the lead. Studding-sails, light four-sided sails set only with a fair wind. Surge, to slack back quickly, as a hawser round a capstan, to make it slip up to its place. Swab, a large bundle of rope-yarns for soaking up water; a drunkard. Sway away, to hoist by running with arope. Sweep, a large oar; to search the bottom with a hawser or chain. Swifter, a single shroud, when there is an odd one; to draw rigging together ; a rope or bar to keep things equidistant, or in their proper places. Swinging, the act of turning to the change of wind and tide. Swinging boom, a large spar for spreading the foot of the lower studding-sail ; in harbour for making boats fast.*~~

~~*Tabernacle, a frame for receiving the heel of a boat's mast to make it higher. Tack, the lower weather corner of every sail ; to change course by bringing the wind ahead and round to the other side. Taken aback, applied to a vessel when the wind coming ahead reverses the action of all the sails. Taking in sail, clewing it up and perhaps furling it. Taunt, high masts, comparatively. Taut (also taught), the only word among seamen to signify tight. Tending to the tide, beginning to swing to the change of tide in opposition to the wind. Thimble, an iron ring with a score to receive a rope; union thimble, two thimbles welded within each other. Thole pin, a peg of wood on the gunwale of a boat to confine the oar. Thorough-foot, the fall of a tackle being foul,*~~

~~*requiring to be unrove or the block turned over between the parts. Three sheets in the wind, a ship too close to the wind ; a man half drunk. Throat, the upper corner of a vaff-sail nearest the mast. Throat halyards, for hoisting the end of the gaff nearest the mast. Thwart, across ; the name of all seats which cross a boat. Thwart ships, across the ship. Tide-*~~

~~*way, an anchorage or position affected by tide. Tiller, a lever which moves the rudder. Toggles, pieces of wood varying in shape, generally secured to one piece of rope so as to hold the eye of another, as a button. Top, a large platform resting on the cross-trees of each lower mast; to top a yard is to raise it by the lift. Top-rope, a large rope rove through the heel of the top-mast. Tow, one vessel pulling another in any relative position. Transport a ship, to move her in a harbour by ropes. Traveller, an iron ring covered with leather, for jibs, royals, and boat sails. Travelling backstwy, a support to the top-mast always close above the yard. Traverse, to make several tacks ; the free motion of a sheave or rope. — T'restle- trees, pieces of wood which rest on the hounds of the mast and support the cross-trees. Tricing-line, a small rope used for hoisting up a tackle or larger rope. Trim of the ship, neither too deep nor too light, and having the right draught of water forward and aft. Trim sails, to brace the yards and adjust the sheets. Trip, the anchor is tripped when the shank is raised and the flukes broken out of the ground. Trough of the sea, the hollow between long waves, which are generally nearly parallel. Truck, a disk of wood at the summit of the mast, generally having sheaves for signal halyards; a long wooden fair Jead seized to the shroud. Trusses, fitted variously to confine the centre of the lower yards to the mast. Try-scil, a foul-weather gafi-sail. Try-sail-mast, a smooth spar abaft each mast to support the jaws of the gaff and luff of the gail. Turning in a dead-eye, fitting the shroud or stay round it. Twrning to windward, tacking frequently. "wice laid, rope that has been unlaid and re- twisted to the desired size. Twiddling-lines, for securing the wheel when not in use. Two blocks, signifying that the two ends of a purchase have come together. Tye, a large rope on which the halyards act when hoisting a yard. Under foot, said of an anchor when dropped without veering more cable. Under swil, free from moorings and propelled by sail only. Under steam, pro-pelled by steam only. Under way, having motion; the anchor off the ground.*~~

~~*SEAMEN, Laws RELATING TO. legislation has interfered to protect the seaman from the consequences of that imprudence which is generally sup- posed to be one of his distinguishing characteristics, In the United Kingdom there has been a very large amount of legislation dealing with the interests of seamen with unusual fulness of detail, proving the care*~~

~~*bestowed by a maritime power upon those to whom its commercial suc-cess is so largely due. How far this legislation has had the efficiency which was expected may be doubtful. The loss of life among sailors was one in eighty in 1871, one in seventy-five in 1882. There has been besides a steady diminution in the number of British seamen employed on British ships, nearly one-eighth being foreigners at the present time.*~~

~~*For legislative purposes seamen may be divided into three classes, seamen in the royal navy, merchant seamen,*~~

~~*and fishermen.*~~

~~*Seamen in the Royal Navy.—It is still lawful to impress men for the naval service, subject to certain exemptions (13 Geo, II. c. 17). Among the persons exempt are seamen in the merchant service. In cases of emergency officers and men of the coastguard and revenue cruisers, seamen riggers, and pensioners may be re- quired to serve in the navy (16 and 17 Vict. c. 73). There appears to be no other instance (now that balloting for the militia is sus- pended) where a subject may be forced into the service of the crown against his will, The navy is, however, at the present day wholly recruited by voluntary enlistment. The navy estimates of 1885 provided for 59,000 men (see Navy). Special advantages are afforded by the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, to merchant seamen enlisting in the navy. They are enabled to leave their ship without punishment or forfeiture in order to join the naval service. The discipline of the navy is, unlike that of the army, for which an annual Army Act is necessary, regulated by a permanent Act of Parliament, that now in force being the Naval Discipline Act, 1866. In addition to numerous hospitals and infirmaries in the United Kingdom and abroad, the great charity of Greenwich Hospital is a mode of provision for old and disabled seamen in the navy (see GREENWICH). At present such seamen are out-pensioners only ; the hospital has been for some years used as the Royal Naval College for officer students. The enactments of the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, as to savings banks were extended to seamen in the navy by 18 and 19 Vict. c. 91, s. 17. Enlistment without the licence of the crown in the naval service of a foreign state at war with another foreign state that is at peace with the United Kingdom is an offence punishable under the*~~

~~*Foreign Enlistment Act, 1870. Any person buying from a seaman or enticing a sea- man to sell Government property is liable to penalties under the Seamen's Clothing Act, 1869.*~~

~~*Merchant Seamen.—Most of the Acts dealing with this subject, commencing with 8 Eliz. c. 18, were repealed by 17 and 18 Vict. c. 120, after having been consolidated and extended by the Mer- chant Shipping Act, 1854 (17 and 18 Vict. c. 104). The main part of the legislation affecting seamen in the merchant service occurs in the third part of this Act. Since 1854 numerous amending*~~

~~*In most legal systems*~~

~~*605*~~

~~*Vangs, ropes to steady a gaff. Veer, to slack out cable, hawser, or tow-rope ; the old expression for " wear." Veer and haul, slacking and hauling alternately, by a number of men simultaneously, so as to gain by the jerk.*~~

~~*Waist, the centre part of the ship before the gangway port. Wake, the track left in the water. Warp, a small hawser for moving the ship; yarns or rope stretched over pins for making straps. Warping-buoys, buoys moored in suit- able positions for ships to warp by, now rendered nearly obsolete by the use of steam-tugs. Watch, sailors' watches commence or terminate at 4, 8, and 12 o'clock, also at 6 P.M. ; a buoy over an anchor is said to watch while it floats and can be seen. Water-borne, to be entirely afloat. Water-logged, full of water, unmanageable. Way, motion, as under way, headway, sternway. Wear ship, to bring the wind on the other side by first running before it. Weather-bound, detained by contrary winds or bad weather. Weather- gage, being to windward of the enemy. Weatherly, sailing well, without much lee- way. Weather-side, that on which the wind blows. Weather-tide, the stream running contrary to the direction of the wind. Wedging a mast, securing it in the partners or frame on each deck by wedges made to fit. Weigh, to heave up the anchor, Whip, a single rope passing through a block. Whipping, a light seizing of twine at the end of a rope to prevent fraying. Whiskers, pro- jections from the cat-head to spread the jib-guys. Vind a ship or boat, to turn her head where her stern was. To take the wind out of another's sails, to pass close to windward, as*~~

yachts sometimes do. Windlass, a machine for heaving in cable. Wind-rode, being head to wind though in a tide-way. Wind-sail, a canvas ventilator, Wood-lock, a chock to keep the rudder in its place. Woolding, a stout lashing to secure sprung or fished spars. Work a ship, to perform every maneuvre. Worm, to heave small line between the strands of a rope to make it smooth.

Yard, a spar which spreads a sail. Yord-rope, a rope by which a top-gallant or royal yard is sent up from the deck, and afterwards becomes the tye and halyards. Yard-tackles, permanently on the lower yard-arms of large ships for hoisting in things and as preventer braces. Yaw, an involuntary deviation from the course. Yoke, a bent lever across the ship or boat which acts as a tiller.1 (H. A. M.)

Acts have been passed, amounting to no less than eleven in number. They are cited collectively as 'The Merchant Shipping Acts, 1854 to 1883," The enactment of a new consolidation Act is urgently required, and can be only a question of time. The Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, defines a seaman to be "' every person (except masters, pilots, and apprentices duly indentured and registered) employed or engaged in any capacity on board any ship" (s. 2). It should be noticed that most of the enactments relating to merchant seamen do not affect seamen employed on foreign vessels, on fishing boats on the coasts of the United Kingdom, on vessels belonging to the Trinity House, the Commissioners of Northern Lighthouses, and the port of Dublin corporation, and on pleasure yachts. The princi- pal provisions of the Merchant Shipping Acts dealing with seamen are as follows. Where no other reference is given, the Act of 1854 is intended. An elective local marine board under the general super- vision of the Board of Trade is appointed in the principal ports of the United Kingdom. One of the duties of the board is the estab- lishment of mercantile marine offices under superintendents or deputy superintendents.? It is the general business of such officers to afford facilities for engaging seamen by keeping registries of their names and characters, to superintend and facilitate their engage- ment and discharge, to provide means for securing the presence on board at the proper times of men who are so engaged, and to facili- tate the making of apprenticeships to the sea service (s. 124). A seaman must be hired before a superintendent or deputy superin-

~~*tendent, an officer of customs, or a consular officer on a form sanc- tioned by the Board of Trade (usually called the shipping articles) containing the following particulars :—(1) the nature and, as far as practicable, the duration of the intended voyage or engagement, or the maximum period of the voyage or engagement, and the places or parts of the world (if any) to which the voyage or engagement is not to extend; (2) the number and description of the crew, specifying how many are employed as sailors; (8) the time at which each seanian is to be on board or to begin work; (4) the capacity in which each seaman is to serve; (5) the amount of wages which each seaman is to receive; (6) a scale of the provi- sions which are to be furnished to each seaman ; (7) any regulations as to conduct on board and as to fines, short allowance of provi- sions, or other lawful punishments for misconduct, which have been sanctioned by the Board of Trade as regulations proper to be adopted, and which the parties agree to adopt. Every agreement is to be framed so as to admit of stipulations as to allotment of wages, and may contain any other stipulations not contrary to law (s. 149, as amended by the Act of 1873 and the Merchant Seamen Act, 1880). Among illegal stipulations would fall any agreement by a seaman to give up his right to salvage, to forfeit his lien on the ship, or to be deprived of any remedy for the recovery of wages to which he would otherwise have been entitled (s. 182). In the case of foreign- going ships the following rules in addition must be observed :—(1) every agreement made in the United Kingdom (except agreements with substitutes) is to be signed by each seaman in the presence of the superintendent of a mercantile marine office; (2) the superin- tendent is to cause the agreement to be read over and explained to*~~

~~*1 For a fuller explanation of some of these terms, see Vice-Admiral W. H. Smyth, The Sailor's Word Book of Nautical Terms; Falconer's Marine Diction- ary, enlarged by W. Burney; P. L. Breslauer, Illustrated Nautical Polyglot (six languages).*~~

~~*2 These offices and officers were called shipping offices and shipping masters in the Act of 1854. The names were changed to the longer and less convenient ones in the text by the Act of 1862 (25 and 26 Vict. ¢. 63, s. 15).*~~

each seaman, or otherwise to ascertain that each seaman understands the same before he signs it, and is to attest each signature; (3) the agreement is to be in duplicate, one part to be retained by the superintendent, the other by the master; (4) in the case of sub- stitutes, they are where possible to be engaged before a superin- tendent, in other cases the agreement is to be read over and ex- plained to the seaman by the master and signed by the seaman in the presence of a witness (s. 150). The only cases where no agrec- ment in writing is necessary is where the hiring is for a coaster of less than eighty tons register or for a foreign vessel. In the case of union apprentices the indentures must be executed in the pre- sence of and attested by two justices. No stamp duty is charge- able on indentures for the sea service. In the case of foreign- going ships making voyages averaging less than six months in duration, running agreements with the crew may be made (s. 151). No person unlicensed by the Board of Trade, other than a master or mate or agent of the owner, may engage or supply seamen. The discharge of a seaman, like his engagement, must take place before a superintendent or an officer of equivalent authority. The seaman is entitled to receive a certificate of service and dis- charge. His wages must be paid within a limited time from his discharge, varying according to circuinstances, and are not now dependent, as they were at common law, upon the earning of freight. If he is discharged before a month's wages are earned, he is cntitled to a month's wages. As far as possible, payment is to be made in money and not by bill. In the absence of special stipulations, wages are not generally due until the contract of service is complete. By 8 Geo. I. c. 24, s. 7, a master may not advance a seaman more than half his wages while abroad. Sums recoverable as wages are, in addition to wages properly so called, the expenses of subsistence and of the voyage home when a ship is sold or transferred abroad, and the master does not deposit with a consular officer a sufficient sum for the seaman's expenses pursu- ant to s. 205; the expenses of a seaman left behind or discharged from a British ship, or a British subject from a foreign ship, out of the United Kingdom ; allowance for short or bad pro- visions ; the moneys and effects of a deceased seaman who has been employed on a British ship ; expenses caused by illness from want of proper food and accommodation and

~~*medicines ; and double pay for every day, not exceeding ten, during which payment of wages is delayed without proper cause. Wages cannot be attached. They may be forfeited or reduced by desertion, wilful disobedience, smuggling, want of exertion in case of wreck, illness caused by neglect or default of the seaman, and misconduct of other kinds. Advance notes—that is, documents promising the future payment of money on account of a seaman's wages conditionally on his going to sea and made before the wages have been earned—are void, and no money paid in respect of an advance note can be deducted from the wages earned, Merchant Seamen (Payment of Wages and Rating) Act, 1880 (48 and 44 Vict. c. 16, s, 2). Allotment notes may be made in the form sanctioned by the Board of Trade, and may stipulate for the allotment of not more than half the seaman's wages in favour of a wife, parent, grandparent, child, grandchild, brother or sister (s. 169), or of a savings bank (48 and 44 Vict. c. 16, s. 8). Seamen's savings banks have been established and are administered by the Board of Trade, chiefly under the powers given by the Seamen's Savings Banks Act, 1856. If during the absence of a seaman on a voyage his wife and family become chargeable to the parish, two-thirds of his wages at the most are all that can be recovered by the parish. Careful provision is made for the custody of a deceased seaman's effects and wages, and their delivery to his representatives. The possibility of a seaman's being left destitute abroad is provided against by ss. 206, 207. Consular officers abroad are bound to send home any distressed or shipwrecked seaman, the expenses being chargeable upon the mercantile marine fund. Compensation is to be made for insufficiency or bad quality of provisions or water on board. Ifa complaint of the quality or sufficiency be frivolous, the persons complaining are liable to for- feit a week's wages. All foreign-going ships are to carry proper medicines and medical stores. Lime and lemon juice and other antiscorbutics are to be provided on ships bound to foreign ports other than ports in Europe and the north of North America. An ounce a day of lime or lemon juice is to be served to each member of the crew after the ship has been at sea for ten days (Act of 1867, 30 and 81 Vict.c. 124, s. 4). A foreign-going ship having one hundred persons or upwards on board must carry a qualified medical man (s. 130). Each seaman or apprentice is entitled to a space of not less than 72 cubic feet, the place to be. securely constructed, properly lighted and ventilated, and*~~

~~*properly protected from weather and sea, and as far as possible from effluvium caused by cargo or bilge-water. The place is to be inspected and certified by a surveyor of the Board of Trade, and to be kept free from goods and stores. The local marine board (or the Board of Trade where there is no local marine board) may appoint a medical inspector of seamen, who may on application by the master or owner report to the superintendent of the mercantile marine office as to whether any seaman is fit for duty (80 and 81 Vict. c. 124, ss. 9, 10).*~~

~~*SHAMAN*~~

~~*Bye-laws and regulations relating to seamen's lodging-houses may be made by the sanitary authority of any seaport town with the sanction of the president of the Board of Trade. Such bye-laws and regulations are to provide for the licensing of seamen's lodging. houses, the inspection of the same, the sanitary conditions of the same, the publication of the fact of a house being licensed, the due execution of the bye-laws and regulations and the non-obstruction of persons engaged in securing such execution, the preventing of persons not duly licensed holding themselves out as keeping or purporting to keep licensed houses, and the exclusion from licensed houses of persons of improper character (46 and 47 Vict. c. 41, s. 48). Provision is made for the protection of seamen from im-position by crimps and lodging-house keepers. This protection may in certain cases be extended by order in council to foreign ships (s. 287, and 43 and 44 Vict. c. 16, ss. 5, 6). At the time of discharge of the crew in the United Kingdom a list in the form sanctioned by the Board of Trade is to be made out and delivered to a superintend- ent of a mercantile marine office containing, inter alia, the follow- ing particulars :—(1) the number and date of the ship's register and her registered tonnage; (2) the length and general nature of the voyage or employment ; (3) the Christian names, surnames, ages, and places of birth of all the crew, including the master and apprentices, their qualities on board, their last ships or other employments, and the dates and places of their joining the ship ; (4) the names of any members of the crew who have been maimed or hurt, with the times, places, causes, and circumstances thereof; (5) the wages due at the time of their respective deaths to any of the crew who have died; (6) the clothes and other effects belonging to any of the crew who have died,*~~

~~*with a statement of the manner in which they have been dealt with, and the money for which any of them have been sold (s. 273). Every birth or death occurring at sea is to be recorded in the log-book and reported on arrival at any port in the United Kingdom to the registrar-general of shipping and seamen, who forwards a certified copy to the registrar-general of births and deaths (37 and 88 Vict. c. 88, s. 37). An official log-book in a form sanctioned by the Board of Trade is to be kept by the master of every ship except a coaster. It must contain, ¢nter alia, (1) every legal conviction of any member of his crew and the punish- ment inflicted ; (2) every offence committed by any member of his crew for which it is intended to prosecute, or to enforce a forfeiture, or to exact a fine, together with a statement concerning the reading over of such entry and concerning the reply (if any) made to the charge; (3) every offence for which punishment is inflicted on board, and the punishment inflicted ; (4) a statement of the conduct, character, and qualifications of each of his crew, or a statement that he declines to give an opinion on such particulars; (5) every case of illness or injury happening to any member of the crew, with the nature thereof and the medical treatment adopted (if any) ; (6) the name of every seaman or apprentice who ceases to be a member of the crew, otherwise than by death, with the time, place, manner, and cause thereof; (7) the amount of wages due to any seaman who enters Her Majesty's service during the voyage; (8) the wages due to any seaman or apprentice who dies during the voyage, and the gross amount of all deductions to be made therefrom ; (9) the sale of the effects of any seaman or apprentice who dies during the voyage, including a statement of each article sold and of the sum received for it (s. 282). At common law there was no obligation of the owner to provide a seaworthy ship, but by the Act of 1876 every person who sends or attempts to send, or is party to sending or attempting to send, a British ship to sea in such unseaworthy state that the life of any person is likely to be thereby endangered is guilty of a misdemeanour, unless he proves that he used all reason- able means to insure her being sent to sea in a seaworthy state, or that her going to sea in such unseaworthy state was under the circumstances reasonable and justifiable. A master knowingly taking a British ship to sea in such unseaworthy state that the life of any person is likely to be thereby endangered is guilty of a mis- demeanour. In every contract of service between the owner and the master or any seaman and*~~

~~*in every indenture of sea apprenticeship, an obligation is implied that the owner, master, and agent shall use all reasonable means to insure the seaworthiness of the ship (39 and 40 Vict. c. 80, ss. 4,5). A return of certain particulars, such as lists of crews and of distressed seamen sent home from abroad, reports on discharge, births and deaths at sea, must be made to the registrar-general of shipping and seamen, an officer of the Board of Trade. The seaman is privileged in the matter of wills (see WILL), and is exempt from serving in the militia (42 Geo. ITI. c. 90, s. 43). Assaults upon seamen with intent to prevent them working at their occupation are punishable summarily by 24 and 25 Vict. c. 100, s. 40. There are special enactments in favour of Lascars and foreign seamen on British ships (see 4 Geo. IV. c. 80; 17 and 18 Vict. ¢. 104, s. 544; 17 and 18 Vict. c. 120, s. 16; 18 and 19 Vict. c. 91, s. 16). In addition to this legislation directly in his interest, the seaman is indirectly protected by the provisions of the Merchant Shipping Acts requiring the possession of certifieates of competence by ships' officers, the periodical survey of ships by the Board of Trade, and the enactments against deck cargoes and overloading, as well as by*~~

~~*other Acts, such as the Chain Cables and Anchors Acts, enforcing a minimum strength of cables and anchors, and_the Passenger Acts, under which a proper supply of life-boats and life-buoys must be provided. The duties of the seamen appear to be to obey the master in all lawful matters relating to the navigation of the ship and to resist enemies, to encourage him in which he may become entitled to prize money under 22 and 23 Car. II. c. 11 (see Prizm). Any services beyond these would fall under the head of salvage service and be recompensed accordingly. There are certain offences for which the seaman is liable to be summarily punished under the Act of 1854. They comprise desertion, neglect or refusal to join his ship or absence without leave, quitting the ship without leave before she is placed in security, wilful disobedience to a lawful command, either on one occasion or continued, assault upon a master or mate, combining to disobey lawful commands or to neglect duty or to impede the navigation of the ship or the progress of the voyage, wilful damage to the ship, or embezzlement of or wilful damage to her stores or cargo, and*~~

~~*smuggling. The punish- ment varies from forfeiture of all or part of his wages to twelve weeks' imprisonment (s. 243, as amended by the Merchant Scamen Act, 1880). A master, seaman, or apprentice who by wilful breach of duty, or by neglect of duty, or by reason of drunkenness, does any act tending to the immediate loss, destruction, or serious damage of the ship or to immediately endanger the life or limb of any person belonging to or on board of the ship, or who by wilful breach of duty, or by neglect of duty, or by reason of drunkenness refuses or omits to do auy lawful act proper and requisite to be done by him for preserving the ship from immediate loss, destruc- tion, or serious damage, or for preserving any person belonging to or on board of the ship from immediate danger to life or limb, is guilty of a misdemeanour (s, 239). A seaman is also punishable at common law for piracy and by statute for piracy and offences against the Slave Trade Acts. A riotous assembly of seamen to prevent the loading or unloading of any ship or to prevent others from working is an offence under 83 Geo. III. c. 67 (see Rtor), Deserters from Portuguese ships are punishable by 12 and 13 Vict. c. 25, and from any foreign ship by 15 and 16 Vict. c. 26, of course by virtue of conventions with Portugal and other forcign powers. The rating of seamen is now regulated by the Merchant Seamen Act, 1880. By that Acta seaman is not entitled to the rating of "A.B." unless he has served four years before the mast, or three years or more in a registered decked fishing vessel and one year at sea ina trading vessel (43 and 44 Vict. c. 16, s. 7). The Act of 1854 enabled. contributions to seamen's refuges and hospitals to be charged upon the mercantile marine fund. Asa matter of fact, however, there appears to be no grant in support of seamen's hospitals out of any public funds. The principal seamen's hospital is that at Green- wich, established in 1821 and incorporated by 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 9 under the name of "The Seaman's Hospital Society." Up to 1870 this hospital occupiced the old " Dreadnought" at Greenwich, but in that year it obtained the old infirmary of Greenwich Hospital from the admiralty at a nominal rent, in return for which a certain number of beds are to be at the disposal of the admiralty. The hospital is snpported by voluntary contributions, including those of many foreign Governments, and has between its foundation and the end of 1884 relieved no less than 253,629 seamen of all nations. There is also a dispensary for scamen at the London Docks, and a floating hospital at Cardiff, equally supported by voluntary con- tributions. At one time there*~~

~~was an enforced contribution of six- pence a month from the pay of masters and seamen towards the funds of Greenwich Hospital, levied under the powers of some of the Greenwich Hospital Acts. The payment of these contributions enabled them to receive annuities from the funds of the hospital. These "Greenwich Hospital sixpences," however, became the source of very considerable irritation and have now been discontinued. In their place a purely voluntary seamen's provident fund has been established, its object being to persuade seamen to subscribe six- pence a month towards the seamen's hospital.~~

~~'The remedies of the seaman for wages are an ordinary action in the Queen's Bench Division or plaint in a county court, an action in rem or in personam in the Admiralty Division of the High Court (in Scotland in the Court of Session), a Vice-Admiralty Court, or a county court having admiralty jurisdiction, or summary proceed- ings before justices, naval courts, or superintendents of mercantile marine offices. The master has now the same remedies as the sea- man for his wages, under which are included all disbursements made on account of the ship. At common law he had only a personal action against the owner. He has the additional advan- tage of being able to insure his wages, which a seaman cannot do. A common law action for wages is seldom brought, the statutory remedies being more convenient. By the Admiralty Court Act, 1861, the High Court of Justice (Admiralty Division) has juris- diction over any claim by a seaman of any ship for wages earned by him on board the ship, whether the same be due under a special contract or otherwise (24 Vict. c. 10,s. 10). This section has been liberally construed and held to apply to such persons as a surgeon, purser, pilot, carpenter, and steward. The ceurt can entertain~~

~~claims by foreign seamcen against a forcign ship, on notice being given to the consul of the foreign country. If he protest, the court has a discretion to determine whether the action shall pro- ceed ornot. A claim for wages in the High Court must be brought within six years (4 and 5 Anne, c. 3,s.17). The Vice-Admiralty Court Act, 1863, gives jurisdiction in claims for wages irrespective of amount to vice-admiralty courts. A county court~~

having admir- alty jurisdiction may entertain claims for wages where the amount claimed does not exceed £150 (31 and 32 Vict. c. 71, s. 8). The jurisdiction of the inferior court is protected by the proviso that, if the action be brought in the HIgh Court for a claim not exceed- ing £150, the plaintiff may be condemned in costs, and will not be entitled to costs if he recover less than this sum, unless the judge certifies that it was a proper case to be heard in the HIgh Court (s. 9). In actions in all courts of adiniralty jurisdiction the seaman has a maritime lien on the ship and freight, ranking next after claims for salvage and damage. The amount recoverable summarily before justices is limited to £50. Orders may be en- forced by distress of the ship and her tackle. Proceedings must be taken within six months. A naval court ona foreign station may determine questions as to wages without limit of amount. Asa rule a seaman cannot sue abroad for wages due for a voyage to terminate in the United Kingdom. The superintendent of a mercantile marine office has power to decide any question whatever between a master or owner and any of his crew which both parties in writing agree to submit to him. These summary remedies are all given by the Act of 1854. The Merchant Seamen Act, 1880, further provides that, where a question as to wages is raised before a superintendent, if the amount in question does not exceed £5, the superintendent may adjudicate finally, unless he is of opinion that a court of law ought to decide it. The same Act extends the provisions of the Employers and Workmen Act, 1875, to seamen. The Act of 1875 itself specially excluded them. A county court . or court of snmmary jurisdiction (the latter limited to claims not exceeding £10) may under the Act of 1875 determine all disputes between an employer and workman arising out of their relation as such. The jurisdiction of courts of summary jurisdiction is pro- tected by the enactment of the Act of 1854 that no proceeding for the recovery of wages under £50 is to be instituted in a superior court unless either the owner of the ship is bankrupt, or the ship is under arrest or sold by the authority of such court, or the justices refer the case to such cowrt, or neither owner nor master is or resides within 20 miles of the place where the seaman is put ashore (s. 189). It should be noticed that claims upon allotment notes may be brought in all county courts and before justices without any limit as to amount (s. 169). In Scotland the sheriff court has concurrent jurisdiction with justices in claims for wages and upon allotment notes. !

~~*Fishermen.—The regulations respecting fishermen are contained chiefly in the Sea Fisheries Acts, 1868 and 1883, and in the Mer- chant Shipping (Fishing-Boats) Act, 1883. The Sea Fisheries Act of 1868 constituted a registry of fishing-boats, and that of 1883 gave powers of enforcing the provisions of the Acts to sea-fishery officers. The Merchant Shipping (Fishing-Boats) Act was passed in consequence of the occurrence of some cases of barbarous treat- ment of boys by the skippers of North Sea trawlers. The Act pro- vides, inter alia, that indentures of apprenticeship are to be ina certain form and entered into before a superintendent of a mercantile marine office, that no boy under thirteen is to be employed in sea- fishery, that agreements with seamen on a fishing-boat are to con- tain the same particulars as those with merchant seamen, that running agreements may be made in the case of short voyages, that reports of the names of the crew are to be sent toa superintendent of a mercantile marine office, and that accounts of wages and cer- tificates of discharge are to be given to seamen. No fishing-boat is to go to sea without a duly certified skipper. Provision is also made for special reports of cases of death, injury, ill-treatment, or punishment of any of the crew, and for inquiry into the cause of such death, &c. Disputes between skippers or owners and seamen are to be determined at request of any of the parties concerned by a superintendent. For special privileges of fishermen in the use of the seashore, see RrpaRIAN Laws. They are also exempt from Trinity HIouse dues. There are numerous police provisions con- tained in various Acts of Parliament dealing with the breach of fishery regulations. These provisions act as an indirect protection to honest fishermen in their employment. The rights of British fishermen in foreign waters and foreign fishermen in British waters are in many cases regulated by treaty, generally confirmed in the United Kingdom by Act of Parliament. A royal fund for widows and orphans of fishermen has recently been formed, the nucleus of the fund being part of the profits of the Fisheries Exhibition held in London in 1883.°*~~

~~*United States.—The law of the United States is in general accord- Seine oe ee*~~

~~*1 See the works on merchant shipping, such as those of Abbott, Maclachlan, Maude and Pollock; Roscoe, Admiralty Law and Practice;*~~

~~*Williams and Bruce, Admiralty Practice ; also Roscoe, Modern Legislation for Seamen and for Safety at Sea, 1885,*~~

~~*ance with that of England. The law relating to seamen in the navy will be found in the articles for the government of the navy (Revised Statutes, s. 1624). Legislation in the interests of merchant seamen dates from 1790. A list of the crew must be delivered to a collector of customs. The shipping articles arc the same as those in use in the United Kingdom. For vessels in the coasting trade they are, with ccrtain exceptions, to be in writing or in print. They must in the case of foreign-bound ships be signed before a shipping commissioner appointed by the circuit court or a collector of customs, or (if entered into abroad) a consular officer, where practi- cable, and must be acknowledged by his signature in a prescribed form. One-third of a seaman's wages earned up to that time is due at every port where the ship unlades and delivers her cargo before the voyage is ended. They must be fully paid in gold or its equiva- lent within twenty days of the discharge of the cargo. Advance notes can be made only in favour of the seaman himself or his wife or mother. There is a summary remedy for wages before a district court, a justice of the peace, or a commissioner of a district court. A shipping commissioner may act as arbitrator by written consent of the parties. Seaworthiness is an implied condition of the hiring. There may be an examination of the ship on the complaint of the mate and a majority of the crew. The expenses of an unnecessary investigation are a charge upon the wages of those who complain. A seaman may not leave his ship without the consent of the master. For foreign-bound voyages a medicine-chest and antiscorbutics must be carried, also 60 gallons of water, 100 tb of salted meat, and 100 tb of wholesome bread for every person on board, and for every seaman at least one suit of woollen clothing, and fuel for the fire of the seaman's room. An assessment of forty cents per month per seaman is levied on every vessel arriving from a foreign port and on every registered coasting vessel in aid of the fund for the relief of sick and disabled seamen. In the navy a deduction of twenty cents per month from each man's pay is made for the same purpose. The offences and punishments are similar to those in the United Kingdom. There is also the additional offence of wearing a sheath*~~

~~knife on shipboard.? (J. Wt.) SEARCH, Ricutor. "The right of visiting and search- ing ships on the high seas," says Lord Stowell, "whatever be the ships, whatever be the cargoes, whatever be the destinations, is an incontestible right of the lawfully com- missioned ship of a belligerent nation ; because till they are visited and searched it does not appear what the ships or the cargoes or the destinations are; and it is for the purpose of ascertaining these points that the necessity of this right of visitation and search exists. This right is so clear in principle that no man can deny it who admits the right of maritime capture, because if you are not at liberty to ascertain by sufficient enquiry whether there is property which can be legally captured, it is impossible to capture " ("The Maria," 1 C. Robinson's Reports, 36). This right of~~

~~search or visitation and search has not been at all times .~~

~~recognized. The second armed neutrality of the Baltic powers in 1800 attempted to withdraw their vessels from the right. The bombardment of Copenhagen in 1801 was one of the results of this policy. Since the convention which followed that event the right has been regarded as established within proper limits, and is often regulated by treaty, especially as to the search of vessels suspected of being engaged in the slave trade. Apart from treaty, the main rules which govern the right are these. (1) It isa belligerent right, and can be exercised only in time of war, unless in the case of a vessel reasonably suspected of piracy or breach of revenue regulations. (2) It can be exercised only by a ship of war duly commissioned by the sovereign of the belligerent power and only in the case of a merchant vessel, whether of an enemy or neutral power. (3) It cannot be exercised in neutral waters, and an attempt to exercise it in such waters is a gross violation of neutrality. (4) It can be exercised only for certain purposes, such as to examine the ship's papers and to see Whether she carries any contraband goods. (5) After the ship of war has raised her flag an affirming gun (coup @assurance) loaded with blank cartridge must be fired to bring the merchant vessel to. (6) In case of reasonable suspicion it is the duty of the ship of war to detain the~~

~~1 See Revised Statutes, ss, 4501-4612; Kent, Comm., vol. iii. 177; Parsons, Law of Shipping, vol, ii. 32.~~

~~merchant vessel for the decision of a prize court. Resist- ance by a neutral vessel, whether alone or in convoy, renders her liable to capture according to the English and United States doctrine. But most Continental authorities lay down that the declaration of the officer in charge of the convoy is to be accepted, and that a refusal to accept such declaration may justify the convoy in resisting search, There is also a conflict of opinion as to whether a neutral loses his neutral rights by loading his goods on board an armed ship of the enemy. It has been held in England that such a proceeding is a violation of neutrality, as afford- ing a presumption of resistance to search.~~

~~The right of search is historically interesting, as on two occasions it has brought Great Britain into collision with the United States. One of the causes of the war of 1812 was the right then claimed (but since abandoned) by Great Britain of searching vessels of the United States for British subjects serving in them as seamen, with a view to impressing them for the royal navy. In 1861 the British mail steamer "Trent" was stopped on the high seas by a United States ship of war, and Messrs Slidell and Mason, two commis- sioners of the Confederate States proceeding to Europe, were taken out of her and afterwards imprisoned in the United States. On diplomatic representations being made at Washington by the am- bassadors of Great Britain and other powers the commissioners were released, and a war was avoided.~~

~~See in addition to the ordinary authorities on international law, Visitation and Search, by W. B. Lawrence, Boston, U.S., 1858.~~

~~SEA-SERPENT. The belief in enormous serpents, both terrestrial and marine, dates from very early times. Pliny (27.V., viii. 14), following Livy (Epit., xviii.), tells us of a land-serpent 120 feet long, which Regulus and his army besieged with balistz, as though it had been a city, and this story is repeated by several other writers (Florus, ii. 2; Val. Max., i. 8; Gellius, vi. 3). The most prolific in accounts of the sea-serpent, however, are the early Norse writers, to whom the "S6-Orm " was a subject both for prose and verse. Olaus Magnus (H7st. Gent. Sept., xxi, 24) describes it as 200 feet long and 20 feet round, and states that it not only ate calves, sheep,~~

~~*and swine, but also "disturbs ships, rising up like a mast, and some- times snaps some of the men from the deck," illustrating his account with a vivid representation of the animal in the very act. Pontoppidan, in his Vatural History (Eng. tr., 1755, p. 195 sq.), says that its existence was generally believed in by the sailors and fishermen of his time, and recounts the means they adopted to escape it, as well as many details regarding the habits of the creature. The more circumstantial records of comparatively modern times may be most conveniently grouped according to the causes which presumably gave rise to the phenomena de- scribed. (1) A number of porpoises swimming one behind another may, by their characteristic mode of half emerging from and then re-entering the water during respiration, produce the appearance of a single animal showing a succession of snake-like undulations. The figure given by Pontoppidan was very likely suggested by such an appear- ance, and a sketch of an animal seen off Llandudno by several observers? looks as though it might have had a similar origin, notwithstanding that this hypothesis was rejected by them. (2) A flight of sea-fowl on one occasion recorded by Professor Aldis* produced the appearance of a snake swimming at the surface of the water. (3) A large mass of seaweed has on more than one occasion been cautiously approached and even harpooned under the im- pression that it was such a monster.4 (4) A pair of bask- ing sharks (Selache maxima) furnish an explanation of some of the recorded observations, as was first pointed out by Frank Buckland. These fish have a habit of swimming*~~

~~*2 Mott, Nature, xxvii. pp. 293, 315, 338; also Land and Water, September 1872.*~~

~~*3 Nature, ibid.; also Drew, in vol. xviii. p. 489; Bird, tom. ctt., p. 519 ; Ingleby, tom. cit., p. 541.*~~

~~*4 F. Smith, Zimes, February 1858; Herriman, quoted by Gosse, op. cit. postea, p. 338 ; Pringle, Nature, xviii. p. 519, 1878.*~~

~~*AE ASS*~~

~~*in pairs, one following the other with the dorsal fin and the upper lobe of the tail just appearing above the water, and, as each animal is fully 30 feet*~~

~~long, the effect of a body of 60 or more feet long moving through the water is readily produced. To this category belongs the famous serpent cast up on Stronsay, one of the Orkneys, of which an account was read to the Wernerian Society of Edinburgh !; some of its vertebrae were preserved in the Royal College of Surgeons of London, and identified as those of Selache maxima by both Home and Owen.? There is also evidence to show that specimens of Carcharodon must have existed more than 100 feet long. (5) Ribbon- fish (Regalecus), from their snake-like form and great length (sometimes as much as 20 feet), have been suggested as the origin of so-called "sea-serpents," amongst others by Dr Andrew Wilson*; but Dr Giinther,® from what is known regarding the habits of these fish, does not regard the theory as tenable. (6) A gigantic squid (Architeuthus) was most likely the foundation of the old Norse accounts,® and also of those which in the early part of the 19th century came so frequently from the United States as to gain for the animal the sobriquet of " American sea- serpent."7? These stories were so circumstantial and on the whole so consistent, and vouched for by persons of such eminence, that no doubt was possible (notwithstanding the cavilling of Mitchell)® as to the existence of a strange marine monster of very definite character in those regions. The description commonly given of it has been summed up by Gosse ® somewhat thus:— (i.) general form that of a~~

~~serpent; (ii.) length averaging 60 feet; (iii.) head flattened,~~

~~eye generally not mentioned, some distinctly stating that it was not seen ; (iv.) neck 12 to 16 inches in diameter ; (v.) appendages on the head, neck, or back (accounts here variable) ; (vi.) colour dark, lighter below ; (vii.) swims at the surface, head thrown forward and slightly elevated ; (vill.) progression steady and uniform, body straight but capable of being bent; (ix.) water spouting from it; (x.) in shape like a "nun buoy." The annexed figure (fig. 1) represents one aT~~

~~which was seen _ => from H.M.S. "Deedalus."!° To show the reason- ableness of this hypothesis, it may be added that gigantic Cephalopods are not unfrequent on the shores of Newfoundland,!! and are occasionally met with on the coasts of Scandinavia,!2 Denmark, and the British .~~

~~*Isles,!° that their extreme size seems to be above 60 feet, and, furthermore, that their mode of progression is by means of a jet of water forcibly expelled from the siphon, which would impart that equable motion to which several*~~

~~*1 Mem, Wern. Soc, Edin., vol. i. pp. 418-444, pls. ix.-xi., 1811.*~~

~~*2 Ann, Mag. Nat. Hist., ser. 2, vol. ii. p. 461, 1848 ; fora criticism of these views, see Traill, Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. iii. p. 208, 1857.*~~

~~*3 Owen, Odontography, p. 30.*~~

~~*4 Leisure Time Studies, p. 115, London, 1879, containing a readable essay on the subject ; Scotsman, 6th September 1878 ; Nature, loc. cit.*~~

~~*> Study of Fishes, p. 521, Edinburgh, 1880.*~~

~~*§ See note 3; also Deinbolt, quoted in Zoologist, p. 1604, 1847.*~~

~~*7 Bigelow, Amer. Journ. Sci., vol. ii. pp. 147-165, 1820; Warburton, ib., vol. xii. p. 375, 1823 ; Zoologist, p. 1714, 1847.*~~

~~*8 Amer. Journ. Sci. vol. xv. p. 351, 1829.*~~

~~*® Romance of Natural History, p. 345, London, 1859.*~~

~~*10 M'Quahae, Times, October 1848 ; Ji. Lond. News, October 1848.*~~

~~*M Verrill, Trans. Connect. Acad., vol. v. part i., 1880, containing an account of all authenticated specimens of gigantic squids.*~~

~~*2 Steenstrup, Forhandl. Skand. Naturf., 7de Méde, pp. 182-185, Christiania, 1857,*~~

~~*13 Saville Kent, Proc. Zool. Soc. Lond., p. 178, 1874; More, Zoologist, p. 4526, 1875; also Ann. Alag. Nat. Hist., ser. 4, vol. vi. p 128.*~~

~~*RPENT 609*~~

observers allude as being evidently not produced by any serpentine bending of the body. A very interesting account of a monster almost certainly originating in one of these squids is that of Hans E sionary to Green- land; the drawing by Bing, given in his work, is repro- duced here (fig. 2), along with a sketch of a squid in the act of rearing itself out from the water 4 (fig. 3), an action & which they have been observed in = aquaria habitually to perform. Nu- merous other ac- ——— counts seem to be explicable by this hypothesis. (7) A sea-lion, or "Anson's seal" (Morunya elephantina), was suggested by Owen!6 as a possible explanation of the serpent seen from Ry H.M.S. "Deedalus"; it » but as this was \ 2 afterwards rejected by Captain M'Qua- hae,!' who stated that it could' not have been any ani- mal of the seal kind, it seems _ bet- ter to refer the ap- pearance to a squid as above stated. (8) A plesiosaurus, or some other of the huge marine reptiles usually be- lieved to be extinct, pro, 3.—Squid, rearing itself out of the water. might certainly

*have produced the phenomena described, granting the possibility of one having survived to the present time. Newman !8 and Gosse' have both supported this theory, the former citing as evidence in its favour the report of a creature with the body of an alligator, a long neck, and four paddles having been seen by Captain Hope of H.M.S. "Fly" in the Gulf of California.2? (9) No satisfactory explanation has yet been given of certain descriptions of the sea-serpent ; among others of this class may be men- tioned the huge snake seen by certain of the crew 2! of the "Pauline" in the South Atlantic Ocean, which was coiled twice round a large sperm whale, and then towered up many feet into the air, and finally dragged the whale to the bottom. Perhaps the most remarkable, however, is Lieutenant Hayne's * account of a creature seen from H.M. yacht "Osborne." Two different aspects were re- corded,—the first being a ridge, 30 feet in length, of tri-*

Egede

M4 Det gamle Grinlands nye Perlustration, Copenhagen, 1741 (Eng. trans., A Description of Greenland, London, 1745, pp. 86-89) ; also Paul Egede, Hfterretninger om Grénland, Copenhagen, n.d., pp.

45, 46,

~~15 [,, de Ferry, quoted by Pontoppidan, op. ett. ; Davidson and Sandford, quoted in Zoologist, p. 2459, 1849 ; Senior, Graphic, 19th April 1879 ; Barnett, Nature, vol. xx. p. 289, 1879.~~

~~16 Ann. Mag. Nat. HIst., ser. 2, vol. ii. p. 461, 1848,~~

~~W Times, 21st November 1848. 18 Zoologist, p. 2395.~~

~~19 Op, cit., p. 358. 20 Zoologist, p. 2356, 1849.~~

~~21 Penny, Jl. Lond. News, vol, lxvii. p. 515, 20th November 1875,~~

~~2 Graphic, 30th June 1877. "5~~

~~AX], — 77~~

~~610~~

~~angular fins, each rising 5 to 6 feet above the water, while the second view showed a large round head 6 feet in diameter, with huge flappers, which moved like those of a turtle! It would thus appear that, while, with very few exceptions, all the so-called "sea-serpents" can be explained by reference to some well-known animal or other natural object, there is still a residuum sufficient to prevent modern zoologists from denying the possibility that some such creature may after all exist.~~

~~Quite distinct in origin from the stories already touched on is the legend of the sea-serpent or ténnin among the Arabs (Mas'tdi, i. 266 sq. ; Kazwinf, i. 132 sq.; Damiri, i. 186 sq.), which is described in such a way as to leave no doubt that the waterspout is the phenomenon on which the fable rests. The tinnin is the HIebrew tannin (E.V. "whale," "dragon"), which in Ps. exlviii. 7 might in the context be appropriately rendered '" waterspout."~~

~~In addition to the sources already cited, the reader may consult Blackwood's Magazine, vol. iii., 1818 ; Lee, Sea Monsters Unmasked (International Fisheries Exhibition HIandbook), London, 1883 ;~~

~~*Cogswell, Zoologist, pp. 1841, 1911 (1847); and Hoyle, Proc. Roy. Phys. Soc. Edin., vol. ix. (W. E. HO.)*~~

~~*SEA-SICKNESS, a peculiar set of symptoms experi- enced by many persons when subjected to the pitching and rolling motion of a vessel at sea, of which depression, giddiness, nausea, and vomiting are the most prominent.*~~

~~*Although the vast majority of persons appear to be liable to this ailment on exposure to its exciting cause (the instances of complete and constant immunity being rare), they do not all suffer alike. Many endure distress of a most acute and even alarming kind, while others are simply conscious of transient feelings of nausea and dis- comfort. In long voyages, while many are affected with sea-sickness for the first few days only, others are tor- mented with it during the entire period, especially on the occurrence of rough weather. In short voyages, such as across the English Channel, not a few even of those sus- ceptible escape, while others suffer in an extreme degree, the sickness persisting long after arrival on shore.*~~

~~*The symptoms generally show themselves soon after the vessel has begun to roll by the onset of giddiness and discomfort in the head, together with a sense of nausea and sinking at the stomach, which soon develops into intense sickness and vomiting. At first the contents of the stomach only are ejected; but thereafter bilious matter, and occasionally even blood, are brought up by the violence of the retching. The vomiting is liable to exacerbations according to the amount of oscillation of the ship; but seasons of rest, sometimes admitting of sleep, occasionally intervene. Along with the sickness there is great physical prostration, as shown in the pallor of the skin, cold sweats, and feeble pulse, accompanied with mental depression and wretchedness. In almost all instances the attack has a favourable termination, and it is extremely rare that serious results arise, except in the case of persons weakened by other diseases, although occasionally the symptoms are for a time sufficiently alarming.*~~

~~*The causes giving rise to sea-sickness have long been discussed, and a vast number of theories have been pro- posed. The conditions concerned in the production of the malady are apparently of complex character, embracing more than one set of causes. In the first place, the rolling or*~~

~~*heaving of the vessel disturbs that feeling of the relation of the body to surrounding objects upon which our sense of security rests. The nervous system being thus sub- jected to a succession of shocks or surprises fails to effect the necessary adjustments for equilibrium. Giddiness and with it nausea and vomiting follow, aided probably by the profound vaso-motor disturbance which produces such*~~

~~*1 Dr Andrew Wilson has claimed this monster as a ribbon-fish, Times, 15th June 1877.*~~

~~*manifest depression of the circulation. Much has been made by some of the effects of the displacement of the abdominal viscera, especially the stomach, by the rolling of the vessel; but, while this may possibly operate to some extent, it can only be as an accessory cause. The same may be said of the influence of the changing impres- sions made upon the vision, which has been regarded by some as so powerful in the matter, since attacks of sea- sickness occur also in the dark, and in the case of blind persons. Other contributory causes may be mentioned, such as the feeling that sickuess is certain to come, which may bring on the attack in some persons even before the vessel has begun to move ; the sense of the body being in a liquid or yielding medium as it descends with the vessel into the trough of the sea, the varied odours to be met with on board ship, and circumstances of a like nature tend also to precipitate or aggravate an attack. Dr Chap- man's view is that the essential cause is an undue afflux of blood to the spinal cord. But, in the few rare instances where sea-sickness has proved fatal, post-mortem appearances have been almost entirely negative, and only such as are met with in death from syncope.*~~

~~*Innumerable preventives and remedies have been proposed ; but most of them fall far short of the success claimed for them. No means has yet been discovered which can altogether prevent the oc- currence of sea-sickness, nor is it likely any will be found, since it is largely due to the pitching movements of the vessel, which cannot be averted. Swinging couches or chambers have not proved of any practical utility. "No doubt there is less risk of sickness in a large and well-ballasted vessel than in a small one; but, even though the rolling may be considerably modified, the*~~

~~*ascending and de- scending movements which so readily produce nausea continue. None of the medicinal agents proposed possess infallible properties: a remedy which suits one person will often wholly fail with another. There appears to be a wide concurrence of opinion that nerve seda- tives are among the inmost potent drugs which can be employed; and full medicinal doses of bromide of potassium, chloral, or opium (the last two only under strict medical direction) taken before sail- ing appear to act usefully in the case of many persons. On the other hand, some high authorities have recommended the employ- ment of nerve stimulants, such as a small cupful of very strong coffee to be taken about two hours before sailing, which will fre- quently prevent or mitigate the sickness. When the vessel is in motion, or even before starting, the recumbent position with the head low and the eyes closed should be assumed by those at all likely to suffer, and, should the weather admit, on deck rather than below,—the body, especially the extremities, being well covered, Many persons, however, find comfort and relief from lying down in their berths with a hot bottle to the feet, by which means sleep may be obtained, and with it a temporary abatement of the distressing giddiness and nausea. Should sickness supervene small quantities of some light food, such as thin arrowroot, gruel, or soup, ought to be swallowed if possible, in order to lessen the sense of exhaustion, which is often extreme. The vomiting may be mitigated by saline effervescing drinks, ice, chloroform, hydro-cyanic acid, or opium. Alcohol, although occasionally useful ill great prostration, is not generally found to be of much service, but tends rather to aggravate the sickness. Dr Chapman, in accordance with his view of the cause of the sickness, introduced a spinal ice-bag, which has been extensively employed and recom- mended; but, like every other plan of treatment, it has only occa- sional success. The more recently proposed remedies, such as nitrite of amyl and cucaine, do not seem to yield any better results than the agents already mentioned.*~~

~~*SEATTLE, county seat of King county, Washington Territory, United States, on Seattle Bay, east side of Puget Sound, with Lake Union, 3 miles long, on the north, and Lake Washington, 25 miles long, on the east, is the largest city of the Territory. A ship canal to connect these lakes with Puget Sound is now (1886) in course of construction. Seattle has shipyards, foundries, machine- shops, sawmills, lumber-yards, breweries,*~~

~~*and manutfac- tories of furniture, carriages, cigars, crackers, patent medicines, boxes, and barrels. It possesses the Territorial university. The Columbia and Puget Sound and the Puget Sound Shore Railroads have their terminus here, whence large shipments of coal take place. The population*~~

~~*in 1880 was 3533, and in 1885 it was estimated at 12,000.*~~

~~*SEA WATER*~~

~~*SEA WATER.! The ocean covers very nearly eight- elevenths of the total area of the globe; its average depth may be estimated as 2000 fathoms, and its total mass at 1°322 × 10%8 (2.¢., 1°3 million million millions) tons. Its general configuration must be assumed to have been sub- stantially the same as it is now for thousands of years ; hence we may safely conclude that the absolute composi- tion of the ocean as a whole is constant in the sense of being only subject to very slow progressive millennial variation, and that, taking one part of the ocean with another, the percentage composition of the fixed part of the solutum can oscillate only within narrow limits. The composition of this solutum is very complex. According to Forchhammer, ocean salt in addition. to the chlorides and sulphates of sodium, magnesium, potassium, and cal- cium —which had long been known to be its principal components—includes silica, boric acid, bromine, iodine, fluorine as acid, and the oxides of nickel, cobalt, manganese, aluminium, zinc, silver, lead, copper, barium, and strontrum as basic components. Arsenic, gold, lithium, rubidium, cesium have been discovered since Forchhammer wrote. But all these subsidiary components, as that investigator found, amount to very little,—so little that in his numerous quantitative analyses of waters which he had procured from all quarters of the globe he confined himself to the determination of the chlorine, sulphuric acid, magnesia, lime, potash, and soda. The soda, however, he determined only by difference, assuming that the muriatic and sul- phuric acids are united with the bases into perfectly neutral salts. Asa general result he found that, in the open ocean, the ratio to one another of the several acids and bases named is subject to only slight variations. But his samples had all been collected at the surface ; the potash had been determined by an insufficiently exact*~~

~~*method; and the assumed neutrality of the total salt had not been proved. With the view primarily of supplementing Forchhammer's work, Dittmar made complete analyses of 77 of the samples brought home by the "Challenger," so selected that 34 out of the 77 represented depths of 1000 fathoms or more. His analyses brought out a small surplus of base, prov- ing the presence of carbonate in all the waters; but the numerical values thus found for the "alkalinity," being charged with the observational errors of the whole series of determinations, could not be relied on. Dittmar there- fore subsequently availed himself of a very easy and yet exact method for the direct determination of this quantity, which meanwhile had been discovered by Tornée, and ap- plied it to over 130 "Challenger" samples. He besides made a special inquiry into the relation between the quantity of lime and the depth at which the water had been collected, and a similar inquiry in regard to the bromine. As a general summary he gives the following three tables. The total salts contained in ocean water amount on an average to about 3°5 per cent., thus leaving 96°5 per cent. for the water proper. –*~~

~~*amen ieee 1 All our knowledge of the subject of chemical oceanography —a*~~

~~*branch of physical geography which has only lately come to be exten- sively cultivated—is derived from a series of investigations chiefly em- bodied in the following publications :—(1) Forchhammer, "On the Composition of Sea Water," &c., in Phil. Trans., i. 155, pp. 203-262 (1865); (2) Oscar Jacobsen, Ann. d. Chem., vol. clxvii. p. 1 sq. (1873); (3) Den Norske Nordhavs Expedition, 1876-78 : Chemi, by Tornve); (4) the Jahresberichte of the Kiel committee for the scien- tific investigation of the German Ocean, 1873-82; (5) Physics and Chemistry of the Voyaye of HW. M.S. "Challenger" —I. 'Report on Researches into the Composition of Ocean Water," &c., by Prof. W. Dittmar, January 1884; II. "Report on the Specific Gravity of samples of Ocean Water," &c., by J. Y. Buchanan, January 1884; III. " Report on Deep-sea Temperature," &c., by the officers of the expedition. A shorter and more popular exposition of the whole is found in—(6) Narrative of the Cruise of H. M.S. " Challenger" (1885). The excellent Handbuch der Oceanographie (Stuttgart), by Prof. G. von Boguslawski, may be referred to as being almost up to date.*~~

Tae I.—Average Composition of Ocean- Water Salis.

Per 100 parts of | Per 100 of HIalogen calculated

Total Salts. as Chlorine. Dittmar. Dittmar. Forchhammer.

UM OrIMe ya cate least. ae bp 292 99°848 | Not determined. BrOmane jin de Mees hevenie= 0°188 J ? 0°340 | Not determined. Sulphuric acid, SO, 6°410 11576 11°88 Carbonic acid*, CO, 0°152 0°274 | Not determined. Mime; CaO cscs. +. os 1°676 3026 2°93 Magnesia, MgO…….. 6209 ial Ale 11:03 Leta IO, I (O) onnosansobe 1°332 2°405 1:93 SoG, INGSO) ponounoocor 41 °234 74°462 | Not determined. (Basic oxygen, cqui-

valent to the halo-

BMA) esas cvsveverenses (-12°493) (-22°559))

181‘1

Total salts …... 100-000 180 ‘584 |

TABLE II.—Results from combining Acids and Bases (Dittmar).

Chloride of sodium…….. 77°758 | Sulphate of potash ……. 2°465
Chloride of magnesium …10°878| Bromide of magnesium — 0217
Sulphate of magnesium… 4°737 | Carbonate of lime ……. 0°345

Sulphate of limre…….. 3°600

Total salts… 100000

Reducing to the absolute mass of the ocean as given above, we arrive at the following numbers :—

TABLE III.—Adsolute Composition of the Salts of the Ocean. Unit=1 million million=10” tons,

~~Chloride of sodium ……. 35990 | Sulphate of potash ……. 1141 Chloride of magnesium … 5034 | Bromide of magnesium 100 Sulphate of magnesium … 2192| Carbonate of lime…….. 160 Sulphate of lime …….. 1666 46283~~

~~Total bromine TpeUl S@aUUTIG! gaacesonasnnnasnoonsednonce Total chloride of rubidium~~

~~Pater etre cists aaemicastae 87:2. (Dittmar). 0°03 (Kottstorfer). Me aa 25°0 (C. Schmidt).~~

~~Of the several quantities recorded in columns 2 or 3 of Table I. "carbonic acid" is proved to be subject to variation ; all the rest, including even the bromine, are practically constant. This shows that Forchhammer's proposition holds for ocean water from all depths, with one important qualification: special research on the lime showed that its quantity increases slightly but appreciably with the depth. Taking s, m, d as representing the lime per 100 of chlorine in shallow, medium-depth, and deep- sea water respectively, Dittmar found as mean results of analyses which agreed very well together—~~

~~s=3°'0175 m=3'0300 Probable error, +0°0012 +0:0014 +0:0011.~~

~~But m—s=0°0124 and d—s=0°0132. One explanation of this result is that the crustaceans, foraminifera, and molluscs which form carbonate of lime shells live chiefly in surface waters, but after their death sink to the bottom, where—especially in great depths—their carbonate of lime is partially redissolved.~~

~~Oceanic Carbonic Acid.—It is well known that not only in the~~

~~neighbourhood of actual volcanoes but in thousands of other places on the dry land carbonic acid gas is constantly streaming forth into the atmosphere, and it is generally admitted now that this supply of telluric carbonic acid amounts to more than all that is furnished by processes of combustion and respiration. That carbonic acid springs should be absent from the bottom of the ocean is too absurd an assumption to be entertained ; hence, supposing even the water of the ocean were perfectly~~

~~*neutral, it could not but contain dis- solved carbonic acid. But such carbonic acid, at the ocean surface at least, would constantly tend to assume, and in general probably actually would come down to, the small limit value prescribed to it by the given proportion by volume of the carbonic acid in the atmosphere and the laws of gas-absorption. This proportion, ac- cording to the best modern researches, is almost constant, every- where amounting to very nearly 0°0003 volume per unit volume of air. The coefficient of absorption by even pure water is 1°8 at 0° and 1:0 at 15° C. Hence, even in the polar regions, the surface water could not hold in permanent solution more than about 0°54 c.¢c., or say one milligramme per litre of water. Jacobsen, in his*~~

~~*d=3‘0308*~~

~~*ee 2 Equal conjointly to 55°376 parts of chlorine, which accordingly is the percentage of "halogen reckoned as chlorine" in the real total solids. 3 Calculating the surplus base as normal carbonate. In Table IT. this carbonate is represented as so much CaOCO,.*~~

~~*numerous analyses of North Sea water, found from 90 to 100 milli-grammes per litre; but he also observed that only a small portion of the carbonic acid is eliminated on boiling: the rest comes out only when the water is distilled to dryness. He presumed that the gas was retained chemically by the chloride of magnesium. Buchanan, who inquired into the subject synthetically, arrived at the conclusion that it was the sulphates! in sea water (qua sul- phates) which retained the carbonic acid. Accordingly in his numerous carbonic acid determinations he liberated the gas by distilling the water down with an excess of chloride of barium. Tornoe was the first to prove that the carbonic acid in sea water is present as carbonate, and that, in the northern part of the North Atlantic at least, the total carbonic acid, while considerably greater than the quantity which would convert the surplus base into normal, falls short of that which would be required to produce fully saturated acid carbonate.*~~

~~*Even without Tornée's discovery it would have been necessary to find the true interpretation of the results of the numerous carbonic acid determinations made during the voyage of the 'Challenger " by Buchanan, Dittmar had no difficulty in prov- ing the non-existence of the alleged affinity of sulphates for car- bonic acid, and naturally concluded that the chloride of barium used in the processes Mberates the loose part of the carbonic acid by converting the normal carbonate part into a precipitate of carbonate of baryta, thus—R"'CO, + «CO, + BaCl,= R"'Cl,+ BaCO,+xCO,. A series of synthetical experiments showed that this is substantially, though not exactly, correct. If Buchanan's modus operandi be rigorously followed, the carbonic acid obtained, as a rule, falls somewhat short of the actual amount of loose carbonic acid present, while on resuming the distillation after addition of fresh water an appreciable part of fixed carbonic acid passes away as gas. Yet,*~~

~~Buchianan's results being of great value, Dittmar discussed them (conjointly with his own alkalinity determinations) on the basis of the assumption that they afforded a fair approximation to the proportions of loose carbonic acid in the respective waters. His gen- eral conclusions are as follows. Taking "alkalinity " as meaning the " weight" of the carbonic acid, CO,, in the normal earbonate part of the carbonate present per 100 parts of total solids, the alka- linity in the water samples analysed (omitting a few obviously abnormal cases) was found to be as follows (Table IV.) :—~~

~~Alkalinity ranges from pA ae Alkalinity ranges from ie aed 0°1400 to 0°1439 ..... 9 0°1640 toO°1719 ..... 6 On40n, Or UanO) see ees | 84 AN OE Boos phen as 1 0°1480,, 0°1519 ..... | 40 5 = Oe oe 1 071520 ,, 0°1559 ..... 19 a =) UOT) Bacconcaen 1~~

~~0'1560,, 01599 .....) 13~~

~~|9'2000 ,, 0-169… . | 4 ||0-1400 to 0°2079 ..... 127~~

~~Values above 0°16 are obviously exceptional; hence the normal range may be said to be from 0°14 to 0°16. The most frequently occurring values were found to be about 0°146 in the case of surface or shallow sea water, and in the case of bottom water about 0°152. In regard to the loose carbonic acid a full discussion of Buchanan's results led to the following conclusions :—(1) carbonic acid rarely occurs in the free state ; asa rule it falls short of the quantity which would produce bicarbonate ; (2) in surface waters it is relatively high where the natural temperature is relatively low, and viee versa ; (3) within equal ranges of temperature it seems to be less in the surface water of the Pacific than it is in that of the Atlantic Ocean. Of the 195 samples of sea water which Buchanan analysed for carbonic acid only 22 contained fully saturated bicarbonate, and only 2 out of these are proved by the analyses to have contained free carbonic acid in addition to bicarbonate. In all the remaining 178 samples the "carbonic acid deficit" (meaning the proportion of carbonie acid which was wanted to completely transform the carbonate into bicarbonate) assumed tangible and often considerable values. We are probably safe in concluding that the ocean as a whole will have to continue taking in carbonic acid for thousands of years before its~~

carbonic acid deficit has been reduced to nothing. But it is as well to observe that at its surface in the warmer lati- tudes the attainment of this condition is a physical impossibility as long as the percentage of carbonic acid in the air retains its present low value.

A solution of a bicarbonate when shaken, say in a bottle, with pure air (free of carbonic acid) at summer heat gives up its com- bined carbonic acid to the air space in the bottle until the partial tension of the acid gas there las come up to a limit value py, which is called the dissociation tension of the bicarbonate at the prevail- ing temperature ¢. General experience concerning such phenomena warrants the presumption that, up to a certain (low) temperature ty, p=0, and thence onwards, p increases with ¢ It does not follow that the bicarbonate in a solution when shaken again and " again with even pure air tends to become normal carbonate ; for aught we know, the elimination of carbonic acid may stop as soon as the residual carbonate has come down to some composition

1 See GEOLOGY, vol. x. p. 222.

SHEA WATER

R'O(1 +x)CO, (where x is Jess than 1), and # may be a function of temperature. Dittmar has attempted to determine the course of the function 1+a=/(¢) in reference to natural sea water on the one hand and to pure air (air freed of its carbonic acid) and ordinary airon the other. One sample of sea water containing its surplus base as practically bicarbonate served for all the experiments. It was shaken again and again at a fixed temperature ¢ with one or the other kind of air, until (after '"N" shakings, always with renewed air) the stage of saturation appeared to have become con- stant. The investigation is not completed yet; the following table (V.) gives the results which have come out so far. The final carbonate was R,O.nCO,.

. . eC 7 : . Pure air. |Ordinary air. Pure air. Ordinary air,

= | t, N, Ng. 2). t, hae Ny. | Ny. 2°C.| 200 1:90 15° 200 1°50 De 200 2°04 0 20° 200 | 1:42 (?) ON 52 2°06 25° 52 3 1°53 10° 200 1°70 O0 32° 52 1°53 13° 50 as 1°841 82° 52 bo 15° 100 1°63 a0 aoe 150

~~*the state of sesquicarbonate, while with ordinary air, even at 32°C it never fell below n=1°8. value characteristic of bicarbonate. Now Buchanan reports a good number of eases where, even at lower temperatures, was con- siderably less than 1°8 at any rate. Hence, if his numbers are correct, unless the atmosphere acts more powerfully than the air in Dittmar's bottle, it would appear that deep-sea water is in general below even the stage of carbonic acid saturation which it could attain at the surface at high temperatures,*~~

~~*In any mixed solution of salts every base is combined with every acid ; hence the "carbonate" of sea water is strictly speaking a complex plural. But as a matter of probability the carbonic acid las very little chance of uniting with any of the potash or soda, and the overwhelmingly large quantity of alkaline chloride would no doubt convert any carbonate of magnesia that was introduced into double chloride of magnesium and alkali metal; hence it is fair to assume that oceanic carbonate is chiefly carbonate of lime. Now immense quantities of this compound are being constantly introduced into the ocean by rivers. Dumas once gave it as his opinion that this imported carbonate remains dissolved in the ocean as long as and wherever the carbonate there is at the bicarbonate stage ; but, as soon as part of the loose carbonic acid goes off into the air, the corresponding weight of normal carbonate separates out as an addition, ultimately, to the solids on the bottom. Dittmar has tried to test this notion synthetically, but without arriving at very definite results. According to his experiments sea water which contains free carbonic acid dissolves added solid carbonate of lime, and more largely carbonate of magnesia; sea water which contains fully, or almost fully, saturated bicarbonate dissolves car- bonate of magnesia very appreciably, but would not appear to act on earbonate of lime at all. But, when carbonate of lime was produced in the water by successive additions of potential calcium carbonate in the form of dissolved sodium carbonate and its equivalent of calcium chloride, the original carbonate of lime could be increased very largely, with formation of solutions whicl remained clear during a long-continued period of observation. Asa set-off against this a few of the many hundred samples of sea water which he received from the " Challenger" deposited in the course of a number of years crystalline crusts of carbonate of lime on the sides of the bottles ; and the mother-*~~

~~*liquor never coutained more than the normal quantity of lime per 100 parts of chlorine. In discussing this question Dittmar gives an estimate, based on data furnished by Boguslawski's work, of the total carbonate of lime introduced into the ocean annually by the thirteen principal rivers ; and by doubling the quantity he estimates the earbonate of lime intro- duced by all rivers as equal to about 1:34 × 109 tons. Now the sum total of carbonate of lime, CaCO,, in the ocean amounts to about 160 ×10! tons; hence it would take 1190 years to increase the present stock of carbonate of lime in the ocean by one per cent. of its value.*~~

~~*Absorbed Oxygen and Nitrogen in Ocean Water.—As a matter of physical necessity these two gases must be prescut in the water of the ocean—and they may be presumed in general to pervade it to its greatest depth—because the whole of the surface of the sea is in constant contact with the atmosphere. Our knowledge regarding their distribution in the ocean may be said to date from 1872, when Jacobsen inquired into the matter in a most masterly manner in connexion with the German North Sea expedition. The work of his predecessors possesses no scientific value, because they em- ployed inadequate methods. Unlike them, Jacobsen did not attempt to analyse a sample of sea water air on board ship: he extracted the air from measured samples (by an excellent method of his own) and then sealed them up in glass tubes, to measure and analyse them after his return home. Buchanan, during the*~~

~~*At 2° m% as well as 1, was =2, the*~~

~~*SHEA WATER*~~

~~*"Challenger" cruise adopted Jacobsen's method. Of the 164 samples which he sealed up successfully 69 came from the surface and 95 from depths varying from 5 to 4575 fathoms.*~~

~~*Percentage of Oxygen in Dissolved Gas.*~~

~~*Tempera- Dissolved Nitrogen and Oxygen in Cubic*~~

~~*Centimétres (volumes).*~~

~~*Nitrogen. 15°60 13°86 12°47 11°34 10°41*~~

~~*9°62*~~

~~*8·94*~~

~~*8°36*~~

~~*34°40 34°24 34°09 33°93 33°78 33°62 33°47 33°31*~~

~~*The method used for obtaining these numbers adapted itself closely to the one which Buchanan had employed for extracting the gas samples. In the ealculations it was assumed that atmo- spheric air contains 21:0 volumes of oxygen for 79°0 volumes of nitrogen, the slight variation in this ratio, which is known to occasionally present itself, being neglected. From the table we can calculate approximately the limits between which the propor- tions of dissolved oxygen and nitrogen in the watcr of the ocean must be presumed to oscillate in nature, The pressure of the atmosphere at the sea-level, though by no means constant, is never far removed from that of 760 mm. of mercury. The temperature of the surface water (with rare exceptions) may be said to vary from —2°C. (in the liquid part of the ocean in the arctic and antarctic regions) to about 30° C. (in the tropics). The ocean receives all its dissolved oxygen and nitrogen from the surface; neither gas comes in from below, except perhaps a relatively insignificant quantity of nitrogen derived from the decay of dead organisms, which may safely be neglected. Hence the ocean can contain nowhere more than 15°6 c.c. of nitrogen or more than 8°18 c.c. of oxygen per litre, and the nitrogen will never fall below 8°55 e.e. We cannot make a similar assertion in regard to the oxygen, because its theoretical minimum of 4°30 ¢c.c. per litre is liable to further diminution by processes of life and putrefaction and by oxidation generally.*~~

~~*At any point in the surface of the ocean the water constantly tends to assume the composition demanded for the prevailing temperature by the laws of gas absorption. But it is rarely possible for it to assume this composition, owing to the water being in a continual state of motion; and, supposing a certain area of the ocean surface were in a state of stagnation, the temperature would vary in diurnal eycles, and even the*~~

~~*calculated volume of nitrogen per litre would be a periodic function of time, exhibiting its maxi- mum at the hour of minimum temperature, and vice versa. The process of absorptiometric exchange, however, even at the constantly oscillating surface of the ocean, is slow; it could not keep pace with the change of temperature, and the actual nitrogen curve would never go as high up or as low down as the theoretical one. In addition to this, the lower strata of the water constantly add to, or take away from, the surface nitrogen by diffusion and occasional intermixture. All this holds for the oxygen likewise, except that it is liable to constant diminution by oxidation. On the whole we may assume that all the disturbing influences will only modify, not efface, the course of events as prescribed by the laws of gas-absorption.*~~

~~*In regard to non-surface water we have to confront a greater complexity of phenomena. The gas-contents of deep-sea water, of course, have nothing to do with the low temperature and the high pressure which in general prevail there. For the purpose of a preliminary survey, let us imagine a deep-sea water formed from one kind of surface water, which took up its air at a constant temperature (¢), and then sank down unmixed with other waters. The volumes of the oxygen and nitrogen per litre have at first the values assigned to them by the laws of gas absorption. But, while the nitrogen (as long as the water remains unmixed with other water) remains constant, the oxygen will become less and less through the processes of oxidation which go on in the deep with- out compensation. Hence if there were absolute stagnation in the ocean anywhere the proportion of oxygen there might be reduced ultimately to nothing. Among the many "Challenger" deep-sea specimens which were analysed for their gas-contents none was*~~

~~*1 Theoretically any number may be substituted for 760; for calculating pur- poses read "1 millimétre."*~~

~~*_ 2 In calculating these limit values the tension of the vapour of water is taken into account ; hence the apparent non-agreement with the entries in the table.*~~

~~*found quite frce from absorbed oxygen; and this confirms the conclusion that absolute stagnation exists nowhere in the ocean, not even at its greatest depth. Occasionally, however, the oxygen was found to have sunk down to very little, as shown by the following two examples :—*~~

~~*No. of C.c. per Litre of C.c. of Oxygen calculated Depth in Sample. Nitrogen. Oxygen. from Nitrogen. Fathoms.*~~

~~*1001 15°08 0°6 8°21 2875*~~

~~*1645 13°38 2°04 6°95 1500*~~

~~*There must have been an approximation to absolute rest at these two places at any rate. On the whole, the results of the gas analy- sis, as interpreted on the basis of Dittmar's absorptiometric deter- minations, agreed fairly well with the inferences which we have just been deducing from physical laws. There was no lack of anomalous results, but it was not found possible to trace them to natural causes. The equilibrium in regard to the absorbed nitrogen and oxygen in the ocean is maintained by the atmosphere ; and, from the fact that the air contained in surface water is always richer in oxygen than is atmospheric air, one naturally concludes that the ocean should constantly add to the percentage of oxygen in the air in the tropics and constantly diminish it in the colder latitudes. But Regnault's numerous air-analyses do not confirm this. Nor need this be wondered at, since, as we have seen, even the corresponding influence on the atmospheric carbonic acid has so far defied the powers of chemical analysis.*~~

~~*Salinity of Ocean Water.—Even in the open ocean the "salinity" — meaning in a given quantity the ratio between the weight of dissolved salt and the weight or volume of the whole—is subject to considerable variation ; and it obviously is one of the foremost duties of observing oceanographers to collect the data by means of which it may be possible one day to represent that quantity mathe- matically as a function of geographic position, depth, and time. For the quantitative determination of the salinity an obvious, easy,*~~

~~*and sufficient method is to determine the specific gravity 8 at a*~~

~~*convenient temperature ¢; this in fact is the method which has*~~

~~*so far been employed by all observers almost to the exclusion of*~~

~~*every other. Buchanan used it during the "Challenger" cruise o o*~~

~~*perhaps more extensively than any of his predecessors had done.*~~

~~*Of the arithmetical relation between salinity on the one hand*~~

~~*and S and ¢ on the other the successive researches of Ekman (as*~~

~~*supplemented by Tornde), Thorpe and Riicket, Dittmar, and others have given us a practically sufficient knowledge. According to Dittmar the function (within the limits of Buchanan's values) coincides practically with the formula ae — Wr=x(a + bt + ct),*~~

~~*where 4S, means the specific gravity at C. referred to that of pure water of +4°C. as equal to 1000; ,W, has a similar meaning in reference to pure water; x stands for the weight of total halogen calculated as chlorine per 1000 parts, by weight, of sea water ; and a=1°45993, b= —0:005592, c= +0°0000649. For oceanographic purposes, however, it is not necessary to go back to x; it suflices from series of values ,8, to deduce the corresponding values ,S;, for a convenient standard temperature, and to reason on these reduced numbers as if they measured the salinity, just as we take the readings of a thermometer as in themselves representing "temperatures." This, in fact, is always done ; only unfortunately different standard temperatures have been chosen by different observers ; Buchanan adopted 15°56 C.=60° Fahr. Before going further, let us observe that the specific gravity of sea water, taking it as it is a situ, has an important oceanographic significance, even as such. But this quantity in the case of deep-sea waters is influenced very largely® by the pressure of the super- incumbent layer of water—which in itself is a complex function of the successive temperatures and salinities—and unfortunately we still lack the constants and formule for making the necessary reductions with adequate exactitude. Meanwhile all our statistics of sea water specific gravities,*~~

~~*valuable as they are, constitute statistics of only salinities and nothing else.*~~

~~*At the surface of the ocean the salinity is liable chiefly to three influences, —(1) concentration by formation of ice or by the action of dry winds ; (2) dilution through the melting of ice or the falling of rain ; (3) concentration or dilution through the virtual addition of salt or water by inflowing currents of salter or fresher water respectively. The effeet of the formation or melting of ice, though great within the arctic circles, does not tell much on the non-polar seas. More important in regard to these is the effect of the south-east and the north-east trade winds, which in the Pacific blow between about 3° and 21°S. lat. and between about 2° and 20° N. lat. re- spectively, leaving between the two a belt of 5° of a region of ealms (see more exactly, METEoRoLoGy, vol. xvi. p. 144), In the Atlantic the limiting lines of both trades oscillate annually, so that the equatorial boundary of the north-east trade shifts from 3° to 11° N. lat., and that of the south-east trade from about 1° to 3° X. lat.*~~

~~*3 According to Grassi's experiments, if sea water under the pressure of one atmosphere has the specific gravity 1026, it assumes at depths=1000, 2000,*~~

~~*3000 fathoms a density of 1026+ 1, 2, 3 times 7°9 units=1033°9, 1041°8, 1049°7 respectively.*~~

~~*614*~~

~~*Both trades blowing from colder into warmer regions absorb water largely and thus raise the salinity within their areas of action. The western anti-trades which blow on the polar sides of the two trades, passing from hotter to colder regions, should dilute the ocean there; but they do not seem to act so powerfully in this direction as might be expected. Inthe belt of equatorial calms*~~

~~*between the two trades abundant rains fall frequently and dilute the water very perceptibly.*~~

~~*What has been said thus far about the distribution of surface salinity applies chiefly to the Atlantic, which in fact is far more i known in this respect than any other ocean:*~~

~~*The ac-*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*companying diagram shows how on the average the surface salinity varies there with the latitude. The bolder curve is drawn after a table given by Buchanan in his part of the Narrative of the Cruise of the "Challenger," the other after a more extensive table given by Boguslawski as embodying the mean results of many observations by different authorities with reference to standard temperatures varying from 15° to 17°5 C.,—coast waters affected by the influx of large rivers having been omitted.' In the North Atlantic there is an area of maximum (surface) salinity (S=1028°5) betw een 25° and 35° N. lat. and 30° and 20° W. long. The zone of minimum salinity lies between 15° N. lat. and the equator. In the South Atlantic (surface) there are two concentration centres,—an eastern about St Helena and between that island and Ascension, and a western north of San Trinidad,—both nearer the equator than that of the North Atlantic. As pointed out by Buchanan, a relatively high salinity (not merely on the surface) is quite a characteristic feature of the Atlantic, and in its northern part prevails up to the high latitudes of the Norw egian Sea, which was so thoroughly in- vestigated by Swensden (1876) and Tornée (1877 and 1878) during the Norwegian expeditions. The salt (and heat) conveying influ- ence of the Gulf Stream makes itself felt up to Spitzbergen (76° N.*~~

~~*lat.). On both sides of the Faroe Islands the specific gravity 15S17.5 Comes up to 1027°0 ; at the Bear Islands it sinks to 1026-7,*~~

~~*and thence farther northwards to 10261. While the Gulf Stream pushes northwards, a current of relatively fresh polar water travels southwards and, creeping along the eastern coast of the United States, forms w hat is known as the 'cold wall." In passing from the surface to the depth of the ocean the general rule (Buchanan) is that the actual specific gravity im sitw increases with the depth ; but this does not hold for the salinity (or*~~

~~specific gravity reduced to standard temperature). In places where there is active dilution at the surface (e.g., in the belt of equatorial calms) the salinity as a rule increases down to some 50 or 100 fathoms ; but thence down- wards it follows the general rule, that is, it decreases down to 800 or 1000 fathoms, and thence increases steadily to the bottom. In the South Atlantic the salinity of the bottom water has an almost constant value (48)5,,=1025°7 to 1025°9); but northwards it in-~~

~~creases to from 102616 to 102632 at 2000 to 4000 fathoms (Buchanan).~~

~~In regard to the Pacific our knowledge is far less complete. A ated at the curve shows that the (surface) salinity at a given latitude is less there than it is in the Atlantic. In the whole of the Pacific there is only one concentration centre, which lies about the Society Islands, with a maximum salinity corresponding to ,S,5.,= 1027°19. (W. D.)~~

~~SEA-WOLF, also Sza-cat and Woxr-FisH (Anarrhichas~~

~~lupus), a marine fish, the largest kind of the family ' For the sake of comparison there is shown on the lower part of~~

~~the diagram the surface salinity curve for the Pacifie drawn after Buchanan' $ summary tabulation of his results.~~

~~SEHEA—S EB~~

~~| Blenniide or Blennies.~~

~~el Fae a~~

~~as cowie variation ie surface salinity of ocean with latitude.~~

~~In spite of its large size, it has. retained the bodily form and general external character- istics of the small blennies, which are so abundant on every rocky part of the coast. Its body is long, subeylin- drical in front, compressed in the caudal portion, smooth and slippery, the rudimentary scales being embedded and almost hidden in the skin. An even dorsal fin extends along the whole length of the back, and a similar fin from the |~~

vent to nd caudal am as in blennies, But its formidable dentition distinguishes the sea-wolf from all the other members of the s\family. Both jaws are armed in front with strong conical teeth, and on the sides with two series of large tubercular molars,' a biserial band of simi- lar molars occupying the === middle of the palate. By these teeth the sea-wolf is able to crush the hard carapaces or shells of the |_| crustaceans and molluscs. ele which it feeds; but ,| Whether it uses the teeth ihre a weapon of defence Pee deserves the character of ferocity generally attri- buted to it would appear to be rather questionable from observations made on specimens in the aquarium at Hamburg, which allowed them- selves to be handled without in any way re- senting the loss , of their liberty. (>

/

It must, how-/

ever, be added

that the small / blennies bite Teeth of the lower and upper jaws of the sea-wolf.

readily when caught. Sea-wolves are inhabitants of the northern seas of both hemispheres, one (A. lupus) being common on the coasts of Scandinavia and North Britain, and two in the seas round Iceland and Greenland. Two others occur in the corresponding latitudes of the North Pacific. They attain to a length exceeding 6 feet, and in the north are esteemed as food, both fresh and preserved. The oil extracted from the liver is said to be in quality equal to the best cod-liver oil. Of late years small num- bers have reached the English markets, where, however, the prejudice which attaches to all scaleless fishes, parti- cularly such as possess a varied pattern of coloration, limits their use as food.

SEBASTE. See Srvas.

SEBASTIAN, Dom. See Portucat, vol. xix. pp. 546-

547,

~~*SEBASTIAN, §8r, the patron saint against plague and pestilence, was by birth a Narbonese. According to the Roman breviary his nobility and bravery had endeared him to the emperor Diocletian, who made him captain of the first cohort. Having secretly become a Christian, he was wont to encourage those of his brethren who in the hour of trial seemed wavering in their profession, This was conspicuously the case when the brothers Marcus and Marcellinus were being led forth to death ; by his exhorta- tions he prevailed on them to resist the entreaties and tears of their wives and children, The emperor having been informed of this conduct sent for him and earnestly remon-*~~

~~*strated with him, but, finding him inflexible, ordered that he should be bound to a stake and shot to death. After the archers had left him for dead a devout woman, Irene, came by night to take his body away for burial, but, find- ing him still alive, carried him to her house, where his wounds were dressed. No sooner had he wholly recovered than he hastened to confront the emperor, reproaching him with his impiety; Diocletian, filled with astonishment, which soon changed into fury, ordered him to be instantly carried off and beaten to death with rods (288). The sentence was forthwith executed, his body being thrown into the cloaca, where, however, it was found by another pious matron, Lucina, whom Sebastian visited in a dream, directing her to bury him in the Catacombs under the site of the church now called by his name. He is celebrated by the Roman Church on 20th January (duplex). His cult is chiefly diffused along the eastern coast of Italy and in other districts liable to visitations of plague. As a young and beautiful soldier, he is a favourite subject of sacred art, being most generally represented as undraped and severely, though not mortally, wounded with arrows.*~~

~~*SEBASTIANO DEL PIOMBO (1485-1547), painter, was born at Venice in 1485, and belongs to the Venetian school, exceptionally modified by the Florentine or Roman. His family name was Luciani. He was at first a musician, chiefly a solo-player on the lute, and was in great request among the Venetian nobility. He soon showed a turn for painting, and became a pupil of Giovanni Bellini and afterwards of Giorgione. His first*~~

~~*painting of note was done for the church of St John Chrysostom in Venice, and is so closely modelled on the style of Giorgione that in its author's time it often passed for the work of that master. It represents Chrysostom reading aloud at a desk, a grand Magdalene in front, and two other female and three male saints. Towards 1512 Sebastiano was invited to Rome by the wealthy Sienese merchant Agostino Chigi, who occupied a villa by the Tiber, since named the Farnesina ; he executed some frescos here, other leading artists being employed at the same time. The Venetian mode of colour was then a startling novelty in Rome. Michelangelo saw and approved the work of Luciani, became his personal friend, and entered into a peculiar arrangement with him. At this period the pictorial ability of Michelangelo (apart from his general power as an artist, regarding which there arose no question) was somewhat decried in Rome, the rival faculty of Raphael being invidiously exalted in comparison ; in especial it was contended that Buonarroti fell short as a colourist. He therefore thought that he might try whether, by furnishing designs for pictures and leaving to Sebastiano the execution of them in colour, he could not maintain at its highest level his own general supremacy in the art, leaving Raphael to sustain the competition as he best might. In this there seems to have been nothing particu- larly unfair, always assuming that the compact was not fraudulently concealed ; and the facts are so openly stated by Michelangelo's friend Vasari (not to speak of other writers) that there appears to have been little or no dis- guise in the matter. Besides, the pictures are there to speak for themselves; and connoisseurs have always ac- knowledged that the quality of Michelangelo's unmatched design is patent on the face of them. Of late years, how- ever, some writers, unnecessarily jealous for Buonarroti's personal rectitude, have denied that his handiwork is to be traced in the pictures bearing the name of Sebastiano. Four leading pictures which Sebastiano painted in pursu- ance of his league with Buonarroti are the Pieta (earliest of the four), in the church of the Conventuali, Viterbo ; the Transfiguration and the Flagellation, in the church of S Pietro in Montorio, Rome; and, most celebrated of*~~

~~*all, the Raising of Lazarus, now in the London National Gallery. This grand work—more remarkable for general strength of pictorial perception than for qualities of de- tailed intellectual or emotional expression—is more than 12 by 9 feet in dimensions, with the principal figures of the natural size; it is inscribed '"Sebastianus Venetus faciebat," and was transferred from wood to canvas in 1771. It was painted in 1517-19 for Giulio de' Medici, then bishop of Narbonne, afterwards Pope Clement VIL. ; and it remained in Narbonne cathedral until purchased by the duke of Orleans early in the 18th century,—coming to England with the Orleans gallery in 1792. It is generally admitted that the design of Michelangelo appears in the figure of Lazarus and of those who are busied about him (the British Museum contains two sketches of the Lazarus regarded as Michelangelo's handiwork) ; but whether he actually touched the panel, as has often been said, appears more than doubtful, as he left Rome about the time when the picture was commenced. Raphael's Transfiguration was painted for the same patron and the same destination. The two works were exhibited together, and some admirers did not scruple to give the preference to Sebastiano's. The third of the four pictures above mentioned, the Flagellation of Christ, though ordinarily termed a fresco, is, according to Vasari, painted in oil upon the wall. This was a method first practised by Domenico Veneziano, and afterwards by some other artists ; but Sebastiano alone succeeded in preventing the blackening of the colours. The contour of the figure of Christ in this picture is supposed by many to have been supplied by Buonarroti's own hand. Sebastiano, always a tardy worker, was occupied about six years upon this work, along with its companion the Transfiguration, and the allied figures of saints.*~~

~~*After the elevation of Giulio de' Medici to the pontificate, the office of the " piombo" or leaden seal—that is, the office of sealer of briefs of the apostolic chamber—became vacant ; two painters competed for it, Sebastiano Luciani, hitherto a comparatively poor man, and Giovanni da Udine. Finally Sebastiano, assuming the habit of a friar, secured the very lucrative appointment,—with the proviso, however, that he should pay out of his emoluments 300 scudi per annum to Giovanni. If he had heretofore been slow in painting, he became now supine and indifferent in a marked degree. He lived on the fat of the land, cultivated sprightly literary and*~~

~~other society, to which he contributed his own full quota of amusement, and would scarcely handle a brush, saying jocularly that he benefited the profession by leav- ing all the more work for other artists to do. Berni, one of his intimates, addressed a capitolo to him, and Sebastiano responded in like versified form. One of the few subject- pictures which he executed after taking office was Christ carrying the Cross for the patriarch of Aquileia, also a Madonna with the body of Christ. The former painting is done on stone, a method invented by Sebastiano himself. He likewise painted at times on slate,—as in the instance . of Christ on the Cross, now in the Berlin gallery, where the slate constitutes the background. In the same method, and also in the same gallery, is the Dead Christ supported by Joseph of Arimathea, with a weeping Magdalene,— colossal half-length figures. Late in life Sebastiano had a serious disagreement with Michelangelo with reference to the Florentine's great picture of the Last Judgment. Sebastiano encouraged the pope to insist that this picture should be executed in oil. Michelangelo, determined from the first upon nothing but fresco, tartly replied to his holiness that oil was only fit for women and for sluggards like Friar Sebastian ; and the coolness between the two painters lasted almost up to the friar's death. This event, consequent upon a violent fever acting rapidly upon a~~

~~616.~~

~~very sanguine temperament, took place at Rome in 1547. Sebastiano directed that his burial, in the church of §S. Maria del Popolo, should be conducted without ceremony of priests, friars, or lights, and that the cost thus saved should go to the poor ; in this he was obeyed.~~

~~Numerous pupils sought training from Sebastiano del Piombo ; but, owing to his dilatory and self-indulgent habits, they learned little from him, with the exception of Tommaso Laureti. Sebas- tiano, conscious of his deficiency in the higher sphere of invention, made himself especially celebrated as a portrait painter: the like- ness of Andrea Doria, in the Doria Palace, Rome, is one of the most renowned. In the London National Gallery are two fine specimens: one canvas represents the friar himself, along with Cardinal Ippolito de' Medici; the other, a portrait of a~~

~~*lady in the character of St Agatha, used to be identified with one of Sebastiano's prime works, the likeness of Julia Gonzaga (painted for her lover, the aforenamed cardinal), but this assumption is now discredited. There were also portraits of Marcantonio Colonna, Vittoria Colonna, Ferdinand marquis of Pescara, Popes Adrian VI., Clement VII. (Studj Gallery, Naples), and Paul III., Sanmicheli, Anton Fran- cesco degli Albizzi, and Pietro Aretino. named sitter is in Arezzo and another in the Berlin gallery.*~~

~~*SEBASTOPOL, or SEvasropot, the chief naval station of Russia on the Black Sea, is situated in the south-west of the Crimea, in 44° 37' N lat. and 33° 31' E. long., 935 miles from Moscow, with which it is connected by rail via Kharkoff. The estuary, which is one of the best roadsteads in Europe and could shelter the combined fleets of Europe, is a deep and thoroughly sheltered indentation among chalky cliffs, running east and west for nearly 3? miles, with a width of three-quarters of a mile, narrowing to 930 yards at the entrance, where it is protected by two small promontories. It has a depth of from 6 to 10 fathoms, with a good bottom, and large ships can anchor at a cable's length from the shore. The main inlet has also four smaller indentations,—Quarantine Bay at its entrance, Yuzhnaya (Southern) Bay, which penetrates more than a mile to the south, with a depth of from 4 to 9 fathoms, Dockyard Bay, and Artillery Bay. A small river, the Tchornaya, enters the head of the inlet. The main part of the town, with an elevation ranging from 30 to 190 feet, stands on the southern shore of the chief inlet, between Yuzhnaya and Artillery Bays. To the east are situated the barracks, hospitals, and storehouses ; a few buildings on the other shore of the chief bay constitute the "northern side." Before the Crimean War of 1853-56 Sebastopol was a well-built city, beautified by gardens, and had 43,000 inhabitants ; but at the end of the siege it had not more than fourteen buildings which had not been badly injured. After the war many privileges were granted by the Govern- ment in order to attract population and trade to the town ; but both increased slowly, and at the end of seven years its population numbered only 5750. The railway line connecting Sebastopol with Moscow gave some animation to trade, and it was thought at the time that Sebastopol, although precluded by the treaty of Paris from reacquiring its military importance, might yet become a commercial city. In November 1870,*~~

~~*during the Franco-German War, the Russian Government publicly threw off the obligation of those clauses of the treaty of Paris which related to the Black Sea fleet and fortresses, and it was decided again to make Sebastopol a naval arsenal. In 1882 Sebastopol had a population of 26,150 inhabitants, largely military. The town has been rebuilt on a new plan, and a fine church occupies a prominent site. There are now two lyceums and a zoological marine station. Although belonging to the government of Taurida, Sebas- topol and its environs are under a separate military governor.*~~

~~*The peninsula between the Bay of Sebastopol and the Black Sea became known in the 7th century as the Heracleotic Chersonese (see vol. vi. p. 587). In the 5th century B.c. a Greek colony was*~~

~~*founded here and remained independent for three centuries, when it became part of the kingdom of the Bosphorus, and subsequently*~~

~~*SE B—SEC*~~

~~*One likeness of the last-|*~~

~~*tributary to Rome. Under the Byzantine emperors Chersonesus was an administrative centre to their possessions in Taurida. Ac- cording to the Russian annals, Vladimir, prince of Kicff, conquered Chersonesus (Korsuii) before being baptized there, and restored it to the Greeks on marrying the princess Anna. Subsequently the Slavonians were cut off from relations with Taurida by the Mongols, and only made occasional raids, such as that of the Lithuanian prince Olgerd. In the 16th century a new influx of colonizers, the Tatars, occupied Chersonesus and founded a settlement named Akhtiar. This village, after the Russian conquest in 1788, was sclected for the chict naval station of the empire in the Black Sea and received its present name ("The August City"). In 182¢ strong fortifications were begun, and in 1853 it was a formidable fortress. In September 1854, after having defeated the Russians in the battle of the Alma, the Anglo-French laid siege to the southern portion of the town, and on 17th October began a heavy bombardment. Sebastopol, which was nearly quite open from the land, was strengthened by earthworks thrown up under the fire of the besiegers, and sustained a memorable eleven*~~

~~*months' siege, On 8th September 1855 it was evacuated by the Russians, who retired to the north side. The fortifications were blown up by the allies, and by the Paris treaty the Russians were bound not to restore them.*~~

~~*SEBENICO (Sibenik), a town of Austrian Dalmatia, on the coast of the Adriatic, about half-way between Zara and Spalato, is situated on an irregular basin at the mouth of the Kerka, connected with the sea by a winding channel 3 miles long. The channel is defended by a fort designed by Sanmicheli, and the town itself, picturesquely situated on the abrupt slope of a rocky hill, is guarded by three old castles, now dismantled. There is also a wall on the landward side. Sebenico is the seat of a bishop, and its Italian Gothic cathedral, dating from the 15th and 16th centuries, is considered the finest church in Dalmatia. Its excellent harbour and its situation at the entrance of the Kerka valley combine to make Sebenico the entrepdt of a considerable trade. Fishing is carried on exten- sively. The population of the commune in 1880 was 18,104, of the town proper about 8000.*~~

~~*SECCHI, Ancgxo (1818-1878), Italian astronomer, was born on 29th June 1818 at Reggio in Lombardy, and entered the Society of Jesus at an early age. In 1849 he was appointed director of the observatory of the Collegio Romano, which was rebuilt in 1853; there he devoted himself with great perseverance to researches in physical astronomy and meteorology till his death at Rome on 26th February 1878.*~~

~~*The results of Secchi's observations are contained in a great number of papers and memoirs. From about 1864 he occupied himself almost exclusively with spectrum analysis, both of stars (Catalogo delle Stelle di cwi si é determinato lo Spetiro Luminoso, Paris, 1867, 8vo ; " Sugli Spettri Prismatici delle Stelle Fissc," two parts, 1868, in the Atti della Soc. Ital.) and of the sun (Le Soleil, Paris, 1870, 8vo; 2d ed. 1877). Though his publications always bear witness of his indefatigable zeal and energy, they are often uncritical and wanting in accuracy.*~~

~~*SECKENDORF, Verr Lupwic von (1626-1692), a German statesman and scholar of the 17th century, was the most distinguished member of an ancient and wide- spread German noble family, which took its name from*~~

~~*the village Seckendorf between Nuremberg and Langen- zenn, and is said to have been ennobled by the emperor Otho I. in 950, though it traces its own genealogy no further back than 1262. The family was divided into eleven distinct lines, but at present only three are pre- served, widely distributed throughout Prussia, Wiirtem- berg, and Bavaria! Veit Ludwig von Seckendorf, son of Joachim Ludwig, of the Gudentine line, was born at Herzogenaurach (near Erlangen) in Upper Franconia, 20th December 1626. HIs youth fell in the midst of the Thirty Years' War, in which his father was actively*~~

~~*1 Amongst the Seckendorfs less known to fame than Veit Ludwig are his nephew, Friedrich Heinrich (1673-1763), soldier and diplo- matist ; Leo (1773-1809), poet, literary man, and soldier ; the brothers Christian Adolf (1767-1833) and Gustav Anton ('Patrik Peale") (1775-1823), both literary men of some note.*~~

–

~~*SEC—S EC*~~

~~*engaged. But his talented and noble mother carefully watched over his education. In Coburg, Mihlhausen, and finally in Erfurt, whither his mother removed in 1636, he acquired the Latin, Greek, and French lan- guages. In 1639 he returned to Coburg, and the reign- ing duke, Ernest the Pious, made him his protégé. Enter- ing the university of Strasburg in 1642, he devoted himself to history and jurisprudence. After he finished his university course his patron gave him an appointment in his court at Gotha, with the charge of his valuable library. He there laid the foundation of his great collec- tion of historical materials and mastered the principal modern languages. In 1652 he was appointed to import- ant judicial positions and sent on weighty embassages. In 1656 he was made judge in the ducal court at Jena, a position which he held many years and in which he took the leading part in the numerous beneficent reforms of the duke. In 1664 he resigned office under Duke Ernest, who had just made him chancellor and with whom he continued on excellent terms, and entered the service of Duke Maurice of Zeitz (Altenburg), with the view of lightening his official duties. After the death of Maurice in 1681 he retired to his estate, Meuselwitz in Altenburg, from nearly all public*~~

~~*offices, and devoted himself to his intellectual labours. Although living in retirement, he kept up a correspondence with the principal learned men of the day. He was especially interested in the endeavours of the pietist Spener to effect a practical reform of the German church, although he was hardly himself a pietist. In 1692 he was appointed chancellor of the new university of Halle, but died a few weeks afterwards, on the 18th of Deceniber.*~~

~~*Seckendorf's principal works were the following : — Dewtscher Furstenstaat (1656 and often afterwards), a handbook of German public law; Der Christenstaat (1685), partly an apology for Chris- tianity and partly suggestions for the reformation of the church, founded on Pascal's Pensées and embodying the fundamental ideas of Spener ; Commentarius historicus et apologeticus de Lutheranismo sive de Reformatione (3 vols., Leipsic, 1692) occasioned by the Jesuit Maimbourg's Histoire du Luthéranismé (Paris, 1680), his most important work, and still indispensable to the historian of the Reformation as a rich storehouse of authentic materials.*~~

~~*See D. G. Schreber's Historia vite ac meritorwm Viti Ludovict a Seckendorf (Leipsic, 1733); Schrockh, Lebensbeschreibungen beriihmter Manner (Leipsic, 1790); Nasemann, "Veit Ludwig von Seckendorf," in Preussische Jahrbiucher (vol. xii., 1863, p. 257 sq.); W. Roscher, "Zwei sichsische Staatswirthe im iéten und 17ten Jahrhundert," in Weber's Archiv fiir die stichsische Geschichte (vol, i,, 1862); and Theodor Kolde, "Seckendorf," in Herzog-Plitt's Realen- cyklopddie (1884).*~~

~~*SECRETARY-BIRD, a very singular African animal first accurately made known, from an 'example living in the menagerie of the prince of Orange, in 1769 by Vos- maer,! in a treatise published simultaneously in Dutch and French, and afterwards included in his collected works issued, under the title of Regnum Animale, in 1804. He was told that at the Cape of Good Hope this bird was known as the "Sagittarius" or Archer, from its striding gait being thought to resemble that of a bowman advanc- ing to shoot, but that this name had been corrupted into that of "Secretarius." In August 1770 Edwards saw an example (apparently alive, and the*~~

~~*survivor of a pair which had been brought to England) in the possession of Mr*~~

~~*1 Le Vaillant (Sec. Voy. Afrique, ii. p. 278) truly states that Kolben in 1719 (Caput Bon Spei hodiernum, p. 182, French version, ii. p. 198) had mentioned this bird under its local name of "'Snake-eater"' (Slangen-vreeter, Dutch translation, i. p. 214); but that author, who was a bad naturalist, thought it was a Pelican and also confounded it with the Spoonbill, which is figured to illustrate his account of it. Though he doubtless had seen, and perhaps tried to describe, the Secretary- bird, he certainly failed to convey any correct idea of it. Latham's suggestion (loc. infra cit.) that the figure of the "Grus Capensis cauda cristata" in Petiver's Gazophylaciwm (tab. xii. fig. 12) was meant for this bird is negatived by his description of it (p. 20). The figure was probably copied from one of Sherard's paintings and is more likely to have had its origin in a Crane of some species. Vosmaer's plate is lettered " Amerikaanischen Roof-Vogel," of course by mistake for " Afrikaanischen."*~~

~~*617*~~

~~*Raymond near Ilford in Essex ; and, being unacquainted with Vosmaer's work, he figured and described it as "of a new genus" in the Philosophical Transactions for the following year (Ixi. pp. 55, 56, pl. ii). In 1776 Sonnerat (Voy. Nouv, Guinée, p. 87, pl. 50) again described and*~~

~~*Secretary-Bird. figured, but not at all correctly, the species, saying (but no doubt wrongly) that he found it in 1771 in the Philippine Islands. A better representation was given by D'Aubenton in the Planches Enlwminées (721); in 1780 Buffon (Oiseaux, vii. p. 330) published some additional information derived from Querhoent, saying also that it was to be seen in some English menageries; and the following year Latham (Synopsis, i. p. 20, pl. 2) described and figured it from three examples which he had seen alive in England. None of these authors, however, gave the bird a scientific name, and the first conferred upon it seems to have been that of Falco serpentarius, inscribed on a plate bearing date 1779, by John Frederick Miller (Iu. Nat. History, xxviii.), which plate appears also in Shaw's Cimelia Physica (No. 28) and is a misleading caricature. In 1786*~~

~~*Scopoli called it Otis secretarius— thus referring it to the Bustards,? and Cuvier in 1798 designated the genus to which it belonged, and of which 't still remains the sole representative,® Serpentarius. Suc- ceeding systematists have, however, encumbered it with many other names, among which the generic terms G'ypo- geranus and Ophiotheres, and the specific epithets reptil- vorus and cristatus, require mention here.t The Secretary- bird is of remarkable appearance, standing nearly 4 feet in height, the great length of its legs giving it a resemblance to a, Orane or a Heron; but the expert will at once notice that, unlike those birds, its tibie are feathered all the way down. From the back of the head and the nape hangs, loosely and in pairs, a series of black elongated feathers, capable of erection and dilation in periods of excitement."*~~

~~*2 Curiously enough, Boddaert in 1783 omitted to give it a scientific name.*~~

~~*3 Ogilby's attempt to distinguish three species (Proc. Zool. Society, 1835, pp. 104, 105) has met with no encouragement ; but examples from the north of the equator are somewhat smaller than those from the south.*~~

~~*4 The scientific synonymy of the species is given at great length by Drs Finsch and Hartlaub (Vogel Ost-Afrikas, p. 93) and by Mr Sharpe (Cat. B. Brit. Museum, i. p. 45); but each list has some errors in common.*~~

~~*5 It is from the fancied resemblance of these feathers to the pens which a clerk is supposed to stick above his ear that the bird's name of Secretary is really derived.*~~

~~*aki. == 78*~~

~~*618*~~

~~*The skin round the eyes is bare and of an orange colour. The head, neck, and upper parts of the body and wing- coverts are bluish-grey; but the carpal feathers, including the primaries, are black, as also are the feathers of the vent and tibize,—the last being in some examples tipped with white. The tail-quills are grey for the greater part of their length, then barred with black and tipped with white; but the two middle feathers*~~

~~*are more than twice as long as those next to them, and drooping downwards present a very unique appearance.*~~

~~*The habits of the Secretary-bird have been very frequently described, one of the best accounts of them being by Verreaux in the Zoological Society's Proceedings for 1856 (pp. 348-352). Its chief prey consists of insects and reptiles, and as a foe to snakes it is held in high esteem. Making every allowance for exaggeration, it seems to possess a strange partiality for the destruction of the latter, and successfully attacks the most venomous species, striking them with its knobbed wings and kicking forwards at them with its feet, until they are rendered incapable of offence, when it swallows them. The nest is a huge structure, placed in a bush or tree, and in it two white eggs, spotted with rust-colour, are laid. The young remain in the nest for a long while, and even when four months old are unable to stand upright. They are very frequently brought up tame, and become agreeable not to say useful pets about a house, the chief drawbacks to them being that when hungry they will help themselves to the small poultry, and the fragility of their legs, which follows on any sudden alarm, and ends in their death. The Secretary-bird is found, but not very abundantly and only in some localities, over the greater part of Africa, especially in the south, extending northwards on the west to the Gambia and in the interior to Khartum, where Von Heuglin observed it breeding.*~~

~~*The systematic position of the genus Serpentarius has long been a matter of discussion, and is still one of much interest, though of late classifiers have been pretty well agreed in placing it in the Order SERIEMA, q.v.). (A. N.)*~~

~~*SECULAR GAMES were celebrated at Rome for three days and nights with great ceremony to mark the com- mencement of a new sxculum or generation. Originally they were a propitiatory festival, imported from Etruria under the name of Ludi Terentini, and held at irregular intervals, in view of extraordinary prodigies; but in 249 B.C. it was decreed that they should be celebrated in every hundredth year after that date. This decree was frequently disregarded, partly for political reasons and partly because in Augustus's time and with his approval the quindecem- virl, acting under Greek influence, sanctioned the longer period of 110 years.*~~

~~*The dates of the actual celebrations are as follows :—the first in 509 B.c., the second in 348, the third in 249, the fourth in 146, the fifth by Augustus in 17 (for this occasion Horace wrote his Carmen Seculare), the sixth by Claudius in 47 A.p.=800 A.v.c., the seventh by Domitian in 88, the eighth by Antoninus Pius in 147=900 a.v.c., the ninth by Severus in 204 (220 years after the Augustan celebration), the tenth by Philip in 248, the eleventh and last by Gallienus c. 262. The projected celebration of Maxi- mian in 304 did not take place.*~~

~~*Censorinus, De Die Natali, c. 17; Zosimus, ii. 1 sg.3 Val. Max., if. e. 5. The dates of the first two celebrations appear to rest only on the authority of Valerius Antias ; the others are certain. The quindecemviral books assigned fictitious dates for the pre-Augustan celebrations. Comp. Marquardt, Die romische Staatsverwaltung, iii. p. 369 sq.*~~

~~*SECUNDERABAD, one of the chief British military cantonments in India, is situated in the native state of Haidaribid (Hyderabad) or the Nizam's Dominions, in 17° 26' 30" N. lat. and 78° 33' E. long., 1830 feet above the level of the sea, and 6 miles north-east of Haidardbad city. Secunderabad is the largest military station in India and forms the headquarters of the Haidardbad subsidiary*~~

~~*SEC—S ED*~~

~~*force, which constitutes a division of the Madras army. The strength of the military force stationed at Secunderabad in 1883 was 5632, European troops numbering 2276 and native troops 3356. To the south-west of the cantonment there is a large reservoir or tank, known as the Husain Sagar, about 3 miles in circumference. Secunderabad town, which forms the cantonment bazaar, contains a population of over 30,000. Adjoining this cantonment to the north is the Boldram cantonment, one of the stations of the Haidardbad contingent, under the immediate com- mand of the nizam ; and 2 miles to the south of Secunderé- bad cantonment are the lines of the Haidardbad reformed troops, also belonging to the nizam. During the mutiny (1857-58) both the subsidiary force and the Haidarabad contingent rendered good service.*~~

SECUNDUS, Jonannezs, or Jonann Everts (1511- 1536), Latin poet, was born at The Hague on 10th No- vember 1511. He was descended from an ancient and honourable family in the Netherlands ; his father, Nicholas Everts, or Everard, seems to have been high in the favour of the emperor Charles V. On what account the son was called Secundus is not known. His father intended him for the law; but though he took his degree at Bourges it does not appear that he devoted much time to legal pur- suits. Poetry and the sister arts of painting and sculpture engaged his mind at a very early period. In 1533 he went to Spain, and soon afterwards became secretary to the cardinal-archbishop of Toledo, in a department of business which required no other qualification than that which he possessed in a very eminent degree,—a facility in writing with elegance the Latin language. It was during this period that he composed his most famous work, the Basia, a series of amatory poems, of which the fifth, seventh, and ninth Carmina of Catullus seem to have given the hint. In 1534 he accompanied Charles V. to the siege of Tunis, but gained few laurels asa soldier. After quitting the service of the archbishop, Secundus was employed as secre- tary by the bishop of Utrecht ; and so much did he dis- tinguish himself by the classical elegance of his composi- tions that he was called upon to fill the important post of private Latin secretary to the emperor, who was then in Italy. But, having arrived at St Amand, near Tournay, he was cut off by a violent fever on 8th October 1536.

SEDAINE, Micurn Jean (1719-1797), dramatist, was born at Paris on 4th July 1719. Few men of letters have risen from a lower station. Although his father was an architect, he died when Sedaine was quite young, leaving no fortune, and the boy began life as a mason's labourer. He worked himself up in his trade and was at last taken as pupil and partner by the builder who employed him. Meanwhile he had done his best to repair his deficiencies of education, and in 1753 he published a volume of poems of some merit. He then took to the theatre and after composing various vaudevilles and operettas attracted the attention of Diderot, and had two remarkable plays ac- cepted and performed at the Théatre Francais. 'The first and longest, the Philosophe sans le Savoir, was acted in 1765; the second, a lively one-act piece, La Gageure Im- prévue, in 1768, These two at once took their place as stock pieces and are still ranked among the best French plays, each of its class. Sedaine inclined

~~*somewhat to the school of drame or tragédie bourgeoise, but he was free from the excessive sentimentality which in the hands of Diderot and others marred the style, and he had a vein of singularly natural and original comedy. Indeed his originality is one of his chief points, though except the two pieces mentioned little or nothing of his has kept the stage or the shelves. Sedaine, who became a member of the Academy, secretary for architecture of the fine arts division, and a prosperous man generally, was personally*~~

~~*both popular and respected. He lived to a considerable age, dying at Paris on 17th May 1797.*~~

~~*SEDALIA, a city of the United States, county town of Pettis county, Missouri, lies 189 miles west of St Louis, on the highest swell of a rolling prairie, which drains by small streams north-east to the Missouri. It is a railroad centre, and, besides the machine-shops and. carriage- factories of two railway companies (the Missouri, Kansas, and Texas, and the Missouri Pacific, Middle Division), it contains foundries, flour-mills, and establishments for the manufacture of furniture, woollen goods, soap, beer, &c. Among the public buildings are two opera-houses, a public library, a high school, and a gymnasium. Founded in 1860 by General George R. Smith, Sedalia had 4560 inhabitants in 1870, and 9561 in 1880.*~~

~~*SEDAN, a town of France, the chef-lieu of an arrondisse- ment in the department of Ardennes, lies on the right bank of the Meuse, 13 miles east-south-east of Meziéres by the railway to Thionville (Lorraine), and is surrounded by heights of about 1000 feet. Since its fortifications were déclassés, a process of embellishment has been going on. Place Turenne takes its name from the statue of the illustrious marshal, who was born in the town in 1611. The public buildings include a Protestant church, a syna- gogue, a museum, and a college. The manufacture of fine black cloth has long been, and still continues to be, the staple industry, employing in the town and neighbourhood more than 10,000 workmen, and producing to the value of 40,000,000 francs annually. Several spinning-mills have been erected by Alsatian refugees since 1871.*~~

~~*Consider- able activity is also displayed in various departments of metal-working, especially in the surrounding villages. The population was 13,807 in 1872, and 19,240 in 1881 (19,556 in the commune).*~~

~~*Sedan was in the 13th century a dependency of the abbey of Mouzon, the possession of which was disputed by the bishops of Liége and Rheims. United to the crown of France by Charles V., it was ceded by Charles VI. to Guillaume de Braquemont, who sold it to the La Marcks. For two centuries this powerful family managed to continue masters of the place in spite of the bishops of Liége and the dukes of Burgundy and Lorraine ; and in the person of Henri Robert they adopted the title " prince of Sedan." In the 16th century the town was an asylum for many Protestant refugees, who laid the basis of its industrial prosperity, and it became the seat of a Protestant seminary. The last heiress of the La Marck family brought Sedan and the duchy of Bouillon to Henri de la Tour d'Auvergne, viscount of Turenne. When the new duke attempted to maintain his independence, Henry IV. captured Sedan in three days; and the second duke (eldest brother of the great marshal), who had several times revolted against Louis XIII., was at last, after his share in the conspiracy of Cinq- Mars, obliged to surrender his principality. Sedan thus became part of the royal domain in 1641. On Ist September 1870 the fortress was the centre of the most disastrous conflict of the Franco-German War. Shut in by the Germans, who had occupied the surrounding heights, the whole French army, after a terrific contest, was obliged to capitulate,—the emperor, 39 generals, 230 staff-officers, 2600 officers, and 83,000 men becoming prisoners of*~~

~~*war. The village of Bazeilles was the scene of the heroic stand made by the marines under Martin des Pallieres. It now contains the great ossuary, and a monument to the memory of the marines ; and the house which has been rendered famous by Neuville's painting, ""'Les Derniéres Cartouches," is a museum of objects found on the battlefield.*~~

~~*SEDDON, Tuomas (1821-1856), landscape painter, was born in London on 28th August 1821. His father was a cabinetmaker, and the son for some time followed the same occupation; but in 1842 he was sent to Paris to study ornamental art. On his return he executed designs for furniture*~~

~~*for his father, and in 1848 gained a silver medal from the Society of Arts. In the following year he made sketching expeditions in Wales and France, and in 1852 began to exhibit in the Royal Academy, sending a figure- piece, Penelope, and afterwards landscapes, deriving their subjects from Brittany. In the end of 1853 he started for the East and joined Mr Holman Hunt at Cairo. He worked*~~

~~*after a very brief illness, he died on 23d November.*~~

~~*619*~~

~~*for a year in Egypt and Palestine, executing views which Mr Ruskin has pronounced to be "the first landscapes uniting perfect artistical skill with topographical accuracy ; being directed, with stern self-restraint, to no other purpose than that of giving to persons who cannot travel trustworthy knowledge of the scenes which ought to be most interest- ing to them." Seddon's Eastern subjects were exhibited in*~~

~~*Berners Street, London, in 1855, and in Conduit Street in 1856. In October 1856 Seddon again visited Cairo, where, In 1857 his works were collected and exhibited in the rooms of the Society of Arts, and his important and elaborately finished picture, Jerusalem and the Valley of Jehoshaphat, was purchased by subscription and presented to the National Gallery. A memoir of Seddon, by his brother, was pub- lished in 1859.*~~

~~*SEDGWICK, Apam (1785-1873), geologist, was born in 1785 at Dent, Yorkshire, where his father was vicar of the parish. He was educated at Sedbergh school and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated as fifth wrangler in 1808, and was elected a fellow in 1809. For some years he devoted himself chiefly to the studies and duties of academic life, but gradually he acquired an ab- sorbing interest in geology and natural science, which was fostered by long excursions into the country, rendered necessary by the state of his health, In 1818 he suc- ceeded Professor Hailstone in the Woodwardian chair of geology. Among his principal discoveries, which appeared for the most part in the Cambridge Transactions and the Transactions of the Geological Society, were those*~~

~~*of the true position and succession of the Paleozoic strata of Devonshire and Cornwall, of the geological relation of*~~

~~*the beds afterwards named Permian in the north and*~~

~~*north-west of England, and of the general structure of North Wales,—a subject which led him into controversy with Murchison. In 1834 he published a Discourse on the Studies of the University of Cambridge, which reached a*~~

~~*fifth edition. By his generosity and energy he succeeded in rendering the geological collection of the Woodwardian Museum one of the most complete in the kingdom. He was one of the original secretaries of the Cambridge Philo- sophical Society established in 1819, and was president of*~~

~~*the Geological Society of London from 1829 to 1831. Having taken holy orders, he was advanced to the dignity of canon of Norwich cathedral, and for some time also he was vice-master of Trinity College. Sedgwick died at Cambridge on 25th January 1873.*~~

~~*SEDITION in Roman law was considered as majestas or treason. In English law it is a very elastic term, including offences ranging from libel to TREASON (q.v.). It is rarely used except in its adjectival form, ¢.g., sedi- tious libel, seditious meeting, or seditious conspiracy. "Ag to sedition itself," says Mr Justice Stephen, "I do not think that any such offence is known to English law " (Hist. Crim. Law, vol. ii. chap. xxiv.) The same high authority lays down the law in the following terms, which were substantially adopted by the Draft Criminal Code Commissioners.*~~

~~*«Every one commits a misdemeanour who publishes verbally or otherwise any words or any document with a seditious intention. If the matter so published consists of words spoken, the offence is called the speaking of seditious words. If the matter so published is contained in anything capable of being a libel, the offence is called the publication of a seditious libel. Every one commits a misdemeanour who agrees with any other persom or persons to do any act for the furtherance of any seditious intention common to poth orall of them. Such an offence is called a*~~

~~*seditious conspiracy. A seditious intention is an intention to bring into hatred or con- tempt or to excite disaffection against the person of Her Majesty, her heirs and successors, or the Government and constitution of the*~~

~~*1 The word "sedition" occurs, however, in 40 and 41 Vict. c. ZF s. 40.*~~

~~*620*~~

~~*United Kingdom, as by law established, or either House of Parlia- ment, or the administration of justice, or to excite Her Majesty's subjects to attempt otherwise than by lawful means the alteration of any matter in church or state by law established, or to raise dis- content or disaffection amongst Her Majesty's subjects, or to pro- mote feelings of ill-will and hostility between different classes of Her Majesty's subjects. An intention to show that Her Majesty has been misled or mistaken in her measures, or to point out errors or defects in the Government or constitution as by law established, with a view to their reformation, or to excite Her Majesty's subjects to attempt by lawful means the alteration of any matter in church or state by law established, or to point out, in order to their removal, matters which are producing or have a tendency to produce feelings of hatred and ill-will between different classes of Her Majesty's subjects, is not a seditious intention. In determining whether the intention with which any words were spoken, any document was published, or any agreement was made, Was or was not seditious, every person must be deemed to intend the consequences which would naturally follow from his conduct at the time and under the circumstances in which he so conducted himself" (Digest of the Criminal Law, §§ 91-94).*~~

~~*The principal enactments now in force dealing with seditious offences were all passed during the last twenty- five years of the reign of George III. They are 37 Geo. ITI. ¢. 123, prohibiting the administering or taking of unlawful oaths (see OATH) or the belonging to an unlaw- ful confederacy ; 60 Geo. III. and 1 Geo. IV. c. 1, pro- hibiting unlawful drilling and military exercises ; and the Acts for the suppression of corresponding societies, 39 Geo. ITI. ¢. 79 and 57 Geo. III. c. 19. No proceedings can be instituted under these last two Acts without the autho- rity of the law officers of the crown (9 and 10 Vict. c. 33). Under the head*~~

~~*of statutes aimed at seditious offences may also be classed 2 Ric. IT. st. 1, ¢. 5 and 12 Ric. IL ec. 11, against scandalum magnatum or slander of great men, such as peers, judges, or great officers of state, whereby discord may arise within the realm, and 13 Car. II. ¢. 5, against tumultuous petitioning (see Petition), There has been no prosecution in recent times for seditious words as distinguished from seditious libel, but such words have been admitted as evidence in proceedings for seditious CoNSPIRACY (¢.v.), aS in the prosecution of O'Connell in 1844 and of Mr Parnell and others in 1880 (see Reg. v. Parnell, Cox's Criminal Cases, vol. xiv. 508). By the Prison Act, 1877, any prisoner under sentence for sedition or seditious libel is to be treated as a misdemeanant of the first division (40 and 41 Vict. c. 21, s. 40).*~~

~~*Scotland.—" All acts by which the minds of the people may be incited to defeat the Government or control legislation by violent or unconstitutional means are seditious" (Macdonald, Criminal Law, 229). Sedition is punishable by fine or imprisonment or both (6 Geo. IV. c. 47). A very large number of Acts of the Scot- tish Parliament dealt with sedition, beginning as early as 1184 with the assize of William the Lion, c. 29. Leasing-making is to be distinguished from sedition, as it attacked only the sovereign individually, not the Government.*~~

~~*United States.—In the Acts of Congress the word "sedition" appears to occur only in the army and navy articles. A soldier joining any sedition or who, being present at any sedition, does not use his utmost endeavour to suppress the same is punishable with death. A sailor uttering seditious words is punishable at the dis- cretion of a court-martial. In 1798 an Act of Congress called the Sedition Act was passed, which expired by effluxion of time in 1801. Its constitutionality was violently assailed at the time. (See Story on the constitution of the United States, §§ 1293-4.) Several prosecutions under the Act will be found in Wharton's State Trials. Sedition is also dealt with by the State laws mostly in a very liberal spirit. Thus the Louisiana Code, § 394, enacts that 'there is no such offence known to our law as defamation of the Govern- ment or either of its branches, either under the name of libel, slander, seditious writing, or other appellation." By§ 111, to con- stitute the offence of sedition 'there*~~

~~*must be not only a design to dismember the State, or to subvert or change its constitution, but an attempt must be made to do it by force."*~~

~~*Continent of Europe.—The Continental codes as a rule are little more definite than English law in their treatment of sedition. In Germany a distinction is drawn between Auflauf, the remaining together of a mob after the authorities have thrice bid it disperse, and dufruhr or Aufstand, an organized resistance to the autho- rities ; but no definition is given of the terms. The Hungarian*~~

~~*SED—S ED*~~

~~*penal code defines Au/stand to be an armed assembly which has the intention of attacking a class of citizens, a nationality, or a religious body. The French penal code recognizes a difference be- tween sédition and réunion séditieuse. If carried out with sufficient numbers and sufficient force sédition becomes rébellion. Section 100 exempts from the penalties of sedition those who have merely been present at a seditious meeting without taking any active part there- 1n, and have dispersed at the first warning of the military or civil authorities.*~~

~~*SEDLEY, Sir Cuarues (1639-1701), a noted " wit" and patron of literature in the Restoration period, the "Lisideius" of Dryden's Essay of Dramatic Poesy. He was born in 1639, the son of Sir John Sedley of Aylesford in Kent. Like many other men of rank and fashion at the court of 'the merry monarch," Sedley had poetical am- bition, and wrote comedies and songs. His most famous song, " Phyllis," is much more widely known now than the author's name. His first comedy, The Mulberry Garden, was published in 1668, but it does not sustain Sedley's contemporary reputation for wit in conversation. He was probably too indolent to master the art of providing con- tinuous opportunities for brilliant sayings, although he continued to try, wrote two more comedies, and left a comedy and two tragedies behind him to be published after his death. An indecent frolic in Bow Street, for which he was heavily fined, made him notorious in his youth, but later on he sobered down, entered parliament for New Romney (Kent), and took an active part in politics. A speech of his on the civil list after the Revolution is cited by Macaulay as a proof (which his plays do not afford) that his reputation as a man of wit*~~

~~*and ability was de- served. His bon mot at the expense of James II. is another well-known fragment of his wit. The king had seduced his daughter and created her countess of Dorchester, where- upon Sedley remarked that he hated ingratitude, and, as the king had made his daughter a countess, he would en- deavour to make the king's daughter a queen. Sedley died on 20th August 1701.*~~

~~*SEDUCTION. Theaction for seduction of an unmarried woman in England stands in a somewhat anomalous posi- tion. The theory of English law is that the woman herself has suffered no wrong; the wrong has been suffered by the parent or person in loco parentis, who must sue for the damage arising from the loss of service caused by the seduction of the woman. Some evidence of service must be given, but very slight evidence will be sufficient. Although the action is nominally for loss of service, still exemplary damages may be given for the dishonour of the plaintiff's family beyond recompence for the mere loss of service. An action for seduction cannot be brought in the county court except by agreement of the parties. As to seduction of a married woman, the old action for criminal conversation was abolished by the Divorce Act, 1857, which substituted for it a claim for damages against the co-respondent in a divorce suit. Seduction in England is not as a rule a criminal offence. But a conspiracy to seduce is indictable at common law. And the Criminal Law Amendment Act, 1885 (which extends to the United Kingdom), makes it felony to seduce a girl under the age of thirteen, and misdemeanour to seduce a girl between thirteen and sixteen (48 and 49 Vict. c. 69, §§ 4, 5). The same Act also deals severely with the cognate offences of procuration, abduction, and unlawful detention with the intent to seduce a woman of any age. In Scotland the seduced woman may sue on her own account.*~~

~~*United States.—In the United States State legislation has gener- ally modified the common law. In some States the father brings the action as the representative of the family whose purity has been invaded ; in others the woman herself may bring the action. In many States there is a criminal as well as a civil remedy. The penal codes of New York, New Jersey, Louisiana, and other States make it a crime to seduce under*~~

~~promise of marriage an unmarried woman of good reputation. Subsequent intermarriage of the parties~~

~~SHE D—SEG~~

~~is in most cases a bar to criminal proceedings. Massachusetts goes still further. By the law of that State if a man commits fornication with a single woman, each of them shall be punished by imprison- ment not exceeding three months, or by fine not exceeding $30. The seduction of a female passenger on a vessel of the United States is an offence punishable by fine or imprisonment. The finc may be ordcred by the court to be paid to the person seduced or her child (Act of Congress of 24th March 1860). The State legislation of the United States is in remarkable opposition to the rule of the canon law, by which the seduction of a woman by her betrothed was not punishable on account of the inchoate right over her person given by the betrothal.~~

~~SEDULIUS, Caxius, a Christian poet of the 5th cen- tury, was the author of an abecedarian [ymnus de Chrosto in iambic dimeters, portions of which maintain their ground in the offices of the Church of Rome, viz., in the Christmas hymn "A solis ortus cardine," and in that for Epiphany (altered from "' Herodes hostis impie"). His other works are Paschale Carmen s. Mirabilium Divinorum Inbri V., originally in four or five books in hexameter verse and afterwards enlarged and turned into prose, and Veterts et Novi Testamenti Collatio, in elegiac verse. De Verln Incarnatione, a Virgilian cento, has also been ascribed to him, but on insufficient grounds. Of his personal history nothing is known, except that he is called a presbyter by Isidore of Seville ; by some other writers of less authority he is designated "antistes" or "episcopus." A Scoto- Irish origin has sometimes been claimed for him; but at all events he must not be confounded with Sedulius the grammarian, an Irish Scot who lived in the 9th century. The best edition of his works is that of Arevalus (4to, Rome, 1794).~~

~~SEDUM. About 120 species are enumerated in this genus of Crassulacee, mostly perennial herbs with succulent leaves of varied form, but never compound. The indivi- dual flowers are usually small and grouped in cymes. In colour they range from white and yellow to pink. They have a~~

~~calyx of five sepals, as many petals, usually ten stamens, and five distinct carpels, which have as many glands at their base and ripen into as many dry seed-pods. Several species are British, including some with tuberous roots and large leaves (Zelephium), and others of smaller size, chiefly found on rocks, walls, and dry banks. Many are cultivated for the beauty of their flowers, and many are remarkable for their prolonged vitality under adverse circumstances. Sedums are very closely allied to Semper-vivums (see HoUSELEEK).~~

~~SEELAND. See ZEALAND.~~

~~SEES, a town of France and a bishop's see, in the de- partment of Orne, is situated on the Orne, 4 miles from its source and 13 miles north of Alengon by the railway from Le Mans to Caen. The very fine cathedral, dating to a large extent from the 13th and 14th centuries, occupies the site of churches founded in 440, 996, and 1058. The west front has two stately spires of open work 230 feet high, which have been restored more than once in the 19th century. The nave, built in the beginning of the 13th century, was remodelled in its upper portion fifty or sixty years after its erection; the choir, built about 1230 and restored in 1260 after a great fire, is remarkable for the lightness of its construction,—the inner galleries of the presbytery being the boldest venture ever made in this kind. In the choir are four bas-reliefs of great beauty and delicacy representing scenes in the life of the Virgin ; and the altar is adorned with another depicting the removal of the relics of St Gervais and St Protais. Most of the stained windows are good. Around the cathedral are the cloisters of the canons ; the episcopal palace (1778), with a pretty chapel ; the great seminary, located in the old abbey of St Martin (supposed to be one of the fourteen or fifteen monasteries founded in the 6th century by St Evroult) ; the hétel de ville; and the statue of Conté, a member of~~

~~the Egyptian expedition of 1798. The population of Sées was 3483 in 1881, and that of the commune 4687.~~

~~The first bishop of Sées (Sagiwn) was St Lain, who lived at the close of the 3d or beginning of the 4th century. In the 9th century it was a fortified~~

~~*town and fell a prey to the Normans; and the stones from its ruined ramparts were used for the erection of a church in the close of the 10th century. In the 12th century Sées belonged to the count of Alencon and consisted of two distinct parts, separated by the Orne,—the bishop's burgh, and to the south the new or count's burgh (Bourg le Comte). Captured in 1154 by Henry II. of England, it was recovered in the following year by Guillaume de Belléme; and in 1186 it was partly burned by the count of Anjou. After being taken by Philip Augustus it enjoyed some years of peace, during which a hospital and a Franciscan mon- astery were built; but it was one of the first towns of Normandy to fall into the hands of the English (1417), who retained posses- sion until their final expulsion from France. Pillaged by the Pro- testants during the Wars of Religion, Sées attached itself to the Leaguc in 1589, but voluntarily surrendcred to Henry IV. in 1590.*~~

~~*SEETZEN, Unricu Jasper (1767-1811), one of the most distinguished of modern travellers in the East, was born the son of a yeoman, in the little lordship of Jever in German Frisia, on 30th January 1767. His father, who was a man of substance, sent him to the university of Gottingen, where he graduated in medicine. His chief interests, how- ever, were in natural history and technology ; he wrote a number of papers on both these subjects which gained him some reputation, and had both in view in a series of journeys which he made from time to time through various parts of Holland and Germany. He also engaged practi- cally in various small manufactures, and in 1802 obtained a Government post in Jever. In 1801, however, the in- terest which he had long felt in geographical exploration had culminated ina resolution to travel by Constantinople to Syria and Arabia, and then, when familiarized with Mohammedan ways, to try to penetrate into Central Africa. He relied mainly on his own resources, but received a small subvention from Gotha, where also he learned from Zach to make astronomical observations. In the summer of 1802 he started down the Danube with a companion Jacobsen, who broke down at Smyrna a year later. His journey was by Constantinople, where he stayed six months, thence through Asia Minor to Smyrna, then again through the heart of Asia Minor to Aleppo, where he remained from November 1803 to April 1805, and made himself sufficiently at home with Arabic speech and ways to travel as a native and without an interpreter.*~~

~~*Now began the part of his travels of which a full journal has been published (April 1805 to March 1809), a series of most instructive journeys in eastern and western Palestine and the wilderness of Sinai, and so on to Cairo and the Fayyfim. His chief ex- ploit was a tour round the Dead Sea, which he made with- out a companion and in the disguise of a beggar. From Egypt he went by sea to Jeddah and reached Mecca as a pilgrim in October 1809. In Arabia he made extensive journeys, ranging from Medina to Lahak and returning to Mocha, from which place his last letters to Europe were written in November 1810. In September of the follow- ing year he left Mocha with the hope of reaching Muscat, and was found dead two days later, having, it is believed, been poisoned by the command of the imam of Sana'a. For the parts of Seetzen's journeys not covered by the published journal (Reisen, ed. Kruse, 4 vols., Berlin, 1854) the only printed records are a series of letters and papers in Zach's Monatliche Correspondenz and Hammer's Fund- gruben. Many papers and collections were lost through his death or never reached Europe. The collections that were saved form the Oriental museum and the chief part of the Oriental MSS. of the ducal library in Gotha.*~~

~~*SE-GAN FOO, the capital of the province of Shen-se in north-western China, is situated in 34° 17' N. lat. and 108° 58' E. long. Like most Chinese cities, Se-gan Foo has repeatedly changed its name during its history, which dates*~~

~~*back to the time of Che Hwang-te (246-210 3.c.), the first universal emperor, whose name will be ever notorious as that of the monarch who built the Great Wall, burnt the books, and established his capital at Kwan-chung, the site of the modern Se-gan Foo. Under the succeeding Han dynasty (206 B.c.-25 a.p.) this city was called Wei-nan and Nuy-she; under the Eastern Han (25-221 a.p.) it was known as Yung Chow; under the T'ang (618-907) as Kwan-nuy ; under the Sung (960-1127) as Yung-hing ; under the Yuen and Ming (1260-1644) as Gan-se; and under the present dynasty as Segan. During the Ts'in, Han, and 'T'ang dynasties it was the capital of the empire, and is at the present time second only to Peking in size, population, and importance. The city, which is.a square, measuring 10 Chinese miles each way, is prettily situated on ground rising from the river Wei, and includes within its limits the two district*~~

~~*cities of Ch'ang-gan and Hien- ning. Its walls are little inferior in height and massive- ness to those of Peking, while its gates are handsomer and better defended than any of which the capital can boast. The population is said to be 1,000,000, of whom 50,000 are Mohammedans. Situated in the basin of the Wei river, along which runs the great road which connects northern China with Central Asia, at a point where the valley opens out on the plains of China, Se-gan Foo occupies a strategical position of great importance, and repeatedly in the annals of the empire has history been made around and within its walls. During the late Mohammedan rebellion it was besieged by the rebels for two years (1868-70), but owing to the strength of the fortifications it defied the efforts of its assailants. From its eastern side three great roads radiate, one reaching to Shan-se, one to Ho-nan, and one to Hoo-pih; while from it runs in a south-westerly direction the great highway into Sze-chuen. It is thus admirably situated as a trade centre and serves as a depdt for the silk from Che-keang and Sze-chuen, the tea from Hoo-pih and Ho-nan, and the sugar from Sze-chuen destined for the markets of Kan- suh, Turkistan, Ili, and Russia. Marco Polo speaking of Kenjanfu, as the city was then also called, says that it was a place "of great trade and industry. They have great abundance of silk, from which they weave cloths of silk, and gold of divers kinds, and they also manufacture all sorts of equipments for an army. They have every necessary of man's life very cheap." Many of the temples and public buildings are very fine, and not a few historical monuments are found within and about the walls. Of these the most notable is a Nestorian tablet,! which was accidentally discovered in 1625 in the Ch'ang-gan suburb.*~~

~~*1 The contents of this Nestorian inscription, which consists of 1780 characters, may be described as follows, (1) An abstract of Christian doctrine of a vague and figurative kind. (2) An account of the arrival of the missionary Olopun (probably a Chinese form of Rabban= Monk), from Tats'in in the year 635, bringing sacred books and images ; of the translation of the said books ; of the imperial approval of the doctrine and permission to teach it publicly. Then follows a decree of the emperor (T'ait-sung, a very famous prince), issued in 638, in favour of the new doctrine, and ordering a church to be built in the square of justice and peace (Ining fang) in the capital. The emperor's portrait was to be placed*~~

~~*in this church. After this comes a description of Tats'in, and then some account of the fortunes of the church in China. Kaoutsung (650-683, the devout patron also of the Buddhist traveller and doctor, HIwen Ts'ang), it is added, continued to favour the new faith. In the end of the century Buddhism got the upper hand, but under Yuen-tsung (718-755) the church recovered its prestige, and Kiho, a new missionary, arrived. Under Tih-tsung (780-783) the monu- ment was erected, and this part of the inscription ends with a eulogy of I-sze, a statesman and benefactor of the church. (8) Then follows a recapitulation of the above in octosyllabic verse. 'The Chinese in- scription, which concludes with the date of erection, viz. 781, is fol- lowed by a series of short inscriptions in Syriac and the Estrangelo character, containing the date of the erection, the name of the reigning Nestorian patriarch, Mar HIanan Ishua, that of Adam, bishop and pope of China, and those of the clerical staff of the capital. Then follow*~~

~~*SEG—SEG*~~

~~*The stone slab which bears the inscription is 7} feet high by 3 wide, and at present stands embedded in a brick wall, which forms part of a dilapidated temple.2 From a Chinese point of view, however, the Pei Lin or " forest of tablets" is a place of even greater interest than the above-mentioned temple. For there are collected tablets of the HIan, T'ang, Sung, Yuen, and Ming dynasties, some of which bear historical legends, notably a set of stone tablets having the thirteen classics inscribed upon them, while others are symbolical or pictorial; among these last is a full-sized likeness of Confucius. As might be expected on a site which has played so prominent a part in Chinese history, antiquities are constantly being discovered in the neighbourhood of the city, e.g., rich stores of coins and bronzes, bearing dates ranging from 200 B.c. onwards,*~~

~~*SEGESTA, a very ancient city near the north-western extremity of Sicily, so named by the natives and by the Romans, while the Greeks called it Egesta or Aigesta. Its origin was ascribed by tradition sometimes to Trojan refugees and sometimes to Phocians, followers of Philo- ctetes ; the accounts agree only in making Segesta older than the Greek colonization of Sicily in the 7th century B.c. A tribe named Elymi, distinct*~~

~~*from both the Siculi and the Greeks, occupied the country round the city. The scanty references to the history of Segesta show it in continual warfare with the Greek city Selinus from the year 580 B.c. downwards. As early as 426 B.c. it con- cluded an alliance with Athens; and in 416 a great Athenian fleet sailed to Sicily, ostensibly to aid Segesta against its enemies Selinus and Syracuse, but really to attempt the conquest of the island. After the destruction of the Athenian fleet and army, the Segestans turned to the Carthaginians. But, when Hannibal destroyed Selinus (see SELINUS) in 409 B.c, and Himera, and established the Carthaginian power firmly in the western part of Sicily, Segesta sank to the position of a dependent ally. In 397 it suffered a long siege from Dionysius of Syracuse, but at last was relieved by Himilco. In 307, however, the Greek arms had better success; Agathocles of Syracuse sold the inhabitants into slavery, after massacring 10,000 men, and changed the name of the city to Diceopolis. But it soon recovered its old name and passed again to the Cartha- ginians. In the beginning of the First Punic War the Segestans murdered the Carthaginian garrison and became allies of Rome. Being soon after besieged by the Cartha- ginians, they were relieved by the great naval victory of Duilius, 260 B.c. Segesta was always highly favoured by the Romans, both on account of its early adhesion to their cause and from its supposed Trojan origin. Its site is now deserted, having been exposed to the Saracen depredations in the 10th century ; but the ruins are very fine. Segesta was about 6 miles from the sea, and the modern town of Castellamare probably occupies the site of the ancient harbour. The Crimisus, which is represented on coins of Segesta, is probably the river 8. Bartolommeo, about 6 miles to the south. There were hot springs and baths not far from the city.*~~

~~*SEGOVIA, a province of Spain, formerly part of Old Castile, is bounded on the N. and N.E. by the provinces of Burgos and Soria, on the 8.E. by those of Guadalajara and Madrid, on the 8.W. by Avila, and on the N.W. by Valladolid. It has an area of 2670 square miles, and the population in 1877 was 149,961. The greater portion of the country consists of a dry arable tableland, lifted some*~~

~~*sixty-seven names of persons in Syriac characters, most of whom are characterized as priests, and sixty-one names of persons in Chinese, all*~~

~~*priests but one. ;*~~

~~*2 See Yule, Afarco Polo, London, 1875; Williamson, Journeys in North China, London, 1870; and S. Wells Williams, Zhe Afiddle Kingdom, London, 1888.*~~

~~*SEG—S EI*~~

~~*2500 feet above the sea, monotonous enough in appear- ance, and burnt to a dull brown during summer, but yet producing some of the finest corn in the Peninsula. Along the whole south-eastern boundary the Guadarrama range of mountains rises up suddenly, like a huge barrier, sepa- rating Old from New Castile and the basin of the Douro from that of the Tagus,—affording, too, among its ravines and upon its slopes some remarkably fine scenery. There are two well-known passes or "puertos" over the sierra, those of the Nava Cerrada and of Somosiera. The former has been, until quite a recent date, the chief means of communication with the outer world, save when blocked by winter snows. It winds round the lower southern slope of the Pefialara (8500 feet). The Puerto de Somo- siera lies north of the Pefialara. By it in 1808 Napoleon descended upon Madrid. Though to the eye of the stranger almost desert-like in appearance, the province of Segovia is well watered by the streams which rise in the Guadarrama range and flow northwards to the Douro, and by careful methods of irrigation. The Eresma, Cega, Duraton, and Riaza are the principal watercourses. With the exception of Segovia and Sepulveda, there is no town of any import- ance,—the inhabitants being for the most part employed in agricultural and pastoral pursuits and backward in civilization. Since the completion (1883) of the railway from Medina del Campo to the city of Segovia, however, the towns en route have begun to show signs of animation ; and, as the province contains monuments of deepest inter- est to the historian and ecclesiologist, it bids fair to receive its due measure of attention and enlightenment. At the foot of the Nava Cerrada pass lies the royal demesne and summer residence of La Granja, or San Ildefonso, one of the great show places of the Peninsula. The chief trades and manufactures formerly carried on in the province—weaving, tanning, making of earthenware, &c.—have been drawn away to more commercial centres. Paper-making holds its own to some extent, owing to*~~

~~the excellence of the water ; and for the same reason, together with the superior quality of the breed of sheep, the picturesque scenes attendant upon the preparation of the fleeces may still be witnessed. Such prosperity, however, as Segovia retains is dependent upon its agricultural produce—wheat, rye, barley, peas, hemp, flax, &c.—together with the rearing of sheep, cattle, mules, and pigs. The sierras yield excellent granite, marble, and limestone ; but hitherto the difficulty of trans- port has prevented any development of mineral wealth. SEGOVIA, the capital of the. above province, clusters upon a narrow ridge of rock which rises in the valley of the Eresma, where this river is joined by its turbulent little tributary the Clamores, and is one of the best specimens extant of the Gotho-Castilian cities. Founded originally as a Roman pleasure resort, it became in the Middle Ages a great royal and religious centre, and was surrounded by Alphonso VI. with the walls and towers which still give to it, éven in their dilapidation, the air of a military stronghold. The streets are steep, irregular, and narrow, and are lined with quaint old-fashioned houses as irregular and forbid- ding, built for the most part of granite from the neighbour- ing sierra. The place teems with records and monuments of the many vicissitudes of fortune and art through which it has passed, foremost among the latter being the ancient Alcazar, the cathedral, the aqueduct of Trajan, and a notable array of churches and other ecclesiastical edifices. The Alcazar is perched upon the western tip of the long tongue of rock upon which the city is built, and which at this point has a sheer descent upon three sides into the valley. Of the original Middle-Age fortress but little re- mains save the noble facade,—the building having been wantonly fired in 1862 by the students of the artillery school then domiciled within its walls, and all but destroyed. It~~

~~is now in course of slow but praiseworthy restoration. The work is Gotho-Moorish, with an admixture of Renaissance in the decoration. Some of the rooms deserve notice, especially the Sala del Trono and the Sala de Recibimiento. The views obtained over the outlying vega from the towers and windows are superb. The 16th-century cathedral (1521-1577), the work of Juan Gil de Ontasion and his son Rodrigo, occupies the site of a former church of the 11th century, of which the present cloisters, rebuilt~~

~~*in 1524, formed part. It is a well-proportioned and delicate piece of Late Gothic—the latest of its kind in Spain—317 feet long by 177 wide. The central nave rises 99 feet and the tower 330. The exterior is the least satisfactory portion, at once bald and over-decorated ; the interior is light and pure, with an effectiveness greatly enhanced by some very fine stamed glass. The churches of Segovia are legion, though many of them are closed and fast fall- ing into disrepair. The most remarkable are those of La Vera Cruz (Knights Templar, Romanesque of the early 13th century), San Millan and San Juan (both Romanesque of second half of 13th century), El Parral (Gothic of early 16th century), and Corpus Christi, an ancient Jewish sanctuary and an interesting specimen of Moorish work. The towers and external cloistering, or corredores, of several of the later churches—especially those of San Estéban and San Martin—are fine. The great aqueduct, however, called El Puente del Diablo, ranks usually as the glory of Segovia, and is remarkable alike for its colossal propor- tions, its history, its picturesqueness, and the art with which it is put together. Erected first, according to fairly reliable tradition, in the time of the emperor Trajan, and several times barely escaping destruction, it is now, after nearly eighteen hundred years, in perfect working order, bringing the pure waters of the Rio Frio down from the Sierra Fonfria, distant 10 miles to the south. The bridge as striding across the valley into the city is 847 yards ong, and consists of a double tier of superimposed arches, built of rough-hewn granite blocks, laid without lime or cement. The three centre arches are 102 feet in height. Segovia finally lost its ancient prosperity when it was taken and sacked by the French in 1808. Some insignificant manufactories of cloth, leather, paper, and rude earthen- ware still exist in the suburb of San Lorenzo, but the trade of the place languishes year by year. The city is the see of a bishop, suffragan to Valladolid. The population in 1877 was 11,318.*~~

~~*SEIGNORY, or Sxrentory, is the relation of the lord of a fee or a manor to his tenant. There is no land in Eng- land without its lord: "Nulle terre sans seigneur" is the old feudal maxim. Where no other lord can be discovered the crown is lord as lord paramount. The principal inci- dents of a seignory were fealty and rent-service. In return for these privileges the lord was liable to forfeit his rights if he neglected to protect and defend the tenant or did anything injurious to the feudal relation. Every*~~

~~*seignory now existing must have been created before the Statute of Quia Emptores, which forbade the future creation of estates in fee-simple by subinfeudation (see RrAL Estate). The only seignories of any importance at present are the lord- ships of manors. They are regarded as incorporeal heredita- ments, and are either appendant or in gross. A seignory appendant passes with the grant of the manor ; a seignory in gross—that is, a seignory which has been severed from the demesne lands of the manor to which it was originally appendant—must be specially conveyed by deed of grant.*~~

~~*SEINE. This, one of the chief rivers of France (Lat. Sequana), rises on the eastern slope of the plateau of Langres, 18 miles to the north-west of Dijon. It keeps the same general direction (north-westwards) throughout its entire course, but has numerous windings: between its*~~

~~*source and its mouth in the English Channel the air distance is only 250 miles, but that actually traversed (through the departments of Céte-d'Or, Aube, Seine-et-Marne, Seine-et- Oise, Seine, Eure, and Seine-Inférieure) is 482. Though shorter than the Loire and inferior in volume to the streams of the Rhone system when these are at their fullest, the Seine derives an exceptional importance from the regularity of its flow. This feature is due to the geological character of its basin, an area of 19,400,000 acres, entirely belonging to France (with the exception of a few communes in Belgium), and formed in three-fourths of its extent of per- meable strata, which absorb the atmospheric precipitation to restore it gently to the river by perennial springs. It is believed that the Seine never attains a volume so high as 90,000 cubic feet per second. At Paris its average per second is 9000, and after it has received all its tributaries it ranges between 24,000 and 25,000 cubic feet. At Paris it falls as low as 2650 cubic feet and in exceptional droughts the figure of 1200 has been reached. During the flood of 1876, which lasted fifty-five days, the volume between the quays at Paris rose to 58,600 cubic feet per second.*~~

~~*Rising at a height of 1545 feet above sea-level, at the base of the statue of a nymph erected on the spot by the city of Paris, the Seine is at first such an insignificant streamlet that it is often dry in summer as far as to*~~

~~Chatillon (722 feet). At Bar (531 feet) its waters feed the Haute-Seine Canal, so that there is uninterrupted navigation from this point to the sea (395 miles). At Troyes it has descended to 331 feet. It next passes Méry, and at Marcilly receives the Aube (right), from which point it becomes navigable ; here it is deflected in a south-westerly direction by the heights of La Brie, the base of which it skirts past Nogent and Montereau, at the latter point receiving the Yonne, its most important left-hand tributary. It then resumes its general north-westerly direction, receiving the Loing (left) at Moret, then passing Melun (121 feet), being joined at Corbeil by the Essonne (left), and after its junction with the Marne (right), a tributary longer than itself by 31 miles, reaches Paris, From this point to the sea its channel has been so deepened by recent works that vessels of 9 to 10 feet draught can reach the capital. The river then winds through a fen cham- paign country past St Cloud, St Denis, Argenteuil, St Germain, Conflans (where it is joined from the right by the Oise, 56 feet above the sea), Poissy, Mantes, Les Andelys, and Poses, where the tide first begins to be perceptible. It next receives the Eure (left), and passes Pont de l'Arche, Elbeuf, and Rouen, where the sea naviga- tion commences. The river has been dyked to Rouen so as to admit vessels of 20 feet draught, and large areas have thus been reclaimed for cultivation.! At every tide there is a ""'bore" (barre or mas- caret), ranging usually from 8 to 10 feet. Between Rouen and the sea there are numerous windings, as in the neighbourhood of Paris; after Caudebec and Quilleboeuf (where the Rille is received from the left) the estuary begins, set with extensive sandbanks, between which flows a narrow navigable channel. At Tancarville (right) is the commencement of a canal to enable river boats for Havre to avoid the sea passage. The river finally falls into the English Channel between Honfleur on the left and Havre on the right. The Marne brings to the Seine the waters of the Ornain, the Oureq, and the Morin ; the Oise those of the Aisne ; the Yonne those of the Arman- con. The low elevation of the bounding hills has rendered it com- paratively easy to connect the Seine and its affluents with adjoining river basins by means of canals. The Oise and Somme are conuected by the Picardy or Crozat Canal, which in turn is continued to the Scheldt by means of the St Quentin Canal and the Oise, and to the Sambre by that of Oise and Sambre. Between the Aisne and the Meuse is the Ardennes Canal, and the Aisne and the Marne are united by a canal which passes Rheims. The Marne has similar~~

~~*communica- tion with the Meuse and the Rhine, the Yonne with the Sadne (by the Burgundy Canal) and with the Loire (by that of Nivernais). The Seine itself is connected with the Loire by the Loing Canal dividing at Montargis into two branches,—those of Orleans and Briare.*~~

~~*SEINE, the department of France which has Paris as its chief town, was formed in 1790 of part of the pro- vince of Ile-de-France. It lies between 48° 44' and 48° 58' N. lat. and 2° 10' and 2° 34' E. long. and is entirely surrounded by the department of Seine-et-Oise, from which it is separated at certain parts by the Seine, the Marne, and the Biévre. The area of the department is only 118,306*~~

~~*1 Comp. River ENGINEERING, vol. xx. p. 579; see also the valuable paper "The River Seine," in Proc. Inst. Civ. Hng., vol. 1xxxiv., 1886, by L. F. Vernon-Harcourt.*~~

~~*SHEI—SEI*~~

~~*acres, and of this surface a seventh or a sixth is occupied by Paris ; the suburban villages also are close together and very populous. In actual population (2,799,329 in 1881) as well as in density (23°7 persons per acre) it holds the first place. Flowing from south-east to north-west through the department, the Seine forms three links: on the right it receives above Paris the Marne, and below Paris the Rouillon, and on the left hand the Biévre within the pre- cincts of the city. The left bank of the Seine is in general higher than the right and consists of the Villejuif and Chatillon plateaus separated by the Biévre ; the highest point (568 feet) is above Chatillon and the lowest (105) at the exit of the Seine. Below Paris the river flows be- tween the plain of Gennevilliers and Nanterre (commanded by Mont Valérien) on the left and the plain of St Denis on the right. On the right side, to the east of Paris, are the heights of Avron and Vincennes commanding the course of the Marne. Communication is further facilitated by various canals (see PARIS).*~~

~~*Market gardens occupy about 3700 acres within and without the city, and by means of irrigation and manuring are made to yield from ten to eleven crops per annum (see Paris), Some districts are specially celebrated,—Montreuil for its peaches, Fontenay-aux- Roses for its strawberries and*~~

~~*roses, and other places for flowers and nurseries. The department produced in 1883 326,326 bushels of wheat, 4042 of meslin, 75,003 of rye, 3415 of barley, 337,837 of oats, 1,656,009 of potatoes, 14,650 of pulse, and 15,400 tons of beetroot. Altogether, 60,000 persons are engaged in agriculture. The live stock in 1881 comprised 95,796 horses (70,296 in Paris), 4174 cattle, 280 calves, 8159 sheep, 3626 pigs, and 660 goats. Vineyards, producin 366,748 gallons of wine annually, cover 2460 acres. The principa woods (Boulogne and Vincennes) belong to Paris. It is partly owing to the number of quarries in the district that Paris owes its origin: Chatillon and Montrouge in the south yield freestone, and Bagneux and Clamart in the south and Montreuil and Romainville in the cast possess the richest plaster quarries in France. Within the circuit of Paris are certain old quarries now forming the cata- combs, Most of the industrial establishments in the department are situated in Paris or at St Denis. Pantin (17,857 inhabitants in 1881) on the Oureq Canal is the seat of a national factory of tobacco, and also of glass-works, and Aubervilliers (19,437) on the St Denis Canal is the seat of great chemical works. Along the Seine, below Paris, Boulogne (25,615) is partly occupied by laundry establish- ments ; Putcaux (15,586) manufactures woollen goods, and has dye- works, printing works, cloth-dressing works, and engineering works of considerable importance ; Clichy (24,320) manufactures crystal and has a Jarge gaswork, &c. Above Paris, Ivry (18,442) has iron-works and engineering works; Choisy-le-Roi (6978) has factories for the making of porcelain, glass, soda, chemicals, morocco, and waxcloth; Montreuil (18,693), near Vincennes, makes patent leather, porcelain, &c. The department is of course traversed by all the railway lines which converge in Paris, and also contains the inner circuit railway and part of the outer circuit,—making a total of 122 miles of railway, to which are to be added numerous trami- ways, 72 miles of national roads, and 458 of other roads. There are 3 arrondissements (Paris, St Denis, and Sceaux), 28 cantons (20 in Paris), and 72 communes. The department forms the archi- episcopal diocese of Paris, falls within the jurisdiction of the Paris court of appeal, and is divided between the four corps d'armée of Amiens, Rouen, Le Mans, and Orleans. Among the important in- stitutions in the department are the lyceums of Vanves and Sceaux, the lunatic asylum at Charenton, the veterinary college of Maisons- Alfort, and the great Bicétre hospital at Gentilly.*~~

~~*SEINE-ET-MARNE, a department of northern France, was formed in 1790 of almost the entire district of Brie (half of which belonged to Champagne and half to Tle-de- France) and a portion of Gatinais (from Ile-de-France and Orléanais). Lying between 48° 7' and 49° 6' N. lat. and 2° 23' and 3° 13' E. long., it is bounded N. by the departments of Oise and Aisne, E. by Marne and Aube, 8. by Yonne and Loiret, and W. by Seine-et-Oise. The whole department belongs to the basin of the Seine, and is drained partly by that river and partly by its tributaries the Yonne and the Loing from the left, and from the right the Voulzie, the Yéres, and the Marne, with its affluents the Ourcq, the Petit Morin, and the Grand Morin. With the exception of the Loing, flowing from south to north, all these streams cross the department from east to west,*~~

~~*SIIEI—S EI*~~

~~*following the general slope of the surface, which is broken up into several plateaus from 300 to 500 feet in height (highest point, in the north-east, 705 feet, lowest 105), and separated from each other by dcep valleys. Most of the plateaus belong to the Brie, a fertile and well-wooded district of a clayey character. In the south-west lies the dry sandy district of the Fontainebleau sandstones. The climate is rather more "continental" than that of Paris,—the summers warmer, the winters colder; the annual rainfall does not exceed 16 inches. There is a striking difference between the south of the department, where the famous white grape (chasselas) of Fontainebleau ripens, and the country to the north of the Marne,—this river marking pretty exactly the northern limit of the vine.*~~

~~*With a total area of 1,417,534 acres, Seine-et-Marne had in 1879 261,074 under wheat, 274,808 under oats, 58,362 under beetroot, 51,180 under vines. Besides these, meslin, rye, barley, pulse, potatoes are the principal crops grown. In 1884 the yield was 6,567,547 bushels of wheat, 231,959 of meslin, 665,505 of rye, 471,251 of barley, 9,104,254 of oats, 3,035,167 of potatoes, 924,210 tons of beetroot, and 401,427 tons of green fodder (lucerne, clover, sainfoin, &c.). The live stock in 1879 included 40,400 horses, 5190 asses, 522,700 sheep (178,290 superior breed), 101,100 cattle, 16,840 pigs, 3714 goats, and 11,440 beehives (75 tons of honey, 15*~~

~~*of wax). Cereals occupy two-fifths of the department and yield an annual value of £2,400,000, while all other products of the soil do not reach £1,600,000. The wheat and oats of Brie are especially esteemed, as are also the white grapes of Fontainebleau and the roses of Provins (see vol. xix. p. 886). Thousands of the well- known Brie cheeses are manufactured, and large numbers of calves and poultry are reared. The forests (covering a fifth of the surface) are planted with oak, beech, chestnut, hornbeam, birch, wild cherry, linden, willow, poplar, and conifers. Best known and most im- portant is the forest of Fontainebleau, the annual product of which is worth £14,000. Excellent freestone is quarried in the depart- ment, especially in the valley of the Loing, mill-stones at La Ferté- sous-Jouarre; the Fontainebleau sandstone, used extensively for pavements, gives employment to 300 establishments, and the white sand which is found along with it is in great request for the manu- facture of glass, Along the Marne are numerous plaster-quarries ; lime-kilns occur throughout the department; and peat is found in the valleys of the Ourcq and the Voulzic. Beds of common clay and porcelain clay supply the potteries of Fontainebleau, and especially those of Montereau, where upwards of 700 hands are employed. Other industrial establishments are the numerous large flour-mills, the sugar-factories, beetroot distilleries, paper-mills (the Marais paper-mill manufactures bank-notes, &c., both for France and foreign markets), saw-mills, foundries, printing works, tanneries, tawing works, glove factories, chemical works, &c. Most of the motive-power used in these establishments is supplied by the streams. 'The Seine, the Yonne, the Marne, and the Grand Morin are navigable, and, with the canals of the Loing and the Ourcq and those of Chalifert, Cornillon, and Chelles, which cut off the windings of the Marne, form a total waterway of 219 miles. There arc 242 miles of railway. With its 348,991 inhabitants in 1881, Seine-et-Marne is in density of population slightly below the aver- age of France. It has 5 arrondissements, 29 cantons, 530 com- munes, forms the diocese of Meaux, belongs to the jurisdiction of the Paris court of appeal, and to the district of the Orleans corps d'armée. Among the places of note in the department, Montereau (7107 inhabitants in 1881), distinguished as Montereau-faut-Yonne because of its situation at the confluence of the Yonne with the Seine, deserves to be mentioned not only for its porcelain inann- facture but also as a great railway station on the*~~

~~*route from Paris to Lyons at the junction of the Troyes line, as the scene of the assassination of John the Bold, duke of Burgundy, and as one of the battleficlds of Napoleon I. in the campaign of 1814. Its church is an historical monument of the 13th, 14th, 15th, and 16th centuries, A statue of Napoleon stands between the two bridges.*~~

~~*SEINE-ET-OISE, a department of northern France, formed in 1790 of part of the old province of fle-de- France, and traversed from south-east to north-west by the Seine, which is joined by the Oise from the right. Lying between 48° 17' and 49° 14' N, lat. and 1° 27' and 2° 37' KE. long., it is surrounded by the departments of Seine-et-Marne on the east, Loiret on the south, Eure-et- Loir on the west, Eure on the north-west, and Oise on the north. It encloses the department of Seine. The Epte on the north-west is almost the only natural boundary of the department. The streams (all belonging to the basin of*~~

~~*the Scine) are, on the right the Yeres, the Marne, the Oise, and the Epte, and on the left the Essonne (joined by the Juine, which passes by Etampes), the Orge, the Biavre, and the Mauldre. Seine-et-Oise belongs in part to the tableland of Beauce in the south and to that of Brie in the east. In the centre are the high wooded hills which make the charm of Versailles, Marly, and St Germain. But it is in the north-west, in the Vexin, that the culminating point of 690 feet is reached, while the lowest point, where the Seine leaves the department, is hardly 40 feet above the sea. The mean temperature is 51° Fahr. Of the 1,384,695 acres 912,205 are arable soil, 50,330 meadows, 42,852 vineyards, and 199,864 woods. In 1881 the live stock com- prised 48,540 horses, 5626 asses, 162 mules, 70,600 cattle, 341,600 sheep (wool-clip, 1110 tons), 16,200 pigs, 4500 goats, and 13,500 beehives. Seine-et-Oise is a great agricultural and horticultural department. The crops in 1883 were—wheat, 5,817,858 bushels ; meslin, 353,127; rye, 1,034,572; barley, 641,894; oats, 8,705,193 ; buckwheat, 3800 ; potatoes, 6,479,000 ; beetroot for sugar 206,645 tons, and for fodder 237,915; colza seed, 415 tons; hay, 48,242; clover, 18,505 ; lucerne, 140,354; sainfoin, 57,283. Oaks, hornbeams, birch, chestnuts are the prevailing trees in the forests, most of which belong to the state.*~~

~~*Building, paving, and mill stones (1978 workmen), lime, plaster, marl, chalk, sand, clay, and peat (along the Essonne) are all found in the department. At Enghien are cold mineral springs, and Forges has a hydropathic establishment, where the town of Paris maintains a hospital for scrofulous children. The most important industrial establishments are the national por- celain factory at Sevres; the Government powder-mills of Sevran and Bouchet ; the paper-mills and cardboard mills (1570 workmen) of Corbeil (population 6566 in 1881), Ktampes (7465), and Pontoise (6675), but by far the largest is at Essonne (4999); the flax-spinning mills (6368 spindles), cotton-mills (17,830 spindles), silk-mills (5726), wool-mills (8890) ; the foundries and boat and bridge building yards at Argenteuil (10,167) ; the engineering and railway works at Corbeil, &c. ; the agricultural implement factories at Dourdan (2819) ; the sugar-refineries with thousands of workmen ; distilleries on most of the large farms ; starch-works, laundries, large printing establishments close to Paris; factories for chemical products, candles, embroidery, hosicry, perfumery, shoes, and buttons; one of the finest zinc-works in France; saw-mills, &c. Besides the navigation of the Scine, the Marne, the Oise, and the Canal d'Oureq, the department has 420 miles of railroad, 457 of national roads, and 3958 of other roads. The population of the department in 1881 was 577,798 inhabitants (one and a half times the average density of the French departments). There are 6 arrondissements, 37 cantons, and 686 communes; the department forms the diocese of Versailles, is divided between the corps @'armée of Amiens, Rouen, Le Mans, and Orleans, and has its court of appeal at Paris. The commune of Argenteuil (11,849 inhabitants) is not only important for its manufactures but also for its market gardens (asparagus, figs, grapes, &c.); and its church, rebuilt in the 19th century in the Romanesque style, is a fashionable place of pilgrimage.*~~

~~*SEINE INFERIEURE, a department of the north of France, formed in 1790 of four districts (Norman Vexin, Bray, Caux, and Roumois) belonging to the province of Normandy. Lying between 49° 15' and 50° 4' N, lat. and 1° 52' and 0° 4' E. long., it is bounded N.W. and N. by the English Channel for a distance of 80 miles, N.E. by Somme, from which it is separated by the Bresle, E. by Oise, S. by Eure and the estuary of the Seine, which separates the department from Calvados. It is divided almost*~~

~~equally between the basin of the Seine in the south and the basins of certain coast streams in the north. The Seine receives from the right hand before it reaches the department the Epte and the Andelle from the Bray dis- trict, and then the Darnétal, the Cailly, the Austreberte, the Bolbec, and the Lézarde. The main coast streams are the Bresle (which forms the ports of Eu and Tréport), the Yeres, the Arques or Dieppe stream (formed by the junction of the Varennes, the Béthune, and the Eaulne), the Scie, the Saane, the Durdent. As a whole the department may be described as an elevated plateau culminating towards the east ina point 807 feet above the sea and terminating along the Seine in high bluffs and towards the sea in steep chalk cliffs 300 to 400 feet high, which are continually being eaten away and transformed into beds of shingle. There is no striking line of parting between the basins of~~

~~DO la)~~

~~626~~

~~the Seine and the Channel, but deep valleys have been hollowed out by the streams. The Bray district in the south-east is a broad valley of denudation formed by the sea as it retired, and it is traversed by smaller valleys and covered with excellent pasture. In the comparatively regular outline of the coast there are a few breaks, as at Tréport, Dieppe, St Valery-en-Caux, Fécamp, and Havre, the Cap de la Héve, which commands this last port, and Cape Antifer, 12 or 13 miles farther north. Tréport, Dieppe, Veules, St Valery, Fécamp, Yport, Etretat, and Ste Adresse (to mention only the more important) are fashion- able watering-places with the Parisians. The winters are not quite so cold nor is the summer so hot as in Paris, and the average temperature of the year is higher. The rain- fall is 24 inches per annum, increasing from Rouen to~~

~~Dieppe as the sea is approached.~~

~~With a total area of 1,491,458 acres, Seine Inférieure has 911,938 acres of arable ground, 151,125 of wood, 99,703 grass, 32,977 moorland and pasturage. Out of a total population of 814,068 in 1881 those dependent on agriculture numbered 283,536. The live stock in the same year comprised 81,561 horses of good breeds, 1421 asses, 125 mules, 236,493~~

~~cattle, 259,677 sheep of ordinary kinds and 27,523 of special breeds (wool-clip, 560 tons), 78,186 pigs, 3341 goats, 13,202 beehives (54 tons of honey and 138 of wax). Mulch cows are kept in great numbers, and Gournay butter aud Gournay and Neufchatel cheese are in repute. The farms of the Caux plateau are cach surrounded by an earthen dyke, on which are planted forest trees, generally beech and oak. Within the shelter thus provided apple and pear trees grow, which produce the cider generally drunk by the inhabitants (38,602,036 gallons in 1883). The other crops in 1883 were—wheat, 6,667,650 bushels ; meslin, 59,950; rye, 654,489; barley, 443,751; oats, 7,017,609 ; potatoes, 2,954,457 ; pulse, 98,786 ; beetroot for sugar 28,837 tons, and for fodder 118,099 ; colza seed, 29,076 tons; and 457,047 tons of ordinary fodder. In general the department is fertile and well cultivated. Along the Seine fine meadow-land has been reclaimed by dyking ; and sandy and barren districts have been planted with trees, mostly with oaks and beeches, and they often attain magnifi- cent dimensions, especially in the forest of Arques and along the railway from Rouen to Dieppe ; Pinus sylvestris is the principal com- ponent of the forest of Rouvray opposite Rouen. With the exception of a little peat and a number of quarries, employing 745 workmen, Seine Inférieure has no mineral source of wealth ; but manufactur- ing industry is well devcloped. Rouen is the cliief centre of the cotton-trade, which is in the department represented by 190 spinning and weaving factories, employing 22,947 hands, 1,400,000 spindles, 14,000 power-looms, and 4000 hand-looms, and working up 30,000 tons of cotton annually. Hand-loom weaving, carried on throughout the country districts, employs 18,000 looms ; in the branch of the cotton trade known as rowennerie 190 manufacturers are employed, producing to the value of £2,400,000 per annum; in that of the indiennes 20 establishments with 5000 workpeople turn out ycarly 1,000,000 pieces of 115 yards each. There are 22 establish- ments for dyeing cotton cloth with 700 workmen, and for dyeing cotton yarn 32 cstablishments with 1200 workmen. The woollen manufacture, of which Elbeuf is the centre, employs 24,000 work- men and produces goods valued at about £3,500,000, with raw material valued at £1,720,000, mainly imported from Australia and partly from the La Plata ports. The wool-spinning mills (at Elbeuf and Darnétal) have 92,000 spindles, aud there are 650 power-looms and 3800 hand-looms. At Elbeuf (22,888 inhabitants in 1881) there are 17~~

~~*dyeworks, 50 twist factories, a manufactory of carding machines, and 45 cloth-dressing factories. About 18,000 spindles are employed in flax-spinning, an industry more widely distributed throughout the department. Engineering works, foundries, and iron shipbuilding yards occur at Havre (population 105,540 in 1881) aud Rouen (105,860). Wooden ships are also built at Havre, Rouen, Dieppe (21,585), and Fécamp (11,919). Other establishments of importance are the national tobacco-factories at; Dieppe (1100 hands) and Havre (580 hands), sugar-refineries (£1,440,000 worth of sugar in 1881), glass-works (878 workmen), soap-works, chemical works, candle-factories, flour-mills, oil-factories, ivory-works, lace-works, clock-factories, &c. The total number of industrial establishnients in the department is 975 ; and it is estimated that 305,460 persons depend on industrial pursuits. The fisheries are a great resource for the inhabitants of the seaboard. Fécamp sends yearly £100,000 worth of cod and £80,000 worth of herrings, mackerel, &c., into the market ; Dieppe has the supplying of Paris with fresh fish; St Valery sends its boats as far as Iceland. The principal ports for foreign trade are Havre, Rouen, and Dieppe. There are 364 miles of railway, 370 of national roads, 6543 of other roads, 98 of Seine navigation, and the Bresle is canalized for 2 miles. In population Seine Inférieure stands fourth in the list of French departmcuts ;*~~

~~*SEIIEI—SEI*~~

~~*it has consequently been proposed to divide it into the two depart- ments of Seine Inférieure and Seine Maritime. The density of population is double the average of France. There are 5 arrondisse- ments, 51 cantons (of which 3 are in Havre and 6 in Rouen), and 759 communes. The department forms the archbishopric of Rouen ; the court of appeal and the headquarters of the corps d'armée are also in that city. Places of importance are Elbeuf; Fécamp, a fishing port, with sea-bathing, distilling, &c.; Bolbec_ (10,226 inhabitants), with weaving and spinning factories; and Eu (4827 inhabitants), with a celebrated castle belonging to Louis Philippe and the Orleans faiily.*~~

~~*SEISIN. "Seisin of the freehold may be defined to be the possession of such an estate in land as was anciently thought worthy to be held by a*~~

~~*free man" (Williams, On Seisin, p. 2). Seisin is now confined to possession of the freehold, though at one time it appears to have been used for simple possession without regard to the estate of the possessor. (See Posssssion.) Its importance is consider- ably less than it was at one time owing to the old form of conveyance by feoffment with livery of seisin having been superseded by a deed of grant (see Reau Estar), and the old rule of descent from the person last seised having been abolished in favour of descent from the purchaser. (See INHERITANCE.) At one time the right of the wife to dower and of the husband to an estate by curtesy depended upon the doctrine of seisin. The Dower Act, 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 105, has, however, rendered the fact of the seisin of the husband of no importance, and the Married Women's Property Act, 1882, appears to have practically abolished the old law of curtesy. In the case of a convey- ance operating under the Statute of Uses, seisin is deemed to be given by the effect of the statute. This constructive seisin may still be of importance where the question arises how long a person has been in actual possession, Thus in Orme's Case (Law Rep., 8 Common Pleas, 281) the right to a county vote depended upon the form of the convey- ance of a rent-charge to the voter. If the conveyance had been under the statute, the claimant would have been seised for a sufficient time; the court, however, held that the conveyance was a common' law grant, and that the grantee must have been in actual receipt of the rent m order to entitle him to be registered.*~~

~~*Primer seisin was a feudal burden at one time incident to the king's tenants in capite, whether by knight service or in socage. It was the right of the crown to receive of the heir, after the death of a tenant im capite, one year's profits of lands in possession and half a year's profits of lands in reversion. The right was abandoned by the Act abolishing feudal tenures (12 Car. IT. c. 24).*~~

~~*In Scotch law the corresponding term is "sasine." Like seisin in England, sasine has become of little legal importance owing to recent legislation. By 8 and 9 Vict. c. 35 actual sasine on the lands was made unnecessary. By 21 and 22 Vict. c. 76 the instru- ment of sasine was superseded by the recording of the conveyance with a warrant of registration thereon. For the register of sasines, see REGISTRATION.*~~

~~*SEISMOMETER. This name was originally given to instruments designed to measure the movement of the ground during earthquakes. Recent observations have shown that, in addition to the comparatively great and sudden displacements which occur in earthquakes, the ground is subject to other movements. Some of these, which may be called " earth-tremors," resemble earthquakes in the rapidity with which they occur, but differ from earthquakes in being imperceptible (owing to the small- ness of the motion) until instrumental means are used to detect them. Others, which may be called " earth-tilt- ings," show themselves by a slow bending and unbending of the surface, so that a post stuck in the ground, ver- tical to begin with, does not remain vertical, but inclines now to one side and now to another, the plane of the ground in which it stands shifting relatively to the horizon. No sharp distinction can be drawn between these classes*~~

~~*of movements. Earthquakes and earth-tremors grade into one another, and in almost every earthquake there is some tilting of the surface. The term "seismometer" may con- veniently be extended (and will here be understood) to cover all instruments which are designed to measure move- ments of the ground.*~~

~~*Measurements of earth-movements are of two distinct types. In one type, which is applicable to ordinary earthquakes and earth-tremors, the thing measured is' the displacement of a point in the earth's crust. In the second type, which is applicable to slow tiltings, the thing measured is any change in the plane of the earth's surface relatively to the vertical, Under Eartaquaks mention is made of instruments designed by Palmieri and others to register the occurrence of earthquakes, and in some cases to give a general idea of their severity. While some of those instruments act well as seismoscopes, none of them serve to determine with precision the character or the magnitude of the motion. In this article notice will be taken only of instruments intended for exact measurement.*~~

~~*Earthquake displacements are in general vertical as well as horizontal. For the purpose of measurement it is con- venient to treat the vertical*~~

~~*component separately, and in some cases to resolve the horizontal motion into two com-*~~

~~*ponents at right angles to each other.*~~

~~*Inertia Method.—In the first type of measurements what may be called the "inertia" method is followed. A mass is suspended with freedom to move in the direction of that component of the earth's motion which is to be measured. When an impulse occurs the supports move, but the mass is prevented by its inertia from accompanying them. It supplies a steady point, to be used as a standard of reference in determining the extent through which the ground has moved in the direction in question, But, in order that the suspended mass shall not acquire motion when its supports move, one essential condition must be satisfied. Its equilibrium must be neutral, or a! nearly so, in order that, ti when the supports are displaced, little or no force may be brought into operation tending to bring the mass into the same position rela- tive to the supports as it occupied before dis- turbance. This can be made plain by consider- ing the case of a common pendulum hung from a support which is rigidly, fixed to the ground. When the ground moves in any horizontal direc- tion the pendulum's inertia causes a certain point in it (the centre of percussion) to remain for the instant at rest. But this contrivance does not yield a steady point, because the sta- bility of the pendulum makes the bob swing down to recover its place directly under the sup- port; and in fact, if a succession of oscillations of the ground occur, the bob acquires a motion often much greater than the motion of the sup- port itself. This tend-\ ency may be corrected, \| and the pendulum made \ fit to act as a seismo- meter, by any contri- vance which (without introducing friction) Fic. will reduce its stability so much as to make the equilibrium of the bob very nearly neutral. In all instruments designed to furnish a steady point the suspended mass must have some small stability,*~~

~~*i i i*~~

~~*a U*~~

~~*a er se) ie f hy fa gh*~~

~~*1.—Duplex pendulum seismograph.*~~

~~*627*~~

~~*else it would be unmanageable; but its period of free oscillation must be much greater than that of the earthquake-motions which it is employed to measure. Even a simple pendulum can have its stability reduced sufficiently to fit it for seismometric work by making it very long. The same result is, however, much more con- veniently achieved by combining a common pendulum with an inverted pendulum placed just beneath it. The common pendulum being stable and the inverted pendulum unstable, if the bobs are jointed so that they must move together, the combination can be made as nearly astatic as may be desired.! Figs. 1 and 2 illustrate*~~

~~*how this combination is applied 'oe in seismometry. The stable bob : E ¢ a, hung from a fixed support Oo =a*~~

~~*above by three parallel wires, is connected with the inverted pen- , dulum 6 by a ball-and-tube joint. (onsen A lever c, carried by a gimbal FASSSSQsey joint in the fixed bracket d, is F geared also by a ball-and-tube " joint to the upper bob. Its long b arm carries a jointed index e, which projects out and touches*~~

~~*a smoked-glass plate f, held on*~~

~~*a fixed shelf. Any horizontal motion of the ground acts on the Fie. 2.—Duplex pendulum lever by the bracket d, and showing details,*~~

~~*causes the index to trace a magnified record on the smoked-glass plate. Fig. 1 is taken from a photograph of an instrument of this kind, constructed to give a much magnified record of small movements. When large earthquakes are to be recorded the mul- tiplying lever is dispensed with, and the index is attached directly to one of the bobs. Observations with instruments of this class exhibit well the very complicated motion which the earth's surface undergoes during an earthquake. In small earthquakes (such as are only slightly or not at all destructive) the greatest amplitude of motion is often less than a millimetre, and rarely more than a centimetre ; the disturbance nevertheless consists of a*~~

~~*multitude of successive movements, quite irregular in amplitude, period, and direction. Fig. 3 isa facsimile of the record given ,*~~

~~*by a duplex pendulum seismograph during one of the earthquakes which occur frequently in the plain of Yedo, Japan. The record, as engraved, is three and a half times the earth's actual motion. Instead of two pendulums, a single inverted pen- ; ' dulum has been used, with a spring stretched ™. ae ll between it and a fixed support above. By ad- % sce aie justing the spring so that a proper proportion of robin the weight is borne by it and the remainder by the rigid stem of the pendulum, an approach to neutral equilibrium can be made." In Forbes's inverted pendulum seismometer a somewhat similar plan was adopted: the foot of the pendulum was attached to an elastic wire which tended to restore it to its normal vertical position when displaced.*~~

~~*Another group of instruments designed to furnish two degrees of freedom for the purpose of recording all motions in a horizontal plane, but much less satisfactory on account of their friction, is that in which a rolling sphere either itself supplies inertia or forms a support for a second inertia-giving mass. Probably the earliest was one used in Japan by Dr G. F. Verbeck in 1876 (see fig. 4). Ona marble table, ground plane and carefully levelled, four balls of rock-crystal were placed, carrying a massive block of hard wood. A pencil, sliding in a hole in the block, re- = gistered the relative motion of the table and the block on a sheet of paper fixed San ss '. Tr be if Fic. 4.—Rolling sphere seismograph. there were no friction) somewhat larger than the true motion of the table, for the system is kinetically equivalent to four upright pieces whose centres of percussion lie in a plane nearly, but not quite, as high as the tops of the balls. This forms what may be called the steady plane ; its position depends on the relative masses of block and balls, and is easily calculated. When the ground moves in any direction the block moves through a short distance in the opposite direction, and the record is magnified in a fixed ratio. Various forms of rolling-sphere seismometers have been*~~

~~*1 J. A. Ewing, "A Duplex Pendulum Seismometer," in Transactions of the Seismological Society of Japan, vol. v., 1882, p. 89.*~~

~~2 Ewing, "A Duplex Pendulum with a Single Bob," in Trans. Sets. Soc, Jap., vol. vi., 1883, p. 19.~~

~~3 Report of Brit. Assoc., 1841, p. 47, or Trans. R. S. H., xv. p. 219.~~

~~proposed by Mr. T. Gray,! Mr. C. A. Stevenson,? and others. Prob- ably the best form would be that of a light spherical segment rolling on a level plane base and carrying a heavy bob fixed to it. To give some stability the bob should be placed so as to bring the centre of gravity a little under the centre of curvature. The centre of percussion, somewhat higher than this, would of course be the steady point, and a multiplying pointer might take the motion either from it or from any other convenient part of the rolling piece. All rolling seismometers—including rolling cylinders, which have been proposed by Mr Gray as single-freedom instruments, to register one component of horizontal motion—fail to act well, partly because of the comparatively great frictional or quasi-fric- tional resistance which is presented to the motion of the free mass, and partly because, owing to imperfections in the construc- tion and want of perfect rigidity in the materials, the ball or cylinder takes up a position in which there is au objectionably great stability as regards very small displacements. These objections make the use of rolling seismometers unadvisable, except perhaps for the rough measurement of violent earthquakes.~~

~~The seismographs which have been described draw a horizontal plan of the path pursued during an earthquake by a point on the earth's surface. They take no note of the relation of the displace- ment to time,—an element which is required if we are to form any estimate of the violence of an earthquake from the record. With this view a different method of registration is also followed. The whole movement is resolved into rectilinear components, and these are separately recorded (by single-freedom seismometers) on a plate or drum which is kept in continuous movement, so that the record of each component takes the form of an undulating line, from which the number, succession, amplitude, velocity, and acceleration of the component movements can be deduced and the resultant motion determined. A single steady mass with two degrees of freedom may still be employed to record, separately, two components of~~

~~*horizontal motion; but it is generally preferable to provide two distinct masses, each with one degree of freedom. The principal instrument of this class is the horizontal pendulum seismograph,* which has been used to record Japanese earthquakes since 1880. It consists of two horizontal pendulums, set at right angles to each other, each supplying a steady point with respect to horizontal motions transverse to its own length. Each pendulum is pivoted about two points, on an axis which is nearly vertical, but in- clined slightly forwards to give a suitable degree of stability. In some forms of the instrument the pivoted frame of the pendulum is light, and the inertia is practically all furnished by a second piece or bob pivoted on the frame about a vertical axis through the centre of percussion of the frame. This construction has the advantage of compactness and of making the position of the steady point at once determinate. But a simpler construction is to at- tach the bob rigidly to the frame. This shifts the steady point a little way outwards from the position it would have if the bob were pivoted. In either construction a prolongation of the pendu- lum beyond the bob forms a convenient multiplying index. Fig.*~~

~~*Fie. 5.—Horizontal pendulum seismograph.*~~

~~*5 shows a complete horizontal pendulum seismograph (with pivoted bobs). Two rectangular components of earthquake motion are re- corded radially on a revolving plate of smoked glass, which receives its motion through a friction roller from a clock furnished with a fluid-friction centrifugal governor. The clock may either be kept going continuously, in expectation of an earthquake at any moment,*~~

~~*1 Gray, Phil. Mag., September 1881.*~~

~~*2 Stevenson, Trans. Roy. Scot. Soc. of Arts, February 1882.*~~

~~*3 Ewing, "On a New Seismograph," in Proc. Roy. Soc., No. 210, 1881, or Trans, Seis. Soc. of Japan, December 1880.*~~

~~*SEISMOMETER*~~

~~*or be started into motion by an electric seismoscope when the earliest indications of an earthquake are felt. The former plan is practicable only when the instrument can receive careful attend- ance and where earthquakes occur often. It has the drawback that the circle which is drawn by each pointer as the plate revolves below it gradually broadens, partly because of warping and tempera- ture changes in the supports and partly because of actual tilting of the ground. As an earthquake generally begins with comparatively insignificant movements, there is not much to object to in having the plate at rest to begin with, provided a sufficiently sensitive starting seismoscope be used. A suitable arrangement for this pur- pose is one due to Palmieri: a short pendulum hangs over a cup of mercury, in the centre of which a depression is formed by an iron pin, whose top is a little lower than the surface of the mercury, The pendulum ends in a platinum point, which stands clear in the centre of this depression, but touches the edge whenever a horizontal movement of the ground takes place, thereby closing the circuit of an electro-magnet, which starts the clock. In the most recent form of the horizontal pendulum seismograph the bobs are fixed to the pivoted frames, and the pointers are arranged to trace their records side by side. Records with instruments of this class, besides giving much additional information, agree with those of the duplex pendulum in show- ing that earthquake motion is a tangle of waves in all azi- muths. This will be seen by reference to fig. 6, which shows a small portion of*~~

~~*an earthquake re- : : . Fic. 6.—Record of earthquake by horizontal gistered by's pair of pendulum seismograph; one-third full size.*~~

~~*horizontal pendu-*~~

~~*lums. Contemporary parts of the two records are shown together, the straight radial lines marking seconds of time. The phases of the two components are con- N*~~

~~*tinually changing, and when the two are compounded the result is a path having the same characteristics as those of the diagram in fig. 3. Fig. 7 — = gives the result of compounding" E the records of fig. 6 during three seconds, while the range of move- ment was a maximum.*~~

~~To register the vertical com- ponent of earthquake motions we require to suspend a mass with vertical freedom. Most ways of doing this give too much stability, as, for instance,~~

~~$~~

~~Fic. 7.—Result of compounding the record of fig. 6.~~

~~when a weight is hung from a sy spring or carried by a hori-~~

~~zontal bar that is fixed to a wall or table by a flexible spring joint. This last is the vertical motion seis- mometer which was used by the British Association Commit- tee at Comrie in 1842. Another form, me- chanically equivalent to this, is a weighted ‘ horizontal bar, pivot- ed on a fixed hori- zontal fulerum, and held up by a spiral spring, stretched from a point near the fulerum to a fixed support above. This mode of suspen- sion is still too stable, though less so than if the spring were~~

~~ANIA AN EPP ARAN AY NAA AAA AA~~

~~Fic. 8.—Principle of~~

~~directly loaded. To Vertical motion — make it nearly a- Seismograph. static Mr T. Gray* proposed the use~~

~~of a tube containing mercury, connected with the bar in such a manner that when the bar goes down the mercury, running to- wards one end of the tube, has the effect of increasing the weight, and when the bar goes up an opposite effect occurs. This plan is open to the objection that the mercury is disturbed by horizontal movements of the ground. A simpler plan is shown in fig. 8.? There the pull of the spring is applied at a short distance v below the plane of the bar. Hence when the weight goes down the spring,~~

~~4 Gray, Trans. Scis. Soc. Jap., vol. iii. p. 187. 5 Ewing, Trans. Seis. Soc. Jap., vol. iii. p. 140. le,~~

~~*which then pulls with more force, pulls with a smaller leverage, and it is easy to adjust the distance v so that the moment of the pull of the spring remains sensibly equal to the moment of the weight,—the condition necessary to make the bar astatic. This is*~~

~~*is stretched transversely across a vertical tube in the upper bob a. This serves to measure horizontal motion in the plane of the drawing. Motion at right angles to this is shown by the lower bob ¢ (drawn in section), which carries a similar transverse hair. A fixed lens b between the bobs gives an image of the lower hair in the plane of the upper hair, so that both appear crossed in the field of the microscope, thereby allowing both components of horizontal motion to be observed together.*~~

~~*Equilibrium Method.—In observing slow earth-tiltings an entirely different process is followed. 'The problem then is, not to measure displacements by aid of the inertia of a body which tends to pre- serve its original position, but to compare the direction of a line or plane fixed to the earth with the direction of the vertical. The earliest observations of earth-tiltings were made by the aid of spirit-levels. If a level be set on a table fixed to the rock, its bubble, watched through a microscope, will be seen to move slowly now to one side and now to another. The movements are so slow that the inertia of the fluid is unimportant. Observations with pairs of levels, set at right angles to each other, have been carried on systematically for some years by M. P. Plantamour.' This is the simplest method of measuring earth-tiltings, but it is liable to errors which are not easily excluded. Another method of investigating changes in the direction of the vertical was initiated in 1868 by M, A. d'Abbadie,3 who had before that observed the movements of level-bubbles. Light from a fixed source is made to fall on a reflect- ing basin of mercury about 10 metres below it. Above the basin is a large lens of long focus, which brings the rays into parallelism dur- ing their passage to the mercury, and causes them to converge after reflexion, so that an image of the source is formed at a convenient distance from it, and in the same horizontal plane. The interval between the source and the image is measured (in amount and azimuth) at least twice a day by a micrometer microscope. The accuracy of the method depends on the fixity of the source of light relatively to the lens and to the surface of the ground, and to secure this M. d'Abbadie*~~

~~*built a massive hollow cone of concrete for the support of his apparatus. HIs observations have shown that the earth's surface undergoes almost incessant slow tilting through angles which, in the course of a year, have been found to range over four seconds. HIe has also noticed the occurrence of earth-tremors by the occasional blurring of the image through agitation of the mercury. An improvement on his apparatus suggested by M. Wolf# is shown in fig, 11. The a instead of being all reflected from the free surface of mercury (a), is partly reflected from that and partly from a plane mirror (6) fixed to the rock. Two images are therefore formed, whose rela- tive position measures the tilting of the surface. The advantage of this is that the position of the source of light need no longer be fixed, and the accuracy of the method depends only on the fixity of the mirror } with respect to the rock. Further, to avoid having the source and image at a great height above the surface, i. {iy M. Wolf allows the light to reach an nS ee a leave the apparatus horizontally, in the Fig. 11. manner indicated in the sketch, by using a plane mirror inclined at 45° to the horizon. Still another mode of a yostiga ne slow changes of the vertical was followed (at the suggestion of Sir William Thomson) by Messrs G. H. and H. Darwin, in observations made by them with the view of measuring the lunar disturbance of gravity. The Reports of the British Association for 1881 and 1882 contain a full account of their apparatus, as well as notices of the work of other observers and a discussion of the cause of earth-tiltings. Their in- strument was a short pendulum hung in a viscous fluid, from a fixed support, by two wires arranged V-wise to leave the pendulum only one degree of freedom. Below the bob was a small mirror hung by two threads, one of which was attached to the pendulum bob and the other to a fixed support. The pendulum was free to swing at right angles to the plane of the threads, and any movement of this kind caused the mirror to rotate through an angle which was measured in the usual way by a telescope and scale. The method is susceptible of very great delicacy, but Messrs Darwin found that when the instrument was adjusted to be specially sensitive its manipulation becaine extremely difficult. Wolfs modification of D'Abbadie's method appears to furnish, on the whole, the most promising apparatus for measurements of this type. The ap- paratus represented in fig. 10 is also applicable. 'I'he method of measurement employed in the case of slow tiltings may be called the equilibrium*~~

~~*method in contradistinction to the inertia method, which is used to measure comparatively sudden displacements. The ne ee*~~

~~*2 Plantamour, Comptes Rendus, 24th June 1878, 1st December 1879, &c.; and numerous papers in Archives des Sciences, Geneva, 1878-84.*~~

~~*3 D'Abbadie, Etudes sur la Verticale (Association Francaise pour l'Avance- ment des Sciences), 1872, p. 159; also Ann. de la Soc. Scient. de Bruxelles, 1881.*~~

~~*4 Comptes Rendus, xevii. p. 228.*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*secured when v=", h being the horizontal distance from the ful-*~~

~~*crum to the point at which the spring acts, and / the length by which the spring is stretched when the bar is undeflected. Stability is given by making v somewhat less than this. A vertical-motion seismograph, constructed on the principle which fig. 8 illustrates diagrammatically, is arranged to trace its record on a revolving glass plate. This, along with a pair of horizontal pendulums recording on the same plate, completes a three-component pana*~~

~~*Au interesting mode of suspension, by which a mass is hung in neutral or nearly neutral equilibrium, with one degree of horizontal freedom, is shown in fig. 9. It is based on the approximate straight /- line linkwork of T'chebicheff. When a bar is hung from fixed supports by crossed ties, at a distance below the supports equal to the distance between the supports, the length of the bar being equal to half that distance, its middle point moves in very nearly a straight line. By fix- ing a weight at the centre of the bar and adding a suitable recording apparatus, we have a very friction- less form of one-component hori- pie 9 Astati ; zontal seismometer When a dis. "** %* "8 sanacll-a: Seema placement of the ground occurs in the line of the bar, the bar is tilted through an angle which is proportional to the linear displace- ment, and the centre of the bar consequently shares, in a small and definite proportion, the motion of*~~

~~*the ground,—a fact which is to be borne in mind in estimating the degree of multiplication given by the recording apparatus,*~~

~~*The instruments which have been described afford complete and satisfactory means of determining the motion which a point of the ground undergoes during any disturbance which would be recog- nized as an earthquake. For minute earth-tremors, however, a larger multiplication is necessary, and the absence of friction is of even more importance than in the measurement of earthquakes proper. Optical methods of magnifying the motion are accordingly resorted to. In the "normal tromometer" of Bertelli, used in Italy to detect earth-tremors, the bob of a pendulum, suspended by a fine wire from a fixed support, is viewed through a reflecting prism and its motion in any azimuth measured by a micrometer microscope. The great stability of the pendulum, which is only 14 metres long, prevents it from behaving as a steady-point seismometer ; and, 1 successive earth-movements were by chance to occur with a period equal or nearly equal to its own free period, its acquired swing would altogether mask the legitimate dications. This kind of action has, in fact, been turned to account as a means of detecting very minute earth-tremors by Rossi, who has devised a micro-seismoscope, consist- ing of a number of pendu- lums of various lengths, one or other of which is likely to be set swinging when the ground shakes to and fro re- peatedly, through even the minutest range. 'To measure tremors, however, the instru- ments of Bertelli and Rossi are inappropriate; for that purpose, just as for the pur- pose of measuring larger motions, the suspended mass must be in nearly neutral am To find a mode of suspension which is at once ¢ astatic and extremely fric- tionless is a matter of some difficulty ; the crossed link suspension, which has been already described, is probably the most satisfactory means ° hitherto suggested. It has been adopted in the micro seismometer sketched in sec- tion in fig. 10. Two bobs are separately suspended, in the manner shown by fig. 9, at right angles to each other, one above the other, in a cast-iron case. A microscope, fixed to the top of the case and furnished with a micrometer eye-piece, is focused on a hair, which*~~

~~*1 Ewing, 'On certain Methods of Astatic Suspension," in Trans, Seis. Soc. Jap., vol. vi. p. 25.*~~

~~Fic. 10.—Microseismometer.~~

~~two methods arc applicable to two widely different classes of move- ments. It is at least possible that between these classes there may be other modes of motion,—displacements which are too slow for the inertia method, and which give rise to too little change of slope for the equilibrium method. How to measure them is, and must appar- ently remain, an unsolved problem in seismometry.~~

~~References.—The Report of the British Association for 1858 contains an account by Mallet of some of the older and now obsolete forms of seismometers (see also Harruquaxke), For accounts of modern instruments of the inertia class, see the Transactions of the Seismological Society of Japan froin 1880, also Prot. Ewing's Memotr on Earthquake Measurement, published by the university of Tokio (1883). References to papers on the equilibrium inethod of measure- inent have been made in the text. (J. A. E.)~~

~~SEISTAN. See Srsran.~~

~~SEJANUS, /Eurus (executed 31 a.p.), the famous ininister of Trpertus (q.0.).~~

~~SELBY, a market town of the West Riding of York- shire, England, is situated on the navigable river Ouse and on the main line of the Great Northern Railway, 15 miles south of York and 20 east of Leeds. Of the ancient abbey for Benedictines, founded by William the Conqueror in 1069 and raised to the dignity of a mitred abbey by Pope Alexander II., there still remains the church of St Mary and St German, although it has been much changed by alterations and additions, the more ancient and notable features being the nave, transept, and west front, The church was made parochial in 1618. In the market-place there isa modern Gothic market cross. Among the public buildings are the drill hall and the mechanics' institute and public rooms. Flax-scutching, seed-crushing,~~

~~*brick and tile making, boat-building, tanning, and brewing are the principal industries. There isa large trade in potatoes, flax, and mustard, and a considerable cattle-market. The town receives its water-supply from artesian wells. A local board of health was established in 1851, consisting of nine members. The population of the urban sanitary district (6193 in 1871), extended in 1881 from 514 to 3760 acres, was in that year 6057,*~~

~~*Henry I. of England was born in the abbey, a fact which prob- ably accounts for the special privileges conferred on it. In the*~~

~~*early part of the Civil War it was held by the Parliament, and after being taken by the Royalists was recaptured by Fairfax.*~~

~~*SELDEN, Joun (1584-1654), jurist, legal antiquary, and Oriental scholar, was born on 16th December 1584 at Salvington, in the parish of West Tarring, near Worthing, Sussex. His father, also named John Selden, held a small farm, and seems to have occasionally added to his liveli- hood by his labour as a wheelwright and his skill as a musician. It is said that his accomplishments as a violin- player gained him his wife, whose social position was somewhat superior to his own, She was Margaret, the only child of Thomas Baker of Rustington, a village in the vicinity of West Tarring, and was more or less re- motely descended from a knightly family of the same name in Kent. John Selden commenced his education at the free grammar-school at Chichester, whence he pro- ceeded in his sixteenth year with an exhibition to Hart Hall at Oxford. In 1603 he was admitted a member of Clifford's Inn, London, and in 1604 migrated to the Inner Teniple, and in due course he was called to the bar. While still a student he appears to have been on terms of friendship with Ben Jonson, Drayton, and Camden ; and among his more intimate companions were Edward Little- ton, afterwards lord keeper ; Henry Rolle, afterwards lord chief-justice ; Edward Herbert, afterwards golicitor- general ; and Thomas Gardener, afterwards recorder of London. His earliest patron was Sir Robert Cotton, the antiquary, by whom he seems to have been employed in copying and abridging certain of the parliamentary records then preserved in the Tower. For some reason which has not been explained, Selden never went into court as an advocate, save on rare and*~~

~~exceptional occasions. But his practice in chambers as a conveyancer and consulting counsel is stated to have been large, and, if we may judge~~

~~from the considerable fortune he accumulated, it must also have been lucrative.~~

~~It was, however, as a scholar and writer that Selden won his reputation both amongst his contemporaries and With posterity. HIs first work, an account of the civil adminis. tration of England before the Norman Conquest, is said to have been completed when he was only two- or three- and. twenty years of age. But if this was the Analecton Anglo-Britannicon, as is generally supposed, he withheld it from the world until 1615. In 1610 appeared his England's Epinomis and Janus Anglorum, Facies Altera, which dealt with the progress of English law down to Henry II., and The Duello, or Single Combat, in which he traced the history of trial by battle in England from the Norman Con- quest. In 1613 he supplied a series of notes, enriched b an immense number of quotations and references, to the first eighteen cantos of Drayton's Polyolbion. In 1614 he published Titles of Honour, which, in spite of some obvious defects and omissions, has remained to the present day the most comprehensive and trustworthy work of its kind that we possess; and in 1616 his notes on Fortescue's De Laudibus Legum Angliz and Hengham's Summez Magna et Parva, In 1617 his De Diis Syriis was issued from the press, and immediately established his fame as an Oriental scholar among the learned in all parts of Europe. After two centuries and a half, indeed, it is still not only the fundamental but also in many respects the best book which has been written on Semitic mythology. In 1618 his Listory of Tithes, although only published after it had been submitted to the censorship and duly licensed, never- theless aroused the apprehension of the bishops and pro- voked the intervention of the king. The author was sum- moned before the privy council and compelled to retract his opinions, or at any rate what were held to be his opin- ions. Moreover, his work was suppressed and himself forbidden to reply to any of the controversialists who had come or might come forward to answer it.~~

~~*This seems to have introduced Selden to the practical side of political affairs. The discontents which a few years later broke out into civil war were already forcing them- selves on public attention, and it is pretty certain that, although he was not in parliament, he was the instigator and perhaps the draftsman of the memorable protestation on the rights and privileges of the House affirmed by the Commons on the 18th of December 1621. He was with several of the members committed to prison, at first in the Tower and subsequently under the charge of Sir Robert Ducie, sheriff of London. During his detention, which only lasted a short time, he occupied himself in preparing an edition of Eadmer's History from a manuscript lent to him by his host or jailor, which he published two years afterwards. In 1623 he was returned to the House of Commons for the borough of Lancaster, and sat with Coke, Noy, and Pym on Sergeant Glanville's election committee. He was also nominated reader of Lyon's Inn, an office which he declined to undertake. For this the benchers of the Inner Temple, by whom he had been appointed, fined him £20 and disqualified him from being chosen one of their nuniber. But he was relieved from this in- capacity after a few years, and became a master of the bench. In the first parliament of Charles I. (1625), it appears from the "returns of members" printed in 1878 that, contrary to the assertion of all his biographers, he had no seat. In Charles's second parliament (1626) he was elected for Great Bedwin in Wiltshire, and took a prominent part in the impeachment of George Villiers, duke of Buckingham. In the following year, in the "benevolence" case, he was counsel for Sir Edmund Hampden in the Court of King's Bench. In 1628 he was returned to the third parliament of Charles for Ludgers-*~~

~~*hall in Wiltshire, and had a large and important share in drawing up and carrying the Petition of Right. In the session of 1629 he was one of the members mainly respon- sible for the tumultuous passage in the House of Commons of the resolution against the illegal levy of tonnage and*~~

~~*poundage, and, along with Eliot, Holles, Long, Valentine, Strode, and the rest, he was sent once more to the Tower. There he remained for eight*~~

~~*months, deprived for a part of the time of the use of books and writing materials.*~~

~~*He was then removed, under less rigorous conditions, to*~~

~~*the Marshalsea, until not long afterwards owing to the good offices of Archbishop Laud he was liberated. Some years before he had been appointed steward to the earl of Kent, to whose seat, Wrest in Bedfordshire, he now retired. In 1628 at the suggestion of Sir Robert Cotton he had compiled, with the assistance of two learned coadjutors, Patrick Young and Richard James, a catalogue of the Arundel marbles. He employed his leisure at Wrest in writing De Successionibus in Bona Defunct secundum Leges Ebreorum and De Successione in Pontificatum Hbreorum, published in 1631. About this period he seems to have inclined towards the court rather than the popular party, and even to have secured the personal favour of the king. To him in 1635 he dedicated his Mare Clausum, and under the royal patronage it was put forth as a kind of state paper. It had been written sixteen or seventeen years before; but James I. had prohibited its publication for political reasons ; hence it appeared a quarter of a century after Grotius's Mare Lnberum, to which it was intended to be a rejoinder, and the pretensions advanced in which on behalf of the Dutch fishermen to poach in the waters off the British coasts it was its purpose to explode. The fact that Selden was not retained in the great case of ship money in 1637 by John Hampden, the cousin of his former client, may be accepted as additional evidence that his zeal in the popular cause was not so warm and unsuspected as it had once been. During the progress of this moment- ous constitutional conflict, indeed, he seems to have been absorbed in his Oriental researches, publishing De Jure Naturali et Gentium juxta. Diseiplinam Hbreorum in 1640. He was not elected to the Short Parliament of 1640; but to the Long Parliament, summoned in the autumn, he was returned without opposition for the uni- versity of Oxford. Immediately after the opening of the session he was nominated a member of the committee of twenty-four appointed to draw up a remonstrance on the state of the nation. He was also a member of the com- mittees entrusted with the preliminary arrangements for the impeachment of Strafford. But he was not one of the managers at the trial, and he voted against the Bill for his attainder. He was, moreover, a*~~

member of the com- mittees nominated to search for precedents and frame the articles of impeachment against Archbishop Laud, although it does not appear that he was implicated in the later stages of the prosecution against him. He opposed the resolution against Episcopacy which led to the exclusion of the bishops from the House of Lords, and printed an answer to the arguments used by Sir Harbottle Grimston on that occasion. He joined in the protestation of the Commons for the maintenance of the Protestant religion according to the doctrines of the Church of England, the authority of the crown, and the liberty of the subject. He was equally opposed to the court on the question of the commissions of lieutenancy of array and to the parlia- ment on the question of the militia ordinance. In 1643, however, he became a member and participated in the dis- cussions of the assembly of divines at Westminster, and was appointed shortly afterwards keeper of the rolls and records in the Tower. In 1645 he was named one of the parliamentary commissioners of the admiralty, and was

elected master of Trinity Hall in Cambridge,—an office he declined to accept. In 1646 he subscribed the Solemn League and Covenant, and in 1647 was voted £5000 by the parliament as compensation for his sufferings in the evil days of the monarchy. He had not, however, relaxed his literary exertions during these years. He published in 1642 Privileges of the Baronage of England when they sit in Parliament and Discourse concerning the Rights and Privileges of the Subject; in 1644 Dissertatio de Anno Civili et Calendario Reipublicw Judaice; in 1646 his treatise on marriage and divorce among the Jews entitled Uxor Ebraica ; and in 1647 the earliest printed edition of the old and curious English law-book /leta. What course he adopted with regard to the trial and execution of the king is unknown; but it is said that he refused to answer the Aikon Basiltke, although Cromwell was anxious he should do so, the task which he declined being after- wards performed by Milton in his Zconoclastes. In 1650 Selden passed the first part of De Synedriis et Prefecturis Juridicis Veterum Ebreorum through the press, the second and third parts being severally published in 1653 and 1655, and in 1652 he wrote a preface and collated some of the manuscripts for Sir Roger Twysden's

~~*Historiz Anglice Scriptores Decem. His last publication was a vindication of himself from certain charges advanced against him and his Mare Clawswm in 1653 by Theodore Graswinckel, a Dutch jurist.*~~

~~*After the death of the earl of Kent in 1639 Selden lived permanently under the same roof with his widow. It is believed that he was married to her, although their marriage does not seem to have ever been publicly acknow- ledged. He died at Friary House in Whitefriars on 30th November 1654, and was buried in the Temple Church, London. Within the last few years a brass tablet has been erected to his memory by the benchers of the Inner Temple in the parish church of West Tarring.*~~

~~*Several of Selden's minor productions were printed for the first time after his death, and a collective edition of his writings was published by Archdeacon Wilkins in 3 vols. folio in 1725, and again*~~

~~*in 1726. His Table Talk, by which he is perhaps best known, did not appear until 1689. It was edited by his amanuensis, Richard*~~

~~*Lee Ie*~~

~~*Milward, who affirms that " the sense and notion is wholly Selden's, and that "most of the words" are his also. Its genuineness has sometimes been questioned, although on insufficient grounds. In Hallam's opinion it "gives perhaps a more exalted notion of Sel- den's natural talents than any of his learned writings," and in Coleridge's it contains " more weighty bullion sense" than he had "ever found in the same number of pages of any uninspired writer." See Bliss, Wood's Athens Oxonienses (London, 1817, vol. iv.); Aikin, Lives of John Selden and Archbishop Usher (London, 1812); Johnson, Memoirs of John Selden, &c. (London, 1835); Singer, Fable Talk of John Selden (London, 1847) ; and Wilkins, Johannis Seldent Opera Omnia, &e. (London, 1725). (F. DR.)*~~

~~*SELECTION anp VARIATION. See VARIATION AND SELECTION.*~~

~~*SELENIUM anp TELLURIUM! are two rather rare chemical elements discovered, the latter by Muller von Reichenstein in 1782, the former by Berzelius in 1817. Both occur only in the mineral kingdom as*~~

~~*components of very rare minerals, most of which are compounds of one or the other or of both and sulphur with silver, lead, bismuth, antimony, gold, and other metals.*~~

~~*Elementary Selenium.—This, like elementary sulphur, exists in a variety of forms, which are conveniently con- sidered as modifications of the two genera now to be described. (1) Won-metallic selenium includes the flocculent scarlet precipitate produced by the reduction of solution of selenium by sulphurous acid in the cold. The scarlet flocks when dried without the aid of heat assume the form of a brown-red powder of sp. gr. 4°26, which dissolves in 1000 times its weight of boiling bisulphide of carbon (at 46°°6 C.). The solution on cooling deposits most of its selenium in the form of minute monoclinic crystals of sp.*~~

~~*1 Comp. CHEMISTRY, vol. v. pp. 498, 499, 501-503, 506, 508.*~~

~~*gr. 4°5 (isomorphous with monoclinic sulphur), which retain their solubility in bisulphide of carbon up to 100°C. At 110° C. or higher temperatures they pass into the metallic modification (see below) with evolution of heat. With the amorphous kind a similar change sets in at or above 80° C. and attains its maximum of rapidity at a point be- tween 125° and 180°C. Fused selenium when cooled down suddenly hardens into a very dark-coloured glass of 4:28 sp. gr., soluble in bisulphide of carbon; on gradual cool- ing it becomes more or less completely "metallic." (2) Metallic selenium is a dark grey or black solid of 4°8 sp. gr. ; it exhibits metallic lustre, stretches perceptibly under the hammer, and its fracture is similar to that of grey cast iron. It is insoluble in bisulphide of carbon. Its fusing point is sharply defined and lies at 217° C. At the ordi- nary temperature it conducts electricity, while the non-metallic modification does not ; at higher temperatures, or after temporary exposure to higher temperatures, the con- ductivity on either side becomes an eminently variable quantity. According to Draper and Moss, glassy selenium begins to conduct electricity at 165° to 175° C., and the conductivity increases regularly as the temperature rises to near the boiling-point. With metallic selenium, which behaves similarly, the increase of conductivity is propor- tional to the increase of temperature to*~~

~~near the fusing point (217° C.); but from this point upwards it decreases rapidly and attains its minimum at 250°C. According to W. Siemens, however, selenium by long exposure to 200° C. becomes what one may call electrically metallic ; the conductivity then decreases when the temperature rises, just as it does with ordinary metals. But this electro-metallicity is not permanent ; on continued exposure to a lower temperature it vanishes gradually, until the propor- tion of quasi-metal has fallen to a limit-value depending on that temperature. Very surprising is the observation of Sale that the electric conductivity of metallic selenium increases on exposure to the light; the red and ultra-red rays, as he found, act most powerfully. The effect of insolation is almost instantaneous, but on re-exposure to darkness the original condition is re-established only very gradually. W. Siemens found that his electro-metallic selenium (as produced at 200° C.) is more sensitive to light than any other kind. The conductivity of such selenium starting from darkness is raised twofold by dif- fuse and tenfold by direct sunlight. The specific heat of selenium, according to Regnault, is 0°0746 both in the glassy and in the metallic modification. Selenium (of any kind) boils at 700° C. (Mitscherlich). The vapour has an intense colour intermediate between that of chlorine and that of sulphur. According to Deville and Troost, at 880° C. it is 7°67 times, and at 1420° is 5-68 times, as heavy as air; theory, for Se,=1 molecule, demands 5°47.~~

~~Lilementary Tellurium.—tThis, the compact form, is a silver-white resplendent metal of markedly crystalline structure ; the crystals are rhombohedra, and the ingot consequently is very brittle. Specific gravity 6-2. The metal fuses at about 500° C., and is distillable at very high temperatures. Its vapour is golden yellow and has a very brilliant absorption-spectrum. The vapour density, accord- ing to Deville and Troost, is 9°08 at 1439° C. (air=1), corresponding to Te,=1 molecule. A bar of tellurium be- comes feebly electrical when rubbed with a woollen cloth. 'The electric conductivity, like that of selenium, is largely influenced by the temperature and previous exposure to heat, and it increases after exposure to light, though not to the same extent as selenium does. Starting from the ordinary temperature the conductivity decreases up to some point between 90° and 145° C.; it then increases up~~

~~*to 200° C. (the highest temperature tried) ; on cooling it de- creases steadily, and finally is only one-fifth or one-sixth of*~~

~~*SEL—SEL*~~

~~*what it was at 200°. The numerical value at 200° (silver = 100) was found equal to 0:0035 to 0:0031 (F. Exner),*~~

~~*Extraction of the Elementary Substanees.—If seleniferous sulphur or pyrites is used for the manufacture of oil of vitriol by the chamber process, most of the selenium accumulates as such in the "chamber mud," from which it may be extracted by the following method of Wohler's. The mud, after having been thoroughly washed and dried, is fused with alkaline nitrate and carbonate, to convert the selenium into selenate (SeO,K, or Na,), which is ex. tracted by means of water. The filtered solution is boiled with hydrochlovic acid to convert the selenic into selenium acid (Se0, + 2HICI=Cl,+H,0+Se0,), and this last is then reduced by addi tion of sulphurous acid and heating, when the selenium comes down asa red precipitate (SeO, + 2S0,=2S0,+Se). A richer material than chamber mud is seleniferous ore-smoke as produced in Mansfeld, which likewise contains frec selenium. Its extraction, according to O. Pettersen and F, Nilson, is best effected by digestion with con- centrated solution of cyanide of potassium at 80°C., which converts the selenium into selenocyanide (SeNCK), easily extractable by water, The filtered solution is acidified with hydrochloric acid and allowed to stand, when the selenium (through the spontaneous decom posi- tion of the SeNC. H into NCH and Se) comes down as a precipitate,*~~

~~*Tellurium is generally prepared from Transylvanian gold ore. The powdered ore is oxidized by means of hot nitric acid and the least sufficiency of hydrochloric acid, the excess of nitric acid being chased away by evaporation, and the residue mixed with sulphuric acid (to convert the lead into insoluble sulphate), and with some tartaric acid to prevent precipitation of tellurious acid (TeO,) in the subsequent treatment with water. From the filtered aqueous solution the gold is removed by addition of ferrous sulphate and by filtration. The filtrate is treated with sulphurous acid to reduce the tellurious acid to tellurium, which separates out as a black precipitate. The precipitated metal is fused down*~~

~~*and then sublimed at a very high temperature, in a porcelain tube, in a current of hydrogen, to remove non-volatile impurities and eliminate the last trace of selenium (SeH,).*~~

~~*Chemical Relations.—Selenium and tellurium are similar in their chemical character to sulphur; the gradation of properties within the triad is in the order of the atomic weights, which are S= 32:06, Se=79°07, Te=128(O=16). In oxygen or air the elementary sub- stances burn readily into (solid) dioxides (SeO,, TcO,), in the case of selenium with production of a characteristic stench of putrid radish, owing probably to the formation of a tracc of hydride, SeH,. Nitric acid, in the heat, converts sulphur directly into sulphuric acid. In the case of the two rare elements the oxidation stops at the stage corresponding to sulphurous acid. The acids ScO,H, and TeO 3H, are not liable to further oxidation by any of the wet-way reagents (HNO;, H,O and Cl,, Br, I,, &¢.) which convert sulphur- ous into sulphuric acid.*~~

~~*By fusion with nitre and alkaline carbonate the three elements, in their elementary or less oxygenated forms, are readily converted into salts, R,2O, (sulphates, &c., Z=S, Se, or Te). Selenic and telluric acids (H,2O,), unlike sulphuric, when boiled with aqueous hydrochloric acid, are gradually reduced to the lower acids (Se or Te)O3H.2, with evolution of chlorine ; and the lower acids are readily reduced to (precipitates of) elementary selenium and tellurium re- spectively by the action of sulphurous acid in the heat. Chlorine combines readily with elementary scleninm and tellurium into dichlorides (Se or Te)Cl,, which, however, on continued chlorina- tion are at last completely converted into the tetrachlorides (Se or Te)Cl, | These last, unlike the corresponding sulphur compound, are distillable without decomposition. Metals capable of uniting directly with sulphur as a rule unite also with selenium and tellurium into corresponding compounds. HHydrogen unites with elementary selenium and tellurium in the heat into gaseous hydrides (Se or Te)H, closely similar to sulphuretted hydrogen. "But, as these hydrides are liable to dissociation, the pure compounds must be preparcd by the decomposition of the zinc compounds Zn= with hydrochloric acid. For the description of individual compounds reference must be made to the handbooks of chemistry. (W. D.)*~~

~~*SELEUCIA, or Sereuceta (ZeAevReva), Of the numer- ous ancient towns of this name the most famous are—(1) the great city on the Tigris founded by Seleucus I. Nicator (see vol. xviii. p. 587), of the greatness and decay of which an account has been given in vol. xviii. p. 601; (2) a city on the northern frontier of Syria towards Cilicia, some miles north of the mouth of the Orontes, also founded by Seleucus I., and forming with Antioch, Apamea, and Laodicea the Syrian Tetrapolis. It served as the port of Antioch (Acts xiii. 4). Considerable ruins are still visible, especially a great cutting through solid rock, about two- thirds of a mile long, which Polybius speaks of as the road from the city to the sea. ; .*~~

~~*SEHEL—SEL*~~

~~*SELEUCIDS. See Macrepontan Empire, vol. xv. p. 142, and Prrsta, vol. xviii. p. 585 sq.*~~

~~*SELIM or Sai, the title borne by three emperors of the Ottoman Turks. For Serr IL, emperor from 1512 to 1520, see Persia, vol. xviil. pp. 635-636, and TurKEy. Setrm IL. grandson of the preceding, was sultan from 1566 to 1574. See Turkey. Servim III, son of Sultan Mus- tapha III., succeeded his father in 1789 and was deposed in 1807. See Turkey.*~~

~~*SELIMNIA. See Sriven,*~~

~~*SELINUS (ZeAcvots), one of the most important of the Greek colonies in Sicily, near the rivers Hypsas and Selinus on the south-west coast, was founded, probably about 628 B.C., by colonists from Megara Hyblea in the east of Sicily and others from the parent city of Megara on the Saronic Gulf of Greece (see Thuc., vi. 4, vii. 57, and Strabo, vi. p. 272). The name of the city and the little river (see H in fig.) on which it stands was derived from the wild parsley (céAwvov) which grew there in abundance (comp. vol. xvii. p- 639). Many autonomous coins of Selinus exist, dating from the 5th and 4th centuries B.c. The tetradrachms have on the obverse a youth, representing the river Selinus, sacrificing at an altar,' and, in the field, a parsley leaf,—legend, SEAINOZ; on the reverse, Apollo and Artemis in a biga,—legend, ZEAINONTION (retrograde). Didrachms have a similar obverse with the river Hypsas,—legend; HYWVAzZ; reverse, Heracles slaying a bull,—legend,*~~

~~ZEAINONTION. As early as 580 B.c. the citizens of Selinus were at war with the adjoining people of Segesta,~~

~~_ a non-Hellenic race who occupied the province north of~~

~~Selinus ; the success of the Segestans on this occasion was mainly owing to aid given them by colonists from Rhodes and Cnidus. Little is known about the early history of Selinus ; but the city evidently grew rapidly in wealth and importance, and soon extended its borders 15 miles west-wards to the river Mazarus and eastwards as far as the Halycus (Diod., xiii. 54; Herod., v. 46). Thucydides (vi.~~

~~_ 20) mentions its power and wealth and especially the rich _ treasures in its temples. From its early oligarchical form of~~

~~government Selinus passed to a short-lived despotism under the tyrant Pithagoras, who was deposed soon after 510 B.c. In 480 B.c., when the Carthaginian Hamilcar invaded Sicily, the city took his side against their fellow Hellenes. In 416~~

~~| B.C. a new dispute between Selinus and Segesta was eventu-~~

~~ally the cause of the fatal Athenian expedition against Sicily, the Athenians acting as allies of Segesta and the Syracusans as allies of Selinus. The conclusion of this expedition (see Syracuse) left Segesta at the mercy of the Selinuntines, whose rapacity and cruelty soon brought about their own destruction, through the aid which the Segestans obtained from Carthage. In 409 B.c. Hannibal, with an overwhelm- ing force, took and destroyed the city, the walls of which were razed to the ground. He killed about 16,000 of the inhabitants, took 5000 prisoners, and only a remnant of 2600 escaped to Agrigentum (Diod., xiii. 54-59). The sur- vivors were afterwards allowed to return and to rebuild~~

~~) Selinus as a city subject to the Carthaginians, under whose~~

~~yoke, in spite of their attempts to regain freedom, the~~

~~*| Selinuntines remained till c. 250, the close of the First | Punic War; after this the Carthaginians transferred the*~~

~~*inhabitants of Selinus:to Lilybeum, and completely de- stroyed the city (Diod. xxiv.). It was never rebuilt, and is mentioned by Strabo (vi. p. 272) as being one of the extinct cities of Sicily.?*~~

~~*1 Sculptured on the altar is a cock, in allusion to the aid given by isculapius against the fever which was caused by the marshy site.*~~

~~*| Drainage works directed by Empedocles are said to have rendered the*~~

~~*site healthy (Diog. Laer., viii. 2, 11). 2 Roman sulphur baths existed under the name Therme Selinuntise, but these were about 20 miles east of the site of the ancient Selinus.*~~

~~*633*~~

~~*The ancient city occupied two elevated plateaus at the edge of the sea and also part of the surrounding plain. The western of these elevations formed the acropolis; on the other was the agora. The walls of the acropolis can still be traced round the whole cir- cuit ; the only entrance was on the north-east. Remains also exist of long walls connecting the city and its port. The chief glory of Selinus was its double group of great temples,— three on the acropolis and three in the agora, one of which was the largest peripteral temple in the world. All are completely ruined, but the materials of each still remain almost perfect, though scattered in confused heaps of stone ; the extraordinary completeness of these fragments is owing to the fact that the site has never been occupied since the final transference of the inhabitants in 250 B.c., and thus the scattered blocks have never been taken as materials for later structures. Of all the six temples? none are later than the 5th century B.c., and those on the acropolis probably date from about 628 B.C., soon after the first settlement. The sculptured metopes from three of the temples are among the most important examples of early Hellenic art (see ARCHIMOLOGY, Vol. ii. p. 349, and Benun- dorf, Die Metopen von Selinunt). 'The buildings themselves are of the highest interest, being the earliest known examples of the Doric style, and differing in many important details from*~~

~~all other examples, even such early ones as the temples at Corinth and Syracuse.~~

~~The three temples on the acropolis (A, C, D in fig.) stand side by side, with their axes north-west to south-east ; all are hexastyle and peripteral, with either thirteen or fourteen columns on the sides. Their stylobates have four high steps along the sides, with an easier approach of more steps at the north- west fronts. To the 4 middle one of the three LS belong the very archaic 24 FAW metopes described in vol.~~

~~ii. p. 349. All have a rather narrow cella with pronaos and opisthodo- mus. Their archaic pecu- liarities are the rapid di- minution of the columns, the absence of entasis, the. narrow mutules over the |= metopes, and especially a |"~~

~~curious cavetto or neck- ing under the usual hypo- trachelia. No other ex- Selinus.~~

~~ample of this feature was A, 0, D, Temples on acropolis, B, Small pro-~~

~~known till 1884, when pa bat he ate E, a % poeiee on : , eastern hill, a,a, Remains of buildings out-~~

~~Dinghld disieees Pe side acropolis walls. H, River Selinus.~~

~~similar Doric capital among the ruins of the citadel of Tiryns. The Tiryns capital dates probably from a little before 600 B.c. and appears to be nearly contemporary with that at Selinus. Between temples A and C are remains of a small prostyle tetrastyle edicula (B) of the Doric order.* The second group of three Doric temples (E, F, G) belongs to a rather later date,—probably 500 to 440 B.c. The first two (H and F) have very narrow celle, so that they are pseudo- dipteral. They also are hexastyle, with fourteen columns on the sides, Though still early in detail, they are without the curious necking of the acropolis temples. The sculptured metopes of temple E are of extraordinary beauty and interest, and appear to date from the finest period of Greek art—the age of Phidias or perhaps that of Myron. The chief subjects are Zeus and Hera on Mount Olympus, Artemis and Acteon, and Heracles defeating an Amazon. They are of the~~

~~*noblest style, simple and highly sculp- turesque in treatment, and full of grace and expression. One remarkable peculiarity in their technique is that the nude parts of the female figures (heads, feet, and hands) are executed in white marble, while the rest of the reliefs are in the native grey tufa, which originally was covered with marble-dust stucco and then painted. The whole of the stonework of all the temples was treated in a similar way, and gives most valuable examples of early Greek coloured decoration. Recent excavations at Selinus have shown that in many cases the cornices and other architectural features. were covered with moulded slabs of terra cotta, all richly coloured*~~

~~*3*~~

~~*Uy,*~~

~~*” \y uw mm CO terdhey,*~~

~~*sft*~~

~~*o*~~

~~*2 3*~~

~~*2 2*~~

~~*3 The stone of which all these temples were built came from a quarry afew miles north-west of Selinus (mod. Campobello). The ancient workings are very visible, and unfinished drums of columns and other blocks still exist in the quarry. It is a brown tufa-like stone.*~~

~~*4 Strange to say, Hittorff and Zanth (Architecture Antique de Sicile, Paris, 1870), in their elaborate work on this subject, restore this edicula with a Doric entablature on Ionic columns ; a good many other similar absurdities occur in this richly illustrated work. More judgment is. shown in Serradifalco’s Antica Selinunto (Palermo, 1881-42), though it is not always accurate in measurements.*~~

~~*XXI. — 80*~~

(see Dorpfeld, Die Verwendung von Terracotten, Berlin, 1881, and TERRACOTTA). The great temple of Zeus! (G in fig.) was the largest peripteral temple of the whole Hellenic world, being almost exactly the same size as the enormous pseudo-peripteral Olym- pieum at the neighbouring Agrigentum. It was octastyle, pseudo- dipteral, with seventeen columms on the sides, and measures 360

by 162 feet; the columns are 10 feet 74 inches at the base and were.

48 feet 7 inches high. This gigantic building was never quite completed, though the whole of the main structure was built. Most of the columns still remain unfluted. In spite of the propor- tional narrowness of its cella, it had an internal range of columns, probably two orders high, like those within the cella at Pestum. The axes of these last three temples have exactly the same inclina- tion as those on the acropolis, The great temple of Zeus possesses some of the curious archaisms of the acropolis temples, and, though never completed, it was probably designed and begun at an earlier date than the two adjacent buildings. These peculiarities are the ungracefully rapid diminution of the shaft and the cavetto under the necking of the capitals. The whole of these six massive build- ings now hie in a complete state of ruin, a work of evidently wilful destruction on the part of the Carthaginians, as the temple at Segesta, not many miles distant, has still every column and its whole entablature quite perfect ; so it is impossible to suppose that an earthquake was the cause of the utter ruin at Selinus. Few or no marks of fire are visible on the stone blocks. (J. H. M.)

SELJUKS is the name of several Turkish dynasties, issued from one family, which reigned over large parts of Asia in the 11th, 12th, and 13th centuries of our era. The history of the Seljuks forms the first part of the his- tory of the Turkish empire. Proceeding from the deserts of Turkestan, the Seljuks reached the Hellespont; but this barrier was crossed and a European power founded by the Ottomans (Osmanli). The Seljuks inherited the traditions and at the same time the power of the previous Arabian empire, of which, when they made their appearance, only the shadow remained in the person of the "Abbasid caliph of Baghdad. It is

~~their merit from a Mohammedan point of view to have re-established the power of orthodox Islam and delivered the Moslem world from the supremacy of the caliph's Shiite competitors, the Fatimites of Egypt, and from the subversive influence of ultra-Shfite tenets, which constituted a serious danger to the duration of Islam itself. Neither had civilization anything to fear from them, since they represented a strong neutral power, which made the intimate union of Persian and Arabian elements possible, almost at the expense of the national Turkish,— literary monuments in that language being during the whole period of the Seljuk rule exceedingly rare.~~

~~The first Seljuk rulers were Toghrul Beg, Chakir Beg, and Ibrahim Niydl, the sons of Mikail, the son of Seljuk, the son of Tukak (also styled Timuryalik, 'iron bow"). They belonged to the Turkish tribe of the Ghuzz (Odo. of Const. Porphyr. and the Byzantine writers), which traced its lineage to Oghuz, the famous eponymic hero not only of this but of all Turkish tribes. There arose, however, at some undefined epoch a strife on the part of this tribe and some others with the rest of the Turks, because, as the latter allege, Ghuzz, the son (or grandson) of Yafeth (Japhet), the son of Nuh (Noah), had stolen the genuine rain-stone, which Turk, also a son of Yafeth, had inherited from his father. By this party, as appears from this tradition, the Ghuzz were not considered to be genuine Turks, but to be Turkmans (that is, according to a popular etymology, resembling Turks). But the native tradition of the Ghuzz was unquestionably right, as they spoke a pure Turkish dialect. The fact, however, remains that there existed a certain animosity between the Ghuzz and their allies and the rest of the Turks, which increased as the former became converted to Islam (in the course of the 4th century of the Flight). The Ghuzz were settled at that time in Transoxiana, especially at Jand, a well-~~

~~i) The dedication of the five smaller temples is unknown ; some were probably consecrated to Poseidon, Apollo, and Artemis. The existing mnetope reliefs are preserved in the museum at Palermo.~~

~~known city on the banks of the Jaxartes, not far from its mouth. Some of them served in the armies of the Ghazna- vids Sebuktegin and Mahmud~~

(997-1030); but the Seljuks, a royal family among them, had various relations with the reigning princes of Transoxiana and Kharizm, which can- not be narrated here.? But, friends or foes, the Ghuzz became a serious danger to the adjoining Mohammedan provinces from their predatory habits and continual raids, and the more so as they were very numerous. It may suffice to mention that, under the leadership of Israil or Pigu Arslan, they crossed the Oxus and spread over the eastern provinces of Persia, everywhere plundering and de- stroying. The imprisonment of this chieftain by Mas'id, the son and successor of Mahmud, was of no avail : it only furnished his nephews with a ready pretext to cross the Oxus likewise in arms against the Ghaznavids. We pass over their first conflicts and the unsuccessful agreements that were attempted, to mention the decisive battle near Merv (1040), in which Mas'id was totally defeated and driven back to Ghazna (Ghazni). Persia now lay open to the victors, who proclaimed themselves independent at Merv (which became from that time the official capital of the principal branch of the Seljuks), and acknowledged Toghrul Beg as chief of the whole family. After this victory the three princes Toghrul Beg, Chakir Beg, and Tbrahim Niyal separated in different directions and con- quered the Mohammedan provinces east of the Tigris; the last-named, after conquering Hamadan and the province of Jebel, penetrated as early as 1048, with fresh Ghuzz troops, into Armenia and reached Melazkerd, Erzerim (Erzeroum), and Trebizond. This excited the jealousy of Toghrul Beg, who summoned him to give up Hamadan and the fortresses of Jebel ; but Ibrahim refused, and the progress of the Seljukian arms was for some time checked by internal discord,—an ever-recurring event in their history. Ibrahim was, however, compelled to submit.

At this time the power of the 'Abbasid caliph of Baghdad (Al-Kéim bi-amr illa4h) was reduced to a mere shadow, as the Shiite dynasty of the Buyids and after- wards his more formidable Fatimite rivals had left him almost wholly destitute of authority. The real ruler at Baghdad was a Turk named Basdsir{, lieutenant of the last Buyid, Al-Malik ar-Rahim. Nothing could, therefore, be more acceptable to the caliph than the protection of the orthodox Toghrul Beg, whose name was read in the official prayer (khotba) as early as 1050. At the end of the same year the Seljuk entered the city and after a tumult seized the person of Malik ar-Rahim. Basdsiri

~~had the good fortune to be out of his reach; after acknowledging the right of the Fatimites, he gathered fresh troops and in- cited Ibrahim Niydl to rebel again, and he succeeded so far that he re-entered Baghdad at the close of 1058. The next year, however, Toghrul Beg got rid of both his antagonists, Ibrahim being taken prisoner and strangled with the bowstring, while Basdsir{ fell in battle. Toghrul Beg now re-entered Baghdad, re-established the caliph, and was betrothed to his daughter, but died before the consummation of the nuptials (September 1063). Alp Arslan, the son of Chakir Beg, succeeded his uncle and extended the rule of his family beyond the former frontiers. He made himself master, e.g., of the important city of Aleppo; and during his reign a Turkish emir, Atsiz, wrested Palestine and Syria from the hands of the Fatim- ites. Nothing, however, added more to his fame than his successful expeditions against the Greeks, especially that of 1071, in which the Greek emperor Romanus Diogenes was taken prisoner and forced to ransom himself for a~~

~~2 Comp. Sachau, "Zur Geschichte und Chronologie von Khwérizm," in Sitzungsberichte of the Vienna Acad., Ixxiv. 304 sq.~~

~~Shia U KS~~

~~large sum. The foundation of the Seljuk empire of Rum (Asia Minor, see below) was the immediate result of this great victory. Alp Arslan afterwards undertook an ex- pedition against Turkestan, and met with his death at the hands of a captured chief, Jusof Barzami, whom he had intended to shoot with his own hand.~~

~~Malik Shah, the son and successor of Alp Arslan, had to encounter his uncle Kawurd, founder of the Seljukian em- pire of Kerman (see below), who claimed to succeed Alp Arslan in accordance with the Turkish laws, and led his troops towards Hamadan. However, he lost the battle that ensued, and the bowstring put an end to his life (1073). Malik Shah regulated also the affairs of Asia Minor and Syria, conceding the latter province as an hereditary fief to his brother Tutush, who established himself at Damascus and killed Atsiz. He, however, like his father Alp Arslén, was indebted for his greatest fame to the wise and salutary measures of their vizier, Nizam al-Mulk. This extraordinary man, associated by tradition with "OMAR Kuayydm (q.v.), the well-known~~

~~*mathematician and free- thinking poet, and with Hasan b. Sabbah, afterwards the founder of the Ismaelites or Assassins, was a renowned author and statesman of the first rank, and immortalized his name by the foundation of several universities (the Nizdimiyah at Baghdad), observatories, mosques, hospitals, and other institutions of public utility. At his instigation the calendar was revised and a new era, dating from the reign of Malik Shah and known as the Jelalian, was in- troduced. Not quite forty days before the death of his master this great man was murdered by the Ismaelites. He had fallen into disfavour shortly before because of his unwillingness to join in the intrigues of the princess Turkan Khatin, who wished to secure the succession to the throne for her infant son Mahmiud at the expense of the elder sons of Malik Shah.*~~

~~*Constitution and Government of the Seljuk Empire.—It has been already observed that the Seljuks considered themselves the de- fenders of the orthotlox faith and of the 'Abbasid caliphate, while they on their side represented the temporal power which received its titles and sanction from the successor of the Prophet. All the members of the Seljuk house had the same obligations in this respect, but they had not the same rights, as one of them occu- pied relatively to the others a place almost analogous to that of the great khan of the Mongols in later times. This position was inherited from father to son, though the old Turkish idea of the rights of the elder brother often caused rebellions and violent family disputes. After the death of Malik Shah the head of the family was not strong enough to enforce obedience, and consequently the central government broke up into several independent dynasties. Within the limits of these minor dynasties the same rules were ob- served, and the same may be said of the hereditary fiefs of Turkish emirs not belonging to the royal family, who bore ordinarily the title of atabek (properly " father bey"), ¢.g., the atabeks of Fars, of Adharbaijan (Azerbijan), of Syria, &c. The title was first given to Nizam al-Mulk and expressed the relation in which he stood to the prince, —as lala, "tutor." The affairs of state were managed by the divan under the presidency of the vizier ; but in the empire of Rim its authority was inferior to that of the pervdneh, whom we may name "lord chancellor." In Rum the feudal system was extended to Christian princes, who were acknowledged by the sultan on con- dition of paying tribute and serving in the armies. The court dignitaries and their*~~

titles were manifold ; not less manifold were the royal prerogatives, in which the sultans followed the example set by their predecessors, the Buyids.

Notwithstanding the intrigues of TurkAn Khatun, Malik Shih was succeeded by his elder son Barkiydérok (1092- 1104), whose short reign was a series of rebellions and strange adventures such as one may imagine in the story of a youth who is by turns a powerful prince and a miser- able fugitive! Like his brother Mohammed (1104-1118), who successfully rebelled against him, his most dangerous enemies were the Ismaelites, who had succeeded in taking the fortress of Alamut (north of Kazvin) and become a

1 A sketch of his reign has been given by Defrémery, Journ. Asia- tique, 1853, i. 425 sq., ii. 217 sq.

formidable political power by the organization of bands of Jiddéwis, who were always ready, even at the sacrifice of their own lives, to murder any one whom they were com- manded to slay (see ASSASSINS).

Mohammed had been successful by the aid of his brother Sinjar, who from the year 1097 held the province of Khorasan with the capital Merv. After the death of Mohammed Sinjar became the real head of the family, though 'Irak acknowledged Mahmud, the son of Mo- hammed, Thus there originated a separate dynasty of 'Trak with its capital at Hamadan; but Sinjar during his long reign often interfered in the affairs of the new dynasty, and every occupant of the throne had to acknow- ledge his supremacy. In 1117 he led an expedition against Ghazna and bestowed the throne upon Behram Shah, who was also obliged to mention Sinjar's name first in the official prayer at the Ghaznavid capital,—a prerogative that neither Alp Arslan nor Malik Shah had attained. In 1134 Behram Shah failed in this obligation and brought on himself a fresh invasion by Sinjar in the midst of winter ; a third one took place in 1152, caused by the doings of the Ghurids (Hosain Jihansuz, or ' world-burner"). Other expeditions were undertaken by him against Kharizm and Turkestan ; the government of the former had been given by Barkiydérok to Mohammed

~~*b, Anushtegin, who was suc- ceeded in 1128 by his son Atsiz, and against him Sinjar marched in 1138. Though victorious in this war, Sinjar could not hinder Atsiz from afterwards joining the gurkhan (great khan) of the then rapidly rising empire of the Kara- chitai, at whose hands the Seljuk suffered a terrible defeat at Samarkand in 1141. By the invasion of these hordes several Turkish tribes, the Ghuzz and others, were driven beyond the Oxus, where they killed the Seljuk governor of Balkh, though they professed to be loyal to Sinjar. Sinjar resolved to punish this crime; but his troops deserted and he himself was taken prisoner by the Ghuzz, who kept him in strict confinement during two years (1153-55), though treating him with all outward marks of respect. In the meantime they plundered and destroyed the flourish- ing cities of Merv and Nishapur; and when Sinjar, after his escape from captivity, revisited the site of his capital he fell sick of sorrow and grief and died soon afterwards (1157). His empire fell to the Karachitai and afterwards to the shah of Kharizm. Of the successors of Mohammed in 'Irak we give only the names with the date of the death of each :—Mahmud (1131); Toghrul, son of Mohammed, proclaimed by Sinjar (1134) ; Mas'ud (1152); Malik Shah and Mohammed (1159), sons of Mahmud ; Sulaiman Shah, their brother (1161); Arslan, son of Toghrul (1175); and Toghrul, son of Arslén, killed in 1194 by Inanej, son of his atabek, Mohammed, who was in confederation with the Khéarizm shah of the epoch, Takash. This chief inherited his possessions ; Toghrul was the last representative of the Seljuks of 'Irak.*~~

~~*The province of Kerman was one of the first conquests of the Seljuks, and became the hereditary fief of Kawurd, the son of Chakir Beg. Mention has been made of his war with Malik Shah and of his ensuing death (1073). Nevertheless his descendants were left in possession of their ancestor's dominions; and till 1170 Kerman, to which belonged also the opposite coast of "Oman, enjoyed a well-ordered government, except for a short interruption caused by the deposition of Iran Shah, who had embraced the tenets of the Ismaelites, and was put to death (1101) in accordance with a fatwa of the ulema. But after the death of Toghrul Shah (1170) his three sons disputed with each other for the possession of the throne, and implored foreign assistance, till the country became*~~

~~utterly devas- tated and fell an easy prey to some bands of Ghuzz, who, under the leadership of Malik Dinar (1185), marched into~~

~~Kerman after harassing Sinjar's dominions. the shahs of Kharizm took this province.!~~

~~The Seljukian dynasty of Syria came to an end after three generations, and its later history is interwoven with that of the crusaders. The first prince was Tutush, men- tioned above, who perished, after a reign of continuous fighting, in battle against Barkiyarok near Rai (1095). Of his two sons, the elder, Ridhwan, established himself at Aleppo (died 1113); the younger, Dukak, took possession of Damascus, and died in 1103. The sons of the former, Alp Arslan and Sultan Shah, reigned a short time nomi- nally, though the real power was exercised by Luli till 1117. We cannot, however, enter here into the very complicated history of these two cities, which changed their masters almost every year till the time of Zengi and Nur ed-din.~~

~~After the great victory of Alp Arslan in which the Greek emperor was taken prisoner (1071), Asia Minor lay open to the inroads of the Turks. Hence it was easy for Sulaiman, the son of Kutulmish,? the son of Arslan Pigu (Israil), to penetrate as far as the Hellespont, the more so as after the captivity of Romanus, two rivals, Nicephorus Bryennius in Asia and another Nicephorus named Botoniates in Europe, disputed the throne with one another. The former ap- pealed to Sulaiman for assistance, and was by his aid brought to Constantinople and seated on the imperial throne. But the possession of Asia Minor was insecure to the Seljuks as long as the important city of Antioch belonged to the Greeks, so that we may date the real foundation of this Seljuk empire from the taking of that city by the treason of its commander. Philaretus in 1084, who afterwards became a vassal of the Seljiks. The con- quest involved Sulaiman in war with the neighbouring Mohammedan princes, and he met his death soon after- wards (1086), near Shaizar, in a battle against Tutush. Owing to these family discords the decision of Malik Shah was necessary to settle the affairs of Asia Minor and Syria; he kept the sons of Sulaiman in captivity, and committed the war against the unbelieving Greeks to his~~

~~generals Bursuk (Hpocovy) and Buzan (Ilovgavos), Barki- yarok, however, on his accession (1092), allowed Kilig Arslan, the son of Sulaiman, to return to the dominions of his father. Acknowledged by the Turkish emirs of Asia Minor, he took up his residence in Niczea, and defeated the first bands of crusaders under Walter the Penniless and others (1096) ; but, on the arrival of Godfrey of Bouillon and his companions, he was prudent enough to leave his capital in order to attack them as they were besieging Nicea. He suffered, however, two defeats in the vicinity, and Nicza surrendered on 23d June 1097. As the cru- saders marched by way of Doryleum and Iconium towards Antioch, the Greeks subdued the Turkish emirs resid- ing at Smyrna, Ephesus, Sardis, Philadelphia, Laodicea, Lampes, and Polybotus;? and Kilig Arsldn, with his Turks, retired to the north-eastern parts of Asia Minor, to act with the Turkish emirs of Sivas (Sebaste), known under the name of the Danishmand.~~

~~The history of the dynasty of the Danishmand is still very ob- secure, notwithstanding the efforts of Mordtmann, Schlumberger, Karabagek, Sallet, and others to fix some chronological details, and it is almost impossible to harmonize the different statements of the Armenian, Syriac, Greek, and Western chronicles with those of the Arabic, Persian, and Turkish. The coins are few in number, very difficult to decipher, and often without date. The founder of the dynasty was a certain Tailu, who is said to have been a schoolinaster (danishmand), probably because he understood Arabic~~

~~and Persian. His descendants, therefore, took the style of "Ibn Danishmand," often without their own name. They took posses-~~

~~7 An outline of the history of this branch of the Seljuks is given in Z.D.M.G., 1885, pp. 362-401.~~

- ~~This prince rebelled against Alp Arslan in 1064, and was found dead after a battle.~~

~~a The Turkmans who dwelt in these western parts of Asia Minor, which were never regained by the Seljiiks, were called Utch (Outsiders).~~

~~*Afterwards*~~

~~*SELJUKS*~~

~~*sion of Sivas, Tokat, Nicsar, Ablastan, Malatich, probably after the death of Sulaiman, though they may have established them. selves in one or more of these cities much earlier, perhaps in 1071, after the defeat of Romanus Diogenes. During the first crusade the reigning prince was Kumushtegin (Ahmed Ghazi), who defeated the Franks and took prisoner the prince of Antioch, Bohemond, afterwards ransomed. He died probably in 1106, and was succeeded by his son Mohammed (d. 1148), after whom reigned Jaghi Basin ; but it is very probable that other members of the same dynasty reigned at the same time in the cities already named, and in some others, e.g., Kastamuni.*~~

~~*Afterwards there arose a natural rivalry between the Seljuks and the Danishmand, which ended with the ex- tinction of the latter about 1175. CKilig Arsl4n took possession of Mosul in 1107, and declared himself independ- ent of the Seljuks of 'Irak; but in the same year he was drowned in the Chaboras through the treachery of his own emirs, and the dynasty seemed again destined to decay, as his sons were in the power of his enemies. The sultan Mohammed, however, set at liberty his eldest son Malik Shah, who reigned for some time, until he was treacher- ously murdered (it is not quite certain by whom), being succeeded by his brother Mas'ud, who established himself at Konieh (Iconium), from that time the residence of the Seljuks of Rum. During his reign—he died in 1155—the Greek emperors undertook various expeditions in Asia Minor and Armenia; but the Seljuk was cunning enough to profess himself their ally and to direct them against his own enemies. Nevertheless the Seljikian dominion was petty and unimportant and did not rise to significance till his son and successor, Kilig Arslan II., had subdued the Danishmands and appropriated their possessions, though he thereby risked the wrath of the powerful atabek of Syria, Nur ed-din, and afterwards that of the still more powerful Saladin. But as the sultan grew old his numerous sons, who held each the command of a city of the empire, embittered his old age by their mutual rivalry, and the eldest, Kotb ed-din, tyrannized over his father in his own capital, exactly at the time that Frederick I.*~~

~~*(Barbarossa) entered his doniinions on his way to the HIoly Sepulchre (1190). Konieh itself was taken and the sultan forced to provide guides and provisions for the crusaders. Kilig Arslan lived two years longer, finally under the protection of his youngest son, Kaikhosrau, who held the capital after him (till 1199) until his elder brother, Rokn ed-din Sulaiman, after having vanquished his other brothers, ascended the throne and obliged Kaikhosrau to seek refuge at the Greek emperor's court. This valiant prince saved the empire from destruction and conquered Erzerum, which had been ruled during a considerable time by a separate dynasty, and was now given in fief to his brother, Mughit ed-din Toghrul Shah. But, marching thence against the Georgians, Sulaiman's troops suffered a terrible defeat; after this Sulaiman set out to subdue his brother Mas'td Shah, at Angora, who was finally taken prisoner and treacherously murdered. This crime is regarded by Oriental authors as the reason of the premature death of the sultan (in 1204); but it is more probable that he was murdered because he displeased the Mohammedan clergy, who accused him of atheism. HIs son, Kilig Arslan HL, was soon deposed by Kaikhosrau (who returned), assisted by the Greek Maurozomes, whose daughter he had married in exile, HIe ascended the throne the same year in which the Latin empire was established in Constantinople, a cir- cumstance highly favourable to the Turks, who were the natural allies of the Greeks (Theodore Lascaris) and the enemies of the crusaders and their allies, the Armenians. Kaikhosrau, therefore, took in 1207 from the Italian Aldobrandini the important harbour of Attalia (Adalia) ; but his conquests in this direction were put an end to by his attack upon Lascaris, for in the battle that ensued he perished in single combat with his royal antagonist (1211).*~~

~~*SBbLoUKS*~~

~~*HIs son and successor, Kaikavus, made peace with Lascaris and extended his frontiers to the Black Sea by the con- quest of Sinope (1214). On this occasion he was fortunate enough to take prisoner the Comnenian prince (Alexis) who ruled the independent empire of Trebizond, and he compelled him to purchase his liberty by acknowledging the supremacy of the Seljuks, by paying tribute, and by serving in the armies of the sultan. lated by this great success and by his victories over the Armenians,*~~

~~*Kaikavus was induced to attempt the capture of the important city of Aleppo, at this time governed by the descendants of Saladin ; but the affair miscarried. Soon afterwards the sultan died (1219) and was succeeded by his brother, Ald ed-din Kaikobad, the most powerful and illustrious prince of this branch of the Seljuks, renowned not only for his successful wars but also for his magnificent structures at Konieh, Alaja, Sivas, and elsewhere, which belong to the best specimens of Saracenic architecture. The town of Alaja was the creation of this sultan, as previously there existed on that site only the fortress of Candelor, at that epoch in the possession of an Armenian chief, who was expelled by Kaikobad, and shared the fate of the Armenian and Frankish knights who possessed the fortresses along the coast of the Mediterranean as far as Selefke (Seleucia). Kaikobad extended his rule as far as this city, and desisted from further conquest only on condition that the Armenian princes would enter into the same kind of relation to the Seljtiks as had been imposed on the Comnenians of Trebi- zond. But his greatest military fame was won by a war which, however glorious, was to prove fatal to the Seljuk empire in the future: in conjunction with his ally, the Eyytbid prince Al-Ashraf, he defeated the Kharizm shah Jelal ed-din near Arzengén (1230). This victory removed the only barrier that checked the progress of the Mongols. During this war Kaikobéd put an end to the collateral dynasty of the Seljuks of Erzerim and annexed its pos- sessions. He also gained the city of Khelét with depend- encies that in former times had belonged to the Shah-i- Armen, but shortly before had been taken by Jelal ed-din ; this aggression was the cause of the war just mentioned. The acquisition of Khelat led, however, to a new war, as Kaikobad's ally, the Eyyubid prince, envied him this conquest. Sixteen Mohammedan princes, mostly Eyyubids, of Syria and Mesopotamia, under the leadership of Al- Malik al-Kamil, prince of Egypt, marched with considerable forces into Asia Minor against him. Happily for Kaiko- bad, the princes mistrusted the power of the Egyptian, and it proved a difficult task to penetrate through the mountainous well-fortified accesses to the interior of Asia Minor, so that the advantage rested with Kaikobad, who took Kharput, and for some time even held Harran, Ar- Roha, and Rakka (1232). The latter conquests were, however, soon lost, and Kaikobdéd himself died in 1234 of poison administered to him by his son and successor, GhiyAts ed-din Kaikhosrau IJ. This unworthy son in- herited*~~

from his father an empire embracing almost the whole of Asia Minor, with the exception of the countries governed by Vatatzes (Vataces) and the Christian princes of Trebizond and Lesser Armenia, who, however, were bound to pay tribute and to serve in the armies,—an empire celebrated by contemporary reports for its wealth. But the Turkish soldiers were of little use in a regular battle, and the sultan relied mainly on his Christian troops, so much so that an insurrection of dervishes which occurred at this period could only be put down by their assistance. It was at this epoch also that there flourished at Konieh the greatest mystical poet of Islam, and the founder of the order of the Mawlawis, Jelal ed-din Rumi

1 See the details in Vincent of Beauvais, Speculum Historiale, bk. xxx. chaps, 148, 144.

(d. 1273; see Rumi), and that the dervish fraternities spread throughout the whole country and became power- ful bodies, often discontented with the liberal principles of the sultans, who granted privileges to the Christian merchants and held frequent intercourse with them. Not- withstanding all this, the strength and reputation of the empire were so great that the Mongols hesitated to invade it, although standing at its frontiers. But, as they crossed the border, Kaikhosrau marched against them, and suffered a formidable defeat at Kuzadag (between Arzengan and Sivds) in 1243, which forced him to purchase peace by the promise of a heavy tribute. The independence of the Seljiks was now for ever lost. The Mongols retired for some years; but, Kaikhosrau dying in 1245, the joint government of his three sons gave occasion to fresh in- roads, till one of them died and Hulagu divided the empire between the other two, 'Izz ed-din ruling the dis- tricts west of the Halys and Rokn ed-din the eastern provinces (1259). But the former, intriguing with the Mameluke sultans of Egypt to expel his brother and gain his independence, was defeated by a Mongol army and obliged to flee to the imperial court. Here he was im- prisoned, but afterwards released by the Tatars of the Crimea, who took him with them to Sarai, where he died. Rokn ed-din was only a nominal ruler, the real power being in the hands of his pervaneh, Muin ed-din Sulaiman, who in 1267 procured an order of the Mongol Khan

~~*Abaka for his execution. The minister raised his infant son, Ghiyats ed-din Kaikhosrau III., to the throne, and governed the country for ten years longer, till he was entangled in a conspiracy of several emirs, who proposed to expel the Mongols with the aid of the Mameluke sultan of Egypt (Beybars or Bibars). The latter marched into Asia Minor and defeated the Mongols in the bloody battle of Ablastan (1277); but, when he advanced farther to Ceesarea, the pervaneh retired, hesitating to join him at the very moment of action. Beybars, therefore, in his turn fell back, leaving the pervaneh to the vengeance of the khan, who soon discovered his treason and ordered a barbarous execution. Ghiydts ed-din continued to reign in name till 1284, though the country was in reality governed by a Mongol viceroy. Mas'ud, the son of 'Izz ed-din, who on the death of his father had fled from the Crimea to the Mongol khan and had received from him the government of Sivds, Arzengén, and Erzertm during the lifetime of Ghiydts ed-din, ascended the Seljuk throne on the death of Ghiydts. But his authority was scarcely respected in his own residence, for several Turkish emirs assumed independence and could only be subdued by Mongol aid, when they retired to the mountains, to re-appear as soon as the Mongols were gone. Mas'td fell, probably about 1295, a victim to the vengeance of one of the emirs, whose father he had ordered to be put to death. After him Kaikobad, son of his brother Faramarz, entered Konieh as sultan in 1298, but his reign is so obscure that nothing can be said of it; some authors assert that he governed only till 1300, others till 1315. With him ended the dynasty of the Seljuks ; but the Turkish empire founded by them continued to exist under the rising dynasty of the Ottomans. (See TURKEY.) .*~~

~~*Bibliography.—The best, though insufficient, account of the Sel- juks is still De Guignes, Histoire Générale des Huns, bks. x.-xii., from whom Gibbon borrowed his dates. Among translations from original sources (of which the most trustworthy are yet unedited), comp. Mirkhond's Geschichte der Seldschuken (ed. Vullers), Giessen, 1838; Tarikh-t-Guzideh, French translation by Defrémery in the Journal Asiatique, 1848, i. 417 sq., ii. 259 sq., 384 sq.; Seid Loemani ex Libro Turcico qui Oghuzname inscribitur Excerpta (ed. J. H. W. Lagus), Helsingfors, 1854 (on the Seljuiks of Asia Minor exclusively, but of little value). Information respecting certain*~~

~~*periods is given incidentally in the well-known works of Von Hammer and D'Ohsson. (M. T. H.)*~~

~~*638 .*~~

~~*SELKIRK, a lowland county of Scotland, of tortuous*~~

~~*outline, is bounded by Midlothian on the N., by Peebles on the N. and W., by Dumfries on the S., and by Roxburgh on the E. Its extreme length from south-west to north- east is 28 miles, its greatest breadth from east to west 17, and its total area 260 square miles or 166,524 acres, of which 1997 are water. This includes two detached portions, one to the north-west, surrounded by Peebles, and another on the east, the estate and barony of Sinton, separated from Roxburgh in the reign of William the Lion on the appoint- ment of Andrew de Synton to the sheriffship of Selkirk. From its lowest altitude (300 feet) at the junction of the Gala and the Tweed the surface rises to 2433 feet at Dun Rig, a wild and desolate summit on the western boundary. Level haughs, beds of ancient lakes, occur in the courses of the rivers ; but the county is otherwise wholly mountain- ous and only a small proportion of it arable. Of its prin- cipal summits, Ettrick Pen (2269), Capel Fell (2223), Deer Law (2064), Herman Law (2014), are in the south, and Windlestrae Law (2161) in the north, about a mile from the borders of Midlothian. Broadly speaking, Selkirk may be said to consist of the two entire valleys of Ettrick and Yarrow and a section of the valley of Tweed, the first two sloping from the south until they merge in the last, which forms the northern portion of the county. Besides St Mary's Loch and its adjunct the Loch of the Lowes, together about 44 miles long, there are several others of considerable size, mostly in the eastern uplands between Ettrick and Teviotdale—the two lochs of Shaws, Clearburn Loch, Kingside Loch, Hellmuir Loch, Alemuir Loch, and Akermuir Loch. These, with the larger rivers and the mountain "burns," attract anglers to Selkirk from all parts of the kingdom.—Geologically, the Selkirk rocks are a portion of that great Silurian mass which occupies the south of Scotland from Wigtown to the north-east coast of Berwick. At no part are they known to be covered by rocks of later forma- tion; but here and there (at Windlestrae Law and Priest-hope, for example) igneous rocks protrude in massive out- crops, almost*~~

~~*granitic, one measuring over 100 feet in thickness. The hillsides yield inexhaustible supplies of blue-grey whinstone, suitable for building; but repeated efforts to establish slate-quarries and lead-mines have ended in failure. According to records of the 16th century, gold was found at Mount Benger, Douglas Craig, and Linglie Burn,—"an ingenious gentleman" named Bevis Bulmer having been "most successful upon Henderland Moor in Ettrick Forest, where he got the greatest gold—the like to it in no other place before of Scotland."*~~

~~*Corresponding with the high average altitude, the pre- vailing climate is cold and wet, and, as the soil is mostly thin, over a close subsoil of clayey "till," agriculture is carried on at a disadvantage. About the middle of the 19th century large areas of virgin soil were brought under tillage ; but the prudence of the "improvement" is now greatly doubted, in regard to a large proportion at least,—its restoration to permanent pasture being now found*~~

~~*almost impracticable.*~~

~~*In 1884 23,263 acres, or nearly a seventh of the whole, were under cultivation and 3228 under wood. The rotation of crops most commonly followed is a six-course shift of (1) turnips, (2) barley or oats, (3), (4), (5) grass or pasture, and (6) oats. Horses in 1884 numbered 580, cattle 2657, sheep 165,061. Till about a century ago the upper farms of the county were stocked exclusively with sheep of the blackfaced breed, and in high heathery tracts these still predominate. But as altitude diminishes sheep improve in quality, from pure Cheviot to half-bred and three-quarters-bred Leicester-Cheviot. Upwards of 60,000 acres, more than a third of the county, belong to the duke of Buccleuch, whose title is derived from an ancient possession of his family in the vale of Rankleburn. Other principal landowners are Mr Maxwell-Stuart of Traquair (9765 acres) and Lord Napier and Ettrick (6988 acres).*~~

~~*Manufactures.—So early as the beginning of the 17th century*~~

~~*SHELRLKIRK*~~

~~*the village of Galashiels did a considerable local trade in woollen cloth, then or shortly afterwards known as " Galashiels grey," and towards the end of the 18th century this industry was greatly stimulated by judicious grants from' 'the equivalent" paid by England at the Union. About the end of the first quarter of the 19th century a few novelties in pattern (mostly accidental) led to the opening up of what has now become a vast industry—the Tweed trade, which still has its acknowledged centre in Selkirk.*~~

~~*Administration and Population.—Selkirkshire with Peeblesshire forms one parliamentary constituency. Of entire civil parishes it contains only two, with parts of nine others; there are also, taken from these, three gwoad sacra parishes and part of a fourth. The population, 4937 in 1755 and 9809 in 1851, was in 1881 returned at 25,564,—an increase partly due to the annexation of a portion of Galashiels formerly reckoned in Roxburgh. Outside the two towns of Galashiels (population 9140 in 1881) and Selkirk population has been almost stationary for more than a century, that of the landward parishes in 1755 and 1881 being respectively as follows :—Ashkirk, 200 and 138; Innerleithen, 60 and 61; Ettrick, 397 and 397; Stow, 260 and 441; Yarrow, 1180 and 611; Roberton, 250 and 250.*~~

~~*Antiquities and HIstory.—The shire is not rich in antiquities, although its hillsides here and there reveal earthen enclosures known as 'British camps," as well as tumuli yielding human remains and the usual fragments of rude pottery. A mysterious ditch, known as "the Catrail," beginning at the north end of the county, traverses its entire extent before entering Roxburgh on its way to the English border. Besides smaller redoubts, there is on its line, at Rink in Galashiels parish, a well-preserved circular fort of formidable strength and dimensions. Near Minchmoor the Catrail is crossed by " Wallace's trench," where, according to an historical document recently published, the Scottish patriot defied for a while the generals of Edward I. Close by is the hill-track by which Montrose escaped from the disastrous field of Philiphaugh in 1645. Newark Castle, built by James II., still stands in fair preservation, notable enough historically, but more familiar as the recital-hall of the "last minstrel's" immortal lay. The county is dotted over with*~~

~~other towers of smaller size, in various stages of decay. Around them cluster those traditions which, sung in ballads full of simple force and tenderness, have made Selkirk the poet's chosen haunt. Yarrow, "garlanded with rhyme," has, without hyperbole, been termed "the Tempe of the West." Selkirk was long known officially as the 'shire of the Forest," an appellation its famous sheriff Sir Walter Scott loved to recall. Except the burgh of Selkirk, its lands, and a large tract in upper Ettrick be- longing to Melrose Abbey, the county remained long under the jurisdiction of a forest court, and its forest-steadings were held by tack from the crown till the time of Queen Mary. It was a favourite hunting-ground of Scottish monarchs and formed the dowry-land of at least two foreign princesses who became queens of Scotland.~~

~~See T. Craig-Brown, Hist. of Selkirkshire.~~

~~SELKIRK, the county town of Selkirkshire, is on the river Ettrick, between its absorption of the Yarrow and its junction with the Tweed, and is connected by a branch railway with the Waverley line from Scotland to Eng- land. Although almost entirely a manufacturing town, having several large mills for woollen cloth and yarn, it is not without importance as the centre of an extensive pastoral area. The county offices and prison excepted, the public buildings of Selkirk are not striking. The popula- tion of the burgh was 1053 in 1735, 1800 in 1831, and~~

~~6090 in 1881.~~

~~From the charter by which David I., while prince of North- umbria, established in Selkirk the Benedictine abbey afterwards removed to Kelso, it appears that even at that remote period (1119- 24) it was an old town and the prince's residence. David's castle continued to be a frequent resort of his successors on the throne, particularly of William the Lion, many of whose charters were signed "in plena curia apud Scelchircham." Enlarged and strength- ened by Edward I., the fortress was captured by the patriotic party soon after Wallacc's return from France. Nothing now remains of it but green mounds and the name " Peel Hill." It is significant of the destruction wrought by repeated conquests and reconquests that Selkirk, notwithstanding its antiquity and early importance, boasts not one building a century and a half old. As its early~~

~~name (Scheleschyrche) implies, it was originally a collection of forest "'shiels" beside which an early church was planted, probably by the Culdees of Old Melrose. Clear light is thrown upon the manners and customs of old border towns by the ancient records of this burgh, still extant (with gaps) from 1503. A minute of 1513 mentions the steps taken to comply with the king's letter ordering the levy before Flodden, where, according to tradition, the burgesses of Selkirk fought with stubborn valour. James V. granted the community right to enclose 1000 acres from the common and gave them leave to elect a provost, the first to fill that office being slain~~

~~SE L—S EM~~

~~in defence of the burgh lands. From an early period shoemakers were a numerous craft in Selkirk, and in 1715 and 1745 they were forced to furnish several thousand pairs of shoes to the Jacobite armies. '" Souters of Selkirk " is still a synonym for the inhabitants. SELKIRK, or Sencraic, ALEXANDER (1676-1723), a sailor who is supposed to have been the prototype of Defoe's "Robinson Crusoe," was the son of a shoemaker and tanner in Largo, Fifeshire, and was born in 1676. In his youth he displayed a quarrelsome and unruly disposition, and, hav- ing been summoned on 27th August 1695 before the kirk- session for his indecent behaviour in church, '" did not com- pear, being gone away to the seas." At an early period he was engaged in buccaneer expeditions to the South Seas, and in 1703 joined the "Cinque Ports" galley as sailing master. The following year he had a dispute with the captain, and at his own request was in October put ashore on the island of Juan Fernandez, where, after a solitary residence of four years and four months, he was taken off by Captain Woods Rogers, commander of a privateer, who made him his mate and afterwards gave him the independent command of one of his prizes. He returned home in 1712; but in 1717 he eloped with a country girl and again went to sea. He died in 1723 while lieutenant on board the royal ship '"' Weymouth." See Howell, Life and Adventures of Alexander Selkirk, 1829.~~

~~SELMA, a city of the United States, in Dallas county, Alabama, at the head of steamboat navigation of the Alabama river, occupies a plateau on~~

~~the bluff of the right bank, 95 miles below Montgomery. It has cotton ware- houses, railroad machine-shops, and various factories. The population was 6484 (3660 coloured) in 1870 and 7529 (4184 coloured) in 1880. Selma, which was strongly fortified during the Civil War and the seat of a Con- federate arsenal (where 1800 men were employed), was captured by the Federal major-general J. H. Wilson on 2d April 1865.~~

~~SEMIPALATINSK, an extensive province (oblast) of the Russian dominions in Central Asia; administratively it forms a part of the general-governorship of the Steppes, although its northern portions really belong to the Irtish plains of West Siberia. It has an area of 188,300 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by Tobolsk and Tomsk, on the §.E. by China, on the 8. by Semiryetchensk, and on the W. by Akmolinsk. As regards configuration, it differs widely in its northern and southern parts. The snowclad ridges (9000 to 10,000 feet) of the great Altai and Narym enter its south-eastern portion, stretching southwards to Lake Zaisan. Another complex of moun- tains, Kandygatai and Katbinsk, rising to 5000 and 6000 feet above the sea, continues them towards the west; a broad valley intervenes, through which the Irtish finds its way from the Zaisan terrace to the lowlands of Siberia. Many extensions of these mountains and subordinate ridges stretch towards the north. The still lower but wild Jinghiz-tau mountains fill the south-western part- of Semipalatinsk, sending out their rocky spurs into the steppe region. In the south, the Tarbagatai (Marmots') range (9000 to 10,000 feet) separates Semipalatinsk from Semiryetchensk and the Chinese province of Jugutchak. Wide steppes fill up the spaces between the mountains : such are the Zaisan steppe (1200 to 1500 feet), between the Tarbagatai and the Altai ranges; the plains of Lake Balkash, some 300 feet lower, to the south of the Jinghiz- tau; and the plains of the Irtish, which hardly rise 600 feet above the sea. All kinds of crystalline rocks—gran- ites, syenites, diorites, and porphyries, as also crystalline slates of all descriptions—are met with in the mountain tracts, which contain also rich gold-bearing sands, silver and lead mines, graphite, coal, and the less valuable pre- cious stones. The geology of the region and even its~~

~~*topography are still but imperfectly known. Numerous boulders widely scattered around the mountains testify to a much wider extension of glaciers in former times. The chief river of the province, the Irtish, which issues from Lake Zaisan, flows north and north-west and waters Semi-palatinsk for more than 760 miles. Between Bukhtarma and Ust-Kamenogorsk it crosses the Altai by a wild gorge, with dangerous rapids, through which, however, boats are floated. Lake Zaisan, 80 miles long and from 10 to 20 wide, has depth sufficient for steamboat navigation; steamers tra- verse also for some 100 miles the lower course of the Black Irtish, which flows from Kuldja to Lake Zaisan. The Kurtchum, the Narym, and the Bukhtarma are the chief right-hand tributaries of the Irtish, while the Bukoii, the Kizil-su, and many smaller ones join it from the left; none are navigable, neither are the Kokbekty and Bugaz, which enter Lake Zaisan on the west. Lake Balkash, which borders Semipalatinsk in the south-west, formerly received several tributaries from the Jinghiz-tau. Many smaller lakes (some of them merely temporary) occur on the Irtish plain, and yield salt. The whole of the country is rapidly drying up. The climate is severe. The average yearly temperature reaches 43° in the south and 34° in the north ; the winter is very cold, and frosts of —44° Fahr. are not uncommon, while heats raising the thermometer to 122° in the shade are experienced in the summer. The yearly amount of rain and snow is trifling, although snow-storms are very common ; strong winds prevail. Forests are plentiful in the hilly districts and on the Irtish plain, the flora being Siberian in the north and more Central Asiatic towards Lakes Balkash and Zaisan.*~~

~~*The chief inhabitants are Kirghiz-kazaks, who acknowledged the supremacy of Russia in 1732 and may number now (1886) nearly half a million (479,750 in 1876, of whom 10,950 were settled in towns). The Russian population, which in the same year amounted to nearly 50,000 Cossacks and peasauts, has slowly increased since. The aggregate population was in 1882 estimated at 538,400, of whom 34,550 lived in towns. The Russians are chiefly agricul- turists, and have wealthy settlements on the right bank of the Irtish, as well as a few patches in the south, at the foot of the mountains. The Kirghizes are almost exclusively cattle-breeders and keep large flocks of sheep, horses, and horned cattle, as also camels. Hunting and fishing (in Lake Zaisan) are favourite and*~~

~~*profitable occupations with the Cossacks and the Kirghizes. In- dustries are of course insignificant, except that of mining,—gold being obtained within the province to the amount of from 300 to 400 tb every year; the extraction of silver and lead is very limited. Trade is of some importance, and is increasing,—Russian manu- factured articles being exchanged for the raw produce (hides, tallow, cattle) of the region. The province is divided into four districts, the chief towns of which are Semipalatinsk (17,820 inhabitants in 1881), Pavlodar (2260), Kokbekty (3680), and Karkaralinsk (2080). All these towns, lost amidst the sandy steppes, are mere administrative centres. Bukhtarma and Ust-Kamenogorsk (3400), among the mountains, are also worthy of mention.*~~

~~*SEMIPALATINSK, capital of the above province, is situated on the right bank of the Irtish, on the highway from Central Asia to northern Europe. At the end of the 18th century it began to be a centre for trade, reach- ing its greatest development in 1850-60. Kazan and Turkestan Tatars formed the bulk of its population. The town still remains, however, a collection of old wooden houses scattered among unfenced spaces of sand. The Tatar town has a somewhat better aspect than the Russian. The inhabitants (17,820 in 1881) consist of officials, mer- chants, and agriculturists.*~~

~~*SEMIRAMIS. According to the legend which the Greeks received from Ctesias, and which is most fully pre- served by Diodorus (book ii.) in a form that, according to the researches of C. Jacoby (Rhein. Museum, 1875, p. 555 sg.), is not taken direct from Ctesias but comes through Clitarchus, and has been modified by traits borrowed from the history of Alexander the Great, the Assyrian empire over all Asia as far as the borders of India was created by*~~

~~*Ninus, the founder of Nineveh, and his greater spouse Semiramis, who was first the wife of his captain, Onnes, but won the king's love by an heroic exploit, the capture of Bactra, which had defied the royal forces. Ninus died, and Semiramis, succeeding to his power, traversed all parts of the empire, erecting great cities (especially Babylon) and stupendous monuments or opening roads through savage mountains. She was unsuccessful only in an attack on India. At length, after a reign of forty-*~~

~~*two years, she delivered up the kingdom to her son Ninyas and dis-appeared, or, according to what seenis to be the original form of the story, was turned into a dove and was thence- forth worshipped as a deity. This legend is certainly not Assyrian or Babylonian ; Ctesias must have had it from Persians or Medes, and the fulness of detail, the multi- tude of proper names, favour the conjecture that Ninus and Semiramis were celebrated in some Median epic tale which went on to tell of the fall of Assyria before the Medes (Duncker, Gesch. d. Alt., 5th ed., ii. 18 sq.). In this legend all the conquests of Assyria were crowded together into one lifetime, and King Ninus and his son Ninyas are mere eponyms of Nineveh, personifications of the Assyrian monarchy. But it is round the figure of Semiramis that all the real interest of the legend gathers; nor can she be the arbitrary creation of a poet, for it is certain that her name was popularly connected with many famous places and monuments. 'The works of Semiramis," says Strabo (xvi. 1, 2), "are pointed out through almost the whole continent, earthworks bearing her name, walls and strong- holds, aqueducts, and stair-like roads over mountains, canals, roads, and bridges." Ultimately every stupendous work of antiquity by the Euphrates or in Iran seems to have been ascribed to her,—even the Behistun inscriptions of Darius (Diod., ii. 13). Of this we already have evi- dence in Herodotus, who, though he does not know the legend afterwards told by Ctesias, ascribes to her the banks that confined the Euphrates (i. 184) and knows her name as borne by a gate of Babylon (iii. 155). Various places in Media bore the name of Semiramis, but slightly changed, even in the Middle Ages (Hoffmann, Syrische Akten, p. 137), and the old name of Van was Shamirama- gerd, Armenian tradition regarding her as its founder (St Martin, J/ém. sur ' Arménie, i. 188). These facts are to be explained by observing that in her birth as well as in her disappearance from earth Semiramis clearly appears not as a mere woman but as a great goddess. In Diodorus's account she is the daughter of the Derceto of Ascalon and miraculously brought up by doves, and again she is finally transformed into a dove, and therefore the Assyrians pay divine honours to this bird. Semiramis, therefore, is a dove-goddess associated with Derceto the fish-goddess. The same association of the fish and dove goddesses appears at Hierapolis (Bambyce, Mabbug), the great temple at which according to one legend was founded by Semi- ramis (De Dea Syria, 14), and where her statue was shown with a golden dove on*~~

~~*her head (2béd., 33, comp. 39). But the Semitic dove-goddess is Ishtar or Astarte, the great goddess of Assyria and Babylon, and the irresistible charms of Semiramis, her sexual excesses (see especially Dinon in Ailian, V.H., vii. 1), and other features of the legend all bear out the view that she is primarily a form of Astarte, and so fittingly conceived as the great queen of Assyria. The word Semiramis in Semitic form, as the Syrians write it, is Shémiram (Hoffmann, wt supra), an epithet rather than a proper name, which may be rendered 'the highly celebrated," or perhaps rather "name [mani- festation| of [the god] Ram."? The historical inference*~~

~~*1 It is noteworthy in this connexion that Mabbug is the Ninus vetus*~~

~~*of Ammianus and Philostratus. 2 Cp. the Phoenician " Astarte bysow" (OPIS! eal, ONO} tgs leis)*~~

~~*become lost in the sands.*~~

~~*SEM—SEM*~~

~~*from all this is that Semitic worship was carried by the Assyrians far into Media and Armenia.*~~

~~*On an Assyrian inscription the name Sammuramat appears as borne by the "lady of the palace" of Rammannivar (812-783 B.C.) 5 see Schrader, K.A.7., 2d ed., p. 366. E. Meyer (Gesch. des Alterth., p- 409) combines this with the statement of Herodotus that Semi- ramis lived five generations before Nitocris, which would make her date 766 B.c. Possibly Herodotus identified the two names, but it is very doubtful whether they are really connected. Shemiramoth (1 Chron. xv. 18) perhaps means " statues of Semiramis," and, if so, was originally a place-name (Ewald, a.i.).*~~

~~*SEMIRYETCHENSK, a province of Russian Turkestan, including the steppes south of Lake Balkash and parts of the Tian-Shan Mountains around Lake Issik-kul. It has an area of 155,300 square miles and is bounded by Semipalatinsk on the N., by China (Jugutchak, Kuldja, Aksu, and Kashgaria) on the E. and S., and by the Russian provinces of Ferganah, Syr-Daria, and Akmolinsk on the W. It owes its name (Jity-su,*~~

~~*Semi-ryetchie, 7.e., "Seven Rivers") to the rivers which flow from the south-east into Lake Balkash. The Jungarian Ala-tau, which separates it from north-western Kuldja, penetrates into its central por- tions, extending south-west towards the river Ili, with an average height of 6000 feet above the sea, several isolated snow-clad peaks reaching about 12,000 feet. In the south Semiryetchensk embraces the intricate systems of the Trans- Th Ala-tau and the Tian-Shan (see TuRKESTAN). Two ranges of the former, connected about their middle by a single mountain-mass, extend east-north-eastwards along the northern shore of Lake Issik-kul, both ranging from 10,000 to about 15,000 feet and both partially snow-clad. To the south of the lake two immense ranges of the Tian- Shan, separated by the valley of the Naryn, stretch in the same direction, raising their icy peaks to above 15,000 and 16,000 feet ; while westwards from the lake the vast walls of the Alexandrovskiy ridge, 9000 to 10,000 feet high, with peaks rising some 2000 feet higher, extend to the province of Syr-Daria. Another mountain complex of much lower elevation runs north-westwards from the Trans-Ilian Ala-tau towards the southern extremity of Lake Balkash. In the north, where the province borders Semipalatinsk, it includes the western parts of the Tarbagatai range, the summits of which (10,000 feet) do not reach the limit of perpetual snow. The remainder of the province consists of a rich steppe in the north-east (Serghiopol), and vast uninhabitable sand-steppes on the south-east of Lake Bal- kash. Southwards from the last-named, however, at the foot of the mountains and at the entrance to the valleys, there are rich areas of fertile land, which are rapidly being colonized by Russian immigrants, who have also spread into the Tian-Shan, to the east of Lake Issik-kul. The climateis relatively temperate (average yearly temperature 44° Fahr. at Vyernyi, 2500 feet above the sea) and the vegetation rich.*~~

~~*The chief river is the Ili, which enters the province from Kuldja, makes its way through the spurs of the Trans-Ilian Ala-tau, flows north-west in a bed varying from 200 to 1000 yards in width, and waters the province for 250 miles before it enters Lake Balkash by several mouths forming a wide delta. Its tributaries from the left are the Naryn, the Tchilik, and the Kurtu; several others The Karatal, the Aksu, and the Lepsa likewise fall into Lake Balkash. The Tchu rises in the Tian-Shan Mountains and flows north-westwards to Lake Saumal-kul; and the Naryn flows south-*~~

westwards along a longitudinal valley of the Tian-Shan, and enters Ferganah to join the Syr-Daria. The province contains several important lakes. Lake Balkash, or Denghiz, in the north (8880 square miles), is crescent-shaped, 400 miles long and 55 wide in its broader part ; but its area is much less than it for- merly was, and it is rapidly drying up,—notably since 1853. Lake Ala-kul, which was connected with Balkash in the Post-Pliocene period, now stands some hundred feet higher, and is connected by a chain of smaller lakes with Sisik-kul. Lake Issik-kul (2260 square miles) is a deep mountain lake, 120 miles long and 37 wide, 5800 feet above the sea. The alpine lakes Son-kul (9400 feet) and Tchatyr-kul (11,100) lie south-west of Issik-kul.

The population, which was estimated at 748,800 by M. Kostenko in 1880 (189,660 being in the Kuldja region), has since increased,

SEM—SEM

the latest official figures (1882) giving 685,950 for the province, exclusive of the Kuldja region. Of these Russians numbered, ac- cording to Kostenko, 44,585, 20,640 being Cossacks, who are very poor as compared with the free Russian emigrants. The majority of the population are Kirghiz (595,237); next come Tarantchis (36,265), Kalmucks (about 25,000), Mongols and Manchurians (22,000), and Dungans (19,657), these last two mostly in Kuldja ; while Tatars and Sarts are each represented by some 8000 or 3500 (all the foregoing figures include those for Kuldja). The

SEMITIC L

HE name 'Semitic languages" is used to designate a group of Asiatic and African languages, some living and some dead, namely, Hebrew and Phcenician, Aramaic, Assyrian, Arabic, Ethiopic (Geez and Amharic). The name, which was introduced by Hichhorn,! is derived from the fact that most nations which speak or spoke these lan- guages are descended, according to Genesis, from Shem, son of Noah. But the classification of nations in Genesis x. is founded neither upon linguistic nor upon ethno-graphical principles: it is determined rather by geograph- ical and political considerations. For this reason Elam and Lud are also included

~~among the children of Shem ; but neither the Elamites (in Susiana) nor the Lydians appear to have spoken a language connected with Hebrew. On the other hand, the Phœnicians (Canaanites), whose dialect closely resembled that of Israel, are not counted as children of Shem. Moreover, the compiler of the list in Genesis x. had no clear conceptions about the peoples of south Arabia and Ethiopia. Nevertheless it would be undesirable to give up the universally received terms ""Semites" and "Semitic." There exist large groups of languages and peoples which bear no natural collective appellations, because the peoples grew up unconscious of their mutual relationship; so science must needs give them artificial designations, and it would be well if all such terms were as short and precise as " Semitic."~~

~~The connexion of the Semitic languages with one another is somewhat close, in any case closer than that of the Indo-European languages. The more ancient Semitic tongues differ from one another scarcely more than do the various Teutonic dialects. Hence even in the 17th century such learned Orientalists as Hottinger, Bochart, Castell, and Ludolf had a tolerably clear notion of the relationship between the different Semitic languages with which they were acquainted ; indeed the same may be said of some Jewish scholars who lived many centuries earlier, as, for instance, Jehuda ben Koraish. It is not difficult to point out a series of characteristic marks common to these lan- guages,—the predominance of triconsonantal roots, or of roots formed after the analogy of such, similarity in the formation of nominal and verbal stems, a great resemblance in the forms of the personal pronouns and in their use for the purpose of verbal inflexion, the two principal tenses, the importance attached to the change of vowels in the interior of words, and lastly considerable agreement with regard to order and the construction of sentences. Yet even so ancient a Semitic language as the Assyrian ap- pears to lack some of these features, and in certain modern dialects, such as New Syriac, Mahri, and more particularly Amharic, many of the characteristics of older Semitic speech have disappeared. But the resemblance in voca- bulary generally diminishes in proportion to the modern- ness of the dialects. Still we can trace the connexion between the modern and the ancient dialects, and show, at least approximately, how~~

~~the former were developed out of the latter. Where a development of this kind can be proved to have taken place, there a relationship must~~

~~1 Kinleitung in das A.T., 2d ed., i. 45 (Leipsic, 1787).~~

~~ing too much in this respect.~~

~~64]~~

~~province is subdivided into five districts; Vyernyi (18,423 inhabit- ants in 1879, of whom 38586 were military), the chief town of the province, formerly Almaty, is situated at the foot of the Trans-Tlian Ala-tau, and has a mixed population of Russians, Tatars, Sarts, Kirghiz, Kalmucks, and Jews ; its trade with Kuldja and Kashgar is increasing rapidly, and it has now two lyceums, for boys and girls, and several other schools. The other towns—Kopal (5450 inhabitants), Serghiopol (1045), Tokmak (1770), and Karakol (2780)—are merely administrative centres.~~

~~ANGUAGES~~

~~exist, however much the individual features may have been effaced. The question here is not of logical categories but of organic groups.~~

~~All these languages are descendants of a primitive Primi- ‘ Many of its tive— most important features may be reconstructed with at Semitic~~

~~Semitic stock which has long been extinct.~~

~~least tolerable certainty, but we must beware of attempt- When the various cognate languages of a group diverge in essential points, it is by no means always possible to determine which of them has retained the more primitive form. The history of the development of these tongues during the period anterior to the documents which we possess is often extremely obscure in its details. Even when several Semitic lan- guages agree in important points of grammar we cannot always be sure that in these particulars we have what is primitive, since in many cases analogous changes have taken place independently. To one who should assert the complete reconstruction of the primitive Semitic language to be possible,~~

~~*we might put the question, Would the man who is best acquainted with all the Romance languages be in a position to reconstruct their common mother, Latin, if the knowledge of it were lost? And yet there are but few Semitic languages which we can know as accurately as the Romance languages are known. As far as the vocabulary is concerned, we may indeed maintain with certainty that a considerable number of words which have in various Semitic languages the form proper to each were a part of primitive Semitic speech. Nevertheless even then we are apt to be misled by independent but analogous formations and by words borrowed at a very remote period.? Each Semitic language or group of lan- guages has, however, many words which we cannot point out in the others. Of such words a great number no doubt belonged to primitive Semitic speech, and either disappeared in some of these languages or else remained in use, but not so as to be recognizable by us. Yet many isolated words and roots may in very early times have been borrowed by the Hebrew, the Aramaic, the Ethiopic, &c., perhaps from wholly different languages, of which no trace is left.*~~

~~*The question which of tlhe known Semitic dialects most resembles the primitive Semitic language is less important than one might at first suppose, since the question is one not of absolute but only of relative priority. After scholars had given up the notion (which, however, was not the fruit of scientific research) that all Semitic lan- guages, and indeed all the languages in the world, were de- scendants of Hebrew or of Aramaic, it was long the fashion to maintain that Arabic bore a close resemblance to the primitive Semitic language.? But, just as it is now recog- nized with ever-increasing clearness that Sanskrit is far from having retained in such a degree as was even lately supposed the characteristics of primitive Indo-European*~~

~~*2 The more alike two languages are the more difficult it usually is to detect, as borrowed elements, those words which have passed from one language into the other.*~~

~~*° This theory is carried to its extreme limit in Olshausen's very valuable Zebrew Grammar (Brunswick, 1861).*~~

~~Charac- ter of Semitic mind.~~

~~speech, so in the domain of the Semitic tongues we can assign to Arabic only a relative antiquity. It is true that in Arabic very many features are preserved more faithfully than in the cognate languages,—for instance, nearly all the original abundance of consonants, the short vowels in open syllables, particularly in the interior of words, and many grammatical distinctions which in the other lan- guages are more or less obscured. But, on the other hand, Arabic has coined, simply from analogy, a great number of forms which, owing to their extreme simplicity, seem at the first glance to be primitive, but which nevertheless are only modifications of the primitive forms; whilst per- haps the other Semitic languages exhibit modifications of a different kind. In spite of its great wealth, Arabic is characterized by a certain monotony, which can scarcely have existed from the beginning. Both Hebrew and Aramaic are in many respects more ancient than Arabic. This would no doubt be far more apparent if we knew Hebrew more completely and according to the original pronunciation of its vowels, and if we could discover how Aramaic was pronounced about the 13th century before our era. It must always be borne in mind that we are far more fully and accurately acquainted with Arabic than with the other Semitic languages of antiquity. The opin- ion sometimes maintained by certain over-zealous Assyrio- logists, that Assyrian is the 'Sanskrit of the Semitic world," has not met with the approval even of the Assyrio- logists themselves, and is unworthy of a serious refutation.~~

~~A comparative grammar of the Semitic languages must of course be based upon Arabic, but must in every matter of detail take into consideration all the cognate languages, as far as they are known to us. In the reconstruction of the primitive Semitic tongue Hebrew might perhaps afford more assistance than Ethiopic; but Aramaic, Assyrian, and even the less known and the more modern dialects might furnish valuable materials.~~

~~It is not a formidable undertaking to describe in general terms the character of the Semitic mind, as has been done, for example, by Lassen~~

~~*(Indische Alterthumskunde, i. 414 sg.) and by Renan in the introduction to his Histoire des Langues Sémitiques. But still there is a danger of assuming that the most important characteristics of particu- lar Semitic peoples, especially of the Israelites and of the Arabs, are common to all Semites, and of ascribing to the influence of race certain striking features which are the result of the external conditions of life, and which, under similar circumstances, are also developed among non- Semitic races. And, though it is said, not without reason, that the Semites possess but little talent for political and military organization on a large scale, yet we have in the Pheeniciaus, especially the Carthaginians, in Hamilcar and in Hannibal, a proof that under altered conditions the Semites are not incapable of distinguishing themselves in these domains. It isa poor evasion to deny that the Phe- nicians are genuine Semites, since even our scanty sources of information suffice to show that in the matter of reli- gion, which among Semites is of such supreme importance, they bore a close resemblance to the ancient Hebrews and Aramzans. In general descriptions of this kind it is easy to go too far. But to give in general terms a correct idea of the Semitic languages is a task of very much greater difficulty. Renan's brilliant and most interesting sketch is in many respects open to serious criticism. He cites, for example, as characteristic of the Semitic tongues, that they still retain the practice of expressing psychological pro- cesses by means of distinct imagery. In saying this he is taking scarcely any language but Hebrew into account. But the feature to which he here alludes is owing to the particular stage of intellectual development that had been reached by the Israelites, is in part peculiar to the poetical*~~

~~*style, and is to be found in like manner among wholly different races. That the Semitic languages are far from possessing the fixity which Renan attributes to them we shall see below. But, however this may be, certain gram- matical peculiarities of the Semitic languages—above all, the predominance of triliteral roots—are so marked that it is scarcely possible to doubt whether any language with which we are tolerably well acquainted is or is not Semitic, Only when a Semitic language has been strongly influenced not only in vocabulary but also in grammar by some non- Semitic speech, as is the case with Amharic, can such a doubt be for a moment entertained.*~~

~~*Many attempts have been made, sometimes in a very Reg. superficial fashion and sometimes by the use of scientific tions methods, to establish a relationship between the Semitic languages and the Indo-European. It was very natural fault to suppose that the tongues of the two races which, with ofspeed, the single exceptions of the Egyptians and the Chinese, have formed and moulded human civilization, who have been near neighbours from the earliest times, and who, moreover, seem to bear a great physical resemblance to one another can be nothing else than two descendants of the same parent speech. But all these endeavours have wholly failed. It is indeed probable that the languages, not only of the Semites and of the Indo-Europeans, but also those of other races, are derived from the same stock, but the separation must have taken place at so remote a period that the changes which these languages underwent in prehistoric times have completely effaced what features they possessed in common; if such features have some times been preserved, they are no longer recognizable. It must be rementbered that it is only in exceptionally favour- able circumstances that cognate languages are so preserved during long periods as to render it possible for scientific analysis to prove their relationship with one another.!*~~

~~*On the other hand, the Semitic languages bear so striking a resemblance in some respects to certain lan- guages of northern Africa that we are forced to assume the existence of a tolerably close relationship between the two groups. We allude to the family of languages known in modern times as the " HHamitic," and composed of the Egyptian, Berber, Beja (Bishari, &c.), and a number of tongues spoken in Abyssinia and the neighbouring countries (Agaw, Galla, Dankali, &c.). It is remarkable that some of the most indispensable words in the Semitic vocabulary (as, for instance, " water," " mouth," and certain numerals) are found in HHamitic also, and that these words happen to be such as cannot well be derived from triliteral Semitic roots, and are more or less independent of the ordinary grammatical rules. We notice, too, important resem- blances in grammar,—for example, the formation of the feminine by means of a ¢ prefixed or affixed, that of the causative by means of s, similarity in the suffixes and pre- fixes of the verbal tenses, and, generally, similarity in the personal pronouns, &c. It must be admitted that there is also much disagreement,—for instance, the widest diver- gence in the mass of the*~~

~~vocabulary ; and this applies to the Semitic languages as compared not only with those Hamitic languages that are gradually becoming known to us at the present day but with the Egyptian, of which we possess documents dating from the fourth millennium before the Christian era. The question is here involved in great difficulties. Some isolated resemblances may, improbable as it appears, have been produced by the bor-~~

~~1 The following is an instance of the manner in which we may be deceived by isolated cases. 'Six'? is in Hebrew shesh, almost exactly like the Sanskrit and modern Persian shash, the Latin sex, &c. But the Indo-European root is sweks, or perhaps even Asweks, whereas the Semitic root is shidth, so that the resemblance is a purely accidental one, produced by phonetic change.~~

~~rowing of words. Uncivilized races, as has been proved with certainty, sometimes borrow from others elements of speech in cases where we should deem such a thing im- possible,—for example, numerals and even personal suffixes. But the great resemblances in grammatical formation can- not be reasonably explained as due to borrowing on the part of the Hamites, more especially as these points of agreement are also found in the language of the Berbers, who are scattered over an enormous territory, and whose speech must have acquired its character long before they came into contact with the Semites. We are even now but imperfectly acquainted with the Hamitic languages; it is not yet certain into what groups they fall; and the relation in which Egyptian stands to Berber on the one hand and to the south Hamitic languages on the other re- quires further elucidation. The attempt to write a com-~~

~~parative grammar of the Semitic and Hamitic languages.~~

~~would be, to say the least, very premature.!~~

~~The connexion between the Semitic languages and the Hamitic appears to indicate that the primitive seat of ' the Semites is to be sought in Africa; for it can scarcely be supposed that the Hamites, amongst whom there are~~

~~*gradual transitions from an almost purely European type to that of the Negroes, are the children of any other land than "the dark continent." There seems, moreover, to be a considerable physical resemblance between the Hamites and the Semites, especially in the case of the southern Arabs ; we need mention only the slight development of the calf of the leg, and the sporadic appearance amongst Semites of woolly hair and prominent jaws.? But both Semites and Hamites have been mingled to a large extent with foreign races, which process must have diminished their mutual similarity. All this, however, is offered not as a definite theory but as a modest hypothesis.*~~

~~*It was once the custom to maintain that the Semites came originally from certain districts in Armenia. This supposition was founded on the book of Genesis, accord- ing to which several of the Semitic nations are descended from Arphachsad, 7.¢., the eponym of the district of Arrapachitis, now called Albak, on the borders of Armenia and Kurdistan. It was also thought that this region was inhabited by the primitive race from which both the Semites and the Indo-Europeans derived their origin. But, as we saw above, this ancient relationship is a matter of some doubt; in any case, the separation does not date from a period so recent that the Semites can be supposed to have possessed any historical tradition concerning it. There cannot be a greater mistake than to imagine that nations have been able to preserve during long ages their recollection of the country whence their supposed ancestors are said to have emigrated. The fantastic notion once in vogue as to the permanence of historical memories among uncivilized races must be wholly abandoned. The period in which the Hebrews, the Arabs, and the other Semitic nations together formed a single people is so distant that none of them can possibly have retained any tradition of it. The opinion that the Hebrews and the tribes most closely related to them were descendants of Arphachsad is apparently due to the legend that Noah's ark landed near this district. The notion has therefore a purely mythical origin. Moreover, in Genesis itself we find a totally different account of the matter, derived from another*~~

~~*Scarcely any man of science now believes in the northern origin of the Semites.*~~

~~*Others, as Sprenger and Schrader,' consider the birth- place of the Semitic race to have been in Arabia. There is much that appears to support this theory. History proves that from a very early period tribes from the deserts of Arabia settled on the cultivable lands which border them and adopted a purely agricultural mode of life. Various traces in the language seem to indicate that the Hebrews and the Aramezans were originally nomads, and Arabia with its northern prolongation (the Syrian desert) is the true home of nomadic peoples. The Arabs are also supposed to display the Semitic character in its purest form, and their language is, on the whole, nearer the original Semitic than are the languages of the cognate races. To this last circumstance we should, how- ever, attach little importance. It is by no means always the case that a language is most faithfully preserved in the country where it originated. The Lithuanians speak the most ancient of all living Indo-European languages, and they are certainly not autochthones of Lithuania; the Romance dialect spoken in the south of Sardinia is far more primitive than that spoken at Rome; and of all living Teutonic languages the most ancient is the Icelandic. It is even doubtful whether the ordinary assumption be cor- rect, that the most primitive of modern Arabic dialects are those spoken in Arabia. Besides, we cannot unre- servedly admit that the Arabs display the Semitic char- acter in its purest form; it would be more correct to say that, under the influence of a country indescribably mono- tonous and of a life ever changing yet ever the same, the inhabitants of the Arabian deserts have developed most exclusively certain of the principal traits of the Semitic race. All these considerations are indecisive; but we will- ingly admit that the theory which regards Arabia as the primitive seat of all Semites is by no means untenable.*~~

~~*Finally, one of the most eminent of contemporary Orien- talists, Ignazio Guidi,* has attempted to prove that the home of the Senites is on the lower Euphrates. He contends that the geographical, botanical, and zoological conceptions which are expressed in the various Semitic languages by the same words, preserved from the time of the dispersion, correspond to the natural characteristics of no country but the above-*~~

~~*mentioned. Great as are the ingenuity and the caution which he displays, it is difficult to accept his conclusions. Several terms might be men- tioned which are part of the common heritage of the northern and the southern Semites, but which can scarcely have been formed in the region of the Euphrates. More- over, the vocabulary of most Semitic languages is but very imperfectly known, and each dialect has lost many primitive words in the course of time. It is therefore very unsafe to draw conclusions from the fact that the various Semitic tongues have no one common designation for many important local conceptions, such as "'mountain." The ordinary words for "man," "old man," "boy," " tent," are quite different in the various Semitic languages, and yet all these are ideas for which the primitive Semites must have had names.*~~

~~*We must therefore for the present confess our inability to make any positive statement with regard to the primitive seat of the original Semitic race.*~~

~~*It is not very easy to settle what is the precise con- Con- nexion between the various Semitic languages, considered 2¢xions individually. In this matter one may easily be led to a hasty conclusions by isolated peculiarities in vocabulary or jtic lan-*~~

~~*guages,*~~

~~*source, which represents all nations, and therefore the Semites among them, as having come from Babylon.*~~

~~*1 This of course applies yet more strongly to Benfey's work, Ueber das Verhdltniss der agyptischen Sprache zum semitischen Sprachstamm (Leipsic, 1844) ; but his book has the permanent merit of having for the first time examined this relationship in a scientific manner.*~~

~~*2 Comp. G. Gerland, Atlas der Ethnographic (Leipsic, 1876), p. 40 of the text.*~~

~~*3 The former has maintained this view in several of his works, the latter in Z.D.M.G., xxvii. 417 sq.*~~

~~*4 'Della Sede Primitiva dei Popoli Semitici," in the Proceedings of the Accademia dei Lincei, 1878-79.*~~

~~*North- erm*~~

~~*and southern groups,*~~

~~*644 SE MT Pie*~~

~~*grammar. Each of the older Semitic languages occasion- ally agrees in grammatical points with some other to which in most respects it bears no very close resemblance, while dialects much more nearly related to it are found to exhibit different formations. features peculiar to itself. For instance, the Hebrew- Phoenician group and the Arabic have a prefixed definite article (the etymological identity of which is, however, not quite certain); the dialect nearest to Arabic, the Sabzean, expresses the article by means of a suffixed 2; the Aramaic, which in general more closely resembles Hebrew than does the Arabic group, expresses it by means of a suffixed 4; whereas the Assyrian in the north and the Ethiopic in the south have no article at all. Of this termination » for*~~

~~*the definite article there is no trace in either Arabic or-*~~

~~*Hebrew; the Sabzean, the Ethiopic, and the Aramaic employ it to give emphasis to demonstrative pronouns ; and the very same usage has been detected in a single Phoenician inscription.! In this case, therefore, Hebrew and Arabic have, independently of one another, lost some- thing which the languages most nearly related to them have preserved. In like manner, the strengthening of the pronoun of the third person by means of ¢ (or ¢é) is only found in Ethiopic, Sabsean, and Pheenician. Aramaic alone has no certain trace of the reflexive conjugation formed with prefixed x; Hebrew alone has no certain trace of the causative with sha.? In several of the Semitic languages we can see how the formation of the passive by means of internal vocal change (as kudlima, 'he was ad- dressed," as distinguished from kallama, 'he addressed ") gradually dropped out of use; in Ethiopic this process was already complete when the language first became literary ; but in Aramaic it was not wholly so. In a few cases phonetic resemblances have been the result of later growth.*~~

~~*For example, the termination of the plural masculine of nouns is in Hebrew tm, in Aramaic én, as in Arabic. But we know that Aramaic also originally had m, Whereas the ancient Arabic forms have after the » an a, which appears to have been originally a long 4 (dna, ina) ; in this latter position (that is, between two vowels) the change of m into n is very improbable. These two similar terminations were therefore originally distinct. We must indeed be very cautious in drawing conclusions from points of agreement between the vocabularies of the various Semitic tongues. The Ethiopians and the Hebrews have the same word for many objects which the other Semites call by other names,—for instance, ‘“‘stone,” “tree,” “enemy,” “enter,” “go out”; and the same may be said of Hebrew as compared with Saban, But to build theories upon such facts would be unsafe, since the words cited are either found, though with some change of meaning, in at least one of the cognate languages, or actu- ally occur, perhaps quite exceptionally and in archaic writings, with the same signification. The sedentary habits of the Ethiopians and the Sabzeans may possibly have rendered it easier for them to retain in their vocabu- lary certain words which were used by the civilized Semites of the north, but which became obsolete amongst the Arabian nomads. To the same cause we may attribute the fact that in religion the Sabzeans resemble the northern Semites more closely than do the tribes of central Arabia ; but these considerations prove nothing in favour of a nearer linguistic affinity.*~~

~~*One thing at least is certain, that Arabic (with Sabzean) and Ethiopic stand in a comparatively close relationship to one another, and compose a group by themselves, as contrasted with the other Semitic languages, Hebreeo- Phoenician, Aramaic, and Assyrian, which constitute the*~~

~~*1 Viz., the great inscription of Byblus, C.U.S., fase. i. No. 1. 2 Shalhebeth, “ flame,” is borrowed from Aramaic.*~~

~~*Each Semitic tongue also possesses |*~~

~~*baNev AG is*~~

~~*northern group. Only in these southern dialects do we find, and that under forms substantially identical, the im- portant innovation known as*~~

~~*the "broken plurals." They agree, moreover, in employing a peculiar development of the verbal root, formed by inserting an @ between the first and second radicals (kdtala, takdtala), in using the vowel a before the third radical in all active perfects—for example, (h)aktala, kattala, instead of the haktil, kattil of the northern dialects—and in many other grammatical phenomena. This is not at all contradicted by the fact that certain aspirated dentals of Arabic (th, dh, th) are replaced in Ethiopic, as in HIebrew and Assyrian, by pure sibilants—that is, s (HIebrew and Assyrian sh), 2, e—whereas in Aramaic they are replaced by simple dentals (t, d, t), which seem to come closer to the Arabic sounds, After the separation of the northern and the southern groups, the Semitic languages possessed all these sounds, as the Arabic does, but afterwards simplified them, for the most part, in one direction or the other. HIence there resulted, as it were by chance, occasional similarities. Even in modern Arabic dialects th, dh have become some- times ¢, d, and sometimes s, z Ethiopic, moreover, has kept d, the most peculiar of Arabic sounds, distinct from ¢, whereas Aramaic has confounded it with the guttural 'ain, and HIebrew and Assyrian with ¢. It is therefore evident that all these languages once possessed the con- sonant in question as a distinct one. One sound, sin, appears only in HIebrew, in Phoenician, and in the older Aramaic. It must originally have been pronounced very like sh, since it is represented in writing by the same character ; in later times it was changed into an ordinary s. Assyrian does not distinguish it from sh.3 The division of the Semitic languages into the northern group and the southern is therefore justified by facts. Even if we were to discover really important grammatical phenomena in which one of the southern dialects agreed with the northern, or vce versa, and that in cases where such phenomena could not be regarded either as remnants of primitive Semitic usage or as instances of parallel but independent development, we ought to remember that the division of the two groups was not necessarily a sudden and instan- taneous occurrence, that even after the separation inter- course may have been carried on between the various tribes who spoke kindred dialects and were therefore still able to understand one another, and that intermediate dialects may once have existed, perhaps such as were in use amongst tribes who came into contact sometimes with the agricultural population of the north and sometimes with the nomads of the south (see below). All this is purely hypothetical, whereas the*~~

~~*division between the northern and the southern Semitic languages is a recognized fact.*~~

~~*Although we cannot deny that there may formerly have existed Semitic languages quite distinct from those with which we are acquainted, yet that such was actually the case cannot be proved. Nor is there any reason to think that the domain of the Semitic languages ever extended very far beyond its present mits. Some time ago many scholars believed that they were once spoken in Asia Minor and even in Europe, but, except in the Phcenician colonies, this notion rested upon no solid proof. It cannot be argued with any great degree of plausibility that even the Cilicians, who from a very early period held constant intercourse with the Syrians and the Phoenicians, spoke a Semitic language.*~~

~~*3 It is not quite certain whether all the Semitic languages originally had the hardest of the gutturals gz and kh in exactly the same places that they occupy in Arabic. In the case of k4—where Ethiopic agrees with Arabic—this is at least probable, since there seem to be traces of itin Assyrian. But it would appear that in Hebrew and Aramaic*~~

~~*the distinction between gh and 'ayin, between kh and h, was often different from what it is in Arabic.*~~

~~*Lost Semitic an-*~~

~~*guages.*~~

~~*brew.*~~

~~*SH WITIC*~~

~~*Hebrew.—Hebrew and Pheenician are but dialects of one and the same language. It is only as the language of the people of Israel that Hebrew can be known with any pre- cision. Since in the Old Testament a few of the neigh- bouring peoples are represented as being descended from Eber, the eponym of the Hebrews, that is, are regarded as nearly related to the latter, it was natural to suppose that they likewise spoke Hebrew,—a supposition which, at least in the case of the Moabites, has been fully confirmed by the discovery of the Mesha inscription (date, soon after 900 B.0.). The language of this inscription scarcely differs from that of the Old Testament ; the only important distinction is the occurrence of a reflexive form (with ¢ after the first radical), which appears nowhere else but in Arabic. We may remark in passing that the style of this inscription is quite that of the Old Testament, and enables us to maintain with certainty that a similar historical literature existed amongst the Moabites. But it must be remembered that ancient Semitic inscriptions exhibit, in a sense, nothing but the skeleton of the language, since they do not express the vowels at all, or do so only in certain cases ; still less do they indicate other phonetic modifications, such as the doubling of consonants, &c. It is therefore very possible that to the ear the language of Moab seemed to differ considerably from that of the Judeeans,*~~

~~*The Mesha inscription is the only non-Israclite source from which any knowledge of ancient Hebrew can be obtained. (See Hesrew LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE.) Some fragments in the Old Testament belong to the second millennium before our era,—particularly the song of Deborah (Judges v.), a document which, in spite of its many obscuritics in matters of detail, throws much light on the condition of the Israelites at the time when the Canaanites were still contending with them for the posses- sion of the country. 'The first rise of an historical litera- ture may very probably date.from before the establishment of the monarchy. Various portions of the Old Testament belong to the time of the earlier kings; but it was under the later kings that a great part of extant Hebrew litera- ture came into shape. To this age also belong the Siloam inscription and a few*~~

~~seals and gems bearing the names of Israelites. The Hebrew language is thus known to us from a very ancient period. But we are far from being acquainted with its real phonetic condition in the time of David or Isaiah. For, much as we owe to the labours of the later Jewish schools, which with infinite care fixed the pronunciation of the sacred text by adding vowels and other signs, it is evident that even at the best they could only represent the pronunciation of the language in its latest stage, not that of very early ages. Besides, their object was not to exhibit Hebrew simply as it was, but to show how it should be read in the solemn chant of the synagogue. Accordingly, the pronunciation of the older period may have differed considerably from that repre- sented by the punctuation. Such differences are now and then indicated by the customary spelling of the ancient texts,! and sometimes the orthography is directly at vari- ance with the punctuation.? In a few rare cases we may derive help from the somewhat older tradition contained in the representation of Hebrew words and proper names by Greek letters, especially in the ancient Alexandrine translation of the Bible (the so-called Septuagint). It is of particular importance to remark that this older tradi- tion still retains an original @ in many cases where the~~

~~1 For example, we may conclude with tolerable certainty, from the presence and absence of the vowel-letters y and 2, that in oldér times the accented e and o were not pronounced long, and that, on the other hand, the diphthongs aw and ai were used for the later 6 and é.~~

~~2 The very first word of the Bible contains an Aleph (spdritus lenis), which is required by etymology and was once audible, but which the pronunciation represented by the point-system ignores.~~

~~punctuation has the later ¢ or e. We have examined this point somewhat in detail, in order to contradict the false but ever-recurring notion that the ordinary text of the Bible represents without any essential modification the pronunciation of ancient Hebrew, whereas in reality it ex- presses (in a very instructive and careful manner, it is true) only its latest~~

~~*development, and that for the purpose of solemn public recitation. A clear trace of dialectical differences within Israel is found in Judges xii. 6, which ic that the ancient Ephraimites pronounced s instead of sh,*~~

~~*The destruction of the Judean kingdom dealt a heavy Period of But it is going too far to exile in*~~

~~*blow to the HIebrew language. suppose that it was altogether banished from ordinary life at the time of the exile, and that Aramaic came into use among all the Jews. In the East even small communities, especially if they form a religious body, often cling per- sistently to their mother-tongue, though they may be sur- rounded by a population of alien speech; and such was probably the case with the Jews in Babylonia. See HIeprew Lanevacs, vol, xi. p. 597. Even so late as the time of Ezra HIebrew was in all probability the ordinary language of the new community. In Neh. xiii. 24 we find a complaint that the children of Jews by wives from Ashdod and other places spoke half in the "Jewish" language and half in the language of Ashdod, or whatever else may have been the tongue of their mothers. No one can sup- pose that Nehemiah would have been particularly zealous that the children of Jews should speak an Aramaic dialect with correctness. HIe no doubt refers to HIebrew as it was then spoken,—a stage in its development of which Nehemiah's own work gives a very fair idea. And, more- over, the inhabitants of Ashdod spoke HIebrew. G. HIoff- mann? has deciphered inscriptions (written in Greek letters, but, after the HIebrew fashion, from right to left) on two coins struck about 150 years after Nehemiah, which are in pure HIebrew'; nor does the language seem to diverge at all from that of the Old Testament. It is therefore probable that Nehemiah alludes only to a slightly different local dialect. If the Philistines of Ashdod still continued to speak HIebrew about the year 300 B.c., it cannot be supposed that the Jews had given up this their own lan- guage nearly three centuries earlier. We may also con- clude that the Philistines from the earliest period spoke the same language as their eastern neighbours, with whom they had so often been at war, but had also lived in close pacific intercourse.*~~

~~*After the time of Alexander large bodies of the Jewish HIebrew population were settled in Alexandria and other western SUP*~~

~~*cities, and were very rapidly Hellenized. Meanwhile the*~~

~~*principal language of Syria and the neighbouring countries, Aramaic,*~~

~~*Aramaic, the influence of which may be perceived even in some pre-exilic writings, began to spread more and more among the Jews. Hebrew gradually ceased to be the lan- guage of the people and became that of religion and the schools. The book of Daniel, written in 167 or 166 z.c., begins in Hebrew, then suddenly passes into Aramaic, and ends again in Hebrew. Similarly the redactor of Ezra (or more correctly of the Chronicles, of which Ezra and Nehe- miah form the conclusion) borrows large portions from an Aramaic work, in most cases without translating them into Hebrew. No reason can be assigned for the use of Aramaic in Jewish works intended primarily for Jerusalem, unless it were already the dominant speech, whilst, on the other hand, it was very natural for a pious Jew to write in the*~~

~~*3 See Sallet's Zeitschrift fir Numismatik, 1882 (Berlin).*~~

~~*4 The inscriptions, short as they are, exhibit the exclusively Hebrew word tr ('ir), "town," and the feminine asina (hasinah), 'the strong," with the termination ¢A (not at, asin Phoenician). Had the Ashdodites*~~

~~*been accustomed to use a dead language on their coins they would certainly have employed the native Semitic writing.*~~

~~*Hebrew of the schools.*~~

~~*Medi- eeval Hebrew.*~~

~~*Char- acter of ancient Hebrew.*~~

~~*646 SEMITIC*~~

~~*ancient "holy" language even after it had ceased to be spoken, Esther, Ecclesiastes, and a few Psalms, which be- long to the 3d and 2d centuries before our era, are indeed written in Hebrew, but are so strongly tinctured by the Aramaic influence as to prove that the writers usually spoke*~~

~~*Aramaic. We are not likely to be far wrong in saying that in the Maccabzean age Hebrew had died out among the Jews, and there is nothing to show that it sur- vived longer amongst any of the neighbouring peoples.*~~

~~*But in the last period of the history of Jerusalem, and still more after the destruction of the city by Titus, the Jewish schools played so important a part that the life of the Hebrew language was in a manner prolonged. The lectures and discussions of the learned were carried on in that tongue. We have very extensive specimens of this more modern Hebrew in the Mishnah and other works, and scattered pieces throughout both Talmuds. But, just as the "classical" Sanskrit, which has been spoken and written by the Brahmans during the last twenty-five cen- turies, differs considerably from the language which was once in use among the people, so this "language of the learned" diverges in many respects from the "holy lan- guage"; and this distinction is one of which the rabbis were perfectly conscious. The 'language of the learned" borrows a great part of its vocabulary from Aramaic,! and this exercises a strong influence upon the gram- matical forms, The grammar is perceptibly modified by the peculiar style of these writings, which for the most part treat of legal and ritual questions in a strangely laconic and pointed manner. But, large as is the propor- tion of foreign words and artificial as this language is, it contains a considerable number of purely Hebrew elements which do not appear in the Old Testament. Although we may generally assume, in the case of a word occurring in the Mishnah but not found in the Old Testament, that it is borrowed from Aramaic, there are several words of this class which, by their radical consonants, prove them- selves to be genuine Hebrew. And even some gram- matical phenomena of this language are to be regarded as a genuine development of Hebrew, though they are unknown to earlier Hebrew speech.*~~

~~*From the beginning of the Middle Ages down to our own times the Jews have produced an enormous mass of writings in Hebrew, sometimes closely following the lan- guage of the Bible, sometimes that of the Mishnah, some- times introducing in a perfectly inorganic manner a great quantity of Aramaic forms, and occasionally imitating the Arabic style. The study of these variations has but little interest for the linguist,*~~

~~since they are nothing but a purely artificial imitation, dependent upon the greater or less skill of the individual. The language of the Mishnah stands in much closer connexion with real life, and has a definite raison Wétre; all later Hebrew is to be classed with medi- eval and modern Latin. Much Hebrew also was written in the Middle Ages by the hostile brethren of the Jews, the Samaritans ; but for the student of language these produc- tions have, at the most, the charm attaching to curiosities.~~

~~The ancient Hebrew language, especially in the matter of syntax, has an essentially primitive character, Para- taxis of sentences prevails over hypotaxis to a greater extent than in any other literary Semitic language with which we are well acquainted. The favourite method is to link sentences together by means of a simple "and." There is a great lack of particles to express with clearness the more subtle connexion of ideas. The use of the verbal tenses is In a great measure determined by the imagination,~~

~~1 It is a characteristic feature that "my father" and " my mother " are here expressed by purely Aramaic forms. Even the learned did not wish to call their "papas" and "mammas" by any other names than those to which they had been accustomed in infancy.~~

~~LANGUZAGHIs~~

~~which regards things unaccomplished as accomplished and the past as still present. There are but few words or inflexions to indicate slight modifications of meaning, though in ancient times the language may perhaps have distinguished certain moods of the verb somewhat more plainly than the present punctuation does. But in any case this language was far less suited for the definite ex- pression of studied thought, and less suited still for the treatment of abstract subjects, than for poetry. We must remember, however, that as long as Hebrew was a living language it never had to be used for the expression of the abstract. Had it lived somewhat longer it might very possibly have learnt to adapt itself better to the formulat- ing of systematic conceptions. The only book in the Old Testament which attempts to grapple with an abstract subject in plain prose—namely, Ecclesiastes—dates from a time when Hebrew was dying out or was already dead, That the gifted author does not always succeed~~

~~*in giving clear expression to his ideas is partly due to the fact that the language had never been employed for any scientific purposes whatsoever. With regard to grammatical forms, Hebrew has lost much that is still preserved in Arabic ; but the greater richness of Arabic is in part the result of later development.*~~

~~*The vocabulary of the Hebrew language is, as we have Vocab said, known but imperfectly. The Old Testament is no lary.*~~

~~*very large work ; it contains, moreover, many repetitions, and a great nuniber of pieces which are of little use to the lexicographer. On the other hand, much may be derived from certain poetical books, such as Job. The numerous dra& Aeydpeva are a suflicient proof that many more words existed than appear in the Old Testament, the writers of which never had occasion to use them. Were we in possession of the whole Hebrew vocabulary in the time of Jeremiah, for example, we should be far better able to determine the relation in which Hebrew stands to the other Semitic languages, the Old Testament would be far more intelligible to us, and it would be very much easier to detect the numerous corrupt passages in our text.*~~

~~*Phenician.—This dialect closely resembles Hebrew, and Pheni-*~~

~~*is known to us from only one authentic source, namely, inscriptions, some of which date from about 600 B,c. or earlier; but the great mass of them begin with the 4th century before our era. These inscriptions? we owe to the Phoenicians of the mother-country and the neighbour- ing regions (Cyprus, Egypt, and Greece), as well as to the Phoenicians of Africa, especially Carthage. Inscriptions are, however, a very insufficient means for obtaining the knowledge of a language. The number of subjects treated in them is not large; many of the most important gram- matical forms and many of the words most used in ordi- nary life donot oceur. Moreover, the "lapidary style" is often very hard to understand. 'The repetition of obscure phrases, in the same connexion, in several inscriptions does not help to make them more intelligible. Of what use is it to us that, for instance, thousands of Carthaginian inscriptions begin with the very same incomprehensible dedication to two divinities? The difficulty of interpreta- tion is greatly increased by the fact that single*~~

~~*words are very seldom separated from one another, and that vowel- letters are used extremely sparingly. We therefore come but too often upon very ambiguous groups of letters, In spite of this, our knowledge of Phoenician has made con- siderable progress of late. Some assistance is also got from Greek and Latin writers, who cite not only many Pheenician proper names but single Phoenician words: Plautus in particular inserts in the Ponulus whole pass- ages in Punic, some of which are accompanied by a Latin*~~

~~*2 The scattered materials are being collected in the Corpus Inserip- tionum Semiticarum of the Paris Academy.*~~

~~*ic, certain is known.*~~

~~*ea er i Tf isc*~~

~~*translation, This source of information must, however, be used with great caution. It was not the object of Plautus to exhibit the Punic language with precision, a task for which the Latin alphabet is but ill adapted, but only to make the populace laugh at the jargon of the hated Carthaginians. Moreover, he had to force the Punic words into Latin senarii; and finally the text, being unintelligible to copyists, is terribly corrupt. Much ingenuity has been wasted on the Punic of Plautus; but the passage yields valuable results to cautious investigation which does not try to explain too much.! In its grammar Pheenician closely resembles Hebrew. In both dialects the consonants are the same, often in contrast to Aramaic and other cognate languages.2 As to vowels, Phcenician seems to diverge rather more from Hebrew. The connecting of clauses is scarcely carried further in the former language than in the latter.*~~

~~*Aramaic.—Aramaic is nearly related to Hebreeo-Phceni- cian ; but there is nevertheless a sharp line of demarcation between the two groups. Of its original home nothing In the Old Testament "Aram" appears at an early period as a designation of certain districts in Syria ("Aram of Damascus," &c.) and in Mesopotamia ("Aram of the Two Rivers"). The language of the sigs a Gildemeister, in Ritschl's Plautus (vol. ii fase, v., Leipsic,*~~

~~2 A an early period the Phenician pronunciation may have distin- guished a greater number of original consonants than are distinguished in writing. It is at least remarkable that the Greeks render the name of the city of Cur (Hebrew Qér), which must originally have been pro- nounced Thurr, with a 7 (TYpos), and the name of Cidén, where the ¢ runs through all the Semitic languages, with ao (Ziduy). Distinctions of this kind, justified by etymology, have perhaps been obscured in Hebrew by the imperfection of the alphabet. In the case of stm and~~

~~shim this can be positively proved. 3 Kén nadar, "had vowed," Idal. 5 (C.I.S., Pheen., No. 98).~~

~~Arameans gradually spread far and wide, and occupied all Syria, both those regions which were before in the possession of the Kheta, probably a non-Semitic people,~~

~~and those which were most likely inhabited by Canaanite~~

~~tribes ; last of all, Palestine became Aramaized. Towards the east this language was spoken on the Euphrates, and throughout the districts of the Tigris south and west of the Armenian and Kurdish mountains; the province in which the capitals of the Arsacides and the Sdsdnians were situated was called "the country of the Aramzans." In Babylonia and Assyria a large, or perhaps the larger, portion of the population were most probably Aramzans, even at a very early date, whilst Assyrian was the language of the Government.~~

~~The oldest extant Aramaic documents consist of inscrip- tions on monuments and on seals and gems. In the Persian period Aramaic was the official language of the provinces west of the Euphrates; and this explains the fact that coins which were struck by governors and vassal princes in Asia Minor, and of which the stamp was in some cases the work of skilled Greek artists, bear Aramaic inscrip- tions, whilst those of other coins are Greek. This, of~~

~~*course, does not prove that Aramaic was ever spoken in*~~

~~*Asia Minor and as far north as Sinope and the Helles- pont. In Egypt Aramaic inscriptions have been found of the Persian period, one bearing the date of the fourth year of Xerxes (482 3.c.)4; we have also official documents on papyrus, unfortunately in a very tattered condition for the most part, which prove that the Persians preferred using this convenient language to mastering the difficulties of the Egyptian systems of writing. It is, further, very possible that at that time there were considerable numbers of Aramzans in Egypt, just as there were of Phcenicians, Greeks, and Jews. . But probably this preference for Aramaic originated under the Assyrian empire, in which a very large proportion of the population spoke Aramaic, and in which this language would naturally occupy a more important position than it did under the Persians. We therefore understand why it was taken for granted that a great Assyrian official could speak Aramaic (2 Kings xviii. 26; Isa. xxxvi, 11), and for the same reason the digni- taries of Judah appear to have learned the language (cbid.), namely, in order to communicate with the Assyrians.® The short dominion of the Chaldzans very probably strengthened this preponderance of Aramaic.*~~

~~*The Aramaic portions of the Old Testament show us Biblical the form of the language which was in use among the Aramaic.*~~

~~*Jews of Palestine. Isolated passages in Ezra perhaps*~~

~~*4 See the Paleographical Society's Oriental Series, plate 1xiii.*~~

~~*5 We possess certain small documents in Semitic writing which date from the Assyrian period, but of which the linguistic character is still very obscure; they contain Aramaic, Phoenician, and probably Assyrian forms. See 7. D.M.G., xxxiii. 321.*~~

~~*6 Some traces of this phenomenon are found later.*~~

~~*Aramaic of Tar- gums,&c.*~~

~~*648 Sk MIT*~~

belong to the Persian period, but have certainly been re- modelled by a later writer.1 Yet in Ezra we find a few antique forms which do not occur in Daniel. The Aramaic pieces contained in the Bible have the great advantage of being furnished with vowels and other orthographical signs, though these were not inserted until long after the composition of the books, and are sometimes at variance with the text itself. But, since Aramaic was still a living language when the punctuation came into existence, and since the lapse of time was not so very great, the tradition ran less risk of corruption than in the case of Hebrew. Its general correctness is further attested by the innumer- able points of resemblance between this language and Syriac, with which we are accurately acquainted. The Aramaic of the Bible exhibits various antique features which afterwards disappeared,—for example, the formation of the passive by means of internal vowel-change, and the causative with ha instead of with a,—phenomena which have been falsely explained as Hebraisms. Biblical Aramaic agrees in all essential points with the language used in the numerous inscriptions of Palmyra (beginning soon before the Christian era and extending to about the end of the 3d century) and on the Nabatzean coins and stone monuments (concluding about the year 100). Aramaic was the language of Palmyra, the aristocracy of which were to a great extent of Arabian extraction. In the northern portion of the Nabatzan kingdom (not far from Damascus) there was probably a large Aramaic population, but farther south Arabic was spoken. At that time, how- ever, Aramaic was highly esteemed as a cultivated lan- guage, for which reason the Arabs in question made use

of it, as their own language was not reduced to writing,—

just as in those ages Greek inscriptions were set up in many districts where no one spoke Greek. That the Nabatzans were Arabs is sufficiently proved by the fact that, with the exception of a few Greek names, almost all the numerous names which occur in the Nabatzean inscrip- tions are Arabic, in many cases with distinctly Arabic terminations. A further proof of this is that in the great inscriptions over the tombs of Hejr (not far from Teim4) the native Arabic continually shows through the foreign disguise,—for instance, in the use of Arabic words when- ever the writer does not happen to remember the corre- sponding Aramaic terms, in the use of the

~~*Arabic particle Ja, of the Arabic ghair, "other than," and in several syntactic features. The great inscriptions cease with the overthrow of the Nabatzean kingdom by Trajan (105) ; but the Arabian nomads in those countries, especially in the Sinaitic peninsula, often scratched their names on the rocks down to a later period, adding some benedictory formula in Aramaic. The fact that several centuries after- wards the name of "'Nabateean" was used by the Arabs as synonymous with " Aramzan" was probably due to the gradual spread of Aramaic over a great part of what had once been the country of the Nabateans. In any case Aramaic then exercised an immense influence. This is also proved by the place which it occupies in the strange Pahlavi writing, various branches of which date from the time of the Parthian empire (see Pantavi). Biblical Aramaic, as also the language of the Palmyrene and Nabatsan inscriptions, may be described as an older form of Western Aramaic. The opinion that the Palestinian Jews brought their Aramaic dialect direct from Babylon — whence the incorrect name " Chaldee " — is altogether untenable.*~~

~~*We may now trace somewhat further the development of Western Aramaic in Palestine; but unhappily few of*~~

~~*1 The decree which is said to have been sent by Hzra is in its present form a comparatively late production.*~~

~~*ANGUAGES*~~

~~*the sources from which we derive our information can be thoroughly trusted. In the synagogues it was necessary that the reading of the Bible should be followed by an oral "targuim" or translation into Aramaic, the language of the people. The Targum was at a later period fixed in writing, but the officially sanctioned form of the Targum to the Pentateuch (the so-called Targum of Onkelos) and of that to the prophets (the so-called Jonathan) was not finally settled till the 4th or 5th century, and not in Palestine but in Babylonia. The redactors of the Targum preserved on the whole the older Palestinian dialect ; yet that of Babylon, which differed considerably from the former, exercised a vitiating influence. The punctuation, which was added later, first in Babylonia, is far less trust-worthy than that of the Aramaic pieces in the Bible. The language of*~~

~~*Onkelos and Jonathan differs but little from Biblical Aramaic. The language spoken some time after- wards by the Palestinian Jews, especially in Galilee, is exhibited in a series of rabbinical works, the so-called Jeru- salem Targums (of which, however, those on the Hagio-grapha are in some cases of later date), a few Midrashic works, and the Jerusalem Talmud. Unfortunately all these books, of which the Midrashim and the Talmud contain much Hebrew as well as Aramaic, have not been handed down with care, and require to be used with great caution for linguistic purposes. Moreover, the influence of the older language and orthography has in part ob- scured the characteristics of these popular dialects; for example, various gutturals are still written, although they are no longer pronounced. The adaptation of the spelling to the real pronunciation is carried furthest in the Jeru- salem Talmud, but not in a consistent manner. Besides, all these books are without vowel-points ; but the frequent use of vowel-letters in the later Jewish works renders this defect less sensible.*~~

~~*Not only the Jews but also the Christians of Palestine retained their native dialect for some time as an ecclesi- astical and literary language. We possess translations of the Gospels and fragments of other works in this dialect by the Palestinian Christians dating from about the 5th century, accompanied by a punctuation which was not added till some tine later. This dialect closely resembles that of the Palestinian Jews, as was to be expected from the fact that those who spoke it were of Jewish origin.*~~

~~*Finally, the Samaritans, among the inhabitants of Samari-*~~

~~*Palestine, translated their only sacred book, the Pentateuch, tan into their own dialect. The critical study of this trans- lation proves that the language which lies at its base was very much the same as that of the neighbouring Jews. Perhaps, indeed, the Samaritans may have carried the softening of the gutturals a little further than the Jews of Galilee. Their absurd attempt to embellish the language of the translation by arbitrarily introducing forms borrowed from the Hebrew original has given rise to the false notion that Samaritan is a mixture of Hebrew and Aramaic. The introduction of Hebrew and even of Arabic words and*~~

~~*forms was practised in Samaria on a still larger scale by copyists who lived after Aramaic had become extinct. The later works written in the Samaritan dialect are, from a linguistic point of view, as worthless as the compositions of Samaritans in HIebrew ; the writers, who spoke Arabic, endeavoured to write in languages with which they were but half acquainted.*~~

~~*All these Western Aramaic dialects, including that of the oldest inscriptions, have this feature among others in common, that they form the third person singular masculine and the third person plural masculine and feminine in the imperfect by prefixing y, as do the other Semitic languages. And in these dialects the termina- tion @ (the so-called "status emphaticus ") still retained*~~

~~*he or san*~~

~~*a .*~~

~~*Poem tric RaANGUAGES*~~

~~*the meaning of a definite article down to a tolerably late period.*~~

~~*As early as the 7th century the conquests of the Moslems greatly circumscribed the domain of Aramaic and a few centuries later it was almost completely supplanted in the west by Arabic. For the Christians of those countries, who, like every one else, spoke Arabic, the Palestinian dialect was no longer of importance, and they adopted as their ecclesiastical language the dialect of the other Aramzan Christians, the Syriac (or Edessene). The only localities where a Western Aramaic dialect still survives are a few villages in Anti-Libanus. Our information upon this subject is but slight and fragmentary ; but it is hoped that Professors Prym and Socin will soon be able to furnish more ample details.*~~

~~*The popular Aramaic dialect of Babylonia from the 4th to the 6th century of our era is exhibited in the Babylonian Talmud, in which, however, as in the Jeru-*~~

~~*_ salem Talmud, there is a constant mingling of Aramaic*~~

~~*and Hebrew passages. To a somewhat later period, and probably not to exactly the same district of Babylonia, belong the writings of the MANDmANS (q.v.), a strange sect, half Christian and half heathen, who from a linguistic point of view possess the peculiar advantage of having remained almost entirely free from the influence of Hebrew, which is so perceptible in the Aramaic writings of Jews as well as of Christians. The orthography of the Man- dzans comes nearer than that of the Talmud to the real pronunciation, and in it the softening of the gutturals is most clearly seen. In other respects there is a close resem- blance between Mandean and the language of the Babylon- ian Talmud. The forms of the imperfect which we have enumerated above take in these dialects » or U1 In Babylonia, as in Syria, the language of the Arabic con- querors rapidly drove out that of the country. The latter has long been totally extinct, unless possibly a few surviv- ing Mandeans still speak among themselves a more modern form of their dialect.*~~

~~*At Edessa, in the west of Mesopotamia, the native dialect had already been used for some time as a literary language, and had been reduced to rule through the influ- ence of the schools (as is proved by the fixity of the grammar and orthography) even before Christianity acquired power in the country in the 2d century. At an early period the Old and New Testaments were here translated, with the help of Jewish tradition. This version (the so-called Peshitta or Peshito) became the Bible of Aramzan Chris- tendom, and Edessa became its capital. Thus the Aramzan Christians of the neighbouring countries, even those who were subjects of the Persian empire, adopted the Edessan dialect as the language of the church, of literature, and of cultivated intercourse. Since the ancient name of the inhabitants, " Arameans," just like that of "EAAnves, had acquired in the minds of Jews and Christians the un- pleasant signification of "heathens," it was generally avoided, and in its place the Greek terms "Syrians" and "Syriac" were used. But "Syriac" was also the name given by the Jews and Christians of Palestine to their own language, and both Greeks and Persians designated the Arameans of Babylonia as "Syrians." It is therefore, properly speaking, incorrect to employ the word "Syriac" as meaning the language of Edessa alone; but, since it was the most important of these dialects, it has the best claim to this generally received appellation. It has, as we have said, a shape very*~~

~~definitely fixed; and in it the above-inentioned forms of the imperfect take ann. As in the Babylonian dialects, the termination @ has become so completely a part of the substantive to which it is added that it has wholly lost the meaning of the definite~~

~~I See Noldeke, Mandédische Grammatik (Halle, 1875).~~

~~article, whereby the clearness of the language is perceptibly impaired. The influence exercised by Greek is very appa- rent in Syriac. From the 3d to the 7th entury an exten- sive literature was produced in this language, consisting chiefly, but not entirely, of ecclesiastical works. In the development of this literature the Syrians of the Persian empire took an eager part. In the Eastern Roman empire Syriac was, after Greek, by far the most important lan- guage ; and under the Persian kings it virtually occupied a more prominent position as an organ of culture than the Persian language itself. The conquests of the Arabs totally changed this state of things. But meanwhile, even in Edessa, a considerable difference had arisen between the written language and the popular speech, in which the pro- cess of modification was still going on. About the year 700 it became a matter of absolute necessity to systematize the grammar of the language and to introduce some means of clearly expressing the vowels. The principal object aimed at was that the text of the Syriac Bible should be recited in a correct manner. But, as it happened, the eastern pronunciation differed in many respects from that of the west. The local dialects had to some extent exer- cised an influence over the pronunciation of the literary tongue ; and, on the other hand, the political separation between Rome and Persia, and yet more the ecclesiastical schism —since the Syrians of the east were mostly Nesto- rians, those of the west Monophysites and Catholics—had produced divergencies between the traditions of the various schools, Starting, therefore, from a common source, two distinct systems of punctuation were formed, of which the western is the more~~

~~convenient, but the eastern the more exact and generally the more in accordance with the ancient pronunciation; it has, for example, in place of the western 6, and 6 in many cases where the western Syrians pronounce @ In later times the two systems have been intermingled in various ways.~~

~~Arabic everywhere put a speedy end to the predomi- nance of Aramaic—a predominance which had lasted for more than a thousand years—and soon began to drive Syriac out of use. At the beginning of the 11th century the learned metropolitan of Nisibis, Elias bar Shinndya, wrote his books intended for Christians either entirely in Arabic or in Arabic and Syriac arranged in parallel columns, that is, in the spoken and in the learned language. Thus, too, it became necessary to have Syriac-Arabic glossaries. Up to the present day Syriac has remained in use for literary and ecclesiastical purposes, and may perhaps be even spoken in some monasteries and schools; but it has long been a dead language. When Syriac became ex- tinct in Edessa and its neighbourhood is not known with certainty.~~

~~This language, called Syriac par excellence, is not the Neo- immediate source whence are derived the Aramaic dialects 5ytiac~~

~~still surviving in the northern districts. In the mountains known as the Tur 'Abdin in Mesopotamia, in certain districts east and north of Mosul, in the neighbouring mountains of Kurdistan, and again beyond them on the western coast of Lake Urmia, Aramaic dialects are spoken by Christians and occasionally by Jews, and some of these dialects we know with tolerable precision. The dialect of Tur 'Abdin seems to differ considerably from all the rest ; the country beyond the Tigris is, however, divided, as regards language, amongst a multitude of local dialects. Among these, that of Urmia has become the most import- ant, since American missionaries have formed a new literary language out of it. Moreover, the Roman Propaganda has printed books in two of the Neo-Syriac dialects. All these dialects exhibit a complete transformation of the ancient type, to a degree incomparably greater than is the case, for example, with Mandzan. In particular, the ancient XXI.—82~~

~~dialects.~~

~~Charac- teristics of Aramaic.~~

~~650 >i Wit re~~

~~verbal tenses have almost entirely disappeared, but have been successfully replaced by new forms derived from parti- ciples. There dre also other praiseworthy innovations. The dialect of Tur 'Abdin has, for instance, again coined a definite article. By means of violent contractions and phonetic changes some of these dialects, particularly that of Urmia, have acquired a euphony scarcely known in any other of the Semitic languages, with their "stridentia anhelantiaque verba" (Jerome). These Aramzans have all adopted a motley crowd of foreign words, from the Arabs, Kurds, and Turks, on whose borders they live and of whose languages they can often speak at least one. Aramaic is frequently described as a poor language. This is an opinion which we are unable to share. It is quite possible, even now, to extract a very large vocabulary from the more ancient Aramaic writings, and yet in this pre- dominantly theological literature a part only of the words that existed in the language have been preserved. It is true that Aramaic, having from the earliest times come into close contact with foreign languages, has borrowed many words from them, in particular from Persian and Greek ; but, if we leave out of consideration the fact that many Syrian authors are in the habit of using, as ornaments or for convenience (especially in translations), a great number of Greek words, some of which were unintelligible to their readers, we shall find that the proportion of really foreign words in older Aramaic books is not larger, perhaps even smaller, than the proportion of Romance words in German or Dutch. The influence of Greek upon the syntax and phraseology of Syriac is not so great as that which it has exercised, through the medium of Latin, upon the literary languages of modern Europe. With regard to sounds, the most characteristic feature of Aramaic (besides its peculiar treatment of the dentals) is that it is poorer in vowels than IIebrew, not to speak of Arabic, since nearly all short vowels in open syllables either wholly disappear or leave but a slight trace behind them (the so-called shéwA). In this respect the punctuation of Biblical Aramaic agrees with Syriac, in which we are able to observe from very early times the number of vowels by examining the metri- cal pieces constructed according to the number of syllables, and with the Mandan,~~

which expresses every vowel by means of a vowel-letter. When several distinct dialects so agree, the phenomenon in question must be of great antiquity. There are nevertheless traces which prove that the language once possessed more vowels, and the Ara- means, for instance, with whom David fought may have pronounced many vowels which afterwards disappeared. Another peculiarity of Aramaic is that it lends itself far more readily to the linking together of sentences than Hebrew and Arabic. It possesses many conjunctions and adverbs to express slight modifications of meaning. It is also very free as regards the order of words. That this quality, which renders it suitable for a clear and limpid prose style, is not the result of Greek influence may be seen by the Mandzan, on which Greek has left no mark. In its attempts to express everything clearly Aramaic often becomes prolix,—for example, by using additional personal and demonstrative pronouns. 'The contrast be- tween Aramaic as the language of prose and Hebrew as the language of poetry is one which naturally strikes us, but we must beware of carrying it too far. Even the Aramexans were not wholly destitute of poetical talent. Although the religious poetry of the Syrians has but little charm for us, yet real poetry occurs in the few extant frag- ments of Gnostic hymns. Moreover, in the modern dialects popular songs have been discovered which, though very simple, are fresh and full of feeling! It is therefore by no

1 See Socin, Die neu-araméischen Dialekte von Urinia bis Mosul, Tiibingen, 1882 ; comp. Z.D.M.G., xxxvi. 679 sq.

means improbable that in ancient times Aramaic was used in poems which, being contrary to the theological tendency of Syrian civilization, were doomed to total oblivion,

Assyrian.—Long before Aramaic another Semitic lan- guage flourished in the regions of the Tigris and on the lower Euphrates which has been preserved to us in the cuneiform inscriptions. It is usually called the Assyrian, after the name of the country where the first and most important excavations were made ; but the term "Babylonian" would be more correct, as Babylon was the birthplace of this lan- guage and of the civilization to which it belonged. Certain Babylonian inscriptions appear

~~*to go back to the fourth millennium before our era; but the great mass of these cuneiform inscriptions date from between 1000 and 500 B.C. Assyrian seems to be more nearly related to Hebrew than to Aramaic; we may cite, for example, the relative particle sha, which is also used as a sign of the genitive, and is identical with the Phcenician ash and the Hebrew asher (she, sha), also the similarity between Assyrian and Hebrew in the treatment of the aspirated dentals. On the other hand, Assyrian differs in many respects from all the cognate languages. The ancient perfect has wholly dis- appeared, or left but few traces, and the gutturals, with the exception of the hard £4, have been smoothed down to a degree which is only paralleled in the modern Aramaic dialects. So at least it would appear from the writing, or rather from the'manner in which Assyriologists transcribe it. The Babylonian form 6é/ (occurring: in Isa. xlvi. 1; Jer, 1. 2 and li, 44,—passages all belonging to the 6th century B.C.), the name of the god who was originally called bal, is a confirmation of this; but, on the other hand, the name of the country where Babylon was situated, viz., Shin'ar, and that of a Babylonian god, 'Anammelekh (2 Kings xvii. 31), as well as those of the tribes Shé'a and K6o'a (Ezek. xxiii. 23) who inhabited the Assyrio- Babylonian territory, seem to militate against this theory, as they are spelt in the Old Testament with 'ain. The Assyrian system of writing is so complicated, and, in spite of its vast apparatus, is so imperfect an instrument for the accurate representation of sounds, that we are hardly yet bound to regard the transcriptions of contemporary Assyrio- logists as being in all points of detail the final dictum of science, It is, for example, very doubtful whether the vowels at the end of words and the appended m were really pronounced in all cases, as this would presuppose a complete confusion in the grammar of the language. However this may be, the present writer does not feel able to speak at greater length upon Assyrian, not being an Assyriologist himself nor yet capable of satisfactorily distinguishing the certain from the uncertain results of Assyriological inquiry.*~~

~~*The native cuneiform writing was used in Babylonia not only under the Persian empire but also in the Greek period, as the discovery of isolated specimens proves. It does not of course necessarily follow from this that Assyrian was still spoken at that time. Indeed, this language may possibly have been banished from ordinary life long before the destruction of*~~

~~*Nineveh, surviving only as the official and sacerdotal tongue. These inscriptions, in any case, were intended for none but a narrow circle of learned persons.*~~

~~*Arabic.—The southern group of Semitic languages con- sists of Arabic and Ethiopic. Arabic, again, is subdivided into the dialects of the larger portion of Arabia and those of the extreme south (the Sabsean, &c.). At a very much earlier time than we were but lately justified in supposing, some of the northern Arabs reduced their language to writing.*~~

~~*Assyrian,*~~

~~*: : _ Tha For travellers have quite recently discovered 1M j,udic*~~

~~*the northern parts of the Hijaz inscriptions in a strange inscrip- character, which seem to have been written long before our tions.*~~

~~*Sami Pic*~~

~~*era. The character resembles the Saban, but perhaps re- presents an earlier stage of graphical development. These inscriptions have been called "Thamudic," because they were found in the country of the Thamud ; but this desig- nation is scarcely a suitable one, because during the period when the power of the Thamud was at its height, and when the buildings mentioned in the Koran were hewn in the rocks, the language of this country was Nabateean (see above). Unfortunately the inscriptions hitherto discovered are all short 1 and for the most part fragmentary, and con- sequently furnish but little material to the student of lan- guages. But there can be no doubt that they are written in an Arabic dialect. The treatment of the dentals, among other things, is a sufficient proof of this. At least in one point they bear a striking resemblance to Hebrew : they have the article ha (not hal, as we might expect). It is possible that the tribes living on Arabian soil which are regarded in the Old Testament as nearly related to Israel, that is, the Ishmaelites, the Midianites, and even the Edomites, may have spoken dialects occupying a middle position between Arabic and Hebrew. 'They are perhaps traces of some such intermediate link that have been pre- served to us in these inscriptions.*~~

~~*The numerous inscriptions scattered over the north-west of Arabia, especially over the wild and rocky district of Safé, near Damascus, probably date from a later period. They are written in peculiar characters, which, it would seem, are likewise related to those used by the Sabzans. They are all of them short and indistinct, scratched hurriedly and irregularly upon unhewn stone. What we at present understand of them—they consist almost entirely of proper names—is owing in nearly every case to the ingenuity of Halévy.? In matters of detail, however, much still remains uncertain, To decipher them with absolute certainty will no doubt always be impossible on account of their careless execution, These inscriptions are probably the work of Arab emigrants from the south.*~~

~~*The Arabs who inhabited the Nabatzan kingdom wrote in Aramaic, but, as has been remarked above, their native language, Arabic, often shows through the foreign disguise. We are thus able to satisfy ourselves that these Arabs, who lived a little before and a little after Christ, spoke a dialect closely resembling the later classical Arabic. The nomi- native of the so-called " triptote" nouns has, as in classical Arabic, the termination wu ; the genitive has ¢ (the accusa- tive therefore probably ended in a), but without the addi- tion of n. Generally speaking, those proper names which in classical Arabic are "diptotes" are here devoid of any inflexional termination. The u of the nominative appears also in Arabic proper names belonging to more northern districts, as, for example, Palmyra and Edessa, All these Arabs were probably of the same race. It is possible that the two oldest known specimens of distinctively Arabic writing—namely, the Arabic portion of the trilingual in- scription of Zabad, south-east of Haleb (Aleppo), written in Syriac, Greek, and Arabic, and dating from 512 or 513 A.D.,? and that of the bilingual inscription of Harran, south of Damascus,' written in Greek and Arabic, of 568—represent nothing but a somewhat more modern form of this dialect. In both these inscriptions proper names take in the genitive the termination uw, which shows that the meaning of such inflexions was no longer felt. These two inscriptions, especially that of Zabad, which is badly*~~

~~*1 The decipherment of these inscriptions was begun by Halévy, who followed the drawings of Doughty. The subject is now being further*~~

~~*investigated by D. H. Miiller of Vienna from Euting's copies. ;*~~

~~*2 "Fssai sur les Inscriptions du Safa," from the Journal Asiatique (Paris, 1882).*~~

~~*3 Sachau, Monatsbericht der Berliner Akademie der Wissenschaften, 10th February 1881, and Z7.D.IG., xxxvi. 345 sq.*~~

~~*4 Le Bas and Waddington, No. 2464, and Z.D.ILG., xxxviii. 530.*~~

~~*Bev GU aG is*~~

~~*651*~~

~~*written, have not yet been satisfactorily interpreted in all their details.*~~

~~*During the whole period of the preponderance of Aramaic this language exercised a great influence upon the vocabu- lary of the Arabs. The more carefully we investigate the more clearly does it appear that numerous Arabic words, used for ideas or objects which presuppose a certain degree of civilization, are borrowed from the Aramzans. Hence the civilizing influence of their northern neighbours must have been very strongly felt by the Arabs, and contributed in no small measure to prepare them for playing so import- ant a part in the history of the world.*~~

~~*In the 6th century the inhabitants of the greater part Classical*~~

~~*of Arabia proper spoke everywhere essentially the same 4rbic.*~~

~~*language, which, as being by far the most important of all Arabic dialects, is known simply as the Arabic language. Arabic poetry, at that time cultivated throughout the whole of central and northern Arabia as far as the lower Euphrates and even beyond it, employed one language only. The extant Arabic poems belonging to the heathen period were not indeed written down till much later, and meanwhile underwent considerable alterations®; but the absolute regularity of the metre and rhyme is a sufficient proof that on the whole these poems all obeyed the same laws of language. It is indeed highly probable that the rhapsodists and the*~~

~~*grammarians have effaced many slight dialectical peculiarities ; in a great number of passages, for example, the poets may have used, in accordance with the fashion of their respective tribes, some other case than that prescribed by the grammarians, and a thing of this kind may afterwards have been altered, unless it happened to occur in rhyme ; but such alterations cannot have extended very far, A dialect that diverged in any great measure from the Arabic of the grammarians could not possibly have been made to fit into the metres. Moreover, the Arabic philologists recognize the existence of various small distinctions between the dialects of individual tribes and of their poets, and the traditions of the more ancient schools of Koran readers exhibit very many dialectical nuances. It might indeed be conjectured that for the majority of the Arabs the language of poetry was an artificial one,— the speech of certain tribes having been adopted by all the rest as a dialectus poetica. And this might be possible in the case of wandering minstrels whose art gained them their livelihood, such as Nabigha and A'shé. But, when we find that the Bedouin goat-herds, for instance, in the mountainous district near Mecca composed poems in this very same language upon their insignificant feuds and per- sonal quarrels, that in it the proud chiefs of the Taghh-bites and the Bekrites addressed defiant verses to the king of Hira (on the Euphrates), that a Christian inhabitant of Hira, Adi b. Zaid, used this language in his serious poems, —when we reflect that, as far as the Arabic poetry of the heathen period extends, there is nowhere a trace of any important linguistic difference, it would surely be a para- dox to assume that all these Arabs, who for the most part were quite illiterate and yet extremely jealous of the honour of their tribes, could have taken the trouble to clothe their ideas and feelings in a foreign, or even a perfectly arti- ficial, language. The Arabic philologists also invariably regarded the language of the poets as being that of the Arabs in general. Even at the end of the 2d century after Mohammed the Bedouins of Arabia proper, with the exception of a few outlying districts, were considered as being in possession of this pure Arabic. The most learned grammarians were in the habit of appealing to any unedu- cated man who happened to have just arrived with his camels from the desert, though he did not know by heart twenty verses of the Koran, and had no conception of theo-*~~

~~*5 Comp. the article Mo aLLaKAt.*~~

~~*Dialect of the Koraish,*~~

~~*Changes in classical Arabic,*~~

~~*652*~~

~~*retical grammar, in order that he might decide whether in Arabic it were allowable or necessary to express oneself in this or that manner. It is evident that these profound scholars knew of only one classical language, which was still spoken by the Bedouins. The tribes which produced the principal poets of the earlier period belonged for the most part to portions of the Hijaéz, to Nejd and its neighbour- hood, and to the region which stretches thence towards the Euphrates.*~~

~~*The Koran and Islam raised Arabic to the position of one of the principal languages of the world. Under the leadership of the Koraish the Bedouins subjected half the world to both their dominion and their faith. Thus Arabic acquired the additional character of a sacred lan- guage. But soon it became evident that not nearly all the Arabs spoke a language precisely identical with the classical Arabic of the poets. The north-western Arabs played a particularly important part during the period of*~~

~~*SPEMIPIC HRADGUZ Ewe*~~

~~*the Omayyads. The ordinary speech of Mecca and Medina was, as we have seen, no longer quite so primitive as that of the desert. To this may be added that the military expeditions brought those Arabs who spoke the classical language into contact with tribes from out-of-the- way districts, such as 'Oman, Bahrain (Bahrein), and particularly the north of Yemen. The fact that numbers of foreigners, on passing over to Islam, became rapidly Arabized was also little calculated to preserve the unity of the language. Finally, the violent internal and external commotions which were produced by the great events of that time, and stirred the whole nation, probably acceler- ated linguistic change. In any case, we know from good tradition that even in the Ist century of the Flight the distinction between correct and incorrect speech was quite perceptible.*~~

~~*About the end of the 2d century the system of Arabic grammar was constructed, and never underwent any essential modification in later times. The theory as to how one should express oneself was now definitely fixed. The majority of those Arabs who lived beyond the limits of Arabia already diverged far from this standard : and in particular the final vowels which serve to indicate cases and moods were no longer pronounced. This change, by which Arabic lost one of its principal advantages, was no doubt hastened by the fact that even in the classical style such terminations were omitted whenever the word stood at the end of a sentence (in pause); and in the living language of the Arabs this dividing of sentences is very frequent. Hence people were already quite accustomed to forms without grammatical terminations.*~~

~~*Through the industry of Arabic philologists we are able Vocabu- to make ourselves intimately acquainted with the system, lary.*~~

~~*and still more with the vocabulary of the language, although they have not always performed their task in a critical manner. We should be all the more disposed to admire the richness of the ancient Arabic vocabulary when we remember how simple are the conditions of life amongst the Arabs, how painfully monotonous their country, and consequently how limited the range of their ideas must be. Within this range, however, the slightest modification is expressed by a particular word. It must be confessed that the Arabic lexicon has been greatly augmented by the habit of citing as words by themselves such rhetorical phrases as an individual poet has used to describe an ob- ject: for example, if one poet calls the lion the "tearer" and another calls him the '" mangler," each of these terms is explained by the lexicographers as equivalent to "lion." One branch of literature in particular, namely, lampoons and satirical poems, which for the most part have perished, no doubt introduced into the lexicon many expressions coined in an arbitrary and sometimes in a very strange manner. Moreover, Arabic philologists have greatly under- rated the number of words which, though they occur now and then in poems, were never in general use except among particular tribes. But in spite of these qualifications it must be admitted that the vocabulary is surprisingly rich, and the Arabic dictionary will always remain the principal resource for the elucidation of obscure expressions in all the other Semitic*~~

~~tongues, This method, if pursued with the necessary caution, is a perfectly legitimate one. Poems seldom enable us to form a clear idea of the lan- guage of ordinary life, and Arabic poetry happens to have been distinguished from the very beginning by a certain tendency to artificiality and mannerism. Still less does the Koran exhibit the language in its spoken form. This office is performed by the prose of the ancient traditions (Hadith). The genuine accounts of the deeds of the Prophet and of his companions, and not less the stories concerning the battles and adventures of the Bedouins in the heathen period and in the earlier days of Islam, are~~

~~excellent models of a prose style, although in some cases their redaction dates from a later time.~~

~~Grn- Classical Arabic is rich not only in words but in gram- macal matical forms. The wonderful development of the broken fos plurals, and sometimes of the verbal nouns must be re- 'garded as an excess of wealth. The sparing use of the ancient terminations which mark the plural has somewhat obscured the distinction between plurals, collectives, ab- stract nouns, and feminines in general. In its manner of employing the verbal tenses genuine Arabic still exhibits traces of that poetical freedom which we see in Hebrew ; this characteristic disappears in the later literary language. In connecting sentences Arabic can go much further than Hebrew, but the simple parataxis is by far the most usual construction. Arabic has, however, this great advantage, that it scarcely ever leaves us in doubt as to where the apodosis begins. The attempts to define the tenses more clearly by the addition of adverbs and auxiliary verbs lead to no very positive result (as is the case in other Semitic languages also), since they are not carried out in a system- atic manner. 'The arrangement of words in a sentence is governed by very strict rules. As the subject and object, at least in ordinary cases, occupy fixed positions, and as the genitive is invariably placed after the noun that governs it, the use of case-endings loses much of its significance. steicof This language of the Bedouins had now, as we have edeated seen, become that of religion, courts, and polished society. sty. In the streets of the towns the language already~~

~~*diverged considerably from this, but the upper classes took pains to speak "Arabic." The poets and the beaua esprits never ventured to employ any but the classical language, and the "Atticists," with pedantic seriousness, convicted the most celebrated among the later poets (for instance Motan-abbt) of occasional deviations from the standard of correct speech. At the same time, however, classical Arabic was the language of business and of science, and at the present day still holds this position. There are, of course, many gradations between the pedantry of purists and the use of what is simply a vulgar dialect. Sensible writers employ a kind of xovv7, which does not aim at being strictly cor- rect and calls modern things by modern names, but which, nevertheless, avoids coarse vulgarisms, aiming principally at making itself intelligible to all educated men. The reader may pronounce or omit the ancient terminations as he chooses. This language lived on, in a sense, through the whole of the Middle Ages, owing chiefly to the fact that it was intended for educated persons in general and not only for the learned, whereas the poetical schools strove to make use of the long extinct language of the Bedouins. As might be expected, this xow7, like the cow? of the Greeks, has a comparatively limited vocabulary, since its principle is to retain only those expressions from the ancient language which were generally understood, and it does not borrow much new material from the vulgar dialects. ;*~~

~~*It is entirely a mistake to suppose that Arabic is un- suited for the treatment of abstract subjects. On the contrary, scarcely any language is so well adapted to be the organ of scholasticism in all its branches. Even the tongue of the ancient Bedouins had a strong preference for the use of abstract verbal nouns (in striking contrast to the Latin, for example) ; thus they oftener said " Needful is thy sitting" than "It is needful that thou shouldest sit." This tendency was very advantageous to philosophical phraseology. The strict rules as to the order of words, though very unfavourable to the development of a truly eloquent style, render it all the easier to express ideas in a rigidly scientific form.*~~

~~*In the meantime Arabic, like every other widely spread language, necessarily began to undergo modification aud to split up mto*~~

~~dialects. The Arabs are mistaken in attributing this development Minor to the influence of those foreign languages with which Arabic came Arabic into contact. Such influences can have had but little to do with dialects. the matter ; for were it otherwise the language of the interior of Arabia must have remained unchanged, yet even in this region the inhabitants are very far from speaking as they did a thousand years back. A person who in Arabia or elsewhere should trust to his knowledge of classical Arabic only would resemble those travellers from the north who endeavour to make themselves understood by Italian waiters through the medium of a kind of Latin. The written language has, it is true, greatly retarded the development of the dialects. Every good Moslem repeats at least a few short suras several times a day in his prayers, besides being minutely acquainted with the sacred book ; and this must have had a power- ful influence upon the speech of the people at large. But never- theless dialects have formed themselves and have diverged con- siderably from one another. Of these there are indeed but few with which we are tolerably well acquainted ; that of Egypt alone is known with real accuracy.!_ Although the French have occupied Algeria for about fifty years, we still possess but imperfect informa- tion with respect to the language of that country. It is closely connected with that of Morocco on the one hand and with that of Tunis on the other. Arabic has long been banished from Spain ; but we possess a few literary works written in Spanish Arabic, and just before it became too late Pedro de Alcala composed a grammar and a lexicon of that dialect.2. We have also a few ancient speci- mens of the Arabic which was once spoken in Sicily. To the western group of dialects belongs the language of Malta, which, cut off as it is from other Arabic dialects and exposed to the influ- ence of Italian, has developed itself in a very strange manner; in it a considerable number of books have already been printed, but with Latin characters. The dialects of Arabia, Syria, and the other Eastern provinces, in spite of many valuable works, are not yet sufficiently well known to admit of being definitely classified. There can be no doubt that the development of these dialects is in part the result of older dialectical variations which were already in existence in the time of the Prophet. The histories of dialects which differ completely from one another often pursue an ana- logous course. In general, the Arabic dialects still resemble one another more than we might expect when we take into considera- tion the great~~

~~*extent of country over which they are spoken and the very considerable geographical obstacles that stand in the way of communication. But we must not suppose that people, for instance, from Mosul, Morocco, San'd, and the interior of Arabia would be able to understand one another without difficulty. It is a total error to regard the difference between the Arabic dialects and the ancient language as a trifling one, or to represent the development of these dialects as something wholly unlike the development of the Romance languages. No living Arabic dialect diverges from classical Arabic so much as French or Rouman from Latin; but, on the other hand, no Arabic dialect resembles the classical language so closely as the Lugodoric dialect, which is still spoken in Sardinia, resembles its parent speech, aud yet the lapse of time is very much greater in the case of the latter. Sabxan.—Long before Mohammed, a peculiar and highly Saban developed form of civilization had flourished in the table- inscrip- land to the south-west of Arabia. The more we become ° acquainted with the country of the ancient Sabzeans and with its colossal edifices, and the better we are able to decipher its inscriptions, which are being discovered in ever-increasing numbers, the easier it is for us to account for the haze of mythical glory wherewith the Sabeans were once invested. The Sabean inscriptions (which till lately were more often called by the less correct name of " Himyaritic") begin long before our era and continue till about the 4th century. The somewhat stiff character is always very distinct ; and the habit of regularly dividing the words from one another renders decipherment easier, which, however, has not yet been performed in a very satisfactory manner, owing in part to the fact that the vast majority of the documents in question consist of re- ligious votive tablets with peculiar sacerdotal expressions, or of architectural notices abounding in technical terms. These inscriptions fall into two classes, distinguished partly by grammatical peculiarities and partly by peculiarities of phraseology. One dialect, which forms the causative with ha, like Hebrew and others, and employs, like nearly*~~

~~*1 W. Spitta-Bey, Grammatik des arabischen Vulgdrdialects von Aegypten (Leipsic, 1880).*~~

~~*2 'They were published in 1505, reprinted by Lagarde (Petr? Hispant de Lingua Arabica Libri duo, Gottingen, 1883).*~~

~~654 SHEMITDC LAW@YAe ae~~

~~all the Semitic languages, the termination / (hi) as the suffix of the third person singular, is the Saban properly speaking. The other, which expresses the causative by sa (corresponding to the Shaphel of the Arameans and others), and for the suffix uses s (like the Assyrian sh), is~~

~~whole. Being zealous local patriots, they discovered in those inscriptions which they imagined themselves to be capable of deciphering many fabulous stories respecting the glory of the ancient Yemenites.~~

~~Farther to the east, in the sea-coast districts of Shihr and Mahra, Dialects~~

~~the Minaic. To this latter branch belong the numerous South Arabic inscriptions recently found in the north of the Hijaz, near Hejr, where the Minzwans must have had a commercial settlement. The difference between the two classes of inscriptions is no doubt ultimately based upon a real divergence of dialect. But the singular manner in which districts containing Saban inscriptions and those containing Minaic alternate with one another seems to point in part to a mere hieratic practice of clinging to ancient modes of expression. Indeed it is very probably due to conscious literary conservatism that the language of the inscriptions remains almost entirely unchanged through many centuries. A few inscriptions from districts rather more to the east exhibit certain linguistic peculiar- ities, which, however, may perhaps be explained by the supposition that the writers did not, as a rule, speak this dialect, and therefore were but imperfectly acquainted with it.~~

~~up to the borders of the barren desert of the interior, and also, we akin to are told, in the island of Socotra, dialects very unlike Arabic are Sabean, still spoken. the 10th century. These dialects depart widely from the ancient Semitic type, but bear some resemblance to the Saban, although they cannot be regarded as actually descended from the latter, One feature which they have in common with Saban is the habit of appending an a to the imperfect. ably also the Saban, they use & (instead of ¢) in the terminations of the first person singular and plural of the perfect tense. there appears, at least in the Unfortunately the information respecting these dialects is meagre and inexact, in part very in. exact.2 Jt is much to~~

~~*be wished that soon tigated as carefully as possible, the more so as there is danger in delay, for Arabic is gradually supplanting them.*~~

~~*too, and in the neighbouring Geez, or countries we find languages which bear a certain resem. Ethiopic*~~

~~*blance to Arabic. The Geez or Ethiopic 3 proper, the lan- P!pe.*~~

~~*Allusions to this fact are found in Arabic writers of*~~

~~*Like the Ethiopic, and prob- the second person singular and In the suffixes of the third person feminine, an s, as in the Minaic. which we have hitherto possessed*~~

~~*they may all be inves-*~~

~~*Lthiopic.—In Abyssinia,*~~

~~*guage of the ancient kingdom of Aksim, was reduced to writing at an early date. To judge by the few passages*~~

~~*Gram- As the Sabsean writing seldom indicates the vowels, our communicated by Salt, the back of 'the inscription of tical r i i i : : ' Ill a0 bao : ae knowledge of the language is necessarily very incomplete ; Aeizanas, king of Akstim about 3 60, extitie writing in*~~

~~*and the unvarying style of the inscriptions excludes a great number of the commonest grammatical forms. Not a single occurrence of the first or second person has yet been detected, with the possible exception of one proper name, in which "our god" apparently occurs. But the know. ledge which we already possess amply suffices to prove that Saban is closely related to Arabic as we are acquainted with it. The former language possesses the same phonetic elements as the latter, except that it has at least one addi- tional sibilant, which appears to have been lost in Arabic. It possesses the broken plural, a dual form resembling that used in Arabic, &c. It is especially important to notice that Sabean expresses the idea of indefiniteness by means of an appended m, just as Arabic expresses it by means of an », which in all probability is a modification of*~~

~~*the former sound. Both in this point and in some others Sabsean appears more primitive than Arabic, as might be expected from the earlier date of its monuments, The article is formed by appending ann. In its vocabulary also Sabzean bears a great resemblance to Arabic, although, on the other hand, it often approaches more nearly to the northern Semitic languages in this respect; and it possesses much that is peculiar to itself.*~~

~~*Soon after the Christian era Sabzean civilization began to decline, and completely perished in the wars with the Abyssinians, who several times occupied the country, and in the 6th century remained in possession of it for a con- siderable period. In that age the language of central Arabia was already penetrating into the Sabzan domain. Jt is further possible that many tribes which dwelt not far to the north of the civilized districts had always spoken dialects resembling central Arabic rather than Sabeean, About the year 600 "Arabic" was the language of all Yemen, with the exception perhaps of a few isolated dis- tricts, and this process of assimilation continued in later times. Several centuries after Mohammed learned Yemen- ites were acquainted with the characters of the inscriptions which abounded in their country ; they were also able to decipher the proper names and a small number of Sabeean words the meaning of which was still known to them, but they could no longer understand the inscriptions as a*~~

~~*1 The literature relating to these inscriptions is widely scattered. Before the Parisian Corpus supplies us with the collected materials, we may hope to see the Sabean grammar of D. H. Miiller, who, with Halévy, has lately rendered the greatest services in this department.*~~

~~*the Sabzean language, which appears to prove that the*~~

~~*"development of the Geez character out of the Sabzean, and*~~

~~*the elevation of Geez to the rank of a literary language, must have taken place after the year 350. "The oldest monuments of this language which are known with cer- tainty are the two great inscriptions of Tazéna, a heathen king of Akstim, dating from about 500. Hitherto our acquaintance with these inscriptions has been derived from very imperfect drawings* ; but they amply suffice to show that we have here the same*~~

~~*language as that in which the Ethiopic Bible is written, with the very same exact indication of the vowels,—a point in which Ethiopic has an advantage over all other Semitic characters. Who in- troduced this vocalization is unknown. When the above- mentioned inscriptions were made the Bible had probably been already translated into Geez from the Greek, perhaps in part by Jews; for Jews and Christians were at that time actively competing with one another, both in Arabia and in Abyssinia; nor were the former unsuccessful in making proselytes. The missionaries who gave the Bible to the Abyssinians must, at least in some cases, have spoken Aramaic as their mother-tongue, for this alone can explain the fact that in the Ethiopic Bible certain religious conceptions are expressed by Aramaic words, During the following centuries various works were produced by the Abyssinians in this language ; they were all, so far as we are able to judge, of a more or less theological character, almost invariably translations from the Greek. We cannot say with certainty when Geez ceased to be the language of the people, but it was probably about a thousand years ago. From the time when the Abyssinian kingdom was reconstituted, towards the end of the 13th century, by the so-called Solomonian dynasty (which was of southern origin), the language of the court and of the Government was Amharic; but Geez remained the ecclesiastical and literary language, and Geez literature even showed a certain*~~

~~*2 See especially Maltzan, in Z.D.M.G., vols. xxv. and xxvii. ;*~~

~~*3 This name is due to the fact that the Abyssinians, under the in- fluence of false erudition, applied the name Al@:orla to their own kingdom.*~~

~~*“ The authorities of the library of Frankfort have kindly enabled the present writer to consult Riippell’s copies, which are more accurate than the lithographs in his book. The English in 1868 did not seize the opportunity to examine thoroughly the antiquities of Aksum, and since then no traveller has taken the trouble to procure accurate copies of these extremely important monuments.*~~

~~*SEI TEC*~~

~~activity in numerous translations from those Arabic and Coptic works which were in use amongst the Christians of Egypt; besides these a few original writings were com- posed, namely, lives of saints, hymns, &c. This literary condition lasted till modern times. The language, which had long become extinct, was by no means invariably written in a pure form; indeed even in manuscripts of more ancient works we find many linguistic corruptions, which have crept in partly through mere carelessness and ignorance, partly through the influence of the later dialects. On points of detail wé are still sometimes left in doubt, as We possess no manuscripts belonging to the older period. This renders it all the more important that the ancient and authentic inscriptions upon the monuments of Aksim should be accurately published.~~

~~Geez is more nearly related to Sabean than to Arabic, though scarcely to such a degree as we might expect. * The historical intercourse between the Sabzeans and the people of Akstm does not, however, prove that those who spoke Geez were simply a colony from Sabzea; the lan- guage may be descended from an extinct cognate dialect of south Arabia, or may have arisen from a mingling of several such dialects. And this colonization in Africa probably began much sooner than is usually supposed. In certain respects Geez represents a more modern stage of development than Arabic ; we may cite as instances the loss of some inflexional terminations and of the ancient passive, the change of the aspirated dentals into sibilants, &c. In the manuscripts, especially those of later date, many letters are confounded, namely, h, h, and kh, s and sh, ¢ and d; this, however, is no doubt due only to the influence of the modern dialects. To this same influence, and indirectly perhaps to that of the Hamitic languages, we may ascribe the very hard sound now given to certain letters, k, t, ¢, and d, in the reading of Geez. The last two are at present pronounced something like ¢s and ts (the German z). A peculiar advantage possessed by Geez and by all Ethiopic languages is the sharp distinction between the imperfect and the subjunctive: in the former a vowel is inserted after the first radical,—a formation of which there seem to be traces in the dialect of Mahra, and which is also believed to have existed in Assyrian. Geez has no definite article, but is very rich in particles. In the ease with which it joins sentences together and in its freedom as to the order of words it resembles Aramaic. The vocabulary is~~

~~*but imperfectly known, as the theologi- cal literature, which is for the most part very arid, supplies us with comparatively few expressions that do not occur in the Bible, whereas the more modern works borrow their phraseology in part from the spoken dialects, particularly Amharic. With regard to the vocabulary, Geez has much in common with the other Semitic tongues, but at the same time possesses many words peculiar to itself; of these a considerable proportion may be of Hamitic origin. Even some grammatical phenomena seem to indicate Hamitic influence ; for instance, the very frequent use of the gerun- dive, a feature which has become still more prominent in the modern dialects, placed as they are in yet closer contact with the Hamitic. We must not suppose that the ancient inhabitants of Aksim were of pure Semitic blood. The immigration of the Semites from Arabia was in all prob- ability a slow process, and under such circumstances there is every reason to assume that they largely intermingled with the aborigines. This opinion seems to be confirmed by anthropological facts.*~~

~~*Not only in what is properly the territory of Aksum (namely, Tigiia, Tigré, north-eastern Abys-inia), but also in the countries bordering i upon it to the north, including the islands of Dahlak, dialects are still spoken which are but more modern forms of the linguistic type clearly exhibited in Geez. The two principal of these are*~~

~~*that spoken in Tigré proper and that of the neighbouring countries.*~~

~~*In reality, the name of Tigré belougs to both, and it would be desirable to distinguish them from one another as Northern and Southern Tigré. But it is the custom to call the northern dialect Tigré simply, whilst that spoken in Tigré itself bears the name of Tigritia, with an Amharic termination. It is generally assumed that Tigré bears a closer resemblance to Geez than docs Tigrifia, although the latter is spoken in the country where Geez was formed; and this may very possibly be the case, for Tigrifta has during several centuries been very strongly influenced by Amharic, which has not been the case with Tigré, which is spoken partly*~~

~~*by nomads. Of Tigré, which appears to be divided into numerous dialects, we have several glossaries ; but of its grammar we as yet know but little. Written specimens of this language are almost entirely wanting. With Tigriia we are somewhat better acquaiuted,! but only as it is spoken in the centre of the country, near the site of the ancient Akstim, where Amharic happens to be particularly*~~

~~*strong, — above all, amongst the more educated classes. In Tigrifia*~~

~~*the older grammatical forms are often subjected to violent altera- tions ; foreign elements creep in; but the kernel remains Semitic.*~~

~~*Very different is the case with Amharic, a language of Amharic, which the domain extends from the left bank of the Takkazé into regions far to the south. Although by no means the only language spoken in these countries, it always tends to displace those foreign tongues which sur- round it and with which it is interspersed. We here refer especially to the Agaw dialects. Although Amharic has been driven back by the invasions of the Galla tribes, it has already compensated itself to some extent for this loss, as the Yedju and Wollo Gallas, who penetrated into eastern Abyssinia, have adopted it as their language. With the exception, of course, of Arabic, no Semitic tongue is spoken by so large a number of human beings as Amharic. The very fact that the Agaw languages are being gradually, and, as it were, before our own eyes, absorbed by Amharic 2 makes it appear probable that this language must be spoken chiefly by people who are not of Semitic race. This supposition is confirmed by a study of the language itself. Amharic has diverged from the ancient Semitic type to a far greater extent than any of the dialects which we have hitherto enumerated. Many of the old forma- tions preserved in Geez are completely modified in Amharic. Of the feminine forms there remain but a few traces ; and that is the case also with the ancient plural of the noun. The strangest innovations occur in the personal pronouns. And certainly not more than half the vocabulary can with- out improbability be made to correspond with that of the other Semitic languages. In this, as also in the grammar, we must leave out of account all that is borrowed from Geez, which, as being the ecclesiastical tongue, exercises a great influence everywhere in Abyssinia. On the other*~~

~~*hand, we must make allowance for the fact that in this language the very considerable phonetic modifications often produce a total change of form, so that many words which at first have a thoroughly foreign appearance prove on further examination to be but the regular development of words with which we are already acquainted. But the most striking deviations occur in the syntax. Things which we are accustomed to regard as usual or even uni- versal in the Semitic languages, such as the placing of the verb before the subject, of the governing noun before the genitive, and of the attributive relative clause after its substantive, are here totally reversed. Words which are marked as genitives by the prefixing of the relative particle, and even whole relative clauses, are treated as one word, and are capable of having the objective suffix added to them. It is scarcely going too far to say that a person*~~

~~*1 Franz Praetorius, Grammatik der Tigrisiasprache, Halle, 1872. The present writer was also permitted to use the manuscript grammar of a Belgian missionary, who spent a long time in the country.*~~

~~*2 Only an advanced guard of the Agaw languages, the Bilin or dialect of the Bogos, is being similarly absorbed by the Tigre.*~~

~~*3 Praetorius, however, in his very valuable grammar, Die amharische Sprache (Halle, 1879), has gone much too far in his attempts to connect*~~

~~*Amharic words and grammatical phenomena with those that occur in Geez.*~~

~~*656*~~

~~*who has learnt no Semitic language would have less diffi- culty in mastering the Amharic construction than one to whom the Semitic syntax is familiar. What here appears contrary to Semitic analogy is sometimes the rule in Agaw. Hence it is probable that in this case tribes originally Hamitic retained their former modes of thought and expres- sion after they had adopted a Semitic speech, and that they modified their new language accordingly. And it is not certain that the partial Semitization of the southern dis- tricts of Abyssinia (which had scarcely any connexion*~~

~~with the civilization of Akstim during its best period) was en- tirely or even principally due to influences from the north.~~

~~In spite of its dominant position, Amharic did not for several centuries show any signs of becoming a literary language. The oldest documents which we possess are a few songs of the 15th and 16th centuries, which were not, however, written down till a later time, and are very diffi- cult to interpret, There are also a few Geez-Amharic gloss- aries, which may be tolerably old. Since the 17th century various attempts have been made, sometimes by European missionaries, to write in Amharic, and in modern times this language has to a considerable extent been employed for literary purposes; nor is this to be ascribed exclu- sively to foreign influence. A literary language, fixed ina sufficient measure, has thus been formed. Books belonging to a somewhat earlier period contain tolerably clear proofs of dialectical differences. Scattered notices by travellers seem~~

~~SEMLER, Joann Satomo (1725-1791), ecclesiastical historian and critic, sometimes called ""the father of German rationalism" (see RATIONALISM), was born at Saalfeld in Thuringia on 18th December 1725. He was the son of a clergyman in poor circumstances, and had to fight his way in the world solely by his own talents. He grew up amidst Pietistic surroundings, which power- fully influenced him his life through, though he was never spiritually or intellectually a Pietist. As a boy he showed the omnivorous appetite for books which was characteristic of his later life. In his seventeenth year he entered the university of Halle, where he became the disciple, after- wards the assistant, and at last the literary executor of the orthodox rationalistic Professor Baumgarten. In 1749 he accepted the position of editor, with the title of professor, of the Coburg official Gazette, with leisure to pursue his- torical and scientific studies. But the next year he was invited to Altdorf as professor of philology and history, and six months later became a professor of theology in Halle. After the death of Baumgarten (1757) Semler be- came the head of the theological faculty of his university, and the fierce opposition which his writings and lectures provoked only helped to increase his fame as a professor. His popularity continued undiminished for more than twenty years, until 1779. In that year he~~

~~*came forward with a reply to the Wolfenbiittel F'ragments (see REIMARUS) and to Bahrdt's confession of faith, a step which was inter- preted by the extreme rationalists as a revocation of his own rationalistic position. Even the Prussian Government, which favoured Bahrdt, made Semler painfully feel its dis- pleasure at this new but really not inconsistent aspect of his position. But, though Semler was really not incon- sistent with himself in attacking the views of Reimarus and Bahrdt, as a comparison of his works prior and subse- quent to 1779 with those in question shows, his popularity began from that year to decline, and towards the end of his life he felt painfully the necessity of emphasizing the apologetic and conservative value of true historical inquiry. With more justification, perhaps, might his defence of the notorious edict of W6llner (1788), the cultus minister, be cited as a sign of the decline of his powers and of an un- faithfulness to his principles. He died at Halle on 14th*~~

~~*SEM—SEM*~~

~~*to indicate that in some districts the language diverges in a very much greater degree from the recognized type. The Abyssinian chronicles have for centuries been written in Geez, largely intermingled with Amharic elements, This "language of the clironicles," in itself a dreary chaos, often enables us to discover what were the older forms of Amharic words. A similar mixture of Geez and Amharic is exemplified in various other books, especially such as refer to the affairs of the Government and of the court.*~~

~~*The languages spoken still farther to the south, that of Gurdgué Gurigy (south of Shoa) and that of Harar, are perhaps more fitly describedand Until Har*~~

~~*as languages akin to Amharic than as Amharic dialects. We possess more precise information respecting them, and in general respecting the linguistic and ethnographical condition of these countries, it would not be safe to hazard even a conjecture as to*~~

~~*the origin of these languages, which, corrupt as they may be, and .*~~

~~*surrounded by tongues of a wholly different class, must still be regarded as Semitic. It is enough to repeat that the immigration of the Semites into these parts of Africa was probably no one single act, that it may have taken place at different times, that the immi- grants perhaps belonged to different tribes and to different districts of Arabia, and that very heterogeneous peoples and languages appear to have been variously mingled together in these regions.*~~

~~*The clever and brilliant work of Renan, Ilistoire générale des langues Sémi- tiques (Ist ed., Paris, 1855), could not fail to produce much effect at the time, in spite of its one-sided character and the actual mistakes that it contains, Even at the present day a scholar may read it with great interest and profit ; but as a whole it has been superseded by the discoveries of the last twenty or thirty years. The remarks of Ewald, in the introduction to his Hebrew grammar, upon the mutual relationship of the Semitic languages are still worthy of perusal, much as they provoke contradiction. A work upon the subject which realizes for the presént state of science what Renan endeavoured to realize for his own time unfortunately does not exist. (TH. N.)*~~

~~*March 1791, worn out by his prodigious labours, embittered by his desertion, and disappointed at the issue of his work.*~~

~~*Semler's importance in the history of theology and the human mind is that of a critic of Biblical and ecclesiastical documents and of the history of dogmas. He was not a ee thinker or theologian, though he insisted, more or less confusedly, and yet*~~

~~*'with an energy and persistency before unknown, on certain distinc-*~~

~~*tions of great importance when properly worked out and applied, e.g., the distinction between religion and theology, that between private personal beliefs and public historical creeds, and that between the local and temporal and the permanent elements of historical reli- gion. His great work was that of the critic. He was the first to reject with sufficient proof the equal value of the Old and the New Testa- ments, the uniform authority of all parts of the Bible, the divine authority of the traditional canon of Scripture, the inspiration and supposed correctness of the text of*~~

~~*the Old and New Testaments, and, generally, the identification of revelation with Scripture. Though to some extent anticipated by the English deist Thome Morgan, Semler was the first to take due note of and use for critical purposcs the opposition between the Judaic and anti-Judaic parties of the early church. He led the way in the task of discovering the origin of the Gospels, the Epistles, the Acts of the Apostles, and the Apocalypse. He revived previous doubts as to the direct Pauline origin of the Epistle to the Hebrews, called in question Peter's authorship of the first epistle, and referred the sccond epistle to the end of the 2d century. Hie wished to remove the Apocalypse altogether from the canon. In textual criticism Semler pursued further the principle of classifying MSS. in families, adopted by R. Simon and Bengel. Though he lacked almost every qualification of the true church historian, Semler did the work of a pioneer in many periods and in several departments of ccclesiastical history. Tholuck pronounces him "the father of the history of doctrines" and Baur "' the first to deal with that history from the true critical standpoint." At the same time, it is admitted by all that he was nowhere more than a pioneer. Baur's description of his work in one department of ecclesiastical history is true of his work generally. " His writings on the history of dogma resemble a fallow-field wait- ing to be cultivated or a building-site on which, underneath refuse and ruins, lie the materials in chaotic confusion for a new edifice. The consequence was that as he was always occupied in preliminary labours, he brought nothing to even partial completion; and, though his general critical standpoint was correct, in its application to details his criticism could only be regarded as extremely bold and arbitrary."*~~

~~*Tholuck gives 171 as the numbcr of Semler's works, of which only two reached a second edition, and none is now read for its own sake. Amongst the chief are—De demoniacis (Halle, 1760, 4th ed. 1779), Selecta capita historiz ceelestastiex (3 vols., Halle, 1767-69), Von freier Untersuchung des Kanon (Halle, 1771-72), Apparatus ad liberalem N. T. interpretationem (1767; ad V. T., 1778), Institutto ad doctrinam Christ. liberaliter discendam (Halle,*~~

~~*art*~~

~~1774), Ueber historisehe, gesellsehaftliche, und moralisehe Religion der Christen (1786), and his autobiography, Semler's Lebensbesehreibung, von thin selbst abgefasst (Halle, 1781-82).~~

~~For estimates of Seinler's labours, see Gass, Gesch. der prot. Dogmatik (Berlin, 1854-67); Dorner, Gesch. der prot. Theol. (Munich, 1867); Tholuck, art. in Herzog's Real-Encyklopddie ; Hilgenfeld, Einlcitung in das Neue Test. (Leipsic, 1875); Baur, Epochen der kirchlichen Geschichtschreibung (1852); and Ritschl, Gesch. des Pietismus (Bonn, 1880-84).~~

~~SEMLIN (Hung. Zimony ; Servian, Semun), a town of Austria-Hungary, the easternmost in the Military Frontier district, stands on the south bank of the Danube, on a tongue of land between that river and the Save. It is the see of a Greek archbishop, has a real school of lower grade, five Roman Catholic and two Greek churches, a synagogue, a theatre, and a custom-house. The population (10,046) consists mostly of Servians, with a few Germans, Greeks, Illyrians, Croats, Gipsies, and Jews. Semlin has recently undergone improvement in its streets and build- ings ; but its suburb Franzenthal near the Danube consists mostly of mud huts thatched with reeds. The town is surrounded by a stockade. On the top of Zigeunerberg are the remains of the castle of John Hunyadi, who died here in 1456. Semlin has a considerable trade, sending woollen cloth, porcelain, and glass to Turkey, and obtain- ing in return yarn, leather, skins, honey, and meerschaum pipes. It is a principal quarantine station for travellers from Turkey. Steam ferry boats cross to Belgrade several times a day, and larger vessels run up the Save as far as to Sissek.~~

~~SEMPER, Gorrrriep (1803-1879), German architect and writer on art, was born at Altona on 29th November 1803. His father intended him for the law, but irresist- ible impulse carried him over to art. His early mastery of classical literature led him to the study of classic monu- ments in classic lands, while his equally conspicuous talent for mathematics gave him the laws of form and proportion in architectural design. While a student of law at the university of Géttingen he fell under the influence of K. O. Miiller, and in after years followed closely in his foot- steps.~~

~~*Semper's architectural education was carried out successively in Hamburg, Berlin, Dresden, in Paris under Gau, and in Munich under Gartner ; afterwards he visited Italy and Greece. In 1834 he was appointed professor of architecture in Dresden, and during fifteen years received many important commissions from the Saxon court. He built the opera-house, which made his fame, the new museum and picture gallery, likewise a synagogue. In 1848 his turbulent spirit led him to side with the revolu- tion against his royal patron; he furnished the rebels with military plans, and was eventually driven into exile. Semper came to London at the time of the Great Exhibition of 1851, and the prince consort found him an able ally in carrying out his plans. He was appointed teacher of the principles of decoration; and his lectures in manuscript, preserved in the art library, South Kensington, deserve to be better known. He was also employed by the prince consort to prepare a design for the Kensington Museum ; he likewise made the drawings for the Wellington funeral car. In 1853 Semper left London for Zurich on his appoint- ment as professor of architecture, and with a commission to build in that town the polytechnic school, the hospital, &c. In 1870 he was called to Vienna to assist in the great architectural projects since carried out round the Ring. A year later, after an exile of over twenty years, he received a summons to Dresden, on the rebuilding of the first opera- house, which had been destroyed by fire in 1869; his second design was a modification of the first. The closing years of his life were passed in comparative tranquillity between Venice and Rome, and in the latter city he died on 15th May 1879.*~~

~~*Semper's style was a growth from the classic orders through the Italian Cinque Cento. He forsook the base and rococo forms he found rooted in Germany, and, reverting to the best historic ex-*~~

~~*amples, fashioned a purer Renaissance. He stands asa leader in the practice of polychrome, since widely diffused, and by his writings and example did much to reinstate the ancient union between arcli- tecture, sculpture, and painting. Amoug his numerous literary works are Ueber Polyehromie u. ihren Ursprung (1851), Die An- wendung der Farben in*~~

~~*der Arehitektur u. Plastik bei den Alten, Der Stil in den teehnisehen u. tektonisehen Kiinsten (1860-63). His Notes of Leetures on Praetieal Art in Metals and Hard Materials ;: its Teehnology, History, and Style, remainsin MS. His teachings are sometimes encumbered by speculations reaching far beyond the domain of his art.*~~

~~*SENAAR (SEnnaar, properly SENNAR), a country of east Central Africa, commonly identified with the "Island of Meroe" of the ancients, and included in the central division of Egyptian (Eastern) Sudan, as reorganized in the year 1882. By European writers the term is often applied to the whole region lying between the Atbara (Takazze) and the White Nile, but by native usage is restricted to the district confined between the latter river and the Bahr- el-Azrak (Blue Nile), and its eastern tributaries, the Rahad and the Dender. It is bordered north and north-east by Upper Nubia, east by Abyssinia, west by the White Nile (Bahr-el-Abiad), separating it from Kordofan, and stretches from the confluence of the two Niles at Khartum south- wards, in the direction of the Berta highlands in the east and the Burtin and Dinka plains in the west. As thus de- fined, Sennar extends across five degrees of latitude (16° to 11° N.), with a total length of about 350 miles, a mean breadth of 120 miles, an area of 40,000 square miles, and an approximate population of 300,000. It comprises two physically distinct tracts, the densely wooded and well- watered Jezirat el-Jesirat ("Isle of Isles") between the Rahad and the Blue Nile, and the "island" of Sennar proper, a nearly level steppe land confined between the two main streams. This western and much larger division, which has a mean elevation of under 2000 feet above sea-level, consists mainly of alluvial and sandy matter, resting on a bed of granite and porphyritic granite, which first crops out sdéme ten days' journey south of Khartum, in the Jebel es- Segati and the Jebel el-Moye, near the town of Sennar on the Bahr-el-Azrak. Between these two groups the plain is dotted over with isolated slate hills containing iron and silver ores. But beyond Sennar the boundless steppe, eithcr under a tall coarse grass, or overgrown with mimosa scrub, or else absolutely waste, again stretches uninterruptedly for another ten or eleven days' journey to the Roséres (Rosaires) district, where the isolated Okelmi and Keduss Hills, con- taining quartz with copper ore, rise 1000 feet above the right*~~

~~*bank of the Blue Nile and 3000 above the sea. Here the plain is furrowed by deep gullies flushed during*~~

~~*the rainy season; and farther south the land, hitherto*~~

~~*gently sloping towards the north-west, begins to rise rapidly, breaking into hills and ridges 4000 feet high in the Fazogl district, and farther on merging in the Berta high- lands with an extreme altitude of 9000 to 10,000 feet. In these metalliferous uplands, recently explored by Marno and Schuver, rises the Tumat, which is washed for gold, and which after a northerly course of nearly 100 miles joins the left bank of the Blue Nile near Fazogl and Famaka. South of and parallel with the Tumat flows the still unexplored Jabus (Yabus), on which stands Fadasi, southernmost of the now abandoned Egyptian stations in the Bahr-el-Azrak basin. This point also marks the present limit of geographical exploration in the direction of the conterminous Galla country, Schuver being the only European traveller who has hitherto succeeded in pene- trating to any distance south of the Jabus.*~~

~~*Sennar lies within the northern limits of the tropical rains, which reach to Khartim, and fall between June and September. In this part of its course the Blue Nile rises from May to August, when the northern and western winds prevail, nearly coinciding with the cool and healthy season. But they are followed by the hot khamtsin from the south or the samum (simoom) from the north-west charged*~~

~~*with fine sand from the Libyan Desert. Still more dreaded are the miasmatic exhalations caused by the glowing sun playing on stag- nant waters after the floods and giving rise to the "Sennar fever," which drives the natives themselves from the plains to the southern uplands. The temperature, which rises at times to over 120° Fahr., is also very changeable, often sinking from 100° Fahr. during the day to under 60° Fahr. at night.*~~

~~*The soil, mainly alluvial, is naturally fertile, and wherever water and hands are available yields bounteous crops of maize, pulse, cotton, tobacco, sesame, and especially durra, of which as many as twenty varieties are said to be cultivated. The forest vegetation, mainly confined to the 'Isle of Isles" and the southern uplands, includes the Adansonia (baobab), which in the Fazog] district attains gigantic proportions, the tamarind, of which bread is made, the deleb palm, several valuable gum trees (whence the term Senndari often applied in Egypt to gum arabic), some dyewoods, ebony, iron- wood, and many varieties of acacia, These forests are haunted by the two-horned rhinoceros, the clephant, lion, panther, numerous apes and antelopes, while the crocodile and hippopotamus frequent all the rivers. The chief domestic animals are the camel, horse, ass, ox, buffalo (used both as a beast of burden and for riding), sheep with a short silky fleece, the goat, cat, dog, and pig, which last here reaches its southernmost limit. The tsetse fly appears to be absent, but is replaced in some districts by a species of wasp, whose sting is said to be fatal to the camel in the rainy season.*~~

~~*The 'African Mesopotamia" is occupied by a partly settled partly still nomad population of an extremely mixed character, including representatives of nearly all the chief ethnical divisions of the continent. But the great plain of Senndr is mainly occupied by Hassanieh Arabs in the north, by Abu-Rof (Rufaya) Hamites of Beja stock (Robert Hartmann) in the east as far as Fazogl, and elsewhere by the Funj (Fung, Fungheh), traditionally from beyond the White Nile, and affiliated by some to the Kordofan Nubas, by others more probably to the Nilotic Negro Shilliks. These Funj, who have been the dominant race since the 15th century, have become almost everywhere assimilated in speech, religion, and habits to the Arabs. Nevertheless on their sacred Mount Guleh the traveller Pruyssenaere found them still performing pagan rites, while according to Marno the Burins, the southernmost branch of the race between the Berta highlanders and the Nilotic Denkas, are addicted to cannibalism. The Berta highlanders themselves (Jebalain, as the Arabs collectively call them) are of more or less pure Negro stock and number about 80,000, grouped in several semi-independent principalities. The "no-man's-land " stretching north of Der era and east of the Tumat valley is also occupie by distinct nationalities, such as the Kadalos in the*~~

~~*extreme north, the Sienetjos and Gumus in the east, here bordering on the Abys- sinian Agaws, the Jabus and Ganti in the south. Most of these appear to be of Negro or Negroid stock ; but the Sienetjos, said to be a surviving remnant of the primitive population of the whole country, are doubtless akin to the Sienetjos of Damot and Gojam in Abyssinia. They are certainly not blacks, and have a yellow or fair complexion, lighter than that of southern Europeans.*~~

~~*The Sennari people cultivate a few industries, such ag cotton- weaving, pottery, gold, silver, and iron work, matting, and leather work (camel saddles, sandals, &c.), noted throughout Sidan. But their chief pursuits are stock-breeding, agriculture, and trade,— exporting to Egypt and Abyssinia gold, hides, durra, sesame, gums, ivory, horses, and slaves. The chief centres of population, all on the Bahr-el-Azrak, are Fazogl (Fazoklo), now replaced by Famaka, at the Tumat confluence; Roséres, formerly capital of an inde- pendent state ; Sennar, also an old capital, which gives its name to the whole region ; Wod-Medineh at the Rahad confluence; and Khartum, just above the junction of the two Niles. A few miles above Khartum are the extensive ruins of Soba, former capital of the Funj empire, which at one time stretched from Wady Halfa to Dar-Berta and from Suakin to beyond Kordofan, but which was overthrown by Ismail Pasha in the year 1822. (AHS)*~~

~~*SENANCOUR, Eimmunne Prvert pe (1770-1846), French man-of-letters, was born at Paris in November 1770. His family was noble and not poor, but its fortunes were ruined by the Revolution. Before that event, how- ever, Sénancour had met with mishap. He was a sickly youth and was destined for the church, but ran away from home and established himself in Switzerland. Here he married and spent some years; his wife died, and he re- turned to Paris about the end of the century. In 1804 he published the singular book entitled Obermann, which has continued to be in a fashion popular to the present day, and the next year a treatise De l'Amour, which had even more vogue at first, but is now little read. Obermann, which is to a great extent inspired by Rousseau, which attracted the admiration of George Sand, and which had*~~

~~*a considerable influence over the last generation in France and England, is a series of letters supposed to be written by a solitary and melancholy person, whose headquarters were in a valley of the Jura, but who writes also from divers other places. The style is meritorious, the descrip- tive power very considerable, the thought sometimes ori ginal, and the expression of a certain form of the maladie du siécle effective and striking. But, viewed from the strictly critical point of view, there is perhaps a certain unreality about the book. Its idiosyncrasy in the large class of Wertherian-Byronic literature has justly enough been said to be that the hero, instead of feeling the vanity of things, recognizes his own inability to be and do what he wishes. Sénancour is tinged to some extent with the older philosophe form of freethinking, and expresses less revolt from the 18th century than Chateaubriand. Having no resources but his pen, Sénancour during the half-century which elapsed between his return to France and his death at St Cloud in February 1846 was driven to literary hack work, and even his more independent productions have none of the attraction of Obermann. When George Sand and Sainte-Beuve revived interest in this latter, Thiers and Villemain successively obtained for the author from Louis Philippe pensions which enabled him to pass his last days in comfort. He committed the usual mistake of writing late in life a continuation to Obermann, entitled Isabelle (1833), but it has been wisely forgotten.*~~

~~*SENEBIER, Jean (1742-1809), a Swiss pastor and voluminous writer on vegetable physiology, was born at Geneva on 6th May 1742. He is remembered on account of his contributions to our knowledge of the influence of light on vegetation. Though Malpighi and Hales had shown that a great part of the substance of plants must be obtained from the atmosphere, no progress was made until more than a century later, when Bonnet observed on leaves plunged in aerated water bubbles of gas, which Priestley recognized as oxygen. Ingenhousz proved the contemporaneous disappearance of carbonic acid; but it was Senebier who clearly showed that this activity was confined to the green parts, and to these only in sunlight, and first gave a connected view of the whole process of vegetable nutrition in strictly chemical terms, so prepar- ing the way for the quantitative researches of N. T. de Saussure. Senebier died at Geneva on 22d July 1809.*~~

~~*See Sachs, Geschichte d. Botunik, and Arbeiten, vol. ii.*~~

~~*SENECA, Lucius Anyaus (c. 3 B.c.65 A.D.), the most brilliant figure of his time, was the second son of the rhe torician Marcus Anneeus Seneca, and, like him, a native of Corduba in Hispania. From his infancy of a delicate con- stitution, he devoted himself with intense ardour to rhetor- ical and philosophical studies and early won a reputation at the bar. Caligula threatened his life, and under Claudius his political career received a sudden check, for the influ- ence of Messalina having effected the ruin of Julia, the youngest daughter of Germanicus, Seneca, who was com- promised by her downfall, was banished to Corsica, 41 A.D. There eight weary years of waiting were relieved by study and authorship, with occasional attempts to procure his return by such gross flattery of Claudius as is found in the work Ad Polybium de Consolatione or the panegyric on Messalina which he afterwards suppressed. At length the tide turned ; the next empress, Agrippina, had him recalled, appointed preetor, and entrusted with the education of her son Nero, then (48) eleven years old. Seneca became in fact Agrippina's confidential adviser ; and his pupil's acces- sion increased his power. He was consul in 57, and during the first bright years of the new reign, the incomparable qguinguennium Neronis, he shared the actual administration of affairs with the worthy Burrus, the pretorian prefect. The government in the hands of these men of remarkable*~~

~~*SE N—*~~

~~*insight and energy was wise and humane; their influence over Nero, while it lasted, was salutary, though sometimes maintained by doubtful means. When there came the inevitable rupture between mother and son they sided with the latter; and Seneca, who drew up all Nero's state papers, was called upon to write a defence of matricide. We must, however, regard the general tendency of his*~~

~~*measures ; to judge him as a Stoic philosopher by the*~~

~~*counsels of perfection laid down in his writings would be much the same thing as to apply the standard of New Testament morality to the career of a Wolsey or Mazarin. He is the type of the man of letters who as courtier*~~

~~*and minister rises into favour by talent and suppleness (comitas honesta), and is entitled as such to the rare credit of a beneficent rule. In course of time Nero got to dislike him more and more; the death of Burrus in 62 gavea shock to his position. In vain did he petition for permis- sion to retire, offering to Nero at the same time his enor- mous fortune. Even when he had sought privacy on the plea of ill health he could not avert his doom ; on a charge of being concerned in Piso's conspiracy he was forced to commit suicide. HIs manly end might be held in some measure to redeem the weakness of his life but for the testimony it bears to his constant study of effect and ostentatious self-complacency (" conversus ad amicos, ima- ginem vite suc relinquere testatur"').*~~

~~*Seneca is at once the most eminent among the Latin writers of the Silver Age and in a special sense their representative, not least because he was the originator of a false style. The affected and sentimental manner which gradually grew up in the first century A.D. became ingrained in him, and appears equally in everything which he wrote, whether poetry or prose, as the most finished pro- duct of ingenuity concentrated upon declamatory exercises, sub- stauce being sacrificed to form and thought to point. Every variety of rhetorical conceit in turn contributes to the dazzling effect, now tinsel and ornament, now novelty and versatility of treatment, or affected simplicity and studied absence of plan. But the chief weapon is the epigram (senéentia), summing up in terse incisive antithesis the gist of a whole period. "Seneca is a man of real genius," writes Niebuhr, "which is after all the main thing ; not to be unjust to him, one must know the whole range of that litera- ture to which he belonged and realize how well he understood the art of making something even of what was most absurd." HIs works were upon various subjects. (1) HIs Orations, probably the speeches which Nero delivered, are lost, as also a biography of his father, and (2) his earlier scientific works, such as the monographs describing India and Egypt and one upon earthquakes (Nat. Qu., vi. 4, 2). The seven extant books of Physical Investigations (Natur- ales Questiones) treat in a popular manner of meteorology aud astronomy ; the work has little scientific merit, yet here and there Seneca, or his authority, has a shrewd guess, ¢.g., that there is a connexion between earthquakes and volcanoes, and that comets are bodies like the planets revolving in fixed orbits. (3) The Satire on the Death (and deifiesrtion) of*~~

~~*Claudius is a specimen of the " satira Menippea" or medley of prose and verse. The writer's spite against the dead emperor before whom he had cringed servilely shows in a sorry fashion when he fastens on the wise and liberal measure of conferring the franchise upon Gaul as a theme for abuse. (4) The remaining prose works are of the nature of moral essays, bearing various titles,—twelve so-called Dialogues, three books On Clemency dedicated to Nero, seven On Benefits, twenty books of Letters to Luetlius. They are all alike in discussing practical questions and in addressing a single reader in a tone of familiar conversation, the objections he is supposed to make being occasionally cited and answered. Seneca had the wit to discover that conduct, which is after all "three-fourths of life," could furnish inexhaustible topics of abiding universal interest far superior to the imaginary themes set in the schools and abundantly aualysed in his father's Contro- versie and Swasori#, such as poisoning cases, or tyrannicide, or even historical persons like Hannibal and Sulla. The innovation took the public taste,—plain matters of urgent personal concern sometimes treated casuistically, sometimes in a liberal vein with serious divergence from the orthodox standards, but always with an earnestness which aimed directly at the reader's edification, pro- gress towards virtue, and general moral improvement. The essays are in fact Stoic sermons; for the creed of the later Stoics had be- come less of a philosophical system and more of a religion, especially at Rome, where moral and theological doctrines alone attracted lively interest. The school is remarkable for its auticipation of modern ethical conceptions, for the lofty morality of its exhorta-*~~

~~*y EN 659*~~

~~*tions to forgive injuries and overcome evil with good ; the obligation to universal benevolence had been deduced from the cosmopolitan principle that all men are brethren. In Seneca, in addition to all this, there is a distinctively religious temperament, which finds ex- pression in phrases curiously suggestive of the spiritual doctrines of Christianity. Yet the verbal coincidence is sometimes a mcre accident, as when he uses sacer spiritus; and in the same writings he sometimes advocates what is wholly repulsive to Christian feel- ing, as the duty and privilege of suicide.*~~

~~*Eight of the tragedies which bear Seneca's name are undoubtedly genuine. In them the defects of his prose style are exaggerated : as specimens of pompous rant they are probably unequalled ; and the rhytlum is unpleasant owing to the monotonous structure of the iambics and the neglect of synapleia in the anapestic sys- tems. The pretexta Octavia, also ascribed to him, contains plain allusions to Nero's end, and must therefore be the product of a later hand. 5*~~

~~*Our materials fora knowledge of Seneca are ample, and are variously pre- sented in such works as Merivale's Romans under the Empire, cc. 52-54; Zeller's Greek Philosophy (Eng. tr. Eclecticism, pp. 202-245); and the histories of Roman literature by Bernhardy, Teuffel (§§ 282-285), and Simcox (ii. pp. 1-27, London, 1883). HIs elder brother Annus Seneca Novatus, afterwards adopted by a Junius Gallio, was the proconsul of Achaia before whom St Paul pleaded (Acts Xvili. 12). The date of Seneca's birth must be approximately inferred from Nat. Qu., i. 1, 3; Ep., 108, 22. HIs mother's name was HIelvia; her sister brought him as a child to Rome and nursed him tenderly. HIs teachers were Attalus, a Stoic, and Sotion, a pupil of the Sextii. In his youth he was a vegetarian and a water-drinker, but his father checked his indulgence in asceti- cisin. Before his exile he had served as questor, was married, and had two children born. Caligula said his style was mere mosaic (commisswras meras) or "sand without line," and would have put him to death, had he not been assured that so consumptive a subject could not last long (Suet., Calig., 63; Dio Cassius, lix. 19,7). Upona Pompeian fresco a butterfly appears as charioteer of a dragon,—Seneca and Nero. HIs second wife was Pompeia Paulina, of noble family ; she attempted to die with him. HIs enormous wealth was estimated at 300 millions of sesterces. HIe had 500 ivory tables inlaid with citron wood (Dio, 1xi. 10, Ixii. 2). The judginent of Tacitus (Ann., xiii. 4, 13, 42 sqg., xiv. 52-56, xv. 60 sq.) is more favourable than that of Dio, who may possibly derive his account from the slanders of some personal enemy like Suilius. Seneca has found many champions—Lipsius (the introduction to his ed.); Diderot, Essai sur les Regnes de Claude et de Néron (iii. 1-407, Paris, 1875); Volquardsen, Ehrenrettung (HIadersleben, 1839); Martha, Les Moralistes sous ! Envpire Romain (2d ed., Paris, 1866). For the dates of his works, see H. Lehmann, in Philologus, Viil. p. 309 ; F. Jonas, De ordine librorum Sen. (Berlin,*~~

~~1870); A. Martens, De Sen. vita (Altona, 1871); also R. Volkmann, in Mager's Pddagog. Revue, xviii. pp. 259-276 (1857). At least eighteen prose works have been lost, among them De superstitione, an attack upon the popular conceptions of the gods, and De matrimonio, which, to judge by the extant fragments, must have been interest – ing reading. Since Gellius (xii. 2, 3) cites a book xxii. of the Letters to Lucilius, some of these have been lost. His style is elaborately criticized by Quintilian (Inst., x. 1, 125-181), also by Fronto (p. 155 sq.; Gellius, xii. 2,1). The doubt as to his authorship of the tragedies is due to a blunder of Sidonius Apollinaris (ix. 229-231); against it must be set Quintilian's testimony ("ut Medea apud Senecam," 1x. 2, 8). Some of the Fathers, probably in admiration of his ethics, reckoned Seneca among the Christians ; this assumption in its turn led to the forgery of a correspondence between St Paul and Seneca, which was known to Jerome (comp. Augustin, Ep., 153: "'Seneca .. . cujus etiam ad Pauluin apostolum leguntur epistole"). This has given rise to an interesting historical problem, most thoroughly discussed in the commentary on the Zp. to the Philippians by Dr Lightfoot, bishop of Durham (London, new ed., 1879, pp. 270-333), who cites (p. 278 note) among earlier authorities A. Fleury, St Paul et Séneque (Paris, 1853); C. Aubertin, Etude (1853), also new ed. Séneque et St Paul (Paris, 1870); F. C. Baur (1858), republished in Drei Abhandlungen (Leip- sic, 1876); F. W. Farrar, Seekers after God (London, s.a.); and G. Boissier, in the Revue des Deux Mondes, xcii., 1871, pp. 40-71. Add the articles by F. X. Kraus in Theolog. Quartalschrift, vol. xlix. pp. 609-624 (Tiibingen, 1867) and by A. Harnack in Theolog. Lit.-Zeitung, 1881, pp. 444-449, the latter being a review a E. Yn eee Untersuchung der Sage, dass Seneca Christ gewesen set (Ber-~~

~~in, 1881).~~

~~The best text of the prose works, that of Haase in Teubner's series (1852), was re-edited in 1872-74; he followed the critical labours of Fickert (Berlin, 8 vols., 1842-45). More recently Gertz has revised the text of Libri de benejicits et de clementia (Berlin, 1876) and H. A. Koch that of the Dialogorum libri XII. (completed by Valilen, Jena, 1879). There is no complete exegetical comment- ary, either English or German. Biicheler's edition of the 'Amoxo\okUvTwots may be found in Symbola philol.~~

~~*Bonnens., i. (1864), pp. 31-89. Little has been done systematically since the notes of Lipsius and Gronovius. There is, how- ever, Ruhkopf's ed. with Latin notes, 5 vols. (Leipsic, 1797-1811), and Lemaire's variorum ed. (Paris, 1827-32, 8 vols., prose and verse). The text of the tragedies was edited by Peiper and Richter for Teubner's series (1867), and more recently by F. Leo (Berlin, 2 vols., 1878-79). Nisard, Etudes de mewrs et de critique sur les poétes de la decadence (4th ed., Paris, 1878), has criticized them in detail. Of some 300 monograplis enumerated in Engelmann may be mentioned, in addition to the above, G. Boissier, Les tragédies de Sénéque ont-ils été représentés ? (Paris, 1861); A. Dorgens, Senec. discipline moralis cum Antoniniana compuratio (Leipsic, 1857); E. F. Gelpke, De Senec. vita et moribus (Bern, 1848); Holzherr, Der Philosoph Seneca (Rastadt, 1858). (ORG DR Jal)*~~

~~*SENECA FALLS, a post village and township of the United States, in Seneca county, New York, 41 miles south-west of Syracuse by the Auburn division of the New York Central Railroad, occupies a beautiful situation on Seneca river, the outlet of Seneca Lake. It turns the water-power of the falls to account in the manufacture of steam fire-engines, fire-extinguishing apparatus, pumps, machinery, knit goods, flour, yeast, &c. The population of the village was 5880 in 1880 and of the township*~~

~~*6853.*~~

~~*SENEFELDER, Atots. pp. 697-698.*~~

~~*See LirHocrapny, vol. xiv.*~~

~~*660*~~

~~*SENEGAL, a river of western Africa, which falls into the Atlantic about 16° N. lat., 9 or 10 miles below St Louis. It is formed at Bafulabé! (13° 50' N. lat. and 10° 50' W. long.) by the junction of the Ba-fing or Black River and the Ba-khoy or White River. The Ba-fing, which has a width at the confluence of 1475 feet, descends from the highlands of Futa-Jallon by a northward course of about 350 miles, during which it passes by a series of rapids from the altitude of 2460 feet, at which it takes its rise, to that of 360 feet, and receives from the right the Nunkolo and the*~~

~~*Funkumah (with its tributary the Boki). The Ba-khoy, 800 feet wide at the confluence, has been previously flowing from east to west and gives that general direction to the Senegal, but its source is away in the south-east behind the country of Buré. That of its prin- cipal tributary, the Ba-ule (Red River), is more to the east and lies within a few miles of the course of the Niger in the Mandingo plateau. Below Bafulabé the Senegal, flow- ing north-west, passes a succession of falls—those of Guina (160 feet) and of Felu (50 or 60)—and arrives at Médine, after having accomplished 440 of its total course of 1000 miles. It receives only two important affluents,—from the right the "marigot" of Kulu, which comes from Kuniakhary, draining the slopes of the Kaarta plateau, and from the left the Falemé, which rises in the Futa-Jallon between Labé and Timbo and flows north-west in a permanent stream. Below Médine the Senegal presents a series of great reaches, which become more and more navigable as they approach the sea.*~~

~~*From the Ist of August to the 1st of October it is open as far as Médine to vessels not drawing more than 8 feet. Between Médine and Bakel (85 miles) there are twenty-seven " narrows," of which several, such as that at Kayes, are difficult ; it is on this account that a railway has been projected between Kayes and the Niger. At Bakel below the confluence of the Falemé the river is navigable till the 1st of December, from Bakel to Saldé between the 15th of July and the 15th of December, and lastly from Mafu to the sea for a distance of 215 miles it is navigable all the year round. Outside the limits indicated navigation between Mafu and Médine is often precarious even for barges drawing little over a foot, and above Médine, though some reaches are deep enough, troublesome transhipments are necessary between reach and reach. Between Mafu and Saldé the Senegal changes its direction from north-west to west, and shortly before reaching the sea to south-west. The bar at the mouth can usually be crossed by vessels not drawing more than 10 feet, or at High tides a little more. Below Bakel the river becomes tortuous and encloses the great island of Morfil, 110 miles long, and a series of other islands, of which one is occupied by St Louis. At this point the right branch of the river is only 500 feet from the sea, but the dunes along the coast turn it south for other 9 miles. The scantiness of its sources, the steepness of its upper course, and the rapid evaporation which takes place after the short*~~

~~rainy season would soon dry up the river-system of the Senegal, especially in the upper regions; but natural dams cross the channel at intervals and the water accumulates behind them in deep reaches, which thus act as reservoirs. In the rainy season the barriers are submerged in succession, beginning with the farthest up, the reaches are filled, and the plains of the lower Senegal are changed into immense marshes. Like Lake Meris in antiquity on the Nile and the lake of Cambodia at the present time on the Me-kong, Lake Cayor on the right side of the lower Senegal and Lake Panieful on the left constitute reserve basins, receiving the surplus waters of the river during flood and restoring them in the dry season. For months together the latter forms the only drink- ing pond for the wild beasts of the surrounding country,—lions, elephants, leopards, panthers, ounces, cheetahs, hyznas, lynxes, giraffes, antelopes, gazelles, monkeys, jackals visiting it in crowds. In the upper part of the river the reservoirs are successively emptied to the level of the dams and receive no more water except from the permanent springs; but they are partially protected by curtains of verdure from the effects of the evaporation which makes itself so severely felt on the treeless seaboard. Owing to these natural "locks," similar to those of an artificial canal, the Senegal river never discharges less than 1700 or 1800 cubic feet per second. The lower Senegal forms the boundary between the dry and barren Sahara and the rich and productive region of the western Sudan ; the line of its inundations is an ethnographic march between the nomadic Moor and the settled Negro.~~

~~a eee ee 1 Bafulabé is a native word for " confluence."~~

~~SENEGAE~~

~~SENEGAL,? a French colony of western Africa, com- posed of lines of fortified posts and a loose agglomeration of states and territories in various degrees of subjugation, The forts extend (a) from St Louis at the mouth of the Senegal to Bammako on the Niger,? (6) along the coast of the Atlantic between St Louis and the mouth of the Salum to the south of Cape Verd, and © along the so-called rivers of the south which fall into the ocean between the Gam- bia and Srerra Lzonz (¢.v.). French~~

~~*influence is fully dominant along those lines either in the form of actual territorial possession or of a recognized protectorate.!*~~

~~*The colony is ruled by a governor, sends a deputy to the French legislature, and elects a general council of sixteen members, ten for the electoral district of St Louis, four for that of Gorée-Dakar, and two for that of Rufisque. The three communes just named have each its municipal council. The population of those French pos- sessions was in 1884 197,644,— 46,364 urban, 143,200 rural, 8080 "floating." In the whole number there were only 1474 Europeans, of whom 1461 were French. The population of the protected countries cannot be aseertained. The most important places in the colony are St Louis (18,924 inhabitants in 1883), Dagana (5375), Rufisque (4244), Médine (3000), Joal (2372), Gorée and Dakar (each 2000). The colony has only a single true port, that of Dakar to the east of the peninsula of Cape Verd, since 1885 connected with St Louis by a railroad, 163 miles long, and visited by Atlantic steamers on their way from France to South America. Rufisque and Gorée have open roadsteads, where vessels anchor at some dis- tance from the shore. The port of St Louis in the Senegal is diffi- cult of access owing to the bar, but it is the only place where vessels can repair serious damages. The principal commercial centres are St Louis (imports and exports), Gorée (exports), and Rufisque (exports). The upper Senegal sends ground-nuts (known as Galam nuts), gum, millet, leather, and receives in exchange blue calico (guinée) from India, England, and Belgium, various other cotton stuffs, cotton yarn, guns and ammunition, tobacco, crushed rice, sugar (raw and refined), molasses, biscuits, tinsmiths' wares, &c. The colony also imports Swedish iron, which is manu- factured by the native blacksmiths into agricultural implements, knives, daggers, and spearheads. Cayor sells its ground-nuts for money. The rivers of the south district export ground-nuts, palm kernels, india-rubber, leather, coffce, in return for English and Bel- gian blue calico, Hamburg brandy, English gunpowder, English and Belgian guns, and American tobacco. An English firm has twenty-three factories on the Rio Nuftez, and others on the Rio Pongo and the Mellacorée. The total value of the exports and imports of the colony was £1,325,711 in 1879, £1,774,089 in 1880, and £1,888,657 in 1883, the imports slightly preponderating over the exports. The value of the ground-nuts exported*~~

~~*in 1883 was £700,000, that of the gums only £120,000; and the ground-nut trade is still rapidly developing. The imports comprise French*~~

- ~~*For the physical geography, &c., see SENEGAMBIA.*~~

~~*3 Along this line lie Richard Toll, Dagana (founded in 1821), Podor (1743 and 1854), Saldé (1859), Matam (1857), Bakel (1820), Kayes, Médine (1855), and Bafulabé (1879) on the Senegal, and between this river and the Niger the forts of Badumbé and Tukota on the Ba-khoy, Kita (1881), Kondu (1882), Niagassola (1884-85), and lastly Bam- mako (1883) or Bammaku, on the Niger.*~~

- ~~*ARRONDISSEMENT J.—On the circle of Bakel depend the post of Matam, the protected countries of Damga (1859), Guoy, Kamera, Guidimakha, Bondu, and Bambuk; on the circle of Afédine, Khasso, Logo, and Natiaga; ou the circle of Bafulabé, Barinta, Makadugu, Beteadugu, Farimbula, Bafing ; on the circle of Kita, the province of Kita and Fuladugu; on the circle of Bammako, Birgo and Little Beledugu. This arrondissement is under the command of a superior officer resident at Kayes. ARRONDISSEMENTS IJ., IJI.—These are formed by Lao and Toro (1863), protected countries attached to the circle of Saldé; the circle of Poedor, which comprises the French portion of Toro and a fragment of Dimar; the circle of Dagana, on which depend the other portion of Dimar and a portion of Walo; the sub- urban district of St Louis, including the other portion of Walo, Ross, Merinaghen, the cantons of Gandiole, M'pal, Khattet, Gondu, Diala- khar, N'diago, and Tubé; N'diambor and Merina N'guick, separated from Cayor and placed under French protection, as well as the king- doms of Cayor and Baol; the suburb of Dakar with the island oi Gorée, the cantons of Rufisque and the circles of ALbijem, Thies, Portudal, and Joal. ARRONDISSEMENT IV.—The Rivers of the South district constitutes the fourth arrondissement under a lieutenant- governor, and comprises the circle of Kaolack or Salwm; those cof Carabane and Sedhiu on the Cazamance, with the protected countries of Pakao, Balmadu, Suna, Yacine, Firdu; the circle of Rio Nwhea formed by the Nalus and Landuman tribes; the circle of the tio Pongo with the country of the Susus; the circle of*~~

~~*Afellacorée with the protected countries of Samo, Kaback, Kabita, Kalum, Tabussv, Maneah, Correra, and the island of Tombo.*~~

~~*SEHEN—SEN*~~

~~*goods £360,000, goods passing as French £200,000, foreign goods £440,000, of which £240,000 represent English, £200,000 Belgian, £120,000 German, £80,000 American articles. In 1882 946 vessels entered and 960 cleared. The budget for the colony in 1884 was £100,320, for the communal expenses £14,560, and for the expenses of the capital £250,000.*~~

~~*History.—The navigators of Dieppe are said to have discovered the Senegal about 1360. The Portuguese had some establishments on its banks in the 15th century ; and the first French settlements were probably formed in the latter part of the 16th or beginning of the 17th century. Between 1664, when these French settlements were assigned to Colbert's West India Company, and 1758, when the colony was scized by the English, Senegal had passed under the administration of no fewer than seven different companies, none of which attained any great success, though from 1694 to 1724 affairs were conducted by a really able governor, André Brue. In 1677 the French captured from the Dutch Rufisque, Portudal, Joal, and Gorée, and they were confirmed in possession of these places by the treaty of Nimeguen (1678). In 1717 they acquired Portendic and in 1724 Arguin on the coast of the Sahara, which still belong to the colony. Gorée and the district of Cape Verd were surrendered by the English to the French in 1763, and by the treaty of peace in 1783 the whole of the Senegal was also restored ; but the English again captured the colony in the wars of the first empire (Gorée 1800, St Louis 1809), and, though the treaty of Paris authorized a complete restitution, the French authorities did not enter into pos- session till 1817. Between that date and 1854 little was effected by the thirty-seven governors who succeeded each other at St Louis; but in this year the appointment of General Faidherbe proved the turn- ing-point in the history of Senegal. He at once set about subduing the Moorish (Berber) tribes of the Trarzas, Braknas, and Duaish, whose " kings," especially the king of the Trarzas, had subjected the French settlers and traders to the*~~

~~most grievous and arbitrary exactions ; and he bound them by treaty to confine their authority to the north bank of the Senegal. In 1855 he annexed the country of Walo and erected the fort of Médine in the country of Khasso. This last was a bold stroke for the purpose of stemming the ad- vancing tide of Moslem invasion, which under Omar al-Hadji (Alegui) threatened the safety of the colony. In 1857 Médine was brilliantly defended by the mulatto Paul Holle against Omar, who with his army of 20,000 men had to retire before the advance of General Faidherbe and turn his attention to the conquest of the native states of the Sudan. By treaty of 1860 Omar recognized the French claiin to half of Bambuk, half of Khasso, Bondu, Kamera, Guoy, Guidimakha, Damga, Futa-Toro, Dimar, &c. Since then annexations and protectorates have followed in rapid succession under the governorships of Jauréguiberry, Faidherbe, and Briére de V'Isle. It is sufficient to mention the treaties of 1881 and 1885 by which the confederation of Futa-Jallon and Buré respectively recognized a French protectorate.~~

~~.See Jannequin de Rochefort, Voyage de Libye aw royaume de Sénéga, 1648 ; Adanson, Histoire naturel dw Sénégal, 1757; Mollien, Voyage dans U'intérieur del Afrique fait aux sources du Sénégal et de la Gambie en 1818-1820 ; Tardieu, Sénégambie et Guinée, 1847; Faidherbe on " Populations noires des bassins du Sénégal et du Niger," in Bull. Soc. de Géogr., Paris, 1854; Sénégal et Niger, la France dans U Afrique Occidentale, 1879-88, published by the Ministry of Marine, 1884; Faidherbe, Le Soudan francais, Lille, 1881-85 ; Notices Coloniales pub. a Voccasion de l Exposition d' Anvers, 1885; Annales Sénégalaises de 1854 & 1585, swivies des traités passés avec les indigenes, 1886 ; and Rambaud, 'Sénégal et Soudan Frangais," in Revue des Deum Mondes, 1885.~~

~~SENEGAMBIA, a country in the west of equatorial Africa, comprising, as the name indicates, the regions watered by the Senegal and the Gambia. It lies between 9° and 17° N. lat. and 6° and 17° 30' W. long., being bounded on the N. by the Sahara, W. by the Atlantic, S. by Sierra Leone, and E. by the Joliba or upper Niger. The area is estimated at about 400,000 square miles. Accepting the course of the Senegal and its right hand affluent the Ba-ule as the boundary towards the Sahara, the Joliba~~

~~*as the frontier towards Segu and Upper Guinea, and the watershed between the Mellacorée (Mellicoury) and the Great Scarcies as that between Senegambia and Sierra Leone, we have only for short distances to fall back on a mere conventional delimitation,—in the north between Sidian on the Ba-ule and Sansanding on the Niger via Murdia; in the south-east, from Sansanding to a point above Nyamina; and finally between the Joliba and the sources of the Great Scarcies. The Senegambian coast extends south-south-west almost in a straight line from the N'diadier or Mosquito lagoon (Marigot des Ma- ringouins), formerly the northern mouth of the Senegal, to Cape Verd, the most western point of the African con- tinent ; then it bends south as far as Cape Roxo; and*~~

~~*661*~~

~~*afterwards south-east as far as the Mellacorée. With the exception of the two great capes just mentioned, the only headlands of any importance are Cape St Mary, forming the south side of the estuary of the Gambia ; Cape Verga, between Rio Nufiez and Rio Pongo; and Konakry Point, opposite the Los (or Idolos) Islands. The only gulf on the whole coast is that which lies to the south of Cape Verd and contains the island of Goris (¢.v.); the other inlets, such as the bay of Sangareah, are mere estuaries or river mouths. Apart from the island in the Senegal on which St Louis is built and those formed by the deltas of the rivers, the only islands along the coast are Gorée, the Bissagos (or Bijug) Archipelago, the Los Islands, and the*~~

~~*Mosquito Lag/fy 14 Pade, Reng > o Dagana "9 & os Richana Toll 1 g L.f(G@uy er or Paraeful . 16 S$? LOVISY a Senegal] Rav F*~~

~~*4*~~

<u>º</u>

~~*'Y*~~

~~*oKhorkhol*~~

~~***‘alls oJallakotta Sadi***~~

~~*Rarrakonda*~~

~~*Carabane as ROE pence ; Zighinchor*~~

~~*c.Ro®? ® Cacheo 1z Rr.cac Bis say Qa ad OY, 7,*~~

~~*Be*~~

~~*7*~~

~~*Bissagos — ?. Archipelago 7B) 1)*~~

~~*Matakong 1. MellacoréeH Yellaborl.y R.Sterry 7*~~

~~*F Cop, , CSierralLeone SierraLeone Pen*OFREET*~~

~~*<>*~~

~~*English Miles ° .° wo*~~

~~*Map of Senegambia.*~~

~~*little island of Matakong. The coast in the northern part has the same appearance as that of the Sahara,—low, arid, desolate, and dune-skirted, its monotony relieved only here and there by cliffs and plateaus. Farther south it be- comes low, marshy, and clothed with luxuriant vegetation.*~~

~~*Behind the low flat seaboard the country rises into a vast Interior.*~~

~~*plateau terminating eastwards in a mountainous region. Though of no great height, these mountains cover a large area and have numerous ramifications. Farther to the east they sink abruptly towards the Niger valley, while southwards they are prolonged towards Sierra Leone and the interior of Upper Guinea, perhaps forming those Kong Mountains which are said to exist between the ocean and the Niger basin. Under the name of Mounts Badet, Yandi, Maté, Kissi (of which the first form the '" Alps" of Futa-Jallon) they descend on the west by a series of terraces to the plains of Senegambia, and on the north they extend to the left bank of the*~~

~~*Senegal and even throw out some spurs into the desert beyond. The moun- tain region is cut by numerous erosion valleys. As to the general altitude nothing is accurately known, but the fol- lowing points have been determined—Mount Daro, 4068 feet ; Kuruworo, 3868 ; Warnani, 3799; Yenkina, 3560 ; Bogoma, 3524; Pampaya, 3290. The principal rivers are the Senegal, the Salum, the Yombas, the Gambia, the Casamance, the Cacheo, the Geba, the Rio Grande, the*~~

~~*Geology;*~~

~~*Climate.*~~

~~*Flora.*~~

~~*662*~~

~~*Cassini, the Compony, the Rio Nufiez, the Rio Pongo, the Dubreka or Konakry, the Forecareah, and the Mellacorée. They all rise in the mountains of the interior or at the foot of the highlands and fall into the Atlantic. Their general direction is from east to west with a south-west deflexion, which becomes always more pronounced as we advance southwards. Unlike these rivers, the. Joliba or NicEr (g.v.), flowing north and north-east, soon passes beyond Senegambia. Lagoons and backwaters are com- mon ; but there are no true lakes of any importance.*~~

~~*The geological constitution of the country is as yet very imper- fectly known, especially in the interior. The low region of the seaboard has a very uniform character. It consists of sandstones or clay rocks and loose beds of reddish soil containing marine shells. At certain points, such as Cape Verd and Cape Roxo, the sand- stones crop out; it is the red colour of the sandstone in fact which has given Cape Roxo or Cap Rouge its name. Clay slates also occur, and at intervals these sedimentary strata are interrupted by basaltic amygdaloid and volcanic rocks. For instance, the island of Gorée is basaltic ; the Bissagos (Bissio) Islands are composed of scoriz and other volcanic products ; and a great part of the coast to the north of Rio Nufiez consists of basaltic and amygdaloid rocks. The base of the mountains is formed in certain places of clay slate, but more generally of granite, porphyry, syenite, or trachyte. In those districts unica*~~

~~*schists and iron ores occur. Iron and gold are found in the mountains and thealluvial deposits. The streams also carry down gold dust. Many of the valleys are covered with fertile soils and there is generally a fertile belt along the river sides; but the rest of the couutry is rather arid and sterile.*~~

~~*The climate is far from being so unhealthy as is frequently asserted. Except when yellow fever is raging, Europeans may live there as satisfactorily as at home. There are two seasons, the dry season and the rainy season or winter, the latter contemporaneous with our summer. Along the seaboard the dry season is cool and agreeable; in the interior it is mild only for the three months which correspond to our winter, and then it becomes a time of in- tolerable heat. The annual temperature increases as we advance south and more rapidly as we advance east into the interior, except, of course, where an ascent is made to higher altitudes. To the south of Cape Verd the changes of temperature become less and less marked ; Bissio has a more equable climate than Gorée. East- wards the monthly range of the thermometer becomes more exten- sive, The maximum readings, which are exceptional at St Louis, become almost the rule at Bakel on the upper Senegal and at MacCarthy on the Gambia. In the north, on the banks of the Senegal, the north-east trade- winds blow for eight months of the year, the daily land and sea breezes which cool the atmosphere along the seaboard not being felt far inland. During the other four months there prevails a gentle south-west monsoon accom- panied with frequent calms, storms, tornadoes, and rains. South- wards along the coast the trade-winds gradually decrease in both strength and duration, while the south-west monsoon becomes more powerful and persistent. The rainy season begins at Gorée between 27th June and 13th July, on the Gambia about 20th June, on the Casamance about the end of May, at the Bissagos Archipelago about the middle of May, and on the Rio Nufiez at the end of April. During this season Senegambia, drenched by heavy rains brought from the ocean, has everywhere one uniform appearance. The mean temperature is thioughout very close on 81° Fahr. and the range of the thermometer is extremely limited. The rivers overflow and flood the lowlands. Storms are frequent. Vegetation displays its fullest energy. The fever exhalations are unfortunately also at their worst. At St Louis, Gorée, Dagana, and all along the Senegal there are 35 days of rain, a slight increase being apparent in the upper course of the*~~

~~*river. At St Mary's, Bathurst, there are 48 days, at Sedhiu 84, at Bissfo 111, at Boké 137,—a steady increase as we approach the equator. The number of storms follows almost the same ratio of increase, and showers which last two or three hours at St Louis give place to whole days of rain on the Casamance and the Rio Nufiez.*~~

~~*The king of the Senegambian trees is the baobab (Adansonia digitata), which sometimes at the height of 24 feet has a diameter of 34 feet and a circumference of 104. Acacias are very numerous, one species, 4. Adansonia, being indeed the commonest of all Sene- gambian trees and valuable for its ship-timber. Among the palm- trees the ronier deserves to be mentioned, as the wood resists moisture and the attacks of insects; in some places, as in Cayor, it forms magnificent forests. The wood of the cailcedra (Khaya senegalensis), a tall tree, is used in joiner's work and inlaying, and its bark furnishes a bitter tonic. The mampatas grows sometimes 100 feet high, its branches beginning only at a height of about 25 feet. The tree producing the famous kola-nut! grows on the banks*~~
~~*——_—ee ee ee ee ee*~~

~~*1 A very complete account of this nut will be found in N achtigal, Sahara und Sudan.*~~

~~*SENEGAMBIA*~~

~~*of the southern streams. It is almost needless to mention the m'bilor, the gonat, the mimosa, fig-trees, orange-trees, cocoa-palms, mango-trees, pomegranates, sycamores, and so on. The dimbh, the neteru, the tiamanoi, the dimbguton, the gologne, the n'tabo yield edible fruits. The cultivated plants are millet, rice, tobacco, haricots, ground-nuts, indigo (wild indigo is also abun- dant), cotton (also found wild), maize, sugar-cane, and the butter- tree or karité.*~~

~~*The Senegambian lion is quite different from the Barbary lion ;: Fauna,*~~

~~*its colour is a deeper and brighter yellow, and its mane is neither so thick nor so long, Other beasts of prey are the lcopard, the wild cat, the cheetah, the civet, and the hyena. The wild boar is clumsier than the European variety. Antelopes and gazelles occur in large herds all through*~~

~~upper Senegambia; the giraffe is common in the region of the upper Senegal; the elephant is rare; the hippopotamus is gradually disappearing. Crocodiles swarm both in the upper Senegal and the upper Niger. Monkeys and apes of different species (the chimpanzee, the colobus, the cynocephalus, &c.), the squirrel, rat, and mouse abound. The hedgehog, marmot, © porcupine, hare, rabbit, &c., are also met with. Among the more noteworthy birds are the ostrich, which migrates to the Sahara; the bustard, occurring in desert and uncultivated districts; the marabout, a kind of stork, with its beak black in the middle and red at the point, which frequents the moist meadow-lands and the lagoons ; the brown partridge, the rock partridge, and the quail in the plains and on the mountain sides; and the guinea-fowl in the thickets and brushwood. Along the coast are caught the sperm whale, the manatee, and the cod-fish. The domestic animals are the horse, ass, ox, sheep, goat, dog, and camel.~~

~~The population of Senegambia cannot be ascertained with any Popula approach to accuracy, but it may be roughly stated at from ten to tion,~~

~~twelve millions. It comprises three distinct races,—the Moor, the Negro, and the European. The Moors, or rather Berbers (Trarzas, Braknas, and Duaish), belong strictly to the right bank of the Senegal and appear in Senegambia only exceptionally. The Negroes form the bulk of the population. They are divided into Pouls (Peuls, Fulbe, Fulah, or Fellatah), Toucouleurs, Man- dingoes, Sarakolés, Wolofs, Sereres, Diolas, Bambaras, Balantes, Biafares, Papels, Nalus, Landumans, Bagas, and Susus. The Pouls inhabit Futa, Damga, Bondu, and Futa-Jallon ; they havea reddish complexion and almost straight hair, their body fairly stout, but their limbs slim. They are gentle and hospitable, but addicted to theft. The Toucouleurs, Poul half-breeds, belonging originally to Futa-Jallon, are similar to the Negro proper ; they are treacherous, warlike, fond of plunder, and fanatical in their Moham- medanism, The Mandingoes or Malinkés inhabit the basins of the upper Niger and the upper Senegal and the western slope of the mountains of Futa-Jallon. They comprise the Mandingo proper, occupying Manding, and the Malinkés and Soninkés, scattered about Bambuk, Buré, and Fuladugu. Under the name of Wakore or Wangara they are also found in all the immense tract which~~

~~*extends to the north of the Kong Mountains. They arc tall of stature and of great muscular strength. The Sarakolés are one of the branches of the Bambara race produced by crossing with the Pows. Their character is mild and pacific. Scattered about in Guoy, Kamera, and Guidimakha, they are fond of trade and engage in it with activity. The Wolofs and the Sereres inhabit the sea- board from St Louis to Cape Verd and the left bank of the Senegal from its mouth to Richard Toll and Dagana. They are tall and robust, with black and glossy skin. Most of them are fetishists. The Diolas have flat noses, thick lips, harsh features, and a promi- nent belly; the body is tattooed. The Bambaras, who have invaded Kaarta and Khasso, have a coppery black complexion and frizzly hair; their cheeks are inarked with deep scars. The Balantes inhabit the left bank of the Casamance; they are as cruel and as fond of pillage as the Mandingoes, but are more generous towards the vanquished. The Biafares live on the banks of the Rio Grande and the Papels in the valley of the Cacheo and the Geba, The Nalus and the Landumans are tributary to the French ports of the Rio Nutfiez and the Rio Pongo. Islam is gradually detaching them from fetishism. The Bagas occupy the coast between the Rio Nutiez and the Rio Pongo. The Susus formerly dwelt on the upper Niger, but they were expelled by the invasion of the Moham- medans and are at the present time settled in the valley of the Rio Pongo. The principal languages of Senegambia are Wolof, Poul, Sereres, Mandingo, and Arabic. Wolof is spoken ina large part of Senegambia, in Wolof, Walo, Cayor, Dakar, Baol, Sine, Salum, and in the towns of St Louis and Gorée. The river Senegal marks the line of separation between Wolof and Arabic. Poul is the lan- guage of the Pouls and the Toucouleurs; Mandingo comprises several dialects,—Malinké, Soninké, Bambara. The few Europeans are mainly civil and military officials or traders. White planters are rare. The natives of Senegambia are generally divided into two quite distinct classes,—freemen and slaves. The griots are a kind of bards or trouvéres who live at the expense of those whose praises they sing. Polygamy is generally practised. Circumcision of the adults of both sexes is a rite accompanied with superstitious*~~

~~*observances. Every canton, every village in independent Sene- gambia is governed either by a chief ("king") or by an "almamy" elected by a group of villagers.*~~

~~*Senegambia is divided into French Senegambia (with the terri- tories placed under French protection), English Senegambia, Portu- guese Senegambia, and independent Senegambia, comprising the native states not under the protection of a European power. French Senegambia is called the colony of SENEGAL (¢.v.). English Senegambia comprises the establishments of the GAmBIA (q.v.) and the islands of Los. Portuguese Senegambia consisted till quite recently of Bissagos Archipelago and the " factories" of Zighinchor on the Casamance, Cacheo and Farim on the Rio Cacheo, and Geba on the Geba. By an arrangement effected in 1886 Portugal ceded Zighinchor to France in exchange for Massabé on the Loango coast. Germany, which seemed at one time disposed to place various territories of Dubreka, Koba, and Kabitai under its protection, las formally abandoned the plan. The independent states are not very numerous, but for the most part they are more extensive than the protected countries. They were quite recently —Jolof, lying be- tween the Senegal and the Gambia in one direction and between the Falemé and the ocean in the other; Buré in the Mandingo region, a territory abounding in gold; Guidimakha in Gangara, on the right bank of the Senegal. There still remain among the more important Kaarta, the country of Segu, and Futa-Jallon.*~~

~~*Several lines of English, French, and German packets call at the Senegambian ports, and small steamers ascend the navigable por- tions of the rivers. A railway unites St Louis and Dakar, and another line is being constructed from Kayes to Bafulabé (on the upper Senegal), with a projected extension to Bammako. There is telegraphic communication between Dakar and St Louis, and a second line puts all the ports of the upper Niger and the left bank of the Senegal into connexion with St Louis, which has touch of Europe by means of a submarine cable passing by way of the Canary Islands to Cadiz. The foreign trade of Senegambia consists in the exportation of gums, ground-nuts, sesame, oil, india-rubber, birds' feathers, hides, wax, and ivory, coffee from the Rio Nufiez, and rice from the Casamance, and the importation of iron, alcoholic*~~

~~*liquors, firearms, ammunition, coral, beads, tobacco, preserved foods, and blue calico (guinée). (Dk)*~~

~~*SENICR, Nassau Wirr1am (1790-1864), English political economist, was born at Compton, Berks, on 26th September 1790, the eldest son of the Rev. J. R. Senior, vicar of Durnford, Wilts. IIe was educated at Eton and Magdalen College, Oxford; at the university he was a private pupil of Richard Whately, afterwards archbishop of Dublin, with whom he remained connected by ties of lifelong friendship. IIe took the degree of B.A. in 1811, was called to the bar in 1819, and in 1836, during the chancellorship of Lord Cottenham, was appointed a master in chancery. On the foundation of the professorship of political economy at Oxford in 1825, Senior was elected to fill the chair, which he occupied till 1830, and again from 1847 to 1852. In 1830 he was requested by Lord Melbourne to inquire into the state of combinations and strikes, to report on the state of the law, and to suggest improvements in it. IIe was a member of the Poor Law Inquiry Commission of 1832, and of the IIandloom Weavers Commission of 1837; the report of the latter, published in 1841, was drawn up by him, and he embodied in it the substance of the report he had prepared some years before on combinations and strikes. IIe was also one of the commissioners appointed in 1861 to inquire into popular education in England. In the later years of his life, during his visits to foreign countries, he studied with much care the political and social phenomena they exhibited. Several volumes of his journals have been pub- lished, which contain much interesting matter on these topics, though the author probably rated too highly the value of this sort of social study. Senior was for many years a frequent contributor to the Edinburgh, Quarterly, London, and North British Reviews, dealing in their pages with literary as well as with economic and political sub- jects. IIe died at Kensington on 4th June 1864.*~~

~~*IIis writings on economic theory consisted of an article in the Encyclopedia Metropolitana, afterwards separately published as An Outline of the Science of Political Economy (1836, 3d ed. 1854), and his lectures delivered at Oxford. Of the latter the following were printed—An Introductory Lectwre (1827, 3d ed. 1831); Two Lec-*~~

tures on Population, with a correspondence between the author and Malthus (1831); Three Lectures on the Transmission of the Precious Metals from Country to Country, and the Mercantile Theory of Wealth (1828) ; Three Lectures on the Cost of obtaining Money and on some Effects of Private and Government Paper Money (1880); Three Lectures on Wages and on the Effeets of Absentceism, Machin- ery, and War, with a Preface on the Causes and Remedies of the Present Disturbances (1830, 2d ed. 1831); 4 Lectwre on the Produc- tion of Wealth (1847); and Four Introdwetory Lectures on Political Economy (1852). Several of his lectures were translated into French by M. Arrivabéne under the title of Principes Fondamentaux a' Economie Politique (1835). Senior also wrote on administrative and social questions—A Letter to Lord Howick on a Legal Provision Sor the Irish Poor, Commutation of Tithcs, and a Provision for the Irish Roman Catholic Clergy (1831, 3d ed. 1832, with a preface containing suggestions as to the measures to be adopted in the "present emergency"); Statement of the Provision for the Poor and of the Condition of the Labouring Classes in a considerable portion of America and Europe, being the Preface to the Foreign Communi- cations in the Appendia to the Poor Law Report (1835); On National Property, and on the Prospects of the Present Administration and of their Successors (anon. ; 1835); Letters on the Factory Act, as it affects the Cotton Manufacture (1837) ; Suggestions on Popular Edu- cation (1861); American Slavery (in part a reprint from the Edin- burgh Review; 1862); An Address on Education delivered to the Social Science Association (1863). His contributions to the reviews were collected in volumes entitled Hssays on Fiction (1864) ; Bio- graphical Sketches (1865, chiefly of noted lawyers) ; and Historical and Philosophical Essays (1865). In 1859 appeared his Journal kept in Turkey and Greece in the Autumn of 1857 and the Beginning of 1858; and the following were edited after his death by his daughter—Journals, Conversations, and Essays relating to Ireland (1868) ; Jowrnals kept in France and Italy from 1848 to 1852, with a Sketch of the Revolution of 1848 (1871) ; Conversations with Theers, Guizot, and other Distinguished Persons during the Sccond Limpire (1878) ; Conversations with Distinguished Persons during the Second Empire, from 1860 to 1868 (1880) ; Conversations and Journals in Egypt

~~*and Malta (1882); also in 1872 Correspondence and Conver- sations with Alexis de Tocqueville from 1884 to 1859.*~~

~~*Senior's literary criticisms do not seem to have cver won the favour of the public; they are, indeed, somewhat formal and academic in spirit. The author, while he had both good sense and right feeling, appears to have wanted the deeper insight, the geniality, and the catholic tastes which are necessary to make a critic of a high order, especially in the field he chose, that, namely, of imaginative literature. THis tracts on practical politics, though the theses they supported were sometimes questionable, were ably written and are still worth reading, but cannot be said to be of much permanent interest. But his name will continue to hold an honourable, though secondary, place in the history of political economy. Senior regards a ee economy as a purely deductive science, all the truths of which are inferences from four elementary propositions. It is, in his opinion, wrongly supposed by J. 8. Mill and others to be a hypothetic science,—founded, that is to say, on postulates not corresponding with social realities. The premises from which it sets out are, according to him, not assumptions but facts. It concerns itself, however, with wealth only, and can therefore give no practical counsel as to political action : it can only suggest considerations which the politician should keep in view as elements in the study of the questions with whicli he has to deal. The con- ception of economics as altogether deductive is certainly erroneous, and puts the science from the outset on a false path. But de- duction has a real, though limited, sphere within it. Hence, though the chief difficulties of the subject are not of a logical kind, yet accurate nomenclature, strict definition, and rigorous reasoning are of great importance. To these Senior has given special atten- tion, and, notwithstanding occasional pedantries, with very useful results. He has in several instances improved the forms in which accepted doctrines were habitually stated. He has also done ex- cellent service by pointing out the arbitrary novelties and frequent inconsistencies of terminology which deface Ricardo's principal work,—as, for example, his use of "value" in the sense of " cost of production," and of "high" and "low" wages in the sense of a certain proportion of the product as distinguished from an absolute amonnt, and his peculiar employment of the epithets "fixed" and "circulating" as applied to capital. He shows, too, that in numerous instances the premises*~~

~~assumed by Ricardo are false. Thus he cites the assertions that rent depends on the difference of fertility of the different portions of land in cultivation; that the labourer always receives precisely the necessaries, or. what custom leads him to consider the necessaries, of life; that, as wealth and population advance, agricultural labour becomes less and less pro- portionately productive ; and that therefore the share of the pro- duce taken by the landlord and the labourer must constantly in- crease, whilst that taken by the capitalist must constantly diminish ; and he denies the truth of all these propositions. Besides adopting some terms, such as that of "natural agents," from Say, Senior~~

~~introduced the word " abstinence "—which, though obviously not free from objection, is for some purposes uscful—to express the conduct of the capitalist which is remunerated by interest ; but in defining "cost of production " as the sum of labour and abstinence necessary to production he does not seem to see that an amount of labour and an amount of abstinence are disparate, and do not admit of reduction to a common quantitative standard. He has added some important considerations to what had been said by Smith on the division of labour. He distinguishes usefully between the rate of wages and the price of labour. But in seeking to deter- mine the law of wages he falls into the error of assuming a deter- minate wage-fund, and states as an economic truth what is only an identical proposition in arithmetic. Whilst entertaining such an exaggerated estimate of the services of Malthus that he extra- vagantly pronounces him "as a benefactor of mankind on a level with Adam Smith," he yet shows that he modified his opinions on population considerably in the course of his career, regards his statements of the doctrine with which his name is associated as vague and ambiguous, and asserts that, "in the absence of disturb- ing causes, subsistence may be expected to increase in a greater ratio than population." It is urged by Périn, and must, we think, be admitted, that by his isolation of economics from morals, and his assumption of the desire of wealth as the sole motive-force in the economic domain, Senior has, in cgmmon with most of the other followers of Smith, tended to set up egoism as the legitimate ruler and guide of practical life. It is no sufficient answer to this charge~~

~~*that he makes formal reserve in favour of higher ends. From the scientific side, Cliffe Leslie has abundantly proved the unsubstantial nature of the abstraction implied in the phrase " desire of wealth," and the inadequacy of such a principle for the explanation of economic phenomena. (Ua KS 1b)*~~

~~*SENLIS, a town of France, in the department of Oise, lies on the right side of the Nonette, a left-hand affluent of the Oise, 34 miles north-north-east of Paris by the Northern Railway on the branch line (Chantilly-Crépy) connecting the Paris-Creil and Paris-Soissons lines. In 1881 it had only 6870 inhabitants ; but its antiquity, its historical monuments, and its situation in a beautiful valley, in the midst of the three great forests of Hallatte, Chantilly, and Ermenonville, render it interesting. Its Gallo-Roman walls, 23 feet high and 13 feet thick, are, with those of St Lizier (Ariege) and Bourges, the most perfect in France. They enclose an oval area 1024 feet long from east to west and 794 feet wide from north to south. At each of the angles formed by the broken lines of which the circuit of 2756 feet is composed stands or stood a tower ; number- ing originally twenty-eight, and now only sixteen, they are semicircular in plan, and up to the height of the wall are unpierced. The Roman city had only two gates; the present number is five. The site of the prztorium was afterwards occupied by a castle occasionally inhabited by the kings of France from Clovis to HHenry IV. and still represented by ruins dating from the 11th, 13th, and 16th centuries. In the neighbourhood of Senlis the foundations of a Roman amphitheatre, 138 feet by 105, have also been discovered. The old cathedral of Notre Dame (12th, 13th, and 16th centuries) was begun in 1155 on a vast scale ; but owing to the limited resources of the diocese progress was slow and the transept was finished only under Francis I. The total length is 269 feet, but the nave (98 feet high) is Shorter than the choir. At the west front there are three doors and two bell towers. The right-hand tower (256 feet high) is very striking: it consists, above the belfry stage, of a very slender octagonal drum with open-work turrets and a spire with eight dormer windows. The left- hand tower, altered in the 16th century, is crowned by a balustrade and a sharp roof. In the side portals, especi- ally in the southern, the flamboyant Gothic is displayed in all its delicacy. Externally the choir is extremely simple. In the interior the sacristy pillars with capitals of the 10th century*~~

~~*are noteworthy. The episcopal palace, now an archeological museum, dates from the 13th century; the old collegiate church of St Frambourg was rebuilt in the 12th century in the style which became characteristic of*~~

~~*the "saintes chapelles" of the 13th and 14th centuries; St_*~~

~~*Pierre, though enclosed by cavalry barracks, has preserved*~~

~~*SHEN—SEN*~~

~~*its two towers. The ecclesiastical college of St Vincent, occupying the old abbey of this name, has a very elegant church, the date of which has been greatly disputed by archeologists, who sometimes wrongly refer it to Queen Anne of Russia. The town-house and several private houses are also of architectural interest.*~~

~~*Senlis can be traced back to the Gallo-Roman township of the Silvanectes which afterwards became Augustomagus. Christianity was introduced by St Rieul at the close of the 3d century. During the first two dynasties of France Senlis was a royal residence. After the dismemberment of the Carlovingian empire it belonged to the counts of Vermandois and then to the royal domain, and obtained a communal charter in 1173. Its bishop, Guérin, elected in 1214, signalized himself at the battle of Bouvines. The burgesses took part in the Jacquerie of the 14th century, then sided with the Burgundians and the English, whom, however, they afterwards expelled. The Leaguers were there beaten by the duke of Longue- ville and La Noue. In the time of HIenry IV. the local manufac- tures employed 200 masters and 4000 men, but all industrial activity has now disappeared. The bishopric was suppressed at the Revolu- tion, and this suppression was confirmed by the Concordat.*~~

~~*SENNA (Arab. sand), a popular purgative, consisting of the leaves of two species of Cassia, viz., C'. acutifolia, Del., and C. angustifolia, Vahl. C. acutifolia is a native of many districts of Nubia, e.g., Dongola, Berber, Kordofan, and Senaar, but is grown also in Timbuctoo and Sokoto. The leaflets are collected twice a year by the natives, the principal crop being gathered in September after the rainy season and a smaller quantity in April. The leaves are dried in the simplest manner by cutting down the*~~

~~*shrubs and exposing them on the rocks to the burning sun until quite dry. The leaflets then readily fall off and are packed in large bags made of palm leaves, and holding about a quintal each. These packages are conveyed by camels to Assouan and Darao and thence to Cairo and Alexandria, or by ship by way of Massowah and Suakim. The leaflets form the Alexandrian senna of commerce. Formerly this variety of senna was much adulterated with the leaves of Solenostemma Argel, Hayne, which, however, are readily distinguishable by their minutely wrinkled surface. Of late years Alexandrian senna has been shipped of much better quality. Occasionally a few leaves of C. obovata, Coll., may be found mixed with it. C. angustifolia affords the Bombay, East Indian, Arabian, or Mecca senna of commerce. This plant grows wild in the neighbourhood of Yemen and Hadramaut in the south of Arabia, in Somali Land, and in Sind and the Punjab in India. The leaves are chiefly shipped from Mocha, Aden, Jeddah, and other Red Sea ports to Bombay and thence to Europe, the average imports into Bombay amounting to about 250 tons annually, of which one-half is re-exported. Bombay senna is very inferior in appearance to the Alexandrian, as it frequently contains many brown and decayed leaflets and is mixed with leaf-stalks, &c. C. angustifolia is also cultivated in the extreme south of India, and there affords larger leaves, which are known in commerce as Tinnevelly senna. This variety is carefully collected, and consists almost exclusively of leaves of a fine green colour, without any admixture of stalks. It is exported from Tuticorin.*~~

~~*Senna appears to have been introduced into Europe about the 9th century by Arabian physicians, by whom, however, the pods seem to have been preferred to the leaves. The medicinal activity of senna leaves appears to be due to a very unstable colloid glucoside to which the name of cathartic acid has been given. It is readily decomposed by a temperature much below 100° Fahr. (Pharm. Jour. Trans., [3], Xv. : 704), and hence cold preparations of senna are the most active. In the free state it is soluble in dilute alcohol and in water, forming a brown solution, but is almost insoluble in strong alcohol and entirely so in ether and chloroform. Combined with ammonia it forms an active purgative. Two bitter principles named sennacrol and senna-picrin have been extracted from senna by Ludwig; the former is soluble and the latter insoluble in ether. A*~~

~~*yellow colouring matter has also been obtained from senna, but it appears probable that it is only a decomposition product of cathar- tic acid. Senna must be included among the irritant purgatives, since cathartic acid has no aperient effect when injected into the*~~

~~*SEN—S EO*~~

~~*blood. Ovwving to its colloid character, it is absorbed with difficulty, and its action is thus exerted throughout the greater part of the intestinal canal.*~~

~~*SENNACHERIB. See Basytonta, vol. iii. p. 187, and IsRaEL, vol. xili. p. 413 sq.*~~

~~*SENNAR. See Sznaar.*~~

~~*SENS, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Yonne, lies on the right side of the Yonne near its confluence with the Vanne, and on the railway from Paris to Lyons, 70 miles south-east of the former city at the intersection of the line from Orleans to Troyes. It derives its importance from its autiquity and its archiepiscopal see. The cathedral of St Etienne occu- pies the site of an ancient temple on which St Savinian is said to have built, at the close of the 3d century, a little church consecrated to the Virgin. The present Gothic cathedral, erected between 1122 and 1168, subsequently underwent alteration in the 13th century and again under Louis XII. The west front measures 154 fcet in breadth ; the middle portal has good sculptures, representing the parable of the virgins and the story of St Stephen. The right-hand portal contains twenty-two remarkable statuettes of the prophets, which have suffered considerable injuries. Above this portal rises the stone tower, decorated with armorial bearings and with statues representing the prin- cipal benefactors of the church. The bells in the cam- panile, by which the tower is surmounted, enjoyed immense reputation in the Middle Ages; the two which still remain, La Savinienne and La Potentienne, weigh respectively 15 tons 7 cwts and 13 tons 13 ewts. The left portal is adorued with two bas-reliefs, Liberality and Avarice, as well as with the story of John the Baptist. The portal on the north side of the cathedral is one of the finest examples of French 16th-*~~

~~*century sculpture. Glass windows of the 12th to the 16th century are preserved, some of them representing the legend of St Thomas of Canterbury. Among the interior adornments are an altarpiece finely carved in stone, the tomb of the dauphin (son of Louis XV.) and his consort, Marie Joséphe of Saxony, one of the masterpieces of Coustou, and bas-reliefs from the mausoleum of Cardinal Duprat. The treasury contains a fragment of the true cross presented by Charlemagne, and the vestments of St Thomas of Canterbury. It was in the cathedral of Sens that St Louis, in 1234, married Marguerite of Pro- vence, and five years later deposited the crown of thorns. The official buildings of the cathedral, dating from the 13th century, have been restored by Viollet-le-Duc. The old judgment-hall and the dungeons had remained intact ; in the first story is the synod hall, vaulted with stone and lighted by beautiful grisaille windows. A Renaissance structure connects the buildings with the archiepiscopal palace, which also dates from that period. The oldest of the other churches of Sens is St Savinian, the foundation of which dates from the 3d century, while the crypt is of the early part of the 11th, and the upper portions of the bell-tower of the first years of the 13th. The contents of the museum of sculptured stones have been mainly derived from the old fortifications, which were themselves con- structed during barbarian invasion from the ruins of public monuments. The only town gate still preserved is that kuown as the dauphin's (1777). In the public library are a number of MSS. and a famous missal with ivory covers. The chemist Thenard has his statue in the town. The population in 1881 numbered 13,440.*~~

~~*Sens, when the capital of the Senones, one of the most powerful peoples of Gaul, bore the name of Agenticum. It was not finally subdued by the Romans till after the defeat of Vercingetorix. On the division of Gaul into seventeen provinces under the emperor Valens, Agenticum became the metropolis of the 4th Lugdunensis. Theatres, circuses, amphitheatres, triumphal arches, and aqueducts*~~

~~*were all built in the town by the Romans. It was the meeting point of six great highways. The inhabitants, converted to Chris-*~~

~~*tianity by the martyrs Savinian and Potentian, held out against the Alemanni and the Franks in 356, against the Saracens in 731 or 738, and finally against the Normans in 886,—the last having be- sieged the town for six months. At the commencement of the feudal period Sens was governed by counts, who had become here- ditary towards the middle of the 10th century; and the contests of these counts with the archbishops or with their feudal superiors often led to much bloodshed and disaster. Several councils were held at Sens, notably that at which St Bernard and Abelard met. The burgesses in the middle of the 12th century formed a defensive association which earried on war against the clergy, and Philip Augustus restored the commune. In the ardour of its Catholicism Sens massacred the Protestants in 1562, and it was one of the first towns to join the League. Henry IV. did not effect his entrance till 1594, and he then deprived the town of its privileges. In 1622 Paris, hitherto suffragan to Sens, was made an archbishopric, and the bishoprics of Chartres, Orleans, and Meaux were transferred to the new jurisdiction. In 1791 the archbishopric was reduced to a bishopric of the department of Yonne. Suppressed in 1801, the see was restored in 1807 with the rank of archbishopric. The town was occupied by the invaders in 1814 and 1870-71.*~~

~~*SENSITIVE PLANT. See Mmosa; comp. Prysio- LOGY, vol. xix. p. 62.*~~

~~*SEONTI, or SEonEE, a British district of India, in the Central Provinces, lying between 21° 36' and 22° 58' N. lat. and 79° 14' and 80° 19' E. long., with an area of 3247 square miles, is bounded on the N. by Jabalpur, on the E. by Mandla and Balaghat, on the S. by Nagpur and Bhan- dara, and on the W. by Narsinhpur and Chhindwara. Seoni is a portion of the upland tract formed by the Satpura Hills which extend along the south bank of the Narbada& (Nerbudda) from the plains of Broach on the west to the Maikal range in the east; and it is remarkable for the beauty of its scenery and the fertility of its valleys. The northern and western portions of the district include the plateaus of Lakhnddon and Seoni; the eastern section consists of the watershed and elevated basin of the Wain- ganga; and in the south-west is a narrow strip of rocky land known as Dongartél. The plateaus of Seoni and Lakhnadon vary in height from 1800 to 2000 feet; they are well cultivated, clear of jungle, and their temperature is*~~

always moderate and healthy. Geologically the north part of Seoni consists of trap hills and the south of crystal- line rock. The soil of the plateaus is the rich black cotton soil formed by disintegrated trap, of which about two-thirds of the district are said to consist, but towards the south, where cliffs of gneiss and other primitive formations occur, the soil is silicious and contains a large proportion of clay. Seoni is hilly throughout, the hills for the most part being clothed with small stunted trees; but in the valleys and on the plateaus forest trees are very thinly scattered and are seldom of large size. The chief river of the district is the Wainganga, with its affluents the Hiri, Sagar, Theli, Bijnd, and Thanwar ; other streams are the Timar and the Sher, affluents of the Narbadé. The average annual rain- fall is about 50 inches.

The census of 1881 returned the population of Seoni district at 334,733 (males 167,925, females 166,808) ; of these 179,705 were Hindus, 13,442 Mohammedans, 99 Christians, and 139,444 abori- ginals. SEONI (g.v.) is the only town with a population exceeding 10,000. Of the total district area of 3247 square miles only 1098 are cultivated, and of the portion lying waste 613 are returned as cultivable. Wheat forms the staple crop; rice and other food-grains are also extensively grown; and among miscellaneous products are cotton, fibres, and sugar-cane. In 1888-84 the gross revenue of Seoni amounted to £35,419, of which the land-tax yielded £15,379. Trade is chiefly carried on by means of markets in the towns. Manufactures consist of coarse cloth and some pottery of superior quality made at Kanhiwara. At Khawasa, in the midst of the forest, leather is beautifully tanned. 'The only means of communi- cation is by road, the aggregate length of which is estimated at 90 miles. Seoni came under Lritish rule early in the 19th century, on the downfall of the Nagpur power, and it was formed into a separate district in 1861.

SEONI, principal town and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated in 22° 5' 30" N. lat. and 79° 35' E. long., midway between Nagpur and Jabalpur.

~~*It was founded in 1774 by Mohammed Amin Khan, and contains large public gardens, a fine market-place, and a handsome tank. In 1881 the population was 10,203. SEPIA is a valuable and much used deep brown pig- ment obtained from the ink-sacs of various species of CUTTLE-FISH (g.v.) ; that from which it is principally ob- tained is Sepia officinalis, a native of the Mediterranean, and especially abundant in the upper parts of the Adriatic, where it is a prized article of food. To obtain sepia the ink-sac is, immediately on the capture of the anizmal, ex- tracted from the body and speedily dried to prevent putre- faction. The contents are subsequently powdered, dissolved in caustic alkali, and precipitated from the solution by neutralizing with acid. The precipitate after washing with water is ready to make up into any form required for use. Sepia-bone or euttle-bone consists of the internal "shell" or skeleton of Sepia oficinalis and other allied species, It isan oblong-convex structure from 4 to 10 inches in length and 1 to 8 inches in greatest width, consisting internally of a highly porous cellular mass of carbonate of lime with some animal matters covered by a hard thin glassy layer. It is used principally as a polishing*~~

~~*material and for tooth powder, and also as a moulding material for fine castings in precious metals.*~~

~~*SEPOY, the usual English spelling of s¢péhi, the Persian and Urdu term for a soldier of any kind. The word sipdh, "army," from which sipdhi, "soldier," is derived, corre- sponds to the Zend ¢gpddha, Old Persian ¢pdéda, and has also found a home in the Turkish, Kurdish, and Pashto (Pushtu) languages (see Justi, Handbuch der Zendsprache, p. 303, 6), while its derivative is used in all Indian verna- culars, including Tamil and Burmese, to denote a native soldier, in contradistinction to gord, 'a fair-complexioned (European) soldier." Towards the middle of the 18th century efforts were made by the East India Company to train natives of good caste, both Hindus and Mohammedans, for military service under the company. Though they were made to use the musket, they remained for some time chiefly armed in the fashion of the country, with sword and target ; they wore the Indian dress—the turban, vest, and long drawers—and were provided with native officers under English superior command. Under their European leaders they were found to do good service and to*~~

~~*face danger with constancy and firmness. In the progress of time a considerable change took place, and natives of every de- scription were enrolled in the service. Though some corps that were almost entirely formed of the lowest classes achieved considerable reputation for valour in the field, it was not considered safe to encourage the system ; and the company reverted to their practice of recruiting from none but the most respectable classes of native society. It is on record that a corps of 100 sepoys from Bombay and 400 from Tellicherry joined the army at Madras in 1747, that the regular sepoys at Madras were employed in the defence of Arcot (1751), and that a company of Bombay sepoys were present at the victory of Plassey.*~~

~~*For instances of the early occurrence of the word see Burnell and Yule's Glossary of Anglo-Indian Terms, s.v. On the history of the sepoys compare Captain Williams's Historical Account of the Rise and Progress of the Bengal Infantry (London, 1817); Captain Broome's History of the Rise and Progress of the Bengal Army (Calcutta, 1850) ; Colonel Wilson's History of the Madras Army*~~

~~*(London, 1882-85, in 3 volumes); No. xxxvi. of the Quarterly Review; and the military histories of India generally.*~~

~~*SEPTEMBER, the seventh month of the old Roman year, had thirty days assigned to it. By the Julian arrangement, while retaining its former name and number of days, it became the ninth month. The Ludi Magni (Ludi Romani) in honour of Jupiter, Juno, and Minerva began on the 4th of September. The principal ecclesias- tical feasts falling within the month are—the Nativity of the Blessed Virgin on the 8th, the Exaltation of the Holy Cross on the 14th, St Matthew the Apostle on the 21st, and St Michael the Archangel on the 29th. September*~~

~~*S E P—S EP*~~

~~*was called "harvest month" in Charlemagne's calendar, and it corresponds partly to the Fructidor and partly to the Vendémiaire of the first French republic.*~~

~~*SEPTICAIMIA. After a wound, whether the result of accident or of operation by the surgeon, blood-poisoning may occur. Sepsis or putrefaction in the wound is the most evident local condition which has been associated by clinical observers with blood-poisoning, and hence the term "septicemia." Within recent years the relation of micro- organisms to the different forms of blood-poisoning has come prominently into notice; putrefaction is now known to be only one of the fermentative changes due to the presence of certain micro-organisms in a wound, and it is admitted that there are many organisms which, when they enter a wound, may give rise there to fermentative changes that are non-putrefactive. (See ScHIZOMYCETES.)*~~

~~*Organisms have recently been divided into two great groups,—those which can only grow in dead or decaying matter and those which can grow in the living tissues and in the blood, which in this relation must be looked upon asa tissue. The first group has been termed 'sapro- phytic." The second group may be termed "pathogenic," to distinguish them from the saprophytic variety. But no distinct line of demarcation can yet be drawn between these two groups, and as a matter of fact some patho-genic organisms may equally with the saprophytic find a pabulum in dead and decaying matter. Yet there can be no doubt that the more common varieties of septic organisms or saprophytes can only grow in dead or decaying matter, and that the living tissues, more especially when their power of vitality is great, are able to resist and destroy the saprophytes. There are also some organisms which, as far as is known at present, may be innocuous and give rise to no symptoms, local or general, when they are implanted in the human body. When an organism finds in the tissues a fit pabulum for its growth and devel- opment, the elements in the tissue are broken up, and the products are termed a "ptomaine" (rrOpa), This ptomaine may irritate the wound and prevent healing; it nay also be absorbed into the blood and poison it, hence the term "ptomaine poisoning." Both the saprophytic and the pathogenic organism may form a ptomaine in the wound. When the wound is due to a saprophyte the absorption of the ptomaine has been termed "sapreemia"; the ptomaine of the saprophyte has been called 'sepsin." No special name has yet been given to the ptomaine formed in the wound by the pathogenic organism; nor has any name been given to the condition due to the absorption of the*~~

~~*ptomaine formed by the pathogenic organism. Our knowledge is not yet sufficient to enable us to separate these two varieties of ptomaine poisoning. There can, however, be little doubt that they do exist as separate conditions, and also there can be little doubt that in some instances both forms of poisoning may be present at one and the same time.*~~

~~*The pathogenic organism, however, has another power which gives rise to an entirely separate condition. Not only may it form its ptomaine in the wound, but the organism itself can enter into and be carried by the blood-stream and lymph-stream to distant parts. It can live in the blood or lymph-stream and can grow there: it may be arrested in the capillaries of the blood-vessels, or in the lymphatic glands of the lymph-vessels, and in these situa- tions may form, so to speak, a colony of organisms which develop and form ptomaines; and the ptomaines, passing into the blood, may still further poison the patient. This power of the pathogenic organism is infective, and the term "infection" has been applied to the process. These colonies or secondary foci of infection often go on to sup- puration; hence the term "secondary" applied to the*~~

~~*abscesses which have long been observed in some forms of blood-poisoning. It was at one time thought that the pus-cells in the original wound passed into the blood, and, being caught in the capillaries, were the cause of the abscess-formation in the parts distant from the wound ; hence the term " pyeemia" or pus in the blood. The pus- cells may enter the blood-stream ; it is not, however, the cellular element that is the essence of the condition, but the organism which the cellular element may carry along with it. The hectic condition observed in a case of long-continued suppuration is in all probability a chronic form of blood-poisoning. In very acute cases, in which the poison is either concentrated, virulent, or in large quantity, death may occur within a very few hours. In other cases the condition may become chronic, and if the strength of the patient can be kept up by stimulants recovery often takes place. The chances of recovery are much greater when the condition is not truly an infective one. When the manufactory of the ptomaine is only in the*~~

~~*wound, the organism may be there destroyed by the use of power- ful antiseptics or antifermentatives. The primary cause being removed, the patient may then be saved. When, however, the pathogenic organism gets into the blood- stream and distant foci of infection are formed, the chances of ultimate recovery are greatly diminished. Various un- successful attempts have been made by the internal admi- nistration of antifermentatives so to alter the blood that the micro-organism cannot find in it or the tissues a fit nidus. The point to attend to is to prevent organismal fermentation in wounds by careful antiseptic or rather antifermentative precautions. Just as the word "septic- emia" has a more general application than can now be strictly allowed if we look to the derivation of the word and the present state of our knowledge, so the word "antiseptic" is applied to all substances which prevent organismal fermentation, although many of these organisms are undoubtedly non- septic in their character.*~~

~~*SEPTUAGINT. The Septuagint (of, LXX.) or Alex- andrian version of the Old Testament seems to be named from the legend of its composition by seventy, or more exactly seventy-two, translators. In the Letter of Aristeas (Aristzeus)} this legend is recounted as follows. Demetrius Phalereus, keeper of the Alexandrian library, proposed to King Ptolemy II. Philadelphus to have a Greek translation of the Jewish law made for the library. The king con- sented and sent an embassy, of which the author of the letter was a member, to the high priest Eleazar at Jeru- salem asking him to send six ancient, worthy, and learned men from each of the twelve tribes to translate the law for him at Alexandria. Eleazar readily consented and sent the seventy-two men with a precious roll of the law. They were most honourably received at the court of Alexandria and conducted to the island (Pharus), that they might work undisturbed and isolated. When they had come to an agree- ment upon a section Demetrius wrote down their version ; the whole translation was finished in seventy-two days. The Jewish community of Alexandria was allowed to have a copy, and accepted the version officially,—indeed a curse was laid upon the introduction of any changes in it.*~~

~~*There is no question that this Letter is spurious.? Aristeas is represented as a heathen, but the real writer must have been a Jew and no heathen.*~~

~~*Aristeas is repre- sented as himself a member of the embassy to Eleazar ; but the author of the Zetter cannot have been a contem- porary of the events he records, else he would have known*~~

~~*1 Edited by 8. Schard (Frankfort, 1610), by Havercamp (in his Josephus), and by M. Schmidt (in Merx's Archiv, 1868). Comp. Lum- broso, in the Transactions of the Turin Academy, 1869.*~~

- ~~*Scaliger, In Eus. Chron. animadv., No. 1784; H. Hody, De Bibli- orum Textibus Originalibus.*~~

~~*667*~~

~~*that Demetrius fell out of favour at the very beginning of the reign of Philadelphus, being said to have intrigued against his succession to the throne.3 Nor could a genuine honest witness have fallen into the absurd mistake of making delegates from Jerusalem the authors of the Alex- andrian version. The forgery, however, is a very early one. "There is not a court-title, an institution, a law, a magis- tracy, an office, a technical term, a- formula, a peculiar phrase in this letter which is not found on papyri or in- scriptions and confirmed by them."+ That in itself would not necessarily imply a very early date for the piece; but what is decisive is that the author limits canonicity to the law and knows of no other holy book already translated into Greek. Further, what he tells about Judea and Jeru- salem is throughout applicable to the period when the Ptolemies bore sway there and gives not the slightest sug- gestion of the immense changes that followed the conquest of Palestine by the Seleucids, Thus, too, it is probable that the Jewish philosopher Aristobulus, who lived under Pto- leniy Philometor (180-145), derived his account of the origin of the LXX. from this Letter, with which it corresponds.*~~

~~*If now the Letter is so old, it is incredible that it should contain no elements derived from actual tradition as to the origin of the LXX., and we must try to separate these from the merely fabulous. To this end we must consider what is the main aim and object of the forgery. The chief thing in the Letter is the description of a seven days' symposium of the seventy translators at the Alexandrian court, during which each of them*~~

~~*has a question to answer, and raises the admiration of the king for the wisdom produced among the Jews by their knowledge of the law. Further, very great weight is laid on the point that the LXX. is the official and authoritative Bible of the Hellenistic Jews, having been not only formally accepted by the synagogue at Alexandria but authorized by the high priest at Jerusalem and the seventy elders who are in fact its authors. Other matters receive no special emphasis, and the presumption is that what is said about them is not deliberate fiction and in part at least is true. Thus it has always been taken as a fact that the version originated at Alexandria, that the law was translated first, and that this took place in the time of Ptolemy II. On the other hand, it has been thought difficult to believe that the scholarly tastes of the Alexandrians, personified in Deme- trius Phalereus as the presiding genius of the Alexandrian library, could have furnished the stimulus to reduce the translation to writing. One can hardly call this intrinsic- ally improbable in view of the miscellaneous literary tastes of the court of the Ptolemies. But it has been thought much more likely that the Septuagint was written down to satisfy the religious needs of the Jews by a translated Torah, since in fact the version is fitted for Jews and could have been intelligible only to them, and indeed never came to be circulated and known outside of their circles. Here, however, we must distinguish between written and oral interpretation. If interpretation was needed in the syna- gogue service, it was an oral interpretation that was given. It was not a natural thing for the Jews to write the trans- lation,—indeed they had religious scruples against such a course. Only "Scripture" was to be written, and to put the contents of Scripture in writing in any other than the old holy form was deemed almost a profanation,—a feeling of which there is evidence in the Letter itself.6 It is well*~~

~~*3 Hermippus Callimachius, ap. Diog. Laert., v. 78.*~~

~~*4G. Lumbroso, Recherches sur Econ. Pol. de U Egypte sous les Lagides (Turin, 1870), p. xiii.*~~

~~*° Clem. Alex., Strom., i. p. 842, ed. Sylb.; Euseb., Prep. Ev., ix. 6, p. 410 sg. ; comp. Valckenaer, Diatribe de Aristobulo, Leyden, 1806, reprinted in Gaisford's ed. of the Prep. Ev.*~~

~~§ In what is told of the authors Theopompus and Theodectes, who ventured to insert certain things out of the law in their profane works.~~

~~668 Shera we~~

~~known how in Palestine the Targum was handed down orally for centuries before it was at last reduced to writing; and, if, on the contrary, at Alexandria a written version came into existence so early, it is far from improbable that this was due to some influence from without. That the work is purely Jewish in character is only what was in- evitable in any case. The translators were necessarily Jews and were necessarily and entirely guided by the living tradition which had its focus in the synagogal lessons. And hence it is easily understood that the version was ignored by the Greeks, who must have found it barbarous and unintelligible, but obtained speedy acceptance with the Jews, first in private use and at length also in the synagogue service.~~

~~The next direct evidence which we have as to the origin of the LXX. is the prologue to Ecclesiasticus, from which it appears that about 130 B.c, not only the law but "the prophets and the other books" were extant in Greek. With this it agrees that the most ancient relics of Jewish- Greek literature, preserved in the extracts made by Alex- ander Polyhistor (Eus., Prep. Hv., ix.), all show acquaint- ance with the LXX. These later translations too were not made to meet the needs of the synagogue, but express a literary movement among the Hellenistic Jews, stimulated by the favourable reception given to the Greek Pentateuch, which enabled the translators to count on finding an inter- ested public. Ifa translation was well received by reading circles aniongst the Jews, it gradually acquired public ac- knowledgment and was finally used also in the synagogue, so far as lessons from other books than the Pentateuch were used at all. But originally the translations were mere private enterprises, as appears from the prologue to Ecclesiasticus and the colophon to Esther. It appears also that it was long before the whole Septuagint was finished and treated as a complete work.~~

~~As the work of translation went on so gradually and new books were always added to the collection the compass of the Greek Bible came to be somewhat indefinite. The law always maintained its pre-eminence as the~~

~~basis of the canon; but the prophetic collection changed its as- pect by having various Hagiographa incorporated with it according to an arbitrary arrangement by subjects. The distinction made in Palestine between Hagiographa and Apocrypha was never properly established among the Hel- lenists. In some books the translators took the liberty to make considerable additions to the original, and these additions—e.g., those to Daniel—became a part of the Septuagint. Nevertheless learned Hellenists were quite well aware of the limits of the canon and respected them. Philo can be shown to have known the Apocrypha, but he never cites them, much less allegorizes them or uses them in proof of his tenets. And in some measure the widening of the Old Testament canon in the Septuagint must be laid to the account of Christians. As regards the character of the version, it is a first attempt, and so is memorable and worthy of respect, but at the same time displays all the weaknesses of a first attempt. Though the influence of contemporary ideas is sometimes perceptible, the Septuagint isno paraphrase, but in general closely follows the Hebrew,—so closely indeed that we can hardly understand it with- out a process of retroversion, and that a true Greek could not have found any satisfaction init. The same Greek word is forced to assume the whole range of senses which belongs in Semitic speech to the derivatives of a. single root; a Hebrew expression which has various Greek equivalents according to the context is constantly rendered in one way ; the aorist, like the Hebrew perfect, is employed as an in- choative with a much wider range of application than is tolerated in classical Greek. At the same time, many passages are freely rendered and turned where there is no~~

~~particular need to do so, and that even in books like the Prophetz Priores, in which the rendering is generally quite stiff. The literalness of the version is therefore due not to scrupulousness but to want of skill, and probably in part also to accommodation to a kind of Jewish Greek Jargon which had already developed in the mouths of the people and was really Hebrew or Aramaic in disguise. This Jewish dialect in turn found its standard in the Septuagint.~~

~~*As the version is the work of many hands, it is naturally not of uniform character throughout all its parts,—indeed considerable varieties of character sometimes appear in one and the same book. The older constituents of the canon have an unmistakable family likeness as contrasted with the later books ; this one may see by comparing Kings with Chronicles or Isaiah and Jeremiah with Daniel. The Pentateuch is considered to be particularly well done and Isaiah to be particularly unhappy. Some of the Hagio- grapha (Ecclesiastes, Canticles, Chronicles) are reproduced with verbal closeness; others, on the contrary (Job, Esdras, Esther, Daniel), are marked by a very free treatment of the text, or even by considerable additions. It is not, how- ever, always easy to tell whether a Septuagint addition is entirely due to the translator or belongs to the original text, which lay before him in a recension divergent from the Massoretic. The chief impulse in recent times to thorough investigation of the character of the several parts of the Septuagint was given by Lagarde in his Anmerk- al zur griechischen Uebersetzung der Proverbien, Leipsic,*~~

~~*863.*~~

~~*The Septuagint came into general use with the Grecian Jews even in the synagogue. Philoand Josephus use it, and so do the New Testament writers. But very early small corrections seem to have been introduced, especially by such Palestinians as had occasion to use the LXX., in consequence partly of divergent interpretation, partly of differences of text or of pronunciation (particularly of proper names). The Old Testament passages cited by authors of the first century of the Christian era, especially those in the Apo- calypse, show many such variations from the Septuagint, and, curiously enough, these often correspond with the later versions (particularly with Theodotion), so that the latter seem to rest on a fixed tradition. Corrections in the pro- nunciation of proper names so as to come closer to the Massoretic pronunciation are especially frequent in Jose- phus. Finally a reaction against the use of the Septuagint set in among the Jews after the destruction of the temple,—a movement which was connected with the strict defini- tion of the canon and the fixing of an authoritative text by the rabbins of Palestine. But long usage had made it impossible for the Jews to do without a Greek*~~

~~*Bible, and to meet this want a new version was prepared corre- sponding accurately with the canon and text of the Phari- sees. This was the version of Aquila, which took the place of the Septuagint in the synagogues, and long con- tinued in use there.! A little later other translations were made by Jews or Jewish Christians, which also followed the official Jewish canon and text, but were not such slavish reproductions as Aquila's version; two of these were Greek (Theodotion, Symmachus) and one Syriac (Peshito).*~~

~~*Meantime the Greek and Latin Christians kept to the old version, which now became the official Bible of the catholic church. Yet here also, in process of time, a certain distrust of the Septuagint began to be felt, as its divergence from the Jewish text was observed through comparison of the younger versions based on that text, or came into notice through the frequent discussions be- tween Jews and Christians as to the Messianic prophecies.*~~

~~*1 Corpus Juris Civ., Nov. exlvi.*~~

~~*Soi TUA GEN T*~~

~~*On the whole the Christians were disposed to charge the Jews with falsifying their Scriptures out of hatred to Christianity,—a charge which has left its echoes even in the Koran. But some less prejudiced scholars did not share this current view, and went so far in the other direction as simply to identify the Jewish text with the authentic original. Thus they fell into the mistake of holding that the later Jewish text was that from which the Septuagint translators worked, and by which their work was to be tested and measured. On these critical principles Origen prepared his famous Hexapla, in which he placed alongside of the Septuagint, in six parallel columns, the three younger versions and the Hebrew text in Hebrew and in Greek characters. The Septuagint text he corrected after the younger versions, marking the additions of the LXX. with a prefixed obelus (—, ÷), as a sign that they should be deleted, and supplying omis- sions, generally from Theodotion, with a prefixed asterisk (x). The end of the passage to which the obelus or asterisk applied was marked with a metobelus (<). The same signs were used for various readings, the read- ing of the LXX. being obelized, and the variant, from another version*~~

~~*corresponding to the Hebrew text, follow- ing it with an asterisk. It was only in simpler cases, however, that this plan could be carried through without making the text quite unreadable ; the more complicated variations were either tacitly corrected or left untouched, the reader being left to judge of them by comparing the parallel columns. Origen made most change in the proper names, which he emended in conformity with the Jewish pronunciation of the period, and in the order of the text, which, to preserve the parallelism in the columns, he made to follow the Hebrew.1*~~

~~*Origen's critical labours had a very great influence in shaping the text of the Septuagint, though in quite another direction than he designed. Even before his time the Septuagint was largely contaminated by admixture from the other versions, but such alterations now began to be made systematically. Thus he intensified a mischief which to be sure had begun before him, and even before the labours of Aquila, Theodotion, and Symmachus. The most significant evidence of this contamination of the text lies in the conflate readings, where the same Hebrew words are translated twice, or sometimes even thrice, or where two Hebrew readings of the same passage are represented, sometimes by simple juxtaposition of renderings that differ but slightly, at other times by a complicating inter-lacing of very different forms of the Greek. These con- flate readings, however, in which the true reading survives along with the false, are the least fatal corruptions ; in many cases the genuine text has disappeared altogether before the correction, as can be seen by comparing different MSS. A faithful picture of the corruption of the text of the Septuagint as it has come down to us is given in the apparatus to the great Oxford edition of Holmes and Parsons (5 vols., Oxford, 1798-1827).*~~

~~*Not long after Origen there arose almost contemporane- ously three recensions of the Septuagint, which became established in three regions of the Greek Church. ' Alex- andria et Aigyptus in Septuaginta suis Hesychium laudat auctorem, Constantinopolis usque Antiochiam Luciani martyris exemplaria probat, medise inter has provincie Palestine codices legunt, quos ab Origene elaboratos Eusebius et Pamphilus vulgaverunt ; totusque orbis hac inter se trifaria varietate compugnat," says Jerome in the Pref. in Paralip. ad Chromatium. According to this the text of*~~

~~*Eusebius is that of Origen, 7.¢., a separate edition of the fifth column of the Hexapla, which contained the*~~

~~*1 The best collection of the fragments of the Hexapla is that of Field, Origenis Hexaplorum que supersunt, Oxford, 1875.*~~

~~*669*~~

~~*Septuagint with asterisks and obeli. The text of Hesychius has not yet been identified with certainty?; that of Lucian is, according to Field and Lagarde, most probably given in Codd. Holmes., 19, 82, 93, 108, and another series of MSS. for the prophets. It is by no means the case, however, that all our MSS. can be arranged in three families ; many belong to none of the three recensions, and among these are such important codices as the Alexandrian (A) and the Vatican (B).*~~

~~*The divergences of the LXX. from the Hebrew are particularly great in the books of Samuel and Kings, also in the prophets, especially in Ezekiel, and still more in Jeremiah, and finally also in Job and Proverbs. In Jeremiah the differences extend to the order of the chapters in the second half of the book, and therefore have always attracted special attention. In Proverbs too the individual proverbs are differently arranged in the LXX., and similar differences can be traced in the versions of Ecclesiasticus. In the Pentateuch there are considerable variations only in the last part of Exodus. The text of the genuine Septuagint is generally shorter than the Massoretic text.*~~

~~*The chief editions of the Septuagint are—(1) the Complutensis, 1514-17 ; (2) the Aldine, 1516 ; (3) the Sixtine, 1587; (4) the first Oxford edition by Grabe, 1707-20 ; (5) the second Oxford edition by Holmes and Parsons, 1798-1827 ; (6) Lagarde's edition of Lucian, vol. i., Gottingen, 1883.*~~

~~*The LXX. is of great importance in more than one respect : it is probably the oldest translation of consider- able extent that ever was written, and at any rate it is the starting-point for the history of Jewish interpretation and the Jewish view of Scripture. And from this its im- portance as a document of exegetical tradition, especially in lexical matters, may be easily understood. It was in great part composed before the close of the*~~

canon—nay, before some of the Hagiographa were written—and in it alone are preserved a number of important ancient Jewish books that were not admitted into the canon. As the book which created or at least codified the dialect of Bib- lical Greek, it is also the key to the New Testament and all the literature connected with it. But its chief value lies in the fact that it is the only independent witness for the text of the Old Testament which we have to compare with the Massoretic text. Now it may seem that the critical value of the LXX. is greatly impaired, if not entirely cancelled, by the corrupt state of the text. If we have not the version itself in authentic form we cannot reconstruct with certainty the Hebrew text from which it was made, and so cannot get at various readings which can be confidently confronted with the Massoretic text ; and it may be a long time before we possess a satisfactory edition of the genuine Septuagint. But fortunately in this case sound results in detail must precede and not follow the establishment of a text sound throughout. The value of a Septuagint reading must be separately deter- mined in each particular case, and the proof that a read- ing is good is simply that it necessarily carries us back to a Hebrew variant, and cannot be explained by looseness of translation. It is therefore our business to collect as many Greek passages as possible which point to a various SEL ee cai Hg = ae Saini aiaie ir ees aii "ieee

2 See, however, Ceriani's note on the recensions of LXX. in the Rendiconti of the R. Instituto Lombardo for 18th February 1886, where it is shown that the Codex rescriptus Dublinensis, Holmes, viii., edited at Dublin, 1880), and other MSS. written in Egypt, which Ceriani had already cited in his Monumenta (vol. iii. p. xx.) present many features of correspondence with the Coptic versions and with the readings of Cyril of Alexandria. "All these documents at any rate present the character of the Hesychian recension, being all Egyp- tian testimonies contemporary with or little later than Jerome." Most of their characteristic readings appear also in MS. Holmes, 106, to which MSS. 26, 33, 86, 97, 198, 206 are also akin. For an attempt to determine the MSS. containing or akin to the Hesychian recension in Ezekiel, see Cornill, Das Buch Ezechiel, Leipsic, 1886, p. 66 sq.

~~*reading in the Hebrew text of the translators as compared with the Massoretic text. And for this we must not con- fine ourselves to one recension but use all recensions that our MSS. offer. For, though one recension may be better than another, none of them has been exempt from the influences under which the genuine Septuagint was brought into conformity with the received Hebrew text, and those influenced have affected each recension in a different way, and even differently in the different books. In this process, as indeed in all textual criticism, much of course must be dependent on individual judgment. But that it should be so appears to have been the design of pro- vidence, which has permitted the Old Testament text to reach us in a form that is often so corrupt as to sin against both the laws of logic and of grammar—of rhetorical and poetical form. (J. WE.)*~~

~~*SEPULCHRE, Canons Recunar or THE Hoty, an order founded in 1114 by Arnold, patriarch of Jerusalem (or according to another account in 1099 by Godfrey of Bouillon), on the rule of St Augustine. It admitted women as well as men and soon spread rapidly over Europe. In the 17th century it received a new rule from Urban VIII. Shortly after this the canons became extinct 3 but the canonesses are still to be found in France, Baden, and the Netherlands. They live a strictly monastic life and devote themselves mainly to the work of education.*~~

~~*SEPULCHRE, Knicurs or tHE Horny, an English military order which was said to date from the 12th century and which became extinct at the Reformation. A similar order, founded in France, lasted from the end of the 15th century till the time of the Revolution; it was resuscitated by Louis XVIII. in 1814, but again became extinct in 1830.*~~

~~*SEPULCHRE, Tue Hoty, the rock-cut tomb in which, after His crucifixion, the body of our Lord was placed. Few questions of topography have been debated with greater persistence or, in many cases, with greater bitter- ness than that of the site of this tomb. Only a brief sketch of the leading features of the controversy can be given here,*~~

~~*The only information on the subject to be gained from the New Testament is that the tomb was in a garden "in the place where Christ was crucified" (John xix. 41), which again was "near the city" (John xix. 20) and*~~

~~*“without the gate” (Heb. xiii. 12), and that the watch, proceeding from the sepulchre to the chief priest’s, “came into the city” (Matt. xxviii. 11). The first requisite, therefore, of any locality professing to be that of the Sepulchre is that it should, at the date of the crucifixion, have been without the walls of Jerusalem.1*~~

~~*The existing church of the Holy Sepulchre, which is admitted on all hands to have occupied the same site for the last 800 years, is in the heart of the present town, 300 yards from the nearest point of the existing wall and in the immediate vicinity of the bazaars. Saewulf,2 writ- ing in 1102, Hildebrand of Oldenburg? in 1211, and Jacobus de Vitriaco 4 in 1220, assert that up to the time of Hadrian the site was still without the circuit of the walls. Brocardus® in 1230 states that the modern walls included more in breadth than they did at the time of ee. i eee*~~

~~*1 The revised text of John xix. 20 reads 871 éyyvs Fv Tis médews 6 Toros 8rou ésravpwOn 6 Incods ; but the best accredited reading is 67t eyyos qv 6 Téros THs wédews. Mr Buckton, in Notes and Queries (2d series, ii. 97), argues that according to the latter reading Calvary must have been within the city. He would explain Heb. xiii. 12 as spoken “for the allegorical purpose of the writers” of the temple, but offers no explanation of Matt. xxviii. 11.*~~

~~*2 Recueil de Voyages (Société de Géog.), iv. 84, Paris, 1839.*~~

~~*® Leo Allatius, Svupuxra, p. 146, Cologne, 1653.*~~

~~*4 Gesta Dei per Francos, p. 1079, Hanover, 1611.*~~

~~*° Canisius, Thesaurus, iv. 17, 21, Antwerp, 1735.*~~

~~*SEP—SEP*~~

~~*Christ, and that there were even some who refused to be- lieve that the present site was the true one. Ordericus 6 in 1320 and William de Baldensel’ in 1336 corroborated Saewulf ; but Baldensel adds that the sepulchre then shown was no longer the one in which the body of Christ had been laid, for that had been cut out of the solid rock, while the other*~~

~~was formed out of stones cemented to- gether. Gretser® in 1598 and Queresimus® in 1616-25 refer to the objections started in their time by some whom the latter calls "misty Western heretics," and the difficulty was broadly enunciated by Monconys!° in 1647. It wag not, however, until 1741 that the site was openly declared to be false by Korte. The attack of the latter writer was followed up in greater detail by Plessing}2 in 1789, and in England by Dr Edward Clarke!' in 1810 3; but until the appearance of the Biblical Researches of Dr Robinson of New York in 184114 the attention of inguirers in England and America can hardly be said to have been seriously drawn to the subject. This elaborate work called forth energetic replies from Cardinal Newman" and Williams,1° the latter of whom subsequently republished his work in two large volumes in 1849, which, to the up- holders of tradition, may be said to Occupy the same position as those of the American author to its oppo- nents. Since that date the writers on both sides have been numerous ; among them may be specially noted, as im- pugning the accuracy of tradition, Fergusson, Tobler, the author of an elaborate essay in the Museum of Classical Antiquties for 1853, Barclay, Bonar, Schwartz, Sandie, and Conder ; and on the other side Lord Nugent, Schutz, Krafft, Schaffter, De Sauley, Abbé Michon, Thrupp, De Vogué, Lewin, Pierotti, Caspari, and Sir Charles Warren.~~

~~The main question on which the dispute has turned is the circuit of the walls at the time of Christ. The city at that date was surrounded by two walls. The first or oldest began, according to Josephus, "in the north, at the tower called Hippicus, and extended to what was termed the Xystus; it then formed a junction with the council house, and terminated at the western colonnade of the temple."!" By almost all the writers on either side this northern portion of the first wall is traced along the southern side of the depression, which extends from the central valley eastwards to the Jaffa gate.18 From some point in that northern line of wall the second wall took its departure, and of it all we are told by Josephus is that "it had its beginning at the gate called Gennath, belonging to the first wall, and reached to the Antonia, encircling only the western quarter of the city." If this Gennath gate was near Hippicus, the line of the second wall, in order to exclude the present site, must be drawn along a route~~

~~*curiously unsuited, from the slope of the hill, for defensive purposes ; and that it was near Hippicus seems*~~

~~*8 Peregrinatores Medii Evi quatuor, ed. Laurent, p. 149, Leipsic, 1864. 7 Canisius, Thesaurus, iv. 348-349,*~~

~~*8 De Cruce Christi, bk. i. chap. 17, Ingolstadt, 1598,*~~

~~*° Terre Sancte Elucidatio, ii. 515, Antwerp, 1639.*~~

~~*10 Voyages, Paris, 1665-66, 4to, i. 307.*~~

~~*1 Reise nach dem gelobten Lande, Altona, 1741.*~~

~~*2 Ueber Golgotha und Christi Grab, Halle, 1789.*~~

~~*13. Travels, Cambridge, 1810-23,*~~

~~*14 London, 1841, afterwards re-issued with a supplemental journey in 1856.*~~

~~*15 "Essay on the Miracles recorded in Eccles. History," prefixed to translation of Fleury's Eccles. Hist. to end of 4th Century, Oxford, 1842.*~~

~~*16 The Holy City, London, 1845. W Bell. Jud., v. 4, 2.*~~

~~*18 Fergusson and Sandie place Hippicus at the north-western angle of the modern wall, and thus include the existing church of the sepul- chre within the first wall itself, but they have overlooked the assertion of the Jewish historian, that from the ravines which surrounded the latter it was almost impregnable. Bonar, while placing Hippicus some- where near the same spot, does not define the locality, and Schwartz seeks to identify it with "a high rocky hill north of the so-called Grotto of Jeremiah " and far beyond the northern limits of the modern city.*~~

~~*seHEPULCHRE, HOLY*~~

~~*demonstrable from the declaration of Josephus that the city in his time was "fortified by three walls except where it was encompassed by*~~

~~*impassable ravines!; from the absence of any record of an attack on the first wall till the second had been taken ; from a variety of incidental references in the siege by Titus; from the apparent neces- sity of including within its circuit the pool Amygdalon, now known as Hezekiah's Pool or Birket Hamman el- Batrak?; and from the remarkably small area which would otherwise be included by it.*~~

~~*Writers on both sides have pressed into their service the remains of ancient buildings found in the districts traversed by the second wall according to their respect- ive theories. It seemed doubtful, till quite recently, if any sound argument could be based on these, the ruins being too fragmentary and occurring in too many different quarters to warrant any positive identification with a line of fortification as distinguished from other edifices.? But in the summer of 1885 a stretch of ancient wall 40 or 50 yards in length was disinterred, running northwards from the open space within the Jaffa gate 'to the west of Heze- kiah's pool, which certainly, as figured in the January number of the Quarterly Reports of the Palestine Explora- tion Fund, seems to go a long way to settle the question against the genuineness of the existing site.*~~

~~*Considerable stress has been laid by some writers on the existence of ancient Jewish sepulchres, of a date apparently anterior to the Christian era, in the rock on which the present church is built, as proving that that rock could not have been within the circuit of the walls, inasmuch as it is alleged "the Jews never buried within their towns." 4 There is, however, no trace in the historical books of the Bible of any aversion on the part of the Jews to intra- mural interment. Whatever width of interpretation may be given to the recorded burial of eleven of the kings of Judah "in the city of David," the phrase can hardly be held to prove that such burial-place was without the walls ; while 2 Chron. xxviii. 27 and xxxiii, 20 seem to point very strongly in the opposite direction. Joab also, we are told, was buried "in his own house in the wilderness," ° and Samuel "in his house at Ramah." But the most striking case of all is Hebron, where in the midst of the city are found the jealously guarded walls which enclose the cave of Machpelah. If, then, these tombs are older than the time of Christ, there seems little difficulty in crediting that they might have been included within the second wall. We know for a certainty that they were within the*~~

~~*third. The curious point rather is that their existence in the rock may be used as a strong argument against the site, for, speaking of the disinterment of the rock of the sepulchre from the accumulated soil heaped over it by the Romans, Eusebius" impresses on us the fact*~~

~~*1 Bell. Jud., v. 4, 1.*~~

~~*2 It is of course quite possible to draw a line, as Lewin does, which, while it includes this pool, will yet exclude the existing church, but all probability seems opposed to such a route.*~~

~~*3 Pierotti gives a detailed plan of the whole district in which the remains which he seeks to identify with the second wall occur (Jerw- salem Explored, pl. xxx.). But from this it would seem extremely doubtful whether any of those ruins can be identified with a city wall, or should not merely be regarded as portions of detached buildings, the walls of which project, now to the east, now to the west, of the imagined line.*~~

~~*4 Lord Nugent, Lands Classical and Sacred, London, 1845, ii. 47. These tombs have been described by Hepworth Dixon, in Gentleman's Magazine, March 1877, and more fully by Clermont-Ganneau in Quar- terly Report of the Palestine Exploration Fund, 1877, p. 76. In 1885 two additional sepulchral chambers were discovered in the same rock a little to the south-east of the present church, of which a plan and notices are given by Schick in Zeitschrift des deutschen Palaestina- Vereins, 1884, vol. viii. p. 171.*~~

~~*5 1 Kings ii. 34. § { Samuel xxv. 1.*~~

~~*? Theophania, Lee's translation, p. 199.*~~

~~*671*~~

~~*that there was "only one cave within it, lest, had there been many, the miracle of Him who overthrew death should have been obscured."*~~

~~*One argument remained which, at least up to 1847, it seemed difficult for the impugners of the orthodox site to meet, namely,—Was it at all*~~

~~*probable that Constantine should have been deceived, either by erroneous inference or by wilful misrepresentation, when in 325 he erected a monumental church over what was then believed to be the holy tomb? Apart from the consideration that of all localities this seemed to be the least likely to pass from the memory of the Christian church,' its exact position had been in a manner identified by the existence on the rock of Golgotha of a temple or statue of Venus, and on the site of the resurrection of a statue of Jupiter erected by Hadrian in the 2d century ; and the fact remains that on the superincumbent rubbish being cleared away by the orders of Constantine a cave was discovered, which it seems difficult, even were we willing with Taylor® to impute deliberate fraud to the existing bishop of Jerusalem, to believe could have been previously prepared beneath a heathen shrine, and in the midst of a population of pagans and of Jews.1°*~~

~~*In 1847 Fergusson, in his Lssay on the Ancient Topo- graphy of Jerusalem, attempted to show that Constantine had built his memorial church on another site altogether, and that it was still existing under another name. On the eastern hill of the city, in the sacred Mohammedan enclosure of the Hardm-es-Sherif, and on a spot generally considered to have formed part of the temple area, stands the magnificent octagonal building called the Dome of the Rock, usually but erroneously believed to have been erected by the caliph 'Omar, and so popularly known as the mosque of 'Omar. The jealousy of the Moslems had, with rare exceptions, prevented up to quite recent times the intrusion of Christians within its sacred precincts, but it was known to have been erected over a large mass of native rock rising above the surface of the ground and having a cave within it. A section of the building, very roughly executed, was given in the Z'ravels of Ali Bey, published in 1816 (vol. ii. p. 74); but in 1833 Mr. Cother- wood, under the pretext of being a civil engineer in the employment of Mehemet Ali, and of examining into the structural condition of the building with a view to its repair, spent three weeks in examining it and its sur- roundings, of which he made elaborate drawings and sections. A general account of his investigations and their results, published in W. H. Bartlett's Walks about the City and Environs of Jerusalem (p. 148), led to Fergusson's getting access to those drawings, which confirmed him in the belief he had already begun to entertain from*~~

other sources, that the Dome of the Rock was originally a Chris- tian edifice; and in the essay referred to he argued at great length and with much vigour on both architectural and historical grounds that it and the Golden Gateway — a walled-up entrance to the Haram from the east — were built in the time of Constantine ; that the former was the church of the Anastasis, erected by that emperor over the tomb of our Lord, and the latter the entrance to the atrium of the great basilica described by Eusebius?! as

8 Origen (Cont. Cels., i. 51) speaks of Calvary as of a spot well known in his day (185-254).

9 Ancient Christianity, 4th ed., London, 1844, ii. 277.

10 Finlay (Greece under the Romans, p. 561) has argued that exact identification would be easy from the minute registration of property which prevailed in the Roman empire and extended to the provinces, by which the position of Golgotha and the property of Joseph of Arimathea might easily have been traced. But he seems to press his point too far (see Fallmerayer, Golgotha und das heilige Grab, Ato, Munich, 1852, p. 8).

Vita Const., iii. 39.

immediately adjoining ; and that the transference of the site from the eastern to the western hill took place some- where about the commencement of the 11th century, when, in consequence of the invasion of the Turks, the Christians were driven from the former hill for a time. This work was followed up by his article ‘ Jerusalem” in Smith’s Dictionary of the Bible and by several minor pub- lications! ; and the whole question was, with some modifi- cations, re-argued by him at great length in Zhe Temples of the Jews and the other Buildings in the Haram Area at Jerusalem in 1878.

Though at first Fergusson’s essay seemed to fall dead, it inaugurated a discussion which has within the last twenty years been carried on with much keenness. His views have been supported on architectural grounds

~~*by Unger," and on general grounds by Sandie,? Smith,* and Langlois,® while among the multitude of his opponents may be specially noted Williams,® Lewin,' the Abbé Michon,® De Vogué,® Pierotti,!® Sir Charles Warren, and Captain Conder.?*~~

~~*The architectural arguments in favour of Fergusson's theory have forced Lewin, one of his most strenuous opponents, to argue that the Dome of the Rock may have been a temple to Jupiter erected by Hadrian, which he imagines may have been restored or rebuilt by Maximin Daza, the successor of Diocletian.' But they must be studied in Fergusson's own works or in that of Unger above referred to, The topographical objections are mainly founded on the necessity of restricting the Jewish temple to the south-eastern corner of the Haram, the site, how- ever, assigned to it by Lewin himself and Thrupp,!* and on the difficulty of supposing a place of interment so near the sacred building. But Josephus, at the time of the siege, speaks of "the monuments of King Alexander," whatever that may mean, existing just over against or in front of the north colonnade of the temple.*~~

~~*As regards the historical argument, it would certainly appear that up to the close of the 6th century the balance of evidence is in favour of the eastern site. The narrative of the Pilgrim of Bordeaux !6 may perhaps be read as sup- porting either view. But Antoninus Martyr!' and Theo- dosius 18 can hardly be reconciled with the existing location ; in two manuscripts of the latter !® the writer believed that the same hill witnessed in succession the offering of Isaac, the vision of the angel at Araunah's threshing-floor, the building of the temple, and the death and resurrection of*~~

~~*1 Notes on the Site of the Holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem, London, es and The Holy Sepulchre and the Temple at Jerusalem, London,*~~

~~*1865.*~~

~~*2 Die Bauten Constantin's am heiligen Grabe, Gottingen, 1863.*~~

~~*3 Horeb and Jerusalem, Edinburgh, 1864.*~~

~~*4 The Temple and the Sepulchre, London, 1865.*~~

~~*Un Chapitre inédit de la Question des Lieux Saints, Paris, 1861. The Holy City, 2d ed., 2 vols., London, 1849.*~~

~~*The Siege of Jerusalem by Titus, &c., London, 1868.*~~

~~*Voyage religieux en Orient, 2 vols., Paris, 1854.*~~

~~*Le Temple de Jérusalem, fol., Paris, 1864-65.*~~

~~*Jerusalem Explored, 2 vols. fol., London, 1864.*~~

~~*11 The Temple and the Tomb, London, 1880.*~~

~~*12 Various papers in the Quarterly Statement of Palestine Explora- tion Fund.*~~

~~*1 Archexologia, xli. p. 157. Sepp has latterly tried to show that it was built by Justinian—Die Felsenkuppel, eine Justinianische Sophien- kirche, und die iibrigen Tempel Jerusalems, Munich, 1882.*~~

~~*14 Ancient Jerusalem, Cambridge, 1855.*~~

~~*1 Bel. Jud., v.5 § 8. Sandie's attempt (Horeb and Jerusalem, p. 259) to minimize this difficulty by supposing a rocky valley to have run up from the valley of Jehoshaphat westwards at this point, and so to have divided the temple from the tomb, seems inadmissible. Modern investigation shows that such a valley, or rather depression, did exist, but north, not south, of the Dome of the Rock.*~~

~~*16 Ttinera Latina (Soc. de 1'Or. Lat.), Geneva, 1879, i. pp. 16-18.*~~

~~*7 Jb., pp. 100-106. 18 7b., pp. 63-66.*~~

~~*9 The Louvain and British Museum MSS., see Votes and Queries, 27th January 1877.*~~

~~*SE PULCH EE Bole*~~

~~our Lord. Many more passages might be quoted from writers of this period testifying to the belief that the hill that witnessed the offering of Isaac witnessed also the resurrection of Christ, and many others identifying the scene of the offering of Isaac with the hill on which the temple was built. Perhaps the strongest point in this connexion against Fergusson is that so striking a fact as the identity of the hill of the Passion with that. on part of which the temple stood should only be directly spoken to by a single writer. After the 9th century the historical evidence becomes more difficult to interpret. Fergusson would date the transference of the site about 1000 ; but it seems clear from Istakhri (978) 2° and Mokaddasi (987), both of whom were unknown to him, that before their days the Dome of the Rock was a Mohammedan place of worship, and the latter expressly states that it was suggested by a great Christian church.22 The natural date to assign for such a transference would be about 614, when the city was captured by the Persians, and, to quote the carefully guarded narrative of Gibbon, 'the sepulchre of Christ and the stately churches of HIelena and Constantine were con- sunied, or at least damaged, by the flames." The buildings were repaired or rebuilt by Modestus a few years later, and their praises are sung by Sophronius, his successor in the patriarchate, but in terms which give little topographical information. Sophronius lived to see the capture of the city by 'Omar in 636, the earliest records of whose doings as yet available are the brief one of Theophanes (818) and the more lengthened one of Eutychius (937). From both of these it seems clear that the caliph confirmed the Christians in the possession of the sites (whatever these might be) which he found in their hands. In or about 670 the French bishop Arculph visited Jerusalem, and under the hand of Adamnanus we have a detailed account taken down from his lips,?? and a plan of the church of the Resurrec- tion as he saw it, which strikingly corresponds to the Dome of the Rock,—as, however, it necessarily would correspond with any church which had been erected in close imitation of that building.2* There are passages, however, in Arculph descriptive of the city very difficult to understand unless on the assumption that the transference of Sion, which had hitherto (see JERUSALEM) been identified with the eastern hill, had already in his time taken place. The next pil- grim who has left us a record is Willibald,"® who visited the city early in the 8th century, and~~

~~*whose description applies on the whole better to the western than the eastern site;*~~

~~*20 Bibl. Geog. Arab., ed. De Goeje, Leyden, 1870-71, i. p. 56 sq.*~~

~~*Bi 070%, cll, ShOONaN: 22 7b., iti. p. 159*~~

~~*3 Itin. Lat. (Soc. de Or. Lat.), 1879, i. pp. 141-202.*~~

~~*24 The view that at the time when Arculph wrote the Dome of the Rock was in the hands of the Mohammedans seems strengthened by the well-known Cufic inscription which still runs round the colonnade of that building, and a complete translation of which by the late Professor Palmer will be found in the Quarterly Report of the Palestine Exploration Fund (1871, p. 164) and Fergusson's Temples of the Jews (p. 269). In it the construction of the dome of the building is dated 72 A.H. (691), but the name of the builder, which clearly was Abd-el- Melek in the original, has been erased and that of Abdallah el-Mamin (198 a.u.; 818) fraudulently substituted, " the short-sighted forger, as Palmer calls him, having omitted to change the date as well as the name. Jn this inscription there is very special mention made of our Saviour, and in a way which seems inexplicable unless the building on which it was inscribed had been, in the mind of the writer, associated in some important respects with the history of Jesus. And the tradi- tion that it was so continued long after ; for we find Theoderic so late as 1176 writing of it, "Hoc templum, quod nunc videtur, ad honorem Domini nostri Jesu Christi ejusque pie genetricis ab Helena regina et ejus filio, imperatore Constantino, constructum est" (ed. Tobler, St Gall, 1865, p. 46). Fergusson believes this inscription to have been written in the 12th century, but is obliged to admit that the alphabet employed is identical with that found on the coins of Abd-el-Melek (Temples of the Jews, p. 24). A facsimile of the sentence containing the date and the forgery will be found in the Rev. Isaac Taylor's The Alphabet (London, 1883, i. p. 322).*~~

- ~~*Itin. Lat. (Soc. de Or. Lat.), 1879, i. pp. 244-297.*~~

~~*SE Q—S EQ*~~

~~but, on the other hand, that of Bernard,! who travelled | has been recorded 270 feet in length, and a greater height. is said to be occasionally reached, while a diameter of from 12 to 15 feet is sometimes attained at the base.~~

~~a~~

~~\ \ AA~~

~~about 870, applies better to the eastern than to the western. If the transference can be supposed to have taken place at the time of the Persian invasion, one of the main difficul- ties in the adoption of Fergusson's theory will be greatly lessened, for the intervening period of more than 450 years would go far to explain how the crusaders, on gaining possession of the city in 1099, failed to make it their first business to revert to the original site. On the whole, the question is one which can hardly be satisfactorily deter- mined until the Arabic authorities on the subject have been duly scrutinized, and as yet we have practically access to none earlier than the two above referred to.?~~

~~Within the last few years a third locality has been sug- gested. In 1878 Captain Conder, in his Zent Work in Palestine (i. pp. 372-376), expressed a strong conviction that the real site was to be found on a rocky knoll outside the northern wall, and close to the cave known as " Jeremiah's Grotto." He argued that not only did this locality meet the requirements of the Gospel narratives, being outside the city and near one of the great roads leading from the country, but that in this direction lay "the great ceme- tery of Jewish times" as testified by "the sepulchre of Simon the Just preserved by Jewish tradition," and the monument of Helena "fitted with a rolling stone such as closed the mouth of the Holy Sepulchre." Here also by early Christian tradition had been the scene of the martyrdom of Stephen, which doubtless occurred at the place of public execution, and to this day, according to Dr Chaplin, the Jews designate the knoll "'by the name Beth has-Sekilah, 'the place of stoning' (domus lapidationis), and state it to be the ancient place of public execution mentioned in the Mishnah." 'The hill itself appears to present a striking~~

~~resemblance to a human skull, and so to associate itself with the word "Golgotha." The adoption of this site by Dr Chaplin, the Rev. 8. Merrill, Schick, and perhaps especially the late General Gordon,? has aided in giving it a considerable popularity. It is, however, a purely conjectural location, and involves the assumption that all the Christian writers from the 4th century down- wards, as well as the mother of Constantine, were in error as to the real site. (a. B. M'G.)~~

~~SEQUESTRATION. See Bankruptcy.~~

~~SEQUOIA, a genus of conifers, allied to Zaxodium and Cryptomeria, forming one of several surviving links between the firs and the cypresses. The two species usually placed in this group are evergreen trees of large size, indigenous to the west coast of North America. Both bear their round or ovoid male catkins at the ends of the slender terminal branchlets ; the ovoid cones, either terminal or on short lateral twigs, have thick woody scales dilated at the extrem- ity, with a broad disk depressed in the centre and usually furnished with a short spine; at the base of the scales are from three to seven ovules, which become reversed or partially so by compression, ripening into small angular seeds with a narrow wing-like expansion.~~

~~The redwood of the Californian woodsmen, S. semper- wrens, which may be regarded as the typical form, abounds on the Coast Range from the southern borders of the State northwards into Oregon, and, according to De Candolle, as far as Nootka Sound. It grows to a gigantic size: a trunk~~

~~1 Itin. Lat. (Soc. de YOr, Lat.), 1879, i. pp. 309-320.~~

- ~~Palmer, in the chapter contributed by him (mainly from Arabic sources) to Jerusalem, the City of Herod and Saladin (by W. Besant aud E. H. Palmer, London, 1871), has failed to give, with rare exceptions, any clue to the date of the writers whose statements he embodied.~~

~~8 Reflections in Palestine, London, 1884, pp. 1-3. See also Quarterly Report of Palestine Exploration Fund for 1883, p. 69; and Sir J. W. Dawson's Egypt and Syria, their Physical Features in Relation to Bible~~

~~*History, London, 1885, pp. 85-95, where two illustrations of the hill are given.*~~

~~*In old*~~

~~*Sequoia sempervirens—a, green cones and catkin; b, section of cone; c, scale of cone.*~~

~~*age the huge columnar trunk rises to a great height bare of boughs, while on the upper part the branches are short and irregular. The bark is red, like that of the Scotch fir, deeply furrowed, with the ridges often much curved and twisted. When young the tree is one of the most graceful of the conifers: the stem rises straight and taper- ing, with somewhat irregular whorls of drooping branches, the lower ones sweeping the ground,—giving an elegant conical outline. The twigs are densely clothed with flat spreading linear leaves of a fine glossy green above and glaucous beneath ; in the old trees they become shorter and more rigid and partly lose their distichous habit. The globular brown catkins appear early in June; the cones, from 1 to 2 inches long, are at first of a bluish green colour, but when mature change to a reddish brown ; the scales are very small at the base, dilating into a broad thick head, with a short curved spine below the deep trans- verse depression. The redwood forms woods of large extent on the seaward slope of the Coast Range and occurs in isolated groups farther inland. From the great size of the trunk and the even grain of the red cedar-like wood it is a valuable tree to the farmer and carpenter: it splits readily and evenly, and planes and polishes well; cut radially, the medullary plates give the wood a fine satiny lustre ; it is strong and durable, but not so elastic as many of the western pines and firs. In England the tree grows well in warm situations, but suffers much in severe winters,—its graceful form rendering it ornamental in the park or garden, where it sometimes grows 30 or 40 feet in height ; its success as a timber tree would be doubtful. In the eastern parts of the United States it does not flourish. Discovered by Menzies in the end of the 18th century, it has long been known in British nurseries under the name of Taxodium sempervirens.*~~

~~*The only other member of the genus is the giant tree of the Sierra Nevada, S. gigantea, the largest of known conifers ; it is confined to the*~~

~~*western portion of the great Californian range, occurring chiefly in detached groups*~~

~~*XXT, — 85*~~

~~*674*~~

~~*locally called " groves," at an altitude of from 4000 to 5000 feet above the sea. The leaves of this species are awl- shaped, short and rigid, with pointed apex; closely ad- pressed, they completely cover the branchlets. The male catkins are small, solitary, and are borne at the ends of the twigs; the cones are from 1} to 3 inches long, ovoid, with scales thicker at the base than those of the redwood, and bearing below the depression a slender prickle. The young tree is more formal and rigid in growth than S. sempervirens, but when old the outline of the head becomes cylindrical, with short branches sparsely clad with foliage sprays. The bark, of nearly the same tint as that of the redwood, is extremely thick and is channelled towards the base with vertical furrows; at the root the ridges often stand out in buttress-like projections. Some of these vast vegetable columns are upwards of 30 feet in diameter and a few have attained a height of 400 feet or more.*~~

~~*The famous group known as the Mammoth Grove of Calaveras in California, containing above ninety large trees, stands in 38° N. lat., about 4370 feet above the sea, between the San Antonio and Stanislaus rivers. According to Viseher, it was diseovered by a hunter in pursuit of a bear in 1852, but had apparently been visited before, as the date 1850 is eut on one of the trees. The bark of one of the finest trunks was foolishly stripped off to the height of 116 feet, and exhibited in New York and London ; it now stands in the Crystal Palace, Sydenham. The tree, known as the "mother of the forest," soon died; at the base it measured 90 feet in girth, and the dead tree was 321 feet high ; a prostrate trunk in the neighbourhood is 18 feet in diameter 300 feet from the base. Some trees in the Mariposa grove rival these in size: one measures 101 feet round the root, and a cut stump is 31 feet in diameter. Gigantie as these trees are and imposing from their vast eolumnar trunks, they have little beauty, owing to the scanty foliage of the short rounded boughs ; some of the trees stand very close together ; they are said to be about 400 in number.*~~

~~*Some are of vast age, perhaps 3000 years or more; they appear to be the remains of extensive woods belonging to a past epoch, and probably have been in distant time much injured by forest fires. The growth of the "mammoth tree" is fast when young, but old trees increase with extreme slowness. The timber is not of great value, but the heartwood is dense and of deeper eolour than that of 8. sempervirens, varying from brownish red to very deep brown ; oiled and varnished, it has been used in eabinet work. S. gigantea was brought to England by Lobb in 1858, and reeeived from Dr Lindley the name of Wellingtonia, by which it is still popularly known, though its affinity to the redwood is too marked to admit of generic distinction. In Ameriea it is sometimes ealled Washing- tonia. In the Atlantic States it does not sueceed; and, though nearly hardy in Great Britain, it is planted only as an ornament of the lawn or paddock. It is never likely to acquire any economic importance in Europe. (ChE Ts)*~~

~~*SERATEVO. See Bosna SERA*~~

~~*SERAING, a town of Belgium, stretching nearly a mile along the right bank of the Meuse, across which a sus- pension bridge connects it with Jemeppe, 3 miles south- west of Liége. It has one of the largest manufactories of machinery on the Continent, founded by John Cockerill, an Englishman, in 1817, on the site of the former palace of the prince-bishops of Liége. Including offices, the works extend over 270 acres, employ 11,000 hands, and the annual value of their products is more than 45,000,000 francs. Down to 1882 they had turned out 52,600 engines or pieces of machinery, including the first locomotive engine built on the Continent (1835). After Cockerill's death in 1840, the works were purchased by 'La John Cockerill Société." A monument was erected to his memory in 1871. The population, which numbered but 2226 im 1827, amounted to 24,315 in 1877, and is now (1886) estimated at about 27,500.*~~

~~*SERAMPUR, a town of British India, in Hugli (Hooghly) district, Bengal, situated on the right bank of the Hugli river, 13 miles by rail north of Calcutta, in 22° 45' 26" N. lat. and 88° 23' 10" E. long. It was formerly a Danish settlenient, and remained so until 1845, when all the Danish possessions in India were ceded by treaty to the East India Company. Serampur is famed as the*~~

~~residence of a body of Protestant Baptist missionaries, who made it the centre of their Christianizing efforts. At the census of 1881 the population of the town was 25,559 (13,137 males and 12,422 females).~~

~~SERAPHIM. In the vision of Isaiah vi. the throne of God is surrounded by seraphim,—figures apparently human (ver. 6), but with six wings, which constantly pro- claim the trisagion. The seraphim are not again mentioned in the Bible ; but in later Jewish theology they are taken to be a class of angels. As the whole vision of Isaiah is symbolical, the seraphim also are in this connexion symbol- ical figures, aiding the delineation of Jehovah's awful holiness. But the imagery is probably borrowed from some popular conception analogous to that of the CHERUBIM (g.v.). The name is sometimes explained to mean "lofty ones," after the Arabic sharufa (Gesenius); but if it has a Hebrew etymology it must signify 'burning ones" ("' consuming," not " fiery"), so that in Isaiah's vision the seraphim will mean the same thing as the "devouring fire" of God's holiness (Isa, xxxiii. 14). But this, again, is a spiritual interpretation of the old Hebrew conception that Jehovah appears in the thunderstorm (Judges v. 4; Ps, xviii., xxix.) escorted by thunderbolts (vesheph, Hab. iii. 5). Among the Phcenicians Resheph is a god (C.L8,, i. 38), probably identical with the Arabian divine archer Kozah, who shoots lightnings. In prophetic monotheism such mythological conceptions could only survive as personi- fications of the natural phenomena attending a theophany.~~

~~In Num. xxi. 6 sq. the word "seraphim" is used of a kind of serpents, not 'fiery serpents " (A. V.) but burning, ¢.e., poisonous ones (comp. hemah, 'glowing heat," "'venom"). In Isa. xiv. 29 and xxx. 6 the singular saraph oecurs with the epithet "flying," and from the seeond passage we see that such flying serpents were supposed to inhabit the desert between Palestine and Egypt; comp. Herod. ii. 75 and the white flying serpents in an Arabian legend (Agh., xx. 185, 30).~~

~~SERAPIS, or SaraPis, in the Leyden papyrus Ocapamts, i.e, Osiris-Apis, apparently meaning the dead Apis wor shipped as Osiris (see Apis), and so as lord of the under- world, was the name under which the Egyptian~~

~~*priests consulted by Ptolemy Soter incorporated with the old religion the Greek worship of Hades. The statue with the attributes of Hades which they professed to identify as Serapis (a name which had till then played no prominent part in Egyptian religion) was brought by the king from Sinope to Alexandria in consequence, it was given out, of a revelation granted to him in a dream (Plut., Js. et Os., 28). The real object of Ptolemy was to provide a mixed Greek and Egyptian religion for his mixed subjects, especi- ally in Alexandria; the true Egyptians disliked the inno- vation, and no Serapeum or Serapis temple was admitted within the walls of Egyptian cities (Macrob., i. 7, 14). Thus the great Serapeum at Memphis lay outside the town (Strabo, xvii. 1, 32), where its ruins were laid bare by Mariette in 1850. From papyri found on the spot it is known that a sort of monastery was connected with this and other Serapea. The so-called Egyptian Serapeum or series of Apis graves excavated in the rock near the Greek Serapeum is distinct and belongs to the old religion, though the old Osiris worship was gradually transferred to Serapis. The cult of Serapis also spread largely in the Graeco-Roman world. Egyptian monasticism seems to have borrowed something from the monks of Serapis, and the Egyptian Christians were accused of worshipping Serapis as well as Christ (Vita Saturnini, 8), perhaps because they identified the god who is represented bearing a corn-measure on his head with the Biblical Joseph; see Firmicus Maternus, c. 13, and Suidas, s.v. Sdpames.*~~

~~*SERENA, a city of Chili, capital of the province of Coquimbo, is situated on an elevated plain on the south side of the river Coquimbo, about 5 miles from the sea,*~~

~~*in 29° 54'S. lat. and 71° 13' W. long. The original town*~~

~~*was founded by Juan Bohon in 1544, on the opposite side of the river, and called by him Serena, after the town of that name in Spanish Estremadura, the birthplace of his chief, Pedro de Valdivia. Being shortly after destroyed by the Indians, it was rebuilt on its present site by Fran- cisco de Aguirre in 1549. Serena is the seat of a bishopric embracing the whole of Chili to the north, and of a court of appeal the jurisdiction of*~~

~~which extends to the province of Atacama. The town is well supplied with water. The principal edifice is the cathedral (1844-60), built of a light porous stone, 216 feet long and 66 broad. The town con- tains eight other churches, an excellent lyceum, a theatre, an episcopal palace, and several convents and charitable institutions. It is connected by rail with its port 9 miles to the south-west, and with the Tamaya copper-mines. A narrow-gauge line up the Elqui valley was opened in 1883. Brewing has recently become an important industry. The population of Serena was 12,293 in 1875, or, including the suburbs of the Pampa (Alta and Baja), 14,403. SERENUS or AnmTissa, an ancient Greek geometer, the author of two treatises—De Sectione Cylindri et Cont, libri duo—which Halley has published in Greek and Latin along with his edition of the Conzcs of Apollonius of Perga. Great difference of opinion has existed as to his date: Halley says in his preface to the Conics, "We know nothing of Serenus except that he was born at Antissa, a town in the island of Lesbos; and that, besides his book On the Section of the Cylinder, and another On the Section of the Cone, he wrote commentaries on Apollonius; and that he lived before Marinus—the pupil of Proclus—as appears from the preface of Marinus to the Data of Euclid." Montucla says vaguely that Serenus lived within the first four centuries of the Christian era. Chasles places him about the same time as Pappus. Bretschneider pointed out that Antissa was completely destroyed by the Romans in 167 3B.c., and inferred thence that Serenus lived c. 220- 180 z.c. To this inference it has been fairly objected by Cantor, after F. Blass, that the name Serenus is Latin and that Antissa had been rebuilt at the time of Strabo. The statement of Halley that 'he lived before Marinus" has been since repeated by many writers; but Heiberg has pointed out (Rev. Crit. d Hist. et de Litt., 1881, p. 381) that the passage referred to in support of this statement is faulty, and that the name of Serenus is certainly not to be found in it. Th. H. Martin, in his edition of the Astronomy of Theon of Smyrna (Paris, 1849), has pub- lished a fragment which in the MS. follows the text of Theon and is headed Irom the Lemmas of the Philosopher Serenus. This is unquestionably the same as Serenus of Antissa, to whoni this appellation "philosopher" is given in the titles of the two treatises edited by Halley. No con- clusion, however, can be drawn from this as to the date of Serenus, for the extract is not given by Theon but by an anonymous scholiast. M. Paul Tannery in an~~

~~*elaborate paper (Bull. des Sc. Math. et Astron., 2d series, vii., 1883) has shown from the character of Serenus's writings that he lived long after the brilliant period of Greek mathematics, and that he must be placed chronologically between Pappus and Hypatia, consequently in the 4th century. This determination of the date of Serenus is accepted by Cantor (Zeitschrift fiir Math. und Phys., August 1885, p. 124). In the treatise On the Section of the Cone, which is the less im- portant of the two books, Serenus, as he tells us in the preface, was the first to take up the particular branch of that subject with which he deals. In it he treats of the area of a triangle formed by cutting a cone, right or scalene, on a circular base by a plane through the vertex. He shows how "to cut a right cone whose axis is not less than the semi-diameter of the base by a plane through the vertex so that the triangle thus formed shall be equal to a given triangle" (Prop. 8), or "a maximum" (Prop. 13). He then considers the case of the scalene cone, solves the problem '*to cut a given scalene coue by a plane through the vertex so as*~~

~~*675*~~

~~*to. form an isosceles triangle" (Prop. 21), and shows that, "of the triangles which are formed by cutting a scalene cone through the axis, the greatest is the isosceles, the least that which is at right angles to the base of the cone ; of the rest, however, that which is nearer the greatest is greater than one more remote" (Prop. 22). The general questions for a scalene cone, corresponding to the problems for the right cone (Props. 8 and 13), and which depend on solid loci for their solution, are not attempted. These have been solved by Halley in his edition of Serenus, p. 68 sq.*~~

~~*In his preface to the treatise On the Section of the Cylinder, Serenus tells us that many geometers of his time supposed that the transverse sections of a cylinder were different from the elliptic sections of a cone, that he thought it right to refute this error and to prove that these sections were of the same kind. Having estab- lished this in a series of theorems ending with Prop. 18, he shows in Prop. 19 that "it is possible to exhibit a cone and a cylinder cutting one another in one and the same ellipse." He then solves problems such as—" given a cone (cylinder) and an ellipse on it, to*~~

~~find the cylinder (cone) which is cut in the same ellipse as the cone (cylinder)" (Props. 20, 21); " given a cone (cylinder), to find a cylinder (cone), and to cut both by one and the same plane so that the sections thus formed shall be similar ellipses" (Props. 22, 23); "given a cylinder cut in an ellipse, to construct a cone having the same base and altitude as the cylinder, so that the section of it by the same plane is an ellipse similar to the ellipse of the cylinder" (Prop. 25). In Props. 26-29 he shows how to cut a sealene cylinder or cone in an infinite number of ways by two planes —which are not parallel—so as to form similar ellipses (subcontrary sections). HIe then gives some theorems: "all the straight lines drawn from the same point to touch a cylindrical surface, on both sides, have their points of contact on the sides of a single parallelogram" (Prop. 31); "all the straight lines drawn from the same point to touch a conical surface, on both sides, have their points of contact on the sides of a single triangle" Ce 34). This last is proved by means of Prop. 33, where we find, indirectly stated, the property of an harmonic pencil.~~

~~SERES, SerrEs, or SrRos, a town of Turkey in Europe, now at the head of a sanjak in the vilayet of Saloniki, is situated in the valley of the Strymon (Karasu), in a district so fertile as to bear among the Turks the name of Altin Ovassi or Golden Plain, and so thickly studded with villages as to have, when seen from the heights of Rhodope, the appearance of a great city with extensive gardens. The principal buildings are the Greek archiepiscopal palace, the Greek cathedral, restored since the great fire of 1879, by which it was robbed of its magnificent mosaics and woodwork, tle Greek gymnasium and hospital (the former built of marble), the richly endowed Eski Jami, and the ruins of the once no less flourishing Ahmed Pasha or Aghia Sophia mosque, whose revenues used to be derived from the Crimea. On a hill above the town are the ruins of a fortress described in a Greek inscription as a " tower built by HIelen in the mountainous region." Cloth-factories and tanneries are the chief industrial establishments and lignite mines are worked in the neighbourhood with some success. The population is 30,000.~~

~~Sercs is the ancient Seris, Sire, or Sirrhe, mentioned by HIerod- otus in connexion with Xerxes's retreat, and by Livy as the place where Aimilius Paulus received a deputation from Perseus. In the 14th century, when~~

~~*Stephen Dushan of Servia assumed the title emperor of Servia, &c., he chose Sirrhe as his capital; and it remained in the hands of the Servians till its capture by Sultan Murad. In 1396 Bayazid summoned his Christian vassals to his camp at Sirrhe.*~~

~~*SERFDOM. See Siavery.*~~

~~*SERGHIEVSKIY POSAD, or Trorrzz-SERGHIEVSK, a town of Russia, in the government of Moscow, which has grown up round the monastery of Troitze-Serghievskaya Lavra, 44 miles by rail to the north-east of Moscow. It is situated in a beautiful country, intersected by pleasant little valleys and varied with woods, the buildings extend- ing partly over the hill occupied by the monastery and partly over the valley below. Including the extensive Kukuevsk suburbs, it had in 1884 31,400 inhabitants. There are several lower-grade schools, an infirmary for old women, and a school for girls. Numerous inns and hotels, some maintained by the monastery and others a rich source of revenue to it, accommodate the numerous pilgrims.*~~

~~*676*~~

~~*Serghievsk has long been renowned for its manufactures of holy pictures (painted and carved), spoons, and a variety of other articles carved in wood, especially toys, sold to pilgrims. Within the last twenty years this industry has greatly developed ; separate parts of certain toys are made elsewhere and brought to Serghievsk, where no fewer than 330 workshops, employing 1055 hands, with an annual production valued at more than £30,000, supply the finished article. Several other petty industries are carried on both in the town and in the neighbouring villages.*~~

~~*The Troitsk monastery is the most sacred place in middle Russia, the Great Russians regarding it with more veneration than even the cathedrals and relics of the Kremlin of Moscow. It occupies a picturesque site on the top of a hill, protected on two sides by deep ravines and steep slopes. The walls, 25 to 50 feet in height, are fortified by nine towers, one of which, the Pyatnitsk, has been for some time a prison for both civil and ecclesiastical offenders. Eleven churches, including the Troitskiy (Trinity)*~~

~~*and Uspenskiy cathedrals, a lofty bell-tower, a theological academy, various buildings for monks and pilgrims, and a hospital stand within the precincts, which are nearly two-thirds of a mile in circuit. A small wooden church, erected by the monk Sergius,'and afterwards burned by the Tatars, stood on the site now occupied by the cathedral of the Trinity, which was built in 1422, and contains the relics of Sergius, as well as a holy picture which has frequently been brought into requisition in Russian campaigns. The Uspenskiy cathedral was erected in 1585 ; close beside it are the graves of Boris Godunoff and his family. In the southern part of the monastery is the church of Sergius, beneath which are spacious rooms where 200,000 dinners are distributed gratis every year to the pilgrims. The bell-tower, 290 feet high, has a bell weighing 1374 tons. Several monasteries of less importance occur in the neighbourhood. The site now occupied by the Troitsk monastery was in the 14th century covered with impenetrable forests. In 1337 two brothers, Barthelemy and Stefan, sons of a Rostoff boiar, erected a church on the spot. The elder (born in 1314) took monastic orders under the name of Sergius, erected cells by the church, and became widely famous among the peasants around. The Moscow princes also showed great respect for the chief of the new monastery. Dmitri Joannovich Donskoi received the benediction of Sergius before setting out on the Tatar expedition which terminated in the victory of Kulikovo, and afterwards accepted the advice and help of the monk in his dealings with the prince of Ryazan. Sergius lived a life of diligence and simplicity, and declined to accept the office of metropolitan of Moscow. His monastery acquired great fame and became the wealthiest in middle Russia. Ivan the Terrible in 1561 made it the centre of the ecclesiastical province of Moscow. During the Polish invasion at the beginning of the 17th century it organized the national resistance, and supplied the combatants with money and food. In 1608-9 it withstood a sixteen months' siege by the Poles; at a later date the monks took a lively part in the organization of the army which crushed the outbreak of the peasants. In 1683 and 1689 Peter I. took refuge here from the revolted strelizi. The theological seminary, founded in 1744 and transformed in 1814 into an academy, reckons Platon and Philarete among its pupils.*~~

~~*SERGIUS L, pope from 687 to 701, came of an An- tiochene family which had settled at Palermo, and owed his election as Conon's successor*~~

~~*to skilful intrigues against Paschalis and Theodorus, the other candidates. In the second year of his pontificate he baptized King Ceadwalla of Wessex at Rome. For rejecting certain canons of the Trullan' (Quinisext) council of 692, Justinian II. com- manded his arrest and transportation to Constantinople, but the militia of Ravenna and the Pentapolis forced the imperial protospatharius to abandon the attempt to carry out his orders. Sergius was followed by John VI. as pope.*~~

~~*SERGIUS IL, pope from 844 to 847, a Roman of noble birth, elected by the clergy and people to succeed Gregory IV., was forthwith consecrated without waiting for the sanction of the emperor Lothair, who accordingly sent his son Louis with an army to punish the breach of faith. A pacific arrangement was ultimately made, and Louis was crowned king of Lombardy by Sergius. In this pontificate Rome was ravaged, and the churches of St*~~

~~*Peter and St Paul robbed, by Saracens (August 846).*~~

~~*Sergius was succeeded by Leo IV. SERGIUS IIL succeeded Pope Christopher in 904, and reigned till 911. IIis pontificate, so far as is known, was*~~

~~*SER—SER*~~

~~*remarkable for nothing but the rise of the " pornocracy" of Theodora and her daughters. Sergius restored the Lateran palace, which had been shattered by an earthquake, After him Anastasius ILI. sat on the pontifical throne,*~~

~~*SERGIUS IV., pope from 1009 to 1012, originally bore the name of Peter, and is said to have been the first to change his name on accession to the pontificate. IIe wag a mere tool in the hands of the feudal nobility of the city (see RoME); he was succeeded by Benedict VIII.*~~

~~*SERGIUS, St. The Eastern and Western Churches celebrate the martyrs Sergius and Bacchus, Roman officers who suffered under Maximian, on 7th October. Both were martyred in Syria, Sergius at Rosdfa (Rasifta, Rosdfat IIisham) near Rakka. Sergius was a very famous saint in Syria*~~

~~*and Christian Arabia (comp. what is related of Chosroes II. in vol. xviii. p.614); and Rosdfa, which became a bishop's see (Le Quien, Or. Chr., ii. 951), took the name of Sergiopolis, and preserved his relics in a fortified basilica, The church was adorned and the place further strengthened by Justinian (Procopius, dd., ii. 9).*~~

~~*SERIEMA, or Cartama,! a South-American bird, suffi- ciently well described and figured in Marcgrave's work (Hist. Rer. Nat. Brasilrx, p. 203), posthumously published by De Laet in 1648, to be recognized by succeeding orni- thologists,among whom Brisson in 1760 acknowledged it as forming a distinct genus Cariama, while Linneeus regarded it as a second species of Palamedea (see SCREAMER, vol. xxl. p. 552), under the name of P. cristata, Englished by Latham in 1785 (Synopsis, v. p. 20) the "Crested Screamer,"—an appellation, as already observed, since transferred to a wholly different bird. Nothing more seems to have been known of it in Europe till 1803, when Azara published at Madrid his observations on the birds*~~

~~*of Paraguay (Apuntamientos, No. 340), wherein he gave an account of it under the name of "Saria," which it bore among the Guaranis,—that of "Cariama" being applied to it by the Portuguese settlers, and both expressive of its ordinary cry.2 It was not, however, until 1809 that this very remarkable form came to be autoptically described scientifically. This was done by the elder Geoffroy St-*~~

~~*1 In this word the initial C, as is usual in Portuguese, is pronounced soft, and the accent laid upon the last syllable.*~~

~~*2 Yet Forbes states (Ibis, 1881, p. 358) that Seriema comes from Stri, "a diminutive of Indian extraction," and Hma, the Portuguese*~~

~~*'name for the Rhea (comp. EmEv, vol. viii, p. 171), the whole thus*~~

~~*meaning " Little Rhea."*~~

~~Hilaire (Ann. du Muséum, xiii. pp. 362-370, pl. 26), who had seen a specimen in the Lisbon museum ; and, though knowing it had already been received into scientific nomen- clature, he called it anew Microdactylus marcgravui. In 1811 Illiger, without having seen an example, renamed the genus Dicholophus—a term which, as before stated (OrnrrHoLoey, vol. xviii. p. 46, note 1), has since been frequently applied to it—placing it in the curious con- geries of forms having little affinity which he called Alec- torides. In the course of his travels in Brazil (1815-17), Prince Max of Wied met with this bird, and in 1823 there appeared from his pen (NW. Act. Acad. L.-C. Nat. Curiosorum, xi. pt. 2, pp. 341-350, tab. xlv.) a very good contribution to its history, enibellished by a faithful life-sized figure of its head. The same year Temminck figured it in the Planches Coloriées (No. 237). It is not easy to say when any example of the bird first came under the eyes of British ornithologists; but in the Zoological Proceedings for 1836 (pp. 29-32) Martin described the visceral and osteological anatomy of one which had been received alive the preceding year.~~

~~The Seriema, owing to its long legs and neck, stands some two feet or more in height, and in menageries bears itself with a stately deportment. Its bright red beak, the bare greenish blue skin surrounding its large yellow eyes, and the tufts o elongated feathers springing vertically from its lores, give it a pleasing and animated expression; but its plumage Say is of an inconspicuous ochreous grey above and dull white beneath,—the feathers of the upper parts, which on the neck and throat are lon and loose, being barred by fine zigzag markings of dark brown, w ile those of the lower parts are more or less striped. The wing- uills are brownish black, banded with mottled white, and those of the tail, except the middle pair, which are wholly greyish brown, arc banded with mottled white at the base and the tip, but dark brown for the rest of their length. The legs are red. The Seriema inhabits the campos or elevated open parts of Brazil, from the neighbourhood of Pernambuco to the Rio de la Plata, extending inland as far as Matto Grosso ee: 60°), and occurring also, though sparsely, in Paraguay. It lives in the high grass, running away in a stooping posture to avoid discovery on being approached, and taking~~

~~*flight only at the utmost need. Yet it builds its nest in thick bushes or trees at about a man's height from the ground, therein laying two eggs, which Prof. Burmeister likens to those of the Land-Rail in colour.2. The young are hatched fully covered with grey down, relieved by brown, and remain for some time in the nest. The food of the adult is almost exclusively animal,—insects, especially large ants, snails, lizards, and snakes ; but it also eats certain large red berries.*~~

~~*Until 1860 the Seriema was believed to be without any near relative in the living world of birds*; but in the Zoological Pro- ccedings for that year (pp. 834-336) Dr Hartlaub described an allied species discovered by Prof. Burmeister in the territory of the Argentine Republic.* This bird, which has since been regarded as entitled to generic division under the name of Chunga burmeistert (P.Z.S., 1870, p. 466, pl. xxxvi.), and seems to be known in its native country as the "'Chunnia," differs from the Seriema by fre- quenting forest or at least bushy districts, It is also darker in colour, has less of the frontal crest, shorter legs, a longer tail, and the markings beneath take the form of bars rather than stripes. In other respects the difference between the two birds seems to be immaterial.*~~

~~*There are few birds which have more exercised the tax- onomer than this, and the reason seems to be plain. The Seriema must be regarded as the not greatly modified heir of some very old type, such as one may fairly imagine to have lived before many of the existing groups of birds had*~~

~~*1 The skeleton has been briefly described and figured by Eyton (Osteol. Avium, p. 190, pls. 3, K, and 28 bis, fig. 1).*~~

~~*2 This distinguished author twice cites the figure given by Thiene- mann (Fortpflanzungsgesch. gesammt. Vogel, pl. Ixxii. fig. 14) as though taken from a genuine specimen ; but little that can be called Ralline in character is observable therein. The same is to be said of an egg laid in captivity at Paris ; but a specimen in Mr Walter's pos- session undeniably shows it (cf. Proc. Zool. Society, 1881, p. 2).*~~

~~*3 A supposed fossil Cariama from the caves of Brazil, mentioned by Bonaparte (C.R., xliii. p. 779) and others, has since been shown by*~~

~~Reinhardt (Its, 1882, pp. 321-382) to rest upon the misinterpretation of cortain bones, which the latter considers to have been those of a Fthea.~~

~~4 Near Tucuman and Catamarea (Burmeister, Reise durch die La Plata Staaten, ii. p. 508).~~

~~677~~

~~become differentiated. Looking at it in this light, we may be prepared to deal gently with the systematists who, having only the present before their eyes, have relegated it positively to this, that, or the other Order, Family, or other group of birds. There can be no doubt that some of its habits point to an alliance with the Bustarp (vol. iv. p. 578) or perhaps certain Plovers (see PioveEr, vol. xix. p. 227), while its digestive organs are essentially, if not absolutely, those of the Heron (vol. xi. p. 760). Its general appearance recalls that of the SzcreTary-Brrp (supra, p. 617); but this, it must be admitted, may be merely an analogy and may indicate no affinity whatever. On the one hand we have authorities, starting from bases so op- posed as Prof. Parker (P.Z.S., 1863, p. 516) and Sundevall, placing it among the Accipitres,> while on the other we have Nitzsch, Prof. Burmeister,® Martin (ut supra), and Dr Gadow (Journ. f. Ornithologie, 1876, pp. 445, 446) declaring in effect that this view of its affinities cannot be taken. Prof. Huxley has expressed himself more cautiously, and, while remarking (P.Z.S., 1867, p. 455) that in its skull "the internasal septum is ossified to a very slight extent, and the maxillo-palatine processes may meet in the middle line, in both of which respects it approaches the birds of prey," adds that "the ossified part of the nasal septum does not unite below with the maxillo-palatines," and that in this respect it is unlike the Accipitres; finally he declares (p. 457) that, as Ot¢s connects the Geranomorphe with the Charadriomorphx, so Cariama connects the former with the Aetomorphe, "but it is a question whether these two genera may be better included in" the Geranomorphe, "or made types of separate groups." (A. N.) SERIES. A series is a set of terms considered as arranged in order. Usually the terms are or represent numerical magnitudes, and we are concerned with the sunt of the series. The number of terms may be limited or without limit; and we have thus~~

~~*the two theories, finite series and infinite series. The notions of convergency and divergency present themselves only in the latter theory.*~~

~~*Finite Series.*~~

~~*1. Taking the terms to be numerical magnitudes, or say numbers, if there be a definite number of terms, then the sum of the series is nothing else than the number ob- tained by the addition of the terms; eg. 4+9+ 10 =25, 1+24+4+8=15. In the first example there is no apparent law for the successive terms ; in the second example there is an apparent law. But it is important to notice that in neither case is there a determinate law: we can in an infinity of ways form series beginning with the apparently irregular succession of terms 4, 9, 10, or with the apparently regular succession of terms I, 2, 4, 8. For instance, in the latter case we may have a series with the general term 2", when for 2 = 0, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5.. the series will be 1, 2, 4, 8, 16, 32,..; or a series with the general*~~

~~*ee eee*~~

~~*5 The author of vol. i. of the British Museum Catalogue of Birds even refers it to the Family Falconid# and sub-Family Polyborineg, though he regards the OsPREY (vol. xviii. p. 56) as the type of a dis- tinct sub-Order, thereby showing a want of penetration which it is difficult to excuse. Here it needs only be said that, whereas in a few points Pandion differs from the normal Falconidx, Cariama diverges in characters too numerous to mention. The suggestion that the Order Accipitres might be justifiably enlarged so as to include the Seriema has before (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. pp. 45, 46) met with conditional approval ; but that this remarkable and peculiar form should be treated in the way just described indicates an amount of neglect of evidence hardly to be expected at the present day.*~~

~~*6 Nitzsch, as Prof. Burmeister states in his masterly contribution to the natural history of this bird (Abhandl. naturf. Gesellsch. Halle, i. pp. 1-68, pls. 1, 2), in 1834 saw a defective skeleton sent to Munich by the Brazilian travellers Spix and Martius. His description of it was not, however, published until 1858. To it is appended a description by Dr Creplin of some Entozoa found in the Seriema, but this unfortu- nately seems to give no help as to the systematic position of the bird.*~~

~~term s(n + 52+ 6), where for the same values of 2 the series~~

~~will be 1, 2, 4, 8, 15, 26,.. The series may contain nega- tive terms, and in forming the sum each term is of course 'to be taken with the proper sign.~~

~~2, But we may have a given law, such as either of those just mentioned, and the question then arises, to find the sum of an indefinite number of terms, or say of n terms (x standing for any positive integer number at pleasure) of the series. The expression for the sum cannot in this case be obtained by actual addition; the formation by addition of the sum of two terms, of three terms, «&c., will, it may be, suggest (but it cannot do more than suggest) the expression for the sum of x terms of the series, For instance, for the series of odd numbers 1+34+5+7+... : we have 1=1,1+3=4,14345=9, &c. These results at once suggest the law, 1+3+5…4 (2n — 1) =n, which is in fact the true expression for the sum of » terms of the series ; and this general expression, once obtained, can afterwards be verified.~~

~~3. We have here the theory of finite series: the general problem is, wv being a given function of the positive integer m, to determine as a function of » the sum Uy + Uy, + Uy… +%n, Or, in order to have » instead of n+1 terms, say the sum 2%) + Uy + Uy. Uy 1.~~

~~Simple cases are the three which follow.~~

~~(i.) The arithmetic series,~~

~~a+(4+b)+(a+2b)..4(a+n—1)b; writing here the terms in the reverse order, it at once appears that twice the sum is=2a+n— 10 taken n times:~~

~~that is, the sum =na + 5n(n —1)b. In particular we have an expression for the sum of the natural numbers 14+2+4+38.. n= 5n(n-+1),~~

~~and an expression for the sum of the odd numbers 1+34+5..+(2n-1)=n2~~
~~(ii.) The geometric series, atart+ar…tar"-!. here the difference between~~

~~the sum and 7 times the sum is at once seen to be=a— ar", and the sum is thus l—7~~

~~=Q>———_!~~

~~a in particular the sum of the series~~

~~l+rtr?. +a Te (ii.) But the harmonic series, ae) ee G@ a+b a+2b'"* at+(n-1)0 ee ae 1 . : or say t5+3.- -+>, does not admit of summation ; there is no algebraical function of x which is equal to the sum of the series.~~

~~4. If the general term be a given function Un, and we can find v, a function of such that Un+1 — Un =Un, then we have wu =v, — 2%, Uy = Vg — UY, Uy = Ug — Uy. Un = Unt — Up} and hence 2+ Uy + Uy. . + Un =%n+1 — %, — an expression for the required sum. This is in fact an application of the Calculus of Finite Differences. In the notation of this calculus 41-2» is written Av, 3 and the general inverse problem, or problem of integration, is from the equation of differences Avy = tn (where wp is a given func- tion of 2) to find v The general solution contains an arbitrary constant, v= Vn+O; but this disappears in the difference vp14 — Y. Asan example consider the series~~

~~Up tUy…+U,=041438.. 5mn WS here, observing that n(n + 1)(n +2) —(n-1)n(n+1)= nn+1)(n+2 — n — 1),= 3n(n +1), we have Umt1=g_m(n+1)(n+2) ;~~

~~SE m4 hs~~

~~and hence 14+8+6..4 s(n 1) =gn(n 1)(n+ 2),~~

~~as may be at once verified for any particular value of », Similarly, when the general term is a factorial of the order 7, we have 147 a Untl)..(ntr—1)_nnmtl).. (m+7) — rel? .. *¢ °°&4×4×1.8 5. If the general term w,, be-any rational and integral function of m, we have n(n — 1)~~

~~1.2 2 a where the series is continued only up to the term depend- ing on p, the degree of the function wp, for all the subse- quent terms vanish. The series is thus decomposed into a set of series which have each a factorial~~

~~*for the general term, and which can be summed by the last formula; thus we obtain*~~

~~*m(n—1)..(n-p+1)*~~

~~*n U,= Up +7 Arty + Ary ot a i Lup,*~~

~~*1)n Up ty… $U,=(N+ 1) + a — At). +*~~

~~*(n+1)n(n—1)..(n1-p+1) 1:2.3..(p+l) which is a function of the degree p +1.*~~

~~*Thus for the before-mentioned series 14+2+448+..,° if it be assumed that the general term wn isa cubic function of mn, and writing down the given terms and forming the differences, 1, 2, 4, 8; 1, 2,4; 1, 2; 1, we have*~~

~~*tyne ee) n(n—1)(n— 2) { =5(n8-+ 5n-+6),asabove }*~~

~~*p + A %,*~~

~~*il i. WG 253} and the sum u%+4u,.. +2y (n 1)n (n I)n(n — 1) (m+ I)n(2 —1)(2 ~ 2)*~~

~~*en er Mt >, 1.3032 2*~~

~~*=54(m! + 2n3 a 11n? + 342 + 24).*~~

~~*As particular cases we have expressions for the sums of the powers of the natural numbers—*~~

~~*1. +n? =in(n-+1) (n+ 1); 1%+23.. + n= in(n+1) (observe that this=(1+2… +2)?); and so on.*~~

~~*6. We may, from the expression for the sum of the geometric series, obtain by differentiation other results:*~~

~~*7*~~

~~*thus 1+r4e. a car mee gives Mees aygn-2 —@ T= 1 -nr™-14(n-1). 142743877… +(n-1)r ~Grilap? = ee (rp :*~~

~~*and we might in this way find the sum Uy bir… 4 where w,, is any rational and integral function of .*~~

~~*7. The expression for the sum w%+%,... + %y of an in- definite number of terms will in many cases lead to the sum of the infinite series w)+,...; but the theory of infinite series requires to be considered separately. Often in dealing apparently with an infinite series Uj tut… we consider rather an indefinite than an infinite series, and are not in any wise really concerned with the sum of the series or the question of its convergency: thus the equation*~~

~~*m(m—1), nn —*~~

~~*2 1)*~~

~~*(14 me + "=D, Dey .) (14 n+ "Tg et :)*~~

~~*mamta De 4 really means the series of identities (m+n)=m+n m+n)im+n —1)_m(m-1), smn, n(n-1) ee eee 7 ae obtained by multiplying together the two series of the left-hand side. Again, in the method of generating functions we are concerned with an equation ¢$(é) = A,+Ajt… A,t"., where the function 4(¢) is used only to ex- press the law of formation of the successive coefficients. It is an obvious remark that, although according to the original definition of a series the terms are considered as arranged in a determinate order, yet in a finite series*~~

~~*=1+(m+n)e+*~~

~~*&e,*~~

~~*SERIES*~~

~~*(whether the number of terms be definite or indefinite) the sum is independent of the order of arrangement.*~~

~~*Infimte Series.*~~

~~8. We consider an infinite series u+u,+u gt… of terms proceeding according to a given law, that is, the general term wu, is given as a function of x. To fix the ideas the terms may be taken to be positive numerical magnitudes, or say numbers continually diminishing to zero; that is, %,>Un+1, and %, is, moreover, such a function of n that by taking n sufficiently large uv, can be made as small as we please.~~

~~Forming the successive sums S)=%, S,;=u+u,, Sy =U) +U,U,,.. these sums Sp, S}, S,... will be a series of continually increasing terms, and if they increase up to a determinate finite limit S (that is, if there exists a determinate numerical magnitude S such that by taking n sufficiently large we can make S—S;,, as small as we please) S is said to be the sum of the infinite series. To show that we can actually have an. infinite series with a given sum 8, take) any number less than S, then S—u 'is positive, and taking uw, any numerical magnitude less than S'—u, then S—u)—, is positive. And going on continually in this manner we obtain a series w, U,...such that for any value of x however large S—U)—U,... —Un is positive ; and if as " increases this difference diminishes to zero, we have uwj+U g..., —an infinite series having S for its sum, Thus, if S =2,~~

~~1~~

~~and we take w)<2, say m=1; u,<2—1, say m=5; u.<2 — ae aie. say Uy= 43 and soon, we have l+5+7+... =2;~~

~~or, more generally, if 7 be any positive number less than 1, then 1+r+7? +... ee that is, the infinite geo-~~

~~mnetric series with the first term =1, and with a ratio~~

~~This in fact follows from~~

~~; 1~~

~~r~~

~~l—9r the expression 1+7r+7?... +7%-l= Te for the sum of~~

~~*the finite series; taking 7<1, then as increases r" de- creases to zero, and the sum becomes more and more*~~

~~*ih i=,*~~

~~*9. An infinite series of positive numbers can, it is clear, have a sum only if the terms continually diminish to zero ; but it is not conversely true that, if this condition be satis- fied, there will be a sum. For instance, in the case of the*~~

~~*nearly =*~~

~~*harmonic series 1 + 5 + ; + ...it can be shown that by tak-*~~

~~*ing a sufficient number of terms the sum of the finite series may be made as large as we please. For, writing the series*~~

~~*: 1 yal elie*~~

~~*in the form L+5+(5+a)+(g+gtzta)t Go 4 the number of terms in the brackets being doubled at each successive step, it is clear that the sum of the terms in any bracket is always S53 hence by sufficiently increas-*~~

~~*ing the number of brackets the sum may be made as large as we please. In the foregoing series, by grouping the terms*~~

~~*in a diff ata) + (Grete) n ifferent manner 1+(5+5 PNG apt) +3 the sum of the terms in any bracket is always <1; we thus arrive at the result that (n= 3 at least) the sum of 2" terms of the series is > 1] +50 and*~~

~~*10. An infinite series may contain negative terms ; sup- pose in the first instance that the terms are alternately*~~

~~*positive and negative. Here the absolute magnitudes of the terms must decrease down to zero, but this is a suffi-*~~

~~cient condition in order that the series may have a sum. The case in question is that of a series Y)—2,+Y,- .., where , 2, %,.. are all positive and decrease down to zero. Here, forming the successive sums Sp = %, 5S) =U — %; , Sy = Uy — 2 +Uy,.. So, Sy, Sq… are all positive, and we have Sy>j, 8, <8, S,>83,.. and Sri1—Sn tends con- tinually to zero. Hence the sums Sj, Sj, S,,.. tend con- tinually to a positive limit S$ in such wise that S), S,, Sy… are each of them greater and Sj, S3, S;,.. are each of them less than S; and we thus have S as the sum~~

~~of the series. The series 1 — as = i+ .. will serve as~~

~~an example. The case just considered includes the appar- ently more general one where the series consists of alternate groups of positive and negative terms respectively ; the terms of the same group may be united into a single term +v,, and the original series will have a sum only if the resulting series o%—v,+2,... has a sum, that is, if the positive partial sums 7, v,, v.,.. decrease down to zero.~~

~~The terms at the beginning of a series may be irregular as regards their signs ; but, when this is so, all the terms in question (assumed to be finite in number) may be united into a single term, which is of course finite, and instead of the original series only the remaining terms of the series need be considered. Every infinite series whatever is thus substantially included under the two forms,—terms all posi- tive and terms alternately positive and negative.~~

~~11. In brief, the sum (if any) of the infinite series Uy +%+U,+ .. 18 the finite limit (if any) of the succes- SlV€ SUMS Up, Uy +, Uy + %+Usy…3 if there is no such limit, then there is no sum. Observe that the assumed order Up, u,, U,... Of the terms is part of and essential to the definition ; the terms in any other order may have a different sum, or may have no sum. A series having a sum is said to be "convergent"; a series which has no sum is "divergent."~~

~~If a series. of positive terms be convergent, the terms cannot, it is clear, continually increase, nor can they tend to a fixed limit : the series 1+1+1+ ..is divergent. For the convergency of the series it is necessary (but, as has been shown, not sufficient) that the terms shall decrease to zero. So, if a~~

~~series with alternately positive and nega- tive terms be convergent, the absolute magnitudes cannot, it is clear, continually increase. In reference to such a series Abel remarks, " Peut-on imaginer rien de plus horrible que de débiter O= 1" —2"+3"—4"+, &., ob m est un nombre entier positif?" Neither is it allowable that the absolute magnitudes shall tend to a fixed limit. The so- called "neutral" series 1—1+1—1.. is divergent: the successive sums do not tend to a determinate limit, but are alternately +1 and 0; it is necessary (and also suffi- cient) that the absolute magnitudes shall decrease to zero.~~

~~In the so-called semi-convergent series we have an equa- tion of the form S= U,— U, +U,— ..., where the positive values U), U,, U,,... decrease toa minimum value, suppose U,, and afterwards increase; the series is divergent and has no sum, and thus Sis not the sum of the series. S is only a number or function calculable approximately by means of the series regarded as a finite series terminating with the term + U,. The successive sums J), U)—-U,, U,U,+U,,..up to that containing + Up», give alter nately superior and inferior limits of the number or function S.~~

~~12. The condition of convergency may be presented under a different form: let the series w)+%,uU.. be convergent, then, taking m sufficiently large, the sum is the limit not only of w+ +..+Um but also of wy +%...~~

~~/ +Um+r, Where r is any number as large as we please. The~~

~~difference of these two expressions must therefore be in-~~

~~680~~

~~definitely small; by taking m sufficiently large the sum Un+1+Um+2 . . +Um+r (where 7 is any number how- ever large) can be made as small as we please; or, as this may also be stated, the sum of the infinite series Un+1+Um+2+... can be made as small as we please. If the terms are all positive (but not otherwise), we may take, instead of the entire series ¢m+4i+%m+o+.., any set of terms (not of necessity consecutive terms) subse- quent to wm; that is, for a convergent series of positive terms the sum of any set of terms subsequent to wm can, by taking m sufficiently large, be made as small as we please.~~

~~13. It follows that in a convergent series of positive terms the terms may be grouped together in any manner so as to form a finite number of partial series which will be each of them convergent, and such that the sum of their sums will be the sum of the given series. For instance, if the given series be uw) +, %,..., then the two series Uy + Ug t+Uy+... and u,u,.. will each be convergent and the sum of their sums will be the sum of the original series.~~

~~14. Obviously the conclusion does not hold good in general for series of positive and negative terms: for in- 7 it. . 1s convergent, but the ae § i ¥ two series Lroeet. . and a te ae~~

~~stance, the series 1 5+~~

~~. are each diver-~~

~~gent, and thus without a sum. In order that the conclusion may be applicable to a series of positive and negative terms the series must be "absolutely convergent," that is, it must be convergent when all the terms are made posi- tive. This implies that the positive terms taken by them- selves are a convergent series, and also that the negative terms taken by themselves are a convergent series. It is hardly necessary to remark that a convergent series of positive terms is absolutely convergent. The question of the convergency or divergency of a series of positive and negative terms is of less importance than the question whether it is or is not absolutely convergent. But in this latter question we regard the terms as all positive, and the question in effect relates to series containing positive terms only.~~

~~15. Consider, then, a series of positive terms u)+2 u,..; if they are increasing—that is, if in the limit Un+1/Un be greater than 1—the series is divergent, but if less than 1 the series is convergent. This may be called a first criterion ; but there is the doubtful case where the limit =1. A second criterion was given by Cauchy and Raabe ; but there is here again a doubtful case when the limit considered =1, A succession of criteria was estab- lished by De Morgan, which it seems proper to give in the original form; but the equivalent criteria established by Bertrand are somewhat more convenient. In what follows lx is for shortness written to denote the~~

~~logarithm of w, no matter to what base. De Morgan's form is as follows : —~~

~~Writing w= "; ny put p)= ee 3; lf for ~=o0 the limit a, of p, be greater than 1 the series is convergent, but if less than 1 it is divergent. If the limit a,=1, seek for the limit of p,, = (py) — 1)lw; if this limit a, be greater than 1 the series is convergent, but if less than 1 it is divergent. If the limit a,=1, seek for the limit p,,=(p, — 1l)lzx; if this limit a, be greater than 1 the series is convergent, but if less than 1 it is divergent. And so on indefinitely.~~

~~ak 1 16. Bertrand's form is: —TIf, in the limit for n=, i} ln be negative or less than 1 the series is divergent, but if _ , ro. greater than 1 it is convergent. If it =1, then if r—/, lin nN~~

~~be negative or less than 1 the series is divergent, but if~~

~~SERIES~~

~~1a ' of 5 greater than 1 itisconvergent. Ifit =1, then if/ ae llln~~

~~be negative or less than 1 the series is divergent, but if —~~

~~greater than 1 it is convergent. And so on indefinitely, The last-mentioned criteria follow at once from the~~

~~theorem that the several series having the general terms~~

~~i, 2 1 1 .~~

~~n® nln" nln(lin)® niniin(lln)® ** respectively are each~~

~~of them convergent if a be greater than 1, but divergent~~

~~if a be negative or less than 1 or =1. In the simplest~~

~~x 1 case, series with the general term aie the theorem may be~~

~~*proved nearly in the manner in which it is shown above (cf. § 9) that the harmonic series is divergent. 17. Two or more absolutely convergent series may be*~~

~~*added together, {wy + w+. $+ {% +2 +%-.=} (Uy +%) ..; that is, the resulting series is absolutely con- vergent and has for its sum the sum of the two sums. And similarly two or more absolutely convergent series may be multiplied together {w +%,..} x {oy +0, +%..} = Ugly + (Udy + Uy) + (Ug + UY + Ug) + ..3 that is, the resulting series is absolutely convergent and has for its sum the product of the two sums. But more properly the multiplication gives rise to a doubly infinite series—*~~

~~*Ugo, Uni, UgUges-*~~

~~*UV WP, WyYy*~~

~~*—which is a kind of series which will be presently con- sidered,*~~

~~*18. But it is in the first instance proper to consider a single series extending backwards and forwards to infinity, or say a back-and-forwards infinite series …w_,+w-1 +) +%+U,...; such a series may be absolutely con- vergent, and the sum is then independent of the order of the terms, and in fact equal to the sum of the sums of the two series w)+%+%, .. and wy+w-otu_g3.. respectively. But, if not absolutely convergent, the ex- pression has no definite meaning until it is explained in what manner the terms are intended to be grouped together ; for instance, the expression may be used to denote the foregoing sum of two series, or to denote the series w+ (wu, u-1)(ug+u-2)+.. and the sum may have different values, or there may be no sum, accordingly. F-f+O+i+ 5+ .., im the former meaning the two series 0 7 ; +..and——·——=- if*~~

~~*Thus, if the series be. . —*~~

~~*are each divergent, and there is not any sum. But in the latter meaning the series is 0+0+0+.., which has a sum =0. So, if the series be taken to denote the limit of (by + ty +g. . +m) (u-1%-2… +%-m), where m, m' are each of them ultimately infinite, there may be a sum depending on the*~~

~~ratio m:m', which sum conse- quently acquires a determinate value only when this ratio is given.~~

~~19. In a singly infinite series we have a general term Un, Where " is an integer positive in the case of an ordinary series, and positive or negative in the case of a back-and- forwards series. Similarly for a doubly infinite series we have a general term wm», Where m, m are integers which may be each of them positive, and the form of the series is then~~

~~%,0 1 Yor» Mo2— "1,0 2 Ujz1> U2~~

~~or they may be each of them positive or negative. The latter is the more general supposition, and includes the former, since tm,» may=0 for m or x each or either of them negative. To put a definite meaning on the notion of a sum, we may regard m, 2 as the rectangular coordi- nates of a point in a plane; that is, if m, m are each of~~

~~SHRIES~~

~~them positive we attend only to the positive quadrant of the plane, but otherwise to the whole plane ; and we have thus a doubly infinite system or lattice-work of points. We may imagine a boundary depending on a parameter 7' which for Z'=oo is at every point thereof at an infinite distance from the origin ; for instance, the boundary may be the circle «? +y?= 7, or the four sides of a rectangle, a=+a7',y=+PT. Suppose the form is given and the value of 7', and let the sum 2Um,n be understood to denote the sum of those terms um,» which correspond to points within the boundary, then, if as 7' increases without limit the sum in question continually approaches a determinate limit (dependent, it may be, on the form of the boundary), for such form of boundary the series is said to be conver- gent, and the sum of the doubly infinite series is the afore- said limit of the sum 2vm,,. The condition of convergency may be otherwise stated: it must be possible to take 7' so large that the sum 2w,, for all terms Um, Which correspond to points outside the boundary shall be as small as we please.~~

~~It is easy to see that, if the terms wm,» be all of them positive, and the series be convergent for any particular form of boundary, it will be~~

~~*convergent for any other form of boundary, and the sum will be the same in each case. Thus, let the boundary be in the first instance the circle v+y=T'; by taking 7' sufficiently large the sum Dum, n for points outside the circle may be made as small as we please. Consider any other form of boundary—for in- stance, an ellipse of given excentricity,—and let such an ellipse be drawn including within it the circle 22+ y?= 7. Then the sum 2um,, for terms w%m,» corresponding to points outside the ellipse will be smaller than the sum for points outside the circle, and the difference of the two sums—that is, the sum for points outside the circle and inside the ellipse—will also be less than that for points outside the circle, and can thus be made as small as we please. Hence finally the sum 2wm,,, whether restricted to terms Um,n Corresponding to points inside the circle or to terms corresponding to points inside the ellipse, will have the same value, or the sum of the series is independent of the form of the boundary. Such a series, viz., a doubly infinite convergent series of positive terms, is said to be absolutely convergent; and similarly a doubly infinite series of positive and negative terms which is convergent when the terms are all taken as positive is absolutely convergent.*~~

~~*20. We have in the preceding theory the foundation of the theorem (§ 17) as to the product of two absolutely convergent series. The product is in the first instance expressed as a doubly infinite series ; and, if we sum this for the boundary «+ y= 7, this is in effect a summation of the series wv + (wv, + 2%) +.., Which is the product of the two series. It may be further remarked that, starting with the doubly infinite series and summing for the rectangular boundary x=a7, y= 87', we obtain the sum as the product of the sums of the two single series. For series not absolutely convergent the theorem is not true. A striking instance is given by Cauchy: the series 1- = ne = = i +.. is convergent and has a calcul- able sum, but it can be shown without difficulty that*~~

~~*its square, viz. the series 1 — Ba (=; + 5) Saas , ND ans 8 is divergent.*~~

~~*21. The case where the terms of a series are imaginary comes under that where they are real. Suppose the general term 18 Yn+ nt, then the series will have a sum, or will be convergent, if and only if the series having for its general term py, and the series having for its general term gn be each*~~

~~*convergent; then the sum=sum of first series +7 into sum of second series. The notion of absolute conver-*~~

~~*681*~~

~~*gence will of course apply to each of the series separately ; further, if the series having for its general term the modulus*~~

~~*Vp'n+ Gn be convergent (that is, absolutely convergent, since the terms are all positive), each of the component series will be absolutely convergent ; but the condition is not necessary for the convergence, or the absolute convergence, of the two component series respectively.*~~

~~*22. In the series thus far considered the terms are actual numbers, or are at least regarded as constant ; but we may have a series w+, u,... where the successive terms are functions of a parameter z; in particular we may have a series a) @,2 a2… arranged in powers of z. It is in view of a complete theory necessary to consider z as having the imaginary value x +iy=r(cos$+sin ¢). The two component series will then have the general terms anr" cos np and anr" sin nd respectively ; accordingly each of these series will be absolutely convergent for any value whatever of ¢, provided the series with the general term ayr" be absolutely convergent. Moreover, the series, if thus absolutely convergent for any particular value # of r, will be absolutely convergent for any smaller value of 7, that is, for any value of «+7y having a modulus not exceeding F ; or, representing as usual x+y by the point whose rect angular coordinates are x, y, the series will be absolutely con- vergent for any point whatever inside or on the circumfer- ence of the circle having the origin for centre and its radius =. The origin is of course an arbitrary point. Or, what is the same thing, instead of a series in powers of z, we may consider a series in powers of z —c (where ¢ is a given imaginary value =a+ 7). Starting from the series, we may within the aforesaid limit of absolute convergency con- sider the series as the definition of a function of the vari- able z; in particular the series may be absolutely conver- gent for every finite value of the modulus, and we have then a function defined for every finite value whatever 2+ iy of the variable. Conversely, starting from a given function of the variable, we may inquire under what conditions it admits of expansion in a series of powers of z(or z—c), and seek to determine the*~~

~~expansion of the function in a series of this form. But in all this, however, we are tra- velling out of the theory of series into the general theory of functions.~~

~~23. Considering the modulusr asa given quantityand the several powers of r as included in the coefficients, the com- ponent series are of the forms ay+a,cos $+a,cos 26+.. and a,sin¢+a,sin2¢ +. . respectively. The theory of these trigonometrical or multiple sine and cosine series, and of the development, under proper conditions, of an arbitrary function in series of these forms, constitutes an important and interesting branch of analysis.~~

~~24, In the case of a real variable z, we may have a series dy +a,2+a2?.., where the series a) a@,,.. is a diver- gent series of decreasing positive terms (or as a limiting case where this series is 1+1+1..). For a value of z inferior but indefinitely near to 1, say z=(1-€), where « is indefinitely small and positive, the series will be convergent and havea determinate sum ¢(z), and we may write ¢(+ 1) to denote the limit of ¢(+(1—«)) as ¢ diminishes to zero ; but unless the series be convergent for the value z= +1~~

~~it cannot for this value have a sum, nor consequently a~~

~~2~~

~~sum =¢(1). For instance, let the series be z _ +5 oe~~

~~which for values of z between the limits +1 (both limits excluded) = — log(1—z). For z= +1 the series is divergent and has no sum; but for z=1- —e as ¢ dimi-~~

~~9 il nishes to zero we have — log ¢ and (1—e)+5(1-€«)*..., each positive and increasing without limit; for z= —1~~

~~the series 1 <545 == .. is convergent, and we have at XXI. — 86~~

~~682~~

~~the limit log 2=1- s+ ; 5 … As @ second example,~~

~~consider the series 1+2+22.., which for values of z be- _ — i 1~~

~~tween the limits +1 (both limits excluded) a For~~

~~z= 1, the series is divergent and has no sum; but for — iI z=] — e as e diminishes to zero we have z and 1(1 — e)~~

~~?.., each positive and increasing without limit ; for z= —1 the series is divergent and las no sum; ‘ 1 , the equation = —~=1(1- e)(1— e)?... is true for any positive value of « however small, but not for the value <«=0. The following memoirs and works may be consulted : — Cauchy,~~

~~Cours d’ Analyse de UEcole Polytechnique — part i., Analyse Algébrique, 8vo, Paris, 1821; Abel, “Untersuchungen tiber die~~

~~ae oe ,»’ in Crelle’s Jowrn. de Math., vol. i.~~

~~Reihe 1 7a — 1 3~~

~~(1826) pp. 211-239, and Gwvres (French trans.), vol.i.; De Morgan, Treatise on the Differential and Integral Caleulus, 8vo, London, 1842; Id., ‘On Divergent Series and various Points of Analysis conuected with them” (1844), in Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. viii. (1849), and other memoirs in Camb. Phil. Trans. ; Bertrand, “Régles sur la Convergence des Séries,” in Liowv. Jowrn. de Math., vol. vil. (1842) pp. 85-54; Cayley, “On the Inverse Elliptic Functions,” Camb. Math. Jowrn., vol. iv. (1845) pp. 257-277, and “Mémoire sur les Fonctions doublement périodiques,” in Liowv. Journ. de Math., vol. x. (1845) pp. 385-420 (as to the boundary for a doubly infinite series); Riemann, “Ueber die Darstellbarkeit einer Function durch eine trigonometrische Reihe,” in Gétt. Abh., vol. xiii. (1854), and Werke, Leipsic, 1876, pp. 213-253 (contains an account of preceding researches by Euler, D’Alembert, Fourier, Lejeune-Dirichlet, &c.); Catalan, Traité Elémentaire des Séries, 8vo, Paris, 1860; Boole, Z’reatise on the Caleulus of Finite Differ- enees, 2d cd. by Moulton, 8vo, London, 1872. (A. C.)~~

~~*SERINGAPATAM, formerly the capital of Mysore, India, is situated on an island of the same name in the Kaveri (Cauvery) river in 12° 25’ 33” N, lat. and 76° 43’ 8’ E. long. It is chiefly noted for its fortress, which figured so prominently in Indian history at the close of the 18th century. This formidable stronghold of Tipu Sultan thrice sustained a siege from the British, but it was finally stormed in 1799; and after its capture the island was ceded to the British. The island of Seringapatam is about 3 miles in length from east to west and 1 in breadth, and yields valuable crops of rice and sugar-cane. The fort occupies the western side of the island, immediately overhanging the river. Seringapatam is said to have been founded in 1454 by a descendant of one of the local officers appointed by Ramdanuja, the Vishnuite apostle, who named it the city of Sri Ranga or Vishnu. At the eastern or lower end of the island is the Lal Bagh or “red garden,” containing the mausoleum built by Tipu Sultan for his father Hyder Ali, in which Tipu himself also lies. In 1881 the population of the town of Seringapatam was 11,734 (males 5579, females 6155).*~~

~~*SERJEANT-AT-LAW is the name given to one who holds an ancient and honourable rank at the English or Trish bar. The word is a corruption of serviens ad legem, as distinguished from apprenticius ad legem, or utter barrister, who probably originally obtained his knowledge of law by serving a kind of apprenticeship to a serjeant. When the order of serjeants was instituted is unknown, but it certainly dates from a very remote period. The authority of serjeant counters or countors (7.e., pleaders, those who frame counts in pleading) is treated in the Mirror of Justices, and they are named in 3 Edw. IL. c. 29. They may possibly have been the representatives of the conteurs mentioned in the great customary of Normandy. The position of the serjeant had become assured when Chaucer wrote. One of the characters in the Canterbury Tales is*~~

~~*“* A serjeant of the law, wary and wise, That often had y-been at the parvis.”?*~~

~~*Serjeants (except king’s serjeants) were created by writ of*~~

~~*summons under the great seal, and wore a special and dis- tinctive dress, the chief feature of which was the coif, a white lawn or silk skull-cap, now represented by a round piece of black silk at the top of the wig. They enjoyed a social precedence after knights bachelors and before companions of the Bath and other orders. In this they differed from queen's counsel, who have simply professional as distinguished from social rank. Socially the serjeant had precedence, professionally the queen's counsel, unless indeed, as was often the case, a patent of precedence was granted to the former. Till past the middle of the 19th century, a limited number of the serjeants were called "king's (queen's) serjeants." They were appointed by patent and summoned to parliament. Until 1814 the two senior king's serjeants had precedence of even the attorney- general and solicitor-general. It was the custom for serjeants on their appointment to give gold rings with mottoes to their colleagues. Down to 1845 the order en- joyed a very valuable monopoly of practice. The serjeants had the right of exclusive audience as leading counsel in the Court of Common Pleas. In 1834 a royal mandate of William IV. attempted to abolish this privilege, but in 1840 the judicial committee of the privy council declared the mandate informal and invalid. The monopoly was finally abolished in 1845 by Act of Parliament (9 and 10 Vict. c. 54). For at least 600 years the judges of the superior courts of comnion law were always serjeants. If a judge was appointed who was not a serjeant at the time of his appointment, he was formally created one immedi- ately before his elevation to the bench. By the Judicature Act, 1873, sect. 8, no person appointed a judge of the High Court of Justice or the Court of Appeal is required to take or have taken the degree of serjeant-at-law. The serjeants had their own inn of court down to a very recent date, Serjeants' Inn was formerly in two divisions, one in Fleet Street and one in Chancery Lane. In 1758 the members of the former joined the latter. In 1877 the latter was dissolved, the inn sold to one of the members, and the proceeds divided among the existing serjeants. The extinc- tion of the order is now only a question of time, no serjeant having been created since 1868. It is, however, still with- in the discretion of the crown to create fresh serjeants if ever it should be deemed advisable to do so. In Ireland the order still exists. The three serjeants at the Irish bar have precedence next after the law officers of the crown.*~~

~~*See Serviens ad Legem, by Mr Serjeant Manning; The Order of the Coif, by Mr. Serjeant Pulling.*~~

~~*SERJEANTY, a form of tenure. See Reat Estate.*~~

~~*SERPENT, a musical instrument. See OPHICLEIDE, vol. xvii. p. 778.*~~

~~*SERPENTINE, a compact crypto-crystalline or fibrous mineral substance, occurring in rock-masses which com- monly present dark green colours, variously mottled and fancifully compared to the markings on certain serpents, whence the name "serpentine." Fora like reason it is some- times called "ophite," while Italian sculptors have termed it "ranocchia," in allusion to its resemblance to the skin of a frog. In consequence of its variegated tints, the stone is frequently cut and polished for ornamental purposes, and is hence popularly called a marble. From true marble, however, it differs in chemical composition, being esseN- tially a hydrated silicate of magnesium, usually associated with certain metallic oxides (such as those of iron, nickel, and chromium) which confer upon the stone its character- istic tints. In some localities serpentine is found in pie Ome*~~

~~*1 The parvis was the porch of old St Paul's, where each serjeant had his particular pillar at which he held interviews with his clients.*~~

~~*masses which are evidently intrusive among other rocks, while elsewhere it occurs interbedded, usually in lenticular masses, associated with gneiss and crystalline schists. It is noteworthy that the serpentine is frequently crushed and brecciated, exhibiting polished slip-faces which are sometimes striated. The surface of an exposed mass of serpentine is generally barren, whence bosses of the rock are known in the Alps as "monts morts." The origin of serpentine has been a subject of much dispute. It was pointed out by Sandberger and Tschermak that the altera- tion of olivine may give rise to this product, and pseudo- morphs of serpentine after chrysolite are well known to inineralogists. Professor Bonney and many other geo- logists regard serpentine as being generally an altered eruptive rock, due to the hydration of peridotites, such as*~~

~~*lherzolite ; probably it may also result from the decom- position of olivine-gabbro and other rocks rich in mag- nesian silicates. Augite and hornblende may become altered to serpentine. On the contrary, Dr Sterry Hunt and certain other chemical geologists believe that serpentine has generally been formed as an aqueous sediment, prob- ably precipitated by the reaction of sulphate or chloride of magnesium upon the silicate of lime or alkaline silicates derived from the disintegration of crystalline rocks and found in solution in many natural waters. Serpentine is a rock of rather limited occurrence. Its principal localities in England are Cornwall, especially in the Lizard district, where it occupies a considerable area. The famous scenery of Kynance Cove owes much of its beauty to the vivid colours and brilliant surface of the serpentine. The rock is worked into vases, columns, mantelpieces, &c., and of late years has been used to a limited extent for the deco- ration of shop-fronts in London. The beauty of the Lizard rock is heightened by the white veins of steatite which traverse it, and in some cases by disseminated crystals of bastite, which glisten with metallic lustre. Much of the Lizard serpentine is of rich red and brown colour. Green serpentine is found near Holyhead in Anglesea, A singu- larly beautiful variety of mottled red and green tints, with veins of steatite, occurs near Portsoy in Banffshire, Scot- land. It is also found with chrome iron ore in the Shetland Islands. The green serpentine of Galway occurs in inti- mate association with crystalline limestone, forming the rock knownas "'ophicalcite" or "serpentinous marble." Such an association is by no means uncommon ; but, though the beauty of the serpentine may thus be enhanced, its dura- bility seems to be impaired. On exposure to the weather the carbonate of calcium decomposes more readily than the silicate of magnesium, and hence the stone soon presents a rough eroded surface. The Galway rock comes into the market under the name of "Irish green" or " Connemara marble." Ophicalcites also occur in Ayrshire, Scotland, and in various parts of the Scottish Highlands; and the green pebbles found in Iona belong to this type of rock. On the Continent serpentines are largely worked at Zoblitz and at Waldheim in Saxony. The famous rock of Zéblitz, mentioned by Agricola, is known to have been wrought for between three and four centuries, and is still extensively explored by open quarries and by subterranean galleries. The rock usually presents various shades of green and brown, red being very rare; but its most in- teresting feature is the*~~

~~*frequent presence of pyrope, or Bohemian garnet, which occurs scattered through the rock in dark red grains, that decompose on weathering to a green chloritic product. Very little of the Zoblitz serpentine comes to England, but it is common throughout Germany, and a good deal is sent to Russia and even to the United States. It has been used in the construction of the mauso- leum of Prince Albert at Frogmore, and for Abraham Lin- coln's monument at Springfield, Illinois. The best known*~~

~~*of the Italian serpentines is the "verde Prato," which has been quarried for centuries at Monteferrato, near Prato in Tuscany. According to Capacci this serpentine is probably of Eocene age. It has been largely used as a decorative stone in ecclesiastical architecture in Prato, Pistoia, and Florence. A good deal of serpentine is found near Genoa and Levanto. The "verde di Pegli" is ob- tained from Pegli, not far from Genoa, while the "verde di Genova" is a brecciated serpentinous limestone from Pietra Lavezzara. Serpentine also occurs at various other points of the Apennines, in Elba, and in Corsica. The term "ophiolite" has been vaguely used to include not only serpentines but many of the rocks associated with the Italian serpentines. In like manner the term " gabbro," derived from a locality near Leghorn, was at one time used as a general name for serpentine and its associates, though now usually restricted to a rock composed essentially of plagioclase and diallage. It is notable that this true gab- bro is often found in company with serpentine.*~~

~~*Serpentine is found in numerous localities in the Alps and in France. An elegant variety is quarried at Epinal in the Vosges, and a beautiful ophicalcite is worked at St Véran and Maurins, in the department of Hautes-Alpes. The serpentine of the Ronda Mountains in Spain has been described by Mr J. Macpherson. In North America serpentine is so extensively distributed that only a few localities can be mentioned. It is found at Syracuse in New York ; on Manhattan and Staten Islands; at Hobo- ken in New Jersey ; at Newport, Rhode Island; at New- buryport, Massachusetts ; at Westchester, Chester county, and at Texas, Lancaster county, in Pennsylvania. It also occurs between Clear Lake and New Idrea in California. A fine ophicalcite has been obtained from near*~~

~~*Milford and New Haven in Connecticut, and a beautiful variety has been worked at Port Henry, Essex county, New York (Dana). The Canadian eozoon occurs in a serpentinous limestone.*~~

~~*See Groocy, vol. x. pp. 228, 282; MARBLE, vol. xv. p. 528 ; and Minera.ocy, vol. xvi. p. 414. The literature of the Italian and Saxon serpentines is rather voluminous. Of recent English writings on serpentine reference may be made to Bonney, in Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., London, xxxiii. p. 884, xxxiv. p. 769, xxxvil. p. 40, xxxix. p. 21, and in Geol. Mag., [2] vi. p. 362, [3] i. p. 406; and to Collins, Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., xl. p. 458, and Geol. Mag., [3] ii. p. 298. Sterry Hunt has written an elaborate paper in Proc. Roy. Soc. Canada, 1883, sect. iv. pp. 165-215. See also Teall, British Petrography, 1886, and Becker, in Amer. Journ. of Science, May 1886. (F. W. R*.)*~~

~~*SERPENTS. See Snaxkzs.*~~

~~*SERPUKHOFF, a district town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Moscow, 61 miles south of the city of Moscow, with which it is connected by rail. Built on high cliffs on both banks of the river Nara, 3 miles above its junction with the Oka, Serpukhoff has of late become an important manufacturing and conmercial town. The aggregate pro- duction of its manufactories (cotton and woollen stuffs, paper, leather), which employ about 4000 hands, in 1880 was valued at about £300,000. The surrounding district has several large cotton and woollen factories, with a yearly output worth about £1,000,000. Petty trades are also much developed in the neighbourhood,—textile fabrics, furniture, and earthenware and porcelain being produced by the peasantry. The manufactured goods of Serpukhoff are sent—mostly by rail—to the fairs of Nijni- Novgorod and the Ukraine, while large amounts of grain, hemp, and timber, brought from the east on the Oka, are discharged at Serpukhoff and sent on to Moscow and St Petersburg. The goods traffic by rail and river showed in 1880 an aggregate of 5,400,000 cwts. (exclusive of timber floated down the Oka). Notwithstanding its recent prosperity and the sums bequeathed to the municipality by wealthy merchants, Serpukhoff improves but slowly. The cathedral (1380) was rebuilt in the 18th century; of*~~

~~the old fortress, situated on a promontory formed by a bend of the Nara, a few heaps of stones are the only remains. The population in 1884 was 22,420.~~

~~Serpukhoff is one of the oldest towns of the principality of~~

~~Moscow; it is mentioned in the will of Ivan Daislovich (1328), at which time it was a nearly independent principality under the protectorate of Moscow. Its fortress, protecting Moscow on the south, was often attacked by the Tatars ; Toktamish plundered it in 1382, and the Lithuanian prince Svidrigaito in 1410. In 1556 the town was strongly fortified, so that fifteen years later it was able to resist the Mongol invasion. Its commercial importance dates from the 18th century.~~

~~SERTORIUS, Quintus. The life and career of the Roman Sertorius, a man of remarkable genius both as a general and as a statesman, may be said to be comprised between the years 105 and 72 B.c., a period of civil war and revolution in the Roman world, when every man of any mark had to be an adherent either of Sulla or of Marius. Sertorius, who came from a little Sabine village under the Apennines and was a self-made man, attached himself to the party of the latter, and served under him in 102 B.c. at the great battle of Aque Sextie (Aix), in which the Teutones were decisively defeated. Three years before he had witnessed the rout of a Roman army by the Cimbri on the Rhone. In 97 he was serving in Spain and thus had a good opportunity of making himself acquainted with the country with which his fame is chiefly associated. In 91 he was queestor in Cisalpine Gaul, and on his return to Rome he met with such a hearty welcome that he would have been elected to the tribuneship but for the decided opposition of Sulla. He now declared himself for Marius and the democratic party, though of Marius himself as a man he had the worst opinion. He must have been a con- senting party to those hideous massacres of Marius and Cinna in 87, though he seenis to have done what he could to mitigate their horrors by putting a stop to the outrages perpetrated by the scum of Marius's soldiery. On Sulla's return from the East and the war with Mithradates in 83, Sertorius left Rome for Spain, where he represented the Marian or democratic party, but, it would~~

~~appear, without receiving any definite commission or appointment. Here he passed the remainder of his life, with the exception of some cruises in the Mediterranean in conjunction with Cilician pirates, and of a campaign in Mauretania, in which he defeated one of Sulla's generals and captured Tingis (Tangier). This success recommended him to the Spaniards, more particularly to the Lusitanian tribes in the west, whom Roman generals and governors of Sulla's party had plun- dered and oppressed. Brave and kindly and gifted with a rough telling eloquence, Sertorius was just the man to impress Spaniards favourably, and the native militia, which he organized, spoke of him as the "new Hannibal." Many Roman refugees and deserters joined him, and with these and his Spanish volunteers he completely defeated one of Sulla's generals and drove Metellus, who had been specially sent against him from Rome, out of Lusitania, or Further Spain as the Romans called it. Sertorius owed much of his success to his statesmanlike ability, and it seems that he aspired to be in Spain what the great Agricola after- wards was in Britain. His object was to build upa stable government in the country with the consent and co-opera- tion of the people, whom he wished to civilize after the Latin model. He established a senate of 300 members, drawn from Roman emigrants, with probably a sprinkling of the best Spaniards. For the children of the chief native families he provided a school at Osca (Huesca), where they received a Roman education and even adopted the dress of Roman youths. Strict and severe as he was with his soldiers, he was particularly considerate to the people generally and made their burdens as light as possible. It seems clear that he had a peculiar gift for evoking the~~

~~enthusiasm of rude tribes, and we can well understand how the famous white fawn, which was his constant com- panion, may have promoted his popularity. For six years he may be said to have really ruled Spain. In 77 he was~~

~~joined by Perpenna, one of the officers of Lepidus, from~~

~~*Rome, with a following of Roman nobles, and in the same year the great Pompey, then quite a young man and merely a knight, was sent by the senate to take the command in Spain and with Metellus to crush Sertorius. The war was waged with varying success, but on the whole Sertorius proved himself more than a match for his adversaries, utterly defeating their united forces on one occasion near Saguntum. Pompey wrote to Rome for reinforcements, without which, he said, he and Metellus would be driven out of Spain. Rome's position was very critical, the more so as Sertorius was in league with the pirates in the Mediterranean, was negotiating with the formidable Mithradates, and was in communication with the insurgent slaves in Italy. But owing to jealousies among the Roman officers who served under him and the Spaniards of higher rank he could not maintain his position, and his influence over the native tribes slipped away from him, though he won vic. tories to the last. In 72 he was assassinated ata banquet, Perpenna, it seems, being the chief instigator of the deed. What we know of Sertorius is mainly drawn from Plutarch's Lives, from Appian, and from the fragments of Sallust. There is a good life of him by G. Long in Smith's Class. Dict. SERVANT. See Master anp SERVANT. SERVETUS, Micuast, or MicureiServero (1511-1 553), physician and polemic, was born in 1511! at Tudela in Navarre (according to his Vienne deposition), his father being Hernando Villanueva, a notary of good family in Aragon. His surname is given by himself as Serveto in his earliest works, "per Michaelem Serueto, alias Reues." Later he Latinized it into Servetus, and even when writing in French (1553) he signs " Michel Seruetus."2 It is not certain that he was related to his contemporary Andrés Serveto of Anifion, the Bologna jurist ; but it is probable that he was of the same family as the Spanish ecclesiastic Marco Antonio Serveto de Reves (d. 1598), born at Villanueva de Sigena in the diocese of Huesca (Latassa, Biblio- teca Nueva, 1798, i. 609). Servetus, who at Geneva makes "Villeneufve" his birthplace, fixes it in the adjoining dio- cese of Lerida, in which there are three villages named Vilanova. Having apparently had his early training at the university of Saragossa, he was sent by his father to study law at Toulouse, where he first became acquainted with the Bible (1528). From 1525 he had found a patron in Juan de Quintafia (d. 1534), a Franciscan promoted in 1530 to be confessor to Charles V. In the train of Quintafia he witnessed at Bologna the coronation of Charles in February 1530,*~~

~~*visited Augsburg, and perhaps saw Luther at Coburg. The spectacle of the adoration of the pope at Bologna had strongly impressed his mind in an anti-papal direction. He left Quintajia, and, after visiting Lyons and Geneva, repaired to Cicolampadius at Basel, whence he pushed on to Bucer and Capito at Strasburg. A crude, but very original and earnest, theological essay, De Trinitatis Errort- bus, printed at Hagenau in 1531, attracted considerable attention ; Melanchthon writes "Servetum multum lego." It was followed in 1532 by a revised presentation of its argument. We next find Servetus at Lyons, in 1535, as an editor of scientific works for the printing firm of Trechsel, under the name of Michel de Villeneufve or Michael Villa- novanus, which he used without interruption till the year*~~

~~*1 This date rests upon his own testimony as to his age (both at Vienne and Geneva) and that of Calvin. An isolated passage of his Geneva testimony may be adduced in support of 1509.*~~

~~*® The form "Servet" first appears in a letter of colampadius to the senate of Basel (1531), and is never used by himself. '"Servede" is*~~

~~*an imaginary form.*~~

~~*SHAY ETUS*~~

~~*of his death. Here he found a friend in Dr Symphorien Champier (Campegius) (1472-1539), whose profession he resolved to follow. Accordingly he went (1536) to Paris, where he studied medicine under Johann Giinther, Jacques Dubois, and Jean Fernel. It was in 1536, when Calvin was on a hurried and final visit to France, that he first met Servetus at Paris, and, as he himself says, proposed to set him right in theological matters.1 As assistant to Giinther, Servetus succeeded the famous anatomist Ves- alius ; Giinther, who pays the highest tribute to his general culture, describes him as specially skilled in dissection and "vix ulli secundus" in knowledge of Galen. He gradu- ated in arts and asserts that he also graduated in medicine, published a set of lectures on syrups (the most popular of his works), lectured on geometry and astrology, and de- fended by counsel a suit brought against him (March 1538) by the medical faculty on the ground of his astrological lectures. In June 1538*~~

~~we find him at the university of Louvain (where he was inscribed on the roll of students as Michael Villanova on 14th December 1537), studying theology and Hebrew, explaining to his father (then resi- dent at San Gil) his removal from Paris, early in Septem- ber 1537, as a consequence of the death (8th August) of his master (el sefior mi maestro), and proposing to return to Paris as soon as peace was proclaimed. After this he practised inedicine for a short time at Avignon, and for a longer period at Charlieu (where he contemplated marriage, but was deterred by a physical impediment). In Septem- ber 1540 he entered himself for further study in the medi- eal school at Montpellier. In 1541 he resumed editorial work for the Lyons booksellers, to whose neighbourhood he had returned. Among the attendants upon his Paris lectures had been a distinguished ecclesiastic, Pierre Paulmier, since 1528 archbishop of Vienne. Paulmier invited Servetus to Vienne as his confidential physician. He acted in this capacity for twelve years (1541-53), and made money. Outwardly he conformed to Roman Catholic worship ; in private he pur- sued his theological speculations. It is probable that in 1541 he had been rebaptized. He opened a correspondence with Calvin, and late in 1545, or very early in 1546, he forwarded to Calvin the manuscript of a revised and en- larged edition of his theological tracts, and expressed a wish to visit him at Geneva. Calvin replied on 23d Febru- ary 1546, in a letter which is lost, but in which, he says, he expressed himself "plus durement que ma coustume ne porte." On the same day he wrote to Guillaume Farel, "si venerit, modo valeat mea autoritas, vivum exire nunquam patiar," and to Pierre Viret in the same terms. Servetus had fair warning that if he went to Geneva it was at his peril. In his letter to Abel Pouppin (in or about 1547), after stating that he had failed to recover his manuscript from Calvin, he says, " mihi ob eam rem mori- endum esse certo scio." The volume of theological tracts, again recast, was declined by a Basel publisher in April 1552, but an edition of 1000 copies was secretly printed at Vienne. It was finished on 3d January 1553; the bulk of the impression was privately consigned to Lyons and Frankfort, for the Easter market. But on 26th February a letter, enclosing a sheet of the printed book, and revealing the secret of its authorship, was written from Geneva by Guillaume H. C. de Trye, formerly échevin of Lyons, to his cousin Antoine Arneys in that city. This letter bears no sign of dictation by Calvin; the history of De Trye shows that 1t may have been instigated~~

~~*in part by personal ill-feeling towards the Lyons booksellers. But Calvin furnished (reluctantly, according to De Trye) the samples of Servetus's handwriting enclosed in a subsequent letter, for the express purpose of securing his conviction. 1 Beza incorrectly makes Servetus the challenger and the date 1534.*~~

~~*685*~~

~~*The inquisitor-general at Lyons, Matthieu Ory, set to work on 12th March ; Servetus was interrogated on 16th March and arrested on 4th April. Under examination his defence was that, in correspondence with Calvin, he had assumed the character of Servetus for purposes of dis- cussion. At 4 a.m. on 7th April he escaped from his prison, evidently by connivance. He took the road for Spain, but turned back in fear of arrest. How he spent the next four months is not known; Calvin believed he was wandering in Italy; the idea that he lay concealed in Geneva was first started by Spon. On Saturday 12th August he rode into Louyset, a village on the French side of Geneva. Next morning he walked into Geneva, and ordered a boat, to take him towards Zurich on his way for Naples. He was recognized that day at church and immediately arrested. The process against him lasted from 14th August to 26th October, when sentence " estre brusle tout vyfz" was passed, and carried out next day at Champel (27th October 1553). Calvin would have had him beheaded. Meanwhile the civil tribunal at Vienne had ordered (17th June) that he be fined and burned alive ; the sentence of the ecclesiastical tribunal at Vienne was delayed till 23d December. Jacques Charmier, a priest in Servetus's confidence, was condemned to three years' imprisonment at Vienne. The life of Servetus is full of puzzles ; his writings give the impression not only of quick genius but also of transparent sincerity ; they throw, how- ever, little light on the mysterious parts of his story. Don Pedro Gonzalez de Velasco (see his Miguel Servet, 1880) has placed a statue of Servetus in the porch of the Insti- tuto Antropologico at Madrid.*~~

~~*The opinions of Servetus, marked by strong individuality, are not easily described in the terms of any current system. His ana- baptism, with his denial of the tripersonality of the Godhead and of the eternity of the Son, made his views abhorrent to Catholics and Protestants alike; while his*~~

~~*intense Biblicism, his passionate devotion to the person of Christ, and the essentially Christocentric character of his view of the universe give him an almost unique place in the history of religious thought. He is sometimes classed with the Arians ; but he endorses in his own way the homoousian formula, and speaks contemptuously of Arius as "Christi glorie incapacissimus." He has had many critics, some apologists (e.g., Postel and Lincurius), and few followers. The fifteen condemnatory clauses, introducing the sentence of Servetus at Geneva, set forth in detail that he had been found guilty of heresies, expressed in blasphemous language, against the true foundation of the Christian religion. It is curious that one instance of his injurious language is his employment of the term "trinitaires" to denote "ceux qui croyent en la Trinite." No law, current in Geneva, has ever been adduced as enacting the capital sentence. Claude Rigot, the pro- cureur-général, examined Servetus with a view to show that his legal education must have familiarized him with the provisions of the code of Justinian to this effect ; but in 1535 all the old laws on the subject of religion had been set aside at Geneva ; the only civil penalty for religion, retained by the edicts of 1548, was banish- ment. The Swiss churches, while agreeing to condemn Servetus, give no hint of capital punishment in their letters of advice. The extinct law seems to have been arbitrarily revived for the occasion. A valuable controversy followed, on the question of executing here- tics, in which Beza (for), Mino Celsi (against), and several caustic anonymous writers took part.*~~

~~*The works of Servetus are not so rare as is often supposed, but the most common are his earliest, in which he approaches nearer to the position afterwards taken by F. Socinus than he does in his more matured publications. The following is an enumeration of them in the order of their appearance. (1) De T'rinitatis Erroribus Libri Septem, 1531, 16mo. (2) Dialogorwm de Trinitate Libri Duo, 1532, 16mo; four chapters are added on justification and kindred topics. These two books have been twice reprinted and manuscript copies are cominon ; a Dutch version, by Reynier Telle, was pub- lished in 1620. (8) Claudit Ptolomxi Alcxandrini Geographiex Enarrationis Libri Octo: ex Bilibaldi Pirekheymeri translatione, sed ad Grea et prisca exemplaria a Michaele Villanovano jam primum recogniti. Adjecta insuper ab eodem seholia, &c., Lyons, (Melchior & Caspar Trechsel), 1535, fol.; 2d ed., Lyons (Hugo & Porta),*~~

~~*1541, ¢.¢., 1542; printed by Caspar Trechsel at Vienne, fol.; on this work Tollin founds his high estimate of Servetus as a comparative geographer; the passage incriminated on his trial as attacking the authority of Moses is an extract from Lorenz Friese,*~~

~~*Plate I.*~~

~~*686*~~

~~*(4) Brevissima Apologia pro Symphoriano Campegio in Leonardum Fuchsium, 1536, 12mo; no extant copy is known; Tollin has reprinted an extract from it. (5) Syruporwm Universa Ratio, &c., Paris, 1537, 16mo; there were four subsequent editions, the last being Venice, 1548 (six lectures on digestion, the composition and use of syrups being treated in the fifth lecture). (6) Jn quendam Mediewm Apologetica Disceptatio pro Astrologia, Paris, 1538, 16mo ; reprinted, Berlin, 1880; the medieus is Jean Tagault, who had in- terrupted the lectures of Servetus on astronomy, under which he included meteorology. (7) Biblia Sacra ex Santis Pagnini Trala- tione.. . recognita, et seholits tilustrata, &c., Lyons (Hugo a Porta), 1542, fol., remarkable for its theory of prophecy, explaincd in the preface and illustrated in the notes. (8) D'Artigny says that Servetus "fit les argumens" to a Spanish version of the Swmma of Aquinas ; but nothing is known of this or of the "divers traités de grammaire" which he translated from Latin into Spanish. (9) Christianismt Restitutio, &c., 1553, 8vo (perfect copies in Vicnna and Paris, an imperfect copy in Edinburgh), partly reprinted, London, 1723; 4to (copies in London and Paris), reprinted 1790 ; 8vo, by Rau at Nuremberg for De Murr, from the Vienna copy ; manuscript copies are rarc; the Paris library has a manuscript copy of an carlier recension of several books, including the often- quoted description of the pulmonary circulation. This work is often called anonymous, but the initials M.S. V. are given at the end and the full name at p. 199 ; the volume is not a single treatise but an assemblage of theological tracts written in a nervous and epigrammatic style and with great.command of very various learn- ing; the Apologia addressed to Mclanchthon, with which it con- cludes, is in the writer's best manner. Two treatises, Desiderius (ante 1542) and De*~~

~~*Tribus Impostoribus (1598), have been erroneously assigned to Servetus. Of his few remaining letters most will be found in Mosheim.*~~

~~*The literature relating to Servetus is very large, but the following are some of the most important pieces. Calvin's Defensio Orthodore Fidei, &¢., 1554, 4to (also in French, Décluration pour maintenir, &c., 16mo, same date), is the source of many prevalent inisconceptions respecting the opinions of Servetus and his attitude on his trial. De la Roche's Historical Account, &c., in Mem. of Lit., 1711-12 (reproduced in French, Biblioth. Angl., Amsterdam, 1717, 18mo), was followed by An Impartial History, &c., 1724, Svo (said to be by Nathaniel Hodges, a Baptist minister, afterwards knighted). Allwoerden's Historia, &e., 1728, 4to (materials furnished by Mosheim), is superseded by Mosheim's Ander- weitiger Versuch, &c., 1748, 4to, with its appendix, Newe Nachrichten, 1750, 4to, issued after the publication of the records of the Vienne trial by D'Artigny, in Nouveaux Mémoires d Hist., &c., vol. ii., 1749, 12mo. Chaufepié's valuable article in Nouv. Dict. Historique, vol. iv., 1756, fol. (translated separately by Rev. James Yair, 1771, 8vo), makes no use of Mosheim's later researches. Trechsel, in Die prot. Antitrinitarier vor F. Socin, &e., bk. 1., 1839, 8vo, uses all available materials up to date. Since then the investigations of H. Tollin (published in a series of some forty separate articles in various journals from 1874 to 1885) have thrown light on every portion of the subject. The records of the Geneva trial, first published by De la Roche, and reproduced in Rillict's Relation, &c., 1844, Svo, and elsewhere, are best given in vol. viii. (1870) of the cdition of Calvin's works by Baum, Cunitz, and Reuss; Roget, in Hist. du Peuple de Genéve, vol. iv., 1877, has a good account of both trials. The passage describing the pulmonary circulation is first noticed by W. Wotton, in Reflections upon Ancient and Mod, Learning, 1694, and has given rise to a literature of its own;—see especially Tollin's Die Entdeckung des Blutkreislaufs, &c., 1876, Hnxley, in Fortnightly Rev., February 1878; and Tollin's Kritische Bemer- kungen iiber Harvey und seine Vorgdnger, 1882. Other physiological speculations of Servetus are noted by Sigmond (The Unnoticed Theories of Servetus, 1826) ; but it has escaped Sigmond that Servetus had an idea of the composition of water and ofair. Asa thinker, Servetus is claimed on superficial grounds by Unitarians (see Wallace, Antitrin. Biog., 1850, i. 420), who have written several accounts*~~

~~of him, of which R. Wright's Apology, &c., 1807, 8vo, is the worst, and J. S. Porter's Servetus and Calvin, &¢c., 1854, Svo, perhaps the best. Saisset, in Rev. des Dewx Mondes, 1848, treats Servetus as a pantheist ; he is followed by Willis, in his Servetus and Calvin, 1877, Svo, a most unsatisfactory book (comp. Theol. Rev., April and July 1878). Tollin's Das Lehrsystem Michael Servet's, 3 vols., 1876-78, 8vo, and Piinjer's compendious De Michaelis Serveti Doctrina, &c., 1876, 8vo, are valuable digests of his opinions, from different points of view. Of Servetus's personal character the best vindication is Tollin's Characterbild Michael Servet's, 1876, Svo (in French with additions by Dardicr, Portrait Caractére, 1879, 8vo). HIs story has been dramatized by Max Ring, Die Genfer (1850), by José Echegaray, La Muerte en los Labios (1880), and_ by Albert Hamann, Servet (1881). The recent discovery at the Record Office, London, (U. 140) and the British Museum (Cotton MSS., Galba B. x.) of inter- ceepted letters from Servetus at Louvain in 1538 adds considerably to our in- formation about his family and early friends, but introduces new problems as to the details of his fitful career. (A. GO.)~~

~~SERVIA, a kingdom belonging to the Balkan peninsula of Europe, lying between Bosnia on the west and Bulgaria and Roumania on the east, and between the Turkish pro- vince of Albania on the south and the Austrian Military Frontier on the north. From Bosnia it is separated by the Drina, from Austrian and Roumanian territory by the Danube and the Save, and from Bulgaria partly by the Timok. Some parts of the southern frontier are indicated by mountains, but elsewhere there are no natural bound- aries. In shape Servia is an irregular trapezium, situated between about 42° 30' and 45° N. lat. and 19° and 22° 30' E. long. The area is about 18,760 square miles, and the population (1,667,159 in 1874) was estimated at the end of 1884 to be 1,902,419, thus giving a density of about~~

~~100 to the square mile. This low density, only about one- third of that of the United Kingdom, is explained by the nature of the surface, the inland~~

~~*position, the defective communications with the exterior, and the absence of manufacturing industries.*~~

~~*The surface is for the most part mountainous or hilly, Oro. though there are no well-defined mountain ranges of any graphy, .*~~

~~*extent. The highest summits lie near the middle of the southern frontier, where Mount Kopaonik attains the height of nearly 7000 feet. Towards the Bosnian frontier the mountains are pretty closely massed together, and some of the summits approach 4000 feet; this height is ex- ceeded on the eastern side of the country, where the moun- tains, forming a continuation of the Carpathians, are in many places more rugged and precipitous than anywhere else in the kingdom. The Rudnik Mountains, which begin immediately to the north of the Servian Morava, have their highest parts in the south and gradually sink towards the north from nearly 3000 to less than 2000 feet. Still lower are the elevations in the provinces in the extreme south acquired in 1878 under the treaty of Berlin, Asa general rule the Servian highlands consist of detached groups of mountains and conical hills with gentle slopes rising from verdant valleys, and they are mostly covered to the top with forests, chiefly of oak and beech, the higher summits in the south also with conifers. But the plains, though numerous, are of no great extent, and occur chiefly along the banks of the rivers. Apart from frontier rivers, the most important stream is the Morava, which, rising on the western slopes of the Kara Dagh, a little beyond the Servian frontier, enters the country with a north-easterly course near the extreme south-east, and then turns north-north-west and flows almost in a straight line through the heart of the kingdom to the Danube. In the upper part of its course it is known as the Bulgarian Morava, and only after receiving the Servian Morava on the left is it known as the Morava simply or as the Great Morava. The only other important tributary is the Nishava, which it receives from the right at Nish. The valleys of all these rivers, especially those of the Bulgarian and the Great Morava, and of the Nishava, contain considerable areas of level or low-lying country well suited for the growth of corn, and the low grounds along the Save and the Danube from the Drina to the Morava are also well adapted for agriculture, though for the most part devoted only to pasture. Altogether no more than one-sixth of the surface is*~~

~~*estimated to be occupied by cultivated fields and vineyards, while one-fifth is estimated to form pasture land and about an equal area woodland. Nearly one-half of the entire area is believed to be unproductive.*~~

~~*Besides the frontier streams on the north and west, the only river of any importance for navigation is the Morava, which is navigable for steamers of light draught as high as Tiupriia about 60 niles from its mouth, but its valley is important as the main highway of the country, and all the more since the introduction of railways.*~~

~~*course of construction under a convention concluded with Austria in 1881. The section common to the two systems, that from Belgrade to Nish, 152 miles in length, was opened for traffic in September 1884, and the line (76 iniles) from Nish to Vranja was completed in March 1886, but the connexion with the Turkish railway from Salonica remains to be completed. At present, in consequence of the unsatisfactory communication with the south, only about 7 or 8 per cent. of the Servian imports enter by the southern frontier, 85 per cent. coming through Austria- Hungary. In the beginning of 1886 work had been begun on only one-half of the line from Nish to Pirot, on the other system.*~~

~~*Railways Rail- both to Constantinople and to Salonica are now (1886) m %**~~

~~*Gemgy.*~~

~~*Migrals.*~~

~~*. the people.*~~

~~*BEE Y 1a*~~

~~*The geological structure of Servia is varied. In the south and west the sedimentary rocks most largely de- veloped are of ancient, pre-Carboniferous date, inter- rupted by considerable patches of granite, serpentine, and other crystalline rocks. Beyond this belt there appear in the north-west Mesozoic limestones, such as occupy so extensive an area in the north-west of the Balkan pen- insula generally, and the valleys*~~

~~*opening in that quarter to the Drina have the same desolate aspect as belongs to these rocks in the rest of that region. In the extreme north-east the crystalline schists of the Carpathians extend to the south side of the Danube, and stretch parallel to the Morava in a band along its right bank. Elsewhere east of the Morava the prevailing rocks belong to the Cretaceous series, which enters Servia from Bulgaria. The heart of the country—the Shumadia, as it is called—is mainly occupied by rocks of Tertiary age, with inter- vening patches of older strata; and the Rudnik Moun- tains are traversed by metalliferous veins of syenite. The mineral wealth of Servia is considerable and varied, though far from being adequately developed. Gold, silver, iron, and lead are said to have been worked in the time of the Romans. Heaps of ancient slag from lead mines still exist in the neighbourhood of Belgrade, and other old lead mines occur in the valley of the Toplitza. Gold dust is washed down by heavy rains in the valley of the Timok, where it is gathered by the peasants. In the syenite veins of the Rudnik Mountains ores of lead, zinc, copper, sulphur, and arsenic are present, but are not worked, and from the mines of Krupani in the north-west argentiferous lead, antimony, and other ores have been obtained. The prin- cipal mining centre east of the Morava is Maidanpek in the north, where there is a large iron-smelting establish- ment in the hands of an English company. Coal or lignite is met with in many places, including a number of points on the Servian railway. The largest deposit lies round Tiupriia, and measures about 19 miles in length by 74 in breadth. All the minerals belong to the state, but permission to work them can be obtained on payment of a moderate royalty.*~~

~~*The climate of Servia is on the whole mild, though subject to the extremes characteristic of inland Eastern countries. In summer the temperature may rise as high as 106° Fahr., while in winter it often sinks to 13° or even sometimes 20° below zero. The high-lying valleys in the south are colder than the rest of the country, not only on account of their greater elevation but also be- cause of their being exposed to the cold winds from the north and north-east. Accordingly, the chief products of the soil are such as thrive under a warm summer and are unaffected by a cold winter. Both maize and wine are grown, but the olive is excluded by the severity of the cold season.*~~

~~*Maize is the principal object of agriculture, the average annual crop being estimated at upwards of 5,000,000 bushels, wheat coming next with an average crop of less than 4,000,000 bushels. Besides cereals, flax, hemp, and tobacco are grown, but the attempts made to cultivate cotton have proved unsuccessful. The chief wine-growing locality is in the north-east round Negotin. Inefficient as are the implements and backward the methods of agriculture, grain makes up a considerable portion of the exports, owing to the scantiness of the population and the deficiency of other industries, and it is expected that this export will be greatly increased on the completion of the railway system to the southern seaports. The grain chiefly exported is wheat,—maize supplying, as among all the Slavs of the Balkan peninsula, the chief food of Hitherto live-stock has formed the largest item in the exports, sometimes amounting to over one-half. Among these pigs, which are fed in immense numbers on the mast of the forests, take the first place. Of late years their number has greatly declined, largely in consequence of American competition; but relatively to population Servia still maintains a much greater number than any other country of Europe; and the same is true of sheep, which are here relatively more than twice as numerous*~~

~~*as in Spain. Cattle also are numerous, but are reared solely as beasts of draught and for export. Bees are very generally kept,—the honey being consumed in the country, the wax exported. The rearing of silkworms is spreading, especially since cocoons and eggs have begun to be exported to Italy. Orchards are very exten- sive, and all kinds of fruit belonging to central Europe are grown in abundance,—above all, the plum, from which is distilled the favourite national spirit, slivovitza. The average annual value of the exports is a little over £1 per head of population. After live animals and grain come hides and prunes. Among the imports the chief items are sugar, salt (wholly absent in Servia), cotton goods, and other textiles. Import duties being high, a consider- able amount must always be allowed for smuggled goods. Though the great bulk of the imports enter the country by the Austrian frontier, an increasingly large proportion comes originally from beyond Austria-Hungary. Thus in 1879, of the total quantity of imports across the Austrian frontier, 76 per cent.*~~

~~*were of Austrian- Hungarian origin, in 1880 73 per cent., in 1881 65 per cent., leaving 24, 27, and 35 per cent. respectively for countries beyond. Among the latter Germany comes next after Austria-Hungary and then England. Colonial wares (sugar, coffee, &c.) are now imported cheaper by way of Hamburg than by way of Trieste.*~~

~~*The natural increase of population in Servia is pretty rapid, the Popu- annual birth-rate being among the highest in Europe, while the lation.*~~

~~*death-rate, though high, is exceeded in several other countries. During the years 1879-84 the average annual number of births was 76,962, of deaths 47,181, the excess of births over deaths 29,781, which figures compared with a total population intermediate between that at the end of 1874 and that at the end of 1884 give a birth-rate of upwards of 43 per thousand, a death-rate of less than 27 per thou- sand,.and an annual excess of births over deaths of nearly 17 per thousand. The average proportion of male to female births is 106:100. The people are mainly Serbs, though the proportions have been modified by the increase of territory under the treaty of Berlin. This territory, at one time occupied by Servians, had been to a large extent deserted by them in consequence of the oppressive Turkish yoke, and their place had been taken by Mohammedan Albanians west of the Morava and by Bulgarians in the valley of the Nishava. Most of the Albanians, however, quitted their homes at the time of annexation, and Servians are now returning to their former seats. Previous to the treaty of Berlin the principal element of the population next after the Servians consisted of Roumaniauns, of whom there were about 130,000. The Servian Church forms a branch of the Oriental Greek Church with a perfectly independent administration. The highest ecclesiastical authority is exercised by the national synod. Elementary education is in a very backward state, but recently a law has been passed to remedy this defect, by making education obligatory on all children between six and thirteen and laying the duty of providing accommodation, books, and teachers upon school districts. At Belgrade there is a high school or university with faculties of philosophy, law, and technics.*~~

~~*The agricultural population are scattered. among a great number of villages, most of which consist of single isolated homesteads, Each homestead is occupied by a group of families connected by blood and acknowledging one head, the stareshina, who is usually the patriarch of the community, but is often chosen by the rest of the members on account of his prudence and ability. IIe regulates the work and distributes the proceeds of the labour of the entire homestead, and his ruling is followed without question. The land cultivated by a family or group of families is always their own property. The buildings belonging to the homesteads are enclosed within an immense palisade, inside which a large expanse of fields is mostly — with plum, damson, and other fruit-trees, surround- ing the houses of the occupiers. In the midst of these is the house of the stareshina, which contains the common kitchen, eating hall, and family hall of the entire homestead. In this last all the members assemble in the evening for conversation and amusement, the women spinning, while the children play. The people take delight in listening to the recitation of the poetical rhapsodies in which the Servian literature is remarkably rich. The houses are mostly very small wooden structures, serving for little clse but sleeping placcs. But that of the stareshina is often of brick, and is invariably of better construction than the rest.*~~

~~*Since 6th March 1882 the government has 'been a constitutional Govern- monarchy. The legislative body is ealled the skwpshtina, and in ment.*~~

~~*1884 consisted of 178 members, three-fourths of whom are elected by the people, the remainder being nominated by the king. A new skupshtina is elected every three years. For the settlement of special questions of great moment an extraordinary skupshtina or great national assembly is elected, in which there are four times as many members, all elected, as in the ordinary sknpshtina. There is also a permanent council of state of 15 members, who have the task of drawing up proposals for legislation, hearing complaints regarding the decisions of ministers, and perforniing other functions. For administrative purposes the kingdom is divided into twenty- two circles, besides the city of Belgrade. In the budget for 1883-84 the revenue and expenditure were each estimated at nearly*~~

~~*Army.*~~

~~*Settle- ment of Serbs in Balkan pen- insula.*~~

~~*688*~~

~~*£1,500,000, and for 1884-85 at about £1,840,000. The national debt at the end of 1884 was about £7,000,000. An additional debt of about £1,000,000 was contracted during the Scrvo-Bulgarian war of 1885-86.*~~

~~*The Servian army is divided into three classes. The first class, embracing men between 25 and 380 years of age, constitutes the standing army, which numbers 18,000 on a peace footing and about 100,000 on a war footing. The first two years are served with the colours and the remainder of the term in the reserve. The second class contains men between 30 and 387 who have served in the*~~

~~*standing army. The third class, which is only called out in extra -:*~~

~~*ordinary emergencies, is composed of men between 37 and 50. The total military strength of Servia for cases of emergency is estimated to be about 210,000 men.*~~

~~*The capital of Servia is Belgrade, at the junction of the Danube and the Save. It is the only town with more than 15,000 inhabit- ants. Next in size is Nish, in the territory added by the treaty of Berlin, where the valley of the Nishava opens into that of the Bulgarian Morava. The other chief towns are Kragushevatz in the centre of the Shumadia, the former capital of the country, Shabatz on the Save, Semendria on the Danube, Krushevatz, Alexinatz (the centre of the flax and hemp growing district), Ushitze, Posharevatz,*~~

~~*Vranja, and Leskovatz.*~~

~~*See Rev. W. Denton, Servia and the Servians, London, 1862 ; Kanitz, Serbien: historische-ethnographische Reisestudien, Leipsic, 1868; Balme, La Principauté de Serbie, Paris, 1880. 4 (es (eB)*~~

~~*History.*~~

~~*The original home of the Croats and Serbs, who are identical in race and language, was the country adjoining the Carpathian range. Their speech shows them to belong to the eastern division of the Slavonic family (see Stavs). The generally accepted derivation of the name Chrobat, Croat, is from the original designation of the Carpathians, Chrbet, "a ridge," an opinion supported by Schafarik and Professor Ljubi¢, author of a Croatian history. This view is rejected by Perwolf! and also by Penka,? but apparently on insuffi- cient grounds. The last-named connects the word with the same root as that from which "Slav" is derived (slu-ti, klu, kru) and makes it signify the "vassals," thosc who follow a chief. The derivation suggested by Schafarik for "Serb" is the root sz, " to produce"; thus the name would come to mean the people, just as deutsch is from diot, "people." He considers it to have been the origiual appellation of all the Slavs. This must be accepted as the best explanation hitherto given, though not altogether satisfactory. We find the name Zép8a in Ptolemy and Sirdi in Pliny.*~~

~~*The Serbs and Croats have no history till the year 638 a.p., at which period they left their original settlements and migrated into the ancient Illyricum and part of Mcesia. Whether any of this people had previously taken up their abode in the Balkan penin- sula is by no means clear, and very different opinions have been held on the subject. The most probable account is that small Slavonic colonies were settled here and there as early as the 2d and 3d centuries, consisting mainly of prisoners taken in war; and we hear of two tribes, the Karpi and the Kostoboki, who are claimed by Schafarik with good reason as Slavs. Jireéek considers that for two hundred years before the Slavs are heard of in history south of the Danube they were scattered as colonists in Mesia, Thrace, Dardania, and Macedonia. Professor Drinoff finds mention of Slav- onic colonies in Thrace in the Ltinerartum Hierosolymitanum and Itinerarium Antonini; and, even if we do not give a complete adhesion to his views, there are many names of towns in Procopius (in the first half of the 6th century) which are undoubtedly Slavonic. The traces of the original inhabitants have disappeared, except in so far as the Albanians represent these peoples. It is generally believed that the word meropch or neropch, signifying a slave, found. in the Zakonik of Duslhian, refers to the Noropians, an old Thracian tribe.*~~

~~*Our authority for the Servian migration in the middle of the 7th century is the emperor Constantine Porphyrogenitus. According to the story, five Croatian princes, the brothers Clucas, Lobelus, Cosentzis, Muchlo, and Chrobatns, and two sisters, Tuga and Buga (i.e, Calamity and Prosperity), came at this period from northern or Belo-Chrobatia, as it was called, the original home of the Croats in the Carpathian Mouutains. The descendants of their people who remained in the territory are lost among the surrounding popula- tion. The services of these Croats were made use of by the emperor Heraclius, and they became a barrier against the Avars, whom they drove out of the country in which they settled. The territory which they occupied was divided by them into eleven Zupas or geuen. The people who inhabited the western portion kept the name of Croat, those in the eastern were called Serbs. We must now leave the Croats, as in this article we have only to do with the Serbs properly so called. The Croatian branch of the family, after being ruled by petty bans (a word said to be of Avar origin), was annexed to the kingdom of Hungary, and after the 16th century followed the fortunes of the house of Hapsburg.*~~

~~*1 Archiv fiir slavische Philologie, vii. 591. 2 Origines Ariace, p. 128, Vienna, 1883.*~~

~~*PkRY TF &*~~

~~*For five centuries after their arrival in their new territories we Early hear nothing of the Serbs save an occasional very brief mention in oomeal The native annalists do not begin earlier With :*~~

~~*Serbs, the Greeks,*~~

~~*the Byzantine chroniclers. than the 12th century. As in Croatia so among the smaller Zupans' gradually became merged into two or three great ones. The head Zupan of Servia, who resided in Desnica, called by Constantine Destinica, was at first the suzerain of all the other Servian Zupans, with the exception of the Pagani, concerning whose Latin name the emperor Constantine makes the very strange remark — Kal yap Hayavol xara riy Tov XKddBwv yAdooay &Barrioror éppn- vevovrat. After the land was harried by the Bulgarians we find the great Zupan of Dioclea (Doclea) supreme; he acquired the title of king, and received his*~~

~~*insignia from the pope. Finally, Nemanya, the descendant of a zupan family of Dioclea, founded a new dynasty in Rasa (mod, Novibazar), and united Servia and Bosnia into one strong empire. The names of the earlier princes, who are insignifi- cant and do not help us to follow the thread of Servian history, need not be mentioned. We find them sometimes tributary to the Greek emperors and sometimes independent. They appear, more- over, to have been engaged in constant wars with the Bulgarians, About 1015 Vladimir was reigning; but he was assassinated by the Bulgarian czar John, who got possession of Servia, but died two years afterwards on an expedition against the Greeks. To. gether with Bulgaria, Servia fell under the power of the emperor, and its affairs were managed by a Greek governor. Stephen Voyislaff made an insurrection in 1040, expelled the governor, Theophilus Eroticus, and defeated the Greeks in 1048. His son and successor, Michael (1050-80), at first lived in peace with the Byzantines, but afterwards entered into diplomatic relations with the West, took the title of king (rex), and received his insignia from the pope (1078). Heconquered Durazzo (Dra¢) in 1079, and reigned thirty years. His son, Constantine Bodin, subjugated the Zupans of Bosnia and Rasa, About 1122 Ourosh, surnamed Bela, zupan of Rasa, ascended the throne. From this time dates the power of Servia. His wife Anna was a German princess. Omitting three insignificant rulers, we come to the famous Stephen Nemanya (1159- 95), whose life has been written by his son Sava. He reigned thirty-six years, and was many times successful against the Greeks, but was not able to take Ragusa. He abandoned the government to his son Stephen in 1195 and became a monk under the name of Simeon, dying in 1200 in the monastery of Chilander on Mount Athos. Stephen was crowned by his youngest brother Sava, first archbishop of the country, with a crown which had been conse- crated by the pope; hence his title Prvovyenchani, "the first- crowned,'—that is to say of the new dynasty, for the Zupans of Dioclea were already kings. He died in 1224 and was followed by his sons Radoslaff and Vladislaff in succession. The latter made an offensive and defensive alliance with Ragusa. He employed Germans to work the Servian mines; and we find them repeatedly mentioned in Servian documents under the name of Saxons, especi- ally in the Zakonik of Stephen Dushan. No traces, however, can be found of them at the present day. Vladislaff's court is said to have been very luxurious. He died childless about 1237 and was*~~

~~*succeeded by his brother Stephen Urosh, whose territories were devastated in 1241 by the Mongols. He was afterwards driven from his throne by his son Dragutin and died in 1272. The latter, however, stung by conscience, abandoned the crown to his brother Milutin and contented himself with Syrmia, where he died in 1317. The reign of Milutin was chiefly occupied with struggles against the Greeks ; he was generally successful in his campaigns. But his domestic life was unhappy: he divoreed three wives and caused his only son Stephen to . blinded from suspicion of his treachery. The operation, however, was imperfectly performed, and the youth recovered his sight. In 1814 Milutin fought on the side of the emperor Andronicus against the Turks, and in the same year forced the Ragusans to pay him tribute. After his brother Dragutin's death he seized his hereditary dominions, and recalling his son Stephen, whom he had banished to Constantinople, gave him Dioclea. In 1319 the Hungarians deprived him of Bosnia; two years later he died. His son Stephen was engaged in perpetual wars. In 1330 he defeated the Bulgarians at the brook Kamencha near Velbuzhd, when the Bulgarian czar Michael was slain. It*~~

~~*was on this occasion that his son called Stephen Dushan first Stephen In spite of the king's successes against the Dushan.*~~

~~*distinguished himself. Greeks, he was destined to close his reign in the most lamentable manner: he was imprisoned and strangled by order of his own son at Zvechan in 1336. It is from this crime that Dushan gained his surname (dushiti, "to suffocate"). Concerning this prince, we are told by the ancient chroniclers that he was gigantic in stature and terrible in appearance. He conducted thirteen campaigns against the Greeks. In 1337 he took Strumitza and subjugated all Mace- donia and Albania to Thessalonica, Kostur, and Janina, threatened Byzantium, and concluded a peace with the emperor Andronicus,*~~

~~*3 The following rules for the pronunciation of the Croatian letters will be found useful :~c=ts; é=a sound between ts and ch, something like tie in the English word "daintier" ; é=ch as in "church"; j=y as in young"; §=sh; %=zh or j in the French "jour."*~~

~~*Cos@o,*~~

~~who was shut up in Thessalonica. He now divided his kingdom into eight districts and arranged everything on the Byzantine model. He conquered the whole of Maccdonia, and caused himself to be crowned emperor of Servia, his son Urosh as king (Kral, rex), and the archbishop of the country as patriarch. In 1349, at a diet, he published his celebrated Zakonik or " Book of Laws'? (see be- low). In 1356 he began a new campaign against the Greeks, his object being to seize Constantinople, to place the Greek crown upon his head, and drive the Turks out of Europe ; but in the midst of his schemes he died at Deabolis in Albania on 18th December 1356. His son Urosh was then but nineteen years of age, and, being sickly in body and weak in mind, he was unable to struggle against the revolted governors of his provinces, some of whom wished to make themselves independent. He was killed in a conflict with one of them in 1867, who ascended the throne under the name of Vukashin. This monarch was at first successful against the Turks, now already masters of considerable portions of the Byzantine empire; but he lost the decisive battle of Tewnarus, and with it his life, in 1371. According to the chroniclers, the Serbs were surprised and many slain while sleeping. Many also were drowned in the waters of the Maritza, "and there their bones lay and were never buried." The fate of Vukashin and of his brother Goiko was uncertain. The empire of Dushan now began to fall to pieces and Servia was again without a ruler. Marco, the son of Vukashin, declared himself the successor of his father ; but the line was unpopular with the Serbs, and ata diet at Peé (Ipek) in 1374 they elected a young noble, Lazar Greblianovich, a connexion of the old princely house. He did not, however, take the title of either emperor or king, but only of knez or prince. Bosnia was separated from Servia and fell under the rule of a noble named Tvertko. Sultan Murad had already conquered the Bulgarian sovereign Shishman and now marched against Servia. On the 15th of Junc 1389 the Serbs were~~

~~Battl of completely defeated at the battle of Kosovo, the "field of black-~~

~~birds." o event has been so much celebrated in the national songs as this. Many are the lays which tell of the treachery of Vuk Brankovich and the glorious self-immolation of Milosh Obilich, who stabbed the conqueror on the battlefield. The silken shroud, embroidered with gold, with which his wife Militza covered the body of her husband is still preserved in the monastery of Vrdnik in Syrmia, and a tree which she planted is shown to travellers at~~

~~upa. According to one account Lazar was killed in the battle ; according to others he was taken prisoner and executed before the eyes ofthe dying Murad. The bones of Lazar now rest at Ravanitza on the Frushka Gorain Syrmia. We hear no more of independent~~

~~ribyry Serb princes ; the country was now tributary to Turkey, and its~~

~~rulers were styled despots. Stephen, the son of Lazar, was confirmed~~

~~. in this title by Bajazid, the successor of Murad. Militza died in~~

~~a convent in 1406. Stephen died in 1427 childless, and was suc- eeeded by George Brankovich, a man sixty years of age, whose reign was a troubled one. In 1437 he was compelled to fly to Hungary to avoid the wrath of Murad II., and did not recover his territory till Hunyadi and Scanderbeg drove back the Turks in 1444. George fell, in the ninety-first year of his age, in battle with a Hungarian magnate named Michael Szilagyi on 24th December 1457. His youngest son Lazar succeeded him after committing many crimes, but only survived his father five weeks, His widow, Helena Pale- ologus, gave the country to the popc in order to secure his assist- ance against the Turks. Upon this the sultan ravaged Servia in the most pitiless manner, burnt the churches and monasteries, and aattied off 200,000 persons into captivity. Servia became in all respects a Turkish province, although we occasionally find the empty title of "despot" borne by some of the descendants of its princes. Great numbers of the Serbs subsequently migrated to Hungary. In 1689 some thousands under the command of the despot George Brankovich entered the imperial~~

~~*(German) army. In 1691 the Servian patriarch, Arsenius Chernoycvich, led about 36,000 families to settle in various parts of Hungary, chiefly in Syrmia and Slavonia. These zadrugas, as they are called, are not families in our sense of the word, consisting of parents and children, but communities of families according to the custom still found among the Croats of the Military Frontier. The number of the emigrants at that time would probably amount to 400,000 or 500,000 persons, Others followed them in 1738 and 1788, These Serbs have kept thcir religion and language in spite of the desperate efforts of the Government to Magyarize them. The last despot of Servia was George Brankovich, who died in captivity in Austria wa Ali,*~~

~~*In consequence of the splendid victories of Prince Eugene, Austria acquired the greater part of Servia by the treaty of Posharevatz in 1718, but the Turks regained it by the peace of Belgrade in 1739. For upwards of four centuries the Serbs groaned under the Turkish yoke, until, in 1804, unable to endure the oppression of the Turkish dahis, they broke out into rebellion under George Petrovich, sur- named 7'srni, or " Black George" (in Turkish Kara). Kara George was born at Topola (Tapolja) in 1767 ; at first he merely aimed at conquering the dahis, but afterwards he attempted to drive the Turks out of Servia. This he succeeded in doing after many failures.*~~

~~*689*~~

~~*In 1813, however, they reconquered the country, and George with his adherents was compelled to fly to Austria. He returned in 1817, but was treacherously murdered by order of Milosh Obrenovich, who had now become the Servian leader.*~~

~~*all the Servian aristocracy, leaving only peasants to till the ground, feed swine (one of the great industries of the country), and pay the harach, Milosh was declared prince by the national assembly, and in 1880 secured the consent of the Porte to his enjoyment of the title with the succession reserved to his family. Turkey allowed Servia a quasi-independence, but held and garrisoned several for- tresses. Milosh had so little forgotten his Turkish training that he made himself obnoxious to his subjects by his despotic acts. He was a man of simple, even coarse habits, as many of the*~~

~~anec- dotes told of him testify. He was compelled to abdicate in 1839 in favour of his son Milan, who, however, was of too feeble a con- stitution to direct the government, and, dying soon afterwards, was succeeded by his younger brother Michael. He also abdicated in 1842 and the Serbs then elected Alexander, the son of Tsrni George, or, to give him his Servian patronymic, Karageorgevich. His rule lasted seventeen years; he was compelled to resign in 1859, and Milosh, now very old, was invited to come from Bucharest. He lived, however, only one year, dying in 1860, and left the throne to his son Michael, then aged forty, who was thus a second time elected prince of Servia. Michael was a man of refinement and had learned much during his exile. The condition of the country improved during his reign, and in 1862 he succeeded in getting the Turkish garrisons removed from Belgrade. The Moslem in- habitants have gradually withdrawn from the country, so that they are now represented by a very few families, Of the two mosques still remaining in Belgrade, one is devoted to their use, the other having been turned into a gas-work. While walking in his park, called Koshutniak or Topshidere, near Belgrade, Michael was assassinated by the emissaries of Alexander Karageorgevich on 10th June 1868. He was succeeded by his second cousin, Milan, grand- son of Yephrem, a brother of Milosh. Milan was born in 1854; he became prince of Servia in 1872. In 1875 he married a Russian lady, Natalie de Keczko. In 1878 the Serbs declared war against Turkey, but their arms were unsuccessful, and they were only saved by the intervention of Russia. By the treaty of Berlin, July 1878, the country received a large accession of territory, and the prince caused himself to be proclaimed king. Peace continued till the year 1885, and during this period the Serbs seemed to make con- siderable progress as a nation, in spite of the bitterness of political faction. In 1885, however, Servia made an ill-judged and selfish attack upon Bulgaria, which was ignominiously beaten off.~~

~~LITERATURE,~~

~~For some account of the Servian language, see SLAVS.~~

~~Under Servian literature the Dalmatian and Croatian in the limited sense of the term must be included, The latter, however, is somewhat meagre.~~

~~This literature is divided into three periods— (1) from the earliest times to the fall of Servian independence at the battle of Kosovo, 1389; (2) from the rise of the importance of Ragusa in the 15th century till its decay towards the end of the 17th ; (3) from the time of Dositei Obradovich to the present day.~~

~~First Period.—The earliest composition which has come down to Early us in the Servian or Illyrian language, to use a term in which we chroni- may include the Dalmatian Slavs, who are essentially the samc eles,~~

~~people, is the production of an unknown priest of Dioclea (Doclea), now Duklya, a heap of ruins, but formerly a city of considerable importance on the river Moratza, His title in Latin is " Anonymus Presbyter Diocleus," or in Slavonic " Pop Dukljanin." He must have lived about the middle of the 12th century, as the chronicle compiled by him extends to the year 1161. It is a tedious pro- duction, and_possesses only antiquarian interest ; it is printed by Kukuljevié Sakecinski! in the Arkiv za Povestnicu Jugoslavensku (Agram, 1851). The oldest documents of the Servian language in the narrower sense of the term are a letter of Kulin, the ban of Bosnia in 1189, and the letter of Simeon or Stephen Nemanya to the monastery of Chilander on Mount Athos. These productions are simply Paleoslavonic with a mixture of Serbisms. 'The history of early Servian literature has been thoroughly investigated by Schafarik in his Serbische Lesckirner (Pesth, 1853). We have only space to mention the more important productions. (1) The Life of St Simeon by hisson St Sabbas or Sava, the first archbishop of Servia, was written about 1210. The early manuscripts have been lost and the oldest copy known only datcs from the 17th century. Besides this work, Sava also compiled a ¢ipik or collection of statutes for the monastery of Studenitza, of which he was hegoumen or abbot. He was the founder of the celebrated Chilander monastery. (2) The History of St Simeon and St Sabbas by Dometian was com- piled in 1264, and is preserved in a manuscript of the 14th century.**

~~1 In citing the names of those members of the Servo-Croatian race who use Latin letters the original orthography is preserved.~~

~~od oe~~

~~*We have no space here to Struggles sketch the struggles of Milosh to secure the independence of Servia. for inde- He was himself of peasant origin and in his youth had been a swine- pend- herd. The Turks had contrived to kill or drive out of the country ence.*~~

~~*Servian ballads.*~~

~~*Ragusan era,*~~

~~*690*~~

~~*There is a good edition by Danichich, to whom we are indebted for a valuable lexicon of Old Servian. (8) The Rodoslof or Lives of Servian kings and archbishops, compiled by Archbishop Daniel (died 1338), contains the lives of Kings Radoslaff, Vladislatf, Urosh, Dragutin, Queen Helena, Milutin, &c. After his death the work was continued by an anonymous writer. The style of these pro- ductions is dry and tasteless. They are written in Paleoslavonic mixed with Serbisms. Hilferding has commented with great severity on their bombastic and panegyrical style, —the most com- plimentary epithets being applied to many sovereigns whose careers were stained with crimes. (4) The Life of Stephen, surnamed " De- chanski," from the monastery Dechani which he founded, written by Gregory Tzamblak, hegoumen of the same monastery. (5) In 1359 we have the Codo of Laws (Zakonik) of Stephen Dushan, which has been previously mentioned ; it is the earliest specimen of Servian legislation, and has come down in several manuscripts, being first published by Raich in his History at the close of the 18th century. Since that time other editions have appeared, the two most important being those of Miklosich and Novakovich.*~~

~~*Second Period.—To this epoch, which may be said to commence with the 15th century, belong some of the Servian chronicles, the Lyetopis Koprivnichki and others,—dry and tedious compilations ; the 15th century saw also the outburst of the literature of Ragusa (see below). The Servian ballads have obtained a European celebrity, and must have existed from very early times. Nicephorus Gregoras, who in 1325-26 came to Stephen Urosh IV. as ambassador from the Byzantine emperor Andronicus, noticed that some Serbs attached to his suite sang tragic*~~

~~songs celebrating the great exploits of their national heroes. As M. Pipin remarks in his History of Slavonic Literature, this shows the existence of a national epic among the Serbs before the battle of Kosovo. In the description of an embassy sent from Vienna to Constantinople in 1551 a certain Kuripeshich, by birth a Slovene, speaks of hearing songs sung in honour of Milosh who slew Sultan Murad. The first attempt at collecting them was made by the Franciscan monk Andrew Kati¢-Mio8ié, a Dalmatian, who died in 1785. His work was published at Venice in 1756 under the title of Razgovor Ugodni Naroda Slovinskoga (Recreations of the Slavonic People). Some of the pieces included in this volume were written by Miosi¢ himself, andl Ap made many alterations in the old ones. This, however, was quite in the spirit of the age in which he lived. We find extracts from Servian ballads in some of the Dalmatian poets of the 16th century. In 1794 they were alluded to in the Zravels of the abbé Fortis, and were finally collected by Vuk Stephanovich Karajich and published at Leipsic in 1824 under the title Narodne Srpske Pycsme (Popular Servian Songs). Some of them were afterwards translated into German by Theresa von Jacob and into English by Bowring and Lord Lytton. The versions of the last two possess but little merit. It would be impossible in a short notice like the present to discuss the contents of these remarkable ballads. To the majority of readers the cycle which treats of Knez Lazar and_his fate at the battle of Kosovo will prove the most interesting. Besides historical persons introduced in the ballads, there is the half-mythical hero Marco Kralevich, who, like the Russian Ilya Murometz, has many of the characteristics of a supernatural being. His victories, chiefly over Turks and Magyars, are narrated in the most bombastic phraseology. At last he dies in battle; but the belief prevails that he remains concealed till he shall appear on some future occasion to rescue his people from their oppressors. Almost as mysterious as the hero himself is his horse Sharatz, who was presented to him by a vila or fairy. After the death of Vuk Stephanovich (1864) a supple- mentary volume was published by his widow, which her husband had left prepared for the press Srpske Narodne Pyesme vz Herze- govine (Popular Servian Songs from Herzegovina, Vienna, 1866). A good collection of songs of the Montenegrins (Tsrnogortzi) was edited at Leipsic in 1857 by Milutinovich. There has also appeared a little volume of Servian national songs from~~

~~Bosnia, collected by Bogolub Petranovich in 1867. Since then volumes of Servian popular poetry by Rayachevich and Ristich have appeared.~~

~~During this period Slavonic literature reached a high pitch of culture in the little city of Ragusa, called in Slavonic Dubrovnik. During the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries this city, now in a state of decay, was a kind of Slavonic Athens. To the influence of Italian literature was added the culture introduced by the crowds of learned Greeks,—Chalcocondylas, Lascaris, and others,—who found refuge within its walls after the fall of Constantinople. Lyrics and the lyric drama seem to have been the general pro- ductions of the more noteworthy authors. The influence of Italian is perceptible throughout. The first writer of eminence was Hannibal Lucid, a very popular poet in his day, author of love- songs, a drama Robinja (The Female Slave), and translations pub- lished first by his son Anthony at Venice in 1556, and reprinted by Dr Gaj at Agram in 1847. A very interesting poem by this author is his Zulogy of the city of Dubrovnik (Ragusa). Another writer of considerable reputation was Nicholas Vetranić-Cavtić (1482-1576), who afterwards became a monk and lived as a hermit on one of the islands on the Dalmatian coast. He has left several~~

~~SHER YtA~~

~~plays and, besides translating the Hecuba of Euripides, wrote several mysteries, in the style of the religious plays once so popular throughout Europe ; of these the Sacrifice of Abraham is the best. His poem entitled Ztaly is remarkable for the warm affection it expresses for the country of his education. Peter Hektorevid (1486- 1572) was a rich proprietor of the island of Zara, and is worth mentioning as having shown a taste for the national poetry of his country. He has introduced some songs in his Ribange i Libarsko Prigovoranje (Fishing and a Dialogue of Fishermen). Very cele- brated in its time was the Jegjupka or Gipsy of Andrew Cubranovyić (1500-1559), who was originally a silversmith. His poem of the Gipsy is said to have been evoked in the following manner,~~

~~ubranović was on one occasion following a young lady and urging his suit when she turned round and said scornfully in Italian to her attendant, in the hearing of the poet, "Che vuole da me questo Zingaro 2?" ("What does this Gipsy want with me ?"). The despised lover took up~~

~~*the word of reproach and wrote a poem in which he introduced a Gipsy prophesying to a company of ladies their various fortunes and concluding with an expostulation to the hard-hearted beauty for her obduracy. Schafarik speaks of this piece with great enthusiasm and calls it "a truly splendid flower in the garden of the Illyrian Muses." The Russian critic Pipin supposes, with great probability, that the poem was written as a sort of masquerade for the carnival. It enjoyed considerable popularity and was frequently imitated. A similar story is said to have suggested the Dervise (Dervish) of Stjepo Guéeti¢, in which the author represents himself as a Turkish dervish. These two pieces are elegant productions in the Italian manner.*~~

~~*Nicholas Naljeskovi¢ (1510-1587) was a native of Ragusa and author of several pastoral plays in the style then so much in vogue throughout Europe. Of the same description are the productions of Marino DrŽié (1520-1580), of whom his contemporaries praised "il puro, vago, e dolce canto." Mention may also be made of Dinko Ranjina and Mauro Orbini (d. 1614). Another celebrated poet was Dominco Zlataridé (1556-1607), who, besides translating the Electva of Sophocles, produced a version of the Aminta of Tasso and has left several minor pieces. The chief of the Ragusan poets, however, was Ivan Gunduli¢ (sometimes called by his Italian name of Gondola). Very few facts are known of his life; but he died in 1658 aged fifty, having discharged several important public offices, His death, says Schafarik, was not too early for his fame but too early for literature and the glory and prosperity of his country. He himself published but little, and many of his writings perished in the earthquake in 1667, after which Ragusa never regained her former prosperity. The so-called Petrarchan school of Illyrian poetry languished after this and wasted its energy on elegant trifles. Dalmatian poets of the 18th and 19th centuries have not made any considerable figure. The Osman of Gunduli¢, on which his fame rests, is an epic in twelve books, aud was written to cele- brate the victory of the Poles under Chodkiewiez over the Turks and Tatars in 1622 at Choeim (Khotin). Schafarik praises Gundulié for the richness of his imagination, the lofty tone of his verse, and its perfectly constructed rhythm. We are willing to allow that Osman possesses considerable spirit and that the versification is melodious, but on the whole it seems a tedious poem. The short quatrains in which it is*~~

~~*written lack the true epic dignity. Leaving the Dalmatians, the only writer worthy of mention among the Serbs is George Brankovich (1645-1711), the last despot, who com- piled a HIstory of Servia till the end of the 17th Century, which has been edited by Chedomil Miyatovich, ambassador from the court of Servia to St James's (1886). From this period till the close of the 18th century there is no Servian literature : the spirit of the people seems to have been erushed out of them by Austrian persceutors on the one hand and by Turkish on the other. Till the reign of Milosh Obrenovich in the 19th eentury hardly a Servian printed book was to be seen. The works of Yuri Krizhanich, who, although a Serb, wrote in Russian, are mentioned under Russta (p. 105).*~~

~~*sThird Period (from 1750).—The spark of nationality was still burning among the Serbs, in spite of their degradation, and men were found to fan it. thorough patriot. HIe was born in Slavonia, a province of Austria inhabited by Serbs, the son of poor parents, but he had all the enthusiasm for learning that animated the Russian Lomonosoff, whom he very much resembled. Thus we find him making his way on foot from his native town to Kieff, whero he was reecived into the eeclesiastical seminary and devoted himself to theology. After spending three years at Kieff, he betook himself to Moscow. Meeting, on his return to his native country, with a cold reeeption from those whom he had expected to foster his studies, he went back to Russia, and while at Kieff resolved to write the history of the Servian nation. Knowing that the Slavonic monasteries In European Turkey contained many unpublished manuseripts (num- bers of which have sinee perished in the wars which have devastated the country or have been destroyed by the Grecks), he visited Con- stantinople and many other parts of that empire in order to eolleet materials. On his return to Austria he took np his abode at Neusatz on the Danube (also long the headquarters of Sehafarik),*~~

~~*Such a man was Raich (1720-1801), a Raich.*~~

~~*SERVIA*~~

~~*and worked at his history, which he finished in 1768, but it was not published till upwards of twenty years later. In 1772 he became a monk, and he died in 1801. The werk of Raich, though interesting as a*~~

~~*monument of learned industry, does not now possess much critical value. The style is harsh and a great deal of the ethnology (a science then in its infancy) unsound. Thus, among other strange statements, he holds the Bulgarians on the Volga to have been Slavs. After Raich we come upon two inde- fatigable Servian workers, Dositei Obradovich (1739-1811) and Vuk Stephanovich (1787-1864). The life of the former has been written by himself. He was a man of varied learning, and his eareer was marked by many curious adventures. After having visited nearly every part of Europe (including England, where he was reccived with great hospitality), Obradovich returned to Servia and became tutor to the children of Tsrni George. He was a man sprung from the people, and an indefatigable and successful labourer for national cducation. The list of his compilations and translations is considerable. Acting on the wise principle that the language as tt is spoken should be cultivated and not a jargon overloaded with archaic and supposed classical forms, he did good by destroying the influence of the Paleoslavonic among his country- men. Before his death his services to his country were recognized by his appointment as member of the senate and superintendent of national education, The mau, however, who was destined to bring the Servian language into the greatest prominence was Vuk (Wolf) Stephanovich Karajich, whose collection of songs was mentioned above. Vuk was an indefatigable scholar and patriot. Till his time the Servian language had been, so far as all foreigners were concerned, simply rudis indigestague moles. He wrote a good grammar, which has formed the basis of all published since, and to this Jacob Grimm furnished a preface. To him also we owe a Servian dictionary and a collection of tales and proverbs. His sup- posed innovations in the Servian language with regard to the rejec- tion of archaisms and the introduction of a new system of ortho- graphy raised up a host of enemies against him, so that not only was he forbidden to enter Servia but his books were excluded from the country. He died at the beginning of 1864, but permission to make use of his innovations was not given till four years afterwards.*~~

~~*A complete enumeration of the Servian and Croatian authors of the 19th century would far exceed the limits of this article. But Matthias Anthony Relkovi¢ (1732-1798) deserves mention, because he wrote in a dialect but little cultivated, viz., the Slavonian in the restricted sense, as applied to the*~~

~~*Austrian province of that name. He published in 1761 a successful satire entitled Satir ditt Divi Csovik (Satire or the Clever Man), at Dresden. A few names, each of which marks a definite feature of the literature, must suffice. Lucian Mushitzki (1777-1851), an archimandrite, afterwards bishop of Carlowitz, was highly esteemed by his countrymen as a poet. His odes are full of patriotic feeling. Yovan Hadchich (1799-1870) wrote under the rom de plwme of Milosh Svetich. For some time he was an authority in Servian literature, but ultimately his influence waned. Simeon Milutinovich, a noted writer, whose life was full of strange adventures, composed an epic poem entitled Serbianka, which describes the chief incidents of the Servian war in 1812. It was published at Leipsic in 1826. We have previously alluded to his collection of Montenegrin songs. He is also the author of a tragedy on Milosh Obilich, who slew Sultan Murad. Milutinovich,*~~

~~*hatred. The account of the cruelties committed by the Turks while collecting the harach and the conclusion, where the body of the slain Agha is brought to the hermit, are dramatically conceived.*~~

~~*The four most celebrated Servo-Croatian poets are Stanko Vraz, Servo-Stanko Vraz (1810- Croatian 1851) was by birth a Slovene; he joined, however, the Illyrian poetry.*~~

~~*Preradovi¢, Yovanovich, and Radichevich.*~~

~~*movement under Ljudevit Gaj and used the Servo-Croatian lan- guage. The attempt of Gaj to form a common literary language under the name of Illyrian by fusing the Servo-Croat and the Sloven- ish languages was not successful. Perhaps the only result, if it had been persevered in, would have been that the Slovenes would have become completely Germanized, as a pedantic literary language would not have been understood by the peasants. Besides many graceful lyrics, Vraz also published collections of national songs. Some of his shorter pieces are very elegant and havea rich Oriental colouring. Peter Preradovié (1818-1872), a native of the Military Frontier and a general in the Austrian army, is the author of many graceful lyrics, widely known throughout all Servian-speaking regiens. A*~~

~~*complete edition of his works appeared in 1873. Peter Yovanovich (born in 1801) is the author of many popular poems. But no one of the later generation of Servian authors has gained such a reputation as Branko Radichevich, who was born in the Austrian Banat in 1824, and ended his short life at Vienna in 1853. His popularity rests upon the patriotism shown in his writings and their spirited tone. Nor have the Servo-Croats lacked important workers in the fields of history and philology. Among these must be mentioned Dyuro Danichich (1825-1882), who was educated partly at Pesth and partly at Vienna, at the latter university be-coming the pupil of Miklosich. He first made himself conspicuous by espousing the cause of Vuk Stephanovich Karajich in the dispute about Servian orthography. Besides contributing valuable papers to the Glasnik, he was the author of an Old Servian dictionary of great service to students. He edited, as previously mentioned, the memorials of Old Servian literature. At the time of his death he was engaged upon a great Servo-Croatian dictionary, a work which, it is to be hoped, will be continued by some of his pupils. Ljudevit Gaj (1809-1872), who has already been mentioned, was a Croat and laboured to bring about a national unity, His services were invalu- able as an editor of the Old Dalmatian classics. Armin Pavié (still living) has written a good history of the Dalmatian drama (Historija Dubrovatke Drame, Agram, 1871). Stoyan Novakovich (born 1842), at one time minister of public instruction, besides contributing valuable articles in the Glasnik, has published an historical chres- tomathy of the Servian language and an edition of the Zakonik of Stephen Dushan. Another worker in the same field was Chedomil Miyatovich, previously mentioned. One of the inost indefatigable and patriotic of modern Croatian scholars is Ivan Kukuljevi¢ Sak- cinski, who has edited, besides many early Croatian and Servian works, an admirable Arkiv za Povestnicu Jugoslavensku (Collection of Documents for South Slavonic History), of which several volumes have appeared, — a veritable storchouse of Slavonic history, archeo- logy, and literature. He has found an excellent coadjutor in Dr Francis Raéki (born 1829), among whose works may be mentioned Pismo Slovjensko (Slavonic Writing, Agram, 1861), Odlomci tz Driavnoga prava Horvatskoga (Fragments of Croatian Law, 1861), and many excellent historical articles in the journals Pozor (The Observer) and Rad (Labour).*~~

~~*After Miklosich, the most indefatigable worker in the field of Slavonic Slavonic literature now living is the Croat Ignaz Vatroslaff Jagi¢ litera- (born 1835), formerly a professor at Berlin, who now occupies the ture chair of Slavonic philosophy at St Petersburg, in the place of gener- Sreznevski. He has published many valuable works on Slavonic ally.*~~

~~*who was a Bosnian, died in poverty in 1847. Yovan Popovich (1806-1856), a native of the Banat, was a writer of much industry and merit, and gained a considerable reputation by his plays, the subjects of which were taken from Servian history and were put*~~

~~*upon the stage with considerable effect. Without being a great dramatic writer, hc had the art of constructing pieces to which people would listen, —something like Sheridan Knowles. To this circle belongs also Yuri Maletich, author of Spomenik Lukianom Mushitzkom (A Memorial to Lucian Mushitzki), and also the Apothe- osis of Kara George. In 1847 the well-known journal Glasnik (The Messenger) was founded, which has continued to the present time and contains many valuable papers on Servian history and literature. Schafarik had previously founded at Neusatz (Novi Sad) the Matitza Srbska, an excellent society for printing Servian books.*~~

~~*The Croats have also been active in modern times. The remark- able poem, Death of the Agha Ismail Cengié, by Ivan Mazurani¢ (born in 1813), is said to be so popular among the Serbs, as stimulat- ing their hatred of the Turk, that it has been called " The Epos of Hate." Ismail was the descendant of an old Bosnian family who had turned Mussulmans to keep their estates when the country was first invaded. These renegades, as might be expected, are more fanatical than the Turks themselves. His exploits were chiefly directed against the Uskoks and the Montenegrins. The poem is composed in the same metre as that of the Servian ballads collected by Vuk. It is spirited, but has a savage air about it, engendered by the scenes described, the fierce border wars of leng hereditary*~~

~~*1 To show the opinion entertained of him in Britain it is only necessary to cite the inscription in a book presented to him by Dr Fordyce, an eminent*~~

~~London physician of the time: "Dositheo Obradovic, Serbiano, viro linguis yarlis erudito, sanctissimis moribus morato," &c.~~

~~philology, such as (in 1867) a History of Servo-Croatian Literature, also a reading-book with specimens of early Glagolitic and Cyrillic works (Priméri Starohervatskoga Jezika). He has also edited two of the oldest Slavonic codices, Marianus and Zographensis. More- over, in 1875 he founded the well-known Archiv fiir slavische Philo- logie, which he still edits with the co-operation of many Slavists. Sime Ljubi¢ is another worker in the field of Slavonic history and literature. To the excellent literary journals already mentioned may be added the Starina, published at Agram. Valuable works have been written by Balthasar BogiSvié on the house-communities of the southern Slavs and south Slavonic law generally. His labours have been made use of by Sir Henry Maine. One of the most cele- brated of living Servian poets is Matthias Ban, the author of several poems and plays, which have been very favourably received.~~

~~A few words may be added here on Montenegrin history and Monte- literature, the details of which are but scanty. On the death of negro.~~

~~Stephen Dushan, a certain prince Balsha became independent ruler of Zeta. Many fugitives betook themselves to the little retreat after the battle of Kosovo. Ivan Chernoyevich settled in Tzetinye (Cettinje) in 1485 and built a church and a monastery. In 1516 his son and successor retired to Venice, and Montenegro was governed by a national assembly and a vladika (prince bishop). The country was ruled by vladikas of various families till 1697. In that year the office became hereditary in the family of Petrovich of Negosh. Originally the ecclesiastical and civil functions were combined in~~

~~092~~

~~the person of the vladika, but they were separated on the death of Peter II. in 1851. The latter was the author of some poems in the Servian language, the most celebrated being Lowcha Mikrokozma (The Light of the Mierocosm), which appeared at Belgrade in 1845. He was succeeded by his son Daniel, first prince of Montenegro, who, dying in 1860, was followed by his nephew Nicholas, the most memor- able events of whose~~

~~reign have been the war with Turkey and the increase of his territory by the treaty of Berlin. (W. R. M.)~~

~~SERVITES (Servi Beate Marie Virginis). This reli- gious order owes its origin to Bonfiglio Monaldi, a Floren- tine, who in 1233 withdrew along with six of his comrades to the Campo Marzo near the city for prayer and ascetic exercises in honour of the Virgin. Three years afterwards they removed to Monte Senario, where their numbers were considerably increased. The order at a very early period received from Bishop Ardingus of Florence the rule of St Augustine, but did not obtain papal sanction until 1255. It rapidly spread into France, Germany, the Low Countries, Poland, and Hungary, and from Martin V. it received in 1424 the privileges of the mendicant orders. The Servite Tertiaries were founded about the same time by Giuliano Falconierl. Under Bernardino de Ricciolini arose the Hermit Servites (1593). The members of the order (Ob- servants and Conventuals) are now found chiefly in Italy, Hungary, Austria, afid Bavaria.~~

~~SERVIUS, the commentator on Virgil, is all but un- known to us, so far as personal information goes, From notices in the Saturnalia of Macrobius, where he appears as an interlocutor, we may infer that in or about 380, though still quite young, he was already distinguished as a "grammaticus," that is, as an expert in the criticism, explanation, and teaching of the classical literature of Rome. Servius therefore belongs to the latter half of the 4th and the earlier years of the 5th century, to the age of Symmachus and Claudian, of Jerome and Augustine. The allusions of Macrobius and a short letter from Sym- machus to Servius leave no doubt that the grammarian formed one of that band of cultivated men, led by Sym- machus, whose eyes were turned towards the pagan past and away from the Christian future, and who breathed into pagan culture its last transient sparks of life and vigour. The race of " grammatici" to which Servius belonged, and which had now run at Rome a course of some 500 years, had done much evil to literature, had helped to corrupt, falsify, encumber, and even in some instances by abbreviations upon abbreviations to kill out the texts on which they worked ; but on the whole they had done more good. They had helped to save what could be saved of education, culture, and history, and so had in the main contributed to the~~

~~*preservation of the ancient literature that has come down to us. Of all the "gram- matici" none bears on his front more of the virtues and fewer of the vices of the race than Servius. But it must be noted that much which passes under the name of Servius in modern editions, and in modern quotations, most certainly did not proceed from his hand. The comments on Virgil to which his name has been attached come from three different sources. One class of MSS. contains a comparatively short commentary, definitely attributed to Servius. A second class (all going back to the 10th or 11th century) presents a much expanded com- mentary, in which the first is embedded; but these MSS. differ very much in the amount and character of the addi- tions they make to the original, and none of them bear the name of Servius. The added matter is undoubtedly ancient, dating from a time but little removed from that of Servius, and is founded to a large extent on historical and antiquarian literature which is now lost. The third class of MSS., written for the most part in Italy and of late date, repeats the text of the first class, with numerous interpolated scholia of quite recent origin and little or no value.*~~

~~*SE R—SER*~~

~~*The real Servian commentary (for so we must designate the text that we find in the first class of MSS.) practically gives the only complete extant edition of a classic author written before the destruction of the empire. It is con- structed very much on the principle of a modern edition, but with very different ideas both as to the relative and the absolute value of the matters treated. Owing to the delicacy and originality of his veiled style, to the innumerable threads of ancient history, mythology, and antiquities shot through the texture of his poems, owing above all to the firm hold he early gained upon the Latin schools, Virgil had a continuous line of expounders stretching almost from his death to the destruction of the Roman government of the West. Servius built his edition in part on the extensive Virgilian literature of preceding times, much of which is known only from the fragments and facts he has preserved. The notices of Virgil's text, though seldom or never authoritative in face of the existing MSS., which go back to, or even beyond, the times of Servius, yet supply valuable information concerning the ancient recensions and textual criticism of Virgil. In the grammatical interpretation of his author's*~~

~~*language, Servius does not rise above the stiff and overwrought subtleties of that day ; while his etymo- logies, aS is natural, violate every law of sound and sense, As a literary critic the shortcomings of Servius are great, if we judge him by a modern standard, but he shines if compared with his contemporaries. In particular, he deserves credit for setting his face against the prevalent allegorical methods of exposition. But the abiding value of his work lies in his preservation of facts in Roman history, religion, antiquities, and language which but for him might have perished. Not a little of the laborious erudition of Varro and other ancient scholars, to whom time has proved unkind, has survived in Servius's pages. The older MSS. sometimes add to the name Servius that of Magister (given to other distinguished grammarians at different times); the later Italian MSS. in some cases give his name as Maurus Servius Honoratus. Besides the Virgilian commentary, we have other works of Servius,— a collection of notes on the grammar (47's) of Donatus ; a treatise on metrical endings ; the tract De Centum Meteris or Centimeter.*~~

~~*The most noted editions of the Virgilian commentary are by Fabricius (1551); P. Daniel, who first published the enlarged commentary (1600); and by Thilo and Hagen (Leipsic, 1878-84). The Essai sur Servius by E. Thomas (Paris, 1880) is an elaborate and valuable examination of all matters connected with Servius; many points are treated also by Ribbeck in his " Prolegomena"' to Virgil, and by Thilo and Hagen as above. The smaller works of Servius are printed in Keil's Grammatict Latint.*~~

~~*SERVIUS TULLIUS, the sixth king of Rome, described in one account as originally a slave, is said to have married a daughter of Tarquin, and to have gained the throne by the contrivance of Tanaquil, his mother-in-law. Another legend represented him as a soldier of fortune originally named Mastarna, from Etruria, who attached himself to Ceeles Vibenna, the founder of an Etruscan city on the Ceelian Hill. Servius included within one circuit the five separately fortified hills which were then inhabited and added two more, thus completing the "Septimontium"; the space thus inclosed he divided into four " regiones," the Suburana, Esquilina, Collina, and Palatina (see Roms, vol. xx. p. 813). For his contributions to Roman law see Roman Law, vol. xx. p. 669 sg., and for his reforms of the constitution see Roms, vol. xx. pp. 734-735, His legislation was extremely*~~

~~*distasteful to the patrician order, and his reign of forty-four years was brought to a close by a conspiracy headed by his son-in-law Tarquinius Superbus. The street in which Tullia drove her car over her father's body ever after bore the name of the " Vicus Sceleratus."*~~

~~*SES—SET*~~

~~*SESAME, the most important plant of the genus Sesamum (nat. ord. Pedalinee), is that which is used throughout India and other tropical countries for the sake of the oil expressed from its seeds. S. indicum is an herb 2 to 4 feet high, with the lower leaves on long stalks, broad, coarsely toothed or lobed. The upper leaves are opposite, lanceolate, and bear in their axils curved, tubular, two- lipped flowers, each about ?# inch long, and pinkish or yellowish in colour. The four stamens are of unequal length, with a trace of a fifth stamen, and the two-celled ovary ripens into a two-valved pod with numerous seeds, The plant has been cultivated in the tropics from time immemorial, and is supposed on philological grounds to have been disseminated from the islands of the Indian Archipelago, but at present it is not known with certainty in a wild state. The plant varies in the colour of the flower, and especially in that of the seeds, which range from light yellow or whitish to black. Sesame oil, otherwise known as gingelly or til (not to be confounded with that derived from Guizotia oleifera, known under the same vernacular name), is very largely used for the same pur- poses as olive oil, and, although less widely known by name, is commercially a much more important oil; thus, apart from the almost universal use of the oil in India, from 50 to 80 millions of kilogrammes of the seed are stated to have been introduced annually into France in 1870- 1872. The seed is also largely exported from Zanzibar and Formosa. The seeds and leaves also are used by the natives as demulcents and for other medicinal purposes. The soot obtained in burning the oil is said to constitute one of the ingredients in India or Chinese ink, The plant might be cultivated with advantage in almost all the tropical and semi-tropical colonies of Britain, but will not succeed in any part of Europe.*~~

~~*SESOSTRIS (Sécworpis, so Herodotus ; Diodorus writes Sesoosis; other forms are Sesonchosis, Sesosis, Sesothis, &c.) is according to Greek*~~

~~historians the name of a king of Egypt who conquered the whole world, even Scythia, the lands of the Ganges, and /Zthiopia, which were not subject to any of the later great empires. The conqueror in whose exploits these extravagant legends took their rise was Ramses II. (see Ecypr, vol. vii. p. 739); but the Greek accounts unite in his person all the greatest deeds of the ancient Pharaohs, and add much that is purely imagin- ary. In Manetho's lists Sesostris is identified with a much older king, Usertesen IL, perhaps because authentic tradi- tion made him the conqueror of Aithiopia (see vol. vii. p. 734). When Herodotus says that he himself saw monu- ments of Sesostris in Palestine, he has been thought to refer to the figures of Ramses II. hewn in the rocks of Nahr-al- Kalb, near Beirut, but they do not agree well with his description (Hadt., ii, 102-106), which seems to point rather to Astarte pillars (Asherim). The monuments in Ionia of which he speaks still exist in the Karabel Pass. They are not Egyptian but so-called " Hittite," z.e., probably Cappa- docian. See Wright, Empire of the Hittites, last plate.~~

~~SESSA, a town of the kingdom of Italy, province of Terra di Lavoro, situated among hills on the site of the ancient Suessa Aurunca, on a small affluent of the Gari- gliano, is 17 miles east of Gaeta and half a mile from Sant' Agata. The hill on which Sessa is situated is a mass of volcanic tufa, in which have been discovered painted chambers erroneously supposed to have belonged to a city covered by a volcanic eruption, The town contains many ancient remains, particularly the ruins of Ponte Aurunca and of an amphitheatre. It is the see of a bishop, has an interesting basilica with three naves, a gymnasium, a technical school, anda seminary. The cathedral contains inscriptions, a mosaic pavement, and a good ambo decorated with mosaics resting on columns, In the principal street~~

~~are memorial stones with inscriptions in honour of Charles V., surmounted by an old crucifix with a mosaic cross. Exclusive of the environs, the town has a population of 6130. The hills of Sessa are celebrated for thcir vines, the "Ager Falernus " of the Romans.~~

~~SESSION, Court or. See Scornann, p. 535 supra.~~

~~*SETTLE, Evxanan (1648-1723), a minor poet and playwright of the Restoration period, immortalized by the ridicule of Dryden and Pope, was born at Dunstable in 1648. He is the "Doeg" of the second part of Absalom and Achitophel, and is treated by the satirist with some- what more good-humoured contempt than his companion in the pillory— Shadwell.*~~

~~*Doeg, though without knowing how or why,*~~

~~*Made still a blundering kind of melody;*~~

~~*Spurr'd boldly on, and dash'd through thick and thin, Through sense and nonsense, never out nor in.*~~

~~*Dryden treats him as a sort of harmless fool, who ""'rhymed and rattled" along in perfect satisfaction with himself. For some time also he was taken by the public at his own valuation. At college he seems to have been regarded as a prodigy, and his juvenile verse was preferred to Dryden's. Coming to London, he began to produce tragedies. His Lmpress of Morocco (acted in 1673, when the author was twenty-five) was a signal success on the stage, and is said by Dennis to have been "the first play that was ever sold in England for two shillings, and the first that was ever printed with cuts." Puffed up by this success, Settle made haughty allusions in his preface, which excited the ire of his contemporaries; and Dryden co-operated with Crowne and Shadwell in writing sarcastic notes on Zhe Empress. Settle's next collision with Dryden was also provoked by himself. He attempted a counterblast to Dryden's great satire in Absalom Senzor,, and was contemptuously demolished in return. Settle was then comparatively a young man, his age being thirty-five, but he had touched the height of his fame, and the remain- ing forty years of his life were not so successful. Dryden mockingly said of him that his ambition was to be "the master of a puppet-show," alluding to his duties in the office of city poet, in which he was one of the successors of Lodge, Middleton, Jonson, and Quarles; and to this he was literally reduced in his old age, keeping a booth at Bartholomew Fair, where he is said to have played the part of the dragon in green leather. He died in the Charterhouse in 1723.*~~

~~*SETTLEMENT, in law, is a mutual arrangement between living persons for regulating the present or future enjoyment of property. It also denotes the instrument by which such enjoyment is regulated. The prevailing notion of a settlement is the dealing with property in a manner different from that in which the law would have dealt with it apart from the settlement. Definitions of settlement for the purposes of the Acts are contained in the Acts of 1856, 1877, and 1882 (see below). They are, however, scarcely sufficient for a general definition. On the one hand they are too extensive, and include wills ; on the other they are not comprehensive enough, as they apply only to real estate. They also include only cases of successive limitations, but the idea of succession does not in itself seem a necessary part of the conception of settlement, although no doubt most settlements contemplate successive enjoyment. Settle- ments may be either for valuable consideration or not: the latter are usually called voluntary, and are in law to some extent in the same position as revocable gifts ; the former are really contracts, and in general their validity depends upon the law of contract. They may accordingly contain any provisions not contrary to law or public policy.!*~~

~~*1 In this English law allows greater freedom than French, By § 791 of the Code Napoléon, in a contract of marriage the succession to a living person cannot be renounced.*~~

~~*694 Sk PTL eee TFT*~~

~~*The elements of the modern settlement are to be found in Roman law. The vulgaris, pupillaris, or exemplaris substitutio (consisting in the appointment of successive heirs in case of the death, incapacity, or refusal of the heir first nominated) may have suggested the modern mode of giving enjoyment of property in succession. Such a substitutio could, however, only have been made by will, while the settlement of English law is, in the general acceptation of the term, exclusively an instrument inter vivos. The dos or donatio propter nuptias corresponds to a considerable extent with the marriage settlement, the instrument itself being represented by the dotale instru- mentum or pacta dotalia. In the earliest period of Roman law no provision for the wife was required, for she passed under manus of her husband, and became in law his daughter,*~~

~~*entitled as such to a share of his property at his death. In course of time the plebeian form of marriage by usus, according to which the wife did not become sub- ject to manus, gradually superseded the older form, and it became necessary to make a provision for the wife by contract. Such provision from the wife's side was made by the dos, the property contributed by the wife or some one on her behalf towards the expenses of the new house- hold. Dos might be given before or after marriage, or might be increased after marriage. It was a duty enforced by legislation to provide dos where the father possessed a sufficient fortune. Dos was of three kinds :—profectitia, contributed by the father or other ascendant on the male side ; adventitia, by the wife herself or any person other than those who contributed dos profectitia; receptitia, by any person who contributed dos adventitia, subject to the stipulation that the property was to be returned to the person advancing it on dissolution of the marriage. The position of the husband gradually changed for the worse. From being owner, subject to an obligation to return the dos if the wife predeceased him, he became a trustee of the corpus of the property for the wife's family, retaining only the enjoyment of the income as long as the marriage continued. The contribution by the husband was called donatio propter nuptias.1 'The most striking point of dif- ference between the Roman and the English law is that under the former the children took no interest in the con- tributions made by the parents. Other modes of settling property in Roman law were the life interest or wsus, the Jideccommissum, and the prohibition of alienation of a legatum.*~~

~~*The oldest form of settlement in England was perhaps the gift in frankmarriage to the donees in frankmarriage, and the heirs between them two begotten (Littleton, § 17). This was simply a form of gift in special tail, which became up to the reign of Queen Elizabeth the most usual kind of settlement. The time at which the modern form of settlement of real estate came into use seems to be doubtful. There does not appear to be any trace of a limitation of an estate to an unborn child prior to 1556. In an instrument of that year such a limitation was effected by means of a feoffment to uses. The plan of granting the freehold to trustees to preserve contingent remainders? is said to have been invented by Lord Keeper Bridgman in the 17th century, the object being to preserve the estate from forfeiture for treason during the Common- wealth.? The*~~

~~*settlement of chattels is no doubt of consider- ably later origin, and the principles were adopted by courts of equity from the corresponding law as to real estate.*~~

~~*1 See Hunter, Roman Law, p. 150; Maine, Harly History of Insti- tutions, lect. xi. 2 The appointment of such trustees has been rendered unnecessary by 8 and 9 Viet. c. 106 and 40 and 41 Vict. c. 33. 8 This sketch of the history of settlement is abridged from a paper hh Myr Joshua Williams, Papers of the Juridical Society, vol. ' p. °*~~

~~*At the present time the settlement in England is, so fay as regards real estate, used for two inconsistent purposes, — to "make an eldest son," as it is called, and to avoid the results of the right of succession to real property of the eldest son by making provision for the younger children, The first result is generally obtained by a strict settlement, the latter by a marriage settlement, which is for valuable consideration if ante-nuptial, voluntary if post-nuptial. At the same time it should be remembered that these two kinds of settlement are not mutually exclusive: a marriage settlement may often take the form of a strict settlement and be in substance a resettlement of the family estate.*~~

~~*There are three possible varieties of the marriage settlement : — (1) the dotal system (régime dotal), under which the husband generally has the usufruct but not the property in the dos; this is the system generally followed in countries where the Roman law prevails ; (2) the system of community of goods (communauté de biens), by which the wife becomes a kind of partner of the husband ; this system, said to have been originally the custom of ancient Germany, is in vogue in France and Louisiana ; (3) the system of separate property, by which (subject to contract) the wife's pro- perty is free from the control of her husband ; this system prevails in the United Kingdom and the United States. An ordinary English marriage settlement of personalty is a deed to which the parties are the intended husband and wife and trustecs nominated on their behalf. It generally contains the following clauses : — a power to vary the investments of the settled property within limits ; trusts of the income for the benefit of the husband and wife during their lives; trusts for the issue, usually according to the appointmeut of the husband and wife or the survivor,*~~

~~*and in default for sons attaining twenty-one and for daughters attaining that age or marrying, equally, subject to a "hotchpot"' clause, charging the children with the amount of any previous ee ments; a power of advancement of the portions of children in anticipation ; a trust for the maintenance of infant children after the death of the parents, with a direction for the accumulation of surplus income; ultimate trusts fixing the destination of the settled property in default of issue. The receipt and trustee clauses, at one time usual, have been rendered unnecessary hy recent legislation, The Conveyancing Act, 1881, superseding Lord St Leonard's Act of 1859 and Lord Cranworth's Act of 1860, gives power to appoint new trustees, and makes a trustec's receipt a sufficient discharge. 'Trustees were formerly much restricted in their investments, but various Acts of Parliament have now increased their powers of choice of investment (see Trust). The scttlement of real estate is still a matter of greater difficulty than that of personalty, though it has been considerably simplified by recent legislation. A short statutory form of settlement of real estate is provided by the Conveyancing Act, 1881 (Fourth Sehedule, Form iv.). The Act further enacts that a covenant by the settlor for further assurance is to be implied. This takes the place of those covenants usually inserted in settlements before the Act, which were the ordinary covenants for title. (Sec Rrau EsTatez.) The Settled Land Act, 1882, gives statutory authority to certain provisions generally inserted by conveyancers. The clauses must, however, still vary infinitely according to the circumstances of particular cases. Where the settlement is of copyholds, the usual course is to surrender them to the use of trustees as joint tenants in fee upon such trusts as will effect the desired devolution of the property.*~~

~~*A strict settlement of real estate usually takes place on the coming of age or marriage of the eldest son, if it be the intention of the parties that the estate should continue undivided. The consideration for the settlement in the first case is usually an immediate allowance made to the son, in the second the marriage itself, a valuable consideration. It will appear on referring to the articles ENTAIL and Rau Estate that an estate cannot be entailed for a period exceeding a fixed number of existing lives and an additional term of twenty-one years, but that if it be sought to bar the entail within that period the consent of the protector of the settlement must be obtained. The process of resettlement 1s thus described by Lord*~~

~~*St Leonards : " Where there are younger children, the father is always anxious to have the estate resettled on them and their issue, in case of failure of issue of the first son. This he cannot accomplish without the concurrence of the son ; and, as the son, upon his establishment in life in his father's life- time, requires an immediate provision, the father generally secures to him a provision during their joint lives as a consideration for the resettlement of the estate in remainder upon the younger sons. The settlement usually takes the form of a life estate for the father, followed by a life estate for the son, with remainder in tail to the unborn child of the son, the continuance of the estate in the family being further secured by a scries of cross-remainders. There is often a name and arms clause, under which, by means of &*~~

~~*SE Ti.52 0 E NT*~~

~~*shifting use (see Trust), every person succeeding to the settled estate as tenant in tail is forced to assume the name and arms of the settlor under penalty of forfciture of his estate. Certain parts of the personalty of the settlor are often settled upon trusts to devolve with the real estate. In order to attain this end, the chattels are not simply subjected to the same limitations as the real estate. If so subjected, they would vest absolutely in the first tenant in succession, as no estate can be limited in personalty (see PersoNAL Estate). A declaration is added that they shall not vest absolutely in any tenant until he shall attain twenty-one, and in case he should die under that age that they shall devolve as nearly as possible in the same way as the lands. By means of strict settlement the actual possessor of a settled estate at any given time is in general only a tenant for life. It isa rule of law that in a settlement of this nature there should be a full and com- plete communication of all material circumstances by the one party to the other.*~~

~~*It is only within a comparatively recent period that any dis- satisfaction at the system of settlement has been felt. In 1829 the Real Property Commissioners saw no reason to recommend any alteration of the law as it then existed. To use the words of the First Report, p. 6, "Settlements bestow upon the present possessor of an estate the benefits of ownership, and secure the property to his posterity. The existing rule respecting*~~

~~*perpetuities has poe hit the medium between the strict entails which prevail in the northern part of the island, and by which the property entailed is for ever abstracted from commerce, and the total pro- hibition of substitutions? and the excessive restriction of the power of devising' established in some countries on the Continent of Europe. In England families are preserved, and purchasers always find a supply of land in the market." This optimistic view, it is scarcely necessary to say, is not the one generally accepted at present. The inconveniences inseparable in an economical point of view from the settlement of land have been proposed to be met in two ways,—(1) by a total prohibition of the ercation of life estates (see LAND), and (2) by an extension of the powers of the limited owner. The latter is the one which has hitherto com- mended itself to the legislature of the United Kingdom.*~~

~~*Up to thirty years ago a settled estate in England or Ireland could be sold or leased only under the authority of a private Act of Parliament. The dealings of the limited owner with his property were practically confined to certain powers of raising money for draining conferred by 8 and 9 Vict. c. 56 and the Public and Private Drainage Acts (now repealed). The first general Act was the Leases and Sale of Settled Estates Act, 1856, which proceeded on the principles generally followed in the private Acts. The Act allowed the tenant for life to demise the premises (execpt the principal mansion house) for various terms, and to sell with the approval of the court. Several amending Acts were passed, and finally the law was consolidated and amended by the Settled Estates Act, 1877 (40 and 41 Vict. c. 18). Meanwhile the Improve- ment of Land Act, 1864 (which applies to the United Kingdom), and the Limited Owners' Residence Acts, 1870 and 1871, had been passed. The Act of 1864 allowed the owner of a settled estate to charge upon the land, by way of rent-charge, the expenses of certain improvements, such as drainage, irrigation, inclosing, reclamation, clearing, erection of labourers' cottages and farmhouse buildings, planting for shelter, construction of any buildings which will increase the value of the land for agricultural purposes, and con- struction of jetties or landing-places on the sea-coast or navigable rivers and lakes. This list of improvements has been since extended by the Settled Land Act, 1882. The Act of 1870 enabled the owners of settled estates to charge such estates with the expense of building mansions as*~~

~~*residences. The building of such man- sions is by the Act of 1871 an improvement within the meaning of the Act of 1864. The Settled Estates Act, 1877 (40 and 41 Vict. ce. 18), allowed the tenant for life, or for a greater estate, of a scttled estate, to demise settled land on an agricultural lease for a term not exceeding twenty-one years (in Ireland thirty-five years), The lease must not be without impeachment of waste. 'his is the only case in which the powers of the Act may be exercised without the leave of the court. The court may authorize leases of any settled estates or of any rights or privileges over or affecting any settled estates, subject to the conditions that—(1) the lease be inade to take effect in possession at or within one year next after the making, and be for a term for an agricultural lease as above, for a mining lease not exceeding forty years, a repairing lease sixty years, a building lease ninety-nine years, with power for the court to grant*~~

~~*1 The law of Scotland was shortly afterwards altered by the Rutherford Act of 1848 (see ENTAIL).*~~

~~*2 As by the Code Napoléon, § 896. By § 898 substitutions vulgaires are, how- ever, practically allowed, the inconsistency with § 896 being avoided by affirming that these are not substitutions at all. In other countries the right of settlement ov substitution has been much modified by legislation, mostly in the direction of limiting the authority of the scttlor. Thus in Austria no family settlement (Familien-Fideicommiss) can be created without the eonsent of the legislature, Civil Code, § 618.*~~

~~*3 In France the proprictor may only devise half, a third, or a quarter of his estate, aecording to the number of his children.*~~

~~*695*~~

~~*for a longer term if in accordance with the eustom of the district and beneficial to the inheritance; (2) the best rent must be reserved; (3) in a mineral lease three-fourths of the rent is to be invested (one-fourth where the limited owner is entitled to work the minerals for his own benefit); (4) the lease is not to authorize felling of trees except for the purpose of clearing for building ; (5) the lease is to be by deed, and is to contain a condition for re- entry on non-payment of rent for twenty-eight days. The*~~

~~*court may also authorize sales of settled estates and of timber, and dedication for streets, roads, squares, gardens, sewers, and other works. The application to the court (which in England is the Chancery Division or the Chancery of Lancashire, in Ireland the Chancery Division) is by petition in a summary way with the consent of the persons having auy beneficial estate under the settlement, and all trustees having any estate on behalf of any unborn child. The court may dispense with consent under certain circumstances. No application is to be granted by the court where a similar application has been refused by parliament. Money received on sale under the Act is to be invested as the Act directs, for the benefit of the settled estate. In1882thepowers of the limited owner were still further increased. In that year was passed the Settled Land Act, 1882 (45 and 46 Vict. c. 88), since amended by 47 and 48 Vict. c. 19. For this very valuable Act the statute book is indebted to the late Karl Cairns, It docs not repeal the Act of 1877, but gives cumulative powers. The Act of 1877 must still be brought into action in certain cases to which the Act of 1882 does not apply. The broad distinction between the two Acts is that the powers given by the Act of 1877 are based entirely, except in agricultural leases, on judicial proceedings, while those given by the Act of 1882 may be excrcised by the tenant for life at his option, generally without the consent of trustees or the court. The powers are those usually inserted in settlements of real estate, and are conferred upon every tenant for life beneficially entitled to possession. 'This includes a tenant in tail by Act of Parliament restrained from defeating an estate tail, but not a tenant in tail where the land in respect of which he is restrained was purchased with money provided by parliament,4 a tenant in fee simple subject to an executory limitation, a person entitled to a base fee, a tenant for years determinable on a life, a tenant pur autre vie, a tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct, a tenant by the cuttesy, &c. A marred woman may exercise the powers given by the Act in spite of any restraint on anticipation contained in the settlement. The Act docs not apply to corporations, whether solc or aggregate. The chief powers given by the Act are those of sell- ing and leasing, A tenant for lifeimay sell settled land or any part of it, or any easement, right, or privilege over it, or the seignory of a manor, and may make exchange or partition. A sale must be for the best price, aud an exchange or partition for the best con- sideration ; the sale may be in one lot or several, and by auction or private*~~

~~*contract. A reservation as to user or as to mines and minerals may be imposed. Settled land in England may not be exchanged for land out of England. A lease is not to exceed for building ninety-nine years, mining sixty, any other kind twenty- one. The regulations as to leases are in general correspondence with those of the Act of 1877. The time for which non-payinent of rent gives a right of re-entry is thirty instead of twenty-eight days, and there are additional regulations as to building and mining leases. Where the tenant for life is impeachable for waste in respect of mines, three-fourths of the mining rent is to be sct aside as capital money, in other cases one-fourth. The tenant for life may surrender and regrant leases. The principal mansion house and the demesnes thereof, and other lands usually occupied therewith, cannot be sold or leased without the consent of the trustees of the settlement or the order of the court. The Act pro- vides for three kinds of sale :—(1) by the tenant for life mero motu, the ordinary case ; (2) with consent of trustees or the court, as in the case of the principal mansion and of the application of money paid fora lease or reversion ; (3) by order of the court, as in the ease of the variation of a building or mining lease according to the circumstances of the district, of parliamentary opposition for the protection or recovery of settled land, and of the sale or purchase of chattels as heirlooms to devolve with land. Land acquired by purchase, exchange, or partition is to be settled as far as possible on the same trusts as the other settled property. Capital money is to be applied as the Act directs, generally for the benefit of the settled property. The tenant for life may enter into a contract for carrying into effect the purposes of the Act. A' contract not to exercise the powers of the Act is void. As to procednre, an ap- plication to the Chancery Division is to be made by petition or summons. Jnrisdiction is conferred upon county courts (in Ireland civil bill courts) in respect to land or personal chattels settled or to be settled, not exceeding in capital valne £500 or in ~· 4 That is to say, the Act would apply to the estates tail of the marqnis of Abergavenny or the'earl of Shrewsbury, but not to Blenheim or Strathfieldsaye, purchased with public money for the dukes of Marlborough and Wellington (see REAL Estate).*~~

~~*5 Land in this sense has quite reeently been held to inelude an hereditary dignity, sueh as a baronetey,*~~

annual valuc £30. Rules of court have been framed for the pur- pose of carrying into effect the provisions of the Acts of 1877 and 1882. For more minnte information than can be given in this place the Acts and rules themselves must be consulted.

The neeessity for a settlement, as far as the wife's interests are coneerned, has been diminished by the Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 and 46 Vict. e. 75). It is still, however, usual to have a settlement on marriage, especially where there is property of any considerable value. The Act contains a saving of existing settle- ments and a power to make future settlements with or without restriction against anticipation (not to be valid against a married woman's ante-nuptial debts). No settlement or agreement for a settlement is to have greater validity against a married woman's creditors than such settlement or agreement would have when made or entered into bya man. A future or reversionary interest in settled personalty is specially excepted from the operation of Malins's Act (20 and 21 Vict. c. 5), under which a married woman may by decd acknowledged dispose of her future or reversionary interest in unsettled personalty. The former law as to equity to a settlement seems to have been rendered obsolete by the Married Women's Property Act. The doetrine of equity formerly was in accordance with the maxim, "He who secks equity must do equity,"— that, where a husband was foreed to obtain the assistance of a eourt of equity to reach property to which he was entitled in right of his wife, equity would only aid him on eondition of his settling a certain portion on his wife. Now that a husband cannot sueceed to any property in right of his wife during her lifetime, the reason for the doctrine of equity to a settlement has dis- appeared.

As a rule a settlement can only be made by a person not under disability, therefore apart from statute not bya lunatic, ora bank- rupt, aud generally not by an infant. Bunt by the Infants' Settle- ment Act (18 and 19 Vict. c. 43) infant males of twenty or over or infant females of seventeen or over may with the approbation of the Chancery Division obtained by petition make a valid settle- ment or contract for a settlement of all or any part of their pro- perty. By the Acts of 1877 and 1882 the powers of the Acts may

~~*in certain cases be exercised by trustees of a settlement, trustees in bankruptcy, committees of lunatics, and guardians of infants.*~~

~~*Where the parties are not in a position to make an immediate settlement, articles for a settlement are sometimes entered into, but more rarely than formerly on account of the facilities offered by the Infants' Settlement Act. The court will enforce the execution of a settlement in accordance with the articles, and will reform one already made if not in accordance with them. The court will also enforce the specific performance of any contract on the faith of which a marriage has taken place, in spite of the pro- visions of § 4 of the Statute of Frauds (see Fravp).? It should be noticed that marriage itself is not such a part performance of a contract as to give the court jurisdiction. An imperfect obligation arising from an informal ante-nuptial agreement can be made binding as between the parties by a post-nuptial settlement ; but this will not protect such a settlement from being treated as a voluntary settlement against creditors.*~~

~~*A settlement or contract for settlement made in consideration of marriage or for other valuable consideration is as a rule irrevocable by the settlor and good against creditors. The only exception or apparent exception is the provision in the Bankruptcy Act, 1883 (46 and 47 Vict. c. 52, § 47 (2)), that any covenant or contract made in consideration of marriage for the future settlement on or for the settlor's wife or children of any money or property wherein he had not at the date of his marriage any estate or interest, and not being money or property of or in right of his wife, shall, on his becoming bankrupt before the property or money shall have been actually transferred or paid, be void against the trustee in bankruptcy. With regard to voluntary settlements, 13 Eliz. c. 5 avoids as against creditors conveyances of lands or chattels con- trived to delay, hinder, or defraud creditors or others, with a proviso oc estates or interests conveyed on good considera- tion and bona fide to persons not having notice of fraud. 46 and 47 Vict. c. 52, § 47 (1), enacts that any settlement of property, not being a settlement made before and in consideration of marriage or made in favour of a purchaser or incumbrancer in good faith and for valuable consideration, or a settlement made on or for the wife or children of the settlor of property which has accrued to the settlor after marriage in right of his wife, shall, if the settlor becomes bankrupt within*~~

~~*two years after the date of the settle- ment, be void against the trustee in the bankruptcy, and shall, if the settlor becomes bankrupt within ten years, be void against the trustee unless the parties claiming under the settlement can prove that the settlor was at the time of making the settlement able to pay all his debts without the aid of the settled property, and that*~~

~~*1 At one time the ecclesiastical courts went farther, and enforced specific per- formance of the ceremony of marriage itself, After a contract of marriage per verba de presenti or per verba de futuro, a celebration in facie ecclesix might have been decreed. This jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts was finally abolished by 4 Geo. IV. c. 76.*~~

~~*SETTLEMENT*~~

~~*the interest of the settlor in such property had passed to the trustee of the settlement on the execution thereof. 27 Eliz, c, 4 was passed for the benefit of purchasers, as 13 Eliz. c. 5 was for that of creditors, but refers to real estate and chattels real only. It enacts that every conveyance of lands with intent to defraud purchasers shall be void as against such purchasers only, and that conveyances with power of revocation shall be void against subsequent purchasers. The Act has been construed to mean that a voluntary conveyance of real estate is void as against a sub- sequent purchaser, mortgagee, or lessee for value. With these exceptions a voluntary settlement is good as between the settlor and the objects of the settlement, and as between them and third persons. So far is this the case that the court will not assist 4 settlor to destroy the effect of a voluntary settlement by compelling specific performance against a subsequent purchaser. On the other hand the court will not enforce specific performance of a voluntary settlement, in spite of its being a contract under seal. Such an instrument, however, creates a debt and will be admitted to proof in a creditors' suit.?*~~

~~*Scotland.—A disposition and settlement is a mode of providing for the devolution of property after death, and so corresponds rather to the English will than the English settlement. The English marriage settlement is represented in Scotland by the contract of marriage, which, like the English settlement, may be ante- or post-nuptial. The main*~~

~~*difference between the ante- and the post-nuptial contract is the extent to which the property the subject of the contract may be withdrawn from creditors. In the former case a preference or jus crediti is according to circumstances conferred on the wife or children ; in the latter case the wife or children cannot compete with the creditors. A post-nuptial contract is also liable to revocation by the husband or wife. The Married Women's Property Act, 1881, while it makes the wife complete mistress of her property, at the samo time does not exclude or abridge the power of settlement by ante-nuptial contract of marriage.*~~

~~*A contract of marriage may be made with or without the creation of trustees, the latter being the more usual form. If the contract settle heritable property, it generally contains a narrative or inductive clause, containing the names of the parties with an obligation to celebrate the marriage, a disposition of the estate with its destination, provisions as to the wife and younger children and a declaration that these provisions shall be in full of their legal claims, a conveyance by the wife of her whole means and estate to her husband or the trustees, an appointment of trustees to secure implement of provisions to the wife and children, a registration clause, and a testing clause. If the contract settle movables, it is, mutatis mutandis, in much the same form, with the addition of a clause excluding the jus mariti of a future husband of the wife (see Juridical Styles, vol. i. p. 174, vol. ii. p. 498). The Ruther- ford Act (11 and 12 Vict. c. 36) and the Entail Act, 1882 (45 and 46 Vict. c. 53), specially provide that settlements by marriage contract are not to be disappointed until the birth of a child, who by himself or his guardian consents to disentail, or until the marriage is dissolved, unless with the consent of the trustees of the contract. Improvements by limited owners were allowed by law much earlier than in England. 10 Geo. III. c. 51 enabled heirs of entail to charge the entailed estates with the sums of money laid out by them in building mansions. This principle was expressly adopted for England, as the preamble of the Act shows, by the Limited Owners' Residence Act, 1870. The Ruther- ford Act and other Acts empowered heirs of entail to excamb, to feu, to lease, to charge by bond and disposition in security, to sell, to grant family provisions, and to erect labourers' cottages. The Settled Estates Act and Settled Land Act do not apply to Scotland, Substitution, as in Roman law, can only be made by testamentary or*~~

~~*mortis eausa disposition, The Rutherford Act and the Entail Ainendment Act, 1868 (31 and 32 Vict. e. 84), more striet than the law of England against perpetuities, forbid the creation of a life-rent interest in heritables or movables except in favour of a party in life at the date of the deed ereating such interest.*~~

~~*United States.—Marriage settlements are not in as eommon use as in England, no doubt owing to the fact that the principle of the Married Women's Property Act was the law of most of the States of the Union long before its adoption by England. In Louisiana, in the absence of stipulation to the contrary, community of goods is the rule. Settlements other than marriage settlements are practically unknown in the United States. Property cannot, as a general rule, be tied up to anything like the extent still admis- sible in England. In those States where entail is allowed the entail may be barred by simple means of alienation. (J. Wt.)*~~

~~*SETTLEMENT, Act or. By this Act, 12 & 13 Will. III. c. 2, passed in 1701 (followed by the parliament of Scotland in the Act of Union, 1707, c. 7), the crown was*~~

~~*2 See Williams, The Settlement of Real Estates; Davidson, Precedents of Con-*~~

~~*veyancing, vol. iii; Wolstenholme and Turner, The Settled Land Act; Middleton, The Statutes relating to Settled Estates,*~~

~~*SET—SEV*~~

~~*settled upon the Princess Sophia, electress and duchess dowager of Hanover, granddaughter of James I., and the heirs of her body, being Protestants. The Act contained in addition some important constitutional provisions. Those which are still law are as follows :—(1) that whoso- ever shall hereafter come to the possession of this crown shall join in communion with the Church of England as by law established ; (2) that in case the crown of this realm shall hereafter come to any person not being a native of this kingdom of England, this nation be not obliged to engage in any war for the defence of any dominions or territories which do not belong to the crown of England without the consent of parliament;*~~

~~*(3) that after the limitation shall take effect no person born out of the kingdoms of England, Scotland, or Ireland, or the dominions thereunto belonging, although he be naturalized or made a denizen (except such as are born of English parents), shall be capable to be of the privy council or a member of either House of Parliament, or enjoy any office or place of trust, either civil or military, or to have any grant of lands, tenements, or hereditaments from the crown to himself, or to any other or others in trust for him ;} (4) that after the limitation shall take effect judges' commissions be made quamdiu se bene gesserint,? and their salaries ascertained and established, but upon the address of both Houses of Parliament it may be lawful to remove them ; (5) that no pardon under the great seal of England be pleadable to an impeachment by the Commons in parlia- ment. The importance of the Act of Settlement appears from the fact that in all the Regency Acts it is specially mentioned as one of those Acts which the regent may not assent to repeal (see Recent). To maintain or affirm the right of any person to the crown, contrary to the provisions of the Act of Settlement, is treason by 6th Anne, c. 7. SETTLEMENT OF THE POOR. See Poor Laws. SETUBAL, called by the English St Ubes, a port and commercial town in the province of Estremadura, Portugal, nearly 20 miles south-east of Lisbon, lining for about three-quarters of a mile the north shore of a harbour of the same name, 3 leagues long by half a league broad and inferior only to that of Lisbon, at the end of a fertile valley of 6 miles long from Palmella, where the Sabo river discharges into the Bay of Sétubal, and on the Portuguese railway (Lisbon-Barreiro-Sétubal). It is overtopped on the west by the great red treeless range of Arrabida. In the sandhills of a low-lying promontory in the bay, over against Sétubal, are the ruins of "Troia," uncovered in part by heavy rains in 1814, and again in 1850 by an antiquarian society. These ruins of "Troia," among which have been brought to view a beautiful Roman house and some 1600 Roman coins, refer, beyond almost all dispute, to Cetobriga, which flourished 300-400 a.p. In the neighbourhood, on a mountain 1700 feet high, is the cloister Arrabida, with stalactite cavern, whither pious pilgrimages are made. There are five forts for the defence of the harbour, and that*~~

~~*of St Philip, built by Philip IIL, commands the town.*~~ |

~~*Sétubal isan emporium of the Portuguese salt trade carried on principally with Scandinavian ports, the salt being deemed the finest for curing meat and fish. By reason of this advantage and the excellence of its oranges, the best in Portugal, and of its Muscatel grapes, it has much commercial importance, and is the fourth city in the king- dom. It also manufactures leather and does a considerable fishing trade. There are five churches, several convents, a theatre, a nionument of the poet Bocage, who was born here,*~~

~~*1 This clause is virtually repealed by the Naturalization Act, 1870 (88 & 34 Vict. c. 14, § 7), as to persons obtaining a certificate of naturalization.*~~

~~*2 Their commissions had previously been made durante bene placito.*~~

~~*and an arsenal. Among its other public buildings are the Stapal, the Bomfin, which has a handsome fountain, the Fonte Nova, and the Annunciata. Sétubal suffered severely, along with Lisbon, from the earthquake of 1755. The population was 14,798 in 1878.*~~

~~*SEVENOAKS, a market town of Kent, England, situated on high ground about a mile from the railway station, 25 miles south-east of London by the London, Chatham, and Dover Railway, and 20 by the South-Eastern Railway. It consists principally of two streets which converge at the south end, near which is the church of St Nicholas, of the 13th, 14th, and 15th centuries, restored in 1878, and con- taining monuments of the Amherst family and a tablet to William Lambarde, the " Perambulator" of Kent (d. 1601), removed from the old parish church of Greenwich when that was demolished. At the grammar school founded in 1418 by Sir William Sevenoke, lord mayor of London, George Grote received his education. There is also a school founded by Lady Margaret Boswell, wife of Sir William Boswell, ambassador to Charles I. at The Hague, and alms-houses founded by Sir William Sevenoke in connexion with his school. The Walthamstow Hall for 100 children, daughters of Christian missionaries, erected at a cost of £22,000, was opened in 1882. Close to Sevenoaks is Knole Park, one of the finest old residences in England, which in the time of King John was possessed by the earl of Pembroke,*~~

~~*and after passing to various owners was bought by Archi- bishop Bourchier (d. 1486), who rebuilt the house. He left the property to the see of Canterbury, and about the time of the dissolution it was given up by Cranmer to Henry VIII. By Elizabeth it was conferred first on the earl of Leicester and afterwards on Thomas Sackville, earl of Dorset, by whom it was in great part rebuilt and fitted up in regard to decoration and furniture very much as it at present exists. In the time of Elizabeth county assizes were held in the town. Of late years Sevenoaks has very much increased by the addition of villa residences for persons having their business in London. The popu- lation of the urban sanitary district (area 2028 acres) in 1871 was 4118, and in 1881 it was 6296.*~~

~~*SEVEN SLEEPERS OF EPHESUS, Tue, according to the most common form of an old legend of Syrian origin, first referred to in Western literature by Gregory of Tours (De Glor. Mart., c. 95), were seven Christian youths of Ephesus, who, to escape the rage of Decius, lived for some time in concealment in a cave. The enemy at last, however, discovered their hiding place, and caused great stones to be rolled to its mouth that they might die of hunger. The martyrs fell asleep in a mutual embrace. The occurrence had long been forgotten, when it fell out, in the thirtieth year of Theodosius II., 196 years afterwards, that a certain inhabitant of Ephesus, seeking shelter for his cattle, rediscovered the cave on Mount Ccelian, and, letting in the light, awoke the inmates, who. sent one of their number down to buy food. Cautiously approaching the city, the lad was greatly astonished to find the cross displayed over the gates, and on entering to hear the name of Christ openly pronounced. By tendering coin of the time of Decius at a baker's shop he roused suspicion, and in his confusion being unable to explain how he had come by the money he was taken before the authorities as a dishonest finder of hidden treasure. He was easily able to confirm the strange story he now had to tell by actually leading his accusers to the cavern where his six companions were found, youthful and rosy and beaming with a holy radiance. Theodosius, hearing what had happened, hastened to the spot in time to hear from their lips that God had wrought this wonder to confirm his faith in the resurrection of the dead. This message once, delivered, they again fell asleep.*~~

~~Gregory says he had the legend from tlic interpretation of "a certain Syrian"; in point of fact the story is very common in Syriac sources. It forms the subject of a homily of Jacob of Sarug (ob. 521 A.D.), which is given in the Acta Sanctorum. Another Syriac version is printed in Land's Anecdota, ili. 87 sg. ; see also Barhebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 142 sq., and compare Assemani, Bib. Or., i. 335 sg. Some forms of the legend give, eight sleepers,— e.g., an aneient MS. of the 6th century now in the British Museum (Cat. Syr. MSS., p. 1090). There are considerable variations as to their names. 'The legend rapidly attained a wide diffusion through- out Christendom ; its currency in the East is testified by its accept- ance by Mohammed (sur. xviii.), who calls them Ashdb al-Kahf, '*the men of tle cave." According to Al-Birint (Chronology, tr. by Sachau, p. 285) certain undecayed corpses of monks were shown in a cave as the sleepers of Ephesus in the 9th century. The seven sleepers are a favourite subject in carly medieval art.~~

~~SEVERN, Tue, next to the Thames in length among the rivers of England, rises at Maes Hafren on the eastern side of Plinlimmon, on the south-south-west borders of Montgomeryshire, and flows in a nearly semicircular course of about 200 miles to the sea; the direct distance from its source to its mouth in the Bristol Channel is about 80 miles. By the Britons it was called Halfren, and its old Latin name was Sabrina. Through Mont- gomeryshire its course is at first in a south-easterly direc- tion, and for the first 15 miles it flows over a rough precipitous bed. At Llanidloes, where the valley widens to a breadth of one or two miles and assumes a more fertile appearance, it bends towards the north-east, passing Newtown and Welshpool. On the borders of Shropshire it receives the Vyrnwy, and then turning in a south-easterly direction enters the broad rich plain of Shrewsbury, after which it bends southward past Ironbridge and Bridg- north to Bewdley in Worcestershire. In Shropshire it receives a number of tributaries (see SHRopsuHIRe). Still continuing its southerly course through Worcestershire it passes Stourport, where it receives the Stour (left), and Worcester, shortly after which it receives the~~

~~*Teme (right). It enters Gloucestershire at Tewkesbury, where it receives the Avon (left), after which, bending in a south-westerly direction, it passes the town of Gloucester, 18 miles below which the estuary widens out into the Bristol Channel, at the point where it receives from the left the Lower Avon or Bristol river, and from the right the Wye.*~~

~~*From Newtown its fall is 465 feet, the average fall per mile being about 2 feet 3 inches, but from Ironbridge to Gloucester, a distance of about 70 miles, the fall is only about 103 feet. Between Stour- port and Gloucester the breadth is 150 feet, but below that town the breadth rapidly increases and the banks become bolder and more picturesque. Owing to the gradual decrease in the width and depth of the Bristol Channel the tide enters with great force, forming a tidal wave or bore about 9 feet in height, which at cer- tain times causes great destruction, among tle more serious inun- dations being those of 1606, 1687, 1703, and 1883. The total area drained by the Severn is about 4500 square miles. Its navigation extends to about 150 miles above its mouth ; barges can ascend as faras Stourport, and large vessels to Gloucester. Owing to the diffi- culties of the navigation the Gloucester and Berkeley Ship Canal, 18 miles in length, was constructed, admitting vessels of 350 tons to Gloucester, the river only admitting vessels of 150 tons. The only other important port is Bristol, but there are a few smaller ports and fishing towns, while by means of canals the Severn has con- nexion with some of the principal towns of England. With the Thames it is connected by the Stroudwater and Thames and Severn Canals; by various canals it has communication with the Trent and the rivers of the north; and the Hereford and Gloucester Canal*~~

~~*connects those two cities. The Severn is a good salmon river, and is specially famous for its lampreys.*~~

~~*SEVERN, Josepn (1793-1879), portrait and subject painter, was born in 1793. During his earlier years he practised portraiture as a miniaturist ; and, having studied in the schools of the Royal Academy, he exhibited his first work in oil, Hermia and Helena, a subject from the Midsummer Night's Dream, in the Royal Academy Exhibi- tion of 1819. In 1820 he gained the gold medal and a three years' travelling studentship for his Una and the Red Cross Knight in the Cave of Despair, a painting now*~~

~~in the possession of the representatives of the late Lord Houghton. He accompanied his friend Keats the poet to Italy, and nursed him till his death in 1821. In 1861 he was appointed British consul at Rome, a post which he held till 1872, and during a great part of the time he also acted as Italian consul. His most remarkable work is the Spectre Ship from the Ancient Mariner. He painted Cordelia Watching by the Bed of Lear, the Roman Beggar, Ariel, the Fountain, and Rienzi, executed a large altarpiece for the church of St Paul at Rome, and pro- duced many portraits, including one of Baron Bunsen and several of Keats. He died at Rome August 3, 1879.~~

~~SEVERUS, Lucius Seprimivs, the twenty-first emperor of Rome, reigned from 193 to 211 a.p. He was born in 146 at Leptis Magna, an African coast town in the district of Syrtes, whose ancient prosperity is still attested by its extensive ruins. In this region of Africa, despite its long possession by the Romans, the Punic tongue was still spoken by the people in general. Severus had to acquire Latin as a foreign language, and is said to have spoken it to the end of his days with a strong African accent. After he had arrived at the throne he dismissed abruptly from Rome a sister who had come to visit him, because he felt shame at her abominable Latin. Yet Severus and his dynasty were almost the only emperors of provincial descent who frankly cherished the province of their origin, while the province showed true loyalty to the only Roman emperor ever born on African soil, and to the successors who derived their title from him.~~

~~Of the origin of the Severi nothing is known: it is a natural but very doubtful conjecture that the L. Septimius Severus, a native of Africa, addressed by the poet Statius, was an ancestor of the emperor who bore the same name. The father of Severus was a Roman citizen of equestrian rank, and it may safely be affirmed that the family held a poor position when he was born, but had risen in importance by the time he reached manhood. Two of his uncles attained to consular rank. Fulvius Pius, the maternal grandfather of Severus, is often identified with the man of that name who was governor of Africa, and, after being condemned for~~

~~*corruption by Pertinax, was highly honoured by Didius Julianus; but dates are strongly against the identification. Of the future emperor's education we learn nothing but its results. Spartianus declares him to have been "very learned in Latin and Greek literature," to have had a genuine zeal for study, and to have been fond of philosophy and rhetoric. But the learning of rulers is often seen through a magnifying medium, and we may better accept the statement of Dio Cassius that in the pursuit of education his eagerness was greater than his success, and that he was rather shrewd than facile. No doubt in his early years he acquired that love for jurisprudence which distinguished him as emperor. Of his youth we know only that it was entirely spent at Leptis. Beyond that there is merely one anecdotal fabri- cation giving an account of youthful wildness,*~~

~~*The removal of Severus from Leptis to Rome is attri buted by his biographer to the desire for higher education, but was also no doubt due in some degree to ambition. From the emperor Marcus Aurelius he early obtained, by intercession of a consular uncle, the distinction of the broad purple stripe. At twenty-six, that is, almost at the earliest age allowed by law, Severus attained the queestor- ship and a seat in the senate, and proceeded as quaestor militaris to the senatorial province of Beetica, in the Peninsula. While Severus was temporarily absent m Africa in consequence of the death of his father, the province of Betica, disordered by invasion and internal commotion, was taken over by the emperor, who gave the senate Sardinia in exchange. On this Severus became*~~

~~*SEVERUS*~~

~~*military questor of Sardinia. HIs next office, probably in 174, was that of legate to the proconsul of Africa, and in the following year he was tribune of the plebs. This magistracy, though far different from what it had been in the days of the republic, was still one of dignity, and brought with it promotion to a higher grade in the senate. During the tribunate he married his first wife Marcia, whose name he passed over in his autobiography, though he erected statues of her after he became emperor. In 178 Severus became preetor, not by favour of the emperor, but by competition for the suffrages of the senators. Then, probably in the same*~~

~~*year, he went to Spain as legate ; after that (179) he commanded a legion in Syria. The death of Marcus Aurelius seems in some way to have interrupted his career; he was unemployed for several years, and devoted great part of his leisure to the study of literature, religion, and antiquities (so says Spartianus) at Athens. The year of Severus's first consulship cannot be determined with precision, but it falls within the space between 185 and 190. In this time also falls the marriage with Julia, afterwards famous as Julia Domna, whose acquaintance he had no doubt made when an officer in Syria. Her two sons Bassianus (known as Caracalla) and Geta were probably born in 188 and 189. Severus was governor in succession of Gallia Lugdunensis, Sicily, and Pannonia Superior. He was in command of three legions at Carnuntum, the capital of the province last named, when news reached him that Commodus had been murdered by his favourite concubine and his most trusted servants.*~~

~~*Up to this moment the career of Severus had been ordinary in its character. He had not raised himself above the usual official level. He had achieved no military dis- tinction,—had indeed seen no warfare beyond the petty border frays of a frontier province. But the storm that now tried all official spirits found his alone powerful enough to brave it. Three imperial dynasties had now been ended by assassination. The Flavian line had enjoyed much shorter duration and much less prestige than the other two, and the circumstances of its fall had been peculiar in that it was probably planned in the interest of the senate and the senate certainly reaped the immediate fruits. But the crisis which arose on the death of Nero and the crisis which arose on the death of Commodus were strikingly alike. In both cases it was left to the army to determine by a struggle which of the divisional commanders should succeed to the command-in-chief, that is, to the imperial throne. In each case the contest began with an impulsion given to the com- manders by the legionaries themselves. The soldiers of the great commands competed keenly for the honour and the material advantages to be won by placing their general in the seat of empire. The officer who refused to lead would have been deemed a traitor to his troops, and would have suffered the punishment of his treason.*~~

~~There is a widespread impression that the Preetorian guards at all times held the Roman empire in their hands, but its erroneousness is demonstrated by the events of the year 193. For the first time in the course of imperial history the Preetorians presumed to nominate as emperor a man who had no legions at his back. This was Pertinax, who has been well styled the Galba of his time—upright and honourable to severity, and zealous for good govern- ment, but blindly optimist about the possibilities of reform in a feeble and corrupt age. After a three months' rule he was destroyed by the power that lifted him up. According to the well-known story, true rather in its out- line than in its details, the Przetorians sold the throne to Didius Julianus. But at the end of two months both the Preetorians and their nominee were swept away by the real disposers of Roman rule, the provincial legions. Four groups of legions at the time were strong enough to aspire~~

~~to determine the destiny of the empire,—those quartered in Britain, in Germany, in Pannonia, in Syria. Three. of the groups actually took the decisive step, and Severus in Pannonia, Pescennius Niger in Syria, Clodius Albinus in Britain, received from their troops the title of Augustus. Severus far outdid his rivals in promptness and decision. By what means we do not know, he secured the aid of the legions in Germany and of those in Illyria. These, with the forces in Pannonia, made a combination suffi- ciently formidable to overawe Albinus for the moment. He probably deemed that his best chance lay in the exhaustion of his competitors by an internecine struggle. At all events he received with submission an offer made by Severus, no doubt well understood by both to be politic, insincere, and temporary. Severus sent a trusted officer, who confirmed Albinus in his power and bestowed upon him the title of Caesar, making him the nominal heir- apparent to the throne.~~

~~Before the action of Severus was known in Rome, the senate and people had shown signs of turning to Pescen- nius Niger, that he might deliver them from the poor puppet Didius Julianus and avenge on the Pretorians the murder of Pertinax. Having secured the co-operation or neutrality of all the forces in the western part of the empire, Severus hastened to Rome.~~

~~*To win the sympathy of the capital he posed as the avenger and successor of Pertinax, whose name he even added to his own, and used to the end of his reign. The feeble defences of Julianus were broken down and the Preetorians disarmed and dis- banded, without a blow being struck. A new body of household troops was enrolled and organized on quite different principles from the old. In face of the senate, as Dio tells us, Severus acted for the moment like "one of the good emperors in the olden days." After a magni- ficent entry into the city he joined the senate in execrat- ing the memory of Commodus, and in punishing the murderers of Pertinax, whom he honoured with the most splendid funeral rites. He also encouraged the senate to pass a decree directing that any emperor or subordinate of an emperor who should put a senator to death should be treated asa publicenemy. But he ominously refrained from asking the senate to sanction his accession to the throne.*~~

~~*The rest of Severus's reign, as it is read in the ancient histories, is in the main occupied with wars, over which we shall rapidly pass. The power wielded by Pescennius Niger, who called himself emperor, and was supposed to control one half of the Roman world, proved to be more imposing than substantial. The magnificent promises of Oriental princes were falsified as usual in the hour of need. Niger himself, as described by Dio, was the very type of mediocrity, conspicuous for no faculties, good or bad. This very character had no doubt commended him to Commodus as suited for the important command in Syria, which might have proved a source of danger in abler hands. The contest between Severus and Niger was practically decided after two or three engagements, fought by Severus's officers. The last battle, which took place at Issus, ended in the defeat and death of Niger (194). After this the emperor spent two years in successful attacks upon the peoples bordering on Syria, particularly in Adiabene and Osrhoene. Byzantium, the first of Niger's possessions to be attacked, was the last to fall, after a glorious defence.*~~

~~*Late in 196 Severus turned westward, to reckon with Albinus, who was well aware that the reckoning was inevitable. He was better born and better educated than Severus, but in capacity far inferior. As Severus was nearing Italy he received the news that Albinus had been declared emperor by his soldiers. The first counter-stroke*~~

of Severus was to affiliate himself and his elder son to the Antonines by a sort of spurious and posthumous adop- tion. The prestige of the old name, even when gained in this illegitimate way, was probably worth a good deal. Bassianus, the elder son of Severus, thereafter known as Aurelius Antoninus, was named Ozsar in place of Albinus, and was thus marked out as successor to his father. With- out interrupting the march of his forces, Severus con- trived to make an excursion to Rome. Here he availed himself with much subtlety of the sympathy many senators were known to have felt for Niger. Though he was so far faithful to the decree passed by his own advice that he put no senator to death, yet he banished and impoverished many whose presence or influence seemed dangerous or inconvenient to his prospects. Of the sufferers probably few had ever seen or communicated with Niger.

The collision between the forces of Severus and Albinus was the most violent that had taken place between Roman troops since the mighty contest at Philippi. The decisive engagement was fought in February of the year 197 on the plain between the Rhone and the Sadne, to the north of Lyons. Dio tells us that 150,000 men fought on each side. The fortunes of Severus were, to all appearance, at one stage of the battle as hopeless as those of Julius Czesar were for some hours during the battle of Munda. The tide was turned by the same means in both cases—by the personal conduct and bravery of the commander.

By this crowning victory Severus was released from all need for disguise, and " poured forth on the civil popula- tion all the wrath which he had been storing up for a long time" (Dio). He particularly frightened the senate by calling himself the son of Marcus and brother of Commodus, whom he had before insulted. And he read a speech in which he declared that the severity and cruelty of Sulla, Marius, and Augustus had proved to be safer policy than the clemency of Pompey and Julius Cesar, which had wrought their ruin. He ended with an apology for Com- modus and bitter reproaches against the senate for their sympathy with his assassins. Over sixty senators were arrested, on acharge of having adhered to Albinus, and half of them were put to death. In most instances the charge was

~~*merely a pretence to enable the emperor to crush out the forward and dangerous spirits in the senate. The murderers of Commodus were punished ; Commodus himself was deified ; and on the monuments from this time onward Severus figures as the brother of that reproduction of all the vice and cruelty of Nero with the refinement left out.*~~

~~*The next years (197-202) were devoted by Severus to one of the dominant ideas of the empire from its earliest days—war against the Parthians. The results to which Trajan and Verus had aspired were now fully attained, and Mesopotamia was definitely established as a Roman pro- vince. Part of the time was spent in the exploration of Egypt, in respect of which Dio takes opportunity to say that Severus was not the man to leave anything human or divine uninvestigated. The emperor returned to enjoy a well-earned triumph, commemorated to this day by the arch in Rome which bears his name. During the six years which followed (202-208) Severus resided at Rome and gave his attention to the organization of the empire. No doubt his vigorous influence was felt to its remotest corners, but our historians desert us at this point and leave us for the most part to the important but dim and defective conclusions to be drawn from the abundant monumental records of the reign. Only two or three events in the civil history of this period are fully narrated by the ancient writers. The first of these is the festival of the Decennalia, or rejoicings in the tenth year of the emperor's reign. Contemporaneous with this festival was the marriage of Aurelius Antoninus*~~

~~*SEVERUS*~~

~~*(Caracalla) with Plautilla, the daughter of Plautianus, com. mander of the reorganized Preetorian guards. This officer holds a conspicuous position in the ancient accounts of the reign, yet it is all but impossible to believe a good deal that we are told concerning him. Nevertheless, without a clear view of the career of Plautianus, it is difficult to grasp definitely some important features in the character of Severus, or to appreciate exactly the nature of his government. According to Dio and Herodian, Plautianus was allowed for years to exercise and abuse the whole power of the emperor, so far as it did not relate to the actual conduct of war. He was cruel, arrogant, and corrupt; and the whole empire groaned under*~~

~~*his exac. tions. Geta, the brother of Severus, tried to open the emperor's eyes, but the licence of Plautianus was merely restricted for a moment, to be bestowed again in full, Finally, in 203 this second Sejanus fell a victim to an intrigue set on foot by his own son-in-law Antoninus (Caracalla), the details of which were not clearly known even to contemporary writers. It is hard to see in what way we are to reconcile this history with the known facts of Severus's character and career, unless we assume that Plautianus was really the instrument of his master for the execution of his new policy towards the senate and the senatorial provinces, That Plautianus abused his authority and brought about his own fall is probable enough,—also that Severus had destined him at one time for the guardian- ship of his sons. Plautianus was succeeded in his offico by two men, one of whom was the celebrated jurist Papinian.*~~

~~*Severus spent the last three years of his life (208-211) in Britain, amidst constant and not very successful war- fare, which he is said to have provoked partly to strengthen the discipline and powers of the legions, partly to wean his sons from their evil courses by hard military service. He died at York in February of the year 211. There are vague traditions that his death was in some way hastened by Caracalla. This prince had been, since about 197, nominally joint emperor with his father, so that no ceremony was needed for his recognition as monarch.*~~

~~*The natural gifts of Severus were of no high or unusual order. He had a clear head, promptitude, resolution, tenacity, and great organizing power, but no touch of genius. That he was cruel cannot be questioned, but his cruelty was of the calculating kind, and always clearly directed to some end. He threw the head of Niger over the ramparts of Byzantium, but merely as the best means of procuring a surrender of the stubbornly defended fortress. The head of Albinus he exhibited at Rome, but only as a warning to the capital to tamper no more with pretenders. The children of Niger were held as hostages and kindly treated so long as they might possibly afford a useful basis for negotiation with their fathcr ; when he was defeated they were killed, lest from among them should arise a claimant for the imperial power. Stern and barbarous punishment was always meted out by Severus to the conquered foe, but terror was deemed the best guarantee for peace. He felt no scruples of conscience or honour*~~

if he thought his interest at stake, but he was not wont to take an excited or exaggerated view of what his interest required. He used or destroyed men and institutions alike with cool judgment and a single eye to the main purpose of his life, the secure establishment of his dynasty. The few traces of aimless savagery which we find in the ancient narra- tives are probably the result of fear working on the imagination of the time.

As a soldier Severus was personally brave, but he can hardly be called a general, in spite of his successful campaigns. He was rather the organizer of victory than the actual author of it. The operations against Niger were carried out entirely by his officers. Dio even declares that the final battle with Albinus was the first at which Severus had ever been actually present. When a war was going on he was constantly travelling over the scene of it, planning it and instilling into the army his own pertinacious spirit, but the actual fighting was usually left to others. His treat- ment of the army is the most characteristic feature of his reign. He frankly broke with the decent conventions of the Augustan constitution, ignored the senate, and candidly based his rule upon — force. The only title he ever laid to the throne was the pronuncia- miento of the legions, whose adherence to his cause he commemorated

si VYHROS

even on the coinage of the realm. The legions voted him the adopted son of Marcus Aurelius; the legions associated with him Caracallain the government of the empire. Severus strove earnestly to wed the army as a whole to the support of his dynasty. He increased enormously the material gains and the honorary distinc- tions of the service, so that he was charged with corrupting the troops. Yet it cannot be denied that, all things considered, he left the army of the empire more efficient than he found it. He increased the strength of it by three legions, and turned the Pretorians, heretofore a flabby body without military experience or instinct, into a chosen corps of veterans. Their ranks were filled by promotion from all the legions on service, whereas pre- viously there had been special enlistment from Italy and one or two of the neighbouring provinces. It was hoped that these picked men would form a force on which an emperor could rely in an emergency. But to meet the possibility

~~*of a legionary revolt in the provinces, one of the fundamental prineiples of the Augustan empire was abrogated : Italy beeame a provinee, and troops of the regular army were quartered in it under the direet command of the emperor. Further to obviate the risk of revolution, the great eommands in the provinces were broken up, so that, excepting on the turbulent eastern froutier, it was not possible for a commander to dispose of troops numerous enough to render him dangerous to the government.*~~

~~*But, while the policy of Severus was primarily a family policy, he was by no means careless of the general security and welfare of the empire. Only in one instanee, the destruetion of Byzantium, did he weaken its defenees for his own private ends—an error for which his sueeessors paid dearly, when the Goths eame to dominate the Euxine. The constantly troublesome Danubian regions re- ceived the special attention of the emperor, but all over the realm the status and privileges of communities and distriets were reeast in the way that seemed likely to econduee to their prosperity. Tho administration aequired more and more of a military character, in Italy as well as in the provinces. Retired military officers now filled many of the posts formerly reserved for eivilians of equestrian rank. The prefeet of the Pretorians reeeived large civil and judi- eial powers, so that the investment of Papinian with the office was less unnatural than it at first sight seems. The alliance between Severus and the juriseonsults had important consequenees. While he gave them new importanee in the body politie, and eo-operated with them in the work of legal reform, they did him material serviee by working an absolutist view of the government into the texture of Roman law. Of the legal changes of the reign, important as they were, we can only niention a few details, The emperor himself was a devoted and upright judge, but he struck a great blow at the purity of the law by transferring the exereise of imperial jurisdie- tion from the forum to the palaee. He sharpened in many respects the law of treason, put an end to the time-honoured quaestiones perpetuae, altered largely that important seetion of the law whieh defined the rights of the fiscus, and developed further the social poliey which Augustus had embodied in the lex Julia de adultertis and the lex Papia Poppaea.*~~

~~*Severus boldly adopted as an official designation the autocratic title of dominus, which the better of his predecessors had renounced, and with which the worse had only toyed, as Domitian, whom Martial did not hesitate to call "his lord and his god." During Severus's reign the senate was absolutely powerless; he took all initiative into his hands. He broke down the distinction between the servants of the senate and the servants of the emperor. All nominations to office or function passed under his scrutiny. The estimation of the old consular and other republican titles was diminished. The growth of capacity in the senate was effectually checked by cutting off the tallest of the poppy-heads early in the reipn. The senate became a mere registration office for the imperial determinations, and its members, as has been well said, a choir for drawling conventional hymns of praise in honour of the monarch. Even the nominal restoration of the senate's power at the time of Alexander Severus, and the accession of so-called '"senatorial emperors' later on, did not efface the work of Septimius Severus, which was resumed and carried to its fulfil- ment by Diocletian.*~~

~~*It only remains to say a few words of the emperor's attitude towards literature, art, and religion. No period in the history of Latin literature is so barren as the reign of Severus. Many later periods—the age of Stilicho, for example—shine brilliantly by con1- parison. The only great Latin writers are the Christians Tertullian and Cyprian. The Greek literature of the period is richer, but not owing to any patronage of the emperor, except perhaps in the caso of Dio Cassius, who, though no admirer of Severus, attributes to encouragement received from him the execution of the great his- torical work which has come down to our time. The numerous restorations of ancient buildings and the many new constructions carried out by Severus show that he was not insensible to the artistic glories of the past ; and he is known to have paid much attention to works of art in foreign countries where his duties took him. But he was in no sense a patron or connoisseur of art. As to religion,*~~

†

~~*if we may trust Dio, one of the most superstitious of historians, Severus was one of the most superstitious of monarchs. But apart from that it is difficult to say what was his influence on the religious currents of the time. He probably did a good deal to strengthen and extend the official cult of the imperial family, which had been greatly developed during the prosperous times of the Antonines. But what he thought of Christianity, Judaism, or the Oriental mysticism to which his wife Julia Domna gave such an impulse in the succeeding reign, it is impossible to say. We may best conclude that his religious sympathies were wide, since tradition has not painted him as the partisan of any one form of worship.*~~

~~*The energy and dominance of Severus's character and his capacity for rule may be deemed, without fancifulness, to be traceable in the numerous representations of his features which have survived to our days.*~~

~~*The authorities for this emperor's reign are fairly full and satisfactory, con- sidering the general scantiness of the imperial records. Severus himself wrote an autobiography which was regarded as candid and trustworthy on the whole. The events of the reign were recorded by several contemporaries. The first place among these must be given to Dio Cassius, who stands to the empire in much the same relation as Livy to the republic. He became a senator in the year when Marcus Aurelius died (180) and retained that dignity for more than fifty years. He was well acquainted with Severus, and was near enough the centre of affairs to know the real nature of events, without being great enough to have personal motives for warping the record. Though this portion of Dio's history no longer exists in its original form, we have copious extracts from it, made by Xiphilinus, an ecclesiastic of the 11th century. The faults which have impaired the credit of Dio's great work in its earlier portions, —his lack of the critical faculty, his inexact knowledge of the earlier Roman institutions, his passion for signs from heaven,—could do little injury to the narrative of an eye-witness; and he must here make upon the attentive reader the impression of unusual freedom from the commonest vices of history,—passion, prejudice, and insincerity, His Greek, too, stands in agreeable contrast to the debased Latin of the '*scriptores historiae Augustae." The Greek writer Herodian was also a contemporary*~~

~~*of Severus, but the mere fact that we know nothing of his life is in itself enough to show that his opportunities were not so great as those of Dio. The reputation of Herodian, who was used as the main authority for the times of Severus by Tillemont and Gibbon, has not been proof against the criticism of recent scholars. His faults are those of rhetoric and exaggeration. His narrative is probably in many places not independent of Dio. The writers known as the '"scriptores historiae Augustae" are also of considerable importance,—particularly in the lives of Didius Julianus, Severus, Pescennius Niger, and Caracalla, attributed to Alius Spartianus; those of Clodius Albinus and Opilius Macrinus to Julius Capitolinus; those of Antoninus Diadumenus, Antoninus Heliogabalus, and: Alexander Severus to Lampridius. The personal history of Severus and his family is known to us mainly through these writers. Their principal authority was most probably L. Marius Maximus, a younger contemporary of Septimius Severus, who wrote, in continuation of the work of Suetonius, the lives of eleven emperors from Trajan to Heliogabalus inclusive. 1f we may believe a few words about him dropped by Ammianus Marcellinus, he was a kind of prose Juvenal, whose uniformly dark pigments can hardly have sufficed to paint a true picture even of his own times. The very numerous inscriptions belonging to the age of Septimius Severus enable us to control at many points and largely to supplement the literary records of his reign, particularly as regards the details of his administration. The juridical works of Justinian's epoch embody much that throws light on the government of Severus.*~~

~~*The principal modern works relating to this emperor, after Tillemont and Gibbon, are—J. J. Schulte, De Imperatore L. Septimio Severo, Mtinster, 1867 ; Hofner, Untersuchungen zur Geschichte des Kaisers L. Septimius Severus, Giessen, 1875; Untersuchungen zur rémischen Katsergeschichte, ed, by M. Budinger; H. Schiller, Geschichte der rémischen Katserzeit, Gotha, 1880-83; De Ceuleneer, Essai sur la Vie et le Régne de Septime Sévére, Brussels, 1880; Réville, La Religion a Rome sous les Sévéres, Paris, 1886. Controversy about the many disputed matters pertaining to Severus has been intentionally avoided in what has been said above. (J. S. R.)*~~

~~SEVERUS, Marcus Avretivs ALEXANDER, Roman emperor from 222 to 235, was of Syrian parentage, and was born at Arca near the Syrian Tripolis (now 'Irka; Yakut, iii. 653 ; of. Gen. x. 17), probably in the year 205. HIs father Gessius Marcianus held office more than once as an imperial procurator; his mother Julia Mameza was the daughter of Julia Mesa, the scheming and ambitious lady of Emesa who had succeeded in raising her grand- son Elagabalus to the throne of the Cesars; see the genealogical table in HELIOGABALUS. HIs original name was Alexius Bassianus, but he changed it in 221, when Mesa persuaded Elagabalus to adopt his cousin as suc- cessor and create him Cesar. In the next year Elagabalus was murdered, and Alexander was proclaimed by the Preetorians and accepted by the senate. HE was then a mere lad, amiable, well-meaning, but somewhat weak, and entirely under the dominion of his mother, a woman of many virtues, who surrounded her son with wise counsel- lors, watched over the development of his character, and improved the tone of the administration, but on the other hand was inordinately jealous of her influence, and alien- ated the army by extreme parsimony, while neither she nor her son had a strong enough hand to keep tight the reins of military discipline. Mutinies became frequent in all parts of the empire: to one of them the life of the prectorian prefect Ulpian was sacrificed ; another compelled~~

~~the retirement of Dion Cassius from his command (see Dron). On the whole, however, the reign of Alexander Severus was prosperous till he was summoned to the East to face the new power of the Sdsdnians (see PErsta, vol. xviii. p. 607). Of the war that followed we have very various accounts; Mommsen (vol. v. p. 420 sq.) leans to that which is least favourable to the Romans. At all events, though the Persians were checked for the time, the conduct of the Roman army showed an extraordinary lack of discipline. The emperor returned to Rome and celebrated a triumph (233), but next year he was called to face German invaders in Gaul, and there was slain with his mother in a mutiny which was probably led by Maximinus, and at any rate purchased him the throne. Whatever the personal virtues of Alexander were, and they have~~

~~*not lost by contrast with his successor's brutal tyranny, he was not of the stuff to rule a military empire.*~~

~~*SEVERUS, Sunptrcrus (c. 365-c. 425), early Christian writer. A native of Aquitania, he was thoroughly imbued with the culture of his country and time. The seven southern provinces of Gaul, between the Alps and the Loire, had long been completely Romanized. The very name "Gaul" was repudiated by the inhabitants and confined to the natives of the ruder northern districts. The lifetime of Severus exactly coincided with the period of greatest literary development in Aquitania, then the truest or only true home of Latin letters and learning — their last place of refuge, from which Severus saw them driven before he closed his eyes on the world. Almost all that we know of his life comes from a few allusions in his own writings, and some passages in the letters of his friend Paulinus, bishop of Nola. In his early days he was famous as a pleader in the courts, and his knowledge of Roman law is reflected in parts of his writings. He married a wealthy lady belonging to a consular family, who died young, leaving him no children. At this time Severus came under the powerful influence of St Martin, bishop of Tours, by whom he was led to devote his wealth to the Christian poor, and his own powers to a life of good works and meditation. To use the words of his friend Paulinus, he broke with his father, followed Christ, and set the teachings of the " fishermen" far above all his " Tullian learning." He rose to no higher rank in the church than that of presbyter. His time was passed chiefly in the neighbourhood of Toulouse, and such literary efforts as he permitted to himself were made in the interests of Christianity. In many respects no two men could be more unlike than Severus, the scholar and orator, well versed in the ways of the world, and Martin, the rough Pannonian bishop of Tours, ignorant of learning, sus- picious of culture, the champion of the monastic life, the seer of visions, and the worker of miracles. Yet the spirit of the rugged saint subdued that of the polished scholar, and the works of Severus would have little importance now did they not reflect the ideas, influence, and aspira- tions of Martin, the foremost ecclesiastic of Gaul, and one of the most striking figures in the church of his day.*~~

~~*The chief work of Severus is the Chronica, a summary of sacred history from the beginning of the world to his own times, with the ontission of the*~~

~~*events recorded in the Gospels and the Acts, "lest the form of his brief work should detract from the honour due to those events." The book was in fact a text-book, and was actually used as such in the schools of Europe for about a century and a half after the editio princeps was published by Flacius Illyricus in 1556. Severus nowhere clearly points to the class of readers for whom his book is designed. He disclaims the inten- tion of making his work a substitute for the actual narrative contained in the Bible. "Worldly historians" had been used by him, he says, to make clear the dates and the connexion of events and for supplementing the sacred sources, aud with the intent at one and the same time to instruct the unlearned and to "convinee " the learned. Probably the "unlearned " are the mass of Christians and the learned are the cultivated Christians and*~~

~~*pPEVERUS*~~

~~*pagans alike, to whom the rude language of the sacred te*~~

~~*t whether in their Greek or their Latin form, would be distastedie*~~

~~*The literary structure of the narrative itself slows that Severus had in his mind principally readers on the same level of culture*~~

~~*with himself. He was anxious to show that sacred histo might be presented in a form which lovers of Sallust and Tacitus could appreciate and enjoy. The style is lucid and almost classical. 'Though phrases and even sentences from many classical authors are inwoven here and there, the narvative flows on easily, with no trace of the jolts and jerks which offend us in almost every line of a patchwork imitator of the classies like Sidonius, In order that his work might fairly stand beside that of the old Latin writers, Severus boldly ignored the allegorical methods of interpreting sacred history to which the heretics and the orthodox of the.age were alike wedded. Possibly he was not unshaken in his adherence to the peculiar reading which nearly all men then ee to the maxim that "the letter killeth but the spirit maketh alive.*~~

~~*As an authority for times antecedent to his own, Severus is of little moment. At only a few points does he enable us to correct or supplement*~~

other records. Bernays has shown that he based his uarrative of the destruction of Jerusalem by Titus on the account given by Tacitus in his " Histories," a portion of which has been lost. We are enabled thus to contrast Tacitus with Josephus, who warped his narrative to do honour to Titus. In his allusions to the Gentile rulers with whom the Jews came into contact from the time of the Maccabees onwards, Severus dis- closes some points which are not without importance. But the real interest of his work lies, first, in the incidental glimpses it affords all through of the history of his own time, next and more particularly, in the information he has preserved coneerning the struggle over the Priscillianist heresy, which disorganized and degraded the churches of Spain and Gaul, and particularly affected Aquitaine. The sympathies here betrayed by Severus are wholly those of St Martin. The stout bishop had withstood to his face Maximus, who ruled for some years a large part of the western portion of the empire, though he never conquered Italy. IIe had reproached him with attacking and overthrowing his predecessors on the throne, and for his dealings with the church. Severus loses no opportunity presented by his narrative for laying stress on the crimes and follies of rulers, and on their cruelty, though he once declares that, cruel as rulers could be, priests could be crueller still. This last statement has referenee to the bishops who had left Maximus no peace till he had stained his hands with the blood of Priscillian and his followers. Martin, too, had denouneed the worldliness and greed of the Gaulish bishops and clergy. Aecord- ingly we find that Severus, in narrating the division of Canaan among the tribes, calls the special attention of ecclesiastics to the fact that no portion of the land was assigned to the tribe of Levi, lest they should be hindered in their service of God. " Our elergy seem," he says, "not merely forgetful of the lesson but ignorant of it, such a passion for possessious has in our days fastened like a pesti- lence on their souls. They are greedy of property, and tend their estates and hoard their gold, and buy and sell and give their minds to gain. Those of them who are reputed to be of better prineiples, who neither hold property nor barter, sit and wait for gifts, and pollute all the grace of their lives by taking fees, while they almost make market of their holiness; but I have digressed farther than I intended, through vexation and weariness of the present age." We here catch an interesting glimpse of the circumstances which were winning over good men to monasticism in the West, though the evi- dence of an enthusiastic

~~votary of the solitary life, such as Severus was, is probably not free from exaggeration. Severus also fully sympathized with the action of St Martin touching Priscillianism. This mysterious Western offshoot of Gnosticism had no single feature about it which could soften the hostility of a character such as Martin's was, but he staunchly resisted the introduction of secular punishment for evil doctrine, and withdrew from communion with those bishops in Gaul, a large majority, who invoked the aid of Maximus against their erring brethren. In this connexion it is interesting to note the account given by Severus of the synod held at Rimini in 359, where the question arose whether the bishops attending the assembly might lawfully receive money from the imperial treasury to recoup their travelling and otlier expenses. Severus evidently approves the action of the British and Gaulish bishops, who deemed it unbecoming that they should lie under pecuniary obligation to the emperor. HIs ideal of the church required that it should stand clear of and above the state.~~

~~After the Chronica the chief work of Severus is his Life of Martin, a contribution to popular Christian literature whieh did much to establish the great reputation which that wonder- working saint maintained throughout the Middle Ages. The book is not properly a biography, but a catalogue of miracles, told in all the simplicity of absolute belief. The power to work miraculous signs is assumed to be in direct proportion to holiness, and is by Severus valued merely as an evidence of holiness, which he 1s persuaded can only be attained through a life of isolation from the~~

~~world. In the first of his dialogues Severus puts into the mouth of an interlocutor a most pleasing description of the life of ccenobites and solitaries in the deserts bordering on Egypt. The main evidence of the virtue attained by them lies in the voluntary subjection to them of the savage beasts among which they lived. But Severus was no indiscriminating adherent of monasticism. The same dialogue shows him to be alive to its dangers and defects. The second dialogue is a large appendix to the Life of Martin, and really supplies more information of his life as bishop and of his views than the work which bears the title Vita~~

~~*S. Martini. The two dialogues occasionally make interesting references to personages of the cpoch. In Dial. 1, ec. 6, 7, we have a vivid picture of the controversics which raged at Alexandria over the works of Origen. The judgment of Severus himself is no doubt that which he puts in the mouth of his interlocutor Postumianus: "Iam astonished that one and the same man could have so far differed from himself that in the approved portion of his works he has no equal since the apostles, while in that portion for which he is justly blamed it is proved that no man has committed more unseemly errors." Three epistles complete the list of Severus's genuine works. He is said to have been led away in his old age by Pelagianism, but to have repented and inflicted long-enduring penance on himself.*~~

~~*The text of the Chronica rests on a single MS., one of the Palatine eollection now in the Vatican; of the other works MSS. are abundant. Some spurious letters bear the name of Severus; also ina MS. at Madrid is a work falsely professing to be an epitome of the Chronica of Severus, and going down to 511. The chief editions of the complete works of Severus are those by De Prato (Verona, 1741) and by Halm (forming vol. i. of the Corpus Scriptorum Ecclesiasticorum Latinorum, Vienna, 1866). There is a most admirable mono- graph on the Chronica by Bernays (Berlin, 1861). (J. 8. R.)*~~

~~*SEVIGNE, MarizE DE RABUTIN-CHANTAL, MARQUISE DE (1626-1696), the most charming of all letter-writers in all languages, was born at Paris on February 6, 1626, and died at the chateau of Grignan (Dréme), on April 18, 1696. The family of Rabutin (if not so illustrious as Bussy, Madame de Sévigné's notorious cousin, affected to consider it) was one of great age and distinction in Burgundy. It was traceable in documents to the 12th century, and the castle which gave it name still existed, though in ruins, in Madame de Sévigné's time. The family had been "gens d'épée" for the most part, though Francois de Rabutin, the author of valuable memoirs on the sixth decade of the 16th century, undoubtedly belonged to it. It is said that Bussy's silly vanity led him to exclude this Frangois from the genealogy of his house because he had not occupied any high position. Marie's father, Celse Bénigne de Rabutin, Baron de Chantal, was the son of the celebrated "Sainte" Chantal, friend and disciple of St Francis of Sales; her mother was Marie de Coulanges.*~~

~~*Celse de Rabutin shared to the full the mania for duelling which was the curse of the gentlemen of France during the first half of the 17th century, and was frequently in danger both directly from his adversaries and indirectly from the law. He died, however, in a more legitimate manner, being killed during the English descent on the Isle of Rhé in July 1627. His wife did not survive him many years, and Marie was left an orphan at the age of seven years and a few months. She then passed into the care of her grand- parents on the mother's side; but they were both aged, and the survivor of them, Philippe de Coulanges, died in 1636, Marie being then ten years old. According to French custom a family council was held to select a guardian of the young heiress, for such she was to some extent. Her uncle Christophe de Coulanges, Abbé de Livry, was chosen. He was somewhat young for the guardianship of a girl, being only twenty-nine, but readers of his niece's letters know how well "'Le Bien Bon"—for such is his name in Madame de Sévigné's little language—acquitted himself of the trust. He lived till within ten years of his ward's death, and long after his nominal functions were ended he was in all matters of business the good angel of the family, while for half a century his abbacy of Livry was the favourite residence, both of his niece and her daughter. Coulanges was much more of a man of business than of a man of letters, but either choice or the fashion of the time induced him to make of his niece a learned lady. Chapelain and Ménage are specially mentioned as her*~~

†

~~*703*~~

~~*tutors, and Ménage at least fell in love with her, in which point he resembled the rest of the world, and was constant to his own habits in regard to his pupils. Tallemant des Réaux gives more than one instance of the cool and good- humoured raillery with which she received his passion, and the earliest letters of hers that we possess are addressed to Ménage. Another literary friend of her youth was the poet Saint-Pavin. Among her own sex she was intimate with all the coterie of the Hétel Rambouillet, and her special ally was Mademoiselle de la Vergne, after- wards Madame de la Fayette. In person she was extremely attractive,*~~

~~*though the minute critics of the time (which was the palmy day of portraits in words) objected to her divers deviations from strictly regular beauty, such as eyes of different colours and sizes, a "square-ended" nose, and a somewhat heavy jaw. Her beautiful hair and com- plexion, however, were admitted even by these censors, as well as the extraordinary spirit and liveliness of her expression. Her long minority, under so careful a guardian as Coulanges, had also raised her fortune to the amount of 100,000 crowns—a large sum for the time, and one which with her birth and beauty might have allowed her to expect a very brilliant marriage. That which she finally made was certainly one of affection on her side rather than of interest. There had been some talk of her cousin Bussy, but very fortunately for her this came to nothing. She actually married Henri, Marquis de Sévigné, a Breton gentleman of a good family, and allied to the oldest houses of that province, but of no great estate. The marriage took place on August 4, 1644, and the pair went almost immediately to Sévigné's manor-house of Les Rochers, near Vitré, a place which Madame de Sévigné was in future years to immortalize. It was an unfortified chateau of no very great size, but picturesque enough, with the peaked turrets common in French architecture, and surrounded by a park and grounds of no large extent, but thickly wooded and communicating with other woods. The abundance of trees gave it the repute of being damp and somewhat gloomy. Fond, however, as Madame de Sévigné was of society, it may be suspected that the happiest days of her brief married life were spent there. For there at any rate her husband had less opportunity than in Paris of neglecting her, and of wasting her money and his own. Very little good is said of Henri de Sévigné by any of his contemporaries. He was one of the innumerable lovers of Ninon de l'Enclos, and made himself even more conspicuous with a certain Madame de Gondran, known in the nickname slang of the time as 'La Belle Lolo." He was wildly extravagant. That his wife loved him and that he did not love her was generally admitted, and the frank if somewhat coxcomb-like accounts which Bussy Rabutin gives of his own attempt and failure to persuade her to retaliate on her husband are decisive as to her virtue. At last Sévigné's pleasant vices came home to him. He quarrelled with the Chevalier d'Albret about Madame de Gondran, fought with him and was mortally wounded on the 4th of February 1651; he died two days afterwards. There is no reasonable doubt that his wife regretted him a*~~

~~*great deal more than he deserved. On two different occasions she is said to have fainted in public at the sight once of his adversary and once of his second in the fatal duel; and whatever Madame de Sévigné was (and she had several faults) she was certainly not a hypocrite. Her husband had when living accused her of coldness,—the common excuse of libertine husbands,—but even he seems to have found fault only with her temperament, not with her heart. To close this part of the subject it may be said that though only six and twenty, and more beautiful than ever, she never married again despite frequent offers, and that no aspersion was*~~

~~*ever thrown save in one instance on her fame. For the rest of her life, which was long, she gave herself up to her children. 'These were two in number, and they divided their mother's affections by no means equally. The eldest was a daughter, Francoise Marguerite de Sévigné, who was born on October 10, 1646, whether at Les Rochers or in Paris is not absolutely certain. The second, a son, Charles de Sévigné, was born at Les Rochers in the spring of 1648. To him Madame de Sévigné was an indulgent, a generous (though not altogether just), and in a way an affectionate mother. Her daughter, the future Madame de Grignan, she worshipped with an almost insane affection, which only its charming literary results and the delightful qualities which accompanied it in the worshipper, though not in the worshipped, save from being ludicrous if not revolting. As it is, not one in a hundred of Madame de Sévigné's readers can find in his heart to be angry with her for her devotion to a very undivine divinity.*~~

~~*After her husband's death Madame de Sévigné passed the greater part of the year 1651 in retirement at Les Rochers. She had, however, no intention of renouncing the world, and she returned to Paris in November of that year, her affairs having been put in such order as Sévigné's extravagance permitted by the faithful Coulanges. For nearly ten years little of importance occurred in her life, which was passed at Paris in a house she occupied in the Place Royale (not as yet in the famous Hétel Carnavalet), at Les Rochers, at Livry, or at her own estate of Bourbilly in the Maconnais. She had, however, in 1658 a quarrel with her cousin*~~

~~*Bussy, which had not unimportant results, and at the end of the time mentioned above she narrowly escaped being compromised in reputation, though not poli- tically, at Fouquet's downfall. Notwithstanding Bussy's unamiable character and the early affair of the proposed marriage, and notwithstanding also his libertine conduct towards her, the cousins had always been friends; and the most amusing and characteristic part of Madame de Sévigné's correspondence, before the date of her daughter's marriage, is addressed to him. She had a very strong belief in family ties; she recognized in Bussy a kindred spirit, and she excused his faults as Rabutinades and Rabutinages—the terms she uses in alluding to the rather excitable and humorist temper of the house. But in 1658 a misunderstanding about money brought about a quarrel, which in its turn had a long sequel, and results not unimportant in literature. Bussy and his cousin had jointly come in for a considerable legacy, and he asked her for a loan. If this was not positively refused, there was a difficulty made about it, and Bussy was deeply offended. A year later, at the escapade of Roissy (see Rasputin), according to his own account, he improvised (according to probability he had long before written it) the famous portrait of Madame de Sévigné which appears in his notorious Histoire Amoureuse, and which is a triumph of malice. Circulated at first in manuscript and afterwards in print, this caused Madame de Sévigné the deepest pain and indignation, and the quarrel between the cousins was not fully made up for years, if indeed it was ever fully made up. 'This portrait, however, was more wounding to self-love than in any way really dangerous, for, read between the lines, it is in effect a testimonial of character. The Fouquet matter was more serious. The superin- tendent was a famous lady-killer, but Madame de Sévigné, though he was her friend, and though she had been ardently courted by him as by others (one quarrel in her presence between the Duke de Rohan and the Marquis de Tonquedec had become notorious), had hitherto escaped scandal. At Fouquet's downfall in 1651 it was announced on indubitable authority that communications from her had been found in the coffer where Fouquet kept his love*~~

~~*SEVIGNE*~~

~~*letters. She protested that the notes in question were of friendship merely, and Bussy (one of the not very numerous good actions of his life) obtained from Le Tellier, who ag minister had examined the letters, a corroboration of the protest. But the letters were never published, and there have always been those who held that Madaine de Sévigné regarded Fouquet with at least a very warm kind of friendship. It is certain that her letters to Pomponne describing his trial are among her masterpieces of unaffected, vivid, and sympathetic narration.*~~

~~*During these earlier years, besides the circumstances already mentioned, Madame de Sévigné conceived, like most of the better and more thoughtful among Frenchmen and Frenchwomen, a great affection for the establishment of Port Royal, which was not without its effect on her literary work. That work, however (if writing than which certainly none was ever less carried out in a spirit of mere workmanship can be so called), dates in its bulk and really important part almost entirely from the last thirty years of her life. Her letters before the marriage of her daughter, though by themselves they would suffice to give her a very high rank among letter-writers, would not do more than fill one moderate-sized volume. Those after that marriage fill nearly ten large volumes in the latest and best edition. Wedo not hear very much of Made- moiselle de Sévigné's early youth. For a short time, ata rather uncertain date, she was placed at school with the nuns of St Marie at Nantes. But for the most part her mother brought her up herself, assisted by the Abbé de la Mousse, a faithful friend, and for a time one of her most constant companions. La Mousse was a great Cartesian, and he made Mademoiselle de Sévigné also a devotee of the bold soldier of Touraine to a degree which even in that century of blue stockings excited surprise and some ridi- cule. But Mademoiselle de Sévigné was bent on more mundane triumphs than philosophy had to offer. Her beauty is all the more incontestable that she was by no means generally liked. ussy, a critical and not too bene- volent judge, called her "la plus jolie fille de France," and it seems to be agreed that she resembled her mother, with the advantage of more regular features. She was introduced at court early, and as she danced well she figured frequently in the ballets which were the chief amusement of the court of Louis XIV. in its early days. If, however, she was more regularly beautiful than her mother she had little*~~

~~*or nothing of her attraction, and like many other beauties who have entered society with similar expectations she did not immediately find a husband. Various projected alliances fell through for one reason or another, and it was not till the end of 1668 that her destiny was settled. On January 29 in the next year she married Frangois Adhémar, Comte de Grignan, a Provengal, of one of the noblest families of France, and a man of amiable and honourable character, but neither young nor handsome, nor in reality rich. He had been twice married and his great estates were heavily encum- bered. Neither did the large dowry (300,000 livres) which Madame de Sévigné, somewhat unfairly to her son, bestowed upon her daughter, suffice to clear encumbrances, which were constantly increased in the sequel by the extravagance of Madame de Grignan as well as of her husband.*~~

~~*Charles de Sévigné was by this time twenty years old, but he had no doubt already learnt that he was not the person of chief importance in the family. He never, throughout his life, appears to have resented his mother's preference of his sister ; but, though thoroughly amiable, he was not (at any rate in his youth) a model character. Nothing is known of his education, but just before his sister's marriage he volunteered for a rather hairbrained*~~

~~*all*~~

~~*ShvVIGN EB*~~

~~*expedition to Crete against the Turks, and served with credit. Then his mother bought him the commission of guidon (a kind of sub-cornet) in the Gendarmes Dauphin, in which regiment he served for some years, and after long complaining of the slowness of promotion rather rapidly rose to the rank of captain, when he sold out. But though he always fought well he was not an enthusi- astic soldier, and was constantly and not often fortunately in love. He followed his father into the nets of Ninon de l'Enclos, and was Racine's rival with Mademoiselle Champmeslé. The way in which his mother was made confidante of these discreditable and not very successful loves is characteristic both of the time and of the country. In 1669 M. de Grignan, who had previously been lieu- tenant-governor of Languedoc, was transferred to Provence. The governor-in-*~~

~~*chief was the young duke of Vend6dme. But at this time he was a boy, and he never really took up the government, so that Grignan for more than forty years was in effect viceroy of this important province. HIs wife rejoiced greatly in the part of vice-queen; but their peculiar situation threw on them the expenses without the emoluments of the office, and those expenses were increased by the extravagance of both, so that the Grignan money affairs hold a larger place in Madame de Sévigné's letters than might perhaps be wished.*~~

~~*In 1671 Madame de Sévigné with her son paid a visit to Les Rochers, which is memorable in her history and in literature. The states of Brittany were convoked that year at Vitré. This town being in the immediate neighbourhood of Les Rochers, Madame de Sévigné's usually quiet life at her country house was diversified by the necessity of entertaining the governor, the Duc de Chaulnes, of appearing at his receptions, and so forth. All these matters are duly consigned to record in her letters, together with much good-natured raillery (it must be admitted that it is sometimes almost on the verge of being ill-natured, though never quite over it) on the country ladies of the neighbourhood and their ways. She remained at Les Rochers during the whole summer and autumn of 1671, and did not return to Paris till late in November. The country news is then succeeded by news of the court. At the end of the next year, 1672, one great wish of her heart was gratified by paying a visit to her daughter in her vice-royalty of Provence. Madame de Grignan does not seem to have been very anxious for this visit,—perhaps because, as the letters show in many cases, the exacting affection of her mother was somewhat too strong for her own colder nature, perhaps because she feared such a witness of the ruinous extravagance which characterized the Grignan household. But her mother remained with her for nearly a year, and did not return to Paris till the end of 1673. During this time we have (as is usually the case during these Provengal visits and the visits of Madame de Grignan to Paris) some letters addressed to Madame de Sévigné, but comparatively few from her. A visit of the second class was the chief event of 1674, and the references to this, such as they are, is the chief evidence that mother and daughter were on the whole better apart. 1675 brought with it the death of Turenne (of which Madame de Sévigné has given a very noteworthy account, characteristic of her more ambitious but not*~~

~~*perhaps her more successful manner), and also serious disturbances in Brittany. Notwithstanding these it was necessary for Madame de Sévigné to make her periodical visit to Les Rochers. She reached the house in safety, and the friendship of Chaulnes protected her both from violence and from the exactions which the miserable province underwent as a punishment for its resistance to excessive and unconstitutional taxation. No small part of her letters is occupied by these affairs.*~~

~~*705*~~

~~*The year 1676 saw several things important in Madame de Sévigné's life. For the first time she was seriously ill, — it would appear with rheumatic fever, — and she did not thoroughly recover till she had visited Vichy. Her letters from this place are among her very best, and picture life at a 17th-century watering-place with unsurpassed vivid- ness. In this year, too, took place the trial and execution of Madame de Brinvilliers. This event figures in the letters, and the references to it are among those which have given occasion to unfavourable comments on Madame de Sévigné's character — comments which, with others of the kind, will be more conveniently treated together. In the next year, 1677, she moved into the Hétel Carna- valet, a house which still remains and is inseparably connected with her memory, and she had the pleasure of welcoming the whole Grignan family to it. They remained there a long time; indeed nearly two years seem to have been spent by Madame de Grignan partly in Paris and partly at Livry. The return to Provence took place in October 1678, and next year Madame de Sévigné had the grief of losmg La Rochefoucauld, the most eminent and one of the most intimate of her closo personal friends and constant associates. In 1680 she again visited Brittany, but the close of that year saw her back in Paris to receive another and even longer visit from her daughter, who remained in Paris for four years. Before the end of the last year of this stay (in February 1684) Charles de Sévigné, after all his wandering loves, and after more than one talked-of alliance, was married*~~

~~*'to a young Breton lady, Jeanne Marguerite de Mauron,*~~

~~*who had a considerable fortune. In the arrangements for this marriage Madame de Sévigné practically divided all her fortune between her*~~

children (Madame de Grignan of course receiving an unduly large share), and reserved only part of the life interest. The greed of Madame de Grignan nearly broke her brother's marriage, but it was finally concluded and proved a very happy one in a some- what singular fashion. Both Sévigné and his wife became deeply religious, and at first Madame de Sévigné found their household (for she gave up Les Rochers to them) not at all lively. But by degrees she grew fond of her daughter-in-law. During this year she spent a consider- able time in Brittany, first on business, afterwards on a visit to her son, and partly it would appear for motives of economy. But Madame de Grignan still continued with only short absences to inhabit Paris, and the mother and daughter were practically in each other's company until 1688. The proportion of letters therefore that we have for the decade 1677-1687 is much smaller than that which represents the decade preceding it ; indeed the earlier period contains the great bulk of the whole corre- spondence. In 1687 the Abbé de Coulanges, Madame de Sévigné's uncle and good angel, died, and in the following year the whole family were greatly excited by the first campaign of the young Marquis de Grignan, Madame de Grignan's only son, who was sent splendidly equipped to the siege of Philippsbourg. In the same year Madame de Sévigné was present at the St Cyr performance of Zsther, and some of her most amusing descriptions of court cere- monies and experiences date from this time. 1689 and 1690 were almost entirely spent by her at Les Rochers with her son; and on leaving him she went across France to Provence. There was some excitement during her Breton stay, owing to the rumour of an English descent, on which occasion the Breton militia was called out, and Charles de Sévigné appeared for the last time as a soldier ; but it came to nothing. 1691 was passed at Grignan and other places in the south, but at the end of it Madame de Sévigné returned to Paris, bringing the Grignans with her; and her daughter stayed with her till 1694. The XXI. — 89

706

year 1693 saw the loss of two of her oldest friends,—Bussy Rabutin, her faithless and troublesome but in his own way affectionate cousin, and Madame de la Fayette, her life- long companion, and on the whole perhaps her best and wisest friend. Another friend almost as intimate,

~~*Madame de Lavardin, followed in 1694. Madame de Sévigné spent but a few months of this latter year alone, and followed her daughter to Provence. She never revisited Brittany after 1691. Two important marriages with their preparations occupied most of her thoughts during 1694-1695. The young Marquis de Grignan married the daughter of Saint-Amant, an immensely rich financier ; but his mother's pride, ill-nature, and bad taste (she is said to have remarked in full court that it was necessary now and then to "manure the best lands," referring to Saint-Amant's wealth, low birth, and the Grignan's nobility) made the marriage not a very happy one. His sister Pauline, who, in the impossibility of dowering her richly, had a narrow escape of the cloister, made a marriage of affection with M. de Simiane, and eventually became the sole representative and continuator of the families of Grignan and Sévigné.*~~

~~*Madame de Sévigné survived these alliances but a very short time. During an illness of her daughter she herself was attacked by smallpox in April 1696, and she died on the 17th of that month at Grignan, and was buried there. Her idolized daughter was not present during any time of her illness; it has been charitably hoped that she was too ill herself. Her known attention to her own good looks, and the terror of the smallpox which then prevailed, supply perhaps a less charitable but sufficient explanation. But in her will Madame de Sévigné still showed her prefer-ence for this not too grateful child, and Charles de Sévigné accepted his mother's wishes in a letter showing the good- nature which he had never lacked, and the good sense which, after his early follies, and even in a way during them, he had also shown. But the two families were, except as has been said for Madame de Simiane and her posterity, to be rapidly broken up. Charles de Sévigné and his wife had no children, and he himself, after occupy- ing some public posts (he was king's lieutenant in Brittany in 1697), went with his wife into religious retirement at Paris in 1703, and after a time sequestered himself still more in the seminary of Sainte-Magloire, where he died on March 26, 1713. His widow survived him twenty years, Madame de Grignan had died on August 16, 1705, at a country house near Marseilles, of the very disease which she had tried to escape by not visiting her dying mother. Her son, who had fought at Blenheim, had died of the same malady at Thionville the year before.*~~

~~*Marie Blanche, her eldest daughter, was in a convent, and, as all the Comte de Grignan's brothers had either entered the church or died unmarried, the family, already bankrupt in fortune, was extinguished in the male line by Grignan's own death in 1714, at a very great age. Madame de Simiane, whose connexion with the history of the letters is important, died in 1737.*~~

~~*The chief subjects of public interest and the principal family events of importance which are noticed in the letters of Madame de Sévigné have been indicated already. But, as will readily be understood, neither the whole nor even the chief interest of her correspondence is confined to such things. In the latest edition the letters extend to sixteen or seventeen hundred, of which, how- ever, a considerable number (perhaps a third) are replies of other*~~

~~*ersons or letters addressed to her, or letters of her family and riends having more or less connexion with the subjects of her cor- respondenee. As a rule her own letters, especially those to her daughter, are of great length. Writing as she did in a time when newspapers were not, or at lcast were scanty and jcjune, gossip of all sorts appears among her subjects, and some of her most famous letters are pure reportage (to use a modern French slang term),*~~

~~*while others deal with strictly private subjects. Thus one of her best known pieces has for subjcct the famous suicide of the great*~~

~~*SEVIGNE*~~

~~*cook Vatel owing to a misunderstanding as to the provision of fish for an entertainment given to the king by Condé at Chantilly Another (one of the most characteristic of all) deals with the projected marriage of Lauzun and Mademoiselle de Montpensier — another with the refusal of one of her own footmen to turn hay- maker when it was important to get the crop in at Les Rochers: another with the fire which burnt out her neighbour's house in Paris. At one moment she tells how a forward lady of honour was disconcerted in offering certain services at Mademoiselle's levée ; at another how ill a courtier's clothes became him. She enters, as has been said, at great length into the pecuniary difficulties of her daughter; she*~~

~~*tells the most extraordinary stories of the fashion in which Charles de Sévigné sowed his wild oats; she takes an almost ferocious interest and side in her daughter's quarrels with rival beauties or great officials in Provence who throw difficulties in the way of government.*~~

~~*Almost all writers of literary letters since Madame de Seviené's days, or rather since the publication of her correspondenee, haye imitated her morc or less directly, more or less consciously, and it is thercfore only by applying that historic estimate upon which all true criticism rests that her full value can be discerned. The charm of her work is, however, so irresistible that, read even with- out any historical knowledge and in the comparatively adulterated editions in which it is generally met with, that charm can hardly be missed. Madame de Sévigné was a member of the strong and original group of writers—Retz, La Rochefoucauld, Corneille, Paseal, St Evremond, Descartes, and the rest—who escaped the finieal and weakening reforms of the later 17th century, while for the most part they had profited by those earlier reforms which sueceeded the classicizing of the Pléiade and the imitation of Spanish and Italian which marred some early work of Louis XIII.'s time. According to the strictest standard of the Academy her phraseology is sometimes incorrect, and it occasionally shows traces of the quaint and affected style of the Précieuses ; but these things only add to its savour and piquancy. In lively narration few writers have excelled her, and in the natural expression of domestic affection and maternal affection none. She had an all-observant eye for trifles and the keenest possible appreciation of the ludicrous, together with a hearty relish for all sorts of amusements, pageants, and diversions, and a deep though not voluble or over-sensitive sense of the beauties of nature. But with all this she had an understanding as solid as her temper was gay. Unlike her daughter she was not a professed blue-stocking or philosophess. But she had a strong affection for theology, in which she inclined (like the great majority of the religious and intelligent laity of her time in France) to the Jansenist side. Her favourite author in this class was Nicole. She has been reproached with her fondness for the romances of Mlle. de Scudéry and the rest of her school. But probably many persons who make that reproach have themselves never read the works they despise, and are ignorant how much merit there is in books whose chief faults are that they are written in a strongly marked and now*~~

~~*obsolete fashion, and that their length (which, however, scarcely if at all exceeds that of Clarissa) is preposterous. In purely literary criticism Madame de Sévigné, few as were the airs she gave herself, was no mean expert. Her preference for Corneille over Racine has much more in it than the fact that the elder poet had been her favourite before the younger began to write ; and her remarks on La Fontaine and some other authors are both judicious and independent. Nor is she wanting in original reflexions of no ordinary merit. All these things, added to her abundance of amusing matter and the charm of her bright and ceaselessly flowing style, fully account for the unchanged and undiminished delight which half a dozen generations have taken in her work. But it cannot be repeated too often that to enjoy that work in its most enjoyable point—the combination of fluent and easy style with quaint archaisms and tricks of phrase—it must be read as she wroteit, and not in the trimmed and corrected version of Perrin and Madame de Simiane.*~~

~~*There can, moreover, be no onc, however wedded he may be to the plan of criticizing litcrature as literature, who will not admit that great part of the interest and valuc of these remarkable works lies in the picture of character which they present. Indeed, great part of their purely literary merit lies in the extraordinary vivid- ness of this very presentation. Madame de Sévigné's characeter, however, has not united quite such a unanimity of suffrage as her ability in writing. In her own time there were not wanting enemies (indeed her unsparing partisanship on her daughters side could not fail to provoke such) who maintained that her letters were written for effect, and that her affection for her daughter was ostentatious and unreal. But few modern erities have followed these detractors, and it may be said confidently that no competent judge of character, after patiently reading the letters, can for a moment admit their view. But this kind of enemy has been followed by another, who, not overshooting his mark so con- spicuously, has been somewhat more successful in persuading spectators that he has hit it. Her excessive affection for Madame de Grignan (the almost importunate character of which seems to*~~

~~*be proved by her own confessions of unhappiness if not of quarrel when they were together) ; her unhesitating blindness to anything but her daughter's interest (manifested especially in the part she took in most unjustifiable attempts of Madame de Grignan to secure her stepdaughters' dowries and to force themselves into a convent) ; her culpable tolerance of her son's youthful follies on the one hand and the uneven balance which she held in money matters between him and his sister on the other ; the apparent levity with which she speaks of the sufferings of Madame de Brinvilliers, of galley slaves, of the peasantry, &c.; and the freedoni of language which she uses herself and tolerates from others, — have all been cast up against her. Here the before-mentioned historic estimate sufficiently disposes of some of the objections, a little common sense of others, and a very little charity of the rest. If too much love felt by a mother towards a daughter be a fault, then certainly Madame de Sévigné was one of the most offending souls that ever lived ; but it will hardly, even with the injustice which like all excessive affection it brought in its train, be held damning. Indeed, the guilty lady was evidently quite aware of her weakness in this respect, and it is one of the most noteworthy things of her literary capacity that, excessive as the weakness is, it does not dis- gust or weary the reader. The singular confidences which Madame de Sévigné received from her son and transmitted to her daughter would even at the present day be less surprising in France than in England. They are only an instance, adjusted to the manners of the time, of the system of sacrificing everything to the mainten- ance of confidence between mother and son, to which the almost invariable,and to foreigners sometimes rather ludicrous, but certainly not unamiable, adoration of Frenchmen for their mothers is duc. Here too, as well as in reference to the immediately kindred charge of crudity of language, and to that of want of sympathy with suffer- ing, especially with the sufferings of the people, it is especially necessary to remember of what generation Madame de Sévigné was and what were her circumstances. That generation was the generation which Madame de Rambouillet endeavoured with some success to polish and humanize, but which had barely recovered the hardening influences of the religious and civil wars when it was plunged into the Fronde. It was the generation to which belong the almost incredible yet trustworthy Historicttes of Tallemant, and in which, when she herself had already reached middle*~~

~~*life, Bussy Rabutin's Histoire Amoureuse exposed him indeed to powerful resentments but did not make him lose all caste as a gentleman and man of honour. It is absurd to expect at such a time and in private letters the delicacy proper to quite different times and circumstances. Moreover, as to the charge of inhumanity not only do these considerations apply but there is more to be pleaded than mere extenuating circumstances, It is not true that Madame de Sévigné shows no sympathy with the oppression of the Bretons; it is very far from true, though her incnrable habit of humorous expression—of Rabutinage, as she says—makes her occasionally use light phrases about the matter. "But it is in fact as unreasonable to expect modern political views from her (and it is from certain modern political standpoints that the charge is usually made) as it is to expect her to observe the canons of a 19th-century propriety. On the whole she may be as fairly and confidently acquitted of any moral fault, save the one peccadillo of loving her daughter too exclusively and blindly, as she may be acquitted of all literary faults whatsoever. Her letters are wholly, what her son-in-law said well of her after her death, compagnons délicieusx ; and, far from faultless as Madame de Grignan was, none of her faults is more felt by the reader than her long visits to her mother, during which the letters ceased.*~~

~~*The bibliographic history of Madame de Sévigné's letters is of considerable interest in itself, and is moreover typical of much other contemporary literary history. The 17th century was par excellence the century of privately circulated literature, and from Madame de Sévigné herself we know that her own letters were copied and handed about, sometimes under specified titles, as early as 1673. None of them, however, were published until her cor- respondence with Bussy Rabutin appeared, in his Memoirs and Correspondence, partly in the year of her death, partly next year. The remainder were not printed in any form for thirty years. Then between 1725 and 1728 appeared no less than seven un-authorized editions, containing more or fewer additions from the copies which had been circulated privately. The bibliography of these is complicated and curious, and must be sought in special works (see especially the Grands Ecrivains edition, vol. xi.). They have, however, abiding interest chiefly because they stirred up Madame de Simiane, the writer's only living representative, to give an authorized version. This*~~

~~*appeared under the care of the Chevalier de Perrin in 6 vols. (Paris, 1734-37). It contained only the letters to Madame de Grignan, and these were subjected to editing rather careful than conscientions, the results of which were never thoroughly removed until qnite recently. In the first place, Madame de Simiane, who possessed her mother's replies, is said to have burnt the whole of these from religious motives ; this phrase is explained by Madame de Grignan's Cartesianism, which is*~~

~~*supposed to have led her to expressions alarming to orthodoxy. In the second, scruples partly having to do with the susceptibilities of living persons, partly concerning Jansenist and other prejudices, made her insist on numerous omissions. Thirdly, and most un- fortunately, the change of taste seems to have required still more numerous alterations of style and language, such as the substitu- tion of "Ma Fille" for Madame de Sévigné's usual and charming "*Ma Bonne," and many others. Perrin followed this edition up in 1751 with a volume of supplementary letters not addressed to Madame de Grignan, and in 1754 published his last edition of the whole, which was long the standard (8 vols., Paris). During the last half of the 18th century numerous editions of the whole or parts appeared with important additions, such as that of 1756, giving for the first time the letters to Pomponne on the Fouquet trial ; that of 1773, giving letters to Moulceau ; that of 1775, giving for the first time the Bussy letters separate from his memoirs, &c. An important collected edition of all these fragments, by the Abbé de Vauxcelles, appeared in 1801 (Paris, An 1X.) in 10 vols.; five years later Gouvelle (Paris, 1806, 8 vols.) introduced the improvement of chronological order ; this was reprinted in 12 vols. (Paris, 1819) with some more unpublished letters which had separately appeared meanwhile. In the same year appeared the first edition of M. de Monmerqué. From that date continual additions of unpublished letters were made, in great part by the same editor, and at last the whole was remodelled on manuscript copies (the originals unfor- tunately are available for but few) in the edition called Des Grands*~~

~~*crivains, which M. de Monmerqué began, but which owing to his death had to be finished by MM. Regnier, Paul Mesnard, and Sommer (Paris,*~~

~~*1862-1868). This, which entirely supersedes all others (even a handsome edition published during its appearance by M. Silvestre de Sacy), consists of twelve volumes of text, notes, &c., two volumes of lexicon, and an album of plates. It contains all the published letters to and from Madame de Sévigné, with the replies where they exist, with all those letters to and from Madame de Simiane (many of which had been added to the main body) that contain any interest. The sole fault to be found with this excellent edition is the omission to add to each volume a table of contents giving each letter as it comes with a brief abstract of its contents. To it, however, must be added two volumes (printed uniformly) of Lettres Inédites, published by M. Ch. Capmas in 1876 and containing numerous variants and additions from a MS. copy discovered in an old curiosity shop at Dijon. Of less elaborate and costly editions that in the collection Didot (6 vols., Paris, v.d.) is by far the best, though, in common with all others except the Grands Ecrivains edition, it contains an adulterated text.*~~

~~*Works on Madame de Sévigné are innumerable. The biography by Paul Mesnard is nearly exhaustive, but the most elaborate biographical book is that of Walckenaer (3d ed., Paris, 1856, 5 vols.), to which should be added the remark- able Histoire de Mme, de Sévignd of Aubcnas (Paris and St Petersburg, 1842). In English an excellent little book by Miss Thackeray (Mrs Ritchie), Edinburgh and aga 1881, may be recommended. Most of the editions have portraits more or fewer,*~~

~~*SEVILLE, a Spanish province—one of the eight into which Andalusia is divided—and formerly one of the four Moorish kingdoms, is bounded on the §. by Malaga and Cadiz, on the W. by Huelva, on the N. by Badajoz, and on the E. by Cordova. The superficial area is 5429 square miles, and in 1877 the population numbered 505,291. Northwards the province is broken up by low spurs of the Sierra Morena, the summits of which in the extreme north rise to a considerable height; but in the southern and larger half the ground is flat and fertile, and the only mountainous part is the frontier line formed by the Sierra de Ronda. The Guadalquivir traverses the province from north-east to south-west and receives in its course the waters of several streams, the chief being the Genil and the Guadaira on the left, and the Guadalimar to the right. The province is*~~

~~one of the most productive and flourishing in Spain, and grows all kinds of grain and vegetables. Oil and wine, oranges and olives, are among its chief exports, while tobacco, leather, paper, spirits, chocolate, textile fabrics of silk and wool, soap, glass, and earthen- ware are amongst its manufactures. Sheep and oxen, horses and asses, are reared on its pastures; and in the mountainous districts there are copper, silver, lead, iron, coal, and salt mines, and quarries of chalk and marble. Commerce has made great strides of late years owing to the opening up of the country by railways, and foreign capital has developed the natural resources of the district. The province is divided for administrative purposes into fourteen partidos judiciales and ninety-eight ayuntamientos,~~

~~and is represented in the cortes by four senators and Almoravids. 'The later years of the Almoravid rule were twelve deputies. The following towns have a population | very oppressive to the Moslems of Spain; in 1133 the of more than 10,000 within the municipal boundaries :— people of Seville were prepared to welcome the victorious Seville (see below), Carmona (17,426), Constantina | arms of Alphonso VIL, and eleven years later Andalusia 10,988), Ecija (24,955), Lebrija (12,864), Marchena broke out in general rebellion. Almohade troops now (13,768), Moron de la Frontera (14,879), Osuna (17,211), | passed over into Spain and took Seville in 1147. Under d Utrera (15,093). the Almohades Seville was the seat of government and SEVILLE (Span. Sela, Latin Ispalis, Arabic Ishbi- enjoyed great prosperity ; the great mosque was com- liya), capital of the above province and the seat of an | menced by Yusuf I. and completed by his son the famous archbishopric, with a population of 133,938 in 1877, is | Almanzor. In the decline of the dynasty between 1228 situated in 37° 22' N. lat. and . — 5° 58' W. long., 62 miles (95 by rail) north-north-east of Cadiz and 355 miles south- south-west of Madrid, on the left bank of the Guadal- quivir, which here flows through a level country as productive as a garden. The river is navigable up to the city, which is highly pictur- esque in its combination of ancient buildings with busy commerce. From the earliest times the port has been a chief outlet for the wealth of Spain. Under the Romans the city was made the capital~~

~~of Betica, and became a favourite resort for wealthy Romans. 'The emperors Hadrian, Trajan, and Theo- dosius were born in the neighbourhood at Ttalica (now Santiponce) where are the remains of a considerable amphitheatre. The chief existing monument of the Romans in Seville itself isthe aqueduct, on four hundred | and ten arches, by which the } water from Alcala de Gua- } dairacontinued until recently to be supplied to the town. At the beginning of the 5th century the Silingi Vandals made Seville the seat of their empire, until it passed in 531 under the Goths, who chose Toledo for their capital. After the defeat of Don Roderick at Guadalete in 712 the Arabs took posses- sion of the city after a siege of some months. Under the Arabs Seville continued to flourish. Edrisi speaks in particular of its great export trade in the oil of Aljarafe. The district was in great Plan of Seville. part occupied by Syrian 'Arabs from Emesa, part of the troops that entered Spain { and 1248 Seville underwent various revolutions, and ulti- with Balj in 741 at the time of the revolt of the Berbers. It mately acknowledged the Hafsite prince, who, however, was a scion of one of these Emesan families, Abu '1-Kasim | was unable to save the city from Ferdinand IJI., who Mohammed, cadi of Seville, who on the fall of the Spanish | restored +t to Christendom in 1248. The aspect of the caliphate headed the revolt of his townsmen against their | town even now is essentially Moorish, with its narrow tortu- Berber masters (1023) and became the founder of the | ous streets and fine inner court-yards to the houses. Many Abbadid dynasty, of which Seville was capital, and which of these date from before the Christian conquest, and the lasted under his son Mo'tadid (1042-1069) and grandson | walls and towers which until recently encircled the city for Mo'tamid (1069-1091) till the city was taken by the | a length of 5 miles have a similar origin. The victory of~~

~~an~~

~~mi VIL iE~~

~~Ferdinand brought temporary ruin on the city, for it is said that 400,000 of the inhabitants went into volun- tary exile, and some time clapsed before Seville recovered fron. the loss. But its position was too favourable for trade for it to fall into permanent decay, and by the 15th century it was~~

~~*again in a position to derive full benefit from the discovery of America. After the reign of Philip IL. its prosperity gradually waned with that of the rest of the Peninsula ; yet even in 1700 its silk factories gave employment to thousands of work- people ; their numbers, however, by the end of the 18th century had fallen to four hundred. In 1800 an out. break of yellow fever carried off 30,000 of the inhab- itants, and in 1810 the city suffered severely from the French under Soult, who plundered to the extent of six millions sterling. Since that time it has gradually recovered prosperity, and is now one of the most busy and active centres of trade in the peninsula. Politically Seville has always had the reputation of peculiar loyalty to the throne from the time when, on the death of Ferdinand III, it was the only city which remained faithful to his son Alphonso the Wise. It was conse- quently much favoured by the monarchs, and frequently a seat of the court. In 1729 the treaty between England, France, and Spain was signed in the city; in 1808 the central junta was formed here and removed in 1810 to Cadiz; in 1823 the cortes brought the king with them from Madrid ; and in 1848 Seville combined with Malaga and Granada against Espartero, who bombarded the city but fled on the return of Queen Maria Christina to Madrid.*~~

~~*Seville contains treasures of art and architecture which make it one of the most interesting cities in Europe. The cathedral, dedi- cated to Santa Maria de la Sede, ranks in size only after St Peter's at Rome, being 415 feet long, 298 feet wide, and 150 fect high to the roof of tho nave. The west front is approached by a high flight of steps, and the platform on which the eathedral stands is surrounded by a aie shafts of columns from the mosque which formerly oecupied the site. The work of building began in 1408 aud was finished in 1519, so that the one style of Spanish Pointed Gothic is fairly preserved throughout the interior, however much the exterior is spoiled by later additions, Unfortunately the west front remained unfinished; until 1827, when the central doorway was completed in a very inferior manner ; but this has now been renewed in a purer style. At the cast end are two fine Gothic doorways with good seulpture in the tympana; and on the north side the Puerta del Perdon, as it is ealled, has some very exquisite detail over the horse-shoe arch, and a pair of fine bronze doors. The exterior of the cathedral may be disappointing, but the interior leaves little to be desired. 'It forms a*~~

parallelogram containing a nave and four aisles with surrounding chapels, a central dome 171 feet high inside, and at the east end a royal sepulchral chapel, which was an addition of the 16th century. The thirty-two immense clustered columns, the ninety-three windows, mostly filled with the finest glass by Flemish artists of the 16th century, and the profusion of art work of various kinds displayed on all sides produce an unsurpassed effect of magnificence and grandeur. The reredos is an enormous Gothic work containing forty-four panels of gilt and coloured wood carvings by Dancart, dating from 1482, and a silver statue of the Virgin by Francisco Alfaro of 1596. The archbishop's throne and the choir-stalls (1475-1548) are fine pieces of carving, and amongst the notable metal-work are the rail- ings (1519) by Sancho Nutioz, and the lectern by Bartolomé Morel of the same period. The bronze candelabrum for tenebre, 25 feet in height, is a splendid work by Morel. In the Sacristia Alta is a silver repoussé reliquary presented by Alphonso the Wise in the 18th century ; and in the Sacristia Mayor, which is a good plateresque addition by Diego de Riafio in 1530, is a magnificent collection of church plate and vestments. At the west end of the nave is the grave of Ferdinand, the son of Columbus, and at the east end, in the royal chapel, lies the body of St Ferdinand, which is exposed three times in the year. This chapel also contains a curious life-size image of the Virgin, which was presented to the royal saint by St Louis of France in the 18th century. It is in carved wood with movable arms, seated on a silver throne and with hair of spun gold. The chief pictures in the cathedral are the Guardian Angel and the St Anthony of Murillo, the Holy Family of Tobar, the Nativity and La Gencra- cion of Luis de Vargas, Valdés Leal's Marriage of the Virgin, and Guadalupe's Descent from the Cross, In the Sacristia Alta are

three fine paintings by Alexo Fernandez, and in the Sala Capitular are a Conception by Murillo and a St Ferdinand by Pacheco. Tho organ is one of tho largest in the world ; It contains over 5800 pipes. A curious and unique ritual is observed by the choir boys on the festivals of Corpus Christi and the Immaculate Conception, ——a solemn dance with castanets being performed by them before the altar; the custom is an old

~~one but its origin is obscure. The Sagrario on the north of the cathedral isa Renaissance addition by Miguel de Zumarraga, which serves as the parish church. At the north-east corner of the cathedral stands the Giralda, a bell tower of Moorish origin, 275 feet in height. The lower part of the tower, or about 185 feet, was built in the latter half of the 12th century by Abu Yusuf Yakub; the upper part and the belfry, which is surmounted by a vano formed of a bronze figure 14 feet high representing The Faith, were added by Fernando Ruiz in 1568, The ascent is made by a series of inclined planes. The exterior is encrusted with delicate Moorish detail, and the tower is altogether the finest specimen of its kind in Europe. At the base lies the Court of Oranges, of which only two sides now remain; the original Moorish fountain, however, is still preserved. But the chief relic of the Arab dominion in Seville is the Alcazar, a palace excelled in interest and beauty only by the Alhambra of Granada. It was begun in 1181 by Jalubi during the best period of the Almohaides, and was surrounded by walls and towers of which the Torre del Oro, a decagonal tower on the river side, is now the principal survival. Pedro the Cruel made considerable alterations and additions in the 14th century, and worse havoc was afterwards wrought by Charles V. Restorations have been effected as far as possible, and the palace is now an extremely beautiful example of Moorish work. The fagade, the hall of ambassadors, and the Patio de las Muiiecas are the most striking portions, after which may be ranked the Patio de las Doncellas and the chapel of Isabella. Among other Moorish remains in Seville may be mentioned tho Casa O'Shea, which is somewhat spoiled by whitewash, and the Casa de las Duchas, with eleven court-yards and nine fountains. The Casa de Pilatos is in a pseudo-Moorish style of the 15th century, and, in addition to its elegant court-yard surrounded by a marble colonnade, contains some fine decorative work. The Casa de los Abades is in tho Sevillian plateresque style, which is strongly tinged with Moorish feeling. The following are the most notable churches in Seville :—Santa Maria la Blanca, an old Jewish syna- gogue ; San Marcos, badly restored, but with a remarkable mudejar portal; Omnium Sanctorum, erected upon the ruins of a Roman temple; San Juan de la Palma; San Ju ian; Santa Catalina; San Miguel; San Clemente el Real; the church of La Sangre Hospital ; the Gothic Parroquia of Santa Ana, in the Triana suburb; and La Caridad. The last-named belongs to a well-conducted almshouse founded by the Sevillian~~

~~*Don J uan, Miguel de Manara. It pos- Sesses six masterpieecs by Murillo, and two by Valdés Leal. 'The other churehes, though generally deficient in architectural interest, are enriched by the produets of the brush or ehiscl of Pachceo, Montaiies, Alonso Cano, Valdés Leal, Roelas, Campafia, Morales, Vargas, and Zurbaran. The muscum was formerly the church and convent of La Mereed. It now contains prieeless examples of the Seville school of painting, whieh flourished during the 16th and 17th eenturies. Among the masters represented are Velazquez and Murillo (both natives of Seville), Zurbaran, Roelas, Herrera the Elder, Paeheeo, Juan de Castillo, Alonso Cano, Cespedes, Boea- negra, Valdés Leal, Goya, and Martin de Vos. The university was founded in 1502, and its present buildings were originally a convent built in 1567 from designs by Herrera, but devoted to its present use in 1767 on the expulsion of the Jesuits. The Casa del Ayuntamiento, in the cinqueeento style, was begun in 1545, and has a fine staircase and hall and handsome carved doors. The Lonja, or exehange, was built by Herrera in 1585 in his severe Doric and Ionic style; the brown and red marble stairease which leads to the Archivo de Indias is the best part of the design. The arehives eontain 30,000 volumes relating to the voyages of Spanish diseoverers, many of which are still unexamined, 'The archbishop's palace dates from 1697 ; the most notable features are the Churri- gueresque doorway and stairease. The royal cigar faetory is an im- mense building 662 feet long by 524 feet wide, and contains twenty- eight eourt-yards. Employment is given in it to 4500 hands, who work up 2,000,000 pounds of tobaeeo yearly. The palace of San Telmo, now oeeupied by the duke of Montpensier, was formerly the seat of a naval college originally founded by the son of Columbus. The immense doorway is the prineipal architeetural feature. The picture gallery is interesting and important. The chief squares in Seville are the Plaza Nueva, the Plaza de la Constitueion, the Plaza del Duque, and the Plaza del Triunfo. The bull-ring aeeommodates 18,000 speetators, and is the next in size to that at Madrid. There are several beautiful promenades, the principal being Las Delicias, along the river bank below the town. The city also contains several theatres. Aeross the river, and conneeted with the city by a bridge, is the Gipsy quarter of the Triana. The navigation of the river has been improved of late years so that vessels of large draught can now ascend the stream. The results aro shown in a larger trade, and in*~~

~~1883 the aggregate burthen of vessels eleared amounted to 358,541 tons (65,324 British). The imports were valued at £1,879, 522, and the exports at £1,190,625. In the latter were included 3110 tuns of olive oil shipped to the United Kingdom, and 1610 tons of quick- silver from the Almaden mines, which had formerly sent their produee via Lisbon. In addition to strietly loeal industries the chief factories of the city are the tobaceo factory, the eannon foundry, and the small-arms factory. 'There are also a petroleum refinery, some soap works, iron foundries, artificial ice and marmalade factories, and several potteries, The ancient sourees of water supply having proved insufficient, a new system of waterworks was designed, and was brought to a successful completion in 18838 by a firm of English engineers. (ELE eis.)~~

~~SEVRES, a town of France, in the department of Seine-et-Oise, on the left bank of the Seine, midway between Paris and Versailles, with a population of 6768 in 1881, owes its celebrity to the Government porcelain manufactory, which dates from 1756. In 1876 a new building was erected at the end of the park of St Cloud to replace the older structures, which were in a dangerous state, but have since been transformed into a normal school for girls. In the museum connected with the works are preserved specimens of the different kinds of ware manu- factured in all ages and countries, and the whole series of models employed at Sévres from the commencement of the manufacture, for an account of which see vol. xix. pp. 637-38. A technical school of mosaic was established at Sévres in 1875.~~

~~SEVRES, Deux, a department of western France, formed in 1790 mainly of the districts of Thouars, GAtinais, and Niortais, which constituted about one-fourth of Poitou, and to a small extent of a portion of Basse-Saintonge and Angoumois, and a very small fragment of Aunis. It derives its name from the Sévre of Niort, which flows across the south of the department from east to west, and the Sévre of Nantes, which drains the north-west. Lying between 45° 58' and 47° 7' N. lat. and between 0° 56' W. and 0° 13' E. long., it is bounded (for the most part conventionally) N. by Maine-et-Loire, E. by Vienne, S.E. by Charente, 8. by Lower Charente,~~

~~*and W. by La Vendée. Part belongs to the basin of the Loire, part to that of the Sévres of Niort, and part to that of the Charente. There are three regions,—the Gatine, the "Plain," and the '"Marsh,'—distinguished by their geo- logical character and their general physical appearance. The GAtine, formed of primitive rocks (granite and schists), is the continuation of the "Bocage" of La Vendée and Maine-et-Loire. It is a poor district with an irregular surface, covered with hedges and clumps of wood or forests. The Plain, resting on Oolitic lime- stone or the "white rock" (pierre blanche), is a fertile grain country. The Marsh, occupying only a small part of the department to the south-west, consists of alluvial clays which also are extremely productive when pro- perly drained. The highest point in the department (892 feet above the sea) is to the east of Parthenay; the lowest lies only 10 feet above sea-level. The climate is mild, the annual temperature at Niort being 54° Fahr., and the rainfall a little more than 24 inches. The winters are colder in the GAtine, the summers warmer in the Plain; and the Marsh is the moistest and mildest of the three districts.*~~

~~*With a total area of 1,482,655 aeres, the department contains 1,043,752 acres of arable ground, 125,534 aeres of meadows, 49,129 of vineyards, 106,222 of forests, 20,429 of heath. The live stoek in 1880 comprised 36,150 horses, 12,800 mules, 2012 asses, 217,935 eattle, 18,405 sheep (wool clip 102 tons) 78,930 pigs, 50,321 goats, 18,845 beehives (55 tons of honey). The horses are a strong breed, and the department raises mules for Spain, the Alps, Auvergne, and Provence. In 1883 there were produeed—wheat, 3,909,260 bushels ; meslin, 466,909 ; rye, 678,920; and in 1880 barley pro- dueed 1,293,600 bushels ; buekwheat, 188,650; maize and millet, 508,062; oats, 2,744,500; potatoes, 4,312,000; pulse, 192,500 bushels ; beetroot, 123,429 tons; hemp, 945 tons; Hax, 245 tons ; colza seed, 75,900 bushels (640 tuns of oil). The wine and cider*~~

~~*amounted in 1882 to 2,859,912 and 210,914 gallons respectively. Vegetables (artichokes, asparagus, eabbage, pease, onions) are largely cultivated. Oaks, chestnuts, and beeches are the most important trees. The apple-trees of the Gatine and the walnut-trees of the Plain are also of*~~

~~*considerable value. Coal (200 miners, and 21,487 tons in 1882) and peat are worked ; iron-ore, argentiferous lead, and antimony exist but are not worked ; and freestone, both hard and soft, is very extensively quarried. here are several sulphurous mineral waters in the department. The most important industry is the manufacture of cloth—serges, druggets, linen, handkerehiefs, flannels, swan-skins, and knitted goods. Wool and ecotton-spin- ning, tanning, and eurrying, glove, brush, and hat making, distil- ling, brewing, flour-milling, and oil-refining are also carried on. In 740 establishments water-power is used to the extent of 38000 horse-power ; and 801 stationary and 165 movable steam-engines represent respectively 1895 and 677 horse-power. The ecommerce of the department, which supplies mules, cattle, and provisions for Paris and the neighbouring great towns, is facilitated by 21 miles of waterway (the Seévre and its left-hand tributary the Mignon), 289 miles of national roads, 3535 of other roads, and 232 miles of railway. In density of population (350,103 in 1881) the depart- ment is below the average of France. It contains 38,000 Pro- testants, especially in the south-east, there being only three French departments—Gard, Ardéche, and Dréme—which surpass it in this respect. The four arrondissements are Niort, Bressuire (3549 inhabitants in the town), Melle (2488), and Parthenay (4842) ; the cantons number 31, and the communes 356. It is part of the dioeese of Poitiers, where also is the court of appeal ; its military headquarters are at Tours. St Maixent (4790) has an infantry school.*~~

~~*SEWAGE. See SEWERAGE.*~~

~~*SEWARD, Witu1am Henry (1801-1872), American statesman, was born May 16, 1801, in the town of Florida, Orange county, N.Y. He was graduated at Union College in 1820, and began the practice of law three years after in the town of Auburn, which became his home for the rest of his life. Several of his cases brought him reputation as a lawyer, but he soon drifted into the more congenial field of politics. After he had served for four years in the State senate, the Whig party of New York nominated him for governor of the State in 1834. Though then defeated, he was nominated again in 1838 and elected,.serving until 1842. He then returned to his law practice, retaining, however, the recognized leadership of the Whig party in the most important State of the Union. During the*~~

~~*next seven years slavery became the burning question of American politics. The purely ethical and the philanthropic sides of the anti-slavery struggle are repre- sented by GARRISON and GREELEY (q.v.). Seward was the first to develop that purely political side, with an economic basis, which probably best met the desires and prejudices of the great mass of those who took part, will- ing or unwilling, in the struggle. The keynote of his theory was struck in 1848 in a speech at Cleveland :— "The party of slavery upholds an aristocracy, founded on the humiliation of labour, as necessary to the existence of a chivalrous republic." The absurdity of the conception of a civilized nation which, in flat opposition to historical development, should tolerate for ever a systematic humilia- tion of labour was only his starting point. His theory culminated naturally in his famous Rochester speech of 1858, in which he enumerated the inevitable direct and indirect consequences of a free-labour and a slave-labour system respectively, showed the two to be absolutely irreconcilable and yet steadily increasing their interferences with one another, and drew this pregnant inference :—there is here "an irrepressible conflict between opposing and enduring forces, and it means that the United States must and will, sooner or later, become either entirely a slave- holding nation or entirely a free-labour nation." But the germ of the "irrepressible conflict " of 1858 lay clearly in the utterances of 1848, and Seward was even then most widely known as its exponent. When, therefore, the New York Whigs, who in 1849 controlled the State legislature, which elects United States senators, sent Seward to the senate with hardly a show of opposition, their defiance of*~~

~~*the southern wing of their party was a premonition of the general break-up of parties three years afterwards. In the senate Seward had at first but two pronounced anti-slavery associates. As anti-slavery feeling increased, and the Republican party was organized in 1855-56, he went into it naturally, for it was to him only an anti-slavery Whig party, and his pre-eminent ability made him at once its recognized leader. In the Republican convention of 1860 he was the leading candidate for the nomination for president ; and it was only by a sudden union of all the elements of opposition to him that the nomination was finally given to Abraham*~~

~~*Lincoln, whose name was then hardly known outside of Illinois. Tt has been an almost invariable rule that American presidents have found their most irritating difficulties in dealing with the New York leaders of their respective parties ; Lincoln when elected removed any such possibility by offering Seward the chief position in his cabinet, that of secretary of state. Here, for at least four years, Seward did the great work of his life. His errors, whether of constitutional law, inter- national law, or policy, are more clearly seen now than they were then. In spite of them all the estimate of the value of his work must be very high, if we consider the chances in favour of foreign intervention at some time during a four years' war, and his unbroken success in in- culcating on other Governments the propriety and wisdom of neutrality. Much of this success was due to circum- stances which he did not create, to his ability to rely solidly on the cordial friendship of the "plain people" (to use Lincoln's common phrase) of Great Britain and France, and particularly to the change of policy induced by the emancipation proclamations of 1862-63; but much is still left to, the credit of the secretary, whose zeal, acuteness, and efficiency brought the ship safely through the intricacies of international relations while the crew were putting out the fire in her hold. In the process of reconstruction which immediately followed the war Seward sided heartily with President J ohnson and shared his defeat. The Whig element had been burned out of the Republican party by the war } & new party had grown up, not limited by ante bellum notions, and it rapidly came to look upon Seward, its once trusted leader, not only as a traitor but as the main intellectual force which supported Johrison's clumsy attempts at treason. At the end of his second term as secretary of state in 1869 he retired to his home at Auburn, broken by loss of health, by loss of political Standing, and by the death of lis wife and daughter. He spent the next two years in foreign travel, and died at Auburn, October 10, 1872.*~~

~~*Of Seward's Life and Works, in 5 vols., edited by George E.*~~

~~*Baker, the last volume deals with his career during his first term as secretary of state.*~~

~~SEWERAGE is the process of systematically collect- ing and removing refuse from dwellings. The matter to be dealt with may conveniently be classified as made up of four parts:—(1) dust, ashes, kitchen waste, and solid matters generally, other than solid excreta; (2) excreta, consisting of urine and feces 3; (3) slop-water, or the discharge from sinks, basins, baths, &c., and the waste water of industrial processes ; (4) surface water due to rainfall. Before the use of underground conduits became general, the third and fourth constituents were commonly allowed to sink into the neighbouring ground, or to find their way by surface channels to a watercourse or to the sea. he first and second constituents were conserved in middens or pits, either together or separately, and were carried away from time to time to be applied as manure to the land. In more modern times the pits in which excre- ment was collected took the form of covered tanks called cesspools, and with this modification the primitive system~~

~~of conservancy, with occasional removal by carts, is still to be found in many towns. Even where the plan of removing excrement by sewers has been adopted, the first kind of refuse named above is still treated by collecting it in pails or bins, whose contents are removed by carts either daily or at longer intervals. It therefore forms no part of the nearly liquid sewage which the other con- stituents unite to form.~~

~~_ The second constituent is from an agricultural point of Character view the most valuable, and from a hygienic point of view of excre- Even healthy mental~~

~~the most dangerous, element of sewage. excreta decompose, if kept for a short time after they are produced, and give rise to noxious gases; but a more serious danger proceeds from the fact that in certain cases of sickness these products are charged with specific germs of disease, Speedy removal or destruction of excremental Sewage is therefore imperative. It may be removed in an unmixed state, either in pails or tanks or (with the aid of pneumatic pressure) by pipes; or it may be defeecated by mixture with dry earth or ashes ; or, finally, it may be conveyed away in sewers by gravitation, after the addition of a relatively large volume of water. This last mode of~~

~~*disposal is termed the water-carriage system of sewerage. Water- towns which have a carriage sufficient water supply, and it is probably the mode which System.*~~

~~*It is the plan now usually adopted in*~~

~~*best meets the needs of any large community. The sewers which carry the diluted excreta serve also to take slop- water, and may or may not be used to remove the surface water due to rainfall. The water-carriage system has the disadvantage that much of the agricultural value of sewage is lost by its dilution, while the volume of foul matter to be disposed of is greatly increased. But it has been found that, even when the excrement of a community is kept out of the Sewers, and subjected to distinct treat- ment, the contents of the sewers are still so foul that their discharge into streams is scarcely less objectionable than when the water-carriage system is adopted; and, further, it appears difficult if not impossible to realize the agricultural value of excrement by any process of separate treatment that is not offensive or dangerous or inappli- cable to towns.*~~

~~*When, in the water-carriage system, the same sewers Combined*~~

~~*to rainfall, the and » separate*~~

~~*carry foul sewage and surface-water due sewerage is said to be "combined "; the "separate system, on the other hand, is that in which a distinct set of sewers is provided to carry off rainfall. its advantages. In the Separate system the foul-water Sewers need be large enough to take only the normal flow : they may thus be made self-cleansing much more readily than if their size were sufficient to carry the immensely greater volume to which (on the combined plan) sewage may be swollen during heavy rain. The amouut of dangerously foul matter is also much reduced. On the other hand, the contents of the rain-water sewers are still too much tainted by the filth of the streets to render their discharge into rivers or lakes desirable ; and the complica- tion of two sets of mains and branches is a serious draw- back. Where old sewers are giving place to new ones it is not unusual to retain the old sewers for the carriage of surface-water ; but in new works a single system of sewers, provided with storm-overflows to relieve them of part of the rainfall during*~~

~~exceptionally heavy showers, would probably be preferred in nearly every case! Since sewers should, in all cases, be water-tight, they do not form suitable collectors of subsoil water.~~

~~1 An exception to this remark may be made in the case of London, where the enormous area to be drained, as well as the difficulty of disposing of the foul sewage on account of its large volume, has led the Comniissioners on Metropolitan Sewage Discharge to advise (in their Report of 1884) that "in new drainage works the sewage should be, as far as possible, separated from the rainfall."~~

~~Each plan has carriage,~~

~~Si Wo i a eG~~

~~Heads The water-carriage system of sewerage will be noticed | air which the soil held in its pores. He estimated that an acre of treat- here under its three aspects a) the ultimate disposal of of suitablo ground, well furnished with subsoil drains to remove ment. . (O) tem of common women. bu winen the water after percolation, could in this way take the sewage of Sewage ; (2) the sys , Aca NA | 2000 persons. This estimate is now considered excessive, and sewage is conveyed to its destination ; (3) the domestic | 1000 persons to the acre is a more recent limit. Mr J. Bailey- arrangements for the collection of sewage. Denton at once took up Dr Frankland's suggestion, and in his Digpowkl L Toe Unrmrare Disposan oF WATER-CARRIED SEw- hands the system of intermittent filtration through land has been ; one successfully applied to the sewage of many towns.? The land Ofer aan AGE.—In the water-carniage system of cee the fertiliz- | vhich constitutes the filter is used to grow vegetables and other puma ing elements are so largely diluted that it becomes a matter | crops. Clay soils are, as far as possible, avoided, and the land is sewage. of the utmost difficulty to turn them to profitable account. | thoroughly underdrained ata depth of about 6 feet. The sewage is It has been estimated that every ton of London sewage distributed over the surface in open chanuels, the proper laying out ae c aiete 1 1 . ne of which is an important item in the cost of the system, but is essen- contalns a lents~~

~~*whose value as manure 18 lather' | +i.) to its success. When the number of persons exceeds 500 per acre more than 2d.,1 a value which, could it be realized, would | it is advisable to precipitate the solid matter that is held in sus- make the sewage of the metropolis worth a million and | pension before the liquid is applied to the land, in order to prevent three quarters sterling per annum. Sewage farming, ee oe fs cet ape Tae clogged meee ee . ey-Denton ointe ne advantage which the system however, does not ¥ pay. After much costly experiment of intermittent filtration offers as a supplement to broad irrigation, the conviction is gaining ground that, neither by applying where that is carried out. A serious objection to the disposal of sewage directly to land, nor by any process of chemical | sewage by irrigation is the fact that the farmer must take the treatment that has yet been proposed, can sewage be made pl aR ree Cag pea nae the He eden ya — dea 5 : : : : en the lan ants 1t. y laying outa portion of the land Cembina- | to yield a return as manure WwW hich will cover the cost of its as a filter bed the sewage may be thrown on that whenever its tion of transport, treatment, | and distribution, except perhaps in @ | presence on the remainder would do harm rather than good. Mr inter- few cases where the circumstances are peculiarly favourable. | Denton has applied this combined system in several instances, and mittent Sewage At the same time, sewage farming does afford one satis- a ey a LS et ne ae See ia | Satis, : : offers a better prospect of prof an any other efficient mode of wi = factory solution of the problem of how to dispose of purifying sewage. The system of intermittent filtration through broad h bl hich Bicone t 3 sewage without creating a nuisance—a problem 1n which | Jand 'has been recommended by the Royal Commission of 1882-84 irrigation. | any question of profit or loss is of secondary importance. | as a mode of treating London sewage. A very early instance of irrigation by sewage is that of nee ti 3 ee ee of oe ashes, a Ai : : coal, coke, peat, &c., though often experimented on, can scarcely be filters. the Craigentinny Meadows, a sandy tract of ks 00 acres, ON | described as an actual system. It is attended by the difficulty that which part of the sewage of Edinburgh has been dis- | the filter becomes speedily choked by the deposit of sludge. Tho*~~

~~charged during certain seasons for nearly a century. There, owing to favourable conditions, and to the fact that complete purification of the sewage is not attempted, the process yields a profit ; but no such result could be looked~~

~~intermittent use of a suitable artificial filter will, however, serve efficiently to oxidize and therefore purify the liquid portion of sewage from which the sludge has been previously precipitated, and filtration through coke is used in some instances as a supple- ment to the process which is next to be described.~~

~~Chemical Treatment, or Preeipitation.—When sewage is allowed Chemieal~~

~~for if the sea were not at hand to receive the imperfectly cleansed sewage and the wholly uncleansed surplus. te aes, or Me thee nen hit pv a ae . a — : : See huaenths subsidence of the solid particles takes place. e subsidence is, ment.~~

~~nee any ae hes nt fi older ee of ms ae however, much too slow to be complete before decomposition sets in.~~

~~in the sewage farm ot the town of bunzlau, which has |} put it may be very greatly accelerated by the addition of certain~~

~~been in existence for more than three hundred years. reagents, with the object of producing a precipitate which, in fall-~~

~~Five methods of treating sewage may be named, of | ing, will carry down with it the minute particles of solid matter ;~~

~~which two or more are often found in combination.' | tibars suspended throughout the mass, Lime ie te estan) Ling Discharge _ Discharge into the Sea or into a largo watercourse is in general | 1544 and in ae Feapention ef about ome ton af Time bo of ania pro into the thc least costly means by which a community can rid itself of its | | nons of sewage. When thoroughly mixed, the liquid is left at ig a: Ut of soutletavis~~

~~*neeasdaty to mle ae and a rapid separation of the sewage follows, into a compara-*~~

~~*this plan effective in avoiding nuisance. Some towns make use of tively clear supernatant liquid and a glutinous precipitate or*~~

~~*tanks or outlet-sewers of large capacity, from which the discharge | « sludge." The sludge has little value as manure, for the best*~~

~~*ee ey eae SO ORO alg agricultural constituents of sewage are contained in solution, and*~~

~~*obmeyage 12 Ven een ee dese not nell ni very little of the soluble matter is carried down in the deposit.*~~

~~*beget eames Ta froin foul deposits. A striking instance | pp, sludge is dried by being strained over beds of slag, pressed into*~~

~~*is furnished by the case of London, which discharges its sewage | books for transport, and got rid of by being burnt or dug into*~~

~~*inte) thes aa a ee eee one ground or thrown into the sea. It has been used in the*~~

~~*aa e vay Pa ane a ura wee ae ee ene oe mantfacture of bricks and of cement (Scott's process), but in general*~~

~~*Twn the : : oe i 1s washed Up anc' | it can be disposed of only at a loss. Theclarified effluent still con-*~~

~~*down tip river with avery YitG cet reaching as far Up a8 | taing dissolved organic matter, and may be admitted into running*~~

~~*Pees 2 Sein a the portion which is not deposited in the streams ouly when a high amedard of purity is not compulsory.*~~

~~*ae oh matt benetonl a eles ia © Bue eae When, however, the volume of the running water which it enters Cee Based Lppigenme — Ey ales eae he ee at seria Cone alas relatively very large a quick purification takes place by*~~

~~means irrigation, a comparatively large tract of cultivated land, in the proportion of | 4¢ i), oxygen which the water carries in solution.~~

~~pee ee lan Midcietbeeace seo uhouseuigne- The lime process is practised, without further purification of~~

~~contributing population. This system is now largely and success- | 4. ominent water, at Leeds and at Burley. At Bradford, after~~

~~fully used, especially where the soil is a porous sandy loam. Fears precipitation by line, the effluent is filtered through beds of coke-~~

~~that the farms would prove dangerous to the health of the neighbour- ee At Birmingham the sewage of 600,000 people, after clari-~~

~~ing district, and that the crops and vegetables grown on them | fcation by lime (which also serves to neutralize the acid contri-~~

~~vo goon ete buted by manufactories), is uscd to irrigate a farm of 1200 acres.~~

~~properly iid out and, oatletl y memaeed the Caen ant a Very many patents have been obtained for the precipitation of~~

~~enquip tebe eames ope ee Boe Mme MP el TE) sewage by other chemicals in place of or in addition to lime. In~~

~~Z oe Bite ame ee a ese Fel Paste Hillé's process lime is the chief ingredient, with tar and chloride~~

~~badge bang ee at scigeQ INS 1 Nag e T y as ree eee lat magnesium or calcium added. At Coventry the precipitants are~~

~~applied, oe 2 ee of chose hae one at sulphate of alumina, protosulphate of iron, and lime, and the Inter- Intermittent Downward Filtration.—This is another mode of SGivenics Hiern 'citened Hiitemett land in de @revortioneemnl mittent purifying sewage by applying it to land, which differs from broad acre to 5000 of the population § 2 Prop filtration irrigation in requiring a much smaller area in proportion to the ban 9 . . –~~

~~*The ABC through sewage dealt with. In 1870 Dr Frankland? drew attention to the ee A Teale tie eae iy Be pee ws is an aie. , land. fact that if sewage were passed through porous soil, not continu- bees ase ae derable value as manure. An emulsion of clay*~~

~~*ously but at intervals long enough to let the soil become aerated, rapid purification took place through the oxidizing action of the*~~

~~*1 Hoffmann and Witt, Report to the Government Referees on Metropolitan Drainage, 1857. 2 Report of the Rivers Pollution Commissioners, 1870.*~~

~~*and carbon with a little blood is first mixed with the sewage ; a precipitating solution of alum is then added, and the mixture*~~

~~*3 J, Bailey-Denton, Intermittent Downward Filtration, with notes on the Practice and Results of Sewage Farming, 1st ed. 1880, 2d ed. 1885.*~~

~~*Relative merits of the systems,*~~

~~*Convey- ance of sewage,*~~

~~*Pipe sewers,*~~

~~*Built sewers,*~~

~~*(“18-inch circular pipe would*~~

~~*SEWERAGE*~~

~~*is allowed to settle. The process gives a remarkably clear effluent g practically the whole of the insoluble constituents of the sewage and a portion of the dissolved impurities are carried down in the precipitate, which, when dried and ground along with some sulphate of magnesia, is sold under the name of native guano. The ABC process has been in successful use for nine years at Aylesbury, where the “guano” finds a sale at 70s. per ton. In 1870 the Rivers Pollution Commissioners reported unfavourably on the pro- cess, a fact which may have prevented its adoption by other towns, but it has since then received the approval of*~~

many specialists, A recent protracted investigation by Dr C. M. Tidy and Prof. Dewar showed that the percentage of oxidizable organic matter removed by the process ranges from 75 to 86—a result, in their judgment, satisfactory. At Leeds, where the process was tried for a time, it was given up because the effluent was purer than the river into which it ran, and the simple lime-process, which costs less but gives a less clear effluent, was adopted in its place.

Much difference of opinion still exists as to the relative merits of broad irrigation, filtration through land, and chemical treat- ment, as means of disposing of sewage. That either of the two first plans or a combination of them both can be made to yield a satisfactory solution of the sewage problem, from a hygienic point of view, seems unquestionable. That chemical treatment, espe- cially if supplemented by filtration through land, will also purify well, is generally admitted. No process of effective purification is now expected to yield a profit ; but the question of cost, on which the choice of a system principally turns, is too extensive to be touched in this article.

II. Taz Conveyancr or Sewacr.—For small sewers, circular pipes of glazed earthenware or fire-clay or of moulded cement are used, from 6 inches to 18 inches and even 20 inches in diameter. The pipes are made in short lengths, and are usually jointed by passing the end or spigot of one into the socket or faucet of the next. Into the space between the spigot and faucet a ring of gasket or tarred hemp should be forced, and the rest of the space filled up with cement, not clay. The gasket prevents the cement from entering the pipe, and so obstructing the flow; at the same time it forms an elastic packing which serves to keep the successive lengths of pipe concentric, even if the cement should fail. The pipes are laid with the spigot ends pointing in the direction of the flow, with a uniform gradient, and, where practi- cable, in straight lines. In special positions, such ag under the bed of a stream, cast-iron pipes are used for the conveyance of sewage. Where the capacity of an be insufficient, built sewers are used in place of earthenware pipes. These are some- times circular or oval, but more commonly of an egg- shaped section, the invert or lower side of the sewer being a curve of shorter radius than the arch or upper side. The advantage of this form lies in the fact that great

~~*variations in the volume of flow must be expected, and the egg-section presents for the small or dry-weather flow & narrower channel than would be sewer of the*~~

~~*presented by a circular same total capacity. Figs. 1 and 2 show*~~

~~*or*~~

~~*ie ‘*~~

~~*So”*~~

~~*Fig. 2.*~~

~~*Fig. 1.*~~

~~*Figs, 1, 2,~Forms of Sewers. two common forms of egg-sections, with dimensions ex- pressed in terms of the diameter of the arch. Fig. 2 is the more modern form, and has the advantage of a sharper invert. The ratio of width to height is 2 to 3. Built sewers are most commonly made of bricks,*~~

~~*‘moulded to suit the curved structure of which they are to*~~

~~*form part. Separate invert blocks of glazed earthenware, terra-cotta, or fire-clay are often used in combination with*~~

~~*An egg-shaped sewer, an invert block, and*~~

~~*ring, or as the sole*~~

~~*713*~~

~~*brickwork, The bricks are laid over a templet made to the section of the sewer, and are grouted with cement. made with two thicknesses of brick,*~~

~~*& concrete setting, is illustrated in fig, 3. Concrete is now very largely used in the construction of sewers, either in combination with brickwork*~~

or alone, For this purpose the concrete con- sists of from 5 to 7 parts of sand and gravel or broken stone to 1 of Port-

land cement. It SES WN RA.

may be used as a jess) VE Ae TN Aras Ra Nuala'

cradle for or as a SAI

ACSA RANE A SSS WALES NON te

'<

backing to a brick

Fig. 8.—Brick Sewer,

material of construction by running it into position round a mould which is removed when the concrete is sufficiently

set, the inner surface of the sewer being in this case coated

with a thin layer of cement,

In determining the dimensions of sewers, the amount of sewage Dimen-

proper may be taken as equal to the water supply (generally about sions of 30 gallons per head per diem), and to this must be added an allow-
sewers. ance for the surface water due to rainfall. The latter, which is generally by far the larger constituent, is to be estimated from the maximum rate of rainfall for the district and from the area and character of the surface. In the sewerage of Berlin, for example, (one of the most recent instances of the combined water-carriage system applied on a large scale), the maximum rainfall allowed for is § of an inch per hour, of which one-third is supposed to enter the sewers. In any estimate of the size of sewers based on rainfall account must of course be taken of the relief provided by storm-overflows, and also of the capacity of the sewers to become simply charged with water during the short time to which very heavy showers are invariably limited. Rainfall at the rate of 5 or 6 inches

~~*per hour has been known to occur for a few minutes, but it is altogether unnecessary to provide (even above storm-overflows) sewers capable of discharging any such amount as this ; the time taken by sewers of more moderate size to fill would of itself prevent the discharge from them from reaching a condition of steady flow ; and, apart from this, the risk of damage by such an exceptional fall would not warrant so great an initial expenditure. Engineers differ widely in their estimates of the allowance to be made for the discharge of surface water, and no rule can be laid down which would be of general application.*~~

~~*In order that sewers should be self-cleansing, the mean velocity Velocity of flow should be not less than 24 feet per second. The gradient of dis- necessary to secure this is calculated on principles which have been charge. stated in the article HypRoMECHANICS (g.v.). The velocity of flow,*~~

~~*ee Ve cr/im,*~~

~~*where ¢ is the inclination, or ratio of vertical to horizontal distance ; m is the "hydraulic mean depth," or the ratio of area of section of the stream to the wetted perimeter ; and c is a coefficient depend- ing on the dimensions and the roughness of the channel and the depth of the stream. A table of values of ¢ will be found in § 90 of the article referred to. This velocity multiplied by the area of the stream gives the rate of discharge. Tables to facilitate the determination of velocity and discharge in sewers of various dimensions, forms, and gradients will be found in Mr Latham's and other practical treatises. ;*~~

~~*Where the contour of the ground does not admit of a sufficient Inter- gradient from the gathering ground to the place of destination, the ception sewage must be pumped to a higher level at one or more points in sewers. its course. To minimize this necessity, and also for other reasons, it is frequently desirable not to gather sewage from the whole area into a single main, but to collect the sewage of higher portions of the town by a separate high-level or interception sewer.*~~

~~*Sewer gas is a term applied to the air, fouled by mixture with Sewer gases which are formed by the decomposition of sewage, and by gas. the*~~

~~*organic germs which it carries in suspension, that fills the sewer in the variable space above the liquid stream. It is uni- versally recognized that sewer gas is a medium for the conveyance*~~

~~*XXI.—go*~~

~~*Ventila- tion of sewers.*~~

~~*Man- holes.*~~

~~*Domes- tic sewer- age.*~~

~~*Primary*~~

~~*requi- sites.*~~

~~*Traps.*~~

~~*Common trap.*~~

~~*714*~~

~~*of disease, and in all well-designed systems of sewerage stringent precautions (which will be presently described) are taken to keep it out of houses. It is equally certain that the dangerous character of sewer gas is reduced, if not entirely removed, by free admixture with the oxygen of fresh air. Sewers should be liberally venti- lated, not only for this reason, but to prevent the air within them from ever having its pressure raised (by sudden influx of water) so considerably as to force the "traps" which separate it from the atmosphere of dwellings. The plan of ventilation now most approved is the very simple one of making openings from the sewer to the surface of the street at short distances,—generally shafts built of brick and cement,—and covering these with metallic gratings. Under each grating it is usual to hang a box or 'tray to catch any stones or dirt that may fall through from the street, but the passage of air toand from the sewer is left as free as possible. The openings to the street are frequently made large enough to allow a man to go down to examine or clean the sewers, and are then called '¢manholes." Smaller openings,*~~

~~*large enough to allow a lamp to be lowered for purposes of inspection, are called "lampholes," and are often built up of vertical lengths of drain-pipe.*~~

~~*Up 0 eee Fs*~~

~~*Yun Za*~~

~~*yj Wea*~~

~~*i ┼(*~~

~~*╞╡*~~

~~*»*~~

~~*ɨ*~~

~~*: =*~~

~~*=*~~

~~*ei*~~

~~*÷*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*—' a >*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*x o r m*~~

~~*HE*~~

~~*A on \en Sa eh ee ae Lye*~~

~~*the tank accumulates so that it reaches the top of the annular siphon, and begins to flow over the lip, it carries with it enough air to produce a partial vacuum in the tube. The siphon then bursts into action, and a rapid discharge takes place, which con- tinues till the water level sinks to the foot of the Pell aha ped cover.*~~

~~*III. Domestic Sewerace.—In the water-carriage system each house has its own network of drain-pipes, soil-pipes, and waste-pipes, which lead from the basins, sinks, closets, and gullies within and about the house to the common sewer. These must be planned to remove sewage from the house and its precincts quickly and without leakage or deposit by the way; the air within them must be kept out of the dwelling, by placing a water-trap at every opening through which sewage is to enter the pipes, and by making all internal pipes gas-tight ; the pipes must be freely ventilated by a current of fresh air, in order to oxidize any deposited filth and to dilute any noxious gas they may contain ; finally— and this is of prime importance—the air of the common sewer must be rigorously shut out from all drains and pipes within the house. To disconnect the pipes of each indi- vidual house from the atmosphere of the common sewer is the first principle of sound domestic sanitation. When this is done the house is safe from contagion from without, so far as contagion can come through sewer gas; and, how- ever faulty in other respects the internal fittings may be, the house can suffer no other risk than that which arises from its own sewage.*~~

~~*Protection against the passage of gas through open- ings which admit of the entry of water is secured by the familiar device known as the water-trap.*~~

~~*The simplest and in many respects the best form of trap is a bent pipe or inverted siphon (fig. 5) which is sealed by water lying in the bend. The amount of the seal (measured by the vertical distance between the lines a and 6) varies in practice from about 4 an inch to 8 inches. If the pressure of air within the pipe, below*~~

~~*SEWERAGE*~~

~~*be ESM NN NN NN NN NN MMR OTT fifi | oe hh SO*~~

~~*pet Inala ceiceanal a aoa rina*~~

~~*aS Ni 8 ec ces ESTAR AN GS ee T Se vag HOP NY Wat*~~

~~*mana — Field's Siphon Flush Tank.*~~

~~*To facilitate inspection and cleaning, sewers are, as far as possible, laid in straight lines of uniform gradient, with a manhole or lamphole at each change of direction or of slope and at each junction of mains with one another or with branches. The sewers may advantageously be stepped here and there at manholes. Sir R. Rawlinson has pointed out that a difference of level between the entrance and exit pipes tends to prevent continuous flow of sewer gas towards the higher parts of the system, and makes the ventilation of each section more independent and _ thorough. When the gradient is slight, and the dry-weather flow very small, occasional flushing must be resorted to. Flap valves or sliding Flushing penstocks are introduced at manholes; by closing these for a of sewers, short time sewage (or clean water introduced for the purpose) is dammed up behind the valve either in higher parts of the sewer or in a special flushing chamber, and is then allowed to advance with a rush. Many self-acting arrangements for flushing have been devised which act by allowing a continuous stream of comparatively small volume to accumulate in a tank that discharges itself suddenly when full. A very valuable contrivance of this kind is Mr Rogers Field's siphon flush tank, shown in fig. 4. When the liquid in*~~

~~*CL ddd ddim pyeggG@QqGG§qG6déd) YYW*~~

~~*=*~~

~~*SSS Oe. ee bP WANK [[TT TZ oad eet et ihe*~~

~~*RK) Dass SSN URES MURR SE SET NT CAS Wah ND RRRETNOU SH SURAT OR A WAS 0 gQdO UT s DG ORNs ASIA NARA Aero sa Q ow yy DAS AAT AS BB TOD aVEVNT Sy OobORGES Hee oF Rta DAREN*~~
~~*»*~~

~~*fla*~~

~~“ee = o2~~

~~4~~

~~ens Cl Yj~~

~~the trap, is greater than that of the air above the trap by an amount exceeding the pressure due to a column of water equal in height to the seal, the trap will be forced and air will bubble through. This Possible | is one way in which a trap may fail, but this may be prevented by causes of | sufficient ventilation of the pipe below the trap. Other failure. possibilities of failure are, however, only too numerous. If the pipe is disused for some time, the water may eva- porate so considerably as to break the seal. The pipe, / if of lead, may bend out of shape, or it may even be so badly set in the first instance as to make the trapin- ,/ 7’ operative. The seal may be broken by the capillary action of a thread or strip of cloth, hang- ing over the lip of the trap and causing the water to drain away. A rush of water down the pipe, suddenly arrested, may pass the trap with such momentum as to leave it wholly or partly empty. Another and a common cause 0~~

~~failure can be explained by re- ference to fig. 5. Let a column of water rush down the soil-pipe Trap.~~

~~c from a closet or sink which~~

~~discharges into it at some higher point. As the water passes the junction with the branch d it will produce a partial vacuum in the branch, and so tend to suck over the contents of the trap. This process, which is sometimes called the siphonage of traps, can be guarded against by ventilating the branch, either by a separate ventilating pipe leading to the open air or by a pipee (shown by dotted lines) connecting the top of the branch d with a point sufficiently far up on the soil-pipe to be above the column of water which is passing the junction. One more imperfection in traps may be named. The experiments of Dr Fergus have shown that the water in traps will allow gases to pass through by absorbing the gas on one surface and giving it off at the other. It is improb- able that this action occurs to such an extent as to be dangerous by permitting the transfer of disease germs from one to the other side. Apart from any risk~~

~~*of this kind, however, it is clear that a trap is open to so many possibilities of failure as to form a very/in- sufficient barrier between the air of a room and the foul air of a sewer. Nevertheless the practiee was until very lately alinost universal, and is still far from uncommon, of connecting closets, sinks, and*~~

~~*Fig. 5.—Common Water-*~~

~~*Diseon- neeting trap on house- drain.*~~

~~*Ventila- tion of soil- pipes.*~~

~~*Buchan trap.*~~

~~*even bedroom basins with common sewers by a continuous system of piping, in which the only safeguard against the entry of sewer gas is a single trap close to each sink or basin. This means that sewer gas, charged with the infection of a whole community, is brought within a few inches of the atmosphere of the dwelling, ready to contamin- ate it whenever the trap fails from any of the causes which have been named, or whenever, by a flow of water through it, the seal is sufficiently disturbed to allow bubbles of gas to cscape into the room.*~~

~~*The remedy for this lies in having, at any convenient point on each house-drain, a disconnecting trap which separates the house system from the sewer, and so establishes what. may be called an outer line of defence. Any accidental leakage of sewer gas through it then does no more than cause a comparatively slight pollution of the air within the house-drains,*~~

~~*An arrangement of double disconnecting trap is illustrated in fig. 8. Any sewer gas forcing the trap next the sewer is still kept back by the upper trap and will escape by a grating or open ventilating shaft which enters at A, while air to ventilate the house-drain enters the upper trap from the manhole. This arrange- ment no doubt gives more absolute protection than a single trap of the kind al- ready described, but it is probable that (except in cases where the sewers are*~~

~~*GRATING*~~

~~*END OPEN FoR VENTILATION*~~

~~*Double diseon- necting trap.*~~

~~*and if these are well ventilated the effects of this are insensible. At each individual basin or other fitting a trap is still required, but its function is now merely to shut out the air of the house-drains from the rooms, and, as the air of the house-drains is no longer polluted by connexion with the sewers, the occasional failure of this function is a matter of com- paratively small moment. Further, the dis- connecting trap on the house-drain furnishes a convenient place of access for fresh air; and the ventilation is completed by carrying the highest point of each soil-pipe or waste-pipe up to the level of the roof and leaving it open*~~

~~*there.*~~

~~*by reference to fig. 6, which shows a soil-pipe, Open at its upper end, discharging into a house-drain in which there is a disconnecting trap provided with an open grating for the entry of air. The soil-pipe is ventilated by a current of air which (usually if not always) flows upwards. This not only dilutes any gases that are produced in the pipe, but quickly oxidizes any foul matter that may adhere to the sides. Care must be taken to avoid having the upper end of the pipe open near windows or under eaves, In the figure the branch leading to a water-closet is ventilated by a pipe carried into an upper part of the soil-pipe; this is scarcely necessary if the branch be short. Another O'SCONNESTING distinct ventilating pipe up from the top of the branch from sewer, and ventilated.*~~

~~*to a point above the roof;*~~

~~*and where several fittings discharge into one soil-pipe, the same ventilating pipe may be made to serve for all. An example of the latterarrangement*~~

~~*is shown in fig. 10. The form of dis- connecting trap shown in fig. 6*~~

~~*is that of Mr _ W. P. Buchan of*~~

~~*Glasgow, who has done excellent ser- vice to the cause*~~

~~*/*~~

~~*form by practising 7*~~

~~*i Y Wy, (the disconuexion | Ean and ventilation of (7/77 yi | Vf*~~

~~*and*~~

~~*very foul and liable to frequent excess of pressure) the ad- vantage is so slight as to be more than counterbalanced by the greater liabil- ity to accidental stoppage and greater complexity which this arrangement entails,*~~

~~*The extent to which it is permissible or advisable in practice to Discharge allow several fittings to discharge into a single waste-pipe or. from soil-pipe will vary in different cases. We can recognize a broad basins, distinction between sewage from closets and urinals, liable to the sinks, most dangerous taint should disease occur within the house, and &, the comparatively innocuous sewage that comes from basins, baths, and sinks. Some sanitarians go so far as to advise that these two classes of sewage should be kept absolutely apart within the house, by the use of a complete double system of house drain-pipes. This, however, is an extreme measure ; no reasonable objection can be urged against the discharge into a water-closet soil-pipe of water from a bath or washhand basin in the same room, except perhaps that if the soil-pipe is of lead its corrosion is hastened by hot water ; and the additional flushing which the soil-pipe so receives is a distinct advantage. But to connect a water-closct soil-pipe with sinks and basins in other apartments is to multiply possibilities for the spread of disease within the house, and it is strongly advis- able to convey the waste from them by a separate pipe, protected from the sewer by a disconnecting trap of its own with a grating open to the air. This applies with special force to the washhand Bedroom basins that are often fixed in bedrooms and dressing-rooms. basins, Nothing could be more dangerous than the usage—of which many good houses*~~

~~still furnish instances—of multiplying these conven- ences without regard to the risk they involve, and making this risk as great as possible by placing each in direct communication through an ordinary trap with the soil-pipe, itself perhaps unven- tilated and provided with no disconnexion from the sewer. Even when the drain or soil-pipe is ventilated and disconnected from the sewer, no bedroom basin should, under any circumstances, be allowed to discharge into it without first passing a separate open trap. On the other hand, a bedroom basin may be made perfectly safe by leading its waste-pipe (trapped under the basin in the usual way) into an open-air channel which communicates with the sewer by a surface-trap or gully outside the house (fig. 9). Similar treatment should be adopted in the case of pantry and_ scullery sinks, Under most Fic. 9.—Open Trap.~~

~~plumbing fixtures it is : : usual to place a safe-tray to rece:ve any water accidentally spilt. Safe-~~

~~. i Sts~~

~~Fig. 8.—Double Disconnecting Trap.~~

~~This arrangement will be understood~~

~~FRESH AIR INLET UM EEO~~

~~Fic. 6.—House-Drain properly disconnected~~

~~YY UM,~~

~~house-drai } Y Y 4 fe Epica, = The saine trap is W | dt The discharge pipes from these trays are sometimes, but very ob- trays. shown to a larger scale in fig. Yz| | FY jectionably, led into the waste-pipe or soil-pipe below the fixture.~~

~~7, where it appears imbedded Y Y~~

~~in concrete and covered by a : | an built manhole, which gives ac- CRY)! cess to the trap in case of its aN~~

~~*becoming choked. The man- tol seweR*~~

~~*The proper method of providing for the discharge of water spilt into the safe-tray is to lead a pipe from it through the wall and allow it to end in the open air (fig. 10, where each of the safe-tray drains is marked " waste-pipe'"') ; a flap valve fixed on the end will serve,*~~

~~*if need be, to keep out draught. ——— Overflow-pipes from cisterns used for dietetic purposes should be Cistern*~~

~~*Ve SEN fo ous QS hs*~~

~~*hole may have a rati CONS C P shot*~~

~~*at ihe eo a tha Soh nay SARS: Ry ; led, in the same way, into the open air and Pe re ets ipes a overflows. i i -pi t be depended on to*~~

~~*closed by a solid plate (if a = ith | Waste-pipes (fig. 10). Traps on them canno l C 1*~~

~~*grating hora be for ate lly ia ie eb ae jaee we' | remain sealed, and any connexion of an overflow-pipe with a soil-*~~

~~*inadmissible), in which case a*~~

~~*ventilating shaft is carried from tne manhole to some other open- ing. Fig. 7 shows such a shaft leading to a grating which is placed vertically in a neighbouring wall. Among other good forms of disconnecting trap, more or less like Buchan's, mention may be made of Weaver's, Potts's, and Hellyer's.*~~

~~*pipe would result in allowing foul air from the pipe to diffuse itself over the surface of water in the cistern—a state of things peculiarly likely to cause pollution of the water. _ When a cistern is used only for water-closet service, its overflow-pipe may properly be led into the basin of the closet. , Rain-pipes, extending as they do to the roof, are sometimes used*~~

~~*to serve as ventilating continuations of soil-pipes and waste-pipes. The practice is open to serious objection, for it discharges the drain air just under the eaves, at a place where air is generally bein drawn into the house. The ventilating end of a soil-pipe shoul be carried to a higher level, as in fig. 6, clear of the lower edge of the roof. It is better to restrict rain-pipes to their legitimate function of taking surface water from the roof, or at most to allow them to receive slop-water from sinks and basins, and to make them terminate in or over open traps from which a connexion is taken to the house-drain or sewer (fig. 9).*~~

~~*In figs. 10 and 11 the sanitary fittings of a small house are shown by diagrains, which should be carefully studied as exemplifying a well-arranged system. 'T'wo closets, and a bath and basin in the closet apart-ment, discharge into asoil-pipe on the right, and the branches (except that of the basin) are venti- lated by pipes leading toa sepa- rate air pipe, which, like the soil-pipe, is carried above the roof, 'The overflow of a cistern which supplies bath, basin, and boiler is carried out to the open air, and so are the waste-pipes of the leaden safe-trays. A sepa- rate cistern supplies each water- closet, and its overflow opens into the closet basin. A rain- pipe (in the middle of the figure) Pipe*~~

~~*Rain- pipes,*~~

~~*Complete system for a small house,*~~

~~*Sim 1ff*~~

~~*CISTERN FOR SUPPLY OF KITCHEN BOER AND BATH & BA*~~

~~*OVERFLOW OPEN TD ouTsIDE GATH ROOM*~~

~~*WC CISTERR*~~

~~*OVERFLOW*~~

~~*if*~~

~~*)*~~

~~*SUPPUED FROM MAIN)*~~

~~*22 OR 3.1NCH AIA PIPE*~~

~~*LS INCH VERTILATING PIP*~~

~~*\J a < WASH HARD BASIN > GQ ies & VP La*~~

~~*ilwe*~~

~~*Ie*~~

~~*Of or fil |*~~

~~*c.*~~

~~*CEA SAFE TRAY*~~

~~*Ri we Cistea AND*~~

~~*a ae*~~

~~*3*~~

~~*er! waste, eS WT ceroen,*~~

~~*RAIN PIPE re i ATH*~~

~~*AND FRESH AIR INLET RAIN PIPE VENTILATED RANGE OF TUBS UPPLIEQ FROM Main } SCULLERY SINK SUPPLIED FROM Masi)*~~

~~*BUCKAN TRAP WITH MANHOLE K GREASE BOx*~~

~~*N*~~

~~*'Ss. OUTSIDE 4.INCHK CAST IAON BOIL Pie*~~

~~*INCH FIRECLAY DRAIN*~~

~~*Si ll!*~~

~~*YY =*~~

~~*6-INCH FIRECLAY DRAIN Fria. 10.—Diagram Section of the Drains and Fittings of a Small House.*~~

~~*receives a bedroom basin waste, and F leads by a 4-inch drain to a venti-lated grease-box, into which: the scullery sink and wash- tubs and an-other rain-pipe also discharge. Finally, the whole system is protected by a Buchan trap in a built manhole, which is covered with a grating.*~~

~~*House-drains, that is to say, those parts of the domestic system of drainage which extend from the soil-pipes and waste-pipes to the sewer, are made of glazed fireclay pipes, generally 6 inches but sometimes only 4 inches in diameter. A larger size than 6 inches is rarely if ever desirable. The pipes are spigot-and-faucet- jointed, and the joints should be made with cement in the manner already described for sewers. When, as is often unavoidable, the house-drain has to pass under a part of the house, or to come from back to front, iron pipes jointed with lead and coated with an anti-corrosive compound are preferred to fireclay pipes, as giving a better security against the production of leaks by the settling of the soil and other causes. Soil-pipes, when carried down inside the house, are of either lead or iron; when outside the house they are usually of iron. An outside soil-pipe is obviously preferable to an inside one; if the arrangement of the building makes an inside soil-pipe necessary, care must be taken that it shall be easily accessible for inspection at all parts of its length, The usual diameter is 4 inches. For the sake of good ventilation it is desirable to continue the soil-pipe to a point above the roof without reduction of diameter rather than apply a smaller ventilating pipe. Amongst reasons for ventilation one remains to be mentioned,— that, owing to the corrosive action of sewer gas, the life of the soil- pipe is greatly shortened if provision for the free circulation of air be wanting or insufficient. A closed soil-pipe becomes in time pitted with holes, especially in the upper parts of its length.*~~

~~*Defective joints in soil-pipes and waste-pipes, particularly where they connect with drains, closet-basins, sinks, &c., are another frequent cause of leakage. Any want of air-tightness in drains or soil-pipes within a dwelling leads to the pollution of the air, not*~~

~~*CULL*~~

~~*Wil MIELE: CELT UCTS, "i Fig, 11.—Plan of the Draius in fig, 10,*~~

~~*House- drains.*~~

~~*Soil- pipes.*~~

~~*Danger of leaks,*~~

~~*SEWERAGE*~~

~~*merely by diffusion, but by an actual in-draught, for generally the air of the house has its pressure reduced by chimney draughts to a value slightly lower than that of the air outside. The house, in fact, ventilates itself by drawing in air from the pipe at any hole, a fact which may easily be demonstrated by holding the flame of a taper near the hole.*~~

~~*Various experimental methods are used of detecting such leaks Smoke as would admit foul air to the dwelling, Of these the best is the test. "smoke test." It consists of filling the house-drain, soil-pipes, and waste-pipes with a dense and pungent smoke, any escape of which into the house is readily observed by eye and nose. A quantity of cotton-waste soaked in oil is lighted, and its fumes are blown into the house-drain by a revolving fan, at the ventilat- ing cover of the disconnecting trap, or at any other convenient opening.. Smoke soon fills the pipes, and begins to escape at the roof, The upper ends of the pipes are then closed, and the house is searched for smoke.! Another test, especially applicable to re those parts of drains that are laid under houses, is the hydraulic Hydraulic | test, which consists in stopping up the lower end of the pipe, test. " filling it with water so as to produce a moderate pressure, and then observing whether the level of the water falls. This test, however, is too severe for any but new and very well constructed drains, ; Every basin, sink, or*~~

~~other fitting should be separately trapped Trapson | by a bend on the waste- individual _ pipe or some other form fittings, of trap. A brass cap, screwed on a ferule which is let into the pipe on the bend, facilitates cleaning (fig. 5). The warm waste- water from pantry and scullery sinks contains much grease, and should be discharged into a grease box (fig. 12) where the water becomes cool and deposits its grease before overflowing into the drain. To collect surface water from laundry floors, areas, court-yards, &c., an open trap or gully is used. Fig. 9 shows a Open simple and good formof open ¢p traps and — trap; but if the water is liable gullies, to carry down sand or earth a gully (fig. 13) is more suit-able. Even in this simple MS fittingaremarkable ingenuity [Oey of error has been displayed. Many of the forms favoured by builders are bad either because of an insecure seal, a narrow outlet, or a tendency to gather filth. One in particular, the well-known "Bell" trap, is an example of nearly everything a trap should not be.~~

~~Water-closets used to be almost invariably of the "pan" type, but wherever sanitary reform has been preached to any purpose the pan closet is giving place to cleaner and wholesomer patterns. The evils of the pan closet will be evi- Pan dent from an inspection of fig. closet. 14. At each use of the closet the hinged pan a is tilted down so that it discharges its contents into the container 6, The sides of the container are inaccessible for cleaning, and their upper portions are out of reach of the flushing action ofthe pan. They gradually become coated with a foul deposit. A gust of tainted air escapes at every use of the closet; and it rarely happens that the container is air-tight, and that the filth it § has gathered does not cause a smell even in intervals of disuse. To make matters worse, many of the older pan closets are provided with the kind of trap shown in yo 34, the sketch, called the D trap, which is also liable to become a gathering place for filth, Even with an ordinary trap, however, the pan closet remains so bad that its use is to be strongly condemned.~~

~~A much better closet is the valve or Bramah closet, an excellent bine — closets.~~

~~1 A novel plan of making the smoke test has lately been introduced, in which smoke is given off by a "smoke rocket" or cake of slowly~~

~~combustible compound which is lighted and placed in the drain.~~

~~Fira. 12.—Grease Trap.~~

~~Water-~~

~~Fra. 13,—Gully-Trap. closets.~~

~~”~~

~~—Pan Water-Closet.~~

~~SEWERAGE ele~~

~~example of which by Frew of Perth is shown in fig. 15. The | and the siphon ceases to act. ad is kept petty full of water by a ground gun-metal valve | desired volume, tightly presse u : : : : a . te ul a fe _ As regards house-drainage generally, the points of chief Summary. at the basin’s foot, importance may be briefly summed up as follows :—(1) the The chamber below is use of one or more disconnecting traps to shut off sewer ioe aha . gas from the whole system of house-drains and pipes ; ee & cannes (2) the thorough ventilation of house-drains, soil-pipes, lee ashy foal mat. and branches, by providing openings through which air ter and may be venti- can enter at the foot and escape at the top; (3) the dis- cm eT charge of all sinks, basins, &c., other than water-closet ee fittings, and especially of fixed bedroom basins, Into open from being overfilled, traps in the open air; (4) the direct discharge of cistern The whole closet is overflows and safe-trays into the open air; (5) the use of eeaped a eine? cleanly and well-designed closets, basins, de. each sealed end on the soil-pipe, by an ordinary bent trap; (6) the use of separate service cisterns for water-closets, _It may seem superfluous to add that the system of Actual pipes must provide a rapid and effective carriage of all state of~~

~~which is not shown in the figure. The volume Fra. 15,—Bramah Water-Closet, Sewage to the sewer, and must be water-tight and air- ho~~

~~The air-pipe ¢ is cut to give the~~

~~t ey) WT) m Tye~~

~~3~~

~~of water in the basin is much greater than in pan closets, where the height is limited bythe : ; , overflow which occurs round the lip of the pan. In some ctosets | tight. During the last five years, however, ve has been of this kind the valve is placed at the side, and, when closed, lies proved, by examination of the best houses in London, nearly vertical. In another type of valvo closet (Jennings's) the | that it is nO uncommon case for & house to be so completely vatve isa conical plug, pressed Vertically down on a seat atthe side without effective connexion with the sewer that all its own Washout Valve closets can be made fairly effective and satisfactory from ones, inks into th iT wader the bh E closet, a sanitary point of view; but a much cheaper and certainly not 8e Sinks Into the soil un ter the asement ; and about less excellent type of closet is the "washout," an example of | 75 per cent. of the houses inspected have failed to pass which (the ' National") is shown in fig. 16. (Another wash. | the smoke test." out closet, by Doulton, appears in fig. 6.) These are now made In this connexion mention should be made of the Co-opera- system of co-operative house-inspection originated by the a ; degree of sanitary perfection that is probably not reached py | late P tof. Fleeming Jenkin. The Edinburgh Sanitary ete the most expensive closets of the kinds already named. They | Protection Association was founded by him in 1878 to~~

~~: . : : " : inspec- have no working parts ; the closet is cleansed after use simply by | carry out the idea that the sanitary fittings of a house tion,~~

~~the flush of water, which Sweeps everything before it. The flush eats : Gale must of course be good: a 14-inch' service pipe from a cistern should be Periodically submitted to exeminehon by an~~

~~not less than 5 fect above the closet will do well. In some recent | ©Xpert, and that householders should combine to secure designs the cistern is a box at the back of the seat with a wide | for this purpose the continuous service of an engineer~~

~~*able to detect flaws, to advise improvements, and to superintend alterations. The Edinburgh association soon justified its existence by discovering, in the houses of its members, a state of things even worse than students of sanitary science had imagined possible. Similar associa- tions are now doing excellent work in London, Glasgow, and many other large towns.*~~

~~*Space admits of only a very brief mention of those systems of sewerage in which excreta are not removed by the aid of water. The dry-earth system, introduced by the Rev. H. Moule, takes advan- Dry- tage of the oxidizing effect which a porous substance such as dry earth earth exerts by bringing any sewage with which it is mixed into system. intimate contact with the air contained in its pores. A discharge of urine and feces is quickly and completely deodorized and absorbed when covered with a small quantity of dry earth; and the same soil, if exposed to the air and allowed to dry, may be used over and over again for the same purpose. Even after soil has been several times used, however, its value as manure is not So great as to pay*~~

~~*with the washout the advantage of having no mechanical parts, is | for its transport to any considerable distance ; and for this reason, Hopper the " hopper," illustrated in fig. 17 (Dodd's Hopper). In all these | as well as from the fact that it leaves other constituents of sewage closet. closets the horn marked V is for attaching a ventilating pipe. to be dealt with by other means, the system is of rather limited Service For the supply of water to a closet a separate cistern is desirable, application. So far as it goes it is excellent, and where there is cisterns especially when water for dietetic purposes is liable to be drawn | no general system of water-carriage Sewerage, or where the watcr- for from the main cistern (instead of being taken direct from the water | supply is small or uncertain, an earth-closet will, in careful hands, Earth- closets, Service pipe, which is better). It would seem needless to add, give perfect satisfaction. N umerous forms of earth-closet are sold in closets. which a suitable quantity of earth is automatically thrown into the pan at each time of use. Arrangements of this kind are, however, not necessary to the success of the system ; a box filled with dry earth and a hand scoop will answer the purpose not less effectively. Ashes are sometimes substituted for or mixed with the dry*~~

~~*earth, CISTERN and powdered charcoal is also used. ; The most primitive method of dealing systematically with Pail excreta is to collect the discharges directly in a vessel which is systenis. either itself carried to the country, and its contents applied to the of closets from being imperfect } land, or is emptied into a more portable vessel for that purpose. through carclessness, many plans ~ In Japan, for example, in spite of the difficulty of transport over bad have been devised for ensuring that 'Fie. 18.—Water-Closet Cistern roads and by human labour, the latter plan is universally followed : once the flow of water is started it with Siphon Flush, the land and the people have in fact performed for centuries what will continue until a given volume has been discharged. Onc of | may be called a complete cycle of operations. The agricultural Auto- the best of these is the arrangement of siphon flush sketched in | return is so good that farmers pay for leave to remove excrement, matic fig. 18 : when the valve @ is opened the downrush of water starts | and householders look to their discharges as a source of income. flush. the siphon 6 into action, and even should a be then closed the | The plan, although carried out in the roughest mauner, appears ow continues until the water-level falls to c, when air is admitted | to involvo fewer sanitary drawbacks than might be expected; but*~~

~~*bedrooms. To prevent flushing*~~

~~*Pneu- matic systems.*~~

~~*the smells from privies and carts, and, above all, from the process of emptying by ladle, are a nuisance which no Western community would tolerate. A simple pail system, in which the sewage is collected and removed in the same vessel, has been used at Roech- dale ; another, with an absorbent lining in the pails, at Halifax. A plan much used in Continental cities is to collect excrement in tight vaults, which are emptied at intervals into a tank cart by a suction pump or injector. A more recent pneumatic system is that of Liernur, applied at Amsterdam, where sewage reservoirs at individual houses are permanently connected with a central reservoir by pipes, through which the contents of the former are sucked by exhausting air from the reservoir at the central station. A similar plan has been tried at Lyons and Paris by M. Berlier.*~~

~~*References.—The blue-book literature of sewage disposal is very voluminous. Special reference should be made to the Reports of the Rivers Pollution Com- misstoners, from 1866; Report of the Referees on Metropolitan Main Drainage, 1857; Reports of the Commission on the Sewage of Towns, 1858-1865; Reports of Select Committees of the House of Commons, 1862 and 1864; Reports of the British Association Committee on the Treatment and Utilization of Sewage, 1869-1876; Report of the Birmingham Sewage Inquiry Committee, 1871; Reports of the Local Government Board; Reports of the Royal Commission on Metropolitan Sewage Discharge, 1884 (the second and final report contains a valuable historical résumé of the subject). See also the following books :—Corfield, Treatment and Utilization of Sewage, 1871; Burke, [andbook of Sewage Utilization, 1873; Robinson and Melliss, Purification of Water-carried Sewage, 1877; Robinson, Sewage Disposal, 1882; J. Bailey-Denton, Intermittent Downward Filtration, 2d ed., 1885. Engineering details of sewerage are given in Baldwin Latham's Sanitary Engineering, 24 ed., 1878; and particulars of the drainage of individual towns will be found in numerous papers in the Minutes of Proceedings of the Institution of Civil Engineers. The domestic aspect of sewerage has been treated by E. Bailey-Denton, Handbook of House Sanitation, 1882;*~~

~~*W. P. Buchan, Plumbing and House Drainage, 4th ed., 1883; W. Eassie, Healthy Houses, 1876; Gerhard, Zouse Drainage, New York, 1882; Waring, Sanitary Drainage of Tlouses and Towns, Boston, 4th ed., 1883; F. Jenkin, Wealthy Houses, 1878 ; and many other writers. (J, A. E.)*~~

~~*SEWIN, or Szwen. See SALMONIDA, vol. xxi. p. 222. SEWING MACHINES. The sewing machine, as is the case with most mechanical inventions, is the result of the efforts of many ingenious persons, although it would appear that the most meritorious of these worked in entire ignorance of the labours and successes of others in the same field. Many of the early attempts to sew by machinery went on the lines of imitating ordinary hand- sewing, and all such inventions proved conspicuous failures. The method of hand-sewing is of necessity slow and intermittent, seeing that only a definite length of thread is used, which passes its full extent through the cloth at every stitch, thus causing the working arm, human or otherwise, to travel a great length for every stitch made, and demanding frequent renewals of thread. The foundation of machine-sewing was laid by the invention of a double-pointed needle, with the eye in the centre, patented by Charles F. Weisenthal in 1755. This device was intended to obviate the necessity for inverting the needle in sewing or embroidering, and it was subsequently utilized in Heilman's well-known embroidery machine. Many of the features of the sewing machine are dis- tinctly specified in a patent secured in England by Thomas Saint in 1790, in which he, ¢nter alia, describes a machine for stitching, quilting, or sewing. Saint's machine, which appears to have been intended principally for leather work, was fitted with an awl which, working vertically, pierced a hole for the thread. A spindle and projection laid the thread over this hole, and a descending forked needle pressed a loop of thread through it. The loop was caught on the under side by a reciprocating hook; a feed moved the work forward the extent of one stitch ; and a second loop was formed by the same motions as the first. It, however, descended within the first, which was thrown off by the hook as it caught the second, and being thus secured and tightened up an ordinary tambour or chain stitch was formed. Had Saint hit on the idea of the eye- pointed needle his machine would have been a complete anticipation of the modern chain-stitch machine. The inventor who first devised a real working machine was a poor tailor, Barthélemy Thimonier,*~~

~~*of St Etienne, who obtained letters patent in France in 1830. In Thi-monier's apparatus the needle was crocheted, and descend- ing through the cloth it brought up with it a loop of thread which it carried through the previously made loop,*~~

~~*fabric.*~~

~~*'model.*~~

~~*SE w—s EW*~~

~~*and thus it formed a chain on the upper surface of the The machine was a rather clumsy affair, made principally of wood, notwithstanding which as many as eighty were being worked in Paris in 1841, making army*~~

~~*'clothing, when an ignorant and furious crowd wrecked*~~

~~*the establishment and nearly murdered the unfortunate inventor. Thimonier, however, was not discouraged, for in 1845 he twicé patented improvements on it, and in 1848 he obtained both in France and the United Kingdom patents for further improvements. The machine was then made entirely of metal, and vastly improved on the first But the troubles of 1848 blasted the prospects of the resolute inventor. His patent rights for Great Britain were sold; a machine shown in the Great Exhi- bition of 1851 attracted no attention, and Thimonier died in 1857 unfriended and unrewarded.*~~

~~*The most important ideas of an eye-pointed needle and a double thread or lock-stitch are strictly of American origin, and that combination was first conceived by Walter Hunt of New York about 1832-34. Hunt reaped nothing of the enormous pecuniary reward which has been shared among the introducers of the sewing machine, and it is therefore all the more necessary that his great merit as an inventor should be insisted on. He constructed a machine having a vibrating arm, at the extremity of which he fixed a curved needle with an eye near its point. By this needle a loop of thread was formed under the cloth to be sewn, and through that loop a thread carried in an oscillating shuttle was passed, thus making the lock-stitch of all ordinary two-thread machines. Hunt's inven- tion was*~~

~~purchased by a blacksmith named Arrowsmith, and a good deal was done towards improving its mechanical details, but no patent was sought, nor was any serious attempt made to draw attention to the invention. After the success of machines based on his two devices was fully established, Hunt in 1853 applied for a patent; but his claim was disallowed on the ground of abandonment. The most important feature in Hunt's invention—the eye- pointed needle—was first patented in the United Kingdom by Newton and Archbold in 1841, in connexion with glove-stitching.~~

~~Apparently quite unconscious of the invention of Walter Hunt, the attention of Elias Howe, a native of Spencer, Mass., was di- rected tomachine- sewing about the year 1843. In 1844 he com- pleted a rough model, and in 1846 he patented his sewing ma- chine (fig. 1). Howe was thus the first to patent a lock-stitch ma- chine, but his in- vention had the two essential feat- ures—the curved ° eye-pointed needle and the under-thread shuttle— which undoubted- ly were invented by Walter Hunt twelve years previously. Howe's invention was sold in England to William Thomas of Cheapside, London, a corset manufacturer, for £250. Thomas secured in December 1846 the English patent in his own name, and engaged~~

~~=|~~

~~oe . we~~

~~Fie. 1.—Howe's original Machine.~~

~~SEWING MACHINES~~

~~Howe on weekly wages to adapt the machine for his manu- facturing purposes. The career of the inventor in London was chequered and unsuccessful ; and, having pawned his American patent rights in England, he returned in April 1849 in deep poverty to America. There in the mean-~~

~~time the sewing machine wag beginning to excite public |~~

~~*curiosity, and various persons were making machines which Howe found to trench on hig patent rights. The _ most prominent of the manufacturers, if not of inventors, ultimately appeared in the person of Isaac Merritt Singer, who in 1851 secured a patent for his machine (fig. 2), and immediately*~~

~~*devoted himself with immense en- ergy to push the fortunes of the infant industry. Howe now became alert to vindicate his rights, and, after regaining possession of his pawned patent, he instituted suits against the in- fringers. Anenor- mous amount of litigation ensued, in which Singer figured as a most obstinate defendant, but ultimately all makers became tributary to Elias Howe. It jg calculated that Howe received in the form of royalties on machines made up to the period of the expiry of his extended patent—September 1867—which was also the month of his death, a sum of not less than two millions of dollars,*~~

~~*The practicability of machine-sewing being demonstrated, inventions of considerable originality and merit followed in quick succession. One of the most ingenious of all the inventors—who worked also without knowledge of previous efforts—was Mr Allan B. Wilson, In 1849 he devised the rotary hook and bobbin combination, which now forms the special feature of the Wheeler & Wilson machine. Mr Wilson obtained a patent for his machine, which included the important and effective four-motion feed, in November 1850. In February 1851 Mr William O. Grover, tailor, of Boston, patented his double chain- stitch action, which formed the basis of the Grover & Baker machine. At a later date, in 1856, Mr James A. E. Gibbs, a Virginia farmer, devised the improved chain- stitch machine now popularly known as the Willcox & Gibbs, These together—all American inventions—form the types of the various machines now in common use, Several thousands of patents have been issued in the United States and Europe, covering improvements in the sewing machine ; but, although the efficiency of the machine has been greatly increased by numerous accessories and attachments, the main principles of the various machines have not been affected thereby.*~~

~~*In machine sewing there are three varieties of stitch made,—(1) the simple chain or tambour stitch, (2) the double chain stitch, and (8) the*~~

~~*lock stitch. In the first variety the machine works with a single thread ; the other forms use two, an upper and an under thread.*~~

~~*The structure of the chain stitch is shown in fig. 8. The needle first descendg through the cloth, then as it begins to ascend the friction of the thread against the fabric is suf- ficient to form a small Dy loop into which the 7 point of 2 hook operat- ing under the cloth plate enters, expanding and holding the loop*~~

~~*while the needle rises to its full height. The feed then moves the fabric forward one stitch length, the hook with its loop is also*~~

~~*OF a yi*~~

~~*Fig, 2,—Singer's original Machine.*~~

~~*Fie. 8.—Chain Stitch.*~~

~~*719*~~

~~*projected so that when next the needle descends its loop is formed within the previous loop. The hook then releases loop No. 1, seizes and expands loop No. 2, and in so doing draws up the previous loop*~~

~~*is, by means of a rotating hook, as pas – Eb ly passed through its pre*~~

~~*The double chain stitch is made by machines associated with the name of Grover & Baker. The somewhat complicated course of the threads in this stitch is shown in fig, 4. The under thread in this machine & is supplied from an ordinary = bobbin and is threaded through a circular needle of peculiarform. The machine is wasteful of thread, and the Fia. 4.—Double Chain Stitch, sewing forms a knotted ridge on the under side of the fabric. Except for special manufacturing and ornamental purposes the machine is now in little use,*~~

~~*The lock stitch is that made by all ordinary two-thread sewing machines, and is a stitch peculiar to machine sewing. Its structure 1s, as shown in fig. 5, very simple, and when by proper tension the threadsinterlock with-*~~

~~*in the work the stitch shows the same on both Wy sides and is very secure, 7% When, however, the ten- sion on the upper thread is weak, the under thread runs along the surface as at b, held more or less tightly by the upper loops. It will be seen that to make the chain stitch the under thread has to be passed quite throngh the loop of the upper thread. That is done in two principal ways. By the first plan a small metal shuttle, holding within it a bobbin of thread, is carried backward and forward under 'the cloth plate, and at each forward movenicnt it passes through the upper thread loop formed by each succeeding stroke of the needle. Such is the principle devised by Hunt, introduced by Howe, and improved by Singer and many others. The second principal method of forming the lock stitch consists in seizing the loop of the upper thread by a rotating hook, expanding the loop and passing it around a stationary bobbin within which is wound the under thread. The method is the invention of Mr A. B, Wilson, and is known generally as the Wheeler & Wilson principle. The rotary hook seen at 8, fig. 6, is so bevelled and notched that it opens and expands the upper thread loop, causing it quite to enclose the bobbin of under thread, after which it throws it off and the so-formed lock stitch is pulled up and tightened either by an independent take-up motion as in recent machines, or by the expansion of the next loop as in the older forms. The bobbin A, lenticular in form, and its case B,*~~

~~*Fig. 5.—Lock Stitch,*~~

~~*Fie. 6.—Rotary Hook, Bobbin, and Bobbin Gase (Wheeler & Wilson Machine).*~~

~~*fig. 6, fit casily into a circular depression within the hook, against which they are held by the bobbin holder a, fig. 6. ; Intermediate between the shuttle and the rotary-hook machines is the new oscillating-shuttle machine introduced by the Singer Co. The shuttle is hook-formed, not unlike the Wilson hook, and it carries within it a capacious circular bobbin of thread h, fig. 7. This shuttle is driven by an oscillating driver db within an annular raceway a a, and, instead of revolving completely like the Wilson hook, it only oscillates in an are of 150", so far ag serves to catch and clear the upper thread. The oscillating-*~~

~~*shuttle and rotary-hook machines work with great smoothness and rapidity.*~~

~~*Fie. 7.—Singer's Oscillating-Shuttle Machine.*~~

~~*There are numerous special sewing machines adapted for leather work, glove-sewing, &c., some of which will be alluded to under SHOES. (J. PA.)*~~

~~*SEX. Since the article Repropvuction (¢.v.) includes not only some account of the reproductive processes but an outline of the comparative anatomy of the reproductive organs, and even a somewhat detailed description of the essential sexual elements, it only remains here to make a brief survey of the more important groups with respect to the absence, union, or distinction of the sexes and to the associated "secondary sexual characters" which distinctly male and female organisms so frequently and strikingly present, and to follow up that outline of the morphological facts with a brief discussion of the nature and origin of the sexes and of the theory of reproduction.*~~

~~*Characters of the Sexes.—Starting with the Protozoa, we find indeed that union or conjugation of two or more individuals is of frequent if not universal occurrence ; yet, since, at any rate with rare and slight exceptions, no permanent morphological difference can be made out which would entitle us to speak of males or females, the group is generally defined as characterized by the absence of sexual reproduction. Without at present accepting or rejecting this view, it is convenient to postpone its discussion until the origin of sex comes to be considered.*~~

~~*Passing to the Calentera, we find among the Hydromedusx the sexes usually distinct, and this distinction of the sexes has lately been traced back to the apparently asexual colonies from which the gonophores arise. Exceptions, however, occur,—e.g., Tubularia, which is monecious. The higher Jfeduse# are also usually unisexual, and occasionally even show secondary sexual differences, as in the form and length of the prehensile filaments (Aurelia). Chrysaora, however, is hermaphrodite. The Siphono-phora usually present both sexes within a single colony,—the gono-phores themselves being, however, unisexual. In a few cases (Apolemia*~~

~~*wraria, Diphyes acuminata) the colony itself is entirely male or female. The Ctenophora are invariably hermaphrodite; and among the Hexactinia this is frequently though not generally the case, completely diccious colonies even occurring (Gerardia). Among the Oetactinia the sexes are usually distinct, even so far as the colonies are concerned, yet there are many exceptions, ¢.g., Corallium, which has male, female, and hermaphrodite polyps on the same stock. See Hyprozoa, Cora.s, &c.*~~

~~*The Echinodermata are very rarely hermaphrodite (Synapta, Amphiura squamata), but secondary sexual characters are almost unknown. Thyone, however, has the male orifice on a small pro- tuberance. See EcHINODERMATA. ;*~~

~~*Probably no invertebrate group presents so varied and interest- ing a series of sexual phenomena as the Vermes. Thus the Polyzoa exhibit that remarkable association of hermaphroditism with asexual reproduction which so frequently recurs in organisms of vegetative habit. The Brachiopods also are hermaphrodite, as also are the Oligochetes; the Polychewta only exceptionally so ; some (Nereidx) exhibit secondary sexual characters so well marked as to have been mistaken for specific or even generic ones. The Platyhelminthes with few exceptions are hermaphrodite ; the*~~

~~*SEX—SEX*~~

~~*Nemerteans (except Borlasia) are unisexual and occasionally exhibit secondary sexual differences. The Nematodes are very rarely hermaphrodite (Ascaris, Pelodytes), but present very marked sexual differences, the male being usually recognizable by smaller size and caudal curvature. Spicules or claspers for copulation are also present. In Strongylus the female is carried by the male in a ventral furrow. The aberrant nematoid Echinorhynchus is also dicecious. Sagitta is hermaphrodite; Balanoglossus unisexual, but without secondary sexual difference. Some of the most striking cases of sexual dimorphism are presented by the Rotifera, where the male is often a fallen representative of the specific type presented by the female, having not only greatly diminished in size but having undergone thorough degeneration in structure, the alimentary canal especially becoming represented by a mere*~~

imperforate thread of cells. Nor are such cases of male degener- ation by any means confined to this group: a yet more striking instance is presented by the Gephyrean Bonellia, in which the oviduct of the large aud well-grown female contains a number of almost microscopic ciliated Turbellarian-looking parasites, which have been shown to be the degenerate males. The other Gephyrea present no such extraordinary dimorphism, while the Discophora are hermaphrodite. See Poryzoa, BRacHHopopA, ANNELIDA, NE- MERTEANS, PLANARIANS, TAPEWORM, SaciTTa, LEexucu, &c. Among Crustaceans the males are frequently smaller or relatively dwarfish, soinetimes attached parasitically to the female, and the sexes are generally distinguishable at least by differences in 'the structure of some of the appendages, — generally, however, in evident relation to their respective functions. Among the Copepods the gexes are separate, and a marked tendency to dimorphism is manifested, even among the free-living forms. This is sometimes manifested in a way which suggests the sexual magnificence of the highest animals; thus, for instance, the male Sapphirina has the brilliance of a gem. With the appearance of parasitism in the group the reproductive relations become profoundly modified ; thus it is the always less active female which first becomes sessile and parasitic ; the male occasionally permanently retains freedom, as in the common Nicothoe of the lobster's gill ; more usually, how- ever, he settles down beside or even upon the female and becomes more or less completely epi-parasitic, undergoing a more thorough degeneration than the female herself. The analogous series from free to parasitic forms furnished by the Ostracoda and Cirripedia are yet more remarkable in their sexual degeneration, since not only does hermaphroditism become the rule, but "complementary males" (most frequently two to one female) appear. These are utterly degenerate in size and structure, in fact often quite unrecognizable as Cirripedes at all, much less as members of the same species, save for their developmental history aud the existence of afew intermediate degrees of degeneration between the normal and the lost Cirripede organization, e.g., [bla or Scalpellwm, whero the males of some species still retain cirri and buccal pieces. In some cases at least their male reproductive function seems to be discharged early in larval life, before the exchange of free for sessile habits, their subsequent life apparently even sinking below the level of reproductive activity. A reversal

~~*of sex has actually been alleged in some cases, the males having been said to become female. In the Phyllopods the sexes are separate, but partheno-geuesis very frequently occurs, as in Daphnia, Apus, &c., and even in Apus tends to replace sexual reproduction very completely. Von Siebold examined thousands of specimens during twelve years without finding a single male; in other years, however, from 10 to 45 per cent. of males have since been found. Besides the usual copulatory modifications of appendages the males of some Phyllopods have more olfactory filaments on the antenne. In Amphipods similar differences have been noted ; in Isopods these often become much more marked,—sometimes, as in the classical case of Praniza and Anceus, reaching a degree of dimorphism with- out degeneration which is hardly exceeded in the animal kingdom, and which quite naturally led to the separation of the sexes into distinct genera. Iu the parasitic forms (Bopyridx) the females degenerate much more thoroughly than the small and active males. The Schizopods exhibit considerable sexual differences. Thus among the males the antenne bear larger olfactory comb-like structures and larger abdominal members ; copulatory appendages may also be specialized ; while the females, as in many Isopods, &c., have a brood-pouch formed of overlapping ventral lamella. The different position of the sex-openings and the characteristic forms of the limbs render the sexes easily distinguishable among the Decapods ; the crabs have an obviously broader abdomen in the female (see Crustacea). Among the Arachnida, the archaic king-crabs already show slight external scx-differences; among the spiders the males have a maxillary palp specially modified for a copulatory organ, an adaptation which, associated with their often extremely small size, is of great importance in aiding their escape from their larger and ferocious mates. Some species of Theridium have a stridulating apparatus. The male scorpions on the other hand seem to possess a rather stronger development ; in the Acarinz the smaller males are more distinctly segmented,*~~

~~*SE xX*~~

~~*possess appendages modified for attachment, and sometimes retain*~~

~~*a free habit of life as distinguished from the parasitic females, See ARACHNIDA.*~~

~~*Among Insects the sexes are distinguished by varying modifica- tions of different parts of the body, and differences in general form and in colour are frequent. The males are generally active and more beautiful, and seem better endowed with sense organs, though usually smaller than the females.*~~

~~*in relation to this that the psychology of sex can first be said to come within the range of observation. said to lower the tone of his song while caressing the female with his antenne. In the parasitic forms dimorphism, as might be expected, becomes very marked ; in Strepstptera the males are free and winged, while the females are blind and wingless, in fact, permanently larval. Similar cases occur in other orders, the glow- worm being probably the most familiar instance, abundantly nourished forms parthenogenesis very frequently appears, the extreme case being presented by Cecidomyta, a fly which exhibits rapid parthenogenetic reproduction in the larval state. The dimorphism of many beetles, in which the male*~~

~~*frequently acquires the most extraordinary specializations of*~~

~~*external form, has received especial attention from Darwin, whose Descent of Man includes the fullest details, Here it is enough to mention that Reichenau has recently pointed out the coexistence of the larger size and relative inactivity of the male with the presence of these functionless outgrowths. The beautiful sexual dimorphism so common among the Lepidoptera need not be more than mentioned at present; while the very remarkable sexual differentiation of Hymenoptera (bees, ants, sawflies, &c.) may also be assumed to be sufficiently familiar. See Insrcts, AnTs, BEEs. Tn several orders (Diptera, Lepidoptera, Coleoptera) cases of dimor- phism occur among the females themselves, or even among the males ; as many as three forms of females have been described in certain butterflies,*~~

~~*The Molluscan series opens with the normally dicecious Lamelli- branchs, of which some genera (most species of Ostrea, Pecten, &c.) are,*~~

~~*however, hermaphrodite. The Pteropods, Pulmonates, and Opisthobranchs are hermaphrodite ; the Prosobranchs, Heteropods, and Cephalopods unisexual. Though slight differences have been described even in Lamellibranch shells (Unio), and though the internal anatomy of the essential and accessory organs is of very high complexity, the extraordinary phenomena, associated with "hectocotylization" among the Cephalopod are the only marked outward manifestations of that sexual dimorphism which reaches its climax in the Argonaut. (See Moutvusca, Curriz-Fisu.) The Tunicates are usually hermaphrodite ; Amphioxus, however, is unisexual (see TUNICATA).*~~

~~*Among Fishes hermaphroditism is extremely rare (Serranus), The males are sometimes characterized by the modification of the pelvic limbs as claspers, &c., and are at the reproductive period often readily distinguishable from the females by their brighter colour or other cutaneous changes, such as ruffling of the skin. Male and female rays are readily also distinguishable by their teeth aud dermal defences. The hooked jaw of the male salmon gives him a characteristic physiognomy during the breeding season. The carp undergoes a sort of epidermic eruption at the same period ; male and female eels, too, are said often to become distinguishable both in colour and shape. Stridulating apparatus may be present, notably in the Siluroids. (See IcHTHYOLOGY.) Among Amphi- bians the bright dorsal crest of the male newt is perhaps the most striking of sex distinctions, but many male frogs and toads have vocal air sacs, epidermal callosities, and some (Cultripes, Pelobates) possess a gland under the fore-limb. (See AMPHIBIA,)*~~

~~*Among the Ophidians the males are smaller, and have longer and more slender tails; the sexes, too, differ sometimes in colour and markings. Male Chelonians, too, have sometimes longer tails and claws and may even give voice. The submaxillary musk-gland of the crocodile is especially active in the breeding season ; the lizards have remarkable throat-pouches and crests, which may be epidermic or even correspond to cranial outgrowths, as in the chameleon,*~~

~~*But it is among Birds and Mammals that the observer of sexual characters finds abundant and remarkable differences extending to the*~~

~~*minutest details, and showing how the higher evolution of parental care which the inevitably prolonged embryonic life in- volves and the wider range of sexual selection have co-operated in modifying the whole organism. As might be expected, the lower mammals show least of this ; but as we ascend the adult males become differentiated from the females by the acquirement of secondary sexual characters which are mainly either offensive and defensive aids for battle with each other, or which assist in gaining the admiration of the females ; and these may coexist or coincide in very various degrees, Thus scent-glands are of common occurrence from the Znsectivora (perhaps even from Ornithorhynchus) upwards. Greater beauty of markings or more vivid colours are acquired, — in many Anthropide (baboons, &c.) the latter being of peculiarly*~~

~~*The males have also a pre- eminence or even monopoly in producing sounds, and itis perhaps*~~

~~*Thus the field-cricket is*~~

~~*In parasitic or*~~

~~*(4*~~

~~*crude magnificence. Abundant loca] growths of hair often appear, most notably in the lion and in many Anthropide. The develop- ment of tusks and horns is also too familiar to need more than passing mention,*~~

~~*But it is unquestionable that in this as in not a few other respects the birds, rather than the mammals, have reached the highest stages of evolution,*~~

~~*Nature and Determination of Sex.—It is not here pro- posed to enter upon the task of historical review and criticism of the various theories of sex—which were esti- mated at so many as five hundred at the beginning of the last century, or even to attempt any sketch of the present very conflicting state of opinion on the subject.)*~~

~~*Although our theories of sex may be still vague enough, the greatest step to the solution has been made in the general abandonment by scientific*~~

~~*men of the doubtless still popular explanation—in terms of a "natural tend- ency " for the production ofan excess of males or the like. It is now held that " quality and quantity of food, elevation of abode, conditions of temperature, relative age of parents, their mode of life, habits, rank, &c,, are all factors which have to be considered." The idea that the problem of the nature of sex is capable of being approached by empirical observation of the numbers of different sexes produced under known sets of conditions, and the obvious practical corollary of this, viz., that the proportion of the sexes must therefore be capable of being experimentally modified and regulated, are conceptions which have steadily been acquir- ing prominence, especially of late. In short, if we can find how sex is determined, we shall have gone far to investigate sex itself,*~~

~~*One of the most crude attempts has been that of Canestrini, who ascribes the determination of sex to the number of sperms entering the ovum, but this view has been already demolished by Fol and Pfliiger. The time of fertilization has also and apparently with greater weight been insisted upon ; thus Thury, followed by Diising, holds that the sex of the offspring depends on the period of fer- tilization : an ovum fertilized soon after liberation produces a female, while the fertilization of an older ovum produces a male, This view has been carried a step farther by Hensen, who suggests that the same should probably hold true of the spermatozoa, and thus the fertilization of a young ovum by a fresh sperm would have a double likelihood of result- ing in a female. There are some observations which support this: thus Thury and other cattle-breeders have claimed to determine the sex of cattle on this principle, and Girou long ago alleged that female flowers, fertilized as soon as they are able to receive pollen, produced a distinct excess of female offspring.*~~

~~*Great weight has also been laid on the relative age of the parents. Thus Hofacker, so long ago as 1828, and Sadler a couple of years later, independently published a body of statistics (each of about 2000 births) in favour of the generalization (since known as Hofacker's and Sadler's law) that when the male parent is the elder the offspring are preponderatingly male : while, if the parents be of the same age, or a fortior if the male parent be younger,*~~

~~1 As for reproduction in general, so for sex, the most convenient starting-point is the work of Hensen (“ Die Zeugung,” in Hermann g Hab. d. Physiologie), while other dissertations are to be found in the leading manuals of zoology and botany, especially, however, in special papers too numerous to mention. See also REPRODUCTION, and for fuller bibliographical details see Geddes, ‘On the Theory of Growth,~~

~~Reproduction, Sex, and Heredity,” Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., 1886. XXI. — gt~~

~~female offspring appear in increasing majority. This view has been confirmed by Goehlert, Boulanger, Legoyt, and others; some breeders of horses, cattle, and pigeons have also accepted it. Other breeders, however, deny it alto- gether; moreover, the recent statistics of Stieda and of Berner (taken independently from Alsace-Lorraine and Scandinavia) seem to stand in irreconcilable contradiction. At any rate at present we do not seem justified in ascribing greater importance to the relative age of parents than asa secondary factor, which may probably take its place among those causes influencing nourishment discussed below,~~

~~That good nourishment appears to produce a distinct preponderance of females is perhaps the single result which can at present be regarded as clearly proven and generally accepted. Yet it would be too much to say that unanimity is even here complete; thus, among plants, the experiments of Girou (1823), Haberlandt (1869), and others gave no certain result; those of Heyer (1883) have led him to dispute the validity of the generalization altogether, while Haberlandt (1877) brought evidence for regarding the excess of females as largely due to the greater mortality of the males. The investigations of agricultural observers, especially Meehan (1878), which are essentially corroborated by Diising (1883), however, leave little doubt that abundant moisture and nourishment tend to produce females. Some of Meehan’s points are extremely instruc- tive. Thus old branches of Conifers overgrown and shaded by younger ones produce only male inflorescences, a fact which may be taken in connexion with Sadebeck’s obser- vation that some fern prothallia, under unfavourable con- ditions, can still form antheridia but not archegonia. The formation of female flowers on male heads of maize~~

~~*is ascribed by Knop to better nutrition consequent on abund- ant moisture, The only seriously contradictory observa- tions are thus those of Heyer, and it is therefore reassuring when a detailed scrutiny of his paper shows his ill-con- ducted experiments (which land him in the conclusion that the organism is not modifiable by its environment at all) to be largely capable of a reversed interpretation. The agency of temperature is also of considerable importance. Thus Meehan finds that the male plants of hazel grow more actively in heat than the female, and Ascherson states that Stratiotes aloides bears only female flowers north of 52° lat., and from 50° southwards only male ones. Other instances might be given,*~~

~~*Passing to the animal kingdom we find the case of insects peculiarly clear ; thus Mrs Treat showed that if caterpillars were starved before entering the chrysalis state the resultant butterflies or moths were males, while others of the same brood highly nourished came out females. Gentry too has shown for moths that innutri- tious or diseased food produced males; hence perhaps a partial explanation of the excess of male insects in autumn, although temperature is probably more important. The recent experiments of Yung on tadpoles are also very conclusive. Thus he raised the percentage of females in one brood from 56 in those unfed to 78 in those fed with beef, and in another supply from 61 to 81 per cent. by feeding with fish ; while, when the especially nutritious flesh of frogs was supplied, the percentage rose from 54 to 92. Among mammals the difficulties of proof are greater, but evidence is by no means wanting. Thus an important experiment was long ago made by Girou, who divided a flock of 300 ewes into equal parts, of which the one half were extremely well fed and served by two young rams, while the other was served by two mature rams and poorly fed. The proportion of ewe lambs in the two cases was respectively 60 and 40 per cent. JDiising also states is is usually the heavier ewes which bring forth ewe ambs.*~~

~~*'tends to readjust itself."*~~

~~*SEX*~~

~~*Nor does sex in the human species appear to be independent of differences of nutrition. After a cholera epidemic or a war more boys are said to be born, and Diising also points out that in females with small*~~

~~*placenta and little menstruation more boys are found, and even affirms that the number of male children varies with the rise in prices. In towns and in prosperous families there are also more females, while males are more numerous in the country and among the poor. The influence of temperature is also marked: more males are born during the colder months, a fact noted also by Schlechter for horses.*~~

~~*The best known and probably still most influential theory is that systematized by Girou and known as that of 'comparative vigour." This makes sex of offspring depend on that of the more vigorous parent. But to this view there are serious difficulties: thus consumptive mothers produce a great excess of daughters, not sons as might be expected from the superior health of the father. Still less weight can be attached to that form of the hypothesis which would make sex follow "genital superiority" or "relative ardency" alone. Any new theory has thus to reconcile the arguments in favour of each of the preceding views, and meet the difficulties which beset all. As Starkweather puts it, it must at once account for such facts as "' the preponderance of male births in Europe, of females among mulattos and other hybrid races, as also among polygamous animals, and for the equality among other animals. More especially it must suggest some principle of self-adjustment by which not only is the balance of the sexes nearly preserved on the whole, but by which also in cases of special disturbance the balance Starkweather proceeds to attempt this, and his argument may be briefly summarized. While few maintain any essential equality of the sexes, and still fewer any superiority of the female, the weight of authority has been from the earliest times in favour of the doctrine of male superiority. From the earliest ages philosophers have contended that woman is but an undeveloped man ; Darwin's theory of sexual selection presup- poses a superiority in the male line and entailed on that sex; for Spencer the development of woman is early arrested by procreative functions : in short, Darwin's man is as it were an evolved woman, and Spencer's woman an arrested man. On such grounds we have a number of theories of sex. Hough thinks males are born when the system is at its best, more females when occupied in growth, reparation, or disease. So, too, Tiedman and others regard every embryo as originally female and remaining female if errested, while Velpau conversely regards embryos as*~~

~~*all naturally male, but frequently degenerating to the female state. Starkweather points out some of the difficulties to the view of female inferiority, and lays it down as the foundation of his work that 'neither sex is physically the superior, but both are essen- tially equal in a physiological sense." But, while this is true of the average, there are many grades of individual differences and deficiencies in detail, involving a greater or less degree of superiority in one or other of every pair. Starkweather's theory then is "that sex is determined by the superior parent, also that the superior parent produces the opposite sex." 'The arguments adduced in favour of this view, however, are scarcely worthy of it, since, save a chapter of pseudo-physiological discussion of vital forces and polarities, of superiority,—nervous, electrical, &c.,.— they rest mainly on the vague and shifting grounds of physiognomy and temperament. And when superiority is analysed into its factors,—cerebral development and activ- ity, temperament, state of health, of nutrition, &c., —soon we find under the appearance of simplicity a law has been obtained not by discovering any real unity under the many*~~

~~*apparently different factors, but by simply lumping them uuder a common name. Nor is a rationale given of the affirmed reversal of sex, which Schlechter and other authorities moreover wholly deny. Despite these and other faults and failures the work is interesting and often suggestive, and that not only on account of its theoretic position but its sanguine proposals for the practical contro] of sex.*~~

~~*The work of Diising (1883), while less speculative, is of great importance in respect to the causes which regulate the proportions of the sexes ; since, instead of falling back with Darwin on the unexplained operation of natural selection, he seeks to note the circumstances in which a majority of one sex is profitable, and to show that organisms have really the power to produce in such circum- stances a majority of one sex,—in short, that disturbances in the proportion of the sexes bring about their own compensation, and further supports these views by calcula- tion and statistical evidence.*~~

~~*He separates the causes determining sex into those affecting (a) one parent and (bd) both alike. Starting with a minority of one sex, he emphasizes the importance of delayed fertilization, accept- ing it as a fact that females late fertilized bear most males (this corresponding in man to a searcity of males among the lower animals). He notes that the firstborn child is most frequently a male, especially among older persons, and thus explains how after a war, when there is a want of males, most male children are born, He ascribes importance to the amount of sexual intercourse. Thus, suppose a minority of females: their fertilization tends to occur more frequently, and thus (if the general statement be correct) they should produce a majority of their own Sex; Or similarly with males. This is su ported by reference to cattle- breeding, and it is interpreted physiologically to involve that young spermatozoa produce a majority of males. Suppose a great majority of males: the chances of early fertilization of the females are of course great, but eggs fertilized early tend to produce females. Or suppose conversely a great minority of males: the chances of early fertilization are small, but old eggs tend to produce males, and either excess will thus become compensated. Or again, the more decided the minority of one sex the more frequent the scxual activity of its individuals, the younger their sexual elements, and consequently the more individuals of that sex are produced. Diising next takes up as indirect causes equivalent toa minority of individuals—(a) deficient nutrition ; just as fre- quent copulation overstrains the genital organs the same result may arise from the deficient nutrition of the system ; hence an ill- fed cow yields a female to a well-fed bull and vice versa ; (b) relative age ; the nearer either parent is to the period of greatest reproduc- tive capacity the less, he thinks, is a birth of that sex probable.*~~

~~*As factors affecting both parents he first discusses variations in nutrition; although means of subsistence may decrease, there is at*~~

~~*Theory of Reproduction and Sex.—If we now attempt to reach a rational standpoint from which to criticize and compare the innumerable empirical conceptions of SCX,— much more if we seek a firm basis for the construction of a really comprehensive theory,—it is evident 'that such a theory must be addressed not merely to the specialist concerned with problems of reproduction and development, but, while embracing*~~

~~*details and anomalies, must be satis- factory alike to the general morphologist and physio- logist. We must therefore have before us that conception of the main lines of thought on each of these subjects which has been outlined under the headings Puysrotoay and Morpnoroey.*~~

~~*The close coincidence between these two independent developments is especially to be noted. From the vague account of general form and appearance, of habits and temperaments, which made up the descriptive natural history of the past, the two streams of progress, though distinct, are wholly parallel. Thus Buffon furnished a brilliant and synthetic exposition of the oldest view, while one side of their general aspect received new precision at the hands of Linnzeus,—to some extent the other also at the hands of his physiological contemporaries. The anatomical advance of Cuvier is parallel to the detailed study of the functions of the organs, while the great step made by Bichat lay in piercing below the conception of the organ and its function as ultimate, and in seeking to interpret both by reference to the component tissues. The cell- theory of Schwann and his successors analysed these tissues a step farther, while the latest and deepest analysis refers all structure ultimately to the substance called protoplasm, and similarly claims to express all function in terms of the construction and destruction, synthesis and analysis, anabolism and katabolism of this. See PuHysroLoay, Proto- PLASM, Morpnonoey.*~~

~~*Now, since every morphological and physiological fact or theory is in one or other of these few categories, it is evident that we have here the required criterion of theories of reproduction and sex. The question, What is sex? what is meant by male or female? admits of a regular series of answers, The first and earliest is in terms of general aspect, temperament, and habit, and, though crude, em- pirical, and superficial, it lacks neither unity nor usefulness. At this plane are not only most popular conceptions but many theories like that of Starkweather, which may be mentioned as the most recent. The anatomist contents himself with the recognition of specific organs of sex, or at most with a similarly empirical account of their functions ; while the embryologist and histologist will not rest con- tented without seeking to refer these organs to the tissues of which they are composed and the layer from which they*~~

~~spring, and even reaches and describes the ultimate cellular elements essential to sex,—the ovum and spermatozoon. A parallel physiological interpretation of these is next required, and at this point appear such hypotheses as these of Weis- mann and others.~~

~~Thus the bewildering superabundance of widely dif- ferent theories at the present juncture becomes intelligible enough ; and, each once classified according to its stage of progress, a detailed criticism would be easy. But this is not enough: the demand for an explanation at once rational and ultimate, to comprehend and underlie all the preceding ones, is only the more urgent. Where shall we seek for it? On the one hand the morphological aspect of such an explanation must interpret the forms of sex cells in terms of those of cells in general, and in terms of the structural properties of protoplasm itself ; while its more difficult yet more satisfying physiological aspect must express the mysterious difference of male and female in terms of the life processes of that protoplasm,—in terms,~~

~~On reproductive activity, notes the influence of climate, function, &c., and contrasts organisms of high activity, like birds and insects, with parasites. The nutritive relations of the sexes are also~~

~~good harvest, and the rising proportion of boys during a rise of priees. Similarly for animals: the more food the more females, and the more rapidly the species increases; the less food the more males, and the less rapid the increase, Again, plants on good soil produce more female flowers and more seed with profit to the species ; on bad soil male flowers preponderate, mostly perish, and the species tends to disappear. he extreme case of optimum nutrition tends to produce normal parthenogenesis (“thelytokie ”), yielding only females, different in cause and operation from the parthenogenesis resulting from the absence of males (“arrenotokie”).}~~

~~1 See Diising, Jena Zeitschr., 1885 ; Starkweather, Law of Sex, 1883.~~

~~*that is to say, of anabolism and katabolism. Were these steps made a new synthesis would be reached, and from this point it should even next be possible to retrace the progress of the science, and interpret the forms and the functions of tissues and organs, nay, even of the facts of aspect, habit, and temperament, so furnishing the deductive rationale of each hitherto merely empirical order of ob- served fact and connecting theory.*~~

~~*While this conception does not admit of development within the present limits,1.a brief abstract of such an interpretation of reproduction and of sex in terms of anabolism and katabolism may be of interest to the reader. The theory of reproduction, in general principle at least, is simple enough. A continued surplus of anabolism involves growth, and the setting in of reproduction when growth stops implies a relative katabolism, This in short is merely a more precise restatement of the familiar antithesis between nutrition and reproduction. At first this disintegration and reintegration entirely exhaust the organism and conclude its individual existence, but as we ascend the proeess becomes a more and more localized one. The origin of this localization of the reproductive function may best be understood if we figure to ourselves a fragment of the genealogical tree of the evolutionist in greater detail, and bear in mind that this is made up of a con- tinuous alternate series of sex-cell and organism, the organism, too, becoming less and less distinguished from its parent cell until the two practically coincide in the Protozoa, which should be defined not so much as " organisms devoid of sexual reproduction" but rather as undifferentiated reproductive cells (protosperms or protova, as they might in fact be called), which have not built up round them- selves a body. We should note, too, how the continuous immortal stream of Protozoan life (see Prorozoa) is continued by that of ordinary reproductive cells among the higher animals, for the mor- tality of these does not affect this continuity any more than the fall of leaves does the continued life of the tree. The interpreta- tion of sex is thus less difficult than might at first sight appear. For anabolism and katabolism cannot and do not absolutely bal- ance, as all the facts of rest and motion, nutrition and reproduc- tion, variation and disease, in short of life and death, clearly show. During life neither process can completely stop, but their algebraic sum keeps varying within the widest limits. Let us note the result, starting from the undifferentiated ameeboid cell. A*~~

surplus of ana- bolism over katabolism involves not only a growth in size but a reduction in kinetic and a gain in potential energy, @.¢., a diminu- tion of movement. Irregularities thus tend to disappear ; surface tension too may aid ; and the cell acquires a spheroidal form. The large and quiescent ovum is thus intelligible enough. Again starting from the ameeboid cell, if katabolism be in increasing preponderance the increasing liberation of kinetic energy thus implied must find its outward expression in increased activity of movement and in diminished size; the more active cell becomes modified in form by passage through its fluid environment, and the flagellate form of the spermatozoon is thus naturalenough. It is noteworthy, too, that these physiologically normal results of the rhythm of cellular life, the resting, amceboid, and ciliate forms, are precisely those which we empirically reach on morphological grounds alone (sec MorPHo.oey, vol. xvi. p. 841).

Given, then, the conception of the cellular life rhythm as capable of thus passing into a distinctly anabolic or katabolic habit or diathesis, the explanation of the phenomena of reproduction becomes only a special field within a more general view of structure and function, nay even of variation, normal and pathological. Thus the generality, use, and nature of the process of fertilization become readily intelligible. The profound chemical difference surmised by so many authors becomes intelligible as the outcome of anabolism and katabolism respectively, and the union of their products as restoring the normal balance and rhythm of the renewed cellular life. Without discussing the details of this, farther than to note how it resumes the speculations of Rolph and others as to the origin of fertilization from mutual digestion, of the reproductive from the nutritive function, we may note how they illustrate on this view that origin of fertilization from conjugation which is the central problem of the ontogeny and phylogeny of sex. The formation of polar vesicles seems thus an extrusion of katabolic (or male) elements, and conversely its analogues in spermatogenesis (see RrPRoDUC- TION). Passing over such tempting applications as that to the explanation of segmentation and even subsequent developmental changes, it must suffice to note that the constant insistance of embryologists upon the physiological importance of the embryonic layers bears essentially upon their respective predominance of ana- bolism and katabolism. The passage from ordinary

~~growth to that discontinuous growth which we term asexual reproduction, and from this again to sexuality or the frequent reverse progress, is capable of rational interpretation in like manner: the "alternation of gene-~~

~~1 See paper by Geddes already mientioned at p. 721, footnote.~~

~~rations" is but a rhythm between a relatively anabolic and katabolic preponderance; a parthenogenetic ovum is an incompletely differ- entiated ovum which retains a measure of katabolic (male) products, and thus does not need fertilization ; while hermaphroditism is due to the local preponderances of anabolism or katabolism in one set of reproductive cells or in one period of their life. The reversion of unisexual forms to hermaphrodite ones, or of these to asexual ones, which we have seen in such constant association with high nutrition and low expenditure,? is no longer inexplicable. The female sex being thus preponderatingly anabolic, the importance of good nutrition in determining it is explained: menstruation is seen to be the means of getting rid of the anabolic surplus in absence of its foetal consumption, while the higher temperature and greater activities of the male sex express its katabolic diathesis. The phenomena of sex, then, are no isolated ones, but express the highest outcome of the whole activities of the organism—the literal blossoming of the individual life. (P. GE.)~~

~~SEXTANT, an instrument for measuring angles on the celestial sphere. The name (indicating that the instru- ment is furnished with a graduated arc equal to a sixth part of a circle) is now only used to designate an instru- ment employing reflexion to measure an angle; but originally it was introduced by Tycho Brahe, who con- structed several sextants with two sights, one on a fixed, the other on a movable radius, which the observer pointed to the two objects of which the angular distance was to be measured.~~

~~In the article NAVIGATION the instruments are described which were in use before the invention of the reflecting sextant. Their imperfections were so evident that the idea of employing reflexion to remove them~~

~~occurred independently to several minds. Hooke contrived two reflecting instruments. The first is described in his Post- humous Works (p. 503); it had only one mirror, which reflected the light from one object into a telescope which is pointed directly at the other. Hooke's second plan employed two single reflexions, whereby an eye placed at the side of a quadrant could at the same time see the images formed in two telescopes, the axes of which were radii of the quadrant and which were pointed at the two objects to be measured. This plan is described in Hooke's Animadversions to the Machina Celestis of Hevelius, pub- lished in 1674, while the first one seems to have been communicated to the Royal Society in 1666. Newton had also his attention turned to this subject, but nothing was known about his ideas till 1742, when a description in his own handwriting of an instrument devised by him was found among Halley's papers and printed in the Philosophical Transactions (No. 465). It consists of a sector of brass, the are of which, though only equal to one-eighth part ofa circle, is divided into 90°. A tele- scope is fixed along a radius of the sector, the object glass being close to the centre and having outside it a plane mirror inclined 45° to the axis of the telescope, and intercepting half the light which would otherwise fall on the object glass. One object is seen through the tele- scope, while a movable radius, carrying a second mirror close to the first, is turned round the centre until the second object by double reflexion is seen in the telescope to coincide with the first.~~

~~But long before this plan of Newton's saw the light the sextant in its present form had been invented and had come into practical use. On May 13, 1731, John Hadley gave an account of an "octant," employing double re- flexion, and a fortnight later he exhibited the instrument.°~~

~~Ci Ss oe ee~~

~~2 Thus Marshall Ward has lately drawn attention to the association of parasitism with the disappearance of sexual reproduction in Fungi (Quart. Jour. Micr. Sct., xxiv.).~~

~~3 Hadley described two different constructions: in one the teleseope was fixed along a radius as in Newton's form, in the other it was placed in the way afterwards universally adopted; an oetant of the first construction~~

~~*was made as early as the summer of 17380, according to a statement made to the Royal Soeiety by Hadley's brother George on Feb. 7, 1734.*~~

~~*SEX—SEY*~~

~~*On the 20th May Halley stated to the society that*~~

~~*Newton had invented an instrument founded on the same*~~

~~*principle, and had communicated an account of it to the*~~

~~*society in 1699, but on search being made in the minutes*~~

~~*it was only found that Newton had showed a new instru-*~~

~~*ment "for observing the moon and stars for the longitude*~~

~~*at sea, being the old instrument mended of some faults," but nothing whatever was found in the minutes concerning Halley had evidently*~~

~~*the principle of the construction. only a very dim recollection of Newton's plan, and ata meeting of the Royal Society on*~~

~~*different from Newton's.*~~

~~*order of the Admiralty, otherwise it does not seem to have superseded the older instruments for at least twenty years, by Hadley the instrument could only measure angles up to 90°; but in 1757 Captain Campbell of the first to use it assiduously, proposed to enlarge it so*~~

~~*as to measure angles up to 120°, in which form it is now*~~

~~*generally employed.*~~

~~*Quite independently of Hadley and Newton the sextant was invented by Thomas Godfrey, a poor glazier in Phila- delphia, In May 1732 Mr James Logan of that city wrote to Halley that Godfrey had about eighteen months previously showed him a common sea quadrant 'to which he had fitted two pieces of looking-glass in such a Manner as brought two stars*~~

~~*at almost any distance to coincide." The letter gave a full description of the instru- ment; the principle was the same as that of Hadley's first octant which had the telescope along a radius. At the meeting of the Royal Society on January 31, 1734, two affidavits sworn before the mayor of Philadelphia were read, proving that Godfrey's quadrant was made about November 1730, that on the 28th November it was brought by G. Stewart, mate, on board a sloop, the "Truman," John Cox, master, bound for Jamaica, and that in August 1731 it was used by the same persons on a voyage to Newfoundland. There can thus be no doubt that Godfrey invented the instrument independently ; but the statement of several modern writers that a brother of Godfrey, a captain in the West India trade, sold the quadrant at Jamaica to a Captain or Lieutenant Hadley of the British navy, who brought it to London to his brother, an instrument maker in the Strand, has been proved to be devoid of all foundation. Not only is this totally at variance with all the particulars given in the affidavits, but between 1719 and 1743 there was no Officer in the British navy of the name of Hadley, and John Hadley cannot possibly have been in the West Indies at that time, as he was present at many meetings of the Royal Society between November 1730 and May 1731; besides, neither Hadley nor his brothers were professional instrument makers. A detailed discussion of this question by Prof. Rigaud is found in the Nautical Magazine, vol. il. No, 21.1*~~

~~*The annexed figure gives an idea of the construction of the sextant. ABC is a light framework of brass in the shape of a sector of 60°, the limb AB having a graduated are of silver (some- times of gold) inlaid in the brass. It is held in the hand by a small handle at the back, either vertically to measure the altitude of an object, or in the plane passing through two objects the angular distance of which is to be found. CD is a radius movable round ©, where a small plane mirror of silvered plate-glass is fixed ee rewulas to the plane of the sextant and in the line CD. At*~~

~~*is a vernier read through a small lens, also a clamp and a tangent*~~

~~*1 Jobn Hadley was a eountry gentleman of independent means, and the fact that he was the first to bring the construction of reflecting telescopes to any perfeetion has made many authors of astronomieal books believe*~~

~~that he was a professional iustrument maker. HIs brother George, who assisted him in his pursuits, was a barrister.~~

~~December 16, 1731, he declared himself satisfied that HIadley's idea was quite The new instrument was already in August 1732 tried on board the "Chatham " yacht by and was found satisfactory, but~~

~~As constructed~~

~~of the navy, one~~

~~725~~

~~screw which enable the observer to give the arm CD a very slow motion within certain limits. At Eis another mirror " the horizon glass," also perpendicular to the plane of the sextant and paralle] toCB. Fisasmall teleseope 5, fixed across CB, parallel to the plane CAB and pointed ' tothe mirror E, Dark glasses Ss can be placed outside E and Ss between E and C when ob- ' serving the sun. As only \ the lower half of Eissilvered, ' the observer can sce the hori. zon in the telescope through the unsilvered half, while the light from the sun or a star S may be reflected from the "index glass" © to the silvered half of E and thence through F to the observer's eye. If CD has been moved so as to make the image of a star or of the limb of the sun coincide with that of the horizon, it is easy to see that the angle SCH (the altitude of the star or solar limb) is equal to twiee the angle BCD. The limb AB is al- ways graduated so as to avoid the necessity of doubling the mea- sured angle, a space marked as a degree on the limb being in reality only 30'. The vernier should point to 0° 0' 0" when the two mirrors are parallel, or in other words, when the direct and reflected images of a very distant object are seen to coincide, the methods of adjusting the mirrors and finding the index error see NAVIGATION (vol. xvii. p . 268),~~

~~If the sextant is employed on land, an artificial horizon has to be used. This is generally a basin of mercury protected from the wind by a roof of plate-glass with perfectly parallel faees ; some- times a glass plate is used (with the lower surface blaekened), which can be levelled on three screws by a circnlar level. The telescope is directed to the image of the celestial~~

~~*object reflected from the artificial horizon, and this image is made to coincide with that reflected from the index-glass. In this case the angle BCD will be double the altitude of the star. Towards the end of*~~

~~*Sextant.*~~

~~*last and the beginning of this century the sextant was much used*~~

~~*on land for determining latitudes, but, though in the hands of a*~~

~~*skilful observer it can give results far superior to what one might*~~

~~*expect from a small instrument held in the hand (or attached to a small stand), it has on shore been quite superseded by the portable*~~

~~*altazimuth or theodolite, while at sea it continnes to be indis- pensable.*~~

~~*The principle of the sextant has been applied to the construc-*~~

~~*tion of reflecting circles, on which the index arm is a diameter with a vernier at each end to eliminate the error of eccentricity.*~~

~~*The circles constructed by Pistor and Martins of Berlin have a*~~

~~*glass prism instead of the horizon glass and are extremely con-*~~

~~*venient, (J. L. E. D.) SEXTUS EMPIRICUS. See Sceprioram, SEYCHELLES, an archipelago of the Indian Ocean,*~~

~~*consisting of eighty islands—several of them mere islets*~~

~~*situated between 3° 38' and 5° 45' 8, lat. and 52° 55' and 53° 50' E. long., about 1400 miles south-east of Aden and*~~

~~*1000 miles east of Zanzibar. They are the only small*~~

~~*tropical oceanic islands of granitic structure, and rise*~~

~~*steeply out of the sea, culminating in the island of Mahé, at an elevation of 2998 feet above the sea-level. The most northerly island is Bird, $ by } mile; the most southerly, Plate; the most easterly, Frégates ; the most westerly, Silhouette. Mahé, the largest island of the group, 3 by 14 miles, is very nearly central, 60 miles south of Bird, and having to the north and north-east of it La*~~

~~*Digne, Félicité, Praslin, and Curieuse. Only a few—*~~

~~*Mahé, Praslin, La Digne, Denis, and Bird—are inhabited.*~~

~~*The total area is about 50,120 acres, of which Mahé alone*~~

~~*comprises 34,749. The beaches of glistening calcareous*~~

~~*sand are begirt by coral reefs which form a wall round the*~~

~~*islands. The valleys and easier slopes are overlaid with a*~~

~~*very fertile soil, and vegetation is most luxuriant, Though*~~

~~*the climate is tropical, the heat is tempered and rendered uniform by the sea breezes, and probably this accounts for epidemic diseases and endemic fever being of uncommon*~~

~~*occurrence. There are numerous brooks and torrents, making their way to the sea between blocks of granite. The islands are green and fresh at all times, particularly during the wet season from November to May. The total rainfall for 1881 was 113°50 inches. The extreme range of the thermometer in 1881 and 1882 was only 22° (minimum 71°, maximum 93°). The heat is seldom sultry and oppressive. The Seychelles lie too far to the north to receive the hurricanes which occasionally sweep over Bourbon and Mauritius, and even thunderstorms are rare. The population at the census of 1881 was 14,081 (7179 males and 6902 females)—500 white (mostly French creoles), 11,500 black, and 2000 coolies. Since 1881 the population has considerably increased in*~~

~~*consequence of a tide of immigration from Mauritius. Men and women of exceptionally great age are frequently met with, and the death-rate for 1880 amounted to only 13:1 per 1000. The prevailing language is a French patois, but English is taught in the schools.*~~

~~*These islands were discovered at the beginning of the 16th century, but never occupied, by the Portuguese. In 1742 the French took possession of them, calling them at first Iles des Labourdonnais, but afterwards the Seychelles, from Count Heérault de Seychelles, an officer of the East Indian flect. The first settle- ment was made in 1768 at Mahé, now Port Victoria. In 1794 the English wrested them from the French along with Mauritius, and they are now ruled by a board of six civil commissioners, as a dependency under the governor of Mauritius. In 1834 slavery was abolished, and since then the plantations have been in a declining state. In 1884 there were in the islands 20 primary schools aided by Government grants and attended by 1620 children. There are 16 churches belonging to the Roman Catholics (the dominant faith) and 11 to the Church of England. The main product is the cocoa-nut, but tobacco, coffee, rice, maize, sweet potatoes, and manioc are raised for home consumption, while cotton, pepper; cinnamon, and other spices grow wild. Many of the trees*~~

~~*isplay simultaneously blossoms and unripe and ripe fruit. The so-called sea or Maldive double cocoa-nut, "coco de mer," the fruit of the palm-tree Lodotcca Sechellarwm, is peculiar to certain of these islands. It was long known only from sea-borne specimens cast up on the Maldive and other coasts, was thought to grow on a submarine palm, and, being esteemed a sovereign antidote to poisons (Lustad, x. 186), commanded exorbitant prices in the Kast. This palm will grow to a height of 100 feet, and shows fern-like leaves of enormous size. Sensitive plants from America spread like lawns over the soil and quake at every step taken over them. The cocoa-nut palm flourishes in the gardens, overtopping the houses and most other trees, lining the shore, climbing high up the mountains, and in many places forming extensive forests. There are no native mammals, and domestic animals are scarce. The birds comprise gannets, terns in great numbers, and white egrets. Tortoises are common, — among them the gigantic turtle and black turtle, whose flesh is*~~

~~exported. The sea abounds in fish, many of them distinguished by splendid colours, and yields the inhabitants not only a large part of their animal food but also material for building their houses,—a species of massive coral, Porites gaimardi, being hewn into square building blocks which at a distance glisten like white marble.~~

~~The principal harbour is Port Victoria, situated on Mahé island. The total value of imports here in 1884, including Rs.27,097 specie, was Rs.428,605, and of the exports, including Rs.21,582 specie, Rs.392,175. The chicf imports were coffee and cotton manufac- tures; the chief exports, cocoa-nut, cocoa-nut oil, and_ sperm oil. The fiscal receipts for 1884 amounted to Rs.130,047. The cultiva- tion of cocoa is progressing favourably, but the same cannot be said of the vanilla and clove plantations, which suffer from want of regular labour, attributable to the widespread share system, which the negroes prefer to regular work. The leaf disease affect- ing coffee has done great injury, and cocoa-nut plantations have suffered from the ravages of an insect, but no effort seems to have yet been made by weeding the plantations to stamp out the disease. Of the 34,749 acres of land making up Mahé, 12,000 acres are laid out in cocoa-nut, 500 in vanilla, coffee, and cloves, and 1500 are in forest; of the uncultivated land 8000 acres are well suited for vanilla, cocoa, and coffee plantations.~~

~~SEYMOUR, Epwarp. See Somerset, DUKE oF.~~

~~SEYNE, La, a town of France, in the department of Var, 5 miles south-west of Toulon, with a population of 9788 in 1881. It owes its importance mainly to its ship- building, the Société des Forges et Chantiers de la Médi- terranée having here one of the finest building yards in~~

~~Europe, in which more than 2000 workmen are employed ; contracts are executed for private shipowners, for the great Messageries Maritimes Company, and for various Govern- ments. The port, which has communication by steamer and omnibus with that of Toulon, is 6 acres in extent, and admits vessels of the largest tonnage.~~

~~*SFAX, a city of Tunis, second in importance only to the capital, is situated 116 miles south of Mahadia, on the coast of the Gulf of Gabes (Syrtis Minor) opposite the Kerkenah Islands. It consists of three distinct portions: —the new European quarter to the south, with roads, piers, and other improvements carried out by the muni- cipality ; the Arab town in the middle with its tower- flanked walls entered by only two gates; and to the north the French camp. Round the town for 5 or 6 miles to the north and west stretch orchards and gardens and country houses, where most of the Sfax families have their summer quarters. Dates, almonds, grapes, figs, peaches, apricots, olives, and in rainy years melons and cucumbers, grow there in great abundance without irrigation. Two enormous cisterns maintained by public charitable trusts supply the town with water in dry seasons. Sfax was formerly the terminus of a caravan route to Central Africa, but its inland trade now extends only to Gafsa. The export trade (esparto grass, oil, almonds, pistachio nuts, sponges, wool, é&c.) has attained considerable dimensions. Fifty-one English vessels (34,757 tons) visited the port in 1884. The anchorage is 2 miles from the shore, and there isa rise and fall of 5 feet at spring tides (a rare phenomenon in the Mediterranean). In 1881 the popula- tion was said to be about 15,000 (including 1200 Arabs, 1500 Tunisian Jews, 1000 Maltese, &c., 500 Europeans) ; in 1886 it is stated at 32,000 (1200 Maltese, 1000 Euro- peans).*~~

~~*Sfax (the Arabic Asfakis or Safakus, sometimes called the City of Cucumbers) occupies the site of the ancient Taphrura. In the Middle Ages it was famous for its vast export of olive oil. The Sicilians took Sfax under Roger the Norman in the 12th century, and the Spaniards occupied it for a brief period in the 16th century. The bombardment of the town in 1881 was one of the principal events of the French conquest of Tunis; it was pillaged by the soldiers on July 16th and the inhabitants had afterwards to pay a war indemnity of £250,000.*~~

~~*SFORZA, Hovusz or. See Minan, vol. xvi. p. 293, and Iraty, vol. xiii. p. 479.*~~

~~*SHAD is the name given to certain migratory species of Herrings (Clupea), which are distinguished from the herrings proper by the total*~~

absence of teeth in the jaws. Two species occur in Europe, much resembling each other, — one commonly called Allis Shad (Clupea alosa), and the other known as Twaite Shad (Clupea finta). Both are, like the majority of herrings, greenish on the back and bright silvery on the sides, but they are distinguished from the other European species of Clupea by the presence of a large blackish blotch behind the gill-opening, which is succeeded by a series of several other similar spots along the middle of the side of the body. So closely allied are these two fishes that their distinctness can be proved only by an examination of the gill-apparatus, the allis shad having from sixty to eighty very fine and long gill-rakers along the concave edge of the first branchial arch, whilst the twaite shad possesses from twenty-one to twenty-seven stout and stiff gill-rakers only. In their habits and geo- graphical distribution also the two shads are very similar. They inhabit the coasts of temperate Europe, the twaite shad being more numerous in the Mediterranean. While they are in salt water they live singly or in very small companies, but during May (the twaite shad some weeks later) they congregate, and in great numbers ascend large rivers, such as the Severn (and formerly the Thames), the Seine, the Rhine, the Nile, &c., in order to deposit their

spawn, — sometimes traversing hundreds of miles, until their progress is arrested by some natural obstruction. A few weeks after they may be observed dropping down the river, lean and thoroughly exhausted, numbers floating dead on the surface, so that only a small proportion seem to regain the sea. Although millions of ova must be de- posited by them in the upper reaches of a river, the fry does not seem to have been actually observed in fresh water, so that it seems probable that the young fish travel to the sea long before they have attained 'to any size.

On rivers in which these fishes make their periodical appearance they have become the object of a regular fishery, and their value increases in proportion to the distance from the sea at which they are caught. Thus they are much esteemed on the middle Rhine, where they are generally known as " Maifisch"; those caught on their return journey are worthless and uneatable. The allis shad is caught at a size from 15 to 24 inches, and

~~*is con- sidered to be better flavoured than the twaite shad, which generally remains within smaller dimensions.*~~

~~*Other, but closely allied species, occur on the Atlantic coasts of North America, all surpassing the European species in importance as food-fishes and economic value, viz., the American Shad (Clupea sapidissima), the Gaspereau or Ale-wife (C. mattowocea), and the Menhaden (C. menhaden). Sec MENHADEN,*~~

~~*SHADDOCK (Citrus decumana) is a tree allied to the orange and the lemon, presumably native to the Malay and Polynesian islands, but generally cultivated through- out the tropics. The leaves are like those of the orange, but downy on the under surface, as are also the young shoots. The flowers are large and white, and are succeeded by very large globose or pear-shaped fruits like oranges, but paler in colour, and with less flavour. The name Shad- dock is asserted to be that of a captain who introduced the tree tothe West Indies. The fruit is also known under the name of pommeloes and "forbidden frent;" There are two varieties commonly met with, one with pale and the other with red pulp.*~~

~~*SHADWELL, Tuomas (1640-1692), a playwright and miscellaneous versifier of the Restoration period, Dryden's successor in the laureateship, is remembered now, not by his works, though he was a prolific writer of comedies highly successful in their day, but as the subject of Dryden's satirical portraits "MacFlecknoe" and "Og." He was a native of Norfolk —not an Irishman, as he retorted with significant imbecility when Dryden's satire appeared,—went through the forms of study at Cambridge and the Inner Temple, travelled abroad for a little, returned to London, cultivated the literary society of coffee-houses and taverns, and in 1668, at the age of 28, gained the ear of the stage with a comedy The Suillen Lovers. For fourteen years afterwards, till his memorable encounter with Dryden he continued regularly to produce a comedy nearly every year, showing considerable clever- ness in caricaturing the oddities of the time. Ben Jonson was his model, but he drew his materials largely from con- temporary life. He also acquired standing among the wits asatalker. In the quarrel with Dryden he was the aggres- sor, They had been good enough friends, and Dryden in 1679 had furnished him*~~

~~with a prologue for his 7'rue Widow. But when Dryden threw in his lot with the court, and satirized the opposition in Absalom and Achitophel and The Medal, Shadwell was rash enough to constitute himself the champion of the true-blue Protestants and wrote a grossly personal and scurrilous attack on the poet, entitled Lhe Medal of John Bayes. Dryden immediately retorted in MacHecknoe, the most powerful and contemptuously scornful personal satire in our language, adding next month afew more rough touches of supercilious mockery in the second part of Absalom and Achitophel, where Shadwell figures as " Og";~~

~~Og from a treason-tavern rolling liome, Round as a globe, and liquored every chink : Goodly and great he sails behind his link.~~

~~Dryden may not be strictiy fair when he addresses his enemy as "thou last great prophet of tautology," and makes Flecknoe extol him because "he never deviates into sense," but Shadwell had fairly earned his chastise-ment, the sting of which lay in its substantial truth. HIe survived till 1692, and on Dryden's resignation of the laureateship in 1688 was promoted to the office, a sign of the poverty of the Whig side at the time in literary men, and part of the explanation of their anxiety in the next generation to secure literary talent.~~

~~A complete edition of Shadwell's works was published in 1720, in 4 vols. 12mo. HIs dramatic works are—'he Sullen Lovers, 1668 ; The Royal Shepherdess, 1669; The Humorist, 1671; The Miser, 1672; Epsom Wells, 1673 ; Psyche, 1675; The Libertine, 1676 ; The Virtuoso, 1676 3 Timon of Athens, 1678: 4 True Widow, 1679; The Woman Captain, 1680; The Laneashire Witehes, 1682; The Squire of Alsatia, 1688 ; Bury Fair, 1689; The Amorous Bigot, 1690; The Scowerers, 1691; and The Volunteers, 1693.~~

~~SHAM PSH ARITHR. ode Sonne,~~

~~SHAFTESBURY, AntHony AsHiry Coopsr, First EARL oF (1621-1683), was the son of Sir John Cooper of Rockbourne in Hampshire, and of Anne, the only child of Sir Anthony Ashley, Bart., and was born at Wimborne St Giles, Dorset, on J uly 22, 1621. HIs parents died before he was ten years of age, and he inherited extensive estates in Hampshire,~~

~~*Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, and Somersetshire, much reduced, however, by litigation in Chancery. He lived for some time with Sir Daniel Norton, one of his trustees, at Southwick, and upon his death in 1635 with Mr Tooker, an uncle: by marriage, at Salisbury. In 1637 he went as a gentleman-commoner to Exeter College, Oxford, where he remained about a year. No record of his studies is to be found, but he has left an amusing account of his part in the wilder doings of the university life of that day, in which, in spite of his small stature, he was recog- nized by his fellows as their leader. At the age of eighteen, on February 25, 1639, he married Margaret, daugliter of Lord Coventry, with whom he and his wife lived at Durham House in the Strand, and at Canonbury House in Isling- ton. In March 1640, though still a minor, he was elected for Tewkesbury, and sat in the parliament which met on April 13, but appears to have taken no active part in its proceedings. In 1640 Lord Coventry died, and Cooper then lived with his brother-in-law at Dorchester House in Covent Garden. For the Long Parliament, which met on November 3, 1640, he was elected for Downton in Wilt- shire, but the return was disputed, and he did not take his seat,—his election not being declared valid until the last days of the Rump. He was present as a spectator at the setting up of the king's standard at Nottingham on August 25, 1642; and in 1643 he appeared openly on Charles's side in Dorsetshire, where he raised at his own expense a regiment of foot and a troop of horse of both of which he took the command. He was also appointed governor of Weymouth, sheriff of Dorsetshire for the king, and president of the king's council of war in the county. In the beginning of January 1644, however, for reasons which are variously reported by himself and Clarendon, he resigned his governorship and commissions and went over to the Parliament. He appeared on March 6 before the standing committee of the two Houses to explain his conduct, when he stated that he had come over because he saw danger to the Protestant religion in the king's service, and expressed his willingness to take the Covenant. In July 1644 he went to Dorsetshire on military service, and on August 3 received a commission as field-marshal general, He assisted at the taking of Wareham, and shortly after- wards compounded for his estates by a fine of £500 from*~~

~~which, however, he was afterwards relieved by Cromwell. On October 25 he was made commander-in-chief in Dorset- shire, and in November he took by storm Abbotsbury, the house of Sir John Strangways,—an affair in which he appears to have shown considerable personal gallantry. In December he relieved Taunton. His military service terminated at the time of the Self-denying Ordinance in 1645; he had associated himself with the Presbyterian faction, and naturally enough was not included in the New Model. For the next seven or eight years he lived in comparative privacy. He was high sheriff of Wiltshire during 1647, and displayed much vigour in this office. Upon the execution of Charles, Cooper took the Engage- ment, and was a commissioner to administer it in Dorset- shire. On April 25, 1650, he married Lady Frances Cecil, sister of the earl of Essex, his first wife having died in the previous year leaving no family. In 1651 a son was born to him, who died in childhood, and on January 16, 1652, another son, named after himself, who was his heir. On January 17 he was named on the commission for law reform, of which Hale was the chief; and on March 17, 1653, he was pardoned of all delinquency, and thus at last made capable of sitting in parliament. He sat for Wiltshire in the Barebones parliament, of which he was a leading member, and where he zealously and prudently supported Cromwell's views against the extreme section. He was at once appointed on the council of thirty. On the resignation of this parliament he became a member of the council of state named in the "Instrument." In the first parliament elected under this "Instrument" he sat for Wiltshire, having been elected also for Poole and Tewkesbury, and was one of the commissioners for the ejection of unworthy ministers. After December 28, 1654, for reasons which it is impossible to ascertain with clear- ness, he left the privy council, and henceforward is found with the Presbyterians and Republicans, in opposition to Cromwell. His second wife had died during this year ; in 1656 he married a third, who survived him, Margaret, daughter of Lord Spencer, niece of the earl of Southampton, and sister of the earl of Sunderland, who died at Newbury. By his three marriages he was thus connected with many of the leading politicians of Charles II.'s reign.~~

~~Cooper was again elected for Wiltshire for the parlia- ment of 1656, but Cromwell refused to allow him, with many others of his opponents, to sit. He signed a letter of complaint, with sixty-five excluded members, to the~~

~~speaker, as also a "Remonstrance" addressed to the people. In the parliament which met on January 20, 1658, he took his seat, and was active in opposition to the new constitution of the two Houses. He was also a leader of the opposition in Richard Cromwell's parliament, especially on the matter of the limitation of the power of the Protector, and against the House of Lords. He was throughout these debates celebrated for the "nervous and subtle oratory" which made him so formidable in after days: he had "his tongue well hung, and words at will."~~

~~Upon the replacing of the Rump by the army, after the breaking up of Richard's parliament, Cooper endeavoured unsuccessfully to take his seat on the ground of his former disputed election for Downton. He was, however, elected on the council of state, and was the only Presbyterian in it; he was at once accused by Scot, along with White- locke, of corresponding with Hyde. This he solemnly denied. After the rising in Cheshire Cooper was arrested in Dorsetshire on a charge of correspondence with its leader Booth, but on the matter being investigated by the council he was unanimously acquitted. In the disputes between Lambert at the head of the military party and the Rump in union with the council of state, he supported the latter, and upon the temporary supremacy of Lambert's~~

~~party worked indefatigably to restore the Rump. With Monk's commissioners he, with Haselrig, had a fruitless conference, but he assured Monk of his co-operation, and joined with eight others of the overthrown council of state in naming him commander-in-chief of the forces of Eng- land and Scotland. He was instrumental in securing the Tower for the Parliament, and in obtaining the adhesion of Admiral Lawson and the fleet. Upon the restoration of the Parliament on December 26 Cooper was one of the commissioners to command the army, and on January 2 was made one of the new council of state. On January 7 he took his seat on his election for Downton in 1640, and was made colonel of Fleetwood's regiment of horse. He speedily secured the admission of the secluded members, having meanwhile been in continual~~

~~*communication with Monk, was again one of the fresh council of state, con- sisting entirely of friends of the Restoration, and accepted from Monk a commission to be governor of the Isle of Wight and captain of a company of foot. He now steadily pursued the design of the Restoration, but with- out holding any private correspondence with the king, and only on terms similar to those proposed in 1648 to Charles I. at the Isle of Wight. In the- Convention Parliament he sat for Wiltshire. Monk cut short these deliberations and forced on the Restoration without con- dition. Cooper was one of the twelve commissioners who went to Charles at Breda to invite him toreturn. On his journey he was upset from his carriage, and the accident caused an internal abscess which was never cured.*~~

~~*Cooper was at once placed on the privy council, receiv- ing also a formal pardon for former delinquencies. His first duty was to examine the Anabaptist prisoners in the Tower. In the prolonged discussions regarding the Bill of Indemnity he was instrumental in saving the life of Haselrig, and opposed the clause compelling all officers who had served under Cromwell to refund their salaries, he himself never having had any. He showed indeed none of the grasping and avaricious temper so common among the politicians of the time. He was one of the commissioners for conducting the trials of the regicides, but was himself vehemently 'fallen upon" by Prynne for having acted with Cromwell. He was named on the council of planta- tions and on that of trade. In the debate abolishing the court of wards he spoke, like most landed proprietors, in favour of laying the burden on the excise instead of on the land, and on the question of the restoration of the bishops carried in the interests of the court an adjourn- ment of the debate for three months. At the coronation in April 1661 Cooper had been made a peer, as Baron Ashley of Wimborne St Giles, in express recognition of his services at the Restoration ; and on the meeting of the new parlia- ment in May he was appointed chancellor of the exchequer and under-treasurer, alded no doubt by his connexion with Southampton. He vehemently opposed the perse- cuting Acts now passed, —the Corporation Act, the Uni- formity Bill, against which he is said to have spoken three hundred times, and the Militia Act. He is stated also to have influenced the king in issuing his dispensing declara- tion of December 26, 1662, and he zealously supported a bill introduced for the*~~

~~purpose of confirming the declara- tion, rising thereby in favour and influence with Charles. He was himself the author of a treatise on tolerance. He was now recognized as one of the chief opponents of Clarendon and the High Anglican policy. On the break- ing out of the Dutch War in 1664 he was made treasurer of the prizes, being accountable to the king alone for all sums received or spent. He was also one of the grantees of the province of Carolina and took a leading part in its management; it was at his request that Locke in 1669 drew up a constitution for the newcolony. In September~~

~~1665 the king unexpectedly paid him a visit at Wim- He opposed unsuccessfully the appropriation pro-~~

~~borne.~~

~~viso introduced into the supply bill as hindering the due~~

~~administration of finance, and this Opposition seems to~~

~~have brought about a reconciliation with Clarendon. In 1668, however, he sioners to examine the accounts of the Dutch War, though in the previous year he had opposed it. In accordance~~

~~with his former action on all questions of religious tolera- strongly opposed the shameful Five Mile Act of~~

~~tion he 1665. In 1667 he eagerly supported the bill for prohibit- ing the importation of Irish cattle on the ground that it~~

~~would lead to a great fall of rents in Hingland. Ashley~~

~~was himself a large landowner, and moreover was opposed to Ormonde who would have portation. In all other questions of this kind he shows himself far in advance of the economic fallacies of the day.~~

~~His action led to an altercation with Ossory, the son of~~

~~*Ormonde, in which Ossory used language for which he was compelled to apologize. On the death of Southampton, Ashley was placed on the commission of the treasury, Clifford and William Coventry being his principal col- leagues. He appears to have taken no part in the attempt to impeach Clarendon on a general charge of treason,*~~

~~*The new administration was headed by Buckingham, in whose toleration and comprehension principles Ashley shared to the full. A most able paper written by him to the king in support of these principles, on the ground especially of their advantage to trade, has been preserved, He excepts, however, from toleration Roman Catholics and Fifth Monarchy men. His attention to all trade questions was close and constant ; of trade and plantations president from 1672 to 1676. cession also occupied him, and he co-operated thus early in the design of legitimizing Monmouth as a rival to J ames, In the intrigues which led to the infamous treaty of Dover he had no part. That treaty contained a clause by which Charles was bound to declare himself a Catholic, and with the knowledge of this Ashley, as a staunch Protestant, could not be trusted. In order to blind him and the other Protestant members of the Cabal a sham treaty was arranged in which this clause did not appear, considerable while afterwards that he found out that he had been duped. Under this signed the sham Dover*~~

~~*appointed in 1670, and was its*~~

~~*before them as the only one in existence. This is one of the proved dishonourable actions of his life. His approval of the attempt of the Lords to alter a money bill led to the loss of the supply to Charles and to the consequent displeasure of the king. His support of the Lord Roos*~~

~~*Act, ascribed generally to his desire to ingratiate himself*~~

~~*with Charles, was no doubt due in part to the fact that his son had married Lord Roos's sister. It is, too, neces- sary to notice that, so far from advising the "Stop of the Exchequer," he actively opposed this bad measure ; the reasons which he left with the king for his opposition are extant. The responsibility rests with Clifford alone. In the other great measure of the Cabal ministry, Charles's Declaration of Indulgence, he*~~

~~cordially concurred. He was now rewarded by being made Earl of Shaftesbury and Baron Cooper of Pawlett by a patent dated April 23, 1672. It is stated too that he was offered, but refused, the lord treasurership. On November 17, 1672, however, he became lord chancellor, Bridgman having been compelled to resign the seat. As chancellor he issued writs for the~~

~~supported a bill to appoint commis-~~

~~greatly benefited by the im-~~

~~he was a member of the council~~

~~The difficulty of the suc-~~

~~729~~

~~by an angry House of 4, 1673. The writs were cancelled, and the principle was~~

~~ee that the issuing of writs rested with the House itself,~~

~~upholder of Protestantism in the ministry; he rapidly lost favour with Charles, and on Sunday, September 9, 1673, was dismissed from the chancellorship. Among the reasons for this dismissal is probably the undoubted fact that he opposed reckless grants to the king's mistresses. He has been accused of much vanity and ostentation in his office, but his reputation for ability and integrity as a judge was high even with his enemies,~~

~~Charles soon regretted the loss of Shaftesbury, and endeavoured, as did also Louis, to induce him to return, but in vain. He preferred now to become the great popular leader against all the measures of the court, and may be regarded as the intellectual chief of the opposition. At the meeting of parliament on January 8, 1674, he carried a motion for a proclamation banishing Catholics to a distance of ten miles from London. During the whole session he organized and directed the opposition in their attacks on the king's ministers. On May 19 he was dismissed the~~

~~*privy council and ordered to leave London. He hereupon retired to Wimborne, from whence he urged upon his parliamentary followers the necessity of securing a new parliament. He was in the House of Lords, however, in 167 5, when Danby brought forward his famous Non-resisting Test Bill, and headed the opposi- tion which was carried on for seventeen days, distinguish- Ing himself, says Burnet, more in this session than ever he had done before. The bill was finally shelved, a pro- rogation having taken place in consequence of a quarrel between the two Houses, supposed to have been purposely got up by Shaftesbury, in which he vigorously supported the right of the Lords to hear appeal cases, even where the defendant was a member of the Lower House. Parlia- ment was prorogued for fifteen months until F ebruary 15, 1677, and it was determined by the opposition to attack its existence on the ground that a prorogation for more than a year was illegal. In this matter the opposition were clearly in the wrong, and by attacking the parliament discredited themselves. The immediate result was that Shaftesbury, Buckingham, Wharton, and Salisbury were sent to the Tower. In June Shaftesbury applied for a writ of habeas corpus, but could get no release until February 26, 1678, after his letter and three petitions to the king. Being brought before the bar of the House of Lords he at length made a complete submission as to his conduct in declaring parliament dissolved by the proroga- tion, and in violating the Lords' privileges by bringing a habeas corpus in the King's Bench.*~~

~~*The breaking out of the Popish Terror in 1678 marks*~~

~~*XXI.—92*~~

~~*730*~~

~~*the worst part of Shaftesbury's career. That so clear- headed a man could have really credited the extravagant lies of Oates and the other perjurers is beyond belief ; and the manner in which by incessant agitation he excited the most baseless alarms, and encouraged the wildest excesses of fanatic cruelty, for nothing but party advantage, is utterly without excuse. On November 2 he opened the great attack by proposing an address declaring the necessity for the king's dismissing James from his council. Under his advice the opposition now made an alliance with Louis*~~

~~*whereby the French king promised to help them to ruin Danby on condition that they would compel Charles, by stopping the supplies, to make peace with France, doing thus a grave injury to Protestantism abroad for the sake of a temporary party advantage at home, Upon the refusal in November of the Lords to concur in the address of the Commons requesting the removal of the queen from court, he joined in a protest against the refusal, and was foremost in all the violent acts of the session. He urged on the bill by which Catholics were prohibited from sitting in either House of Parliament, and was bitter in his expressions of disappointment when the Commons passed a proviso excepting James, against whom the bill was especially aimed, from its operation, A new parliament met on March 6, 1679. Shaftesbury had meanwhile ineffectually warned the king that unless he followed his advice there would be no peace with the people. On March 25 he made a striking speech upon the state of the nation, especially upon the dangers to Protestantism and the niisgovernment of Scotland and Ireland. He was, too, suspected of doing all in his power to bring about a revolt in Scotland. By the advice of Temple, Charles now tried the experiment of forming a new privy council in which the chief members of the opposition were included, and Shaftesbury was made president, with a salary of £4000, being also a member of the committee for foreign affairs. He did not, however, in any way change either his opinions or his action. He vigorously opposed the compelling of Protestant Nonconformists to take the: oath required of Roman Catholics. That indeed, as Ranke says, which makes him memorable in English history is that he opposed the establishment of an Anglican and Royalist organization with decisive success. The question of the succession was now again prominent, and Shaftesbury, in opposition to Halifax, committed the error, which really brought about his fall, of putting forward Monmouth as his nominee, thus alienating a large number of his sup- porters ; he encouraged, too, the belief that this was agree- able to the king. He pressed on the Exclusion Bill with all his power, and, when that and the inquiry into the payments for secret service and the trial of the five peers, for which too he had been eager, were brought to an end by a sudden prorogation, he is reported to have declared aloud that he would have the heads of those who were the king's advisers to this course. Before the prorogation, however, he saw the invaluable Act of Habeas Corpus, which he had*~~

~~carried through parliament, receive the royal assent. In pursuance of his patronage of Mon- mouth, Shaftesbury now secured for him the command of the army sent to suppress the insurrection in Scotland, which he is supposed to have fomented. In October 1679, the circumstances which led Charles to desire to conciliate the opposition having ceased, Shaftesbury was dismissed from his presidency and from the privy council ; when applied to by Sunderland to return to office he made as conditions the divorce of the queen and the exclusion of James. With nine other peers he presented a petition to the king in November, praying for the meeting of parliament, of which Charles took no notice. In April, upon the king's declaration that he was resolved to send~~

~~for James from Scotland, Shaftesbury strongly advised the popular leaders at once to leave the council, and they followed his advice. In March we find him unscrupulously eager in the prosecution of the alleged Irish Catholic plot. Upon the king's illness in May he held frequent meetings of Monmouth's friends at his house to consider how best to act for the security of the Protestant religion. On June 26, accompanied by fourteen others, he presented to the grand jury of Westminster an indictment of the duke of York as a Popish recusant. In the middle of September he was seriously ill. On November 15 the Exclusion Bull, having passed the Commons, was brought up to the Lords, and an historic debate took place, in which Halifax and Shaftesbury were the leaders on opposite sides. The bill was thrown out, and Shaftesbury signed the protest against its rejection. The next day he urged upon the House the divorce of the queen. On December 7, to his lasting dishonour, he voted for the condemnation of Lord Stafford. On the 23d he again spoke vehemently for exclusion, and his speech was immediately printed. All opposition was, however, checked by the dissolution on January 18.~~

~~Few politicians have been the mark of such unsparing abuse as Shaftesbury. Dryden, while compelled to honour him as an~~

~~*upright judge, overwhelmed his memory with scathing, if venal, satire; and Dryden's satire has been accepted as truth by later historians. Macaulay in especial has exerted all his art, though in flagrant contradiction of probability and fact, to deepen still further the shade which rests upon his reputation. Mr Christie, on the other hand, in possession of later sources of information, and with more honest purpose, has done much to rehabilitate him. Occasionally, however, he appears to hold a brief for the defence, and, though his picture is comparatively a true one, should be read with caution. Worthies," Mr H. D. Traill professes to hold the seales cqually. He makes an interesting addition to our conception of Shaftes- bury's place in English politics, by insisting on his position as the first great party leader in the modern sense, and as the founder of modern parliamentary oratory. In other Tespeets his book is derived almost entirely from Christie. Much of Shaftesbury's career, increasingly so as it came near its close, is incapable' of defence ; but it has escaped his critics that his life up to the Re- storation, apparently full of inconsisteneics, was evidently guided by one leading principle, the determination to uphold the supremacy of parliament, a principle which, however obscured by self-interest, appears also to have underlain his whole political career. He was, too, ever the friend of religious freedom and of an enlightened policy in all trade questions. And, above all, it should not be forgotten, in justice to Shaftesbury's memory, that "during his long political career, in an age of general corruption, he was ever incorrupt, and never grasped either money or land. In the days*~~

~~*of the Commonwealth he never obtained or sought grants of | believed, carried a greater weight than any of the argu-*~~

~~*forfeited estates. In the days of the restored monarchy he never profited by the king's favour for aught beyond the legal emolu- ments of office, and in office or out of office spurned all and many offers of bribes from the French king." (O. A.)*~~

~~*SHAFTESBURY, Anruony AsHLEy Cooprr, Turrp Ear or (1671-1713), wasborn at Exeter House in London, February 26, 1670-71. He was grandson of the first and son of the second earl. His mother was Lady Dorothy Manners, daughter of John, earl of Rutland. According to a*~~

~~*curious story, told by the third earl himself, the marriage between his father and mother was negotiated by John Locke, who was a trusted friend of the first earl, The second Lord Shaftesbury appears to have been a poor creature, both physically and mentally,' born a shapeless lump, like anarchy," according to what is doubtless the exaggerated metaphor of Dryden. At the early age of three his son was made over to the formal guardianship of his grandfather. Locke, who in_ his capacity of medical attendant to the Ashley household had already assisted in bringing the boy into the world, though not his instructor, was entrusted with the superintendence of his education. This was conducted according to the principles enunciated in Locke's Thoughts concerning Education, and the method of teaching Latin and Greek conversationally was pursued with such success by his instructress, Mrs Elizabeth Birch, that at the age of eleven, it is said, young Ashley could read both languages with ease. In November 1683, some months after the death of the first earl, his father entered him at Winchester as a warden's boarder. Being a shy, retiring boy, and being moreover constantly taunted with the opinions and fate of his grandfather, he appears to have been rendered miserable by the rough manners of his schoolfellows, and to have left Winchester in 1686 for a course of foreign travel. By this change he was brought into direct contact with those artistic and classical associations which afterwards exercised so marked an influence on his character and opinions. On his travels he did not, we are told by the fourth earl, "greatly seek the conversation of other English young gentlemen on their travels," but rather that of their tutors, with whom he could converse on congenial topics.*~~

~~*In 1689, the year after the Revolution, Lord Ashley returned to England, and for nearly five years from this time he appears to have led a quiet, uneventful, and studious life. There can be no doubt that the greater part of his attention was directed to the perusal of those classical authors, and to the attempt to realize the true spirit of that classical antiquity, for which he had*~~

~~*| himself aloof from public life.*~~

~~*Finally, in his monograph in the series of « English |*~~

~~*conceived so ardent a passion. He had no intention, however, of becoming a recluse, or of permanently holding Accordingly, he became a candidate for the borough of Poole, and was retumed May 21, 1695. He soon distinguished himself by a speech, which excited great attention at the time, in support of the Bill for Regulating Trials in Cases of Treason, one provision of which was what seems to us the obviously reasonable one that a person indicted for treason or misprision of treason should be allowed the assistance of counsel. In connexion with this speech a story is told of Shaftesbury which is also told, though with less verisimilitude, of Halifax, that, being overcome by shyness, and unable to continue his speech, he simply said, before sitting down: "Tf I, sir, who rise only to speak my opinion on the bill now depending, am go confounded that I am unable to express the least of what I proposed to say, what must the condition of that man be who is pleading for his 'life without any assistance and under apprehensions of being deprived of it?" "The sudden turn of thought," says his son, the fourth earl, 'pleased the House extremely, and, it is generally*~~

~~*ments which were offered in favour of the bill." But, though a Whig, alike by descent, by education, and by conviction, Ashley could by no means be depended on to give a party vote ; he was always ready to support any propositions, from whatever quarter they came, that appeared to him to promote the liberty of the subject and the independence of parliament. Unfortunately, his health was so treacherous that, on the dissolution of July 1698, he was obliged to retire from parliamentary life. He suffered much from asthma, a complaint which was aggravated by the London smoke.*~~

~~*Lord Ashley now retired into Holland, where he became acquainted with Le Clerc, Bayle, Benjamin Furly, the English Quaker merchant, at whose house Locke had resided during his stay at Rotterdam, and probably Limborch and the rest of the literary circle of which Locke had been a cherished and honoured member nine or ten years before. To Lord Ashley this society was probably far more congenial than his surroundings in England. Unrestrained conversation on the topics. which most interested him—philosophy, politics, morals, religion—was at this time to be had in Holland with less danger and in greater abundance than in any other*~~

~~country in the world. To the period of this sojourn in Holland must probably be referred the surreptitious impression or publication of an imperfect edition of the Inquiry concern- ing Virtue, from a rough draught, sketched when he was only twenty years of age. This liberty was taken, during his absence, by Toland.~~

~~After an absence of over a twelvemonth, Ashley returned to England, and soon succeeded his father as earl of Shaftesbury. He took an active part, on the Whig side, in the general election of 1700-1, and again, with more success, in that of the autumn of 1701. It is said that William HT. showed his appreciation of Shaftesbury's services on this latter occasion by offering him a secretary- ship of state, which, however, his declining health compelled him to decline. Had the king's life continued, Shaftesbury's influence at court would probably have been considerable. After the first few weeks of Anne's reign, Shaftesbury, who had been deprived of the vice- admiralty of Dorset, returned to his retired mode of life, but his letters to Furly show that he still retained a keen interest in politics. In August 1703 he again settled in Holland, in the air of which he seems, like Locke, to have had great faith. At Rotterdam he lived, he says in a letter to his steward Wheelock, at the rate of less than £200 a~~

~~year, and yet had much "to dispose of and spend beyond convenient living." He returned to England, much improved in health, in August 1704. But, though he had received immediate benefit from his stay abroad, symptoms of consumption were constantly alarming him, and he gradually became a confirmed invalid. His occu- pations were now almost exclusively literary, and from this time forward he was probably engaged in writing, completing, or revising the treatises which were afterwards included in the Characteristics. He still continued, how- ever, to take a warm interest in politics, both home and foreign, and especially in the war against France, of which he was an enthusiastic supporter.~~

~~Shaftesbury was nearly forty before he married, and even then he appears to have taken this step at the urgent instigation of his friends, mainly to supply a suc- cessor to the title. The object of his choice (or rather of his second choice, for an earlier project of marriage had shortly before fallen~~

~~through) was a Miss Jane Ewer, the daughter of a gentleman in Hertfordshire. The marriage took place in the autumn of 1709, and on February 9, 1710, was born at his house at Reigate, in Surrey, his only child and heir, the fourth earl, to whose manuscript accounts we are in great part indebted for the details of his father's life. 'The match appears to have been a happy one, though Shaftesbury neither had nor pretended to have much sentiment on the subject of married life.~~

~~With the exception of a Preface to the Sermons of Dr Whichcote, one of the Cambridge Platonists or latitudin- arians, published in 1698, Shaftesbury appears to have printed nothing himself till the year 1708. About this time the French prophets, as they were called, attracted much attention by the extravagances and follies of which they were guilty. Various remedies of the repressive kind were proposed, but Shaftesbury maintained that their fanaticism was best encountered by " raillery" and " good- humour." In support of this view he wrote a letter to Lord Somers, dated September 1707 which was published anonymously in the following year, and provoked several replies. In May 1709 he returned to the subject, and printed another letter, entitled Sensus Communis, an Essay on the Freedom of Wit and Humour. In the same year he also published Zhe Moralists, a Philosophical Rhapsody, and in the following year Soliloquy, or Advice toan Author. None of these pieces seem to have been printed either with his name or his initials. In 1711 appeared the Characteristics of Men, Manners, Opinions, Tvmes, in three volumes, also without any name or initials on the title-page, and without even the name of a printer. These three handsome volumes contain in addition to the four treatises already mentioned, Miscellaneous Reflections, now first printed, and the Inquiry concerning Virtue or Merit, described as "formerly printed from an imperfect copy, now corrected and published intire," and as " printed first in the year 1699."~~

~~The declining state of Shaftesbury's health rendered it necessary for him to seek a warmer climate, and in July 1711 he set out for Italy. He settled at Naples in November, and lived there considerably over a year. His principal occupation at this time must have consisted in preparing for the press a second edition of the Character- istics, which appeared in 1713, soon after his death. The copy, most carefully corrected in his own~~

~~*handwriting, is still preserved in the British Museum. He was also engaged, during his stay at Naples, in writing the little treatise (afterwards included in the Characteristics) entitled A Notion of the Historical Draught or Tablature of the Judgment of Hercules, and the letter concerning Design. A little before his death he had also formed a scheme of writing a Discourse on the Arts of Painting,*~~

~~*SHAFT PES EVU Re*~~

~~*Sculpture, Etching, &c., but when he died he had made but little progress with it. " Medals, and pictures, and antiquities," he writes to Furly, "are our chief entertain- ments here." His conversation was with men of art and science, " the virtuosi of this place."*~~

~~*The events preceding the peace of Utrecht, which he regarded as preparing the way for a base desertion of our allies, greatly troubled the last months of Shaftesbury's life. He did not, however, live to see the actual conclu- sion of the treaty (March 31, 1713), as he died the month before, February 4, 1712, O.S. At the time of his death he had not yet completed his forty-second year. His body was brought back by sea to England and buried at St Giles's, the family seat in Dorsetshire. Though he died so long ago, and was one of the earliest of the English moralists, his descendant, the celebrated philanthropist, who died so recently as 1885, was only his great-grandson.*~~

~~*Shaftesbury's amiability of character seems to have been one of his principal characteristics. AJ] accounts concur in representing him as full of sweetness and kindliness towards others, though he may sometimes him- self have been the victim of melancholy and despondency. Like Locke he had a peculiar pleasure in bringing forward young men. Amongst these may be especially mentioned Michael Ainsworth, a native of Wimborne St Giles, the young man who was the recipient of the Letters addressed to a student at the university, and who was maintained by him at University College, Oxford. The keen interest which Shaftesbury took in his studies, and the desire that he should be specially fitted for the profession which he had selected, that of a clergyman of the Church of Eng- land, are marked features of the letters. Other protcgés were Crell, a young Pole, the two young Furlys, and Harry Wilkinson, a boy who was*~~

~~*sent into Furly's office at Rotterdam, and to whom several of the letters still extant in the Record Office are addressed.*~~

~~*In the popular mind, Shaftesbury is generally regarded as a writer hostile to religion. But, however short his orthodoxy might fall if tried by the standards of any particular church, his temperament was pre-eminently a religious one. This fact is shown conspicuously in his letters, where he had no reason for making any secret of his opinions. The belief in a God, all-wise, all-just, and all-merciful, governing the world providentially for the best, pervades all his works, his correspondence, and his life. Nor had he any wish to undermine established beliefs, except where he conceived that they conflicted with a truer religion and a purer morality.*~~

~~*To the public ordinances of the church he scrupulously conformed. But, unfortunately, there were many things both in the teaching and the practice of tlie ecclesiastics of that day which were calculated to repel men of sober judgment and high principle. These evil tendencies in the popular presentation of Christianity undoubtedly begot in Shaftesbury's mind a certain amount of repug- nance and contempt to some of the doctrines of Christianity itself ; and, cultivating, almost of set purpose, his sense of the ridiculous, he was too apt to assume towards such doctrines and their teachers a tone of raillery and banter, which sometimes even approaches grimace.*~~

~~*But, whatever might be Shaftesbury's speculative opinions or his mode of expressing them, all witnesses concur in bearing testimony to the elevation and purity of his life and aims. Molesworth, who had no special reason for flattering him, speaks of him as "possessing right reason in a more eminent degree than the rest of man- kind," and of his character as "the highest that the per- fection of human nature is capable of." Even Warburton, in his dedication of the Divine Legation to the free- thinkers, is compelled to "own that this lord had many*~~

~~*Par rns bp RY*~~

~~*excellent qualities, both asa man and a writer. IIe was temperate, chaste, honest, and a lover of his country."*~~

~~*As an earnest student, an ardent lover of liberty, an en- thusiast in the cause of virtue, and a man of unblemished life and untiring beneficence, Shaftesbury probably had no superior in his generation. HIs character and pursuits are the more remarkable, considering the rank of life in which he was born and the circumstances under which he was brought up. In many respects he reminds us of the impe- rial philosopher Marcus Aurelius, whose works we know him to have studied with avidity, and whose influence is unmistakably stamped upon his own productions,*~~

~~*Most of Shaftesbury's writings have been already mentioned. In addition to these from Shaftesbury to some lctters to Benjamin Furly,*~~

~~*meaning trans- But, on the other hand, he id not equally succeed in attaining elegance, an object at which he seems equally to have aimed. There is a curious affectation about his style,—a falsetto note,—which, notwithstanding all his efforts to please, is often irritating to the characteristic is He poses too much as a fine gentleman, and is vulgar scholastic kind that he falls into the hardly more attractive pedantry of But, notwithstanding these defects, he easily read and easily under- ide popularity which his works enjoyed in the last century ; and hence, undoubtedly, the agreeable fecling with which, notwithstanding all their false taste and their tiresome digressions, they still impress the modern reader, a moralist that Shaftesbury has a claim to a place in the history of literature and philosophy. Like most of the ethical writers of his time his first impulse to speculation, or*~~

~~*progress of doctrines at which society still continued to be seriously alarmed. Hence it became his main concern to assert the reality*~~

~~*been current in ethical treatiscs, and that he preferred to represent "taste," "sentiment," or '* affection," rather than as dictated simply by reason,*~~

~~*Shaftesbury's ethical theory are those of a system, or the relation of parts to a whole, benevolence, moral beauty, and a moral sense,*~~

~~*The individual man himself is a system consisting of various appetites, passions, and affections, all united under the supreme control of reason. Of this system the parts are so nicely adjusted to each other that any disarrangement or disproportion, however slight, may mar and disfigure the whole. "Whoever is in the least versed in this moral kind of architecture will find the inward fabric so adjusted, and the whole so nicely built, that the barely extending of a single passion a little too far, or the continuance of it too long, is able to bring irrecoverable ruin and misery."*~~

~~But morality and human nature cannot be adequatcly studied in the system of the individual man. There are parts in that system, both mental and bodily, which have an evident respect to Something outside it. Neither man nor any other animal, though ever so complete a system of parts as to all within, can be allowed in the same manner complete as to all without ; he must be con- sidered as having a further relation abroad to the system of his kind. So even this system of his kind to the animal system; this to the world (our earth); and this again to the bigger world~~

~~and to the universe. No being can properly be called good or ill except in reference to the systems of which he isa part. 5 In general, all the affections or passions are suited to the public d or end of the species, then is the natural temper entirely If, on the contrary, any requisite~~

~~least the principal moral virtue, The idea of a moral and social system, the parts of which are in a constant proportion to each other,~~

~~f we may suppose, the beauty of a virtuous action would be explained as consisting in its it has its source, or to the other acts of a virtuous life, or to the general condition of a~~

~~or characters, is never long absent from Shaftesbury's mind. Closely connected with it is the idea that morals, no less than art, is a matter of taste or~~

~~This "sense of right and wrong" is "as natural to us as natural affection itself," and "a first principle in our constitution and make," At the same time it includes a certain amount of judgment or reflexion, that is to say, a rational element, Shaftesbury's doctrine on this head may, up as follows. Each man has from the first a natural sense of right and wrong, a " moral sense " or " conscience " (all which expressions he employs as synonymous). This sense is, in its natural condition, wholly or mainly emotional, but, as it admits of constant education and improvement, the rational or reflective element in it gradnally becomes more pro- Its decisions are generally described as if they were immediate, and, beyond the occasional recognition of a rational as well as an emotional element,~~

~~*little or no attempt is made to analyse it. It was reserved for Hume properly to discriminate between these two elements, and to point out that, while the feeling of moral approbation or disapprobation is instantaneous, the moral judgment which precedes it is often the result of an intellectual process of considerable length and perplexity.*~~

~~*It may be sufficient to supplement this brief survey of Shaftes- bury's system by a still briefer suminary of the answers, so far as they can be collected from his works, which he would have given to the principal questions of ethics as they are now usually pro- pounded. His answers to these questions are, as it appears to the present writer, that our moral ideas—the distinctions of virtue and vice, right and wrong—are to be found in the very make and constitution of our nature; that morality is independent of theology, actions being denominated good or just, not by the arbitrary will of God (as had recently been maintained by Locke), but in virtue of some quality existing in themselves ; that the ultimate test of a right action is its tendency to promote the general welfare ; that we have a peculiar organ, the moral sense, analogous to taste in art, by which we discriminate between characters and actions as good or bad; that the higher natures among mankind are impelled to right action, and deterred from wrong action, partly by the moral sense, partly by the love and reverence of a just and good God, while the lower natures are mainly influenced by the opinions of others, or by the hope of reward and the fear of punishment ; that appetite and reason both concur in the determination of action ; lastly, that the question whether the will does or does not possess any freedom of choice, irrespectively of character and motives, is one (at least so we may gather from Shaftesbury's reticence) which it does not concern the moralist to solve.*~~

~~*The close resemblance of Hutcheson's speculations to those of Shaftesbury, amounting sometimes to identity, will be apparent on reference to the account of that philosopher (vol. xii. pp. 409-11). Next to Hobbes, the moralist with whose views Shaftesbury's stand in most direct antagonism is Locke, who not only maintained that moral distinctions depend solely on the arbitrary will of God, but that the sanctions by which they are mainly enforced are the hope of future reward and the fear of*~~

~~future punishment. "By the fanlt is the rod, and with the transgression a fire ready to~~

~~punish it." Shaftesbury's was in reality, though perhaps not in appearance, a more truly religious philosophy. For with him the incentives to well-doing and the deterrents from evil-doing are to be sought not solely, or even mainly, in the opinion of man- kind, or in the rewards and punishments of the magistrate, or in the hopes and terrors of a future world, but in the answer of a good conscience approving virtue and disapproving vice, and in the love of a God, who, by His infinite wisdom and His all- embracing beneficence, is worthy of the love and admiration of His creatures.~~

~~The main object of the Moralists is to propound a system of natural theology, and to vindicate, so far as natural religion is concerned, the ways of God to man. The articles of Shaftesbury's religious creed were few and simple, but these he entertained with a conviction amounting to enthusiasm. They may briefly be summed up as a belief in one God whose most characteristic attribute is universal benevolence, in the moral government of the universe, and in a future state of man making up for the imperfections and repairing the inequalities of the present life. Shaftesbury is emphatically an optimist, but there is a passage in the Moralists (pt. li. sect. 4) which would lead us to suppose that he regarded matter as an indiflerent principle, co-existent and co-eternal with God, limiting His operations, and the cause of the evil and imperfection which, notwithstanding the benevolence of the Creator, is still to be found in His work. If this view of his optimism be correct, Shaftesbury, as Mill says of Leibnitz, must be regarded as maintaining, not that this is the best of all imaginable but only of all possible worlds. This brief notice of Shaftesbury's scheme of natural religion would be conspicuously imperfect unless it were added that it is popularized in Pope's Essay on Man, several lines of which, especially of the first epistle, are simply statements from the Moralists done into verse. Whether, however, these were taken immediately by Pope from Shaftesbury, or whether they eame~~

~~*to him through the papers which Boling- broke had prepared for his use, we have no means of determining,*~~

~~*Shaftesbury's philosophical activity was confined to cthies, esthetics, and religion. For metaphysies, properly so called, and even psychology, except so far as it afforded a basis for ethics, he evidently had no taste. Logic he probably despised as merely an instrument of pedants,—a judgment for which, in his day, and especially at the universities, there was only too much ground.*~~

~~*The influence of Shaftesbury's writings was very considerable both at home and abroad. His ethical system was reproduced, though in a more precise and philosophical form, by Hutcheson, and from him descended, with certain variations, to Hume and Adam Smith. Nor was it without its effect even on the specula- tions of Butler. Of the so-called deists Shaftesbury was probably the most important, as he was certainly the most plausible and the most respectable. No sooner had the Characteristics appeared than they were welcomed, in terms of warm commendation, by Le Clerc and Leibnitz. In 1745 Diderot adapted or reproduced the Inquiry concerning Virtue in what was afterwards known as his Essai sur le Meérite et la Vertu. In 1769 a French translation of the whole of Shaftesbury's works, including the Lefters, was published at Geneva. Translations of separate treatises into German began to be made in 1738, and in 1776-1779 there appeared a complete German translation of the Characteristics. Hermann Hettner says that not only Leibnitz, Voltaire, and Diderot, but Lessing, Mendelssohn, Wieland, and Herder, drew the most stimulating nutriment from Shaftesbury. ' His charms," he adds, "'are ever fresh. A new-born Hellenism, or divine cultus of beauty presented itself before his inspired sonl." Herder is especially culogistic. In the Adrastea he pronounees the Aoralists to be a composition in form well-nigh worthy of Grecian antiquity, and in its contents almost superior to it. The interest felt by Ger- man literary men in Shaftesbury has been recently revived by the publication of two excellent monographs, oue dealing with him mainly from the theological side by Dr Gideon Spicker (Freiburg in Baden, 1872), the other dealing with him mainly from the philo- sophieal side by Dr Georg von Gizycki (Leipsic, 1876).*~~

~~*In the foregoing article the writer has made free use of his monograph on Shaftesbury and Hutcheson in the series of "English philosophers" (1882), published by Sampson Low & Co. In that work he was able largely to sup- plement the printed materials for the Life by extracts from the Shaftesbury papers now deposited in the Record Office. These include, besides many Ictters and memoranda, two lives of him, composed by his son, the fourth earl, one of which is evidently the original, though it is by no means always closely followed, of the Life contributed by Dr Birch to the General Dictionary. For a descrip- tion and criticism of Shaftesbury's philosophy reference may also be made to Mackintosh's Progress of Ethical Philosophy, Whewell's History of Moral Philosophy in England, Jouffroy's Introduction to Ethics (Channing's transla- tion), Leslie Stephen's English Thought in the Eighteenth Century, Martineau's Types of Ethical Theory, and the article Eruics in the present work (vol. viii. pp. 599, 600). For his relation to the religions and theological controversies of his day, scc, in addition to some of the above works, Leland's View of the Principal Deistical Writers, Lechler's Geschichte des Englischen Deismus, Hunt's*~~

~~*heligious Thought tn England, Abbey and Overton's English Church in the Highteenth Century, and A. S. Farrar's Bampton Lectures, (T. F.)*~~

~~*SHAFTESBURY, Antony AsHLEY CoopEr, SEVENTH Ear or (1801-1885), was the son of Cropley, sixth earl,*~~

~~*SHA—SHA*~~

~~*and Anne, daughter of the third duke of Marlborough, and was born 28th April 1801. He was educated at Harrow and Christ Church, Oxford, where he obtained a first class in classics in 1822, and graduated M.A. in 1832. In 1841 he received from his university the degree of D.C.L. He entered parliament as member for the pocket borough of Woodstock in 1826; in 1830 he was returned for Dorchester ; from 1831 till February 1846 he represented the county of Dorset ; and he was member for Bath from 1847 till (having previously borne the courtesy title Lord Ashley) he succeeded his father as earl in 1851. Although giving a general support to the Conservatives, his parliamentary conduct was greatly modified by his intense interest in the improvement of the social condition of the working*~~

~~*classes, his efforts in behalf of whom have made his name a household word. HIe opposed the Reform Bill of 1832, but was a supporter of Catholic emancipa- tion, and his objection to the continuance of resistance to the abolition of the Corn Laws led him to resign his seat for Dorset in 1846. In parliament his name, more than any other, is associated with the factory legislation (see Factory Acts, vol. viii. p. 845). HIe was a lord of the admiralty under. Sir Robert Peel (1834-35), but on being invited to join Peel's administration in 1841 refused, having been unable to obtain Peel's support for the Ten HIours' Bill. Chiefly by his persistent efforts a Ten HIours' Bill was carried in 1847, but its operation was impeded by legal difficulties, which were only removed by successive Acts, instigated chiefly by him, until legislation reached a final stage in the Factory Act of 1874. The part which he took in the legislation bearing on coal niines was equally prominent. It is worthy of notice that his efforts in behalf of the practical welfare of the working classes were guided by his own personal knowledge of their cireum- stances and wants. Thus in 1846 he took advantage of his leisure after the resignation of his seat for Dorset to explore the slums of the metropolis, and by the informa- tion he obtained not only gave a new impulse to the niove- ment for the establishment of ragged schools, but was able to make it more widely beneficial, For over forty years he was president of the Ragged School Union. HIe was also one of the principal founders of reformatory and refuge unions, young men's Christian associations, and working men's institutes. HIe took an active interest in foreign missions, and was president of several of the most important philanthropic and religious societies of London. HIe dicd lst October 1885. By his marriage to Lady Emily, daughter of the fifth Earl Cowper, he left a large family, and was succeeded by his eldest son Anthony, who committed suicide shortly afterwards.*~~

~~*SHAGREEN. See LeEatuer, vol. xiv. p. 390, and SHARK, |,*~~

~~*SHAHABAD, a British district in the Patna division of the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, India, between 24° 31' and 25° 43' N. lat, and between 83° 23' and 84° 55' E. long., with an area of 4365 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by the district of Ghazipur in the North-Western Provincees and by Saran, on the E. by Patna and Gaya districts, on the 8.*~~

~~*by Lohardaga, and on the W. by Mirzapur, Benares, and Ghazipur districts of the North-Western Provinces. About three-fourtlis of the whole area lying to the north is an alluvial flat, wholly under cultivation, and fairly planted with mangoes, bam- boos, and other trees; while the southern portion of the district is occupied by the Kaimur Hills, a branch of the great Vindhyan range, and is a densely wooded tract. The chief rivers are the Ganges and the Son, which unite in the north-eastern corner of Shahabad.. A series of canals on the Son are reported to have secured for the district immunity from future famine. In the southern portion*~~

~~*of the district large game abounds, bear, leopard, and several varicties of deer ; and among other animals met with are the wild boar, hyzena, jackal, and fox. The nylghau is seen on the Kaimur Hills. The climate is very sultry, and the rains heavy. The East Indian Railway traverses the north of the district for 60 miles, and the aggregate length of roads is about 1000 miles,*~~

~~*including the tiger,*~~

~~*The census of 1881 disclosed a population of 1,964,909 (males 950,250, females 1,014,659); Hindus numbered 1,817,881, Moham- medans 146,732, and Christians 274. Four towns contain a population exceeding 10,000, viz., Arrah 42,998, Dumraon 17,429, Baxar 16,498, and Jagdispur 12,568. The administrative headquarters of the district are at Arrah. The chief staple of Shahabad is rice, which produces three crops during the year ; wheat, barley, maize, cereals, and various other plants are also grown. The principal manufactures of the district are sugar, paper, saltpetre, blankets, coarse cotton cloth, and brass utensils. Its trade is chiefly carried on by means of permanent markets in the town and at fairs. The principal exports are rice, wheat, barley, pulses, grain, oats, linseed, carraway seed, paper, and spices; imports consist of cleaned rice, betel-nut, tobacco, sugar, molasses, salt, pepper, cotton, iron, brass, zinc, copper, lead, tin, and betel- leaf. The revenue of Shahabad district in 1883-84 amounted to £253,542, of which the land yielded £171,263. The southern part of the district was ceded to the British by Shah Alum,*~~

~~emperor of Delhi in 1765, and the northern part by Azuf-ud- Dowlah, vizier of Oudh, ten years later.~~

~~SHAH JAHAN, Mogul emperor from 1627 to 1658. See Inpra, vol. xii. p. 795.~~

~~SHAHJAHANPUR, the easternmost district of the Rohilkhand division in the lieutenant-governorship of the North-Western Provinces of British India, lying between 27° 36' and 28° 29' N. lat. and between 79° 23' and 80° 26' E, long. It has an area of 1746 square miles, and is bounded on the N. and N.W. by Pilibhit, on the E, by Hardoi and Kheri, on the §. by the Ganges, separating it from Farukhabad, and on the W. by Budaun and Bar- eilly. The district consists of a long and narrow tract running up from the Ganges towards the Himalayas, and is for the most part level and without any hills or considerable undulations. The principal rivers are the Gumti, Khanaut, Gardai, and Ramganga. The last-named is the main waterway of the district, and is navigable as far as Kola Ghat near Jalalabad, whence grain is shipped for the Ganges ports. To the north-east beyond Gumti the country resembles the tarai in the preponder- ance of waste and forest over cultivated land, in the sparse- ness of population, and in general unhealthiness, Between the Gumti and the Khanaut the country varies from a rather wild and unhealthy northern region to a densely inhabited tract in the south, with a productive soil well cultivated with sugar-cane and other remunerative crops. The section between the Deoha and Gardi comprises much marshy land; but south of the Gardi, and between it and the Ramganga, the soil is mostly of a sandy nature. From Ramganga to the Ganges in the south is a continuous low country of marshy patches alternating with a hard clayey soil requiring much irrigation in parts. Shdh- jahanpur contains a number of jhils or lakes, which afford irrigation for the spring crops in their neighbourhood. The Oudh and Rohilkhand Railway traverses the district a distance of 39 miles. The climate of the district is very similar to that of most parts of Oudh and Rohil- khand, but moister than that of the Doab. Except in May and June, the country has a fresh and green appearance. Its average annual rainfall is about 38 inches.~~

~~*In 1881 the population of Shahjahanpur numbered 856,946 (males 460,064, females 596,882), of whom 735,244 were Hindus and 120,214 were Mohammedans. The district contains only two towns with a population exceeding 10,000, viz., SHAHJAHANPUR (q.v.) and Tilhar (15,351). Of the total area of 1746 square miles 1090 were under cultivation in 1883-84, and 464 were returned as*~~

~~*cultivable. The chief agricultural products are wheat and gram in spring, and in the autumn sugar-cane, rice, joar, and bajra, and*~~

~~*several kinds of pulses. Exports are chiefly sugar, grain of all kinds, pulses, indigo, cotton, and timber, and the iniports are mainly European goods, metals, and salt. The gross revenue raised in the district in 1883-84 amounted to £186,162, of which the land contributed £118,638. The only manufactures of any importance under European supervision are those of sugar and Tum and of indigo, Shahjahanpur was ceded to the English by treaty in 1801. During the mutiny of 1857 it became the seene of open rebellion. The Enropeans were attacked when in church ; three were shot down, but the remainder, aided by a hundred faithful sepoys, escaped, The force under Lord Clyde put a stop to the anarchy in April 1858, and shortly afterwards peace and authority were restored.*~~

~~*SHAHJAHANPUR, municipal town and administra- tive headquarters of the above district, lies in 27° 53' 41" N. lat. and 79° 57' 30" RB, long., on the left bank of the Deoha. It isa large place, with some stately old mosques and a castle now in ruins. The city was founded in 1647 during the reign of Shah J ahan, whose name it bears, by Nawab Bahadur Khan, a Pathan, It has a considerable export trade in cereals, pulses, and sugar. In 1881 the population was 74,830 (36,840 males, and 37,990 females).*~~

~~*SHAHPUR, the southernmost district of the Rawal Pindi division in the lieutenant-governorship of the Punjab, India, between 31° 39' and 39° 49' N. lat. and between 71° 37' and 73° 24' E. long., with an area of 4691 square miles. The district is bounded on the N. by the Jhelum district, on the E. by Gujrat and the Chenab, on the S. by Jhang, and on the W. and N.W. by Dera Ismail Khan and Bannu. On both sides of the Jhelum*~~

~~stretch wide upland plains, utterly barren or covered only with brushwood ; a considerable portion of this area, how- ever, is composed of good soil, only requiring irrigation to make it productive. The most important physical sub- divisions of the district are the Salt range in the north, the valleys of the Chendb and Jhelum, and the plains between those rivers and between the Jhelum and the Salt range. The characteristics of these two plains are widely different: the desert portion of the southern plain is termed the bar; the corresponding tract north of the Jhelum is known as the thal. That part of Shéhpur to the north of the Jhelum is by far the most interesting, containing as it does such varieties of scenery and climate, such contrasts of soil, vegetation, and natural capabilities. Communications are carried on by well-made roads, by the Jhelum, which is navigable for country craft through- out its course within the district, and by 52 miles of the Salt branch of the Punjab Northern State Railway. The climate of the plains is hot and dry, but in the Salt range it is much cooler; the average annual rainfall is about 15 inches. Tigers, leopards, and wolves are found in the Salt range, while small game and antelope abound among the thick jungle of the bar.~~

~~The census of 1881 diselosed a population of 421,508 (males 221,676, females 199,832); of these 59,026 were HIndus and 357,742 were Mohammedans. The only town in the district with more than 10,000 inhabitants is Bhera, with 15,165 ; but the administrative headquarters of the district are at the small town of Shahpur on the Jhelum river, the population of which in 1881 was 5424, Of the total area only 871 square miles were under cultivation in 1883-84, and 3058 square miles were returned as cultivable. Wheat is the chief staple, and covers nearly a half of the cultivated area; bajra and eotton are the next most extensivel y grown crops ; among other crops are sugar-cane and opium, The commercial importance of the distriet depends almost entirely upon its connexion with the Salt range, salt being found throughout these hills. The revenue derived from this product, however, though collected in the Shahpur district, cannot properly be credited to it, as the mineral, though abundant in the Shahpur portion of the range, is worked chiefly in that part of it which lies in the Jhelum district. The ehief exports are grain, rice, cotton, wool, ght, and saltpetre ; the imports sugar, English pieee-goods, and metals. Its manufactures consist of silk and cotton scarfs, toys,~~

~~*and feltand blankets. The gross revenue in 1883-84 amounted to £55,290, of which the land contributed £39,020.*~~

~~*Shahpur passed into the hands of the English along with the rest of the Punjab on the suppression of the Multan rebellion in*~~

~~*1849. During the mutiny of 1857 the district remained tranquil, and though the villages of the bar gave cause for alarm no outbreak of sepoys occurred. Since annexation the limits and constitution of the district have undergone many changes.*~~

~~*SHAHRASTANI (1086-1153). Abu'l-Fath Mohammed ibn 'Abd al-Karim, called al-Shahrastani, a native of Shahrastan (Shehristén) in Khordsdén, Persia, was noted as a jurisconsult and theologian of the Ash'arite school. He went to Baghdad in 1116 and stayed there three years, but afterwards returned to his native place, where he died. Sam'ani, the famous historian of Baghdad, was one of his hearers, and to him Ibn Khallikén (No. 622, Eng. tr. ii. 675 sq.) mainly owes the little that is known of Shahra- stani's life.*~~

~~*He wrote various works, of which several still exist ; that which gives him a claim to notice here is the interesting Kitdb al-Milal wan-Nihal, or " Account of Religious Sects and Philosophical Schools," published by Cureton in 1846 and translated into German by Haarbriicker (Halle, 1850-51). The book was already used by Pocock for his account of the ancient Arabs and has been much referred to since, but has to be read with caution, as the author is often very uncritical. It treats successively of the Mohammedan sects, of other religious bodies (Jews, Samaritans, Christians, Magians, Manicheans, &c.), of philosophical schools (including the Greeks), and of the ancient Arabs and Indians, and contains a great deal of curious aud valuable matter.*~~

~~*SHAIRP, Joun Campzett (1819-1885), principal of the United College, St Andrews, and professor of poetry at Oxford, was born at Houstoun House, Linlithgowshire, on July 30, 1819. He was the third son of Major Norman Shairp of Houstoun and E. Binning, daughter of J. Campbell of*~~

~~*Kildaloig, Argyllshire. He was educated at Edinburgh Academy and Glasgow University, where he gained the Snell exhibition, and entered at Balliol College, Oxford, in 1840. While a student at Glasgow and an undergraduate at Oxford it was his privilege to make many warm friends and to be very widely loved. At Glasgow began his lifelong friendship with Dr Norman M'Leod, while among those with whom he was most intimate at Oxford were the names of Bradley, Coleridge, Temple, Clough, Walrond, Riddell, Prichard, and Edwin Palmer. In 1842 he gained the Newdigate prize for a poem on Charles XII, and in 1844 took his degree with second class honours. During these years the 'Oxford movement" was at its height. Shairp's earnest nature was greatly stirred by Newman's sermons, while Keble's poetry spoke home to his heart ; but, though full of warm sympathy for many High Church views, he remained faithful to his Presbyterian upbringing. After leaving Oxford he took a mastership at Rugby under Dr Tait ; here he sought loyally to develop Dr Arnold's system by appealing to the better feelings of his pupils and by giving them wide views of culture and education. And in this he was successful, making among his pupils warm and lasting friends. In 1857 he became assistant to the professor of humanity in the university of St Andrews, and in 1861 he was appointed professor of that chair. In 1853 he married Eliza, daughter of Henry Alexander Douglas, Kilhead, Dumfriesshire, and had one surviving son, John Campbell, who became an advocate at the Scottish bar. Shairp was highly respected by the more earnest students, and much loved by some whose spiritual as well as mental nature he helped to quicken. In 1864 he published Ailmahoe, a Mighland Pastoral ; in this his devotion to the scenery and the people of the Scottish Highlands, where he always spent his vacations, found vent. In this poem there was a directness, simplicity, and moral earnestness which showed the true poet. In 1868 he republished some articles under the name of Studies in Poetry and Philosophy; this book showed him to be one of the foremost critics of his day ; the chief subjects it discussed were Wordsworth, Coleridge, and Keble. He insisted strongly on the high spiritual teach- ing and the deep poetical power of the great lake bard.*~~

~~*SHA—SHA*~~

~~*While not blind to his many faults of style, his occasional puerility, and his prosiness, he urged his claims as a unique interpreter of Nature and a spiritual philosopher. Coleridge interested him as a poet, but much more as a religious teacher ; the Aids to Reflection was a favourite present to his young friends, and often gave a text for his deeper conversations. The most popular essay was that on Keble, in which he gave a vivid sketch of Newman's influence in Oxford, while he spoke of the author of Zhe Christian Year with enthusiasm as a Christian teacher, and with discerning criticism as a poet. In 1868 he was presented to the principalship of the United College, vacant by the death of J. D. Forbes ; he discharged the duties of this office with conscientious zeal and interest, and also con- tinued to lecture from time to time on literary and ethical subjects. A course of the lectures, published in 1870, Culture and {eligion, is one of his most popular works. In 1873 he helped to edit the life of Principal Forbes, and in 1874 he edited Dorothy Wordsworth's charming Kecollections of a Tour in Scotland in 1808. In 1877 he was elected professor of poetry at Oxford in succession to Sir F. H. Doyle. Of his lectures from this chair the best were published in 1880 as Aspects of Poetry. In 1877 he had published The Poetic Interpretation of Nature, in which he enters fully into the "old quarrel," as Plato calls it, between science and poetry, and traces with great clear. ness and literary acumen the ideas of nature in all the chief Hebrew, classical, and English poets. In 1879 he published a short life of Robert Burns. Such were Shairp's chief literary works, though many uncollected magazine articles and a few poems show the versatility of his mind ; attention may be specially called to his article KBE in this Encyclopedia as an example of his critical power. In 1882 he was re-elected to the poetry chair and discharged his duties there and at St Andrews till the end of 1884 ; but his health had been frail for some time, and in March 1885 he sought a change of air in the Riviera. He returned in June somewhat benefited, but he caught a chill in the autumn, and, after a short illness, died at Ormsary, Argyll-shire, on September 18, 1885.*~~

~~*SHAKERS is the name commonly applied to and not rejected by a religious denomination of which the official title is "The United Society of Believers in Christ's Second Appearing." The foundress was Ann Lee, who was born in Toad Lane, Manchester, 29th February 1736, but only*~~

~~*privately baptized Ist June 1742. Her father was a blacksmith, and at an early age she found employ- ment, being at one time a cutter of hatter's fur, and at another cook in the infirmary of her native town. She was a quiet child of a somewhat visionary temperament, and in 1758 joined a small religious body, a remnant of the French Prophets. The leader was Jane Wardley, who was regarded by her followers as the "spirit of John the Baptist operating in the female line." These people were called Shakers because, like the early Quakers, they were seized with violent tremblings and shakings when under the influence of strong religious emotion. Ann Lee in 1762 married a blacksmith whose character was not very good. Their four children died in infancy. She became "a seeker after salvation," and her conversion was followed by her taking the lead in the Shaker Society, to which she promulgated a doctrine of celibacy. Their previous training had led them to expect that the second coming of Christ would be in the form of a woman; as Eve was the mother of all living, so in their new leader the Shakers recognized "the first mother or spiritual parent in the line of the female." With their new-born zeal aflame, they preached their doctrine in season and out of season, and suffered something from mob violence and from the intolerance of the constituted authorities. In*~~

~~*1774 Ann the Word and eight of her disciples emigrated to America, and landed at New York on August Ist of that year. Abraham Stanley, not relishing his wife's celibate creed, abandoned her for another woman. The " Believers" settled at N euskenna, now called Watervliet, and were imprisoned for refusing to take the oath, for which reason they were suspected of being unfavourable to the cause of the Revolution. On being released they preached their creed and gradually gained converts, Ann Lee died at Watervliet 8th September 1780. She was succeeded by James Whittaker, who died in 1788, when Joseph Meacham succeeded to the leadership and organized the society on that communistic basis which now distin- guishes it. In the early history of the Shakers various charges were brought against them, including flagellation and naked dancing, but they have outlived these scandals and are now generally respected. There is an interesting sketch of a Shaker community in Howell's Undiscovered*~~

~~*Country. They all work ; they are capital agriculturists : they have a widespread reputation for thoroughness, fru- gality, and temperance. They believe in the reality of constant intercourse with the world of spirits. There are "poems" by Mother Ann which it is claimed have been dictated by her from the spirit world. They claim from*~~

~~*time to time the exercise of the gift of tongues and the gift of healing. The theological ideas of the Shakers are set forth in the Lestimony of Christ's Second Appearing exemplified by the Principle and Practice of the True Church of Christ, of which a fourth edition, printed in 1856, was extensively circulated, A compacter statement is that in F. W. Evans's Shakers? Compendium, which was printed at New Lebanon in 1859. Elder Evans, who is the best- known representative of Shakerism, is of English birth, and has published an autobiography. In 1870 there were eighteen distinct Shaker communities, with eighteen church buildings capable of seating 8850 persons, and possessing property valued at $86,900. These socialist villages are in Connecticut, Kentucky, Maine, Massachusetts, New York, New Hampshire, and Ohio,*~~

~~*The best known of the settlements is that at New Lebanon, where there are three Separate societies in view of each other. Family, the Church Family, and the Second Family are distinct groups, whose members live together and have a common right to land, house, hats, tools, form of government is that supplied by the public opinion of the community, as expressed fession, counsel, and criticism. Mr Hepworth Dixon's New America gives an interesting account of their communistic methods!*~~

~~*There is an extensive literature respeeting the Shakers; a bibliography is appended to W. E. A. Axon's Biographical Notice of Ann Lee, Liverpool, 1876,*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*\\ TILLIAM SHAKESPEARE, the national*~~

~~*poet of England, the greatest dramatist that modern Europe has produced, was born in April, in the year 1564, at Stratford-upon-Avon, in the county of Warwick. The known facts of the poet's personal history are compara- tively few, and before giving them in order we purpose considering in some detail the larger educational influences which helped to stimulate his latent powers, to evoke and strengthen his poetical and patriotic sympathies, and thus prepare and qualify him for his future work. Tn dealing with these influences we are on firm and fruitful ground. We know, for example, that Shakespeare was born and lived for twenty years at Stratford-upon-Avon ; and we can say therefore with certainty that all the physical and moral influences of that picturesque and richly-storied Midland district melted as years went by into the full current of his ardent blood, became indeed the vital element, the very breath of life his expanding spirit breathed. We know a good deal about his home, his parents, and his domestic surroundings ; and these powerful factors in the development of any mind gifted with insight and sensibility must have acted with redoubled force on a nature so richly and harmoniously endowed as that of the Stratford poet. It would be difficult indeed to overestimate the combined effect of these vital elements on his capacious and retentive mind, a mind in which the receptive and creative powers were so equally poised and of such unrivalled strength. This review of the larger influences operating with con- centrated force during the critical years of youth and early manhood will help to connect and interpret the few and Scattered particulars of Shakespeare's personal history. These particulars must indeed be to some extent connected and interpreted in order to be clearly understood, and any intelligible account of Shakespeare's life must therefore take the shape of a biographical essay, rather than of a biography proper. We may add that the sketch will be confined to the points connected with Shakespeare's local surroundings and personal history. The large literary questions connected with his works, such as the classifica- tion, the chronology, and analysis of the plays, could not of course be adequately dealt with in sucha sketch. Tt is*~~

~~*the less necessary that this wider task should be attempted as the main points it embraces have recently been well handled by competent Shakespearian scholars. The best and most convenient manuals*~~

~~*embodying the results of recent criticism and research will be. referred to at the close of the article. Meanwhile we have first to look at the locality of Shakespeare's birth, both in its material and moral aspects. Warwickshire was*~~

~~*poraries as the central*~~

~~*Roman roads crossing the island from east to west and west to east met,— forming at their point of junction the centre of an irregular St Andrew's cross, of which the arms extended from Dover to Chester on the one side and from Totnes to Lincoln and the north on the other. The centre in which these roads— Watling Street and the Fosse Way ~— thus met was early known from this circumstance as the HIgh Cross. Being the most important Midland position during the Roman occupation of the country, several Roman stations were formed in the neighbourhood of this venerable Quatre Bras. Of these Camden specifies the ancient and flourishing city of Clychester, represented in part by the modern Clybrook, and Manduessidum, the memory of which is probably retained in the modern Man- cettar. Important Roman remains have also been found within a few miles of Stratford, at Alcester, a central station on the third great Roman road, Ricknild Street, which runs from south to north across the western side of the county. In later times, when means of communication were multiplied, the great roads to the north-west stil]*~~

~~*1 There is considerable similarity between the American disciples of Ann Lee and the English Shakers of the New Forest, who came into public notice in 1874. One of their members had bought 31 acres of land, which they cultivated under the direction of ' 'Mother" Mary Ann Girling, who was at once their foundress and prophetess. As the result of some litigation the Shakers were ejected in 1874, and, after having shelter for a time on a farm belonging to the HIon. Auberon HIerbert, they then became atent community. Ch arges were made against them of naked dancing in the course of their religious ecstasies, They believe in the second advent, regard Mrs Girling as the woman Messiah, have all property in common, and preach the doctrine of celibacy,*~~

~~*known to Shakespeare's contem- War- county or heart of England. It wick- was the middle shire of the Midlands, where the two great Shire.*~~

~~*The Arden division.*~~

~~*passed through the county, and one of them, the mail road from London through Oxford to Birmingham, Stafford, and Chester, was the "streete" or public way that crossed the Avon at the celebrated ford spanned in 1483 by Sir Hugh Clopton's magnificent bridge of fourteen arches. Immediately beyond the bridge rose the homely gables and wide thoroughfares of Shakespeare's native place.*~~

~~*In Shakespeare's time Warwickshire was divided by the irregular line of the Avon into two unequal but well-marked divisions, known respectively, from their main character- istics, as the woodland and the open country, or more technically as the districts of Arden and Feldon. The former included the thickly-wooded region north of the Avon, of which the celebrated forest of Arden was the centre, and the latter the champaign country, the rich and fertile pasture-lands between the Avon and the line of hills separating Warwick from the shires of Oxford and North- ampton. Shakespeare himself was of course familiar with this division of his native shire, and he has well expressed it in Lear's description of the section of the kingdom assigned to his eldest daughter Goneril,—*~~

~~*" Of all these bounds, —even from this line to this, With shadowy forests and with champains rich'd,*~~

~~*With plenteous rivers and wide-skirted meads, — We make thee lady."*~~

~~*No better general description of Warwickshire could indeed be given than is contained in these lines. Taking the Roman roads, Watling and Ricknild Streets, as boundaries, they vividly depict the characteristic features of the county, including its plenteous rivers and wide- skirted meads. The old and central division of Arden and Feldon is clearly embodied, in the second line, "with shadowy forests and with champains rich'd." This distinction, practically effaced in modern times by agricultural and*~~

~~*mining progress, was partially affected by these causes even in Shakespeare's own day. The wide Arden, or belt of forest territory which had once extended not only across the county but from the Trent to the Severn, was then very much restricted to the centre of the shire, the line of low hills and undulating country which stretched away for upwards of twenty miles to the north of Stratford. The whole of the northern district was, it is true, still densely wooded, but the intervening patches of arable and pasture land gradually encroached more and more upon the bracken and brushwood, and every year larger areas were cleared and prepared for tillage by the axe and the plough. In the second half of the 16th century, however, the Arden district still retained enough of its primitive character to fill the poet's imagination with the exhilarating breadth and sweetness of woodland haunts, the beauty, variety, and freedom of sylvan life, and thus to impart to the scenery of As You Zeke It the vivid fresh-ness and reality of a living experience. In this delightful comedy the details of forest-life are touched with so light but at the same time so sure a hand as to prove the writer's familiarity with the whole art of venery, his thorough knowledge of that "highest franchise of noble and princely pleasure" which the royal demesnes of wood and park afforded. In referring to the marches or wide margins on the outskirts of the forest, legally known as purlieus, Shakespeare indeed displays a minute technical accuracy which would seem to indicate that in his early rambles about the forest and casual talks with its keepers and woodmen he had picked up the legal incidents of sylvan economy, as well as enjoyed the freedom and charm of forest-life. Throughout the purlieus, for instance, the forest laws were only partially in force, while the more important rights of individual owners were fully recognized and established. HIence it happened that Corin's master, dwelling, as Rosalind puts it in a quaint but characteristic*~~

~~*simile that betrays her sex, "here in the skirts of the forest, like fringe upon a petticoat," could sell " his cote, his flock, and bounds of feed," and that Celia and Rosalind were able to purchase "the cottage, the pasture, and the flock." It may be noted, too, that, in exchange for the independence the dwellers in the purlieus acquired as private owners,*~~

~~*they had to relinquish their common right or customary privilege of pasturing their cattle in the forest. Sheep, indeed, were not usually included in this right of common, their presence in the forest being regarded as inimical to the deer. When kept in the purlieus, there- fore, they had to be strictly limited to their bounds of feed, shepherded during the day and carefully folded every night, and these points are faithfully reflected by Shake- speare. Again, only those specially privileged could hunt venison within the forest. But if the deer strayed beyond the forest bounds they could be freely followed by the dwellers in the purlieus, and these happy hunting grounds outside the forest precincts were in many cases spacious and extensive. The special office of a forest ranger was indeed to drive back the deer straying in the purlieus. The banished duke evidently has this in mind when, as a casual denizen of the forest, he proposes to make war on its native citizens :— "Come, shall we go and kill us venison ?*~~

~~*And yet it irks me, the poor dappled fools,*~~

~~*Being native burghers of this desert city,*~~

~~*Should, in their own confines, with forkéd heads,*~~

~~*Have their round haunches gor'd." And the melancholy Jaques, refining as usual with cynical sentimentalism on every way of life and every kind of action, thinks it would be a special outrage*~~

~~*"To fright the animals, and to kill them up,*~~

~~*In their assign'd and native dwelling place."*~~

~~*Not only in As You Like It, but in Love's Labour's Lost,. in A Midsummer Night's Dream, in the Merry Wives of Windsor, and indeed throughout his dramatic works, Shakespeare displays the most intimate knowledge of the aspects and incidents of forest life ; and it is certain that in the first instance this knowledge must have been gained from his early familiarity with the Arden district. This, as we have seen, stretched to the north of Stratford in all its amplitude and variety of hilland dale, leafy covert and sunny glade, giant oaks and tangled thickets,— the wood- land stillness*~~

~~*being broken at intervals not only by the noise of brawling brooks below and of feathered outcries and flutterings overhead, but by dappled herds sweeping across the open lawns or twinkling in the shadowy bracken, as well as by scattered groups of timid conies feeding, at matins and vespers, on the tender shoots and sweet herbage of the forest side. The deer-stealing tradition is sufficient evidence of the popular belief in the poet's love of daring exploits in the regions of vert and venison, and of his devotion, although in a somewhat irregular way perhaps, to the attractive woodcraft of the park, the warren, and the chase. The traditional scene of this adventure was Charlecote Park, a few miles north-east of Stratford; but the poet's early wanderings in Arden extended, no doubt, much further afield. Stirred by the natural desire of visiting at leisure the more celebrated places of his native district, he would pass from Stratford to Henley and Hampton, to Wroxall Priory and Kenilworth Castle, to Stoneleigh Abbey and Leamington Priors, to Warwick Keep and Guy's Cliffe. The remarkable beauty of this last storied spot stirs the learned and tranquil pens of the antiquaries Camden and Dugdale to an unwonted effort of description, even in the pre-descriptive era. "Under this hill," says Camden, "hard by the river Avon, standeth Guy-cliffe, others call it Gib-cliffe, the dwelling house at this day of Sir Thomas Beau-foe, descended from*~~

~~*The Feldon division.*~~

~~*History,*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*the ancient Normans line, and the very seate itselfe of pleasantnesse. There have yee a shady little wood, cleere and cristall springs, mossy bottomes and caves, medowes alwaies fresh and greene, the river rumbling here and there among the stones with his stream making a milde noise and gentle whispering, and besides all this, solitary and still quietnesse, things most grateful to the Muses." But the whole of the circuit was richly wooded, the towns, as the names indicate, being forest towns,—Henley-in-Arden, Hampton-in-Arden,—while the castles and secularized religious houses were paled off within their own parks and bounds from the sylvan wilderness around them. Some, like the*~~

~~*celebrated castle of the Mountfords, called from its pleasant situation amongst the woods Beaudesert, having been dismantled during the Wars of the Roses were already abandoned, and had in Shake- speare's day relapsed from the stately revelry that once filled their halls into the silence of the surrounding woods. At every point of the journey, indeed, as the poet's eager and meditative eye embraced new vistas, it might be said, 'Towers and battlements it sees Bosomed high in tufted trees." On the southern margin of the Arden division, towards the Avon, small farms were indeed already numerous, and cultivation had become tolerably general. But the region as a whole still retained its distinctive character as the Arden or wooded division of the county. Even now, indeed, it includes probably more woods and parks than are to be found over the same area in any other English shire.*~~

~~*While parts of the Arden district were in this way under cultivation, it must not be supposed that the champaign or open country to the south of the Avon, the Feldon division of the county, was destitute of wood; on the contrary its extensive pastures were not only well watered by local streams overshadowed by willow and alder, but well wooded at intervals by groups of more stately trees. The numerous flocks and herds that grazed throughout the valley of the Red Horse found welcome shelter from the noonday heat and the driving wind under the green roofs and leafy screens that lined and dotted their bounds of feed. And, although even the grazing farms were comparatively small, almost every homestead had its group of protecting elms, its outlying patch of hanging beech and ash, or straggling copse of oak and hazel. This is still reflected in such local names as Wood Park, Shrub Lands, Ockley Wood, Furze Hill, Oakham, Ashborne, Alcott Wood, Berecote Wood, and Radland Gorse. These features gave interest and variety to the Feldon district, and justified the characteristic epithet which for centuries was popularly applied to the county as a whole, that of "woody Warwickshire." And Shakespeare, in passing out of the county on his London journeys, would quickly feel the difference, as beyond its borders he came upon stretches of less clothed and cultivated scenery. As his stout gelding mounted Edgehill, and he turned in the saddle to take a parting look at the familiar landscape he was leaving, he would behold what Speed, in his enthusiasm, calls "another Eden, as Lot the plain of Jordan." While the general aspect*~~

~~*would be that of green pastures and grassy levels, there would be at the same time the picturesque intermingling of wood and water, of mill and grange and manor house, which gives light and shade, colour and movement, interest and animation, to the plainer Sweeps and more monotonous objects of pastoral scenery.*~~

~~*On the historical side Warwickshire has points of interest as striking and distinctive as its physical features. During the Roman occupation of the country it was, as we have seen, the site of several central Roman stations, of which, besides those already noticed, the fortified camps of*~~

~~*perhaps further west have accepted the overlordship of their Teutonic neighbours and united with them in the cultivation and defence of their common territory. The fact that no record of any early Early indicate that, after at union of there was a gradual coalescence of C*ltic rather than any fierce Teutonic or memorable struggle between them. Even the more races.*~~

~~*Angle conquest*~~

~~*739*~~

~~*Tripontium and Presidium on the line of the Avon were the most important. A Roman road crossed the Avon at Stratford, and radiating north and south soon reached some of the larger Roman towns of the west, such as Uriconium and Corinium. Between these towns were country villas or mansions, many of them being, like that at Woodchester, "magnificent palaces covering as much ground as a whole town." The entire district must in this way have been powerfully affected by the higher forms of social life and material splendour which the wealthier provincials had introduced. The immediate effect of this Roman influence on the native populations was, as we know, to divide them into opposed groups whose conflicts helped directly to produce the disastrous results which followed the withdrawal of the Romans from the island. But the more permanent and more important effect is probably to be traced in the far less obstinate resistance offered by the Celtic tribes of Mid Britain to the invading Angles from the north and Saxons from the south, by whom themselves and their district were eventually absorbed. Instead of the*~~

~~*fierce conflicts and wrathful withdrawal or extermination of the conquered Britons which prevailed further east, and for a tiine also, the intervening tribes appear to*~~

~~*remains seems to most a brief resistance, the invading with the native tribes*~~

~~*independent and warlike tribes about the Severn repeatedly*~~

~~*joined the Saxon HIwiccas, whose northern frontier was the*~~

~~*forest of Arden, in resisting the advance of Wessex from the south. And for more than a hundred years after the establishment of the central kingdom of the Angles, the neighbouring Welsh princes are found acting in friendly alliance with the Mercian rulers. It was thus the very district where from an early period the two race elements that have gone to the making of the nation were most nearly balanced and most completely blended. The union of a strong Celtic element with the dominant Angles is still reflected in the local nomenclature, not only in the names of the chief natural features, such as rivers and heights, —Arden and Avon, Lickey, Alne, and Thame,—but in the numerous combes and cotes or cots, as in the reduplica- tive Cotswold, in the duns, dons, and dens, and in such distinctively Celtic elements as man, pol, try, in names of places scattered through the district. The cotes are, it is true, ambiguous, being ina majority of cases perhaps Saxon rather than Celtic, but in a forest country near the old Welsh marches many must still represent the Celtic coet or coed, and in some cases this is clear from the word itself, as in Kingscot, a variation of Kingswood, and even Charlecote exists in the alternative form of Charlewood. This union of the two races, combined with the stirring conditions of life in a wild and picturesque border country, gave a vigorous impulse and distinctive character to the population, the influence of which may be clearly traced in the subsequent literary as well as in the political history of the country. As early as the 9th century, when the ravages of the Danes had desolated the homes and scattered the representatives of learning in Wessex, it was to western Mercia that King Alfred sent for scholars and churchmen to unite with him in helping to restore the fallen fortunes of religion and letters. And after the long blank in the native literature produced by the*~~

~~*Norman Conquest the authentic signs of its indestructible vitality first appeared on the banks of the Severn. Layamon's spirited poem dealing with the legendary history of Britain, and written*~~

~~*at Redstone near Arley, within sight of the river's majestic sweep amidst its bordering woods and hills, is by far the most important literary monument of semi-Saxon. And, while the poem as a whole displays a Saxon tenacity of purpose in working out a comprehensive scheme of memorial verse, its more original parts have touches of passion and picturesqueness, as well as of dramatic vivacity, that recall the patriotic fire of the Celtic bards. A hundred and fifty years later the first great period of English literature was inaugurated by another poem of marked originality and power, written under the shadow of the Malvern Hills. The writer of the striking series of allegories known as Piers Plowman's Visions was a Shrop- shire man, and, notwithstanding his occasional visits to London and official employments there, appears to have spent his best and most productive years on the western border between the Severn and the Malvern Hills. In many points both of substance and form the poem may, it is true, be described as almost typically Saxon. But it has at the same time a power of vivid portraiture, a sense of colour, with an intense and penetrating if not exag- gerated feeling for local grievances which are probably due to the strain of Celtic blood in the writer's veins. Two centuries later, from the same district, from a small town on an affluent of the Severn, a few miles to the west of the river, came the national poet, who not only inherited the patriotic fire and keen sensibility of Layamon and Langland, but who combined in the most perfect form and carried to the highest point of development the best qualities of the two great races represented in the blood and history of the English nation. Mr J. R. Green, in referring to the moral effects arising from the mixture of races in the Midland district, has noted this fact in one of those sagacious side-glances that make his history so instructive. "Jt is not without significance," he says, 'that the highest type of the race, the one Englishman who has combined in their largest measure the mobility and fancy of the Celt with the depth and energy of the Teutonic temper, was born on the old Welsh and English borderland, in the forest of Arden."*~~

~~*And from the purely critical side Mr Matthew Arnold has clearly brought out the same point. He traces some of the finest qualities of Shakespeare's poetry to the Celtic spirit which touched his imagination as with an enchanter's wand, and thus helped to brighten and enrich the profounder elements of his creative genius.*~~

~~*The history of Warwickshire in Anglo-Saxon times is identified*~~

~~*with the kingdom of Mercia, which, under a series of able rulers, was for a time the dominant power of the country. In later times,*~~

~~*hand, South Wales, some of the Midland and most of the western shires, under the leadership of the Beauforts, and the northern counties, under the leadership of Clifford and Northumberland, supported the house of. Lancaster. Political feeling in the Princi- pality itself was a good deal divided. The duke of York still possessed Ludlow Castle, and, the Welsh of the northern border being devoted to the houses of March and Mortimer, Prince Edward, the young earl of March, after the defeat and death of his father at Wakefield, was able to rally on the border a "mighty power of marchmen," and, after uniting his forces with those of Warwick, to secure the decisive victory of Towton which placed him sceurely on the throne. Still, during the earlier stages of the struggle the Beauforts, with the earls of Pembroke, Devon, and Wiltshire, were able to muster in the south and west forces sufficient to keep the Yorkists in check. And when the final struggle came, —when Henry of Richmond landed at Milford Haven,— the Welsh blood in his veins rallied to his standard so powerful a contingent of the southern marchmen that he was able at once to cross the Severn, and, traversing north Warwickshire, to confront the forces of Richard, with the assurance that in the hour of need he would be supported by Stanley and Northumberland. Warwickshire itself was, as already intimated, considerably divided even in the more active stages of the conflict, Coventry being strongly in favour of the Red Rose, while Warwick, under the influence of the earl, was for a while devoted to the cause of the White Rose. Kenilworth was still held by the house of Lancaster, and Henry VI. at the outset of the conquest had more than once taken refuge there. On the other hand Edward IV. and Richard III.*~~

~~*both visited Warwick, the latter being so interested in the castle that he is said to have laid the foundation of a new and "mighty fayre" towcr on the north side, afterwards known as the Bear's Tower. Edward IV., in harmony with his strong instinct for popularity, and command of the arts that secure it, tried to conciliate the people of Coventry by visiting the town and witnessing its selebrefea pageants inore than once—at Christmas in 1465 and at the festival of St George in 1474. Although he was accompanied by his queen the efforts to win the town from its attachment to the rival house do not appear to have been very successful. Under Edward's rule the manifesta- tion of active partisanship was naturally in abeyance, and no doubt the feeling may to some extent have declined. "Indeed, in the later stages of the struggle Warwickshire, like so many other counties, was comparatively weary and quiescent. When Richard III. advanced to the north the sheriff of the shire had, it is true, in obedience to the royal mandate levied a force on behalf of the king, but as this force never actually joined the royal standard it is naturally assumed that it was either intercepted by Henry on his march to Bosworth Field or had voluntarily joined him on the eve of the battle. In view of the strong Lancasterian sympathies in the north and east of the shire the latter is by far the more probable supposition. In this case, or indeed on either alternative, it may be true, as asserted in the patent of arms subsequently granted to Shakespeare's father, that his ancestors had fought on behalf of Henry VII. in the great battle that placed the crown on his head, Many families bearing the name of Shakespeare were scattered through Warwickshire in the 15th century, and it is therefore not at all unlikely that some of their members had wielded a spear with effect in the battle that, to the immense relief of the country, happily closed the most miserable civil conflict in its annals.*~~

~~*But, whether any of his ancestors fought at Bosworth Field Influence*~~

~~*from its central position, the county was liable to be crossed by military forces if rebellion made head in the north or west, as well as to be traversed and occupied by the rival armies during the*~~

~~*or not, Shakespeare would be sure in his youth to hear, almost of local at first hand, a multitude of exciting stories and stirring inci- tradi- dents*~~

~~*connected with so memorable and far-reaching a victory, tions.*~~

~~*periods of civil war. The most important events, indeed, con- nected with the shire before Shakespeare's time occurred during the two greatest civil conflicts in the earlier national annals— the Barons' War in the 13th century, and the Wars of the Roses in the 15th. The decisive battles that closed these long and bitter struggles, and thus became turning points in our constitutional history, were both fought on the borders of Warwickshire, —the battle of Evesham on the south-western and the battle of Bosworth Field on the north-eastern boundary. The great leaders in each conflict—the founder of the Commons House of Parliament and the " setter up and puller down of kings"—were directly connected with Warwickshire. Kenilworth belonged to Simon de Montfort, and its siege and surrender constituted the last act in the Barons' War. During the Wars of the Roses the county was naturally promi- nent in public affairs, as its local earl, the last and greatest of the lawless, prodigal, and ambitious barons of medieval times, was for more than twenty years the leading figure in the strugele. But notwithstanding this powerful influence the county was, like the country itself, very much divided in its political sympathies and activities. The weakness and vacillation of Henry VI. had stimulated the rival house of York to assert its claims, and, as the trading and mercantile classes were always in favour of a strong government, London, with the eastern counties and the chief ports and commercial towns, favoured the house of York. On the other*~~

~~*After the battle Henry VII. had slept at Coventry, and was entertained by the citizens and presented with handsome gifts. He seems there also to have first exercised his royal power by con- ferring knighthood on the mayor of the town. The battle was fought only eighty years before Shakespeare's birth, and public events of importance are vividly transmitted by local tradition for more than double that length of time. At this hour the quiet farmsteads of Mid Somerset abound with stories and traditions of Monmouth and his soldiers, and of the events that preceded and followed the battle of Sedgemoor. And a century earlier local traditions possessed still more vitality and power. In the 16th century, indeed, the great events of the nation's life, as well as more important local incidents, were popularly preserved and transmitted by means of*~~

~~*oral tradition and scenic display. Only a small and cultured class could acquire their knowledge of them through literary chronicles and learned records. The popular mind was of necessity largely fed and stimulated by the spoken narratives of the rustic festival and the winter fireside. And a quiet settled neighbourhood like Stratford, out of the crush, but near the great centres of national activity, would be peculiarly rich in these stored-up materials of unwritten history. The very fact that within eight miles of Shakespeare's birthplace arose from their cedared slopes the halls and towers of the great earl who for more than a quarter of a century wielded a political and*~~

~~*Stratford,*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*military power mightier than any*~~

~~*would give the district an exceptional annals, which would be locally reflected in an answering wealth of historic tradition.*~~

~~*we are fortunate in pos- an unrivalled interpreter in our great dramatic poet A regular sequence of historical plays exhibits to us,*~~

~~*the period of the Wars of the Roses we have, comparatively speak. ing, very few contemporary narratives of what took place, and anything like a general history of the times was not written till a much later date. But the doings of that stormy age,—the sad calamities endured by kings—the sudden changes of fortune in great men—the glitter of chivalry and the horrors of civil war,—all left a deep impression upon the mind of the nation, which was kept alive by vivid traditions of the past at the time that our great dramatist wrote. Hence, notwithstanding the scantiness of records and the meagreness of ancient chronicles, we have singularly little difficulty in understanding the spirit and character of the times."*~~

~~*Familiar as he must have been in his youth with the materials*~~

~~*thrilled the nation's*~~

~~*the royal family. to the crown Henry VIII., with Queen Catherine, visited Coventry in state, and Witnessed there a series of magnificent pageants. In 1525 the Princess Mary spent two being entertained with the usual sports and shows, and presented by the citizens on her departure with hand- some presents. The year after Shakespeare's birth Queen Elizabeth made a state visit to Coventry, Kenilworth, and Warwick, the young queen being received at every point of her progress with unusually splendid demonstrations of loyalty and devotion. And nine years before Shakespeare's birth King Edward VI., in the last months of his reign, had specially interested himself in the re- establishment by royal charter of the free grammar school of the guild at Stratford, which had been suppressed at the dissolution of religious houses during his father's reign.*~~

~~*The town of Stratford lies on the north bank of the Avon, at a point about midway in its course from its rise in Northamptonshire hills to its junction with the Severn at Tewkesbury. On entering the town, across Sir Hugh Clopton's noble bridge, the road from the south-east fans out in three main directions, — on the right to Warwick and Coventry, on the left to Alcester, while between runs the central street, the modern representative of the old Roman way to Birmingham, Chester, and the north, Further to the left a fourth and less important road leaves the town beyond the church, and, keeping in the main the line of the river, goes to Bidford, Salford Priors, and Evesham. It is a picturesque country road connecting a string of undulating villages and hamlets with Stratford. The town itself consisted in the 16th century of the low gable- roofed wood-and-plaster houses dotted 'at intervals along these roads and down the cross streets that connected them with each other and with the river. Most of the houses in Shakespeare's time had gardens at the back,*~~

~~*(4)*~~

~~*and many at the sides also; and the space between the houses, combined with the unusual width of the streets, gave the town an open cheerful look which enabled it to retain pleasant touches of its earlier rural state. As its prosperity increased the scattered dwellings naturally tended to close up their Tanks, and present a more united front of exposed wares and convenient hostelries to the yeomen and graziers, who with their wives*~~

~~*and families frequented the place on fair and market days. But in Shakespeare's time the irregular line of gables and porches, of penthouse walls and garden palings, with patches of flowers and overarching foliage between, still varied the view and refreshed the eye in looking down the leading thoroughfares, These thoroughfares took the shape of a central cross, of which Church, Chapel, and High Streets, running in a continuous line north and south, constituted the shaft or stem, while Bridge and Wood Streets, running in another line east and west, were the transverse beam or bar. At the point of intersection stood the High Cross, a solid stone building with Steps below and open arches. above, from which public proclamations were made, and, as in London and other large towns, sermons sometimes delivered. The open Space around the High Cross was the centre of trade and merchandise on market days, and from the force of custom it naturally became the site on which at a later period the market-house was built, Oppo- site the High Cross the main road, carried over Sir Hugh Clopton's arches and along Bridge Street, turns to the left through Henley Street on its way to Henley-in-Arden and the more distant northerly towns. At the western end of Wood Street was a large and open space called Rother Market, whence Rother Street running parallel with High Street led through narrower lanes into the Evesham Road.*~~

~~*This open ground was, as the name indicates, the great cattle The market of Stratford, one of the most important features of its Rother industrial history from very early times. In the later Middle Market. Ages most of the wealthier inhabitants were engaged in farming operations, and the growth and prosperity of the place resulted from its position as a market town in the midst of an agricultural and grazing district. In the 13th century a number of charters were obtained from the early Plantagenet kings, empowering the town to hold a weekly market and no fewer than five annual fairs, four of which were mainly for cattle. In later times a series of great cattle markets, one for each month in the year, was added to the list. The name of the Stratford cattle market embodies this feature of its history, "rother" being a good Saxon word for» horned cattle, a word freely employed in Early English, both alone and in composition. In the 16th century it was still in familiar use, not only in literature but in official documents and especially in statutes of the realm. Thus Cowell, in*~~

~~his law dictionary, nnder the heading ‘ Rother-beasts,” explains that ‘the name compre- hends oxen, cows, steers, heifers, and such like horned beasts,” — and refers to statutes of Elizabeth and James in support of the usage. And Arthur Golding in 1567 translates Ovid’s lines—~~

~~“Mille greges illi totidemque armenia per herbas Errabant—”~~

~~“* A thousand flocks of sheep, A thousand herds of rother-beasts, he in his fields did keep.”~~

~~The word seems to have been longer retained and more freely used in the Midland counties than elsewhere, and Shakespeare himself employs it with colloquial precision in the restored line of Timon of Athens: “It is the pasture lards the rother’s sides.” Many a time, no doubt, as a boy, during the spring and summer fairs, he had risen with the sun, and, making his way from Henley Street to the bridge, watched the first arrivals of the “large-eyed kine” slowly driven in from the rich pastures of the “Red Horse Valley.” There would be some variety and excitement in the spec- tacle as the droves of meditative oxen were invaded from time to time by groups of Herefordshire cows lowing anxiously after their skittish calves, as well as by the presence and disconcerting activity of still smaller deer. And the boy would be sure to follow the crowding cattle to the Rother Market and observe at leisure the humours of the ploughmen and drovers from the Feldon district, whose heavy intermittent talk would be in perfect keeping with the bovine stolidity of the steers and heifers around them. There was a market-cross at the head of the Rother expanse, and this was the chief gathering place for the cattle-dealers, as the High Cross was the rallying point of the dealers in corn and country produce. In~~

~~modern Stratford Rother Market retains its place as the busiest centre at the annual fairs, during one of which it is still customary to roast an ox in~~

~~*the open street, often amidst a good deal of popular excitement and convivial uproar.*~~

~~*The cross ways going from Rother Street to the river side, which cut the central line, dividing it into three sections, are Ely Street and Sheep Street in a continuous line, and Scholar's Lane and Chapel Lane in another line. They run parallel with the head line of Bridge and Wood Streets, and like them traverse from east to west the northern shaft of the cross that constituted the ground plan of the town. Starting down this line from the market house at the top, the first division, the High Street, is now, as it was in Shake- speare's day, the busiest part for shops and shopping, the solid pbuilding at the further corner to the left being the Coru Exchange. At the first corner of the second division, called Chapel Street, stands the town-hall, while at the further corner are the site and railed-in gardens of New Place, the large mansion purchased by Shakespeare in 1597. Opposite New Place, at the corner of the third and last division, known as Church Street, is the grey mass of Gothic buildings belonging to the guild of the Holy Cross, and consisting of the chapel, the hall, the grammar school, and the almshouses of the ancient guild. Turning to the left at the bottom of Church Street, you enter upon what was in Shakespeare's day a well-wooded suburb, with a few good houses scattered among the ancient elms, and surrounded by ornamental gardens and extensive private grounds. In one of these houses, with a sunny expanse of lawn and shrubbery, lived in the early years of the 17th century Shakespeare's eldest daughter Susanna with her husband, Dr Johu Hall, and here in spring mornings and summer afternoons the great poet must have often strolled, either alone or accom- panied by his favourite daughter, realizing to the full the quiet enjoyment of the sylvan scene and its social surroundings. This pleasant suburb, called then as now Old Town, leads directly to the church of the Holy Trinity, near the river side. The church, a fine specimen of Decorated and Perpendicular Gothic with a lofty spire, is approached on the northern side through an avenue of limes, and sheltered on the east and south by an irregular but massive group of elms towering above the churchway path between the transepts, the chancel, and the river. Below the church, on the margin of the river, were the mill, the mill-bridge, and the weir, half hidden by grey willows, green alders, and tall beds of rustling sedge. And, beyond the church, the college, and*~~

~~*the line of streets already described, the suburbs stretched away into gardens, orchards, meadows, and cultivated fields, divided by rustic lanes with mossy banks, flowering hedgerows, and luminous vistas of bewildering beauty. These cross and country roads were dotted at intervals with cottage homesteads, isolated farms, and the small groups of both which constituted the villages and hamlets included within the wide sweep of old Stratford parish. Amongst these were the villages and hamlets of Welcombe, Ingon, Drayton, Shottery, Luddington, Little Wilmcote, and Bishopston. The town was thus girdled in the spring by daisied meadows and blos- soming orchards, and enriched during the later months by the orange and gold of harvest fields and autumn foliage, mingled with the coral and purple clusters of elder, hawthorn, and moun- tain ash, and, around the farms and cottages, with the glow of ripening fruit for the winter's store.*~~

~~*But perhaps the most characteristic feature of the scenery in the neighbourhood of Stratford is to be found in the union of this rich and varied cultivation with picturesque survivals of the primeval forest territory. The low hills that rise at intervals above the well-turned soil still carry on their serrated crests the lingering glories of the ancient woodland. Though the once mighty forest of Arden has disappeared, the after-glow of its sylvan beauty rests on the neighbouring heights formerly enclosed within its ample margin. These traces of the forest wildness and freedom were of course far more striking and abundant in Shakespeare's day thau now. At that time many of the farms had only recently been reclaimed from the forest, and most of them still had their bosky acres "of tooth'd briars, sharp furzes, pricking goss and thorns," their broom groves, hazel copses, and outlying patches of unshrubbed down. And the hills that rose above the chief villages of the neighbourhood were still clothed and crowned with the green and mystic mantle of the leafy Arden. But, though much of the ancient woodland has disappeared since Shakespeare's day, many traces of it still remain. Any of the roads out of Stratford will soon bring the pedestrian to some of these picturesque sur- vivals of the old forest wilderness. On the Warwick*~~

~~*road, at the distance of about a mile from the town, there are on the left the Welcombe Woods, and just beyond the*~~

~~*woods the well-known Dingles, a belt of straggling ash*~~

~~*and hawthorn winding irregularly through blue-bell depths and briery hollows from the pathway below to the crest*~~

~~*of the hill above, while immediately around rise the*~~

~~*Welcombe Hills, from the top of which is obtained the*~~

~~*finest local view of Stratford and the adjacent country. Looking south-west and facing the central line of the town, you see below you, above the mass of roofs, the square tower of the guild chapel, the graceful spire of the more distant church, the sweep of the winding river, and beyond the river the undulating valley of the Red Horse shut in by the blue range of the Cotswold Hills. A couple of miles to the east of the Welcombe Hills is the village of Snitterfield, where Shakespeare's grandfather, Richard Shakespeare, lived and cultivated to the end of his days the acres around his rustic dwelling. Beyond the village on its western side there is an upland reach of wilderness in the shape of a hill, covered with shrub and copsewood, and known as the Snitterfield Bushes. Here Shakespeare as a boy must have often rambled, enjoying the freedom of the unfenced downs, and enlarging his knowledge of nature's exuberant vitality. On the opposite side of the town, about a mile on the Evesham road, or rather between the Evesham and Alcester roads, lies the hamlet of Shottery, half concealed by ancestral elms and nestling amongst its homestead fruits and flowers. From one of these homesteads Shakespeare obtained his bride Anne Hathaway. A mile or two on the central road, passing out of the town through Henley Street, is the village of Bearley, and above the village another sweep of wooded upland known as Bearley Bushes. And at various more distant points between these roads the marl and sandstone heights, fringed with woods or covered with wilding growths, still bear eloquent testimony to the time when Guy of Warwick and his tutor in chivalry, Heraud of Arden, still roamed the forest in search of the wild ox and savage boar that frayed the infrequent travellers and devastated at intervals the slender cultivation of the district. The subtle*~~

~~*power of this order of scenery, arising from the union of all that is rich and careful in cultivation with all that is wild and free in natural beauty, is exactly of the kind best fitted to attract and delight imaginative and emotional minds. It possesses the peculiar charm that in character arises from the union of refined culture with the bright and exhilarating spontaneity of a free and generous nature.*~~

~~*On its moral side such secnery has an expanding illuminating Moral power which links it to the wider and deeper interests of humanity influ-asa whole. Nature seems to put forth her vital energics expressly ences of for the relief of man's estate, appearing as his friend and helper scenery and consoler. Instead of being absorbed in her own inaccessible grandeurs and solitary sublimities, she exerts her benign influcnees expressly as it were for his good, to cheer and brighten his evanescent days, and beautify his temporary home. Bolder and more rugged landscapes, gloomy glens, and thunder-scarred peaks may excite more passionate feelings, may rouse and strengthen by reaction the individualistic elements of mind and character, and thus produce the hardy, daring type of mountaincer, the intense self-centred and defiant local patriot or hero, the chieftain and his clansmen, contra mundum. No doubt it is also true that the vaster and loftier mountain ranges have a unique power of exciting in susceptible minds the emotions of awe, wonder, and sublimity. But the very power and permanence of these mighty solitudes, the grandeur andimmobility of their measureless strength and imperial repose, dwarf by comparison all merely human interests ; and to the meditative mind swept by the spirit of such immensities the moments of our mortal life seem to melt as dew-drops into the silence of their eternal years. The feelings thus excited, being in themselves of the essence of poetry, may indeed find expression in verse and in verse of a noble kind, but the poetry will be lyrical and reflective, not dramatic, or if dramatic in form it will be lyrical in substance. As Mr Ruskin has pointed out, the overmastering effect of mountain scenery tends to absorb and preoccupy the*~~

~~*The old Welsh border.*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*mind, and thus to disturb the impartial view, the universal vision }*~~

~~*of nature and human nature asa complex whole, or rather of nature as the theatre and scene of human life, which the dramatist must preserve in order to secnre success in hig higher work. Mountain scenery is, however, not only rare and exacting in the range and intensity of feeling it excites, but locally remote in its separation from the interests and occupations of men. It is thus removed from the vital clement in which the dramatist works, if not in its higher influence antagonistic to that element. Mr Hamerton, who discusses the question on a wider basis of knowledge and experience than perhaps any living authority except Mr Ruskin, supports this view. "As a general rule," he says, "I should say there. is an antagonism between the love of mountains and the knowledge of mankind, that the lover of mountains will often be satisfied with their appearances of power and passion, their splendour and gloom, their seeming cheerfulness or melancholy, when a mind indifferent to this class of scenery might study the analogous phases of human character," Where, indeed, the influence of nature is overpowering, as in the East, wonder, —the wonder excited by mere physical vastness, power, and infinitude,—takes the place of intelligent interest in individual life and character,*~~

~~*But the dramatic poet has to deal primarily with human power and passion; and not for him therefore is the life of lonely raptures and awful delights realized by the moun- tain wanderer or the Alp-inspired bard. HIs work lies nearer the homes and ways of men, and his choicest scenery will be found in the forms of natural beauty most directly associated with their habitual activities, most completely blended with their more vivid emotional experiences, A wooded undulating country, watered by memorable streams, its ruder features relieved by the graces of cultivation, and its whole circuit rich in histori- cal remains and associations, is outside the domain of cities, the natural stage and theatre of the dramatist and story-teller. This was the kind of scenery that fascinated Scott's imagination, amidst which he fixed his chosen home, and where he sleeps his last sleep. It is a border country of grey waving hills, divided by streams renowned in song, and enriched by the monuments of the piety, splendour, and martial power of the leaders*~~

~~*whose fierce raids and patriotic conflicts filled with romantic tale and minstrelsy the whole district from the Lammermoors to the Cheviots, and from the Leader and the Tweed to the Solway Firth. In earlier times Shakespeare's own dis- trict had been virtually a border country also. The medizxval tide of intermittent but savage warfare, between the unsubdued Welsh and the Anglo-Normans under the feudal lords of the marches, ebbed and flowed across the Severn, inundating at times the whole of Powis-land, and Sweeping on to the very verge of Warwickshire, In the 12th and 13th centuries the policy of intermarriage between their own families and the Welsh princes was tried by the English monarchs, and King John, on betroth- ing his daughter Joan to the Welsh prince Llewelyn, gave the manor of Bidford, six miles from Stratford-on-Avon, as part of her dower. The fact of this English princess being thus identified with South Warwickshire may help to explain the prevalence of the name Joan in the county,*~~

~~*power of hardy marchmen to its banner. And that the insurgent Welsh were not idle during the interval between these civil conflicts we have the emphatic testimony of Glendower :—*~~

~~*"Three times hath Henry Bolingbrooke made head*~~

~~*Against my power : thrice from the banks of Wye*~~

~~*And sedgy-bottomed Severn have I sent him*~~

~~*Bootless home, and weather-beaten back." The Hotspur and Mortimer revolt against Henry IV. well illustrates, indeed, the kind of support which English disaffection found for centuries in the Welsh marches, A rich heritage of stirring border life and heroic martial story was thus transmitted from the stormy ages of faith and feudalism to the more settled Tudor times. Apart from the border warfare there were also the multiplied associations connected with the struggles between the nobles and the crown, and the rise of the Commons as a distinctive power in the country. The whole local record of great names and signal deeds was in Shakespeare's day so far withdrawn into the past and mellowed by secular*~~

~~*distance as to be capable of exerting its full enchantment over the feelings and the imagination. The historical associations thus connected with the hills and streams, the abbeys and castles, of Warwickshire added elements of striking moral interest to the natural beauty of the scenery. To the penetrating imagination of poetic natures these elements reflected the continuity of national life as well as the greatness and splendour of the per- sonalities and achievements by which it was developed from age toage. They also helped to kindle within them a genuine enthusiasm for the fortunes and the fame of their native land. And scenery beautiful in itself acquired a tenfold charm from the power it thus possessed of bring- ing vividly before the mind the wide and moving panorama of the heroic past. The facts sufficiently prove that Scenery endowed with this multiplied charm takes, if a calmer, still a deeper and firmer hold of the affections than any isolated and remote natural features, however beautiful and sublime, have power to do. This general truth is illustrated with even exceptional force in the lives of Scott and Shakespeare. Both were passionately attached to their native district, and the memorable scenes amidst which their early years were passed. So intense was Scott's feeling that he told Washington Irving that if he did not see the grey hills and the heather once a year he thought he should die. And one of the few traditions preserved of Shakespeare is that even in the most active period of his London career he always visited Stratford at least once every year. We know indeed from other sources that during his absence Shakespeare continued to take the liveliest interest in the affairs of his native place, and that, although London was for some years his profes- sional residence, he never ceased to regard Stratford as his home.*~~

~~*Amongst other illustrations of this strong feeling of Feeling local attachment that might be given there is one that . ae has recently excited a good deal of attention and is worth 2ttach-*~~

~~*but the early impulse towards the giving of this royal name would no doubt be strengthened by the knowledge that*~~

~~*John of Gaunt's daughter, the mother of the great earl a*~~

~~*of Warwick, had also borne the favourite local name, Shakespeare himself it will be remembered had two sisters of this name, the elder Joan,*~~

~~*born some time before him, the firstborn of the family indeed, who died in infancy, and the younger Joan, who survived him. But the local popularity of a name, familiarly associated with the kitchen and the scullery rather than with the court or the palace, is no doubt due to one of the more striking incidents of the long conflict between the English and the Welsh on the western border. As we have seen, during the Barons' War and the Wars of the Roses the western border was the scene of active conflict, each party seeking Welsh support, and each being able in turn to rally a*~~

~~*noticing in some detail. Mr Hallam, in a well-known passage, has stated that 'no letter of Shakespeare's writ- ing, no record of his conversation, has been preserved," But we certainly have at least one conversation reported at first hand, and it turns directly on the point in question. It relates to a proposal made in 1614 by some of the local proprietors for the enclosure of certain common lands at Welcombe and Old Stratford. The corporation of Strat- ford strongly opposed the project on the ground that it would be a hardship to the poorer members of the com- munity, and their clerk Mr Thomas Greene, who was related to Shakespeare, was in London about the business in November of the same year. Under date November*~~

~~*17th Greene says, in notes which still exist, 'My cosen Shakespear comyng yesterdy to town, I went to see him how he did. He told me that they assured him they ment to inclose no further than to Gospell Bush, and so upp straight (leavyng out part of the Dyngles to the ffield) to the gate in Clopton hedg, and take in Salis- buryes peece ; and that they mean in Aprill to survey the land, and then to gyve satisfaction, and not before; and he and Mr Hall say they think ther will be nothyng done at all." This proves that the agents of the scheme had seen Shakespeare on the subject, that he had gone care- fully into the details of their plan, consulted his son-in- law Dr John Hall about them, and arrived at the conclu- sion that for the present they need take no decided action in the matter. There is evidently on Shakespeare's part a strong feeling against the proposed enclosure, and the agents of the scheme had clearly done their best to*~~

~~*remove his objections, promising amongst other things that if it went forward he should suffer no pecuniary loss, a pro- mise already confirmed by a legal instrument. But nine months later, when the local proprietors seemed bent on pushing the scheme, Shakespeare takes a more decided stand, and pronounces strongly against the whole business. We have a notice, dated September 1, 1615, to the effect that Mr Shakespeare had on that day told the agent of the corporation "that he was not able to bear the enclosing of Welcombe." As his proprietary rights and pecuniary interests were not to be affected by the pro- posed enclosure, this strong expression of feeling must refer to the public advantages of the Welcombe common fields, and especially to what in Scotland would be called their "amenity," the element of value arising from their freedom and beauty, their local history and associations. Welcombe, as we have seen, was the most picturesque suburb of Stratford. The hills divided by the leafy Dingles afforded the finest panoramic view of the whole neighbourhood. On their eastern slope they led to Ful- broke Park, the probable scene of the deer-stealing adven- ture, and towards the north-west to the village of Snitter- field with its wooded sweep of upland "bushes." Every acre of the ground was associated with the happiest days of Shakespeare's youth. In his boyish holidays he had repeatedly crossed and recrossed the unfenced fields at the foot of the Welcombe Hills on his ways to the rustic scenes and occupations of his uncle Henry's farm in the outlying forest village. He knew by heart every boundary tree and stone and bank, every pond and sheep-pool, every barn and cattle-shed, throughout the whole well- frequented circuit. And in his later years, when after the turmoil and excitement of his London life he came to reside at Stratford, and could visit at leisure the scenes of his youth, it was perfectly natural that he should shrink*~~

~~*from the prospect of having these scenes partially destroyed.*~~

~~*and their associations broken up by the rash hand of needless innovation. In his own emphatic language, "he could not bear the enclosing of Welcombe," and the only authoritative fragment of his conversation preserved to us thus brings vividly out one of the best known and most distinctive features of his personal character and history—his deep and life-long attachment to his native place. Another illustration of the same*~~

~~*feeling, common both to Scott and Shakespeare, is supplied by the prudence and foresight they both displayed in husbanding their early gains in order to provide, amidst the scenery they loved, a permanent home for themselves and their families. Shakespeare, the more careful and sharp-sighted of the two, ran no such risks and experienced no such reverses of fortune as those which saddened Scott's later days. Both, however, spent the last years of their lives in the home which their energy and affection had provided, and both*~~

~~*SBHARE SPEARS*~~

~~*sleep their last sleep under the changing skies and amidst the fields and streams that gave light and music to their earliest years. Hence, of all great authors, they are the two most habitually thought of in connexion with their native haunts and homesteads. Even to his contempo- raries Shakespeare was known as the Swan of Avon. The two spots on British ground most completely identified with the noblest energies of genius, consecrated by life- long associations, and hallowed by sacred dust are the banks of the Tweed from Abbotsford to Dryburgh Abbey, and the sweep of the Avon from Charlecote Park to Strat- ford church. To all lovers of literature, to all whose spirits have been touched to finer issues by its regenerating influence, these spots, and above all the abbey grave and the chancel tomb, are holy ground,— national shrines visited by pilgrims from every land, who breathe with pride and gratitude and affection the household names of Shakespeare and of Scott.*~~

~~*The name Shakespeare is found in the Midland counties Shake- two centuries before the birth of the poet, scattered so speare*~~

~~*widely that it is not easy at first sight to fix the locality of its rise or trace the lines of its progress. Several facts, however, would seem to indicate that those who first bore it entered Warwickshire from the north and west, and may therefore have migrated in early times from the neighbour- ing marches. The name itself is of course thoroughly English, and it is given by Camden and Verstegan as an illustration of the way in which surnames were fabricated when first introduced into England in the 13th century. But it is by no means improbable that some hardy borderers who had fought successfully in the English ranks may have received or*~~

~~assumed a significant and sounding designation that would help to perpetuate the memory of their martial prowess. We have indeed a distinct and authoritative assertion that some of Shake- speare's ancestors had served their country in this way. However this may be, families bearing the name are found during the 15th and 16th centuries in the Arden district, especially at Wroxhall and Rowington,—some being connected with the priory of Wroxhall, while during the 15th century the names of more than twenty are enumerated as belonging to the guild of St Ann, at Knoll near Rowington. In the roll of this guild or college are also found the representatives of some of the best families in the county, such as the Ferrerses of Tamworth and the Clintons of Coleshill. Among the members of the guild the poet's ancestors are to be looked for, and it is not improbable, as Mr French suggests, that John and Joan Shakespeare, entered on the Knoll register in 1527, may have been the parents of Richard Shakespeare of Snitterfield, whose sons gave each to his children the favourite family names. Richard Shakespeare, the poet's grandfather, occupied a substantial dwelling and culti- vated a forest farm at Snitterfield, between 3 and 4 miles from Stratford. He was the tenant of Robert Arden of Wilmcote, "a gentleman of worship," who farmed his own estate, situated a few miles to the west of Snitterfield. Richard Shakespeare was settled at the latter hamlet and doing well as early as 1543, Thomas Atwood of Stratford having in that year bequeathed to him four oxen which were then in his keeping; and he continued to reside there certainly till 1560, and probably till his death. He appears to have had two sons, John and Henry, of whom John, the eldest, early broke through the contracted circle of rustic life at Snitterfield, made his way to Stratford, and established himself as a trader in one of the leading thoroughfares of the town. This movement to the town probably took place in 1551, as in 1552 John Shakespeare is described in an official document as residing in Henley Street, where the poet was subsequently born. As to the~~

~~The poet's father.~~

~~Early pro- Sperity,~~

~~SBHAKESPEARE~~

~~*precise nature of his occupation, the kind of wares in which he principally dealt, there are various and conflict- ing statements that have given rise to a good deal of dis- cussion. The carliest official statement on the subject occurs in the register of the bailiff's court for the year 1556. He is there described as a " glover," which, according to the verbal usage of the time, included deal- ing in skins, as well as in the various leather-made articles of farming gear, such as rough gauntlets and leggings for hedging and ditching, white leather gloves for chopping wood, and the like. But in addition to the trade of glover and fell-monger tradition assigns to John Shakespeare the functions of butcher, wool-stapler, corn-dealer, and timber-merchant. These occupations are not incompatible, and together they represent the main lines some of which at least a young farmer going into the town for trading purposes would be likely to pursue. He would naturally deal with the things he knew most about, such as corn, wool, timber, skins, and leather-made articles used in farm work—in a word, he would deal in farm conveniences and farm products. In a town that was the centre and chief market of an agricultural and grazing district, and as the member of a family whose wide connexions were nearly all engaged in farming operations, his prospects were certainly rather favourable than otherwise. And he soon began to turn his country connexion to account. There is distinct evidence that he early dealt in corn and wood as well as gloves and leather, for in 1556 he sues a neighbour for eighteen quarters of barley, and a few years later is paid three shillings by the corporation for a load of timber.*~~

~~*The poet's father was evidently a man of energy, ambition, and public spirit, with the knowledge and ability requisite for pushing his fortune with fair success in his new career. His youthful vigour and intelligence soon told in his favour, and in a short time we find him taking an active part in public affairs. He made way so rapidly indeed amongst his fellow-townsmen, that within five years after entering Stratford he is recognized asa fitting recipient of municipal honours ; and his official appointments steadily rise in dignity and value through the various gradations of leet-juror, ale-taster, constable, affeeror, burgess, chamberlain, and alderman, until in 1568 he gains the most distinguished post of official dignity, that of high-bailiff or mayor of the town. Within twenty years after starting in business in Henley Street he thus rises to the highest place in the*~~

~~direction of municipal affairs, presiding as their head over the deliberations of his fellow aldermen and burgesses, and as chief magistrate over the local court of record. Three years later, in 1571, he was again elected as chief alderman. There is ample evidence, too, that during these years he advanced in material prosperity as well as in municipal dignities and honours. As early as 1556 he had means at his command which enabled him to purchase two houses in the town, one in Henley Street with a considerable garden, and another in Greenhill Street with a garden and croft attached to it. In the following year he married an heiress of gentle birth, Mary Arden of the Asbies, who had recently inherited under her father's will a substantial sum of ready money, an estate at Wilmcote, consisting of nearly 60 acres of land with two or three houses, and a reversionary interest in houses and lands at Snitterfield, including the farm tenanted by Richard Shakespeare, her husband's father. Being now a landed proprietor and a man of rising position and influence, John Shakespeare would be able to extend his business operations, and it is clear that he did so, though whether always with due prudence and foresight may be fairly questioned. To a man of his sanguine and somewhat impetuous temper the sudden increase of wealth was~~

~~probably by no means an unmixed good. But for some years, at all events, he was able to maintain his more Prosperous state, and his new ventures appear for a time to have turned out well. He is designated in official documents as yeoman, freeholder, and gentleman, and has the epithet "master" prefixed to his name; this, being equivalent to esquire, was rarely used except in relation to men of means and station, possessing landed property of their own. In a note to another official document it is stated that about the time of his becoming chief magis- trate of Stratford John Shakespeare had "lands and tene- ments of good worth and substance" estimated in value at £500, and though there may be some exaggeration in this estimate his property from various sources must have been worth nearly that sum. And in 1575 he increased the total amount by purchasing two houses in Henley Street, the two that still remain identified with the name and are consecrated by tradition as the~~

~~*birthplace of the poet. But this was his last purchase, the tide of his hitherto pro- sperous fortunes being but too clearly already on the turn. Having passed the highest point of social and commercial success, he was now facing the downward slope, and the descent once begun was for some years continuous, and at times alarmingly and almost inscrutably rapid.*~~

~~*It seems clear indeed from the facts of the case that, notwith- Reverse of and early fortune.*~~

~~*standing John Shakespeare's intelligence, activity, success, there was some defect of character which introduced an element of instability into his career, and in the end very much neutralized the working of his nobler powers. Faintly discernible perhaps from the first, and overpowered only for a time by the aecess of prosperity that followed his fortunate marriage, this vital flaw ultimately produced its natural fruit in the serious embazrass- ments that clouded his later years. The precise nature of the defeet can only be indicated in general terms, but it seems to have consisted very much in a want of measure and balance, of adequate eare and foresight, in his business dealings and calcula- tions. He seems to have possessed the eager sanguine tempera- ment which, absorbed in the immediate object of pursuit, overlooks difficulties and neglects the wider considerations on which lasting success depends. Even in his early years at Stratford there are signs of this ardent, impatient, somewhat unhecdful temper. He is not only active and pushing, but too restless and excitable to pay proper attention to necessary details, or discharge with punctuality the minor duties of his position. The first recorded fact in his local history illustrates this feature of his character. In April 1552 John Shakespeare is fined twelve pence, equal to between eight and ten shillings of our English money now, for not remoy- ing the heap of household dirt and refuse that had accumulated in front of hisowndoor. Anotherillustration of his want of thorough method and system in the management of his affairs is supplied by the fact that in the years 1556-57 he allowed himself to be sued in the bailiff's court for comparatively smalldebts. This could not have arisen from any want of means, as during the same period, in October 1556, he made the purchase already referred to of two houses with extensive gardens. The actions for debt nmst there- fore have been the result of negligence or temper on John Shakespeare's part, and cither*~~

~~alternative tells almost equally against his habits of business coolness and regularity. Another illustration of his restless, ill-considered, and unbalanced energy may be found in the number and variety of occupations which he seems to have added to his early trade of glover and leather-dealer.~~

~~-As his prospeets improved he appears to have seized on fresh~~

~~branches of business, until he had included within his grasp the whole circle of agricultural products that could in any way be brought to market. It would seem also that he added farming, to a not inconsiderable extent, to his expanding retail business in Stratford. But it is equally clear that he lacked the orderly method, the comprehensive outlook, and the vigilant care for details essential for holding well in hand the threads of so coni- plicated a commercial web. Other disturbing forces may probably be discovered in the pride and ambition, the love of social excite- ment and display, which appear to be among the ground notes of John Shakespeare's character so far as it is revealed to us in the few facts of his history. HIs strong social feeling and love of pleasurable excitement are illustrated by the fact that during the year of his mayoralty he brought companies of players into the town, and inaugurated dramatic performances in the guild hall. It is during the year of his filling the post of high-bailiff that we first hear of stage plays at Stratford, and the players must have visited the town, if not, as is most likely, at the invitation and desire of the poet's father, at least with his sanction and support.~~

~~XXI. — 94~~

~~Moral effects.~~

~~746~~

~~In such cases the players could not act at all without the per- mission of the mayor and council, and their first performance was usually a free entertainment, patronized and paid for by the eorpora- tion, and called the mayor's play. In all this John Shakespeare took the initiative, and in so doing probably helped to decide the future career of his son. The notes~~

~~*of personal pride and social ambition are equally apparent. It is on record, for example, that soon after reaching the highest post of municipal distinction the poet's father applied to the heralds' college for a grant of arms. This application was not at the time successful, but it seems to have been so far seriously entertained that official inquiries were made into the family history and social standing of the Shake- spearcs. But the remarkable fact is that such an application should have been made at all by a Stratford burgess whose position and prospects were so unstable and precarious as the events of the next few years showed those of John Shakespeare to be. At the time of the application his increasing family must have enlarged his household expenses, while his official position, combined with his open and generous nature, his love of social sympathy, distinc- tion, and support, would probably have led him into habits of free- handed hospitality and inconsiderate expenditure. All this must have helped to introduce a scale of lavish domestic outlay that would tend directly to hasten the financial collapse in his affairs that speedily followed. And oun finding things going against him John Shakespeare was just the man to discount his available resources,-auld, as the pressure increased, mortgage his future and adopt any possible expedient for maintaining the increased port and social consequence he had imprudently assumed.*~~

~~*This seems to have been the course actually pursued when pecu- niary difficulties arose. During the three years that elapsed after his last purchase of house property his affairs became so seriously embar- rassed that it was found necessary, if not to sacrifice, at least to jeo- pardize the most cherished future of the family in order to meet the exigencies of the moment. In 1578 John and Mary Shakespeare mortgaged for forty pounds their most considerable piece of landed property, the estate of the Asbies. The mortgagee was a family connexion of their own, Edmund Lambert, who had married Mary Shakespcare's sister Joan. The subsequent history of this transac- tion shows how bitter must have been the need that induced the Shakespeares to surrender, even for a time, their full control over the ancestral estate. The next year, however, the pressure, instead of being relieved by the sacrifice, had become still more urgent, and the only outlying property that remained to meet it was the reversionary interest in the Snitterfield estate. Under a family settlement*~~

~~*Mary Shakespeare, on the death of her stepmother, would come into the possession of houses and land at Snitterfield almost equal in value to the Asbies estate. But in 1579 the Shakespeares found it necessary to dispose altogether of this reversionary interest. In that year it was sold to Robert Webb for the sum of forty pounds. The buyer was a nephew of Mary Shakespeare, being the son of Alexander Webb, who had married her sister Margaret. In thus applying to relatives or family con- nexions in their need, and disposing of their property to them, the Shakespeares may have hoped it would be more easily regained should times of prosperity return. The sacrifice of the remaining interests in the Snitterfield property afforded, however, only a temporary relief, quite insufficient to remove the accumulating burden of debt and difficulty which now weighed the Shakespeares down. The notes of the proceedings of the Stratford corporation and of the local court of record sufficiently show that John Shake- speare's adverse fortune continued through a series of years, and they also enable us in part to understand how he bore himself under the changes in his social position that followed. These changes begin in the critical year 1578. In January of that year, when his brother aldermen were called upon to pay a considerable sum each as a contribution to the military equipment to be provided by the town, John Shakespeare is so far relieved that only one half the amount is required from him. Later in the year we find him wholly exempted from the weekly tax paid by his fellow-aldermen for the relief of the poor. In the spring of the follow- ing year, on a further tax for military purposes being laid on the town, he is unable to contribute anything, and is accordingly reported as a defaulter. A few years later, in an action for a debt, a verdict is recorded against him, with the official report that he had no goods on which distraint could be made. About the same time he appears to have been under some restraint, if not actually imprisoned for debt. And as late as 1592 it is officially stated, as a result of an inquiry into the number who fail to attend the church service once a month according to the statutory require- ment, that John Shakespeare with some others, two of whom, curiously enough, are named Fluellen and Bardolph, "come not to church for fear of process for debt." In the year 1586 another alderman had at length been chosen in his place, the reason given being expressly because " John Shakespeare doth not come to the halles when they are warned, nor hath not done for a long time."*~~

~~*From this brief official record it would seem that under his reverse of fortune he was treated with marked sympathy and consideration*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*by his fellow townsmen. For at least seven years after his troubles first began his fellow-burgesses persist in keeping his name in its place of honour on their roll, partly no doubt as a mark of respect for his character and past services, and partly it may be in the hope that his fortunes might improve and prosperous days return. And, when at length he is superseded by the appoint- ment of another in his place, this is done, not on the ground of his reduced circumstances, but simply because he voluntarily absents himself from the council, never attends its meetings or takes any part in its affairs. This is a noteworthy fact illustrating still further John Shakespeare's character. The statement clearly indicates the kind of moral eollapse that had followed the con- tinuous pressure of material reverses. The eager sanguine nature that had so genially expanded in prosperity was, it is clear, sorely chilled and depressed by adversity. He abandons the usual places of resort, withdraws himself from the meetings of the corporation, and ceases to associate with his fellow-burgesses, And, what is perhaps still more noticeable, he gives up attending church, and no longer even worships with his fellow-townsmen. All this is the more significant because his circumstances, though seriously embarrassed, and for some years mueh reduced, were never so desperate as to compel him to part with his freehold property in Henley Street. In the darkest hours of his clouded fortune he still retained the now world-famous houses associated with the poet's birth and early years. There was no adequate reason therc- fore why John Shakespeare should have so completely forsaken the usual haunts and regular assemblies of his fellow-townsmen and friends. But it seems clear, as already intimated, that, while gifted with a good deal of native energy and intelligence, and possessing a temper that was proud, sensitive, and even passionate, John Shakespeare laeked the kind of fortitude and moral courage which enables men to meet serious reverses of fortune with dignity and reserve, if not with cheerfulness and hope. With the instinct of a wounded animal he seems to have left the prosperous herd and retired apart to bear his pain and loss in solitude and alone. Nor apparently did he hold up his*~~

~~*head again until the efficient support of his prosperous son enabled him to take active measures for the recovery of his alienated estate and lost position in the town. By the middle of the last decade of the 16th century the poet's success in his profession was thoroughly assured, and he was on the high road to wealth and fame. As actor, dramatist, and probably also as sharer in the Blackfriars theatre, he was in the receipt of a large income, and according to tradition received a considerable sum from the young earl of Southampton, to whom his poems were dedicated. The son was now therefore as able as he had always been willing to help his father to regain the position of comfort and dignity he had formerly occupied. We find accord- ingly that in 1597 John and Mary Shakespeare filed a bill in Chancery against John Lambert for the recovery of the Asbies estate, which had been mortgaged to his father nearly twenty years before. There had indeed been some movement in the matter ten years earlier, on the death of Edward Lambert the mortgagee. His son John being apparently anxious to settle the dispute, it was proposed that he should pay an additional sum of twenty pounds in order to convert the mortgage into a sale, and that he should then receive from the Shakespeares an absolute title to the estate. The arrangement was not, however, carried out, and in 1589 John Shakespeare brought a bill of complaint against Lambert in the Court of Queen's Bench. Nothing further, how- ever, seems to have been done, probably because Lambert may have felt that in the low state of the Shakespeares' fortune the action could not be pressed. In 1597, however, there was a change in the relative position of the litigants, John Shakespeare having now the purse of his son at his command, and a bill in Chancery was accordingly filed against John Lambert. The plea in support of the Shakespeares' claim was that the original con- ditions of the mortgage had been fulfilled, the money in discharge having been offered to Edward Lambert at the proper date, but refused by him on the ground that other sums were owing which must also be repaid at tho same time. To this plea John Lambert replied, and there is a still further "replication" on the part of the Shakespeares. How the matter was eventually decided is not known, no decree of the court in the case having been discovered. But the probabilities arc that it was settled out of court, and, as the estate did not return to the Shakespeares, probably on the basis of the proposal already made,—that of the payment of an additional sum by John Lambert. About the same date, or rather*~~

~~*earlier, in 1596, John Shakespeare also renewed his application to the heralds' college for a grant of arms, and this time with success. The grant was made on the ground that the history and position of the Shakespeare and Arden families fully entitled the applicant to receive coat armour. There can be no doubt that the means required for supporting these applications were supplied by the poet, and he would be well rewarded by the knowledge that in the evening of his days his father had at length realized the desire of his heart, being officially recognized as a "gentleman of worship." And, what would now perhaps please his father still better, he*~~

~~*The poet's mother.*~~

~~*Family of Alwin, an early representative of the family, and himself*~~

~~*Arden,*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE 747*~~

~~*would be able to hand on the distinction to his son, whose pro- fession prevented him at the time from gaining it on his own account. John Shakespeare died in 1601, having through the affectionate care of his son spent the last years of his life in the ease and comfort befitting one who had not only been a prosperous burgess, but chief alderman and mayor of Stratford.*~~

~~*Of Mary Arden, the poet's mother, we know little, hardly anything directly indeed ; but the little known is wholly in her favour. From the provisions of her father's will it is clear that of his seven daughters she was his favour- ite; and the links of evidence are now complete connecting her father Robert Arden with the great Warwickshire family of Arden, whose members had more than once filled the posts of high-sheriff and lord-lieutenant of the county. She was thus descended from an old county family, the oldest in Warwickshire, and had inherited the traditions of gentle birth and good breeding. Her ancestors are traced back, not only to Norman, but to Anglo-Saxon times,*~~

~~*nate a landed proprietor who farmed one of his own estates, The fact of his being spoken of in official documents as a husbandman does not therefore in the least affect Robert Arden's social position, or his relation to the great house of Arden, which is now established on the clearest evidence. He was, however, a younger member of the house, and would naturally share in the diminished fortune and obscurer career of such a position. But, even as a cadet of so old and distinguished a family, he would tenaciously preserve the generous traditions of birth and breeding he had inherited, Mary Arden was thus a gentlewoman in the truest sense of the term, and she would bring into her husband's household elements of character and culture that would be of priceless value to the family, and espe- cially to the eldest son, who naturally had the first place in her care and love. A good mother is to an imagina- tive boy his earliest ideal of womanhood, and in her for him are gathered up, in all their vital fulness, the ten- derness, sympathy, and truth, the infinite love, patient watchfulness, and self-abnegation of the whole sex. And the experience of his mother's bearing and example during the vicissitudes of their home life must have been for the future dramatist a vivid revelation of the more sprightly and gracious, as well as of the profounder elements, of female character. In the earlier and prosperous days at Stratford, when all within the home circle was bright and happy, and in her intercourse with her boy Mary Shake- speare could freely unfold the attractive qualities that had so endeared her to her father's heart, the delightful image of the young mother would melt unconsciously into the boy's mind, fill his imagination, and become a storehouse whence in after years he would draw some of the finest lines in his matchless portraiture of women. In the darker days that followed he would learn something of the vast possibilities of suffering, personal and sympathetic, be- longing to a deep and sensitive nature, and as the troubles made head he would gain some insight into the quiet courage and self-possession, the unwearied fortitude, sweet- ness, and dignity which such a nature reveals when stirred to its depths by adversity, and rallying all its resources to meet the inevitable storms of fate. These storms were not simply the ever-deepening pecuniary embarrassments and consequent loss of social position. In the very crisis of the troubles, in the spring of 1579, death entered the straitened household, carrying off Ann, the younger of the*~~

~~*connected with the royal house of Athelstane, having been vice-comes or sheriff of Warwickshire in the time of Edward the Confessor. His son Turchill retained his extensive possessions under the Conqueror ; and, when they were divided on the marriage of his daughter Margaret to a Norman noble created by William Rufus earl of Warwick, Turchill betook himself to his numerous lordships in the Arden district of the county, and assumed the name of De Ardern or Arden. His descendants, who retained the name, multiplied in the shire, and were united in marriage from time to time with the best Norman blood of the kingdom. The family of Arden thus represented the union, under somewhat rare conditions of original distinction and equality, of the two great race elements that have gone to the making of the typical modern Englishman. The immediate ancestors of Mary Shakespeare were the Ardens of Parkhall, near Aston in the north-western part of the shire. During the Wars of the Roses Robert Arden of Parkhall, being at the outset of the quarrel a devoted Yorkist, was seized by the Lancastrians, attached for high treason, and executed at Ludlowin 1452. He left an only son, Walter Arden, who was restored by Edward IV. to his position in the country, and received back his hereditary lordships and lands. At his death in 1502 he was buried with great state in Aston church, where three separate monuments were erected to his memory. He had married Eleanor, second daughter of John Hampden of Bucks, and by her had eight children, six sons and two daughters. | only two remaining daughters of John and Mary Shake- The eldest son, Sir John Arden of Parkhall, having been | speare. A characteristic trait of the father's grief and for some years esquire of the body of Henry VII., was | pride is afforded by the entry in the church books that a knighted and rewarded by that monarch. Sir John was somewhat excessive sum was paid on this occasion for the the great-uncle of Mary Shakespeare,—his brother Thomas, | tolling of the bell. Even with ruin staring him in the the second son of Walter Arden, being her grandfather. | face John Shakespeare would forego no point of customary Thomas Arden is found residing at Aston Cantlowe during respect nor abate one jot of the ceremonial usage proper the first half of the 16th century, and in the year 1501 he | to the family of an eminent burgess, although the observ- united with his son Robert Arden, Mary Shakespeare's | ance might involve a very needless outlay. In passing father, in the purchase of the Snitterfield estate. Mary | through these chequered domestic scenes and vividly*~~

~~*Shakespeare was thus directly connected by birth and realizing the alternations of grief and hope, the eldest son, lineage with those who had taken, and were to take, a | even in his early years, would gain a fund of memorable foremost part in the great conflicts which constitute turning- | experiences. From his native sensibility and strong points in the history of the country. On her father's side | family affection he would passionately sympathize with she was related to Robert Arden, who in the 15th century | his parents in their apparently hopeless struggle against lost his life while engaged in rallying local forces on behalf | the slings and arrows of outrageous fortune. Above all of the White Rose, and on her mother's side to John | he would cherish the memory of his mother's noble bear- Hampden, who took a still more distinguished part in the | ing alike under serene and clouded skies, and learn to momentous civil struggles of the 17th century. estimate at their true worth the refined strength of*~~

~~*A very needless and abortive attempt has been made to | inherited courage, the dignified grace and silent helpful- call in question Robert Arden's social and family position | ness of inherited courtesy and genuine kindness of heart. on the ground that in a contemporary deed he is called a | These recollections were vitalized in the sprightly intelli- husbandman (agricola), — the assumption being that a| gence, quick sympathy, and loving truthfulness belonging husbandman is simply a farm-labourer. But the term | to the female characters of his early comedies, as well as husbandman was often used in Shakespeare's day to desig- | in the profounder notes of womanly grief and suffering,*~~

~~*Mary Arden — character*~~

~~*influence.*~~

~~*748 PHAKRESYP EAE DT*~~

~~*struck with so sure a hand and with such depth and intensity of tone, in the early tragedies. Qualities But in addition to her constant influence and example the inherited noet was probably indebted to his mother for certain ele- en ments of his own mind and character directly inherited from ' her. This position may be maintained without accepting the vague and comparatively empty dictum that Shakespeare derived his genius*~~

~~*from his mother, as many eminent men are loosely said to have done. The sacred gift of genius has ever been, and perhaps always will be, inexplicable. No analysis, however complete, of the forces acting on the individual mind can avail to extract this vital secret. The elements of race, country, parentage, and education, though all powerful factors in its development, fail ade- quately to account for the mystery involved in pre-eminent poetical genius. Like the unseen wind from heaven it bloweth where it listeth, and the inspired voice is gladly heard of men, but none can tell whence it cometh or whither it goeth. While, however, genius is thus without ancestry or lineage, there are elements of character and qualities of mind that, like the features of the countenance and the lines of the bodily frame, appear to be clearly transmissible from parent to child. Shakespeare not unfrequently recognizes this general truth, especially in relation to moral qualities; and it is mainly qualities of this kind that he himself appears to have inherited from his gently born and nurtured mother, Mary Arden of the Asbies. At least it is hardly fanciful to say that in the life and character of the poet we may trace ele- ments of higher feeling and conduct derived from the hereditary culture and courtesy, the social insight and refinement, of the Ardens. Amongst such elements may be reckoned his strong sense of independence and self-respect, his delicate feeling of honour, his habitual con- sideration for others, and, above all perhaps, his deep instinctive regard for all family interests and relationships, for everything indeed connected with family character and position. The two epithets which those who knew Shakespeare personally most habitually applied to him appear to embody some of these characteristics. They unite in describing him as "gentle" and "honest" in character, and of an open and free, a frank and generous disposition. The epithet "gentle" may be taken to repre- sent the innate courtesy, the delicate consideration for the feelings of others, which belongs in a marked degree to the best representatives of gentle birth, although happily it is by no means confined to them. The second epithet, "honest," which in the usage of the time meant honourable, may be taken to express the high spirit of independence and self-respect which carefully respects the just claims and rights of others. One point of the truest gentle breeding, which, if not inherited from his mother, must have been derived from her teaching and example, is the cardinal maxim, which Shakespeare seems to have faith- fully observed, as to nice exactness in*~~

~~*money matters—the maxim not lightly to incur pecuniary obligations, and if incurred to meet them with scrupulous precision and punctuality. This he could not have learnt from his father, who, though an honest man enough, was too eager and careless to be very particular on the point. Indeed, carelessness in money matters seems rather to have belonged to the Snitterfield family, the poet's uncle Henry having been often in the courts for debt, and, as we have seen, this was true of his father also. But, while his father was often prosecuted for debt, no trace of any such action against the poet himself, for any amount however small, has been discovered. He sued others for money due to him and at times for sums comparatively small, but he never appears as a debtor himself. Indeed, his whole life contradicts the supposition that he would ever*~~

~~*have rendered himself liable to such a humiliation. The family troubles must have very early developed and strengthened the high feeling of honour on this vital point he had inherited. He must obviously have taken to heart the lesson his father's imprudence could hardly fail to impress on a mind so capacious and reflective. John Shakespeare was no doubt a warm-hearted lovable man, who would carry the sympathy and affection of his family with him through all his troubles, but his eldest son, who early understood the secret springs as well as the open issues of life, must have realized vividly the rock on which their domestic prosperity had been wrecked, and before he left home he had evidently formed an invincible resolution to avoid it at all hazards. This helps to explain what has often excited surprise in relation to his future career—his business industry, financial skill, and steady progress to what may be called worldly success. Few things are more remarkable in Shakespeare's personal history than the resolute spirit of independence he seems to have displayed from the moment he left his straitened household to seek his fortunes in the world to the time when he returned to live at Stratford as a man of wealth and position in the town. While many of his fellow dramatists were spendthrifts, in constant difficulties, lead- ing disorderly lives, and sinking into unhonoured graves, he must have husbanded his early resources with a rare amount of quiet firmness and self-control. Chettle's testi- mony as to Shakespeare's character and standing during his first years in London is decisive on this head. Having published a posthumous work by Greene, in which Mar- lowe and Shakespeare were somewhat*~~

~~*sharply referred to, Chettle expressed his regret in a preface to a work of his own issued a few months later, in December 1592; he intimates that at the time of publishing Greene's Groats- worth of Wit he knew neither Marlowe nor Shakespeare, and that he does not care to become acquainted with the former. But having made Shakespeare's acquaintance in the interval he expresses his regret that he should, even as editor, have published a word to his disparage- ment, adding this remarkable testimony : " Because myself have seen his demeanour, no less civil than he excellent in the qualities he professes; besides, divers of worship have reported his uprightness of dealing, which argues his honesty, and his facetious grace in writing, which approves his art." So that Shakespeare, during his earliest and most anxious years in London, had not only kept himself out of debt and difficulty, but had estab- lished a reputation of strictly honourable conduct, " divers of worship," 2.¢., men of position and authority entitled to speak on such a point, "having reported his upright- ness of dealing, which argued his honesty." Now, consider- ing the poet's associates, occupations, and surround- ings, this is significant testimony, and conclusively proves that, although fond of social life and its enjoyments, and without a touch of harshness or severity in his temper, he yet held himself thoroughly in hand, that amidst the ocean of new experiences and desires on which he was suddenly launched he never abandoned the helm, never lost command over his course, never sacrificed the larger interests of the future to the clamorous or excessive demands of the hour. And this no doubt indicates the direction in which he was most indebted to his mother. From his father he might have derived ambitious desires, energetic impulses, and an excitable temper capable of rushing to the verge of passionate excess, but, if so, it is clear that he inherited from his mother the firmness of nerve and fibre as well as the ethical strength required for regulating these violent and explosive elements. If he received as a paternal heritage a very tempest and whirl- wind of passion, the maternal gift of temperance and*~~

~~*measure would help to give it smoothness and finish in the working, would supply in some degree at least the power of concentration and self-control indispensable for moulding the extremes of exuberant sensibility*~~

~~*and pas- sionate impulse into forms of intense and varied dramatic portraiture ; and of course all the finer and regulative elenients of character and disposition derived from the spindle side of the house would, throughout the poet's early years, be strengthened and developed by his mother's constant presence, influence, and example.*~~

~~*John and Mary Shakespeare had eight children, four sons and four daughters. Of the latter, two, the first Joan and Margaret, died in infancy, before the birth of the poet, and a third, Anne, in early childhood. In addition to the poet, three sons, Gilbert, Richard, and Edmund, and one daughter, the second Joan, lived to maturity and will be referred to again. William Shakespeare was christened in Stratford church on April 26, 1564, having most probably been born, according to tradition, on the 23d. In July of the same year the town was visited by a severe outbreak of the plague, which in the course of a few months carried off one-sixth of the inhab- itants. Fortunately, however, the family of the Shake- speares wholly escaped the contagion, their exemption being probably due to the fact that they lived in the healthiest part of the town, away from the river side, on a dry and porous soil. At the back of Henley Street, indeed, were the gravel pits of the guild, which were in frequent use for repairing the inundated pathways near the river after its periodical overflows. For two years and a half William, their first-born son, remained the only child of his parents, and all his mother's love and care would naturally be lavished upon him. A special bond would in this way be established between mother and child, and, his father's affairs being at the time in a highly prosperous state, Mary Shakespeare would see to it that the boy had all the pleasures and advantages suitable to his age, and which the family of a foremost Stratford burgess could easily command. Healthy outdoor enjoyment is not the least valuable part of a boy's education, and the chief recreations available for the future dramatist in those early years would be the sports and pastimes, the recur- ring festivals, spectacles, and festivities, of the town and neighbourhood, especially the varying round of rural occupations and the celebration in the forest farms and villages of the chief incidents of the agricultural year. Seed time and harvest, summer and winter, each brought its Own group of picturesque merry-makings, including some more important festivals that evoked a good deal of rustic pride, enthusiasm, and display. There were, during*~~

~~these years, at least three of the forest farms where the poet's parents would be always welcome, and where the~~

~~| to his parents as the proprietors and to himself as the heir of the maternal estate. At Shottery the welcome of the Shakespeares would not be less cordial or friendly, as there is evidence to show that as early as 1566 the families were known to each other, John Shakespeare having in that year rendered Richard Hathaway an im- portant personal service. Here the poet met his future bride, Anne Hathaway, in all the charm of her sunny girl- hood, and they may be said to have grown up together, except that from the difference of their ages she would reach early womanhood while he was yet a stripling. In his later youthful years he would thus be far more fre- quently at the Hathaway farm than at Snitterfield or the Asbies. There were, however, family connexions of the Shakespeares occupying farms further afield,—Hills and Webbs at Bearley and Lamberts at Barton-on-the-Heath. There was thus an exceptionally wide circle of country life open to the poet during his growing years. And in those years he must have repeatedly gone the whole picturesque round with the fresh senses and eager feeling, the observant eye and open mind, that left every detail, fron the scarlet hips by the wayside to the proud tops of the eastern pines, imprinted indelibly upon his heart and brain. Hence the apt and vivid references to the scenes and scenery of his youth, the intense and penetrating glances at the most vital aspects as well as the minutest beauties of nature, with which his dramas abound. These glances are so penetrating, the result of such intimate knowledge and enjoyment, that they often seem to reveal in a moment, and by a single touch as it were, all the loveliness and charm of the objects thus rapidly flashed on the inward eye. In relation to the scenes of his youth what fresh and delightful hours at the farms are reflected in the full summer beauty and motley humours of a sheep-shearing festival in the Winter's Tale ; In the autumn glow of the "sun-burnt sicklemen and sedge-crowned nymphs" of the masque in the Jempest; and in the vivid pictures of rural sights and sounds in spring and winter so musically rendered in the owl and cuckoo songs of Love's Labour's Lost! But, in addition to the festivities and merry-makings of the~~

~~*forest farms, it is clear that, in his early years, the poet had some experience of country sports proper, such as hunting, hawking, coursing, wild- duck shooting, and the like. Many of these sports were pursued by the local gentry and the yeomen together, and the poet, as the son of a well-connected burgess of Strat- ford, who had recently been mayor of the town and possessed estates in the county, would be well entitled to share in them, while his handsome presence and courteous bearing would be likely to ensure him a hearty welcome. If any of the stiffer local magnates looked coldly upon the high-spirited youth, or resented in any way his presence*~~

~~*boy must have spent many a happy day amidst the free- amongst them, their conduct would be likely enough to*~~

~~*Rural dom and delights of outdoor country life. At Snitterfield | provoke the kind of sportive retaliations that might sports his grandfather would be proud enough of the curly- | naturally culminate in the deer-stealing adventure. How- iy headed youngster with the fine hazel eyes, and his uncle | ever this may be, it is clear from internal evidence that rambles, Henry would be charmed at the boy's interest in all he | the poet was practically familiar with the field sports of*~~

~~*saw and heard as he trotted with him through the byres and barns, the poultry yard and steading, or, from a safe nook on the bushy margin of the pool, enjoyed the fun and excitement of sheep-washing, or later on watched the*~~

~~*his day. In the town the chief holiday spectacles and entertain- Holiday ments were those connected with the Christmas, New spectacles*~~

~~*Fj : 71 Year, and Easter festivals, the May-day rites and games, Eaton*~~

~~*mysteries of the shearing and saw the heavy fleece fall from the sides of the palpitating victim before the sure and rapid furrowing of the shears. He would no doubt also be present at the shearing feast and see the queen of the festival receive her rustic guests and distribute amongst them her floral gifts. At Wilmecote, in the solid oak- timbered dwelling of the Asbies, with its well-stocked garden and orchard, the boy would be*~~

~~received with cordial hospitality, as well as with the attention and respect due~~

~~the pageants of delight of Whitsuntide, the beating of the bounds during Rogation week, and the occasional repre- sentation of mysteries, moralities, and stage-plays. In relation to the main bent of the poet's mind, and the future development of his powers, the latter constituted probably the most important educational influence and stimulus which the social activities and public entertain- ments of the place could have supplied. Most of these recurring celebrations involved, it is true, a dramatic~~

~~May- day.~~

~~Whit- suntide,~~

~~Inter- ludes and~~

~~stage- plays.~~

~~750~~

~~element,—some hero or exploit, some emblem or allegory, being represented by means of costumed personations, pantomime, and dumb show, while in many cases songs, dances, and brief dialogues were interposed as part of a performance. There were masques and morris-dancing on May-day, as well as mummers and waits at Christmas. In a number of towns and villages the exploits of Robin Ifood and his associates were also celebrated on May-day, often amidst a picturesque confusion of floral emblems and forestry devices. In Shakespeare's time the May-day rites and games thus included a variety of elements charged with legendary, historical, and emblematical significance. But, notwithstanding this mixture of festive elements, the celebration as a whole retained its leading character and purpose. It was still the spontaneous meeting of town and country to welcome the fresh beauty of thé spring, the welcome being reflected in the open spaces of the sports by tall painted masts decked with garlands, streamers, and flowery crowns, and in the public thoroughfares by the leafy screens and arches, the~~

~~*bright diffused blossoms and fragrant spoils brought from the forest by rejoicing youths and maidens at the dawn. May-day was thus well fitted to be used, as it often is by Shakespeare, as the comprehensive symbol of all that is delightful and exhilarating in the renewed life and vernal freshness of the opening year.*~~

~~*After May-day, Whitsuntide was at Stratford perhaps the most important season of festive pageantry and scenic display. In addition to the procession of the guild and trades and the usual holiday ales and sports, it involved a distinct and somewhat noteworthy element of dramatic representation. And, as in the case of the regular stage- plays, the high-bailiff and council appear to have patron- ized and supported the performances. We find in the chamberlain's accounts entries of sums paid "for exhibit- ing a pastyme at Whitsuntide." Shakespeare himself refers to these dramatic features of the celebration, and in a manner that almost suggests he may in his youth have taken part in them. However this may be, the popular*~~

~~*celebrations of Shakespeare's youth must have supplied a*~~

~~*kind of training in the simpler forms of poetry and dramatic art, and have afforded some scope for the early exercise of his own powers in both directions. This view is indirectly confirmed by a passage in the early scenes of Lhe Return from Parnassus, where the academic speakers sneer at the poets who come up from the country without any university training. The sneer is evidently the more bitter as it implies that some of these poets had been successful,—more successful than the college-bred wits. The academic critics suggest that the nurseries of these poets were the country ale-house and the country green,—the special stimulus to their powers being the May-day celebrations, the morris-dances, the hobby-horse, and the like.*~~

~~*But the moralities, interludes, and stage-plays proper afforded the most direct and varied dramatic instruc- tion available in Shakespeare's youth. The earliest popular form of the drama was the mystery or miracle play, dealing in the main with Biblical subjects; and, Coventry being one of the chief centres for the production and exhibition of the mysteries, Shakespeare had ample opportunities of becoming well acquainted with*~~

~~them. Some of the acting companies formed from the numerous trade guilds of the "shiretown" were moreover in the habit of visiting the neighbouring cities for the purpose of exhibiting their plays and pageants. There is evidence of their having performed at Leicester and Bristol in Shakespeare's youth, and on returning from the latter city they would most probably have stopped at Stratford~~

~~and given some performances there. And in any case,~~

~~SHA KECGQPEHE ABE~~

~~Coventry being so near to Stratford, the fame of the multiplied pageants presented during the holiday weeks of Easter and Whitsuntide, and especially of the brilliant concourse that came to witness the grand series of Corpus Christi plays, would have early attracted the young poet ;~~

~~| and he must have become familiar with the precincts of~~

~~the Grey Friars at Coventry during the celebration of these great ecclesiastical festivals. The indirect evidence of this is supplied by Shakespeare's references to the well- known characters of the mysteries, such as Herod and Pilate, Cain and Judas, Termagaunt with his turbaned Turks and infidels, black-burning souls, grim and gaping hell, and the like. The moralities and interludes that gradually took the place of the Biblical mysteries were also acted by companies of strolling players over a wide area in the towns and cities of the Midland and western counties. Malone gives from an eye-witness a detailed and graphic account of the public acting of one of these companies at Gloucester in 1569, the year during which the poet's father as high-bailiff had brought the stage-players into Stratford and inaugurated a series of per- formances in the guild hall. The play acted at Gloucester was The Cradle of Security, one of the most striking and popular of the early moralities or interludes. Willis, the writer of the account, was just Shakespeare's age, having been born in 1564. As a boy of five years old he had been taken by his father to see the play, and, standing between his father's knees, watched the whole performance with such intense interest that, writing about it seventy years afterwards, he says, "the subject took such an im- pression upon me that when I came afterwards towards man's estate it was as fresh in my~~

~~*memory as if I had seen it newly enacted." In proof of this he gives a clear and detailed outline of the play. Willis was evidently a man of no special gifts, and, if the witnessing a play when a child could produce on an ordinary mind so memorable an impression, we may imagine what the effect would be on the mind of the marvellous boy who, about the same time and under like circumstances, was taken by his father to see the performances at Stratford. The com- pany that first visited Stratford being a distinguished one, their plays were probably of a higher type and better acted than The Cradle of Security at Gloucester ; and their effect on the young poet would be the more vivid and stimulating from the keener sensibilities and latent dramatic power to which in his case they appealed. These early impressions would be renewed and deepened with the boy's advancing years. During the decade of Shakespeare's active youth from 1573 to 1584 the best companies in the kingdom constantly visited Stratford, and he would thus have the advantage of seeing the finest dramas yet produced acted by the best players of the time. This would be for him a rich and fruitful experience of the flexible and impressive form of art which at a moment of exuberant national vitality was attracting to itself the scattered forces of poetic genius, and soon gained a position of unrivalled supremacy. As he watched the performance in turn of the various kinds of interlude, comedy, and pastoral, of chronicle and biographical plays, of historical, domestic, or realistic tragedy, he would gain in instructive insight into the wide scope and vast resources of the rising drama. And he would have opportunities of acquiring some knowledge of stage business, management, and effects, as well as of dramatic form. Amongst the com- panies that visited Stratford were those of the powerful local earls of Leicester, Warwick, and Worcester, whose members were largely recruited from the Midland counties. The earl of Leicester's company, the most eminent of all, included several Warwickshire men, while some of the leading members, like the elder Burbage, appear to have*~~

~~*School eduea- tion.*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*been natives of Stratford or the immediate neighbourhood. And the poet's father being, as we have seen, SO great a friend of the players, and during his most prosperous years in constant communication with them, his son would have every facility for studying their art. Curiosity and interest and the like would prompt him to find out all he could about the use of the stage "books," the distribution of the parts, the cues and exits, the management of voice and gesture, the graduated passion and controlled power of the leading actors in the play, the just subordination of the less important parts, and the measure and finish of each on which the success of the whole so largely depended. It is not improbable, too, that in connexion with some of the companies Shakespeare may have tried his hand both as poet and actor even before leaving Stratford. HIs poetical powers could hardly be unknown, and he may have written scenes and passages to fill out an imperfect or complcte a defective play; and from his known interest in their work he may have been pressed by the actors to appear in some secondary part on the stage. In any case he would be acquainted with some of the leading players in the best companies, so that when he decided to adopt their profession he might reasonably hope on going to London to find occupation amongst them without much difficulty or delay.*~~

~~*Shakespeare received the technical part or scholastic elements of his education in the grammar school of his native town. The school was an old foundation from the second half of the 15th century and connected with the guild of the HIoly Cross. But, having shared the fate of the guild at the suppression of religious houses, it was restored by Edward VI. in 1553, a few weeks before his death. The "King's New School," as it was now called, thus represented the fresh impulse given to educa- tion throughout the kingdom during the reign of HIenry VIHI.'s earnest-minded son, and well sustained under the enlightened rule of his sister, the learned virgin queen. What the course of instruction was in these country schools during the second half of the 16th century has recently been ascertained by special research,! and may be stated, at least in outline, with some degree of certainty and precision. As might have been expected, Latin was the chief scholastic drill, the thorough teaching of the Roman tongue being, as the name implies, the very purpose for which the grammar schools were originally founded. The regular teaching of Greek*~~

~~was indeed hardly introduced into the country schools until a somewhat later period. But the knowledge of Latin, as the language of all the learned professions, still largely used in literature, was regarded as quite indispensable. Whatever else might be neglected, the business of " gerund-grinding" was vigorously carried on, and the methods of teaching, the expedients and helps devised for enabling the pupils to read, write, and talk Latin, if rather complex and operose, were at the same time ingenious and effective. Asa rule the pupil entered the grammar school at seven years old, having already acquired either at home or at the petty school the rudiments of reading and writing. During the first year the pupils were occupied with the elements of Latin grammar, the accidence, and lists of common words which were committed to memory and repeated two or three times a week, as well as further impressed upon their minds by varied exercises. In the second year the grammar was fully mastered, and the boys were drilled in short phrase-books, such as the Sententizx Pueriles, to increase their familiarity with the structure and idioms of the language. In the third year the books used were sop's Lables, Cato's Maxims, and some good manual of~~

~~1 "*What Shakespeare learnt at School," Fraser's Magazine, Nov. 1879, Jan. and May, 1880.~~

~~school conversation, such as the Confabulationes Pueriles. The most popular of these manuals in Shakespeare's day was that by the eminent scholar and still more eminent teacher Corderius. HIs celebrated Colloquies were prob- ably used in almost every school in the kingdom; and Hoole, writing in 1652, says that the worth of the book had been proved " by scores if not hundreds of impressions in this and foreign countries," Bayle, indeed, says that from its universal use in the schools the editions of the book might be counted by thousands. This helps to illustrate the colloquial use of Latin, which was so essential a feature of grammar school discipline in the 16th and 17th centuries. The evidence of Brinsley, who was Shakespeare's contemporary, conclusively proves that the constant speaking of Latin by all the boys of the more advanced~~

~~*forms was indispensable even in the smallest and poorest of the country grammar schools. The same holds true of letter-writing in Latin ; and this,'as we know from the result, was diligently and successfully practised in the Stratford grammar school. During his school days, there- fore, Shakespeare would be thoroughly trained in the conversational and epistolary use of Latin, and several well- known passages in his dramas show that he did not forget this early experience, but that like everything else he acquired it turned to fruitful uses in his hands. The books read in the more advanced forms of the school were the Eclogues of Mantuanus, the Tristia and Metamorphoses of Ovid, Cicero's Offices, Orations, and Epistles, the Georgics and dined of Virgil, and in the highest form parts of Juvenal, of the comedies of Terence and Plautus, and of the tragedies of Seneca. Shakespeare, having remained at school for at least six years, must have gone through a greater part of this course, and, being a pupil of unusual quickness and ability, endowed with rare strength of mental grip and firmness of moral purpose, he must during those years have acquired a fair mastery of Latin, both colloquial and classical. After the difficulties of the grammar had been overcome, his early intellectual cravings and poetic sensibilities would be alike quickened and*~~

~~*gratified by the new world of heroic life and adventure*~~

~~*opened to him in reading such authors as Ovid and Virgil. Unless the teaching at Stratford was very exceptionally poor he must have become so far familiar with the favourite school authors, such as Ovid, Tully, and Virgil, as to read them intelligently and with comparative ease.*~~

~~*And there is no reason whatever for supposing that the instruc- tion at the Stratford grammar school was less efficient than in the grammar schools of other provincial towns of about the same size. There is abundant evidence to show that, with the fresh impulse given to education under energetic Protestant auspiees in the second half of the 16th century, the teaching cyen in the country grammar schools was as a rule painstaking, intelligent, and fruitful, Brinsley himself was for many years an eminent and successful teacher in the grammar school of Ashby-de-la-Zouche, a small town on the borders of Warwickshire, only a few miles indeed from Coventry; and in his Ludus Literarius, referring to a book of exercises on*~~

~~*the Latin accidence and grammar he had prepared, he says that he had chiefly followed the order of the questions "of that ancient schoolmaster Master Brunsword of Maxfield (Maccles- field) in Cheshire, so much commended for his order and schollers : who, of all other, commeth therein the neerest unto the marke," Another provincial schoolmaster, Mr Robert Doughty, a contem- porary of Shakespeare, who was for nearly fifty years at the head of the Wakefield grammar school, is celebrated by Hoole, not only as an eminent teacher who had constantly sent out good scholars, but as one who had produced a class of teachers emulating his own educational zeal and intelligence. The masters of the Stratford grammar school in Shakespeare's time seem to have been men of a similar stamp. One of them, John Brunsword, who held the post for three years during the poet's childhood, was almost certainly a relative, probably a son, of the eminent Macclesfield master whose character and work Brinsley praises so highly. At least, Bruns- word being an uncommon name, when we find it borne by two grammar-schoo] masters in neighbouring counties who flourished either together or in close succession to each other, it is natural to conclude that there must have been some relationship between*~~

~~*Home*~~

~~*life on leaving school.*~~

~~*Ta2*~~

~~*them, and if so we may be sure that the Stratford master, who was evidently the younger man, had been well trained and must have proved an efficient teacher. The masters who followed Brunsword were university men of at least average attainments and ability, as they rapidly gained promotion in the church. Thomas Hunt, who was head-master during the most important years of Shakespeare's school course, became incumbent of the neighbouring village of Luddington; and, if there is any truth in the tradition that the poet's marriage was celebrated there, it is not iniprobable that, from having been a favourite pupil, he may have become the personal friend of his former master. In any case, during the years of his school attendance the poet must have gained sufficient knowledge of Latin to read for his own instruc- tion and delight the*~~

~~*authors included in the school curriculum who had struck his fancy and stimulated his awakening powers. While his writings supply clear evidence in support of this general position, they also bring out vividly the fact that Ovid was a special favourite with Shakespeare at the outset of his career. The influence of this romantic and elegiac Roman poet is indeed strongly marked and clearly traceable in the poems as well as in the carly plays.*~~

~~*According to Rowe's account, Shakespeare was with- drawn from school about 1578, a year or two before he had completed the usual course for boys going into business or passing on to the universities. The immediate cause of the withdrawal seems to have been the growing embarrass- ments of John Shakespeare's affairs, the boy being wanted at home to help in the various departments of his father's business. The poet had just entered on his fifteenth year, and his school attainments and turn for affairs, no less than his native energy and ability, fitted him for efficient action in almost any fairly open career. But open careers were not numerous at Stratford, and John Shakespeare's once prosperous way of life was now hampered by actual and threatening difficulties which the zeal and affection of his son were powerless to remove or avert. No doubt the boy did his best, trying to understand his father's position, and discharging with prompt alacrity any duties that came to be done. But he would soon discover how hopeless such efforts were, and with this deepening conviction there would come upon him the reaction of weariness and disappointment, which is the true inferno of ardent youthful minds. His father's difficulties were evidently of the chronic and complicated kind against which the generous and impulsive forces of youth and inexperience are of little avail. And, after his son had done his utmost to relieve the sinking fortunes of the family, the aching sense of failure would be among the bitterest experiences of his early years, would be indeed a sharp awakening to the realities and responsibilities of life. Within the narrow circle of his own domestic relationships and dearest interests he would feel with Hamlet that the times were out of joint, and in his gloomier moods be ready to curse the destiny that seemed to lay upon him, in part at least, the burden of setting the obstinately crooked straight. As a relief from such moods and a distraction from the fruitless toils of home affairs, he would naturally plunge with keener zest into such outlets*~~

~~*for youthful energy and adventure as the town and neighbourhood afforded. What the young poet's actual occupations were during the four years and a half that elapsed between his leaving school and his marriage we have no adequate materials for deciding in any detail. But the local traditions on the subject would seem to indicate that after the adverse turn in his fortunes John Shakespeare had considerably contracted the area of his commercial transactions. Having virtually alienated his wife's patrimony by the mortgage of the Asbies and the disposal of all interest in the Snitterfield property, he seems to have given up the agricultural branches of his business, retaining only his original occupation of dealer in leather, skins, and sometimes carcases as well. His wider speculations had probably turned out ill, and having no longer any land of his own he apparently relinquished*~~

~~*the corn and timber business, restricting himself to the town trades of fellmonger, wool-stapler, and butcher. Aubrey at least had heard that Shakespeare after leaving school assisted his father in these branches,—and at times with a deal of youthful extravagance indicative of irre-pressible energy and spirit. Aubrey also reports, on the authority of Beeston, and as incidentally proving he knew Latin fairly well, that for a time the poet was a teacher in a country school; while Malone believed from the internal evidence of his writings that he had spent two or three years in a lawyer's office. These stories may be taken to indicate, what is no doubt true, that at a time of domestic need the poet was ready to turn his hand to anything that offered. It is no doubt also true that he would prefer the comparative retirement and regularity of teaching or clerk's work to the intermittent drudgery and indolence of a retail shop in a small market-town. There is, however, no direct evidence in favour of either supposi- tion; and the indirect evidence for the lawyer's office theory which has found favour with several recent critics is by no means decisive. Whether engaged in a lawyer's office or not, we may be quite sure that during the years of adolescence he was actively occupied in work of some kind or other. He was far too sensible and energetic to remain without employment; shapeless idleness had no attraction for his*~~

~~*healthy nature, and his strong family feeling is certainly in favour of the tradition that for a time he did his best to help his father in his business.*~~

~~*But, however he may have been employed, this interval of home life was for the poet a time of active growth and development, and no kind of business routine could avail to absorb his expanding powers or repress the exuberant vitality of his nature. During these critical years, to a vigorous and healthy mind such as Shakespeare possessed, action—action of an adventurous and recreative kind, in which the spirit is quickened and refreshed by new experiences—must have become an absolute necessity of existence. The necessity was all the more urgent in Shakespeare's case from the narrower circle within which the once prosperous aud expanding home life was now confined. We have seen that the poet occasionally shared the orthodox field sports organized by the country gentle- men, where landlords and tenants, yeomen and squires, animated by a kindred sentiment, meet to a certain extent on common ground. But this long-drawn pursuit of pleasure as an isolated unit in a local crowd would hardly satisfy the thirst for passionate excitement and personal adventure which is so dominant an impulse in the hey-day of youthful blood. It is doubtful, too, whether in the decline of his father's fortunes Shakespeare would have cared to join the prosperous concourse of local sportsmen. HIe would probably be thrown a good deal amongst a somewhat lower, though no doubt energetic and intelli- gent, class of town companions. And they would devise together exploits which, if somewhat irregular, possessed the inspiring charm of freedom and novelty, and would thus be congenial to an ardent nature with a passionate interest in life and action. Such a nature would eagerly welcome enterprises with a dash of hazard and daring in them, fitted to bring the more resolute virtues into play, and develop in moments of emergency the manly qualities of vigilance and promptitude, courage and endurance, dexterity and skill, It would seem indeed at first sight as though a quiet neighbourhood like Stratford could afford little scope for such adventures. But even at Stratford there were always the forest and the river, the outlying farms with adjacent parks and manor houses, the wide circle of picturesque towns and villages with their guilds and clubs, their local Shallows and Slenders, Dogberries and Verges; and in the most quiet neigh-*~~

~~*Deer- stealing tradition,*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*bourhoods it still remains true that adventures are to the adventurous. That this dictum was verified in Shake- speare's experience seems clear alike from the internal evidence of his writings and the concurrent testimony of local tradition. In its modern form the story of the Bidford challenge exploit may indeed be little better than amyth. But in substance it is by no means incredible, and if we knew all about the incident we should probably find there were other points to be tested between the rival companies besides strength of head to resist the effects of the well-known Bidford beer. The prompt re- fusal to return with his companions and renew the contest on the following day,—a decision playfully ex- pressed and emphasized in the well-known doggrel lines,— implies that in Shakespeare's view such forms of good fellowship were to be accepted on social not self-indulgent grounds, that they were not to be resorted to for the sake of the lower accessories only, or allowed to grow into evil habits from being unduly repeated or prolonged. It is clear that this general principle of recreative and adventur- ous enterprise, announced more than once in his writings, guided his own conduct even in the excitable and impulsive season of youth and early manhood. If he let himself go, as he no doubt sometimes did, it was only as a good rider on coming to the turf gives the horse his head in order to enjoy the exhilaration of a gallop, having the bridle well in hand the while, and able to rein in the excited steed at a moment's notice. It may be said of Shakespeare at such seasons, as of his own Prince Hal, that he— "Obscur'd his contemplation Under the veil of wildness ; which, uo doubt,*~~

~~*Grew like the summer grass, fastest by night, Unseen, yet crescive in his faculty."*~~

~~*The deer-stealing tradition illustrates the same point ; and though belonging perhaps toa rather later period it may be conveniently noticed here. This fragment of Shakespeare's personal history rests on a much surer basis than the Bidford incident, being supported not only by early multiplied and constant traditions, but by evidence which the poet himself has supplied. Rowe's somewhat formal version of the narrative is to the effect that Shake- Speare in his youth was guilty of an extravagance which, though unfortunate at the time, had the happy result of helping to develop his dramatic genius. This misfortune was that of being engaged with some of his companions more than once in robbing a park belonging to Sir Thomas Lucy of Charlecote. Sir Thomas, it is said, prosecuted him sharply for the offence, and in retaliation he wrote a satirical ballad upon him, which so incensed the baronet that Shakespeare thought it prudent to leave Stratford and join his old friends and associates the players in London. Other versions of the tradition exist giving fresh details, some of which are on the face of them later additions of a fictitious and fanciful kind. But jt would be useless to discuss the aceretions incident to any narrative, however true, orally transmitted through two or three generations before being reduced to a written shape. All that can be required or expected of such traditions is that they should contain a kernel of biographical fact, and be true in substance although possibly not in form. And tried by this test the tradition in question must certainly be accepted as a genuine contribution to our knowledge of the poet's early years. Indeed it could hardly have been repeated again and again by inhabitants of Stratford within a few years of Shakespeare's death if it did not embody a characteristic feature of his early life which was well known in the town. This feature was no doubt the poet's love of woodland life, and the woodland sports through which it is realized in the most animated and vigorous form.*~~

~~*793*~~

~~*Stratford in Shakespeare's day afforded*~~

~~*i i There was d Arden forest, which, though still nominally i Indeed, the observance of the forest laws had fallen into such neglect in the early years of Elizabeth's reign that even unlicensed deer-*~~

~~*venue to Fulbroke Park, and there they might easily come into Thomas Lucy's keepers. There has been a good*~~

~~*And Mr Bracebridge, in "his interesting pamphlet Shakespeare no Deer-Stealer, has thrown fresh light on the sub-*~~

~~*lors, — Sir Francis Engelfield. Being'a to Spain on the accession of Elizabeth judged a traitor, the Fulbroke administered by the crown. The park being thus without a legal custodian for more than a quarter of a century became disparked, the palings having fallen into places broken down.*~~

~~*any case Sir Thomas's keepers would occasionally perambulate Fulbroke Park as a protection to Charlecote, and in doing go they probably came upon Shakespeare and his companions after they had brought down a buck and were about to break it up for removal. Or the hunted deer may have crossed the river at the shallow ford between the two parks, and, pursued by the eager sportsmen, have been brought down within the Charlecote grounds. In either case the keepers would denounce the trespass, and possibly with menacing and abusive words demand the buck for their master. On being treated in this insulting way, Shake- speare, who had pride and_ personal dignity as well as courage, would deny any intentional or actual trespass, refuse to give up the venison, and plainly tell the keepers that they might report the matter to Sir Thomas Lucy and he would answer for himself and his companions. On finding what had happened, Sir Thonias would be all the more incensed and indignant from the conscious- ness that he had pushed his claims beyond the point at which they could legally be enforced. And, being to some extent in a false position, he would be proportionately wrathful and vindictive against the youthful sportsmen, and especially against their leader who had dared to resist and defy his authority. Sir Thomas was the great man of Stratford, who came periodically to the town on magistrate's business, was appealed to as arbitrator in special cases, and entertained by the corporation during his visits. In character he seems to have combined*~~

~~aristocratic pride and narrowness with the harshness and severity of the Puritan temper. As a landed proprietor and local magnate he was exacting and exclusive, looking with a kind of Puritanical sourness on all youthful frolics, merri- ment, and recreation. He would thus have a natural antipathy to young Shakespeare's free, generous, and enjoying nature, and would resent as an unpardonable outrage his high-spirited conduct in attempting to resist any claims he chose to make. Sir Thomas would no doubt vent his indignation to the authorities at Strat- ford, and try to set the law in motion, and failing in this might have threatened, as Justice Shallow does, to make a Star-Chamber matter of it. This was the kind of extreme course which a man in his position might take where there was no available local redress for any wrong he imagined himself to have suffered. And~~

~~the Stratford authorities, being naturally anxious to propitiate the great man, may have suggested that it would be well if young Shakespeare could be out of the way for a time. This would help him to decide on the adoption of a plan already seriously entertained of going to London to push his fortune among the ee re ee There is, however, another aspect in which this traditional incident may be looked at, which seems at least worthy~~

~~supreme objects of aristocratic and Puritanical zeal. And Sir Thomas, having at length caught him, as he imagined, in a technical trespass, would be sure to pursue the culprit with the unrelenting rigour of his hard and gloomy nature. But, whatever may have been the actual or aggravating circumstances of the original offence, there can be no doubt that an element of truth is contained in the deer-~~

~~Sir of consideration. It is possible that Sir Thomas Lucy may | stealing tradition. The substantial facts in the story are pea have been prejudiced~~

~~against the Shakespeares on religious | that Shakespeare in his youth was fond of woodland sport, lucy.~~

~~grounds, and that this feeling may have prompted him to a display of exceptional severity against their eldest son. As we have seen, he was a narrow and extreme, a persecuting and almost fanatical Protestant, and several events had recently happened calculated to intensify his bitterness against the Romanists. In particular, Mary Shakespeare's family connexions—the Ardens of Parkhall—had been convicted of conspiracy against the queen's life. The son-in-law of Edward Arden, John Somerville, a rash and "hot-spirited young gentleman," instigated by Hall, the family priest, had formed the design of going to London and assassinating Queen Elizabeth with his own hand. He started on his journey in November 1583, but talked so incautiously by the way that he was arrested, conveyed to the Tower, and under a threat of the rack confessed everything, accusing his father-in-law as an accomplice and the priest as the instigator of the crime. All three were tried and convicted, their fate being probably hastened, as Dugdale states, by the animosity of Leicester against the Ardens. Somerville strangled himself in prison, and Edward Arden was hanged at Tyburn. These events produced a deep impression in Warwickshire, and no one in the locality would be more excited by them than Sir Thomas Lucy. His intensely vindictive feeling against the Romanists was exemplified a little later by his bringing forward a motion in parlia- ment in favour of devising some new and _ lingering tortures for the execution of the Romanist conspirator Parry. As Mr Froude puts it, "Sir Thomas Lucy,— Shakespeare's Lucy, the original perhaps of Justice Shallow, with an English fierceness at the bottom of his stupid nature,—having studied the details of the execution of Gerard, proposed in the House of Commons 'that some new law should be devised for Parry's execution, such as might be thought fittest for his extraordinary and horrible treason." The Ardens were devoted Romanists; the terrible calamity that had befallen the family occurred only a short time before the deer-stealing adventure ; and the**

~~Shakespeares themselves, so far from being Puritans, were~~

~~suspected by many of being but indifferent Protestants.~~

and that in one of his hunting adventures he came into collision with Sir Thomas Lucy's keepers, and fell. under the severe ban of that local potentate. The latter point is indirectly confirmed by Shakespeare's inimitable sketch of the formal country justice in the Second Part of Henry LV. and the Merry Wives of Windsor,—Robert Shallow, Esq., being sufficiently identified with Sir Thomas Lucy by the pointed allusion to the coat of arms, as well as by other allusions of a more indirect but hardly less decisive kind. To talk of the sketch as an act of revenge is to treat it too seriously, or rather in too didactic and pedestrian a spirit. Having been brought into close relations with the justice, Shakespeare could hardly be expected to resist the temptation of turning to dramatic account so admirable a subject for humorous portraiture. The other point of the tradition, Shakespeare's fondness for woodland life, is supported by the internal evidence of his writings, and especially by the numerous allusions to the subject in his poems and earlier plays. The many refer- ences to woods and sports in the poems are well known ; and in the early plays the allusions are not less frequent and in some respects even more striking. Having no space, however, to give these in detail, a general reference must suffice. The entire action of Love's Labour's Lost takes place in a royal park, while the scene of the most critical events of the Z'wo Gentlemen of Verona is a forest inhabited by generous outlaws whose offences appear to have been youthful follies, and who on being pardoned by the duke become his loyal followers. In these early plays it seems as though Shakespeare could hardly conceive of a royal palace or capital city without a forest close at hand as the scene of princely sport, criminal intrigue, or fairy enchant- ment. Outside the gates of Athens swept over hill and dale the wonderful forest which is the scene of the Midsummer Night's Dream; and in Titus Andronicus imperial Rome seems to be almost surrounded by the brightness and terror, the inspiring charm and sombre shades of rolling forest lawns and ravines, the "ruthless, vast, and gloomy woods."

There can be no doubt, therefore, that during the years Shake- of home life at Stratford Shakespeare was often in the Speares

*John Shakespeare was an irregular attendant at church, ear forest. But in the latter part of the time he would be ™"™"8**

~~*and soon ceased to appear there at all, so that Sir Thomas*~~

~~*Lucy probably regarded him as little better than a recusant. In any case Sir Thomas would be likely to resent the elder Shakespeare's convivial turn and profuse hospitality as alderman and bailiff, and especially his official patronage of the players and active encouragement of their dramatic representations in the guild hall. The Puritans had a rooted antipathy to the stage, and to the jaundiced eye of the local justice the reverses of the Shakespeares would probably appear as a judgment on their way of life. He would all the more eagerly seize any chance of humiliating their eldest son, who still held up his head and dared to look upon life as a scene of cheerful activity and occasional enjoyment. The young poet, indeed, embodied the very characteristics most opposed to Sir Thomas's dark and narrow conceptions of lifeand duty. His notions of public duty were very much restricted to persecuting the Romanists and preserving the game on Protestant estates. And Shakespeare probably took no pains to conceal his want of sympathy with these*~~

~~*found still more frequently hastening through the fields to Shottery, paying long visits at the Hathaway farm, followed by late and reluctant leave-takings. For the next important fact in Shakespeare's history is his marriage with Anne Hathaway. This event, or rather the formal and ecclesiastical part of it, took place in the end of November 1582, the bond for the licence from the consistory court being dated on the 28th of the month. Mr Halliwell-Phillipps has, however, sufficiently proved by detailed instances that the formal and public part of the ceremony would, according to the usage of the time, have been preceded some months earlier by the betrothal or pre-contract, which was in itself of legal validity. Shake- speare's marriage may therefore be dated from the summer of 1582, he being then in his nineteenth year, while his bride was between seven and eight years older. Many of the poet's biographers have assumed that the marriage was a hasty, unsuitable, and in its results an unhappy one. It is necessary therefore to repeat with all possible*~~

~~*emphasis the well-founded statement of Mr Halliwell- Phillipps that 'there is not a particle of direct evidence " for either of these suppositions.*~~

~~*The marriage could hardly have been a hasty one, for, as we have seen, the two families had been intimate for fifteen years, and Shakespeare had known Anne Hathaway from his early boyhood. As to whether it was suitable or not Shake- speare himself was the best and only adequate judge, and there is not, in the whole literature of the subject, even the shadow of a successful appeal against his decision. And, so far from the marriage having been unhappy, all the evidence within our reach goes to show that it was not only a union of mutual affection but a most fortunate event for the poet himself, as well as for the wife and mother who remained at the head of his family, venerated and loved by her children, and a devoted helpmate to her husband to the very end. Looking at the matter in its wider aspects, and especially in relation to his future career, it may be said that Shakespeare's early marriage gave him at the most emotional and unsettled period of life a fixed centre of affection and a supreme motive to prompt and fruitful exertion. This would have a salutary and steadying effect on a nature go richly en- dowed with plastic fancy and passionate impulse, com- bined with rare powers of reflective foresight and self- control. If Shakespeare's range and depth of emotional and imaginative genius had not been combined with unusual force of character and strength of ethical and artistic purpose, and these elements had not been early stimulated to sustained activity, he could never have had so great and uninterrupted a career. And nothing perhaps is a more direct proof of Shakespeare's manly character than the prompt and serious way in which, from the first, he assumed the full responsibility of his acts, and unflinch- ingly faced the wider range of duties they entailed. He himself has told us that "Love is too young to know what conscience is: Yet who knows not conscience is born of love 2"*~~

~~*and it remains true that conscience, courage, simplicity, and nobleness of conduct are all, in generous natures, evoked and strengthened by the vital touch of that regenerating power. Shakespeare's whole course was changed by the new influence ; and with his growing responsibilities his character seems to have rapidly matured, and his powers to have found fresh and more effective development. His first child Susanna was born in May 1583, and, as she was baptized on the 26th, the day of her birth may have been the 23d, which would be exactly a month after her father completed his nineteenth year. In February 1585 the family was*~~

~~*unexpectedly enlarged by the birth of twins, a boy and a girl, who were named re- spectively Hamnet and Judith, after Hamnet and Judith Sadler, inhabitants of Stratford, who were lifelong friends of Shakespeare. Before he had attained his majority the poet had thus a wife and three children dependent upon him, with little opportunity or means apparently of ad- vancing his fortunes in Stratford. The situation was in itself sufticiently serious, But it was complicated by his father's increasing embarrassments and multiplied family claims. Four children still remained in Henley Street to*~~

~~*tions he decided in favour of trying the metropolitan stage and theatre. He had already tested his faculty of acting by occasional essays on the provincial stage; and, once in London amongst the players, where new pieces were constantly required, he would have full scope' for the exercise of his higher powers as a dramatic poet. At the outset he could indeed only expect to discharge the lower function, but, with the growing popular demand for dramatic representations, the actor's calling, though not without its social drawbacks, was in the closing decades of the 16th century a lucrative one. Greene, in his autobio- graphical sketch Wever Too Late, one of the most interest- ing of his prose tracts, illustrates this point in the account he gives of his early dealings with the players and experiences as a writer for the Stage. Speaking through his hero Francesco, he says that 'when his fortunes were at the lowest ebb he fell in amongst a company of players who persuaded him to try his wit in writing of comedies, tragedies, or pastorals, and if he could perform anything worth the stage, then they would largely reward him for his pains." Succeeding in the work, he was so well paid that he soon became comparatively wealthy, and went about with a well-filled purse. Although writing from the author's rather than the actor's point of view, Greene intimates that the players grew rapidly rich and were entitled both to praise and profit so long as they were "neither covetous nor insolent." In the Return JSrom Parnassus (1601) the large sums, fortunes indeed, realized by good actors are referred to as matter of notoriety. One of the disappointed academic scholars, indeed, moralizing on the fact with some bitterness, exclaims,— "England affords those glorious vagabonds,*~~

~~*That carried erst their fardles on their backs,*~~

~~*Coursers to ride on through the gazing streets,*~~

~~*Sweeping it in their glaring satin suits,*~~

~~*And pages to attend their masterships :*~~

~~*With mouthing words that better wits have framed*~~

~~*They purchase lands, and now esquires are made," And in a humorous sketch entitled Ratseis Ghost, and published in the first decade of the 17th century, an apparent reference to Shakespeare himself brings out the same point. The hero of the tract, Ratsey, a highwayman, having compelled a set of strolling players to act before him, advised their leader to leave the country and get to London, where, having a good presence for the stage and a turn for the work, he would soon fill his pockets, adding, 'When thou feelest thy purse well-lined, buy thee some place of lordship in the country, that, growing weary of playing, thy money may bring thee dignity and reputa- tion." The player, thanking him for his advice, replies, "T have heard indeed of some that have gone to London very meanly, who have in time become exceedingly wealthy." The movement to the London stage was there- fore from a worldly point of view a prudent one, and for the higher purposes of Shakespeare's life it was equally wise and necessary. For besides the economic and practi- cal considerations in favour of the step there must have pressed on the poet's mind the importance of a wider sphere of life and action for the enlargement of his inward horizon, and the effective development of his poetical and dramatic gifts.*~~

~~*The exact date of this event—of Shakespeare's leaving Goes to Stratford for London—cannot be fixed with any certainty. ee All the probabilities of the case, however, indicate that it 224 be-*~~

~~*be provided for,—the youngest, Edmund, born in May 1580, being scarcely five years old. John Shakespeare,*~~

~~*too, was being sued by various creditors, and apparently comes an*~~

~~*in some danger of being arrested for debt. All this was enough to make a much older man than the poet look anxiously about him. But, with the unfailing sense and Sagacity he displayed in practical affairs, he seems to have formed a sober and just estimate of his own powers, and made a careful survey of the various fields available for their remunerative exercise. As the result of his delibera-*~~

~~*must have taken place between the spring of 1585 and the autumn of 1587. In the latter year three of the leading companies visited Stratford, those belonging to the queen, Lord Leicester, and Lord Essex ; and, as Lord Leicester's included three of Shakespeare's fellow townsmen,—Bur-bage, Heminge, and Greene,—it is not improbable that he may then have decided on trying his fortune in London.*~~

~~*actor.*~~

~~*Continues his edu- cation.*~~

~~*756*~~

~~*At the same time it is quite possible, and on some grounds even likely, that the step may have been taken somewhat earlier. But for the five years between 1587 and 1592 we have no direct knowledge of Shakespeare's movements at all, the period being a complete biographical blank, dimly illuminated at the outset by one or two doubtful traditions. We have indeed the assurance that after leay- ing Stratford he continued to visit his native town at least once every year; and if he had left in 1586 we may con- fidently assume that he returned the next year for the purpose, amongst others, of consulting with his father and mother about the Asbies mortgage and of taking part with them in their action against John Lambert. HIs uniting with them in this action deserves special notice, as showing that he continued to take the keenest personal interest in all home affairs, and, although living mainly in London, was still looked upon, not only as the eldest son, but as the adviser and friend of the family. The anec- dotes of Shakespeare's occupations on going to London are, that at first he was employed in a comparatively humble capacity about the theatre, and that for a time he took charge of the horses of those who rode to see the plays, aud was so successful in this work that he*~~

~~*soon had a uumber of juvenile assistants who were known as Shakespeare's boys. Even in their crude form these traditions embody a tribute to Shakespeare's business promptitude and skill. If there is any truth in them they may be taken to indicate that while filling some subordinate post in the theatre Shakespeare perceived a defective point in the local arrangements, or heard the complaints of the mounted gallants as to the difficulty of putting up their horses. His provisions for meeting the difficulty seem to have been completely and even notori- ously successful. There were open sheds or temporary stables in connexion with the theatre in Shoreditch, and Shakespeare's boys, if the tradition is true, probably each took charge of a horse in these stables while its owner was at the play. But in any case this would be simply a brief episode in Shakespeare's multifarious employments when he first reached the scene of his active labours in London. He must soon have had more serious and absorbing professional occupations in the green room, on the stage, and in the laboratory of his own teeming brain, "the quick forge and working house of thought."*~~

~~*But his leisure hours during his first years in London would naturally be devoted to continuing his education and equipping himself as fully as possible for his future work. It was probably during this time, as Mr Halliwell- Phillipps suggests, that he acquired the working knowledge of French and Italian that his writings show he must have possessed. And it is perhaps now possible to point out the sources whence his knowledge of these languages was derived, or at least the master under whom he chiefly studied them. The most celebrated and accomplished teacher of French and Italian in Shakespeare's day was the resolute John Florio, who, after leaving Magdalen College, Oxford, lived for years in London, engaged in tutorial and literary work and intimately associated with eminent men of letters and their noble patrons. After the accession of James L., Florio was made tutor to Prince Henry, received an appointment about the court, became the friend and personal favourite of Queen Anne (to whom he dedicated the second edition of his Italian dictionary, entitled the World of Words), and died full of years and honours in 1625, having survived Shakespeare nine years. Florio had married the sister of Daniel the poet, and Ben Jonson presented a copy of The Fox to him, with the inscription,*~~

~~*“To his loving father and worthy friend Master John Florio, Ben Jonson seals this testi- mony of his friendship and love.” Daniel writes a poem*~~

~~*SHAKESPEATE*~~

~~*of some length in praise of his translation of Montaigne, while other contemporary poets contribute commendatory verses which are prefixed to his other publications.*~~

~~*also one of Florio’s friends, and that during his early years in London he evinced his friendship by yielding for once to the fashion of writing this kind of eulogistic verse. Prefixed to Florio’s Second Fruits, Prof. Minto discovered a sonnet so superior and characteristic that he was impressed with the conviction that Shakespeare must have written it. The internal evidence is in favour of this conclusion, while Mr Minto’s critical analysis and com- parison of its thought and diction with Shakespeare’s early work tends strongly to support the reality and value of the discovery. In his next work, produced four years later, Florio claims the sonnet as the work of a friend “‘who loved better to be a poet than to be called one,” and vindicates it from the indirect attack of a hostile critic, H. S., who had also disparaged the work in which it appeared. There are other points of connexion between Florio and Shakespeare. The only known volume that certainly belonged to Shakespeare and contains his auto- graph is Florio’s version of Montaigne’s Hssays in the British Museum; and critics have from time to time produced evidence to show that Shakespeare must have read it carefully and was well acquainted with its con- tents. Victor Hugo in a powerful critical passage strongly supports this view. The most striking single proof of the point is Gonzalo’s ideal republic in the Tempest, which is simply a passage from Florio’s version turned into blank verse. Florio and Shakespeare were both, moreover, intimate personal friends of the young earl of Southampton, who, in harmony with his generous character and strong literary tastes, was the munificent patron of each. Shakespeare, it will be remembered, dedi- cated his Venus and Adonis and his Lucrece to this young nobleman ; and three years later, in 1598, Florio dedicated the first edition of his Italian dictionary to the earl in terms that almost recall Shakespeare’s words. Shake- speare had said in addressing the earl, ‘ What I have done is*~~

~~yours, what I have to do is yours, being part in all I have devoted yours." And Florio says, "In truth I ac- knowledge an entire debt, not only of my best knowledge, but of all, yea of more than I know or can to your bounte- ous lordship, most noble, most virtuous, and most honour- able earl of Southampton, in whose pay and patronage I have lived some years, to whom I owe and vow the years I have to live." Shakespeare was also familiar with Florio's earlier works, his First Fruits and Second Fruits, which were simply carefully prepared manuals for the study of Italian, containing an outline of the grammar, a selection of dialogues in parallel columns of Italian and English, and longer extracts from classical Italian writers in prose and verse. We have collected various points of indirect evidence showing Shakespeare's familiarity with these manuals, but these being numerous and minute cannot be given here. It must suffice to refer in illustra- tion of this point to a single instance—the lines in praise of Venice which Holofernes gives forth with so much unction in Love's Labour's Lost. The First Fruits was published in 1578, and was for some years the most popular manual for the study of Italian. It is the book that Shakespeare would naturally have used in attempting to acquire a knowledge of the language after his arrival in London ; and on finding that the author was the friend of some of his literary associates he would probably have sought his acquaintance and secured his personal help. As Florio was also a French scholar and habitually taught both languages, Shakespeare probably owed to him his knowledge of French as well as of Italian. If the sonnet~~

~~There Con- are substantial reasons for believing that Shakespeare was nexion~~

~~Italian Studies,~~

~~Da aK SPE ARE~~

~~is accepted as Shakespeare's work he must have made Florio's acquaintance within a year or two after going to London, as in 1591 he appears in the character of a personal friend and well-wisher. In any case Shakespeare would almost certainly have met Florio a few years later at the house of Lord Southampton, with whom the Italian scholar seems to have occasionally resided. It also appears that he was in the habit of~~

~~*visiting at several titled houses, amongst others those of the earl of Bedford and Sir John Harrington. It seems also probable that he may have assisted Harrington in his translation of Ariosto. Another and perhaps even more direct link connecting Shakespeare with Florio during his early years in London is found in their common relation to the family of Lord Derby. In the year 1585 Florio translated a letter of news from Rome, giving an account of the sudden death of Pope Gregory XITI. and the election of his successor. This translation, published in July 1585, was dedicated "To the Right Excellent and Honourable Lord, Henry Earl of Derby," in terms expressive of Florio's strong personal obligations to the earl and devotion to his service. Three years later, on the death of Leicester in 1588, Lord Derby's eldest son Ferdinando Lord Strange became the patron of Leicester's company of players, which Shakespeare had recently joined. The new patron must have taken special interest in the company, as they soon became (chiefly through his influ- ence) great favourites at court, superseding the Queen's players, and enjoying something like a practical monopoly of royal representations. Shakespeare would thus have the opportunity of making Florio's acquaintance at the outset of his London career, and everything tends to show that he did not miss the chance of numbering amongst his personal friends so accomplished a scholar, so alert, ener- getic, and original a man of letters, as the resolute John Florio. Warburton, it is well-known, had coupled Florio's name with Shakespeare in the last century. He sug- gested, or rather asserted, that Florio was the original of Holofernes in Love's Labour 's Lost. Of all Warburton's arbitrary conjectures and dogmatic assumptions this is perhaps the most infelicitous. That a scholar and man of the world like Florio, with marked literary powers of his own, the intimate friend and associate of some of the most eminent poets of the day, living in princely and uoble circles, honoured by royal personages and welcomed at noble houses,—that such a man should be selected as the original of a rustic pedant and dominie like Holofernes, is surely the climax of reckless guesswork and absurd suggestion. There is, it is true, a distant connexion between Holofernes and Italy—the pedant being a well- known figure in the Italian comedies that obviously affected Shakespeare's early work. This usage calls forth a kind of sigh from the easy-going and tolerant Montaigne as he thinks of his early tutors and youthful interest in knowledge. "TI have in my youth," he tells us, 'often-*~~

~~*times been vexed to see a pedant brought in in most of Italian comedies for a vice or sport-maker, and the nick- name of magister (dominie) to be of no better significa- tion amongst us." We may be sure that, if Shakespeare knew Florio before he produced Love's Labour's Lost, it was not as a sport-maker to be mocked at, but as a friend and literary associate to whom he felt personally indebted.*~~

~~*But, whatever his actual relation to the Italian scholar may have been, Shakespeare, on reaching London and beginning to breathe its literary atmosphere, would nat- urally betake himself to the study of Italian. At various altitudes the English Parnassus was at that time fanned by soft airs, swept by invigorating breezes, or darkened by gloomy and infected vapours from the south. In other words, the influence of Italian literature, so dominant in England during the second half of the 16th century,*~~

~~*may be said to have reached its highest point at the very time when Shakespeare entered on his poetic and dramatic labours. This influence was in part a revival of the strong impulse communicated to English literature from Italy in Chaucer's day. The note of the revival was struck in the title of Thomas's excellent Italian manual, " Principal rules of Italian grammar, with a dictionarie for the better understandyng of Boccace, Petrarcha, and Dante" (1550). The first fruits of the revival were the lyrical poems of Surrey and Wyatt, written somewhat earlier, but published for the first time in Tottle's Miscellany (1557). The sonnets of these poets—the first ever written in English—produced in a few years the whole musical choir of Elizabethan sonneteers. Surrey and Wyatt were sym- pathetic students of Petrarch, and, as Puttenham says, reproduced in their sonnets and love poems much of the musical sweetness, the tender and refined sentiment, of the Petrarchian lyric. This perhaps can hardly in strictness of speech be called a revival, for, strong as was the influ- ence of Boccaccio, and in a less degree of Dante, during the first period of English literature, the lyrical poetry of the south, as represented by Petrarch, affected English poetry almost for the first time in the 16th century. This influence, as subsequently developed by Lyly in his prose comedies and romances, indirectly affected the drama, and clear*~~

~~*traces of it are to be found in Shakespeare's own work. Surrey, however, rendered the Elizabcthans a still greater service by introducing from Italy the unrhymed verse, which, with the truest instinct, was adopted by the great dramatists as the metrical vehicle best fitted to meet the requirements of the most flexible and expressive form of the poetic art. But, although in part the revival of a previous impulse, the Italian literature that most power- fully affected English poetry during the Elizabethan period was in the main new. During the interval the prolific genius of the south had put forth fresh efforts which combined, in new and characteristic products, the forms of classical poetry and the substance of southern thought and feeling with the spirit of medieval romance. The chivalrous and martial epics of Ariosto and Tasso repre- sented a new school of poetry which embraced within its expanding range every department of imaginative activity. There appeared in rapid succession romantic pastorals, romantic elegies, romantic satires, and romantic dramas, as well as romantic epics. The epics were occupied with marvels of knightly daring and chivalrous adventure, expressed in flowing and melodious numbers : while the literature as a whole dealt largely in the favourite elements of ideal sentiment, learned allusion, and elaborate ornament, and was brightened at intervals by grave and sportive, by highly wrought but fanciful; pictures of courtly and Arcadian life. While Sidney and Spenser represented in England the new school of allegorical and romantic pastoral and epic, Shakespeare and his associates betook themselves to the study of the romantic drama and the whole dramatic element in recent and contempor- ary southern literature. The Italian drama proper, so far as it affected the form adopted by English playwrights, had indeed virtually done its work before any of Shake- speare's characteristic pieces were produced. HIs imme- diate predecessors, Greene, Peele, and Lodge, Nash, Kyd, and Marlowe, had all probably studied Italian models more carefully than Shakespeare himself ever did; and the result is seen in the appearance among these later Elizabethans of the romantic drama, which united the better elements of the English academic and popular plays with features of diction and fancy, incident and structure, that were virtually new. Many members of this dramatic group were, like Greene, good Italian scholars, had them- selves travelled in Italy, knew the Italian stage at first*~~

hand, and, as their writings show, were well acquainted with recent Italian literature. But the dramatic element in that literature extended far beyond the circle of regular plays, whether tragedies, comedies, or pastorals. It in- cluded the collections of short prose stories which appeared, or were published for the first time, in such numbers during the 16th century, the novels or novelettes of Ser Giovanni, Cinthio, Bandello, and their associates. These stories, consisting of the humorous and tragic incidents of actual life, told in a vivid and direct way, naturally attracted the attention of the dramatists. We know from the result that Shakespeare must have studied them with some care, as he derived from this source the plots and incidents of at least a dozen of his plays. Many of the stories, it is true, had already been translated, either directly from the Italian, or indirectly from French and Latin versions. Of Cinthio's hundred tales, however, only two or three are known to have been rendered into English ; and Shakespeare derived the story of Othello from the untranslated part of this collection. Many of the Italian stories touched on darker crimes or more aggra- vated forms of violence than those naturally prompted by jealousy and revenge, and are indeed revolting from the atrocities of savage cruelty and lust related so calmly as to betray a kind of cynical insensibility to their true character. Shakespeare, however, with the sound judg- ment and strong ethical sense that guided the working of his dramatic genius, chose the better and healthier materials of this literature, leaving the morbid excesses of criminal passion to Webster and Ford. But the Italian influence on Shakespeare's work is not to be estimated merely by the outlines of plot and incident he borrowed from southern sources and used as a kind of canvas for his matchless portraiture of human character and action. It is apparent also in points of structure and diction, in types of character and shades of local colouring, which realize and express in a concentrated form the bright and lurid, the brilliant and passionate, features of southern life. The great majority of the dramatis persone in his comedies, as well as in some of the tragedies, have Italian names, and many of them, such as Mercutio and Gratiano on the one hand, Iachimo and Iago on the other, are as Italian in nature as in name. The moonlight scene in the Merchant of Venice is Southern in every detail and incident. And, as M. Philaréte Chasles justly poimts

~~*out, Romeo and Juliet is Italian throughout, alike in colouring, incident, and passion. 'The distinctive influence is further traceable in Shakespeare's use of Italian words, phrases, and pro- verbs, some of which, such as "tranect" (from tranare), or possibly, as Rowe suggested, "'traject" (traghetto), are of special local significance. In the person of Hamlet Shakespeare even appears as a critic of Italian style. Referring to the murderer who in the players' tragedy poisons the sleeping duke, Hamlet exclaims, " He poisons him in the garden for his estate. His name 's Gonzago : the story is extant and written in very choice Italian." Jn further illustration of this point Mr Grant White has noted some striking turns of thought and phrase which seem to show that Shakespeare must have read parts of Berni and Ariosto in the original. No doubt in the case of Italian poets, as in the case of Latin authors like Ovid, whose works he was familiar with in the original, Shakespeare would also diligently read the translations, especially the translations into English verse. For in reading such works as Golding's Ovid, Harrington's Ariosto, and Fairfax's Tasso, he would be increasing his command over the elements of expressive phrase and diction which were the verbal instruments, the material vehicle, of his art. But, besides studying the translations of the Italian poets and prose writers made available for English readers,*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE SE*~~

~~*he would naturally desire to possess, and no doubt acquired for himself, the key that would unlock the whole treasure-house of Italian literature. The evidence of Shakespeare's knowledge of French is more abundant and decisive, so much so as hardly to need express illustration. There can be little doubt therefore that, during his early years in London, he acquired a fair knowledge both of French and Italian.*~~

~~*But, while pursuing these collateral aids to his higher Early work, there is abundant evidence that Shakespeare also @ramatic devoted himself to that work itself. As early as 1592 he efforts.*~~

~~*is publicly recognized, not only as an actor of distinction, but as a dramatist whose work had excited the envy and indignation of his contemporaries, and especially of one so accomplished and so eminent, so good a scholar and master of the playwright's craft, as Robert Greene.*~~

~~*Greene had, it is true, a good deal of the irritability and excitable temper often found in the subordinate ranks of poetical genius, and he often talks of himself, his doings, and associates in a highly-coloured and extravagant way. But his reference to Shakespeare is specially deliberate, being in the form of a solemn and last appeal to his friends amongst the scholarly dramatists to relinquish their connexion with the presumptuous and ungrateful stage. In his Groatsworth of Wit, published by his friend Chettle a few weeks after his death, Greene urges three of his friends, apparently Marlowe, Lodge, and Peele, to give up writing for the players. " Base-minded men, all three of you, if by ny misery ye be not warned; for unto none of you like me sought those burs to cleave ; those puppets, I mean, who speak from our mouths, those anticks garnisht in our colours. Is it not strange that I, to whom they have all been beholding ; is it not like that you, to whom they have all been beholding, shall (were ye in that case that I am now) be both of them at once forsaken? Yes, trust them not; for there is an upstart Crow, beautified in our feathers, that, with his tiger's heart wrapt in a player's hide, supposes he is as well able to bombast out a blank verse as the best of you, and, being an absolute Johannes fac totum, is, in his own conceit, the only Shakescene in a country. Oh that I might intreat your rare wits to be employed in more profitable courses, and let these apes imitate your past excellence, and never more acquaint them with your admired inventions." This curious passage tells us indirectly a good deal about Shakespeare. It bears decisive testimony to his assured position and rapid advance in his profession. The very term of reproach applied to him, "Johannes Factotum," is a tribute to Shakespeare's industry and practical ability. From the beginning of his career he must have been in the widest and best sense a utility man, ready to do any work con- nected with the theatre and stage, and eminently successful in anything he undertook. In the first instance he had evidently made his mark as an actor, as it is in that character he is referred to by Greene, and denounced for going beyond his province and usurping the functions of the dramatist. Greene's words imply that Shakespeare not only held a foremost place as an actor, but that he was already distinguished by his dramatic success in revising and rewriting existing plays. This is confirmed by the parodied line from the Third Part of Henry VI, recently revised if not originally written by Shakespeare. This must have been produced before Greene's death,*~~

~~which took place in September 1592. Indeed, all the three parts of Henry VJ. in the revised form appear to have been acted during the spring and summer of that year. Itis not improbable that two or three of Shake- speare's early comedies may also have been produced before Greene's death. And if so, his resentment, as an academic scholar, against the country actor who had not~~

~~only become a dramatist but had excelled Greene himself in his chosen field of romantic comedy becomes intelligible enough. Even in his wrath, however, Greene bears eloquent witness to Shakespeare's diligence, ability, and marked success, both as actor and playwright. All this is fully confirmed by the more deliberate and detailed language of Chettle's apology, already quoted. Of Shake- speare's amazing industry and conspicuous success the next few years supply ample evidence. Within six or seven years he not only produced the brilliant reflective and descriptive poems of Venus and Adonis and Lucrece, but at least fifteen of his dramas, including tragedies, comedies, and historical plays. Having found his true vocation, Shakespeare works during these years as a master, having full command over the materials and resources of his art. The dramas produced have a fulness of life and a richness of imagery, a sense of joyousness and power, that speak of the writer's exultant absorption and conscious triumph in his chosen work. The sparkling~~

~~with resistless effect against the grandest naval and military armament ever equipped by a Continental power,—an arma- ment that had been sent forth with the assurance of victory by the wealthiest, most absolute, and most determined monarch of the time. There was a vigorous moral element in that national struggle and triumph. It was the spirit of freedom, of the energies liberated by the revolt from Rome, and illuminated by the fair humanities of Greece and Italy, that nerved the arm of that happy breed of men in the day of battle, and enabled them to strike with fatal effect against the abettors of despotic rule in church and state. The material results of the victory were at once apparent. England became mistress of the seas, and Tose to an assured position in Europe as~~

~~*a political and maritime power of the first order. The literary results at home were equally striking. The whole conflict reacted powerfully on the genius of the race, quickening into life its latent seeds of reflective knowledge and wisdom, of poetical and drainatic art.*~~

~~*comedies and great historical plays belonging to this period evince the ease and delight of an exuberant mind realizing its matured creations.*~~

~~*Of these effects the rapid growth and develop- Growth ment of the national drama was the most brilliant of the and characteristic. There was indeed at the time a Dative*~~

~~*Con- Nor after all is this result so very surprising. Shake- unique stimulus in this direction. The greater num- 2" ditions gspeare entered on his London career at the very moment | ber of the eager excited listeners who crowded the favour- : : 5*~~

~~*Peto best fitted for the full development of his dramatic | rude theatres from floor to roof had shared in the*~~

~~*SUCCESS.*~~

~~*genius. From the accession of Elizabeth all the domi- nant impulses and leading events of her reign had pre- pared the way for the splendid triumph of policy and arms that closed its third decade, and for the yet more splendid literary triumph of the full-orbed drama that followed. After the gloom and terror of Mary's reign the coming of Elizabeth to the crown was hailed with exultation by the people, and seemed in itself to open a new and brighter page of the nation's history. Elizabeth's personal charms and mental gifts, her high spirit and dauntless courage, her unfailing political tact and judgment, her frank bearing and popular address, combined with her unaffected love for her people and devotion to their interests, awakened the strongest feelings of personal loyalty, and kindled into passionate ardour the spirit of national pride and patriotism that made the whole kingdom one. The most powerful movements of the time directly tended to reinforce and concentrate these awakened energies. While the Reformation and Renais- sance impulses had liberalized men's minds and enlarged their moral horizon, the effect of*~~

~~both was at first of a political and practical rather than of a purely religious or literary kind. The strong and exhilarating sense of civil and religious freedom realized through the Reformation was inseparably associated with the exultant spirit of nationality it helped to stimulate and diffuse. The pope, and his emissaries the Jesuits, were looked upon far more as foreign enemies menacing the independence of the kingdom than as religious foes and firebrands seeking to destroy the newly established faith, The conspiracies, fomented from abroad, that gathered around the captive queen of Scots, the plots successively formed for the assassination of Elizabeth, were regarded as murderous assaults on the nation's life, and the Englishmen who organized them abroad or aided them at home were denounced and prosecuted with pitiless severity as traitors to their country. Protestantism thus came to be largely identified with patriotism, and all the active forces of the kingdom, its rising wealth, energy, and intelligence, were concentrated to defend the rights of the liberated empire against the assaults of despotic Europe represented by Rome and Spain. These forces gained volume and impetus as the nation was thrilled by the details of Alva's ruthless butcheries, and the awful massacre of St Bar-~~

~~tholomew, until at length they were organized and hurled | means, of popular expression at all.~~

~~adventurous exploits of the age, while all felt the keenest interest in life and action. And the stage represented with admirable breadth and fidelity the struggling forces, the mingled elements, humorous and tragic, the passionate hopes, deep-rooted animosities, and fitful misgivings of those eventful years. The spirit of the time had made personal daring a common heritage: with noble and commoner, gentle and simple, alike, love of queen and country was a romantic passion, and heroic self-devotion at the call of either a beaten way of ordinary life. To act with energy and decision in the face of danger, to strike at once against any odds in the cause of freedom and independence, was the desire and ambition of all. This complete unity of national sentiment and action became the great characteristic of the time. The dangers threatening the newly liberated kingdom were too real and pressing to admit of anything like seriously divided councils, or bitterly hostile parties within the realm. Everything~~

~~*thus conspired to give an extraordinary degree of concentration and brilliancy to the national life. For the twenty years that followed the destruction of the Armada London was the centre and focus of that life. Here gathered the soldiers and officers who had fought against Spain in the Low Countries, against France in Scotland, and against Rome in Ireland. Along the river side, and in noble houses about the Strand, were the hardy mariners and adventurous sea captains, such as Drake, Hawkins, and Frobisher, who had driven their dauntless keels into unknown seas, who had visited strange lands and alien races in order to enlarge the knowledge, increase the dominions, and augment the wealth of their fellow- countrymen. Here assembled the noble councillors, scholars, and cavaliers whose foresight and skill guided the helm of state, whose accomplishment in letters and arms gave refinement and distinction to court pageants and ceremonials, and whose patronage and support of the rising drama helped to make the metropolitan theatre the great centre of genius and art, the great school of historical teaching, the great mirror of human nature in all the breadth and emphasis of its interests, convictions, and activities. The theatre was indeed the living organ through which all the marvellous and mingled experiences of a time incomparably rich in vital elements found expression. There was no other, no organized or adequate Books were a solitary*~~

~~*The theatres,*~~

~~*760.*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*entertainment in the hands of few; newspapers did not | of playing Comedies, Tragedies, Interludes, and Stage Plays, exist ; and the modern relief of incessant public meetings | and such other like as, they have been already used and*~~

~~*was, fortunately perhaps, an unknown luxury. And yet, amidst the plenitude of national life centred in London, the need for some common organ of expression was never more urgent or imperious. New and almost inexhaustible springs from the well-heads of intellectual life had for years been gradually fertilizing the productive English mind. The heroic life of*~~

~~*the past, in clear outline and stately movement, had been revealed in the recovered masterpieces of Greece and Rome. The stores of more recent wisdom and knowledge, discovery and invention, science and art, were poured continually into the literary exchequer of the nation, and widely diffused amongst eager and open-minded recipients. Under this combined stimulus the national intellect and imagination had already reacted fruitfully in ways that were full of higher promise. The material results of these newly awakened energies were, as we have seen, not less signal or momentous. The number, variety, and power of the new forces thus acting on society effected in a short period a complete moral revolution. The barriers against the spread of knowledge and the spirit of free inquiry erected and long maintained by medieval ignorance and_pre- judice were now thrown down. The bonds of feudal authority and Romish domination that had hitherto forcibly repressed the expanding national life were effectu- ally broken. Men opened their eyes upon a new world which it was an absorbing interest and endless delight to explore,—a new world physically, where the old geo- graphical limits had melted into the blue haze of distant horizons—a new world morally, where the abolition of alien dogma and priestly rule gave free play to fresh and vigorous social energies; and, above all, more surprising and mysterious than all, they opened their eyes with a strange sense of wonder and exultation on the new world of the emancipated human spirit. At no previous period had the popular curiosity about human life and human affairs been so vivid and intense. In an age of deeds so memorable, man naturally became the centre of interest, and the whole world of human action and_ passion, character and conduct, was invested with irresistible attraction. All ranks and classes had the keenest desire to penetrate the mysterious depths, explore the unknown regions, and realize as fully as might be the actual achievements and ideal possibilities of the nature throbbing with so full a pulse within themselves and reflected so powerfully in the world around them. HIuman nature, released from the oppression and darkness of the ages, and emerging with all its infinite faculties and latent powers into the radiant light of a secular day, was the new world that excited an admiration more profound and hopes far more ardent than any recently discovered lands beyond the sinking sun. At the critical moment Shakespeare appeared as the Columbus of that new world. Pioneers had indeed gone before and in a measure prepared the way, but Shakespeare*~~

~~*still remains the great discoverer, occupying a position of almost lonely grandeur in the isolation and completeness of his work.*~~

~~*Never before, except perhaps in the Athens of Pericles, had all the elements and conditions of a great national drama met in such perfect union. As we have seen, the popular conditions supplied by the stir of great public events and the stimulus of an appreciative audience were present in exceptional force. With regard to the stage conditions,—the means of adequate dramatic representation,—public theatres had for the first time been recently established in London on a permanent basis. In 1574 a royal licence had been granted by the queen to the earl of Leicester's conipany "to use, exercise, and occupy the art and faculty*~~

~~*studied, as well for the recreation of our loving subjects as for our solace and pleasure when we shall think good to see them"; and, although the civil authorities resisted the attempt to establish a public theatre within the city, two or three were speedily erected just outside its boundaries, in the most convenient and accessible suburbs,—the Curtain and the Theatre in Shoreditch, beyond the northern boundary, and the Blackfriars theatre within the precincts of the dissolved monastery, just beyond the civic jurisdic- tion on the western side. A few years later other houses were built on the southern side of the river,—the Rose near the foot of London Bridge, and the Hope and Swan further afield. There was also at Newington Butts a place of recreation and entertainment for the archers and holiday people, with a central building which, like the circus at Paris Garden, was used during the summer months for dramatic purposes. These theatres were occupied by different companies in turn, and Shakespeare during his early years in London appears to have acted at several of them. But from his first coming up it seems clear that he was more identified with the earl of Leicester's players, of whom his energetic fellow townsman, James Burbage, was the head, than with any other group of actors. To Burbage indeed be- longs the distinction of having first established public theatres as a characteristic feature of metropolitan life. His spirit and enterprise first relieved the leading com- panies from the stigma of being strolling players, and transferred their dramatic exhibitions, hitherto restricted to temporary scaffolds in the court-yards of inns and hostelries, to the more reputable stage and convenient*~~

~~*appliances of a permanent theatre. In 1575 Burbage, having secured the lease of a piece of land at Shoreditch, erected there the house which proved so successful, and was known for twenty years as the Theatre, from the fact that it was the first ever erected in the metropolis. He seems also to have been concerned in the erection of a second theatre in the same locality called the Curtain ; and later on, in spite of many difficulties, and a great deal of local opposition, he provided the more celebrated home of the rising drama known as the Blackfriars theatre. When Shakespeare went to London there were thus theatres on both sides of the water—the outlying houses being chiefly used during the summer and autumn months, while the Blackfriars, being roofed in and pro-tected from the weather, was specially used for perform- ances during the winter season. In spite of the persistent opposition of the lord mayor and city aldermen, the denunciations of Puritan preachers and their allies in the press, and difficulties arising from intermittent attacks of the plague and the occasional intervention of the court authorities, the theatres had now taken firm root in the metropolis ; and, strong in royal favour, in noble patron- age, and above all in popular support, the stage had already begun to assume its higher functions as the living organ of the national voice, the many-coloured mirror and reflexion of the national life. A few years later the com- panies of players and the theatres they occupied were consolidated and placed on a still firmer public basis. For some years past, in addition to the actors really or nominally attached to noble houses, there had existed a body of twelve performers, selected by royal authority (in 1583) from different companies and known as the Queen's players. The earl of Leicester's, being the leading company, had naturally furnished a number of recruits to the Queen's players, whose duty it was to act at special seasons before Her Majesty and the court. But within a few years after Shakespeare arrived in London the chief*~~

~~*groups of actors were divided into two great companies, specially licensed and belonging respectively to the Lord Chamberlain and the Lord Admiral. Under the new arrangement the earl of Leicester's actors (who, as already stated, after the earl's death in 1588 found for a time a new patron in Lord Strange!) became the servants of the Lord Chamberlain.*~~

~~*James Burbage had already retired from the company, his place being taken by his more cele- brated son Richard Burbage, the Garrick of the Eliza- bethan stage, who acted with so much distinction and success all the great parts in Shakespeare's leading plays. In order that the Lord Chamberlain's company might have houses of their own both for summer and winter use, Richard Burbage, his brother Cuthbert, and their associates, including Shakespeare, undertook in 1599 to build a new theatre on the bank side, not far from the old Paris Garden circus. We know from a subsequent document, which refers incidentally to the building of this theatre, that the Burbages had originally introduced Shakespeare to the Blackfriars company. He had indeed proved himself so useful, both as actor and poet, that they were evidently glad to secure his future services by giving him a share as part proprietor in the Blackfriars property. The new theatre now built by the company was that known as the Globe, and it was for fifteen years, during the suinmer and autumn months, the popular and highly successful home of the Shakespearian drama. Three years earlier Richard Burbage and_ his associates had rebuilt the Blackfriars theatre on a more extended scale; and this well-known house divided with the Globe the honour of producing Shakespeare's later and more important plays. Shakespeare's position indeed of actor and dramatist is identified with these houses and with the Lord Chamberlain's company to which they belonged. On the accession of James L., this company, being specially favoured by the new monarch, received a fresh royal charter, and the members of it were henceforth known as the King's servants. In the early years of Shakespeare's career the national drama had thus a permanent home in theatres conveniently central on either side of the river, and crowded during the summer and winter mionths by eager and excited audiences, Even before the building of the Globe, the house at New- ington where three of Marlowe's most important plays and some of Shakespeare's early tragedies were produced was often crowded to the doors. In the summer of 1592, when the Hirst Part of Henry VI., as revised by Shake- speare, was acted, the performance was so popular that, we are told by Nash, ten thousand spectators witnessed it in the course of a few weeks. It is true that even in the best theatres the appliances in the way of scenes and stage machinery were of the simplest description, change of scene being often indicated by the primitive device of a board with the name painted*~~

~~upon it. But players and play- wrights, both arts being often combined in the same person, knew their business thoroughly well, and justly relied for success on the more vital attractions of powerful acting, vigorous writing, and practised skill in the construction of their pieces. In the presence of strong passions expressed in kindling words and powerfully realized in living action, gesture, and incident, the absence of canvas sunlight and painted gloom was hardly felt. Or, as the stirring choruses in Henry V. show, the want of more elaborate and realistic scenery was abundantly supplied by the excited fancy, active imagination, and concentrated interest of the spectators.~~

~~eee LL eC' (SC~~

~~' This is maintained by Mr Fleay in his recent Life and Work of Shakespeare, But the history of the early dramatic companies is so obscure that it is difficult to trace their changing fortunes with absolute certainty.~~

~~761~~

~~_ The dramatic conditions of a national theatre were New indeed, at the outset of Shakespeare's career, more com- school of plete, or rather in a more advanced state of development, 'Singas~~

~~than the playhouses themselves or their stage accessories. If Shakespeare was fortunate in entering on his London work amidst the full tide of awakened patriotism and public spirit, he was equally fortunate in finding ready to his hand the forms of art in which the rich and complex life of the time could be adequately expressed. During the decade in which Shakespeare left Stratford the play- wright's art had undergone changes so important as to constitute a revolution in the form and spirit of the national drama. For twenty years after the accession of Elizabeth the two roots whence the English drama sprung—the academic or classical, and the popular, devel- oped spontaneously in the line of mysteries, moralities, and interludes—continued to exist apart, and to produce their accustomed fruit independently of each other. The popular drama, it is true, becoming more secular and realistic, enlarged its area by collecting its materials from all sources,—from novels, tales, ballads, and histories,~~

~~*as well as from fairy mythology, local superstitions, and folk- lore. But the incongruous materials were, for the most part, handled in a crude and semi-barbarous way, with just sufficient art to satisfy the cravings and clamours of unlettered audiences. The academic plays, on the other hand, were written by scholars for courtly and cultivated circles, were acted at the universities, the inns of court, and at special public ceremonials, and followed for the most part the recognized and restricted rules of the classic drama. But in the third decade of Elizabeth's reign another dramatic school arose intermediate between the two elder ones, which sought to combine in a newer and' higher form the best elements of both. The main impulse guiding the efforts of the new school may be traced in-directly to a classical source. It was due, not immediately to the masterpieces of Greece and Rome, but to the form which classical art had assumed in the contemporary drama of Italy, France, and Spain, especially of Italy, which was that earliest developed and best known to the new school of poets and dramatists. This southern drama, while academic in its leading features, had nevertheless modern elements blended with the ancient form. As the Italian epics, followinp in the main the older examgles, were still charged with romantic and realistic elements unknown to the classical epic, so the Italian drama, con-structed on the lines of Seneca and Plautus, blended with the severer form essentially romantic features. With the choice of heroic subjects, the orderly development of the plot, the free use of the chorus, the observance of the unities, and constant substitution of narrative for action were united the vivid colouring of poetic fancy and diction, and the use of materials and incidents derived from recent history and contemporary life. The influence of the Italian drama on the new school of English play- wrights was, however, very much restricted to points of style and diction of rhetorical and poetical effect. It helped to produce among them the sense of artistic treat- ment, the conscious effort after higher and more elaborate forms and vehicles of imaginative and passionate expres-sion. For the rest, the rising English drama, in spite of the efforts made by academic critics to narrow its range and limit its interests, retained and thoroughly vindicated its freedom and independence. The central character- istics of the new school are sufficiently explained by the fact that its leading representatives were all of them scholars and poets, living by their wits and gaining a somewhat precarious livelihood amidst the stir*~~

~~*and bustle, the temptations and excitement, of concentrated London life. The distinctive note of their work is the reflex of XXI. — 96*~~

~~*Leading members of the school.*~~

~~*762*~~

~~*their position as academic scholars working under poetic and popular impulses for the public theatres. The new and striking combination in their dramas of elements hitherto wholly separated is but the natural result of their attainments and literary activities. From their univer- sity training and knowledge of the ancients they would be familiar with the technical requirements of dramatic art, the deliberate handling of plot, incident, and char- acter, and the due subordination of parts essential for producing the effect of an artistic whole. Their imagina- tive and emotional sensibility, stimulated by their studies in Southern literature, would naturally prompt them to combine features of poetic beauty and rhetorical finish with the evolution of character and action; while from the popular native drama they derived the breadth of sympathy, sense of humour, and vivid contact with actual life which gave reality and power to their representations.*~~

~~*The leading members of this group or school were Kyd, Greene, Lodge, Nash, Peele, and Marlowe, of whom, in relation to the future development of the drama, Greene, Peele, and Marlowe are the most important and influential. They were alinost the first poets and men of genius who devoted themselves to the production of dramatic pieces for the public theatres. But they all helped to redeem the common stages from the reproach their rude and boisterous pieces had brought upon them, and make the plays represented poetical and artistic as well as lively, bustling, and popular. Some did this rather from a necessity of nature and stress of circumstance than from any higher aim or deliberately formed resolve. But Marlowe, the greatest of them, avowed the redemption of the common stage as the settled purpose of his labours at the outset of his dramatic career. And during his brief and stormy life he nobly discharged the self-imposed task. HIs first play, Zamburline the Great, struck the authentic note of artistic and romantic tragedy. With all its extra- vagance, and over-straining after vocal and rhetorical effects, the play throbs with true*~~

~~*passion and true poetry, and has throughout the stamp of emotional intensity and intellectual power. His later tragedies, while marked by the same features, bring into fuller relief the higher characteristics of his passionate and poetical genius. Alike in the choice of subject and method of treatment Marlowe is thoroughly independent, deriving little, except in the way of general stimulus, either from the classical or popular drama of his day. The signal and far-reaching reform he effected in dramatic metre by the introduction of modulated blank verse illustrates the striking originality of his genius. Gifted with a fine ear for the music of English numbers, and impatient of " the gigging veins of rhyming mother wits," he introduced the noble metre which was at once adopted by his contemporaries and became the vehicle of the great Elizabethan drama. The new metre quickly abolished the rhyming couplets and stanzas that had hitherto prevailed on the popular stage. The rapidity and completeness of this metrical revolution is in itself a powerful tribute to Marlowe's rare insight and feeling as a master of musical expression. The originality and importance of Marlowe's innovation are not*~~

~~*materially affected by the fact that one or two classical |*~~

~~*plays, such as Gorboduc and Jocasta, had been already written in unrhymed verse. In any case these were private plays, and the monotony of cadence and structure in the verse excludes them from anything like serious comparison with the richness and variety of vocal effect produced by the skilful pauses and musical interlinking of Marlowe's heroic metre. Greene and Peele did almost as much for romantic comedy as Marlowe had done for romantic tragedy. Greene's ease and lightness of touch,*~~

~~*his freshness of feeling and play of fancy, his vivid sense*~~

~~*SHAK ESPHAE E*~~

~~*of the pathos and beauty of homely scenes and thorough enjoyment of English rural life, give to his dramatic*~~

~~*| sketches the blended charm of romance and reality hardly*~~

~~*to be found elsewhere except in Shakespeare's early comedies. In special points of lyrical beauty and dramatic portraiture, such as his sketches of pure and devoted women and of witty and amusing clowns, Greenc anticipated some of the more delightful and characteristic features of Shakespearian comedy. Peele's lighter pieces and Lyly's prose comedies helped in the same direction. Although not written for the public stage, Lyly's court comedies were very popular, and Shakespeare evidently gained from their light and easy if somewhat artificial tone, their constant play of witty banter and spark- ling repartee, valuable hints for the prose of his own comedies. Marlowe again prepared the way for another characteristic development of Shakespeare's dramatic art. HIs HIdward II. marks the rise of the historical drama, as distinguished from the older chronicle play, in which the annals of a reign or period were thrown into a series of loose and irregular metrical scenes. Peele's Edward J., Marlowe's HIdward II., and the fine anonymous play of Edward III., in which many critics think Shakespeare's hand may be traced, show how thoroughly the new school had felt the rising national pulse, and how promptly it responded to the popular demand for the dramatic treat- ment of history. The greatness of contemporary events had created a new sense of the grandeur and continuity of the nation's life, and excited amongst all classes a vivid interest in the leading personalities and critical struggles that had marked its progress. There was a strong and general feeling in favour of historical subjects, and especially historical subjects having in them elements of tragical depth and intensity. Shakespeare's own early plays—dealing with the distracted reign of King Jolin, the Wars of the Roses, and the tragical lives of Richard II. and Richard IJI.—illustrate this bent of popular feeling. The demand being met by men of poetical and dramatic genius reacted powerfully on the spirit of the age, helping in turn to illuminate and strengthen its loyal and patriotic sympathies.*~~

~~*This is in fact the key-note of the English stage Superi- It was its ovity*~~

~~*in the great period of its development. breadth of national interest and intensity of tragic power that made the English drama so immeasurably superior to every other contemporary drama in Europe. The Italian drama languished because, though carefully elaborated in point of form,*~~

~~*it had no fulness of national life, no common elements of ethical conviction or aspiration, to vitalize and ennoble it. Even tragedy, in the hands of Italian dramatists, had no depth of human passion, no energy of heroic purpose, to give higher meaning and power to its evolution. In Spain the dominant courtly and ecclesi- astical influences limited the development of the national drama, while in France it remained from the outset under the artificial restrictions of classical and pseudo-classical traditions. Shakespeare's predecessors and contemporaries, in elevating the common stages, and filling them with poetry, music, and passion, had attracted to the theatre all classes, including the more cultivated and refined; and the intelligent interest, energetic patriotism, and robust life of so representative an English audience supplied the strongest stimulus to the more perfect development of the great organ of national expression. The forms of dramatic art, in the three main departments of comedy, tragedy, and historical drama, had been, as we have seen, clearly discriminated and evolved in their earlier stages. It was a moment of supreme promise and expectation, and in the accidents of earth, or, as we may more appropriately and gratefully say, in the ordinances of heaven, the supreme*~~

~~*Shake. speare's dramatic career— first period.*~~

~~*PHAKESPEHEARRE*~~

~~*poet and dramatist appeared to more than fulfil the utmost promise of the time. By right of imperial command over all the resources of imaginative insight and expression Shakespeare combined the rich dramatic materials already prepared into more perfect forms, and carried them to the highest point of ideal development. He quickly surpassed Marlowe in passion, music, and intellectual power ; Greene in lyrical beauty, elegiac grace, and narrative interest; Peele in picturesque touch and pastoral sweetness ; dialogue. And having distanced the utmost efforts of his predecessors and contemporaries he took his own higher way, and reigned to the end without a rival in the new world of supreme dramatic art he had created. It is a new world, because Shakespeare's work alone can be said to possess the organic strength and infinite variety, the throbbing fulness, vital complexity, and breathing truth, of nature herself. In points of*~~

~~*artistic resource and technical ability—such as copious and expressive diction, freshness and pregnancy of verbal combination, richly modulated verse, and structural skill in the handling of incident and action—Shakespeare's supremacy is indeed sufficiently assured. But, after all, it is of course in the spirit and substance of his work, his power of piercing to the hidden centres of character, of touch- ing the deepest springs of impulse and passion, out of which are the issues of life, and of evolving those issues dramatically with a flawless strength, subtlety, and truth, which raises him so immensely above and beyond not only the best of the playwrights who went before him, but the whole line of illustrious dramatists that came after him. It is Shakespeare's unique distinction that he has an absolute command over all the complexities of thought and feeling that prompt to action and bring out the dividing lines of character. He sweeps with the hand of a master the whole gamut of human experience, from the lowest note to the very top of its compass, from the sportive childish treble of Mamilius and the pleading boyish tones of Prince Arthur, up to the spectre-haunted terrors of Macbeth, the tropical passion of Othello, the agonized sense and tortured spirit of Hamlet, the sustained elemental grandeur, the Titanic force and utterly tragical pathos, of Lear.*~~

~~*Shakespeare's active dramatic career in London lasted about twenty years, and may be divided into three tolerably symmetrical periods. The first extends from the year 1587 to about 1593-94; the second from this date to the end of the century ; and the third from 1600 to about 1608, soon after which time Shakespeare ceased to write regularly for the stage, was less in London and more and more at Stratford. Some modern critics add to these a fourth period, including the few plays which from internal as well as external evidence must have been among the poet's latest productions. As the exact dates of these plays are unknown, this period may be taken to extend from 1608 to about 1612. The three dramas produced during these years are, however, hardly entitled to be ranked as a separate period. They may rather be regarded as supplementary to the grand series of dramas belonging to the third and greatest epoch of Shakespeare's pro- ductive power. To the first period belong Shakespeare's early tentative efforts in revising and partially rewriting plays produced by others that already had possession of the stage. These*~~

~~efforts are illustrated in the three parts of Henry VI, especially the second and third parts, which bear decisive marks of Shakespeare's hand, and were toa great extent recast and rewritten by him. It is clear from the internal evidence thus supplied that Shakespeare was at first powerfully affected by '"Marlowe's mighty line." This influence is so marked in the revised second~~

~~and Lyly in bright and sparkling |~~

~~and third parts of Henry VI. as to induce some critics to believe Marlowe must have had a hand in the revision. These passages are, however, sufficiently explained by the fact of Marlowe's influence during the first period of Shakespeare's career. To the same period also belong the earliest tragedy, that of Titus Andronicus, and the three comedies—Love's Labour 's Lost, The Comedy of Errors, and the Z'wo Gentlemen of Verona. These dramas are all marked by the dominant literary influences of the time. They present features obviously due to the revived and widespread knowledge of classical literature, as well as to the active interest in the literature of Italy and the South. Titus Andronicus, in many of jts characteristic features, reflects the form of Roman tragedy almost universally accepted and followed in the earlier period of the drama. This form was supplied by the Latin plays of Seneca, their darker colours being deepened by the moral effect of the judicial tragedies and military conflicts of the time. The execution of the Scottish queen and the Catholic con- spirators who had acted in her name, and the destruction of the Spanish Armada, had given an impulse to tragic representations of an extreme type. This was undoubtedly rather fostered than otherwise by the favourite exemplars of Roman tragedy. The Medea and Thyestes of Seneca are crowded with pagan horrors of the most revolting kind. It is true these horrors are usually related, not represented, although in the Medea the maddened heroine kills her children on the stage. But from these tragedies the conception of the physically horrible as an element of tragedy was imported into the early English drama, and intensified by the realistic tendency which the events of the time and the taste of their ruder audiences had impressed upon the common stages. This tendency is~~

~~exemplified in Zitus Andronicus, obviously a very early work, the signs of youthful effort being apparent not only in the acceptance of so coarse a type of tragedy but in the crude handling of character and motive, and the want of har- mony in working out the details of the dramatic concep- tion. Kyd was the most popular contemporary repre- sentative of the bloody school, and in the leading motives of treachery, concealment, and revenge there are points of likeness between Zitus Andronicus and the Spanish Tragedy. But how promptly and completely Shake- speare's nobler nature turned from this lower type is apparent from the fact that he not only never reverted to it but indirectly ridicules the piled-up horrors and extra-vagant language of Kyd's plays.~~

~~The early comedies in the same way are marked by the dominant literary influences of the time, partly classic partly Italian. In the Comedy of Errors, for example, Shakespeare attempted a humorous play of the old classi- cal type, the general plan and many details being derived directly from Plautus. In Love's Labour '*s Lost many characteristic features of Italian comedy are freely intro- duced : the pedant Holofernes, the curate Sir Nathaniel, the fantastic braggadocio soldier Armado, are all well-known characters of the contemporary Italian drama. Of this comedy, indeed, Gervinus says, "the tone of the Italian school prevails here more than in any other play. The redundance of wit is only to be compared with a similar redundance of conceit in Shakespeare's narrative poems, and with the Italian style which he had early adopted." These comedies display another sign of early work in the mechanical exactness of the plan and a studied symmetry in the grouping of the chief personages of the drama. In the Zwo Gentlemen of Verona, as Prof. Dowden points out, "Proteus the fickle is set against Valentine the faithful, Silvia the light and intellectual against Julia the ardent and tender, Lance the humourist against Speed the wit." So in Love's Labour 's Lost, the king and his three fellow-~~

~~Second period.~~

~~students balance the princess and her three ladies, and there is a symmetrical play of incident between the two groups. The arrangement is~~

~~*obviously more artificial than spontaneous, more mechanical than vital and organic. But towards the close of the first period Shakespeare had fully realized his own power and was able to dispense with these artificial supports. Indeed, having rapidly gained knowledge and experience, he had before the close written plays of a far higher character than any which even the ablest of his contemporaries had produced. He had firmly laid the foundation of his future fame in the direction both of comedy and tragedy, for, besides the comedies already referred to, the first sketches of Hamlet and Romeo and Juliet, and the tragedy of Richard III., may probably be referred to this period.*~~

~~*Another mark of early work belonging to these dramas is the lyrical and elegiac tone and treatment associated with the use of rhyme, of rhyming couplets and stanzas. Spenser's musical verse had for the time elevated the character of rhyming metres by identifying them with the highest kinds of poetry, and Shakespeare was evidently at first affected by this powerful impulse. He rhymed with great facility, and delighted in the gratification of his lyrical fancy and feeling which the more musical rhyming metres afforded. Rhyme accordingly has a considerable and not inappropriate place in the earlier romantic comedies. The Comedy of Errors has indeed been de- scribed as a kind of lyrical farce in which the opposite qualities of elegiac beauty and comic effect are happily blended. Rhyme, however, at this period of the poet's work is not restricted to the comedies. It is largely used in the tragedies and histories as well, and plays even an important part in historical drama so late as Richard II. Shakespeare appears, however, to have worked out this favourite vein, and very much taken leave of it, by the publication of his descriptive and narrative poems, the Venus and Adonis and the Lucrece, although the enormous popularity of these poems might almost have tempted him to return again to the abandoned metrical form. The only considerable exception to the disuse of rhyming metres and lyrical treatment is supplied by the Sonnets, which, though not published till 1609, were probably begun early, soon after the poems, and written at intervals during eight or ten of the intervening years. Into the many vexed questions connected with the history and meaning of these poems it is impossible to enter. The attempts recently made by the Rev. W. A. Harrison and Mr T. Tyler to identify the "dark lady" of the later sonnets,*~~

~~*while of some historical interest, cannot be regarded as successful. And the identification, even if rendered more probable by the discovery of fresh evidence, would not clear up the difficulties, biographical, literary, and historical, con- nected with these exquisite poems. It is perhaps enough to say with Prof. Dowden that in Shakespeare's case the most natural interpretation is the best, and that, so far as they throw light on his personal character, the sonnets show that "he was capable of measureless personal devotion; that he was tenderly sensitive, sensitive above all to every diminution or alteration of that love his heart so eagerly craved; and that, when wronged, although he suffered anguish, he transcended his private injury and learned to forgive."*~~

~~*Whatever question may be raised with regard to the superiority of some of the plays belonging to the first period of Shakespeare's dramatic career, there can be no question at allas to any of the pieces belonging to the second period, which extends to the end of the century. During these years Shakespeare works as a master, having complete command over the materials and resources of the most mature and flexible dramatic art. "To this stage,"*~~

~~*SHAKES PEAT II*~~

~~*says Mr Swinburne, " belongs the special faculty of fault- less, joyous, facile command upon each faculty required of the presiding genius for service or for sport. It is in the middle period of his work that the language of Shake- speare is most limpid in its fulness, the style most pure, the thought most transparent through the close and luminous raiment of perfect expression." This period includes the magnificent series of historical plays—Richard If., the two parts of Henry IV., and Henry V.i—and a double series of brilliant comedies. The Midsummer*~~

~~*Jight's Dream, All's Well that ends Well, and the Mer- chant of Venice were produced before 1598, and during the next three years there appeared a still more complete and characteristic group including Much ado about No- thing, As you Like it, and Twelfth Night. These comedies and historical plays are all marked by a rare harmony of reflective and imaginative insight, perfection of creative art, and completeness of dramatic effect. Before the close of this period, in 1598, Francis Meres*~~

~~*paid his cele- brated tribute to Shakespeare's superiority in lyrical, descriptive, and dramatic poetry, emphasizing his un- rivalled distinction in the three main departments of the drama,—comedy, tragedy, and historical play. And from this time onwards the contemporary recognitions of Shakespeare's eminence as a poet and dramatist rapidly multiply, the critics and eulogists being in most cases well entitled to speak with authority on the subject.*~~

~~*In the third period of Shakespeare's dramatic career Third years had evidently brought enlarged vision, wider Period.*~~

~~*thoughts, and deeper experiences. While the old mastery of art remains, the works belonging to this period seem to bear traces of more intense moral struggles, larger and less joyous views of human life, more troubled, complex, and profound conceptions and emotions. Comparatively few marks of the lightness and animation of the earlier works remain, but at the same time the dramas of this period display an unrivalled power of piercing the deepest mysteries and sounding the most tremendous and perplex- ing problems of human life and human destiny. To this period belong the four great tragedies—IHamlet, Macbeth, Othello, Lear; the three Roman plays—Coriolanus, Julius Cesar, Anthony and Cleopatra; the two singular plays whose scene and personages are Greek but whose action and meaning are wider and deeper than either Greek or Roman life—Troddus and Cressida and Timon of Athens ; and one comedy—AJfeasure for Measure, which is almost tragic in the depth and intensity of its characters and incidents. The four great tragedies represent the highest reach of Shakespeare's dramatic power, and they sufficiently illustrate the range and complexity of the deeper problems that now occupied his mind. Timon and Measure for Measure, however, exemplify the same tendency to brood with meditative intensity over the wrongs and miseries that afflict humanity. These works sufficiently prove that during this period Shakespeare gained a disturbing insight into the deeper evils of the world, arising from the darker passions, such as treachery and revenge. But it is also clear that, with the larger vision of a noble, well-poised nature, he at the same time gained a fuller perception of the deeper springs of goodness in human nature, of the great virtues of invincible fidelity and unwearied love, and*~~

~~*he evidently received not only consolation and calm but new stimulus and power from the fuller realization of these virtues. The typical plays of this period thus embody Shakespeare's ripest experience of the great issues of life. In the four grand tragedies the central problem is a profoundly moral one. It is the supreme internal conflict of good and evil amongst the central forces and higher elements of human nature, as appealed to and developed by sudden and powerful temptation, smitten by accumu-*~~

~~*Later personal history.*~~

~~*SHAKESPEARE*~~

~~*lated wrongs, or plunged in overwhelming calamities, As the result, we learn that there is something infinitely more precious in life than social ease or worldly success—noble- ness of soul, fidelity to truth and honour, human love and loyalty, strength and tenderness, and trust to the very end. In the most tragic experiences this fidelity to all that is best in life is only possible through the loss of life itself. But when Desdemona expires with a sigh and Cordelia's loving eyes are closed, when Hamlet no more draws his breath in pain and the tempest-tossed Lear is at last liberated from the rack of this tough world, we feel that, death having set his sacred seal on their great sorrows and greater love, they remain with us aS possessions for ever. In the three dramas belonging to Shakespeare's last period, or rather which may be said to close his dramatic career, the same feeling of severe but consolatory calm is still more apparent. If the deeper discords of life are not finally resolved, the virtues which soothe their perplexities and give us courage and endurance to wait, as well as confidence to trust the final issues,—the virtues of forgive- ness and generosity, of forbearance and self-control,—are largely illustrated. This is a characteristic feature in each of these closing dramas, in the Winter's Tale, Cymbeline, and the Tempest. The Tempest is supposed, on tolerably good grounds, to be Shakespeare's last work, and in it we see the great magician, having gained by the wonderful experience of life, and the no less wonderful practice of his art, serene wisdom, clear and enlarged vision, and beneficent self-control, break his magical wand and retire from the scene of his triumphs to the home he had chosen amidst the*~~

~~woods and meadows of the Avon, and surrounded by the family and friends he loved.~~

~~We must now briefly summarize the few remaining facts of the poet's personal history. The year 1596 was marked by considerable family losses. In August Shake- speare's only son Hamnet died in the twelfth year of his age. With his strong domestic affections and cherished hopes of founding a family, the early death of his only boy must have been for his father a severe blow. It was followed in December by the death of Shakespeare's uncle Henry, the friend of his childhood and youth, the protector and encourager of his boyish sports and enterprises at Bearley, Snitterfield, and Fulbroke. A few months later the Shake- speare household at Snitterfield, so intimately associated for more than half a century with the family in Henley Street, was finally broken up by the death of the poet's aunt Margaret, his uncle Henry's widow. Although the death of his son and heir had diminished the poet's hope of founding a family, he did not in any way relax his efforts to secure a permanent and comfortable home for his wife and daughters at Stratford. As early as 1597, when he had pursued his London career for little more than ten years, he had saved enough to purchase the considerable dwelling- house in New Place, Stratford, to which he afterwards retired. This house, originally built by Sir Hugh Clop- ton and called the "Great House," was one of the largest mansions in the town, and the fact of Shakespeare having acquired such a place as his family residence would at once increase his local importance. From time to time he made additional purchases of land about the house aud in the neighbourhood. In 1602 he largely increased the property by acquiring 107 acres of arable land, and later on he added to this 20 acres of pasture land, with a convenient cottage and garden in Chapel Lane, oppo- site the lower grounds of the house. Within a few years his property thus comprised a substantial dwelling-house with large garden and extensive outbuildings, a cottage fronting the lower road, and about 137 acres of arable and pasture land. During these years Shakespeare made another important purchase that added considerably to his~~

~~*income. From the letter of a Stratford burgess to a friend in London, it appears that as early as 1597 Shakespeare had been making inquiry about the purchase of tithes in the town and neighbourhood. And in 1605 he bought the unexpired lease of tithes, great and small, in Stratford and two adjoining hamlets, the lease having still thirty years torun. This purchase yielded him an annual income of £38 a year, equal to upwards of £350 a year of our present money. The last purchase of property made by Shakespeare of which we have any definite record is at once so interesting and so perplexing as to have stimulated various conjectures on the part of his biographers. This purchase carries us away from Stratford back to London, to the immediate neighbourhood of Shakespeare's dramatic labours and triumphs. It seems that in March 1613 he bought a house with a piece of ground attached to it a little to the south-west of St Paul's cathedral, and not far from the Blackfriars theatre. The purchase of this house in London after he had been for some years settled at Stratford has led some critics to suppose that Shakespeare had not given up all thought of returning to the metropolis, or at least of spending part of the year there with his family in the neighbourhood he best knew and where he was best known. The ground of this supposition is, however, a good deal destroyed by the fact that soon after acquiring this town house Shakespeare let it for a lease of ten years. He may possibly have bought the property as a convenience to some of his old friends who were associated with him in the purchase. In view of future contingencies it would obviously be an advantage to have a substantial dwelling so near the theatre in the hands of a friend. It was indeed by means of a similar purchase that James Burbage had originally started and established the Blackfriars theatre.*~~

~~*The year 1607-8 would be noted in Shakespeare's family calendar as one of vivid and chequered domestic experiences. On the 5th of June his eldest daughter Susanna, who seems to have inherited something of her father's genius, was married to Dr John Hall, a medical man of more than average knowledge and ability, who had a considerable practice in the neighbourhood of Stratford, and who was deservedly held in high repute. The newly married couple settled in one of the picturesque houses of the wooded suburb between the town and the church known as Old Stratford. But before the end of the year the midsummer marriage bells*~~

~~*had changed to sadder music. In December Shakespeare lost his youngest brother, Edmund, at the early age of twenty-seven. He had become an actor, most probably through his brother's help and influence, and was, at the time of his death, living in London. He was buried at Southwark on the last day of the year. Two months later there was family rejoicing in Dr Hall's house at the birth of a daughter, christened Elizabeth, the only offspring of the union, and the only grandchild Shakespeare lived to gee. The rejoicing at this event would be fully shared by the house- hold in New Place, and especially by Shakespeare. himself, whose cherished family hopes would thus be strengthened and renewed. Six months later in this eventful year, fortune again turned her wheel. Early in September Shakespeare's mother, Mary Arden of the Asbies, died, having lived long enough to see and welcome her great- grandchild as a fresh bond of family life. She was buried at Stratford on the 9th of September, having survived her husband, who was buried on the Sth of September 1601, exactly seven years. Mary Shakespeare died full of years and honour and coveted rewards. For more than a decade she had witnessed and shared the growing pro- sperity of her eldest son, and felt the mother's thrill of joy and pride in the success that had crowned his brilliant*~~

~~*career. The loss of his mother would be deeply felt by her favourite son, but there was no bitterness in the bereave- ment, and it even seems to have exerted a tranquillizing, elevating effect on the poet's mind and character. As he laid her in the grave he would recall and realize afresh the early years during which her loving presence and influence were the light and guide of his boyish life. With these vivid and varied family experiences a strong wave of home- yearning seems to have set in, which gradually drew the poet wholly back to Stratford. During the autumn visit connected with his mother's death Shakespeare must have remained several weeks at the New Place, for on the 16th of October he acted as godfather to the infant son of an old personal friend, Henry Walker, who was an alderman of the borough. The child was called William after his godfather, and the poet must have taken a special interest in the boy, as he remembered him in his will.*~~

~~*It seems most probable that soon after the chequered*~~

~~*Stratford. domestic events of this year, as soon as he could con-*~~

~~*veniently terminate his London engagements, Shake- speare decided on retiring to his native place. He had gained all he cared for in the way of wealth and fame, and his strongest interests, personal and relative, were now centred in Stratford. But on retiring to settle in his native town he had nothing of the dreamer, the sentiment- alist, or the recluse about him. His healthy natural feeling was far too strong, his character too manly and well-balanced, to admit of any of the so-called eccentricities of genius. He retired as a successful professional man who had gained a competence by his own exertions and wished to enjoy it at leisure in a simple, social, rational way. He knew that the competence he had gained, the lands and wealth he possessed, could only be preserved, like other valuable possessions, by good management and careful husbandry. And, taught by the sad experience of his earlier years, he evidently guided the business details of his property with a firm and skilful hand, was vigilant and scrupulously just in his dealings, respecting the rights of others, and, if need be, enforcing his own. He sued his careless and negligent debtors in the local court of record, had various commercial transactions with the corporation, and took an active interest in the affairs of the borough. And he went now and then to London, partly on business connected with the town, partly no doubt to look after the administration and ultimate dis-posal of his own theatrical property, and partly it may be assumed for the pleasure of seeing his old friends and fellow dramatists. Even at Stratford, however, Shake- speare was not entirely cut off from his old associates in arts and letters, his hospitable board being brightened at intervals by the presence, and animated by the wit, humour, and kindly gossip, of one or more of his chosen friends. Two amongst the most cherished of lis com-panions and fellow poets, Drayton and Ben Jonson, had paid a visit of this kind to Stratford, and been entertained by Shakespeare only a few days before his death, which occurred almost suddenly on the 23d of April 1616. After three days' illness the great poet was carried off by a sharp attack of fever, at that time one of the commonest scourges, even of country towns, and often arising then as now, only more frequently then than now, from the neglect of proper sanitary precautions. According to*~~

~~*tradition the 23d of April was Shakespeare's birthday, so |*~~

~~*that he died on the completion of the 52d year of his age. Three days later he was laid in the chancel of Stratford church, on the north wall of which his monument, contain- ing his bust and epitaph, was soon afterwards placed, most probably by the poet's son-in-law, Dr John Hall. Shake- speare's widow, the Anne Hathaway of his youth, died in 1623, having survived the poet seven years, exactly the*~~

~~*bearings to John Shakespeare in the year 1596.*~~

~~*SHAKTSPEL Ars.*~~

~~*same length of time that his mother Mary Arden had out- lived her husband. Elizabeth Hall, the poet's grandchild, was married twice, first to Mr Thos. Nash of Stratford, and in 1649, when she had been two years a widow, to Mr afterwards Sir John Barnard of Abington in North- amptonshire. Lady Barnard had no family by either husband, and the three children of the poet's second daughter Judith (who had married Richard Quiney of Stratford, two months before her father's death) all died comparatively young. At Lady Barnard's death in 1670 the family of the poet thus become extinct. By his will made a few weeks before his death Shakespeare left his landed property, the whole of his real estate indeed, to his eldest daughter Mrs Susanna Hall, under strict entail to her heirs. He left also a substantial legacy to his second daughter and only remaining child Mrs Judith Quiney, and a remembrance to several of his friends, including his old associates at the Blackfriars theatre, Burbage, Heminge, and Condell,—the two latter of whom edited the first col- lection of his dramas published in 1623. The will also included a bequest to the poor of Stratford.*~~

~~*From this short sketch it will be seen that all the best Summary known facts of Shakespeare's personal history bring into flifeand |*~~

~~*vivid relief the simplicity and naturalness of his tastes, his love of the country, the strength of his domestic affec- tions, and the singularly firm hold which the conception of family life had upon his imagination, his sympathies, and his schemes of active labour. He had loved the country with ardent enthusiasm in his youth, when all nature was lighted with the dawn of rising passion and kindled imagination ; and after his varied*~~

~~London experi- ence we may well believe that he loved it still more with a deeper and calmer love of one who had looked through and through the brilliant forms of wealthy display, public magnificence, and courtly ceremonial, who had scanned the heights and sounded the depths of existence, and who felt that for the king and beggar alike this little life of feverish joys and sorrows is soothed by natural influences, cheered by sunlight and green shadows, softened by the perennial charm of hill and dale and rippling stream, and when the spring returns no more is rounded with a sleep. In the more intimate circle of human relationships he seems clearly to have realized that the sovereign elixir against the ills of life, the one antidote of its struggles and difficulties, its emptiness and unrest, is vigilant charity, faithful love in all its forms, love of home, love of kindred, love of friends, love of everything simple, just, and true. The larger and more sacred group of those serene and abiding influences flowing from well-centred affections was naturally identified with family ties, and it is clear that the unity and continuity of family life pos- sessed Shakespeare's imagination with the strength of a dominant passion and largely determined the scope and direction of his practical activities. As we have seen, he displayed from the first the utmost prudence and foresight in securing a comfortable home for his family, and provid- ing for the future welfare of his children, The desire of his heart evidently was to take a good position and found a family in his native place. And if this was a weakness he shares it with other eminent names in the republic of letters. In Shakespeare's case the desire may have been inherited, not only from his father, who had pride, energy, and ambition, but especially from his gently descended mother, Mary Arden of the Asbies. But, whatever its source, the evidence in favour of this cherished desire is unusually full, clear, and decisive. While the poet had no doubt previously assisted his father to retrieve his position in the world, the first important step in building~~

~~up the family name was the grant of arms or ese e~~

~~SHAKESPEARE~~

~~father, it may be assumed, had applied to the heralds' college for the grant at the instance and by the help of his son. In this document, the~~

~~*draft of which is still preserved, the grounds on which the arms are given are stated as two :—(1) because John Shakespeare's ancestors had rendered valuable services to HHenry VII.; and (2) that he had married Mary, daughter and one of the heirs of Robert Arden of Wilmcote, in the said county, gentle- man. In the legal conveyances of property to Shake- speare himself after the grant of arms he is uniformly described as 'William Shakespeare of Stratford-upon- Avon, gentleman." HHe is so described in the midst of his London career, and this sufficiently indicates that Stratford was even then regarded as his permanent resid- ence or home. In the following year another important Step was taken towards establishing the position of the family. This was an application by John and Mary Shakespeare to the Court of Chancery for the recovery of the estate of the Asbies, which, under the pressure of family difficulties, had been mortgaged in 1578 to Edward Lambert. The issue of the suit is not known, but, as we have seen, the pleadings on either side occupy a consider- able space and show how resolutely John Shakespeare was bent on recovering his wife's family estate.*~~

~~*Turning to the poet himself, we have the significant fact that during the next ten years he continued, with steady persistency, to build up the family fortunes by investing all his savings in real property,—in houses and land at Stratford. While many of his associates and partners in the Blackfriars company remained on in London, living and dying there, Shakespeare seems to have early realized his theatrical property for the sake of increasing the acreage of his arable and pasture land in the neighbourhood of Strat- ford. In 1598, the year after the purchase of New Place, his family are not only settled there, but he is publicly ranked among the most prosperous and well-to-do citizens of Stratford. In that year, there being some anticipation of a scarcity of corn, an official statement was drawn up as to the amount of wheat in the town. From the list con- tained in this document of the chief houscholders in Chapel Ward, where New Place was situated, we find that out of twenty holders of corn enumerated only two have more in stock than William Shakespeare. Other facts belonging to the same year, such as the successful appeal of a fellow-townsman for important pecuniary help, and the suggestion from an alderman of the borough that, for the sake of securing certain private and public benefits, he should be encouraged to complete a contemplated*~~

~~*purchase of land at Shottery, show that Shakespeare was now recognized as a local proprietor of wealth and influence, and that he had so far realized his early desire of taking a good position in the town and neighbourhood. It will be noted, too, that all the leading provisions of Shakespeare's will embody the same cherished family purpose. Instead of dividing his property between his two daughters, he left, as we have seen, the whole of his estate, the whole of his real property indeed, to his eldest daughter Mrs Susanna Hall, with a strict entail to the heirs of her body. This indicates in the strongest manner the fixed desire of his heart to take a permanent position in the locality, and, if possible, strike the family roots deeply into their native soil. That this purpose was realized in his own case seems clear from the special respect paid to his memory. He was buried, as we have seen, in the chancel of the parish church, where as a rule only persons of family and position could be interred. His monument, one of the most considerable in the church, holds a place of honour on the north wall of the chancel, just above the altar railing. While this tribute of marked official respect may be due in part, as the epitaph intimates, to his*~~

~~*167*~~

~~*eminence as a poet, it was no doubt, in a country district like Stratford, due still more to his local importance as a landed proprietor of wealth and position. Indeed, as a holder of the great tithes he was by custom and courtesy entitled to burial in the chancel, ;*~~

~~*If there is truth in the early tradition that Shakespeare originally left Stratford in consequence of the sharp prose- cution of Sir Thomas Lucy, who resented with narrow bitterness and pride the presumption and audacity of the high-spirited youth found trespassing on his grounds, the victim of his petty wrath was in the end amply avenged. After a career of unexampled success in London Shake- Speare returned to his native town crowned with wealth and honours, and, having spent the last years of his life in cordial intercourse with his old friends and fellow towns- men, was followed to the grave with the affectionate respect and regret of the whole Stratford community, This feeling was indeed, we may justly assume, fully shared by all who had ever known the great poet. His con- temporaries*~~

~~*and associates unanimously bear witness to Shakespeare's frank, honourable, loving nature. Perhaps the most striking expression of this common feeling comes from one who in character, disposition, and culture was so different from Shakespeare as his friend and fellow-dramatist Ben Jonson. Even his rough and cynical temper could not resist the charm of Shakespeare's genial character and gracious ways. "T loved the man," he says, "and do honour his memory on this side idolatry as much as any. He was indeed honest, and of an open and free nature, had an excellent phantasy, brave notions, and gentle expressions." As the genius of Shakespeare united the most opposite gifts, so amongst his friends are found the widest diversity of character, endowment, and disposition, This is only another way of indicating the breadth of his sympathies, the variety of his interests, the largeness and exuberant vitality of his whole nature. He touched life at so many points, and responded so in- stinctively to every movement in the complex web of its throbbing activities, that nothing affecting humanity was alien either to his heart or brain. To one so gifted with the power of looking below the surface of custom and con- vention, and perceiving, not only the deeper elements of tapture and anguish to which ordinary eyes are blind, but the picturesque, humorous, or pathetic varieties of the common lot, every form of human experience, every type of character, would have an attraction of its own. 'Tn the view of such a mind nothing would be common or unclean, To Shakespeare all aspects of life, even the humblest, had points of contact with his own. He could talk simply and naturally without a touch of patronage or condescen- sion to a hodman on his ladder, a costermonger at his stall, the tailor on his board, the cobbler in his combe, the hen-wife in her poultry-yard, the ploughman in his furrow, or the base mechanicals at the wayside country inn. He could watch with full and humorous appreciation the various forms of brief authority and petty officialism, the bovine stolidity and empty consequence of the local Dogberries and Shallows, the strange oaths and martial swagger of a Pistol, a Bardolph, or a Parolles, the pedantic talk of a Holofernes, the pragmatical saws of a Polonius, or the solemn absurdities of a self-cunceited Malvolio. On the other hand he could seize from the inner side by links of vital affinity every form of higher character, pas- sionate, reflective, or executive,—lover and prince, duke and captain, legislator and judge, counsellor and king, — and portray*~~

~~with almost equal ease and with vivid truth- fulness men and women of distant ages, of different races, and widely sundered nationalities.~~

~~As in his dramatic world he embraces the widest variety of human experience, so in his personal character he may~~

~~768~~

~~be said to have combined in harmonious union the widest range of qualities, including some apparently the most opposed. He was a vigilant and acute man of business, of great executive ability, with a power of looking into affairs which included a thorough mastery of tedious legal details. But with all his worldly prudence and foresight he was at the same time the most generous and affectionate of men, honoured and loved by all who knew him, with the irre- sistible charm that belongs to simplicity and directness of | character, combined with thoughtful sympathy and real | kindness of heart. And, while displaying unrivalled skill, sagacity, and firmness in business transactions and practical | affairs, he could promptly throw the whole burden aside, and — in the exercise of his noble art pierce with an eagle's wing the very highest heaven of invention. That indeed was his native air, his true home, his permanent sphere, where he still rules with undisputed sway. He occupies a throne apart in the ideal and immortal kingdom of supreme creative art, poetical genius, and dramatic truth. (2388s)~~

~~BIBLIOGRAPHY.! I. Principat CoLLectivE EpiTi0ns.~~

~~he oa Date. Be Editors, Publishers, &c. ne 1623 | P. | 1stfolio, J. Heminge and H. Condell (Jaggard & Blount) [reprinted by J. Wright (1807, folio) and by L. Booth (1862-4, 8 vols. 4to), photo-lithographic facsimile by lI. Staunton (1866, folio), reduced by J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, 1876, 8yo]. 1632 | P. | 2d folio (Cotes). : 1663, 64; P. | 3d folio (Chetwinde). 1685 | P. | 4th folio. 1709 | W. | 1st 8vo, Rowe (Tonson), 7 vols., plates. 1723-25) W. | A. Pope (Tonson), 7 vols. 4to. 1733 | W. | L, Theobald (Tonson), 7 vols. 8yo, plates. 1743,44| P. | Sir T. Hanmer (Oxford), 6 vols. 4to, plates. 1747 |} P. | Bp. Warburton, 8 vols. 8vo. 1765 | P. | Dr 8. Johnson (Tonson), 8 vols. Syo. 1767 | P. | E. Capell (Tonson), 10 vols. sm. 8vo. 1773 | P. | Johnson and G. Steevens, 10 vols. 8vo. 1773-75) P. | "Stage ed." (Bell), 8~~

~~vols. 12mo, plates. 1790 | W. | E. Malone (Baldwin), first ‘ Variorum ed.,” 10 vols. sm. Svo. 1793 | P. | Jonson and Steevens’s 4th ed., by I. Reed, 15 vols. 8vo. 1795-96) W. | Ist American ed,, 8. Johnson (Philadelphia), 8 vols. 12mo. 1799-) | yy | Ist Continental ed. (Brunswick), 8 vols, 8vo; repr. of 1793 ed. at 1801 ; . Basel, 1799-1802, 23 vols. 8vo. 1802 | P. | Boydell’s illus. ed. (Bulmer), 9 vols. fol., plates, and 2 additional yols. 1805 | P. | A. Chalmers, 9 vols. 8yo, Fuseli’s plates, 1807 | P. | Heath’s cngravings, 6 vols. imp. 4to. 1818 | P, | T. Bowdler’s “‘ Family ed.,” complete, 10 vols. 18mo. 1821 | W. | E. Malone, by J. Boswell, “ Variorum ed.,” 21 vols. 8yo. 1825 | P. | Rev. W. Harness, 8 vols. 8vo. 1826 | P. |S. W. Singer (Pickering), 10 vols. 1smo, woodcuts. 1829 | P. | 1st French ed. (Baudry), 8vo. 1830 | W. | L. Ticck (Leipsic), roy. 8vo. 1832-34] W. | J. Valpy, “ Cabinet Pictorial ed.,” 15 vols. sm. 8vo. 1838-43) W. | C. Knight, ‘ Pictorial ed.,” 8 vols, imp. 8vo. 1839-43) W. | B. Cornwall, 3 vols. imp, 8vo, woodcuts by Kenny Meadows. 1841-44) W. | J. P. Collier, 8 vols. 8vo. 1842-44) W. | C. Knight, “ Library ed.,” 12 vols. 8vo, woodcuts. 1844 | P. | O. W. Peabody (Boston, U.S.), 7 vols. 8yo. 1847 | P. | Dr G. C. Verplanck (N.Y.), 3 vols. roy. 8yo, woodcuts. 1851 | W. | W. Hazlitt, 4 vols. 12mo. 1852 | P. | ‘Lansdowne ed.,” (White), Svo. 1852-57) W. | Rey. H. N. Hudson (Boston, U.S.), 11 vols. 12mo. 1853 | P. | J. P. Collier (see Payne Collier Controversy, p. 7 71), 8vo. 1853-65] W. | J. O. Halliwell, 16 vols. folio, plates. 1854-65] W. | N. Delius (Elberfeld), 8 vols. 8vo. 1856 | P. | Singer and W. W. Lloyd (Bell), 10 vols. 12mo. 1857 | W. | Rey. A. Dyce (Moxon), 6 vols. 8vo, 2d ed., 1864-67, 1857-60) W. | R. G. White (Boston, U.S.), 12 vols. er. 8vo. 1858-60) W. | H. Staunton, 3 vols. roy. 8vo, illustrated by Sir J. Gilbert. 1860 | W. | Mrs Cowden Clarke (N.Y.), 2 vols. roy. 8vo. 1863-66} W. | W. G. ie J. Glover, and W. A. Wright, ‘Cambridge ed.,” 9 vols. 8vo0. 1864 | P. | J. B. Marsh, “ Reference ed.,” large 8vo. 1865-69) P. | C. au a C, Clarke (Cassell), illustrated by 11. C. Selous, 3 vols. a. 8vo. 1872-74| P. | C, Knight, “Imperial,” 4 vols. imp. 4to, plates. 1872&c,| P. | A. A. Paton, “ Hamnet ed.,” 8vo, in progress (1886). 1873éc.| P. | H. (isso “ Variorum ed.” (Phil.), yols. 1-6, 8yo, in progress 1874 | W.| W_G. Clark and W. A. Wright, “ Globe,” sm. 8yo. 1875 | W. | S. Neil, ‘“‘ Library Shakespeare,” (Mackenzic), 8 vols. 4to, illus. 1876 | W. | G. L. Duyckinck (Phil.), large 8vo, illus. 1877 | W. | N. Delius (F. J. Furnivall), “ Leopold” Shakespeare, 4to. 1878 | W. | J. 8. Hart, “ Avon ed.” (Phil.), large 8vo, portraits. 1881 | W. | Rey. H. N. lludson, “ Harvard ed. ” (Boston, USS.),~~

~~20 vols. 12mo. 1883 | P, | C. Wordsworth, “ Historical Plays,” 3 vols. sm. 8vo. 1884 | W. | Rolfe’s “ lriendly ed.,” 20 vols, 16mo (N.Y.).~~

~~(G. Steevens, Twenty of the Plays, 1766, 4 vols. 8yvo, contains reprints of the early editions. 48 vols. of the quartos were facsimiled by E. W. Ashbec (1866-7 1), under the superintend- ence of Halliwell; photo-lithographic reproductions of early editions by Griggs and Pretorius, with introductions by Furnivall, &c., 1878, &c., are now being published; 28 out of 38 vols. 4to have been issued.] |~~

~~1 This is an attempt to supply the want of a select classified bibliography of the literature connected with Shakespeare. Great compression has been~~

~~H. SELECTIONS AND READINGS.~~

~~J. R. Pitman, The School §., 1822, 8v0; B. H. Smart, 8. Readings, 1839, 12mo; Howell, Seleet Plays, 1848, 12mo, Roman Catholic ; C. Kean, Seleetions, as at the Princess’ Theatre, 1860, 2 vols. sm. 8vo; T. and Rey. S. G. Bul- finch, S. adapted for Reading Classes and the Family, Boston, 1865, 12mo ; W. A. Wright, Select Plays, 1869-86, 14 vols. sm. 8vo; R. J. Lane (editor), C. Kemble’s 8. Readings, 1870, sm. 8vo; R. Baughan, Plays, Abridged and Revised for Girls, 1871, 8vo ; Hl. N. Hudson, Plays, seleeted, Boston, 1872, 3 vols. sm. 8vo; 8. Brandram, Selected Plays, abridged for the Young, 1882, sm. 8vo.~~

~~Hi. PRINCIPAL TRANSLATIONS OF WORKS.~~

~~German.—C. M. Wieland, 1762-6, 8 vols. 8vo; J. J. Eschenburg, 1775-82, 13 vols. 8vo; A. W. v. Schlegel, 1797-1810, 9 vols. 8vo; J. H. and H. and A. Voss, 1818-29, 9 vols. 8vo; J. W. O. Benda, 1825-6, 19 vols. 16mo; J, Meyer aud H. Déring, 1824-34, 52 pts. 18mo; Schlegel-Tieck, 1825-33, 9 vols. 12mo uP. Kaufmann, 1830-6, 4 vols. 12mo; E. Ortlepp, 1838-9, 16 vols. 12mo; Schlegel- Tieck-Ulrici, 1867-71, 12 vols. 8vo; F. Bodenstedt, 1867-71, 38 vols. sm. Svo; Schlegel-Tieck-Bernays, 1871-3, 12 vols, sm. 8vo. French.—Letourneur, 1776-82, 20 vols. 8vo; Letourneur-Guizot, 1821, 13 vols. 8vo; B. Laroche, 1838-9, 2 vols. roy. 8vo; Francisque-~~

~~*Michel, 1839-40, 8 vols. roy. 8vo; F, Victor Hugo fils, 1859-62, 12 vols. 8vo; E. Montégut, 1868-73, 10 vols. 12mo. Ttalian.—M. Leoni, 1814-5, 8 vols. 8vo; C. Rusconi, 1831, 8vo0; C. Pasqualigo, 1870, &c. Spanish.—Marqués de Dos Hermanos, 1872-7, 3 vols. 8vo. Dutch.—B. Brunius, &c., 1778-82, 5 vols. 8vo; A. S. Kok, 1872-80, 7 vols. 8vo. Danish.—Foersom and P. F. Wulff, 1807-25. Swedish.—cC. A. Hagberg, 1847-51, 12 vols. 8vo. Bohemian.—¥. Doucha, &c., 1855-66, 5 vols. sm. 8vo. Hungarian.—Dobrentei, 1824, 8vo; Lemouton, 1845, &c. Polish.—I. Kefa- linski and J. v. Placyd, 1839-47, 3 vols. 8vo; S. Kosmiana, 1866, c&c. Russian.—N. Ketschera, 1841-50, 5 vols. 12mo.*~~

~~*IV. CRITICISM, ILLUSTRATION , AND COMMENT. A.—General Works.*~~

~~*T. Rymer, The Tragedies of the Last Age, 1678, 8vo, and A Short View of Tragedy, 1693, 8vo ; C. Gildon, '* Some Reflections on Mr Rymer"' (in Miseel- laneous Lectures, 1694, 8v0); J. Dennis, The Impartial Critie, 1692, 4to, and dissay on the Genius and Writings of S., 1712, 8vo; Z. Grey, Word or Two of Adviee to W. Warburton, 1746, 8vo, Free and Fanviliar Letter to W. War- burton, 1750, 8vo, Remarks on [Warburton's] Edition, 1751, 8vo, and Critieal, Historical, and Explanatory Notes, 1754, 3d ed. 1755, 2 vols. 8vo; 8. J ohnson, Proposal for a New Edition (1746), folio, 1765, 8vo; E. Capell, Notes and Various Readings to §., 1759, 4to (1779-80), 3 vols. 4to; P. Nichols, he Castrated Letter of Sir T. Il anmer, 1763, 8v0; Prefaces by Dr J ohnson, Pope, Theobald, &e., 1765, 8vo; W. Kenrick, Review of Dr Johnson's New Edition, 1765, 8vo, and Defenee, 1766; G. Steevens, Proposals for Printing a New Edition, 1766, 8vo; Mrs Eliz. Montagu, Essay on Writings and Genius of S., 1769, 8vo, frequently reprinted ; W. Kenrick, Introduetion to the School of &., 1773, 8vo; Mrs Eliz. Griffith, Morality of 8.'s Drama, 1775, 8vo ; Voltaire, Lettre & Académie, 1776, 8vo, on Letourneur's translation; J. Baretti, Discours sur 8. et Voltaire, 1777, 8v0; E. Malone, Supplement to the Edition of 1778, 1780, 2 vols. 8vo, Seeond Appendix, 1783, 8vo; J. Ritson, Remarks on the Text and Notes of [Steevens's 1778] edition, 1788, Svo; T. Davies, Dramatie Miscellanies, 1783-4, 3 vols. 8vyo ; J. M. Mason, Comments on the Last Edition, 1785, 8vo ; T. Whately, Remarks on some of the Characters, 1785, 8vo, new edition by Archbishop Whately, 1839, 12mo;*~~

~~*J. J. Eschenburg, Versuch %t. &., Leipsic, 1787, 8vo; J. Ritson, The Quip Modest, 1788, 8vo; S. Felton, Jm- perfect Hints towards a New Edition of 8., 1787-8, 2 pts. 4to; A. Eccles, Jilustrations and Variorum Comments on Lear, Cymbeline, and Merchant of Venice, 1792-1805, 3 vols. 12mo; E. Malone, Letter to R. Farmer, 1792, 8vo; J. Ritson, Cursory Critieism on Malone's Edition, 1792, 8vo; i. Malone, Prospectus of an Edition in 15 vols. roy. &v0, 1792, 4to; Bishop Percy, cree of the English Stage, 1793, 8vo; E. Malone, Proposals for an Intended Hdition in 20 vols. roy. 8vo, 1795, folio; W. Richardson, issays on some of 8.'s Dramatie Characters, 1797, 1812, 8vo, reprint of separate pieces; Lord Chedworth, Notes on some Obscure Passages, 1805, 8vo, pri- vately printed ; E. H. Seymour, Remarks on the Plays of — 1805, 2 vols. 8vo; F, Douce, Illustrations of 8. and Aneient Manners, 1807, 2 vols. 8vo, new edition 1839, 8vo; H. J. Pye, Comments on the Commentators, 1807, 8vo; J. M. Mason, Comments on the several Editions, 1807, 8vo ; C. (and M) Lamb, Tales from S., 1807, 2 vols. 12mo, plates, frequently translated and reprinted ; A. Becket, 8. himself again, 1815, 2 vols. 8vo; W. Hazlitt, Characters of 8.'s Plays, 1817, 8vo, new edition 1873 ; N. Drake, 8. and his Times, 1817, 2 vols. 4to, and Memorials of S., 1828; Z, Jackson, S.'s Genius Justified, Examples of 700 Errors in his Plays, 1819, 8vo ; [Variorum] Annotations Illustrative of the Plays of S., 1819, 2 vols. 12mo, published with Scholey's edition; W. Hazlitt, Lectures on the Dramatie Literature of the Age of Elizabeth, 1820, 8vo; H. Beyle, Raeine et §., 1823-5, 2 pts. 8vo; T. Bowdler, Letter to Editor of British Critie, 1823, 8vo, defends omissions; T. P. Courtenay, Commen- taries wpon the Historical Plays of 8., 1840, 2 vols. sm. 8vo; K. Sybrandi, Verhandeling over Vondel en §., Haarlem, 1841, 4to; Rev. A. Dyce, Remarks on Collier's and Knight's Editions, 1844, 8vo; J. Hunter, New Illustrations of 8., 1845, 2 vols. 8vo ; G. Fletcher, Studies of S., 1847, 8vo; L. Tieck, Dra- maturgisehe Blatter, 2d ed. 1848-52, 3 vols. 8yo; H. N. Hudson, Leetures on 8. A N.Y., 1848, 2 vols. 8vo; C. Knight, Studies of S., 1849, 8vo; S. T. Coleridge, Notes and Lectures wpon S., &e., 1849, 2 vols. sm. 8vo, and Lectures and Notes on §., by T. Ashe, 1883, sm. 8vo; J, Britton, Essay on the Merit and Char- aeteristres of §.'s Writings, 1849, roy. 8vo ; K. Simrock, Remarks on the Plots of S.'s Plays ees Society), 1850, 8vo ; Rey. T. Grinfleld, Moral Injlu- ence of §.'s Plays, 1850, 8vo; V. E. P. Chasles, Etudes sur W.8., Marie Stuart, et VArétin, 1851, 18mo; F. A. T. Kreyssig, Vorlesungen dw. §.,*~~

~~*1858-60, 3 vols., 2d ed. 1874, 2 vols. 8vo, and §. Fragen, Leipsic, 1871, 8vo; [O'Connell], New Exegesis of S., 1859, 8vo ; 8. Jervis, Proposed Emendations of S., 2d ed. 1861, 8vo; R. Cartwright, The Footsteps of S., 1862, 8vo, New Readings in S., 1866, 8vo, and Papers on S., 1877, 8vo; G. G. Gervinus, 8. Commentaries translated, 1863, 2 vols., new edition revised 1875, 8vo; 8. Bailey, The received Text of S.'s Dramatie Writings, 1862-6, 2 vols. 8vo; C. C. Clarke, §. Characters, chiefly those Subordinate, 1863, 8vo; H. Marggraff, W. S. als Lehrer der Mensehheit, Leipsic, 1864, 16mo ; J. H. Hackett, Notes and Comments, N. Y., 1864, sm. 8vo ; A. Mezitres, S., ses wuvres et ses critiques, 1865, 8v0; H. Wellesley, Stray Notes on the Text of §., 1865, 4to; A. M. L. de Lamartine, S. et son wuvre, 1865, Svo; W. L. Rushton, 8. Illustrated by old Authors, 1867-8, 2 pts. 8vo; T. Keightley, The 8. Expositor, 1867, sm. 8vo; B. Tschischwitz, 8. Forschungen, 1868, 3 vols. 8vo; G. R. French, Shakespearcana Genealogiea, 1869, 8vo; F. Jacox, §, Diversions, 1875-7, 2 vols. 8vo; H. v. Friesen, Das Bueh: 8S, v. Gervinus, Leipsic, 1869, 8vo, 8. Studien, Vienna, 1874-6, 2 vols. 8vo, and K. Elze's W. S., Leipsic, 1876, 8vo; I. T. Hall, Shakespearian Fly Leaves, 1874, 8vo; K. R. Proelss, Hriduterungen, Leipsic, 1874-8, pts. 1-6, sm. 8vo, includ-*~~

~~*necessary. Articles in periodicals not issued separately, and modern critical editions of single plays, are not included ; and only those of the plays usually contained in the collective editions are noticed. The name, in its various spellings (Shakespeare, Shakspeare, Shakespear, Shakspere, &c.), is usually represented by the initial S.*~~

~~*ing Hamlet, Julius Casar, Merchant of Venice, Much Ado, &c., Richard H., Romeo and Juliet; C. W. H. G.v. Riimelin, 8. Studien, 2d ed., Stuttg., 1874, 8vo; R. A.C. Hebler, Aufsétze wb. §., 2d ed., Bern, 1874, 8vo; F. J. Furnivall, The Succession of 8.'s Works and the Uscs of Metrical Tests, 1874, 8vo; O. Ludwig, 8. Studicn, 1874, 8vo; E. Dowden, 8.: a Critical Study of his Mind and Ari, 1875, 8vo; C. M. Ingleby, 8. Hermeneutics, 1875, 4to, S., the Man and the Book, 1877-81, 2 pts. 4to, and Occasional Papers on §&., 1881, sq. lémo; F. K, Elze, Abhandlungen zu &., 1877, 8vo, and Essays on S., trans- lated, 1874, 8vo ; E. Hermann, Drei 8.*~~

~~*Studien, Erlangen, 1877-9, 4 pts. sm. 8vo, Wettcre Beitrdge, ib., 1881, sm. 8vo ; H. H. Vaughan, New Readings and New Renderings of 8.'s Tragedies, 1878-86, 3 vols. 8vo ; F. G. Fleay, 8. Manual, 1878, sm. 8vo; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, Notes and Memoranda [on 4 Plays], 1868-80, 4 pts., 8vo, and Memoranda [on 12 Plays], 1879-80, 7 pts. 8v0o; A.C. Swinburne, A Study of S., 1880, 8vo; D. J. Snider, System of 8.'s Dramas, new edition, 1880, 8vo; F. A. Kemble, Notes on some of S.'s Plays, 1882,*~~

~~*8vo; H. Giles, Zuman Life in 8., Boston, 1882, 12mo; B. G. Kinnear, Cruces*~~ |

~~*Shakespearianx, 1883, sm. 8vo; C. C, Hense, S. Studien, Halle, 1883, 8vo ; A. 8. G, Canning, Thoughts on S.'s Historical Plays, 1884, 8vo; New Study of S., 1884, 8vo; J. W. Hales, Notes and Essays on §., 1884, sm. 8vo; J. Feis, S. and Montaigne, 1884, sm. 8vo; Sir P. Perring, Hard Knots in S., 1885, 8vo ; E. Rossi, Stwdien 2b. 8. u. d. Moderne Theater, 1885, 8vo; F. A. Leo, &. Notes, 1885, 8vo; R. G. Moulton, 8. as a Dramatic Artist, 1885, 8vo; R. G. White, Studies in §., Boston, 1885, Svo.*~~

~~*B.—Special Works on Scparate Plays, &e., with Dates of Early Quartos.*~~

~~*ALL's WELL THAT ENDS WELL (lst ed. in F.1, 1623): H. v. Ifagen, Ueb. die altfranzis. Vorstufe des Lusispicles, Halle, 1879, 8vo. ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA (1st ed. in F.1). As You Like IT oo ed. in F.1): W. Whiter, Specimen of a Commentary, 1794, 8vo; A. O. Kellogg, Jacques, Utica, 1865, 8vo ; C. Sheldon, Notes, 1877, 8vo; T. Stothard, 8.'s Seven Ages Illustrated, 1799, folio; J. Evans, 8.'s Seven Ages, 3d ed. 1834, 12mo; J. W. Jones, Origin of the Division of Man's Life into Stages, 1861, 4to. CoMEDY oF ERRORS (1st ed. in F.1), CoRIOLANUS (ist ed. in F.1): F. A. Leo, Die Delius'sche Ausgabe kritisch belcwchtet, Berlin, 1861, 8vo. CYMBELINE (1st ed. in V1). HAMLET (Q.1, 1603; Q.2, 1604; Q.3, 1605 ; Q.4, 1608 ; Q.5, 1611 ; Q.6, n.d.; Q.7, 1637): L. Theobald, 8. Restored, 1726, 4to, devoted to Hamlet; Sir T. Hanmer, Some Remarks on Tamilet, 1736, 8vo, reprinted 1863, sm. 8vo; J. Plumptre, Observations on Hamlet, and Appendix, 1796-7, 2 pts. 8vo; F. L, Schmidt, Sammlung der besten Urtheile ciber Ilamlet, Quedl., 1808, 8vo; A. G. Barante, Sur Hamlet, 1824, 8vo; P. Macdonnell, Essay on Hamlet, 1843, 8vo ; Sir E. Strachey, 8.'s Hamlet, 1848, 8vo; H. K. S. Causton, Essay on Mr Singer's*~~

~~*Wormwood, 1851, 8vo; L. N oiré, Hamlet, zwei Vortrage, Mainz, 1856, 16mo; M. W. Rooney, Hamlet, First Edition (1603), 1856, 8vo; S.'s Hamlet, 1603 and 1604, with Bibliographical Prefuce, by S. Timmins, 1860, 8vo; A. Gerth, Der Hamlet v. 8., Leip., 1861, 8vo; J. Conolly, 4 Study of Hamlet, 1863, sm. 8vo; H.v, Friesen, Briefe ib. §.'s Hamlet, Leipsic, 1865, 8vo ; A. Flir, Briefe ub, 8.'s Hamlet, Innsbruck, 1865, 8vo; W. D. Wood, Hamlet from a Psycho- logical Point of View, 1870, 8vo; R. If. Horne (editor), Was Hamlet Mad? a Series of Critiques, 1871, 8vo; G. F. Stedefeld, amlet ein Tendenzdrama, Berlin, 1871, 8vo ; A. Meadows, Hamlet: an Essay, 1871, 8vo; R. G. Latham, The Hamlet of Saxo Grammaticus and S., 1872, 8vo; F. A. Marshall, Study of Hamlet, 1875, 8vo; H. v. Struve, Hamlet eine Charakterstudie, Weimar, 1876, 8vo; H. Baumgart, Die Hamlet Tragédie u. thre;Kritik, Konigsb., 1877, 8vo; A. Zinzow, Die Mamet Sage, Halle, 1877, 8vo; A. Biichner, amlet le Danots, 1878, 8vo; M. Moltke, §.'s Hamlct Quellen, 1881, 8vo; E. P. Vining, The Mystery of Zamlet, Philad., 1881, sm. 8vo [Hamlet a woman]; H. Besser, Zur Hamlet Frage, 1882, 8vo ; E. Stenger, Der Zamlct Charakter, 1883, 8v0; A. Brereton, Some famous Hamlets, 1884, 8vo. HENRY IV. (Pt. i.: Q.1, 1598 ; Q.2, 1599 ; Q.3, 1604; Q.4, 1608; Q.5, 1613; Q.6, 1622; Q.7, 1632; Q.8, 1639. Pt. ii: Q.1 and Q.2, 1600): E, A. Struve, Studien zu 8.'s Henry I V., Kiel, 1851, 4to, Timnry V. (Q.1, 1600; Q.2, 1602; Q.3, 1608): G. A. Schmeding, Essays on 8.'s Henry V., 1874, 8vo. Henry VI. (Pt. i. Ist ed. in Fl. Pt. ii. Ist ed. in F.1. Contention, &c.: Q.1, 1594; Q.2, 1600; Q.3, 1619. Pt. iii, Ist ed. in F.1, Richard of Yorke: Q.1, 1595 ; Q.2, 1600): E. Malone, Dissertation on Henry VI., 1792, 8vo; G. L, Rives, Authorship of Henry VI., 1874, 8vo. HENRY VIII. Sg ed, in F.1). JULIUS Casar (1st ed. in F.1): G. L. Craik, The English of 8. Illustrated, 3d ed, 1866, sm. 8vo; H. Gomont, Le César de &., 1874, 8vo; W. G. Moberly, Hints for 8. Study exemplified in Julius Cesar, 1881, 8vo. Kine JoHN (ist authentic ed, in F.1. Troublesome Raigne, spurious : Q.1, 1591; Q.2, 1611; Q.3, 1622). Kina LEAR (Q.1, Q.2, Q.3, 1608 ; Q.4, 1655): [C. Jennens], King Lear Vindicated, 1772, 8vo ; H. Neumann, Ueber Lear u. Ophelia, Breslau, 1866, 8vo; J. R. Seeley, W. Young, and E. A. Hart, Lhree Essays on Lear, 1851, 8vo, Beaufoy prize essays. LOVE'S LABOUR 'S Lost ol 1598 ; Q.2, 1631). MACBETH (Ist ed. in F.1): [Dr 8. Jolinson], Miscellaneous Observations on Macbeth, 1745, 12mo; J. P. Kemble, Macbeth and Richard ITI, 1817, 8vo; C. W. Opzoomer, Aanteekeningen op Macbeth,*~~

~~*Amst., 1854, 8vo ; G. Sexton, Psychology of Macbeth, 1869, 8vo; J. G. Ritter, Bettrage zur Erkl. des Macbeth, Leer, 1871, 2 pts. 4to; V. Kaiser, Macbeth und Lady Macbeth, Basel, 1875, 8vo; HE. R. Russell, The True Macbeth, 1875, 8vo; T. Hall Caine, Richard ITI. and Macbeth, 1877, 8vo; A. Horst, Konig Macbeth, eine Schottische Sage, Bremen, 1876, 16mo. MEASURE FOR MEASURE (isted. in F,1), MERCHANT OF VENICE (Q.1, Q.2, 1600 ; Q.3, 1637 ; Q.4, 1652): G. Harren, Essay on Shylock, 1833, 8vo; F. V. Hugo, Commentary on the Merchant of Venice, translated, 1863, 8vo; H. Graetz, Shylock in d. Sage, 1880, 8vo; A. Pietscher, Versuch einer Studie tib. 8.'s Kaufmann v. V., 1881, 8vo; C. H. C. Plath, 8s Kaufmann v. V., 1882, 8vo. MERRY WIVES oF WINDSOR (Q.1, 1602; Q.2, 1619; Q.3, 1630): J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, Account of the only known MS, of 8.'s Plays, 1843, 8vo. MIDSUMMER NIGHT'S DREAM (Q.1, Q.2, 1600): N. J. Halpin, Oberon's Vision and Lylie's Endymion (Shake- speare Society), 1843, 8vo; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, [ntroduction to 8.'s Mid- summer Night's Dream, 1841, 8vo, and Illustrations of the Fairy Mythology of Midsummer Night's Dream (Shakesp. Soc.), 1845, 8vo; the same with J. Ritson, Fairy Tales, Legends, and Romances, ed. Hazlitt, 1875, 8vo; E. Her- mann, Drei S. Studien, Erlangen, 1877-9, 4 pts. sm. 8vo; L. E. A. Proescholdt, On the Sources of 8.'s Midsummer Night's Dream, 1878, 8vo. MucH ADo ABOUT NOTHING (Q.1, 1600): W. W. Lloyd, Much Ado, &c., with essay, 1884, 8vo, to prove reputed prose to be metrical. OTHELLO (Q.1, 1622; Q.2, 1630; Q.3, 1655): W. Parr, he Story of the Moor of Venice, 1795, 8vo; R. G. Macgregor, Othello's Character, 1852, 8vo; J. E. Taylor, The Moor of Venice, Cinthio's Tale and 8.'s Lragedy, 1855, 8vo. PERICLES (Q.1 [Pavier, n. d.J; Q.2, Q.3, 1609 ; Q.4, 1611; Q.5, 1619; Q.6, 1630; Q.7, 1635): R. Boyle, On Wilkins's Share in Pericles, 1882, 8vo. RICHARD II. (Q.1, 1597; Q.2, 1598 ; Q.3, Q.4, 1608; Q.5, 1615; Q.6, 1634): Riechelmann, Zu Richard LI. 8. u. Holinshed, Plauen, 1860, 8vo. R1icHARD III. (Q.1, 1597 ; Q.2, 1598; Q.3, 1602; Q.4, 1605; Q.5, 1612; Q.6, 1622; Q.7, 1624; Q.8, 1629; Q.9, 1684): M. Beale, Lecture on the Times and Play of Richard ITI., 1844, 8vo; I. F. Schoene, Ueber den Charakter Richard III. bei &., 1856, 8vo; L. Méser, Observations on §&.'s Richard I1I., Hertford, 1869, 8vo. RoMEO AND JULIET (Q.1, 1597 3, 9.2, 1599; Q.3, 1609; Q.4, n. d.; Q.5, 1637): J. C. Walker, [Historical Memoir on Italian Tragedy, 1799, 4to ; G. Pace Sanfelice, The Original*~~

~~*Story of Romeo and Juliet, by L. da Porto, 1868, 8vo; T. Straeter, Die Komposition &.'s Romeo u. Julia, Bonn, 1861, 8vo; C. RB. E. Hartmann, Romeo u. Julia, Leipsic,*~~

~~*769*~~

~~*1874, 8vo, a critical essay ; M. F. Guenther, Defence of 8.'s Romeo and Juliet, 1876, 8vo; R. Gericke, Romeo u. Julia nach &.'s MS., THE SHREW (1st ed. in F.1). TEMPEST (st ed. in F.1): J. Holt, Remarks on the Tempest, 1750, 8vo; E. Malone,*~~

~~*ee 1808-9, 2 pts. 8vo; G. Chalmers, Another Account, &e., 1815, 8vo; ev.*~~

~~*lo copy known; Q.2, 1600;*~~

~~*THE TWo GENTLEMEN OF VERONA, and THE WINTER'S first printed in F.1),*~~

~~*SONNETS (Q.1, 1609) : J. Boaden, On the Sonnets of &., 1887, 8v0; C. A. Brown, 8.'s Autobiographical Poems, 1838, 8vo; I. Donnelly, The Sonnets of S., 1859, 8vo; Dr Barnstorff, Key to 8.'s Sonnets, translated, 1862, 8vo; B. Corney, The Sonnets of S&., 1862, 8vyo; [E. A. Ifitchcock], Remarks on the Sonnets of 8., N.Y., 1865, 12mo ; R. Simpson, Introduction to the Philosophy of 8.'s Sonnets, 1868, 8vo ; H, Brown, The Sonnets of 8. solved, 1870, 8vo; C. M. Ingleby, The Soule arrayed, Sonnet calvt., 1872, 8vo0 ; G. Massey, The Sceret Drama of 8s Sonnets unfolded, 2d ed. 1872, 8vo,. VENUS AND ADONIS (Q.1, 1593 ; Q.2, 1594; sm. 8vo, 1596, 1599, 1600 (2), 1602, 1617, 1620, 1627, 1630, 1636 ; 8vo, 1675): A. Morgan, Venus and Adonis, Study in Warwickshire Dialect, N.Y., 1885, 8vo. LUCRECE (Q.1, 1594 ; sm. 8vo, 1598, 1600, 1607, 1616 ; 16mo, 1624, 12mo0, 1632; 16mo, 1655). PASSIONATE PILGRIM (16mo, 1599 ; 2d ed. not known; 3d ed. 16mo, 1612): A. Hoelinen, S.'s Passionate Pilgrim, 1867, 8vo, dissertation.*~~

~~*FALSTAFF: C. Morris, True Standard of Wit, with Character of Sir J. Falstaff, 1744, 8v0; W. Richardson, Essays on Character of Sir J. Falstaff, 1788, 8vo ; M. Morgan, Essay on Sir J. Falstaff, 1777, new edition 1825, 8vo, Vindicates his courage; J. H. Hfackett, Falstaff, 1840,*~~

~~8vo; J. O, Lalliwell Phillipps, On the Character of Falstaf in enry IV., 1841, 8vo; E. Schueller, Don Quixote und Faistag, Berlin, 1858, 8vo0; G. W. Rusden, Character of Falstaf, Melbourne, 1870, 8vo. FEMALE CHARACTERS: W. Richardson, On 8.'s Female Characters, &c., 1788, 8vo; A. M. J ameson, Characteristics of Women, 1832, 2 vols. 12mo, illustrated; C. Ifeath, The Heroines of §., 1848, large 4to, illustrated, and The 8. Gallery, containing the Principal Female Characters, 1836, large 8vo, plates reproduced in H. L. Palmer's Stratford Gallery, N.Y., 1859, large 8vo; M. C. Clarke, Girlhood of 8.'s ITeroines, 1850-2, 3 vols. 8vo ; H. Heine, Englische Fragmente und §.'s Médchen und Frauen, Hamburg, 1861, sm. 8vo; F. A. Leo, 8's Frauenideale, Halle, 1868, 8vo; F. M. v. Bodenstedt, 8.'s Frauencharaktere, 2d ed., Berlin, 1876, 8vo ; M. Summer, Les Heroines de Kalidasa et les Héroincs de §., 1879, sm. 8vo; Lady Martin, On some of 8.'s Female Characters, 1885, 8vo; Mrs M pee Elliott, 8.'s Garden of Girls, 1885, 8vo. Humour: J. Weiss, Wit, Zumour, and §., Boston, 1876, 16mo; J. R. Ehrlich, Der Humor 8. 's, Vienna, 1878, 8vo.~~

~~V. LANGUAGE, INCLUDING GRAMMARS AND GLOSSARIES.~~

~~T.. Edwards, Supplement to Mr Warburton's Edition, being the Canons of Criticism and Glossary, 1748, 8vo, 7th ed. 1765; R. Warner, Letter on a Glossary to §., 1768, 8v0; R. Nares, Glossary, 1822, 4to, new cdition 1859, 2 vols. 8vo; J. M. Jost, Erkl. Worterbuch, Berlin, 1830, sm. 8vo; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, Dictionary of Archaic and Provincial Words, 1846-7, 2 vols. 8vo, and Iand-Book Index to the Works, 1866, 8vo, phrases, mainers, &c.; J. L. Ifilgers, Sind nicht in 8. noch manche Verse wiederherzustellen in Prosa ? Aix-la-Chapelle, 1852, 4to; N. Delius, 8. Lexikon, Bonn, 1852, 8vo; W. S. Walker, S.'s Versisication, 1854, 8vo, and Examination of the Tcat of 8., with Remarks on his Language, 1860, 3 vols. 8vo ; C. Bathurst, 8.'s Versification at different Periods, 1857, sm. 8vo; 8. Jervis, Dictionary of the Language of 8., 1868, 4to; G. Helmes, The English Adjective in 8&., Bremen, 1868, 8vo; A. J. Ellis, On Early English Pronunciation, 1869-75, 4 vols. 8vo; W. L. Rushton, &.'s Euphuism, 1871, 8vo ; D. Rohde, Die Miilfszettwort 'To do" bei S., Gottin- gen, 1872, 8vo; EH. A. Abbott, Shakespearian Grammar, new edition 1873, sm. 8vo; K. Seitz, Die Alliteration im Engl. vor u. bei S.,~~

~~*1875, 4to; F. Pfeffer, Die Anredepronomina bei S., 1877, 8vo.; P. A. Bronisch, Das neutrale Possessivpronom bei §., 1878, 8vo; 0. W. F. Lohmann, Die Auslassung des Relativpronomens, &¢., 1879, 8vo; A. Dyce, Glossary, new edition, 1880, 8v0 ; C. Deutschbein, 8. Grammatik f. Deutsche, 1882, 8vo A. Lummert, Die Orthographie der ersten Folioausgabe, 1883, 8vo; C. M ackay, Obscure Words and Phrases in 8., 1884, 8vo; G. H. Browne, 8.'s Versijication, Boston, 1884, 12mo, includes bibliography; L. Kellner, Zur Syntax des Engl. Verbums, Vienna, 1885, 8vo; J. H. Siddons, Shakespearian Referee, Washington, 1886, 8vo, encyclopedic glossary.*~~

~~*VI. QUOTATIONS.*~~

~~*C. Gildon, Shakespcariana, in his Complete Art of Poetry, 1718, 12mo,' the first of the class; Dr W. Dodd, The Beauties of §., 1752, 2 vols. 12mo, reprinted (in various forms) more frequently than any similar work ; C. Lofft, Aphorisms From &., 1812, 12mo ; T. Dolby, The Shakespearian Dictionary, 1832, 8vo, and A Thousand Shakespearian Mottoes, 1856, 32mo ; Mrs M. C. Clarke, 8. Proverbs, 1847, sm. 8vo, reprinted ; J. B. Marsh, Familiar, Proverbial, and Select Say- ings from S., 1864, 8vo; EH. Routledge, Quotations from S., 1867, 8vo; C. W. Stearns, The 8. Treasury, N.Y., 1869, 12mo; Capt. A. F, P. Harcourt, The 8. Argosy, 1874, sm. 8vo; G. S. Bellamy, New Shakespearian Dictionary, 1877, 8vo; A. A. Morgan, The Mind of S., 1880, 8vo, quotations in alphabetical order; C. Arnold, Index to Shakespearian Thought, 1880, 8vo*~~

~~*VII. CONCORDANCES.*~~

~~*. Becket, Concordance, 1787, 8vo, the earliest ; 8S. Ayscough, Index, 1790, ia 8vo, 2d ed. enlarged, 1827, useful; F. Twiss, Complete Verbal Indez, 1805, 2 vols. 8vo; M. Cowden Clarke, Complete Concordance, 1844, 8vo, deals only with the plays (no complete one exists); Mrs H. H. Furness, Concord- ance to Poems, Philadelphia, 1874, 8vo, completing Mrs C. Clarke's; A. Schmidt, 8. Leaikon, Berlin, 1874-5, 2 vols. large 8vo, in English, both concordance and dictionary; C. and M. C. Clarke, The 8. Key, 1879, 8vo, companion to the Concordance; J. Bartlett, The 8. Phrase Book, 1881, 8vo; W. H. D. Adams, Concordance to Plays, 1886, 8vo.*~~

~~*VIII. PROBABLE SOURCES.*~~

~~*! . Lennox, 8. Illustrated, 1753-4, 3 vols. 12mo, dedication by Johnson, es the observations also said to be by him; T. Hawkins, The Origin of the English Drama, 1773, 3 vols. 8vo; J. Nichols, The Six Old Plays on which &. founded Measure for Measure, &c., 1779, 2 vols. 12mo; T. Echtermeyer, L. Henschel, and K. Simrock, Quelicn des §., Berlin, 1831, 3 vols. 16mo; L. Tieck, 8.'s Vorschule, Leipsic, 1823-9, 2 vols. 8vo; J. P. Collier, S.'s Library [1843], 2 vols. 8vo, 2d ed. [by W. C. Hazlitt] 1875, 6 vols. 8vo; W. C. Hazlitt, 8.'s Jest Books, 1864, 3 vols. 8vo: W. W. Skeat, 8.'s Plutarch, 1875, 8vo; F.*~~

~~*XXL — 97*~~

~~*770*~~

~~*A. Leo, Four Chapters of North's Plutarch, 1878, folio; R. Simpson, The School of §., 1878, 2 vols. 8vo.*~~

~~*IX. SPECIAL KNOWLEDGE.*~~

~~*ANGLING: H. N. Ellacombe, S. as an Anzgicr, 1883, 8vo. BIBLE: T. R. Eaton, 8S. and the Bibic, 1858, 8vo; J. Brown, Bible Truths with Shakespearian Parallels, 3d ed. 1872, 8vo; J. Rees, 8. and the Bible, Phil., 1876, sm. 8vo; Bp. C. Wordsworth, S.'s Knowledge and Use of the Bibic, 1864, 8vo; C. Bullock, S.'s Debt to the Bible, 1879, 8vo. BOTANY: J. E. Giraud, Flowers of S., 1847, 4to, plates; S. Beisly, S.'s Garden, 1864, 8vo; 1. N. Ellacombe, Plant-lore and Garden-craft of §., 2d ed. 1884, sm. 8vo; L. H. Grindon, S.'s Flora, 1883, 8vo. EMBLEMS: H. Green, 8. and the Emblem Writers, 1870, 4to. FOLK- LORE: W. Bell, S.'s Puck and his Folks-lore, 1852-64, 3 yols.sm. 8vo; W. J. Thoms, '"'The Folk-lore of Shakespeare," in Three Notelets, 1865, 8vo, re- printed from Atheneum, 1847; B. Tschischwitz, Nachklénge Germanischer Mythe in &., Halle, 1868, 8vo ; [W. C. Hazlitt, editor], Fairy Tales, Legends, and Romances illustrating §., &c., 1875, 8vo; T. F. T. Dyer, Folk-lore of S., 1884, 8vo. LEARNING: P. Whalley, Hiquiry into the Learning of S., 1748, 8vo; R. Farmer, Essay on the Learning of S., 1767, 8vo, reprinted in the variorum (1821) and other editions, criticized by W. Maginn, see 8. Papers,*~~

~~*annotated by S. Mackenzie, N.Y., 1856, sm. 8vo; [K. Prescot], Essay on the Learning of §., 1774, 4t0; E. Capell, The School of S., 1780, 4to (vol. iii. of his Votes and: Various Readings to §., 1779-83, 3 vols. 4to); P. Stapfer, 8. et Vantiquité, Paris, 1879, 8vo, translated 1880, 8vo. LEGAL: W. L. Rushton, S. a Lawyer, 1858, 8vo, 8.'s Legal Maxims, 1859, 8vo, 8.'s Testamentary Language, 1869, 8vo, aud 8&. illustrated by the Lex Scripta, 1870, 8vo; Lord Campbell, 8.'s Legal Acquirements, 1859, 8vo; H. T., Was 8. a Lawyer? 1871, 8vo; J. Kohler, §. vor dem Forum der Jurisprudenz, und Nachwort, 1883-4, 2 pts. 8vo; F. F. Heard, S. as a Lawyer, Boston, 1884, 16mo; C. K. Davis, The Law in §., St Paul, U.S., 1884, 8vo. MEDICINE: G. Farren, Essays on Mania exhibited in Hamlet, Ophelia, &c., 1833, 8vo; J. C. Bucknill, The Medical Knowledge of §., 1860, 8vo, and The Mad Folk of 8., 1867, sm. 8vo; C. W. Stearns, &.'s Medical Knowledge, N.Y., 1865, sm. 8vo; G. Cless, Medicinische Blumenlese aus S., Stuttgart, 1865, 8vo; A. O. Kellogg, 8.'s Delineations of Fnsanity, dc., N.Y., 1866, 16mo; H. R. Aubert, 8. als Mediciner, Rostock, 1873, 8vo; J. P. Chesney, 8. as a Physician, St Louis, 1884, 8vo; B. R. Field, Medical Thoughts of §., 2d ed., Easton, U.S., 1885, 8vo. MILITARY: W. J. Thoms, " Was S. ever a Soldier?" in his Three Notelets, 1865, 8vo. NATURAL Hrstory: R. Patterson, Insects mentioned in 8.'s Plays, 1838, 8vo; J. H. Fennell, §. Cyclopxdia, 1862, 8vo, pt. i. Zoology, Man (all published); J. E. Harting, Ornithology of 8,, 1871, 8vo; C. R. Smith, The Rural Life of 8., 1874, 8vo; J. Walter, 8.'s Ifome and Rural Life, 1874, 4to, illustrated; B. Mayou, Natural History of S., 1877, 8vo, quotations ; E. Phipson, Animal Lore of 8.'s Time, 1883, sm. 8vo. PHILO- SOoPHY: W. J. Birch, Philosophy and Religion of S., 1848, sm. 8vo; V. Knauer, W. 8., der Philosoph, Innsbruck, 1879, 8vo. PRINTING: W. Blades, 8S. and Typography, 1872, 8vo. PsycHoLoay: J. C. Bucknill, The Psychology of §., 1859, 8vo; E. Onimus, La Psychologie dans les Drames de S., 1876, 8vo, SEA: J. Schuemann, See u. Seefahrt in S.'s Dramen, 1876, 4to.*~~

~~*X. PERIODICALS.*~~

~~*S. Museum, edited by M. L. Moltke, Leipsic, 23d April 1870 to 23d February 1874, 20 Nos. (all published) ; Shakespeariana, 1883, sm. 8vo, in progress. From the commencement of Notes and Queries in 1856, a*~~

~~*special Shakespeare departmeut (see Indexes) has been carried on. See also W. F. Poole's Index to Periodical Literature, Boston, 1882, and supplements.*~~

~~*XI. SHAKESPEARE SOCIETIES AND THEIR PUBLICATIONS.*~~

~~*Proceedings of the Shefield S. Club (1819-29), 1829, 8vo; Shakespeare Society, various publications, 1841-53, 48 vols. 8vo ; New Shakspere Society, Transactions and other publications, reprints of quartos, &c., 1874, &c., 8vo, in progress; Deutsche S. Gesellschaft, Jahrbuch, Weimar, 1865, &c., in pro- gress. The 8. Societies of New York and Philadelphia publish transactions.*~~

~~*XII. Music.*~~

~~*W. Linley, 8.'s Dramatie Songs, n. d., 2 vols. folio; The 8. Album, or Warwickshire Garland (C. Lonsdale), 1862, folio; G.G. Gervinus, Handel wu. S., Leipsic, 1868, 8vo ; H. Lavoix, Les Traducteurs de 8. en Musique, 1869, 8vo ; A. Roffe, FFandbook of 8. Music, 1878, 4to; List of Songs and Passages set to Music (N. 8. Soc.), 1884, 8vo. See also the musical works of J. Addison, T. A. Arne, C. Hi. Berlioz, Sir H. R. Bishop, C. Dibdin, W. Linley, M. Locke, G. A. Macfarren, F. Mendelssohn-Bartholdy, H. Purcell, G. Verdi, &c.*~~

~~*XIII. PIcToRIAL ILLUSTRATIONS.*~~

~~*C. Taylor, Picturesque Beauties of §., after Smirke, Stothard, &c., 1783-7, 2 vols. 4to; W. H. Bunbury, Series of Prints Fllustrative of §., 1792-6, oblong folio; 8S. Harding, S. Illustrated, 1793, 4to; 8. Ireland, Picturesque Scenes upon the Avon, 1795, 8vo; J. and J. Boydell, Collection of Prints Jrom Pictures Illustrating the Dramatic Works of 8., 1802-3, 2 vols. atlas folio, 100 plates, forms supplement to Boydell's edition; reproduced by photography, 1864, 4to, reduced, and edited by J. P. Norris, Philadelphia, 1874, 4to; S. Portfolio, 1821-9, roy. 8vo; Stothard, Illustrations of 8., 1826, 8vo; F. A. M. Retzsch, Gallerie zu 8.'s dramat. Werken in Umrissen, Leipsic, 1828-46, 8 vols., obl. 4to; J. Thurston, Illustrations of §., 1830, 8vo; F. Howard, The Spirit of the Plays of 8., 1833, 5 vols. 8vo; L. S. Ruhl, Skizzen zu S.'s dram. Werken, Frankfort,*~~

~~*1827-31, Cassel, 1838-40, 6 vols. oblong folio; G. F. Sargent, 8. Fllustrated in a Series of Landscape and Archi- tectural Designs, 1842, 8vo, reproduced as The Book of 8. Gems, 1846, 8vo; W. v. Kaulbach, 8. Gallerie, Berlin, 1857-8, 3 pts. folio; P. Konewka, Hin Sommernachistraum, Heidelb., 1868, 4to, and Falstaff' u. seine Gesellen, Stras- burg, 1872, 8vo; E. Dowden, 8. Scenes and Characters, 1876, 4to, illustrations from A. Y. Pecht's 8. Gallerie, Leipsic, 1876, 4to; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, Hand List of Drawings and Engravings Illustrative of the Life of §., 1884, 8vo.*~~

~~*XIV. BIOGRAPHIY. A.—General Works.*~~

~~*N. Rowe, The Life of Mr W. 8S., 1748, 8vo, the first separate life; N. Drake, 8. and his Times, 1817, 2 vols. 4to; J. Britton, Remarks on the Life and Writings of 8., revised edition, 1818, sm. 8vo; A. Skottowe, Life of S., 1824, 2 vols. 8vo; J. P. Collier, New Facts, 1835, 8vo, New Particulars, 1836, 8vo, Further Particulars, 1839, 8vo, and Traditionary Anecdotes of S. collected in 1673, 1838, 8vo; T. Campbell, Life and Writings of W. 8., 1838, 8vo; C. Knight, §.,a Biography, 1843, 8vo, repriuted in Studies, 1850, 2 vols. 8vo; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, The Life of W. 8., 1848, 8vo, 8. Facsimiles, 1863, folio, Illustrations of the Life of S., 1874, folio, and Outlines of the Life of §., 1881, 8vo, 6th ed. 1886, 2 vols. 8vo; F. P. G. Guizot, 8. et son temps, 1852, 8vo, translated into English, 1852, 8vo; G. M. Tweddell, S., his Times and Con- temporaries, 1852, 12mo, 2d ed. 1861-3, unfinished; W. W. Lloyd, Essays on Life and Plays of §., 1858, 8vo; S. Neil, 8., a Critical Biography, 1861, 8vo ; T. De Quincey, S., a Biography, 1864, 8vo; T. Kenny, Life and Genius of s., 1864, 8vo; W. Bekk, W. S., eine biogr. Studie, Munich, 1864, sm. 8vo; 8. W. Fullom, The History of W. 8., 2d ed. 1864, 8vo ; Victor M. Hugo, W. §., 1864,*~~

~~*SHAKERS PHRARE*~~

~~*8vo,—translated into Dutch, German, and English; H.,G. Bohn, Biography and Bibliography of 8. (Philobiblon Soc., 1863), 8vo, illustrations: J. Jordan, Original Collections on 8. and Stratford, 1780, edited by J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, 1864, 4to; J. A. Heraud, 8.'s inner Life as intimated in his Works, 1865, 8vo; R. G. White, Memoirs of the Life of W. S., Poston, 1865, 8vo ; §. A. Allibone, Biography of 8. (in Dictionary,*~~

~~*vol. 2, 1870); H. N. Hudson, S.—his Life, Art, and Characters, Boston, 1872, 4th ed. 1883, 2 vols. 12mo; R. Genée, S., sein Leben u. s. Werke, Hildburghausen, 1872, 8vo; F. K. Elze, W. §S., Halle, 1876, large vo; G. H. Calvert, S.—a Biographic, Atsthetic Study, Boston, 1879, 16mo, W. Tegg, 8. and his Contemporaries, 1879, 8vo; W. Heuty, 8., with some Notes on his early Biography, 1882, sm. 8vo; E. Hermann, Ergdnzungen u. Berichtigungen der hergebrachten 8. Biograph., Erl., 1884, 2 vols. 8vo; F, G. Fleay, Chronicle History of the Life and Work of W. 8., 1886, 8vo.*~~

~~*B.—Special Works.*~~

~~*AUTOGRAPH: Sir F. Madden, Autograph and Orthography of 8., 1837, 4to; S.'s Autograph, copied and enlarged by J. Barris, &c. (Rodd), 1843; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, §.'s Will, 1851, 4to; H. Staunton, Memorials of 8. Photographed, 1864, folio; J. H. Friswell, Photogr. Reprod. of 8.'s Will, 1864, 4to. BIRTHDAY: B. Corney, Argument on the Assumed Birthday, 1864, 8vo, BONES: C. M. Ingleby, 8.'s Bones, 1883, sm. 4to; W. Hall, S.'s Grave, Notes of Traditions, 1884, 8vo, CRABTREE: C. F. Green, Legend of 8.'s Crab Tree, 1857, 4to, illustrated. DEER STEALING: C. H. Bracebridge, 8S. no Deer Stealer, 1862, 8vo, illustrated. GENEALOGY: J. Jordan, Pedigree of the Family of 8., 1796, in vol. iii. of R. Ryan's Dramatie Table Talk, 1825-30, 3 vols. 8v0; Memoirs of the Families of S.and Hart, 1790, ed. Halliwell, 1865, 4to; G. R. French, Shakspeareana Genealogica, 1869, 8vo; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, Entries respecting §., his Family and Connexions, 1864, 4to. GHOST-BELIEF: A. Roffe, The Ghost Belief of §., 1851, 8vo; T. A. Spalding, Elizabethan Demonology, 1880, 8vo. NAME: J.' O, Halliwell Phillipps, New Lamps or Old? 1880, 8vo, advocates "Shakespeare." OCCUPATION: see Special Knowledge, above. RELIGION: ¥. Fritzart, War 8. ein Christ 2? Heidelberg, 1832, 8vo,; W. J. Birch, Philosophy and Religion of 8., 1848, sm. 8vo, thinks hima sceptic; E. Vehse, S. als Protestant, Politiker, Psycholog, u. Dichter, Hamburg, 1851, 2 vols. sm. 8vo; J. J. Rietmann, Ueber 8.'s religidse u. ethische Bedeutung, St Gallen, 1858, 12mo; A. F. Rio, S., 1864, 8vo (S. Roman Catholic); W. Koenig, 8. als Dichter, Weltweiser, wu. Christ, Leipsic, 1873, 8v0; A. Gilman, 8.'s Morals, N.Y., 1880, 8vo; J. M. Raich, 8.'s Stellung zur Kathol. Religion, 1884, 8vo, STRATFORD-UPON-AVon: R. B. Wheler, History and Antiquities of Stratford, 1806, 8vo, Accownt of*~~

~~*the Birth- place, new edition 1863, 8vo, and Collectanea, 1865, 4to; ¥. W. Fairholt, The ome of 8., 1847, 8vo, engravings reproduced in 8. Neil's Home of 8., 1871, 8vo; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, New Boke about 8. and Stratford, 1850, 4to, Brief Hand List of the Borough Records, 1862, 8vo, Descriptive Calendar, 1863, folio, Brief Guide to the Gardens, 1863, 8vo, Historical Account of the New Place, 1864, folio illustrated, and Stratford in the Times of the 8.s, 1864, folio; E, Lees, Stratford as connected with 8., 1854, 8vo; J. R. Wise, 8., his Birthplace and its Neighbourhood, 1861, 8vo; J. C. M. Bellew, 8.'s Home at New Place, 1863, sm. 8vo, illustrated, with pedigrees; R. HE. Huuter, 8. and Stratford, 1864, 8vo; J. M. Jephson, S., his Birthplace, Home, and Grave, 1864, 4to, illustrated; J. Walter, S.s Home and Rural Life, 1874, 4to, illustrative of localities; C. M. Iugleby, 8. and the Welcombe Enclosures, 1883, folio; S. L. Lee, Stratford-on-Avon, 1884, folio, illustrated.*~~

~~*XV. PORTRAITS.*~~

~~*G. Steevens, Proposals for Publishing the Felton Portrait, 1794, 8vo; J. Britton, On the Monumental Bust, 1816, 8vo0; J. Boaden, Authenticity of Various Pictures and Prints offered as Portraits of 8., 1824, 4to; A, Wivell, The Monumental Bust, 1827, 8vo, and Inquiry into the S. Portraits, 1840, 8vo; H. Rodd, The Chandos Portrait [1849], 8vo; R. H. Forster, Remarks on the Chandos Portrait, 1849, 8vo; J. P. Collier, Dissertation upon the Imputed Portraits, 1851, 8v0; J. H. Friswell, Life Portraits of W. 8., 1864, 8vo; G. Scharf, On the Principal Portraits of S., 1864, 12mo; E. T. Craig, S. and his Portraits, Bust, and Monument, 2d ed, 1864, 8vo, and S.'s Portraits phreno- logically considered, Philadelphia, 1875, 8vo; G. Harrison, The Stratford Bust, Brooklyn, 1865, 4to; W. Page, Study of 8.'s Portraits, 1876, sm. 4to; J. P. Norris, Bibliography of Works on the Portraits of S., Philadelphia, 1879, 8vo, 44 titles, The Death Mask of §., 1884, and The Portraits of 8., Phil., 1885, 4to, with bibliography of 111 references,and illustrations. An elaborate account by A. M. Knapp of the portraits in the Barton collection, Boston Public Library, may be found in the 8. Catalogue, 1880, large 8vo.*~~

~~*XVI. LITERARY AND DRAMATIC History.*~~

~~*E. Malone, Historical Account of the English Stage, 1790, enlarged in Boswell's edition, 1821; J. P. Collier, History of English Dramatic Poetry, 1831, new ed. 1879, 3 vols. 8vo, Memoirs of Edw. Alleyne (Shakespeare Society), 1841, 8vo, The Alleyne Papers (Shakespeare Society), 1848, 8vo [see G. F. Warner's catalogue of the Dulwich MSS., 1881, 8vo], and Memoirs of the Principal Actors in the Plays of 8. (Shakespeare Society), 1846, 8vo; N. J. Halpin, The Dramatie Unities of §., 1849, 8vo, ed. by C. M. Ingleby (N.S. Soc., series i., 1875-6); N. Delius, Ueber das Englische Theaterwesen zu 8.'s Zeit, Bremen, 1853, 8vo; A. Mezieres, Prédécesseurs et Contemporains de &., 1863, 3d ed. 1881, 8vo0, and Contemporains et successeurs de §.,3d ed. 1881; Rev. W. R, Arrowsmith, S.'s Editors and Commentators, 1865, 8vo ; W. Kelly, Notices of the Drama and Popular Amusements of the 16th and 17th Centuries, 1865, 8vo ; C. M. Ingleby, Traces of the Authorship of the Works attributed to 8., 1868, 8vo, S's Centurie of Prayse, culled from Writers of the First Century after his Rise, 1874, 4to (enlarged by Miss Toulmin Smith for N. 8. Soc., 1879), and §. Allusion Books (N.S. Soc.), 1874 ; H. 1. Ruggles, The Method of S. as an Artist, N.Y., 1870, 8vo; A. H. Paget, 8.'s Plays, a Chapter of Stage History, 1875, 8vo; H. Ulrici, 8.'s Dramatic Art, translated by L. D. Schmitz, 1876, 2 vols. 8vo; H. P. Stokes, The Chronological Order of 8.'s Plays, 1878, 8vo; C. Knortz, S. in Amerika, Berlin, 1882, 8vo; C, Muerer, Synchronist. Zusammensicllany der wichtigsten Notizen tib. 83 Leben u. Werke, 1882, 4to; J. A. Symonds, S.'s Predecessors in the English Drama, 1884, 8vo; A. R. Frey, S. and the alleged Spanish Prototypes, N.Y., 1886, sm. 4to.*~~

~~*GERMANY : S.'s Schauspiele erléutert von F. Horn, Leipsic, 1823-31, 5 vols. 8vo; E. A. Hagen, S.'s erstes Erscheinen auf den Bilhnen Deutschlands, K6nigs., 1832, 8vo; K. Assman, S. und seine deutschen Uebersetzer, Liegnitz, 1843, 4to ; N. Delius, Die Schlegel-Tiecksche S. Uebersetz., Bonn, 1846, 12mo ; F, K. Elze, Die Englische Sprache in Deutschland, Dresden, 1864, 12mo; FY. A. T. Kreyssig, 8. Cultus, Elbing, 1864, 8vo; L. G. Lemcke, 8. in seinem Verhdlinisse zu Deutschland, Leipsic, 1864, 8vo; W. J. Thoms, "S. in Germany," in Fhree Notelets, 1865, 8vo; A. Cohn, 8. in Germany in the 16th and 17th Centuries, 1865, 4to ; C. Humbert, Moliére, 8., und d. deutsche Kritik, Leipsic, 1869, 8vo; W. Oechelhiiuser, Die Wiirdigung 8.'s in Engl. u. Deutsch- land, 1869,*~~

~~*8vo; R. Genée, Geschichte d. 8.'sehen Dramen in Deutschland, Leipsic, 1870, 8vo; M. Bernays, Zur Entstchwngsgeschichte des Schlegelschen S., Leipsic, 1872, 8vo; R. J. Benedix, Die S.omanic, Stuttgart, 1873, 8vo; W. Wagner, S. und die neueste Kritik, Hamburg, 1874, 8v0; J. Meissner, Die englischen Comédianten in Ocsterreich, Vienna, 1884, 8vo.*~~

~~*Sf A—*~~

~~*FRANCE: J. B. M. A. Lacroix, Histoire de Vinfluence de §. sur le thédtre Francais, Brussels, 1856, 8v0; W. Reymond, Corneille, S., et Goethe, Berlin, 1864, 8v0; A. Schmidt, Voltaire's Verdienste um die Einfihrung 8., 1864, 4to.*~~

~~*XVII. SHAKESPEARE-J UBILEES.*~~

~~*Essay on the Jubilee at Stratford, 1769, 8vo; S's Garland, 1769, 8vo, second edition 1826, 8v0; Concise Account of Garrick's Jubilee, 1769, and the Festivals of 1827 and 1830, 1830, 8vo ; Descriptine Account of the Second Gala, 1830, 8vo; K. F. Gutzkow, Eine 8. Feier an der Ilm, Leipsic, 1864, 8vo; P. H. A. Mdbius, Die Deutsche 8. Freier, Leipsic, 1864, 8vo; Ter- centenary Celebration by the New England Historic-Genealogical Society at Boston, 1864, 8v0; Oficial Programme at the Tercenterary Festival at Stratford, with Life, Guide, &c., 1864, 8vo.*~~

~~*XVIII. IRELAND CONTROVERSY.*~~

~~*Miscellaneous Papers and Legal Instruments under the ITand and Seal of W. §S., 1795, imp. folio, 2d ed. 1796, 8vo (W. H. Ireland's forgeries) ; Vortigern, an Historical Tragedy, 1796, sm. 8vo, 2d ed. 1832, 8vo (forgery) ; E. Malone, Fnquiry into the Authenticity of Certain Papers and Legal Instruments, 1796, 8vo; W. IL. Treland, Authentic Account of the Shake-spearian MSS., 1796, 8vo; S. Ireland, Investigation of Mr Malone, 1797, 8vo; J. J. Eschenburg, Ueber den vorgeblichen Fund S.schen Iandschriften, Leipsic, 1797, sm. 8vo; G. Chalmers, Apology for the Believers in the § Papers, &c., 1797-1800, 3 pts. 8vo; [G. Hardinge], Chalmeriana, 1800, 8vo; W. H. Ireland, Confessions, 1805, sm. 8vo, new edition, with introduction by R. G. White, 1874, 12mo.*~~

~~*XIX. PAYNE COLLIER CONTROVERSY.*~~

~~*J.P. Collier, New Facts regarding the Life of S., 1835, 8v0, New Particu-lars, 1886, 8vo, Further Particulars, 1839, 8vo, Reasons Sor a New Edition of S.'s Works, 1841, 2d ed. 1842, 8vo, and Notes and Emendations to the Text (Shakespeare Society), 1852, 2d ed. 1853, 8vo, translated into German by Dr Leo, 1853, also in J. Frese's Ergénzungsband zu 8.'s Dramen, 1853, 8vo; 8. W. Singer, The Text of 8S. Vindicated, 1853, 8vo (anti-Collier); J. 0. Halliwell Phillipps, Curiosities of Modern Shakespearian Criticism, 1853, 8vo (anti-Collier), Observations on the MS. Emendations, 1853, 8vo (anti-Collier), and Observations on the Shakespearian Horgeries at Bridgewater Iouse, 1853, 4to (anti-Collier); C. Knight, Old Lamps or New? 1853, 12mo (pro-Collier) ; Rev. A. Dyce, A Few Notes on S., 1853, 8vo ; N. Delius, Collier's alte handschr. Eimendationen, Bonn, 1858, 8vo (anti-Collier); F. A. Leo, Die Delius' sche Kritik, Berlin, 1853, 8vo (pro-Collier); R. G. White, S.'s Scholar, 1854, 8vo (anti-Collier); J.T. Mommsen, Der Perkins S., Berlin, 1854, 8vo (anti-Collier) ; A. E. Brae, Literary Cookery, 1855, 8vo (anti-Collier), and Collier, Coleridge, and 8., 1860, 8vo, disputes authenticity of following lectures; S. T, Coleridge, Seven Lectures on §. and Milton, edited by J. P. Collier, 1856; Rey. A. Dyce, Strictures on Mr Oollier's New Edition [1858], 1859, 8vo (anti-Collier) ; C. M. Ingleby, The 8. Fabrications, 1859, sm. 8vo, and Complete View of the §. Controversy, 1861, with bibliography (anti-Collier) ; N. B. 8. AS Ilamilton, Inquiry into the Genuineness of the MS. Corrections, 1860, 4to (anti-Collier); Collier's Reply to Hamilton, 1860, 8vo; Sir T. D, Hardy, Review of the Present State of the 8. Controversy, 1860, 8vo; J. P. Collier, Trilogy : Conversations, 1874, 3 pts. 4to.*~~

~~*XX. SHAKESPEARE-BACON CONTROVERSY.*~~

~~*J. C. Hart, The Romance of Yachting, N.Y., 1848, 12mo, first work con-taining doubt of Shakespeare's authorship ; Ww. H. Smith, Was Bacon the*~~

~~*SHA Tel*~~

~~*Author of 8.'s Plays? 1856, 8vo,—extended as Bacon and S., 1857, 12mo (anti- Shakespeare) ; D. Bacon, The Philosophy of the Plays of 8. unfolded, 1857, 8vo (anti-Shakespeare) ; N. Holmes, Authorship of §., 1866, new ed. 1886, 2 vols. 12mo (anti-Shakespeare); Bacon's Promus, edited by Mrs H. Pott, 1883, 8vo (anti-Shakespeare) ; W. H. Wyman, Bibliography of the Bacon-S. Contro- versy, Cincinnati, 1884, 8vo, 255 entries (of which 117 pro-Shakespeare, 73 anti-, and 65 unclassified). XXI. BIBLIOGRAPHY. '*~~

~~*F. Meres, Palladis Tamia: Witts Treasury, 1598, 12mo, contains the earliest list of Shakespeare's works; J. Wilson, Shakespeariana,—Cataloque of all the Books, &c., relating to §., 1827, sm. 8vo; W. T. Lowndes, S. and his Commentators, 1831, 8vo, reprinted from the Manual; J. O. Halliwell Phillipps, Shakespeariana : Catalogue of Early Editions, Commentaries, ée., Books, MSS., &c., illust. of S., in his*~~

~~*of S., 1859, 8vo, Hand List of Shakespeariana, 1862, 8vo, List of Works 1867, 8v0, Catalogue of the 8. Library and Musewm at 1868, 8vo, land List of Karly Editions, 1867, 8vo, Cata-*~~

~~*sm. 8vo, bibliography with Shakespeareana: Verzeichniss, Vienna, 1864, 8vo ; from 1564, 2a edition containing the literature continued*~~

~~*1878-80, 2 vols. la. 8vo, the largest collection in UISis" He Ee arranged under Headings, St Louis, 1879, 8v0; Topical Index Shakespearean (sic) in Shakespeariana, 1885-6 pts. xv.—xxii., repr. as Digest Shakespeareanz (sic),*~~

~~*SHALLOT. See Horticurrurs, vol. xii. p. 288.*~~

~~*SHAMANISM is the name commonly given to the type of religion which once prevailed among all the Ural- Altaic peoples,—Tungus, Mongol, and Turkish,—and which still lives in various parts of northern Asia in spite of the progress of Mohammedanism, Buddhism, and Christianity. The shaman himself (in Turkish, Zam) is a wizard-priest, closely akin to the medicine-men of savage tribes in other parts of the world. Outsiders often describe Shamanism as pure devil-worship, but in reality the shaman or Lam deals with good as well as with evil spirits, especially with the good*~~

~~*spirits of ancestors (cf. Rewicion, vol. xx. p. 363). Among the Altaians, for example, the practices of the sorcerers rest on an elaborate cosmogony and a developed doctrine of good and evil powers, the friends and enemies of man. The kam has the power of influen- cing these by magic ritual, and his gift is hereditary,—his own ancestors, now good spirits, being the great assistants of his work. His two chief functions are to perform sacrifice, with which is conjoined the procuring of oracles, and to purify houses after a death, preventing the dead man from continuing his injurious presence among the living ; see the full accounts of Radloff, Aus Siberien, 1884, vol. ii. In his magical apparatus a drum (tiingiir) holds the chief place. The ceremonies have a dramatic character, the wizard acting an ascent to the heavens or a descent to the under-world, and holding colloquy with their denizens in scenes of great excitement ending in ecstasy and physical collapse. The epithet of devil-worship as applied to the Altaian Shamanism is so far justified that the great enemy of man, Erlik, the king of the lower world, from whom death and all evils come, is much courted, addressed as father and guide, and propitiated with offerings. He is***~~

“

~~*not, however, a power co-ordinate with the highest good god Kaira Kan, but is the creature of the latter, who banished him underground for his evil deeds,*~~

~~*SHAMMAI, a Jewish rabbi, sometimes called }223, “the elder,” was the contemporary of Hite. (g.v.) and the head of a rival school. The pair are twelfth in order in the Pirke Aboth, where we are informed that Shammai enjoined his disciples to make a special business of the study of the law, to promise little and perform much, and to receive every one in a friendly spirit. Of his personal history nothing is known. The tendency of Shammai and his school is represented as having been towards a more scrupulously and burdensomely literal construction of the law than was thought necessary by Hillel; but their differences so far as known turned upon very trifling minutiz. One example of his rigour will suffice. It is related of him in the Mishnah that a grandson having been born to him during the feast of tabernacles he caused the ceiling to be removed and*~~

~~*the bed to be canopied with branches, in order that the child also might observe the solemnity according to the law.*~~

~~*SHAMOKIN, a post borough of the United States, in Northumberland county, Pennsylvania, 20 miles south- east of Sunbury, is a great centre of the coal-trade, and had a population in 1881 of 8184.*~~

~~*SHANGHAI, a city of China. The native city of Shanghai is situated in 31° 15' N. lat. and 121° 27' E. long,, and stands on the left or western bank of the Hwang-p'u river, about twelve miles from the point where that river empties itself into the estuary of the Yang-tsze-kiang. The walls which surround it are about 34 miles in circum- ference, and are pierced by seven gates. The streets and thoroughfares may be said to illustrate all the worse*~~

~~*features of Chinese cities—dirt, closeness, and absence of all sanitary arrangements; while the want of any build- ing of architectural or antiquarian interest robs the city of any redeeming traits. On the eastern face of the city, between the walls and the river, stands the principal suburb, off which the native shipping lies anchored. The native town has thus nothing to recommend it except its geographical position. Situated in the extreme eastern portion of the province of Kiang-soo, and possessing a good and commodious anchorage, as well as an easy access to the ocean, it forms the principal port of central China. From the western wall of the city there stretches away arich alluvial plain extending over 45,000 square miles, which is intersected by numerous waterways and_ great chains of lakes. The products of this fertile district, as well as the ; teas and silks of more distant regions, find their natural outlet at Shanghai. The looms of Soochow and the tea plantations of Gan-hwuy, together with the rice of this "garden of China," have for many years before treaty days supplied the Shanghai junks with their richest freight. But though thus favourably situated as an emporium of trade Shanghai did not attract the attention of foreign diplomatists until the outbreak of the war of 1841, when the inhabitants purchased _protec- tion from the bombarding propensities of Admiral Parker by the payment of a ransom of one million taels. In the Nanking treaty, which was signed in the*~~

~~*following year, Shanghai was included among the four new ports which were thrown open to trade by the terms of that document. In 1843 Sir George Balfour, then Captain Balfour, was appointed British consul, and it was on his motion that the site of the present English settlement, which is bounded on the north by the Soochow creek, on the south by the Yang-king canal, and on the east by the river, was chosen. The site, thus defined on its three sides (on the west no boundary was marked out), is three-fifths of a mile in length, and was separated from the native city by a narrow strip of land which was subsequently selected as the site of the French settlement. Later again the Americans established themselves on the other side of the Soochow creek, on a piece of land fronting on the river, which there makes a sharp turn in an easterly direction. At first merchants appeared disinclined to take advantage of the opportunities offered them at Shanghai. "At the end of the first year of its history as an open port Shanghai could count only 23 foreign residents and families, 1 consular flag, 11 merchants' houses, and 2 Protestant missionaries. Only forty-four foreign vessels had arrived during the same period."! By degrees, however, the manifold advantages as a port of trade possessed by Shanghai attracted merchants of all nationalities; and from the banks of the Hwang-p'u arose lines of hongs and handsome dwelling-houses, which have converted a reed-covered swamp into one of the finest cities in the East, ee a eT a*~~

~~*1 The Treaty Ports of China and Japan, by W. F. Mayer.*~~

~~*Zinchorago for Shape of War*~~

~~*Shanghai.*~~

~~*SHANGHAT*~~

~~*The number of foreigners, other than English, who took up their abode in the English settlement at Shanghai made it soon necessary to adopt some more catholic form of government than that supplied by an English consul who had control only over British subjects, and by com- mon agreement a committee of residents, consisting of a chairman and six members, was elected by the renters of land for the purposes of general municipal administra- tion. It was expected when the council was formed*~~

~~*that the three settlements—the British, French, and Americans—would have been incorporated into one municipality, but international jealousy prevented the fulfilment of the scheme, and it was not until 1863 that the Americans threw in their lot with the British, In 1853 the pro- sperity of the settlements received a severe check in con- sequence of the capture of the native city by a band of insurgents, who held possession of the walls from September in that year to February 1855. This incident, though in many ways disastrous, was the exciting cause of the estab- lishment of the foreign customs service, which has proved of such inestimable advantage to the Chinese Government. The confusion into which the customs system was thrown by the occupation of the city by the rebels induced the Chinese authorities to request the consuls: of Great Britain, France, and the United States to nominate three officers to superintend the collection of the revenue. This arrangement was found to work so well that on the re- occupation of the city the native authorities proposed that it should be made permanent, and Mr H. N. Lay, of H.M.'s consular service, was in consequence appointed inspector of the Shanghai customs. The results of Mr Lay's ad- ministration proved so successful that when arranging the terms of the treaty of 1858 the Chinese willingly assented to the application of the same system to all the treaty ports, and Mr Lay was thereupon appointed inspector-general of maritime customs. On the retirement of Mr Lay in 1862 Sir Robert Hart was appointed to the post, which he still (1886) occupies.*~~

~~*During the period from 1856 to 1864 the trade of Shanghai increased by leaps and by bounds, and its prosperity culminated between 1860 and 1864, when, in addition to the ordinary commerce, the influx of Chinese into the foreign settlement in consequence of the advance eastward of the T'ai-p'ing rebels added enormously to the value of land and to the profits of the leaseholders, Both in 1860 and again in 1861 the rebels advanced to the walls of Shanghai, and on both occasions were driven back in confusion by the British troops and volunteers, aided by the naval forces of England and France. It was in connexion with this resistance to the rebels at Shanghai that General Gordon assumed the command of the Chinese force, which under his direction gave a meaning and reality to the hitherto somewhat boastful title of "ever-victorious army" it had assumed under the generalship of the two American adventurers Ward*~~

~~and Burgevine. To Shanghai the successful operations of Gordon against the rebels brought temporarily disastrous conse- quences. With the disappearance of the T'ai-p'ings the refugees who had sought safety in the foreign settlements returned to their homes, leaving whole streets and quarters deserted and empty. The loss thus inflicted on the municipality was very considerable, and was intensified by a commercial crisis in the markets of cotton and tea, in both of which articles there had been a great deal of over- speculation. But, though the abnormal prosperity produced by extraordinary circumstances was thus suddenly brought to an end, the genuine trade of the port has steadily advanced, subject of course to occasional fluctuations, For example, between the years 1878 and 1881 the gross value of the trade increased from 110,956,274 taels to 141,291,357 taels. In 1883, however, this amount fell to 110,433,531 taels, while in 1884 it rose again' to 118,215,520 taels, although at this time, as will be remembered, hostilities were being carried on between France and China. In the same year 53,562 bales of silk were exported, as against 47,807 bales in 1883, and 27,084,675 Tb of green tea, as against 25,336,041 tb in 1883. In black tea there was a falling off, the respective figures being 43,813,058 and 48,251,637 Ib. The total burthen of foreign steamers which entered and cleared at Shanghai during 1884 was 3,145,242 tons. Of this amount 2,238,433 tons were British, 500,222 were American, 188,484 were Japanese, 98,226 were German, 88,983 were French, 24,572 were Russian, and 11,322 were Danish.~~

~~According to the latest estimate the native population of the~~

~~city and suburbs of Shanghai amounts to 156,000. When to this number the boat population, amounting to 11,000, and the mixed inhabitants of the foreign settlements, numbering 145,500, are added, a total is reached of 312,500 souls.~~

~~The vastness of English interests in China and the large British population at Shanghai gave rise in 1865 to the establishment of a British supreme court for China and Japan, —Sir Edmund Hornby, who was then the judge of the British court at Constantinople, being the first judge appointed to the new office. The court thus consti. tuted not only exercises~~

~~*jurisdiction over the British subjects at Shanghai but acts as a court of appeal from all British consular courts in China and Japan. All charges against Chinamen within the settlement are tried before a mixed court, which sits daily, presided over by a Chinese official and an officer of the consular service. During the year 1884 2,304 criminal cases were tried before this tribunal, and 99 civil cases,—in 85 of which cases no less a sum than £60,000 was involved.*~~

~~*A handsome bund runs along the river frontage of the three foreign settlements, and the public buildings, especially in the British settlement, are large and fine. The cathedral, which is built in the Gothic style, is a notable example of Sir Gilbert Scott's skill as an architect, and the municipal offices, club-house, and hospitals are all admirable in their way. Shanghai is now con- nected with Peking by a telegraph, which will doubtless before long be supplemented by a railway. Some years ago a short railway was laid down between Shanghai and Woosung by some foreigners who wished to force the pace at which China was pro- gressing. But the time had not come when such a step would be adopted by the Chinese, and after a few weeks' existence the plant was bought by the native authorities and shipped to Formosa, where it has since been allowed to rust and rot. The climate of Shanghai is essentially unhealthy. It lies low, and, though the early winter is enjoyable, snow and ice being occasionally seen, the summer months are swelteringly hot. Fever, dysentery, and cholera are unfortunately common complaints, and it is only by frequent trips to Japan and Chefoo that the residents are able to preserve health and strength. But, notwithstanding every dis- advantage, the position occupied by Shanghai as a centre of trade, situated as it is at the mouth of the Yang-tsze-kiang, in the immediate neighbourhood of the richest silk and tea districts, and in proximity to Japan and the newly- opened ports of Corea, insures for it an increasing volume of commerce and a widening prosperity in the future. (R. K. D.)*~~

~~*SHANNON. See IrExann, vol. xiii. p. 216.*~~

~~*SHANS. This name is applied to a number of for the most part semi- independent communities occupying a region bounded on the W. by Burmah and Assam, N. and N.E. by the Chinese province of Yun-nan, E.*~~

~~*by Tong- king, and 8. by Siam (see Plate IX.). Ethnologically the race has a much wider extension, including the Siamese (see Stam), and also, according to Garnier and Colquhoun, the hill tribes around the Tong-king delta and various tribes of Kwang-tung and Kwang-se, and extending across the north of Burmah into Assam. It is also widely diffused through south-western Yun-nan. Terrien de Lacouperie considers it allied'to the Mon, the Mung, and the Pa, and places its early home in the mountains north of Sze-chuen, whence, not having amal- gamated with the growing Chinese empire, it was gradually forced southwards. Although the level of civilization and the purity of their Buddhism vary considerably among the different branches of the race, there is everywhere a remarkable resemblance in appearance, manners, customs, and polity. The traditions current of their origin, too, though localized by each in its own habitat, are closely similar. This great homogeneity seems the more remark- able in that the race is found not only living under many different political systems,—.e., either independent, or subject to Burmah, China, or Siam,—but often in com- munities isolated by mountain ranges, inhabited by tribes of different race and character. All this seems to point to a political unity in earlier times.*~~

~~*The Shans probably appeared on the upper Irawadi nearly two thousand years ago, but Burmese and Shan traditions agree that they were established some centuries earlier on the upper waters of the Shweli and on the Salwin and adjacent valleys on the south-west frontiers of Yun-nan. Here, at all events, in the 7th and 8th cen-*~~

| turies, we hear of the growth of that power which,

temporarily broken by Burmah in the 11th century, reached its highest development in the 13th. This Shan empire, known by the classical Indian name of Kausambi, —corrupted after the punning Chinese fashion into Ko- shan-pyi, 7.e., nine Shan states,—was a confederacy of about ten states, known among themselves by the name of the most powerful member, Mau, or Muang Mau. A great leader, Sam Lung Pha, brother of the king of Mau, overran and conquered Upper Assam from the Satiyas in 1229, the dynasty lasting until the British annexation, These Ahoms still inhabit the Assam districts of Sibsagar and south and east Lakhimpur, though pressed on from the south-west by the Bengalis, whom they despise as a black and inferior race, preferring to associate with the Chinese, whom they regard as congeners, and as the greatest race in the world.

This 13th and the following century also saw Tali to the east and Arakan to the west invaded, Burmah being then weakened by the Mongol invasion ; Chieng Mai and other southern Shan states were also annexed, and "Ayuthia " (d.e., Siam), Cambodia, and Tavoy are claimed by the Shan historians as among their conquests, the Shan influence being felt even in Java. From the 14th to the 16th century wars with both Burmah and China were frequent, and Shan dynasties ruled at times in Burmah 3 but in 1556-62 the Burmese conquered Mogaung, the chief province of Mau, when Buddhism is recorded to have been introduced: probably only a reform of religion is meant. In 1604 the districts now known as the Chinese Shan States, z¢, the heart of the Mau empire, lying chiefly in the Ta-peng basin, east of Bamo,—a town whose population also is mainly Shan,—were finally conquered by China, Mogaung remaining independent on sufferance till absorbed by Burmah in 1796.

Zimmé or Chieng Mai (including Kiang Hai, Kiang Sen, Lagong, and Lapong), whose capital is now an important and well-built town, and Vien Chang on the east of the Me-kong, were both great Shan centres, warring, with various fortunes, with Burmah and Cambodia and with

~~each other, till subjected by the growing power of Siam late in the last century.~~

~~The Burmese Shan States, especially those more remote from Mandalay, have latterly become practically inde- pendent; and, the tyranny which led to extensive south- ward migration having thus ceased, the stream is partly returning northwards. Descendants, too, of the popula- tion deported by Siam from Kiang Sen about a hundred years ago are now by the king's permission returning to people that fertile territory. The Burmese plan with the Shans was to govern by fostering internal dissensions, and they are bitterly hated, while the Chinese are in an equal degree liked and respected. The great Shan state of Kiang Hung has now accepted the dictation of China, to whom in fact, like some of its lesser neighbours, it has always paid certain taxes, while acknowledging the supre- inacy of Burmah. Kiang Tung to the south, which has been Burmese for over a century, has lately made over- tures to Siam, though not forgetting the injuries inflicted by that power in 1854. The numerous ruins of great cities over the whole region from Chieng Mai to Kiang Tung testify to former wealth and prosperity, though they may not have all existed contemporaneously. In Luang Pra- bang in the north-east, on the other hand, tribes of a partly Chinese race are pressing southwards. It is remarkable how many of the conquering irruptions of south-east Asia were due mainly to the eviction of such conquerors by some stronger power. Incessant wars and vast deporta- tions have tended to assimilate the various populations of all this region.~~

~~774.~~

~~Each Shan state is governed by a tsobwa (chao p'hya), or supreme chief, aided by a council, and often by a coadjutor. Where the Shans are in immediate contact with one of their great neighbours their habits and customs are necessarily modified ; otherwise, speaking generally, civilization increases southwards. Religion is nominally Buddhist, and the priests, though their lives are usually far from correct, have great influence ; temples, caves, and other localities sacred to Buddha are thronged with worshippers liberal with their offerings ; but the practical exercise of religion consists chiefly in efforts to propitiate or avert the evil~~

~~*influence of the nats or p'hees, demons and spirits everywhere present, to whom all accidents and illnesses are attributed. Along with the Buddha, various images, among which the horse is not uncommon, are adored (though there are temples in which these are not found); and fetiches—natural objects of special form, ¢.g., of some part of the body—are kept in the house to avert disease. Medical treat- ment consists largely in magical practices, and individuals de- nounced by the sick as the cause of their illness frequently have their houses burned and are themselves deported to a distance. Thus, too, ordeals have a prominent place in legal practice. The Shans have no Buddhist prejudices against killing poultry or cattle for food, but like other Indo-Chinese and the Malays do not use milk. Slavery is general; the supply is recruited partly by raids on neighbouring hill tribes ; the Indo-Chinese practice of slavery for debt also prevails. The slaves are not ill-treated, and are chiefly employed in field labour by the chaos, who own great numbers. In appearance the North Shans are sallow, but hardly darker than South Europeans, and are characterized by a short broad flat face, more elongated and nearer the Tartar type in the upper classes ; they have red cheeks, brown eyes hardly oblique, black hair, nose almost aquiline, and are of medium height. The Chinese Shans are much smaller, with squat figures, prominent cheek-bones, and oblique eyes. ;*~~

~~*The practice of tattooing prevails in some districts, down to the upper waters of the Me-nam, and it occurs also among the Laos in the south-east, the tattooed being known as the black-bellied, the non-tattooed as the white-bellied. The Shans are all hardier and more manly than their congeners the Siamese, and they are also more sedate and more self-possessed than the Burmese. Most travellers speak of them as brave, friendly, social, and hospitable, but a good deal of the oppression and cruelty natural to a senii- barbarous condition prevails. They are cleanly and fond of bathing, the towns and villages being supplied with bamboo aqueducts. Drunkeuness, except at festivals, is rare. Gambling is common, whole families being sold into slavery to pay debts thus contracted. Public gaming and the sale of spirits and opium are monopolies. They show much artistic taste in the beautiful colours of their textile fabrics, the needlework and embroidery of the women, and the designing and execution of the silver ornaments which are worn in*~~

~~*profusion, They show great aptitude for trade, and are said by Mr Holt Hallett to welcome the prospect of the railway intended to connect their country with Maulmein, crossing thence to Raheng or some neighbouring point on the Me-nam, and on through the fertile valleys and plateaus on its upper tributaries to the Chinese frontier.*~~

~~*Tea is found, both wild and cultivated, from Zimmé to Kiang Tung. Opium is exported to Mandalay and to China. Indian corn, sugar, and tobacco are grown in the low grounds, and excellent cotton and indigo (which also grows wild in the hills). Teak has long been worked by Anglo-Burmese in the eastern affluents of the Toong-yen and neighbouring valleys, and has become comparatively scarce west of the Me-ping ; but it grows freely in the hills and valleys around Kiang Sen and Lagong, aud in the hill region of eastern Siam, where, however, it is of inferior quality. Silk is produced, and iron, copper, and silver-lead (galena) ores are worked.*~~

~~*The Shan languages are classified by Dr Cushing as follows :— Ahom (Assam), extinct ; Khamti, on the upper Irawadi and other valleys on the extreme north of Burmah ; the Chinese (Mau) Shans, east from Bamo; Shans proper, between the mountains which bound the Burmese plains in the east and the Me-kong, and between 23° and 19° N. lat.; Laos to the south of this, from 19° north to the frontiers of Siam; and lastly, Siamese. The last two, as spoken, differ but little, and the three others may be grouped together. All have separate alphabets (related, however, in form), except the Siamese ; and, the spelling being phonetic, the orthography is tolerably fixed. But it is a tonal language, and the vowel signs are few, so that some have two or three values assigned them. There are a good many Palf words due to Buddhism, many Bur- mese words in the districts under Burmese influence, and a large foreign element in the Chinese Shan state of Ho-tha, where the race is perhaps not fundamentally Shan.*~~

~~*See Ney Elias, Introductory Sketch of the History of the Shans in Upper Burmahand West Yun-nan, Calcutta, 1876 ; Yule, Glossary of Anglo-Indian Words and Phrases (1886), and Narrative of the Mission to Ava (1858) ; Anderson, From*~~

~~*Mandalay to Momien; Colquhoun, Among the Shans ; Cushing, Shan Dictionary*~~

~~*(Introduction); Bock. Temples and Elephants; Sir A. Phayre, History of Burmah, (C. T.)*~~

~~*SHA—SHA*~~

~~*SHARK. The systematic position of the group of Sharks or Selachotdei in the class of Fishes, their classifica- tion, and their general external and anatomical character- istics have been already sufficiently noticed under Icaruy- oLoey (vol. xii. pp. 630 sq.), and we have here to supplement that article only by a fuller reference to the natural history of the more common and more important types of the group.*~~

~~*Sharks are almost exclusively inhabitants of the sea, but some species freely enter the mouths of large rivers, and one species (Carcharias gangeticus) occurs frequently high up in the large rivers of India, and in the Tigris about Baghdad, at a distance of 350 miles from the Persian Gulf in a straight line, and has even been reported from a lake in Viti Levu (Fiji Islands) which is shut off from the sea by a cataract. Sharks are found in all seas; most numerous between the tropics, they become scarcer beyond, a few only reaching the Arctic circle ; it is not known how far they advance southwards in the Antarctic region. Alto- gether some hundred and fifty different species have been described.*~~

~~*With regard to their habits many are littoral species, the majority pelagic, and a few are known to belong to the bathybial fauna, having hitherto been obtained down toa depth of 500 fathoms.*~~

~~*Inttoral Sharks.—The littoral forms are of small size, and generally known under the name of "dog-fishes," "hounds," &. Some pelagic sharks of larger size also live near the shore on certain parts of a coast, but they are attracted to it by the abundance of food, and are as frequently found in the open sea, which is their birth- place ; therefore we shall refer to them when we speak of the pelagic kinds.*~~

~~*The majority of the littoral species live on the bottom, sometimes close inshore, and feed on small marine animals or on any animal substance. The following are deserving of special notice.*~~

~~*The Tope (Galews) is common on the coasts not only of England, Ireland, and of the more southern parts of Europe, but also of South Africa, California, Tasmania, and New Zealand. Its teeth are equal in both u jaws, of rather small size, flat, triangular, with \ the point directed towards the one side, and SS with a notch and denticulations on the shorter side (fig. 1). It is of a uniform slaty-grey colour, and attains to a length of 6 feet. The female brings forth some thirty living young at one birth in May. It cannot be regarded as a U very destructive fish, but becomes troublesome ~· toe at times to fishermen by taking their bait and upper; /tow. driving away other fish they desire to catch, ° (* ®)*~~

~~*The Hounds proper (Mustelus) possess a very different dentition, the teeth being small, obtuse, numerous, arranged in several rows like pavement (fig. 2). Five or six species are known from the shores of the various temperate and _ subtropical seas, one (M. vulgaris) being common on the coasts of Great Britain and the #% United States on the Pacific as wellas Hit the Atlantic side. It is of a uniform /) . grey colour or sparingly spotted with *!% %—Teeth of Mustelus. white, and attains to a length of 3 or 4 feet. The young, about twelve in number, are brought forth alive in November. It is a comparatively harmless fish, which feeds on shells, crustaceans, and decomposing animal substances.*~~

~~*Of the Dog-Fishes proper (Scyllium, Chiloscyllium, vc.) some twenty species are known, which are spread over nearly all the temperate and tropical seas. Their teeth are small, in several series, with a longer pointed cusp in the middle, and generally one or two smaller ones on each side (figs.*~~

~~*SHARK*~~

~~*3and 5). They are all oviparous, their oblong egg-shells being producedat each corner into a long thread by which the egg is fastened to some fixed object. Some of the tropical species are ornamented with a pretty pattern of coloration. ary The two British species, the \AMY Lesser and the*~~

~~*LargerSpotted Dog-Fish (Sc. canicula and Se. catulus), belong to the most common fishes of the *t)*~~

~~*coast, and are often con- sy -P vi founded with each other.*~~

~~*But the formeris finely dotted Fig. 3.—Teeth of Scyllium canicula. with brown above, the latter having the same parts covered with larger rounded brown spots, some of which are nearly*~~

~~*Fic. 4,—Chiloscyllium trispeculare,*~~

~~*as large as the eye. As regards size, the latter exceeds somewhat the other species, attaining to a length of 4 feet, Dogfishes may become extremely troublesome by the large numbers in which they congregate at fishing stations; nor do they compensate for the injury they cause to fishermen, being but rarely used as food, ex- cept at certain seasons by the poorer classes of the Mediterranean countries, in China and Japan, and in the Ork- neys, where they are dried Fie. 5.—Confluent Nasal and Buccal Cavities for home consumption. vials*~~

~~*The Black-mouthed Dog-Fish (Pristiurus melanostomus) is another European species which is rarely caught on the British coasts, and is recognized by a series of small, flat spines with which each side of the upper edge of the caudal fin is armed.*~~

~~*The Tiger-Shark (Stegostoma tigrinum) is one of the commonest and handsomest sharks in the Indian Ocean. The ground colour is a brownish-yellow, and the whole fish is ornamented with black or brown transverse bands or rounded spots. It isa littoral species, but adult specimens, which are from 10 to 15 feet long, are not rarely met far from land. _It is easily recognized by its enormously long bladelike tail, which is half as long as the whole fish. The teeth are small, trilobed, in many series. The fourth and fifth gill-openings are close together.*~~

~~*The genus Crossorhinus, of which three species are known from the coasts of Australia and Japan, is remarkable as the only instance in this group of fishes in which the in- teguments give these inactive ground-sharks, whilst they lie concealed watching for their prey, what may be*~~

~~*called a "celative" rather than a " protective" resemblance to their surroundings. Skinny frond-like appendages are developed near the angle of the mouth, or form a wreath round the side of the head, and the irregular and varied coloration of the whole body closely assimilates that of a rock covered with short vegetable and coralline growth. This peculiar development reminds us of the similar condition in the sea- devil (Lophius), where it serves also to conceal the fish from its prey, rather than to protect it from its enemies, The species of Crossorhinus grow to a length of 10 feet.*~~

~~*775*~~

~~*The so-called Port Jackson Shark (Cestracion) is likewise a littoral form. Besides the common species (C. philippi),*~~

~~*Fig. 6.—Cestracion galeatus,*~~

~~*three other closely allied kinds from the Indo-Pacific are known. This genus, which is the only existing type of a separate family, is one of special interest, as similar forms occur in Primary and Secondary strata. The jaws are armed with small obtuse teeth in front, which in young individuals are pointed, and provided with from three to five cusps. The lateral teeth are larger, pad-like, twice as broad as long and arranged in oblique series (fig. 7),—an*~~

~~*HQ) >*~~

~~*KEKE*~~

~~*ree ANE*~~

~~*Fie. 7,—Upper Jaw of Port Jackson Shark (Cestracton philippi). (x 3.)*~~

~~*arrangement admirably adapted for the prehension and mastication of crustaceans and hard-shelled animals. The fossil forms far exceeded in size the living, which scarcely attain to a length of 5 feet. The shells of their eggs are not rare in collections, being found thrown ashore like*~~

those of our dog-fishes. The shell is pyriform, with two broad lamellar ridges each wound edgewise five times round it fig. 8).

tie Spiny or Piked Dog-Fish (Acanthias) inhabits, like the majority of littoral genera of sharks, the temperate seas of both the northern and southern hemispheres. For some part of the year it lives in deeper water than the sharks already noticed, but at uncertain irregular times it appears at the surface and close inshore in almost incredible numbers. Couch says that he has heard of 20,000 having been taken in a sean at one time ; and in March 1858 the newspapers reported a prodigious shoal reaching westward to Uig, whence it extended from 20 to 30 miles seaward, and in an unbroken phalanx eastward to Moray, Banff, and Aberdeen. In the deep fjords of Norway, and indeed at every station of which a shoal of these fishes has taken temporary possession, line-fishing has to be suspended during the time of their visit, as they cut the lines with their scissors-like teeth. As expressed by the name, these

fishes are distinguished from the other British littoral

to this genus. Between thirty and forty species have

sharks by each of the two dorsal fins being armed in front _ been distinguished, all of which are found in tropical seas.

Fig. 8.—Egg-shell of same fish (x 3). I., external view; IJ., section; @ and 0, the two spiral ridges; c, cavity for the ovum. by an acute spine. They do not possess an anal fin. Their teeth are rather small, placed in a single series, with the point so much turned aside that the inner margin of the tooth forms the cutting edge (fig. 9). The spiny dog- fish are of a greyish colour, with some = whitish spots in young specimens, and attain to a length of 2 or 3 feet. They are viviparous, the young being pro- duced throughout the summer months. It is stated that in the northern islands of Great Britain they are dried for food, and that their livers yield a large tg quantity of oil.

~~*Finally, we have to notice among the littoral sharks the 'Angel-Fish" or " Monk-Fish" (hina squatina), which, by its broad flat head and ex- panded pectoral fins approaches in general appearance the rays. It occurs in the temperate seas of the southern as well as the northern hemisphere, and is not uncommon on sandy parts of the coast of England and Ireland. It does not seem to exceed a length of 5 feet, is not used as food, and is too rare to do any perceptible injury to other fish. It is said to produce about twenty young at a birth.*~~

~~*Pelagic Sharks.—All these are of large size, and some are surpassed in bulk and length only by the larger kinds of cetaceans. Those armed with powerful cutting teeth are the most formidable tyrants of the ocean and dangerous to man, whilst others, which are provided with numerous but very small teeth, feed on small fishes only or marine invertebrates, and are otherwise almost harmless and of a timid disposition, which causes them to retire into the solitudes of the open sea. On this account we know very little of their life; indeed, some are known from a few individuals only which have accidentally come ashore. All pelagic sharks have a wide geographical range, and many are found in all seas within the limits of the equatorial zone,—some being almost cosmopolitan. All seem to be viviparous.*~~

~~*Of the more remarkable forms which we propose to notice here the genus most abundantly represented in species and individuals is Carcharias. Perhaps nine-teuths of the sharks of which we read in books of travel belong*~~

~~*sS*~~

~~*thias vulgaris,*~~

~~*They are the sharks which so readily attach themselves to sailing vessels, following them for weeks, and thus exhibit- ing an endurance of muscular power scarcely found in any other class of animals. Others affect more the neighbour- hood of land, congreyating at localities where nature or the vicinity of man provides them with an abundant supply of food. One of the most common species, and one of those which extend far into the temperate zones, is the Blue Shark (Carcharias glaucus), of*~~

~~*which small specimens (4 to 6 feet long) are frequently caught on the south coasts of England and Ireland. Other species of Carcharias attain a length of 25 feet. The mouth of all is armed with a series of large flat triangular teeth, which have a sharp, smooth, or serrated edge (fig. 10).*~~

~~*Fig. 10,—Dentition of the Blue Shark (Ca rias glaucus). 'The single teeth are of the natural size.*~~

~~*Galeocerdo is likewise a large shark very dangerous to man, differing from the preceding chiefly by having the outer side of its teeth deeply notched. It has long been known to occur in the North Atlantic, close to the Arctic Ocean (G. arcticus), but its existence in other parts has been ascertained within a recent period; in fact, it seems to be one of the most common and dangerous sharks of the Indo-Pacific, the British Museum having obtained specimens from Mauritius, Kurrachee, Madras, and the west coast of Australia.*~~

~~*Hammerheaded Sharks (Zygena) are sharks in which the anterior portion of the head is produced into a lobe on each side, the extremity of which is occupied by the eye. The relation of this unique configuration of the head to the economy of the fish is unknown. Otherwise these sharks resemble Carcharias, and are equally formidable, but seem to be more stationary in their habits. They occur in all tropical and subtropical seas, even in the Mediterranean, where Z. malleus is by no means rare. In the Indian Ocean it is common, and Cantor states that specimens of this species may be often seen ascending from the clear blue depths of the ocean like a great cloud.*~~

~~*The Porbeagles (Zamna) differ from the preceding sharks in their dentition (fig. 11), the teeth being large, lanceo- late in shape, not adapted for cutting, but rather for seizing and holding the prey, which consists chiefly in fish. These sharks are therefore not dangerous*~~

~~*Fig. 11.—Teeth of Lamna.*~~

~~*SHARK*~~

~~*to man ; at least, there is no instance known of a persou having been attacked by the species common on the British coast (L. cornubica). It grows to a length of 10 feet, and ranges to New Zealand and Japan. See vol. xix. p. 518.*~~

~~*To the genus Carcharodon particular interest is attached, because the single still existing species is the most form. idable of all sharks, as were those which preceded it in Tertiary times. The existing species (C. rondeletii) occurs in almost all tropical and subtropical seas, but seems to be verging towards extinction. It is known to attain toa length of 40 feet. The tooth figured here of the natural size (fig. 12) is taken from a jaw much shrunk in drying, but still 20 inches wide in its transverse dia- meter, and taken from' a specimen 364 feet long. The extinct spe- cies must have been still more gigantic in bulk, as we may judge from teeth which are found in the crag or which have been dredged up from the bottom of the Pacific Ocean by the naturalists ' of the " Challenger " expedition, and which are 4 inches wide at the base and 5 inches long measured along their | lateral margin. In Fie. 12.—Tooth of Carcharodon rondeletii.*~~

~~*some Tertiary strata these teeth are extremely abundant, so*~~

~~*aa in BAEZ | yi" (fA Ni, sayl*~~

~~*Res*~~

~~*much so that—for instance, in Florida—the strata in which |*~~

~~*they occur are quarried to obtain the fossil remains for ex- port to England, where they are con- verted into artificial manure. The Fox-Shark or Thresher (Alopecias vulpes), of which every year specimens*~~

~~*Fic. 13.—Basking Shark.*~~

~~*frequently seen during the summer months, generally in companies, at a distance of from three to a hundred miles off the shore, it is chased by the more courageous of the fishermen for the sake of the oil which is extracted from the liver, one fish yielding from a ton to a ton and a half.*~~

~~*Its capture is not unattended with danger, as one blow from the enormously strong tail is sufficient to stave in the sides of a large boat. The simple method used at present of harpooning the fish entails much patience and loss of time upon the captors, as the fish generally sinks to the bottom and sulks for many hours before it rises again ina more or less exhausted condition ; and the use of more modern appliances could not fail of securing more speedy and better success. The basking shark is gregarious, and many individuals may be seen in calm weather lying*~~

~~*T17*~~

~~*are captured on the British coast, but which is common*~~

~~*in all the temperate seas of the northern and southern*~~

~~*hemispheres, is readily recognized by its extremely slender tail, the length of which exceeds that of the remainder of the body. Its teeth are small, flat, triangular, and without serrature (fig. 13; the single tooth is of the natural size). It follows the shoals of herrings, pilchards, and sprats in their migrations, destroying incredible numbers and fre- quently injuring the nets by getting entangled in them. When feeding it uses the long tail in splashing the surface of the water, whilst it swims in gradually decreasing circles round a shoal of fishes which are thus kept crowded together, falling an easy prey to their enemy. Sometimes two threshers may be seen working together. Statements that it has been seen to attack whales and other large ceta- ceans rest upon erroneous observations ; its dentition is much too weak to bite through their skin, although, as Couch says, by one splash of its tail on the water it may put a herd of dolphins or porpoises to flight like so many hares. The same effect may be produced by the splash of an oar. The thresher attains toa length of 15 feet, the tail included.*~~

~~*The Basking Shark (Selache maxima), sometimes erro- neously called "Sun-Fish," is the largest fish of the North Atlantic, growing to a length of more than 30 feet, It is one of the few types of sharks which up to a very recent time were considered to be peculiar to the North-Atlantic fauna ; but Prof. F. M'Coy has just recorded its occur- rence on the Australian coast, a specimen 30 feet long having been captured in November 1883 at Portland, on the west coast of Victoria. The mouth is of*~~

~~*an extra- ordinary width, and, like the gill-cavity, capable of great expansion, so as to enable the fish to take at one gulp an enormous quantity of the small fish and other marine creatures on which it subsists. Also the gill-openings are of great width. The teeth are very small, numerous, arranged in several series, conical, and probably without use in feeding. This shark is therefore quite harmless if not attacked. On the west coast of Ireland, where it is*~~

~~*together motionless, with the upper part of the back raised above the surface of the water, a habit which it has in common with the true sun-fish (Orthagoriscus), and from which it has derived its name.*~~

~~*A shark similar in many points to the basking shark (which it exceeds in size), and an inhabitant of the Indo- Pacific Ocean, is Rhinodon typicus. In fact, so far as our present knowledge goes, it is the largest of all sharks, as it is known to exceed a length of 50 feet, but it is stated to attain that of 70. The captures of only a few specimens are on record, viz., one at the Cape of Good Hope, one or*~~

~~*_ two near the Seychelles, where it is known as the "chagrin,"*~~

~~*one on the coast of California, and one (quite recently) on the coast of Peru. The snout is extremely short, broad, and flat, with the mouth and nostrils placed at its extrem- ity; the gill-openings very wide, and the eye very small. The teeth are, as in the basking shark, extremely small and numerous, conical in shape. No opportunity should be lost of obtaining exact information on this shark. The Greenland Shark (Lemargus borealis) belongs to the XXI. — 98*~~

~~*778*~~

~~*same family as the spiked dog-fish, but grows to a much larger size, specimens 15 feet long being frequently met*~~

~~*Fig. 14.—Greenland Shark (Lemargus borealis), ~*~~

~~*with. 'The two dorsal fins are small and destitute of spines. The teeth (fig. 11) in the upper jaw are small, narrow, conical in shape ; those of the*~~

~~*lower flat, arranged in several series, one on the top of the other, so that only the uppermost forms the sharp dental edge of the jaw. The points of*~~

~~*these lower teeth are so much turned aside that the inner margin only enters the dental edge. The Green- land shark is an inhabitant 4M*~~

~~*of the Arctic LP, regions, some- times straying to the lati- tudes of Great Britain and of Cape Cod in the western Atlantic ; it is one of the greatest enemies of the whale, which is often found with large pieces bitten out of the tail by this shark. Its voracity is so great that, as Scoresby tells us, it is absolutely fearless in the presence of man whilst engaged in feeding on the carcase of a whale, and that it will allow itself to be stabbed with a lance or knife without being driven away.*~~

~~*The Spinous Shark (Hchinorhinus spinosus) is readily re- cognized by the short bulky form of its body, its short tail, and the large round bony tubercles which are scattered all over its body, each of which is raised in the middle into a pointed conical spine. More frequent in the Mediterranean, it has been found also not very rarely on the English coasts and near the Cape of Good Hope. It is always living on the ground, and probably descends to some depth. It does not seem to exceed a length of 10 feet.*~~

~~*Bathybial Sharks.—Sharks do not appear to have yet reached the greatest depths of the ocean ; and so far as we know at present we have to fix the limit of their vertical distribution at 500 fathoms. Those which we find to have reached or to pass the 100 fathoms line belong to generic types which, if they include littoral species, are ground- sharks,—as we generally find the bottom-feeders of our littoral fauna much more strongly represented in the deep sea than the surface swimmers. All belong to two families only, the Scylliide and Spinacide, the littoral members of which live for the greater part habitually on the bottom and probably frequently reach to the 100 fathoms line. Distinctly bathybial species are two small dog-fishes,—Spinax granulatus from 120 fathoms, and Scyllium canescens from 400 fathoms, both on the south-west coast of South America ; also Centroscyllium granulatum from 245 fathoms in the Antarctic Ocean, whose congener from the coast of Greenland probably descends to a similar depth. The sharks which reach the greatest*~~

~~*depth recorded hitherto belong to the genus Centrophorus, of which some ten species are known, all from deep water in the North Atlantic, Mediterranean, the Molucca and Japanese seas. The Japanese species were discovered by*~~

~~*A KY HOE RAD IRE AY A INK a4 Shh*~~

~~*Fic. 15.—Dentition of Greenland Shark.*~~

~~*SHA RK*~~

~~*the naturalists of the "Challenger" on the Hyalonema ground off Inosima in 345 fathoms. Dr E. P. Wright found C. celolepis at a still greater depth on the coast of Portugal. The fishermen of Sétubal fish for these sharks in 400 or 500 fathoms, with a line of some 600 fathoms in length. 'The sharks caught were from 3 to 4 feet long, and when they were hauled into the boat fell down into it like so many dead pigs"; in fact, on being rapidly withdrawn from the great pressure under which they lived they were killed, like other deep-sea fishes under similar circumstances. It is noteworthy that the organiz- ation of none of these deep-sea sharks has undergone such a modification as would lead us to infer that they are inhabitants of great depths. One of the most interesting types of the divi- sion of sharks is the small family of WNotidanide, which is external- ly distinguished by the presence of a single dorsal fin only, without spine and oppo- site to the anal, and by having six or seven wide branchial open- ings. They repre- sent an ancient type, the presence of which in Ju- rassic formations is shown by teeth extremely similar to those of the living species. Their skeleton is notochordal. Only four species are known, of which one (Noti- danus griseus) has now and _ then strayed _ north- 'wards to the*~~

~~*Fic. 16.—Chlamydoselachus anguineus.*~~

~~*English coast. A member of this family has been re- cently discovered in Japan, and is so scarce that only two specimens are known—one in the museum at Cam- bridge, U.S., and the other in the British Museum. It was named by its first describer, 8. Garman, Chlamy- doselachus anguineus (fig. 16). It resembles somewhat in shape a conger, and differs*~~

~~*from the Wotidani proper by its elongate body, wide lateral and terminal mouth, extremely wide gill-openings, and peculiarly formed teeth. The teeth are similar in both jaws, each composed of three slender curved cusps separated by a pair of rudi- mentary points, and with a broad base directed back- wards. These teeth resemble some fossils of the Middle Devonian, described as Cladodus, and North-American*~~

~~*es yh*~~

~~*naturalists regard, therefore, this fish as " the oldest living type of vertebrate." The Notidani are very pro- bably ground-sharks, perhaps descending into deep water ; and, although nothing positive is known at present of the habits of Chlamydoselachus, the fact that this singu- lar type has escaped so long the observation of the numerous collectors in Japan renders it probable that it inhabits depths the exploration of which has been initiated only recently.*~~

~~*A few words have to be added with reference to the economic uses of this group of fishes. Their utility to man is insignificant in comparison with the havoc they commit among food-fishes and at fisheries, and with the loss of life which is caused by the larger kinds. As mentioned above, some of the smaller dog-fishes are eaten at certain seasons by the captors, and by the poorer classes of the population. An inferior kind of oil, chiefly used for the adulteration of cod-liver oil, is extracted on some of the northern fishing-stations from the liver of the spiked dog-fishes, and occa- sionally of the larger sharks. Cabinet-makers make extensive use of shark's-skin under the name of "shagreen" for smoothing or*~~

~~*polishing wood. This shagreen is obtained from species (such ag |*~~

~~*our dog-tishes) whose skin is covered with small, pointed, closely- set, calcified papille, whilst very rough skins, in which the papille are large or blunt, are useless for this purpose. The dried fins of sharks (and of rays) form in India and China an important article of trade, the Chinese preparing gelatin from them, and using the better sort for culinary purposes. They are assorted in two kinds, viz., " white" and "black." The former consists exclusively of the dorsal fins, which are on both sides of the same light colour, and reputed to yield more gelatin than the other*~~

~~*fins. The pectoral, ventral, and anal fins constitute the "black" sort ; the caudal are not used. One of the principal places where shark fishing is practised as a profession is Kurrachee, and the principal kinds of sharks caught there are spccies of Carcharias, Galeocerdo, and Zygena. Dr Buist, writing in 1850, states that there are thirteen large boats, with crews of twelve men each, constantly employed in this pursuit, that the value of the fins sent to the market varies from 15,000 to 18,000 rupees, that a boat will capture sometimes at a draught as many as a hundred sharks of various sizes, and that the number of 'sharks captured annually amounts probably to not less than 40,000, Large quantities are imported from the African coast and the Arabian Gulf, and various ports on the coast of India. In the year 1845-46 8770 cwt. of sharks' fins were exported from Bombay to China. (A. C. G.)*~~

~~*SHARON, a borough of the United States, in Mercer |*~~

~~*County, Pennsylvania, 14 miles west of Mercer, is the seat of considerable iron manufacture, with blast furnaces, rolling mills, foundries, and nail factories, and had in 1880 & population of 5684,*~~

~~*SHARP, Jamxs (1618-1679), archbishop of St Andrews, was the son of William Sharp, sheriff-clerk of Banffshire, and of Isabel Leslie, daughter of Leslie of Kininvie, of the family of Halyburtons of Pitcur in Angus, and was born in Castle Banff on May 4, 1618. He was a clever boy, and his early disposition for the church led to his being called in jest "the young minister." In 1633 he went to King's College, Aberdeen, and graduated in 1637. He there studied divinity for one or two years, and probably derived his Episcopal tendencies from the "Aberdeen doctors," Aberdeen being at that time the home of Episcopal sentiment. On the outbreak of the Covenanting war he went to England (1639) and visited Oxford and perhaps Cambridge, becoming acquainted with the principal English divines. Upon his return he was chosen in 1643 through the influence of Lord Rothes to be one of the "regents" of philosophy in St Leonard's College, St Andrews. He appears to have continually risen in reputation until in December 1647 he went through his ordinary trials for the ministerial office before the presby- tery of St Andrews, and was appointed minister of Crail in Fifeshire, on the presentation of the earl of*~~

~~*Crawford, on January 27,1648. In the great schism of Resolutioners and Protestors, he, with the large majority of educated men, took active part with the former; he was the friend of Baillie, Douglas, Dickson, Wood, Blair, and others, and*~~

~~*as early as March 1651 was recognized as one of the lead- |*~~

~~*to whom it was of great importance to*~~

~~*| the king at Breda*~~

~~*and Clarendon, not indeed so far as to make up*~~

~~*TO*~~

~~*ing men of the party. His first public employment was*~~

~~*in 1656, when he went to London on their behalf to*~~

~~*endeavour to counteract with the Protector the influence of Warriston, who was acting for the Protestors. Here he became acquainted with Calamy, Ash, and other leading London Presbyterian ministers, and letters passed between him and Lauderdale, then prisoner in the Tower. He displayed all his undoubted talents for petty diplomacy and considerable subtlety in argument while on this service, and his mission was decidedly successful. He returned to Scotland in 1659, but upon Monk's march to London was again, in February 1660, sent by the Resolutioners to watch over their interests in London, where he arrived on February 13. He was most favourably received by Monk, 1 remain on good terms with the dominant party in Scotland. His letters to Douglas and others during this period, if they may be trusted, are useful towards following the intrigues of the time day by day. It must not be forgotten, however, that there is good reason for thinking that Sharp had already made up his mind not to throw away the chances he might have of prominent employment under the Restoration. In the beginning of May he was despatched by Monk to "to deal that he may be sent with a letter to the London Presbyterian ministers, showing his resolution to own the*~~

~~godly sober party." His letters on this occasion to Douglas show that he regarded himself equally as the emissary of the Scottish kirk. It is to be~~

~~| noticed that he was also the bearer of a secret letter from | Lauderdale to the king. He was in fact playing a game~~

~~admirably suited to his peculiar capacity for dark and~~

~~| crooked ways of dealing. There can be little doubt that~~

~~while on this mission he was finally corrupted by Charles his mind to betray the kirk, but at any rate to decide in no way to imperil his own chances by too firm an integrity. The first thing that aroused the jealousy of his brethren, who, as Baillie says, had trusted him as their own souls, was his writing from Holland in commendation of Clarendon. This jealousy was increased on lis return to London (May 26) by his plausible endeavours to stop all coming of Presbyterian commissioners from Scotland and Ireland, though he professed to desire the presence of Douglas and Dickson, by his urgent advice that the Scots should not interfere in the restoration of Episcopacy in England, and by his endeavours to frustrate the proposed union of Resolutioners and Protestors. He informed them that Presbyterianism was a lost cause in England, but as late as August 11 he intimated that, though there had been great danger for the Scottish kirk as well, this danger had been constantly and successfully warded off by his efforts. He returned to Scotland in this month, and busied himself in endeavouring to remove all suspicions of his loyalty to the kirk ; but at the same time he successfully stopped all peti- tions from Scottish ministers to king, parliament, or council. His letters to Drummond, a Presbyterian minister in London, and to Lauderdale, without absolutely committing him, show clearly that he was certain that Episcopacy was about to be set up. How far he was actively a traitor in the matter had always been fairly disputed until the ques- tion was at last set at rest by the discovery of his letter, dated May 21, from London, whither he went in April 1661, to Middleton, the High Commissioner, whose chap- lain he now was, from which it is proved that he was in confidential communication with Clarendon and the English bishops, that he was earnestly and eagerly co-operating 'in the restoration of Episcopacy in Scotland, that he had before leaving Scotland held~~

~~*frequent conferences with Middleton on the subject (a fact which he had explicitly and vehemently denied) and was aware that Middleton had*~~

~~*all along intended it, and that he drew up and was directly responsible for the quibbling proclamation of June 10, the sole purpose of which was 'the disposing of minds to acquiesce in the king's pleasure." The original of this letter (which is printed in the Lauderdale Papers and in the Scottish Review) is preserved in the Museum of the Society of Antiquaries, Edinburgh. It should be noticed that as late as the end of April, on the eve of starting on his mission to court with Rothes and Glencairne, he declared to Baillie that no change in the kirk was intended. The mask was at length dropped in August, when Epis- copacy was restored, and Sharp was appointed archbishop of St Andrews. Heand Leighton, Fairfoul, and Hamilton '""were dubbed, first preaching deacons, then presbyters, and then consecrated bishops in one day, by Dr Sheldon and a few others." On April 8th the new prelates entered Scotland, and on the forenoon of April 20, 1662, Sharp preached his first sermon at St Andrews.*~~

~~*Sharp had carefully kept on good terms with Lauder- dale, and when the Billeting Plot was concocted in Septem- ber 1662 against the latter by Middleton, he managed to avoid acting against him; indeed it is probable that, after being appointed under an oath of secrecy to be one of the scrutineers of the billets, he, in violation of the oath, was the cause of Lauderdale receiving timely informa- tion of the decision against him; and yet he shortly went up to London to explain the whole affair in Middleton's interest. When Lauderdale's supremacy was established he readily co-operated .in passing the National Synod Act in 1663, the first step in the intended subjection of the church to the crown. In 1664 he was again in London, returning in April, having secured the grant of a new church commission. His vanity also had been gratified by his being allowed to take precedence of the chan. cellor at the council. He harassed the ministers who were with his old friend James Wood when he signed his well-known deathbed confession ; he cited and fined others, as well as laymen, for withdrawing from the churches; he urged the thorough prosecution of the arbitrary powers granted to the commission, and*~~

~~*complained of the slackness of his fellow commissioners. So oppressive was his con- duct and that of others of the bishops that it called forth ‘ a written protest from Gilbert Burnet. Sharp at once summoned him before the bishops and endeavoured to obtain a sentence of deprivation and excommunication against him, but was overruled by his brethren. On the death of Glencairne, the chancellor’s greatest efforts were made to secure the vacant office for Sharp, and he was not inactive in his own interest; the place was not, however, filled up until 1667, and then by the appointment of Rothes. He was in strict alliance with Rothes, Hamilton, and Dal- yell, and the other leaders of oppression, and now placed himself in opposition to the influence of Lauderdale, attacking his friends, and especially the earl of Kincardine. In 1665 he was again in London, where, through his own folly and mendacity, he suffered a complete humiliation at the hands of Lauderdale, well described by the historian Burnet. With Rothes he now in great part governed Scotland, and, the result of their system of violence and extortion was the rising of the Covenanters, during which, being in temporary charge during Rothes’s absence, he showed, according to Bellenden, the utmost fear, equalled only by his cruelty to the prisoners after the rout of Pent- land. When the convention of estates met in January 1667 he received his first rebuff, Hamilton being substi- tuted for him as president. He now tried to curry favour with Lauderdale, to whom he wrote letters of the most whining contrition, and who extended him a careless recon- ciliation. The expressions of contempt for him which occur at this time, as previously, in the letters of Robert Moray,*~~

~~*Ha KP*~~

~~*Argyll, and others of Lauderdale’s correspondents, are frequent and very amusing. For a time he made himself actively useful, and was instrumental in restraining his brethren from writing to London to complain of the con- ciliation policy which for a while Lauderdale carried out, a transaction in which he displayed the utmost effrontery of lying ; and, with slight attempts to free himself, he con- tinued faithful in his new service. On July 10, 1668, an attempt was made upon his life by Robert Mitchell, who fired a pistol at him while driving through the streets of Edinburgh. The shot, however, missed Sharp, though his companion the*~~

~~*bishop of Orkney was wounded by it, and Mitchell for the time escaped. In August Sharp went up to London, returning in December, and with his assistance, nominally indeed at his suggestion, Tweeddale's tolerant proposals for filling the vacant parishes with some of the "outed" ministers were carried out. In the debates on the Supremacy Act, by which Lauderdale destroyed the autonomy of the church, he at first showed reluctance to put in motion the desired policy, but gave way upon the first pressure. When, however, Leighton, as archbishop of Glasgow, endeavoured to carry out a comprehension scheme, Sharp actively opposed him, and expressed his joy at the failure of the attempt. From this time he was completely subservient to Lauderdale, who had now finally determined upon a career of oppression, and in 1674 he was again in London to support this policy. In this year also Mitchell, who had shot at him six years before, was arrested, Sharp himself having recognized him, and, upon Sharp's promise to obtain a pardon, privately made a full confession. When brought into the justiciary court, how- ever, he refused to repeat the confession, whereupon the promise of pardon was recalled; the prisoner was sent to the Bass, and was not brought to trial for four years. In 1678, however, the country being again in great disorder, he was tried on his own confession, which, not having been made before judges, could not legally be brought against him. 'This plea being overruled, he claimed the promise of pardon. Sharp, however, basely denied that any such promise had been given. HIs falschood was proved by the entry of the act in the records of the court. Mitchell was finally condemned, but the condemnation was so evidently unfair and contrary to solemn promise that a reprieve would have been granted had not Shar) himself insisted on his death. This, perhaps the basest action of his base life, was speedily avenged. On May 3, 1679, as he was driving with his daughter Isabel to St Andrews, he was set upon by nine men, who were looking for one of the instruments of his cruelty, and, in spite of unmanly beseechings and of the appeals of his daughter, was cruelly murdered. The place of the murder, on Magus Muir, now covered with fir trees, is marked by a monument erected by Dean Stanley, with a Latin inscription record- ing the deed. It is only right, while recording a career of cold-blooded cruelty and almost unexampled political base- ness, to remember that no charge that can be seriously maintained has ever been brought against the morality of Sharp's private life.*~~

~~*Unless otherwise mentioned, the proofs of the statements in this article will be found in vols. i. and ii. of the Lauderdale Papers*~~

~~*(Camden Society) and in two articles in the Scottish Review, July 1884 and January 1885. (0. A.)*~~

~~*SHARP, Wit1ttam (1749-1824), an eminent line- engraver, was born at London on the 29th of Jaauary 1749. He was originally apprenticed to what is called a bright engraver, and practised as a writing engraver, but, gradually becoming inspired by the higher branches of the engraver's art, he exercised his gifts with surprising success on works of the old masters. Among his earlier plates are some illustrations, after Stothard, for the Novelists,*~~

~~*S5HA—SHE 781*~~

~~*Magazine. He engraved the Doctors Disputing on the | worked by needle a minute and elaborate pattern. A*~~

~~*Immaculateness of the Virgin and the Ecce Homo of Guido Reni, the St Cecilia of Domenichino, the Virgin and Child of Dolci, and the portrait of John Hunter of Sir Joshua Reynolds. His style of engraving is thoroughly masterly and original, excellent in its play of line and rendering of half-tints and of "colour." He died at Chiswick on the 25th July 1824. In his youth Sharp was a violent republican, and, owing to his hotly expressed adherence to the politics of Paine and Horne Tooke, he was examined by the privy council on a charge of treason. He was also one of the greatest visionaries in matters pertaining to religion. No imposture was too gross for him to accept, no deception too glaring for his eyes to admire. The dreams of Mesmer and the rhapsodies of Brothers found in Sharp a staunch believer; and for long he maintained Joanna Southcott at his own expense. As an engraver he achieved a European reputation, and at the time of his death he enjoyed the honour of being a member of the Imperial Academy of Vienna and of the Royal Academy of Munich.*~~

~~*SHAWL, a square or oblong article of dress worn in various ways dependent from the shoulders. The term is of Persian origin (shdl), and the article itself is most characteristic and important in the dress of the*~~

~~*natives of north-western India and Central Asia; but in various forms, and under different names, essentially the same piece of clothing is found in most parts of the world. The shawls made in Kashmir occupy a pre-eminent place among textile products ; and it is to them and to their imitations from Western looms that specific importance attaches. The Kashmir shawl is characterized by the great clabora- tion and minute detail of its design, in which the "cone" pattern is a prominent feature, and by the glowing harmony, brilliance, depth, and enduring qualities of its colours. The basis of these excellences is found in the raw material of the shawl manufacture, which consists of the very fine, soft, short, flossy under-wool, called pashm or pashmina, found on the shawl-goat, a variety of Capra hircus inhabiting the elevated regions of Tibet. There are several varieties of pashm, according to the districts in which it is produced, but the finest is a strict monopoly of the maharaja of Kashmir, through whose territory it comes. Inferior pashm and Kirman wool—a fine soft Persian sheep's wool—are used for shawl weaving at Amritsar and other places in the Punjab, where colonies of Kashmiri weavers are established ; but just in proportion to the quality of the pashm used are the beauty and value of the resulting shawl. In Kashmir the shawl wool is sorted with patient care by hand, and spun into a fine thread, a work of so much delicacy, owing to the shortness of the fibre, that a pound of undyed thread may be worth £2, 10s. The various colours, costly and perma- nent, are dyed in the yarn. The subsequent weaving or embroidering isa work of great labour, and a fine shawl will occupy the whole labour of three men not less than a year. Thus a first-rate shawl weighing about 7 Ib may cost at the place of its production £300, made up thus:— material £30, labour £150, duty £70, miscellaneous expenses, £50. In shawl cloth many varieties of dress articles are made; but of shawls themselves, apart from shape and pattern, there are only two principal classes :— (1) loom-woven shawls called tiliwalla, tilikar or kdéni kar,—sometimes woven in one piece, but more often in small segments which are sewn together with such precision and neatness that the sewing is quite impercept- ible (such loom-woven shawls have borders of silk, the weight and stiffness of which serve to stretch the shawl aud make it set properly); and (2) embroidered shawls—amlikar,—in which over a ground of plain pashmina is*~~

~~*large proportion of the inhabitants of Srinagar, the capital of Kashmir, are engaged in the shawl industry ; and there are numerous colonies of Kashmiri weavers settled at Amritsar, Ludianah, Nurpur, and other towns 'in the Punjab. Amritsar is now the principal entrepét of the shawl trade between India and Europe. Imitation Kashmir shawls are made at Lyons, Nimes, Norwich, and Paisley, and some of the products of these localities are little inferior in beauty and elaboration to Oriental shawls ; but owing to the fluctuations of fashion there has been little demand for the finer products of European looms for many years. See also Persta, vol. xviii. p. 626.*~~

~~*SHEA BUTTER. See Ous, vol. xvii. p. 747.*~~

~~*SHEARWATER, the name of a bird first published in Willughby's Ornithologia (p. 252), as made known to him by Sir T. Browne, who sent a picture of it with an account that is given more fully in Ray's translation of that work (p. 334), stating that it is "a Sea-fowl, which fishermen observe to resort to their Vessels in some numbers, swim- ming! swiftly to and fro, backward, forward, and 'about them, and doth as it were radere aquam, shear the water, from whience perhaps it had its name."2 Ray's mistaking young birds of this kind obtained in the Isle of Man for the young of the Coulterneb, now usually called Puri, has already been mentioned under that heading (vol. xx. p. 102); and not only has his name Puffinus anglorum hence become attached to this species, commonly described in English books as the Manx Puffin or Manx Shearwater, but the barbarous and misapplied word Pufinus has come into regular use as the generic term for all birds thereto allied, forming a well-marked group of the F amily Procel- larvide (cf. Perret, vol. xviii. p. 711), distinguished chiefly by their elongated bill, and numbering some twenty species, if not more—the discrimination of which, owing partly to the general similarity of some of them, and partly to the change of plumage which others through age are believed to undergo, has taxed in no common degree the ingenuity of those ornithologists who have ventured on the difficult task of determining their characters. Shear- waters are found in nearly all the seas and oceans of the world,* generally within no great distance from the land, though rarely resorting thereto, except in the breeding- season. But they also penetrate to waters*~~

~~*which may be termed inland, as the Bosphorus, where they have long attracted attention by their daily passage up and down the strait, in numerous flocks, hardly ever alighting on the surface, and from this restless habit they are known to the French-speaking part of the population as ames damnées, it being held by the Turks that they are animated by condemned human souls. Four species of Puffinus are recorded as visiting the coasts of the United Kingdom; but the Manx Shearwater aforesaid is the only one that at all commonly occurs or breeds in the British Islands. It is a very plain-looking bird, black above and white beneath, and about the size of a Pigeon. Some other species are*~~

~~*1 By nsistake, no doubt, for flying or 'hovering, " the latter the word used by Browne in his Account of Birds found in Norfolk (Mus. Brit. MS. Sloane, 18380, fol. 5. 22 and 31), written in or about 1662, Edwards (Gleanings, iii. p. 315) speaks of comparing his own drawing "with Brown's old draught of it, still preserved in the British Museum," and thus identifies the latter's " Shearwater'? with the "*Puffin of the Isle of Man."*~~

~~*2 Lyrie appears to be the most common local name for this bird in Orkney and Shetland; but Scraib and Scrater are also used in Scotland. These are from the Scandinavian Skraape or Skrofa, and considering Prof. Skeat's remarks (HIym. Dictionary, p. 546) as to the alliance between the words shear and scrape it may be that Browne's hesitation as to the derivation of 'Shearwater'? had more ground than at first appears.*~~

~~*3 The chief exception would seem to be the Bay of Bengal and thence throughout the western part of the Malay Archipelago, where, thongh they may occur, they are certainly uncommon,*~~

~~*considerably larger, while some are smaller, and of the former several are almost whole-coloured, being of a sooty or dark cinereous hue both above and below. All over the world Shearwaters seem to have precisely the same habits, laying their single purely white egg in a hole under ground.*~~

ick] ith — ihe joungianarasalaaihneiem long down, and are ex | Magellan, and southward to Louis-Philippe Land in lat. 60° S.

tremely fat. In this condition they are thought to be good

eating, and enormous numbers are caught for this purpose |

in some localities, especially of a species, the P. brevicaudus of Gould, which frequents the islands off the coast of Aus- tralia, where it is commonly known as the " Mutton-bird." For works treating of the Shearwaters, see those cited under PrTREL (vol. xviii. p. 712). (A. N.)

SHEATHBILL, a bird so-called by Pennant in 1781 (Gen. Birds, ed. 2, p. 43) from the horny case! which ensheaths the basal part of its bill. It was first made known from having been met with on New-Year Island, off the coast of Staten Land, where Cook anchored on New Year's eve 1774.2, A few days later he discovered the islands that now bear the name of South Georgia, and there the bird was again found,— in both localities frequenting the rocky shores. On his third voyage, while seeking some land reported to have been found by Ker- guelen, Cook in December 1776 reached the cluster of desolate islands now generally known by the name of the French explorer, and here, among many other kinds of birds, was a Sheathbill, which for a long while no one suspected to be otherwise than specifically identical with that of the western Antarctic Ocean ; but, as will be seen, its distinctness has been subsequently admitted.

The Sheathbill, so soon as it was brought to the notice of naturalists, was recognized as belonging to a genus hitherto unknown, and the elder Forster in 1788 (Zuchtridion, p. 37) con- ferred upon it, from its snowy plumage, the name Chionis, which has most properly received general acceptance, though in the same year the compiler Gmelin termed the genus Vaginalis, as a render- ing of Pennant's English name, and the species alba. It has thus become the Chionis alba of ornithology. It is about the size of and has much the aspect of a Pigeon ;3 its plumage is pure white, its Dill somewhat yellow at the base, passing into pale pink towards the tip. Round the eyes the skin is bare, and beset with cream-coloured papille, while the legs are bluish-grey. The second or eastern species, first discriminated by Dr Hartlaub (Rev. Zoologiquc, 1841, p. 5;

~~*1842, p, 402, pl. 2)* as C. minor, is smaller in size, with plumage just as white, but having the bill and bare skin of the face black and the legs much darker. The form of the bill's "sheath " in the two species is also quite different, for in C. alba it is almost level throughout, while in C. minor it rises in front like the pom- mel of a saddle. Of the habits of the western and larger species not much has been recorded. It gathers its food, consisting chiefly, as Darwin and others have told us, of sea-weeds and shell-fish, on rocks at low water ; but it is also known to eat birds' eggs. There is some curiously conflicting evidence as to the flavour of its flesh, some asserting that it is wholly uneatable, and others that it is palatable,—a difference which may possibly be due to the previous diet of the particular example tasted, to the skill of the cook, or a*~~

~~*1 A strange fallacy arose early, and of course has been repeated late, that this case or sheath was movable. It is absolutely fixed.*~~

~~*? Doubtless some of the earlier voyagers had cncountered it, as Forster suggests (Descr. Animalium, p. 380) and Lesson asserts (Man. @' Ornithologie, ii. p. 348) ; but for all practical purposes we certainly owe its discovery to the naturalists of Cook's second voyage. By some error, probably of transcription, New Zealand, instead of New- Year Island, appears in many works as the place of its discovery, while not a few writers have added thereto New Holland. Hitherto there is no real evidence of the occurrence of a Sheathbill in the waters of Australia or New Zealand.*~~

~~*> In the Falkland Isles it is called the "Kelp-Pigeon," and by some of the earlier French navigators the " Pigeon blanc antarctique." The cognate species of Kerguelen Land is named by the sealers "Sore-eyed Pigeon," from its prominent fleshy orbits, as well as*~~

~~*"Paddy-bird"—the last doubtless from its white plumage calling to | mind that of some of the smaller Egrets, so-called by the English in |*~~

~~*India and elsewhere. * Lesson (Joc. cit.) cites a brief but correct indication of this*~~

~~*species as observed by Lesquin (Lycée Armoricain, x. p. 36) on |*~~

~~*Crozet Island, and, not suspecting it to be distinct, was at a loss to reconcile the discrepancies of the latter's description with that given of the other species by earlier authors.*~~

~~*SHE—SHE*~~

~~*the need of the taster. Though most abundant as a shore-bird, it is frequently met with far out at sea, and its most northern recorded limit is by Fleurieu (Voy. de Marchand, i. p. 19), in lat. 44°S., some 260 miles from the eastern coast of Patagonia. It is not uncommon on the Falkland Isles, where it is said to breed (Ibis, 1861, p. 154), though confirmation of the report is as yet wanting, and from thence is found at both extremities of the Strait of*~~

~~*On the other hand, thanks to the naturalists of the British and United States expeditions to Kerguelen Land for the observation of the transit of Venus in 1874, especially Mr Eaton (Philos. Trans- actions, elxviii. pp. 103-105) and Dr Kidder (Bull. U. 8. National Muscum, 1875, No. 2, p. 1-4), much more has been recorded of the eastern and smaller species, which had already been ascertained by Mr Layard (Proc. Zool. Society, 1871, p. 57, pl. iv. fig. 7) to breed on the Crozet Islands, and was found to do so still more numer- ously on Kerguelen, while it probably frequents Prince Edward's Islands for the same purpose. The eggs, of which a considerable number have now been obtained, though of peculiar appearance, bear an unmistakable likeness to those of some Plovers, while occasionally exhibiting a resemblance—of little significance, how- ever—to those of the Tropic-birds.*~~

~~*The systematic position of the Sheathbills has been the subject of much hesitation—almost useless since 1836, when De Blainville (Ann. Sc. Naturelles, ser. 2, vi. p. 97) made known certain anatomical facts proving their affinity to the OYSTER-CATCHERS (vol. xvii. p. 111), though pointing also to a more distant relationship with the Guuts (vol. xi. 274). These he afterwards described more fully (Voy. " Bonite," Zoologie, i. pt. 3, pp. 107-132, pl. 9), so as to leave no doubt that Chionis was a form intermediate be- tween those groups. Yet some writers continued to refer it to the Galline and others to the Columbx. The matter may now be regarded as settled for ever. In 1876 Dr Reichenow in Germany (Jour. f.*~~

~~*Orn., 1876, pp. 84-89) and in America Drs Kidder and Coues (Bull. U. S. Nat. Museum, No. 3, pp. 85-116) published elaborate accounts of the anatomy of C. minor, the first wholly confirming the view of De Blainville, the last two® agreeing with him in the main, but concluding that the Sheathbills formed a distinct group Chionomorphe, in rank equal to the Cecomorphe and Charadriomorphe of Prof. Huxley (which are, to speak roughly, the Gavix and Limicolx of older systematists), and regarding this group as being "still nearer the common ancestral stock of both." These authors also wish to separate the two species generically ; but their proposals are considered needless by Garrod (2. 4. S., 1877, p. 417) and M. Alph. Milne-Edwards (Ann. Sc. Naturelles, ser. 6, xiii. art. 4, p. 24). The opinions of De Blainville and Dr Reichenow are borne out by the observations of Mr Eaton (loc. cit.), and no one knowing the habits of an Oyster-catcher can read his remarks without seeing how nearly related the two forms are. Their differences may perhaps justify the separation of each form into what is vaguely called a "Family," but the differences will be seen by the comparative anatomist to be of slight importance, and the intimate affinity of the Gavix and Limicole, already recognized by Prof. Parker and some of the best taxonomers (cf. ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xvill. p. 45) is placed beyond dispute." (A. N.)*~~

~~*SHEBA. See YEMEN.*~~

~~*SHEBOYGAN, a city of the United States, capital of Sheboygan county, Wisconsin, stands on Lake Michigan,*~~

~~*5 A previous announcement of the discovery of its egg (Ibis, 1867, p. 458) was premature, the specimen, now in the possession of the present writer, proving to be that of a Gull—a fact unknown to the American writer named above.*~~

~~*6 In some details their memoir is unfortunately inaccurate.*~~

~~*? The little group of very curious birds, having no English name, of the genera Thinocorys and Attagis, which are peculiar to certain localities in South America and its islands, are by some systematists placed in the Family Chionidide and by others in a distinct Family Thinocoride (more correctly Thinocorythidx). They are undoubtedly Limicoline, though*~~

~~*having much the aspect of Sand-Grouse, but their precise position and rank remain at present uncertain. Cf. Garrod (ut supra) and Prof. Parker (Trans. Zool. Soc., x. pp. 301 sq.).*~~

~~*Sits 4 EF 783*~~

~~*at the mouth of the river of tle same name, 43 miles east of Fond du Lac and 52 miles north of Milwaukee. Tt pos- sesses a good harbour, and, being surrounded by very productive agricultural land, exports annually a large quantity of grain. The manufactures include farming implements, enamelled hollow-ware, and stone-ware 5 there are a number of tanneries and breweries; and mineral water is exported. Settled in 1836, the city had in 1880 a population of 7314.*~~

~~*SHECHEM, now NAzutvs, a city of Palestine, Eleven hours from Jerusalem on the great north road the traveller finds himself in the broad upland plain of Makhna (1500 feet above the sea), with Mount Gerizim on his left, and, skirting the base of the mountain, reaches the traditional well of Jacob (John iv. 5, 6; of. Gen. xxxiii, 19), a deep cistern with the ruins of an old church beside it. Here the road divides: the caravan route to Damascus continues northward by the village of 'Asker (Sychar of Jolin iv. 51), and so to Beisén (Beth-shan) and Tiberias; but the way to Samaria turns westward into a fertile and well- watered side valley between Gerizim (2849 feet) on the south and Ebal (3077 fect) on the north. This is the Vale of Shechem or Nabulus; it is in fact an easy pass between the Mediterranean and Jordan basins, and at the watershed (1870 feet), where the city stands, 14 miles from Jacob's Well, is not more than 100 yards wide. Thus Shechem commands both branches of the great north road, and several routes from the coast also converge here and connect with the ancient road from Shechem eastward to Kerawa (Archelais) and Al-Salt, the capital of the Belka. The name of Shechem (shoulder, back) accords with the position of the town on the watershed, and the native name in Josephus's time (Mabortha, B. J., iv. 8. 1; Pliny has Mamortha) means simply "the pass." The situation of Shechem at the crossing of so many great roads must have given it importance at a very early date, and it is still a busy town of 20,000 inhabitants, with soap manu- factures and considerable trade. position is equally favourable for*~~

~~*brigandage, to which, under weak governments, the Shechemites were addicted of old (Judges ix. 25; Hosea vi. 9, where "for consent " read "to Shechem"), and the district is still a law- less one,*~~

~~*The ancient inhabitants of Shechem were the Bne Haimor, a Canaanite clan, who were not expelled on the first conquest of Canaan but remained in possession till the events recorded in Judges ix. spoken of in the article Levi, it would seem that they entered into friendly relations with the invaders, and that an attack made on them by Simeon and Levi was repudiated by Israel and led to the dispersion of these two tribes. In Judges ix. the "freemen of Shechem " (psy s5y9) appear as a turbulent but cowardly race, who, in spite of their numbers and wealth, had become vassals of Gideon for the sake of protection against the Midianites, and would have continued to serve his sons but for the enterprise of Abimelech, whose mother was of their race. With the aid of mereenaries hired with the treasure of the sanctuary of Baal-Berith or El-Berith, the god of the town, Abimelech destroyed the sons of Gideon, was crowned king of Shechem, and for three years held Sway also over the surrounding Israelites. A revolt was led by Gaal, an Israelite who scorned to be subject to the creature of the despised Canaanites,! and, the Shechemites having fallen out with Abimelech about their practice of brigandage, Gaal made a dash at the city in the absence of the king, and the fickle inhabitants received him with open arms. Abimelech, however, with his mercenaries proved too strong for his adversaries, and Canaanite Shechem was utterly destroyed. Its place was taken by a Hebrew city, and the Canaanite sanctuary of El-Berith was transformed into*~~

- ~~*In Jndges ix. 28 for 173Y read)T3Y' (Wellhausen after MSS. of LXX.), and translate " Who is Abimelech or who are the Shechemites (his supporters) that we should be his slaves? By all means let the son of Jerubbaal and Zebul his officer enslave the men of Hamor father of Shechem ; but why should we (Hebrews) be his slaves?" These words eannot have been spoken after the Shechemites had renounced Abimelech ; vv. 29, 30 onght to stand immediately after ver. 22. See W. R. Smith, in Theol. Tijdschrift, 1886, p. 195 sq.*~~

~~*On the other hand, the || mendations. He was chosen an associate of the Royal*~~

~~*of that artist.*~~

~~*From the narrative of Gen. xxxiv., which has been |*~~

~~*a Hebrew holy place of El the God of Israel, of which the founda- tion was afterwards referred to Jacob (Gen. xxxiii. 20) or even to Abraham (Gen. xii. 7). The great stone under the famous sacred tree at the sanetuary (the "tree of the revealer " or "tree of the soothsayers," E.V. plain of Moreh" or "of Meonenim" ; Gen. xll. 6, xxxv. 4;2 Deut. xi. 30; Jud. ix. 6, 37) was said to have been set up by Joshua (Josh. xxiv. 26), and Joseph's grave was shown there.* "All this indicates that Sheehem was once the chief sanctuary of Joseph, and so we understand why Rehoboam weut to Shechem to be erowned king of Northern Israel and why Jeroboain at first made it his residence (1 Kings xii. 25), Politieally Shechem Was soon supplanted by Tirzah and Samaria, but it appears to have been still a sanetuary in the time of Hosea, It survived the fall of Ephraim (Jer. xli, 5) and ultimately became the religious centre of the SAMARITANS (q.v.). The Greek name Neapolis, known to Josephus, indicates the building of a new town, which, according to Eusebius and Jerome, was a little way froin the old Shechem, or at least did not include the traditional holy sites. The coins give the form Flavia Neapolis, Neapolis was the birth- place of Justin Martyr, and became the seat of a bishopric. Five Christian churehes destroyed by the Samaritans in the time of Anastasius were rebuilt by Justinian (Procop., De Ad., v. 7). Remains of one of these seem still to exist in the erusaders' church of the Passion and Resurrection (1167), now the great mosque. Neapolis had much to suffer in the crusades ; it was finally lost to the Christians soon after Saladin's great victory at Hittin.*~~

~~*A map of the Shechem valley, with topographical details, &c., will be found in the Memoirs of Pal. Expl. Soc., vol. ii.*~~

~~*SHEE, Sm Martin Arcuer (1770-1 850), portrait- painter, and president of the Royal Academy, was born in Dublin on the 23d of December 1770. He was sprung from an old Irish family, and his father, while he exercised*~~

~~*the trade of a merchant, regarded the profession of a painter as in no sense a fit occupation for a descendant of the Shees. Young Shee became, nevertheless, a student of art in the Dublin Society, and came early to London, where he was, in 1788, introduced by Burke to Reynolds, by whose advice he studied in the schools of the Royal Academy. In 1789 he exhibited his first two pictures, the Head of an Old Man and Portrait of a Gentleman. During the next ten years he steadily increased in practice, and gradually gained ground among the aristocracy, with whom his suavity and good manners were great recoin-*~~

~~*Academy in 1798, shortly after the illustrious Flaxman, and in 1800 he was made a Royal Academician. In the former year he had married, removed to Romney's house in Cavendish Square, and set up as the legitimate successor Shee continued to paint with great readiness of hand and fertility of invention, although his portraits were eclipsed by more than one of his contem- poraries, and especially by Lawrence, Hoppner, Phillips, Jackson, and Raeburn. In addition to his portraits he executed various subjects and historical works, such as Lavinia, Belisarius, his diploma picture Prospero and Miranda, and the Daughter of Jephthah. In 1805 he published a poem consisting of hymes on Art, and it was succeeded by a second part in 1809. Although Byron spoke well of it in his English Bards and Scotch Reviewers, and invoked a place for "Shee and genius" in the temple of fame, yet, as nature had not originally conjoined these two, it is to be feared that even a poet's invocation could not materially affect their relations. Shee published another small volume of verses in 1814, entitled The Commemoration of Sir Joshua Leynolds, and other Poems, but this effort did not greatly increase his fame. He now produced a tragedy called Alasco, of which the scene was laid in Poland. The play was accepted at Covent Garden,*~~

~~*2 Ensebius gives the tree (terebinthus) of Gen. xxxv. 4 a place in his Onomasticon ; and from it probably the bishop Terebinthius in Procop., De 4id., v. 7, had his name.*~~

~~*3 The Canaanite sanctuary was represented as a mere teniporary usurpation by the tradition (in the Elohistic narrative) that Jacob had bought the site of his altar from the Hamorites and bequeathed it to*~~

~~*Joseph (Gen. xxxiii. 19, Josh. xxiv, 32; in the latter passage read with LXX. 3M" for 11").*~~

~~*784*~~

~~*and in the fertile fancy of the poet the play had already gained for him a great dramatic fame, when Colman, the licenser, refused it his sanction, on the plea of its containing certain treasonable allusions, and Shee, in great wrath, re- solved to make his appeal to the public. This violent threat he carried out in 1824, but unfortunately the public found other business to mind, and Alasco is still on the list of unacted dramas. On the death of Lawrence in 1830, Shee was chosen president of the Royal Academy, and shortly afterwards he received the honour of knight- hood. He was excellently qualified by his gentlemanly manners, business habits, and fluent speech for the position; and in the dispute regarding the use of rooms to be pro- vided by Government, and in his examination before the parliamentary committee of 1836, he ably defended the rights of the Academy. He continued to paint till 1845, and died on the 13th of August 1850 in his eightieth year.*~~

~~*The earlier portraits of the artist are carefully finished, easy in action, with good drawing and excellent discrimination of character. They show an undue tendency to redness in the flesh painting, — a defect which is still more apparent in his later works, in which the handling is less "square," crisp, and forcible.*~~

~~*SHEEP. The animals commonly designated by this name constitute the genus Ovws of zoologists, a group belonging to the Artiodactyle or paired-toed section of the Ungulata or hoofed mammals (see MAMMALIA, vol. xv. p. 432), They are ruminants, and belong to the hollow- horned section, 2.e., those having persistent horns composed of conical epidermic sheaths, encasing and supported by processes of the frontal bone. This section includes the various species of Oxen, Goats, and Antelopes, as well as the Sheep, animals all so closely related structurally that it is by no means easy to define the differences between them. —*~~

~~*In nearly all wild sheep the horns are present in both sexes, though smaller in the female. They are trigonal in section, having always three*~~

~~*more or less distinctly marked surfaces, divided by edges running longitudinally to the axis of the horn, sometimes sharply prominent and some- times rounded off. They are also marked by numerous transverse ridges and constrictions, and present a strong more or less spiral curve, which varies in direction in different species. The teeth resemble generally those of the other Bovide. The upper incisors and canines are entirely wanting, their place being taken by a callous pad against which the lower front teeth bite. These are eight in number, all much alike and in close contact; the outer pair represent the canines, the rest the incisors. On each side of the mouth above and below are six teeth close together, three of which are premolars (replacing milk teeth) and three true molars, all markedly selenodont (the grinding surfaces presenting crescent-like patterns) and hypsodont, or with long crowns and small roots. The dental formula is thus—incisors 9, canines 2, premolars 3, molars 3,= °;; total of both sides 32. The vertebral formula is—cervical 7, dorsal 13, lumbar 6 or 7, sacral 4, caudal variable. In the feet the hoofs of the two middle toes (third and fourth) only reach the ground, and are equally developed. The outer toes (second and fifth) are very rudimentary, represented only by small hoofs, without bony phalanges, and by the proximal or upper ends of the slender splint-like metacarpal or metatarsal bones.*~~

~~*Between the two middle toes, in most species, is lodged a*~~ †

~~*deep sac, having the form of a retort and with a small external orifice, which secretes an unctuous and odorous substance. This, tainting the herbage or stones over which the animal walks, affords the means by which, through the powerfully developed sense of smell, the neighbourhood of other individuals of the species is recog- nized, The crumen or suborbital gland, which is so largely developed and probably performs the same office in some*~~

†

~~*SHE—SHE*~~

~~*antelopes and deer, is present, but in a comparatively rudimentary form, though varying in different species. The tail, though long in many varieties of domestic sheep, is' short in all the wild species, in which also*~~

~~*the external covering of the body is in the main hairy,—the fine fleecy coats of wool, or hair so modified as to have the property of "felting" or adhering together under pressure, which give such value to many breeds, having been especially cultivated by selective breeding.*~~

~~*The sheep was a domestic animal in Asia and Europe before the dawn of history, though quite unknown as such in the New World until after the Spanish conquest. It has now been introduced by man into almost all parts of the world where settled agricultural operations are carried on, but flourishes especially in the temperate regions of both hemispheres. Whether our well-known and useful animal is derived from any one of the existing wild species, or from the crossing of several, or from some now extinct species, is quite a matter of conjecture. The variations of external characters seen in the different domestic breeds*~~

~~*From a living animal in the London Zoological Gardens.*~~

~~*Mouffion (Ovis musimon).*~~

~~*are very great. They are chiefly manifested in the form and number of the horns, which may be increased from the normal two to four or even eight, or may be altogether absent in the female alone or in both sexes; in the form and length of the ears, which often hang pendent by the side of the head; in the peculiar elevation or arching of the nasal bones in some Eastern races; in the length of the tail, and the development of great masses of fat at each side of its root or in the tail itself; and in the colour and quality of the fleece. See AGRICULTURE.*~~

~~*The distinction of the various permanent modifications under which wild sheep occur is a matter of considerable diticulty. Trivial characters, such as size, slight variations in colour, and especially the form and curvature of the horns, are relied upon by different zoologists who have given attention to the subject in the discrimination of species, but no complete accord has yet been established. The most generally recognized forms are enumerated below.*~~

~~*The geographical distribution of wild sheep is interesting. The immense mountain ranges of Central Asia, the Pamir and Thian Shan of*~~

~~*Turkestan, may be looked upon as the eentre of their habitat. Here, at an elevation of 16,000 feet above the sea-level, is the home of the magnifieent Ovis poli, named after the eelebrated Venetian traveller Mareo Polo, who met with it in his adventurous travels through this region in the 13th eentury. It is remark- able -for the great size of the horns of the old rams and the wide open sweep of their curve, so that the points stand boldly*~~

~~*SHE—SHE*~~

~~*out on each side, far away from the animal's head, instead of curl- ing round nearly in the same plane, as in most of the allied species. A very similar if not identical species from the same origin, in which the horns retain their more normal development, has received the name of 0. karclin'. Eastward and northward is found the argali (0. ammon), with a wide and not very well determined range. Still further north, in the Stanovoi Mountains and Kamchatka, is 0. nivicola, and away on the other side of Behring's Strait, in the Rocky Mountains and adjacent high lands of western North America, is the "bighorn" or mountain sheep (O. montana), the only one of the genus found in that continent and indeed—except the bison, the musk-ox (Ovibos), mountain goat (Aploceras), and the prongbuck (Antilocapra)—the only hollow- horned ruminant, being like the rest obviously a straggler from the cradle of its race. Turning southward from the point from which we started, and still a little to the east, in N epal and Little Tibet, is O. hodgsoni, a species with large and strongly curved horns, and another with smaller and more spreading horns, the burrhel, O. nahoor, Passing in a south-westerly direction we find a series of smaller forms, 0. vignet of Ladak, 0. cycloceros of northern India, Persia, and Baluchistan, 0. gmclint of Asia Minor, 0. ophion, confined to the elevated pine-clad Troodos Mountains of the island of Cyprus, and said at the time of the British occupation in 1878 to have been reduced to a flock of about twenty-five individuals, and O, mustmon, the moufflon of Corsica and Sardinia (sce figure), believed to have been formerly also a native of Spain. Lastly, we have the somewhat aberrant, goat-like angi, 0. tragclaphus, of the great mountain ranges of North Africa,*~~

~~*We thus find that shcep are essentially inhabitants of high mountainous parts of the world, for dwelling among which their wonderful powers of climbing and leaping give them special advantages. No species frequent by choice either level deserts, ayen plains, dense forests, or swamps. By far the greater number of species are inhabitants of the continent of Asia, one or perhaps two extending into North America, one into Southern Europe, and one into North Africa. No wild sheep occurs in any other part of the world, unless the so called musk-ox (Ovibos moschatus) of the Arctic regions, the nearest existing ally to the true shcep, may be considered as one. Geologically speaking, sheep appear to be very modern animals, or perhaps it would be safer to say that no remains that can be with certainty referred to the genus have been met with in the hitherto explored true Tertiary beds, which have yielded such abundant modifications of antelopes and deer. They are apparently not indigenous in the British ls es, but were probably introduced by man from the East in prehistoric times. (W. H. F.)*~~

~~*SHEEPSHEAD is the name of one of the largest species of the genus Sargus, marine fishes known on the coasts of southern Europe as " sargo" or " saragu." These fishes possess two kinds of teeth :—one, broad and flat, like incisors, occupying in a single series the front of the jaws ;*~~

~~*\ C= ANS: RRS SSS*~~

~~*a eee eer*~~

~~*<<*~~

~~*S252 ace SoS Sara: es ae Sa ESS fexwees Beses=. peso > 2 Sterns ee ew ao <>*~~

~~*PESTS*~~

~~*Sheepshead. the other, semiglobular and molar-like, arranged in several*~~

~~*series on the sides of the jaws. For the systematic posi- tion of the genus, see vol. xii. p. 689. The sheepshead, Sargus ovis, occurs in abundance on*~~

~~*the Atlantic coasts of the United States, from Cape Cod to Florida, and is one of the most valued food-fishes of North America. It is said to attain to a length of 30 inches and a weight of 15*~~

~~*pounds, Its food consists of shellfish, which it detaches with its incisors from the base to which they are fixed, crushing them with its powerful molars, It may be dis- tinguished from some other allied species occurring in the same seas by the presence of seven or eight dark cross- bands traversing the body, by a recumbent spine in front of the dorsal fin, by twelve spines and as many rays of the dorsal and ten rays of the anal fin, and by forty-six scales along the lateral line. The term "'sheepshead " ig also given in some parts of North America to a very different fish, a freshwater Scienoid, Corvina oscula, which is much less esteemed for the table, SHEERNESS-ON-SEA, a seaport, watering-place, naval establishment, and garrison town in the Isle of Sheppey, Kent, is situated on the Thames at the mouth of the Med- way, on the Sittingbourne branch of the London, Chatham, and Dover Railway, 52 miles east of London, and 17 north-east of Maidstone. The older part of Sheerness, containing the dockyard, is called Blue Town, the later additions being known as Miletown, Bankstown, and Marinetown. Marinetown consists chiefly of houses occu- pied by summer visitors, but although there is a good beach for bathing the presence of the dockyard with its surroundings has militated against the success of the town as a watering-place. The dockyard, erected by the admi- ralty about 1830, was seriously damaged by fire in 1881. The naval establishment is only of the second-class, the basins being too small to admit vessels of the largest size. The dockyard is 60 acres in extent, and contains naval barracks with accommodation for 1000 men. A fort was built at Sheerness by Charles H., which on the 10th J uly 1667 was taken by the Dutch fleet under De Ruyter. After this mishap it was strengthened and a dockyard was formed. The fortifications are now of great strength, £100,000 having been spent in adapting them to modern necessities. The town is in the parish of Minster, which possesses the most ancient abbey church in England. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 938 acres) in. 1871 was 13,956, and in 1881 it was 14,286. SHEFFIELD, a municipal and*~~

~~parliamentary borough in the West Riding of Yorkshire, next to Leeds the largest town in the county, and the chief seat of the cutlery trade in England, is situated on somewhat hilly ground in the neighbourhood of the Pennine range, on several rivers and streams, the principal of which are the Don, the Sheaf, the Porter, the Rivelin, and the Loxley, and on the Midland, Great Northern, and various branch railway lines, 39 miles south of Leeds, 37 south-east of Manchester, 172 north of London by the Midland Railway, and 162 by the Great Northern, The borough of Sheffield is coextensive with the parish, and embraces a district 10 miles in length by 3 or 4 miles in breadth. It includes the townships of Sheffield, Brightside Bierlow, Attercliffe-cum-Darnall, Nether Hallam, Heeley, Eccles-~~

~~| all Bierlow, and Upper Hallam, the last two districts~~

~~being in great part rural, but occupied also by the southern and western suburbs of the borough. The older portions of the town are somewhat irregularly built, and in some districts densely populated, but much has been done of late years to widen and otherwise improve the streets in the central districts by the operation of an Act passed in 1875, the expense amounting in all to about £1,000,000. The suburbs contain a large number of beautiful terraces and mansions, picturesquely situated in the neighbourhood of fine natural scenery. A consider- able portion of them is occupied by workmen's cottages, many of which are surrounded by well-kept gardens. Sheffield in 1845 was divided into twenty-five parochial districts, which have been gradually added to in successive years, and in 1855 it was constituted a deanery. The XXI, — 99~~

~~786~~

~~only ecclesiastical building of special interest is the old parish church of St Peter, chiefly in the Perpendicular style, originally cruciform, but by various additions now rectangular, The old Norman building is supposed to have been burned down during the wars of Edward III. with the barons, and the most ancient part of the present structure is the tower, dating from 'the 14th century. The church has lately been restored at the cost of about £20,000. It containsa large number of interesting mural monuments.~~

~~*The free grammar school was founded in 1603 through a bequest of Thomas Smith, a native of Sheffield, practis- ing as an attorney at Crowland, Lincolnshire, and it re- ceived the sanction of King James I. in 1604, with the title "The Free Grammar School of King James of England." The grammar school building of stone in the Tudor style, erected in 1824, is now (1886) used as a technical school, the grammar school trustees having pur- chased the collegiate school at Broomhall Park. 'The other principal educational institutions are the free writ- ing school (1715, rebuilt in 1827), the boys' charity school (founded 1706), the girls' charity school (1786), the Roman Catholic reformatory (1861), the Church of England educational | institute, the Firth College, erected by Mark Firth at a cost of £20,000, for } lectures and classes in connexion with the extension of university education, the Wesley College, associated with London University, Ranmoor College, for training young men for the ministry in the Methodist New Con- nexion, the mechanics' institute, the school of art, and the St George's Museum, founded by Mr Ruskin, and including a picture gallery, a library, and a mineral, a natural history, and a botanical collection, the special pur- pose of the institution being the train- \ ing of art students. The school board was first elected in 1870, and carries on its operations with great energy and success.*~~

~~*The principal public buildings are the town-hall, including the police | offices and rooms for the quarter ses- sions and other courts, erected in 1808, enlarged in 1833, and lately extensively remodelled at a cost of over £10,000; the council hall and municipal buildings, originally used for the mechanics' institute, but purchased by the corporation in 1864; the cutlers' hall, built in 1832 at a cost of £6500, and enlarged in 1857 by the addition of a magnificent banqueting hall, erected at a cost of £9000 ; the general post office, in the Doric style, opened in 1874; the fine new corn exchange, in the Tudor style, erected at a cost of £60,000; the Albert Hall, opened in 1873 by a joint-stock company for concerts and public meetings ; the music hall, erected in 1823 ; the freemasons' hall, opened in 1877; the temperance halls, 1856; the Norfolk market hall, opened ia 1857 at a cost of £40,000 ; the theatre royal, originally erected in 17 93, rebuilt in 1880 at a cost of £8000; the Alexandra theatre, erected 1836-7 at a cost of £8000; the barracks, having accom- modation for a cavalry and an infantry regiment and surrounded by grounds 25 acres in extent; and the*~~

~~*volunteer artillery drill hall, erected at a cost of £9000. The literary and social institutions inelude the Atheneum, established in 1847, with a newsroom and library ; the*~~

~~*SHEP FTEHLD*~~

~~*literary and philosophical society, 1822 ; the Sheffield club, 1862 ; the Sheffield library, commenced in 1777, and con- taining 80,000 volumes ; and the free library, founded in 1856, with various branches opened in subsequent years. Among the medical or benevolent institutions may be mentioned the general infirmary, opened in 1797, and successively enlarged and improved as requirements de- manded ; the public hospital, erected in 1858 (in connexion with the Sheffield medical school established in 1792) and extended in 1869 ; the hospital for women, originally estab- lished in 1864, but transferred in 1878 to a new building erected at the expense of Thomas Jessop, and now called the Jessop hospital for women; the hospital for diseases of the skin, 1880; the ear and throat hospital, 1880; the fever hospital, erected by the Town Council at a cost of about £25,000 ; the school and manufactory for the blind, 1879; the South Yorkshire lunatic asylum, 1872; the Shrewsbury hospital for twenty men and twenty women, originally founded by the seventh earl of Shrewsbury, who died in 1616, but since greatly enlarged by successive*~~

~~*Scale of % a Mile .*~~

~~*Plan of Sheffield.*~~

~~*benefactions ; the HOllis hospital, established in 1700 for widows of cutlers, &c.; the Firth almshouses, erected and endowed in 1869 by Mark Firth of Oakbrook at a cost of £30,000; the licensed victuallers' asylum, 1878; the Deakin institution, 1849; HIanby's charity, 1766; and HIadfield's charity, 1860,*~~

~~*The public monuments are neither numerous nor im- portant, the principal being the Montgomery statue, erected to James Montgomery the poet in 1861, chiefly by the Sunday school teachers of the town, the Ebenezer Elliot monument, erected in the market-place in 1854, and removed to Weston Park in 1875, the column to Godfrey Sykes the artist,*~~

~~*erected in Weston Park in 1871, the cholera monument 1834-5, and the Crimean monument to the natives of Sheffield who died in the Crimean War.*~~

~~*The town is comparatively well supplied with parks and public gardens. In three of the more populous dis- tricts the duke of Norfolk, lord of the manor, presented plots of ground amounting in all to 26 acres, to be used as recreation grounds. In the western suburbs is the*~~

~~*SHE—SHE*~~

~~*Weston Park and Museum, occupying the grounds and mansion house of Weston Hall, which the town council purchased in 1873. The grounds are about 13 acres in extent, and the museum includes—in addition to the Mappin Art Gallery, now (1886) being erected from the bequest of John Newton Mappin—a, picture gallery, a natural history collection, and an extensive collection of British antiquities. The Firth Park, on the north-east of the town, 36 acres in extent, was purchased by Mark Firth, and presented to the town, the opening ceremony by the prince and princess of Wales taking place 16th August 1875. The Norfolk Park, 60 acres in extent, is granted by the duke of Norfolk for the use of the town, but remains his property. The botanical gardens, 18 acres in extent, situated in the western suburbs, are the property of a com- pany, but on certain days they are open to the public ata small charge. The Bramall Lane cricket ground is the scene of most of the Yorkshire county cricket matches,*~~

~~*The prosperity of Sheffield is chiefly dependent on the manu- facture of steel and the application of it to its varions uses. The smelting of iron in the district is supposed to date from Roman times, and there is distinct proof carrying it back as far as the Norman Conquest. The town had become famed for its cutlery by the 14th century, as is shown by allusions in Chaucer. There was an important trade carried on in knives in the reign of Eliza- beth, and the Cutlers' Company was incorporated in 1624, In early times cutlery was made of blister or bar steel ; afterwards shear steel was introduced for the same purpose ; but in 1740 Benjamin Huntsman of Handsworth introduced the manufacture of cast steel, and up to the present time Sheffield retains its supremacy in steel*~~

~~manufacture, notwithstanding foreign com etition, especially that of Germany and the United States, its trade in heavy steel having kept pace with that in the other branches, It was with the aid of Sheffield capital that Henry Bessemer founded his pioncer works to develop the manufacture of his invention, and a large quantity of Bessemer steel is still made in Sheffield. 'The heavy branch of the steel manufacture includes armour plates, rails, tyres, axles, large castings for engines, steel shot, and steel for rifles. The cutlery trade embraces almost every variety of instrument and tool,—spring and table knives, razors, scissors, surgical instru- ments, mathematical instruments, edge tools, saws, scythes, sickles, spades, shovels, engineering tools, hammers, vices, &e. The manufacture of engines and machinery is also largely carried on, as well as that of stoves and grates. The art of silver plating was introduced by Thomas Bolsover in 17 42, and the manufacture is still of importance. Among the minor industries of the town are tanning, confectionery, cabinctmaking, bicycle-making, iron and brass founding, brushes and combs and of optical instruments. On account of various outrages perpetrated by artisans in workshops against per- sons obnoxious to them, a Government commission was in 1867 appointed to make inquiries, the result being the exposure and suppression of confederacies in connexion with various workmen's nnions.~~

~~The town trust for the administration of property belonging to the town dates from the 14th century, and in 1681 the number aud mauner of election of the "town trustees" was definitely settled by a decree of the Court of Chancery. Additional powers were conferred on the trustees by an Act passed in 1874. The annual income of the trust property now amounts to about £5000. Sheffield obtained municipal government in 18438, and is divided into nine wards. The number of aldermen is sixteen. Since 1864 the town council have had control of the police, of the maintenance of the streets, and of the drainage and sanitary arrangements, but the supplies of water and gas are in the hands of private companies. The markets belong to the duke of Norfolk, lord of the manor. The town first returned members to parliament in 1832. In 1885 the representation was increased from two to five members, the parliamentary divisions being Attercliffe, Brightside, Central, Keclesall, and Hallam. The area of the municipal and parliament- ary borough is~~

~~19,651 acres. From 45,755 in 1801 the population had increased by 1841 to 110,891, by 1871 to 239,947, and by 1881 to 284,508 (141,298 males, 143,210 females).~~

~~Sheffield was the capital of Hallamshire from the Norman Con- quest, and it is supposed that the "aula" of the Saxon Lord Waltheof mentioned in Domesday was on the Castle Hill. After the execution of Waltheof for a conspiracy against the Conqueror in 1075 the manor for some time remained in the hands of his countess, but in 1080 was possessed by Roger de Busli. After- wards it passed to the De Lovetots, barons of Huntingdonshire, one of whom had a castle at Sheffield. A number of people, workers in iron, gathered round the castle and formed the nucleus of the~~

~~silver refining, and the manufacture of~~

~~town. Through an heiress of the De Lovetots it passed in the reign of Richard I. to the De F urnivals, one of whom, Thomas de Furnival, strengthened and completed the castle, and obtained from Edward I. a charter under the great seal for a market and annual fair. After the extinction of the male line of the Furnivals in 1406, the manor passed to the Talbots, of whom John, referred to in Shakespeare's Henry VI., was created ear] of Shrewsbury in 1442. Cardinal Wolsey, during his disgrace, was for some time placed in Sheffield Castle under the charge of George, fourth earl of Shrews- bury ; and Queen Mary remained a prisoner in it under the care of George, sixth earl, from the autunm of 1570 to the autumn of 1584. During the Civil Wars the castle was seized in 1642 by the Parliamentary party, who garrisoned it and threw up entrench- ments round the town, but after the capture of Rotherham in April 1648 they, on the approach of the earl of Newcastle, left it in panic and fled to Derbyshire. It was, however, recaptured by the party in the following year, and was subsequently demolished. In 1654 the estate passed by marriage to the Howards, dukes of Norfolk.~~

~~See Hunter's WZallamshire,~~

~~*1819, new ed. by A. Gatty, 1869; Leader,*~~

~~*Shefield Castle and Mary Queen of Scots, 1869; Gatty, Sheffield Past and Present, 1873; W. de Gray Birch, Original Documents relating to Sheffield, 1874 ;*~~

~~*Leader, Reminiscences of Old Sheffield, 1875; Taylor, Pictorial Guide to*~~

~~*Sheffield, 1879,*~~

~~*SHEFFIELD, Joun. See BUCKINGHAMSHIRE, DUKE OF.*~~

~~*SHEIL, Rictarp Laror (1791-1851), Irish political orator, was the eldest son of Edward Sheil, an Irishman who had acquired considerable wealth in Spain, and after the passing of the Act permitting Catholics in Ireland to purchase and transmit property in fee had returned to Ireland, where he purchased the estate of Bellevue, Tipperary. The son was born 17th August 1791, at Drumdowney, Tipperary. He received instruction in*~~

~~*'French and Latin from the Abbé de Grimeau, a French*~~

~~*refugee, and afterwards at Kensington House schocl, London, presided over by a French nobleman, the Prince de Broglie. In October 1804 the was removed to the college at Stoneyhurst, Lancashire, and in November 1807 entered Trinity College, Dublin, where he specially distinguished himself in the debates of the Historical Society. He graduated B.A. in July 1811, and on 13th November of the same year entered Lincoln's Inn, preparatory to being called to the Irish bar. He was admitted a member of the Irish bar at the Hilary term 1814, and meanwhile resolved to support himself by writing plays. His play of Adelaide, or the Emigrants, was played at the Crow Street theatre, Dublin, 19th February 1814, with complete success, and on the 23d May 1816 was performed at Covent Garden. The Apostate, produced at the latter theatre on 3d May 1817, firmly established his reputation, and encouraged him to continue his dramatic efforts till his legal and political duties absorbed the greater part of his leisure. His principal other plays are Bellamira (written in 1818), Zvadne (1819), Huguenot, (1819), and Montini (1820). In 1822 he began, along with W. H. Curran, to contribute to the Vew Monthly M agazine a*~~

series of papers entitled Sketches of the Irish Bar, which attracted considerable attention by their raciness and graphic vigour. Those written by Sheil were published in 1855 in two volumes, with a sketch of his life. Sheil was one of the principal founders of the Catholic Associa- tion in 1823, and drew up the petition for inquiry into the mode of administering the laws in Ireland, which was presented in the same year to both Houses of Parliament. After the defeat of the Catholic Relief Bill in 1825 the suggested the formation of the New Catholic Association, and, along with O'Connell, was the principal leader of the agitation persistently carried on till Catholic emancipation was granted in 1829. In the same year he was returned to parliament for Melbourne Port, and in 1831 for Louth. He took a prominent part in all the debates relating to Ireland, and his brilliant eloquence gradually captivated the admiration of the House. In August 1839 he became vice-president of the board of trade in Lord Melbourne's

ministry. After the accession of Lord John Russell to power in 1846 he was appointed master of the mint. Being desirous, on account of his wife's health, to obtain diplomatic employment abroad, he was in 1850 appointed minister at the court of Tuscany. He died somewhat suddenly of gout at Florence on May 23, 1851.

See Memoirs of Richard Lalor Sheil, by W. Torrens M'Cullagh (2 vols., 1855).

SHEKEL. In the system of Babylonian and Assyrian weights the talent (called in Heb. 123, kikkar) consisted of 60 mana (Heb. 73'?, maneh) or minas, and the latter again

of sixty shekels (Heb. °2Y). For the values of these weights see Numismatics, vol. xvii. p. 631, where it is also explained that the Phoenicians and Hebrews modified the system and reckoned only 50 shekels to the maneh, at all events in applying the names to money, 2.e., to the precious metals,! and that the weight of their silver shekel was also probably modified for convenience of interchange between the gold and silver standard. The silver shekels of the Maccabees (Numismatics, p.

~~650) have a maximum weight of about 224 grains, and correspond to the Phe- nician tetradrachm (four drams). Hence in Matt. xvii. 24 the temple tax of half ashekel is called the didrachm (2 drams). In 2 Sam. xiv. 26 we read of shekels "after the king's weight," 2.¢., according to the Assyrian standard, which is called "royal" on weights found at Nineveh. The Hebrews divided the shekel into twenty parts, each of which was a gerah (7A).~~

~~SHELBURNE, Ear or. of.~~

~~SHELD-DRAKE, or, as commonly spelt in its con- tracted form, SHELDRAKE, a word whose derivation? has been much discussed, one of the most conspicuous birds of the Duck tribe, Anatidz, called, however, in many parts of England the "Burrow-Duck" from its habits presently to be mentioned, and in some districts by the almost obso- lete name of " Bergander" (Dutch, Berg-cende, Germ. Berg- ente), a word used by Turner in 1544.~~

~~The Sheldrake is the Anas tadorna' of Linneus, and the Ladorna cornuta or 7. vulpanser of modern ornithology, a bird somewhat larger and of more upright stature than an ordinary Duck, having its bill, with a basal fleshy protuberance (whence the specific term cornwta), pale red, the head and upper neck very dark glossy green, and beneath that a broad white collar, succeeded by a still broader belt of bright bay extending from the upper back across the upper breast. The outer scapulars, the primaries, a median abdominal stripe, which dilates at the vent, and a bar at the tip of the middle tail-quills are black ; the inner secondaries and the lower tail-coverts are grey ; and the speculum or wing-spot is a rich bronzed-green. The rest of the plumage is pure white, and the legs are flesh-coloured. There is little external difference between the sexes, the female being only somewhat smaller and less brightly coloured. The Sheldrake frequents the sandy coasts of nearly the whole of Europe and North Africa, extending across Asia to India, China, and Japan, generally keeping in pairs and sometimes penetrating to favourable inland localities. The nest is always made under cover, usually in a rabbit-hole among sand- hills, and in the Frisian Islands the people supply this bird with artificial burrows, taking large toll of itin eggs anddown.~~

~~*Barbary, south-eastern Europe, and Central Asia are inhabited by an allied*~~

~~*1 See Exod. xxxviii, 25, where there are 8000 shekels in the talent.*~~

- ~~*Ray in 1674 (Engl. Words, p. 76) gave it from the local "sheld" (=particoloured), which, applied to animals, as a horse or a cat, still survives in Hast Anglia. This opinion is not only suitable but is confirmed by the bird's Old Norsk name Skjéldungr, from Skjéldr, primarily a patch, and now commonly bestowed on a piebald horse, just as Skjalda (Cleasby's Icel. Dict., sub voce), from the same source, is a particoloured cow. But some scholars interpret Skjéldungr by the secondary meaning of Skjéldr, a shield, asserting that it refers to "' the shield-like band across the breast' of the bird. If they be right the proper spelling of the English word would be " Shield-drake," as some indeed haveit. A third suggested meaning, from the Old Norsk Skj6l, shelter, is philologically to be rejected, but, if true, would refer to the bird's habit, described in the text, of breeding under cover.*~~

~~*3 This is the Latinized form of the French Tadorne, first published by Belon (1555), a word on which Littré throws no light except to state that it has a southern variant Tardone.*~~

~~*See LANSDOWNE, Marquis*~~

~~*SHE—SHE*~~

~~*species of more inland range and very different coloration, the ZY. casarca or Casarca* rutila of ornithologists, the Ruddy Sheldrake of English authors—for it has several times strayed to the British Islands,—and the "Brahminy Duck" of Anglo- Indians, who find it resorting in winter, whether by pairs or by thousands, to their inland waters. This species is of an almost uniform bay colour all over, except the quill-feathers of the wings and tail, and (in the male) a ring round the neck, which are black, while the wing-coverts are white and the speculum shines with green and purple ; the bill and legs are dark-coloured.®> A species closely resembling the last, but with a grey head, 7. cana, inhabits*~~

~~*South Africa, while in some of the islands of the Malay Archi- pelago, and in the northern parts of Australia, there is a fourth species, 7'. radjah, which almost equals the true Sheldrake im its brightly contrasted plumage, but yet wants some of the lively colours the latter displays—its head, for instance, being white instead of dark green. Further to the southward in Australia occurs another species of more sombre colours, the 7'. tadornotdes; and New Zealand is the home of a sixth species, 7. varicgata, still less distinguished by bright hues. In the last two the plumage of the sexes differs not inconsiderably, but all are believed to have essentially the same habits as the 7. cornuta.®*~~

~~*It is not without a purpose that these different species are here particularized. Sheldrakes will, if attention be paid to their wants, breed freely in captivity, crossing if oppor- tunity be given them with other species, and an incident therewith connected possesses an importance hardly to be overrated by the philosophical naturalist, though it seems not to have met with the attention it deserves. In the Zoological Society's gardens in the spring of 1859 a male of T. cornuta mated with a female of 7'. cana, and, as will have been inferred from what has been before stated, these two species differ greatly in the colouring of their plumage. The young of their union, however, presented an appear- ance wholly unlike that of either parent, and an appearance which can hardly be said, as has been said (P. Z. S., 1859, p. 442), to be 'fa curious combination of the colours of the two." Both sexes of this hybrid have been admirably por- trayed by Mr Wolf (tom. cit., Aves, pl. 158); and, strange to say, when these figures are compared with equally faith- ful portraits by the same master (op. cit., 1864, pls. 18, 19) of the Australian and New Zealand species, 7'. tadornoides and 7'. variegata, it will at once be seen that the hybrids present an appearance almost midway between the two species last named—species which certainly had nothing to do with their production. The only explanation of this astounding fact seems to be that afforded by the principle of "reversion," as set forth by Mr Darwin, and illustrated by him from examples of certain breeds of Doves, domes- tic Fowls, and Ducks (Anim. and Pl. under Domestication, i. pp. 197-200, ii. p. 40), as well as, in the matter of domestic Fowls, by Mr Cambridge Phillips (Zoologist, 1884, p. 331). It is a perfectly fair hypothesis that the existing animals of New Zealand and Australia retain more of their*~~

~~*ancestral character than do those of countries in which we may suppose the struggle for life to have been fiercer and the action of natural selection stronger. Why it is so we cannot say, yet experiment proves that the most widely different breeds of Pigeons and other poultry, when crossed, produce offspring that more re- sembles the ancestral wild species from which the domestic- ated forms have sprung than it resembles either of the immediate parents. This mysterious agency is known as*~~

~~*4 Bonaparte was pleased in 1838 to separate this species from the genus Tadorna, but neither he nor any of his successors has shewn any good reason for doing so.*~~

~~> Jerdon (B. India, iii. p. 798) tells of a Hindu belief that once upon a time two lovers were transformed into birds of this species, and that they or their descendants are condemned to pass the night on the opposite banks of a river, whence they unceasingly call to one another: "Charkwa, shall I come?" "No, Charkwi." " Charkwi, shall Icome?" "No, Charkwa." As to how, under these circum- stances, the race is perpetuated the legend is silent.~~

~~6 The Anas scutellatu of the Indo-Malay countries is by several authorities considered to be a Tadorna, but this vicw is denied by others, among them by Mr Hume (Stray Feathers, viii. p. 158).~~

~~SH E—SHE~~

~~the principle of "reversion," and the example just cited proves that the same effect is produced in species as well as in "races,"—indicating the essential identity of both, —the only real difference being that "species " are more differentiated than are "races," or that the distinction between them, instead of being (as many writers, some of the first repute, have maintained) qualitative, is merely quantitative, or one of degree.}~~

~~The genus Zadorna, as shewn by its tracheal characters, seems to be most nearly related to Chenalopex, containing the bird so well known as the Egyptian Goose, C. ezgyptiaca, and an allied species, C. jubata, from South America. For the same reason the genus Plectropterus, composed of the Spur-winged Geese of Africa, and perhaps the Australian Anseranas and the Indian and Ethiopian Sarcidiornis, also appear to belong to the same group, which should be reckoned rather to the Anatine than to the Anserine section of the Anatidz. (A. N.)~~

~~SHELLEY, Mary Woutstonecrart (17 97-1851), the second wife of the poet SHELLEY (9.v.), born in London, August 30, 1797 (see vol. x. p. 717), deserves some notice on her own account, as a writer of romance, chiefly imaginative. When she was in Switzerland with Shelley and Byron in 1816 (see below), a proposal was made that various members of the party should write a romance or tale dealing with the supernatural. The result of this project was that Mrs Shelley wrote Frankenstein, Byron the~~

~~*beginning of a narrative about a vampyre, and Dr Polidori, Byron's physician, a tale named "he: Vampyre, the authorship of which used frequently in past years to be attributed to Byron himself, Frankenstein, pub- lished in 1818, when Mrs Shelley was at the utmost twenty-one years old, is a very remarkable performance for so young and inexperienced a writer 3; its main idea is that of the formation and vitalization, by a deep student of the secrets of nature, of an adult man, who, entering the world thus under unnatural conditions, becomes the terror of his species, a half-involuntary criminal, and finally an outcast whose sole resource is self-immolation. This romance was followed by others: Valperga, or the Life and Adventures of Castruccio, Prince of Lucca (1823), an his- torical tale written with a good deal of spirit, and readable enough even now; The Last Man (1826), a fiction of the final agonies of human society owing to the universal spread of a pestilence, — this is written in a very stilted style, but bears some traces of the imagination which fashioned Frankenstein; The Fortunes of Perkin Warbeck (1830) ; Lodore (1835) ; and Falkner (1837). Besides these novels there was the Journal of a Six Weeks' Tour (the tour of 1814 mentioned below), which is published in con- junction with Shelley's prose-writings ; also Rambles in Germany and Italy in 1840-42-43 (which shows an observant spirit, capable of making some true forecasts of ' the future), and various miscellaneous writings. After the death of Shelley, for whom she had a deep and even enthusiastic affection, marred at times by defects of temper, Mrs Shelley in the autumn of 1823 returned to London. At first the earnings of her pen were her only sustenance ; but after a while Sir Timothy Shelley made her an allowance, which would have been withdrawn if she had persisted in a project of writing a full biography of her husband. She was a loving and careful mother, aud shared the prosperous fortunes of her son, when, upon the death of Sir Timothy in 1844, he succeeded to the baronetey. She died in February 1851.*~~

~~*SHELLEY, Percy Byssuz (1792-1822), was born on*~~

~~*1 It is further worthy of remark that the young of 7. variegata when first hatched closely resemble those of 7. casarca, and when the former assume their first plumage they resemble their father more than their mother (P. Z. S., 1866, p. 160).*~~

4th August 1792, at Field Place, near Horsham, Sussex. He was the eldest child of Timothy Shelley, M.P. for Shoreham, by his wife Elizabeth, daughter of Charles Pilfold, of Effingham, Surrey. Mr Timothy Shelley be- came in 1815 Sir Timothy Shelley, Bart., upon the decease of his father Bysshe, who was created a baronet in 1806. This Bysshe Shelley was born in Christ Church, Newark, North America, and married two heiresses, the former, the mother of Timothy, being Mary Catherine, heiress of the Rev. Theobald Michell, of Horsham. He was a handsome man of enterprising and remarkable character, accumulated a vast fortune, built Castle Goring, and lived in sullen and penurious retirement in his closing years. None of his talent seems to have descended to Timothy, who, except for being of a rather oddly self-asser- tive character, was undistinguishable from the ordinary run of commonplace country squires. The mother of the poet is described as beautiful, and a woman: of good abili- ties, bat not with any literary turn ; she was an agreeable letter-writer. The branch of the Shelley family to which the poet Percy Bysshe belonged traces its pedigree to Henry Shelley, of Worminghurst, Sussex, who died in 1623. Beyond that point the genealogical record is not clear ; yet no substantial doubt exists that these Worm- inghurst or Castle Goring Shelleys are of the same stock as the Michelgrove Shelleys, who trace up to Sir William Shelley, judge of the common pleas under Henry VIL, thence to a member of parliament in 1415, and to the reign of Edward L., or even to the epoch of the Norman Conquest. The Worminghurst branch was a family of credit, but not of distinction, until its fortunes culminated under the above-named Sir Bysshe.

In the character of Perey Bysshe Shelley three qualities become early manifest, and may be regarded as innate: impressionableness or extreme susceptibility to external and internal impulses of feeling ; a lively imagination or erratic fancy, blurring a sound estimate of solid facts ; and a resolate repudiation of outer authority or the despotism of custom. These qualities were highly developed in his earliest manhood, were active in his boyhood, and no doubt made some show even on the borderland between childhood and infancy. At the age of six he was sent to a day school at Warnham, kept by the Rev. Mr Edwards : at ten to Sion

~~House School, Brentford, of which the principal was Dr Greenlaw, while the pupils were mostly sons of local tradesmen ; at twelve (or immediately before that age, 29th July 1804) to Eton. The headmaster of Eton, up to nearly the close of Shelley's sojourn in the school, was Dr Goodall, a mild disciplinarian ; it is there- fore a mistake to suppose that Percy (unless during his very brief stay in the lower school) was frequently flagellated by the formidable Dr Keate, who only became headmaster after Goodall. Shelley was a shy, sensitive, mopish sort of boy from one point of view,—from another a very unruly one, having his own notions of justice, independence, and mental freedom ; by nature gentle, kindly, and retiring,—under provocation dangerously violent. He resisted the odious fagging system, exerted himself little in the routine of school-learning, and was known both as 'Mad Shelley" and as "Shelley the Atheist." Some writers try to show that an Eton boy would be termed atheist without exhibiting any propensity to atheism, but solely on the ground of his being mutinous. However, as Shelley was a declared atheist a good while before attaining his majority, a shrewd suspicion arises that, if Etonians dubbed him atheist, they had some relevant reason for doing so.~~

~~Shelley entered University College, Oxford, in April 1810, returned thence to Eton, and finally quitted the school at midsummer, and commenced residence in Oxford~~

~~in October. Here he met a young Durham man, Thomas Jefferson Hogg, who had preceded him in the university by a couple of months ; the two youths at once struck up a warm and intimate friendship. Shelley had at this time a love for chemical experiment, as well as for poetry, philosophy, and classical study, and was in all his tastes and bearing an enthusiast. Hogg was not in the least an enthusiast, rather a cynic, but he also was a steady and well-read classical student. In religious matters both were sceptics, or indeed decided anti-Christians ; whether Hogg, as the senior and more informed disputant, pioneered Shelley into strict atheism, or whether Shelley, as the more impassioned and unflinching speculator, outran the easy-going jeering Hogg, is a moot point; we incline to the latter opinion. Certain it is that each egged on the other by perpetual~~

~~*disquisition on abstruse sub- jects, conducted partly for the sake of truth and partly for that of mental exercitation, without on either side any disposition to bow to authority or stop short of extreme conclusions. The upshot of this habit was that Shelley and Hogg, at the close of some five months of happy and uneventful academic life, got expelled from the university. Shelley—for he alone figures as the writer of the "little syllabus," although there can be no doubt that Hogg was his confidant and coadjutor throughout—published anony- mously a pamphlet or flysheet entitled The Necessity of Atheism, which he sent round, or intended to send round, to all sorts of people as an invitation or challenge to dis- cussion. It amounted to saying that neither reason nor testimony is adequate to establish the existence of a deity, and that nothing short of a personal individual self- revelation of the deity would be sufficient. The college authorities heard of the pamphlet, somehow identified Shelley as its author, and summoned him before then— "our master, and two or three of the fellows." The pamphlet was produced, and Shelley was required to say whether he had written it or not. The youth declined to answer the question, and was expelled by a written sentence, ready drawn up. Hogg was next summoned, with a result practically the same. The precise details of this transaction have been much controverted; the best evidence is that which appears on the college records, showing that both Hogg and Shelley (Hogg is there named first) were expelled for "'contumaciously refusing to answer questions," and for "repeatedly declining to dis- avow" the authorship. Thus they were dismissed as being mutineers against academic authority, in a case pregnant with the suspicion—not the proof—of atheism; but how the authorities could know beforehand that the two undergraduates would be contumacious and stiff against disavowal, so as to give warrant for written sentences ready drawn up, is nowhere explained. Possibly the sentences were worded without ground assigned, and would only have been produced tm terrorem had the young men proved more malleable. The date of this incident was 25th March 1811.*~~

~~*Shelley and Hogg came up to London, where Shelley was soon left alone, as his friend went to York to study conveyancing. Percy and his incensed father did not at once come to terms, and for a while he had no resource beyond pocket-money saved up by his sisters (four in number altogether)*~~

~~*and sent round to him, sometimes by the hand of a singularly pretty school-fellow, Miss Harriet Westbrook, daughter of a retired and moderately opulent hotel-keeper. Shelley, especially in early youth, had a somewhat " priggish" turn for moralizing and argumenta- tion, and a decided mania for proselytizing; his school- girl sisters, and their little Methodist friend Miss West- brook, aged between fifteen and sixteen, must all be enlightened and converted to anti-Christianity. He there-*~~

~~*a"*~~

~~*SHE LLEBY*~~

~~*fore cultivated the society of Harriet, calling at the house of her father, and being encouraged in his assiduity by her much older sister Eliza. Harriet not unnaturally fell in love with him; and he, though not it would seem at any time ardently in love with her, dallied along the flowery pathway which leads to sentiment and a definite courtship. This was not his first love-affair ; for he had but a very few months before been courting his cousin Miss Harriet Grove, who, alarmed at his heterodoxies, finally broke off with him—to his no small grief and per- turbation at the time. It is averred, and seemingly with truth, that Shelley never indulged in any sensual or dis- sipated amour; and, as he advances in life, it becomes apparent that, though capable of the passion of love, and unusually prone to regard with much effusion of sentiment women who interested his mind and heart, the mere attraction of a pretty face or an alluring figure left him unenthralled. After a while Percy was reconciled to his father, revisited his family in Sussex, and then stayed with a cousin in Wales. Hence he was recalled to London by Miss Harriet Westbrook, who wrote complaining of her father's resolve to send ler back to her school, in which she was now regarded with repulsion as having become too apt a pupil of the atheist Shelley. He replied counselling resistance. 'She wrote to say" (these are the words of Shelley in a letter to Hogg, dating towards the end of July 1811) "that resistance was useless, but that she would fly with me, and threw herself upon my protection." Shelley therefore returned to London, where he found Harriet agitated and wavering; finally they agreed to elope, travelled in haste to Edinburgh, and there, according to the law of Scotland, became husband and wife on*~~

~~*28th August. Shelley, it should be understood, had by this time openly broken, not only with the dogmas and conven- tions of Christian religion, but with many of the institu- tions of Christian polity, and in especial with such as enforce and regulate marriage; he held—with William Godwin and some other theorists—that marriage ought to be simply a voluntary relation between a man and a woman, to be assumed at joint option and terminated at the after-option of either party. If therefore he had acted upon his personal conviction of the right, he would never have wedded Harriet, whether by Scotch, English, or any other law ; but he waived his own theory in favour of the consideration that in such an experiment the woman's stake, and the disadvantages accruing to her, are out of all comparison with the man's. His conduct therefore was so far entirely honourable; and, if it derogated from a principle of his own (a principle which, however con- trary to the morality of other people, was and always remained matter of genuine conviction on his individual part), this was only in deference to a higher and more imperious standard of right.*~~

~~*Harriet Shelley was not only beautiful; she was amiable, accommodating, adequately well educated and well bred. She liked reading, and her reading was not strictly frivolous. But she could not (as Shelley said at a later date) 'feel poetry and understand philosophy." Her attractions were all on the surface; there was (to use a common phrase) 'nothing particular in her." For nearly three years Shelley and she led a shifting sort of life upon an income of £400 a year, one-half of which was allowed (after his first severe indignation at the mésalliance was past) by Mr Timothy Shelley, and the other half by Mr Westbrook. The spouses left Edinburgh for York and the society of Hogg; broke with him upon a charge made by Harriet, and evidently fully believed by Shelley at the time, that, during a temporary absence of his upon business in Sussex, Hogg had tried to seduce her (this quarrel was entirely made up at the end of about a year) ; moved off*~~

~~*> ae Li & ¥*~~

~~*to Keswick in Cumberland, coupled with the company of Southey, and some hospitality from the duke of N orfolk, who, as chicf magnate in the Shoreham region of Sussex, was at pains to reconcile the father and his*~~

~~*too unfilial heir; sailed thence to Dublin, where Shelley was eager, and in some degrce prominent, in the good cause of Catholic emancipation, conjoincd with repeal of the union ; crossed to Wales, and lived at Nant-Gwillt, near Rhayader, then at Lynmouth in Devonshire, then at Tanyrallt in Carnarvonshire. All this was between September 1811 and February 1813. At Lynmouth an Irish servant of Shelley's was sentenced to six months' imprisonment for distributing and posting up printed papers, bearing no printer's name, of an inflammatory or seditious tendency — being a Declaration of Rights composed by the youthful reformer, and some verses of his named The Devil's Walk. At Tanyrallt Shelley was (to trust his own and Harriet's account, confirmed by the evidence of Miss Westbrook, the elder sister, who continued an inmate in most of their homes) attacked on the night of 26th February by an assassin who fired three pistol-shots. The motive of the attack was undefined; the fact of its occurrence was generally disbelieved, both at the time and by subsequent inguirers. To analyse the possibilities and probabilities of the case would lead us too far; we can only say that we rank with the decided sceptics. Shelley was full of wild unpractical notions ; he dosed himself with laudanum as a palliative to spasmodic pains; he was given to strange assertions and romancing narratives (several of which might properly be specified here but for want of space), and was not incapable of conscious fibbing. His mind no doubt oscillated at times along the line which divides sanity from insane delusion. It is difficult to suppose that he simply invented such a monstrous story to serve a purpose. The very enormity of the story tends to dissuade us from thinking so, and the purpose alleged seems disproportion- ately small — that of decamping from Tanyrallt ere creditors should become too pressing. Indeed, we decisively reject this supposed motive. On the other hand, nothing could be traced to corroborate Shelley's assertion. This was at any rate the break-up of the residence at Tanyrallt ; the Shelleys revisited Ireland, and then settled for a while in London. Here, in June 1813, Harriet gave birth to her daughter Ianthe Eliza (she married a Mr Esdaile, and died in 1876). Here also Shelley brought out his first poem of any importance, Queen Mab; it was privately printed, as its exceedingly aggressive tone in matters of religion and morals would not allow of publication.*~~

~~*The speculative sage whom Shelley especially reverenced was William Godwin, the author of Political Justice and of the romance Caleb Williams ; in 1796 he had married Mary Wollstonecraft, authoress of The Ltights of Woman, who died shortly after giving birth, on 30th August 1797, toa daughter Mary. With Godwin Shelley had opened a voluntecred correspondence late in 1811, and he had known him personally since the winter which closed 1812, Godwin was then a bookseller, living with his second wife, who had been a Mrs Clairmont ; there were four other inmates of the household, two of whom call for some mention here — Fanny Wollstonecraft, the daughter of the authoress and Mr Imlay, and Claire, the daughter of Mrs Clairmont, Fanny committed suicide in October 1816, being, according to some accounts which remain unverified, hopelessly in love with Shelley; Claire was closely associated with all his subsequent career. It was towards May 1814 that Shelley first saw Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin as a grown-up girl (she was well on towards Seventeen) ; he instantly fell in love with her, and she with him. Just before this, 24th March, Shelley had remarried Harriet in London, though with no obvionsly cogent*~~

~~*791*~~

~~*motive for doing so ; but, on becoming enamoured of Mary, he seems to have rapidly made up his mind that Harriet should not stand in the way. She was at Bath while he was in London, and for a while she heard nothing of him. They had, however, met again in London and come to Some sort of understanding before the final crisis arrived, — Harriet remonstrating and indignant, but incapable of effective resistance, — Shelley sick of her companionship, and bent upon gratifying his own wishes, which as we were not at odds with his avowed . For some months past there had been bickerings and misunderstandings between him and Harriet, aggravated by the now detested presence of Miss more than this cannot be said, for no more is at present known. Tt is certain, however, that while not plainly proving any grave wrongdoing on Harriet's part, exculpates Shelley from the charge of having separated from her without what appeared to himself sufficient cause. The upshot came on 28th July, when Shelley aided Mary to elope from her father's house, Claire Clairmont deciding to accompany them. They crossed to Calais, and*~~

~~*proceeded across France into Switzerland. Godwin and his wife were greatly incensed, Though he and Mary Wollstonecraft had entertained and avowed bold opinions regarding tlie niarriage-bond, similar to Shelley's own, and had in their time acted upon these opinions, it is not clearly made out that Mary Godwin had ever been encouraged by paternal influence to think or do the like, Shelley and she chose to act upon their own likings and responsibility,—he disregarding any claim which Harriet had upon him, and Mary setting at nought her father's authority. Both were prepared to ignore the law of the land and the rules of*~~

~~*society. The three young people returned to London in September. In the following January Sir Bysshe Shelley*~~

~~*died, and Percy became the immediate heir to the entailed property inherited by his father Sir Timothy. This entailed property seems to have been worth £6000 per annum, or little less. There was another very much larger property which Percy might shortly before have secured to himself, contingently upon his father's death, if he would have consented to put it upon the same footing of entail; but this he resolutely refused to do, on the pro- fessed ground of his being opposed upon principle to the system of entail; therefore, on his grandfather's death the larger property passed wholly away from any interest which Percy might have had in it, in use or in expectancy. He now came to an understanding with his father as to the remaining entailed property ; and, giving up certain future advantages, he received henceforth a regular income of £1000 a year. Out of this he assigned £200 a year to Harriet, who had given birth in November to a son, Charles Bysshe (he died in 1826), Shelley, and Mary as well, were on moderately good terms with Harriet, seeing her from time to time. His peculiar views as to the rela- tions of the sexes appear markedly again in his having (so it is alleged) invited Harriet to return to his and Mary's house as a domicile; of course this curious arrangement did not take effect. Shelley and Mary (who was naturally always called Mrs Shelley) now settled at Bishopgate, near Windsor Forest ; here he produced his first excellent poem, Alastor, or the Spirit of Solitude, which was published soon afterwards along with a few others. In May 1816 the pair left England for Switzerland, together with Miss Clairmont, and their own*~~

~~*infant son William. They went straight to Séchcron, near Geneva; Lord Byron, whose separation from his wife had just then taken place, arrived there immediately afterwards. A great deal of controversy has lately arisen as to the motives and incidents of this foreign sojourn.*~~

~~*7*~~

~~*792*~~

~~*The clear fact is that Miss Clairmont, who had a fine voice and some inclination for the stage, had seen Byron, as connected with the management of Drury Lane theatre, early in the year, and an amorous intrigue had begun between them in London. Prima facie it seems quite reasonable to suppose that she had explained the facts to Shelley or to Mary, or to both, and had induced them to convoy her to the society of Byron abroad; were this finally established as the fact, it would show no incon- sistency of conduct, or breach of his own code of sexual morals, on Shelley's part. On the other hand it is asserted that documentary evidence of an irrefragable kind exists showing that Shelley and Mary were totally ignorant of the amour shortly before they went abroad. Whether or not they knew of it while they and Claire were in daily intercourse with Byron, and housed close by him on the shore of the Lake of Geneva, may be left unargued. The three returned to London in September 1816, Byron remaining abroad ; and in January 1817 Miss Clairmont gave birth to his daughter named Allegra. The return of the Shelleys was closely followed by two suicides,—first that of Fanny Wollstonecraft (already referred to), and second that of Harriet Shelley, who on 9th November drowned herself in the Serpentine. The latest stages of the lovely and ill-starred Harriet's career have never been very explicitly recorded. It seems that she formed a con- nexion with some gentleman from whom circumstances or desertion separated her, that her habits became intemper- ate, and that she was treated with contumelious harshness by her sister during an illness of their father. She had always had a propensity (often laughed at in earlier and happier days) to the idea of suicide, and she now carried it out in act—possibly without anything which could be regarded as an extremely cogent predisposing motive, although the total weight of her distresses, accumulating within the past*~~

~~*two years and a half, was beyond question heavy to bear. Shelley, then at Bath, hurried up to London when he heard of Harriet's death, giving manifest signs of the shock which so terrible a catastrophe had produced on him. Some self-reproach must no doubt have mingled with his affliction and dismay; yet he does not appear to have considered himself gravely in the wrong at any stage in the transaction, and it is established that in the train of quite recent events which immediately led up to Harriet's suicide he had borne no part.*~~

~~*This was the time when Shelley began to see a great deal of Leigh Hunt, the poet and essayist, editor of The Examiner ; they were close friends, and Hunt did some- thing (hardly perhaps so much as might have been antici- pated) to uphold the reputation of Shelley as a poet — which, we may here say once for all, scarcely obtained any public acceptance or solidity during his brief lifetime. The death of Harriet having removed the only obstacle to a marriage with Mary Godwin, the wedding ensued on 30th December 1816, and the married couple settled down at Great Marlow in Buckinghamshire. Their tranquillity was shortly disturbed by a Chancery suit set in motion by Mr Westbrook, who asked for the custody of his two grandchildren, on the ground that Shelley had deserted his wife and intended to bring up his offspring in his own atheistic and anti-social opinions. Lord Chancellor Eldon delivered judgment towards 26th March 1817. He held that Shelley, having avowed condemnable principles of conduct, and having fashioned his own conduct to corre- spond, and being likely to inculcate the same principles upon his children, was unfit to have the charge of them. He therefore assigned this charge to Mr and Miss West- brook, and appointed as their immediate curator Dr Hume, an orthodox army-physician, who was Shelley's own nominee. The poet had to pay for the maintenance*~~

~~*of the children a sum which stood eventually at £120 per annum ; if it was at first (as generally stated) £200, that was no more than what he had previously allowed to Harriet. This is the last incident of marked importance in the perturbed career of Shelley ; the rest relates to the history of his mind, the poems which he produced and published, and his*~~

~~changes of locality in travelling. In March 1818, after an illness which he regarded (rightly or wrongly) as a dangerous pulmonary attack, Shelley, with his wife, their two infants William and Clara, and Miss Clair- mont and her baby Allegra, went off to Italy, in which country the whole short remainder of his life was passed. Allegra was soon sent on to Venice, to her father Byron, who, ever since parting from Miss Clairmont in Switzer- land, showed a callous and unfeeling determination to see and know no more about her. In 1818 the Shelleys— mostly, not always, with Miss Clairmont in their company—were in Milan, Leghorn, the Bagni di Lucca, Venice and its neighbourhood, Rome, and Naples; in 1819 in Rome, the vicinity of Leghorn, and Florence (both their infants were now dead, but a third was born late in 1819, the present baronet, Sir Percy Florence Shelley) ; in 1820 in Pisa, the Bagni di Pisa (or di San Giuliano), and Leghorn ; in 1821 in Pisa and with Byron in Ravenna; in 1822 in Pisa and on the Bay of Spezia, between Lerici and San Terenzio. The incidents of this period are but few, and of no great importance apart from their bearing upon the poet's writings. In Leghorn he knew Mr and Mrs Gisborne, the latter a once intimate friend of Godwin ; she taught Shelley Spanish, and he was eager to promote a project for a steamer to be built by her son by a former marriage, the young engineer Henry Reveley; it would have been the first steamer to navigate the Gulf of Lyons. In Pisa he formed a sentimental intimacy with the Contessina Emilia Viviani, a girl who was pining in a convent pending her father's choice of a husband for her; this impassioned but vague and fanciful attachment—which soon came to an end, as Emilia's character developed less favourably in the eyes of her Platonic adorer—produced the transcendental love-poem of Lpipsychidion in 1821. In Ravenna the scheme of the quarterly magazine Zhe Liberal was concerted by Byron and Shelley, the latter being principally interested in it with a view to benefiting Leigh Hunt by such an association with Byron. In Pisa Byron and Shelley were very constantly together, having in their company at one time or another Captain Medwin (cousin and schoolfellow of Shelley, and one of his biographers), Lieutenant and Mrs Williams, to both of whom our poet was very warmly attached, and Captain Trelawny, the adventurous and romantic-natured seaman who has left important and interesting reminiscences of this period. Byron admired very highly the generous, unworldly, and enthusiastic character of Shelley, and set some~~

~~value on his writings; Shelley half-worshipped Byron as a poet, and was anxious, but in some conjunctures by no means able, to respect him asa man. In Pisa he knew also Prince Alexander Mavrocordato, one of the pioneers of Grecian insurrection and freedom ; the glorious cause fired Shelley, and he wrote the drama of Hellas~~

~~1821).~~

~~The last residence of Shelley was the Casa Magni, a bare and exposed dwelling on the Gulf of Spezia. He and his wife, with the Williamses, went there at the end of April 1822, to spend the summer, which proved an arid and scorching one. Shelley and Williams, both of them insatiably fond of boating, had a small schooner named the "Don Juan" built at Genoa after a design which Williams had procured from a naval friend, and which was the reverse of safe. They received her on 12th May, found her rapid and alert, and on Ist July started in her to~~

~~PHL. Y~~

~~Leghorn, to meet Leigh Hunt, whose arrival in Italy had just been notified. After doing his best to set things going comfortably between Byron and Hunt, Shelley returned on board with Williams on 8th J uly. It wasa day of dark, louring, stifling heat. Trelawny took leave of his two friends, and about half-past six in the evening found him- self startled from a doze by a frightful turmoil of storm. The "Don Juan" had by this time made Via Reggio; she was not to be seen, though other vessels which had sailed about the same time were still discernible, Shelley, Williams, and their only companion, a sailor-boy, perished in the squall. The exact nature of the catastrophe was from the first regarded as somewhat disputable, but it is only of late years (1875) that it has been keenly debated. The condition of the "Don Juan" when recovered did not favour any assumption that she had capsized in a heavy sea—rather that she had been run down by some other vessel, a felucca or fishing-smack. In the absence of any counter-evidence this would be supposed to have occurred by accident; but a rumour, not strictly verified and certainly not refuted, exists that an aged Italian seaman on his deathbed confessed that he had been one of the crew of the fatal felucca, and that the collision was intentional, as the men had plotted to steal a sum of money supposed~~

~~*to be on the " Don Juan," in charge of Lord Byron. In fact there was a moderate sum there, but Byron had neither embarked nor intended to embark. This may perhaps be the true account of the tragedy ; at any rate Trelawny, the best possible authority on the subject, accepted it as true. He it was who laboriously tracked out the shore-washed corpses of Shelley and Williams, and who undertook the burning of them, after the ancient Greek fashion, on the shore near Via Reggio, on the 15th and 16th of August. The great poet's ashes were then collected, and buried in the new Protestant cemetery in Rome. He was, at the time of his untimely death, within a month of completing the thirtieth year of his age—a surprising example of rich poetic achievement for so young a man.*~~

~~*The character of Shelley can be considered according to two different standards of estimation. We can estimate the original motive forces in his character ; or we can form an opinion of his actions, and thence put a certain construction upon his personal qualities. We will first try the latter method. It cannot be denied by his admirers and eulogists, and is abundantly clear to his censors, that his actions were in some considerable degree abnormal, dangerous to the settled basis of society, and marked by headstrong and undutiful presumption, But it is remarkable that, even:among the censors of his conduct, many persons are none the less impressed by the beauty of his character; and this leads us back to our first point—the original motive forces in that. Here we find enthusiasm, fervour, courage (moral and physical), an unbounded readiness to act upon what he considered right principle, however inconvenient or disastrous the consequences to himself, sweetness and indulgence towards others, extreme gener- osity, and the principle of love for humankind in abundance and superabundance. He respected the truth, such as he conceived it to be, in spiritual or speculative matters, and respected no con- struction of the truth which came to him recommended by human authority. No man had more hatred or contempt of custom and prescription ; no one had a more authentic or vivid sense of uni- versal charity. The same radiant enthusjasm which appeared in his poetry as idealism stamped his speculation with the conception of perfectibility and his character with loving emotion.*~~

~~*In person Shelley was attractive, winning, and alinost beautiful, but not to be called handsome. HIs height was nearly 5 feet 11; he was slim, agile, and strong, with something of a stoop ; his complexion brilliant, his hair abundant and wavy, dark-brown but early beginning to grizzle ; the eyes, deep-blue in tint, have been termed ‘ stag-eyes ”—large, fixed, and beaming. HIs voice was wanting in richness and suavity—high-pitched, and tending to the screechy ; his general aspect, though extremely variable according as his mood of mind and his expression shifted, was on the whole uncominonly juvenile. :*~~

~~*From this necessarily very slight account of the life of Shelley we pass to a consideration—and this too must be equally slender—of his works in poetry. Ifwe except Goethe (and for convenience’ sake leaving out of count any living writers, whose ultimate value*~~

~~*798*~~

~~*cannot at present be assessed), we consider Shelley to be the Supreme poet of the new era which, beginning with the French Revolution, remains continuous into our own day. Lord Byron and Victor HIugo come the nearest to Shelley in poetic stature, and each of them might for certain reasons be even preferred to him; Wordsworth also has his numerous champions. The grounds on which we set Shelley highest of all are mainly three. HIe excels all his competitors in ideality, he excels them in music, and he excels them in importance. By importance we here mean the direct import of the work performed, its controlling power over the reader’s thought and feeling, the contagious fire of its white-hot intellectual passion, and the long reverberation of its appeal, Shelley is emphatically the poet of the future. In his own day an alien in the world of mind and invention, and in our day scarcely yet a denizen of it, he appears destined to become, in the long vista of years, an inforining presence in the innermost shrine of human thought. Shelley appeared at the time when the sublime frenzies of the French revolutionary movement had exhausted the elas- ticity of men’s thought—at least in England—and had left them flaccid and stolid ; but that movement prepared another in which revolution was to assume the milder guise of reform, conquering and to conquer. Shelley was its prophet. As an iconoclast and an idealist*~~

~~*he took the only position in which a poet could advantageously work as a reformer. To outrage his contemporaries was the condition of leading his successors to 'triumph and of personally triumphing in their victories. Shelley had the temper of an innovator and a martyr ; and in an intellect wondrously poetical he united speculative keenness and humanitarian zeal in a degree for which we might vainly seek his precursor. We have already named ideality as one of his leading excellences. This Shelleian quality combines, as its constituents, sublimity, beauty, and the abstract passion for good. It should be acknowledged that, while this great quality forms the chief and most admirable factor in Shelley's poetry, the defects which go along with it mar his work too often—producing at times vagueness, unreality, and a pomp of glittering indistinctness, in which excess of sentiment welters amid excess of words, This blemish affects the long poems much more than the pure lyrics ; in 'the latter the rapture, the music, and the emotion are in exquisite balance, and the work has often as much of delicate simplicity as of fragile and flower- like perfection.*~~

~~*In the course of our biographical narrative we have men- tioned a few, but only a few, of Shelley's writings ; we must now give some curt account of others. Of his early work prior to Queen Mab—such romances as Zastrozzi and St Irvyne, such verse as the Fragments of Margaret Nicholson—we can ouly here say that they are rubbish. Alastor was succeeded (1817) by The Revolt of Islam, a poem of no common length in the Spenserian stanza, preaching bloodless revolution ; It is amazingly fine in parts, but as a whole somewhat long-drawn and exhaust- ing. This transcendental epic (for such it may be termed) was at first named Laon and Cythna, or the Revolution of the Golden City, and the lovers of the story were then brother and sister as well as lovers—an experiment upon British endurance which the publishers would not connive at. The year 1818 produced Rosalind and Helen, a comparatively weak poem, and Julian and Maddalo, a very strong one—demonstrating in Shelley a singular power of seeing ordinary things with directness, and at once figuring them as reality and transfiguring them into poetry. The next year, 1819, was his culmination, producing as it did the grand tragedy of The Cenci and the sublime ideal drama Prometheus Unbound, which we have no hesitation in calling his masterpiece. It embodies, in forms of surpassing imagination and beauty, Shelley's deepest and most daring*~~

conceptions. Prometheus, the human mind, has invested with the powers proper to himself Jupiter the god of heaven, who thereupon chains and torments Prometheus and oppresses mankind ; in other words, the anthropo- morphic god of religion is a creation of the human mind, and both the mind of man and man himself are enslaved as long as this god exercises his delegated but now absolute power. Prometheus, who is from of old wedded to Asia, or N ature, protests against, and anathematizes the usurper enthroned by himself. At last the anathema takes effect. Eternity, Demogorgon, dismisses Jupiter to unending nothingness. Prometheus is at once unbound, the human mind is free ; he is reunited to his spouse Nature, and the world of man passes from thraldom and its degradation into limitless progression, or (as the phrase goes) perfectibility, moral and material. This we regard as in brief the argument of Prometheus Unbound. It is closely analogous to the argument of the juvenile poem Queen Mab, but so raised in form and creative touch that, whereas to write Queen Mad was only to be an ambitious and ebullient tyro, to invent Prometheus Unbound was to be the poet of the future. Zhe Witch of Atlas (1820) appears to us the most perfect work among all Shelley's longer poems, though it is neither the deepest nor the most interesting. It may be rated as a pure exercise of roving imagination—guided, however, by an intense sense of beauty, and by its author's ee fineness of nature.

. =~ LOO

794

The poem has often been decried as practically unmeaning ; we do not subscribe to this opinion. The "witch" of this subtle and magical invention seems to represent that faculty which we term "the fancy"; using this assumption as a clue, we find plenty of meaning in the poem, but necessarily it is fanciful or volatile meaning. The elegy on Keats, Adonais, followed in 1821; the Triumph of Life, a mystical and most impressive allegory, con- structed upon lines marked out by Dante and by Petrarch, was occupying the poet up to the time of his death. The stately fragment which remains is probably but a small portion of the projected whole. The translations—chiefly from Homer, Euripides, Calderon, and Goethe—date from 1819 to 1822, and testify to the poetic endowment of

~~*Shelley not less absolutely than his own original compositions. From this list it will be readily seen that Shelley was not only a prolific but also a versatile poet. Works so various in faculty and in formas The Revolt of Islam, Julian and Maddalo, The Cenci, Prometheus Unbound, Epipsychidion, and the grotesque effusions of which Peter Bell the Third is the prime example, added to the consummate array of lyrics, have seldom to be credited to a single writer—one, moreover, who died before he was thirty years of age. In prose Shelley could be as admirable as in poetry ; of late years it has even been pretended—but we regard this proposition as worthy of summary rejection—that his best and most enduring work is in the prose form. His letters to Thomas Love Peacock and others, and his uncompleted Defence of Poetry, are the chief monuments of his mastery in prose ; and certainly no more beautiful prose—having much of the spirit and the aroma of poetry, yet without being distorted out of its proper essence—is to be found in the English language.*~~

~~*The chief original authorities for the life of Shelley (apart from his own writings, which contain a good deal of autobiography, if heedfully sifted and collated) are—(1) the notices by Mrs Shelley interspersed in her edition of the Poems, (2) Hogg's amusing, discerning, and authentic, although in some respects exaggerated, book ; (8) Trelawny's Records; (4) the Life by Medwin; and (5) the articles written by Peacock. Some other writers, especially Leigh Hunt, might be mentioned, but they come less close to the facts. Among biographical works produced since Shelley's death, by authors who did not know him personally, much the largest is The Real Shelley, by J. C. Jeaffreson (1885) ; it is controversial in method and decidedly hostile in tendency, and tries a man of genius by tests far from well adapted (in our opinion) to bring out a right result ; it contains, however, an ample share of solid information and sharp disquisition, The memoir by W. M. Rossetti, prefixed to an edition of Shelley's Poems in two forms of publication, 1870 and 1878, was an endeavour to formulate in brief space, out of the then confused and conflicting records, an accurate account of Shelley—admiring, but not uncandidly one-sided. There is valuable material in Lady Shelley's Shelley Memorials, and in Dr Garnett's Relics of Shelley ; and the memoir written by Mr Symonds, in the series English Men of Letters, is very agreeably and skilfully done.*~~

~~*While we write (November 1885) Prof. Dowden is engaged upon a life of Shelley, which may be expected to distance allits predecessors in authority and completeness, (W. M. R.)*~~

~~*SHELOMOH IBN GEBIROL. See Aviersron.*~~

~~*SHEM. See Noaw. Compare Semitic Lanauacss.*~~

~~*SHEMAHA, a formerly important but now insignifi- cant town in Transcaucasia, in 40° 38’ N. lat. and 66° 19’ E, long., on the Zagolovai, an affluent of the Peerssagat, which falls into the Caspian. It is situated in a moun- tainous, very picturesque country, covered with luxuriant vegetation, at about 2230 feet above the level of the Black Sea. In 1873 it had 25,087 inhabitants, of whom 18,680 were Tartars and Shachsevans, 5177 Armenians, and 1230 Russians. Some 300 Armenian families now pro- fess Lutheranism—the result of a mission first established at Shemaha about twenty years ago. Shemaha was the capital of the khanate of Shirvan, and was known to Ptolemy as Kamachia. Situated as it was on the high road from Europe to India, this old town must at one time have possessed very considerable importance, and evidence of the fact is found in the numerous ruins of large caravansarais, churches, and public buildings. About the middle of the 16th century it was the seat of an English commercial factory, under the well-known traveller Jenkinson (com- pare Russta, vol. xxi. p. 93), afterwards envoy extra- ordinary of the khan of Shirvdn to Ivan the Terrible. In 1742 Shemaha was taken and destroyed by Nadir Shah, who, to punish the inhabitants for their Sunnite creed, built a new town under the same name about 16 miles to the west, at the foot of the main chain of the Caucasus. The new Shemaha was at different times a residence of the khan of Shirvan, but it was finally abandoned, and in its place there stands now only a village called Akhsu, whilst the old town was rebuilt, and under the Russians became capital of the government of Shemaha. In recent times Shemaha has suffered greatly from earthquakes: in 1859*~~

~~*———$*~~

~~*SHE—SHE*~~

~~*it was shaken to its foundations, and in consequence the seat of the governor was removed to Baku; in 1872 (16th January) there occurred a still more terrible shock, from which the town has never recovered. Silk manufacture is the principal industry in Shemaha. In 1873 there were one hundred and thirty silk-winding establishments, owned mostly by Armenians. The industry has, however, since 1864 considerably declined.*~~

~~*The district of Shemaha (4426 square miles), corresponding to the ancient khanate of Shirvan, lies along the southern slope of the main chain of the Eastern Caucasus. It contains a popula- tion of 97,801 inhabitants (1873), of whom 8498 are Russians, 14,838 Armenians, 73,124 Tartars, 638 Jats (old Persian tribe), and 708 Jews. As everywhere in Transcaucasia, the number of males is considerably in excess over the females (100 to 81). The district occupies a sparsely-wooded mountainous region, com- pletely shut up on the north, and open to the dry, large, and mostly desolate valley of Kura on the south. The climate is generally healthy, rather dry and moderately warm; in the lower parts the people suffer from malarious fever. The annual rain- fall in Shemaha is 14°52 inches, the mean summer temperature 73° Fahr., winter 87°. The soil, mostly of the Tertiary forma- tion, is very vich and of considerable variety. This district occu- pies in Transcaucasia a foremost place in vine-growing and in the silk industry. The vine region, in the south-west of the district, is a long strip of land of breadth varying from 4 to 20 miles. The highest level of the vine is about 2500 feet above the sea. The plant is left unprotected in winter, and owing to the abundance of water occasioned by the melting snows and the heavy rains in spring, there is no need of irrigation. Accord- ing to a general survey made in 1875 there are in the district 3098 vineyards, occupying a total of 1754 acres. The other products are principally wheat, cotton, and rice. In 1875 the annual vintage at Shemaha was calculated at about 62,160 gallons. The best wine is that of Matrassy. The province of Shirvan, now the district of Shemaha, has been frequently the theatre of terrible struggles and bloodshed. It was conquered by the Persians in 1501 under Shah Ismail I., and it continued with brief interrup- tions to be a part of the Persian dominions until the fall of the Safawi dynasty.*~~

~~*Shemaha, the capital of Shirvan, was sacked in 1712 by the Lesghians; eight years later the town and the whole province were devastated by a certain Daghestani, Ala nd-Daulah, who was later recognized by Persia as the khan of Shirvan. In 1724 the khanate was taken by Turkey, but ten years later Nadir Shah of Persia reconquered it aftcr terrible ravages. On the departure of Nadir Shah soon afterwards Shirvan. enjoyed independence under the rule of Mahmud Seyyid, who rebuilt Shemaha. The Russians entered Shirvan first in 1723, but soon retired. In 1795 they captured Shemaha as well as Baku ; but the conquest was once more abandoned, and Shirvan was not finally annexed to Russia until November 1805 after the voluntary submission of its last khan Mustapha.*~~

~~*SHENANDOAH, a borough of the United States, in Schuylkill county, Pennsylvania, 12 miles north of Potts- ville, is the centre of a great coal district, more than half the total yield of the Schuylkill region being produced within 3 miles of the town. Among its buildings are fifteen churches, a theatre, and two public halls. It was founded in 1863, and its population (partly Welsh and German), which increased from 2951 in 1870 to 10,148 in 1880, is estimated at over 15,000 in 1886.*~~

~~*Shenandoah is also the name of a well-known tributary of the Potomac.*~~

~~*SHENDY, a town on the right bank of the Nile, about 130 miles south of Berber and 100 north of Khartim, which, while its present population does not exceed 2500, was previous to its destruction by the Egyptians in 1822 a place of some 50,000 inhabitants and a station on the great caravan route between Sennér and Egypt and Mecca. The terrible massacre perpetrated by the Egyptians was in revenge for the treacherous assassination by the native chiefs at Shendy of Ismail Pasha and his suite, who were first drugged and then burned to ashes with their huts. Shendy was the capital of a considerable district, and lies only 20 miles south of the ruins of Meroe,*~~

~~*SHENSTONE, Witttam (1714-1763), is one of the best-known minor poets of the 18th century. He owes*~~

~~*such distinction as he has at least as much to his choice of subjects and to the peculiarity of his life as to the felicity of his verse. Coming after a generation whose leading poets wrote for fashionable society, he shut him- self up in the country, tried to follow the life Arcadian, and wrote in the spirit of a recluse. He inherited the small estate of Leasowes, in the parish of Hales-Owen, Worcestershire. He was born at Leasowes in 1714, and after passing through Pembroke College, Oxford, retired there to realize Pope's ideal in the Ode to Solitude, turned his paternal estate into an elaborate landscape garden, and lived there till his death in 1763. From the time that the management of the estate fell into his own hands, "he began," Johnson says, "to point his prospects, to diversify his surface, to entangle his walks, and to wind his waters,—which he did with such judgment and such fancy as to make his little domain the envy of the great and the admiration of the skilful." From this it will be seen that he did not anticipate late sentiment in his love of natural scenery ; he was a true child of the Queen Anne time in his liking for 'Nature to advantage dressed." And it would appear from his letters that he was not a contented recluse, but was weakly desirous of the notice of the world in his Arcadian retreat. Still there is a certain air of sincerity in his references to natural beauty and grandeur. Burns wrote of him in the preface to his first issue of poems as a poet "whose divine elegies do honour to our language." Shenstone practised the elegiac form assidu- ously, and some of his elegies are not without a certain imposing pomp and dignity of language, but we may safely suppose that it was the sentiments rather than the expression that captivated the peasant poet. His Pastoral Baliads in Four Parts, one of his earliest compositions, is also one of his best, and from its use in selections of poetry for the young is much more generally known. The triple rhythm and the simplicity of the language are happily suited to the pastoral fancy, and there is not too much of the artificial diction and imagery of such poetry. Such lines as—Yet time may diminish the pain ; The flower, and the shrub, and the tree Which I rear'd for her pleasure in vain In time may have comfort for me—*~~

~~*come nearer Wordsworth's ideal of poetic diction than was common in the serious poetry of Shenstone's time. But his Schoolmistress, in the Spenserian stanza (published in 1742, and so relieved from any suspicion*~~

~~*of being an imitation of Thomson), is the poem by which he keeps a place in literature.*~~

~~*SHEPTON MALLET, a market-town of Somersetshire, England, is situated at the eastern extremity of the Mendip Hills, on the Somerset and Devon and the East Somerset Railways, 5 miles east of Wells and 20 south of Bristol. The church of Sts Peter and Paul, consisting of chancel, clerestoried nave, and aisles, is specially worthy of notice for its richly carved wooden roof and the ancient monu- ments of the Mallets and Gournays, formerly possessors of the manor. The grammar school was founded in 1677, and there are also a science and art school in connexion with South Kensington, a literary institute, and a mechanics' institute. The principal public buildings are the court-house (1857), the masonic hall (1861), the prison, and the district hospital (1880). The market cross, one of the finest in the county, 51 feet in height, erected by Agnes and Thomas Buckland in 1500, was restored in 1841. About the end of last century Shepton Mallet had important cloth manufactures, and stocking-knitting was also largely carried on. The brewing of ale and porter is now one of its principal industries, and it has also rope- works and brick and tile works. In the vicinity there are*~~

~~*granite quarries and marble, asphalt, and lime works. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 3572 acres) in 1871 was 5149, and in 1881 it was 5322.*~~

~~*Shepton, previous to the Conquest called Sepeton, was in the possession of the abbots of Glastonbury for four hundred years before it passed to Roger de Coureelle.' Afterwards it came into the possession of the barons Malet or Mallet, one of whom was fined for rebellion in the reign of King John. From the Mallets it went to the Gournays, but in 1536 it reverted to the crown, and. itis now included in the duchy of Cornwall. The town received the grant of a market from Edward II.*~~

~~*SHERBORNE, an ancient market-town of Dorsetshire, England, on the borders of Somersetshire, is situated on the southern slope of a hill overlooking the river Yeo, on the South-Western Railway, 6 miles east*~~

~~*from Yeovil and 118 south-west from London by rail. In 705 Sher- borne was made by Ina, king of the West Saxons, the seat of a bishopric, which in 1078 was removed to Old Sarum (Salisbury). Previous to its removal a great Bene- dictine abbey had been founded by Bishop Roger. The minster or abbey church of St Mary possesses a Norman tower, much altered by later additions, and transepts also originally Norman, but the greater part of the building is Perpendicular. It was restored in 1848-58 at an expense of over £32,000, chiefly contributed by Mr W. Digby and Lord Digby. Ethelbald and Ethelbert, elder brothers of Alfred, were buried behind the high altar of the church, which contains a number of interesting tombs and monu- ments. Near the minster are the ruins of the castle, originally the palace of the bishops. It was besieged during the wars between Stephen and Maud, and also during those of the Commonwealth, when it was held for the king in 1642 by the marquis of Hertford, and resisted a five days' siege by the earl of Bedford, but was in 1645 taken by Fairfax, when it was dismantled and reduced to ruins. The older portion of the modern mansion was built by Sir Walter Raleigh. Sherborne grammar school, occupy- ing the site of the abbey, was founded by Edward VI. in 1550, and holds a high rank among the public schools of England. Near the abbey close is the hospital of St John, dating from the 15th century. A literary institution, now called the Macready Institution, was established in 1850. The manor of Sherborne went with the bishop's see, till in the reign of Elizabeth it was conferred on Sir Walter Raleigh. After his attainder it was bestowed by James I. on his favourite Carr, after which it passed to the Digbys, the present owners. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 411 acres) in 1871 was 5545, and in 1881 it was 5053.*~~

~~*SHERIDAN, the name of an Anglo-Irish family, made illustrious by the dramatist Richard Brinsley, but promi- nently connected with literature in more than one generation before and after his. We take the family in chronological order.*~~

~~*1, THomas SHERIDAN, D.D. (1684-1738), grandfather thomas of the dramatist, was the first to connect the family with Sheridan, He is chiefly known as the favourite com-.D.*~~

~~literature. panion and confidant of Swift during his later residence in Ireland. But enough is left of his writing to enable us to understand the secret of his attraction for a man not easily pleased. HIs correspondence with Swift and his whimsical treatise on the Art of Punning! make perfectly clear from whom his grandson derived his high spirits and delight in practical joking. The Art of Pun- ning might have been written by the author of The Critic. Swift had a high opinion of his scholarship, and that it was not contemptible is attested by an edition of the Satires of Persius, printed at Dublin in 1728. When Swift came to Dublin as dean of St Patrick's, Sheridan was established there as a schoolmaster of very high~~

~~1 Published in Nichols's Supplement to the works of Swift, 1779.~~

~~repute,—a fashionable schoolmaster, with a small landed patrimony in Cavan, and a bishop in the family two generations back. HE so won upon the dean with his mirthfulness, wit, scholarship, good-nature, and honesty that ina short time no party made for the dean's enter- tainment was considered complete without Sheridan. Sheridan was his confidant in the affair of Drapier's Letters ; it was at Quilca,! Sheridan's country cottage in Cavan, that Gullwer's Travels was prepared for the press ; and this favoured friend was from an early period in their acquaintance one of his most confidential correspondents when ata distance. Through Swift's influence he obtained a living near Cork, but damaged his prospects of further preferment by a feat of unlucky absence of mind. HAving to preach at Cork on the anniversary of Queen Anne's death he hurriedly chose a sermon with the text, "Suffi- cient unto the day is the evil thereof," and was at once struck off the list of chaplains to the lord-lieutenant and forbidden the castle. In spite of this mishap, for which the archdeacon of Cork made amends by the present of a lease worth £250 per annum, he "still remained," accord- ing to Lord Orrery, "a punster, a quibbler, a fiddler, and a wit," the only person in whose genial presence Swift relaxed his habitual gloom. HIs latter days were not prosperous, probably owing to his having "a better know- ledge of books than of men~~

~~*or of the value of money," and he died in poverty and ill-health in 1738. The biographers of Brinsley Sheridan are disposed to dwell chiefly on the eccentricities of his ancestors, but both his grandfather and his father gave ample proof of more solid qualities than improvidence and wit. The original source of information about the schoolmaster grandfather is the father's Life of Swift (pp. 369-395), where his scholarship is dwelt upon as much as his improvident conviviality and simple kindliness of nature.*~~

~~*2, THomas SHERIDAN (1721-1788), son of the above, born at Quilea in 1721, had a more conspicuous career than his father. This ambitious father sent him to an English school, Westminster ; but he was forced by stress of circumstances to return to Dublin and complete his education at Trinity College. Then he went on the stage, and at once made a local reputation. There is a tradition that on his first appearance in London he was set up as a rival to Garrick, and Moore countenances the idea that Garrick remained jealous of him to the end. For this tradition there is little foundation. Sheridan's first appearance in London was at Covent Garden in March 1744, when, heralded in advance as the brilliant Irish comedian, he acted for three weeks in a succession of leading parts, Hamlet being the first. He did not appear in London again till ten years afterwards, when he was the leading actor for a season at the same theatre. In the interval he had been manager of a theatre in Dublin, had married a highly accomplished and well-born lady (see next notice), and had been driven from Dublin as a result of taking the unpopular side in politics. After his season in London he tried Dublin again, but after two years more of unremunerative management, he left for England finally in 1758. By this time he had con- ceived his scheme of British education, and it was to push this rather than his connexion with the stage that he crossed St George's Channel. He lectured at Oxford and Cambridge, and received honorary degrees from both universities in 1758 and 1759. But the scheme did not make way, and we find him in 1760 acting under Garrick at Drury Lane. His merits as an actor may be judged from the description of him in the Rosciad (1. 987) at this period. He is placed in the second rank, next to Garrick,*~~

~~*. 1 Spelt Quilea, it may be noted, in the second T. Sheridan's Life of wift.*~~

~~but there is no hint of possible rivalry. Churchill de- scribes him as an actor whose conceptions were superior to his powers of execution, whose action was always forc- ible but too mechanically calculated, and who in spite of all his defects rose to greatness in occasional scenes. Churchill never erred on the side of praising too much, and his description may be accepted as correct, supported as it is by the fact that the actor eked out his income by giving lessons in elocution. Boswell has some amus- ing remarks on his success with a distinguished Scotch pupil, who used his influence to get a pension for him from Lord Bute. Sheridan, however, attracted attention chiefly by his enthusiastic advocacy, im public lectures and books, of his scheme of education, in which oratory was to play a principal part. It is generally said that he traced all the evils and perils of the Commonwealth to the neglect of oratory. But this is a caricature. There was more serious substance in his indictment of the estab- lished system of education. His main count was that it did not fit the higher classes for their duties in life, that it was uniform for all and profitable for none ; and he urged as a matter of vital national concern that special training should be given for the various professions. Oratory came in as part of the special training of men intended for public affairs, but his main contention was one very familiar now,—that more time should be given in schools to the study of the English language. He rode his hobby with great enthusiasm, published an elaborate and eloquent treatise on education, and lectured on the subject in London, Oxford, Cambridge, Edinburgh, and other towns. In 1769, after a residence of some years in France, partly for economy, partly for his wife's health, partly to study the system of education there, he published a matured Plan of Education, with a letter to the king, in which he offered to devote the rest of his life to the execution of his theories on condition of receiving a pension equivalent to the sacrifice of his professional income. His offer was not accepted; but Sheridan, still enthusiastic, retired to Bath, and prepared a pronouncing Dictionary of the English Language, with a prosodial grammar. After his son's brilliant success he assisted in the management of Drury Lane, and occasionally acted. His Life of Swift, a very entertaining book in spite of its | incompleteness as a biography, was published in 1784. He died at Margate in 1788. The year before his death~~

~~*he had a prospect of realizing his scheme of education in Ireland, but the high official who had sought his advice died just as the old man eagerly reached Dubhn, and his hopes were disappointed.*~~

~~*3. FRANcrs SHERIDAN (1724-1766), wife of the above, Mrs and mother of the dramatist, wrote two novels of high ee repute in their day, Sidney Biddulph and Nourjahad, and 8°45*~~

~~*two plays, Zhe Discovery and The Dupe. We have it on the authority of Moore that, when The Rivals and The Duenna were running at Covent Garden, Garrick revived The Discovery at Drury Lane, as a counter-attraction, "to play the mother off against the son, taking on himself to act the principal part in it." But the statement, intrinsi- cally absurd, is inaccurate. Zhe Discovery was not an old play at the time, but one of Garrick's stock pieces, and Anthony Bromville was one of his favourite characters. It was first produced in 1763. So far from being jealous of the elder Sheridan, Garrick seems to have been a most useful friend to the family, accepting his wife's play — which he declared to be "one of the best comedies he ever read " — and giving the husband several engagements. Mrs Sheridan's novels and plays were all written in the last six years of her life. She died at Blois in 1766. Her maiden name was Chamberlaine. Her father was a dignitary in the Irish Church, her grandfather an English*~~

~~*Richard Brinsley Sheridan.*~~

~~*vita k iD A*~~

~~*baronet. Her marriage with the actor was the result of romantic circumstances, fully detailed in the Memoirs of Mrs Frances Sheridan, mentioned below.*~~

~~*4. Ricuarp Brinstey Burier Suerman (1751 — 1816), second son of Thomas and Frances Sheridan, was born in Dublin in September 1751: Moore records for the encouragement of slow boys that the future drama- tist was "by common consent of parent and preceptor pronounced an impenetrable dunce." The plain fact is that the expression occurs in a smart letter about him and his sister, written by his mother to a*~~

~~*schoolmaster. Mrs Sheridan wrote that she had been the only instructor of her children hitherto, and that they would exercise the schoolmaster in the quality of patience, "for two such impenetrable dunces she had never met with," One of the children thus humorously described was Richard Brinsley, and the age of the " impenetrable dunce" at the time was seven. At the age of eleven he was sent to Harrow. There, to please orthodox biographers, he gave no such sign of future eminence as is implied in taking a high place in school. Dr Parr, who was one of his masters, "saw in him vestiges of a superior intellect," but, though he 'did not fail to probe and tease him," by no harassing or tormenting process could he incite' the indolent boy to greater industry than was " just sufficient to save him from disgrace." But these facts about young Sheridan's determined indolence in the study of Latin and Greek should be taken in connexion with his father's peculiar theories on the subject of English education. The father's theories possibly did not encourage the son to learn Latin and Greek. Why, with his views on the unprofitableness of those studies, he sent his younger son to Harrow, is not obvious; but it was probably as much for social as for educational reasons. If so, the purpose was answered, for Sheridan was extremely popular at school, winning somehow, Dr Parr confesses, "the esteem and even admiration of all his schoolfellows," and giving a foretaste of his mysterious powers of getting things done for him by making the younger boys steal apples for his own private store and good-humouredly defying the masters to trace the theft home to him.*~~

~~*Sheridan left Harrow at the age of seventeen, having impressed his schoolfellows at least, who are sometimes better judges than their masters, with a vivid sense of his powers. It was probably his father's design to send him afterwards to Oxford; but the family circumstances were too straitened to permit of it, and the educationist, who had just then returned from France, and was about to launch his appeal to the king on behalf of his new plan of education, took his son home and himself directed and superintended his studies. What his plans were for his brilliant son's future we have no means of knowing, but the probability is that, if the projected academy had becoine an accomplished fact, he would have tried to make Richard Brinsley an upper master in some one of its numerous departments. 'There are traces of method in the*~~

~~*superficially harum-scarum Irishman's courses, and it looks as if he had intended both of his sons to help him in the magnificent project from which his sanguine tempera- ment expected such great things,—the elder, who had been with him in France, in what would now be called the modern side, and the classically educated younger in the ancient side. Meantime, pending His Majesty's resolution on the projector's offer, Brinsley, besides being trained by his father daily in elocution, and put through a course of English reading in accordance with the system, received the accomplishments of a young man of fashion, had fencing and riding lessons at Angelo's, and began to eat terms at the Middle Temple. His destination apparently was the bar, if fortune should deny him the more glorious*~~

~~*OF career of lieutenant in the new academy through which young England was to be regenerated.*~~

~~*As to how young Sheridan, with a cooler head to regulate his hot Irish blood, looked at his father's grand schemes, we have no record. But it is of importance to remember those schemes, and the exact stage they had now reached, in connexion with the accepted view of Sheridan's behaviour at this time, which represents him as a mere idler, hanging on at home like an ordinary ne'er- do-well, too indolent to work for any profession, simply enjoying himself and trusting recklessly to chance for some means of livelihood. The fact would seem to be that over and above whatever he did in the way of qualifying him- self for a regular career—which possibly was little enough—he began from this time with fundamentally steady purpose to follow the bent of his genius. After leaving Harrow he kept up a correspondence with a school friend who had gone to Oxford. With this youth, whose name was Halhed, he had not competed for school honours; but both had dreams of higher things ; and now they concocted together various literary plans, and between them actually executed and published metrical translations of Aristzenctus——an obscure Greek or pseudo-Greek author brought to light or invented at the Renaissance, a writer of imaginary amorous epistles. The two literary partners translated his prose into verse which has the qualities of lightness, neatness, and wit, and is in no respect unworthy of being the apprentice-work of Sheridan.*~~

~~*In conjunction with the same young friend he began a farce entitled Jupiter. It was not completed, but the fragment is of interest as containing the same device of a rehearsal which was afterwards worked out with such brilliant effect in The Critic. Some of the dialogue is very much in Sheridan's mature manner. It would seem indeed that at this time, idle as he appeared, Sheridan was deliberately exercising his powers and preparing himself for future triumphs. Moore's theory is that his seeming indolence was but a mask; and extracts given from papers written in the seven years between his leaving Harrow and the appearance of Zhe Rivals—sketches of unfinished plays, poems, political letters, and pamphlets—show that he was far from idle. He was never much of areader ; he preferred, as he said, to sit and think—a process more favourable to originality than always having a book in his hand ; but we may well believe that he kept his eyes open, and his father's connexion with fashionable society gave him abundant opportunities. The removal of the family to Bath in 1771! extended his field of observation. Anstey's Vew Bath Guide had just been published and had greatly stimulated interest in the comedy of life at this fashionable watering-place.*~~

~~*Presently, too, already a favourite in Bath society from his charming manners and his skill as a writer of graceful and witty verses, the youth played a part in the living comedy which at once made hima marked man. There was in Bath a celebrated musical family—'"a nest of nightingales,"—the daughters of the composer Linley, the head of his profession in the fashionable town. The eldest daughter, a girl of sixteen, the prima donna of her father's concerts, was exceedingly beautiful, and very much run after by suitors, young and old, honourable and dis-honourable. In the latter class was a Captain Mathews, a married man; in the former, young Sheridan. Mathews had artfully won the girl's affections, and persecuted her with his importunities, threatening to destroy himself if she refused him. To protect her from this scoundrel's designs the younger lover, who seems to have acted at first*~~

~~*' Miss Lefanu corrects Moore's date of 1770, considering the difference important as bearing on Sheridan's education (ALemoirs, p. 348).*~~

~~*only as a confidential friend, conceived the romantic of escorting Miss Linley to a nunnery in France.) After performing this chivalrous duty he returned and fought two duels with Mathews, which made a considerable sensation at the time. The youthful pair had gone through the ceremony of marriage in the course of their flight, but Sheridan chivalrously did not claim his wife, kept the marriage secret, and was sternly denied access to Miss Linley by her father, who did not consider the professionless young man an eligible suitor. Ultimately, after a courtship romantic enough to have satisfied Lydia Languish, they were openly married in April 1773.*~~

~~*Sheridan's daring start in life after this happy marriage showed a confidence in his genius which was justified by its success. Although he had no income, and no capital beyond a few thousand pounds brought by his wife, he took a house in Orchard Street, Portman Square, furnished it "in the most costly style," and proceeded to return on something like an equal footing the hospitalities of the fashionable world. His wife—'the celebrated Miss Linley "—was a most popular singer, but he would not allow her to appear in public. She was to be heard only at private concerts in their own house, and her beauty and accomplishments combined with her husband's wit to draw crowds of fashionable people to their entertainments. Sheridan's conduct may have been youthful pride and recklessness, the thoughtless magnificence of a strong and confident nature ; all the same, it answered the purpose of deep-laid and daring policy. When remonstrated with by a friend, and asked how he found the means of supporting such a costly establishment, he is said to have answered— "My dear friend, it is my means." And so it proved, for his social standing and popularity helped to get a favour- able start for his first comedy, The Rivals, produced at Covent Garden on the 17th January 1775.*~~

~~*The S&ivals is said to have been not so favourably received on its first night, owing to its length and to the bad playing of the part of Sir Lucius O'Trigger. But the defects were remedied before the second performance, and the piece at once took that place on the stage which it has never lost. It was the last season but one of Garrick's long career, and the current story preserved by Moore is that the run upon Covent Garden was such as to alarm the veteran of Drury Lane and drive him to extraordinary*~~

~~exertions to counterbalance the attractions of the new play. This seems to be a myth, natural enough in the circumstances, but unfounded in fact, for we have contem- porary testimony ? that Drury Lane was never more crowded than during the last years of Garrick's management, when it was known that he intended to retire from the stage. There were crowded houses at both theatres. Sheridan, though bearing his brilliant success lightly, proceeded at once to take the tide at the flood. St Patrick's Day, or the Scheming Lieutenant, a lively farce, written it is said at the request of Clinch, in gratitude for his coming to the rescue of Sir Lucius, was producced in May. In the course of the year, with the assistance of his musical father-in-law, he wrote the comic opera of Zhe Duenna; and by the end of the year, with an eye to the profits of theatrical manage- ment, he was in negotiation with Garrick for the purchase of his share of Drury Lane. Zhe Duenna was the great theatrical success of the winter of 1775-76; it ran even longer than T'he Beggar's Opera had done—up to that time the longest run on record, The bargain with Garrick was completed in June 1776. The sum paid for the half-share was £35,000; of this Sheridan contributed £10,000.~~

~~1 The letter from Miss Linley to a female friend, giving a minute account of her persecution by Mathews and deliverance by Sheridan, is declared by Mrs Norton to be a " foolish forgery." —Aacmillan's Magazine, iti. 178. ? See Blackwood's Magazine, vol. xx. p, 26.~~

~~t~~

~~plan | None of his letters show where the money came from, and~~

~~much wonder has been expressed on the subject ; but after all it is not so very mysterious that the most brilliant dramatist of his time, in all the credit of unparalleled success, should have been able to borrow such a sum as this with the best theatrical property to offer as security. There is a tradition that Garrick advanced the money or let it lie at interest; anyhow, the loan could not have appeared at the time a very risky speculation. T'wo years afterwards Sheridan and his friends bought the other half of the property for £45,000.~~

~~*From the first the direction of the theatre would seem to have been mainly in Sheridan's hands. It was opened under the new management in February 1777, with a purified version of Vanbrugh's Relapse, under the title of A Trip to Scarborough. This is printed among Sheridan's works, but he has no more title to the authorship than Colley Cibber to that of Richard III. His chief task was to remove indecencies ; he added very little to the dialogue. Astonishment has been expressed that he should have fallen back on an old play instead of writing a new one. The fact is quoted among the proofs of his indolence. But the new manager, apart from the engagements of a popular man of fashion, probably found work and worry in his novel task of organization sufficient to leave him little leisure for composition. Vanbrugh's play was probably chosen for the simple reason that it suited his company. Possibly also he wished to make trial of their powers before entrusting them with a play of his own. The School for Scandal was produced little more than two months afterwards. Mrs Abington, who had played Miss Hoyden in the Z'rip, played Lady Teazle, who may be regarded as a Miss Hoyden developed by six months' experience of marriage and town life. The actors who played the brothers Surface had been tried in the Z'rip in opposite characters, Charles playing Townley, while Joseph played Tom Fashion. It looks as if shrewd managerial caution was responsible for the delay quite as much as indolence. The former may at least have been in Sheridan's mind the plausible excuse for the latter. There are tales of the haste with which the conclusion of The School for Scandal was written, of a stratagem by which the last act was got out of him by the anxious company, and of the fervent "' Amen" written on the last page of the copy by the prompter, in response to the author's "Finished at last, thank God!" But, although the conception was thus hurriedly completed, we know from Sheridan's sister that the idea of a "scandalous college " had occurred to him five years before in connexion with his own experiences at Bath. His difficulty was to find a story sufficiently dramatic in its incidents to form a subject for the machinations of the character-slayers. He seems to have tried more than one plot, and in the end to have desperately forced two separate conceptions together. The dialogue is so brilliant throughout, and the auction scene and the screen scene so effective, that nobody cares to examine the construction of the comedy except as a matter of critical duty. Buta study of the construction brings to light the difficulties that*~~

~~must have worried the author in writing the play, and explains why he was so thankful to have it finished and done with at last. After all, he worried himself in vain, for Zhe School for Scandal, though it has not the unity of The Rivals, nor the same wealth of broadly humorous incident, is universally regarded as Sheridan's masterpiece. He might have settled the doubts and worries of authorship with Puff's reflexion '" What is the use of a good plot except to bring in good things?" The vitality of a play depends mainly on its good things in the way of character, incident, and happy saying, and to a very limited extent on their relevance to any central plan.~~

~~Sea hab ay~~

~~The third and last of Sheridan's great comedies, The Critic, was produced in 1779, The School for Scandal meantime continuing to draw larger houses than any other play every time it was put on the Stage. The Critic is perhaps the highest proof of Sheridan's skill as a dramatist, for in it he has worked out, with perfect success for all time, a theme which, often as it has been attempted, no other dramatist has ever succeeded in redeeming from tedious circumstantiality and ephemeral personalities. The laughable infirmities of all classes connected with the stage, — authors, actors, patrons, and audience,— are touched off with the lightest of hands; the fun is directed, not at individuals, but at absurdities that grow out of the circum. stances of the stage as naturally and inevitably as weeds ina garden. It seems that he had accumulated notes, as his habit was, for another comedy to be called A ffectation. But apparently he failed to hit upon any story that would enable him to present his various types of affectation in dramatic interaction. The similar difficulty in his satire against scandal, of finding sufficiently interesting materials for the scandal-mongers, he had surmounted with a violent effort. This other difficulty he might have surmounted too, if he had had leisure to " sit and think " till the happy thought came. But his energies were now called off in a different direction. His only dramatic composition during the remaining thirty-six years of his life was Przarro, pro- duced in 1799—a tragedy in which he made liberal use of some of the arts ridiculed in the person of Mr Puff. He is said also to have written more of The Stranger than he was willing to acknowledge.~~

~~He entered parliament for Staffordin 1780. It was not a sudden ambition to shine on a wider stage after having gained the highest honours of the theatre. Ever since leaving Harrow he had dabbled a little in politics, had sketched letters in the manner of Junius, and begun an answer to Johnson's Taxation no Tyranny. But he had not made any public appearance as a politician until his acquaintance with Fox led to his appearing on a West- minster platform with the great leader of Opposition. Apparently he owed his election for Stafford to more substantial persuasives than the charms of his eloquence. He paid the burgesses five guineas each for the honour of representing them. It was the custom of the time. His first speech in parliament, like the first speech of a great parliamentarian of this century, between whose career and Sheridan's there are many striking points of resemblance and contrast, was a failure. But he persevered, spoke httle for a time and chiefly on financial questions, soon took a place among the best speakers in the House, and under the wing of Fox filled subordinate offices in the short-lived ministries of 1782 and 1783. He was under- secretary for foreign affairs in the Rockingham ministry, and a secretary of the treasury in the Coalition ministry. This was rapid promotion for a man who owed everything to his own talents, and yet not an excessive recognition of the services of such a speaker as he is described as having proved himself at this exciting period. In debate he had the keenest of eyes for the weak places in an opponent's argument, and the happy art of putting them in an irresistibly ludicrous light without losing his good temper or his presence of mind. In those heated days of parlia- mentary strife he was almost the only man of mark that was never called out, and yet he had not his match in the weapon of ridicule.~~

~~The occasion that gave Sheridan a chance of rising above the reputation of an extremely effective and_ brilliant debater into the ranks of great parliamentary orators was the impeachment of Warren Hastings. His speeches in that proceeding were by the unanimous acknowledgment of his contemporaries among the greatest delivered in that~~

~~generation of great orators. The first was in ior, son Burke's proposal that Hastings should be impeached. Sheridan spoke for three hours, and the effect of his oratory was such that it was unanimously agreed to adjourn and postpone the final decision till the House should bé in a~~

~~| calmer mood. Of this, and of his last great speech on~~

~~the subject in 1794, only brief abstracts have been preserved ; but with the second, the four days' speech in Westminster Hall, on the occasion so brilliantly described by Macaulay, posterity has been more fortunate. The reader should, however, be cautioned against accepting the version given in a collection of Sheridan's speeches published by a friend after his death. This long passed current as a genuine specimen of Sheridan's eloquence at its best, in spite of Moore's protest that he had in his Possession a copy of a shorthand writer's report, and that the two did not correspond. But Gurney's verbatim reports of the speeches on both sides at the trial were published at Sir G. Cornewall Lewis's instigation in 1859, and from them we are able to form an idea of Sheridan's power as an orator. There are passages here and there of gaudily figurative rhetoric, loose ornament, and decla- matory hyperbole such as form the bulk of the incorrect version; but the strong common sense, close argumentative force, and masterly presentation of telling facts enable us to understand the impression produced by the speech at the time.!~~

~~Sheridan's long parliamentary career terminated in 1819. He could not help being to the last a conspicuous figure both in society and in parliament, but from the time of the break-up of the Whig party on the secession of Burke he was more or less an "independent member," and his isolation was complete after the death of Fox. The Begum speech remained his highest oratorical achievement, By it he is fixed in the tradition of the House as one of its greatest names. But his opinions on other great questions were given with a force and eloquence worthy of his position. When Burke denounced the French Revolution, Sheridan joined with Fox in vindicating the principle of non-intervention. He maintained that the French people should be allowed to settle their constitution and manage their affairs in their own way. But when the republic was succeeded by the empire, and it became apparent that France under~~

~~*Napoleon would interfere with the affairs of its neighbours, he employed his eloquence in denouncing Napoleon and urging the prosecution of the war. One of his most celebrated speeches was delivered in support of strong measures against the mutineers at the Nore. When the Whigs came into power in 1806 Sheridan was appointed treasurer of the navy, but was denied the honour of admission to the cabinet. After Fox's death he succeeded his chief in the representation of Westminster, and aspired to succeed him as leader of the party, but this claim was not allowed, and thenceforward Sheridan fought for his own hand. When the prince became regent in 1811 Sheridan's private influence with him helped to exclude the Whigs from power. For his interference on this occasion between the regent and his constitutional advisers Sheridan was severely blamed. 'To judge fairly as to how far he was justified in his conduct as a matter of private ethics we must take into account his previous relations with the leaders of his party, a point on which Moore, one of the disappointed placemen, is somewhat reticent. Throughout his parliamentary career Sheridan was one of the boon conipanions of the prince, and his champion in parliament in some dubious matters of payment of debts. But he always resented any imputation*~~

- ~~*For a comparison of the two versions of the speech and an able*~~

~~*exposition of the qualities of Sheridan's oratory see Mr W. Fraser Rae's Wilkes, Sheridan, and Fox, 1874.*~~

~~*800*~~

~~*that he was the prince's confidential adviser or mouthpiece. A certain proud and sensitive independence was one of the most marked features in Sheridan's parliamentary career. After a coolness arose between him and his Whig allies he refused a place for his son from the Government, lest there should be any suspicion in the public mind that his support had been bought.*~~

~~*His last years were harassed by debt and disappoint- ment. At the general election of 1812 he stood for Westminster and was defeated, and turned in vain to his old constituency of Stafford. He could not raise money enough to win back their confidence. As a member of parliament he had been*~~

~~*safe against arrest for debt, but now that this protection was lost his creditors closed in upon him, and from this time till his death in 1816 the life of Sheridan, broken in health and fortune, discredited in reputation, slighted by old associates, so enfeebled and low-spirited as to burst into tears at a compliment, yet at times vindicating his reputaticn as the wittiest of boon companions, is one of the most painful passages in the biography of great men. Doubtless, in any attempt to judge of Sheridan as he was apart from his works, we must make considerable deductions from the mass of floating anecdotes that have gathered round his name. It was not without reason that his granddaughter Mrs Norton denounced the unfairness of judging of the real man from unauthenticated stories about his indolent procrastination, his recklessness in money matters, his drunken feats and sallies, his wild gambling, his ingenious but discreditable shifts in evading and duping creditors. The real Sheridan was not a pattern of decorous respect- ability, but we may fairly believe that he was very far from being as disreputable as the Sheridan of vulgar legend. Against the stories about his reckless management of his affairs we must set the broad facts that he had no source of income but Drury Lane theatre, that he bore from it for thirty years all the expenses of a fashionable life, and that the theatre was twice burnt to the ground during his proprietorship. Enough was lost in those fires to account ten times over for all his debts. HIs bio- graphers always speak of his means of living as a mystery. Seeing that he started with borrowed capital, it is possible that the mystery is that he applied much moro of his powers to plain matters of business than he affected or got credit for. The records of his wild bets in the betting book of Brook's Club date in the years after the loss of his first wife, to whom he was devotedly attached. The reminiscences of his son's tutor, Mr Smyth, show anxious and fidgetty family habits, curiously at variance with the accepted tradition of his imperturbable recklessness. Many of the tricks which are made to appear as the unscrupulous devices of a hunted and reckless debtor get a softer light upon them if we ascribe them toa whimsical, boyish, ungovernable love of fun, which is a well-attested feature of his character. But the real Sheridan, as he was in private life, is irrecoverably gone. Even Moore, writing so soon after his death, had to lament that he could " find out nothing about him." Moore seems to have made an imperfect, use of the family papers, and it is on record that Lord Melbourne, who had*~~

~~*undertaken to write Sheridan's life, always regretted having handed over his materials to the professional biographer. HIe died on the 7th of July 1816, and was buried with great pomp in Westminster Abbey.*~~

~~*There is, unfortunately, no complete authoritative biography of Sheridan, Mrs Norton, his granddaughter, questioned the accuracy of Moore's Life in many particulars, and announced her intention of writing a history of the Sheridans from the family papers, of which Moore had made very partial use. But she never*~~

~~*carried out the project. The current statements about the father and grandfather of the dramatist are inaccurate and misleading in*~~

~~*S IIE—S IIE*~~

~~*several important respects. The best account of them—making allowance for a slight bias of family pride—is to be found in the Memoirs of Mrs Frances Sheridan, by her granddaughter, the dramatist's niece, Miss Lefanu. There is an excellent sketch of Sheridan's political career in Mr W. Fraser Rae's Wilkes, Sheridan, and Fox, and Mrs Oliphant's Sheridan, in the "English Men of Letters" series, interprets his character with the luminous breadth and sympathy always to be expected from her. (W. M.)*~~

~~*SHERIF, or Suzreer. See Mxcca, vol. xv. p. 672.*~~

~~*SHERIFF. For the office of sheriff in England, see County. For his jurisdiction in the revision of voters, see REGIsTRATION. The position of the sheriff as an executive officer in the United States is very similar to that of the English sheriff. HIe is usually appointed by popular election. The marshals of the United States and their deputies have in each State the same powers in executing the laws of the United States as the sheriffs and their deputies have in executing the laws of the State.*~~

~~*So far as is known the sheriff, notwithstanding the Saxon etymology of his name (shire grieve or reeve), did not exist in Scotland before the beginning of the Norman period. In the feudal system he became the centre of the local administration of justice, the representative of the*~~

~~*crown in executive as well as judicial business, and was always a royal officer appointed by and directly responsible to the king. The earliest sheriffs on record belong to the reigns of Alexander I. and David I., and the office was common before the death of Alexander III. In many cases it had become hereditary, the most remarkable instance being that of Selkirk, where a De Sinton held it from 1265 to 1805. The ordinance of Edward I. in 1305 recognized most of the existing officers, but rejected the hereditary character of the office by a declaration that the sheriffs were to be appointed and removable at the discretion of the king's lieutenant and the chamberlain. The inveterate tendency of feudalism reasserted itself, however, notwith- standing various attempts to check it, and an Act of James II. shows that the office had again become here- ditary.*~~

~~*One of the consequences was that sheriffs ignorant of law required deputes to discharge their judicial duties. In the course of succeeding reigns, down to that of James VI., the jurisdiction of the sheriffs came to be much limited by grants of baronies and regalities which gave the grantees the right to hold both civil and criminal courts of less or greater jurisdiction to the exclusion of the sheriff.*~~

~~*The civil jurisdiction of the sheriff was originally of very wide extent, and was deemed specially applicable to questions relating to the land within the shire, but after the institution of the court of session in 1532 it became restricted, and all causes relating to property in land, as well as those requiring the action called declarator for establishing ultimate right, and most of those requiring equitable remedies, were withdrawn from it. Nor did it possess any consistorial jurisdiction, as its subjects (marriage, legitimacy, and wills) belonged to the officials of the bishop after the Reformation, when it was trans- ferred to the commissary courts, and at a later period to the court of session. Practically, therefore, the civil jurisdiction of the sheriff fell under the head of actions*~~

~~*concluding for payment of money and actions to regulate*~~

~~*the possession of land. The criminal jurisdiction of the sheriff was in like manner in its origin of almost universal extent. But this was first limited to cases where the offenders were caught in or shortly after the act, after-*~~

~~*wards to cases in which the trial could be held within forty days, and subsequently further restricted as the business of the justiciary court became more organized. The punishment of death, having by long disuse come*~~

~~*.to be held beyond the power of the sheriff, and the sta-*~~

~~*tutory punishments of transportation or penal servitude*~~

~~*SHE—SHE*~~

~~*never having been entrusted to him, his jurisdiction as regards crimes was usually said to be limited to those punishable arbitrarily, that is, by imprisonment, fine, or admonition.*~~

~~*As a consequence of the suppression of the Jacobite rising of 1745, after Ist March 1748 all heritable sherifiships were extinguished, and no sheriffship was to be thereafter granted either heritably or for life, or for any certain term exceeding one year, but this provision was not taken advantage of, and the office of sheriff-principal practically ceased, though that name is sometimes given to the sheriff-depute, 20 Geo. II. ¢. 43. The Act declared that there should be but one sheriff-depute or stewart- depute in every shire or stewartry, who was to be an advocate of three years' standing, appointed by the crown, with such continuance as His Majesty should think fit for the next seven years, and after that period ad wtam aut culpam. 'This period was extended by 28 Geo. IL. c. 7 for fifteen years, and thereafter (since 1769) the sheriff- depute has held his office ad witum aut culpam. Power was given to him by 20 Geo. II. c. 43 to appoint one or more persons as substitutes during his pleasure, for whom he should be answerable. At first no legal qualification was necessary and no salary paid, but gradually the shériff-depute delegated more legal business to the sub- stitute, and before 1761 it had become customary for the sheriff-depute to give him some allowance. In 17 87 he was placed on the civil establishment and paid by the crown ; in 1825 a qualification of three years' standing (now five years by 40 and 41 Vict, c. 50) as an advocate or procurator before a sheriff court was required (6 Geo. IV. ¢. 23) ; in 1838 he was made removable by the sheriff- depute, only with the consent of the lord president and lord justice clerk, and it*~~

~~*was made compulsory that he should reside in the sheriffdom, the provision of 20 Geo. II. ¢. 43, which required the sheriff-depute so to reside for four months of each year, being repealed (1 and 2 Vict. c. 119); and in 1877 the right of appointment of the substitutes was transferred from the sheriff-depute to the crown (40 and 41 Vict. c. 50).*~~

~~*While the sheriff-depute has still power to hear cases in the first instance, and is required to hold a certain number of sittings in each place where the sheriff-substitute holds courts, and also once a year a small-debt court in every place where a circuit small-debt court is appointed to be held, the ordinary course of civil procedure is that the sheriff-substitute acts as judge of first instance, with an appeal under certain restrictions from his decision to the sheriff-depute, and from him to the court of session in all causes exceeding £25 in value. An appeal direct from the sheriff-substitute to the court of session is competent, but is not often resorted to,*~~

~~*As regards criminal proceedings, summary trials are usually conducted by the sheriff-substitute ; trials with a jury either by him or, in important cases, by the sheriff- depute. The sheriff-substitute also has charge of the pre- liminary investigation into crime, the evidence in which, called a precognition, is laid before him, and if necessary taken before him on oath at the instance of his procurator- fiscal, the local crown prosecutor.*~~

~~*The duties of the sheriff-depute are now divided into ministerial or administrative and judicial. The ministerial are the supervision of the accounts of the inferior officers of the sheriffdom ; the superintendence of parliamentary elections ; the holding by him- self or his substitutes of the courts for registration of electors ; the preparation of the list of persons liable to serve both on criminal and civil juries; the appointment of sheriff officers and supervision of the éxecution of judicial writs by them ; and the striking of the "fiars." He has also to attend the judges of justi- ciary at the circuit courts for the county or counties over which his*~~

~~*jurisdiction extends. He is generally responsible for the peace of the county, and supervises the police establishment. He is ex officio*~~

~~*a justice of the peace and commussioner of supply. In addition to those general duties of sheriffs-depnte, particular sheriffs are attached to the Board of Supervision for the Relief of the Poor, the _& Board of Northern Lighthouse Commissioners, and the Scottish Fishery Board.*~~

~~*The judicial duties of the sheriff-depute are, as regards crimes, the trial of all causes remitted by the counsel of the crown for the trial by sheriff and jury, as well as summary trials if he chooses to take them. _ This now means most crimes for which a maximum of two years' imprisonment (in practice eighteen months is the*~~

~~*money, whatever may be the cause of action, with the exception of a few where the payment depends on status, all actions with*~~

~~*chancery. Formerly the jurisdiction of the sheriff was absolutely excluded after the institution of the court of session in four important classes of action—(1) relative to property in lands or rights in lands ; (2) requiring the use of pecnliar forms of action, : and suspension; (3) involving the exercise of the nobile oficium, a supreme equitable jurisdiction of the court of session ; and (4) for the determination of rights of status, as well as in many cases in which the proceedings rest on special statutes which gave an exclusive jurisdiction to the court of session. But large exceptions have been made by recent legisla. tion from this exclusion, By another series of statutes, for the most part connected with local administration, as the Road, Burial Grounds, Lunacy, Public-houses, and General Police and Education Acts, the jurisdiction of the court of session is excluded either ag an original court or a court of review, and the sheriff court has exclusive jurisdiction.*~~

~~*The courts which the sheriff holds are (1) the criminal court ; (2) the ordinary civil court ; (3) the small-debt court for cases under £12 in value (6 Geo. IV. c. 48); (4) the debts recovery court for cases above £12 and under £50 in value (30 and 31 Vict. c. 96); and (5) the registration court. His judgment in the criminal court is subject to review by the court of justiciary, and in "he ordinary civil court and the debts recovery court by the court ofsession. In the small debt court it is final; except in certain cases where an appeal lies to the next circuit court of justiciary. he sheriff- substitute may competently exercise all the judicial jurisdiction of*~~

~~*the sheriff, subject to appeal in civil cases other than small-debt cases. As regards his administrative functions he assists the sheriff generally, and may act for him in the registration aud fiars court, and he supcrintends the preliminary stage of criminal inquiries, consulting with the sheriff if necessary ; but the other administrative duties of the office are conducted by the sheriff- depute in person. The salaries of sheriffs-depute vary from £2000 to £500 a year, those of sheriffs-substitute from £1400 to £500.*~~

~~*There is a principal sheriff-clerk appointed by the crown for each county, who has depute clerks under him in the principal towns, and a procurator-fiscal for the conduct of criminal prosecutions for each county and district of a county, who is appointed by the sheriff with the sanction of the home secretary.*~~

~~*Besides the sheriffs of counties, there is a sheriff of chancery appointed by the crown, whose duties are confined to the service of heirs, with a salary of £500. (4. M.)*~~

~~*SHERLOCK, Tuomas (1678-1761), bishop of London, the son of Dr William Sherlock, noticed below, was born at London in 1678. He was educated at Catherine Hall, Cambridge, and in 1704 succeeded his father as master of the Temple. He took a prominent part in the Bangorian controversy against Hoadly, whom he succeeded as bishop of Bangor in 1728; he was afterwards translated to . Salisbury in 1734, and to London in 1738. He pub- lished against Collins's Grounds and Reasons of the Chris- tian Keligion a volume of sermons entitled The Use and Intent of Prophecy in the Several Ages of the World (1725); and in reply to Woolston's Discourses on the Miracles he wrote a volume entitled Zhe T'rial of the Witnesses of the Lesurrection of Jesus (1729), which in a very short time ran through fourteen editions. His Pastoral Letter (1750) on "the late earthquakes" had a circulation of many thousands, and four volumes of Sermons which he pub- lished in his later years (1754-58) were also at one time highly esteemed. He died in 1761. A collected edition of his works in 5 vols. 8vo, by Hughes, appeared in 1830.*~~

~~*XXI. — 101*~~

~~*SHERLOCK, Wiz11am (1641-1707), dean of St Paul's,*~~

~~*was born at Southwark in 1641, and was educated at*~~

~~*Eton and Cambridge (Peterhouse). In 1669 he became rector of St George, Botolph Lane, London, and in 1681 he was appointed a prebendary of St Paul's. In 1684 he published Zhe Case of Resistance of the Supreme Powers stated and resolved according to the Doctrine of the Holy Scriptures, an ably written treatise, in which he drew the distinction between active and passive obedience which was at that time generally accepted by the high church clergy; in the same year he was made master of the Temple. In 1686 he was reproved for preaching against popery and his pension stopped. After the Revolution he was suspended for refusing the oaths to William and Mary, but before his final deprivation he yielded, justify- ing his change of attitude in The Case of the Allegiance due to Sovereagn Powers stated and resolved according to Scripture and Reason and the Principles of the Church of England (1691). During the period of his suspension he wrote a Practical Discourse concerning Death, which became very popular and has passed through many editions. In 1690 and 1693 he published volumes on the doctrine of the Trinity which involved him in a warm controversy with South and others. He became dean of St Paul's in 1691, and died at Hampstead in 1707.*~~

~~*SHERMAN, a city of the United States, in Grayson county, Texas, 73 iniles north of Dallas, is a substantially built and flourishing place, with a court-house and a college. Its population, only 1439 in 1870, was 6093 in 1880 and has since increased to about 8000. The surrounding country is a cotton and grain district.*~~

~~*SHERWIN, Joun Keryse (1751-1790), engraver and history-painter, was born in 1751 at East Dean in Sussex. His father was a wood-cutter employed in shaping bolts for shipbuilders, and the son followed the same occupation till his seventeenth year, when, having shown an aptitude for art by copying some miniatures with exceptional accuracy, he was befriended by Mr William Mitford, upon whose estate the elder Sherwin worked, and was sent to study in London, first under John Astley, and then for three years under Bartolozzi—for whom he is believed to have executed a large portion of the plate of Clytie, after Annibal Caracci,*~~

~~published as the work of his master. He was entered as a student of the Royal Academy, and gained a silver medal, and in 1772 a gold medal for his painting of Coriolanus Taking Leave of his Family. From 1774 till 1780 he was an exhibitor of chalk drawings and of engravings in the Royal Academy. Establishing himself in St James's Street as a painter, designer, and engraver, he speedily attained popularity, and began to mix in fashionable society. His drawing of the Finding of Moses, a work of but slight artistic merit, which introduced portraits of the princess royal of England and other leading ladies of the aristocracy, hit the public taste, and, as reproduced by his burin, sold largely. In 1785 he succeeded Woollett as engraver to the king, and he also held the appointment of engraver to the prince of Wales. His professional income rose to about £12,000 a year ; but he was constantly in pecuniary difficulties, for he was shiftless, indolent, and without method, open-handed and even prodigal in his benefactions,—and prodigal, too, in less reputable directions, for he became a reckless gambler, and habits of intemperance grew upon him. He died in extreme penury on the 24th of September 1790,—accord- ing to Steevens, the editor of Shakespeare, at "The Hog in the Pound," an obscure alehouse in Swallow Street, or, as stated by his pupil J. T. Smith, in the house of Robert Wilkinson, a printseller in Cornhill.~~

~~It is as an engraver that Sherwin is most esteemed ; and it may be noted that he was ambidexterous, working indifferently with~~

~~either hand upon his plates. His drawing is correct, his line ex- cellent, and his textures are varied and intelligent in expression. Such of his plates as the Holy Family after Nicholas Poussin, Christ Bearing the Cross after Murillo, the portrait of the Marquis of Buckingham after Gainsborough, and that of Pitt occupy a high place among the productions of the English school of line-engravers. He also worked after Pine, Dance, and Kauffman.~~

~~SHETLAND ISLANDS. See Orknzy anp SHETLAND.~~

~~SHIELD. See Arms anp Armour, and HERALpRY.~~

~~*SHIELD, Witt1am (1748-1829), composer of English operas, was born at Swalwell, near Newcastle, in 1748. HIs father began to teach him singing before he had com- pleted his sixth year, but died three years later, leaving him in charge of guardians who made no provision what- ever for continuing his musical education, for which he was thenceforward dependent entirely upon his own aptitude for learning, aided by a few lessons in thoroughbass which he received from Charles Avison. Notwithstanding the difficulties inseparable from this imperfect training, he obtained admission into the opera band in 1772, at first as a second violin, and afterwards as principal viola; and this engagement he retained for eighteen years. In the meantime he turned his serious attention to composition, and in 1778 produced his first comic opera, The Flitch of Bacon, at the Little Theatre in the Haymarket, with so great success, that he was immediately engaged as com- poser to Covent Garden theatre, for which he continued to produce English operas and other dramatic pieces, in quick succession, until 1797, when he resigned his office, and devoted himself to compositions of a different class, producing a great number of very beautiful glees, some instrumental chamber music, and other miscellaneous com- positions. He died in London January 25, 1829, and was buried in the south cloister at Westminster Abbey.*~~

~~*Shield's most sueeessful dramatic compositions were Rosina, The Mysteries of the Castle, The Lock and Key, and The Castle of Andalusia. Asa composer of songs he was in no degree inferior to his great contemporary Charles Dibdin. Indeed Zhe Arethusa, The Heaving of the Lead, and The Post Captain are as little likely to be forgotten as Dibdin's Yom Bowling or Saturday Night at Sea. HIs vein of melody was inexhaustible, thoroughly English in eharacter, and always eonceived in the purest and most delicate taste; and hence it 1s that many of his airs are still sung at eon- eerts, though the operas for which they were written have long been banished from the stage. HIs Introduction to Harmony (1794 and 1800) eontains a great deal of valuable information ; and he also published a useful treatise, The Rudiments of Thoroughbase.*~~

~~*SHIELDS, Norra. See Tynemouts, within which borough the port is included.*~~

~~*SHIELDS, Sovuru, a seaport, market-town, and muni- cipal and parliamentary borough of Durham, is situated on the south bank of the Tyne, at its mouth, immediately opposite North Shields and Tynemouth, and on the North- Eastern Railway, 18 miles north-east of Durham and 9 east of Newcastle-on-Tyne. It is connected with North Shields and Tynemouth by steam ferries. The town possesses a spacious market-place, and some of the newer streets are wide and handsome, but the old street running along the shore is narrow and mean. Formerly salt was largely manufactured, but the principal industries now are the manufacture of glass and chemicals, and shipbuilding and ship refitting and repairing, for which there are docks capable of receiving the largest vessels. The North- Eastern Railway Company possesses extensive docks, and the port has a large trade in coal; but, owing to the fact that in the shipping returns of the United Kingdom it is included under the general title "Tyne Ports," it is impos- sible to give an accurate statement regarding the number and tonnage of vessels. The number of fishing vessels connected with the port in 1884 was 15, of 204 tons and employing 98 men. At the mouth of the Tyne there is a pier about a mile in length. A townsman of South*~~

~~*Shields, William Wouldhave, was the inventor of the life-*~~

~~*boat, and the first lifeboat was built there by Henry Greathead, and first used in a storm in 1789. The prin- cipal public buildings are the church of St Hilda, with a picturesque old tower; the town-hall in the market. place ; the exchange ; the custom-house 3 the mercantile marine offices; the public library and museum, which includes a large hall for public meetings and a school of science and art in connexion with South Kensington ; the high school, the grammar school, the marine school, the master-mariners' asylum, the Ingham infirmary, and the union workhouse. 'There is a pleasant marine park near the pier. On elevated ground near the harbour are the remains of a Roman station, where numerous coins, portions of an altar, and several sculptured memorial stones have been dug up. The site of the old station was afterwards occupied by a fort of considerable strength, which was captured by the*~~

~~*Scots under Colonel Stewart 20th March 1644. The town was founded by the convent of Durham about the middle of the 13th century, but on account of the complaints of the bur- gesses of Newcastle an order was made in the 43d year of HIenry III., stipulating that no ships should be laden or unladen at Shields, and that no "shoars" or quays should be built there. This early check seems to have been long injurious to its prosperity, for until the present century it was little more than a fishing station. It received a charter of incorporation in 1850, and is divided into three wards, governed by a mayor, eight aldernien, and twenty-four councillors. Jn 1832 it received the privilege of returning a member to parliament. The corporation act as the urban sanitary authority, and the town has a specially good water supply from reservoirs at Cleadon. The population of the municipal and_parlia- mentary borough (area 1839 acres) was 45,336 in 1871, and in 1881 it was 56,875.*~~

~~*SHIITES. See Sunnrres anp Sur'rres.*~~

~~*SHIIKARPUR, a British district in the province of Sind, Bombay presidency, India, with an area of 10,000 square miles, lying between 27° and 29° N. lat. and between 67° and 70° E. long. It is bounded on the N. by Khelat, Upper Sind Frontier district, and the river Indus ; on the E. by the native states of Bahawalpur and Jaisalmir 3 on the S. by Khairpur state; and on the W. by the Khirthar Mountains. Shikdrpur is a vast alluvial plain, broken only at Sukkur and Rohri by limestone hills. The Khirthar range attains an elevation of 7000 feet, and forms a natural boundary between the district and Baluch- istan, Extensive patches of salt land, known as kalar, are frequently met with, especially in the upper portion of Shikdrpur, and towards the Jacobabad frontier barren tracts of clay land and ridges of sand-hills, covered with caper and thorn jungle, form a poor but distinctive feature in the landscape. The desert portion of Rohri subdivision, known as the Registhdn, is very extensive. The forests (207 square miles) are situated on the banks of the Indus, mostly in the Rohri and Shikdrpur subdivisions. The Indus Valley State Railway runs through the district, and the Kandahar railway also goes through a part of it.*~~

~~In 1881 the population numbered 852, 986 (males 461,038, females 391,953), of whom 93,341 were Hindus, 684,275 Mohammedans, and 736 Christians. The chief towns are Shikarpur, Sukkur (population 27,389), Larkhana (18,188), and Rohri (10,224). The cultivated land in 1882-83 amounted to 764,488 acres, of which 108,636 were twice cropped. Cereals —chiefly rice, joar (millet), and wheat—form the principal crops; but a considerable area is also under pulses and oil-seeds. The chief manufactures are carpets and coarse cotton cloths. The total revenue raised in 1882-83 amounted to £234,792, of which the land contributed £189,869. Passing from the dominion of the caliphs, Shikarpur was overrun by Mahmud of Ghazni in 1025, and a little later was governed by the Suinras, the Sammas, and the Arghuns in succession. The Kalhora dynasty came into prominence in the 18th century, and was followed by the Talpur mirs, who annexed a part of the Durani~~

~~803~~

~~territory and incorporated it in the district. In 1848 Shikarpur passed to the British, and in 1852 the greater part of the Rohri subdivision was resumed from the mir of Khairpur, who had acquired it by fraud.~~

~~; SHIKARPUR, the chief town of the above district, 1s situated 18 miles west of the Indus, in a tract of low- lying country annually flooded by the canals from that river, It is a great entrepédt for transit trade between the Bolan Pass and Karachi. The population in 1881 num- bered 42,496 (males 22,889, females 19,607).~~

~~SHILOH, a town of Ephraim, where the sanctuary of the ark was, under the priesthood of the house of Eli. According to 1 Sam. iii. 3, 15, this sanctuary was not a tabernacle but a temple, with doors, But the priestly narrator of Josh. xviii. 1 has it that the tabernacle was set up there by Joshua after the conquest. In Judges xxl. 19 sq. the yearly feast at Shiloh appears as of mcrely local character. Shiloh seems to have been destroyed b~~

~~*he Philist; : 7 Y the hilistines after the disastrous battle of Ebenezer ees Jeremiah vi. 12 sq. The position described in Judges, loc. cit. (cf. Onomastica, ed. Lagarde, p. 152), gives cer- tainty to the identification with the modern Seilin lying Some 2 miles east-south-east of Lubbin (Lebonah), on the road from Bethel to Shechem. Here there is a ruined village, with a flat double-topped hill behind it, offering a Strong position, which suggests that the place was a strong- hold as well asa sanctuary. A smiling and fertile land- Scape surrounds the hill. The name Seiltin corresponds to Act in Josephus. LXX. has Syr4, SnAwu. The forms given in the Hebrew Bible (nw, 15) have dropped the final consonant, which reappears in the adjective s3ybwyy. On Shiloh in Gen. xlix. 10 see Jupaun.*~~

~~*SHIMOGA, or Suremoca, a district in the north-west of the native state of Mysore, Southern India. It forms a part of the Nagar division, and is situated between 13° 30' and 14° 38' N. lat. and between 74° 44' and 76° 5' E. long. It has an area of 3797 square miles, and is bounded on the N. and W. by the Bombay districts of Dharwar and N. Kanara, and E. and 8. by the districts of Chitaldroog and Kadur. Its river system is twofold ; in the east the Tungra, Bhadra, and Varada unite to form the Tungabhadra, which ultimately falls into the Kistna and so into the Bay of Bengal, while in the west a few minor streams flow to the Shiravati, which near the north-western frontier bursts through the Western Ghats by the celebrated Falls of Gersoppa, said to be the grandest cataract in India. Flowing over a rocky bed 250 yards wide, the river here throws itself in four distinct falls down a tremendous chasm 960 feet deep.*~~

~~*The western half of the district is very mountainous and covered with magnificent forest, and is known as the Malndad or hill country, some of the peaks being 4000 feet above sea-level. The general elevation of Shimoga is about 2000 feet; and towards the east it opens out into the Maidan or plain country, which forms part of the general plateau of Mysore. The Malndd region is very picturesque, its scenery abounding with every charm of tropical forests and mountain wilds; on the other hand the features of the Maidan country are for the inmost part comparatively tame. The mineral products of the district include iron-ore and laterite. On the summits of the Ghats stones possessing maguetic*~~

~~qualities are occasionally found. The soil is loose and sandy in the valleys of the Malnad, and in the north-east the black cotton soil prevails. Bison are common in the talék of Sagar, where also wild elephants are occasionally seen; while tigers, leopards, bears, wild hogs, sémbhar and chitdl deer, and jungle sheep are numerous in the wooded tracts of the west. Shimoga presents much variety of climate. The south-west monsoon is felt in full force for about 25 miles from the Ghats, bringing an annual rainfall of more than 150 inches, but the rainfall gradually diminishes to 31 inches at Shimoga station and to 25 inches or less at Chennagiri. There is no railroad in the district, but it contains 225 miles of roads,~~

~~The population in 1881 was 499,728 (males 259,296, females 240,432); Hindus numbered 470,678, Mohammedans 27,574, and Christians 1476. The only place with more than 10,000 inhabit- ants is Shimoga town, the. capital and headquarters, which is situated on the Tunga river, with a population of 12,040. Rice~~

~~is the staple food-crop of the district; the next in importance is sugar-cane ; areca-nuts are also extensively grown; and miscel- laneous crops include oil-seeds, vegetables, fruits, pepper, and cardamoms, Of the total area of 3797 square miles only 699 are returned as cultivated and 702 as cultivable. The chief manu- factures are coarse cotton cloths, rough country blankets or kamblis, iron implements, brass and copper wares, pottery, and jaggery. The district is also noted for its beautiful sandal-wood carving.~~

~~During the Mohammedan usurpation of Mysore from 1761 to 1799, unceasing warfare kept the whole country in constant turmoil. After the restoration of the Hindu dynasty Shimoga district repeatedly became the scene of disturbances caused by the mal- administration of the Deshasta Briéhmans, who had seized upon every office and made themselves thoroughly obnoxious. These disturbances culminated in the insurrection of 1830, which led to the direct assumption of the entire state by the British.~~

~~SHINTO. See Japay, vol. xiii. p. 581.~~

~~SHIP. The generic name (A. 8. scip, Ger. Schif', Gr. axdados, from the root skap, cf. "scoop ") for the invention by which man has contrived to convey himself and his goods upon water points in its derivation to the fun- damental conception by which, when realized, a means of flotation was obtained superior to the raft, which we may consider the earliest and most elementary form of vessel. The trunk of a tree hollowed out, whether by fire or by such primitive tools as are fashioned and used with singular patience and dexterity by savage races, represents the first effort to obtain flotation depend- ing on something other than the mere buoyancy of the material. The poets, with characteristic insight, have fastened upon these points. Homer's hero Ulysses is instructed to make a raft with a raised platform upon it, and selects trees "withered of old, exceeding dry, that might float lightly for him" (Od., v. 240). Virgil, glorifying the dawn and early progress of the arts, tells us, "Rivers then first the hollowed alders felt" (Georg., i. 136, il. 451), Alder is a heavy wood and not fit for rafts. But to make for the first time a dug-out canoe of alder, and so to secure its flotation, would be a triumph of primitive art, and thus the poet's expression represents a great step in the history of the invention of the ship.~~

~~Primitive efforts in this direction may be classified in the following order: (1) rafts—floating logs, or bundles of brushwood or reeds or rushes tied together ; (2) dug- outs—hollowed trees; (3) canoes of bark, or of skin stretched on framework or inflated skins (balsas); (4) canoes or boats of pieces of wood stitched or fastened together with sinews or thongs or fibres of vegetable growth ; (5) vessels of planks, stitched or bolted together with inserted ribs and decks or half decks; (6) vessels of which the framework is first set up, and the planking of the hull nailed on to them subsequently. All these in their primitive forms have survived, in various parts of the world, with different modifications marking progress in civilization. Climatic influences and racial peculiarities have imparted to them their specific characteristics, and, combined with the available choice of materials, have determined the particular type in use in each locality. Thus on the north-west coast of Australia is found the single log of buoyant wood, not hollowed out but pointed at the ends. Rafts of reeds are also found on the Australian coast. In New Guinea catamarans of three or more logs lashed together with rattan are the com- monest vessel,~~

~~*and similar forms appear on the Madras coast and throughout the Asiatic islands. On the coast of Peru rafts made of a very buoyant wood are in use, some of them as much as 70 feet long and 20 feet broad ; these are navigated with a sail, and, by an ingenious system of centre boards, let down either fore or aft between the lines of the timbers, can be made to tack. The sea-going raft is often fitted with a platform so as to protect the goods and persons carried from the wash of*~~

~~*the sea. Upright timbers fixed upon the logs forming the raft support a kind of deck, which in turn is itself fenced in and covered over.!_ Thus the idea of a deck, and that of side planking to raise the freight above the level of the water and to save it from getting wet, are among the earliest typical expedients which have found their develop- ment in the progress of the art of shipbuilding.*~~

~~*Whether the observation of shells floating on the water, or of split reeds, or, as some have fancied, the nautilus, first suggested the idea of hollowing out the trunk of a tree, the practice ascends to a very remote antiquity in the history of man. Dug-out canoes of a single tree have been found associated with objects of the Stone Age among the ancient Swiss lake dwellings ; nor are specimens of the same class wanting from the bogs of Ireland and the estuaries of England and Scotland, some obtained from the depth of 25 feet below the surface of the soil. The hollowed trunk itself may have suggested the use of the bark as a means of flotation. But, whatever may have been the origin of the bark canoe, its construction is a step onwards in the art of shipbuilding. For the lightness and pliability of the material necessitated the invention of some internal framework, so as to keep the sides apart, and to give the stiffness required both for purposes of propulsion and the carrying of its freight. Similarly, in countries where suitable timber was not to be found, the use of skins or other water-tight material, such as felt or canvas, covered with pitch, giving flota- tion, demanded also a framework to keep them distended and to bear the weight they had to carry. In the frame- work we have the rudimentary ship, with longitudinal bottom timbers, and ribs, and cross-pieces, imparting the requisite stiffness to the covering material. Bark canoes are*~~

~~*found in Australia, but the American continent is their true home. In northern regions skin or woven material made water-tight supplies the place of bark.*~~

~~*The next step in the construction of vessels was the building up of canoes or boats by fastening pieces of wood together in a suitable form. Some of these canoes, and probably the earliest in type, are tied or stitched together with thongs or cords. The Madras surf boats are perhaps the most familiar example of this type, which, however, is found in the Straits of Magellan and in Central Africa (on the Victoria Nyanza), in the Malay Archipelago and in many islands of the Pacific. Some of these canoes show a great advance in the art of construction, being built up of pieces fitted together with ridges on their inner sides, through which the fastenings are passed.? These canoes have the advantage of elasticity, which gives them ease in a seaway, and a comparative immunity where ordinary boats would not hold together. In these cases the body of the canoe is constructed first and built to the shape intended, the ribs being inserted afterwards, and attached to the sides, and having for their main function the uniting of the deck and cross-pieces with the body of the canoe. Vessels thus stitched together, and with an inserted framework, have from a very early time been constructed in the Eastern seas far exceeding in size anything that would be called a canoe, and in some cases attaining to 200 tons burthen.*~~

~~*From the stitched form the next step onwards is to fasten the materials out of which the hull is built up by pegs or treenails; and of this system early types appear among the Polynesian islands and in the Nile boats described by Herodotus (ii. 96), the prototype of the modern "nuggur." The raft of Ulysses described by*~~

~~*1 The raft of Ulysses described in Homer (Od., v.) must have been of this class.*~~

~~*2 See Capt. Cook's account of the Friendly Islands, La Pérouse on Easter Island, and Williams on the Fiji Islands.*~~

~~*ai WP*~~

~~*Homer presents the same detail of construction. It is remarkable that some of the early types of boats belong- ing to the North Sea present an intermediate method, in which the planks are fastened together with pins or trenails, but are attached to the ribs by cords passing through holes in the ribs and corresponding holes bored through ledges cut on the inner side of each plank.*~~

~~*We thus arrive, in tracing primitive efforts in the art of ship construction, at a stage from which the transition to the practice of setting up the framework of ribs fastened to a timber keel laid lengthwise, and subsequently attach- ing the planking of the hull, was comparatively simple. The keel of the modern vessel may be said to have its prototype in the single log which was the parent of the dug-out. The side planking of the vessel, which has an earlier parentage than the ribs, may be traced to the attempt to fence in the platforms upon the sea-going rafts, and to the planks fastened on to the sides of dug-out canoes so as to give them a raised gunwale.! The ribs of the modern vessel are the development of the framework originally inserted after the completion of the hull of the canoe or' built-up boat, but with the difference that they are now prior in the order of fabrication. Ina word, the skeleton of the hull is now first built up, and the skin, &c., adjusted to it; whereas in the earlier types of wooden vessels the outside hull was first constructed, and the ribs, d&c., added afterwards. It is noticeable that the invention of the outrigger and weather platform, the use of which is at the present time distributed from the Andaman Islands eastward throughout the whole of the South Pacific, has never made its way into the Western seas. It is strange that Egyptian enterprise, which seems at a very early period to have penetrated eastward down the Red Sea and round the coasts of Arabia towards India, should not have brought it to the Nile, and that the Pheenicians, who, if the legend of their migration from the shores of the Persian Gulf to the coast of Canaan be accepted, would in all probability, in their maritime expeditions, have had opportunities of seeing it, did not introduce it to the Mediterranean. That they did not do so, if they saw it at all, would tend to prove that even in that remote antiquity both nations possessed the art of constructing vessels of a type superior to the out- rigger canoes, both in speed and in carrying power.*~~

~~*The earliest representations that we have as yet of Egyptian vessels carry us back, according to the best authorities, to a period little short of 3000 years before Christ. Some of these are of considerable size, as is shown by the number of rowers, and by the cargo consist- ing in many cases of cattle. The earliest of all presents us with the peculiar mast of two pieces, stepped apart but joined at the top. In some the masts are shown lowered and laid along a high spar-deck. The larger vessels show on one side as many as twenty-one or twenty-two and in one case twenty-six oars, besides four or five steering. They show considerable camber, the two ends rising in a curved line which in some instances ends in a point, and in others is curved back and over at the stern and terminates in an ornamentation, very frequently of the familiar lotus pattern. At the bow the stem is sometimes geen to rise perpendicularly, forming a kind of forecastle, sometimes to curve backward and then forward again like a neck, which is often finished into a figure-head representing some bird or beast or Egyptian god. On the war galleys there is frequently shown a projecting bow with a metal head attached, but well above the water. This, though no doubt used as a ram, is not identical with the beak a jleur Peau, which we shall meet with in Phoenician and*~~

~~*1 Compare the planks upon the Egyptian war galleys, added so as to protect the rowers from the missiles of the enemy.*~~

~~*Greek galleys. It is more on a level with the proem- bolion of the latter.*~~

~~*The impression as regards the build created by the drawings of the larger galleys is that of a long and some. what wall-sided vessel with the stem and stern highly raised. The tendencies of the vessel to "hog," or rise amidships, owing to the great weight fore and aft unsup- ported by the water, is corrected by a strong truss passing from stem to stern over crutches, The double mast of the earlier period seems in time to have given place to the single mast furnished with bars or rollers at the upper part, for the purpose apparently of raising or lower- ing the yard according to the amount of sail required. The sail in some of the galleys is shown with a bottom as well as a top yard. In the war galleys during action it is shown rolled up like a curtain with loops to the upper yard.*~~

~~*The steering was effected by paddles, sometimes four or five in number, but generally one or two fastened either at the end of the stern or at the side, and above attached to an upright post in such a way as to allow the paddle to be worked by a tiller.*~~

~~*There are many remarkable details to be observed in the Egyptian vessels figured in Duemichen's Fleet of an Egyptian Queen, and in Lepsius's Denkmiiler, The Egyptian ship, as represented from time to time in the period be- tween 3000 and 1000 z.c, presents to us a ship proper as distinct from a large canoe or boat. It is the earliest ship of which we have cognizance. But there is a notice- able fact in connexion with Egypt which we gather from the tomb paintings to which we owe our knowledge of the Egyptian ship. It is evident from these records that there were at that same early period, inhabiting the littoral of the Mediterranean, nations who were possessed of sea-going vessels which visited the coasts of Egypt for plunder as well as for commerce, and that sea-fights were even then not uncommon. Occasionally the com- bination of these peoples for the purpose of attack assumed serious proportions, and we find the Pharaohs recording naval victories over combined Dardanians, Teucrians, and Mysians, and, if we accept the explanations of Egypto- logists, over Pelasgians, Daunians, Oscans, and Sicilians, The Greeks, as they became familiar with the sea, followed in the same track. The legend of Helen in Egypt, as well as the numerous references in the Odyssey, point not only to the attraction that Egypt had for the mari- time peoples, but also to long-established habits of navi. gation and the possession of an art of shipbuilding equal to the construction of sea-going craft capable of carrying a large number of men and a considerable cargo besides.*~~

~~*But the development of the ship and of the art of navigation clearly belongs to the Phcenicians, It is tantalizing to find that the earliest and almost the only evidence that we have of this development is to be gathered from Assyrian representations. The Assyrians were an inland people, and the navigation with which they were familiar was that of the two great rivers, Tigris and Euphrates. After the conquest of Pheenicia they had knowledge of Pheenician naval enterprise, and accordingly we find the war galley of the Phcenicians represented on the walls of the palaces unearthed by Layard and his followers in Assyrian discovery. But*~~

~~the date does not carry us to an earlier period than 900-800 B.C. The vessel represented is a bireme war galley which is "aphract," that is to say, has the upper tier of rowers unprotected and exposed to view. The apertures for the lower oars are of the same character as those which appear in Egyptian ships of a much earlier date, but without oars. The artist has shown the characteristic details, though somewhat conventionally. The fish-like snout of~~

~~the beak, the line of the parodus or outside gangway, the wickerwork cancelli,1 the shields ranged in order along the side of the bulwark, and the heads of a typical crew on deck (the zpwpeds looking out in front in the forecastle, an émiBarns, two chiefs by the mast, and, aft, the xeAevarys and xvPepvyrys). The supporting timbers of the deck are just indicated. The mast and yard and fore and back stays, with the double steering paddle, complete the picture.~~

~~But, although there can be little doubt that the Phcenicians, after the Egyptians, led the way in the development of the shipwright's art, yet the informa- tion that we can gather concerning them is so meagre that we must go to other sources for the description of the ancient ship. The Phcenicians at an early date con- structed merchant vessels capable of carrying large car- goes, and of traversing the length and breadth of the Mediterranean, perhaps even of trading to the far Cassi- terides and of circumnavigating Africa. They in all probability (if not the Egyptians) invented the bireme and trireme, solving the problem by which increased oar- power and consequently speed could be obtained without any great increase in the length of the vessel.~~

~~It is, however, to the Greeks that we must turn for any detailed account of these inventions. The HHomeric vessels were aphract and not even decked throughout their entire length. They carried crews averaging from fifty to a hundred and twenty men, who, we are expressly told by Thucydides, all took part in the labour of rowing, except perhaps the chiefs. The galleys do not appear to have been armed as yet with the beak, though later poets attri- bute this feature to the HHomeric vessel. But they had great poles used in fighting, and the term employed to describe these (vavmaxya)~~

implies a knowledge of naval warfare. The general characteristics are indicated by the epithets in use throughout the Iliad and the Odyssey. The Homeric ship is sharp (607) and swift (dxeta); it is hollow (xoiA7, yAadupy, weyaxyrys), black, vermilion-cheeked (wtAromdpyos), dark-prowed (xvavorpwpos), curved (xopwvis, dudiedicoa), well-timbered (éocehpos), with many thwarts (wodvLvyos, éxard{vyos). The stems and sterns are high, upraised, and resemble the horns of oxen (6pOoxpaipat). They present a type parallel in the history of the shipping of the Mediterranean with that of the vikings' vessels of the North Sea.

On the vases, the earliest of which may date between 700 and 600 3.c., we find the bireme with the bows finished off into a beak shaped as the head of some sea monster, and an elevated forecastle with a bulwark evidently as a means of defence. The craft portrayed in some instances are evidently pirate vessels, and exhibit a striking contrast to the trader, the broad ship of burden (dopris eépeia), which they are overhauling. The trireme, which was developed from the bireme and became the Greek ship of war (the long ship, vais paxpd, navis longa, par excel- lence), dates, so far as Greek use is concerned, from about 700 B.c. according to Thucydides, having been first built at Corinth by Aminocles. The earliest sea-fight that the same author knew of he places at a somewhat later date, —664 B.c., more than ten centuries later than some of those portrayed in the Egyptian tomb paintings.

The trireme was the war ship of Athens during her prime, and, though succeeded and in a measure superseded by the larger rates,—quadrireme, quinquereme, and so on, up to vessels of sixteen banks of oars (inhabilis prope magmtudinis),—yet, as containing in itself the principle of which the larger rates merely exhibited an expansion, a difference in degree and not in kind, has, ever since the revival of letters, concentrated upon itself the attention of

1 See Rawlinson, Ancient Monarchies, vol. ii. 1D LAG.

eH LP

the learned who were interested in such matters. The literature connected with the question of ancient ships, if collected, would fill a small library,

~~*and the greater part of it turns upon the construction of the trireme and the disposition of the rowers therein.*~~

~~*During the present century much light has been thrown upon the disputed points by the discovery (1834) at the Pireeus of some records of the Athenian dockyard super- intendents, which have been published and admirably elucidated by Boeckh. Further researches carried out by his pupil Dr Graser, who united a practical knowledge of ships and shipbuilding with all the scholarship and industry and acumen necessary for such a task, have cleared up most of the difficulties which beset the problem, and enable us to describe with tolerable certainty the details of construction and the disposition of the rowers in the ancient ship of war.*~~

~~*One point itis necessary to insist on at the outset, because upon it depends the right understanding of the problem to be solved. The ancients did not employ more than one man to an oar. The method employed in medieval galleys is entirely alien to the ancient system. M. Jal, Admiral Fincati, Admiral Jurien de la Graviére, and a host of other authorities have all been led to erroneous views by neglect of the ancient texts which overwhelmingly establish this as an axiom of the ancient marine—" one oar one mau."*~~

~~*The distinction between "aphract" and "cataphract" vessels must not be overlooked in a deseription of the ancient vessels, The words, meaning "unfenced" and "fenced," refer to the bulwarks which covered the upper tier of rowers from attack. In the aphract vessels these side plankings were absent and the upper tier of rowers was exposed to view from the side. Both classes of vessels had upper and lower decks, but the aphract class carried their decks on a lower level than the cataphract. The system of side planking with a view to the protection of the rowers dates from a very early period, as may be seen in some of the Egyptian repre- sentations, but among the Greeks it does not seem to have been adopted till long after the Homeric period. The Thasians are credited with the introduction of the improvement.*~~

~~*In describing the trireme it will be convenient to deal first with the disposition of the rowers and subsequently with the con- struction of the vessel itself. The object of arranging the oars in banks was to economize*~~

~~*horizontal space and to obtain an increase in the number of oars without having to lengthen the vessel. We know from Vitruvius that the "interscalmium," or space horizontally measured from oar to oar, was 2 cubits. This is exactly borne out by the proportions of an Attic aphract trireme, as shown on a fragment of a bas-relief found in the Acropolis. The rowers in all classes of banked vessels sat in the same vertical plane, the seats ascending in a linc obliquely towards the stern of the vessel. Thus in a trireme the thranite, or oarsman of the highest bank, was nearest the stern of the set of three to which he belonged. Next behind him and somewhat below him sat his zygite, or oarsman of the second bank; and next below and behind the zygite sat the thalamite, or oarsman of the lowest bank. The vertical distance between these seats was 2 feet, the horizontal distance about 1 foot. The horizontal distance, it is well to repeat, between each seat in the same bank was 8 feet (the seat itself about 9 inches broad). Each man had a resting place for his feet, somewhat wide apart, fixed to the bench of the man on the row next below and in front of him. In rowing, the upper hand, as is shown in most of the representations which remain, was held with the palm turned inwards towards the body. This is accounted for by the angle at which the oar was worked. The lowest rank used the shortest oars, and the difference of the length of the oars on board was caused by the curvature of the ship's side. Thus, looked at from within, the rowers amidship seemed to be using the longest oars, but outside the vessel, as we are expressly told, all the oar-blades of the same bank took the water in the same longitudinal line. The lowest or thalamite oar-ports were 8 feet, the zygite 4} feet, the thranite 54 feet above the water. Each oar-port was protected by an ascoma or leather bag, which fitted over the oar, closing the aperture against the wash of the sea with- out impeding the aetion of the oar. The oar was tied by a thong, against which it was probably rowed, which itself was attached to a thowl (ckadués). The port-hole was probably oval in shape (the Egyptian and Assyrian pictures show an oblong). We know that it was large enough for a man's head to be thrust through it.*~~

~~*The benches on which the rowers sat ran from the vessel's side to timbers which, inclined at an angle of about 64° towards the ship's stern, reached from the lower to the upper deck. These timbers were, according to Graser, called the diaphragmata. In the trireme each diaphragma*~~

~~supported three, in the quin- quereme five, in the octireme eight, and in the famous tessera-~~

~~SHie~~

~~conteres forty seats of rowers, who all belonged to the same ‘“‘complexus,”’ though each to a different bank. In effect, when once the principle of construction had been established in the trireme, the increase to larger rates was effected, so far as the motive power was concerned, by lengthening the diaphragmata upwards, while the increase in the length of the vessel gave a greater number of rowers to each bank. The upper tiers of oars- men exeeeded in number those below, as the contraction of the sides of the vessel left less available space towards the bows,~~

~~Of the length of the oars in the trireme we have an indication in the fact that the length of supernumerary oars (repivew) rowed from the gangway above the thranites, and therefore probably slightly exceeding the thranitic oars in length, is given in the Attic tables as 14 feet 3 inches. The thranites were probably about 14 feet, The zygite, in proportion to the measurement, must have been 104, the thalamite 74 feet long. Comparing modern oars with these, we find that the longest oars used in the British navy are 18 feet, The university race is rowed with oars 12 feet 9 inches. The pro- portion of the loom inboard was about one third, but the oars of the rowers amidship must have been somewhat longer inboard, The size of the loom inboard preserved the necessary equilibrium. The long oars of the larger rates were weighted inboard with lead, Thus the topmost oars of the tesseraconteres, of which the length was 53 feet, were exactly balanced at the rowlock.~~

~~Let us now consider the construction of the vessel itself. In the cataphract class the lower deck was 1 foot above the water- line. Below this deck was the hold, which contained a certain amount of ballast, and through an aperture in this deck the buckets for baling were worked, entailing a labour which was constant and severe on board an ancient ship at sea. The keel (tpdmis) appears to have had considerable camber. Under it was a strong flee keel (xéauvcpa), very necessary for vessels that were constantly drawn up on the shore. Above the keel was the kelson (Sptoxov), under which the ribs were fastened. These were so arranged as~~

~~*to give the necessary intervals for the oar-ports above. Above the kelson lay the upper false keel, into which the mast was stepped. The stem (eretpa) rose from the keel at an angle of about 70° to the water. Within was an apron (¢dAkis), which was a strong piece of timber curved and fitting to the end of the keel and beginning of the stern-post and firmly bolted into both, thus giving solidity to the bows, which had to bear the beak and sustain the shock of ramming. The stem was carried upwards and curved generally backwards towards the forecastle and rising above it, and then curving forwards again terminated in an ornament which was called the acrostolion. The stern-post was carried up at a similar angle to the bow, and, rising high over the poop, was curved round into an ornament which was called "'aplustre" (&paacrov). But, inasmuch as the steering was effected by means of two rudders (rnddAra), one on either side, there was no need to carry out the stern into a rudder post as with modern ships, and the stern was left therefore much more free, an advantage in respect of the maneuvring of the ancient Greek man-of-war, the weapon being the beak or rostrum, and the power of turning quickly being of the highest importance,*~~

~~*Behind the 'Saplustre," and curving backwards, was the "eheniscus " (xnvicKkds), or goose-head, symbolizing the floating powers of the vessel, After the ribs had been set up and covered in on both sides with planking, the sides of the vessel were further strengthened by waling-pieces carried from stern to stem and meeting in front of the stern-post. These were further strengthened with Aeditierial balks of timber, the lower waling-pieces meeting about the water-level and prolonged into a sharp three-toothed spur, of which the middle tooth was the longest. This was covered with hard metal (generally bronze) and formed the beak. The whole structure of the beak projected about 10 feet beyond the stern- post. Above it, but projecting much less beyond the stern-post, was the 'proembolion " (mpoeuBédrtoy), or second beak, in which the prolongation of the upper set of waling-pieces met. This was generally fashioned into the figure of a ram's head, also covered with metal ; and sometimes again between this and the beak the second line of waling-pieces met in another metal boss called the mpoeuBodis. These bosses, when a vessel was rammed, completed the work of destruction begun by the sharp beak at the water-level, giving a racking blow which caused it to heel over and so eased it*~~

~~*off the beak, and releasing the latter before the weight of the sinking vessel could come upon it. At the point where the pro- longation of the second and third waling-pieces began to converge inwards towards the stem on either side of the vessel stout eatheads (emwrides) projected, which were of use, not only as supports for the anchors, but also as a means of inflicting damage on the upper part of an enemy's vessel, while protecting the side gangways of its own and the banks of oars that worked under them. The catheads were strengthened by strong balks of timber, which were firmly bolted to them under either extremity and both within and without, and ran to the ship's side. Above the curvature of the upper waling-pieces into the mpoeu@daioy were the cheeks of the vessel, generally painted red, and in the upper part of these the*~~

~~*807*~~

~~*eyes (6p@aAol), answering to our hawse holes, through which ran the cables for the anchors. the level of the thranitic benches, projected a gangway (mdpodos) supported by brackets (Biaxa) springing from the upper waling- plece, and resting against the ribs of the vessel. was of about 18 to 24 inches, which gave a space, increased to about 3 feet by the inward curve of the prolongation of the ribs to form supports for the deck, for a passage on either side of the vessel, This gangway was planked in along its outer side so as to afford protection to the seamen and marines, who could pass along its whole length without impeding the rowers. Here, in action, the sailors were posted as light-armed troops, and when needed could use the long supernumerary oars (repivew) mentioned above, The ribs, prolonged upwards upon an inward curve, supported on their upper ends the cross beams (orpwrfpes) which tied the two sides of the vessel together and carried the deck. Inthe cataphract class these took the place of the thwarts ((ya) which in the earlier vessels, at a lower level, yoked together the sides of the vessel, and formed also benches for the rowers to sit on, from which the latter had their name (Cvyirat), having been the uppermost tier of oarsmen in the bireme; while those who sat behind and below them in the hold of the vessel were called aAauira: or OaAduakes (from dAapos). In the trireme the additional upper tier was named from the elevated bench (pavos) on which they were placed (Opavira:). On the deck were stationed the marines (€riBarau), fighting men in heavy*~~

~~armour, few in number in the Attic trireme in its palmy days, but many in the Roman quinquereme, when the ramming tactics were antiquated, and wherever, as in the great battles in the harbour at Syracuse, land tactics took the place of the maritime skill which gave victory to the ram in the open sea, The space occupied by the rowers was termed &yxwmov. Beyond this, fore and aft, were the mapeteipéoiat, or parts outside the rowers. These occupied 11 feet of the bows and 14 feet in the stern. In the fore part was the forecastle, with its raised deck, on which was stationed the mpwpebs with his men. In the stern the decks (tpi) rose in two or three gradations, upon which was a kind of deck-house for the captain and a seat for the steerer (kuBepyitns), who steered by means of ropes attached to the tillers fixed in the upper part of the paddles, which, in later times at least, ran over wheels (rpox:Ala.), giving him the power of changing his vessel's course with great rapidity. Behind the deck-house rose the flagstaff, on which was hoisted the pennant, and from which probably signals were given in the case of an admiral's ship. On either side of the deck ran a balustrade (cancellt), which was covered for protection during action with felt (ciliciwm, mapapptmara Tpixivd) or canvas (m. Aevkd). Above was stretched a strong awning of hide (kardBaAnua), as a protection against grappling irons and missiles of all kinds. In Roman vessels towers were carried up fore and aft from which darts could be showered on the enemy's deck ; the heavy corvus or boarding bridge swung sus- pended by a chain near the bows ; and the ponderous 5éAgis hung at the ends of the yards ready to fall ona vessel that came near enough alongside. But these were later inventions and for larger ships. The Attic trireme was built light for speed and for ramming purposes. Her dimensions, so far as we can gather them from the scattered notices of antiquity, were probably approximately as follows :—length of rowing space (€yxwmoy) 98 feet ; bows 11 feet 3 stern 14 feet; total 118 feet; add 10 feet for the beak. The breadth at the watcr-line is calculated at 14 feet, and above at the broadest part 18 feet, exelusive of the gangways ; thespace between the diaphragmata mentioned above was 7 feet. The deck was 11 feet above the water-line and the draught about 8 to 9 feet. All the Attic triremes appear to have been built upon the same model, and their gear was interchangeable. The Athenians had a peculiar system of girding the ships with long cables (sro(éuara), each trireme having two or more, which, passing through eyeholes in front of the stern-post, ran all~~

~~round the vessel lengthwise immedi- ately under the waling-pieces. They were fastened at the stern and tightened up with levers. These cables, by shrinking as soon as they were wet, tightened the whole fabric of the vessel, and in action, in all probability, relieved the hull from part of the shock of ramming, the strain of which would be sustained by the waling-pieces convergent in the beaks. These rope-girdles are not to be confused with the process of undergirding or frapping, such as is narrated of the vessel in which St Paul was being carried to Italy. The trireme appears to have had three masts. The mainmast carried square sails, probably two in number. The foremast and the mizen carried lateen sails. In action the Greeks did not use sails, and everything that could be lowered was stowed below. The mainmasts and larger sails were often left ashore if a conflict was expected. The crew of the Attic trireme consisted of from 200 to 225 men in all. Of these 174 were rowers,—54 on the lower bank (thalamites), 58 on the middle bank (zygites), and 62 on the upper bank (thranites),—the upper oars being more numerous because of the contraction of the space available for the lower tiers near the bow and stern. Besides the rowers were about 10 marines (émiBdra:) and 20 seamen. The officers were the trierarch and next~~

~~to him the helmsman (xuBepyqrns), who was the navigating officer of the trireme. Lach tier of rowers had its captain (oroxapxés). There were also the captain of the forecastle (xpwpevs), the "keleustes" who gave the time to the rowers, and the ship's piper (rpinpavdys). The rowers descended into the seven-foot space between the diaphragmata and took their placcs in regular order, beginning with the thalamites. Thc economy of space was such that, as Cicero remarks, there was not room for one man more.~~

~~The improvement made in the build of their vessels by the Corinthian and Syracusan shipwrights, by which the bows were so much strengthened that they were able to meet the Athenian attack stem on (zpooPody), caused a change of tactics, and gave an impetus to the building of larger vessels—quadriremes and quinqueremes—in which increased oar-power was available for the propulsion of the heavier weights.~~

~~*In principle these vessels were only expansions of the trireme, so far as the disposition of the rowers was concerned, but the speed could not have increased in pro- portion to the weight, and hence arose the variety of contrivances which superseded the ramming tactics of the days of Phormio. In the century that succeeded the close of the Peloponnesian War the fashion of building big vessels became prevalent. We hear of various numbers of banks of oars up to sixteen (éxxaudexypys) — the big vessel of Demetrius Poliorcetes. The famous tesseraconteres or forty-banked vessel of Ptolemy Philo- pator was in reality nothing more than a costly and ingenious toy, and never of any practical use. The fact, however, of its construction shows the extent to which the shipwright's art had been developed among the ancients.*~~

~~*The Romans, who developed their naval power during the First Punic War, were deficient in naval construction till they learnt the art from their enemies the Cartha- ginians. They copied a quinquereme which had drifted on to the coast, and, with crews taught to row on frames set up on dry land, manned a fleet which we are told was built in sixty days from the time the trees were cut down. After the Punic War, in which the use of boarding tactics gave the Romans command of the sea, the larger rates — quinqueremes, hexiremes, octiremes — continued in use until at Actium tlie fate of the big vessels was sealed by the victory of the light Liburnian galleys. The larger classes, though still employed as guardships for some time, fell into disuse, and the art of building them and the knowledge of their interior arrangements were lost.*~~

~~*Table of Measurements, &c., after Graser.*~~

~~*Trireme. |Quinquereme.|Tesseraconteres. Length, exclusive of beak.| (?) 149 ft.1] 168 ft. 420 ft. Beam, greatest ……..|0. 3. 26 ,, moe, Passage between di:adpdy-*~~

~~*[WercG56 Goocobeobcnecooeeoneonus Uw Wit op 49 ,, PE cere er costae x coneeee 84, Ieee 2005. Tons measurement…….. (2) 232 534 11,320 (?) Number of rowers…….. 174 310 4,054 Crew, total complement…| 225 375 7,500*~~

~~*Medieval Ships.—It is not at present possible to trace in its successive stages the transition from the ancient ship of war to the medizval galley. The sailing vessels of the time of the early Roman empire, such as that in which St Paul suffered shipwreck or the great merchantman described by Lucian, were the direct precursors, not only of the mediaval merchant vessels, but also of the large sailing vessels which, after the invention of gunpowder, and the consequent necessity of carrying marine artillery, superseded the long low galleys propelled by oars. The battle of Actium gave the death-blow to the ancient type of vessel with its many banks of oars. The light*~~

~~*1 Taking the interscalmium at 4 feet ; but this does not agree with Vitruvius,*~~

~~*who gives 2 cubits.*~~

~~*Liburnian galleys which, though fully decked, were aphract, and, according to Lucan's testimony (bk. lll.),*~~

~~*Ordine content gemino crevisse Liburne,*~~

~~*had only two banks of oars, were biremes. This appar- ently became the type of Roman war galleys ; and, though the old name trireme survived, its meaning became simply 'man of war," and did not any longer imply three banks of oars. Light vessels were in vogue, and galleys with single banks of oars are common in the representations on coins and in such frescos as survive, but trireme and quinquereme, &c., have vanished,*~~

~~*A cloud of obscurity rests on these, the dark ages of naval history. We know nothing of the character and composition of the fleet in which Ricimer defeated the Vandals in the 5th century of our era. Nor have we any details of the fleets of the Byzantine empire until the end of the 9th century, when a light is thrown upon the subject by the Zactica of the emperor Leo. This emperor, in giving his directions as to the constitution of his fleet, prescribes that dromones (8poudves)—that is, triremes—are to be got ready in the dockyards with a view to a naval engagement. The vessels are not to be too light or too heavy. They are to be armed with siphons for the projection of Greek fire. They are to have two banks of*~~

~~*oars, with twenty-five rowers a-piece, on each side. Some of the vessels are to be large enough to carry two hundred men ; others are to be smaller, like those called galleys or one-banked vessels, swift and light (€Adrrous dpopuxwrdrovs otdver yaralas % povypers Neyomevous Taxwors kal éAadpots). Here we have the name galleys distinctively attached to vessels with one bank of oars. This passage should have saved much of the labour that has been thrown away in attempting to prove that the distribution of rowers in the medizval galleys was upon the same principle as that observed in the ancient biremes or triremes.*~~

~~*The light thrown by the philosophic Byzantine on the naval construction and equipment of his time is but a passing flash. After the 9th century there is darkness again until the 11th and 12th centuries, when the features of the medieval galley first begin to be visible. And here perhaps it is not out of place to say that it is necessary to distinguish between those imaginary representations of the antique in which painters, such as Tintoret, give fanciful arrangement to the oars of their galleys, so as to meet their ideas of bireme or trireme, from those that are historically faithful and figure, perhaps in an ungainly and inartistic manner, the galleys of Venice and Genoa as they appeared in the Middle Ages. It would exceed the space at our disposal here to enter into details which can be gathered from Jal's Archéologie Navale and the Glossaire Nautique of the same author, or the later works of Admiral Jurien de la Gravitre and Admiral Fincati. It must suffice to indicate here a few of the main charac- teristics in which the medieval galley differs from the ancient, and exhibits the last development of man-power as applied to motion in vessels larger than the boats of the present day.*~~

~~*These characteristics may be sketched briefly. Upon the medieval galley, which was essentially a one-banked galley (jovékporov), the use of the longer oar or sweep took the place of the small paddling oars of the ancient vessel. The increased length of the oar requiring for its efficiency greater power than one man could employ led to the use of more than one man toan oar. The necessity therefore arose of placing the weight (or point at which the oar, used as a lever, worked against the thowl, and so pressed against the water, which is the fulcrum) at a greater distance from*~~

~~*the force or man who moved the lever. This was gained by the invention of the apostis.*~~

~~*The art of ship- building.*~~

~~*SHI—~·—SHI*~~

~~*Upon the hull of the medieval galley was laid a frame- work which stood out on either side from it, giving on either side a strong external timber, running parallel to the axis of the vessel, in which the thowls were fixed against which the oars were rowed. Tt will be readily understood how this arrangement gave a greater length inboard for the oar as compared with vessels, where the thowl stood in the aperture of the vessel's side or port-hole. On the inner side, rising inwards towards the centre line of the decks and inclining upwards, were the banks or benches for the rowers, arranged Q la scaloccio, who could each grasp the handle of the oar, moving forward*~~

~~*eH iP Be*~~

~~*ye the memory of the present generation ship-*~~

~~*building, like many other arts, has lost dignity by the extended use of machinery and by the subdivision of labour. Forty years ago it was still'a "mystery" and a "craft." The well-instructed shipbuilder had a store of experience on which he based his successful practice. He gained such advantages in the form and trim and rig of his vessels. by small improvements, suggested by his own observation or by the traditions of his teachers, that men endeavoured to imitate him, neither he nor they knowing the natural laws on which success depended. He had also a good eye for form, and knew how to put his materials together so as to avoid all irregularity of shape on the outer surfaces, and how to form the outlines and bounding curves of the ship so that the eye might be com- pelled to rest lovingly upon them. He was skilled also in the qualities of timber. He knew what was likely to be free from '"'rends" and "shakes" and "cups" which would cause leakage, and which would be liable to split when the bolts and treenails were driven through it. knew what timber would bear the heat of without undue shrinking, and how to improve its qualities by*~~

~~*seasoning. He could foretell where and under what circumstances premature decay might be expected, and he could choose the material and adjust the surroundings so as to prevent it. He knew what wood was best able to endure rubbing and tearing on hard ground, and how it ought to be formed so that the ship might have a chance of getting off securely when she accidentally took the ground or got on shore. Such men were to be found on all the sea-coasts of Europe and on the shores of the Atlantic in America. .*~~

~~*A great change came over the art when steam was intro-*~~

~~*tropical suns*~~

~~*that of the ancient |*~~

~~*as they depressed it for the feather, and | backward for the stroke as they raised their hands for the |*~~

~~*He.*~~

~~*809*~~

~~*Literature.—1. For Ancient Ships :—Duemichen, Fleet J 5 an. Dp F of an Egyptian Queen:*~~

~~*mit Darstellungen antiker Schiffe; Id., Dte — Cartauld, Za Trtére Athénienne ; Breusing, Die Nautik der*~~

~~*ILDING*~~

~~*Mediterranean shores from N ice to Genoa mark the completeness of the change which a few years have made, The Tyne and the Clyde and the Mersey have become the principal centres of the trade, It has been drawn there because the iron and the coal are near,*~~

~~*But, while the art of shipbuilding has lost dignity, the The*~~

~~*science of naval construction has increased in importance, science Tt is of navas*~~

~~*English art is of an eminently practical character. shy of experiment, as being costly in itself and likely to lead to delays and changes of system and of plant. It loves large orders and rapid production. It practises great subdivision of the details in order to cheapen pro- duction, and it stereotypes modes of work. 'There is no lack of boldness and enterprise; but the patient continuous inquiry and the slow but sure building up of theory upon research,—this is the exception. Naval construction in England has had the good fortune during the last quarter of a century to have not only a thriving industry but a home for research. Twenty-five years ago, when the high- pressure condensing engine was in its infancy, when ship- building steel was not, and armour-plated ships had not yet*~~

~~*displaced the wooden line-of-battle ship, this home was founded. The Institution of Naval Architects may be fairly called the home for research in naval construction. It owes its establishment mainly to four well-known men— John Scott Russell, Dr Joseph Woolley, Lord Hampton, for many years its honoured president, and Sir Edward Reed, its first secretary. It has published every year a volume of T'ransactions recording the experience of all the shipbuilders and marine engineers in England. These Transactions contain also valuable contributions from French, Italian, German, and other eminent constructors and engineers.*~~

~~*duced. The old proportions and forms so well suited for the speeds of the ships and for the forces impressed upon them were ill adapted for propulsion by the paddle, and still less so for propulsion by the screw. Experience had to be slowly gained afresh, for the lamp of science burned dimly. It needed to be fed by results, by long records of successes and failures, before it was able to direct advancing feet. The further change from wood to iron and then to steel almost displaced the shipwright. Ships for commercial purposes may be said to be built now, so far as their external hulls are concerned, by draftsmen and boilermakers. The centres of the ship- building industry have changed. The ports where oaks (Italian, English, and Dantzic), pines from America and the north of Europe, teak from Moulmein, and elm from Canada were most accessible,—these marked the suitable places for shipbuilding. The Thames was alive with the industry from Northflect to the Pool. It still lingers, but it is slowly dying out. Travellers along the*~~

~~*Shortly after the foundation of the Institution one of its mem- Ad- bers, Mr William Froude, set up an experimental establishment miralty at Torquay, under the auspices and with the assistance of the experi- Admiralty. The object was to submit to experiment various ments on proportions and forms of ships in model in order to compare the fluid re- relative resistances in the same model at various speeds, and in sistance different forms and proportions at equal speeds. There was some &e reason to doubt the possibility of inferring from a model on a scale of 2 of an inch to a foot what would happen in a ship of corresponding form and proportions. In order to establish satis- factorily the relations betiveen the real and the model ship a series of experiments was desirable upon a real*~~

~~*ship in which the resistances could be measured by a dynamometer at various speeds and compared with those indicated by the model. Up to the date of this trial the 'scale of comparison" which had been employed by Mr Froude was based upon prima Jacie theoretical truth, and it had some experimental justification. It may be stated as follows, as given by Mr Froude in the volume for 1874 of the Transactions of the Institution of Naval Architects :—*~~

~~*Lf a ship be D times the " dimension," as it is termed, of the model, and if at the speeds V;, Vz, Vz… the measured resistances of the model are Ry, Ry, Ry. . . ., then Jor speeds DiV,, DiV,*~~

~~*DtV;, of the ship, the resistances will be PPR, DR,*~~

~~*» 0.4 ee on*~~

~~*810*~~

~~*D®R3… To the speeds of model and ship thus related it is conven- ient to apply the term "' corresponding speeds." For example, sup- pose two similar ships, the length, breadth, depth, &e.,of which were double one of the other. Then, if at a given speed (say 10 knots) the resistance of the smaller ship were ascertained, we may infer that at a speed of 4/2×10=14'14 knots in the larger ship there would be a resistance 8 times as great as in the smaller vessel.*~~

~~*This law is in aecordance with the old rule that the resistance varies as the square of the velocity, and also as the area of the surface exposed to resistance. It takes into account both the resistanee due to surface friction (subject to some correction) and the formation of deadwater eddies. The passage of the ship through the water creates waves which are dependent for their character upon the proportions and form of the ship. These con- stitute also an element of resistance. They are due to differences of hydrodynamic pressure inherent in the system of stream-lines which the passage of the ship creates. These wave-configurations should be precisely similar when the originating forms are similar and are travelling at speeds proportional to the square roots of their respective dimensions, because the resulting forces will be in that case as the square*~~

~~*of the speeds. For example, if the surface of the water surrounding a ship 160 feet long, travelling at 10 knots an hour, were modelled together with the ship, on any scale, the model would equally represent, on half that scale, the water surface surrounding a ship of similar form 320 feet long, travelling at 1414 knots an hour; or again, on 16 times that scale, the water surface surrounding a model of the ship 10 feet long, travelling at 24 knots. Experiment has abundantly con- firmed this proportion as to the similarity of waves caused by similar forms travelling at corresponding speeds. The resistance caused to these forms respectively by the development of the waves would therefore also be proportionate to the cubes of the dimensions of the forms and would follow the law of comparison stated above. It is necessary, however, to observe that, in nesltite with surfaces having so great a disparity in length and speed as those of a model and of a ship, a very tangible correction is necessary in regard to surface friction.*~~

~~*The vessel tried by Mr Froude for confirming the law of com- pu was H.M.S. " Greyhound," of 1157 tons. She was towed*~~

~~*y H.M.S. ' Active," of 3078 tons, from the end of a boom 45 feet long, so as to avoid interferences of " wake." It was found to be possible to tow up to a speed of nearly 18 knots. The actual amount of towing strain for the "Greyhound" was approximately as follows:—at 4 knots, 0°6 ton ; at 6, 1°4 tons; at 8, 2°5 tons; at 10, 4:7 tons; and at 12, 9:0 tons.*~~

~~*Comparing the indicated horse-power of the " Greyhound " when on her steam trials and the resistance of the ship as determined by the dynamometer, it appears that, making allowance for the slip of the screw, which is a legitimate expenditure of power, only about 45 per cent. of the power exerted by the steam is usefully employed in propelling the ship, and that the remainder is wasted in friction of engines and screw and in the detrimental reaction of the propeller on the stream lines of the water closing in around the stern of the vessel.*~~

~~*We may describe in Mr Froude's own words the system of ex- periment now regularly carried out for the Admiralty, a system which has been successfully copied in other countries and also by a private shipbuilding firm, Messrs Denny of Dumbarton :—*~~

~~*"That system of experiments involves the construction of models of various forms (they are really fair-sized boats of from 10 to 25 feet in length), and the testing by a dynamometer of the resistances they experienced when running at various assigned appropriate speeds. The system may be described as that of determining the scale of resistance of a model of any given form, and from that the resistance of a ship of any given form, rather than as that of searching for the best form, and this method was preferred as the more general, and because the form which is best adapted to any given circumstances comes out incidentally from a comparison of the various results. We drive each model through the water at the successive assigned appropriate speeds by an extremely sensitive dynamometrical apparatus, which gives us in every case an accurate automatic record of the model's resistance, as well as a record of the speed. We thus obtain for each model a series of speeds and the corresponding resistances ; and, to render these results as intelligible as possible, we represent them graphic- ally in each ease in a form which we call the 'curve of the resistance' for the particular model. On a straight base line Which represents speed to scale we mark off the series of points denoting the several speeds employed in the experiments, and at each of these points we plant an ordinate which represents to scale the corresponding resistance. Through the points defined by these ordinates we draw a fair curved line, and this curve con- stitutes what I have called the curve of resistance. This curve, whatever be its features, expresses for the model of that particular form what is in fact and apart from all theory the law of its resistance in terms of its speed ; and what we have to do is if possible to find a rational interpretation of the law. Now we can*~~

~~*SoHIPEw*~~

~~*Ti DING*~~

~~*at once earry the interpretation a considerable way ; for we know that the model has so many square feet of skin in its surface, and we know by independent experiments how much force it takes to draw a square foot of such skin through the water at each indi- vidual speed. The law is very nearly—and for present convenience we may speak as if it were exactly—that skin resistance is as the area simply, and as the square of the speed.*~~

~~*Now, we have so many square feet of immersed skin in the model, and the total skin resistance is a certain known multiple of the product of that number of square feet and of the square of the speed. Now, when we lay off on the curve of resistance a second curve which represents that essential and primary portion of the resistance, then we find this to be the result: the curve of skin resistance when drawn is found to be almost identical with the curve of total resistance at the lower speeds ; but as the speed is increased the curve of total resistance is found to ascend more or less, and in some cases to ascend very much above the curve of skin resistance. The identity of the two curves at the lower speeds is the practical representation of a proposition which the highest mathematicians have long been aware of, and which I have lately endeavoured to draw the public attention to, and to render popularly intelligible, namely, that when a ship of tolerably fine lines is moving at a moderate speed the whole resistance consists of surface friction. The old idea that the resistance of a ship consists essentially of the force employed in driving the water out of her way, and closing it up behind her, or, as it has sometimes been expressed, in excavating a channel through the track of water which she traverses,—this old idea has ceased to be tenable as a real proposi- tion, though prima facie we know that it was an extremely natural one. We now know that, at small speeds, practically the whole resistance consists of surface friction, and some derivative effects of surface friction, namely, the formation of frictional eddies, which is due to the thickness of the stem and of the sternpost ; but this collateral form of frictional action is insignificant in its amount unless the features of the ship in which it originates are so abruptly shaped as to constitute a departure from that necessary fineness of lines which I have described ; and we do not attempt to take an exact separate account of it. Thus we divide the forces represented by the curve of resistance into two elements,—one 'skin resistance,' the other which only comes into existence as the speed is increased, and which we may term 'residuary resist- ance.' And we have next to seek for the cause and governing laws of this latter element. Now when the passage of the model along the surface of the water is carefully studied, we observe that the special additional circumstance which becomes apparent as the speed is increased is the train of waves which she puts in motion ; and indeed it has long been known that this circumstance has important bearings on the growth of*~~

~~*resistance. It is in fact certain that the constant formation of a given series involves the operation of a constant force, and the expenditure of a definite amount of power, ee on the magnitude of those waves and the speed of the model ; and, as we thus naturally conclude that the excess of resistance beyond that due to the surface friction consists of the force employed in wave-making, we in a rough way call that residuary resistance ‘ wave-making resistance.’*~~

~~*‘Perhaps I had better say a few words imore about the nature and character of these waves. The inevitably widening form of the ship at her ‘entrance’ throws off on each side a local oblique wave of greater or less size according to the speed and to the obtuse- ness of the wedge, and these waves form themselves into a series of diverging erests, such as we are all familiar with. These waves have peculiar properties. They retain their identieal size for a very great distance with but little reduction in magnitude. But the main point is that they become at once dissociated from the model, and after becoming fully formed at the bow, they pass clear away into the distant water and produce no further effeet on her resistance. But, besides those diverging waves, there is pro- duced by the motion of the model another notable series of waves which carry their crests transversely to her line of motion. Those waves, when carefully observed, prove to have the form shown in detail in fig. 1. In the figure there is shown the form of a model which has a long parallel middle body accompanied by the series of these transverse waves as they appear at some one particular speed with the profile of the series defined against the side of the model ; only I should mention that for the sake of distinctness the vertical scale of the waves has been made double the horizontal scale, so that they appear relatively to the model about twice as high as they really are. The profile is drawn from exact and careful measurements of the actual wave features as seen against the side of the model. It is seen that the wave is largest. where its crest first appears at the bow, and it reappears again and again as we proceed sternwards along the straight side of the model, but with successively reduced dimensions at each reappearance. That reduction arises thus :—in proportion as each individual wave has been longer in existence, its outer end has spread itself farther into the undisturbed water on either side, and, as the total energies of*~~

~~_the wave remain the same, the local energy is less and less, and~~

~~SHIPBYVIUDIN &G~~

~~the wave-crest, as viewed against the side of the ship, is constantly diminishing. We see the wave-crest is almost at right angles to the ship, but the outer end is slightly deflected sternward from the~~

~~circumstance that when a wave is entering undisturbed water its progress is a little retarded, and it has to deflect itself into an oblique position, so that its oblique progress shall enable it exactly to keep pace with the ship. The whole wave-making resistance is the resistance expended in generating first the diverging bow waves, which, as we have seen, cease to act on the ship when once they have rolled clear of the bow ; secondly, these transverse waves, the crests of which remain in contact with the ship's side ; and thirdly, the terminal wave, which appears independently at the stern of the ship. This latter wave arises from causes similar to those which create the bow wave, namely, the pressure of the streams which, forced into divergence then, here converge under the run of the vessel, and re-establish an excess of pressure at their meeting. The term ' wave-making resistance' represents, then, the excess of~~

~~resistance beyond that due to surface friction, and that excess we,~~

~~know to be chiefly due to this formation of waves by the ship."~~

~~Pursuing these experiments it was found that not only was there a certain length of form necessary in a ship designed to attain a certain speed economically,—a fact which Mr Scott Russell did much to establish,—but that there was also a considerable increase in wave-making resistance dependent upon the position of the after- body or run of the ship with reference to the wave-system left by the bow. Stating this again in Mr Froude's words :——~~

~~'"'The waves generated by the ship in passing through the water originate in the local differences of pressure caused in the surrounding water by the vessel passing through it ; let us suppose, then, that the features of a particular form are such that these differences of pressure tend to~~

~~*produce a variation in the water level shaped just like a natural wave, or like portions of a natural wave of a certain length.*~~

~~*" Now an ocean wave of a certain length has a certain appropriate speed at which only it naturally travels, just as a pendulum of a certain length has a certain appropriate period of swing natural to it. And, just as a small force recurring at intervals corresponding to the natural period of swing of a pendulum will sustain a very large oscillation, so, when a ship is travelling at the speed naturally appropriate to the waves which its features tend to form, the stream line forces will sustain a very large wave. The result of this phenomenon is, that as a ship approaches this speed the waves become of exaggerated size, and run away with a proportionately exaggerated amount of power, causing corresponding resistance. This is the canse of that very disproportionate increase of resistance experienced with a small increase of speed when once a certain speed is reached.*~~

~~*""We thus see that the speed at which the rapid growth of resistance will commence is a speed somewhat less than that appropriate to the length of the wave which the ship tends to form. Now, the greater the length of a wave is the higher is the speed appropriate to it; therefore the gieater the length of the waves which the ship tends to form the higher will be the speed at which the wave-making resistance begins to become formidable. We may therefore accept it as an approximate principle that the longer are the features of a ship which tend to make waves the higher will be the speed she will be able to go before she begins to experience great wave-making resistance, and the less will be her wave-making resistance at any given speed. This principle is the explanation of the extreme importance of having at least a certain length of form in a ship intended to attain a certain speed ; for it is necessary, in order to avoid great wave-making resistance, that the 'wave features,' as we may term them, should be long in comparison with the length of the wave which would naturally travel at the speed intended for the ship.*~~

~~*811*~~

~~*"This view of the matter, then, recognizes the tendency of a ship, when the speed bears a certain relation to the length of her wave-making*~~

~~*features, to make large wavesand to incur correspond- Ing wave-making resistance. But it does not take account of the possibility of the waves made by one feature of the form so placing themselves with reference to other features as, by the differences of pressure essential to their existence, either to cause an additional resistance, or on the other hand to cause a forward force which partly counterbalances the resistance originally due to their creation. The way in which this may occur we have seen strikingly exhibited in the results of the experiments I have been describing. We see that in the very long parallel-sided form the sternmost of the train of waves left by the bow has become so small that its effect on the stern is almost insensible; and here we find, consequently, the united resistance due simply to the generation of a separate wave-system by each end of the ship. As we gradually reduce the length of middle-body, the stern is brought within the reach of waves large enough to produce a sensible effect, and according as it is brought into conjunction with a crest or hollow, the total wave-making resistance becoming least of all (except at the very highest speed) when the middle-body is reduced to nothing."*~~

~~*The variations in residuary resistance due to these transverse wave-formations are variations of quasi-hydrostatic pressure against the after-body, corresponding with the changes in its position with reference to the phases of the train of waves, there being a com- parative excess of pressure (causing a forward force or diminution of resistance) when the after-body is opposite a crest, and the reverse when it is opposite a trough.*~~

~~*It may be proper to introduce here some remarks as to the stream lines which have been referred to in the foregoing considerations. The statement of the case as given by Mr Froude, and derived by him mainly from the investigations of Prof. Rankine, is as*~~

~~*follows :— " By a 'perfect fluid' is meant one the displacements of which Stream are governed solely by the laws expressed in the equation of fluid lines.*~~

~~*motion, the particles of which therefore are without viscosity, and are capable of gliding rectilinearly along a perfectly smooth surface or past each other without frictional interference, By an imperfect fluid is meant*~~

~~*one in which, as in water, as well as those with which we are practically acquainted, such frictional interference is inevitable.*~~

~~*"Dealing first, then, with the case of steady rectilinear motion in a perfect incompressible fluid, infinitely extended in all directions, it is plain that the motion will create differences of pressure, and therefore changes of velocity, in the particles of the surrounding fluid, which thus move in what are called 'stream lines,' At the commencement of the motion of' the body the particles of the fluid undergo acceleration in their respective stream-line paths, and these accelerations imply a resistance experienced by the body ; but after the motion has become established the differences of*~~

~~*ressure satisfy themselves by keeping up the stream-line con- ligarstiains the energy which the particles receive from the body while they are being pushed aside by it along their stream-line paths is finally redelivered by them to it as they collapse around it, and come to rest after its passage, and the integrals of the + and — pressures on the body are exactly equal at every moment. The manner in which this is effected is governed by the general laws of fluid motion, as expressed by the well-known equations ; and, since these equations contain no term which implies a loss of energy, the energy existing in the body, as well as in the stream- line system, remains unaltered ; so that, if the motion is steady, or without acceleration or retardation, the body passes through this theoretically perfect fluid absolutely without resistanee. Nor must it be thought a paradox (for it is unquestionable) that even a plane nioving steadily at right angles to itself through a perfect fluid would in the manner described experience no resistance. But if the fluid, instead of being infinite in all directions, be bounded by a definite free surface parallel to the line of motion, such as a water level, the existence of this surface euts off the reactions of all those particles which would have existed beyond the surface had the fluid been unlimited alike in all directions, and which would have given back in the manner described the energy im parted to them. By the absence of these reactions the stream-line motions which would have existed in the infinite fluid are modified, and the differences of pressure involve corresponding local eleva- tions of the surface of the water in the vicinity of the moving body. And since, in consequence of the*~~

~~*action of gravitation (the force which controls the surface), a water protuberance seeks immediately to disperse itself into the surrounding fluid in accordance with the laws of wave motion, the local elevation partly discharges itself along the surface by waves which carry with them the amount of energy embodied in their production. This energy is, in fact, part of the aggregate energy which was imparted to the particles of fluid while they were being pushed aside, and which, in the infinitely extended fluid, would have been wholly restored to the body during their collapse after its passage, but is now, in fact,*~~

~~*dissipated. The exact equality between the + and — pressures no longer exists, and the body experiences a definite resistance which it would not do if the fluid were infinite in all directions.*~~

~~*"'It is clear, moreover, that the nearer the moving body approaches the surface the greater are the differences of pressure to be satisfied, the greater will be the waves formed, and the greater the dissipation of energy. Thus, for example, a fish will experi- ence an increase of resistance as its path lies nearer to the surface, the train of waves it creates becoming then a visible accompani- ment of its progress. 4 fortiori, when the body moves along the surface as a ship does on water, those differences of pressure which would exist during the motion if the fluid were infinite in all directions satisfy themselves in still larger waves, which, in fact, are the waves which accompany the body in its motion. The waves which thus visibly accompany a vessel in transitu form a marked phenomenon in river steaming. Thus we sce how, although in a perfeet fluid extended infinitely in all directions, a body, when once put in motion, would move absolutely without resistance, yet, when the fluid is bounded by a gravitating surfaee at or near the line of motion, the body will experience resistance by the formation of waves, notwithstanding that the fluid is a perfect one.*~~

~~*"If the fluid is again supposed to be infinite in all directions, but imperfect, the phenomena previously described undergo appropriate*~~

~~*modifications, and the moving body will also suffer a specific resistance, — in the first place by its having to overcome the friction and viscosity of those particles of the fluid with which it is in contact, and next because the friction of the surrounding particles inter se destroys that orderly arrangement of the stream-line con- figuration which allows of the energy imparted to the particles being returned without loss. If the supposed imperfeet fluid is bounded by a free surface, as already described, and the body moves at or near this surface, it will experience resistances depend- ing on fluid friction, almost exactly in the same manner as if the fluid were infinite in all directions. It will also experience very nearly the same resistance in virtue of the wave-making action as in the perfect fluid ; and we here see the two sources of resistance existing independently of each other, and due to totally different causes,*~~

~~*Important as the question is as to the effect of form upon resist- ance, that of its effect upon stability or steadiness at sea is even more so. Before the use of steam for the propulsion of ships the speed which could be attained in seagoing ships by sail power was largely a question of stability or power to earry a large spread of canvas without inclining or "heeling " too greatly. Small differences in the form of the transverse sections of the ship in the region of the load water-line and under water were influential in this respect, and naval constructors occupied themselves greatly with such ques- tions. The form of the problem completely changes when the pro- pelling power is no longer an upsetting force. The important pec pia in steam ships are the proportions of length, breadth, and*~~

~~*epth ; the form of "entrance" and "run"; the construction of propelling machinery within the ship; and the proportions, form, and number of revolutions of the propeller. But, while this is so, the effect of the stability of the steamship upon her behaviour at Sea, as a question of rolling or "labouring," remains very great. There are, moreover, a very large number of seagoing ships still dependent upon sails for their propulsion, and the question of sailing power is very important in vessels employed on our coasts for commerce and for pleasure. The latest and most complete in- vestigation of questions of stability is to be found in Sir Edward J F Reed's recently published work, The Stability of Ships. There isa more*~~

~~*popular exposition of the subject by Mr W. H. White, director of naval construction, in his Manual of Naval Architecture (1877, 2d ed. 1882), of which use has been made in the following pages.*~~

~~*A ship floating freely and at rest in still water displaces a volume of water exactly equal in weight to her own weight. The circum- stances of the water in which she floats are in fact the same whether the cavity made in the water by the ship is filled by the ship as in fig. 2, or by a volume of water having the same weight as the ship (fig. 3), When the ship oc- cupies the cavity = the whole of her weight may be sup- posed to be con- centrated at her centre of gravity, G, fig. 2, and to act vertically downwards. When the cavity is filled with water its weight, called in relation to the ship the "displacement," may be supposed to be concentrated at B, fig. 3, which is the centre of gravity of the "displacement" or of the displaced water. This centre of gravity is usually known in relation to the ship as the "centre of buoyancy." The weight of this water may be supposed to be concentrated at B, and to act vertically downwards. As this water would remain in the cavity at rest, its downward pressure must be balanced by equal upward*~~

~~*pressures, that is by 'the buoyancy of the surrounding water. These upward pressures must act in the same way as if there were a single pressure equal and opposite to the weight of the water, and acting through the 'centre of buoyancy." In fig. 2a ship is represented floating freely and at rest in still water. Her total weight may be supposed to act vertically downwards through the centre of gravity G, and the buoyancy vertically upwards through the centre of buoyancy. The second condition which the ship floating freely and at rest in still water will always satisfy is there- fore said to be that her centre of gravity will lie in the same vertical line with the centre of gravity of the volume of water which she displaces. So long as the ship rests under the action of these opposing and balanced forces the line joining the centres B and G is vertical and represents the common line of action of the weight and buoyancy. There are of course horizontal fluid pres- sures acting upon her, but these are balanced among themselves. The ship may be floating at rest, but under constraint,*~~

~~*and not freely. There may be the pressure of wind on the sails, or the strain of a rope holding her in a position of rest although the centres B and G are no longer in the same vertical line. Fig. 4 represents such a case, The vessel is at rest, but there is some ex- ternal force operating other than that of buoyancy; and the equal and _ opposite forces of the weight and buoyancy act in different vertical lines, and no longer balance each other. They form a mechanical "couple," tending to move the ship from the position of con- strained rest in which she is shown. If W represents the total weight of the ship (in tons), and d the per-*~~

~~*Fig. 4.*~~

~~*pendicular distance between the parallel lines of action of the weight and buoyancy (in feet), then the operative moment of the "couple "*~~

~~*is represented by the product of the two quantities W and d, mea- sured in foot-tons, If the constraint is removed, and the vessel is freed from all external forees save those of the fluid in which she floats, she will move under the operation of the "couple" towards the upright position until the consequent alteration in the form of the cavity of the displacement brings the centre of buoyancy into the same vertical with the centre of gravity of the ship. What has been illustrated by reference to transverse inclination of the ship is Veni true of oblique or longitudinal inclinations. If the position of the weights in the ship remains unaltered under sueh changes of inclination the centre of gravity remains unaltered, In all ealcula- tions it has to be assumed that the eentre of gravity is a fixed point in the ship, and that movable weights will be secured in the ship. With this assumption the position of the centre of gravity of a ship can be correctly assigned by calculation, small disturbances caused by movements of men, &c., not being large enough to be appreciable.*~~

~~*The statical stability of a ship may be defined as the effort which she makes when inclined steadily by external forces to overcome the constraint and return to the position in which she floats freely, at or near the upright. This effort, as already explained, depends upon the position of the centre of buoyancy B, or the distance from the vertical line through G which the altered form of the cavity of the displacement has caused it to assume, It may always be measured by the product of the two quantities*~~

~~W (iu tons) and d (in feet) (see fig. 4). This product in foot-tons is known as the "moment of statical stability" for the particular angle of inclination and corresponding position of B which are assumed. A little reflexion will show that when large angles of inclination are reached the centre B ceases to recede from the vertical through the centre of gravity of the ship, but will, as the inclination increases, approach this vertical line, and eventually pass to the other side of it.~~

~~The moment of statical stability is at its maximum when the distance d is greatest. The angle which the ship has reached when the centre B has reached this point is called the "angle of maximum stability." As the centre B travels backwards from this position with the increasing inclination of the ship the dis- tance d decreases and the righting power of the ship decreases pro- portionately. When B passes the vertical line through G the moment of stability changes its character and becomes an upset- ting force, which will continue to act until the ship reaches a new position of rest, usually bottom upwards. The angle which the ship reaches before this change takes place, z.¢., when B passes to the other side of the vertical line through G, is called the " angle of. vanishing stability" and it indicates the ship's "range of~~

~~stability."" The change may occur at very small angles if the ship is crank and her sides are low in the water. It may not and sometimes does not occur, on the other hand, until the ship is lying on her beam ends.~~

~~Ifa curve is plotted out showing these positions and indicating also how d first increases and then decreases as the ship is inclined more and more from the upright, the curve is known as the curve of stability,~~

~~The following table contains particulars of the metacentric heights of different kinds of vessels of war, and the corresponding time of an oscillation in still water :—~~

~~These devices were introduced into the '"Inflexible" in order to counteract the influenee of a metacentric height of 8 feet which was~~

~~*designedly given to her, They have proved very effective, but there is another feature in this vessel which has tended to*~~

~~*The time of an oscillation from starboard to starboard may be written thus :—*~~

~~*3 Feet*~~

~~*2T=1-14/K2/m, where T is the ship's period in seconds for a single roll, m is the*~~

~~*metacentric height, or height of metacentre above the centre of gravity in feet, and K is the radius of gyration in feet. The*~~

~~*20 Jo #o 5a 6 70 60 90*~~

~~*out towards the sides of the ship. It was seen that these features in the "Inflexible," which were elements in her design, would favour her and tend to counteract the great metacentric height. The event has shown that, while a metaeentric height of 6 feet in the " Normandie" gave 10 seconds to 11 seconds period, 8 feet in the " Inflexible" only gives 11 seconds as a period, eorresponding with a radius of gyration of 28 feet, The feeling expressed that "in order to provide against the impossible contingeney of the loss of stability by complete waterlogging of the ends we had made an intolerable ship" was not justified. The ship is now so stiff that when the un are waterlogged the running in and out of all her guns on one side only inclines her 24 degrees, while in the " Monarch" when intact and light the same operation inclines the ship 5 degrees, The resistance offered by the water to the rolling of the ship Resist- consists of three parts :—(1) that due to the rubbing of the water ance to*~~

~~*keels and deadwood ; (3) the creation of waves by the rolling*~~

~~*; Metacentric | Period ofa ship to replace those which move away from the ship. The*~~

~~*aniaidadliars at Height. | Double Roll. wei of tines: surface waves eres saa and slicabs the*~~

~~*Pec aaate aes thy ship ie sre coe we ‘ ; ;*~~

~~*we is eo se r ite, giving briefly the results of some of the experiments*~~

~~*— * game! ee = Fe of Mr Froude ter. for the Admiralty, says :—*~~

~~*HMS Si ieicace eh agg SSH ee Sain oni 3°7 6-76 ‘Experiments have been made by Mr Froude to show how Crt il stl ‘shell pues jaan : ; rapidly the rate of extinction may be increased by deepening bilge- Bilge- ee (sha Ted sig t);. i) 14°0 2°7 keels. A model of the ‘ Devastation’ was used for this purpose, keels,*~~

~~*Sew welled in aid 7°65 10°7 and fitted with bilge-keels, which, on the full-sized ships, would*~~

~~*inniidlcadlinaad ee ae represent the various depths given in the following table. The*~~

~~*model was one thirty-sixth of the full size of the ship, and was weighted so as to float at the proper water-line, to have its centre of gravity in the same relative position as that of the ship, and to oseillate in a period proportional to the period of the ship. In smooth water it was heeled to an angle of 84 degrees, and was then set free, and allowed to oscillate until it came practically to rest, the number of oscillations and their period being observed. The following results were obtained :—*~~

~~*Generally speaking, decrease in metacen tric height is accompanied by a lengthening of the period of an oscillation, The ship swings more slowly as she loses stiffness,*~~

~~*scilla- There is no sensible difference in the time occupied by a ship in ions. a swing or roll from side to side, whether she rolls through only three or four degrees on either side of the upright or twelve or fifteen degrees. For larger angles there would be small differences,*~~

~~*The tables which have been given show some remarkable changes in the stability conditions in ships of war within recent years. Sailing ships were formerly made with so little deviation from existing types that it was not*~~

~~*found to be necessary to ascertain their exact measure of stability or to lay down rules for regulating it. The position of the centre of gravity was modified by ballast, and as much as nine or ten per cent. of the displacement was allowed for this, Heavy rolling and great uneasiness of ship from excessive stability had often to be endured. In other cases crank-*~~

~~*Number of Double Period of*~~

~~*Rolls before Model Model fitted with was practically*~~

~~*39*~~

~~*Two 86-inch na A single 72-inch #6*~~

~~*height (6 fect) as is to be found in the earlier sailing frigates. The 'Normandie " in the French navy and the "Prince Consort" in the English navy had from 6 to 7 feet, and they were exceed- ingly uneasy and deep-rolling ships. It was soon discovered that a reduction in metacentric height would cure this evil. The later ships in both navies were accordingly designed to have a metacentric height of about 3 feet. The " Magenta" had 34 feet and the "Hercules" 3 feet. This change altered the period during which the ship made a double oscillation, 7.e., from star- board back to starboard, to 14 to 16 seconds instead of 10 to 11 seconds, as it had been in the '*'Normandie" and 'Prince Con-*~~

~~*" Not content with obtaining the aggregatc value of the resistances for ships, Mr Froude has separated them into their component parts, assigning values to frictional and keel resistances as well as to surface disturbance. In doing so, he has been led to the con- clusion that surface disturbance is by far the most important part of the resistance offered to rolling, as the following figures given by him for a few ships will show :-*~~
~~*—*~~

~~*; «att Keel, Bilge-keel Total Surface Ships. Seis and Deadwood. Resistance, | Disturbance.*~~

~~*sort." The effect on the behaviour of the ship in a seaway was ee ee ee*~~

most remarkable. These ships with small metacentric height || Sultan……. | 354 5, 036 20,000 14,610 might be put into the trough of a sea, and as the waves crossed Inconstant…….. 140 4,060 21,500 17,300 them they steadily rose and fell, hardly inclining their masts. The VONG Sb… occcacances 96 2,944 14,100 11,060 effeet on gunnery practice was also valuable, but there is always a || Greyhound…….. 120 700 4,700 3, 880

'peril attending steadiness obtained by such means: vessels having small metacentric height require careful handling under sail or they may be overset and lost. There is another defeet in this system, viz., that wounds in action will cause the ship to incline Sooncr and more considerably, and they become more dangerous than they would be in a stiffer ship. Bilge-keels and water- chambers are now employed in the English navy, together with, and as opposing influences to, much greater metacentric height.

" Frictional and bilge-keel resistances in this table have been obtained by calculation from the drawings of the ship, Mr Froude making use of data as to coefficients for friction and for head resistance. which he had previously obtained by independent experiments, and which may therefore be regarded as leading to thoroughly trustworthy results. It will be noticed that in no ease does the sum of the frictional and keel resistances much exceed

Water cham- bers.

one-fourth of the total resistance, while it is much less than one- fourth in other cases. The consequence is that surface disturbance must be credited with the contribution of three-fourths or there- abouts of the total resistance, a result which could scarcely have been predicted. Waves are constantly being created as the vessel rolls, aud as constantly moving away, and the mechanical work done in this way reacts in a reduction of the amplitude of successive oscillations. Very low waves, so low as to be almost impercept- ible, owing to their great length in proportion to their height, would suflice to account even for this large proportionate effect.

~~*For example, Mr Froude estimates that a wave 320 feet long and only 1} inches in height would fully account for all the work credited to surface disturbance in the fourth case of the preceding table.*~~

~~*" Another important deduction from the figures in the table is the large proportionate effect of 'keel' resistance as compared with frictional resistance, thus establishing the advantages of deep bilge-keels. Ships of the Royal Navy recently constructed have been furnished with much deeper bilge-keels than were formerly in use, but a limit to the depths that can be fitted is often reached, because of the necessity for compliance with certain con- ditions and extreme dimensions, in order that the vessels may be able to enter existing docks."*~~

~~*In the Royal Navy advantage has also been taken of the power of loose water within a ship to quell motion. It was first employed in the " Inflexible" in a part of the ship lying above the bomb- proof deck, and at the level of the water-line. Its use resulted from a discussion, when the " Inflexible" was designed, of the probable effect of water entering this region of the ship through shot holes. The matter has since been thoroughly established by experiment, and affords a new and valuable means of preventing heavy rolling in ships having large initial stability. There is now no hesitation in giving a metacentric height of 6 feet, and obtaining all the security against upsetting which this ensures, because it is felt that the violent rolling formerly inseparable from stiffness can be prevented. The investigation into this matter has been conducted by Mr Philip Watts, Mr R. E. Froude, and Mr W. E. Smith, acting for the Admiralty.*~~

~~*The accompanying memorandum, prepared by the present writer in 1884, gives the general results :—*~~

~~*'In investigating the phenomena attending the use of water as a means of quelling the motion of ships, Mr Froude has not only taken advantage of the experiments made in the ' Edinburgh' by running men across the decks, hut he has also studied similar phenomena in a model water-chamber, mounted, rot on a model of a ship, but on a large pendulum weighted to the required ' period,' the relative level of the model chamber*~~

~~*and the axis of rotation being made to correspond approximately to scale with that in the ship.*~~

~~*The conclusions, stated in the form of a comparison between the quelling effects of bilge-keels and of moving water, are as follows:— (1) There is a certain depth of water in the chamber which gives the maximum effect; this is dependent upon the width of the chamber and the period of the ship. (2) With this depth of water the growth of resistance to rolling commences almost at zero of angle, whereas with either a greater or less depth there is practically no resistance at all due to the water up to a certain angle, which angle increases with increase of departure from the proper depth. (3) At larger angles of roll the disadvantage of departure from the proper depth of water is not marked. (4) The resistance of water in a chamber does not increase at all uniformly with increase of angle of roll, but increases rapidly at first and at the larger angles becomes more nearly constant for all angles. (5) The best quantity of water for the original chamber in the 'Edinburgh' was 43.tons ; the best for the chamber enlarged by removal of cork walls was 79 tons ; and the best for the chamber extending to the sides of the ship would be 100 tons. 'The first-named extension improved the resistance at 10° by 21 per cent., and the further extension by another 22 per cent.*~~

~~*" As compared with bilge-keels the matter is stated as follows :— while 2 feet addition to the breadth of the bilge-keels adds in round numbers two-thirds to the existing extinguishing power of hull and bilge-keels on the 'Edinburgh' at all angles of rolling, the fully extended water-chamber adds at 3° of roll about six times, and at 5° about three times that power ; at 12° the chamber adds no more than 2 feet of bilge-keel, while at 18° it only adds half as much. It is therefore evident that, while both are valuable, the water-chamber is for most kinds of service much the more valuable of the two.*~~

~~*"' Explaining the cause of the phenomena, Mr Froude says :—*~~

~~*" 'The extinguishing or quelling effect of water depends, of course, exteris paribus, upon the value of the moment represented by the transference of water from side to side, #.e., with a given quantity of water, upon the distance moved by its centre of gravity. This distance*~~

~~*increases with increase of angle of roll, and consequently the extinction similarly increases up to a certain point, where we appear to have approximately reached the maximum possible transference of water, and consequently the maximum extinction of which the quantity of water is capable with the dimensions of the chamber. This point occurs generally at a moderate angle, and above*~~

~~*| ship in each swing by the extinction. | generally is of a type very wasteful of energy, the water either rushing*~~

~~*SHIPBUILDING*~~

~~*this angle the extinction becomes practically constant. But the extinguishing effect of the water of course largely depends also upon the timing of its motion from side to side,—the extinction being greatest when that motion takes place most nearly at the time of extreme angle of ship, i.e., in such a manner as that the water may be as much as possible running downhill when it is moving across, and as much as possible upon the rising side of the ship when it is stationary. If, on the other hand, the motion of the water across were to take place when the ship is quite upright, the extinction would be nil. It is therefore conceivable that for the same total degree of motion or transference of water we may have a very different degree of extinction, according to the timing of that motion. In the motion of the water energy is necessarily wasted, and it is clear that, if we are dealing with a permanent condition of things, «.¢., if the ship is being steadily maintained at a constant angle of roll, this waste of energy in each run of water from side to side must be exactly equal to the energy taken out of the The motion of the water may be and*~~

~~*across in a mass, and consuming its energy by breaking with great violence against the opposite side, as it does at the larger angles of rolling, or, at more moderate angles, running across in a breaking wave or bore, which consumes its energy as it goes in its own internal resistance; and under these circumstances the timing of the motion appears invariably to approach pretty nearly to that giving the maximum extinction for the degree of motion. But the motion of the water sometimes takes the form of a mere alternating slope of surface, or tidal swing from side to side, and here there is very little waste of energy, the energy of motion of the flow.*~~

~~*of water in one direction being converted into potential energy in the shapé of rise of water at the side, and then given out again to the water flowing back to the other side, and so on. The waste of energy in this form of motion being almost nil, the timing is almost exactly that appropriate to no extinction, the water being in the middle of its passage across and the surface being level when the ship is upright.'*~~

~~*'The value of the chamber of course increases as its length in the direction of the keel of the ship increases. The actual size of the chamber we adopted appears to give valuable results, although its extent was necessarily limited."*~~

~~*Tabular Statement of Results of the Above Experiments.*~~

~~*Empty Fully Empty Chamber. Chamber. | pxtendeq | Two Feet addi- Existing | Chamber, | tional Width of | Slope Bilge-keels. ; Bilge-keel. ° ° : 9 3°8 39 Steady rolling in co-) | 10 3°8 75 1:22 periodic waves……+ } | 15 10°5 111 2°63 | 20 16°6 14:7 4°59 Irregular rolling repre-) | 5 13 41 "47 sented by angle accu- 10° 4:5 U7 1°29 mulated from rest in ?) 15° 10:7 11°29 2°67 five successive co- 20 16°6 14 8 4°64 periodic waves……*~~

~~*In some lectures recently delivered Mr Smith, assistant con- structor of the navy, illustrated the use of water in quelling motion by models as shown below.*~~

~~*SSSssss*~~

~~*SSSSSSSSSS SSS*~~

~~*Fig. 6.*~~

~~*'The models represented the midship sections of the 'Admiral' class, and were both of the same weight and size. Each model was mounted on trunnions, marked T, and both oscillated freely on these trunnions in exactly the same time. The models were placed one behind the other, so that the parallelism of the masts was evident to the audience. The model in fig. 7 was provided with a glass tube into which varying quantities of*~~

~~*water could be put. An amount of water representing ;4, of the total weight of the model, 7.e., 100 tons in a 10,000-ton ship, was now placed in the tube, the models were started from the same angle as before, and the model with the loose water, instead of keeping up exactly with the other, or rolling more violently, came almost instantaneously to rest.*~~

~~*'The tube was filled with varying quantities of water, and the effect was always to stop the model much sooner than the model with no weights free to move. The two models were always started from the same angle, so that their relative behaviour could be easily seen. When the tube was quite full there was practically no effect. The two models rolled almost together. The same effect resulted from the motion of a marble representing In weight 100 tons in a ship of 10,000 tons. The same reduction must always occur in arolling ship if we have a loose weight of any kind, whether the*~~

~~*Dynami- cal stability.*~~

~~*reat estern.*~~

~~*eat itain,*~~

~~*'at about this date :*~~

~~*weights fixed, but the sea would, in addition, be doing all the work involved i the deck, which is quite impossible under the circumstances of perfect similarity we have supposed, The sea can only do the In the one case that work consists entirely in rolling the vessel, in the other it consists partly of rolling the ship and partly in dashing the weight about. The rolling in the latter must therefore inevitably be less than in the former case."*~~

~~*Dynamical stability is the "work" done or energy expended in heeling the ship from the upright to any inclined position. The unit of " work " employed in measuring dynamical stability is a foot- ton. When the vessel is gradually inclined the forces inclining her must do work depending upon the amount of the statical stability at the successive instantaneous inclinations passed through, and these are given by the curve of stability already described, Dynamical stability is of value as a means of*~~

~~*comparing the resistance of ships to upsetting under the action of suddenly applied forces, such as squalls of wind. Illustrating this Mr White says :—*~~

~~*"'Roughly speaking, it may be said that a force of wind which, steadily and continuously applied, will heel a ship of ordinary form to a certain angle will, if it strikes her suddenly when she is upright, drive her over to about twice that inclination, or in some cases further still. A parallel case is that of a spiral spring ; if a weight be suddenly brought to bear upon it, the extension will be about twice as great as that to which the same weight hanging steadily will stretch the spring. The explanation is simple. When the whole weight is suddenly brought to bear upon the spring, the resistance which the spring can offer at each instant, up to the time when its extension supplies a force equal to the weight, is always less than the weight ; and this unbalanced force Stores up work which carries the weight onwards, and about doubles the extension of the spring corresponding to that weight when at rest."*~~

~~*Structure.*~~

~~*The changes which have come about in materials and modes of construction within the last 50 years have been most remarkable, The first steamer built expressly for regular voyages between Europe and America was not built until 1837. Dr Lardner stated "We have as an extreme limit of a steamer's practicable voyage, without receiving a relay of coals, a run of about 2000 miles." The " Great Western," built by Patterson of Bristol and engined by Maudslay of London under the superintendence of Sir I. K. Brunel, was the first such ship, and she was launched J uly 19, 1837. She was 212 feet long between the perpendiculars, 35 feet 4 inches broad, and had a displacement of 2300 tons. She was propelled by paddles. Iron vessels were built early in the present century for canal service, then for river service, and later for packet service on the coasts. In about the year 1838 iron vessels of small dimensions were built for ocean service. The largest iron vessel built up to 1841 was less than 200 feet long. In 1843 we get for the first time the ocean-going steamship in its present form, built of iron, and propelled by the screw. This was the " Great Britain," 286 feet long, projected and designed by Brunel. Time has abundantly*~~

~~*justified these bold enterprises on the part of Brunel, which he had to carry through in the face of great opposi- tion. He entered with equal boldness on another innovation in 1850, viz., the use of very large dimensions on the ground of economy of power. It was not until 1852 that he had the oppor-*~~

~~*tunity to put these views forward in a way to satisfy him. The different sizes of vessels discussed before the design was finally*~~

~~*settled for the "Great Rastern " were as follows :— No. Length. | Breadth. Midship Section. | Draught. 1 663 79°9 1,646 24 2 634 76°39 1,640 25 3 609 73°5 1,639 26*~~

~~*4 730 87 2,090 28*~~

~~*The dimensions eventually settled were—length, 680 feet; beam, 83 feet; mean draught, about 25 feet ; Screw engine, indicated horse-power, 4,000, and nominal horse-power, 1600 : paddle, indicated horse-power, 2,600, and nominal horse- power, 1,000 ; to work with steam 15 Th to 25 tb; speed of screw, 45 to 55 revolutions ;*~~

~~*The "Great produced by the joint skill of Brunel and Scott Russell, remains in advance of present practice, although she has served as a model for the best of it. Her great size rend- ered it possible to give to her an amount of security against fatal i ; cannot be attained in smaller ships. 18 a mistake to suppose that large ships are less secure than small ship can receive without inconvenience a wound fatal to a small one, and the possibilities of obtaining high speed increase with the size. Had a higher speed been aimed at in the "Great Eastern," it might have altered the whole current of her history, and changed also the history of ship-building itself,*~~

~~*The question of bulkheads, on which Brunel insisted so much in this ship, is one which underlies all questions of construction, If the number of bulkheads in ships were increased as they ought to be, the numbers and sizes of the ribs or frames of the ship would be modified, and the system*~~

of construction generally would be changed, and become more like that of the " Great Eastern." The question is therefore one which justifies some further consideration, so that it may be popularly understood.

Tron ships are commonly made with less than half their bulk out of water. If water enters such a ship, and the amount which enters does not exceed in bulk that portion of the bulk of the ship which is out of the water, and which will, when immersed, exclude the water, then the ship, if she does not turn over, will still float. If, however, the inflow cannot be stopped, but continues, the ship soon sinks.

Let us suppose the case of a ship 50 feet long, 10 feet wide, and 10 feet deep, divided into five equal parts by four watertight par- titions, and floating in water with half its bulk immersed (fig. 8). Suppose now that a =

? — _ ——

under the water, so

hole is made in the i SS 4 middle of this ship oe ——— A fh

i —— ‘

that water can flow 4 freely in, then the i ——— ! part of ; the ship Sr ae which is shaded Fig. &.

ceases to have floating power. The water in this shaded place is no longer displaced, but is admitted, and ifthe ship is to continue afloat, the other parts of the ship must displace water to the amount b which this shaded part has ceased to do so. As it is one-fifth of the whole immersed bulk which is lost, the remaining four compart- ments must sink, so as each to support one-fourth of the whole, instead of one-fifth, as before ; ¢.¢. , the draught of water, or im- mersion of the whole ship, will be increased, and the ship will, if she has stability enough to keep upright, finally float at rest again at this deeper immersion. The water will rise in the centre com- partment to the level of the water outside, and will then cease to flow in. The additional immersion will be only one and a quarter feet, but in an

~~*ordinary ship, divided into compartments of equat length, there would be a greater increase of immersion by the injury of a centre compartment, because the end compartments are narrow, and must sink deeper in order to bear their share of the burden imposed by the loss of the buoyancy of the centre division. ae*~~

~~*Or it may be other than a central compartment which is damaged, and in that case the ship tips, and finds a new floating line, with the end towards which the damaged division lies depressed more than the other end. =*~~

~~*If it should happen that the divisional partitions, or bulkheads as they are called, rise only a few inches above the water level which the ship floats at when undamaged, then, on the occur- rence of a bad leak filling one compartment, the tops of the bulk- heads are brought, by the increased immersion of the ship, beneath the water-level, the water will rise through the hatches, or open- ings in the deck, in the damaged compartment, will flow over the entire deck, and the ship will be lost, either by the filling of other compartments by the water passing down into them, or by the capsizing of the ship. This latter event will generally happen, although only one compartment is full, if the sea has free access to*~~

~~*Great Eastern.*~~

~~*Bulk- heads.*~~

~~*Recom- menda- tions of the Council of the Institu- tion of Naval Archi- tects.*~~

~~*816*~~

~~*the deck from end to end of the ship, and it becomes immersed.*~~

~~*In 1866 the president of the Institution of Naval Architects said: "The circumstances of the sad event of the loss of the 'London,' accompanied as it was by the simultaneous loss of another ship of still larger size, and of a higher reputed character " (the " Amalia,"), "was, I think, an event so remarkable that I should be very sorry indeed if this annual meeting of this Institu- tion were to pass by without some notice being taken of the*~~

~~*extra- ordinary circumstances of the loss of that ship, and without some discussion upon what we suppose to be the causes of the loss, and the faults, if any, of the construction of those ships." 'The passengers who pass to and fro are not judges of the question ; they cau take no precaution for their own safety; it is to the skill and scienee of those who build these ships that the passenger trusts, and to the care which the legislature and the Government are bound to take of their fellow-subjects. "*~~

~~*Subsequently the council of the Institution arrived at the follow- ing conclusions and offered them as recommendations to ship- builders and shipowners :—*~~

~~**'1. No general rule can be safely laid down for regulating the proportions of length and depth to the breadth of a ship, and a great variety of propor- tions of length and depth to breadth may be safely adopted, and the ship made sound and seaworthy, by judicious form, construction, and lading.*~~

~~*2, The construction load-water-line of every ship, and her scale of dis- placement from light to load-water-line, should be appended to every design of a ship, showing the extreme draught to which she should be laden; and measures should be taken to ensure that this information be recorded on the ship's papers. It is desirable also that along with a ship's papers, in the possession of the captain, there should always be carried a scale of displacement, a sail draft, and a set of outline plans of the ship, comprising a longitudinal section, and at least four cross sections of the ship. On these plans should be marked the capacity, in tons of 40 cubic feet, of each com- partment of the hold. The surplus buoyancy of each compartment up to the load-water-line, or its power to carry deadweight, should be given in tons deadweight. These papers should always accompany the ship's register, and a copy of them should be lodged in the custom house of the port from which the ship hails.*~~

~~*'3. There is a minimum height of freeboard which eannot be safely reduced in sea-going ships of ordinary fitment; and it is desirable to fix this minimum height, Freeboard should be understood to be the vertical height of the upper surface of the upper deck (not spar-deck) at the side,*~~

~~amidships, above the load-water-line. The proportion of freeboard should increase with the length. One-eighth of the beam is a minimum freeboard for ordinary sea-going ships of not more than five breadths to the length, and », of the beam should further be added to the freeboard for each additional breadth in the length of the ship ; this would give—~~

~~For a ship of 32 feet beam and 160 feet long, 4 feet freeboard ,~~

~~For a length of 192 feet, 5 feet freeboard ;~~

~~For a length of 224 feet, 6 feet freeboard ;~~

~~For a length of 256 feet, 7 feet freeboard ;—the beam remaining the same.~~

~~But, as the addition of a spar-deck on long vessels may be considered an equivalent or substitute for the increased freeboard required for extra length, a complete spar-deck would leave the freeboard of these extra lengths at the original height of 4 feet.~~

~~"4, It is not considered desirable to offer any recommendations with regard to poops and forecastles. It must depend entirely upon the professional judgment of the designer of a ship, whether, looking to her proportions, form, and purpose, the additions of poop and forecastle are expedient and safe. In general, where poops and forecastles are adopted, they should be closed and seaworthy, but their weight may be inexpedient in long fine ships; and there are cases where a light top-gallant forecastle (i.e., an open forecastle raised above the level of the upper deck) may be useful in keeping heavy seas out of the ship. In general, spar-decks in long ships are preferable to poop and forecastle, and no diminution of freeboard should be allowed for a poop or forecastle.~~

~~'5, It would add much to the strength aud security of steamships if transverse and longitudinal bulkheads, coal bunkers, iron lower decks, and screw alley were all so connected with the hull of the ship and with each other as to form independent cellular compartments, watertight, and having all their communications with the decks and each other by water-tight doors worked from the deck. In proportioning the compartments of a~~

~~*ship (and especially of ships devoted to passengers) it is very desirable so to arrange them that if any two adjacent compartments be filled, or placed in free communication with the sea, the remaining compartments will float the ship. It is considered that no iron passenger ship is well constructed unless her compartments be so proportioned that she would fioat safely were any one of them to fill with water, or be placed in free communication with the sea. Double bottoms are to be regarded as a great element, both of safety and strength, in the structure of a large iron ship.*~~

~~*"6, It is very desirable that sufficient ventilation should always be provided in passenger ships to admit of closing all side scuttles and battening down, or otherwise enclosing, all hatches in bad weather.*~~

~~*"7. In regard to hatchways and openings in the deck no limits can be set to their size ; but it is desirable to carry the beams of the ship across them without interruption wherever practicable ; they may also be made removable where required, being replaced on going to sea. All coamings over engine and boiler rooms in passenger ships should be as high as practicable, of iron, and riveted to the beams and carlings. Openings in the deck may be fitted with solid coverings, hinged in place so as to be readily closed.*~~

- ~~*8, It being considered that all openings in the sides or ends of vessels are subject to accidents that endanger the safety of ships, it is desirable that the side and stern windows should, in addition to the glass lights, have hinged dead-lights, with a view to their being always in place, and that all cargo ports should be strongly secured by iron cross bars.*~~

~~*"9, It is believed that all openings from and communications with the sea from engine-room and pipes should be protected by conical, or Kingston, or sluice valves, and similar precautions should be taken for all openings through the bottom of the ship, where damage to pipes or ship would admit water into the holds.*~~

~~*"10. It is considered that all steam vessels, if of iron, should have a brass-barrelled hand-pump to every compartment except the forward and after ones (the former to have a sluice cock), or that, asa substitute for these*~~

~~*pumps, there should be patent pumps having independent connexions to this extent. They should also have a donkey engine and pump capable of pumping from the bilge and from the sea, of feeding the boilers, and of*~~

~~*wholly*~~

~~*SHIT PrEViL Dy £246*~~

~~*throwing water on deck. All vessels should have one or more bilge-pumps, worked by the large engines, with bilge injection pipes if the engines have condensers. In large vessels the donkey engines should have a separate boiler high above the water-line, and also communication with the main boilers. All vessels should have a set of bilge pipes connecting every hold and the engine compartments with these pumps. As a security against fire there should be pumps on the upper deck, fitted as force pumps, and provided with a suflicient length of hose (with the necessary copper delivery jets) to reach either extremity of the vessel, and also provided with suction hose or pipes from the sea. The cocks by which the working of the pumps is regulated should be carefully arranged and marked, and great care should be taken that both cocks and pipes are accessible. A plan of the whole should accompany the ship's papers, and the crew should be periodically exercised in their use.*~~

~~*'11. The stowage of a ship, whether done by contract or not, should be done under inspection of the captain of the ship, and should be conducted under his own orders only ; and he alone should be held responsible for the good stowage of his ship. Ships are often very badly stowed, the weights being sometimes too low, thus causing them to roll with such rapid and violent motions as to carry away the spars, and otherwise endanger the safety of the ship, and at other times too high, thus making the ships crank, and liable to turn over. A ship may, however, generally, whatever her form, be so stowed as to avoid both dangers. As the character of the ship in these respects varies, so does the number of oscillations she would make per minute if she were set rolling in still water, by men running across her deck, or other means, and then allowed to come to rest; that is, if the ship be crank the number of oscillations per minute will be few, and if she be too stiff they will be numerous ; but, under the same conditions of stowage, the number will always be very*~~

~~*nearly the same, whatever the amount of the impulse to set her rolling may be. Although this peculiarity has long been known to scientific men, no such observations have been made in merchant ships as would justify any specific rule on the subject. It is, however, most desirable that information should be collected upon it, and that the attention of the owners and captains of vessels should be called to it.*~~

~~*"12. It is believed that the present rules of the Board of Trade regarding boats, life-boats, and their tackle are good in principle. The responsibility for keeping all boats in constant readiness and efficiency obviously rests on the captain, and must fix on him the blame for all neglect and its consequences. Every open boat built of iron or steel should be fitted with sufficient watertight spaces to float her.*~~

~~*"13. The system of proportioning anchors and cables by Lloyd's, and of proving under licence of the Board of Trade by Act of Parliament is so far satisfactory; but, as the proof-test alone cannot establish the excellence of the cable, the reputation of the makers must be relied upon.*~~

~~*'14. In order to provide for the rapid clearance of the upper deck from water which may break over the ship, flap-boards should be fitted to the lower part of the bulwarks, sufficient in number and in area to admit of the rapid escape of the water,*~~

~~***15. Water-closets on decks below or near the water-line may be the means of gradually and imperceptibly flooding the ship, and. endangering her safety, unless the pipes and valves are strong and are carefully fitted."*~~

~~*It isin the directions indicated in these recommendations that the honesty and skilfulness of the modern builder of steam and sailing ships of war come into play, and some judgment may be formed by the general public of the character of the ship by inquiring into matters upon which the council thought it neces- sary to make such recommendations. The guarantee which the public have of the fitness of passenger ships for service, as a question of proper construction and state of efficiency, is the sur- vey and certificates of the Board of Trade. The law runs thus :—*~~

~~*The owner of every steam vessel constructed or intended to carry passengers Board of*~~

~~*(except vessels which fall within the definition of foreign-going ships con- tained in the Mercantile Marine Act, 1850, and are employed in the convey-*~~

~~*ance of the royal public mails or despatches under contract with and under SUI'VEYS.*~~

~~*the superintendence of the lord high admiral or the commissioners for executing the office of lord high admiral) shall cause such steam vessel to be surveyed twice at least in every year, at the times hereinafter directed, by a shipwright surveyor and by an engineer surveyor appointed for the purposes of this Act by the lords of the said committee, such shipwright surveyor in the case of an iron steam vessel being a person properly qualified to survey iron steam vessels, and shall obtain a declaration of the sufficiency and good condition of the hull of such steamer, and of the boats and other equipments thereof, required by this Act; and also, if the lords of the said committee so require, a statement of the number of passengers (whether deck passengers or other passengers) which such vessel is constructed to carry, under the hand of such shipwright surveyor, and a declaration of the sufficiency and good condition of the machinery of such steamer under the hand of such engineer surveyor; and in such declarations it shall be dis- tinguished whether such vessel is in construction and equipments adapted for sea service as well as for river or lake service, or for river or lake service only; such declaration shall state the local limits within which such vessel is, in the judgment of the surveyor, adapted for plying ; and in the case of seagoing vessels the declaration of one of the surveyors shall contain a statement that he is satisfied that the compasses have been properly examined and adjusted ; and such owner shall transmit such declarations to the lords of the said committee within fourteen days after the dates thereof respect- ively.*~~

~~*As to the fifth recommendation of the council of the Institu- tion of Naval Architects, it must be observed that there is at present no law relating to the subdivision of steamships. There was a clause (No. 300) in the Merchant Shipping Act of 1854, which was virtually a reproduction of*~~

~~*clause 20 of the Steam Navigation Act of 1851, and which read as follows :—*~~

~~*"1, Every steamship built of iron of 100 tons or upwards, the building of which commenced after the 28th day of August 1846, and every steamship built of iron of less burden than 100 tons, the building of which commenced after the 7th August 1851 (except ships used solely as steam tugs), shall be divided by substantial transverse watertight partitions, so that the fore part of the ship shall be separated from the engine-room by one of such partitions, and so that the after part of such ship shall be separated from the engine- room by another of such partitions.*~~

~~*"2. Every steamship built of iron, the building of which commences after the passing of this Act, shall be divided by such partitions as aforesaid into not less than three equal parts, or as nearly so as circumstances permit.*~~

~~*"8. In such last-mentioned ships each such partition as aforesaid shall be of equal strength with the side plates of the ship with which it is in*~~

~~*. contact.*~~

~~*Ineffi- sient subdivi- ion of ron and teel hips,*~~

~~*cares LL DI we*~~

~~*"4, Every screw steamship built of iron, the building of whi h after the passing of this Act, shall, in addition to the BEGTE DereMioiie: penton, se a small watertight compartment inclosing the after extremity of the shaft."*~~

~~*The above law was repealed by the Act dated 29th July 1862, and on the 28th August 1863 the Adiniralty applied to the Board*~~

~~*watertight compartments when employed in conveyance of mails and passengers, observing that the Admiralty were still of Opinion to the Amendment Act of 1869 in respect of contract packets should not have been relaxed. They considered such vessels should have compartments so*~~

~~*arranged that if any one of them became filled with water the loss of buoyancy thereby occasioned should not endanger the safety of the ships, as recommended by them in their communication of the 17th December 1860. 'To this the Board of Trade replied (34 Sep- tember 1868) that their surveyors no longer had any power to require given watertight partitions to be fitted in passenger steam- ships—though they agreed with the Admiralty in thinking that steam vessels carrying passengers and mails should be provided with a sufficient number of watertight partitions,—and had no reason to suppose that the Admiralty would not insist on such partitions being fitted in all steamships employed in conveyance of mails. They further say that the enactments in the Act of 1854 were repealed, not because of any doubts as to the necessity of proper and sufficient watertight partitions, but because those enactinents which required only two of such partitions for all sizes aud classes of ships had become practically useless or mischievous, It was found that in large vessels more partitions than the Act required were necessary to secure the safety of the ship, and it was thought better to leave builders and designers unfettered in pro- viding extra strength and security to meet the various forms, sizes, and descriptions of ships than to tie them down by general statutory regulations which could not be so framed as to meet the varying wants and circumstances of the shipbuilding trade,*~~

~~*In a return by the Board of Trade to the HIouse of Commons, dated 11th August 1875, setting forth the instructions issued to their surveyors under the Merchant Shipping Acts, 1854 to 1873, clause 26 reads—*~~

~~*'Surveyors should not refuse to grant a declaration for a vessel solely on the ground that bulkheads are not fitted, that the ordinary bulkheads are not watertight, or that the bulkheads fitted are otherwise defective, unless they are of opinion that the want of, or the defective state of, the bulkheads renders the ship unseaworthy, in which case they are fully justified in refusing to grant a declaration. They should, in all cases in which they refuse to grant a declaration for a vessel in consequence of defects relative to bulkheads, forward to the Board of Trade a full statement of their reasons for thinking that those defects render the hull of the vessel unseaworthy. Collision watertight bulkheads, at least, must be fitted in all seagoing steamers. The surveyors are also to see that an*~~

~~*after watertight compart- nient is fitted to cover the stern-tube of the screw-shaft, both in old and in new vessels,"*~~

~~*This regulation has been reissued in the latest instructions to Board of Trade surveyors, dated 1884. It thus comes about that the number of bulkheads forming watertight conipartments, the number of doors in them, and how they are fastened, are inade the subject of consideration by the Board of Trade at their inspections ;- but the fact is that the great majority of ocean-going steamers are not divided into watertight compartments in any efficient nianner, and many losses in collision, grounding, and swamping are due to this. Although all steamships have some bulkheads, and some have many bulkheads, they are as a rule distributed in such a way, or are so stopped below the water-level, that for flotation purposes after perforation those lying between the foremost collision bulkhead and the after bulkhead through which the screw shaft passes are practically useless.*~~

~~*With the exception of some four hundred ships, there are no iron steamships afloat which would continue to float were a hole made in the bottom plating anywhere abaft the collision bulkhead and outside the engine-room, or which would not founder were water admitted through breaches made by the sea in weak superstructures and deck openings. Of the four hundred ships referred to as having properly designed bulkheads two hundred are essentially cargo-carriers. They are generally built with five subdivisions, the machinery space being one. ron sailing ships are without exception undivided into compartments. They have by law a collision bulkhead near the bow, and that is all. Between June 1881 and February 1883 there were about one hundred and twenty iron steamships lost, of speeds of nine to twelve knots, not one of which was well constructed according to the opinion of the council of the Institution of Naval Architects.*~~

~~*It may be said that wooden ships were not divided into water- tight compartments, but it must be remembered that in a wooden ship there is far more local resistance to a blow either in collision or by grounding, and that a wooden ship takes a much longer time to settle down in the water and sink. Also, when wood was employed for passenger and trading*~~

~~*ships speeds were much lower and traffic and risks of collision very much less.*~~

~~*The shipbuilding registries prescribe rules for the government*~~

~~*817*~~

~~*of the builder who desires to have their certificate, and these rules ave been so carefully framed and go honestly enforced that English-*~~

~~*ad ships are as a rule well 8t*~~

~~*of 330 feet long and above an additional bulkhead i i hold, extending to the saine height." cane eae*~~

~~*"The foremost or collision bulkhead i I Reem gente Cee In all cases to extend from the floor*~~

~~*the floor Plates to the upper deck in vessels with one, two and to the main deck in spar- The aftermost bulkhead will be required to exteud to the upper deck unless the arrange- ment of bulkheads be submitted to and approved by the committee, .. .*~~

~~*It is not intended by the foregoing remarks, serious as they are, to blot the splendid record of shipbuilding achievement in Great Britain during the last twenty years. The shipowners, ship- builders, marine engineers, Lloyd's Surveyors, and the Board of Trade have all shared in a development of shipping which, in amount and in general efficiency, is not only without parallel in the history of the world, but, as it still appears to us who have witnessed it, almost incredible. It still is to be regretted that expausion has been thought of and sought more ardently than greater security and efticiency. The men who have studied to lmprove their structural arrangements because of their love of prospect of recognition or reward,*~~

~~*There is, perhaps, no structure exposed to a which*~~

~~*combinations embraced in its structure is therefore most import- t. Some of these forces always act, whether the ship be at rest or in motion,*~~

~~*side, or she may be supported in the middle only, with both ends for*~~

~~*pressure of the water upon its body is equal to the total weight of the ship, it does not necessarily follow*~~

~~*pressures are very unequal.*~~

~~*If the vessel be supposed to be divided into a number of laminze of equal thickness, and all perpendicular to the vertical longi- tudinal section, it is evident that the after lamin comprised in the overhanging stern above water, and the fore laminee comprised in the projecting head also above water, cannot be supported by any upward pressure from the fluid, but their weight must be wholly sustained by their connexion with the supported parts of the ship. The lamina towards each extremity immediately con- tiguous to these can evidently derive only a very small portion of their support from the water, whilst towards the middle of the ship's length a greater proportionate bulk is immersed, and the upward pressure of the water is increased.*~~

~~*A ship floating at rest under the view just taken of the relative displacement of different portions of the body, if the weights on board are not distributed so that the different laminz may be supported by the upward pressure beneath them as equally as possible, may be supposed to be in the position of a beam supported at two points in its length at some distance from the centre, and with an excess of weight at each extremity. At sea it would be exposed to the same strain ; and if supported on two waves whose crests were so far apart that they left the centre and ends com- paratively unsupported, the degree of this strain would be much increased. The more these two points of support approach each other, or if they come so near each other that the vessel may be looked upon as supported on one wave, or on one point only in the middle of her length, the greater will be the tensile strain on the upper portion, and the crushing strain on the lower portion of the fabric of the ship. A vessel whose weights and displacements are so disposed as to render her subject*~~

~~*to a strain of this kind beyond what the strength of her upperworks will enable her to bear, will tend to assume a curved form.*~~

~~*The centre may curve upwards by the excess of the pressure beneath it, and the ends drop, producing what is called "hogging," The main remedy for these evils is in the strength of the deck and*~~

~~*XXI° — 103*~~

~~*Curves of*~~

~~*strains.*~~

~~*H.M.S. *€ Mino- taur."*~~

~~*818*~~

~~*upperworks, and their power to resist a tensile strain. There is seldom a want of sufficient strength in the lower parts of the vessel to resist the crushing or compressing force to which it is subjected. The decks of vessels should not, therefore, be too much cut up by broad hatchways ; and care should be taken to preserve entire as many strakes of the deck as possible. The tensile strength of iron can be brought to bear most beneficially in this respect. Though these are the strains to which a ship is most likely to be exposed, it by no means follows that there are no circumstances under which strains of the directly opposite tendency, when pitch- ing, or otherwise, may be brought by recoil to act upon the parts. The weights themselves in the centre of the ship may be so great that they may have a tendency to give a hollow curvature to the*~~

~~*form, and it is therefore equally necessary to guard against this |*~~

~~*evil. When this occurs, the vessel is technically said to be "sagged," in distinction to the contrary or opposite change of form by being hogged. The weight of machinery in a wooden steam-vessel, or the weight or undue setting up of the main-mast, will sometimes produce sagging. The introduction of additional kcelsons tended to lessen this evil, by giving great additional strength to the bottom, enabling it to resist extension, to*~~

~~*which, under such circumstances, it became liable ; and, as the strain upon the deck and upperworks becomes changed at the same time, they are then called upon to resist compression.*~~

~~*When the ship is on a wind, the lee-side is subjected to a series of shocks from the waves, the violence of which may be imagined from the effects they sometimes produce in destroying the bul- warks, tearing away the channels, &c. The lee-side is also sub- jected to an excess of hydrostatic pressure over that upon the weather side, resulting from the accumulation of the waves as they rise against the obstruction offered to their free passage. These forces tend in part to produce lateral curvature. When in this inclined position, the forces which tend to produce hogging when she is upright also contribute to produce this lateral curvature.*~~

~~*The strain from the tension of the rigging on the weather side when the ship is much inclined is so great as frequently to cause working in the topsides, and sometimes even to break the timbers on which the channels are placed. Additional strength ought therefore to be given to the sides of the ship at this place ; and, in order to keep them apart, the beams ought to be increased in strength in comparison with the beams at other parts of the ship.*~~

~~*The foregoing are the principal disturbing forces to which the fabric of a ship is subjected ; and it must be borne in mind that some of these are in almost constant activity to destroy the con- nexion between the several parts. Whenever any motion or working is produced by their operation between two parts, which ought to be united in a fixed or firm manner, the evil will soon increase, because the disruption of the close connexion between these parts admits an increased momentum in their action on each other, and the destruction proceeds with an accelerated pro- gression. This is soon followed by the admission of damp, and the unavoidable accumulation of dirt, and these then generate fermentation and decay. To make a ship strong, therefore, is at the same time to make her durable, both in reference to the wear and tear of service and the decay of materials. It is evident from the foregoing remarks that the disturbing influences which cause "hogging" are in constant operation from the moment of launch- ing the ship. As this curvature can only take*~~

~~*place by the com- pression of the materials composing the lower parts of the ship and the extension of those composing the upper parts, the importance trations of the ——–*~~

~~*aoe az yes Sy A SFR*~~

~~*the ‘ Minotaur ” AA | CN*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*displacement of ad- distribution of the and defects of buoy-*~~

~~*of preparing these separate parts with an especial view to withstand still-water strains*~~

~~*and the “Devas- 8 ip. 9.*~~

~~*jacent transverse*~~

~~*weight of the ships*~~

~~*ancy obtained from*~~

~~*the forces to which they are each to be subjected cannot be over- upon two ar-*~~

~~*tation.”*~~

~~*sections of the*~~

~~*and their lading.*~~

~~*the two curves B and W and set off from a new base line.*~~

~~*rated by the practical builder.*~~

~~*In his Manual of Naval Architecture, Mr W. H. White gives illus- moured ships in the British navy*~~

~~*In these diagrams the curves B represent the distribution of the buoyancy. The ordinates of the curve are proportionate to the ships. The curves W represent the The curves L repre- sent the excesses*~~

~~*Fig, 10.*~~

~~*| there.*~~

~~*SHIPBUILDING*~~

~~*excess of buoyancy above the line is exactly equal to the defect of buoyancy below it. The curves M indicate the bending moments. The ordinates of the curve lying above the base are obtained by summing all the moments, whether upwards or downwards, about the point in the length of the ship where the ordinate is taken. It may happen, as in the case of the " Devastation," that the moments will tend to cause hogging for a portion of the length and will then change their character, and at other por- tions of the length will tend to cause sagging. Where the curve M crosses the base line there is no strain of either hogging or sagging tending to bend the ship In the " Minotaur" there is a hogging tendency throughout. 'Theamount at the midship section is very great, being represented by the moment 4°5 feet x 10-690 tons. After Sir Edward Reed left the Admiralty he strongly expressed his fears that this strain was too considerable for safety in the "Minotaur" and "* Agincourt."*~~

~~*Fig. 11.*~~

~~*Fig. 12,*~~

~~*Designing.*~~

~~*The principal plans of a ship are the "'sheer" plan, giving in outline the longitudinal elevation of the ship; the '" body" plan, giving the shape of the vertical transverse sections; and the "half-breadth"' plan, giving the projections of transverse longi- tudinal sections. In addition to these the builder is furnished by the designer with elevations, plans, and sections of the interior parts of the ship, and of the framing and plating or planking.*~~

~~*The thicknesses or weights of all the component parts are specified in a detailed specification, in order that the ship when completed may have the precise weight and position of centre of gravity con- templated by the*~~

~~*designer. In the case of ships built for the British navy all the building materials are carefully weighed by an agent of the designer before they are put into place by the builder. As each section of the work is completed, the weight is compared with the designer's estimate in the designing office. As soon as the incomplete hull is floated the actual displacement is measured, and compared with the weights recorded as having gone into the ship. It is also the practice in the Royal Navy to calculate the position of the centre of gravity of the incomplete hull, and its draught of water before it is floated, in order to avoid all risk of upsetting from deficiency in stability at that stage of construction. The ship is usually found to float in precise accordance with the estimate. When completed ships float at a deeper draught than was intended, or are found to be more or less stable than was wished, this is nearly always due to additions and alterations made after the com- pletion of the design. Where the designer is at liberty to complete the ship in accordance with the original intention there ought to be precise correspondence between the design and the ship.*~~

~~*In designing a ship of novel type the designer has to pass all the building details through his mind and assign them their just weights and proportions and positions. Every plate and angle bar and plank, every bar and rod and casting and forging, and every article of equipment has to be conceived in detail and its effect estimated.*~~

~~*Building.*~~

~~*The term "laying off" is applied to the operation of transferring to the mould loft floor those designs and general proportions of a ship which have been drawn on paper, and from which all the preliminary calculations have been made and the form decided. The lines of the ship, and exact representations of many of the parts of which it is to be composed, are to be delineated there to their full size, or the actual or real dimensions, in order that nioulds or skeleton outlines may be made from them for the guidance of the workmen.*~~

~~*A ship is generally spoken of as divided into fore and after bodies, and these combined constitute the whole of the ship; they are supposed to be separated by an imaginary athwartship section at the widest part of the ship, called the midship section or dead- flat. The midship body is a term*~~

~~*applied to an indefinite length of the middle part of a ship longitudinally, including a portion of the fore-body and of the after-body. It is not necessarily parallel or of the same form for its whole length.*~~

~~*Those portions of a wooden ship which are termed the square and cant bodies may be considered as subdivisions of the fore-bodies and after-bodies. There is a square fore-body and a square after- body towards the middle of the ship, and a cant fore-body and a cant after-body at the two ends. In the square body the sides of*~~

~~*The | the frames are square to the line of the keel, and are athwartship*~~

~~*H. M.S. ** Devas- tation."*~~

~~*Laying off.*~~

~~*Fore and after bodies.*~~

~~*Timbers.*~~

~~*Keel,*~~

~~*Floors.*~~

~~*Plank- ing,*~~

~~*PHIPHRUILDIN Ee*~~

~~*vertical planes. In the cant bodies the sides of the frames are not square to the line of the keel, but are inclined aft in the fore-body and forward in the after-body. The reason for the frames in these portions of a wooden ship being canted is that, in these parts of the ship, the timber would be too much cut away on account of the fineness of the angle formed between an athwartship plane and the outline or water-line of the ship. The timber is there- fore turned partially round till the outside face coincides nearly with the desired outline, and it is by this movement that the side of a frame in the cant fore-body is made to point aft, and in the cant after-body to point forward.*~~

~~*In wooden ships the term "timbers" is sometimes applied to the frames only, but more generally to all large pieces of timber used in the construction. Timbers, when combined together to form an athwartship outline of the called frames, and sometimes ribs.*~~

~~*The keel, in the United Kingdom at least, is generally made of elm, on account of its toughness, and from its not being liable to split if the ship should take the ground, though pierced in all directions by the numerous fastenings passing through it. It is generally composed of as long pieces as can be obtained, united to each other by horizontal scarphs. angular recess cut into the side to receive the edge of the planks on each side of it. The keel is connected forward to the stem by a*~~

~~*Scarph, sometimes called the boxing scarph, and aft to the stern-*~~

~~*post by mortice and tenon. The apron is fayed or fitted to the after-side of the stem, and is intended to give shift to its searphs, the lower end scarphs to the deadwood. 'The keelson is an internal line of timbers fayed upon the inside of the floors directly over the keel, the floors being thus confined between it and the keel. Its use is to secure the frames and to give shift to the scarphs of the keel, and thus give strength to the ship to resist extension length- ways, and to prevent her hogging or sagging. The foremost end of the keelson scarphs to the stemson, which is intended to give shift to the scarphs connecting the stem and keel. The frames or ribs are composed of the strongest and most durable timber obtainable,*~~

~~*The floors in the Government service were carried across the keel*~~

~~*The rabbet of the keel is an |*~~

~~*819*~~

~~*with a short and long arm on either side alternately, so as to break joint, and between the frames the space was filled in solid. Longitudinal pieces of timber are worked round the interior of a ship for the purpose of receiving the ends of the beams of the several decks ; they are called shelves, and are of the greatest importance, not only for this purpose, but also as longitudinal ties and struts. The beams of a ship prevent the sides*~~

~~*from collapsing, and at the same time carry the decks. The beams are spaced, and their scantling settled upon, according to the strength required to be given to the decks, and to suit the positions of the masts and hatchways, and other arrangements connected with the economy of the ship. All beams have a curve upwards towards the middle of the ship, called the round-up. This is for the purpose of strength,*~~

~~*1 _ and for the convenience of the run of the water to the scuppers. body of a ship, are technically |*~~

~~*Wooden beams are single piece, two, three, or four piece beams according to the number of pieces of timber of which they are composed. The several pieces are searphed together, and dowelled and bolted, the scarphs being always vertical,*~~

~~*The connexion of the ends of the beams to the sides of the ship has been made in various ways. The points to be considered, with re- ference to this connexion, are—that the beam is required to act asa shore or strut, to prevent the sides of the ship from collapsing, and also as a tie to prevent their fallin g apart, that the beam shall not rise from its seat, and that it shall not work in a fore-and-aft direction,*~~

~~*That the beam may*~~

~~*be perfect. In order that it may act as a tie between the two sides, it is generally dowelled to the upper surface of the shelf on which it rests; and the under surface of the waterway plank which lies upon it is sometimes dowelled into it. These dowels, therefore, connect it with the shelf and the waterway, and through this means it is thus connected with the sides of the ship.*~~

~~*From the short outline previously given of the disturbing forces acting on a ship it will be seen that the strain on the ends of the beams to destroy their connexion with the side and loosen the fastenings must be very great when the ship is under sail, either*~~

~~*on a wind or before it—that is, either inclined or rolling. The*~~

~~= neon nal~~

~~= ti~~

~~halls be | ef i : | 1 it }~~

~~| Saw Birakis Anphior Stoel Z fi f if ii t~~

~~tt i} i} ti a 7 77~~

~~lo la Peal Rata re i | ©] Doisble &Singliastenmngy~~

~~SingleRatainy |~~

~~a~~

~~He by oy fae: Bh | ! tr haath rete ibe ete at ! bad jl es RAY ied ir aD Boy] EM A et~~

~~sie | aA) al~~

~~Tt H HSMP ea SSS 3 a ae dy) HERO {ii haa An , ny on~~

~~Fig. 13.~~

~~principal action of these forces is to alter the vertical angle made by the beam and the ship's side—that is, to raise or depress the beam, and so alter the angle between it and the side of the ship above or below it. On the lee-side the weight of the weather side of the ship and all connected with it, and of the decks and everything upon them, as well as the upward pressure of the water, all tend to diminish the angle made by the beam and the ship's side below it, and consequently increase the angle made between them above it. The contrary effect is produced on the weather side, where the tendency is to close the angle above the beam and open that below it. If the beam, when subjected to these strains, be considered as a lever, it will be evident that the fastenings to prevent its rising ought to be as far from the side as is consistent with the convenience or accommodation of the ship, and that, while the support should also be extended inwards, the fastening to keep down the beam-end should be as~~

~~*close to the end of the beam, and consequently to the ship's side, as it can be placed.*~~

~~*The plank, or skin, or sheathing of a ship, both external and internal, is of various thicknesses. A strake of planking is a range of planks abutting against each other, and generally extend- ing the whole length of the ship. A thick strake, or a combina- tion of several thick strakes, is worked wherever it is supposed that the frame requires particular support—for instance, internally over the heads and heels of the timbers, both externally and internally in men-of-war vessels between the ranges of ports, and internally to support the connexion of the beams with the sides and at the same time form a longitudinal tie. The upper strakes of plank, or assemblages of external planks, are called the sheer- strakes, The strakes between the several ranges of ports, begin-*~~

~~*| ning from under the upper-deck ports of a three-decked ship in the*~~

~~*British navy, were called the channel wale, the middle wale, and the main wale. The strake immediately above the main wale was called the black strake. The strakes below the main wale diminished from the thickness of the main wale to the thickness of the plank of the bottom, and were therefore called the diminishing strakes. The lowest strake of the plank of the bottom, the edge of which fits into the rabbet of the keel, is called the garboard strake. Plank is either worked in parallel strakes, when it is called "straight-edged," or in combination of two strakes, so that alternate seams are parallel. There are two methods of working these com- binations, one of which is called "anchor stock," and the other "top and butt." The difference will be best shown by fig. 18. The difference in the intention is that in the method of working two strakes anchor-stock fashion, the narrowest part of one strake always occurs opposite to the widest part of the other strake, and consequently the least possible sudden interruption of longitudinal fibre, arising from the abutment, is obtained. This description, therefore, of planking is used where strength is especially desirable. In top and butt strakes the intention is, by having a wide end anda narrow end in each plank, to approximate to the growth of the tree, and to diminish the difficulty of procuring the plank. When the planking is looked upon as a longitudinal tie, the advantage of these*~~

~~*edges being, as it were, imbedded into each other is apparent, all elongation by one edge sliding upon the other being thus prevented. The shift of plank is the manner of arranging the butts of the several strakes. In the ships of the British navy the butts were not allowed to occur in the same vertical line, or on the same timber, without the intervention of three whole strakes between them.*~~

~~*be an effective shore, nothing more is neces- Water- sary than that the abutment of the end against the ship's side may ways.*~~

~~*Fasten- ing,*~~

~~*Decks,*~~

~~*Caulk- ing.*~~

~~*820*~~

~~*Of the internal planking the lowest strake, or combination of strakes, in the hold, is called the limber-strake. A limber is a passage for water, of which there is oue throughout the length of the ship, on each side of the keelson, in order that any leakage may find its way to the pumps.*~~

~~*The whole of the plank in the hold is called the ceiling. Those strakes which come over the heads and heels of the timbers are worked thicker than the general thickness of the ceiling, and are distinguished as the thick strakes over the several heads. The strakes under the ends of the beams of the different decks in a man-of-war, and down to the ports of the deck below, if there were any ports, were called the clamps of the particular decks to the beams of which they are the support—asg the gun-deck clamps, the middle-deck clamps, &c. The strakes which work up to the sills of the ports of the several decks were called the spirketting of those decks—as gun-deck spirketting, upper-deck spirketting, &c.*~~

~~*The fastening of the plank is either ""single," by which is meant one fastening only in each strake as it passes each timber or frame ; or it may be "double," that is, with two fastenings into each frame which it crosses; or, again, the fastenings may be "double and single," meaning that the*~~

~~*fastenings are double and single alternately in the frames as they crossthem. The fastenings of planks consist generally either of nails or treenails, excepting at the butts, which are secured by bolts. Several other bolts ought to be driven in each shift of plank as additional security. Bolts which are required to pass through the timbers as securities to the shelf, waterway, knees, &c., should be taken advantage of to supply the place of the regular fastening of the plank, not only for the sake of economy, but also for the sake of avoiding unneces- sarily wounding the timbers.*~~

~~*The decks of a wooden ship must not be considered merely as platforms, but must be regarded as eae er an important part towards the general strength of the whole fabric. They are*~~

~~*enerally laid in a longitudinal direction only, and are then use- Ful as a tie to resist extension, or as a strut to resist compression. The outer strakes of decks at the sides of the ship are generally of hard wood, and of greater thickness than the deck itself ; they are called the waterway planks, and are sometimes dowelled to the upper surface of each beam. Their rigidity and strength is of great importanee, and great attention should be paid to them, and care taken that their searphs are well secured by through-bolts, and that there is a proper shift between their searphs and the scarphs of the shelf.*~~

~~*When the decks are considered as a tie, the importance of keep- ing as many strakes as possible entire for the whole length of the ship must be evident; and a continuous strake of iron or steel plates beneath the decks is of great value in this respeet. The straighter the deck, or the less the sheer or upward eurvature at the ends that may be given to it, the less liable will it be to any alteration of length, and the stronger will it be. The ends of the different planks forming one strake were made to butt on one beam, and, as the fastenings are driven close to the ends, they did not pe much strength to resist being torn out. The shifts of the*~~

~~*utts, therefore, of the different strakes required great attention, because the transference of the longitudinal strength of the deck from one plank to another was thus made by means of the fasten- ings to the beams, the strakes not being united to each other sideways. The introduetion of iron decks or partial decks under the wood has modified this.*~~

~~These fastenings have also to withstand the strain during the process of eaulking, whieh has a tendeney to force the planks sideways from the seam ; and, as the edges of planks of hard wood will be less crushed or compressed than those of soft wood when acted on by the caulking-iron, the strain to open the seam between them to receive the caulking will be greater than with planks of softer wood, and will require more secure fastenings to resist it. It may also be remarked that the quantity of fastenings should increase with the thickness of the plank which is to be secured, for the set of the oakum in eaulking will have the greater meehani- cal effect the thicker the edge.~~

~~When the planks are fastened, the seams or the intervals between the edges of the strakes are filled with oakum, and this is beaten in or caulked with such care and foree that the oakum, while undisturbed, is almost as hard as the plank itself. If the openings of the seam were of equal widths throughout their depth between the planks, it would be impossible to make the caulking sufficiently compact to resist the water. At the bottom edges of the seams the planks should be in contact throughout their length, and from this contact they should gradually open upwards, so that, at the outer edge of a plank 10 inches thiek, the space should be about 4% of an ineh, that is, about vz of an ineh open for every inch of thickness. It will henee be seen that, if the edges of the planks are so prepared that when laid they fit closely for their whole thickness, the force required to eompress the outer edge by driving the caulking-iron into the seams, to open them sufficiently, must be very great, and the fastenings of the planks must be sueh as to be able to resist it. Bad caulking is very injurious in every~~

~~way, as leading to leakage and to the rotting of the planks them-~~

~~selves at their edges.~~

~~Ships are generally built on blocks of about & inch to a foot. them. The inclined plane or sliding plank on which they are launehed has rather more inclination, or about {inch to the foot for large ships, and a slight inerease for smaller vessels, This inclination will, however, in some~~

measure, depend upon the depth of water into which the ship is to be launched.

While a ship is in progress of being built her weight is partly supported by her keel on the blocks and partly by shores. In order to launch her the weight must be taken off these supports and transferred to a movable base ; and a platform must be erected for the movable base to slide on. This platform must not only be laid at the necessary inclination, but must be of sufficient height to enable the ship to be water-borne and to preserve her from striking the ground when she arrives at the end of the ways. For this purpose an inclined plane a, a (fig. 14), purposely left unplaned to diminish the adhesion, is laid on each side the keel, and at about one-sixth the breadth of the vessel distant from it, and firmly secured on blocks fastened in the slipway. This

Fig. 14,

inclined plane is called the sliding-plank. A long timber, called a bilgeway b, b, with a smooth under-surface, is laid upon this plane ; and upon this timber, as a base, a temporary frame-work of shores ¢, c, called " poppets," is erected to reach from the bilge- way to the ship. The upper part of this frame-work abuts against a plank d, temporarily Raton to the bottom of the ship, and firmly cleated by cleats ¢, ¢, also temporarily secured to the bottom. When it is all in place, and the sliding-plank and under side of the bilgeway finally greased with tallow, soft soap, and oil, the whole framing is set close up to the bottom, and down on the sliding piak, by wedges f, f, called slivers or slices, by which means the ship's weight is brought upon the "launch " or cradle.

When the launch is thus fitted, the ship may be said to have three keels, two of which are temporary, and are secured under her bilge. In consequence of this width of support, all the shores may be safely taken away. This being done, the blocks on which the ship was built, excepting a few, according to the size of the ship, under the foremost end of the keel, are gradually taken from under her as the tide rises, and her weight is then transferred to the two temporary keels, or the launch, the bottom of which launch is formed by the bilgeways, resting on the well-greased inclined planes. The only preventive now to the launching of the ship 1s a

~~*short shore, called a dog-shore on each side, with its hee firmly cleated on the immovable platform or sliding-plank, and its head abutting against a eleat secured to the bilgeway, or base of the movable part of the launch. Consequently, when this shore is removed, the ship is free to move, and her weight forees her down the inclined plane to the water. To prevent her running out of her straight course, two ribands are secured on the sliding- plank, and strongly shored. Should the ship not move when the dog-shore is knocked down, the blocks remaining under the fore part of her keel must be consecutively removed, until her weight overcomes the adhesion, or until the action of a serew against her fore-foot forees her off.*~~

~~*A different mode of launching is sometimes practised in British merchant-yards, and has been long in use in the French doekyards,*~~

~~*allowing the keel to take the entire weight of the vessel. The two pieees a, a, which are shown in fig, 15 as being secured to the*~~

~~*which are laid at a deelivity Launch- This is for the facility of launching ing,*~~

~~*eHUPEUIRDING 821*~~

~~*ship's bottom, are the only pieces which need be repared according | iy i : justi ial i to es system ae ey the whole of the regina: bate Tiguan, ot ee Rete ae a ee eee available for every launch. A space of about half an inch is left Where ships have to meet the stress of é between them and the balk timber placed beneath them, as it | sea faith fatness of work is even more 'aeee ae rien 1s not intended that the ship should bear on these balk timbers in necessary to have perfect work, but there must also be multiplied launching, but merely be supported by them in the event of her safeguards and provisions against damage by shot, shell, ram, and heeling over. The ship, therefore, is launched wholly on the torpedo as well as against the enemies which are common to all sliding-plank ¢, fitted under the keel. P : ships. In the article Navy the peculiarities of the ship of war are If a ship is coppered before launching, so that putting her into | described. Regarding them here simply as ships, they may be said a dry-dock for that purpose becomes unnecessary, 1t is then desir- | to be*~~

~~*distinguished neither by size nor speed. They have been far able that she should be launched without any cleats attached to her outstripped in size, the longest English ship of war built within bottom. The two sides of the cradle are prevented from being forced | the last twenty years being only 325 feet in length, while there apart when the weight of the ship is brought upon them by chains | are Atlantic passenger ships 200 feet longer. They have also passing under the keel. Each portion of frame-work composing | been outstripped in speed. The hichest speed ever attained in a the launch has two of these chains attached to it, and brought | vessel of war is that of the "Iris" and '"' Mercury"; and as they under the keel to a bolt which passes slackly through one of the | are only 300 feet long it is easier in vessels of greater length to get poppets, and is secured by @ long forelock, with an iron handle, | higher speeds with less engine power, and easy also to maintain it reaching above the water-line, so that when the ship is afloat it | in a Seaway both as a question of form and power, and also as a may be drawn out of the bolt. The chain then draws the bolt, and | matter of coal endurance. The following table gives the relative in falling trips the cradle from under the bottom. There should dimensions of large 14-knot ships :— be at least two chains on each side secured to the fore-poppets, two on each side secured to the after-poppets, and two on each side Shin' Length divided , |Dispt. in to the stopping-up, and this only for the launch of a small ship ; en aes OWater tice. LHP. |'"Tons. |(Dispt.y in larger ships the number will necessarily be increased according $$: to the weight of the vessel and the tendency that she may have, " Adriatic." ft. in.*~~

~~*according to her form, to separate the bilgeways. This tendency (White Star Line) "Gig = 10°45 | 3,600] 8,250] 408°3 @i6 = 5°42) 8,000 | 10,886} 491:2*~~

~~*on the part of a sharp ship by a rising floor, or by her wedge- shaped form in the fore and after bodies, is great, but there is not || H.M.S. 'Є Dreadnought," much probability of a ship heeling over to one side or the other.*~~

~~*Slop The importance of the work of the designer cannot be too highly H.M.S, "Sultan," ....., 586 9°64| 8,600] 9,286} 441:8 work, estimated.*~~

~~*Unfortunately there is, as has been said "slop work" + ¢e wa 39 324 0 in designing as well as in putting the structure together. There || MS. tee a 750 — 4°32 | 8,000 | 11,500 | 509°5 is often an absence of any attempt at precautions where multiplied || II. M.S. '* Neptune," yy | BOLO 5°01| 8,500! 9,068) 434-7 accidents have shown them to be necessary, as well as inconceivable late 'Independencia,) 60 10 : :*~~

~~*carelessness in the details rendering provisions for security, where : ; :*~~

~~*they exist in principle, useless in practice. _ The differences between the amount and complexity of fitting Cost, In the Report of the Royal Commission on Unseaworthy Ships, | 1 the ship of war and the merchant ship are represented by the*~~

~~*dated September 22, 1 873, we read as follows :—"Competent wit- | greatly increased cost per ton weight of hull. It must, however,*~~

~~*hesses state that many merchant ships are built with bad iron, that | be premised that the war ship has the weight of hull kept down*~~

~~*they are ill put together, and sent to sea in a defective condition, | 0 a very low standard to enable her to carry her offensive and*~~

~~*It is also sai ; th ithout addi- | defensive equipment,—far lower than is usual in the merchant eg eee nee Ee ae crequently lengthened without addi ship. The first-class merchant ship costs £28 per ton weight of*~~

~~*tional strength, and are = ei eg Rig ships. The number hull and about £13 per indicated howss-oser ts the epee*~~

~~*of iron steamers which have been Jost in the last few years, : k : :*~~

~~*many of them having been surveyed and classed under the London | The ship of war built by the same builders under contract with or Liverpool registers, raises a question whether the regulations | the Government costs from £60 to £65 per ton weight of hull of these registers are sufficiently stringent to insure good ship. | for unarmoured ships, and from £70 to £75 or more for armoured building. The directors of the Bureau Veritas*~~

~~have deemed jt | Ships. In the case of an unarmoured vessel, having a protecting necessary to revise the rules of their register, and to increase the pote chen ae and magazines, recently ordered, the prices~~

~~scantling, In the race of competition among shipbuilders it is probable that inferior materials and bad workmanship are ad- | General average…... orga conto £60 10 0 per ton weight of hull. mitted into ships." Average of three London firms. 66 0 0 '5 its The Commissioners on Unseaworthy Ships, referring to the Accepted tender……cccecesceee bf 6 Oo iY a proposal that the Board of Trade should superintend the con- The engines for the same vessel were :— struction, the periodical inspection, the repair, and the loading #4 F : : : GORA AV ORR BI 6.666 8onciixdaedenssSier sce osacee £15 8 0 per I.H.P. of all British merchant ships, said: "We consider it to be a pu ? : ' : : ' Average of three London firmis……. iy & 2 45 question worthy of serious consideration, whether, in the case 8 0 : : CCOPLON HONDO 5.5.65:55. 50204 cppnaeeve cramarinevecees 11 oe of passenger ships, the certificate of the Board of Trade, so far : es as regards specific approval, should not be expressly confined to In the case of a larger armoured ship the rates were :— the number of passengers to be allowed and to the accommodation Average price per ton Weigh! Of Hull. & cchssswusswe caaveeces eo. 2. @ for their health, comfort, and general security,—all questions of | Accepted Lesions a apr er apzrans eis nase ene a 5 o unseaworthiness of hull, machinery, and equipment being left | Average price per I.H.P. of engines! ..... if i : to the owners, subject only to a general power of interference | Accepted tender ……..0… ccssceeeteeeeeeeeseeeeeee LON 7~~

~~Protected Protected Protected First | Gare. | CGS? | arctnos Satpe, | ta- Knce Ships, | te 1s Konus yan eee | Mepruars: Ships Unarmoured, rl aig pebyigee) 19 to 20 eee, | (Garbetie) "Pneteatiod | aagetkon Sheathea, | 'nots.~~

~~% 86~~

~~BPMN BAG ooo occ Loose soedvvncs fev easeecoce.,.SEM UNG a weevanils's iavite MEAS ele Seryeisisied tee ine 8,100? 218 152 ot im We i propelling machinery ……. 1310 240 1,060 485 ee 4 i " is~~

~~guns,mounting,andammunition| ... aie 840 285 6 A : or fel, at usual draft… .:..... 1500 600 900 500 ee / ps as Cost of hull per ton of its a £32 £20 £81°2 £56 ry : in po »» propelling machinery, per ton of its weight £60 | £50-55 | £105 egal~~

~~distinguishing characteristics of the ship of war. They will not Charac- be speed or size or coal endurance, or the power of striking with teristics the ram, the torpedo, or the gun. It will be quite easy to arm of war merchant ships with these weapons, and some of these ships ships.~~

~~The use of heavy ordnance in recent times as the Sole weapon for naval warfare brought about a marked distinction between the merchant vessel and the war shi , which had not previously existed. The revival of the ram and the adoption of the torpedo~~

~~tend to abolish this distinction and to bring about an approxima- , Lhe indicated horse-power referred to here fs that obtained by natural draft tion again. 2 Of this the vertical armour (costing before it is worked up, £70 to £90 per It is difficult to say what, in the very near future, will be the | ton) is nearly 2000 tons. — 3 Average of six vessels built by Elder,~~

~~Changes needed in mer- chant ships.~~

~~Armour,~~

~~Com- mittee on designs,~~

~~822~~

~~already outstrip the war vessel in the important advantages of size and ficetness and carrying power. Itis apparently in pro- tective advantages that the essential difference will lie.~~

~~The merchant ship is badly provided against fatal damage by collision, or by a blow delivered in any manner by which water is admitted into the ship. The propelling machinery of these ships and their steering apparatus are also dangerously exposed to artillery fire. Excepting torpedo boats, the ship of war of any size has its propelling machinery~~

~~*either under water or under cover of armour, and in a great number of cases there is either protection for the steering apparatus or there are two propellers. The approximation towards war-ship arrangements which is needed in the merchant ship is the adoption of more than one screw and of greater breadth of ship, so that defences round machinery may be created in time of war. Both these changes in merchant-ship practice are demanded also by mercantile interests. The increase in breadth amidships would greatly reduce the risk of foundering in collisions and give more spacious accommodation amidships. Such increase when accompanied by fine ends is also favourable to speed.*~~

~~*The use of two screws is economical of power, and is a much- needed security against the evil results of an accident to an engine, a shaft, or a propeller. The time will doubtless come when a single propeller in a large passenger ship will be regarded as an unpardonable fault, and when the division into compartments now common will be held to be no better than a delusion and a snare.*~~

~~*The protection given to the regular ships-of-war by side armour, or by a protecting deck, at or near the water-line, will probably become a definite and indispensable feature in them, and may, perhaps, be their only distinguishing characteristic, apart from their outfit and equipment.*~~

~~*If this should prove to be the issue of events, their course wiil have been very indirect. In the ships-of-war of the last century no attempt was made to employ armour on the sides or to prevent the passage of projectiles and water into the holds by means of a protecting deck. There was a deck just below the water-line, but it had no protective qualities. It served, among other things, to furnish passage ways in action for the carpenter and his crew to get at the inner side of the wooden walls of the ship at and near the water-line, so that when shot entered there the holes might be immediately plugged. When screw propulsion was introduced into these ships, and it was found practicable to keep the engines and boilers under water, it would have been possible to place a deck over the machinery and beneath 'the water, which would have greatly added to the security of the engines, boilers, and magazines. The space above this deck niight also have been so subdivided into compartments as to have protected the*~~

~~*buoyancy and stability of the ship against the immediately fatal results of the invasion of water. The protection of the buoyancy and stability by these means would not have been absolute, in the sense of making the ship safe, but it would have been of the utmost value as compared with ships, otherwise similar, but having no such protection.*~~

~~*Thirty years passed between the date when serew-propeller engines were placed beneath the water-level in ships of war and that at which a committee on designs, under the presidency of Lord Dufferin, pro- posed to place such a covering deck over them, or to construct a water-line raft-body. The proposal of the main body of the com- mittee was to associate such a raft-deck for the protection of the buoyancy and stability of the ship against artillery with a central armoured citadel. That of the minority was to suppress the armour in the regiou of the water-line entirely, and to protect buoyancy, stability, machinery, and magazines by a raft-deck alone. In 1873 the plan as indicated by the main body of the committee was put into practice nearly simultaneously in the " Duilio" and " Dandolo" in Italy and in the " Inflexible"" in England. In 1878 the system as conceived in principle by the minority of the committee of 1871, although not in the manner they recommended, was adopted in much smaller vessels in the British navy. A raft-deck was intro- duced into the "Comus" class of corvettes of 2,880 tons displace- ment, a class which was regarded as unarmoured. Since that date the raft-deck has been adopted in a more or less complete form in nearly all classes of unarmoured ships in the English navy. So it has come about that, out of some 850 unarmoured ships of war built and building in Europe, 47 have such protecting raft-decks. Of these 82 are English. There can be no doubt that all unarmoured ships of war will eventually be proteeted in this manner. The num- ber of so-called ironclads built and building in Europe is 270. Of these, 34 are based on the recommendation of the committee on designs ; 18 of them are English. There are six other English ships with central citadels and under-water protecting decks, built more than twenty years ago, but the raft-body principle is absent in them.*~~

~~*If the passage from the steam line-of-battle ship of 1840-1860 to the " Admiral" class of 1884 had been made under the guidance of the principles of the comniittee of 1871, European nations would not find*~~

~~*themselves possessed of large fighting ships covered from end to end, or over large areas of their sides, with thin armour, penetrable to a very large proportion of the guns brought against them, But the sailors of 1854-1860 did not take the view that*~~

~~*SHIPEUVUALPAR SE*~~

~~*buoyancy and stability, and machinery and magazines, were the vital parts, needing defenee by armour or by a raft-deck. They dreaded the effeets of shell exploding between decks, setting fire to the ships, and converting the decks, crowded with men, into slaughter-honses. Their demand was, " Keep out the shells." So it came about that iron armour-plates, thick enough to keep out the most powerful shell of the time, were worked upon the sides of the ships, and the guns were fought through ports cut in this armour. This feeling was so strong that the English Admiralty built the "Hector" and " Valiant" with armoured batterics overlapping by many feet at each end the armour beneath them, which protected the buoyancy, stability, machinery, and magazines. Guns in-creased in power, and the armour was gradually thickened to resist them, until from 44 inches of armour, through which broadside ports were cut, 9 inches and 10 inches were reached. But this thickening of the armour had so reduced the possible number of the guns in a ship of moderate size, and the guns required for breaching such armour had so inereased in weight, that the broadside ship had to give way to the turret or barbette ship, in which about four such guns were all that could be carried, and these had to be worked on turn-tables in or near the central line of the ship.*~~

~~*The point now reached in all navies is that the broadside iron- clad with ports cut through an armoured side, as invented in France by M. Dupuy de Léme, and copied by every power, is obsolete. Guns must be worked singly or in pairs on revolving turn-tables, each turn-table being surrounded by an armoured tower, forming the loading chamber or protecting the mechanism. The side armour protecting the buoyancy, stability, machinery, and magazines, although not introdueed for that purpose originally, is retained in France for very large ships, is given up*~~

~~*in Italy in favour of a raft-body, and is retained partially in England and Germany in conjunction with a raft-body.*~~

~~*The use of armour has arrested the development of the shell, But it is not inconceivable that its abandonment in frout of the long batteries of guns in the French and Italian ships will invite shell attack, and make existence in such batteries, if they are at all crowded, onee more intolerable. It remains to be seen whethier in that case exposure will be accepted, or a new demand made for armour, at lcast against the magazine gun aud the quick-firing gun. If exposure is aecepted, it will be on the ground that the number of men at the guns is now very few, that the gun positions are numerous and the fire rapid, and that, if the guns had once more to be fought through ports in armour, the number of gun positions would be reduced, and the fragments of their own walls,' when struck by heavy projectiles, would be more damaging than the projectiles of the enemy.*~~

~~*Internal armour for the protection of the heavy armour-breach- ing guns must be retained so long as such guns are used, and if they were abandoned an enemy could cover himself with armour invulnerable to light artillery. This the French attempted to do in inaugurating the system. They have been driven from it by the growth of the gun. Abandon the heavy gun, and complete armour-plating might again be adopted.*~~

~~*We must conclude that the buoyancy, stability, machinery, and magazines must be protected as far as possible against fatal damage from a single blow of these armour-breaching guns. The tendency will be to come to the lightest form of such protection. That lightest form appears to be a protecting deck a little above the water-level throughout the greatest part of its surface, but sloping down at the sides and at the ends, so as to meet the side walls of the ship under the water-line. However the armour is arrauged (apart from a complete covering with invulnerable plat- ing), — whether asa belt with its upper edge 3 feet ont of the water, as in the French ships; as a central armoured citadel and a raft- body at the ends, like the English and German ships ; or as a raft- body throughout, like the Italian ships,— shot holes in action will admit water and gradually reduce the necessary stability of the ship. In the French ships the*~~

~~*assistance of the unarmoured upper parts is as necessary to prevent them from upsetting in anything but smooth water as is the assistance of the unarmoured raft ends in the English and German ships. In the intact condition the English ships have far greater stability than those of France. In the English ships a reserve of stability is provided, against the con- tingency of loss by injuriesinaction. Inthe French ships no more is provided than is required for the intact condition. The French have not accepted the position taken up in England that much greater initial stability may be given to heavily-armoured broad ships than is usually given, without causing heavy rolling. Nor have they aeeepted the further incontrovertible truth that the free passage of water in the raft-body from side to side of the ship in rolling is rapidly effective in quelling the motion and bringing the ship to rest in the upright position.*~~

~~*Propulsion.*~~

~~*The propulsion of ships by sails differs from the drifting of Sails.*~~

~~*bodies in the air before the wind in a most important respect. Ships may drift or sail in the direct course of the wind, and they*~~

~~*eHIIPRPUTUDIRN &*~~

~~*will then differ from air-borne bodies only in the comparative slowness imposed by the resistance of the water. Ships having the same length as breadth, or rather opposing the same form and area to side progress as to forward progress could never do other than sail before the wind. No disposition of canvas could make them deviate to the right or left of their course to leeward. But by an alteration of form giving them greater length than breadth, and greater resistance to motion sideways than to motion endwise, they came to possess the power of being able not only to sail to the right or left of the course of the wind, before the wind, but also to sail towards the wind. The wind can be made to impel them towards the point from which it is blowing by means of the lengthened form acted on by the resistance of the water,*~~

~~*Motion directly towards the wind cannot be maintained, but by sailing obliquely towards it first to one side and then to the other progress is*~~

~~*made in advance, and the vessel ‘ beats to windward.” The action is like that which would be required to blow a railway ear to the eastward by the action of an easterly wind. If the line of rails were due east and west, and the wind were always direct from the east, the thing could not be done. But with a wind to the south or north of cast, by setting a sail in the car so that its surface lies between the course of the wind and the direction of the rails, it would then receive the impulse of the wind on its back and would drive the car forwards. There would be a large part of the force of the wind ineffective because of the obliquity of the sail; and of the part which is effective a large portion would be tending to force the car against the rails sideways, but there would be progression to windward. In the case of ‘the ship the resistance to side motion is due to the unsuitability of the proportions and form for progress in that direction as compared with progress ahead, but still there is motion transversely to the line of keel. This notion is called leeway. As the ship moves to leeward and ahead simultaneously there is a point of balance of the forces of the fluid against the immersed body—a centre of fluid pressure. The object of the constructor is to place the masts in the ship in such positions that the centre of pressure of wind upon the sails shall fall a little behind or astern of this centre of resistance of the fluid. In that case there is a tendency in the ship to turn round under the action of these two forces, and to turn with her head towards the wind. This tendency is corrected by the action of the rudder. If the tendeney to turn were the other way, although that could also be corrected by the rudder, yet there would be danger of the wind overcoming the rudder action in squalls, and the ship would then come broadside to the wind. In that case, while she might have been quite capable of bearing the pressure of the wind blowing obliquely upon her sails, she might have her sails blown away, or her masts broken, or be her- self capsized. by the direct impulsion of the wind upon the sail and upon the hull of the ship.*~~

~~*Many cxamples of disposition of sails might be given. Their dis- position is always made to satisfy the conditions that as much sail as possible is required, but if the vessel is small it must be being instantly let go in a squall, or when the wind is gusty. Otherwise, where it cannot be readily Ict go, its area shoyld be capable of reduction in squally weather, still retaining its efficiency, so that no pressure of the wind should be capable*~~

~~*of upsetting the ship. Ifa sudden violent squall should strike the ship she should find relief, not by a large inclination, but by the blowing away of the sails out of the bolt-ropes, or the carrying away of the masts. One or other of these must of course happen if the area of canvas and the strength of the sails and of the spars are so proportioned at the moment the squall strikes the ship as to be less than the resistance offered by the stability of the ship to a large inclination. Ships are sometimes, when struck by a squall, blown over on to their sides, the sails being in the water. If the sails or spars are then cut away or otherwise got rid of the ship may right herself.*~~

~~*In the Transactions of the Institution of Naval Architects for 1881, Mr W. H. White says :—*~~

~~*"Any investigation of the behaviour of sailing ships at sea must take account of the conditions belonging to the discussion of their rolling when no sail is set, and must superpose upon those conditions the other and no less difficnlt conditions relating to the action of the wind upon the sails, the ee ot heaving motions upon the stability, and the steadying effect of sail-spread.*~~

~~*"'It may fairly be assumed that the labours of the late Mr W. Froude have made it possible to predict, with close approximation to truth, the behaviour of a ship whose qualities are known and which has no sails set, when rolling among waves of any assumed dimensions. By a happy combination of experimental investigation and mathematical procedure, Mr Froude succeeded in tracing the motion from instant to instant, and checked the results thus obtained by comparison with the actual observations made in a sea-way on the behaviour of the 'Devastation.' The details of his method, and examples of its application, will be found in the Transactions for 1875, and in the appendix to the report of the 'Inflexible' committee.—*~~

~~*'The conclusion I have reached, after a careful study of the subject, is that we need very considerable extensions of our knowledge of the laws of wind-pressure before more exact investigations will be possible so as to enable us to pronounce upon the safcty or danger of a sailing ship. Nor must it be overlooked that sailing ships are'not to be treated as macliines*~~

~~*worked under certain fixed conditions. Their safety depends at least as much tpon seamanship and skilful management as upon the qualities with which they are endowed by their designers. Moreover, itis idle to pretend*~~

~~*capable of*~~

~~*823*~~

~~*Se comparisc For example, the righting moment at different angles of inclination is usually compared with the corresponding 'sail-monient'; but even here certain assumptions have to be made as to the amount of sail to be reckoned in the calculation, and as to the effective wind-pressure per unit of sail-area. Between ship and ship these assumptions are unobjection-*~~

~~*"The calculations of curves of stability and the determination of the ranges of stability for ships form important extensions of earlier practice.*~~

~~*cannot be fixed, and because some important conditions in the problem are Certain arbitrary standards may be set up, and ships may be pronounced safe or unsafe ; but this is no solution of the problem. There are classes of ships in existence which have been navigated in all weathers, under sail, and in all parts of the world, which might be pronounced unsafe if tested by some of the standards that have been proposed ; but the fact that nota single vessel of that class has been capsized or lost at sea during*~~

~~*For the different kinds of sails, and for sailmaking, see Sart, The 'Comet' was the first steam-vessel built in Europe that Steam. plied with success in any river or open sea. She was built in Scotland in 1811-12 for Mr Henry Bell, of Helensburgh, having been designed as well as built by Mr John Wood, at Port- Glasgow. The little vessel was 49 fect long and 11 feet wide. Her engine was of about four horse-power, with a single vertical cylinder. She made her first voyage in January 1812, and plied regularly between Glasgow and Greenock at about 5 miles an hour. There had been an earlier commercial success than this with a steam vessel in the United States, for a steamer called the "Clermont" was built in 1807, and plied*~~

~~*successfully on the Hud- son River. This boat, built for Fulton, was engined by the English firm of Boulton & Watt. The reason for this choice of engineers by Fulton appears to have been that Fulton had seen a still earlier steamboat for towing in canals, also built in Scotland, in 1801, for Lord Dundas, and having an engine on Watt's double- acting principle, working by means of a connecting rod and erank and single stern wheel. This vessel, the "Charlotte Dundas," was successful so far as propulsion was concerned, bnt was not regularly employed because of the destructive effects of the propeller upon the banks of the canals. The engine of the canal boat was made by Mr William Symington, and he had previously made a marine engine for Mr Patrick Miller, of Dalswinton, Dumfriesshire. This*~~

~~*'last-named engine, made in Edinburgh in 1788, marks, it is said,*~~

~~*the first really satisfactory attempt at steam navigation in the world. It was employed to drive two central paddle-wheels in a twin pleasure-boat (a sort of "Castalia") on Dalswinton Loch. The cylinders were only 4 inches in diameter, but a speed of 5 miles an hour was attained in a boat 25 feet long and 7 feet broad. The first steam vessel built in a royal dockyard was also called the "Comct." She appears to have been built about the year 1822, and was engined by Boulton & Watt. This ship had two engines of forty horse-power each, to be worked in pairs on the plan understood to have been introduced by the same firm in 1814, In 1838 the "Sirius" and "Great Western " commenced the regular Atlantic passage under steam. The latter vessel, proposed by I. K. Brunel, and engined by Maudslay Sons & Field, made the passage at about 8 or 9 knots per hour. One year earlier (1837) Captain Ericsson, a scientific veteran who Serew is still among us (1886), towed the Admiralty barge with their pro- lordships on board from Somerset House to Blackwall and back pellers, at the rate of 10 miles an hour in a small steam vessel driven by a serew.*~~

~~*The screw did not come rapidly into favour with the Admiralty, and it was not until 1842 that they first became possessed of a screw vessel. This vessel, first called the " Mermaid" and afterwards the " Dwarf," was designed and built by the late Mr Ditchburn, and engined by Messrs Rennie. In 1841-3 the " Rattler," the first ship-of-war propelled by a*~~

~~*screw, was built for and by the Admiralty under the general superintendence of Brunel, who was also superintending at the same time the construction of the "Great Britain," built of iron. The engines of the "Rattler," of 200 nominal horse-power, were made by Messrs Maudslay. They were constructed, like the paddle-wheel engines of that day, with vertical cylinders and overhead crank- shaft, with wheel gearing to give the required speed to the screw. The next screw engines made for the Royal Navy were those of the "Amphion," 300 nominal horse-power, made in 1844 by Miller and Ravenhill. In these the cylinders took the horizontal*~~

~~*Econo- mical engines.*~~

~~*Reduce- tion in weight of*~~

~~*engines,*~~

~~*Effi- cieney.*~~

~~*824*~~

~~*position, and they became the type of serew engines in general use. This ship had a serew-well and hoisting gear for the serew. In 1845 the importanee of the screw propeller for ships of war beeame fully reeognized, and designs and tenders were invited from all the principal marine engineers in the kingdom. The Government of that day then took the bold step of ordering at onee ninetcen sets of serew engines. Six of these had wheel gearing; in all the rest the engines were direet-acting. The steam pressure in the boilers was from 5 to 10 tb only above the atmo- sphere, and if the engines indicated twice the nominal power it was considered a good performance. The most suecessful engines were those of the *' Arrogant " and " Encounter" of Messrs Penn. They had a higher speed of piston than the others, and the air- pumps were worked direct from the pistons, and had the same length of stroke. 'These engines developed more power for a given amount of weight than other engines of their day, and were the forerunners of the many excellent engines on the double-trunk plan made by this firm for the navy. The engines with wheel- gearing for the serews were heavier, occupied more space, and*~~

~~were not so successful as the others, and no more of that deseription were ordered for the British navy.~~

~~Up to 1860 neither surface-condensers nor superheaters were used in the navy. The consumption of fuel was about 44 tb per one horse-power per hour. In that year (1860) three ships, the " Arethusa," ' Octavia," and " Constance," were fitted respectively by Messrs Penn, Messrs Maudslay, and Messrs Elder, with engines of large cylinder capacity to admit of great expansion, with sur- face-condensers and superheaters to the boilers. Those of the " Arethusa" were double-trunk, with two cylinders ; those of the "Octavia" were three-cylinder engines ; and those of the "Con- stanee" were compound engines with six cylinders ; the first two were worked with steam of 25 tb pressure per square inch, and the last with steam of 82 Ib pressure. All these engines gave good results as to economy of fuel, but those of the "' Constance " were the best, giving one indicated horse-power with 23 Tb of fuel. But the engines of the " Constance" were excessively complicated and heavy. They weighed, including water in boilers and fittings, about 54 ewts. per maximum indicated horse-power, whereas ordi- nary engines varied between 34 and 43 ewts.~~

~~For the next ten years engines with low-pressure steam, surface-condensers, and large cylinder capaeity were employed almost exclusively in the ships of the Royal Navy.~~

~~Wrought-iron is largely used in the framing in the place of cast- irou, and hollow propeller shafts made of Whitworth steel. By these means the weight is being redueed, and it is to be hoped that a still further reduction may yet be made by the use of high- class materials in the engines and steel in the boilers,~~

~~Mr Thornycroft, of Chiswick, and others, by means of high rate of revolution, forced combustion, and the judicious use of steel, have obtained as much as 455 indicated horse-power with a total weight of machinery of 112 tons, including water in boilers. The ordinary weight of a seagoing marine engine of large size, with economical consumption of fuel, excepting a few of very recent construction, would be six or seven times as great. By closing in the stoke- holes and employing fans to create~~

~~*a pressure of air in them capable of sustaining from one to two inches of water in the gauges the consumption of coal per square foot of fire-grate per hour may be raised to 130 tb and upwards. The indicated horse-power which can be obtained in ordinary cases with the steam-blast in the chimney to quicken consumption does not exceed ten. But by the forced draft above described it can be raised with ordinary boilers to 17 to 18 indicated horse-power per square foot of fire- grate. In torpedo boats with locomotive boilers over 28 horse- power per foot of fire-erate is attainable.*~~

~~*The following observations on efficiency are taken from the work of Mr Sennett on The Marine Steam Engine :—*~~

~~*"In every machine there are always certain causes acting that produce waste of work, so that the whole work done by the machine is not usefully employed, some of it being exerted in overcoming the friction of the mechanism, and some wasted in various other ways. The fraction representing the ratio that the useful work done bears to the total power expended by the machine is called the efficiency of the machine ; or—*~~

~~*Useful work done.*~~

~~*ey = Total power expended.*~~

~~*SHIP EMT wi We*~~

~~*In the marine steam engine, in which the useful work is measured by its propelling effect on the ship, there are four successive stages, in each of which a portion of the initial energy is wasted, and these four causes all tend to decrease the efficiency of the engine as a whole.*~~

~~*"In the first place, only a portion of the heat yielded by the combustion of the coal in the furnaces is communicated to the water in the boiler, the remainder being wasted in various ways. The fraction of the total heat evolved by the combustion of the coal, that is, transmitted to the water in the boiler, is in ordinary cases not. more than from 48; to 7%. This fraction is called the efficiency of the boiler.*~~

~~*"Secondly, the steam, after leaving the boiler, has to perform meehanieal work on the piston of the engine; but this work, in consequenee of the narrow limits of temperature between whieh the engine is worked, is only a small fraction of the total heat contained in the steam—say from ⅛ to ⅓, according to the kind of engine and rate of expansion employed. This fraction, repre- senting the ratio of the mechanical work done by the steam to the total amount of heat contained in it, is called the efficiency of the steam.*~~

~~*" Thirdly, in the engine itself a part of the work actually per- formed by the steam on the pistons is wasted in overcoming the friction of the working parts of the machinery and in working the pumps, &e. The remainder is turned into useful work in driving the propeller. The fraction representing the ratio that this useful work bears to the total power exerted by the pistons is called the efficiency of the mechanism.*~~

~~*"Fourthly, the propeller, in addition to driving the ship ahead, expends some of the power transmitted to it in agitating and churning the water in which it acts, and the work thus performed is wasted,—the only useful work being that employed in overcoming the resistance of the ship and driving her ahead. The ratio of this useful work to the total power expended by the propeller is called the efficiency of the propeller.*~~

~~*" The resultant efficiency of the marine steam engine is made up of the four efficiencies just stated, and is given by the product of the four faetors representing respectively the efficiencies of the boiler, the steam, the mechanism, and the propeller. Any improvement in the efficiency of the marine steam engine, and, consequently, in the economy of its performanee, is therefore due to an inerease in one or more of these elements."*~~

~~*Under Steam ENGINE will be found a discussion of the first three of the efficiencies enumerated above. Propulsion and pro- pellers have to be considered here.*~~

~~*'The prineiple upon which nearly all marine propellers work," Pro- says Mr Sydney Barnaby, "is the projection of a mass of water in pellers.*~~

~~*a direction opposite to that of the required motion of the vessel. When a vessel is in motion at a regular speed the reaction of the mass of water projected backwards by the propeller is exactly equal to the resistance experienced by the vessel. When it is clearly understood that propulsion is obtained by the reaction of a mass of water projected sternwards with a velocity relative to smooth water, the absurdity is at once seen of attempting to get a pro- peller to work without slip. If there is no slip there is no resultant propelling reaction exeept in the limiting case where the mass of water acted upon is infinite. The whole problem therefore resolves itself into this—What is the best proportion between the mass of water thrown astern and the velocity with which it is projected, that is, if the screw propeller is under consideration, the ratio between its diameter and its pitch ?"*~~

~~*"There are four different kinds of propellers apart from sails— the oar, the paddle-wheel, the serew, and the water jet.*~~

~~*"The first and oldest of them—the oar—may be used in two ways. The action may be intermittent, as in rowing, when water is driven astern during half the stroke and the instrument brought back above the water ; or its action may be continuous, as in sculling. When used as in rowing it is exactly analogous to a paddle-wheel, while the aetion of the seull closely resembles that of the serew. It is supposed that in the ancient galleys, which were propelled by a large number of oars in several tiers or banks, the oars hung vertically and worked inwards and outwards with a sculling action. They were not removed from the water, but served as props when the vessel was aground. The oars were always propelling the vessel, in both parts of the stroke. The rowers generally sat with their faeces outwards and forwards. There was great overhang of the sides to allow of several ticrs of rowers one above another. The oar as used for rowing is a very efficient instrument. To obtain the maximum efficiency out of it a eon- stant pressure should be niaintained upon the oar, so that the water is started gradually from rest, and the aeceleration uniformly in- creased throughout the whole of the stroke. A glanee at a univer- sity crew will show that the stroke is kept up with a uniform pressure and without any jerk."'*~~

~~*Speaking of the serew propeller, MrS. Barnaby says :—"The speed with which water ean follow up the blades of a screw depends upon the head of water over it, but when the immersion is suffi-*~~

~~*Causes of ineffi- ciency,*~~

~~*Si TP ie D> Ta &*~~

~~*cient to exclude air a head of water equivalent to 30 feet is sup- plied by the atmosphere, as has been pointed out by Prof. Osborne Experiments on the mode] of the Thornycroft screw*~~

~~*Reynolds. have shown that the efficiency, when properly immersed, falls to the surface of the water.*~~

~~*which is as much ag about 50 As a result of a*~~

~~*70 per cent.*~~

~~*torpedo boat was raised from 18 maining the same.*~~

~~*"There is no doubt that the stern is the best position for the water the friction imparts This layer the stern, so that, after the vessel*~~

~~*screw. As a vessel passes through the motion to the layer of water rubbing against the side. increases in thickness towards has passed through, a considerable quantity of water is left with a motion in the same direction as the vessel. If the screw works in this water it is able to recover some of the energy which has been expended by the ship in giving it motion. The speed of this*~~

~~*water, which Rankine estimates may be as much as one-tenth of*~~

~~*the speed of the vessel, does not depend upon the form but upon the nature and extent of the surface. As it is a heeessity that there should be such a wake, it is a distinct advantage to place the propeller in it and allow it to utilize as much as possible of the energy it finds there. It is important not to confound this water, which has had motion given to it by the side and bottom of the ship, with the wave of replacement, that is, the*~~

~~*water filling in behind the ship. Itshonld be the aim to interfere as little as possible with this motion, as such interference augments the resist- ance of the ship very considerably, even in well-formed ships. The propeller should therefore be kept as far away from the stern as possible,*~~

~~*"In the sinall high-speed stern launches the propeller has been kept outside the rudder, with advantage to the speed. What is required is that before reaching the screw the water shall have*~~

~~*iven out upon the stern of the ship the energy put into it by the BOW. If a screw propeller is placed behind a bluff stern so that its supply of water is imperfect it will draw in water at the centre of the driving face, and throw it off round the tips of the blades, like a centrifugal pump, thus producing a loss of pressure upon the stern of the vessel. For very high speed vessels several propellers would euable the weight of the machinery to be kept down. The weight of an engine of a given type per indicated horse-power varies inversely as the number of revolutions per minute ; that is, the greater the number of revolutions the less the weight per indicated horse-power.*~~

~~*"There is a certain quantity of work which must be lost with any propeller, and it is equal to the actual energy of the discharged water moving astern of the propeller with a velocity relative to still water. As this energy varies as the weight multiplied by the square of the velocity, if we double the quantity of water acted upon we double the loss from this cause, but if we double the velocity with which the water is discharged we increase the loss fourfold. This shows the advantage of acting upon a large column of water, and leaving it with as small a speed as possible relative to still water. For this reason the screw is a more efficient instru- ment than a paddle-wheel, and the jet propeller, with its small area of jet, is so much inferior to the screw. From the above con- siderations it would appear that the larger the diameter of a screw and the smaller the slip the greater the efficiency would be. There is, however, another element of loss which has to be con- sidered, which imposes a limit to the size of a screw in order to obtain the best efficiency. This element is the friction of the screw. blades. How large the cffect of this element may be is shown by the case of H.M.S. 'Iris.' This ship was originally fitted with two four-bladed*~~

~~*propellers, 18 feet in diameter, and with 18 feet pitch or velocity of advance per revolution. She obtained a speed with these propellers of 15% knots with an ex- penditure of 6369 horse-power. Two blades were then taken from each propeller, reducing the total number from eight to four. The indicated horse-power then required for the same speed was 4369, or two thousand less horse-power. This amount had been lost in driving the four additional blades."*~~

~~*'* The causes of loss of work incidental to propellers of different kinds may be summed up as follows :—(1) Suddenness of change from velocity of feed to velocity of discharge. Propellers which*~~

~~*' suffer from this cause are the radial paddle-wheel and the common*~~

~~*uniform pitch screw ; while those which in varying degree avoid it are the gaining pitch screw, the feathering paddle-wheel, Ruthven's form of centrifugal pump, and the oar. (2) Transverse motion impressed on the water. Propellers which lose in efficieney from this cause are ordinary screw-propellers, which impart rotary motion, radial wheels, which give both downward and upward motion on entering and leaving the water, and oars, which impart outward and inward motion at the commencement and end of the stroke respectively. This loss is greatly reduced in the guide- propeller, as the guides take the rotary motion out of the water and utilize it inso doing. (8) Waste of energy of the feed water. This is experienced in the jet propeller as generally applied."*~~

~~*percent. when breaking r change from a diameter of 5 feet 10 inches to 4 feet 6 inches the speed of the first-class to 20 knots, other conditions re-*~~

~~*825*~~

~~*The present condition of the case of screw steaniship propulsion appears, according to Mr Froude's estimate, to be that, calling the effective horse-power (that is, the power due to the net resistance) 100, then at the highest speeds the horse-power required to over- come the indueed negative pressure under the stern consequent on the thrust of the screw is 40 more; the friction of the screw in the water is 10 more ; the friction in the machinery 67 more ; and air- pump resistance perhaps 18 more; add*~~

~~*to this 28 for slip of screw, and we find that, in addition to the power required to overcome the net resistance=100, we need 40+10+67418 +23, making in all 258; 7.¢., at maximum speeds the indicated power of the engines needs to be more than two-and-a-half times that which is directly effective in propulsion. GN EBS)*~~

~~*Boatbuilding.*~~

~~*The foregoing article may be supplemented by a brief account of boatbuilding. The distinction between this and shipbuilding is not of a marked character and cannot be sharply defined. But for all practical purposes the builder of a vessel without a deck, or but partially decked, and propelled partly by sails and partly by oars, or wholly by oars, may be defined as a boatbuilder.*~~

~~*The boats in general use at present may be classified as racing boats, pleasure boats, or boats used for commercial purposes, Racing boats (compare Row1nG) are generally built of mahogany, and are the most perfect specimens of the boatbuilder'sart. The out- rigger sculling boat measures from 30 to 35 feet long, 12 to 14 inches in breadth, and 9 inches in depth, weighing only from 35 to 45 tb, and the eight-oared outrigger, being from 55 to 65 feet long by 2 feet 2 inches to 2 feet 5 inches in breadth, weighs about 300 tb. Pleasure boats vary in form and dimensions, from the 15-feet row- ing boat used on the'sea-coast to the gondola type found principally on the canals of Venice and used occasionally on the Thames, &c., for ceremonial pageants. Boats used for commercial purposes embrace fishing, canal, and ships' boats. Fishing boats (compare FisHERigs) are gradually passing from the sphere of the boat- builder to that of the shipbuilder, —the open boats of former years being in many cases replaced by large, strong, decked craft more able to withstand the gales of the British coasts, Canal boats are gene- rally long, narrow, and shallow, fron: 50 to 70 feet long by 8 to 10 feet in breadth, and from 4 to 5 feet in depth. All sea-going vessels are required by statute to be provided with boats fully equipped for use, not fewer in number nor less in their cubical contents than what is specified for the class to which the ship belongs. The boats vary considerably in form and dimensions as well as in material and construction, according to the service intended.*~~

~~*The number of boats a passenger steamer of 1000 tons and upwards is required to carry is six or seven, according to the dimensions of the boats. In either case two of the largest boats must be fitted as lifeboats. If the smaller number is carried, the set will consist of two lifeboats, one launch, two cutters or pinnaces, and one gig.*~~

~~*Lifeboats are built both ends alike, having a sheer or rise from niidships towards stem and stern of 4 inch to # inch per foot of length. They have air-cases of copper or yellow metal fitted in the ends and along the sides of the boat, of sufficient capacity to give cach person carried in the boat one and a half cubic feet of strong enclosed air-space (compare vol. xiv. p. 570). Cutters arc similar in forn: but of smaller dimensions than lifeboats ; pinnaces are about the same dimensions as cutters, but have square sterns. Gigs are of lighter construction and finer form than pinnaces. A service boat called a dingy is also carried, for the conveyance of light stores between the shore and the vessel. Boats, when carried so close to the funnel of a steamer as to be injuriously affeeted by the heat therefrom, have of late years been built of zinc, iron, or steel. Those built of steel have plates ps inch thick and galvan- ized, the keel, stem, stern, and deadwood knees being of wood, to which the plating is attached. ;*~~

~~*The following is an outline of the method of construction. The designer lays down on paper the lines and body-plan of the craft, which are afterwards traced full size on the floor of the drawing- loft. From these full-sized sections moulds are made. The stem and stern posts, having been cut out to the shape designed, are tenoned into mortices in the keel. Two knees overlap, and bind the stem and stern posts to the keel, and are bolted with through bolts and clenehed outside over a ring or washer. A stout batten of wood is then nailed between the stem and sternpost heads to connect them together, and a line is then stretched from stem to sternpost to represent the water-line. The keel, stem, and stern posts being in position on the stocks, the stem and stern posts arc then plumbed and secured by stays of wood. The rabbets in the keel, stem, and stern posts are then cut out with a chisel, after which the moulds are put into their proper places, plumbed with the water-line, and kept in position by stays. The planking is then proceeded with, strake after strake, and when the boat: is planked up to the top strake the floors and timbers are put in. The*~~

floor extends across the keel and up to the turn of the bilge. They are fastened through the keel with copper or yellow metal bolts and to the planking with copper nails. _

XXII, — 104

826

The timbers generally are about 1 inch by 3 inch, and are sawn out of a clean piece of American elm, then planed and rounded. After being steamed they are fitted into the boat, and as soon as each is in position, and before it cools, it is nailed fast with copper nails. The gunwale is next fitted, a piece of American elm about 2 inches square ; a breast-hook is fitted forward, binding the gunwale, top strake, stern, and apron together ; and aft the gunwale and top strake are secured to the transom by either a wooden or iron knee. A waring or stringer, about 3 inches by $ inch, of American elm, is then fitted on both sides of the boat, about 8 to 9 inches below the gunwale, on the top of which the thwarts or seats rest. The thwarts are secured by knees, which are fastened with clench bolts

SIII—SIII

through the gunwale and top strake and also through the thwart and knee. The boat generally receives three coats of paint and is then ready for service.

The following are the dimensions of boats in the British merchant service :—

Length.

Breadth. Depth. TAPCO OAL e sere. cc ccccscenccent 28 ft. Gin. 8 ft. Gin 3 ft. 6in. GUUSBOT. S75 fopes cc esccccceseetoe 26 ft. 7 ft. 3 ft. NACE: ccc ccc ccc 24 ft. 6 ft. Gin 2ft. 8in ig… | 18 ft. 5 ft. 6 in 2 ft. 3 in i vs) 16 ft. 5 ft. 6 in 2ft. 3in,

SHIPLEY, a town of England, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on the south bank of the Aire, in the neighbourhood of a picturesque

~~*pastoral country, at the junction of the Leeds and Bradford Railway with the Bradford, Skipton, and Colne line, 3 miles north of Brad- ford. The church of St Paul, an elegant structure in the Gothic style erected in 1820, was altered and improved in 1876. The manufacture of worsted is the principal industry, and there are large stone quarries in the neigh- bourhood. A local board was established in 1853. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1406 acres) in 1871 was 11,757 and in 1881 it was 15,093.*~~

~~*SHIPPING. The island of Britain (to the shipping of which the present historical notice is mainly restricted) is well fitted to serve as a commercial depdt, both by the number of its natural harbours and the variety of its pro- ducts. There is evidence that Phcenician traders visited it for tin, and in after times it served as one of the granaries of the Roman empire. On the other hand raw wool was the staple article of commerce in the Middle Ages, while the supremacy of English manufactures in modern days has contributed to the development of British shipping till it has grown out of all comparison with any- thing in ancient or medizval times.*~~

~~*Britain must have been one of the most distant points that was visited by Phcenician or Carthaginian ships. Adventurous as their sailors were when compared with those of other races, and ready as they were to carry on trading on behalf of neighbouring states, it is not clear that they ever sailed across the Indian Ocean or ven- tured beyond the Persian Gulf, even in the service of the Egyptians (Brugsch). Their coasting habits led to the settlement of a chain of colonies along the Mediterranean shores, and that sea was wide enough to form a convenient barrier between the Greek and the Carthaginian settle- ments. When their empire was at length destroyed the Romans became the heirs of their enterprise, but do not appear to have pushed maritime adventure much further or opened out many new commercial connexions.*~~

~~*Though the Angle and Saxon tribes were doubtless skilled both in shipbuilding and in the management of their vessels at the time when they conquered Britain, these arts had greatly decayed during the four centuries that elapsed before the time of Alfred, who endeavoured to*~~

~~*improve on existing models (Eng. Chron., 897). Hence the necessity of resisting the Danes, with the subsequent fusion of Danish and other elements in our nationality, may be taken as marking the period when English shipping had its rise. Apart from incidental notices of communi- cation with other lands, there is clear evidence, from the early English laws, of efforts to encourage commerce, par- ticularly in the status which was accorded to traders and the protection afforded to merchant ships. The whole of these arrangements seem to imply that the merchant was the owner of the vessel, who "'adventured" with his cargo, and sailed in his ship himself; but these voyages were probably undertaken for the most part to ports on the*~~

~~*other side of the Channel, as it does not appear that English ships penetrated to the Mediterranean till the time of the crusades.*~~

~~*The steady development of English shipping during the Norman and early Plantagenet reigns may be inferred from the more frequent intercommunication with the Continent and the many evidences of the increasing importance of the commercial classes and trading towns. In the time of Edward HL. the shipping interest suffered a temporary check from the removal of the staple to England, a step which was taken with the view of attract- ing foreign merchants to visit England (1353). This policy, however, was soon reversed, and the reign of that monarch was on the whole favourable to the development of shipping. He was himself fond of the sea, and com- manded in person in naval engagements, and by taking possession of Calais and enforcing his sovereignty over the narrow seas he refidered the times more favourable for the development of commerce. More than one of the noble families of England have descended from the mer- chant princes of the 14th century. By this time also the compass, which had been introduced in a rude form as early as the 12th century, had been improved and had come into common use. But many years were to elapse before the enterprise of the 15th and 16th centuries made the most of the new facilities for undertaking long voy- ages ; and the fortunes of English shipping, as depicted by a contemporary (Libell of Englishe Policy, 1436), con- tinued to vary according to the state of political con- nexions with the Continent and the success of English monarchs in "keeping the narrow seas" free from the*~~

~~*ravages of pirates. During this century, too, we hear far more of organizations of merchants to foreign parts, and of struggles between different bodies of traders. The "Merchants of the Staple" dealt in raw wool and the other staple commodities of the realm, which they exported to Calais ; the "' Merchant Adventurers," a powerful asso- ciation which had developed out of a religious guild, dealt chiefly in woollen cloths, but they traded with any port where they could get a footing. This brought them into frequent collision with the "Merchants of the HIouse," who had had a footing in London since before the Con- quest. The chief attempt at accommodation took place in the time of Edward IV. (1474), but the quarrels and re- prisals continued till the discovery of the New World had revolutionized trade, and the HIanse League, expelled by Elizabeth, were unable either to injure or to compete with English shipping.*~~

~~*Considering the interest which all the Tudor monarchs showed in developing shipping,! and the proverbial bold- ness and enterprise of the Cabots, Raleigh, Drake, and other sailors, it is remarkable that England obtained so little footing at first in the new lands which were dis- covered by Columbus (1492) or along the route that was*~~

~~*"The establishment of Trinity HIouse by HIenry MAUI aye looking after pilots, buoys, &e., in 1512, is the most important result of his care for shipping.*~~

~~*PmLTPP ie Ge*~~

~~*opened up by Vasco da Gama (1496). Eventually she inherited much of the commercial empires of Spain, Portugal, HIolland, and France, but there was still com- paratively little permanent acquisition, or establishment of trading factories, at the close of the 16th century. The fact was that such undertakings were beyond the power of private traders, and that Elizabeth was too penurious to inake an attempt on such a scale as to command success, Tt was by the formation of companies that the difficulty was at length overcome, and that associated traders, or traders working on a joint stock, were able to establish factories in foreign parts, and thus to give a new impetus to English shipping. The African Company and others were failures, but there were many which had a long and successful career. The Levant Company was established in 1581, and*~~

~~*had factories at Smyrna. The Eastland Com- pany traded with the Baltic ; it was established in 1579, and had factories in Prussia. The Hudson's Bay Company is much more recent, and only dates from 1670. But by far the greatest of these undertakings was the East India Company, which was founded in 1600, and which, after a long struggle with commercial rivals at home and Dutch competitors abroad, attained at length to the sovereignty of a large empire. The chief cause of complaint against this company in the early stages of its existence lay in the fact that it was a joint-stock company, and that therefore the proprietors had a monopoly of a valuable trade ; the greater part of the other companies were regulated com- panies, and membership was open to any British subject who liked to pay the entrance fees and join with other merchants. The merchants thus associated agreed to abide by certain specified conditions, so as not to spoil the markets for one another, but develop the trade in which all were interested in a manner which should be advantageous toall. The Levant Company and Merchant Adventurers were regulated companies, and they led the attack on the East India Company as the monopoly of a few which injured the trade of other merchants. The controversy raged during the reigns of James I. and Charles I, and many of the leading merchants of the time—Mun, Malynes, Misselden, as well as Wheeler, the secretary of the Merchant Adventurers—took part in it. The advocates of the East India trade argued that, owing to the immense distance of their factories and the special difficulties of maintaining their position abroad, it was impossible to carry on their trade except on the joint- stock principle, and their plea prevailed in the long run.*~~

~~*The Merchant Adventurers and the whole system of regulated companies is less familiar to us in the present day, and it may be worth while to indicate the sort of regulations which were imposed on the members. One series of rules was directed at. regulating the total export trade of certain classes of goods to the chief Continental ports, so that the markets abroad might not be over- stocked, and that they might always be able to get remunerative prices. Other regulations allotted the pro- portion of goods which each member of the company should export, and the terms as to credit and so forth on which he should deal. Each factory was carefully regu- lated so as to secure a respectable and orderly life among the merchants resident abroad ; none of them were to do business during the*~~

~~*times of public preaching or on fast- days; and there was a curious adininistrative system by Which the compliance of the members with these regula- tions was enforced,}*~~

~~*Those English merchants who traded to towns where the Adventurers had a factory, but did not comply with their regulations, were stigmatized as "interlopers," and they were greatly disliked by the regular traders, as they*~~

- ~~*Wheeler in Brit. Mus. Add. MS. 18913.*~~

~~*827*~~

~~*associations. As late that the same thing was the case, and that the fleet which harassed the Armada ships. In the time of the naval wars with Holland, how- ever, this is greatly more effectively organized and regularly maintained. But even when the royal that its continued effectiveness must depend on the maintenance of merchant shipping, interconnected,. and just because special importance was attached to this arm defence there was a purpose of indirectly promoting shipping and providing seamen. This was one of the aspects in which the prosperity of British fisheries Was specially attended to; the consumption of fish was stimulated by insisting on the observance of Lent and of weekly fasts on Wednesdays and Fridays, when "the eating of fish was required politically and not spiritually " 5 Hz. ¢.D,§ 13, 1 Jas I c. 29), and this was principally done as a means of inducing men to take to a seafaring life, and so to fit themselves for the defence of the country and for the manning of our merchant ships. Considerable progress had also been made both in the art of sailing and in the building of ships. The vessels which composed the fleets of the crusaders appear to have been for the most part galleys, provided with a double row of oars ; the huge prows which gave a superiority in hand-to-hand fighting with a grappled vessel were of no advantage when the use of cannon had revolutionized naval warfare. We thus find that the ships of this period were built on a different model, and many inducements were held out to those who built large ships. Both Elizabeth and Charles offered bounties for the building of larger craft (100 and 200 tons); in 1597 800 tons was the largest vessel that an English yard turned out. The legislature also was most assiduous*~~

~~*in endeavouring to encourage this industry. The importation of naval stores of all kinds, the growth of hemp for cordage and of timber, were matters of constant care, both in England itself and in the policy which was dictated to her colonies.*~~

~~*It is easy enough to see that in these cases the encouragement of shipping was undertaken as an indirect means of increasing the power of the country, and the same thing is true of the compli- cated arrangements that were made for giving special inducements to trade in particular articles or with particular countries, Every onc is of course familiar with the fact that during the 17th and 18th centuries efforts were made to regulate trade so that gold and silver might be brought into England. It is unnecessary to enume- rate the expedients that were adopted at different times, or to dis- cuss the vexed question as to how far those who advocated the system were in error. There can be no doubt that the possession of a treasure was vastly important for political purposes, and that trade was the only means by which a state which possessed no mines could procure treasure; and it is of course possible that some of the mercantilists laid too much stress on the desirability for political purposes of amassing wealth in this form. _ But the fundamental principle of this system of commercial policy lay in the connexion which was felt to exist between trade and industry. Trade, it was said, stimulated industry by providing a new market for its products. If two countries trade together, each will stimulate the trade of the other to some extent, but, if England*~~

~~*buys raw products from Portugal and Portugal buys manufactured cloth from England, then the operation of trade between them is such that Portugal stimulates English industry and sets English labour in motion to a far larger extent than English consumption stimulates that of Portugal ; it was believed that this relative stimulus might be detected by examining the balance of trade, and that, if by an ingenious adjustment of duties the balance could be kept in her favour, the trade would be benefiting England more than it stimulated the progress of her possible rivals. In the present day we look at the volume of trade and trust that both are gainers ; in those centuries they looked at the kind of gain that accrued and tried*~~

~~*to ensure that England gained more than her possible enenries. Thus it was generally held that by commercial intercourse between England and France the French gained rela- tively more than the English; to the legislators of the time it seemed desirable to impose such conditions as should alter this state of affairs, or, if no agreement could be come to on the terms of a treaty, the trade should be stopped altogether, lest by continuing to overbalance England in trade the French should be enabled to overbalance her in power. These ideas of commercial policy dominated the whole of British legislation for shipping' from the beginning of the 17th century till after the Napoleonic wars ; the preference which was given to English ships, English built and English manned, was enforeed in a manner that was prejudicial to the development of the colonies by the Navigation Act of 1651, aud was subsequently embodied in the orders in council. But these ideas are expressed most clearly in such discussions as those regarding the Mcthven treaty with Portugal. Without attempting to advocate a systein of which the unwisdom has become patent in our own day, it may yet be worth while to note that it was during this régime that England acquired her position as the great ship- ping nation of the world, and passed the Dutch and French in the struggle for naval supremacy. Napoleon gave unconscious testi- mony to the effectiveness of the commercial policy for building up the strength of the nation when he sought to humble England, not by direct attack, but by destroying the trade and shipping by means of which she had raised herself to power.*~~

~~*This policy of subordinating the interests of shipping as a trade and means by which merchants acquired wealth to the policy and power of the nation as a whole had another side. Revenue for war expenses was furnished almost entirely by the mother country ; neither Ireland nor the colonies contributed at all largely to the burden of maintaining the national struggle with Continental rivals. Hence it was undesirable that these dependencies should develop at the expense of the mother country, as by so doing they would reduce the fund from which parliament drew for the expenses of the realm. Hence, while England was always willing to develop resources or industries—like the linen trade in Ireland—which did not compete with and could not undersell existing English manufactures, her politicians were unwilling to allow her dependencies to*~~

~~*become her competitors in trade so long as they did not co-operate in maintaining power. HIence the galling restrictions to which the Irish and the colonists were subjected, both with regard to the development of some of their resources and the carrying on of profitable trade with other colonies or foreign countries. But it must not be forgotten that English merchants suffered in the same sort of way, as changes of political relations at once brought about changes in the conditions of trade, and that in at least one case the interests of enterprising farmers at home were set aside in favour of protecting an established industry in the colonies. The subordination of the craftsman and trader interest to the public policy of the realm brought about a system of galling regulations which pressed hardly on many persons, though they were most obviously baneful to Ireland and the colonists, who had not so much interest in the political objects for which their wealth was sacrificed.*~~

~~*It is unnecessary to attempt to illustrate in detail the applica- tion of these principles ; it only remains to add that, whether in spite of these regulations or because of them, the shipping of England increased vastly during the 18th century. This was partly due to the greater facilities which were granted for procur- ing capital for trading ventures. In medieval times a merchant could hardly obtain the command of additional capital, unless by means of a temporary partnership, or loans on bottomry ; but the objection to usury was fast giving way, and the public were willing to lend eapital and to share in the profits of trading. The practice of trading on borrowed capital, and of obtaining temporary loans from goldsmiths, was common enough all through the 17th century, but the development of the banking system and the new forms of credit which thus became available gave still greater scope to the enterprising shipper. The full fruits of the new power were only shown, however, in the beginning of the 18th century, when the rivalry of the Old and New East Iudia Companies and the story of*~~

~~*1 It was pursued, but less systematically, all through the Tudor reigns or even earlier. Compare 1H. VII. c. 8, 32 H. VII ec. 14, 1 El. « 18, also the Assize of Arms in 1181.*~~

~~*Sat rr tae*~~

~~*the Darien expedition and the South Sea Bubble show how willing the British public were to pour their capital into trading under- takings. Among the companies which were started about this period there were two which have exercised a most salutary influence on British shipping. The. Royal Exchange Assurance (6 Geo. I. c. 18)and the London Assurance revolutionized the whole system of marine assurance, and did so much to relieve skippers from the losses they suffered through the risks of commerce as to give considerable encouragement to the business. The plantations were developing into important scttlements; the British merchant had outdone his Dutch rivals; and the East India Company was pursuing its course of progress in the Hast. There can be no wonder that, with so many opportunities for trading, and such new facilities for obtaining capital and assuring against risk, the shipping of the country developed during the 18th century. It is wnnccessary to dwell on the shocks it received at the time when the American colonies asserted their independence (27 and 28 Geo. III.) or in the life and death struggle of the Napoleonic wars. The difficulty of recasting the restrictive system under which English merchants plied their trade was very great, and when it broke down in regard to America and Ireland (20 Geo. III. cc. 6, 10) it was becoming apparent that its days were numbered. The doctrines preached by Adam Smith soon began to bear fruit; the practical difficulty of regulating commerce rendered politicians more willing to let it regulate itself; and the controversy between the exclusive companies and the interlopers or independent mer- chants once more came to the front. It was during the reign of George IV. that the old system was practically abandoned and that the greater part of the old companies were dissolved, and trade to all parts of Africa, to the Levant, and to China became open to all British subjects. The East India Company maintained its posi- tion in part despite its many critics for another half century, and the peculiar conditions of the trade of the Hudson's Bay Company have nade it desirable to maintain that privileged cor- poration till the present time.*~~

~~*It became still more obvious that the old policy of regulating the commerce of the country in the supposed interests of its power was being abandoned when Huskisson reformed the tariff in 1825. The measure he succeeded in carrying was not so thoroughgoing as the one he proposed, but its principle was that the customs duties should bo levied for revenue*~~

~~*objects only, and not with the view of maintaining British merchants in one parti- cular employment of their capital. Later the repeal of the corn laws (1846) and navigation laws (1849) removed the last vestiges of the old commercial policy which had ruled over the development of British shipping almost from the earliest times, but which had been steadily and systematically pursued for three hundred years.*~~

~~*It was thus that Adam Smith's criticisms worked so effectively as to realize his dreams at no great interval of time. His deeper reasons for objecting to the commercial system of the 18th century lay in the fact that the colonial trade and shipping altogether seemed to him to have received an unhealthy stimulus, and that the country would be in a sounder economic position if capital were employed at home in developing native resources, and foreign trade built upon a foundation of highly developed native industry. But the removal of the stimulus did not have the effect he antici- pated, or restore the " balance" between industry and shipping. England is far more dependent than ever before on her relations with foreign countries, and therefore on her shipping, for the niaterials of her manufacture and her food, as well as for markets for her products. She is further removed than ever from that condition of " opulence" which has, according to Adam Smith, the greatest promise of stability and progress.*~~

~~*This has undoubtedly been due to the immense developments in manufacturing in which England, with her wealth of coal and iron, led the way. This reacted on shipping in many ways. England came to be the workshop of the world, and her shipping was freighted with soft goods from Lancashire and Yorkshire, and with hardware and machinery, to be conveyed to the most distant parts of the globe. But not only were the opportunities for trading immensely increased; the application of the steam engine to transit by water has accelerated communication, and rendered it so regular and certain as to give an extraordinary stimulus to foreign trade. The first steamboat that was more than a mere toy madé its trial in 1807, and since that time steam shipping has been more and more substituted for the old sailing vesscls. Still more recently there has been a considerable change in the construction of ships, from the success which has attended iron shipbuilding. The first experiment, which was generally deemed exceedingly rash, was made in 1851.*~~

~~*It is impossible to get satisfactory data for a comparison of the relative importance of English and foreign shipping for a long period; but it may be assumed that the shipping of the Italian republics and of the Hanse League excelled that of England during the Middle Ages, that in the 16th century Spain was far ahead of her when she could send such fleets to the West and fit out a Spanish Armada, and that in the 17th and 18th centuries respect-*~~

~~*SHI—S HI*~~

~~*ively England was much in the Same position as the great rivals*~~

~~*—Holland and Francee—with which she had to compcte so keenly. We may compare the prescnt position and the relative growth of tonnage during the last century, so far as figures are available for the purpose :—*~~

~~*1790, 1880, || 1790. ||*~~

~~*I 1880. England…,..... 1,511,411 6,574,513 re… ob 989,128 pain aot 'ses 587,320 | Hovlend®: 20.0.0) see 349,000 a Weeaseeeree es 1,000,000 || United States… 502,146 | 4,000,000 Germany…..... 1,300,000 |*~~

~~*The following aggregates show the growth of the tonnage of British shipping :—in 1588, 12,500 tons (excluding fishing boats) ; in 1770, 682,811 (England and Scotland) ; in 1791, 1,511,401 (in- cluding colonies); in 1830, 2,199,959 (excluding colonies); in 1840, 2,768,262; in 1850, 3,565,133 ; in 1860, 4,658,687; in 1870, 5,690,789 ; in 1880, 6,574,513.*~~

~~*See Macpherson, Annals of Commerce; Lindsay, Tistory of Merchant Shipping.*~~

~~*For earlier periods see Schanz, Englische Handels-Politik, and for later periods Leone Levi, History of British Commerce. (W. CU.)*~~

~~*SHIRAZ, a celebrated city in Persia, capital of Fars, from its site and thoroughly Iranian population may be considered the central point, as it were, of Farsi or Parsi (otherwise Persian) nationality. Owing to the*~~

~~*pasture land in its vicinity some derive the name from the native word shir, "milk;" others again, asserting the number and physical powers of its inhabitants, accept the same word in its sense of "lion," or take the whole dissyllable as an obsolete word meaning the "lion's paunch." To this effect is cited a local saying to the effect that, "like the lion, it devours all they bring into it." Shiraz is situated in 29° 36' 30" N. lat. and 52° 32' 9" E. long., in a high plain or valley more than 20 miles long and less than half as broad, and is approached on the south from the sea—a distance of 170 miles'—through lofty mountain passes reaching some 7000 feet above the level of the waters of the Persian Gulf. On the north the approach is also through chains of mountains separating the plains of Shiraz from the valley of the Marv Dasht, intersecting which is the Band Amfr river, more poetically than accurately described in Lalla Rookh. At Kodiyan, a few miles to the north- west of Shiraz, is the source of another river, which, crossing the high road south of the town under the name of the "Kara Agatch," falls into the sea about 70 miles below Bushahr (Bushire), after a tortuous course of 300 miles. The city has a handsome bazaar and some good private residences ; but its unattractive streets are narrow, and, though not so crowded with beggars as Ispahan, contain many living objects distressing to the eye. The mosques and minarets, albeit of local repute, look more picturesque to the stranger in the distance than under close inspection. One fine view of the town is that on the north, at the pass between the mountains called "Allah Hu Akbar? so named, it is conceived, because this would be the traveller's exclamation of delight when the landscape first opened out upon him. The country in this direction is studded with pleasant gardens. 'Besides these there are the tombs of the poets Hafiz and Sa'di—both within easy reach of the city. The first—a fine marble monument with a beautifully inscribed ode and other writings upon it—is not a mile from the gate, and is situated in an enclosure bearing the name Hafiziya. The most noted product of Shiraz is its wine, on the merits of which, however, there is much difference of opinion from outside judges. Dr Wills gives an original account of an experiment of his own in making the wine of Shirdz. Its cost in the pro- duction was 54d. a bottle, and it sold a year after at more than three times that amount. Shiraz is moreover famous for inlaid work (wood and metal) called khdtam bandi (from khdtam, a seal). The population of the city is estimated under 30,000. The ordinary diseases are inter- mittent fever,*~~

~~diarrhœa, dysentery, typhoid, guinea-worm, cholera, diphtheria, small-pox, and ophthalmia.~~

~~1 As the crow flies, it is only 115 miles N.E. by E. of Bushahr.~~

~~centuries, and are never disputed by Persians who are not Shirazis, yet it is impossible for the sober European traveller to deny that ; We may feel thankful for the wine and the water, the gardens and the monuments, the fruits and the flowers (abundant here as in many other an oasis in the with the national pride t of a Hafiz and a Sa'di; we may believe that the ladies of yore had "eyes brighter than the antelope's, hair cluster- ing like their own dark grapes, and forms fairer and sweeter than \ (that those of the present day would, if unveiled, strike the Spectator with wonder ; but one fact remains, —the modern town of Shirdz is not a paradise for those whose personal experience enables them to compare it with the ordinary cities of Europe.~~

~~According to Eastern authorities, Shiraz was founded (or re- founded, for some accounts ascribe to it a fabulous antiquity) by a brother of the famous Hajjaj about the beginning of the 8th century, or rather by a cousin of Hajjaj called Mohammed b. Kasim b. Abt 'Okail." Six hundred years later it was the capital of the Muzaffar dynasty of princes, when it fell to the arms of Timur. But it attained its greatest reputation in the reign of Karim Khan, who embellished the city greatly and made it the special object of his care. On the downfall of this monarch it was sacked and laid waste by the cruel Agha Mohamined.~~

~~Shir4z has been often described by native geographers and European writers of travel. Among the latter may be mentioned Pietro della Valle, Herbert, Tavernier, Deslandes, and Chardin, in the 17th century, and in the present century Ouseley, Porter, Morier, Scott-Waring, Forster, Binning, and many quite recent travellers, Neither in his serious history nor lighter sketches does Sir John Malcolm give any detailed account of Shiraz asa city, but his notes on its climate may be cited. On one of the hottest days of June 1800 the thermometer registered 94° F. in the house and 100° in a tent. In May 1810 it never rose at noon above 88° nor fell~~

~~*below 74°. In the morning, at eight o'clock, it generally stood about 60°, In autumn the heat continucd, but in winter it was seen to fall considerably below the freezing point. As late as March there is often a hoar frost on the ground. April, he adds, is a delightful month, the thermometer at sunrise being generally from 50° to 55°, at two P.M. 80° to 84°, and at nine p.m. about 64°,*~~

~~*SHIRE. See Counry.*~~

~~*SHIRLEY, a town of Hampshire, consists chiefly of comfortable houses occupied by persons in business in Southampton (2 miles south-east), of which it is practi- cally a suburb. Within its limits are the Barlow home (1840), the Ellyet home (187 9), and the children's hos- pital and dispensary for women (1884). The urban sanitary district of Shirley, formed in 1853, was extended by an Act which came into operation 29th September 1881, the name being also changed to Shirley and Free- mantle. The population of the old district (area 1198 acres) in 1871 was 5339 and in 1881 it was 7856. The population of the new district (area 1392 acres) in 1871 was 9909 and in 1881 it was 12,939.*~~

~~*SHIRLEY, James (1596-1666), dramatist, belonged to the great period of our dramatic literature, but, in Lamb's words, he "claims a place among the worthies of this period, not so much for any transcendent genius in himself, as that he was the last of a great race, all of whom spoke nearly the same language and had a set of moral feelings and notions in common." His career of playwriting extended from 1625 to the suppression of stage plays by parliament in 1642. Born in London in 1596, he had been educated for a profession—at Merchant Taylors' school, St John's College, Oxford, and Catherine Hall, Cambridge. The church was his destination, but he turned Roman Catholic, and made a living for two years as a schoolmaster. His first play, Love Tricks, seems to have been accepted while he was teaching at St Albans, and for eighteen years from that time he was a prolific writer for the stage, producing more than thirty regular plays, tragedies, and comedies, and showing no sign of exhaustion when a stop was put to his occupation by the Puritan edict. He turned again to teaching for a liveli- hood and prospered, publishing*~~

~~*some educational works under the Commonwealth. Besides these he published*~~

~~*830*~~

~~*during the period of dramatic eclipse three small volumes of poems and masques, in 1646, 1653, and 1659. He survived into the reign of Charles IL, but, though some of his comedies were revived, he did not again attempt to write for the stage. It is said that he and his second wife died of the fright caused by the great fire of 1666.*~~

~~*There is little original force but much stage-craft and manipulative dexterity in Shirley's plays. He was born to great dramatic wealth, and he handled it freely. It has been remarked that he did not, like some of his great predecessors, take his plots from narrative fiction or history, but constructed them for himself. This is true; but he constructed them out of the abundance of materials that had been accumulated by more originative men during thirty years of unexampled dramatic activity. He did not strain after novelty of situation or character, but worked with confident ease and buoyant copiousness on the familiar lines, contriving situations and exhibiting characters after types whose effectiveness on the stage had been proved by ample experience. He spoke the same language with the great dramatists, it is true, but this grand style appears in him as the mechanical knack of an able and clever workman. It is often employed for the artificial elevation of commonplace thought. "Clear as day" becomes in this manner "day is not more con- spicuous than this cunning"; while the proverb "Still waters run deep" is ennobled into—*~~

~~*The shallow rivers glide away with noise—*~~

~~*The deep are silent. But it cannot be denied that he uses the poetic diction of his predecessors with ease, spirit, and judgment. His scenes are ingeniously conceived, his characters boldly and clearly drawn ; and he never falls beneath a high lével of stage effect.*~~

~~*His chief plays were—Love Tricks, a comedy, 1625; The Maid's Revenge, a tragedy, 1626; The Brothers, a comedy, 1626 ; The Witty Fair One, a comedy, 1628; The Wedding, a comedy, 1628 ; The Grateful Servant, a*~~

~~*tragi-comedy, 1629; The Changes, or Love in a Maze, 1632; The Gamester, a comedy, 1633; The Example (containing an imitation of Ben Jonson's Humours), 1634; The Opportunity, 1634; The Traitor, a tragedy (perhaps Shirley's best), 1685 ; The Lady of Pleasure (perhaps the best of his comedies), 1635; Zhe Cardinal, a tragedy (an attempt to compete with Webster's Duchess of Maljfi), 1641. An edition of his works in six volumes, with notes by Dyce and Gifford, was published in 1833.*~~

~~*SHODDY. See Woot.*~~

~~*SHOEMAKING. The simplest foot-protector is the sandal, which consists merely of a sole attached to the foot, usually by leather thongs. The use of this the arche- ologist can trace back to a very early period; and the sandal of plaited grass, palm fronds, leather, or other material still continues to be the most common foot-cover- ing among Oriental races. Where climate demanded greater protection for the foot, the primitive races shaped a rude shoe out of a single piece of untanned hide ; this was laced with a thong, and so made a complete covering. Out of these two elements—sole without upper and upper without sole—arose the perfected shoe and boot, which consist of a combination of both. A collection illustrating the numer- ous forms and varieties of foot-covering, formed by M. Jules Jacquemart, is now in the Cluny Museum in Paris. It embraces upwards of 300 specimens of ancient, mediaeval, and modern times, with a special series illustrating the artistic and historical side of the subject in France from the 15th century, and contains examples of the many varie- ties of foot-covering in use, especially in the East, at the present day. (Compare Costume.)*~~

~~*Wooden Shoes.—The simplest foot-covering, largely used through- out Europe, is the wooden shoe, made from a single piece of wood roughly cut into shoe form. The towns of Mende and Villefort*~~

~~*(dep. Lozére) are the headquarters of the wooden shoe trade in France, about 1700 persons there finding employment in the manu-*~~

~~*facture. Analogous to this industry is the clog-making trade of the midland counties of England. Clogs, known also as pattens, are wooden soles to which shoe or boot uppers are attached. Sole and heel are made of one piece from a block of maple or ash two inches thick, and a little longer and broader than the desired size of shoe. The outer side of the sole and heel is fashioned with a long chisel-edged implement, called the clogger's knife or stock ; a second implement, called the groover, makes a groove about one- eighth of an inch deep and wide round the side of the sole ; and by means of a hollower the contour of the inner face of the sole is adapted to the shape of the foot. The uppers of heavy leather, machine sewed or riveted, are fitted closely to the groove around the sole, and a thin piece of leather-binding is nailed on all round the edges, the nails being placed very close, so as to give a firm durable fastening. These clogs are of great advantage to all who work in damp sloppy places, keeping the feet dry and comfortable in a manner impossible with either leather or iudia-rubber. They are consequently largely used on the Continent by agricultural and forest labourers, and in England and the United States by dyers, bleachers, tanners, workers in sugar -factories, chemical works, provision packing warehouses, &c. 'There is also a considerable demand for expensive clogs, with finely trimmed soles and fancy uppers, for use by clog-dancers and others on the stage.*~~

~~*Manufacture of Leather Shoes. —There are two main divisions of work comprised in ordinary shoemaking. The minor division— the making of " turn shoes "—embraces all work in which there is only one thin flexible sole, which is sewed to the upper while out- side in and turned over when completed. Slippers and ladies' thin house boots are examples of this class of work. In the other divi- sion the upper is united to an insole and at least one outsole, with a raised heel. In this are comprised all classes, shapes, and qualities of goods, from shoes up to long-top or riding boots which reach to the knee, with all their variations of lacing, buttoning, elastic-web side gussets, &c. The accompanying cuts (figs. 1 and 2) show the parts and trade names of a riding boot, which is the supreme product of the craft.*~~

~~*Till within recent times shoemaking was a pure handicraft; but now machinery effects almost every operation in the art. On the factory system*~~

~~*all human feet are treated alike; in the handi- craft, the shoemaker deals with the individual foot, and he should peice a boot which for fit, com- ort, flexibility, and strength can- not be approached by the product of machinery.*~~

~~*The shoemaker, after measuring the feet, cuts out upper leathers according to the size and pattern. These parts are fitted and stitched together by the " boot-closers";*~~

~~*LY ME*~~

~~*aniline AON*~~

~~*Fig. 1.*~~

~~*Fia. 1.—Parts of a boot. aa, the extension; a, the front; b, the side seam ; c, the back ; d, the strap; e, the instep; j, the vainp or front; g, the quarter or counter ; h, the rand ; 4, the heel,—the front is the breast, the bottom the face ; j, the lifts of the heel; k, the shank or waist; J, the welt; m, the sole,*~~

~~*Fig. 2.*~~

~~*Fig. 2.—Section of boot. a, the upper; b, the insole; ¢, the outsole; d, the welt ; e, the stitching of the sole to the welt; /, the stitching of the upper to the welt.*~~

~~*but little of this closing is now done by hand. The sole "stuff"*~~

~~*is next cut out and assembled, consisting of a pair of inner soles*~~

~~*of soft leather, a pair of outer soles of firmer texture, a pair of welts or bands about one inch broad, of flexible leather, and lifts and top-pieces for the heels. These the ' maker" mellows by steeping in water. IIe attaches the insoles to the bottom of a pair of wooden lasts, which are blocks the form and size of the boots to be made, fastens the leather down with lasting tacks, and, when dried, draws it out with pincers till it takes the exact form of the last bottom. Then he "rounds the soles," by paring*~~

~~down the edges close to the last, and forms round these edges a small channel or feather cut about one-eighth of an inch iu the leather. Next he pierces the insoles all round with a bent awl, which bites into, but not through, the leather, and comes out at the channel or feather. The boots are then " lasted," by placing the uppers on the lasts, drawing their edges tightly round the edge of the insoles, and fastening them in position with lasting tacks. Lasting is a crucial operation, for, unless the upper is drawn smoothly and equally over the last, leaving neither crease nor wrinkle, the form of the boot will be bad. The welt, having one edge pared or chamfered, is put in position round~~

~~the sides, up to the heel or " seat," and the maker proceeds to "in- seam," by passing his awl throngh the holes already made in the insole, catching with it the edge of the upper and the thin edge of the welt, and sewing all three together in one flat Seam, with a waxed thread. He then pares off inequalities and "levels the bottoms," by filling up the depressed part in the centre with a piece of tarred felt ; and, that done, the boots are ready for the outsoles. After the leather for them has been thoroughly condensed by ham- mering on the "lap-stone," they are fastened through the insole with steel tacks, their sides are pared, and a narrow channel is cut round their edges; and through this channel they are stitched to the welt, about twelve stitches of strong waxed thread being made tothe inch. The soles are now hainmered into shape; the heel lifts are put on and attached with wooden pegs, then sewed through the stitches of the insole ; and the top-pieces, similar to the outsoles, are pnt on and nailed down to the lifts. The finishing operations embrace pinning up the edge of the heel, paring, rasping, scraping, smoothing, blacking, and burnishing the edges of soles and heels, scraping, sand-papering, and burnishing the soles, withdrawing the lasts, and cleaning out any pegs which may have pierced through the inner sole. Of course, there are numerous minor operations connected with forwarding and finishing in various materials, such as punching lace-holes, inserting eyelets, applying heel and toe irons, hob-nailing, &c. To make a pair of common stout lacing boots occupies an expert workman from fourteen to eighteen hours.~~

~~*The principal difficulties to overcome jn applying machinery to shoemaking were encountered in the operation of fastening together the soles and uppers. The first success in this iniportant operation was effected when means other than sewing were devised. In 1809 David Meade Randolph obtained a patent for fastening the soles and heels to the inner soles by means of little nails, &c. The lasts he used were covered at the bottom with plates of metal, and the nails, when driven through the inner soles, were turned and clinched by coming against the metal plates. To fix the soles to the lasts during the operation the metal plates were each perforated with three holes, in which wooden plugs were inserted, and to these the insoles were nailed. This invention may be said to have laid the foundation of machine boot-making. In the following year (1810) the inventor M. I. Brunel patented a range of machinery for fastening soles to uppers by means of metallic pins or nails, and the use of screws and staples was patented by Richard Woodman in the same year.*~~

~~*Apart from sewing by machine or hand, three principal methods of attaching soles to uppers are in use at present. The first is "pegging" with small wooden pins or pegs driven through outsole and insole, catching between them the edges of the upper. The points of the pegs which project through the insole are cut away aud smoothed level with the leather either by hand or by a machine pegging rasp. The second is the system of "riveting or clinching " with iron or brass nails, the points of the nails being turned or clinched by coming in contact with the iron last used. The third method, screwing, has come into extensive use since the standard screwing machine was introduced in America by the Mackay Association of Boston, Massachusetts, and in Europe by the Blake & Good- year Company of London. The standard screw machine, which is an American invention, is provided with a reel of stout screw- threaded brass wire, which by the revolution of the reel is inserted into and screwed throngh outsole, upper edge, and insole. Within the upper a head presses against the insole directly opposite the point of the screw, and the instant screw and head touch the wire is cut level with the outsole. The screw, making its own hole, fits tightly in the leather, and the two soles, being both compressed and screwed firmly together, make a perfectly water-tight and solid shoe. The surface of the insole is quite level and even, and as the work is really screwed the screws are steady in their position, and they*~~

~~add materially to the dnrability of the soles. The principal disadvantage in the use of standard screwed soles is the great diffi- culty met with in removing and levelling down the remains of an old sole when repairs are necessary;~~

~~The various forms of sewing-machine by which uppers are closed, and their important modifications for uniting soles and uppers, are also principally of American origin. But the first suggestion of machine sewing was an English idea. The patent secured by Thomas Saint in the English Patent Office in 1790, while it fore- shadowed the most important features of the modern sewing- machine, indicated more particnlarly the devices now adopted in the sewing of leather. After the introduction of the sewing-machine for cloth work its adaptation to stitching leather both with plain thread and with heated waxed thread was a comparatively simple task. The first important step in the more difficult problem of sewing together soles and uppers by a machine was taken in the United States by Lyman R. Blake in 1858. Blake's machine was ultimately perfected as the Mackay sole-sewing machine,—one of the most successful and lucrative inventions of modern times. Blake secured his first English patent in 1859, his invention being thus described ; "This machine is a chain-stitch sewing-machine. The hooked needle works through a rest or supporting surface of the~~

~~upper part of a long curved arm which projects upwards from the table of the machine. This arm should have such a form as to be capable of entering a shoe so as to carry the rest into the toe part as well as any other part of the interior of it ; It carries at its front end and directly under the rest a looper, which is supported within the end of the arm so as to be capable of rotating or partially rotat- mg round the needle, while the said needle may extend into and~~

~~along in the curved arm, thence through a tension spring applied to the arm, and thence upwards through the notch of the looper. needle carrier extends upwards with a cylindrical block which can i The feed wheel by which the shoe is moved along the curved arm during~~

~~*, and applied thereto so as to be capable of sliding up and down therein. The shoe is placed on the arm with the sole upwards. Blake's original machine was very imperfect and was incapable of sewing*~~

~~*standing which many other sole-sewing machines were patented. important of these is the Goodyear & Mackay machines for welted shoes, — the first mechanism adapted for sewing soles on lasted boots and shoes. These machines originated in a patent obtained in 1862 in the United States by August Destory for a curved-needle machine for sewing outsoles to welts, but the mechan- ism was not successful till taken in hand by Charles Goodyear, son of the well-known inventor in india-rubber fabrics. The Goodyear & Mackay Company make two machines for welted goods, one for sewing the inseam and the second for stitching on the outsole. A large number of the latter form of machine are in use, many manu- facturers preferring to secure the welt or a midsole by the standard screw machine, sewing to that the outsole with the Goodyear-Mackay machine. The same company adapt a circular-needle machine to the sewing of turn shoes, and this, with other similar machines, is in extensive use,*~~

~~*The range of machinery used in a well-equipped shoe-factory is very extensive, embracing machines for cutting leather, pressing rollers for sole leather, and presses with cutting-dies for stamping out sole and heel pieces. There are also, in addition to many kinds of sewing-machine, blocking or crimping appliances for moulding uppers or vamps, vamp-folding machines, eyeleting machines, lasting machines, trimming and paring machines for planing and smoothing the edges of soles and heels, For finishing there are scouring, sand-papering, and burnishing machines for the soles, and stamping machines for marks and monograms, with peg-cutting and nail-rasping machines for smoothing, cleaning out, and dress- ing the snrface of the insole. In short, there is not a single opera- tion necessary in shoemaking, however insignificant, for which machinery has not been devised.*~~

~~*The manufacture of india-rubber goloshes, shoes, and fishing- boots, &c., forms an important branch of the india-rubber industry rather than a department of shoemaking (see INDIA-RUBBER, vol. xii. p. 842). A very*~~

~~*considerable trade exists in boots and shoes with outer soles of gutta-percha (see vol. xi. p. 839) in place of leather, the headquarters of that trade being in Glasgow. (J. PA.)*~~

~~*SHOES, Horsr. The horny casing of the foot of the horse and other Solidungulates, while quite sufficient to protect the extremity of the limb under natural conditions, is found to wear away and break, especially in moist climates, when the animal is subjected to hard work of any kind. This, however, can be obviated by attaching to the hoof a rim of iron—a simple device which has been probably not surpassed in its beneficial effects by the intro- duction of steam-power locomotion. The animal itself has been in a very marked manner modified by shoeing, for without this we could have had neither the fleet racers nor*~~

~~*the heavy and powerful cart-horses' of the present day. Shoeing does not appear to have been practised by either Greeks or Romans ; but there is evidence that the art was known to the Celts, and that the practice became common after the overthrow of the Western empire towards the close of the 5th century. It is only recently that horse-shoeing was introduced in Japan, where the former practice was to attach to the horse's feet slippers of straw, which were renewed when necessary. In modern times much attention has been devoted to horse-shoeing, with the result of show- ing that methods formerly adopted caused cruel injury to horses and serious loss to their owners. The evils as sum- marized by Mr George Fleming, army (British) veterinary inspector, were caused by (1) paring the sole and frog; (2) applying shoes too heavy and of faulty shape ; (3) em- ploying too many and too large nails ; (4) applying shoes too small and removing the wall of the hoof to make the feet fit the shoes ; and (5) rasping the front of the hoof. According to modern principles (1) shoes should be as light as compatible with the wear demanded of them; (2) the ground face of the shoe should be concave, and the face applied to the foot plain ; (3) heavy draught horses alone should have toe and heel calks on their shoes to increase foothold ; (4) the excess growth of the wall or outer por- tion of horny matter should only be removed in ré-shoeing, care being taken to keep both sides of the hoof of equal height ; (5) the*~~

~~*shoe should fit accurately to the circum- ference of the hoof, and project slightly beyond the heel ; (6) the shoes should be fixed with as few nails as possible, six or seven in fore-shoes and eight in hind-shoes ; and (7) the nails should take a short thick hold of the wall, so that old nail-holes may be removed with the natural growth and paring of the horny matter. Horse shoes and nails are now made with great economy by machinery. In rural districts, where the art of the farrier is sometimes combined with blacksmith work, too little attention is, in general, given to considerations which have an important bearing on the comfort, usefulness, and life of the horse. SHOLAPUR, a British district of India, in the Deccan division of the Bombay presidency, with an area of 4521 square miles, lying between 17° 13' and 18° 35' N. lat. and 74° 39' and 76° 11' E. long. It is bounded on the N. by Ahmadnagar district, on the E. by the nizam's territory and Akalkot state, on the S. by Kalddgi district and some of the Patvardhan states, and on the W. by Satéra and Poona districts and the states of Phaltan and Panth Pratinidhi. Except in Karmala and Barsi subdivisions, situated in the north and east, where there is a good deal of hilly ground, the district is generally flat or undulating ; but it is very bare of vegetation, and presents everywhere a bleak treeless appearance. The chief rivers are the Bhima and its tributaries—the Man, the Nira, and the Sina—all flowing towards the south-east. Besides these there are several smaller streams. Lying in a tract of un- certain rainfall, Sholapur is peculiarly liable to seasons of scarcity ; much, however, has been done by the opening of canals and ponds, such as the Ekrik and Ashti tanks, to secure a better water-supply. The Great Indian Penin- sular Railway enters the district at Pomalvadi in the north- west corner and crosses it in a south-easterly direction, a distance of nearly 150 miles. Sholapur has recently been connected with a branch of the Southern Mahratta Railway. The population of Sholapur district in 1881 was 582,487 (294,814 males and 287,678 feinales). HIndus numbered 530,121, Moham- medans 43,967, aud Christians 625. There are three towus with populations exceeding 10,000 cach, viz., SHOLAPUR (q.v.), Pan- dharpur (16,910), Barsi (16,126). In 1883-84 there were 1,763,340 acres under cultivation, of which 22,282 were twice cropped, besides 325,987 acres of fallow or grass land. Joar, which forms the staple food of the people, occupied 923,706 acres, bajri 298,239, wheat*~~

~~55,504, rice 25,027, pulses 185,528, and oil-seeds 147,914 acres. The produce of the district finds an easy outlet by the railway to~~

~~8S II O—S HO~~

~~Poona and Bombay. The chief exports are cotton, which comes from the nizam's dominions, oil, oil-seeds, ghi, turmeric, and cotton cloth ; imports include salt, piece-goods, yarn, gunney bags, and iron ware. The chief industrics are spinning, weaving, and dyeing. The silks and finer sorts of cotton cloth prepared in Sholapur bear a good name; blankets are also woven in large numbers. The gross revenue of the district in 1883-84 amounted to £129,429, of which the land-tax yielded £98, 968.~~

~~Sholapur district passed from the Bahmani to the Bijapur kings and from them to the Marathas. In 1818, on the fall of the Peshwa, it was ceded to the British, when it formed part of the Poona col- lectorate, but in 1838 it was made a separate collectorate. Since then its progress has been rapid.~~

~~SHOLAPUR, chief town and administrative head- quarters of the above district, is situated in 17° 40' 18" N. lat. and 75° 56' 38" E. long., on the plain of the Sina. Its convenient situation between Poona and Haidarabad (Hyderabad), with a station on the Great Indian Penin- sular Railway, has made it the centre for the collection and distribution of goods over a large extent of country. The town contained in 1881 a population of 59,890 (males 30,410, females 29,480). ,~~

~~SHOOTING for sporting purposes requires in the use of firearms two fundamental principles on which rests the~~

~~attainment of dexterity. These are, first, that the weight Weight of the weapon be such that the sportsman can carry and of gun.~~

~~wield it with ease ; and, secondly—of still greater import- ance—that the weapon be so adapted to his chest, arm, and eye that when it is raised and levelled in the act of taking aim it may be as part of his own body. An over- heavy gun may be virtually lightened by being carried by an attendant and only handed to the sportsman when re- quired; but a gun not exactly "fitting the shoulder," can- not possibly serve its user with~~

~~*accuracy. The reason is plain. The slight divergence of his line of aim from the axis of the barrel, due to the shape of the gun not permit- ting the coincidence of the two when the weapon is used rapidly, creates a far from slight divergence of the pellets at any range beyond a few yards, and the object fired at, if struck at all, is only struck by the outer and weaker pellets. The increasing wildness of game-birds, in Great Britain at least, especially of partridges, through the modern system of cutting grain close to the ground and so leaving no sheltering stubble, demands rapid aim and discharge of the gun, and in consequence the efforts of gun- makers have been directed to the production of weapons of great lightness combined with power and precision. How different were the conceptions of our immediate pre- decessors is exemplified in such statements as "'a few addi- tional pounds in the weight of a gun makes a deal of differ- ence," and "the most approved guns" are those "weighing, according to the fancy of the shooter, from six to nine pounds." The most approved guns now vary in weight by a few ounces only, and their configuration not by inches, but by eighths and even sixteenths of an inch. There are also fine lines in their modelling which, while of great consequence, are imperceptible to the eye, and can only be demonstrated by the application of exact and delicate instruments. Yet each of these lines has an important purpose, and their combination produces the perfect weapon. An experienced gunsmith who has studied this branch of his business can catch the salient lines of a sportsman's figure with the eye of an artist, and by the further aid of tests and measurements can construct for him a proper gun, and thus lay the foundation of a correct style of shooting. On the other hand, an unsuitable gun can only be aimed correctly with slowness, and by some straining of the muscles of the neck. Under such condi- tions correct and rapid shooting is at least improbable ; the spread of the shot alone prevents a complete miss. It is the correct configuration of the gun which brings into full effect the elaborate boring of the barrel, and gives*~~

~~*Balance.*~~

~~*Calibre.*~~

~~*Length of barrel.*~~

~~*Bore.*~~

~~*SHO OTT WG*~~

~~*those long shots of which Sportsmen are so proud, and which are due to the central pellets flying Straight to a very considerable distance, much beyond that of the outer pellets.*~~

~~*The next point in a gun is balance 3 that is, the metal in the barrels must be so apportioned and the general con- struction be so arranged that there is no tendency in the muzzle to droop at the moment of discharge, just when the faculties of the sportsman are absorbed in taking aim and his muscular energies are in abeyance. The gun should balance at a point a little in front of the trigger-guard. The centre of gravity should also be low, so that there may be nothing of what may be called " top-hamper,"— in other words, that his gun may not roll in his hand, but may keep on an even keel, as it were, while he is taking aim. If we weigh in the scales two guns of nearly the same weight, the one well the other il] balanced, the former, although feeling quite light in the hand, will generally be found to be really heavier than the latter,—a fact which is frequently the cause of much surprise to sportsmen. When properly balanced, a gun can be carried with much less fatigue.*~~

~~*The calibre—a much disputed point—is, within the bounds commonly used, a question more of the capability of the sportsman to carry weight than one touching his effectiveness in the field. It has been plausibly argued that it matters little how narrow the calibre of a fowling- piece is, and that even gauge "35" ('510 inch) is wide enough. It certainly would throw a few pellets of swan- shot effectively, especially if the barrel was not less than 40 inches long. But for all common purposes the most useful calibre is the twelve-bore, if the weight is not under 64 Ib, or somewhat less for hammerless guns. When a less weight is required, "16" gauge (which in breech- loaders is really "15") is preferable. Calibre 20" belongs to toy-weapons, such guns being also uncertain in their delivery; and, as strong and effective "16" double-barrelled guns can now be made weighing only 6 ib, a smaller calibre can hardly be required, except under peculiar conditions. Against the advantage of less weight has to be set the important matter of recoil, and one cause of recoil is the elongation of the*~~

~~*body of the shot (and especially of the small-sized shot used in such guns) when placed in the barrel or cartridge. The longer that body, and the smaller the shot, the greater the difficulty in starting it ; hence, to bring a "20" as regards recoil to an equality with a "12," the weight of the charge of shot must be unduly reduced, with a more than proportionate reduction of the probability of killing, save in the exceptional cases where the size is not larger than snipe-shot. The shot ina "12" has no part at any appreciable distance from the wadding over the powder, and every pellet may fairly be said to receive a direct impetus from the explosion. An exceed- ingly light gun has also the fault of causing unsteadiness when the sportsman takes aim.*~~

~~*The length of the barrels need not exceed 30 inches, If a sportsman possesses a remarkably correct eye, he may safely go down to 26 inches or even less ; but it must be borne in mind that the shorter the barrel the greater the necessity for a perfectly correct aim. Any divergence on a barrel under 26 inches is vastly increased at 30 or 40 yards. On the other hand, aim is more quickly taken with short barrels. Thirty inches is a sound medium.*~~

~~*Of late years there has been a run on what are termed "choke-bores" (see GUNMAKING, vol. xi. p. 281). But unless the choking is most mathematically true the flight of the shot will not be coincident with the axis of the barrel or the line of aim, but will "train off" in some oblique direction ; and this obliquity will also be more or less affected by any required modifications of the charge. A*~~

~~*just grazing the right front of*~~

~~*choke-bore, therefore, restricts its user to narrow conditions in loading it. The velocity of the shot is also consider- ably reduced, the killing power depending less on that than on the object aimed at being struck with a greater number of pellets. Neither do all the pellets fly with equal velocity, so that, as was proved several years ago by ingenious experimentation (first announced by the present writer), these advance, as it were, in a narrow and pro- longed column, whereas a properly bored "friction and*~~

~~relief" barrel throws its shot in the figure of a broad disk, with all the pellets travelling practically at the same rate, — the inner or central ones having, however, more sustained killing power, their "quality of motion " degree and greatly prolonging the range. bored on the friction and relief method certainly puts the~~

~~game at fair sporting ranges ; but since the introduction of breech-loaders barrels so bored have (undeservedly) fallen so greatly into disuse that the delicate art of friction and relief boring has nearly been lost. A purely cylindrical barrel only shoots well when perfectly clean,—a condition that every discharge impairs.~~

~~between the stood) right in front of his line of vision. barrels and~~

~~How the shutting of one eye (unknown in billiards and similar games) practised in using firearms seems inexpli- cable to those who know how detrimental it is. The keeping of both eyes open was formerly not quite unknown, but was so little practised that, when the present writer took the matter up some thirty years ago and publicly advocated it, he was looked upon as being quite in error; but now his correctness is acknowledged, and what is termed the ' two-eye" system is coming more and more into use. There are still many uncertain "shots" who are not aware that their frequently unaccountable misses are caused by the scientific fact that shutting one eye deprives them of the power of measuring distances, and also of watching the movement of a running or flying object. As a rule, whilst the right eye is actually taking aim, the left is acting subsidiarily and showing the right whether or not it is taking it correctly. It may be noted that almost all exceptionally good shots have the eyes set wide apart, and so take their observation from a broader base.~~

~~The attitude in taking aim should be free and upright, with the left foot somewhat advanced. The right elbow should never be raised to a horizontal level with the shoulder,—a common but bad practice. The gun should be lifted directly upwards, the but-end the chest when reaching its final position, the eyes all the while looking fixedly upon the object. To illustrate this by way of contrast, there is another bad style of throwing the gun forward, the shooter all the while trying to look along the rib (which cranes the neck), and then bringing it back against the shoulder~~

~~*before firing. This, however, is a waste of muscular power and quite throws out the adaptation of the stock to the shoulder, because it is impossible to bring back the gun quite correctly, and it has therefore to be readjusted (which can hardly be accomplished) before firing. Besides, all this consumes time, for which game will not tarry. In military phrase, three " motions " are required ; with the proper style there is only one. ;*~~

~~*The question how far the left hand should be extended in taking Use of aim is much disputed, but is really of secondary consequence. left hand. Pigeon-shooters extend it as far as they well can, because their great object is to prevent the muzzle from drooping at the moment of discharge ; but from this, and also from their custom of planting their feet firmly and squarely upon the ground, so as to stand with their full front to their probable line of aim, no lesson in shooting game need be taken. Good game shots are not unfrequently poor shots at pigeons, and vice versa ; to be expert at the former depends upon the acquisition of a certain knack, and above all of calculation in time, 7.¢., of the power of estimating the average time from the*~~

~~*XXII. — 105*~~

~~*Stock of gun.*~~

~~*Treat- ment of guns.*~~

~~*Rabbits,*~~

~~*Hares,*~~

~~*Roedeer.*~~

~~*Grouse.*~~

~~*834*~~

~~*shooter's cry of the word "pull" to the opening of the trap and flight of the bird. This is so much the case that not unfrequently the gun is fired solely by calculation of time, and before a sluggish bird has flown. In*~~

~~*game-shooting the bird may rise in front or at either side of the shooter, or even behind him. Very rapid lateral movement of the gun may therefore be required, and it appears not only probable in itself but experimentally true that this can best be made by the left arm when it has to describe a circle of the shortest diameter. For this the best and safest position is when the left hand grasps the gun immediately in front of the trigger- guard. In pulling the trigger the finger should be well crooked, so that the pressure may be directly backwards, and no lateral dis- turbance may interfere with the aim at the most critical moment.*~~

~~*If the eye takes in all the rib of the gun when raised to the shoulder in position for firing, so that the full length of its surface is seen, the stock is too straight. If the rib is not seen at all, the stock is too crooked. When a stock is of the proper curve, the eye will catch the rib about one-third of its length from the muzzle, ie., all the rib in front of that point will be visible, and all behind it out of sight. A straight stock is, however, preferable to a crooked one, which makes the gun shoot low,—a bad fault. It is of first-rate importance that the delicate lateral setting of the stock, as distinguished from the perpendicular curve, should bring the centre of the rib exactly into the line of sight. This fine desidera- tum may be arrived at conjointly by the sportsman and the maker of the gun; the latter can be guided by information as to the sports- man's height, length of arm, and breadth of chest. If this point is satisfactory it is immaterial whether a bird flies to the right hand or to the left, and the neglect of it is the reason why some sportsmen are good shots in one only of these directions.*~~

~~*In cleaning breechloaders, including the inside of the barrels, neither oil nor water should be used, but solely spirits of turpentine. The gun should never be laid aside on full-cock, as this weakens the mainsprings. As hammerless guns are necessarily on full-cock when taken down, the triggers should be drawn, but with the eare- ful proviso that the points of the hammers strike upon a block of hard wood held firmly in front of them. The lock should never be snapped unless there is a discharged or a "'dummy" cartridge in the barrel. No hammer can be made, of any metal or form of con- struction, that will not probably crack if it falls without something in front less trying than the hard and impassive breech. On sea*~~

~~*voyages and in damp climates the barrels should be kept from the atmosphere by inserting into them wooden rods covered with woollen cloth, and in such cases the free application of turpentine will be found invaluable. Failing these rods, each end may be closed with wadding or corks. For oiling the locks the finest chronometer oil should be used, and only applied in minute quantities to the points of friction, not over all: oil dries up and if applied copiously frustrates the desired purpose. Raw linseed oil, frequently rubbed into a stock, hardens and preserves it. Explorers and travellers, whose lives may depend on their firearms, may usefully strengthen the weakest part of every gun, the handle of the stock, by wrapping it tightly round with whip-cord.*~~

~~*Shooting Game.—Space forbids entering at length on the modes of shooting the several varieties of game. All that is here possible is briefly to touch upon some of the salient points in the pursuit of the more common varieties.*~~

~~*Rabbits, on which young sportsmen generally first essay their "*prentice hand," dash off for the nearest shelter with great rapidity, and should be instantaucously fired at, the aim being taken slightly in advance. Ifa rabbit has disappeared among brushwood, it may be not unavailing to fire right in front of the line it was seen to take. In "ferreting" the sportsman should stand clear of the burrow (over whieh he should never tread), and never fire at a rabbit until it is well away from the "bolt-hole." Hares are less tenacious of life than rabbits, and, as it is an object not to mangle the body and so cause an effusion of blood, the eyes of the sports- nian should be fixed solely on the tips of the ears in whatever direction the animal is going, when the shot is instantaneously fatal. A hare coming straight towards a sportsman should not be fired at; he should stand quite motionless until it comes within 30 yards, when on his making a slight sound or movement it will turn aside and give an easy shot. No other direction need be given on this head (save possibly that the shot is more easy when a hare is ascending a ridge across which it may be running than when it is descending from the crown to the furrow), seeing that the one principle of firing solely at the ears involves everything. Roedeer are usually killed with buckshot—although a small rifle is pre- ferable—the " guns" being posted at the likely passes. The neck or shoulder should be*~~

~~*fired at. They are easily killed when within fair distance, but are exceedingly clever in keeping out of rauge and in detecting the presence of the lurking sportsman. They also have the trick, in common with the elephant, of doubling back and passing round any knoll, coming out on its other side and then continuing their intended course. Of this instinctive habit the sportsman should avail himself.*~~

~~*Success in grouse-shooting, probably the finest of all sports from*~~

~~*every point of view, depends mainly on vigilance and careful atten- tion to the movements of the dogs, and following them well up as soon as there are indications of gante being in front. Save that a cunning old cock will after rising immediately dip down to nearly the level of the heather and go off with wondrously baffling speed, there is no peculiarity in the flight of grouse calling for special remark. Like partridges, they generally fly straight and nearly horizontally. As the season advances, their wariness and the matured strength of the young birds make their pursuit more difficult, but otherwise they afford fair shots. "‘ Driving" is now quite a recognized branch of grouse-shooting. The "‘ guns" being posted in artificial places of concealment in the line of flight known to be usually taken by the birds on being disturbed by beaters, the shots are taken as the birds are coming overhead. Their speed is so great that it is needless to fire if they have once passed the shooter, seeing that the aim must be taken some feet in front.! It has been found useful for the sportsman to crouch without motion until the birds are coming within distance, when, suddenly showing himself, they are startled and throw their heads up, thus breaking their flight and giving the gun a fair chance. Perhaps the easiest and most fatal shots are at single birds coming straight towards the sportsman, taken at about 30 yards. The aim should be high, and it is aided by the recoil of a gun when fired, which throws the muzzle up in the line of flight. The pellets also strike the head and neck, and with such force that, when meeting the bird, No. 7 shot is most deadly when so discharged. The recoil of a gun when fired "high" is also useful in shooting with a rifle any large bird passing overhead ; the shooter should face the bird. Driving is severe work if thoroughly carried out, as the*~~

~~*sportsmen, as soon as one beat is over, have to find their way rapidly to the next position. It is therefore not an effeminate sport, and it probably indirectly maintains the number of the stock-birds by killing off the old leading cocks (which virtually are vermin). Setters are the proper dogs for grouse-shooting, their hairy feet being well protected from the heather ; hence to maintain vigour they require to drink water frequently and even to squat in shallow pools. Pointers are preferable for dry moors, particularly in hot weather.*~~

~~*Partridge-shooting is akin to grouse-shooting in respect of the Par- mode of pursuit, the difference lying in its being carried on mostly tridges,*~~

~~*upon cultivated or enclosed land. Both in partridge-shooting and in grouse-shooting one bird only ought to be singled out and shot at; no success will follow firing into the "brown" of a covey. Old sportsmen regret that shooting over dogs (pointers being pre- ferable to the swifter and more dashing setters) is going out of practice ; but the close cutting of the grain crops now in vogue leaves so little stubble that the approach of the dogs is seen by the birds, which, generally rising wild, afford few "shots to points." Hence the system of sportsmen walking in line (with no dogs save retrievers) and taking what birds rise before them, and so driving them into turnips or other covert, or of having them " driven" by beaters, is almost enforced. When driven into such coverts the birds are apt to run before the shooters and take their flight from the far end of the field. This may be prevented by the sportsman not advancing directly, but in a series of circuits; then the birds, becoming uncertain as to which way they should run, sit close and only rise on his very near approach. Of course this excellent but almost unknown system can only be well carried out by a single shooter, or by two at the most. In "driving" the "guns" are posted in a line at some distance from each other, under the con- cealment of a hedge some 20 yards in their front. Towards this the beaters (with a fugleman on horseback, if necessary) drive the birds. The shots are generally very difficult, the birds flying with remarkable speed, and the shooter being also often bewildered by the number of smaller birds, such as the various kinds of thrushes, which precede or accompany the partridges ; their sudden appear- ance on coming over the hedge is also trying, whereas the approach of grouse can be seen. These two systems*~~

~~—“ driving” and the circular progression in covert—are of recent introduction. The former has developed greater skill in shooting.~~

~~The art of shooting pheasants depends upon the fact that, unlike Phea- partridges or grouse, the birds generally steadily ascend in their sants.~~

~~flight ; hence the tendency is to shoot under them. This upward flight is greatest in coverts, until it sometimes becomies almost perpendicular, birds rising in this way being called “rocketers.” The inexperienced shooter is also misled by the manner in which the tail is spread out like a fan, concealing the body, and thus diverting the aim from the body upon the tail feathers. To aim high, therefore, is the golden rule. The shooter should face birds which fly rapidly overhead, in the way described above.~~

~~To kill snipe well one must hunt down the wind—an exceptional Snipe~~

~~practice—and on the bird rising fire at once, or, failing that, give it time to change its few preliminary zigzag motions into a steady flight. ee eee~~

~~1 A carrier pigeon can fly a little over 4 miles 5 furlongs in four minutes, — an average of nearly 102 feet a second. Assuming the distance to be 40 yards (a long shot), the aim taken ata bird flying across the shooter at that speed should be more than 5 feet in advance, the flight of the shot to a distance of 40 yards requiring one-nineteenth of a second.~~

~~Black- cock and wood- cock,~~

~~Ammu- nition.~~

~~Rifle- shooting,~~

~~SHO—SHO~~

~~As the least touch of shot brings a snipe down, have passed out of range before the direct line of flight is assumed, This is the only sport followed on land “down wind.” Shot No. 9 or 10 should be used.~~

~~Although greatly different in character, black-game and wood- cock may be well coupled together as being eccentric in their move- ments. ‘The~~

~~*former are most easily shot very early in the season, especially over a steady old pointer, when the broods are yet on the more open ground, under the maternal] charge, like so many domestic chickens ; but, when they have broken up the family ties, congregated, and betaken themselves to the coppices, they become so irregular in their habits and uncertain in their mode of takin flight that no exact rules can be laid down for their pursuit. The Sportsman, using one steady old pointer and a retriever, had best be guided by an experienced attendant, who should take care to beat out any bird lurking in a thick bush from the opposite side and towards the gun. A few shots may also be got at the dawn of day on the edges of stubble-fields ; but black-game shooting is generally disappointing. The femalc birds, " grey hens," are not shot at ; the young males, which greatly resemble them, are dis- tinguished from them by the white feathers in the tail. A solitary blackcock may often be seen to take up a prominent position, usu- ally in the centre of one of the small fields to be found on the side of hilly ground, where he maintains a vigilant watch. With some experience in shooting matters, the present writer knows no pursuit more interesting and invigorating than stalking such a bird: with- out causing undue fatigue, it exercises one's patience, vigilance, and coolness of nerve. Shot for this purpose should not be of a smaller size than No. 4. Woodcock newly arrived may be readily killed, especially near the sea-coast. After recruiting, they frequently betake themselves to heathery moors if there are such near at hand, where they frequent the sides of rivulets and gorges. There they may be readily brought down; but in woods they have a knack of twisting, as it were, round the younger trees, in the branches of which they are mostly found, and' so disconcert the aim. Being of nocturnal habits, their eyes are weak in the full lare of day, and they are fond of the sheltering shade of thickly foliaged trees, such as the holly. The only advice that can be given on this sport is to risk the shot at the merest glimpse of the bird through the branches, and trust to the spread of the pellets to kill, for the woodcock, like its congener the snipe, will fall with a touch, and even (apparently) through mere fright on being fired at, without being touched at all. The best shot to use is No. 8,*~~

~~*Ammunition.—In former times sportsmen carefully adjusted their charges of powder and shot to suit the weather (which affected the strength of the former) and the sport in hand. Now, almost everything is*~~

~~left to the purveyor of cartridges, which are usually charged on average proportions. The sportsman should be careful, therefore, to ascertain the charge best suited to his weapon, and to have his cartridges so loaded. When a gun recoils the charge of shot—not of powder, as is generally supposed—should be reduced ; and it is always safer to use a light charge of shot. Breechloaders require large-grained powder, Messrs Curtis & Harvey's No. 6 being the typical size. Pyroxyline explosives, of which Schultze powder is the normal type, are now largely used, especially in the first barrel, the other being charged with black powder. For almost all regular sport No. 6 shot is the best size ; and it is better to use No. 7 ina smaller quantity than No. 5 for grouse and partridges. For pheasants and black game use No. 5, but of 1} oz. in weight, with a somewhat reduced charge of powder. One oz. or at most 14 0z. of No. 6 is ample ; the former will travel with marvellous and far-reaching velocity. Any excess of shot merely falls to the ground, as may be seen by firing over a sheet of smooth water. For duck-shooting (for which the barrels should be of "10" gauge and 32 inches long) No. 4 shot is a good size; and for this sport it is well to reduce the weight of the shot and increase very considerably that of the powder, velocity being everything,~~

~~Rifle-shooting.—The propriety of shooting with both eyes open is, if possible, more imperative in rifle-shooting than in shooting game, if rapidity is valued, as it must be. Firearms immediately followed the long bow and the cross-bow, and it has never been supposed that the archer discharged these with one eye closed. With both eyes open the "back sight" virtually becomes transparent, and forms no obstacle to the aim, while with one eye closed it cer- tainly does, for, as the head and eyes must be kept fairly up in firing a shot gun, they must be kept well down in firing a rifle. The " express" rifle is the chef-d@'ewvre of modern weapons, and when properly made will throw its bullet up to 200 yards without perceptible curve from one sight. This result is attained mostly by~~

~~it is very unlikely to~~

~~1 This explosive is the invention of Colonel J. F. E. Schultze, of the Prussian artillery service, and was introduced about 1866 into the United Kingdom by Mr J. D. Dougall. It is now being manufactured in Great~~

~~*Britain as well as on the Continent. The advantages claimed for it are that it does not require any special loading, such as hard Tamming, there is a smaller recoil than with black gunpowder, and it has great propulsive power, with little or no fouling of the firearm.*~~

~~*835*~~

~~*an inordinately large charge of powder toa light and partly hollow bullet (see GUNMAKING, vol. xi. p. 282). The 'pull' on the trigger should rather be a pinch than a direct backward pull, ze. the trigger should be pinched between the forefinger and the thumh which grasps the handle of the stock.*~~

~~*presence of mind to inflate his chest with shoot all the better, 1*~~

~~*barrelled ' express" shoots more truly than a double-barrelled one.*~~

~~*and antelopes, for dangerous animals. But for*~~

~~*royal whom he described respectively as the merriest, the wilyest, and the holiest harlot in his realm. A handsome woman of moderate stature, round face, and fair complexion, she was more captivating by her wit and conversation than by her beauty ; yet Sir Thomas More, writing when she was still alive, but old, lean, and withered, declares that even then an attentive observer might have discerned in her shrivelled countenance some traces of its lost charms. She was born in London, and married before she was quite out of girlhood to a citizen named William Shore, who, though young, handsome, and well-to-do, never really won her affections ; and thus she yielded the more readily to the solicitations of King Edward. Her husband on this abandoned her, and after Edward's death she became the mistress of Lord Hastings, whom Richard ITIL, then duke of Gloucester, as protector durin g the minority of Edward V., suddenly ordered to be beheaded on 13th June 1483. According to the report given by More, Richard had accused Hastings at the council table of conspiring against him along with the queen-dowager and Shore's wife, who by sorcery and witchcraft had given him a withered arm. So having got rid of Hastings he caused Jane Shore to be committed to prison and spoiled her house, containing property to the value of 2000 or*~~

~~*3000 marks, equivalent to a sum of £20,000 or £30,000 at the present day. But having sought in the first place to charge her with conspiracy—a charge which apparently he could not sub- stantiate—he thought better afterwards to get the bishop of London to put her to open penance at Paul's Cross for her vicious life. She accordingly went in her kirtle through the streets one Sunday with a taper in her hand, her beauty really enhanced by the blush which her humilia. tion called up in her usually pale cheeks 3 and many who detested her mode of life could not but pity her as the victim of a hypocritical tyranny. The penance certainly did not induce her to reform, for she immediately after- wards became the mistress of the marquis of Dorset 3 and, what is still more extraordinary, next year, having been taken again into custody, and her husband, it may be presumed, being by that time dead, she so captivated the king's solicitor, Thomas Lynom, that he actually entered into a contract of marriage with her. This we know from a letter of King Richard to his chancellor on the occasion, desiring him to dissuade Lynom from the match, as far as he could, by argument, but, if he found him determined, then, provided it was not against the laws of the church, he might convey the king's consent and meanwhile deliver Jane out of prison to her father's custody. Conduct so*~~

~~*$36*~~

~~*unlike his previous severity shows that Richard knew how to be gracious as well as despotic. Whether the marriage actually took place is not known. Jane certainly lived to the year 1513, when More wrote his history of Richard III., but how much later we cannot tell.*~~

~~*SHORTHAND, or Srenocraruy, TACHYGRAPHY, &c., is a term applied to all systems of brief handwriting which are intended to enable a person to write legibly at the rate of speech. (For the ancient Latin and Greek tachygraphy, see the last part of the article on Patmocraruy.) In the 10th century all practical acquaintance with the shorthand systems of Greece and Rome faded completely away, and not till the beginning of the 17th can the art be said to have revived. But even during that interval systems of writing seem to have been practised which for speed ap- proximated to modern shorthand.}*~~

Shorthand in English-speaking Countries.—England was the birthplace of modern shorthand, and at the present time there is no country in Europe, except perhaps Germany and German Switzerland, where the art is so extensively practised as in England. The first impulse to its cultivation may possibly be traced to the Reformation. When the principles of that movement were being pro- mulgated from the pulpit, a desire to preserve the dis- courses of the preacher naturally suggested the idea of accelerated writing. It is certainly striking that in the early systems so many brief arbitrary signs are provided to denote phrases common in the New Testament and Pro- testant theology. Up to the present time (1886) not less than 483 professedly distinct systems of English shorthand have been published, and doubtless many more have been invented for private use. It is impossible here to notice even by name more than a very few of them. Indeed, if we reject all those systems which are imitations or repro- ductions of earlier ones, and systems which are so unpracti- cal as to be little better than elegant toys, and a multitude of utterly worthless catchpenny publications, only a few remain. In Dr Timothy Bright's? Characterie (1588) and Peter Bales's? Arte of Brachygraphie, contained in his

Writing Schoolemaster (1590), almost every word in the language is provided with an arbitrary sign. Only with gigantic memory and by unremitting labour could one acquire a practical knowledge of such methods. The first shorthand system worthy of the name which, so far as is known, appeared in England is that of John Willis, whose Art of Stenographie (London, 13 editions* from 1602 to

1 For instances, see Zeibig's Geschichte u. Lit. der Geschwindschreib-kunst (Dresden, 1878), pp. 67-79. For John of Tilbury's system (c, 1175), see especially Shorthand, No. 5, and Hermes, viii. p. 3038.

2 The Bodleian Library contains the only known copy of Bright's book. For a description of the system, see Phonetic Journal, 1884, p. 86 ; Circulars of Information of the Bureau of Education (Wash- ington), No. 2, 1884, p. 8; and Notes and Queries, 2d ser., vol. ii. p. 394. A is represented by a straight line, the other letters of the alphabet by a straight line with a hook, circle, or tick added at the beginning. Each

~~*alphabetic sign placed in various positions, and having some additional mark at the end, was used to indicate arbi- trarily chosen words beginning with a, b,c, d, &c. There were four slopes given to each letter and twelve ways of varying the base, so that forty-eight words could be written under each letter of the alpha- bet if necessary. Thus the sign for 6 with different terminal marks and written in four different directions signified a number of words commencing with 6; 587 such signs had to be learned by heart. By adding certain external marks these signs were applied to other words : thus by writing a dot in one of two positions with respect toa sign the latter was made to represent either a synonym or a word of opposite ineaning. Under air are given as synonyms breath, exhalation, mist, reek, steam, vapour. The best account of Bright is given in the Dictionary of National Biography, vol. vi. (1886).*~~

~~*3 Bales's method was to group the words in dozens, each dozen headed by a Roman letter, with certain commas, periods, and other marks to be placed abont each letter in their appropriate situations, so as to distin- guish the words from each other. For an account of Bales, see Wood's Athen. Oxon., vol. i. col. 655, and the Dict. of Nat. Biog., vol. iii. (1885).*~~

~~*4 The first edition, published anonymously, is entitled The Art of*~~

~~*1644) is substantially based on the common alphabet ; but the clumsiness of his alphabetic signs, and the confused laborious contrivances by which he denotes prefixes and terminations, involving the continual lifting of the pen, would seem to render his method almost as slow as long- hand. Of the 201 systems which intervene between J. Willis's and Isaac Pitman's phonography (1837) nearly all are based, like Willis's, on the alphabet, and may be called a, b, ec systems.. But seven are, like phonography, strictly phonetic, viz., those by Tiffin (1750), Lyle (1762), Holds- worth and Aldridge (1766), Roe (1802), Phineas Bailey (1819), Towndrow (1831), and De Stains (1839). Of the 281 systems which have appeared since phonography a very large proportion are merely imitations of that system, or proceed on the same lines.*~~

~~*A few. general remarks apply largely to all the a, b, cA, b, ¢ Each letter is designated by a straight line or Systems, |*~~

~~*systems. curve (vertical, horizontal, or sloping), sometimes with the addition of a hook or loop. C and q are rejected, & being substituted for hard ¢ and qg, s for soft. Signs are pro- vided for ch, sh, th. Gand j are classed under one sign, because in some words g is pronounced as J, as in giant, gem. Similarly each of the pairs f, v and s, z has only one sign. A few authors make the signs for Jj, v, z heavier than those for g, f, s. Some class p and 6, ¢ and d, each under one sign. The stenographic alphabet is therefore—a, 6, d, e, f®, g (J), h, 2, k, i, M,N, 0, P, T, 8 (2), t, U, W, X,Y, ch, sh, th. Letters which are not sounded may be omitted. Gh, ph may be counted as f in such words as cough, Philip ; but the th in thing is never distinguished from the th in them. Thus the a, b, ¢ systems are largely phonetic with respect to consonant-sounds; it is rather with regard to the vowels that they disregard the phonetic principle. No attempt is made to provide adequately for the many vowel-sounds of the language. Thus the signs for like and lick, for rate and rat, &c., are the same. In the case of vowel-sounds denoted by two letters, that vowel is to be written which best repre- sents the sound. Thus in meat the e is selected, but in great the a. In some a, b, c systems, including the best of them (Taylor's), a dot placed anywhere does duty for all the vowels. This practice is, of course, a fruitful source of error, for pauper and paper, gas and goose, and hundreds of other pairs of words would according to this plan be written alike. In the early systems of Willis and his imi- tators the vowels are mostly written either by joined char- acters or by lifting the pen and writing the next consonant in a certain position with respect to the preceding one. Both these plans are bad ; for lifting the pen involves ex- penditure of time, and vowels expressed by joined signs and not by marks external to the word cannot be omitted, as is often necessary in swift writing, without changing the general appearance of the word and forcing the eye and the hand to accustom themselves to two sets of outlines, vocalized and unvocalized. In the better a, b, c systems the alphabetic signs, besides combining to denote words, may also stand alone to designate certain short common words, prefixes, and suffixes. Thus in Harding's edition of Taylor's system the sign for d, when written alone, denotes do, did, the prefixes de-, des-, and the terminations -dom, -*~~

~~*end, -ened, -ed. This is a good practice if the words are well chosen and precautions taken to avoid ambiguities. Numbers of symbolical signs and rough word-pictures, and even wholly arbitrary marks, are employed to denote words and entire phrases. Symbolical.or pictorial signs, if suffi- ciently suggestive and not very numerous, may be effective; but the use of "'arbitraries" is objectionable because they are so difficult to remember. In miany shorthand books*~~

~~*Stenographie . . . wherevnto is annexed a very easie Direction for Steganographie, or Secret Writing, printed at London in 1602 for Cuthbert Burbie. The only known copy is in the Bodleian Library.*~~

~~*John Willis.*~~

~~*Rich,*~~

~~*Mason.*~~

~~*SHORTHAND*~~

~~*the student is recommended to form additional ones for*~~

~~*837*~~

~~*'three times since),*~~

~~*himself, and so of course make his writing illegible to others,*~~

~~*The raison-Wétre of such signs is not far to seek. The*~~

~~*proper shorthand signs for many common words were so*~~

~~*clumsy or ambiguous that this method was resorted to in order to provide them with clearer and easier outlines. For the purpose of verbatim reporting the student is recom- mended to omit as a rule all vowels, and decipher his writ- But, when vowels are omitted, hundreds of pairs of words having the same con- sonant skeleton (such as minister and monastery, frontier*~~

~~*ing with the aid of the context.*~~

~~*and furniture, libel and label) are written exactly alike. This is one of the gravest defects of the a, b, ¢ systems. John Willis's system was largely imitated but hardly improved by Edmond Willis (1618), T. Shelton (1620), Witt (1630), Dix (1633), Mawd (1635), and Theophilus Metcalfe (1635). TT. Shelton's system, republished a great many times down to 1687, was the one which Samuel Pepys used in writing his diary.) It was adapted to German, Dutch, and Latin.2 An advertisement of Shelton's work in the Mercurius Politicus of 3d October 1650 is one of the earliest business advertisements known.*~~

~~*according to Shelton's system by Thomas Cross. Metecalfe's Ltadio-Stenography, or Short- Writing, was republished again and again for about a hundred years. The 35th "edition "*~~

~~*is dated 1693, and a 55th is known to exist. The ineffi- ciency of the early systems seems to have brought the art into some contempt. Thus Thomas Heywood, a contem- porary of Shakespeare, says in a prologue ? that his play of*~~

~~*Queen Elizabeth*~~

~~*'* Did throng the seats, the boxes, and the stage So much that some by stenography drew A plot, put it in print, scarce one word true."*~~

~~*Shakespeare critics would in this manner explain the*~~

~~*badness of the text in the earliest editions of Hamlet, Romeo and Juliet, Taming of the Windsor, and Henry V. Perhaps a study of J. Willis's system and of E. Willis's (which, though not published till after Shakespeare's death, was practised long before) may shed light on corrupt readings of the text of these plays.* Rich's system (1646, 20th edition 1792) was reproduced with slight alterations by many other persons, including W. Addy, Stringer, and Dr Philip Doddridge (1799 and The New Testament and Psalms were engraved in Rich's characters (1659, 596 pages, 24× 14 inches, 2 vols.), and Addy brought out the whole Bible engraved in shorthand > (London, 1687, 396 pp.). Locke, in his Treatise on*~~

~~*Education, recommends Rich's system ; but it is encumbered with more than 300 symbolical and arbitrary signs. In 1847 it was still used by Mr Plowman, a most accomplished Oxford reporter.*~~

~~*In 1672 William Mason, the best shorthand author of the 17th century, published his Pen pluck'd from an Eagle's Wing. The alphabet was largely taken from Rich's. But in his Art's Advancement (1682) only six of Rich's letters are retained, and in his Plume Volante (1707) further changes are made. Initial vowels are written by their alphabetic signs, final vowels by dots in certain positions (a, e at the beginning ; 7, y at the middle; 0, u at the end), and medial vowels by lifting the pen and writing the next consonant in those same three positions with respect to the preceding one. Mason employed 423 symbols and*~~

~~*1 See a paper by J. E. Bailey, "On the Cipher of Pepys' Diary," in Papers of the Manchester Literary Club, vol. ii. (1876).*~~

- ~~*See Zeibig's Gesch. u. Lit. d. Geschwindschreibkunst, p. 195.*~~

~~*® Pleasant Dialogues and Drammas (London, 1637), p. 249. ;*~~

~~*4 See M. Levy's Shakspere and Shorthand (London), and Phonetic Journal, 1885, p. 34.*~~

~~*5 This curiosity is described in the Phonetic Journal, 1885, pp. 158, 196. The Bodleian Library has a copy.*~~

~~*The book of Psalms in metre (206 pages, 23 × 1} inches) was engraved*~~

~~*Shrew, Merry Wives of*~~

~~*arbitraries. IIe was the first to discover the value of a small circle for s in addition to its proper alphabetic sign. Mason's system was republished by Thomas Gurney in 1740, a circumstance which has perpetuated its use to the present day, for in 1737 Gurney was appointed shorthand. writer to the Old Bailey, and early in the 19th century W. B. Gurney was appointed shorthand-writer to both IIouses of Parliament, Gurney reduced Mason's arbitraries to about a hundred, inventing a few specially suitable for*~~

~~*parliamentary reporting. The Gurneys were excellent writers of a cumbrous system. Thomas Gurney's Brachy- graphy passed through at least eighteen editions, but the sale of the book has now almost ceased,*~~

~~*In 1767 was Byrom, sometime fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, entitled The Universal English Shorthand, distinguished for its precision, elegance, and systematic construction. Byrom had died in 1763. Having lost his fellowship by failing to take orders, he made a living by teaching shorthand in London and Manchester, and among his pupils were Horace Walpole, Lord Conway, Charles Wesley, Lord Chesterfield, the duke of Devonshire, and Lord Camden. Shorthand, it is said, procured him admission to the Royal Society. He founded a stenographic club, to the proceed- ings of which his journal,® written in shorthand, is largely devoted. In the strangers' gallery of the House of Com- mons in 1728 Byrom dared to write shorthand from Sir R. Walpole and others. In 17 31, when called upon to give evidence before a parliamentary committee, he took short- hand notes, and, complaints being made, he said that if those attacks on the liberties of shorthand men went on he "must have a petition from all counties where our dis- ciples dwell, and Manchester must lead the way." Thomas Molyneux popularized the system by publishing seven cheap editions between 1793 and 1825. Modifications of Byrom's system were issued by Palmer (1774), Nightingale (1811), Adams (1814), Longmans (1816), Gawtress (1819), Kelly (1820), Jones (1832), and Roffe (1833). Byrom's method received the distinction of a special Act of Parlia- ment for its protection (15 Geo. II. c. 23, for twenty-one years from 24th June 1742). To secure lineality in the writing and facility in consonantal joinings he provided two forms for 8, h, j, w, x, sh, th, and three for J. A, 8 2, 0, #, he represented by a dot in five positions with respect toa consonant. Practically it is impossible to observe more than three (beginning, middle, and end). With all its merits, the system lacks rapidity, the continual recurrence of the loop seriously retarding the pen.*~~

~~*In 1786 was published An Essay intended to establish a Taylor.*~~

~~*Standard for a Universal System of Stenography, by Samuel Taylor (London). This system did more than any of its predecessors to establish the art in England and abroad, Equal to Byrom's in brevity, it is simpler*~~

~~*in construction, No letter has more than one sign, except w, which has two. Considering that five vowel places about a consonant were too many, Taylor went to the other extreme and ex- pressed all the vowels alike by a dot placed in any position. He directs that vowels are not to be expressed except when they sound strong at the beginning and end of a word. Arbitraries he discarded altogether ; but Harding, who re- edited his system in 1823, introduced a few. ach letter when standing alone represents two or three common short words, prefixes and suffixes. But the list was badly chosen: thus m represents my and many, both of them adjectives, and therefore liable to be confounded in many sentences, To denote 7 and on by the same sign is evidently absurd. Taylor's system was republished again and again. The*~~

~~*§ Byrom's private journal and literary remains have been published*~~

~~*by the Chetham Society of Manchester. See, too, a paper by J. E. Bailey in the Phonetic Journal, 1875, pp. 109, 121.*~~

~~*published at Manchester a work by John Byrom.*~~

~~*Mavor.*~~

~~*Pitman's phono- graphy,*~~

~~*838*~~

~~*latest editions are those of J. H. Cooke (London, 1865) and A. Janes (London, 1882). In Harding's edition (1823 and at least twelve times since) the vowels are written on an improved plan, the dot in three positions representing a, e, 1, and a tick in two positions 0, « Several other persons brought out Taylor's system, in particular G. Odell, whose book was re-edited or reprinted not less than sixty- four times, the later republications appearing at New York. The excellence of Taylor's method was recognized on the Continent : the system came into use in France, Italy, Holland, Sweden, Germany, Portugal, Roumania, Hungary, &c. In England at the present day no method excepting Pitman's phonography is more popular than Taylor's, although the systems which have appeared since Taylor's are far more numerous than those which preceded it.*~~

~~*The Universal Stenography of William Mavor (1780 and nine times since) is a very neat system, and differs from Taylor's in the alphabet and in a more definite method of marking the vowels. A, e¢, i, are indicated by commas, 0, u, ¥, by dots, in three places with respect to a letter, namely beginning, middle, and end. Other systems by J. H. Lewis (1812) and Moat (1833) are still used to a small extent.*~~

~~*The vast mass of a, b, c systems are strikingly devoid of originality, and are mostly imitations of the few that have been mentioned. Nearly all may be briefly described as consisting of an alphabet, a list of common words, pre- fixes and suffixes expressed by single letters, a list of ar- bitrary and symbolical signs, a table showing the best way of joining any two letters, a few general rules for writing, and a specimen plate.?*~~

~~*Pitman's phonography, on account of its enormous diffu- sion in Great Britain and the colonies, and in America, its highly organized and original construction, and its many inherent advantages, merits a more extended notice than has been given to the systems already mentioned. In 1837 Isaac Pitman, then teacher of a British school at Wotton- under-Edge and an excellent writer of Taylor's system, composed at the invitation of Samuel Bagster a short stenographic treatise of his own, which Bagster published under the title of Stenographic Sound-Hand, The price was fixed at fourpence, for the author had determined to place shorthand within the reach of everybody. He had won the friendship of the Bible publisher by volun- tarily verifying the half a million references in the Com- prehensive Buble, and Mr Bagster for nine years published Mr Pitman's shorthand books. In 1840 a second edition appeared in the form of a penny plate bearing the title Phonography, the principal feature of the system being that it was constructed on a purely phonetic basis. The name of Bagster helped the enterprise, and the author was indefatigable in spreading the knowledge of his system by lectures and gratuitous teaching through the penny post, then just established. In December 1841 the first number of what is now known as the Phonetic Journal appeared at Manchester in a lithographed form. It was then called the Phonographic Journal, and subsequently in turn the Phonotypic Journal, the Phonetic News, and the Phonetic Journal. The chief instruction books issued by the author at the present time from his press at the Phonetic*~~

~~*Institute, Bath, are the Phonographic Teacher, a little sixpenny book for beginners, of which 1,030,000 copies have been published ; the Manual of Phonography (470th thousand), in which the art is sufficiently developed for the purpose of correspondence, private memoranda, and easy reporting ; and the Phonographic Reporter (133d thousand). The weekly circulation of the Phonetic Journal is about 20,000 copies. A part of it is printed in the*~~

~~*1 For early English systems, see especially some careful papers by Mr A. Paterson in Phonetic Journal (1886).*~~

~~*phonographic character from movable types. The system has been warmly taken up in America, where it has been republished in more or less altered forms, especially by the author's brother Benn Pitman, and by Messrs A. J. Graham, J. E. Munson, E. Longley, and Eliza B. Burns. A large number of periodicals lithographed in phonography are published in England and America. The Shorthand Magazne, monthly, has existed since 1864. Of standard English books printed or lithographed in phonography may be mentioned, besides the Bible, New Testament, and Prayer Book, The Pilgrim's Progress, The Vicar of Wakefield, Pickwick Papers, Tom Brown's School-Days, Macaulay's Hssays and Biographies, Gulliver's Travels, Blackie's Self-culture, Bacon's Essays, and a long list of tales and selections. Numerous societies have been formed in all English-speaking countries for the dissemination of phonography. The largest is the Phonetic Society with 3350 members, who have all certificates of a knowledge of the art and engage to teach through the post gratuitously. Most important towns in the United Kingdom have a phonographic association. London has three. Phono- graphy has been adapted to several foreign languages, but not so successfully as Gabelsberger's German system. Mr T. A. Reed's French Phonography (1882) is intended only for English phonographers who wish to report French speeches. Other adaptations to French are by A. J. Lawson and J. R. Bruce. A society for the adaptation of phonography to Italian was organized at Rome in 1883 by G. Francini, who has published his results (Rome, 1883, 1886). Phonography adapted to Spanish by Parody (Buenos*~~

~~Ayres, 1864) is practised by half the steno- graphers employed in the senate and chamber at Buenos Ayres. It has been adapted to Welsh by R. H. Morgan (Wrexham, 1876), and to German by ©. L. Driesslein (Chicago, 1884). Phonography is steadily driving all other English systems out of the field. MrT. A. Reed stated in the Phonetic Journal, 1883, p. 62, that of the 61 writers employed by the Times, Standard, Telegraph, Morning Post, and the Press Association 31 were using phonography, 18 Taylor's, 5 Gurney's (7.e., Mason's), 4 Lewis's, and 3 other systems; of the 67 members composing the Institute of Shorthand Writers, chiefly practitioners in the law courts, 26 were using phonography, 29 Taylor's, 7 Gurney's Oe Mason's), 3 Mavor's, and 2 Lewis's ; while of the 80 mem- bers of the London Shorthand Writers' Association, chiefly employed in business offices, at least five-sixths were phono- graphers. According to a recent (1882) history of short- hand, of 291 professional stenographers in London 134 used phonography, 89 Taylor's, 35 Gurney's, 8 Lewis's, 8 Mavor's, and 17 other systems (Byrom's, Graham's, Moat's, c&e.).~~

~~The main features of Pitman's system must now be described. Pitman's The alphabet of consonant-sounds is—p, b; t, d; ch (asin chip), system.~~

~~J3 %, g (as in gay); f, v; th (as in thing), dh (as in them); s,23 sh, zh (as in vision); m, n, ng (as in thing); 1, r; w, y,h. The sounds Dp, t, ch, k arc represented respectively by the four straight strokes~~

~~— ; and the corresponding voiced sounds 8, d, j, g by exactly the same signs respectively written heavy. F, th (as in thing), 8,~~

~~sh are indicated by \ee a respectively ; the same signs written heavy and tapering to the ends are used for v, dh, z, zh respect-~~

~~ively. M,n,1,r are denoted by ~W i "\ respectively. JZ is also represented by — written upwards and in a more slanting direction than the sign for ch. The signs for sh and J may be written up or down when in combination, but standing alone sh is written~~

~~downwards and Z upwards. The signs for w, y, h are"~~

~~*all written upwards. A has also / down. Ng, mp (or mb), rch (or rj), lr, are represented by the signs for x, m, 7, Z respectively written heavy. Signs are provided for the Scotch guttural ch (as in loch), the Welsh 7, and the French nasal n. Sis generally written by a small circle. The long-vowel sounds are thus classified—a (as in balm), é (as in bait), ee (as in feet), aw (as in law), 6 (as in coal), 66 (as in boot). The vowels d, @, e¢ are marked by a heavy dot placed respectively at the beginning, middle, and end of a consonant-*~~

~~*vio RTH # WD*~~

~~*sign ; aw, 6, 06 by a heavy dash in the same three positions, and generally struck at right angles to the direction of the consonant. The short vowels are d (as in pat), & (as in pet), t (as in pit), 3 (as in pot), @ (as in but), and 8 (asin put). The signs for these are the same as for the corresponding long vowels just enumerated, except that they are written light. Signs similarly placed are provided for the diphthongs o7 (as in boil), 6& or 6é, Ot (asin Boan- erges, poet, coincide), for the series yd, yé, yee, &e, , and for the series wa, wé, wee, &c. The signs for ez (as in bite) and ow (as in cow) are A,and may be placed in any position with respect toa consonant. A straight linc may receive four hooks, one at each side of the beginning and end, but a curve only two, one at each end in the direction of the curve. Hooks applied to a straight line indicate the addition of 7, J, n, and forv respectively, thus— \ or, . pl,\s pf or pr, and \ pn; ——— kr, _ kl, —5 kf, —> kn; 7 wf or rv, —? rn. Hooks applied to a curve denote the addition of r, n respectively, thus—(_ ee Jn; o˜ mr, —> mn. Vowel signs placed after (or, in the case of horizontal strokes, under) a consonant having the n or f, v hook are read between the consonant and the » or f; thus 7 cough, Sun, but *T™ crow, N pray. A large hook at the commencement of a curve signifies the addi- tion of J, as = jl. The hooks combine easily with the circle sh*~~

~~*ao Sp, eS spr (where the hook r is implied or included in the*~~

~~*circle), X spl, & pus (the hook n being included), \o pfs, &e. The halving principle is one of the happiest devices in the whole history*~~

~~*of shorthand. The halving of a light stroke—that is, writing it*~~

~~*half length—implies the addition ofz ; the halving of a heavy stroke that of d, the vowel placed after (or under) the halved stroke being*~~

~~*read between the consonant and the added ¢ or d, thus—*~~

~~*saw, ~ sought, |, Dee, |, deed, \ pit, ~ cat, © Sat, S note, &c.*~~

~~*t, and that of a light stroke d, thus— \° beautify.*~~

~~*the hook, the circle, and the halving principle, two or three together, exceedingly brief signs are obtained for a number of con- sonantal series consisting of the combination of a consonant with*~~

~~*one or more of the sounds s, r, J, 2, 7, ¢, ie Sp, \ spr, a sprt, \o sprts ; x pl, LR spl, R split, S spint, 8 splnts ; << Wt, \s Sus,*~~

~~*fut, eo fnts ; SS Srn, & frnd, &. As a vowel-mark cannot conveniently be placed to a hook or circle, we are easily led toa*~~

~~*way of distinguishing in outline between such words as i cough*~~

~~*and 7 . coffee, \ pen and\c. penny, race and “) racy,*~~

~~*&e. unvocalized outline.*~~

~~*combines with the circle s, as in circle s made large indicates ss or sz, as in \d pieces, A ¥ losses.*~~

~~*The vowel between s and s (z) may be marked inside the circle, as*~~

~~*in > excreise, AP subsistence The circle s lengthened toa loop*~~

~~*signifies st, as in \ step, % post, while a longer loop indicates str, as*~~

~~*in -> muster, ~3 minster, The loop may be continued through the consonantal stroke and terminate in a circle to denote sts and*~~

~~*strs, as in %& boasts, —~s minsters. The loop written on the left or lower side of a straight stroke implies the n hook and so signifies*~~

~~*nst, as in => against, 0 danced. A curve (or a straight stroke with a final hook) written double length implies the addition of tr,*~~

~~*ar, or thr, as in <- Jather, (" letter, Y kinder, ae Sender,*~~

~~*ee render, This practice is quite safe in the case of curves, but a straight stroke should not be lengthened in this way when there is danger of reading it as a double letter. The lineal eonsonant- signs may stand alone to represent certain short and eommon words as in many of the old a, b, ¢ systems, with this difference, that in the old systems each letter represents several words, but in phonography, in almost every case, only one. By writing the horizontal strokes in two positions with respect to the line (above and on) and the others in three positions (entirely above, resting on, and passing through the line) the number is nearly trebled, and very brief signs are obtained for some seventy or eighty common short words (e.g., be, by, zn, Yf, at, it, my, me, &e.). A few very common monosyllables are represented by their vowel-marks, as*~~

~~*<] — the (remnant of (), : of (remnant of X=: on (remnant of —).*~~

~~*By this means very brief signs are provided for hosts of syllables ending in ¢ and d, and for a number of verbal forms ending in ed, thus— "1 ended. The halving of a heavy stroke may, if necessary, add By combining*~~

~~*This distinction limits the number of possible readings of an A large hook at the end of a stroke indicates the addition of -shon (as in fashion, aetion, &c.). This hook easily*~~

~~*actions, \: positions. The*~~

~~*839*~~

~~*A certain number of longer words which occur frequently are contracted, generally by omitting the latter part, sometimes a*~~

~~*middle part of the word, as in ~\ (Asp) expect, y (djr) danger, (krk sk) characteristic, (nd f t) indefatigable. The con-*~~

~~nective phrase of the is intimated by writing the words between which it occurs near to each other. © The is often expressed by a short slanting stroke or tick Joined to the preceding word and generally struck downwards, thus in the, od Sor the.~~

~~Three principles which remain to be noticed are of such imnport- ance and advantage that any one of them would go far to place phonography at the head of all other systems. These are the principles of positional writing, similar outlines, and phraseography. (1) The first slanting stroke of a word ean generally be written so as either to lie entirely above the line, or rest on the line, or run~~

~~through the line, thus—. Se. Be eS In the case of~~

~~words composed wholly of horizontal strokes the last two positions~~

~~(on and through the line) coincide, as ~·· _. ~=These three positions are ealled first, second, and third respectively. The first is specially connected with first-place vowels (4, &; aw, 8 305 O00) the second with second-place vowels (2, é; 6, %), and the third with third-place vowels (ce, ¢; 00, 06; ou). In a fully vocalized style position is not employed, but in the reporting style it is of the greatest use. Thus the outline (¢m) written above the line~~

~~(5 must be read either time or Tom; when written resting on the line (= tome or tame; when struck through the line Cie) teem,~~

~~team, or tomb. By this method the number of possible readings of an unvocalized outline is greatly reduced. That word in each posi- tional group which occurs the most frequently need not be vocalized, but the others should. In the case of dissyllables it is the accented vowel which deeides the position ; thus methought should be written~~

~~first position (2.), méthod second position(~·-t) . (2) Another way~~

~~of distinguishing between words having the same consonants but different vowels is to vary the outline. The possibility of variety of outline arises from the fact that many consonant-sounds have duplicate or even triplicate signs, as we have seen. For instance, r has two lineal signs and~~

~~*a hook sign, and so each of the words carter, curator, creature, and creator obtains a distinct outline. A few simple rules direct the student to a proper choice of outline, but some difference of practice obtains among phonographers in this respect. Lists of outlines for words having the same con- sonants are given in the instruction books; the Reporter's Assistant contains the outline of every word written with not more than three strokes, and the Phonographic Dictionary gives the vocalized out- line of every word in the language. Aided by a true phonetie representation of sounds, by oecasional vocalization, variety of outline, and the context, the phonographie verbatim reporter should never misread a word.! (3) Lastly, phraseography. It has been found that in numberless cases two or more words may be written without lifting the pen. A judicious use of this praetice promotes legibility, and the saving of time is very considerable. Words written thus should be closely connected in sense and awk-*~~

~~*ward joinings avoided. Such phrases are Iam, \ T have,*~~

~~*a YOU are, n~· YOu may, l it would, I" it would not, eae we are,*~~

~~*we have never been,*~~

~~*A we have, "CL we have not, a" my dear friends,*~~

~~*possible,*~~

~~*in a very short time, as far as*~~

~~*for the most part, and many thousands of others.*~~

~~*For the sake of obtaining a good phraseogram for a common phrase, it is often advisable to omit some part of the consonant outline. Thus the phrase you must recollect that may very well be written*~~

~~*(you mus reeollec that). Lists of reeommended phraseo- grams are given in the Phonographic Phrase Book, the Legal Phrase Book, and the Railway Phrase Book.*~~

~~1 Phonography is so legible that the experiment of handing the shorthand notes to phonographic compositors has often been tried with complete success. A speech of Richard Cobden, on the Corn Laws, delivered at Bath on 17th September 1845, and occupying an hour and a quarter, was reported almost verbatim, and the notes, witha few vowels filled in, handed to the compositors of the Bath Journal, who set them up with the usual accuracy.~~

~~Specimens of Phonography. Corresponding Style.~~

- ~~. Se ee~~

~~co e774 RO Ne W‘1. ox Neve, NT See AON Pl Ree O° Se ON Ge gt VR RMT Pe ee hs Se Ne ee, ee age) kg re i 4 a a of” ie Se MOS ee aS~~

~~Key.—If all the feelings of a patriot glow in our bosoms ona perusal of those eloquent speeches which are delivered in the senate, or in those public assem- blies where the people are frequently convened to exercise the birthright of Britons—we owe it to shorthand. If new fervour be added to our devotion, and an additional stimulus be imparted to our exertions as Christians, by the eloquent appeals and encouraging statements made at the anniversaries of our various religious societies—we owe it toshorthand. Ifwe have an opportunity in interesting judicial cases, of examining the evidence, and learning the pro- ccedings with as much certainty, and nearly as much minuteness, as if we had been present on the occasion—we owe it to shorthand.~~

~~Reporting Style. 7 me \ é lo ome) ~w Q Zz pe i . TSS wv 1 ee Sar ee ot ~ ba | Lap “17s q; _ on Ss (* sf if eS ma aCe Se ar So ee 2 OS ae Qe NX ONE a. 2 Ne Cea s ¢ 28 ok 7 aes es Nona) al a oe Key (the phraseograms being indicated by hyphens).—CHaRAcTERISTICS OF THE AGE.—The peculiar and distinguishing characteristics of the present age are in every respect remarkable. Unquestionably an extraordinary and uni- versal change has commenced in the internal as well as the external world—in the mind of man as well as in the habits of society, the one indeed being the necessary consequence of the other. A rational consideration of~~

~~*the circum- stances in which mankind are at present placed must show us that influences of the most important and wonderful character have been and are operating in such a manner as to bring about if not a reformation, a thorough revolution in the organization of society. Never in the history of the world have benevolent and philanthropic institutions for the relief of domestic and public affliction ; Societies for the promotion of manufacturing, commercial, and agricultural interests; associations for the instruction of the masses, the advancement of literature and science, the development of true political principles, for the extension in short of every description of knowledge and the bringing about*~~

~~*of every kind of reform,—been so numerous, so efficient, and so indefatigable in their operation as at the present day.*~~

~~*Systems Of the numerous systems published since the invention subse- of phonography the principal are A. M. Bell's Steno- eat phonography (Edinburgh, 1852), Professor J. D. Everett's (London, 1877), Pocknell's Legible Shorthand (London, 1881), and J. M. Sloan's adaptation of the French system of Duployé (1882). Of these Professor Everett's must be pronounced much the best. The author claims to have adhered to the phonetic principle more strictly than Mr Pitman. Thus he distinguishes the o in home, comb, from that in so, and treats wr, er asa diphthong. The alphabet is very like Mr Pitman's in construction, light and heavy sounds being represented by light and heavy strokes. The chief feature of the system is that all vowels are marked in. This is done by joined signs, by lengthening the preceding consonant, by separating the preceding from the following consonant, by lifting the pen and writing the one consonant attached to the other, and by intersec- tion. Mr Pocknell, in his somewhat bewildering system,*~~

~~*seeks (like Mr Melville Bell) to provide a method of indi- cating whether a consonant is preceded or followed by a vowel or vowels. To this end he gives to each consonant three linear signs (two curves and a straight line), the requisite number of signs being made up by using three lengths of stroke. The selection of the right sign is deter- mined by the length and class of the words represented. Much energy is devoted to indicate where*~~

~~*a vowel stands, but not to what it is. The vowels, when expressed, are disjoined, as in phonography and most systems. Though Mr Bell's too elaborate classification of vowels is adopted, the phonetic method of representing consonants is fre- quently discarded in favour of the alphabetic. Thus, no sign is provided for zh (as in vision), and the barbarous gh (as in bright) is often retained "for the sake of legi- bility." Mr Pocknell goes back to the antiquated device of pictorial and arbitrary signs. The Sloan-Duployan system has been vigorously propagated ; but it does not provide alphabetic characters for all the vowels and con- sonants in the language, contents itself with representing not actual but "approximate" sounds, does not always indicate the order in which the characters should be read, recommends the frequent omission of consonants and syllables at the "discretion" of the student, avoids angles, and introduces three slopes, instead of one, between the perpendicular and the horizontal, and therefore is not likely to meet with general acceptance.*~~

~~*A considerable number of American systems, as well ag American systems based on Taylor's and Gurney's, were issued dur- systems.*~~

~~*ing the early days of the republic. Since the introduction of phonography into the States in 1845, the dissemination of the art has gone steadily forward, and its use since 1880 has been greatly on the increase, shorthand being now taught in a large number of schools. From elaborate statistics given in Mr Rockwell's Circular of Information it appears that during 1882 10,197 persons received in- struction in schools and classes and 2273 by correspond- ence. But these figures probably bear no proportion to the number of persons studying without a teacher. In almost every case phonography, or a modification of it, was selected for instruction. American shorthand societies are very numerous, most of them having been formed since 1880. Two are devoted to the Stolzean system. Of the fourteen shorthand magazines which Mr Rockwell enumerates eleven are phonographic.*~~

~~*In nine cases out of ten phonography will be found admirably adapted to the purposes of verbatim reporting. But to be legible it must be written with care. This necessity arises from its brevity and its use of light and*~~

~~heavy, halved and double-length strokes. Hence a clumsy scribe may find a longer system, such as Gurney's, answer his purpose better. A theoretical knowledge of most systems may be gained in a few hours. Pitman's method is not so easily acquired, but an intelligent person can master its details in a few weeks. Shorthand writing is, however, mainly a matter of practice. Few can make any considerable use of it with less than six months' assiduous practice. The average rate of public speaking is very slightly over 120 words a minute. Some speakers average 150. The slowest utterance is now and then exchanged for a rapid flow of words, and 180 or 200 words a minute is no uncommon speed in certain styles of speech such as the conversational,—a speed which many persons would never acquire. Most persons of average intelligence may~~

~~1 Phenomenal rates of speed are recorded in the Phonetic Journal for 1885, p. 338. MrT. A. Reed, the veteran phonographer, had been engaged to report a well-known American divine preaching at West- minster Abbey. The sermon was carefully timed, and the words in the printed report counted. The average came out at 213 wordsa minute. A photographed specimen page of Mr Reed's notes on this occasion is given in the Reporters' Magazine, September 1885.~~

~~Parlia- mentary report- ing.~~

~~Foreign systems.~~

~~= 2 OR tf F Aw Dp 841~~

~~by perseverance write with certainty at 150 words a minute. The best method of practice in the early period is to write at dictation from a book 3 in public speaking the frequent pauses help the writer to regain lost time. The student should write on ruled paper, which checks the tendency to a large sprawling hand when following a rapid speaker. Taylor's, Gurney's, and Lewis's systems can be written without lines, but Pitman's only at a dis- advantage. Ink is preferable to pencil.~~

~~Shorthand was first employed officially in the service of Parliament in 1802, when a resolution was passed that "the evidence given before all committees inquiring into the election of members should or might be~~

~~*reported by a person well skilled in the art of writing shorthand," and shortly afterwards W. B. Gurney was appointed shorthand- writer in this capacity to both Houses of Parliament. In 1813 a further resolution was passed by both Houses that the official writer "should attend by himself or sufficient deputy when called upon to take minutes of evidence at the bar of this House or in committees of the same." The lucrative office of shorthand-writer to both Houses of Par- liament is still held by the Gurney family. Of course most of the work is done by deputy. Some of the most efficient members of Messrs Gurney's staff are phono- graphers ; others use Taylor's system. The amount of evidence given in the course of a tolerably long day's sitting may amount to 400 or 500 folios (72 words make a folio), which would occupy from 12 to 15 columns of the Zimes in small type. The whole must often be tran- scribed and delivered to the printers in the course of the night, and copies, damp from the press, are in the hands of the members and "parties" at the beginning of the sitting on the following day. Since parliament abolished election-committees and committed to judges the duty of inquiring into petitions against the return of a member, an official shorthand writer has to be in attendance upon the judge appointed to hear any particular case. He has often a small staff of assistants, Messrs Gurney or their representatives are also required to attend the sittings of the House of Lords as a court of appeal to take the judg- ments of the law lords. Finally, Government shorthand- writers are often employed in taking notes of important state-trials and inquiries conducted by the various depart- ments of Government, as well as of the proceedings of Royal Commissions, whenever the evidence of witnesses is taken.1 The transcription of the notes may be accomplished in several ways, as by dictating from different parts of the notes to several longhand-writers simultaneously.2 Not all the newspaper parliamentary reporters can take a perfect note, and cases occur in which the reporter enters the gallery without being able to write shorthand at all.*~~

~~*hand Writing into Germany in an adaptation of the Taylor-Bertin method. Reischl's (1808) is a modification of Mosengeil's. On Horstig's (1797) are based those of an anonymous writer (Nurem- berg, 1798), Heim (1820), Thon (1825), an anonymous author*~~

~~*the Mosengeil – Horstig system are based Berthold's 1819) and Stark's (1822). On Danzer's (1800), a close imitation A Tahoe is based that of Ellison vy. Nidlef (1820). Other systems are those of Leichtlen (1819) ; J. Brede (1827); Nowack (1834), a system in which the ellipse is employed as well as the circle ; Billharz (1838) ; Caimmerer (1848), a modification of Selwyn's phonography (1847) ; Schmitt (1850); Fischbiick (1857), a reproduc- tion of Taylor's ; and that of an anonymous author (1872), based on Horstig, Mosengeil, and Heim. Nowack, in his later method of 1834, makes a new departure in avoiding right or obtuse angles,*~~

~~*Redezeichenkunst (Munich, 1834) is the most important of the German systems. The author, an official attached to the Bavarian ministry, commenced his system for private purposes, but was induced to perfect it on account of the summoning of a parliament*~~

~~*taught on this system executed their trial specimens with the required speed, and read what they had written, and even what others had written, with ease and certainty. The method is based.*~~

~~*system composed of simple geometrical strokes forming determi- nate angles with each other was unadapted to rapid writing. He does not recognize all the varieties of sound, and makes some dis- tinctions which are merely orthographical. Soft sounds have small, light, and round signs, while the hard sounds have large, heavy, and straight signs. The signs too are derived from the current alphabet, so that one can find the former contained in the latter. Vowels standing between consonants are not literally inserted, but symbolically indicated by either position or shape of the surrounding consonants, without however leaving the straight writing line. The proceedings of the chambers in Austria, Bavaria, Baden, Wiirtember , Saxony, Saxe- Weimar, Coburg-Gotha, Silesia, and the Rhine provinces are reported solely by writers of this method, and half the stenographers in the German reichstag use it. There are in Germany and Austria more than 540 societies containing over 20,000 members devoted to it. It is officially taught in all the middle class schools of Bavaria, Saxony, and Austria. It has been adapted to foreign languages to such an extent that legislative proceedings are reported by it in Prague, Agram, Pesth, Sophia, Athens, Copenhagen, Christiania,*~~

~~*Stock- holm, and Helsingfors. On Gabelsberger's system is based that of W. Stolze (1840). There are nearly 400 Stolzean associations with over 8000 members. The system is officially used in the Prussian, German, and Hungarian parliaments, in the last two along with Gabelsberger's. Faulmann (Vienna, 1875) attempted in his Phonographie to combine the two methods. 'While Gabelsberger's system has remained unchanged in principle, Stolze's has split into two divisions, the old and the new. These contain many smaller factions, e.g., Velten's (1876) and Adler's (1877). Arends's (1860) is copied from the French system of Fayet. Roller's (1874) and Lehmann's (1875) are offshoots of Arends's. Many other methods have appeared and as rapidly been forgotten. "The schools of Gabelsberger and Stolze can boast of a very extensive shorthand literature. Gabelsberger's system has been adapted to English by A. Geiger (Dresden, 1860 and 1873), who adhered too closely to the German original, and more successfully by H. Richter (London, 1886), and Stolze's by G. Michaelis (Berlin, 1868).*~~

~~*French.—The earliest French system worthy of notice is that of Coulon de Thévenot (1777), in which the vowels are disjoined from the consonants. The methods practised at the present day may be divided into two classes, those derived from Taylor's English system, translated in 1791 by T. P. Bertin, and those invented in France. The latter are (z) Coulon de Thévenot's ; (0) systems founded on the principle of the inclination of the usual writing,—the best known being those of Fayet (1832) and Sénocq (1842); and © systems derived from the method of Conen de Prépéan (5 editions from 1813 to 1833). Prévost, who till 1870 directed the stenographic service of the senate, produced the best modification of Taylor. Many authors have copied and spoilt this system of Prévost. The best known are Plantier (1844) and Tondeur (1849). Zeibig thinks well of A. Delaunay's improvements on Prévost's system. On Conen's are based those of Aimé- Paris (1822), Cadrés-Marmet (1828), Potel (1842), the Duployé brothers (1868), Guénin, &c. Among amateur writers the Duployan method is best known, owing largely to vigorous pushing, but the profession class it among the least effi- cient of all. Of the forty writers in the official service of parliament*~~

~~German.—C. A. Ramsay's Tacheographia (Frankfort, 1679, and several times afterwards until 1748) was an adaptation of T. Shelton's English system. Mosengeil (1797) first practically introduced short-~~

~~1 There is no full official report of the debates in the British Parlia- ment (as in most other countries), and technically no person has a right to report them. The House may be cleared at any moment of all strangers, including representatives of the press, by an order of the House as a whole. On seven occasions of note resolutions have been passed prohibiting the reporting of the proceedings of the House of Commons, the last on 25th March 1771. But times have changed, and members now frequently complain that their speeches are not reported. To supply the deficiencies of the newspapers arrangements have been made by the House with Mr Hansard for the special reporting of debates in committee and those occurring at an early hour in the morning, which are given only in the most summary form in the daily papers. Formerly all Hansard's reports were collected from those appearing in the newspapers. See further Mr 8. Whitaker's Parlia- mentary Reporting in England, Foreign Countries, and the Colonies, with notes on Parkiamentary Privilege (Manchester, 1878).~~

~~2 On the best methods of transcribing and dictating, see Mr T. A. Reed's papers in the Phonetic Journal, 1886, pp. 10, 33, 45.~~

~~twenty-two use Prévost's and those founded on it (all based ulti- mately on Taylor's), while ten employ methods based on Conen's,~~

~~Spanish.—The father of Spanish stenography was Don Francisco de Paula Marti, whose system, first published in 1803, still holds its ground against all rivals. The alphabet is a combination of Taylor's and Coulon's. By decree of 21st November 1802 a public professorship of shorthand was founded in Madrid, Marti being the first professor. Founded on Marti's system are those of Serra y Ginesta (1816) and Xamarillo (1811). Of the~~

~~*thirty-two Spanish systems enumerated by Zeibig many are merely imitations or re- productions of Marti's, and adaptations of Gabelsberger's, Stolze's, and Pitman's systems. That of Garriga y Maril (1863) has attained some popularity in Spain.*~~

~~*Portuguese.—Marti's son carried his father's system to Portugal, where shorthand is still cntirely unknown except in the parliament and the courts. Of the twenty reporters in the senate and chamber at Buenos Ayres ten use Pitman's phonography, six Marti's, and the rest Garriga's. A shorthand society was organized in Buenos Ayres in 1880. The systems used in the Brazilian chambers are those of Silva Velho (1852) and Garriga. The reporters in the assembly of Venezuela use Marti's method.*~~

~~*Jtalian.—Italian translations and adaptations of Taylor's system succeeded one another in considerable numbers from Amanti (1809) to Bianchini (1871). Delpino's (1819) is the best. The Gabelsberger- Noe system (1863) is the only other which has gained many followers. Since 1885 the debates of the senate have been partly reported by the Michela stenographic machine with fair results.*~~

~~*Dutch.—J. Reijner's Dutch method (1673) was an adaptation of Shelton's and Bussuijt's (1814) of Conen's system. Sommerhausen and Bossaert (1829) received prizes from the Government for their productions. The twelve stenographers employed in the parliament use the system of Cornelis Steger (1867), president of the bureau, who translated Taylor's work and has written a history of short- hand. Gabelsberger's system was transferred to Dutch by Rietstap (1869) and Stolze's by Reinbold (1881).*~~

~~*Adaptations of Gabelsberger's method have come into use in the remaining countries of Europe, superseding all others.*~~

~~*Numerous mechanical reporting machines have been invented. The best is by Michela mentioned above. For a description of such machines see Phonetic Journal for 1881, p. 274; 1884, pp. 12, 34, 35; 1885, pp. 52, 268, 278, 291, 447; 1886, p. 22. They take as long to learn asa shorthand system, cannot easily be carried about, are liable to get out of order, and make a noise.*~~

~~*Sources of Information.—J. W. Zeibig's Geschichte u. Literatur der Geschwind- schreibkunst (Dresden, 1878) contains an historical sketch of the use of short- hand in ancient and modern times (especially in Germany), a full bibliography of shorthand literature in all languages, a number of lithographed specimens, and a useful index. Circulars of Information of the Bureau of Education, No. 2, 1884 (Washington, 1885), by J. E. Rockwell, contains a very complete and accurate bibliography of English and American shorthand publications, a chronological list of 483 English and American shorthand authors, notices on shorthand in the United States, on the employment of stenographers in the American courts, on American shorthand societies and magazines, and a beau- tifully engraved sheet of 112 shorthand alphabets. The Phonetic Journal, especially the recent volumes, contains a mass of information on shorthand subjects. Isaac Pitman's History of Shorthand (reprinted in the Phonetic Journal of 1884) reviews the principal English systems previous to phono- graphy, and a few foreign ones, The author draws largely on J. H. Lewis's Historical Account of the Rise and Progress of Stenography (London, 1816), Other histories of shorthand are by F. X. Gabelsberger (prefixed to his Anleitung zur deutschen Redezeichenkunst, Munich, 1834), A. Fossé (prefixed to his Cowrs théorique et pratique de Sténographie, Paris, 1849), Scott de Martinville (Paris, 1849), M. Levy (London, 1862), and T. Anderson (London, 1882). Here too should be mentioned J. Heger's Bemerkenswerthes tiber die Stenographie (Vienna, 1841), mainly historical; J. Anders's Entwurf einer allgemeinen Gesch. u. Lit. cd, Stenographie (Coeslin, 1855); R. Fischer's Die Stenographie nach Geschichte, Wesen, wu. Bedeutung (Leipsic, 1860); Krieg's Katechismus der Stenographie (Leipsic, 1876); Dr Westby-Gibson's Early Shorthand Systems (London, 1882) ; T. Anderson's Shorthand Systems, with a number of specimens (London, 1884); T. A. Reed's Reporter's Guide (London, 1885) and Leaves from the Note- book of T. A. Reed (London, 1885). Mr C. Walford's Statistical Review of the Literature of Shorthand (London, 1885) contains valuable information on the circulation of shorthand books and on shorthand libraries. The largest stenographic library in the world is that of the Royal Stenographic Institute at Dresden. (i. G. N. K.-F.)*~~

~~*SHORTSIGHT. See OPHTHALMOLOGY,*~~

~~*SHOSHONG, a town in the British protectorate of Bechuanaland, the chief settlement of the Eastern Bamang- watos, is situated in a glen at the foot of a range of Primary rocks on the Shoshon, a periodically flowing brook which flows eastwards into the Limpopo or Uri river. It lies about 400 miles north of Kimberley, with which it was connected by road and telegraph under Sir Charles Warren's administration. For white men—traders, hunters, and explorers—it is and must always be a place of primary importance, as three great routes, from Griqualand West, the Orange Free State, and the Transvaal, meet at this point and again branch off north to the Zambesi, north-east to the Matabele and Mashona countries, and north-west to the Western Bamangwato*~~

~~*and Damaraland. Shoshong is thus a main gateway between Southern and Central Africa. The site was ori- ginally chosen as easily defensible against the Matabele. Water is scarce, and the present king, Khama, has taken over a well dug by one of the traders, the use of which he permits on the payment of a water-rate of £1 per month per family. Altogether there are 7000 to 8000 native huts in Shoshong, and the population is estimated at from 15,000 to 30,000. The white inhabitants—mostly English traders—number about 20.*~~

~~*See Mackenzie, Ten Years North of the Orange River, 1871;*~~

~~*Holub, Seven Years in South Africa, 1881; Further Government Correspondence respceting the affairs of the Transvaal, 1886.*~~

~~*SHOVEL, Str CioupEstey (c. 1650-1707), English admiral, was according to some accounts a native of York- shire, but the most commonly accepted statement is that he was born of poor parents about 1650 in Clay, a fishing- village of Norfolk, where he was apprenticed to a shoe- maker. Having run away to sea, he became cabin-boy on board a ship commanded by Sir Christopher Mynns. He set himself to study navigation, and, owing to his able sea- manship and brave and open-hearted disposition, became a general favourite and obtained quick promotion. In 1674 he served as lieutenant under Sir John Narborough in the Mediterranean, where he burned four men-of-war under the castles*~~

~~*and walls of Tripoli, belonging to the pirates of that place. HIe was present as captain of the " Edgar" at the first fight at Bantry Bay, and shortly afterwards was knighted. In 1690 he convoyed William HI. across St George's Channel to Ireland; the same year he was made rear-admiral of the blue, and was present at the battle of Beachy HIead on 10th July. In 1692 he was appointed rear-admiral of the red, and joined Admiral Russell, under whom he greatly distinguished himself at La HIogue, having a principal share in burning twenty of the enemy's men-of- war. Not long after, when Admiral Russell was dismissed from the service, Shovel was put in joint command of the fleet with Admiral Killigrew and Sir Ralph Delaval. In 1702 he was sent to bring home the spoils of the French and Spanish fleets from Vigo, after their capture by Sir George Rooke, and in 1704 he served under Sir George Rooke in the Mediterranean. In January 1705 he was named rear-admiral of England, and shortly afterwards com- mander-in-chief of the British fleets. HIe co-operated in the capture of Barcelona along with the earl of Peterborough in 1705, and made an unsuccessful attempt on Toulon in October 1707. When returning with the fleet to England his ship, the "Association," at eight o'clock at night on the 22d October, struck on the rocks near Scilly, and was seen by those on board the "St George" to go down in three or four minutes' time, not a soul being saved of 800 men that were on board. The body of Sir Cloudesley Shovel was cast*~~

~~*ashore next day, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.*~~

~~*See Life and Glorious Actions of Sir Cloudesley Shovel, 1707 ; Burnet's Own Times ; and various discussions in Notes and Queries, 5th series, vols. x. and xi.*~~

~~*SHOVELER, formerly spelt SHIovELAR, and more an- ciently SHOVELARD, a word by which used to be meant the bird now almost invariably called SpoonBiLt (9.v.), but in the latter half of the 16th century transferred to one hitherto generally, and in these days locally, known as the Spoon-billed Duck—the Anas clypeata of Linnzeus and Spatula or Rhynchaspis clypeata of modern writers, All these names refer to the shape of the bird's bill, which, combined with the remarkably long lamelle (not wholly incomparable with the "'' whalebone" of the toothless*~~

~~Cetaceans) that beset both maxilla and mandible, has been thought sufficient to remove the Species from the Linnean genus Anas. Except for the extraordinary for- mation of this feature, which carries with it a clumsy look, the male Shoveler would pass for one of the most beautiful of this generally beautiful group of birds. As it is, for bright and variegated colouring, there are few of his kindred to whom he is inferior, His golden eye, his dark green head, surmounting a throat of pure white and succeeded by a breast and flanks of rich bay, are conspicuous ; while his deep brown back, white scapulars, lesser wing-coverts (often miscalled shoulders) of a glaucous blue, and glossy green speculum bordered with white present a wonderful contrast of the richest tints, heightened again by his bright orange feet. On the other hand, the female, excepting the blue wing-coverts she has in common with her mate, is habited very like the ordinary Wild-Duck, A. boscas (see vol. vii. p. 505). The Shoveler is not an abundant species, and in Great Britain its distribution is local 3 but its numbers have remarkably increased since the passing of the Wild-Fowl Protection Act in 1876,) so that in certain districts it has regained its old position as an indigenous member of the Fauna. It has not ordinarily a very high northern range, but inhabits the greater part of Europe, Asia, and America, passing southwards, like most of the Anatide towards winter, constantly reaching India, Ceylon, Abyssinia, the Antilles, and Central America, while it is known to have occurred at that season in New Granada, and, according to Gould, in Australia. Generally resembling in its habits the other freshwater Ducks, the Shoveler has one peculiarity that has been rarely, if ever, mentioned, and one that is perhaps correlated with the structure of its bill. It seems to be especially given to feeding on the surface of the water in- mediately above the spot where Diving Ducks (Fuliguline) are employing themselves beneath. On such occasions a**

~~pair of Shovelers may be watched, almost for the hour:~~

~~together, swimming in a circle, about a yard in diameter, their heads turned inwards towards its centre, their bills immersed vertically in the water, and engaged in sifting, by means of the long lamellz before~~

~~*mentioned, the floating matters that are disturbed by their submerged allies and rise to the top. These gyrations are executed with the greatest ease, each Shoveler of the pair merely using the outer leg to impel it on its circular course, and to the observer the prettiest part of the performance is the precision with which each preserves its relative distance from its comrade.*~~

~~*Four other species of the genus Spatula, all possessing the characteristic light blue '*shoulders," have been described :—one, S. platalea, from the southern parts of South America, having the head, neck, and upper back of a pale reddish brown, freckled or closely spotted with dark brown, and a dull bay breast with in- terrupted bars; a second, JS. capensis, from South Africa, much lighter in colour than the female of J. clypeata ; a third and a fourth, S. rhynchotis and S. variegata, from Australia and N ew Zealand respectively,—these last much darker in general coloration, and the males possessing a white crescentic mark between the bill and the eye, very like that which is found in the South- American Blue-winged Teal (Querquedula cyanoptera), but so much resem- bling each other that their specific distinctness has been disputed by good authority. In these last two the sexual difference is well marked by the plumage ; but in the South-American and South- African species it would seem that both male and female have much the same appearance, as is the case with so many species of the restricted genus Anas, though this cannot yet be asserted with certainty. (A. N.)*~~

~~*SHIREVEPORT, a city of the United States, capital of Caddo parish, Louisiana, on the west bank of Red River and near to Sodo Lake, is the eastern terminus of the*~~

~~*rt*~~

~~*? Prior to that year there was perhaps only one district in England wherein the Shoveler could be said to breed regularly, and thereto only a few pairs resorted. In 1885 there must have been a dozen counties in which it nested, and in some of them the pairs breeding might be reckoned by the score.*~~

~~*Texas Pacific Railroad, 327 miles by rail north-west of N ew Orleans, with which it hag regular steamboat com- munication. Situated in the heart of a very fruitful cotton-growing region, it is one of the principal cotton-markets in the south-west of the United States, and is the second commercial city in the State. It exports annually about 125,000 bales of cotton, and carries on a trade likewise in hides, wool, and tallow. It has factories for carriages, cotton gins, cotton-seed oil, soap, ice, sashes and blinds, and spokes and hubs, also foundries, machine- shops, a planing mill, saw-mills, and breweries. The town possesses among public buildings a handsome court-house and a cotton exchange. Red River is spanned by an iron bridge 20 feet wide and 1200 long. Shreveport, which was incorporated in 1839, had a population of 4607 in 1870 and of 8009 in 1880; in 1886 the population was estimated at 15,000. SHREW, a general term applied to the species of the family Soricidex, order Insectivora (see vol. xv. p. 403), but in the British Isles more particularly to the common and to the lesser shrew (Sorex vulgaris, L., and S. pygmexus, Pall.). The common shrew is, in England at least, by far the commoner of the two. It is a small animal about the size of the common mouse, which it somewhat resembles in the shape of its body, tail, and feet. But here the resemblance ends, for, unlike the mouse, it possesses a remarkably long and slender muzzle, with prominent nostrils, which project far beyond the lower lip; the eyes are very small and al- most concealed by the fur; the ears are wide and short, scarcely rising above the long hairs surrounding them, and are provided internally with a pair of deep folds, capable, when laid forward, of closing the entrance ; the tail, which is slightly shorter than the body (without the head), is quad- rangular in shape and clothed more or less densely with moderately long hairs, terminating in a short pencil (in old individuals these hairs become worn away, so that in some specimens the tail is almost quite naked) ; the feet are five-toed, the toes terminating in slender, acutely pointed, non-retractile claws. The dentition is very peculiar and*~~

~~*Common Shrew (Sorex vulgaris, L.).*~~

~~*characteristic : there are in all thirty-two teeth, tipped with deep crimson ; of these twelve only (the number is charac- teristic, with one exception only, of the family) belong to the lower jaw ; of the remaining twenty ten*~~

~~occupy each side of the upper jaw, and of these the first three, as they are implanted in the premaxillary bone, are termed incisors. The first incisor is a large tooth with a long anterior canine- like cusp and a small posterior one ; then follow two small unicuspidate teeth ; these are succeeded by three similar progressively smaller teeth, whereof the first has been called a canine and the other two premolars ; the next tooth, also a premolar, is a large multicuspidate tooth ; and this is followed by three molars, of which the third is small with a triangular crown. In the lower jaw we find on each side anteriorly three teeth corresponding to the seven anterior teeth above, of which the first is almost horizontal in direction, its upper surface being marked by three notches, which~~

~~receive the points of the three upper front teeth with which they come in contact when the jaws are closed ; then follow two small teeth and three molars. The body is clothed with closely set uniformly long fur, very soft and dense, varying in colour from light reddish to dark brown above, rarely speckled over or spotted or even banded with white. The under surface of both the body and the tail is greyish; the basal four-fifths of all the hairs above and beneath are dark bluish grey ; the hairs of the tail are less densely set and coarser. On each side of the body, at a point about one- third of the distance between the elbow and the knee, may be found, especially in the rutting season, a cutaneous gland covered by two rows of coarse inbent hairs. This gland secretes a peculiar fluid, on which the unpleasant cheesy odour of the animal depends, and which is evidently also protective, rendering it secure against the attacks of many predaceous animals.~~

~~The lesser shrew (S. pygmeus) is much less abundant in England and Scotland, but comparatively common in Ireland, where the common shrew has not yet been found. It appears at first sight to be a diminutive variant of that species, which it closely resembles in external form. It was said to differ in having the tail longer than the body (without the head), whereas in the common shrew the body (without the head) is longer than the tail, and in the last unicuspidate upper molar tooth being comparatively larger and more external than in the other species. But the~~

~~*present writer has found these characters so exceedingly liable to variation as to be almost worthless ; he has there- fore discovered reliable points of distinction as follows:— in S. pyymeus the third upper incisor (when the teeth are unworn) is shorter, or at least not longer than the next following tooth, whereas in S. vulgaris it is always longer, and the length of the forearm and hand combined is very constantly 13 m.m. in the former species, while in the latter it is 17 m.m.*~~

~~*The habits of both the common and the lesser shrew correspond. They live generally in the neighbourhood of woods, making their nests under the roots of trees or in any slight depression, occasionally even in the midst of open fields, inhabiting the disused burrows of field-mice. Owing to their very small size, dark colour, rapid move- ments, and chiefly nocturnal habits they easily escape observation. They seek their food, which consists of insects, insect larvae, small worms, and slugs, under dead leaves, fallen trees, and in grassy places. Like the mole, they are very pugnacious, and if two or more are confined together in a limited space they invariably fight fiercely, the fallen becoming the food of the victorious. They also, like the mole, are exceedingly voracious, and soon die if deprived of food ; and it is probably to insufficiency of food in the early dry autumnal season that the well-known im- mense mortality amongst these animals at that time of the year is due. The breeding season extends from the end of April to the beginning of August, and five to seven, more rarely ten, young may be found in their nests; they are naked, blind, and toothless at birth, but soon run about snapping at everything within reach, the anterior pair of incisors in both jaws quickly piercing the gum, followed by the last pair of upper premolars, which at birth form prominent elevations in the gum.*~~

~~*The alpine shrew (S. alpinus, Schinz), restricted to the alpine region of Central Europe, is slightly longer than the common shrew and differs from it conspicuously in its much longer tail, which exceeds the length of the head and body, in the colour of the fur, which is dark on both surfaces, and in the large size of the upper antepenultimate premolar.*~~

~~*The water-shrew (Crossopus fodiens, Pall.), the third and last species inhabiting England, differs from the common shrew in being*~~

~~*considerably larger with a shorter and*~~

~~*SHREW*~~

~~*much broader muzzle, comparatively smaller eyes, and larger feet adapted for swimming,—the sides of the feet and toes being provided with comb-like fringes of stiff hairs. The tail is longer than the body (without the head) and possesses a well-developed swimming fringe of moder- ately long regularly ranged hairs, which extend along the middle of its flat under surface from the end of its basal third to its extremity. The fur of the body is long and very dense, varying much in colour in different individuals, and this has given rise to descriptions of many nominal species; the prevailing shades are dark, almost black, brown above, beneath more or less bright ashy tinged with yellowish ; occasionally, sometimes in the same brood, we find some individuals with the under surface more or less dark coloured. In the number as well as in the shape of the teeth the water-shrew differs from the common shrew: there is a premolar less on each side above; the bases of the teeth are much more prolonged posteriorly ; and their cusps are much less stained brown, so that in old individuals with worn teeth they often appear altogether white. This species resembles the otter in its aquatic habits, swimming and diving with great agility. It frequents rivers and lakes, making its burrows in the overhanging banks, from which when disturbed it escapes into the water. Its food consists of the different species of water-insects and their larve, small crustaceans, and probably the fry of small fishes. It is generally distributed throughout England, is less common in Scotland, but as yet it has not been recorded in Ireland. .*~~

~~*The geographical range of the common shrew is exccedingly wide, extending eastwards through Europe and Asia (north of the HIima- layas) to North America. The lesser shrew extends concomitantly through Europe and Asia to Saghalin Island ; and specimens of the water-shrew have been brought from different parts of Europe and from Asia as far east as the Altai range. In Siberia the common shrew is abundant in the snow-clad wastes about the Olenek river within the arctic circle. Indeed the hardiness of this little animal, as well as of other species of red-toothed shrews, is very remarkable. In Dr C. H. Merriam's Mammals of*~~

~~*the Adirondack Region we find the following note on the habits of a common North American species (Blarina brevicauda) of an allied genus :—" The rigors of our northern winters seem to have no effect in diminish- ing its activity, for it scampers about on the snow during the severest weather, and I have known it to be out when the ther- mometer indicated a temperature of — 20° Fahr. It makes long jour- neys over the snow, burrowing down whenever it comes to an eleva- tion that denotes the presence of a log or stump, and I am inclined © to believe that at this season it must feed largely upon the chry- salides and larve of insects that are always to be found in such places." Other species of red-toothed shrews are restricted chiefly to North America, where they are found in much greater variety than in the Old World, though Crossopus is not represented. Its place is taken by two species of the genus Sorex (S. palustris, Richardson, east of the Rocky Mountains, and S. hydrodromus, Dobson, from Unalaska Island), provided, like the water-shrew, with pedal swim- ming fringes, but with the unfringed tail and dentition of the common shrew,—the first-named being about as large as the water-shrew, while the Unalaska species scarcely exceeds the size of the lesser shrew. Of the American forms S. bendiri, Merriam, is by far the largest known species of the genus. In it, as in many others inhabiting North America, the canine shows a tendency to diminish in size, which is more pronounced in S. richardsoniz, Bachm., and in S. vagrans, Cooper ; in S. hoyi, Baird, it is rudimentary, and in S. crawfordi, Baird, altogether absent. The diminutive S. person- atus, Geoff., widely distributed throughont temperate North America, resembles S. pygmaeus in its small size. Other red-toothed shrews belonging to the allied genus Blarina, distinguished from Sorex by their dentition and by the remarkable shortness of the tail, are very common on and characteristic of the North American eo nent. All the red-toothed shrews (except the aquatic forms) closely resemble one another in habits, and Dr Merriam has made the highly interesting discovery that the common short-tailed North American shrew supplements its insectivorous fare by feeding ou beech-nuts, which will account for the generally very worn state of the teeth in this species. In destroying great numbers of slugs, insects, and insect larve they greatly aid the farmer in the pre- servation of his crops and merit protection. Although their pene- trating odour renders them in a great measure safe*~~

~~*from the attacks of rapacious mammals, they are destroyed in large numbers by noc- turnal birds of prey. (G. E. D.)*~~

~~*SHR—SHR*~~

~~*SHREWSBURY, an old market-town, a municipal and parliamentary borough, and the county and assize town of Shropshire, England, is situated on a slightly elevated peninsula formed by a bend of the Severn, and on various railway lines, 30 miles south of Chester, and 163 north-west of London by the London and North-Western Railway, the distance by the Great Western being 171 miles. The Severn is crossed by three stone bridges,—the English bridge (re-erected 1774), on the east, consisting of seven semicircular arches; the Welsh bridge (re-erected 1795), of five arches, on the west; and the Kingsland bridge (opened in 1882), of iron on the bow and girder principle. The streets are hilly and irregular, but strikingly pictur- esque from their number of antique timber houses, among which may be mentioned that in Butcher Row formerly the town residence of the abbot of Lilleshall, and the old council-house overlooking the Severn, erected in 1502 for the presidents of the council of the Welsh marches. Of the town ramparts built in the reign of Henry III. the principal remains are a small portion on the north side called the Roushill walls, and another portion on the south- west, used as a public walk, on which stands a square embattled tower. The castle built by Roger de Montgomery was dismantled in the reign of James IL. but there still remain the archway of the interior gateway, the walls of the inner court, and two large round towers of the time of Edward I. Roger de Montgomery also founded in 1083 the abbey of St Peter and St Paul, which was of great extent and very richly endowed.. At the dissolution it was destroyed, except part of the nave and the western tower of the church, which have been converted into a parish church, under the name of the church of the Holy Cross, The other churches of special interest are St Mary's, founded in the 10th century, a fine cruciform structure with a tower and spire 222 feet in height, displaying examples of various styles of architecture from Early Norman to Perpendicular,—the base of the tower, the nave, and the doorways being Norman, the transept Early English, and the aisles 15th century, while the interior is specially worthy of notice for its elaborate details, its stained glass, and its ancient*~~

monuments ; St Julian's, originally built before the Conquest, but rebuilt in 17 48, except the tower, the older portion of which is Norman and the upper part 15th century; St Alkmond's, also dating from the 10th century, but rebuilt towards the close of the 18th century, with the exception of the tower and spire; and St Giles's, dating from the time of Henry I., much altered at various periods, but still retaining its ancient nave and chancel. The old church of St Chad, supposed to have occupied the site of a palace of the princes of Powis, was destroyed by the fall of the tower in 1788, and of the ancient building the bishop's chancel alone remains. The new church of St Chad was built on another site in 1792. There are still slight remains of the abbey of Greyfriars founded in 1291, and of the Augus-tine friary founded in 1255. The old buildings completed in 1630 for the free grammar-school of Edward VI., founded in 1551, are now occupied by the county museum and free library, the school having been removed in 1882 to new buildings at Kingsland. Among the principal secular buildings of the town are the fine market-house in the Elizabethan style (completed according to an inscription over the northern arch in 1595), the shire hall (rebuilt in 1837, and again, after a fire, in 1883), the music-hall build- ings (1840), the general market and corn exchange (1869), the working-men's hall (1863), the drapers' hall (an old timbered structure dating from the 16th century), the theatre (1834), and the post-office (1877). The principal benevolent institutions are the county infirmary (1747), Millington's hospital (1734), and the eye, ear, and throat

hospital (1881). A monument to Lord Clive was erected In the market-place in 1860, and a Doric memorial pillar to General Lord Hill in 1816 at the top of the Abbey Foregate. The town racecourse occupies a portion of the 'Soldiers' Piece," where Charles I. addressed his army in 1642. To the south-west of the town is a fine park, 23 acres In extent, known as the Quarry, adorned by a beauti- ful avenue of lime trees, Formerly Shrewsbury was one of the principal marts for Welsh flannel, but this trade has now in great part ceased. Glass-staining, the spinning of flax and linen yarn, iron-founding, brewing, malting, the Preparation of brawn, and the manufacture of the well- known Shrewsbury cakes are now the principal industries, The population of the municipal and

~~*parliamentary borough (area, 3674 acres) in 1871 was 23,406, and in 1881 it was 26,478.*~~

~~*Shrewsbury, anciently called Pengwerne, was founded in the 5th century as a defence against the inroads of the Saxons, and became the seat of the princes of Powis. After its conquest by the Saxons its name was changed to Scrobbesbyrig, altered gradually into Sloppesbury, Shrewsbury, and Salop. ‘ It became one of the princi- pal cities of the Saxon kingdom, and a mint was established there by Athelstan about 925. After the Norman Conquest it was in- cluded in the earldom of Shrewsbury bestowed by William I. on Roger de Montgomery, who erected a strong castle on the site of the ancient Saxon fortress. But in 1067 it was besieged by Owen Gwynedd, prince of Wales, til] relieved by William, who marched specially to its assistance from York. On the rebellion of Robert de Belesme, son of the first earl of Shrewsbury, the castle and town were attacked by Henry I. and surrendered in 1102. During the wars of the next two centuries the town was frequently attacked and plundered by the Welsh, being captured by Llewelyn in 1215, surrendered to the English in 1221, plundered by the earl of Pem- broke in 1223, burnt by Llewelyn ap Jorwerth in January 1234, taken by Simon de Montfort in 1264, and restored to the crown in 1265. In 1267 Henry III. assembled his army there, to threaten the Welsh, but peace was restored without bloodshed, after which he strengthened its fortifieations. Edward I. in 1277 made it the*~~

~~*‘seat of his government, and removed to it the Courts of Exchequer*~~

~~*and King’s Bench. In 1283 he held a parliament there for the trial of David, the last of the royal princes of Wales, who was dragged through the streets of the town and afterwards hanged and quartered. At a parliament held in Shrewsbury in J anuary 1398 Richard II. assumed the title of Earl of Chester. Near the town was fought, 23d July 1408, the battle of Shrewsbury, described in Shakespeare’s Henry IV., when the king defeated the earl of Northumberland with great slaughter, Hotspur, the earl’s son, being among the slain. It became the headquarters of Charles I., 20th September 1642, but was taken by the Parliamentarians in February 1645. The town from the reign of William I. to that of James II. received no less than thirty-two charters, its first governing charter*~~

~~*being obtaincd from Richard I. _It returned two members to parliament from the reign of Edward I. until 1885, when it was allowed only one.*~~

~~*See Phillips, History and Antiquities of Shrewsbury, 1779; Owen and Blake- nay, History of Shrewsbury, 1825; Pidgeon, Memorials of Shrewsbury, 1857.*~~

~~*SHREWSBURY, Earts or. See TArpor.*~~

~~*SHRIKE, a bird's name so given by Turner (1544), but solely on the authority of Sir Francis Lovell, for Turner had seen the bird but twice in England, though in Ger- many often, and could not find any one else who so called it. However, the word! was caught up by succeeding writers; and, though hardly used except in books—for Butcher-bird is its vernacular synonym—it not only retains its first position in literary English, but has been largely extended so as to apply in general to all birds of the Family Lanide and others besides. The name Lanius, in this sense, originated with Gesner ? (1555), who thought that the birds to which he gave it had not been mentioned by the ancients. Sundevall, however, considers that the Malacocraneus of Aristotle was one of them, as indeed Turner had before suggested, though repelling the latter's*~~

~~*1 Few birds enjoy such a wealth of local names as the Shrikes. M. Rolland (Faune Pop. de la France, ii. pp. 146-151) enumerates up- wards of ninety applied to them in France and Savoy; but not one of these has any affinity to our word " Shrike."*~~

~~*2 He does not seem, however, to have known that Butcher-bird was an English name ; indeed it may not have been so at the time, but subsequently introduced.*~~

~~*supposition that Aristotle's Zyrannus was another, as well as Belon's reference of Collyrion.*~~

~~*The species designated Shrike by Turner is the Lanius excubitor of Linnzus and nearly all succeeding authors, nowadays! commonly known*~~

~~*as the Greater Butcher-bird, Ash-coloured or Great Grey Shrike,—a bird which visits the British Islands pretty regularly, though not numerously, in autumn or winter, occasionally prolong- ing its stay into the next summer; but it has never been ascertained to breed there, though often asserted to have done so. This is the more remarkable since it breeds more or less commonly on the Conti- nent from the north of France to within the Arctic Circle. Exceeding a Song-Thrush in linear measurements, it isa much less bulky bird, of a pearly grey above with a well-defined black band passing from the forehead to the ear-coverts ; beneath it is nearly white, or—and this is particularly observable in Eastern examples—barred with dusky. The quill-feathers of the wings, and of the elongated tail, are variegated with black and white, but are mostly of the former, though what there is of the latter shows very conspicuously, especially at the base of the remiges, where it forms either a single or a double patch.? _ Much smaller than this is the Red-backed Shrike, Z. collwrio, the best-known species in Great Britain, where it is a summer visitor, and, though its distribution is rather local, it may be seen in many parts of England and occasionally reaches Scotland. The cock is a sightly bird with his grey head and neck, black cheek-band, chestnut back, and pale red breast, while the hen is ordinarily of a dull brown, barred on the lower plumage. A more highly coloured specics is called the Woodchat, LZ. auriculatus or rutilus, with a bright bay crown and nape, and the rest of its plum- age black, grey, and white. This is an accidental visitor to England, but breeds commonly throughout Europe. All these birds, with many others included in the genus Lanius, which there is no room here to specify, have, according to their respective power, the very remarkable habit (whence they have earned their opprobrious name) of catching insects, frogs, lizards, or small birds and mammals, and of spitting them on a thorn or of fixing them in a forked branch, the more conveniently to tear them in pieces and eat them.*~~

~~*The limits of the Family Zaniide have been very variously regarded, and agreement between almost any two systematists on this point seems at present out of the question. The latest synopsis is that by Dr Gadow (Cat. B. Brit. Museum, viii. pp. 88-321), who frankly states that it is "quite impossible to give a concise diagnosis of what we are to understand by" the Family. For his purpose he makes it to include about 250 species and*~~

~~*divides it into five sub-families :—Gymnorhinine, Mala- conotine, Pachycephaline, Laniine, and Vireonine. Of these doubts may be entertained as to the affinity of the first and especially of the last. He, but for the crude plan to which he was compelled to conform, would not have separated Strepera from Gymnorhina ; but the former had*~~

~~*? According to Willughby, Rae, and Charleton, it was in their day called in many parts of England "Wierangle" (Germ. Wiirgengel and Wirger, the Strangler); but it is hard to see how a bird which few people in England could know by sight should have a popular name, though Chaucer had used it in his Assemblye of Foules.*~~

~~*? On this character great store has been laid by some recent writers, who maintain that the birds presenting only a single patch, with some other minor distinctions, as the barred breast above mentioned, come from the far East and deserve specific recognition as the Lanius major of Pallas. But it is admitted that every intermediate form occurs, and Prof. Collett has now shown (Jbis, 1886, pp. 30-40) that the typical L. excubitor and typical LZ. major may be found in one and the same brood, and also that this occasional divergence is due neither to age nor sex. That it does depend to some extent on locality is allowed ; for, though examples with the single patch (¢.¢., Z. major) otcasionally reach Great Britain, it is asserted that nearly all the specimens from Eastern Siberia are so marked. But it is also found that by almost insensible degrees other (and sometimes more important) distinctions are mani- fested, and the extreme terms of the several series have been exalted to the rank of "species"—or at least local races. Thesc are too many to be here enumerated, but it may be mentioned that the Great Grey Shrike of North America, which ordinarily has the lower plumage strongly barred, and is usually known as L. borealis, seems to be only one of these divergent forms, though perhaps the most divergent, as might be expected from the wholly distinct area it occupies. Yet occasionally examples occur in the Old World, which there is no reason to suppose have an American origin, indistinguishable from the typical L. borealis, and an unintcrrupted series from one extreme to the other can be found, The differences when compared with those observable in other animals are, as a whole, too slight to justify the*~~

~~*epithet "poly- morphic" to LZ. excubitor as a species; but enough has been said to show that it indicates a tendency in that direction.*~~

~~*SH R—SHR*~~

~~*been already included, to the exclusion of the latter, among the Corvidz, and even placed among the normal Corvine. The need of exercising reserve on this matter has been before stated (Crow, vol. vi. p.617); but the number of ornitho- logists who think that these two genera should be placed in different Families must be small. The view taken by Prof. Parker seems to be the most reasonable: these genera—with others doubtless and most of them Australian—are morpho- logically inferior to the Corvide, and perhaps deserve some such designation as that of "' Voto-Coracomorphe" suggested by him (Z'rans. Zool. Society, ix. p. 327). At the same time. their relationship to the Landidx appears to be evident, and they may perhaps be best regarded as the less-altered descendants of an old type, whence both the true Crows and the true Shrikes have sprung, each to develop into higher morphological rank, and by the way to throw out numerous other branches. As to the Vireos it would seem almost certain that they have little or no connexion with the Laniide. (A. N.) SHRIMP, the name applied to two species of Crus- taceans commonly used as food in Great Britain. One kind after boiling is brown in colour, the other bright red. The brown kind belongs to the species Crangon vulgaris, the red to the species Pandalus annulicornis. Both these species belong to the sub-order Decapoda, and to that division of it which is distinguished by a well- developed abdomen or tail, and called Macroura. The Crustaceans placed in this division have five pairs of limbs adapted for crawling on the sea-bottom ; usually the an- terior one or more pairs of these five are chelate or pincer- formed. In front of the ambulatory limbs are six pairs of limbs whose function is to assist in the conveyance of food to the mouth, three pairs of maxillipeds, two pairs. of maxille, and a pair of mandibles. In front of these, again, are two pairs of antenne and a pair of eyes. The latter are held by some naturalists to represent a pair of limbs, but evidence exists which is in opposition to this. view. Behind the ambulatory limbs are six segments of the body, each bearing a pair of limbs adapted for swim- ming. The sixth pair of these abdominal limbs are larger than the rest and expanded, extending backwards in the same*~~

~~*plane as the flattened terminal segment of the body or telson, and the three together form a powerful organ of locomotion by which a rapid backward movement of the whole body in the water is produced. The genus Crangon is the type of a family, the Crangonide. The most conspicuous characteristic of the genus is the shape of the first pair of ambulatory limbs. These differ less from the rest than is usually the case, and the terminal pincer apparatus is but slightly developed. The terminal joint is small, and the projection of the second joint against which it acts is still smaller, so that the cutting edges of the pincer are transverse to the rest of the limb. The second pair of limbs have also a terminal pincer apparatus, and both the second and the third are slender. The fourth and fifth pairs are short and thick. The rostrum, the median projection of the anterior part of the carapace, is rudimentary. The line joining the attachments of the two pairs of antenne are transverse to the axis of the body. The abdomen is large. There are seven branchiz on each side. The specific characters of C. vulgaris, Fabr., are the smoothness of the dorsal surface, the carapace presenting only three small spincs, one mnedian in the gastric region and one on each side on the branchi- ostegite. The second pair of ainbulatory limbs are nearly as long as the third. The size of the adult animal is about 24 inches. The species is abundant on sandy shores at nearly all parts of the British and Irish coasts, and is captured by nets which have a semicircular mouth, and are attached to a pole wielded by a fisherman wading in the water at ebb-tide. The common shrimp is an exception to the general rule that the cuticle of Crustaceans is either red in the*~~

~~*living animal or becomes so on boiling. The cuticle of C. vulgaris in the living state is light brown or almost white, and the animal*~~

~~*Plate VIII,*~~

~~*SHR—SHR*~~

~~*The colour closely approximates to that of the sand on which the animal is found. After boiling the cuticle Several other species of Crangon are known on the British shores, but none of them are as*~~

~~*is somewhat translucent. assumes its well-known brown colour.*~~

~~*abundant as C. vulgaris, and they are not captured as food. C.*~~

~~*vulgaris is common on the east coast of North America from North Carolina to Labrador; in the neighbourhood of New York it is used as food. The species also occurs on the west coast of America from San Diego to Alaska, and is commonly eaten at San Francisco,*~~

~~*as also is another species, Crangon Sranciscorum, Stimpson.*~~

~~*The genus Pandalus, first defined by Leach in his Malacologia Britannica, is chiefly distinguished by the great length of the second*~~

~~*pair of antenne, which are longer than the whole body, the presence of a long spiny rostrum curved upwards, the total absence of pincers on the first pair of ambulatory limbs, and the great length of the second of these limbs on the left side. rest. 'The second pair are provided with a very small pincer ap- paratus. The third somite of the abdomen is large and projects upwards, so that the body has a hump-backed appearance. The serrated upper edge of the rostrum extends backwards along the median line of the carapace, half way to its posterior border. The specific characters of the species Annulicornis are that the rostrum js equal in length to the carapace, and that its anterior half is destitute of teeth above, with the exception of one small tooth near the apex. This species is not so abundant as C. vulgaris and is an inhabit- ant of deeper water. It is taken usually for the market on the east and south coasts of Britain, but is widely distributed, occurring in Scotland, Ireland, Shetland, and Iceland. In colour it is when alive of a reddish grey with spots of deeper red ; when boiled it is of a uniform deep red. This species is sometimes con-*~~

~~*founded with the common prawn ; but it never reaches the size of*~~

~~*the prawn, its adult length being 2 to 24 inches. P. annulicornis is the only species of the genus occurring in Great Britain. The common prawn when adult is above 4 inches in length. It belongs to the species Palemon serratus. antenn are long, asin Pandalus, but the first pair are much larger in the former than in the latter. In Palemon both of the first two pairs of ambulatory limbs are didactyle or pincer-formed ; the second pair are stronger than the first, and the left not longer than the right. Some of*~~

~~*the smaller species of Palemon are used as food and sometimes called shrimps. At Poole in Dorsetshire, according to Prof. Bell's British Crustacea, Palemon squilla, Fabr., P. varians, Leach, and P. leachii, Bell, are all taken, and sold as cup-shrimps.*~~

~~*SHROPSHIRE, or Satop, an inland county of England, on the borders of Wales, lies between 52° 20' and 53° 4' N. lat. and 2° 17' and 3° 14' W. long., and is bounded N. by Cheshire and an interpolated portion of Flint, E. by Stafford, S.E. by Worcester, 8. by Hereford, 8.W. by Radnor, W. by Montgomery, and N.W. by Denbigh. The total area in 1880 was 844,565 acres, or about 1319 square miles,*~~

~~*Towards the west Shropshire partakes of the hilly scenery of the neighbouring Wales, from which several ranges are continued into it. South of the Severn on the borders of Montgomery the Breidden Hills of Lower Silurian formation rise abruptly in three peaks, of which Cefn-y-Castell, about 1300 feet high, is in Shropshire; and in the south-west there is a broad range of rough rounded hills known as Clun Forest, extending from Radnor. South and west of the Severn there are four other principal chains of hills extending from south-west to north-east—the Long Mynd (1674 feet), to the west of Church Stretton, of Cam- brian formation ; the Caradoc Hills, a little to the north, which cross the Severn, terminating in the isolated sugar- loaf peak of the Wrekin (1320 feet); the Wenlock Edge, to the east of Church Stretton, a sharp ridge extend- ing for 20 miles, and in some places rising above 1000 feet; and the Clee Hills, near the south-eastern border (Brown Clee Hill, 1805 feet ; Titterstone Clee Hill, 1750 feet). The remainder of the county is for the most part pleasantly undulating, finely cultivated, and watered by numerous rivulets and streams. It may be said to lie in the basin of the Severn, which enters the county near its centre from Montgomery, and flows eastwards to Shrews- bury, after which it turns south-eastwards to Tronbridge, and then continues in a more southerly direction past Bridgnorth, entering Worcester near Bewdley. It is navi-*~~

~~*The ambulatory limbs are all long and slender, and the first pair are not thicker than the*~~

~~*In Palezmon the second pair of*~~

~~gable to Shrewsbury and has connexion with the Doning- ton, the Shropshire Union, the Shrewsbury, the Birming- ham and Liverpool, and the Chester and Ellesmere Canals. Its principal tributaries within the county are—from the right the Meol (which receives the Rea), the Cound, the Mor, and the Borle, and from the left the Vyrnwy (dividing Shropshire from Montgomery), the Perry, the Tern (which Tecelves the Roden), the Bell, and the Worf. The Dee touches the north-western boundary of the county with Denbigh. In the south the Teme, which receives the Clun, the Onny, and the Corve, flows near the borders of Here- ford, which it occasionally touches and intersects. Of the numerous lakes and pools the largest is Ellesmere (116 acres) near the borders of Denbigh. The Severn forms the boundary between the Old and the New Red Sandstone formations, which constitute the principal strata of the county. The Old Red Sandstone rocks lying to the south and west of the river are bounded and deeply interpene- trated by Cambrian and Silurian strata. There are five separate coal-fields within the county,—the Forest of Wyre, Coalbrookdale, Shrewsbury, Clee Hills, and Oswestry. The Forest of Wyre field on the borders of Worcester rests directly on the Devonian rocks, and has a great thickness of measures, but comparatively few workable seams, The Coalbrookdale embraces an area of 28 square miles, and is triangular in form, with its base resting on the Severn and its northern apex at Newport. On its western side it is bounded partly by a great fault, which brings in the New Red Sandstone, and partly by the Silurian strata ; on its eastern side it passes beneath the Permian strata ; and it is supposed that the productive measures are con. tinued towards South Staffordshire. Its general dip is eastwards, and the strata have a vertical thickness of over 1000 feet. The organic remains include fishes, crustaceans, and molluscs. Mingled with the coal strata are several valuable courses of ironstone. The original quantity of coal in the field is estimated to have been about 43 million**

~~'tons, of which there are about 12 millions now remain-~~

~~ing. Neither the Shrewsbury nor the Clee Hills fields are of much value. The Oswestry field is small, but has some workable seams adjoining the~~

~~*extensive field of Denbigh, In 1884 850,000 tons of coal, valued at £286,000, were raised in Shropshire from fifty-five collieries, while 198,700 tons of iron were obtained valued at £109,285. Tron- casting forms one of the most important industries of the county. Lead mining is carried on with some success on the Stiperstones, 3788 tons of lead ore being raised in 1884. The other principal minerals are iron pyrites (500 tons in 1884, valued at £250), barytes (4939 tons, worth £7395), and fire-clay (56,000 tons, worth £8475). There are also a large number of stone and lime quarries.*~~

~~*Manufactures.—With the exception of iron, the manufactures of the county are comparatively unimportant. Bricks and tiles, earthen and china ware, and tobacco pipes are largely made in various districts. At Shrewsbury there are linen, yarn, and thread mills, and in several districts small a es*~~

~~*Agriculture.—There is much fertile land suitable for all kinds of culture, the richest soil being that in the vicinity of the Severn, including the Vale of Shrewsbury. Much of the hilly ground, including Wenlock Edge and the Clee Hills, admits of tillage ; but a portion of the western mountainous region is of comparatively small value even for the pasturage of sheep. Out of a total area of 844,565 acres there were 716,599 in 1885 under culture, of which 150,085 were under corn crops, 61,101 under green crops, 426,859 under permanent pasture, 71,470 under rotation grasses, and 6978 fallow. The area under woods in 1881 was 45,641 acres, and in 1885 the area under orchards was 4015. Of corn crops the areas under wheat and barley were in 1885 nearly equal, 53,161 and 53,300 acres respectively, while that under oats amounted to 34,445 acres, rye to 848, beans 4648, and pease 3683. Nearly five-sixths of the area under green crops were occupied by turnips and swedes, which covered 47,119 acres, the area under potatoes being 6874, and that under mangold wurzel 4355. Horses in 1885 numbered 82,323, of which 19,377 were used solely for purposes of agriculture ; cattle*~~

~~*(chiefly Herefords) 162,932, of which 60,976 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf and 69,865 animals under two years old; sheep (mainly*~~

~~Shropshire) 438,664 ; pigs 61,067 ; and poultry 369,890. In the northern districts Cheshire cheese is largely made. Accord- ing to the latest Landowners' Return for England Shropshire was divided among 12,119 owners, possessing 791,941 acres at an annual value of £1,484,833, or an average value of about £1, 16s. 8d. per acre. 'T'here were 7281 proprictors or about 60 per cent. who pos- sessed less than 1 acre, and 19,675 acres were common land. 'The following possessed over 8000 acres each—Earl of Powis, 26,986; Duke of Cleveland, 25,604; Earl Brownlow, 20,233; Duke of Sutherland, 17,495; Lord Hill, 16,290; Lord Forester, 14,891; Lord Windsor, 10,846; Earl of Bradford, 10,515; Sir V. R. Corbet, 9489; W. O. Foster, 8547; W. L. Childe, 8430; Lord Boyne, 8424; I. D. Corbet, 8118.~~

~~Administration and Population.—Shropshire comprises 14 hun- dreds and the municipal boroughs of Bridgnorth (population, 5885 in 1881), Ludlow (5035), Oswestry (7847), Shrewsbury (26,478), and Wenlock (18,442). For parliamentary purposes the county, which was formerly shared between North and South Shropshire, was in 1885 divided into four separate divisions,—Mid (Wellington), North (Newport), South (Ludlow), and West (Oswestry), each returning one member. At the same time the boroughs of Bridg- north, Wenlock, aud Ludlow were merged in the county divisions to which they severally belong ; but Shrewsbury continues to return one member. Shropshire contains also the following urban sanitary districts :—Broseley (population, 4458 in 1881), Dawley (9200), Ellesmere (1875), Madeley (9212), Much Wenlock (2321), Newport (3044), Wellington (6217), and Whitchurch and Dodington (3756). The county has one court of quarter sessions, and is divided into nineteen special sessional divisions. All the boroughs have separate courts of quarter sessions and commissions of the peace. The county contains 252 civil parishes with parts of six others. Ecclesiastically it is in the dioceses of Hereford, Lichfield, and St Asaph. The population (240,959 in 1861) in 1881 was 248,014 (124,157 males and 123,857 females). The number of persons to an acre was 0°29 and of acres to a person 3°41.~~

~~History and Antiquities.—The British tribes inhabiting Shrop- shire at the time of the Romans were named by them the Ordovices and the~~

~~*Cornavii. It was within its boundaries that Caractacus (Caradoc) struggled against Vespasian in 51 A.D. A connected chain of military works was erected by him over the southern and western districts of the county, the most important fortresses be- ing Caer Caradoc (where he is said to have made his last stand), occupying a commanding position in the forest of Clun, and the earthwork of Hén Dinas at Old Oswestry, consisting of four or five*~~

~~*concentric circles, still well marked. The Roman Watling Street:*~~

~~*entered Shropshire near Weston-under-Lizard in Stafford and passed in an oblique line to Leintwardine in Hereford. Various other Roman roads diverged from it in different directions. Wroxeter, a little to the west of the Wrekin, 'occupies the site of the ancient Roman city Uriconium, of which a portion of the wall, originally 3 miles in circumference, still remains. Explorations made on the site of the city have revealed many interesting features of its con- struction, and have led to the discovery of an immense variety of remains. By some authorities the Roman Mediolanum is placed near Drayton and Rutunium near Wem; but the evidence in both cases is doubtful. Throughout Shropshire there are many remains of Roman camps. Under the Romans it was included in the province of Flavia Cesariensis. After their departure it was annexed to the kingdom of the Saxons by Offa, who about 765 caused Watt's dyke to be erected to guard against the incursions of the Welsh, and later erected parallel with it, 2 miles to the west, the entrenchment known as Offa's dyke, which, extending from the Wye near Hereford to the parish of Mold in Flintshire, forms in some places a well-defined boundary between Shropshire and Montgomery. The greater part of the history of Shropshire is included under that of SHREWSBURY (q.v.). There are several important old ecclesiastical ruins, including Wenlock priory, once very wealthy, said to have been founded by St Milburg, grand-daughter of Penda, king of the Merciaus, as a college for secular priests, and changed into a priory for Cluniac monks by Roger de Montgomery about 1080 ; Lilleshall abbey, for Augustinian canons, founded in the reign of Stephen ; Shrewsbury abbey, founded in 1083 in honour of St Peter and St Paul; Buildwas abbey, one of the finest ruins in the county, founded in 1135 for Cistercians by Roger de Clinton, bishop of Chester; and Haughmond*~~

~~*abbey, for Augustinian canons, founded by William Fitzalan about 1138. Other remains of less consequence are those of the convent of White Ladies or St Leonard's, a Norman struc- ture, said to have been founded in the reign of Richard I. or John ; slight traces of Wombridge priory, for Augustinian canons, founded before the reign of Henry I.; Alberbury priory, for Benedictines, founded by Fulk Fitzwarin between 1220 and 1230; and Chirbury priory, founded towards the close of the 12th century. The castles of Bridgnorth (see BripcenorrH), Ludlow, and Shrewsbury are referred to in the notices of these towns, and in addition to these may be mentioned Clun Castle, which after a long siege was taken*~~

~~*SH R—S HU*~~

~~*and burnt by the Welsh prince Rees about 1196, and Boscobel House, near which Charles II. is said to have been sheltered in an oak,*~~

~~*See Hartshorne, Salopia Antiqua, 1841; Eyton, Antiquities of Shropshire, 12 vols., 1854-60 ; Anderson, History of Shropshire, 1869 ; Blakeway, Sheriffs of | Shropshire; Duke, Antiquities of Shropshire. (T. F. H.)*~~

~~*SHROVE TUESDAY, the day preceding Ash Wednes- day, or the first day of Lent, was so called as the day on which "shrift" or confession was made. CompareCARNnrvat.*~~

~~*SHUMLA (Bulg. Shumen, Turk. Shumna), a fortified town of Bulgaria, 58 miles south-south-west of Silistria and in that pashalic and 50 west of Varna. The town is built within a cluster of hills which curve round it on the west and north in the shape of a horse-shoe. A rugged ravine intersects the ground longitudinally within the horse- shoe ridge. From Shumla roads radiate northwards to the Danubian fortresses of Rustchuk and Silistria and those in the Dobrudja, southwards to the passes of the Balkans, and eastwards to Varna and Baltchik. Shumla is therefore one of the most important military positions to the north of Turkey, while it ranks as the third largest town in Bulgaria. Spread over a large extent of ground, each house mostly isolated in the midst of its own stables and cow-houses, Shumla has the appearance of a vast village. A broad street and rivulet divide the military or upper quarter, Gorni-Mahlé, from the lower quarter, Dolni-Mahlé. The latter, dirty and unhealthy, intersected*~~

~~*by a labyrinth of lanes, is inhabited mostly by Christians and Jews. The Armenians possess a small church, and each of the two Bulgarian quarters has its temple. The houses of the Gorni-Mahlé, occupied chiefly by Turks, stand pleasantly embowered each in its flower and fruit garden. Gorni- Mahlé has preserved the old church of the Resurrection. In the Dolni-Mahlé is the new church of St Cyril, a fine basilica adorned with a peristyle. The Bulgarian com- munity possesses two boys'.and two girls' schools, giving instruction superior to that obtainable at the primary Turkish school. 'In the upper part of the town is the magnificent mausoleum of Jezairli Hassan Pasha, who in the 18th century enlarged the fortifications of Shumla. The principal mosque, with a cupola of very interesting archi- tecture, forms the centre of the Moslem quarter. At the farther end of the town, isolated on a hill, is a large military hospital. The population of Shumla in 1881 was 23,093, exclusive of the garrison. The town is renowned for its manufacture of red and yellow slippers, ready-made clothes, richly embroidered dresses for females, and its copper and tin wares. It also rears silk-worms, spins silk, and carries on an important trade in grain and wine. The branch railway from Shumla to Kaspidjan, 94 miles, to connect the town with the Rustchuk-Varna Railway, though commenced in 1870, was not finished in 1886.*~~

~~*In 811 Shuinla was burned by the emperor Nicephorus, and in 1087 was besieged by Alexius. In 1388 the sultan Murad I. forced the castle to surrender ; and thence till the 17th century Shumla disappears from history. In the 18th century it was enlarged and fortified. Three times—1774, 1810, and 1828—it was unsuccessfully attacked by Russian armies. The Turks consequently gave it the naine of Gazi ("Victorious"). But on 22d June 1878 Shumla capitu- lated to the Russians. The treaty of Berlin stipulated the demoli- tion of the fortifications; but this article has not been executed, and Bulgarian troops garrison the fort.*~~

~~*See F. Kanitz, La Bulgarie Danubienne (1882) ; H. C. Barkley, Bulgaria before the War (1877), and Between the Danube and Black Sea (1876); S. G. B. and C. A. St Clair, Residence in Bulgaria (1869); J. L. Farley, New Bulgaria (1880) ; and J. G. Minchin, Bulgaria since the War (1880).*~~

~~*SHUSHA, a town, formerly a fortress, of Russia, in*~~

~~*the Caucasian government of Elisabethpol, lies in 39° 46'*~~

~~*N. lat. and 46° 25' E. long., 230 miles south-east of Tiflis, on an isolated rocky eminence, 3860 feet high. The town, which is accessible only on one side, occupies but a small part of the plateau, whence there is a splendid view over the surrounding mountain gorges and defiles. In 1873 the population was 24,552 (males 13,666, females 10,886), of whom 13,504 were Armenians and 10,804*~~

~~*SHU—~·S II Ww*~~

~~*Tatars. Instead of flat earthen roofs, as in most other towns of Transcaucasia, the houses have very high steep roofs, covered with shingle. 'The streets are sinuous, and are intersected by ravines. Shusha was formerly the capital of the khanate of Karabagh. 'The town is locally renowned for its carpet manufactures, and the district for its excellent breed of Karabagh horses,*~~

~~*The fortress, formed in 1789 by Pana Khan, has a wall on one side, and is defended naturally on the other three sides. In 1795 Shusha successfully withstood a siege by Agha Mohammed of Persia, but was constrained to surrender two years afterwards. In 1805 Ibrahim Khan of Karabagh invoked 'the protection of Russia, but the annexation was completed only in 1822. The present district of Shusha (2934 square miles) forms only a part of the former khanate of Karabagh. In 1873 it had (exclusive of Shusha) a population of 80,918 (males 45,163, females 35,750), Armenians numbering 48,562 and Tatars 37,351. Agriculture and cattle-breeding are almost the sole occupations of the inhabitants. Gen- eral culture is very low; there is no enterprise, and but inadequate security for life and property.*~~

~~*SHUSTAR, or Sutsrar, SHUSHTAR (Arab. Zostar), once a flourishing provincial capital of Persia, is now a compara- tively unimportant town of 6000 inhabitants, —exclusive, however, of the Bakhtidris, who during the winter months encamp with their flocks and herds in the immediate vicinity. It is situated (32° 3' 30" N. lat. and 48° 59' E. long.) at the foot of an offshoot of the Bakhti4ri Mountains in the north-west of Khuzistan, and just below the point in the Karun (Dojail or Little Tigris) where—the*~~

~~*main stream running westwards—a cutting of 70 feet deep has been made through the natural rock for an easterly branch. Thence the two streams, enclosing a wide alluvial tract, of which Shustar is the crown, follow independent courses until they reunite some 40 miles to the south. According to Lieutenant Selby, I.N., who ascended the Kartn from Muhamrah (Mohammera) in 1842 by the Shutait (or main stream on the west) to within 6 the navigation, of the Ab-i-Gargar (or eastern channel) to within 1 mile, of Shustar, the town is built on a small hill which rises gradually from the south-west and increases in elevation to the citadel, which presents on the north- castern side an abrupt face of about 150 feet in length, having the river immediately beneath. Mr Loftus, who visited Shustar some eight years after Lieutenant Selby, gives an account of the two great dams thrown across the river,—the " Band-i-Mizdn " over the natural course, the " Band-i-Kaisar" over the artificially diverted branch. About a mile below the latter is a similar work of more recent and imore solid and substantial construction, called the "Pul," or bridge of Belaiti, Legend ascribes these ancient works to Shapur I. and his captive the emperor Valerian. In 1875, and again in 1878, Mr Mackenzie visited Shustar; he speaks of the town as being in a wretchedly decayed and filthy condition. The houses are of stone, some few good, with underground roonis (sarddbs or zr zamin) excavated to a depth of two stories below the ground level. In these relief is obtained from the intense summer heat. The traffic of the bazaar, which is & poor one, seemed to depend chiefly on the Iiydts or wandering tribes. The inhabitants—for the most part Arabs and Sdiyids—have a reputation for hospitality.*~~

~~*Some writers have identified Shishar with Susa (Shushan of the Bible), the capital of Susiana and a residenee of the Achemenian kings. The true site of the latter, however, as Loftus's explora- tions showed, is at Shish, a widely spread ruin 30 or 40 miles to the north-west. On the other side of Shustar is the locally classic ground of Ram IIormuz. In fact, of the whole neighbourhood Sir II. Rawlinson writes that it "still requires elaborate exploration, and would well repay any traveller who would devote six months to examining the ruins and carefully copying the inseriptions."*~~

~~*The river Karin, which rises in' the Bakhtiari Mountains and passes down the broad Shattu 'L-'Arab, joins the Tigris and Euphrates. It has been declared by many and trustworthy authorities to be well adapted for steam havigation—save as regards one obstacle at Ahwaz, removable at little cost—from its mouth to the near*~~

~~*miles, and further tested:*~~

~~*849*~~

~~*Thence to Ispahan the land journey Bushahr (Bushire) to that eity by*~~

~~*neighbourhood of Shustar. would be shorter than from 200 miles,*~~

~~*SHUYA, one of the chief centres of the cotton industry in middle Russia, is a district town in the government of Vladimir, 68 miles north-east of the town of Vladimir. A branch railway connects it with the Novki station of the railway from Moscow to Nijni-Novgorod. The town is built on the high left bank of the navigable Teza, a tribu- tary of the Klazma, with two suburbs on the right bank. Annalists mention princes of Shuya in 1403. Its first linen manufactures were established in 1755; but in 1800 its population did not exceed 1500. Its growth began only with the development of the cotton industry in central Russia, and since then has been rapid; in 1882 it had 19,560 inhabitants, as against 10,440 in 1870. Of these about 10,000 live by the manufactures, and only a few keep to agriculture and gardening. In 1881 the output of twelve cotton-mills was valued at £442,160 for various cotton stuffs and £48,000 for cotton yarn. 'Tan- neries, especially for the preparation of sheep-skins—widely renowned throughout Russia—still maintain their im- portance, although this industry has migrated to a great extent to the country districts. The products of its manu- factories are chiefly sent to Moscow and Nijni-Novgorod. The town is mainly built of wood. Tis cathedral (1799) is a large building, with five gilt cupolas. Shuya has also two gymnasia, for boys and girls, besides a progymnasium for girls, and several secondary and primary schools.*~~

~~*The surrounding district is also important for its manufactures. The village of Ivanovo-Voznesensk, north of Shuya, with a popu- lation of*~~

~~more than 19,000 inhabitants, employed 11,329 workmen in its 39 manufactories in 1881, and showed a return of £1,939,950 (£1,700,000 for cottons and the remainder for chemicals and machi- nery). Teikovo and Kokhma are two other centres of manufacture, — the whole production of the manufactories within the district (ex- clusive of Shuya and Ivanovo) being estimated at £630,000. These figures, of course, do not include any statistics of the petty trades carried on side by side with agriculture. Nearly every village has a specialty of its own, — bricks, pottery (Menschikovo), wheels, toys packing-boxes, looms and other weaving implements, house furni- ture, sieves, combs, boots, gloves, felt goods, candles, and so on The manufacture of linen and cotton in villages, as well as the pre- paration and manufacture of sheepskins and rough gloves, occupies about 40,000 peasants. The Shuya merchants carry on an active trade in these products all over Russia, and in corn, spirits, salt, and other food stuffs, which are imported to a great extent. In 1880 the imported goods reached 1,618,000 cwts. (1,208,000 by rail), and the exports 1,318,000 cwts., chiefly by the Teza.~~

~~SHWE-GYENG, a district of British Burmah, in the Tenasserim division, containing an area of 5567 square miles, and lying in the valley of the Tsit-toung (Sitoung) river. It is bounded on the N. by Toung-gnu district, on the E. by the Poung-loung Hills and the Salwin Hill Tracts, on the 8. by Amherst district, and on the W. by the Pegu Yoma Hills. The boundaries have more than once been altered, the last change having taken place in 1877. The aspect of the country is mountainous, especially in the north. The Tsit-toung is navigable throughout its entire length in the district by large boats and steam-launches. Shwe-gyeng has never been accurately surveyed from a geological point of view, but it is supposed to be rich in minerals, Gold is found in most of the affluents of the river Shwe-gyeng ; copper, lead, tin, and coal also exist, but are not worked. Except in the hills, the climate is generally healthy ; the average annual rainfall at Shwe- gyeng station is 144 inches.~~

~~In 1881 the population of the district was 171,144 (89,687 males and 81,457 females), of whom Hindus numbered 958, Mohammedans 855, Buddhists 158,149, and Christians 1250. The only town with more than 5000 inhabitants is Shwe-gyeng, the capital and head-~~

~~quarters of the district, which was founded during the 18th century, before the Burmese conquest, by Alompra. It is situated at the~~

~~junction of the Shwe-gyeng with the Tsit-toung, and had a popula-~~

~~tion of 7519 in 1881. Only 187 square miles of the district were cultivated in 1883-84; the cultivated area is, however, gradually XXL .— 167~~

~~Plate IX.~~

~~Bound- aries,~~

~~850~~

~~extending, and there are some 8474 square miles capable of cultiva- tion. The principal crop is rice, of which twenty-five different kinds are grown; other products are cotton, betel-nuts, tobacco, and sugar-cane. The only industries are potteries, salt-making, and silk-spinning. In 1883-84 the total revenue amounted to £36,476, of which the land-tax contributed £15,967. : yar~~

~~SIALKOT, or SEALKOTE, a district of British India, in the Amritsar division of the lieutenant-governorship of the Punjab, with an area of 1959 square miles. It lies between 31° 44' and 32° 50' N. lat. and 74° 12' and 75° 3' E. long., and is bounded on the N.E. by the Jamu state of Kashmir, on the N.W. by the Chénab, on the E. by Gurdaspur, on the §.E. by the Ravi, and on the W. by Lahore and Gujranwala. Sidlkot is an oblong tract of country occupy- ing the submontane portion of the Rechna (Ravi-Chendb) Doab, and is fringed on either side by a line of fresh alluvial soil, above which rise the high banks that form the limits- of the river-beds. The Degh, which rises in the Jamu Hills, traverses the district parallel to the Ravi, and is likewise fringed by low alluvial soil. The north-eastern boundary of Sidlkot is 20 miles distant from the outer line of the Himdlayas; but about midway between the Ravi and the Chendb is a high dorsal tract, extending from beyond the border and stretching far into the district. Sialkot is above the average of the Punjab in fertility: three-fourths of its area have already been brought under the plough, and a third of the remainder is reported to be capable of~~

~~*improvement. The upper portion of the district is very productive ; but the southern portion, farther re- moved from the influence of the rains, shows a marked decrease of fertility. The district is also watered by numer- ous small torrents ; and several swamps or jhils, scattered over the face of the country, are of considerable value as reservoirs of surplus water for purposes of irrigation. Sialkot is reputed to be healthy; it is free from excessive heat, judged by the common standard of the Punjab; and its average annual rainfall is about 37 inches.*~~

~~*The district possesses a total length of 790 miles of road; and a branch line of the Punjab Northern State Railway, from Wazira- bad in the north-west corner of the district to Sialkot town (28 miles), was opened in January 1884. In 1881 the population was 1,012,148 (males 539,661, females 472,487), of whom Moham- medans numbered 669,712, Hindus 299,311, Sikhs 40,195, and Christians 1535. The only town of any importance is SIALKOT (q.v.). The principal agricultural products of the district arc wheat, barley, rice, maize, millets, pulses, oil-seeds, sugar-cane, cotton, and vegetables. The local commerce centres in the town of Sialkot, which gathers into its bazaars more than half the raw produce of the district. Its surplus stock finds a ready outlet in the markets of Lahore and Amritsar, while the great rivers on either side form natural channels of communication with the lower parts of the Punjab, The native manufactures comprise silk, saddlery, shawl- edging, coarse chintzes, pottery, brass vessels, country cloth, cutlery, and paper. The gross revenue of the district in 1883-84 amounted to £145,531,of which the land-tax contributed £111,713.*~~

~~*The early history of Sialkot is closely interwoven with that of the rest of the Punjab. It was annexed by the British after the Second Sikh War in 1849 ; since then its area has been considerably reduced, assuming its present proportions in 1867. During the mutiny of 1857 the native troops stationed in the cantonments of Sialkot besieged the European residents in the fort, and remained masters of the whole district ; they also plundered the treasury and destroyed all the records.*~~

~~*SIALKOT, the capital and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated in 32° 31'N. lat. and 74° 36' E. long., on the northern*~~

~~*bank of the Aik torrent. It is an extensive city with handsome and well-built streets, and contains several shrines and buildings of historical interest. In 1881 its population was 39,613.*~~

~~*SIAM. The kingdom of Siam embraces the greater part of the Indo-Chinese and part of the Malay peninsula. On the north-west the river Salwin separates it from Karen-nee, southwards thence the river Toon-gyeen ; then, from the Three Pagodas in 18° 15' N. lat. down to the Pak-chan river in 10° N. lat., the principal watershed*~~

~~*1 Compare MALAY PENINSULA, also SIHaNs, Laos, and CAMBODIA.*~~

~~*SIA—*~~

~~*ot a*~~

~~*separates it from Pegu and Tenasserim. Its seaboard on the Bay of Bengal extends from the Pak-chan river to Wellesley Province in 5° 30' N. lat.; but the islands along the coast are British, On the other (east) side of the peninsula the territory extends to 4° 35' N. lat., or, if the vassal state of Pahang is included, to Johore in about 2° 30' N. lat. On the east side of the Gulf of Siam the frontier line (according to the Siamese authorities; cf. Plate IX.) starts from the Bay of Compong Som in 103° 20' E. long., and runs north inland to Mount Pang-chak, thence, after crossing Tonle-sap Lake, east across the Me- kong to the crests of the range which separates the Me-kong valley from Anam. It then follows this range north, in- cluding the country north-east of Luang Prabang, to the frontiers of Tongking. Thence it runs west-south-west, separating the tributary from the independent or Burmese Shan states, and meets the Salwin in about 20° N. lat.*~~

~~*The great natural and economical centre of Siam is the Rivers,*~~

~~*delta of the Me-nam river, which is annually flooded be- tween June and November, the waters attaining their greatest height in August. The inundation covers several thousand square miles, so that the capacity for production of rice, which furnishes two-thirds of the entire exports, is almost unlimited, but is very partially developed both from scarcity of*~~

~~*population and want of means of trans- port, mills, and better cultivation. Irrigation channels are, however, cut above the point where the creeks naturally cease by some of the small Chinese settlers. The bar formed at the mouth of this and of the other converging rivers—the Tachim, the Me-klong, and the Pechaburi on the west, and the Kharayok on the east—extends right across the upper end of the gulf, and has 12 or 13 feet of water at high water. The yearly encroachment of the land on the sea is considerable, and the entire delta from Chein- nat in 15° 20' N. lat. downwards has probably been formed in comparatively recent times. At Bangkok sea-shells are found 20 feet below the surface. The Tachim, the first great branch of the Me-nam, joins its right bank above Chein- nat ; below this the main stream anastomoses naturally or by canals freely, the banks of the different channels being densely peopled. Above Chein-nat the Me-nam continues deep and navigable up to the junction of the Pak-nam Pho, its east branch being formed by several important affluents from the north-east. The west branch of the Me-nam is formed mainly by two affluents, the Me-wang and the Me- ping, which flow down through the west Laos states, some of whose chief towns are situated on their banks. In this more elevated region the hill ranges, with a general north-south direction, ramify widely, rising in places to from 6000 to 8000 feet, while the valleys between them widen out into great fertile plains, having the appearance of former lake-basins—a view which coincides with ancient local traditions. On the west frontier the rapid and broken stream of the Toon-gyeen, whose tributary valleys on the Siamese side produce valuable teak and cinnamon, flows from a mass of laterite, south of which the central range consists of granite, with syenite and quartzose rocks. Its spurs (6000 feet high) extending in every direction, of sandstones, Carboniferous limestones, and other Secondary formations, are clothed with sappan and other forest trees, and contain probably gold, besides argentiferous lead, tin, coal, and iron, the latter in nodules of clay oxide and brown hematite. On the west of the Gulf of Siam, as far south as 11° N. lat., is a dry barren region, enclosed between two ranges which intercept the rainfall on either side, but farther south are luxuriant damp forests containing Hopea (wood-oil), iron-wood, &c., with occasional clearings for cultivation, and many rivers with wide mouths, but be-coming mere streams higher up.*~~

~~*In about 10° 30’ N. lat. the Malay peninsula is narrowed*~~

~~*Isthmus of Kra.*~~

~~*Eastern Siam.*~~

~~—~~

~~_~·~~

~~*Minerals.*~~

~~*Climate.*~~

~~*Fauna.*~~

~~*SIAM*~~

~~*by @ river at either side to a width of only 27 miles, and there a survey for a canal has been made; the maxi- mum height of the section is 250 feet, the mean 130; the amount of excavation is estimated at 84 million cubic feet, mostly through hard rock, and the cost at*~~

~~*£20,000,000. But the approaches by the river-mouths*~~

~~*on both sides are intricate and bad. This has latterly been*~~

~~*the chief route across the peninsula 3 but there are other*~~

~~*breaks in the range which forms the backbone of the*~~

~~*peninsula, and the Buddhist propaganda is said to have Here, however—*~~

~~*Ceylon Island—is the real termination of the great range which comes*~~

~~*crossed by the isthmus of Ligor. perhaps, properly speaking, in Junk*~~

~~*down unbroken from Yun-nan, separating the Salwin and the Me-nam valleys.*~~

~~*East from the plain of the Me-nam, and separating it from the Me-kong valley, a plateau rises with very gradual ascent, clothed to a width of from 30 to 50 miles with forest. From its east side several large and partly navigable rivers flow towards the Me-kong through a sandy*~~

~~*and for the most part arid plain, with stunted growth of*~~

~~*resinous trees and bamboos, brushwood and grass; but on the lower courses of some of these streams are rich irrigated tracts, producing rice, bananas, sugar, maize, and the usual tropical vegetables. The whole region is very unhealthy, especially in the wet season. Travelling would hardly be possible without elephants, of which some are kept in every village. The rocks are mostly calcareous or sandstone, and at the south edge of the plateau corals and recent shells at a slight depth show the former limits of the land. Farther north the mountains of Pechaboun and Lom are rich in magnetic iron ore, argentiferous copper, antimony, and tin. Only the first- named is worked to any extent; and, though by very primitive methods, a large quantity of tools and weapons are manufactured. From the south of the plateau a range Sweeps round to the south-east into Cambodia, outliers from which are the two peaks north and east from Chanta- boun, the latter noted for its emeralds, topazes, and sapphires. Isolated hills, apparently volcanic, occur, as the sacred Mount Phrabat, to the north-east of Ayuthia, where there are hot springs and a famous footprint of the Buddha, and the conical hills at Pechaburi in the south- west, consisting of lavas, scorix, and trachytic rocks, abounding in caverns elaborately fitted as temples.*~~

~~*Tin is extensively distributed, especially throughout the Malay*~~

~~*eninsula, where it is worked at Bang-ta-phang in the province of Cine sia at Chaija and Chaliang, also on the Me-klong, at Kan- buri, and at Rapri. Gold is found pretty extensively in Tringanu and Pahang; there are mines at Bang-ta-phang ; and it is extracted in the Me-kong valley by washing or with mercury. Most of it is consumed in trinkets and presents given by the king,—gold leaf being imported from China for gilding pagodas, &c. Iron abounds in the east, as at Lom and Mulu Prey, antimony at Rapri, lead at Pak-phrek and Suphan, silver in the Me-pik valley. Both the lead and copper ores are often argentiferous.*~~

~~*Much of the natural rainfall in Siam is intercepted by the high lands of the Malacca peninsula and by the mountains on the north- west and north, while the proximity of the Gulf of Siam tempers the heat. The rainfall at Bangkok on an average of ten years is 67°04 inches, of which 50°59 inches fall from May to October in- clusive.1 The mean annual temperature is 80°1, varying from 74°°8 in December to 83°-4 in April; the lowest recorded absolute minimum was 57° in December 1866, the highest recorded absolute maximum 97°°5 in May 1867. The north-east monsoon begins to blow early in November, preceded by a month of variable weather. It has lost half its force in J anuary, and by March strong south and south-south-west winds have set in, the south-west monsoon blowing then steadily and strongly till September. Thus there are three seasons of four months each, — the hot, rainy, and cold.*~~

~~*As to general features, the fauna of Siam is identical with that of Burmah and of southern China, and is one of the richest in the world. Elephants are very numcrous in the south and east, but*~~

~~*1 But on the neighbouring ranges the fall is, at Moulmain 244 inches, at Tavoy 202, at Mergui 185.*~~

~~*: They are as intelligent as the Indian, but usually less highly trained. © White (albino) mon- keys are Sacred, as are the elephant, an iguana which lives in the house and kills rats and other vermin, and the crow ; white ants' hests are respected as resembling pagodas, so that libraries are often kept in tanks to escape the ants' ravages, i*~~

~~*The flora is very similar in character to that of Burmah and has F'lora. much m common with the Chinese, the transition to which is almost insensible. The coast region is characterized by mangroves, pandanus, rattans, and similar palms with long flexible stems, and the middle region by the great rice-fields, the cocoa-nut and areca palms, and the usual tropical plants of culture. In the temperate uplands of the interior, as about Luang Prabang, Hima- layan and Japanese species occur, — oaks, pines, chestnuts, peach and great apple trees, raspberries, honeysuckle, vines, saxifrages, Cichoracex, anemones, and Violacex; there are many*~~

~~*valuable tim- ber trees, — teak, sappan, eagle-wood, wood-oil (Hopea), and other Dipterocarpaccex, Cedrelacex, Picrocarpacex, X ylia, iron-wood, and other dye-woods and resinous trees, these last forming in many dis- tricts a large proportion of the more open forests, with an under-growth of bamboo.*~~

~~*Numerous caravans of cattle, horses, mules, and porters pass Trade, annually from Yun-nan (south-west China) to the northern (Siamese) Shan states, whence many of them proceed via Chieng-mai to Moul- main (Maulmain). They bring from China silk goods, tea, opium,and brass wares, and take back raw cotton, deer and rhinoceros horns, ivory, and saltpetre. The northern states, which are a great breed- ing-ground for cattle and ponies—elephants too are exported into Burmah—send down teak and other produce. The proposed rail- way from Moulmain via Myawaddi to Raheng, and thence to Kiang- sen, 190 miles from the Chinese frontier, is intended to stimulate not only the traffic with China but the local] resources (see address by Mr Holt Hallett, C.E., in London Chamber of Commerce J ournal, 5th May 1885). The eastern states, comprising nearly half the area and a considerable part of the wealth of the kingdom, send much produce via Korat to Bangkok. They produce chiefly China grass (Behmeria nivea), sugar, indigo, silk, cardamoms, cotton, tobacco, sisiet (a substitute for betel), beeswax, benzoin, lac, iron, lime, sul- phur, salt, coarse pottery, mats, hides, tigers, and bones, horns, and tusks of elephants, rhinoceroses, and boars. European cottons and hardware and Chinese goods penetrate everywhere, the chief entre- pots being Nangkoi in the east and Chieng-mai in the west. The eastern plains produce alternate crops of rice and salt. The rains dissolve the salt in the soil and wash it down, making cultivation possible. In the dry season the salt comes up again and is swept up from the surface. Much alcohol is distilled and consumed. Vast quantities (6900 to 7900 tons) of dried fish are prepared at Lake Tonle-sap, and at fisheries on the coast.? Although silk has been known from remote antiquity, it is produced exclusively by the Lao communities settled throughout the country,—the chief centres being Korat and Battampong. The export in 1884 was 325 cwts., Exports valued at £19,890; but the best quality hardly reaches the Bangkok and im- market, its natural bright yellow colour making it difficult to dye. ports. There is, however, not much of it, the demand for the better kinds*~~

~~being supplied from Cambodia. But for the apathy and indolence of the people the production might be largely increased ; the spinning and reeling apparatus too are very primitive, though some beautiful cloths are woven at Chieng-mai. Much of the trade in teak and cattle is worked by Burmese ; otherwise almost all the trade of the country is in Chinese hands. In some of the remoter districts barter is resorted to, beeswax, salt, lac, and bars of iron being mediums of ex- change ; but generally silver is used, and sometimes Indian rupees. Civilization increases in the eastern districts as the frontier of China is approached. In 1884 419 vessels cleared from Bangkok with cargoes valued at £27,170; of these 240 (tonnage, 151,984) were British. In addition, there were 143 junks (tonnage, 3350). The total value of the exports was £2, 262,240, rice being the prin- cipal item, £1,444,200. The imports were valued at £1,044, 255, the chief items being—grey and white shirtings, £161,997; opium (704 chests), £81,410; chowls, z.¢., shawls, a cotton cloth from Bombay, £105,264. In 1885 the exports were valued at £1,907,006 and the imports at £1,380,233. The exports being in excess of the imports, the difference is paid in Mexican dollars, which are melted down and re-coined,—the silver coinage being the standard of weight.~~

~~The money and weights seem to be the same as the Old Cam- Coinage bodian. A copper coinage has replaced the cowries, and there is and also a silver coinage, viz., the fuang=74 cents, the salung=15 cents, weights. the bat or tikal=60 cents or half a crown, 5 tikals=3 Mexican dollars. From the tikal upwards these coins arc also used as measures of weight. Thus 1 tikal weighs 15 grammes or 231 grains, 4 tikals=1 tamlung, 20 tamlungs=1 chang or catty, or two Chinese catties,=3-2 Ib. There are a few gold coins, but not~~

~~? During the floods vast quantities of fish swarm into the rice- grounds and are caught when the water recedes, furnishing a valuable and abundant food-supply.~~

~~Taxa- tion.~~

~~Adminis- tration.~~

~~Laws.~~

~~in general circulation. in silver.~~

~~The land-tax is fixed at ten per cent., the first person who clears land being entitled to hold it. The tax ou garden produce and on fruit trees is higher, but is fixed at intervals of some fifteen years, or at the beginning of a reigu. There is a corvée of four months in the year, to which all classes except the nobles and the priesthood are theoretically liable, but it may be commuted for a poll-tax of from 6 to 18 tikals, payable either directly in money to Government or to the feudal superior, for all except the nobility are thus depend- ent on a superior; in the provinces it is payable in kind through the governor. A smaller amount, 14 tikals, is payable by masters for their slaves. But there are some considerate exceptions, viz., persous over sixty or under eighteen years of age, or who have three sons paying the tax, and cases of incurable illness. If a special demand for labour be made there is exemption from poll-tax for that year. The Chinese only pay 44 tikals triennially, and Euro- peans are exempted. There is a tax on houses, on amusements (theatricals, dancers, &c.), and on fishing-boats, nets, and other tackle. There isa royalty on tin, and the sale of opium and of alcohol is a Government monopoly, farmed to Chinese. Three per cent. is levied by treaty on British and other forcign imports, export duties on a great number of raw articles, and inland or transit dues on certain tropical products. The revenue from all these sources is estimated at 80,000 catties (£800,000).~~

~~The head of the administration is the king, with five ministers,— viz., of war, foreign affairs, northern provinces, agriculture, justice, —and some thirty councillors. The office known to Europeans as ‘ second king” (Siamese, wang-na, lit., “front palace”) is difficult to define, as the share taken in government by him depends very much on his individual character. IIe has a palace and an official establishment, and a few soldiers at his orders. The country is divided into forty-one provinces, excluding the Laos and Malay states, and the Cambodian provinces. The provinces are of different grades, and their governors have very different degrees of authority. Speaking generally, they have cognizance of all civil cases,—though there is an appeal to the capital (which generally reaches~~

~~its destina- tion, as the governor's council act as spies),—and of minor criminal cases. The graver crimes, as murder and dacoity, involving a question of life or death committed in Siam proper, are referred to a special department in the capital. Villages are governed by a head-man (kamnan, amp'hon, or nakhon), sometimes with a small salary, chosen usually in accordance with the popular wish, and dependent on the provincial capital. The Siamese mandarins in the Lao provinces do not oppress overmuch, nor do the native chiefs, since their power depends on their popularity. Besides the lower grades there are always four principal officials, the chao, lord or king, the wparat, rachavangsa, and rachabutr (the first title of Chinese, the others of Indian origin). These are hereditary in one or two families, any disputed succession being referred to Bangkok. The Siamese law is recognized, but the national "customs" are much regarded, and in ordinary cases followed. Civil and criminal pro- cesses alike end usually ina fine. Besides the capitation tax, there is a duty on rice, and cach state pays tribute to Bangkok. The tie between Bangkok and the Malay states is slighter, being con- fined usually to interference in cases of disputed succession, and to a triennial tribute of a gold or silver tree or flower. The rules of procedure in Siam are very strict, but theoretically there is no hereditary rank.~~

~~The laws of Siam are ancient, though not very full or complete, a great part having been lost at the sack of Ayuthia. in 1753. Generally speaking, they are referable to an Indian origin, especi- ally as regards religious, moral, and ceremonial ordinances ; the civil and criminal codes bear the impress of Chinese influence. There are several digests of the law, some centuries old, under sys- tematic headings, ¢.g., of the civil law, real and personal property, inheritance, ranks, evidence and ordeal, marriage, education, parental authority, slavery, money, weights and measures, contracts, and of the penal code, crimes, punishments, police, prisons. The king is absolute, but claims no absolute rights over the land. Great attention is paid to precedents. Among the peculiarities of the system are the employment of ordeal—by diving or chewing rice, &c.—in the absence of witnesses, and the rejection of the evidence of certain classes, viz., drunkards, gamblers, virgins, executioners, beggars, persons who caunot read, and bad characters. When a crime is committed the family and even neighbours of the accused can be held responsible for his~~

~~*appearance. The property of in- testates gocs to the king, of an intestate priest to his monastery ; but the neglect of the heir to perform funeral rites renders his claim to property invalid,—a curious relic of HIndu feeling. Another trace of this may be found in the hereditary professions, though their doctrinal significance as castes has disappeared. The laws have many curious and not inequitable provisions about slavery (see below), e.g., if a temporary (debtor) slave has undergone punish- ment or suffering for his master, his debt shall be remitted wholly or in part; but, if hc isa slave absolutely, his master is not legally liable. And there are well-defined rules as to non-fulfilment of*~~

~~*Their value is sixteen times their weight*~~

~~*SIAM*~~

~~*contract with a slave, his maintenance during famine, injury by accidents, employment as a substitute in war, &c. Slaves who are allowed to become priests or nuns are free.*~~

~~*All men are liable to serve in war; but only from 4000 to 5000, Ar*~~

~~*taken from classes specially at the disposal of the war de artment, and*~~

~~*are regularly trained under European officers. The capital and sur- rounding forts are garrisoned, and there is a body of palace guards, The fleet consists of some twenty men-of-war and armed steamers and 500 junks.*~~

~~*The population is estimated by the Siamese Government at Popula- 6,000,000 for Siam proper, 3,000,000 Siamese Laos, and 1,000,000 tion.*~~

~~*Malays ; others estimate it variously at from 6,000,000 to 8,000,000. There are besides perhaps from 1,500,000 to 2,000,000 Chinese. In lower Siam the population is clustered along the rivers and canals ; in the diversified hill and plain country to the north it is distributed more generally. In character the Siamese arc mild, paticnt, and submissive to authority. They are hospitable to strangers and to the poor ; quarrels, violent crimes, and suicide are rare. But they are idle and apathetic ;*~~

~~*much time is devoted to amusements, as — festivals and processions, boat races, games, cock and dog fighting, and even combats between fish. The position of women is good, although girls can be sold as wives. The Chinese population are energetic and industrious, but very independent, and sometimes give tronble, so that their increasing numbers and organization through their secret societies are a source of anxiety. The Siamese are of medium height, well formed, with olive complexion, darker than Chinese, but fairer and handsomer than Malays, eyes well shaped, nose slightly flattened, lips a little prominent, the face wide across the cheek bones, top of forehead pointed and chin short, thus giving the face a lozenge shape, beard scanty and with hairs pulled out, hair of head coarse and black. But intermarriage during many ages with Peguans, Laos, and Cambodians (though in many cases they and their descendants keep themselves apart), as well as of slaves from the aboriginal races, has produced much variety of type. Besides the Karens, who are the remnant of a more widely extended people, and who are found on the borders of Siam and Burmah and throughout the mountains of north and west Siam, the Lawas in the same region, and the Khongs, a settled people inland from the north-eastern angle of the Gulf of Siam, many other tribes of the earlier inhabitants are found occupying the whole of the forest region on both sides of the Mc-kong, and known to their different neighbours by various names, all probably mean- ing simply "man," or "savage," as Kha, Moi, Pnom, Lolo. These eastern tribes more or less resemble eachother. They are shy and timid, some having no chiefs or social organization, and these are preyed on or hunted down as slaves by their more civil- ized fellows in'combination with the Laos. One division of these tribes, the Kouis (the name recalls the savage '"'Gueos" of the Portuguese), amalgamates readily with the Laos and in some pro- vinces forms the bulk of the population. They live by cultivating rice, by collecting honey, beeswax, and resin, or by the chase. Their women are absolutely free before marriage, but adultery is punished with death. They worship ancestral and other spirits and can hardly be called Buddhists. Yet with a few exceptions these earlier peoples are by no means inferior in appearance to the Thai or Siamese, but often the contrary; some ethnologists assign them a Caucasian origin, and identify them with the brown Polynesian race,*~~

~~*Slavery is general, but consists mainly of bondage for debt, a Slavery.*~~

~~*debtor being able to sell himself, wife, or children, or nephews or nieces, —their freedom being recoverable on payment of the debt. But the present enlightened ruler has set his face against the practice, and decreed its abolition, except in the Laos provinces and in the eastern states. The market is further recruited, first by the sale of offenders, who have the option between death and slavery, and secondly by slave-hunting raids, made in combination with the Anamites, on the villages of the wilder aborigines. These are dis- posed of on the spot or else to dealers from Cambodia or Siam proper.*~~

~~*BANGKOK (q.v.) was established as the capital in 1782 after the Towns.*~~

~~*sack of Ayuthia by the Burmese. Its population was estimated at about 300,000 in 1886. Ayuthia, now called Krung-krao, the famous capital founded in 1351 and half destroyed by the Burmese in 1767, was a generation ago the second city of the kingdom. It is still im- portant as the entrepot of the trade of south Laos. Many junks and fishermen come up from Bangkok. The modern town is chiefly on the water. In its most prosperous days in the 16th century it was three leagues in circumference, and coutained distinct quarters for foreigners of different nationalities—Chinese, Peguans, Malays, Malabars, Japanese, and Portuguese. Prominent among its great buildings is the pyramidal structure called the Golden Mount, some 400 feet high, surmounted by a dome and spire ; but most of them are now crumbling away into great broken masses of sculp- tured masonry, statues, and spires, half buried under the vegetation of the tropics. Chantaburi, near the Cambodian frontier, the second port of the kingdom, is noted for its shipbuilding and fisheries, and has an active export trade from the south-eastern provinces. There are considerable Chinese and Burmese elements in the popula-*~~

~~*Eduea- tion.*~~

~~*Arts.*~~

~~*SIAM*~~

~~*tion, which in many of these southern towns is much mixed. Paknam, the port of Bangkok, 3 miles from the river's mouth, is fortified, as is Paklat Lang, 5 miles higher up, which is inhabited chiefly by Peouans. Various canals extend hence across the delta towards the- Me-klong. Near its mouth is the town of Me-klong, peopled by Chinese merchants, fishermen, and gardeners, HIgher up the river, at the foot of the hills, is Prapri, peopled by descendants of Cambodian captives. Pechaburi, a little to the south, at the foot of a range some 1500 feet high, where the king has a palace, is built after English designs; its inhabitants are Peguans. Petriu, ou the east side of the Gulf of Siam, on the Kharayok river, has sugar plantations cultivated by Chinese. At Bangplasoi, at the mouth of the river, are extensive fisheries. Raheng, some 300 miles up the Me-nam, possesses docks, and there a good many teak ships are built, In the Lao or Shan country to the north Chieng-mai (Zimmé) is the most important tributary state. Its capital, Chieng-mai, the Jan- gomai of early European travellers, is the principal town of that region, with broad streets of good teak-built houses, surrounded with gardens, numerous pagodas, markets, and a large population, It lies in the wide fertile valley of the Me-ping, and is a great entrepot of trade from Bangkok and south-west China (Yuu-nan and Ssmao), which finds its natural outlet thence to the Bay of Bengal. The rice, timber, &c., of the districts through which this route passes are considerable. Lapong, in the same valley, and Lagong, on a neighbouring tributary, are Lao towns of less importance and subordinate to Chieng-mai, as were formerly Nan and Pre, fertile teak – producing valleys to the east. Kiang- hai and Kiang-sen, farther north, on the Me-kong, were old Lao capitals of note (see SHANS), as was Luang Prabang, with its charm-*~~

~~*'ing capital, which, like Chieng-mai, still retains some administra-*~~

~~*tive independence. The extensive fertile and partly wooded plains to the north and east support great herds of cattle. With Vien- chang, a little lower down the river, Luang Prabang held its own for centuries against both Siam and Burmah. On the destruction of Vicn-chang in 1828, Nangkoi, 25 miles lower down, increased in size and importance, and now has an extensive trade in English and Chinese goods, This district might perhaps without much difficulty be opened up by an easy route starting*~~

~~*from Lakhon, only 180 miles distant from the sea. One of the most important provincial centres is the district of Korat, on the eastern plateau. The country is a series of fertile oases separated by tracts of waterless forest, contain- ing good timber, and full of game. The town is fortified, and has about thirty pagodas and some well-built houses, belonging chiefly to the Chinese merchants. Cart roads converge hither with the traffic both of north Laos and of the Cambodian provinces south and east, the latter passing up the fertile Moun valley on its way to Bangkok. The whole region between the Dang-rek Mountains and the Moun river is full of splendid ruins, attesting the former Cambodian influence as far at least as 16° north, to which limit, therefore, the southward movement of the Laos may be supposed to have reached at the date of these buildings. The principal ruins of the district are found at Korat, Bassac, Phimai, and Ku- khan. The character of this wonderful series of buildings, the greatest of which, those of Angkor, are on Siamese territory, have been touched on under Campopra (q.v.), to which they properly belong ; but it may be mentioned here that the earliest inscription yet found, relating to the erection of a Sivaite linga, is interpreted as belonging to 589 saka = 667 A.D., though another, undated, refers to three generations earlier. The earliest references indisputably Buddhist that have been found are three centuries later than this. With the exception of a few schools in the capital, education is entirely in the hands of the priests, the boys going to the temples between the ages of eight or nine and thirteen. The teaching is elementary, and, by the precepts of Buddhism, must be gratuitous, the pupils repaying it by menial services in house or boat or garden, or by presents of food. At thirteen the boy enters on a novitiate, which lasts till the age of twenty-one ; but, if not inclined for study, he may give it up after three or four months,—this tem- porary consecration symbolizing a separation from the world. At twenty-one, if so disposed, he may enter the priesthood ; but there are no perpetual vows. Girls are taught, if at all, only at home, by parents or brothers. There are no educational endowments ; but a certain number of persons occupy themselves with literary studies, as history, astrology, or alchemy, with which medicine is more or less combined. Medical practice, indeed, comprises a good deal of magic; but there is also considerable knowledge of medicinal herbs, and ancient medical works were written in Pali. Inocula- tion was long ago introduced by the*~~

~~*Chinese, and vaccination lately by European missionaries. Women after childbirth are exposed for some time to the heat of a strong fire, the result being sometimes fatal. . Skill is shown in the casting of large metal statues 50 feet high or more, in repoussé work in gold and silver, in enamelling on metals, and in gold and silver tissue work. Their drawing is spirited, but strictly conventional. The system of music is elabo- rate, but with no written notation. There is no harmony, but all the instruments of the orchestra play in unison, breaking off into*~~

~~*variations and then returnin g to the air. They are proud of their national music, and both men and women play and sing generally.*~~

~~*. Their instruments arc— a harmonicon with wooden or metal bars*~~

~~*struck with a hammer, a two-stringed and a three-stringed violin, flutes, drums, and 'pipes, also the Lao "organ," the tones of which, produced by metal tongues in the pipcs, are very effective. –*~~

~~*The Buddhism of Siam is the same as that of Ceylon, with slight Religion,*~~

~~*doctrinal differences, much insisted on, from the Burmese, It is,*~~

~~*it The religious re- d by King Phra Mongkut, himself for many years a*~~

~~*The former attach more weight to the obser- vance of the canon than to meditation, 'he other sect is again divided into two parties, the one holding more to meditation, the other to the study of the scriptures. The only Brahmanical temple remaining in the country is at Bangkok, and its priests are said to be of Indian descent. Brahmans, however, are constantly employed in divination, in fixing the fortunate days for warlike expeditions, business transactions, marriages, and the like, and in arranging festivals, Buddhism is corrupted by a general worship or propitiation of nats or phees (spirits or demons) ; superstition in the more remote districts constitutes practically the only reli- gion. The belief in*~~

~~these spirits informs and affects every depart- ment of life. There are local earth divinities to whom temples or shrines are erected. Others with human or animal form dwell in the water. Others cause children to sicken and die. Others wander and deceive as ignes fatui. By certain spells men can become tigers or were-wolves. Bodies of the dead are sometimes possessed, and they are carried out not by the door but by an extemporized opening, so that they may not be able to find their way back. The numerous offerings and honours paid to' these spirits lead to drunkenness and to 'lling of animals in sacrifice, Phallic worship prevails to a considerable extent, notwithstanding the efforts of the king to put it down.~~

~~The numerous public festivals are partly connected with religion, Festivals,~~

~~but are accompanied with much rejoicing and amusement. Among them are the lunar and the fixed New-Year's Day, and the festival of agriculture, when the plough is guided by the minister, the ladies of the court following and sowing seeds, which are picked up by the people to add to their usual sowings. At the ceremony at which the king and his ministers pledge themselves, the former to administer impartial justice, the latter to be faithful and loyal in their service, the oath is taken by drinking water, and the meet- ing of the king and nobles, with all the attendant paraphernalia, forms a gorgeous spectacle, the day terminating with fireworks and processions of boats. On the king's state visits to the wats there are festive processions of boats and troops. Other festivals are at the beginning and end of the rainy season. When the floods begin to subside there is a great water procession, and the priests command the waters to retire. Even the cutting of the kin g's hair is madc an occasion for rejoicing. In every family the cutting, at the age of twelve or thirteen, of the tuft left on the top of the head is a ereat ceremony ; itis not practised, except by way of imitation, among the Laos. The head is considered very sacred (this is a characteristic Papuan notion); no one must touch it, nor may it be raised above that of a superior, as in a carriage or boat. The funeral ceremonies of a prince or great man, often delayed for some months after death, are also attended by elaborate feasting, dancing, and other amuse- ments in temporary buildings erected~~

~~*for the purpose. The dead, with the exception of the poor, whose bodies arc given to the vul- tures and wild beasts, and women who die in childbirth, are usually burned within the wats, the ashes being preserved, or mixed with lime to plaster the sacred walls. A rich man will often bequeath a limb to the birds and beasts.*~~

~~*The Siamese month is lunar, and, as a Junar month contains 294*~~
~~*Calendar.*~~

~~*days, they give the odd months 29 and the even 30. This gives*~~

~~*History.*~~

~~*854*~~

~~*a year of 354 days, and to make up the deficiency they intercalate seven or eight months in nineteen years, and add besides an occa- sional day to the seventh month. The years are denoted by a cycle of twelve names (of animals) taken in decades, so that every sixtieth year the year of a given name returns to the same place in the decade. The system resembles the Indian cycle of sixty years, but it is derived from China, where it dates from 2637 B.c. Two eras are in use, the Putta Sakarat or Buddhist, used in reli- gious matters, which commences 5438 B.c., and the civil era or Chula Sakarat (7.¢., little era), said to commemorate the establish- ment of Buddhism in 638 A.p. The ancient Aryan inscriptions usually employ the Saka (Salivahana) era, dating from 79 A.D. History.—The name "Siam" has been usually derived from a Malay word, sajam, "brown"; but this is mere conjecture. They and the Shans both call themselves Thai (Shan Zaz), 7.e., "free," and the Peguans call them Shan or Shian, which seems to be a translation of "Thai" and an allied word, as are perhaps Ahom= Assam, and Sam (Assamese for Shan). The obsolete Siamese word is Siem and the Chinese Sien-lo,—the Sien being, according to them, a tribe which came from the north about 1341 and united with the Lo- hoh, who had previously occupied the shores of the gulf, and were probably Shans, The Siamese call the Shans Thai-nyai, " Great Thai," perhaps as having preceded them, and themselves That-not or "Little Thai." They are probably therefore closely related, though this is disputed by De Rosny and others; but the inferior physique of the Siamese may be*~~

~~*explained as due to intercourse with Malays and other southern races and to their more enervating climate. Meanwhile for many centuries before the southward move above referred to the entire south as well as south-east of the Indo-Chinese peninsula' was Cambodian. The town of Lapong is said to have been founded in 575, and the half-mythical king, Phra Ruang, to have freed the Siamese from the Cambodian yoke and founded Sang- kalok, on the upper waters of the Me-nam, in the following century. Buddhism is said to have been introduced in his time, but Indian influences had penetrated the country both from the north and from the south long before this. Other Lao towns were built about the 7th century, and during the following centuries this branch of the race gradually advanced southwards, driving the Karens, Lawas, and other tribes into the hills, and encroaching on what liad hitherto been Cambodian territory. Their southward progress may indeed almost be traced by their successive capitals, several of which are clustered on the Me-nam within a short distance of each other, viz., Phitsalok, Sukkothai, and Sangkalok on the eastern branch, Nakhon Savan at the junction, and Kamphong-pet, the immediate precursor of Ayuthia, on the western branch. A Sukkothai inscrip- tion of about 1284 states that the dominions of King Rama Kamheng extended across the country from the Me-kong to Pechaburi, and thence down the Gulf of Siam to Ligor; aud the Malay annals say that the Siamese had penetrated to the extremity of the peninsula before the first Malay colony from Menangkabu founded Singapore, i.¢., about 1160. The ancestors of the Siamese were then on the western branch of the Me-nam, and in 1351, under the famous Phaya Uthong (afterwards styled Phra Rama Thibodi, and prob- ably of a Shan family) moved down from Kamphong-pet, where they had been for five generations, to Chaliang ; and, being driven thence, it is said, by a pestilence, they established themselves at Ayuthia. This king's sway extended to Moulmain, Tavoy, Tenasserim, and the whole Malacca peninsula (where among the traders from the West Siam was known as Sornau, 7.¢., Shahr-i-nau or Newtown, probably in allusion to Ayuthia,—Yule's Afarco Polo, ii, 260), and was felt even in Java. This is corroborated by Javan records, which describe a " Cambodian" invasion about 1340; but Cambodia was itself invaded about this time by the Siamese, who took Angkor and held it for a time, carrying off 90,000 captives. The great southward expansion here recorded, whether of one*~~

~~*or of two allied Thai tribes, confirms in a remarkable way the Chinese statement above mentioned, and was probably a conseqnence or a part of the great contemporaneous activity of the more northern Shan kingdom of Mau. The wars with Cambodia continued with varying success for some 400 years, but Cambodia gradually lost ground and was finally shorn of several provinces, her sovereign falling entirely under Siamese influence. This, however, latterly beeame displeasing to the French, now in Coehin China, and Siam has been obliged to reeognize the proteetorate forced on Cambodia by that power. Vigorons attaeks were also made during this period on the Lao states to the north-west and nortli-east, followed by vast deportation of the people, and Siamese supremacy was pretty firmly established in Chieng-mai and its dependencies by the end of the 18th century, and over the great eastern capitals, Luang Prabang and Vien-chang, about 1828. During the 15th and 16th centuries Siam was frequently invaded by the Burmese and Peguans, who, attracted probably by the great wealth of Aynthia, besieged it more than once without success, the defenders being aided by Portuguese mercenaries, till about 1555, when the city was taken and Siam reduced to dependence. From this condition, however, it was raised a few years later by the great conqueror and national hero Phra Naret, who after subduing Laos and Cambodia invaded*~~

~~*SLAM*~~

~~*Pegu, which was utterly overthrown in the next century by his successors. But after the civil wars of the 18th century the Burmese, having previously taken Chieng-mai, which appealed to Siam for help, entered Tenasserim and took Mergui and Tavoy in 1764, and then advaneing simultaneously from the north and the west captured and destroyed Ayuthia after a two years' siege (1767).*~~

~~*The intercourse between France and Siam began about 1580 under Phra Narain, who, by the adviee of his minister, the Cephalonian adventurer Constantine Phaulcon, sent an embassy to Louis XIV. When the return mission arrived, the eagerness of the ambassador for the king's conversion to Christianity, added to the intrigues of Phaulcon with the Jesuits with the supposed intention of establish- ing a French supremacy,*~~

~~led to the death of Phauleon, the persecu- tion of the Christians, and the cessation of all intercourse with France. An interesting episode was the active intercourse, chiefly commercial, between the Siamese and Japanese Governments from 1592 to 1632. Many Japanese settled in Siam, where they were much employed. They were dreaded as soldiers, and as individuals commanded a position resembling that of Europeans in most Eastern countries. The jealousy of their increasing influence at last led to a massacre, and to the expulsion or absorption of the survivors. Japan was soon after this, in 1636, closed to foreigners ; but trade with Siam was carried on at all events down to 1745 through Dutch and Chinese and occasional English traders. In 1752 an embassy came from Ceylon, desiring to renew the ancient friendship and to discuss religious matters. During recent agitations of the Buddhist priests against Christianity in Ceylon they received much active sympathy from Siam. After the fall of Ayuthia a great general, Phaya Takh Sin, collected the remains of the army and restored the fortunes of the kingdom, establishing his capital at Bangkok ; but, becoming insane, he was put to death, and was succeeded by another successful general, Phaya Chakkri, who founded the present dynasty. Under him Tenasserim was invaded and Tavoy held for the last time by the Siamese in 1792, though in 1825, taking advan- tage of the Burmese difficulty with England, they bombarded some of the towns on that coast. The supremacy of China is indicated by occasional missions sent, as on the founding of a new dynasty, to Peking, to bring back a seal and acalendar. But the Siamese now repudiate this supremacy, and have sent neither mission nor tribute for thirty years, and yet their trading vessels are admitted to the Chinese free ports, like those of any other friendly power. The late sovereign, Phra Paramendr Maha Mong- kut, was a very accomplished man, an enlightened reformer, and devoted to science; his death indeed was caused by fatigue and exposure while observing an eclipse. Many of his prede- cessors, too, were men of different fibre from the ordinary Oriental sovereign. Chao Dua, the adversary of Phanlcon, went about seek- ing pugilistic encounters. He is reported to have been a crnel tyrant and debauchee and a keen sportsman ; but the offence given to his subjects in the latter character and the evil reports of the persecuted French missionaries may have unduly blackenced his reputation.~~

~~*Of European nations the Portugnese first established intercourse with Siam. This was in 1511, after the conquest of Malacea by D'Albuquerque, and the intimacy lasted over a century, the tra- dition of their greatness having hardly yet died out. They were supplanted gradually in the 17th century by the Dutch, whose intercourse also lasted for a similar period; but they have left no traces of their presence as the Portuguese always did in these countries to a greater extent than any other people. English traders were in Siam very early in the 17th century ; there was a friendly interchange of letters between James I. and the king of Siam, who had some Englishmen in his service, and, when the ships visited '*Sia"' (which was "as great a city as London") or the queen of Patani, they were hospitably received and accorded privileges, — the important items of export being, as now, tin, varnish, deer- skins, and "' precious drugs." Later on, the East India Company's servants, jealous at the employment of Englishmen not in their service, attacked the Siamese, which led to a massacre of the English at Mergui in 1687; and the factory at Ayuthia was abandoned in 1688. A similar attack is said to have been made in 1719 by the governor of Madras. After this the trade was neglected. Penang, a dependency of Quedah, was occupied in 1786, and in the 19th century the stagnation of trade led to the missions of Crawford (1822), Burney (1826), and Sir J. Brooke (1850); but they were not very cordially received, and effected little. Sir J. Bowring's treaty in 1856, however, put matters on a different footing, and Europeans can now reside in Siam, buy or rent houses, and lease land. The export and import duties are also fixed, and there is a vice-consular court at Chieng-mai, with appeal to the consular court at Bangkok, held from time to time by a judge from Singapore, with which place there are extradition arrangements. Of late years the north-eastern provinces have been harassed by invasions of the Lu and Ho, peoples of Chinese extraction, their incursions extend- ing down the Me-kong as far as Nong-kai.*~~

~~*Besides works referred to at the end of article Spans, the chief authorities are La Loubére, Description du Royaume de Siam, 1714 (the best of the old*~~

~~*Lan- guage,*~~

~~*writers) ; Pallegoix, Royawme Thai ou Siam, Paris, 1854; Crawford, Embassy to Siam; Bowring, The Kingdom and People of Siam, London, 1857 ; Bastian, Die Volker des dstlichen Asiens, vols. i., ili., Leipsic, 1867 ; Garnier, Voyage ad' Explora- tion en Indo-Chine, Paris, 1873; Mouhot, Travels in Indo-China, &e. 3; Journ. of Ind. Archip., vols. i., v.; Gréhan, Le Royawme de Siam, Paris, 1870; Réclus Nouvelle Géographie Universelle, vol. viii. ; Bagge, Report on the Settlement of the Boundary between Siam and British Burmah, 1868 ; Satow, Notes of the Intercourse between Japan and Siam in the 17th Century ; Aynionnier, in Excursions et Recon- natssances, Nos. 20-22 (Saigon); Consular Reports, 1884-85. (C. T.)*~~

~~*Language and Literature.*~~

~~*The Siamese language is spoken over the whole of Siam proper. In the Malay peninsula the boundary-line comes down on the west coast nearly as far as Quedah and Perlis, and includes also Junk Ceylon, while on the east coast the population is mainly Siamese as far as Ligor inclusive, and also in Singora Siamese appears to be the ruling language. Its boundary towards Burmah, the Shan and Laos states, and Anam and Cambodia cannot be defined so precisely. There are also in the north-east a number of wild tribes who speak languages of their own. The name by which the Siamese themselves call their language is phdsd thai, or "language of the freemen"; and it probably dates from the period when the Siamese inade themselves independent of Cambodian rule in the 12th century. The Shan tribes, whose language (with those of the Ahom, Khamti, and Laos) is closely akin to Siamese, also use the term tai (only with the unaspirated ¢) for their race and language.*~~

~~*Both in Shan and Siamese the system of tones, which is one of the main features of all the languages of Indo-China, has attained its greatest development. But, while in Shan the tones are not marked in the written language, in Siamese there are distinct signs to denote at least four of the five simple tones (the even tone not being marked) ; and there is further a classification of the con- sonants into three groups, in each of which certain tones pre- dominate. It is always the initial consonant of a word*~~

~~that indi- cates, either by its phonetic power or by the tonic accent super-added or by a combination of the two, the tone in which the word is to be uttered, so that, c.g., a word beginning with a letter of the second class in which the even tone is inherent, and which has the mark of the ascending tone over it, is to be pronounced with the descending tone.! The difficulties caused to a European student of the spoken language by the tones are increased by the greatly expanded vowel-system. In addition to the short and long, there are shortest vowels, sets of open and closed vowels, &c., and a large number of vowel combinations. Owing to the introduction of the Indian consonantal system and the incorpora- tion in it of many letters to express certain sounds peculiar to Siamese, the number of consonants has been swelled to forty-three ; but, while many of these are only used in words adopted from the Sanskrit and Pali, Siamese utterance knows no more than twenty ; kh, g, gh are all pronounced as kh; similarly ph, b, bh as ph, &c., —the language having a predilection for hard letters, especially aspirates. The only compound letters at the beginning of words are combinations of hard letters with J, r, 2, y, while the finals are confined in pronunciation to k, t, p, » (ng), 2, m. This causes a considerable discrepancy between the spelling of words (especially loan words) and their pronunciation. Thus samparn is pronounced sombun, bhashd—phdsd, nagara—nakhon, saddharma—satham, kuSala—kuson, sesha—set, vdra—van, Magadha—Makhot. The foreign ingredients in Siamese are principally Sanskrit, mostly in a corrupted form. The importation of Pali words dates from about the 12th century, when, the country having shaken off the yoke of Cambodia, a religious intercourse was established between Siam and Ceylon. Besides these, there are some Khmér (Cam- bodian) and Malay words.? Exclusive of those foreign importa- tions, Siamese is a monosyllabic language in which neither the form nor the accent or tone of a word determines the part of speech to which it belongs. Homonymous words abound and are only distinguished from one another by the tones. Compare Jan, "white"; dan, "to relate"; lan, "to flatter"; lén, "to smooth" ; lan, "relation." Words are unchangeable and incapable of inflexion. The Siamese are fond of joining two words the second of which is either purely synonymous to or modifies the sense of the first, or is only a jingling addition. There is no article, and no distinction of gender, number, or case. These, if it is at all necessary to denote them, are expressed by~~

~~*explanatory words after the respective nouns; only the dative and ablative are denoted by subsidiary words, which precede the nouns, the nominative being marked by its position before, the objective by its position after, the verb, and the genitive (and also the adjective) by its place after the noun it qualifies. Occasionally, however, auxiliary nouns serve that purpose. Words like "mother," "son," "water" are often employed in forming compounds to express ideas for which the Siamese have no single words; e.g., lak cdén, "the son of hire," a labourer; mé mii, "the mother of the hand," the thumb. The use of class words with nuinerals obtains in Siamese as it does in Chinese, Burmese, Anamese,*~~

~~*1 See A. Bastian, 'Ueber die siamesischen Laut- und Ton-Accente," in Monats- ber. d. k. Akad. d. Wissensch. zu Berlin, June 1867.*~~

~~*2 See Pallegoix, Gramm., pp, 155-156, and Van der Tunk, Bataksch Leesboek, vol. iv. pp. 127-133, 208-214. :*~~

~~*855*~~

~~*Malay, and many other Eastern languages. As in these, so in Siamese the personal pronouns are mostly represented by nouns expressive of the various shades of superior or lower rank according to Eastern etiquette. The verb is, like the noun, perfectly colour- less, — person, number, tense, and mood being indicated by auxiliary words only when they cannot be inferred from the context. — Such auxiliary words are yd, "to be," "to dwell" (present) ; dai, "to have," 7én, '""end" (past); cd, "also" (future) ; the first and third follow, the second and fourth precede, the verb. fai, "to give" (prefixed), often indicates the subjunctive. As there are compound nouns, so there are compound verbs ; thus, cg., pat, "to go," is*~~

~~*Joined to a transitive verb to convert it into an intransitive or*~~

~~*neuter ; and thik, "*to touch," and tong, "to be obliged," serve to form a sort of passive voice. The number of adverbs, single and compound, is very large. The prepositions mostly consist of nouns. The order of the words in a single sentence is subject, verb, object. All attributes (adjectives, genitive, adverbs) follow the word to which they are*~~

~~*subordinated. The following simple sentence may serve as an example of Siamese construction and diction ; m*~~

~~*(time) dn (read) nansii (book) né (this) Zé (end, done) con (should)*~~

~~*Jak-vai (entrust) ki (to) phiienban (neighbours) had (give, cause) khan*~~

~~*(they) dn (read), ¢.¢., "when you have read this book, please give it to your neighbours that they may read it."*~~

~~*The current Siamese characters are derived from the more monu- mental Cambodian alphabet, which again owes its origin to the alphabet of the inscriptions, an offshoot of the character found on the stone monuments of southern India in the 6th and 8th cen- turies. The sacred books of Siam are still written in the Cambodian character, and some have occasionally an interlinear translation in the current Siamese hand.*~~

~~*The study of the Siamese language was initiated in Europe by La Loubére (1687), from whom Dr J. Leyden ("The Languages and Literature of the Indo- Chinese Nations," in Asiatic Researches, vol. x. pp. 158-289, reprinted in Ais- cellaneous Papers on Indo-China, vol. i., 1886, pp. 84-171) has derived much of his information. Leyden's Comparative Vocabulary of the Barma, Malayu, and That Languages appeared in 1810. The first grammar of the language we owe to James Low, Calcutta, 1828. Very useful Grammatical Notices of the Siamese Language, by the Rev. J. Taylor J ones, appeared at Bangkok in 1842. The Grammatica Lingue, Thai of J. B. Pallegoix, Bangkok, 1850, was followed in 1854 by his great Dictionarium in Siamese, Latin, French, and English. An analytical account of the language was attempted by Ad. Bastian in his Sprach- vergleichende Studien, 1870, pp. 191-226. In 1881 L. Ewald brought out at Leipsic his Grammatik der T'ai- oder Siamesischen Sprache. Lastly, Prof. Fr. Miller gave a summary of Siamese grammar in his Grundriss der Sprachwiss- enschaft, vol. ti. part 2, Vienna, 1882, pp. 367-376. A new grammar, by the Rev. 8. George, is in progress. Compare also W. Schott, Ueber die indo- chinesischen Sprachen, insonderhcit das Siamesische, 1856; and BE. Kuhn, Ueber Herkunft und Sprache der transgangetischen Volker, 1883. An English grammar eee in Siamese, and designed for use in schools, appeared at Bangkok in*~~

~~There are no records in Siamese referring to the time antecedent Litera-~~
~~to the settlement of the nation in their present locality, or, in the ture.~~
~~words of Mr Ney Elias, "of earlier date than the founding of their first~~
~~national capital, Ayuthia, at the commencement of the 14th century."4~~
~~The inscription at Sukkothai, said to be of the year 671 of the Siamese~~
~~era, nine years after the invention of the present Siamese characters,°~~
~~cannot be put in evidence as an historical record till a facsimile and~~
~~revised translation shall have been obtained. The few manuscript annals~~
~~mentioned by Bishop Pallegoix have not yet been critically examined ; but~~
~~metrical compositions, contain- ing legendary tales and romances,~~
~~abound and are eagerly studied. The subjects are mostly taken from the~~
~~Indian epics, as in the case of the Rama-kiwn or Ramayana, more rarely~~
~~from Malay or Javanese legend, such as the drama L-hnao. There is a~~
~~great variety of metres, all of which have been described with much~~
~~minuteness of detail by Colonel Low in his article on Siamese literature,~~
~~in Asiatic Researches, vol. xx. pp. 851-373. In their romantic poetry the~~
~~Siamese have a greater tendency to describe than to relate ; their pictures~~
~~of places and scenery are grand and striking and form the best part of~~
~~their poetical conceptions. The great blemish of their poetry consists in~~
~~tedious embellishments and a hankering after indecent and often gross~~
~~allusions, from which but few works, such as Sang Sin Chai and Samut~~
~~Niyai Si Muang, may be said to be free. The titles of the principal~~
~~romances are Hot Sang, Nang Prathom, Sang Sin Chai, Thepha Lin~~
~~Thong, Suwanna Hong, Thao Sawatthi Racha, Phra Unarut, Dara~~
~~Suriwong, Khun Phan, Nong Sip Sang, and the dramas [-hnao and Phra~~
~~Simuang. The plots of some of these have been given by Colonel Low.~~
~~The most popular of the religious books, all of which are translations or~~
~~amplifications from Pali originals, is called Somanakhodom (Cramana_~~
~~Gautama), which is identical with the /Vessantara Jétaka. In~~
~~miscellaneous literature may be mentioned Suphdsit, consisting of 222~~
~~elegant sayings in the accented metre called Klong, and Wuta~~
~~Chindamant (Vritta Chintémani), a work on prosody like the Pali~~
~~Vuttodaya, but treating also of a number of grammatical questions. The~~
~~fable literature is of course largely represented ; the lists, however, are~~

~~3 See 'The Passive Verb of the Thai Language," by F. L. W. von Bergen, Krung Theph Maha Nakhon, 1874.~~

~~4 Sketch of the History of the Shans, Calcutta, 1876, p. 34. ;~~

~~5 Bastian, in Jour. As. Soc. Bengal, vol. xxxiv. p. 27,and Sprachvergleichende Studien, p. 227. a :~~

~~6 See also Pallegoix, Gramm. Lingux Thui, pp. 120-129.~~

~~frequently swelled by the enumeration of siugle fables which are but parts of larger collections.~~

~~The number of works on law is considerable; and it is remark- able that, while in Burmah many Pali codes have currency, not. a single Pali text-book on law should: have been discovered in Siam ; all that we meet with in the law books are a few Pali quotations here and there. Laksana Phra Thammasat Laksana Phua Mia, an introduction to the code of Siamese laws, founded on the Dharma- gastra and on royal edicts, was completed in 1804. It coutains thirty books, at the head of which stands the Phra Thammasat, attributed to Manosdra or Manu, a treatise on the classification of laws. Next comes the Inthaphat, or book of Indra, a guide or exhortation to councillors and judges, and then the Phra Thamnun, or rules for the general conduct of judicial business. Then follow in order the undermentioned sections—disputes, plaints and allega- tions, official rank, classification of people, debt, marriage, criminal law, abduction, slavery, disputes connected with land, evidence, inheritance, examining officers, appeal, disputes as to classification of people, radius of responsibility for burglaries, &c., the thirty-six laws, the royal edicts, trial by ordeal of water and fire, laws of the palace, laws of the priesthood, offences against the king, offences against the people, rebellion, ancient statutes, recent statutes. Only one of these sections, the one on slavery, has been translated into English, by Dr Bradley ; it appeared in the Bangkok Calendar. The whole work has been printed at Bangkok in two volumes. The Kathu Phra Aiyakan, another compendium of laws, contains edicts principally referring to assaults, adultery, and the~~

~~*appraise- ment of fines. Among these we find the following: "A man who strikes another with a blank book shall be fined as though he had struck him with his hand; but if the assault is committed with a book of the classics the offender shall be fined twice as much as he would have had to pay for assaulting with a stick." The Laksana*~~

~~*SIAM*~~

~~*Tat Fong, or law of plaints and allegations, and of the institution and summary dismissal of suits, appears to be identical with the fifth section of the printed code. There is also a separate work called Phra Thamnun, which, though identical in name with the section of the Laksana Phra Thammasat above described, covers much more ground. A compendium of law entitled Riiang Kot Mai Miang Thai, or Code of Laws of the Kingdom of Siam, in two volumes, was printed at Bangkok in 1879. Colonel Low, who did not touch on jurisprudence in his essay on Siamese literature, made good the omission in a separate article 'Ou the Laws of Siam," in the first volume of Logan's Journal of the Indian Archipelago (Singapore, 1847).*~~

~~*Pallegoix, in his "Catalogus precipuorum librorum lingue Thai" (Grammatica, pp. 172-180), gives the titles of a good mnany treatises on scientific subjects, medicine, mathematics, astrology ; but none appear to have been critically examined. In the first volume of his Description du royawme Thai (1854) are inserted various pieces translated from Siamese works. Sce also on the Siamese language and literature generally the " Remarks" by the Rev. C. Giitzlaff, in the Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society, vol. iii. (1835), pp. 291-304 ; and on the literature Leyden's "Essay" above referred to (AMiseellaneous Papers, vol. i. pp. 148-147). It is only in quite recent times that an Anamese influence has begun to be traceable in the language and literature of the Siamese.*~~

~~*In 1810 Dr Leyden undertook, at the instance of the Calcutta Auxiliary Bible Society, to superintend a translation of the four Gospels into Siamese ; but he died before the project was carried into effect. Subsequently Messrs Giitzlaff and Tomlin, assisted by learned natives, laboured till 1833 at a trustworthy translation of the new Testament into*~~

~~*Siamese,- Their task was continued and completed by Messrs Jones and Robinson, and the work was pub- lished in 1846. (R. BR.)*~~

~~*END OF VOLUME TWENTY-FIRST,*~~

~~*PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.*~~

~~*» Vor, XXI.—Drrrcrions TO Brnper.*~~

~~*e/*~~

~~*PLates*~~

~~*by Se eo*~~

~~*Lat*~~

~~*i]*~~

~~*o*~~

~~*4*~~

~~*I ALP Td*~~

~~*es to be placed Opposite the*~~

~~*d, the Plat*~~

~~*When insertion throughout the text ws desire*~~

~~*Sollowing pages —*~~

~~*OmhbéMOo*~~

~~*sH GOO 8 @O ae 2 & = for a ee s Pe BA = sa*~~

~~*de a a * oor 3*~~

~~*SAT Ysn bug*~~

~~*VIAMES*~~

~~*Plate*~~

~~*n ae, f a EY « 2 \ rs*~~

~~†~~

~~*Sh BSS BS ey ™ OOK 15 rt oD*~~

~~*o et egas*~~

~~*Ry a I oe eee*~~

~~*856*~~

~~*frequently swelled by the enumcration of single fables which are but parts of larger collections.*~~

~~*The number of works on law is considerable; and it is remark- able that, while in Burmal many Pali codes have currency, not. a single Pali text-book on law should: have been discovered in Siam ; all that we meet with in the law books are a few Pali quotations here and there. Laksana Phra Thammasat Laksana Phua Mia, an introduction to the code of Siamese laws, founded on the Dharma- gastra and on royal edicts, was completed in 1804. It contains thirty books, at the head of which stands the Phra Thammasat, attributed to Manosira or Manu, a treatise on the classification of laws. Next comes the Inthaphat, or book of Indra, a guide or exhortation to councillors and judges, and then the Phra Thamnun, or rules for the general conduct of judicial business. Then follow in order the undermentioned sections—disputes, plaints and allega- tions, official rank, classification of people, debt, marriage, criminal law, abduction, slavery, disputes connected with land, evidence, inheritance, examining officers, appeal, disputes as to classification of people, radius of responsibility for burglaries, &c., the thirty-six laws, the royal edicts, trial by ordeal of water and fire, laws of the palaee, laws of*~~

~~*the priesthood, offences against the king, offences against the people, rebellion, ancient statutes, recent statutes. Only one of these sections, the one on slavery, has been translated into English, by Dr Bradley ; it appeared in the Bangkok Calendar. The whole work has been printed at Bangkok in two volumes. The Kathu Phra Aiyakan, another compendium of laws, contains*~~

~~*edicts principally referring to assaults, adultery, and the appraise- |*~~

~~*meut of fines. Among these we find the following: " A man who strikes another with a blank book shall be fined as though he had struck him with his hand; but if the assault is committed with a book of the classics the offender shall be fined twice as much as he would have had to pay for assaulting with a stick." The Laksana*~~

~~*STAM*~~

~~*Lat Fong, or law of plaints and allegations, and of the institution and summary dismissal of suits, appears to be identical with the fifth section of the printed eode. 'There is also a separate work called Phra Thamnun, which, though identical in name with the section of the Laksana Phra Thammasat above described, eovers much more ground. A compendium of law entitled Riang Kot Mai Miiang Thai, or Code of Laws of the Kingdom of Siam, in two volumes, was printed at Bangkok in 1879. Colonel Low, who did not touch on jurisprudence iu his essay on Siamesc literature, made good the omission in a separate article "On the Laws of Siam," in the first volume of Logan's Journal of the Indian Archipelago (Singapore, 1847).*~~

~~*Pallegoix, in his "Catalogus precipuorum librorum linguee Thai" (Grammatica, pp. 172-180), gives the titles of a good inany treatises on scientific subjects, medicine, mathematics, astrology ; but none appear to have been critically examined. In the first volume of his Deseription du royaume Thai (1854) are inserted various pieces translated from Siamese works. Sce also on the Siamese language and literature generally the " Remarks" by the Rev. C. Giitzlaff, in the Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Soeicty, vol. iii. (1835), pp. 291-304 ; and on the literature Leyden's "Essay" above referred to (Miscellaneous Papers, vol. i. pp. 148-147). It is*~~

~~*only in quite recent times that an Anamese influence has begun to be traceable in the language and literature of the Siamese.*~~

~~*In 1810 Dr Leyden undertook, at the instance of the Calcutta Auxiliary Bible Society, to supcrintend a translation of the four Gospels into Siamese ; but he died before the project was earried into effect. Subsequently Messrs Giitzlaff and Tomlin, assisted by learned natives, laboured till 1833 at a trustworthy translation of the new Testament into Siamese, Their task was continued and completed by Messrs Jones and Robinson, and the work was pub- lished in 1846. (ROR)*~~

~~*PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.*~~

~~*NOHLIGG HNIN "VOINNVLING VIGYdIOTIAING MSULOTOULAS TC — = =*~~

~~*© N © |*~~

~~*WIM WO BE aepz opr iuo'T*~~

~~*G*~~

~~*0. Or Tr] sen Yysnbuz*~~

~~*| gtr [paces \2aie#]*~~

~~*pyr*~~

~~*= Ob gh, gr ee*~~

~~*Senn ysnbug*~~

~~*VIN vATAS NC Ny {2 awses\ 2 el ASS nN,*~~

~~*VIAGTHS 2 VINVWOOY*~~

~~*AJ 3 oa YR iB oO ae ¢ tk . " how n Yen 29 \ 4 .0 pusoy*~~

~~yA v~~

~~i~~

~~÷~~

~~ps~~

~~ee~~

~~HL ALVTL~~

~~VISSOY~~

~~“NOILICR HININ VOINNVLINE VIGHEOIDAING~~

~~OF Wwmussry Jo peg spmsuoy og~~

~~= ae — = ———— = == |~~

~~= = — ———— = oan jo dou 29s missrry OYpNIsp 107 ‘AL0N 002 ogi oo! oo 0 og~~

~~he s i eee a = rh ¥ ‘ ’ y a + >| =<: mua so fo Nan deny > S 17) 7 ae~~

- ~~¢ xoyodder~~

~~NONI HININ VOINNVEIYg VIGHAOTIAING~~

~~TOU STNO EY 28“, OF se — = ——— essere =p 00s Oss 007 ost oOOoL = = Ge OS~~

~~ee an | >a. : SS rep 7 | ls STN WHsUg 828i %}F Z9LT | Barina) I)~~

~~VINGAUY ¥ VISVIMVD~~|

~~y} E \ TST SS)~~

~~a~~

~~*ee ott therna /*~~

~~*kenys oa oditg*~~

~~*Test yonaaysng fo al*~~

~~*Jenene enews Tes yosnqa yo ubimdumy ysn og {*~~

~~*C-ReBT USP E yMoyenT so ea*~~

~~*Joins G-ResTpsnqTy uiasualiny Jo uiduny ysvpmny \ Pee emo Lear ypmnmanyeng yo ubrdurry uareag éT8T Uoaoday yo uolsnauy ‘ Perea 2 SEAT MINERAL J0 SONORA pyar 5 TAT Ying np 0 goIUn np 4B : Y*~~

~~*o 72 4 ry 2 ADUONS OY”*~~

~~*2Y) AY patopwas Keoptta T | ZB 9g8T ‘snag yo Apoyo) &y wor Koprata (8tsrlost T-epureay = . — = ss Ey Shea * ‘ FL Lk TL oa be Bg ing j— ee ; ‘ ae PILEILLT Yoong § , , é Opt 4) — ogg> 4, a eno Da8T aqme — sasr-paamugrespag “ep ; \ pny thot 7g emezod|———— Tesyreung Jo sei*~~

~~*Coa etree oetr ‘map \ (OS) 822k 6891 Mag ay tnaz Sf Neri ; ee : I *** “oar Lanucrespog|——— DSP “wunyyp, stionismboy , phauQ i \ a y | suste dares) 2 = ° x i | o IGN , ; te |f FS | a Coot tps yt tod } we es 5 \ ‘ 248 Bunpasoagn DISSnTyy Jo saumpuno g, J 1 BZ skeayp " "*~~

~~*| Ry eee es: a. ‘SIT ounpog * WMG 247 seq 1018 40 Swag ng hyq80} Lopsoy 9L91- SHOT “SEvayp ** ‘ ” $497 S191 “Prongngg “ EST 8EST “Ay Upay ~· > ~· HT eesl-osl TT pesg “ SZ8L % 689L SOST-Z9FI “TT uray jo suomsmbopr uro0a eI 11 mogso” Jo Sppdrmaspayy*~~

~~*| = | /VISS 1a 729) 6891 Z9BT*~~

~~*/*~~

~~*| OL SNOISsa99V | u10ay | [| | | vis sore*~~

~~*| HT Ss*~~

~~*VISSON*~~

~~*| QW 8297 epeg yo Rmagy i*~~

~~*IXX “TOA*~~

~~*we*~~

~~*“NOWLIGG IIININ VOINNVLIUG VIG ¥dO1IAING*~~

~~*” coma” * sd “ U2249 PTOI*~~

~~*0 Pan A / M4 Stedain c — : a 5 SP / : “hls ln G Va CWP*~~

~~*Sr*~~

~~*AT ALF TI*~~

~~*NOILIGA IIININ YOINNWLINS VIGIIdOTIAING*~~

~~*II WA, ? 7 ye or G > spre “ORM Usnoug Jo apoog ey eet ae ey Auoxeg jo Soman UBIS STAT Ss YY ni a sonpng dOxeS 3 hae 4 Ta Auoxesg Jo wopSury*~~

~~*Surmojo>) 0} eJ0NN*~~

~~*a t Fs med wien, ‘ ¢ p N ba xd ym rII aS) tr o NF emer ‘ a iaq}a iso 3 Xi A : S “ of D r ¥ Pk a SUI,*~~

~~*” 7 Dae 7 tie A s 2 ; ~ & crag2*~~

~~*\ 4 E d ” hogy nto*~~

~~*i % — . pabipad fied. mS*~~

~~*4 png? NS Shae wounuo fs Pe rai < 1’*~~

~~*En iP 1 MS i ; ‘ ° é) Hy ~. 1 } F –*~~

~~*oY POUT : 4 YLopyPo*~~

~~*4]*~~

~~*ss es apaieyorny d >*~~

~~*addey*~~

~~*A ALVTd*~~

~~*‘ANOX*~~

~~*VS IXX “TOA*~~

~~*PLATE VI.*~~

~~*VOL. XXII.*~~

~~*of Eye| . Ss*~~

~~*SJUTHER LANDS.*~~

~~*Findlater Cas,*~~

~~*CHALLUM*~~

~~*M CCl Lee*~~

~~*%*~~

~~*sates flats*~~

~~*~*~~

~~*= aia*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*fe*~~

~~*54*~~

~~*f*~~

~~*@) P*~~

~~*ANNANDAL*~~

~~*Lolchmaber Cas.*~~

~~*a*~~

~~*Thrieve Cas!)*~~

~~*SCOTLAND | 16™ CENTURY indicating old Divisions pr ‘ and the localities of the Highland Clans*~~

~~*English Miles*~~

~~*10*~~

~~*W.i&A.K, Johnston,*~~

~~*20*~~

~~*ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION*~~

~~*1 . > a — meh ORO 6 90 it a 28 pine eee ge FINE A I ME Se —— ~· 6 J : 7 oe — - < Gee ‘ ; — ore *~~

~~*Ty*~~

~~*VOL.XXT*~~

~~*PLATE VIf.*~~

~~*0rd of Laithness ip ticlmsdale ath.*~~

~~*nan) B=*~~

~~*ach:*~~

~~*as)*~~

~~*5 Longitude West of Greenwich 4*~~

~~*ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.*~~

~~*eterfiead Buchan Ness llers of Buchary*~~

~~*2*~~

~~*W& AK. Johnston.*~~

~~*= ‘ = =*~~

~~*ES I I*~~

~~*2» §.*~~

~~—~~

~~*4 rms . ee solemn * : Ca =Gs Aen 3 “a rig*~~

~~*bl hand MA | + Aone P*~~

~~*i*~~

~~*aN A*~~

~~*i. — AO Ors aT*~~

~~*MIA BLY Td AIIULIISAIIO Y ‘CIIOFAVES “ANITIISdOWIIS —*~~

~~*} fae, 7 f f \K\sS ie ar, el 4 Bibb LY | (Ga D 4 hs | = A J , » ‘ Pe f \ i ——— 2, OAs } B : yy, \, ” sy = ” = ’ } SS PhPit Ds fe \ s x AS y 3 “é <— 4 PF % #7 x Ne >. f ff y » \ * =~· DP ae 1 i i \ ; wey 7Y = y { “f Ey ——— \ x . 4 SVP ji*~~

~~ff \ % as 5 4 2 (, ff {WVHTTOn— 7 | ·) j Ny F 3 ra i Bye j ‘ : j | , i >f DZ }) 5 . ‘ ; : f f ; Va f Y Z Pe a a / ; ; 2 5 2 “ 4 . _ ——— 4 \ OF = yy ee jo f! ya af ik Dy § vi : ee my Fa a = %& —” t Hf Lf Mj we 2 ” =) of! 4 § Y if Renee a Ef = x \ Up t = — * Va ey fei A 7 Fa _ \pess i =| Wis yy 4 %, < fi i E Y, ge == rf " % LAE — Y io ie Ve — eeer~ oo we j : , - a a, Li x a ‘ B) a az e . Py \\ y sa er ¢ 3 3 : é A (: = j \\ Y j oa “ s ’ th PA 2 \ ——— \ * # f 5 e . $h= = ‘) by, 3 7 fP > 7 — [EZ ATO § S SS ; fP f . ¢ GS X tes = ae \ i s \ A 9 \ ; f BL a ¢ 7 oe — t XY = i] yy y Lee 4) Fn) 7 \ S = *- Ze e Vi ies — N = A ay Es 3 y se. = = 4 ——— iO O¢ aa ,OT 02 Oe Or wg of OT~~

~~“TOR~~

~~“NOILICS IILININ “VOINNVLING VIGHdOIDAING og pew uoy .Z 824 eprnbuoy~~

~~o> co~~

~~9~~

~~heat”~~

~~UsaRSDTYMOY J puopomsbury 9 | Uumoay PRIPMT S UINT ZF ULQEAMY YRMON F YeeT T.~~

~~/ Z , SME AOS : } } Low} s ’ vy i ‘ fi f XK = , s\ a aN jo { WA ff \ Ys Jearorssuro. 1 85 A S Small Sayer te, ; tof : 3 \ VA cd 108 | paozpeag 1 TSGKE anol | _ AR re~~

~~Ee RIF PEE IE unten 40 pins | Lawansg vommsoy T \~~

~~‘i AION Ne 7 Fo S i, J \ s~~

~~ae MN SS “S99OT suOTsTAny ATeyUsuLeTpLeg a= |~~

~~rept |~~

~~= aa~~

~~; fy a a — if i } (; a VOL) XXT. i | I | |~~

~~*tion. oF the Kingd' vot Siam seePiateVLVoLX¥ LOO*~~

~~*Kol TawI.*~~

~~*nay ais re) £ stsM_¢ MALAY PENINA*~~

~~*Forthe Sor ward. contirn.atio*~~

~~*104] North-West Continuation of Shan States.|*~~

~~*PLATE IX.*~~

~~*To krow :*~~

~~*i Suren ° i r SY il 7 Bin ee Kantardrdyn Mp ety fea Gopi pst. ONS os A LD. ETI asi a SaNiiilyy iy we PUM, ty Reon, . earn Ey rime na ; Ti*~~

~~*sung*~~

~~*Santas | / i *~~

~~\ ‘~~

~~*}*~~

~~*iy*~~

~~*Sle awn NARS*~~

~~*AGLI ree*~~

~~*Tehoucan,oy*~~

~~*Scale of English Miles*~~

~~*50 100*~~

~~*Ser*~~

~~*om AP aa iia*~~

~~*Longitude Rast 102*~~

~~*of Greenwich*~~

~~*ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.*~~

~~*W.& A.K Johnstone*~~

~~*Sa*~~

~~*pete a 7 5 ceoreeeees = ae S*~~

~~*— =*~~

~~*ia:*~~

~~*lit shit i if*~~

~~*abst si i*~~

~~*; Ha PRS i i a i rs tie*~~

~~*i ih*~~

~~*a te — : He*~~

~~*HA eau*~~

~~*iit a ini i i i ‘*~~

~~*a .*~~

~~*ae : cireererene! S25*~~

~~*oe <= ans*~~

~~*=*~~

~~*SS SSS oo*~~

~~ee~~

~~==~~

~~aie Aue _. | Hat i a itu?~~

~~‘i Tipit i tases ue oo iit Ht i baat an PRE ORE a ROR i i : : i i i oo. : . : ‘ ihe 4 Hi ith nytt RSH ih 71) i tif } we it i Hitt j 4) a : a te He . \ . a i / : HS SRR ae ee A ee pth ar Abinannauanay Ha ee a He a is ie a Wit With MAIR oo Bi i nuh a Hitt iat i Hsin i ie ith Hi if il dat ti at if ate ue TS, 7 / a a aa ea An | is ity ; a i eee is SSI a He ! i th Ati: ‘ i Le i ie ie Mt i att ‘ Set~~

~~i i~~

~~ee ai a~~

~~: th ah! i~~

~~—~~

~~eee Ss~~

~~eee os prepa recprotst ets rarest aa thea Gormless aera ere eee elm ee both ees SS :~~

~~7 . =~~

~~ot} = = xs Le. enere ese esa oS ~·s owes –~~

~~<=~~

~~sSises~~

~~ou~~

~~5 : : =~~

~~Selerer = ee ene er eserene-~~

~~*Seth eter eral sleet leler a Seres Sree es eo s*~~

~~*3 (pap asteosteeee = arid sc eroe*~~

~~*Rai*~~

~~*tee tite*~~

~~*atehey i ty si HHI*~~

~~*iit HBG i*~~

~~*Ait : ETAT ate A RH Feat SES*~~

~~*ten:*~~

~~*see Set ee*~~

~~*oe are ej ——— ~.*~~

~~*= 3*~~

~~*rt vlatete le — esate rele Teresi Ste * oe spe tpet eter es*~~

~~*ere ee erat petra hee*~~

~~*i eet ae tt ci i eae Hin a att iit t eh fi ean |||. tea*~~

Vol 22 (SIB-SZO)

Britannica 9th

Ore a Sea

National Library of Scotland

B000640603

.

Encyclopedia Britannica—Vol. XXII.

SIBERIA. P. A. KROPporKINE.

SICILY. E, A. Freemay, D.C.L., and GrorcE G. CHISHOLM.

SIENA. Prof. CESARE PAOLI.

SIGHTS. Col. E. Marrianp, R.A.

SIGNALS. Capt. C. A.G. Bripce, R.N.

SIGNORELLI. W. M. Rosser.

SILK. James Parton.

SILURIDA. ALBERT GUNTHER, M.D.

SILVER. Prof. W. Dirrmar, LL.D., and Aurx. Den Mar.

SIMON MAGUS. Rev. Prof. ApDoL¥F Harnack, D.D.

SIMON, RICHARD. Rey. Prof. F. CromBiz, D.D.

SIMONY. Jamers WILLIAMS.

SINAI. Prof. ALBRECHT SocIN.

SIND. Major-General Sir FrepERiIcK J. GouDsMID, K.C.S.I.

SKELETON. Sr Greorcr Mr art, M.D.

SKIN DISEASES. J. 0. ArFuEck, M.D.

SLATE. DonAaLtp CAMPBELL, M.D.

SLAVERY. J. K. Incram, LL.D.

SLAVS. W. R. Morritt.

SLEEP. Prof. J. G. M‘Krenpricx, M.D.

SMALLPOX. J. O. Arrieck, M.D. .

SMELL. Prof. M‘KENpDRICK.

SMITH, ADAM. J. K. Incram, LL.D.

SMITH, JOHN. Prof. Epwarp ArsBer.

SMITH, SYDNEY. Prof. Wm. Minro.

SMOKE ABATEMENT. Prof. Orme Masson.

SMOLLETT, Prof. Mryro.

SNAKES. Apert Ginruer, M.D.

SOAP. Prof. Dirrmarand JAMES PATON.

SOCIALISM. Tuomas Kirxur.

SOCIETIES. H. R. TEeppER.

SOCINUS. Rev. ALEX. GORDON.

SOCRATES. Henny Jackson, Litt. D.

SODIUM. Pvof. DirrMar and J. Patron.

SOKOTO. JoserpH THOMSON.

SOLOMON ISLANDS. Baron ANATOLE Von HUGEL.

PN ees Bie THEODORE WATTS.

PHISTS. Henry Jackson, Litt. D. SOPHOCLES. Prof. L. Campsriy, LL.D.

PRINCIPAL CONTENTS.

SOUDAN. Prof. A. H. Kranz. SOUNDING. W. E. [Hloyie. SOUTH AUSTRALIA. James Bonwicx. SOUTH CAROLINA. W. Sraons. SPAIN — GEOGRAPHY AND Statistics. G. G. CIrlIstHoLM. History. Rey. W. J. Broprips and RicHARD LODGE. LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE. ALFRED MorEt-FAtIOo. SPECTACLES. Atex. Brucr, M.D. SPECTROSCOPY. Prof. A. ScHUSTER. SPEECH SOUNDS. A. J. E..is. SPENSER. Prof. Minro.

-SPINOZA. Prof. ANDREW SETH.

SPIRITUALISM. Mrs. HENRYSIDGWICK.

SPOHR. , S. Rockstro.

SPONGES. Prof. W. J. Sontas, LL.D.

SQUARING THE CIRCLE. Tuomas Muir, LL.D.

SQUIRREL. OLpFirLD THOMAS.

STAEL. Gro. SAINTSBURY.

STANLEY. Very Rev. Dean BRADLEY, D.D.

STAR CHAMBER. G. W. ProTHERO.

STATE OFFICERS. F. Drummonp.

STATISTICS. Wynnarp Hooper.

SPATIUS. DS: durin, Litt: D:

STEAM-ENGINE. Prof. J. A. Ewinc.

STEELE. Prof. Minto.

STEPHENS. Artuur A. TILLEY.

STEREOSCOPE. Prof. M‘KENprick.

STERNE. Prof. Mixro.

STEVINUS. Prof. M. Canror, Ph.D.

STIGMATIZATION. Prof. ALEX. Mac- ALISTER, M.D.

STOCK EXCHANGE. W. P. Harper.

STOCKHOLM. Dr Hans HILDEBRAND.

STOICS. R. Drew Iitcxs.

STOMACH DISEASES. J. O. ArrLeEcx, M.D. ‘

STORK. Prof. ALFRED NEWTON.

STRABO. Prof. Wu. Ripceway.

STRAFFORD. Prof. S: Rawson Gar- DIES Mule

STRENGTH OF MATERIALS. Prof. J. A. EWIne.

SUGAR. Prof. Dirrmar and J. PAToN.

- SUICIDE. Wynnarp Hooper.

SUMATRA. H. A. W aBsTER.

SUMPTUARY LAWS. J. K. Ixcran, LL.D.

~SUN. J. Norman Lockyer.

SUNDAY. JAmeEs WILLIAMS,

SUNNITES AND SHIITES. The late W. Sritra-Bery and Prof. A. MULLER.

SURFACE. Prof. A. Cayury, D.C.L.

SURGERY. Prof. J. Curznz, M.D., C. CreiGHTON, M.D., F. M. Cainp, M.B., and Artuaur W. Hare, M.B.

SURVEYING. Gen. J. T. WALKER, R.E.

SUSSEX. F. E. Sawyer.

SWAN. Prof. A. NewTon.

os SICKNESS. J. F. PAYNE, M.D.

SWEDEN—

GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS. Profs. H. H. Hinpreranpsson, P. T. CLEVE, and F. Ksrruman, Dr A. WIREN, and J. EF. Nystrom.

History. JAMES SIME.

LITERATURE. E. W. GOssE. SWEDENBORG. Rev. J. F. Situ. SWIFT. RicnaArp Garnett, LL.D. SWIMMING. H. E Wiurkrnson and

Wm. WILSON, SWINE. Prof. W. H. Firowsr, LL.D. SWITZERLAN D—

GEOGRAPHY AND Statistics. Rev. W. A. B. CooLtrpGE and H. A. WEBSTER.

History. Rev. W. A. B. CooLIpGn.

LITERATURE. JAMES SIME.

SWORD. Prof. F. Potzocx, LL.D. SYDENHAM. C. Creicuton, M.D. / SYDNEY. ANDREW GARRAN. | SYRACUSE. Rev. W. J. Broprizss, G. |

|

G. CHISHOLM, &e. ‘ SYR-DARIA. P. A. KROPOTAINE. SYRIA. Prof. A. Socrin.

rOVREAG DBITERATURE.

Wricur, LL.D.

Prof. Wa.

= eat a

Is i Se ay —_

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

THE

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

DICTIONARY

OF

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XXII

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXVII

[All Rights reserved. |

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. .

-¢i5=

ee a Sir Roperr (1641-1712), may be considered

as the most eminent representative of science and medicine in Scotland towards the close of the 17th century. He was born near Leslie in Fifeshire in 1641. Educated at Edinburgh, Leyden, and Paris, he settled as a physician in Edinburgh and soon rose to eminence. His career is one of marked initiative: he was the first professor of medicine in the university of Edinburgh, and the first president of the college of physicians, and, along with Sir Andrew Balfour, founded the botanic garden. He was also geographer-royal, and his numerous and miscellan- eous writings deal effectively with historical and anti- quarian as well as botanical and medical subjects. He died in 1712.

Amongst Sibbald's historical and antiquarian works may be men- tioned A History of Fife and Kinross (Edinburgh, 1710, and Cupar, 1803), which is still indispensable to the student of local history and antiquities; dn Account of the Scottish Atlas (folio, Edinburgh, 1683); Vindiciw Scotice Illustrate (folio, Edinburgh, 1710); and Description of the Isles of Orkney and Shetland (folio, Edinburgh, 1711 and 1845). See also his Autobiography (Edinburgh, 1833), to which is prefixed an account of his MSS.

SIBERIA (Russ. Sibi7, a word of unknown origin, probably Permian) in the 16th century indicated the chief settlement of the Tatar khan Kutchum,—Isker on the Irtish. Subsequently the name was extended so as to include the whole of the gradually increasing Russian dominions in Asia, and in the first half of the 19th century it Was applied to the immense region stretching from the Ural Mountains to the Pacific, and from the Arctic Ocean to the Chinese frontier and the Kirghiz steppes. This region, however varied in its separate parts, constituted a geographical whole having its own characteristic physical features. The division into Western and Eastern Siberia which naturally came into general use had also a geogra- phical meaning. In 1856, after the annexation of the Amur and Usuri regions, Eastern Siberia was extended so as to include the Russian dominions on the Pacific,

to the “Orenburg region,” or to the “steppe region” ; but, on the other hand, some districts which really belong to Western Siberia were included under this new denomi- nation. What is now called “Siberia” has thus lost its geographical unity. There still remains, however, for the geographer a vast tract of northern Asia which might be included under this general name, as representing some special features characteristic of the region. It would be limited by the Ural Mountains on the west, by the Arctic and North Pacific Oceans on the north and east respect- ively, and on the south by a line broadly corresponding to the 50th degree of latitude, running from the sources of the river Ural to the Tarbagatai range (thus separating the steppes of the Irtish basin from those of the Aral and Balkash basins), thence along the Chinese frontier as far as the south-east corner of Transbaikalia, whence it might be drawn to the Great Khingan, and along it to the upper Zeya (tributary of the Amur) and Udskoi Ostrog on the Sea of Okhotsk. This wide area would be naturally subdivided into Western Siberia (basins of the Ob and Irtish) and Eastern Siberia (the remainder of the region). Western Siberia would include the governments of Tobolsk and Tomsk, as well as the parts of Perm situated to the east of the Ural Mountains, and those northern parts of Semi- palatinsk which belong to the basins of the Irtish and the Tobol*; while Eastern Siberia would include the govern- ments of Yeniseisk and Irkutsk, the provinces of Yakutsk and Transbaikalia, together with the north-western part of the province of Amur and the northern parts of the Maritime Province. In fact, the north-western parts of Manchuria situated between the Argufi and the Great Khingan, as well as the upper parts of the Selenga and the Yenisei (Shishkit) belonging to Mongolia, are so in- timately connected with Eastern Siberia as regards their physical features that it is difficult for the geographer to separate them.

Since the inclusion of Uralsk, Turgai, Akmolinsk, and Admini- Semipalatinsk within the governor-generalship of the strative steppes, the present administrative subdivisions stand as ‘divisions. follows :—

although these latter in reality belong climatically and physically to a quite separate region,—that of the North Pacific littoral; and, as the Russian dominions extended into the Kirghiz steppes, these last were also reckoned

to Siberia, although mostly belonging in their physical features to another geographical domain,—the Aral-Cas- pian depression. Later on these steppes were transferred

1 This natural subdivision has been adopted by P. Semenoff in his valuable sketch of Western Siberia in Picturesque Russia (Jivopisnaya Rossiya), vol. xi.

XXII. — 1

General descrip- tion.

Oro- graphy.

“i, a. 2 eon. per Sars Miles, OPTS: “Square Mite. | oie i Se Mow alskgemet seria tssnnsseene 531,982 | 1,283,168 2°4 MOEN EME es ooc fesdacs vases shee 329,039 | 1,134,748 3:4 Western Siberia! ..... 861,021 | 2,417,916 | —2°8 PMOMISGISK ce cpeiais wotsseneeeennns 992,870 421,010 49 JBCCTINES)S -ohemanmenasemmecesene prod 809,190 398,873 ee Vln rr 1,517,127 | 243,443 16 Mranghavkalia ss… sescsseeese 240,781 497,760 21 Eastern Siberia!..... 3,059,968 | 1,561,086 | 51 WASTITIUUTS sec Ate ee Ms 178,559 40,533 03 Maritime Province …..... 730,022 74,000 | 10 Aut. gee 903,581 114,533 ca Thalia. eee ame 4,924,570 | 4,093,535 85

It is evident that a territory so immense—covering more than 25 degrees of latitude and 120 degrees of longitude— must include a great variety of orographical and climato- logical characters, and that the popular conception which persists in representing Siberia as a snow-clad desert is erroneous. In fact—not to speak of the rich prairies of the middle Amur and the Usuri region, where the wild vine grows freely—we find in Siberia proper the very fertile black earth prairie steppes, or rather pampas, of the Tobol and Ishim,—not mere patches of fertile land, but plains covering some 25,000,000 acres and ready to receive millions of inhabitants; the highlands of the Altai, with their rich valleys, alpine lakes, glaciers, and snow-clad peaks, ~——a country three times as large as Switzerland and pre- senting almost the same variety of aspects; the high plains of Eastern Siberia, where water-melons are grown in the fields during the short but hot

summer; the rich steppes of Minusinsk, profusely adorned with flowers; the lower plateaus of Transbaikalia, embellished with the beautiful Daurian flora and supplying food to hundreds of thousands of cattle; the high inhospitable marshy plateaus of the Selenga and Vitim; vast hilly tracts densely covered with forests, and visited only by hunters and gold-diggers ; and beyond these the frozen tundras of the north,—all these constitute an immense world, with the most striking con- trasts of scenery and vegetation, of manners and customs. In one direction only is the popular conception true: throughout its extension Siberia is the coldest country of the world in consequence of its protracted and exceedingly severe winter. This variety of characters will be best under- stood from the following brief sketch of the orography.

The leading features of the orography of Siberia are so much at variance in our best maps that a few words are necessary to ex- plain the views taken in what follows. The inhabited districts are well laid down; but the immense areas between and beyond these have only been visited by geographers and are mapped only along a few routes hundreds of miles apart. The intermediate spaces are filled according to information derived from native hunters. With regard to a great many rivers we know only the position of their mouths and their approximate lengths estimated by natives in terms of a day’s march. Even the hydrographical network is very imperfectly known, especially in the uninhabited hilly tracts.? The orographical representation of Siberia is no- thing more than a combination of a few surveys and journeys, in which conscious or unconscious hypothesis is resorted to in order to connect the isolated facts. As soon as the river systems of Siberia ‘began to be approximately known, chains of mountains were drawn in all hilly tracts,—higher ones on the ehief watersheds and lower ones along the secondary ones, This representation

eonveyed quite a false idea as to the surface configuration of Siberia. The immense plateaus which play so predominant a part in the

1? Governor-generalships.

- The wide area between the middle Lena and the Amur, as well as the hilly tracts west of Lake Baikal, the Yeniseisk mining region, and many others, are in this condition. An instance of a map distinguish-

ing between surveys and information derived from natives is given on a cartoon of map 4 of Mem. Russ. Geogr. Soc., General Geography, vol, iii.

structure of Asia (as they also do in the western parts of North America) were quite overlooked. Chains of mountains were drawn as if they rose in the midst of plains, where in reality we have either the slopes of one side of the plateaus or border-chains. Lofty mountains appeared where none exist, as, for instance, in those parts of Yakutsk where tributaries of the Lena and the Amur start from common marshes ; and some of the highest chains were re- presented as minor upheavals because they are pierced by rivers descending from the high plateaus to the lowlands. It was ouly by making use of rich unpublished collections of barometrical observations for the calculation of hundreds of heights that many sections of Siberia could be drawn,' and by going into a minute study of topographical materials scattered through the bulky literature of Siberia and certain MS. field-books —the whole con- trolled by personal journeys—that it became possible to arrive at the following general conclusions as to the structure of the country, which may be of service until] more complete surveys shall have given more reliable data. This study has shown how predomi- nant has been the part played in the formation of Siberia by huge swellings of the earth's crust (plateaus), aud how subordinate that played by isolated chains of mountains, which latter are regulated in their direction in north-eastern Asia by the border ridges of the plateaus; and it has enabled us to make out a close connexion be- tween the structure of Central Asia and Tibet and that of north- eastern Asia, and to establish a link between the two.

A vast plateau, beginning in the south at the foot of the gigantie Great semicircular border range of the Himalayas, aud having the lofty plateau,

plateau of Pamir in the west and the little-known high tracts of the upper Hoang-ho and Yang-tse-kiang in the east, extends towards the north-eastern extremity of Asia. Broadly speaking, it has the shape of a South America pointed towards Behring Strait. It attains a width of no less than 1800 miles and an altitude of from 11,000 to 14,000 feet in the south; but both width and altitude diminish towards the north-east. In north- west Mongolia the

average height is but 4000 to 5000 fect, and this diminishes to 3500 feet in the Vitim plateau; while its width is not more than 700 miles in the latitude of Lake Baikal. On the 50th parallel of latitude there occurs in the platean a broad lateral indentation, occupied by Lake Baikal and the plains of Kansk, and this renders the resemblance of the plateau to South America still more striking. This immense plateau is the remainder of a vast and very old continent, which, so far as we know, has not been submerged since at least the Devonian period.> It extends from the Himalayas to the land of the Tchuktchis, but does not of course present a plane surface of the same altitude in all its parts. It is diversified in the following ways. (1) Like other plateaus, it has on its surface a number of gentle eminences (angehdufte Gebirge of Ritter), which, although reaching great absolute heights, are relatively low. These chains for the most part follow a north- easterly direction in Siberia; but in the southern parts of the plateau, as we approach the Himalayas, they seem to assume a direction at right angles (towards the north-west). (2) On the outskirts of the plateau there are several excavations which can best be likened to gigantic trenches, like railway euttings when with an insensible gradient a higher level has to be reached. These trenches for successive geological periods have been the drainage valleys of immense lakes (probably also of glaciers) which formerly spread over the plateau, or fiords of the seas which sur- rounded it. Now the chief commercial routes have been made to follow these trenches to reach the higher level of the plateau. Their steep excavated sides, which have the appearance of chains of mountains to the traveller who follows the bottom of the trench, have often been described as such ; in reality they are merely uni- lateral slopes, which may best be compared with the steep slope of the Jura turned towards the Lake of Geneva. We have examples of such trenches in the valley of the Uda to the east of Lake Baikal (route to the Amur); in the valley of the Orkhon, leading to Urga and Mongolia (route to Peking), with a branch up the Djida ; in the broad depression of the Ulungur leading from Lake Zaisan to Barkul ; and in a few others which have been utilized as

3 A catalogue of heights in East Siberia is given in the appendix to the present writer’s “ Report on the Olekma and Vitim Expedition” (Mem. Russ. Geogr. Soc., General Geography, vol. iii., 1878); also in Petermann’s

Mitth., 1872. The height of Irkutsk, taken as a basis for the catalogue, has been determined since that date by a levelling through Siberia at 1486 feet.

4 “General Sketch of the Orography of Siberia,” with map and sections, and “Sketch of the Orography of Minusinsk, &c.,” by the same writer (same series, vol. v., 1875). The views taken in these writings have been embodied by A. Petermann in his map of Asia, sheet 58 of Stieler’s Hand-Atlas.

5 The great plateau of North America, also turning its narrower point towards Behring Strait, naturally suggests the idea that there was a period in the history of our planet when the continents turned their narrow extremities towards the northern pole, as now they turn them towards the southern.

rder-

SIBERYVA eB

routes from the Lena to the Sea of Okhotsk. (8) There are, moreover, two terraces in the plateau,—a higher and a lower, whieh are very well pronounced in TRANSBAIKALIA (q.v.) and in Mongolia. The Yablonovoi range and its south-western continuation the Kentei are border-ridges of the upper terrace. Both rise very gently above it, but have stcep slopes towards the lower terrace, which is occupied by the Nertehinsk steppes in Transbaikalia and by the Gobi in Mongolia (2000 to 2500 feet above the sea). They rise to from 5000 to 7000 feet above the sea; the peak of Sokhondo in Transbaikalia reaches nearly 8500 feet. Several low chains of mountains have their base on the lower terrace and run from south-west to north-east; they are known as the Nertchinsk Mountains in Transbaikalia, and their continuations reach the uorthern parts of the Gobi.?

The great plateau is fringed on the north-west by a series of high

iges of border-ridges, which have their southern base on the plateau aud

their northern at a much lower level. They may be traced from

. the Thian-Shan to the arctic circle, and have an east-north-easterly

direction in lower latitudes and a north-easterly direction farther north. Both the Alai ridge of the Pamir, continued by the Kokshal- tau rauge and the Khan-Tengri group of the Thian-Shan, and the Sailughem range of the Altai (see Tomsk), which is continued, in the opinion of the present writer, in the yet unnamed border-ridge of West Sayan (between the Bei-khem and the Us),? belong to this cate- gory. There are, however, in these border-ridges several breaches of continuity,—broad depressions or trenches leading from Lake Bal- kash and Lake Zaisan to the upper parts of the plateau. On the other hand,there are on the western outskirts of the plateau a few mountain ehains which take a direction at right angles to the above (that is, from the north-west to the south-east), and parallel to the great line of upheavals in south-west Asia. The Tarbagatai Mountains, on the borders of Siberia, as well as several chains in Turkestan, are instances of these upheavals. But, notwithstanding these com- plications, it remains certain that the Alai Mountains, the Khan- Tengri group, the Sailughem range, and the West Sayan are border- ridges of the high plateau fringing it from 70° to 100° E. long. These border-ridges contain the highest peaks of their respective regious ; they are immense walls which render access to the high plateau extremely difficult, unless the traveller follows the above- mentioned trenches. Beyond 100° E. long. the above structure is complicated by the great lateral indentation of Lake Baikal. But around and beyond this lake we again find the same huge border- ridge fringing the platean and turning its steep north-western slope towards the valleys of the Irkut, the Barguzin, the Muya, and the T’chara, while its southern base lies on the plateaus of the Selenga (uearly 4000 feet high) and the Vitim (see TRANSBAIKALIA). The peaks of the Sailughem range reach from 9000 to 11,000 feet above the sea, those of West Sayan about 10,000, In East Sayan is Munku-Sardyk, a peak 10,000 feet high, together with many others from 8000 to 9000 feet. Farther east, on the southern shore of Lake Baikal, Khamar-daban rises to 6900 feet, and the huge dome-shaped, bald summits of the Barguzin and Southern Muya Mountains attain an elevation of 6000 to 7000 feet above the sea- level. The orography of the Aldan region is but little known ; but travellers who journey from the Aldan (tributary of the Lena) to the Amur or to the Seca of Okhotsk have to cross the same plateau and its border-ridge, the former becoming narrower and barely attaining an average altitude of 3200 feet. Whether it projects farther into the land of the Tchuktchis remains unsettled, although the probability is that it does.

in the Baikal Mountains, which run from Irkutsk to Olkhon Island and the Svyatoi Nos peninsula of Lake Baikal, thus dividing the lake into two parts, the great and the little.» The Barguzin Mountains (on the right bank of the Barguzin river) and the Northern Muya range continue them farther to the north-east, and most probably they are prolouged still farther on the left bank of the Aldan.

A strip of alpine region, 100 to 150 miles in breadth, fringes the Alpine north-western border of the plateau beyond the ridges just men- region.

tioned. This constitutes what is called in Eastern Siberia the taiga : it consists of separate chains of mountains whose peaks rise from 4800 to 6500 feet above the sea, beyond the upper limits of forest vegetation (the goltsy); while the narrow valleys afford diffi- cult means of communication, their floors being thickly covered with boulders, or else swampy; the whole is clothed with thick impenetrable forests. The orography of this alpine region is very imperfectly known ; but the chains have a predominant direction from south-west to north-east. They are described under different names in Siberia:—the Altai Mountains (see Tomsx) in Western Siberia, which also belong to this category, the Kuznetskiy Ala-tau and the Us and Oya Mountains in West Sayan (see YENISEISK), the Nijne-Udinsk tazga or gold-mine district, several chains pierced by the Oka river, the Kitoi Alps in East Sayan, the mountains of the upper Lena and Kirenga, the Olekminsk gold-mine district, and the yet unnamed mountains which protrude north-east between the Lena and the Aldan.

A broad belt of elevated plains, ranging between 1200 and 1700 Elevated These plains.

feet above the sea, extends beyond these alpinc regions. plains, which are entered by the great Siberian highway about Tomsk® and extend farther in a south-westerly direction, fringing the Altai Mountains, are the true abodes of Russian colouizers ; they are fertile for the most part, although sometimes dry, and are rapidly being covered with Russian villages. About Kansk in Eastern Siberia they penetrate in the form of a broad gulf south-eastwards as far as Irkutsk. Those on the upper Lena, having a somewhat greater altitude and being situated in higher latitudes, are almost wholly unfitted for agriculture. The north-western border of these elevated plains

cannot yet be determined with exactitude. In the region between Viluisk (on the Vilui) and Yeniseisk a broad belt of alpine tracts, reaching their greatest ele- vation in the northern Yeniseisk ¢aiga (between the Upper and the Podkamennaya Tunguzka) and continued to the south-west in lower upheavals, separates the elevated plains from the lowlands which extend towards the Arctic Ocean. In Western Siberia these high plains seem to occupy a narrower area towards Barnaut and Seini- palatinsk, and it is difficult to say whether they are separated by an abrupt slope from the Aral-Caspian depression.

Farther to the north-west, beyond these high plains, we find a Northern broad belt of lowlands extending as far as the Ural Mountains lowlands.

and the Arctic Ocean. This vast tract, which is now only a few dozen feet above the sea, and most probably was covered by the sea during the Post-Pliocene period, stretches from the Aral-Caspian depression to the lowlands of the Tobol, Irtish, and Ob, and thence towards the lower parts of the Yenisei and the Lena. Only a few separate mountain ranges, like the Byrranga on the Taimyr penin- sula, the Syverma Mountains, the Verkhoyansk and the Khara- utakh ranges, diversify the monotonous surface of these lowlands, which are covered with a thick sheet of black earth in the south and assume the character of barren tundras in the north (see ToBoLskK and YENISEISK),

A typical feature of the north-eastern border of the high plateau is a succession of broad longitudinal? valleys along its outer base, shut in on the outer side by walls of wild mountains having a very

The south-eastern slope of the great plateau of Asia cannot pro- South-perly be reckoned to Siberia, although parts of the province of eastern Amur and the Maritime Province are situated on it; they have slope of

steep slope towards them. Formerly filled with alpine lakes, these valleys have now a flat alluvial soil occupied by human settlements, and are watered by rivers which flow along them before they make theit way to the north through narrow gorges pierced in the mountain-wall just mentioned. This structure is seen in the valley of the Us in West Sayan, in that of the upper Oka and Irkut in East Sayan, in the valley of the Barguzin, the upper

Tsipa, the Muya, and the Tchara, at the foot of the Vitim plateau, as also, probably, in the Aldan.4 The chains of mountains which fringe these valleys on the north-west belong to the wildest parts of Siberia. They are named the Usinsk and the Tunka Alps in East Sayan; the latter, pierced by the Angara at Irkutsk, in all probability are continued north-eastwards ee ee

1 The lower terrace is obviously continued in the Tarim basin of East Turkestan ; but in the present state of our knowledge we cannot determine whether the further continuations of the border-ridge of the higher terrace (Yablonovoi, Kentei) must be looked for in the Great Altai or in some other Tange situated farther to the south. There may be also'a breach of continuity im some depression towards Barkul.

2 See '' Orographical Sketch of Minusinsk, &c.," ut supra.

3 The word "longitudinal" is here used in an orographical not a geological sense. Meglitzki in 1856 and recently M. Chersky have shown that these valleys are not synclinal foldings of rocks; they seem to be erosion-valleys.

- We do not know at present whether the same structure is exhibited in the Altai at the foot of the Sailughem range. The upper Bukhtarma valley Seems, however, to belong to the same type.

Mountains in West Sayan.

quite a different character, climate, and vegetation, and ought plateau.

properly to be reckoncd to the Manchurian region. As already said, we have to the east of the Yablonovoi border-ridge the lower terrace of the high plateau, reaching about 2000 to 2500 feet in Transbaikalia and extending farther to the south-west through the Gobi to East Turkestan. The south-eastern edge of this lower terrace is fringed by a massive border-ridge—the Khingan—which runs in a north-easterly direction from the Great Wall of China to the sources of the Nonni-ula. The traveller crossing it from the west is hardly aware of its existence ; but it has a very steep slope towards the east, and forms a most important boundary for the Manchurian flora, which does not extend over the plateau. The northern parts of the Khingan are quite unexplored; the most northerly point that has been visited is the

sources of the Gai, where the present writer crossed it ou his way to Mergefi; and we have no direct data for determining where it is crossed by the Amur. But, considering the structure of the country on the left bank of the Amur, it appears probable that this river crosses it below Albazin (between Totbuzina and Kuznetsova, where it makes great windings), and the Zeya where it is-joined by the Gilui,—

5 The deep crevice filled up by Lake Baikal would thus appear to be made up of two longitudinal valleys connected together by the passage between Olkhon and Svyatoi Nos.

6 “Levelling of Siberia,” in Jzvestia of the Russian Geogr. Soce., vol, xxi.

Geology.

and Turkestan, they contain layers of coal.

4

the upper parts of the Zeya flowing on the plateau, while the Ud flows at its base ; so that, as shown elsewhere with greater detail,! we must adniit the Okhotsk coast-range to be a continuation of the Great Khingan. The Stanovoi range was drawn on old maps to connect the Okhotsk range with the Yablonovoi ; but the journeys of the great Siberian expedition have shown that in reality no such range exists,—the upper tributaries of the Gilui (tributary of the Amur) and those of the Konam (basin of the Lena) having their sources in common marshes on the plateau.

A narrow alpine region (40 to 50 miles), consisting of a scries of short secondary ridges parallel to the border-ridge, fringes this latter on its eastern slope. Two such plications may be distinguished, corresponding on a smaller scale to the belt of alpine tracts fring- ing the plateau on the north-west. The resemblance is further maintained by a broad belt of elevated plains, ranging from 1200 to 1700 feet, which follow the eastern border of the plateau. The eastern Gobi, the occasionally fertile and occasionally sandy plains between the Nonni and the Sungari, and the rich plains of the Bureya and Selimja in the Amur province belong to this belt, 400 miles in breadth, the surface of which is diversified by the low hills of the Ilkhuri-

alin, the Khutufi, and the Turan. These high plains are bordered on the south-east by a picturesque chain of mountains (the Amur gorge of which has been often described),— the Bureya Mountains (also Little Khingan). lt extends, with unaltered character, from Moukden and Ghirin (Kirin) to Ulban Bay in the Sea of Okhotsk (close by the Shantar Islands), its peaks covered from top to bottom with a rich forest vegetation rising to a height of 4500 to 6000 feet. A lowland belt about 200 miles broad runs in the same direction from south-west to north-east along the outer border of the above chain. The lower Amur occupies the northern part of this broad valley. These lowlands, covered with numberless niarshes and lakes, seem to have emerged from the sea at a quite recent geological period ; the rivers that lazily flow over their surface are still excavating their valleys. They are shut off from the Pacific by an alpine belt as yet but im- perfectly known, in which at least two separate high chains (the Pribrezhnyi and the Tatar) can be distinguished,—their continua- tions probably appearing in SAGHALIN (q.v.), while Kamchatka contains several chains, the orography of which is almost quite unknown.

The geology of Siberia is still but incompletely known ; some detached regions have been explored, while the vast intermediate spaces remain untouched. Viewed broadly," the great plateau with the alpine tracts fringing it on the north-west and south-east is built up of Paleozoic rocks. On the Vitim and Selenga plateaus immense tracts are composed exclusively of granite, grenatite, and syenite, with subordinate layers of gneisses, which very often are mere modifications, more or less stratified, of the granites and syenites. In some of the ridges that run over the surface of the plateau we find a variety of metamorphic slates, with subordinate layers of crystalline limestones. Extensive beds of lava occur in some parts of the plateau, and in the valleys of the rivers layers of Tertiary sands with petrified wood (Cupressonoxylum aleuticum). The plateaus of the Vitim aud the Selenga are covered with erratic boulders brought from great distances and show unmistakable traces of glaciation; and immense lakes-—small in comparison with their former size—and extensive marshes cover large areas. Besides older metamorphic slates and granites, Silurian and most probably Devonian rocks are widely spread on the lower plateau and in the low chains of mountains which rise above its surface. Silver, lead, gold, and iron are found in these mountains, as also precious stones.

Jurassic deposits, yielding many species of fossil insects and plants, occupy several large depressions. They are all of fresh-water origin and were deposited in great lakes. Like the Jurassic beds of China The alpine tracts in the north-west of the plateau are built up of granites, syenites, gneisses, and chiefly of metamorphic slates, the age of which cannot yet be precisely ascertained (Laurentian, and possibly also Silurian, or even Devonian). ‘Talc schists, and especially clay slates, both intersected with veins of quartz, have also a very great development here. The alluvial and glacial deposits of the valleys contain a rich percentage of gold, derived from the trituration of the clay slates and their quartz veins. Conglomerates, belonging probably to the Tertiary period, fill several valleys. Unmistakable traces of glaciers have been found in West and East Sayan, as also in the Olekma and Vitim regions. In the Altai the mountains are built up of granites, syenites, and diorites covered with metamorphic slates belonging to the Laurentian, Silurian, Devonian, and Car- bonifcrous periods. The Jurassic strata on the outskirts are all fresh-water deposits and contain coal, as in Eastern Siberia and China. The Ala-tau are of more modern origin, containing ex- tensive Jurassic beds, no longer deposited in depressions, but entering into the structure of the hills. The elevated plains of Western and Eastern Siberia have a more varied structure. On the Lena

1 ‘ Orographical Sketch of East Siberia,” ué supra. 2 For further details, see the descriptions of the different provinces of Siberia.

and the Yenisei we find Sihwian, Devonian, Carboniferous, and Triassic marine deposits, covered here and there with fresh-water Jurassic. Immense tracts on the upper Lena are covered with horizontal sheets of red sandstone, the age of which is not yet determined, but seems to be Devonian ; while in the government of Irkutsk large areas are covered with Jurassic coal-bearing sand- stones. The same structure is found on the outskirts of the Altai, tlie Carboniferous and older slates having depressions covered with horizontal strata of Jurassic coal-bearing sandstones. The hilly tracts which rise amidst the Eastern Siberian plains on the Angara and Yenisei consist also of granites, syenites, and diorites covered with Paleozoic rocks up to the Carboniferous, while Jurassic strata are found in

the Vilui Mountains. The broad lowlands of Western Siberia are covered throughout with Post-Pliocene deposits which conceal the older rocks, — shells from this period having been found as far south as Omsk (55° N. lat.). The lowlands and plains of Eastern Siberia exhibit a greater variety of structure,—Carbon- iferous, Triassic, marine Jurassic, and Chalk deposits being mct with both in the deeper ravines and in the few ridges which appear beyond 60° N. lat. Extensive layers of fresh-water Tertiary have been found in depressions of the plateau, in some valleys of the alpine region, and in the plains and lowlands.

There has becn much discussion as to the extent of the glaciers Glacia- in Siberia during the Glacial period,—the want of polished and tion.

scratched surfaces like those of Scandinavia having been urged as proof that they cannot have been considerable. It must neverthe- less be held that the high plateau was at one time covered with a vast ice-sheet, and that in the alpine regions of the Altai, Sayan, Olekma, and Aldan glaciers had a much greater extension than at present, descending in the valleys to at least a level of 2000 feet above the sea, and covering the subordinate swellings between the mountain ranges. Thick layers of Post-Glacial deposits, indicating a climate somewhat more genial than the present, and containing numberless remains of extinct mammals, are extensively spread both in valleys throughout the lowlands and on the islands of the Arctic Ocean ; while in the tundras of the north well-preserved carcases of the mammoth and rhinoceros are occasionally found in the frozen soil. Traces of Paleolithic man have not as yet been met with in Siberia; but relics of the Neolithic period are exceedingly numerous. One may almost say that they have been found wherever they were looked for, especially on the banks of the numberless lakes be which Siberia was dotted during the Lacustrine period (see elow).

Volcanic formations, so far as is known, appear chiefly along the Vol- north-western border-ridge of the great plateau. Hjections of basaltic canoes,

lava have been found on the southern slope of this ridge, extend- ing over wide areas on the plateau itself, on a stretch of more than 600 miles,— namely, in East Sayan about Lake Kossogol and in the valley of Tunka

(river Irkut), in the vicinity of Selenghinsk, and widely spread on the Vitim plateau (rivers Vitim and Tsipa). Extensive layers of trap cover more than 1200 miles along the Tunguzka ; they appcar also in the Noril Mountains on the Yenisei, whence they extend towards the Arctic Ocean. Basaltic lavas are also reported to have been found in the Aldan region. On the Pacific slope extinct volcanoes (:nentioned in Chinese annals) have been found in the Ilkhuri-alin Hills to the east of Mergefi.

The mineral wealth of Siberia is considerable. in almost all the alpine regions fringing the great plateau, where clay slates, talc slates, and dioritic slates, intersected by quartz veins, make up the bulk of the mountains. The chief gold-mining regions in these tracts are the Altai, the upper (or Nijne-Udinsk) and the lower (or Yeniseisk) taigas, and the Olekmaregion. Gold is found on the high plateau in the basin of the upper Vitim, on the lower plateau in the Nertchinsk district, and on the upper tributaries of the Amur (especially the Oldoi) and the Zeya, in the north-east con- tinuation of the Nertchinsk Mountains. It has been discovered also in the Bureya range, and in its north-east continuation in the Amgufi region. Auriferous sands, but not very rich, have been dis- covered in the feeders of Lake Khangka and the Suifun river, as also on the smaller islands of the Gulf of Peter the Great. Silver and lead ores are found in the Altai and the Nertchinsk Mountains, as well as copper, cinnabar, and tin. Iron-ores are known at several places on the outskirts of the alpine tracts (as about Irkutsk), as well as in the Selenghinsk region and in the Altai. The chief iron- works of the Urals are situated on the Siberian slope (see URAL). Coal occurs in many Jurassic fresh-water basins,—namely, on the outskirts of the Altai, in south Yeniseisk, about Irkutsk, in the Nertchinsk district, at many places in the Maritime Province, and on the island of Saghalin. Beds of excellent graphite have been found in the Kitoi Alps (Mount Alibert) and in the Turukhansk district. Rock-salt occurs in thinner deposits at several places on the Lena and in Tiensbaikalia, and salt-springs are numerous,— those of Ust-kut on the Lena and of Usolie near Irkutsk being the chief, A large’ number of lakes, especially in Transbaikalia and in Tomsk, yield salt. Lastly, from the Altai region, as well as from the Nertchinsk Mountains, precious stones, such as jasper, malachite, beryl, dark quartz, and the like, are exported. The Ekaterinburg

Gold-dust is found Minerals |

SIlBE RIA)

stone- polishing works in the Urals and those of Kolyvaii in the Altai are well known.

The orography sketched above explains the great development of the river-systems of Siberia and the uniformity of their course. The three chief rivers —the Ob, the Yenisei, and the Lena—take their rise on the high platcau or in the alpine regions fringing it, and, after descending from the plateau and piercing the alpine regions, flow for a few thousands of miles over the high plains and lowlands before they reach the Aretic Ocean. ‘The three sinaller rivers of north-eastern Siberia—the Yana, Indighirka, and Kolyma—have the same general character, their courses being, however, much shorter, as in these latitudes the plateau approaches the Arctic Ocean. The Amur, the upper tributaries of whieh rise in the eastern border-ridge of the high plateau, is similar. The Shilka and the Argufi, whieh form it, flow first towards the north- east, through the bendings of the lower terrace of the great plateau ; from this the Amur descends, traversing the Great Khingan and flowing down the terraces of the eastern slope towards the Pacific. A noteworthy feature of the principal Siberian rivers is that each is formed by the junction of a pair of great rivers. Examples arc the Ob and the Irtish, the Yenisei and the Angara (itself a double river formed by the Angara and the Lower Tunguzka), the Lena and the Vitim, the Argufi and the Shilka, uniting to form the Amur, which in its turn receives a tributary as large as itself, —the Sungari. Owing to this twofold coniposition and to the circumstance that, the alpine regions once crossed, their course lies over the high plains and lowlands and crosses the few ridges which rise above the plains (as, for example, the Yenisei below Yeniseisk), instead of following the valleys between them, the rivers of Siberia offer immense advan- tages for inland navigation, not only in the line of their main direc- – tion from north to south but also across it, 7.¢., from west to east. It is this circumstance that has facilitated the rapid invasion of Siberia by Russian Cossacks and hunters : they followed the courses of the double rivers in their advance towards the east, and discovered short portages which perniitted them to transfer their boats from the system of the Ob to that of

the Yenisei, and from the latter to that of the Lena, a tributary of which—the Aldan—brought them close to the Sea of Okhotsk. At the present day steamers ply from Tyumefi, at the foot of the Urals, to Semipalatinsk on the border of the Kirghiz steppe and to Tomsk in the very heart of Siberia. And the time is not far distant when the Ob and the Yenisei, both tra- versing the high plains on nearly the same level and separated only by low hills, will be connected by a canal, thus permitting steamers to reach Krasnoyarsk and Irkutsk. As the population becomes denser no difficulty should be found in connecting some of the navigable tributaries of the Yenisei with one of those of the Lena, for they flow within a short distance from onc another on the high plain, and Cossack boats have already been transported from the Yenisei to the Lena. An uninterrupted water communication will then have been established from Tyumefi to Yakutsk, Aldansk, and the gold-mines of the Vitim. Owing to the great plateau separating the Lena from the Amur, no easy water communication can be estab- lished between the latter and other Siberian rivers. The tributaries of the Amur (the Shilka with its affluent the Ingoda) become navi- gable only on the lower terrace of the plateau. But the treneh of the Uda to the cast of Lake Baikal offers an easy access for a railway up to aud across the high plateau ; and at the very foot of its eastern border-ridge lie T'chita, whence boats are floated down (in spring) to the Pacific, and Nertehinsk, whence steamers may ply to the mouth of the Amur, as also up the Sungari to Ghirin and up the Usuri to Lake Khangka. Unfortunately all the rivers are frozen for many months every year. Even in lower latitudes (52° to 55° N.) they are ice-bound from the beginning of November to the beginning of May!; while in 65° N. lat. they are open only for 90 to 120 days, and only for 100 days (the Yenisei) or even 70 days (the Lena) in 70° N. lat. During the cold winter the smaller tributaries freeze tothe bottom, and about 1st January Lake Baikal becomes covered with a solid crust of ice capable of bearing files of loaded sledges.

The chief rivers of Siberia are the following. (1) The Ob (Obi) ' is formed by the confluence of the Biya and the Katufi (400 miles), both of which rise in the Altai Mountains ; it flows north-west and north for 2120 miles, past Barnaut, Tomsk, and Narym, and enters the great Ob Bay of the Arctic Ocean. Its tributary (2) the Irtish, which joins it in 60° N. lat., has an even greater length (2520 miles). It rises in the high plateau, under the name of Black Irtish (500 miles) ; then, descending from the highlands, it enters

Lake Zaisan, whence it flows north and north-west, past Semipalatinsk, Omsk, and Tobolsk, to join the Ob. It receives a great number of tributaries, the chicf being the Tobol, the Ishim, and the Tara. Tyumefi on the last-named will soon be connected by rail with Perm on the Kama, and is already the head of a great line of water communica- tion ; navigation is also open to Lake Zaisan and for a considerable distance up the Black Irtish. The chief tributaries of the Ob are the

1 The Lena at Verkholensk is navigable for 170 days, at Yakutsk for 153 days ; the Yenisei at Krasnoyarsk for 180 days; see Izvestia of the Eastern Siberian Geographical Society, vol. xii. sq.

Anui (160 miles), Tcharysh (230), Tom (450), Tehulym (600), Ket (240), and Sosva (200),—all for the most part navigable. (3) The Yenisei rises on the high plateau in north-western Mongolia, where it is formed by the confluence of two great rivers—the Shishkit and the Bei-khem—and has the name of Ulu-khem. After descending the high plateau on the Chinese frontier, it flows north and enters the Arctic Ocean in a deep bay situated close by that of the Ob. The area of its basin is estimated at 1,380,000 square miles. It receives (4) the Upper Tungnzka or Angara (1100 miles), whieh itself has a basin of 275,000 square miles, (5) the Podkamennaya Tunguzka, and (6) the Lower Tunguzka. The Angara, whose tribu- taries on the left (Irkut, Oka, and Uda) are each large rivers, flows from Lake Baikal (40 miles above Irkutsk) and, describing a huge bend to the north-east, joins the Yeuisei a little above Yeniseisk. (7) The Selenga, which enters Lake Baikal from the east, might be considered as the real source of the Angara. It is a very large river and rises on the high Mongolian plateau, entering Siberia about Kiachta. Its length may be estimated at more than 600 miles; it receives (8) the Uri (outflow of Lake Kossogol), (9) the Orkhon, (10) the Tchikoi (300 miles), (11) the Khilok (800), (12) the Uda (130), and (18) the Djida (200). Lake Baikal has two other con- siderable feeders—the Barguzin and the Upper Angara. (14) The Lena is also an immense river, having an estimated length of not less than 3000 miles. It rises in the Baikal Mountains, some scores of miles from the lake, and flows north and east past Kirensk, Olek- minsk, and Yakutsk. Thence it turns to the north-west and enters the Arctic Ocean, forming a wide delta. It receives several large tributaries—(15) the Vitim, which has a greater length (about 1400 niles)

than the Lena above the point of junction, (16) the Olekma (about 800), (17) the Aldan (about 1800)—which receives in its turn (18) the Utchur (350), (19) the Maya, and (20) the Amga—and (21) the Vilui (about 1800). (22) The Taz (about 750), (23) the Kha- tanga (400), (24) the Anabara (670), and (25) the Olenek (1200), which enter the Arctic Ocean to the west of the Lena, and (26) the Yana (1000), (27) the Indighirka (950), and (28) the Kolyma (1000) to the east of it are also considerable rivers, but small in comparison with the former. (29) The Anadyr enters the gulf of the same name in the Sea of Behring. (80) The Okhota (270) and (31) the Ud (350) are relatively small streams flowing into the Sea of Okhotsk. Of the rivers flowing to the Pacific the chief is (82) the Amur, which is navigable for more than 2400 miles from its entrance into the Tartar Strait (between the mainland and the island of Saghalin) to Sryetensk on the Shilka,—boats being floated from Tehita on the Ingoda. It bears the name Amur after the confluence of (83) the Shilka and (84) the Argufi (see TRANSBAIKALIA) at Ust-Stryelka, and from this point flows east and south-east until its junction with its great tributary the Sungari; thence it flows north-east and north, and finally (for some 50 miles) east, before entering the Pacific. Its length, taking the Ouon for its source, is about 2700 miles, and its basin is at least 785,000 square miles in area, but has diminished recently, —the waters of the Dalai-nor no longer reaching the Argufi. It receives a great many large tributaries,—(35) the Zeya, whose affluent (36) the Selimja is itself a considerable river, (37) the Bureya, (88) the Kur, (89) the Gorin, and (40) the Inn from the left ; while from the right it receives (41) the Sungari and (42) the Usuri, whose affluent, the navigable Sungatcha, brings the Amur into steam communication with Lake Khangka. The rivers flowing into the Sea of Japan are mostly short, only (48) the Suifun being worthy of particular mention.

Numberless lakes oceur in both Eastern and Western Siberia. Lakes.

There are wide areas in the plains of Western Siberia, or on the high plateau of Eastern Siberia, wliere the country may be said to be still passing through the Lacustrine period ; but the total area now under water bears but a trifling proportion to the immeuse extent which the lakes had even at a very recent period, when Neolithic man already inhabited Siberia, All the valleys and depressions bear traces of immense Post-Pliocene lakes. Even

within historical times and during the 19th century the desiccation of lakes has gone on at a very rapid rate. The chief lake is Lake Baikal, more than 400 miles long, from 20 to 53 broad, and 12,480 squarc miles in area. Its surface is 1560 feet above sea-level, and it reaches in its south- west part a maximum depth of 751 fathoms. Another great lake, Lake Kossogol, on the Mongolian frontier, is 120 miles long and 50 broad, 5000 feet above the sea. The large Lake of Oron on the Vitim has not yet becn visited by geographers. Vast numbers of sinall lakes stud the Vitim and upper Selenga plateaus ; the lower valley of the latter river contains the Goose Lake (Gusinoye). In the basin of the Amur are Lake Khangka (1692 square miles), con- nected with the Usuri; Lakes Kada and Kizi, by which the lower Amur once flowed to the Pacific; and very many smaller ones on the left bank of the lower Amur. Numerous lakes and extensive marshes cover the low plains of Western Siberia ; the Baraba steppe is dotted with lakes and ponds,—Lake Tchany (1300 square miles) and the innumerable smaller lakes that surround it being but trifling

2 See Yadrintseff, in Jzvestia of the Russian Geogr. Soc., 1886, No. 1 (with maps).

Coasts and islands.

Climate.

remains of former lacustrine basins; while at the junction of the Irtish and Ob impassable marshes extend for many thousands of square miles. Several alpine lakes, of which the picturesque Telet- skoye may be specially mentioned, fill up the depressions of the valleys of the Altai.

The coast-line of Siberia is very extensive both on the Arctic Ocean and on the Pacific. The former ocean is ice-bound for at least ten months out of twelve ; and, though navigation along its shores has been proved by Nordenskjold to be possible, it is ex- ceedingly doubtful whether it can ever become a commercial route of any importance. The coast-line has few indentations, the chief being the double bay of the Ob and the Taz, separated from the Sea of Kara by an elongated peninsula (Samoyede), and

from the bay of the Yenisei by another. The immense peninsula of Taimyr —a barren tundra intersected by the wild Byrranga Hills—projects in Cape Tcheluskin as far north as 77° 46’ N. lat. The bay of the Yana, east of the delta of the Lena, is a wide indentation sheltered on the north by the islands of New Siberia. The bays of the Kolyma, the Tchaun, and Kolutchin are of little importance. The group of four larger and several smaller islands called New Siberia, situated off the mouth of the Yana, are occasionally visited by a few hunters, as is also the small group of the Bears’ Islands opposite the mouth of the Kolyma. Kellett’s or Wrangel’s Land is still quite unknown. The Strait of Behring at the north-east extremity of Siberia and the Sea of Behring between the land of the Tehuktchis and Alaska, with its great Gulf of Anadyr, are often visited by seal-hunters, and the Commander Islands off Kamchatka are valu- able stations for this pursuit. The Sea of Okhotsk, separated from the Pacific by the Kurile Archipelago and from the Sca of Japan by the islands of Saghalin and Yesso, is notorious as one of the worst seas of the world, owing to its dense fogs and its masses of floating ice. The Shantar Islands in the bay of the Ud are worthy of notice only for their geological interest. The double bay of Ghijiga and Penjinsk, as well as that of Taui, would be useful as harbours were they not frozen seven or cight months every year and covered with dense fogs in summer. The northern part of the Sea of Japan, which borders the shores of the Usuri region, has, besides the smaller Bays of Olga and Vladimir, the beautiful Gulf of Peter the Great, on which stands Vladivostok, the chief Russian naval station on the Pacific (see MARITIME ProvincEr). Okhotsk and Ayan on the Sea of Okhotsk, Petropavlovsk on the east shore of Kamchatka, Nikolaievsk, Konstantinovsk, and Vladivostok on the Sea of Japan, and Dui and Korsakovo on SAGHALIN (q.v.) arc the only ports of Siberia.

Although Siberia is nearly all included between 50° and 72° N. lat.,1 its climate is extremely severe, even in its southern parts. This severity arises chiefly from the orographical structure: the vast plateau of Central Asia prevents the moderating influence of the sea from being felt. The extensive lowlands which cover more than one-half of its area, as well as the elevated plains, lie exposed to the influence of the Arctic Ocean. The warm south-west winds have to cross the elevated plateau of Persia before reaching the Aral-Caspian depression, and there they deposit nearly all their moisture. And, if a current of warmer air flows from the west over Siberia (several

data, such as meteorological observations on Mount Alibert and at the Voznesensk mine in the Olekma region render its existence most probable in Eastern Siberia), it only makes its influence felt in the higher parts of the hilly tracts, by raising the line of perpetual snow in Eastern Siberia to the unusual height of 10,000 feet,? and by elevating by a few degrees the temperature of places situated in the alpine regions above the 3000 or 4000 feet level. The air, after being refrigerated on the plateaus during the winter, drifts, owing to its greater density, down upon the lowlands; hence in the region of the lower Lena we find an exceedingly low tempcrature throughout the winter, and at Ver- khoyansk, in 67° N. lat., the pole of cold of the eastern hemi- sphere.? Nevertheless Siberia enjoys a warm summer; owing to the dryness of the climate, the unclouded sun fully warms the earth during the long summer days in those high latitudes, and gives a short period of warm and even hot days in the immediate neigh- bourhood of the pole of cold. The Siberian winter may be said to last from the end of October until March, and it is exceedingly severe. As early as November mercury freezes in the latitude of Irkutsk (51° to 52° N. lat.), while in December, January, and even February it remains frozen for weeks together in south Siberia. Frosts of – 13° to — 18° Fahr. are not uncommon at Krasnoyarsk, Irkutsk, and Nertchinsk ; even in the warmer southern regions of

1 Only the narrow fringe of the tundras extends beyond 70° N. lat.

2 Although rising to heights ranging from 6000 to 10,000 feet, the mountain peaks of Eastern Siberia do not reach the snow-line, which is found only on the Munku-Sardyk in East Sayan, above 10,000 feet. Patches of perpetual snow occur in Eastern Siberia only on the mountains of the far north. On the Altai Mountains the snow-line is about 7000 feet.

3 The average temperature of winter (December to February) at Yakutsk is —40°°2 Fahr., at Verkhoyansk —53°°1. At the polar meteorological station of Sagastyr, in the delta of the Lena (73° 23’ N. lat.), the following average temperatures were observed in 1882 and 1883—January —34°°3 Fahr. (February — 43°°6), July 40°°8, year 2°°1. The lowest average temperature of a day is —61°°6 Fahr.

Western Siberia and of the Amur the average winter temperature is respectively 2°°4 Fahr. and —10°2; while at Yakutsk and Verkho- yansk the thermometer occasionally falls as low as — 75° and — 85° Fahr. Trees, as observed by Middendorff, become frozen to their very heart, and the axe, which becomes as fragile as glass, can hardly make any impression upon them. Rivers are frozen to the bottom, and water flowing over the ice adds new layers. The soil freezes many feet deep over immense areas even in southern Siberia. The atmosphere becomes laden with frozen vapours. Man, however, successfully resists these rigours, provided he adopts the customary costume of Siberia (two dresses of fur, the upper of which has the hair turned outside), and this all the more as the hardest frosts occur only when an absolute stillness of the air prevails. More dreaded than the frosts are the terrible bwrans or snow-storms, which occur in carly spring and destroy thousands of horses and cattle that have been grazing in the steppes throughout the winter. Although there are very heavy falls of snow in the alpine tracts—especially about Lake Baikal—on the other side, in the steppe regions of the Altai and Transbaikalia and in the neighbourhood of Krasnoyarsk, the amount of snow is so small that travellers use wheeled vehicles, and cattle can find food in the steppe. Spring sets in with re- markable rapidity and charm at the end of April; but in the second half of May come the “icy saints’ days,” so blighting that it is impossible to cultivate the apple or pear. After this short period of frost and snow summer comes in its full beauty; the days are very hot, and, although they are always followed by cold nights, vegetation advances at an astonishing rate. Corn sown about Yakutsk in the end of May is ripe in the end of August. Still, at many places night frosts set in as early as the second half of July. They become quite common in August and September. Nevertheless September is much warmer than May, and October than April, even in the most continental parts of Siberia. By the end of October the rivers begin to freeze, and in the first days of November they are all frozen; even the Amur becomes a high- way for sledges, while the Baikal is usually frozen before the middle of January. The isotherms are exceedingly interesting. That of 32° Fahr. crosses Western Siberia in its middle parts and Eastern Siberia in its southern parts, running through Bogoslovsk, Tobolsk, a little above Omsk and Tomsk, close by Irkutsk, Tchita, Nertchinsk, Blagovyeschensk, and Konstantinovsk. The isotherms of July run as follows. That of 68° Fahr., which in Europe passes through Cracow and Kaluga, here traverses

Omsk, Krasnoyarsk, and Irkutsk, whence it turns north to Yakutsk, and then south again to Vladivostok. Even the mouths of the Ob, Yenisei, Lena, and Kolyma in 70° N. lat. have in July an average temperature of 40° to 50°. Quite contrary is the course of the January isotherms. That of 14° Fahr., which passes in Europe through Uledborg, only touches the southern part of Western Siberia in the Altai Mountains. That of —4° Fahr., which crosses Nova Zembla in Europe, passes through Tobolsk, Tomsk, Krasnoyarsk, and Irkutsk, and touches 45° N. lat. at Urga, turning north in the Amur region and reaching the Pacific at Nikolaievsk. The isotherm of — 22° Fahr., which touches the north point of Nova Zembla, passes in Siberia throngh Turukhansk and descends as low as 55° N. lat. in Transbaikalia, whence it turns north to the Arctie Ocean. one following figures will give a more complete idea of the climate :—

Average Temperature in | Yearly ‘Nebu-

Height “rT above Degrees Fahr. Rainfall losity, ee: Sea in in per- Feet. Year. Jan. July. | Inches. | cent.

Ust Yansk(Yana) 70° 55’ 380 394 | —42°-7 , 56°°0 én Verkhoyansk 67° 84’ 160 2°0 | —56°°0 | 59°8 ore Turukhansk ….| 63° 55’ 70 20°S | -—16°°1 | 59°°5 00 i Berezoff (Ob) 63°56’ | 100 | 23°7 | = 80] 6270 in a Yakutsk.. G2? 2° 520 12°0 | -—46°°7 | 63°°8 on “a Okhotsk. .....) o9 eal 10 CoS c= Oey) acme 96 ie Narym (Ob) ....} 58° 58’ 200 28°°5 | — SO | 67°1 ×0 as Voznesensk mine, 58° 45’ 2800 21°S | -12°5 | 61°°9 es ne Yeniseisk …... 58° 27’ 260 28°°0 -—12°°0 | 66°:0 15°4 55 PLO DOVSIG tec. << <10 58° 12! 160 STO) | = 22 6G eai 12°6 59 MOWMISK isc ss 56° 29° 230 80°9 | — 3°5 |) 66°‘3 fe 59 SUMMA yscercoitare: «cots 56° 6″ 320 81°9 | -— 4°-1] 66°°0 12°6 59 Krasnoyarsk ….| 55° 1’ 560 Ba-0) | — ond.) “6h 0 na ae ISENITNTERS a5 apoo Oo 53° 20° 460 8295 | — 2°°8 | 6rd 9-4 64 Nikolaievsk ….) 53° 8’ 70 O72 | = 9838: | WGle8 | 1s-9 ot RSUES KK. oe css nepcse Spe Me 1486 82°°0 | — 4°°1 | 65°°6 ies 50 Nertchinsk mine] 51° 19’ 2170 25°°8 | —21°°0 | 66°1 154 34 Seimipalatinsk ..| 50° 24’ 590 SOn2) | 8060) Video 9°4 fe Blagovyeschensk, 50° 16’ 370 29°°S | —13°°8 | 69°1 a9 Khabarovka ….| 48° 28! 250 See ||) — 12 se) aes a0 Urga (Mongolia) | 47°56’ | 8770 Qi-°2) | —12°% | 62”6 10°2 30 Vladivostok ….. 43° 7’ 100 40°‘1 4°5 | 67°38 12°6 42

i

The flora of Siberia presents very great local varieties, not only Flora

on account of the diversity of physical characteristics through this wide territory, but also in consequence of the intrusion of new species in various proportions from the neighbouring tracts, as widely different as the arctic littoral, the dry steppes of Central Asia, and the wet monsoon regions of the Pacific littoral. A com- plete description of the flora of Siberia would have to treat of (1)

the high plateau; (2) the alpine tracts—(c) the Altai and (0) East Sayan, with a sub-region to the east of Lake Baikal ; (3) the steppe regions of Western Siberia; (4) the Ishim and Baraba plains of the same ; (5) the high plains of Eastern Siberia, with the sub-region (6) of Minusinsk ; (7) the Daurian flora of the lower terrace of the plateau in Transbaikalia; (8) the Amur; (9) the Usuri and Pacific littoral region ; (10) the arctic tundras, which, as shown by the “ Vega” expedition, may be subdivided into those (a) west of Yenisei and () east of the same to Behring Strait ; and (11) Kamchatka. Each of these has distinct features ; neverthe- less, if the basin of the Amur and Kamchatka be set aside, all have so much in common that the “Siberian flora’”’ may be spoken of as a whole. Siberia is situated for the most part in the great domain which Grisebach describes as the ‘‘ forest region of the Eastern continent.” ! The northern limit of this region must, however, be drawn nearer to the Arctic Ocean. Only a narrow strip, 60 to 200 niles wide (becoming broader in the Taimyr and Samoyede penin- sulas), is totally devoid of tree vegetation. The last trees, it is true, which struggle for existenee on the edge of the tundras are crippled dwarfs and almost without branches ; a few buds each summer are the only evidence that life has not left their frozen stems; and trees a hundred years old are only a few feet long and a few inches thick, concealed amidst lichens. Some 200 speeies of flowering plants are still found in the tundra region,—the frozen ground and the want of humus militating more against them than the want of warmth. From this northern limit to the Aral-Caspian and Mon- golian steppes we have all over Siberia the forest region, where, however, forests are very unequally distributed, covering from 50 to 99 per cent. of

the areas of the separate districts. In the hill tracts and the marshy depression of the Ob they are unbroken, except by the bald summits of the loftier mountains (golésy); they have the aspect of agreeable bosquets in the Baraba ; and they are thinly seattered through the south-eastern corner of Transbaikalia, where the dryness of the Gobi steppe is so much felt; while immense marshy plains covered with the dwarf birch take their place in the north as the tundras arc approached. Over this immense area the trees are for the most part the same as we are familiar with in Europe. The larch becomes predominant and presents itself in two new specics (Laria sibirica and L. dahuriea), The fir appears in the Siberian varieties Picea obovata and P. ayanensis. The silver fir (Abies sibirica, Pinus Pichta) and the stone-pine (P. Cembra) are quite common ; they reach the higher summits, where the last-named becomes a recumbent specics (Cembra pumila), while the larch and the silver fir also acquire a tendeney to spread their side branches instead of rising in height. The willow at high altitudes grows only two inches high, but still bears a few leaves and fully de- veloped flowers, The birch in the loftier alpine traets and plateaus becomes a shrub (Betula nana, B. fruticosa), or in Transbaikalia assumes a new and very elegant aspect with a dark bark (B. dahu- riea). In the decper valleys or on the lowlands of Western Siberia the larches, pines, and silver firs, mixed with birches and aspens, reach a great size, and the streams are fringed with thickets of poplar and willow. The alpine rose (Rhododendron dahwricum) flourishes in large masses on the higher mountains; Juniper, Spirea, Sorbus, the pscudo-acacia (Caragana sibirica and arbor- eseens, C. gubata in some of the higher tracts), various Rosaccw— Potentilla fraticosa and Cotoncaster wniflora—the cherry-plum (Prunus Padus), and many other shrubs fill up the spaees between the trees. Berry-yielding plants are found everywhere, even on the golisy, at the upper limit of tree vegetation; on the lower grounds they are an article of diet to the hunter, and even to the agriculturist, The red whortleberry (Vaceiniwm Vitis idea), the bog whortleberry (V. wliginoswm), the bilberry or cowberry (V. Myrtillus), and the arctic bramble (Rubus arcticus) extend very far northwards; raspberries and red and black currants form a rich undergrowth in the forests, together with the Rives dikusha in Eastern Siberia. The oak, the lime, the maple, disappear to the east of the Urals, to reappear, however, in new varieties on the eastern slope of the border-ridge of the great plateau (timidly pene- trating west for some little distance up the valleys of the Amur and the

Argufi).4| There we have the oak (Q. mongolica), the maple (Acer ginala, Max.), the ash (Fraxvinus manchurica), the elm (Ulmus montana), the hazel (Corylus hetcrophylia), and several other EKuro- pean acquaintances. Farther cast, in the Amur region, a great number of new species of European trees, and even new genera,

1 According to Engler's Versuch einer Entwickelungsgeschichte der Pflanzen- welt (1879), we should have in Siberia—(a) the arctic region ; (b) the sub-arctic or conifer region, —north Siberian province; (c) the Central-Asian domain, —

Altai and Daurian hilly regions; and (d) the east Chinese, intruding into the basin of the Ainur.

2 Middendorff's observations on vegetable and animal life on the borders of and in the tundras—so attractively told in vol. iv. of his Sibirische Reise—will long remain classical.

3M. Kjellmann (Vega Exp. Vet. Iakttagelser) reckons their number at 182; 124 species were found by Middendorff on the Taimyr peninsula, 219 along the borders of the forest region of Olenek, and 344 species within the forest region of the same ; 470 species were collected by M. Maack in the Vilui region.

_3 Nowhere, perhaps, is the change better seen than on crossing the Great Khingan, The change in the flora witnessed by the present writer on his way from Transbaikalia to Mergefi was really astonishing,

such as the cork-tree (Phellodendron amurensis), the walnut (Juglans manchurica), the acacia (Maackia amurcnsis), the graceful climber Maximowiczia amurensis, the Japanese TJ'rochostigna, and many others—all unknown to Siberia proper—make their appearance.

The greatest uniformity prevails on the high plateau, where the larch predominates over all other species of conifers or deciduous trees ; the wide and open valleys—or rather shallow depressions— are covered with Betula nana and B. fruticosa in the north and with thick grasses (poor in species) in its southern and drier parts. The same Siberian larch covers the alpine tracts

fringing the plateau on the north; but the tree assumes different characters in develop- ment and growth according to the physieal features of the region ; and the fir, the stone-pine, the aspen, and the birch also become mixed with it; in the narrow sheltered valleys the forests attain their full development. In the drier parts, on the slopes covered with sand or with a richer soil, the Scotch fir (Pinws sylvestris) makes its appearance. In the alpine tracts of the north the narrowness of the valleys (padz) and the steep stony slopes covered with débris, on which only lichens and mosses can grow, make each green plot of pee (even if it be only of Carex) valuable to the gold-diggers and hunters. For days consecutively the horse of the explorer can get no other food than the dwarf birch. But cven in these dis- tricts the botanist and geographer can easily distinguish between the tcherft of the Altai and the taiga of different parts of Eastern Siberia. The lower plateau exhibits, of course, new characteristics. Its open spaces are lovely prairies, on which the Daurian flora appears in its full beauty. In spring the traveller crosses a sea of grass from which the flowers of the peony, aconite, Orobus, Carallia, Saussurca, and the like rise to a height of 4 or 5 feet. As the Gobi desert is approached the forests disappear, the ground becomes chiefly covered with dry Graminex, and Salsolacce make their appearance on a gravelly clay impregnated with salt. The high plains of the west slope of the plateau are also covered with rich prairies diversified with woods. Nearly all the species of these prairies are common also to Europe (ponies, hemerocallis, asters,

inks, gentians, violets, Cypripedium, Aquilegia, Delphiniwm, acon- ites, irises, and so on); but here the plants attain a much larger size,—so large indeed that a man standing erect is coneealed by the grasses. The flora of Minusinsk—the Italy of Siberia—is well known ; the prairies on the Ishim and of the Baraba (see Tomsk) are adorned with the same rich vegetation, so vividly described by Middendorffand Finsch. Farther north we again reach the domain of forests ; but these once more present new characteristics. They are the wrmans of Western Siberia, into which the hunter does not venture to penetrate far from his village,—immense tracts covered with thickets of trees closely packed and therefore poor in aspect, and often rising from a treacherous carpet of thickly woven grass which conceals deep marshes (zybwny), where even the bear has to tread circumspectly. The prairies of the middle Amur and the rich plains of the

Selimja and Zeya, where Russian Raskolniks are so successful as agriculturists, belong to Manchuria.

The fauna of Siberia is closely akin to that of central Europe ; and the Ural Mountains, although the habitat of a few species which warrant the naturalist in regarding the south Urals as a separate region, are not so important a boundary zoologically as they are botanically. As in European Russia, so in Siberia, three great zones—the aretic, the boreal, and the middle—may be dis- tinguished ; and these, according to M. Syevertsoff,° may be sub- divided into several sub-regions. The arctic (hyperboreal) zone has the same characters as the tundra zones of European Russia, The boreal (cireumboreal) zone, which corresponds to the forest region of Russia, embraces Western Siberia, with the exception of the Urals and the southern steppes, and a notable part of Eastern Siberia,—Transbaikalia and the hilly tracts to the north of it being distinguished as a separate “Eastcrn Siberian” sub-region. The middle zone, extending from south Russia to south Siberia, has two separate sub-regions,—the Ural-Baraba and the Daurian, The zone of the steppes extends from the Caspian Sea through Central Asia, only touching Western Siberia and the neighbourhood of the Gobi in Transbaikalia. Finally, the Amur region shares the character- istics of the north Chinese fauna. On the whole, we may say that the arctic and boreal faunas of Europe extend over Siberia, with a few additional species in the Ural and Baraba region,—a number of new species also appearing in Eastern Siberia, some spreading along the high plateau and others along the lower plateau from the steppes of the Gobi. The arctic fauna is very poor. According to Nordqvist,® it numbers but twenty-nine speeics of mammals, of which seven are marine and only seventeen or eighteen may be safely considered as living beyond the forest limit. Of these, again, four are characteristic of the land of the Tchuktchis. The wild reindeer, the arctic dog (Canis lagopus), the fox, the hare, the wolf. the lemming (Afyodes obcnsis), the collar-lemming (Cunieulus tor- quatus), and two species of voles (Arvicolx) are the most common on land. The avifauna is very rich in migratory water and marsh

5 “ Horizontal Distribution of Animals,” in the Bulletin (lzvestia) of the Society of Friends of Natural Science, vol. viii., 1873. 6 “ Anteckningar och Studier,” &c., in Vega Exp. Vet. Iakt., vol. ii.

fowl (Grallatorcs and Natatores), which come to breed in the coast region; but only five land birds—the ptarmigan (Lagopus alpinus), the snow-bunting, the Icelandic falcon, the snow-owl, and the raven —are permanent inhabitants of the region. The boreal fauna is of course much richer; but here also the great bulk of species, both of mammals and birds, are common to Kurope and Asia. The bear, the badger, the wolverene, the pole-cat, the ermine, the common weasel, the otter, the wolf, the fox, the lynx, the mole, the hedgehog, the common shrew, the water-shrew, and the lesser shrew (Sorcxe vulgaris, fodicns, and pygmaeus), two bats (the long-eared and the boreal), three species of Vespertilio (V. dau- bento, natterert, and mystacinus), the flying and the common squirrel (Zamias striatus), the brown, common, field, and harvest mouse (AZus decumanus, musculus, sylvaticus, agrartus, and minutus), four voles (Arvicola amphibius, rufocanus, rutilus, and schistocolor), the beaver, the variable hare, the wild boar, the roebuck, the stag, the reindeer, the elk, and the Phoca annelata of Lake Baikal,— all these are common alike to Europe and to Siberia; while the bear, the musk-deer (Moschus moschiferus), the ermine and the sable, the ground squirrel (Spermophilus eversmant), Arvicola ob- scurus, and Lagomys hyperboreus, also spread over Siberia, may be considered as belonging to the arctic fauna. In addition to the above we find in Eastern Siberia Afustcla alpina, Canis alpinus, the sable antelope (guccrus sibiricus), several species of mouse (Afus gregatus, ceconomus, and saxatilus), two voles (Arvicola russatus and macrotus), Syphneus aspalax, and the alpine Lagomys, which penetrate from the Central Asian plateaus; while the tiger makes incursions not only in the Amur region but occasionally as far as Lake Baikal. In all, of fifty-seven species of Siberian mammals forty-one are common also to Europe, twenty-seven common to tlie arctic region, and only sixteen special to Asia. On the lower terrace of the great plateau we find an admixture of Mongolian species, such as Canis corsac, Felis manul, Spermophilus dauricus, the jerboa (Dipus jaculus), two hamsters (Cricetus songarus and furunculus), three new voles (Arvicol#), the Tolai hare, the Ogotona hare (Lagomys ogotona), Agocerus argali, Antilope guttwrosa, and Equus hemionus (jighitat) ; while the number of species common to Asia and Europe diminishes notably. The same is true with respect to birds. No less than 285 species have been observed in

Siberia, but of these forty-five only areabsent from Europe. In south-east Siberia we find forty-three new species belonging to the north Man- churian or Amur fauna; and in south-east Transbaikalia, on the borders of the Gobi steppe, only 103 species were found by Radde, among which the most numerous are migratory birds and the birds of prey which pursue them. The rivers and lakes of Siberia abound in fish ; but little is known of their relations with the species of neighbonring regions.!

The insect fauna is very similar to that of Russia; but a few genera, as the Zentyria, do not penetrate into the steppe region of Western Siberia, while the tropical Colasposoma, Popilia, and Lan- guria are found only in south-eastern Transbaikalia, or are confined to the southern Amur. On the other side, several American genera (Ccphalaon, Ophryastes) extend into the north-eastern parts of Siberia.2 As in all uncultivated countries, the forests and prairies of Siberia become almost uninhabitable in summer on account of the mosquitoes. Eastern Siberia suffers less from this plague than the marshy Baraba ; but on the Aiur and the Sungari large gnats become an unsupportable plague, and travellers who have had experience of the mosquitoes of the tropics readily admit that they yield to those of Siberia. Burning the prairie is the only expedient for destroying them, and is freely resorted to, with the result that the forest is frequently set on fire.

In Molluscs Siberia is much richer than had been supposed. The dredgings of the “ Vega” expedition in the Arctic Ocean dis- closed an unexpected wealth of marine fauna, and those of L. Schrenck in the north of the Japanese Sea have led to the dis- covery of no fewer than 256 species (Gasteropods, Brachiopods, and Conchifers). Even in Lake Baikal Dr Dybowski and Dr Godtewski have discovered no fewer than ninety-three species of Gammarides and twenty-five of Gasteropods.? The Sea of Okhotsk is very inter- esting in this respect, owing to its local species and the general composition of its fauna (70 species of Molluscs and 21 of Gastero- pods). The land Molluscs, notwithstanding the unfavourable con- ditions of climate, number about seventy species,—Siberia in this respect thus being not far behind north Europe.

The Siberian fauna is very unequally distributed. The alpine tracts of Eastern Siberia and the wrmans of Tobolsk are from the zoologist’s point of

view exceedingly poor, owing to the want of grass and of a mouldy soil. It is on the plateau, and especially on the lower plateau, as well as on the high plains, where the graz- ing grounds become numerous, that the fauna appears in its full richness. Much remains to be done in the way of investigating

1 Czekanowski (Izvestia Sib. Geog. Soc., 1877) has described fifty species from the basin of the Amur; he considers that these constitute only two-thirds of the species inhabiting that basin.

27. Schrenek, Reisen und Forschungen im Amurlande, 1858-80.

3 Mém. del Acad. des Sc. de St Pétersb., vol. xxii., 1876.

the distribution of animals over Siberia with reference to the physi- cal conditions of its different parts. Although differing little from the European, the fauna of Siberia possesses great interest for the zoologist and geographer. The increase of many animals in size (becoming twice as large as in Europe); the appearance of white varieties among both mammals and birds, and their great prevalence among domesticated animals (Yakut horses); the migrations of birds and mammals over immense regions, from the Central Asian steppes to the arctic coast, performed not only in connexion with the usual rotation of seasons but also as a result of occasional climacteric con- ditions which are not yet fully known (e.g., the occasional migration of thousands and thousands of roebuck from Manchuria across the Amur to the left bank of the river, or the migration of reindeer so well related by Wrangel) ; the various coloration of many animals according to the composition of the forests they inhabit (the sable and the squirrel are well-known instances) ; the mixture of northern and southern faunas in the Amur region and the remarkable con- sequences of that mixture in the struggle for existence ;—all these render the study of the Siberian fauna most attractive. Finally, the laws of distribution of animals over Siberia cannot be made out until the changes undergone by its surface during the Glacial and Lacustrine periods are well established and the Post-Tertiary fauna is better known. The remarkable finds of Quaternary maminals about Omsk and their importance for the history of the Zquidex are but a hint of what may be expected in this field.

The great bulk of the population are Russians, whose number Popuh has increased with great rapidity during the 19th century: although tion, | not exceeding 150,000 in 1709 and 500,000 a century later, they now (1887) number more than 3,000,000, and not far from 4,000,000 if the eastern slopes of the Urals are reckoned to Siberia. At the same time the entire indigenous population does not exceed 700, 000 | if the Kirghizes of Semipalatinsk are reckoned to Turkestan, aud many indigenes are rapidly dying out. The Russians, issuing from Russiat} the middle Urals, have travelled as a broad stream through south immig Siberia, sending lateral branches to the Altai, to the Ili river in tion, Turkestan, and to Minusinsk, as well as down the chief rivers which flow to the Arctic Ocean, the banks of which are studded with vill- ages 15 to 20 miles apart. As Lake Baikal is approached the stream of Russian immigration becomes narrower, occupying only the valley of the Angara, with a series of villages up the Irkut; but it widens again in Transbaikalia, sending lateral branches up the Selenga and its tributaries. It follows the course of the Amur, again in a succession of villages some 20 miles apart, and can be traced up the Usuri to Lake Khangka and Vladivostok, with an extension of villages on the plains between the Zeya and the Selimja. Small Russian settlements also occur on a few bays of the North Pacific and the Sea of Okhotsk, as well as on Saghalin (see SAGHALIN).

The Russians have thus occupied all the best agricultural tracts in Western and Eastern Siberia.

As to the indigenous races, the Ugrian stocks whieh occupy the Indige north-west of Siberia are represented by (1) the Voguls (about 6400), ouszaee on the eastern slopes of the Urals, in Perm and Tobolsk, extending partly over the western slope ; they closely resemble the Ostiaks, in some features approximating the Mongol race, and speak the same language ; (2) the OsTIAks (q.v.); and (3) the SAMOYEDEs (gq…).

Survivals of Turkish stocks, once much more numerous, are spread Turkisii all over south Siberia as far as Lake Baikal. Their territories are stocks, rapidly being occupied by Russians, and their settlements are cut in two by the Russian stream,—the Baraba Tatars and the Yakuts being to the north of it, and the others having been driven back to the hilly tracts. According to

M. Radloff,* they are as follows :— (1) the Karagases in the Yeniscisk and Irkutsk spurs of the Sayan Mountains (about 500); (2) the Abakan Tatars (about 10,000),— driven from the Irtish, they occupied the Abakan steppes after the emigration of the Kalmucks ; (8) those of the Tcholym scattered amidst Russians (500); (4) the Tatars of the north and north-east Altai, in all about 20,000,—(a) the Kumandintsy, (6) the Lebed Tatars, (c) the tcherfi or forest Tatars, (@) the Shorghintses; (5) those of the Altai proper,—(a) Altaians (11,800), (b) Dvoedantsy (2000), who until 1865 paid tribute to both Russia and China, and (c) the Teleutes (5800), mostly Russified; (6) the Soyotes and Uryankhes of East Sayan, of whom a few families are in Siberian territory ; (7) the Baraba Tatars (4650), mostly driven northwards to the forest and marsh region ; (8) the Irtish and Tobolsk Tatars (some 7000 to 10,000 on the Tara and 15,700 in the Tobolsk dis- trict). In all they number about 78,000, to whom should be added a number of Kirghiz from Turkestan. The great Turkish stock of the Yakuts (see YAKUTSK) in the basin of the Lena num- bers about 200,000. Most of these Turkish stocks live by cattle- breeding and some by agriculture, and are a most laborious and honest population. f .

The Mongols (about 350,000) extend into Western Siberia from Mong} the high plateau,—nearly 20,000 Kalmucks living in the eastern Altai. In Eastern Siberia the Buriats occupy the Selenga and Uda, parts of Nertchinsk, and the steppes between Irkutsk and the upper

4 Aus Sibirien, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1884; also in Jivopisnaya Rosstya, vol. xii.

Lena, as also the Baikal Mountains and the island of Orkhon; they support themselves chiefly by stock-breeding, but some of them, especially in Irkutsk, are agriculturists (see TRANSBAIKALIA). On the left of the Amur there are about 10,000 Chinese and Man- churians about tlie mouth of the Zeya, and nearly 3000 Coreans on the Pacific coast. The Tunguses, although few in numbers (50,000), occupy as their hunting-grounds an immense region on the high plateau and its slopes to the Amur, but their limits are yearly becoming more and more circumscribed both by Russian gold-diggers and by Yakut settlers.

Finally, in the north-east we find a group of stocks whose ethno- logical place is not yet accurately determined. They are united into a separate North

Asian linguistic group, and include the Tchuktchis, who may number 12,000, the Koryaks (5000), and the Kamchadales (3000), the Ghilyaks (nearly 5000) of the lower Amur and north Saghalin, and the Ainos (3000) of south Saghalin. The Yukaghirs (1600) scem to be merely Tunguses. Some 5000 Gipsies wander about Siberia.

Much has been written of late about the sad state of the indigen- ous populations of Siberia.! They are pitilessly deprived of their hunting and grazing grounds and compelled to resort to agriculture, —a niodification exceedingly hard for them, not only on account of their poverty but also because they are compelled to settle in the less favourable regions. European civilization has made them familiar with all its worst sides and with nonc of its best. Taxed with a tribute in furs (yasak) from the carliest years of the conquest, they often revolted in the 17th century, but were cruelly reduced to obedience. The tribute was never great (about 14 roubles per head); but the official valuation of furs was always only one-third to one-fourth of their real value and the exactions of the authorities trebled it again. In 1824 the settled indigenes had to pay the very heavy rate of 11 roubles per head, and the arrears, which soon became equal to the sums levied, were rigorously exacted. It must be fully acknowledged that severe measures taken by the Govern- ment in the last two centuries prevented the growth of anything like legalized slavery on Siberian soil; but the people, ruined as they were both by the intrusion of agricultural colonists and by the cxactions of Government officials, fell into what was practically a kind of slavery (kabata) to the merchants. Even the best-inten- tioned Government measures, such as the importation of corn, the prohibition of the sale of spirits, and so on, became new sources of oppression. The action of missionaries, who cared only about nominal Christianizing, had no better effect. It is worthy of notice that the spread of Mohammedanism ainong the Tatars and Kirghizes and of Lamaism among the Buriats took place under the Russians and was favoured by the Government.

The Russians of Siberia differ to some extent from those of the s. mother-country. They might have becn expected to intermix largely with the Finnish, Turkish, and Mongol elements with which they caine in contact ; but, in consequence of causes already mentioned under Russia (vol. xxi. p. 78), the mixture is much less than might be supposed ; and the continuous

arrival of new iminigrants con- tributed to lessen the effects of mixtures which really took place. One is accordingly struck to find in Western Siberia compact masses of Russians who have lost so little of their primitive ethnographical features, and to hear throughout Siberia a language which Miffers from that of northern Russia only by a slight admixture of words borrowed from the natives (mostly relating to hunting or cattle-rearing), and a few expressions of Polish origin. The case is other- wise, however, on the outskirts. Castrén characterized Obdorsk (mouth of the Ob) as a true Samoyedic town, although peopled with '*Russians." The Cossacks of Western Siberia have the features and customs and many of the manners of life of the Kalmucks and Kirghiz. Yakutsk is thoroughly Yakutic; marriages of Russians with Yakut wives are common, and some forty years ago the Yakut language was predominant among the Russian merchants and officials. At Irkutsk and in the valley of the Irkut the admixture

SLBEa TS 9

The natural rate of increase of population is very slow as a rule, and does not excecd 7 or 8 per 1000 annually. The great mortality, especially among children, is one of the causes of this, the birth- rate being also lower than in Russia. In Western Siberia the former is 88 per 1000 in towns and 380 in villages, while the births are 48 in towns and 44 in villages. The climate of Siberia, how- ever, cannot be called unhealthy, except in certain localities where goitre is common (on the Lena, in several valleys of Nertchinsk, aud in the Altai Mountains). The rapid growth of the actual popu- lation is chiefly due to immigration.

Agriculture is the chief occupation both of the settled Russian and Agricul- South Siberia has a very fertile soil and ture.

of the native population. yields rich crops, but immense tracts are utterly unfit for tillage. In the lowlands of Western Siberia it is carried on up to 61° N. lat.2 On the high plains fringing the alpine tracts on the north- west it can be carried on only in the south, farther north only in the valleys, reaching 62° N. lat. in that of the Lena, and in the alpine tracts in only a few valleys, as that of the Irkut. On the high plateau all attempts to grow cereals have failed,—only the wide trenches (Uda, Selenga, Djida), already

described, giving encourage- ment to the agriculturist. On the lower plateau, in Transbaikalia, grain is successfully raised in the Nertchinsk region, — with serious risks, however, from early frosts in the valleys of the mountain- ridges which rise above its surface. South-east Transbaikalia suffers from want of water, and the Buriats irrigate their fields. Although agriculture is carried on on the upper Amur, where land has been cleared from virgin forests, it really prospers only below Kumara and on the rich plains of the Zeya and Selimja. In the depression between the Bureya range and the coast-ranges it suffers greatly from the heavy July and August rains, and from inunda- tions ; while on the lower Amur the agriculturists barely maintain themselves by growing cereals in clearances on the slopes of hills, so that the settlements on the lower Amur and Usuri continually require help from Government to save them from famine. The chief grain-producing regions of Siberia are—the Tobol and Ishim region, the Baraba, the region about Tomsk, and the outskirts of the Altai, which cover an ageregate of 330,000 square miles (155,000

in the Altai); they have a thoroughly Russian population of nearly

2,000,000 inhabitants, aud nearly 8,600,000 acres are under crops. The Tobolsk region, mostly covered with wrmans, but having nearly 1,000,000 acres cultivated, and the northern districts of Semipala- tinsk, which are being rapidly colonized, must be added to the above. On the whole, in the basins of the Ob and Irtish, the annual yield is about 2,850,000 quarters of summer wheat, 1,260,000 of summer rye, 8,240,000 of oats, and 6,000,000 bushels of potatoes. The figures for Eastern Siberia are not so reliable,— about 1,100,000 quarters of various grains in Irkutsk (one-third raised by the Buriats), 400,000 in Transbaikalia, 40,000 in Yakutsk, about 100,000 in the Amur province, and 25,000 in the Maritime Pro- vince; and the Yeniseisk peasants sell every year about 700,000 ewts. of corn. The Minusinsk district, one of the richest in Siberia (45,000 inhabitants, of whom 2800 arc settled and 24,000 nomadic), has more than 45,000 acres under crops ; and in the whole pro- vince of Yeniseisk about 3,000,000 acres are cultivated. Cattle-breeding is extensively carried on in many parts.

horses, 1,500,000 head of horned cattle, 3,000,000 shecp, and 100,000 reindeer; for Eastern Sibcria the figures are approximately 850,000 horses,

1,100,000 horned cattle, 1,120,000 sheep, and about 50,000 reindeer. The industry is, however, carried on in the most primitive manner. In Transbaikalia little hay is made, and the Buriat horses seek their food throughout the winter be- neath the thin sheet of snow which covers the steppes. A single snowstorm in spring sometimes destroys in a few days thousands of horses thus weakened. In Western Siberia the ‘‘Siberian plague” makes great ravages, and the average losses are estimated at about 37,500 head of cattle annually.

In the Cattle- Ob and Irtish region of Western Siberia there are about 2,000,000 breeding.

of Tungus and Buriat blood is obvious, aud still more in the Ner- tchinsk district and among the Transbaikalian Cossacks settled for the last two centuries on the Argufi. They speak the Buriat language as often as Russian, and in a Buriat dress the Argui Cossack can hardly be distinguished from a Buriat. In separate

Bee-keeping is widely diffused, especially in Tomsk and the Bee- Altai. Honey is exported to Russia. The seeds of the stone-pine keeping. are collected for oil in Western Siberia.

Hunting still continues to be a profitable occupation, the male Hunting. population of whole villages in the hilly and woody tracts setting

parts of Siberia, on the borders of the hilly tracts, the mixture with Tatars was quite common. Of course it is now rapidly growing less, and the scttlers who entered Siberia in the 19th century married Russian wives and remained thoroughly Russian. There are accordingly parts of Siberia, especially among the Raskolniks, where the north Russian, the Great Russian, and the Ukrainian types have maintained themselves in their full purity, and only some differences in domestic architecture, in the disposition of their villages, and in the language and character of the population reinind the traveller that he is in Siberia. The Russians in Siberia have emigrated from all parts of European Russia ; but the special features of the language and partly also of the national character are due to the earliest settlers, who came mostly from northern Russia.

) Yadrintseff’s Siberia as a Colony contains a summary of this literature with bibliography.

out in October for a month’s hunting. The sable, however, which forinerly constituted the wealth of Siberia, is now so scarce that four sables per inan is the maximum in the best districts. Squirrels, bears, foxes, snow-foxes, antelopes, and especially deer in spring are at present the principal objects of the chase. But even in Yakutsk the total produce of hunting was in 1879 only 65 sables, 2360 snow-foxes, 28,440 ermines, 140,550 squirrels, 1780 foxes, 145 bears, 1310 reindeer, and 26,780 hares. The forests on the Amur yielded a rich return of furs during the first years of the Russian occupation, and the Amur sable, although much inferior to the Yakutsk and Transbaikalian, was largely exported. In 1862 1800 sables and 40,000 squirrels were killed in the province of Amur,

2 The northern limits of agriculture are 60° N. lat. on the Urals, 62° at Ya- kutsk, 61° at Aldansk, 54° 30’ at Udskoi, and 53° to 54° in the interior of Kam- chatka (Middendorff, Sibirische Reise, vol. iv.).

Fishing.

Manu- factures.

Mining.

Trade.

Com- munica- tion.

and 9300 in the Maritime Province; but in 1877 the total export from the former did not exceed in value £1700 to £2000,

The same falling-off is observable in the fisheries,—one species at least, the Rhytina stelleri, having completely disappeared within the 19th century. Fishing is still a valuable source of income on the lower courses of the great

rivers, especially the Ob, where the yearly earnings amount to about £30,000. The fisheries on Lake Baikal supply cheap food (the om) to the poorer classes of Irkutsk and Transbaikalia. The native populations of the Amur—Golds and Ghilyaks—support themselves chiefly by their fisheries, when the salmon enters in dense masses the Amur and its tributaries.

Though Siberia has within itself all the raw produce neccssary for prosperous industries, it continues to import from Russia with- out exception all the manufactured articles it uses. Owing to the distances over which they are carried and the bad organization of trade, all manufactured articles are exceedingly dear, especially in the east. The manufactories of Siberia employ less than 15,000 workmen, and their aggregate production docs not exceed £1,600,000 in value; of these 11,500 are employed in Western Siberia, the yearly production being about £1,200,000. Nearly one-third of the total represents wine-spirit, 28 per cent. tanneries, 18 per cent. tallow-melting, and a considerable sum cigarette-making. The villages of Siberia do not carry on a variety of petty trades like the villages in Russia, except in the districts of Tobolsk nearest the Urals, where tanning, boot-making, carpet-making, and the like are prosecuted.

Mining is in the same backward state as manufacturing in- dustry. The chief attention is given to gold-mining. But the use of improved machinery is far from common, and the condition of the workmen wretchedly bad,—insufficient food, bad lodgings, and overwork under the most unsanitary conditions. As the geology of the gold-mining districts is quite unknown, immense sums are sunk in futile search. The amount of gold obtained has much increased since mining was begun in the Nertchinsk district and parts of the Altai (a right formerly reserved for the imperial Government), and since the discovery of auriferous deposits in the hasin of the Amur and in the Maritime Province. It reached in 1882 45631b in Western Siberia (nearly all in the Altais), and 58,4201 in Eastern Siberia (about 27,000 in Yakutsk, more than 10,000 in Nertchinsk, and about 8000 in the province of Amur). The Altai mines (12,000 workmen) yielded in 1881 16,670 tb of silver (18,810 in 1882), 18,140 ewts. of lead, 6700 of copper (the last two decreasing itenis), 8200 of iron, 240,000 of coal, and about 820,000 of salt. Silver-mining is almost entirely abandoned in Nertchinsk, and in 1882 only 1900 Ib were extracted.

Trade is in the hands of a few merchants. The chief market is the Nijni-Novgorod fair, where Siberian merchants get twelve or eighteen months' credit at correspondingly high rates.!_ Prices on the Amur are not more favourable, since the trade by sea is pre- vented from developing owing to the facility with which great pro- fits are made by the exchange of wine-spirit and sables for whisky, The villages are in a still worse condition, whole populations being dependent for the necessaries of life upon a few merchants. The foreign trade is insignificant, and the hundred merchant ships (thirty English) which visited the port of Vladivostok in 1888 came chiefly for the needs of the garrison. The imports of manufactured wares from Russia amount to an annual value of £12,000,000; the corresponding exports of raw produce are only about £4,000, 000, —tallow, hides, furs, and grain being the chief items. There are several great fairs in Siberia, that of Ivbit (with an annual turnover of £5,000,000 to £7,000,000) being the most important. Those of Ishim, Tomsk, Irkutsk, and Verkhne-Udinsk deserve mention. In the north and north-east several fairs, where natives gather to pay tribute, to sell furs, and to purchase food and necessaries for hunt- ing, have a local importance.

The main line of communication is the great Moscow road. It starts from Perm on the Kama, and, crossing the Urals, reaches Ekaterinburg—the centre of mining industry—and Tyumefi on the Tara, whence steamers ply via Tobolsk to Tomsk.

1 Salt in the Altai region (where it is obtained) is retailed at 2 roubles 40 co-pecks the pud (4s. 10d. for 32 tb); sugar, which is sold at 7 to 8 roubles the pud in Western Siberia (14s. to 16s. the 82 ib), reaches 12 to 20 roubles in Transbai- kalia, and occasionally 40 roubles at Yakutsk.

Sle we A

Shilka, whence steamers ply to the mouth of the Amur and up the Usuri and Sungatcha to Lake Khangka. When the rivers are frozen communication is maintained by sledges on the Amur; but in spring and autumu the only continuous route down the Shilka and the Amur, to its mouth, is on horseback along a mountain path (very difficult across the Bureya range). On the lower Amur and on the Usuri the journey is also difficult even on horseback. On the whole the steamer communication is in an unsatisfactory

state, and when the water on the upper Amur is low vessels are sometimes unable to reach the Shilka. The Yenisei is navigated as far as Minusinsk, and communication is maintained along its banks in the summer by boat and horse. The Angara offers great difficulties to navigation on account of its rapids; regular water communication begins only below these and is continued to its mouth. On the Lena, which is an important waterway from Kirensk, merchandise is shipped for the gold-mining companies on the Lena below the Vitim, and sometimes up the lower Vitim. Another route of importance before the conquest of the Amur is that which con- nects Yakutsk with Okhotsk or Ayan. Regular postal communica- tion is maintained by the Russians between Kiachta and Kalgan (close by Peking) across the desert of Gobi. Owing to the relatively good condition of the great highway the journey to Siberia is not so difficult or formidable as is generally supposed. Asa rule the Siberians travel freely, and long journeys are undertaken miore readily than short railway journeys are in Europe.

Siberia has been colonized in two different ways. On the one hand, Colonia, the Government sent parties (1) of Cossacks to settle on the frontiers, tion,

(2) of peasants who were bound to settle at appointed places and maintain the communications along the routes, (8) of stryeltsys to garrison forts, (4) of yamschiks—a special organization of Old Russia intrusted with the maintenance of horses for postal com- munication, and finally (5) of convicts. Even so recently as 1856-57 a good deal of the Ainur region was peopled in this way. Serfs in the imperial mines were liberated and organized in Cossack regiments (the Transbaikalia Cossacks) ; some of them were settled on the Amur, forming the Amur and Usuri Cossacks. Other parts of the river were colonized by peasants who emigrated with Government aid, and were bound to settle in villages, about 20 miles apart, on the Amur, at spots designated by officials. Asa rule, this kind of colonization has not produced the results that were expected. On the other hand, free colonization has been more successful and has been undertaken on a much larger scale. Soon after the first appearance of the Cossacks of Yermak in Siberia thousands of hunters (promyshlonyte), attracted by the furs, im- migrated from north Russia, explored the country, traced the first footpaths, and erected the first houses in the wilderness. Later on serfdom, religious persecutions, and conscription were the chief causes which led the

peasants to make their escape to Siberia and build their villages in the most inaccessible forests, in the prairies, and even on Chinese territory. The scvere measures of the Government against such ‘‘runaways” could not prevent their immigration to Siberia. While governmental colonization studded Siberia with forts, free colonization filled up the intermediate spaces. This free colonization has continued throughout the 19th century, occasionally assuming larger proportions, as in 1848-55. Since the emancipation of the serfs it has been steadily increasing. In spite of the involved formalities which the peasants have to go through before emigrating, and the great expense, whole villages emigrate from Russia to Siberia. During the twenty-five years ending 1879 no fewer than 100,000 persons crossed the Urals; and in 1882 the Ural Railway conveyed 7025 emigrants, while the total number of emigrants to Siberia in the same year was estimated at not less than 40,000.”

Siberia isa great penal colony. Exile to Siberia began in the Exiles. |

first years of its discovery, and as early as 1658 we find the Non-conformist priest Avvakum following in chains the exploring party of Pashkoff on the Amur. Raskoluiks in the second half of the 17th century, rebel stryclisy under Peter I., courtiers of rank dur- ing the reigns of the empresses, Polish confederates under Catherine II., the “ Decembrists” under Nicholas I., nearly 50,000 Poles after the insurrection of 1863, and later on whole generations of socialists were sent to Siberia; while the number of common-law convicts and exiles transported thither has steadily increased since the end of the 18th century. No exact statistics of Siberian exile were kept before 1828. But it is known that in the first years of the 19th century nearly 2000 persons were transported every year to Siberia. This figure had reached an average of 18,250 in 1878-77 and rose above 20,000 in 1882. Between 1828 and 1877 the total was 393,914,4 to which ought to be added the families of many exiles, making more than 600,000 men, women, and children transported since the beginning of the 19th century. Of 151,584 transported during the ten years 1867-76 18,582 were

2 Yadrintseff, Siberia as a Colony; Levitoff, Guide to West Siberia (Russian) ; Russkaya Mysl, July 1882.

3 The autobiography of the protopope Avvakum is one of the most popular books with Russian Nonconformists.

4 The Poles are not reckoned in the above figures.

SerlBRBRI «A

eondemned to lard labonr, 28,382 to be settled with loss of civil rights (ssylno-poselentsy), 23,383 to be settled without loss of rights (na vodvorente), 2551 to live nearly free (na jitic),‘while 78,686 were transported simply by orders of the administration or decisions of the village communities. In 1884 21,104 exiles, followed by 1752 women and 8631 children, were transported to Siberia. Their dis- tribution under different heads was nearly the same as the above. The hard-labour convicts (some 1800 or 1900) sent every ycar are distributed among several prisons in Western and Eastern Siberia, the imperial gold-washings at Kara on the Shilka, and the salt-works of Usolie and Ust-Kut; but, as these prisons and works cannot take more than 10,000 in all, the surplus have to be sent to SAGHALIN (q.v.), where they are employed in the coal-mines, or settled. After liberation the hard-labour convicts enter the cate- gory of ssylno-poselentsy, and are settled in villages. It appears from recent inquiries that nearly all are in a wretched condition, and that of the 200,000 on the official registers more than one-third have disappeared without being accounted for. Nearly 20,000 men (40,000 according to other estimates) are living in Siberia the life of brodyaght, trying to make their way through the forests to their native provinces in Russia. The exile population of Siberia is much smaller than is generally supposed, being—in Tobolsk, 59,000, 4°6 per cent. of population ; in Tomsk, 29,800, 2°6; in Yeniseisk, 45,000, 10°6; in Irkutsk, 40,000, 10; in Transbaikalia, 21,335, 4°3; in Yakutsk, 3000, 1:2; total, 198,153 or 4:9 per cent.

Edneation stands at a very low level. The ehicf town of every province is provided with a classical gymnasium, where the sons of the local officials prepare for the university, and a gymnasium or progymnasium for girls ; but the education there received is not of a high grade, and the desire of the local population for ‘‘real schools” is not satisfied. The sum of £10,000 bequeathed by Demidoff in 1817 for the foundation of a university in Siberia, together with an additional £40,000 raised by subscription, remains unemployed, and, although the Government finally permitted the erection of buildings for a university at Tomsk, it again decided (1885), for political reasons, to postpone its opening. In 1883 there were in Western Siberia only 534 schools of all descriptions, with 14,097 male and 4915 female pupils. Transbaikalia had in 1881 108 schools of a very inferior kind, with 3828

pupils; Yakutsk, 23 schools, with 633 pupils in 1882. There are in all five gymnasia and five progymnasia for boys, three gymnasia and two progymnasia for girls, two ‘‘real schools,” and three normal schools; but many vacant teaching posts in gymnasia remain unoccupied. Primary education is in a very unsatisfactory state, and primary schools very scarce.

Siberia is divided into four governments,—Tobolsk, Tomsk, Yeniseisk, and Irkutsk,—and four provinecs,—Yakutsk, Trans- baikalia, Amur, and Maritime or Primorskaya. The first two are under governors, like Russian governments; the next four are under the governor-general of Eastern Siberia, who resides at Ir- kutsk ; the Amur and Maritime provinces are under the governor- general of the Amur, who resides at Khabarovka, at the junction of the Amur and the Usuri. The respective chief towns are—Tobolsk, Tomsk, Krasnoyarsk, Irkutsk, Yakutsk, Tchita, Blagove- schensk, and Khabarovka. The provinces of Akmolinsk (chief town, Akmoly) and Semiryetchensk (chief town, Vyernyi) are now parts of the steppe governor-generalship. Each government and province is subdivided into districts; the administrative head is a civil governor in the governments and a military governor in the provinces. By the regulations of 1834 each governor and governor-general is assisted by a council composed of chiefs of several departments (nominated by the governor-general), and several officials depending directly upon the respective ministries, The council has only a consultative voice, the final decision resting with the administrative head. The governors-general and military governors command the military forces of the provinces, —Cossacks and regulars. The new system of legal procedure introduced in Russia in 1866 has not yet been extended to Eastern Siberia, where the old courts are still in force. It has been introduced in Western Siberia, but without juries. The towns have received the new municipal organization. The zemstvo is not yet organized. The districts are under the control of ispravniks and zasedatels, who have very extensive powers, and are not controlled by self-government of the peasantry. The Cossacks—the Siberian on the Kirghiz frontier (90,000 persons, stretching in villages along a line of 1200 niles), the Transbaikalian, and those of the Amur and the Usuri, whose villages are dotted along the Amur to its junction with the Usuri and along the Usuri to Lake Khangka and Vladivostok—are under their own officers, and special administrative functions are entrusted to the military chief (ataman) of each

separate Cossack voisko. The Altai and Nertchinsk mines, with their territories and populations, are under the imperial cabinet,—all private mines being under the inspection of mining engineers,

Since the earliest years of conquest Siberia has been placed under the rule of voivodes (governors), under a special department at Moscow. In 1708 it was divided into five provinces, depending upon a governor residing at Tobolsk. Catherine II. introduced in

El

1764 a vice-royalty, which existed, however, only until 1799, when governors and governors-general were introduced. This system prevailed until 1819. This part of the history of Siberia was an unbroken record of robbery, tyranny, and folly on the part of the governors and tspravniks, such as would seem incredible were the facts not testified to by the annals and documents recently published in Russia. In vain were the severest measures resorted to. Peter I. ordered the governor Prince Gagarin to be hanged, and the governor Jolobotf was executed in 1736, while many minor officials were condemned to hard labour or the knout. ‘The robberies and the cruelties of rulers like Kryloff, Pestel, Treskin, Loskutoff, and their myrmidons compelled the Government to undertake a thorough inquiry, and for this purpose Speranskiy was‘sent in 1819. ‘To him Siberia is indebted for the new system of administration which has since remained in force.

The chief towns of Siberia are—Ekaterinburg (25,150 inhabitants), which belongs, however, to Perm, althongh situated on the eastern slope of the Urals ; Tomsk (31,550), a commercial city, selected as the site of the university; and Irkutsk (36,120 in January 1884), capital of Eastern Siberia, a trading city. Tobolsk (20,130), Kras- noyarsk (16,800), Tchita (12,600), Blagovyeschensk (8000), and Khabarovka (2500) are mere administrative centres. Biysk in Tomsk (18,700) yearly acquires more importance from its trade with the Kirghiz steppe. Kurgan (8915) and Yatutorovsk (4500) in Tobolsk are large villages, dependent chiefly on agriculture and some trade. DBarnaut (17,350), Kotyvafi (12,450), Kuznetsk (7355), Zmeinogorsk (6160), and Zyrianovsk (4450) in the Altai are mining centres ; Barnaut is the seat of the mining administration. Tyumen (14,300) and Tara (8650) in Tobolsk, Mariinsk in Tomsk, Kainsk (8050) and Minusinsk (7400) in

Yeniscisk, Kiachta (4300), Verkhne- udinsk (4150), and Nertchinsk (4070) in Transbaikalia, may be mentioned as local commercial centres—Kiachta having once had great importance in the tea-trade with China. The others ‘are merely administrative centres. Towns like Obdorsk, Berezoff, Narym, Viluisk, Verkhoyansk, Okhotsk, and many others which figure on the maps are merely administrative centres for levying the yasak, each with less than 1000 or even fewer than 500 and 300 inhabitants. Of the fifty-three towns of Western and Eastern Siberia only two lave more than 30,000 and eight from 12,000 to 21,000 inhabitants each ; in ten towns the population ranges from 5000 to 10,000.

The shores of all the lakes which filled the depressions dnring the History.

Lacustrine period are covered with remains dating from the Neo- lithic Stone period ; and numberless Zurgans (tumuli), ovens, and so on bear witness to a much denser population than the present. During the great migrations in Asia from east to west many populations were probably driven to the northern borders of the great plateau and thence compelled to descend into Siberia ; suc- ceeding waves of immigration drove them still farther towards the barren grounds of the north, where they melted away. According to Radloff, the earliest inhabitants of Siberia were the Yeniseians, who spoke a langnage different from the Ural-Altaic; some few traces of them (Yeniseians, Sayan-Ostiaks, and Kottes) have been found among the Sayan Mountains. The Yeniseians were followed by the Ugro-Samoyedes, who also eame originally from the high plateau and were compelled, probably during the great migration of the Huns in the 3d century B.c., to cross the Altai and Sayan ranges and to enter Siberia. To them must be assigned the very numerous reminains dating from the Bronze period which are scattered all over south Siberia. Iron was unknown to them; but they excelled in bronze, silver, and gold work. Their bronze ornaments and im- plements, often polished, evince a great development of artistic taste; and their irrigated fields eovered wide areas in the fertile tracts. On the whole, their civilization stood much higher than that of their more recent successors. Hight centuries later the Turkish stocks of ‘‘Tukiu” (in Chinese spelling), Khagasses, and VUigurs—also compelled to migrate north-westwards from their former seats—subdued the Ugro-Samoyedes. These new invaders have likewise left numerous traces of their sojourn, and

two dif- ferent periods may be easily distinguished in their remains. They were acqnainted with iron, and learned from their subjects the art of bronze-casting, which they used for decorative purposes only, and to which they gave a still higher artistic stamp. Their pottery is also much more perfect and more artistic than that of the Bronze period, and their ornaments now have a place among the finest collections at the St Petersburg Hermitage. This Turkish empire of the Khagasses must have lasted until the 13th century, when the Mongols, under Jenghiz Khan, subdued them and destroyed their civilization. A decided decline is shown by the graves which have been discovered, until the country reached the low level at which it was found by the Russians on their arrival towards the close of the 16th century. In the beginning of the 16th century Tatar fugitives from Turkestan subdued the loosely associated tribes in- habiting the lowlands to the east of the Urals. Agriculturists, tanners, merchants, and mollahs (priests) were called from Turke- stan, and small principalities sprang up on the Irtish and the Ob. These were united by Khan Ediger, and conflicts with the Russians

who were then colonizing the Urals brought him into collision with Moscow ; his envoys came to Moscow in 1555 and consented to a yearly tribute of a thousand sables. This source of wealth attracted Russian adventurers to the trans-Ural regions. As early as the 11th century the Novgorodians had occasionally penetrated into Siberia; but the fall of the republic and the loss of its north- eastern dependencies checked the advance of the Russians across the Urals. On the defeat of Stepan Razin many who were unwill-

ing to submit to the iron rule of Moscow made their way to the.

settlements of Stroganoff in Perm, and tradition has it that, in order to get rid of his guests, Stroganoff suggested to their chief, Yermak, that he should cross the Urals into Siberia, promising to help him in this enterprise with supplies of food and arms. Yermak entered Siberia in 1580 with a band of 1636 men, following the Taghil and Tura rivers. Next year they were on the Tobol, and 500 men suc- cessfully laid siege to Isker, the residence of Khan Kutchum, in the neighbourhood of what is now Tobolsk. Kutchum fled to the steppes, abandoning his domains to Yermak, who, according to

tradition, purchased by the present of Siberia to Ivan IV. his own restoration to favour. Yermak was drowned in the Irtish in 1584, after having been defeated by the Tatars. After his death the Cossacks abandoned Siberia ; but new bands of hunters and adven- turers, attracted by the furs, poured every year into the country, and were supported by regular troops from Moscow. To avoid conflicts with denser populations in the south, they preferred to alvance eastwards along higher latitudes; meanwhile Moscow sent fresh detachments of troops under votvodes, who erected forts and sottled labourers around them to supply the garrisons with food, gunpowder, and arms. Within eighty ycars the Russians had reached the Amur and the Pacific. This rapid conquest is accounted for by the circumstance that they met with no organized resistance : they found only the Tatar Kutchum on the Tobol, and in the Altai the Turkish stocks under the Kalmuck Altyn Khan, the centre of whose power was on the Kemtchik, and who collected tribute from the Teleuts, Uryankhs, Telcsses, Beltirs, Buruts (Kirghiz), and other smaller tribes. Neither Tatars nor Turks could offer any serious resistance. When travelling down the Yenisei in 1607-10 the Cossacks first encountered Tunguses, who strenuously fought for their independence, but were at last subducd about 1623. In 1628 the Russians reached the Lena, founded the

fort of Yakutskiy in 1637, and two years later reached the Sea of

Okhotsk at the mouth of the Ulia river. The Buriats offered some opposition, but between 1631 and 1641 the Cossacks crected several palisaded forts in their territory, and in 1648 the fort on the upper Uda (Verkhne-Udinskiy Ostrog) beyond Lake Baikal. In 1643 Poyarkoff’s boats descended the Amur, returning to Yakutsk by the Sea of Okhotsk and the Aldan, and in 1649-50 Khabaroff oc- eupicd the course of the Amur. The resistance of the Chincse, however, obliged the Cossacks.to quit their forts, and by the treaty of Nertchinsk (1689) Russia abandoned her advance into the basin of the river. In her anxiety to kcep peace with China and not to endanger the Kiachta trade, Russia rigorously prohibited and punished all attempts of the Siberians to advance farther towards that river until 1855. In 1849 the Russian ship ‘‘ Baikal” dis- covered the estuary of the Amur; in 1851 the military post of Nikolaievskiy was established at its mouth, and two years later the post of Mariinsk near Lake Kizi. Next yeara Russian

military expedition under Muravioff cxplored the Amur, and in 1857 a chain of Russian Cossacks and peasants had already scttled along the whole course of the river. The accomplished fact was recognized by China in 1857 and 1860 by a treaty. In the same ycar in which Khabaroff explored the Amur (1648) the Cossack Dejneff, starting from the Kolyma, sailed round the north-eastern extremity of Asia through the strait which was rediscovered and described eighty years later by Behring (1728). Cook in 1778, and after him La Pérouse, settled definitively the broad features of the northern Pacific coast. Although the Arctic Ocean had been reached as early as the first half of the 17th century, the exploration of its coasts by a series of expeditions under Ovtsyn, Minin, Prontchi- scheff, Lasinius, and Lapteff—whose labours constitute a brilliant page in the annals of geographical discovery—was begun only in the 18th century (1735-39).

The scientific exploration of Siberia begun in the period 1733 to 1742 by Messerschmidt, Gmelin, and De Lisle de la Croyere was soon followed up by Miiller, Fischer, and Georgi. Pallas, with several lussian students, laid the first foundation of a thorough exploration of the topography, fauna, flora, and inhabitants of the country. The journeys of Hansteen and Erman (1828-33) were a most important new step in the exploration of the territory. Humboldt, Ehrenberg, and Gustav Rose also paid in the course of these years short visits to Siberia, and gave a new impulse to the accumulation of scicntifie knowledge ; while Ritter elaborated in his Asien the true founda- tions of a sound knowledge of the structure of Siberia. Midden- dorff’s journey (1841-43) to north-eastern Siberia—contemporaneous with Castrén’s journeys for the special study of the Ural-Altaian linguages—directed attention to the far north and awakened in- terest in the Amur, whose basin soon became the scene of the

expeditions of Akhte and Schwarz (1852), and later on (1854-57) of the great Siberian expedition to which we owe so marked an advance in our knowledge of Eastern Siberia. The Siberian branch of the Russian Geographical Society was founded at the same time at Irkutsk, and afterwards became a permanent centre for the cx- ploration of Siberia; while the opening of the Amur and Saghalin attracted Maack, Schmidt,

Glehn, Radde, and Schrenck, whose works on the flora, fauna, and inhabitants of Siberia have become widely known.

Bibliography.—(1) General.—The under-mentioned works of the explorers of the 18th century contain rich sources of information not otherwise obtainable. Isbrand Ides, Travels, 1705; Messerschmidt, Reise, 1781; Miller, Sammlung Russ. Geschichte (1736-37), Ejemyesyachnyia Sochinentya (1757), and Hist. Sketch of Siberia (Russ.); Gmelin, Reise, 1751, and Flora Sibirica; Fischer, Sibirische Geschichte, 1774; Steller, Reise nach Kamtchatka, 1771; Fries, Reise, 1770-80; Georgi, Reise (1775), Gcogr.-phys. Beschreibung des Russ. Reichs, and Beschr. der Kinwohner (1799); Pallas, Voy. en Sibérie (1773-88), Zoographia Rosso-Astatica, Sammlung hist. Nachrichten tiber Mongolischen Volkerschaften (1776); Newe Nord- ische Beitrdge, and Neueste Nord. Beitrdge; Falk, Reise, and Topographische Bet- triige, 1783; Sievers, Briefe, 1796; Laxmann, Briefe, 1793; Cook, Voyage to the Pacific, 1785; Strahlenberg, Der N. und 0. Theil Huropa's ; Storch, Russische Reise, 1803; Krasheninnikoff, Description of Kamchatka (Russ.), 1786; Sarytcheff, Journey (Russ.), 1802; Lesseps, Travels to Kamtchatka, 1790; the Voyages of Liitke, Kotsebne, Kittlitz, Krusenstern, and La Pérouse; Martynoff, Voyage pit- toresyue, 1823; Cochrane, Pedestrian Jowrney, 1825; Khvostotf and Davydoff, Martos, and Slovtsoff's Journeys (Russ.), 1812 to 1827; Hedenstrom, Fragments on Siberia (Russ.), 1830; Ritter, Asien, 1833, and Russian translations, with appendices ; Slovtsoff, Historical Sketch of Siberia (Russ.), 1838-44 ; Wrangel and Anjou, Voyage to the Polar Sea,1840; Erman, Reise um die Welt, 1833-42, and Archiv f. d. wiss. Kunde von Russland ; Ledebour, Reise durch den Altai, 1829, and Flora Altaica, 1829-38; Rose, Reise nach den Altat, 1837-43 ; Schurovskiy, Jowrney to the Altai (Russ.), 1846; Tchihatcheff, Voyage de? Altai, 1848 ; Hel- mersen, Reise nach dem Altai, 1848; Humboldt, Asie Centrale, 1844; Stucken- berg, Hydrographie, 1844; Cottrell, Recollections, 1842; Hoffmann, Reise nach den Goldwischereien, 1847 ; Hagemeister, Statistical Sketch (Russ.), 1854 ; Castrén, Reiseberichte (1856), Ethnographische Vorlesungen tiber die Altaischen Volker (1857), Nordische Reise und Forschungen (1858), and Briefe aus dem Altai; Middendorff, Sibirische Reise, 1848-75 ; Schrenck, Reisen und Forschungen im Amurlande, 1858- 80; Maxiinowiez, Primitie# Flore Amurensis, 1859, and many subsequent mono- graphs; Radde,

Reiseberichte, 1861, and Reisen im Stidosten Sibiriens, 1861-65 ; Zavalishin, Description of West Siberia, 1860; Maack, Journey to the Amur, 1861, and The Uswri Region, 1862 (both Russ.); Trudy of the Siberian expedition,— mathematical part (also geographical) by Schwarz, and physical part bySchmmidt, Glehn, and Brylkin, 1874 sq.; Oswald Herr, ‘‘Miocine Flora von Sakhalin,” in Mém. Ac. Se. St Pétersburg, 1879 ; Wenukoff, Die Russisch-Asiatischen Grenz- lande, 1874, and Russia and the East (Russ.), 1877 ; Vagin Sibir, a collection of papers (Russ.), 1879 ; Krivoshapkin, Yentseisk District and its Life(Russ.), 1865 ; Kennan, Tent Life in Siberia, 1870; Tretiakoff, The Tuwrukhansk District, 1869 ; Pavloff, Siberian Rivers, 1878 ; Usoff, Stat. Descr. of Sib. Cossacks, 1879; Finsch, Reise nach West Sibirien, 1879; Seebohm, A Visit to the Valley of the Yenisei, 1879; Nordenskjold, Voyage of the Vega, 1881, and Vega Exped. Vetensk. Iaktta- gelser, 1882 sq.; Winkler, Ural-Altaische Volker, 1882; Bogolubskiy, Minusinsk District, &c., 1884; Sperck, Russia of the Far East (Russ.), 1885; Economical Situation of the Towns of Siberia, official publication (Russ.), 1879; Semenoff, Geogr. and Stat. Dictionary of the Russian Empire, 5 vols. (a most valuable source of information, with full bibliographical details under cach article); Elisée Reclus, Géographie Universelle, vol. vi., ‘‘L’Asie Russe,” also Russian translation with appendices; Yadrintseff, Siberia as a Colony (Russ.), 1882 ; Picturesque Russia (Russ.), ed. by P. Semenoff, vol. xi. (Western Siberia) and xii, (Eastern Siberia); Schegloff, Chronology of Sib. Hist. from 1032 to 1882; Levitoff, Guide to West Siberia (Russ.), 1883; Suvorin, Russkiy Kalendar (for some statistics), The following periodicals contain important information :— Syevernyi Archiv, 1825; Sibirskiy Vyestnik, 1818 sq.; Magasin Asiatique, 1825 ; Mélanges Asiatiques and Mel. Physiques tirés du Bull. de UV Acad. d. Se. de St Pétersbourg; Mémoires of the same; the publications of the St Petersburg Botanical Garden, and of the general staff; Bar and Helinersen, Beitrdge ; Erman, Archiv; Historical Acts, 1846, and Addenda, 1846-75, official publications (Russ.) ; Vyestnik, Zapiskt, and Izvestia of the Russian Geographical Society ; Zapiskt and Izvestia of the Eastern and Western Siberian branches of the same ; Balletin de la Soc. des Natur. de Moscow; Tzvestia of the Society of Friends of Natural Sciences at Moscow (for anthropology); Trudy of the Ural and St Petersburg Society of Naturalists ; Mining Journal of St Petersburg ; Verhandl. der Miner, Ges. zu St Petersburg; Meteorologischer Jahrbuch and Annales of the Central

Physi- cal Observatory ; Drevnyaya 1 Novaya Rossiya; the medical and topographical Sbornik, the Sbornik Sudebnoi Mediciny, and ‘‘The Health” (Zdorovie) contain most valuable contributions to the demography of Siberia; the newspapers Amur, Vostochnoie Oboszrenie, and especially Sibir, now published at Irkutsk ; Russische Revue; Priroda, a popular review containing valuable information about hunting; Pamyatnuyia Knijki (almanacs) of separate governments. The official publication of the ininistry of navy, Morskot Sbornik. contains many important contributions to the geography of Siheria, as also, occasionally, the Voennyi Sbornik. Complete indexes by M. Mezhoff are published. by the Geo- graphical Society.

(2) Flora and Fauna.~~—Besides the works of Ginelin, Georgi, Pallas, Lede~~ bour, Middendorff, Maack, Schrenck, Radde, Schinidt, Glelin, and Maxinio- wicz, see a large numbcr of monographs by Schinidt, Regel, Trautvetter, Herder, Brandt, Polyakoff, Martynoff, Budischeff, and many others scattered through the publications of the Acadeiny of Sciences, the St Petersburg Botanical Garden, the Society of Naturalists of Moscow, the Society of Friends of Natural Sciences of Moscow, and the Geographical Societies of St Petersburg anid Irkutsk. Several of them are complete florwle of separate regions, or import- ant monographs of separate classes of the vegetable or animal kingdom, or lists of plants and animals collected during separate journeys; see also Taczan- owski’s lists of birds in Bull. de lo Soc. Zool. de France, 1882. Mezhoff’s Biblio- graphical Indexes, yearly published by the Geographical Society, and the Indeaes of the Kieff Society of Naturalists give full details.

(3) Geology.—Geological observations occur in nearly all the above-mentioned works of travel and serial publications. Of recent monographs the following, published in periodical publications, may be mentioned :—Meglitzky, in Verh… der Miner. Ges. zu St Petersburg, 1856 ; Schmidt, ‘‘ Mammuth Reise,” in Mem. of St Petersburg Ac.; Lopatin, on the Vitim, Yenisei, and Krasnoyarsk, in Mining Journal and serials of the St Petersburg and East Siberian Geographical Society ; Czekanowski, in Mem. Ac. of Sciences; Ozerski (map of shores of Baikal), in Izvestia, East Siberian Geographical Society, and several papers, especially on mining districts, in the Gornyt Journal.

(4) Ethnology.—Slovtsoff, History of Siberia; Shashkoff, a series of papers on the ‘Indigenous Races of Siberia,” ‘‘The Native Question,” ‘‘Serfdom in Siberia,” ‘‘ Historical Sketches,” in various reviews; Polyakoff, Journey to the Ob (translated into German); Schapoff, in various historical works and in

the Izvestia of the Siberian Geographical Society ; Samokvasoff, Customary Law of Siberian Indigenes, 1876 ; papers in Ofetchestvennyia Zapiski, vols. cexxxix. and cexciii.; Yadrintseff, Siberia, 1882. Argentoff and Kostroff in the serials of the Geogr. Soc. give information about the present state of the indigenes and their relations to Russia.

(5) Exile.—Maximoff, Siberia and Hard Labour, 1871; Foinitzky, Administra- tion of Exile, 1879; Vagin, ‘‘ Historical Documents on Siberia,” in the collection Sibir, vol. i.; Nikitin, “Prisons and the Prisons Question,” in Russkiy Vyestnik, 1878; Mishlo, ‘‘On Siberian Prisons,” in Otetch. Zapiski, 1881; Yadrintseff, Siberia as a Colony, 1882; Dostoievsky, Buried Alive, 1881 ; Rosen, Memoiren eines Decabristen, 1870. . A. K.)

STBSAGAR, or SrEBsAUGOR, a British district of India, in the upper valley of the province of Assam, lying be- tween 26°19’ and 27°16’ N. lat. and 93° 21’ and 95° 25’ K, long., and covering an area of 2855 square miles. It ig bounded on the N. and E. by Lakhimpur district, on the S. by independent Naga territory, and on the W. by the Nowgong and Naga Hills districts. Sibsagar consists of a level plain, much overgrown with grass and jungle, and intersected by numerous tributaries of the Brahma- jutra. It is divided by the little stream Disai into two tracts, which differ in soil and general appearance. The surface of the eastern portion is very flat, the general level being broken only by the long lines of embankments raised by the Aham kings to serve both as roadways and as a protection against floods. The soil consists of a heavy loam of a whitish colour, which is well adapted for rice cultivation. West of the Disai, though the surface soil is of the same character, the general aspect is diver- sified by the protrusion of the subsoil, which consists of a stiff clay abounding in iron nodules, and is furrowed by frequent ravines and water-courses, which divide the cul- tivable fields into innumerable small sunken patches or holas, The chief

river is the Brahmaputra, which is navi- gable throughout the year by steamers and large native craft. The navigable tributaries of the Brahmaputra comprise the Dhaneswari, the Buri Dihing, the Disang, and the Dikhu, all flowing in a northerly direction from the Nagi Hills. Included within the district is the island of Maguli, which is said to have been formed by the silt brought down by the Subansiri river from the Himalayas and deposited in the wide channel of the Brahmaputra. Coal, iron, petroleum, and salt are found in the district. Wild beasts of all kinds abound, including the elephant, rhinoceros, tiger, buffalo, and deer. The climate, like that of the rest of the Assam valley, is comparatively mild and temperate, and the average annual rainfall is about 94 inches.

In 1881 the population of Sibsdgar was 370,274 (males 195,194, females 175,080), of whom Hindus numbered 339,663, Moham- inedans 15,665, hill tribes 13,829, and Christians 804. The only place of more than 5000 inhabitants is SrBsAcar (see below). Of the total area 359,225 acres were under cultivation in 1883-84, besides 78,710 acres of forests. The staple product is rice, which yields two crops in the year; tea is also extensively grown, ‘ibstgar being second only to Cachar among the tca- growing districts of India; other crops include food-grains, pulses, oil- seeds, sugar-cane, and cinchona. The local industries are limited to the weaving of silk and cotton cloth, the making of brass and lell-metal utensils, and coarse pottery. The principal exports are

iva, silk, mustard-seed, cotton, and jungle products ; the imports include salt, oil, opium, piece-goods, and misecllaneous hardware.

On the decline of the Aham dynasty Sibsagar, with the rest of

{he Assam valley, fell into the hands of the Burmese. They were ixpelled by the British in 1823, and in the following year the valley was annexed to British India. The British, however, were indisposed to undertake the responsibilities of admiistration be- yond what scemed absolutely necessary. The country now forming Sibsagar district, together with the southern portion of Lakhimpur, was placed under the rule of Raja Purandhar Sinh, on his agreeing to pay an annual tribute of £5000. Owing to the raja’s misrule, Sibsigar was reduced to a state of great poverty, and, as he was unable to pay the annual tribute, the territories were resumed by

the Governnicnt of India, and in 1838 Sibsdgar was placed under the direct management of a British officer. The tea industry soon brought back prosperity, and the Sibsagar peasants now rank ainong the most eontented and wealthy in Assam.

SIBSAGAR, chief town and civil headquarters of the above district, is situated about 11 miles south from the

Brahmaputra, being picturesquely placed around a magni- ficent tank covering an area of 114 acres. Besides the houses of the civil officials, it possesses a straggling bazaar, in which a brisk business is carried on during the cold season with the neighbouring hill tribes. In 1881 the population of the town was 5868.

SIBYL. Certain women who prophesied under the in- spiration of a deity were called by the Greeks Sibyls. The inspiration manifested itself outwardly in distorted features, foaming mouth, and frantic gestures. The notion that hysterical, convulsive, and epileptic affections are proof of divine inspiration has been common all over the world (see Tylor's Primitive Culture, ii. p. 131 sqg.). Homer does not refer to a Sibyl, nor does Herodotus. The first Greek writer, so far as we know, who does so is Heraclitus (flourished about 500 z.c.). As to the number and native countries of the Sibyls much diversity of opinion prevailed, as is evinced by the contradictory statements of ancient writers. Aristophanes, Plato, and the author of the Oav- pdova dkotopara, attributed to Aristotle, appear to know of only one Sibyl. Heraclides Ponticus, a pupil of Plato, seems to: be the first writer who distinguished several Sibyls,—the Erythrean, the Phrygian, and the Helles- pontine. Later writers speak of two, three, four, eight, ten, and twelve. Pausanias (x. 12) enumerates four. Ac- cording to him, the oldest was the Libyan! Sibyl, a daughter of Zeus and Lamia. The second was Hero- phile, a native of Marpessus or Erythre in the Troad ; she lived mostly in Samos, but visited Clarus, Delos, and Delphi. She lived before the Trojan War, which she is said to have predicted. The third was the Sibyl of Cume in Italy, and the fourth was a Hebrew Sibyl called Sabbe ; others, however, called the last-mentioned Sibyl a Babylonian or Egyptian. According to Plutarch (De Pyth. Orac., 9), the first Sibyl was she of Delphi.

Varro enumerates ten Sibyls,—the Persian, Libyan, Del- phic, Cimmerian, Erythrean, Samian, Cuman, Hellespont- ine, Phrygian, and Tiburtine. The Sibyl of whom we hear most was the Sibyl of Cume, whom Aineas consulted before his descent to Hades, She was supposed to live 1000 years. It was she who sold to Tarquin the Proud the Sibylline books. She first offered him nine ; when he refused them, she burned three and offered him the remaining six at the same price; when he again re- fused them, she burned three more and offered him the re- maining three still at the same price. Tarquin then bought them. They were entrusted to a college of fifteen men (quindecemviri sacris factundis), who preserved them and consulted them on occasions of national danger. It would seem that they were consulted with a view to discover, not exact predictions of definite future events, but the religious observances necessary to avert extraordinary calamities and expiate prodigies. They were written in hexameter verse and in Greek; hence the college of curators was always assisted by two Greek interpreters. The books were kept in the temple of Jupiter on the Capitol and shared the destruction of the temple by fire in 83 Bc. After the restoration of the temple the senate sent ambassadors in 76 to Erythre to collect the oracles afresh and they brought back about 1000 verses; others were collected in Ilium, Samos, Sicily, Italy, and Africa. In the year 12 Augustus sought out and burned a great many spurious oracles and subjected the Sibylline books to a critical revision ; they were then placed by him in the temple of Apollo Patrous, where we hear of them still existing in 363. They seem to have been burned by Stilicho shortly after 400. Accord- ing to the researches of Klausen (neas und die Penates,

1 There is a gap in the text of Pausanias, and his meaning is not quite certain.

Geogra- phical position.

Hamburg, 1839-40), the oldest collection of Sibylline oracles appears to have been made about the time of Solon and Cyrus at Gergis on Mount Ida in the Troad ; it was attributed to the Sibyl of Marpessus and was pre- served in the temple of Apollo at Gergis. Thence it passed -to Erythree,

where it became famous. It was this very collection, it would appear, which found its way to Cume and from Cum to Rome.

SIB—SIC

The collection of so-called Sibylline oracles which has descended to us is obviously spurious, bearing marks of Jewish and Christian origin. Ewald assigns the oldest of them to about 124 B.c. and the latest to about 668-672 a.p. They have been edited by Fried- lieb (Leipsic, 1852) and Alexandre (2d ed., Paris, 1869). For an examination of the different lists of Sibyls, sce E. Maass, De Stbyl- larum Indicibus, Berlin, 1879.

SIBYLLINE BOOKS. TURE, vol. ii. p, 177.

See APocALYPTIC LITERA-

SPECI®

Part I.—HisrTory.

ICILY, slightly surpassed by Sardinia in superficial extent, is, in its geographical and historical position,

the greatest island of the Mediterranean. As such it holds among European lands a position answering to that of Great Britain, the greatest island of the Ocean, and the events of their history have at more than one period brought the two islands into a close connexion with one another. The geo- graphical position of Sicily (see vol. xiii, pl. IV.) led almost as a matter of necessity to its historical position, as the meet- ing-place of the nations, the battle-field of contending races and creeds. Lying nearer to the mainland of Europe and nearer to Africa than any other of the great Mediterranean islands, Sicily is, next to Spain, the connecting link between those two quarters of the world. It stands also as a break- water between the eastern and western divisions of the Medi- terranean Sea. In pre-historic times those two divisions were two vast lakes, and Sicily is a surviving fragment of the land which once parted the two united seas and united the continents which are now distinct. That Sicily and Africa were once joined we know only from modern scien- tific research ; that Sicily and Italy were once joined is handed down in legend,

unless the legend itself is not rather an obvious guess, Sicily then, comparatively near to Africa, but much nearer to Europe, has been a European land, but one specially open to invasion and settlement from Africa, Dividing the eastern and western basins of the Mediter- ranean, it has been a part of western Europe, but a part which has had specially close relations with eastern Europe. It has stood at various times in close connexion with Greece, with Africa, and with Spain ; but its closest connexion has been with the neighbouring land of Italy. Still Italy and Sicily are thoroughly distinct lands, and the history of Sicily should never be looked on as simply part of the history of Italy. Lying thus between Europe and Africa, Sicily has been the battle-field of Europe and Africa. That is to say, it has been at two separate periods the battle-field of Aryan and Semitic man. In the later stage of the strife it has been the battle-field of Christendom and Islam. This history Sicily shares with Spain to the west of it and with Cyprus to the east. And with Spain the island has had several direct points of connexion, There was in all likelihood a near kindred between the earliest inhabitants of the two lands. In later times Sicily was ruled by Spanish kings, both alone and in union with other king- doms. The connexion with Africa has consisted simply in the settlement of conquerors from Africa at two periods, first Phoenician, then Saracen. On the other hand Sicily has been more than once made the road to African con- quest and settlement, both by Sicilian princes and by the Roman masters of Sicily. The connexion with Greece, the most memorable of all, has consisted in the settlement of many colonies from old Greece, which gave the island the most brilliant part of its history, and which made the greater part practically Greek. This Greek element was strengthened at a later time by the long connexion of Sicily with the Eastern, the Greek-speaking, division of

the Roman empire. And the influence of Greece on Sicily has been repaid in more than one shape by Sicilian rulers who have at various times held influence’ and dominion in Greece and elsewhere beyond the Hadriatic (Adriatic), The connexion between Sicily and Italy begins with the primitive kindred between some of the oldest elements in each, Then came the contemporary Greek colonization in both lands. Then came the tendency in the dominant powers in southern Italy to make their way into Sicily also. Thus the Roman occupation of Sicily ended the struggle between Greek and Pheenician. Thus the Norman occupation ended the

struggle between Greek and Saracen. Of this last came the long connexion between Sicily and southern Italy under several dynasties. Lastly comes the late absorption of Sicily in the modern kingdom of Italy. The result of these various forms of Italian influence has been that all the other tongues of the island have died out before the advance of a peculiar dialect of Italian. In religion again both Islam and the Eastern form of Christianity have given way to its Italian form. The connexion with England amounts to this, that both islands came under Norman dynasties, that under Norman rule the intercourse between the two countries was ex- tremely close, and that the last time that Sicily was the seat of a separate power it was under British protection. The Pheenician, whether from old Phoenicia or from Car- thage, came from lands which were mere strips of sea-coast with a boundless continent behind them. The Greek of old Hellas came from a land of islands, peninsulas, and inland seas. So did the Greek of Asia, though he had, like the Pheenician, a vast continent behind him. In Sicily they all found a strip of sea-coast with an inland region behind ; but the strip of sea-coast was not like the broken coast of Greece and Greek Asia, and the inland region was not a boundless continent like Africa or Asia. In Sicily therefore the Greek became more continental, and the Phoe- nician became more insular, than either nation had been in its own land, Neither people ever occupied the whole island: the presence of the other hindered either from occupying even the whole of the coast; nor was either people ever able to spread its dominion over the earlier inhabitants very far inland. Sicily thus remained a world of its own, with interests and disputes of its own, and divided among in- habitants of various nations. The history of the Greeks of Sicily is constantly connected with the history of old Hellas, but it runs a separate course of its own. Their position answers somewhat to that of the English people of the United States with regard to the mother-country of Great Britain. It differs in this, that the independence of the Greek cities in Sicily was not the result of warfare with the mother-country. Otherwise the analogy would have been almost exact, if France or Spain had kept its old power in North America. The Phcenician element ran an opposite course, as the independent Pheenician settlements in Sicily sank into dependencies of Carthage. The entrance of the Romans put an end to all practical independence on the part of either nation. But Roman ascendency did not affect Greeks and Pheenicians in the same way. Pheenician

life gradually died out. But Roman ascendency nowhere crushed out Greek life where it already existed, and in some ways it strengthened it. Though the Greeks never spread their dominion over the island, they made a peace- ful conquest of it. This process was in no way hindered by the Roman dominion; the work of assimilation went on still faster.

The question now comes, Who were the original inhabit- ants of Sicily? The island itself, ZuceAta, Secilia, plainly takes its name from the Sikels (ZuxeAot, Stculi), a people whom we find occupying a great part of the island, chiefly east of the river Gela. They appear also in Italy, in the toe of the boot, and older history or tradition spoke of them as having in earlier days held a large place in Latium and elsewhere in central Italy. They were believed to have crossed the strait into the island about 300 years before the beginning of the Greek settlements, that is to say in the 11th century B.c. They found in the island a people called Sikans (Zcxavoi, Sicant), whose name might pass for a dialectic form of their own, did not the ancient writers straitly affirm them to be a wholly distinct people,

of the highest forms of Aryan and of Semitic man that the history of Sicily draws its highest interest. Of Phoenician occupation there are two, or rather three, marked periods. We must always remember that Carthage —the new city—was one of the latest of Phcenician founda- tions, and that the days of the Carthaginian dominion show us only the latest form of Pheenician life. Phe- nician settlement in Sicily began before Carthage became great, perhaps before Carthage came into being. A crowd of small settlements from the old Pheenicia, settlements for trade rather than for dominion, factories rather than colonies, grew up on promontories and small islands all round the Sicilian coast. These were unable to withstand the Greek settlers, and the Pheenicians of Sicily withdrew step by step to form three considerable towns in the north- west corner of the island,—Motye, Soloeis or Solunto, on a hill overhanging the sea on the north coast, and the great

Panormos, the all-haven (see PALERMO), the city destined to be, in two different periods of the world's history, the head of Semitic power in Sicily.

Our earlier notices of Sicily, of Sikels and Sikans, in the Greek Homeric poems and elsewhere, are vague and legendary, coloniza-

akin to the Iberians, Sikans also appear with the Ligurians Both races appear as given to the buying and selling. of #™

among the early inhabitants of Italy (Virg., @n., vii. 795,

viii. 328, xi. 317, and Servius's note). It is possible then that the likeness of name is accidental, that the Sikels belonged to the same branch of the Aryan family as the Italians, while Sikans, like Ligurians and Iberians and the surviving Basques, belonged to the earlier non-Aryan population of western Europe. But, whatever the origin of either, in the history of the island Sikans and Sikels appear as two distinct nations with a clear geographical boundary. And we may venture to set down the Sikels as undeveloped Latins, who were hindered by the coming of the Greeks from reaching the same independent national life as their kinsfolk in Italy, and, instead of so doing, were gradually Hellenized. On the other hand, some Sikel elements made their way into the Greek life of Sicily. That the Sikels spoke a tongue closely akin to Latin is plain from several Sikel words which crept into Sicilian Greek, and from the Sikeliot system of weights and measures,—utterly unlike anything in old Greece. When the Greek settlements began, the Sikans had hardly got beyond the life of villages on hill-tops (Dion. Hal., v. 6), more truly perhaps villages with places of shelter on the hill-tops. The more advanced Sikels had their hill- forts also, but they had learned the advantages of the sea, and they already had settlements on the coast when the Greeks came. As we go on, we hear of both Sikel and Sikan towns; but we may suspect that any approach to true city life was owing to Greek influences. Neither people grew into any form of national unity. There was neither common king nor common confederation either of Sikels or of Sikans. They were therefore partly subdued, partly assimilated, slowly, but without much effort.

In the north-east corner of the island we find a small territory occupied by a people who seem to have made much greater advances towards-civilized

life. The Elymoi were a people of uncertain origin, but they claimed a mixed descent, partly Trojan, partly Greek. Thucydides however unhesitatingly reckons them among barbarians. They had considerable towns, as Segesta (the Greek Egesta) and Eryx, and the whole history, as well as the remains, of Segesta, shows that Greek influences prevailed among them very early. In short, we find in the island three nations distinct from the Greeks, two of which at least easily adopted Greek culture and came in the end to pass for Greeks by adoption.

But, as we have already seen, the Greeks were not the first colonizing people who were drawn to the great island. As in Cyprus and in the islands of the Aigzan, the Phoenicians were before them. And it is from this presence

slaves (Od., xx. 383, xxiv. 30, 210). The intimate con- nexion between old Hellas and: Sicily begins with the foundation of the Sicilian Naxos by Chalkidians of Euboia under Theokles, which is assigned to the year 735 3.0. The site, a low promontory on the east coast, immediately below the height of Tauromenion, marks an age which had advanced beyond the hill-fortress and which thoroughly valued the sea, The next year Corinth began her system of settlement in the west: Korkyra (Corcyra), the path to Sicily, and Syracuse on the Sicilian coast were planted as parts of one enterprise. From this time, for about 150 years, Greek settlement in the island, with some intervals, goes steadily on. Both Ionian and Dorian colonies were planted, both from the older Greek lands and from the older Sicilian settlements. The east coast, nearest to Greece and richest in good harbours, was occupied first. Here, between Naxos and Syracuse, arose the Ionian cities of Leontinoi and Katana (Catina, Catania) and the Dorian Megara by Hybla. Settlement on the south-western coast began about 688 B.c. with the joint Cretan and Rhodian settle- ment of Gela, and went on in the foundation of Selinous (the most distant Greek city on this side), of Kamarina (Camarina), and in 588 B.c. of the Geloan settlement of Akragas (Agrigentum, Girgenti), planted on a high hill, a little way from the sea, which became the second. city of Hellenic Sicily. On the north coast the Ionian Himera was the only Greek city in Sicily itself, but the Knidians founded Lipara in the AZolian Islands. At the north-east corner, opposite to Italy, and commanding the strait, arose Zankle, a city of uncertain date and

mixed origin, better known under its later name of Messana (Messene, Messina).

Thus nearly all the east coast of Sicily, a great part of the south coast, and a much smaller part of the north, passed into the hands of Greek settlers,—Sikeliots (ZsKe- AvGrat), as distinguished from the native Sikels. This was one of the greatest advances ever made by the Greek people. The Greek element began to be predominant in the island. Among the earlier inhabitants the Sikels were already be- coming adopted Greeks. Many of them gradually sank into a not wholly unwilling subjection as cultivators of the soil under Greek masters,—a relation embodied perhaps in the legend that a native Sikel prince led the Greek settlers to the foundation of Megara. But there were also inde- pendent Sikel towns in the interior, and there was a strong religious intercommunion between the two races. Sikel Henna (Enna, Castrogiovanni) is the special seat of the worship of Demeter and her daughter. The Sikans, on

the other hand, seem more distinct and more steadily hostile. The Phcenicians, now shut up in one corner of the island, with Selinous on one side and Himera on the other founded right in their teeth, are bitter enemies ; but the time of their renewed greatness under the headship of Carthage has not yet come. The 7th century B.c. and the early part of the 6th were a time in which the Greek cities of Sicily had their full share in the general prosperity of the Greek colonies everywhere. For a while they out- stripped the cities of old Greece. Their political constitu- tions were aristocratic ; that is, the franchise was confined to the descendants of the original settlers, round whom an excluded body (d#p0s or plebs) was often growing up. The ancient kingship was perhaps kept on or renewed in some of the Sikeliot and Italiot towns; but it is more certain that civil dissensions led very early to the rise of tyrants. The first and most famous is Phalaris of Akragas, whose exact date is uncertain, whose letters are now cast aside,

‘ and whose brazen bull has been called in question, but

Growth of tyran- nies

Gelon.

who clearly rose to power very soon after the foundation of Akragas. Under his rule the city at once sprang to the first place in Sicily, and he was the first Sikeliot ruler who held dominion over two Greek cities, Akragas and Himera. This time of prosperity was also a time of intel- lectual progress. To say nothing of lawgivers like Char- ondas, the line of Sikeliot poets began early, and the cir- cumstances of the island, the adoption of many of its local traditions and beliefs—perhaps a certain intermingling of native blood—gave the intellectual life of Sicily a char- acter in some things distinct from that of old Hellas. Stesichoros of Himera (c. 632-556 B.c.) holds a great place among the lyric poets of Greece, and some place in the political history of Sicily as the opponent of Phalaris. The architecture and sculpture of this age have also left some of their most remarkable monuments among the Greek cities of Sicily (see Syracuse). The remains of the old temples of Selinous, attributed to the 7th century B.c., show us the Doric style in its earlier state, and the sculp- tures of their metopes (preserved at Palermo) are as dis- tinctly grotesque as any Romanesque sculpture of the 11th or 12th century. In both ages the art of the builder was far in advance of that of the ornamental carver.

This first period of Sicilian history lasts as long as Sicily remains untouched from any non-Hellenic quarter outside, and as long as the Greek cities in Sicily remain as a rule independent of one another. A change begins in the 6th century and is accomplished early in the 5th. The Phoeni- cian settlements in Sicily become dependent on Carthage, whose growing power begins to be dangerous to the Greeks of Sicily. Meanwhile the growth of tyrannies in the Greek cities was beginning to group several towns together under a single master, and thus to increase the greatness of particular cities at the expense of their freedom. Thus Theron of Akragas (488-472), who bears a good character there, acquired also, like Phalaris, the rule of Himera. One such power held dominion both in Italy and Sicily. Anaxilaos of Rhegion, by a long and strange tale of treachery, occupied Zankle and changed its name to Mes- sana. But the greatest of the Sikeliot powers

began at Gela in 505, and was in 485 translated by Gelon to Syra- cuse. That city now became the centre of a greater dominion over both Greeks and Sikels than the island had ever before seen. But Gelon, like several later tyrants of Syracuse, takes his place—and it is the redeeming point in the position of all of them—as the champion of Hellas against the barbarian. The great double invasion of 480 B.c.was planned in concert by the barbarians of the East and the West (Diod., xi. 20; schol. on Pind., Pyth.,i. 146; Grote, v. 294). While the Persians threatened old Greece, Carth- age threatened the Greeks of Sicily. There were Sikeliots

who played the part of the Medizers in Greece: Selinous was on the side of Carthage, and the coming of Hamilkar was immediately brought about by a tyrant of Himera driven out by Theron. But the united power of Gelon and Theron crushed the invaders in the great battle of Himera, won, men said, on. the same day as Salamis, and the victors of both were coupled as the joint deliverers of Hellas (Herod., vii. 165-167; Diod., xx. 20-25; Pind., Pyth., i. 147-156 ; Simonides, fr. 42; Polyainos, i. 27). But, while the victory of Salamis was followed by a long war with Persia, the peace which was now granted to Carthage stayed in force for seventy years. Gelon was

followed by his brother Hieron (478-467), the special Hiern |

subject of the songs of Pindar. Akragas meanwhile! flourished under Theron; but a war between him and Hieron led to slaughter and new settlement at Himera. These transplantings from city to city began under Gelon and went on under Hieron. They made speakers in old Greece (Thuc., vi. 17) contrast the permanence of habi- tation there with the constant changes in Sicily. Hieron won the fame of a founder by peopling Katana with new citizens, and changing its name to Aitna.

None of these tyrannies were long-lived. The power of Theron fell to pieces under his son Thrasydaios. When the power of Hieron passed in 467 B.c. to his brother Thrasyboulos the freedom of Syracuse was won by a combined movement of Greeks and Sikels, and the Greek cities gradually settled

down as they had been before the tyrannies, only with a change to democracy in their con- stitutions. The mercenaries who had received citizenship from the tyrants were settled at Messana. About fifty years of general prosperity followed. We have special pictures of almost incredible wealth and luxury at Akra- gas, chiefly founded on an African trade. Moreover art, science, poetry, had all been encouraged by the tyrants, and they went on flourishing in the free states, To these was now added the special growth of freedom, the art of public speaking. Epicharmos (540-450), carried as a babe to Sicily, is a link between native Sikeliots and the strangers invited by Hieron; as the founder of the local Sicilian comedy, he ranks among Sikeliots. After him Sophron of Syracuse gave the Sicilian mzmes a place among the forms of Greek poetry. But the intellect of free Sicily struck out higher paths. Empedokles of Akragas is best known from the legends of his miracles and of his death in the fires of Autna; but he was not the less philosopher, poet, and physician, besides his political career. It is vaguely implied (Diog. Laert., vill. 2, 9) that he refused an offer of the tyranny or of authority in some shape. Gorgias of Leontinoi (c. 480-375) had a still more direct influence on Greek culture, as father of the technical schools of rhetoric throughout Greece. Architecture too advanced, and the Doric style gradually lost somewhat of its ancient massiveness. The temple at Syracuse which is now the metropolitan church belongs to the earlier days of this time. It is followed by the later temples at Selinous, among them the temple of Zeus, which is said to have been the greatest in Sicily, and by the wonderful series at Akragas, crowned by the Olympian temple, with its many architectural singularities. This, like its fellow at Selinous, was not fully finished at the time of the Carthaginian inroad at the end of the century.

During this time of prosperity there was no dread of Conde a war tion a between Segesta and Lilybaion (Lilybeum). There was as a i

Carthaginian inroads. But in 454 B.c. we read of

yet no town of Lilybaion; but, if the war was waged gikans

against any Phcenician settlement, the fact is to be noticed, as hitherto Segesta has been allied with the Phcenicians against the Greeks. Far more

important are our notices of the earlier inhabitants. For now comes the great Sikel

movement under Douketios, who, between force and per- suasion, came nearer towards uniting his people into one body than had ever been done before. From his native hill-top of Menai, rising above the lake dedicated to the Palikoi, the native deities whom Sikels and Greeks alike honoured, he brought down his people to the new city of Palikai in the plain. His power grew, and Akragas could withstand him only by.the help of Syracuse. Alternately victorious and defeated, spared by Syracuse (451), sent to be safe at Corinth, he came back to Sicily only to form greater plans than before. War between Akragas and Syracuse enabled him to carry out his schemes, and, with the help of another Sikel prince who bore the Greek name of Archomides, he founded Kale Akte on the northern coast. But his work was cut short by his death in 440; the hope of the Sikel people now lay in assimilation to their Hellenic neighbours. Douketios's own foundation of Kale Akte lived on, and we presently hear of Sikel towns under kings and tyrants, all marking an approach to Greek life. Roughly speaking, while the Sikels of the plain country on the east coast became subject to Syracuse, most of those in other parts of the island re- mained independent. Of the Sikans we hear less; but Hykkara in the north-west was an independent Sikan town on bad terms with Segesta. On the whole, setting aside the impassable barrier between Greek and Phoenician, other distinctions of race within the island were breaking down through the spread of the Hellenic element. Segesta was on familiar terms with both Greek and Phoenician neighbours, and had the right of intermarriage (Thuc., vi. 6) with Hellenic Selinous. Among the Greek cities them- selves the distinction between the Dorian and the Ionian or Chalkidian settlements is still keenly felt. The Ionian is decidedly the weaker element; and it was most likely owing to the rivalry between the two great Dorian cities of Syracuse and Akragas that the Chalkidian towns were able to keep any independence at all.

Up to this time the Italiot and Sikeliot Greeks have formed part of the general Greek world, while within that world they have formed a world of

their own, and Sicily has again formed a world of its own within that. Wars and conquests between Greeks and Greeks, especially on the part of Syracuse, though not wanting, have been on the whole less constant than in old Greece. It is even possible to appeal to a vein of local Sicilian patriotism, to preach a kind of Monroe doctrine by which Greeks from other lands should be shut out as strangers (4AAdgvAou, Thuc., vi. 61, 74). Presently this state of Sicilian isolation was broken in upon by the great Peloponnesian War. The Sikeliot cities were drawn into alliance with one side or the other, till the main interest of Greek history gathers for a while round the Athenian attack on Syracuse. At the very beginning of the war the Lacedzmonians looked for help from the Dorian Sikeliots. But the first active – intervention came from the other side. Conquest in Sicily was a favourite dream at Athens (Thuc., vi. 1, cf. i. 48, * and Diod., xii. 54), with a view to wider conquest or influ- ence in the western Mediterranean. An opportunity for Athenian interference was found in 427 in a quarrel be- tween Syracuse and Leontinoi and their allies. Leontinoi craved help from Athens on the ground of Ionian kindred. Her envoy was Gorgias ; his peculiar style of rhetoric was now first heard in old Greece (Diod., xii. 53, 54), and his pleadings were successful. For several years from this time (427-422) Athens plays a part, chiefly unsuccessful, in Sicilian affairs. But the particular events are of little importance, except as leading the way to the greater events that follow. The steadiest ally of Athens was the Italiot Rhegion ; Messana, with its mixed population, was repeatedly won and lost; the Sikel tributaries of Syracuse

gS CIs

17

give zealous help to the Athenians. Sikeliot and most of the Italiot cities, under the guidance of Hermokrates of Syracuse, who powerfully set forth the doctrine of Sikeliot, perhaps of Sicilian unity, agreed on a peace, Presently an internal disturbance at Leontinoi led to annexation by Syracuse. This gave the Athenians a pretext for another attempt in 422. Little came of it, though Athens was joined by the Doric cities of Kamarina and Akragas, clearly out of jealousy towards Syracuse. For several years the island was left to itself.

The far more memorable interference of Athens in Sicilian affairs in the year 415 was partly in answer to the cry of the exiles of Leontinoi, partly to a quite distinct appeal from the Elymian Segesta. That city, an ally of Athens, asked for Athenian help against its Greek neighbour Selinous. In a dispute, partly about bound- aries, partly about the right of intermarriage between the Hellenic and the Hellenizing city, Segesta was hard pressed. She vainly asked for help at Akragas—some say at Syra- cuse (Diod., xii. 82)—and even at Carthage. The last appeal was to Athens. But the claims of Segesta and Leontinoi are soon forgotten in the struggle for life and death between Syracuse and Athens.

The details of the great Athenian expedition (415-413) Athenian belong partly to the political history of Athens, partly to expedi- that of Syracuss (q.v.).. But its results make it a marked wer

epoch in Sicilian history, and the Athenian plans, if suc- cessful, would have changed the whole face of the West. If the later stages of the struggle were remarkable for the vast number of Greek cities engaged on both sides, and for the strange inversion of relations among them on which Thucydides (vii. 57, 58) comments, the whole war was yet more remarkable for the large entrance of the barbarian element into the Athenian reckonings. The war was undertaken on behalf of Segesta; the Sikels gave Athens valuable help ; the greater barbarian powers out of Sicily also came into play. Some help actually came from Etruria. But Carthage was more far-sighted. If Syra- cuse was an object of jealousy, Athens, succeeding to her dominion, creating a power too nearly alike to her own, would have provoked far greater jealousy. So Athens found no active support save at Naxos and Katana, though Akragas, if she would not help the invaders, at least gave no help to her own rival. The war is instruct- ive in many ways: it reminds us of the general conditions of Greek seamanship when we find that Korkyra was the meeting-place for the allied fleet, and that Syracuse was reached only by a coasting voyage along the shores of Greek Italy. We are struck also by the low military level of the Sicilian Greeks. The Syracusan heavy-armed are as far below those of Athens as those of Athens are below those of Sparta. The gwasi-continental character of Sicily causes Syracuse, with its havens and its island, to be looked on, in comparison with Athens, as a land power (jrepGrat, Thuc., vii. 21). That is to say, the Sikeliot level

represents the general Greek level as it stood before the wars in which Athens won and defended her doniinion. The Greeks of Sicily had had no such military practice as the Greeks of old Greece; but an able commander could teach both Sikeliot soldiers and Sikeliot seamen to out- manceuvre Athenians. The main result of the expedition, as regards Sicily, was to bring the island more thoroughly into the thick of Greek affairs. Syracuse, threatened with destruction by Athens, was saved by the zeal of her metropolis Corinth in stirring up the Peloponnesian rivals of Athens to help her. Gylippos came; the second Athenian fleet came and perished. Syracuse was saved ; all chance of Athenian dominion in Sicily or elsewhere in the West came to an end. Syracuse repaid the debt by good service to the Peloponnesian cause, and from that XXIT. — 3

But in 424 all the 454-413B.c.

18

413-3923,.c. time the mutual influence of Sicily and old Greece upon

Pheeni- cian in-

vasion under

Hanni-

bal.

Diony- sios I.

one another is far stronger than in earlier times.

But before the war in old Greece was over, seventy years after the great victory of Gelon (410), the Greeks of Sicily had to undergo barbarian invasion on a vaster scale than ever. The disputes between Segesta and Selinous called in these enemies also. Carthage stepped in as the ally of Segesta, the enemy of her old ally Selinous. Her leader was Hannibal, grandson and avenger of the Hamilkar who had died at Himera. In 408, at the head of a vast mer- cenary host, he sailed to Sicily, attacked Selinous,

and stormed the town after a murderous assault of nine days, while the other Sikeliot cities; summoned to help, were still lingering. The walls and temples were overthrown ; the mass of the people were massacred; the few who escaped were allowed to return to the dismantled site as tributaries of Carthage; and the city never recovered its old greatness. Thence Hannibal went on to Himera, with the special mission of avenging his grandfather. By this time the other Greek cities were stirred to help, while Sikels and Sikans joined Hannibal; the strife was distinctly a strife of Greeks and barbarians. At last Himera was stormed, and 3000 of its citizens were solemnly slaughtered on the spot where Hamilkar had died. Himera ceased to exist; but the Carthaginians founded the new town of Thermai (Termini) not far off, to which the name is some- times laxly applied. The Phcenician possessions in Sicily now stretched across the island from Himera to Selinous. The next victim was Akragas; its defenders, natives and allies, quarrelled among themselves; the mass of the people forsook the city, and found shelter at Gela and elsewhere. The few who were left were slaughtered ; the town was sacked and the walls destroyed. Akragas was presently restored, and it has lived on to this day ; but it never recovered its old greatness.

Meanwhile the revolutions of Syracuse affected the his- tory of Sicily and of the whole Greek world. Dionysios the tyrant began his reign of thirty-eight years in the first months of 405. Almost at the same moment, the new Carthaginian commander, Himilkon, attacked Gela and Kamarina. Dionysios, coming to the help of Gela, was defeated, and was charged with treachery. He now made the mass of the people of both towns find shelter at Syra- cuse. But now the plague led Himilkon to ask for peace. Carthage was confirmed in her possession of Selinous, Himera, and Akragas, with some Sikan districts which had opposed her. The people of Gela and Kamarina were allowed to occupy their unwalled towns as tributaries of Carthage. Leontinoi, latterly a Syracusan fort, as well as Messana and all the Sikels, were declared independent, while Dionysios was acknowledged as master of Syracuse. No war was ever more grievous to freedom and civiliza- tion. More than half Sicily was now under barbarian dominion ; several of its noblest cities had perished, and a tyrant was established in the greatest. The 5th century B.C., after its central years of freedom and prosperity, ended in far deeper darkness than it had begun. The minuter account of Dionysios

belongs to Syracusan history ; but his position, one unlike anything that had been before seen in Sicily or elsewhere in Hellas, forms an epoch in the history of Europe. His only bright side is his cham- plonship of Hellas against the Phcenician, and this is balanced by his settlements of barbarian mercenaries in several Greek cities. Towards the native races his policy varied according to momentary interests; but on the whole his reign tended to bring the Sikels more and more within the Greek pale. His dominion is Italian as well as Sicilian; his influence, as an ally of Sparta, is important in old Greece; while, as a hirer of mercenaries everywhere, he had wider relations than any earlier Greek

with the nations of western Europe. He further opened new fields for Greek settlement on both sides of the Hadriatic. In short, under him Sicily became for the first time the seat of a great European power, while Syracuse, as its head, became the greatest of European citios. His reign was unusually long for a Greek tyrant, and his career furnished a model for other rulers and invaders of Sicily. With him in truth begins tliat wider range of Greek warfare, policy, and dominion which the Macedonian kingdoms carry on. The master of such a dominion becomes the improver of the military art. With him begins the employment of ships greater than the old triremes, of more effective engines in sieges, and that combined use of troops of various arms and nations which Alexander carried to perfection.

The reign of Dionysios (405-367) is divided into marked His war periods by four wars with Carthage, in 397-396, 392, 383, withCar|

and 368. In the first war his home power was all but overthrown ; but he lived through the storm, and extended his dominion over Naxos, Katana, and Leontinoi. All three perished as Greek cities. Katana was the first Sikeliot city to receive a settlement of Campanian mer-

cenaries, while others settled in non-Hellenic Entella.-

Naxos was settled by Sikels ; Leontinoi was again merged in Syracuse. Now begin the dealings of Dionysios with Italy, where the Rhegines, kinsmen of Naxos and Katana, planned a fruitless attack on him in common with Messana. He then sought a wife at Rhegion, but was refused with scorn, while Lokroi (Locri) gladly gave him Doris. The two cities afterwards fared accordingly. In the first war with Carthage, the Greek cities under Carthaginian dominion or dependence helped him ; so did Sikans and Sikels, which last had among them some stirring leaders; Elymian Segesta clave to Carthage. Dionysios took the Phoenician strong- hold of Motye ; but Himilkon recovered it, destroyed Mes- sana, founded the hill-town of Tauromenion (Taormina) above Naxos for Sikels who had joined him, defeated the fleet. of Dionysios, and besieged Syracuse. Between in- vasion and home discontent, the tyrant was all but lost; but the Spartan Pharakidas stood his friend ; the Cartha- ginians again suffered from pestilence ; and Himilkon went away defeated, taking with him his Carthaginian troops and forsaking his allies. Gela, Kamarina, Himera, Seli- nous, Akragas itself, now passed into the dependent alliance of Dionysios. The Carthaginian dominion was cut down to what it had been before Hannibal's invasion. The lord of Syracuse had grown at the cost of Greek and barbarian alike.

He planted mercenaries at Leontinoi, conquered some Sikel towns, central Henna among them, and made alliances with others. He restored Messana, peopling it with motley settlers, among whom were some of the old Messenians from Peloponnesos. But the Spartan masters of the old Messenian land grudged this possible begin- ning of a new Messenian power. Dionysios therefore moved his Messenians to a point on the north coast, where they founded Tyndaris. He clearly had a special eye to that region. He took the Sikel Kephaloidion (Cefalit), and even the old Phcenician border-fortress of Solous was betrayed to him. He beat back a Rhegine expedi-

| tion; but his advance was checked by a failure to take

the new Sikel settlement of Tauromenion. His enemies of all races now declared themselves. Many of the Sikels forsook him ; Akragas declared herself independent ; Car- thage herself, stirred by the loss of Solous, again took the field.

The Punic war of 392-391 was not very memorable. Both sides failed in their chief enterprises, and the main interest of the story comes from the glimpses which we get of the Sikel states. Most of them joined the Cartha-

|

age,

HISTORY. |

ginian leader Mago; but he was successfully withstood at Agyrion by Agyris, the ally of Dionysios, who is described as a tyrant second in power to Dionysios himself. This way of speaking would imply that Agyrion had so far advanced in Greek ways as to run the usual course of a Greek commonwealth. The two tyrants drove Carthage to a peace by which she abandoned all her Sikel allies to Dionysios. This time he took Tauromenion and settled it with his mercenaries. For new colonists of this kind the established communities of all races were making way. The transportations under the older tyrants had been move- ments of Greeks from one Greek site to another. Now all races are confounded.

Dionysios, now free from Phoenician warfare, gave his mind to enterprises which raised his power to its greatest height. In the years 390-387 he warred against the Italiot cities in alliance with their Lucanian enemies. Rhegion, Kroton (Croton), the whole toe of the boot, were conquered. Their lands were given to Lokroi; their citizens were taken to Syracuse, sometimes as slaves, sometimes as citizens. The master of barbarians fell below the lowest Hellenic level when he put the brave Rhegine general Phyton to a lingering death, and in other cases imitated the Cartha- ginian cruelty of crucifixion. Conqueror of southern Italy, he turned his thoughts yet further, and became the first ruler of Sicily to stretch forth his hands towards the eastern peninsula. In the Hadriatic he helped Hellenic extension. He planted directly and indirectly some settlements in Apulia, while Syracusan exiles founded the more famous Ankon or Ancona. On the east coast he founded Lissos ; he helped the Parians in their settlements of Issa and Pharos; he took into his pay Illyrian warriors with Greek arms, and helped the Molottian Alketas to win back part of his kingdom. He was even charged with plotting with his Epeirot ally to plunder Delphoi. This even

Sparta would not endure; Dionysios had to content himself with sending a fleet along the west coast of Italy, to carry off the wealth of the great temple of Agylla or Czre.

In old Greece men now said that the Greek folk was hemmed in between the barbarian Artaxerxes on the one side and Dionysios, master and planter of barbarians, on the other. These feelings found expression when Dionysios sent his embassy to the Olympic games of 384, and when Lysias bade Greece rise against both its oppressors. Dionysios vented his wrath on those who were nearest to him, banish- ing many, among them his brother Leptines and his earliest friend Philistos, and putting many to death. He was also once more stirred up to play the part of a Hellenic champion: he made ready for yet another Punic war.

In this war (383-382) Dionysios seems for once to have had his head turned by a first success. His demand that Carthage should altogether withdraw from Sicily was met by a crushing defeat. Then came a treaty by which Carthage kept Selinous and part of the land of Akragas. The Halykos became the boundary. Dionysios had also to pay 1000 talents, which caused him to be spoken of as becoming tributary to the barbarians. In the last years of his reign we hear dimly of both Syracusan and Carthaginian operations in southern Italy. He also gave help to Sparta against Thebes, sending Gaulish and Iberian mercenaries to take part in Greek warfare. His last war with Carthage, which was going on at his death, was ended by a peace by which the Halykos remained the boundary.

The tyranny of Dionysios fell, as usual, in the second generation ; but it was kept up for ten years after his death by the energy of Philistos, now minister of his son Dionysios the Younger. It fell with the coming back of the exile Dion in 357. The tyranny had lasted so long that it was less easy than at the overthrow of the elder tyrants to fall back on an earlier state of things. It had

PTeALY

ne

been a time of frightful changes throughout Sicily, full of 392-3373.0.

breaking up of old landmarks, of confusion of races, and of movements of inhabitants. But it also saw the founda- tion of new cities. Besides Tyndaris and Tauromenion, the foundation of Alaisa marks another step in Sikel pro- gress towards Hellenism, while the Carthaginians founded their strong town and fortress of Lilybaion. Among these changes the most marked is the settlement of Campanian niercenaries in Greek and Sikel towns. Yet they too could be brought under Greek influences; they were distant kinsfolk of the Sikels, and they were the forerunners of Rome. They mark one stage of migration from Italy into Sicily.

The reign of Dionysios was less brilliant in the way of art and literature than that of Hieron. Yet Dionysios himself sought fame as a poet, and his success at Athens shows that his compositions did not deserve the full scorn of his enemies. The dithyrambic poet Philoxenos, by birth of Kythera, won his fame in Sicily, and other authors of lost poems are mentioned in various Sikeliot cities. One of the greatest losses in all Greek history is that of the writings of Philistos (436-356), the Syracusan who had seen the Athenian siege and who died in the warfare between Dion and the younger Dionysios. Through the time of both tyrants, he was, next to the actual rulers, the first man in Sicily ; but of his record of his own times we have only what filters through the recasting of Diodoros, But the most remarkable intellectual movement in Sicily at this time was the influence of the Pythagorean philo- sophy, which still lived on in southern Italy. It led, through Dion, to the several visits of Plato to Sicily under both the elder and the younger Dionysios. To architecture the time was not favourable anywhere but in Syracuse.

The time following the Dionysian tyranny was at Syra- cuse a time full of the most stirring local and personal interest, under her two deliverers Dion and Timoleon. It is less easy to make out the exact effect on the rest of Sicily of the three years' career of Dion. But we may mark that, in driving out the younger Dionysios, he was helped by a general movement of Greeks, Sikels, and Sikans. Between the death of Dion in 354 and the coming of Timoleon in 344 we hear of a time of confusion in which Hellenic life seemed likely to die out. The cities, Greek and Sikel, were occupied by tyrants. Syra- cuse was parted between several, Dionysios coming back to hold Ortygia.

general to freedom and Greek life, and the defence of the Greek cities against Carthage. The victory of the Krimisos in 340 led to a peace with Carthage with the old frontier ; but all Greek cities were to be free, and Carthage was to give no help to any tyrant. Timoleon drove out all the tyrants, and it specially marks the fusion of the two races that the people of the Sikel Agyrion were admitted to the citizenship of free Syracuse. From some towns he drove out the Campanians, and he largely invited Greek settlement, especially from the Italiot towns, which were hard pressed by the Bruttians. The Corinthian deliverer gave, not only Syracuse, but all Greek Sicily, a new lease of life, though a short one.

With Timoleon begins a series of leaders who came from old Greece to deliver or to conquer among the Greeks of Italy and Sicily. The enterprise of Dion most likely sug- gested those that followed, but Dion, as a native Syracusan, does not belong altogether to the same class. Timoleon alone was a pure republican deliverer. The Macedonian kings had established a Greek dominion in the East, and a series of princes from Sparta and Epeiros came to estab- lish in the West a Greek dominion which should balance that of the Macedonians. Archidamos, Alexander of

Timoleon’s work was threefold—the imme- Timo- diate deliverance of Syracuse, the restoration of Sicily in leon.

337-2763.c. Epeiros, Akrotatos, Kleonymos, all unsuccessfully attempted

this work in Italy; it was only Pyrrhos, the last and greatest of the series, who played any great part in Sicily. And before he came, Sicily had become the seat of a greater native power than ever. Never till the Norman came was any Sicilian dominion so famous in the world as that of the Syracusan tyrant or king Agathokles.

We have unluckily no intelligible account of Sicily during the twenty years after the death of Timoleon (337- 317). His deliverance is said to have been followed by great immediate prosperity, but wars and dissensions very soon began again. Agathokles won his first fame in war between Syracuse and Akragas. The Carthaginians played off one city and party against another,

and Agathokles, following the same policy, became in 317, by treachery and massacre, undisputed tyrant of Syracuse, and spread his dominion over many other cities. Akragas, strengthened by Syracusan exiles, now stands out again as the rival of Syracuse. The Carthaginian Hamilkar, by conduct which contrasted with the cruelty of Agathokles, won many Greek cities to the Punic alliance. Defeated in battle, with Syracuse blockaded by a Carthaginian fleet, Agathokles formed the bold idea of carrying the war into Africa. He set the model for Regulus and Scipio, and not a few later rulers of Sicily.

For more than three years (310-307) each side carried on warfare in the land of the other. Carthage was hard pressed by Agathokles, while Syracuse was no less hard pressed by Hamilkar. The force with which Agathokles invaded Africa was far from being wholly Greek; but it was

the kingly title. This was in imitation of the Macedonian leaders who divided the dominion of Alexander. The relations between the eastern and western Greek worlds are drawing closer. Agathokles in his old age took a wife of the house of Ptolemy; he gave his daughter Lanassa to Pyrrhos, and established his power east of Hadria, as the first Sicilian ruler of Korkyra. He carried on wars in the Liparean Islands and in southern Italy, and died in 289 B.c., poisoned, some said, by his own grandson. Alike more daring and more cruel than any ruler before him, he carried the arms of Sicily further afield, and made the island the seat of a greater power than any of them.

This time was not favourable to the intellectual life of Sicily. Hitherto the island had attracted men of letters from old Greece. Now several distinguished Sicilian writers either chose or were driven to find homes else- where. Tinaios of Tauromenion, scorned by Polybios, but whose great Sicilian history is none the less a loss, was banished by Agathokles, and made Athens his headquarters for the last fifty years of his long life (356-c. 260 B.c.). Dikaiarchos (Dicearchus) of Messana, geographer and phil- osopher and author of the Life of Greece, lived mainly in Peloponnesos till about 285 B.c. Euhemeros (Evemerus), despiser of the gods, who is claimed

by more than one birthplace besides Messana, lived in the service and friend- ship of the Macedonian Kassandros. Philemon too, the long-lived writer of comedy (361-262 B.c.), is claimed for Syracuse, and it was only as an adopted citizen that he spent most of his life at Athens.

On the death of Agathokles tyrants sprang up in Period various cities. Akragas, under its king Phintias, won after back for the moment somewhat of its old greatness. By a“

representatively European. Gauls, Samnites, Tyrrhenians, fought for him, while mercenary Greeks and Syracusan exiles fought for Carthage. He won many battles and

hokles, —

towns; he quelled mutinies of his own troops; by inviting and murdering Ophellas lord of Kyrene (Cyrene) he doubled his army and brought Carthage near to despair. Mean- while Syracuse, all but lost, had driven back Hamilkar, and had taken and slain him when he came again with the help of the Syracusan exile Deinokrates. Meanwhile Akragas, deeming Agathokles and the barbarians alike weakened, proclaimed freedom for the Sicilian cities under her own headship. Many towns, both Greek and Sikel, joined the confederacy. It has now become impossible to distinguish the two races; Henna and Erbessos are now the fellows of Kamarina and Leontinoi. But the hopes of Akragas were checked when Agathokles suddenly came back from Africa, landed at Selinous, and marched to Syracuse, taking one town after another. A new scheme of Sicilian union was taken up by Deinokrates, which cut short his dominion. But he now relieved Syracuse from the Carthaginian blockade; his mercenaries gained a victory over Akragas; and he sailed again for Africa, where fortune had turned against his son Archagathos, as it now did against himself. He left his sons and his army to death, bondage, or Carthaginian service, and came back to Sicily almost alone. Yet he could still gather a force which en- abled him to seize Segesta,to slay or enslave the whole popu- lation, and to settle the city with new inhabitants. This change amounts to the extinction of one of the elements in the old population of Sicily. We hear no more of Elymoi ; indeed Segesta has been practically Greek long before this. Deinokrates and Agathokles came to a kind of partnership, and a peace with Carthage, with

the old boundary, secured Agathokles in the possession of Syracuse and eastern Sicily

301).

- some stage of his African campaigns Agathokles had taken the title of king. Earlier tyrants were well pleased to be spoken of as kings; but no earlier rulers of Sicily put either their heads or their names on the coin. Agathokles now put his name, first without, and then with,

a new depopulation of Gela, he founded the youngest of Sikeliot cities, Phintias, by the mouth of the southern Himera. And Hellas was cut short by the seizure of Messana by the disbanded Campanian mercenaries of Agathokles (c. 282). They slew the men, took the women as wives, and proclaimed themselves a new people in a new city by the name of Mamertines, children of Mamers or Mars. Messana became an Italian town; hence- forth its formal name was “ Mamertina civitas.”

The Campanian occupation of Messana is the first of the chain of events which led to the Roman dominion in Sicily. As yet Rome has hardly been mentioned in Sicilian story, either for friendship or for enmity. The Mamertine settlement, the war with Pyrrhos, bring us on quickly.

Pyrrhos came as the champion of the western Greeks Pyrrhos

against all barbarians, whether Romans in Italy or Cartha- ginians in Sicily. His Sicilian war (278-276) was a mere interlude between the two acts of his war with Rome. As son-in-law of Agathokles, he claimed to be specially king of Sicily, and he held the Sicilian conquest of Korkyra as the dowry of Lanassa. With such a deliverer, deliver- ance meant submission. Pyrrhos is said to have dreamed of kingdoms of Sicily and of Italy for his two sons, the grand- sons of Agathokles, and he himself reigned for two years in Sicily as a king who came to be no less hated than the tyrants. Still as Hellenic champion in Sicily he has no peer. As European champion he has none till Roger of Hauteville. Eryx was won from the Pheenician ; Panormos first became a city of Europe; if he failed before Lilybaion, that fortress and Messana were all that was left in bar- barian hands through the whole island.

All this was but for a moment. The Greek king, on his way back to fight for Tarentum against Rome, had to cut his way through Carthaginians and Mamertines in Roman alliance. His saying that he left Sicily as a wrestling-ground for Romans and Carthaginians was the very truth of the matter. Very soon came the first war

between Rome and Carthage, the war which is best marked by its other name of the War for Sicily. It mattered much, now that Sicily was to have a barbarian master, whether that master should be the kindred barbarian of Europe or the barbarian of Asia transplanted to the shore of Africa. That question was decided for Europe, that is for Rome, now beginning her long career as European champion. That strife too gave a large part of Sicily a last day of prosperity under a native ruler who was a king and not a tyrant.

Sicily in truth never had a more hopeful champion than the second Hieron of Syracuse. The established rule of Carthage in western Sicily was now something that could well be endured alongside of the robber commonwealth at Messana. The dominion of the freebooters was spreading. Besides the whole north-eastern corner of the island, it reached inland to Agyrion and Kentoripa. The Mamer- tines leagued with other Campanian freebooters who had forsaken the service of Rome to establish themselves at Rhegion. But a new Syracusan power was growing up to meet them. Hieron, claiming descent from Gelon, pressed the Mamertines hard. He all but drove them to the surrender of Messana ; he even helped Rome to chastise her own rebels at Rhegion. The wrestling-ground was thus opened for the two barbarian commonwealths. Car- thaginian troops held the Messanian citadel against Hieron, while another party in Messana craved the help of the head of Italy. Rome, chastiser of the freebooters of Rhegion, saw Italian brethren in the freebooters of Messana. The War for Sicily began (264).

The exploits of Hieron had already won him the kingly title (270) at Syracuse, and he was the representative of Hellenic life and independence throughout the island. Partly in this character, partly as direct sovereign, he was virtual ruler of a large part of eastern Sicily. But he could not aspire to the dominion of earlier Syracusan rulers. The advance of Rome after the

retreat of Pyrrhos kept the new king from all hope of their Italian position. And presently the new kingdom exchanged independence for safety. When Rome entered Sicily as the ally of the Ma- mertines, Hieron became the ally of Carthage. But in the second year of the war (263) he found it needful to change sides, His alliance with Rome marks a great epoch in the history of the Greek nation. The kingdom of Hieron was the firstfruits out of Italy of the system by which alliance with Rome grew into subjection to Rome. He was the first of Rome's kingly vassals. His only burthen was to give help to the Roman side in war ; within his kingdom he was free, and his dominions flourished as no part of Sicily had flourished since the days of Timoleon.

During the twenty-three years of the First Punic War (264-241) the rest of the island suffered greatly. The War for Sicily was fought in and round Sicily, and the Sicilian cities were taken and retaken by the contending powers. Akragas, held by Carthage, stood a Roman siege (262) ; the Punic garrison escaped ; the inhabitants were sold into slavery. Seven years later the repeopled city was taken and burned and its walls destroyed by a Car- thaginian army. Selinous was utterly destroyed, when, towards the end of the war, Carthage gathered her whole strength again in a few points in the west. Greek Selinous and Elymian Eryx alike gave way to the new fortress of Drepanon, which, along with Lilybaion, held out till the end of the war. Segesta, subject to Carthage, still remem- bered its old traditions, and the sons of Aineas were wel- comed as deliverers by the Trojan city. Kamarina and inland Henna passed to and fro between the two powers. But the great exploit of Rome was the second winning of Panormos for Europe, and its brilliant defence against the Semitic enemy. The highest calling of the Greek had

Ss rorny

Roman people as landlord.

but not of Tauromenion. the people of Henna were massacred. held for Carthage, was for four years (214-210) the centre of an active campaign. The story of Akragas ended in plunder, slaughter, and slavery ; three years later, the story of Agrigentum began.

now, in the Western lands, passed to the Roman. treaty which ended the war Carthage ceded to Rome all her possessions in Sicily. As that part of the island which kept a national Greek government became the first king- dom dependent on Rome, so the share of Carthage became the first Roman province. One point alone did not come under either of those heads. Messana, Mamertina civitas, remained an Italian ally of Rome on Sicilian soil.

We have no picture of Sicily in the first period of Roman rule. One hundred and seventy years later, several towns within the original province enjoyed various degrees of freedom, which they had doubtless kept from the begin- ning. Besides the old ally Messana, Panormos, Segesta, with Kentoripa, Halesa, and Halikye, once Sikel but now Hellenized, kept the position of free cities (libere et im- munes, Cic., Verr., iii. 6). The rest paid tithe to the The province was ruled by a preetor sent yearly from Rome. Within the Roman pro- vince the new state of things called forth much discontent ;

but Hieron remained the faithful ally of Rome through a |

long life. On his death (215) and the accession of his

grandson Hieronymos, his dynasty was swept away by the last revolution of Greek Syracuse. against Rome, the great siege by Marcellus, the taking of the city, the addition of Hieron’s kingdom to the Roman province. side, Tauromenion and Netos, were admitted to the full privileges of Roman alliance (cf. Diod. Fr., Hoeschl., lib.

The result was revolt Two towns only, which had taken the Roman

xxiii, p. 18; Cic., Vern, iii, 6, v. 22). Tauromenion

indeed was more highly favoured than the children of

Mamers. Rome had a right to demand ships of Messana, Some towns were destroyed ; Akragas, again

The reign of Hieron was the last time of independent Greek. culture in Sicily. His great works belong to the special history of Syracuse ; but his

time marks the growth of a new form of local Sicilian genius. The spread of Hellenic culture among the Sikels had in return made a Greek home for many Sikel beliefs, traditions, and customs. Bucolic poetry is the native growth of Sicily ; in the hands of Theokritos it grew out of the germs supplied by Epi- charmos and Sophron into a distinct and finished form of the art. The poet, himself of Syracuse, went to and fro between the courts of Hieron and Ptolemy Philadelphos ; but his poetry is essentially Sicilian. So is that of his suc- cessors, both the Syracusan Moschos and Bion of Smyrna, who came to Sicily as to his natural school. The most renowned Sicilian name of this time, that of Archimedes, is hardly distinctively Sicilian. A great name in the history of science, a great name in the local history of Syracuse, he had not, like the earlier philosophers and the bucolic poets, any direct bearing on the general political or intellectual development of the island.

With the incorporation of the kingdom of Hieron into the Sicily Roman province independent Sicilian history comes to an Roman. end for many ages. Of the state of Sicily under the Roman commonwealth our chief source of knowledge is the plead- ing of Cicero against the worst Roman oppressor of Sicily, Gajus Verres. Next in importance to this come those frag- ments of Diodoros which describe the two insurrections of the slaves. Between those insurrections came the legisla- tion of Rupilius which settled the Roman system of admini- stration in Sicily. Cicero’s description comes later than all these; but the general relations between Rome and Sicily seem to have been much the same from the first occupation till the beginning of the empire. In one part of the island

By the 276-210B.0.

210 B.c.- 477 A.D.

Slave revolts.

the Roman people stepped into the position of Carthage, in another part into that of King Hieron. The allied cities kept their several terms of alliance; the free cities kept their freedom; elsewhere the land paid to the Roman

people, according to the law of Hieron, the tithe which it had paid to Hieron. But, as the tithe was let out to publicans, oppression was easy. The pretor, after the occu- pation of Syracuse, dwelled there in the palace of Hieron, as in the capital of the island. But, as a survival of the earlier state of things, one of his two questors was quartered at Lilybaion. Under the supreme dominion of Rome even the unprivileged cities kept their own laws, magistrates, and assemblies, provision being made for suits between Romans and Sicilians and between Sicilians of different cities (Verr., ii. 16). In Latin the one name Siculi takes in all the inhabitants of the island ; no distinc- tion is drawn between Greek and Sikel, or even between Greek and Pheenician cities. It is assumed that all Siculi are Greeks (Verr., ii. 3, 29, 49, 52, 65; iii. 37, 40, 73). Even in Greek, 2uxeAoé is now sometimes used instead of ZuxeAudrat, All the persons spoken of by Cicero came to have Greek names save—a most speaking exception—Gaius Heius of Mamertina civitas. Inscriptions too from Sikel and Pheenician cities are commonly Greek, even when they commemorate men with Phcenician names, coupled perhaps with Greek surnames (C.J. G., iii. 597, cf. 628). The process of Hellenization which had been so long going on had at last made Sicily thoroughly Greek. Roman con- quest itself, which everywhere carried a Greek element with it, would help this result. The corn of the fertile island was said even then to feed the Roman people. It was this character of Sicily which led to its one frightful piece of local history. The evils of slavery and the slave- trade in their worst form—the slavery of men who are their masters' equals in all but luck—reached their height in the 2d century B.c. The wars of Rome, and the system- atic piracy and kidnapping that followed them, filled the Mediterranean lands with slaves of all nations. Sicily stood out before the rest as the first land to be tilled by slave-gangs, on the estates both of rich natives and of Roman settlers. The free population naturally degener- ated and died out. The slaves were most harshly treated, and even encouraged by their masters to rob. The land was full of disorder, and the preetors shrank from enforc- ing the law against offenders, many of whom, as Roman knights, might be their own judges. Of these causes came the two great slave-revolts of the second half of the 2d century B.c. They did not stand alone in the world, but no others reached the same extent. The first outbreak was stained by some excesses, but after that we are struck with the orderly course of the rebellion. It is regular warfare. Sicily had neither native militia nor Roman army ; the slaves

therefore, strengthened by the poorer freemen, occu- pied the whole land save only the great cities ; they chose kings and founded them a capital. The chosen king of one district submits to the other for the general good. They form armies which could defeat Roman generals, and they are subdued only by efforts on the same scale as the conquest of a kingdom. For most of the slaves were men used to freedom and to arms, not a few of them Sicilian pirates. The fact that in the first war a slave named Achaios—like Davus, Geta, or Syrus—plays a chief part also tells us a good deal. The Syrian element was large, and the movement was mixed up with much of Syrian religion. But the native deities of Sicily and the holy place of the Palikoi were not forgotten. The first slave war lasted from 135 to 132, the time of Tiberius Gracchus and the fall of Numantia. The second lasted from 102 to 99, the time of the Cimbrian invasion. At other times the power of Rome might have quelled the revolt more speedily.

SsSi¢cgagkiw

[HISTORY.

The slave wars were not the only scourge that fell on Lat, Sicily. The pirates troubled the coast, and all other evils Roms were outdone by the three years' government of Verres ei

(73-70 B.c.). Besides the light which the great impeach-"~™ ment throws on the state of the island, his administration seems really to have dealt a lasting blow to its prosperity. The slave wars had not directly touched the great cities; Verres plundered and impoverished everywhere. Another blow was the occupation of Messana by Sextus Pompeius in 42 B.c. He was master of Sicily for six years, and Strabo (vi. 2, 4) attributes to this war the decayed state of several cities. To undo this mischief Augustus planted Roman colonies at Syracuse, Tauromenion, Therme, Tyn- daris, and Katana. The island thus received another Italian infusion ; but, as elsewhere, Latin in no way dis- placed Greek; it was simply set up alongside of it for certain purposes. Roman tastes now came in; Roman buildings, especially amplhitheatres, arose. But Sicily never became Roman like Gaul and Spain. The dictator Cesar designed the Roman, and Marcus Antonius the Latin, franchise for all Sicily; but neither plan was carried out. Sicily remained a province, a province of the senate and people, not of the

prince. Particular cities were promoted to higher privileges, and that was all. The Mamertines were Romans in Pliny's day ; two free cities, Kentoripa and Segesta, had become Latin ; still later, Phoe- nician Lilybaion received a Roman colony. All these were steps in the progress by which, in Sicily as elsewhere, political distinctions were broken down, till the edict of Antoninus bestowed at least the Roman name—no small gift—on all Roman allies and subjects. Sicily was now part of Komania, but it was one of its Greek members.

Till this change was made, Sicily could not be in any sense incorporated with Italy. In the division of Con- stantine, when the word province had lost its meaning, when Italy itself was mapped out into provinces, Sicily became one of these last. Along with Africa, Reetia (Rheetia), and western Illyricum, it became part of the Italian prefecture; along with the islands of Sardinia and Corsica, it became part of the Italian diocese. It was now ruled by a corrector (see the letter of Constantine, which stands first in the Codex Diplomaticus Sicilix of Johannes), afterwards by a consular under the authority of the vicar of the Roman city (Wot. Imp., 14,5). Few emperors visited Sicily; Hadrian was there, as every- where, and Julian also (C.D., 10). In its provincial state Sicily fell back more than some other provinces. Ausonius could still reckon Catina and fourfold Syracuse (' quad- ruplices Syracusas"') among noble cities ; but Sicily is not, like Gaul, rich in relics of later Roman life, and it is now Egypt rather than Sicily that feeds Rome. The island has no internal history beyond a very characteristic fact, a third slave war in the days of Gallienus. External history there could be none in the central island, with no frontier open to Germans or Persians. Sicilian history begins again when the wandering of the nations planted new powers, not on the frontier of the empire, but at its heart.

The powers between which Sicily now passes to and Teuton The earlier stages of Teutonic ™s™*

fro are Teutonic powers. advance could not touch Sicily. Alarie thought of a Sicilian expedition, but a storm hindered him. Sicily was to be reached only by a Teutonic power which made its way through Gaul, Spain, and Africa. The Vandal now dwells at Carthage instead of the Canaanite. Gaiseric (429-477) subdued the great islands for which Roman and Pheenician had

striven. Along with Sardinia, Corsica, and the Balearic Isles, Sicily is again a possession of a naval power at Carthage. Gaiseric, at Rome more than a Hanni- bal, makes a treaty with Odowakar (Odoacer) almost like that which ended the First Punic War. He gave up (Victor

So Ie

Vitensis, i. 4) the island on condition of a tribute, which was hardly paid by Theodoric. Sicily was now ruled bya Gothic ‘count, and the Goths claimed to have treated the land with special tenderness (Procopius, Bell. Goth., ili. 16). ‘The island, like the rest of Theodoric’s dominions, was ‘certainly well looked after by the great king and his ‘minister ; yet we hear darkly of disaffection to Gothic rule (Cass., Var., i. 3). Theodoric gave back Lilybaion to the Vandal king Thrasamund as the dowry of his sister Anala- frida (Proc., Bell. Vand., i. 8). Yet Lilybaion was a Gothic possession when Belisarius, conqueror of Africa, demanded it in vain as part of the Vandal possessions (Proc., Bell. Vand., ii. 5; Bell. Groth., i. 3). In the Gothic war Sicily was the first land to be recovered for the empire, arid that with the good will of its people (535). Panormus alone was stoutly defended by its Gothic garrison. In 550 Totila took some fortresses, but the great cities all with- stood him, and the Goths were driven out the next year. Sicily was thus won back to the Roman dominion, but the seat of the Roman dominion was now at Constantinople. Belisarius was Pyrrhos and Marcellus in one. For 430 years some part of Sicily, for 282 years the whole of it, again remained a Roman province. To the Gothic count again succeeded, under Justinian, a Roman pretor, in Greck orparnyds. That was the official title; we often hear of a patrician of Sicily, but patrician was in strictness a personal rank. In the later mapping out of the empire into purely military divisions, the theme (G¢ua) of Sicily took in both the island and the nearest peninsula of the main- land, the oldest Italy. The island itself was divided for financial purposes, almost as in the older times, into the two divisions of Syracuse and Lilybaion. The revolutions of Italy hardly touched a land which looked steadily to | the eastern Rome asits head. The Lombard and Frankish masters of the peninsula never fixed themselves in the island. When the Frank took the imperial crown of the West, Sicily still kept its allegiance to the Augustus who reigned at Constantinople, and was only torn away piece- meal from the empire by the next race of conquerors. This

connexion of Sicily with the eastern division of the empire no doubt largely helped to keep up Greek life in the island. This was of course strengthened by union with a power which had already a Greek side, and where the Greek side soon became dominant. Still the con- nexion with Italy was close, especially the ecclesiastical connexion. Some things tend to make Sicily look less Greek than it really was. The great source of our know- ledge of Sicily in the century which followed the recon- quest by Belisarius is the Letters of Pope Gregory the Great, and they naturally show the most Latin side of things. The merely official use of Latin was, it must be remembered, common to Sicily with Constantinople. Gregory's Letters are largely occupied with the affairs of the great Sicilian estates held by the Roman Church, as by the churches of Milan and Ravenna, But they deal | with many other matters (see the collection in Johannes, C.D., where the letters bearing on Sicily are brought | together, or the usual collection of his letters). Saint | Paul's visit to Syracuse naturally gave rise to many legends ; but the Christian Church undoubtedly took early | root in Sicily. We hear of Manicheans (C.D., 163); _ Jews were plentiful, and Gregory causes compensation | to be made for the unlawful destruction of synagogues. Of paganism we find no trace, save that pagan slaves, doubt- less not natives of the island, were held by Jews (C.D., 127). Herein is a contrast between Sicily and Sardinia, where, ac- cording to a letter from Gregory to the empress Constantina, wife of Maurice (594-595), praying for a lightening of taxa- tion in both islands, paganism still lingered (C.D. 121). Sicily belonged to the Latin patriarchate ; but we already

(C.D., 103) see glimmerings of the coming disputes between 477-829. the Eastern and Western Churches. Things were changed when, in the early days of the iconoclast controversy, Leo the Isaurian confiscated the Sicilian and Calabrian estates of the Roman Church (Theoph., i. 631).

In the 9th, 10th, and 11th centuries the old drama of Sicily was acted again. The island is again disputed between Europe and Asia, transplanted to Africa between Greek and Semitic dwellers on her own soil. Panormus and Syracuse are again the headquarters of races and creeds, of creeds yet more

than of races. The older religious differences—not small certainly when the choice lay between Zeus and Moloch—were small compared with the strife for life and death between Christendom and Islam. Gregory and Mahomet were contemporaries, and, though Saracen occupation did not begin in Sicily till more than two centuries after Gregory's death, Saracen inroads began much sooner. In 655 (Theoph., Early i, 582) part of Sicily was plundered, and its inhabitants Saracen carried to Damascus. Then came the strange episode of #4 the visit of Constans the Second (641-668), the first emperor, it would seem, who had set foot in Sicily since Julian. After a war with the Lombards, after twelve days' plunder of Rome, he came on to Syracuse, where his oppressions led to his murder in 668. Sicily now saw for the first time the setting up of a tyrant in the later sense. Meketios, commander of the Eastern army of Constans, revolted, but Sicily and Roman Italy kept their allegiance to the new emperor Constantine Pogonatos, who came in person to destroy him. Then came another Saracen inroad from Alexandria, in which Syracuse was sacked (Paul. Diac., v. 13). Others followed, but there was as yet no lasting settlement. Towards the end of the 8th century, though Sicily itself was untouched, its patricians and their forces play a part in the affairs of southern Italy as enemies of the Frankish power. Charles himself was believed (Theoph., i. 736) to have designs on Sicily ; but, when it came to Saracen invasion, the sympathies of both pope and Cvsar lay with the invaded Christian land (Mon. Car.,

323, 328).

In 813 a peace for ten years was made between the Saracen Saracens and the patrician Gregory. A few years after it conquest. expired Saracen settlement in the island begins. This was a special time of Saracen inroad on the islands belonging to the Eastern empire. Almost at the same moment Crete was seized by a band of adventurers from Spain. But the first Saracen settlers in Sicily were the African neighbours of Sicily, and they were called to the work by a home treason. The story has been tricked out with many romantic details (Chron. Salern., 60, ap. Pertz, in. 498 ; Theoph. Cont., ii. 272; George Kedrenos, ii. 97); but it seems plain that Euphemios or Euthymios of Syracuse, supported by his own citizens, revolted against Michael the Stammerer (820-829), and, when defeated by an imperial army, asked help of Ziyddet Allah, the Aghlabite prince of Kairawan, and offered

to hold the island of him. ‘The struggle of 138 years now began. Euphemios, a puppet emperor, was led about by his Saracen allies much as earlier puppet emperors had been led about by Alaric and Ataulf, till he was slain in one of the many sieges. The second Semitic conquest of Sicily began in 827 at Mazzara on the old border of Greek and Pheenician. But the land had a brave defender in the patrician Theodotos, and the invaders met with a stout resistance both in the island and from armies both from Constantinople and from Byzantine Italy. The advance of the invaders was slow. In two years all that was done was to occupy Mazzara and Mineum — the old Menai of Douketios—strange points certainly to begin with, and seemingly to destroy Agrigentum, well used to destruction. Attacks on Syracuse failed; so did

 attacks on Henna—Castrum Enne, now changing into

Castrum Johannis (perhaps Kaorpo.dvvy), Castrogiovanni. The actual gain was small; but the invaders took seizin alike of the coast and of the island.

A far greater conquest followed when new invaders came from Spain and when Theodotos was killed in 830. The next year Panormus passed away for ever from Roman, for 230 years from Christian, rule. Syracuse was for fifty years, not only, as of old, the bulwark of Europe, but the bulwark of Christendom. By the conquest of Panormus the Saracens were firmly rooted in the island. We hear dimly of treasonable dealings with them on the part of the strategos Alexios, son-in-law of the emperor Theophilos ; but we see more clearly that Saracen advance was largely hindered by dissensions between the African and the Spanish settlers. In the end the Moslem conquests in Sicily became an Aghlabite principality owning at best a formal superiority in the princes of Kairawan. With the Saracen occupation begins a new division of the island, which becomes convenient in tracing the progress of Saracen conquest. This is into three valleys, known in later forms of language as Val di Mazzara or Mazza in the north-west, Val di Noto in the south-east, and Val Demone (a name of uncertain origin) in the north-east (see Amari, Musulmani in Sicilia, 1.465). The first Saracen settlement of Val di Mazzara answers roughly to the old Carthaginian possessions. From Panormus the emir or lord of Sicily, Mohammed ibn

Abdallah, sent forth his plunderers through- out Sicily and even into southern Italy. There, though they made no lasting settlements, they often occupied par- ticular points. A consul or duke of Naples in 836 even asked for Saracen help against the Lombards, which he is said to have repaid by help against his fellow-subjects in Sicily (Johan. Diac., 57 ; Amari, i. 314).

The chief work of the next ten years was the conquest of the Val di Noto, but the first great advance was made elsewhere. In 843 the Saracens won the Mamertine city, Messana, and thus stood in the path between Italy and Sicily. Then the work of conquest, as described by the Arabic writers, went on, but slowly. At last, in 859, the very centre of the island, the stronghold of Henna, was taken, and the main part of Val di Noto followed. But the divisions among the Moslems helped the Christians ; they won back several towns, and beat off all attacks on Syracuse and Tauromenium. It is strange that the reign of Basil the Macedonian (867), a time of such renewed vigour in the empire, was the time of the greatest of all losses in Sicily. In Italy the imperial frontier largely advanced ; in Sicily imperial fleets threatened Panormus. But in 875 the accession of Ibr4him ibn Ahmed in Africa changed the face of things. The emir in Sicily, Ja‘far ibn Ahmed, received strict orders to act vigorously against the eastern towns. In 877 began the only successful Semitic siege of Syracuse. The next year the city, which for 1600 years had been the seat of Greek, Roman, and Christian life, passed for the first time under the yoke of strangers to the fellowship of Europe.

Thus in fifty-one years the imperial and Christian terri- tory in Sicily was cut down to a few points on or near the eastern coast, to the Val Demone in short without Messana. But between Moslem dissension and Chris- tian valour the struggle had still to be waged for eighty- seven years. Henna had been the chief centre of Christian resistance a generation earlier; its place was now taken by the small fort of Rametta not far from Messina. The Moslems of Sicily were busy in civil wars; Arabs fought against Berbers, both against the African overlord, In 900 Panormus had to be won by a son of Ibrahim from Moslem rebels provoked by his father’s cruelty. But when Ibrahim himself came into Sicily, renewed efforts

sO biny

[HISTORY.

against the Christians led to the first taking of Tauromenium (908), of Rametta, and of other points. The civil war that followed his death, the endless revolutions of Agrigentum, where the weaker side did not scruple to call in Christian help, hindered any real Saracen occupation of eastern Sicily. The emperors never gave up their claims to Sicily or their hopes of recovering it. Besides the struggle with the Christians in the island, there was often direct warfare between the empire and the Saracens; but such warfare was more active in Italy than in Sicily. In 956 a peace or truce was made by the emperor Constantine Porphyro- genitus. A few years later, Otho the Great, the restorer of the Western empire, looked to Sicily as a land to be won back for Christendom. It had not yet wholly passed away, but the day soon came. Strange to say, as Syracuse fell in the reign of Basil the Macedonian, the Saracen occupa- tion was completed in the reign of Nikephoros Phokas (Nicephorus Phocas), the deliverer of Crete. In the very year of his accession (963) Tauromenium was taken for the second time, and became for a hundred years a Mohammedan possession. Rametta alone held out. A fleet and army from Constantinople went in vain to its help; the last stronghold of Christendom was taken (965), and for a season all was over.

Thus in 138 years the Arab did what the Canaanite had never done. The whole island was a Semitic, that is now a Mohammedan, possession. The Greek-speaking Roman of Sicily was a bondinan in his own land, like the Latin- speaking Roman of Spain. Yet the complete Saracen possession of Sicily may seem a thing of a moment. Its first and longest period lasted only 73 years. In that

time Mohammedan Sicily was threatened by a Western Recon

emperor ; which Otho the Second was beaten back in 982 as a Sicilian army. A mightier enemy was threatening in the East. Basil the Second planned the recovery of Sicily in good earnest. In 1027 he sent a great army; but his death stopped their progress before they reached the island. But the great conqueror had left behind him men trained in his school, and eleven years later the eagles of the new Rome again marched to Sicilian victories. The ravages of the Sicilian Saracens in the Greek islands were more fright- ful than ever, and George Maniakes, the first captain of his

time, was sent to win back the lost land. He too was helped by Saracen dissensions. The emir Abul-afar became a Roman vassal, and, like Alaric of old, became magister militum in the Roman army. His brother and rival Abu- hafas brought help from Africa; and finallyall joined against the Christians. Four years of Christian victory (1038- 1042) followed. In the host of Maniakes were men of all races,—Normans, who had already begun to show them- selves in south Italy, and the Warangian guard, the best soldiers of the empire, among whom Harold Hardrada himself is said to have held a place. Town after town was delivered, first Messana, then Syracuse, then a crowd of others. The exact extent of the reconquest is uncertain ; Byzantine writers claim the deliverance of the whole island ; but it is certain that the Saracens never lost Panormus. But court influence spoiled everything: Maniakes was recalled; under his successor Stephen, brother-in-law of the emperor Michael, the Saracens won back what they had lost. Messana alone held out, for how long a time is uncertain. But it could not have been again under the yoke for many years when a conqueror came who had no empresses to thwart him. The second Saracen occupation of all Sicily was short indeed. In 1060 began the thirty years' work of the first Roger.

Thus for 263 years the Christian people of some part

the Arabic writers claim the Saracen army by aestl

Easten

5

u

empite,

icily nder

or other of Sicily were in subjection to Moslem masters. Saracet But that subjection differed widely in different times and tue

- world begins with the coming of the Normans.

The land was won bit by bit. One town was taken by storm ; another submitted on terms harsher or more favourable. ‘The condition of the Christians varied from that of personal slaves to that of communities left free on the payment of tribute. The great mass were in the intermediate state usual among the non-Mohammedan sub- jects of a Mohammedan power. The dhimmi of Sicily were in essentially the same case as the rayahks of the Turk. While the conquest was going on, the towns that remained unconquered gained in point of local freedom. They be- came allies rather than subjects of the distant emperor. So did the tributary districts, as long as the original terms were kept. But, as ever, the condition of the subject race grew worse. After the complete conquest of the island, while the mere slaves had turned Mohammedans, there is nothing more heard of tributary districts. At the coming of the Normans the whole Christian population was in the state of rayahs. Still Christianity and the Greek tongue never died out; churches and monasteries received and held property ; there still are saints and_men of learning. Panormus was specially Saracen ; yet a Christian religious guild could be founded there in 1048 (Zabulariwm Regizx Cap. Panorm., p.1). We have its Greek foundation deed. It would be rash to deny that traces of other dialects may not have lingered on; but Greek and Arabic were the two written tongues of Sicily when the Normans came. The Sicilian Saracens were hindered by their internal feuds from ever becoming a great power; but they stood high among Mohammedan nations. Their advance in civili- zation is shown by their position under the Normans, and above all by their admirable style of architecture (see PanERMo), Saracens are always called in for any special work of building or engineering. They had a literature which Norman kings studied and promoted. The Normans in short came into the inheritance of the two most civilized nations of the time, and they allowed the two to flourish side by side.

The most brilliant time for Sicily as a power in the Never before or after was the island so united or so independent. Some of the old tyrants had ruled out of Sicily; none had ruled over all Sicily. |The Normans held all Sicily as the centre of a dominion which stretched far beyond it. The conquest was the work of one man, Count Roger of the aouse of Hauteville brother of the more famous Robert Wiscard (Guiscard). That it took him

thirty years was doubtless owing to his being often called off to help his brother in Italy and beyond Hadria. The conquests of the Normans in Italy and Sicily form part of one enterprise ; but they altogether differ in character. In Italy they over- threw the Byzantine dominion; their own rule was perhaps not worse, but they were not deliverers. In Sicily they were everywhere welcomed by the Christians as deliverers from infidel bondage.

As in the Saracen conquest of Sicily, as in the Byzan- tine recovery, so in the Norman conquest, the immediate occasion was given by a home traitor. Count Roger had already made a plundering attack, when Becumen of Catania, driven out by his brother, urged him to serious invasion. Messina was taken in 1060, and became for a while the Norman capital. The Christians everywhere welcomed the conqueror. But at Traina they presently changed their minds, and joined with the Saracens to besiege the count in their citadel. At Catania Becumen was set up again as Roger's vassal, and he did good service till he was killed. Roger soon began to fix his eye on the Saracen capital. Against that city he had Pisan help, as the inscription on the Pisan dwomo witnesses (cf. Geoff. Mal, ii. 34). But Palermo was not taken until 1071, and then only by the help of Duke Robert, who kept the prize to himself.

places.

oF et hy

25

Still its capture was the turning-point in the struggle. 1060-1090. Taormina (Tauromenium) was won in 1078. Syracuse, under its emir Benarvet, held out stoutly. He won back Catania by the help of a Saracen to whom Roger had trusted the city, and whom he himself punished. Catania was won back by the count's son Jordan. But progress was delayed by Jordan's rebellion and by the absence of Roger in his brother's wars. At last, in 1085, Syracuse was won. Next year followed Girgenti and Castrogiovanni, whose chief became a Christian. Noto, the Saracen Ra- metta, held out till 1090. Then the whole island was won, and Roger completed his conquest by a successful expedition to Malta.

Like the condition of the Greeks under the Saracens, so Saracens the condition of the Saracens under the Normans differed »2der in different places according to the circumstances of each ieee

yee: rule.

conquest. The Mohammedan religion was everywhere tolerated, in many places much more. But it would seem that, just as under the Moslem rule, conversions from Christianity to Islam were forbidden. On the other hand, conversions from Islam to Christianity were not always encouraged; Saracen troops were employed from the begin- ning, and Count Roger seems to have thought them more trustworthy when unconverted. At Palermo the capitula- tion secured to the Saracens the full enjoyment of their own laws ; Girgenti was long mainly Saracen ; in Val di Noto the Saracens kept towns and castles of their own. On the other hand, at Messina there were few or none, and we hear of both Saracen and Greek villains, the latter doubtless abiding as they were in Saracen times. But men of both races were trusted and favoured according to their deserts. The ecclesiastical relations between Greeks and Latins are harder to trace. At the taking of Palermo the Greek bishop was restored; but his successors were Latins, and Latin prelates were placed in the bishoprics which Count Roger founded. Urban the Second visited Sicily to promote the union of the church, and he granted to the count those special ecclesiastical powers held by the counts and kings of Sicily as hereditary legates of the Holy See which grew into the famous Sicihan monarchy (Geoff. Mal, iv. 29). But Greek worship went on; at Messina it lingered till the 14th and 15th centuries (Pirro, Sicilia Sacra, i. 420, 431, 449), as it has been since brought back by the Albanian colonists. But the Greeks of Sicily have long been united Greeks, admitting the authority of the see of Rome.

In its results the Norman conquest of Sicily was a Latin conquest far more thorough than that which had been made by the Roman commonwealth. The Norman princes protected all the races, creeds, and tongues of the island, Greek, Saracen, and Jew. But new races came to settle Lin- alongside of them, all of whom were Latin as far as their guistic official speech was concerned. The Normans brought the pee French tongue with them; it remained the court speech u during the 12th century, and Sicily was

thrown open to all speakers of French, many of whom came from England. There was constant intercourse between the two great islands, both ruled by Norman kings, and many natives of England filled high places in Sicily. But French was only a language of society, not of business or literature. The languages of inscriptions and documents are Greek, Arabic, and Latin, in private writings sometimes Hebrew. The kings understood Greek and Arabic, and their deeds and works were commemorated in both tongues. Hence comes the fact, at first sight so strange, that Greek, Arabic, and French have all given way to a dialect of Italian. But the cause is not far to seek. The Norman conquest opened Sicily to settlers from Italy, above all from the Norman possessions in Italy. Under the name of Lombards, they became an important, in some parts a dominant, element.

Thus at Messina, where we hear nothing of Saracens, we hear much of the disputes between Greeks and Lombards. The Lombards had hardly a distinct language to bring with them, At the time of the conquest, it was already found out that French had become a distinct speech from Latin ; Italian hardly was such. The Lombard element, during the Norman reign, shows itself, not in whole documents or inscriptions, but in occasional words and forms, as in some of the mosaics at Monreale. And, if any element, Latin or akin to Latin, had lingered on through Byzantine and Saracen rule, it would of course be attracted to the new Latin element, and would help to strengthen it. It was this Lombard element that had the future before it. Greek and Arabic were antiquated, or at least isolated, in a land which Norman conquest had made part of Western Europe and Latin Christendom. They could grow only within the island; they could gain no strength from out- side. Even the French element was in some sort isolated, and later events made it more so. But the Lombard element was constantly strengthened by settlement from outside. In the older Latin conquest, the Latin carried Greek with him, and the Greek element absorbed the Latin.

Latin now held in western Europe the place which Greek had held there. Thus, in the face of Italian, both Greek and Arabic died out. Step by step, Christian Sicily became Latin in speech and in worship. But this was not till the Norman reigns were over. Till the end of the 12th century Sicily was the one land where men of divers creeds and tongues could live side by side, each in his own way.

Hence came both the short-lived brilliancy of Sicily and its later decay. In Sicily there were many nations all protected by the Sicilian king ; but there was no Sicilian nation. Greek, Saracen, Norman, Lombard, and Jew could not be fused into one people; it was the boast of Sicily that each kept his laws and tongue undisturbed. Such a state of things could live on only under an en- lightened despotism ; the discordant elements could not join to work out really free and national institutions. Sicily had parliaments, and some constitutional principles were well understood. But they were assemblies of barons, or at most of barons and citizens; they could only have represented the Latin elements, Norman and Lombard, in the island. outside the relations between the Latin king and his Latin subjects. Still, as long as Greek and Saracen were pro- tected and favoured, so long was Sicily the most brilliant of European kingdoms. But its greatness had no ground- work of national life ; for lack of it the most brilliant of kingdoms presently sank below the level of other lands.

Four generations only span the time from the birth of Count Roger, about 1030, to the death of the emperor Frederick the Second in 1250. Roger, great count of Sicily, was, at his death in 1101, succeeded by his young son Simon, and he in 1105 by the second Roger, the first king. He inherited all Sicily, save half Palermo—the other half had been given up—and part of Calabria. The rest of Palermo was soon granted ; the Semitic capital became the abiding head of Sicily. On the death of Duke William of Apulia, Roger gradually founded (1127-40) a great Italian domi- nion. Tothe Apulian duchy he added (1136) the Norman principality of Capua, Naples (1138), the last dependency of the Eastern empire in Italy, and (1140) the Abruzzi, an undoubted land of the Western empire. He thus formed a dominion which has been divided, united, and handed over from one prince to another, oftener than any other state in Europe, but whose frontier has hardly changed at all. In 1130 Roger was crowned at Palermo, by authority

of the antipope Anacletus, taking the strange title of “king of Sicily and Italy.” This, on his recon-

The elder races, Greek and Saracen, stand’

cilation with Pope Innocent the Second, he exchanged for “king of Sicily and of the duchy of Apulia and of the prin- cipality of Capua.” By virtue of the old relations between the popes and the Normans of Apulia, he held his kingdom in fief of the Holy See, a position which on the whole strengthened the royal power. But his power, like that of Dionysios and Agathokles, was felt in more distant regions, His admiral George of Antioch, Greek by birth and creed, warred against the Eastern empire, won Corfu (Korypho ; the name of Korkyra is forgotten) for a season, and carried off the silk-workers from Thebes and Peloponnesos to Sicily. But Manuel Komnenos (Comnenus) ruled in the East, and, if Roger threatened Constantinople, Manuel threatened Sicily. In Africa the work of Agathokles was ; more than renewed ; Mahadia and other points were won and kept as long as Roger lived. These exploits won him the name of the terror of Greeks and Saracens. To the Greeks, and still more to the Saracens, of his own island he was a protector and something more.

Roger’s son William, surnamed the Bad, was crowned Willian in his father’s lifetime in 1151. Roger died in 1154, and !andll } William’s sole reign lasted till 1166, It was a time of domestic rebellions, chiefly against the king’s unpopular ministers, and it is further marked by the loss of Roger’s African conquests. After William the Bad came (1166- 1189) his son William the Good. Unlike as were the two men in themselves, in their foreign policy they are hardly to be distinguished. The Bad William has a short quarrel with the pope; otherwise Bad and Good alike appear as zealous supporters of Alexander the Third, and as enemies of both empires. The Eastern warfare of the Good is stained by the frightful sack of Thessalonica ; it is marked also by the formation of an Eastern state under Sicilian supremacy (1186). Corfu, the possession of Agathokles and Roger, with Durazzo, Cephalonia, and Zante, was granted by William to his

admiral Margarito with the strange title of king of the Epeirots. He founded a dynasty, though not of kings, in Cephalonia and Zante. Corfu and Durazzo were to be more closely connected with the Sicilian crown.

The brightest days of Sicily ended with William the Good. His marriage with Joanna, daughter of Henry of Anjou and England, was childless, and William tried to procure the succession of his aunt Constance and her husband, King Henry the Sixth of Germany, son of the emperor Frederick the First. But the prospect of German rule was unpopular, and on William's death the crown passed to Tancred, an illegitimate grandson of King Roger, Tanovt who figures in English histories in the story of Richard's crusade. In 1191 Henry, now emperor, asserted his claims; but, while Tancred lived, he did little, in Sicily nothing, to enforce them. On the death of Tancred (1194) and the accession of his young son William the Third, the William emperor came and conquered Sicily and the Italian posses- Ii sions, with an amount of cruelty which outdid any earlier war or revolution. First of four Western emperors who wore the Sicilian crown, Henry died in 1197, leaving the kingdom to his young son Frederick, heir of the Norman kings through his mother.

The great days of the Norman conquest and the Norman reigns have been worthily recorded by contemporary his- torians. For few times have we richer materials. The oldest is Aimé or Amato of Monte Cassino, who exists only in an Old-French translation. We have also for the Norman conquest the halting hexameters of William of Apulia, and for the German conquest the lively and par- tial verses of Peter of Eboli. Of prose writers we have Geoffrey Malaterra, Alexander abbot of Telesia, Romuald archbishop of Salerno, Falco of Benevento, above all Hugo Falcandus, one of the very foremost of medieval writers.

HISTORY. |

Not one of these Latin writers was a native of the island, and we have no record from any native Greek. Occasional notices we of course have in the Byzantine writers, and Archbishop Eustathios's account of the taking of Thessa- lonica is more than occasional. And the close connexion between Sicily and England leads to many occasional refer- ences to Sicilian matters in English writers.

The relations between the various races of the islands are most instructive. The strong rule of Roger kept all in order. He called himself the defender of Christians ; others, on account of his favour to the Saracens, spoke of him as a pagan. He certainly encouraged Saracen art and literature in every shape. His court was full of eunuchs, of whom we hear still more under William the Bad. Under William the Good the Saracens, without any actual oppres- sion, seem to be losing their position. Hitherto they had been one element in the land, keeping their own civiliza- tion alongside of others. By a general outbreak on the death of William the Good, the Saracens, especially those of Palermo, were driven to take shelter in the mountains, where they sank into a wild people, sometimes holding points of the island against all rulers, sometimes taking military service under them. The Jews too begin to sink into bondmen. Sicily is ceasing to be the land of many nations living side by side on equal terms.

The Germans who helped Henry to win the Sicilian

der- crown did not become a new element in the island, but

only a source of confusion during the minority of his son. Frederick—presently to be the renowned emperor Freder- ick the Second, “Fridericus stupor mundi et immutator mirabilis”—was crowned at Palermo in 1198; but the child, deprived of both parents, was held to be under the protection of his lord Pope Innocent the Third. During his minority the land was torn in pieces by turbulent nobles, revolted Saracens, German captains seeking settlements, the maritime cities of Italy, and professed French deli- verers. In 1210 the emperor Otho the Fourth, who had overrun the continental dominions, threatened the island. In 1212, just when Frederick was reaching an age to be of use in his own kingdom, he was called away to dispute the crown of Germany and Rome with Otho. Hight years more of disorder followed ; in 1220 the emperor-king came back. He brought the Saracens of the mountains back again to a life in plains and cities, and presently planted a colony of them on the mainland at Nocera, when they be- came his most trusty soldiers. His necessary absences from Sicily led to revolts. He came back in 1233 from his crusade to suppress a revolt of the eastern cities, which seem, like those of Italy, to have been aiming at repub- lican independence. A Saracen revolt in 1243 is said to have been followed by a

removal of the whole remnant to Nocera. Some however certainly stayed or came back ; but their day was over.

Under Frederick the Italian or Lombard element finally prevailed in Sicily. Of all his kingdoms Sicily was the best-beloved. He spoke all its tongues; he protected, as far as circumstances would allow, all its races. He legis- lated for all in the spirit of an enlightened and equal des- potism, jealous of all special privileges, whether of nobles, churches, or cities. The heretic alone was persecuted ; he was the domestic rebel of the church; Saracen and Jew were entitled to the rights of foreigners. Yet Frederick, patron of Arabic learning, suspected even of Moslem belief, fails to check the decline of the Saracen element in Sicily. The Greek element has no such forces brought against it. It is still a chief tongue of the island, in which Frederick's laws are put forth as well as in Latin. But it is clearly a declining element. Greek and Saracen were both becom- ing survivals in an island which was but one of the many kingdoms of its king. No wonder that the Italian element

ePrcriLty

advanced at the cost of all others. the court speech of Sicily, and he made it more than a court speech, the speech of a new-born literature. Sicily, strangely enough, became the cradle of Italian song.

Two emperors had now held the Sicilian crown. On Frederick's death in 1250 the crown passed to his son Conrad, not emperor indeed, but king of the Romans. He was nominally succeeded by his son Conradin. The real

ruler under both was Frederick's natural son Manfred. Manfred.

In 1258, on a false rumour of the death of Conradin, Manfred was himself crowned king at Palernio. He had to found the kingdom afresh. Pope Innocent the Fourth had crossed into Sicily, to take advantage of the general discontent. The cities, whose growing liberties had been checked by Frederick's legislation, strove for practical, if not formal, independence, sometimes for dominion over their fellows. The 5th century B.c. seemed to have come back. Messina laid waste the lands of Taormina, because

Taormina would not obey the bidding of Messina. Yet, among these and other elements of confusion, Manfred succeeded in setting up again the kingly power, first for his kinsmen and then for himself. His reign continued that of his father, so far as a mere king could continue the reign of such an emperor. The king of Sicily was the first potentate of Italy, and came nearer than any prince since Louis the Second to the union of Italy under Italian rule. He sought dominion too beyond Hadria: Corfu, Durazzo, and a strip of the Albanian coast became Sicilian possessions as the dowry of Manfred's Greek wife. But papal enmity was too much for him. His overlord claimed to dispose of his crown, and hawked it about among the princes of the West. Edmund of England bore the Sicilian title for a moment. More came of the grant of Urban the Fourth (1264) to Charles, count of Anjou, and through his wife sovereign count of Provence.

lord's grant. Manfred was defeated and slain at Bene- vento. The whole Sicilian kingdom became the spoil of a stranger who was no deliverer to any class of its people. The island sank yet lower. Naples, not Palermo, was the head of the new power; Sicily was again a province. But a province Sicily had no mind to be. In the con- tinental lands Charles founded a dynasty; the island he lost after sixteen years. His rule was not merely the rule of a stranger king surrounded by stranger followers ; the degradation of the island was aggravated by gross oppres- sion, grosser than in the continental lands. The conti- nental lands submitted, with a few slight efforts at resist- ance. The final result of the Angevin conquest of Sicily was its separation from the mainland.

Sicilian feeling was first shown in the support given to the luckless expedition of Conradin in 1268. Frightful executions in the island followed his fall. The rights of the Swabian house were now held to pass to Peter (Pedro), king of Aragon, husband of Manfred's daughter Constance. The connexion with Spain, which has so deeply affected the whole later history of Sicily, now begins. Charles held the Greek possessions of Manfred and had designs both on Epeiros and on Constantinople. The emperor Michael Palaiologos and Peter of Aragon became allies against Charles ; the famous John of Procida acted as an agent be- tween them ; the costs of Charles's Eastern warfare caused great discontent, especially in an island where some might still look to the Greek emperor as a natural deliverer. Peter and

Michael were doubtless watching the turn of things in Sicily ; but the tale of a long-hidden conspiracy between them and the whole Sicilian people has been set aside by Amari. The actual outbreak of 1282, the famous Sicilian Vespers, was stirred up by the wrongs of the moment. A gross case of insult offered by a Frenchman

Frederick chose it as 1197-1282.

Charles, crowned Charles by the pope in 1266, marched to take possession of his of Anjou.

1282-1735.

Peter of Aragon,

James,

Freder- ick

28

to a Sicilian woman led to the massacre at Palermo, and the like scenes followed elsewhere. The strangers were cut off; Sicily was left to its own people. The towns and districts left without a ruler by no means designed to throw off the authority of the overlord; they sought the good will of Pope Martin. But papal interests were on the side of Charles; and he went forth with the blessing of the church to win back his lost kingdom.

Angevin oppression had brought together all Sicily in a common cause. There was at last a Sicilian nation, a nation fora while capable of great deeds. Sicily now stands out asa main centre of European politics. But the land has lost its character; it is becoming the plaything of powers, instead of the meeting-place of nations. The tale, true or false, that Frenchmen and Provengals were known from the natives by being unable to frame the Italian sound of ¢ shows how thoroughly the Lombard tongue had overcome the other tongues of the island. In Palermo, once city of threefold speech, a Greek, a Saracen, a Norman, who clave to his own tongue must have died with the strangers. ;

Charles was now besieging Messina; Sicily seems to have put on some approach to the form of a federal com- monwealth. Meanwhile Peter of Aragon was watching and preparing. He now declared himself. To all, except the citizens of the great cities, a king would be acceptable ; Peter was chosen with little opposition in a parliament at Palermo, and a struggle of twenty-one years began, of which Charles and Peter saw only the first stage. In fact, after Peter had helped the Sicilians to relieve Messina, he was very little in Sicily; he had to defend his kingdom of Aragon, which Pope Martin had granted to another French Charles. He was represented by Queen Constance, and his great admiral Roger de Loria kept the war away from Sicily, waging it wholly in Italy, and making Charles, the son of King Charles, prisoner. In 1285 both the rival kings died. Charles had before his death been driven to make large legislative concessions to his subjects to stop the tendency shown, especially in Naples, to join the re- yolted Sicilians. By Peter's death Aragon and Sicily were separated ; his eldest son Alphonso took Aragon, and his second son James took Sicily, which was to pass to the third son Frederick, if James died childless. Jamies was crowned, and held his reforming parliament also. With the popes no terms could be made. Charles, released in 1988 under a deceptive negotiation, was crowned king of Sicily by Honorius; but he had much ado to defend his continental dominions against James and Roger. In 1291 James succeeded Alphonso in the kingdom of Aragon, and left Frederick not king, according to the entail, but only his lieutenant in Sicily.

Frederick was the real restorer of Sicilian independence. He had come to the island so young that he felt as a native. He defended the land stoutly, even against his brother. For James presently played Sicily false. In 1295 he was reconciled to the church and released from all French claims on Aragon, and he bound himself to restore Sicily to Charles. But the Sicilians, with Frederick at their head, disowned the agreement, and in 1296 Frederick was crowned king. He had to defend Sicily against his brother and Roger de Loria, who forsook the cause, as did John of Procida. Hitherto the war had been waged on the mainland ; now it was transferred to Sicily. King James besieged Syracuse as admiral of the Roman Church ; Charles sent his son Robert in 1299 as his lieutenant in Sicily, where he gained some successes. But in the same year the one great land battle of the war, that of Falconaria, was won for Sicily. The war, chiefly marked by another

great siege of Messina, went on till 1302, when both sides were thoroughly weakened and eager for peace. By a

STlTCriny

[HISTORY.

treaty, confirmed by Pope Boniface the next year, Frederick was acknowledged as king of Trinacria for life. He was to marry the daughter of the king of Sicily, to whom the island kingdom was to revert at his death. The terms were never meant to be carried out. Frederick again took up the title of king of Sicily, and at his death in 1337 he was succeeded by his son Peter. There were thus two Peter, Sicilian kingdoms and two kings of Sicily. The king of the mainland is often spoken of for convenience as king of Naples, but that description was never borne as a formal title save in the 16th century by Philip, king of England and Naples, and in the 19th by Joseph Buonaparte and Joachim Murat. The strict distinction was between Sicily on this side the Pharos (of Messina) and Sicily beyond it.

Thus the great island of the Mediterranean again became an independent power. And, as far as legislation could make it, Sicily became one of the freest countries in Europe. By the laws of Frederick parliaments were to be regularly held, and without their consent the king could not make war, peace, or alliance. The treaty of 1302 was not confirmed by parliament, and in 1337 parliament called Peter to the crown. But Sicily never rose to the greatness of its Greek or its Norman days, and its old character had passed away. Of Greeks and Saracens we now hear only as a degraded remnant, to be won over, if it may be, to the Western Church. The kingdom had no foreign pos- sessions ; yet faint survivals of the days of Agathokles and Roger lingered on. The isle of Gerba off the African coast was held for a short time, and traces of the connexion with Greece went on in various shapes. If the kings of Sicily on this side the Pharos kept Corfu down to 1386, those beyond the Pharos became in 1311 overlords of Athens, when that duchy was seized by Catalan adventurers, dis- banded after the wars of Sicily. In 1530 the Sicilian island of Malta became the shelter of the Knights of Saint John driven by the Turk from Rhodes, and Sicily has received several colonies of Christian Albanians, who have replaced Greek and Arabic by yet another tongue.

There is no need to dwell at length on the Sicilian Subse history of the last five hundred years. The descendants quent of Frederick did not forma great dynasty. Under him and after him Sicily played a part in Italian affairs, invading and being invaded on behalf of the Ghibelline cause. But it was torn by dissensions between Spanish and Italian fac- tions, and handed to and fro between one Spanish king and another. At last Ferdinand the Catholic (1479-1515), king by inheritance of Aragon and of Sicily beyond the pharos, conquered the continental Sicily, and called himself king of the Two Sicilies. Both were now ruled by Spanish viceroys. In Charles the First (1516-1555)—Charles of Anjou is not reckoned—Sicily had a third imperial king, and once more became the starting-point for African war- fare. Philip, already king of Naples, became king of the Two Sicilies at the abdication of his father, and the two crowns passed along with Castile and Aragon till the division of the Spanish dominions. Under the foreign rule the old laws were trampled under foot. Three risings took place, that of Messina in 1672, with pretended French help, which led to deeper subjection. At the death of Charles the Second in 1700, Sicily acknowledged the French claimant Philip ; but the peace of Utrecht made it the kingdom of Victor Amadeus of Savoy (1713-1720). He was crowned at Palermo; but he had to withstand Spanish invasion, and to exchange Sicily for the other insular crown of Sardinia. Both Sicilies now passed to the emperor Charles the Sixth, the fourth imperial king, who also is passed by in Sicilian reckoning. Charles the Third is the Spanish prince of the house of Bourbon who won both Sicilies from the Austrian. and who was the last king crowned at Palermo (1735).

ristory

ate

fe II,

ee phical wh lition

GEOGRAPHY. |

The wars of the French Revolution again parted the Two Sicilies. In 1798 Ferdinand the Fourth (1759-1825) withdrew to the island before the French

armies. In 1805 he withdrew again, while Joseph Buonaparte and Joachim Murat reigned on the mainland as kings of Naples. Under the Bourbon rule, besides the common grievances of both kingdoms, Sicily had specially to complain of being treated as subordinate to Naples. But from 1806 to 1815 Sicily, practically a separate kingdom under British pro- tection, enjoyed a measure of wellbeing such as it had not had for some ages, and in 1812 a constitution was estab- lished. The European settlement of 1815 brought back the Bourbon to his continental kingdom. Ferdinand the First became a constitutional king over the United King- dom of the Two Sicilies. This was equivalent to the suppression of the separate constitution of the island, and before long all constitutional order was trodden under foot. In 1820, and also in 1836 under Francis the First, Sicily rose for freedom and separation. This last time the island was bound yet more firmly to continental rule. In the general stir of 1848 Sicily again proclaimed her independence, and sought for herself a king in the house of Savoy. Again were the liberties of Sicily trodden under foot; and, in the last change of all, the deliverance wrought by Garibaldi in 1860, if not her liberties, her ancient memories were forgotten. Sicily became part of a free kingdom; but her king does not bear her style, and he has not taken the crown of Roger. The very name of Sicily has been wiped out; and the great island now counts only as seven provinces of an Italian kingdom.

The literature bearing on Sicily, old and new, is endless. _ It is something for a land to have had part of its story told by Thucy- dides and another by Hugo Faleandus. Of modern books Holni’s Geschichte Sicilicns im Alterthwm (down to the accession of the second Hieron) is of great value. So are the works of Michele Amari for the Moslem occupation and the War of the Vespers. The old local historian Fazzcllo must not be passed by, nor the colleetions of Carusio, Pirro, and Giovanni. But a history of Sicily and the cycles of its history from the beginning is still lacking. The writers on particular branches of the subject are infinite. Gally Knight’s Normans in Sicily lias probably led many to their first thoughts on the subject ; and, as a guide for the traveller, that of Gsel-fels can hardly be outdone. ~ (E. A. F.)

Part I].—GroGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

The island of Sicily (Ttal. Sicdlia) belongs to the kingdom of Italy, being separated from the mainland only by the narrow (about 2 miles wide) but deep Straits of Messina. It is nearly bisected by the meridian of 14° E., and by far the greater part lies to the south of 38° N. Its southernmost point, however, in 36° 40’ N. is 40’ to the north of Point Tarifa, the southernmost point of Spain and of the continent of Europe. In shape it is triangular, whence the ancient poetical name of Z’rinacria, referring to its three promontories of Pelorum (now Faro) in the north-east, Pachynum (now Passaro) in the south-east, and Lilybzum (now Boeo) in the west. Its area, exclusive of the adjacent small islands belonging to the compartimento, is, according to the recent planimetrical calculation of the Military Geographical Institute of Italy, 9860 square miles, —considerably less than one-third of that of Ireland ; that of the whole compartimento is 9935 square miles.

The island occupies that part of the Mediterranean in ich the shallowing of the waters divides that sea into ‘ two basins, and in which there are numerous indications of frequent changes in a recent geological period. The channel between Cape Bon in Tunis and the south-west of

Micily (a distance of 80 miles) is, on the whole, shallower

than the Straits of Messina, being for the most part under

190 fathoms in depth, and exceeding 200 fathoms only

for a very short interval, while the Straits of Messina,

eiclL Yy

29

which are at their narrowest part less than 2 miles in width, have almost everywhere a depth exceeding 150 fathoms. The geological structure in the neighbourhood of this strait shows that the island must originally have been formed by a rupture between it and the mainland, but that this rupture must have taken place at a period long antecedent to the advent of man, so that the naine Rhegium cannot be based even on the tradition of any such catastrophe. The mountain range that runs out towards the north-east of Sicily is composed of crystalline rocks precisely similar to those forming the parallel range of Aspromonte in Calabria, but both of these are girt about by sedimentary strata belonging in part to an early Tertiary epoch. That a subsequent land connexion took place, however, by the elevation of the sea-bed there is abundant evidence to show; and the occurrence of the remains of African Quaternary mammals, such as Llephas meridionalis, H. antiquus, Hippopotamus pentlandi, as well as of those of still living African forms, such as Hlephas africanus and Hyxna crocuta, makes it probable that there was a direct post-Tertiary connexion also with the African continent.

The north coast is generally steep and cliffy and abun- Coasts. dantly provided with good harbours, of which that of Palermo is the finest. In the west and south the coast is for the most part flat, more regular in outline, and less favourable to shipping, while in the east, where the sea- bottom sinks rapidly down towards the eastern basin of the Mediterranean, steep rocky coasts prevail except op- posite the plain of Catania. In the northern half of this coast the lava streams of Mount Etna stand out for a distance of about 20 miles in a line of bold cliffs and promontories. At various points

on the east, north, and west coasts there are evidences of a rise of the land having taken place within historical times, at Trapani on the west coast even within the 19th century. As in the rest of the Mediterranean, tides are scarcely observable ; but at several points on the west and south coasts a curious oscillation in the level of the waters, known to the natives as the marrobbio (or marobia), is sometimes noticed, and is said to be always preceded by certain atmospheric signs. This consists in a sudden rise of the sea-level, occasionally to the height of 3 feet, sometimes occurring only once, some- times repeated at intervals of a minute for two hours, or even, at Mazzara, where it is most frequently observed, for twenty-four hours together.

The surface of Sicily lies for the most part more than Surface. 500 feet above the level of the sea. Caltanissetta, which occupies the middle point in elevation as well as in respect of geographical situation, stands 1900 feet above sea-level. Considerable mountains occur only in the north, where the lower slopes of all the heights form one continuous series of olive-yards and orangeries. Of the rest of the island the greater part forms a plateau varying in eleva- tion and mostly covered with wheat-fields. The only plain of any great extent is that of Catania, watered by the Simeto, in the east; to the north of this plain the active volcano of Erna (q.v.) rises with an exceedingly gentle slope to the height of 10,868 feet from a base 400 square miles in extent. This is the highest elevation of the island. The steep and narrow crystalline ridge which trends north-eastwards, and is known to geographers by the name of the Peloritan Mountains, does not reach 4000 feet. The Nebrodian Mountains, a limestone range con- nected with the Peloritan range and having an east and west trend, rise to a somewhat greater height, and farther west, about the middle of the north coast, the Madonie (the only one of the groups mentioned which has a native name) culminate at the height of nearly 6500 feet. From the western end of the Nebrodian Mountains a lower range

Geology.

Climate.

Flora,

(in some places under 1500 feet in height) winds on the whole south-eastwards in the direction of Cape Passaro. With the exception of the Simeto, the principal perennial streams—the Salso, the Platani, and the Belici—enter the

sea on the south coast.

Of the sedimentary rocks of Sicily none are earlicr than the Secondary period, and of the older Sccondary rocks there are only comparatively small patches of Triassic and Jurassic age—most abundant in the west but also occurring on the flanks of the mountains in the north-east. Cretaceous rocks are very sparingly represented (in the south-east), and by far the greater part of the island is occupied by Tertiary (mainly Eocene and Miocene) lime-stones. The Nebrodian Mountains are mainly composed of com- pact limestones of Oligocene date, but are flanked by Eocene rocks including the nummulitic limestone. Quaternary deposits border many of the bays, and the plain of Catania is wholly covered with recent alluvium. Basalts and basaltic tufas border this plain on the south, as the ancient and modern lavas of Etna do on the north.

The climate of Sicily resembles that of the other lands in the extreme south of Europe. As regards temperature, it has the warm aud equable character which belongs to most of the Mediterranean region. At Palermo (where continuous observations have been made since 1791) the range of temperature between the mean of the coldest and that of the hottest month is little greater than at Greenwich. The mcan temperature of January (514° Fahr.) is nearly as high as that of October in the south of England, that of July (77° Fahr.) about 18° warmer than the corresponding month at Greenwich. During the ‘whole period for which observations have been made the thermometer has never been observed to sink at Palermo below the freezing-point; still frost does occur in the island even on the low grounds, though never for more than a few hours. On the coast snow is seldom seen, but it does fall occasion- ally. On the Madonie it lies till June, on Etna till July. The annual rainfall except on the higher mountains does not reach 30 inches, and, as in other parts of the extreme south of Europe, it occurs chiefly in the winter months, while the three summer months (June,

July, and August) are almost quite dry. During these months the whole rainfall does not exceed 2 inches, except on the slopes of the mountains in the north-east. Hence most of the streams dry up insummer. The chief scourge is the sirocco, which is experienced in its most characteristic form on the north coast, as an oppressive, parching, hot, dry wind, blowing strongly and steadily from the south, the atmosphere remaining through the whole period of its duration leaden-coloured and hazy in conse- quence of the presence of immense quantities of reddish dust. It oceurs most frequently in April, and then in May and September, but no month is entirely free from it. Three days are the longest period for which it lasts. The same name is sometimes applied to a moist and not very hot, but yet oppressive, south-east wind which blows from time to time on the east coast. Locally the salubrity of the climate is seriously affected by the occurrence of malaria, regarding which important evidence was furnished to a Government commission of inquiry by officials of the Sicilian rail-ways. From this it appears that the whole of the north-east coast from Catania to Messina is perfectly free from malaria, and so also is the line on the north coast from Palermo to Termini; and, singularly enough, while these parts of the low ground are free, malarial regions are entered upon in certain places as soon as the railway begins to ascend to higher levels. Such is the case with the line which crosses the island from Termini to Girgenti; and on the line which ascends from Catania to Castrogiovanni it is found that the stations become more and more unhealthy as the line ascends to Leonforte, and at that station so unhealthy are the nights that it is necessary to convey the employés by a special train every evening to Castrogiovanni (at the height of more than 3000 feet), and to bring them back by another train in the morning.

The flora of Sicily is remarkable for its wealth of species ; but, comparing Sicily with other islands that have been long separated from the inainland, the number of endemic species is not great. The orders most abundantly represented are the Compositw, Crucifere, Labiate, Caryophyllacce, and Scrophulartacew. The Rosaccw are also abundantly represented, and among them are numerous species of the rose. The general aspect of the vegetation of Sicily, however, has been greatly affected, as in other parts of the Mediterranean, by the introduction of plants within historical times. Being more densely populated than any other large Mediterranean island, and

having its population dependent chiefly on the products of the soil, it is necessarily more extensively cultivated than any other of the larger islands referred to, and many of the objects of cultivation are not originally natives of the island. Not to mention the olive, which must have been introduced at a remote period, all the members of the orange tribe, the agave, and the prickly pear, as well as other plants highly characteristic of Sicilian scenery, have been introduced since the beginning of the Christian era. With respect to vegetation and cultivation three zoncs may be distinguished. The first reaches to about 1600 feet above sca-level, the upper limit of the

members of the orange tribe; the second ascends to about 3300 feet, the limit of the growth of wheat, the vine, and the hardier ever- greens ; and the third, that of forests, reaches from about 3300 feet upwards, But it is not merely height that determines the general character of the vegetation. The cultivated trecs of Sicily mostly demand such an amount of moisture as can be obtained only on the mountain slopes, and it is worthy of notice that the structure of the mountains is peculiarly favourable to the supply of this want. The limestones of which they are mostly composed act like a sponge, absorbing the rain-water through their innumerable pores and fissures, and thus storing it up in the interior, afterwards to allow it to well forth in springs at various elevations lower down. In this way the irrigation which is absolutely indispensable for the members of the orange tribe during the dry season is greatly facilitated, and even those trees for which irrigation is not so indispensable receive a more ample supply of moisture during the rainy season, Hence it is that, while the plain of Catania is almost treeless and tree-cultivation is comparatively limited in the west and south, where the extent of land under 1600 feet is consider- able, the whole of the north and north-east coast from the Bay of Castellamare round to Catania is an endless succession of orchards, in which oranges, citrons, and lemons alternate with olives, almonds, pomegranates, figs, carob trees, pistachios, mulberries, and vines. Oranges are specially important as an export crop, and the value of this product has enormously increased since steamers began to traverse the Mediterranean, Olives are even more extensively

cultivated, but more for home consumption. The limit in heigl.t of the olive is about 2700 feet, aud that of the vine about 3500. A considerable silk production depends on the cultivation of the mulberry in the neighbourhood of Messina and Catania. One of the most striking features in the commerce of the island is the very large proportion of southern fruits sent to the United States, whence petroleum is chiefly imported. Among other trees and shrubs of importance may be mentioned the deep-rooted sumach, which is adapted to the driest regions, the manna ash (Fraxinus ornus), the American Opuntia vulgaris or prickly pear and the agave—the former of which yields a favourite article of diet with the natives, and both of which thrive on the driest soil—the date-palm, the plantain, various bamboos, cycads, and the dwarf-palm, the last of which grows in some parts of Sicily more profusely than anywhere else, and in the desolate region in the south-west yields almost the only vegetable product of importance. The Arwndo Donaa, the tallest of European grasses, is largely grown for vine-stakes. The forests on the higher slopes of the mountains are chiefly of oak, with which are associated large numbers of the fruit-trees of central Europe, and on Etna and the Madonie chestnuts.

Outside of the tree region wheat is by far the most important Cereals

product. ~~At the present day Sicily is still a rich granary, as it was in ancient times when Greek colonies flourished in the south and east, and later under the supremacy of Rome. In all three~~ fourths of the cultivated surface are estimated to be covered with cereals, and it is the cultivation of wheat more particularly which determines in most places the character of the Sicilian landscape throughout the year. The magquis, or thick-leaved stunted ever-greens, which on the other Mediterranean islands withstand this summer drought, have been almost banished from Sicily by the extent of the wheat cultivation. Oats and barley are also grown, but maize scarcely at all, for, being a summer crop, it is almost entirely excluded from cultivation by the extreme drought of that season. Beans form in spring the chief food of the entire popula- tion. Flax is grown for its seed (linseed), and the Crocus sativus for the production of saffron, On the plain of Catania cotton is grown along with wheat, and among other sub-tropical products sugar (probably introduced by the Arabs about the 10th century) and tobacco are

still of some importance; but the cultivation of rice has greatly declined, in consequence of its tendency to produce malaria.

The native fauna of Sicily is similar to that of Southern Italy. Among domestic animals mules aud asses are very important as beasts of burden. At the enumeration of 10th January 1876 mules numbered in Sicily 112,115 out of a total of 298,868 belong- ing to the kingdom of Italy; the number of asses at the same date was 82,702 out of a total of 674,246 in the kingdom. The horses, sheep, and cattle are all of indifferent quality. | Tunny and sardine fisheries arc carried on round the coasts.

Manufacturing industry is little developed in the island, and Tndusty besides agriculture mining is the only important occupation of the and. people. The chief mineral is sulphur, Sicilian sulphur being indeed mining. —

the most valuable mineral product of Italy. There are about 300 mines in operation in the provinces of Girgenti, Caltanissetta, Catania, and Palermo, employing about 27,000 people. The sulphur is found in a particular formation of the Upper Miocene, and is separated from the ore by fusion in a primitive kind of furnace called calcaront, in most of which part of the sulphur is used as fuel. With the exception of a small quantity, which is used in the island for the vineyards, all the sulphur is exported, chiefly to England, France, Belgium, and the United States, and the produe-

tion goes on increasing, notwithstanding the lowering of the price,

\

SIlC—SsIC

due to the extraction of sulphur from iron pyrites obtained elsewhere, Before 1860 the annual production did not exceed 150,000 tons, while in 1880 it exceeded 300,000 tons, and in 1884 almost reached 400,000 tons. It is estimated that at least 50,000,000 tons are still available in the island. Besides sulphur, rock salt, the annual production of which is about 3000 tons, is the only important mineral product of the island ; but not less than 170,000 tons of bay salt are made in the salt-pans of Trapani and other parts

of the west coast. The rock salt is principally excavated near Racal- muto, Casteltermini, and Trabona, ;

The compartimento of Sicily is divided into seven provinces, the area and population of which are given in the following table :—

P No. of

; Area in Pop. per

Provinces. sq. miles. mad Pop. 1881. sq. mile, Caltanissetta …..... 1270 28 266,379 210 CG CAMIA, verse cc ete renee 1924 63 563,457 292 Girgenti …..c.sseee 1165 41 812,487 268 AIGA chain a ave eae esis 1246 97 460,924 3870 MEEMOPTNO: ayes ersece omy os e's 1985 76 699,151 852 BYTACUBE) 2… cece cece 1489 82 841,526 237 J)c2)6, 0 Spee Igeeeee 929 20 283,977 805

9958 857 2,927,901 294

The areas here given are those of Strelbitsky for 1881, these giving a total which agrees better than the old official figures with the total calculated by the Military Geographical Institute, which has not yet made any calculations for the individual provinces. The voleanic Lipari or Holian Islands to the north of Sicily are included in the province of Messina; the island of Ustica to the north-west

land, overrides the law in taking vengeance on those who have rendered themselves obnoxious to it, is a relic of former misrule, and is diminishing under the present Government. The condition of the peasantry still shows some of the injurious results of Spanish rule, under which the feudal system was introduced in its worst form. The nobles, who then acquired large landed properties, col- lected their serfs or retainers round their own castles, so that a number of considerable towns grew up, and the country districts were to a large extent deserted. The cultivators of the soil had often to walk 10 or 12 miles from their homes to their fields, It is chiefly from this cause that even at the present day the people of the island are mainly congregated

in towns containing not less than 5000 inhabitants each. The three principal towns of Sicily and the chief seats of its foreign commerce are Palermo (population, with suburbs, 244,991 in 1881), Catania (100,417), and Messina (81,049), and the next in size are Marsala (40,251), Acireale (38,547), Trapani (38,231; the headquarters of the coral-fishers of Italy), Caltanissetta (25,027), Syracuse (23,507), Sciacca (22,195), Girgenti (20,008; the centre of the trade in sulphur), Castrogiovanni (18,981), Licata (17,565), Terranova (17,178).

The backward state of education is another consequence of former Educa- In 1881 61°59 per cent of the inhabitants above twelve tion.

misrule, years of age were still unable to read and write (analfabeti), and in 1880-81 the number of pupils in the elementary public schools was only 101,724, or nearly 1 in 29 of the whole population, as against about 1 in 15 for the whole kingdom. Here, however, as in other parts of Italy, improvement is going on in this respect, for the pereentage of the people of Sicily above twelve years old unable to read aud write was 67°59 in 1871 and 78°12 in 1861.

The system of roads and railways is still defective. One line of Com- railway proceeds along the east coast from Messina to Syracuse, munica- and a branch ascends from it to join one of the lines whieh cross tion.

in that of Palermo; the Mgadic group (Lat. Insule gates), con- sisting of a number of limestone islands in the west, in that of

Trapani, from which the nearest is separated by a channel not more than nine fathoms in depth ; and to the same province belongs also Pantelleria, midway between Sicily and Africa,

The prosperity of the island, due chiefly to the stimulation of the cultivation of southern fruits by the extension of commerce in recent years, is shown by the fact that since 1861 the population has increased more rapidly than that of any other part of the king- dom. In 1861 the total population was 2,392,414, and in 1871 2,584,099. Thus the annual rate of increase was 7°74 per thousand as against 6°91 for the whole kingdom ; while between 1871 and 1881 the annual inerease was at the rate of 12°62 per thousand for

Sicily as against 6°02 for the whole kingdom. The number of emigrants issmall. In 1882 the number of emigrants proper (those who declared their intention of remaining out of the country for more than one year) was 2261 out of 65,748 for the whole king- dom, that of the temporary emigrants 954 as compared with 95,814.

The population, which in consequence of the chequered history of the island is necessarily a very mixed one, is said to be on the whole well disposed and industrious. The lawlessness indicated by the continued existence of the secret society called the Majia, which, like the Camorra of the Neapolitan provinces of the main-

SICKINGEN, Franz von (1481-1523), a powerful Ger- man baron, was born at Sickingen, Baden, the castle of his family, on Ist March 1481. He was the greatest of those Rhenish knights who held their lands immediately of the emperor, and was much esteemed by Maximilian I. and by Charles V., to both of whom he rendered good service in war. He held the position of imperial councillor and chamberlain, and won great fame as a protector of the poor and the oppressed. In 1517 he was put under the ban of the empire in consequence of a war with the imperial city of Worms. Afterwards he carried on wars with the duke of Lorraine, the imperial city of Metz, the landgrave Philip of Hesse, and Duke Ulrich of Wiirtemberg. For a short time he was disposed to serve Francis I. of France, from whom he received a persion; but in the imperial election of 1519 Sickingen exercised his influence on behalf of Charles V., and in 1521 he took a prominent part, with the count of Nassau, in the war with France. In 1522 an assembly at Landau elected him head of the confederation of Rhenish and Swabian barons. He was an enthusiastic adherent of the Humanists and Reformers, and when Luther seemed to be in danger offered to pro- vide for him a place of safety. Through the influence of Ulrich von Hutten, Sickingen formed a vast scheme for the overthrow of the spiritual and temporal princes, his intention being that all Germany should be brought

the middle of the island from north to south. Of these there are two,—one from Licata and one from Porto Empedocle, both on the south coast; these lines meet before touching the north coast a little to the east of Termini; thence the railway proceeds along the north coast to Palermo and

Castellamare, whence it recrosses the island again to Mazzara, and afterwards follows the west coast northwards to Trapani. A project is now (1886) entertained for the connexion of the railways of Sicily with those of the mainland by a tunnel under the Straits of Messina.

See W. H. Smyth, Sicily and its Islands, London, 1824; Theo. Fischer, Beitr. 2. phys. Geogr. d. Mittelmeerldinder, besonders Siciliens, Leipsic, 1877; Id., “Das Klima der Mittelmeerlinder,” in Erginzungsband xiii. of Petermann’s Mittheilunyen, Gotha, 1879, A complete account of Etna is given in Arnold von Lasaulx’s edition of Der Aetna, by W. Sartorius von Waltershausen, Leipsic, 2 vols., 1880. The best topographical map of Sicily is that based on Govern- ment surveys on the scale of 1:50,000; and on a small scale (1:800,000) that in Baedeker’s Italy is of peculiar excellence. The geology of the island is shown in a single sheet in the Carta Geologica della Sicilia nella Scala di 1:500,000, and in more detail on the scale of 1: 100,000 in twenty-seven sheets (not yet completed). See also for the geology and currents of the Straits of Messina the ‘‘ Schizzo Geologico dello Stretto di Messina colla Indicazione delle Correnti Marine,” in the Bolletino del R. Comitato Geologico d’Italia, 18th year, Rome, 1882. Regarding the minerals, see the third vol. of I Tesori sotterranet dell’ Italia by W. Jervis, Turin, 1881.

into immediate subjection to the emperor. He was so popular among the landsknechte or mercenary foot soldiers of the time that he had no difficulty in bringing together a powerful army ; and in September 1522 he began the war by attacking the archbishop of Treves. Much alarm was excited by this sudden movement, and the landgrave Philip and the palsgrave Louis hastened to the aid of the besieged prelate, and compelled Sickingen to withdraw from Treves. He had hoped that the barons, the peasantry, and the cities would rise in support of his designs, but in this expectation he was disappointed. Fortress after for- tress was taken from him, and at last, in April 1523, he was besieged in the tower of Landstuhl near Kaiserslautern. During the bombardment he was mortally wounded, and on 7th May 1523 he died, having capitulated almost im- mediately before. With his defeat and death the Barons’ War came to an end, His son was made a count of the empire (Reichsfreiherr) by Maximilian II., and a descend- ant was raised in

1773 by Joseph II. to the rank of Reichsgraf. One line of the family continued to possess immediate estates in the lordship of Landstuhl down to

1803.

SICKLE. See ScyTuHe.

SICYON was a city in the east of Achaia, Greece, about 2 miles inland from the Corinthian Gulf, situated on and below a hill in the angle formed by the confluence

pied by the village of Vasilika.

was almost a suburb of the main city (ZiKvwviwy Ay). The ancient and native form of the name was Zexvov.

The earliest inhabitants were Ionians; but it was con-

quered by the Dorian invaders of Argolis, who extended

their dominion over Corinth, Sicyon, and the whole valley Phalces, son of the first Dorian king of Argos, Temenus, was said to have been the conqueror of

of the Asopus.

Sicyon and founder (oixur7js) of the Dorian city, which, like Corinth, probably continued for a long time subject to the powerful kings of Argos. The population of the Dorian Sicyon was divided into four tribes; the Dorian conquerors constituted three—viz., the usual Dorian tribes

Hylleis, Dymanes, and Pamphyli—and a part of the pre-

Dorian population constituted the fourth tribe, which was called /Sgialeis. (Previous to the Dorian conquest the

city bore, according to Strabo, the name AXgiali, or ac-

cording to Pausanias Aigialeia.) The rest of the ancient population were reduced to the state of serfs, called katwva- kopépor or Kopuvndédpot, whose position was similar to that of the Helots in Sparta. As in most of the cities of Greece, the conflict between the aristocracy and the com- mons, who were superior in number but inferior in organiza- tion, in education, and in power, resulted in the rise of a dynasty of tyrants, the Orthagoride, who destroyed the rule of the Dorian oligarchy and reigned in Sicyon for a century, from about 665 B.c. Under the strong hand of these dynasts Sicyon attained great wealth. Lying near the great commercial centre Corinth, and possessing a harbour, it shared in the immense development of trade with the Italian peninsula which took place in the 8th and 7th centuries. Its marine was considerable, though ap- parently never of the first rank; at a later time it sent fifteen triremes to fight against the Persians at Salamis. The bronze work of Sicyon was renowned, as Strabo mentions ; and we may gain some conception of its style from some of the bronzes found at Olympia, which have probably been fabricated either at Sicyon or in the closely connected workshops of Argos. The Deedalid sculptors Dipcenus and Scyllis from Crete settled in Sicyon about the beginning of the 6th century, and gave the first im- pulse to a school of art, working mainly in bronze or in wood covered with bronze, which lasted for some genera- tions at Sicyon, Corinth, and Argos, and played a very prominent part in the development of Greek art. The early bronze work of the Sicyo-Argive workshops in all probability formed the model after which the Hesiodic description of the Shield of Hercules was composed by a poet of the 7th century. The fame of Sicyonian bronze work gave rise to the epithet TeAyivia, which was some- times applied to the city. Terra-cotta vases which have been fabricated at Sicyon are found in Etruria, whither they were exported in the Italian trade. They closely resemble in style the vases of Corinth, from which they are distinguished by the peculiar form of the letter epsilon in the inscriptions painted on them, and they usually belong to the 6th century. The market-gardens of the fertile Asopus valley supplied the populous Corinth with fruit and vegetables. At least in later times the fine shoes made in Sicyon were widely used in Greece. In the 4th century Sicyon continued to be one of the foremost states in an artistic point of view. The Sicyonian school of painting was founded by Eupompus, and some of the greatest foreign artists, such as Pamphilus and Apelles, studied

in it. Lysippus also, who gave a new impulse and tone to Greek sculpture, was a native of Sicyon.

In the dynasty of the Orthagoride Andreas began to reign about 665, his son Myron before 648; of Aristonymus, son of Myron,

of the rivers Asopus and Helisson ; the site is now occu- It possessed a harbour on the coast round which was a well-fortified town, which

nothing is known ; Myron II., son of Aristonymus, reigned seven years ; Isodamus, brother and murderer of Myron II., reigned a short time, and about 596 was replaced by his younger brother Clisthenes, who ruled till about 565. The dynasty ended with Clisthenes, who had no son; but his institutions continued in force for sixty years longer, until Sicyon came under the influence of the Peloponnesian confederacy, in which the Dorian Sparta wa; the chief power. The policy of the Orthagoride had always been strongly anti-Dorian, and under the Dorian reaction the most unfavourable colour was given to their actions ; hence grew the extremely unpleasant picture of them in the pages of Herodotus, who gives the current Peloponnesian accounts of the 5th century, These accounts are contradicted by the long rule of the dynasty and the permanence of their policy after their extinction. Myron I. won a chariot-race at Olympia in 648, and dedicated a bronze Odédapos (probably a large chest or vatoxos covered with bronze), with an inscription, which Pausanias saw in the Olympian treasury of the Sicyonians. The building of this treasury is ascribed to him by Pausanias, but excavation has shown that the building is not earlier than 500; it consists of a simple cella with a pronaos in antis, and is built of Sicyonian stones, cut and numbered at Sicyon, and thence transported by water to Olympia. Clisthenes was the most powerful and famous of the Sicyonian despots, and he con- tinued the anti-Dorian policy of his predecessors ; but, as we have seen, it is impossible to trust the details of his action as given by Herodotus (v. 67). He is said to have forbidden the rhapsodists to recite the epics in which the fame of Dorian heroes was sung, and to have encouraged the worship of Dionysus, a non-Dorian deity. Another object of his policy was to secure the favour of the Delphian oracle, and he used all his power in the Sacred War on the side of Delphi

against Crissa (590 B.c.), He won a victory in the chariot-race at Delphi in 582. Clisthenes had no son, and he desired to obtain the noblest of the Greeks as a husband for his daughter Agariste. The story of the wooing of Agariste as it was current in Athens, probably in poetic form, has been preserved by Herodotus. Clisthenes, when declared victor at the Olympian games (572 or 568), invited the best of the Greeks to Sicyon. Twelve representatives from all parts of Greece (whose names are chosen by the poet with little regard to chronological possibility) assembled there and spent a year as guests of Clisthenes. First among them all were two Athenians, one of whom, Megacles the Alemxonid, was at last preferred to his rival Hippoclides; and the careless remark of the latter, ‘‘ Hippoclides cares not,”. became proverbial. Megacles and Agariste were parents of Clisthenes, who became famous after 510 as the second founder of the Athenian democracy, and their grand-daughter Agariste was mother of the still more famous Pericles. When Sicyon again came under the Dorian influence shortly before 500, the oligarchical form of goveru- ment was reintroduced and lasted till about 369, when the de- mocracy was again established ; but its form was used by Euphron to exercise his own power, and after him a series of tyrants ruled the city, till in 251 Aratus reintroduced the democratic government and Sicyon joined the Achean league. Under the Roman rule Sicyon profited by the destruction of Corinth in 146 B.c.; it received part of the Corinthian territory together with the presidency of the Isthmian games, But it sank into decay as Corinth revived, and was almost depopulated when Pausanias visited it in the 2d century after Christ. Among the bishoprics of the Byzantine time New Sicyon occurs regularly ; it is probable that this was a town ona new site near the old city. -(W. M, RA.)

SIDDONS, Saran (1755-1831), English actress, was the eldest of twelve children of Roger Kemble, the manager of a company of strolling players, and his wife Sarah Ward, and was born in the “Shoulder of Mutton” public-house, Brecon, Wales, 5th July 1755. Through the special care of her mother in sending her to the schools in the towns where the company played she received a remarkably good educa- tion, although she was accustomed to make her appearance on the stage while stilla mere child. She became attached to William Siddons, an actor of the company ; but this was discountenanced by her parents, who wished her to accept the offer of a

squire. Siddons was dismissed from the company, and she was sent to a situation as lady's mail in Warwickshire ; at last, however, the necessary consent was obtained and the marriage took place at Trinity Church, Coventry, on 26th November 1773. It was while play- ing at Cheltenham in the following year that Mrs Siddons met with the earliest decided recognition of her great powers as an actress, when by her representation of Belvi- dera in Venice Preserved she moved to tears a party of "people of quality" who had come to "scoff." Her merits

) of 1777 went "'on the circuit" in the provinces.

e y j t f { {|

4

q \] |

(

were made known by them to Garrick, who sent his deputy to Cheltenham to report regarding her abilities, the result being that she was engaged to appear at Drury Lane at a salary of £5 a week. Owing to inexperience as well as other circumstances, her first appearances as Portia and in other parts were unfortunate, and when, after playing with success in Birmingham, she was about to return to town she received a note from the manager of Drury Lane

| stating that her services would not be required. Thus, in

her own words, 'banished from Drury Lane as a worthless candidate for fame and fortune," she again in the beginning After a very successful engagement at Bath from 1778 to 1782,

/ she again accepted an offer from Drury Lane, when her

appearance in Southern's Jsadella was one continued tri- umph, only equalled in the history of the English stage by that of Garrick's first night at

Drury Lane in 1741 and that of Edmund Kean's in 1814. In her earlier years it was in scenes of a tender and melting character that she

| exercised the strongest sway over an audience ; but in the | performance of Lady Macbeth, in which she appeared | February 1785, it was the grandeur of her exhibition of

the more terrible passions as related to one awful purpose that held them spellbound. In Lady Macbeth she found the highest and best scope for her gifts. It fitted her as no other character did, and as perhaps it will never fit another actress. Her extraordinary and peculiar physical endowments—tall and striking figure, brilliant beauty, powerfully expressive eyes, and solemn dignity of demean- our—enabled her to confer a weird majesty on the character which inexpressibly heightened the tragic awe surround- ing her fate. After Lady Macbeth she played Desdemona, Rosalind, and Ophelia, all with great success ; but it was in Queen Catherine—which she first played on her brother's

spectacular revival of Henry VIJJ. in 1788—that she dis-

covered a part almost as well adapted to her peculiar powers as that of Lady Macbeth. In her early life she had attempted comedy, but her gifts in this respect were very limited. It was of course inevitable that comparisons should be made between her and her only compeer Rachel, who undoubtedly excelled her in intensity and the por- trayal of fierce passion, but was a less finished artist and lacked Mrs Siddons's dignity and pathos. Though Mrs Siddons's minute and systematic study perhaps gave a cer- tain amount of stiffness to her representations, it conferred on them a symmetry and proportion to which Rachel never attained. Mrs Siddons formally retired from the stage 29th June 1812, but occasionally appeared on special occasions even when advanced in years. In private life she enjoyed the friendship and respect of a wide circle, including many of the most eminent persons of her time. She died at London on 8th June 1831.

See Thomas Campbell, Life of Mrs Siddons (2 vols., 1834); Fitz- gerald, The Kembles (3 vols., 1871); and Frances Ann Kemble, Records of a Girlhood (8 vols., 1878).

SIDI-BEL-ABBES, chief town of an arrondissement in the department of Oran, Algeria, lies 48 miles by rail to the south of that town, at an elevation of 1552 feet above sea-level, on the right bank of the Mekerra (afterwards the Sig), and surrounded by a plain which is dominated by the escarpments of Mount Tessala. The town, encircled by a crenellated and bastioned wall with a fosse, is traversed from east to west and from north to south by two wide streets shaded by plane trees ; the gates are four in number, named from Oran, Daia, Mascara, and Tlemcen respectively. There are numerous fountains fed from the Mekerra. The civil and military quarters of the town are quite distinct from one another. The population of Sidi-bel-Abbés in 1881 was 13,298, or, including the commune, 16,840; the Spanish considerably preponderates over the French

element. The town, which is of quite recent origin, de- rives its name from a chapel, near which a redoubt was constructed by General Bedeau in 1843. The surrounding country is healthy, fertile, and populous.

SIDMOUTH, Viscount. See Appineron, Henry.

SIDNEY, or Sypney, ALGERNON (1622-1683), was the second son of Robert, second earl of Leicester, and of Dorothy Percy, daughter of Henry, earl of Northumber- land, and was born at Penshurst, Kent, in 1622. Asa boy he showed much talent, which was carefully trained under his father’s eye. In 1632 with his elder brother he accompanied his father on his mission as ambassador ex- traordinary to Christian IV. of Denmark, whom he saw at Rendsburg. In May 1636 Sidney went with his father to Paris, where he became a general favourite, and from there to Rome. In October 1641 he was given a troop in his father’s regiment in Ireland, of which his brother, Lord Lisle, was in command. In August 1643 the brothers returned to England. At Chester their horses were taken by the Royalists, whereupon they again put out to sea and landed at Liverpool. Here they were detained by the Parliamentary commissioners, and by them sent up to London for safe custody. Whether this was intended by Sidney or no, it is certain that from this time he ardently attached himself’ to the Parliamentary cause. On 10th May.1644 he was made captain of horse in Manchester’s army, under the Eastern Association. He was shortly afterwards made lieutenant-colonel, and charged at the head of his regiment at Marston Moor (2d July),

where he was wounded and rescued with difficulty. On 2d April 1645 he was given the command of a cavalry regiment in Cromwell's division of Fairfax's army, was appointed governor of Chichester on 10th May, and in December was returned to parliament for Cardiff. In July 1646 his regiment was ordered to Ireland, and he was made lieutenant-general of horse in that kingdom and governor of Dublin. Leaving London on 1st February 1647, Sidney arrived at Cork on the 22d. He was soon (8th April), however, recalled by a resolution of the House passed through the interest of Lord Inchiquin. On 7th May he received the thanks of the House of Commons. On 13th October 1648 he was made lieutenant of Dover castle, of which he had previously been appointed governor. He was at this time identified with the Independents as op- posed to the Presbyterian party. He was nominated one of the commissioners to try Charles I., but took no part in the trial, retiring to Penshurst until sentence was pro- nounced. That Sidney approved of the trial, though not of the sentence, there can, however, be little doubt, for in Copenhagen he publicly and vigorously expressed his con- currence. On 15th May 1649 he was a member of the committee for settling the succession and for regulating the election of future parliaments. Sidney lost the gover- norship of Dover, however, in March 1651, in consequence, apparently, of a quarrel with his officers. He then went to The Hague, where he quarrelled with Lord Oxford at play, and a duel was only prevented by their friends. He re- turned to England in the autumn, and henceforward took an active share in parliamentary work. On 25th November Sidney was elected on the council of state and was evi- dently greatly considered. In the usurpation of Cromwell, however, he utterly refused all concurrence, nor would he leave his place in parliament except by force when Crom- well dispersed it on 19th April 1653. He immediately retired to Penshurst, where he was concerned chiefly with family affairs. In 1654 he again went to The Hague, and there became closely acquainted with De Witt. On his return he kept entirely aloof from public affairs, and it is to this period that the Lssay on Love is ascribed.

Upon the restoration of the Long Parliament, 7th May

1659, Sidney again took his seat, and was placed on the council of state. He showed himself in this office especi- ally anxious that the military power should be duly sub- ordinated to the civil. On 5th June he was appointed one of three commissioners to mediate for a peace between Denmark supported by Holland and Sweden. He was probably intended to watch the conduct of Montague, who was in command of the Baltic squadron. Of his character we have an interesting notice from Whitelocke, who refused to accompany him on the ground of his “over- ruling temper and height.” Upon the conclusion of the treaty he went to Stockholm as plenipotentiary ; and in both capacities he behaved with resolution and address. When the restoration of Charles IT. took place Sidney left Sweden, 28th June 1660, bringing with him from the king of Sweden a rich present in testimony of the estimation in which he was held. Sidney went first to Copenhagen, and then, being doubtful of his reception by the English court, settled at Hamburg. From there he wrote a celebrated letter vindicating his conduct, which will be found in the Somers Tracts. He shortly afterwards left Hamburg, and passed through Germany by way of Venice to Rome. His stay there, however, was embittered by misunderstandings with his father and consequent straits for money. Five shillings a day, he says, served him and two men very well for meat, drink, and firing. He devoted himself to the study of books, birds, and trees, and speaks of his natural delight in solitude being largely increased. In 1663 he left Italy, passed through Switzerland, where he visited Ludlow, and came to Brussels in September, where his portrait was painted by Van Egmondt ; it is now at Penshurst. He had thoughts of joining the imperial service, and offered to transport from England a body of the old Commonwealth men ; but this was refused by the English court. It is stated that the enmity against him was so great that now, as on other occasions, attempts were made to assassinate him. On the breaking out of the Dutch war Sidney, who was at The Hague, urged an invasion of England, and shortly afterwards went to Paris, where he offered to raise a rebellion in England on receipt of 100,000 crowns. Unable, however, to come to terms with the French Government, he once more went into retirement in 1666,—this time to the south of France. In August 1670 he was again in Paris, and Arlington proposed that he should receive a pension from Louis ; Charles II. agreed, but insisted that Sidney should return to Languedoc. In illustration of his austere principles it is related that, Louis having taken a fancy to a horse belonging to him and insisting on

possessing it, Sidney shot the animal, which, he said, "'was born a free creature, had served a free man, and should not be mastered by a king of slaves." His father was now very ill, and after much difficulty Sidney obtained leave to come to England in the autumn of 1677. Lord Leicester died in November ; and legal business connected with other portions of the succession detained Sidney from returning to France as he had intended. He soon became involved in political in- trigue, joining, in general, the country party, and holding close communication with Barillon, the French ambassador. In the beginning of 1679 he stood for Guildford, and was warmly supported by William Penn, with whom he had long been intimate, and to whom he afforded assistance in drawing up the constitution of Pennsylvania. He was defeated by court influence, and his petition to the House, complaining of an undue return, never came to a decision. His Letters to Henry Savile, written at this period, are of great interest. He was in Paris, apparently only for a short while, in November 1679. Into the prosecution of the Popish Plot Sidney threw himself warmly, and was among those who looked to Monmouth, rather than to

Orange, to take the place of James in the succession, though he afterwards disclaimed all interest in such a question. He now stood for Bramber (Sussex), again with Penn's support, and a double return was made. He is reported on 10th August 1679 as being elected for Amers- ham (Buckingham) with Sir Roger Hill. When parlia- ment met, however, in October 1680, his election was declared void. But now, under the idea that an alliance between Charles and Orange would be more hostile to English liberty than would the progress of the French arms, he acted with Barillon in influencing members of parliament in this sense, and is twice mentioned as receiv- ing the sum of 500 guineas from the ambassador. Of this there is no actual proof, and it is quite possible that Barillon entered sums in his accounts with Louis which he never paid away. In any case it is to be remembered that Sidney is not charged with receiving money for ad- voeating opinions which he did not enthusiastically hold.

Upon the dissolution of the last of Charles's parliaments the king issued a justificatory declaration. This was at once answered by a paper entitled A

Just and Modest Vin- dication, &c., the first sketch of which is imputed to Sidney. It was then, too, that his most celebrated production, the Discourses concerning Government, was concluded, in which he upholds the doctrine of the mutual compact and traverses the High Tory positions from end to end. In especial he vindicates the propriety of resistance to kingly oppression or misrule, upholds the existence of an here- ditary nobility interested in their country's good as the firmest barrier against such oppression, and maintains the authority of parliaments. In each_ point the English constitution, which he ardently admires, is, he says, suffer- ing : the prerogatives of the crown are disproportionately great; the peerage has been degraded by new creations ; and parliaments are slighted.

For a long while Sidney kept himself aloof from the duke of Monmouth, to whom he was introduced by Lord Howard. After the death of Shaftesbury, however, in November 1682, he entered into the conferences held be- tween Monmouth, Russell, Essex, Hampden, and others. That treasonable talk went on seems certain, but it is probable that matters went no further. The watchfulness of the court was, however, aroused, and on the discovery of the Rye House Plot, Sidney, who had always been regarded in a vague way as dangerous, was arrested while at dinner on 26th June 1683. His papers were carried off, and he was sent at once to the Tower on a charge of high treason. For a considerable while no evidence could be found on which to establish a charge. Jeffreys, how- ever, was made lord chief-justice in September ; a jury was packed ; and, after consultations between the judge and the crown lawyers, Sidney was brought to listen to the indictment on 7th November. 'The trial, which began on 21st November, was conducted with a shameless absence of equity: Sidney was refused a copy of the indictment, in direct violation of law, and—more shameful still—he was refused the assistance of counsel. Hearsay evidence and the testimony of the perjured informer Lord Howard, whom Sidney had been instrumental in introducing to his friends, were first produced. This being insufficient, partial extracts from papers found in Sidney's study, and supposed only to be in his handwriting, in which the lawfulness of resistance to oppression was upheld, were next relied on. He was indicted for "conspiring and compassing the deat of the king." Sidney conducted his case throughout with great skill; he pointed especially to the fact that Lord Howard, whose character he easily tore to shreds, was the only witness against him as to

treason, whereas the law required two, that the treason was not accurately defined, that no proof had been given that the papers produced

SI D—SID

were his, and that, even if that were proved, these papers were in no way connected with the charge. Against the determination to secure a conviction, however, his courage, coolness, and skill were of no avail, and the On 25th November Sidney presented a petition to the king, praying for an audience, which, however, under the influence of James and Jeffreys, On the 26th he was brought up for judgment, and again insisted on the illegality of his con- Upon hearing his sentence he gave vent to his Jeffreys having suggested that his mind was disordered, he held out his hand and bade the chief-justice feel how calm and By the advice of his friends he offering, if released, to leave

cloquence, : verdict of ‘guilty ” was given.

Charles refused.

viction. feelings in a few noble and beautiful words.

steady his pulse was. presented a second petition, the kingdom at once and for ever. The supposed necessity, however, of checking the hopes of Monmouth’s partisans, caused the king to be inexorable. The last days of Sidney’s life were spent in drawing up his Apology and in discourse with Independent ministers. He was beheaded on the morning of 7th December 1683. His remains were buried at Penshurst. (0. A.)

SIDNEY, Sir Pururp (1554-1586), although killed at the early age of thirty-two, was one of the most conspicu- ous figures at the court of Elizabeth, was known to the leading statesmen of Europe as a soldier and statesman of the highest promise, took a permanent place in history and legend as a romantic hero, and in literature is dis- tinguished as the author of the first important body of English sonnets and a writer whose works mark a distinct advance in English prose. He was born at Penshurst in Kent on 29th November 1554. His father was Sir Henry Sidney, famous in his time as an administrator of Ireland, his mother a Dudley, sister of Elizabeth’s

favourite, the earl of Leicester, and daughter of the earl of Northumberland executed for high treason in the reign of Mary. Thus Sidney was of notable kindred on both sides—

‘‘ Others, because of both sides I do take My blood from them who did excel in this, Think Nature me a man-at-arms did make.” }

He received his scholastic education at Shrewsbury school and at Christ Church, Oxford. He was entered at Shrewsbury on the same day with his lifelong friend and biographer Fulke Greville, afterwards Lord Brooke. In 1572 he set out with three years’ leave of absence to com- plete his education by Continental travel ; he was in Paris at the house of the English ambassador on the night of the massacre of St Bartholomew, and went thence to Frankfort, Vienna, and the chief cities of Italy. During these travels he associated with scholars and statesmen, making an earnest study of European politics, winning golden opinions for his youthful gravity and sagacity. From that time Hubert Languet, the Reformer, whom he met at Frankfort, main- tained a constant correspondence with him. On his return he was introduced at court, won the favour of Elizabeth, who considered him “‘one of the jewels of her crown,” and, in proof of the versatility which made him one of the wonders of his age, wrote a masque, The Lady of the May, for Leicester’s great reception of the queen at Kenilworth, and distinguished himself in the tournament upon the same occasion. In 1577, at the age of twenty-two, being Sent as ambassador in great state to congratulate and sound Rudolph II., the new emperor of Germany, he met William the Silent, who pronounced him one of the ripest statesmen in Europe. He returned in the following year, and from that time till the expedition to the Netherlands, in which he lost his life, he had no public employnient, but lived partly at court, partly at his country seat at

1 Astrophel and Stella, sonnet 41.

Penshurst in Kent. In 1583 he married the daughter of Sir Francis Walsingham, who after his death became countess of Essex. His most memorable interference in state affairs was a bold letter of remonstrance to Elizabeth against her suspected policy of marrying the duke of Anjou. The

queen’s anger at his boldness drove him for a time into retirement. He was a strong advocate of in- tervention on the Protestant side, and in 1585 accom- panied Leicester in his expedition to the Netherlands, and was appointed governor of Flushing, one of the towns held by the queen’as security. The historical truth of the famous incident at the battle of Zutphen (22d September 1586), when the wounded hero passed a cup of water to a dying soldier, has been questioned; but it is matter of fact that he owed his death to an impulse of romantic generosity. The lord marshal happening to enter the field of Zutphen without greaves, Sidney cast off his also, to put his life in the same peril, and thus exposed himself to the fatal shot. His death took place fifteen days later, on 7th October 1586, at Arnheim.

No poet’s death was ever so lamented by poets as Sidney’s. Pastoral elegy was in fashion, and all the numerous poets and rhymesters of the time from Spenser to Davison hastencd to lay their tribute of verse on the bier of this the darling of all the shepherds—

‘“¢ With whom all joy and jolly merriment Is also deaded and in dolour drent.”

That there was much more than the worship of his rank and his bright eager personality in this is shown by the lasting reputation of what he wrote during the two years of retirement, 1580-81, which he seems to have given mainly to literature. The truth is that Sidney transferred his own strong, radiant, graceful, and lovable character to his writings with a freshness and fidelity such as few finished artists have achieved, so that he really and literally lives in them to charm for ever. None of his writings were published during his lifetime, and the dates of composition are uncertain. But it would seem that Sidney’s first attempt at verse was a metri- cal version of the Psalms, written in conjunction with his sister, the countess of Pembroke, —‘‘ Sidney’s sister, Pembroke’s mother.” The worth of these paraphrases, which have all Sidney’s qualities of sincerity, directness, and sweetness of rhythm, has recently been recognized by Mr Ruskin, who has edited them under the title of Rock Honeycomb in the second volume of his Bibliotheca Pastorum (1877). Sidney’s famous prose romance, The Countess of Pembroke’s Arcadia, the ‘‘ vain amatorious poem” with which Charles I. solaced his imprisonment, was also begun in 1580. It was pub-

lished in- 1590, and kept its popularity as long as that kind of high-flown sentiment and intricate adventure found readers. The buoyancy and freshness of Sidney's style give a certain air of reality even to the artificial scenes of the Arcadia, and many pretty songs are interspersed through the work. Sidney's greatest poetic achieve- ment, however, was the series of sonnets entitled Astrophel and Stella, the first important body of sonnets in the English language. The sonnets, 110 in number, are a chronicle of the poet's love for Penelope Devereux, sister of the earl of Essex, afterwards Lady Rich. He first met the lady when she was a child of twelve at one of the stages in Elizabeth's progress to Kenilworth in 1575. A match was apparently arranged between them by their families, but upon Leicester's disgrace it was broken off and Penclope was given to Lord Rich. Sidney seems then to have discovered that he was in love with her. Whether the passion was real or feigned for artistic purposes is of little consequence, although the reality of it has been hotly maintained ; he writes as if it were real, and the verisimilitude of the story recorded in the sonnets, which express his varying moods towards her throughout the incidents of sub- sequent intercourse and the distractions of his public life, adds greatly to their interest. Very few of the sonnets will bear separa- tion from the context, though there is hardly one that does not contain some sweet ingenuity of fancy or casual felicity of phrase. Some of them were special favourites with Charles Lamb. Sidney's other work during this busy literary passage in his short life, the Apologie for Poctric, has also established itself as a classic.

The best of the sonnets are selected by Mrs Ward in Ward's English Poets; Mr Main also makes a good selection in his Treasury of English Sonnets. The sonnets were probably written in 1581; they were not published till 1591, when they formed the first in a brilliant series of volumes of sonnet literature (see ' Blizabethan Sonneteers," in Minto's Characteristics of English Poets). The Apologie is included in Arber's reprints.

SIDON (Arab. Saida), long the principal city of Pua@ntora (q.v.), and even in the Middle Ages a place of importance, but now little more than a mere village, is situated on the Syrian coast in 33° 36' N. lat. and 35° 20′

at Wiirzburg, and obtained his doctor’s diploma in 1820. In 1822 he entered the service of the king of the Nether- lands as medical officer to the East Indian army. On his arrival at Batavia he was attached to a new mission to Japan, sent by the Dutch with a view to improve their trading relations with that country. Siebold was well equipped with scientific apparatus, and he remained in Japan for six years, with headquarters at the Dutch settle- ment on the little island of Deshima. His medical qualli- fications enabled him to find favour with the Japanese, and he gathered a vast amount of information concerning a country then almost as little known as Corea, especially concerning its natural history and ethnography. He had comparatively free access to the interior, and his reputation spreading far and wide brought him visitors from all parts of the country. His valuable stores of information were added to by trained natives whom he sent to collect for him in the interior. In 1824 he published De Historizx Naturalis in Japonia Statu and in 1832 his splendid Fauna Japonica. His knowledge of the language enabled him also in 1826 to issue from Batavia his Hpitome Linguz Japonice. In Deshima he also laid the foundation of his Catalogus Librorum Japomcorum and Isagoge in Biblio- thecam Japonicam, published after his return to Europe, as also his Bibliotheca Japonica, which, with the co-opera- tion of J. Hoffmann, appeared at Leyden in 1833. During the visit which he was permitted to make to Yedo (Tokio), Siebold made the best of the rare opportunity ; his zeal, indeed, outran his discretion, since, for obtaining a native map of the country, he was thrown into prison and com- pelled to quit Japan on Ist January 1830. On his return to Holland he was raised to the rank of major, and in 1842 to that of colonel. After his arrival in Europe he began to give to the world the fruits of his researches and observations in Japan. His Nippon; Archw zur Beschreibung von Japan und dessen Neben- und Schutz- Léndern was issued in five quarto volumes of text, with six folio volumes of atlas and engravings. He also issued many fragmentary papers on various aspects of Japan. In 1854 he published at Leyden Urkundliche Darstellung der Bestrebungen Niederlands und Russlands zur Hrofinung Japans. In 1859 Siebold undertook a second journey to Japan, and was invited by the emperor to his court. In 1861 he obtained permission from the Dutch Government to enter the Japanese service as negotiator between Japan and the powers of Europe, and in the same year his eldest son was made interpreter to the English embassy at Yedo. Siebold was, however, soon obliged by various intrigues to retire

from his post, and ultimately from Japan. Re- turning by Java to Europe in 1862, he set up his ethno- graphical collections, which were ultimately secured by the Government of Bavaria and removed to Munich. He continued to publish papers on various Japauese subjects, and received honours from many of the learned societies of Europe. He died at Munich on 18th October 1866. Siebold until recent years was our great authority on Japan, and even now his writings on the natural history of that country have not been superseded.

See biography by Moritz Wagner, in Allgemeine Zeitwng, 13th to 16th November 1866.

SIEDLCE (Russ. Syedlets), a government of Russian Poland, between the Vistula and the Bug, having Warsaw on the N.W., ZomZa on the N., Grodno and Volhynia on the E., Lublin and Radom on the S. Its area is 5535 square miles. The surface is mostly flat, only a few hilly tracts appearing in the middle, around Biata, and in the east on the banks of the Bug. Extensive marshes prevail in the north and south-east. Chalk, Jurassic, and Tertiary deposits cover the surface, and are overlain in their turn with widely spread Glacial deposits. The valley of

9” E. long., about midway between Sur (Tyre) and Beirut (Beyrout). The ancient city extended some 800 yards farther inland, over ground now occupied by luxuriant fruit-gardens, on the produce of which the inhabitants of the town live. In front of the flat promontory to which the modern Sidon is confined there stretches northwards and southwards a rocky peninsula; at the northern ex- tremity of this begins a series of small rocks enclosing the harbour, which at present is a very bad one, having been, to some extent at least, purposely filled up. The port was formerly protected on the north by the “Kal’at el-Bahr “Sea Castle”), a building of the 13th century, situated upon an island still connected with the mainland by a bridge. On the south side of the town lay the so-called Egyptian harbour, now quite useless. The wall by which Sidon is at present surrounded is pierced by two gates, those of Beirut and Akko (Acre); at the south-eastern angle, upon a heap of rubbish, stand the remains of the citadel. The streets are very narrow, and the buildings of any interest are few; most prominent are some large caravanserais belonging to the period of Sidon’s modern prosperity, and the

large mosque, formerly a church of the Knights of St John. Sidon looks best from the north. Of its 9000 inhabitants 7000 are Mohammedans; there are a number of institutions conducted by Catholic and Protestant Christians. In the neighbourhood are large Pheenician burial-places, which have been partially explored by Renan ; the natives also engage in the search for anti- quities. The principal finds are sarcophagi, and next to these sculptures and paintings. The most important dis- covery hitherto made has been that of the sarcophagus of Eshmunazar with a long inscription ; it is now (1886) in the Louvre.

In 637-638 Sidon was taken by the Arabs. During the crusades it was alternately in eee of the Franks and the Moham- medans, but finally fell into the hands of the latter in 1291. As the residence of the Druse emir Fakhr ed-Din, it rose to some prosperity about the beginning of the 17th century, but towards the close of the 18th its commerce again passed away, principally to Beirut (Beyrout), and the prosperity of Sidon has cver since been steadily declining.

See Renan, Mission de Phénicie, Paris, 1865.

SIDONIUS APOLLINARIS. See APpoLuinaRis SIDONIUS.

SIEBENBURGEN. See TRANSYLVANIA.

SIEBOLD, Cart TuEopor Ernst von (1804-1885), physiologist and zoologist, the son of a physician and a descendant of what Oken called the “Asclepiad family of Siebolds,” was born at Wiirzburg on 16th February 1804. Educated in medicine and science chiefly at the university of Berlin, he became successively professor of zoology, physiology, and comparative anatomy in Kénigs- berg, Erlangen, Freiburg, Breslau, and Munich. In con- junction with Stannius he published (1845-48) a Manual of Comparative Anatomy, which is still of solid value; and along with Kolliker he founded in 1848 a journal which soon took and still retains a leading place in biological literature, Zeitschrift fiir wissenschaftliche Zoologre. He was also a laborious and successful helminthologist (see PARAsiTIsM) and entomologist, in both capacities contri- buting many valuable papers to his journal, which he continued to edit until his death in 1885. In these ways, without being a man of marked genius, but rather an in- dustrious and

critical observer, he came to fill a peculiarly distinguished position in science, and was long reckoned, what his biographer justly calls him, the Nestor of German zoology. See Ehlers, Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., 1885.

SIEBOLD, Pumire Franz von (1796-1866), scientific explorer of Japan and elder brother of the physiologist noticed above, was born at Wiirzburg, Germany, on 17th February 1796. He studied medicine and natural science

the Vistula is mostly wide, with several terraces covered with sand-dunes or peat-bog. Siedlce is watered by the Vistula, which borders it for 50 miles on the west ; the

Bug, which is navigable from Opalin and flows for 170

miles on the east and north-east borders of the province ;

the Wieprz, a tributary of the Vistula, which is also navi- gable, and flows for 25 miles along the southern boundary ; and the Liwiec, a tributary of the Bug, which is navigable for some 30 miles below Wengroff.

Of the total surface of the government only 184,760 acres are unproductive ; 695,420 acres are covered with forests ; 1,708,100 are under crops, and 611,260 under meadows aud pasture land. The population only increases at the rate of 0°75 per cent. a year, and in 1884 numbered 630,240; of these Poles constituted 39°7 per cent., Little Russians 43:1, Jews 15°1, and Germans about 2. According to religious belief they were distributed as follows :— out of 616,649 inhabitants in 1882 there were 367,187 Catholics, 142,945 Orthodox Greeks, 96,764 Jews, 8892 Protestants, 505 Baptists, and 356 Mohammedan Tatars. occupation ; in 1881 the crops yielded 1,531,400 quarters of corn and 10,988,400 bushels of potatoes. Cattle-breeding is in a relatively flourishing state, there being (1881) 57,500 horses, 292,670 horned cattle, 461,700 sheep, and 194,100 pigs. Manufactures are insigni- ficant (2270 workmen) ; their aggregate production, chiefly from distilleries and breweries, was valucd at £394,820 in 1881. Trade also is insignificant, although Siedlce has four railways, one of which, from Warsaw to Brest-Litovsk, crosses it from west to east. There

are two gymuasia for boys (at Siedlce and Biata), one gymna- sium for girls, one seminary for teachers (at Biata), and about 240

rimary schools with 11,260 scholars. The government is divided into nine districts, the chief towns of which, with their populations in 1882, are—SiedIce (see below), Biata (19,435), Constantinoff (3200), Garvolin (14,620), Bukoff (11,030), Radzyn (4440), Sokotoff (6300), Wengroff (8140), and Wtodawa (17,985). Janotf (3030), where a state stud is kept, has also municipal institutions.

SIEDLCE, capital of the above government, is situated 57 miles east-south-east of Warsaw, on the Brest-Litovsk Railway. It received municipal institutions in 1547. The Oginskis, to whom it belonged, have embellished it with a palace and gardens; but it is still nothing more than a large village, where the provincial authorities have their seat. Its population was 12,950 in 1882.

SIEGE. See FoRTIFICATION.

SIEGEN, an ancient mining and manufacturing town of Prussia, in the province of Westphalia, is situated 47 miles to the east of Cologne on the Sieg, a tributary entering the Rhine opposite Bonn. The surrounding dis- trict, to which it gives its name, abounds in iron-mines, so that iron founding and smelting are important branches of industry in and near the town. Large tanneries and leather-works, and factories for cloth paper, and machinery, are among the other industrial establishments. The popu- lation in 1880 was 15,024, of whom 3632 were Roman Catholics and 111 Jews.

Siegen was the capital of an early principality belonging to the house of Nassau ; and from 1606 onwards it gave name to the junior branch of Nassau-Siegen. Napoleon incorporated Siegen in the grand-duchy of Berg in 1806 ; and in 1815 the congress of Vienna assigned it to Prussia, under whose rule it has nearly quintupled its population. Rubens is said to have been born here in 1577.

SIEGFRIED. Sce NiBELUNGENLIED, vol. xvii. p. 475.

SIEMENS, Sir Wiit1am (1823-1883), christened Carl Wilhelm, an eminent inventor, engineer, and natural philo- sopher, was born at Lenthe in Hanover on 4th April 1823. After being educated in the polytechnic school of Magde- burg and the university of Géttingen, he visited England at the age of nineteen, in the hope of introducing a process in electro-plating invented by himself and his brother Werer. The invention was adopted by Messrs Elking- ton, and Siemens returned to Germany to enter as a pupil the engineering works of Count Stolberg at Magdeburg. In 1844 he was again in England with another invention, the “chronometric” or differential governor for steam- engines (see STEAM-ENGINE). Finding that British patent laws afforded the inventor a protection which was then wanting in Germany, he thenceforth made England his

Agriculture is the chief

home ; but it was not till 1859 that he formally became a naturalized British subject. After some years spent in active invention and experiment at mechanical works near Birmingham, he went into practice as an engineer in 1851. He laboured mainly in two distinct fields, the applications of heat and the applications of electricity, and was charac- terized in a very rare degree by a combination of scientific comprehension with practical instinct. In both fields he played a part which would have been great in either alone ; and, in addition to this, he produced from time to time miscellaneous inventions and scientific papers sufficient in themselves to have established a reputation. His _posi- tion was recognized by his election in 1862 to the Royal Society, and later to the presidency of the Institute of Mechanical Engineers, the Society of Telegraph Engineers, the Iron and Steel Institute, and the British Association ; by honorary degrees from the universities of Oxford, Glasgow, Dublin, and Wiirzburg; and by knighthood. He died in London on the 19th of November 1883.

In the application of heat Siemens’s work began just after Joule’s experiments had placed the doctrine of the conservation of energy on a sure basis. While Rankine, Clausius, and Thomson were de- veloping the dynamical theory of heat as a matter of physical and engineering theory, Siemens, in the light of the new ideas, madc a bold attempt to improve the

efficiency of the steam-engine as a converter of heat into mechanical work. Taking up the regenerator —a device invented by Stirling twenty years before, the importance of which had meanwhile been ignored—he applied it to the stcam- engine in the form of a regenerative condenser with some success. This was in 1847, and in 1855 engines constructed on Siemens's plan were worked at the Paris exhibition. Later he made many attempts to apply the regenerator to internal-combustion or gas engines ; but neither in steam-engines nor in gas-engines were his inventions directly and permanently fruitful, though the direction they followed is that in which improvement is still looked for. The regenerative principle, however, as a means of economizing heat soon received at his hands another and far wider application, In 1856 he introduced the regenerative furnace, the idea of his brother Friedrich, with whom William associated himself in directing its applications. In an ordinary furnace a very large part of the heat of combustion is lost by being carried off in the hot gases which pass up the chimney. In the regenerative furnace the hot gases pass through a regenerator, or chamber stacked with loose bricks, which absorb the heat. When the bricks are well heated the hot gases are diverted so to pass through another similar chamber, while the air necessary for combustion, before it enters the furnace, is made to traverse the heated chamber, taking up as it goes the heat which has been stored in the bricks. After a suitable interval the air currents are again reversed. The process is repeated periodically, with the result that the products of combustion escape only after being cooled, the heat which they take from the furnace being in great part carried back in the heated air. But another invention was required before the regenerative furnace could be thoroughly successful. This was the use of gaseous fuel, produced by the crude distillation and incomplete combustion of coal in a distinct furnace, now known as Siemens's gas-producer. From this the gaseous fuel passes by a flue to the regenerative furnace, and it, as well as the entering air, is heated by the regenerative method, four brick-stacked chambers being used instead of two. The com- plete invention was applied at Chance's glass-works in Birmingham in 1861, and furnished the subject of Faraday's farewell lecture to the Royal Institution. It was soon applied to many industrial processes, but it found its greatest development a few years later at the hands of Siemens himself in the manufacture of steel. To produce steel directly from the ore, or by melting together wrought- iron scrap with cast-iron upon the open hearth, had been in his mind from the

first, but it was not till 1867, aftcr two years of experiment in “sample steel works” erected by himself for the purpose, that he achieved success. The modern forms of the Siemens steel process are described in the article IRon (vol. xiii. p. 347 sq.). The product is a mild steel of exceptionally trust-worthy quality, the use of which for boiler-plates has done much to make possible the high steam-pressures that are now common, and has consequently contributed, indirectly, to that improvement in the thermodynamic efficiency of heat engines which Siemens had so much at heart. Just before his death he was again at work upon the same subject, his plan being to use gaseous fuel from a Siemens producer in place of solid fuel beneath the boiler, and to apply the regenerative principle to boiler furnaces. His faith in gaseous fuel led him to anticipate that its use would in time supersede that of solid coal for domestic and industrial purposes, cheap gas being supplied either from special works or direct from the pit; and

Public institu- tions.

Festivals,

38

among his last inventions was a house grate to burn gas along with coke, which he regarded as a possible cure for city smoke.

In electricity Siemens’s name is closely associated with the growth of land and submarine telegraphs, the invention and development

-of the dynamo, and the application of electricity to lighting and

to locomotion. In 1860, with his brother Werner, he invented the earliest form of what is now known as the Siemens armature ; and in 1867 he communicated a paper to the Royal Society On the Conversion of Dynamical into Electrical Force without the aid of Permanent Magnetism,” in which he announced the invention by Werner Siemens of the dynamo-electric machine, an invention which was also reached independently and almost simultaneously by Wheatstone and by S. A. Varley. The Siemens-Alteneck or multiple-coil armature followed in 1878, and became the basis

of the modern Siemens dynamo as developed, with great labour, by the firm of Siemens Brothers themselves, and (with later modi- fications) by Edison, Hopkinson, and others. While engaged in eonstructing a trans-Atlantic cable for the Direct United States Telegraph Company, Siemens designed the very original and suc- cessful ship ‘‘ Faraday,” by which that and. other cables were laid. One of the last of his works was the Portrush and Bushmills electric tramway, in the north of Ireland, opened in 1883, where the water- power of the river Bush drives a Siemens dynamo, from which the electric energy is conducted to another dynamo serving aS a motor on the car. In the Siemens electric furnace the intensely hot atmosphere of the electric arc between earbon points is em- ployed to melt refractory metals. Another of the uses to which he turned electricity was to employ light from are lamps as a sub- stitute for sunlight in hastening the growth and fructification of plants. Among his miscellaneous inventions were the differential governor already alluded to, and a highly scientific modification of it, described to the Royal Society in 1866; a water-meter which acts on the principle of counting the number of turns made by a small reaction turbine through whieh the supply of water flows ; an electric thermometer and pyrometer, in which temper- ature is determined by its effect on the electrical conductivity of metals ; an attraction meter for determining very slight variations in the intensity of a gravity ; and the bathometer, by which he applied this idea to the problem of finding the depth of the sea without a sounding line. Ina pe read before the Royal Society in 1882 ‘‘On the Conservation of Solar Energy,” he suggested a bold but unsatisfactory theory of the sun’s heat, in which he sought to trace on a cosmic scale an action similar to that of the regenera- tive furnace. His fame, however, does not rest on his contribu- tions to pure science, valuable as some of these were. His strength lay in his grasp of scientific principles, in his skill to perceive where and how they could be applied to practical affairs, in his zealous and instant pursuit of thought with action, and in the in- domitable persistence with which he clung to any basis of effort that pt to him theoretically sound.

Siemens’s writings consist for the most part of lectures and papers scattered through the scientific journals and the publications of the Royal Society, the Institution of Civil Engineers, the Institute of Mechanical Engineers, the

Iron and Steel Institute, the British Association, &. A biography by Dr William Pole is now (1886) in preparation. (J. A. E.)

SIENA, a city of Italy, and one of the most character- istic of Tuscany, stands (43° 19’ N. lat., 11° 19’ E. long.) on a hill near the mountainous region of Chianti, the Maremma, and Val di Chiana. It is 60 miles by rail south of Florence and 160 north-west of Rome. The area of the city within the walls is about 2} square miles and its population in 1881 was 25,204. The province of Siena, comprising about 1467 square miles, with 37 com- munes, and a total population of 207,000, by the political redistribution of 1882 forms a single electoral college and returns four members to parliament. The diocese of Siena, an archbishopric dating from 1459, includes 18 city and 95 rural parishes divided into 12 vicariates.

The city possesses a university, founded in 1203 and limited to the faculties of law and medicine. Among the other public institutions the following are the more im- portant :—the town library, first opened to students in the 17th century ; the Archivio, a record office, instituted in 1858, containing a valuable and splendidly arranged col- lection of documents ; the Fine Arts Institution, founded in 1816; and the natural history museum of the Royal Academy of the Physiocritics, inaugurated in the same year. There are also many flourishing charities, including an excellent hospital and a school for the deaf and dumb.

The public festivals of Siena known as the “ Palio delle Contrade ” have a European celebrity. They are held in

the public square, the curious and historic Piazza del Campo (now Piazza di Vittorio Emanuele), on 2d July and 16th August of each year; they date from the Middle Ages and were instituted in commemoration of victories and in honour of the Virgin Mary (the old title of Siena, as shown by seals and medals, having been “Sena vetus civitas Virginis”). In the 15th and 16th centuries the celebrations consisted of bull-fights. At the close of the 16th century these were replaced by races with mounted buffaloes, and since 1650 by (ridden) horses. Siena is divided into seventeen contrade (wards), each with a dis- tinct appellation and a chapel and flag of its own; and every

year ten of these contrade, chosen by lot, send each one horse to compete for the prize palio or banner. The aspect of Siena during these meetings is very character- istic, and the whole festivity bears a medizeval stamp in harmony with the architecture and history of the town.

Among the noblest fruits of Sienese art are the public build- Cathe-

ings adorning the city. The cathedral, one of the finest examples of Italian Gothic architecture, was begun in the early years ofthe 13th century, and in 1317 its walls were extended to the baptistery of San Giovanni ; a further enlargement was begun in 13389 but never carried out, and a few ruined walls and arehes alone remain to show the magnificence of the uncompleted design. The splendid west front, of tricuspidal form, enriched with a multitude of columns, statues, and inlaid marbles, was finished in 1880. Space

Siig Ulla 2

Plan of Siena.

fails for the enumeration of the art treasures of the interior, but conspicuous among them is the well-known octagonal pulpit by Niccold Pisano, dating from about 1274. The cathedral pavement is almost unique. It is inlaid with designs in colour and black and white, representing Biblical and legendary subjects, and is supposed to have been begun by Duccio della Buoninsegna. But the finest pee 2 beneath the domes, with scenes from the history of Abra-

am, Moses, and Elijah, are by Domenico Beccafumi and are exe- cuted with marvellous boldness and effect. The choir stalls also deserve mention: the older ones (remains of the original choir) are in tarsia work ; the others, dating from the 16th century, are carved from Riccio’s designs. The Piccolomini Library, adjoining the duomo, was founded by Cardinal Francesco Piccolomini-Todeschini

ches.

SIENA

(afterwards Pius III.) in honour of his uncle, Pius II. Here are Pinturicchio's famous frescos of scenes from the life of the latter

ontiff and the collection of choir books (supported on sculptured desks) with splendid illuminations by Sienese and other artists. The church of San Giovanni, the ancient baptistcry, beneath the cathedral is approached by an outer flight of marble steps built in 1451. It has a beautiful fagade designed by Giovanni di Mino del Pellicciaio in 1382, and a marvellous font with bas-reliefs by Dona- tello, Ghiberti, Giacomo della Quercia, and other 15th-century sculp- tors. The other churches are—the Collegiata di Provenzano, a vast building of some elegance, designed by Schifardini (1594) ; Sant' Agostino, rebuilt by Vanvitelli in 1755, containing a Cruci- fixion and Saints by Pcrugino, a Massacre of the Innocents by Matteo di Giovanni, the Coming of the Magi by Sodoma, and a St Antony by Spagnoletto or his school ; the beautiful church of the Servites (15th century), which contains another Massacre of the Innocents by Matteo di Giovanni and other good examples of the Sienese school ; San Francesco, designed by Agostino and Agnolo about 1326, and now (1887) being restored, which once possessed many fine paintings by Duccio Buoninsegna, Lorenzetti, Sodoma, and Beccafumi, but some of these perished in the great fire of 1655, and the rest were removed to the Institute of Fine Arts after 1862 during the temporary desecration of the church ; San Domenico, a fine 13th-century building with a single nave and transept, con- taining Sodoma's splendid fresco the Swoon of St Catherine, the Madonna of Guido da Siena, and a crucifix by Sano di Pietro. This church crowns the Fontebranda hill above the famous fountain of that name immortalized by Dante, and ina steep lane below stands the house of St Catherine, now converted into a church and oratory, and maintained at the expense of the inhabitants of the Contrada dell' Oca. It contains some good pictures by Pacchia and other works of art, but is chiefly visited for its historic interest and as a striking memorial of the characteristic piety of the Sienese.

The communal palace in the Piazza del Campo was begun in 1288 and finished in 1309. It is built of brick, is a fine specimen of Pointed Gothic, and was designed by Agostino and Agnolo. The light and elegant tower (Torre del Mangia) soaring from one side of the palace was begun in 1325, and the chapel standing at its foot, raised at the expense of the Opera del

Duomo as a public thank-offering after the plague of 1348, dates from 1352. This grand old palace has other attractions besides the beauty of its architecture, for its interior is lined with works of art. The atrium has a fresco by Bartolo di Fredi and the two ground-floor halls contain a Coronation of the Virgin by Sano di Pietro and a splendid Resurrection by Sodoma. In the Sala dei Nove or della Pace above are the noble allegorical frescos of Ambrogio Lorenzetti re- presenting the effects of just and unjust government; the Sala delle Balestre or del Mappamondo is painted by Simone di Martino (Memmi) and others, the Cappella della Signoria by Taddeo di Bartolo, and the Sala del Concistorio by Beccafumi. Another hall is now being prepared in memory of Victor Emmanuel II., and its frescos and decorations are to be entrusted exclusively to Sienese artists. The former hall of the grand council, built in 1827, was converted into the chief theatre of Siena by Riccio in 1560, and, after being twice burnt, was rebuilt in 1753 from Bibbiena's designs. Another Sienese theatre, the Rozzi, in Piazza San Pellegrino, de- signed by A. Doveri and erected in 1816, although modern, has an historic interest as the work of an academy dating from the 16th century, called the Congrega de' Rozzi, that played an import- ant part in the history of the Italian comic stage.

The city is adorned by many other noble edifices both public and private, of which we will mention the following palaces—the Tolomei (1205); Buonsignori, formerly Tegliacci, an elegant 14th- century construction, restored in 1848 ; Grottanelli, formerly Pecci and anciently the residence of the captain of war, recently restored in its original style; Sansedoni; Maral; Piccolomini, now be- longing to the Government and containing the state archives ; Piccolomini delle Papesse, like the other Piccolomini mansion, de- signed by Bernardo Rossellino, and now the national bank ; the enormous block of the Monte de' Paschi, enlarged and partly re- built in the original style between 1877 and 1881, and including the old Dogana and Spannocchi palaces; the Loggia di Mercanzia (15th century), now a club; the Loggia del Papa, erected by Pius II. ; and other fine buildings. We must also mention the two celebrated fountains, Fonte Gaia and Fontebranda; the Fonte Nuova, near Porta Ovile, by Camaino di Crescentino also deserves notice. Thanks to all these architectural treasures, the narrow Sienese streets with their many windings and steep ascents are full of pic- turesque charm,

and, together with the collections of excellent paintings, foster the local pride of the inhabitants and preserve their taste and feeling for art.

_Mistory.—The origin of Siena, like that of other Italian cities, is lost in a mist of legendary tradition, It was prob- ably founded by the Etruscans, and then falling under the Roman rule became a colony in the reign of Augustus, or

a little earlier, and was distinguished by the name of Sena Julia. Few memorials of the Roman era or of the first centuries of Christianity have been preserved, and none at all of the interval preceding the Lombard period. We have documentary evidence that during this epoch, in the reign of Rotaris (or Rotari), there was a bishop of Siena named Mouro. Attempts to trace earlier bishops as far back as the 5th century have yielded only vague and contradictory results. Under the Lombards the civil government was in the hands of a gastaldo, under the Carolingians of a count, whose authority, by slow degrees and a course of events similar to what took place in other Italian communes, gave way to that of the bishop, whose power in turn gradually diminished and was superseded by that of the consuls and the commonwealth.

We have written evidence of the consular government Struggle of Siena from 1125 to 1212; the number of consuls varied between from three to twelve. This government, formed of gentut- a uomim or nobles, did not remain unchanged throughout popolani. the whole period, but was gradually forced to accept the participation of the popolant or lower classes, whose efforts to rise to power were continuous and determined. Thus in 1137 they obtained a third part of the govern- ment by the reconstitution of the general council with 100 nobles and 50 popolant. In 1199 the institution of a foreign podestd gave a severe blow to the consular magistracy, which was soon extinguished; and in 1233 the people again rose against the nobles in the hope of ousting them entirely from office. The attempt was not completely successful ; but the Government was now equally divided between the two estates by the creation of a supreme magistracy of twenty-four citizens,—twelve nobles and twelve popolani. During the rule of the nobles and the mixed rule of nobles and popolani. the commune of Siena

was enlarged by fortunate acquisitions of neighbour- ing lands and by the submission of feudal lords, such as the Scialenghi, Aldobrandeschi, Pannocchieschi, Visconti di Campiglia, &c. Before long the reciprocal need of fresh territory and frontier disputes, especially concerning Poggi- bonsi and Montepulciano, led to an outbreak of hostilities between Florence and Siena. Thereupon, to spite the rival republic, the Sienese took the Ghibelline side, and the German emperors, beginning with Frederick Barbarossa, rewarded their fidelity by the grant of various privileges. During the 12th and 13th centuries there were con- Warwith tinued disturbances, petty wars, and hasty reconciliations Florence. between Florence and Siena, until in 1254-55 a more binding peace and alliance was concluded. But this treaty, in spite of its apparent stability, led in a few years toa fiercer struggle ; for in 1258 the Florentines complained that Siena had infringed its terms by giving refuge to the Ghibellines they had expelled, and on the refusal of the Sienese to yield to these just remonstrances both states made extensive preparations for war. Siena applied to Manfred, obtained from him a strong body of German horse, under the command of Count Giordano, and likewise sought the aid of its Ghibelline allies. Florence equipped a powerful citizen army, of which the original registers are still preserved in the volume entitled Z7 Libro di Mont- apertt in the Florence archives. This army, led by the podest' of Florence and twelve burgher captains, set forth gaily on its march towards the enemy's territories in the middle of April 1260, and during its first campaign, ending 18th May, won an insignificant victory at Santa Petronilla, outside the walls of Siena. But in a second and more important campaign, in which the militia of the other Guelf towns of Tuscany took part, the Florentines were signally defeated at Montaperti on 4th September 1260. This defeat crushed the power of Florence for many years, reduced the city to desolation, and apparently annihilated

Success of popu- lar party.

Council of nine,

Rule of the twelve.

AO

the Florentine Guelfs. But the battle of Benevento (1266) and the establishment of the dynasty of Charles of Anjou on the Neapolitan throne put an end to the Ghibelline predominance in Tuscany. Ghibelline Siena soon felt the effects of the change in the defeat of its army at Colle di Valdelsa (1269) by the united forces of the Guelf exiles, Florentines, and French, and the death in that battle of her powerful citizen Provenzano Salvani (mentioned by Dante), who had been the leading spirit of the Govern- ment at the time of the victory of Montaperti. For some time Siena remained faithful to the Ghibelline cause ; nevertheless Guelf and democratic sentiments began to make head. The Ghibellines were on several occasions expelled from the city, and, even when a temporary recon- ciliation of the two parties allowed them to return, they failed to regain their former influence.

Meanwhile the popular party acquired increasing power in the state. Exasperated by the tyranny of the Salimbeni and other patrician families allied to the Ghibellines, it decreed in 1277 the exclusion of all nobles from the supreme magistracy (consisting since 1270 of thirty-six instead of twenty-four members), and insisted that this council should be formed solely of Guelf traders and men of the middle class. This constitution was confirmed in 1280 by the reduction of the supreme magistracy to fifteen members, all of the humbler classes, and was definitively sanctioned in 1285 (and 1287) by the institution of the magistracy of nine. This council of nine, composed only of burghers, carried on the government for about seventy years, and its rule was sagacious and peaceful. The terri- tories of the state were enlarged ; a friendly alliance was maintained with Florence; trade flourished ; in 1321 the university was founded, or rather revived, by the introduc- tion of Bolognese scholars; the principal buildings now adorning the town were begun ; and the charitable institu- tions, which are the pride of modern Siena, increased and prospered. But meanwhile the exclusiveness of the single class of citizens from whose ranks the chief magistrates were drawn had converted the government into a close oligarchy and excited the hatred of every other class. Nobles, judges, notaries, and populace rose in frequent revolt, while the nine defended their state (1295-1309) by a strong body of citizen militia divided into terziert (sec- tions) and contrade (wards), and violently repressed these attempts. But in 1355 the arrival of Charles IV. in Siena gave fresh courage to the

malcontents, who, backed by the imperial authority, overthrew the government of the nine and substituted a magistracy of twelve drawn from the lowest class. These new rulers were to some extent under the influence of the nobles who had fomented the rebellion, but the latter were again soon excluded from all share in the government. This was the beginning of a determined struggle for supremacy, carried on for many years, between the different classes of citizens, locally termed ordini or monti,—the lower classes striving to grasp the reins of government, the higher classes already in office striving to keep all power in their own hands, or to divide it in proportion to the relative strength of each monte. As this struggle is of too complex a nature to be described in detail, we must limit ourselves to a summary of its leading episodes.

The twelve who replaced the council of nine (as these had previously replaced the council of the nobles) consisted —hboth as individuals and as a party—of ignorant, incap- able, turbulent men, who could neither rule the state with firmness nor confer prosperity on the republic. They speedily broke with the nobles, for whose manceuvres they had at first been useful tools, and then split into two fac- tions, one siding with the Tolomei, the other, the more restless and violent, with the Salimbeni and the novesche

(partisans of the nine), who, having still some influence in the city, probably fomented these dissensions, and, as we shall see later on, skilfully availed themselves of every chance likely to restore them to power. In 1368 the adversaries of the twelve succeeded in driving them by force from the public palace, and substituting a govern- ment of thirteen,—ten nobles and three noveschi. This government lasted only twenty-two days, from 2d to 24th September, and was easily overturned by the dominant faction of the dodicine (partisans of the twelve), aided by the Salimbeni and the populace, and favoured by the emperor Charles IV. The nobles were worsted, being driven from the city as well as from power ; but the abso- lute rule of the twelve was brought to an end, and right of participation in the government was extended to an- other class of citizens. For, on the expulsion of the thirteen from the palace, a council of 124 plebeians created a new magistracy of twelve difensori (defenders), no longer drawn exclusively

from the order of the twelve, but com- posed of five of the popolo minuto, or lowest populace (now first admitted to the government), four of the twelve, and three of the nine. But it was of short duration, for the dodicint were ill satisfied with their share, and in Decem- ber of the same year (1368) joined with the popolo minuto in an attempt to expel the three noveschi from the palace. But the new popular order, which had already asserted its predominance in the council of the riformatori, now drove out the dodicini, and for five days (11th to 16th December) kept the government in its own hands. Then, however, moved by fear of the emperor, who had passed through Siena two months before on his way to Rome, and who was about to halt there on his return, it tried to conciliate its foes by creating a fresh council of 150 riformatori, who replaced the twelve defenders by a new supreme magistracy of fifteen, consisting of eight popolani, four dodicini, and three noveschi, entitled respectively “people of the greater number,” “people of the middle number,” and “people of the less number.” From this renewal dates the forma- tion of the new order or monte det riformatori, the title henceforth bestowed on all citizens, of both the less and the greater people, who had reformed the government and begun to participate in it in 1368. The turbulent faction of the twelve and the Salimbeni, being dissatisfied with these changes, speedily rose against the new Govern- ment. This time they were actively aided by Charles IV., who, having returned from Rome, sent his militia, commanded by the imperial vicar Malatesta da Rimini, to attack the public palace. But the Sienese people, being called to arms by the council of fifteen, made a most determined resistance, routed the imperial troops, captured the standard, and confined the emperor in the Salimbeni palace. Thereupon Charles came to terms with the Government, granted it an imperial patent, and left the city, consoled for his humiliation by the gift of a large sum of money.

In spite of its wide basis and great energy, the monte dei riformatori, the heart of the new Government, could not satisfactorily cope with the attacks of adverse factions and treacherous allies. So, the better to repress them, it created in 1369 a chief of the police, with the title of esecutore, and a numerous association of popolani—the company or casata grande of the people—as bulwarks against the nobles, who had been recalled from banish- ment, and who, though fettered by strict regulations, were now eligible for offices of the state. But the appetite for power of the “less

people” and the dregs of the populace was whetted rather than satisfied by the installation of the riformatori in the principal posts of authority. Among the wool-carders—men of the lowest class, dwelling in the precipitous lanes about the Porta Ovile—there was an

Riforma- tori and council

of fifteen.

)

| Subjec-

tion to Milan,

SIENA

association styling itself the “company of the worm.” During the famine of 1371 this company rose in revolt, sacked the houses of the rich, invaded the public palace, drove from the council of fifteen the four members of the twelve and the three of the nine, and replaced them by seven tatterdemalions. Then, having withdrawn to its own quarter, it was suddenly attacked by the infuriated citizens (noveschi and dodicini), who broke into houses and workshops and put numbers of the inhabitants to the sword without regard for age or sex. Thereupon the popular rulers avenged these misdeeds by many summary execu- tions in the piazza. These disorders were only checked by fresh changes in the council of fifteen. It was now formed of twelve of the greater people and three noveschi, to the total exclusion of the dodicini, who, on account of their growing turbulence, were likewise banished from the city.

Meanwhile the Government had also to contend with difficulties outside the walls. The neighbouring lords attacked and ravaged the municipal territories; grave injuries were inflicted by the mercenary bands, especially by the Bretons and Gascons. The rival claims to the Neapolitan kingdom of Carlo di Durazzo and Louis of Anjou caused fresh disturbances in Tuscany. The Sienese Government conceived hopes of gaining possession of the city of Arezzo, which was first occupied by Durazzo’s men, and then by

Enguerrand de Coucy for Louis of Anjou; but while the Sienese were nourishing dreams of conquest the French general unexpectedly sold the city to the Florentines, whose negotiations had been conducted with marvellous ability and despatch (1384). The gather- ing exasperation of the Sienese, and notably of the middle class, against their rulers was brought to a climax by this cruel disappointment. Their discontent had been gradually swelled by various acts of home and foreign policy during the sixteen years' rule of the riformatora, nor had the concessions granted to the partisans of the twelve and the latter's recall and renewed eligibility to office availed to conciliate them. At last the revolt broke out and gained the upper hand, in March 1385. The riformatort were ousted from power and expelled the city, and the trade of Siena suffered no little injury by the exile of so many artisan families. The fifteen were replaced by anew supreme magistracy of ten priors, chosen in the following proportions,—four of the twelve, four of the nine, and two of the people proper, or people of the greater number, but to the exclusion of all who had shared in the government or sat in council under the riformatort. Thus began a new order or monte del popolo, composed of families of the same class as the riformatori, but having had no part in the government during the latter's rule. But, though now admitted to power through the burgher reaction, as a concession to democratic ideas, and to cause a split among the greater people, they enjoyed very limited privileges.}

In 1387 fresh quarrels with Florence on the subject of Montepulciano led to an open war, that was further aggra- vated by the interference in Tuscan affairs of the ambitious duke of Milan, Gian Galeazzo Visconti. With him the Sienese concluded an alliance in 1389 and ten years later accepted his suzerainty and resigned the liberties of their state. But in 1402 the death of Gian Galeazzo lightened their yoke. In that year the first plot against the Vis- contian rule, hatched by the twelve and the Salimbeni and fomented by the Florentines, was violently repressed, and caused the twelve to be again driven from office ; but in

1 The following are the ordini or monti that held power in Siena for any considerable time—gentilwomini, from the origin of the re- public ; nove, from about 1285 ; dodici, from 1355 ; riformatori, from 1868 ; popolo, from 1885.

Al

the following year a special balia, created in consequence of that riot, annulled the ducal suzerainty and restored the liberties of Siena. During the interval the supreme magis- tracy had assumed a more popular form. By the partial readmission of the riformatort and exclusion of the twelve, the permanent balta was now composed of nine priors (three of the nine, three of the people, and three of the riformatort) and of a captain of the people to be chosen from each of the three monti in turn. On 11th April peace wasemade with the Florentines and Siena en- joyed several years of tranquil prosperity.

But the great Western schism then agitating the Chris- Quarrels In con- with

tian world again brought disturbance to Siena. sequence of the decisions of the council of Pisa, Florence and Siena had declared against Gregory XII. (1409) ; Ladislaus of Naples, therefore, as a supporter of the pope, seized the opportunity to make incursions on Sienese terri- tory, laying it waste and threatening the city. The Sienese maintained a vigorous resistance till the death of this monarch in 1414 freed them from his attacks. In 1431 a fresh war with Florence broke out, caused by the latter's attempt upon Lucca, and continued in consequence of the Florentines' alliance with Venice and Pope Eugenius IV., and that of the Sienese with the duke of Milan and Sigis- mund, king of the Romans. This monarch halted at Siena on his way to Rome to be crowned, and received a most princely welcome. In 1433 the opposing leagues signed a treaty of peace, and, although it was disadvantageous to the Sienese and temptations to break it were frequently urged upon them, they faithfully adhered to its terms. During this period of comparative tranquillity Siena was honoured by the visit of Pope Eugenius IV. (1443) and by that of the emperor Frederick III., who came there to re- ceive his bride, Eleanor of Portugal, from the hands of Bishop Aineas Sylvius Piccolomini, his secretary and his- torian (1452). This meeting is recorded by the memorial column still to be seen outside the Camollia gate. In 1453 hostilities against Florence were again resumed, on account of the invasions and ravages of Sienese territory committed by Florentine troops in their conflicts with Alphonso of Naples, who since 1447 had made Tuscany his battle-ground. Peace was once more patched up with Florence

in 1454. Siena was next at war for several years with Aldobrandino Orsini, count of Pitigliano, and with Jacopo Piccinini, and suffered many disasters from the treachery of its generals. About the same time the republic was exposed to still graver danger by the con- spiracy of some of its leading citizens to seize the reins of power and place the city under the suzerainty of Alphonso, as it had once been under that of the duke of Milan. But the plot came to light; its chief ringleaders were beheaded, and many others sent into exile (1456); and the death of Alphonso at last ended all danger from that source. During those critical times the government of the state was strengthened by a new executive magistracy

called the balia, which from 1455 began to act independ- Institu-

been tion of But he balia,

ently of the priors or consistory. Until then it had merely a provisional committee annexed to the latter. henceforward the balita had supreme jurisdiction in all affairs of the state, although always, down to the fall of the republic, nominally preserving the character of a magis- tracy extraordinary. The election of Aineas Sylvius Pic- colomini to the papal chair in 1458 caused the utmost joy to the Sienese; and in compliment to their illustrious fellow-citizen they granted the request of the nobles and readmitted them to a share in the government. But this concession, grudgingly made, only remained in force for a few years, and on the death of the pope (1464) was re- voked altogether, save in the case of members of the Piccolomini house, who were decreed to be popolani and XXIT. — 6

42

were allowed to retain all their privileges. Meanwhile fresh discords were brewing among the plebeians at the head of affairs.

| | bee

until he was at last worsted in his struggle with Cesare Borgia, who caused his expulsion from Siena in 1502. But through the friendly mediation of the Florentines and the

Revolu- The conspiracy of the Pazzi in 1478 led to a war in| French king he was recalled from banishment on 29th tion of which Florence and Milan were opposed to the pope and | March 1503. He maintained his power until his death at TEe0 «ie king of Naples, and which was put an end to by the | the age of sixty on 21st May 1512, and was interred with peace of 13th March 1480. Thereupon Alphonso, duke | princely ceremonials at the public expense. The predomi- of Calabria, who was fighting in Tuscany on the side of | nance of his family in Siena did not last long after his his father Ferdinand, came to an agreement with Siena | decease. Pandolfo had not the qualities required to found and, in the same way as his grandfather Alphonso, tried | a dynasty such as that of the Medici. He lacked the lofty to obtain the lordship of the city and the recall of the | intellect of a Cosimo or a Lorenzo, and the atmosphere exiled rebels of 1456. The noveschi (to whose order most | of liberty-loving Siena with its ever-changing factions of the rebels belonged) favoured his pretensions, but the | was in no way suited to his purpose. His eldest son, réformatort were against him. Many of the people sided | Borghese Petrucci, was incapable, haughty, and exceed- with the noveschi, rose in revolt on 22d June 1480, and, | ingly corrupt ; he only remained three years at the head aided by the duke’s soldiery, reorganized the government | of affairs and fled ignominiously in 1515. Through the to their own advantage. Dividing the power between | favour of Leo X. he was succeeded by his cousin Raffaello their two orders of the nine and the people, they excluded | Petrucci, previously governor of St Angelo and afterwards the riformatori and replaced them by a new and hetero- | a cardinal. geneous order styled the aggregati, composed of nobles, This Petrucci was a bitter enemy to Pandolfo’s children. exiles of 1456, and citizens of other orders who had never | He caused Borghese and a younger son named Fabio to be before been in office. But this violent and perilous upset | proclaimed as rebels, while a third son, Cardinal Alphonso, of the internal liberties of the republic did not last long. | was strangled by order of Leo X. in 1518. He was a A decree issued by the Neapolitan king (1482) depriving | tyrannical ruler, and died suddenlyin1522. In the following the Sienese of certain territories in favour of Florence | year Clement VII. insisted on the recall of Fabio Petrucci; entirely alienated their affections from that monarch. | but two years later a fresh popular outbreak drove him Meanwhile the monte of the nine, the chief promoters of | from Siena for ever. The city then placed itself under Under the revolution of 1480, were

exposed to the growing hatred | the protection of the emperor Charles V., created a magis- the pro- and envy of their former allies, the monte del popolo, who, | tracy of “ten conservators of the liberties of the state” re conscious of their superior strength and numbers, now | (December 1524), united the different mondz in one named en | sought to crush the novescht and rise to power in their | the “monte of the reigning nobles,” and, rejoicing to be stead. This change of affairs was accomplished by a | rid of the last of the Petrucci, dated their public books, series of riots between 7th June 1482 and 20th February | ab instaurata libertate year I., I1., and so on. 1483. The monte del popolo seized the lion’s share of the The so-called free government subject to the empire government ; the riformatori were recalled, the aggregati | lasted for twenty-seven years ; and the desired protection abolished, and the novescht condemned to perpetual banish- | of Spain weighed more and more heavily until it became ment from the government and the city. But “in per- | a tyranny. The imperial legates and the captains of the petuo” was an empty form of words in those turbulent | Spanish guard in Siena crushed both Government and Italian republics. The noveschi, being “fat burghers” | people by continual extortions and by undue interference with powerful connexions, abilities, and traditions, gained | with the functions of the balia. Charles V. passed through increased strength and influence in exile; and five years | Siena in 1535, and, as in all the other cities of enslaved later, on 22d July 1487, they returned triumphantly to | Italy, was received with the greatest pomp; but he left Siena, dispersed the few adherents of the popolo who | neither peace nor liberty behind him. From 1527 to 1545 offered resistance, murdered the captain of the people, | the city was torn by faction fights and violent revolts against reorganized the state, and placed it under the protection | the noveschi, and was the scene of frequent bloodshed. of the Virgin Mary. And, their own predominance being | The balia was reconstituted several times by the imperial assured by their numerical strength and influence, they | agents,—in 1530 by Don Lopez di Soria and Alphonso accorded equal shares of power to the other montz. Piccolomini, duke of Amalfi, in 1540 by Granvella (or Pandolfo Among the returned exiles was Pandolfo Petrucci, chief | Granvelle), and in 1548 by Don Diego di Mendoza ; but Petrucci. of the novescht and soon to be at the head of the Govern- | government was carried on as badly as before, and there

ment. During the domination of this man (who, like Lor- enzo de' Medici, was surnamed "the Magnificent") Siena enjoyed many years of splendour and prosperity. We use the term "domination" rather than "signory" inasmuch as, strictly speaking, Petrucci was never lord of the state, and left its established form of government intact ; but he exercised despotic authority in virtue of his strength of character and the continued increase of his personal power. He based his foreign policy on alliance with Florence and France, and directed the internal affairs of the state by means of the council (collegio) of the balta, which, although occasionally reorganized for the purpose of conciliating rival factions, was always subject to his will. He like- wise added to his power by assuming the captainship of the city guard (1495), and later by the purchase from the impoverished commune of several outlying castles (1507). Nor did he shrink from deeds of bloodshed and revenge: the assassination of his father-in-law, Niccold Borghesi (1500), is an indelible blot upon his name. He successfully withstood all opposition within the state,

was increased hatred of the Spanish rule. When in 1549 Don Diego announced the emperor's purpose of erecting a fortress in Siena to keep the citizens in order, the general hatred found vent in indignant remonstrance. The his- torian Orlando Malavolti and other special envoys were sent to the emperor in 1550 with a petition signed by more than a thousand citizens praying him to spare them so terrible a danger; but their mission failed: they re- turned unheard. Meanwhile Don Diego had laid the foundation of the citadel and was carrying on the work with activity. Thereupon certain Sienese citizens in Rome, headed by Adneas Piccolomini (a kinsman of Pius I), entered into negotiations with the agents of the French king and, having with their help collected men and money, marched on Siena and forced their way in by the new gate (now Porta Romana) on 26th July 1552. The towns- people, encouraged and reinforced by this aid from without, at once rose in revolt, and, attacking the Spanish troops, disarmed them and drove them to take refuge in the citadel (28th July). And finally by an agreement with

SlTEN A

Cosimo de’ Medici, duke of Florence, the Spaniards were sentaway on the 5th August 1552 and the Sienese took possession of their fortress.

The Government was now reconstituted under the pro- tection of the French agents; the balta was abolished, its very name having been rendered odious by the tyranny of Spain, and was replaced by a similar magistracy styled capitant del popolo e reggimento, Siena exulted in her recovered freedom; but her sunshine was soon clouded. First, the emperor’s wrath was stirred by the influence of France in the counsels of the republic; then Cosimo, who was no less jealous of the French, conceived the design of annexing Siena to his own dominions. The first hostilities of the imperial forces in Val di Chiana (1552-53) did little damage ; but when Cosimo took the field with an army commanded by the marquis of Marignano the ruin of Siena was at hand. On 26th January Marignano cap- tured the forts of Porta Camollia (which the whole popu- lation of Siena, including the women, had helped to con- struct) and invested the city. On 2d August of the same year, at Marciano in Val di Chiana, he won a complete victory over the Sienese and French troops under Piero Strozzi, the Florentine exile and marshal of France. Meanwhile Siena was vigorously besieged, and its inhabit- ants, sacrificing everything for their beloved city, main- tained a most heroic defence. A glorious record of their sufferings is to be found in the Diary of Sozzini, the Sienese historian, and in the Commentaries of Blaise de Monluc, the French representative in Siena. But in April 1555 the town was reduced to extremity and was forced to capitulate to the emperor and the duke. On 21st April the Spanish troops entered the gates; thereupon many patriots abandoned the city and, taking refuge at Montalcino, maintained there a shadowy form of republic until 1559.

Cosimo I. de’ Medici being granted the investiture of the Sienese state by the patent of Philip II. of Spain, dated 3d July 1557, took formal possession of the city _on the 19th of the same month. A leutenant-general was appointed as representative of his authority; the council of the ba/ia was reconstituted with twenty members chosen by the duke ; the consistory and the general council were left in existence but deprived of their political autonomy. Thus Siena was annexed to the Florentine state under the same ruler and became an integral part of the grand-duchy of Tuscany. Nevertheless it retained a separate administration for more than two

centuries, until the general reforms of the grand-duke Pietro Leo- poldo, the French domination, and finally the restoration swept away all differences between the Sienese and Floren- tine systems of government. In 1859 Siena was the first Tuscan city that voted for annexation to Piedmont and the monarchy of Victor Emmanuel II., this decision (voted 26th June) being the initial step towards the unity of Italy.

Literary History.—The literary history of Siena, while recording ho gifts to the world equal to those bequeathed by Florence, and without the power and originality by which the latter became the centre of Italian culture, can nevertheless boast of some illustrious names. Of these a brief summary, beginning with the department of general literature and passing on to history and science, is sub- Joined. Many of them are also dealt with in scparate articles, to which the reader is referred.

As early as the 13th century the vulgar tongue was already well established at Siena, being used in public documents, commercial records, and private correspondence. The poets flourishing at that period were Féleacchiero, Cecco Angiolieri—a humorist of a very high order—and Bindo Bonichi, who belonged also to the fol- lowing century. The chief glory of the 14th century was St Catherine Benincasa. The year of her death (1380) was that of the birth of St Bernardino Albizzeschi, a popular preacher whose sermons in the vulgar tongue are models of style and diction. To the 15th century belongs Aneas Sylvius Piccolomini (Pius I.), humanist, historian, and political writer. In the 16th century we

find another Piccolomini (Alexander), bishop of Patras, author of a curious dialogue, Della bella Creanza delle Donne; another bishop, Claudio Tolomei, diplomatist, poet, and philologist, who revived the use of ancient Latin metres; and Luca Contile, a writer of nar- ratives, plays, and poems. Prose fiction had two representatives in this century,—Scipione Bargagli, a writer of some merit, and Pietro Fortini, whose productions were trivial and indecent. In the 17th century we find Ludovico Sergardi (Quinto Settano), a Latinist and satirical writer of much talent and culture; but the most original and brilliant figure in Sienese literature is that of Girolamo Gigli (1660-1722), author of the Gazzettino, La Sorellina di Don Pilone, Il Voeabolario

Cateriniano, and the Diario Keelest- astieo. As humorist, scholar, and philologist Gigli would take a high place in the literature of any land. His resolute opposition to all hypocrisy—whether religious or literary—exposed him to merciless persecution from the Jesuits and the Della Cruscan Academy.

In the domain of history we have first the old Sienese chronicles, His- which down to the 14th century are so coufused that it is almost torians.

impossible to disentangle truth from fiction or even to decide the personality of the various authors. Three 14th-century chronicles, attributed to Andrea Dei, Agnolo di Tura, called I] Grasso, and Neri di Donati, are published in Muratori, vol. xv. To the 15th century belongs the chronicle of Allegretto Allegretti, also in Muratori (vol. xxiii.) ; and during the same period flourished Sigis- mondo Tizio (a priest of Siena, though born at Castiglione Aretino), whose voluminous history written in Latin and never printed (now among the MSS. of the Chigi Library in Rome), though de- void of literary merit, contains much valuable material. The best Sienese historians belong to the 16th century. They are Orlando Malavolti (1515-1596), a man of noble birth, the most trustworthy of all; Antonio Bellarmati; Alessandro Sozzini di Girolamo, the sympathetic author of the Diario dell' ultima Guerra Senese ; and Giugurta Tommasi, of whose tedious history ten books, down to 1354, have been published, the rest being still in manuscript. Together with these historians we must mention the learned scholars Celso Cittadini (d. 1627), Ulberto Benvoglienti (d. 1733), one of Muratori's correspondents, and Gio. Antonio Picci (d. 1768), author of histories of Pandolfo Petrucci and the bishopric of Siena. In the same category may be classed the librarian C. F. Carpellini (d. 1872), author of several monographs on the origin of Siena and the constitution of the republic, and Scipione Borghesi (d. 1877), who has left a precious store of historical, biographical, and biblio- graphical studies and documents.

In theology and philosophy the most distinguished names are— Bernardino Ochino and Lelio and Fausto Soccini (16th century); in jurisprudence, three Soccini — Mariano senior, Bartolommeo, and Mariano junior (15th and 16th centuries); and in political economy, Sallustio Bandini (1677-1760), author of the Discorso sulla Maremma. In physical science the names most

worthy of mention are those of the botanist Pier Antonio Mattioli (1501-1572), of Pirro Maria Gabrielli (1643-1705), founder of the academy of the Physiocritics, and of the anatomist Paolo Mascagni (d. 1825).

Art.—The history of Sienese art is a fair and luminous record. Lanzi happily designates Sienese painting as ‘‘Lieta scuola fra lieto popolo” (‘the blithe school of a blithe people”). The special characteristics of its masters are freshness of colour, vivacity of ex- pression, and distinct originality. The Sienese school of painting owes its origin to the influence of Byzantine art; but it improved that art, impressed it with a special stamp, and was for long inde- pendent of all other influences. Consequently Sienese art seemed almost stationary amid the general progress and development of the other Italian schools, and preserved its medisval character down to the end of the 15th century. When the Florentine Giot- tesques aud their few followers were on the wane, this mystic Sienese school still showed continued fertility and improvement. At the close of the 15th century the influence of the Umbrian and—to a slighter degree—of the Florentine scliools began to pene- trate into Siena, followed a little later by that of the Lombard, and these grafts gave fresh vigour to the old stock without destroying its special characteristics. Of this new phase of Sienese art it has been well said that Sodoma was its Leonardo, Baldassare Peruzzi its Raphael, and Beccafumi its Michelangelo. In every age Siena has produced many painters of different degrees of merit. It is impossible to mention all, so we will only cite the names of the more celebrated. In the 13th century we find Guido (da Siena), painter of the well-known Madonna in the church of 8. Domenico in Siena. The 14th century gives us Ugolino, who painted the Madonna del Tabernacolo in Or San Michele, Florence ; Duccio di Buoninsegna, whose chief work is the great panel of the high altar of the cathedral at Siena; Pietro aud Ambrogio Lorenzetti, Simone di Martino (or Memmi), Lippo Memmi, Andrea di Vanni (painter and statesman), and Taddeo di Bartolo. In the 15th century we have Sano di Pietro, Giovanni di Paolo, Stefano di Giovanni (Il Sassetta), and Matteo di Giovanni Bartoli, whose several paintings of the Massacre of the Innocents show a fine sentiment and mucli observation of reality. The 16th century boasts the names of Guidoccio Cossarelli, Giacomo Pacchiarotto, Girolamo del Pacchia,

Scientific writers.

Painters.

Sculptors andarchi- sculptors and architects, such as Lorenzo Maitani, architect of the

tects.

Ad

3aldassare Peruzzi (1481-1537), who was excellent in many branches of art and especially celebrated for his frescos and studies in per- spective and chiaroscuro; Giovanni Antonio Bazzi, otherwise known as I] Sodoma (1477-1549), who, born at Vercelli in Piedmont and trained at Milan in the school of Leonardo da Vinci, came to Siena in 1504 and there produced his finest works ; Domenico Beccafumi, otherwise known as Micharino (1486-1550), noted for the Michel- angelesque daring of his designs ; and Francesco Vanni.

Side by side with these painters marches a notable band of

Orvieto cathedral (end of 13th century) ; Camaino di Crescentino ; Tino di Camaino, sculptor of the monument to Henry VII. in the Campo Santo of Pisa; Agostino and Agnolo, who in 1330 carved the fine tomb of Bishop Guido Tarlati in the cathedral of Arezzo ; Lando di Pietro (14th century), architect, entrusted by the Sienese commune with the proposed enlargement of the cathedral (1839) ; Giacomo della Quercia, whose lovely fountain, the Fonte Gaia, in the Piazza del Campo has been recently restored by the sculptor Sarrocchi; Lorenzo di Pietro (Il Vecchietta), a pupil of Della

Quercia and an excellent artist in marble and bronze ; Francesco }

di Giorgio Martino (1439-1502), painter, sculptor, military engineer, and writer on art; Giacomo Cozzarelli (15th century) ; and Lorenzo Mariano, surnamed I] Marrina (16th century). (C. PA.)

SIERADZ, a town of Russian Poland, in the govern- ment of Kalisz (Kalish), situated on the Warta, 127 miles south-west of Warsaw. It is one of the oldest towns of Poland, founded prior to the introduction of Christianity, and was formerly known as Syra or Syraz. The annals mention it in 1139. Several seems were held there during the 13th to 15th centuries, and it was a wealthy town until nearly destroyed by a fire in 1447. It is full of historical interest for the Poles. The old castle, which suffered much in the Swedish war, was destroyed by the Germans in 1800. There are two churches dating from the 12th and 14th centuries. Sieradz, after having been the chief town of a voiwddztvo, has now no importance. Its population was 15,040 in 1884.

SIERRA LEONE, a British colony on the West Coast of Africa, the capital of which, Freetown, lies in 8° 39’ N. lat. and 13° 14’ W. long. It consists of Sierra Leone proper, part of the Quiah country to the east, Tasso Island, &e., in the Sierra Leone estuary, part of the Bullom country to the north, the Los Islands to the north of the Mellicoury (Mellacorée) river, the Banana Islands to the south of the main settlement, Sherbro (Sherboro) Island

and part of the Sherbro country, the Turner peninsula,

W. E. Tucker’s territory, and generally all the seaboard south to the mouth of the Manoh (Manna) river, which is now recognized as the northern boundary of Liberia. The British territory and protectorate are estimated to have an area of about 3000 square miles; and, though it has not all been formally annexed, the whole coast region from the mouth of the Scarcies in 8° 55’ N. lat. to that of the Manoh in 6° 55’ may be considered as British, at least to the exclusion of any other European sovereignty..

Sierra Leone proper is a peninsula about 18 miles long from north-west to south-east by about 12 broad. It lies between the Sierra Leone estuary on the north and Yawry Bay on the south. Lengthwise it is traversed by a range of high hills attaining a height of 3000 feet in the Sugar Loaf and nearly as much in Mount Horton farther south. From the mainland the peninsula is physically separated by the Bance or Bunce river (properly estuary), which receives the Waterloo Creek and other small streams. Towards the east and south-east the peninsula sinks to the level of the great alluvial zone which extends along the larger portion of this district of the African coast. The

hills seem to consist of some kind of igneous rock (popularly misnamed granite) and of beds of red sandstone, the disintegration of which has given a dark-coloured ferruginous soil of moderate fertility. The “lofty green trees” which clothed the “mountain” at the time of its discovery (Cadamosto) have for the most part been de- stroyed, though Sugar Loaf is still timbered to the top

¢[TE— sik

and the peninsula is verdant with abundant vegetation. The Negroes give so little attention to agriculture that the local produce would not feed the population for three

Map of Sierra Leone.

months. Among the productions of the peninsula are cola nuts, ginger (in large quantities), malagetta pepper, castor-oil, maize, cassava, ground nuts, and (in small quantities) cotton. Native coffee was discovered in Quiah in 1796, and the growing of Liberian coffee and cocoa has since 1880 been attempted with some success.

The rainfall of Sierra Leone, according to the Colonial Hospital observations at Frectown, is from 150 to 169 inches per annum. The three months of January, February, and March are practically rainless; the rains, commencing in April or May, reach their maximum in July, Angust, and September, and rapidly diminish in October, November, and December. It sometimes rains for thirty hours on end, but generally twelve hours of rain are followed by twenty-four, thirty, or more hours of clear and leasant weather. At the barracks (150 feet higher than the hospital) there are about 40 inches more rain, and at Kissy, 3 miles distant, some 18 or 20 inches less. The annual temperature indoors is from 78° to 86°. The highest reading for 1880 was 95° and the lowest 69°°33. During the dry season, when the climate is very much like that of the West Indies, there occur terrible tornadoes and long periods of the harmattan,—a north-east wind, dry and desiccating, and carrying with it those clouds of fine dust which the sailors designate “smokes.” The dangers of the climate have long been exaggerated. The low swampy regions are like those of other tropical countries, and Frectown, being badly placed and carelessly kept, is too

often a hotbed of malaria and fever; but the higher districts are not the “white man’s grave.”

According to the census of 1880, the population of the colony was as follows :—peninsula of Sierra Leone with British Quiah, 53,862 ; Isles de Los, 1871 ; occupiers of factories on the Sierra Leone river paying rent to Government, 52 ; island of Tasso, 828; British Sherbro (including Bonthe, Mocolo, Mokate, Runteh, York Island, Yelbana, Victoria, Tasso, Bendu, and J amaica), 4333, — total 60,446. But the census officials deem the actual population to be much greater, that of British Sherbro, for example, being pretty certainly 8000 or 9000. Ethnographically Sierra Leone is almost “an epitome of Africa.” The following are the more im- portant raccs that can be distinctly classified :—Mandingos, 1190; Timmanehs, 7448; Joloffs, 189; Baggas, 340; Mendis, 3088; Sherbros, 2882; Gallinas, 697; Limbas, 493; Susus (Soosoos), 1470; Fulahs, 225 ; Lokkos, 1454 ; Serrakulis, 129 ; Bulloms, 129 ; Krumen, 610. The direct descendants of the liberated slaves now number 35,430. The Akus or people of Yoruba and the Eboes from the eastern banks of the Niger are most easily distinguished. The white residents number only 163, almost entirely a floating population.

Most of the inhabitants depend upon trade, and are collected at the north end of the peninsula, in FREETOWN (qg.v.) and the neigh- pouring villages. Freetown has a good supply of pure water, and great improvements in sanitation have recently been effected. Among the villages in the peninsula may be mentioned Kissy (founded in 1817), the seat of two hospitals for male and female incurables, Gloster (1816), Bathurst (1818), Leopold (1817), Charlotte (1818), Regent (1812), Leicester (1809).

According to the census returns of 1880, there were in Sierra Leone 18,660 Episcopalians, 17,098 Wesleyans and Methodists, 2717 of Lady Huntingdon’s connexion, and 369 Ronan Catholics. Since 1861-62 there has been an independent Episcopal Native Church ; but the Church Missionary Society, which in 1804 sent out the first missionaries to Sierra Leone and has spent about £500,000 on the colony, still maintains certain educative agencies. Fourah Bay college, built by the society on the site of General Turner’s estate (14 miles east of Freetown) and opened in 1828

with six pupils, one of whom was Bishop Crowther, was affiliated in 1876 to Durham university, and has a high-class curriculum. Other institutions are the grammar-school (1846), the Wesleyan high school, and the Annie Walsh Memorial Female Institution.

The following figures show the average value of the principal exports in recent years :—

Benni| Cola | Gin- |Ground| yiges Palm | Palm | Rub- | Gum Seed. | Nuts. | ger. | Nuts. €S-\ernels.| Oil. | ber. £ £ £ £ £ £ £ £ 1877-81] 6,847 | 23,731 11,989 | 80,808 12,607 | 116,822 35,869 | 41,941 1882 |10,001 | 25,547 | 7,916| 15,217 | 18,545 | 101,164 | 47,217 | 96,074 1883 | 9721 | 31,661 | 13,409 | 11,282 | 12,326] 81,578 | 21,954 | 89,782 14,780 1884 } 3,776 | 40,002 16,304] 4,846 17,674| 68,377 17,774 | 50,894 12,539

eee With the exception of the ginger, most of these products are brought down the rivers from the interior, and the development of trade has been grievously hampered by inter-tribal wars in non-British territory. A considerable falling off is observable in those articles which require cultivation or labour, or are bulky in transit. Cola nuts have steadily increased in quantity,—that part of the Limba country where they are principally grown being in comparative yeace. The supply of india-rubber has decreased, partly through Hesimiction of the trees, partly through war in the Yonnie country. Gum copal is brought from the northern rivers. The Mendi eountry sends a good deal of rice, which is also grown largely in Sherbro. The total value of all the exports was on an average for 1877-81 £382,620, and for 1882-88 £413,148. The corresponding figures for the imports were £424,447 and £429,273.

The most northerly territory belonging to the colony is the little group of the Los Islands (Islas de los Idolos), about 80 miles north- north-west of Freetown to the south of Sangareah Bay. Tamara or Futabar to the west and Factory Island to the east “enclose, like an atoll, an inner basin, in the centre of which lies the much smaller Crawford Island.” The highest point is a knoll some 450 feet above sea-level in Tamara. All these islands are richly clothed with palm trees and flowering underwood. Factory Island is occupied by a French trading settlement. At one time the islands were a great seat of the slave-trade and about 1812-18 were garrisoned by British

troops for the suppression of the traffic. The climate was then found to be exceedingly fatal.

The small island of Matakoug, 25 miles south-east, is also British. On the mainland the watershed between the Great Scarcies and the Mellicoury (Mellacorée) has been adopted as the boundary between the French and English protectorates or annexation-areas. The Great Scarcies river (Rio dos Carceres) appears to take its rise in the highlands of the Futa-Jallon not far from the sources of the Senegal, but its upper course has not been completely explored. It is navigable for boats a long way inland, though the ascent from the sea is interrupted by rapids a short distance above Kambia, an important Mohammedan town. The Little Scarcies has its headwaters to the north-east of Falaba, a town of the Sulima country, built in 1768 and visited by Laing (1822), Winwood Reade (1869), and Zweifel and Moustier (1879). The Rokelle or Mabile river, which falls into the Sierra Leone estuary, is formed by the drainage of the Koranko country. On a creek which reaches the estuary near the Rokelle mouth stands (at the head of navigation) the important township of Port Lokko, a mission station of the Church Missionary Society. The maritime country between the Scarcies and Sierra Leone is called North Bullom (7.¢., low land) ; the tribe of the same name has been expelled from much of its territory by the Susus (whose country is the unexplored tract to the south of 11° N. lat.) and the Timmanehs (Timnis). At the angle of Yawry Bay lies the mouth of the Ribbi or Kates river, and about 10 miles farther south is the common outflow of the Kamaranka and the Bompé. At the south side of the bay the small eluster of Plantain Islands corresponds to the Banana Islands on the north off Cape Shilling, which were ceded to the British in 1819 and are noted for their healthiness. Southward opens the broad estuary of the Sherbro (popularly river), which lies between

the island of Sherbro, annexed in 1862, and the territory of the game name. The estuary receives the Bagru from the Manoh-Bagru country and the Jong river, whose headstream, the Bampanna, rises far inland in the same country as the Rokelle and has a breadth of 200 feet at Mayosso. From the sea the Jong is navigable for steamers to Matonghbah (or Matubah). It is connected

by the Little Bam Creek with the Great Bin river, which passes through the Mendi country and descends into the alluvial seaboard by rapids at Motappan. The Bam loses itself in a curious network of lagoons and creeks separated from the ocean by the long low tract of Turner's peninsula, The upper Kittam joins it from the east, and by another creek communicates with the Palma or Cassi Lake (20 miles long), which in its turn has a connexion with the Gallinas river (7° 8. lat.). On the narrow strip of land between the ocean and the lake lies Lavanna, an important trading port, where a short line of railway has been laid down. Parallel with the Gallinas flows the Moah or Sulimah river (falls at Whidaro), at the mouth of which is the town of Sulimah; and about 10 miles farther east is the Manoh river. The countries inland be- tween the Manoh and the Sulimah are Gbemna or Massaquoi, Soro, M'perri, Barrie, Cowrah, &c.

History.—Sierra Leone (in the original Portuguese form Sierra Leona) was known to its native inhabitants as Romarong or the Mountain, and received the current designation from the Portuguese discoverer Piedro de Cintra (1462) on account of the lion-like roaring of the thunder on its hill-tops. An English fort was built on the Sierra Leone estuary towards the close of the 17th century, but was soon afterwards abandoned. In 1786 Dr Smeathman proposed his scheme for founding on the peninsula a colony of liberated African slaves ; and in 1787 Captain Thompson, having purchased the territory from Naimbana or King Tom of the Timmanehs, commenced the settlement with 400 Negroes and 60 Europeans. Owing mainly to the utter shiftlessness of the settlers and partly toa hostile attack by a body of natives, this first attempt proved a com- plete failure. In 1791 Falconbridge collected the surviving fugitives and laid out a new settlement (Granville's Town); and the pro-

moters of the enterprise—Granville Sharp, William Wilberforce,

William Ludlam, Sir Richard Carr Glynn, &c., hitherto known as the St George's Bay Company—obtained a charter incorporat-

ing them as the Sierra Leone Company (31 Geo. III. c. 55). In

1792 Clarkson introduced into the colony 1200 Negroes from the Bahamas and NovaScotia. Afzelius the botanist and Nordenskjold the mineralogist

were sent out to explore the capabilities of the country ; but the latter soon after died at Port Lokko (Port Logo). In 1794 the settlement, which had been again transferred to Freetown, was plundered by the French. An attempt to found a similar colony on Bulama (mouth of the Rio Grande) was a com- plete failure (Dalrymple and Beaver). In 1800 the company was allowed to make laws not repugnant to those of England, but in 1807 it was glad to transfer all its rights to the crown. Sydney Smith's jest that Sierra Leone had always two governors, one just arrived in the colony and the other just arrived in England, is but a slight exaggeration. There were eight changes between 1808 and 1824, and as many between 1865 and 1881. The names of Zachary Macaulay, Sir Charles Macarthy, Sir Stephen J. Hill, Sir Arthur Kennedy, Sir Samuel Rowe, and A. E. Havelock deserve to be mentioned. In 1825 General Turner concluded a treaty placing Turner's peninsula, &c., under British protection ; but effect was not given to it till 1881, In 1875 the mouths of the Kates, Kamaranka, Bompé, and Cockboro were annexed, and in 1888 the seaboard towards the Liberian frontier. British influence has been peacefully advancing inland under Sir Samuel Rowe. In 1866 Sierra Leone was made the seat of government of the new general government of the British settlements on the West Coast of Africa (comprising Sierra Leone, Gambia, the Gold Coast, and Lagos, each of which was to have a legislative council); but in 1874 the Gold Coast and Lagos were raised to a separate government, and the

Gambia alone remains attached to Sierra Leone.

Besides the older works of Falconbridge (1794), Winterbottom (1803), Walker (1847), Shrewe (1847), Poole (1850), see the various works of Robert Clarke (Sketches of the Colony of Sierra Leone, 1868, &c.) and Dr Africanus B. Horton (West African Countries and Peoples, 1868, &c.); A. Menzies, ''Bxploratory Expedition to the Mende Country, " in Church Miss. Intell., 1864; A. B.C. Sidthorpe, Hist. of Sierra Leone ;), R. Griffith, 'Sierra Leone, Past, Present, and Future," in Proc. Roy. Col. Inst., 1881-82, vol. xiii. ; " Britische Annexionen an der Sierra-Leone-Kiiste," in Petermann's Mitt., 1883. (H. A. W.)

SIEYES, EmmManvst Josrpu (1748-1836), one of the chief political thinkers and writers of the period of the French Revolution and the first

empire, was born at Fréjus (Var) on 3d May 1748. He was destined for the church, was educated by the Jesuits, became a licentiate of the canon law, and, having early distinguished himself by the astuteness and originality of his ideas, was appointed vicar-general by the bishop of Chartres. He shared the political fervour of the party of advance, and was fearlessly logical in working out the new and as yet indistinct princi-

ples of reform. An excellent opportunity was provided for the inculcation of his views by the invitation which Necker addressed to all French writers to publish their opinions upon the mode of convening the states-general. Sieyés startled his countrymen by the issue of various pamphlets upon the political situation, and particularly by his dar- ing and original treatise upon the Third Estate, with its three famous divisions in question and answer : —“ lst, What is the Third Estate !—Everything. What has it hitherto been in the political order !—Nothing. What does it demand?—To become something.” He attacked unsparingly the privileged classes, and indeed in this his most famous work he constructed, single-handed and at once, a programme for the Revolution. The influence of the book and of its author soon became enormous, and in 1789 the Abbé Sieyés was elected by the city of Paris as a representative to the states-general, where he was the first to propose that the three estates should meet together in one assembly. On the rejection of his motion he boldly suggested the formation of an ‘assembly of repre- sentatives of France already verified.” He was not, how- ever, successful as a speaker, his style being obscure and his matter too compressed for oral expression,—faults which disappeared when he committed his thoughts to writing. Yet he was one of the leaders of the assembly, and was appointed a member of the committee on the constitution. His published speech in opposition to the power of absolute veto by the king brought him still further into notice. But he recognized his inaptitude for public speaking, and, although even Mirabeau declared that the silence of Sieyés was a public calamity, he stood aside while his own ideas were being developed amidst violence and riot both within and without the constituent and afterwards the legislative assembly. As excess fol- lowed upon excess in the wild course of the Revolution Sieyés had neither the courage nor the power to quell the riot. In danger of becoming a

suspect, and fearful of his life, he emerged from obscurity in November 1793, on the occasion of the installation of Reason in Notre Dame. Before the national convention he denied his faith, abjur- ing the title of priest, professing that his only worship was that of liberty and equality and his only religion the love of humanity and country, and concluding by formally renouncing to the state the commuted pension which he enjoyed in lieu of his former benefice. The overthrow of the Jacobins at last overcame his fears and in March 1795 he is found publicly lauding the memory of those guillotined Girondists in whose defence he, two years before, had never once lifted his voice.

In the same year (1795) the ex-abbé was commissioned by the Convention to The Hague, where he successfully con- cluded an offensive and defensive alliance between the United Provinces and France. Without Sieyés no framing of a constitution could be attempted, and he was accord- ingly appointed member of a commission to draw up organic laws, the constitution of 1793 having been found unworkable. When the commission brought forward its report Sieyeés did not dissent ; but he proposed to the Con- vention a separate scheme of his own, the specialty of which was the provision for the appointment of a constitutional jury which should be charged with the duty of revising all legislative decrees against which the challenge was brought that they were themselves at variance with the constitu- tion. His scheme was, however, rejected in favour of the new constitution, and from that moment he became its secret enemy. He was elected one of the first directory of five, but he declined the honour. In 1798 he was appointed the plenipotentiary of France to Prussia, where he was received with great honour and where he speedily began to plot against the Government he represented.

He communicated his views to Napoleon, then in Egypt. Meanwhile (1799) he was again elected to the directory, and, his plans being ripe, he accepted office. Then came the coup détat of 18th Brumaire (9th November 1799), in which Sieyés took so important a part, but in which he was unquestionably overborne by the genius and audacity of Bonaparte. The provisional consulate com- posed of Napoleon, Sieyés, and Ducos lasted but a few

weeks, After a little Sieyés is a count of the empire and the proprietor of Crosne (Seine-et-Oise), while Napoleon is able to boast of how he has bribed the ex-abbé out of his constitutional views. Amid the political changes of France, Sieyés on the second return of the Bourbons fled to Brussels; but after the revolution of 1830 he felt it safe to return to Paris, where he died on 20th June 1836. SIGALON, Xavier (1788-1837), French painter, born at Uzes (Gard) towards the close of 1788, was one of the few leaders of the romantic movement who cared for treat- ment of form rather than of colour. The son of a poor rural schoolmaster, he had a terrible struggle before he was able even to reach Paris and obtain admission to Guérin's studio. But the learning offered there did not respond to his special needs, and he tried to train himself by solitary study of the Italian masters in the gallery of the Louvre. The Young Courtesan (Louvre), which he exhibited in 1822, at once attracted attention and was bought for the Luxembourg. The painter, however, re- garded it as but an essay in practice and sought to measure himself with a mightier motive ; this he did in his Locusta (Nimes), 1824, and again in Athaliah's Massacre (Nantes), 1827. Both these works showed incontestable power; but the Vision of St Jerome (Louvre), which appeared at the salon of 1831, together with the Crucifixion (Issengeaux), was by far the most individual of all his achievements, and that year he received the cross of the Legion of Honour. The terrors and force of his pencil were not, however, rendered attractive by any charm of colour ; his paintings remained unpurchased, and Sigalon found him- self forced to get a humble living at times by painting portraits, when Thiers, then minister of the interior, re- called him to Paris and entrusted him with the task of copying the Sistine fresco of the Last Judgment for a hall in the Palace of the Fine Arts. On the-exhibition, in the Baths of Diocletian at Rome, of Sigalon's gigantic task, in which he had been aided by his pupil Numa Boucoiran, the artist was visited in state by Gregory XVI. But Sigalon was not destined long to enjoy his tardy honours and the comparative ease procured by a small Governnient pension ; returning to Rome to copy some pendants in the Sistine, he died there of cholera on 9th August 1837. See Julius Meyer, Gesch. d. franzisischen Kunst; Villot, Cat. Tableaux, Louvre ; C. Blanc, Histoire des Peintres, Ecole Francaise. SIGHTS. A sight for shooting may be defined as an apparatus for determining the point of impact of a pro- jectile, in popular language, for "aiming" or "laying." In its simplest form it is scarcely recognizable as a

sight. When an expert cricketer throws the ball straight to the wicket the eye and the hand assume that relative position which experience has taught to be correct, and the eye may be said to lay the hand on the wicket by means of the in- tervening muscles, which therefore constitute the sight. The next step towards accuracy is seen in the ordinary shot-gun, where the eye is placed over and behind the centre of the breech, and sees that a bead placed above the centre of the muzzle is in a direct line with the desired point of impact. If we add a notch at the centre of the breech to fix the eye more accurately, we shall have the hind-sight, the fore-sight, and the object brought into line, when the gun is correctly laid. This would constitute a perfect direct mechanical sight

if we could assume (1) that the projectile was not subject to gravity; (2) that it had no tendency to deviate if passing through a calm atmosphere ; (3) that the object aimed at was stationary ; (4) that the weapon discharged was stationary ; (5) that the atmosphere was still.

(1) The first condition is never realized : the projectile begins to drop towards the earth the moment it leaves the gun, and therefore to make it strike at a given level its first direction must be above this level. Hence the hind-sight must be raised to make the necessary correction,

and the angle between the axis of the piece and the straight.

line connecting the elevated hind-sight with the fore-sight and object is called the “angle of elevation.” Supposing the projectile to move % vacuo and to drop simply under the action of gravity, the calculation of the amount of eleva- tion to be given for any range at any velocity would be easily made, but the resistance of the air renders the problem an exceedingly complicated and difficult one (see GuNNERY), and only approximate solutions have as yet been discovered. Next, supposing the hind-sight to be correctly elevated, it is evidently necessary to keep it up- right ; deviation to the right will cause the projectile to strike to the right of the object and deviation to the left to strike to the left of it. The amount of error is given by the equation d=r tan @ tan e,

where d=error in direction, y=range, 0=angle made by plane of elevation with the perpendicular, and «= angle of elevation. The rifleman should study to keep the hind-sight as upright as possible, and indeed little error is likely to occur with a good shot from this cause. But the case is very different with a gun mounted on an uneven or mov- ing platform, and many devices have been resorted to for automatically overcoming the difficulty. They all, however, belong to either the spirit-level or the pendulum type.

(2) Secondly, the projectile deviates of its own accord from the vertical plane. If it is unrifled, its imperfections of manufacture cause errors which may be in any direc- tion, and which, therefore, cannot be compensated by any method of sighting. If it is rifled, the spin given to it renders these imperfections of little consequence, but, on the other hand, confers a constant tendency to deviation. If we lay a gun on the face of a clock, and the rifling causes a point on the surface of the shot to turn in the same direction as the hands, the shot will deviate to the right, contrariwise to the left. The cause and extent of this motion have never been thoroughly worked out. It appears to arise from the circumstance that the axis round which the shot rotates points always above the trajectory, since the principle of least resistance causes the direction of the axis to follow tardily the ever-changing curve ; hence the pressure of the air, which of course acts in the direction of the trajectory, is greater on the lower than on the upper surface, and the unequal friction thereby set up causes the shot, as it were, to roll sideways; here also the principle of least resistance turns the axis slightly out of the vertical plane of fire towards the actual direc- tion of the projectile. The path is doubly curved,—first, downwards by gravity, secondly, sideways by the rotation ; the latter curve, seen in plan, is nearly a parabola. In order to correct this tendency of rifled projectiles to shoot round the corner, as it may be said, the hind-sight is in- clined at an angle with the vertical, so that the more it is raised to give elevation the greater becomes the correc- tion, which assumes the form of a curve not very dis-similar to that due to rotation. The amount of error is practically determined on the firing ground, and the proper angle for the sight is given by the formula

tan 6=—__. r sin €

A7

(3) Every one who shoots birds on the wing is acquainted with the difficulties appertaining to the non-fulfilment of the third condition. The expert game-shot aims ahead of the object more or less, according to his judgment of the relative velocities of the projectile and the target and of the distance of the latter. Practice makes this compara- tively easy at the short ranges of ordinary sport; but in the case of a heavy fort gun firing at a vessel under full steam 3000 yards off, it becomes evident that considerable allowance must be made. Put the mean horizontal velo- city of the shot over a 3000 yards range at 1000 foot- seconds, the time of flight will be 9 seconds ; if the ship is running past at the rate of 20 foot-seconds it will have traversed 180 feet during the shot's flight, and it will be necessary to direct the gun so much ahead of the desired point of impact. The angle of divergence in the case just given is tan~!:02; and, supposing the horizontal velocity of the projectile to be constant throughout its flight, this angle would be correct for a ship running at a speed of 20 foot-seconds whatever the range.

(4) The fourth condition is rarely met with except on board ship, and it is evident that it obeys the same laws and is subject to the same kind of correction as the third. The correcting angle, however, is here given by the ship's speed across the line of fire and the starting velocity of the projectile.

(5) The fifth source of error differs from the others in being variable and uncontrollable. A gust of wind may spoil the best shot; and, though it is possible in practice to allow for deviation due to a steady breeze, yet the force and even the direction of the moving air differ so fre- quently at different parts of the trajectory that it has hitherto been found impossible to devise any satisfactory correction beyond that obtainable from knowledge of the point of impact of a previous shot. The effect of wind on direction may be calculated from the formula

ne thi Ag Wt ame si},

ee: w D=Wi sin Jee ie log 500 w

where D=deflexion in feet, W=velocity of wind in feet per second, ¢= time of flight in seconds, 6 =angle between direction of wind and line of fire, A =area of longitudinal section of shot in square feet, w= weight of shot in pounds, g=force of gravity. This formula assumes that the wind steadily carries the shot sideways without changing the parallelism of its axis, an assumption not greatly in error with heavy projectiles having the centre of gravity nearly coincident with the centre of figure. The effect of wind on range may be arrived at by adding or subtracting the velocity of the air, resolved in the direction of the object, to or from the horizontal velocity of the projectile and calculating by the tables (see GUNNERY) the loss or gain due to the increased or diminished resistance.

The accompanying diagrams (figs. 1, 2) represent what are called ‘‘speed-sights”’ in the royal navy, as applied to a 4-inch breech- loading gun. The gun is shown elevated at 8° for a range of 4600 yards. The hind or ‘‘tangent” sight is sloped sideways at an angle of 1° 30’ to correct the constant tendency of the projectile to deviate tothe right. The sight is raised in the socket till the lowest visible graduation on the bar reads the required range on the face towards the breech and the elevation in degrees on the face towards the muzzle. A crosshead carries a leaf, which is traversed to the right or left by a double-threaded screw; this leaf is provided with a fine wire strung horizontally between two uprights ; hence this form of sight is sometimes known as the H sight. The crosshead is gra- duated with two scales, one on the muzzle-face reading minutes of deflexion for giving any desired correction for wind or uneven plat- form, the other on the breech-face for allowing for the speed of the enemy in knots across the line of fire. The fore-sight is fixed in the gun, and cannot be raised or lowered. It has a crosshead provided with a traversing leaf, which carries a round bead on a thin support. The crosshead is graduated to allow for the speed of the firing vessel across the line of fire. In practice the gunner makes all these adjustments as nearly as he can judge, then takes up his

“

position about 4 feet behind the breech of the gun, holding the firing lanyard taut ; when the object and the bead of the fore-sight appear to be on the centre of the wire across the H of the hind- sight he fires. :

The forms of sights preferred by experts for accurate laying are extremely varied, and nothing but practice can determine the most suitable to individual eyesight. Where the eye can be brought close to the hind-sight, one of the best systems is that adopted for British field-guns, where a fine peep-hole constitutes the hind-sight, and the fore- sight consists of diagonal cross-wires ; the first rapid or rough adjustment hf of the gun is made #2 with the aid of a V-— 4 shaped notch on the Wy hind-sight and an acorn point on the fore-sight. Some prefer pointers for the fore-sight, either ©-

shaped, so that the object appears | between the cusps of the ¢)—this is ike the French method j

Ae

HEN

WeBell

i

—or placed diagon-

ally like cross-wires

with the intersec- . tion removed. Sil- vered vertical lines are preferred by many good shots. If thegun is mount- ge ed in a fixed posi- £¢ tion, say on a siege (x platform, and, if the \ relative positions ‘ of the target and some other object are known, it may be found convenient to lay the gun on the target by directing the sights at the other object. This is principally done in the case of howitzers dropping shells at high elevation intoa work. They fire over a pro- tecting bank and are laid by reversed sights from the muzzle backwards at a steeple, a pole, or other convenient object.

To secure greater accuracy than can be attained by the eye, telescopes are resorted to. It is obviously easy to apply to a match rifle a telescope with sufficient strength to resist the jar of firing, and to provide it with the neces- sayy fittings for elevation, deflexion, &c. ; but with ordnance the shock is much greater, and the telescope has to be removed before firing. This renders it difficult to secure a truly accurate attachment ; but probably the immediate future will witness a sufficiently satisfactory solution of the problem as regards guns on firm platforms. Efforts have been made from time to time to overcome the necessity for extreme accuracy due to the short bearing of the telescope by bringing the fore-sight into play ; this can be done either by great powers of adjustment of focus, so as to view first the fore-sight and then the target, or by adding a half-object lens, and so getting simultaneous images of fore-sight and target.

The application of electricity to the laying and firing of heavy guns has caused a remarkable development of the systems of sighting introduced recently into the forts which protect the shores of the United Kingdom. Suppose a battery of guns to command a channel, and that +t is desired to concentrate their fire on a hostile vessel endeavouring to run past. Each detachment lays its gun poth for elevation and direction in accordance with the

FORE-SIGHT.

Fig. 2. Speed-sights used in the British navy.

figures which appear on a dial in the emplacement. Each dial is worked by electricity from an observing station away from the smoke and noise of the fort; as the hostile vessel approaches the observing officer follows its course ona chart. The observing station is placed at a consider. able height above the water-line, so that a vertical base of calculation is obtained. Hence the angle of depression given by the telescope when pointing at the object indicates the range, and the direction of the telescope indicates the line of fire; these indications are automatically corrected for the positions of the guns. In practice the officer follows the ship's course, signals to the battery the line and distance of a point a little ahead of the vessel, and receives a signal from the battery that the guns are laid and ready. He then fires electrically as the ship is coming into the ex- pected position. (E. M.)

SIGISMUND (1362-1437), German emperor, was born on 14th February 1362. After the death of his father, the emperor Charles IV., he received the margraviate of Brandenburg ; and his betrothal with Mary, the daughter and heiress of Louis of Poland and Hungary, gave hima right to look forward to the succession in these two coun- tries. But in 1383, when Louis died, the Poles chose Hedwig, Mary's sister, as their queen; and Sigismund was unable to marry Mary and to secure the crown of Hungary until 1387, as her rights had been seized by Charles of Durazzo, and after his death she had _ been made prisoner by the ban of Croatia. Sigismund was soon involved in a war with the Turks, and in order to obtain the means of carrying on the struggle he gave Brandenburg in pledge to his cousin Jobst of Moravia,

Defeated at Nicopolis in 1396, Sigismund fled to Greece ; and in his absence his wife died. When he returned to Hungary the people rose against him, made him prisoner, and gave the crown to Ladislaus of Naples. Sigismund escaped, and having sold the Altmark, which he had in- herited from his brother John, he was able to collect an army and to crush the Hungarian rebellion. Meanwhile his brother Wenceslaus, king of the Romans, had been deposed, and Rupert of the Palatinate was chosen as his successor. In 1410 Rupert died, and Sigismund and Jobst of Moravia were both elected to the crown. Jobst died in the following year, and then Sigismund was universally recognized as king. One of the chief events of his reign was the assembling of the council of Constance, which met for the purpose of bringing the great schism in the church to an end. Sigismund marred his services in connexion with the council by assenting to the burning of John Hus, to whom he had granted a safe conduct. For this treachery he had to pay a heavy penalty, for it led indirectly to the Husite War, which raged for about sixteen years. In 1435 peace was restored, and Sigismund obtained possession of Bohemia. In 1415 he gave Brandenburg, which had been restored to him after Jobst's death, in fief to Frederick, burgrave of Nuremberg ; and in 1423, in reward for ser- vices rendered in the Husite War, Frederick, margrave of Meissen, received the duchy of Saxony with the electoral dignity. Sigismund was crowned emperor in 1433, having obtained the Italian crown two years before. He died at Znaim in Moravia on 9th December 1437. He possessed considerable intellectual ability, but he never did full justice to his powers,—being recklessly extravagant and of a wayward and impulsive temper.

See Aschbach, Geschichte Kaiser Sigismuna's (1838-45) ; Schroller, Die Wahl Sigismund's zum rimischen Konig (1875) ; Bezold, Kéng Sigmund und die Reichskriege gegen die Husiten (1872-77); Kerler, Deutsche Reichstagsakten unter Kaiser Sigmund (1878).

STGISMUND, the name of three kings of Poland. See PoLAND, vol. xix. pp. 290-291 and 294.

STGMARINGEN, the seat of government of the Prussiaa administrative division of the same name, is a small town

on the Danube with (1880) 4154 inhabitants. The divi- sion of Sigmaringen is composed of the two formerly sovereign principalities of Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen and Hohenzollern-Hechingen (see HoHENZOLLERN, vol. xii. p. 52) and has an area of 440 square miles, with a popula- tion in 1880 of 67,624. The Sigmaringen part of the Hohenzollern lands was the larger of the two (297 square miles) and lay mainly to the south of Hechingen, though the district of Haigerloch on the Neckar also belonged to it. The name of Hohenzollern is used much more fre- quently than the official Sigmaringen to designate the combined principalities.

SIGNALS, Navat. A system of naval signals com- prises different methods of conveying orders or information to or from a ship in sight and within hearing, but at a distance too great to permit of hailing,—in other words, beyond the reach of the voice, even when aided by the speaking-trumpet. Signals are divided into classes accord- ing to the instruments with which and the circumstances under which they are made. There are sight and sound signals ; flag, semaphore, fixed lantern, flashing, firework, horn or steam-whistle, and gun signals; day, night, fog, and distant signals. Besides these, there are other divi- sions, such as general, vocabulary, evolutionary, &c., which depend upon technical considerations and are matters of arrangement,

The necessity of some plan of rapidly conveying orders or intelligence to a distance was early recognized. Polybius de- scribes two methods, one proposed by Aineas Tacitus more than three centuries before Christ, and one perfected by himself, which, as any word could be spelled by it, antici- pated the underlying principle of recent systems. The signal codes of the ancients are believed to have been elabo- rate. Generally some kind of flag was used. Shields were also displayed in a preconcerted manner, and some have imagined that the reflected rays of the sun were flashed from them as with the modern heliograph (see HELIo- GRAPHY). In the Middle Ages flags, banners, and lanterns were used to distinguish particular squadrons, and as marks of rank, as they are at present, also to call officers to the admiral, and to report sighting the enemy and getting into danger. The invention of cannon made an important addition to the means of signalling. In the instructions issued by Don Martin de Padilla in 1597 the use of guns, lights, and fires is mentioned. The introduction of the square rig permitted a

further addition, that of letting fall a sail a certain number of times. Before the middle of the 17th century only a few stated orders and reports could be made known by signalling. Flags were used by day, and lights, occasionally with guns, at night. The significa- tion then, and for a long time after, depended upon the position in which the light or flag was displayed. Orders, indeed, were as often as possible communicated by hailing or even by means of boats. As the size of ships increased the inconvenience of both plans became intolerable. Some attribute the first attempt at a regular code to Admiral Penn, but the credit of it is usually given to James IL. when duke of York. Notwithstanding the attention paid to the subject by Paul Hoste and others, signals continued Strangely imperfect till late in the 18th century. Towards 1780 Admiral Kempenfelt devised a plan of flag-signalling which was the parent of that now in use. Instead of in- dicating differences of meaning by varying the position of a solitary flag, he combined distinct flags in pairs. About the beginning of the 19th century Sir Home Popham im- proved a method of conveying messages by flags proposed by Mr Hall Gower, and greatly increased a ship's power of communicating with others. The number of night and fog signals that could be shown was still very restricted. In 1867 an innovation of prodigious importance was made

A9

by the adoption in the British navy of Captain Philip Colomb's flashing system, on which he had been at work since 1858. This is in general use in all fleets, though, oddly enough, on its first trial at sea it was condemned. It is not too much to say that the Colomb system has made it possible to handle, with confidence and safety, in darkness and fog, squadrons composed of the gigantic armour-clads of the day. Its adoption has not only con- tributed very materially to the increased efficiency of the British fleets but also immensely reduced the risk of acci- dents ; and the saving to the tax-payer since its introduc- tion may probably be estimated in hundreds of thousands of pounds.

In the British navy, which is copied by most others, sight- signals are made with flags, the semaphore, ''flashes," fixed lanterns, and occasionally with fireworks, and for " dis- tant" signals with flags, balls, and pendants

displayed on account of shape but not of colour. Sound-signals are made with horns, steam-whistles, and guns, There are two sets of flags,—one of ten numbered from 1 to 10, and another of twenty-one called after letters of the alphabet. There are also pendants and a few special flags. The numbered flags are used with the general signal book, a kind of dictionary in which figures stand opposite sentences conveying orders or announcements. Opposite 123 might stand “hoist in all boats,” which would mean that, when the flag called 1 was hoisted with 2 beneath it and 3 beneath 2, the ship or ships addressed—indicated by a special flag or by pendants—were ordered to hoist all boats in. The lettered flags are used with the vocabulary signal book, in which opposite collections of letters are put single words or small groups of words. Thus, if ABC were opposite the word “admiral” and STO opposite ‘will sail at noon,” when the first three flags were hoisted the signalman on board each ship addressed would note them down with their signification. When all addressed had acknowledged the first “hoist” the flags would be hauled down and STO would be hoisted, to be acknow- ledged and noted in like manner. The admiral would thus have made known his intention of sailing at a given hour. From this it will appear that the general code is used for words of command and the vocabulary for long communications, The night signal book contains a limited number of definite orders and announcements made known by exhibiting lanterns, never more than four, arranged vertically, horizontally, or in a square. For a few signals some kind of firework is displayed. Fog- signals are made by firing different numbers of guns at fixed intervals. Owing to the slowness of flag-signalling, it is now, especially for the vocabulary and at moderate distances, largely superseded by the semaphore, an upright post with two arms moving in a vertical plane. The changed positions of the arms indicate letters and each word is spelled. Before the adoption of Captain Colomb’s system, at night and in fogs only a few announcements could be made by signal, and sending messages was un- known. By a series of symbols formed of dots and short lines, like those of the Morse alphabet, he represents figures, letters, and special words. Thus … means 3, and .__%. The system can be employed in daylight, at night, and in fogs. In daylight long and short waves of a flag on a staff reproduce the flashes; in fogs long and short blasts on a fog-horn or steam-whistle; and at night the alternate exposure and concealment of the light of a lamp. Every order in the general signal book and every word in the vocabulary—by spelling, indeed, every

word in the language—may be communicated by this system. Distant signals, now rarely used, are made by hoisting flags of different shapes at distances at which colours become invisible. The Army and Navy Signal Book contains the

en]

50

code for communications between a ship and its boats or military stations on shore ; the Jnternational, with special flags, is for communicating with merchant vessels. In the British navy there is a corps of signalmen rising in grade from boys to chief petty officers. They are selected from the most intelligent and best educated boys in the training- ships, and go through a course of special instruction in their duties. (Gas BY) SIGNORELLI, Luca (c.1442-c.1524), one of the great- est of the Italian painters who ushered in the full culmina- tion of the art under Leonardo da Vinci, Michelangelo, and Raphael, was born in Cortona—his full name being Luca

W@Egidio di Ventura; he has also been called Luca da

Cortona. The precise date of his birth is uncertain ; but, as he is said to have died at the age of eighty-two, and as he was certainly alive during some part of 1524, the birth-date of 1442 must be nearly correct. He belongs to the Tuscan school, associated with that of Umbria. His first impressions of art seem to be due to Perugia,— the style of Bonfigli, Fiorenzo, and Pinturicchio, Lazzaro Vasari, the great-grandfather of Giorgio Vasari, the his- torian of art, was brother to Luca’s mother; he got Luca apprenticed to Piero della Francesca, In 1472 the young man was painting at Arezzo, and in 1474 at Citta di Castello. He presented to Lorenzo de’ Medici a picture which is probably the one named the School of Pan, discovered some years ago in Florence, and now belonging to Marquis Corsi; it is almost the same subject which he painted also on the wall of the Petrucci palace in Siena,— the principal figures being Pan himself, Olympus, Echo, a nan reclining on the ground, and two listening shep- herds (see ScHoors of ParNTING, vol. xxi. p. 434, fig. 8). He executed, moreover, various sacred pictures, showing a study of Botticelli and Lippo Lippi. Pope Sixtus IV. commissioned Signorelli to paint some frescos, now mostly very dim, in the shrine of

Loreto,— Angels, Doctors of the Church, Evangelists, Apostles, the Incredulity of Thomas, and the Conversion of St Paul. He also executed a single fresco in the Sistine Chapel in Rome, the Acts of Moses; another, Moses and Zipporah, which has been usually ascribed to Signorelli, is now recognized as the work of Perugino. Luca may have stayed in Rome from 1478 to 1484. Inthe latter year he returned to his native Cortona, which remained from this time his ordinary home. From 1497 he began some professional excursions. In Siena, in the convent of Chiusuri, he painted eight frescos, forming part of a vast series of the Life of St Benedict ; they are at present much injured. In the palace of Pan-

dolfo Petrucci he worked upon various classic or mytho- |

logical subjects, including the School of Pan already men- tioned. From Siena he went to Orvieto, and here he produced the works which, beyond all others, stamp his greatness in art. ‘These are the frescos in the chapel of S. Brizio, in the cathedral, which already contained some pictures on the vaulting by Fra Angelico. The works of Signorelli represent the Last Days of the Mundane Dis- pensation, with the Pomp and the Fall of Antichrist, and the Eternal Destiny of Man, and occupy three vast lunettes, each of them a single picture. In one of them, Antichrist, after his portents and impious glories, falls headlong from the sky, crashing down into an innumerable crowd of men and women. Paradise, the Elect and the Condemned, Hell, the Resurrection of the Dead, and the Destruction of the Reprobate follow in other compartments. To Angelico’s ceiling Signorelli added a section showing figures blowing trumpets, &c. ; and in another ceiling he depicted the Madonna, Doctors of the Church, Patriarchs, and Martyrs. There is also a great deal of subsidiary work connected with Dante, and with the poets and legends of antiquity. The daring and terrible invention of the great

compositions, with their powerful treatment of the nude and of the most arduous foreshortenings, and the general mastery over complex grouping and distribution, marked a development of art which had never previously been attained. It has been said that Michelangelo felt so strongly the might of Signorelli’s delineations that he borrowed, in his own Last Judgment,

some of the figures or combinations which he found at Orvieto; this state- ment, however, has not been verified by precise instances. The contract for Luca's work is still on record. He under-

-took on 5th April 1499 to complete the ceiling for 200

ducats, and to paint the walls for 600, along with lodging, and in every month two measures of wine and two quarters of corn. Signorelli's first stay in Orvieto lasted not more than two years. In 1502 he returned to Cortona, and painted a dead Christ, with the Marys and other figures. Two years later he was once more back in Orvieto, and completed the whole of his work in or about that time, 4.e., some two years before 1506,—a date famous in the history of the advance of art, when Michelangelo displayed his cartoon of Pisa.

After finishing off at Orvieto, Signorelli was much in Siena. In 1507 he executed a great altarpiece for 8. Medardo at Arcevia in Umbria—the Madonna and Child, with the Massacre of the Innocents and other episodes. In 1508 Pope Julius IL. determined to re-adorn the camere of the Vatican, and he summoned to Rome Signorelli, in company with Perugino, Pinturicchio, and Bazzi (Sodoma). They began operations, but were shortly all superseded to make way for Raphael, and their work was taken down. Luca now returned to Siena, living afterwards for the most part in Cortona. He continued constantly at work, but the performances of his closing years were not of special mark, In 1520 he went with one of his pictures to Arezzo. Here he saw Giorgio Vasari, aged eight, and encouraged his father to second the boy's bent for art. Vasari tells a pretty story how the wellnigh octogenarian master said to him "Impara, parentino" ("You must study, my little kins- man"), and clasped a jasper round his neck asa preservative against nose-bleeding, to which the child was subject. He was partially paralytic when he began a fresco of the Bap- tism of Christ in the chapel of Cardinal Passerini's palace near Cortona, which is the last picture of his that we find specified. Signorelli stood in great repute not only as a painter but also asa citizen. He entered the magistracy of Cortona as early as 1488, and in 1524 held a leading position among the magistrates of his native place. In or about the year 1524 he died there.

Signorelli from an early age paid great attention to anatomy, carrying on his studies in burial grounds. He surpassed all his contemporaries in showing the structure and mechanism of the nude in immediate action; and he even went beyond nature in experi- ments of this kind, trying hypothetical attitudes and combinations. His drawings in the Louvre demonstrate this and bear a close analogy to the method of Michelangelo. He aimed at powerful truth rather than. nobility of form; colour was comparatively neglected, and his chiaroscuro exhibits sharp oppositions of lights and shadows. He had a vast influence over the painters of his own and of succeeding times, but liad no pupils or assistants of high mark; one of them was a nephew named Franceseo. He was a inarried man with a family; one of his sons died, seemingly through some sudden casualty, and Luca depicted the corpse with sorrow- ful but steady self-possession. He is described as full of kindliness and amiability, sineere, courteous, easy with his art assistants, of fine manners, living and dressing well ; indeed, according to Vasari, he always lived more like a nobleman than a painter. The Torri- giani Gallery in Florence contains a grand life-sized portrait by Signorelli of a man inared cap and vest; this is said to be the likeness of the painter himself, and corresponds with Vasari's ob- servation. The pictorial reputation of Signorelli has revived and ripened very much throughout Europe in recent years. The fore- going account of him is principally founded upon that given by Messrs Crowe and Cavalcaselle. In Great Britain there is no better specimen of his work than the Circumcision of Jesus, a panel lately in Hamilton Palace, near Glasgow. (W. M. R.)

SIK—SIL

SIKHS. See Inpza, vol. xii. p. 808, and Punsas, vol. xx. p. 110; also Hinpustvant, vol. xi. p. 844,

SIKKIM, a native state of India, in the eastern Hima- laya Mountains, between 27° 9' and 27° 58' N. lat., and between 88° 4' and 89° E. long., and bounded on the north and north-east by Tibet, on the south-east by Bhutan, on the south by the British district of Darjiling, and on the west by Nepal. It covers an area of 2600 square miles, with an estimated population of 7000. The Tibetan name for Sikkim is Dingjing or Demo-jong, and for the people Deunjong Maro; the Gurkhas call them Lepchas, but Mr

Clements Markham, in his work on Tibet (1879), says that their proper name is Rong. The whole of the state is situated at a considerable elevation within the Himalayan mountain zone. From the level of the sea to an elevation of 12,000 feet, Sikkim is covered with dense forests of tall umbrageous trees. The mountains in the south are gene- rally lower than those of Darjiling district, but north of Tumlung the passes are of great height. Jelap-la, the most southerly of these, rises to 13,000 feet; the two next are the Guiatu-la and Yak-la, leading into the Chumbi valley of Tibet, the latter being 14,000 feet high; further north are the Cho-la (15,000 fect), on the direct road from Tumlung to Chumbi, and the Tankra-la (16,083 feet), the most snowy passin Sikkim. The state is drained by the Tista and its affluents, and by the Am-machu which rises near Parijong, at the foot of the Chamalhari peak (23,929 feet), and flows through the Chumbi valley into the district of Jalpaiguri under the name of the Torsha. Through Sikkim lie the most promising routes for trade with Tibet. At present, however, the Tibetan passes are closed to ordinary British subjects, though an active trade is main- tained in certain articles by Bhuteas and Tibetans.

The ¢apital of Sikkim is Tumlung, where the raja resides during the winter and spring, usually going to his estates at Chumbi in Tibet in summer, in order to avoid the heavy rains. The raja receives a subsidiary allowance of £1200 a year from the British Government, in consideration of his position as former ruler of the hill territory of Darjiling and a submontane tract on the plain ealled the Morung. Communication with the state is kept up through the deputy commissioner of Darjiling. Sikkim produces

rice, Indian corn, millet, oranges, and two or three sorts of Lepcha cloth. Its mineral products are lime and copper.

SILENUS, a personage of Greek mythology, a drunken attendant of Bacchus and closely allied to the satyrs, of whom he appears as the leader. Elderly satyrs were called Sileni. The Sileni belong especially to the legends of Asia Minor, and particularly of Lydia and Phrygia. The stories as to the birth of Silenus were various. Some called him a son of Hermes, others of Pan and a nymph; others said that he sprang from the drops of the blood of Sky. Sometimes he figures as the guardian of Dionysus. In spite of his dissipated habits he possessed a large stock of general information,

which however, like Proteus, he only imparted on compulsion. Midas, king of Phrygia, caught him by mixing wine in the spring out of which Silenus, in a moment of weakness, had condescended to drink. The conversation which followed is fully reported by Theopompus and Aristotle (Ailian, Var. Hist., iii. 18 ; Plutarch, Consol. ad Apoll., 27). Prefacing his remarks with a slight sketch of terrestrial geography and a brief reference to the fauna characteristic of the different con- tinents, Silenus proceeded to ‘draw an edifying picture of the pleasures of true piety as contrasted with the dreadful fate in store for the wicked, winding up with a gloomy reflexion on the vanity of human life and the expression of a wish that he had never been born. Another of his homilies has been preserved by Virgil (Ecl., 6): two shepherds surprise the sage drunk in a cave; they bind him with flowery chains, and he tells them how the world was made, with stories “of remotest eld.” Apart from

ol

this gift of sermonizing, the Sileni seem to have resembled the satyrs in their love of music, wine, and women. Indeed, the Greeks appear not to have sharply distinguished between them; for Marsyas, the mythical flute-player, is called sometimes a satyr, sometimes a Silenus. In art Silenus appears as a fat, dumpy old man, with a snub nose and a bald head, riding on an ass and supported by satyrs who keep the jolly toper from tumbling off. Or he is depicted standing or lying with his inseparable companion, a wine-skin, which again he sometimes bestrides. Some- times he is sitting with his Pan’s-pipe or flute in his hand.

SILESIA (Germ. Schlesien), a district in the eastern part of Germany, between 49° 28’ and 52° 7’ N. lat. and 13° 50’ and 19° 20’ E. long., was formerly united with the kingdom of Bohemia in the form of a duchy (or rather group of duchies), and is now unequally shared between Prussia and Austria. Geographically it is divided into Lower and Upper Silesia, the whole of the former and part of the latter belonging to Prussia. The total area is 17,540 square miles.

It is generally asserted that the original inhabitants of Silesia were the Germanic tribes of the Lygii and Quadi, who retired before the Slavonic immigrations of the 6th century, but this statement is beyond the range of

posi- tive proof. The earliest form of the name, Sleenzane or Zlesane, shows a Slavonic origin, and further than this we have no means of penetrating. Various explanations have been given of the name, and one old writer gravely connects it with the prophet Elisha; but there is little doubt that it was first applied to the district round Mount Zlenz (the modern Zobten) and the river Zlenza (Lohe), and thence spread gradually over the whole region now known as Silesia. These early Slavonic inhabitants be- longed to the family of Lechs (Poles), and the modern Polish name for the inhabitants is Zlesaki. The history of Silesia consists substantially of the process which has con- verted it from a Slavonic territory into a predominantly German land. |

The earliest notices of Silesia are extremely vague, nor can we exactly define the scope of the name in the first thousand years of our era. It seems to have formed part of the great but short-lived kingdom of Moravia (q.v.) in the 9th century, and afterwards oscillated between the neighbouring kingdoms of Bohemia and Poland, becoming definitely incorporated with the latter at the end of the 10th century. Christianity was introduced about the year 960, and from 1000 on we have an unbroken list of bishops of Breslau. The first contact of Germany with Silesia was disastrous to the former, as it was on the fastnesses of Silesia that Henry V. squandered his strength in his unsuccessful expedition against Poland in 1109. More fortunate was the intervention of Frederick Barbarossa in 1163 in behalf of the three sons of the dispossessed Ladislaus, a member of the Polish royal family of the Piasts. He succeeded in securing as their share of the Polish dominions the whole of Silesia, though it was not till forty or fifty years later that it could be said to have gained actual independence of Poland. These three princes were the ancestors and founders of the various ducal lines that henceforth ruled in Silesia, and their intimate connexion with the German king accounts in great measure for the process of Germanization which Silesia now began to undergo, chiefly through the in- troduction of German colonists in scantily peopled or desolated districts. The eldest of the three sons of Ladislaus received the town of Breslau and by far the largest portion of territory, so that the history of Silesia tor the next two or three generations is practically that of his line Under his grandson Henry the Bearded (1202-1238) the Germanization of Silesia made rapid pro-

gress, and the duchy at that time may be looked upon as a bulwark or mark against the Slavs in the south-east of Germany, just as the duchy of Prussia was in the north- east. Henry extended his sway much beyond the limits of Silesia, and in fact united under his sceptre nearly three quarters of the old Polish dominions. His son Henry II. (1238-1241) had a short reign with a glorious end, falling in 1241 at the battle of Liegnitz, where his determined resistance turned back from Germany the alarming Mongolian invasion. On his death his terri- tories were shared among his sons, and the series of divisions and subdivisions began which resulted in almost every Silesian town of any importance becoming the capital of an independent prince. At the beginning of the 14th century there were no fewer than 17 prin- cipalities of this kind, nearly all held by dukes of the Piast family. It was inevitable that these petty rulers should feel the want of a support against the encroach- ments of Poland, and it was inevitable; too, that the rela- tion opened in consequence with Bohemia should gradually change from mere protection to feudal supremacy. By 1355 the supremacy of Bohemia was formally recognized as extending over the whole of Silesia, though the Silesians retained a considerable measure of independence, including the right to hold general dicts for the settlement of their internal relations. The kings of Bohemia at this time (John, Charles IV.) were members of the German house of Luxemburg, and Silesia under their sway may be looked upon as an entirely German land.

During the Hussite wars of the 15th century Silesia, which adhered zealously to the old faith, suffered greatly from Hussite forays. The Luxemburg dominion broke up in 1458, when Hungary and Bohemia elected rulers of their own nationality. Silesia, however, neglected the opportunity to elect a German king for itself, and sup- ported the Bohemian king George Podiebrad. Breslau, still the most powerful of the principalities, threw in its lot with Matthew Corvinus of Hungary, who fought many of his battles on Silesian soil. By the treaty of Olmiitz in 1479 Matthew acquired all the tributary lands of the Bohemian crown, including Silesia, which remained attached to Hungary down to 1490. In that year Bohemia and Hungary became once more united under the same king. In 1526 Silesia passed with the rest of the Bohemian inheritance to the house

of Hapsburg (see BouemrA). The Reformation at first made rapid progress in Silesia, and the native dukes placed little opposition in its way. The Hapsburg princes, however, acted very differently, and the Silesian Protestants suffered much persecution before, during, and after the Thirty Years' War. It was not indeed till the 18th century that they acquired formal recognition and the restoration of some of their confiscated churches.

The First Silesian War between Austria and Prussia, which broke out in 1740, had its ultimate cause (nomin- ally at least) in a compact of mutual succession entered into in 1537 by the elector of Brandenburg on the one side and the duke of Liegnitzon the other. The emperor, as feudal superior of the duke, had indeed refused to recognize this agreement, but the Great Elector did not fail to put in his claim on the death of the last duke in 1675, and Frederick now thought the opportunity too good to be lost. The progress of the three Silesian wars is recounted in the article AusTRIA (vol. iii, p. 127-129). At the peace of Hubertusburg (1763) Prussia was left in possession of nearly the whole of Silesia, with the frontier as it still exists. Frederick exerted himself to atone for the evils brought upon the district through the ravages of war by introducing colonists and capital, reforming the administration, granting complete religious liberty, and

el i hse Pee

the like. That this seed did not fall on ungrateful soil seems proved by the modern prosperity of Silesia and the loyalty with which its inhabitants have clung to the Prussian cause. Silesia formed part of the reduced king- dom of Prussia left by the peace of Tilsit in 1806, and it was the centre of the national rising of 1813, when the king issued his celebrated address "To my People" from Breslau. Stein's emancipating edict of 1807 was wel- comed with profound satisfaction in Silesia, where the conditions of serfdom had been particularly oppressive, and no doubt contributed materially to the enthusiasm with which the Silesians flocked to the standard a few years later.!

PRUSSIAN SILESIA, the largest province of Prussia (see vol. xx. plate I.), with an area of 15,560 square miles, forms the south- eastern limb of the kingdom, and is bounded by Brandenburg, Posen, Russian Poland, Galicia, Austrian Silesia, Moravia, Bohemia, and the kingdom and province of

Saxony. Besides the bulk of the old duchy of Silesia, it comprises the countship of Glatz, a frag- ment of the Neumark, and part of Upper Lusatia, taken from Saxony in 1815. The provinee is divided into three governmental districts, —Liegnitz and Breslau corresponding to lower Silesia, while Oppeln takes in the greater part of upper, southern, or mountainous Silesia.

Physiographically Silesia is roughly divided into a flat and a hilly portion by the so-called Silesian Langenthal, which begins on the south-east near the Malapane, and extends across the pro- vince in a west-by-north direction to the Black Elster, following in part the valley of the Oder. The south-east part of the province, to the east of the Oder and south of the Malapane, consists of a hilly outpost of the Carpathians (the Tarnowitz plateau), with a mean elevation of about 1000 feet. To the west of the Oder the land rises gradually from the Langenthal towards the southern boundary of the province, which is formed by the central part of the Sudetic system, including the Glatz Mountains and the Rie- sengebirge (Schneekoppe, 5266 feet). Among the loftier elevations in advance of this southern barrier the most conspicuous is the Zobten (2215 feet), the historical connexion of which with the name of the province has been mentioned above. To the north and north-east of the Oder the province belongs almost entirely to the great North-German plain, though a hilly ridge, rarely attain- ing a height of 1000 feet, may be traced from east to west, assert- ing itself most definitely in the Katzengebirge. Nearly the whole of Silesia lies within the basin of the Oder, which flows through it from south-east to north-west, dividing the provinee into two approximately equal parts. The Vistula touches the province on the south-east, and receives a few small tributaries from it, while on the west the Spree and Black Elster belong to the system of the Elbe. The Iser rises among the mountains on the south. Among the chief feeders of the Oder are the Malapane (right), the Glatzer Neisse (left), the Katzbach (left), and the Bartsch (right); the Bober and Queiss flow through Silesia but join the Oder beyond the frontier. The only lake of any extent is the Schlawa See, 7 miles long, on the north frontier. There is a considerable difference in the climate of Lower and Upper Silesia, and some of the villages in the Riesengebirge have the lowest mean temperature of any inhabited place in Prussia (below 40° Fahr.).

Of the total area of the province 56 per cent. is occupied by arable land, 10°8 per cent. by pasture and meadow, and nearly 29 per cent. by forests. The soil along the foot of the mountains is generally good, and the district between Ratibor and Liegnitz, where 70 to 80 per cent. of the surface is under the plough, is reckoned one of the most fertile in Germany. The parts of lower Silesia adjoining Brandenburg, and also the district to the east of the Oder, are sandy and comparatively unproductive. The different cereals are all grown with success, wheat and rye sometimes in quantity enough for exportation. Flax is still a frequent crop in the hilly districts, and more sugar-beets are raised in Silesia than in any other Prussian province except Saxony. Tobacco, oil-seeds, chicory, and hops may also be specified, while a little wine, of an inferior quality, is produced near Griinberg. Mulberry trees for the silk-culture have been introduced and thrive fairly. Large estates are the rule in Silesia, where 35 per cent. of the land is in the hands of owners possessing at least 250 acres, while properties of 50,000 to 100,000 acres are common. The districts of Oppeln and Liegnitz are among the most richly wooded parts of Prussia. According to the live-stock census for 1883, Silesia contains 275,122 horses, 1,397,130 cows, 1,309,495 sheep, 518,612 pigs, 175,283 goats, and 128,828 bce-hives. The merino sheep was introduccd by Frederick the Great, and since then the Silesian

1 Compare Griinhagen, Geschichte Schlesiens (Gotha, 1884 sq.). An aeeount of the poetical schools of Silesia is given under the heading GERMANY (vol. x. pp. 5380-1).

breed of sheep has been greatly improved. The woods and moun- tains harbour large quantities of game, such as red deer, roedcer, wild boars, and hares, while an occasional wolf finds its way into the province from the Carpathians. The fishery includes salmon in the Oder, trout in the mountain-streams, and carp in the small lakes or ponds with which the province is sprinkled. Compare the tables in Prussta (vol. xx. p. 14).

The great wealth of Silesia, however, lies underground, in the shape of large stores of coal and other minerals, and its mining records go back to the 12th century. The coal-measures of Upper Silesia, in the south-east part of the province, are among the most extensive in continental Europe, and there is

another large field near Waldenburg. The annual output, ranging between twelve and fifteen millions of tons, valued at nearly £3,000,000 sterling, is equal to more than a quarter of the entire yield of Germany. The district of Oppeln also contains a great quantity of iron (annual produce 750,000 to 800,000 tons, value about £1,000,000). The deposits of zinc in the vicinity of Beuthen are perhaps the richest in the world, and produce four-fifths of the zine of Germany (550,000 tons). The remaining mineral products include lead (from which a considerable quantity of silver is extracted), copper, cobalt, arsenic, the rare metal cadmium, alum, brown coal, marble, and a few of the commoner precious stones (jaspers, agates, ame- thysts, &c.). The provinco contains practically no salt or brine springs, but there are well-known mineral springs at Warmbrunn, Salzbrunn, and several other places.

A busy manufacturing activity has long been united with the underground industries of Silesia, and the province in this respect yields tho palm to no other part of Prussia except districts in the Rhineland and Westphalia. On the plateau of Tarnowitz the working and smelting of metals is naturally the predominant industry, and in tho neighbourhood of Beuthen, Kénigshiitte, and Gleiwitz there seems an almost endless succession of iron-works, zinc-foundries, machine-shops, and the like. In 1881 the total value of tho metals produced in the various foundries of the pro- vince was £2,376,250. At the foot of the Riesengebirge, and along the southern mountain line gencrally, the textile industries pre- vail. Weaving has been practised in Silesia, on a large scale, since the 14th century ; and Silesian linen still maintains its reputation, though the conditions of production have greatly changed. Cotton and woollen goods of all kinds are also made in large quantities, and among the other industrial products are beetroot sugar (157,000 tons in 1883-84), spirits, chemicals, tobacco, starch, paper, pottery, and “ Bohemian glass.” Lace, somewhat resembling that of Brussels, is made by the women of the mountainous districts. The trade of Silesia is scarcely so extensive as might be expected from its important industrial activity. On the east it is hampered by the stringent regulations of the Russian frontier, and the great waterway of the Oder is sometimes too low in summer for navigation. The extension of the railway system has, however, had its usual effect in fostering commerce, and the mineral and manufac- tured products of the province are freely exported.

At tho census of 1880 the population of Silesia was 4,007,925, of whom 2,082,084 were Roman Catholics, 1,867,489 Protestants, and 52,682 Jews. About 35 per cent. of the population is urban and 65 per cent. rural. The density is 257 per square mile, less than that of Westphalia (262) and the Rhineland (390); but the average is of course very greatly exceeded in the industrial districts, such as Beuthen. The occupation census of 1883 shows that 44 per cent. of the population are supported by agriculture, 36 Ret cent. by industrics, 8°4 per cent. by trade, and 2°2 per cent. by daily labour and domestic service, while 4 per cent. belong to the official and 5 per cent. to the uncmployed classes. Nearly three-fourths of the inhabitants and territory are German, but to the east of the Oder the Poles (nearly 1,000,000) form the bulk of the population, while there are about 50,000 Czechs in the south part of the province and 30,000 Wends near Liegnitz. The Roman Catholics, most of whom are under the ecclesiastical sway of the prince-bishop of Breslan, are predominant in Upper Silesia and Glatz; the Protestants prevail in Lower Silesia, to the west of the Oder, and in Lusatia. The noblesse is very numerous in Silesia, chiefly in consequence of the Polish districts it includes. The educational institutions of the province are headed by the univer- sity of Breslau. In 1883-84 the percentage of illiterate recruits, in spite of the large Polish-speaking contingent, was only 1°70. The capital and seat of the provincial diet is Breslau, which Is also by far the largest and most important town (298,893 inhabitants in 1885). The towns next in point of size are Gorlitz (55,120 inhabitants), Liegnitz (48,851), Kéonigshiitte (31,831), Beuthen (26,478), Schweidnitz (23,775), Neisse (21,444), and Glogau (20,008). The province sends thirty-five members to the Teichstag and sixty-five to the Prussian chamber of deputies. The government divisions of Breslau and Oppeln together form the district of the 6th army corps (seat, Breslau), while Liegnitz belongs to that of the 5th army corps, the headquarters of which are at Posen. Glogau, Glatz, Neisse, and Cosel are fortresses.

AUSTRIAN SILESIA, the part of the duchy that remained to

D3

Austria after the Seven Years’ War, is a mere fraction of the whole, its area being only 1980 square miles, or about one-eighth of that of Prussian

Silesia. It falls into two small portions of territory, scparated by a projecting limb of Moravia and_sur- rounded by Prussian Silesia, Moravia, Hungary, and Galicia. Until 1849 it was for administrative purposes reckoned a part of Moravia, but since that year it has been a crownland of the Austrian empire (the smallest of all), with the style of duchy. The Troppau or western division of the crownland is flanked by the Sudetic Mountains (Altvater, 4678 feet), and the Teschen or eastern half by the Carpathians (Lissahorn, 4330 feet), and a great proportion of the surface is occupied by offshoots of these ranges, The Vistula rises on the Carpathians, within Austrian Silesia, while the western part of the crownland is close to the headwaters of the Oder, which rises near at hand in Moravia. Owing to its mountainous character and its slope towards the north and north- east the crownland has a somewhat severe climate for its latitude, the mean temperature being only 50° Fahr., while the annual rainfall varies from 20 to 30 inches. Upwards of 45 per cent. of the surface is occupied by arable land, 74 per cent. by meadows and gardens, 104 per cent. by pastures, and 32 per cent. by forests, while 44 per cent. is unproductive ground. The soil cannot as a rule be termed rich, though some of the valleys are fertile. The chief crops are oats, rye, barley, potatoes, clover, and flax. Dairy- farming is carried on in the mountains after the Alpine fashion, and sheep are fairly numerous. Geese and pigeons are reared in great quantities, and the hunting and fishing are both very prolific. The principal mineral resources are coal (Silesia producing 13 per cent. of the produce of Austria-Hungary), iron, marble, and slate. Like its Prussian neighbour, the crownland boasts a very busy industrial activity, the chief products of which are its iron and steel goods, textile fabrics (linen, woollen, cotton, velvet, silk), chemicals, liqueurs, and beetroot sugar. The trade is chiefly a transit one, though the manufactures and agricultural produce of the province are exported in considerable quantity. Troppau, the capital of the duchy, contains large cloth manufactories, while Teschen, Bielitz, and Jagerndorf are also busy places. The population in 1885 was 577,593, of whom 81,000 were Protestants and 9000 Jews. About 48 per cent. of the population is supported by agriculture and 27°5 per cent. by industry. Divided according to nationalities, there are 275,000 Germans, 130,000 Czechs, and 158,000 Poles. The German element is predominant in the towns, the Polish in the eastern or Teschen division. The duchy sends ten members to the Austrian house of representatives and has a provincial diet of thirty-one members, (J. F. M.)

SILICA, the only known oxide of silicon (see Cuemistry, vol. v. pp. 521-524), occurs native in a great variety of forms, which, however, correspond to only the four distinct species of QuARTZ (q.v.; see also MINER-ALOGY, vol. xvi. p. 389), tridymite, OPAL (q.v., and compare vol. xvi. p. 390), and siliceous earth. Ordinary quartz rock and sand are more impure forms of quartz. Tridymite differs from quartz only by a lower specific gravity, and in crystallometric details ; the crystals are as a rule arranged in triplets—hence the name (see vol. xvi. p. 389). Silt ceous earth when dry forms a very voluminous, soft, fine powder ; it consists of the shells of Infusoria. As a chemical species it differs little from opal. Siliceous earth, having a very low rate of thermal conductivity, serves well as a stuffing for the hollow walls of ice-chests, fire-proof safes, &c. It is used besides for the making of Dynamite (9.v.). Silica of any kind is absolutely non- volatile, and is fusible only at the temperature of the oxy- hydrogen flame; a slight admixture of base (potash, lime, &c.), however, suffices to cause it to “frit” at a red heat. It is absolutely proof against the action of water and ordinary mineral acids; hydrofluoric acid acts on it ener- getically, as explained in CuEmistry, vol. v. p. 522.

Alkaline Silicates.—Silica readily dissolves at a red heat in fused alkaline carbonates, with evolution of carbonic acid and formation of alkaline silicates. In this process one molecule SiO, of silica is capable of decomposing at most 2R,OCO, (where R=K or Na). The compound Si0,.2R,0, “ orthosilicate” of alkali, frcezes into a compact non-transparent mass, readily soluble in water, with formation of an intensely alkaline solution. It does not unite with any additional alkali, but readily fuses up with more silica. Without going beyond a red heat it is easy to produce thus homogeneous masses of any composition, Na,O.wSiO, from #=4 up to e= (at least) 4.

Compounds approximating to #=4 are known as water glass. Potash water glass, K,0.4Si0,, was discovered in 1825 by Fuchs in

Munich, who noticed all its practically important properties and saw their significance. Water glass when in compact pieces looks like ordinary glass, and is not at all obviously attacked by cold water. But when the powdered

substance is boiled with water it dissolves, and the solution can be boiled down to the consistence of a syrup without anything separating out even in the cold. Such water-glass syrup, when applied as a coating to wood, pasteboard, &c., dries up into a coherent varnish which renders the object non-inflammable, because in the heat of a fire the coat- ing melts into a continuous viscid covering which prohibits access of oxygen to the interior. ‘The early application of water glass to the scenery of the Munich court theatre explains its long immunity from destructive fires. When mixed with powdered chalk, magnesitc, phosphate of lime, aud many other similar mate- rials, it gradually unites with these into hard stone-like masses. Caustic lime and magnesia (MgO) thus unite with it with ex- ceptional promptitude, with elimination of alkali, Water glass, in short, is to the class of mineral substances referred to whiat ordinary glue is to wood and paper, &c., and it is used largely for analogous purposes. Fuchs himself based upon this property of his preparation a new process of wall painting which was sub- sequently developed and brought to great perfection by Kaulbach and others. In this process of ‘‘stereochromy,” as it is called, the more immediate basis for the painting consists of a thin layer of a kind of cement made up of powdered marble, dolomite, quartz, and air-worn quicklime with water glass. On it the colours are laid with plain water, which causes them to stick on, but quite loosely, so that the artist can work at leisure and correct niistakes. The finished painting is fixed by applying to it a spray of water glass solution, which, in the course of a few days makes it per- fectly fast. All that then remains to be done is to wash the painting with alcohol to remove the eliminated alkali and any dust that may have collected. A stereochromic painting (unlike one made by the old fresco process) is practically proof against atmospheric influences, even under a northern climate. In a water-glass solution the alkaliis, so to say, only half combined with the silica ; part of it in fact must be presumed to be present in the free state. At any rate the solution emulsionizes fats, and therefore is a cleansing agent in the same sense as soap-solution is. Water glass and other alkaline silicates are accordingly used as additions to some of the cheaper kinds of soap.

SILISTRIA, or SrttstRa, a fortified town on the south side of the Danube, 75 miles below Rustchuk, and 150 miles from the mouth of the river, is now

at the head of a district in the principality of Bulgaria. In 1881 the population was 10,657.

Silistria is the Durostorum of the Romans, the Durostolos of the Byzantines, the Drstr of the Bulgarians. It was one of the most important towns of the Roman province of Mesia Inferior, successively the headquarters of the legio I. Italica and the legio XI. Claudia. It was defended by the Bulgarian czar Simeon against the Hungarians (893). Captured by Svyatoslaff, the Varingian called to the assistance of the emperor Nicephorus (967), it was subse- quently recovered by the Bulgarians after a three months' heroic defence. Under the Turks, whose rule began in the latter part of the 14th century, Silistria continued to flourish : Hajji Khalfa describes it as the most important of all the Danubian towns. It was the seat of a Greek metropolitan with five bishops under him ; and a settlement of Ragusan merchants kept alive its com- mercial interests. The Russians, who captured Silistria in 1810, destroyed its fortifications before they withdrew; but they were rebuilt by foreign engineers, and in 1828-9 werc strong enough to offer a serious resistance to the Russians, who lost 3000 men. At that date the population, including the garrison, was 24,000, but in 1837 it was only about 4000. In 1854 the town was successfully defended by General Krach against the Russians till the arrival of the Austrians in the peninsula. Russians in 1877, and on the conclusion of peace was evacuated by the Turks.

SILIUS ITALICUS, a Latin epic poet, was born in 25 and died in 101 a.p. His birthplace is unknown. From his cognomen Italicus the conclusion has been drawn that he came from the town of Italica in Spain; but Latin usage would in that case have demanded the form Jtali- censis, and it is highly improbable that Martial would have failed to name him among the literary celebrities of Spain in the latter half of the lst century. The conjecture that Silius was from [talica, the capital of the Italian confedera- tion during the Social War, is open to still stronger objection. Most likely some ancestor of the poet acquired the title "Italicus" from having been a member of one of the corporations of ''Italici" who are often mentioned

It was again invested by the:

in inscriptions from Sicily and elsewhere. In early life Silius was a renowned forensic orator, later a safe and cautious politician, without ability or ambition enough to be legitimately obnoxious to the cruel rulers under whom he lived. But mediocrity was hardly an efficient protection against the murderous whims of Nero, and Silius was generally believed to have secured at ouce his own safety and his promotion to the consulship by putting his oratorical powers to discreditable use in the judicial farces which often ushered in the doom of the emperor's victims. He was consul in the year of Nero's death (69), and is mentioned by Tacitus as having been one of two witnesses who were present at the conferences between Vitellius and Flavius Sabinus, the elder brother of Vespasian, when the legions from the East wore marching rapidly on the capital. The life of Silius after his consulship is well depicted by the younger Pliny:—" He conducted himself wisely and courteously as the friend of the luxurious and cruel Vitellius; he won repute by his proconsulship of Asia, and obliterated by the praiseworthy use he made of his leisure the stain he had incurred through his active exertions in former days. In dignity and content- ment, avoiding power and therefore hostility, he outlived the Flavian dynasty, keeping to a private station after his governorship of Asia." His poem contains only two passages relating to the Flavians; in both Domitian is eulogized as a warrior ; in one he figures as a singer whose lyre is sweeter than that of Orpheus himelf. Silius had evidently little taste for bowing down in the house of Rimmon, and refrained from using the many opportunities which his epic afforded for humouring the vanity of the imperial house. He was a great student and patron of literature and art, and a passionate collector. Two great Romans of the past, Cicero and Virgil, were by him idealized and veritably worshipped; and he was the happy possessor of their estates at Tusculum and Naples. 'The later life of Silius was passed on the Campanian shore, hard by the tomb of Virgil, at which he offered the homage of a devotee. He closely emulated the lives of his two great heroes: the one he followed in composing epic verse, the other in debating philosophic questions with his friends of like tastes. Among these was Epictetus, who judged him to be the most philosophic spirit among the Romans of his time, and Cornutus, the Stoic, rhetorician, and grammarian, who appropriately dedicated to Silius a commentary upon Virgil. Thongh the verse of Silius is not wrapped in Stoic gloom like that of Lucan, yet Stoicism lends in many places a not ungraceful gravity to his poem. Silius

was one of the numerous Romans of the early empire who had the courage of their opinions, and carried into perfect practice the theory of suicide adopted by their school. Stricken by an incurable disease, he starved himself to death, keeping a

cheerful countenance to the end.

Whether Silius committed to writing his philosophic dialogues or not, we cannot say. Chance has preserved to us his epic poem entitled Punica, in seventeen books, and coinprising some fourteen thousand lines, The epics of Silius, Lucan, Statius, and Valerius Flaccus are but a few waifs carried down to us by the wander- ing stream of time from the vast mass of post-Virgilian cpics. Long before Silius bethought himself of his epic all possible historical and mythological themes had been worn to tatters by these poets. In choosing the Second Punic War for his subject, Silius had, we know, many predecessors, as he doubtless had many followers. From the time of Nevius onwards every great military struggle in which the Romans had been engaged had found its poet over and over again. In justice to Silius and Lucan, it should be observed that the mythologic poet had a far easier task than the historic. Ina well-known passage Petronius pointedly describes the difficulties of the historic theme. A poet, he said, who should take upon him the vast subject of the civil wars would break down bencath the burden unless he were “ full of learning,” since he would have not merely to record facts, which the historians did much better, but must possess an unshackled

siLiwvs

genius, to which full course must be given by the use of digressions, by bringing divine beings on to the stage, and by giving generally a mythologic tinge to the subject. The Latin laws of the historic epic were fixed by Ennius, and were still binding when Claudian wrote. They were never seriously infringed, except by Lncan, who substituted for the det ex machina of his predecessors the vast, dim, and imposing Stoic conception of destiny. By protracted applica- tion, and being (to use the significant phrase of Petronius) “ full of learning,” Silius had acquired excellent recipes for every ingredient that went to the making of the conventional historic epic. Though he is not named by Quintilian, he is probably hinted at in the mention of a class of poets who, as the writer says, “write to show

their learning. ”» To scize the moments in the history, however unimportant, which were capable of pic- turesque treatment; to pass over all events, however important, which could not readily be rendered into heroics ; to stuff out the somewhat modern heroes to something like Homeric proportions ; to subject all their movements to the passions and caprices of the Olympians; toransack the poetry of the past for incidents and similes on which a slightly new face might be put ; to foist in by well-worn artifices episodes, however strange to the subject, taken from the mythologic or historic glories of Rome and Greece,—all this Silius knew how to do, as he knew his own fingers and nails. He did it all with the languid grace of the inveterate connoisscur, and with a simplicity forcign to his time, which sprang in part from cultivated taste and horror of the venturesome word, and in part from the subducd tone of a life which had come unscathed through the reigns of Caligula, Nero, and Domitian. The more thread- bare the theme, and the more worn the machinery, the greater the need of gcnius. Two of the most rigid requirements of the ancient epic were abundant similes aud abundant single combats. But all the obvious resemblances between the actions of heroic man and external nature had long been worked out, while for the renovation of the single combat little could be done till the hero of the Homeric type was replaced by the medieval knight. Silius, however, had perfeet poetic appreciation, with scarce a trace of poetic crcativeness. No writcr has ever been more correctly and more uniformly judged by contemporaries and by posterity alike. Only the shameless flatterer, Martial, ventured to call his friend a poet as great as Virgil. But the younger Pliny gently says that he wrote poems with greater diligence than talent, and that, when, according to the fashion of the time, he recited them to his friends, “ he sometimes found out what men really thought of them.” It is indeed strange that the poem lived on. Silius is never mentioned by ancient writers aftcr Pliny except Sidonius, who, under different conditions and at a much lower level, was such another as he. Since the discovery of Silius by Poggio, no modern enthusiast has arisen to sing luis praises, and in the last sixty years he has found no editor, even for his text. LKighteenth-century editors, at a time when modern Silii were numerous in the field of litcrature and more fashionable than they have been since, found in the Punica passages not unworthy of comparisou with the Henriade, and thought that Silius did not disgrace Virgil ; but even such

gentle commendation is not likely to be repeated again. Yet, by the ey of his taste and his Latin in an age when taste was fast

eeoming vicious and Latin corrupt, by his presentation to us of a type of a thousand vanished Latin epics, and by the historic aspects of his subject, Silius merits better treatment from scholars than he has received. The general reader he can hardly interest again. He is indeed of imitation all compact, and usually dilutes what he borrows ; he may add a new beauty, but new strength he never gives. Hardly a dozen lines anywhere are without an echo of Virgil, and there are frequent admixtures of Lucretius, Horace, Ovid, Lucan, Homer, Hesiod, and many other poets still cxtant. If we could reconstitute the library of Silius we should probably find that scarcely an idca or a phrase in his entire work was wholly his own.

The raw material of the Punica was supplicd in the main by the third decade of Livy, though Silius may have consulted other historians of the Hannibalic war. Such facts as are used are generally presented with their actual circumstances unchanged, and in their historic sequence. The spirit of the Punic times is but rarely miusconceived,—as when to sccret voting is attributed the election of men like Flaminius and Varro, and distinguished

omans are depicted as contending in a gladiatorial exhibition. Silius clearly intended the poem to consist of twenty-four books, like the Tliad and the Odyssey, but after the twelfth he hurries in visible weariness to the end and concludes with seventeen. The general plan of the epic follows that of the Iliad and the Aneid. Its theme is conceived as a duel between two mighty nations, with parallel dissensions among the gods. Scipio and Hannibal are the two great heroes who take the place of Achilles and Hector on the one hand and of Aneas and Turnus on the other, while the ininor figures are all painted with Virgilian or Homeric Pigments. In the delineation of character our poet is neither very powerful nor very consistent. His imagination was too weak to realize the actors with distinetness and individuality, His

POa2uicuvus

Oo

Hannibal is evidently at the outset meant for an incarnation of cruelty and treachery, the embodiment of all that the vulgar Roman attached to the name ‘‘ Punic.” But in the course of the poem the greatness of Hannibal is borne in upon the poet, and his feeling of it betrays itself in many touches. Thus he names Scipio ‘‘the great Hannibal of Ausonia’”’; he makes Juno assure the Carthaginian leader that if fortune had only permittcd him to be born a Roman he would have been admitted to a place among the gods; and, when the ungenerous monster of the first book accords in the fifteenth a splendid burial to Marcellus, the poet cries, “You would fancy it was a Sidonian chief who had fallen.” Silius deserves little pity for the failure of his attempt to make Scipio an equipoise to Hannibal and the coun- terpart in personal prowess and prestige of Achilles. He becomes in the process almost as mythical a figure as the medixval Alexander. The best drawn of the minor characters are Fabius Cunctator, an evident copy of Lucan’s Cato, and Paullus, the consul killed at Cann, who fights, hates, and dies like a genuine man.

Clearly it was a mattcr of religion with Silius to repeat and adapt all the striking episodes of Homer and Virgil. Hannibal must have a shield of marvellous workmanship like Achilles and Aineas ; because Aineas descended into Hades and had a vision of the future history of Rome, so must Scipio have his revelation from heaven; Trebia, choked with bodies, must rise in ire like Xanthus, and be put to flight by Vulcan ; for Virgil’s Camilla there must be an Asbyte, heroine of Saguntum; the beautiful speech of Euryalus when Nisus seeks to leave him is too good to be thrown away, —furbished up a little, it will serve as a parting address from Imilce to her husband Hannibal. The descriptions of the numerous battles are made up in the main, according to epic rule, of single combats—wcarisome sometimes in Homer, wearisome oftener in Virgil, painfully wearisome in Silius. The different component parts of the poem are on the whole fairly well knit together, and the transitions are not often needlessly abrupt; yct oecasionally incidents and episodes are introduced with all the irrelevancy of the modern novel. A son of Regulus escapes from Thrasyinene to a hut, merely to find there an old servant of his father, and to afford him the opportunity of telling over again the tale of the first war against the Carthaginians. To give scope for a eulogy of Cicero, an aucestor of his fights at Canne, and strong devices sometimes usher in such stories as the

judginent of Paris and the choice of Hercules. The interposition of the gods is, however, usually managed with dignity and appro- priateness.

As to diction and detail, we miss, in general, power rather than taste. The metre runs on with correct smooth monotony, with something always of the Virgilian sweetness, though attenuated, but nothing of the Virgilian variety and strength. The dead level of literary execution is seldom broken by a rise into the region of genuine pathos and beauty, or by a descent into the ludicrous or the repellent. There are few absurdities, but the restraining forco is trained perception and not a native sense of humour, which, ever present in Homer, not entirely absent in Virgil, and some- times finding grim expression in Lucan, fails Silius entirely. The address of Anna, Dido's sister, to Juno compels a smile. Though deified on her sister's death, and for a good many centuries already an inhabitant of heaven, Anna meets Juno for the first time on the outbreak of the Second Punic War, and deprecates the anger of the queen of heaven for having deserted the Carthaginians and attached herself to the Roman cause. Hannibal's parting address to his child is also comical : he recognizes in the " heavy wailing" of the year-old babe " the seeds of rages like his own." But Silins might have been forgiven for a thousand more weaknesses than he has if in but a few things he had shown strength. The grandest scenes in the history before him fail to lift him up; his treatment, for example, of Hannibal's Alpine passage falls immensely below Lucan's vigorous delineation of Cato's far less stirring march across the African deserts.

But in the very weaknesses of Silius we may discern merit. He at least does not try to conceal defects of substance by contorted rhetorical conceits and feebly forcible exaggerations. In his ideal of what Latin expression should be he comes near to his con- temporary Quintilian, and resolutely holds aloof from the tenor of his age. Perhaps his want of success with the men of his time was not wholly due to his faults. His self-control rarely fails him; it stands the test of the horrors of war, and of Venus working her will on Hannibal at Capua. The reader of Statius and even Propertius will be thankful for the rarity of recondite epithcts, such as " Rhoetean destiny," ''Garamantian standards," "Lagean river," '"'Smyrnean strings." Only a few passages here and there betray the true silver Latin extravagance, as when Hannibal is compared for speed to a tigress reft of her cubs, which

darts forth and in a few hours traverses the Caucasus, and with a ‘‘ winged ” leap flies across the Ganges ; or when the Cartha- ginians after Capna launch their spears but are too enervated to make them whiz; or when the plague-stricken and famine-

wasted men of Syracuse hide their diminished faces far within their helmcts, and carefully shade their pallor lest hope should arise for the enemy. In the avoidance of rhetorical artifice and epigrammatic antithesis Silius stands in marked contrast to Lucan. Yet he can be pointed ; so of Fabius, ‘‘laudum cladumque quieta Mente capax”; and of Scevola, ‘‘Aspera semper amans et par cuicumque periclo”; and of Africa, ‘‘ Altrix bellorum bellatorumque virorum Tellus, nec fidens nudo sine fraudibus ensi.” Looking at Silius merely as a poet he may not deserve high praise ; but, as he is a unique specimen and probably the best of a once numerous

SI

ILK is a fibrous substance produced by many insects, principally in the form of a cocoon or covering within which the creatures are enclosed and protected during the period of their principal transformations. The webs and nests, dc., formed by spiders are also of silk. But the fibres used for manufacturing purposes are exclusively pro- duced by the mulberry silk-moth of China, Bombyx mori, and a few other moths closely allied to that insect (see vol. iv. p. 596). Among the Chinese the name of the silk- worm is “si,” Corean “soi”; to the ancient Greeks it became known as onp, the nation whence it came was to them Sijpes, and the fibre itself onpixdv, whence the Latin sericum, the French sote, the German Seide, and the Eng- lish sik.

The silk industry originated in China; and according to native records it has existed there from a very remote period. The empress Se-ling-she, wife of a famous emperor, Hwang-te (2640 B.c.), encouraged the cultivation of the mulberry tree, the rearing of the worms, and the reeling of silk. This empress is said to have devoted herself personally to the care of silkworms, and she is by the Chinese credited with the invention of the loom. A voluminous ancient literature testifies not only to the antiquity but also to

the importance of Chinese sericulture, and to the care and attention bestowed on it by royal and noble families. The Chinese guarded the secrets of their valuable art with vigilant jealousy ; and there is no doubt that many centuries passed before the culture spread be- yond the country of its origin. Through Corea a know- ledge of the silkworm and its produce reached Japan, but not before the early part of the 3d century. One of the most ancient books of Japanese history, the Vihongi, states that towards 300 a.p. some Coreans were sent from Japan to China to engage competent people to teach the arts of weaving and preparing silk goods. They brought with them four Chinese girls, who instructed the court and the people in the art of plain and figured weaving; and to the honour of these pioneer silk weavers a temple was erected in the province of Setsu. Great efforts were made to encourage the industry, which from that period grew into one of national importance. At a period probably little later a knowledge of the working of silk travelled west- ward, and the cultivation of the silkworm was established in India. According to a tradition the eggs of the insect and the seed of the mulberry tree were carried to India by a Chinese princess concealed in the lining of her headdress. The fact that sericulture was in India first established in the valley of the Brahmaputra and in the tract lying between that river and the Ganges renders it probable that it was introduced overland from the Chinese empire. From the Ganges valley the silkworm was slowly carried westward and spread in Khotan, Persia, and the states of Central Asia.

Most critics recognize in the obscure word dmeshek, Amos iii. 12, a name of silk corresponding to the Arabic dimaks, late Greek péraga, English damask, and also follow the ancients in understanding meshi, Ezek. xvi. 10, 13, of “silken gauze.” But the first notice of the silkworm in

class, the preservation of his poem among the remains of*Latin literature is a fortunate accident.

The poet’s full name, Ti. Catius Silius Italicus, is preserved in an inscription (C. Z. £., vi. 1984). The poem was discovered in a MS., possibly at Constance, by Poggio, in 1416 or 1417 ; from this now lost MS. all existing MSS., which belong entirely to the 15th century, are derived. A valuable MS. of the 8th or 9th century, found at Cologne by L. Carrion in the latter

part of the 16th century disappeared soon after its discovery. Two editiones principes appeared at Rome in 1471 ; the principal editions since have been those of Heinsius (1600), Draken- borch (1717), and Ernesti (Leipsic, 1791). A useful variorum edition is that of Lemaire (Paris, 1823). The recent lucubrattones on Silius are mostly small pamphlets, enumerated by Engelmann (Bid. Script. Class., 1878). (J. 8S. RB.)

LK

Western literature occurs in Aristotle, Hvst. Anim., v. 19 (17), 11 (6), where he speaks of “a great worm which has horns and so differs from others. At its first meta- morphosis it produces a caterpillar, then a bombylius, and lastly a chrysalis,—all these changes taking place within six months. From this animal women separate and reel off the cocoons and afterwards spin them. It is said that this was first spun in the island of Cos by Pamphile, daughter of Plates.” Aristotle’s vague know- ledge of the worm may have been derived from informa- tion acquired by the Greeks with Alexander the Great; but long before this time raw silk must have begun to be imported at Cos, where it was woven into a gauzy tissue, the famous Coa vestis, which revealed rather than clothed the form.

Towards the beginning of the Christian era raw silk began to form an important and costly item among the prized products of the East which came to Rome. Allu- sions to silk and its source became common in classical literature ; but, although these references show familiarity with the material, they are singularly vague and inaccurate

as to its source; even Pliny knew nothing more about the

silkworm than could be learned from Aristotle’s description. The silken textures which at first found their way to Rome were necessarily of enormous cost, and their use by men was deemed a piece of effeminate luxury. From an anec- dote of Aurelian, who neither used silk himself nor would allow his wife to possess a single silken garment, we learn that silk was worth its weight in gold.

Notwithstanding its price and the restraints otherwise put on the use of silk the trade grew. Under Justinian a monopoly of the trade and manufacture

was reserved to the emperor, and looms, worked by women, were set up within the imperial palace at Constantinopie. Justinian also endeavoured, through the Christian prince of Abys- sinia, to divert the trade from the Persian route along which silk was then brought into the east of Europe. In this he failed, but two Persian monks who had long resided in China, and there learned the whole art and mystery of silkworm rearing, arrived at Constantinople and imparted their knowledge to the emperor. By him they were induced to return to China and attempt to bring to Europe the material necessary for the cultivation of silk, which they effected by concealing the eggs of the silkworm in a hollow cane. From the precious contents of that bamboo tube, brought to Constantinople about the year 550, were produced all the races and varieties of silkworm which stocked the Western world, and which gave trade, prosperity, and untold wealth to great communities for more than twelve hundred years. The necessity for again going to the East for a supply of silkworm eggs has only arisen in our own day.

Under the care of the Greeks the silkworm took kindly to its Western home and flourished, and the silken textures of Byzantium became famous. At a later period the conquering Saracens obtained a mastery over the trade, and by them it was spread both east and west,— the textures becoming meantime impressed with the

patterns and colours peculiar to that people. They established the trade in the thriving towns of Asia Minor, and they planted it as far west as Sicily, as Sicilian silks of the 12th century with Saracenic patterns still testify. Ordericus Vitalis, who died in the first half of the 12th century, mentions that the bishop of St Evroul, in Normandy, brought with him from Apulia in southern Italy several large pieces of silk, out of the finest of which four copes were made for his cathedral chanters. The cultivation and manufacture spread northwards to Florence, Milan, Genoa, and Venice—all towns which became famous for silken textures in medieval times. In 1480 silk weaving was begun under Louis XI. at Tours, and in 1520 Francis I. brought from Milan silkworm eggs, which were reared in the Rhone valley. About the beginning of the 17th century Olivier de Serres and Laffémas, somewhat against the will of Sully, obtained royal edicts favouring the

growth of mulberry plantations and the cultivation of silk; but it cannot be said that these industries were firmly established till Colbert encouraged the planting of the mulberry by premiums, and otherwise stimulated local efforts.

Into England silk manufacture was introduced during the reign of Henry VI.; but the first serious impulse to manufactures of that class was due to the immigration in 1585 of a large body of skilled Flemish weavers who fled from the Low Codntries in consequence of the struggle with Spain then devastating their land. Precisely one hundred years later religious troubles again gave the second and most effective impetus to the silk-trade of England, when the revocation of the edict of Nantes sent simultaneously to Switzerland, Germany, and England a vast body of the most skilled artisans of France, who planted in these countries silk-weaving colonies which are to this day the principal rivals of the French manufac- turers. The bulk of the French Protestant weavers settled at Spitalfields, London,—an incorporation of silk throwsters having been there formed in 1629. James I. used many efforts to encourage the planting of the mulberry and the rearing of silkworms both at home and in the colonies. In 1825 a public company was formed and incorporated under the name of the British, Irish, and Colonial Silk Company, with a capital of £1,000,000, principally with the view of introducing sericulture into Ireland, but it was a complete failure, and the rearing of the silkworm cannot be said ever to have become a branch of British industry.

In 1522 Cortes appointed officials to introduce sericul- ture into New Spain (Mexico), and mulberry trees were then planted and eggs were brought from Spain. The Mexican adventure is mentioned by Acosta, but all trace of the culture had died out before the end of the century. In 1609 James I. attempted to reinstate the silkworm on the American continent, but his first effort failed through shipwreck. An effort made in 1619 obtained greater success, and, the materials being present, the Virginian settlers were strongly urged to devote attention to the profitable industry of silk cultivation. Sericulture was enjoined under penalties by statute ; it was encouraged by bounties and rewards ; and its prosecution was stimulated by learned essays and rhapsodical rhymes, of which this is a sample :—

Where Wormes and Food doe naturally abound

A gallant Silken Trade must there be found.

Virginia excels the World in both—

Envie nor malice can gaine say this troth ! In the prospectus of Law's great Compagnie des Indes Occidentales the cultivation of silk occupies a place among the glowing attractions which allured so many to disaster. Onward till the period of the War of Independence

o7

bounties and other rewards for the rearing of worms and silk filature continued to be offered; and just when the war broke out Benjamin Franklin and others were engaged in nursing a filature into healthy life at Philadelphia. With the resumption of peaceful enterprise, the stimulus of bounties was again applied—first by Connecticut in 1783 ; and such efforts have been continued sporadically down almost to the present day. Bounties were last offered by the State of California in 1865-66, but the State law was soon repealed, and an attempt to obtain State encourage- ment again in 1872 was defeated. About 1838 a specu- lative mania for the cultivation of silk developed itself with remarkable severity in the United States. It was caused principally through the representations of Samuel Whitmarsh as to the capabilities of the South Sea Islands mulberry (Morus multicaulis) for feeding silkworms; and so intense was the excitement that plants and crops of all kinds were displaced to make room for plantations of multicaulis. In Pennsylvania as much as $300,000 changed hands for plants in one week, and frequently the young trees were sold two and three times over within a few days at ever-advancing prices. Plants of a single year's growth reached the ridiculous price of $1 each at the height of the fever, which, however, did not last long, for in 1839 the speculation collapsed; the famous Morus multicaulis was found to be uo golden tree, and the costly plantations were uprooted.

The most singular feature in connexion with the history of silk is the persistent efforts which have been made by monarchs and other potentates to stimulate sericulture within their dominions, efforts which continue to

this day in British colonies, India, and America. These endeavours to stimulate by artificial means have in scarcely any instance resulted in permanent success. In truth raw silk can only be profitably brought to the market where there is abundant and very cheap labour,—the fact that China, Japan, Bengal, Piedmont, and the Levant are the principal producing localities making that plain.

The Silkworm.

The mulberry-feeding moth, Bombyx mori, which is the principal source of silk, belongs to the Bombycidzx, a family of Lepidoptera in which are embraced some of the ‘ largest and most hand- some moths (see vol. iv. p 596). B. mori is itself an inconspicuous moth (figs. 1 and 2) of an ashy white colour, with a body in the case of the male not half an inch in length, the female being a little longer and stouter. Its wings are short and weak ; the fore pair are falcate, and the hind pair do not reach to the end of the body. The larva (fig. 3) is hair-{- a less, of an ashy grey or by Gee cream colour, attains ‘\ to a length of from 3 XK to 34 inches, and is slender in comparison §{-~; with many of its allies. The second thoracic ring is humped, and there is a spine-like horn or protuberance at the tail The common silkworm produces as a rule only one generation

during the year; but there are races in cultivation which XXII. — 8

Hin Fig. 1.—Bombyx mori (male).

-

a tw

Fie. 2.—Bombyx mori (female).

58

are bivoltine, or two-generationed, and some are multi- voltine. Its natural food is the leaves of mulberry trees. The silk glands or vessels consist of two long thick-walled

sacs running along the sides of the body, AY which open by a common orifice—the iM spinneret or seripositor—on the under lip f (Lay

of the larva. Fig. 4 represents the head (a) al SY

and feet (2,) of the common silkworm, | 3 while ¢ is a dia- grammatic view of the silk glands. As the larva ap- proaches maturity __ these vessels be- come gorged with

a clear viscous fluid, which, upon being exposed to the air immediately hardens to a solid mass. Advantage is taken

Le

Fig. 3.—Larva of Bombyx mori.

of this peculiarity to prepare from fully-developed larvee silkworm gut used for casting lines in rod-fishing, and for numerous other purposes where lightness, tenacity, flexibility, and strength are essential. The larve are killed and hardened by steeping some hours in strong acetic acid; the silk glands are then separated from the bodies, and the viscous fluid drawn out to the condition of a fine uniform line, which is stretched between pins at the extremity of a board. The board is then exposed to the sunlight till the lines dry and harden into the condition of gut. The preparation of gut is, however, merely an unimportant collateral manufacture. When the larva is fully mature, and ready to change into the pupa condition, it proceeds to spin its cocoon, in which operation it ejects from both glands simultaneously a line or thread about 4000 yards in length, moving its head round in regular order continuously for three days or thereby. The thread so ejected a forms the silk of com- merce, which as wound in the cocoon consists of two filaments —one from each gland—laid side by side and agglutinated into one fibre (Fr. bave) by their own adhesive constituents. Under the microscope, _ therefore, cocoon silk presents the appearance (fig. 5) of a somewhat flattened com- bination of two filaments placed side by side, being on an average from ‘033 to ‘036 mm. broad by ~~020 to 025 mm. in thickness. The cocoons are white or yellow in colour, oviform in shape, with often a constriction in the middle (fig. 6). According to race, &c., they vary con~~

Fie. 5.—Microscopic appearance of Silk of Bombyx mori.

siderably in size and weight, but onan average they measure _

from an inch to an inch and a half in length, and from half an inch to an inch in diameter. They form hard, firm, and compact shells with some straggling flossy filaments on the exterior, and the interior layers are so closely and densely agglutinated as to constitute a | parchment-like mass which resists all attempts at unwinding. The whole cocoon | with its enclosed pupa weighs from 15 [grains for the smaller races to about 50 | grains for the breeds which spin large cocoons. From two to three weeks after the completion of the cocoon the enclosed insect is ready to escape; it moistens one end of its self-made prison, thereby enabling itself to push aside the fibres and make an opening by which the perfect moth comes forth. The sexes almost

Fie. 6.—Cocoon of Bombyx mori,

-immediately couple; the female in from four to six days lays

her eggs, numbering 500 and upwards ; and, with that the life cycle of the moth being complete, both sexes soon die.

Sericulture.

The art of sericulture concerns itself with the rearing of silkworme under artificial or domesticated conditions, their feeding, the formation of cocoons, the securing of these before they are injured and pierced by the moths, and the maturing of a sufficient number of moths to supply eggs for the cultivation of the following year. The first essential is a stock of mulberry trees adequate to feed the worms in their larval stage. The leaves preferred in Europe are those of the white-fruited mulberry, Morus alba, but there are numerous other species which appear to be equally suitable. The soil in which the mulberry grows, and the age and condition of the trees, are important factors in the success of silkworm cultivation ; and it has been too often proved that the mulberry will grow in situations where, from the

nature of the leaf the trees put forth and from other circumstances, silkworms cannot be profitably reared. An elevated position with dry friable well-drained soil produces the best quality of leaves. Throughout the East the species of mulberry cultivated are numerous, but, as these trees have been grown for special purposes at least for three thousand years, they show the complex variations peculiar to most cultivated plants.

The eggs of the silkworm, called gramme, are hatched out by artificial heat at the period when the mulberry leaves are ready for the feeding of the larva. These eggs are very minute—about one hundred weighing a grain; and a vast number of hatched worms may at first be kept in a small space ; but the rapid growth and voracious appetite of the caterpillars demand quickly increasing and ample space. Pieces of paper punctured with small holes are placed over the trays in which the hatching goes on ; and the worms, immediately they burst their shell, creep through these openings to the light, and thereby scrape off any fragments of shell which, adhering to their skin, would kill them by constriction. The rearing-house in which the worms are fed (Fr. magnaneric) must be a spacious, well- lighted, and well-ventilated apartment, in which scrupulous cleanliness and sweetness of air are essential, and in which the temperature may to a certain extent be under control. The worms are more hardy than is commonly supposed, and endure variations of temperature from 62° to 78 F. without any injury; but higher temperature is very detrimental. The lower the temperature at which the worms are maintained the slower is their growth and development ; but their health and vigour are increased, and the cocoon they spin is proportionately bigger. The

worms increase in size with astonishing rapidity, and no less remarkable is their growing voracity. Certain races moult or cast their skin three times during their larval existence, but for the most part the silkworm moults four times—about the sixth, tenth, fifteenth, and twenty-third days after hatching. As these moulting periods approach, the worms lose their appetite and cease eating, and at each period of change they are left undisturbed and free from noise. The worms from 1 oz. of graine—numbering, say, 40,000 —consume in their first stage about 6 tb of picked leaf, in the second 18 fb,

in the third 60 ib, fourth 180 bh, and in their final stage 1098 tb,— in all 1362 tb of mul- berry leaf ; but from that is to be deducted about 590 tb of unconsumed fragments removed in the litter, giving of leaf really consumed 772 tb. An ounce of graine so treated may yield from 80 to 120 ib of cocoons, 85 per cent. of which consists of the weight of chrysalides and 15 per cent. of pure cocoon. The growth of the worms during their larval stage is thus stated by Count Dandolo :—

Weight per 100, Size in Lines. Worms newly hatched…..... 1 gr. 1 RPCITIAG TOUT o.oo. ses cee penseo ns Tos, 4 Eg fncvveesyess speeds 94; 6 SORE gsc has eahess 3s nb0% 400 ,, 12 a 1628 ,, 20 Greatest weight and size…..... 9500 ,, 40

When the caterpillars are mature and ready to undergo their transformation into the pupa condition, they cease eating for some time and then begin to ascend the brush- wood branches or echelletes provided for them, in which they set about the spinning of their cocoons. Crowding of positions must now be guarded against, to prevent the spinning of double cocoons (dowbions) by two worms spin- ning together and so interlacing their threads that they cannot be reeled. The insects complete their cocoons in from three to four days, and in two or three days there- after the cocoons are collected, and the pupa killed to prevent its further progress and the bursting of the shell by the fully developed moth. Such cocoons as are selected for the production of graine, on the other hand, are col- lected, freed from the external floss, and preserved at a temperature of from 66° to 72° Fahr., and after a lapse of from eleven to fifteen days the moths begin to make their appearance. The coupling which immediately takes place demands careful attention ; the males are afterwards thrown away, and the impregnated females placed in a darkened apartment till they deposit their eggs.

Diseases.—That the silkworm is subject to many and serious diseases is only to be expected of a creature which for upwards of 4000 years has been propagated under purely artificial condi- tions, and these most frequently of a very insanitary nature, and where, not the healthy life of the insect, but the amount of silk it could be made to yield was the object of the cultivator. Among the most fatal and disastrous of these diseases with which the culti- vator had long to grapple was “ muscardine,” a malady due to the

development ofa fungus, Botrytis bassiana, in the body of the cater- pillar. The disease is peculiarly contagious and infectious, owing to the development of the fungus through the skin, whence spores are freed, which, coming in contact with healthy caterpillars, fasten on them and germinate inwards, giving off corpuscles within the body of the insect. Muscardinc, however, has not been epidemic for inany years. But about the year 1853 anxious attention began to be given in France to the ravages of a disease among silkwornis, which from its alarming progress threatened to issue in national disaster. This disease, which at a later period became known as ‘ pebrine,” —a name given to it by M. de Quatrefages, one of its many-in- vestigators,—had first been noticed in France at Cavaillon in the valley of the Durance near Avignon. Pebrine manifests itself by dark spots in the skin of the larvex ; the eggs do not hatch out, or hatch imperfectly; the worms are weak, stunted, and unequal in growth, languid in movement, fastidious in feeding ; many perish before coming to maturity ; if they spin a cocoon it is soft and loose, and moths when developed are fecble and inactive. When sufficient vitality remains to produce a second generation it shows

) with its devastating action.

oO”

in increased intensity the feebleness of the preceding. The disease is thus hereditary, but in addition it is virulently infectious and contagious. From 1850 onwards French cultivators were com- pelled, in order to keep up their silk supply, to import graine from uninfected districts. The area of infection increased rapidly, and with that the demand for healthy graine correspondingly expanded, while the supply had to be drawn from increasingly remote and contracted regions. Partly supported by imported eggs, the production of silk in France was maintained, and in 1853 reached its maximum of 26,000,000 kilos of cocoons, valued at 117,000,000 frances. From that period, notwithstanding the importation at great cost of foreign graine, reaching in some years to 60,000 kilos, the production of silk fell off with startling rapidity : in 1856 it was not more than 7,500,000 kilos of cocoons ; in 1861 and 1862 it fell as low as 5,800,000 kilos ; and in 1865 it touched its lowest weight of about 4,000,000 kilos. In 1867 De

Quatrefages estimated the loss suffered by France in the 13 years following 1853, from decreased production of silk and price paid to foreign cultivators for graine, to be not less than one milliard of francs. In the case of Italy, where the disease showed itself later but even more disastrously, affecting a much more extended industry, the loss. in 10 years De Quatrefages stated at two milliards. A loss of £120, 000,000 sterling within 13 years, falling on a limited area, and on one class within these two countries, constituted indeed a calamity on a national scale, calling for national effort to contend The malady, moreover, spread east- ward with alarming rapidity, and, although it was found to be less disastrous and fatal in Oriental countries than in Europe, the sources of healthy graine became fewer and fewer, till only Japan was left as an uninfected source of European graine supply.

A scourge which so seriously menaced the very existence of the silkworm in the world necessarily attracted a great amount of attention. The disease was studied by the most eminent men of science ; reports and suggestions innumerable were made, and a whole pharmacopceia of remedies proposed. So early as 1849 M. Guérin Méneville observed in the blood of diseased silkworms cer- tain vibratory corpuscles, but neither did he nor the Italian Signor Filippi, who studied them later, connect them distinctly with the disease. The corpuscles were first accurately described by Signor Cornalia, whence they are spoken of as the corpuscles of Cornalia. The French Academy charged MM. de Quatrefages, Decaisne, and Peligot with the study of the disease, and these learned men issued two elaborate reports—LHtudes sur les Maladics Actuelles des Vers a Soie, 1859, and Nouvelles Recherches sur les Maladies Actuelles des Vers & Soie, 1860; but the suggestions they were able to offer had not the effect of stopping the march of the disease. In 1865 M. Pasteur undertook a Government commission for the investigation of the malady. Attention had been previously directed to the corpuscles of Cornalia, and it had been found, not only that they occurred in the blood, but that they gorged the whole tissues of the insect, and their presence in the eggs themselves could be microscopically demonstrated. Pasteur set himself to elucidate the life-history of these corpuscles, and he soon established (1) that the corpuscles are the special characteristic of the disease, and that these invariably manifest themselves, if not in earlier stages, then in the mature moths; (2) that the corpuscles are

parasites, and not only the sign but the cause of the disease; and (3) that the disease manifests itself by heredity, by contagion with diseased worms, and by the eating of leaves on which corpuscles are spread. In this connexion he established the very important practical con- clusion that worms which contract the disease during their own life-cycle retain sufficient vitality to feed, develop, and spin their cocoon, although the next generation is invariably infected and shows the disease in its most virulent and fatal form. But this fact enabled the cultivator to know with assurance whether the worms on which he bestowed his labour would yicld him a harvest of silk. He had only to examine the bodies of the moths yielding his graine: if they were free from disease then a crop was sure; if they were infected the education would assuredly fail. Pasteur brought out the fact that the malady had existed from remote periods and in many unsuspected localities. He found corpuscles in Japanese cocoons and in many specimens which had been pre- served for lengthened periods in public collections. Thus he came to the conclusion that the malady had been inherent in many suc- cessive generations of the silkworm, and that the epidemic condition was only an exaggeration of a normal state brought about by the method of cultivation and production of graine pursued. The cure proposed by Pasteur was simply to take care that the stock whence graine was obtained should be healthy, and the offspring would then be healthy also. Small educations reared apart from the ordinary magnanerie, for the production of graine alone, were re- commended. At intervals of five days after spinning their cocoons specimens were to be opened and the chrysalides examined micro- scopically for corpuscles. Should none have appeared till towards the period of transformation and escape of the moths, the eggs subsequently hatched out might be depended on to yicld a fair crop of silk; should the moths prove perfectly free from corpuscles

after depositing their eggs the next generation would certainly live well through the larval stage. For special treatment towards the regeneration of an infected race, the most robust worms were to be selected, and the moths issuing from the cocoons were to be coupled in numbered cells, where the female was to be confined till she deposited her eggs. The bodies of both male and female were to be examined for corpuscles, and the eggs of those

found absolutely frec from taint were preserved for similar ‘‘ cellular” treatment in the following year. By this laborious and painstaking method it has been found possible to re-establish a healthy stock of valuable races from previously highly-infected breeds. The rearing of worms in small educations under special supervision has been found to be a most effective means of combating pebrine. In the same way the rearing of worms for graine in the open air, and under as far as possible natural conditions, has proved equally valuable towards the development of a hardy, vigorous, and untainted stock. The open-air education was originally proposed by Dr Chavannes of Lausanne, and largely carried out in the canton of Vaud by M. Roland, who reared his worms on mulberry trees enclosed within ‘‘manchons” or cages of wire gauze and canvas. ‘The insects appeared quickly to revert to natural conditions; the moths brought out in open air were strongly marked, lively, and active, and eggs left on the trees stood the severity of the winter well, and hatched out successfully in the following season. M. Roland’s experience demonstrated that not cold but heat is the agent which saps the constitution of the silkworm and makes it a ready prey to disease. Wild Silks,—The ravages of pebrine and other diseases had the effect of attracting prominent attention to the numerous other insects, allies of the mulberry silkworm, which spin serviceable cocoons. It had been previously pointed out by Captain Hutton, who devoted great attention to the silk question as it affects the East Indies, that at least six species of Bombyx, differing from B. mort, but also mulberry-feeding, are more or less domesticated in India, These: include B. tex- tor, the boro- ~* pooloo of Ben- * gal, a_ large species having one gencration yearly and pro- ducing a soft flossy cocoon ; the Chinese monthly worm, B. sinensis, having several generations, and making a small cocoon; and the Madrasi worm of Bengal (B. cresi), the Dassee or Desi worm of Bengal (B. fortunatus), and B. arracanensis, the Burmese worm,—all of which yield several generations in the year and form reelable cocoons. Besides these there are many other mulberry-feeding Bombycidx in the East, principally belonging to the genera Theophila and Ocinara, the cocoons of which have not attracted cultivators. The moths yielding wild silks which have obtained most attention belong to the extensive and handsome family Saturnidew. The ji most important of the V species at the: present time is the Chinese tussur or tasar worm, Antherwa pernyt (figs. 7, 8), an oak- feeding species, native of

Mongolia, from which is derived the greater part of the so-called tussur silk now imported into

Fie. 7.—Chinese Tussur Moth, Antherea pernyt (male).

Europe. Closely allied to this is the Indian

tussur moth (fig. 9) An- therxa mylitta, found throughout the whole of India feeding on the bher tree, Zizyphus jujuba, and on many other plants. It yields a large compact cocoon (fig. 10) of a silvery grey colour, which Mr Thomas Wardle of Leek, who has devoted a great amount of attention to the wild-silk ques- tion, has succeeded in reeling. Next in promising qualities is the muga or moonga worm of Assam, Antherwa assama, a species to some extent domesticated in its native country. The yama-mai worm of Japan, Antherwa (Samia) yama-mai, an oak-feeder, is a race of considerable importance in Japan, where it was said to be jealously guarded against foreigners. Its eggs were first sent to Europe by M. Duchéne du Bellecourt, French eonsul-general in Japan in 1861; but early in March following they hatched out, when no leaves on which the larvee would feed were to be found. In April a single worm got oak-buds, on which it throve, and ulti-

Fig. 8.—Cocoon of Antherea pernyt.

_very notably towards each extremity.

mately spun a cocoon whence a female moth issued, from which M. Guérin Méneville named and described the species. A further supply of eggs was secretly obtained by a Dutch physician M. Pompe van Meedervoort in 1863, and, as it was now known that the worm was an oak-feeder, and would thrive on the leaves of European oaks, great results were anticipated from the cultivation of the yama-mai. These ex- pectations, however,

for various reasons, have been disap- pointed. The moths hatch out at a period when oak leaves are not ready for their feeding, and the silk is by no means of a quality to compare with that of the common mulberry worm. The mezan- koorie moth of the Assamese, Antherea mezankooria, yields a

valuable cocoon, as does also the Atlas moth, Attacus atlas, which has an omnivorous larva found throughout India, Ceylon, Burmah, China, and Java. The Cynthia moth, Attacus cynthia, is domesticated as a source of silk in certain provinces of China, where .. — it feeds on the Ailanthus glandulosa. The © erila or arrindi moth of Bengal and Assam, At- tacus ricint, which feeds on the castor-oil plant, yields seven generations yearly, forming loose flossy orange-red and sometinies white cocoons. The ailanthus silkworm of Europe is a hybrid between A. cynthia and A. ricini, first obtained by Guérin Méneville, and now spread through many silk-growing regions. These arc only a few of the moths from which silks of various useful- ness can be produced ; but none of these presents / qualities, saving perhaps cheapness alone, which /# can put them in competition with common silk. ff

Fig. 9.—Antherea mylitia (female).

Physical and Chemical Relations of Silk.

Common cocoons enclosing chrysalides weigh each from 16 to 50 grains, or say from 300 to 600 of small breeds and from 270 to 300 of large breeds to the ib. One- seventh of this weight is pure cocoon, and of that not more than one-half is obtainable as reeled silk, the remainder consisting of surface floss and of hard gummy- husk or "'knub." The total length of double thread or "bave" which the silk-worm winds into its cocoon may amount to 4000 yards; the quantity reelable therefrom rarely exceeds 900 yards, and may range from 330 to 650 yards. It is found that the reelable fibre is as a rule thickest and strongest at the middle portion, tapering down In 1885 Mr T. Wardle of Leek showed by an elaborate series of measure- ments that the transverse section of common silk double thread or bave measures on the average gig to yigq Mm. at the thinnest and from +}, to gf, in. at the thickest part, and in some instances the middle was one-third thicker, stronger, and more elastic than the ends. As a great deal of silk remains on the husk after reeling, it is obvious that the thread last emitted by the silkworms on the inner wall of the cocoons must be of extreme tenuity. The silk of the various species of Antherea and Attacus is also thicker and stronger at the centre of the reeled portion than towards its extremities; but the diameter is much greater

Fie. 10.—Cocoon of Antherea mylitia.

than that of common silk, and the filaments under the microscope (fig. 11) present the appearance of flat bands, the exudation from the two spinnerets being joined at their flat edges. On this account the fibres of tussur silk tend to split up into fine fibrillee under the various preparatory =~ processes in manufactur- ing, and its riband struc- ture is the cause of the glassy lustre peculiar to the woven and finished fibres.

Silk fibre consists = essentially of a centre or Fis. 11.—Mieroscopie appearanee of Silk of

‘ é Chinese Tussur.

core of fibroin, with a covering of sericin or silk albumen, and a little waxy and colouring matter. Fibroin, which is analogous to horn, hair, and like dermal products, constitutes about 66 per cent. of the entire mass, and has a composition represented by the formula C,,H.,N.O,. It has the characteristic appearance of pure silk,—a brilliant soft white body with a pearly lustre,—insoluble in water, alcohol, and ether, but it dis- solves freely in concentrated alkaline solutions, mineral acids, strong acetic acid, and in ammoniacal solution of oxide of copper. Sericin, which constitutes the gummy covering (Fr. gres) of the fibre, is a gelatinous body which dissolves readily in warm soapy solutions, and in hot water, in which on cooling it forms a jelly with even as little as 1 per cent. of the substance. It is precipitated from hot solutions by alcohol, falling as a white powder. Its formula is C,,H,,N,O, According to the researches of P. Bolley, the glands of the silkworm contain semi- liquid fibroin alone, and it is on exposure to the air that the surface is acted on by oxygen, transforming the ex- ternal pellicle into the more soluble form of sericin. Silk is highly hygroscopic, taking up as much as 30 per cent. of water without feeling perceptibly damp. It is a most perfect non-conductor of electricity, and in its dry state the fibres frequently get so electrically excited as to seriously interfere with their working, so that it becomes necessary to moisten them with glycerin or soapy solutions. Silk is readily distinguished from wool and other animal fibres by the action of an alkaline solution of oxide of lead, which darkens

wool, &c., owing to the sulphur they contain, but does not affect silk, which is free from that body. Again, silk dissolves freely in common nitric acid, which is not the case with wool. From vegetable fibres silk is readily distinguished by the bright yellow colour it takes from a solution of picric acid, which does not adhere to vegetable substances. The rod-like appearance of silk and its absence of markings under the microscope are also easily recognizable features of the fibre.

Silk Manufacture.

Here we must distinguish between the reeled silk and the spun or waste silk manufactures. The former embraces a range of operations peculiar to silk, dealing as they do with continuous fibres of great length, whereas in the spun silk industry the raw materials are treated by methods analogous to those followed in the treat- ment of other fibres. It is only floss, injured and un- reelable cocoons, the husks of reeled cocoons, and other waste from reeling, with certain wild silks, which are treated by the spun silk process, and the silk thereby produced loses much of the beauty, strength, and brilliance

are characteristic of the manufactures from reeled SUK,

61

Filature or Reeling.—When the cocoons have been gathered the chrysalides they contain are killed either by dry heat or by exposure to steam. All cocoons stained by the premature death of the chrysalides (chiques), pierced cocoons, double cocoons, and any from other causes rendered unreelable, are put aside for the spun- silk manufacture. Then the uninjured cocoons are by themselves sorted into classes having similar shades of colour, size, and quality of fibre. This assortment is of great consequence for the success of the recling opcrations, as uniformity of quality and evenness and regularity of fibre are the most valuable features in raw silk. ‘The object of reeling is to bring together the filaments (bave) from two or more (generally four or five, but sometimes up to twenty) cocoons, and to form them into one con- tinuous, uniform, and regular strand, which constitutes the ‘‘raw silk” of commerce. To do this, the natural gum of the cocoons which holds the filaments together must be softened, the ends of the filaments of the

required number of cocoons must be caught, and means must be taken to unwind and lay these filaments together, so as to form a single uniform rounded strand of raw silk. As the reeling proceeds the reeler has to give the most careful attention to the thickness of the strand being produced, and to introduce new cocoons in place of any from which the rcelable silk has become exhausted. In this way a continuous uniform fibre or strand of raw silk of indefinite length is produced. The apparatus used for these purposes in some localities is of a very primitive kind, and the reeling being uneven and lumpy the silk is of inferior quality and low value. With comparatively simple appliances, on the other hand, a skilled reeler, with trained eye and delicate touch, can produce raw silk of remarkably smooth and even quality. According to the method commonly adopted in North Italy and France the cocoons are for a few minutes immersed in water a little under the boiling point, to which a small quantity of alkali has been added. A girl witha small hand brush of twigs keeps stirring them in the water till the silk softens, and the outer loose fibres (floss) get entangled with the twigs and come off till the end of the main filament (mattre brin) is found. These ends being secured, the cocoons are transferred to a basin or tray containing water heated to from 75° to 85° Fahr., in which they float while the silk is being reeled off. If the water is too cold the gum does not soften enough and the cocoons rise out of the basin in reeling ; if it is too hot the cocoons collapse and fall to the bottom. The ends of the requisite number of filaments being brought together, they are passed through an eyelet or guide, and similarly another equal set are passed through a corresponding guide. The two sets of filaments are then crossed or twisted around each other several turns as if to make one thread, after which they are separated and passed through separate guides to the reel round which they are separately wound. When a large number of cocoons are to be combined into one strand they may be recled from the tray in four sets, which are first crossed in pairs, then combined into two, and those two then crossed and after- wards combined into a single strand. The object of erossing (eroissage) is to round, smooth, and condense the separate filaments of each set into one strand, and as the surface of the filaments are gummy and adhesive it is found on drying that they have agglutin- ated into a compact single fibre of raw silk. In the most approved modern filatures there is a separate cocoon boiler (cwisewse), an oblong tank containing water boiled by steain heat. In these the cocoons are immersed in rectangular perforated boxes for about three minutes, when

they are transferred to the beating machine (battewse), an earthenware trough having a perforated false bottom through which steam keeps the water at a temperature of from 140° to 160°. In this water the cocoons are kept stirring by small brushes rotated by mechanical means, and as the silk softens the brushes gradually rise out of the water, bringing entangled with them the loose floss, and thereby revealing the main filament of each cocoon. The cocoons are next, in sufficient number, trans- ferred to the reeler's tray (bacinella), where the water is heated to about 120°. From the tray the filaments arc carried through a series of porcelain and glass eyelets, so arranged that the strand returns on itself, two portions of the same strand being crossed or intertwisted for rounding and consolidation, instead of the croissage of two separate strands as in the old method. The reel to which the raw silk is led consists of a Hight six-armed frame, enclosed within a wooden casing having a glass frame in front, the enclosure being heated with stcam-pipes. 'To keep the strands from directly overlaying each other and so adhering, the last guide through which the silk passes has a reciprocating motion whereby the fibre is distributed within certain limits over the reel. A sectional view of the reeling apparatus and arrangements—now in common use in Italy—is shown in fig. 12.

Throwing.—Raw silk, being still too fine and delicate for ordin- ary use, next undergoes a series of operations called throwing, the object of which is to twist and double it into more substantial yarn. The first operation of the silk throwster is winding. He receives the raw silk in hanks as it is taken from the reel of the filature, and putting it on a light recl of a similar construction,

"= called the swifts, he winds it on bobbins with a rapid reciprocating

motion, so as to lay the fibre in diagonal lines. These bobbins are then in general taken to the first spinning frame, and there the single strands receive their first twist, which rounds them, and prevents the compound fibre from splitting up and separating when, by the subsequent scouring operations, the gum is removed

Fig. 12.

which presently binds them into one. Next follows the operation of cleaning, in which the silk is simply reeled from one bobbin to another, but on its way it passes through a slit which is sufficiently wide to pass the filament but stops the motion when a thick lump or nib is presented. In the doubling, which is the next process, two or more filaments are wound together side by side on the same reel, preparatory to their being twisted or thrown into one yarn. Bobbins to the number of strands which are to be twisted into one are mounted in a creel on the doubling frame, and the strands are passed over smooth rods of glass or metal through a reciprocating guide to the bobbin on which they are wound. Each separate strand passes through the eye of a faller, which, should the fibre break, falls down and instantly stops the machine, thus effectually calling attention to the fact that a thread has failed. The spin- ning or throwing which follows is done on a frame with upright spindles and flyers, the yarn as it is twisted being drawn forward through guides and wound on revolving bobbins with a reciprocat- ing motion. From these bobbins the silk is reeled into hanks of definite length for the market. Numerous attempts have been made to simplify the silk-throwing by combining two or more operations on one machine, but not as yet with much success.

According to the qualities of raw silk used and the throwing operations undergone the principal classes of thrown silk are—(1) “singles,” which consist of a single strand of twisted raw silk made up of the filaments of eight to ten cocoons; (2) tram or weft thread, consisting of two or three strands of raw silk not twisted before doubling and only lightly spun (this is soft, flossy, and comparatively weak); (3) organzine, the thread used for warps, made from two and rarely three twisted strands spun in the direction contrary to that in which they are separately twisted. Silks for sewing and embroidery belong to a different class from those intended for weaving, and thread-makers throw their raw silks in a manner peculiar to themselves.

Numbering of Silk. —The numbering (titrage) of raw and thrown silks, by which the size or fineness of the yarn is stated, is deter- mined by constant length with variable weight, whereas other yarns are indicated by constant weight with variable length. The original standard length was 9600 Paris ells=11,400 metres, the number being the weight in deniers of 24 grains=1°275 grammes. This still remains the most common standard, and

in practice the number is ascertained by the weight in grains, 4; of a denier of a hank containing 476 metres (properly 4753 metres =400 Paris ells). According to this standard a single cocoon filament weighs 2 to 3°5 deniers, a 8 to 4 cocoon strand ranges from 7 to 10 deniers, and a 16 or 17 cocoon strand is numbered from 48 to 52. Spun silk is numbered on a different principle. In the United Kingdom it is determined by the cotton standard, the number of skeins of 840 yards per tb. In Continental manufacturing centres generally the standard is the number of écheveaux of 500 metres contained in a half kilogramme, or, more simply, the number of kilometres per kilogramme. According to the resolution of the international congress for promoting uniformity in the numbering of yarns, held at Vienna in 1873 and at Brussels in 1874, the grade of silk ought now to be expressed by ten times the number of grammes given by a hank of 1000 metres.

| puts 4 certain amount of strain on the elastic fibre. | from the one reel to the other the silk is carried over an agate

These methods of indicating grades of silk give, however, only the most imperfect idea as to the quality of the thread; and specially they convey no information as to uniformity of diameter and strength. To test the raw material in respect of uniformity a most ingenious American invention, the serigraph, has been introduced, and is now largely used. The serigraph has two reels mounted on one spindle, or at least so arranged that they make precisely the same number of revolutions. The reels are covered with india-rubber, and No. 2 is 8 per cent. greater in cireum- ference than No. 1. The silk to be tested is placed on No. 1 reel and from that wound on No. 2, which, being of greater diameter, ln passing

hook attached to the bob of a pendulum, so that the strain on the yarn is communicated to the pendulum. The strain caused by the 3 per cent. tension of course varies with the strength of the yam to which it is applied, being greater with increased strength and thickness, and falling away just as the strength of the yam decreases, Thus the yarn in passing over the agate hook keeps by its tension the pendulum at one particular position while it is uniform, but when it increases in strength it raises the pendulum higher, and when it becomes weaker the pendulum falls. To the extremity of the

pendulum is attached a pencil or inarker, which traces on a web of ae travelling at a rate in fixed proportion to the winding, the changes in the pendulum, and thus is obtained a graphic record in a most distinct manner of every variation in the strength of the silk. The precise spot where any imperfection occurs is shown on the tracing, which thus not only absolutely certifies the quality of the yarn, but also automatically measures the quantity reeled.

Conditioning. —Silk in the raw and thrown state, as has already been pointed out, absorbs a large amount of moisture, and may contain from 20 to 30 per cent. of water without being manifestly damp. As it is largely sold by weight it becomes necessary to ascertain its condition in respect of absorbed water, and for that purpose official conditioning houses are established in all the con- siderable centres of silk trade. In these the silk is tested or con- ditioned, and a certificate of weight issued in accordance with the results. The silk is for four hours exposed to a dry heat of 280° Fahr., and immediately thereafter weighed. To the weight 11 per cent. is added as the normal proportion of water held by the fibre.

Scouring.—Up to this point the silk fibre continues to be com- paratively lustreless, stiff, and harsh, from the coating of albumin- ous matter (gum or gres) on its surface. Asa preliminary to most subsequent processes the removal of the whole or some portion of this gum is necessary by boiling-off, scouring, or decreusage. To boil off say 300 tb of thrown silk, about 60 Tb of fine white soap is shred, and dissolved in about 200 gallons of pure water. This solution is maintained at a heat of 195°, and in it the hanks of raw silk are immersed, hung on a wooden rod, the hanks being con- tinually turned round so as to expose all portions equally to the solvent influence of the hot solution. After being dried, the hanks are packed in linen bags and boiled for three hours in a weaker soapy solution, then washed out in pure warm water and dried ina centrifugal hydro-extractor. According to the amount of gum to be boiled off the soap solutions are made strong or weak; but care has to be exercised not to overdo the scouring, whereby loss of strength, substance, and lustre would result. For some purposes—making of gauzes, erapes, flour-bolting cloth, and for what is termed ‘‘souples”—the silk is not scoured, and for silks to be dyed certain dark colours half-scouring is practised. The perfect scouring of French silks removes from 25

to 27 per cent. of their weight, and Chinese silks lose from 30 to 31 per cent. Scouring renders all common silks, whether white or yellow in the raw, a brilliant pearly white, with a delicate soft flossy texture, from the fact that the fibres which were agglutinated in reeling, being now degummed, are separated from each other and show their individual tenuity in the yarn. Silks to be finished white are at this point bleached by exposure in a closed chamber to the fumes of sulphurous acid, and at the close of the process the hanks are washed in pure cold water to remove all traces of the acid.

Spun Silk Manufacture.—The materials of the spun silk trade are—(1) the floss or loose outer fibres which surround ordinary cocoons ; (2) the remains of cocoons after the reelable silk has been removed ; (3) waste from throwing processes and from all the stages through which reeled silk passes in manufacturing ; (4) unreclable cocoons, #.¢., those which are pierced, torn, or cut, stained by dead chrysalides, &c., and double cocoons; (5) cocoons of various wild silks, which are either unreelable or most profitably worked by carding. The waste spinners' first duty is to bring these diverse materials into uniform fibrous condition for spinning. In dol with cocoons and cocoon husks, the fibres, which are gumme together into a dense compact mass, must be so washed, softened, and freed from each other that they can be readily teased and torn into a tow-like mass. For this purpose they are washed with a strong hot soap solution in a revolving washing machine, im which they are continuously subjected for three or four hours to

Sisk

the action of falling stampers. From this treatment they are taken to the cold-water washing machine, where they are treated with a continuous spray of pure water whilst revolving in the tub under the action of falling stampers, as in the hot-water machine. Next the cocoons are rinsed in a spray of pure water, then the moisture is expelled in a hydro-extractor, and so, thoroughly degummed and softened, they are allowed to dry. For further treatment they are damped with a sprinkling of weak solution of Marseilles soap, then beaten either with the hand or by means of a machine. This machine has a series of leather straps attached to an endless band, which by its rapid revolution causes the straps to hit with a quick whipping stroke

against the surface of a revolving tray on which are placed the washed cocoons. The beating serves to free the fibres fully from cach other, and expels in the form of a tine dust the remains of chrysalides from the interior of the cocoons. It now remains only by the operation of the cocoon opener to tease out and separate the fibres into a kind of lap. The cocoon-opener is a modified carding machine, the drum or cylinder of which is covered with strong eard teeth. On this drum the fibres collect as they are opened and teased out, and when the teeth are full the lap so formed is stripped off by the attendant. The silken fibres are now ready for the operations preparatory to spinning.

To bring raw waste other than cocoons to this point a different series of operations are necessary. The removal of the gum is first usually effected by a process of fermentation or maceration instead of washing with soap, whereby a great saving of soap is secured. Into a large tank a quantity of waste is paeked, and soaked with a weak soapy solution which is maintained by steam at about 170°. The tank is closed over, and in the course of a few days fermenta- tion begins, and according to circumstances is allowed to go on from two to three weeks. From time to time proof samples are withdrawn to observe the progress of the rotting, as over-fermenta- tion would result in the same injury which arises from over-scouring, —weakness of fibre, loss of lustre, and waste of substance. By maceration the silk loses from 20 to 30 per cent. of its weight. From the maceration vat the silk is conveyed to the hot-water washing machine, where with a weak soapy solution it is washed under the influence of stampers for about five minutes. Great care is necessary to prevent the silk from cooling before this washing, as thereby the macerated slime would form an almost insoluble deposit on the silk fibre. From the hot soap solution the silk is taken to the cold-water machine, where, with the aid of stampers, it undergoes a thorough and prolonged washing. After being hung over hurdles to dry it is sprinkled with a weak solution of Marseilles soap, and then dried by means of the hydro-extractor and subsequent exposure in a heated well-ventilated chamber. At this point both cocoon waste, as already described, and floss waste are in the same condition.

The spinner has now to deal with a mass of entangled fibres of all lengths, which he must render even, parallel, and comparatively uniform in length

before it can be spun. The fibres are slightly damped with a weak soapy solution and taken to a filling drum, which consists of a large cylinder having set into it, parallel with its axis, from twelve to twenty rows of strong steel spikes. A feeding apron of cloth covered with card-teeth is provided to the machine, and, as the fibre is carried forward towards the drum, a similar card-teeth-covered band travels close over the surface of the apron, so that the fibre is presented to the drum from between two sets of card-teeth. The rows of spikes catch the fibre as presented to them, draw it through the card-teeth, and carrying it with them lap it around the drum in regular combed-out order. When the spikes are sufficiently filled, the lap is cut at each set of spikes, and so stripped from the drum it forms a definite number of "stricks," of the breadth of the drum itself and the length of the space between the sets of spikes. These stricks are caught in wooden elamps or "books," which are fastened in the bed of the flat dressing frame. Over them an endless band travels, having on it at short intervals belts of heckle-teeth, called combs, which comb out doubled and short fibres, and, acting first on one end of the strick and next on the other, leave the silk in the condition of beautifully parallel and comparatively uniform flakes. The pro-duet of the first combing, called the first draft, is the longest and purest fibre. The material combed out as it fills the comb teeth is caught in books, and when itself combed out forms second drafts, shorter and less valuable than the first ; and again the combings of second drafts, when combed, form third drafts still shorter. In this way five or six separate drafts or combings from the original lap are obtained, all increasiifely short and impure. The final combed waste is treated by a different process for making noil or bourette yarn.

A new form of dressing-frame is now coming into favour, in which the stricks of silk have their ends rolled round wooden rods, and so secured between wooden clamps on the surface of a huge eylinder which revolves so slowly that the attendant can change and fill the clamps as the drum goes round. In its revolution tho exposed portion of the silk is first combed on one side by a rapidly revolving card-toothed cylinder, from which it passes

onwards to meet a second similar cylinder revolving in a contrary direction, which combs the opposite side. In the second revolu- tion of the cylinder the portion of the strick which was previously wound on the rod is similarly combed on both sides, and thus the entire strick is rendered smooth and parallel.

The above is an outline of the ordinary process of preparing silk waste as practised in Switzerland and in the United Kingdom, &c., the range of machines being that of Messrs Greenwood and Batley of Leeds. In the great Manningham silk mills at Brad- ford, Mr 8. C. Lister, the well-known inventor of wool-combing machinery, while nsing machinery of the class described, treats by patented methods peculiar to himself a great proportion of his material. According to his original process, scoured, teased, and opened waste is first drawn into a lap on a screw gill box. These laps, containing all the fibres both Nae and short, are taken to the circular nip combing machine, where the “top” of long fibre is drawn out as a continuous sliver and separated from the “ noil” or short fibre, which according to its length is delivered at separate points. In his most recent mode of working, Mr Lister forms his waste into a broad lap on the large drum of a kind of carding engine, the druin being stripped when its teeth are filled with the prepared fibre. These laps are laid on the feeding table of a machine which has an oscillating or rocking filling head. At cach oscillation the end of the lap in front of the table is “filled” on to a row of heckle-teeth parallel with it, and just as the feeding-table recedes a knife comes down between the heckles and the table with a sudden stroke and separates from the lap such fibres as have been placed or filled on to the heckle-teeth. These heckle-teeth in the meantime, being fixed on an endless band, are continuously moving forward in a horizontal direction parallel with the front of the feeding machine, and a set of three sucli machines place a portion of their laps on to the heckle-teeth in their progress, thus filling the teeth with a fair ‘‘bite” of silk. Immediately the heckles have passed the machines, the silk is caught and cleaned off the endless comb by pairs of endless revolving nips rising from under and descending from above, and between these nips the stricks are carried forward in the same horizontal line in which they travelled on the heckle-teeth, which here begin their return journey to be again filled. The stricks in their progress are now submitted to the combing action of revolving card-covered cylinders and

card-covered cloth. Half way on in its horizontal path a second set of endless nips seize the combed portion of the silk, the uncombed portion held between the first set is released, and it in its turn is submitted to the combing action of cylinders and endless card-bands. In the end the fully dressed stricks of silk fall on a narrow feeding cloth, which has a combined reciprocating and forward motion, so that the material is spread with the utmost regularity and evenness. It passes through a set of screw gills, and is delivered into cans in the form of a most uniform and equal continuous sliver. The great advantage of these machines is the small amount of tending they require and the large quantity of dressed silk they deliver with unerring regularity.

The spinning proper of dressed waste is done precisely as in the spinning of flax yarn. The flakes are formed into a broad sliver on the spreading frame, and further attenuated and equalized on the set frame and the drawing frame, from which last the silk passes to the roving frame, where it receives its first preliminary twist and is sufficiently condensed to wind on a bobbin. The rovings are finally elongated and spun on the ordinary spinning frame, and for twisting into thread the yarns in two, three, or more strands are wound together on the doubling frame, and finally twisted asin dealing with raw silk spinning,

Spun silk, as it comes from the spinning frame, shows a good many nibs and irregularities and some roughness of surface. To remove these it is wound from one bobbin to another over an improving or cleaning and gassing machine, which consists of a frame having attached to it a number of small cone rollers, around which the yarn passes in a way which makes the entering portion of the thread rub against the portion running off. In this way, with considerable rubbing, the yarn cleans itself; and in its course over the rollers it rapidly passes through a gas flame, which singes off the fine projecting fibres, leaving the yarn clean, round, and compact. It is submitted to a further examination by eye and hand after being wound into hanks; and some yarns are finally dressed with albumen and gum solutions.

In the combing of waste silk as much as from 25 to 30 per cent. of waste in a second degree arises, much of which is very short, full of nibs anddust. From this a lower quality of yarn is spun, called noil yarn, and on the

Continent “ bourette” silk, to distinguish it from the ‘‘ floret” silk made from first waste. On account of the shortness of staple it is worked up by machinery different from that used in the floret manufacture, being prepared by carding, and combed out with a modification of Heilmann’s or Lister’s combing machines. ‘The finished noil yarn is very lumpy, and requires severe improving and singeing.

Spun silk lacks the smoothness, brilliance, and streneth of raw silk yarn, but still it isan extremely valuablo and useful material,

and its comparative cheapness gives it an important place among the products of textile industry. It is used very largely in mixed fabrics, as well as for the cheaper ribbons, velvets, hat plush, and for many other silk woven fabrics, as also in the hosiery and glove trades and for sewing, knitting, and embroidering yarns.

Silk Weighting.—Into the dyeing of silk it is not here necessary to enter, except in so far as eoncerns a nefarious practice, .carried on in dye-houses, which has exercised a most detrimental influence on the silk trade. Silk, we have seen, loses about one-fourth of its weight in scouring, To obviate that loss it has long been the prac- tice to dye some dark silks “in the gum,” the dye eombining in these cases with the gum or gelatinous coating, and such silks are known as “souples.” Both in the gum and in the boiled-off state silk has the peculiar property of imbibing certain metallic salts largely and eombining very firmly with them, the fibre remaining to external appearance undiminished in strength and lustre, but much added to in size and weight. Silk in the gum, it is found, absorbs these salts more freely than boiled-off; so to use it for weighting there are these great indueements-—a saving of the costly and tedious boiling-off, a saving of the 25 per cent. weight which would have disappeared in boiling, and a surface on which much greater sophistication can be practised than on scoured silk, In dyeing a silk black a certain amount of weight must be added ; and the common practice in former times was to make up on the silk what was lost in the scouring. Up to 1857 the utmost the dyer could add was “weight for weight,” but an accidental discovery that year put dyers into the way of using tin salts in weighting with the result that they can now add 40 oz. per

tb to scoured silks, 120 oz. to sonples, and as much as 150 oz. to spun silks, and yct call these compounds ‘‘silk.” Not only so, but the use of tin salts, especially stannic chloride, SnCl,, enables dyers to weight all colonrs the same as blaek. In his ‘ Report on English Silk Industry” to the Royal Commission on Technical Instruction (1885) Mr Thomas Wardle of Leek says :—

‘Colours and white of all possible shades can very easily be impartcd to this compound of silk and tin, and this method is becoming extensively used in Lyons. Thus weighting, which was until recently thought to apply only to black silks, and from which coloured silks were comparatively free, is now cheapening and deteriorating the latter in pretty much the same ratio as the former. ‘Thus the proto- and per-salts of iron, as well as the proto- and per-salts of tin, including also a large variety of tannin, sumac, divi-divi, chestnut, valonia, the acacias (Areca Catechu and Acacia Catechu from India), from which are obtained cutch and gambier, &c., are no longer uscd solely as mordants or tinctorial matters, but mainly to serve the object of converting the silk into a greatly-expandcd fibre, consisting of a conglomeration of more or less of these substances.”

Sugar also is employed to weight silk. Wardle remarks :—

“With a solution of sugar, silk can have its weight augmented from 1 oz, to 3 oz. per ib. Iam not quite sure that this method of weighting was not first uscd by the throwsters, as sugar is known to have been used for adulterating and loading gum silk for a very long time, and then the idea was afterwards applied to silk after the dyeing operations. 1t is much resorted to for weighting coloured silks by dyers on the Continent, and, though a very clumsy method, no substitute has becn found so cheap and casy of application. Bichloride of tin, having chemical affinity for silk fibre, bids fair to extinguish the use of sugar, which, from its hygrometric qualities, has a tendency to ruin the silk to which it is applied, if great care be not taken to regulate the quantity, There is not the slightest use or excuse for the application of sugar, except to cheapen the silk by about 15 to 20 per cent.” ;

Wild Silk Dyeing.—Among the disadvantages under which the silks of the wild moths long laboured one of the most serious was the natural colour of

the silks, and the extreme difficulty with which they took on dyes, specially the light and brilliant colours. For success in coping with this difficulty, as well as in dealing with the whole question of the cnltivation and employment of wild silks, the unwearying patience and great skill of Mr Thomas Wardle of Leek deserve special mention here. The natural colour of tussur silk is a greyish fawn, aud that shade it was found impossible to discharge by any of the ordinary bleaching agents, so as to obtain a basis for light and delicate dyes. Moreover, the chemical character of the tussur silk differs from that of the mulberry silk, and the fibre has much less affinity for tinctorial

On this adulterant Mr

Sal oak

more freely and evenly than either tussur or eria silk.

substances, whieh it takes up unevenly, requirmg a large amount of dye-stuffs. After protracted experimenting Mr Wardle was able in 1878 to show a series of tussurs well-dyed in all the darker shades of colour, but the lighter and bright blues, pinks, scarlets, &c., he could not produce. Subsequently the late M. Tessie du Motay found that the fawn colour of natural tussur could be dis. charged by solution of permanganate of potash, but the oxidizing action was so rapid and violent that it destroyed the fibre itself, Gentler means of oxidation have since been found for bleaching tussur to a fairly pale ground, but the dyeing of light colours cannot yet be said to be a commercial suecess. The silk of the eria or castor-oil worm (Attacus ricind) presents the same diffieulties in dyeing as the common tussur. A portion of the eria cocoons are white, while the others are of a lively brown colour, and for the dyeing of light colours the latter require to undergo a bleach- ing process. The silk takes up eolour with difficulty from a strong vat, and is consequently costly to dye. Moonga silk from Antheraa assama has generally a rather dark brown colour, but that appears to be much influenced by the leaves on whieh the worm feeds, the cocoons obtained on the champaca tree (Jlichclia champaca) giving a fine white fibre much valued in Assam. The dark colours are very difficult to bleach, but the silk itself takes dye-colours much

Trade and Commerce.

About the commencement of this century the chief silk- producing regions of the world were the Levant (including Broussa, Syria, and Persia), India, Italy, and France, the two first named sending the low-priced silk, the other two the fine qualities. Between 1840 and 1850, after the open- ing of trade with China, large quantities of silk were sent from the northern port of Shanghai, and afterwards also from the southern port of Canton. The export became important just at the time when disease in Europe had lessened the production on the Continent. This increased production of medium silk, and the growing demand for fine sorts, induced many of the cocoon-growers in the Le- vant to sell their cocoons to Europeans, who reeled them in Italian fashion under the name of " Patent Brutia," thus producing a very fine valuable silk. In 1857 commenced the importation of Japan silk, which became so fierce a competitor with Bengal silk as gradually to displace it in favour; and recently the native silk reeled in Bengal has almost ceased to be made, only the best European filatures, produced under the supervision of skilled Europeans, now coming forward.

China and Japan, both of which contribute so largely to the supplies that appear in European and American statistics, only export their excess growth, silk weaving being carried on and native silk worn to an enormous extent in both countries. 'The other Asiatic exporting countries also maintain native silk manufactures which absorb no inconsiderable proportion of their raw material. The silk production of the world, including only the amount exported from these Oriental countries, amounts on an average to from 20,000,000 tb to 25,000,000 tb yearly; but the crop is subject to great variations.

The supply available for European consumption during recent years was thus stated, in bales of 100 Ib, by the Moniteur des Soies of Lyons, 25th July 1885 :—

1354-65! 1875-76. 1876-77. 1877-78.| 1878-79.| 1879-80.) 1880-81,| 1881-82. 1882-83, 1883-$4.| 1884-85. 1885-86 (estimates).

it | Maximum. | Minimum.

MG Wiha ssasd caaeeuscosducestenmee cae emeroees 92,400 | 57,000 | 25,000} 40,500} 62,500 | 32,000 | 68,500} 70,000| 52,000) 73,000) 65,000 | 45,000 40,000 France 44,000| 16,000! 2,000) 19,000} 13,500} 8,500] 9,500] 9,506] 17,500] 14,500; 10,000) 10,000 8,000 Spain croseet 8,300} 2,500} 1,500 750} 1,100 800| 1,500) 1,500] 2,800} 1,750) 1,500 500 500 Grecce and Asia Minor 6,600 | 16,000} 10,000} 6,000] 6,000} 5,000) 5,000) 5,000] 6,000) 12,000] 12,000; 10,000 8,000 MOM DAlCSyecemessecererasearer tee 146,300 | 91,500} 38,500] 66,250] 83,100] 46,300| 84,500 | 86,000) 77,800 | 101,250 | 88,500) 65,500 56,500 Mit eee oe ents ees 55,000 | 68,000 | 65,000} 46,000} 53,000| 55,000} 67,000} 44,000} 47,000} 50,000] 50,000) 45,000 42,000 (Guat Git) ccarendereco deo cccpecnrecrrreccereas: 19,800 , 14,000} 10,000] 12,500] 9,000] 12,500) 5,000) 14,500] 11,500] 16,000] 7,000| 12,000 12,000 TE.OIVi()l sare ORE NCE ete ee eee tare 11,000} 8,492] 6,000] 5,000) 6,000! 5,000) 4,000] 3,000) 3,000| 3,000, 3,000 2,000 2,000 JETER coc eee RE EEE eer CA am 14,000 | 13,000 | 22,000 | 22,000] 14,000] 15,000] 15,500] 25,000 | 25,000) 20,000} 15,000 12,000 PUG UMUUD BLESS, ons +soxe ster cesies totes 85,800 | 104,492 | 94,000} 85,500] 90,000] 86,500] 91,000] 77,000! 86,500} 94,000 | 80,000} 74,000 68,000 Grand total of bales… 232,100 | 195,992 | 132,500 | 151,750 | 173,100 | 132,800 | 175,500 | 163,000 | 164,300 | 195,250 | 168,500 | 139,500 124,500 Price of Tsatlee No. 4…….0005-.-| 168. 15s, 28s, | 17s. 6d. 15s. | 15s. 8d.) 13s. 9d.; 17s l4s. Gd. 16s. 13s. 12s, 6d. 12s. 6d.

» 1 Gk

While these tables indicate remarkable fluctuation of supply they show generally that Asiatic countries, besides supplying their own considerable demands, send to Europe fully one half of the whole silk consumed in Western manufactures. China stands first as a silk-producing country, yielding about 35 per cent. of the entire supply ; the whole produce of Italy amounts to nearly the same proportion ; the exports of Japan account for about 12 per cent. of the annual supply; while in recent years France and the Levant are credited with about equal proportions.

In the United Kingdom the trade in raw silks has been in a condition of decline for a considerable number of years, much of the Chincse and

Eastern produce which formerly came to London now being unshipped at Marseilles, and sold in the Lyons market, which has become the leading silk mart. But there is a very steady and continuous ex- pansion in the demand for waste silks and cocoons for the spun silk trade. The following figures show the official annual returns of silk imports since 1860, the date of the French commercial treaty, which exposed many branches of the trade to severe and fatal competition :—

Knubs or Silk Years. Raw Silk. Husks of Silk} Thrown Silk. Manufaetures. and Waste. Ib Cwts. tb £

1860-65 43,187,997 182,020 543,679 30,127,878 1865-70 31,645,505 141,628 859,251 49,885,971 1870-75 34,220, 037 171,166 747,505 55,116, 815 1875-80 23,003,683 158, 887 545,247 62,539,166 1880 8,678,949 55,002 9038, 567 13,324,935

1881 2,904,580 54,119 | 181,886 | 11,727,397

1882 8,377,119 44,277 294,207 11,174,573

1883 3,178,593 62,064 | 292,488 | 10,528,920 1884 » 4,522,702 67,289 323,947 10,984,078

The sources whence the English imports of raw silk, the commercial names undcr which they pass, and their relative importance and values, are cxemplified in the following table, extracted from the annual circulars issued by Messrs H. W. Eaton & Sons of London :—

Con-

E . Extreme __|sumption, Priees Deseription. Ce ayes, Priees during | including] 1st January . 1885, Export, 1886,

1885.

an ‘ tb Ib S Ch oh Cs Ib S$ ds. eh, Bitlee *,....06 x Haineen, &e. t 2,803,572 | 1,001,436; 9 Otol4 6) 1,225,988; 9 6tol4d 6 Taysaam 2,,..... 416,466 | 271,116) 7 6,,15 0} 293,964) 8 0,, 14 6 AMEOTM 52.0000 339,976]

159,828) 8 6,,12 6] 469,456) 9 9,,13 0 Szcchucn…...0. 23,154 6,936; 7 0,,11 3 17,544) 7 0, 11 3 SUMBTIE escere assess 388,304] 70,560,10 6,,15 6] 3872,176\12 0,,15 6 126,450| 114,000; 8 0,, 14 6} 154,800] 9 6,,15 0 8,750 Tsiolo O,, 28 6 7,700/19 0,,21 0 225 noo 9 oct 200 Bonci0 | axij700|7/ 0102″ 81 aosjaao|57 oto a) 0 ” ” 273,760 | 310,300 ;20 0,,25 0| 307,400 20 0,, 25 0 HPOGH”....5… 4,586,267 | 2,153,251 3,057,198

In the manufacture of silken fabrics France occupies the most important position among the nations. Not only is the whole of the raw silk produced in France worked up within the country, but a very considerable proportion of that imported from the Levant and from Asia passes into the hands of the French manufacturers. In all, between 8,000,000 and 9,000,000 Ib of raw silk are On an average manufactured into various textures in France. Lyons is the headquarters of the trade, and, if the surrounding regions be included, employment is given to about 120,000 looms,—20,000 of which are driven by power,—principally in the production of dress silks, plain and figured, and in other heavy silken fabrics, and at St Etienne and St Chamond in the ribbon trade. There are also important manufactures of silk at Calais, St Pierre

: The figures relating to Tsatlee comprise Re-reel, Hangchow, and Yuun-fa. The figures relating to Taysaaim comprise Tussah.

les Calais (tulles and passementerie), Paris, Nimes, Tours, Avignon, and Roubaix. Next to France in the extent and value of manufactures comes Germany, wherc the principal seat of the silk trade is at Crefcld, nearly one half of the whole production of the empire being manu- factured there. The looms of Crefeld and the district it controls numbcred in 1881 about 33,000, and the trade was flourishing and expansive. The manufacture of union velvets is the special feature of the industry, about one half of the looms being devoted to that textile; but ~Crefeld controls also a large trade in union satins, and pure silk broad goods and ribbons of all kinds. The whole value of its trade amounted in 1881 to almost £4,000,000, one-fourth of which found a market in England, and about a quarter of a million went to France. The other principal centres of the silk trade, all in Rhenish Prussia, are Viersen, Barmen, Elberfeld, and Miihlheim. Third on the list of

Continental producers is Switzerland, where Zurich takes the lead with broad goods (failles, armures, satins, serges, &c.), and Basel rivals St Etienne in the ribbon trade. The number of looms throughout the country is estimated at 40,000, of which 4000 are power- looms. Italy—the early home of the silk trade, the land of the gorgeous velvets of Genoa and the damasks and brocades of medizeval Sicily, Venice, and Florence—has fallen from its high estate, and now employs not more than 30,000 looms, the centre of greatest activity being at Como; but Genoa still makes velvets, and the brocades of Venice are not a thing of the past. In Austria the silk trade has found its principal development in Vienna and its immediate neighbourhood, the number of looms throughout the entire empire being estimatcd at from 15,000 to 20,000, of which 2000 are power-looms. In Russia thcre is, with a growing cultivation of raw silk, a considerable and in- creasing manufacture, the special feature of which is the weaving at Moscow of gold and silver tissues and brocades for sacerdotal use, and for traffic with Central Asia.

In the United Kingdom all the silk industries—these depending on spun silk alone excepted—have been in a depressed and declining condition ever since 1860. The principal silk manu- facturing towns of England have been Coventry, Macclesfield, Congleton, Leek, Derby, London (Spitalfields), Manchester, Middleton, and Nottingham, and it is estimated that at the best period not fewer than 150,000 looms found employment in the trade. In 1872 that number was reduced to 65,000, of whieh 12,500 were power-looms. Spitalfields in her best days (about 1825) kept 24,000 hand-looms occnpied ; now there are not more than 1200. Manchester once had about 20,000 looms weaving silk ; now there are not 6000 so employed. When the French treaty of 1860 came into operation Coventry had about 9000 looms, principally cmployed in ribbon weaving ; now not more than one-fourth of that number are in operation. The cause of several of these severe changes is to be found in the introduction of the factory system of working and the extension of power-loom weaving, which crushed out domestic weaving, the original form of the silk industry ; but undoubtedly also the English manufacturers were

beaten in the battle of free competition brought on by the Freneh treaty. On the other hand, the remarkable devclopment of thc

Silk and Silk Goods exported from the United Kingdom during the years 1860 to 1884 inclusive.

Thrown Silk. Suk Manufactures.

Knubs or Husks of

Raw Silk.

am Foreign and ye Foreign and British. Col SAS; beso Colonial. tb tb £ £

3,153,998 826,107 426,866 1,587,308 224,366 8,137,292 767,058 806,701
1,404,381 166,936 2,644,402 1,154,364 39,771 1,450,397 166,297
2,551,417 880,923 87,924 1,734,519 328,426 8,064,725 1,080,678 50,202
1,794,565 303,054 1,652,935 570,999 17,910 1,705,153 229,130 1,841,505
565,266 40,470 1,922,953 222,133 1,375,608 694,735 24,461 1,697,209
248,495 947,165 683,591 7,553 2,030,659 259,023 903,997 1,008,272
5,561 2,564,730 263,826 915,773 825,572 6,281 2,692,275 341,107
524,182 705,825 5,596 2,426,299 340,805 377,349 612,951 50,559
2,175,410 644,722

kel =o

66

comparatively new trade in spun silk goes far to compensate for the loss of the older trade, and has enabled the exports of silk manufactures from the country to be at least maintained and to show some signs of expansion. The spun-silk industry has chiefly developed in the Yorkshire and Lancashire textile centres,— Bradford, Halifax, Rochdale, &c. But it is highly significant that, while the exports of British silk manufactures have not decreased, the imports in the meantime have shown a marked expansion ; and unquestionably, although the use of silken goods has increased very greatly within twenty-five years, the expansion of native silk manufactures has not kept pace with that growth. Favoured by the operation of protective duties ranging from 50 to 60 per cent. ad valorem, the native manufacture of silk in the United States has been nursed into considerable activity and expansion, till now well-nigh one-half of the silken fabrics used in

SILLIMAN, Bensamtn (1779-1864), American chemist and geologist, was born in 1779 at Trumbull (then called North Stratford), Connecticut. His father, Gold Selleck Silliman, was brigadier-general in the war of the revo- lution, and had also held important civil positions. The history of the family points to an Italian origin, but Daniel Silliman, the first to settle in the United States, came from Holland. Silliman received his early education at Fair- field, Connecticut, at that time the residence of his father's family, and in 1792 he entered Yale College, where he graduated in 1796. He then studied law, and was admitted to the bar in 1802, while a tutor in Yale College, to which position he had been appointed in 1799. In 1802 a professorship of chemistry and natural history was established in the college, and he was at once elected to fill it. He spent portions of 1801 and 1802 in Philadelphia in preparation for his work, and the year 1804 he spent in Europe, chiefly in England and Scotland, where he attended the lectures of Hope and Gregory, and also formed the acquaintance of Davy, Wollaston, Brewster, Leslie, and other eminent men of science. Asa result of this visit he published A Journal of Travels in England, Holland, and Scotland, and of Two Passages over the Atlantic in the years 1808 and 1806 (2 vols., 1810), which had a marked success. In 1813 he began service with the medical department of Yale College as professor of chemistry and pharmacy, and continued to give instruction there for many years. In 1818 he founded the American Journal of Science and Arts, a periodical devoted to the physical sciences, which has been, and is, the most important American scientific serial. In 1851 he made a second journey to Europe, of which he likewise published an account in two volumes, edited by his son, who had accompanied him. In 1853 he became professor emeritus, but he continued to lecture for a year or two longer. His closing years were quietly spent in unabated mental activity at New Haven until his death in 1864. Though devoted to scientific pursuits, he inter- ested himself in the public movements of the time.

One of Silliman's earliest scientific publications was an account of the famous meteorite which fell in Weston, Conn., December 14, 1807. This account, which excited great public interest in the country, was reproduced abroad, and was read before the Royal Society of London, and also before the French Academy. Among his other scientific labours may be mentioned his experiments upon the fusibility of various substances in the flame of the

com- pound blowpipe of Hare, then a novelty in science, and upon the vaporization and transference of the carbon in the voltaic arc from the positive to the negative pole, which he was the first to observe. He also repeated the experiment by which Gay-Lussac had separated potassium froin its hydrate, and obtained the element in its metallic form, doubtless for the first time in the United States. Other professional labours were an exploration of the coal formations of Pennsylvania in 1830, and an examination of the gold mines of Virginia in 1836. In 1832 and 1838, by appointment of the United States Government, he inade a scientific investigation of the culture and manufacture of sugar, embodying his results in a voluminous report published by the Government. Though Silliman published a large number of scientific papers upon chemical and geological subjects, his reputa-

the country are of home manufacture. In 1860 the proportion of native manufacture was 18 per cent., in 1880 it reached 38 per cent., and in 1882 it was 40 per cent. of the cntire consumption, Reeled silks are principally manufactured at Paterson and Hoboken, N. J., aud Brooklyn and New York City, N. Y., and the spun-silk industry flourishes at South Manchester and Hartford, Conn.

The following cstimate of the rclative importance of the silk manufacture of various countries was made in 1883 by Mr Peixotto, the United States consul at Lyons :—

PTATIGE) acecn eves cnc $85,000,000 | Russia…..... 16,000,000 Germany….....- 45,000,000 | Austria…..... 12,000,000 United States….. So O OOK OOM Mibaliyaernei ieee 12,000,000 Great Britain….. PH (OKOLO) (OLN) | IS]SENUE Ggomnbecnosbenc 5,000,000 Switzerland …..... 18,000,000 | Other countries… 17,000,000 giving a total of $270,000, 000. (AEA

tion was more especially due to the courses of public lectures which he delivered in the college and in various cities and towns of the United States. The happy combination of a graceful and interesting style with unwonted splendour of experimental illus- tration gave these lectures an

unprecedented popularity, and they exerted a powerful influence in awakening and developing a taste for scientific matters throughout the country.

Besides the works already mentioned, Silliman published in 1808 an American edition of Henry's Chemistry, with notes, in 1827 an edition of Bakewell's Geology, and in 1830 Elements of Chemistry, in two volumes. An account of his life, by Prof. George P. Fisher, of Yale College, was published in two volumes in

1866,

SILLIMAN, Bensamin (1816-1885), American chemist and physicist, son of the preceding, was born in 1816 at New Haven, Connecticut, and educated at Yale College, where he graduated in 1837. He then became assistant to his father in chemistry, mineralogy, and geology, work- ing in his laboratory at the college, and pursuing original investigations. He began teaching in the laboratory soon afterwards. The school thus informally established was shortly afterwards recognized by a formal act of the cor- poration of the college, and ultimately developed into the Sheffield Scientific School of Yale College. In 1838 he became associate editor with his father of the American Journal of Science and Arts, and he continued in the editorship of the journal until the close of his life, Prof. J. D. Dana (his brother-in-law) having joined him in 1846. In the winter of 1845-46 he gave a course of lectures on agricultural chemistry in New Orleans, which is believed to have been the first course of lectures upon that subject ever given in the United States. In 1849 he was appointed professor of medical chemistry and toxico- logy in the medical department of Louisville university, Louisville, Kentucky, which position he held for five years. In 1854 he succeeded his father as professor of chemistry, and continued to give instruction in this science, first in the academical and afterwards in the medical department of Yale College, until his death in 1885. In 1853 he was connected with the exhibition at the Crystal Palace in New York, having charge of the departments of chemistry, geology, and mineralogy. As a result of this work he edited a large quarto volume, Zhe World of Scvence, Art, and Industry (1853), followed in 1854 by The Progress of Science and Mechanism. He also published in 1846 First Principles of Chemistry, a text-

book which had a wide sale and passed through three editions. In 1858 he published a manual of physics entitled /irst Principles of Physics or Natural Philosophy (2d ed. 1861). In 1864 and again in 1867 and 1872 Silliman visited Cali- fornia, being engaged in professional work connected with various mines and in mineralogical and geological ex- plorations. Still later he made several visits to the mining regions of the western States and Territories, and the results of his observations formed the subjects of numerous scientific papers. In 1874, the centennial annl- versary of Priestley's discovery of oxygen, he delivered at Northumberland, Pa., where Priestley had resided durimg the later years of his life, an historical address on "¢ Amer-

ican Contributions to Chemistry," which he afterwards expanded into a considerable volume.

STLO. A modern silo is a pit or erection in which green crops are preserved in an undried condition for fodder. 'The term is derived from the Greek oipéds (Lat. sirus), a pit for holding grain. It is only of recent years that ensilage, 7.¢., the preservation of green food for cattle by partial fermentation in silos, has become an important feature in agricultural economy. In various parts of Germany a method of preserving green fodder precisely similar to that used in the case of sauerkraut-(see vol. iv. p. 618) has prevailed for upwards of a century. Special attention was first directed to the practice of ensilage by a French agriculturist, M. Auguste Goffart of Sologne near Orleans, who in 1877 published a work (Manuel de la Culture et de VEnsilage des Mais et autres Fourrages Verts) detailing the experiences of many years in preserv- ing green crops in silos. An English translation of M. Goffart's book by Mr J. B. Brown was published in New York in 1879, and, as various experiments had been previously made in the United States in the way of preserving green crops in pits, M. Goffart's experi- ence attracted considerable attention. The conditions of American dairy farming proved eminently suitable for the ensiling of green maize fodder ; and the success of the method was soon indisputably demonstrated among the New England farmers. The favourable results obtained in America led to much discussion and to the extensive introduction of the

system in the United Kingdom, where, with different conditions, success has been more qualified, but still highly encouraging.

It has been abundantly proved that ensilage forms a wholesome and nutritious food for cattle. It can be substituted for root crops with advantage, because it is succulent and digestible; milk resulting from it is good in quality and taste; it can be secured largely irrespective of weather ; it carries over grass from the period of great abundance and waste to times when none would other- wise be available; and a larger number of cattle can be supported on a given area by the use of ensilage than is possible by the use of green crops.

A silo should havea depth of at least 15 feet, and may either be a it ora building above ground, provided it is water-tight and, as ar as possible, air-tight. The crops suitable for ensilage are the ordinary grasses, clovers, lucerne, vetches, oats, rye, and maize; but various weeds may also be stored in silos with good results, notably spurrey (Spergula arvensis), a most troublesome plant in poor light soils. Asarule the crop should be mown when in full flower, and deposited in the silo on the day of its cutting. Fair dry weather is not essential ; but it is found that when moisture, natural and extraneous, exceeds 75 per cent. of the whole, good results are not obtained. The material is spread in uniform layers over the floor of the silo, and closely packed and trodden down. If possible, not

more than a foot or thereby should be added daily, so as to allow the |

mass to settle down closely, and to heat uniformly throughout. When the silo is quite filled a layer of straw or some other dry pases substance is spread over the surface, then it is covered with oards, and a pressure of not less than 100 tb per square foot is applied hy weighting or other mechanical means.

A silo thus contains, to begin with, a mass of living vegetable cells surrounded with a minimum of oxygen. The activity of the cells continuing, oxygen is absorbed and carbonic acid evolved, and part of the starch of the plants is converted into sugar. In the atmosphere of carbonic acid thus created the acid ferments manifest their vitality, and acetic, lactic, and butyric acids are developed at the expense of the starch and sugar. These

chemical changes are accompanied with an evolution of heat, and the temperature of the mass rises, till, when it attains 122° Fahr., the action of the ferments 1s arrested. Should the heat rise to 150° the vitality of the vegetable cells themselves is destroyed ; and also when the available oxygen is exhausted chemical change ceases and swect silage is produced. When from excess of moisture or other cause the temperature of the silo does not reach 122° Fahr., the acid ferments are not killed, and they go on evolving chiefly acetic and lactic acids, the results being sour silage. These ferments, requiring nitrogen for their existence, act on the nitrogenous constituents of the plants,

rendcring the albuminoids partly soluble, evolving peptones, and by further splitting up producing amides, urea, and ammonia. The production of sour silage is accompanied by much greater traus- formation and loss than is incident to sweet silage; and in extreme action the material acquires a most disagreeable odour. There is, however, no sharp line of distinction between the two, and both varieties are eaten freely by stock. Frequently a considerable loss occurs around the edges, and at other points where air gets access to the mass, by mildewing. See Report of Select Committee.

SILURID, a large family of freshwater Fishes, flourishing in the present epoch, and represented by a great variety of forms in all the tropical and temperate regions, many of them reaching back into the Tertiary age. The principal characters of this family (termed a “suborder” by some), its position in the system, its geographical distribution, and some of the most remark- able points in the structure and life-history of its members have been already sufficiently noticed under IcnTHyoLoecy, but we have here to notice more fully the sections into which it has been divided, and certain remarkable forms which were referred to nominally only in that article.

The modifications of the vertical fins, or rather the specialization of certain portions at the expense of others, and the greater or less extent of the branchial aperture form excellent characters for subdividing the Siluroids.

I. In the Stluride Homaloptere the vertical fins are exceedingly long, occupying nearly the whole extent of the embryonal fin, and in one genus

(/eterobranchus) a great part of the dorsal portion retains its embryonic character, being arayless adipose fin. All the Siluroids of this section belong to the fauna of the Old Worldand Australia. The rivers and lakes of tropical Africa harbour many species of the genera Clarias and Heterobranchus,—those of the Nile being known under the name of ‘“‘Carmoot.” One of the Nilotic species, Clarias macracanthus, occurs abundantly in the Lake of Galilee, and, being a long, scaleless, eel-like fish of black colour, with eight long barbels round its broad mouth, was certainly included among those which the Jews were forbidden to eat by the Mosaic law. These fish grow toa length of from 4 to 6 feet, and are eaten by the natives of tropical Africa.

II. In the Siluride Heteroptere the dorsal fin has almost or entirely disappeared ; only its foremost portion and a small adipose remnant may be preserved ; on the other hand the anal portion is retained in its whole extent. The gill- membranes remain separate and overlap the isthmus. This section likewise belongs to the fauna of the Old World, and includes, among many others, the species which has given the name to the whole family, St/wrus glants, the “ Wels”

Fie, 1.—The ‘’ Wels” (Stlurus glanis).

of the Germans. It is the only representative of the family in Europe, and with the exception of the sturgeon, is the largest freshwater fish of the Continent. It was known to Aristotle, who described it under the name of Glanis. It inhabits more the central and eastern portions of Europe than the western, being absent in Italy, Greece, southern Switzerland, France, and those parts of Germany which are drained by the Rhine and its affluents. In general appear- ance it somewhat resembles the burbot. Its head is large

and broad, its mouth wide, furnished with six barbels, of which those of the upper jaw are very long. Both jaws and the palate are armed with broad bands of small closely- set teeth, which give the bones a rasp-like appearance. The eyes are exceedingly small. The short body terminates in a long, compressed, muscular tail, and the whole fish is covered with a smooth, scaleless, slippery skin. Specimens of 4 and 5 feet in length, and of 50 to 80 tb in weight, are of common occurrence. Its food consists chiefly of other bottom-feeding fishes, and in inland countries it is considered one of the better class of food fishes. Stories about children having been found in the stomach of very large individuals are probably inventions.

IIT. The Sewride Anomaloptere are a small section from tropical America, in which the dorsal and adipose fins are very short and belong to the caudal vertebral column, while the anal is very long, and the gill-membranes are entirely separate, overlapping the isthmus.

IV. The Siluride Proteroptere are a section extremely numerous in species, and represented throughout the tropics. The dorsal fin consists of a short-rayed and an adipose portion, the former belonging to the abdominal vertebral column; the anal is always much shorter than the tail. The gill-membranes are not confluent with the skin of the isthmus; they have a free posterior maegin. When a nasal barbel is present, it belongs to the posterior nostril. This section includes among many others the genus Bagrus, of which the “Bayad” (B,. bayad) and “Docmac” (B. docmac) frequently come under the notice of travellers on the Nile; they grow to a length of 5 feet, and are eaten. Of the “Cat-Fishes” of North America (Amiurus), locally called ‘bull-heads” or “ horned-pouts,” with eight barbels, some twenty species are known. Some of them are valued as food, especially one which is abundant in the ponds of New England, and capable of easy introduction into other localities (A. nebulosus). Others which inhabit the great lakes (A. nigricans) and the Mississippi (A. ponderosus) often exceed the weight of 100 ib. Platystoma and Pimelodus people the rivers and lakes of tropical America, and many of them are conspicuous in this fauna by the ornamentation of their body, by long spatulate snouts, and by their great size. The genus Arius is composed of the greatest number of species (about seventy), and has the widest distribution of all Siluroids, being represented in almost all tropical countries which are drained by large rivers. Some of the species enter salt water. They possess six barbels, and their head is extensively osseous on its upper surface ; their dorsal and pectoral spines are generally developed into powerful weapons. Bagurius, one of the largest Siluroids of the rivers of India and Java, ex- ceeding a length of 6 feet, differs from Arius in having eight barbels, and the head covered with skin.

V. In the Siluridx Stenobranchiz the dorsal fin consists of an adipose portion and a short-rayed fin which belongs to the abdominal vertebral column, and, like the adipose fin, may be sometimes absent. The gill-membranes are confluent with the skin of the isthmus. The Siluroids belonging to this section are either South-American or African. Among the former we notice specially the genus Doras, which is distinguished by having a series of bony scutes along the middle of the side. The narrowness of their gill-openings appears to have developed in them a habit which has excited the attention of all naturalists who have visited the countries bordering upon the Atlantic rivers of tropical America, viz., the habit of travelling during seasons of

drought from a piece of water about to dry up to ponds of greater capacity. These journeys are occasionally of such a length that the fish have to travel all night; they are so numerous that the Indians fill

SILURID A

many baskets of them. Hancock supposes that the fish carry a small supply of water with them in their gill-cavity, which they can easily retain by closing their branchial] apertures. The same naturalist adds that they make regular nests, in which they cover up their eggs with care and defend them, —male and female uniting in this parental duty until the eggs are hatched. Synodontis ig

Fia. 2.—Synodontis xiphias,

an African genus and common in the Nile, where the various species are known by the name of “Shal.” They frequently occur among the representations of animals left by the ancient Egyptians. The upper part of their head is protected by strong osseous scutes, and both the dorsal and pectoral fins are armed with powerful spines. Their mouth is small, surrounded by six barbels, which are more or less fringed with a membrane or with branched tentacles. Finally, the Electric Cat- or Sheath-Fishes (Malapterurus) also belong to this section. Externally

Fic. 3.—Malapterurus electricus,

they are at once recognized by the absence of a rayed dorsal fin, of which only a rudiment remains as a small interneural spine concealed below the skin. The entire fish is covered with soft skin, an osseous defensive armour having become unnecessary in consequence of the develop- ment of a powerful electric apparatus, the strength of which, however, is exceeded by that of the electric eel and the large species of Z’orpedo. It has been noticed in vol. xii. p. 650. Three species have been described from rivers of tropical Africa, of which one (J. electricus) occurs in the Nile; it rarely reaches a length of 4 feet.

VI. The section of Siluridx Proteropodes contains small forms, some of which are of interest by the degree of specialization to which they have

attained in one or the other direction. Many of them are completely mailed; but all have in common a short-rayed dorsal fin, with the ventrals below or rarely in front of it. Their gill-openings are reduced to a short slit; their pectorals and ventrals have assumed a horizontal position; and their vent 1s before, or not much behind, the middle of the length of the body. The first group of this section comprises alpine forms of the Andes, without any armature, and with a very broad and pendent lower lip. They have been referred to several genera (Stygogenes, Arges, Brontes, Astroplebus), but are collectively called “ prefiadillas” by the natives, who state that they live in subterranean craters within the bowels of the volcanoes of the Andes, and are ejected with streams of mud and water during eruptions. These fishes may, however, be found in sur- face waters at all times, and their appearance in great quantities in the low country during volcanic eruptions can be accounted for by numbers being killed by the sulphuretted gases which escape during an eruption and

by their being swept down with the torrents of water

issuing from the volcano. The lowland forms have their body encased in large scutes, either rough, scale-like, and arranged in four or five scries (Chetostomus), or polished, forming broad rings round the slender and depressed tail (Loricaria, fig. 4), or polished and large, so as to form two series only along the body and short tail

Fig. 4.—Loricaria lanceolata, from the upper Amazons.

tion is but sparsely represented, chiefly in mountain- streams, by small loach-like Siluroids, in which various kinds of peculiar apparatus are developed to enable them to hold on to stones, this preventing their being swept away by the current ; in Pseudecheneis the adhesive apparatus consists of transverse plaits of the skin on the thorax between the pectoral fins; in Lx- ostoma the~—- mouth is modified in- to a sucto- rial organ, probably with the Fie. 5.—Callichthys armatus, from the upper Amazons. same func- Natural size. tion. Finally, the South-American genus A spredo, which is remarkable for the peculiar mode of protecting its eggs, as mentioned in vol. xii. p. 660, belongs also to this section. VII. The small

section of Siluridx Opisthoptere com- prises South-American forms, the majority of which inhabit waters at high altitudes up to 14,000 feet above the level of the sea. All have a short-rayed dorsal fin, placed above or behind the middle of the length of the body, above or behind the ventrals, which may be absent. Also the anal is short. The nostrils are remote from each other, and the gill-membranes are not confluent with the skin of the isthmus. These little fishes, of which Trichomycterus and Nematogenys are the principal genera, replace in the Andes the loaches of the northern hemi-sphere; they resemble them in appearance and_ habits, and even in coloration, offering a striking illustration of the fact that similar forms of animals are produced under similar external physical conditions.

Natural size.

69

VIII. Finally, the Silwride Branchicole comprise the smallest and least developed members of the family; they are referred to two genera only from South America, Stegophilus and Vandellia, the smallest of which does not exceed the length of 2 inches. Their body is soft, narrow, cylindrical, and elongate; the dorsal and anal fins short; the vent far behind the middle of the length of the body ; gill-membranes confluent with the skin of the isthmus. Each maxillary is provided with a small barbel; and the gill-covers are armed with short stiff spines. Their small size not- withstanding, these Siluroids are well known to the Brazilians, who accuse them of entering and ascending the urethra of persons while bathing, causing inflammation and sometimes death. They certainly live parasitically in the gill-cavity of large Siluroids, probably enter- ing those cavities for places of safety, but without drawing any nourishment from their hosts. (A, ©. G.)

SILVANUS, an ancient Italian god of the woods (silvx), closely allied to Faunus. Virgil speaks of him as a god of fields and cattle, and says that the Pelasgians dedicated a grove to him near Cere. Horace calls him the god of boundaries. Pigs were sacrificed to him, and at harvest festivals he received offerings of milk. He appears sometimes, especially in inscriptions, as a domestic god, and is occasionally associated with the Lares and Penates. Virgil describes him as crowned with fennel and lilies or carrying an uprooted cypress in his hand. On a relief he appears with a crown of pine

branches in his hair, a pine branch in his left hand, a skin filled with fruits hanging about his neck, a pruning-knife in his right hand, and a dog by his side. On votive tablets he is oftener represented as the god of planting and gardening than as the rough woodland deity.

SILVER! is widely diffused throughout the earth's crust, including the ocean, which contains a trace of the noble metal—minute, it is true, in a relative sense, but in absolute amount approaching 10,000 million tons. Of the varieties of silver ores, the following chicfly are metallurgically important :—(1) Reguline Silver, generally alloyed with mercury or gold, and if with the latter including sometimes a trace of platinum ; (2) Horn Silver, native chloride, AgCl; (3) Silver Glance, native sulphide, Ag. ; (4) Silver-Copper Glance, (Ag,Cu),8; (5) Pyrargyr- ite (" Rothgiiltigerz"), Ag.SbS, ; (6) Stephanite, Ag.SbS, ; (7) Polybasite, 9(Ag,,Cu,)S + (Sb,,As,)8,. Silver is also frequently met with in base-metallic ores, ¢g., in lead ores and many kinds of pyrites. Unmixed silver minerals nowhere present themselves in large continuous masses. What we call "silver ores" are all more or less complex mixtures in which the non-argentiferous components are usually decidedly in the majority. Their metallurgic treat- ment depends chiefly on the nature of these admixtures, the state of combination of the silver being as a rule irre- levant in the choice of a process, because some at least of the noble metal is always present as sulphide, and our modes of treatment for it include all other native forms.

Amalgamation.—If a given ore is relatively free of base " metals" (nietallurgically speaking), some process of "amalgamation" may be, and often is, resorted to.

In the Freiberg process the first step is to roast the (ground) ore with common salt, which converts the sulphide of silver into

' Compare CHEMistTRY, vol. v. p. 528-5380; also Mirna, Minv, and MONEY.

chloride (Ag,S + 2NaCl+40 from the air=2AgCl+Na,SO,). The mass, along with certain proportions of water, scrap-iron, and mercury, is placed in

barrels, which are then made to rotate about their axes so that the several ingredients are forced into con- stantly varying contact with ore another. The salt solution takes up a small proportion of chloride, which in this (dissolved) form is quickly reduced by the iron to the metallic state (2AgC1+ Fe=FeCl,+2Ag), so that there is, so to say, room made in the brine for another instalment of chloride of silver, which is reduced in its turn, and so on to the end,—the metal formed uniting with the mercury into a semi-fluid amalgam. Of this the bulk at least readily unites into larger continuous masses, which, on account of their high specific gravity, dre easily separated from the dross mechanically. The amalgam is pressed in linen bags to eliminate a quantity of relatively silver-free liquid mercury (this of course is utilized as such in subsequent operations), and the remaining solid amalgam is subjected to distillation from iron re- torts, whereby its inercury is recovered asa distillate while a more or less impure silver remains in the retort. This process, after having been long wrought in Freiberg with great success, is now super- seded there by the Augustin method (see below), but it survives in some other places, as, for example, the Washoe or Comstock district in the Sierra Nevada (United States). Itis not used in Chili, Peru, and Mexico because of the scarcity of fuel.

The Afexican process, though far less perfect than that of Freiberg, evades this difficulty. It was tried for the first time, if not actually invented, by Bartolomeo de Mcdina in 1557. It was adopted in Mexico in 1566 and in Peru in 1574, and is in use in both countries and in Chili to this day. The stamped ore is ground into a fine paste with water; this paste, after having been allowed to dry up a little in air, is placed on a stone fivor along with a quantity of salt, and the two are trodden together by mules. On the following day there are added certain proportions of ‘‘magistral” (a kind of crude sulphate of copper made by roasting copper pyrites) and of mercury, and the mules are kept going until the silver is as far as possible converted into amalgam, which takes from fifteen to forty-five days. The rationale of the process is not quite understood. According to Boussingault, the cupric chloride (formed by the salt from the sulphate) chlorinates part of the sulphide of silver, thus—

2CuCl, + Ag S=2AgC1+S8+Cu,Cl,,

and the cuprous chloride formed acts upon another portion of sulphide of silver, thus— Cu,Cl, + Ag,S =2AgCl1+Cu,S,

and in this way all the sulphide of silver is gradually converted into chloride. The chloride is reduced to the metallic state by the mercury (AgCl+ Hg=HgCl+Ag) with formation of calomel, the metallic silver uniting with the surplus mercury into amalgam. The calomel is allowed to go to waste.

The Augustin process of silver extraction is only a peculiar mode of metallifying and collecting the silver of an ore after it has been by some preliminary opcration converted into chloride or sulphate. Either salt is brought into solution—the chloride by means of hot brine, the sulphate by means of hot water, acidified with oil of vitriol ; the solution is separated from the insolubles, and made to filter through a bed of precipitated copper. The copper reduces the silver to metal, which remains on the bed as a spongy mass, while an equivalent quantity of copper chloride (or sulphate) passes through as a solution. The silver sponge is col- lected, freed from adhering copper by muriatic acid in contact with air, and then sent to the furnace. From the copper liquor that metal is precipitated in its original form by means of iron,

The silver furnished by any of these methods is never pure, even in the commercial sense. A general method for its purification is to fuse it up with lead and subject the alloy to cupellation (see Luad, vol. xiv. p. 376). Cupel-silver is apt to contain small quantities of lead (chiefly), bismuth, antimony, copper, and more or less of gold, of which metals, however, only the first three are reckoned ‘‘coutaminations” by the metallurgist. They can be removed by a supplementary cupellation, without added lead, at a high temperature. Addition of lead would remove the copper likewise, but it is usually allowed to remain and the alloy sent out as cuprifcrous silver, to be alloyed with more copper and thus con- verted into some kind of commercial “silver” (see below). If gold is present to the extent of 0°1 per cent. or more, it is recovered by treatment of the metal with nitric acid or boiling vitriol. The gold in either case remains as such ; the silver becomes nitrate or sulphate, and from the solution of either salt is recovered by precipitation with metallic copper. Although nitric acid is the more

expensive of the two parting agents, it is often now preferred because photography has created a large demand for nitrate of silver. Compare GoLp, vol. x. p. 749,

For the “incidental ” extraction of silver from essentially base-métallic ores the method in the case of all lead ores is simply to proceed as if only lead were present,

and from the argentiferous Jead produced 1o extract the noble metal by one of the processes described under Leap (vol. xiv. p. 376-7), while for the treatment of sulphureous copper ores one method is so to smelt the ore (with, if neces. sary, an addition of galena or some form of oxide of lead) as to produce a regulus of lead anda “mat” of sulphide of copper, (Cu,S), which latter should contain as little lead as possible. The silver follows chiefly the lead, and is extracted from it by cupellation; but some silver remains in general even with a lead-free mat. Compare account of the Lautenbach process under Leap.

A modern mode of extracting the silver from a copper mat is to roast it at a very low teniperature, so as to produce a relatively large proportion of metallic sulphate, and then to destroy the bulk of the sulphate of copper by a judiciously-regulated higher tem. perature. The silver all remains as sulphate, whicli is extracted by hot dilute sulphuric acid and wrought by the Augustin method,

Very interesting is the process which was patented by Claudet for the remunerative extraction of the few hundredtlis of a per cent. of silver contained in that kind of cupviferous iron pyrites which is now used, almost exclusively, for the making of vitriol. The ‘‘cinders,” as returned by the vitriol maker, are habitually worked up for copper by roasting them with salt and lixiviating the roasted mass with water, when the copper dissolves as chloride, Cu,Cl, and CuCl,, The silver goes with it, but for its precipita. tion no method was known until Field found that silver dissolved as AgCl in a chloride solution can be precipitated exhaustively by addition of the calculated proportion of a soluble iodide, as Agl. Claudet’s process is only an adaptation of Ficld’s discovery. After having diluted the copper liquor

with a ccrtain proportion of water he adds the weight of iodine, calculated from the assay, as solution of iodide of zinc, which produces a very impure precipitate of iodide of silver. Fron it he re-extracts the iodine, by treatment with zine and dilute sulphuric acid, as iodide of zinc, which is used over again, The “silver precipitate,” which now contains its silver as metal mixed with a large quantity of (chiefly) sulphate of lead, goes to the metal-refiner, who treats it as a lead ore.

Chemically Pure Silver.—Even the best “ fine ” silver of commerce contains a few thousandth-parts of copper or other base metal. To produce perfectly pure metal the most popular method is to first prepare pure chloride (by apply- ing the method given below under “Chloride” to a nitric solution of any kind of ordinary “silver”), and then to reduce the chloride to metal, which can be done in a great variety of ways. One way is to mix the dry chloride intimately with one-fifth of its weight of pure quicklime or one-third of its weight of dry carbonate of soda, and to fuse down the mixture in a fire-clay crucible at a bright red heat. In either case we obtain a regulus of silver lying under a fused slag of chloride—2AgCl (CaO or Na,CO,) = 2Ag(CaCl,+O or 2NaCl+CO,+0). The fused metal is best granulated by pouring it from a sufli- cient height, and asa thin stream, into a mass of cold water. A convenient wet-way method for small quantities is to boil the recently precipitated chloride (which must have been produced and washed in the cold) with caustic soda-ley and just enough of sugar to take away the oxygen of the Ag,O transitorily produced. The silver in this case is obtained as a yellowish-grey heavy powder, which is easily washed by decantation ; but it tends to retain unreduced chloride, which can be removed only by fusion with carbonate of soda.

Stas recommends the following process as yielding a metal which comes nearer ideal purity. Slightly cupriferous silver is made into dry nitrate and the latter fused to reduce any platinum nitrate that may be present to metal. The fused mass is taken up in dilute aiminonia and diluted to about fifty times the weight of the silver it contains. The filtered (blue) solution is now mixed with an ex- cess of solution of sulphite of ammonia, SO,(NH,),, and allowed to stand. After twenty-four hours about one-half of the silver has separated out in crystals ; from the mother-liquor the rest comes down promptly on application of a water-bath heat. The rationale of the process is

that the sulphite hardly acts upon the dissolved oxide of silver, but it reduces some of the oxide of copper, 2Cu0, to Cu,O, with formation of sulphate SO,(NH,).._ This Cu,O deox!- dizes its equivalent of Ag,O, forming Ag+Cu,O,, which latter 1s reduced by the stock of sulphite and reconverted into Cu,O which now acts upon a fresh equivalent of Ag,O ; and so on to the end.

SILVER

Pure silver (ingot) has a beautiful white colour and _ lustre ; it is almost as plastic as pure gold, and, like it,) very soft. Jt does not tarnish in natural air ; but in air | contaminated with ever so little sulphuretted hydrogen it | gradually draws a black film of sulphide. The specific | gravity of the frozen metal is 10-42 to 10°51, rising to 10°57 after coinpression under adie. It is the best con- ductor of heat and electricity. The expansion of unit length from 0° to 100° C. is 0:001936 (Fizeau). The specific heat is 0°0570 (Regnault), 0°0559 (Bunsen). It fuses at 954° C. (Violle)—v.e., far below the fusing point of copper or gold—without oxidation, unless it be in con- tact with a surface of silicate (porcelain glaze, &c.), when a trace of silicate of Ag,O is produced. It volatilizes appreciably at a full red heat; in the oxyhydrogen flame it boils, with formation of a blue vapour. The fused metal readily absorbs oxygen gas (under fused nitre as much as twenty times its volume—Gay-Lussac). When the oxygenated metal freezes the absorbed gas goes off suddenly at the temperature of solidification, and, by forcing its way through the solid crust produces volcanic eruptions of metal which are sometimes very beautiful. The presence of even very little base metal in the silver prevents this ‘‘spitting,” the base metal combining with the oxygen faster than it can be reabsorbed. Pure silver retains a trace of the absorbed oxygen permanently, and Dumas in an experiment on one kilogramme of metal extracted from it 82 milligrammes of oxygen in an ab- solute vacuum at 400°-500°C. Water, and ordinary non-oxidizing aqueous acids generally, do not attack silver in the least, hydrochloric acid excepted, —which, in the presence of air, dissolves the metal very slowly as chloride. solution of common salt acts similarly, the liberated

sodium becoming NaOH. Aqueous hydriodic acid, even in the absence of air, dissolves silver perceptibly, with | evolution of hydrogen (Deville).

Aqueous nitric acid dis- solves the metal readily as nitrate ; hot vitriol converts it into a magma of crystalline sulphate, with evolution of sulphurous acid. Silver is absolutely proof against the action of caustic alkali leys, and almost so against that of _ fused caustic alkalies even in the presence of air. It ranks in this respect next to gold, and is much used to make vessels for chemical operations involving the use of fused caustic potash or soda. The ordinary “ fine” metal is good enough for this purpose.

Stiver ALLoys.—Pure silver is too soft to make durable coins or vessels combining lightness with stability of form. This defect can be cured by alloying it with a little copper. All ordinary “silver” articles consist of such alloys. The proportion of silver in these (their fineness”) is habitually stated in parts of real | silver per 1000 parts of alloy. In Great Britain all silver coins | are made of “standard silver,” the fineness of which, by legal definition, 1s 925. The toleration is 4 units (of pure silver in 1000 of alloy), i.¢., a specimen passes as long as its fineness lies between 925 and 921 (compare Mint, vol. xvi. p. 488). As regards silver- plate the “Hall” in London refuses to stamp any poorer alloy. In Germany and in the United States all silver coins, in France and Austria the major silver coins, are of the fineness 900, with a toleration of 8 units. The minor coins of Austria are of the fine- ness 375 to 520; in France all silver coins under one franc contain _ 835 of silver, 93 of copper, and 72 of zinc in 1000 parts. The | neness prescribed by law or custom for “silver” articles is 950 or 800 (£5) in France, 750 in North Germany, 812°5 in South Ger- | many, and 820 in Austria. All these alloys at least are liable to liquation,’ which means that, although they are perfectly homo- Scneous in the crucible, they frecze into layers of not absolutely the same composition. According to Leval, passing from the skin to the core of an ingot of 900 per mille silver the difference may Amount to 3 units. Of all the alloys tried by that chemist only that Composed according to the formula Ag;Cuy, corresponding to 719 per mille of silver, remained perfectly homogeneous on freez- te He therefore tecommends this alloy for coinage; unfor- : ie however, any silver-copper alloy which contains less than Wa, out. 750 per mille of noble metal tarnishes very perceptibly in \the air, British standard silver is quite free of this defect, but it 4s Inconveniently soft, far softer than the “900” alloy.

call

The extent to which the properties of silver are modified by addition of copper depends on the fineness of the alloy produced. The addition of even three parts of copper to one of silver does not quite obliterate the whiteness of the noble metal. According to Kamarsch the relative abrasion suffered by silver coins of the degrees of finencss named is as follows :—

A VOMGSS seis ces cctsta ses 312 750 900 998 AURABIGD, ...0sc0sa0ss. il 2°3 3°9 9°5 The same observer established the following relation between fine- ness p and specific gravity in coins containing from 375 to 875 of silver per 1000 :—sp. gr. =0°001647 p+ 8°833.

The fusing points of all copper-silver alloys lies below that of pure copper; that of British standard silver is lower than even that of pure silver. For the alloys of silver with other metals than copper, see Gotp, PuaTinum, and Nicxex. The present writer has introduced an alloy of 91 of silver, 7 of gold, and 2 of nickel as a material far superior, on account of its higher rigidity, to fine silver for the making of alkali-proof vessels.

“Oxidized” silver is ordinary cupriferous silver superficially modified by immersion into sulphide of sodium solution (which produces a dark film of sulphide), or otherwise.

Silvering.—For the production of a silver coating on a basc- metallic object we have chiefly two methods. One of these is to dissolve silver in mercury and to apply this amalgam to the (care- fully cleaned) surface of the object by means of a brush. The mercury then is driven away by heat, when a coherent film of silver remains, which adheres very firmly, is quite continuons, and needs not be thick to staud polishing and other surface treatment, This very old method is to this day the best for producing a strong coating, but it is dangerous to the health of the workmen, expen- sive, and troublesome, and has becn almost superseded by the modern process of electroplating (sec ELecTro-METALLURGY, vol. viii. p. 116). Objects made of iron or steel must first be coated over with copper, and then treated as if they consisted of that metal.

For Glass-Stlvering, see Mirror, vol. xvi. p. 500.

Inscriptions on linen, consisting of black metallic silver and consequently proof against all ordinary processes of washing, can be produced by using suitably-contrived silver solutions as inks. A mere solution of nitrate of silver (1 to 8 of water)! will do, if the surface to which it is applied has been prepared by impregna- tion with a solution of 6 parts of soda crystals and 17 of gum arabic in 80 of water, and subsequent ironing. The ink must be applied with a quill or gold pen (compare vol. xiii. p. 81).

SILVER ComMpounDs.—(1) Witrate of Silver (AgNO) is made by dissolving fine silver in a moderate excess of nitric acid of 1°2 sp. gr., applying heat at the end. The solution on cooling deposits crystals—very readily if somewhat strongly acid. Even a slightly cupriferous solution deposits pure or almost pure crystals, Any admixture of copper in these can be removed by fusing the dry crystals, when the copper salt only is reduced to black oxide of copper insoluble in water and thus removable, or by boiling the solution with a little pure oxide of silver (Ag,O), which precipitates the CuO and takes its place. Nitrate of silver forms colourless transparent sonorous plates, which, if free of organic matter, remain unchanged in the light,—which agent readily produces black me- tallic silver if organic matter be in contact with the salt or its solution, One hundred parts of water dissolve, of nitrate of silver-—

at 0° ial 19°°5 IMO? (Ch

121°9 127 °7 227 1111 parts.

The solution is neutral to litmus. The salt dissolves in 4 parts of cold alcohol. Nitrate of silver fuses at 198° C. into a thin colour- less quid, which stands even higher temperatures without decom- position, Ata red heat it is reduced to metal. The fused salt, cast into the form of quill-sized sticks, is used in surgery as a cauterizing agent (‘‘ lapis infernalis,” or lunar caustic), The sticks gain in firmness if alloyed with a little nitrate of potash.

(2) Sulphate of Stlver (Ag.SO,) forms white crystals soluble in 200 parts of cold or 68 of boiling water, but more soluble in dilute sulphuric acid. It stands a red heat without decomposition.

(3) Oxide of Stlver (Ag,O) appears as a dark-brown precipitate when a solution of the nitrate is mixed with excess of caustic potash or—preferably for preparative purposes—baryta water. It is slightly soluble in water, forming a very decidedly alkaline (to litmus) solution, behaving as if it contained the (unknown) AgOH. It seems to suffer reduction in the light. In hydrogen it loses its oxygen at 100° C. (Wohler), in air from about 250° C. upwards. Solutions of numcrous organic substances and other agents reduce oxide of silver, more or less readily, to metal. Ritter produced what he took to be a perowide of silver by decom- posing a solution of the nitrate galvanically, in the form of black metallically-lustrous crystals, which gathered at the positive pole. At 110° C. these decompose almost explosively, with evolution of the 12°77 per cent. of oxygen demanded by Ag,O,; yet according to Berthclot the crystals are 4Ag,03. AgNO, + 2H,0. Buta hydrate of Ag,O, is got by the action of peroxide of hydrogen on Ag,0O.

1 Preferably blackened for visibility by incorporation of some Chinese ink (carbon),

(4) Chloride of Silver (AgCl) comes down as a precipitate when solutions of silver salts are mixed with solutions of chlorides (for preparative purposes AgNO, with HCl, which is preferable to NaCl). The mixture at first has the appearance of a milk, but on being violently shaken it divides into a curdy, heavy, easily settling precipitate and a clear solution,—more readily if the co-reagents are exactly balanced or the silver is in excess than when the precipitant predominates. Chloride of silver is as good as insoluble in water, but hydrochlorie acid, and ehloride solu- tions generally, dissolve it pereeptibly. In dilute sulphuric and nitrie acids it is as insoluble as in plain water. Even boiling oil of vitriol attacks it only very slowly. It is readily soluble in ammonia solution and reprecipitated therefrom on acidification. It dissolves in aqueous thiosulphate of soda, Na,S,O, forming the very stable salt NaAg.S,O., and in cyanide of potassium solution, forming KAg.(NC),. From either solution the silver is conven- iently recoverable only by sulphuretted hydrogen or sulphide of ammonium as an Ag,S precipitate. Chloride of silver fuses at 260° C. into a yellowish liquid,

freezing into a transparent, almost eolourless, glass of horn-like consistence (hence the name ‘‘horn- silver”). The specific gravity of frozen AgCl] is 5°45 (Karsten). It remains undecomposed, but volatilizes appreciably at a red heat. Hydrogen at a dull red heat reduces it to metal. A similar reduction is effected in even the compact ehloride by contact with zine, water, and a little dilute sulphuric acid; the reduction, however, proceeds rather slowly and is rarely quite complete. Unfused chloride of silver, when exposed to sunlight, becomes at first violct, then darker and darker, and at last black, through progressive de- ehlorination, Yet even the black final product, according to Bibra, yields up no silver to hot nitric acid.

(5) Bromide of Silver (AgBr) closely resembles the chloride. The reduction on insolation is prevented by the presence of a trace of free bromine and promoted by that of nitrate of silver. Chlorine converts the hot fused salt into chloride.

(6) Iodide of Silver (Agl), while similar on the whole to the other two haloids, presents marked peculiarities. As formed by precipitation it is distinctly yellow ; it is insoluble in, but decol- orized by, ammonia; it is less soluble in water and dilute nitric acid or other nitrate solutions than even the bromide, this latter execeding in this sense the chloride. But boiling oil of vitriol decomposes it slowly, with elimination of iodine vapours and formation of sulphate. Hydrogen at a red heat does not act upon it ; nor is it at all easily decomposed by zine and dilute acid. Pre- eipitated iodide of silver is eharacteristically soluble in solutions of alkaline iodides and in those of nitrate of silver, with forma- tion of double salts, which, however, are all decomposed, more or less completely, by addition of much water. Pure iodide of silver, even if recently precipitated, is not changed by sun- light, but if contaminated with nitrate of silver it readily blackens, For action of light on silver haloids, see PhoroGrapnHy.

Anatysis.—In a solution of salts derived from purely oxygenated acids the least trace of silver can be detected by hydrochloric acid, which precipitates the silver as chloride (see above), The precipitate, when produced in a possibly complex solution, may inelude the chlorides of lead (PbCl) and mereurosum (Hg,Cl,). Repeated treatment of the (washed) precipitate with boiling water extracts the lead chloride; then by pouring ammonia on the

precipitate we convert the Hg,Cl, into an insoluble black body, while the chloride of silver dissolves and, from the filtrate, can be precipitated by acidification. For the quantitative determination of silver, the ordinary laboratory method is to bring the metal into solution as nitrate and then to throw it down as pure chloride. The chloride is washed, collected, dehydrated by fusion, and weighed. According to Stas, if O=16, Ag=107‘93 and Cl=35°454; hence the chloride contains 0°75273 of its weight of metal.

The assaying of silver ores is done preferably in the ‘‘dry way”; in fact relatively poor ores cannot be assayed satisfactorily in any other. The general method with sulphureous ores is to mix them, as powders, with (silver-free) oxide of lead and tartar, and fuse in a clay or graphite crucible. The regulus includes all the silver. The fuse is poured into a eonical mould of cast- iron, when the metal goes to the bottom of the mould ; the ingot, after cooling, is easily separated from the adhering slag. The slag-free regulus is then placed in a little cupel made out of com- pressed bone-ash, and is heated in a mutile to redness and kept at this temperature in the eurrent of air which pervades the mufile in virtue of its disposition in the furnace until all the lead and base metals generally have been sucked up by the porous cupel. The remaining ‘‘button” of metal is weighed, which gives the eonjoint weight of the silver and gold, which latter metal is rarely absent. For its determination the button is rolled out into a piece of thin sheet, which is “‘parted” with nitrie acid (see GoD). The gold remains and goes to the balance; the weight of the silver is found by difference. Similarly, to determine the fineness of silver alloys, a known weight of the alloy—customarily 0°5 gramme—is ‘‘eupelled,” with addition of a proportion of pure lead depending on the weight of base metal to be removed, as shown by

STL VER

the following table, which, however, holds strictly only for copper. silver alloys :—

Fineness 1000-900…..... 80 units of lead per unit of copper.

” 900-850…..... 64

i 800-750…..640- 53 i a3) below vats Onmereeese 50-40 .

In a well-appointed laboratory two operators who work into each other’s hands ean easily make several dozen of sucli assays in a day. Cupelling, indeed, is the promptest of all methods of ang. lysis, only the results are not quite as exact as is desivable in the case of precious metal, part of the silver being lost b volatilization, and part by being sucked into the cupel. The error attains its maximum in the ease of alloys of about 700 per mille, aud with these eomes to about 735th of the weight of the silver to be determined. It of eourse can be, and always is being, corrected to some extent by ‘‘blank” assays made with known weights of pure silver and pure copper; but such corrections are not quite safe. Hence cupellation nowadays, in the mints at least, is used only for a first approximation, and the exact fineness determined by the “wet-way” process, invented by Gay-Lussac. See ASSAy1ng, Wolk, tk Yee V2

A most excellent method for the quick determination of a not approximately known weight of dissolved silver has been invented by Volhard. This method rests on the fact that solutions of sulphocyanates (including that intensely red salt Fe(NCS); which is produced when, for instance, NCS.H is mixed with ferrie sul. phate) precipitate silver completely from even strongly acid solu tions, as NCS.Ag. A convenient reagent for the method is pro- duced by dissolving 3 NCS.NH, grammes of (chlorine-free) sulphocyanate of ammoninm in water to 1000 c.c. to produce a solution of which 1 ¢.c. precipitates about 345 Ag=10°8 milligrammes” of silver. To determine the exact ‘‘titre,” we dissolve, say, 540 milli- gramines of pure silver in 1°2 nitric acid, and next boil away every trace of N,O3. We then dilute to say 50 c.c.,add 5 c.c, of saturated solution of iron alum (not less), and, lastly, run in sulphocyanate — from the burette, until the red colour of ferric sulphocyanate which — appears locally from the first, by addition of the last drop of NCS solution, has become permanent on stirring. Supposing 49°3 cc of solution to have been required to reach this point, every lee of reagent precipitates £4. milligrammes of silver, and it, of course, always does so, even, let us add, in the presence of (say) 70 per cent. of eopper beside 80 of silver in the alloy under operation. Volhard’s — method is more exact, and, with a small number of samples, takes even less time, than eupellation. (W. D.)

Mode of Occurrence.—Silver is rarely found in the native state, and then only in comparatively small quanti- ties. Most of the ores of silver are difficult to reduce, and it is therefore deemed safe to regard this as the last of the three great coining metals which came into use. Silver is originally as widespread as gold, occurring in nearly all the volcanic rocks and some of the Primary — ones. In the Silver Reef district of Utah it is found in sedimentary sandstone, though this appears to have undergone some change from volcanic action. But gold remains unaltered by the action of the elements, and is — often carried away long distances from its original place of occurrence by the breaking down of the rocks which contain it and their formation anew elsewhere, either as other rocks or as “placers” of gravel or sand, containing gold easily washed out by hand or with rude appliances. Silver, on the contrary, is only to be found in the rocks where it originally occurs. When these are broken down or worn away, the silver is either driven into new mineral combinations, or, more commonly, dissipated and lost. Hence silver is only to be obtained by subterranean mining, and demands the aid of capital and associated labour. The greater rapidity with which gold can be obtained has often influenced the legal relation of value between these two metals, and its bearing upon prices, commerce, and civilization.

Cost of Production.—In nearly all silver ores there 1s some gold, and in nearly all gold ores some silver. In the £70,000,000 worth of metal produced from the Comstock lode of Nevada nearly one-half in value consisted of gold. For this and other reasons, it is impossible to determme the general average cost of producing gold and silver from all the mines during any reasonably long period of time If recent statistics are to be trusted, both metals are pro

.

|

‘

| }

duced on the average at a loss. Such is alleged to have – been the case in California, Australia, and Nevada,} countries whose combined product has equalled in value nearly £600,000,000.

Value.—In some ancient states the value of silver ap- pears to have been superior to that of gold.?, Agatharchides informs us that such was the case in ancient Arabia; and Tacitus says the same of ancient Germany. Strabo alleges that the ratio of value in a country bordering that of the Sabzeans was at one time one gold to two silver; and so late as the 17th century silver and gold were valued equally in Japan. Going back to a remote antiquity, silver appears to have been everywhere equal in value to gold until the silver mines showed signs of exhaustion, when, as the principal coins were of copper and silver, and prices were commonly expressed in these coins, the threatened decrease of money was probably averted and a profit secured for the state by raising the legal value of gold coins. In Greece, in the time of Herodotus (cf. iii. 95), gold was 13 times the value of silver, at which ratio it appears to have stood for a long period.

When the Romans acquired the placer mines of Pan- nonia, Dacia, Spain, Gaul, &c, they made their principal coins of gold; and at a later period, when the supplies of this metal fell off, they raised the legal value of silver coins to one-tenth that of gold ones of like weight and fineness, This ratio was afterwards changed to 11, and still later to 12 silver for 1 gold. In the Arabian states of the 7th century the ratio was about 64 for 1; yet in France at the same time it was 10 for 1; in England during the 12th century it was 9 for 1; in France during the 14th

century certain silver and gold coins of like weight bore the same value, hence the ratio was 1 for 1; in Castile and Leon in 1454—74 it was 74 for 1. Speaking broadly, between the rise of Mohammedanism and the opening of | the silver mines of America the value of silver compared with gold gradually rose. It is evident that there were two lines of ratios, the one having an Indo-Arabic, the | other a Romano-Germanic origin, and that the conflict _ of ratios—which only ceased when America was discovered _ and a great coinage of the precious metals occurred in _ Spain—gave rise to many of those otherwise inexplicable _ lowerings of coins, of one or the other metal, which charac- _ terize this period.

In Spain, by the edict of Medina (1497), the ratio was 103. When America was plundered the first fruits were gold, not silver; whereupon Spain, in 1546, and before _ the wealth of the silver mines of Potosi was known, raised | the legal value of gold to 134, and, as Spain then mono- polized the supplies of the precious metals, the rest of the world was obliged to acquiesce in her valuation. During the following century Portugal obtained such immense quantities of gold from the East Indies, Japan, and Brazil that the value of her imports of this metal exceeded £3,000,000 a year, whilst those of Spain had dwindled to £500,000 in gold, and had only increased to

£2,500,000 in silver. Portugal now governed the ratio, _ and in 1688 raised the value of gold to 16 times that of silver. Except during a brief period of forty years, _ this ratio has ever since been maintained in Spanish and

British America and the United States. A century later

the spoils of the Orient were exhausted, the Brazilian

placers began to decline, and Portugal lost her importance.

Spain thus again got control of the ratio, and, as her colonial produce was chiefly silver, she raised its value

_ in 1775 from one-sixteenth to one-fifteenth and a half _ | “2

q F DelMar, Hist. Prec. Metals, chap. xxxi. Boeckh, Political Economy of the Athenians, book i. chap. 6.

| = Sir Edward J, Reed, Japan, chap. xviii.; DelMar, Money and | Civilization, chap. xx.

ei lL Vobe

that of gold for the Peninsula, permitting it to remain at one-sixteenth in the colonies. France, whose previous ratio (that of 1726) was 144, adopted the Spanish ratio of 154 in 1785, and has adhered to it ever since. These three historical ratios, and the bearing of each upon the others, have influenced

all legislation on the subject, and, where there was no legislation, have governed the bullion markets for more than two centuries.

Meanwhile an economical school arose which, while conceding it to be necessary that the state should fabri- cate coins, denied it the right to limit the number of coins, or to exact payment (seigniorage) for coinage. This school found expression in the Act 18 Charles II. (1666), which permitted private persons to have coined for them an unlimited quantity of gold or silver, at the public mint, free of charge. Similar Acts were passed in Holland, France, and other countries. But the crown retained the right to regulate the nominal value of gold and silver coins, the exercise of which has had the greatest influence on the relative market value of those metals.

To check abuses of this prerogative the economical school next directed its efforts towards the adoption of one in place of two metals for full legal tender coins. The principal advocates of this change during the last century were Dutot (1739) and Desrotours (1790), and during the present one Lord Liverpool (1808), De Quincey (1849), and Chevalier (1856). The policy thus advocated was practically adopted in Holland and England during the 18th century, and by the latter definitively in 1816. It was accepted by the Monetary Conference assembled at Paris June 20, 1867, and by the Commercial Convention at Berlin October 20, 1868. In 1871 it was practically, though not definitively, adopted by Germany, and since that date by several smaller states, including distant Japan. In France (1874) and the United States (1873-78) the policy pursued has been a waiting one. Full legal tender silver coins continue to be employed for money, but the state has ceased to coin silver on private account. Either Germany, France, or the United States may, by simple enactment, and without recoinage or change of coins, return to the “bimetallic” basis of money.

The closure of the mints of all important commercial countries to silver, while they have remained open to the free coinage of gold at a fixed valuation, has enhanced the purchasing power of gold, compared with either silver or other commodities, about one-fourth. The price of uncoined silver being usually quoted in gold, this pheno- menon appears as a “‘fall of silver,” by which term it is commonly known. This alleged fall, its causes, conse- quences, and remedies, constitute the “ Silver Question.”

Production.—In the principal producing countries—the United States, Mexico, Chili, and Peru—mining is free, and there are no official returns of the production, which is therefore mere matter of conjecture. In the United States it is the custom to value silver bullion at one- sixteenth that of gold. This unduly swells the value of the conjectural product of that country more than one- fourth (see Report of the United States Monetary Com- mission of 1876, Appendix, pp. 1-66). From a careful consideration of the bullion movement, the total annual product of silver throughout the world at the present time is estimated at between 50 and 60 million ounces, at which figure it has remained steady upwards of ten years.

Consumption in the Arts.—Direct inquiries as to the quantity of silver used in the arts have met with little success, and the statistics so obtained are defective. But the total production of silver in the Western World, from the discovery of America to the present time, has been, in value, about 1400 million pounds sterling, of

which about 300 million pounds remain in coins. Conse- XXIT. — 10

quently 1100 millions, or nearly four-fifths, have been consumed in the arts, lost, &., or exported to Asia. There are estimated to be about 50 or 60 million pounds sterling worth of silver coins in India,! and some trifling amounts each in China, Japan, Persia, &c. On the whole it appears quite safe to estimate the average annual con- sumption of silver in the arts and through wear, tear, and loss as fully equal to three-fourths of the production. Lowe in 1822 estimated it at two-thirds. Silver is princi- pally used for plate and jewellery; it is also consumed in photography, and in numerous chemical preparations, such as lunar caustic, indelible ink, hair dyes, fulminating powder, &e. (A. DE.)

SILVERIUS, the successor of Pope Agapetus I., was a legitimate son of Pope Hormisdas, born before his father entered the priesthood. He was consecrated on June 8, 536, having purchased his elevation to the see of St Peter from the Gothic king Theodotus. Six months afterwards (Dec. 9) he was one of those who admitted Belisarius into the city. He opposed the restoration of the patriarch Anthimus, whom Agapetus had deposed, and

thus brought upon himself the hatred of Theodora, who desired to see Vigilius made pope. He was deposed accordingly by Belisarius in March 537 on a charge (not improbably well founded) of treasonable correspondence with the Goths, and degraded to the rank of a simple monk. He found his way to Constantinople, and Justinian, who entertained his complaint, sent him back to Rome, but Vigilius was ultimately able to banish his rival to Pandataria, where the rest of his life was spent in obscurity. The date of his death is unknown.

SILVESTER I, bishop of Rome from January 314 to December 335, succeeded Melchiades and was followed by Marcus. The accounts of his papacy preserved in the Inber Pontificalis (7th or 8th century) and in Anastasius are little else than a record of the gifts said to have been conferred on the Roman Church by Constantine the Great. He was represented at the council of Nice, and is said to have held a council at Rome to condemn the heresies of Arius and others. The story of his having baptized Con- stantine is pure fiction, as almost contemporary evidence shows the emperor to have received this rite near Nico- media at the hands of Eusebius, bishop of that city. According to Déllinger, the entire legend, with all its details of the leprosy and the proposed bath of blood, cannot have been composed later than the close of the 5th century, while it is certainly alluded to by Gregory of Tours (od. 594) and Bede. ‘The so-called Donation of Constantine was long ago shown to be spurious, but the document is of very considerable antiquity and, in Déllinger’s opinion, was forged in Rome between 752 and 777. It was certainly known to Pope Hadrian in 778, and was inserted in the false decretals towards the middle of the next century.

SILVESTER II., pope from 999 till 1003, and previ- ously famous, under his Christian name of Gerbert, first as a teacher and afterwards as archbishop successively of Rheims and Ravenna, was an Aquitanian by birth, and was educated from his boyhood at the abbey of St Gerold in Aurillac. Here he seems to have had Gerald for his abbot and Raymond for his instructor, both of whom were among the most trusted correspondents of his later life. From Aurillac, while yet a young man (adolescens), he was carried off to the Spanish march by “Borrell, duke of Hither Spain” for the sake of prosecuting his studies in a district where learning, at that time,

flourished more luxuriantly than in Aquitania. Borrell entrusted his young protegé to the care of a certain Bishop Hatto, under whose instruc- tion Gerbert made great progress in mathematics. In

1 R, B. Chapman, Financial Department of Government of India.

this duke we may certainly recognize Borel, who, accord. ing to the Spanish chroniclers, was count of Barcelony from 967 to 993, while the bishop may probably be identified with Hatto, bishop of Vich or Ausona from c. 960 to 971 or 972. In company with his two patrons Gerbert visited Rome, where the pope, hearing of the young student's proficiency in music and astronomy, induced him to remain in Italy, and before long intro. duced him to the emperor Otto I.

When brought before the emperor, Gerbert admitted his skill in all branches of the quadrivium, but lamented his comparative ignorance of logic. Eager to supply this deficiency he seized the opportunity of following Lothaire's ambassador Garamnus, archdeacon of Rheims, to this city, for the sake of studying under so famous a dialec- tician in the episcopal schools which were then (c. 972% rising into reputation under the care of Archbishop Adalbero (969-989). So promising a_ scholar soon attracted the attention of Adalbero himself, and Gerbert was speedily invited to exchange his position of learner for that of teacher. At Rheims he seems to have studied and lectured for many years, having amongst his pupils, now or ata later time, Hugh Capet's son Robert, after- wards king of France, and Richer, to whose history we owe almost every detail of his master's early life. Accord- ing to this writer Gerbert's fame began to spread over western Europe, throughout Gaul, Germany, and Italy, till it roused the envy of a rival teacher, Otric of Saxony, in whom we may doubtless recognize Octricus of Magde- burg, the favourite scholar of Otto I., and, in earlier days, the instructor of St Adalbert, the apostle of the Bohemians. Otric, suspecting that Gerbert erred in his classification of the sciences, sent one of his own pupils to Rheims to take notes of his lectures, and, finding his suspicions correct, accused him of his error before Otto IL. The emperor, to whom Gerbert was well known, appointed a time for the two philosophers to argue before him; and Richer has left a long account of this dialectical tourna-

ment at Ravenna, which lasted out a whole day and was only terminated towards evening at the imperial bidding. The date of this controversy seems to have been about Christmas 980, and it was probably followed almost imme- diately by Otric's death, October 1, 981.

It must have been about this time (c. 982) that Gerbert received the great abbey of Bobbio from the emperor. That it was Otto IT., and not, as formerly supposed, Otto I., who gave him this benefice, seems evident from 4 diploma quoted by Mabillon (Annales, iv. 121). Richer, however, makes no mention of this event; and it is only from allusions in Gerbert's letters that we learn how the new abbot's attempts to enforce his dues waked a spirit of discontent which at last drove him in November 983 to take refuge with his old patron Adalbero. It was to no purpose that he appealed to the emperor and empress for restitution or redress; and it was perhaps the hope of extorting his reappointment to Bobbio, as a reward for his services to the imperial cause, that changed the studious scholar of Rheims into the wily secretary of Adalbero. It was a time of great moment in the history of Western Europe. Otto II. died in December 989, leaving the empire to his infant heir Otto III. Lothaire claimed the guardianship, and attempted to make use of his position to serve his own purposes in Lorraine, which would in all probability have been lost to the empire had it not been for the indefatigable efforts of Adalbero and Gerbert. Into the obscure details of the succeeding years,

|

| Mouzon, near Sedan (June 2, 995). _ prohibition Gerbert appeared in his own behalf, The events

eihy ES 7 i R

as they have to be pieced together from the letters of Gerbert and the hints of Richer or the later annalists, there is no need to enter here. Gerbert's policy is to be identified with that of his metropolitan, and was strongly influenced by gratitude for the benefits that he had received from both the elder Ottos.

According to M. Olleris's arrangement of the letters, Gerbert was at Mantua and Rome in 985. Then followed

| the death of Lothaire (2d March 986) and of Louis V.,

the last Carolingian king, in May 987. Later on in the same year Adalbero crowned Hugh Capet (1st June) and his son Robert (25th December). Such was the power of Adalbero and Gerbert in those days that it was said their influence alone sufficed to make and unmake kings. The archbishop died 23d January 989, having, according to his secretary's account, designated Gerbert his successor before his decease. Notwithstanding this, the influence of the empress Theophania secured the appointment for Arnulf, a bastard son of Lothaire. The new prelate took the oath of fealty to Hugh Capet and persuaded Gerbert to remain with him. When Charles of Lorraine, Arnulf's uncle, and the illegitimate son of Louis D'Outremer, surprised Rheims in the autumn of the same year, Gerbert fell into his hands and for a time continued to serve Arnulf, who had now gone over to his uncle's side. He had, however, returned to his allegiance to the house of Capet before the fall of Laon placed both Arnulf and Charles at the mercy of the French king (c. 30th March 991). Then followed the council of St Basle, near Rheims, at which Arnulf confessed his treason and was degraded from his office (17th June 991). In return for his services

| Gerbert was elected to succeed the deposed bishop.

The episcopate of the new metropolitan was marked by a vigour and activity that were felt not merely in his own diocese but as far as Tours, Orleans, and Paris. Mean- while the friends of Arnulf appealed to Rome, and a papal legate was sent to investigate the question. As yet Hugh Capet maintained the cause of his nominee and forbade the prelates of his kingdom to be present at the council of Notwithstanding this

of the next few years are somewhat obscure. Council seems to have followed council, but with uncertain results. At last Hugh Capet died in 996, and, shortly after, his son Robert married Bertha, the widow of Odo, count of Blois. The pope condemned this marriage as adulterous ; and Abbo of Fleury, who visited Rome shortly after Gregory V's accession, is said to have procured the restoration of Arnulf at the new pontiff's demand. We

may surmise that Gerbert left France towards the end of 995, as he was present at Otto III.'s coronation, May 21, 996. Somewhat later he became Otto's instructor in arithmetic, and had been appointed archbishop of Ravenna before May 998. Karly in the next year he was elected pope (April 999), and took the title of Silvester IL. In this capacity Gerbert showed the same energy that had characterized his former life. He is generally credited with having fostered the Splendid vision of a restored empire that now began to fill the imagination of the young emperor, who is said to have confirmed the papal claims to eight counties in the Ancona

"march. Writing in the name of the desolate church at

Jerusalem he called upon the warriors of Christendom to arm themselves in defence of the Holy City, once "the light of the world," but now fallen so low. Thus he Sounds the first trumpet-call of the crusades, though almost 4 century was to pass away before his note was repeated 'by Peter the Hermit and Urban IL!

1 This letter,

even if spurious as now suspected, is found in the

| lith-century Leyden MS., and is therefore anterior to the first

. crusade,

Nor did Silvester II. confine himself to plans on a large scale. He is also found confirming his old rival Arnulf in the see of Rheims ; summoning Adalbero or Azelmus of Laon to Rome to answer for his crimes; judging between the archbishop of Mainz and the bishop of Hildesheim ; besieging the revolted town of Cesena; flinging the count of Angouléme into prison for an offence against a bishop ; confirming the privileges of Fulda abbey ; granting charters to bishoprics far away on the Spanish mark ; and, on the eastern borders of the empire, erecting Prague as the seat of an archbishopric for the Slavs. More remarkable than all his other acts is his letter to St Stephen, king of Hun- gary, to whom he sent a golden crown,

and whose kingdom he accepted as a fief of the Holy See. It must, however, be remarked that the genuineness of this letter, in which Gerbert to some extent foreshadows the temporal claims of Hildebrand and Innocent III., has been hotly contested, and that the original document has long been lost. All Gerbert's dreams for the advancement of church and em- pire were cut short by the death of Otto IIL, 4th February 1002; and this event was followed a year later by the death of the pope himself, which took place 12th May 1003. His body was buried in the church of St John Lateran, where his tomb and inscription are yet to be seen.

A few words must be devoted to Silvester II. as regards his attitude to the Church of Rome and the learning of his age. He has left us two detailed accounts of the proceedings of the council of St Basle; and, despite his reticence, it is impossible to doubt that he was the moving spirit in Arnulf's deposition. On the whole it may be said that his position in this question as to the rights of the papal see over foreign metropolitans resembled that of his great predeeessor Hincmar, to whose authority he constantly appeals. But it is useless to seek in his writings for any defini- tion of the relationship of these powers laid down with logical pre- eision. He is rather the practised debater who will admit his opponent's principles for the moment when he sees his way to moulding them to his own purposes, than the philosophical states- man who has formulated a theory from whose terms he will not move. Roughly sketched, his argument is as follows. Rome is indeed to be honoured as the mother of the ehurches ; nor would Gerbert oppose her judgments except in two cases—(1) where she enjoins something that is contrary to the decrees of a universal couneil, such as that of Nice, or (2) where, after having been once appealed to in a matter of ecclesiastical discipline and having re- fused to give a plain and speedy decision, she should, at a later date, attempt to call in question the provisions of the metropolitan synod called to remedy the effects of her negligence. The decisions of a Gregory or a Leo the Great, of a Gelasius or an Innocent, prelates of holy life and unequalled wisdom, are accepted by the universal church ; for, coming from sueh men, they cannot but be good. But who could recognize in the cruel and lustful popes of later days,—in John XII. or Boniface VII., ‘‘monsters, as they were, of more than human iniquity,”—anything else than “Anti- christ sitting in the temple of God and showing himself as God ?” Gerbert proceeds to argue that the church

councils admitted the right of metropolitan synods to depose unworthy bishops, but coutends that, even if an appeal to Rome were necessary, that appeal had been made a year before without effect. This last clause prepares us to find him shifting his position still further at the council of Causey, where he advances the proposition that John XVI. was represented at St Basle by his legate Seguin, archbishop of Sens, and that, owing to this, the decrees of the latter council had received the papal sanction. Far firmer is the tone of his later letter to the same archbishop, where he contends from his- torical evidence that the papal judgment is not infallible, and encourages his brother prelate not to fear excommunication in a righteous cause, for it is not in the power even of the successor of Peter ‘‘to separate an innocent priest from the love of Christ.”

Besides being the most distinguished statesman Gerbert was also the most accomplished scholar of his age. But in this aspect he is rather to be regarded as the diligent expositor of other men’s views than as an original thinker. Except as regards philo- sophical and religious speculation, his writings show a range of interest and knowledge quite unparalleled in that generation. His pupil Richer has left us a detailed account of his system of teaching at Rheims. So far as the trivium is concerned, his text-books were Victorinus’s translation of Porphyry’s Isagoge, Aristotle’s Categories, and Cicero’s Zopics with Manlius’s Commentaries. From dialectics he urged his pupils to the study of rhetoric; but, recognizing the necessity of a large vocabulary, lie accustomed them to read the Latin poets with care. Virgil, Statius, Terence, Juvenal, Horace,

Persius, and Lucan are specially named as entering into a course of training which was rendered more stimulating by a free use of open discussion. More remarkable still were his methods of teach- ing the quadrivium. To assist his lectures on astronomy he con- structed elaborate globes of the terrestrial and celestial spheres, on which the course of the planets was marked ; for facilitating arith- metical and perhaps geometrical processes he constructed an abacus with twenty-seven divisions and a thousand counters of horn. MSS. of those classical authors that his own library did not contain. More extraordinary still was his knowledge of music—an accomplish- ment

which seems to have been his earliest recommendation to Otto I. Probably he was beyond his age in this science, for we read of Garamnus, his first tutor at Rhcims, whom he attempted to ground in this subject: ‘Artis difficultate victus, a musica rejectus est.” Gerbert’s letters contain more than one allusion to organs which he seems to have constructed, and William of Malmesbury has preserved an account of a wonderful musical instrument still to be seen in his days at Rheims, which, so far as the English chronicler’s words can be made out, seems to refcr to an organ worked by steam. The same historian tells us that Gerbert borrowed from the Arabs (Saraceni) the abacus with ciphers (but see NuMERALS, vol. xvii. p. 627). Perhaps Gerbert’s chief claim to the remembrance of posterity is to be found in the care and expense with which he gathered together MSS. of the classical writers. His love for literature was a passion. In the turmoil of his later life he looked back with regret to his student days; and ‘for all his troubles philosophy was his only cure.” Everywhcre —at Rome, at Treves, at Moutier-en-Der, at Gerona in Spain, at Barcelona—he had friends or agents to procure him copies of the great Latin writers for Bobbio or Rheims. To the abbot of Tours he writes that he is ‘‘labouring assiduously to form a library,” and “throughout Italy, Germany, and Lorraine (Belgica) is spend- ing vast sums of money in the acquisition of MSS.” It is note- worthy, however, that Gerbert never writes for a copy of one of the Christian fathers, his aim being, seemingly, to preserve the fragments of a fast-perishing secular Latin literature. It is equally remarkable that, despite his residence on the Spanish mark, he shows no token of a knowledge of Arabic, a fact which is perhaps sufficient to overthrow the statement of his younger contemporary Adhemar as to his having studied at Cordova. There is hardly a trace to be found in his writings of any acquaintance with Greek.

So remarkable a character as that of Gerbert left its mark on the age, and fables soon began to cluster round his name. Towards the end of the 11th century Cardinal Benno, the opponent of Hildebrand, is said to have made him the first of a long line of magician popes. Orderic Vitalis improves this legend by details of an intervicw with the devil, who prophesied Gerbert’s threefold elevation in the famous line that Gerbert’s contemporaries attri- buted to the pope himself:

Transit in R. Gerbertus in R. post papa vigens R.

A few years later William of Malmesbury adds a love adventure at Cordova, a compact with the devil, the story of a speaking statue that foretold Gerbert's death at Jerusalem-—a prophecy fulfilled, somewhat as in the case of Henry IV. of England, by his dying in the Jerusalem church of Rome, —and that imaginative story of the statue with the legend ''Strike here," which, aftcr having found its way into the Gesta Romanorwm, has of late been revived in the Earthly Paradise.

Gerbert's extant works may be divided into five classes. (a) A collection of letters, some 230 in number. These are to be found for the most part in an 11th- century MS. at Leyden. Other important MSS. are those of the Barberini Library at Rome (late 16th century), of Middlehill (17th century), and of St Peter's abbey, Salzburg. With the letters may be grouped the papal decrees of Gerbert when Silvester IT. (6) The Acta Concilit Remensis ad Sanctum Basolum, a detailed account of the proceedings and discourses at the great council of St Basle ; a shorter account of his apologetic speeches at the councils of Mouzon and Causey; and drafts of the decrees of two or three other councils or impcrial constitutions promulgated when he was archbishop of Ravenna or pope, The important works on the three above-mentioned councils are to be found in the llth-century Leyden MS. just alluded to. (c) Gerbert's theological works com- prise a Sermo de Informatione Episcoporum and a treatise entitled De Corpore et Sanguine Domini, both of very doubtful authenticity. (d) Of his philosophical works we only have one, Libellus de Rationalt et Ratione uti, written at the request of Otto III, and preserved in an llth-century MS. at Paris. (e) His mathematical works consist of a Regula de Abaco Computt, of which a 12th-century MS. is to be found at the Vatican; and a Libellus de Numerorum Divisione (11th and 12th century MSS. at Rome, Montpellier, and Paris), dedicated to his friend and correspondent Constantine of Fleury, A long treatise on geometry, attributed to Gerbert, is of somewhat doubtful authenticity. To these may be added a very short disquisition on the same subject addresscd to Adalbold, and a similar one, on one of his own spheres, addressed to Constantiue, abbot of Micy. All the writings of Gerbert are collected in the edition of M. Ollcris. (FAG A

SILVESTER III. When Boniface IX. was driven from Rome early in January 1044, John, bishop of Sabina, was elected in his stead and took the title of Silvester ITI. Within three months Boniface returned and expelled his rival. Nearly three years later (December 1046) the

council of Sutri deprived him of his bishopric and priest. hood. He was then sent to a monastery, where he seems to have died.

SIMANCAS, a walled town of Spain, 84 miles south. west from Valladolid, on the road to Zamora, is situated on the Pisuerga, here crossed by a fine bridge of seventeen arches. The population within the municipal boundaries was 1258 in 1885. In the north-western angle of the town stands the Archivo General del Reino, originally 4 fortified castle, to which the national archives of Spain were removed in 1563 (the suggestion was due to Ximenez), The extensive architectural alterations and repairs which were necessary were made under the direction of Herrera, Berruguete, and Mora, and the arrangement of the papers was entrusted to Diego de Ayala. They now occupy forty- six rooms, and are arranged in upwards of 80,000 bundles (30,000,000 documents), including important private as well as state papers, ambassadors' correspondence, and the like. The archives of the Indies, originally lodged here, were transferred in the 18th century to the Lonja of Seville. Permission to consult the documents at Simancas can now be readily obtained.

SIMBIRSK, a government of eastern Russia, on the right bank of the middle Volga, with Kazaji on the N,, Samara on the E., Saratoff on the §., and Penza and Nijni-Novgorod on the W., has an area of 19,110 square miles, and a population (1882) of 1,471,164. It is occupied by the eastern parts of the great central plateau of middle Russia, which slowly rises towards the south, and gently slopes in the north towards the great Oka depression of the middle Volga. Its higher parts range from 750 to 1000 feet above the sea, and form the Zheguleff range of hills, which compel the Volga to make its great bend at Samara; while the numerous valleys and ravines which intersect it, and are excavated to a depth of 700 to 800 feet, give quite a hilly aspect to several parts of it, especially in the east, where it descends with abrupt crags towards the broad valley of the Volga. In the

west a broad depression, traversed by numerous rivers and streams, extends along the left bank of the Sura. All geological formations, from the Carboniferous upwards, are met with in Simbirsk. The Volga flows for 300 miles along the eastern boundary, separating Simbirsk from Samara. The shallow Sviyaga rises in the Samarskaya Luka Hills and flows parallel to the Volga, at a distance of 2 to 20 miles, but in an opposite direction. The Sura, also flowing northwards, waters the western part of Simbirsk ; it is navigable for more than 270 miles, and, as it is free from ice earlier than the Volga and flows towards central Russia, goods are sometimes transported by land to the Sura to be shipped on it when speedy transport is desired. Its tributaries—the Barysh, Alatyr (100 miles), Piyana, and others—are not navigable. The Usa (80 miles) and the Syzraii (100 miles) flow east and join the Volga below the Samara bend. A few lakes and marshes are met with in the west of the government. The forests, although rapidly disappearing, still cover 3,894,800 acres, while of the remainder 5,930,600 acres are arable, 1,150,800 acres prairie and pasture land, and 605,600 acres uncultivable. In the north excellent forests of timber cover large areas, but in the south they are rare. The climate is severe, and the extremes are great. Simbirsk the average temperature is 38°-7, but the ther mometcr sometimes reaches 114° F., and frosts of — 47 fF, are not uncommon ; the average rain and snow fall is only 17-6 inches. South of the Samara Hills the climate 18 much less severe, and gardening, which is prosecuted with great difficulty in the north, flourishes there.

The population, which was but 1,192,510 in 1867, had reached 1,471,164 in 1882, of whom only 100,740 lived in towns. The

|

| |

|

greater number (about two-thirds)are Great Russians, the remainder being Mordvinians (13 per cent.), Tchuvashes (9‘3 per cent.), and Tartars (8°38 per eent.), with about 1000 Jews. The Mordvinians are chiefly settled in the

north-west, in Ardatoff and Alatyr (40 and 26 per cent. of population), and on the Volga in Senghilei ; the Tehuvashes make about one-third of the population of the districts of Buinsk and Kurmysh, contiguous to Kazafi; the Tartars con- stitute about 35 per cent. in Buinsk and 18 per cent. in Scnghilei. Only the Tartars (about 100,000) are Mohammedans, the remainder peing Greek-Orthodox or Dissenters. As in other Volga govern- ments, the villages in Simbirsk are mostly large, many of them having from 3000 to 5000 inhabitants. Agriculture, favoured by a fertile soil, is the chief occupation, grain being exported or manufactured into spirit. Linseed and hempseed are cultivated for exportation, as also kitchen-garden produce and some fruit. Bee-keeping is a favourite and remunerative occupation with Mordvinians, and fishing (sturgeon) is carried on in the Volga and the Sura. The timber-trade in the north and the shipbuilding on the Sura are considerable sources of wealth ; wooden sledges and wheels are made and exported, as well as bags of lime-tree bast, — the last-named industry giving occupation to whole villages. Other petty trades, also carried on in conjunction with agriculture, are the manufacture of felts and felt hats, linen stuffs (especially among the Mordvinians), cottons, boots, and small metal wares. A character- istic feature of Simbirsk is the trade in wooden vessels, which are exported to Vyatka, Perm, Orenburg, Samara, and the Don, and there exchanged for cat, squirrel, and hare skins. Flour-mills are numerous. Watered by the Volgaand Sura, and moreover traversed in its southern portion by the railway conneeting Orenburg and Samara with Penzaand Ryazafi, by Batraki and Syzrafi, the govern- ment has an active trade. Its exports, however, are much below those of Samara and Saratoff. Batraki and Syzrafi are important eentres of traffic, the aggregate amount of merehandise entered and cleared by rail and boat being respectively 2,485,000 and 2,000,000 ewts. (timber not ineluded). The chief ports of lading on the Sura are Alatyr, Promzino-Gorodisehe, and Berezniki, each with exports valued at about 750,000 roubles. Corn, linseed, woollen stuffs, timber, potash, and wooden wares are the principal articles of trade.

Simbirsk is very backward as regards education. There were in 1882 only 462 schools (17,795 boys and 2663 girls) and 8 secondary schools (497 male and 516 female pupils).

The government is divided into eight districts, the chief towns of which, with their populations in 1880, are—Simbirsk (36,600), Alatyr (15,000), Ardatoff (4740), Buinsk (4180), Karsun (3740), Kurmysh (1930), Senghilei (3500), and Syzrafi (24,500). Kotyakoff (580) and Tagai (2400) have municipal institutions. The above- mentioned ports of lading are more important than most of the towns. ;

The first Russian settlers made thcir appearance in the Simbirsk

| region in the 14th century, but did not extend east of the Sura.

Not till two eenturies later did they cross the Sura and the district begin to be peopled by refugces from Moscow. The Zheguleff Mountains in the south still continuing to be a place of refuge for the criminal and the persecuted, Simibirsk was founded in 1648,

and a palisaded earthen wall was built, running south-west of the

new town, with small forts extending to the Sura. The region thus protected was soon settled, and, as the Russian villages advanced further south, Syzrafi was founded, and a second line of small forts, extending also towards the Sura, was erected. The colonizers settled rapidly, and the aboriginal Mordvinians soon adopted many of their customs, so as to lose their ethnographical individnality, especially within the last fifty years. Simbirsk received the name of au old Tartar settlement, Sinbir, situated 9 miles south of the present town, on the opposite bank of the Volga.

SIMBIRSK, capital of the above government, is situ- ated 576 miles east-south-east of Moscow, between the Volga and the Sviyaga, here separated by an isthmus only 2 miles broad. The central part of Simbirsk—the Crown (Vyenets), containing the cathedral and the best houses— is built on a hill 560 feet above the Volga, whence there 18 a beautiful view over the low left bank of the river. Adjoining is the trading part of Simbirsk, while farther down on the slope, towards the Volga, are scattered the store-houses, the shops for the sale of stoneware and other

_ merchandise brought by the steamers and boats, and the _ poorest suburbs of the city; these last also occupy the

western slope towards the Sviyaga. There are three

_ Suburbs on the left bank of the Volga, communication

with them being maintained in summer by steamers. A Sreat fire having destroyed nearly all the town in 1864, it has been again built on a new plan, still mostly of wood. The cathedral of St Nicholas dates from 1712. The new

ee one, that of the Trinity, was erected by the nobility in com- memoration of 1812. The old church of St Nicholas on the Karamzin Square is architecturally pleasing. A public garden has been laid out on the top of the Vyenets Hill and another in the outskirts of the city, while no fewer than three hundred private gardens, where fruits are grown for exportation, are scattered throughout the town. The historian Karamzin (born in 1766 in the vicinity of Sim- birsk) has a monument here, and a public library bearing his name contains about 15,000 volumes. Gardening and fishing occupy many of the inhabitants. The trade is brisk, corn being the principal item, while next come potash, wool, fruits, wooden wares, and manufactured pro- duce. The Simbirsk fair, having a turnover of some 6 million roubles, still maintains its importance. The popu- lation (24,600 in 1867) was 36,600 in 1880.

SIMEON (PY), second son of Jacob by Leah (Gen. xxix. 33). The tribe of Simeon, like that of Levi, was broken up at a very early period, under circumstances of which we have some indication in Gen. xxxiv. and xlix. (see IsRaEL, vol. xiii. p. 400 sg., and Levirss). In Judges i. the Simeonites appear as sharing the conquests of Judah in the extreme south of Canaan, but there is no mention of them in this region in 1 Sam. xxx., and the tribe is not named at all in the blessing of Moses. It reappears, however, in 1 Chron. iv. 24—43 (cf. xii. 25), and is reckoned to the kingdom of Ephraim (2 Chron. xv. 9; xxxiv. 6). The Arabian wars of Simeon spoken of in 1 Chron. iv. have been connected by Hitzig and others with a supposed Israelite kingdom of Massa, which they find in Prov. xxxi. 1, translating “Lemuel, king of Massa,” and comparing Gen, xxv. 14 and Isa. xxi. 11 sg., where, however, ‘it is quite gratuitous to suppose an embassy to the prophet from Israelites in Arabia. The whole speculation and the further development of Dozy (The Israelites in Mecca) is fanciful; cf. Wellhausen,

Prolegomena, Eng. tr., pp. 212 sg. The heroine of the book of Judith is made to be of the tribe of Simeon, but this book is quite unhistorical.

SIMEON or DurHam. See SyMEoN.

SIMEON STYLITES. See Monacuism, vol. xvi. p. (anil

SIMFEROPOL, the capital of the Russian government of Taurida, is situated in the south-western part of the Crimea, on the Salghir (which frequently becomes dry), 900 miles from Moscow. Occupying an admirable site on the northern slopes of the Tchatyr-dagh, it has on the eastern side many beautiful gardens, and is divided into two parts,—the European, well built in stone, and the Tartar, which consists of narrow and filthy streets peopled by Tartars and Jews. Although it has grown somewhat since the railway brought it into connexion with the rest of the empire, it still remains a mere administrative centre, without either manufacturing or commercial importance. The population was 16,550 in 1866 and 29,030 in 1881.

In the neighbourhood stood the small fortress Napoli, erected by Skilur, the ruler of Taurida, some hundred years before the Christian era, whieh existed until the end of the 3d century. Afterwards the Tartars had here their settlement Ak-metchet, which was in the 17th century the residence of the chief military commander of the khan, and had the name of Sultan-serai. In 1736 it was taken and burut by the Russians, and in 1784, after

the conquest of Crimea by the Russians, it received its present name and became the capital of Taurida.

SIMLA, a small district in the lieutenant-governorship of the Punjab, India, situated among the hills of the lower Himalayan system in 31° 6’ N. lat. and 77° 11’ E. long. It consists of several detached plots of territory, together com- prising an area of only 18 square miles. The mountains of Simla and the surrounding native states compose the southern outliers of the great central chain of the eastern Himalayas. They descend in a gradual series from the

main chain to the general level of the Punjab plain, form- ing a transverse south-westerly spur between the great basins of the Ganges and the Indus, A few miles north- east of Simla the spur divides into two main ridges, one following the line of the Sutlej in a north-westerly direc-

tion, and the other, crowned by the sanatorium of Simla,

trending south-eastwards, till it meets at right angles the mountains of the outer Himalayan system. South and east of Simla the hills between the Sutlej] and the Tons centre in the great peak of Chor, 11,982 feet above the sea. Throughout all the hills forests of deodar abound, while rhododendrons clothe the slopes up to the limit of perpetual snow. ‘The principal rivers here are the Sutlej, Pabar, Giri Ganga, Chambar, and Sarsa. The scenery of the immediate neighbourhood of Simla is very grand and picturesque, presenting a series of magnificent views. The climate is considered highly salubrious and admirably adapted to European constitutions ; the district has there- fore been selected as the site of numerous sanatoria and cantonments. The average annual rainfall amounts to about 72 inches.

The population of the district in 1881 was 42,945 (males 27,5938, females 15,352) ; Hindus numbered 32,428, Mohammedans 6935, and Christians 3353. Cultivation is widely carried on in all the lower valleys of the hills, and the fields are sown with maize, pulses, or millet for the autumn and with wheat for the spring harvest. Poppy, hemp, turmeric, ginger, and potatoes form the principal staples raised for exportation to the plains. The trade of the district centres mainly in the bazaars of Simla, which forms a considerable entrepéot for the produce of the hills. Another important trade-centre is the town of Rampur on the Sutlej, from which the great part of the shawl-wool (pashm) finds its way for exportation to British India.

The acquisition of the patches of territory forming the district dates from various times subsequent to the close of the Gurkha War in 1815-16, which left the British in possession of the whole tract of hill-country from the Gogra to the Sutlej. Kumaun and Dehra Dun were annexed to the British dominions, but the rest, with the exception of a few localities retained as military posts and a portion sold to the raja of Patiala, was restored to the hill rajas, from whom it had been wrested by the Girkhas. Garhwal state became attached to the North-Western Provinces, but the remaining

principalities rank among the dependencies of the Punjab, and are known collectively as the Simla Hill States, under the superintendence of the deputy- commissioner of Simla, subordinate to the commissioner at Ambala.

SIMLA, the administrative headquarters of the above district, and the summer capital of India, stands at an elevation of 7084 feet above sea level. Since the ad- ministration of Sir John Lawrence (1864) it has been the resort, during the hot weather, of the successive governors- general of India, with their secretaries and headquarters establishments. In 1881 it had a population of 13,258.

SIMMS, Wirtitam GinmoreE (1806-1870), an American poet, novelist, and historian, was born at Charleston, S.C., April 17, 1806, of Scoto-Irish descent. His mother died during his infancy, and his father having failed in business, and joined Coffee's brigade of mounted Indian fighters, which kept him in the Seminole country, young Simms was brought up by his grandmother, who gave him as good an education as her limited means would allow. He was clerk in a drug store for some years, and afterwards studied law, the bar of Charleston admitting him to practice in 1827, but he soon abandoned his profession for literature. At the age of eight he wrote verses, and in his 19th year he produced a Monody on Gen. Charles Cotesworth Pinckney. 'Two years later, in 1827, Lyrical and Other Poems and Karly Lays appeared ; and in 1828 he began journalism, editing with conspicuous ability and partly owning the City Gazette—a paper opposed to the doctrine of nullification. The enterprise failed, and the editor devoted his attention entirely to letters, and in rapid succession published Zhe Vision of Cortes, Cain, and other Poems (1829), The Tricolor, or Three Days of Blood

of the sea (1832). Atalantis established his fame as an author, and Martin Faber, the story of a criminal, hig first tale, written in the following year, was warmly received. From this time forward his writings became very abundant ; a classified list is given below. Though sensational and full of excessive colouring, they are held in good repute in the Southern States. During the American Civil War Simms espoused the side of the

Secessicnists in a weekly newspaper, and suffered damage at the hands of the Federal troops when they entered Charleston. He held a seat in the State legislature for some years, and the university of Alabama conferred on him the degree of LL.D, He died at Charleston on 11th June 1870.

In addition to the works mentioned above, Simms published the following poetry :—Southern Passages and Pictures, lyrical, senti- mental, and descriptive poems, 1839; Donna Florida, 1843; Grouped Thoughts and Seattered Fanctes, sonnets, 1845 ; Areytos, or Songs of the South, 1846 ; Lays of the Palmetto, 1848 ; The Eye and the Wing, 1848; The Cassique of Accabec, a Tale of Ashley River, with other pieces, 1849 ; The City of the Silent, 1850. To dramatic literature he contributed Norman Maurice, or the Man of the People ; Michael Bonham, or the Fall of the Alamo ; and a stage adaptation of Timon of Athens, all of which have been acted with success. His revolutionary romances are—The Partisan, 1835 ; Mellichampe, 1836; Katherine Walton, or the Rebel of Dorchester, 1851; The Scout (originally The Kinsman), or the Black Riders of the Congaree, 1841; Wooderaft (originally named The Sword and the Distaff), and Hutaw, 1856. These tales describe social life at Charleston, and the action covers the whole revolu- tionary period, with faithful portraits of the political and military leaders of the time. Of border tales the list includes Guy Rivers, a Tale of Georgia, 1834; Richard Hurdis, 1838; Border Beagles, 1840; Beauwehampe, 1842; Helen Halsey, 1845; The Golden Christmas, 1852; and Charlemont, 1856. The historical romances are The Yemassee, 1835, by far the greatest of his works, and dealing largely with Indian character and nature; Pelayo, 1888; Count Julien, 1845; The Damsel of Darien, 1845; The Lily and the Totem; Vasconselos, 1857, which he wrote under the assumed name of ‘Frank Cooper”; and The Cassique of Kiawah, 1860, Other novels, belonging to the series of which Martin Faber was the first, and treating principally of domestic life and motive, are Carl Werner, 1838; Confession of the Blind Heart, 1842; The Wigwam and the Cabin, a collection of short tales, 1845-46; Castle Dismal, 1845; and Marie de Berniere, 1853. Simms’s other writings comprise a History of South Carolina ; South Carolina in the Revolution, 1854; A Geography of South Carolina ; lives of Francis Marion, Capt. John Smith, The Chevalier Bayard, and General Greene; The Ghost of my Husband, 1866; and War Poetry of the South,—an edited volume,—1867. Simms was alsoa frequent contributor to the magazines

and literary papcrs, six of which he founded and inca: He wrote on a great variety of subjects, and discussed with spirit and boldness the leading political, social, and literary topics of the day. In the discussion on slavery he upheld the views of the pro-slavery party. He edited the seven dramas ascribed to Shakespeare, with notes and an introduction to each play. In the capacity of lecturer and orator, he was in frequent request on public occasions. His principal orations are The Social Principle the True Secret of National Permanence, 1842; The True Sowrees of American Independence, 1844; Self-Development, 1847; Poetry of the Practical; The Battle of Fort Moultrie; and The Moral Character of Hamlet.

SIMON MAGUS. In the extant documents of the first three centuries we meet with Simon Magus in a threefold aspect :—(1) as Samaritan Messiah attempting by the aid of Christianity to establish a new religion ; (2) as founder of a school of Gnostics and as father of heresy ; (3) as a caricature of the apostle Paul. The Tiibingen critics (Baur, Volkmar, Zeller, Lipsius, and until the year 1878 Hilgenfeld also) have tried to show that the oldest accounts are those in which Simon is represented in the last-named aspect; they have accordingly denied his existence, maintaining that all the features attributed to him in the oldest sources are accounted for by the life and personality of Paul. In particular they would explain Simon's visit to Rome by the apostle's journey thither, and further would have it that the church tradition of Peter's having gone to Rome arose solely out of the supposition that the great apostle who had withstood the

im Paris (1830), and his strongest poem, Atalantis, a story | Paul-Simon everywhere else must have followed up his

SiMownN

victory in the capital of the world also. According to this

view, Simon Magus is an invention of the Jewish Christians, ,a distorted Paul, whom the church at large partly accepted as historical and partly catholicized, adding fresh touches to the picture of Simon, making him the father of all the heresies, the head of all the magi, a pseudo-Messiah, and so forth, but at last destroying the whole point of the story by adding that Peter and Paul had jointly overcome | the magian in Rome.

Were this view of the Tiibingen critics established, their whole conception of apostolic and _post-apostolic times would also be proved; it would have been made out (1) that legends of an anti-Pauline tendency form the basis of the tradition of the church ; (2) that the Acts of the Apostles is a compromise, and rests upon Jewish- Christian myths in part no longer understood ; (3) that the ecclesiastical tradition about Peter's journeyings had its origin merely in those of Paul; and (4) there would be established an indisputable example of the production of biassed and fabricated history within primitive Chris- tianity so remarkable that upon the ground of it alone we should be justified in simply regarding the greater part of the historical statements of the first two Christian centuries as deliberate inventions.

But on no other point are the proofs of the Tiibingen school weaker than in this. Only by inverting the historical order of the original documents, by dint of violent assertion, and by declaring with reference to the most important arguments that they existed in writings which now are lost, has it been possible for them to give even the appearance of stability to their hypothetical structure. The three assertions of the Tiibingen critics —(1) that the written sources of the pseudo-Clementine Homilies and Recognitions go back to the Ist century, (2) that already in these Paul has become distorted into Simon Magus and Peter is represented as having com- bated the Simon-Paul in Rome, and (3) that the Acts of the Apostles, Justin, and other chureh fathers in their | statements about Simon and about Peter's stay in Rome depend upon these Jewish-Christian writings—can none of them be proved. On the other hand,—apart from the Acts of the Apostles,—the existence of a Samaritan , magus, Simon, in apostolic times, as well as of a sect of Simonians in the 2d century (in Samaria, and elsewhere in the Roman empire), is quite conclusively attested through Justin Martyr, and also through Celsus, Clement, Hippolytus, and Origen.! Even the Tiibingen critics themselves could not deny the existence of a sect of

Simonians ; they have therefore been obliged to advance Se LS [SS eee eee ees ' The testimony of Justin derives its great importance from the fact that he was himself a Samaritan; he says expressly (Apol., ii. 15; see aso Dial., 120), rod év T@ €u@ COver doeBods Kal wAdVOU Siywwviavod didd-

yuaros Karedpdyyoa. In Apol., i. 26 he makes direct reference to Simon (see also i. 56), and remarks, kat oxédov mdyres piv Sapa pets, OAlryor BE Kal ev kAdos ZOverw, ds Tov mparov bedy Stuwva duodoyodrres, Sluwva Kad tpockuvovo:. Celsus (quoted in Orig., C. Cels., v. 62) alludes to a sect of Simonians, and says they were also called Helenians; Irenzus (Adv. Her., i. 23) is acquainted with the (‘Titual and writings of this sect; Hippolytus (Philosoph., vi. 7-20) -Sives extracts from a Simonian book’Amdédacis weydAn. Particularly | Interesting is the testimony of Origen (C. Cels., i. 573 of. vi. 11): Also Simon Magus, the Samaritan, wished to gain disciples by his Inagical arts. His impositions were virtually without result at the time, while at present, in ny belief, the number of his adherents throughout the world does not amount to thirty. And perhaps this . estimate is too high. At most there are only a few in Palestine, | while in the other parts of the world where he desired to make his _hame illustrious it is quite unknown. Where it is known, the fact Js entirely due to the Acts of the Apostles. Christians alone still Speak of him.” Some would fain find a testimony in Josephus also; | but the Jewish conjurer Simon, of Cyprus, mentioned in Ant., xx. 7 has nothing whatever to do with the Samaritan. Renan would | recognize Simon Magus in the second beast of Rev. xtii.; but this

/

hypothesis ig utterly baseless,

the desperate theory that the sect arose solely on the basis of the Jewish-Christian romance of Simon.

The oldest account of Simon Magus occurs in the Acts of the Apostles. When Philip the evangelist came to Samaria about 37 a.p. he found a great religious movement going on. One named Simon had given himself out for some great person, and by dint of his extraordinary works had stirred up and gained over the whole popula- tion, who took him for the exalted manifestation of the Divine Power itself. Philip converted the majority of Simon’s adherents; and Simon himself, amazed at the deeds wrought by Philip, received baptism, and joined the evangelist’s society. Peter and John then came to Samaris to impart to the baptized the Holy Ghost by the laying

on of hands; and Simon offered the apostles money to invest him with a like power of conferring the gift. But Peter sternly rebuked him, exhorting him to repent and beseech God that the evil thought of his heart might be forgiven him. Simon thereupon begged the apostles to pray on his behalf. We have no means of checking this account, since we possess no other independent source. The author of the Acts seems to have known nothing of Simon Magus from other quarters, else he would hardly have closed the narrative as we have it. Simon is not yet viewed as hostile to Christianity. There is no justi- fication for doubt as regards the main points of this account. That in the fourth decade of the lst century a pseudo-Messiah, named Simon, appeared in Samaria; that he gained a considerable following; that he tried to effect a union with the Christian missionaries, who, however, soon perceived his real character and shook him off,—these facts must be treated as historical.2 They are vouched for by Justin, whose statement is not borrowed from the Acts.? Justin, it is true, makes no direct state- ment about any relations whatever between Simon and Christianity, but represents him as one who gave himself out for God and as the founder of an entirely new religion ; but, since on the other hand he groups him with Menander and Marcion, and thinks of him as the devil-sent father of heretics, it is plain that he knew quite well of some relation between Simon and the Christians.

The conception of Simon as the father of heresy within the church is in no way suggested in the Acts; nor has Justin in the writings which we possess given any hint of a reason why Simon should be viewed in such alight. But the testimony of the Acts (viii. 13) that Simon received baptism, and for a while joined himself to the Christians, enables us at least in some degree to understand how he afterwards got the reputation alluded to. We shall see presently, moreover, that Simon must have introduced certain Christian elements into his teaching.*

Justin has a good deal more about Simon that is not to be found in Acts :—(1) he gives his birthplace as Gittha in Samaria ; (2) he states that Simon came to Rome in the reign of Claudius, and there by his magical arts gained some followers, and was taken for a god, and that a statue was erected to him on the Tiber Island with the inscription SIMONI DEO SANCTO; and (3) he states that the adherents of Simon passed off a woman named Helena,

2 The same historical certainty cannot be claimed for the meeting of Peter and Simon, because in the Acts (ch. i.~~xv.) Peter is through~~ out pushed to the front, and because the motive assigned for his journey to Samaria is open to some suspicion. Still, the fact that even in the Jewish-Christian Acts of the Apostles Peter and Simon have personal dealings affords presumptive evidence that they did meet.

3 Unfortunately, Justin's Syntagma against the heretics, in which he dealt at greater length with Simon, is no longer extant; we are therefore limited to the meagre references in his Apology and Dialogue, and the statements of later writers who had read the Syntagma.

4 Justin repeatedly and emphatically says that Simon pretended to

be a god, and was regarded by his adherents as the Supreme God; see Dial., 120.

whom he brought to Rome with him, and who had previ- ously been a prostitute in Tyre,! as the "first idea" (xparn évvota) of Sinion.

As regards the first of these statements we may point to a Samaritan village "Git" (Karjet-Git), not quite 3 miles south-south-west from the town of Samaria.® Justin's account in this particular seems trustworthy. On the other hand, the allegation that a statue was erected to Simon in Rome is not authentic,' and consequently most critics have regarded the narrative of Simon's journey to Rome as legendary. Some suppose that Justin was led only through the words of the inscription which he has wrongly referred to Simon to believe that Simon himself was in Rome; others (the Tiibingen critics) think, on the contrary, that Justin had been already acquainted with the Jewish-Christian Acts of the Apostles, and had thence learned that Simon (Paul) had gone to Rome and that the inscription therefore only confirmed him in the belief of Simon's presence there. But in either case the distinct assertion of Justin that Simon went to Rome in the time of Claudius remains unexplained ; for the hypothesis that Justin added the arrival of Simon under Claudius because he already knew and credited the legend of Peter's having lived twenty-five years in Rome deserves no refutation.

Consequently we may assume—seeing there is absolutely no trace of any influence of the Jewish-Christian legend upon Justin—that in the Roman community, in the time of that author, a tradition was current that Simon Magus visited Rome in the reign of Claudius. We are no longer in a position to test the trustworthiness of this tradition ; but, seeing there is no indication of any tendency out of which it could have arisen, we have no ground for declar- ing it incredible. The fact attested by Justin, Celsus, and Origen, that there were Simonians also beyond the limits of Samaria (év dAAos veo), favours the view that Simon had travelled. With reference, lastly, to the statement about Helena, we have to observe that here Justin has reported a doctrine not of Simon but of the Simonians. Simon, we are to understand, came to Rome with a woman named Helena, and his adherents afterwards took her for the eon mentioned. Justin gave fuller accounts of Helena and the doctrines of the Simonians in his Syntagma ; and we know their substance from Hegesippus, Irenzus, Tertullian, pseudo-Tertullian, Epiphanius, and Philastrius. Simon, it would appear, declared himself to be "the highest power "—the Supreme God Himself; he taught that among the Jews he mani- fested himself as the Son, in Samaria as the Father, and among other nations as the Holy Spirit. Helena, whom he had purchased in a brothel at Tyre, he gave out to be his xpéry evvova, the mother of all, by whom he had called the angels and archangels into being. She had proceeded from him, had been initiated into his purposes, had voluntarily come down from heaven and become the mother of the angels and powers who created this world ; but after the completion of her work she had been laid under bonds by her own children, the world-creating angels, who desired to be independent, and who knew not the first father Simon; they imprisoned her in a human

1 This does not come directly from the extant manuscript of Justin's Apology, but from Eusebius's quotations (Euseb., H. £., ii, 18).

2 See Lipsius, Quellen der rom. Petrussage, p. 34.

3 A happy accident of the rarest kind has put us in a position to correct Justin's statement. In 1574 a stone which had once served as the base of a statue was dug out upon the Tiber Island, It bore the following inscription : SEMONI SANCO DEO. FIDIO SACRVM (see Orelli, Znscr., vol. i, p. 337

n., 1860). ‘‘Semo Sancus” is a Sabine god (Ovid, Fast., vi. 213 sg.; Lactantius, Inst. Div., i. c. 15). The inscription having been found in the very place where, according to Justin, Simon’s statue must have stood, most scholars suppose, and rightly, that Justin by mistake confounded ‘‘Semo Sancus” with ‘Simon Sanctus.”

Mm AG Us

body, and subjected her to every affront; she had to migrate out of one body into another; she became, eg,, that Helen on whose account the Trojan War was waged; finally she found herself in a brothel, out of which Simon at length rescued her, thereby fulfilling the parable of the lost sheep. The supreme god—Simon—had come down in order to redeem his zpwérn a&vora, and to bring salva. tion to all men through the knowledge of himself. He decided upon this descent on seeing that the angels, from their desire for supremacy, were in conflict with each other and were misgoverning the worlds. He assumed every form necessary for the restoration of lost harmony: to men he appeared as man, without being really a man, and in appearance he suffered in Judea. Henceforth it was a duty to believe in Simon and Helena, but to disbelieve the prophets, who were inspired by the world- creating angels, and not by Simon. Believers in Simon are at liberty todo what they will, for by the grace of Simon should men be blessed—but not on account of good works. Should a Simonian do anything wicked he is nevertheless undeserving of punishment, for he is not wicked by nature but only of lis free-will; the law proceeded from the world-creating angels, who thought thereby to enslave their subjects; Simon, however, will bring the world to nought along with the dominion of those angels, and save all who believe on him. To this it is added that the Simonians live dissolutely, vie with each other in the practice of magic, make use of exorcisms, charms, mystic formulas, &c., and further that they wor- ship images of Simon (as Zeus) and of Helena (as Athene), under the names of “The Lord” and “The Lady.”

We may regard this account, which, according to Trenzeus, is partly based upon direct statements of the Simonians themselves, as essentially derived from the Syntagma of Justin. That we have here before us, not the genuine teaching of Simon, but the gnosis of the Simonians is very evident; this

gnosis, however, is just as much bound up with the person of Simon as is the Christian gnosis with the person of Jesus Christ. Simon is the manifested Deity Himself ; but—and herein lies the- Christian, or more properly the anti-Christian element— Simon is at the same time represented as Christ, «¢., 1s identified with Christ. The fusing together of Simon and Christ, a syncretistic-gnostic conception of the world and its creation, and an ethical antinomianism are the distinctive features of this new universal religion. That we have here an attempt to found a new religion, and that a world-religion, upon the principle of embodying all important articles of the older ones, appears also from the fact that Simon is identified not only with Christ but also with Zeus, and that Greek legends and mythologies are utilized for the system. We have therefore in Simon- ianism a rival system to Christianity, in which the same advantages are offered, and in which accordingly Christian elements are embodied, even Christ Himself being iden- tified with the Supreme God (Simon). The attempt to establish such a system in that time of religious syncretism has nothing incredible about it; and in view of the religious conditions then prevailing in the locality it cam easily be understood that it proceeded from a Samaritan.

4 This work must also have had something to say about the rela- tions of Simon to other Samaritan pseudo-Messiahs, viz., to Dositheus, Cleobulus, and Menander (see Hegesippus, quoted by Eusebius, H. E., iv. 22); but the nature of its statements can no longer be with cer tainty ascertained. We are in the dark especially as to the relation between Simon and Dositheus, But the mere fact that in Samaria, in the time of the apostles, so many Messiahs purporting to be founders of religions should have appeared on the scene is extremely interesting. It is a very noteworthy circumstance also that Justin,

Hegesippus, and Irenzus knew nothing about Peter having met Simon in Rome, and having withstood him there.

Sim oN

The basis of it was laid by Simon himself, who claimed to be a god and yet derived something from the Christian missionaries , but the development was due to his followers in the 2d century, who may have borne to thevoriginal Simonians exactly the same relation as did the Valentinians to the first Christians. From the circles of these later Simonians, who

worshipped Simon especially under the mysterious name of ‘The Standing,”! a book was issued bearing the title “H droddous 7 peyddy, from which Hip- polytus has given us extracts in the Philosophumena. From these it appears—as indeed might have been expected from the statements of Irenzeus (Justin)—that the later Simonianism combined the worship of Simon with a com- plicated Gnostic system, for which it utilized the Greek mythology, as well as isolated sayings of the Old Testa- ment, of the Gospels, and of the apostolic epistles. In point of form, design, medium, and relationship to Christianity, Simonianism bears a striking resemblance to Manicheism, which sprang up two centuries later ; but Mani did not so bluntly as Simon lay claim to be a god, and the Manicheans never had the hardihood to proceed to absolute identification of Mani with Christ; as regards their tenets, however, and viewed as attempts to found a universal religion, Simonian- ism and Manichzism are widely different.

We can understand, then, how it was that the Christ- ians in the Ist and 2d centuries regarded Simon as the emissary of devils and the father of all heresy ; and we ean also understand why—apart from Samaria—this effort to establish a new religion bore little fruit. It rests upon falsifications and a wild jumbling of religions, while it is lacking in religious elements of its own.

Until about the year 220 ecclesiastical tradition knows Simon only as a devil-inspired founder of a religion, and as father of heresy ; it sees in him a caricature of Chnist, not of the apostle Paul, and it knows nothing about Peter having again confuted him after what is narrated in Acts viii. It knows indeed that Simon eame to Rome in the time of Claudius, but previous to the 3d century no ecclesiastical writer mentions his having met {with Peter there, although all state that Peter went to the capital. The first ecclesiastical author to combine the two traditions was \Hippolytus (Philos., vi. 20). Having referred to the events narrated in Aets viii., he proceeds: ‘Simon even went to Rome, and there ‘met with the apostles. As he led many astray through his sorceries, jPeter frequently withstood him. He came at last. . .2 and taught sitting under a plane-tree. When after lengthened reason- ing Simon was on the point of being worsted, he declared that if he were to be buried alive he would on the third day rise again. He aetually caused a grave to be dug for him by his disciples, and gave jorders that he should be

buried. The disciples did as they were bid, he remains in the grave, however, unto this day, for he was not Christ.” This legend is found only in Hippolytus; it evidently corresponds with the idea that Simon was a false Christ, but has no relation whatever with the notion that he was Paul. Hippolytus, ‘moreover, does not say that in Rome Simon met with Peter only, but with the apostles, i.e, with Paul and Peter. The origin of the legend is very intelligible from what we know of the historical | premises, Given that Simon alleged himself to be Christ, that in Samaria he met with Peter, that he as well as Peter afterwards travelled to Rome, then we can very easily explain the origin of a legend which brings Peter once more into personal contact with Simon in Rome, and alleges that Simon became the victim of his nefarious mimiery of Christ.

! At the same time the expression TIpbs Sluwva moAA& Iérpos ev Poun avaxaréorn makes it seem a probable thing to many that Hippolytus already knew of that legend about Simon in whieh the ‘Titbingen eritics think they have found the key to all traditions about him. In the pseudo-Clementine Recognitions and Homilies, or rather in their documentary sources, Simon plays a very im- portant part. He appears as the representative of all possible heresies, and as the great antagonist of Peter, who followed him ‘up throughout Samaria and the east coast of the Mediterranean, “engaging him in great disputations, and always coming off the “ietor, Some of the features attributed in these legends to Simon Ma indisputably borrowed from the apostle Paul, others from

Marcion, others from Valentinus and Basilides, ‘These legends !) ee SS

- Clem., Strom., ii. II, 52; Hippol., Philosoph., vi. 7 sq.: 6 éords,

i}

:

jords, oTnoduevos

| A hiatus oeeurs in the text here.

;

;

maAaG Us 81

therefore arose in strict Jewish-Christian anti-Pauline circies ; we find them, however, in the Recognitions and Homilies already sub- jected to catholic revision. This revision cannot have taken place before the first half of the 8d century, and probably is of much later date. The age of the documentary sources cannot be exactly determined; they may be very old; but what is of most importance is (1) that their influence upon church tradition cannot be traced before the 8d century, and (2) that in those Jewish-Christian sources, as well as in the Homilies and Recognitions themselves, only disputations between Peter and Simon in Samaria and adjacent countries are narrated, nothing whatever being said of any con- troversies between Simon and Peterin Rome. Even if, therefore, the Simon of the Jewish-Christians bears unmistakable traces of Paul, it is also true on the other hand that these Jewish-Christians knew nothing of a journey of Simon to Rome. Henee all the com- binations of the Tiibingen critics as to the origin of the ‘‘ Peter tradition,” and as to the origin of the statement that Simon came to Rome, completely fall to the ground. Hippolytus was the first to combine “Peter in Rome” and “Simon in Rome,” without knowing anything whatever of a Simon-Paul legend. Not until after his day, after the Jewish-Christian legends had become naturalized in the catholic church through the medium of the Recognitions and Homilies, did these legends become current within the church, and only there. It now began to be told that Paul and Peter? had gone to Rome to withstand Simon. Simon was now represented partly in accordance with those Jewish- Christian legends, the tendency of which was not understood. Much, however, that was new was added, such as that Simon appeared before the emperor, that he miserably perished in attempting to fly, and so on. From the 8d (or rather 4th) century the Simon of church tradition becomes invested with some features of Paul in a distorted form. The Recognitions, as trans- lated by Rufinus, were extensively read in the East, and, along with the Acts of the Apostles, kept fresh the memory of the great magian and his Helena in the Middle Ages, Simon also came to figure in popular literature. “Doctor Faustus” has preserved several traits of the ancient magian. Neither are Pauline characteristics wanting in the legendary Faustus ; they are traceable even in

the Faust of Goethe, the “homunculus” of the Simon-Faust being originally a travesty of the “new man” who according to Paul is created through the Gospel. It was not only as the great magian, however, that Simon remained known to the Middle Ages, but also as the first who attempted to purchase spiritual gifts with money, an association made permanent in the word “simony.”

Sources.—Acts viii, 5-24; Justin, Apol., i. 26-56, ii. 14, and Dial. c. Tryph., 120; Hegesippus, ap. Euseb., H. H., iv. 23; Celsus, ap. Orig., C. Cels., v. 623 Trenzus, Adv, Har, i. 23, et al.; Tertullian, De fdolol., 9, Apolog., 18, De Pra- sertpt., 10-33, De Anima, 34-57, De Fuga, 12; Clement Alex., Strom., ti. 11, 52, vii. 17,107; Hippolytus, Syntagma (Pseudo-Tertull., Philastr., 29, Epiph., Her., 21), Philos., vi. 7-20; Origen, C. Cels., i. 57, vi. 11, and vy. 1l.; Eusebius, Z. £., ii. 1, 14 sq.; Arnobius, Adv. Gentes, ii. 12; Pseudo-Cyprian, De Rebapt., 16, 17; Pseudo- Ignatius, Ad. Trall., 11; Homil. Pseudo-Clementis, vv. ll.; Recognit. Pseuto-Clem., vy. ll.; Cyril, Catech., vi, 15 ; Jerome, De Vir. Jil., 1, Com. in Matth., c.24; Consttt. Apost., vi. 809; Ambrose, Heraem., iv. 8; Sulpicius Severus, His¢., ii. 41; Theo- doret, HZ. F.,i.1; Acta Petri et Pauli, 49; Acta Pseudo-Marcelli, Pseudo-Lint, Pseudo-Abdix, &e.

Sources for Samaritan Pseudo-Messiahs contemporary with Simon.—(1) For Dositheus: Hegesippus, ap. Euseb., H. Z., iv. 22; Hippolytus, Syntagma (Pscudo- Tertull., Philast., 4, and Epiph., Her.,18); Recognit. Pseudo-Clementis, i. 54, ii, 8-11; Origen, C. Cels., i. 57, vi. 11, De Princip., iv. 17, Comm. in Matth., ser. 32, Hom. 25 in Luc., in Joh., xiii, 27; Constit, Apost., vi. 8; Eusebius, in Luc., see Mai, Vet. Script. Nova Collect., i. 1, p. 155; Opus imperfect. in Matth., hom. 48; Mucarius Magnus, Apocrtt., iii, 48, iv. 15,21. (2) For Menander: Justin, Apol. i. 26, 56; Hegesippus, ap. Euseb., H. Z., iv. 22; lreneus, Adv. Her, i, 28, iii. 4; Tertullian, De Anima, 30, 50, De Resurr., 5; Hippolytus, Syntagma, &c. (8) For Clcobulus (Cleobius): Hegesippus, ap. Euseb., 2 £., iv. 22; Constit. Apost., vi. 8, 16; Pseudo-Chrysostom, Hom. 48 in Matth., opp. vi. p. cxcix; Pseudo-Ignat., Ep, ad Trail., ii.; Epiphanius, Her. 51, 6; Theodoret, H. F.,1. i. preef., 1. ii. preef.; Ep. Apocr, Pauli ad Cor., &c.

Literature.—Baur, “ Die Christusparthei in Korinth,” in the Tibinger Zeitschrift, 1831, part 4, p. 116 sq.; Baur, Paulus, 1st ed. (1845), p. 85 sg., 218 sq., 2d cd., p. 85 sg.,; Baur, Das Christenthum der drei ersten Jahrhunderte, 2d ed., p. 85 sq.; Simson, ‘‘Leben und Lehre des Simons des Magiers,” in the Zeitschrift f. Hist. Theol., 1841, part 3; Schlurick, De Stmonis M. fatis romanis, Meissen, 1844; Hilgenfeld, Die Clementinischen Recognitionen und Homilien, 1848, p. 317 sq.; Zeller, Apostel- geschichte, 1854, p. 158 sq.; Uhlhorn, Die Homilien und Recognitionen des Clemens Romanus, 1854, p. 80 sq., 281 s9¢.; Grimm, Die Samaritaner, 1854, p. 151 sq.; Volk- mar, “‘Ucberden Simon Magus der Apostelgeschichte,” in the Tubing. Theol. Jahrb., 1856, p. 279 sg.; Noack, “‘ Simon der Magier,” in Psyche, 1860, p. 257 sq.; F, K., ‘“‘ Ueber das Denkma] des Magiers Simon zu Rom,” in the Historisch-Polit. Bldtier, vol. xlvii., 1861, p. 530 sq.; Ginzel, in the Oestr. Vierteljahrschr. f. Kathol. Theol., vol. vi. 1867, p. 455 sq.; see also his Kirchenhist. Schriften, Vicnna, 1872, vol. i. p. 76 sg.; Renan, Les Apétres and L’Antechrist; Hilgenfeld, ‘“ Der Magier Simon,” in the Zettschr. f. wiss. Theol., 1868, p, 357 sg., 1874, p. 294 sq., 1878, p. 32 sq., 1881, p. 16; Huelsen, Simonts Magt vita doctrinaque, Berlin, 1868 ; Lipsius, Die Quellen der rémisehen Petrus-Sage, 1872; Harnack, Zur Quellenkritik der Geschichte des Gnosticismus, 1873; Joh. Delitzsch, “Zur Quellenkritik der altesten Berichte tiber Simon Petrus und Simon Magus,” in Theol. Studien und Kritiken, 1874, part 2, p. 213 sq.; Lipsius, ‘Simon Magus,” in Schenkel’s Bibel- lexicon, vol. v., 1875, p. 301 sq.; Ibid., ‘“‘ Petrus in Rom,” in the Jahrbb. f. Protest. Theol., 1876, p. 561 sq.; Hilgenfcld, Die Ketzergeschichte des Urchristenthuns, 1884, p. 163sg., 453 sq.; Moclicr, ‘‘ Simon Magus,” in Herzog’s R. Encykl., 2d ed., vol. xiv. p. 246 sq.; Hase, Kirchengeschichte auf der Grundlage akadem. Vor’les., part 1, 1885, p. 156 sq.; also the commentaries to the Acts of the Apostles by Meyer, Overbeck, Wendt, and others; the accounts of Gnosticism by Neander, Baur, Moller, Lipsius, Mansel, and others; and the numerous investigations with reference to the sojourn of Peter in Rome. (A. HA.)

3 See Aeta Pauli et Petri. XXII. — 11

SIMON, Asrawam (1622-1692), medallist and mod- eller, was born in Yorkshire in 1622. He was originally intended for the church, but turned his attention to art, and, after studying in Holland, proceeded to Sweden, where he was employed by Queen Christina, in whose train he travelled to Paris, He returned to England before the outbreak of the Civil War, and attained celebrity by his medals and portraits modelled in wax. During the Commonwealth he executed many medals of leading Parliamentarians, and at the Restoration he was patronized by Charles IL, from whom he received a hundred guineas for his portrait designed as a medal for the proposed order of the Royal Oak. Having incurred the displeasure of the duke of York, he lost the favour of the court, and died in obscurity in 1692. Among the more interesting of his medals are those of the second earl of Dunfermline, the second earl of Lauderdale, and the first earl of Loudon; that of the duke of Albemarle, and many other fine medals, were modelled by Abraham Simon and chased by his younger brother Thomas, noticed below.

SIMON, Ricwarp (1638-1712), the “father of Biblical criticism,” was born at Dieppe on the 13th May 1638. His early studies were carried on at the college of the Fathers of the Oratory in that city. He was soon, by the kindness of a friend who discerned the germs of those talents which were afterwards to render him so celebrated, removed to Paris and enabled to enter upon the study of theology, where he early displayed a taste for Hebrew and other Oriental languages. He was allowed great indulgence in the prosecution of his studies by the authorities of the Congregation of the Oratory, being exempted from those exercises of piety which for an entire year were binding on the other students. This dispensation aroused the ill-will and jealousy of the other Oratorian novitiates. Simon was charged with reading “heretical” books, this designation being applied to Walton’s Polyglott, the Critici Sacri, and other works of a similar kind. But this jealous opposition proved abortive. Simon, after investigation, was allowed and encouraged to continue his favourite pursuits. At the end of his theological course he was sent, according to custom, to teach philosophy at Juilly, where there was one of the colleges of the Oratory. But he was soon recalled to Paris, and employed in the congenial labour of preparing a catalogue of the Oriental books in the library of the Oratory. This gave him full access to those works, the fruits of the study of which appear so fully in

his after writings. His first essay in authorship was the publication of a work entitled Fides Heclesie Orientalis, seu Gabrielis Metropohite Philadelphiensis Opuscula, cum interpretatione Latina, cum notis (Paris, 1671), the object of which was to demonstrate that the belief of the Greek Church regarding the Eucharist was the same as that of the Church of Rome. Simon entered the priesthood in 1670, and the same year wrote a pamphlet in defence of the Jews of Metz, who had been accused, as they have so often been before and since, of having murdered a Christian child. It was shortly before this time that there were sown the seeds of that enmity with the Port Royalists which filled Simon's after life with many bitter troubles. The famous Arnauld had written a work on the Perpetuity of the Faith, the first volume of which treated of the Eucharist. M. Diroys, a doctor of theology, and a friend of Arnauld's, asked Simon his opinion of the book. Simon replied that it was one of the best works which had been published by the Port Royalists, but that it nevertheless required correction in several important passages, and agreed reluctantly, and after some delay, at Diroys's request, to write a letter referring to these passages, on the understanding that the

original was to be returned to him. The criticisms of Simon excited great indignation among the friends and admirers of Arnauld, and he felt the effects of their vin. dictiveness to the latest hour of his life. Another matter was the cause of inciting against him the ill-will of the monks of the Benedictine order. A friend of Simon's, one of the Oratorians, was engaged in a lawsuit, in' his capacity as grand vicar of Prince Neubourg, abbé of Fécamp, with the Benedictine monks of that establishment. Simon lent to his friend the aid of his powerful pen, and composed qa memorandum in which he employed pretty strong language against the opponents of his friend. They were greatly exasperated, and made loud complaints to the new general of the Oratory that they were virulently assailed by a member of the brotherhood, with which they had always been on friendly terms. The charge of Jesuitism was also brought against Simon, apparently on no other ground than that his friend's brother was an eminent member of that order. 'The commotion in ecclesiastical circles was great, and it was seriously contemplated to remove Simon not only from Paris but from France. A

mission to Rome was proposed to him, but he saw through the design, and, after a short delay dictated by prudential motives, declined the proposal. He was engaged at the time in superin- tending the printing of his Histoire Critique du Vieux Testament. He had hoped, through the influence of Pére la Chaise, the king's confessor, and the Duc de Montausier, to be allowed to dedicate the work to Louis XIV., but as His Majesty was absent in Flanders at the time the volume could not be published until the king had accepted the dedication, though it had passed the censorship of the Sorbonne, and the chancellor of the Oratory had given his imprimatur, The printer of the book, in order to promote the sale, had caused the titles of the various chapters to be printed separately, and to be put in circulation. These, or possibly a copy of the work itself, had happened to come into the hands of his ever-watchful enemies—the Port Royalists. It seems that, with a view to injure the sale of the work, which it was well known in theological circles had been long in preparation by Simon, the Messieurs de Port Royal had undertaken a translation into French of the Prolegomena to Walton's Polyglott. To counteract this proceeding Simon announced his intention of publishing an annotated edition of the Prolegomena, and actually added to the Critical History a translation of the last four chapters of that work, which had formed no part of his original plan. Simon's announcement prevented the appearance of the projected translation, but his enemies were all the more irritated against him on that account. They had now obtained the opportunity, which they had long been seeking, of gratifying their hatred of the bold Oratorian. The freedom with which Simon expressed himself on vari ous topics, and especially those chapters in which he de clared that Moses could not be the author of much in the writings attributed to him, especially aroused their oppost tion. The powerful influence of Bossuet, at that time tutor to the dauphin, was invoked; the chancellor Le Tellier lent his assistance ; a decree of the council of state was obtained, and after a series of paltry intrigues the whole impression, consisting of 1300 copies, was seized by the police and destroyed, and the animosity of his colleagues in the Oratory rose to so great a height against Simon for having so seriously compromised their order by his work that he was declared to be no longer a member of their body. Full of bitterness and disgust Simon retired to the curacy of Bolleville, to which he had been lately appointed by the vicar-general of the abbey of Fécamp.

The work thus confiscated in France it was proposed to republish in Holland. Simon, however, at first opposed this, in hopes of overcoming the opposition of Bossuet by

making certain changes in the parts objected to. The nego- tiations with Bossuet lasted a considerable time, but finally failed, and the Critical History appeared, with Simon's name on the title page, in the year 1685, from the press of Reenier Leersin Rotterdam. An imperfect edition had previously been published at Amsterdam by Daniel Elzevir, based upon a MS. transcription of one of the copies of the original work which had escaped destruction and had been sent to England, and from which a Latin and an English translation were afterwards made. The edition of Leers was a reproduction of the work as first printed, with a new preface, notes, and those other writings which had | appeared for and against the work up to that date.

The work which had excited so much controversy and opposition consists of three books, the first of which deals with questions of Biblical criticism, properly so called, such as the text of the Hebrew Bible and the changes which it has undergone down to the present day, the authorship of the Mosaic writings and of other books of Scripture, with an exposition of his peculiar theory of the existence) during the whole extent of Jewish history of recorders or annalists | of the events of each period, whose writings were preserved in the | public archives, and the institution of which he assigns to Moses.

The second book gives an account of the principal translations,

j ancient and modern, of the Old Testament, and the third contains } an examination of the principal commentators. He had, with the exception of the theory above mentioned, contributed nothing really new on the subject of Old Testament criticism, for previous critics, as Cappellus, Morinus, and others, had established many points of importance, and the value of Simon's work consisted chiefly in bringing together and presenting at one view the results of Old Testament criticism. The work is written in a clear style, and its tone is confident and frequently sarcastic. He displays great con- | tempt for tradition and the opinions of the fathers. This latter peculiarity it was which specially aroused the enmity of Bossuet and other leading Romanists.

But it was not only from the Church of | Rome that the work encountered strong opposition. The Protestants felt their stronghold—an infallible Bible—assailed by the doubts which Simon raised against the integrity of the Hebrew text. Le Clere ("Clericus"), the distinguished Dutch divine and critic, in his work Sentimens de quelques Theologiens de H ollande, controverted the views of Simon, and was answered by the latter ina tone of con- 'siderable asperity in his Réponse aux Sentimens de quelques Theo- logiens de Hollande, which he signed under the name of Pierre Ambrun, it being a marked peculiarity of Simon rarely to give his jown name, but to assume noms de guerre at various times. The remaining works of Simon may be briefly noticed. In 1689 appeared his Histoire Critique du Texte du Nouveau Testament, consisting of thirty-three chapters, in which he discusses the Jorigin and character of the various books, with a consideration of the objections brought against them by the Jews and others, the |quotations from the Old Testament in the New, the inspiration of the New Testament (with a refutation of the opinions of Spinoza), the Greek dialect in which they are written (against Salmasius), jthe Greek MSS. known at the time, especially Codex D (Canta- brigiensis), &c. This was followed in 1690 by his Histoire WE des Versions du Nouveau Testament, where he gives an account of the various translations, both ancient and modern, and discusses the manner in which many difficult passages of the New Testament have been rendered in the various versions. In 1693 Was published what in some respects is the most valuable of all his writings, viz., Histoire Critique des principaux Commentateurs du Nouvean Testament depuis le commencement du Ohristianisme jusques {@ notre temps. This work exhibits immense reading, and the information it contains is still valuable to the student. The last ie of Simon that we shall mention is his Nouvelles Observations sur le Texte et les Versions dw Nouveau Testament (Paris, 1695), which contains supplementary observations upon the subjects of the text and translations of the New Testament.

| Simon is described as a man of middle stature, with "somewhat unprepossessing features. His temper was sharp and keen, and as a controversialist he displayed a bitterness of tone and an acerbity of expression which 'tended only to aggravate the unpleasantness of controversy. He was entirely a man of intellect, free from all tendency to sentimentality, and with a strong vein of sarcasm and)satire in his

disposition. His reading was immense, and ‘his meinory powerful and retentive. He is said to have usually prosecuted his studies lying on the floor of his Apartment, on a pile of carpets or cushions. Few men have written more that is worth reading on Biblical subjects

| | |

than he, considering the hardships and vicissitudes of his chequered life. He died at hig native city of Dieppe on the 11th April 1712, at the age of seventy-four.

The principal authorities for the life of Simon are the life or ‘‘éloge” by his grand-nephew De la Martiniére in vol. i. of the Lettres Choisies, 4 vols., Amsterdam, 1730; Graf’s article in the first vol. of the Beitr. zu. d. Theol. Wissensch., &c., Jena, 1851 ; Reuss’s article in Herzog’s Encyklopiidie, vol. xiv., new ed.; Richard Simon et son Vieux Testament, by A. Bernus, Lausanne, 1869. For the bibliography, see, in addition to the various editions of Simon’s works, the very complete and accurate account of Bernus, Notice Bibliographique sur Richard Simon, Basel, 1882. (F. C.)

SIMON, Tuomas (1623 1665), medallist, was born, according to Vertue, in Yorkshire about 1623. He studied engraving under Nicholas Briot, and about 1635 . received a post in connexion with the Mint. In 1645 he was appointed by the Parliament joint chief engraver along with Edward Wade, and, having executed the great seal of the Commonwealth and dies for the coinage, he was promoted to be chief engraver to the mint and seals, He produced several fine portrait medals of Cromwell, one of which is copied from a miniature by Cooper. After the Restoration he was appointed engraver of the king’s seals. On the occasion of his contest with the brothers Roettiers, who were employed by the mint in 1662, Simon produced his celebrated crown of Charles IL, on the margin of which he engraved a petition to the king, setting forth the excellence of his own productions and praying for redress. This is usually considered his masterpiece. An

impression of the coin fetched £225 at an auction in 1832. This admirable medallist is believed to have died of the plague in London in 1665.

A volume of The Medals, Coins, Great Seals, and other Works of Thomas Simon, engraved and deseribed by George Vertue, was published in 1753.

SIMONIDES (or Semonipes, as some write the name) or AmorGos stands midway both in time and reputation between the other two iambic poets of Greece—Archilochus and Hipponax. A native of Samos, he led a colony to the island of Amorgos in the Archipelago, and lived there about 660 B.c. in Minoa, a town of his own founding. Besides two books of iambics, we are told that he wrote elegies, and a poem on the early history of the Samians ; but only one insignificant elegy has been with any degree of plausibility attributed to him. We possess about thirty fragments of his iambic poems, written in clear and vigorous Ionic, with much force and no little harmony of versification, With Simonides, as with Archilochus, the iambic is still the vehicle of bitter satire, interchanging with melancholy, but in Simonides the satire is rather general than individual, and in other respects, especially in his gnomic and reflective tendency, he paves the way for the tragic trimeter. One of his two longer fragments dwells pathetically upon the misery of our lot, in which, as he says elsewhere, “we have many years of death, but of life only a few sad years”; the other, far his most famous poem, is a “ Pedigree of Women,” tracing their descent from different animals according to their different characters. The idea may have been suggested by the beast fable, as we find it in Hesiod and Archilochus; it is clear at least that Simonides knew the works of the former. The same conception recurs a century later in Phocylides. Simonides derives the dirty woman from a hog, the cunning from a fox, the fussy from a dog, the apathetic from earth, the capricious from sea-water, the stubborn from an ass, the incontinent from a weasel, the proud from a high-bred mare, the worst and ugliest from an ape, and the good woman froma bee. The remainder of the poem (vv. 96-118) is undoubtedly spurious. There is much beauty and feeling in Simonides’s description of the good woman; and the skilful portraits of character and

judicious selection of prominent features prove him to have been a keen observer and a real artist. The date of his death is unknown.

See Bergk, Poetw Lyrici Greet, vol. ii., Leipsic, 1882, pp. 441- 459. here is a translation in English verse of part of the poem ou women in Mure's Hist. of Gr. Lit., iii. p. 181.

SIMONIDES oF Cros (556-469 3.c.), one of the greatest poets and most accomplished men of antiquity, was born at Iulis in the island of Ceos, 556 B.c. Few poetic natures have ever been planted in more congenial soil. His native island was devoted to the worship of Apollo, the god of song; poetry had been cultivated in his family for generations ; his youth coincided with the period succeed- ing the first great burst of Holian and Doric lyric poetry ; his manhood saw the heroic struggle with Persia, when Greece first awoke to the consciousness of her national unity ; and he died before the inevitable disintegration had begun. Among his friends were all the foremost men of the day,—kings and princes like Hipparchus and Hiero and the Aleuadz and Scopade, statesmen like Pausanias and Themistocles, and poets like A'schylus, Epicharmus, and his own nephew Bacchylides. Pindar alone among his con- temporaries seems to have depreciated Simonides, perhaps not without a touch of jealousy; by all the rest he was revered as the poet laureate of emancipated Greece. He lived for the most part with his friends, whose praises he had sung for money ; we hear of him at the court of Hip- parchus in Athens, with the Scopade in Thessaly, and finally at the court of Hiero of Syracuse, where he died in 469 B.c.

His reputation as a man of learning and ingenuity is shown by the tradition that he added two new letters to the alphabet—y and »—the truth being probably that he was one of the first authors to use these symbols, before the archonship of Euclides. So unbounded were his popu- larity and influence that he was felt to be a power even in the political world; we are told that he reconciled Thero and Hiero on the eve of a battle between their opposing armies. For his poems he could command almost any price: later writers, from Aristophanes onwards, accuse him of avarice, probably not without some reason. From the numerous anecdotes preserved about him we see that he was what we should infer from his poems, a genial and courtly man, "dwelling with flowers,—like the bee, seeking yellow honey" (Fr. 47), yet not without a vein of gentle irony. To Hiero's queen, who asked him whether it was better to be born rich or a genius, he replied '" Rich, for genius is ever found at the gates of the rich."

Of his poetry we possess two or three short elegies (Fr. 85 seenis from its style aud versification to belong to Simonides of Amorgos, or at least not to be the work of our poet), several epigrams, and about ninety fragments of lyric poctry. The epigrams, written in the usual dialect of elegy, Ionic with an epic colouring, were intended partly for public and partly for private monuments. There is strength and sublimity in the former, with a simplicity that is almost statuesque, and a complete mastery over the rhythm and forms of elegiac cxpression. Those on the heroes of Marathon and Thermopyl are the most celebrated. In the private epigrams there is more warmth of colour and feeling, but here it is hard to decide which are genuine and which spurious ; few of them rest on any better authority than that of the Palatine anthology. One interesting and undoubtedly genuine epigram of this class is upon Archedice, the daughter of Hippias the Pisistratid, who, " albeit her father and husband and brother and children were all princes, was not lifted up in soul to pride." The lyric fragments vary much in character and length: one is from a poem on Artemisium, and celebrates those who fell at Thermopyle ; another is an ode in honour of Scopas ; the rest represent odes on victors in the games, hyporchemes, dirges, hymns to the gods, and other varieties. The poem on Thermopyle is reverent and sublime, breathing an exalted patriotism and a lofty national pride ; the others are full of tender pathos and deep feeling, such as evoked from Catullus the linc " Meestius lacrimis Simonideis,"' with a genial worldliness befitting one who had "seen the towns and learnt the mind of many men." For Simonides requires no standard of lofty unswerving rectitude. 'It is hard," he says (Fr. 5), "to become a truly good man, perfect as a square in hauds and feet and mind, fashioned without blame.

SIM—SIM

Whosoever is bad, and not too wicked, knowing justice, the benefactor of cities, is a sound man. I for one will tind no fault with him, for the race of fools is infinite. ... . all men who do no sin willingly; but with necessity even the gods do not contend." recalls Hesiod, is set on a high and difficult hill (Fr. 58); let us seek after pleasure, for ''all things come to one dread Charybdis, both great virtues and wealth" (Fr. 38), and '' what life of mortal man, or what dominion, is to be desired apart from pleasure, without which even the gods' existence is not to be envied" (Fr. 71). Yet Simonides is far

from being a hedonist ; his morality, no less than his art, is pervaded by that virtue for which Ceos was renowned—oaw¢poodvy or self-restraint. His most cele- brated fragment, and one of the most exquisite and touching remains of ancient poetry, is a dirge, in which Danae, adrift with the infant Perseus on the sea in a dark and stormy night, takes comfort from the peaceful slumber of her babe. Simonides here illustrates his own saying that ‘‘poetry is vocal painting, as painting is silent poetry ” (one of the opening remarks in Lessing’s Laocoon): from the picture of the sleeping child, standing out as if in relief against the background of surging waves, and Danae in tears, we can well understand how Longinus should have commended this power of vivid presentation as a distinguishing feature in another of Simonides’s poems. This poem has been often translated. One of the best translations is that by Symonds, in the first series

of his Studies on the Greek Poets.

See Bergk, Poet# Lyrict Grect, vol. iii., Leipsic, 1882, pp. 382-535, Welcker was the first who clearly separated the fragments of the Cean Simonides from those of his namesake. Sterling (Essays and Tales, vol. i. pp. 188 sq.) has 4 poetical translation of most of them.

SIMONY is an offence against the law of the church. The name is taken from Simon Macus (q.v.). In the canon law the word bears a more extended meaning than in English law. ‘Simony according to the canonists,” says Aylifie in his Parergon, “is defined to be a deliberate act or a premeditated will and desire of selling such things as are spiritual, or of anything annexed unto spirituals, by giving something of a temporal nature for the purchase thereof ; or in other terms it is defined to be a commutation of a thing spiritual or annexed unto spirituals by giving something that is temporal.” An example of the offence occurs as early as the 3d century in the purchase of the bishopric of Carthage by a wealthy matron for her servant, if the note to Gibbon (vol. ii. p. 457) is to be believed. The offence was prohibited by many councils, both in the East and in the West, from the 4th century onwards. In the Corpus Juris Canon the Decretum (pt. ii. cause i. quest. 3) and the Decretals (bk. v. tit. 3) deal with the subject. The offender, whether simoniacus (one who had bought his orders) or simoniace promotus (one who had bought his promotion), was liable to deprivation of his benefice

and deposition from orders if a secular priest,—to confinement in a stricter monastery if a regular. No distinction seems to have been drawn between the sale of an immediate and of a reversionary interest. The innocent sémoniace promotus was, apart from dispensation, liable to the same penalties as though he were guilty. Certain matters were simoniacal by the canon law which would not be so regarded in English law, ¢.g., the sale of tithes, the taking of a fee for confes- sion, absolution, marriage, or burial, the concealment of one in mortal sin or the reconcilement of an impenitent for the sake of gain, and the doing homage for spiritualities So grave was the crime of simony considered that even infamous persons could accuse of it. English provincial and legatine constitutions continually assailed simony. Thus one of the heads in Lyndewode (bk. v.) is, ‘‘ Ne quis ecclesiam nomine dotalitatis transferat vel pro presenta tione aliquid accipiat.” In spite of all the provisions of the canon law it is well established that simony was deeply rooted in the medieval church. Dante places persons guilty of simony in the third bolgia of the eighth circle of the Inferno :—

“OQ Simon mago, O miseri seguaci, Che le cose di Dio che di bontate Deono esser spose, voi rapaci Per oro e per argento adulterate.”—Jnf., xix. 1.

I praise and loye

Virtue, he tells us elsewhere in language that

{

The popes themselves were notorious offenders. In the ‘ canto just cited Pope Nicholas III. is made by the poet the mouthpiece of the simoniacs. He is supposed to mistake the poet for Boniface VIII., whose simoniacal practices, as well as those of Clement V., are again alluded to in Par. xxx. 147. Ata later period there was an open and con- tinuous sale of spiritual offices by the Roman curia which contemporary writers attacked in the spirit of Dante. A pasquinade against Alexander VI. begins with the lines—

- Vendit Alexander claves, altaria, Christum. Emerat ille prius ; vendere jure potest.”

Machiavelli calls luxury, simony, and cruelty the three dear friends and handmaids of the same pope. The colloquy of Erasmus De Sacerdoteis Captandis bears wit- ness to the same state of things. And, best proof of all, numerous decisions as to what is or is not simony are to be found in the reported decisions of the Roman rota.? That part of the papal revenue which consisted of first- fruits (primitix or annates) and tenths (decimz) must have been theoretically simoniacal in its origin. In England this revenue was annexed to the crown by Henry VIII. and restored to the church by Queen Anne (see QUEEN Annz's Bounty).

For the purposes of English law simony is defined by Blackstone as the corrupt presentation of any person to an ecclesiastical benefice for money, gift, or reward. The offence is one of purely ecclesiastical cognizance, and not punishable by the criminal law. The penalty is forfeiture by the offender of any advantage from the simoniaca] transaction, of his patronage by the patron, of his benefice by the presentee. An innocent clerk is under no dis- ability, as he might be by the canon law. Simony may be com- mitted in three ways,—in promotion to orders, in presentation to a benefice, and in resignation of a benefice. Thc common law (with which the canon law is incorporated, as far as it is not contrary to the common or statute law or the prerogative of the crown) has been considerably modified by statute. Where no statute applics to the case, the doctrines of the canon law may still be of author- ity. Both Edward VI. and Elizabeth promulgated advertisements against simony. The Act of 31 Eliz. c. 6 was intended to reach the corrupt patron as well as the corrupt clerk, the ecclesiastical censures apart from the statute not extending to the case of a patron. The first part of the Act deals with the penalties for election or resignation of officers of churches, colleges, schools, hospitals, halls, and societies for reward. The second part of the Act provides that if any person or persons, bodies politic and | corporate, for any sum of money, reward, gift, profit, or benefit, directly or indirectly, or for or by reason of any promise, agree- ment, grant, bond, covenant, or other assurances, of or for any sum of money, &c., directly or indirectly present or collate any person to any benefice with cure of souls, dignity, prebend, or | living ecclesiastical, or give or bestow the same for or in respect of any such corrupt cause or consideration, every such presentation, collation, gift, and bestowing, and every admission,

institution, Investiture, and induction shall be void, frustrate, and of none jeffect in law; and it shall be lawful for the queen to present,

collate unto, or give and bestow every such benefice, dignity, prebend, and living ecclesiastical for that one time or turn only ; and all and every person or persons, bodies politic and corporate, that shall give or take any such sum of money, &c., directly or indirectly, or that shall take or make any such promise, &c., shall forfeit and lose the double value of one year's profit of every such benefice, &c., and the person so corruptly taking, procuring, seeking, or accepting any such benefice, &c., shall be adjudged a – disabled person in law to have or enjoy the same benefice, &c. i Admission, institution, installation, or induction of any person to (a benefice, &c., for any suin of money, &c., renders the offender _ liable to the penalty already mentioned. But in this case the presentation reverts to the patron and not to the crown. The

penalty for corrupt resigning or exchanging of a benefice with _ cure of souls is that the giver as well as the taker shall lose double _ the value of the sum go given or taken, half the sum to go to the _ own and half to a common informer. The penalty for taking Money, &c., to procure ordination or to give orders or licence to preach is a fine of £40; the party so corruptly ordained forfeits _ £10 ; acceptance of any benefice within seven years after such corrupt entering into the ministry makes such benefice merely | void, and the patron may present as on a vacancy; the penalties

| * See Roscoe, Life of Leo X., vol. i. p. 463. i |

‘ 3 Compare the fine distinctions drawn by the casuists and attacked _ by Pascal in the twelfth of the Provincial Letters,

simon y

85

are divided as in the last case. The Act is cumulative only, and does not take away or restrain any punishment prescribed by ecclesiastical law. The Act of 1 Will. and M. sess. 1, c. 16, guards the rights of au innocent successor in certain cases. It enacts that after the death of a person simoniacally

presented the offence or contract of simony shall not be alleged or pleaded to the prejudice of any other patron innocent of simony, or of his clerk by him presented, unless the person simoniac or simoniacally pre- sented was convicted of such offence at common law or in some ecclesiastical court in the lifetime of the person simoniac or simoniacally presented. The Act also declares the validity of leases made by a simoniac or simoniacally-presented person, if bona fide and for valuable consideration to a lessee ignorant of the simony. By 13 Anne c. 11, if any person shall for money, reward, gift, profit, or advantage, or for any promise, agreement, grant, bond, covenant, or other assurance for any money, &c., take, procure, or accept the next avoidance of or presentation to any bencfice, dignity, prebend, or living ecclesiastical, and shall be presented or collated thereupon, such presentation or collation and every admission, institution, investiture, and induction upon the same shall be utterly void; and such agreement shall be deemed a simoniacal contract, and the queen may present for that one turn only ; and the person so corruptly taking, &c., shall be adjudged disabled to have and enjoy the same benefice, &c., aud shall be subject to any punishment limited by ecclesiastical law. 3 and 4 Vict. c. 113, § 42, provides that no spiritual person may sell or assign any patronage or presentation belonging to him by virtue of any dignity or spiritual office held by him; such sale or assign- ment is null and void. This section has been construed to take away the old archbishop's ''option," 7.¢., the right to present to a benefice in a newly appointed bishop's patronage at the option of the archbishop. By canon 40 of the canons of 1603 an oath against simony was to be administered to every person admitted to any spiritual or ecclesiastical function, dignity, or benefice. By 28 and 29 Vict. c, 122 a declaration was substituted for the oath, and a new canon incorporating the alteration was ratified by the crown in 1866. By the canon law all resignation bonds were simoniacal, and in 1826 the House of Lords held that all resigna- tion bonds, general or special, were illegal. Special bonds have since, however, been to a limited extent sanctioned by law. 9 Geo. IV. c. 94 makes a written promise to resign valid if made in favour of some particular nominee or one of two nominees, subject to the conditions that, where there are two nominees, each of them must be either by blood or marriage an uncle, son, grand- son, brother, nephew, or grand-nephew of the patron, that the writing be deposited with the registrar of the diocese open to public inspection, and that the resignation be followed by pre-

sentation within six months of the person for whose benefit the bond is made, Cases of simony have come before the courts in which clergy of the highest rank have been implicated. In 1695, in the case of Lucy v. The Bishop of St David's, the bishop was deprived for simony. The Queen's Bench refused a prohibition (1 Lord Raymond's Rep. 447). As lately as 1841 the dean of York was deprived by the archbishop for simony, but in this case the Queen's Bench granted a prohibition on the ground of informality in the proceedings (In the Matter of the Dean of York, 2 Queen's Bench Rep., 1). The general result of the law gathered from the statutes and decisions may be exhibited as follows :—(1) it is not simony for a layman or spiritual person not purchasing for himself to purchase while the church is full an advowson or next presenta- tion, however immediate the prospect of a vacancy ; (2) it is not simony for a spiritual person to purchase for himself a life or any greater estate in an advowson, and to present himself thereto ; (3) it is not simony to exchange benefices under an agreement that no payment is to be made for dilapidations on either side ; (4) it is not simony to make certain assignments of patronage under the Church Building and New Parishes Acts (9 and 10 Vict. c. 88,132 and 33 Vict. c. 94), (5) itis simony for any person to purchase the next pre- sentation while the church is vacant ; (6) it is simony for a spiritual person to purchase for himself the next presentation, though the church be full ; (7) it is simony for any person to purchase the next presentation, or in the case of purchase of an advowson the next presentation by the purchaser will be simoniacal if there is any arrangement for causing a vacancy to be made ; (8) it is simony for the purchaser of an advowson while the church is vacant to present on the next presentation ; (9) it is simony to exchange otherwise than stmpliciter ; no compensation in money may be made to the person receiving the less valuable benefice. The law on the subject of simony has been for some time regarded as unsatisfactory by the authorities of the church. The archbishop of Canterbury has under- taken to introduce into the House of Lords a bill for the amendment of the law, the heads of which have recently (February 1886) been under the consideration of convocation. The bill proposes inter alia to prohibit the sale of next presentations and of advowsons unless under certain limitations, to abolish resignation bonds, and to sub- stitute for the present declaration against simony declarations that the presentee has not committed certain specific acts.

In Scotland simony is an offence both by civil and ecclesiastical law. The rules are generally those of the canon law. ‘There are few decisions of Scottish courts on the subject. By the Act of 1584, ce. 5, ministers, readers, and others guilty of simony provided to benefices were to be deprived. An Act of Assembly of 1753 declares pactions simoniacal whereby a minister or probationer before presentation and as a means of obtaining it bargains not to raise a process of augmentation of stipend or demand reparation or enlargement of his manse or glebe after induction. (J. Wt.)

SIMPLICIUS, the successor of Pope MHilarius or Hilarus, was a native of Tibur, and was consecrated bishop of Rome on February 25, 468. He died March 2, 483, and was succeeded by Felix ILI. His extant letters, which date from the banishment of Romulus Augustulus and the early years of Odoacer’s reign, relate almost entirely to the ecclesiastical and court intrigues of Alexandria and Constantinople in connexion with the Monophysite controversy.

SIMPLICIUS, a native of Cilicia, a disciple of Ammonius and of Damascius, was one of the last of the Neoplatonists. From 400 to 529 a.p. the Neoplatonic school at Athens was the centre of pagan opposition to victorious Christianity, and, as such, fell a victim to imperial persecution, The subvention which it had re- ceived from the state was withdrawn ; its private property was confiscated ; and at last in 529 the teaching at Athens of philosophy and jurisprudence was forbidden (Malalas, p. 451, ed. Bonn). Disestablished, disendowed, and silenced, the scholarch Damascius, Simplicius, Priscianus, and four others resolved in 531 or 532 to seek the protec- tion of Khosrau Andsharvan (or Chosroes), who had ascended the throne of Persia in the former of these years. To his court they went; but, though from this patron of Greek learning they received a hearty welcome, they found themselves unable to support a continued residence amongst barbarians. Before two years had elapsed they returned to Greece, Khosrau, in his treaty of peace concluded with Justinian in 533, expressly stipulating that the seven philosophers should be allowed " to return to their own homes, and to live henceforward in the enjoyment of liberty of conscience" (Agathias, ii. 30,31). After his return from Persia Simplicius wrote commen- taries upon Aristotle's De Calo, Physica, De Anima, and Categoriz, which, with a commentary upon the Hnchiridion of Epictetus, have survived. In his writings Simplicius, who had small pretensions to originality of doctrine, devotes himself to the exposition and reconciliation of his authorities. His respect at once for Plato and for Aristotle is so great that he refuses to acknowledge any real difference between them, even in regard to their theories of universals and of matter. His remarks are, however, thoughtful and intelligent, and his learning is prodigious. To the student of Greek philosophy his commentaries are invaluable, as they contain many fragments of the older philosophers as well as of his immediate predecessors.

The editions of the Greek text of the commentaries are as follows :—on the De Cxlo, Utrecht, by S. Karsten, 1865 (the Greek text published at Venice in 1526 is no more than a retranslation from Guil. de Moerbeka's Latin version); on the Physica, Venice, 1526, Berlin (by H. Diels), vol. i. 1882; on the De Anima (a dis- appointing work), Venice, 1527, Berlin (by M. Hayduck), 1882; on the Categorix, Venice, 1499, Basel, 1551; on the

Enchiridion, Venice, 1528, Paris (Didot), 1842, &c. On the life and writings of Simplicius, see J. A. Fabricius, Bibliotheca Graca, ix. 529 sq.; Ch. A. Brandis's excellent article in Smith's Dict. of Greek and Roman Biography ; E. Zeller, D. Phil. d. Gr., ITI. ii. 851 sq.; also Ch. A. Brandis, " Ueber d. Griech. Ausleger d. Aristot. Organons," in Abh. Berl. Akad., 1833, and C. G. Zumpt, " Ueber d. Bestand d. phil. Schulen in Athen," zd7d., 1842.

SIMPSON, Sir James Younc, Barr. (1811-1870), physician, was born in the town of Bathgate, Linlithgow, Scotland, on the 7th of June 1811. His father was a baker in that town, who largely owed a moderate success

in business to a shrewd and managing wife. James wag the youngest of a family of eight, and for the furtherance of his worldly prospects the others struggled and sacrificed, At the age of fourteen he entered the university of Edip. burgh as a student in the arts classes. Two years later he began his medical studies. At the age of nineteen he obtained the licence of the College of Surgeons, and two years afterwards took the degree of doctor of medicine, Dr Thomson, who then occupied the chair of pathology in the university, impressed with the graduation thesis, " On Death from Inflanimation," presented by Simpson, offered him his assistantship. The offer was accepted, and during the session 1837-38 he acted as interim lecturer op pathology during the illness of the professor. The following winter he delivered his first course of lectures on obstetric medicine in the extra-academical school. On February 4, 1840, he was elected to the professorship of medicine and midwifery in the university. Towards the end of 1846 he was present at an operation performed by Liston on a patient rendered unconscious by the inhalation of sulphuric ether. The success of the pro- ceeding was so marked that Simpson immediately began to use it in midwifery practice. He continued, however, to search for other substances having similar effects, and in March 1847 he read a paper on chloroform to the Medico-Chirurgical Society of Edinburgh, in which he fully detailed the history of the use of anzesthetics from the earliest times, but especially dwelt upon the advantages of chloroform over ether. He advocated its use, not only for the prevention of pain in surgical operations, but also for the relief of pain in obstetrical practice. His strong and uncompronising

advocacy of its use in the latter class of cases gave rise to one of the angriest and most widespread controversies of the time, and, although his views may not have been generally indorsed by later professional practice, anesthetics in surgical operations have from that time held an indisputed place, and Simpson's aneesthetic still con- tinues the favourite in the practice of the Edinburgh school. In 1847 he was appointed a physician to the queen in Scotland. In 1859 he advocated the use of acupressure in place of ligatures for arresting bleeding ; his views on this subject have, however, given place to improvements in the ligature and to a better knowledge of the condi- tions influencing its efficiency. His contributions to the literature of his profession and to archeology, in which latter he took an active interest, were very numerous, and embrace Obstetric Memoirs and Contributions (2 vols.), Homeopathy, Acupressure, Selected Obstetrical Works, Anesthesia and Hospitalism, Clinical Lectures on the Diseases of Women, and three volumes of essays on archeological subjects. Simpson, who had been created a baronet in 1866, died on May 6th 1870, and was accorded a public funeral; his statue in bronze now stands in West Princes Street Gardens, Edinburgh. Simpson was a man of strong individuality and somewhat hasty temper, an uncompromising and aggressive opponent when he believed himself in the right, yet so tender and sympathetic that he endeared himself to an immense circle of friends and patients. Endowed with great mental power, activity, and receptivity, he performed a very large amount of literary work, much of which was of great valuc at the time and still continues to be of interest. He will, however, be chiefly remembered in the annals of medicine

as a great personality, who brilliantly fought and won the battle for anesthetics, and introduced chloroform.

SIMPSON, Tomas (1710-1761), mathematician, was born at Market Bosworth in Leicestershire on the 20th of August 1710. His father was a stuff weaver, and, intend- ing to bring his son up to his own business, took little care of the boy's education. Young Simpson, however, was eager for knowledge, and so ardent was he in pursulb 0 it that he neglected his weaving, and in consequence of a quarrel was forced to leave his father's house. He settled

for a short time at Nuneaton, where he met a pedlar who practised fortune-telling. By the encouragement and assistance of this man Simpson was induced to make a profession of casting nativities himself, and he soon became the oracle of the neighbourhood. But he was not hong in discovering the imposture of astrology, and his conscience, as well as an accident which happened to him in the practice of his art, compelled him to abandon this profession. After a residence of two or three years at Derby, where he worked as a weaver during the day and taught pupils in the evenings, he went up to London and pursued the same course, but with more success. The number of his pupils increased ; his abilities became more widely known ; and he was enabled to publish by subscrip- tion his Treatise of Fluxions in 1737. His treatise, as was afterwards acknowledyed, abounded with errors of the press, and contained several obscurities and defects incidental to the author's want of experience and the disadvantages under which he laboured. His next publications were A Treatise on the Nature and Laws of Chance, 1740; Essays on Several Curious and Useful Subjects in Speculatwe and Mixed Mathematicks, 1740 ; The Doctrine of Annuities and Reversions deduced from General and Evident Principles, 1742; and Mathematical Dissertatwons on a Variety of Physical and Analytical Subjects, 1743. Soon after the publication of his Hssays he was chosen a member of the Royal Academy at Stock- holm ; in 1743 he was appointed professor of mathematics in the Royal Military Academy at Woolwich; and in 1745 he was admitted a fellow of the Royal Society of London. In 1745 he published A Treatise of Algebra, jwith an appendix containing the construction of geo- metrical problems, and i1 1747 the Elements of Plane Geometry. The latter book, unlike many others with the same title, is not an edition of Euclid's Zlements, but an independent treatise. Though it can hardly be said that $ an introduction to geometry it is preferable to Euclid, yet the solutions of problems contained in it (and in the appendix to the Algebra as well) are in general exceedingly ingenious. In his 7rigonometry, Plane and Spherical, with the Construction and Application of Logarithms, which 'appeared in 1748, there is a tolerably uniform use of contractions for the words sine, tangent, é&c., prefixed to phe symbol of the angle. Zhe Doctrine and Application of Fluwions, which he issued in 1750, was more full and omprehensive than his earlier work on the same subject, and altogether was so different that he wished it to be 'considered as a new book and not as a second edition of pag former. In

1752 appeared Select Lxercises for Young Proficents in the Mathematicks, and in 1757 his Miscel- laneous Tracts on Some Curious and Very Interesting Subjects nm Mechanics, Physical Astronomy, and Speculative Mathe- matics, the last and perhaps the greatest of all his works. From the year 1735 he had sometimes under his own name, Sometimes under fictitious names, been a frequent ‘ontributor to the Ladies’ Diary, an annual publication partly devoted to the solution of mathematical problems, and from 1754 till 1760 inclusive he was the editor of it. Krom first to last Simpson seems to have had his own share of the cares and anxieties of this world, and it is istonishing how under such circumstances he contrived to iccomplish what he did. His unremitting application and the want of proper regimen gradually undermined jhis health, and he died on the 14th of May 1761 at his native village. His name will probably be considered the ise illustrious in the long roll of the non-academical

athematicians of Britain.

| SIMROCK, Kart (1802-187 6), German poet and student of medieval literature, was born on the 28th ‘August 1802 at Bonn, where his father was a musicseller.

He studied law at the universities of Bonn and Berlin, and in 1823 entered the Prussian civil service, from which he was expelled in 1830 for having written a poem in praise of the July revolution. Afterwards he was per- mitted to lecture at the university of Bonn, and in 1850 he was made a professor of Old German literature. He died on the 18th July 1876.

Simrock established his reputation by his excellent modern rendering of the Nibelungenlied (1827), and of the works of Walther von der Vogelweide (1833). Among other works trans- lated by him into the German of to-day were the Arme Heinrich of Hartmann von Aue (1830), the Parzival and Titwrel of Wolfram von Eschenbach (1842), the Tristan of Gottfried of Strasburg (1852), the Edda, Beowulf, and Heliand. In the Heldenbuch (1843-49) he offered a complete representation of the heroic legends of

Germany, partly by means of translations, partly by means of independent poems. Before the publication of this work he had given evidence of an original poetical faculty in Wieland der Schnried (1835); and in 1844 he issued a volume of Gedichte in which there are many good lyrics, romances, and ballads. In 1850 appeared Lauda Sion, and in 1857 the Dewtsehe Stonsharfe, col- lections of Old German sacred poetry. Of his republications the most popular and the most valuable were the Deutsehen Volks- biicher, of which fifty-five were printed between 1839 and 1867. His best contribution to antiquarian science was his Handbuch der deutschen Mythologie (1853-55). At an early stage of his carcer Simrock took a high place among students of Shakespeare by his Quellen des Shakespeare in Novellen, Marchen, und Sagen (1881); and afterwards he translated Shakespeare's poems and a consider- able number of his dramas. Another important book was Novel- lenschatz der Italiener (1832). Among the rest of his works may be mentioned Die Rheinsagen, Das malerische und romantische

Rheinland, and his Deutsehen Kricgslicder. See Hocker, Karl Simrock (1877).

SIMSON, Roperr (1687-1768), mathematician, was the eldest son of a Glasgow merchant, John Simson of Kirktonhill in Ayrshire, and was born on the 14th of October 1687. He was intended for the church, and passed with distinction through the usual course of study for that profession at the university of Glasgow. The bent of his mind, however, was towards mathematics, not theology ; and, when a prospect was opened up to him of succeeding to the mathematical chair, he proceeded to London in order to become acquainted with some of the eminent mathematicians there and to increase his stock of mathematical knowledge. After a year's residence in London he returned to Glasgow, and in 1711 was appointed by the university to the professorship of mathe- matics. The duties of this office he discharged for half a century. During that time he published several works on pure geometry, and carried on an extensive mathematical correspondence. In 1746 the university of St Andrews, wishing to confer on him an honorary degree, chose, accord- ing to his biographer Dr William Trail, that of doctor of medicine, because in his youth he had made a careful study of botany. He never married, and his long life was spent within the

walls of his college. His habits were exceedingly regular, his hours of work and of amusement being rigorously fixed. A studious man of science, he had no relish for the promiscuous intercourse of society, and his manner of living was simple and inexpensive. In person he was tall, with a handsome countenance and an affable manner, and he used always to dress in light-coloured clothes. Though, like some other distinguished mathematicians, he was rather absent-minded, in matters of business he was very circumspect. He was a man of the strictest integrity, ready to do justice to the merits of others, and not too sensible of his own. He enjoyed a long course of uninterrupted health, and was seriously indisposed only for a few weeks before his death, which took place on the 1st of October 1768.

The first of Simson's published writings is a paperin the Philo- sophieal Transaetions of the Royal Society of London (vol. xl. p. 330, 1723) on the subject of Euclid's Porisms, the nature of which

he was the first to elucidate (see Porrsms). Then followed Sectionum Coniearum Libri V. (Edinburgh, 1735), a second edition

of which, with additions, appeared in 1750. The first three books of this treatise were translated into English, and several times printed, with the title Lhe Elements of the Conie Sections. In 1749 was published Apollonii Perger Locorum Planorum Libri IT., a restora- tion of one of Apollonius's lost treatises, founded on the lemmas given in the seventh book of Pappus's Mathematical Collection. In 1756 appeared, both in Latin and in English, the first edition of his Eueclid's Elements. This work, which contained only the first six and the eleventh and twelfth books, and to which in its English version he added the Data in 1762, has become the standard text of Euclid in England. The additions and alterations which Simson made by way of restoring the text to its '¢ original accuracy " are certainly not all of them improvements, and the notes he appended show with what an uncritical reverence he regarded the creat gcometers of antiquity. Two other works, restorations of Apollonius's treatise De Sectione Determinata and Euclid's treatise De Porismatibus, which Simson was too distrustful of himself to publish during his lifetime, were printed for private circulation in 1776 at the expense of Earl Stanhope, in a volume with the title Roberti Simson,

M.D. ; Opera Quedam Reliqua. The volume contains also two additional books De Sectione Determinata,

two small dissertations on Logarithms and on the Limits of

Quantities and Ratios, and a few problems illustrative of the ancient geomctrical analysis. How far these restorations represent the lost originals will probably always be a matter of conjecture. The De Porismatibus certainly cannot be coextensive with Euclid's three books; but, if it is only a restored fragment, the credit due to Simson's perseverance and penetration in recovering from oblivion the nature and some of the contents of one of the most interesting treatises of antiquity will always be such as to keep his name in the remembrance of geometers.

SIMSON, Witi1am (1800-1847), portrait, landscape, and subject painter, was born at Dundee in 1800, He studied under Andrew Wilson at the Trustees' Academy, Edinburgh, and his early pictures—landscape and marine subjects—were executed with great spirit and found a ready sale. He next turned his attention to figure painting, producing in 1829 the Twelfth of August, which was followed in 1830 by Sportsmen Regaling and a Highland Deerstalker. In the latter year he was elected a member of the Scottish Academy ; and, having acquired some means by portrait-painting, he spent three years in Italy, and on his return in 1838 settled in London, where he exhibited his Camaldolese Monk Showing Relics, his Cimabue and Giotto, his Dutch Family, and his Columbus and his Child at the Convent of Santa Maria la Rabida. He died in London on the 29th of August 1847.

Simson is greatest as a landscapist; his Solway Moss—Sunset, exhibited in the Royal Scottish Academy of 1851 and now in the National Gallery, Edinburgh, ranks as one of the finest examples of the early Scottish school of landscape.

His elder brother George (1791-1862), portrait-paintcr, was also a meniber of the Royal Scottish Academy, and his younger brother David (d. 1874) practised as a landscape-painter.

SINAI. In judging of the points of controversy connected with Sinai we are brought face to face with the question of the historicity of the Hebrew records involved. Though new attempts to fix the stations of the wilderness wandering appear every year, critics have long agreed that the number of forty for the years of wandering and for the stations are round numbers, and that the details are not based on historical tradition of the Mosaic age. This does not exclude the possibility that the names of some or all of the stations belong to real places and are based on more or less careful research on the part of the writers who record them. As regards the Mountain of the Law in particular, if the record of Exod. xix. sg. is strictly historical, we must seek a locality where 600,000 fighting men, or some two million souls in all, could encamp and remain for some time, finding pasture and drink for their cattle, and where there was a mountain (with a wilderness at its foot) rising so sharply that its base could be fenced in, while yet it was easily ascended, and its summit could be seen by a great multitude below. In the valley there must have been a flowing stream. The peninsula of Sinai does not furnish any locality where so great a host could meet under the conditions specified, and accordingly many

investigators give up the statistics of the number of Hebrews and seek a place that fulfils the other conditions. But when we consider that the various records embodied in the PENTATEUCH (q.v.) were composed long after the time of Moses, and that the authors in all probability never saw Sinai, and had no exact topographical tradition to fall back on, but could picture to themselves the scene of the events they recorded only by the aid of imagination, the topographical method of identifying the Mountain of the Law becomes very questionable. The Pentateuchal writers are not at one even about the name of the mountain. It used to be thought that Horeb was the name of the mountain mass as a whole, or of its southern part, while Sinai was the Mountain of the Law proper, but it has been shown by Dillmann that the Elohist and Deuteronomy always use the name Horeb for the same mountain which the Jahvist and the Priestly Code call Sinai. The Elohist belonged to Northern Israel, but Judges v. 5 shows that even in Northern Israel the other name Sinai was not unknown, And it might be shown, though that cannot be done here, that the several accounts vary not

only as regards the name but in topographical details. Thus all that can be taken as historically fixed is that after leaving Goshen the Hebrews abode for some time near a mountain called Sinai or Horeb (cf. Israut, vol. xiii. p. 396), and that this mountain or range was held to 4 holy as a seat of the Deity (Exod. ii, 1, 1 Kings xine.)

Where, then, was this mountain? The Midianites, of whom according to one source Jethro was priest, probably always lived east of the Gulf of “Akaba; yet we can hardly follow Beke in seeking Sinai beyond that gulf, but must rather think of some point in the so-called peninsula of Sinai, which lies between the Gulfs of ‘Akaba and Suez, bounded on the N. by the Wilderness el-Tih, which slopes gently towards the Mediterranean. To the south of this wilderness rises the Jebel el-‘Tih, a mass composed mainly of Nubian sandstone and cretaceous limestone, which attains in fantastic forms an altitude of some 3000 feet; its ridges converge towards the south and are cut off by great valleys from the mass now known as Mount Sinai. The latter is composed of primitive rocks,— granite, porphyry, diorite, gneiss, de. The sandstones of Jebel el- fh are rich in minerals ; inscriptions of Amenophis IIL and Thothmes III. found on the spot show that the ancient Egyptians got emerald, malachite, and kupfergriin at Sarbut al-Khadem; and still older are the turquoise and copper mines of Maghara, where inscriptions occur bearing the names of kings from Senefru and Cheops down to Rameses II, These mines were worked by criminals and prisoners of war, and the waste products of copper foundries indicate that the peninsula was once better wooded than now, of which indeed we have express testimony of post-Christian date. At present the dominant feature is bare walls of rock, especially in the primitive formations ; the steep and jagged summits have a striking effect, which is increased by the various colours of the rock and the clearness of the atmosphere. The deep-cut valleys are filled by rushing torrents after rain, but soon dry up again. In the south the centre of the main mountain mass is Mount Catherine (8540 feet), Omm Shdmar to the south-east being little lower ; this peak and north of it Mount Serbél (6750 feet), which rises more immediately from the plain, dominate the Kah, a waste expanse of sand strown with pebbles, which occupies the south-west margin of the peninsula. In the KaA‘ah is the village of Tur, and at the southern promontory (Ras Mohammed) is the little

hamlet of Sherm. The Sinai group as a whole is called by the Arabs Jebel al-Tur ; the name Sind in Arabic comes only from books. ‘The area

eager

oe

of the peninsula is about 11,200 square miles, the popula- tion is four to five thousand souls, chiefly Bedouins of various tribes, whose common name, derived from Tur, is Towara. They have sheep and goats, with which they retire in summer to the higher lands, where there is good pasture ground, and where springs are comparatively common. On the chalk and sandstone water is scarcer than among the primitive rocks, and often brackish. Though the rocks are bare, there is always vegetation in the dales, especially acacias and tamarisks; from the latter (7’. mannifera) manna is still derived in quantities that vary with the rainfall, On the hills grow aromatic plants, especially Thymavee. The fauna includes the ibex, hyrax, and hyena; the panther too is sometimes found. Flights of quail have been observed. In some valleys there are well-kept gardens and good date-palms ; the most noted oasis is that of Feiran, in the north-west of the peninsula, which is watered by a perennial stream. Whether Feiran is the Rephidim of Exod. xvii. is a question which, like the identification of the other stations of the Israelites, depends on the localization of the Mountain of the Law.

There is no genuine pre-Christian tradition on this subject. The chief authority for the ancient sanctity of Mount Sinai is Antoninus Martyr (end of the 6th century), who tells that the heathen Arabs in his time still celebrated a moon feast there. As sém means “moon,” this feast has been connected with the name of Sinai, but the proposed etymology is not certain. Of heathen origin, too, are the many Nabatzan inscriptions (see Napatm#ans) of Sinai, found especially in the Wady Mokatteb (in the north-west), and sometimes accompanied by rude drawings. The language and character are Aramaic, but the proper names are mainly those of Arabs, who passing by graved their names on the rocks. That they were pilgrims to Sinai cannot be made out with certainty. The inscriptions date from the

early years of the Christian era, when the Nabateean kingdom was at its height.

In early Christian times many anchorites inhabited Sinai, living for the most part in the caves, which are numerous even in the primitive rocks. Then monasteries were built, the most famous being the great one of St Catherine in Wady el-Dér (the valley of the monastery). On Serbal, too, there were many granite dwellings, and in the neighbouring Pharan (Pheenicion), which was a bishop's see, there were, as the ruins show, churches and convents.

The question then is whether when the hermits first settled in the peninsula there existed a tradition as to the place of the Mountain of the Law, and whether they chose for their residence a spot which was already traditionally consecrated by memories significant to the Christian as well as to the Jew. No assertion of the existence of such a tradition is to be found in Josephus, who only says that Sinai was the highest mountain of the district —a _descrip- tion which might apply to Serbél as seen from the plain below. Eusebius uses expressions which may also seem to point to Serbdl as the place of the law-giving, and it must be admitted that the tradition which seeks the holy site in the group of Jebel Musa (c.c., the mass of which Mount Catherine is the highcst peak) is not older than the time of Justinian, so that the identification with Mount Serbal seems to have greater antiquity in its favour. In later times Jebel Mus& and Serbél had each its own tradition, and the holy places were pointed out at each; thus from the monastery of St Catherine a path of granite Steps was constructed up to "the Mountain of the Law," but similar steps are found at Serbal. That these traditions are not decisive, however, is admitted, more or less, even

by those moderns who, like Lepsius, Ebers, Bartlett, give their voice for Serbal. Most authorities still prefer Jebel Mus4 or some point in that group, but they again differ in details. First of all there is much difficulty in determin- ing the route by which the Hebrews approached the mountain. 'Then comes the question of finding a suitable plain for their encampment under the mountain, which is best met if, with Robinson, Stanley, Palmer, and others, the plain is taken to be that of al-Rahe and the overhang- ing mountain to be Jebel Sufsafeh. The latter is over 6300 feet high, and

consists of pasture ground; it does not fit all the details in Exodus, but this objection is quite as strong against the traditional site on Jebel] Mus& (Mount Moses), which lies farther to the south. Jebel Musa has been accepted by Tischendorf, Laborde, Ritter, Strauss, Farrar, and many others; on this view the Israelites must have encamped in the narrow Wady al-Seba‘iyeh, north of the mount. But the absence of exact topographical detail on the part of the Biblical narrators, who always speak of Sinai as if it were a single summit and give no hint about several summits of which it is one, shows that in their time there was no real tradition on the matter, and that all attempts at identification are necessarily vain.

Literature. —Burckhardt, Travels in Syria, &c., London, 1822; Leon de Laborde, Voyage de l’Arabie Petrée, Paris, 1830-36; Robinson, Biblical Researches, London, 1841; Lepsius, Kevse, Berlin, 1845 ; Stanley, Sinai and Palestine; Fraas, Aus d. Orient, Stuttgart, 1867; Ordnance Survey of the Pen. of Sinai, South- ampton, 1869, 8 vols.; Palmer, Desert of the Exodus, Cambridge, 1871; Ebers, Durch Gosen zum Sinai, 2d ed., Leipsic, 1881 ; Baker Greene, The Hebrew Migration, London, 1883 ; Hull, Mownt Seir, Sinai, and West Palestine, London, 1885. See also the Palestine Society’s Quarterly Statement, passim. (A. SO.)

SINCLAIR, Str Jouy, Bart. (1754-1835), a volu- minous Scottish author, was descended from the Sinclairs of Ulbster, a branch of the noble house of Caithness. He was the eldest son of George Sinclair and Janet, daughter of William, Lord Strathnaver, and was born at Thurso Castle, 10th May 1754. Fora short time he had Logan the poet as a private tutor, and, after studying Greek and Latin at the high school of Edinburgh, entered the university in his thirteenth year. He was admitted a member of the faculty of advocates in 1775, and was subsequently called to the English bar (Lincoln’s Inn), but, prefering politics to law, was in 1780 elected member of parliament for his native county. As Caithness was then only alternately represented with Bute, he was in 1784 chosen for Lostwithiel, Cornwall, and in 1796 for Petersfield, Hampshire, his parliamentary career extending almost uninterruptedly over thirty years till July 1811. In 1782 he began the issue of those pamphlets on various subjects connected with the welfare of the nation which made him perhaps the most voluminous author of his time, his separate publications, as given in his Memoirs, amounting in all to three

hundred and sixty-seven. His reputation as a financier and political economist was firmly established by his publication in 1784 of the History of the Public Revenue of the British Empire, to subsequent editions of which was added a Review of the Financial Administration of the Right Hon. Wilham Pitt. The adoption of his plan for the issue of exchequer bills during the great commercial stagnation of 1793 pre vented the ruin of a large number of merchants and manufacturers ; and in 1797 Pitt consulted him when the treasury threatened to become exhausted, with the result that the scheme known as the “loyalty loan” was estab- lished. On 4th February 1786 Sinclair was created a baronet of Great Britain. After succeeding his father in 1770 he had set himself to improve the family estates, thus changing in a great degree the aspect of Caithness and affording employment toa largely increased number of the population. In 1791 he established at Edinburgh a society « XXII, — 12

for the improvement of breeds of sheep; and in 1793 he circulated a plan for a board of agriculture and internal improvement. When the board was shortly afterwards established by a charter from the crown he was nominated its first president. From the agricultural reports published by this society he compiled his Code of Agriculture, published in 1819. About 1790 he conceived a plan for a Statestecal Account of Scotland, and the work was published in twenty-one volumes, 1791-1799.

Sir John Sinclair was also the author of a number of tracts on naval and military subjects; and in 1794 he raised for the defence of the kingdom a regiment of a thousand men, at first called the ‘‘Caithness Fencibles,” afterwards the “Rothesay and Caithness Fencibles”; a second battalion of a thousand men was raised by him in 1795, which took part in suppressing the rebellion in Ireland in 1798. Though originally a supporter in parliament of the war policy of Pitt, he afterwards joined the “armed neutrality” party, which advocated retrenchment and reform. In 1805 he was appointed by Pitt a commis- sioner for superintending the construction of roads and bridges in the north of Scotland. He was a member of most of the agricultural societies of the Continent, and held as many as twenty-five foreign diplomas. He was a fellow of the Royal Societies of London and

Edinburgh, a fellow of the Antiquarian Society of London, and president of the Highland Society of London. No man of his time took a more comprehensive and enlightened interest in the general welfare of the country or conferred on it more substantial benefits. He enjoyed the esteem and intimate friendship of many eminent contemporaries both at home and abroad, with several of whom he kept up an extensive correspondence. He died 21st December 1835.

By his first wife, a daughter of Alexander Maitland of Stoke Newington near London, he had two daughters, of whom the elder, Hannah, was the authoress of a work on the Principles of the Christian Faith. By his second wife, the Hon. Diana Macdonald, only daughter of Alexander, first Lord Macdonald, he had thirteen children, of whom the eldest son, George (1790-1860), who sue- eeeded to the baronetey, was a schoolfellow of Byron and Peel at Harrow, and is styled by Byron the ‘prodigy of our school days”; the third son, John (1797-1875), became arehdeacon of Middlesex, and, besides the Memoirs of his father, wrote several theological works; and the fourth daughter, Catherine (1800-1864), who for many years acted as his seeretary, after his death achieved some distinetion as an authoress, her prineipal works being Modern Accomplishments, 1836; Scotland and the Scotch, 1840; Modern Flirtation, 1841; and Popular Legends and Bible Truths, 1852.

See Correspondence of the Right Hon. Sir John Sinclair, Bart., with Reminis- cences of Distinguished Characters, 2 vols., London, 1831; and Memoirs of the Life and Works of the Right Hon. Sir John Sinclair, 2 vols., Edinburgh, 1837.

SIND, the westernmost territorial subdivision of India,

and a frontier province of considerable importance in a,

geographical and political aspect, lies between the 23d and 28th parallels of N. latitude and between the 66th and 71st meridians of E. longitude. Its length from north to south is estimated at 360 miles, and the average of its breadth from east to west at 170. On the north it is bounded by the Khelat state (see Baxucuisran), the Punjab, and Bahawalpur; on the E. by Jaisalmir and Mulani, or generally the more desert tracts of Western Rajputana; on

the 8. by the Runn of Cutch (Rann of Kachh) and the Indian Ocean; and on the W. by Khelat, which overlaps it on the north. Including the alienated district of Khairpur and the extensive tract to the south called the political superintendency of the Thar and Par- kar, its area is set down as between 56,000 and 57,000 square miles.

The one great geographical feature in Sind is the lower Indus, passing, as it does, through the entire length of the province, first in a south-westerly direction, then turning somewhat to the east, then returning to a line more directly south, and finally inclining to the west, to seek an

outlet at the sea. Though there is much similarity in til appearance of the landscape on the two sides of the broad — river, the distant line of mountains between Sakhar and Sehwan, the steep pass overhanging the water at Lakki, and the hill country below Sehwan give a distinctive character to the right bank, and lend it special attraction when contrasted ~~with the flat lowlands, merging into desert, on the left. Sind has been aptly likened to Egypt, If the one depends for life and fertility on the Nile, so does the other on the Indus. The cities and towns are not so readily to be compared. Hyderabad, notwith~~ standing its remarkable fortress and handsome tombs, can_

English Miles

20

40

Map of Sind.

scarcely vie in interest as a native capital with Cairo; nor can Kurrachee, as a Europeanized capital, be said to have attained the celebrity of Alexandria. Yet there are some respects in which this particular province would not be wholly eclipsed, even in its outside pictures. It contains many monuments of archeological and architectural interest, and to the traveller descending the river from the Punjab, or ascending it from Kotri, the coup Veil on the

approach to Rohri is at times singularly striking. The beautiful little island of Khwaja Kidhr is a gem m itself ; and there is at certain seasons undoubted poetry im the very dreariness of Sakhar and Bakhar.

Owing to the deficiency of rain, the continuance of hot weather in Sind is exceptional. Lying between two monsoons, it just escapes the influence of both. ‘The south-west monsoon stops short at Lakhpat Bandar, the north-west monsoon at Kurrachee, and eved here the annual rainfall is not reckoned at more than six or eight inches, At times there is no rainfall for two or three years, while at others there is a whole season’s rainfall in one or two days. The average temperature of the summer months rises to 95° F., and the winter average is 60°, the summer maximum being 120° and the winter minimum 32°. The temperature on the sea-eoast 1s muc more equable than elsewhere. In Northern Sind we find frost i winter, while both there and in Lower Sind the summer heat 1s extreme and prolonged. This great heat, combined with the pols onous exhalations from the pools left after the annual inundation and the decaying vegetable deposits, produces the fever and ague with which the name of the country is associated, and to which even the natives themselves fall a prey.

te

SIND

The soil is largely dependent on the river overflow. This grand provision of nature is, however, uncertainly exercised; and not only ig the actual volume of water supplied from the upper Indus liable to fluctuation, but the particular lands inundated or untouched by inundation vary according to the caprices of the river. Questions of alluvion and diluvion are therefore of frequent occurrence; and it is often as hard to say whether newly-thrown-up lands belong to the state or an individual proprietor as it is to decide who is the loser in the ease of lands newly submerged. In the lands which, as a rule, are reached annually and in fair proportion by the inundation, the soil is so rich as to produce two crops or even more in the year without the assistance of manure. Saltis present in great quantity. The two principal yearly crops are the vernal, known as rabi, sown in autumn and reaped in spring, and the autumnal, knownas khar‘t/,

- gown in summer while the river is high and reaped from October to

December. In some districts there is a distinct third crop called peshras, sown in March and reaped in July and August. The imple- ments of husbandry are the plough (har), drawn by two bullocks; the harrow (sahar), a heavy log of wood drawn by four bullocks, a man standing on each end; the sced-sower (ndr7), a tube fixed to the

lough with a wooden funnel on the top, used while the ground is tag ploughed for the last time ; a curved hook (ddtro) with teeth like a saw, for reaping; and a hoe (kuriah), for weeding.

The principal products are bdjri (a well-known Indian grain), and judri (the Indian millet), rice, cotton, sugar-cane, tobacco, oil-secds, wheat, barley, and indigo. Of these, wheat may be con- sidered the staple produce of Upper, and bdj7i and judri of Middle and Lower Sind. Dates, plantains, mangoes, limes, oranges, pomegranates, citrons, figs, grapes, apples, tamarinds, mulberries, and melons are said to be fruits common to the country ; and it is added that, of late years nectarines, peaches, apricots, and other fruit trees have been successfully introduced, but the statement must be received with some reservation in respect of quantity and quality. here is no doubt that the fruits imported by the Afghan traders find more favour than any home products.

Among the chief manufactures may be mentioned the gold, silver, and silk embroideries, carpets, cloths, lacquered ware, horse-trappings and other leather-work, paper, pottery, tiles, swords, and matchlocks, and the boxes and other articles of inlaid work introduced more than a century ago from Shiraz. The lac work, a widely extended industry in India, is also in vogue in Sind. Variously coloured lac is laid in succession on the boxes, &c., while turning on the lathe, and the design is then cut through the different colours. Hyderabad has long been famous for its silks and cottons, silver and gold work, and lacquered ornaments, and the district could once boast of skilled workmen in arms and armour ; but, unless the demand for the products of its industries increase, it is to be feared that its old reputation will not long be maintained. In the cloths called sudi, silk is woven with the striped cotton—a practice possibly due to the large Mohammedan population of the country, as no Moslem can wear a garment of pure silk

without infraction of the law. As regards the carpets, Sir George Birdwood states that those froth Sind are the cheapest, coarsest, and lcast durable of all made in India. Formerly they were fine in design and colouring, but of late years they have greatly deteriorated. The cheap rugs, which sell for about 9s. each, are made with the pile (if not altogether) of cow hair, woven upon a common cotton foundation, with a rough hempen shoot. ‘The patterns are bold and suited to the material, and the dyes good and harmonious.

In 1837 the zoology of Sind was reported by Burnes to com- prise of genera and species 20 mammals, 191 birds, 36 fishes, Il reptiles, besides 200 in other departments of natural history. Of wild animals we find the tiger (in the jungles of Upper Sind), the hywna, the giirkhar or wild ass (in the south part of the Thar and Parkar district), the wolf, jackal, fox, wild hog, autelope, pharho or hog deer, hares, and porcupines. Of birds of prey, the vulture and several varieties of falcon may be mentioned. The flamingo, pelican, stork, erane, and Egyptian ibis frequent the shores of the delta. Besides these there are the ubdéra (bustard) or tilér, the rock-grouse, quail, partridge, and various kinds of parrots. Waterfowl are plentiful; in the cold season the lakes or dhandhs are covered with wild geese, kulang, ducks, teal, curlew, and snipe. Among other animals to be noted are scorpions, lizards, centipedes, and many snakes.

i he domestic animals inelude camels (one-humped), buffaloes, eep and goats, horses and asses (small but hardy), mules, and

ullocks. Of fish there are, on the sea-coast, sharks, saw-fish, a and skate; cod, sir, cavalho, red-snappcr, gassir, begti,

angdra, and buru abound. A kind of sardine also frequents the Coast. In the Indus, the finest flavoured and most plentiful fish “ee palo, generally identified with the Ailsa fish of the Ganges. ambhro (Labeo rohita) and mullet, mordko (Cirrhina mrigaia), gandan (Notopterus kapirat), khago or catfish (Rita buchanani), ld saranda), shakuir, jerkho, and singhdri (Macrones aor) aL, found. Otter, turtle, and porpoise are frequently met + 80 too are long-snouted alligators and water-snakes.

The extent of forest land is relatively small. eighty-seven in number) are situated for the most part on the banks of the Indus, and extend southward from Ghotki in the Rohri deputy collectorate to the middle delta. They are described as narrow strips of land, from two to three miles in length, and ranging from two furlongs to two miles in breadth. The largest are between 9000 and 10,000 acres in arca, but are subject to diminu- tion owing to the encroachments of the stream. The wood is principally bddul (Acacia arabica), bahan (Populus cuphratica), and kandi (Prosopis spicigcra). The tali (Dalbergia Sissi) grows to some extent in Upper Sind ; the iron-wood tree (Z'ocoma undulata) is found near the hills in the Mehar districts. There are, besides, the nim (Melia Azadirachta), the pipal (Ficus religiosa), the bér (Zizyphus Jujuba). The delta has no forests, but its shores abound with mangrove trees. Of trees introduced by the forest depart- ment we have the tamarind (Tamarindus indica), several Australian wattle trees, the water-chestnut (7rapa natans), the aula (Hmblica officinalis), the bahera (Terminalia Bellerica), the carob tree (Cera- tonia Siliqua), the China tallow (Stillingia sebifera), the bél (digle Marmelos), and the manah (Bassia latifolia). There is a specially organized forest department.

For administrative purposes the province has five well-under- Terri- stood divisions :—(1) Frontier, Upper Sind, of which the principal torial town is Jacobabad, named after the late General John Jacob, divisions.

C.B., its founder ; the hamlet which occupied its site in 1843 was a mere speck in the desert, and its name, Khangarh, can hardly be associated with the fine canal and abundant vegctation now marking the locality ; (2) Shikarpur, with its capital of the same name and Sakhar, both notable places on the right bank of the Indus ; in this division also are the towns of Larkhana and Rohri, the last on the left bank of the river ; (3) Hyderabad (Hatdarabad), of which the chief town, having the same name, was the capital of the province prior to the British occupation ; (4) Kurrachee (Karachi), with its modern Europeanizcd capital and harbour and Tattha, a town of interesting local associations; (5) Thar and Parkar, an outlying district on the south-east, more or less part of the desert tract extending far and wide in that particular quarter. Besides these there is the territory of Mir' Ali Murad, Talpur, greatly curtailed of its original dimensions, but still forming a large land alienation in Upper Sind.

Where cultivation depends so much on the character of the year's Revenue,

inundation, it is natural that the revenue should be uncertain. In 1883-84, for instance, the river was abnormally low. Consequently the area of cultivation was contracted, and, while considerable re- missions had to be granted, collections were with difficulty carried out. The rainfall, moreover, except in the Thar and Parkar dis- trict, was not ouly scanty but unseasonable. In Thar and Parkar the rainfall was especially favourable, and owing to an early in- undation and wise preparations lands never before cultivated were brought under the plough.

The gross canal revenue in Sind amounted in 1883-84 to Rs. 3,686,754, and the land revenue to Rs.1,171,925. In round numbers and English figures—without reference to the deteriora- tion of the rupee—the total is about £487,000, of which three- fourths is due to canal irrigation.

The population may be roughly reckoned at two millions and a Popula- half, an estimate which is borne out by the census of 1881. Kurrachee tion.

is now the most populous of the capitals, and its numbers far ex- ceed those of Shikarpur and Hyderabad. But the character of its inhabitants differs from that of other large towns in Sind. They are for the most part foreign and migratory, and do not represent the true Sindis.

Of the two great divisions of the people in Sind the Moham- Raees and medans comprise about two-thirds of the whole, the Hindus the eastes.

remaining third. The Mohammedans may be divided into two great bodies—the Sindis proper and the naturalized Sindis. The Sindi proper isa descendant of the original Hindu. In religion he is a Suni, though some of the Sindis belong to the Shia sect. There are probably more than three hundred families or elans among the Sindis. There is, as a rule, no distinction of caste, ex- cept that followers of certain vocations—such as weavers, leather- workers, sweepers, huntsmen—are considered low and vile. The six different classes of naturalized Sindis are—the four families of the Saiyids (the Bokhari, Mathari, Shirazi, and Lakhirayi) ; the Afghans, from Khorasan; the Baluchis; the slaves or Sidis— originally Africans ; the Memans ; and the Khwajas. The Hindu population of Sind may be divided

into the following principal castes :—the Brahmans, Kshatrias, Waishias, and Sudras, with their subdivisions. Besides these there are the Sikhs, and the reli- gious mendicants—the Sandsi, Jogi, Gosdin, and Ogar,—all of Brahman origin.

The educational progress made in Sind during the quarter of a Educa- In 1858 there tion.

century succeeding the mutiny has been very great. was but one Government English school, with 82 boys, at Kurrachee, and one with 25 boys at Hyderabad; and of the 82 only 8 of the pupils were Sindi. In 1884-85 Sind could boast of a Government high school at Kurrachee with 400 pupils, of another high school at

The forests (about Forests.

—— LS se CO OO

02

Language and litera- ture.

History.

Hyderabad with 338 pupils, and of a third at Shikarpur with 228 boys. The three passed 39 out of 48 candidates for matriculation at the Bombay university. Of vernacular or Sindi-Persian schools under native masters there were 34 which came under Government supervision in 1858, whereas there were in 1884-85 no less than 23 middle schools—teaching the vernacular and English—with 1165 pupils ; and in the primary schools the number of pupils was nearly

20,000.

Captain (now Sir Richard) Burton has given a clear and instruc- tive aceount of the language and literature of Sind. The large proportion of Sanskrit and Arabic words admitted, the anomalous structure of the grammar, and the special sounds of certain letters of its alphabet render the

first remarkable; and the original romantic poems and translations of Arabic religious works com- mand the attention of scholars to the second. Among the more celebrated of the native writers are Makhdum Hashim, Makhdum Abdullah, and Saiyid Abdw'l-Latif.

The leading features of the two years' campaign of Alexander the Great in the Punjab and Sind have been touched on else- where (see INDIA, vol. xii. p. 787). About 711 A.D. the Hindus of Sind were conquered by Muhammad Kasim, the young general of the caliph Walid, but his successors were unable to hold their ground. Inreality it was the overwhelming irruption of Mahmud of Ghazni three centuries later which finally subjugated the province. Nearly six centuries later still, Sind was annexed by the great Akbar to Delhi. In the meanwhile it had been governed by princes and petty chiefs, all of whom are celebrated in local history. After Akbar, and up to the time of Nadir Shah's invasion of India, there is little historically important to distinguish the province, separated from the other divisions of the Mughal empire, though its governors possessed a certain delegated power which might well have tempted the more ambitious to revolt. When Nadir took possession of the lands west of the Indus, one Nur Muhammad Kalhora was the quast ruler in Sind. The tribe to which he belonged claimed lineal descent from Abbas, uncle of the prophet, and had a widely-spread repute for sanctity. Their political influence had been, moreover, inereasing for many years, and in the person of one or two of their stronger chiefs they had on sundry occasions risen in arms against the imperial troops. In 1701, or thirty-eight years before the Persian invasion, Yar Muhammad Kahora had obtained possession of Shikarpur, and managed to get from the Mughal emperor a firman conferring upon him the "subahdari" of the Déra districts, with the title of "Khuda Yar Khan." On his death in 1719 he had extended his territory by the acquisition of the Kandiara and Larkhana districts, and of Sibi, a vast tract of country then in- cluding within its limits Sakhar as well as Shikarpur. He was sneceeded by hisson Nur Muhammad, who, as above shown, was in the unenviable position of having to account for his actions to no less notable an antagonist than Nadir himself. The latter was eventually appeased by an annual tribute of 20 lakhs of rupees, and on his return to Persia conferred upon the Kalhora prince the title of "Shah Kuli Khan." On Nadir's death the Sind lands of Nur Muhammad became tributary to Ahmad Shah of Kandahar, the transfer being sealed by the

bestowal of a new title, ‘‘Shah Nawaz Khan.” This occurred in 1748, from which date till 1783—when Abdul Nabi, the last of the Kathora princes, was defeated by Mir Fath Ali Khan, and the ruling dynasty forcibly superseded by the Talpur Baluch chiefs—the local history is a mere record of conflicts and reconciliations, treaties and evasions of treaty, as regards out- side powers, and of revolution and bloodshed within. The seat of government had become established at Hyderabad, founded by Ghulam Shah Kalhora in 1768. We now come to the Talpurs. These Baluchis had immigrated to Sind from their native hills under a Mir Shahdad in the early part of the 18th century, and had taken service under Nir Muhammad Kalhora. Shahdad, raised to rank and influence, died, leaving four sons, the third of whom, Mir Bahram, succeeded as head of the tribe. His murder by a grandson of Nur Muhammad was one of the main causes of the ill- feeling which had culminated in bitter hostility when later acts of treachery and barbarism sealed the fate of the tyrant rulers. The Talpurs entered Hyderabad as conquerors; but unfortunately for the consolidation of their sovereignty the suspicious nature of Mir Fath Ali, the head of the house, alarmed his near relatives. His nephew Sohrab fled to Upper Sind, and founded the principality of Khairpur, while Tara, moving eastward, became the independent chief of Mirpur. Later on, Mir Fath Ali, undeterred by divisions which he had no power to prevent, admitted to a share of his own government of Hyderabad his three younger brothers, Ghulam Ali, Karm Ali, and Murad Ali. On the death of Fath Ali in 1801 the three continued to rule together; and when Ghulam Ali was killed in 1811 the duumvirate remained supreme ; but, on the death of Karm Ali in 1828 and Murad Alia few years later, the old system was revived, and a government of four again instituted. Sueh was the state of things when British relations with the province had become necessarily an urgent consideration, owing to the Afghan expedition of 1838 (sce vol. xii. p. 807).

During this crisis of Anglo-Indian history the political officers in

Sind and Baluchistan had a difficult task to perform, and it jg infinitely to their credit that more mischief did not ensue in these countries from the many and heavy British disasters in the north,

if not for open hostility; and Sir Charles Napier had to call them to account soon after his arrival at Sakhar in the autumn of 1849, The long and complex narrative need not be here repeated. Suffice it to state, that the outcome was the conquest of Sind,—the: immediate result of the battle of Miani, fought in the vicinity of —

administration inaugurated by Sir Charles Napier himself, and

province an important section of the western presidency of India, The story of the eight years' rule of Sir Bartle Frere in Sind has yet to be written, but his name is associated with numerous matters of paramount importance,— in relation especially to the position

the old privileged landholders, the organization of municipal insti- tutions, the promotion of systematic education, the due administra. — tion of justice, and the erection of public works of utility, ==

Records, No, xvii.; Bombay Educational Report, 1885; Annual Report on Ad- ministration of Sind; Report of Director of Public Instruction, Bombay, 1857-58; Birdwood's Handbook to Indian Court, Paris, 1873, J.G,

But the amirs of Sind were to be dealt with for infractions of trea

Hyderabad in February 1848. A course of wise, firm, and kindly

continued by Messrs Pringle, Frere, Inverarity, Gen. John Jacob, Sir W. Merewether, and later commissioners, has since made the

and fortunes of the deposed amirs, the rights and immunities of

See Hughes's Gazetteer of Sind; Burton's History of Sind, Bombay Government

SINGAN, a form of the name Sz-Gan Foo (¢.2.). SINGAPORE, a British dependency, commercially

and administratively the most important of the Srrarrs

SETTLEMENTS (q.v.), which form a separate colonial govern- ment. It consists principally of an island 27 miles long

by 14 broad, lying off the south end of the Malay Penin- sula, but also includes upwards of 70 insignificant islets

SN ZA IN ar me)

1 MIBOA| IO

Tes

by vHall wiPjublic Offices

Scale of One Engtish Mile ‘me

° £7) a

Pye eh FP SN pm

t BlakanUV\M ati JI. if

Singapore and its Environs.

to the south and west within a radius of 10 miles. From the mainland of Johor, as this part of the peninsula 1S called, Singapore island is separated by a strait, Salat Tabras or Tambrosh, less than half a mile wide at the narrowest point, which was formerly the main channel of navigation to the Chinese seas. The name of Singapore Strait is given to the much wider channel which separates the island on the south from the various islands 0 Butang, Batang, Bintang, &c., belonging to the Dutch East Indies. The surface of Singapore is undulating, and diversified by hills ranging from 70 to rather less than 400 feet, the highest point being Bukit Timah, to the north-west of the town (about 519 feet). Geologically

“a

a

the core of the island consists of crystalline rocks ; but in the west there are shales, conglomerates, and sandstones ; and all round the island the valleys are filled with alluvial deposits on a much more extensive scale than might be looked for where none of the streams have a course of more than six miles, or attain to any considerable size except after heavy rains (see details in J. R. Logan's ' Local and Relative Geology of Singapore," in Jour. Beng. Asi. Soc., vol. xvi. and "The Geology of the Straits of Singa- pore," in Lond. Geol. Jour., 1851, vol. vii.). The south- western shores are fringed with coral reefs, and living coral fields are found in many parts of the strait. Being chiefly composed of red clays and laterite, the soil is not generally rich, and requires careful and liberal husbandry to make it really productive. When it was first occupied by the English the whole island was covered with forest and jungle ; and, although this was largely cleared off sub- sequent to 1837, when a mania for nutmeg plantations set in, the moisture and warmth of the climate have kept it clothed with luxuriant and perpetual verdure, in which palms, ferns, and orchids are conspicuous forms. " Near the shore, by the mouths of creeks, are grouped quaint dwellings of fishermen, built of wood or palm leaf standing on piles over the water. In the smooth sandy bays cocoa- nut palms shelter picturesque Malay houses. More inland we find groves of fruit trees, small patches of sugar-cane, Chinese gardens, tapioca and indigo fields. Neat bunga- lows—the residences of officials, merchants, and rich Chinese and Arabs—diversify the scene, particularly in the vicinity of the town. In the remote parts of the island more especially there are waste spaces which were formerly gambier plantations and are now covered with coarse lalang grass" (Governor Wild). The nutmeg trees which had for twenty years been a main source of wealth were blighted in 1860; the plantations were completely given up; and, though many of the abandoned trees recovered and nutmegs can still be gathered in Singapore, they have never again been cultivated. Cotton- planting was next tried, but without success, and though cinnamon grows well the labour necessary for its cultivation and manu- facture is too expensive. Gutta percha, originally intro- duced to England from Singapore, was so much run upon that all the trees of that kind in the island were exter- minated. Gambier and pepper, both at one time largely grown, have for many years been of little account. Liberian coffee, pine-apples, cocoa-nuts,

and aloes are now the most important objects of cultivation. Quite recently districts have been enclosed for reforestation and the eucalyptus and other trees have been planted. Almost all kinds of fruits do well in the island,—the custard-apple, pine-apple, sour-sop, lime, orange, and plantain being in season nearly all the year, and the durian, blimbing, duku, langsat, mangosteen, rambutan, tarrup, tampang, d&c., in July and August and also for all or some of the months between November and February. The botanical and zoological gardens at Singapore, connected with the Agri-Horticultural Society, have been devoted to the introduction of economic plants, such as China and Assam tea, salt-bush or Rhagodia, which forms excellent fodder, &c.

In climate Singapore is wonderfully fortunate for a country within one degree of the equator. There is hardly any seasonal change, and the annual range of temperature is generally only from

0° to 90°. “The nights especially are very cool and refreshing, and enable people to sleep without difficulty.” The atmosphere is ae uniformly serene, and the face of the ocean is only disturbed Bn a Aen of distant tempests in the China Sea or the Bay of i f = e el monsoon is the master wind from Novem- ae icc Peony neither persistent nor powerful, and

rest monsoon is even less regular in its action. The southerly winds in May and June known as Java winds have very

ps the character of land and sea breezes, but are considered very ervating in spite of the pleasant feeling of freshness which they

93

at first produce. Rapid squalls (sumatras) also occur during the south-west monsoon and beneficially clear the air. Instead of periodical rains there are (on a sixteen years’ average) 167 wet days distributed throughout the year. The annual rainfall is 92°27 inches; 1885, a very dry year, showed only 69 inches, according to Dr Rowell’s report. The mean maximum temperature in the shade is 86°°7, the mean minimum in the shade 73°. The highest temperature observed during the sixteen years was 94° in April 1878, and the lowest 65° in February 1874. Most of the domestic animals of Europe

have been introduced, but not in great numbers. Deer, wild hogs, sloths, monkeys, and squirrels are the morc note- worthy mammals; and tigers, which formerly committed serious depredations among the natives, still occasionally find their way across the strait from the mainland. When the first census was taken in 1824 the settlement of Singapore was found to contain 10,603 inhabitants, and by 1850 this number had increased to nearly 60,000. The following figures show the more important components of the population in 1860, 1871, and 1881,—the totals for those years being 80,792, 97,111, and 189,208 respectively :—

1860. 1881.

Europeans and Eurasians. 2,445 2,769 THAMES saicsscns-cernevinssce: 10,888 22,155 TGFs SUC. vce .vecrveonncarr: Bc 12,058 QUYIGSC sc: isn ceaccovoweunaee 50,043 86,766 VAMAMCSC: os nsciencticacerstouss 8,408 5,881

The total is estimated to be now well over 150,000. The pre- ponderance and rapid increase of the Chinese is a most striking feature, mainly due, however, to a steady streain of immigration. The death-rate in Singapore is very much higher than the birth- rate—4473 being the average number of deaths in 1881-85 against 1919 births. This is largely to be ascribed to the paucity of women —33,785 females to 105,423 males in 1881. In the small number of Europeans proper—1283—there are nincteen nationalities re-presented.

The only town in the settlement is the city of Singapore, the general capital of the Straits Settlements. It lies on the south side of the island in 1° 16’ N. lat. and 103° 53’ E. long., a bright, picturesque, prosperous, and progressive place, with a sea-frontage extending for about 6 miles from New Harbour north-east to the Rochore and Kallang suburbs. Under the control of its munici- pality, which has a yearly revenue of more than 300,000 dollars, a great variety of improvements have been effected—the river dredged and deepened, foreshores reclaimed, bridges built, trees planted, and public buildings erected—within the last six or seven years. The principal churches, the court-house, and the European quarters generally are situated on the north side of the river, while on the south side extend the warehouses and shops of the European and Chinese traders, On Peel Hill, 170 feet high,

stands a citadel; and on Government Hill is the Government house—a palatial residence in park-like grounds. The cosmopolitan character of the popula- tion gives great brightness of colour to the crowded streets and is reflected in the architectural peculiarities of the native quarters —where Mohammedan mosques, Chinese joss-houses, and Hindu temples are equally at home. Among the more important Kuropean edifices are St Andrew's cathedral (first consecrated in 1888, present building erected in 1861, became cathedral in 1870), the Roman Catholic cathedral, the supreme court-house, the new post office (1883-84), the new police courts (1884), the European hospital, the jail, the Tanglin barracks, and the Raffles school (dating from 1828), The Raffles public library and museum had 320 subscribers in 1885 and 34,250 visitors, the books issued numbering 16,348. Several English papers, as well as one Chinese and one Malay, are published at Singapore. Asa trading-port Singapore has great ad- vantages over and above its position on the Straits. The harbour is safe and has good anchorage, and it can be approached without the assistance of pilots from three directions. New Harbour is the name of the channel which lies between the southern projection of the main island and the small island of Blakan Mati, and is divided by the still smaller island of Ayer Brazi. It is there that the Peninsular and Oriental Steam Navigation Company and the Mes- sageries Maritimes have their docks and depots. At Tanjong Pagar there are two graving docks,—Victoria Dock having a length of 450 feet, a breadth of 65 feet, and a sill-depth at spring-tides of 20 feet, and the corresponding figures for Albert Dock being 470 feet, 60 fect, and 21 feet. The two New Harbour Docks are respectively 415 and 459 feet long, and 42 and 62 feet broad, and have sill- depths of 14-154 and 19-20 feet. At Pulo Brani, Bon Accord Dock has a length of 330 feet, a breadth of 50, and a sill-depth of 17. A large admiralty dock for the use of ships of the British navy is being constructed. Opposite Singapore proper the sea shallows to a few fathoms. The tides (tables of which were first published in 1884) are as yet imperfectly registered, but in general they consist of a principal high-water and low-water succeeded by a secondary high water and low water of the most limited range.

The commercial movement of the port has rapidly attained vast dimensions. While in 1851-52 the total exports and imports amounted to £5,739,556, they reached £10,871,300 in 1859-60, £18, 292,180 in 1870, £23,050,943 in 1880, and £25,931,930 in 1883. There is no railway in the island; but in 1886 a steam tramway was opened from Tanjong Pagar to Elgin Bridge. Till quite recently the town was practically without defences ; but since 1885 the eolony has constructed a series of batteries at Sera- pong, Blakan Mati, Mount Palmer, &c., at a cost of £75,000, and the home Government has expended £90,000 on the ordnance.

The name Singapore or Sinhapura, ¢.¢., Lion City, was originally given.to a town founded by Hinduized Malay or Javanese settlers from Sumatra at an early date in the Christian era. The eom- niercial importanee of the place in the 14th century is attested by Barros, but the Sanskrit origin of the name had by his time been forgotten, and he was taught to derive it from Malay words. Not long afterwards the town must have fallen into decay, and at the beginning of the present century the only trace of its existence was certain rock-inscriptions in a very old character, and the whole island had not more than 150 inhabitants. Alexander Scott recognized the excellent position of the island in the 18th century, and Sir Stamford Raffles, whose attention was called to it by Captains Ross and Crawford of the Bombay marine, fixed on it as the site of the great commercial emporium which he determined to found for the encouragement of British trade in the East. In 1819 permission was obtained to build a British factory on the south coast ; and in 1824 the island was purchased from the sultan of Johor for 60,000 Spanish dollars (£18,500) and a life annuity of 24,000 dollars (£5400). The eity became the capital of the Straits Settlements instead of Prinee of Wales Island in 1832.

See Belcher, Voyage of the Samarang ; Collingwood’s Naturatlist’s Rambles in the Chinese Seas; The Directory of the Straits Settlements for 1886; the Journal of the Straits Branth of the Royal Asiatic Society, published at Singapore ; and other works quoted under the heading STRAITS SETTLEMENTS.

SINGBHUM, a British district in the lieutenant- governorship of Bengal, lying between 21° 59° afd 22° 53’ N. lat. and between 85° 2’ and 86° 56’ E.

long. It has an area of 3753 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by the districts of Lohardaga and Manbhim, on the E. by Midnapur, on the §. by the tributary states of Orissa, and on the W. by Lohardagaé and the tributary states of Chutid Nagpur. Its central portion consists of a long undulating tract of country, running east and west, and enclosed by great hill ranges. The depressions lying between the successive ridges comprise the most fertile part, which varies in elevation above sea-level from 400 feet near the Subarnarekha on the east to 750 feet around the station of Chaibas4. South of this an elevated plateau of 700 square miles rises to upwards of 1000 feet. In the west of the district is an extensive mountainous tract, sparsely inhabited by the wildest of the Kols; while in the extreme south-west corner is a still grander mass of mountains, known as “Saranda of the seven hundred hills,” rising to a height of 3500 feet. From the Layada range on the north-west of Singbhim many rocky spurs strike out into the district, the more prominent of them attaining an elevation of 2900 feet. Among other ranges and peaks are the Chaitanpur range, reaching an elevation of 2529 feet, and the Kapargadi range, a conspicuous ridge rising abruptly from the plain and running in a south- easterly direction until it culminates in Tuilig4r Hill (2492 feet). The principal rivers are the Subarnarekha, which with its affluents flows through the eastern portion of the district ; the Koel, which rises west of Ranchi, and drains the Saranda region; and the Baitarani, which touches the southern border for 8 miles. About two- thirds of Singbhim district is covered with primeval forest, containing some valuable timber trees; in the forests tigers, leopards, bears, buffaloes, and several kinds of deer abound, and small herds of elephants occasionally wander from the Meghdsani Hills in Morbhanj. The climate is dry, and the hot season is extremely trying, the thermometer frequently registering 106° F. in the shade; the average annual rainfall is about 57 inches.

The census of 1881 disclosed a population of 453,775 (226,681

males and 227,094 females); Hindus numbered 447,810, Moham- medans 2329, and Christians 2988. The only town containing a

population of more than 5000 is Chaibasa, the eivil station and administrative headquarters of the district, with 6006 inhabitants, The staple

crop of Singbhum is rice, and the other chief erops are wheat, Indian corn, pease, gram, mustard, sugar-cane, cotton and tobacco. The principal manufactures are coarse eotton eloths, brass and earthenware cooking utensils, and soapstone platters, Cereals, pulses, oil-seeds, stiek-lac, and iron comprise the chief exports; and the imports include salt, cotton thread, English cloth goods, tobaceo, and brass utensils.

Colonel Dalton, in his Ethnology of Bengal, says that the Singbhtim Rajput chiefs have been known to the British Govern. ment since 1803, when the marquis of Wellesley was governor. general of India; but there does not appear to have been an intercourse between British officials and the people of the Kolhan, previous to 1819. The Hos or Larka Kols, the characteristic aboriginal race of Singbhtim district, would allow no stranger to settle in, or even pass through, the Kolhan ; they were, however, subjugated in 1836, when the head-men entered into engagements to bear true allegiance to the British Government. The country remained tranquil and prosperous until 1857, when a rebellion took place among the Kols under Parahat Raja. After a tedious campaign they surrendered in 1859, and the capture of the raja put a stop to their disturbances.

SINGING. See Vomce.

SINHALESE. See CEYLON.

SINIGAGLIA, or SENIGALLIA (the official form), a city of Italy, in the province of Ancona, in 43° 43’ 16″ N. lat, on the coast of the Adriatic, 17 miles by rail north of Ancona. It is well built, with broad and well-paved streets, and has the general appearance of a thriving commercial town. A modern cathedral, erected subsequent to 1787, a large Jewish synagogue, a theatre, the com- munal buildings, and the old palace of the dukes of Urbino are the more notable buildings. ‘The communal library was founded by Cardinal Nicola Antonelli in 1767; and the principal hospital and one of the orphanages date from 1534. The port is formed by the lower reaches of the Misa, a small stream which flows through the town between solid embankments constructed of Istrian marble. Between July 20 and August 8 Sinigaglia annually holds one of the largest fairs in Italy, which dates originally from 1200, when Sergius, count of Sinigaglia, received from the count of Marseilles, to whose daughter he was affianced, certain relics of

Mary Magdalene. The fair has diminished in importance since the opening of the railway, but formerly it used to be visited by merchants from France, Switzerland, Austria, Germany, and especially the Levant. ‘The population, exclusive of the suburbs, was 10,501 in 1861 and 6634 (commune 22,499) in 1881.

Sinigaglia is the ancient Sena (S4vn) or (to distinguish it from Sena Julia, z. ¢., Siena) Sena Galliea, a town of the Galli Senones (Shvwves), Whose name appears as Senogallia as early as Pliny. Sena was made a Roman colony immediately after the eonquest of the Senones in 289 B.c. It was the rendezvous of the consuls Livius and Nero before the battle of the Metaurus, also known as the battle of Sena, in which Hasdrubal was defeated (207 B.Oge The sack of the town by Pompey, Sulla’s lieutenant, in 82 B.6., is the only other notable fact in its ancient annals. Ravaged by Alarie, fortified by the exarch Longinus, and again laid waste by the Lombards in the 8th century and by the Saracens in the 9th, Sinigaglia was at length brought so low by the Guelf and Ghibelline wars, and especially by the severities of Guido de Montefeltro, that it was chosen by Dante as the typical instance of a ruined eity. In the 15th eentury it was captured and reeaptured again and again by the Malatesta and their opponents. Sigismond Malatesta of Rimini erected strong fortifications round the town m 1450-1455. The lordship of Sinigaglia was bestowed by Pius 11. on his nephew Antonio Piccolomini, but the people of the town m 1464 placed themselves anew under Paul II., and Giacomo Piccolo- mini in 1472 failed in his attempt to seize the place. Sixtus Vi assigned the lordship to the Della Rovere family, from whom it was transferred to Lorenzo di Medici in 1516. After 1624 it formed part of the legation of Urbino. }

SINKING FUND. See Nazvionan Dest, vol. xvi p. 245.

SINOPE, or in Turkish S1ntz, a town and seaport on the north coast of Asia Minor, on the isthmus and peninsula of Boztepeh, which forms part of the most northerly projection of the Anatolian seaboard. Though

it possesses the finest natural harbour save one in the Black Sea, defective communication with the interior, and the consequent rivalry of Ineboli

(since about 1848), have prevented Sinope taking its natural position as a great commercial centre. But between 1882 and 1885 roads have been constructed which give direct access southward to Ceesarea and even to Tarsus, near the south coast. The town still bears the stamp of its former importance. On the isthmus stands a huge but for the most part ruined castle, originally Byzantine and afterwards strengthened by the Seljuk sultans ; and the old town is surrounded by Byzantine walls. Of early Roman or Greek antiquities there is little trace ; but the ancient local coinage furnishes a very beautiful and interesting series of types (see M. J. P. Six's paper in The Numismatic Chronicle, 1885). The population has not greatly changed since 1868, when it was found to be 9668 inhabitants, of whom 7299 were Mohammedans and 2369 Greeks and others.

Sinope (Sivdéan), whose origin was mythically assigned by its own ancient inhabitants to Autolycus, a companion of Hercules, was colonized by the Milesians, and ultimately became the most flourishing Greek settlement on the coast of the Euxine. In the 5th century B.c. it received a colony of Athenians; and by the 4th it had extended its authority over a considerable tract of country and become itself the mother of several colonies—Cerasus (Kerastin), Trapezus (Trebizond), Cotyora, &c. Its fleet was

ractically dominant in the Kuxine, except towards the west, where it shared the field with Byzantium. When in 220 B.c. Sinope was for the first time attacked by the king of Pontus, the assistance of the Rhodians enabled it to maintain its independence. But where Mithradates IV. failed Pharnaces succeeded; and the city, taken by surprise in 183 B.c., became the capital of the Pontian monarchy. Under Mithradates the Great, who was born in Sinope, it had just been raised to the highest degree of prosperity, with fine buildings, naval arsenals, and well-built harbours, when the Romans under Lucullus and Pompey effected the subjugation of Pontus. In 64 B.c. the body of the murdered Mithradates was brought home to the royal mausoleum. Under Julius Cesar the city received a Roman colony. In the Middle Ages it became subject to Trebizond, and in 1470 it passed into the hands of the Turks, In November 1853 the Russian vice-admiral Nakhimoff

destroyed here a division of the Turkish fleet and reduced a good part of the town to ashes.

SIOUX CITY, a city of the United States, the capital of Woodbury county, Iowa, lies 156 miles north-west of Des Moines, on the sloping banks of the Missouri river. It is a great railway centre (Chicago, Milwaukee, and St Paul Railway, Sioux City and Pacific Railway, é&c.), has an extensive trade, and contains an opera house, foundry and machine shops, pork-packing factories, and mills. The population of the city (which was laid out in 1854 and incorporated in 1857) was 3401 in 1870 and 7366 in 1880 (township 7845). |

SIPHANTO, SipHEno, or SrPHNo (ancient Greek Sipvos), an island of the Greek Archipelago, in the nomarchy of the Cyclades, 30 miles south-west of Syra. It has an area of 28 square miles, and the population in 1879 was 5762. A ridge of limestone hills—whose principal sum- mits, Mount Elias and St Simeon, are crowned by old Byzantine churches—runs through the island ; for about 2 miles along the western slope stretches a series of villages, each white-washed house with its own garden andorchard. Apollonia, one of the five (so called because built on the site of a temple to Apollo), is the modern capital ; formerly this rank belonged to Kastro (also called Seraglio), an “old-world Italian town” with medieval castle and fortifications, and an old town-hall bearing date 1365. Inscriptions found on the spot show that Kastro Bae the site of the ancient city of Siphnos; and Mr oie identifies the other ancient town of Minoa (see wih anos) with the place on the coast where a Hellenic ; tte marble tower is distinguished as the Pharos or — and another as the tower of St John.

urches and convents of Byzantine architecture are

scattered about the island. One building of this class is especially interesting —the school of the Holy Tomb or school of Siphnos, founded by Greek refugees from Byzantium at the time of the iconoclastic persecutions, and afterwards a great centre of intellectual culture for the Hellenic world. The endowments of the school are now made over to the gymnasium of Syra. In ancient times Siphnos was famous for its gold and silver mines, the site of which is still easily recognized by the excavations and refuse-heaps. A French company has started mining operations at Kamara. As in antiquity so now the potters of the island are known throughout the Archipelago.

The wealth of the ancient Siphniotes was shown by their treasury at Delphi, where they deposited the tenth of their gold and silver ; but, says the legend, they once sent Apollo a gilded and not a golden bull, and he in his anger flooded their mines. That the mines were invaded by the sea is still evident; and by Strabo's time the inhabitants of the island were noted for their poverty. During the Venetian period it was ruled first by the Da Corogna family and after 1456 by the Gazzadini, who were expelled by the Turks in 1617.

SIPHON, or SypHon, an instrument usually in the form of a bent tube for conveying liquid over the edge of a vessel and delivering it at a lower level, or in a position of less hydrostatic pressure. The principle on which it acts (see HyDROoMECHANICS) may be understood from the accompanying diagram. ABC is a tube filled with liquid, the shorter limb dipping under the ®__..__B_ j surface of the liquid in jar a, the longer in jar 6. The pressure in the tube at A is atmospheric pressure minus that of the vertical column AB', while that at C is atmospheric 4 pressure minus that of the column CB". When CB" is longer than AB' the pressure at C is of course less than that at A, and a current flows in the direction ABC through the siphon. When AB' = B'C, that is, when the liquid stands at the same level, pressure is equal in the two limbs, and the current ceases. The siphon has practically a certain minimum diameter for each liquid, as capillarity prevents a fluid from flowing out of tubes of very small bore unless under the influence of electricity, heat, or great pressure. The instrument is largely employed for chemical work, both in the laboratory and in manufacturing processes ; it is formed of glass, india-rubber, lead, or other substance, according to the purpose for which it is intended. The simple siphon (see fig.) is used by filling it with the liquid to be decanted, closing the longer limb with the finger and plunging the shorter into the liquid, and it must be filled for each time of using. Innumerable forms have been devised adapted for all purposes, and provided with arrangements for filling the tube, or for keeping it full and starting it into action automatically when required. The former purpose is usually effected by blowing into the vessel through a second opening in the stopper through which the siphon passes, or by means of a sucking or blowing tube attached to the longer limb, or by pouring in liquid through a flexible tube attached at the bend. The second plan is frequently realized by having a stop- cock on the longer limb and a

valve opening upwards on the shorter, or by having both limbs of equal length and each standing in a cup, in which case when the level changes in either cup the siphon tends to equalize it by conveying liquid from the higher to the lower. Many other forms are in constant use in the arts, and the siphon is also employed in some of its modifications in surgery, in engineering, and in other sciences.

SIRACHIDES. See Jesus, THE Son oF SiRacH.

SIRAJGANJ, a town in the district of Pabna, Bengal,

and the most important river-mart in that province, is situated near the Jamun& or main stream of the Brahmaputra in 24° 26’ 58” N. lat. and 89° 47’ 5” E. long., with a population of 21,037 (11,213 males and 9824 females) in 1881. The business of Sirdjganj is that of a changing station; the agricultural produce of the surrounding country is brought in in small boats and transferred to wholesale merchants for shipment to Calcutta in steamers or large cargo boats, and in return piece goods, salt, hardware, and all sorts of miscellaneous articles are received from Calcutta for distribution. Siraj-ganj is also the centre of the jute trade of Eastern Bengal.

SIR-DARIA. See Syr-Darya.

SIREDON. At the end of last century specimens of a kind of branchiate tailed Amphibian were brought to Europe from the lakes of Mexico; they were examined by the zoologists of Paris and described by Cuvier in Humboldt’s Recuetd @’Observations de Zoologie, vol. i., and by Daudin in Hist. des Reptiles (Paris, 1802-1804), under their native name of “Axolotls.” The animals were named Siren pisciformis by Shaw (Zool., vol. iil.). Wagler, in his Vattirliches System der Amphabien (Stuttgart, 1828-1833), separated the axolotl from the Linnean genus Siren and called it Siredon axolotl, and later writers have often referred to the animal under the name Szredon pisciforme, Shaw.

The axolotl of Mexico is about 6 or 7 inches in length; it has four pairs of gill-slits and three pairs of long feather-like external branchie. The branchial apertures are between the hyoid arch and the first branchial arch, and between the first-second, second-third, and third- fourth branchial arches. The branchiz are attached to the first, second, and third branchial arches. The body is cylindrical, and a median membranous fin extends along the trunk dorsally, is continued along the tail, passes round the end of the latter and terminates ventrally at the anus. It has four limbs, which are short and somewhat stout; the anterior terminate in four and the posterior in five digits. The colour of the axolotl is a uniform black.

The animal is therefore, except in size, very similar to the aquatic larva of Z'riton, or other Salamandroid, and Cuvier expressed the opinion that it was a larval form which for some unknown reason was unable to attain the adult condition. That it could not be considered simply as the larva of an unknown species of Salamandroid was evident from the fact that it possessed fully developed sexual organs in both sexes. There was every reason to believe that it bred freely in the branchiate condition in which it was discovered. The animal is so common in the lakes near the city of Mexico that it is brought regularly to market and used largely by the Mexicans as food (9).}

If nothing more than the above were known about the axolotl it would be classed aniong the Perennibranchiata, in the family Proteida, having its nearest ally in the genus Menobranchus. Up till the year 1865 no actual observations had been miade by zoologists on the breeding of the axolotl: all that was known was that the genital organs in many of the specimens examined were in perfectly mature condition. In that year, on January 18, 6 axolotls, 5 males and 1 female,—which had been living for a year in the menagerie of reptiles of the Musée d'Histoire Naturelle at Paris,—began to breed, and the deposition and hatching of the eggs was carefully studied by Prof. A. Duméril (1). The eggs were 2 mm. in diameter, and the period of development within the egg was 28 to 80 days ; the larve were hatched in February, and were 14 nm. to 16 mm. in length. In the beginning of September, when the larvee had almost reached the size of the parents, it was noticed that one of them was undergoing a metamorphosis similar to that of the larval Triton to the adult. In a short time yellow

spots appeared on the skin, the branchie disappeared, the gill- slits closed up, the median fin disappeared, the animal began

1 These numerals refer to the ‘‘ Literature ” infra.

to breathe air and permanently quitted the water. The same process of metamorphosis was repeated by several of the larva, until finally out of several hundred about thirty reached the galamandroid condition. The parents in the meantime were stil] alive, and had undergone no change. When the structure of the transformed specimens was examined, they were found to resemble in all generic characters the genus Ambdlystoma, of which several species were known, inhabiting various parts of North America,? The consideration of Duméril’s discovery gives rise to several per- plexing questions, which have been discussed by many zoologists experienced in the study of the Amphibia, and cven now can scarcely be said to be completely scttled. The first question is— To what species of Amblystoma did the transformed axolotls of Duméril belong? Duméril himself, in the full account (2) which he published concerning the animals and their metamorphosis, was unable to give a decided opinion concerning the identification of the species of his Amblystoma, but on a subsequent occasion he confirmed the suggestion of Prof. E. D. Cope (10) that the specific characters were those of 4. mavortiwm, Cope (described in Prov, ° Ac. Philad., 1867).

The publication of Duméril’s discovery excited a great deal of interest among European naturalists, and for a time experiments and observations on axolotls in captivity were carried on with great earnestness, The metamorphosis in the case of Duméril’s specimens had taken place quite unexpectedly, but the case scemed to offer an opportunity for ascertaining the action of definite conditions in producing definite processes of growth. Marie von Chauvin (6), at Freiburg, at the instigation of Prof. Weissmann, attempted, and with perfect success, to transform young axolotls into the Amblystoma form by gradually bringing the animals from water into air.

The transformed axolotls observed by Duméril were kept alive in the Paris Museum, and for ten years showed no symptoms of breeding or sexual

activity. It was currently believed that the Amblystoma derived from the metamorphosis of Siredon was sterile. This belief ultimately proved erroneous. In the autumn of 1874 the animals in the menagerie of reptiles were transferred to new premises, where they were all placed in more healthy conditions. Immediately after this the .Amblystoma deposited fertilized eggs, and the fact was reported by M. Blanchard to the Académie des Sciences (4), with the comment that the Amblystoma was thus shown to be similar to other cold-blooded animals which were capable of reproducing in both the young and the adult condition. :

Although at first Duméril believed and stated that his specimens of axolotl belonged to the species which bears that name in Mexico, he afterwards, in his more detailed work on the subject (2), explained that the grounds for his first opinion had been insufficient. American zoologists, especially Baird and Cope, had distinguished several species of Siredon, and Baird had separated the Mexican species, which alone was originally called axolotl, as Siredon mexicanus. Duméril came to the conclusion that the axolotls in the Paris Museum were identical with Strcdon liche- notdes, Baird (described in Stansburg, Huxped. Gr. Salt Lake, Utah). All the axolotls which were kept and studicd and sub- jected to experiment by naturalists on the Continent after Duméril's discovery were desccndants of the Paris specimens, 80 that the results obtained really did not necessarily prove anything with regard to the true Mexican axolotl, Siredon meaicanus, if that were really a distinct species. There is no evidence 10 literature to show whence the first axolotls in the Paris Museum were obtained. It was evident that Siredon lichenoides was capable of breeding in both the larval and the salamandroid condition, and that its metamorphosis in captivity in Europe was rare and to a certain extent controlled by definite external con- ditions. Prof, O. CG. Marsh has recorded his experience of the metamorphosis of S. lichenoides. He obtained several specimens from alpine lakes 7000 feet above the sea in Wyoming Territory, and some of these metamorphosed into Amblystoma mavortium, Cope. Marsh does not say if the larve he obtained were sexually mature, nor did he ascertain if breeding of the species in the larval condition took place at all in the lakes he visited ; he thinks it probable that the metamorphosis in that region was rare in the natural conditions. J

The metamorphosis of the true axolotl, undoubtedly obtained from the Lake of Mexico, seems to have been observed only once— namely, by Tegetmeier in London. That naturalist had 5specimens, and one of them underwent the metamorphosis. In 1871 Cope (10) stated that no one had seen the metamorphosis of the true siredon, Sircdon mexicanus, Baird, and that no Amblystomz had been obtained from Mexico south of the Tropic of Cancer, while BER Cn ee eee

2 The generic characters of Amblystoma, Tschudi, are, according to Boulenger—tongue subcircular or oval, with radiating plice, lateral borders free, anterior border slightly free; two transverse semes of palatine teeth in same straight line, not separated by a wide interspace in the middle; toes five; tail more or less compressed.

a

SIT R—sSIR

the true axolotl is found south of that line. He was unaware of Tegetmeier's observation. He further deelared that Prof. Baird was aware of the metamorphosis of all the North American species of Siredon so-called, exeluding S. mexicanus, years before the observation of it by Duméril, though he had at first named one of them Sircdon lichenoides, in the belief that it was adult. Cope eonsidered the observation of Duméril important, as showing that siredons reproduced as such.

Finally, according to Boulenger (7), the S. lichenotdes and mexicanus of Baird are synonymous, the Paris axolotl is identical with the same species, and the perfect form into which it changed is identical with .A. tigrinwm, mexicanum, and mavortium of Cope, obscurum of Baird, while the form named Siredon gracilis by Baird is probably the larva of Amblystoma tencbroswm. Boulenger adopts the name A. tigrinwm of the synonyms given above, and gives as the distribution United States and Mexico ; the specific diagnosis is—series of palatine teeth extending to

external fissure of choanz ; plice of tongue radiating from behind ;

costal grooves twelve; head large; brown or blackish, with yellow markings.

It is therefore very probable that the Paris specimens were really Mexican axolotls, and there is no doubt that these animals do in captivity undergo metamorphosis. So far as is known, they never do so in their natural conditions. But the animals are specifieally identical with .4. tigrinuwm, which is found in many parts of the United States, from New Jersey to California, and normally breeds in the salaniandroid condition. It is not known at present whether the larva of A. tigrinwm ever attains sexual maturity in other regions where the species occurs besides Mexico. It is not improbable that it does so. De Filippi (8) found in a marsh on the shores of the Lago Maggiore 48 larva of Triton alpestris in the branchiate condition, which contained fully developed ova and spermatozoa, so that the occurrence of sexual maturity in the larves of Amblystoma is not unique. Prof. August Weissmann (5) has discussed at considerable length and with much thoughtfulness the true significance of the phenomena exhibited by the axolotl, and has concluded that its ancestors passed through the normal life-history of Amblystoma, the climate of the Mexican tableland having been at one time moist enough to permit of the existence of a terrestrial Salamandroid ; that the climate has now became so dry and unfavourable to vegetation that no amphibian can live in it except in water ; and that Ambystoma has become adapted to these conditions by ceasing to pass through its metamorphosis, and breeding entirely in the branchiate condition. Thus the metamorphosis which takes place occasionally in captivity is a case of what has been called since Darwin’s epoch atavism ; its peculiarity consists in the fact that the evolution of the animal has resulted in the arrest of development at a larval stage, and the oecasional reversion is the continuation of the development to the higher condition of the ancestor. Atavism is the occasional resemblance of one individual to some remote ancestors instead of to its immediate parents. Another possible way of explaining the axolotl is to suppose that it has remained in the perenni>ranchiate condition while other members of the same species elsewhere have developed into the salamandroid condition. This explanation cannot be the true one. It would necessitate the belicf that a metamorphosis lasting a few days or weeks, and induced often by the gradual removal of the animal from water into air, eould produee the same specific characters as a gradual development whieh has occupied a great number of generations. The axolotl is an example of one of the most curious and interesting modes by whieh animals may be adapted to their

conditions, and two species formed out of one. At present the disappearance of the meta- morphosis from the life-history of the axolotl has taken place so recently that not even specific differences exist, according to some observers, between the metamorphosed axolotl] and the natural Amblystoma tigrinum. At some future time slight differenccs are almost sure to occur, and then there will be two species or the tendency to metamorphosis in the axolotl will be lost. In the latter case some slight Wifferences will probably be developed between the axolotl and the branchiate larva of 4. tigrinwm in other parts of Ameriea ; and then the axolotl and A. tigrinwm will be two species, Finally, it may be pointed out that it is possible that the axolotl could have reached its present locality and conditions without any change in the climate of Mexico. The lakes in the arid distriet night somehow occasionally be visited by breeding 4. tigrinwm, and of the larve so produced in them some might become sexually mature before metamorphosing, and so give rise to the present axolotls.

There is some reason to believe, according to the American zoologist Prof. Cope, that the perennibranehiate JMenobranchus lateralis, Tschudi, of the Mississippi, which when full grown is over a foot in length, and has four branehial apertures, stands in the Sane relation to the genus Batrachoscps, Bonap., as Siredon to Amblystoma,

Literature,—(1) A. Duméril, Comptes Rendus, vol. 1x., 1865, p. 765; (2) A

Duméril, Your. Arch, Mus., if., 1866; (3) A. Dumeéril, Copmtes Rendus, vol. Ixi_ | into the sea.

775; (4) M. Blanchard, 7b/d., vol. Ixxxii., 1876, p. 716; (5) A. Weissmann, Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., xxv. p. 297; (6) M. von Chauvin, dbid., xxvii. p. 522; (7) G. A. Boulengery, Brit. Mus. Cat,—Batrachia gradientia, &c., 1882; (8) De Filippi, Archivio per la Zoologia, 1861; (9) De Saussure, Verhandl. d. Schweiz. naturforsch. Gesellsch. Einsiedeln, 1868; (10) E. D. Cope, ‘‘ Metamorphosis of Axolotl,” Amer. Journal, 1871; (11) 0. C. Marsh, Amer. Jour., [2], xlvi. p. 364; (12) Tegetmeier, Proc. Zool. Soc., 1870. OmiaC)

SIREN. Stren lacertina, Lin. (Syst. Nat., i., Addenda), is an animal belonging to the class AMpurpia (q.v.). It forms the type of the family Strenidx, called by Prof. Huxley Z'rachystomata, among the group Lerennibran- chiata. The body is elongate and eel-like, only the anterior limbs being present; the posterior are entirely wanting. The anterior limbs are short and feeble, and each is furnished with four digits pointed at the ends. The head is small; the snout is short and broad, and the nostrils are placed at its extreme end. The tongue is free anteriorly. The jaws are destitute of teeth and covered with a horny sheath like a beak. There are numerous teeth on the vomer, arranged in two large patches con- verging anteriorly. The eyes are very small. On each side of the neck are three branched external gills attached to the first, second, and third branchial arclies ; and below the gills are three reduced branchial apertures. The tail is shorter than the body, much compressed, and provided with a median membranous fin ; the tail terminates in a point. The skin is smooth, and black in colour, some- times sprinkled with white dots. Siren grows to a large size, some specimens measuring 3 feet in length; the largest example in the British Museum is 670 mm. or about 2 feet 3 inches. The animal inhabits the stagnant waters of marshes in South Carolina and Texas.

The only other member of the family Sirenide is Pseudobranchus striatus (Gray, Brit. Mus. Cat.—Batrachia, Ist ed.). This animal resembles Siren in most respects, but has only a single branchial aperture on each side, and only three digits to the anterior limb. Its colour is dark- brown with a broad yellow band on each side and a narrower one inferiorly. It occurs in Georgia, but seems to be very rare; there are two specimens in the Paris Musée, none in the British Museuni.

Figures of Siren lacertina are to be found in the following works :—Cuvier in Humboldt's Obs. Zool., i. pl. 11; Daudin, Reptiles, viii. pl. 49; Holbr., WN. Amer. Herp., pl. 34. Pseudo- branchus striatus is figured in Duméril and Bibron, Lrpétologie Générale, pl. 96; Holbr., loc. cit., pl. 36; Leconte, Ann. Lye. N. Y., 1824, pl. 4 (under name Siren striata).

SIREN, or Syren. See Acovusrics, vol. i. p. 109.

SIRENS, fabulous creatures of Greek mythology, that, like the Loreley of German legend, lured mariners to destruction by their sweet song. In the

Odyssey Ulysses sails past their island; but, warned by Circe, he had stopped the ears of his crew with wax and caused himself to be bound to the mast. In Homer they are two in number, but in later writers they are generally three, and are located on the coast of Italy, near Sorrento and Capri, or on the Straits of Messina. The tomb of one of them, Parthenope by name, was shown at Naples in Strabo's time. A sanctuary of the Sirens stood on a headland near Sorrento. According to Eratosthenes the Sirens were a three-headed rock separating the Bay of Naples from the Gulf of Salerno; but Strabo says they were three rocky islands on the southern side of the cape. The cape itself (now Cape Campanella) was sometimes called the Cape of the Sirens. When the Argonauts drew near the isle of the Sirens, Orpheus struck up and drowned their song. According to Hyginus the Sirens were daughters of the river Achelous and the muse Melpomene, and because they had not rescued Proserpine from Pluto they were turned by Ceres into winged creatures, who were to live only so long as no one passed by them as they sang. So, when Ulysses had eluded them, they flung themselves According to another story, they were

poche — 74

instigated by Hera to vie with the Muses in singing ; the Muses were victorious, and plucked the feathers from the Sirens and made crowns for themselves out of them. In art they are usually represented with the bodies of women and the legs of birds, with or without wings. More rarely they appear as birds with only the heads of women. They seem to have had a funereal significance, and were often represented on tombs. or representations of them see J. E. Harrison, Ifyths of the Odyssey.

SIRICIUS, pope from December 384 till November 398, was the successor of Damasus and was himself suc- ceeded by Anastasius 1. See PopEpom, vol, xix. p. 491.

SIRMUR, one of the sub-Himalayan or Simla hill states under the government of the Punjab, lying between 30° 24' and 31° N. lat. and between 77° 5' and 77° 50' E. long. Its area is 1096 square miles, and it is bounded on the N. by the hill states of Balsan and Jubal, on the E. by the

British district of Dehra Dun, from which it is separated by the rivers Tons and Jumna, on the S.W. by Ambala district, and on the N.W. by the states of Patiala and Keunthal. Except a very small tract about Nahan, the chief town and residence of the raja, on the south-western extremity, where a few streams rise and flow south-westward to the Saraswati and Ghaggar rivers, the whole of Sirmur lies in the basin of the Jumna, which receives from this tract the Giri and its feeders the Jaldl and the Paltir. ‘he Tons, the great western arm of the stream called lower down the Jumna, flows along the eastern boundary of Sirmur, and on the right side receives from it the two small streams Minus and Nairai. The surface generally declines in elevation from north to south ; the chief elevations on the northern frontier (Chor peak and station) are about 12,000 feet above the sea. The valley of the Khidrda Dun, which forms the southern part of the state, is bounded on the S. by the Siwalik range, the hills of which are of recent formation and abound in fossil remains of large vertebrate animals. Though the rocks of Sirmur consist of formations usually metalliferous, the yield of mineral wealth is at present but small. The forests are very dense, so much so that the sportsman finds difficulty in making his way through them in search of wild elephants, tigers, leopards, bears, and hyenas, with which they abound. The climate of Sirmur varies with the elevation; the northern extremity has very little rain; but large and excellent crops are everywhere to be obtained by irrigation.

The population in 1881 was 112,871 (males 63,305, females 49,066), the great majority being Hindus. The only town of any importance is Nahan, with a population of 5253. The principal products of the state are opium, tobacco, and cereals, and its gross revenue is estimated at £21,000. Sirmur, which means “a crowned head,” was the place of residence of the rajas who ruled over the state before the present dynasty entered the country. The reigning raja

(Shamsher Prakash, K.C.S.I.) holds his possessions by a grant made on the expulsion of the Gurkhas by the British in 1815.

SIROHI, or SEEROEE, a native state in the Rajputana agency under the Government of India, with an area of 3020 square miles, lying between 24° 20’ and 25° 20’ N. lat. and between 72° 10’ and 73° 10’ E. long., and

bounded on the W. and N. by Marwar or Jodhpur, on the E. by Mewar or Udaipur, on the S. by Palanpur and the Mahi Kantha states of Edar and Danta. ‘The country is much broken up by hills and rocky ranges; the Aravalli range divides it into two portions, running from north-east to south-west. The south and south-east part of the terri- tory is very mountainous and rugged, containing the lofty Mount Abu, an isolated mass of granite rock, culminating in a cluster of hills, enclosing several valleys surrounded by rocky ridges, like great hollows. The highest peak rises to 5653 feet above sea-level, and is one of the great trigonometrical stations. On both sides of the Aravallis

SIR—SIR

the country is intersected with numerous water channels, which run with considerable force and volume during the height of the rainy season, but are dry for the greater part of the year. Western Banas.

The only river of any importance is the A large portion of the state is covered with dense jungle, in which wild animals, including the tiger, bear, and leopard, abound. Many splendid ruins

bear witness to the former prosperity and civilization of the state. and east there is usually a fair amount of rain.

The climate is on the whole dry ; in the south On Abu the average annual rainfall is about 64 inches, whereas in Erinpura, less than 50 miles to the north, the average fall

is only between 12 and 13 inches. The Western Rajputana Railway runs through the length of the state, passing just east of Mount Abu.

In 1881 the population numbered 142, 903 (males 76,182, females

66,771), of whom 123,633 were Hindus, 29385 were Mohammedans,

and 16,137 were Jains. The town of Sirohi, the capital of the

state, is situated at the western base of the range of hills north of

Mount Abu, and its population (1881) numbered 5699. Wheat

and barley are the staple crops ; pulses and cotton are also grown. The present ruling family of Sirohi are Deora Rajputs, a branch of

the great Chauhan clan, and are said to be immediately deseended

from Deo Raj, a descendant of Pirthvi Raj, the Chauhan king of Delhi. During the early years of the present century Sirohi suf-

fered much from wars with Jodhpur and the wild Mina hill tribes.

The protection of the British was sought in 1817 ; the pretensions

of Jodhpur to suzerainty over Sirohi were disallowed, and in 1823 a treaty was concluded with the British Government. For services

rendered during the mutiny of 1857 the reigning “rao” received a

remission of half his tribute.

SIRSA, a British district in the lieutenant-governorship —

of the Punjab, lying between 29° 13’ and 30° 40’N. lat. and between 73°57’ and 75° 23’ E. long. It has an area of 3008 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by Firoz pur district and the native state of Patiala, on the W. by the river Sutlej, on the S.W. by the native states of Bahawalpur and Bikaner, and on the E. by Hissar district. Lying as it does between the barren deserts of Bikaner and the comparatively fertile though sandy plains of the Cis-Sutlej states, Sirsa district in soil as well as position forms an intermediate link between the two. It forms for the most part a bare and treeless plateau stretching from the valley of the little river Ghaggar on the east to the main stream of the Sutlej on its western border. Inthe immediate neighbourhood of the Sutle, however, is a fertile alluvial tract (khddar), intersected by numerous branches of the river, and flooded by their outflow during the rainy season. Eastward of the khadar lies the sandy central tableland, which is chiefly employed for purposes of pasturage. East of this plateau is the valley of the Ghaggar, a formidable torrent in the rainy months, but so

entirely dependent on the rainfall of the lower Himalayas that it is usually dry from October to July. The Ghaggar expands into three jhils or marshy lakes, the largest of which is 5 miles in length by 2 in breadth. South of the Ghaggar spreads a sandy tract beyond the reach of its fertilizing influence, and of small agricultural value. Formerly the district was covered by an excellent grazing grass, known as dkdman, but with the increase of cultivation it is fast disappearing. The climate of Sirsa is extremely dry, the average annual rain- fall reaching only 15 inches. The Rewari-Ferozepore Railway passes through the district from south to north.

The population of the district, according to the census of 1881, was 253,275 (males 138,691, females 114,584), of whom 130,582 were Hindus, 93,289 Mohammedans, and 28,303 Sikhs. The only town with a population exceeding 10,000 is Sirsa, the administrative headquarters of the district, with 12,292 inhabitants, The modern town of Sirsa was founded in 1837, and the ruins of old Sirsa lie near its south-west corner. It is a considerable entrepot for the trade of the wheat-growing countries to the north and east with Bikaner and Marwar. At the opening of the present century nearly the whole of Sirsa district was a barren almost uncultivated waste. Gradually, however, with more peaceful times

|

|

cultivation has again extended. Of the total area 1353 square miles are now cultivated and 1548 square miles are cultivable. The staple product is bajra, which in 1882-83 occupied 546,905 acres; the other principal crops are Joar, barley, and wheat. The district has little trade except in agricultural produce, which goes chiefly to Bikaner ; and the only manufacture of any importance is that of sajjz, an impure carbonate of soda, used in washing and dyeing eloth. Sirsa was officially included in the territory conquered from the Mahrattas in 1803, when it was almost entirely uninhabited. It reqnired re- conquering from the Bhattis in 1818; but it did not come under British administration until 1837. During the mutiny of 1857 Sirsa was for a time wholly lost to British rule. On the restoration of order the district was

administered by Punjab officials, and in the following year, with the remainder of the Delhi territory, it was formally annexed to that province,

SISKIN (Dan. Sidsken; Germ. Zeisig and Zeising), long known in England as a cage-bird, since, in 1544, Turner mentioned it in that character under this name,} and said that he had only once met with it at large—the Fringilla spinus of Linnzus, and Carduelis or Chrysomi- tris spinus of modern writers. In some of its structural characters it is most nearly allied to the Gotprinon (vol. x, p. 758), and both are often placed in the same genus by systematists ; but in its style of coloration, and still more in its habits, it resembles the Redpolls (cf. LINNEt, vol. xiv. p. 675), though without their slender figure, being indeed rather short and stout of build. Yet it hardly yields to them in activity or in the grace of its actions, as it seeks its food from the catkins of the alder or birch, regardless of the attitude it assumes while so doing. Of an olive-green above, deeply tinted in some parts with black and in others lightened by yellow, and beneath of a yellowish-white again marked with black, the male of this species has at least a becoming if nota brilliant garb, and possesses a song that is not unmelodious, though the resemblance of some of its notes to the run- ning-down of a piece of clockwork is more remarkable than pleasing. The hen is still more soberly attired ; but it is perhaps the Siskin's disposition to familiarity that makes it so favourite a captive, and, though as a cage-bird it is not ordinarily long-lived, it readily adapts itself to the loss of liberty. Moreover, if anything like the need- ful accommodation be afforded, it will build a nest and therein lay its eggs, but it rarely succeeds in bringing up its young in confinement. As a wild bird it breeds con- stantly, though locally, throughout the greater part of Scotland, and has frequently done so in England, but more rarely in Ireland. The greater portion, however, of the numerous bands which visit the British Islands in autumn and winter doubtless come from the Continent— perhaps even from far to the eastward, since its range stretches across Asia to Japan, in which country it is as favourite a cage-bird as with us. The nest of the Siskin is very like that of the Goldfinch, but seldom so neatly built; the eggs, except in their smaller size, much resemble those of the GREENFINCH (vol. xi. p. 165).

_ A larger and more brightly coloured species, C. spinoides, inhabits the Himalayas, but the Siskin has many other relatives belonging to the New

World, and in them serious modifications of structure, especially in the form of the bill, occur. Some of these relatives lead almost insensibly to the GREENFINCH (ut supra) and its allies, others to the GoLDFINCH (wt swpra), the Redpolls, and so on. Thus the Siskin perhaps may be regarded as one of the less modified descendants of a stock whence such forms as those just mentioned have sprung. Its striated plumage also favours this Le as an evidence of permanent immaturity or generalization of orm, since striped feathers are so often the earliest clothing of many of these birds, which only get rid of them at their first moult. a this theory the Yellowbird or North-American “ Goldfinch,” Fe ae would seem, with its immediate allies, to rank among

€ highest forms of the group, and the Pine-Goldfinch, C. pinus, q the Same country, to be one of the lowest,—the cock of the re ae generally of a bright jonquil hue, with black crown,

Vitis also called by bird-fanciers “ Abadavine” or “ Aberdevine ” — names of which the etymology is wholly unknown.

99

neither hens nor young exhibit any striations. On the other hand, neither sex of the latter at any age puts off its striped garb—the mark, it may be pretty safely asserted, of an inferior stage of development. The remaining species of the group, mostly South- American, do not seem here to necd particular notice, (A. N.)

SISMONDI, Jean Cuartes Lronarp pe (1773- 1842), whose real name was SIMONDE, was born at Geneva on May 9, 1773. His father and all his ancestors seem to have borne the name Simonde, at least from the time when they migrated from Dauphiné to Switzerland at the revocation of the edict of Nantes. It was not till after Sismondi had become an author that, observing the identity of his family arms with those of the once flourishing Italian house of the Sismondi, and finding that some members of that house had migrated to France, he assumed the connexion without further proof and called himself De Sismondi. The Simondes, however, were themselves citizens of Geneva of the upper class, and possessed both rank and property, though the father was also a village pastor, The future

historian was well educated, but his family wished him to devote himself to commerce rather than literature, and he became a banker's clerk at Lyons. Then the Revolution broke out, and as it affected Geneva the Simonde family took refuge in England, where they stayed for eighteen months. Disliking, it is said, the climate, they returned to Geneva, but found the state of affairs still unfavourable ; there is even a legend that the head of the family was reduced to sell milk himself in the town. The greater part of the family property was sold, and with the proceeds they emigrated to Italy, bought a small farm at Pescia near Lucca, and set to work to cul- tivate it themselves. Sismondi worked hard here, both with his hands and his mind, and his experiences gave him the material of his first book, Zableau de ? Agriculture Toscane, which, after returning to Geneva, he published there in 1801. Two years later he published his 7'raité de la Richesse Commerciale, his first work on the subject of political economy, which, with some differences of view, continued to interest him to the end of his life (for his position and work in this respect the reader is referred to the article Porrrican Economy, vol. xix. p. 383). Mean- while he began his great History of the Italian Republics, and was introduced to Madame de Stael. With her he became very intimate, and after being regularly enrolled in the society of Coppet he was invited or commanded (for Madame de Stael's invitations had something of command) to form one of the suite with which the future Corinne made the journey into Italy, resulting in Corinne itself during the years 1804-5. Sismondi was not altogether at his ease here, and he particularly disliked Schlegel, who was also of the company. But during this journey he made the acquaintance of the countess of Albany, Louisa of Stolberg, widow of Charles Edward, and all her life long gifted with a singular faculty of attracting the affection (Platonic and other) of men of letters. She was now an old woman, and Sismondi's relations with her were of the strictly friendly character, but they were close and lasted long, and they produced much valuable and interesting correspondence. In 1807 appeared the first volumes of the above mentioned book on the Italian republics, which (though his essay in political economy had brought him some reputation and the offer of a Russian professorship) first made Sismondi prominent among European men of letters. The com- pletion of this book, which extended to sixteen volumes, occupied him, though by no means entirely, for the next eleven years. He lived at first at Geneva, and delivered there some interesting lectures on the literature of the south of

Europe, which were continued from time to time and finally published ; and he held an official post,—that of secretary of the chamber of commerce for the then

department of the Leman. In 1813 he visited Paris for the first time and abode there for some years, mixing much in literary society. Although a Liberal and in his earlier days almost an Anglomaniac, he did not welcome the fall of the empire. During the Hundred Days he defended Napoleon's constitutional schemes or promises, and had an interview with the emperor himself which is one of the chief events of a not very eventful life. After the Restoration he left Paris. On completing his great book on the Italian republics he undertook a still greater, the Histoire des Francais, which he planned on a vast scale, and of which during the remaining twenty-three years of his life he published twenty-nine volumes. His untiring industry enabled him to compile many other books, but it is on these two that his fame chiefly rests. The earlier displays his qualities in the most favourable light, and has been least injuriously affected by subsequent writings and investigations, The Histoire des Francais, as a careful and accurate sketch on the great scale, has been entirely superseded by that of M. Henri Martin, while it is not to be mentioned, as a work of historical or literary genius, in the same category with that of Michelet. Sainte-Beuve

has with benevolent sarcasm surnamed the author "the

Rollin of French History," and the praise and the blame implied in the comparison are both perfectly well deserved. In April 1819 Sismondi married an English lady, Miss Allen, whose sister was the wife of Sir James Mackintosh, and the marriage appears to have been a very happy one. His later years were chiefly spent at Geneva, in the politics of which city he took a great, though as time and changes went on a more and more chagrined, interest. Indeed, in his later days he became a kind of reactionary. He died at Geneva on June 25, 1842. Besides the works above mentioned he had executed many others, his custom for a long period of years being never to work less than eight hours a day. The chief of these are Vouveaua Principes d'Economie Politique (1819), an historical novel entitled Julia Severa ou VAn 492 (1822), Histoire de la Renaissance de la

Liberté en Italie (1832), Histoire de la Chute de Vv Empire Romain (1835), Précis de Histoire des Frangais, an abridgment of his own book (1839), with several others, chiefly political pamphlets.

Sismondi's literary character has been hinted at in the above remarks on his French history. He was exceedingly laborious, for the most part (though not entirely) free from prejudice, and never violent even when he was prejudiced. He had (with much "'sensi- bility") plenty of common sense, though not perhaps any extra- ordinary amount of acuteness in estimating things uncommon, and he was a little deficient in historical grasp and in the power of taking large views of complicated series of events. His style corre- sponded to his thought, and (putting aside certain solecisms which French critics usually affect to discover in Swiss writers) lacks point, picturesqueness, and vigour. Of his moral character no one has ever spoken except in terms of praisc, and it appears (which is not invariably the case) to have been as attractive as it was estimable. His chief weakness seems to have been a tendency, frequently observ- able in writers of very great industry, to rank his own productions somewhat too much ona level with those of writers who, if less indus- trious, were infinitely more gifted. Thus he has somewhere naively observed that " he should not object to signing" a certain proportion of a certain book of Chateaubriand's. But this overvaluation of self appears to have been merely naif, and not in the least arrogant.

Sismondi's journals and his correspondence with Channing, with the countess of Albany, and others have been published chiefly by Mile. Mongolfier (Paris, 1863) and M. de Saint-René Taillandier. Thelatter work serves as the chief text of two admirable Lundis of Sainte-Beuve (September 1863), republished in the Nouveaux Lundis, vol. vi.

SISTAN, or Seistan (SesisTAN), the ancient Sacastane (Cakasthina, "land of the Sace") and the Mimruz or '"'meridies " of the Vendidad, is situated generally between 30° 0' and 31°35' N, lat. and 61° 0' and (including Rudbar) 62° 40' E. long. Its extreme length is about 100 and its breadth varies from 70 to over 100 miles,—but the exact limits are vague, and the modern signification of the name practically comprehends the peninsula formed by the lower

| gular, called “ Outer Sistan.”

SIS—SIS

Helmand and its embouchure on the one side and the “ HAmun” or “lake” on the other. When British arbitra. tion was brought to bear upon the disputed claims of Persig over this country in 1872, it was found necessary to sup. pose two territories—one compact and concentrated, which was called “Sistén Proper,” the other detached and irre Of each of these a brief description will be given.

1. Sistan Proper is bounded on the north by the “N&izdr,” or reed-bed which fringes the “ Hamun” or expanse ; west by the Hamun itself, of which the hill called ‘“ Kuh-i-Khwajah ”” marks the central point ; south by a line shutting in Sikuha and all villages and lands watered by the main Sistén Canal; and east by the old bed of the Helmand, from a mile above the dam at Kohak to the mouth. Kal‘ah-inau and Rindan are among the more northerly inhabited villages. The Kuh-i-Khwajah is a sufficient indication of the western side. Burj-i-Alam Khan should be included within the southern boundary as well as Sikuha. Khwdjah Ahmad and Jahanabad, villages on the left bank, or west of the true bed of the Helmand, denote the eastern line. The whole area is estimated at 947 square miles. The fixed population may be roughly stated at 35,000,—some 20,000 Sistanis and 15,000 settlers,—the greater part of whom are Parsiwans, or rather, perhaps, a Persian-speaking people. To the above

: numbers may be added 10,000 Baluch nomads. Taking the ageregate at 45,000, and look- %i.,9| ing at the extent of country {cuxpinsur] comprehended, we find nearly 48 persons to the square mile, These figures are eight times in excess of the proportional result found for the whole of Persia, Tt should be explained that the designation Sistén Proper is not arbitrarily given. The territory com- ‘| prehended in it is spoken of as Sistan by the dwellers on the right bank of the Helmand, in contradistinction to their own lands. At the same time it could only be but a fractional part—as indeed the whole country under consideration could only be—of the Sistan of Persian history. ‘

Sistan Proper is an extensive tract of sana and clay alluvium, generally flat, but irregular in detail. It has heaps, but no hills; bushes, ‘but no trees, unless indeed three or four tamarisks of aspiring height deserve the name; many old ruins and vestiges of comparative civi- lization, but few monuments or relics of antiquity. Ite well watered by rivers and canals, and its soil is of proved fertility. Wheat or barley is perhaps the staple cultiva- tion; but pease, beans, oil-seeds, and cotton are also grown. Among fruits, grapes and mulberries are rare, but melons and water-melons, especially the latter, are abundant. Grazing and fodder are not wanting, and besides the reeds peculiar to Sistan there are two grasses which merit notice,—that called bannu, with which the bed of the Hémtn abounds on the south, and the taller and less salt Airta on the higher ground.

2. Outer Sistdn, the country on the right bank of the Helmand, and east of its embouchure in the Hamun, extends more than 100 miles in length, or from a point between the Charboli and Khuspas rivers north to Rud- bar south. In breadth the district of Chakhanstr, measur ing from the old bed of the Helmand, inclusive of Nad Ali, to Kadah, may be estimated at some 30 miles. It

Ita” =

LNaifaar

=

Map of Sistan.

SIS—SIS5

produces wheat and barley, melons, and perhaps a few vegetables and oil seeds. Beyond the Chakhansur limits, southward or up to the Helmand, there is probably no cultivation save that obtained on the river bank, and ordinarily illustrated by patches of wheat and barley with melon beds. On the opposite side of the river, in addition to the cultivated portions of the bank, there is a large tract extending from above (7.e., south of) Kohak, or the Sistin dam (band), to the gravelly soil below the mountain ranges which separate Sistan from Baluchistan and Narmashir. The distance from north to

south of this plain may be computed at 40 miles, and from east to west at 80 or 90 miles. Lands north of the Naizar not belong- ing to the Afghan district of Lash Juwain may also be included in Outer Sistan; but it is unnecessary to make any distinction of the kind for the tract marked “ Hamun ” on the west, where it merges into the Persian frontier. Bellew states there are 1200 houses in Chakhanstr. This can hardly apply to the fort in which the sardar lives, and the comparatively few houses outside, bearing that name, and noticed by Major Lovett on his visit in 1872. Nor did there then appear to be any other centres of population in the district, excepting perhaps Kadah on the eastern limit. The inhabitants are Sistanis or Parsi- wans, Baluch nomads, and Afghans. Between the Kohak band and Rudbar they are mainly Baluch. Most of the less nomad tribesmen are Sanjurani and Toki, the sardars jealously claiming the former appellation.

The most remarkable geographical feature of Sistan generally, in the modern acceptation of the term, is the Hamun, or expanse, which stretches far and wide on the north, west, and south, but is for a great part of the year dry or a mere swamp. In the early spring, at which period the present writer was in the locality, the existence of a lake could only be certified by pools or hollows of water formed at the mouths of the principal feeders, such as the Khash Rid on the north-east, the Farah Rud on the north-west, aud the Helmand, where its old bed terminates at no great distance from the Khash Rud. Bellew describes the aspect of that portion of Sistén limited to the actual basin of the Helmand as indicating the former existence of a lake which covered with its waters a considerable area. On the north this tract has been raised to a higher level than the remainder by the deposit at the mouths of rivers of the solid matter brought down. It is still, however, from 200 to 500 feet below the level of the desert cliffs that bound it, and which at some former period formed the shores of the lake; and it is from 50 or 60 to 200 feet above the level of the beds of the rivers now flowing into the existing Hamun, The tract thus raised by depositions in the bed of the former lake, writes the same authority, is now the inhabited district of Sistan, and contains the Hamiun, a great sedge-grown swamp, the last relic of the lake itself. To the south of the Hamun and inhabited tract of Sistan is the Zarah hollow. It extends for about 100 niles to the Sarhad Mountains. Called by the natives God-i- Zarah, or the hollow of Zarah, it is described as a wide and circular depression sloping gently up to the bounding hills

and desert cliffs, deepest hollow, which, except in seasons of drought, is more or less marshy. It is connected along the western border of the area with the existing Hamin by the Sar-shila, a great drainage gully through which runs the superfluous flood of the Hamin.

The water-supply of Sistan is about as uncertain as that of Sind, though the general inclination to one bank, the left, is more marked in the Helmand than in the Indus. Therefore the boundary lines given must be received with slight reservation. It is easy to see that a good year of inundation extends the borders of the so-called lake to within the Naizdr ; and there are well-defined beds of dry canals intersecting the country, which pa the existence formerly of an extensive water-system no

onger prevailing. The main canal of Sistan, confounded by some Writers with the parent river, bears the waters of the Helmand Mad Into the heart of the country. They are diverted by ete a large band or dam, known indifferently as the “ Amir’s,” tathe 3 istan,” or the “ Kohak ” band. It is constructed of horizon-

y aid tamarisk branches, earth, and perpendicular stakes, and eg te from damage by a fort on the left and a tower on the = ee of the river. Although this diversion of the stream as ae a artificial development of a natural channel, and we te y dates from a period long prior to recent Persian

pation, it appears that the later arrangements have been more

maturely and better organized than those carried on by the pre- |

It receives the drainage of these in its central and °

decessors of the amir of Kaian. The towns of Deshtak, Chelling, Burj-i-Alam Khan, Bahramabad, Kimmak, and others of less note are actually on the banks of this main canal. Moreover, it is the indirect means of supplying water to almost every town and village in Sistan Proper, feeding as it does a network of minor canals, by which a system of profuse irrigation is put in force, which, with an industrious and a contented population, should be

productive of most extensive grain cultivation. To consider the main canal as the river itself is a theory which a brief inspec- tion of the locality seems quite to disprove. On the one hand we have a comparatively narrow passage abruptly turning to the westward, on the other a broad and well-defined river-bed pro- longed in the old direction, into which the waters would at all times flow unrestrained but for an artificial embankment. What- ever arguments, however, may be used on this head, the larger bed is assumed to be the original Helmand for purposes of territorial limitation.

Provisions in Sistan are, as a rule, sufficient, though sheep and oxen are somewhat poor. Bread is cheap and good, being pro- curable to natives at less than a halfpenny the pound. Vegctables are scarce, and rice is chiefly obtained from Herat. The inundated lands abound with water-fowl. Partridges and sand-grouse are occasionally seen. River fish are plentiful enough, but confined to one species, the barbel.

The inhabitants of Sistan are mainly composed of Kaiyanis, descendants of the ancient rulers of the land; Sarbandis and Shahrakis, tribes supposed to have consisted originally of immigrants from western Persia ; and Baluchis of the Nharui and Sanjurani (Toki) clans. Bellew separates the “Sistanis”; but it is a question whether this term is not in a large measure applied to fixed inhabitants of the country, whatever their descent and nationality. For instance, an old Shahraki guide to the Sistan Mission of 1872 persisted in being a “ Sistani”; and, if his defini- tion be accepted, the outside element must be confined to Baluchis and modern settlers only.

History.—The ancient Drangiana (Zaraya, Darafika, ‘‘ lake land ”’) received the name of ‘‘ land of the Saca” after this country was permanently occupied by the ‘‘ Scythians” or Sace, who over- ran Iran in 128 8.c. (see Prrsra, vol. xviii. pp. 594 sq.). It was included in the Sasdnian empire, and then in the empire of the caliphs. About 860 4.p., when it had undergone many changes of government under lientenants of the Baghdad caliphs, or bold adventurers acting on their own account, Yakub b. Laith made it the seat of his power. In 901 it fell under the power of the Sémanids, and a century later into that of the Ghaznavids. An invasion of Jaghatais and the irruption into its richer lands by Timur are salient points in the history of Sistan prior to the Safawid conquest (1508). Under this dynasty for more

than two centuries, or up to 1722, Sistan remained more or less a Persian dependency. At the time of the Afghan invasion of Mir Mahmud (1722), Malik Muhammad Kaiyani was the resident ruler in Sistan, and by league with the invader or other intrigue he secured for himself that particular principality and a great part of Khurasan also. He was slain by Nadir Kuli Khan, the general of Shah Tahmasp, who afterwards, as Nadir Shah, became possessor of Sistan as part of his Persian dominions. Shortly after the death of Nadir (1751) Sistan passed, together with other provinces, into the hands of Ahmad Shah Abdali, the first sovereign in a united Afghanistan. On the death of Ahmad Shah in 1773 the country became a recognized bone of contention, not so much between Persians and Afghans as between Herat and Kandahar; but eventually the internal dissensions of Afghanistan gave Persia the desired opportunity ; and by a steady course of intrigue and encroachment she managed to get within her grasp the better lands on the left bank of the lower Helmand and something on the right bank besides. When the British arbitrator appeared on the scene in the beginning of 1872, though compelled to admit the shah's possession of what has been called "'Sistén Proper," he could in fairness insist on the evacuation of Nad Ali, Kala Fath, and all places occupied on the right bank by Persian troops; and furthermore he left to the Afghans both sides of the river Helmand from the dam of Kohak to its elbow west of Rudbar. For the

precise boundary see PERsIA, vol. xviii. p. 619. See Eastern Persta, vol. i.; Bellew's Record of Sistan Mission; Journal of R. Geog. Society, vol, xlili. (1873). (F. J. G

SISTOVA, a town of Bulgaria, at the head of a district of its own name (40,893 inhabitants in 1881), is situated on the right bank of the Danube, about 40 miles above Rustchuk, and has rather a picturesque appearance on the slopes of the Kadbair and the Chuka. On the latter hill there stood till the fire of 1810 a medizval fortress, and previous to the 15th century it contained a Latin church of traditional celebrity. The lower town along the river consists of modern houses, mostly erected since 1870, and is the scene of busy commercial life, especially during the

grain-export season. The principal church, completed in 1867, is a large and costly building with an imposing dome. Sistova was one of the first of the Bulgarian towns to introduce the national language into its schools (1833), some of which are now well-endowed and flourishi- ing. More than half the inhabitants, who numbered 11,560 in 1881, are Bulgarians, the rest being Turks, Walachians, and Gipsies.

Sistova is identified with the old Roman colony Nove mentioned by Ptolemy and others. The exact site appears to have been Staklen, a cluster of viucyards with remains of ancient buildings to the west of the present town, which has gradually moved eastward since the 16th century, when it was reduced by the Turkish wars to a miserable village. It was at Sistova that the peace of 1790 was signed, by which the Austrian-Turkish boundary was deter- mined. The town was burned in 1810 by the Russian general Saint Priest ; but subsequent to 1820 it began to revive, and the introduction of steam traffic on the lower Danube (1835) restored its prosperity in spite of the effects of the Russian war of 1828-29, when the Walachian town of Alexandria was founded by fugitives from Sistova. In 1877 the Russians entered Bulgaria by passing the river just below Sistova.

SISTRUM, a kind of rattle used by the ancient Egyp- tians in religious ceremonies, especially in the worship of Isis. It consisted of a frame through which passed four rods ; attached to the frame was a handle. When shaken the rods rattled and produced the sound. After the in- troduction of Egyptian worships into Italy the Romans became familiar with the sistrum. It is described by Apuleius (Metam., xi. 4). An ancient sistrum formerly existed in the library of Ste Geneviéve at Paris. In paint- ings found at Portici a priest of Isis and a woman are represented rattling the sistrum. The instrument is said to be still in use in Nubia and Abyssinia.

SISYPHUS, a famous character of Greek mythology, was a son of Adolus and Enarete and brother of Cretheus, Athamas, and Salmoneus. He built Ephyra (Corinth), and married Merope, daughter of Atlas, by whom he had a son Glaucus. According to Pausanias (ii. 3, 11) Sisyphus succeeded Medea in the sovereignty of Corinth. Having found the body of the drowned Melicertes lying on the shore of the isthmus, Sisyphus buried him and instituted in his honour the Isthmian games. From Homer onwards

Sisyphus was famed as the craftiest of men. His name (formed by reduplication from the same root as codés) means the Wise, Wise One. When Death came to fetch him, Sisyphus put him into fetters, so that no one died till Ares came and freed Death, and delivered Sisyphus into his custody. But Sisyphus was not yet at the end of his resources. For before he died he told his wife that when he was gone she was not to offer the usual sacrifice to the dead. So in the under world he complained that his wife was neglecting her duty, and he persuaded Hades to allow him to go back to the upper world and expostulate with her. But when he got back to Corinth he positively refused to return to Deadland ; so he lived to a good old age, and even then Hermes had a tough job to carry him off. In the under world Sisyphus was compelled to roll a big stone up a steep hill; but before it reached the top of the hill the stone always rolled down, and Sisyphus had to begin all over again. The subject was a commonplace of ancient writers, and was depicted by the painter Polygnotus on the Lesche at Delphi.

The way in which Sisyphus cheated Death is a common incident in folk-tales. Thus in a Venetian story the ingenious Beppo ties up Death in a bag and keeps him there for eighteen months ; therc is gencral rejoicing ; nobody dies, and the doctors are in high feather. In a Sicilian story an innkeeper corks up Death in a bottle; so nobody dies for years, and the long white beards are a sight to see. In another Sicilian story a monk keeps Death in his pouch for forty years. (See Crane, Popular Italian

Tales, Nos. 68, 64, 65, 66, with the translator’s notes.) The German parallel is Gambling Hansel, who kept Death up a tree for

seven years, during whieh no one died (Grimm, Household Tales, No. 82; in his notes Grimm cites a number of German parallels), The Norse parallel is the talc of the Master Smith (Asbjérnsen og Moe, Norske Folke-Eventyr, 21; Dasent, Popular Tales from the Norse, p. 106). For a Lithuanian parallel, see Schleicher, Litawische Mdhrehen, Spriechworte, Ritsel, wnd Lieder, p. 108 sq); for Slavonic parallels, Krauss, Sagen wid Mahrehen der Stidslaven, ii., Nos. 125, 126.

SITAPUR, a British district in Sit4pur division or commissionership of Oudh, under the jurisdiction of the lieutenant-governorship of the North-Western Provinces of India. It lies between 27° 7’ and 27° 53’ N. lat. and between 80° 21’ and 81° 26’ E. long., and it is bounded on the N. by Kheri district, on the E. by that of Bahraich, from which it is separated by the Gogra river, and on the S.and W. by Bara Banki, Lucknow, and Hardoi districts, the Gumti river forming the boundary. Sitdpur district is elliptical in shape; its greatest length from south-east to north-west is 70 miles, and its extreme breadth from north-east to south-west 55 miles; its area is 2251 square miles. Being without hills or valleys, and devoid of forests, Sitapur presents the appearance of a vast plain sloping imperceptibly from an elevation of 505 feet above sea-level in the north-west to 400 feet in the south-east. The country is, however, well wooded with numerous groves, and well cultivated, except in those parts where the soil is barren and cut up by ravines. It is inter sected by numerous streams, and contains many shallow ponds and natural reservoirs, which overflow during the rains, but become dry in the hot season. Except in the eastern portion, which lies in the doabs or alluvial plains between the Kewdni and Chauka and the Gogra and Chauka rivers, the soil is as a rule dry, but even this moist tract is interspersed with patches of land covered with saline efflorescence called ‘‘reh.” The principal rivers are the Gogra, which is navigable by boats of large tonnage through- out the year, and the Chauka. Nylghau, many varieties of deer, wild hog, wolf, jackal, and fox are common, but none of the larger wild animals are found within the district. The climate is

considered healthy, and the cantonments of Sitapur are famous for the low mortality of the British troops stationed there. The average annual rainfall is about 33 inches. The district contains no railway, but it is well provided with good unmetalled roads. .

In 1881 the population was returned at 958,251 (505,986 males and 452,265 females) ; Hindus numbered 818,738, Mohammedans 188,783, and Christians 448. Sitapur contains but two towns with more than 10,000 inhabitants,—namely, Khairabad, 14,217, and Laharpur, 10,487. The administrative headquarters of the distriet are at Sitapur town, which is prettily situated on the banks of the Sard4yan river, with good groves in all directions, and with a population in 1881 of 6780. Of the total district area 1450 square miles are cultivated and 510 are cultivable. The principal staples are wheat, barley, joar, gram, bajra, and rice; besides these

a considerable quantity of sugar-eane is raised, as also oil seeds, cotton, and tobaeco. The only manufactures of any note are tobacco and tazias at Biswan, with a little cotton printing and weaving m most of the towns. The history of Sitdpur is elosely associated with that of the rest of Oudh. “The distriet figured prominently in the mutiny of 1857, whén the native troops quartered in the cantonments rose in mutiny and fired on their officers, many of whom were killed, as were also several military and civil officers, with their families, in attempting to escape. Order being restored in 1858, the Government offices were re-opened, aud nothing has since occurred to disturb the peace of the district.

SITTINGBOURNE, an ancient town of Kent, is situated on a navigable creek of the Swale, and on the London, Chatham, and Dover Railway, at the junction for Sheerness, 7 miles south from the latter town and 45 east-south-east of London. It consists principally of one long street and the northern suburb of Milton, formerly celebrated for its oysters, the fishery of which used employ a large number of the inhabitants. Brickmaking is a very important industry, and there are large paper

mills, St Michael’s church, in the Early English and later styles, underwent extensive restoration in 1873 at a cost of nearly £3000. The principal other

public buildings are the old town-hall, the corn exchange (erected 1859), and the museum. Public gardens 10 acres in extent have recently been laid out. The local government board was instituted in 1878. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1004 acres) in 1871 was 6148 and in 1881 it was 7856. Sittingbourne, or Sedyngburne, reecived a grant of a market and two annual fairs by a eharter of Queen Elizabeth. The style " guardian and free tenants," applied to the eorporation in this charter, was subsequently ehanged to that of "mayor and jurats."

See W. A. Scott Robertson, Sittingbourne and the Names of Lands and Houses in or near tt, Sittingbourne, 1879.

STUT, or Asytr (Asioor), more correctly OsyUT, a town of Upper Egypt, and southern terminus of the railway on the left bank of the Nile, by which it is 229 miles from Bulk Dakrir. The population is about 25,000. See Eeypt, vol. vii. p. 775.

SIVA, See BRAHMANISM.

SiVAS, or SiwAs, a pashalic and capital of a pashalic of great importance in Asia Minor. The town is situated on the right bank of the Kizil Irmak (Halys), in a plain of some 16 to 20 miles in length and 4 to 6 in breadth. From the south the approach is by a good road among the mountains, and the aspect from the heights is pleasing. Dotted here and there with trees, some in large extended clusters, the houses and citadel cover a considerable space and appear much scattered. On the north a military road has been constructed to facilitate communication with the coast. Sivas is 4670-feet above the level of the Black Sea, and should bea healthy residence for Euro- peans. The population, estimated on the spot in 1864 at 10,000 houses, more than a fifth being Armenians, is stated in Murray's Handbook of 1878 to consist of 5000 Turkish and 1200 Armenian families. There are some respectable residences but not many buildings or monuments of note; and the streets are narrow and ill- maintained. The bazaars are fairly stocked with goods, British as well as of other European nations.

Sivas is the aneient Scbasteva (not to be confounded with Sebaste or Gabira on the Lyeus, the modern Niksar), the eapital of Armenia 1I., and the seat of an archbishop. In 1021 it was eeded by the emperor Basil to the Armenian

king, Senekharim. It again beeame Greek in 1080, but soon after fell to the Seljuks. In the 13th century Mareo Polo speaks of Scvaste as the place "where the glorious Messer Saint Blaise suffered martyrdom." It was, when he wrote, in the possession of the Turkmans of Kara- mania, living under the government of the Seljuk prinees. In the 14th eentury we have the testimony of Ibn Batuta, who says (ii. 289) :—"It is one of the possessions of the king of Irak, and the largest town owned by him in the country. His ehiefs and his collectors reside there. It is well-built, and has wide streets and erowded markets." Colonel Goldsmid visited Sivas in July 1864, and was shown some fine monuments deseribed as the mausolea of the Seljuks, the inscriptions on which he found to date no earlier than 670 of the Hijra, though the actual tombs might be traceable to a former period.

SIXTUS I. (Xysrus) figures in the lists accepted by

the Roman Church as having been bishop of Rome from about 119 to about 126. He is conjectured to have been & presbyter and a martyr. _ SIXTUS II. followed Stephanus I. as bishop of Rome m 257, and suffered martyrdom under Valerian in the following year. He restored the relations with the African and Eastern Churches which had been broken off by his pre-decessor on the question of heretical baptism. Dionysius succeeded him.

SIXTUS IIL, bishop of Rome from July 31, 432, to August 18, 440, had Coclestinus I. as his predecessor, and Was succeeded by Leo I.

SIXTUS IV. (Francesco della Rovere), pope from 1471 to 1484, was born 21st July 1414, near Savona. The Statements respecting his parents' situation in life are

very conflicting. In consequence of a vow made by his mother he entered the Franciscan order at an early age, and speedily acquired a great reputation for eloquence and learning, After filling several minor offices he became general of his order, and in 1467 was to his own surprise made cardinal by Paul II., at the recommendation, it is asserted, of Cardinal Bessarion. When, upon Paul's death in 1471, the rigour of Bessarion's principles prevented his profiting by the favourable sentiments of influential

cardinals, who, nevertheless, expected to be recompensed for their suffrages, Rovere seems to have been found more accommodating. The liberality of his donations after his election, at all events, raised suspicion ; but the friendship of Bessarion has also been enumerated among the causes of the sudden elevation of the most recent member of the Sacred College. He was elected on 9th August 1471, and immediately proceeded to lavish Paul's treasures— partly in laudable preparations against the Turks ; partly in embassies, receptions of foreign princes, public improve- ments, and other expenses possibly imprudent, but at least not indecorous; partly, without any excuse, upon his unworthy nephews, Count and Cardinal Riario. The prodigalities of the latter surpassed all measure, and he compromised his uncle much more seriously by his com- plicity in the conspiracy of the Pazzi, aiming at the assassination of the Medici family. Sixtus was cognizant of the plot, but had positively forbidden the shedding of blood, whicl he must nevertheless have known to be in- evitable. He deserves still more censure for entering into a fruitless and inglorious war with Florence, which ter- minated in 1480, after having kept Italy for two years in confusion. Scarcely was it over when he allowed himself to be involved in yet more troublesome and discreditable contests,—first inciting the Venetians to attack Ferrara, and then, after having been delivered by their general Roberto Malatesta from a Neapolitan invasion, turning round upon them and eventually assailing them on their refusal to desist from the hostilities which he had himself instigated. He relied on the co-operation of Lodovico Sforza, who speedily forsook him; and the scandal was witnessed of the secular princes and cities of Italy agreeing to a peace which the Father of Christendom did his best to thwart, and vexation at which was believed to have hastened his death. He died, at all events, a few days afterwards, 13th August 1484, leaving an unfortunate reputation as the first pope who brought nepotism into politics, and, not content with enriching his relatives by gifts and lucrative offices, made their aggrandizement the principal object of his policy as a secular prince. His private character was nevertheless estimable : he was pious, of blameless morals, hospitable and munificent to a fault, and so exempt from avarice, says his secretary Conti, that he could not endure the sight of money. His faults were those of a monk who had no natural outlet for strong affections except unwortly relatives, and who had been called from a cloister to fill the most con- spicuous position in the world. His secular policy was capricious and

spasmodic; he neither maintained the peace of Italy like his predecessor and successor nor carried out a consistent and well-considered scheme of conquest like Alexander VI. He was, notwithstanding, always firm in his resistance to the Turks, and showed magnanimity by aiding his enemy the king of Naples against the common foe of Christendom. The brilliant side of his administration was his munificence as a founder or restorer of useful institutions and a patron of letters and art. He established and richly endowed the first foundling hospital, built and repaired numerous churches, constructed the Sixtine Chapel and the Sixtine Bridge, commissioned paintings on the largest scale, pensioned and

rewarded men of learning, and, above all, immortalized himself as the second founder of the Vatican library. It has been said that the stones alone inscribed with his name would serve to erect a considerable edifice. These great works, however, were not accomplished without grievous taxation and questionable methods of raising money ; and Sixtus's successor expressed the general con- demnation of his government when he declared that he for his part would imitate the example of Paul II. Sixtus was succeeded by Innocent VIII. (R. G.) SIXTUS V. (Felice Peretti), pope from 1585 to 1590, was born 13th December 1521 at Grottamarina, in the district of Fermo, of a family said to be of Dalmatian extraction. His parents were undoubtedly in humble circumstances, but the story of his having been a swine- herd in his youth seems to be a mere legend. He entered the Franciscan order at an early age, and obtained great celebrity as a preacher. After having been successively professor at Rimini and at Siena, he became inquisitor- general in Venice (where his firmness in controversy with the Venetian Government exposed him to personal danger), theologian at the council of Trent, and ultimately vicar- general of his order. In 1565 he accompanied the papal legate to Spain, and in 1570 was created cardinal by Pius V., and entrusted with the publication of a correct edition of the works of St Ambrose, which appeared in 1579-1585. Finding himself out of favour with Pius's successor, Gregory XIII., he withdrew to a villa which he had purchased, and lived in strict retirement, affecting, it is said, to be in a precarious state of health. According to the usual story, which is probably at least exaggerated, this dissimulation greatly contributed to his unexpected elevation to the papacy

on the next vacancy, 24th April 1585. If the electors had indeed anticipated a weak or ephemeral pontificate, they were grievously disappointed. Sixtus speedily proved himself one of the most vigorous popes, both in body and mind, that had ever occupied the chair of St Peter. Within two years he issued seventy- two bulls for the reform of religious orders alone. Ardent, despotic, indefatigable, he did everything by himself, rarely invited advice and still more rarely followed it, and manifested in all his actions a capacious and highly original genius, in most respects eminently practical, but swayed in some things towards the visionary and fantastic by the inevitable effects of a monastic training. His first great aim was to purge the papal dominions of the robbers who had overrun them under the weak administration of his predecessor. This salutary undertaking was effectually accomplished, not without many instances of tyranny and cruelty which have left a stain upon his name ; but security of life and property returned. Sixtus's financial management seemed on a superficial view equally brilliant ; he had found the exchequer enipty, and speedily accumulated an immense treasure. But this end was obtained partly by excessive taxation, partly by the sale of offices which had never before been venal; and the withdrawal of such an amount of specie from circulation inpoverished the community. His intention was to amass a fund for use in special emergencies, such as a crusade or a hostile invasion, which never arose. Much, nevertheless, was expended by Sixtus in the encourage- ment of agriculture and commerce, and in public works, either of signal utility, like his supply of Rome with water, or such at least as impressed the popular imagination with his munificence, as the completion of the cupola of St Peter's, the construction of six new streets, and the eleva- tion of four Egyptian obelisks in various parts of Rome. Though a scholar, Sixtus was no humanist, and did much mischief to the monuments of antiquity, ruthlessly destroying some, and disfiguring those which he repaired

by the addition of Christian attributes. In his ecclesias. tical and foreign policy good sense contended with eccen- tricity but usually obtained the upper hand. He thought of attacking Turkey with the alliance of Poland and Russia, of subjugating Egypt by his own forces, of making a descent into Syria and carrying off the Holy Sepulchre, But he never attempted to realize

these projects, and his conduct of the affairs which imperatively required his attention evinced more moderation than could have been expected. After having strongly sided with Spain and the League, he allowed himself to be convinced by the Venetian ambassador of the evil consequences of Spanish preponderance in Italy, and showed a manifest disposition to acknowledge Henry IV. as king of France, on condition of his abjuration. This led to violent altercations with the Spanish ambassador, and the death of the pope on 27th August 1590 was attributed by many to poison, though without sufficient ground. He was succeeded by Urban VIL Sixtus V. left the reputation of a zealous and austere pope,—with the pernicious qualities insepar- able from such a character in his age,—of a stern and terrible but just and magnanimous temporal magistrate, of a great sovereign in an age of great sovereigns, of a man always aiming at the highest things and whose great faults were but the exaggeration of great virtues.

The best view of his charaeter and government is that given by Ranke. Leti's well-known biography is full of fables ; Tempesti is too panegyrieal ; aud Lorentz is little more than a eompiler from the two. The most valuable part of Baron von Huebner's Site Quint (Paris, 1870) is the rich appendix of doeuments. Sixtus's note-books and drafts of letters in the Chigian library, frequently referred to by Tempesti and Ranke, were published by Cugnoni in 1882. : (RB. G.)

SKATE. See Ray.

SKATING, as at present practised, may be defined asa mode of progression (usually rapid) upon smooth ice, by the aid of steel blades attached to the soles of the feet. It probably originated in the far north of Europe, in Scandi- navia and Germany, where it is still in common use. In Russia it has never been a national pastime, as no smooth ice is formed in the rapidly running rivers. Even in St Petersburg it is mainly engaged in by English and Germans. The earliest skates appear to have been certain bones of large animals, but wood was also used from an early period.

In modern skating there are two totally distinct styles, which require different skates differently attached to the feet, and different extents and qualities of ice. The first, the "running " or "fen" style, simply consists in going straight ahead at the highest possible speed. _ Its home is on the

fiords of Scandinavia, the fens of Lincolnshire, and the large rivers and lakes of North America. In Holland, Denmark, and North America it is the medium for carrying a large winter market traffic. It first be- came common in England in 1662 after the return of the Stuarts. The wooden part or stock of a running skate is from 8 to 12 inches long, according to the length of the foot. The blade is made of the best steel, with an average width of .% inch. The heel is at right angles to the surface of the ice. The prow begins to rise 0 the ice at the fore end of the stock, at a gradually in- creasing angle, and projects 4 inches. The entire skate is attached to the foot by an iron screw in the heel of the stock which enters the skater's boot heel and two long straps which pass through slots in the stock and fasten round the ankle and toes of the skater. The length of the heel strap varies from 22 to 32 inches, and that of the toe strap from 15 to 23inches. Formerly the bottoms of the blades were fluted. A concavity is now effected by grinding; and, when in motion, the blade is rarely flat on the ice, The curve should be slight, and the depth

no greater than will ensure a curve being made without touching the ice. The feet are placed at right angles to cach other with the toes turned out and the body bent slightly forward. Each foot is then raised alternately and set down slightly on the inside edge. It immediately acquires a forward motion, which is increased by pushing with the other foot, that being at right angles and having no sliding motion. The feet must be kept perfectly level when raised and set down, and the skate carried in the same manner an inch above the ice when going forward. The forward stroke is made on the outer edge, and the pressure applied to the inner edge of the other foot. The arms are swung across the chest from side to side, and opposite to the direction of the striking leg in order to balance the weight. The quickest method of stopping is to place the feet parallel, dig the heels into the ice, and arch the back. A longer but more graceful method is to turn the toes in- wards, thus spreading the outside edges athwart the line of going. The feet should never be looked at, as the balance of the body is thereby disturbed. The eye should always be on a line with the horizon.

The fastest skating times recorded, from a standing start, and with no rear wind, have all been made in the United States, at New York, as follows :—

100 yards, 10§ s.; 200, 213 s.; 300, 313 s.; Lmile, 444s.; 4, 1m. 41$8.; 3, 2m. 342-6.; 1, 8m. 2625.3; 2; 6m. 564s.; 8, 10m. 333s.; 4, 14m. 10$s.; 5, 17 m. 45 s.; 6, 21m. 38s.; 7, 25m. 174s.; 8, 29m. 945s.; 9, 82 m. 54$ s.; 10, 36 m. 371s.; 20,1 h. 14m. 7} s.; 30, 2h. 31m. 12s.; 40, 3 h. 91 m. 22s.; 50, 4h. 13m. 36s, The best running high jump on skates recorded is 3 ft. 12 in., and running long jump 15 ft. 2 in.

The second style, termed “figure skating,” is quite modern and purely English in its origin. This may be practised on any small pond, provided the ice is clear of snow and perfectly smooth. The more numerous opportunities thus afforded make it the more popular style in Great Britain, where the large streams seldom freeze. Figure skating consists in cutting arcs, circles, figures, letters, serpentines, and spirals,—either forwards or backwards, slowly or rapidly, on one or both feet, singly or in combination. The style can ultimately be analysed into four kinds of strokes, all made on the edges of the blade— the inside forward, the outside forward, the inside back- ward, and the outside backward. The variety of evolu- tions which can be developed from these four movements is endless. The figure skate is made entirely of metal, is

strapless and fixed to the boots by clamps or like devices. Unlike the running skate, it can be instantly put on or taken off. Many kinds have been invented, but the “‘ Acme,” first produced in Canada, is generally acknowledged the best. The blade projects the merest trifle beyond the length of the foot and is rounded off in an upward direction from the ice at both toe and heel. The bottom is } inch wide, and the best curve for grinding it is to that of a seven- foot radius, equal throughout and not increased at either end. In stopping, the end of one skate is placed at right angles to the other.

Summer skating has been occasionally provided in “ slaciariums” by means of artificially produced ice.

The London Skating Club, founded in 1830, is the leading skating society of Great Britain. Comprising but 170 members, including 20 ladies, and practising on exclusively private water in Regent’s Park, it countenances

figure skating only and gives no encourage- ment whatever to the spread or teaching of a national pastime. The National Skating Association was formed in the year 1879, and, on December 8, held the first race for the running champion- ship at Thorney, Cambridgeshire. The objects of the association are as follows :—

To promote, ascertain, and reward speed in skating,—by the establishment aud managemeut of amateur and open skating championships of England; by stimulating and supplementing local action in holding of skating matches; by establishing an order of merit for speed skaters, and awarding badges for the same; by assisting in providing facilities for skating by the shallow flooding of jand in cach locality where local branches exist; and by collecting through cor- responding members information of the existence of ice on which skating is practicable, and the supplying of such information to its members; and to pro- mote and encourage figure skating, by the establishment of standards at which figure skaters may aim, by bestowing badges of merit on those who attain thesc standards, and by promoting and assisting in the formation of skating clubs. To provide rules and regulations for the game of hockey on the ice. Also to pro- mote the establishment of international skating contests in various countries under the direction of an international council.

In the United States and Canada large and shallow artificial ponds under cover, termed ‘‘rinks,” are in winter frozen by filling them with water. Each night the surface is covered with a layer of water, which gives a fresh sheet of ice by morning. The covers protect the rinks from snow, another great advantage.

As regards a substitute for ice and ice skating on wooden or asphalt floors, the only invention that has ever been found even partially successful is that of James L. Plimpton of New York in 1869. “The implements may be described as skates with two parallel wheels at the toe and heel, so hung that the whecl axles are moved out of parallel by the transverse rocking of the skater’s foot, the wheels setting squarely on the surface whether the skater be upright or canted. The fatigue caused by these ‘‘ roller skates” is quadruple that of ordinary ice skating.

See The Field, December 28, 1882, January 6 and February 3, 1883 ; N. and G, A. Goodman, Handbook of Fen Skating, 1882; G. Anderson, Art of Skating, 4th ed., 1880; H. C. Vendervell and T. M. Witham, Figure Skating, 8d ed., 1880; and M. F. M. and §. F. M. Williams's Combined Figure Skating, 1883.

SKELETON

HE word "skeleton," meaning in Greek a mummy, is popularly taken to denote that assemblage of bones and cartilages which forms the internal support of the body of man and of the animals more or less nearly resembling him. A slight acquaintance with the structure of these animals, however, seems to make it evident that a wider sig- nification must be given to the term, since parts which in man and many of his animal allies are bony or cartilaginous may be only membranous in other such animals ; and, con- versely, parts sometimes quite external, which are merely membranous in man and many animals, may in others assume the structure of horn or bone or may contain bones or cartilages. The word skeleton may indeed be taken to denote both a more or less firm and com- plete external protection to a living body, and also a eS or less firm and complete znternal support to such y.

Tn this very wide sense even many vegetal structures may be said to possess a skeleton. For all plants which can sus- tain themselves in an upgrowth from the ground obviously both require and possess solid structures—various groups and varieties of woody fibres—to support such an upgrowth. Organs also, such as leaves, which need to be maintained

in the form of a thin flat expanse, require and possess bundles of fibres (vulgarly called veins) which are even popularly said to constitute the skeleton of the leaf. Many plants form such skeletal structures largely of silex, as do the grasses and the horsetails (Mquisetum), and others invest themselves to a greater or less degree with carbonate of lime, as do some Algex, such as Corallina and Melobesia, while the Desmidix clothe themselves with a horny coat. Ordinarily, however, the word skeleton is only used to denote certain animal structures, and mainly such structures as form the skeleton of man and of creatures so nearly allied to him as to

constitute, together with him, that primary division of animals known as backboned animals or Vertebrata.

It is to a concise description of the skeleton as it exists in Vertebrates generally that this article is devoted. For the details of the human skeleton the reader is referred to the article ANAtomy. In order, however, that its condi- tion in Vertebrate animals may be better understood, it will be well briefly to point out some of the more important varieties of condition presented by the protecting or sup- porting parts of the body of the lower, or Invertebrate, animals.

THE SKELETON OF INVERTEBRATA.

A great and fundamental distinction exists, however, between those lowly organisms known as Protozoa or Hypozoa—which are generally reckoned as animals—on the one hand and all the higher forms, both Vertebrate and Invertebrate, on the other. lt is a dis- tinetion which renders it difficult to regard any skeletal structures of the Hypozoa as answering to, in the sense of being the homologues of, any of the skeletal structnresof higher animals. This great funda- mental distinction consists in the fact that the bodies of all the higher animals are made up of distinct ‘‘ tissues,” which are derived from three different layers of cells, of which the embryos of all? of them are for a time composed, whereas the bodies of the Hypozoa either consist of but a single cell or else of a smaller or larger number of cells more or less loosely aggregated and not forming any distinct tissue. It follows of course that their reproduction does not take place by means of embryos formed of cellular layers.

Nevertheless the Hypozoa or Protozoa may exhibit very distinct protective structures. Thus the outermost layer of the substance of an Ameba, called its ectosarc, is of a firmer consistency than its interior, and it may in allied forms take on a chitinous character or become quite hard through the deposition within it of calcareous salts (as in the sometimes singularly complex shells of the Fora- minifera) or form syminetrical cases of silica.

In the Radiolaria, the skeleton of the Protozoa attains its maxi- inum of beauty and complexity. It consists of spicules which are generally siliceous, but may consist of a peculiar firm organic substance termed “acanthin.” The spicules arrange themselves in an extraordinarily symmetrical manner, generally radiating from the central portion of the organism and being connected with one or more series of encircling spicules which may constitute a scries of concentric spheres.

Among the Infusori we external cuticle, as in Zintinws lagenula and in some other

orms.

When we pass to that vast group of aniinals—the Metazoa— which includes all but the Protozva (and all those therefore the bodies of which are formed of tissues derived from the three primitive layers), a distinction again requires to be drawn between the Sponges (Porifera), which constitute its lowest group, and all higher forms. The three primitive or germinal layers of the Metazoa are termed respectively—(1) the epiblast, (2) the mesoblast, and (3) the hypoblast. Of these three layers the epiblast and the hypoblast are to be regarded as primary.* The epiblast is essentially the primitive integument, and its cells give rise to the epidermis and cuticle and to the organs of sense. The hypoblast is essentially the digestive layer, and gives rise to the epithelium lining the aliment- ary canal. The mesoblast seems to originate from one or both of the two preceding layers, and gives rise to the general substance of the body—including that part of the skin which is beneath the epi- dermis, the muscles, and the blood-vessels. It may divide into two layers, whereof the more external is distinguished as “somatic,” while the more internal is called ‘‘splanchnic.” Such is the general condition of the three germinal layers in the Metazoa. In the Sponges, however, it seems probable * that the germinal layers have a different nature—the epiblast and miesoblast being respectively the digestive and sensory layers.

The skeletal structures of the Sponges have the form of spicules, which may vary greatly in different genera as to their form, while they may be siliceous, calcareous, or horny. Sometimes they con- stitute structures of singular beauty. They appear to be formed in or on the cells of the

mesoblast, and it does not seem that any skeletal structures arise in the epiblast or hypoblast of the Porifera. Should such, however, be hereafter found, then it must be borne in mind that their homologies with analogous skeletal structures of other organisms must depend on the final decision of the question of the exact relations which may exist between such germinal layers in Sponges and the epiblast and hypoblast of higher ALetazoa.

In the great group of the Celentera, the skeleton may be either cpiblastic or mesoblastic in nature. Thus in the Hydrozoa—where it mostly has the form of a horny investment, but may be (as in the Millepores) calcareous—it is epiblastic. In the Actinozoa— which includes the true coral animals—it is generally mesoblastic, although it is formed from the epiblast in the Gorgonia, Isidine, and Pennatulida.

1 “Homologous parts,” or homologues,” are parts of an organism which cor- respond in relative position, that is, in their relation to surrounding structures, whether or not they serve the same ends. They thus differ from ‘‘ analogous parts,” whieh are parts performing similar functions whether or not they agree 4s to their relations of position to surrounding structures. ‘Thus, ¢.g., the nail of a man’s middle toe and the hind hoof of a horse are “ homologous parts,” but the hoot, as the support of the body and agent in locomotion, is analogous to the whole foot of a man.

2 Certain Coelenterate animals consist but of two layers,

3 See F, Balfour’s Comparative Embryology, vol. i. p. 103.

4 Op. cit., vol. i. p. 122, and vol. ii, p. 285.

SkiLE TUN

awe also find examples of a hardening of |

In JZsis the skeleton curiously consists of a series of segments which are alternately horny and calcareous.

In the Echinodermata we generally have, notably in the Sea- Urchin (Hehinus), a wonderfully complex skeleton, which is so near the outer

surface that at the first glance it seems necessarily a most external form of skeleton. Nevertheless the plates which compose it are mesoblastic in nature and are independent of the epidermis.

The two valves forming the shell of the Lamp-shells (Branchiono- poda), and the very different two valves which coustitute the shells of creatures of the Oyster class (Lamellibranchiata), as well as the single shells of the Snail and Whelk class (Gasteropoda), are all epiblastic in nature, and are calcifications of the outer part of the epidermis. The same is the origin of the apparently internal shell of the Slug, which is at first external in the embryo and subsequently becomes enclosed.

Similar is the nature of both the internal and external shells of the Squids, Cuttle-fishes, and Nautili, ¢.¢., of the class Cephalo- poda, In the last-named class, as in some Gasteropods, there is a cartilaginous structure inside the head, which structure supports and partly protects the brain. It is unlike any skeletal part yet mentioned save in its mode of origin, which, like the skeleton of some of the Actinozoa, is mesoblastic.

Lastly may be mentioned the hard_protecting external coat of insects and animals of the Crab and Lobster class—in short, the external skeleton of that primary division of animals which is called Arthropoda, This is again epiblastic, and a hardening of a cuticle on the outer surface of the epidermis —a hardening elfected gene- rally by chitinization (the deposition in it of a substance termed ‘“chitin”’), or, as in many Crustacea and some Myriapoda, by calcification.

GENERAL SKELETAL CONDITIONS.

Having thus briefly glanced at the leading skeletal structures of a number of groups of lower organisms, we may make the following generalization, which will be of use to us in helping us to understand how the skeletal parts of backboned animals stand related to the skeletal parts of animals lower in the scale :—

(1) Skeletal structures may conceivably arise in parts

which are epiblastic, or mesoblastic, or hypoblastie.

(2) Skeletal structures belonging to any one of those three categories may be further divisible into two subordinate categories according as they belong to a superficial or a deep part of the layer to which they appertain.

(3) Skeletal structures may be siliceous, chitinous, cal- careous, cartilaginous, or horny.

(4) In certain animals the mesoblast subdivides into two layers, one somatic and the other splanchnie. Obviously, then, there may be skeletal parts corresponding to either of these last-named layers, and conceivably to a deeper or more superficial portion of either of them.

THE SKELETON OF VERTEBRATA.

The skeleton of the Vertebrata—that is, of the five classes of animals named Pisces, Amphibia, Reptilia, Aves, and Mammalia—may in the first place be most conveniently considered as consisting of two parts—a dermal skcleton, or exoskeleton, and an internal framework, or endoskeleton. The latter, which is generally much the more considerable, is mesoblastic, and the muscles are external to it.

EXTERNAL SKELETON OF VERTEBRATA.

This division of the skeleton is itself again made up of two parts. The more external of these is the epidermis and is of epiblastic origin, and dense epidermal structures may arise towards its inner or its outer surface. The more internal constituent of the exoskeleton is the dermis and dense structures formed in it, and these are from the outer portion of the mesoblast.

Epidermal hard structures formed towards either sur face of the epidermis may become intimately united with subjacent dermal hard structures, and then again, as we shall see, with parts of the true endoskeleton.

<= ss

ae

SKELETON

Any hard structures formed in the walls of the alimentary canal—the lining of which is continuous at either end with the external skin—are to be reckoned as fundamentally exoskeletal. In the process of development the epiblast becomes inflected more or less into either extremity of the alimentary tube, but the intermediate portion, together of course with any hard structures de- veloped in it, is of hypoblastic origin.

In the great majority of Vertebrate animals the two layers of the skin, the epidermis and the dermis, are, as in man, soft, though locally provided with certain denser appendages, such as epidermal and dermal scales, hairs, nails, scutes, and teeth.

The soft, general exoskeleton or skin invests the body of Man pretty closely, though slightly projecting folds of it extend between the roots of the fingers and toes. In some abnormal cases these folds extend so far and bind the digits together so much that the thus malformed person is said to be “ web-fingered ” or ‘“‘ web-toed.” Such a condition is found normally in many animals, as notably in Ducks and Geese, and such parts form a large portion of the “wing” of the Bat.

Other extensions of the skin of the body are note- worthy. Thus in the “Flying” Squirrels and Opossums, and the curious Rodent named Anomalurus, the skin of the sides, between the arms and the legs, is much expanded, serving for a parachute. There may be a skin parachute supported by long free movable ribs, such as we shall see exist in the little Lizards called “‘ Flying Dragons.” There may be a very remarkable extensive skin round the neck, as in the Frilled Lizard, and folds of skin may hang freely, as in the “dewlap” of Cattle, or may be formed here and there as in the Rhinoceros, the skin of which animal is so thick as to necessitate the existence of such folds to allow free movements to the body and limbs. Long filamentary processes may be formed along the back, as in the Iguana and various other Lizards.

In the Seals a fold of skin connects together the hind legs and the tail, and also in our common Bats, which have in addition their very elongated webbed fingers connected with the sides of the body and legs by another

great fold of skin which, with those between the fingers, forms the entire bat's "' wing."

The integument may be very distensible, as in those Fishes (¢.9., Diodon) which distend themselves with air and then float belly upwards.

_ The epidermis of many Vertebrates, and of Man, is shed in minute fragments, constantly removed by friction and ablution, and constantly replaced; only under abnormal conditions and after certain diseases does it come away in large and continuous patches. In some other Vertebrates, as notably in Snakes, the entire epidermal investment of the body, even that of the eyes, is cast off entire as one whole.

The epidermis never has its superficial layer connected with bone, but it often becomes thickened and horny, as We see in the sole of the foot, or the labourer's hand, and in those abnormal thickenings called "corns." Certain local thickenings which are not abnowmal may exist in animals ; such are the callosities on the inner side of the legs of the Horse, on the breast of the Camel, and on the nates of the lower Old-World Apes.

Of the appendages of the epidermis the most simple are scales, such as we find on the legs of Birds and the bodies of Serpents and Reptiles gencrally.

_scle—a true scale, such as those of Snakes and Lizards— eo of papilla of the dermis invested by the epidermis, the 1 being covered by a cornification of the external part of the M. ermis. Scales may be very diverse in shape, prominence, and relative size, and may form very large plates. The so-called i. of Fishes are of deeper origin and are a form of scutes.

a hair differs from a scale in that, instead of being an cpidermic vestment of a dermal projection outwards, it originates by an

epidermal projection inwards into the subjacent dermis. A small papilla of the dermis, however, soon projects upwards, in turn, into the descending epidermal process, and then cornification sets in (at first in the immediate vicinity of the dermal papilla) in the cells around the axis of the epidermal

descending projection, and this hardened portion soon projects beyond the surface of the body, while the part of the epidermis about its decpest part becomes modified into its so-called ‘‘ root.”

A nail or claw arises as a cornification of the epidermis (but not of its deepest layer) lying upon numerous very vascular ridges (or transversely elongated papille) of the dermis, forming the primitive bed of the nail, and enclosed in a deep fold of the integu- ment. One end of the structure becomes free and projecting superficially, while the opposite region grows by epidermal additions from beneath and at its attached extremity.

A feather is more nearly related to a scale than it is to a hair. It consists at first of an upwardly-projecting dermal papilla invested with epidermis, and it is only at a later stage that its hase sinks into a sack or ‘‘feather follicle.” The outermost layer of epi- dermis becomes converted into a horny sheath, which is thrown off when the feather is completed. The quzll is formed by cornification of the deepest aud more superficial layer of epidcrmis investing the base of the dermal aud vascular papilla, and is open at both ends. The vascular papilla it encloses shrinks up when the feather is fully formed. The vane of the feather is formed from the more apical portion of the papilla, and its central part, or shaft, is con- tinuous with the quill, while ridge-like thickenings of epidermis diverging from either side of this central part constitute the barbs of the vane, from each of which yet smaller processes or barbules proceed.

A scute is a hardening of the outermost portion of the dermis, with an investment from the deepest layer of the epidermis. Sucli are the so-called scales of ordinary Fishes, which may be represeuted by the bony plates and processes called placoid scales—so common in the groups of Sharks and Rays. Iu these latter structures dermal papille appear and calcify, forming a dense structure with- out corpuscles, called dentine, beneath which may be a corpusculated structure of true bone. The calcifying papille receive an invest- ment of still denser calcareous tissue, called enamel, from the deepest layer of the epidermis. These placoid structures often come to project outwards on the surface of the body as long spines or as shorter tooth-like processes, or they may protect the surface of the body as flat plates. Often the dentine more or less entirely atrophies, so that the structure

comes to be formed almost entirely of true bone or of that peculiar calcified tissue of which the scales of ordinary Fishes (such, ¢.g., as the Perch and Carp) are composed.

A tooth is a structure closely related to ascute. It differs from the latter just as a hair differs from a scale—namely, by owing its origin to an ingrowth of the epidermis instead of merely to a primitive outgrowth of the dermis.

The so-called teeth of the Lamprey are not true teeth, but are merely horny epidermal structures essentially similar to scales.

In the origin of a true tooth a process of the epiblastic layer of the mouth—the buccal cpithelium—grows into the subjacent dermis, and, assuming a cup-like form (with the concavity of the cup turned away from the epithelial surface of the mouth), a dermal papilla rises into the cup. The apex of this papilla then superficially calcifies into dentine, and becomes invested with a layer of enamel formed from the immediately adjacent surface of the epidermic cup or ‘‘ enamel organ.” An investment of connective tissue called the dental capsule becomes formed round the whole. The dentine then increases, a remnant of the papilla remaining as the “‘ pulp.” The young tooth gradually approaches the buccal surface, and the base of the papilla becomes formed into the root or fang of the tooth. The enamel organ does not descend so far, but only invests the crown of the tooth. The inner layer of the capsule, however, investing the fang gives rise to a third dental tissue known as the cement. A bud may or may not be given off from the developing tooth to serve as its future successor.

Thus teeth are normally both epiblastic and mesoblastie struc- tures, but in certain Fishes they line parts of the throat (the branchial arches), the superficial membrane of which is derived from the hypoblast, and such may of course be considered as hypoblastic skeletal elements, and, thus considered, must be reckoned as constituting a separate category of teeth.

Such being the various kinds of dense structures which enter into the composition of the Vertebrate exoskeleton, each kind may be developed to a greater or less extent in different groups of Vertebrate animals.

Huemplifications of Epidermal Skeletal Parts.

Scales entirely clothe the bodies of most Lizards and Snakes and the legs of Birds. In Tortoises and Turtles they take the form of large plates, which in one species are known as tortoise-shell. The

shape and size of scales are made great use of as distinctive characters for classification. Sce Repriues. The scales of a Serpent are held together by their epidermic investment in such a way that it and they are cast off as one whole each time the animal effects that process known as changing its skin. In the Rattle- snakes curiously modified thickenings of epidermis surrounding the end of the tail are not cast off but continue partially adherent ; as growth proceeds and successive castings of the skin take place, these ring-like thickenings become numerous, and so knock one against the other, when the end of the tail is vibrated, as to pro- duce a singular sound—the so-called rattling of the system of rings or “taitle:”

Hairs form the characteristic clothing of the class Jfammalia, though certain Mammals, such as Whales and Porpoises in their adult condition, are naked. Man is quite exceptional in having the ventral surface of the body more hairy than its dorsum. Long hair on the head, and whiskers and beard, are variable human characters, also possessed by some Apes; and many animals —as the Lion, the Horse, the Aardvark, &c.—have long hair in one or other region of the body. Some hairs may be especially thickened and serve as feelers, as in the ‘‘vibrisse” or ‘swhiskers”’ of the Cat tribe. But the maximum of development is shown in such creatures as the Hedgehog and the Porcupine, where hairs beconie dense and solid spines.

Nails do not exist in the class of Fishes and rarely in that of Batrachians. They first make their appearance in the most simple form—that is, in the form of slight thickenings of the epidermis— at the ends of the digits in certain Toads and of one kind of Eft. ‘A nail is at its maximum of development when it quite surrounds and encloses the last or end bone of the digit which bears it. Such nails exist in Horses, Oxen, &c., and are called hoofs. A nail when produced into a sharp point is called a claw,—as in the familiar case of the Cat, and also in Birds. Nails may, how- ever, be much reduced in size and not nearly extend to the end of the digits which support them, as in the Sea Bears. They may be altogether wanting, even in

Mammals, as in the Porpoise, or attain a prodigious relative size, so that the body can be suspended by them in progression, as in the Sloth.

Nail-like structures may be developed from the side of the hand, as in certain Birds (¢.g., Palamedea), which are said to be “ spur- winged,” and in a Maminal (Ornithorhynchus) a hollow horny spur grows upon each ankle.

In the Rhinoceros we meet with a horn, or two horns, which grow up from the dorsum of the muzzle like a great blunt nail, long dermal papille extending into it and answering to the dermal ridges beneath a true nail, In Owen’s Chameleon no less than three long horns are developed—one from the nose and a sym- metrical pair from the front of the head.

Other horns which do possess bony cores are developed from the head in pairs on the so-called hollow-horned Ruminants, ¢.¢., the Oxen, Autelopes, Goats, and Sheep; and only in one anomalous form, the Prongbok (Anéilocapra), are these horny structures shed at intervals ; in the rest they persist throughout life. Normally there is never more than one pair amidst existing Ruminants, with the exception of the Four-horned Antelope, which has two pairs. Such horns may be straight or curved or spirally twisted, but they are never branched, with the single exception of the Prongbok.

Sharp-edged, overlapping, horny plates (each of which is com- parable with a nail) may be developed beneath the proximal part of the tail, as in the curious Rodent Anomalurus. Such plates may clothe the entire body, head, limbs, and tail, as in the scaly Manis or Pangolin.

The epidermis and epithelium which respectively line the out- side and inside of the jaws may both be converted into horn, forming a small beak which may be composed of a number of close-set processes and may be temporary, as in the Tadpole, or permanent, as in the Siren. Larger and denser structures of a similar kind form the beak of Birds and of the Turtle and of that most exceptional Mammal, the Ornithorhynchus.

The epithelium within the mouth may be locally cornified, forming horny teeth which have, as before mentioned, rather the nature of scales—as in the suctorial mouth of the Lamprey.

In certain Beasts, as the Cow and the Sheep, the front edentulous part of the upper jaw is invested by a horny epithelial pad against which the teeth of the front of the lower jaw bite. A much more developed structure is met with in the Dugong. The front of both jaws is furnished with a dense horny plate formed like the horn of the Rhinoceros, though of course widely different in shape. But the maximum development of this kind of structure is found in the Whalebone Whales. The upper jaw in these is furnished with very numerous horny plates, termed baleen, which hang down from the palate along each side of the mouth. They thus form two longitudinal serics, each plate of which is placed transversely to the long axis of the body, and all are very close together. ‘The outer edge of each plate is entire, but its inner edge gives forth numerous hair-like processes. These are some of the constituent fibres of the horny plates which thus, as it were, fray

out and line the sides of the buccal cavity with a network of countless fibres formed by the inner edges of the two series of plates. This network acts as a sort of sieve, allowing water to escape between the plates but retaining in the mouth the smal] creatures on which the whale feeds.

Cornifications of the tongue may exist. Thus in some Birds as in Woodpeckers, the structure of its apical portion becomes 80 dense that it serves as a dart or spear. Its surface may be more or less cornified in Beasts. Thus it may be furnished all round with backwardly-pointing spines, as in the Lesser Anteater (Tamandua), There may be a large horny papilla on each side of it, as in the Manatee or Ornithorhynchus, or there may be horny plates on the tongue, as in the Java Porcupine.

Horny structures also exist which cannot be considered as either epiblastic or mesoblastic, but must be hypoblastic in origin. Such are the horny linings of the stomachs or gizzards of Birds, and the similar lining of the stomach of the Great Anteater, Myrme- cophaga jubata.

Feathers are the universal and peculiar cutaneous appendages of Birds, and gencrally differ much in size in different parts of the body, long and strong feathers constituting the most conspicuous part of the wings and so-called ‘‘tails” of Birds. Feathers are implanted on the body neither in an irregular

nor in a uniform manner, but are aggregated together in different modes in different groups of Birds—each definite patch of implanted feathers bein called a feather tract. The arrangement of these tracts in a bin is called its ‘‘ pterylosis,” and serves amongst other characters to distinguish different groups of Birds one from another.

Exemplifications of Dermal Skeletal Parts.

Scutes. —True dermal ossifications are met with in some kinds of Mammals. Thus the Armadillos possess a very complete external dermal skeleton formed of small many-sided bony scutes, the margins of which are adjusted together, and which are differently aggregated—into transverse bands or into larger inflexible masses —in different species. In the extinct Glyptodon, the body was invested, from the neck to the root of the tail, with one such solid case.

In the Armadillos a horny epidermal skeleton is so adjusted to the bony case that the former is divisible into small scales corre- sponding with the several scutes. Amongst Reptiles, we find in the Tortoises and Turtles (¢.g., Emys, Testudo) a solid exoskeleton, the dorsal part of which is called the ‘‘ carapace, ” while the ventral portion is named the ‘‘plastron.” The former consists of a median series of scutes, to each side of which is annexed a series of lateral scutes which are more elongated transversely to the long axis of the animal’s body, and these three series are intimately united with subjacent portions of the internal skeleton. The carapace is completed by a series of smaller scutes, which surround it and are therefore called “marginal” scutes. The plastron consists of eight pairs of scutes and one azygous scute. In the Box-Tortoises the ends of this plastron are movable, and (the head and limbs of the animal being drawn in within the shell) can be applied to the ends of the carapace, so that all the soft parts can be completely enclosed within the dense exoskeleton. As in the Armadillos, the bony scutes are covered by epidermal scales, some of which have been already referred to as constituting “ tortoise shell.” Unlike the Armadillos, however, the segments of the epidermal and dermal skeletons do not correspond. The dorsal scales are much larger and less numerous than are the scutes, but, while the scutes of the plastron are but nine in number, it has twelve horny plates or large scales.

Amongst the Amphibia certain Frogs (¢.g., Ephippifer and Ceratophrys) develop dorsal osseous scutes, and these, as in the Tortoises, are more or less united with parts of the subjacent internal skeleton. r

A solid skeleton of juxtaposed osseous scutes may exist in Fishes, as in the Bony Pike Lepidosteus, where the scutes are enamelled and united by a peg-and-socket articulation. Polyplerus also has an investment of bony scutes, and in the extinct fish Pterichthys they were developed into large plates on both the dorsal and ventral surfaces of the body. The Sharks and Rays may have their scutes thickly distributed over the surface of the body, but quite small. A skin so furnished is called “shagreen.” ‘They may also be larger and fewer, and placed far apart, with elegant patterns on their exposed surfaces; or they may take the form of strong defensive spines. In the Sturgeon the scutes are arrange in rows along the body, separated from each other by softer portions of integument.

In the ordinary bony Fishes, or Teleostet, the scutes (commonly but erroneously called “ scales”) are differently calcified from the scutes of Sharks, and may have their free projecting magi» smooth, when they are described as eyeloid, or in toothed-like processes, when they are termed ctenoid; or they may be inter- mediate between these two types of form. ‘The Teleostean scutes are generally separate, but they may coalesce to form a connected

Abt

SK EE ? ON

solid investment, as in Ostracion and the Seahorses (Lophobranchit), or develop strong projecting spines, as in Diodon.

Fishes have two other very important exoskeletal structures, whieh may be bony or cartilaginous. One set of these structurcs consists of filamentary processes, which may be either horny or calcareous, and which support the skin of the fins, whether those of the back, belly, and tail, or those of the limbs ; such structures are termed “ fin-rays.” The other set consists of bony or cartilagin- ous hard parts, which serve to support tlie fin-rays, which therefore lie more deeply, or at least are less projecting, and are commonly

termed “interspinous bones or cartilages,” but which may be con- veniently distinguished as radials; they are very important elements of the fins of Elasmobranchs.

Certain Siluroid fishes exhibit in the adjustment of portions of their dermal exoskeleton an altogether peculiar mode of articula- tion, called a shackle joint. This is in the form of a dermal scute articulated with a superposed spine. The scute has an osseous ring on its dorsal surface, and through this passes another osseous ring which forms part of the base of the superimposed spine.

In conuexion with dermal scutes and spines may be mentioned those familiar yet exceptional structures, the bony horns of Ungu- lates. In the Oxen, Goats, and their allies horns exist on the head as bony cores, persisting throughout life, and supporting those “hollow horns” before noticed amongst the epidermal or epiblastic parts of the exoskeleton. As is the case with the scutes of Chelo- uians, these bony parts are intimately united with subjacent parts of the true endoskeleton. In the Giraffe there are three such bony prominences, which arise as distinct ossificatious, and only later anchylose with the skull. These are the Giraffe’s pair of short horns, together with the median prominence in front of them. In the Deer we find bony antlers, which are shed annually and are destitute of any horny covering. Antlers may exist in both sexes, as in the Reindeer, but generally they are present in the males only. They arise as soft highly vascular prominences, and when fully grown become hardened by calcareous deposit. In some months the investing skin dries up and is got rid of; and the horn itself falls off after the breeding season, leaving a stump whence a new antlcr shoots forth again in the following year. Antlers, as a rule, are branched—more so as the individual becomes older, till maturity is attained. Some Deer have enormous antlers, weighing as much as 70 Ib, and formed at the rate of 1 tb a day.

Tecth.—The differences in structure, number, form, and develop- ment of the dental organs are so great that they cannot here be treated of. See vol. vii. pp. 232 sq.; also vol. xv. pp. 349 sq.

INTERNAL SKELETON OF VERTEBRATA.

The most essential part of the Vertebrate internal

skeleton is the spinal column, the foundation of which is laid by a temporary or permanent structure called the notochord or chorda dorsalis. At the anterior end of the spinal column there is almost always a solid structure known as the cranium or skull, to which mandibular, hyoidean, and branchial arches may or may not be attached. The spinal column may be divisible into cervical, thoracic, lumbar, sacral, and caudal portions, and may have pro- cesses projecting from it upwards, downwards, or laterally, with arches of varying extent, as neural arches, chevron bones, and ribs, together with a median ventral portion— the sternum. The whole of these parts taken together constitute the axial skeleton. This may exist alone if the body is limbless, but otherwise additional hard struc- tures are found which together constitute the appendicular skeleton. _ Vertebrate animals never have more than two pairs of limbs, and each pair is attached to the body by the help of certain skeleton elements termed a limb-girdle, diverg- Ing from which are the hard parts which constitute the skeleton of either “appendage” or “limb.” In addition to these we find in Fishes certain azygous structures —the unpaired fins,—the osseous or cartilaginous supports of which must be reckoned as a part of the appendicular skeleton. With the occasional (or possibly constant) exception of the notochord, the whole Vertebrate internal skeleton is a mesoblastic structure. In the great majority of the Vertebrata the skeleton is more or less bony, but it always in part consists of cartilaginous and fibrous structures,

The number and nature of the solid parts vary with

TOS

age in the same species. When, in the earlier stages of existence, the process of ossification has once begun, it goes on more or less rapidly till maturity is attained, and is continued, to a certain extent, throughout the whole of life.

The points at which bone formation begins and whence it radiates are termed “ centres of ossification,” and there may be one, two, or several of these in what is ultimately to become a single bone. Sometimes these “ centres” have an important morphological significance, and in other

instances they would seem to be determined by the size of the future structure! Bones are classed as “cartilage bones ” or ‘“‘membrane bones” according as they are formed either through the previous formation of a cartilage which subsequently ossifies or directly from membrane without the intervention of cartilage. These two classes can generally be easily distinguished, but there are instances in which it would seem that what is really the same corresponding bone differs as to its mode of origin in different animals. Moreover, a compound bone, formed of a membrane bone and a cartilage bone intimately united, may come to lose either its cartilaginous or its membranous elements, and thus further difficulties of interpretation may arise. There are also cases (as in the carapace of Chelonians) in which exoskeletal dermal bones coalesce with subjacent bones of the endoskeleton. Such bones may become deeper in position as development advances, and there is reason to think that not a few bones ordinarily reckoned as parts of the endoskeleton are of dermal origin, and first appeared in ancestral forms as placoid scutes or dermal spines.

As the development of the skeleton proceeds, ossification tends to fuse together more and more bones which at their first appearance were separate and distinct. This is notably the case in warm-blooded animals, and is most noteworthy in the warmest-blooded class—that of Birds.

Besides the coalescence of distinct bones, another fusion of bony structures occurs. This is due to the fact that the ends, or projecting portions, of what are essentially and ultimately one bone may for a time persist as distinct bony parts, termed “ epiphyses.” Thus, in the case of Man, the ends of the long bones of the limbsare at first separate from the main part (or shaft) of each long bone, and do not become continuous with the latter till the human frame has nearly attained maturity.

The hard parts of the internal skeleton, being those which as a framework support the body, form points of attachment for the muscles which move the body,—such hard parts being used as either levers or fulcra, as the case may be. ‘The great majority of the bones are thus in- tended to move one upon another. The contiguous surfaces of bones form “joints,” which may be immovable, mixed, or movable. The bones of the skull are united by immovable joints, called “sutures.” Joints are said to be mixed when the

motion allowed is exceedingly slight, as when two bones are allowed to be slightly separated from each other by the intervention of a softer substance which is attached to both. We have examples of movable joints in the human neck, the two uppermost bones of which are articulated on the principle of a pivot ; in the elbow, which forms a hinge ; and in the shoulder, where the upper arm joins the shoulder-blade in a ball and socket joint.

If one convex articulating surface be globular, it is termed a head; if it be elongated, it is called a condyle. If either of these is borne upon a narrow portion of bone, this latter is called a neck; if a pulley-like surface is formed by such a juxtaposition of two condyles as to leave a depression between them, such an articular surface is named a trochlea.

The curious and exceptional arrangement termed a

1 Balfour's Comparative Embryology, vol. ii. p. 448.

shackle joint has been already noticed under the head of "Scutes." AXIAL SKELETON.

The whole axial skeleton—including both the cranium and the spinal skeleton—apart from the notochord, is formed from the mesoblastic tissue bordering the medullary groove of the embryo. As the essential part of the axial skeleton is the spinal column, so the essential foundation of this column itself is what is known as the "notochord." This is an elongated cylindrical rod of soft tissue running along the antero-posterior axis of the body immediately subjacent to the central portion of the nervous system. Its mode of origin from the germ-layers of the embryo has yet to be finally determined. It is said by Balfour? to be developed, in most if not all cases, as an axial differentia- tion of the hypoblast. The cells of the notochord form a tissue resembling cartilage, and it becomes surrounded by a more or less dense fibrous sheath. Such an organ is found to exist, temporarily or permanently, in certain lower creatures—Ascidians—which in most other respects widely differ from Vertebrate animals. Some few of these animals are furnished with a tail throughout the whole of life, while others are

furnished with such an organ only in their larval or immature condition. It is alone in such permanent or temporary tail, and not in the body of As- cidians, that a structure of this kind is met with.

In every Vertebrate animal the notochord is the first part of the skeleton to appear, and it extends throughout the whole length of the body, as well as of the tail. In every such animal, except the Lancelet (Amphiowus), it becomes arrested anteriorly in the midst of that second- arily formed skeletal region which becomes the skull. In Amphioxus, however, in which no skull is ever formed, the notochord extends to quite the anterior end of the body. It is enclosed in a strong sheath, within which its substance is segmented so as to resemble a longitudinal series of coins* or counters. The only other representatives of the internal skeleton in this animal are—(1) longitudinal ligaments (strengthening the sheath of the notochord above and below); (2) fibrous septa which pass out laterally from it between the muscles of the body, to the fibres of which they give attachment; (3) a longitudinal membranous sheath of the central part of the nervous system, forming an elongated antero-posteriorly directed cylinder above the notochord ; (4) two vertical septa,— one dorsal, ascending medianly from such neural sheath, and one ventral, descending medianly from the sheath of the notochord in the region of the tail; (5) two jointed cartilaginous filaments which lie one on each side of the longitudinal slit which serves the lancelet for a mouth; and (6) certain cartilaginous filaments which strengthen the sides of the branchial cavity between the intervening vertical fissures of the walls of that cavity.

In all other Vertebrate animals the axial skeleton is divis- ible into that of the head, or the cranial skeleton, and that of the axial skeleton behind the head, or the spinal skeleton.

Spinal Skeleton.

In all Vertebrate animals except the Lancelet, the axial skeleton is complicated by a longitudinal series of addi- tional hard parts—cartilaginous or osseous—which serve to protect the spinal cord, or marrow, above it, or the great blood-vessels beneath it, and which hard parts support, encroach upon, or replace the notochord itself. Neverthe- less, the notochord persists throughout the whole of life in certain Fishes both of the

lowest and highest types of piscine organization, but it does not persist in its entirety in any adult Vertebrate which is not a Fish.

1 Comparative Embryology, vol. ii. p. 449. 2 Owen's Anatomy of Vertebrates, vol. i. p. 81.

SKEEEH TOS

In the Lamprey the notochord persists, but a longitudinal series of small, similarly shaped cartilages strengthen the sides of the more anterior part of the membranous dorsal canal which encloses the spinal marrow. In the Chimera these are more developed, while numerous circular cal cifications appear in the notochordal sheath. In the most anterior part of the trunk the cartilaginous elements unite to form a continuous investment of the notochord, Amongst the Ganoid Fishes, the notochord persists un-constricted and cylindrical in the Sturgeon and _ the Lepidosiren, but cartilaginous or bony parts appear about it and form a longitudinal series of arches above and below it for the protection respectively of the spinal marrow and sub-vertebral blood-vessels. In different kinds of Sharks further complications arise, and the notochord becomes encroached upon, in different modes, by chondri- fication and calcification, till it becomes segmented by the intervention of a series of thus formed hard parts called "bodies" or 'centra," between which relics of the notochord still remain. By this process of segmentation there come to be formed what are called vertebra, tlie presence of which in the overwhelming majority of Fishes, as well as in all the higher classes of animals, has led to the whole group being called Vertebrata.

In the vertebres of most Vertebrates we have a solid body or centrum, from the dorsum of which there arises on each of its two sides a neural plate, which then bends inwards to meet its fellow of the opposite side, thus form-ing an arch (the neural arch) for the protection of the spinal cord, or marrow, which passes through it. From the dorsal side of such neural arch a process called the neural spine very commonly ascends. From the sides of the centrum or neural arch, or of both, a single process, or two superimposed processes, may jut outwards, which are known as the transverse process or processes, to which the ribs are generally articulated when ribs are present. Inferiorly directed processes, single or double, may

descend from beneath the centrum, or may be developed in the intervals between adjacent centra, and are generally related to the protection of large blood: vessels, though they may only serve for muscular attach- ment.

Adjacent vertebrae are commonly connected together by special modifications of the neural arches or the centra, or of both. Mostly the opposed margins of the neural arches develop special processes for attachment called articular processes or zygapopliyses, and there may be additional interarticulations. ‘There may be as few as ten or as many as four hundred vertebree.

Vertebree may be divisible, as in the highest animals, into five categories : —(1) cervical, or those of the neck; (2) dorsal, or those of the back ; (3) lumbar, or those of the loins; (4) sacral, or those with which the pelvic limbs are connected; and (5) caudal, or those which are posterior to the sacral vertebrae, or which support the tail when such an organ is present. There may be only two categories (dorsal and caudal), as in Fishes.

In most Fishes and some exceptional Reptiles the body or centrum of each vertebra is so imperfectly ossified as to remain biconcave or amphiccelous, —that is to say, lb presents a deeply concave cup-like form both in front and behind. The space thus enclosed by the adjoining cups of each pair of successive vertebrae is filled up by 4 soft, spheroidal remnant of the notochord, which thus serves as an intermediate connecting substance. ‘The cups may become filled up by ossification, as in Man and Beasts, the flattened surfaces being connected by what are called inter- vertebral disks. Each such disk is made of fibrous lamelle which surround a soft elastic central portion which 1s 4 last remnant of the notochord. Often the vertebrae may

have the centrum very convex at one end and very concave at the other, and so give rise to a ball-and-socket joint at each junction between the successive centra. Such yertebrie may be proccelous (¢.e., have the cup in front and the ball behind), as in existing Crocodiles, or opisthoccelous (ue, with the cup behind and the ball in front), as in the Bony Pike Fish (Lepidosteus), the Land Salamander, and the cervical vertebrae of

Ruminants ; sometimes a vertebra may be biconvex (ue, have a ball at each end of its centrum), as in the first caudal vertebra of the Crocodile ; or, very rarely, there may be two prominences, or the cups may exist side by side on one surface of a centrum, as in some cervical vertebrae of Chelonians. Instead of intervertebral disks, with spheroidal remnants of the notochord, adjacent vertebrae are often (as in Snakes) united by what are called synovial sacs, or membranous closed bags containing an albuminous fluid called “synovia” and commonly known as “joint-oil.”

The various parts of a vertebra may be all united to form one single bone, as is generally the case in the higher animals, but such is by no means universally the case. In the Ichthyosaurus we find the neural arch permanently distinct from the centrum; and in the Carp the transverse processes are separate. The neural arch itself may be inade up of two separate pieces on each side, as in some Elasmobranch Fishes, ¢.g., Raia and Spinaz.

Sometimes the neural arch, instead of reposing upon 1ts own centrum only, appears, as it were, shifted so as to be connected with two adjacent centra, as is the case, e.g., with the dorsal vertebree of Tortoises.

Generally the nerves which pass outwards from the spinal marrow which lies in the neural canal pass out in the intervals between adjacent neural arches. Instead of this, however, they sometimes perforate the neural arch.

Neural spines, though generally single, may be double or altogether absent, and sometimes, as in Tortoises, they may intimately coalesce with superimposed dermal plates.

Cervical Vertebre.—As has been already indicated, no vertebrae can be distinguished as cervical in the class of Fishes. Never- theless the first three or four vertebra next the head may, in some of these animals, present a marked difference from the succeeding vertebre, being much elongated and united to each other by suture, as in Fistularia and Bagrus, and they may, as in the latter Fish, develop a continuous inferior vascular canal. The second and third vertebree may form a hollow bladder-like case of bone, as in Cobitis, or send outwards or downwards special processes, as in the Carp.

In Amphibians only a single vertebra can be called cervical, but in Sauropsidans the number may be very large. Thus in the Swan itamounts to twenty-five, while in some of the Plesiosaurians it exceeded forty. Birds, being animals which have to perform with the beak functions which in most animals are performed by limbs, require to have a very movable neck; and consequently a considerable number of joints (and therefore of vertebre) are required in the neck, which is the only part of the spinal column that is very flexible. In Serpents, which have the whole spinal column very flexible, no really satisfactory line can be drawn between cervical and dorsal vertebre. In Lizards there are usually from seven to nine, but in the whole class of Mammals (whether the neck be very long, as in the Giraffe, or, like that of the Porpoise, extremely short) there are constantly but seven cervical Vertebree, except in the Slotls, which may have from nine to six, the Manatee, which has but six, and the Manis, which may have eight. All the cervical vertebres may become anchylosed together into a single mass, as usually iri the true Whales. Ordinarily in Mammals the transverse process is said to be perforated, 7.c., there are two such on each side, which are short and connected at their distal ends by a bony bridge which represents what, in the thorax, ad as a rib, as is shown by their condition in other classes of

ertebrates. Indeed in the lowest Mammals (Zehidna and Or- mithorhynchus) these osseous bridges have the form of distinct, more or less Y-shaped bones, as also in the Crocodile, where they are much prolonged. In many Lizards and Birds the posterior cervical vertebre bear long ribs, and are only counted as cervical ae such tibs do not reach the breast bone, while more pos-

erlorly placed ribs do attain it. The two superimposed transverse Processes, with the rib joining them attached to succecding vertebra, cmon each side of the neck a sort of bony canal in which runs

the vertebral artery. Sometimes, however, as in the Camels and Llamas, this canal is replaced by one excavated in the neural arches. In some Cetaceans the external bar (or rudimentary rib) is wanting, so that there come to be two elongated transverse pro- cesses on each side.

Successive cervical vertebre may differ strikingly one from another. Thus in the common Kuropean Terrapin we find the fourth cervical vertebra with its centrum convex in front and concave behind. The centrum of the fifth is biconvex. That of the sixth is concave in front with a double convexity behind. The seventh is doubly convex both in front and behind. The eighth is doubly concave at each end. The ninth is donbly convex in front and singly so behind.

The first cervical vertebra is known as the atlas, and joins the skull, which in Mau it supports. It may be fused in one solid mass with the skull, as in the Sturgeon, or with a certain number of vertebre, as in the Rays. It may be united by suture, as in Bagrus. The vertebral part of the atlas may be unossified, as in the Wombat, or remain a distinct bone, as in the Thylacine. The neural spine may be detached from the neural arch, as in the Crocodile and Tunny. Its ventral part may send out a pointed process towards the head, asin Amphiwma. It may develop two concave surfaces to articulate with the skull, as in Amphibians and Mammals, or only a single cup, as in Sauropsidans generally.

The second cervical vertebra is known as the axis, and is dis- tinguishable in all Vertebrates above the Ichthyopsida. Its centrum develops anteriorly a special peg-like or tooth-like pro- ininence known as the odontoid process, round which the head and atlas vertebra turn as on a pivot. This process may (as in many Reptiles and in the Ornithorhynchus amongst Mammals) remain a distinct bone, and is regarded as the true centrum of the atlas, which thus generally coalesces into the axis vertebra instead of with the other portions of its own vertebra. The odontoid process may be absent in certain Mammals, as amongst Cetaceans,

Dorso-Lumbar Vertebre. —The vertebrae which come between the cervical vertebrae and those (sacral) which support the pelvic limbs, or, when these latter are absent, the vertebra between the cervical and the caudal vertebrae, form the vertebra of the trunk. These are subdivisible into dorsal and lumbar when some of them (always the more auterior) bear ribs and others do not but have transverse processes only, |

The number of trunk (or dorso-lumbar) vertebrex varies greatly, being very few in Frogs and Tortoises and very numerous in Serpents. In Mammals it

ranges from about seventeen, in some Primates, to twenty-seven, in Hyrax. A definite number of trunk vertebre is characteristic of certain groups of Mammals, though this number may be made up by different numbers of dorsal and lumbar vertebree.

Dorsal Vertebrx.—Rib-bearing vertebre are structures constantly found in all Vertebrate animals save certain Fishes and Amphibians. Dorsal vertebrae must be considered as including the whole number of trunk vertebre in Serpents, since in those animals the whole series of the latter support ribs.

An ordinary Mammaliau dorsal vertebra consists of a body and neural arch with articular processes or zygapophyses and with a more or less elongated neural spine, and a transverse process which juts out and bears an articular surface at its end. This process answers to the more dorsal of each pair of transverse pro- cesses on each side of a cervical vertebra. Another articular surface placed at about the junction of the neural arch and centrum answers to the more ventral of each pair of transverse processes on each side of a cervical vertebra.

The rib which on each side of the vertebra articulates with these two surfaces has generally itself such a surface at its prox- imal end (or head) and another on a inore or less marked promi- nence called the tubercle of the rib. These are respectively designated the capitulum and tuberculum, and therefore the pro- cesses or articular surfaces of the vertebra to which the capitulum and tuberculum are respectively attached arc called the capitular and tubercular processes or surfaces, as the case may be.

Sometimes each vertebra carries but one such articular surface (that for the capitulum of the ribs), as in the Dolphin. The two articular surfaces may co-exist at different levels on one single process, as in the dorsal vertebra: of the Crocodile, or they may be in close apposition, and, as it were, fused together, as in Serpents. They may, however, be supported by two quite distinct processes —one dorsal, the other ventral,—as in Jchthyosaurus and Meno- branchus.

Man has twelve dorsal vertebre. This is a little below the average of his class, where there may be twenty-four, as in the Two- toed Sloth. There are more than twelve in inmost Reptiles, while in Birds there are mostly but

seven to nine, or, very rarely, eleven, while there may, as in Ciconia alba, be but three reckoned as dorsal on account of the great extent of ossification in the sacrum or part connected with the legs.

The most remarkable modification of dorsal vertebre is that in Tortoises and Turtles, where the neural spines expand at their

LZ

summits into wide plates which articulate by suture with each other and with similarly expanded ribs, to form the carapace.

In Serpents and Iguanas we have a special mode of vertebral interarticulation, over and above that formed by the zygapophyses. The neural arch develops a median auterior prominence with two articular surfaces called the zygosphene, and this fits into a corre- sponding median posterior recess called the zygantrum.

The maximum of complication as regards the interarticulation of dorsal vertebra is found in the last dorsal of the Great ‘Anteater. There each posterior zygapophysis develops two additional articular surfaces, oue on each side of a notch which receives a process from the anterior side of the neural arch of the succeeding vertebra, which process is furnished with two corresponding surfaces. More or less distinct traces of certain additional processes, called met- apophyses and anapophyses, are sometimes present, but these it will be better to notice when describing the lumbar vertebra, wherein they are more developed.

We find in some Serpents peculiar processes which project down- wards and forwards from the base of the inner side of the transverse processes. We may also find present a long median inferior pro- cess extending vertically from the ventral surface of the centrum and as long as, or longer than, the neural spine of the same vertebra. Such processes are present in many Serpents—especially the poisonous ones—and in such Birds as the Penguin and Cormorant.

Lumbar Vertebrs.—These are vertebree interposed between the dorsal vertebre and the sacrum; they are generally the largest vertebrae of each

vertebral column, but sometimes (as in Bats and Pterodactyles) the cervical vertebre are yet larger. Lumbar vertebre are generally to be distinguished in Mammals, in Croco- diles, and in certain Lizards, but not in any Ichthyopsidan.

In Birds lumbar vertebre are present, but are disguised and hidden by the extent to which the sacral ossification extends for- wards,

There are five lumbar vertebra in Man, but the number in him is below the average of his class, though some Apes have but four. The Slow Lemur may have nine, the Two-toed Sloth has but three, and the Monotremes but two. ‘These vertebrae are very numerous in the Cetacea, but the hinder limit of the lumbar region is more or less difficult to determine in these animals. The transverse processes are generally much longer than those of the dorsal vertebre, and do not bear either capitular or tubercular arti- cular surfaces.

The processes already spoken of as metapophyses and anapophyses are generally much more developed in the lumbar than in the dorsal vertebre. The former project forwards from the vicinity of the anterior zygapophyses, and the latter project backwards at a lower level. Both processes are to be detectcd in the last dorsal and first lumbar vertebre of Man, but are at their maximum in the Armadillos, In addition, also, to the complexity of articula- tion before described as existing on the last dorsal vertebra of the Great Anteater, we find in that animal’s lumbar region an addi- tional articular surface on each side of each transverse process.

The lumbar vertebree may be anchylosed together and to other parts of the skeleton, as is the case in Birds.

Sacral Vertebree.—These are distinguished from others, not only by their connexion with the skeleton of the pelvic limbs, but also by their coalescence and a certain degradation in their structure as compared with the trunk and cervical vertebre. In Man five vertebrex thus coalesce to form the more or less triangular single bone known as the sacrum, but which always shows plain traces of its composite nature. Such coalescence and degradation generally exist in Vertebrates above the Ichthyopsida, which possess fully developed limbs. The coalescence of vertebre is gencrally less extensive than in Man, though sometimes—as in Birds, some Edentates,

and some Reptiles—it is much greater. The sacrum may be coinposed of as many as ten vertebre (as in some Arma- dillos) or of twenty (as in the Ostrich), and the lumbar or caudal vertebre or both contribute to its formation.

In most if not all Mammals the sacral vertebre—or the more anterior of them—have what are at first distinctly ossified elements in their transverse processes, which elements (like parts before noticed in the cervical vertebrae) are costal in their nature, 2.¢., represent rudimentary ribs, and in Crocodiles and Tailed Amphibians the sacral vertebre have a distinct rudimentary rib attached to each transverse process. In Birds, however, the vertebre of the sacrum, which have expanded transverse processes, do not develop these from distinct ossifications.

As regards the extent of connexion between the sacrum and the hip bones, union is more extensive in Man than in most Beasts, or in animals below Birds. Often in Mammals and almost always in Tailed Batrachians it may be confined to a single vertebra ; but ten vertebre may be involved in this union in Mammals and twenty in Birds.

That the development of the sacrum is not always in proportion to that of the pelvic limbs is proved by the little Lizard Seps, in which, in spite of the rudimentary condition of the limbs, there are true sacral vertebra.

SKELETOR

No Fishes have a true sacrum, though, very rarely, as in the Tur. bot, we meet with a kind of false sacrum, formed by the anchylosis of the bodies and ventral spines of the first two caudal vertebra,

Caudal Vertebre.—The vertebre of the tail may be as many as 270, as in some Sharks. Amongst Mammals 48 (Microgale longi- caudata) is the highest uuimber. Man has usually rudimentary caudal vertebre, completely or partially united so as to form a small conical bone called the coccyx. Its proximal end articulates with the sacrum by its centrum and two small zygapophyses. lt has besides two rudimentary transverse processes and two processes representing piers of the absent neural arch. The other vertebra are destitute of processes and consist but of smaller and smaller vertebral

centra. Thus the last vertebra is the very opposite of the first (or atlas), being all centrum, while the atlas has no centrum at all. The coccyx usually becomes anchylosed to the sacrum about or after the middle of life. The caudal region is still more reduced in some Bats, where there may be but two such vertebre.

In animals provided with numerous coccygeal vertebre, such

vertebrae may be provided with processes and articulations as

complex as those of other spinal regious. Transverse processes may be largely developed at the tail root, but almost always thence backwards diminish in extent; sometimes, however, as in the Armadillo (Chlamydophorus), they may increase in size backwards from the tail root. Rarely (as, ¢g., in Menobranchus) caudal

vertebrae may be furnished with two ribs supported by both

tubercular and capitular processes. Inferior arches may exist in the form of detached "‘ chevron bows ” placed beneath the intervals of successive caudal vertebre, especially toveards the tail root. They may be represented by processes or by continuously ossified inferior arches, which may, as in the Flat Fishes, be very prolonged, extend- ing downwards from cach centrum as much as the neural arch and spine extend upwards from it.

Birds have generally six or eight, but may have ten, caudal vertebra, at the end of which is a so-called ‘‘ ploughshare-bone," consisting of two or more vertebrae anchylosed together.

The caudal region of the Frog is formed in a very peculiar way. It never consists of distinct vertebre at any time of life, but is formed by the ossification of the membrane which surrounds the notochord, to which two small neural arches become attached. This structure is called the urostyle.

In Fishes (as in the Perch and Stickleback) there may bea urostyle continuous with the centrum of the last vertebra. Such a urostyle, unlike that of the Frog, is very sharply bent upwards. It is very small and inconspicuous. In other Fishes the hinder part of the notochord may (as in

the Salmon) remain unossified and only pro- tected by lateral bony plates, but it is still sharply bent upwards. In a few Fishes (as, ¢g., Polyptcrus) the hinder end of the spinal column is not bent upwards. In other Fishes again (as in the Sturgeon and many Sharks) the hinder end of the vertebral column gradually tapers and gradually (not suddenly as in the Perch and Salinon) inclines upwards. In the forms in which the hinder end of the vertebral column bends upwards—whether gradually or suddenly—the arches and processes beneath its hinder end exceed in size those on the dorsal side of it, as also do the fin-rays attached to them. Thus it happens that the part of the caudal fin which is on the ventral side of the gradually or suddenly bent-up part of the spinal column more or less greatly exceeds in size the part on the dorsal side. In those Sea Fishes (c.g., the Sturgeon and many Sharks) in which the upward flexion is gradual and manifest, the ventral part of the caudal fin is evidently the larger, and such a tail is called Acterocercal. In Fishes in which the hinder end of the spinal column is suddenly bent up and of minute size, so that its real condition is disguised, the caudal fin appears symmetrical and as if the parts dorsal and ventral to the end of the spinal column were equal. Such a condition has been named homocercal. Those Fishes in which the spinal column ends without turning upwards, and in which the parts of the caudal fin dorsal and ventral to it are really and not only apparently symmetrical, are said to be diphycercal.

Sternum.—The breastbone or sternum extends more or less along the middle line of the ventral region of the anterior part of the trunk in all Vertebrates above Fishes, except Serpents and a few other Reptiles.

Almost always it is connected with the more anterior ribs. Its anterior end is distinguished as the manubrium or presternum, and its hinder is called the xiphoid process or xiphisternum—the middle part being the “ body” or mesosternum. A sternum may exist without ribs, or without forming any cartilaginous or osseous connexion with ribs, asinthe Amphibia. The plastron of Chelonians might well be supposed to be a great sternum, more especially as the plate-like ribs are connected with it. It appears, however, that this great complex plate does not really include a sternum.

The before-mentioned threefold division of the sternum ‘s normal in Mammals, and also exists, though more obscurely, in Birds and Reptiles. Even in Mammals it is not universal; the manubrium only may be present, as in the Greenland Whale, or the manubrium and xiphisternuin syithout any mesosternum, as in the Dugong.

In Tailed Amphibians and the Slow-Worm (Angus) we have a single sternum, which may be mesosternum only, while in many Frogs and Toads we have only the latter and the xiphisternum. The manubrium may develop a median keel, as in Bats, the Mole, and Armadillos; or the mesosternum, as in the Tamandua; or the mesosternum and xiphisternum, as in most Birds.

The xiphisternum may assume various forms, but attains its maximum development in Birds, where it forms the part of the sternum posterior to the attachment of the ribs, and may consist of a median and four lateral processes, as in the Fowl. It bears the greater part of the keel.

In the Monotremes there is a median ossicle in front of the manubrium, which is often called the episternum. It is really a part of the appendicular skeleton.

Ribs.—Mammals possess a greater or less number of ribs, which are mostly long, slender, curved bones, extending downwards from the transverse processes or bodies of the vertebra, the more anterior of them forming a junction with the sternum. The part of the skeleton formed by the rib-bearing vertebree, the ribs, and the sternum is called the thorax. In Man (see Anatomy) there are twelve ribs (on each side of the body), whereof the first seven join the sternum by the intervention of cartilages, and are called “true ribs.” The other five, which do not join the sternum, are called “false ribs.” Each rib (except the last two on each side) has a double attachment to the spinal column. At its proximal end it has a rounded “head” or “capitulum,” which articulates with the capitular surface of a dorsal vertebra. At a little distance from the capitulum is another rounded articular prominence called the “tubercle” or “‘tuberculum,” which joins a vertebral tubercular surface. The part of the rib between the head and the tubercle is called the “neck.” At its distal end each rib has attached to it an elongated cartilage called costal.” Those costal cartilages which do not join the sternum either end freely or blend with the costal cartilage next in advance.

Frogs and Toads have no ribs, nor can they be said to exist in some Fishes (¢.g., the Chimzra, the Seahorse, the Lamprey and its allies); but in the immense majority of Vertebrates there are cartilaginous or osseous ribs, attached by their proximal ends to the vertebral column, and tending to surround the trunk.

_All rib-bearing animals have both “true” and “ false” tibs, save Serpents, Fishes, and Chelonians, which cam have no true ribs since they have no sternum, and Tailed Amphi- bians, in which, though there is a sternum, no ribs join it. There may, however, be but a single pair of true ribs—as in the Whalebone Whales. The ribs are exceptionally broad in the Two-toed Anteater, where they overlap one another, The number of ribs has already been indicated under the head of “dorsal vertebree,” though in Birds we may have short ribs attached to the cervical vertebrae, and others coming from vertebrae which are generally counted as “sacral.” There may be as few as five or six pairs, as in Amphiuma ; or the numbers may reach 320, as in some Pythons. In many Reptiles, as in the Crocodiles, there may be cervical ribs; and there may even be caudal ribs, as in Menobranchus.

The function of aiding respiration is one which the ribs possess in the higher Vertebrata, but quite other purposes may be subserved by them in addition to, or instead of, respiratory action——namely, locomotion, change of form, or

bodily protection as armour. Thus the ribs may form a solid case for the safe keeping of the parts within, co-oper- ating in this office with other skeletal structures so as to form the “carapace” of Tortoises already noticed. Ribs may be the main agents in locomotion, as in Snakes, which glide along by the successive application to the ground of the edges of their ventral scales, which is brought about by the motions of the ribs, the ends of which are connected with the inner surface of such scales. In the little flying Lizard Draco certain much elongated ribs serve to support a parachute-like flying membrane, and in the Cobra it is certain ribs which sustain its “ hood” when distended.

The presence of a distinct “head” and “ tubercle” is a general but not constant character, and the head of the ribs may be connected with two vertebree or only with one vertebra. The ribs may bifurcate proximally into

two equal diverging branches, one representing the “head” and the other the “tubercle.” A small backwardly- projecting structure termed an “ uncinate process ” may be given off from the ribs and may ossify as a distinct bone, as in most Birds and in the Crocodile.

Sometimes (as in Monotremes and many Lizards) a third segment may be intercalated between a rib and its sternal cartilage, aud sternal cartilages may be represented by bones, as in Birds and Armadillos. In some Lizards the sternal cartilages of opposite ribs are continuous in the mid ventral line. There may be no representative of a sternal rib, as in Fishes and Batrachians.

Rarely, as in the Crocodile, there may be ventral rib-like structures in the wall of the abdomen, which meet and are attached ventrally, but are “free” at their dorsal ends. These cannot, however, be counted as true ribs. Fishes have often two series of ribs on each side of the body, and in Polypterus some vertebrae may have four ribs on either side. In Fishes the ribs may also be in part attachdd to the neural spines above or to the hemal spines below the vertebrae. :

Cranial Skeleton.

By the cranial skeleton we mean the skull, or that part of the axial skeleton which serves to shelter the brain (or anterior expanded end of the central part of the nervous system), together with solid structures continuous or more or less directly connected therewith. Such a structure exists in every Vertebrate animal, except the Amphioxus, which has no brain. Nothing of the kind is known to exist in any Ascidian or in any Invertebrate animal,—unless that cartilage of Cuttlefishes which serves as an investment of the nerve centres and a support for the optic and auditory organs may be deemed a true cranial skeleton, since its portions just enumerated make it, as we shall shortly see, very analogous to a true skull.

The cranial skeleton is, of course, at first composed entirely of soft mesoblastic tissue, parts of which always become cartilaginous and generally also osseous, while more or less of its structure may remain in the condition of mere membrane. The bones which generally, as just said, enter into its framework may arise directly in the membrane or may be preceded

by cartilage which ossifies, a circumstance which divides the cranial bones into two categories—‘‘ membrane bones” and “ cartilage bones.”

The cranial skeleton of Vertebrates is made up of three sets of parts :—(1) parts devoted to enclosing and protect- ing the brain; this is the cranium proper; (2) parts sheltering the organs of sense situated in the head—namely the optic, auditory, and olfactory capsules ; these skeletal parts consist of the bones, cartilages, and mem- branes of the orbit, the internal ear, and the nose respec- tively, or the perioptic, periotic, and perirhinal bones and cartilages ; (3) parts continuous or more or less directly

connected with the cranium, and applied to aid nutrition in the form of deglutition or respiration; such skeletal parts are the jaws and arches (or parts of such) behind the jaws known as the hyoidean and branchial arches.

1. The Cartiluginous Cranial Skeleton.—This is formed “by a differentiation within the membranous cranium,” and consists of two plates (parachordals) placed one on each side of the anterior part of the notochord, and forming with the latter the floor of the hinder part of the cranium, which part is known as the basilar plate. The carti- laginous auditory capsules are closely united to the outer sides of the basilar plate. From the anterior margin of that plate two bars, called the “ trabeculae,” diverge for- wards from the anterior end of the notochord, and then approximate, so as to enclose what is known as the pituitary space, and also the floor of the anterior part of the cranium. Thence they advance (generally united) into the nasal or ethmoidal region of the skull, forming a median nasal septum, having a cartilaginous olfactory capsule on each side of it, and developing lateral pro- cesses in front of and behind those capsules. Only in the Cyclostomata is there a single olfactory capsule instead of a pair. The nature of the parachordals and trabeculz is disputed, but opinion inclines to regard them as corre- sponding to the neural arches of the spinal skeleton,—except the part around the notochord, which corresponds with centra in an unsegmented condition.

Upgrowths arise on the outer side of each parachordal, and these meet above and thus form a complete dorsal arch in the hinder or occipital region of the skull. The posterior aperture of this arch is called the occipital foramen, and through it the spinal cord enters the cranium, there to expand and become the brain. Lateral plates arise on each side farther forwards, in the anterior or sphenoidal region of the cranium. But these do not gene- rally ascend enough to unite together dorsally, at least they almost always form but an imperfect roof to the cranial cavity. This cranial aperture may be related to a median, dorsally placed, eye, which probably once existed in all Vertebrates, and still exists in a rudimentary condi- tion in many Lizards.2 The lateral plates grow together medianly in front, and more or less completely separate the cranial cavity from the ethmoidal region in front of it. Openings are left here and there in the cartilages of the cranial walls for the passage outwards of nerves from the central part of the nervous system ; but these openings or foramina will be noticed in describing the osseous cranial skeleton. On each side of the sphenoidal region are the optic cartilaginous capsules, which, however, never become united (as do the others) with the cranium, and therefore are not generally reckoned as parts of the skull. A special median cartilaginous vertical upgrowth from the trabecule between these capsules may (as in Teleostean Fishes, Lizards, and Birds) form an interorbital plate beneath the most anterior part of the cranial cavity.

The third category of cranial skeletal parts is generally represented by a series of descending cartilaginous bars (or visceral arcs) on each side of the alimentary canal, running forwards beneath the cranium to terminate at the mouth.

As this lateral region of the head corresponds with the body wall behind it, and shows transitory indications of division (like the body wall behind it) into an inner part or splanchnopleure and an outer part or somatopleure, it is obvious that skeletal structures formed in its inner or outer part may be taken as belonging to different cate- gories. In the Cyclostomata, as in the Lamprey, we find cartilaginous bars placed in the somatic division exclu-

1 Balfour, ii. p. 466. 2 See Nature of May 18, 1886, p. 33.

sively,—bars which support and externally protect the series of gill-pouches on each side; and parts probably homologous with these somatic bars of the Lamprey are found also in some Sharks.

The Cyclostomes also possess complex labial cartilages which support the lips of their suctorial mouths. Re. presentatives of these cartilages are also to be found about the mouths of many Fishes, as well as in the temporary suctorial mouth of the Tadpole; and they still persist in connexion with the olfactory capsules, though in a reduced form, in higher animals.? The most important members of the third category of cranial skeletal parts are—(1) the series of cartilaginous arches lying in the splanchnic or inner region of the lateral wall of the head, which arches sup- port the gill-pouches on their inner sides and are known as the branchial arches, and (2) the arches seemingly in series with them, which are more anteriorly placed, and which are known as the hyoidean arches and the jaws.

One or other, or both, of these two sets of arches are well developed in all craniate Vertebrates, except the Cyclostomes, in which there are no true branchial arches, but only a hyoidean and a rudimentary jaw arch. There may be as many as seven branchial arches (¢g., in Not danus), but five are usually present in water-breathing Vertebrates. The hyoidean arch becomes segmented into two noteworthy portions, the upper of which is known as the hyomandibular portion.

The most anterior, or mandibular arch, also becomes segmented into an upper or metapterygoid portion, an inferior or Meckelian portion, and a median or pterygo- quadrate portion, which grows forwards in front of the metapterygoid portion, and forms the foundation of the upper jaw against which the lower jaw (formed from the Meckelian portion) bites.

The thus formed upper and lower jaws may come to be suspended from the cranium in one of three ways. (1) They may depend from the cranium directly, that is, with- out the intervention of the hyoidean arch; this arrange- ment is known as autostylic,* and exists in all Vertebrates above Fishes, as well as in certain of the latter (Chumara and the Dipnoi). (2) They may be suspended by the co-operation of the hyomandibular portion of the hyoidean arch with their own metapterygoid portion ; this arrange ment is known as amphistylic, and is found in Wotzdanus, Hexanchus, and

Ostracion.® (3) They may be suspended exclusively by the hyomandibular portion of the hyoidean arch (to the exclusion of their more proximal portion), as in most Fishes and the Skates—an arrangement known as hyostylic.

2. The Osseous Cranium—The bony skull is formed partly by ossifications of the cartilage of the cartilaginous skull and partly by ossifications of the membranes investing or completing it. The cartilaginous cranium may, asm Elasmobranchs, be covered by a thin calcified layer with- out becoming ossified. It may, as in the Selachian Ganoids, remain itself quite unossified, and yet become enveloped by membrane bones. In most cases, however, the investment of the cartilaginous cranium by membrane bones is accompanied by a more or less complete ossifica- tion of the cartilage itself. In the Amphibia the carti- laginous cranium is to a not inconsiderable extent ossified, but the membrane bones which invest it are nevertheless easily separable from it. The most constant ossifications of the cartilaginous cranium are in the occipital region. In the Lepidosiren these are the only ones, a bone being thus formed on each side of the occipital foramen, which bones are known as the exoccipitals.

3 Balfour, loc. cit., p. 490.

4 These terms were proposed by Professor Huxley. 5 Balfour, loc. cit., p. 475.

Sai Le TON

Many disputes have taken place as to what cranial bones (both cartilage and membrane bones) of one group of animals correspond with those of other groups. Such disputes still exist in certain cases, and it would be unwise to positively assert miore than the existence of a general ccr- respondence between the cranial bones of widely different Vertebrates—such, for example, as between Teleostean Fishes and Reptiles or Mammals.

Beneath the occipital foramen the basioccipital bone arises, and it may, as in Birds and Reptiles, develop a posterior prominence which joins with contiguous promi- nences of the exoccipitals to form a single ‘ condyle” for articulation with the spine. On the other hand, there may be, as in Mammals

and Amphibians, two lateral exoccipital condyles unaccompanied by any median basi- occipital prominence. In most Fishes we find only a concave articular surface behind the basioccipital, which thus resembles in form the vertebral centra, the anterior posterior surfaces of which are concave. A fourth bone, the supraoccipital, generally bounds the occipital foramen above.

In front of this occipital segment the auditory capsule, on each side, generally ossifies from three centres of ossifi- cation, which form the prootic, opisthotic, and epiotic bones respectively. Of these the first is the most constant, and is the only one which ossifies in the Frog. When all three are present, the prootic is anterior in position, the opisthotie inferior and posterior, and the epiotic posterior and superior. Sometimes, as in Fishes, two other supero- external boues may be formed in the auditory capsule, the more anterior of which is the sphenotic and the more posterior the pterotic.

The base of the cranium, in front of the basioccipital, generally ossifies as the basisphenoid, and a depression on its upper surface is known as the sella turcica or pituitary fossa. In front of the basisphenoid there may be, as in Mammals, another azygous bone, the presphenoid. The skull’s lateral walls (in front of the auditory capsule) ossify as the alisphenoid and orbitosphenoid on each side, the latter forming the antero-lateral wall of the cranium. The optic capsule or sclerotic may be merely membranous, as in Mammals, or may ossify, as in Birds, but it never forms any solid connexion with the cranial walls.

The olfactory region very often ossifies as a median vertical bone (the mesethmoid) and two lateral ones (the lateral ethmoids or prefrontals). These ethmoidal ossifica- tions may close the cranial cavity anteriorly, or may be altogether anterior to it. The olfactory and presphenoidal region may ossify very exceptionally as one bone. Such a condition we find in the Frog and its allies. These bones vary greatly in different classes of Vertebrates as to the degrees in which they anchylose together or remain dis- tinct, and also as to the order in which those unite which ultimately coalesce. Similar differences occur with respect to the remaining skull bones. Speaking generally, we find the greatest amount of distinctness in

the Osseous Vishes, and the greatest amount of coalescence in the class of Birds.

The membrane bones of the cranium are most con- spicuous and constant on its roof. In Fishes we find every grade of transition between simple dermal scutes and true subdermal bones of the internal skeleton. Well-developed dermal cranial scutes are to be found in the Sturgeon and some Siluroids. Where the membrane bones still retain the character of dermal plates, those on the dorsal surface of the cranium are usually arranged ina series of longitudinal rows, continuing in the region of the head the rows of dermal scutes of the trunk. The dorsal cranial dermal bones differ in different Fishes as regards arrangement and number as well as size. Owing, how-

ever, to their linear arrangements, they usually receive corresponding names, though it is very doubtful whether they can be considered as truly homologous.!' In most Bony Fishes, as in higher animals, we may generally dis- tinguish in the cranial roof one or two parietals, with an interparietal or upper (or upper part of a) supraoccipital behind the parietals, and a frontal or pair of frontals in front of them. A bone called the squamosal may also form part of the cranial roof, as in Mammals, and may send forwards and outwards a process which unites with another form, a preorbital bone, to form a zygomatic arch. In front, above, behind, and beneath the orbit (in which lies the sclerotic) bones may arise termed malars and lachrymals, supraorbitals, and post-frontals respectively, and the zygomatic process of the squamosal may unite with a corresponding process from the malar or the post- frontal. The malar bone, or (as it is often called) the jugal, rather belongs, however, to the third category of cranial skeletal parts. The olfactory or ethmoidal region becomes roofed over in part by the frontals, in part by the lateral bones (belonging to the third category of cranial parts to be presently noticed) called the maxilla, but it is mainly roofed over by two bones (sometimes one bone) called nasals, which bound the posterior surface of the external nasal opening on each side of the skull. In Bony Fishes, Amphibians, and Serpents almost the whole cranium is invested below by a large membrane bone called the parasphenoid.

The nervous centres within the cranial cavity send forth nerves through certain definite small apertures or foramina, which show much constancy of position. As a rule, and in the highest class of Vertebrates, the olfactory nerves pass out medianly in front to the ethmoids, between the orbitosphenoids or the membranous parts which may re- present them. The optic nerves perforate the orbito- sphenoids, but may pass out behind them. In Lizards (e.g., Hatteria, Anguis, and many others) an aperture is left in the roof of the skull which is called the " parietal foramen." It serves for the reception of a third and rudi- mentary eye, the existence of which in Lizards was before referred to in noticing the cartilaginous cranium, It is a structure of great morphological interest. The nerves of the muscles of the eye, as well as the first of the three divisions of the fifth nerve, pass out in the interval between the orbito- and ali-sphenoids. The two other divisions of the fifth, as a rule, perforate the alisphenoid, the third the more constantly, the aperture for it being known as the foramen ovale, the less constant aperture for the sccond branch being called the foramen rotundum. 'The auditory nerve enters the auditory capsule (whether ossified or not) on its inner side, and does not pass out from it, but the facial nerve both perforates and traverses it. The glos- sopharyngeal, pneumogastric, and spinal accessory nerves pass out between the auditory capsule and the exoccipital, which latter bone is perforated and traversed by the hypo- glossal nerve.

Thus the osseous cranium (apart from the sense-cap- sules) consists of three arched segments: of these the hindmost is formed by the basi-, ex-, and supra-occipitals, the median by the basisphenoid, alisphenoids, and parietals, and the anterior by the presphenoid, the orbitosphcnoid, and the frontals. These have been called "cranial vertebre," and certainly if the essence of vertebrae consists in their being a series of solid rings, fitted together and enclosing a tract of the nervous centres, then it must be admitted that the cranium—of the highest class of animals at least—is made up of three such vertebra. Their development, however, is altogether different from that of true vertebrae, and no such resemblance to vertebree
————~—~*«SE«@Bafour, doc. cié., p. 4860 220"

is to be detected in the constituent parts of the cartilagin- ous cranium. Nevertheless it is undeniable that there is a singular secondary and induced resemblance to vertebrae in these ossified skeletal parts. |

The osseous condition of the third category of cranial skeletal parts varies extremely in different classes of Verte- brates. The limits of this article are altogether insuffi- cient for more than a brief indication of the main varieties of the cranial structures of any of the three categories, and the reader must refer for details to the descriptions given in the various articles of this work which are devoted to different groups of animals.

The most anterior lateral descending bar or visceral arc is known as the mandibular arch. That part of it which extends forwards and forms the upper jaw presents us with the following ossifications arranged in two rows — one external, the other internal. The external row, pro- ceeding from before backwards, consists of premaxilla, maxilla, jugal (or malar), and very often of a quadrato- jugal, which latter, when present, is generally in the form of a bar of bone (with an interval between it and the skull), forming, or helping to form, an inferior lateral external arch analogous to the superior lateral arch already noticed as the “zygoma.” There may be a pair of pre- maxille, or they may be represented by an azygous bone. The premaxilla, maxilla, and jugal often unite with the anterior outer margins of the nasal, frontal, and lachrymal to form a continuous bony external wall to the anterior part of the skull. The internal row of bones, proceeding again from before backwards, consists of the vomer, pala- tine, and pterygoid, which, with their fellows of the opposite side (and sometimes with the aid of the parasphenoid), forn the bony roof to the mouth, which roof may (as in Mammals and Crocodiles) be a continuous bony partition, or may be but a sort of open bony framework. Besides the pterygoid proper, other ossifications, adjoining it, have been distinguished as the entopterygoid and ectopterygoid.

The lower part of the most anterior lateral visceral are forms all or part of the lower jaw. In the Mammalia it forms the whole of that jaw, and is invested by but a single bone—the dentary. In other Vertebrates it forms but the distal, though greater, part of that jaw, and may be invested, not only by a dentary, but also by bones called angular, subangular, coronoid, and

splenial. The jaw is further continued, proximally, by two bones—the articular and the quadrate—which are ossifications of the cartilaginous are itself. This may, as in Birds and Rep- tiles, be directly articulated to the cranial wall, or it may be (as in Fishes) suspended therefrom by bones, the highest of which is termed the hyomandibular, which articulates with the ossified auditory capsule. The hyo- mandibular joins below two other bones, the anterior of which is called the metapterygoid and the posterior the symplectic, to both of which the quadrate 1s attached. Thus these four bones act as a “suspensorium” for the lower jaw, the joint between which jaw and the suspenso- rium is placed at the junction of the quadrate and the articular. In Mammals, parts answering to the suspen- sorium, the quadrate, and the articular form no_ part of the jaw but are of relatively minute size and are known as certain parts (the auditory ossicles, Wc.) of the internal ear,! and are protected externally by an ossifica- tion called the tympanic bone.

The second lateral descending bar or visceral arc, known as the hyoidean arch, may have its upper part ossified, in union with the preceding arch, as in the bony suspensorium of Fishes just described. On the other hand its upper part may, as in Mammals, be represented only by minute parts

1 The exact and precise homologies of these parts seem still to be sub judice.

of the internal ear,—except the very summit of the arch, which forms the tympanohyal, and is anchylosed to the ossified auditory capsule of the internal ear. In Bony Fishes the hyoidean arch begins to free itself from the suspensorium, as a bone called the stylohyal, which is attached to the preceding or mandibular arch, between the hyomandibular and the symplectic. The are then continues downwards as the epihyal and ceratohyal, ending below in the basihyal, from which a glossohyal may project forwards and a urohyal backwards. In Fishes certain styliform ossicles termed brancliiostegal rays may project backwards from the hyoidean arch; and above them certain membrane bones called opercular bones—the oper- culum, preoperculum, suboperculum, and interoperculum

—are attached above to the hyomandibular, and lie outside the mandibular and hyoidean arches.

In the air-breathing Vertebrates the hyoidean arch may be well developed or very imperfectly so, and concurs with parts belonging to the more posteriorly situated lateral arches to form a complex bone—the 0s hyoides —as will be further described.

These more posterior lateral arches—the branchial

arches—attain their most complex osseous condition in

Bony Fishes, which have commonly five of them, not solidly united to the skull above, but connected one with another inferiorly and with the inferior part of the hyoid arch. From below upwards these arches consist generally of a basibranchial, a hypobranchial, a ceratobranchial, an epibranchial, and a pharyngobranchial, but the hindmost arch is less fully and complexly formed.

In air-breathing Vertebrates the already-mentioned os hyoides cousists of a central part or “body,” to which are attached two pairs of single or jointed processes termed cornua. The anterior pair of cornua (known in human anatomy as the lesser cornua) represent the hyoidean arch, and may contain all its bones, including the “tym- panohyal.” The posterior pair of cornua (the greater cornua of human anatomy and the thyrohyals of Mammals generally) answer to or represent part of the branchial arches, and may be longer or shorter than the anterior pair of cornua. That they really have this homology is proved by the process of metamorphosis of the Tadpole, which in its early stage has distinct cartilaginous bran- chial arches that become the posterior cornua of the 0s hyoides of the adult Frog.

The osseous skull may, its bones remaining distinet, form a very solid whole, and the brain-case may be com- plete, as in Mammals, or it may be very loosely constructed and largely membranous, as, ¢.g., in most Lizards. Teeth may be connected with various bones,—most constantly with the dentary, maxille, and premaxille,—but the palatines, pterygoids, parasphenoid (in Plethodon), pharynge- branchials, and even the basioccipital (Carp and Tench), may be dentigerous.

The structure of the skull is so exceedingly complex and varied that it is impossible within the limits of the present article to do more than give the above general indications. For further particulars the reader is referred to the anatomical details which will be found in the several articles of this work which are devoted to the description of different single groups of Vertebrate animals, and especially to the description of the skull of Man m the article ANATOMY.

APPENDICULAR SKELETON.

This part of the internal skeleton of Vertebrate animals normally supports two pairs of limbs only, but in one class—that of Fishes—there are azygous stractures—the unpaired fins—which, as before said, must be reckoned as belonging to this category. These latter will be more

Ht oS

‘conveniently treated of later. The whole appendicular ‘skeleton may, however, be wanting, as in the Lamprey ‘and in most Serpents.

The Skeleton of the Paired Limbs.—The paired-limb skeleton normally consists of that of an anterior, pectoral, or thoracic pair of limbs and that of a posterior or pelvic pair. In certain species there may be but a single pair of limbs, which may either be the pectoral pair, as,

—e.g-, in. the Amphibian genus Siren, or the pelvic pair, as in the Reptilian genera Bipes, Lialis, and Ophiodes.

Normally each pair consists of diverging appendages— the limb skeleton proper—attached to a solid structure embracing parts of the trunk, ze, a limb-root or limb-

girdle. A thoracic limb-girdle may exist in a well-de- veloped condition without any limbs attached to it—as in the Slow-Worm (Anguis), but there is never a well- developed pelvic girdle without a rudiment of a pelvic limb.

In all Vertebrates above Fishes the limbs are divisible into a main part of the limb—arm or leg,—with a distal

part or extremity—“ manus” (hand) or “es” (foot).

| We sometimes find (as in Lialis, Python, and Balena) a

-udimentary development of the skeleton of the leg

- without any rudiment of a pes; but we never find any rudimentary development of an arm without any rudi- ments of a manus. In the paired limb, as we have seen, a limb-girdle may be present without any part of a limb, but no part of the limb skeleton is ever developed with- out any limb-girdle. Normally the two limb-girdles are attached in a solid manner to the axial skeleton, in dif- ferent modes.

Normally the pectoral girdle is only thus connected with the axial skeleton by its ventral part, or with the ventral part of that skeleton, i.¢., with the sternum, while itends freely above, being dorsally connected with the axial skeleton only by soft structures. In Fishes, however, it may abut by its dorsal extremities on each side against the neural region of the spinal

column, as in Aaa clavata, or be connected with the head by skeletal structures, as in Bony Fishes, ¢.g., Perch, Cod, &c.,—having all the time no connexion with the spine by its ventral part.

The pelvic girdle, on the contrary, is normally connected by its dorsal part solidly with the axial skeleton, though, as in Fishes, it may not be at all so connected. It never, however, abuts ventrally against the axial skeleton as does the thoracic girdle.

Appendicular Skeleton of Vertebrates above Lishes.

The paired limbs of all animals above Fishes are formed on one type, and differ greatly from those of the last-mentioned class. It will be convenient to describe first the general condition of the limbs in Mammals, Birds, Reptiles, and Amphibians.

Both the thoracic and pelvic limbs of these animals are divided, as before said, into main parts (arm and leg) and extremity (manus and pes). Each main part is further subdivided into a proximal segment (upper arm and thigh) and a distal segment (fore-arm and lower part of the leg). Each extremity is subdivided into a root portion (‘‘ carpus” and ‘‘ tarsus”), a middle portion (‘‘ metacarpus” and *‘metatarsus”’), and a terminal portion known as the digits. Thus the skeleton, ¢.g., of the hand of Man is composed of—(1) the root part of the hand or the “ carpus ” (made up of eight small bones) ; (2) the middle part of the hand or ‘‘ metacarpus ” (made up of five long bones enclosed in the flesh of the palin); and (8) that of the digits, ¢.e., of the thumb (or ‘‘ pollex”) and of the four fingers, while the great toe (or ‘hallux”) and the four other toes are the ‘‘ digits” of the pes.

The joints between the proximal and distal segments of the main part of each limb are the elbow and the knee, and these are turned mostly (as in ourselves) in opposite directions. Primitively, how- Fi in all animals and permanently in some (e.g., Tortoises), both i ese Joints are so conditioned as to open inwards—the elbow and

a being both directed outwards—while the palm of the manus and the sole of the pes are also both inwards in the embryo, and ie the adult are applied to the ground, the digits of each extremity

eng directed outwards. This is the position in which the corre-

spondence in structure between the thoracic and pelvic limbs is most obvious, and in it the whole surface of the limbs, which (on aceount of the museles there placed) is known as the ‘‘ extensor” surface, is turned outwards, whereas that known as the ‘‘ flexor” surface is turned inwards, while the pollex of the manus and the hallux of the pes are both in front of their respective extremities, This primitive condition is altered during the process of devclopment of Man and most air-breathing Vertebrates, the knee becoming bent forwards and the elbow backwards, while the fore-arm is twisted by a movement called ‘‘ pronation,” so as to enable the flexor or palmar surface of the manus to be applied in a direction parallel to that of the flexor or plantar surface of the pes.

In Bats the thigh is turned backwards, so that the knee bends baekwards like an elbow. Were it necessary in these animals to apply the sole of the pes to the ground with the digits forwards (as in most animals), theua pronation of the lower leg would be needed in them, similar to the pronation of the fore-arm, which, as above said, takes place in the majority of animals here referred to—air-breathing Vertebrates.

The Thoracic or Pectoral Limb-Girdle.—The shoulder-girdle normally consists of the following bones or cartilages :—(1) a superior portion, generally a move or less broad plate of bone, called the scapula, the upper part of which may remain cartilaginous and more or less distinguishable as a suprascapula ; (2) a posterior inferior portion, named the coracoid, which may or may hot be continuous with the scapula, and may have additional parts or subdivisions distinguished as the coracoid proper, pre- coracoid, and epicoracoid; at the junction of the scapula and coracoid there is a concave articular surface—the glenoid cavity, into which the pectoral limb is articulated; (3) an anterior inferior portion, called the clavicle, which may abut against an azygous median structure known as an interclavicle, the two being distinguished from the other elements of the girdle by being more or less entirely membrane boues.

These structures are found well developed in many Lizards and quite exceptionally in Monotremes amongst Mammals. In them and in Birds, the coracoids are largely developed, while they remain mere processes of the scapula in non-Monotrematous Mammals, and sometimes are quite rudimentary. In such Mammals the pectoral arch is only completed inferiorly by the clavicles which abut against the sternum, but sometimes (as, ¢g., in Ungulates) are altogether absent. The “merrythought” of Birds is a clavicular structure. In Amphibians the two halves of the shoulder-girdle are each formed of a continuous plate. Some anatomists reckon part of this as representing a clavicle, but this determination is very doubtful,

The Pelvic Girdle.—This girdle, like the former one, normally consists of three parts—one dorsal, the ilium, and two ventral, whereof the more anterior is the pubis and the posterior the ischium, and all these are cartilage bones. The pubis generally meets ventrally its fellow of the opposite side, but not always so. The ischia meet ventrally more rarely. In Birds and certain extinct Reptiles a third element, the post-pubis, intervenes between the ischium (more or less parallel to the latter) and a pubis which may be fully or only rudimentarily developed. At the junction of the ilium and the ventral pelvic elements there is a concave articular surface for the pelvic limb, the acetabulum. An interval between the pubis and ischium of each side is known as the obturator foramen. We findamongst Amphibians there is a peculiar cartilage in the ventral median line in front of the pubis, which has been ealled the prepubic cartilage! In Marsupials and Monotremes a bone extends forwards in front of each pubis, and these bones are known as the marsupial bones.

The Limbs.—The general condition of these organs and the bones supporting thein in Vertebrates above Fishes having already been indicated, it remains but to fill in a few details as to their normal structure and its principal varieties.

A. Pectoral.—The bone of the upper arm is called the humerus, and is more or less cylindrical in shape, with an expansion at each end. It may, however, be almost as broad as long, as in the Mole and some Cetacea. The lower arm is generally furnished with two bones, the radius and the ulna, placed side by side. The ulna may be more or less abortive, as in Ruminants and

Bats, but it may be the larger of the two fore-arm bones, as is the case amongst Birds.

The carpus may have its parts more or less permanently cartilaginous, as in some Urodeles and Cetaceans.

Taking the carpus of Man as a type of the ossified carpus (for further details, see ANATOMY), it consists of the eight following short bones arranged in two transverse rows. The proximal row (that next the arm) includes the scaphoides, lunare, cuneiforme, and pisiforme, while the distal row (that next the fingers) comprises the trapezium, trapezoides, magnum, and unciforme—starting, in each enumeration, from the thumb side of the manus. The pisi- forme stands out from the rest, and is reckoned as a sesamoid bone

1 Balfour, doc, cit., p. 499.

or ossification of a tendon, rather than a true carpal ossicle. There may be an analogous sesamoid ossicle on the other side of the wrist (on the side of the scaphoid) even in Apes, and this obtains its maximum in the Mole, where it strengthens and broadens the manus for digging. The true carpal bones may be more numerous or less numerous than in Man. Thus there may be an ossicle— called intermedium or centrale—placed in the mid line between the two rows of carpals, and this may be double, as in Crypto-branchus and some Siberian Urodeles. The unciforme may also be represented by two bones, as amongst Chelonians ; the pisiforme is often absent, and also the trapezium. The bones of the distal row are the less constant in number and development, and they may coalesce with the metacarpals, as in the Chameleon. Their development is related to that of the digits with which they articulate. All the true proximal carpal ossicles may unite into one bone, as in Pteropus, and the whole carpus may be reduced to two distinct bones, as amongst Birds.

The metacarpus, when fully developed, consists of five rather long metacarpal bones, as in Man. There may, however, be but two, and these wited into what is called a “canon bone ” (as in Sheep, Deer, &c.); or there

may be but a single one, as in the Horse, — answering to Man’s third metacarpal. They vary in relative size and proportion in different animals, but are most remarkable for their length and slenderness in the Bats, while they are much elongated in the Horse and most Ruminants.

As to the digits, there may be but a single oue, as in the Horse, or two, as in Ruminants and the Marsupial known as Chwropus. There may be three, as in the Rhinoccros, the Proteus, and in Seps ; or there may be four. The digits are never certainly more than five (except by monstrosity), although in the Ichthyosaurus extra mar- ginal bones along the manus give at least the appearance of more.

When a digit is wanting it is generally the iolles (thumb), as in Spider Monkeys, but it may be the fifth, as in Pterodactyles, or both fourth and fifth may be wanting, as in Birds, The pollex may be more or less opposable to the others, as in Lemurs, most Monkeys, and in Man, or two digits may be opposed to the other three, as in the Chameleon.

The second digit may be greatly reduced, as in the Potto, or the third may be disproportionally slender, as in the Aye-Aye, or thick, asin the Great Armadillo. The digits may be enormously elongated, as in the Bats, or short, as in the Mole and the Land Tortoises. They may be very imperfectly developed, asin Birds. They may be so united by dense tissue as to be quite incapable of separate motion, as in the Cetaceans. The bones of the fingers are called phalanges, and there are always three of them to each digit except the pollex, which has but two in all Mammials with the exception of certain Cetaceans, which have more. There may be as many as fourteen phalanges in one digit in @lobiocephalus. The proximal row of these bones may become anchylosed to the metacarpals, as in the Three-toed Sloth. In Reptiles the numbers of the phalanges often increase from two in the pollex to five in the fourth digit, as in the Monitor. The abortive manus of Birds has at its best but three digits, with two phalanges to the pollex, three to the index, and one or two to the third digit. The phalanges are very numerous in the Ichthyosaurus and Plesiosaurus.

B. Pelvic.—The bone of the thigh is called the femur, and is a long bone which varies less in its form and proportion in different animals than does

the humerus. It is, however, relatively very short in the Seals, and still shorter in the Ichthyosaurus.

In front of the knee-joint there is generally present a large sesamoid bone known as the knee-pan or patella, This, however, may cven in Mammals be very small, as in Bats and Scals, or wanting altogether, as in the Wombat.

The leg below the knee is supported by two long bones, the tibia and the fibula, placed side by side, whereof the former is the more internally situated, the larger generally, and the more constant. The two bones may anchylose together at each end, as in the Armadillos, or they may do so only below or only above ; the two bones may be completely fused together, asin the Frog. The tibia may be the only long bone, through the small development of the fibula, as in Ruminants and the Horse. The fibula may be quite styliform, as in Birds, or it may be developed inferiorly but be atrophied at its upper end, as in Bats. Itmay be represented only by a small ossification outside the lower end of the tibia, as in the Ox, and with this there may exist a styliform rudiment of its upper part, as in the Elk.

The joint by which the foot moves on the leg is situated between the lower end of the leg bones and the tarsus in Mammals and Am- phibians. In Birds and Reptiles, however, this joint is placed in the tarsus, the proximal part of which is firmly connected with the leg, while its distal part is firmly connected with the metatarsus.

The tarsus of Man consists of seven irregularly shaped, more or less short bones. Of these the astragalus joins the tibia and has the os calcis beneath it and the naviculare in front of it, while the metatarsals are supported (from the great toe outwards) by the internal, middle, and external cuneiform bones and by the cuboides, which is connected with the fourth and fifth metatarsals.

SKELETON

The tarsus may have its parts morc or less permanently cartila. ginous, as insome Urodeles. The number ofits bones, or cartilages, may be as many as nine, as in the Salamander, or be reduced to three, as in Proteus, or perhaps to two, as in Ophiodes. Tyo tarsal bones (the os calcis and naviculare) may

take the form of long bones, as in Galago and especially in Zarsius. These two bones and the astragalus may be represented by a single bone, as in many Lizards, or may early unite with the tibia, as in almost all Birds, The astragalus may be represented by two bones, as in Urodeles, It may have an extra ossicle annexed to it, as in the imale Ornithorhynchus aud Echidna. Two extra ossicles may be attached to the tibial side of the foot, as in the true Porcupine (Cercolabes), The naviculare may anchylose with one of the distal tarsal bones, as in the Ox and Deer, where it unites with the cuboid. The distal] bones are less constant than the others, and they may anchylose with the metatarsals, as in Birds, the Chameleon, and the Three toed Sloth. The cuboid may be represented by two bones, as in certain Urodeles. The internal cuneiforme may be wanting, as in the Ox, or coalesce with the middle one, as in the Horse,

The metatarsus when fully developed eonsists of five rather long metatarsal bones, as in Man, and never of more. There may be . but a single developed metatarsal, as in the Horse (the third) and Cheropus (the fourth), or two fused together, as in the Sheep, Deer, &c., or three fused together, as in the Jerboa, or four so fused, as in many Birds. There may be but two metatarsals well developed, as in the Hog, or three, as in the Rhinoceros, or four, as in the Dog. They are never enormously elongated like the metacarpals of Bats, but they may all be extremely short, as in Land Tortoises and the Ichthyosaurus.

The digits vary in number, as has just been indicated with respect to the metatarsal bones sustaining then.

When one digit is wanting it may be the fifth, as in Birds, or the hallux (first or great toe), as in the Hare. The third and fourth digits ay be only functional ones, as in the Ostrich; but the third may abort, leaving only the fourth, as in Chwropus, or the fourth, leaving only the third, as in the Horse. The fourth and fifth may be the only functional ones, as in the Kangaroo, The hallux may be opposable to the other digits, as in Monkeys, Lemurs, Opossums, and Phalangers; or the first and fourth digits may be opposed to the second and third, as in Parrots ; or the first and second to the third, fourth, and fifth, as in the Chameleon.

The phalanges of the digits are in Man’s whole class always three to each digit except the hallux, which (like the pollex) has but two —save in the Orang, where it may have but one phalanx. They may be much more numerous than in Mammals, as in the pes of the Ichthyosaurus and Plesiosaurus. The numbers of the phalanges as we proceed from the first to the fifth digit may be 2, 3, 4, 5, 4, as in Lizards generally, or 1, 2, 8, 8, 2, as in the Salamander, or 2, 2, 8, 4, 3, as in the Frog. In Birds (where the fifth digit is more developed) the numbers of the phalanges, proceeding trom the hallux, are mostly 2, 3, 4,5; but they may be 2, 3, 3, 3, asm the Swifts, or 2, 3, 4, 8, as in the Goatsuckers.

Appendicular Skeleton of ishes.

The Paired Limbs. —Most Fishes possess two pairs of limbs, known as the pectoral and ventral fins, which respectively cor respond to the pectoral and pelvic limbs of higher Vertebrates. These limbs are attached to corresponding limb-girdles, whereof the pelvic girdle is always inferior in development and never attams the large relative proportions and fixed position of the pelvic girdle of non-Piscine Vertebrates.

Very often, however, the ventral fins are entirely wanting, and the pectoral fins are sometimes wanting also. In the latter case there is usually present more or less of a pectoral limb-girdle, though it may be, as in Mwrenophis, little more than a filament. In all non-Piscine Vertebrates the right and left limbs are symmetrically and equally developed, but in the Flat Fishes (Pleuroncetidz) one pectoral fin may be larger than the other, or one may disappear, as in Monochirus. ;

The situation of the paired limbs is, in Elasmobranchs, Ganoids, and a good many Teleosteans, similar to that they hold in higher Vertebrates, but in some other Tcleosteans (such as the Fishes on that account called ‘‘thoracic”) the ventral fins arc placed far for- wards so as to come immediately behind the pectoral fins, while in yet other Teleosteaus (known on that account as “jugular ” Fishes) they are placed even in front of the pectoral fins.

The pectoral girdle may consist of a simple cartilaginous arch, a8 in Elasmobranchs, or it may be composed, as amongst Teleosteans, of two

bones meeting ventrally, cach being commonly regarded as a clavicle which is continued up dorsally to the skull by the inter- vention of a supraclavicle and a post-temporal. Besides these there is a cartilaginous element on each side which usually ossifics in two pieces, the upper one of which is reckoned as representing a seapula and the lower onea coracoid. These parts are annexed to the immer side of the clavicle, where also there is sometimes found a styliform bone, more dorsally placed, called the post-clavicle.

The pelvic girdle is represented in Elasmobranchs by a transverse

=o

Ab tee

SKE—S KE

cartilaginous structure formed of two separated or two medianly-

united pieces, each of which sometimes, as in Chimera and Callo-

rhynehus, shows much resemblance to the innominate bone of higher

_ process. ‘ united with the spinal column. ‘ very rudimentary, and each lateral portion (which has a slightly-

a

rays annexed to them.

Vertebrates in that it sends up a process simulating (and probably representing) the iliac element and possesses a sort of obturator foramen. In Osseous Fishes the pelvic girdle is normally repre- sented by two innominate bones medianly joincd, each of which may, by rare exception, as in Lophius, send up a tall ilium-like In no Fish, however, does the pelvis become solidly In the cartilaginous Ganoids it is

developed pubic and iliac process) is separated from its fellow on the opposite side, while in Lepidosiren there is only a single simple median cartilage with no iliac process.

The skeleton of the pectoral limb, or fin, of most Elasmobranchs consists of three considerable basal cartilages, placed side by side,

- articulating with the pectoral arch, and named the propterygium,

the mesopterygium, and the metapterygium. Of these the proptery- gium is proximal or anterior in position. To the distal ends of these are articulated a number of slendcr elongated more or less segmented radial cartilages, and to the distal portions of these are aunexed the horny fin-rays which form the solid supports of the distal portion of the fin.

Sometimes there may be but two and rarely only one basal cartilage, which one must then be considered as representing the whole three condifferentiated. In Ceratodus there is a single basal cartilage followed by a series of small cartilages—secondary radial cartilages diverging from both sides of that series and having fin- In Lepidosiren the limb skeleton is still more simplified, consisting only of a single series of short slender cartilages with simall fin-rays attached to one side alone, without the intervention of any radial cartilages.

Insome Bony Fishes (¢.g., Polypterus) the basal cartilages are

_ more or less ossified, as are also most of the radials next them, while

to these small cartilaginous radials are annexed, which support ossified fin-rays. In some other Ganoids certain of the radial cartilages articulate directly with the pectoral arch. In the Teleostei a few, not above five, more or less ossified cartilages lie side by side and articulate with the pectoral arch, and one or more rows of small cartilages succeed tothem. These two elements represent the basal and radial cartilages of Elasmobranchs, and to them are articulated the relatively large fin-rays which make up the far greater part of the Teleostean pectoral limbs.

The skeleton of the ventral fin or pelvie limb is almost always more simple than that of the pectoral one. Only very rarely, as in Ceratodus, Lepidosiren, and Callorhynchus antareticus (see Trans. Zool. Soc., vol. x. p. 455, and plate lxxix. figs. 3 and 4), have they a close, or pretty close, resemblance. Generally the Elasmobranch ventral limb is supported by an elongated

cartilage, the basiptery- gium, which articulates with the pelvic cartilages and bears on its ventral border a series of cartilaginous radialia with which the fin-rays are connected. In Polyodon foliwm there are only radials which support fin-rays but are not themselves supported by any basipterygium, nor is there any pelvic cartilage. In the Teleosted the fin-rays are direetly attached to the osseous pelvic clements.

_ The Unpaired Appendicular Elements.—Besides the two pairs of

limbs there are, as has been mentioned, certain azygous structures commonly known as the unpaired or azygous fins or limbs. They are only fonnd in Fishes, and consist of the dorsal, caudal, and anal fius. ‘These may all run one into the other and form a continuous fin fringe to the body from the head round the tail and forward again to the vent, as in Hels and many Gadoid and Blennioid Fishes, In most cases, however, there are one or two distinct dorsal fins, and au anal fin also distinct from the caudal one.

The structure of the dorsal fin in Elasmobranchs is singularly like that of their paired fins, inasmuch asitis supported by an elongated or segmented basal cartilage or cartilages, from the dorsal margin of which radial cartilages (generally elongated, slender, and seg- mented) proceed, having the fin-rays connected with them distally. The basal cartilages may or may not be directly connected or become confluent with the subjacent spinal skeleton. There may be (as in the second dorsal of Callorhynchus antareticus) but a single longi-

tudinal series of more or less elongated cartilages side by side, like radial cartilages devoid of any subjacent basal cartilages. In the Teleostet the fin-rays may be osseous and in the form of more or less strong spines, or soft and of a horn-like consistency, and segmented both vertically and horizontally; and fin-rays generally consist of two (right and left) halves, which, although closely applied together for the greater part of their length, diverge proximally to embrace the skeletal element to which they are annexed. These latter elements in the Teleostei are small ossicles or chondrifications, termed “ inter- spinous bones or cartilages.” They extend upwards between the neural spines of the axial skeleton and the dorsal

surface of the body. Anal fins are essentially similar in composition to dorsal fins, The caudal fin is modified according to the condition of the posterior termination of the axial skeleton, the different condition of which in Fishes has already been noticed (p. 112). Much-modified axial elements generally form the support of the fin-rays, but the numerous coniplex and varied conditions which these parts may pre sent in different forms is a matter of ichthyology, which can hardly find a place in a general description of the Vertebrate skeleton.

Nature and Origin of Appendicular Skeletal Parts.— From the researches of the late Prof. Balfour it appears that the paired limbs arise as differentiations of continuous lateral folds or projections from the surface of the body, and the azygous fins arise as differentiated projections from its dorsal and ventral surfaces. Thus all these appendicular parts may be viewed as different species of one funda- mental set of parts (pterygia), for the sum total of which the term " sympterygium" has been proposed (see Z'rans. Zool. Soc., vol. x. pp. 481, 482). The paired limbs and azygous fins are of similar origin and nature. Separate narrow solid supports, in longitudinal series, and with their long axes directed more or less at right angles with the long axis of the body, were developed in varying extent in all these four folds or projections. These sup- ports have, it would appear, very often united to form basal cartilages, the original single and united condition persisting in such forms as the ventral fin of Polyodon and the second dorsal of Callorhynchus, both already noticed,

The paired limbs are thus, in all probability, essentially peripheral structures which have become more or less closely connected with the axial skeleton. Their proximal parts uniting and growing inwards have often become directly connected with parts of the axial skeleton. Thus the limb-girdles seem to have arisen,—namely, as ingrowths from the basal cartilages of the limbs; and therefore the whole appendicular skeleton belongs to a different skeletal category from that of the head and spinal column or axial

endoskeleton.

Bibliography.—Meekel, Traité Général d@' Anat. Comp., transl. from the German, Paris, 1829; Cuvier, Lecgons d'Anat. Comp., 24 ed., Paris, 1837, and Recherches sur les Ossemens Fosstles, 4th ed., Paris, 1834; De

Blainville, Ostéographie du Squelette et du Systeme Dentaire des Cing Classes d’ Animauxr Vertebreés, Paris, 1839; R. Owen, Archetype and Homologies of the Vertebrate Skeleton, 1848, On the Nature of Limbs, 1849, and The Anatomy of Vertebrates, 1866; T. H. Huxley, Manual of the Anatomy of Vertebrate Animals, 1871, ‘‘On Ceratodus forstert,” in Proc, Zool. Soc., 1876 and “ Pelvis of Mammals,” in Proc, Roy, Soc., vol. xxviii., 1879; C. Gegenbaur, Elements of Comparative Anatomy, Eng. transl., 1878, Unter- suchungen zur Vergl, Anat.(Caypus und Tarsus), Schultergiirtel der Wirbelthiere u. Brustflosses der Fische, and articles in the Jenaische Zeitschr., vols. v. and vii., and in Morphologisches Jahrb., vol. ii., 1876; W. H. Flower, Osteology ofthe Mam- malia, 1870; A Gotte, “ Beitrage z. vergl. Morphol. d. Skeletsystems 4d. Wirbel- thiere,” in Archiv f. Mtkr, Anat. 1877 ; W. K. Parker, Monograph on the Shoulder- Girdle and Sternum, Ray Soe., 1868; F. Balfour, A Treatise on Comparative Embryology, 2 vols., 1880-1881; J. K. Thacker, “Median and Paired Fins and Fins of Ganoids,” in Zrans. Connecticut Acad., vols. iii. and iv.; St George Mivart, Lessons in Elementary Anatomy, 1873, ‘‘On the Vertebrate Skeleton,” in Trans. Linn, Soc., vol, xxvii., 1871, and “On the Fins of Elasmobranehs,” in Trans Zool. Soc., vol. x., 1879. (ST G. M.)

Se ————e ee

SKELTON, Jon, an eccentric English scholar and | poet of the 15th century. Mr Dyce, the editor of his works, fixes his birth about 1460. “His first essay in verse Was a poem after the manner of Lydgate on the death of Edward IV. (1483). He lived to pay compliments to Catherine, wife of Henry VIII, to jeer at the Scotch over es battle of Flodden, and to make fierce attacks on Wolsey, and is supposed to have died in 1529. In general intellectual force, fierceness of invective, wildness

of buffoonery, and coarseness of language Skelton bears some likeness to Swift. But he stands by himself as one of the most eccentric and paradoxical characters in English literature. He began life apparently as the protegé of a pious, learned, and literary lady, the mother of Henry VII., who founded St John’s College and Christ’s College, Cambridge, and translated devotional works from the French. He was himself one of the most notable scholars of his time, was appointed tutor to Henry VIII, was

hailed by Erasmus (whether ex officio or propter merita is left to conjecture) as “unum literarum Britanniarum lumen et decus,” was proclaimed poeta laureatus by both universities, and frequently applied this title as well as that of orator regius to himself without challenge. At about the age of forty he took orders, and was appointed rector of Diss in Norfolk, where he seems to have spent the last twenty-five years of his life. Yet this eminent scholar and churchman is the author of the oldest and the best drinking song in the English language—the drinking song in Gammer Gurton’s Needle, and of one of the coarsest poems in any language—Zhe T’wnning of Elinor Rumming. Heis the author of a satire against the clergy of his time—Colin Clout,—unsurpassed in pre-Reforma- tion literature for direct and merciless ridicule, and of a satire against the great cardinal when at the height of his greatness—Why come ye not to Court ?—boiling over with ferocious invective and insolent contempt. At the same time he had such a repute for rough wit and irregularity of life that he became the hero of a book of “merry tales.” These mythical tales were probably in the mind of the historian who has described Skelton as a “ribald buffoon,” “a profligate and illliving wretch.” Whether the real Skelton deserved such epithets is doubtful ; his verse undoubtedly contains much that may fairly be described as ribaldry and buffoonery. It has not a trace of the chivalrous spirit of Chaucer, and his most character- istic form, known as Skeltonical verse, is wayward and unconventional—adopted as if in mad defiance of regular metre. Still, as Skelton himself claimed for it, “it has in it some pith.” ‘Though my ryme be ragged,

Tattered, and jagged,

Rudely rain-beaten,

Rusty and moth-eaten,

If ye take well therewith

1t hath in it some pith.”

Colin Clout, Why come ye not to Court? and The Book of Philip Sparrow —which Coleridge pronounced “an exquisite and original poem”—are written in this metre. The Bowge (ship) of Court, a satirical vision of personified abstractions, is more conventional in form, and was prob- ably one of his earlier works. Both it and his interlude Magnificence show great power in the vivid description of character.

SKIMMER, the English name bestowed by Pennant? in 1781 on a North-American bird which had already been figured and described by Catesby (B. Carolina, 1. pl. 90) as the “Cut-water,”—as it appears still to be called on some parts of the coast,2—remarkable for the unique formation of its bill, in which the maxilla, or so-called upper mandible, is capable of much vertical movement, while the lower mandible, which is considerably the longer of the two, is laterally compressed so as to be as thin as a knife-blade. This bird is the Rhynchops nigra of Linnzeus, who, however, united with it what proves to be an allied species from India that, having been indicated many years before by Petiver (Gazoph. Naturx, tab. 76, fig. 2), on the authority of Buckley, was only technically named and described in 1838 by Swainson (Anim. AMena- geries, p. 360) as R. albicollis. A third species, &. flav- rostris, inhabits Africa ; and examples from South America, though by many writers regarded as identical with nigra, are considered by Mr Saunders (Proc. Zool. Society, 1882, p. 522) to form a fourth, the 2. melanura of Swain- son (ut supra, p. 340). All these resemble one another

1 “T call it Skimmer, from the manner of its collecting its food with the lower mandible, as it flies along the surface of the water” (Gen. of Birds, p. 52).

2 Other English names applied to it in America are ‘‘ Razorbill,” ‘¢Seissorbill,” and ‘* Shearwater.”

have the structure and appearance of TERNS (q.v.).

very closely, and, apart from their singularly-formed bill, Som authors make a family of the genus /’hynchops, but it seems needless to remove it from

the Larzde (GULL, vol, xi. p. 274). In breeding-habits the Skimmers thoroughly agree with the Terns, the largest species of which group they nearly equal in size, and indeed only seem to differ from them in the mode of taking their food, which of course is correlated with the extraordinary formation of their bill. X (A. N.)

SKIN DISEASES. These form a large and important class. In number they are very extensive, owing to the varied forms of morbid change which the skin texture may undergo, no less than to the different portions of the structure and its appendages which may be specially affected. Further, the modifications of the typical forms of these diseases which are to be observed have led to arrangements and classifications of very complex character and multiplied greatly their nomenclature. Skin diseases are regarded by the physician as of great importance, not only from the fact that morbid action in this texture must have a powerful influence on the general health and may bring in its train other maladies, but also because they are not unfrequently themselves the expression of constitu- tional conditions, inherited or acquired, the recognition of which is essential to their effectual treatment. In order to clearness of description it is necessary to make use of some method of classification. Various arrangements have been adopted by writers on the subject, but the following appears sufficient for the present purpose : °—

I. Disorders of the secreting apparatus (of the seba- ceous and sweat glands) ; If. Disorders specially relating to nutrition (hypertro- phies ; atrophies ; new formations ; pigmentary changes) ; III. Inflammatory affections (erythematous ; papular; vesicular ; pustular ; squamous or scaly) ; IV. Neuroses (nervous disorders) ; V. Parasitic affections (animal; vegetable).

I, DisorpErs of THE SecRETING ApraRaTus.—(1) O/ the Sweat Glands.— The chief morbid conditions are exees- sive sweating (hyperidrosis) and foetid sweating (bromt- drosis). Excessive sweating is a symptom observed in various diseases, such as phthisis and rheumatic fever, but it may exist apart from such conditions, and either be general, affecting the whole body, or confined to a part, such as the axillz, head, hands, feet, or, as in some rare instances, the one half of the body. Some persons habitually perspire, often to a great extent, on making any effort, yet never appear to suffer in health,

although the discomfort is considerable. Excessive perspiration may often be pre vented by the habitual use of the cold bath, and by tonics, such as iron, quinine, strychnia, dc. Locally, the use of astringent lotions of vinegar or a weak solution of lead will also be of service. Bromidrosis or fcetid sweating 1s often associated with the former condition, and it too may be general or local. It most frequently affects the feet, especially in those who have much fatigue, and is a souree of much personal discomfort as well as of annoyance to others. It is apparently due to rapid decomposition in the perspiration which has saturated the stockings, and for its treatment it is essential that these should be frequently changed and the feet washed several times a day, drie carefully, and dusted with some antiseptic powder, such as boracic or salicylic acid mixed with starch or French chalk. Hebra recommends the application to the feet of a composition of equal parts of olive oil and litharge laster spread upon linen and used twice a day. (2) Of the Sebaceous Glands.—Seborrhea is a term

3 For the structure of the skin see ANATOMY, vol. i. p. 897.

applied to describe an accumulation on the skin of the normal sebaceous secretion mixed up with dirt and form- ing scales or a distinct incrustation. On the head, where itis commonly seen, it may interfere with the nutrition of the hair and cause partial baldness. A form of this disease occurs in young infants. The main treatment is local, consisting in thorough cleansing of the parts. The crusts may be softened with oil and the affected skin regularly washed with soft soap and rectified spirit. The sebum frequently accumulates in the sebaceous ducts, giving rise to the minute black points so often noticed on the face, back, and chest in young adults, to which the term comedones is applied. A form of this disorder, but of larger size and white appearance, is termed milewm. These affections may toa large extent be prevented by strict attention to ablution and brisk friction of the skin, which will also often remove them when they begin to appear. ‘The retained secretion may be squeezed out or evacuated by incision and the skin treated with some simple sulphur application.

Acne is an eruption produced by inflammation of the sebaceous glands and hair follicles. It may occur in con- nexion with the preceding or

independently, and shows itself in the form of red pimples or papules which may become pustular and be attended with considerable surrounding irritation of the skin. This affection is like- wise most common in early adult life, and occurs on the chest and back as well as on the face, where it may, when of much extent, produce considerable disfigurement. It is apt to persist for months or even years, but usually in time disappears entirely, although slight traces may remain in the form of scars or stains upon the skin. Eruptions of this kind are sometimes produced by the continued internal use of certain drugs, such as the iodide or bromide of potassium. ‘The treatment is similar to that for the previous affection, viz., brisk friction of the skin, short of producing irritation, and the application of a sulphur lotion or ointment. Attention to the general health by suitable diet, tonics, exercise, &c., is a necessary adjuvant. A variety of this malady, to which the name acne rosacea is given, is a more severe and troublesome disorder than that already mentioned. It is characterized by great redness of the nose and cheeks, accompanied with nodular enlargements on the surface of the skin, which produce marked disfigurement. Although often seen in persons who live too freely, it is by no means confined to such, but may arise in connexion with disturb- ances of the general health, especially of the function of digestion, and in females with menstrual disorders. It is apt to be exceedingly intractable to treatment, which is here too, as in the preceding form, partly local and partly constitutional. Of internal remedies preparations of lodine and of arsenic are sometimes found of service.

Molluscum contagiosum belongs to this class of skin diseases. It consists of an enlargement of the sebaceous glands and occlusion of the ducts, and is seen most commonly on the face, body, or hands in children, or on the breasts in women. It is said to be contagious, but it 1s @ rare form of skin disease.

I. Disorpers arrromine Nurnirioy.—(1) ypertro- phies—A corn (clavus) is a local thickening of the skin, generally occurring on the toes. There is hypertrophy of the epidermis, and in the centre of the corn there is usually a still denser mass, which, pressing down upon the subjacent semsitive true skin, causes pain and may give rise to inflammation and suppuration in the part. When situated between the toes the corn is softer than when on the free surface of the foot. The treatment consists in maceration of the

hardened skin and the use of the knife or strong caustics. Salicylic acid combined with ether and collodion,

painted over the part, is said to be useful in the case of soft corns.

A wart (verruca) is an excrescence from the surface of the skin due to hypertrophy of the papillary layer of the cutis and of the epidermis. This form of growth may also occur on mucous membranes. Warts occasionally disappear spontaneously, or they may be excised, or care- fully touched with some strong caustic acid or alkali.

Ichthyosis or xeroderma consists of a general thicken- ing of the whole skin and marked accumulation of the epidermic elements, with atrophy of the sebaceous glands, giving rise to a hard, dry, scaly condition. It generally first appears in infancy, and is probably congenital. It differs in intensity and in distribution in different cases, and is generally little amenable to any but palliative remedies, such as the regular application of oily sub- stances, although it is not a fatal malady.

For elephantiasis Arabum, see vol. vii. p. 126.

(2) Atrophies.—The chief of these relate to the hair. Camties or whitening of the hair consists in the non- formation of the pigmentary matter which is normally present in the substance of the hair, and occurs generally as a slow senile change. It may, however, take place prematurely, in which case it is often hereditary; or it may be associated with degenerative changes taking place in the system. It is occasionally seen to occur temporarily in very young persons in connexion with some defective condition of the general health. Its development suddenly has not unfrequently been observed as the result of some strong mental emotion.

Alopecia, or baldness, is the loss of hair, which is most commonly a senile change and irremediable, or on the other hand may be premature, occurring either heredi- tarily or in connexion with some previous constitutional morbid state (e.g., after fevers or other blood poisons), in which latter case it may be only, although not always, temporary. It appears to depend upon

atrophic changes affecting the hair follicle, including obliteration of the capillary vessels,—the result of which is that strong hairs cease to be produced, and only feeble, short, and thin hair (lanugo) is formed, which soon falls off and is not repro- duced. Usually the whole skin of the hairy scalp under- goes thinning and other atrophic changes as well as the hair follicle. Sometimes the loss of hair occurs in distinct circular patches (alopecia areata), which tend to spread until the whole scalp is denuded. The treatment of temporary or premature baldness bears reference especially to any known conditions affecting the general health ; and tonics, baths, and other means to promote a vigorous skin function are useful. Stimulating liniments containing spirits and cantharides, the regular cléansing and moderate brushing of the parts, the application to the scalp of the constant current of electricity, and various other remedies appear to be of service in promoting the growth of hair.

(3) New Formations.—(a) Lupus is a disease character- ized by the formation in the skin of tubercles or nodules consisting of new cell growth which has no tendency to further development, but to retrograde change, leading to ulceration and destruction of the skin and other tissues in which it exists, and the subsequent formation of per- manent white scars. Lupus vulgaris is most commonly seen in early life, and occurs chiefly on the face, about the nose, cheeks, ears, &e., but it may also affect the skin of the body or limbs. It first shows itself in the form of small, slightly prominent nodules covered with thin crusts or scabs. These may be absorbed and removed at one point, but they tend to spread at another. Their dis- appearance is followed by a white permanent cicatrix. The disease may be superficial in which case both the

ulceration and resulting scar are slight (/upus non- exedens); or, on the other hand, the ulcerative process may be deep and extensive, destroying a large portion of the tissues of the nose or cheeks, and leaving deep marks with much disfigurement (lupus exedens). Another form of this disease, termed lupus erythematosus, is of compara- tively mild character, and occurs on the nose and adjacent portions of the cheeks in the form of red patches covered

with thin scales, underneath which are seen the widened openings of the sebaceous ducts,—this variety of the disease affecting specially that portion of the skin texture. It is very slow in disappearing, but does not leave any marked scar. Lupus is generally more frequently seen in women than in men, and it is held to be connected with a scrofulous constitution. Its treatment bears reference especially to this condition (see Scroruta). In the superficial variety the application of soothing ointments when there is much redness, and Squire's method of slight linear incisions to destroy the increased blood supply, are often serviceable. In the ordinary form the great principle of local treatment is to remove the new tissue growth. This is most readily done either by solid points of caustic, of which the nitrate of silver is perhaps the best, thrust into the tubercles to break them up, or by means of a scoop (Volkmann's spoon) to scrape away the diseased masses. Only by such means can the ulceration be arrested and healing brought about.

(b) Leprosy (elephantiasis Grecorum) may be regarded as belonging to this class of skin diseases, inasmuch as it consists in a new growth of cell material, like lupus, but with less tendency to disintegration and with a wider dis- tribution affecting the skin, mucous membranes, nerves, &e., all over the body. For its history and pathology see vol. xiv. p. 468 sg. Leprosy is not amenable to treat- ment, beyond attempts at palliation of the symptoms and by general hygiene.

(4) Pigmentary Changes.—Chloasma is an abnormal pigmentation, in the form of brown patches, either gene- rally diffused or confined to one part, such as the fore- head and face, and occasionally seen in women suffering from uterine ailments. Addison's disease is connected with a morbid condition of the suprarenal capsules (see Parnonocy), and is accompanied with general bronz- ing of the skin, together with anemia and great and increasing prostration. Leucoderma is a change in the pigmentation of the skin, whereby it becomes white in patches, with a tendency to spread and affect almost the whole surface, until a few dark areas alone remain to represent the original appearance of the skin. It is some- times called white leprosy, but has no relation to that disease, nor is it of any special significance as regards the health. Adbinism is an entire absence of pigment from the hair, skin, eyes, &c. The hair is usually white, and the skin exceedingly pale ; and the eye has a pinkish appearance. This condition is

congenital. It occasionally exists to a partial extent in any of the textures named.

III. InruammatTory Sxin Arrgections.—These embrace the following chief varieties:—(1) diffuse (erythema) ; (2) papular (lichen) ; (3) catarrhal (eczema) ; (4) vesicular (herpes, pemphigus); (5) pustular (impetigo); and (6) scaly (psoriasis, pityriasis).

(1) Diffuse—This variety includes erythema (see ERYSIPELAS) and its forms, particularly erythema nodosum, which consists of spots and patches of dark red colour and slightly elevated, appearing on the front of the legs and back of the arms in young persons, mostly females. The patches continue for a number of days and then become fainter. It is supposed to be connected with rheumatism, joint pains not unfrequently accompanying it. Urticaria or netile-rash is a diffuse redness of the skin, accompanied

with wheals of raised and paler appearance, not unlike the effect produced by the sting of nettles or of insects, and attended with great irritation and itching. Certain kinds of food, such as fruit and fish, produce this eruption in some persons, as also some drugs, such as opium. It is best treated by some soothing application, such as solution of sal volatile, to which a little chloral has been added, and by attention to the state of the alimentary canal. Roseola, which consists in the appearance of roge- coloured spots upon the body, is frequently seen in children, and is apt to be mistaken for measles, but has none of the accompanying febrile or catarrhal symptoms of that disorder, and is of brief duration. (2) Papular.—Lichen, an eruption consisting of small, thickly-set, and slightly-elevated red points, more or less widely distributed over the body, and in the young some- what resembling scarlet fever, but with only slight febrile symptoms and no sore throat, usually results from digestive derangements, but apparently may also arise from exposure to the sun, and it lasts but a short time. Some forms, however (e.g., lichen ruber), are of chronic character and difficult of treatment. The ordinary form requires little beyond attention to the digestive organs and the appli. cation of a soothing lotion or powder. The chronic forms are best treated by the administration of arsenic. Strophulus, or tooth-rash, or, as it is popularly termed, “red gum,” an affection very common in young infants, belongs to this class of skin disorders. (3) Catarrhal.—

Eczema, one of the most common and important of all skin diseases, consists of an inflammation of the true skin, of catarrhal character, together with the formation of papules, vesicles, or pustules, attended with more or less discharge, and with itching and_ other symptoms of irritation. It may be either acute or chronic, and presents itself in a variety of forms. As regards causation, it appears impossible to assign any one condition as giving rise to this disease. It occurs frequently im persons to all appearance in perfect health, and it may m such cases be a permanent or recurring affection during a whole lifetime. Again it is undoubtedly found in persons who possess a morbid constitution, such as the gouty or scrofulous; but apart from any such evident associations it seems in some instances itself distinctly hereditary. Sometimes it is set up as the result of local or general irritation of the skin in certain occupations, and it may exist in connexion with the presence of some other skin disease. It is much more common in men than in women. Numerous varieties of eczema are described, according to its site and duration; only the more inrportant of these can be alluded to. Acute eczema shows itself by redness and swelling of the skin, with the formation of minute vesicles, and attended with severe heat and irritation. Should the vesicles rupture, a raw moist surface is formed, from which a colourless discharge oozes, which when it accumulates forms thin crusts. The attack may be general over the greater portion of the body, or it may be entirely localized to a limb or other part. It usually lasts for a few weeks and then passes off, leaving, however, 4 liability to recurrence. Such attacks may occur as a result of digestive derangements, or in persons of rheumatic oF gouty habit, and they tend to appear at certain seasons, such as springtime. They are usually best treated by attention to the general health, and by a simple and carefully-regulated diet, while locally some soothing application, such as a weak lead lotion or a dusting powder of zinc, starch, or boracic acid, will be found of benefit. Chronic eczema shows itself in various forms, > which we note the most common. In eczema rubrum the disease affects a part, very often a limb, as a severe form of inflammation, with great redness, and weeping or oozing

of serous matter from the raw surface. It gives rise to

great irritation and pain, and may cause considerable

disturbance of the general health. It may last for years, with intervals of partial recovery, but easily recurring.

The skin of the limb becomes in time thickened and the

limb itself much swollen. In dry eczema the skin, though

irritable, remains dry and scaly. In pustular eczema, or ecema impetiginodes, in addition to the cutaneous inflam- mation there occur pustules which break and the purulent matter forms yellow crusts upon the skin. This form is very common on the heads of young children during the period of dentition. The treat- ment of chronic eczema depends in great measure upon the forni it assumes. Where there exists much irritation, soothing lotions or applications similar to those required for acute eczema are necessary ; but where irritation has subsided, stimulating ointments, such as those of zinc or white precipitate, are often of service. Constitutional remedies, such as iron, arsenic, &c., are an important and often essential part of successful treatment. . (4) Vesicular.—Herpes is an inflammation of the true skin, attended with the formation of isolated or grouped vesicles of various sizes upon a reddened base. They contain a clear fluid, and either rupture or dry up. Two well-marked varieties of herpes are frequently met with. (a) In herpes labialis et nasalis the eruption occurs about the lips and nose. It is seen in cases of certain acute febrile ailments, such as fevers, inflammation of the lungs, or even in a severe cold. It soon passes off. (%) In herpes zoster, zona, or shingles, the eruption occurs in the course of one or more cutaneous nerves, often on one side of the trunk, but it may be on the face, limbs, or other parts. It may occur at any age, but is probably more frequently met with in elderly people. The appearance of the eruption is usually preceded by severe stinging neuralgic pains for several days, and, not only during the continuance of the herpetic spots, but long after they have dried up and disappeared, these pains sometimes continue and give rise to great suffering. The disease seldom recurs. The most that can be done for its relief is to protect the parts with cotton wool or some dusting powder, while the pain may be allayed by opiates or bromide of potassium. Quinine internally is often of service.

Pemphigus consists in large blebs upon a red base. They contain clear or yellowish fluid. This disease appears to show itself most frequently on the

bodies and limbs of unhealthy or neglected children. The blebs give rise to much irritation, and when they burst leave raw ulcerated surfaces which are slow of healing. One variety of this malady (pemphigus foliaceus) affects the entire skin of the body, from which there exudes a constant discharge. This form is apt sooner or later to prove fatal

from its exhausting effects. The treatment is mainly con-

stitutional,—by good nourishment, iron, &ec.

(5) Pustular.—Impetigo, consisting of small pustules situated upon a reddened base, mostly occurs in children. There appears to be a contagious form of this malady. Ecthyma consists of large pustules of similar character on the body and limbs. The treatment of these ailments requires special attention to nutrition, since they usually occur In low states of health.

(6) Squamous or Scaly.—Psoriasis, an inflammatory affection of the true skin, attended with the formation of red spots or patches, which are covered with white silvery scales, may affect any portion of the surface of the body, but is most common about the elbows and knees, and on the head. There is as a rule comparatively little irrita- pe except at the outset, but there is an extensive shed-

Ing of the scales from the affected spots. Varieties of

this disease are described in relation to the size and dis- tribution of the patches. The causes of psoriasis have given rise to much discussion, and, while some authorities regard its appearance as in many instances connected with some constitutional morbid state, such as gout, rheumatism, &c., the majority deny any such relationship, and mention hereditary influence as the only recognizable cause, although it must be admitted that even this evidence is wanting in a large number of cases. The disease appears to be consistent with continued good health. It is usually obstinate to treat, and may, with intervals of comparative immunity, last a lifetime.

The remedies most serviceable are arsenic internally and the application externally of preparations of tar. Recently the employment of chrysophanic acid as an ointment or in solution has been resorted to with considerable success.

Pityriasis, a superficial inflammation of the skin, with the formation of minute branny scales, occurs most com- monly on the head, and is of chronic duration. The remedies most useful are alkaline lotions and tar prepara- tions. A variety of this disease (pityriasis rubra) affects the whole body, and is most intractable to treatment.

IV. Nevroszs (Nervous A fections).—Various disorders of nutrition of the skin occur in persons suffering from organic nervous diseases, such as bedsores, atrophic changes, eruptions, &c., but these belong to the symptoins of the several diseases with which they are associated. The most common of the neuroses of the skin is probably pruritus, which is an ailment characterized by intense itching of the surface of the body. It may occur in con- nexion with other morbid conditions, such as jaundice, diabetes, digestive disorders, &c., or as the result of the irritation produced by lice or other skin parasites. The most serious form is pruritus senilis, which affects old persons, and is often a cause of great suffering, depriving the patient of sleep (the malady being specially trouble- some during the night). In such cases it is probably due to atrophic changes in the skin. No eruption is visible, except such marks as are produced by scratching. The treatment consists in the removal of any apparent cause, and measures to strengthen the system, such as the use of quinine, iron, &c. Soothing lotions composed of solutions of alkalis conjoined with chloral, opium, hydrocyanic acid, &c., may be applied to the affected skin at bedtime.

V. Parasitic Diszases.—(1) Animal.—The following are the chief animal parasitic diseases. Phthiriasis is produced by the presence of lice (pediculi), of which there are three varieties, infesting respectively the head, body, and pubis. The cause is in most instances uncleanliness, but occasion- ally in the aged, and in persons suffering from chronic diseases, there appears to be a liability to the development of pediculi, notwithstanding every care to prevent it. The irritation produced by the parasite and the scratching thus occasioned may give rise to abrasions of the skin and eczematous

conditions. The treatment consists in thorough cleansing of the parts and the use of parasiticides, such as red or white precipitate, carbolic lotions (one in twenty), or a decoction or ointment of stavesacre. Where clothing is infested it should be destroyed or subjected to a strong heat to get rid both of the parasites and their ova. Scabies or itch is a skin affection due to the Acarus scabier (see Mire). The female insects burrow into the upper layers of the skin and deposit their eggs in the tract thus made. Great irritation of the skin is set up, and scratching pro- duces eruptions which aggravate the condition, especially at night. The most frequent sites are the parts between the fingers, or the wrists, but by scratching the disease may be conveyed to any part of the body, and in extreme cases the greater portion of the surface of the trunk and limbs may be involved. In infants the feet and buttocks

are the parts which suffer. The eruption in mild cases has at first the appearance of small raised vesicles with clear fluid, but it may become pustular or eczematous, and extensive excoriations may result. The treatment consists in thorough cleansing of the skin and the inunction of some form of parasiticide,—sulphur ointment being on the whole the best. The application should be discontinued after a few days, otherwise irritation may be produced by its use.

(2) Vegetable parasites consist of fungous growths in the texture of the skin and hair, which are characterized microscopically by minute round bodies or spores often coalesced into clusters or bead-like arrangements, and jointed filaments or mycelium of elongate and branching form. They are readily detected by removing a hair, or scraping a portion of the affected skin, treating it with a strong alkaline solution, and submitting it to microscopic examination, by which the slight differences in form and arrangement of the varieties of the parasite can be easily made out. The common name “tinea ” is applied to these parasitic affections. Tinea tonsurans, or ringworm (para- site Tricophyton tonsurans), is a very common form of parasitic disease. It occurs as a result of contagion in

the heads of children, and begins as circular patches with |

a scaly appearance and red border, which tend to spread. The hair at the part becomes thin and brittle and is easily removed. It is often extremely obstinate to treatment, and numerous agents have been proposed as specifics, not one of which, however, appears to possess infallible virtues. Among the best are oleate of mercury (5 to 10 per cent.) and other mercurial preparations, all which, how- ever, must be used with care, and carbolic or sulphurous acid with glycerin, iodine, cantharides, &c.; but isolation of the patient as far as possible, together with strict medical supervision, are essential for the effectual treat- ment of this disorder. Tinea sycosis, or ringworm atffect- ing the beard, and tinea circinata, or ringworm affecting the body, require to be dealt with in a similar manner. Tinea favosa, or favus (parasite Achorion Schénleinit), is less frequently seen than the preceding. It occurs mostly on the scalp in unhealthy and neglected children, but it may affect the skin in any part of the body. It is characterized by round, yellow, sulphur-coloured, cup-shaped spots or crusts, which, when occurring extensively upon the scalp, have a peculiar mousy odour. It is very destructive of hair growth, and is most difficult to cure. The best treat- ment is removal of the hairs by epilation, and the employ- ment of some of the parasiticides already mentioned, together with attention to the healthy nutrition of the patient. Tinea versicolor, or pityriasis versicolor (parasite Microsporon furfur), is a brown-coloured rash of scaly char- acter occurring mostly in the form of spots or patches on the skin of the trunk, particularly on the front of the chest or between the shoulders, but sometimes also upon the arms and legs. It affects adults in whom the skin- function is not sufficiently attended to, or those who are in ill-health. The parasite affects the epidermic cells, and is readily made out by the microscope, thus enabling the disease to be distinguished from other skin disorders to which it often bears resemblance. It is best treated by the regular washing and brisk friction of the parts, and by the use of some of the applications above referred to. (i GAs) SKINNER, Joun (1721-1807), author of 7’ullochgorum and The Ewie wi the Crookit Horn, was an Episcopalian minister in the parish of Longside, Aberdeenshire. He held this charge for more than sixty-four years. The son of an Aberdeenshire schoolmaster, born at Balfour in 1721, he had been intended for the Presbyterian ministry, but, after passing through Marischal College, Aberdeen, and teaching

for a few years, he took orders in the Episcopal Church, and was appointed to the charge of Longside in 1749, There was a considerable remnant of Episcopacy in Aber- deenshire, but very soon after Skinner joined it it became, in consequence of the Jacobite rebellion in 1745, a much persecuted remnant. The young pastor's church was burnt; his house was plundered ; for some years he had to minister to his congregation by stealth; and in 1753 information was lodged that he had broken the law by officiating to more than four persons besides his own family, and he suffered imprisonment for six months, After 1760 the penal laws were less strictly enforced, but throughout the century the lot of the Episcopalian ministers in Scotland was far from comfortable, and only the humblest provisions for church services were tolerated, Skinner's robust nature, however, made light of all priva- tions; and his kindliness, humour, conviviality, ready wit, and generous force of character made him personally a favourite far and near outside the bounds of his own denomination. In 1789 he was presented with the freedom of the town in whose jail he had been a prisoner for conscience sake. It is by his songs, limited in quantity, but some of them of the very highest quality, that Skinner is generally known. An interesting corte- spondence took place between him and Burns, who con- sidered T'ullochgorum "the best Scotch song Scotland ever saw," and addressed the reverend poet with touching respect. His best songs had stolen into print ; a col- lection was not published till 1809, under the title of Amusements of Leisure Hours. Such literally they seem to have been. Throughout his life he was a vigorous student, and in spite of his scanty resources established a more than local reputation for scholarship, while, according to his latest biographer, he had a paramount influence on the doctrinal views of his clerical brethren in the north. He published in 1788 an Ecclesiastical History of Scot- land, in the form of letters; and other works in the same form, which best suited his easy unaffected strength, were collected and published by his son after his death (June 1807), having previously had a wide circulation in manu- script. His prose style has the happiness, ease, and lucid force of a natural master of language. The reasoning of his answer to Beattie's Hssay on Truth is an evidence of his robust clearness of intellect.

A minutely aeeurate biography of Skinner, in eonnexion with the history of Episeopacy in the north of Scotland, was published by the Rev. W. Walker in 1883. An edition of his songs and poems by Mr H. G. Reid, 1859, eontains an interesting memolr.

SKIPTON, an ancient market-town in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on the river Aire, on the Leeds and Liverpool Canal, and on the Midland Railway, 9 miles north-west of Keighley and 15 south-east of Settle. It 1 substantially built of stone. The strong castle built by Robert de Romille in the time of the Conqueror was partly demolished in 1649, but was restored by the countess of Pembroke. Of the ancient building of De Romille all that now remains is the western doorway of the immer castle. In the castle grounds are the ruins of the ancient parish church of St John. The church of the Holy Trinity, in the Decorated Gothic, was also partly demolished during the Civil War, but was restored by the countess of Pembroke, and again underwent renovation in 1854. The free grammar school was founded in 1548 by William Ermysted, a canon of St Paul's, London. The town has a considerable general trade. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 4245 acres) in 1871 was 6078 and in 1881 it was 9091.

Skipton was the capital of the aneient distriet of Craven. At the Norman aeeession it beeame part of the possessions of Ear: Edwin, and was granted to Robert de Romille, who built thc castle about the end of the reign of William. Subsequently it went to

~~—

-Rdward IJ. bestowed it on Piers de Gaveston.

the Albemarle family, but was again vested in the crown, and In 1811 it came

into the possession of the Cliffords. The castle was taken by the

Parliamentary forces in 1645 and demolished in 1649.

SKITTLES. This English game, which somewhat resembles American bowls (see vol. iv. p. 180), was formerly known as Kails (Fr. quilles), and first came into vogue in England in the 14th century. Nine large oval-headed pins with flat bottoms, and made of a hard wood,

are set up on a wooden frame, three pins square on each

side. An angle and not an even side of the said square is presented towards the player, who stands at the distance of 91 feet. ‘There may be one or two players a-side; and the object of each side is to knock down, or “floor,” the

greatest number of pins in the least possible number of

throws, which are generally two or three, though they may extend to five, according to agreement. The roundish ball used for throwing weighs from 8 to 141b, and in fair playing only one step forward is allowed in delivery. A firm grasp should be taken of the ball in a slightly slanting position, so as to strike the fore pin on the shoulder and then reach the back ones. A player who clears the board in two throws may be considered a good all-round one. In different localities there are minor variations in playing

— the game.

SKUA,! the name for a long while given to certain of the Laridx (see GULL, vol. xi. p. 274), which sufficiently differ in structure, appearance, and habits to justify their separation as a distinct genus, Stercorarius (Lestris of some writers), or even Subfamily, Stercorarune. Swift of flight, powerfully armed, but above all endowed with extraordinary courage, they pursue their weaker cousins, making the latter disgorge their already-swallowed prey, which is nimbly caught before it reaches the water; and this habit, often observed by sailors and fishermen, has

_ made these predatory and parasitic birds locally known as

“Teasers,” ‘‘Boatswains,”? and, from a misconception of their intent, ‘“‘Dunghunters.” On land, however, whither they resort to breed, they seek

food of their own taking, whether small mammals, little birds, insects, or berries ; but even here their uncommon courage is exhibited, and they will defend their homes and offspring with the utmost spirit against any intruder, repeatedly shooting down on man or dog that invades their haunts, while every bird

almost, from an Eagle downwards, is repelled by buffets or something worse.

The largest species known is the Stercorarius catarrhactes of ornith- ologists —the ‘‘Skooi” or “ Bonxie” of the Shetlanders, a bird in size equalling a Herring-Gull, Larus argentatus. The sexes do not differ appreciably in colour, which is of a dark brown, somewhat lighter beneath ; but the primarics have at the base a patch of white, visible even when the wings are closed, and forming, when they are spread, a conspicuous band. The bill and feet are black. This is a species of comparatively limited range, breeding only in some two or three localitics in the Shetlands, about halfa dozen in the Firoes,3 and hardly more in Iceland. Out of the breeding-season it shows itself in most parts of the North Atlantic, but never seems

: Thus written by Hoier (circa 1604) as that of a Feroese bird (hodie Skiir) an example of which he sent to Clusius (Mzotie. Auctarium, p. 367). The word being thence copied by Willughby has been generally adopted by English authors, and applied by them to all the congeners of the species to which it was originally peculiar.

This hame in seamen’s ornithology applies to several other kinds of birds, and, though perhaps first given to those of this group, is nowadays most commonly used for the species of TROPIC-BIRD (q.v.), the projecting middle feathers of the tail in each kind being generally Jikened to the marlinespike that is identified with the eel position ; but perhaps the authoritative character assumed

y oth bird and officer originally suggested the name. 1a “ long been subjected to persecution in these islands, a reward wae paid for its head. On the other hand, in the Shetlands a fine eS ae for its death, as it was believed to protect the sheep deal = Yet for all this it would long ago have been extirpated the and have ceased to be a British bird in all but name, but for

to stray further south than Gibraltar or Morocco, and it is therefore a matter of much interest to find the Southern Ocean inhabited by a bird—the ‘Port Egmont Hen” of Cook’s Voyages—which so closely resembles the Skua as to have becn for a long while regarded as specifically identical with it, but is now usually recognized as distinct under the name of S. antarcticus. This bird, character- ized by its stont deep bill and want of rufous tint on its lower plumage, has an extensive range, and would seem to exhibit a tendency to further differentiation, since Mr Saunders, in a mono- graph of the group (Proc. Zool. Society, 1876, pp. 317-382), says that it presents three local forms—one occurring from New Zealand to Norfolk Island and past Kerguelen Land to the Cape of Good Hope, another restricted to the Falklands, and the third hitherto only met with near the south-polar ice. On the western coast of South America, making its way into the Straits of Magellan, and passing along the coast so far as Rio Janeiro, is found S. chilensis, distinguished among other characters by the cinnamon tint of its lower plumage. Three other smaller species of the genus are known, and each is more widely distributed than those just men- tioned, but the home of all is in the more northern parts of the earth, though in winter two of them go very far south, and, crossing the equator, shew themselves on the seas that wash the Cape of Good Hope, Australia, New Zealand, and Peru. The first of them is S. pomatorhinus (often incorrectly spelt pomarinus), about the size of a common Gull, Larus canus, and presenting, irrespective of sex, two very distinct phases of plumage, one almost wholly sooty-brown, the other particoloured—dark above and white on the breast, the sides of the neck being of a glossy straw-colour, and the lower part of the neck and the sides of the body barred with brown ; but a singular feature in the adults of this species is that the two median tail-feathers, which are elongated, have their shaft – twisted towards the tip, so that in flight the lower surfaces of their webs are pressed together vertically, giving the bird the appearance of having a disk attached to its tail. Thesccond and third species so closely resemble each other, except in size, that their distinctness was for many years unperceived, and in consequence their noien- clature is an almost bewildering puzzle. Mr Saunders (loc. cit.) thinks that the larger of them,

which is about the size of a Black- headed Gull, should stand as S. crepidatus, and the smaller as S. parasiticus, though the latter name has been generally used for the larger when that is not termed, as it often is, S. richardsoni—a name that correctly applies only to whole-coloured examples, for this species too is dimorphic. Even its proper English name‘ is disputable, but it has been frequently called the Arctic Gull or Arctic Skua, and itis by far the commonest of the genus in Britain, and perhaps throughout the northern hemisphere. It breeds abundantly on many of the Scottish islands, and in most countries lying to the northward. The nest is generally in long heather, and contains two eggs of a dark olive-colour, suffused with still darker brown patches. Birds of either phase of plumage pair indiscriminately, and the young shew by their earliest feathers whether they will prove whole or particoloured ; but in their immature plumage the upper surface is barred with pale reddish- brown. The smallest species, commonly known in English as the Long-tailed or Buffon’s Skua, is not known to exhibit the remark- able dimorphism to which the two preceding are subject. It breeds abundantly in some seasons on the fells of Lapland, its appearance depending chiefly on the presence of lemmings (Lemmus norvegicus), on which it mainly preys. All these tliree species occasionally visit the southern coasts of Europe in large flocks, but their visitations are highly irregular. (A. N.)

SKUNK. The existence of the animal to which this name® is applied was first notified to European naturalists as long ago as 1636, in Gabriel Sagard-Theodat’s Ilistory of Canada, where, in commencing his quaint account of it (p. 748), he describes it as “enfans du diable, que les Hurons appelle Scangaresse, ... une beste fort puante,” &c. This fully shows in what reputa- tion the skunk was then held, a reputation which has lasted to the present time, and has become so notorious that the mere name of skunk is an opprobrious epithet and can hardly be used in polite society.

The skunks, for there are several species of these animals, are members of the Meline or badger-like sec- tion of the family Jfustelide, which contains also the

(Edmonston and Scott of Melby), whose exertions to that effect deserve the praise and recognition of all ornithologists.

4 It is the ‘“‘Fasgadair” of the Hebrides, the ‘‘Shooi” of the Shetlands, and the ‘‘Scouti-allen”’ of the fishermen on the east coast of Scotland.

5 Probably derived from “ Seecawk,” the Cree name for the skunk. Another form given is ‘‘ seganku.”

martens, stoats, otters, &c., and forms the largest family of the Arctoidea or bear-like division of the Land Carni- vora (see the article Mammatia, vol. xv. p. 439-40, where the zoological characters of these groups are given in detail).

The common skunk (Mephitis mephitica) is a native of North America, extending from Hudson’s Bay southwards to Guatemala in Central America. It is a beautiful little animal, about the size of a cat, though of a stouter and heavier build, with rich lustrous black fur, strikingly

varied on the back by a very variably shaped patch or streak of white. Its muzzle is long and pointed, its eyes sharp and bead-like, and its grey or white tail is long and unusually bushy.

The following account of the habits and disposition of the skunk is extracted from Dr C. Hart Merriam’s Mam- mals of the Adirondack Region, New York, 1884 :—

‘‘The skunk preys upon mice, salamanders, frogs, and the eggs of birds that nest on or within reach from the ground. At times he eats carrion, and if he chances to stumble upon a hen’s nest the eggs are liable to suffer ; and once in a while he acquires the evil habit of robbing the hen-roost, but as a rule skunks are not addicted to this vice.

“Of all our native mammals perhaps no one is so universally abused and has so many unpleasant things said about it as the innocent subject of the present biography; and yet no other species is half so valuable to the farmer. Pre-eminently an insect- eater, he destroys more beetles, grasshoppers, and the like than all our other mammals together, and in addition to these he devours vast numbers of mice.

“He does not evince that dread of man that is so manifest in the vast majority of our mammals, and when met during any of his circumam bulations rarely thinks of running away. He is slow in movement and deliberate in action and does not often hurry him- self in whatever he does. His ordinary gait is a measured walk, but when pressed for time he breaks into a low shuffling gallop. It is hard to intimidate a skunk, but when once really frightened he manages to get over the ground at a very fair pace.

“Skunks remain active throughout the greater part of the year in this region, and hibernate only during the severest portion of the winter. They differ from most of our hibernating mammals in that the inactive period is apparently dependent solely on the temperature, while the mere amount of snow has no influence whatever upon their movements.

“Skunks, particularly when young, make very pretty pets, being attractive in appearance, gentle in disposition, intcresting in manners, and cleanly in habits—rare qualities indeed! They are playful, sometimes mischievous, and manifest considerable affection for those who have the care of them. Their flesh is white, tender, and sweet, and is delicious eating.

“Skunks have large families, from six to ten young being com- monly raised each season ; and as arule they all live in the same hole until the following spring.”

SK V—S K V

We now come to the consideration of the remarkable and overpowering odour which has brought the skunk into such evil notoriety, and which is not the mere smel] of the animal itself, as in the case of most other eyjl. smelling mammals, but arises from the much-modified secretion of the anal glands. These glands, although present in all Justelide, are especially developed in the skunks, and are peculiar for being so entirely under the control of the animal that at ordinary times, as Dr Merriam has stated, the animal is enabled to be both cleanly and free from smell. The glands which secrete the odoriferous fluid are modifications of the ordinary anal glands possessed by nearly all Carnivora, but in the skunks they are enormously enlarged, entirely surround the rectum, and are provided with thick muscular gizzard-like coats. The two ducts leading from these glands open

at the tips of two small conical papillae placed just inside the anus, in such a position that by everting the anus the animal can protrude them externally, and with them can guide the direction of the jet of nauseous fluid, which is often propelled by the powerful muscles surrounding the glands to a distance of from 8 to 12 feet.

It is almost needless to state that the old stories about the skunk's smell arising from its urine, and of its splash- ing the fluid about with its tail are both entirely without foundation. The secretion itself is a clear yellowish liquid, with a marvellously penetrating ammoniacal and nauseous smell. So powerful and penetrating is this smell that Dr Merriam says, '"'I have known the scent to become strikingly apparent in every part of a well-closed house, in winter, within five minutes time after a skunk had been killed at a distance of more than a hundred yards," and under favourable conditions it may be distinctly perceived at a distance of more than a mile; instances are also on record of persons having become entirely unconscious after inhaling the smell. On the other hand it is said to act as a potent remedy in cases of asthma and similar diseases, but to most people such a remedy would be almost worse than the disease itself.

The other species of skunk are the following :—

The Long-tailed Skunk (Mephitis macrura), a native of central and southern Mexico, differs from the common species by generally having two white stripes along its sides, and by its muc longer and bushier tail.

The little Striped Skunk (Mephitis putorius), found in the southern United States, and ranging southwards to Yucatan and Guatemala, is much smaller than M. mephitica, and its colouring is of a very peculiar and striking nature, cousisting of four interrupted longi- tudinal white stripes on a black ground, the general aspect of the animal being one of the most beautiful and striking in all this brightly marked family. Its skull also differs to such an extent from that of the common skunk that this species has been separated as a distinct genus under the name of Spilogale, but there is hardly sufficient reason for this.

Finally, the Conepatl (Conepatus maparito), the skunk of tropical America, ranging from Texas to Chili and Patagonia, differs still more from the true

skunks, although in colour it is almost pre- cisely similar to the common species, varying in the same way an to the same remarkable extent in the relative development of the black and white. Its build is heavier than in Mephitis ; its snout and head are more pig-like ; aud its nostrils open downwards an forwards instead of laterally on the sides of the inuzzle. Its skull has many special characters, and its tecth are different in shape and, as a rule, in number also, the first minute premolar of Mephitis being almost invariably absent, so that its dental formula is only i%, ct, pm}, m$=82.

For deseriptions of the anal glands see Wyman, Pr. Bost. Soc., i. p. 110, 1844; Warren, Pr. Bost. Soc., iii, p. 175, 1851; Parker, Ann. Nat., Vv. D. 946, 1871; Chatin, Ann. Sci. Nat., [5], xix. p. 100, 1874; and for general descriptive accounts see Allen, Bull. Harvard Coll., i. p. 178, 1869; Coues, Fur-bearing Animals, PP. 187-260, 1877; Merriam, wé supra. (0.7)

SKVIRA, a district town of European Russia, in the government of Kieff, 77 miles south-west of Kiefi, and 27 miles from the Fastova railway-junction. It is merely a big village, with 14,200 inhabitants, mostly engaged in agrr culture, and has municipal institutions only as the scat of

; Sk vy={88 4

the administration of the district. ‘There is a considerable export of grain and cattle from the district, which is fertile and has many villages of from 3000 to 5000 inhabitants. In the 14th century Skvira was a far more important town than now, but the wars destroyed it, so that two centuries later it was left uninhabited ; it was settled anew by Prince Rozinski, and the population slowly reached the ‘number of 1000 by the end of the last century. The town ‘has grown rapidly during the last ninety years.

SKYE, the largest island of the Inner Hebrides, Scot- land, is situated between the mainland of Inverness-shire, within which county it is included, and the group of the Outer Hebrides. It lies between 57° 1’ 12” and 57° 42’ 30” N. lat. and 5° 38’ 50” and 6° 47’ 8” W. long. It is ‘separated from the mainland at its eastern corner by Loch Alsh and Kyle Rhea, the channel at the narrowest point having a breadth of only about 3 furlongs. Southwards Kyle Rhea widens out into the Sound of Sleat, and to the west of Loch Alsh there is a sudden widening of the gap to the extent of

about 9 miles. Along the eastern shore are the islands of Pabba, Scalpa, Raasay, Fladda, and Rona. The Minch separating Lewis and the mainland bounds Skye on the north, and the Little Minch to the north- west separates it from North Uist and Harris. The total area is 411,703 acres or 643 square miles. The coast- line is extremely irregular, abounding in inlets of a great variety of form and size, and in the north and west it is wildly precipitous. The island is naturally divided into three parts, each marked off by its distinctive geology and scenery. By much the largest division lies to the north of a line drawn from Loch Brittle to the head of Loch Sligachan. In this area the rocks are almost wholly varieties of basalt, disposed in nearly horizontal sheets, which give a singular tabular shape to the hills and ter- raced forms to the slopes. To the east of Loch Snizort are the basaltic groups which include the Storr Rock (2360 feet), with its curious columns, and the Quiraing (1774 feet), with its verdant platform in the centre of a range of rugged cliffs. In the north-west are Macleod's Tables (1601 feet) and some smaller summits. The central division may be defined along its southern border by a line drawn from Loch Slapin to Broadford. Its rocks are almost wholly of volcanic origin, and belong mainly to two groups, each characterized by its peculiar mountain 'outlines. The dark gabbros and dolerites form the jagged ridges of the Cuillins, and reach in Scuir-na-Gillean a height of 3167 feet, and in Blaaven 3042 feet. To the north-east of the Cuillins tower in striking contrast the pyramidal Red Mountains, consisting of granite, syenite, quartz-porphyry, and various allied rocks, and reaching in Glamaig a height of 2670 feet. 'The third division in- cludes all the rest of the island, and consists of two toler- ably distinct tracts. 'The more northerly of these lies along the base of the Red Hills, and forms the narrow _ part of Skye between Strathaird and Broadford Bay. It

 composed mainly of Secondary rocks (Lias and Oolite),

through which the eruptive masses of the Red Hills have | been thrust. The more southerly part comprises the dis-

trict of Sleat, and consists of red sandstone (Torridon sand-

stone or Cambrian), rising in Scuir-na-Coinnich to 2401 feet, and of various crystalline schists and quartzites which stretch from Loch Alsh along the Sound of Sleat to the southern point of the island. A considerable tract of

lime- stone lies in the centre of Strath Parish, some of which has been altered by the eruptive rocks into a pure white

marble. There are several inland lochs of considerable size, | the largest being Loch Coruisk, remarkable for the gloomy _ grandeur of its situation in the heart of the Cuillins.

14 On account of the damp climate the land is better adapted for ‘aring sheep and cattle than for tillage. A large number of cattle

a.

of the West Highland breed are grazed on the moors. The sheep are principally blackfaced, but some Cheviots are also kept. The

greater portion of the inhabitants are croftcrs, who inhabit chiefly miscrable huts with a fireplace in the middle of the floor, the smoke escaping by a hole in the roof. The number of crofts in Skye, according to the report of the Crofters Commission 1884, was 2051. The number of families ejected by decrees from their holdings between 1840 and 1860 was 5012, representing a popula- tion of 25,060, and between 1860 and 1883 1948, representing a population of 9740. Many of the croftcrs support themselves partly by fishing. In the Loch Carron and Skye district the number of boats in 1884 was 950, cmploying 2904 men and boys. From 20,627 in 1821 the population of Skye had increased to 23,082 in 1841, but by 1871 it had decreased to 17,330 and in 1881 to 16,889, of whom 16,099 were Gaelic-speaking. The number of females was 8903 and of males 7986. Portrec, the principal town, has a population of 893.

See, besides the works referred to under Hesripes, Alexander Smith’s Summer

in Skye, 1865; Robert Buchanan’s The Hebrid Isles, 1883; and Report of the Crofters Commission, 1838/4.

SLANDER. See Lrpet.

SLATE is an argillaceous rock of various colours—blue, green, purple, grey, and black—and a peculiar structure by which it readily splits into thin plates or lamine. It is of sedimentary origin, being primarily deposited on ocean floors as fine mud formed by the waste and denuda- tion of pre-existing rocks, and afterwards compressed, hardened, and altered into compact rock. Slate beds occur mainly in the Cambrian, Silurian, and Devonian formations—frequently alternating with bands of grit and limestone, or interstratified with felspathic lava or ashes— and, being tilted up from their original horizontal or nearly horizontal position, stretch across wide districts in a series of undulations, which rise to the surface in crests, or dip into troughs underground and form angles of every inclina- tion with the horizon.!

Slate rock splits along cleavage planes which are dis- tinct from and independent of original stratification. These planes are, as a rule, vertical or highly inclined, and intersect the lines of bedding at various angles, but some- times coincide with them. The strike of cleavage is generally parallel with that of the slate beds, and a uni- form direction is often maintained over wide areas, as in North Wales, where it is nearly north-north-east and south- south-west, while in Shropshire it is north-east and south- west, and in Pembrokeshire north-by-west and south-by-east. This peculiar cleavage structure is believed to be the result of a combination of intense forces, chiefly lateral pressure acting at right angles to the planes of cleavage.

Contraction, compression, shearing, and other powerful forces have caused great disturbances in slate beds, since they were first thrown down as fine sediment, and the results are seen in the foldings, contortions, fissures, rents, and dislocations that now exist. The fissures often follow well-defined courses and form divisional planes termed joints,—some running parallel with the strike and called strike joints, otlers running in the direction of the dip and called dip joints. Dykes of greenstone and other

1 The following table shows the older scdimentary formations in which slate beds mainly occur, in the order of superposition :— Primary or Paleozoic Rocks. Permian. Magnesian limestone, marls, sandstones, &c. Carboniferous. Coal measures, limestone, slate, &c. Devonian. Old red sandstone, slates, &c. Ludlow group. Wenlock. Upper Llandovery. (Lower

Llandovery. Caradoc and Bala. Llandeilo, Arenig, Tremadoc. Lingula flags. Menevian beds. Cambrian. Cambrian grits, conglomerates, and slates. Primitive crystalline rocks, Gneiss, schists, &c.

Upper.

| Silurian, 1

(

Lower,

volcanic matter, and also veins of quartz, intersect the beds, and the surfaces of rents are frequently baked by heat ejected from the interior. Faults also occur, and cause displacements of the beds by upheaval or down- throw of one or other side of a rent.

Several varieties of clay slate are met with, and are char- acterized by the mineral that chiefly prevails. The colour —yvarying shades of blue, green, and purple being the most common—depends mainly on the presence of iron and the form in which it exists. The common roofing slate of com- merce is generally fine-grained, and combines great strength and durability with moderate weight. It is also very dense, 1 cubic foot weighing over 170 hb, while according to Mr Wilkinson it takes on an average 20,000 ib to crush 1 cubic inch.

Certain varieties of slate, however, are soft and perish- able, particularly the black carbonaceous kinds. Cubes of iron pyrites frequently occur in slate rock, and are generally deleterious owing to their tendency to decompose and fall out, but this is not always the case, as some of the most durable slates are sprinkled with pyrites without detriment.

The following percentage analysis of an average sample of Welsh roofing slate is given by Prof. Hull :!—

ISHb\2 onpepmoongoaopoDnence 60°50 | Magnesia…….....1s+0+ 2°20 Abe otey gyaqopecacandooaas NOHO || OES Gonnsacodsoucoconsode 3°18 Iron (protoxide)..... GPCR) || SiOSks, .coseonsnsonansscnpnoer 2°20 EVING Mi racesesaee oaeartunace WALD, || VAIS cchonassenoncosnco0 3°30

Slate has been used for roofing during many centuries, and it is said that some of the old castles of North Wales—such as Carnarvon and Conway—were covered with this material And no doubt the better class of houses, situated in the neighbourhood of slate beds, would be roofed with slates obtained by rough surface digging, or from blocks exposed by mountain streams and split by the action of the weather, long before regular quarrying operations commenced. The Delabole quarries of Cornwall had acquired considerable importance as far back as the 16th century, and some of the Welsh slate quarries are very old, as are those of Angers in France. But the slate industry belongs mainly to the present century and latter part of the 18th; and since the open- ing up of the country by sea and land communications the progress and development of slate quarries have been great and rapid. The largest and most valuable quarries of North Wales are worked in the Cambrian and Lower Silurian beds, those of Llanberis and Penrhyn being worked in the former, and the Festiniog quarries in the latter. Important quarries are worked in Cumberland (Lower Silurian), Westmoreland, and Lancashire (Upper Silurian), and also in Devon and Cornwall (Devonian and Carboni- ferous), the lake districts being specially noted for their rich green slates. Some of the western and midland districts of Scotland—mainly Argyleshire, Dumbartonshire, and Perthshire—produce very strong and durable slates (Lower Silurian and Cambrian), the largest and most important quarries being at Ballachulish in Argyllshire, where 15,000 tons are annually made. The Scotch slates are chiefly blue in colour, but thin beds of green are found in some of the central districts.

Slate is now almost universally used for roofing houses and buildings of every description, and for such purposes it is unequalled, the better sorts possessing all the qualities necessary for protection against wind, rain, and storm. The finer varieties are made into writing slates, and in districts where cross cleavage exists slate pencils are made. Slabs are also manufactured,

and, being readily cut, planed, dressed, and enamelled, are used for chimney pieces, billiard tables, wall linings, cisterns, paving, tomb-

1 Building and Ornamental Stones of Great Britain and Foreign Countries, 1872.

stones, ridge rolls, and various other architectural and industrial purposes.

Slate rocks are quarried both above ground and below ground according as they lie near to or distant from the surface. When ther are near the surface, and their dip corresponds with the slope of the ground, they are in the most favourable position, and are worked in terraces or galleries formed along the strike of the beds and having a height of about 50 feet. The galleries are generally carried on in sections of 10 yards, worked across the beds, and may rise to any height or be sunk below the surrounding level by excavations. When the rock is much removed from the surface, or inconveniently situated for open workings, it is quarried in under ground chambers reached by levels driven through the intervening mass and across or along the beds. Or it may be necessary to sink shafts as in coal-pits before the rock is arrived at, but the cost of doing so forms a serious drawback. Inclines, waggons, tramways, and other machinery are employed in slate quarries as in other quarries, to suit the special circumstances and position of the opera. tions, and necd not be detailed.

The sections of a gallery are generally worked by crews of six men, who undertake to perform all operations of quarrying, split. ting, and dressing at fixed rates. The rock is bored by jumper drills directed and turned by the hand and driven by hammers, When the bore is short and of small diameter one man can do the work, holding the jumper with one hand and using the hammer with the other. But when a large mass of rock has to be thrown down a bore 4 to 6 feet deep and a diameter of 2 to 8 inchesis required and three men are employed,—one to guide and turn the jumper and two to drive it with heavy hammers. Bores of inter- mediate size are made by two men, one holding and the other driving the drill. When the boring has to be done on a steep face a staging is fixed to the rock or suspended from the top by means of ropes. The explosive generally used is rock-blasting powder,

being the most suitable for the heaving force required to throw out or detach masses of rock without much splintering, which would destroy the blocks for slate making. Advantage 1s taken of the natural euts or joints in blasting, as the rock is readily thrown or worked off these. From the mass thrown out by the blast, or loosened so as readily to come away by the usc of crowbars, the men carefully sclect and sort all good blocks and send them in waggons to the slate huts to be split and dresscd into slates. Two men are employed at-this operation—one splitting and the other dressing, performing their work in a sitting posture. The splitter placesa block on end between his knees, and with chisel and mallet splits it into as many plates as possible of the usual thickness for roofing purposes—namely, quarter of an inch more or less acconae to the size and strength required. These plates are then place horizontally by the dresser on a vertical iron " stand," and cut with a sharp knife into slates of various sizes suitable for the market (from 30 in. x 16 in, to 10 in. x 6 in.). Certain sizes are designated by names from the peerage, such as princesses (24 in. x 14 ins.), duchesses (24×12), marchionesses (22×11), countesses (20 × 10), viscountesses (18×9), ladies (16×10), &c. In every slate rock there is a large amount of waste or bad rock, which is thrown away as rubbish—the proportion of good to bad varying from one in twelve touex thirty. Attempts are being made at present to have-+t*is waste material manufactured into some article of indus- trial value ; and, as it consists ®iicfly of silica and alumina, these attempts should prove successful.

The slate industry of the British Isles is now of very considerable importance, that of North Wales in particular being immense. According to the census of 1881 the number of slate quarriers m the United Kingdom «mounted to 15,765, while over half a million tons of slates and slabs are produced annually, the value of which may be estimated at or over £1,250,000. The number of slates exported in 1884 exceeded 49 millions, the declared value being £251,824, of which over 35 millions went to Germany, valued at £163,321, over 53 millions to Australasia, valued at £37,474, and over 3 millions to Denmark, valued at £34,304.

Good slate beds are also worked in the south of Ireland, pat ticularly in the counties of Wicklow, Tipperary, Cork, and Kerry (Lower Silurian, Devonian, and Carboniferous). On the continent of Europe slate rock is

worked in Devonian and other formations —in France (Lower Silurian and Devonian), Belgium, Sweden, Norway, Germany, Austria, and Italy (Oolitic). In North America immense slate beds extend from Newfoundland westwards to the Great Lakes and southwestwards to Arkansas (U.8.); and slate quarries are successfully worked in Newfoundland, Canada, and 10 the States of Maine, Vermont, Massachusetts, New York, Penu- sylvania, &e. Writing and roofing slates and slabs of every variety of size and eolour are manufactured in these; but none of the quarries have hitherto reached the immense developments of the principal ones in North Wales, and yet, with characteristic a prisc, roofing slates have been within recent years imported to Grea Britain from Newfoundland and the United States. (D. C:)

SLAUGHTER HOUSE. See ABaTTorr.

PbAVY ERY

T appears to be true that, in the words of Dunoyer, the iI economic régime of every society which has recently become sedentary is founded on the slavery of the industrial professions. In the hunter period the savage

‘warrior does not enslave his vanquished enemy, but slays

him; the women of a conquered tribe he may, however, carry off and appropriate as wives or as servants, for in this period domestic labour falls almost altogether on their sex. In the pastoral stage slaves will be captured only to

be sold, with the exception of a few who may be required for the care of flocks or the small amount of cultivation

which is then undertaken. It is in proportion as a sedentary life prevails, and agricultural exploitation is practised on a larger scale, whilst warlike habits continue to exist, that the labour of slaves is increasingly introduced to

provide food for the master, and at the same time save him from irksome toil. Of this stage in the social move-

)ment slavery seems to have been, as we have said, a

universal and inevitable accompaniment.

But wherever theocratic organizations established them- selves slavery in the ordinary sense did not become a vital element in the social system. The members of the lowest class were not in a state of individual subjection : the entire caste to which they belonged was collectively subject. It is in the communities in which the military order obtained an ascendency over the sacerdotal, and which were directly organized for war, that slavery (as the word is commonly understood) had its really natural and appropriate place. And, as war performed an indis- pensable function in human history, our just horror for some aspects of slavery must not prevent us from recogniz- ing that institution as a necessary step in social progress. It is not merely that in its first establishment slavery was an immense advance by substituting for the immolation of captives, often accompanied by cannibalism, their permanent occupation in labour for the benefit of the victor. This advantage, recalled by an old though erroneous! etymology, is generally acknowledged. But it is not so well understood that slavery discharged important offices in the later social evolution—first, by enabling

military action to prevail with the degree of intensity and

continuity requisite for the system of incorporation by conquest which was its final destination; and, secondly, by forcing the captives, who with their descendants came to form the majority of the population in the conquering community, to an industrial life, in spite of the antipathy to regular and sustained labour which is deeply rooted

in human nature, especially in the earlier stages of the

social movement, when insouciance is so common a trait, and irresponsibility is hailed as a welcome relief. With respect to the latter consideration, it is enough to say that nowhere has productive industry developed itself in the form of voluntary effort; in every country of which

we have any knowledge it was imposed by the strong upon the weak, and was wrought into the habits of the

4 Servs is not cognate with servare, as has often been sup- posed; it is really related to the Homeric efpepos and the verb €pw, With which the Latin sero is to be connected. It may be here mentioned that slave was originally a national name; it meant a mau of Slavonic race captured and made a bondman to the Germans. ; From the Euxine to the Adriatic, in the state of captives or sub- Jects, .. they [the Slavonians] overspread the land, and the national Re of the Slaves has been degraded by chance or malice from fae of glory to that of servitude" (Gibbon, Decline and

al, ch. l¥.). The historian alludes to the derivation of the national

see slava, glory. See Skeat's Htym. Dict., s.v.; sce also

people only by the stern discipline of constraint. From the former point of view the freeman, then essentially a warrior, and the slave were mutual auxiliaries, simulta- neously exercising different and complementary functions —each necessary to the maintenance and furthering the activity of the other, and thus co-operating, without competition or conflict, towards a common public end. In modern slavery, on the other hand, where the occu- pations of both parties were industrial, the existence of a servile class, instead of rendering the citizens dis- posable for social service in a different field, only guaranteed for some of them the possibility of self- indulgent ease, whilst it imposed on others the necessity of indigent idleness.

It was in the Roman state that military action—in Greece often purposeless and, except in the resistance to Persia, on the whole fruitless—worked out the social mission which formed its true justification. Hence at Rome slavery also most properly found its place, so long as that mission was in progress of accomplishment. As soon as the march of conquest had reached its natural limit, slavery began to be modified ; and when the empire was divided into the several states which had grown up under it, and the system of defence characteristic of the Middle Ages was substituted for the aggressive system of antiquity, slavery gradually disappeared, and was replaced by serfdom, which again, with the rise of modern industrial life, gave way to personal freedom.

We have so far dealt with the political results of ancient slavery, and have found it to have been in certain respects not only useful but indispensable. When we consider its moral effects, whilst endeavouring to the utmost to avoid exaggeration, we must yet pronounce its influence to have been profoundly detrimental. In its action on the slave it marred in a great measure the happy effects of habitual industry by preventing the development of the sense of human dignity which lies at the foundation of morals, whilst the culture of his ideas and sentiments was in most cases entirely neglected, and the spontaneous education arising from the normal family relations was too often altogether denied him. On the morality of the masters— whether personal, domestic, or social—the effects of the institution were disastrous. The habit of absolute rule, always dangerous to our nature, was peculiarly corrupting wh it penetrated every department of daily life, and wh4n no external interference checked individual caprice in its action on the feelings and fortunes of inferiors. It tended to destroy the power of self-command, and exposed the master to the baneful influences of flattery. As regards domestic morality, the system offered constant facilities for libertinism, and tended to subvert domestic peace by coni- promising the just dignity and ruining the happiness of the wife. The sons of the family were familiarized with vice, and the general tone of feeling of the younger generation was lowered by their intimate association with a despised and degraded class. On social morality, properly so called, the habits of cruelty, or at least of harshness, engendered by the relation, had a powerful reaction. Hume observes on “the little humanity com- monly observed in persons accustomed from their infancy to exercise so great authority over their fellow-creatures and to trample upon human nature. Nor,” he adds, “can a more probable reason be assigned for the severe, I might say, barbarous manners of ancient times than the practice of domestic slavery, by which every man of rank was rendered a petty tyrant, and educated amidst the

XXII. — 17

GREECE.

Heroic times.

Historic period.

flattery, submission, and low debasement of his slaves.” These deplorable results were, of course, not universally produced ; there were admirable exceptions both amongst masters and amongst slaves—instances of benevolent pro- tection on the one side and of unselfish devotion on the other, which did honour to human nature; but the evil effects without doubt greatly preponderated.

We proceed to a closer study of the institution of slavery as it existed in the Greek and Roman societies respectively.

We find it already fully established in the Homeric period. The prisoners taken in war are retained as slaves, or sold (JU., xxiv. 752) or held at- ransom (Ji., vi. 427) by the captor. Sometimes the men of a conquered town or district are slain and the women carricd off (Od., ix. 40). Not unfrequently free persons were kidnapped by pirates and sold in other regions, like Eumzus in the Odyssey. The slave might thus be by birth of equal rank with his master, who knew that the same fate might befall himself or some of the mem- bers of his family. ‘he institution does not present itself in a very harsh form in Homer, especially if we consider (as Grote suggests) that “all classes were much on a level in taste, sentiment, and instruction.” The male slaves were employed in the tillage of the land and the tending of cattle, and the females in domestic work and household manufactures. The principal slaves often enjoyed the confidence of their masters and had important duties entrusted to them ; and, after lengthened and meritorious service, were put in possession of a house and property of their own (Od., xiv. 64). Grote’s idea that the women slaves were in a more pitiable con- dition than the males does not seem justified, except perhaps in the case of the aletrides, who turned the household mills which ground the flour consumed in the family, and who were sometimes overworked by unfeeling masters (Od., xx. 110-119). Part of the agricultural work was sometimes done by poor hired freemen (thetes), who are spoken of as a wretched class (Od., xi. 490), and were perhaps employcd almost exclusively by the smaller land- holders. Having no powerful protector to whom they could look up, and depending on casual jobs, they were

probably in a less desirable position than the average slave. Hoiner conceives the lot of the latter as a bitter one (Od., viii. 528; 27., xix. 302); but it must be remembered that the clement of change from a former elevated position usually enters into his descriptions. He marks in a celebrated couplet his sense of the moral deterioration com- monly wrought by the condition of slavery (Od., xvii. 322).

It is, however, in historic Greece, where we have ample docu- mentary information, that it is most important to study the system of slavery,—and especially at Athens, where the principal work of Greek civilization found its accomplishment. The case of Sparta, in some respects peculiar, must be separately considered.

The sources of slavery in Grecce were :—1l. Birth, the condition being hereditary. This was not an abundant source, women slaves being less numerous than men, and wise masters making the union of the sexes rather a reward of good service than a matter of specu- lation (Xen., @con., ix. 5). It was in general cheaper to buy a slave than to rear one to the age of labour. 2. Sale of children by their free parents, which was tolerated, except in Attica, or their exposure, which was permitted, except at Thebes. The conse- quence of the latter was sometimes to subject them to a servitude worse than death, as is seen in the plays of Plautus and Terence, which, as is well known, depict Greek, not Roman, manners. Freemen, through indigence, sometimes sold themselves, and at Athens, up to the time of Solon, an insolvent debtor became the slave of his creditor. 38. Capture in war. Not only Asiatics and Thracians thus became slaves, but in the many wars between Grecian states, continental or colonial, Greeks were reduced to slavery by men of their own race. Thus Spartans were slaves at Tegea, and Gelon sold out of their country the commonalty of Hyblean Megara. At Platea, at Scione, in Melos, the men were massacred or deported, the women enslaved. Athenians were sold at Samos, and in Sicily after the failure of the expedition. In the struggle of parties at Corcyra, each faction, when triumphant, con- demned the other to massacre or slavery. Callicratidas pronounced against the enslavement of Greeks by Greeks, but violated his own principle, to which, however, Epaminondas and Pelopidas appear to have been faithful. Philip sold his Olynthian captives, and, after Thebes was taken by Alexander, 30,000 women and children are said to

have been sold. 4. Piracy and kidnapping. The descents of pirates on the coasts were a perpetual source of danger, the pirate was a gainer either by the sale or by the redemption of his captives. If ransomed, the victim became by Athenian law the slave of his redeemer till he paid in money or labour the price which had been given for him. Kidnappers (andrapodistx#) carried off children even in cities, and reared them as slaves. Whether from hostile forays or from piracy, any Greek was exposed to the risk of enslavement ; it was a sword of Damocles suspended over all heads. 5. Commerce. Besides the sale of slaves which took place as a result of the capture of cities or other military opcrations,

there was a systematic slave trade. Syria, Pontus, Lydia, Galat and above all Thrace were sources of supply. Egypt and Eth also furnished a certain number, and Italy afew. Of foreigng the Asiatics bore the greatest value, as most amenable to ¢o mand, and most versed in the arts of luxurious refinement. 8 Greeks were highest of all in estecm, and they were much so for foreign sale. Greece proper and Jonia supplicd the pet Eastern princes with courtesans and female musicians and dance; Athens was an important slave-market, and the state profited a tax on the sales; but the principal marts were those of Cyprug Samos, Ephesus, and especially Chios. –

The slaves were employed either in domestic service—as hou hold managers, attendants, or personal escorts—or in work of oth kinds, agricultural or urban. In early Attica, and even down ; the time of Pericles, the landowners lived in the country. 4 Peloponnesian War introduced a change ; and after that time the proprietors ‘resided at Athens, and the cultivation was in the hand: of slaves. In manufactures and commerce, also, servile gradually displaced free labour. Spcculators either directly employed slaves as artisans or commercial and banking agents, or hircd them ont, sometimes for work in mines or factorics, sometimes for service i private houses, as cooks, flute-players, &c., or for viler uses, Then were also public slaves; of these some belonged to temples, to which they were presented as offerings, amongst them being the courtesans who actcd as hterodules at Corinth and at Eryx in Sicily; others were appropriated to the service of the magistrates or to public works ; there were at Athens 1200 Scythian archers

for the police of the city; slaves served, too, in the flects, and were employed in the armics, commonly as workmen, and exceptionally as soldiers.

The number of slaves in Greece, or even at Athens, can scarcely Ni be determined with any tolerable approach to certainty. Itis stated by Atheneus (vi. 20), on the authority of Ctesicles, that the census of Demetrius Phalereus gave for Athens 21,000 citizens, 10,000 metics (resident foreigners), and 400,000 slaves. It is also stated by the same author that Corinth had possessed 460,000 slaves and Aigina 470,000. Hume, in his Hssay “On the Pop. lousness of Ancient Nations,” maintained that the assertion of Atheneus respecting Athens is quite incredible, —that the number of Athenian slaves “is at least augmented by a whole cipher, and ought not to be regarded as more than 40,000.” Boeckh and Letronne have since made the question the subject of fresh studies. The former has fixed the number of Attic slaves at about 365,000, the latter at 100,000 or 120,000. M. Wallon has revised the labours of these scholars, and adduced further considerations of his own.! He estimates the number of slaves employed in all Attica in domestic service at 40,000; in agriculture at 35,000; m the mines at 10,000; in manufactures and commerce at 90,000. To these must be added, for old people and children under twelve ycars of age, 6000 and 20,000 respectively, and also the public slaves, of whom, as we have said, 1200 were Scythian archers. He thus arrives at the conclusion that the servile population of Attica was comprised between the limits of 188,000 and 203,000 souls, the free population being about 67,000, and the metics amount: ing to 40,000. The slaves thus bore to the free native population the ratio of 8 to 1. The numbers given by Athenzeus for Corinth and Aigina, though accepted by Boeckh, appear to be excessive, and are rejected by Chpaion and by M. Wallon; the true numbers were no doubt large, bit we have no means of determining them even approximately. Next after these citics in the magnitude of their slave population came, on the mainland, Megara, and, amongst the insular states, Chios and Rhodes. Miletus, Phocea, Tarentum, Sybaris, and Cyrene also had numerous bodies of slaves. ; The condition of slaves at Athens was not in general a wretehed Co) one. Demosthenes (Jn Mid., p. 580) says that, if the barbarians tio from whom the slaves were bought were informed of the mild treat- ment they received, they would entertain a great estcem for the Athenians. Plautus in

more than one place thinks it necessary 0 explain to the spectators of his plays that slaves at Athens enjoyed such privileges, and even licence, as must be surprising to a Roman audience. ‘The slave was introduced with certain customary rites into bis position in the family; he was in practice, though not by law, permitted to accumulate a private fund of his own; his marriage was also recognized by custom; though in gener excluded from sacred ceremonies and public sacrifices, slaves were admissible to religious associations of a private kind; there were some popular festivals in which they were allowed to participate | they had even special ones for themselves both at Athens and in other Greek centres. Their remains were deposited in the family tomb of their master, who sometimes erected monuments In testi- mony of his affection and regret. They often lived on terms 0 intimacy either with the head of the house or its younger members; but it is to be feared that too often this intimacy was founded, not eee ee ee ee

1 Dr W. Richter (Die Sklaverei im Griechischen Altertume, 1886) maintains the eorrectness of the statement in Athenzeus.

on mutual respeet, as in the heroic example of Ulysses and Eumens, put on insolent self-assertion on the one side and a spirit of unworthy compliance ou the other, the latter having its raison détre in degrading services rendered by the slave. Aristophanes and Plautus show us how often resort was had to the discipline of the lash even in the case of domestic slaves. Those employed in workshops, Whose overseers were themselves most commonly of gervile status, had probably a harder lot than domestics ; and the agricultural labourers were not unfrequently chained, and treated | much in the same way as beasts of burden. The displeasure of the master sometimes dismisscd his domestics to the more oppressive Jabonrs of the mill or the mine. A refuge from cruel treatment ‘was afforded by the temples and altars of the gods and by the sacred groves. Nor did Athenian law leave the slave without rotection. He had, as Demosthenes boasts, an action for outrage ike a freeman, and his death at the hand of a stranger was avenged like that of a citizen (Kurip., Hee., 288), whilst, if caused ‘by his master’s violence, it had to be atoned for by exile and a religious expiation. Even when the slave had killed his master, the relatives of the house could not themsclves inflict punishment ; they were obliged to hand him over to the magistrate to be dealt with by legal process. The slave who had just grounds of com- plaint against his master could demand to be sold; when he alleged his right to liberty, the law granted him a defender and the sanetuaries offered him an asylum till judgment should be given. Securities were taken against the revolt of slaves by not associating those of the same nationality and language; they were somctimes fettered to prevent flight, and, after a first attempt at escape,) branded to facilitate their recovery. There were treaties betwoen ‘states for the extradition of fugitives, and contracts of mutual ‘assurance between individuals against their loss by flight. Their inclination to take advantage of opportunities for this purpose is shown by the number that escaped from Athens to join the Spartans when occupying Decelea. There were formidable revolts at the mines of Laurium, and more than once in Chios. The evidence of slaves—women as well as men—was often, with the consent of their masters, taken by torture; and that method is generally commended by the orators as a sure means of arriving at the truth, though sometimes, when it suits their immediate object, they take a different tone. The scveral forms of the “question” are enumerated in the Frogs of Aristophanes. If the slave was mutilated or seriously injured in the process,

compensation was made, not to him, but to his master by the person who had demanded the use of torture. | The slave could purchase his liberty with his peculium by | agreement with his master. He could be liberated by will, or, during his master's life, by proclamation in the theatre, the law courts, or other public places, or by having his name inscribed in the public registers, or, in the later age of Greece, by sale or donation to certain temples—an act which did not make the slave a hierodule but a freeman. Conditions were sometimes attached to emancipation, as of remaining for life or a definite time with the former master, or another person named by him, or of performing some special service ; payments or rights of succession to | property might also be reserved. By manumission the Athenian slave became in relation to the state a metic, in relation to his master a client. He was thus in an intermediate condition between slavery and complete freedom. If the freedman violated his duties to his patron he was subject to an action at law, and if the decision were against him he was again reduced to slavery. He beeame a full member of the state only, as in the case of foreigners, by a vote in an assembly of six thousand citizens ; aud even this vote might be set aside by a graphe paranomon. Slaves who had rendered cminent services to the public, as those who fought at Arginuse and at Cheronea, were at once admitted to the status of citizens in the class of (so-called) Plateans. But it would appear that even in their case some civic rights were reserved aud aeeorded only to their children by a female citizen. The number of freedmen at Athens seems never to have been great.

It is well known that Aristotle held slavery to be necessary and natural, and, under just conditions, beneficial to both parties in n the relation—views which were correct enough from the political 4 side, regard being had to the contemporary social state. His practical motto, if he is the author of the Evonomies attributed to him, is—"no outrage, and no familiarity." There ought, he says, to be held out to the slave the hope of liberty as the reward 0) his service. Plato condemned the practice, which the theory of Aristotle also by implication sets aside as inadmissible, of Greeks having Greeks for slaves. In the Laws he accepts the institution as a necessary though embarrassing one, and recommends for the safety of the masters that natives of different countries should be mixed and that they should all be well treated. But, whilst condemning harshness towards them, he

encourages the feeling of eet for them as a class. Xenophon also, in urging a mild

eatment of them, seems to have in view, not their own well- “ung; but the security of the masters. The later moral schools of

teece scarcely at all concern themselves with the institution.

;

SekLayvY ta

131

The Epicurean had no scruple about the servitude of those whose labours contributed to his own indulgence and tranquillity ; he would at most cultivate an casy temper in his dealings with them. The Stoic regarded the condition of freedom or slavery as an external accident, indifferent in the eye of wisdom ; to him it was irrational to see in liberty a ground of pride or in slavery a subject of complaint ; from intolerable indignity suicide was an cver-open means of escape. The poets—especially the authors of the New Comedy—strongly inculcate humanity, and insist on the funda- mental equality of the slave. The celebrated ‘‘homo sum”’ is a translation from Alexis, and the spirit of it breathes in many passages of the Greek drama. A fragment of Philemon declarcs, as if in reply to Aristotle, that uot nature, but fortune, makes the slave. Euripides, as might be expected from his humanitarian cast of sentiment, and the “premature modernism” which has been remarked in him, rises above the ordinary feclings of his time in regard to the slaves. As Mr Paley says, he loves ‘‘to record their fidelity to their mastcrs, their sympathy in the trials of life, their gratitude for kindness and considerate treatment, and their pride in bearing the character of honourable men… . He allows them to reason, to advise, to suggest ; and he even makes them philosophize on the follies and the indiscretions of their superiors” (compare Med., 54; Orest., 869; Hel., 728; Jon, 854; Frag. Melan., 506; Phrix., 823). But we are not to suppose that even he, latitudinarian and innovator as he was, could have coneeived the possibility of abolishing an institution so deeply rooted in the social conditions, as well as in the ideas, of his time.

The case of the Helots of Laconia was different from that of the The slaves in most Grecian communities. disputed, and we cannot here enter into the controversy. They were regarded as the property of the state, which gave their services to individuals but kept in its own hands the power of emancipat- ing them. The domestic servants of the Spartans were all Helots, and they waited on their masters at the syssitia or public meal. But they were in the main serfs, living in small country villages or in detached farms, cultivating the lands of the Spartan pro- prietors, and paying to those proprietors a proportion of the pro- duce which could not be increased. They enjoyed their homes, wives, and families, could acquire property, were not to be sold out of the country, and perhaps could not be sold at all. They were, doubtless, employed in public works ; in war they commonly acted as light-armed troops attending on the Spartan or Pcricecic hoplites, but in particular emergencies themselves served as hoplites (Thucyd., iv. 80). They were sometimes rewarded for good service by emancipation, which, however, did not make them Periceci, but introduced them into a special class known as neodamodeis, The condition of the Helot does not seem to have been economically onerous; but his consciousness of Grecian lineage, which Grote regards as an alleviation of his lot, must surely have becn one of its bittercst elements, whilst it constantly kept alive the fear and consequent hatred of his Spartan masters, and made the relation between the two classes less natural than that of the ordinary Greek masters with slaves of foreign and less civilized races. By the ruling powers of Sparta the Helots were never trusted, and in one memorable case some two thousand of them, selected for special military merit, werc massacred in secret (Thucyd., iv. 80). According to Plutarch, whose statement, how- ever, has not always bcen credited, the ephors declared war against the Helots every year, and there was a practice, known as the krypteia, of detailing a number of young Spartan citizens for the purpose of assassinating such of them as were considered formidable. Wallon cstimates the number of the Helots at 220,000, that of the Spartans being 32,000. The Peneste in Thessaly and the Clarotz in Crete seem to have occupied a position somewhat similar to that of the Helots in Laconia.

We have already observed that the Roman system of Rom. life was that in which slavery had its most natural and relatively legitimate place; and accordingly it was at Rome that, as Blair has remarked, the institution was

more than anywhere else “extended in its operation and methodized in its details.” Not only on this ground is it especially deserving of our study, but because out of the slave-class, as it was organized by the Romans in the countries subject to the empire, the modern proletariate has been historically evolved.

We must distinguish from the later slavery at Rome what Sources.

Mommsen calls ‘‘the old, in some measure innocent” slavery, under which the farmer tilled the land along with his slave, or, if he possessed more land than he could manage, placed the slave— either as a steward, or as a sort of lessee obliged to render up a portion of the producc—over a detached farm. Though slaves were obtained by the early victories of Rome over her Italian neighbours, no large number was employed on the small holdings of those periods. But the extension of properties in the hands of the

The origin of this class is Helots.

Employ- ments.

Num- bers.

patricians, and the continual absences of citizens required by the expanding system of conquest, necessarily brought with them a demand for slave labour, whieh was increasingly supplied by captives taken in war. Of the number furnished from this souree a few particulars from the time of the mature republic and the first century of the empire will give some idea. In Epirus, after the victories of Amilius Paullus, 150,000 captives were sold. The prisoners at Aque Sextie and Vercelle were 90,000 Teutons and 60,000 Cimbri. Czsar sold on a single occasion in Gaul 63,000 captives; Augustus made 44,000 prisoners in the country of the Salassi; after immense numbers had perished by famine and hard- ship and in the combats of the arena, 97,000 slaves were acquired by the Jewish war. But slavery, as Hume has shown, is unfavourable to population, and even the wars of Rome were insufficient to maintain the supply. Hence a regular commerce in slaves was established, which was based on the ‘‘systematically- prosecuted hunting of

man,” and indicated an entire perversion of the primitive institution, which was essentially connected with conquest. The pirates sold great numbers of slaves at Delos, where was the chief market for this kind of wares ; and these sales went on as really, though more obscurely, after the successful expedi- tion of Pompey. There was a regular importation at Rome of slaves, brought to some extent from Africa, Spain, and Gaul, but ehiefly from Asiatic countries—Bithynia, Galatia, Cappadocia, and Syria. A portoriuin —apparently one-eighth for eunuchs, one- fortieth for others—was paid on their import or export, and a duty of 2 or 4 per cent. on their sale.

There were other sources from which slavery was alimented, though of course in a much less degree. Certain offences reduced the guilty persons to slavery (servi panz), and they were employed in public work in the quarries or the mines. Originally, a father could sell his children. A creditor could hold his insolvent debtor as a slave, or sell him out of the city (trans Tiberim). The enslavement of creditors, overwhelmed with usury in consequence of losses by hostile raids or their own absence on military service, led to the revolt of the Mons Sacer (493 B.c.). The Pcetelian law (326 B.c.) restricted the creditor’s lien (by virtue of a nexwm) to the goods of his debtor, and enactcd that for the future no debtor should be put in chains; but we hear of debtors addicti to their creditors by the tribunals long after—even in the time of the Punic Wars.

There were scrvi publici as well as privati. The service of the magistrates was at first in the hands of freemen ; but the lower offiees, as of couriers, servants of the law courts, of prisons, and of temples, were afterwards filled by slaves. The execution of public works also came to be largely committed to them,—as the construc- tion of roads, the cleansing of the sewers, and the maintenance of the aqueducts. Both kinds of functions were discharged by slaves, not only at Rome, but in the rural and provincial municipalities. The slaves of a private Roman were divided between the familia rustica and the familia urbana. At the head of the familia rustica was the villicus, himself a slave, with the wife who was given him at once to aid him and to bind him to his duties, Under him were the several groups employed in the different branches of the exploitation and the care of the cattle aud flocks, as well as those who kept or prepared the food, clothing, and tools of the whole staff and those whe attended on the master in the various species of

rural sports. A slave prison (ergastulwm) was part of such an establishment, and there were slaves whose office it was to punish the offences of their fellows. To the familia urbana belonged those who discharged the duties of domestic attendance, the service of the toilct, of the bath, of the table, of the kitchen, besides the entcrtainment of the master and his guests by dane- ing, singing, and other arts. There were, besides, the slaves who aecompanicd the master and mistress out of doors, and who were chosen for their beauty and grace as guards of honour, for their strength as chairmen or porters, or for their readiness and address in remembering names, dclivcring messages of courtesy, and the like. There were also attached to a great household physicians, artists, sccretaries, librarians, copyists, preparers of parchment, as well as pedagogues and preceptors of different kinds,—readers, grammarians, men of letters and even philosophers, —all of servile condition, besides accountants, managers, and agents for the transaction of business. Actors, comic and tragic, pantomimi, and the performers of the circus were commonly slaves, as were also the gladiators. These last were chosen from the most warlike races—as the Samnites, Gauls, and Thracians. Familiw of gladiators were kept by private speculators, who hired them out ; they were sometimes owned by men of high rank.

As to the numbers of slaves belonging to individual masters, though we have no distinct general statement in the Roman

writers, several special examples and other indirect indications

serve to show that the wealthier mien possessed very large familiz. This may be inferred from the columbaria of the house of Livia and of other great houses. Vettius armed four hundred of his own slaves when he entered on the revolt which was a prelude to the Second Servile War. The slaves of Pedanius Secundus, who, in

spite of a threatened outbreak of the indignant populace, were ajj put to death because they had been under their master’s roof when he was murdered, were four hundred in number. Pliny tells that Cecilius, a freedinan of the time of Augustus, left by his as Iaany as 4116. The qucstion as to the total number of slaves at Rome or in Italy is a very difficult one,

and it is not, perhapg possible to arrive with any degree of certainty at an approximate estimate. Gibbon supposes that there were in the Roman world in the reign of Claudius at least as many slaves as free inhabitants, But Blair seems right in believing that this number, though prob- ably eorreet for an earlier period, is much under the truth for the age to whieh it is assigned. He fixes the proportion of slaves to free men as that of three to one for the time between the conquest of Grecce (146 B.c.) and the reign of Alexander Severus (229-935 A.D.). The entire number of slaves in Italy would thus have been, in the reign of Claudius, 20,832,000, that of the free population being 6,944,000. {

By the original Roman law the mastcr was clothed with absolute dominion over the slave, extending to the power of life — and death, whieh is not surprising when we eonsider the nature of the patria potestas. The slave could not possess property of any kind ; whatever he acquired was legally his master's. He was, however, in practice permitted to enjoy and aceumulate chanee earnings or savings, or a share of what he produced, under the name of peculiwm. A master could not enter into a contract with his slave, nor could he accuse him of theft before the law; for, if the slave took anything, this was not a subtraction, but only a displacement, of property. The union of a male and female slave had not the legal character of a marriage ; it was a cohabita- tion (contuberniwm) merely which was tolerated, and might be terminated at will, by the master; a slave was, therefore, not capable of the crime of adultery. Yet general sentiment seems to have given a stronger sanction to this sort of connexion ; the names of husband and wife are freely uscd in relation to slaves on the stage, and even in the laws, and in the language of the tombs. For entering the military service or taking on him any state ofhee a slave was punished with death. He could not in general he examined as a witness, except by torture. A master, when accused, could offer his slaves for the " question," or demand for the same purpose the slaves of another ; and, if in the latter case they were injured or killed in the process, their owner was indemnified. A slave could not accuse his master, except of adultery or ineest (under the latter name being included the violation of sacred things or places) ; the case of high treason was afterwards added te these. An accused slave could not invoke the aid of the tribunes. The penalties of the law for crime were more severe on guilty slaves than on freemen ; "majores nostri," say the legists,

“in omni supplicio severius servos quam liberos punierunt.” The capital punishment of the freeman was by the sword or the precipice, —of the slave by the axe or the cross. The lex Cornelia punished the murder of a slave or a freeman alike ; but the master | who killed his own slave was not affeeted by this law. |

Columella, like Xenophon, favours a certain friendliness and Tra: familiarity in one’s intercourse with his farm slaves, Cato ate and ment: drank the same coarse victuals as his slaves, and even had the slaves children suckled by his wife, that they might imbibe a fondness for the family. But that rigid old economist had a strict eye to profit in all his dealings with them. He allowed the contubernium of male and female slaves at the price of a money payment from their peculium. Columella regarded the gains from the births as a sufficient motive for encouraging these unions, and thought that mothers should be rewarded for their fecundity ; Varro, too, seems to have taken this view. The immense extension of the rural estates (latifundia) made it impossible for masters to know their slaves, even if they were disposed to take trouble for the purpose. Effective superintendence even by overseers became less easy; the use of chains was introduced, and these were worn not only in the field during working hours but at night in the ergastulum where the labourers slept—a practice which Pliny lamented as a disgrace to agriculture. Urban slaves had probably often a life as little enviable, especially those who worked at trades for speculators. Even in private houses at Rome, so late as the time of Ovid, the porter was chained. In the familia urbana the favourites of the mastcr had good treatment, and might exereist some influence over him which would lead to their receiving flattery and gifts from those who sought his vote or solicited his support. Doubtless there was often genuine mutual affection; slaves sometimes, as in noted instances during the civil was, showed the noblest spirit of devotion to their masters. Those who were not inmates of the household, but were employed outside of it as keepers of a shop or boat, chiefs of workshops, or clerks m4 mercantile business, had the advantage of greater freedom of action. The slaves of the Zeno and the lanista were probably most cases not only degraded but unhappy. The lighter punish- ments inflicted by masters were commonly personal chastisement oF banishment from the town house to

rural labour ; the severer were employment in the mill (pistrinwm) or relegation to the mies

|

a A

—s

—_

Si aVY ER Y

quarries. To the mines speculators also sent slaves; they worked

“half-naked, men and women, in ehains, under the lash and guarded

py soldiers. Vedius Pollio, in the time of Augustus, was said to have thrown his slaves, condemned sometimes for trivial mistakes

or even accidents, to the lampreys in his fishpond. Cato advised the agriculturist to sell his old oxen and his old slaves, as well

as his sick ones; and sick slaves were exposed in the island of Asculapius in the Tiber; by a decree of Claudius slaves so

- exposed, if they recovered, could not be reclaimed by their

masters. ; Though the Roman slaves were not, like the Spartan Helots,

kept obedient by systematic terrorism, their large numbers were a constant source of solicitude in the later period of the republic and under the early empire. The law under which the slaves of Pedanius were put to death, probably first made under Augustus and more fully enacted under Nero, is sufficient proof of this anxiety, which indeed is strongly stated by Tacitus in his narrative of the facts. There had been many conspiracies amongst the slaves in the course of Roman history, and some formidable insurrections. We hear of a conspiracy about 500 B.c. and another in 419 n.c.; again just before the sea-fight of Duilius and between the battles of Trasimenus and

Cann. In 198 B.c. a servile war had almost broken out; in 196 B.c. there was a rising in Etruria and in 185 3.c. in Apulia. The growth of the latifundia made the slaves more and more numerous and formidable. Free labour was discountenaneed. Cato, Varro, and Columella all agree that slave labour was to be preferred to free exeept in unhealthy regions and for large occasional operations, which probably transcended the capacity of the permanent familia rustica. Cicero and Livy bear testimony to the disappearance of a free plebs from the country districts and its replacement by gangs of slaves working on great estates. ‘The policy of the Graeehi and their successors of the popular party was opposed to this reduction of the free working population, which they sought to counteract by agrarian laws and by colonization on a large scale—projects which could not be effectively carried out until civil supremacy was united with military power in the hands of a popular ehief, and which, even when this condition was satisfied by the establishment of the empire, were inadequate to meet the evil. The worst form of predial slavery existed in Sicily, whither Mominsen supposes that its peculiarly harsh features had been brought by the Carthagin- ians. In Sicily, aeceordingly, the first really serious servile insurrections took place, at once provoked by the misery of the slaves and facilitated by the habits of brigandage which, it is said, the proprietors had tolerated and even encouraged as lighten- ing the cost of subsistenee of their slaves. The rising under Kunus in 133 3B.c. was with some difficulty suppressed by Rupilius. Partial revolts in Italy succeeded ; and then eame the second Sicilian insurrection under Trypho and Athenio, which, after a severe struggle, was put down by Aquilius. These were followed by the Servile War in Italy under Spartacus, whieh, occurring at an otherwise eritical period, severely tested the military resources of Rome. In the subsequent civil confliets the aid of slaves was sought by both parties, even by Marius himself, and afterwards by Catilinc, though he finally rejected their services. Clodius and Milo employed bands of gladiators in their city riots, and this action on the part of the latter was approved by Cicero. In the First Civil War they were to be found in both camps, and the murderers of Cesar were escorted to the Capitol by gladiators. Antony, Octavius, and Sextus Pompeius employed them in the Second Civil War; and it is recorded by Augustus on the Monumentum Ancyranum that he gave back to their masters for punishment about 30,000 slaves who had abseonded and borne arms against the state. Under Tiberius, at the death of Caligula, and in

the reign of Nero there were threatening movements of the slaves. In the wars from Otho to Vespasian they were employed, as Tacitus tells us, even by the most scrupulous generals.

Of the moral influences of slavery we have already spoken. In the particular case of Rome it cannot be doubted that it largely contributed to the impuritics which disgraced private life, as seen in the pages of Juvenal, Martial, and Petronius. It is shocking to observe the tone in which Horace, so charaetcrized by geniality and bonhomie, speaks of the subjection of slaves to the brutal passions of their masters (Sat., i. 2, 116). The hardening effeet of the system appears perhaps inost strikingly in the barbarous Spectacles of the amphitheatre, in which even women took pleasure and joined in condemning the gladiator who did not by his desperate vourage satisfy the demands of a sanguinary mob. It led, further, to a contempt for industry, even agriculture being no longer held m esteem ("'quum sit publice aecepta et confirmata jam vulgaris existimatio, rem rusticam sordidum opus," Col., i., pref. 20). The Pag of slavery, degrading free labour while competing with Teeinen for urban enlployment, multiplied the idle and worthless poration of Rome, who sought only '* panem et eircenses," These fous Supported by publie distributions, which the emperors ant like 4 could not discontinue, and by the bounty of patrons,

» ake the ''mean whites" of modern America, formed a danger-

133

ous class, purehasable by selfish ambitions and ready to aid in eivil disturbances.

Blair, in eomparing the Greck and Roman systems of slavery, Emanei-points with justice to the greater facility and frequeney of pation.

emancipation as the great superiority of the latter. No Roman slave, he says, ''needed to despair of becoming both a freeman and a eitizen." Manumission was of two kinds—justa or regular, and minus justa. Of manumissio gusta there were four modes :— (1) by adoption, rarely resorted to; (2) by testament, already recognized in the Twelve Tables; (8) by census, which was of exceptional use, and did not exist later than the

time of Vespasian ; and (4) by vindicta, which was the usual form. In the last method the master turned the slave round, with the words “ liber esto,” in the presence of the preetor, that officer or his lietor at the same time striking the slave with his rod. The manwmissio minus Justa was effeeted by a sufficient manifestation of the will of the master, as by letter, by words, by putting the pileus (or cap of liberty) on the slave, or by any other formality which had by usage beeome significant of the intention to liberate, or by sueh an aet as making the slave the guardian of his children. This extra- legal sort of manumission was incomplete and precarious; even after the lex Julia Norbana (19 a.p.), whieh assimilated the position of those so liberated to that of the Latin colonists, under the name of Latini juniores, the person remained in the eye of the law a slave till his death and eould not dispose of his peculium.

A freedman, unless he became sueh by operation of law, re- mained elient of his master, and both were bound by the mutual obligations arising out of that relation. These obligations existed also in the case of freedmen of the state, of cities, temples, and corporations. The freedman took his former master’s name; he owed him deference (obsequiwm) and aid (officiwm); and neglect of these obligations was punished, in extreme cases even with loss of liberty. Conditions might be annexed by the master to the gift of freedom, as of continued residenee with him, or of general service or some particular duty to be performed, or of a money payment to be made. But the pretor Rutilius, about the beginning of the 1st eentury 3B.c., limited the excessive imposition of such conditions, and his restrictions were earried further by the later jurists and the imperial constitutions. Failing natural heirs of an intestate freedman, the master, now patron, succeeded to his pon at his death ; and he could dispose by will of only half lis possessions, the patron receiving the other half. Freedmen and their sous were subjeet to eivil disabilities ; the third genera- tion became tingenua (full citizens), Thus, by a process of constant infiltration, the slave element tended to merge itself in the gencral popular body ; and Seipio Amilianus could reply to the murmurs of a plebeian crowd, ‘‘Taceant quibus Italia noverca est; non efficietis ut solutos verear quos alkenes adduxi” (Val. Max., vi.

2, 3).

It was often a pecuniary advantage to the master to liberate his slave ; he silane a payment which enabled him to buy a substitute, and at the same time gained a client. This of course presupposes the reeognition of the right of the slave to his peculium ; and the same is implied in Cicero's statement that a diligent slave could in six years purchase his freedom. Augustus set himself against the undue multiplication of manumissions, probably considering the rapid succession of new citizens a source of social instability, and recommended a similar policy to his successor. The lex Allia Sentia (about 3 A.p.) forbade manumission, except in strietly limited cases, by masters under 20 years of age or of slaves under 30 ; and the lex Furia Caninia (about 7 a.p.) fixed the proportion of a man's slaves which he could liberate by testament, and forbade more than a hundred being so enfranehised whatever might be the number of the familia. Under the empire the freedmen rose steadily in influenee; they beeame admissible to the rank of equites and to the senate; they obtained provincial governments, and were appointed to offices in the imperial household which virtually placed them at the head of adminis- trative departments. Pallas and Narcissus are familiar types of the unworthy members of this class, and there were doubtless many outside of official life who exhibited the ostentation and insolence of the parvenu; but there were others who were highly deserving of estecm. Freedinen of humbler rank filled the minor offiees in the administrative service, in the city cohorts, and in the army; and we shall find that they entered largely into the trades and professions when free labour began to revive. They appeared also in literature ; we hear of several historical and biographical memoirs by freedmen under the republic and the early empire; many of them were professors of grammar and the kindred arts, as Tiro, the amanuensis of Cicero, and Hyginus, the librarian of Augustus; and names of a higher order are those of Livius Andronicus, Cecilius, Statius, Terence, Publius Syrus, Phedrus, and Epictetus.

In the 2d eentury of the Christian era we find a marked change Reforms.

with respeet to the institution of slavery, both in the region of thought and in that of law. Already the principles of reason and humanity had been applied to the subject by Seneca who, what-

Infiu- ence of Chris- tianity.

alteration should be suddenly wrought cither in the social system which was in harmony with it, or even in the general ideas which had grown up under its influence. The latter would, indeed, be gradually affected ; and accordingly we have observed a change in the policy of the law, indicating achange in sentiment with respect to the slave class, which does not appear to have been at all due to Christian teaching, but to have arisen from the spon- taneous influence of circumstances co-operating with the softened manners which were inspired by a pacific régime. But the institu. tion itself could not be at once scriously disturbed ; it was too deeply rooted and too closely bound up with the whole existing order of things. If it could have been immediately abolished, the results must have been disastrous, most of all to the slave popula. tion itself. Before that end could be accomplished, an essentially new social situation must come into existence ; socicty must be organized for defence as it had previously becn for conquest; and this transformation could not be wrought in aday. But in the meantime much might be done towards further mitigating the evils of slavery, especially by impressing on master and slave their relative duties and controlling their behaviour towards one another by the exercisc of an independent moral authority. This was the work open to the Christian priesthood, and it cannot be denied that it was well discharged. Whilst the fathers agree with the | Stoics of the 2d century in representing slavery as an indifferent circumstance in the eye of religion and morality, the contempt for the class which the Stoics too often exhibited is in them replaced by a genuine sympathy. They protested against the multiplica- tion of slaves from motives of vanity in the houses of the great, against the gladiatorial combats (ultimately abolished by the noble gelf-devotion of a monk), and against the consignment of slaves to the theatrical profession, which was often a school of corruption, The church also encouraged the emancipation of individual slaves and the redemption of captives. And its influence is to be secn in the legislation of the Christian emperors, which softened some of the harshest features that still marked the institution. There is not, indeed, a uniform advance in this legislation ; there is even retrogression in some particulars under Constantine, as in his renewed permission to fathers to sell their

children and to the finder of an exposed child to make it his slave—enactments which it is sometimes sought to excuse by the prevailing poverty of his period. But a stronger influence of Christianity appears in Theodosius, and this influence is at the highest in the egislation of Justinian. Its systematic cffort is, in lis own words, “pro libertate, quam et fovere et tucri Romanis legibus et pracipue nostro numini peculiare est.” Law still refused in general to recognize the marriages of slaves ; but Justinian gave them a legal value after cmancipation in establishing rights of succession. Unions between slaves and free women, or between a freeman and the female slave of another, continued to be forbidden, and were long punished in certain circumstances with atrocious severity. ‘As witness, the slave was still subject to the question ; as criminal, he was punished with greater rigour than the freeman. If he accused his master of a crime, unless the charge was of treason, he was burnt. But he could maintain a legal claim to his own liberty, not now merely through an adsertor, but in person. female slave was still held incapable of the offence of adultery ; but Justinian visited with death alike the rape of a slave or freed- woman and that of a free maiden. Already the master who killed his slave had been punished as for homicide, except in the case of his unintended death under correction ; Constantine treated as homicide a number of specially-enumerated acts of cruclty. Even under Theodosius the combats of the amphitheatre were permitted, if not encouraged, by the state authoritics ; these sports were stil expected from the candidates for public honours. Combats of men with beasts were longest continued; they had not ecased cven i the early years of the reign of J ustinian. A new process of manu- mission was now established, to be performed in the churches through the intervention of the ministers of religion; and it was provided that clerics could at any time by mere expression of will Iiberate their slaves. Slaves who were admitted to holy orders, of who entered a monastery, became freemen, under certain restric: tions framed to prevent fraud or injustice. Justinian abolished the personal conditions which the legislation of Augustus ha required to be satisfied by the master who emancipated and the slave who was manuiitted, and removed the limitation of number. The liberated slave, whatcver the process by which he had obtained his frecdom, became at once a full citizen, his former master, how- ever, retaining the right of patronage, the abolition of which would probably have discouraged emancipation.

The slavery of the working classes, justly described by ot Hume as the most important difference between the al social life of antiquity and that of modern times, was nob | directly changed into the system of personal freedom. There was an intermediate stage which has not always been sufficiently discriminated from slavery, though the

ever we may think of him as a man, deserves our gratitude for the just and liberal sentiments he expressed respecting the slaves, who, he says, should be treated as ‘‘ humble friends,” and especially for his energetic reprobation of gladiatorial combats and of the brutality of the public who enjoyed those sanguinary shows. But it was in the 2d century, as we have said, that “the victory of moral ideas” in this, as in other departments of life became “decisive, .. . Dio Chrysostom, the adviscr of Trajan, is the first Greek writer who has pronounced the principle of slavery to be contrary to the law of nature” (Mark Pattison). And a parallel change is found in the practical policy of the state. The military vocation of Rome was now felt to have reached its normal limits; and the emperors, understanding that, in the future, industrial activity must prevail, prepared the abolition of slavery as far as was then possible, by honouring the freedmen, by protecting the slave against his master, and by facilitating manumissions. The jurists who, in the absence of a recognized spiritual power, provisionally discharged in their own way the office of systematizing practical morals, modified, by means of the useful fiction of the jus natwrale, the presumptions of law and the interpretation of doubtful instruments. (Quod ad jus naturale attinet, omnes homines equales sunt ”—Ulpian. ‘*Servitus est constitutio juris gentium, qua quis dominio alieno contra naturam subjicitur”—Florentinus.) The general tendency both of the imperial constitutions and of the maxims of the legists is in favour of liberty. (‘*Ncc ignotum est quod multa contra juris rigorem pro libertate sint constituta”—Ulpian.) The practices of exposure and sale of children, and of giving them in pledge for debt, are for- bidden. An edict of Diocletian forbade a free man to sell himself. Manstealers or kidnappers (plagiarit) were punished with death. The insolvent debtor was withdrawn from the yoke of his creditor. While the slave trade was permittcd, the atrocious mutilation of boys and young men, too often practiscd, was punished with exile and even with death. In redhibitory actions (for the annulment of sales), if a slave were returned to the seller, so must also be his parents, brothers, and personz contubernio conjunc. In the

interpretation of testaments it was to be assumed that members of the same family were not to be separated by the division of the succession. The law also favoured in special cases the security of the peculium, though in general principle it still remained the property of the master. The state granted to public slaves the right of bequcathing half their possessions ; and private persons sometimes permitted similar dispositions even to a greater extent, though only within the familia. Hadrian took from masters the power of life and death and abolished the subterranean prisons. Autoninus Pius punished him who killed his own slave as if he had killed another's. Already in the time of Nero the magistrates had been ordered to receive the slave's complaint of ill-treatment ; and the lex Petronia, belonging to the same or an earlier period, forbade masters to hand over their slaves to combats with wild beasts, Antoninus directed that slaves treated with excessive cruelty, who had taken refuge at an altar or imperial image, should be sold; and this provision was extended to cases in which the master had employed a slave in a way degrading to him or beneath lis character. M. Aurelius gave to masters an action against thcir slaves for any cause of complaint, thus bringing their relation more directly under the surveillance of law and public opinion. A slave's oath could still not be taken in a court of law ; he was interrogated by the ''question"; but the emperors and jurists limited in various ways the application of torture, adding, how- ever, as we have mentioned, to the cases in which it could previously be appealed to that of the crime of majestas. For certain alleged offences of the master the slave could bring an action, being repre- sented for the purpose by an adsertor. Emancipation was facilitated; some of the old formalities were dispensed with ; obstacles to it were removed, and legal difficulties solved in such a way as to further it. The power of imposing conditions on testamentary manumissions was restricted, and these conditions interpreted in the sense most favourable to freedom. 'The emperor could confer liberty by pre- senting a gold ring to a slave with the consent of the master, and the legal process called restitutio nataliwm made him a full citizen. It was decided that liberty could not be forfeited even by a pre- scription of sixty years' duration.

The rise of Christianity in the Roman world still further improved the condition of the slave. The sentiments it created were not only favourable to the humane treatment of the class in the present, but were the germs out of

which its entire liberation was destined, at a later period, in part to arise. It is sometimes unreasonably objected to the Christian church that it did not denounce slavery as a social crime and insist on_ its immediate abolition, that on the contrary it recognized the institution, ecclesiastical persons and societics themselves being owners of slaves. We have scen that slavery was a fundamental element of the old Roman constitution, not only incorporated with the laws, but necessarily arising out of, and essential to, the military mission of the state. When the work of conquest had been sufficiently achieved, it could not be expected that a radical

—

ee

confusion of the two leads to endless misconceptions. We mean the régime of serfdom. In studying the origin of this transitional state of things, four principal considerations have to be keptin view. (1) As Gibbon observes, the sub- stantial completion of the Roman system of conquest and incorporation reduced the supply of slaves by restricting the dealings in them to such trade as took place within the now fixed limits of the empire. It is true that, when ‘the barbarian invasions began in the 3d century, many captives were made, who, when not enrolled in the army, were employed in agriculture or domestic service ; but the regular importation was greatly and increasingly dimin- ished, and the Romans were obliged to have recourse to “the milder but more tedious method of propagation.” ‘The effect of this was to improve the condition of the ‘slave by rendering his existence an object of greater value to his master. It tended, indeed, directly to the ‘transformation of slavery into serfdom by making it the interest of each family to preserve indefinitely its own hereditary slaves, who could not be replaced except with difficulty and at great expense. The abolition of the lextomnal slave trade tended, in fact, to put an end to internal sales, and the slaves became attached to the households or lands of their masters. (2) The diminished ‘supply of slaves further acted in the direction of the ree eation of free labour. A general movement of this kind is noticeable from the 2d century onwards. Freemen had always been to some extent employed in the public service—(a) as subordinate assistants to the magistrates and priests ; the places of scribes, viatores, criers could be filled only by citizens; the

apparitors attached to the ‘new imperial administration were also free plebeians, with slaves in the lower ranks; but these apparitorships were usually held by freedmen. So also (6) public works were in the 2d century divided amongst corporations of free plebeians, with public slaves under them. In_ private “service the superior posts were often filled by freedmen ; the higher arts—as medicine, grammar, painting—were partly in the hands of freedmen and even of ingenui; the more successful actors and gladiators were often freedmen. In the factories or workshops kept by wealthy persons slave labour was mainly employed; but free artisans sometimes offered their services to these establishments or ‘formed associations to compete with them. We have seen that free persons had all along been to some extent employed in the cultivation of land as hired labourers, and, as we shall presently find, also as tenants on the ‘great estates. How all this operated we shall understand when we examine the remarkable organization of the state ‘introduced by Diocletian and his successors. (3) This organization established in the Roman world a personal and hereditary fixity of professions and situations which was not very far removed from the caste system of the | Kast, The purpose of this was doubtless to resist by a | Strong internal consolidation the shock of the invasions, to Secure public order, to enforce industrious habits, and to guarantee the financial resources of the state. Personal independence was largely sacrificed, but those still more Important ends were in a great measure attained. The all- | pervading nature of this discipline will be understood from the following particulars. Members of the admin- istrative service were absolutely bound to their employ- _Ments; they could not choose their wives or marry their daughters out of the collegia to which they respectively | belonged, and they transmitted their obligations to their (children. If they abandoned their posts, they were sought for everywhere and forced to return. In muni- | Clpalities, even the curvales, or members of the local | ire Were bound to their places and their functions; _umste were other members of the municipal service who

) :

Ss ibeY bY

might supply a substitute on condition of resigning to him their lands, but this power was rarely used ; they commonly remained in their posts; their families, too, were bound to remain ; they were attached to the collegia or other bodies to which they belonged. The soldier, procured for the army by conscription, served as long as his age fitted him for his duties, and his sons were bound to similar service. The same sort of compulsion appears to have been exercised upon those belonging to, at least, such free industrial corporations as were recognized and regulated by the state. Every one was treated, in fact, as a servant of the state, and was bound to furnish labour or money, or both ; and the nature of his labour was permanently fixed for him; he was, in the language of the law, “conditionis laqueis irretitus.” This general system, by diminishing the free- man’s inastery over himself and his power to determine his oceupation, reduced the interval between him and the slave ; and the latter on the one hand, the free domestic servant and workshop labourer on the other, both passed insensibly into the common condition of serfdom. (4) The corresponding change, in the case of the rural slaves, took place through their being merged in the order of coloni. The Roman colonus was originally a free person who took land on lease, contracting to pay to the proprietor either a fixed sum annually or (when a colonus partiarius) a certain proportion of the produce of the farm. Under the emperorsof the4thcentury thename designated a cultivator, who, thougli personally free, was attached to the soil, and transmitted his condition to his descendants; and this became the regular status of the great mass of Roman cultivators. In sanctioning this personal and hereditary fixity, the law probably only recognized a state of things which had previously existed, having been spontaneously brought about by the circumstances of society, and especially by the needs of agriculture. The class of coloni appears to have been composed partly of tenants by con- tract who had incurred large arrears of rent and were detained on the estates as debtors (obwrati), partly of foreign captives or immigrants who were settled in this condition on the land, and partly of small proprietors and other poor men who voluntarily adopted the status as an improvement in their position. They paid a fixed proportion of the produce (pars agraria) to the owner of the estate, and gave a determinate amount of labour (operx) on the portion of the domain which he kept in his own hands (mansus dominicus). The law for a long time took no notice of these customary tenures, and did not systematically constitute them until the 4th century. It was indeed the requirements of the fiscus and

the conscription which impelled the imperial Government to regulate the system. The coloni were inscribed (adscriptt) on the registers of the census as paying taxes to the state, for which the proprietor was responsible, reimbursing himself for the amount. In a constitution of Constantine (332 A.D.) we find the colonus recognized as permanently attached to the land. If he abandoned his holding he was brought back and punished ; and any one who received him had not only to restore him but to pay a penalty. He could not marry out of the domain; if he took for wife a colona of another proprietor, she was restored to her original locality, and the offspring of the union were divided between the estates. The children of a colonus were fixed in the same status, and could not quit the property to which they belonged. They and their de- scendants were retained, in the words of a law of Theodosius, " quodam eternitatis jure," and by no process could be relieved from their obligations. By a law of Anastasius, at the end of the 5th century, a colonus who had voluntarily come into an estate was by a tenure of thirty years for ever attached to it. The master (dominus)

could inflict on his coloni "moderate chastisement," and could chain them if they attempted to escape, but they had a legal remedy against him for unjust demands or injury to them or theirs, In no case could the rent or the labour dues be increased. The colonus could possess property of his own, but could not alienate it without the consent of the master. Thus, whilst the members of the class were personally free, their condition lad some incidents of a semi-servile character. They are actually designated by Theodosius, though the lax language of the codes must not be taken too literally, "servi terre cui nati sunt." And Salvian treats the proposition "coloni divitum fiunt" as equivalent to 'vertuntur in servos." This is indeed an exaggeration ; a deduction must always be made from the phrases of the medizeval Jeremiah ; the colonatus was not an oppressive system ; it afforded, on the contrary, real security against unreasonable demands and wanton disturbance, and it was a great advance on the system of cultivation by the familia rustica. But the point which it is important for our present purpose to observe is, that there was a certain approxiniation between the condition of the colonus and the slave which tended towards the fusion of

both in a single class. To make this plain, we must go a little further into detail.

Besides the coloni there were on a great estate—and those of the 4th century were on a specially large scale— a number of preedial slaves, who worked collectively under overseers on the part of the property which the owner limself cultivated. But it was a common practice to settle certain of the slaves (and possibly also of the freed- men) on other portions of the estate, giving them small farms on conditions similar to those to which the coloni were subject. These slaves are, in fact, described by Ulpian as quasi colon. They had their own households and were hence distinguished as casati. In law these slaves were at first absolutely at the disposal of their masters ; they had no property in the strict sense of thie word, and could be sold to another proprietor and separated from their families. But the landlord's interest and the general tone of feeling alike modified practice even before the intervention of legislation ; they were habitually continued in their holdings, and came to possess in fact a perpetual and hereditary enjoyment of them. By a law of Valentinian I. (377) the sale of these slaves was interdicted unless the land they occupied were at the same time sold. The legal distinction between the coloni and the slave tenants continued to exist after the invasions; but the practical difference was greatly attenuated. The colonus often occupied a servile mansus, and the slave a mansus originally appropriated to a colonus. Intermarriages of the two classes became frequent. Already at the end of the 7th century it does not appear that the distinction between them had any substantial existence. The servile tenures were, no less than the others, stable and hereditary ; and the charges to be borne by the former were not necessarily the heavier.

Whilst giving their due weight to the social and economic circumstances which tended thus to merge the free labourer and colonus on the one hand and the slave on the other in a common class of serfs, we must never leave out of account the directly moral agencies which worked towards the same result by modifying slavery. Nor ought we to have in view only the influence of Christian doctrine and precept considered in themselves ; we must regard them as constantly applied in daily life by an independent spiritual order, which was revered alike by the two classes whose relations it assisted in regulating,

and whose general attitude towards slavery is sufficiently

shown by the celebrated declaration of Gregory the Great.

SLAVERY

tions. But, on the whole, it appears that, as in the case of the rise of the feudal system generally, so in the particular respect of the accompanied it, the influence of the Northern nations was really of little account, and that both changes would have

| Dei” and “pro remedio anime.”

A review of what has been said will make it plain that the Northern invasions had little to do with the transition from slavery to serfdom. Only two modes have bee . suggested in which they may possibly have accelerated the change. It is:~~not likely that the newly established proprietors would understand, or respect in practice, nice distinctions between classes of cultivators; they would probably regard the coloni and slaves, now that their conditions were so much assimilated, as standing on the same basis. And, secondly, the Germans, if we may believe Tacitus, had in their original seats no menial slaves, whilst, on the other hand, they were familiar with the system of slaves settled on separate portions of a domain and paying a fixed share of the produce to its owner. There may be a certain value in these considera~~

a5

qualified personal freedom which

equally, though perhaps not so speedily, taken place if the

invasions had never occurred.

Whilst ancient slavery was, as we have seen, a system Disp fitted to endure under given social conditions, and had pea a definite political function to fulfil, succeeded when that function was exhausted, was 4 merely transitory condition, with no other destination than that of leading the working

population up to a state of entire personal freedom. How thie serf in cities and towns became a free labourer for hire can be easily con- ceived ; he doubtless in many cases purchased. his liberty out of his earnings, and in others it was not the master's interest to retain his services at the cost of his maim tenance. favoured by the movement (not, however, to be confounded with it)

The emancipation of this entire class was

which established free industrial communities and gave them municipal jurisdiction. But it is very difficult to trace the steps by which the rural serf was transmuted into a free tenant. "The time and manner,' says Adam Smith, 'in which so important a revolution was brought about is one of the most obscure points In modern history." Smith himself attributes the change to two causes—(1) the greater advantage to the proprietor derived from the exertions of the cultivator when he worked entirely for himself, and (2) the encouragement which sovereigns, jealous of the great lords, gave to the villeins (under which term Smith seems to comprehend the whole mixed class of non-free tenants) to encroach on their authority. To these economic and political reasons, though doubtless real and important, Smith appears to attribute too exclusive an efficacy, neglecting the moral and religious causes which conspired to the same result, especially the personal influence of the clergy, who were natural mediators between the serfs and the proprietors. The serfs were best treated on the ecclesiastical estates, and many on private properties were liberated '' pro amore

Let us examine more particularly the circumstances of the transition in France and in England.

M. Guérard has shown that from the conquest by Ceesar to the Frat abolition of feudalism there was a steady improvement in the eon- dition of the class originally enslaved. He distinguishes three periods—one of slavery proper, lasting till the conquest of Gaul by the barbarians; the second, ending about the close of the reign Charles the Bald (d. 877), in which slavery is replaced by #2 intermediate state which he calls by the indeterminate name 0 "servitude," the rights of the servus being recognized, respected, and protected, if not yet in a sufficient degree by the civil laws, at least by those of the church and by social manners ; and a third m which,

under the developed regime of feudalism, serfdom proper 8 fully established and the serf-tenant has become simply a tributary under various appellations (homme de corps or de poté, mam

serfdom, whieh

(=

‘mortable, tatllable, serf, vilain). The three personal conditions here described coexisted to some extent in all these periods, one of ‘them, however, greatly preponderating in each. Towards the end “of the 9th century the serf-tenants were already proprietors of their holdings ; under the third dynasty they were rather subjects than tenants, and the dues they paid were rather taxes than rents; they were, in short, vassals occupying the lowest round of the feudal ladder. Guérard enumerates as Immediate causes which led to the liberation of serfs (besides the master’s voluntary gift or bequest) ‘their flight,—with the prescription which arose after a certain ‘interval oft absence,—ordination, redemption by themselves or others, marriages with women of higher status, and the action of law in the case of certain wrongs inflicted by the master. The -chureh co-operated to the same result, as might be shown by many instances. Thus St Benedict of Aniane (d. 821), the reformer of the monasteries.in the Carolingian territories, reccived a number of donations of lands from the faithful; but, whilst accepting them E his religious establishments, he enfranchised the serfs who inhabited them. All the serfs, not merely in a village, bourg, or _ city, but in whole districts, were liberated by charters of sovereigns or lords. Such documents are most common in the 13th century. The general edicts of Louis X. (1315) and Philip V. (1318) are little more than recognitions of a fait accompli, and were dictated, at least in part, by financial motives. Some relics of serfdom con- tinued to exist in local customs down to the Revolution, and were not abolished till the night of the 4th August 1789. But these survivals do not affect the truth of the proposition that the work of emancipation was essentially accomplished early in the 14th

} century. 4. Guérard has observed on the difficulty created by the ambiguity of the word servws in the mediwval authorities. In the study of

i. |

English serfdom, even eminent writers like Robertson, Hallam, and Kemble have obscured the subject by the use of the term slave, sometimes in its proper sense, sometimes in relation to the serf. Dr Stubbs has avoided this equivocal nomenclature, and by

attending more to social fact than to the letter of the law has

_ placed the history of the class in a clear light.

The slaves of Anglo-Saxon times were " regarded as the stock of their owner;.. . their offences against a third person he must answer for, as for the

_ mischief done by his cattle; ... they had no credibility, no legal ' rights ; wrongs done to them were regarded as wrongs done to their

master." Practice, indeed, was kinder to them than legal theory ;

_ as in the case of the Roman peculium, they were "in some un-

explained way" allowed to keep their savings, and so to purchase

_ their freedom; and "the spiritual law could enforce a penance on

the master for ill-treating them." There were laws of Ethelbert

_ and Canute forbidding the sale of men to heathen masters, and the slave trade, the principal seat of which was Bristol, was put down

_ by the preachin

ms

. appeared altogether.

g of St Wulfstan. The villein of Domesday Book is not a slave; 'he represents the Anglo-Saxon ecorl; he is an irre- movable cultivator, now regarded as customary tenant of a lord. The Norman knights probably confounded with the villanus the bordarii and other tenants who stood on a less favorable footing, Whilst the free ceorl became a villein, the servus

(theow) dis- } The position which the class constituted by this fusion came to occupy was one “compatible with much personal comfort and some social ambition.” The villeins ‘‘ were safe in the possession of their homes; they had a remedy against the violence of their masters; they could, if they chose to renounce their holdings and take refuge in a town, become members of the guild, and there, when unclaimed for a year and a day, obtain the full rights of freemen; they could obtain manumission by the intervention of the church, which always proclaimed the liberation of the villein to be a work of merit on the part of the master… .

‘Under a fairly good lord, under a monastery or a college, the

villein enjoyed inimunities and security that might be envied by his superiors ; he had a ready tribunal for his wrongs, a voice in the management of his village; he might with a little contrivance redeem his children and start them in a higher state of life.” Walter Map declares that in his time (12th century) the villeins

_ Were educating their ignoble offspring in the liberal arts. In the

Ny

carly part of the 14th century “it was by a mere legal form that the villeins were described as less than free.” In the reign of Richard IT. it seems that “the legal theory of their status has become hardened and sharpened so as to warrant almost wanton Oppression ;” but social causes, on the other hand, have ameliorated ee actual lot. It was not their normal condition that led to € msurrection of 1381, but the enforcement of jthe Statute of Labourers and the attempt of the lords to reassert legal claims which were practically obsolete. Serfdom died out in England without any special legislation againstit. It survived in exceptional instances, as in France; Hallam mentions as the latest deed of enfranchise- aaa one of Elizabeth in 1574 in favour of the bondmen on some ; a manors ; and it appears that in Scotland the workers in coal i” pi mines were in a state of serfdom until they were liberated i cts of the 15th and 39th years of the reign of George III. sscntially similar movements took place in the other countries

PEAY Wh Y

of the West. In Italy “the 11th and 12th centuries,” says Hallam, “saw the number of slaves ” (by which word he means serfs) ‘‘ begin to decrease ; early in the 15th a writer quoted by Muratori speaks of them as no longer existing. ... The greater part,” he adds, “of

the peasants in some countries of Germany had acquired their Germany.

liberty before the end of the 13th century; in other parts… they remained in a sort of villenage till the present age.” The most rigorous forms of serfdom (Leibeigensehaft) existed in those German districts which were once Wendish,—as Lusatia, Pomerania, and Mecklenburg, —and in Holstein. The last remains of the system in Germany were abolished in 1832 and 1848. were slowly converted into solariegos, who cultivated the land of the lord under obligations similar to those of the colonus. Alphonso X. (El Sabio) declared that the solariego could quit lis holding when he wished, though he could not alienate it or demand anything for his improvements, Alphonso XI. (El Justiciero) decreed that no lord should take the solar (holding) from the tenant, nor from his sons or grandsons, so long as they paid the fixed dues. They thus became irremovable, and their tenures were hereditary.

By these gradual processes every form of servitude dis- appeared from the social order of western Europe, whilst at the same time was bequeathed to the modern world the inexorable problem, still but partially solved, of the definitive position of the classes whose origin is traceable to that condition.

But not very long after the disappearance of serfdom Modern in the most advanced communities comes into sight the slave new system of colonial slavery, which, instead of being the ‘”@4*

spontaneous outgrowth of social necessities and subserving a temporary need of human development, was politically as well as morally a monstrous aberration, and never pro- duced anything but evil. –

In 1442, when the Portuguese under Prince Henry the Spanish Navigator were exploring the Atlantic coast of Africa, one Colonies.

of his officers, Antam Gonsalves, who had captured some Moors, was directed by the prince to carry them back to Africa. He received from the Moors in exchange for them ten blacks and a quantity of gold dust. This excited the cupidity of his fellow-countrymen ; and they fitted out a large numbér of ships for the trade, and built several forts on the African coast. Many negroes were brought into Spain from these Portuguese settlements, and the colonial slave trade first appears in the form of the introduction into the newly-discovered western world of children or descendants of these negroes. When Ovando was sent out in 1502 as governor of Hispaniola, whilst regulations, destined to prove illusory, were made for the protection of the natives of the island, permission was given to carry to the colony negro slaves, born in Seville and other parts of Spain, who had been instructed in the Christian faith. It appears from a letter of Ovando in 1503 that there were at that time numbers of negroes in Hispaniola; he requested that no more might be per- mitted to be brought out. In 1510 and the following years King Ferdinand ordered a number of Africans to be sent to that colony for the working of the mines. Before this time Columbus had proposed an exchange of his Carib prisoners as slaves against live stock to be furnished to Hispaniola by Spanish merchants. Infidels,

“he represented, would thus be converted, the royal treasury

enriched by a duty on the slaves, and the colonists sup- plied with live stock free of expense. He actually sent home in the ships of Antonio Torres, in 1494, above 500 Indian prisoners taken in wars with the caciques, who, he suggested, might be sold as slaves at Seville. But, after a royal order had been issued for their sale, Queen Isabella, interested by what she had heard of the gentle and hos- pitable character of the natives and of their docility, pro- cured a letter to be written to Bishop Fonseca, the super- intendent of Indian affairs, suspending the order until inquiry should be made into the causes for which they had been made prisoners, and into the lawfulness of their sale. Theologians differed on the latter question, and XX{iI, — 18

In Castile the serfs Spain.

England.

bes

Isabella directed that these Indians should be sent back to their native country, and that a policy of conciliation should be followed there instead of one of severity.

Bartolomé de las Casas, the celebrated bishop of Chiapa, accompanied Ovando to Hispaniola, and was a witness of the cruelties from which the Indians suffered under his administration. He came to Spain in 1517 to obtain measures in their favour, and he then made the suggestion to Charles that each Spanish resident in Hispaniola should have licence to import a dozen negro slaves. Las Casas, in his Historia de las Indias (lib. iii. cap. 101), frankly confesses the grave error into which he thus fell. ce is advice that licence should be given to bring negro slaves to these lands the clerigo Casas first gave, not consider- ing the injustice with which the Portuguese take them and make them slaves; which advice, after he had appre- hended the nature of the thing, he would not have given for all he had in the world." Other good men appear to have given similar advice about the same time, and, as has been shown, the practice was not absolutely new ; indeed the young king had in 1516, whilst still in Flanders, granted licences to his courtiers for the importation of negroes into the colonies, though Ximenes, as regent of Castile, by a decree of the same year forbade the practice. The suggestion of Las Casas was no doubt made on the ground that the negroes could, better than the Indians, bear the labour in the mines, which was rapidly exhaust- ing the numbers of the latter! He has sometimes on this plea been exonerated from all censure; but, as we have seen, he did not exculpate himself; and, though entitled to honour for the zeal and perseverance which he showed on behalf of the natives of the New World, he must in justice bear the blame due from posterity for his violation or neglect of moral principle. His advice was unfortunately adopted. ‘‘Charles," says Robertson, "granted a patent to one of his Flemish favourites, con- taining an exclusive right" of supplying 4000 negroes annually to Hispaniola, Cuba, Jamaica, and Porto Rico. "The favourite sold his patent to some Genoese mer- chants for 25,000 ducats"; these merchants obtained the slaves from the Portuguese; and thus was first brought into a systematic form that odious "commerce between Africa and America which has since been carried on to such an amazing extent," the action of the Spaniards being "imitated by all the nations of Europe who have acquired territories in the warmer climates of the New World."

The first Englishman who engaged in the hateful traffic was Captain John Hawkins (g.v.). The English slave traders were at first altogether occupied in supplying the Spanish settlements. Indeed the reign of Elizabeth passed without any English colony having been permanently established in America. But in 1620 a Dutch ship from the coast of Guinea visited Jamestown in Virginia, and sold a part of her cargo of negroes to the tobacco- planters. This was the first beginning of slavery in British America ; the number of negroes was afterwards continually increased— though apparently at first slowly—by importation, and the field- labour was more and more performed by servile hands, so that in 1790 the State of Virginia, which is only a small part of the original colony so named, contained 200,000 negroes.

The African trade of England was long in the hands of exclusive eompanies ; but by an Act of the first year of William and Mary it became free and open to all subjects of the crown. The African Company, however, continucd to exist, and obtained from time to time large parliamentary grants. By the treaty of Utrecht the asiento,? or contract for supplying the Spanish eolonies with 4800

1 The Spaniards, in the space of fifteen years subsequent to the discovery of the West Indies, had, as Robertson mentions, reduced the natives of Hispaniola from a million to 60,000.

2 The Spaniards were prevented from forming establishments on

the African coast by the Bull of Demarcation (‘‘Inter cetera”) of

Pope Alexander VI. (1493), which forbade their acquiring territory to the east of the meridian line of 100 miles west of the Azores. They could therefore supply their American possessions with slaves ouly by contracts with other powers.

negroes annually, which had previously passed from the Dutch to the French, was transferred to Great Britain ; an English company was to enjoy the monopoly for a period of thirty years from 1st May 1718. But the

contract came to an end in 1789, when the complaints of the English merchants on one side and of the Spanish officials on the other rose to such a height that Philip V. declared his determination to revoke the asiento, and Sir Robert Walpole was forced by popular feeling into war with Spain. Between 1680 and 1700 about 140,000 negroes were exported by the African Company, and 160,000 more by private adventurers, making a total of 300,000. Between 1700 and the end of 1786 as many as 610,000 were transported to Jamiaica alone, which had been an English possession since 1655. Bryan Edwards estimated the total import into all the British colonies of America and the West Indies from 1680 to 1786 at 2,130,000, being an annual average of 20,095. But this, he admits, is much less than was in his time commonly supposed. The British slave trade reached its utmost extension shortly before the War of American Independence, It was then carried on principally from Liverpool, but also from London, Bristol, and Lancaster ; the entire number of slave ships sailing from those ports was 192, and in them space was provided for the transport of 47,146 negroes. During the war the number decreased, but on its termination the trade immediately revived. When Edwards wrote (1791), the number of European factorics on the eoasts of Africa was 40; of these 14 were English, 3 French, 15 Dutch, 4 Portuguese, and 4 Danish. As correct a notion as can be obtained of the numbers annually cxported from the continent about the year 1790 by traders of the several European countries engaged in the traffic is supplied by the following statement :— "' By the British, 38,000; by the French, 20,000 ; by the Dutch, 4000; by the Dancs, 2000; by the Portuguese, 10,000; total 74,000." Thus more than half the trade was in British hands. '* At present," said Robertson, writing in 1791, ''the number of negro slaves in the settlements of Great Britain and France in the West Indies excecds a million; and, as the establishment of servitude has been found, both in ancient aud modern times, extremely unfavourable to population, it requires an annual im- portation of at least 58,000 to keep up the stock." The slaves in the Spanish dominions and in North America, he thought, probably amounted to an additional million. The hunting and stealing of human beings to make them slaves, Effects | which were already practised in Africa for the supply of the central the si states of that continent, as well as of the markets of northern trade, | Africa, Turkey, and other Mohammedan countries, were greatly aggravated by the demand of the European colonies, The native chiefs engaged in forays, sometimes

even on their own subjects, for the purpose of procuring slaves to be exchanged for Western com-) modities. They often set fire to a village by night and captured the inhabitants when trying to escape. “Thus all that was shock- | ing in the barbarism of Africa was multiplied and intensified by this foreign stimulation. To the miserics thus produccd, andto =| those suffered by the captives in their removal to the coast were added the horrors of the middle passage. Exclusive of the slaves who died before they sailed from Africa, 124 per cent. were lost during their passage to the West Indics; at J amaica 4% per cent. died whilst in the harbours or before the sale, and one-third more in the “seasoning.” Thus, out of every lot of 100 shipped from Africa 17 died in about 9 weeks, and not more than 50 lived to | be effective labourers in the islands. The circumstances of their subsequent life on the plantations were not favourable to the in- erease of their numbers. In Jamaica there were in 1690 40,000; from that year till 1820 there were imported 800,000; yet at the latter date there were only 840,000 in the island. One cause which prevented the natural increase of population was the in- equality in the numbers of the sexes ; in Jamaica alone there was in 1789 an excess of 30,000 males. It may be truly said that from the latter part of the Mov

17th century, when the nature of the slave trade began to seat be understood by the public, all that was best in England a i was adverse to it. Among those who denounced it— tmi besides some whose names are now little known, but are fn recorded with the honour they deserve in the pages of | Clarkson—were Baxter, Sir Richard Steele (in Jnhle and Yarico), the poets Southern (in Oroonoko), Pope, Thomson, Shenstone, Dyer, Savage, and above all Cowper (see his Charity, aud Task, bk. 2), Thomas Day (author of Sand- ford and Merton), Sterne, Warburton, Hutcheson, Beattie, John Wesley, Whitfield, Adam Smith, Millar, Robertson, Dr Johnson, Paley, Gregory, Gilbert Wakefield, Bishop Porteus, Dean Tucker. The question of the legal exist- ence of slavery in Great Britain and Ireland was raised in consequence of an opinion given in 1729 by York and Talbot, attorney-general and solicitor-general at the time,

a a

Phe VER Y

to the effect that a slave by coming into those countries from the West Indies did not become free, and might be com- pelled by his master to return to the plantations. Chief- Justice Holt had expressed a contrary opinion; and the matter was brought to a final issue by Mr Granville Sharp in the case of the negro Somerset. It was decided by Lord Mansfield, in the name of the whole bench, on June 22d 1772, that as soon as a slave set his foot on the soil of the British islands he became free. In 1776 it was moved in the House of Commons by David Hartley, son of the author of Observations on Man, that "the slave trade was contrary to the laws of God and the rights of men"; but this motion—the first which was made on the subject—failed ; public opinion on the question was far from being yet fully ripe.

The first persons in England who took united practical action against the slave trade were the Quakers, following the expression of sentiment which had emanated so early as 1671 from their founder George Fox. In 1727 they declared it to be "not a commendable or allowed" practice; in 1761 they excluded from their Society all who should be found concerned in it, and issued appeals to their members and the public against the system. In 1783 there was formed amongst them an association " for the relief and liberation of the negro slaves in the West Indies, and for the discouragement of the slave trade on the coast of Africa." This was the first society established in England for the purpose. The Quakers in America had taken action on the subject still earlier than those in England. The Pennsylvanian Quakers advised their members against the trade in 1696; in 1754 they issued to their brethren a strong dissuasive against encouraging itin any manner; in 1774 all persons concerned in the traffic, and in 1776 all slave holders who would not emancipate their slaves, were excluded from membership. The Quakers in the other American provinces followed the lead of their brethren in Pennsylvania. The individuals amongst the American Quakers who laboured most earnestly and indefatigably on behalf of the Africans were Jolin Woolman (1720-1773) and Anthony Benezet (1713-1784), the latter a son of a French Huguenot driven from France by the revocation of the edict of Nantes. The former confined his efforts chiefly to America and indeed to his coreligionists there; the latter sought, and not without a large measure of success, to found a universal propaganda in favour of abolition. A Pennsyl- vanian society was formed in 1774 by James Pemberton and Dr Benjamin

Rush, and in 1787 (after the war) was reconstructed on an enlarged basis under the presidency of Franklin. Other similar associations were founded about the same time in different parts of the United States. The next important movement took place in England. Dr Peckard, vice-chancellor of the university of Cam- bridge, who entertained strong convictions against the slave trade, proposed in 1785 as subject for a Latin prize dissertation the question, “An liceat invitos in servitutem dare.” Thomas Clarkson resolved to compete for the prize. Reading Anthony Benezet’s Historical Account of Guinea and other works in the course of his study of the Subject, he became so powerfully impressed with a sense of the vile and atrocious nature of the traffic that he ere long determined to devote his life to the work of its abolition, a resolution which he nobly kept. Tis essay, Which obtained the first prize, was translated into English man expanded form by its author, and published in 1786 with the title Hssay on the Slavery and Commerce of the Human Species. In the process of its publication he was brought into contact with several persons already deeply Interested in the question ; amongst others with Granville Sharp, William Dillwyn (an American by birth, who had

known Benezet), and the Rev. James Ramsay, who had lived nineteen years in St Christopher, and had published an Essay on the Treatment and Conversion of the African Slaves in the British Sugar Colonies. The distribution of Clarkson’s book led to his forming connexions with many persons of influence, and especially with William Wilber- force, who, having already occupied himself with the subject, went fully into the evidence bearing on it which Clarkson laid before him, aud, as the result of his inquiries, undertook the parliamentary conduct of the movement which was now decisively inaugurated. A committee was formed on 22d May 1787 for the abolition of the slave trade, under the presidency of Granville Sharp, which after twenty years of labour succeeded, with the help of eminent public men, in effecting the object ofits foundation, and thus removing a grave blot on the character of thie British nation, and mitigating one of the greatest evils that ever afflicted humanity. It is unquestionable that the principal motive power which originated and sustained their efforts was Christian principle and feeling. The most earnest and unremitting

exertions were made by the persons so associated in investigating facts and collecting evidence, in forming branch committees and procuring petitions, in the instruction of the public and in the infor- mation and support of those who pleaded the cause in parliament. To the original members were afterwards added several remarkable persons, amongst whom were Josiah Wedgwood, Bennet Langton (Dr Jolnson's friend), and, later, Zachary Macaulay, Henry Brougham, and James Stephen.

In consequence of the numerous petitions presented to parliament, a committee of privy council was appointed by the crown in 1788 to inquire concerning the slave trade ; and Mr Pitt moved that the House of Commons should early in the next session take the subject into con- sideration. Wilberforce's first motion for a committee of the whole House upon the question was made on 19th March 1789, and this committee proceeded to business on 12th May of the same year. After an admirable speech, Wilberforce laid on the table twelve resolutions which were intended as the basis of a future motion for the abolition of the trade. The discussion of these was postponed to the next session, and in 1790-91 evi- dence was taken upon them. At length, on 18th April of the latter year, a motion was made for the introduction of a bill to prevent the further importation of slaves into the British colonies in the West Indies. Opinion had been prejudiced by the insurrections in St Domingo and Martinique, and in the British island of Dominica; and the motion was defeated by 163 votes against 88. Legislative sanction was, however, given to the estab- lishment of the Sierra Leone Company, for the coloniza- tion of a district on the west coast of Africa and the discouragement of the slave trade there. It was hoped at the time that that place would become the centre from which the civilization of Africa would proceed; but this expectation was not fulfilled. On 2d April 1792 Wilber- force again moved that the trade ought to be abolished ; an amendment in favour of gradual abolition was carried, and it was finally resolved that the trade should cease on lst January 1796. When a similar motion was brought forward in the Lords the consideration of it was postponed to the following year, in order to give time for thie examination of witnesses by a committee of the House. A bill in the Commons in the following year to abolish that part of the trade by which British merchants supplied foreign settlements with slaves was lost on the third read- ing ; it was renewed in the Commons in 1794 and carried there, but defeated in the

Lords. Then followed several years during which efforts were made by the abolitionists

France.

in parliament with little success. But in 1806, Lord Grenville and Fox having come into power, a bill was passed in both Houses to put an end to the British slave trade for foreign supply, and to forbid the importation of slaves into the colonies won by the British arms in the course of the war. On 10th June of the same year Fox brought forward a resolution “that effectual measures should be taken for the abolition of the African slave trade in such a manner and at such a period as should be deemed advisable,” which was carried by a large majority. A similar resolution was successful in the House of Lords. A bill was then passed through both Houses forbidding the employment of any new vessel in the trade. Finally, in 1807, a bill was presented by Lord Grenville in the House of Lords providing for the abolition of the trade, was passed by a large majority, was then sent to the Commons (where it was moved by Lord Howick), was there amended and passed, and received the royal assent on 25th March. The bill enacted that no vessel should clear out for slaves from any port within the British dominions after lst May 1807, and that no slave should be landed in the colonies after 1st March 1808.

In 1807 the African Institution was formed, with the primary objects of keeping a vigilant watch on the slave traders and procuring, if possible, the abolition of the slave trade by the other European nations. It was also to be made an instrument for promoting the instruction of the negro races and diffusing information respecting the agricultural and commercial capabilities of the African continent.

The Act of 1807 was habitually violated, as the traders knew that, if one voyage in three was successful, they were abundantly remunerated for their losses. This state of things, it was plain, must continue as long as the trade was only a contraband commerce, involving merely pecu- niary penalties. Accordingly, in 1811, Brougham carried through parliament a bill declaring the traffic to be a felony punishable with transportation. Some years later

another Act was passed, making it a capital offence ; but this was afterwards repealed. The law of 1811 proved effectual, and brought the slave trade to an end so far as the British dominions were concerned. Mauritius, indeed, continued it for a time. That island, which had been ceded by France in 1810, three years after the aboli- tion, had special facilities for escaping observation in con- sequence of the proximity of the African coast; but it was soon obliged to conform.

The abolition of the French slave trade was preceded by stormy struggles and by many deplorable excesses. The western part of St Domingo, nominally belonging to Spain, had been occupied by buccaneers, who were recognized and supported by the French Government, and had been ceded to France at the peace of Ryswick in 1697. So vast was the annual importation of enslaved negroes into this colony before 1791 that the ratio of the blacks to the whites was as 16 to 1. In that year there were in Freneh St Domingo 480,000 blacks, 24,000 mulattoes, and only 30,000 whites. The French law for the regulation of slavery in the plantations, known as the Code Noir (framed under Louis XIV. in 1685), was humane in its spirit; but we are informed that its provisions were habitually disregarded by the planters, whilst the free mulattocs laboured under serious grievances and were exposed to irritating indignities. A “Société des Amis des Noirs” was formed in Paris.in 1788 for the abolition, not only of the slave trade, but of slavery itself. The president was Condorcet, and amongst the members were the Duc de la Rochefoucault, the Abbé Gregoire, Brissot, Clavitre, Pétion, and La Fayette; Mirabeau was an active sympathizer. The great motor of the parallel effort in England was the Christian spirit; in France it was the enthusiasm of humanity which was associated with the revolu- tionary movement. There were in 1789 a number of mulattoes in Paris, who had come from St Domingo to assert the rights of the poe of eolour in that colony before the national assembly. The

eclaration of the Rights of Man in August 1789 seemed to meet their claims, but in March 1790 the assembly, alarmed by rumours of the discontent and disaffection of the planters in St Domingo,

Sh A Vein

passed a resolution that it had not been intended to comprehend the internal government of the colonies in the constitution framed for the mother country, and added that the assembly would not cause any innovation to be made, direetly or indirectly, in any system of commerce in which the colonies were already concerned, —a declaration which could only be interpreted as sanctioning the continuance of the slave trade. Vincent Ogé, one of the mulatto delegates in Paris, disgusted at the overthrow of the hopes of his race, returned to St Domingo, and on landing in October 1790 addressed a letter to the governor announcing his intention | of taking up arms on behalf of the mulattoes if their wrongs were not redressed. He rose accordingly with a few followers, but was soon defeated and foreed to take refuge in the Spanish part of the island. He was afterwards surrendered, tried, and sentenced to be broken on the wheel. When the news of this reached Paris, it created a strong feeling against the planters; and on the motion of the Abbé Gregoire it was resolved by the assembly on 15th May 1791 **that the people of colour resident in the French colonies, born of free parents, were entitled to, as of right, and should be allowed, the enjoyment of all the privileges of French citizens, and among others those of being eligible to seats both in the parochial and colonial assemblies." On the 23d August a rebellion of the negroes broke out in the northern province of St Domingo, and soon extended to the western province, where the mulattoes and blacks combined. Many enormities were com- mitted by the insurgents, and were avenged with scarcely inferior barbarity. The French assembly, alarmed by these scenes, and fearing the loss of the colony, repealed on 24th September the decree of the preceding May. This lamentable vacillation put an end to all hope of a reconciliation of parties in the island. Civil commissioners sent out from France quarrelled with the governor and called the revolted negroes to their assistance. The white inhabitants of Cape Frangois were massaered and the city in great part destroyed by fire. The planters now offered their allegiance to Great Britain; and an English force landed in the colony. But it was insufficient to encounter the hostility of the republican troops and the revolted negroes and miulattoes ; it suffered dread- fully from disease, and was obliged to evacuate the island in 1798. On the departure of the British the government remained in the hands of Toussaint l'Ouverture, the noblest type ever produced by the African race. Slavery had disappeared ; the blacks were employed as hired servants, receiving for their remuneration the third part

of the crops they raised ; and the population was rapidly rising in civilization and comfort. The whole island was now French, the Spanish portion having been ceded by the treaty of Basel. The wish of Toussaint was that St Domingo should enjoy a practical independence whilst recognizing the sovereignty and exclusive commercial rights of France. Of the violent and treacherous conduct of Bonaparte towards the island and its eminent chief we cannot here give an account ; the final issue was that the blacks drove from their soil the forces sent to subdue them, and founded a constitution of their own, which was more than once modified. There can be no doubt that the Government of the Restoration, in seeking to obtain possession of the island, had the intention of re-establishing slavery, and even of reopening the slave trade for the purpose of recruiting the diminished popu- lation. But Bonaparte abolished that trade during the Hundred Days, though he also failed to win back the people of St Domingo, or, as it was now called by its original name, Hayti, to obedience. The Bourbons, when again restored, could not reintroduce the slave trade; the notion of conquering the island had to be given up ; and its independence was formally recognized in 1825. Thus France lost her most important colonial possession, which had yielded produce to an amount almost as great as that of all the rest of the West Indies; and the negro race obtained its first and hitherto its only independent settlement outside the African con- tinent.

England had not been the first European power to Prog § abolish the slave trade ; that honour belongs to Denmark ; * a royal order was issued 16th May 1792 that the traffic on should cease in the Danish possessions from the end of 1802. The United States had in 1794 forbidden any participation by American subjects in the slave trade to foreign countries ; they now prohibited the importation of slaves from Africa into their own dominion. This Act was passed 2d March 1807; it did not, however, come into force till lst January 1808. At the congress of Vienna (opened November 1, 1814) the principle was acknowledged that the slave trade should be abolished as soon as possible; but the determination of the limit of time was reserved for separate negotiation between the powers. It had been provided in a treaty between France

and Great Britain, May 30, 1814, that no foreigner should

< a

in future introduce slaves into the French colonies, and that the trade should be absolutely interdicted to the French themselves after June 1, 1819. This postponement of abolition was dictated by the wish to introduce a fresh stock of slaves into Hayti, if that island should be recovered. Bonaparte, as we have seen, abolished the French slave trade during his brief restoration, and this abolition was confirmed at the second peace of Paris, November 20, 1815, but it was not effectually carried out by French legislation until March 1818. In January 1815 Portuguese subjects were prohibited from prosecut- ing the trade north of the equator, and the term after which the traffic should be everywhere unlawful was fixed to end on 21st January 18238, but was afterwards extended to February 1830; England paid £300,000 as a compensation to the Portuguese. A royal decree was issued on 10th December 1836 forbidding the export of slaves from any Portuguese possession. But this decree was often violated. It was agreed that the Spanish slave trade should come to an end in 1820, England paying to Spain an indemnification of £400,000. The Dutch trade was closed in 1814; the Swedish had been abolished in 1813. By the peace of Ghent, December 1814, the United States and England mutually bound themselves to do all in their power to extinguish the traffic. It was at once prohibited in several of the South American states when they acquired independence, as in La Plata, Vene- mela, and Chili. In 1831 and 1833 Great Britain entered into an arrangement with France for a mutual right of search within certain seas, to which most of the other powers acceded; and by the Ashburton treaty (1842) with the United States provision was made for the joint maintenance of squadrons on the west coast of Africa. By all these measures the slave trade, so far as it was carried on under the flags of European nations or for the supply of their colonies, ceased to exist.

Meantime another and more radical reform had been in preparation and was already in progress, namely, the abolition of slavery itself in the foreign possessions of the several states of Europe. When the English slave trade had been closed, it was found that the evils of the traffic, as still continued by several other nations, were greatly ageravated. In consequence of the

activity of the British cruisers the traders made great efforts to carry as many slaves as possible in every voyage, and practised atrocities to get rid of the slaves when capture was imminent. It was, besides, the interest of the cruisers, who shared the price of the captured slave-ship, rather to allow the slaves to be taken on board than to prevent their being shipped at all. Thrice as great a number of negroes as before, it was said, was exported from Africa, and two-thirds of these were murdered on the high seas. It was found also that the abolition of the British slave trade did not lead to an improved treatment of the negroes in the West Indies. The slaves were overworked now that fresh supplies were stopped, and their numbers rapidly decreased. In 1807 there were in the West Indies 800,000; in 1830 they were reduced to 700,000. It became more and more evident that the root of the evil could be reached only by abolishing slavery altogether. At the same time, by the discussions which had for years gone on throughout English society on the subject of the slave trade, men's consciences had been awakened to question the lawfulness of the whole system of things out of which that trade had taken its rise.

An appeal was made by Wilberforce in 1821 to Thomas Fowell Buxton to undertake the conduct of this new question in parliament. An anti-slavery society was established in 1823, the principal members of which, besides Wilberforce and Buxton, were Zachary Macaulay, Dr Lushington, and Lord Suffield. Buxton moved on

5th May of the same year that the House should take into con- sideration the state of slavery in the British colonies. The object

he and his associates had then in view was gradual abolition by establishing something like a system of serfdom for existing slaves, and passing at the same time a measure emancipating all their children born after acertain day. Canning carried against Buxton and his friends a motion to the effect that the desired ameliorations in the condition and treatment of the slaves should be recommended by the home Government to the colonial legislatures, and enforced only in case of their resistance, direct action being taken in the single instance of Trinidad, which, being a crown colony, had no legislature of its own. A well-conccived series of measures of re- form was

accordingly proposed to the colonial authorities. There- upon a general outcry was raised by the planters at the acquiescence of the Government in the principles of the anti-slavery party.

The example of Great Britain was gradually followed by the other European states, and some American ones had already taken action of the same kind. The immediate emancipation of the slaves in the French colonies was decreed by the Provisional Government of 1848. In 1858 it was enacted that every slave belonging to a Portuguese subject should be free in twenty ycars from that date, a system of tutelage being established in the meantime. This law came into operation on 29th April 1878, and the status of slavery was thenceforth illegal throughout the Portuguese possessions. The Dutch emancipated their slaves in 1863. Several of the Spanish Amcrican states, on declaring their independence, had adopted measures for the discontinuance of slavery within their limits. It was abolished by a decree of the Mexican republic on 15th September 1829. The Governinent of Buenos Ayres enacted that all children born to slaves after 31st January 1813 should be free; and in Colombia it was provided that those born after 16th July 1821 should be liberated on attain- ing their eighteenth year.

Three of the most important slave systems still re- mained in which no steps towards emancipation had been taken—those of the Southern United States, of Cuba, and of Brazil.

Slavery was far from being approved in principle by United the most eminent of the fathers of the American Union. States.

Washington in his will provided for the emancipation of his own slaves; he said to Jefferson that it was ‘‘among

his first wishes to see some plan adopted by which slavery in his country might be abolished by law,” and again he wrote that to this subject his own suffrage should never be wanting. John Adams declared his abhorrence of the practice of slaveholding, and said that “every measure of prudence ought to be assumed for the eventual total extirpation of slavery from the United States.” Frank- lin’s opinions we have already indicated; and

Madison, Hamilton, and Patrick Henry all reprobated the principle of the system. Jefferson declared that in the presence of the institution “he trembled for his country when he remembered that God was just.” The last-named states- man, at the first continental congress after the evacuation by the British forces, proposed a draft ordinance (lst March 1784) for the government of the territory—includ- ing the present Tennessee, Alabama, and Mississippi— ceded already or to be ceded by individual States to the United States ; and it was an article of this ordinance that “after the year 1800 there should be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in any of the said States, otherwise than in punishment of crime.” This proviso, however, was lost. At the convention of Philadelphia in 1787, where the constitution was settled, the sentiments of the framers were against slavery ; but South Carolina and Georgia insisted on its recognition as a condition of their joining the Union, and even an engagement for the mutual rendition of fugitive slaves was embodied in the federal pact. The words “slave” and “slavery” were, however, excluded from the constitution, ‘‘ because,” as Madison says, “they did not choose to admit the right of property in man” in direct terms; and it was at the same time provided that Congress might interdict the foreign slave trade after the expiration of twenty years. It must not be forgotten that either before or soon after the formation of the Union the Northern States—beginning with Vermont in 1777, and ending with New Jersey in 1804—either abolished slavery or adopted measures to effect its gradual abolition within their boundaries. But the principal opera- tion of (at least) the latter change was simply to transfer Northern slaves to Southern markets.

We cannot follow in detail the several steps by which the slave power for a long time persistently increased its influence in the Union. The acquisition of Louisiana— including the State so named, Arkansas, Missouri, and Kansas—(1803), though not made in its interest, the Missouri compromise (1820), the annexation of Texas (1845), the Fugitive Slave Law (1850), the Kansas- Nebraska bill (1854), the Dred Scott decision (1856), the attempts to acquire Cuba (1854) and to reopen the foreign slave trade (1859-60), were the principal steps—only some of them successful—in its career of aggression. They roused a determined spirit of opposition, founded on deep-seated convictions. The pioneer of the more recent abolitionist movement was Benjamin Lundy (1789-1839). He was followed by William

Lloyd Garrison (1805-1879), Elijah P. Lovejoy (1802-1837)—a martyr, if ever there was one—Wendell Phillips, Charles Sumner, John Brown (b. 1800, hanged 1859), all of whom were in their several ways leading apostles or promoters of the cause. The best intellect of America outside the region of practical politics has been on the anti-slavery side. William E. Channing, R. W. Emerson, the poets Bryant, Longfellow, pre-eminently Whittier, and more recently Whitman, have spoken on this theme with no uncertain sound. The South, and its partisans in the North, made desperate efforts to prevent the free expression of opinion respecting the institution, and even the Christian churches in the slave States used their influence in favour of the main- tenance of slavery. Butin spite of every such effort opinion steadily grew. Publicsentiment in the North was

deeply stirred. by the Uncle Tom's Cabin of Mrs Harriet Beecher Stowe (1852), which, as Senior said, under the disguise of a novel was really a pamphlet against the Fugitive Slave Law. It gradually became apparent that the question could not be settled without an armed con- flict. The designation of Abraham Lincoln as president in November 1860 was the signal for the rising of the South, The North at first took arms simply to maintain the i Union ; but the far-sighted politicians from the first, and | | soon the whole nation, saw that the 'real !issue was the im continued existence or the total abolition of slavery. See 7 Unitep STATES.

The war was closed by the surrender at Appomattox (9th April 1865), but already in 1862 slavery in the ' Territories had been abolished by Congress; on 22d of September of the same year Lincoln had issued his pro- clamation of freedom to the slaves; and in 1864 a con- stitutional amendment had been passed abolishing and for ever prohibiting slavery throughout the United States.

The Spanish slave code, promulgated in 1789, is adinitted on Cuba, all hands to have been very humane in its charaeter ; and, in eon- sequence of this, after Trinidad had become an English possession, the anti-slavery party resisted—and_ suceessfully—the attempt of the planters (1811) to have the Spanish law in that island replaeed by the British. But, notwithstanding this mildness of the code, so habitually and glaringly were its provisions

violated in the colonies of Spain, that Dr R. R. Madden, who had personal | knowledge of the affairs of Cuba, declared in 1840 that ‘slavery in Cuba was more destructive to human life, more pernicious to society, degrading to the slave and debasing to the master, more | fatal to health and happiness, than in any other slaveholding country on the face of the habitable globe.” ‘‘It is in Cuba at

this day,” wrote Cairnes in 1862, ‘‘. . . that we see in the servile class the coarsest fare, the most exhausting and unremitting toil, and even the absolute destruction of a portion of its numbers every year by the slow torture of overwork and insufficient sleep ale | rest.” The slave population of the island was estimated in 1792 at 84,000; in 1817 at 179,000; in 1827 at 286,000; and in 1843 at 436,000. An Act was passed by the Spanish legislature in 1870, providing that every slave who had then passed, or should thercafter pass, the age of sixty should be at once free, and that all yet unborn children of slaves should also be free. The latter, however, were to be maintained at the expense of the proprietors up to their eighteenth year, and during that time to be kept, as apprentices, to such work as was suitable for their age. This is known as the Moret Law, having been carried through the house of representatives by Sefior Moret y Prendergast, then minister for the colonies. By the census of 1867 there was in Cuba a total popula- tion of 1,370,211 persons, of whom 764,750 were whites and 605, 461 black or coloured ; and of the latter number 225,938 were free and 379,523 were slaves. In 1873 the Cubans roughly estimated the population at 1,500,000,—of whom 500,000, or one-third, were slaves. Mr Crowe, consul-general in the island, has lately (1886) stated that “the institution is rapidly dying, —that in a year, or at most two, slavery, even in its present mild form, will be extinet,” There was a convention between Great Britain and Brazil m Broz 1826 for the abolition of the slave trade, but it was habitually violated in spite of the English cruisers. In 1830 the traffic was declared piracy by the emperor of Brazil. England asserted by the Aberdeen Act (1845) the right of seizing suspected craft in Bra- zilian waters. Yet by the connivance of the local administrative authorities 54,000 Africans continued to be annually imported. In 1850 the trade is said to have been decisively put down. The planters and mine proprietors cried out against this as a national calamity. The closing ofthe traffic made the labour of the slaves more severe, and led to the employment on the plantations of many

who before had been engaged in domestic work ; but the slavery of Brazil has always been lighter than that of the United States. On 28th September 1871 the Brazilian chambers deereed that slavery should be abolished throughout the empire. Though existing slaves were to remain slaves still, with the exception of those possessed by the Government, who were liberated by the Act, facilities for emancipation were given ; and it was provided that all children born of female slaves after the day on which the law passed should be free. They were, however, bound to serve the owners of their mothers for a term of 21 years. A clause was inserted to the effect that a certain sum should be anuually set aside from fines to aid each province in emancipating slaves by purchase. Seven years before the passing of this Act the emperor, whose influence has always been exerted in favour of freedom, had liberated his private slaves, and many Brazilians after 1871 followed his example. According to the census of 1835 there were then 12

i! wird ay ray.

|

Rhian 8¢llom,

ee

PilAaAwvy eR Y

Brazil 2,100,000 slaves. It was estimated that at the beginning of 1875 there were not more than 1,476,567. But in 1884 they are spoken of as 3,000,000 in number. A gradual separation has been for some time taking place between the parts of the country in which slave labour is used and the frec-labour regions. Slavery is being concentrated in the districts between Maranhdo and Sao Paulo, In 1880 the deputy Joachim Nabuco, leader of the anti- slavery movement, obtained leave to introduce a bill for a more rapid liberation of slaves than was attainable under the law of 1871, and for the final extinction of slavery in Brazil by 1st January 1890, The Government, however, refused to sanction the further progress of the bill ; but the question has since become again of pre- sent political interest, being the prineipal subject of discussion in the parliament which opened Ist

March 1885. A bill has been passed, known as the Saraiva Law, on whieh we eannot yet form a definitive judgnient, but which is understood to have disappointed the expectations of the abolitionists. It is said to provide exorbitant compensation for the slave-owners ; and, although slaves over 60 years of age are to obtain their freedom, it appears that all slaves, on being set free, as well as the indentured children of slaves, are to remain three years longer with their masters at very low wages, the planters thus practically receiving an additional indemnity.

In the eolonies of more than one Huropean country, after the prohibition of the slave trade, attempts were made to replace it by a system of importing labourers of the inferior raees under contracts for a somewhat lengthened term; and this was in several instances found to degenerate into a sort of legalized slave traffic. About 1867 we began to hear of a system of this kind which was in operation between the South Sea Islands and New Caledonia and the white settlements in Fiji. It seems to have begun in really voluntary agrcements ; but for these the unscrupu- lous greed of the traders soon substituted methods of fraud and violence. The natives were decoyed into the labour ships under false pretences, and then detained by force ; or they were seized on shore or in their canoes and carried on board. ‘The nature of the engagements to go and work on the plantations was not fully explained to them, and they were hired for periods exceeding the legal term. The area of this trade was ere long further extended. In 1884 attention was drawn in a special degree to tlhe Queensland traffic in Pacific Islanders by the “ Hopeful” trials, and a Govern- ment commission was appointed to inquire into the methods followed by labour ships in recruiting the natives of New Guinea, the Louisiade Archipelago, and the D’Entrecasteaux group of islands. ‘The result of the investigations, during which nearly five hundred witnesses were examined, was the disclosure of a system which in treachery and atrocity was little inferior to the old African slave trade. These shameful deeds have made the islanders regard it as a duty to avenge their wrongs on any white men they can entice upon their shores, The noble-hearted bishop of Melanesia, John Coleridge Patteson, fell a victim to this retaliation on the island of Nukapu 20th September 1871. The tendency of the whole system is to ereate a war of races. It may be questioned whether this trade in labour can be safely continued at all; if so, it must be under a constant and vigorous system of surveillance and regulation.

We have seen that the last vestiges of the monstrous anomaly of modern colonial slavery are disappearing from all civilized states and their foreign possessions. It nowremainsto consider the slavery of primitive origin which has existed within recent times, or eon- tinues to exist, outside of the Western world.

In Russia, a country which had not the same historical ante- eedents with the Western nations, properly so called, and which is in fact more correctly classed as Eastern, whilst slavery had dis- appeared, serfdom was in force down to our own days. The rural population of that country, at the earliest period accessible to our Inquiries, consisted of (1) slaves, (2) free agricultural labourers, and (3) peasants proper, who were small farmers or ecottiers and members of a commune. The sources of slavery were there, as elsewhere, capture in war, voluntary sale by poor freemen of them- selves, sale of insolvent debtors, and the action of the law in certain erminal cases. In the 18th eentury we find the distinction between the three elasses named above effaced, and all of them merged in the class of serfs, who were the property either of the landed proprietors or of the state. They were not even adscripti glebe, though forbidden to migrate; an imperial ukase of 1721 says, “the proprietors sell their peasants and domestic servants, hot even in families, but one by one, like cattle.” This practice, at first tacitly sanctioned by the Government, which received dues on the sales, was at length formally recognized by several imperial ukases, Peter the Great imposed a poll-tax on all the members of a Tural population, making the proprietors responsible for the AX charged on their serfs ; and the ‘free wandering people ” who Me hot willing to enter the army were required to settle on the aud either as members of a commune or as serfs of some pro- He The system of serfdom attained its fullest development in

Ne reign of Catherine II. The serfs were bought, sold, and given

in presents, sometimes with the land, sometimes without it, some- times in families and sometimes individually, sale by public auction being alone forbidden, as ‘‘ unbecoming in a European state.” The proprietors could transport without trial their unruly serfs to Siberia or send them to the mines for life, and those who presented complaints against their masters were

punished with the knout and condemned to the mines. The first symptoms of a reaction appear in the reign of Paul (1796-1801). He issued an ukase that the serfs should not be foreed to work for their masters more than three days in each week. There were several feeble attempts at further reform, and even abortive projects of emancipation, from the commencement of the present century. But no decisive measures were taken before the accession of Alexander II. (1855). That emperor, after the Crimean War, created a secret committee eom- posed of the great officers of state, called the chief committee for peasant affairs, to study the subject of serf-emancipation. Of this body the grand-duke Constantine was an energetic member. To aecelerate the proceedings of the committee advantage was taken of the following ineident. In the Lithuanian provinces the relations of the masters and serfs were regulated in the time of Nicholas by what were ealled inventories. The nobles, dissatisfied with these, now sought to have them revised. The Government interpreted the application as implying a wish for the abolition of serfdom, and issued a reseript authorizing the formation of eommittees to pre- pare definite proposals for a gradual emancipation. A cireular was soon after sent to the governors and marshals of the nobility all over Russia proper, informing them of this desire of the Lithuanian nobles, and setting out the fundamental principles which should be observed ‘‘if the nobles of the provinces should express a similar desire.” Public opinion strongly favoured the projected reform; and even the masters who were opposed to it saw that, if the operation beeame necessary, it would be more safely for their interests intrusted to the nobles than to the bureaucracy. Accord- ingly during the year 1858 a committee was created in nearly every province in which serfdom existed. From the schemes prepared by these committees, a general plan had to be elaborated, and the Government appointed a special imperial commission for this purpose. The plan was formed, and, in spite of some opposition from the nobles, which was suppressed, it became law, and serf- dom was abolished (19th February = 8d March 1861). Its nature and results have been indicated in Russia, vol. xxi. p. 82. The total number of serfs belonging to proprietors at the time of the emancipation was 21,625,609, of whom 20,158,231 were peasant serfs and 1,467,378 domestic serfs. This number does not include the state serfs, who formed about one-half of the rural population. Their position had been better, asa rule, than that of the serfs on private estates ; it might indeed, Mr Wallace says, be regarded as ‘fan intermediate position between serfage and

freedom.” Amongst them were the serfs on the lands formerly belonging to the church, which had been secularized and transformed into state demesnes by Catherine IT. There were also serfs on the apanages affected to the use of the imperial family ; these amounted to nearly three and a half millions, Thus by the law of 1861 more than forty millions of serfs were emancipated.

The slavery of the Mohammedan East is usually not the slavery Moham- of the field but of the household. The slave is a member of the medan The Koran slavery.

family, and is treated with tenderness and affection. breathes a considerate and kindly spirit towards the class, and encourages manumission. The child of a slave girl by her master is born free, and the mother is usually raised to be a frec wife But behind this slavery, however mild in itself, stands the slave trade, with its systematic man-hunting, which has been, and still is, the curse of Africa. The traffic in slaves has becn repeatedly declared by the Ottoman Porte to be illegal throughout its dominions, and there have been several conventions between Great Britain and the khedive for its suppression in Egypt; but it is still largely car- ried on both in the latter country and in Turkey, owing to the laxity and too often the eomplieity of the Government officials,

In the days of the eolonial slave trade its African eentre was the Africa.

region about the mouths of the rivers Calabar and Bonny, whither the eaptive negroes were brought from great distances in the interior. As many slaves, Clarkson tells us, came annually from this part of the eoast as from all the rest of Africa besides, At present, it is commonly said,—though Cameron in 1875 was other- wise informed,—no slaves are exported from the westcrn side of the continent. The principal centres from which the supply is now furnished to Egypt, Turkey, Arabia, and Persia are three in number. (1) The Soudan, south of the Great Sahara, appears to be one vast hunting-ground. Captives are brought thence to the slave market of Kuka in Bornu, where, after being bought by dealers, they are, to the number of about 10,000 annually, marched over arid desert tracks under a burning sun to Murzuk in Fezzan, from which place they are distributed to the northern and eastern Mediterranean coasts. Their sufferings on the route are

dreadful; many succumb and are abandoned. Rohlfs informs us that ‘‘any one who did not know the way” by which the caravans pass “would only have to follow the bones which lie right and left of

the track.” Negroes are also brought to Morocco from the Western Soudan and from Timbuktu. The centre of the traffic in Morocco is Sidi Hamed ibn Musa, seven days’ journey south of Mogador, where a great yearly fair is held. The slaves are for- warded thence in gangs to different towus, especially to Morocco city, Fez, and Mequinez. About 4000 are thus annually im- ported, and an ad valorem duty is levied by the sultan, whieh produces about £4800 of annual revenue. The total number of negro slaves in Morocco appears to be about 50,000. (2) The basin of the Nile, extending to the great lakes, is another region infested by the slave trade; the slaves are either smuggled into Egypt or sent by the Red Sea to Turkey. The khedive Ismail in 1869 appointed Sir Samuel Baker to the command of a large force with which he was “to strike a direct blow at the slave trade in its distant nest.” The instructions in the firman issued to him were as follows :—‘‘T’o subdue to our authority the countries situated to the south of Gondokoro, to suppress the slave trade, to introduce a system of regular commerce, to open to navigation the great lakes of the equator, and to establish a chain of military stations and commercial depéts throughout Central Africa.” The work energetically commenced by him was continued by Colonel C. G. Gordon (1874 to 1879), but since the revolt of the Soudan, it is to be feared, no trace of his or of Baker’s work remains in the scene of their labours. The most effectual direct methods of deal- ing with the slave trade in the present territories of Egypt seem to be those suggested by the Anti-Slavery Society to Mr Gladstone’s Government in 1881—extended consular supervision, and a com- pulsory registration of all existing slaves. (3) There has long been a slave trade from the Portuguese possessions on the East African coast, The stream of supply came mainly from the southern Nyassa districts by three or four routes to Ibo, Mozambique, Angoche, and Kilimane. Madagascar and the Comoro Islands obtained most of their slaves from the Mozambique coast. It was believed in 1862 that about

19,000 passed every year from the Nyassa regions to Zanzibar, whence large supplies were drawn for the markets of Arabia and Persia up to 1873. The mission of Sir Bartle Frere to the sultan of Zanzibar in 1873 brought about a treaty

for the suppression of the slave trade, but it is to be feared that.

the cessation of the traffic from that port has not extinguished the traffic but has in part only given it a different direction, through Somali markets. In Madagascar, which had been supplied from the Mozambique coast, the import and sale of slaves were prohibited within the Hova dominions by Queen Ranavalona IJ. in June 1877. The rulers of the Comoro Islands, Mohilea and Anjuan (or Johanna), have signed treaties for the abolition of the status of slavery in their dominions after 1890, the fulfilment of which, however, it will probably be difficult to enforce. The stations established by the English universities in the valley of the Rovuma and by the Established and Free Churches of Scotland on Lake Nyassa doubtless contributed much to the diminution of the traffic in those parts. It is said that, whereas no less than 10,000 slaves formerly passed the southern end of the Nyassa every year, in 1876 not more than 38 were known to have been conveyed by that route. Lieutenant O'Neill, British consul at Mozambique, writing in 1880, fixed at about 3000 the number then annually exported from the coast between the rivers Rovuma and Zambesi. But since that date the traffic seems to have received a fresh impetus from an increased demand for ivory, the slave and ivory trades being "hand and glove." The Portuguese appear to be the most determined upholders of the evil system, and in consequence are everywhere detested by the natives.

There are other minor branches of the trade elsewhere in Africa. Thus from Harar in Somfli-land caravans are seut to Berbera on the coast, where there is a great annual fair. The slaves are collected from the inland Galla eountries, from Guragwe, and from Abyssinia.

Clarkson first, and Buxton afterwards, whilst they urged all other means for the suppression or discouragement of the slave trade and slavery, saw clearly that the only thoroughly effectual method would be the development of legitimate commerce in Africa itself. When Buxton published in 1840 his book cntitled The Slave Trade and its Remedy, this was the remedy he con-

templated. The unfortunate Niger expedition of 1841 was directed to similar ends ; and it has been more and more felt by all who were interested in the subject that here lies the radical solution of the great problem. It was for some time thought that from Sierra Leone as a centre industry and civilization might be diffused amongst the nations of the continent ; and in 1822 the colony (which in 1847 became the independent republic) of Liberia had been founded by Americans with a similar object ; but in neither case have these expeetations been fulfilled. A new, and it would seem really hopeful, effort for the same great end has recently been undertaken.

Leopold II., king of the Belgians, invited in September 1876 representative geographers to a conference in his palace, to discuss the question of the exploration and civilization of Africa through the development of commerce and the abolition of the slave trade.

SLA—SLA

Six European nations were represented, and an International African Association was formed. Thecentral committee organized seven successive expeditions from the east coast to Lake Tanganyika. The exploration of the Congo by Stanley turned attention to the west coast, and he went out to the Congo in 1879 as commander. in-chief of the association, to open up that river. The association obtained, by treaties with the native chiefs, the cession of eertain territories. The recognition of its flag and its territorial rights by the European Powers has transformed the association into the Congo Free State. A conference was held at Berlin on 15th November 1884, attended by plenipotentiarics from all the European states, to regulate the position of the new state, and one of its declara- tions was that “these regions shall not be used as markets or routes of transit for the trade in slaves, no matter of what race ; each of these powers binds itself to use all the means at its disposal to put an end to this trade and to punish those engaged in it.” The terri- tory of the new state was fixed so as to comprise 1,065,200 square miles, with an estimated population of 42,608,000 souls. Stations have been built at points extending for nearly 1500 miles into the centre of Africa.

There are, it cannot be denied, real dangers connected with this great enterprise for the civilization of Africa. Disputes may arise between the powers having interests in the territories of the new state, and, still worse, the natives may be led to take sides in such disputes. That the African population should be sometimes op- pressed, or have justice denied them, by European traders or officials is by no means unlikely in the present state of opinion witli respect to our dutics towards the retarded races. Difficulties, too, may be created by the rivalries and mutual jealousies of the missionaries of the several Western communions. But, whilst foreseeing these possibilities and urging the necessity of guarding, as far as possible,

against the evils referred to, we ought not to view in a grudging or suspicious spirit an enterprise which is begun with pure intentions, and will probably do much to right the wrongs and improve the position of a deeply-injured portion of our race. The establishment

of the state will be no reason for the cessation of any effort which Western Governments can make, by the exercise of influence and by remonstrance, toinduce Turkey and Egypt to fulfil their engage- ments respecting the slave trade. The rulers of those states are well disposed to appropriate the results of more advanced eiviliza- tion ; and we need not bear of the disappearance in Mohammedan communities of slave-holding and its ally polygamy, since those practices are not enjoined, but only tolerated, by a religious code

which social progress will inevitably lead its adherents to modify by interpretation.

Bibliography.—On the several branches of the subject of slavery and serfdom fuller information may be obtained from the following works, which have been amongst those used in the preparation of the preceding sketch,

On Ancient Slavery: H. Wallon, Histoire de lV’ Esclavage dans VAntiquité, 3 vols,, 1847, 2d ed. 1879, A. Boeckh, Public Economy of Athens, Eng. transl. by G. Cornewall Lewis, 1828, 2d ed. 1842; Willian Blair, Jnquiry into the State of Slavery among the Romans, from the Earliest Period to the Establishment of the Lombards in Italy, 1833; Dureau de la Malle, Economie Politique des Romains, 2 vols,, 1840; M. Troplong, De ’

Influence du Christianisme sur le Droit Civil des Romains, 2d ed, 1855, On Mediseval Slavery and Serfdom: G. Humbert, article ““Colonat” in the Dictionnaire des Antiquités Grecques et Romaines of Daremberg and Saglio (now in course of publication); J. Yanoski, De l’ Abolition de’ Esclavage Ancien au Moyen Age et de sa Transformation en Servitude de la Glébe (Wallon and Yanoski had jointly compescd a memoir to compete for a prize offered by the Academy of Moral and Political Sciences in 1837; Wallon’s portion of the memoir became the foundation of his Histoire de l’Esclavage dans VAntiquite above mentioned; Yanoski’s part, the expansion of which was prevented by his early death, was posthumously published in 1860; it is no more than a slight sketch); Benjamin Guérard, Prolegoménes au Polyptyque d’Irminon, 1844; Fustel de Coulanges, Histoire des Institutions Politiques de Vancienne France (only the first part has becn published, 2d ed. 1877), and Recherches sur quelques Problemes @ Histoire, 1885 (the latter work contains the best extant discussion of the whole subject of the colonatus, founded throughout on the original texts); Stubbs, Constitutional History of England, 3 vols., 1874-78. On the Colonial Slave Trade and Slavery: Washington Irving, Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus, 1828, several times reprinted; Arthur Helps, Life of Las Casas, 1868; Bryan Edwards, History, Civil and Commercial, of the British West Indies, 1793, 5th ed. in 5 vols. 1819; Thomas Clarkson, History of the Rise, Progress, and Accomplishment of the Abolition of the African Slave Trade by the British Parliament, 2 vols., 1808; T. Fowell Buxton, African Slave Trade, 2d ed, 1838, and The Remedy, a Sequel, 1840, Memoirs of Sir T. F. Buxton, edited by his son Charles Buxton, 3d ed. 1849. On North American Slavery: G, M. Stroud, Laws relating to Slavery im America, 24 ed. 1856; H. Greeley, The American Conflict, 1865; and John E, Cairnes. The Slave Power, its Charac- ter, Career, and Probable Designs, 1862, 2d ed. 1863, On Brazilian: Fletcher and Kidder, Brazil and the Brazilians, 9th ed. 1879. On Russian Serfdom: D. Mackenzie Wallace, Russia, 1877. For the existing state of the African slave trade, and of Egyptian and Turkish slavery, the /smatiia of Sir S. Baker, the writings of Livingstone, and the biographies of Gordon may be consulted, besides the many documents on these subjects published by the British and Foreign Anti-Slavery Society. There are two volumes by A. Tourmagne, entitled respectively Histoire de Esclavage Ancien et Moderne, 1880, and Histoire du Servage Ancien et Moderne, 1879, which bring together many facts

relating to slavery and serfdom; but they are somewhat loose and uncritical; the author, too, repeats himself much, and dwells on many topics scarcely if at all con- nected with his main themes, The largest and most philosophical views on slavery generally will be found in Hume's Zssay " On the Populousness of Antient Nations," and in Comte's Philosophie Positive, vol. v., and Politique Positive, vol. tii. For its economic effects, when it is regarded as an organization of labour, reference may be had to Smith's Wealth of Nations, book iii, chap. 2, J. 5. Mill's Polétical Economy, book ii. chap. 5, and J. E. Cairnes's Slave Power, chap. 2. (J. K. 1.)

SLAVONIA. See CroaTIA AND SLAVONIA.

eae

|

gibu-

CCORDING to the tables published by Boudilovich

in connexion with the adnuirable ethnological map

of Mirkovich (St Petersburg, 1875), the Slavs may be grouped geographically as follows :—

I. SourH-EasTErRN Division.—1. Russians.—(a) The Great Rus- sians (Velikorousskie), who occupy the governments round Moscow and extend as far north as Novgorod and Vologda, south to Kieff and Voronezh, east to Penza, Simbirsk, and Vyatka, and west to the Baltic provinces and Poland ; they number about 40,000,000. (2) The Little Russians (Malorossiane), who include the Rousines or Rousniaks in Galicia and the Boiki and Gouzouli in Bukovina ; they number 16,370,000. Drawing a straight line from Sandec near Cracow to the Asiatic frontier of Russia, we shall find their language the dominant tongue of Galicia and all the southern parts of Russia till we

come to the Caucasus. It is also spoken in a strip of territory in the north of Hungary. (c) The White Russians, inhabiting the western governments ; they number 4,000,000. _

9, Bulgarians, including those in Russia, Austria, Roumania, Bulgaria, eastern Roumelia, and those under Turkish government in Macedonia ; their total number is 5,123,592.

3. Servo-Croats, including those of Servia, Montenegro, the southern part of Hungary, and a few in the south of Russia ; they are returned as numbering 5,940,539. Here also may be placed the Slovenes, including those in Styria, Carinthia, and Carniola, amounting to 1,287,000.

II. WrstERN Division.—1. Poles, divided between Russia, Austria, and Prussia; they number 9,492,162; under this head may be included the Kashoubes near Dantzic, numbering 111,416.

2. Chekhs' and Moravians, 4,815,154 in number ; here also may be included the Slovaks, nunibering 2,223,820.

3. Lusatian Wends or Sorbs, Upper and Lower, partly in Saxony and partly in Prussia. The Upper Wends number. 96,000, the Lower 40,000.

Total number of Slavs in both divisions 89,499,683.

Originally the Slavs were spread over a great part of northern Germany, extending as far as Utrecht, which was

-anciently called Wiltaburg and was a city of the Wilzen.

Thus Slavonic was certainly spoken in Pomerania, Mecklen-

burg, Brandenburg, Saxony, west Bohemia, Lower Austria, |.

the greater part of Upper Austria, north Styria and north Carinthia, a large part of what is now Hungary, and in the localities now occupied by Kiel, Lttbeck, Magdeburg, Halle, Leipsic (= Lipsk, the city of lime-trees), Baireuth, Linz, Salzburg, Gratz (= Gradetz, Gorodetz), and Vienna. The names of the old Slavonic tribes originally settled in these parts of Germany

are given in Schafarik's Slawische Alterthiimer, to which work the reader desiring further information must be referred. They are mentioned frequently in such writers as Helmold, Dietmar, Arnold, Wittekind, and others. We hear of a commercial city of importance, which some writers have rather fantasti- cally termed the Slavonic Amsterdam, called Wolin, on an island of the same name, which was known as Winetha to the Germans and as Julin to the Danes. Schafarik even wished to see the Slavonic tribe of the Wilzen in English Wiltshire. This, however, cannot be accepted; the original name is Wilsetas and that of the town Wil- tun, the town on the river Wily. It has long been a generally received opinion that the modern Greeks have a large Slavonic admixture. This opinion was boldly asserted some years ago by Fallmerayer and has not been upset even by the labours of M. Sathas. He dwells much upon the form 2AuGyvor as distinct from ZKAaByvou ; but this corruption seems to be owing to some such false analogy as éc@dds. Miklosich, in his Mtymologisches Worterbuch der slavischen Sprachen (1886), considers the two forms to be identical. In like fashion Procopius connects Serbi with Zzdépo. and Constantine Porphyro- genitus turns Svatopluk into 2evddrAoxos. Mediaeval Greece, especially the Peloponnesus, abounded with Slavonic eee

1 This spelling has been adopted as best calculated to show the

prouunciation of the name Czech, in the same way as the French write the word Tchéque.

names, which are now being replaced by others drawn from classical sources. Kollar and Wolanski wished to find a Slavonic population in Italy; but their opinions are con- sidered the wild dreams of unscientific patriots, though these views found their way into such works as the Var- ronianus of Dr Donaldson, Equally unfounded appears to be the belief that a Slavonic element may be traced in Spain and Asia Minor. If the Slavs have lost in the west of Europe, they have gained in the east considerably, as Russia has encroached upon the Ugro-Finnish tribes of the northern and eastern portions of its empire, and many of these races are now in various stages of Russification.

As to the original home of the Slavonic race there are three leading opinions :—(1) the Slavs settled in Europe at a period contemporaneous with or

shortly after the arrival of the Teutonic and other Indo-European families ; (2) they first made their appearance in Europe with the Huns, Avars, and other Asiatic barbarians in the 3d cen- tury after Christ ; (3) they originated in Europe, as did the so-called Indo-European race altogether. This last view has been maintained by Penka? and Schrader? (see below).

The first of these views has been supported by Scha- farik. He considers that the Slavs left Asia in very early times for the following reasons :—(a) the fact that the Slavonic languages are more closely connected with Euro- pean tongues than with those of Asia, even granting the many aflinities of Slavonic with Zend or (as has been recently shown by Hiibschmann) with Armenian; (0) the similarity of the manners and customs of the Slavs to those of the Celts, Germans, and other European popu- lations ; (c) the occurrence of many mountains, rivers, and towns having Slavonic names which are mentioned long before the Slavs themselves are found in history; (d) the fact that the Slavs are always spoken of by the earlier writers in terms which show that these writers considered them to be an ancient European nation, and were struck with the large area over which their populations extended. Moreover, the arrival at a comparatively late period of such large hordes would have made a great impression upon the surrounding nations at the time, and this would certainly have found an echo in their historians and chroniclers,

Schafarik believes that the Slavs or Wends (as they were called by their Teutonic neighbours) were settled at a very early period on the southern coast of the Baltic. The word ‘‘ Wend” he connects with a Slavonic (voda) and Lithuanian (wandé) root meaning “water”; thus it would signify the people dwelling about the water. He appears to include under the Slavs all people bearing the name Wends, notably the Veneti on the Adriatic. Other writers, however, consider that the word was applied generally to any maritime people; and this view appears probable. The name also occurs in Switzerland. The Wends then, according to Schafarik, were the earliest inhabitants of the Baltic coast; but they were expelled by the Goths in the 4th century B.c. Nestor makes other tribes of Slavs to have been established at an early period on the Danube and to have been driven thence by the Vlachs, a people whom scholars are inclined to identify with the Latin colonists from whom in a great measure the modern Roumans are

descended. We find other tribes settled in the neighbour- hood of the Carpathians. The first historian who relates anything about the Slavs is probably Herodotus, whose account of the north of Europe is very vague. Among the Scythian tribes mentioned by him two have been

2 Origines Ariaew, Vienna, 1883. 3 Sprachvergleichung und Urgeschiehte, 1885.

Original home of

Slavs,

Scha- farik's view.

Classical accounts.

identified with the Slavs by Schafarik with consider- able probability,—the Budini and the Neuri. Of the former we are told that they were a large nation and had blue eyes and red hair. The description of the country they inhabited corresponds pretty closely to Volhynia and portions of White Russia. The Neuri are placed by Gchafarik on the river Bug, which flows through Podolia. There at the present day we find a river named Nureff, and the surrounding country is called Nurska. This opinion is supported by Schrader, who places the original home of the Slavs in Scythia. Pésche! goes so far as to consider the eastern part of Europe—especially that portion of Russia which constitutes the basin of the Pripet, the Beresina, and the Dnieper—as the primary abode of the Indo-European race. Dr Kurd von Schlézer interprets Herod. iv. § 6— the-story of Targitaus and his three children—as an allusion to the Slavs. The falling of a plough with its yoke from heaven would hardly be a characteristic tale of a nomad people. We seem to have an echo of the stories of the peasants Mikoula, Selianinovich, Piast, and P¥Yemysl, all dear to Slavonic legend. The view that the ancestors of the Slavs are to be found among the Scythian tribes has been supported in recent times by the Russian author Zabielin= He also thinks

that their original settlement was in Volhynia and White Russia. The specimens of the Scythian language which have come down in Herodotus and elsewhere can certainly best be explained by Indo- European roots. The name Slav does not occur in any writer before the time of Jordanes, unless it be in the Sravavol of Ptolemy. Jordanes says of them—'" quorum nomina licet nunc per varias fainilias et loca mutentur, principaliter tamen Sclavini et Antes." It is probably connected with the root slovo, "the word," which is related to the Greek xAvw (Slav. slit, "to be called"); and in a Polabish vocabulary we get the form slo. The Slav thus comes to mean "the intelligibly speaking man" in contrast to "the dumb man," Wiemetz, which in the modern Slavonic languages has come to mean simply "German." Miklosich (Etym. Worterb.) thinks that the termination -ene in Slovene shows the word to be derived from the name of a place and rejects the explanation from s/ovo. Some Slavonic scholars have sought an explanation of the name in the word slava, 66 glory."

Penka,® however, attempts to upset the ordinary ety- mology. According to him the Slavs are non-Aryan and belong rather to the Ugro-Finnish race. Their name, he tells us, shows that they were subjected by the Aryans and became their dependants. He considers it to be derived from the present participle of the root Adu ("to hear," Slav. sit), and thus identifies it with "client." The name Wend is used by Tacitus, who speaks of the Peucini, the Venedi, and the Fenni. Ptolemy also alludes to the Wendic mountains. He tells us that Sarmatia, 7c. all the terri- tory east of the Vistula and north of Dacia, was inhabited by widely scattered races and that the Wenede were established along the whole of the Wendish gulf. J ordanes calls them Winide. The other name, Antes, applied by this historian to the Slavs, which, like the word Wend, they never used themselves, Schafarik connects with a Gothic root. Duchinski, Henri Martin, and others have denied to the Russians the right of being called Aryan. Penka,' as stated before, carries this opinion much further and refuses the appellation to the whole Slavonic family. Finding that many of the Slavs have chestnut-coloured curly hair and dark eyes, that the White Russians are blond, that the southern Slavs are darker and have a shorter head

1 Die Arier, ein Beitrag zur historischen Anthropologie, Jena, 1878. 2 See, however, the arguments on the other side in the article ScYTHIA. 3 Op. cit.,

Pp. L2G. Oe, Gilkey 1, 15.

SLAVS

a very mixed race, and quotes Procopius® in support of his opinion.

The second of the opinions alluded to above has been Wocg, adopted by Wocel,® according to whom the Slavs in the view.

north of Germany on the Elbe, Moldau, Sale, Spree, as also those living south of the Danube, were not living in

juxtaposition in the Bronze Age, but wandered into those

regions some centuries after the birth of Christ. In proof of this assertion he cites many names of objects which are

common to the Slavonic languages and yet could not have —

been known to any people in the Bronze Period,—as, for example, iron (O.S. Zeleso),' objects made of iron, as scythe (O.8. kosa), chisel (O.S. dlato), tongs (O.S. klésta), knife (ni2), saw (pila), hoe (motyka), sword (meé), stirrup (st¥emen), spur (ostruha), needle (jehla), anchor (kotva). Common to all the Slavonic languages are the names for gold (zlato), silver (st¥ibro), copper (med), tin (olovo). All these words must have been formed while the Slavonic people dwelt together in a comparatively narrow space, — according to Wocel between the Baltic, the Vistula, and the Dnieper; otherwise, according to this author, if we suppose that the Lutitzes, Obotrites, Sorbs, and Chekhs were autochthonous, it is difficult to see how they could

have had the same names for many objects which did not

exist in the Bronze Age, ¢.g., iron, as the Slavs on the

Dnieper, the Balkans, and the Adriatic had. Wocel con-

siders the Slavs to have been a pastoral people who entered Europe through the passes of the Caucasus. He compares

the agricultural words which all branches of the family have in common, as ploug, “plough” (and also ralo);

lemesh, “ploughshare”; zhito, “corn”; pshenitze, “wheat”;

yechmen, “barley”; oves, “oats”; proso, “millet”; snop,

“sheaf.” On the other hand, as Wocel maintains, objects connected with civilization the knowledge of which only dates from the introduction of Christianity have not a common name in the Slavonic languages, such as “ paper,” “pavement,” “steel,” “velvet,” d&e. So also there is no common term for “property” or “inheritance,” for the simple reason that the Slavs knew nothing of private property,—the land being held in common under the care of the vladika or stareshina, as in the Servian zadrugas at the present day.

The condition of the original Slavs has also been investi- gated from the linguistic point of view by Gregor Kreck.* According to this writer, besides the cereals previously mentioned the Slavs cultivated the rape (repa), the pea (sochivo, grakh), the lentil (lenshta), the bean (406), the poppy (mak), hemp (konop), the leek (louk), d&e.; corm ground by a hand-mill or water-mill (zhrinows, malin) into meal (manka) and baked into bread (4hleb), honey (med)— the collection of which was an important occupation among the Slavs, as we find by the Polish laws—meat (menso), milk (mleko), and fruit (ovoshtiye) formed their food. The drinks were o/ and vino ®, beer and wine. Kreck considers that the minute details of house-building point to a habit of living in fixed residences,—thus the house (dom), the stable (lev), the threshing-floor (yowmno), the court (dvor), the village (ves). In opposition, however, to this view of Kreck we have the opinion of Hehn, who contends that all the words used among the Slavs for stone buildings

are borrowed, and seeks to prove that till comparatively eh en

5 Bell. Goth., iii, 14—“ ra be copara kal ras Kopas, ottre Neuxol és dyav % EavOol eiow, otre Ty és 7d wdhay abrois travTedOs TETPAMTAL; ANN brépvOpol elow, &mavres.”

6 Pravtk Zems Ceské (The Early Days of Bohemia), Prague, 1868. It is cited by Schrader, p. 90.

7 The words not specified as Old Slavonic are Bohemian.

8 Hinleitung in die slavische Litteratwr-Geschichte, Gratz, 1874 ; see Schrader, p. 92.

9 A word which some recent scholars Armenian origin.

are inclined to think of

recent times they had only huts made of osiers and led a half nomadic life. Certainly municipal institutions are no feature of Slavonic life, and the paucity of large towns in Russia is striking even at the present day. According to Kreck, words are to be found very early which show the development of the nation from the family. Thus the commune (obstchina, rod) becomes the family (plemya) and the family the people (narod, yenk). There are common terms for law (pravo pravda, “right”; zakon, “law”). Besides agricultural pursuits we have mention of the arts of braiding (plesti), weaving (¢katz), tailoring in a series of common expressions for portions of apparel, carpentering (tesati), working in iron, &c. Of the primitive Slavonic flora we have the oak (dowb), the lime tree (/ipa), the acorn (yavor), the beech (bouky), the willow (v7’ba), the birch (bréza), the pine (bor), as also special kinds of fruit, the apple (yabl’ko), the pear (grousha), the cherry (vshnya), the nut (orekh), and the plum (slva).

between the Transylvanian Alps and the Danube.2 From this place they migrated to the localities which they have since occupied, where they became mixed with the original settlers, to whom they gave their name, just as the German Franks imposed theirs on the Gauls, and a branch of the Slavonians took the Finnish name of their conquerors. (3) Serbs.—See Servia (vol. xxi. p. 688). The name “Croat” has been already explained under Servia (/.c.). (4) The Slovenes have preserved an old form of the

family name, and therefore no explanation is necessary. (5) Poles.—The first authentic date of their history is the year 963. Perhaps they are the Bulanes of Ptolemy. See PoLAND, vol. xix. p. 285. (6) Bohemians or Chekhs.— The word ‘“ Bohemia ”—“ home of the Boii,” a Celtic tribe — has nothing to do with the Slavs who came into the country about 495, after the Marcomanni, who had dis- possessed the Boii. The derivation of the name ‘“Chekh” or Czech has never been satisfactorily traced. Dobrovsky

tir Pictet placed the original home of the German and | sought to connect it with a word ¢ceti, signifying ‘to begin,”

ie. Litu-Slavic races on the northern bank of the Oxus. | and thus makes the name imply the original inhabitants. Thence he thought they came over the extensive plains | Schafarik, however, does not endorse this etymology.

_ of Scythia to the Pontus Euxinus. Perwolf*# connects it with a root ¢ak, “to beat,” and thus

The doctrine of the European origin of the Aryans | makes the name mean “the warriors.” Whatever the appears to be steadily gaining ground, It is supported | word “Chekh” may signify, it occurs, as Schafarik has by Professors Rhys and Sayce of Oxford. The last-named | shown, in other Slavonic countries. (7) Lusatian Wends ig inclined to see the home of the Indo-European race | or Sorbs.—The word “ Lusatia” (German Lausitz) is de- in “the district in the neighbourhood of the Baltic.” Dr | rived from the Slavonic Jug or luza, signifying a low, Ludwig Wilser! makes Sweden and the north German | marshy country. shores the centre of the primitive Aryans, from which the Germanic tribes, Celts, Latins, Greeks, Slavs, Lithuanians, SLavonic Lancuaces aND LITERATURES. Iranians, and the invaders of India gradually detached The first to attempt a classification of the Slavonic Classi- themselves, migrating mostly southwards and eastwards.? | languages was Dobrovsky,® who was followed by Schafarik fication

Leaving now the attempts to determine the primitive | and Schleicher. These agree in the main, except that® |

home of the Slavs and the date of their immigration into | Schafarik was so little acquainted with Bulgarian—at that teristics Europe, and also the names which they have in common, | time almost a lost langfage—that he grouped it with of lan- whether used by themselves or given by foreigners, we | Servian.6 The following are the characteristics of the two guages.

_ will trace as far as possible the derivation of the chief | divisions, which we take from Schafarik's account with

Naes appellations of the Slavonic peoples. (1) Russians.—For | some trifling omissions :—

ohe an analysis of this name see Russia (vol. xxi. p. 87 sq.). SourH-EssTErn, WESTERN.

“ie (2) Bulgarians.—By the 3d century we find Slavs settled (1) raz, razowm. rox, Town.

between the Danube and the Balkans. Immigrations were going on till the middle of the 7th century, as these hordes

(2) tz, tedati. wy, wydati. (8) korabl, zemlia,

korab, zemia. (4) pravilo, molitisa.

prawidlo, modirti se.

| were driven southwards by new invaders. About 681 the (5) mot, not. moc, noc. , Slavonic settlers fell under the yoke of the Bulgarians, a (6) zvieeda, tzvet. hwiexda, gwiazda, kwict.

Ugro-Finnish race, if we accept the views of Schafarik, (7) ago. ego, cho.

(8) omou, toj. emu, ten

Drinoff, and others. The origin of the Bulgarians them-

1 : This division, however, has been repeatedly challenged. Schleicher selves 18 obscure. Some have made them Tatars. Pro- | insisted upon the two following as important principles: (1) primi- fessor [lovaiski believes them to have been Slavs. The | tive Slavonic dj, tj become in all west Slavonic dialects dz, ts (=) ;

theory which connects the name “ Bulgarian,” “ Bolgare,” with the Volga is now no longer held. Early modifica- tions of the name, such as Burgari, Wurgari, &c., show its analogy with forms like Onoguri, Uturguri, Kutriguri. The elements of the word are bul and gart. Professor Vambéry attempts to derive the name from the Turkish verb bulga-mak, “to revolt”; but this seems little better than a guess, We are told that Koubrat, a Bulgarian prince, made himself independent of the Avars, and that on his

death his territories were divided among his five sons. The eldest remained in the ancient settlement on the Volga, where the ruins of their former capital, Bolgari, are still to be seen. The third son, Asparoukh, crossed the Dnieper and the Dniester, and settled in a place called Onklus, probably the Old Slavonic ongl, “ angulus,”

1 Die Herkunft der Deutschen: Neue Forschungen iiber Urgeschichte, Abstammung, und Verwandtschaftsverhdltnisse unseres Volkes, Carls- ruhe, 1885. PF See an interesting article in the American Nation (8d December

85), where it is shown that the first person to advocate this theory, which seems to be gaining ground among scholars, was Dr Latham, in

his edition of the Germania of Tacitus. This view was supported by Theodor Benfey in 1868.

among the Chekhs and Sorbs dz becomes at a later period z; (2) d, ¢ before 7, m are preserved in the western dialects, but disappear in the south-eastern. Upon this last canon Johannes Schmidt’ remarks as follows: “The dentals are preserved in Slovenish, certainly in the western part of its area; thus modlim in the Freisingian documents, in the perfect participles, as predel, bodel, pletel, cretel, fem. dla, tla, and in the suffix dlo, as kresadlo, motovidlo, Sidlo. D is also preserved in Slovenish before n, as omladnem, osladnem, zbodnem, padnem, kradnem. T, on the other hand, appears every-where to vanish before n, as obernem, ‘I go round.’” He also criticizes two of the principles of difference given by Schafarik. The nom. sing. masc. of pronouns appears in western Slavonic to be increased by , thus Chekh, Polish, Lower Sorb, éen ; Upper Sorbish, ton; Polabish, to; this, however, occurs in the Freisingian monu- ments, the earliest form of Slovenish, as fon. This n belongs to the stem, and is not a particle which has become fused with it ; ten, ton, original form ¢’n, correspond to the Old Prussian éans. The use of the preposition vi instead of iz is not a criterion ; vz is as much used in Russian as in west Slavonic, thus vtborni, “the

3 See Drinoff’s ‘‘Settlement of the Balkan Peninsula by the Slavs” (Zaselenie Balkanskago Poluostrova Slavyanami), Moscow, 1873.

4 Arch. f. slaw. Phil., vii. 622.

5 Institutiones Lingue Slavice Veteris Dialecti, Vienna, 1822.

8 Geschichte der slawischen Sprache und Literatur nach allen Mundarten, Pesth, 1826, p. 32.

7 Zur Geschichte des Indo-Germanischen Vocalismus, part ii. p. 178, Vienna, 1871-75.

Litu- Slavic Jan- guages,

village deputy”; there are traces of it in Slovenish ; it is only in Bulgarian and Servian that it is entirely wanting. The principle laid down that mot, noé represent a south-eastern variation and moc, noe a western is far from being universally true ; in Servian we have tsrn, “black,” as against Bohemian ¢éerny, Russian chérni. Compare too Servian ¢sesta, “a road,” also Slovenish, with Chekh éesta.

Schmidt gives a completely new table of differences, illustrating them by the accom- A panying diagram. Casting aside some of the distinguishing marks __ previously adopted, he makes great use of the phonetic law found in the Slavonic lan- guages which will be explained shortly. Thereader willeasily identify the divi- sions of the circle to which the rules refer. (1) dj, tj be- come among the western Slavs dz, ts (=e). (2) d, ¢ dis- appear before 7 and a n among the Russians, Little Russians, Bulgarians, Serbs, and Croats, but are preserved by the Slovenes, with the exce tion of tu, and by the western Slavs. (3) vt is not used by the Bulgarians, Serbs, and Croats, but is kept by the Slovenes, Russians, and western Slavs. (4) (a) ere by svarabhakti’ became ré at an early period among the southern Slavs and Chekhs, but is preserved in its original form among the rest. It became reat a later period among the Poles, Polabes, and Sorbs. (0) ele became le not only among the southern Slavs and Chekhs but also among the Polabes. Among the Poles and Sorbs ele and the cognate olo became simplified into le and lo. (e) &ré&? in inlaut became ra among the southern Slavs and Chekhs. As in early times the Chekhs and southern Slavs were in close connexion with the Poles and Sorbs, the mutation developed among them ; thus Polish straz with stroz, Upper Sorbish straza with stroza, Polish and

Upper Sorbish, trapie. (d) dla in inlaut became la not only among the southern Slavs and Chekhs but also among the Polabes. This contraction spread over a wider region than that of ard into ra. That the Polish also adopted it is shown by the form piazie’ sig compared with ptozté sig.

Various opinions have been held as to what languages are to be considered the closest congeners of the Slavonic branch. That they stand in intimate relations to Lithuanian and Lettish has long been agreed ; and as a convenient classification it is customary to speak of them together as the Litu-Slavic family. In Russia there are 1,900,000 Lithuanians (including the Samogitians or Zhmudes). There are also 1,100,000 Letts. The rest of the Lithuanians, numbering 146,312, are in Eastern Prussia, commencing not far from Konigsberg and extending along the shores of the Kurisches Haff, The Lithuanian language in many respects exhibits an earlier type than the Slavonic. It has preserved the s of the nominative singular, as in Sanskrit ; but, on the other hand, the verb exhibits a much poorer form. As Leskien truly remarks,? ‘‘it has degener- ated most remarkably in its conjugation, and in this respect is far inferior to the oldest known Slavonic.” He adds that Lithuanian is of primary importance in the comparative treatment of the Slavonic languages. Very closely connected with Lithuanian was Old Prussian, which died out in the 16th century ; the remains which have come down to us belong to the 15th and 16th centuries. Old Prussian extended from the lower Vistula (from Thorn down- wards) to the Niemen. The exact course of the boundary-line which separated it from Lithuanian can only be approximately deter- mined by historical arguments. Leskien has proposed ‘‘ Baltic” as a generic name for Lithuanian, Lettish, and Prussian. The general opinion of philologists is that Litu-Slavic is most closely connected with the Germanic branch of the Indo-European family. Jacob Grimm was the first to assert this. Hiibschmann has shown that Slavonic has affinities with Armenian, and he seeks to make the latter language a link between the European and Asiatic branches of this family. Kuhn‘ writes, “The Slavonic languages remained a longer time in close connexion with the Indian or more probably with the Zend and Persian than with the remaining Indo-

i inn nh a eT

1 This is the name given by the Indian grammarians to the vowel developed between the liquids J and r and the consonant with which they come into con- tact, as vias, volos. It has been called in Russian polnoglasie, and in Greek dvdmrvis. It means in Sanskrit “ voice-breaking.” It isa marked feature in the Slavonic languages.

2 This is the way adopted by Schmidt to express the unaccented Slavonic 0, which is pronounced a; the form is taken from Swedish.

3 Proc. Phil. Soc., 1877, p. 49.

4 Zur diltesten Gesch. d. indog. Volker, Berlin, 1845, p. 324.

SLAVS

European languages.” Bopp regards the separation of the Litu. Slavic languages as having taken place before the division of the Asiatic branch of the family into Indian and Iranian.

If we examine the Old or Paleo-Slavonic,° the oldest known form Old of the Slavonic languages, we may note the following characteristics$ Slayonj, It has the vowels a, é, t, 0, u, 7, a guttural 7, a short ¢ sometimes – pronounced as ya, and the semi-mutes % and @ It has also two nasals equivalent to the French zn and on, now only found in Polish and Kashoubish, and in some of the Bulgarian dialects ; traces of them, however, occur in Slovenish aud in the words which Magyar has borrowed from Slovenish.

The Aryan diphthongs have been contracted to single vowels and General the hiatus is frequently avoided by the interposition of j (= Eng, char.: | y) or v, both of which constantly occur at the beginning of wont acteris. | which formerly commenced with a vowel. The addition of a y ties of sound before vowels is one of the great characteristics of the Slavonic Slavonic languages, called “ preiotization”’; and the inability to mark this tongues distinctly is one of the deficiencies of the Cyrillic alphabet. It is also worthy of note that in the provincial dialects v is frequently put before vowels, as by the lower classes in Bohemia and Russia. The Aryan aspirates gh, dh, bh have been changed into the simple

explosives g, d, b; on the other hand, a number of fricatives have been, developed, as sh, z, and the French j—all unknown to the common Aryan—and & is frequently changed to the palatal ch, Servo-Croatian, Slovenish, Slovakish, and Bohemian possess the vocal 7, while the vocal 7 is found in both Bohemian and Slovakish. The latter has also 7 and r, both short and long.

As regards grammar, the following peculiarities of the Slavonic family may be noted. A trace of the article exists in the adjectival termination, as in velék-i; but this has been forgotten, and attempts have been made to supply it in the use of the demonstrative pro- noun in Sorbish, which appears to have been used in the more corrupt stages of Slovenish also, but has been expelled since the regeneration of the language. Primus Truber, who translated the New Testament into Slovenish in the 16th century, was not free from this vice.

The languages being in @ high state of synthesis, the nouns and adjectives are fully declined, having three genders and seven cases, —the nominative, genitive, dative, accusative, vocative, instru- mental, and prepositional. Sorbish and Slovenish have the dual number in both nouns and verbs. More of the numerals are de- | clined than in most Aryan languages. The verbs have the so-called)

Fons e.g., the iterative, perfect, imperfect, &c., whereby very delicate shades of meaning are expressed, and this partly atones for the poverty of tenses in some of them: Russian, for example, has only one past tense, which is inflected according to gender, having been originally a past participle. Traces of these verbal aspects have been ceeded in Celtic and in Greek.

We now proceed to classify the Slavonic languages according to their dialects. The following table has been adapted (in the main) from the valuable Russian History of Slavonie Literatures by Pipin and Spasovich.

SourH-EASTERN BraNncu.—Russian.—(1) Great Russian : Mos- cow, Novgorod and northern, Siberian, and central Russian. (2) Little Russian : eastern, western (sometimes called Red Russian), and Carpathian. (3) White Russian. Bulgarian.—(1) Old Bul- garian (the ecclesiastical language ; see

below). (2) Modern Bul- garian : Upper Mesian, Lower Meesian, and Macedonian. Servo- Croatian and Slovenish.—(1) Servo-Croatian : southern or Herzego- vinian, Syrmian, Resanian, and language of the coast or Dalinatian. (2) Slovenish: dialects of Upper, Middle, and Lower Carniola, Styrian, Ugro-Slovenish, Resanian, and Croato-Slovenish.

‘WESTERN BraNcu.—(1) Polish: Masovian or Mazurian, Great Polish, Silesian, and Kashoubish. (2) Bohemian : Chekish, Mor- avian, and Slovakish. (3) Lusatian Wendish or Sorbish : Upper Lusatian and Lower Lusatian. (4) Polabish (extinct).

South-Eastern Braneh.

Russian Dialects. —These as yet have rarcly been scientifically Russ! treated ; but that can hardly be a ground of complaint against the Russian people, as our own are only just beginning to be properly studied. The work entitled Optt Oblastnago Velikorousskago Slovara (Attempt at a Provincial Dictionary of the Great Russian Lan- guage), published at St Petersburg in 1852, can, as its name imphies, only be regarded as tentative : it is no more a scientific production than is Halliwell’s Provineial Dictionary of English. Traces of Ugro- Finnish words and idioms occur in the northern and eastern dialects, but their importance has been much exaggerated. Whitney’s theory that the Russian verb has been modified by Ugro-Finnish, influence claims attention. Some have supposed that the origin of the svarabhakti is to be traced to it; it occurs, however, m Little Russian and the western languages, as previously sliown. | It is much more frequent in Russian than in any other Slavonic lan- guage, and is even more developed in its dialects.? An account

Sa

5 Sometimes called ‘the church language.”

6 See Hovelacque, Science of Language, p. 280, London, 1877. __

7 The quaint little English-Russian vocabulary compiled by Richard James in Russia at the beginning of the 16th century, and still preserved in manu:

of Russian literature is given under Russi, vol. xxi. p. 102 sq. Siberian Russian is spoken by the descendauts of prisoners and convicts who have settled in that vast tract of northern Asia since Yermak conquered it for Ivan the Terrible. Specimens of it are occasionally quoted in the letters of Kiichelbecker, the Decabrist, and other exiles. Little Russian is spoken in all the southern governments of Russia. As current in Galicia and Bukovina it is called Red Russian ; an interesting variety is the Gouzoulian dialect in which Fedkovich composed his poems (see RussIA, vol. xxi. p. 110). Mention has already been made of the same language as spoken in Hungary.' There is a good grammar by Osadtza, a pupil of Miklosich. The latter justly regards it as a language and notadialect. Till quite recently there were very poor aids by way of lexicons: of the Dewtsch-Ruthenisches Handwérterbuch by Professor Partitzki of Lemberg the Ruthenish-German portion never ap- peared ; the vocabularies of Piskunoff and Verkhratzki are but frag- mentary. A gooddictionary, however, is now in course of publica- tion by Professor Zelechowski of Stanislau, which promises to be all that could be desired. The orthography of Malo or Little Russian is not yet settled. A peculiar type is used for some of the books issued at Lemberg, especially the excellent Chitanka (Reading Book) of Alexander Barvinski. An altogether whimsical orthography was adopted by Hatzouk in his Ouzhinok Ridnogo Pola (Gleanings from a Native Field), which appeared at Moscow in 1857.

The following are some of the chief characteristics which mark off the Little from the Great Russian language. The G.R. ze passes into 7, as povist=~poviest, L.R. richka=G.R. ricchka ; 0 undergoes the same mutation, especially in monosyllables, L.R. pid=G.R. pod, L.R. kin=G.R. kon, L.R. vivsa=G.R. ovsa, where we may note the tendency to put v before the initial vowel already alluded to. The Russian ow is changed into L.R. v, and vice versa, thus vmirayou=G.R. owmirayou ; ouchora, on the other hand, is G.R. vchera, The Russian g is pronounced 4; the strong ¢ (Polish 2) is changed (especially at the end of a word or before other consonants) into v or ou, thus G.R. pisal, L.R. pisaow. The Russian ¢ is want- ing, and L.R. changes the Old Slavonic & and g into ch and French j oftener than Russian does. In the conjugations and declensions Little very much resembles Great

Russian. It has, however, like Polish, lost the present participle passive, which is retained in Russian, and it possesses infinitive forms with diminutive mean- ings. Moreover, the accent differs considerably from Russian. The peculiarities of the Little Russian spoken in the north of Hungary are fully treated by De Vollant in his Owgro-Rousskia Narodnia Piesnt (Ugro-Russian Popular Songs), St Petersburg, 1885.

White Russian abounds with Polonisms, and in its orthography expresses the unaccented Russian o as a, which is in accordance with the pronunciation ; thus we have starana for storona, kago for kogo. Asin Malo-Russian, g is pronounced h, as aharod, “a garden” ; gutturals are softened before 7e, as na routzie, “onthe hand.” The

Slavonic to be Old Servian, afterwards an early language out of which both Servian and Bulgarian were formed. Vostokoff was nearer the truth when he discovered elements of Old Slovenish.

The views held by scholars with regard to the country from which the Palzo-Slavonic, as preserved to us, has come may be briefly stated as follows. (1) It is Old Bulgarian. This opinion has been held by Schleicher, Schafarik, J. Schinidt, and Leskien. In the latter part of his life Schafarik? appears to have somewhat modified his views and to have looked upon it as a mixture of Bulgarian and Slovenish. (2) It is Old Slovenish, ¢.¢., the older form of the langnage now spoken in Styria, Carinthia, and a part of southern Hungary. This opinion was first held by Kopitar and afterwards by his pupil Miklosich. Among its supporters may also be mentioned Danichich and Jagi¢. (8) Geitler,? now a professor at Agram, leans to the theory that the Russian language is a much earlier form of Slavonic than Old Slovenish. The case for Old Slovenish is clearly put by Miklosich4 as follows :—

“So far as the linguistic grounds of the Bulgarian hypothesis are concerned, it is undoubtedly true that Old Slovenish [Palezo-Slavonic] agrees with a dialect of Bulgarian with regard to the combinations st, 3d, whereas the Carinthian (Carantanian) Slovenish employs generally % and j ; but how do we know that the Pannonian Slovenes pronounced é and not §d, j and not #d? The Hun- garian mostoha (pr. moshtoha), pest (pr. pesht), and palast

(palasht) for the Old Slovenish maateha, pest, and plast, and rozsda (pr. rozhda) for the Old Slovenish rida, postulate the existence of § and 2d in the dialect of the Pannonian Slovenes. The nasalized sylables (to express the Old Slavonic nasals) in (modern) Sloven- ish and in the oldest loan words in Magyar from Slavonic separate the language from which these words are borrowed from Bulgarian.5 Let us also consider the following fact: Modern Bulgarian is more unlike Paleo-Slavonic than any other language of the eastern branch. Perhaps it may be observed with refer- euce to this that these corruptions have only crept in during the last centuries. But the language of the Tale of the Trojan War (of date 1350) is already Bul- garian, and, whatever may be said to the contrary, Modern Bulgarian. In the same stage of vocalic corruption is the Gospel of Trnov (Tirnova), which belongs to the year 1273. And does not the same remark hold good of the Psalter of Bologna, of the date 1186-1196? A Bulgarian language identical with Paleo- Slavonic fades from our eyes like a fata morgana however far we follow it." The same author considers that even before the 9th century the Slavonic languages were separated as they are to-day. The most able exponent of the Old Bulgarian theory, Schleicher, writes as follows :—

'The proofs which Kopitar and Miklosich have brought forward in support of their opinion appear capable of being overthrown, while facts speak irresistibly for the opposite opinion that churcu Slavonic was the language of the Old Bulgarians, especially the.softening of original Aryan ¢ and d into sht and zhd. And besides linguistic there are also historical grounds. Cyril arid his Slavonic fellow-workers were Bulgarians.6 Why, then, should they not have written in

their own language, especially since they found no written language among the other Slavs?"

Schleicher asks, "How came the Bulgarisms in the Codex Sup- rasliensis [see below], which, according to the opinion of Miklosich, was written 'in ipsa lingue paleoslovenice patria'?" Hesums up: "We therefore hold the language which we regard in this work? as alone the oldest to be Old Bulgarian." Schleicher appears to the present writer to have the best of the argument.

Modern Bulgaria embraces ancient Meesia, Thrace, and Mace- Modern donia ; the Danube separates it from Roumania ; on the west it has Bul- Servian, on the south-west Albanian, and on the south Greek, which garian.

collection of poems published at Vilna in 1844, entitled Piosnki Wie sniacze (Rustic Songs), in what is called the Krevichian dialect,

isinreality White Russian. There isa good White Russian diction- ary by Nosovich.

Bulgarian.—Connected with the Bulgarian division is the diffi- cult question as to which of the Slavonic languages, ancient or modern, exhibits the earliest form. The original tongue is, of course, lost, and only an elder sister remains, but to which language shall that title be assigned? In the early days of Slavonic philology many curious ideas prevailed on this point. According to the old- fashioned views the church language was the old and stately mother- tongue from which all the living dialects had sprung, Russians considered it to be Old Russian, Serbs Old Servian, and those who used the Glagolitic ritual held it to be Old Croatian. These opinions Were very natural. The fragments of the Old Slovenish language had not yet been found at Freising, and the only accessible manu- scripts in the infantine state of the study of Slavistic were recent ones, in which Russian, Servian, and Croatian forms were mixed. The Russians had forgotten many of their historical traditions dur- ing their long servitude under the Mongols, and the same was the case with the Serbs and Bulgarians under the yoke of the Turks.

he names of Cyril and Methodius were hardly remembered. The two precursors of Dobrovsky, but of inferior intellectual calibre, Were the Bohemian Fort. Durich (1738-1802), who was the first to have sound views on the relations of Old Slavonic to the later lan- stages, and the Russian Kalaidovich (1792-1832), who threw con- siderable light on the question by his edition of the works of John, the exarch of Bulgaria. He, however, considered the Paleo-Slavonic to be Old Moravian. But the foundation of Slavonic scholarship was laid by Dobrovsky (1753-1829) and Vostokoff (1781-1864) ; the former treated the subject scientifically in his Institutiones Lingux Slavices Dialecti Veteris (Vienna, 1822), and the latter

edited the Ostromir Coden, a Paleo-Slavonic manuscript of the Gospels, written in Russia in the 11th century. Dobrovsky at first considered Palo-

script in the Bodleian,

y gives some interesting examples; thus for modern Ussian sram, ‘ shame,”

he gives sorom, &c.

Mis An excellent map of this district is given in the Slavianskt Sbornik (Slavonic:

ceHany), vol. ii.

begins to prevail from a line drawn from Salonica to Constantinople. Its area is dotted by Turkish colonies—the Turks, however, are now fast emigrating—and there is a considerable admixture of Greeks. Modern Bulgarian is a very corrupt form of Slavonic. The vocabu- lary, to begin with, is full of Turkish words. The wonder is that the language did not altogether disappear. It uses the Slavonic demonstrative pronoun as an article, which is placed at the end of words, as in Rouman, Albanian, and the Scandinavian languages. The cases are very defective, and are mostly expressed by preposi- tions. There is no regular form of the infinitive, for which a peri- phrasis is used. The language has only been resuscitated of late years. An American missionary named Riggs published a sketch of the grammar and a short vocabulary. In 1852 the brothers Tzankott compiled a grammar in which Latin letters were employed. There are other grammars in Bulgarian by Momchiloff and Grouyeff. A dictionary (Bulgarian-French) has since been published by Bogo- roff, and there are indications that the language will be scientifi- cally treated, to judge by some excellent papers in the Archiv fiir slawische Philologic. From these we learn that in the Bulgarian dialects the nouns are much more fully inflected, and traces of nasals are found. The Upper Meesian dialect is also called the Shopsko narcchie or dialect of the Shopi. Jireéek says that these Shopi differ very much in language, dress, and habits from the other Bulgarians, who regard them as simple folk. Their name he connects with the old Thracian tribe of the Sapei. Those Bul- garians who have embraced Islam are called Pomaks, —a word of which no satisfactory derivation has been given.

2 Ueber den Ursprung und die Heimath des Glagolitismus, Prague, 1858.

3 See his Starobulharska Fonologie se stdlym z¥etelem k Jazyku Litevskemu (Old Bulgarian ih gs in Relation to Lithuanian), Prague, 1873.

4 Altslovenische Formenlehre in Paradigmen, Vienna, 1874.

5 But, as previously stated, nasals have been found in Bulgarian dialects.

6 This is rather strongly stated. They are said to have been of Greek origin, but had probably become thoroughly Bulgarized ; yet the argument used by Schleicher remains quite as strong, for they would use the form of Slavonic with which they were familiar. :

7 Die Formenlere der Kirchen-Slawischen Sprache, Bonn, 1852.

Bul- garian litera- ture.

Servian.

Sloven- ish.

As for the sake of convenience we group Palzeo-Slavonic under Old Bulgarian, we shall divide Bulgarian itself into Old and New. (1) Old Bulgarian.—We have space here only to mention some of the more remarkable codices. (a) Codea Assemani in the Vatican, edited by Ratki, perhaps belonging to the 11th century, contains extracts from the Gospels for each day of the year. (b) Codex Clozianus, so called because it once belonged to Count Cloz of Trent, contains homilies by Chrysostom, Athanasius, and Epiphanius, supposed to be of the 11th century. (c) Codex Marianus, found by Grigorovich in a monastery on Mount Athos, edited by Jagi¢, of the 11th century. (d) Codex Zographensis, also edited by Jagi¢, assigned to the 12th century. These are the chief Glagolitic! manu- scripts. One of the oldest Cyrillic? manuscripts is (a) the Ostromir Codex (see Russt, vol. xxi. p. 108). Itis of the 11th century and was written by the diak or deacon Gregory for Ostromir, the posadnik or governor of Novgorod.

Other Cyrillic documents are (0) certain legends and homilies which originally belonged to the monks of the abbey of Suprasl near Bialystok in Poland. They have been edited by Miklosich. The half Cyrillic and half Glagolitic manu- script called the Texte dw Sacre must not be forgotten, because on it the French kings were accustomed to take the oath at their coronation at Rheims ; part of it is of the 14th century. There are also many translations from the Byzantine writers in Old Bulgarian, as from John Malalas, George Hamartolus, and others. (2) Modern Bulgarian.—The Bulgarians have some fine collections of popular songs. We can only allude here to the most celebrated. (a) The edition of the brothers Miladinoff published at Agram in 1861,— a very interesting collection, with notes on Bulgarian proverbs and customs; these unfortunate men were murdered in a Turkish prison. (b) The popular songs of the Macedonian Bulgarians collected by Verkovich ; of this only one volume appeared, now vely scarce. Verkovich has since published a work entitled Veda Slovena,in which he professes to have discovered Old Bulgarian ballads relating to Orpheus ; but the production is regarded by most critics as an 1m- posture. (c) The collection panied in 1875 by Auguste Dozon, con- taining many interesting ballads. (d) The Bulgarian Popular Miscel- lany (Bulgarski Narodni Slovnik) of Basil Cholakoff, published in 1873. The rise of Modern Bulgarian literature is altogether recent. The father of it was the monk Paisi, who lived towards the end of the 18th century. He wrote a book on the history of Bulgaria in Bulgarian, which may be compared to the similar one of Raich in Servian. One of his pupils was Sophronius, bishop of Vracha (Vratza), who wrote his own life and adventures (1804). A trans- lation of the New Testament was published by Sapernoff in 1821. George Venelin (1802-1834), a Little Russian from the neighbour- hood of the Carpathians, travelled in Bulgaria in search of manu- scripts and had some remarkable adventures there, which are related in the account of him by Bezsonoff ; he may be said to have revealed the existence of Bulgaria to the west. Among other writers may be mentioned Rakovski, the author of some eccentric works, but a true patriot, and Slaveikoff, Vazoff is a living poet of some reputation. The Bulgarian Literary Society has now been removed from Braila to Sofia, where it issues its journal (Periodichesko Spisanic).

Servo-Croatian and Slovenish.—Of these languages the southern or Herzegovinian dialect has become the literary language of Servia. It is

sometimes called the “shtokavstchina” from its use of the word shto for the interrogative ‘‘ what.” The language of the coast or Dalmatian littoral is called ‘‘ chakavstchina ” from the use of cha in the same way, and Slovenish “kajkavstchina” from the use of kaj. There is practically no difference between the Servian and Croatian dialects, but a quasi-difference has been created between them, much more apparent than real, by the employment of the Latin alphabet by the Croats and of the Cyrillic by the Serbs. The reasons for this divergence being theological, it is probable that it will not soon be put anend to. The Servian language is the softest of all the Slavonic tongues and elides many of the consonants. _ It is rich in tense forms, having preserved the Old Slavonic aorist. The accent is capricious.? The vocabulary has incorporated many Turkish words ; but these will probably be gradually eliminated as the nation wakes to greater self-consciousness. For an account of Servian literature, see ServIA, vol. xxi, p. 689.

The Slovenes are sometimes called “ Wends” and their language “ Windish ” or “ Wendish,” an inconvenient term, as it causes some confusion with the tongue of the Lusatian Wends, of which more will be said shortly. Slovenish begins in Styria just south of Klagenfurt (Celovec). Besides Carinthia and Carniola, it is also the vernacular of a small part of Hungary, being spoken in the corner adjoining the

1 The origin of the Glagolitic alphabet still remains a puzzle. It is now considered older than the Cyrillic. According to some, it is a modification of Greek cursive writing. thers connect it with Armenian and Albanian alphabets. But none of these views have found general acceptance. The alphabet is now only used by the Dalmatian Slavs in their liturgical books.

2 An account of the Cyrillic alphabet is given in vol. i. p. 613 sq.

3 The accent in Russian and Servo-Croatian is especially difficult. Professor Grote of St Petersburg has already written with great learning on the subject, and Professor Leskien of Leipsic is now publishing a work, Untersuchungen

iiber Quantitat und Betonung in den slawischen Sprachen, of which the first part on quantity in Servian has already appeared.

this part of the country using Magyar orthography. These Slovenish provinces formed a margravate and have long been attached to the domains of the house of Hapsburg. In 1883 they celebrated the six hundredth anniversary of this union and a handsome volume was published in commemoration of the event. For a time they were seized by Ottocar of Bohemia, but regained by Rudolph 1., who divided them among his sons. The theory that Old Slovenish ex- hibits the oldest known form of Slavonic has already been discussed, The language has preserved a dual both in the noun and the verb and its vocabulary teems with interesting Slavonic forms. The attempt of Ljudevit Gaj to fuse Slovenish and Servo-Croatian and make one great South Slavonic literary language is alluded to in SERVIA (vol. xxi. p. 691). Slovenish exhibits an older form of Slavonic than Servian, just as Slovak is earlier than Bohemian. A good grammar was published by Kopitar at Laibach in 1808. To this is prefixed | a valuable essay on the Slavonic languages, which was the first . treatment of Slavonic philology in a scientific way ; nothing so . valuable appeared till the cpoch-making Institutiones of Dobrovsky | (1822). Grammars were afterwards published by, Metelko and | Murko, but these have been far surpassed by that of Suman, a pupil of Miklosich.¢ The orthography of the language has been much | improved and it is to be hoped that some of the Germanisms which now disfigure it will be expelled. The Slovenes must banish from their vocabulary such words as farba (farbe), farar (pfarrer), and ; britof' (friedhof).

The earliest specimens of the literature are the manuscripts from Sloven Freising in Bavaria now preserved in the library of Munich. They ish have been assigned to the 9th or 10th century and are written in liters. Latin letters. From that time we find no more trace of thetur, | language till the Reformation, when Truber (in 1557) translated | the New Testament into Slovenish. He was obliged, however, to quit his country. In 1584 the whole Bible appeared at Tubingen under the superintendence of Juri Dalmatin; in 1584 the first Slavonic grammar was published by Bohorié, a schoolmaster of Laibach and pupil of Melanchthon; and in 1592 appeared the first Slovenish dictionary by Megiser.® After the Protestant movement had been stopped by Ferdinand II., the country fell into a torpor, as did Bohemia. In

this condition it remained during almost the whole of the 18th century,—the only productions of that barren period being a few plays and religious works without merit, and: the grammars of Pochlin and Gutsmann. Valentine Vodnik | (1758-1819) was a poet of some eminence. He flourished durmg the existence of the short-lived Illyrian kingdom which had been evoked by Napoleon and was destined to fall to pieces rapidly. About this time he composed his Iliria Ozivijena (The Revival of Illyria); but, sympathizing too much with the French, he incurred the wrath of the Austrians when they came back into possession, and was deprived of his posts, dying soen afterwards in poverty. Other writers are Jarnik and Ravnikar. The most celebrated poet was Francis Pregern (1800-1849), whose lyrics enjoy great popu- larity among his countrymen. The Matica Slovenska (Slovenish Literary Society) issues a journal and publishes useful works. In a recent number there is an interesting article by M. Enjavee, entitled ‘‘ Fragments from a Traveller’s Wallet,” where we have lists of words gathered by the author from rural districts inhabited by Slovenes. The Resanian dialect of Slovenish may be said to have been discovered by Professor Baudouin de Courtenay; certainly no one before lis time had made any study of it. The Rezami, amounting to about 27,000, live on the north-eastern corner of the Italian frontier, in two valleys of the Julian Alps, and are Italian subjects. There is also a work on this dialect by Carlo Podrecca, called Slavia Italiana. The Ugro-Slovenish dialect, although it has not been used much as a literary language, is interesting, because it shows some connexion with Slovakish, and is thus a link between the south-castern and western branches of the Slavonic languages.

Western Braneh. |

Polish.—The dialect of Great Poland has become the literary Poli language. It isa vigorous tongue, but has incorporated too many German and Latin words. The “macaronic” style of Polish writing which did so much to disfigure the language is discussed in POLAND (vol. xix. p. 801). Polish has preserved the nasals g andg, Its accent is almost invariably on the penultimate. There are excel- lent grammars by Matecki and Malinowski, and the monuments of Old Polish have been well edited by Nehring and Baudouin de Courtenay. The splendid lexicon of Linde in six large volumes Is a monumental work. The Silesian dialect is threatened with rapid

extermination by the encroachment of the Germans. has been treated of by Malinowski.® Here also may be mentioned a book by Krynski on the dialect of Zakopan at the foot of the Tatra mountains to the south of Cracow. Under POLAND (vol. xix. p. 299 sq.) will be found an account of Polish literature.

4 Slovenska Slovnica, by Spisal J. Suman, Laibach, 1882 : :

5 Others have since appeared by Murko and J anezit, The Slovenish Literary Society is now publishing a dictionary, of which the German-Slovenish part has appeared in two stout volumes,—a very valuable work. ;

6 Beitréige zur slavischen Dialectologie; tdber die Oppelnsche Mundart im Oberschlesien, Leipsic, 1873. j

SsLayVs

The Kashoubish dialect is spoken by about 200,000 persons according to Hilferding (others, however, make the number less) in the neighbourhood of Dantzic. This dialect presents some very interesting variations: among others the accent is free and not confined to the penultimate as in Polish, and it has more nasals. Its philology has been treated by Dr Cenova, who has also collected their songs and published a small volume of dialogues and literary miscellanies. The word ‘‘Kashoub” appears to be a nickname, their proper appellation being ‘‘Slovintzi.” Schafarik makes the word signify “‘goats.”” The position of Kashoubish in the Slavonic family has formed the subject of controversy. In his Beitrige zur Slavisehen Dialektologie, Herr Leon Biskupski has written an interesting pamphlet in which he essays to prove that it is only a dialect of Polish. This is in opposition to the opinions of Schleicher and Hilferding, who have connected it with the extinct Polabish, The pamphlet contains curious details on the varieties of Kashoubish: the author tells us that every district has its own local dialect. For Kashoubish and its dialects Prince Lucien Bonaparte proposes the term ‘‘ Baltic”?; this appellation, however, would be more appropriate to group together Lithuanian, Lettish, and Old Prussian, and in this way it has been used by Leskien.

(2) Bohemian (Chekh). —This language has several] dialects, some too small to be specified here ; they will be found enumerated along with other Slavonic dialects in Erben's work.? Connected with the Moravian is the Hanacky. Both the grammar and the lexico- graphy of Chekh have been copiously treated, the latter in the excellent work of Jungmann. Schafarik wrote a grammar of the old Janguage. The vocalization of both r and 7 has been previously mentioned ; / has crept in in many places instead of g, but this is not found earlier than the 13th century. The accent is always on the ante-penultimate.

Bohemian literature may be divided into the three following periods, in which we follow Tieftrunk in his History*:—(1) the early period, the productions of which are chiefly of poetry from the beginning of Chekh literature till the Hussite wars (1410) ; (2) the second period, which shows a great development of prose, but also a great decline in literature generally, extends from the time of Hus to the latter part of the 18th century ; (8) from the renaissance of Chekh literature till the present time.

(1) The earliest period of Bohemian civilization was subjected to hoth Latin-German and Greek-Slavonic influences. The Latin alphabet may have been introduced even in heathen times. Rosti- slaff of Moravia invited to his kingdom Methodius, who was appointed archbishop of the country by the pope. We hear even ; iu the 11th century of a Slavonic school in the VySehrad (Wy- scherad, Prague) where St Procopius studied, to whom tradition assigned a hand in the transcription of the Texte du Saere, pre- viously alluded to. Professor Jagi¢ has printed an extract from an old service book the language of which shows Chekh influences. He has assigned the book to the 10th century. Some other very early specimens of the language are contained in the so-called Glagolitic fragments, Zlomky Hlaholské. Two ancient hymns belonging to this orthodox period of the Bohemian Church have come down to us, Hospodine, pomiluj, ny (Lord, have mercy upon us) and Svaty Va'elave, Vevodo Ceské Zeme (Holy Wenceslaus, Lord of the Bohemian land). In 1817 a fragment called Libusin Soud (The Judgment of Libu¥a) was anonymously forwarded to the newly founded Bohemian museum. The sender was afterwards found to have been one Kovar, the steward of Count Colloredo. Some critics assigned it to the 9th century ; according to others it Is a forgery. With the limited space at

our disposal it would be impossible to discuss the question here. The same year also wit- nessed the discovery by Hanka of the so-called Kéniginhof manu- seript (Kralodvorsky Rukopis), consisting of epic and lyric pieces, the authenticity of which some critics have attempted to bring tnto doubt. The chief hand in these forgeries is alleged to have been Wenceslaus Hanka (1791-1861), who was for some time head of the museum library and the author of some mediocre verse. the next poem of any importance is the Alexandreis, a free Chekh version of the Latin work of Philip Walter ab Insulis, surnamed

‘De Castellione.” The Bohemian version was composed by an un- known author probably between 1240 and 1253, To this time belong many versificd lives of saints and legends, such as those of St

focopius and St Catherine. The manuscript of the latter poem has been brought back from Sweden, whither it had been removed during the Thirty Years’ War, and is now preserved at Briinn in

Moravia. The so-called Chronicle of Dalimil, a work of some importance, belongs to the 14th century. It is a tedious produc- hon, written in octosyHabics, and extends from the creation of the world till 1814. The author is supposed to have been a Bohemian knight, but there is no ground for believing that his name was Delimnl. The work is inspired by great hatred of the Germans.

e have a good deal of tedious moral poetry belonging to the 13th century. More interesting matter can be found in the ‘‘Satires eee ter scan be found in the satires

1 Dig Kassubisch-Slovinische Sprache. 2 Trans. Phil. Soc., 1883.

3 Sto Prostond’rodnich, Pohad s ek, &c. (A Hundred Popular Tales), Prague, 1865, “Second ed., Prague, 1880.” ‘ ‘ a

on Craftsmen” (Satyry o Remeslnicich), and a poem on the Ten Commandments. Most of these pieces are anonymous, but the name of one

author is known, Smil of Pardubitz, surnamed ‘¢Wlaska,” a leading Bohemian of his day. But little is known of the events of his life, except that he was killed in a skirmish in 1403. His chief work is the New Couwneil, one of the beast epics so much in vogue in the Middle Ages. Others, however, are assigned to him, of which the most original and amusiyg is the ‘‘ Dialogue between the Groom and Scholar” (Podkoni a Zak). A valuable legal document belonging to this period is the Book of the Old Lord of Rosenberg, which is one of the earliest specimens of Bohemian prose. Rosenberg was royal chamberlain from 1318 to 1346 and died the following year. Another legal work of im- portance is the ‘‘ Exposition of the Law of the Land of Bohemia” (Vyklad na Pravo Zeme Ceske), by Andrew of Duba, chief justice of the country. Considcrable portions of the Bible were translated into Bohemian during the 13th and 14th centnries. The version was completed at the beginning of the 15th century. Wickliffe says of Anne of Luxemburg, the first wife of Richard II., ‘‘ Nobilis regina Anglie, soror Cesaris, habet evangelium in lingua triplici exaratum, scilicet in lingua Bohemica, Teutonica, et Latina.” There are two early versions of the Psalter,—the Clementine at the end of the 13th or beginning of the 14th century, and the Wittenberg also at the beginning of the 14th. The doubts which have been thrown on the fragments of the early version of the Gospel of St John appear to be completely dissipated by the well-timed work of Dr Jan Gebauer. Dr Adolf Patera has discovered recently another religious poem of this period.® Another early prose chronicle deserving of mention is that of Pulkava, a priest, who died in 1380. It extends from the earliest times to the year 1380, and was originally written in Latin, but he afterwards translated it into Chekh. ‘‘The Weaver” (Tkadletek), called after the name of its author, who lived in the first half of the 14th century, is a curious prose poem, in which the author celebrated the fair Adhtka, one of the beauties of the Bohemian court. The piece is full of the usual conceits of the age; it has not yet been ascertained whether it is original or only an adaptation. It very much resembles Der Ackermann aus Bohmen, of which four manuscripts have been preserved. Perhaps, as Gebauer has surmised, they are both adaptations of a piece which is now lost. Passing over a quantity of medieval legends and tales, such as Flore et Blaneh- Jlore, we need only mention, as dealing with native subjects, the two chronicles of Stifrid and Brunevik, supposed to have been originally written in verse, The most remarkable Bohemian writer of the 14th century is Thomas of Stitny,

who writes on ethical and religious subjects. He was born of a noble family about 1880, and probably lived till the close of the century. He appears to have studied at the university of Prague, then newly founded. His chief works are a treatise on General Christian Matters, in six books (edited in 1852), and the Books of Christian Instruetion, printed with an introduction by Vrtatko in 18738. His style is easy and flowing. lLoserth has rightly said that the object of Stitny was to put in a popular form the sum total of the scholastic knowledge of his age. ‘here is also a Chekh version of the History of the Trojan War, composed by Guido di Colonna from Dictys Cretensis and Dares Phrygius ; it was one of the first printed in Bohemian, and was issued from the press at Pilsen in

1468.

(2) The second period begins with the great name of Hus, whose Second Hus de- period ;

Bohemian writings were edited by Erben in 1865-68. veloped his native language as Luther did German. He corrected the translation of the Bible, and improved Bohemian orthography. We have nine letters written by him while in prison at Constance. During the period of the Hussite wars there was abundance of political and religious pamphlets. Most of these productions, how- ever, were of ephemeral interest. The travels of Marco Polo and Sir John Mandeville were translated into Bohemian. Peter Chel- cicky, one of the leaders of the United Brethren, was a popular writer. He was a cobbler by trade, hence he was nicknamed “*Kopyta,” or the Shoe-Last. His works, written between 1430 and 1456, have a strongly marked democratic tone ; among them may be especially mentioned his Postils and the Net of Faith (Sit Viry). In 1488 the complete Bible was printed in Bohemia, the first regular printing press at Prague having been set up the year before. In 1506 a Calixtine Bible appeared at Venice. The national literature made distinct progress under George Podébrad, a native king. Vavrinec z Brezové (1370-1455) wrote in Latin Historia de Bello Hussitico, of which there is an early Chekh trans- lation. There is a satire in Latin by Jan Hasisteinsky z Lobkovic, entitled Lament of St Weneeslaus over the Morals of the Chekhs. He was also a considerable traveller in the East. The Chekhs were fond of making pilgrimages to the Holy Land; Martin

Kabatnik was a traveller of this kind. His Peregrinations were first printed in 1518. Works on law were written by Ctibor and Viktorin, and many translations from the classics appeared. Gregory Hruby z Jclene (called Gelenius) and his son Sigismund

5 See Arch. f. slaw. Phil., vol. vii.

were very industrious in this way; the latter published at Basel in 1536 a curious dictionary, Lexicon Symphonwm, an early attempt at comparative philology, in which he compares Greek, Latin, German, and Slavonic. We must find space for a mention of the writings of Dubravius (¢. 1489-1553), bishop of Olmiitz, although he used the Latin and not the Bohemian language. His work on fish-ponds and fish (Libedlus de Piseinis et Piscium qut in ets aluntur Natura, 1547) is not altogether unknown to Englishmen owing to the citations in Izaak Walton, with whom the bishop was a great authority. His most important work, however, was his History of Bohemia in thirty-three books, from the earliest times to the coronation of Ferdinand I. at Prague in 1527, the termination of Bohemian independence. In 1533 appeared the first Chekh gram- mar, by BeneS Optat. Verse-writers abounded at this time, but no poet of eminence. Veleslavin (1545-1 599) was an indefatigable worker, being, like Caxton, both printer and author. The Latin herbal of Audrew Matthiolus, physician to the archduke Ferdinand, was translated by Thaddeus Hajek. Some good works on law appeared, and there are quantities of sermons. Simon Lomnicky (b. 1560) wrote a great deal of poetry ; he was the laureate of Rudolph II., and also wrote a triumphal song for the elector Frederick when chosen king of Bohemia by the Protestants. He was severely wounded at the battle of the White Mountain and spent the rest of his days in poverty ; but there appears to be no truth in the story that he became a public beggar. The claiins of Lomnicky to be considered a poet are but meagre; he writes little better than rhymed prose. his comic picces and satires. At this period flourished the chronicler Hajek, who appears to have been a priest, and who died in 1553. His work is interesting, but altogether uncritical, and he does not seem to have cared much about truth. He gives us all the old Chekh sagas, and fortunately uses the Chekh language. His book attained great popularity,

and was translated into German. Indeed, it was almost the chief authority for Bohemian history till towards the close of the 18th century. The travels of Christopher Harant in the Holy Land are full of learning and of curious matter. A new edition was published in 1854, The author perished on the scaffold on the memorable 19th June 1621, when Bohemia lay completcly at the feet of the Hapsburg conqueror. Harant started for his journey in 1598, he and his companions being dressed as Franciscan triars.. There is also the account by Wenceslaus Vratislav of Mitrovitz (1576-1635) of his three years' captivity at Constanti- uople,—a work full of picturesque incidents. The letters of Karl ze Zerotin (d. 1636), one of the Moravian Brethren, who was for some time in the service of Henry IV. of France, have been edited by Brandl. With the battle of the White Monntain in 1620 terminates what has been called the golden age of Chekh literature. In 1615 the diet had made a resolute effort to protect the national language. But now the country became Germanizcd, and books in Chekh were eagerly sought out and destroyed. In addition to its sufferings during the Thirty Years' War, Bohemia had the misfor- tune to lose many of its most valuable manuscripts, which were carried off by the conquerors. For nearly 200 years Bohemia ceased] to be counted among the nationalities of Europe. Here and there a patriot laboured in the interest of his country, such as the Jesuit Balbin or Balbinus (1621-1688), who was professor of rhetoric at Prague and author of Epitome Rerwm Bohemicarum (1677) and also Miscellanea Rerum Bohemicarum (1680-81). His services to Bohemian literature were considerable, but his writings are in Latin. Many authors of repute were, however, at this time in exile, and of these no one has earned a greater renown than Jan Amos Komensky (frequently styled by the Latin form of his name, Comenius). This eminent man was born at Nivnitz ncar Hungarian Brod in Moravia and was the last bishop of the Moravian Brethren. After the battle of the White Mountain he fled to Poland, which at that time had not altogether lost its spirit of toleration. Here he was joined by some Polish dissidents and formed the nucleus of a religious society. In 1631 he published his Janua Linguarwm Reserata, in which he developed a new theory of learning languages. This work became very popular and has been repeatedly translated. He afterwards visited England and Sweden, and in 1659 gave to the world his Orbis Pictus, which also enjoyed great reputation as an educational work. He died at Amsterdam in 1670. It would be impossible in a brief sketch like the present to give a detailed list of the

writings of Komensky. Of his Bohemian works we may mention the prose poem Labyrint Sv8ta a Raj Srdce (The Labyrinth of the World and Paradise of the Heart) and his Informatoriwm Skoly Mate¥ske. He also translated the Psalms into Chekh. In 1656, on the destruction of the town of Leszno by fire, Komensky lost some of his most valuable works still in manuscript; we may especially regret his Poklud Jazyka Ceského (Treasury of the Bohemian Language), upon which he had been engaged from 1612. During the latter part of the 17th century and the greater part of the 18th the language and literature of Bohemia steadily declined. A few scribblers appeared, such as Rosa, Pohl, and Simek, but their names are hardly deserving of mention. But Gelasius Dobner and Martin Pelzcl were valuable workers in the field of Bohemian history.

SLAV®s

There is some merit, however, in’

(3) The true study of the Slavonic languages may be said to have Mode begun with Joseph Dobrovsky. In 1809 he published Ausfihrliches periog

Lehrgebiude der bohm. Sprache. In 1822 appeared at Vienna his

great work Institutiones Lingus Slaview Dialects Veterts. Dobrovsky

died in 1829. The strange thing about him is that, in spite of all his labours, he had no faith in his native language and despaired of its revival. But, like Columbus, he was destined to accomplish greater results than he expected. Joseph Jungmann (1773-1847) another regenerator of the Chekh language, was author of the great dictionary and an esteemed translation of Paradisc Lost. Besides these works he wrote a history of Bohemian literature. Kollar (1793-1852) and Celakovsky (1799-1852) both earned a considerable reputation as poets,—the first by a series of sonnets called Slavy Deera (The Daughter of Glory), under which title he celebrates the praises of all Slavonic lands and at the same time his love for the daughter of a German pastor ; the second by his ‘‘ Echo of Russian Songs” (Ohlas Pisni Ruskych) and the ‘Rose with a Hundred Leaves” (Rize Stolista). A good poetical style was now formed for the Bohemians, and a host of minor poets appeared for whose names we cannot find space. Karel Erben (1811-1870) has left some

excellent ballads in his Kytice (Garland). His genius was kindled by the folk tales with which Bohemia abounds. He conferred a benefit upon Slavonic students by his interesting collection of national tales previously alluded to; moreover, he was a sound scholar and an indefatigable antiquary. Re gesta diplomatica necnon epistolaria Bohemiz et Moraviz, extending to 1253, and editions of Harant's Journey to the Holy Land and Nestor's Chronicle are monuments of his industry.

ee =

Silay s

he has written a good historical novel entitled Andrew Chernisheff, which deals with the reign of Catherinc II. of Russia. In 1880 appeared two other tales by the same writer, Romance concerning the Faithful Friendship of Amisa and Anvil, and a strange book of Oriental tales styled Baje Rosany (Stories of Susannah). As with us, the social romance or novel of domestic life has latterly been much cultivated among the Chekhs. The legends and tales current among the peasantry have also been carefully collected, first by Boztna Nemcova (1820-1862), whose Slovenske Povesti had a very great success. She was followed by Madame Muzak, authoress of some of the most popular of the modern Bohemian novels. Her "Country Romance" (Vesnicky Roman) has been translated into French, Excellent pictures of rural life have also been given by Vaclaff Smilovsky (a nom de plume of Smilauer), who has writtcn a great many novels, as the ''Old Organist" (Stary Varharnih), Martin Oliva, &c., much in the style of Auerbach and Zschokke. Other writers of historical novels are M. Bohumil Cidlinsky and Vaclaff Vivek. Madame Zofie Podlipska, sister of Madame Mudak, is known as a popular writcr of social romances. For an account of the historical labours of Francis Palacky, see PaLacky. Among the pupils of the great historian the first place must be given to Vaclatf Viadivoj Tomek (b. 1818), now professor of Austrian history in the university of Prague, whose chief production is a history of that city, which he has carried to a fifth volume. In 1849 he published the first volume of a history of the university of Prague, which seems never to haye been completed, and in 1880 a biography of the Bohemian hero Zizka. He appears throughout as a most accurate and painstaking writer. Vocel (1808-1871) is the author of a

valuable work, ‘‘The Early Days of Bohemia” (Pravtk Zemé eské), which we have quoted already when treating of Slavonic ethnology. Alois Sembera (1807-1882), whose literary activity ex- tended over a long period, wrote voluminously on Bohemian history and literature. He was professor of the Bohemian language at the university of Vienna. Ina work on the western Slavs (O Zépadnich Slovanech) he maintained that the Chekhs, Moravians, Slovaks, and Polabes were settled much earlicr in the countries which they at present occupy than many historians have been willing to admit. As a critic, Professor Sembera is an iconoclast and has attacked many of the (supposed) early monuments of the Chekh language. Dr Antonine Gindely, born at Prague in 1829, has proved himself to be a most conscientious and enthusiastic worker in the field of historical research. In order to collect materials for his publica- tions he travelled in various parts of Bohemia, Poland, Germany, France, Belgium, Holland, and Spain. The results of this diligence have appeared in a collection of valuable historical works, such as the History of the Bohemian Brethren, Rudolph IT. and his Times, and later a History of the Bohemian Revolt of 1618. The brothers Joseph and Hermenegild Jireéek have won a reputation in Bohemian literature by many useful works. They have conjointly published a book in defence of tha Kralodvorsky Rukopis which is well worthy the attention of those Who wish to make themselves acquainted with the literature of this vexed question. Joseph is now occupied in editing ina cheap form some of the most interesting monuments of early Bohemian literature. In 1880 Hermenegild published a valuable Collection of Slavonic Laws, containing an almost complete series of the early codes of the Slavs in the original languages, Joseph Jirevek is also author of a useful chrestomathy of Bohemian literature with biographical and critical notices. J oseph Constan- tine Jireéek (son of Joseph, born in 1854), formerly a privatdocent of the university of Prague, has devoted himself to Bulgarian his- tory and bibléllra phy. In 1872 he published a Bibliography of Modern Bulgarian Literature, and has written a Hf istory of Bulgaria, of which a German translation has appeared. Joseph Emler and Karl Tieftrunk have been co-operators with Dr Gindely in his “Old Monuments of Bohemian History ” (Stare Pamiti Dejin Ceskych). he former has also edited the second volume of the Regesta Bohemica and since 1870 has becn editor of the “Journal ” (Casopis) of the Bohemian museum. Karl Tieftrunk has written several useful works, among them the History of Bohemian Literature from the

earliest period to the present time, and the interesting mono- graph on the opposition of the Bohemian states to Ferdinand I. mn 1547, The History of Bohemian Literature is very carefully written and gives in a short compass much valuable information. An elaborate work is now appearing in parts by F. Backovsky, entitled Zevrubne Dejiny Ceského Pisemnictyt Doby Nové (A Com- plete History of Modern Bohemian Literature) from the year 1774 to the present time. There is also a work by Jerdbek, Zarly Days a Lomantie Poetry. Many valuable contributions to Bohemian ol have proceeded from the pen of Dr Joseph Kalousek (b. 88). Vincent Brand] and Beda Dudik have devoted particular attention to Moravian history and antiquities. The former, among other works, has edited the ‘letters of Karl ze Zerotin, previously neuponed. Beda Dudik, a Benedictine monk and historiographer q Moravia, has published some valuable works on the history of pe portion of the Bohemian kingdom and has also written a weld of Moravia. Like the great work of Palacky, it was first *n In German, but has since appeared in the Bohemian laun-

guage. Extracts from the interesting diary of Zerotin have been edited by him in the Méhrisehe Gesehichtsquellen. Through his efforts twenty-one Bohemian manuscripts which had been carried away to Sweden at the time of the Thirty Years’ War have been restored, and are now preserved in the state archives of Briinn. Among these is the Legend of St Catherine, many words in which are said to explain difficult passages in the Kralodvorsky Rukopis and to furnish testimony to its authenticity. Jakub Maly (d. 1885) was the author of many important articles in the Slounik Nawiny, the Chekh Conversations-Leaicon, and of a popular his- tory of the Bohemian people. He also wrote a grammar of Chekh for Englishmen, besides assisting in the translation of Shakespeare, which has been produced by the joint labours of many Bohemian scholars. In 1868 was published under the editorship of Erben the second volume of the Vybor z Literatury Ceské, a very important work, containing specimens of the old Bohemian authors. The first volume had been edited by Schafarik, for an account of whose literary activity see ScHAFARIK. Valuable works on philology have been written by Martin Hattala, by birth a Slovak, who is now professor of Slavonic philology at the university of Prague. One of his most important productions is in Latin,

De Contiqguarum Consonantium Imitatione in Linguis Slavicts. We is a defender of the genuineness of the two celebrated manuscripts, the Zelenohorsky (t.e., “that which contains the judgment of Libu¥a’’) and the Kralod- vorsky. Among sound philologists are reckoned Drs Gebauer and Geitler. The former has contributed some valuable papers to the Archiv fiir slawische Philologie, edited by Professor Jagi¢é of St Petersburg. The latter, born in 1847, is at present professor of Slavonic philology at the university of Agram. He commenced his studies at Prague under Alfred Ludwig, the translator of the Vedas, and Hattala, and at Vienna under Miklosich. Having begun with a dissertation in the Casopis on the present condition of comparative philology, he published in the same year a work on the Old Bulgarian language. In 1873 he made a tour in Russian and Prussian Lithuania, that, like Schleicher, he might study that interesting language from the mouths of the people. He afterwards published the results of his travels in his Lithauisehe Studien. He has since written a treatise on the Albanian alphabet (Dic Albanesischen und Slavischen Schriften, Vienna, 1883). In this an attempt is made to connect the Glagolitic and Albanian alphabets. A valuable work was written by Antonin Matzenauer (b. 1823), entitled “Foreign Words in Slavonic Languages” (Cizi Slova ve Slovanskych ReXech). Yxcellent works on classical philology have been published by A. Kvivala and Vanitek. Natural science was successfully cultivated by Jan Svatopluk Pres] (1791-1849), professor in the university of Prague, and Jan Ey. Purkyné (1787-1869), pro- fessor of physiology in the same university. As regards moral philosophy, the first part of Dr J. Durdik’s History of Recent Philosophy has just appeared, which extends from Kant to Herbart. Throughout the whole period of the resuscitation of Bohemian literature the society called the Matice Ceska has worked energe- tically, printing its excellent journal or Casopis four times a year, and also issuing some of the old Bohemian classic and meritorious works by modern authors. It was a great trinmph for the Chekhs when a part of the instruction of the university was allowed to be carried on in the Bohemian language. A new magazine (Slovansky Sbornik) made its appearance at the beginning of 1884. The Listy Philologické (Philological Leaves) is still published. Recently a new literary journal (7’he Atheneum) has been started, which seems to be more or less modelled upon its English namesake.

Slovak.—This language or dialect is spoken in the north-western Slovak.

corner of the kingdom of Hungary. It is generally considered to exhibit an earlier form of Chekh, and this is proved by many of its grammatical peculiarities being found in the older Chekh litera- ture. One characteristic of the language is the use of diphthongs in cases where the other Slavonic tongues use simple vowels. For a long time the Slovaks employed Chekh in all their published writings. About the close of the 18th century a separatist move- ment began. The first Slovak grammar was published by Bernolak at Presburg in 1790. It was followed by those of Diani$ka and Viktorin. There is a Slovak dictionary by Loos. The attempt to form a new literary language was to be deplored on many grounds, for both the Magyar and the German have to be resisted. Fora short time a literary society existed among the Slovaks, which published useful books and a journal. The Magyars, however, sup- pressed it, because it was “contra integritatem patrie,” as we were told by one of their ecclesiastics. The Bohemian naturally resents the attempts at separation by the Slovak, and in 1846 the Chekh Litcrary Society issued a work entitled “Opinions in Favour of One Written Language for the Chekhs, Moravians, and Slovaks ” (Hlasove 0 pot¥ebé Jednoty Spisovntho Juzyka pro Cechy, Moravany, a Slovaky). The Slovaks have produced a few poets of repute, such as Holly, Sladkovié, and Chalupka, but their literature is meagre.

Lusatian Wendish.—This language is divided into two dialects, Lusatian Upper and Lower, although even these are capable of subdivision. Wendish.

The word “ Wend,” as previously explained, is a purely German name and is never used by the Slavs themselves. The Lusatians are also

sometimes called Serbs and Sorbs. They are the remnants of the powerful tribes which once oceupied nearly the whole of north Germany. The Lusatians in the earlier period of their history were under the dominion of the Poles and afterwards of the Chekhs. In the early part of the 17th century the bulk of them had been annexed to the electorate of Saxony, with the

exception of the small part about Kottbus, which had belonged to Brandenburg since 1445. In 1815, however, when the states of Europe were rearranged, in most instances with very small regard to the nationalities under their sway, many more of the Lusatians were handed over to Prussia ; and, according to the statistics of Boudilovich, at the present time (1886) all the Lower Lusatians, amounting to 40,000, belong to Prussia, as well as 44,000 of the Upper Lusatians. Besides the two dialects specified there are other minor ones, to judge from an article in the Bohemian Literary Journal ; but they are too minute to be specified here. The Upper Lusatian dialect shows most affinity with Chekh, especially in substituting h for g; the Lower more resembles Polish, and has the strong or barred 2, as in Zos, ‘hair.”’ The Upper dialect has been the most cultivated ; some good grammars have been published by Seiler, Jordan, and Pfulil, and there is a copious dictionary edited by Pfuhl in conjunction with others. The language is full of Germanisms and German words and cannot hold out long against the vigorous attempts at denationalization nade by its Teutonic neighbours. There is a small Lower Lusatian dictionary by Zwahr, a posthumous work of very little merit. The Macica Serbska, the literary society of the Sorbs, founded on the model of the Bohemian Society in 1847, publishes its journal twice a year, which contains interesting articles on folk-tales and folk-lore generally, with popular songs taken down from the mouths of the people. The first printed book in the Upper Sorbish language was the little catechism of Luther, published in 1597 by the pastor Worjech. ‘his was not, however, the first time that any Lusatian or Sorbish words had been printed, for we find the names of plants in that language giveu in Franke’s Hortus Lusatix, published in 1594. In 1706 Michael Brancel or Frencel published a translation of the New Testament into Sorbish ; a little before, in 1689, a grammar had appeared by Zacharias Bierling, entitled Didascalia seu Ortho- graphia Vandalica. In 1693-96 Abraham Frencel, son of Michael, published a dictionary. In 1806 Mohn translated some extracts from Klopstock’s Messiah. From 1837 a new impulse was given to Sorbish literature: newspapers were printed in the language and useful books translated into it. One poet has ap eared among them, Andrew Seiler, a clergyman, who fied in 1872. Lower Sorbish has always been much less developed than Upper. The first book printed in it was a collection of hymns and a catechism, by Albin Moller, in 1574. Chojnan, a pastor in Lubin, wrote the first

grammar between 1642 and 1664; in the latter half of the same century Korner compiled a dictionary. At the commencement of the 18th century Bohumil (Gottlieb) Fabricius published his trans- lation of the New Testament (first edition in 1709) ; at the end of the same century a version of the Old Testameut by Frico appeared. A good collection of Sorbish songs has been edited by Haupt and Gchmaler. According to an interesting article by Hornik in the second volume of the Slavianski Sbornik, a number of these Wends emigrated to America and settled in Bastrop county, Texas, where they have divine service performed in their own language, and publish some newspapers.

Polabish.—Of the Slavonic languages spoken in the north of Polabis! Germany the Lusatian Wendish and Kashoubish are alone living. Of those which are extinct Polabish is the only one of which any memorials have come down to us, aud these are but scanty. The language affords a parallel to Cornish, not only iu the few fragments which remain, but also in the date of its decline and extinction. It is considered by Schleicher,! who has written an excellent grammar by piecing the scanty materials together, just as geologists restore an ichthyosaurus, to have more affinity to Polish than to Chekh, owing to the possession of nasals. This interesting language? ex- pired in the first quarter of the 18th century in the eastern corner of the former kingdom of Hanover, principally in the circuit of Liichow, which even at the present time is called Wendland. | Between 1691 and 1786 certain vocabularies and dialogues in this language (including also a song) were taken down, and from them Schleicher has taken the materials for his grammar and the valu- able little dictionary appended to it. Dr Pfuhl printed these memorials in their entirety in 1863-64. The spelling is altogether phonetic, and, owing to the ignorance of the Slavonic peasaut and his German interrogators, the former of German and the latter of Slavonic, there are some ludicrous blunders. The two most im- portant of these documents are a German- Wendish dictionary, compiled at the end of the 17th century by Christopher Henning, by birth a Lusatian, and pastor of Wustrow near Liichow. Divine service is said to have been held in that town in Wendish as late as 1751. Secondly, we have the Slavonic words and dialogues col- lected by a farmer named Johann Parum-Schultz. His

manuscript is still in the possession of his descendants. There is a valuable monograph on the dialect of the Liineburg Slavs by Biskupski. In the 15th century Slavonic had ceased to be spoken in the island of Riigen, and in the same century it could only be heard from peasants in the market-place of Leipsic, a town (as already stated) with a Slavonic name. What the Slavs, however, have lost in the West they have partly gained in the East, and few languages have a more magnificent prospect than Russian,—the dignity and strength of which fit it to be the tongue of an imperial people. (W. R. M.)

|,

SEAVYANSK, a town of Russia, in the government of Kharkoff, situated 158 miles by rail to the south-east of the town of Kharkoff, on the Torets river and close by several salt lakes. From these salt is extracted to the annual value of more than £10,000; there are also several tallow-works in the place. The Stavyansk merchants carry on a brisk trade in salt, cattle, and tallow. The population (11,650 in 1870) reached 15,400 in 1883.

The ancient name of Stavyansk was Tor. The town, which is supposed to occupy the site of a former settlement of the Torks (Turks) who inhabited the steppes of the Don, was founded in 1676 by the Russians to protect the salt marshes. Having an open steppe behind it, this fort was often destroyed by the Tatars. Its salt trade became insignificant in the 18th century and has only revived during the last twenty years since coal was brought from Ekaterinoslaff.

SLEEP is a normal condition of the body, occurring periodically, in which there is a greater or less degree of unconsciousness due to inactivity of the nervous system and more especially of the brain and spinal cord, It may be regarded as the condition of rest of the nervous system during which there is a renewal of the energy that has been expended in the hours of wakefulness. For in the nervous system the general law holds good that periods of physio- logical rest must alternate with periods of physiological activity, and, as the nervous system is the dominating mechanism in the body, when it reposes, all the other systems enjoy the same condition to a greater or less extent. Rest alternates with work in all vital phenomena. After a muscle has contracted frequently at short intervals, a period of

relaxation is necessary for the removal of waste products and the restitution of energy ; the pulsating heart,

apparently working without intermission, is in reality not doing so, as there are short intervals of relaxation between ‘ndividual beats in which there is no expenditure of energy ; the cells in a secreting gland do not always elaborate, but have periods when the protoplasm is comparatively at rest. Nervous action also involves physico-chemical changes of matter and the expenditure of energy. This is true even of the activity of the brain associated with sensation, per- ception, emotion, volition, and other psychical phenomena, and therefore the higher nervous centres require rest, during which they are protected from the stream of impressions flowing in from the sense-organs, and in which waste matters are removed and the cerebral material is recuperated for another time of wakeful activity.

The coincidence of the time of sleep with the occurrence Ti] of the great terrestrial phenomena that cause night is more§! apparent than real. The oscillations of vital activity are not correlated to the terrestrial revolutions as effect and cause, but the occurrence of sleep, in the majority of cases, on the advent of night is largely the result of habit. Whilst the darkness and stillness of night are favourable to sleep, the state of physiological repose is determined more by the condition of the body itself. Fatigue will normally cause sleep at any time of the twenty-four hours. Thus many of the lower animals habitually sleep during ee

1 Laut- und Formen-Lere der Polabischen Sprache, St Petersburg, |

1871.

2 To avoid confusion it must be remembered that the word “ Pola- bish” is used somewhat carelessly by ethnologists to denote (1) the SJavonie tribes in north Germany generally, (2) the partieular Slav- onie tribe on the Elbe (Slav. Laba).

Sinp- tes.

fst

the day and prowl in search of food in the night; some hibernate during the winter season, passing into long periods of sleep during both day and night ; and men whose avocations require them to work during the night find that they can maintain health and activity by sleeping the requisite time during the day.

The approach of sleep is usually marked by a desire for sleep, or sleepiness, embracing an obscure and complicated group of sensations, resembling such bodily states of feeling as hunger, thirst, the necessity of breathing, &c. All of these bodily states, although on the whole ill defined, are referred with some precision to special organs. Thus

hunger, although due to a general bodily want, is referred

to the stomach, thirst to the fauces, and breathing to the chest ; and in like manner the desire for sleep is referred chiefly to the region of the head and neck. There is a sensation of weight in the upper eyelids, intermittent spasm of the sub-hyoid muscles causing yawning, and drooping of the head. Along with these signs there is obscuration of the intelligence, depression both of géneral sensibility and of the special senses, and relaxation of the muscular system. The half-closed eyelids tend more and more to close; the inspirations become slower and deeper; the muscles supporting the lower jaw become relaxed, so that the mouth opens; the muscles of the back of the neck that tend to support the head also relax and the chin droops on the breast ; and the limbs relax and tend to fall into a line with the body. At the same time the hesitating utterances of the sleepy man indicate vagueness of thought, and external objects gradually cease to make an impression on the senses. These are the chief phenomena of the advent of sleep. After it has supervened there are many grada- tions in its depth and character. In some cases the sleep may be so light that the individual is partially conscious of external impressions and of the disordered trains of thought and feeling that pass through his mind, constituting dreams, and these may be more or less vivid according to the degree of consciousness remaining. On the other hand, the sleep may be so profound as to abolish all psychical phenomena : there are no dreams, and when the sleeper awakes the time passed in this und@nscious state is a blank. The first period of sleep is the most profound.

After a variable period, usually from five to six hours of deep sleep, the faculties awaken, not simultaneously but often fitfully, so that there are transient periods of consciousness. This is the time of dreaming. As the period of waking approaches the sensibility becomes more acute, so that external impres- sionsare faintly perceived, These impressions may influence and mould the flow of images in the mind of the sleeper, frequently altering the nature of his dreams or making them more vivid. The moment of waking is usually not instantaneous, but is preceded by an intermediate state of partial consciousness, in which there are feelings of a pleasant lassitude, a sense of repose, a luxurious abandon- ment of the body to any position in which it may happen to be, and a strange play of the mental faculties that has more of the character of an “intellectual mirage ” than of consecutive thought. The intensity of sleep has been measured by Kohlschiitter by the intensity of the sound necessary to awaken the sleeper. This intensity increases rapidly during the first hour, then decreases, sometimes rapidly, sometimes slowly, during the next two or three hours, and then very slowly until the me of waking. This statement agrees generally with oo As a rule the deeper the sleep the longer it asts, _ Various physiological changes have been observed dur- ing sleep, but much remains to be done in this direction.

he pulse becomes less frequent ; the respiratory move- ments are fewer in number and are almost wholly thoracic,

155

not abdominal ; all the secretions are reduced in quantity ; the gastric and intestinal peristaltic movements are less rapid ; the pupils of the eye are contracted and during profound sleep are not affected by light ; and the eyeballs are rotated upwards. The pupils dilate slightly when strong sensory or auditory stimuli are applied, and they dilate the more the lighter the sleep; at the moment of waking they become widely dilated. Whilst muscular relaxation is general, there seems to be increased contrac- tion of certain sphincter muscles, as the circular fibres of the iris and the fibres concerned in closing the eyelids. The state of the circulation of the brain has been fre- quently investigated. The older view was that there was a degree of plethora or congestion of the vessels of the brain, as is the state of

matters in coma, to which the state of sleep has a superficial resemblance. Coma, how- ever, 1s not sleep, but a condition of inactivity of the cerebral matter owing to the accumulation of dark venous blood in its vessels, This has been actually observed in cases where it was possible to see the brain. During sleep the surface of the exposed brain has been observed to become pale and to shrink somewhat from the sides of the opening (Blumenbach).

from the parietal region of a dog, and, to obviate the effects of atmospheric pressure, inserted a watch glass into the aperture so that the surface of the brain could be seen. His results are summarized thus :—

- Pressure of distended veins on the brain is not the cause of sleep, for during sleep the veins are not distended ; and, when they are, symptoms and appearances arise which differ from those which characterize sleep. (2) During sleep the brain is in a comparatively bloodless condition, and the blood in the encephalic vessels is not only diminished in quantity, but moves with diminished rapidity. (3) The condition of the cerebral circulation during sleep is, from physical causes, that which is most favourable to the nutrition of the brain tissue; and, on the othcr hand, the condition which

revails during waking is associated with mental activity, because

it is that which is most favourable to oxidation of the brain sub- stance, and to various changes in its chemical constitution. (4) The blood which is derived from the brain during sleep is distri- buted to the alimentary and excretory organs. (5) Whatever in- creases the activity of the cerebral circulation tends to preserve wakefulness ; and whatever decreases the activity of the cerebral circulation, and, at the same time, is not inconsistent with the general health of the body, tends to induce and favour sleep. Such circumstances may act primarily through the nervous or through the vascular system. Among those which act through the nervous system may be instanced the presence or absence of impressions upon the senses, and the presence or absence of excit- ing ideas. Among those which act through the vascular system may be mentioned unnaturally or naturally increased or decreased force or frequency of the heart’s action.”

Dr William A. Hammond and Dr Weir Mitchell have repeated and extended Durham's observations, with the same general results (1866), and more recently Ehrmann, Salathé (1877), Frangois Franck (1877), and Mosso (1881), by more refined methods of observation, have arrived at the same general conclusions.

the circulation during sleep. He made observations on three persons who had lost a portion of the cranial vault and in whom there was a soft pulsating cicatrix. They were a woman of thirty-seven years of age, a man of thirty-seven years, and a child of about twelve years. By special arrangements, Mosso took simultaneous tracings of the pulse at the wrist, of the beat of the heart, of the movements of the wall of the chest in respiration, and of the movements of the denuded brain. Further, by means of the plethysmograph,—an instrument of Mosso's own in- vention,—he obtained tracings showing changes in the volume of the hand and forearm; and he succeeded in showing that during sleep there is a diminished amount

A careful experimental re- Durham's search was conducted by Arthur E. Durham in 1860, in observa- which he trephined a portion of bone as large as a shilling ™*

Mosso in particular has Mosso's applied with great success the graphic method of registra- experi- tion to the study of the movements of the brain and of ments.

of blood in the brain, and at the same time an increased amount in the extremities. He showed further that there are frequent adjustments in the distribution of the blood, even during sleep. Thus a strong stimulus to the skin or to a sense organ—but not strong enough to awaken the sleeper—caused a contraction of the vessels of the fore- arm, an increase of blood pressure, and a determination of blood towards the brain; and, on the other hand, on suddenly awakening the sleeper, there was a contraction of the vessels of the brain, a general rise of pressure, and an accelerated flow of blood through the hemispheres of the brain. §o sensitive is the whole organism in this respect, even during sleep, that a loudly spoken word, a sound, a touch, the action of light, or any moderate sensory impression

modified the rhythm of respiration, determined a contraction of the vessels of the forearm, increased the general pressure of the blood, caused an in- creased flow to the brain, and quickened the frequency of the beats of the heart. These observations show how a physiological explanation can be suggested of the influ- ence of external impressions in modifying the dreams of a sleeper. Further, Mosso found that during very pro- found sleep these oscillations disappear : the pulsatory movements are uniform and are not affected by sensory impressions, and probably this condition exists when there *s the absolute unconsciousness of a “dead” sleep. By such methods as have been employed by Mosso, three movements of the brain have been observed,—(1) pulsa- tions, corresponding to the beats of the heart ; (2) oscilla- tions, or longer waves, sometimes coinciding with the heart beats, or more generally consisting of longer festoons, carrying each a number of smaller waves, and believed to correspond generally to the respiratory movements ; and (3) undulations, still longer and less marked elevations and depressions, first clearly observed by Mosso, and believed by him to indicate rhythmic contractions of the vessels of the pia mater and of the brain. This view is in keeping with the observations of Donders, Kussmaul, Tenner, and others on changes of calibre observed in the cerebral vessels, and with the experiments of many physio- logists, showing that the vessels of the pia mater, like other vessels, are controlled by the vaso-motor system of nerves (see Puysrotoay, ‘‘ Nervous System”). It may therefore be considered certain that during sleep there is an anemia, or partially bloodless condition, of the brain, and that the blood is drawn off to other organs, whilst at the same time this anzmic condition may be modified by changes in the circulation or in the respiratory mechanism caused by posi- tion, by sensory impressions, or by sudden changes in the state of repose of the muscles. The examination of the retina (which may be regarded as a cerebral outwork) by the ophthalmoscope during sleep also shows a compara- tively bloodless condition. Such are the facts; the de- ficiency in the way of a theoretical explanation is that physiologists cannot satisfactorily account for the anemic condition causing unconsciousness. Sudden heemorrhage from the brain and nerve-centres, or a sudden cessation of the supply of blood to the brain, as occurs in syncope (failure of the heart’s action,—a faint), no doubt causes unconsciousness, but in these circumstances there 1s a tendency to convulsive spasm. Such spasm is usually absent in sleep, but sudden jerks of the limbs may some- times be

observed during the time when there is the con- fusion of ideas preceding the passage into sleep.

During sleep the amount of carbonic acid eliminated is very much reduced, indicating that molecular changes in the tissues do not occur to the same extent as in the wak- ing state. This is also shown by the fact that less heat is produced. Helmholtz states that the amount of heat pro- duced by a man weighing 67 kilogrammes (14774 Ib) is

about 40 calories per hour during sleep, as against 112 calories per hour while awake. This diminished production of heat may be largely accounted for by the quiet condition of the muscles of locomotion, but it also indicates dimi- nished tissue changes throughout the body. In profound sleep the bodily temperature may fall from °6° to 2° Fahr, In consequence of diminished oxidation changes during sleep, it is not improbable that excess of nutrient matter may then be stored up in the form of fat, and that thus the proverb ‘‘ He who sleeps dines” is based on a correct appreciation of the fact that sleep tends to produce plethora or obesity.

Whilst it is easy to state that sleep is caused by fatigue Theorie of the nervous system, it is a more difficult matter to ex- 4s to plain what the precise changes are that produce the state |)” of of unconsciousness. Various hypotheses have been ade vanced, but it cannot be said that any one is wholly satis. ” factory. Aware that the fatigue of muscle is associated | with the accumulation of sarcolactic acid, Preyer surmised that the activity of nervous matter might be interfered with by the accumulation in the nerve-centres of some such acid, or of its soda salt (lactate of soda), but this view has not been supported by the results of experiment, as the injection into the blood of a dose of lactate of soda has not produced sleep. Pfliiger has observed that frogs de- prived for a considerable time of oxygen passed gradually into a state resembling profound sleep, and he has advanced the theory that there is no organ of the body so quickly affected by deprivation of oxygen as the brain. According to Pfliiger, the phenomena of life depend on a dissociation of living matter, and in particular the activity of the cere- bral substance connected with psychical states depends on dissociation changes in the grey matter. To excite the dissociation, however, oxygen is

necessary. The oxygen unites with certain of the compounds set free by the dis- sociation, forming, amongst other substances, carbonic acid. If such matters as these that unite with oxygen are in sufficient amount to use up all the oxygen, the grey matter of the brain suffers from a deficiency of oxygen (or from its absence), and also from the accumulation of carbonic acid, According to such a theory, cerebral activity depends on cerebral respiration, and sleep is @ kind of cerebral asphyxia. Some such condition is not improbable, but it must be stated that the evidence at present in support of it is meagre. Possibly, in attempt ing to account for the phenomenon of sleep, too much im- portance has been attributed to the changes occurring in the brain, forgetting that not merely brain matter but every tissue of the body becomes exhausted by work, and that sleep may be partly due to phenomena oceurring through- out the body and not in the brain alone. Some more comprehensive hypothesis than any yet advanced may be possible when the condition of all the functions during sleep has been more thoroughly investigated.

All the phenomena of sleep point toa diminished ex- citability of the cerebral nerve-centres and of the spinal cord. Contrary to what is often stated, there can be no doubt that reflex action is in partial abeyance and that the spinal cord is in a state of partial inactivity as well as the brain, The only nerve-centres that do not sleep are those absolutely essential to life, such as those connected with the heart, with respiratory movements, and with the dis- tribution of blood by the vaso-motor arrangements ; and Mosso’s experiments indicate that even these have a certain amount of repose in profound sleep.

There is little doubt that all living beings require periods Sle of repose alternating with periods of activity. Many anil plants close their flowers and bend their petioles at certain times of the day. These phenomena, called “ the sleep of plants,” depend apparently on changes in solar radiation,

aq

2. ee

and there is no reason to believe that during the time of quiescence any reparative processes go on, as during the sleeping period of animals. ‘

Naturalists have observed many of the lower animals apparently in a state of sleep. Insects, crustaceans, fishes, reptiles, may all be observed occasionally to be almost motionless for considerable periods of time. The sleeping of birds is familiar to all, and in these there are anatomical arrangements by which the bird may, like the crane, sleep perched on one leg, or grasping a branch with both feet, like perching birds generally, without any muscular effort and consequently without fatigue.

The amount of sleep required by man varies according

vant : | tep to age, sex, and habit. The popular notion that a child eqgred sleeps half its time, an adult one-third, whilst an old person

ye” may do little except eat and sleep is not far wrong. In

early life the cerebral faculties appear to be easily exhausted and during the frequent and prolonged sleeps of infancy the brain rests and the vegetative changes connected with nutrition and growth go on actively. As life advances, less sleep is required, until in adult life a period of seven or eight hours is sufficient. As arule, women require more sleep than men ; but much depends on habit. Thus most women bear the loss of sleep in the first instance better than men, because they have been accustomed more to loss or irregularity of sleep. The effect of habit is well seen in nurses, both male and female, who will often be able to work for weeks continuously with snatches of sleep, not amounting to more than two or three hours daily. Sooner or later, however, even in these cases nature asserts her demands, and prolonged sleep is necessary to maintain health and vigour.

Injonia, Wakefulness during the time when one ought to be asleep is frequently a distressing condition, undermining the strength and incapacitating for active and efficient work. Insomnia or sleepless- ness often afflicts those of active mental habits and lays the founda- tion of premature decay. From what has been stated as to the cause of sleep it is evident that whatever tends to augment unduly the circulation through the brain may cause wakefulness, Thus long-continued or excessive intellectual action, or any powerful emotion, may be injurious. Moderate intellectual work is favourable tosleep. The remedy,in such cases is to avoid as far as possible the exciting causes or todcounteract them by bodily exercise and attention to

the general health. When sleeplessness overtakes a brain-worker it is a sure indication that less intellectual work must he done, and that he ought to betake himsclf, if possible, to out- of-door exercise in the pure air of the country. It is dangerous to persist, and still more to induce sleep artificially by drugs, as the overworked organ may become the seat of permanent disease or pernicious habits may be formed. The posture of the body in bed may influence sleep. Thus such positions as impede the flow of blood from the brain without affecting the supply of blood to it by the arteries may cause sleeplessness. Sometimes in cases of insomnia from excessive mental work there is the distressing con- dition that sleep disappears when the person lies down in bed, although before fing down he felt drowsy. In such a case resting with the head high may produce the desired result. Insomnia may also be caused by various functional discases, whereby the amount of blood in the brain is increased. Thus in young females derangement of the menstrual functions may cause a hyperesthesia or Increased sensibility to such an extent that the sufferer cannot sleep, or, if sleep be obtained, it is so light as to be dispelled by Weak sensory impressions that would fail to arouse a healthy person. i, an irregular or defieient action of the heart may cause wake- fulness, especially if associated with coldness of the extremities. In such cases the application of heat to the feet and attention to the digestive organs may produce refreshing sleep. Lastly, the excessive use of various drugs, such as alcohol, opium, belladonna,) Indian hemp, tea, and coffee, may cause sleeplessness. In these cases a moderate dose usually acts as a hypnotic, whilst frequently | repeated doses have the reverse effect. Thus sleeplessness is one

of the most distressing symptoms of delirium tremens, and it occurs | also in those in the habit of indulging in opium, morphia, chloral,) orIndian hemp. The general correetives of sleeplessness are active

Work, a moderate amount of bodily exercise, freedom from worry | a anxiety, the use of the warm bath in some cases to allay irri-) ability before going to bed, and such a posture in bed as the indi- |

ee has found in his own case to be favourable. Sometimes a ight but nutritious meal about an hour before retiring may con-

© LE EH P

duce to sleep, but as a rule late suppers are unfavourable. The use of drugs should be indulged in only with medical adviee. It is not too much to say that the injudicious use of bromide of potassium, chloral, opium, morphia, and stimulants by literary persons to procure sleep has often been productive of sad results, such as shattered health, an incurable habit of self-indulgence, and even accidental death (see Hammond, On Wakefulness).

It is a matter of common observation not only that certain per- Hyp- sons require more sleep than others but that they have less power nosia. of resisting its onset and of awaking. This condition may become morbid, constituting a veritable nervous disease, to whieh the name ‘‘maladie du sommeil” or hypnosia may be given. It may be described as invincible sleep, and it may continue for weeks and for months, terminating in convulsive seizures, and even death. A persistent drooping of the upper eyelid has been observed even during waking hours. Dr W. Ogle has observed in such cases an engorgement of the cervical ganglia of the sympathetic; but this may have nothing to do with the condition. Cases of very pro- longed sleep are not uncommon, especially amongst hysterical females, lasting four, seven, or ten days. On awaking the patient is exhausted and pale, with cold extremities, and not unfrequently, after a brief interval of waking, passes off into another lethargic sleep. Something similar to this may be seen in very aged persons towards the close of life.

Dreams (cf. DREAM, vol. vii. p. 452 sq.) only occur when sleep is Dream- light, and they indicate that consciousness is still continued. The ing. characteristic feature of dreaming is that the mind has no control over the groups of images that crowd upon it. These images are either revivals of old sensory impressions that have been stored up in the brain or they are the result of an untrammelled imagination. The will has lost the power of direction and control ; ideas, often grotesque, always confused, rise apparently spontaneously, are vivid for an instant, and then disappear. Dreaming may be described as a kind of physiological delirium. A consideration of the state in- dieates that the cerebral hemispheres are partially active and that itis the inhibitory power that is deficient (see

PaysioLoey, “Nervous System”). A further explanation cannot be given in the present state of our knowledge of cerebral physiology, but some of the more evident conditions or laws of the dreaming state may be indicated. (1) The character of dreams is often determined by a predominant thought or train of ideas that has occupied the mind before going to sleep. Thus the events of the preceding day may produce a particular kind of dream, and not unfrequently when a person attempts on waking to unravel his dream he may find the conuect- ing thread in an oecurrence or in a conversation or in the thoughts suggested by a book on the previous day. It would thus seem that the memory of recent things (and physiologieally there must be an organic basis for memory) may revivify old and apparently forgotten impressions, (2) In dreaming, the train of thought may be influenced by impressions made on the senses of the sleeper, sufficiently intense to produce this result, but not intense enough to awake him. Thus a sudden sensory impression, such as a loud sound, a current of cold air, a restrained position of one of the limbs, a word or sentence uttered by a familiar voice, may arouse a dream or turn the disordered throng of fancies in a new direction. In some instances, the dreamer is peculiarly susceptible to such external impressions, so that the same stimulus will always give rise to the same kind of dream. (3) It has frequently been observed that in dreaming there may be memories of old impressions, scenes, faces, words, that have long since faded from the recollection during waking hours, showing that many impressions that are supposed to be lost are only forgotten and require but the appropriate stimulus to cause them to start vividly into mental life. (4) In rare in- stances there may be conseeutive thought in dreams, so that the dreamer may write verse, frame speeches, or even work out mathe- inatical problems. Most persons have had experience of this strange kind of power and have regretted, in the partially conscious state before awaking, that they could not preserve some of the results, feeling assured that the sober reality of waking life would dispel the vision. (5) Dreams make only a feeble impression on the memory, so that on awaking what is at first vivid and distinct fades insensibly and rapidly away. This may be accounted for by the evanescent character of the mental ‘‘stuif” of dreams. In the waking state an act of attention is required to fix anything in the memory, and, as this is absent in dreaming, the impressions do not leave a permanent effect. For this reason also in dreams we have no memory of former dreams. (6) All have observed that there is no feeling of time or of space in dreams. We

live in an ideal world. This probably arises from the absence of fixity of thought, so that there is no apparent connexion between the successive pictures of the imagination. (7) In some dreams the activity of the cerebrum is such that the train of thoughts prompts to movement, and the sleeper may be heard muttering in his sleep or tossing the arms or inaking gestures. There are gradations between this condition of a ‘‘ troubled” dream and that of true somnambulism.

Somnambulism.—Some persons rise during sleep, walk about, Somnam- apparently unconscious of all external impressions, after a time bulism.

return to bed, and when they are awake they have no recollection of any of these occurrences. Sometimes the actions performed are of a complicated character and bear some relation to the daily life of the sleeper. Thus a cook has been known to rise out of bed, carry a pitcher to a well in the garden, fill it, go back to the house, fill various vessels carefully and without, spilling a drop of water, then return to bed, and have no recollection of what had transpired. Again, somnambulists have been observed to write letters or reports, execute drawings, and play upon musical instruments. Frequently they have gone along dangerous paths, executing delicate move- ments with precision. Four types of somnambulist may be noticed,—(1) those who speak without acting, a common variety often observed in children and not usually considered somnam- bulistic ; (2) those who act without speaking, also well known and the most common type; (8) those who both act and speak, more exceptional ; and (4) those who both act and speak and who have not merely the sense of touch active but also the senses of sight and hearing. ‘The fourth class is the most extreme type and merges into the physiological condition of mesmerism or hypnotism. This peculiar condition has already been fully described under animal magnetism (see MAGNETISM, AwntMaz), and it is necessary here only to notice it in connexion with the subject of sleep. Many observa- tions indicate that, at all events in some cases, the somnambulist, engaged, for example, in writing, has a mental picture of the page before him and of the words he has written. He does not see what he really writes. This has been proved by causing persons to write on a sheet of paper lying on the top of other sheets. After

he has been allowed to write a few sentences, the sheet was carefully with-drawn and he continued his writing on the next sheet, beginning on the new sheet at the corresponding point where he left off on the first one. Moreover, the somnambulist, by force of habit, stroked t's and dotted i's at the exact places where the t's and i's would have becn had he written continuously on one sheet, showing that what he was conscious of was not what was before him but the mental picture of what he had done.

The following table, modified from two such tables given by Ball and Chambard in their exhaustive article ''Somnambulisme " in the Dictionnaire Encylopédique des Sciences Médicales, shows the relation of the various intermediate conditions of sleeping and awaking and of the dreaming and somnambulistic states. The horizontal stroke indicates the presence of the condition the name of which heads the column :—

- | Power of

co Conscious- ae pore ife. ness. 5 4 and Sen- Faculties. | Faculties. sibility.

a

Normal waking state Sleep, Ist degree…....- » z2ddegree…....- », 93d degree Deep sleep

Waking, 1st degree

» 2d degree (speci- ally dreaming state) .. 2… 38d degree \Complete waking \Dreaming state Ordinary somnambulism —(2) above 'Profound somnambulism (perfect unconscious- MIESS), oe eiceens oe wise vee Somnambulistic dream (movements in a dream)

—

Bi

HI

PvHNL VLA

| | |

ee

The somnambulist acts his dream. His condition is that of a vivid dream in which the cerebrum is so active as to influence centres usually concerned in voluntary movements. Under the dominant idea he executes the movements that this idea would naturally excite in the waking state. Many of his movements are in a sense purposive ; his eyes may be shut so that the movements are executed in the dark, or the eyes may be open so that there is a picture on the retina that may awaken no consciousness, and yet may, by reflex mechanisms, be the starting-point of definite and deliberate movements. In many cases he does not hear, the audi- tory centres not responding; but in others suggestive words may alter the current of his dream and lead him to perform other actions than what he intended to do. On awaking there is either no memory of what has taken place or the dim recollection of a fading dream.

It is important to notice that there is scarcely any action of which a somnambulist may not be capable, and immoral acts from which the individual would shrink in waking hours may be per- formed with indifference. Considering the abrogation of self-con- trol peculiar to the physiological condition, it is evident that no moral responsibility can be attached to such actions. In cases where somnambulistic propensities place a person in danger, an endeavour should be made to induce him to return to bed with- out awaking him; as a rude awakening may produce a serious

shock to the nervous system. Inquiry should then be made into the exciting cause of the somnambulistic dream, such as a particular train of thought, over-excitement, the reading of special books, the recollection of an accident or of a crisis in the person’s history, with the view of removing the cause if possible. It should never be forgotten that somnambulism, like chorea, hysteria, and epilepsy, is the expression of a general morbid predisposition, an indication of a nervous diathesis, requiring careful treatment so as to avoid more dangerous maladies.

Seearticle ‘“Sommeil” inthe Dictionnaire Encyclopédique des Sciences Médicales where a full bibliography is given and where also there is an account of the medico-legal questions connected with sleep and somnambulism; Macnish Physiology of Sleep ; Durham, “‘On the Physiology of Sleep,” in Gay’s Hospital Reports, 1860; Kohlschiitter, ‘“Die Mekanik des Schlafes,” in Z. fi ration, Med., vol. xxxiii., 1869 ; Pfliiger, ‘ Theorie des Schlafes,” in Pfliiger’s Archiv, vol. x., 1875; Mosso, Ueber den Kretslauf des Blutes im menschlichen Gehirn, Leipsic, 1881. As to somnambulism, see the article on the subject in the Dictionnaire

(J. G.M

both for full details and a copious bibliography. . GM. SLEIDANUS, Joun (c. 1506-1556), the annalist of the Reformation, was born at Schleiden (now a small village in the Oleffthal, about 42 miles south-west of Cologne) in 1506 or 1508. Passing from the village school, he studied at Liége, Cologne (?), Louvain (where he became tutor to the son of Count Manderscheid of Schleiden), Paris, and Orleans (where he studied law). In 1536 he became secretary to Cardinal du Bellay, minister of Francis L., and spent five years with him and with his brother Cardinal Guillaume du Bellay. The cardinals Du Bellay belonged to that party among the French nobility who desired on political grounds an alliance betwen the German Protestants and Francis against the emperor Charles V., and who employed the leaders of the Strasburg citizens as inter- mediaries. Sleidanus, whilst among the humanists of Liége, had adopted Protestant opinions, had learned to dis-trust the Romanist policy of Charles V., and was himself a strong supporter on religious and political grounds of the plans of the brothers Du Bellay. Their confidence in him was such that he was sent (1540) to watch the conduct of the French ambassador at Hagenau, and this brought him into personal relation with the German Protestant leaders. Next year Du Bellay sent him to confer with the heads of the Schmalkaldic League, when he found his patron’s ideas unacceptable. Philip of Hesse and the elector of Saxony would make no alliance with a foreign power against the emperor, and distrusted Francis personally because of his persecution of French Protestants. It is possible that this news made Du Bellay feel that he had no further need for his secretary, for we find Sleidanus leading a wandering life for two years, and finally making Strasburg his home, although he still kept

up a political correspondence with France. Sleidanus had been accustomed to copy all docu- ments bearing upon the Reformation to which he had access, and Bucer, who had seen his collection, proposed to | Philip of Hesse to appoint him historian of the Reformation, giving him a salary and access to all necessary documents. After some delay the heads of the Schmalkaldic League agreed to Bucer's proposal, and Sleidanus began his great work and finished the first volume in 1545. In that year he was again recalled to diplomacy and went to England — in a French embassy to Henry VIII. While there he dili- gently collected materials for his history. On his return to Strasburg he was sent by that city as one of its repre- sentatives to the diets of Frankfort and Worms ; and thence he proceeded to Marburg to explore the archives of Philip of Hesse. The Schmalkald War interfered with this work and also prevented the payment of Sleidanus, who in his difficulties applied to England for aid, and at Cranmer's intercession received a yearly pension (not long continued) from Edward VI. In 1551 Sleidanus went to the council of Trent as representative from Strasburg, charged also with full powers to act for the imperial cities Esslingen, Ravensburg, Reutlingen, Biberach, and Lindau. On his return his friends got him appointed professor of law 10 Strasburg, and he was once more able to give his whole | attention to his great work, which he finished for the press

=

in 1554. But want of money, the death of his wife— whom he had married in 1546 on his return from the diet of Frankfort—and other misfortunes compelled him to delay printing. The book at length appeared,—Commen- tariorum de statu religionis et reipublicxe, Carolo V. Cesare, Libri XXVI. (translated into English by John Daws in 1560 and by G. Bohum in 1689). But the troubles of Sleidanus were not ended. The work was too impartial to please any one, and even the gentle Melanchthon was unable to praise it. It remains notwithstanding the most valuable contemporary history of the times of the Refor- mation, and contains the largest collection of important documents. The author died at Strasburg in October 1556 in poverty, and inconsolable since the death of his wife.

See H. Baumgarten, Ueber Sleidanus Leben und Briefwechsel (1878), and Sleidans Briefwechsel (1881).

SLIGO, a maritime county in the north-west of Ireland, in the province of Connaught, is situated between 53° 54’ and 54° 28’ N. lat. and between 8° 10’ and 9° 10’ W. long., and is bounded N. by the Atlantic, E. by Leitrim, 8.E. by Roscommon, and §. and W. by Mayo. The total area is 451,129 acres, or nearly 705 square miles. Its greatest length from north to south, between Mullaghmore Head and Lough Gara, is 38 miles and its greatest breadth from east to west is 41.

The coast-line is very irregular and in some places rises into grand escarpments and terraces. The principal inlets are Killala Bay and Sligo Bay, the latter subdivided into Brown Bay, Drumcliffe Bay, and Ballysadare Bay. Near the coast are the islets of Inishmurray, Coney, and Oyster. Though Sligo cannot be compared for scenery with the western parts of Mayo, it is in many places charmingly picturesque, being well wooded and possessing several fine lakes and rivers, as well as some ranges of hills which from their situation and grouping have a very striking effect. In the north are the limestone elevations of Ben- bulbin (1722 feet) and Knocknarea (1078), contrasting finely with the adjacent rugged gneiss mountains, among which are King’s Mountain (1965 feet) and Gullogherboy (1430). In the west are the ranges of the Sheve Gamph and Ox Mountains, 1300 and 1600 feet respectively. The Curlew Mountains (nearly 900 feet high) separate Sligo from Roscommon. The principal rivers are the Moy, form- ing for a part of its course the boundary with Mayo, and flowing south-westwards and then northwards into Killala Bay ; the Easky, flowing northwards from Lough Easky ; the Ballysadare, with its branches the Owenmore, Owenbeg, and Arrow or Unshin; and the Garvogue, flowing from Lough Gill. Except the finely situated Lough Gill (3130 acres) extending into Leitrim, Lough Arrow (3010), and Lough Gara (3683), none of the lakes have so large an area as 400 acres.

The Carboniferous Mountain Limestone forms the basis of a great part of the county, and includes the Lower Limestone calp or black shale series and the Upper Limestone, which rises occasionally into a lofty tableland. There is a small tract of Yellow Limestone in the extreme north, as also on the

north and north-east of Lough Gara, whence it extends into Mayo. The Old Red Sandstone appears m two masses near Lough Arrow. A small tract of granite enters the county on the south-west, coming from between Lough Conn and Foxford in Mayo, giving place to a broad belt of trap porphyry bounded by a narrow fringe of Old Red Sandstone, which stretches ma north-easterly direction along the line of the Ox Mountains to Ballysadare Bay. Iron is abundant, especially in the neighbour- hood of the Ox Mountains, but from want of fuel is not worked. Pure copper is found in the beds of some of the rivers, and sulphate ol copper and iron pyrites occur in some places.

Agricultwre.—There is considerable variety both in the character of the soil and in the agricultural advancement in different parts a the county. In some parts it is a light sandy loam resting on a

teestone bottom, and in the lower districts a rich and deep mould prevails resting on a substratum of liniestone. Owing to the

moistness of the climate cattle feeding is found to be the most Temunerative method of farming. Out of a total of 451,129 acres

231,758 or 51:3 per cent. in 1884 were under grass, 86,365 under crops, 38,431 bog and marsh, 70,599 barren mountain land, 7577 woods and plantations, and 417 fallow, the remaining 15,987 acres being under water, roads, fences, &c. The total number of hold- ings was 15,352, there being 752 under 1 acre, 1448 between 1 and 5 acres each in extent, 5834 between 5 and 15, 4592 between 15 and 30, 1520 between 30 and 50, and 1211 of 100 acres and upwards. The total area under corn crops in 1884 was 24,324 acres, while in 1875 it was 30,810; under green crops 25,897, in 1875 30,491 ; under meadow and clover 36,120, in 1875 32,396 ; and under flax 24, in 1875 175,—the total area under tillage having decreased between 1875 and 1884 from 93,872 to 86,365 acres. Of the corn crops in 1884 oats occupied 23,055 acres, and green crops and potatoes 19,835. The number of horses between 1875 and 1884 increased from 7244 to 8292, of asses from 7588 to 8471; cattle decreased from 97,658 to 89,458, sheep from 65,857 to 64,824; pigs, again, increased from 19,726 to 26,996, goats from 8081 to

4745, and poultry from 277,118 to 305,509. According to the Jandowners return Sligo was divided among 856 proprietors, possessing 448,397 acres at an annual value of £210,382, or about 9s. 44d. per acre. The principal proprietors were Colonel E. H. Cooper, 34,120 acres; Sir Robert Gore Booth, 31,774; Charles W. O'Hara, 21,070; W. R. O. Gore, 21,019 ; Owen Wynne, 12,982; Colonel King-Harman, 12,629 ; Hon. Evelyn Ashley, 12,426 ; and William Phibbs, 10,507.

Manufactures and other Industries. —Coarse woollens and linens are manufactured for home consumption, and there are tanneries, distilleries, and breweries in the principal towns. A considerable general trade is carried on at the ports of Ballina (on the Moy) and Sligo. The fisheries on the coast are valuable, and there are im- portant salmon fisheries at the mouths of the rivers.

Administration and Population.—The county is divided into 6 baronies, and contains 37 parishes and 4 parts of parishes, and 1292 townlands. The county has three poor-law unions—Dromore West, Sligo, and Tobereurry—with parts of the unions of Ballina and Boyle (Roscommon). Itis in the Connaught circuit, and assizes are held at Sligo and quarter sessions at Ballymote, Easky, and Sligo. Itis in the Dublin military district, and there are barracks at Sligo. For parliamentary representation the county has since 1885 formed two divisions (North and South), each returning a member. Between 1841 and 1851 the population decreascd from 180,886 to 128,515 or 29 per cent., and by 1881 it had decreased to 111,578 (55,144 males, 56,484 females), or 38°3 per cent. since 1841. In 1881 the number of persons who could read and write was 52,602, who could read only 15,574, who could neither read nor write 43,402. There were 2326 who could speak Irish only, while 24,263 could speak Irish and English, There were 10 superior schools with 266 pupils, of whom 142 were Catholics and 124 Pro- testants, and 211 primary schools with 13,714 pupils, of whom 12,070 were Catholics and 1644 Protestants. The principal towns are Sligo (population 10,808 in 1881), Ballina (1442 in Sligo and 4318 in Mayo), Ballymote (1145), and Tobercurry (1081).

History and Antiquities.—In the time of Ptolemy the district was inhabited by the Nagnatx, the capital Nagnata being some- where near the site of the

present town of Sligo. Afterwards it was possessed bya branch of the O'Connors, called O'Connor Sligo. On the landing of Henry II. it gradually fell into the power of the De Burgos. The district formed part of Connaught, which, in the reign of Elizabeth, was divided into seven counties. On the lands of Carrowmore, between Sligo and Ballysadare, there is a remarkable collection of Druidical remains, consisting of cairns, a circle, cromlechs, and pillar stones. At Drumceliffe is the only round tower now remaining in the county, and a beautiful Celtic cross 18 feet in height. The principal monastic ruins are the abbey of St Fechan at Ballysadare, with an ancient church displaying some curious architecture of the 11th or 12th century ;. the remarkable group of buildings on Inishmurray ; and the abbey of Sligo, noticed under the town below. There are a considerable number of old castles, but none of special interest.

SLIGO, the chief town of the above county and an important seaport, is finely situated at the mouth of the Garvogue, near Lough Gill, 137 miles north-west of Dublin by rail. The town is rather irregularly built and has a decayed appearance, which somewhat belies its actual pros- perity. Formerly it was fortified by a castle and walls, but of these there are now no remains. The abbey, founded in 1252 by Maurice Fitzgerald, lord-justice, is one of the finest monastic ruins in Ireland. It was partly destroyed by fire in 1414 and again in 1642. Within recent years measures have been taken to preserve it. Three sides of the cloister of the quadrangle still remain, and the lofty quadrangular tower at the junction of the nave and chancel is entire. The eastern window, still very perfect, is of the date of the original structure. The

principal modern buildings are the new Catholic cathedral, in the Norman style with a finely sculptured doorway, the town-hall (1865-66), the county court-house, the cus- tom-house, the lunatic asylum, and the barracks. The quays are commodious, and steamers ply to and fro be- tween Sligo and Glasgow, Liverpool, and Londonderry,— the principal exports being cattle, fowls, eggs, and butter, and the imports coal, iron, timber, and provisions, The port is under the control of harbour commissioners. There is an

important butter-market, and maize, flour, and corn mills. The population in 1861 was 10,693, and in 1881 it was 10,808.

A castle was built at Sligo by Maurice Fitzgerald in 1242, which in 1270 was taken and destroyed by O'Donnell; in 1310 it was rebuilt by Richard, ear] of Ulster, and was again partly destroyed in 1369 and 1394. Early in the reign of James I. the town received a market and two annual fairs; in 1613 it was incorporated and received the privileges of a borough ; and in 1621 it received a charter of the staple. In 1641 it was besieged by the Parliament- ary forces under Sir Charles Coote, but was afterwards evacuated, and occupied by the Royalists till the termination of the war. In 1688 it declared in favour of James II., and, after being captured by the Enniskilleners, was retaken by General Sarsfield, but ulti- mately surrendered to the earl of Granard. The borough was dis- franchised in 1870. .

SLIVEN, Suivno, SeLrmnta, Istemnive, or IsLIMYE, an important town of East Roumelia, situated at the southern base of the Balkans, 750 feet above the sea, where several mountain streams flow south to the Tunja, a tributary of the Maritza. The luxuriant foliage of its trees and the general picturesqueness of its appearance gain in effect by the contrast which they present with the bare gneiss and porphyry summits that rise immediately to the north. On the south it is surrounded by orchards, gardens, and extensive mulberry plantations. Besides a large number of mosques, the public buildings comprise a synagogue and four Christian churches; but there is nothing of much architectural interest in the town, A Government factory for the manufacture of military cloth- ing was established in 1834 ; there isa good silk industry ; and Sliven red wine is famous. The population (Turks, Bulgarians, Armenians, Greeks, Jews, and Gipsies) was 22,000 in 1872.

Sliven, the Stlifanos of the Byzantine writers, owes a good deal of its importance to its strategical position on one of the trans-Balkan highways to Adrianople and the south. In early times, when it was a subject of dispute between Byzantium and Bulgaria, it generally followed the fate of Aidos and Mesembria (Misivri). After its capture by the Turks (1388) it was one of the "' voinik" towns which remained exempt from taxes and were allowed to elect their own voivode ; but those privileges were lost in the

16th cen- tury. On 12th August 1829 Sliven was occupied by the Russian army under Riidiger and Gortchakoff.

SLOANE, Sir Hans (1660-1753), a celebrated collector and successful physician, was born on 16th April 1660 at Killileagh in county Down, Ireland, where his father had settled at the head of a Scotch colony sent over by James I. He had as a youth a strong turn for collecting objects of natural history and other curiosities. This led him to the study of medicine, which he went to London to pursue, directing his attention assiduously to botany, materia medica, and pharmacy. His collecting propensities made him useful to the more philosophically minded Ray and Boyle, and procured him their patronage. After four years in London he travelled through France, spending some time at Paris and Montpellier, and taking his M.D. degree at the university of Orange. He returned to London with a considerable collection of plants and other curiosities, of which the former were sent to Ray and uti- lized by him for his History of Plants. Sloane was quickly elected into the Royal Society, and at the same time he had the good fortune to attract the notice of Sydenham, who took a fancy to him and gave him valuable introduc- tions to practice. In 1687 he became fellow of the College

of Physicians, and took the opportunity of proceeding to Jamaica the same year as physician in the suite of the duke of Albemarle. The duke died soon after landing, and Sloane’s visit lasted only fifteen months; but during that time he got together about 800 new species of plants, the island being at the time virgin ground to the botanist. Of these he published an elaborate catalogue in Latin; and at a later date (1707-25) he made the experiences of his visit the subject of two sumptuous folio volumes. His merits as a collector were sufficient to give him a high place in the scientific circles of the time. He became secre- tary to the Royal Society in 1693, and edited its T’rans- actions for twenty years. His practice as a physician among the upper classes was large and lucrative ; he is said to have inspired the members of the court and aristo- cracy with the “greatest confidence in his prescriptions,” In the pamphlets written concerning Dr Cockburn’s sale of a secret remedy for dysentery and other fluxes, it was stated for the defence

that Sloane himself did not disdain the same kind of professional conduct ; and there is some colour given to that charge by the fact that his only medical piece, an Account of a Medicine for Soreness, Weakness, and other Distempers of the Eyes (London, 1745) was not given to the world until its author was in his eighty-fifth year, and had retired from practice.

On the accession of George I. Sloane was made physician- general to the army, and in 1716 was created a baronet, being the first medical practitioner to receive an hereditary title. In 1719 he became president of the College of Phy- sicians, and held the office sixteen years. In 1727 he suc- ceeded Sir Isaac Newton in the presidential chair of the Royal Society ; he retired from it at the age of eighty, “much against the inclination of that respectable body, who chose Martin Folkes to succeed him, and in a public assembly thanked him for the great and eminent services which he had rendered them.” Sloane’s memory survives more by his judicious investments than by anything that he contributed to the subject-matter of natural science or even of his own profession ; his name is absolutely unknown in the history of medicine, and his services to botany were such as, in the nature of things, would be soon forgotten. But his purchase of the manor of Chelsea has perpetuated his memory in the name of a “place,” a street, and a square, His great stroke as a collector was to acquire (by bequest, conditional on paying off certain debts) in 1701 the cabinet of William Courten, who had made collecting the business of his life. When Sloane retired from active work in 1741 his library and cabinet of curiosities, which he took with him from Bloomsbury to his house in Chelsea, had grown to be very extensive and of unique value. On his. death on 11th January 1753 he bequeathed his books, manu- scripts, prints, drawings, pictures, medals, coins, seals, cameos, and other curiosities to the nation, on condition that parliament should pay to his executors £20,000, which was a good deal less than the value of the collection. The

same year, and the collection, together with George IL’ royal library, &c., was opened to the public at Bloomsbury as the British Museum in 1759. benevolence or munificence may be mentioned his gift to the Apothecaries’ Company of the freehold of the botanical or physic garden, which they had rented from the Chelsea estate since 1673, also his help in starting the foundling hospital. Sloane is described as having been a man of con-

siderable presence and of courtly address. See Weld, History of the Royal Society, i. 450 (London, 1848) ; and Munk, Roll of the College of Physicians, 2d ed., i. 466 (Lon- don, 1878).

SLODTZ, Runit Micwen or Micuen Anos (1715-17 64), French sculptor, was born at Paris on 29th September

bequest was accepted on those terms by an Act passed the |

Among his other acts of |

–

1715. He passed seventeen years of his life at Rome, where he was chosen to execute a statue of St Bruno, one of the best modern works of the ¢lass in St Peter's. He was also the sculptor of the tomb of Marquis Capponi in St John of the Florentines. Other works of his are to be seen at the church of St Louis of France and at Santa Maria della Scala. After his return to France, Slodtz, in conjunction with his brothers Sebastian and Paul, produced many decorative works in the churches of Paris, and, though much has been destroyed, his most considerable achievement—the tomb of Languet de Gergy in St Sul- pice—exists at the present day. He died at Paris on 26th October 1764.

Slodtz had been, like his brothers, a member of the Academy of Painting and Sculpture, and many particulars of his life are pre- served in a memoir written by Cochin, and also ina letter from the same to the Gazette Littéraire, which was reproduced by Castilhon in the Néerologe of 1766. Slodtz's father (1655-1726) was also a sculptor, born at Antwerp; he became a pupil of Girardon and worked mostly under him at Versailles and the Tuileries.

See C. N. Cochin, Mém. inéd., Paris, 1881; Barbet de Jouy, Sculpture moderne du Louvre, Paris, 1856 ; Dussieux, Artistes Francais a VEtranger, Paris, 1852.

SLONIM, a district town of Russia, in the government of Grodno, 105 miles south-east of Grodno and 20 from the railway from Moscow to Warsaw, on the high craggy banks of the Schara. It derives its importance from this river, which is navigable and enters the system of the Oginski Canal connecting the Niemen with the Dnieper. Corn, tar, and especially timber are exported annually toa large amount, which in 1882 reached the value of £20,700. The population was 21,110 in 1883.

Stonim is a very old town, being mentioned in 1040, when Yaroslaff defeated the Lithuanians in its neighbourhood and com- pelled them to acknowledge his rule. In 1241 the Mongols, under Batyi, pillaged it and burned its wooden fort. Owing to its position between Galician Russia and Lithuania, it often changed hands until it was conquered by the Lithuanians in the 14th century. From 1631 to 1685 it was the seat of the Lithuanian seim and became a flourishing city. In the 18th century, under the hetman Oginski, a canal was dug to connect the Schara with the Dnieper. Oginski embellished the city and founded there a printing-office. Russia annexed the town in 1795.

SLOTH. The general characters by which the family Bradypodide are distinguished from the rest of the order Edentata have been given in the article Mammatia (vol. xv. p. 384). The sloths, as the animals of this family are called on account of the habitual sluggishness of their

Two-toed sloth (Cholepus hajfmanni).

Movements, are the most strictly arboreal of all mammals, living entirely among the branches of trees, usually hang- Ing under them, with thcir backs downwards, and clinging

to them with the simple hook-like organs to which the terminations of all their limbs are reduced. When they are obliged from any cause to descend to the ground, which they rarely, if ever, do voluntarily, their limbs, owing to their unequal length and the peculiar conformation of the feet—which allows the animals to rest only on the outer edge—are most inefficient for terrestrial progression, and the sloths crawl along a level surface with

considerable difficulty. Though generally slow and inactive, even when in their natural haunts, they can on occasions travel with considerable rapidity along the branches, and, as they do not leap, ike most other arboreal creatures, they avail themselves of the swaying of the boughs by the wind to pass fromi tree to tree. They feed entirely on leaves and young shoots and fruits, which they gather in their mouth, the fore-limbs aiding in dragging boughs within reach, but not being used as hands, as they are by monkeys, squirrels, &c. When sleeping they roll themselves up in a ball, and, owing to the dry shaggy character of their hair, are very inconspicuous among the mosses and lichens with which the trees of their native forests abound; and the concealment thus afforded is heightened in some species by the peculiar greenish tint of the outer covering,—very uncommon in maminals. This is not due to the colour of the hair itself, but to the presence upon its surface of an alga, the lodgement of which is facilitated by the fluted or rough surface of the exterior of the hair, and the growth of which is promoted by the dampness of the atmosphere in the gloomy tropical forests, as it soon disappears from the hair of animals kept in captivity in England. Sloths are nocturnal, silent, inoffensive, and solitary animals, and produce usually but one young at birth. They appear to show an almost reptilian tenacity of life, surviving the most severe injuries and large doses of poisons, and ex-hibiting longer persistence of irritability of muscular tissue after death than other mammals.

The sloths were all included in the Linnean genus Bradypus, but Illiger very properly separated the species with but two claws on the fore-feet, under the name of Cholwpus, leaving Bradypus for those with three.

Genus Bradypus.—Three-toed sloths. Teeth usually $ on each side ; no tooth projecting greatly beyond the others; the first in the upper jaw much smaller than any of the others; the first in the lower jaw broad and compressed ; the grinding surfaces of all much cupped. Vertebre: C 9, D and L 20 (of which 15 to 17 bear ribs), 8 6, C 11. All the known species present the remark- able peculiarity of possessing nine cervical vertebrae, 7.¢., nine vertebre in front of the one which bears the first thoracic rib (or first rib connected with the sternum, and corresponding in its general relations with the first rib of other mammals); but the ninth, and sometimes the eighth, bears a pair of short movable ribs. The arms or fore-limbs are

considerably longer than the hind legs. The bones of the fore-arm are complete, free, and capable of pronation and supination. The hand is long, very narrow, habit- ually curved, and terminates in three pointed curved claws, in close apposition with each other; they are, in fact, incapable of being divaricated, so that the hand is rednced to the condition of a triple hook, fit only for the function of suspension from the boughs of trees. The foot closely resembles the hand in its general struc- ture and mode of use. The sole is habitually turned inwards and cannot be applied to the ground in walking. The tongue is short and soft, and the stomach large and complex, bearing some resem- blance to that of the ruminating animals. The windpipe or trachea has the remarkable peculiarity among mammals—not unfrequent among birds and reptiles—of being folded on itself before it reaches the lungs. The mamme are two and pectoral in position.

‘‘Ai” is the common name given in books to the three-toed sloths. They were all comprised by Linnzeus under the species Bradypus tridactylus. More recently Dr Gray has described as many as eleven, ranged in two genera, Bradypus and Arctopithecus ; but the distinctions which he assigns both to species and to genera do not bear close examination. Some are covered uniformly with a grey or greyish brown coat ; others have a dark collar of elongated hairs around the shoulders (B. torquatus); some have the hair of the face very much shorter than that of the rest of the head and neck ; and others have a remarkable-looking patch of soft short hair on the back between the shoulders, consisting when best marked of a median stripe of glossy black, bordered on each side by bright

eX = “ar

orange, yellow, or white. There are also structural differences in the skulls, as in the amount of inflation of the pterygoid bones, which indicate real differences of species ; but the materials in our museums are not yet sufficient to correlate these with external characters and geographical distribution. The habits of all are apparently alike. ‘They are natives of Guiana, Brazil, and Peru, and one if not two species (B. infuscatus and B. castaneiceps) extend north of the Isthmus of Panama as far as Nicaragua,

the former of these Dr Seeman says that, though generally silent, a specimen in captivity uttered a shrill sound like a monkey when forcibly pulled away from the tree to which it was holding.?

Genus Cholepus.—Teeth §; the most anterior in both jaws separated by an interval from the others, very large, caniniform, wearing to a sharp, bevelled edge against the opposing tooth, the upper shutting in front of the lower when the mouth is closed, unlike the true canines of heterodont mammals. Vertebre: C 6 or 7, D 23-24, L. 8, 8 7-8, C 4-6. One species (C. didactylus) has the ordinary number of vertebre in the neck ; but an otherwise closely allied form (C. hoffmannt) has but six. The tail is very rudimentary. The hand generally resembles that of Bradypus; but there are only two functional digits, with claws,—those answering to the second and third of the typical pentadactyle manus. The structure of the hind limb generally resembles that of Bradypus, the appellation “two-toed” referring only to the anterior limb, for in the foot the three middle toes are functionally developed and of nearly equal size. C. didactylus, which has been longest known, is commonly called by the native name of Unaw. It inhabits the forests of Brazil. ©. hoffmannt has a more northern geographical range, extending from Ecuador through Panama to Costa Rica. Its voice, which is seldom heard, is like the bleat of a sheep, and if the animal is seized it snorts violently. Both species are very variable in external coloration. (W. H. F.)

SLOUGH, an urban sanitary district of Buckingham- shire, England, is situated on the Great Western Railway, 184 miles west of London and 2 north of Windsor. Within recent years it has largely increased, and it contains a number of good shops and villas. It is supplied with water from artesian wells. The parish church of St Mary, erected 1837, has been recently enlarged, Among other public buildings are the British orphan asylum, the Eton union workhouse, and the reading-room and literary ‘nstitute. Sir William Herschel, the astronomer, resided at Slough, and there constructed his telescope. ike population of the urban sanitary district, which embraces parts of the parishes of Stoke Poges and Upton-cum-Chalvey, in 1871 was 4509, and in 1881 (area, 401 acres) it was 5095.

SLOVAKS. See Siavs.

SLOVENES. See SLAVS.

SLUG. See SNAIL.

SERUTSK, a district town of Russia, in the government of Minsk, situated on the Stutcha river (tributary of the Pripet), 123 miles south of Minsk. This old town is men- tioned in the 12th century as a dependency of Kieff, and, like other towns of the region, was devastated by the Tatars, and later suffered in the wars between Russia and Poland. It is now merely a large village, whose inhabitants are chiefly engaged in agriculture, with a little trade in corn, timber, and wooden wares. The immense marshy and woody tracts of the Polyesie (see Minsk) surround it on all sides, the Stutcha being its chief means of communica- tion. Its population remains almost stationary and was 19,000 in 1883.

SMALLPOX, or VARIoLA (varus, “a pimple”), an acute infectious disease characterized by fever and by the appear- ance on the surface of the body of an eruption, which, after passing through various stages, dries up, leaving more or less distinct cicatrices. Few diseases have been so destruc- tive to human life as smallpox, and it has ever been re- garded with horror alike from its fatality, its loathsome accompaniments and disfiguring effects, and from the fact that no age and condition of life are exempt from liability to its occurrence. Although in most civilized countries its ravages have been greatly limited by the protection

1 Godman and Salvin’s Biologia Centrali-Americana, p. 184.

‘from uncommon, affecting especially those who are un-

protected, or whose protection has become weakened by lapse of time.

Much obscurity surrounds the early history of smallpox, It appears to have been imported into Europe from Asia, where it had been known and recognized from remote antiquity. The earliest accounts of its existence reach back to the middle and end of the 6th century, when it was described by Procopius and Gregory of Tours as occur- ring in epidemic form in

Arabia, Egypt, and the south of Europe. In one of the narratives of the expedition of the Abyssinians against Mecca (c. 550) the usual miraculous details are combined with a notice of smallpox breaking out among the invaders? Not a few authorities, however, regard these accounts as referring not to smallpox but to plague. The most reliable statements as to the early exist- ence of the disease are found in Rhazes (see vol. xv. p, 805), by whom its symptoms were clearly described, its pathology explained by a humoral or fermentation theory, and directions given for its treatment. During the period of the crusades smallpox appears to have spread exten- sively through Europe, and hospitals for its treatment were erected in many countries. But at this period and for centuries afterwards the references to the subject include in all likelihood other diseases, since no precise distinction appears to have been made between the different forms of eruptive fever until a comparatively recent date. Small- pox was known in England as early as the 13th century,

and had probably existed there before. It appears to have been introduced into America shortly after the discovery

of that continent, and there, as in Europe and throughout the known world, destructive epidemics were of frequent

occurrence during succeeding centuries. The only known factor in the origin of smallpox is con- Con | tagion,—this malady being probably the most contagious of tsi”

all diseases. Its outbreak in epidemic form in a locality may frequently be traced to the introduction of a single case from a distance. The most direct means of com- municating smallpox is inoculation (see below). By far the most common cause of conveyance of the disease, however, is contact with the persons or the immediate surroundings of those already affected. The atmosphere around a smallpox patient is charged with the products of the disease, which likewise cling tenaciously to clothing, furniture, &c. The disease is probably communicable from its earliest nianifestations onwards to its close, but it is generally held that the most infectious period extends from the appearance of the eruption till the drying up of the pustules. Smallpox may also readily be communicated by the bodies of those who have died from its effects. No age is exempt from susceptibility to

smallpox. In- fants are occasionally born with the eruption or its marks upon their bodies, proving that they had undergone the disease in utero. Dark-skinned races are said to sufler more readily and severely than whites. One attack of smallpox as a rule confers immunity from any recurrence, but there are numerous exceptions to this rule. Over. crowding and all insanitary surroundings favour the spread of smallpox where it has broken out; but the most in- fluential condition of all is the amount of protection afforded to a community by previous attacks and, especi- ally in the present day, by vaccination. Such protection, although for a time most effectual, tends to become eX- — hausted, unless renewed. Hence in a large population there is always likely to be an increasing number of indi- viduals who have become susceptible to smallpox. This probably explains its occasional and even apparently dukes aan:
ommmmmmammnmnmeiiaiainiemaa sy eee

2 See Nuldeke, Geschichte der Perser.. . aus Tabari (Leyden, 1879), p. 218. Ndéldeke thinks that this notice may be taken from genuine historical tradition, and seems to find an allusion to it in an old poem.

periodic epidemic outbreaks in large centres, and the well-known fact that the most severe cases occur at the commencement,—those least protected being necessarily more liable to be first and most seriously attacked.

While the symptoms of smallpox are essentially the game in character in all cases, they are variously modified according to the form which the disease may assume, there being certain well-marked varieties of this as of most other infectious maladies. The following descrip- tion applies to an average case. After the reception into the system of the smallpox contagion the onset of the symptoms is preceded by a period of incubation, during which the patient may or may not complain. This period is believed to be from about ten to fourteen days. In cases of direct inoculation of the virus it is considerably shorter. The invasion of the symptoms is sudden and severe, in the form of a rigor followed by fever (the primary fever), in which the temperature rises to 103° or 104° Fahr. or higher, notwithstanding that perspiration may be going on. A quick pulse is present, together with thirst and con- stipation, while intense headache accompanied with vomit- ing and pain in the back is among the most characteristic of the initial symptoms. Occasionally the disease is ushered in by convulsions. Some authorities hold that the more violent the invasion the more severe the attack is likely to prove. These symptoms continue with greater or less intensity throughout two entire days, and during their course there may occasionally be noticed on various parts of the body, especially on the lower part of the abdomen and inner sides of the thighs, a diffuse redness accompanied by slight spots of extravasation (petechiz), the appearance somewhat resembling that of scarlet fever. These “prodromal rashes,” as they are termed, appear to be more frequent in some epidemics than in others, and they do not seem to have any special significance. They are probably more frequently seen in cases of thé mildest form of smallpox (varioloid), referred to below. On the third day the characteristic eruption begins to make its appearance. It is almost always first seen on the face, particularly about the forehead and roots of the hair, in the form of a general redness; but upon this surface there may be felt by the finger numerous elevated points more or less thickly set together. The eruption, which is

accompanied by heat and itching, spreads over the face, trunk, and extremities in the course of a few hours,—con- tinuing, however, to come out more abundantly for one or two days. It is always most marked on the exposed parts ; but in such a case as that now described the individual “pocks” are separated from each. other (discrete). On the second or third day after its appearance the eruption undergoes a change,—the pocks becoming vesicles filled with a clear fluid. These vesicles attain to about the size of a pea, and in their centre there is a slight depression, giving the characteristic umbilicated appearance to the pock, The clear contents of these vesicles gradually become turbid, and by the eighth or ninth day they are changed into pustules containing yellow matter, while at the same time they increase still further in size and lose the central depression. Accompanying this change there are great surrounding inflammation and swelling of the skin, which, where the eruption is thickly set, produce much disfigure- ment and render the features unrecognizable, while the affected parts emit an offensive odour, particularly if, as often happens, the pustules break. The eruption is present not only on the skin but on mucous membranes, that of the mouth and throat being affected at an early period ; and the swelling produced here is not only a source of Steat discomfort but even of danger from the obstruction thus occasioned in the upper portion of the air-passages.

€ Voice is hoarse and a copious flow of saliva comes from

and with symptoms of great prostration.

the mouth. The mucous membrane of the nostrils is simi- larly affected, while that of the eyes may also be involved, to the danger of permanent impairment of sight. The febrile symptoms which ushered in the disease undergo marked abatement on the appearance of the eruption on the third day, but on the eighth or ninth, when the vesicles become converted into pustules, there is a return of the fever (secondary or suppurative fever), often to a severe extent, and not unfrequently accompanied by pro- minent nervous phenomena, such as great restlessness, delirium, or coma. On the eleventh or twelfth day the pustules show signs of drying up (desiccation),

and along with this the febrile symptoms decline. Great itching of the skin attends this stage. The scabs produced by

.the dried pustules gradually fall off and a reddish brown

spot remains, which, according to the depth of skin in- volved in the disease, leaves a permanent white depressed scar,—this “pitting” so characteristic of smallpox being specially marked on the face. Convalescence in this form of the disease is as a rule uninterrupted.

There are certain varieties of smallpox depending upon Varieties.

the form it assumes or the intensity of the symptoms. Confluent smallpox (variola confluens), while essentially the same in its general characters as the form already described, differs from it in the much greater severity of all the symptoms even from the onset, and particularly in regard to the eruption, which, instead of showing itself in isolated pocks, appears in large patches run together, giving a blistered aspect to the affected skin. This confluent condi- tion is almost entirely confined to the face, and produces shocking disfigurement, while subsequently deep scars re- main and the hair may be lost. The mucous membranes suffer in a similar degree of severity, and dangerous com- plications may arise from the presence of the disease in the mouth, throat, and eyes. Both the primary and secondary fevers are extremely severe. The mortality is very high, and it is generally estimated that at least 50 per cent. of such cases prove fatal, either from the vio- lence of the disease or from one or other of the numerous complications which are specially apt to attend upon it. Convalescence is apt to be slow and interrupted. Another variety is that in which the eruption assumes the hemor- rhagic form owing to bleeding taking place into the pocks after their formation. This is apt to be accompanied with hemorrhages from various mucous surfaces (particularly in the case of females), occasionally to a dangerous degree Many of such cases prove fatal. A still more serious form is that termed malignant smallpox, in which, as in the malignant forms of other infectious diseases (see MEAsLEs and SCARLET FeEvER), the patient is from the onset overwhelmed with the poison and quickly succumbs,—the rash scarcely, if at all, appearing or showing the hemorrhagic or purpuric character. Such cases are, however, comparatively rare. The term varioloid or modified smallpox is applied to

cases occurring in persons constitutionally but little sus- ceptible to the disease, or in whom the protective influence of vaccination or a previous attack of smallpox still to some extent exists. Cases of this mild kind are of very common occurrence where vaccination has been systematic- ally carried out. As compared with an average case of the unmodified disease as above described, this form is very marked, the differences extending to all the phenomena of the disease. (1) As regards its onset, the initial fever is much milder and the premonitory symptoms altogether less in severity. (2) As regards the eruption, the number of pocks is smaller, often only a few and mostly upon the body. They not unfrequently abort before reaching the stage of suppuration; but should they proceed to this stage the secondary fever is extremely slight or even

Attendant

circum- stances.

Vaccina- tion.

Treat- ment.

absent. There is little or no pitting. (3) As regards com- plications and injurious results, these are rarely seen and the risk to life is insignificant.

Various circumstances affect the mortality in ordinary smallpox and increase the dangers attendant upon it. The character of the epidemic has an important influence. In some outbreaks the type of the disease is much more severe than in others, and the mortality consequently greater. Smallpox is most fatal at the extremes of life, except in the case of vaccinated infants, in whom there is immunity from the disease. Again, any ordinary case with discrete eruption is serious, and a case of confluent or even semi-confluent character is much more grave, while the hemorrhagic variety is frequently and the malignant always fatal. Numerous and often dangerous complica- tions, although liable to arise in all cases, are more apt to occur in the severer forms, and in general at or after the supervention of the secondary fever. The most important are inflammatory affections of the respiratory

organs, such as bronchitis, pleurisy, or pneumonia, diphtheritic condi- tions of the throat, and swelling of the mucous membrane of the larynx and trachea. Destructive ulceration affect- ing the eyes or ears are well-known and formidable dan- gers, while various affections of the skin, in the form of erysipelas, abscess, or carbuncles, are of not infrequent occurrence. Persons of enfeebled health, and those whose constitutions are impaired by intemperance, readily suc- cumb to attacks of smallpox, even of comparatively mild character, as do also pregnant women, to whom this dis- ease is peculiarly dangerous.

The most important of all the conditions tending to affect the mortality from smallpox, alike in the individual and the community, is the protection afforded by VaccINna- TION (q.v.). During the first decade of life, if vaccination has been fully and successfully accomplished in infancy, the risk of death from smallpox is nz; but, should the disease be caught—which is improbable—it will in all likelihood show itself in the mild form of varioloid. As regards revaccination, it has been found in all smallpox hospitals that the attendants and nurses escape the disease when revaccinated. In the experience of the late he Waller Lewis in the case of an average of 10,504 persons permanently employed in the General Post Office, London, all of whom had to be revaccinated on admission, it was proved that in the ten years 1870-79 not a single fatal case of smallpox occurred, and only ten mild cases were seen during a period embracing two epidemics.

Treatment.—The treatment of smallpox is conducted upon the same general principles as that for the other infectious diseases (see CHOLERA, DipHTHERIA, MEASLES, Scartet Frver). The establishment of smallpox hospitals separated as far as possible from populous localities, and the prompt removal of cases of the disease where practi- cable, as well as the diligent prosecution of vaccination and revaccination, are among the first requirements. The plan ‘ntroduced into several large towns of compulsory notifica- tion of infectious diseases has much to recommend it. The special treatment applicable to a person suffering from smallpox includes in the first place the providing competent nurses, who, together with all others in the neighbourhood of the patient, should be duly protected by recent vaccina- tion. The patient should lie on a soft bed in a well-venti- lated but

somewhat darkened room and be fed with the lighter forms of nutriment, such as milk, soups, &. The skin should be sponged occasionally with tepid water, and the mouth and throat washed with a solution of chlorate of potash, Condy's fluid, or other safe disinfectant. Ina severe case, with evidence of much prostration, stimulants may be advantageously employed. The patient should be always carefully watched, and special vigilance is called

for where delirium exists.

This symptom may sometimes be lessened by sedatives, such as opium, the bromides or chloral. With the view of preventing pitting many applications have been proposed, but probably the best are cold or tepid compresses of light weight kept constantly – applied over the face and eyes. The water out of which these are wrung may be a weak solution of carbolic or boracic acid. When the pustules have dried up the itching this produces may be much relieved by the application of oil or vaseline. Complications are to be dealt with as they arise and the severer forms of the disease treated in reference to the special symptoms presented. In cases where the eruption is tardy of appearing and the attack threatens to assume the malignant form, the writer has seen marked benefit attend the use of the wet pack. Disinfectants should be abundantly employed in the room and its vicinity, and all clothing, &c., in contact with the patient should be burnt.

Inoculation.—Previous to the introduction of vaccination Tno-u! the method of preventive treatment by what was known tion. as inoculation had been employed. This consisted in in- troducing into the system—in a similar way to the method now commonly employed in vaccination—the smallpox virus from a mild case with the view of reproducing the disease also in a mild form in the person inoculated, and thus affording him protection from further attack. This plan had apparently been resorted to by Eastern nations from an early period in the history of the disease. It was known to be extensively practised in Turkey in the begin- ning of the 18th century, when, chiefly through the letters

of Lady Mary Wortley Montagu, it became known and was speedily adopted in England. There is no doubt, both from the statistics of the Smallpox and Inoculation Hospital, London, and from the testimony of physicians throughout the country, that this practice made a marked impression upon the fatality of the disease, and was itself attended with extremely little risk to life. The objections to it, however, were great, for, although usually conveying the smallpox in a mild form, it not unfrequently took effect severely, and, while death might be averted, the disfiguring results of the disease remained. Further, each inoculated person upon whom the operation took effect became for the time being a possible source of infection to others, and in point of fact the practice tended to spread the. disease and so to increase the general mortality. Although inocu- lation continued to be practised for a number of years subsequently to Jenner's great discovery, it gradually be- came displaced by that vastly superior and safer preventive. In 1840 an Act of Parliament was passed rendering small- pox inoculation unlawful in England. (J. 0. As)

SMART, CuristopHer (1722-1771), English poet, was born at Shipbourne in Kent on 11th April 17 22. The dis- covery that Smart was anything more than an unfortunate Bohemian of letters who wrote much uninteresting verse of second-rate 18th-century quality is quite recent. After one or another of his superseded translations or ineffective exercises in heroics had in turn been assigned the place of honour as his representative literary work, his real master- piece was discerned in a poem which, except for a reprint — issued in 1819, had been singularly overlooked, and even omitted from the collected editions of his poetry. The history of this poem, A Song to David, is somewhat Te markable. It was written in the saner moments of con Gnement for a fit of insanity, and was, it is said, on not unimpeachable authority perhaps, indented with an iron nail or a key on the wall of the cell in default of other means of writing. The real facts of the case would seem to be that the unfortunate poet inscribed one or two stanzas +n the manner asserted, and that he either dictated or was , given the materials wherewith to write the rest of the poem.

=

There is no internal evidence of any morbid origin, how- ever, for the poem is full of a healthy and virile energy. As a boy he was delicate and precocious, with a facile gift of verse, which already won him a certain notoriety, of not the best effect haply, at Durham school, whither he had been sent on leaving a preparatory school at Maidstone. During a holiday visit to Raby castle his boyish gifts attracted the interest of the duchess of Cleveland, who made him an allowance of £40 a year, which was continued until her death, and which possibly served further to weaken his self-reliance. At Cambridge, where he was entered at Pembroke Hall in 1739, he led a rather dissi- pated life, getting heavily into debt, and, while he easily excelled in certain congenial branches of study, he paid little attention to the usual college routine. In spite of his irregularities, he was made a fellow of his college in 1745, and at a later date won the newly instituted Seaton prize for an English poem,—the subject each year being one of “the attributes of the Supreme Being.” Smart gained this prize five times in all. Resorting then to London and marrying there a daughter-in-law of Newbery, the publisher, the poet attempted to make a living by literary hack-work and journalism, but sank gradually into difficulties through his improvident and dissipated habits, so that his wife and children were at last obliged to leave him. His misfortunes seem to have culminated in the fit of insanity associated with A Song to David, which was published in 1763, and in 1771 Smart died from the effects of poverty and disease.

Amid all his miserics Smart must have been fairly industrious if his journalistic work was at all proportionate to his more sub- stantial literary productions. Of all that he wrote, however, 4 Song to David will alone bear the test of time. Unlike in its simple forceful treatment and impressive directness of expression, as has been said, to anything else in 18th-century poetry, the poem on analysis is found to depend for its unique effect also upon a certain ingenuity of construction, and the novel way in which David’s ideal qualities are enlarged upon. This will be more readily understood on reference to the following verse, the first twelve words of which become in turn the key-notes, so to speak, of the twelve succeeding verses : —

“ Great, valiant, pious, good, and clean, Sublime, contemplative, serene,

Strong, constant, pleasant, wise ! Bright effluence of exceeding grace ; Best man !—the swiftness, and the race,

The peril, and the prize.”

The last line is characteristic of another peculiarity in 4 Song to Dawid, the effective use of alliteration to complete the initial energy of the stanza in many instances. But in the poem throughout is revealed a poetic quality which cludes critical analysis and gives its a an exceptional interest hardly maintained by his other works,

A Song to David is found in somewhat shortened form in Ward’s English Poets, vol. iif., and Smart’s other poems are given in Anderson’s British Poets (1794), vol. xi., which contains also a full account of his life.

SMEATON, Joun (1724-1792), English civil engineer, the son of an attorney, was born at Austhorpe Lodge, near Leeds, on 8th June 1724. He received a good education at the grammar-school of Leeds, displaying special proficiency m geometry and arithmetic. At a very early age he evinced a great liking for the use of mechanical tools, and in his fourteenth or fifteenth year contrived to make a turning-lathe. On leaving school in his sixteenth year he was employed in his father’s office, but, after attending for some months in 1742 the courts at Westminster Hall, he carnestly requested to be allowed to follow some mechani- eal profession, He became apprentice to a philosophical instrument maker, and in 1750 set up in business on his Own account. Besides improving various mathematical Instruments used in navigation and astronomy, he carried On several experiments in regard to other mechanical appliances, amongst the most important being a series on Which he founded a paper—for which he received the Copley medal of the Royal Society in 1759—entitled An

“perimental Inquiry concerning the Native Powers of

Water and Wind to turn Mills and other Machines depend- ing on a Circular Motion. In 1754 he made a tour of the Low Countries to study the great canal works of foreign engineers. Already by his papers read before the

Royal Society and his intercourse with scientific men his abilities as an engineer had become well known, and in 1756 application was made to him to reconstruct the Eddystone lighthouse, which had been burnt down in December of the previous year (see LIGHTHOUSE, vol. xiv. p. 616). Smeaton now began to be much consulted in regard to all kinds of important engineering projects, including river navigation, the drainage of fens, the designing of harbours, and the repair and construction of bridges, owing to the thorough engineering skill he displayed in every operation he under- took. In judging of his achievements it ought to be remembered that he was the precursor of the great modern engineers. James Watt said of him, “His example and precepts have made us all engineers.” He combined in a remarkable degree theoretical with practical skill, much of his success being due to the fact that, as Stevenson states, ‘he was an incessant experimenter.” A considerable portion of his time was also devoted to astronomical studies and observations, on which he read various papers before the Royal Society. In order to prepare an account of the various works on which he had been engaged as an engineer, Smeaton resolved to retire from his profession, but he only lived to complete in 1791 his Narrative of the Building of Eddystone Lighthouse. He died at Austhorpe, 28th October 1792, and was buried in the old parish church of Whitkirk.

See 4 Short Narrative of the Genius, Life, and Works of the late Mr John Sincaton, 1793 ; and Smiles, Lives of the Engineers.

SMELL is a sensation excited by the contact with the olfactory region of certain substances, usually in a gaseous condition and necessarily in a state of fine subdivision. The sense is widely distributed throughout the animal kingdom. The lower animals, especially those breathing in water, become cognizant of the presence of odoriferous matter near them without touch, vision, or hearing, and we suppose that they do so by some sense of taste or smell, or a combination of both. In such cases smell has been appropriately termed “taste at a distance,” by which is meant that particles of matter may be diffused through the water so as to come into contact with the terminal organ and give rise to a sensation such as would have been excited had the matter from which the particles emanated come directly into contact with the nerve-end- ings. It is therefore of no great importance whether such sensations in humble aquatic organisms are termed taste or smell. In the

higher air-breathing animals, however, the senses are differentiated: that of taste is found at the entrance of the alimentary canal, whilst that of smell guards the opening of the respiratory tract. This view assists in the interpretation of various structures met with in the lower forms which have been fairly regarded by naturalists as olfactory organs.

Comparative View of Olfactory Organs.—In various Medusx pit-like depressions, lined with ciliated epithelium, on the dorsal side of the exeavation in which the ‘‘ marginal” bodies are found, have becu called olfactory regions. In many Arthropoda the sense of smell is located in delicate tubular structures, or conical projec- tions, found on the antenne and connected with nerves. Similar organs are met with in Crustacea. In Cyclops (Copepoda), Isopoda, and Thoracostraca olfactory hairs are present as delicate appen- dages of the anterior antcnne, chiefly in the male sex. In Schizopoda the anterior antenne have a comb-like prominence bearing a great number of olfactory hairs. Jnsecta have olfactory organs largely developed, usually in the form of hairs, cones, or knobs on the antenne, and connected with gangliated nerve-end- ings. Olfactory organs are also met with in Aollusca : in Lamelli- branchiata they appear as hairs on the margin of the mantle ; in aquatic Gasteropoda as tufts of hairs scattered over the sur- face of the body and specially aggregated in those parts where

tactile sensibility is highly developed ; in terrestrial Gasteropoda the antennsz have on their end plates a number of club-shaped cells with rods, which are held to be olfactory, and recently in the game class Sprengel has shown that an organ ‘which was supposed to be a rudimentary gill, and is innervated from the supra-intestinal ganglion,” has an olfactory function. In Ascidians the olfactory region is believed to be a depression on the wall of the pharynx, situated in frout of the ganglion, and lined with ciliated epithelium.

In Fishes the olfactory organs consist of a membrane (the pitui- tary membrane) lining one or two pits, to which the olfactory or first pair of cranial nerves are distributed. This highly vascular membrane is usually thrown into numerous folds, so as to admit of an extensive surface being packed into small space, and it is covered by ciliated epithelinm. In the

lowest vertebrate, Amphi- oxus, the olfactory organ is a simple unsymmetrical pit at the anterior end of the nervous system. In the hag fishes (Myxinide) the olfactory pit has a posterior opening which pierees the palate and ean be closed by a valvular apparatus. In the lampreys (Petromyzon) the flask-shaped nasal sac opens on the top of the head, and from this a tube descends which expands into a blind sac towards the base of the skull. In all other fishes the olfactory organs are double and have no communication with the mouth. In osseous fishes the olfactory capsules or saes are covered with skin which is usually pierced by two openings for each sac. Some, sueh as the wrasses, have a single nasal opening ; and where there are two the anterior ean be closed by a valve. The olfactory region may be extensive owing to the pituitary membrane being thrown into plaits or folds, and it may be divided into two portions, one quite smooth and the other plicated. The smooth portion, prob- ably acting as a reservoir, may be large, extending down to the palate, as in the wnackerel, or to the back part of the palate, as in the wolf-fish (Owen). The nasal cavities exist below the snout in sharks, near the angles of the mouth in the rays, and beneath the fore part of the head, behind the base of the rostrum, in the saw-fish. In such fishes the olfactory organ is guarded by valves, con- taining cartilaginous plates moved by muscles, and we may there- fore conclude with Owen ‘‘that these fishes scent as well as sinell, i.e. actively search for odoriferous impressions by rapidly changing the current of water through the olfactory sac.”

The olfactory organs of Amphibia are always ee cavities, opening internally either anteriorly within the lips or further back, as in the batrachians and salamandrines. In the Perenni- branchiates (Siren, Proteus, Axolotl) there are no outward signs of olfactory organs, and the thick upper lip must be yaised to bring the plicated sac with its two remote orifices into view (Owen). In the Tritonida# (newts) and Salamandrine (salamanders) the olfae- tory membrane is smooth and lines an oval bag having an external nostril, guarded by a valvular fold of skin, anda ee opening. Frogs and toads (Batrachia) have also an externa nostril with a flap of skin, and the palatal opening is wide and near the fore part of the mouth. ‘The skulls of extinct saurians of marine habits (Ichthyosaurus and Plesiosawrus) show that the external nostrils opened near the orbits at a distance from the muzzle. In snakes (Ophidia) the external nostrils are double, and the internal nostril is

single and in the median linc. In water snakes the external orifices ean be closed by valves.

In Chelonia (turtles, tortoises) and in Crocodilia the external nasal opening is single and near the end of the snout; but in Chelonia the nostrils are really distinct, although their external apertures coincide. In the turtle the nasal cavity is large and contains a twisted shell-like cartilage, so as to give extent of surface to the darkly pigmented and highly vascular pituitary membrane. In the crocodiles and alligators the nostrils ean be closed by a valvular lobe, and in the gavials (Rhamphostoma gangeticum and Rkyncho- suchus schlegclti) the integument can be raised round the nostril +n the form of a tube so as to bring the orifice to the surface of the water without exposing the other parts of the head (Owen). In all Crocodilia the nasal cavity is of great length, commencing at the fore part of the muzzle and ending beneath the oeciput by a single aperture, and the surface of this long olfactory meatus is inereased by the meatus communicating with large cells or sinuses. In snakes and lizards a second olfactory organ is found embedded between the turbinals and the vomer and is known as “J acobson’s organ.” It has the form of a cup or depression round a cartilaginous papilla and _ is supplied by a nerve which arises from the end of the olfactory lobe.

he olfactory organs of Birds are somewhat similar to those of the cold-blooded reptiles and amphibians in that ‘‘the external nostrils are simple perforations, having no movable cartilages or muscles provided for dilating or contracting their apertures, as in mammalia” (Owen). The extent of the olfactory surface is in- -ereased by projections and folds of turbinated bones and not by large accessory cavities. With the exception of the apteryx and dinornis, the ‘olfactory nerve passes out of the skull by a single foramen. The external nostrils are in the majority of birds placed at the sides of the upper mandible ; but in some cases, as in the toucans, they are found at the base of the bill, and in the apteryx they open at the extremity of the long upper mandible. In herons

be regarded as the beginning of the respiratory tract. dicated by the arrangement of the nerves, the olfactory nerve being

and middle turbinated bones, whilst the lower portion and turbinals are supplied by the fifth nerve,—a nerve of general sensi- bility. The upper

turbinals reach their greatest development in the apteryx, where they are attached, aceording to Owen, to the whole

largest olfactory nerves In proportion to its size,

S wi hh

the apertures are so gmall as scarcely to admit the point of a pin ; and in the pelicans they are wanting, and odours get access ie the olfactory organ from the palate. The Rasores (scratching birds) have the nostrils defended by a seale, and the erows (Corvidz) have a bunch of stiff feathers for the sane purpose. The septum or partition between the nostrils is usually complete and is formed of bone and cartilage. The outer wall of each nasal passage is furnished with three turbinal or twisted shell-like bones, of which the middle is the largest, thus affording a considerable extent of olfactory surface. In most birds there are two posterior nasal apertures communicating with the palate; but in some, as in the cormorant and gannet, the passages unite and there is only one opening. In birds the upper part of the nasal passage is more especially devoted to the sense of smell, whilst the lower part may This is in-

distributed to the membrane covering the septum and the a ower

outer part of the prefrontals.

This bird has amongst birds the and it would appear to be guided by the sense of smell to the worms that form its food. A contrast as regards the anatomical arrangements for the olfactory sense is well seen on comparing the turkey with the vulture, Tn the turkey the olfactory nerve is small, about one- fifth the size of that in the vulture, and is distributed over a small

middle turbinal, there being no extension over a superior turbinal.

The vulture, on the other hand, has a large nerve and the olfactory

region is extensive, owing to the largely developed superior turbinal

bone. There can be no doubt that the carrion-eating vulture is guided from great distances to its food by the sense of smell, althongh it will be assisted by its powerful sense of vision.

The sense of smell reaches its highest development in Mammalia. The anatomical surface is enormously extended in many eases, not only by the complication of the ethmoidal labyrinth, but also by the nasal passages communicating with spaces in the neighbourmg cranial and facial bones. The olfactory nerves also are very numer- ous and arise from a special encephalic centre. They pass out of

the skull by numerous holes in the cribriform or sieve-like plate of

the prefrontal bone, which, on account of this peculiarity, is ealled the ethmoid bone. These nerves ramify on the olfactory membraue, eovering the upper or ethmo-turbinal bones. The cavity contain- ing the organ of smell is bounded by the prefrontal, vomerine, nasal, sphenoid, pterygoid, palatine, maxillary, and premaxillary bones, and it is usually in connexion with air-cavities or sinuses in many or all of the bones of the skull. The median partition by which the two nostrils are formed consists of bone and cartilage and is built up by processes of the prefrontals, the vomer, and by the ridges of the nasals, palatines, maxillaries, and premaxillaries with which the vomer articulates. Each passage thus formed is the beginning of the respiratory traet, ~ is continued forwards into a more or less mobile part called a nose, snout, or proboscis, whilst posteriorly it communicates with the upper part of the pharynx, into which opens the windpipe. On the outer wall there are three turbinal bones—superior, middle, and inferior—dividing partially the nasal cavity into three meatuscs or passages. The superior meatus is between the superior and middle turbinated bones, the middle meatus between the middle and_ inferior turbinated bones, and the inferior meatus between the inferior turbinated bones and the floor of the nose (see ANATOMY, Vol. i p. 823, fig. 7; also vol. i, pl. XIX. fig. 2). Many of the lower mammals have in addition a process from the frontal and nasal bones, sometimes called the superior spongy bone, which is not the same as the superior turbinated, as described in the anatomy of the human being. The extent of olfactory surface is enormously increased by numerous phiee or processes of bone which to a great extent mask the comparatively

simple arrangement above described. In Ornithorhynchus there is a single olfactory nerve escaping through an aperture in the prefrontal bone; in Echidna, the other member of the Monotremata, there are numerous olfactory nerves and a large development of ethmo-turbinals. In many Marsupials the sense of smell is largely developed, and in some (Osphranter) the turbinated bones are so large as to eause a lateral bulging of the nasal eavity, forming a marked feature of the skull. In Rodents the ethmo-tur- binals may be subdivided into lamella so as to increase the olfactory surface ; such is the case in the common hare. In the poreupime the sinuses developed from the olfactory cavity are of large size, forming a spongy mass surrounding the cavity of the skull in which the anterior portion of the brain hes. In Insectivora the olfactory surface is very large. Thus in the mole the ethmo-tur binal has not fewer than eight lamelle or plates and the external nose is developed into a snout capable of considerable movement. Such a snout is very large and mobile in the elephant shrews Armaditlos and ant-eaters (Hdentata) have a strong sense of smel

Thus in Dasypus the nasal portion of the skull is about equal i

yolume to all the rest, and in Chlamydophorus (dwarf armadillo) the frontals are raised ‘into a pair of domes” by sinuses in them com- municating with the large olfactory cavity. In most armadillos the external nose is strengthened by small bones. The air sinuses in the sloth extend upwards into the frontals and downwards into the sphenoid bone. No Cetaceans have olfactory organs, except the baleen or whalebone whales, and thus are devoid of the sense of smell. In the manatee (Sirenia) the nasal openings are placed far forwards and have movable eartilages, and the bony walls of the nasal passages are not extensive in proportion to the size of the rest of the skull. The elephants (Proboscidea) have the part of the nasal cavity concerned in smell contracted and narrow, but the cavity is prolonged into the trunk, at the end of which are the nostrils; the nasal cavity communicates with sinuses permeating every bone of the cranium. The tapirs have a shorter but very mobile proboscis, and the development of the

nasal passages is ex- tensive. The horse has the power of dilating and contracting each nostril, and the cribriform plates transmit very numerous olfactory nerves from the olfactory bulbs, which are large in proportion to the size of the rest of the brain. The Swide (swine) have a large and complex olfactory region; the accessory sinuses or spaces attain a great development ; the nose is prolonged and truncate, the cartilages forming a complete tube, whieh is a continuation of the bony nostrils, and these tubes open on a naked disk. In the ox and sheep the olfactory region is large, but not so large as in the horse. ‘The external, glandular, and moist part of the nose is a linear tract running from the mid-furrow of the upper lip to the oblique nostril in the sheep, and this portion passes through many gradations in size, as seen in the roebuek, fallow-deer, red-deer, and the ox. The Carnivora have the ethmo-turbinal and maxillo- turbinal regions even more largely developed than in Herbivora,. and the latter portion reaches its maximum in the seals, where “these turbinals scem to block up the entry of the nasal respi- ratory passages, and must warm the air in aretic latitudes as well as arrest cvery indication from the effluvia of alimentary substances or prey” (Owen). In Quadrwmana the nasal chamber becomes shorter and gains in depth, but not proportionally. In the platyrhine monkeys the cartilage forming the septum

Pes Regeveetca oa

Fi by

AO i oes

ae

os OF

2 ie Longitudinal section through the olfactory membrane of guinea-pig. x about 400.

1, Olfactory epithelium on free surface; 2, plexus of olfactory nerve-fibres ; p Sid of serous glands containing epithelial cells. From Klein’s Atlas of Ye

cpithelial cells, often branched at their lower ends and ane a yellow or brownish red pigment ; and it con- “Ms peculiar tubular glands named “ Bowman’s glands.”

The respiratory portion contains ordinary serous glands. In the olfactory region also are the terminal organs of smell. These are long narrow cells passing to the surface between the columnar epithelium covering the surface. (See Ana- TOMY, vol. i. p. 885, fig. 76.) The body of the cell is spindle-shaped and it sends up to the surface a delicate rod-like filament, whilst the deeper part is continuous with varicose nerve-filaments, the ends of the olfactory nerve. In the frog the free end terminates in fine hairs.

Physical Causes of Smell—Electrical or thermal stimuli do not usually give rise to olfactory sensations. Althaus states that electrical stimulation caused a sensation of the smell of phosphorus. To excite smell it is usually sup- posed that substances must be present in the atmosphere in a state of fine subdivision, or existing as vapours or gases. ‘The fineness of the particles is remarkable, because if the air conveying an odour be filtered through a tube packed with cotton wool and inserted into the nose a smell is still discernible. This proceeding completely removes from the air organisms less than the tvooooth of an inch in diameter which are the causes of putrefaction and fermentation. A grain or two of musk will scent an apart- ment for years and at the end of the time no appreciable loss of weight can be detected. Substances exciting smell are no doubt usually gases or vapours. Only a few ten- tative efforts have been made to connect the sense with the chemical constitution of the substance. One of the most important of these is in an Essay on Smell, by Dr. William Ramsay of University College, Bristol. The following gases have no smell :—hydrogen, oxygen, nitrogen, water gas, marsh gas, olefiant gas, carbon monoxide, hydro- chloric acid, formic acid vapour, nitrous oxide, and ammonia. (It is necessary, of course, to distinguish between the sensa- tion of smell and the irritant action of such a gas as ammonia.) The gases exciting smell are chlorine, bromine, iodine, the compounds of the first two with oxygen and water, nitric peroxide, vapours of phosphorus and sulphur, arsenic, antimony, sulphurous acid, carbonic acid, almost all the volatile compounds

of carbon except those already mentioned, some compounds of selenium and tellurium, the compounds of chlorine, bromine, and iodine with the above-named elements, and some metals, Chlorine, bromine, iodine, sulphur, selenium, and tellurium, which are volatile and give off vapour at ordinary temperatures, have each a characteristic smell. Ramsay points out that as a general rule substances having a low molecular weight have either no smell or simply cause irritation of the nostrils. He also shows that in the carbon compounds increase of specific gravity as a gas is associated to a certain point with a sensation of smell. Take the marsh gas or methane series commonly called the paraffins. The first two have no smell; ethane (fifteen times as heavy as hydrogen) has a faint smell ; and it is not till butane (thirty times heavier than hydrogen) that a distinct sensation of smell is noticed. Again, a similar relation exists among the alcohols. Methyl alcohol has no smell. Ethyl, or ordinary alcohol free from ethers and water, has a faint smell; “and the odour rapidly becomes more marked as we rise in the series, till the limit of volatility is reached, and we arrive at solids with such a low vapour tension that they give off no appreciable amount of vapour at the ordinary temperature.” Acids gain in odour with increase in density in the form of gas. Thus formic acid is devoid of smell ; acetic acid has a characteristic smell ; and the higher acids of the series—propionic, butyric, valerianic—increase in odour. It would appear also that “the character of a smell is a property of the element or group which enters into the body producing the smell, and tends to make it generic.” Many compounds of chlorine, hydrogen, compounds of sulphur, selenium, and tellurium, the paraffins, the alcohols, the acids, the nitrites,

the amines, the pyridine series, the benzene group, have each a characteristic odour. Ramsay has advanced the theory that the sense of smell “is excited by vibrations of a lower period than those which give rise to the sense of light or heat,” and he points out a series of important facts in support of this view. He states that to produce the sen- sation of smell a substance must have a molecular weight at least fifteen times that of hydrogen. For instance, the specific gravity of marsh gas is eight (no smell), of ethane fif- teen (faint smell), of propane twenty-two (distinct smell). Again, prussic acid has a specific gravity of fifteen, and many persons fail

to detect its odour. Further, Ramsay sup- poses that smell may be excited by vibrations, and suggests that the period of vibration of the lighter molecules is too rapid to affect the sense ; at last a number of vibrations is reached capable of exciting the sense organ ; and beyond an upper limit the sense is again lost. Graham pointed out that odorous substances are in general readily oxidized.! Tyndall showed that many odorous vapours have a con- siderable power of absorbing heat. Taking the absorptive capacity of the air as unity, the following absorptions were observed in the respective cases : —

Absorption | Absorption

Name of Perfume. per 100. Name of Perfume. per 100. Bat@houlil ts eer u- 30 Lavender …....eeees 60 Sandal-wood …....- 82 | Wann) gnegeogorgenod 65 Geranium …....--- 83 | Portugal…....—++++ 67 Oil of cloves …....--- 33°S Thyme …-.e0+—0s 68 Otto of roses …...— 36°5 WROSEMATY – 2. comes. + 74 Bergamot …...----+- 44 Oil of laurel …....— 80 WOE ag ooano acted an0O 47 (Chis 36) guqoodanooucucsn | 109

In comparison with the air introduced in the experi- ments the weight of the odours must be almost infinitely small. ‘Still we find that the least energetic in the list produces thirty times the effect of the air, whilst the most energetic produces 109 times the same effect.” *

Venturi, B. Prévost, and Liégeois have studied the well- known movements of odoriferous particles, such as cam- phor, succinic acid, &c., when placed on the surface of water, and they have suggested that all odoriferous sub- stances ina state of fine subdivision may move in a similar way on the moist surface of the olfactory menibrane, and thus mechanically irritate the nerve- endings. This ex- planation is too coarse ; but it is well known that the odours of flowers are most distinctly perceived in the morning, or after a shower, when the atmosphere contains a considerable amount of aqueous vapour. It would appear also that the odours of animal effluvia are of a higher specific gravity than the air, and do not readily diffuse,—a fact which may account for the pointer and bloodhound keeping their noses to the ground. Such smells are very persistent and are apparently difficult to remove from any surface to which they have become attached. The smell of

a corpse may haunt a living person for days, notwithstanding copious ablutions and change of clothes.’

Special Physiology of Smell.—It is necessary that the air containing the odour be driven forcibly against the membrane. Thus the nostrils may be filled with eau de Cologne, or with air impregnated with sulphuretted hydro- gen, and still no odour is experienced if the person does not breathe. When a sniff is made the air within the nasal passages is rarefied, and, as the air rushes in to equili- brate the pressure, it is forcibly propelled against the olfactory surface. The olfactory surface must be moist ; if it is dry, or is covered with too thick a layer of mu- cus (as in catarrh), the sense is much weakened or lost.

1 Bain, Senses and Intellect, 3d ed., p. ey),

2 Tyndall, Contributions to Molecular Physics in Domain of Radiant Heat, p. 99.

3 Liégeois, Archiv de Physiol., 1868.

‘wickshire, is situated on the Birmingham, Dudley, and

The first moment of contact is the most acute and the sense quickly becomes blunted. The first scent of a flower is the strongest and sweetest ; and after a few minutes’ ex- posure the intensity of even a foetid odour may not be perceived. This fact may be accounted for on the sup- position that the olfactory membrane becomes quickly coated with a thin layer of matter, and that the most intense effect is produced when the odoriferous substances are applied to a clean surface. The intensity of smell depends on (1) the area of olfactory surface affected, and (2) the degree of concentration of the odoriferous matter. Tt is said that musk to the amount of the two-millionth of a milligramme, and one part of sulphuretted hydrogen in 1,000,000 parts of air, may be perceived. If the two nostrils are filled with different odorous substances, there is no mixture of the odours, but we smell sometimes the one and sometimes the other (Valentin). Morphia, mixed with sugar and taken as snuff, paralyses the olfactory ap-

paratus, while strychnine makes it more sensitive (Lichten- fels and Frohlich). The delicacy of the sense is much greater in many of the lower animals than in man, and it is highly probable that the dog or cat obtain information by means of this sense which a human being cannot get. Odours may excite in the minds of many animals vivid impressions, and they have probably a memory of smells which the human being does not possess. Even in man the sense may be greatly im- proved by exercising it. A boy, James Mitchell, was born blind, deaf, and dumb, and chiefly depended on smell for keeping up a connexion with the outer world. He readily observed the presence of a stranger in the room and he formed his opinions of persons apparently from their char- acteristic smells. Im some rare cases, the sense of smell is congenitally absent in human beings, and it may be much injured by the practice of snuffing or by diseases of the nose affecting the olfactory membrane. Subjective im- pressions of smells, like spectral illusions or sounds in the ears, are occasionally, but rarely observed in the insane. Finally, it may be observed that the sense of odour gives ‘nformation as to the characters of food and drink and as to the purity of the air. In the lower animals, also, the sense is associated with the sexual functions. See art. ‘Olfaction” by Frangois Franck, in Dictionnatre Ency- clopédique des Sciences Médicales, 2d series, where a full historical bibliography is given; Hermann’s Handbuch der Physiologie: d. Sinnesorgane: Zweiter Theil, Geruchsinne, by Prof. V. Vintschgat, p. 226 ; Owen’s Comp. Anatomy and Physiol. of Vertebrates ; Bain, op. cit., p. 147; Grant Allen’s Physiological isthetics, p. 73 Ramsay, Nature, vol. xxvi. p. 187; and for James Mitchell’s case, see Dugald Stewart’s Works, vol. iv. p. 300. (J. G. M.) SMELT. See SatMonrps, vol. xxi. p. 1. S\METHWICK, an urban sanitary district of Stafford- shire, England, on the borders of Worcestershire and War-

Wolverhampton Canal, and on branches of the London and North-Western and the Great Western Railway lines, 2 miles west from Birmingham, of which the town of Smethwick isa suburb. It possesses `public hall aud` free library and reading-room. Within the limits of the district is the Soho foundry originated by James Watt; and since its origin numerous other industries have been concentrated in the suburb, the more important being the manufacture of glass, chemicals, hydraulic jacks, patent — nuts and bolts, and patent tubes. Many of the works are of great extent. The

population of the urban sanitary district in 1871 was 17,158, and in 1881 (area, 1882 acres) it had increased to 25,084.

SMIRKE, RosERt (1752-1845), subject painter, was born at Wigton near Carlisle in 1752. In his thirteenth year he was apprenticed in London with an heraldic paintet, and at the age of twenty he began to study in the schools

ee

of the Royal Academy, to whose exhibition he contributed | four parts—(1) natural theology ; (2) ethics ; (3) a treat-

in 1786 a Narcissus and a Sabrina, which were followed by many works, usually small in size, illustrative of the English poets, especially Thomson. In 1791 Smirke was elected an associate of the Royal Academy, and two years later a full member. In 1814 he was nominated keeper to the Academy, but the king refused to sanction the appoint- ment on account of the artist's pronounced revolutionary opinions. He was engaged upon the Shakespeare gallery, for which he painted Katharina and Petruchio, Prince Henry and Falstaff, and other subjects. He also executed many clever and popular book-illustrations. His works, which are frequently of a humorous character, are pleasing and graceful, accomplished in draftsmanship and handled with considerable spirit. He died in London on the 5th of January 1845. SMITH, Apam (1723-1790), the greatest of political economists, was the only child of Adam Smith, comptroller of the customs at Kirkcaldy in Fifeshire, Scotland, and of Margaret Douglas, daughter of Mr Douglas of Strathendry, near Leslie. He was born at Kirkcaldy on 5th June 1723, some months after the death of his father. Of a weak constitution, he required and received during his early years the most tender care of an affectionate mother, which he repaid in after life by every attention which filial gratitude could dictate. When he was three years old he was taken on a visit to his uncle at Strathendry, and when playing alone at the door of the house was carried off by a party of "'tinkers." Fortunately he was at once missed, and the vagrants pursued and overtaken in Leslie wood. He received his early

education in the school of Kirkcaldy under David Miller, amongst whose pupils were many who were afterwards distinguished men. Smith showed as a boy great fondness for books and remarkable powers of memory ; and his friendly and generous disposi- tion made him popular amongst his schoolfellows. He was sent in 1737 to the university of Glasgow, where he attended the lectures of Dr Hutcheson; and in 1740 he went to Baliol College, Oxford, as exhibitioner on Snell's foundation, with a view to his taking orders in the English Church. He remained at that university for seven years. At Glasgow his favourite studies had been mathematics and natural philosophy ; but at Oxford he appears to have devoted himself almost entirely to moral and political science and to the cultivation of the ancient and modern languages. He also laboured to improve his English style by the practice of translation, particularly from the French. He was not impressed with a favourable opinion of the system of education then pursued at Oxford. After his return to Kirkcaldy he resided there two years with his mother, continuing his studies; he had relinquished the idea of entering the ecclesiastical profession, but had not yet adopted any other plan for his future life. In 1748 he removed to Edinburgh, and there, under the patronage of Lord Kames, gave lectures on rhetoric and belles-lettres. About this time commenced his acquaintance with David Hume, which afterwards ripened into an intimate friend- ship, founded on mutual esteem ; his relations with that great thinker must have powerfully influenced the forma- tion of his opinions, In 1751 he was elected professor of logic at Glasgow, and in the following year was transferred to the chair of moral philosophy in the same university, which had become vacant by the death of Thomas Craigie, the suecessor of Hutcheson, This position he occupied for nearly twelve years, which he long afterwards declared to ia been "by far the most useful, and therefore by far a lapplest and most honourable period of his life." He ou highly esteemed by his colleagues, of whom, on his ide, he speaks as "very excellent men." His course of cctures, as Professor Millar informs us, was divided into

ment of that branch of morality which relates to justice, a subject which he handled historically after the manner of Montesquieu, "endeavouring to trace the gradual progress of jurisprudence, both public and private, from the rudest to the most refined ages, and to point out the effects of those arts which contribute to subsistence and to the accumulation of property in

producing corresponding improvements or alterations in law and government"; (4) a study of those political regulations which are founded, not upon the principle of justice, but that of expediency, and which are calculated to increase the riches, the power, and the prosperity of a state. Under this view he con- sidered the political institutions relating to commerce, to finances, to ecclesiastical and military establishments. He first appeared as an author by contributing two articles to the Edinburgh Review (an earlier journal than the present, which was commenced in 1755, but of which only two numbers! were published),—one on Johnson's Dictionary and the other a letter to the editors on the state of litera- ture in the different countries of Europe. In 1759 ap- peared his Theory of Moral Sentiments, embodying the second portion of his university course, to which was added in the 2d edition an appendix with the title, '' Con- siderations concerning the first Formation of Languages." After the publication of this work his ethical doctrines occupied less space in his lectures, and a larger develop- ment was given to the subjects of jurisprudence and political economy. Stewart gives us to understand that he had already, as early as 1752, adopted the liberal views of commercial policy which he afterwards preached with so much effect ; and this we should have been inclined to believe independently from the fact that such views were propounded in that year in the Political Discourses of his friend Hume. His residence at Glasgow brought him into personal relations with many intelligent men from whose practical experience he could derive information on mer- cantile questions ; and, on the other hand, we are told, his reasonings convinced several eminent merchants of that city of the soundness of the principles of free trade, which were at variance with their previous opinions.

In 1762 the senatus 'academicus of Glasgow conferred on him the honorary degree of doctor of laws. In 1763 he was invited to take charge of the young duke of Buc- cleuch on his travels. He accepted the proposal, and resigned his professorship. He went abroad with his pupil in March 1764; they remained only a few days at Paris and then settled at Toulouse, then the seat of a parliament, where they spent eighteen months in the best society of the place, afterwards making a tour in the south of France and passing two months at Geneva. Returning to Paris about Christmas of 1765, they remained there till the October of the following year. The period was one of

intellectual and social ferment, and Smith was brought into relation with the most eminent persons of the time. He lived in the society of Quesnay, Turgot, D'Alembert, Morellet, Helvétius, Marmontel, and the duke de la Roche- foucault. It was the regard he entertained for the young nobleman? last named that dictated the omission in the later editions of his J/oral Sentiments of the name of the celebrated ancestor of the duke, whom he had associated with Mandeville as author of one of the "licentious sys-

1 These two numbers were reprinted in 1818. Smith's letter to the editors is specially interesting for its account of the Ancyciopédie and its criticism of Rousseau's pictures of savage life.

2 The duke undertook a translation of the Theory of Moral Sents- ments, but the Abbé Blavet's version appeared (1774) before his was completed and he then relinquished the design. An earlier French translation had been published (1764) under the title AZétaphysique de V Ame; and there is a later one—the best—by the marquis de Con- dorcet (1798, 2d ed. 1830).

tems" reviewed in the seventh part of that work. Smith was without doubt much influenced by his contact with the members of the physiocratic school, especially with its chief, though Dupont de Nemours probably goes too far in speaking of Smith and himself as having been "'con- disciples chez M. Quesnay." Smith afterwards described Quesnay as a man "of the greatest modesty and sim- plicity," and be, 'with all its imperfections, the nearest approximation to truth that had yet been published on the principles of that science." In October 1766 tutor and pupil returned home, and they ever afterwards retained strong feelings of mutual esteem. For the next ten years Smith lived with his mother at Kirkcaldy, only paying occasional visits to Edinburgh and London ; he was engaged in close study during most of this time, but unbent his mind in familiar intercourse with a few friends. He describes himself to Hume during this period as being extremely happy, com- fortable, and contented. He was now occupied on his Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations, which there is some reason for believing he had begun at Toulouse. That great

work appeared in 1776. After its publication, and only a few months before his own death, Hume wrote to congratulate his friend— “ Buge! belle/ dear Mr Smith, I am much pleased with your performance, and the perusal of it has taken me from a state of great anxiety. It was a work of so much ex- pectation by yourself, by your friends, and by the public, that I trembled for its appearance; but am now much relieved. Not but that the reading of it requires so much attention, and the public is disposed to give so little, that I shall still doubt for some time of its being at first very popular. But it has depth, and solidity, and acuteness, and is so much illustrated by curious facts that it must at last take the public attention.” Smith attended Huine affectionately during a part of his last illness, and soon after the death of the philosopher there was published, along with his autobiography, a letter from Smith to Strahan, in which he gave an account of the closing scenes of his friend’s life and expressed warm admiration for his character. This letter excited some rancour among the theologians, and Dr George Horne, afterwards bishop of Norwich, published in 1777, by way of comment on it, A Letter to Adam Smith on the Life, Death, and Philosophy of his Friend David Hume, by one of the people called Christians. But Smith took no notice of this effusion.” He was also attacked by Archbishop Magee for the omission in subsequent editions of a passage of the Moral Sentiments which that prelate had cited with high com- mendation as among the ablest illustrations of the doctrine of the atonement. Smith had omitted the paragraph in question on the ground that it was unnecessary and mis- inna

1 Mr J. E. T. Rogers published in the Academy, 28th February 1885, a letter of Smith to William Pulteney, written in 1772, from which he thinks it probable that the work lay ‘¢ynrevised and un- altered”? in the author’s desk for four years. A similar conclusion seems to follow from a letter of Hume in Burton’s Life, ii. p. 461.

2 A story was told by Sir Walter Scott, aud is also related in the Edinburgh Review, of an “ unfortunate rencontre,” arising out of the publication of the same letter, between Smith and Dr Johnson, during the visit of the latter to Glasgow. The same story is given in a note in Wilberforce’s Correspondence, the scene being somewhat vaguely laid in “Scotland.” But it is impossible that it should be true; for Johnson made his tour in 1773, whilst Hume’s death did not take place till 1776. Smith seems not to have

met Johnson in Scotland at all. It appears, however, from Boswell's Life, under date of 29th April 1778, that Johnson had on one occasion quarrelled with Smith and treated him rudely at Strahan's house, apparently in London ; but, as Robertson met Johnson "for the first time" immediately after that incident, and as we know that Robertson met him in Scotland, it follows that the "unlucky altercation"? at Strahan's must have occurred before the Scotch tour, and could have had nothing to do with the letter on Hume's death.

placed; but Magee suspected him of having been influ-

declared his system of political economy to.

enced by deeper reasons.

The greater part of the two years which followed the publication of the Wealth of Nations Smith spent in Lon- don, enjoying the society of the most eminent persons of the day, amongst whom were Gibbon, Burke, Reynolds, and Beauclerk. In 1778 he was appointed, through the in- fluence of the duke of Buccleuch, one of the commissioners of customs in Scotland, and in consequence of this fixed | his residence at Edinburgh. His mother, now in extreme old age, lived with him, as did also his cousin, Miss Jane i

Douglas, who assisted him in the care of his aged parent, and superintended his household. Much of his now ample sncome is believed to have been spent in secret charities, and he kept a simple, though hospitable, table, at which, "without the formality of an invitation, he was always happy to receive his friends." "His Sunday suppers," says M'Culloch, ''were long celebrated at Edinburgh," One of his favourite places of resort in these years wasa club of which Dr Hutton, Dr Black, Dr Adam Ferguson, John Clerk the naval tactician, Robert Adam the archi- tect, as well as Smith himself, were original members, and to which Dugald Stewart, Professor Playfair, and other eminent men were afterwards admitted. Another source of enjoyment was the small but excellent library he possessed; it is still

preserved in his family ; Professor Nicholson has had access to it, and was struck by the varied nature of the collection, and especially by the large number of books of travel and poetry which it contained. In 17 87 he was elected lord rector of the university of Glasgow, an honour which he received with “heartfelt joy.” If we can believe a note in Wilberforce’s Correspondence, he visited London in the spring of the same year, and was introduced by Dundas? to Pitt, Wilberforce, and others. From the death of his mother in 1784, and that of Miss Douglas in 1788, his health and strength gradually declined, and after a tedious and painful illness he died on 17th July 1790,

Before his decease Smith directed that all his manuscripts except a few selected cssays should be destroyed, and they were accordingly committed to the flames. Of the pieces preserved by his desire the most valuable is his tract on the history of astronomy, which he himself described as a ‘‘fragment of a great work”; it was doubt- less a portion of the ‘‘counected history of the liberal sciences and clegant arts” which, we are told, he had projected in early life. Among the papers destroyed were probably, as Stewart suggests, the lectures on natural religion and jurisprudence which formed part of his course at Glasgow, and also the lectures on rhetori¢ which he delivered at Edinburgh in 1748. To the latter Blair seems to refer when, in his work on Lhetoric and Belles-Lettres (1783), he acknowledges his obligations to a manuscript treatise on rhetoric by Smith, part of which its author had shown to him many years before, and which he hoped Smith would give to the public. It was probably the lectures on jurisprudence which Smith had in view when, some time before his death expressing regret that he ‘‘had done so little,” he added, ‘‘I meant to have done more, and there are materials in my papers of which I could have made a great deal.” He had promised at the end of his Theory of Moral Sentiments a treatise on the gencral principles of jurispru- dence from the historical point of view, which would doubtless have been a devclopment of his university lectures on that subject.

In person Smith was of about the middle size, well made and stout, though not corpulent. His features are said to be well represented in the medallion by Tassie engraved in M‘Culloch’s edition of the IVealth of Nations. Wis discourses as professor Wel? almost entirely extemporary, and, as he was

always interested in his subject, he never failed to interest his hearers. He was some- times, Millar tells us, embarrassed and spoke with hesitation at the outset; but ‘as he advanced the matter scemed to crowd upon him, his manner became warm and animated, and his expression easy all fluent.” In society, except amongst intimate friends, he spoke but. seldom, and was rather disposed to enjoy in silence the gaiety of those around him. He often seemed altogether oceupied with his own thoughts, or might even have been supposed, from his looks and gestures, to be ‘‘in the fervour of composition.” ‘‘ He was the most absent man in company,” says Alexander Carlyle, ‘‘ that I

pa i ee OE 3 An interesting letter of Smith to Dundas (1st November 1779) on free trade for Ireland is printed in the Eng. Hist. Review, No. 2

e -6 e

ALBERT. |

ever saw, moving his lips and talking to himself and smiling in the midst of large companies.” When called on to give his opinion of the matter under discussion he was apt to do so too much in the manner of a lecture. Easy and flowing as is the style of his books, yet to the end he wrote slowly and with difficulty ; he did not usually himself take pen in hand, but dictated to an amanuensis, whilst he walked up and down his apartment. In character he was sincere and earnest, in manner apparently cold, but capable of strong feelings, whether of personal affection or of moral indigna- tion. His frequent acts of beneficence were marked by delicacy no less than by liberality. He was a model of filial love and duty, and took to the last the warmest interest in all that concerned the welfare of his friends.

As amoral philosopher Smith cannot be said to have won much acceptance for his fundamental doctrine. This doctrine is that all ourinoral sentiments arise from sympathy, that is, from the principle of our nature “which leads us to enter into the situations of other men and to partake with them in the passions which those situations have a tendency to excite.” Our direct sympathy with the agent in the circumstances in which he is placed gives rise, according to this view, to our notion of the propriety of his action, whilst our indirect sympathy with those whom his actions have benefited or

injured gives rise to our notions of merit and demerit in the agent himself, It seems justly alleged against this system by Dr Thomas Brown that ‘‘ the moral sentiments, the origin of which it ascribes to our secondary feelings of mere sympathy, are assumed as previously existing in the original emotions with which the secondary feelings are said to be in unison.”’ A second objection urged, perhaps with less justice, against the theory is that it fails to account for the authoritative character which is felt to be inherent in our sense of right and wrong—for what Butler calls the ‘‘supremacy of conscience.” But those who most strongly dissent from Smith’s gencral doctrine are warm in their adiniration of the eloquence of his style—sometimes, however, faulty on the side of redundancy— and the felicity of his illustrations. In all its minor details, says Brown, ‘‘the work may be considered as presenting a model of philosophic beauty,” and it is universally admitted that the author has thrown much light on many delicate and subtle phenomena of our moral nature. ‘The minute observation and the rare ingenuity which he shows in dealing with the finer traits of character and the less obvious indications of feeling remind us of the similar qualities exhibited in a different field in the Wealth of Nations.

It is on the latter work that Smith’s fame mainly rests. Under Poniticat Economy (vol. xix. pp. 865-370) will be found a detailed analysis of the economic scheme contained in it, and an examina- tion of its spirit and tendency as a contribution to the philosophy of society. We have there sufficiently exposed the exaggeration whieh represents Smith as the creator of political economy. But the Wealth of Nations is, without doubt, the greatest existing book on that department of knowledge, the only attempt to replace and so antiquate it—that of John Stuart Mill—having, notwithstanding its partial usefulness, on the whole decidedly failed. Buckle, however, goes too far when he pronounces it ‘‘the most important book ever written,” just as he similarly exceeds due measure when he makes its author superior asa philosopher to Hume. Mackintosh more justly said of it that it stands on a level with the treatise De Jure Belli ct Pacis, the Essay on the Human Understanding, and the Spirit of Laws, in the respect that these four works are severally the most conspicuous landmarks in the progress of the sciences with which they deal. And, when he added that the Wealth of Nations was “ perhaps the only book which produced an immediate, general, and irrevocable change in some of the most important parts of the

legislation of all civilized states," he scarcely spoke too strongly if we understand him as referring to its influence as an agent of demolition. It certainly operated powerfully through the harmony of its critical side with the tendencies of the half-century which followed its publication to the assertion of personal freedom and "natural rights." It discredited the economic policy of the past, and promoted the overthrow of institutions which had come down from earlier times, but were unsuited to modern society. As a theoretic treatment of social economy, and therefore asa guide to social reconstruction and practice in the future, it is provisional, not definitive. But here too it has rendered eminent service: it has established many truths and dissipated many obstinate pre- Judices ; it has raised the views of all thinking men on national Wealth to a higher level ; and, when the study of its subject comes to be systematized on the basis of a general social philosophy more complete and durable than Smith's, no contributions to that final construction will be found so valuable as his.

Buckle has the idea that the two principal works of Smith, the Theory of Moral Sentiments and the Wealth of Nations, are mutually complementary parts of one great scheme, in which human nature 1S intended to be dealt with as a whole,—the former exhibiting the operation of the benevolent feelings, the latter of what, by a singular Nomenclature, inadmissible since Butler wrote, he calls "the passion of selfishness," In each division the motor contemplated is regarded aS acting singly, without any interference of the opposite principle.

This appears to be an artificial and misleading notion. Neither in the plan of Smith's university course nor in the well-known passage at the end of his Jforal Sentiments is there any indication of his having conceived such a bipartite scheme. The object of the Wealth of Nations is surely in no sense psychological, as is that of the Moral Sentiments. The purpose of the work is to exhibit social phenomena, not to demonstrate their source in the mental consti- tution of the individual. And Buckle seems to have fallen into the error of confounding ''sympathy " with benevolence, or at least of regarding their spheres as coextensive. It is only in his ethical treatise that

Smith carries back the pursuit of wealth to its ulti- mate motive; and, when he does so, instead of tracing it to a selfish principle, which is to be placed in contrast with sympathy, he ex- pressly declares it to have its origin in ‘‘a regard to the sentiments of mankind”; in other words, he makes it a consequence of the desire of sympathy.

In relation to Smith’s personality, which is at present our princi- pal object, it may be observed that his moral features are exhibited in an interesting way in his great work. The most marked charac- teristics thus reflected are his strong sympathy with the working classes, his contempt for vulgar politics, and his hatred of the spirit of monopoly,—the last manifesting itself especially in his suspicion of the public conduct of merchants and manufacturers. The first of these seutiments breaks out in several places, as in the discussion of the laws of settlement and in the remarks on combinations, and notably in the often-quoted passage whiere he says: ‘‘It is but equity that those who feed, clothe, and lodge the whole body of the people should have such a share of the produce of their own labour as to be themselves tolerably well fed, clothed, and lodged.” He has no respect for that “insidious and crafty animal, vulgarly called a statesman or politician,” and complains that the ‘sneaking arts of underling tradesmen” are erected into political maxims for the conduct of a great empire. ‘‘ All for ourselves and nothing for other people scems in every age of the world to have been the vile maxim of the masters of mankind.” The project of shutting out every other nation from a share in the benefits of our colonial trade he brands as an ‘invidious and malignant” one. He never tires of condemning the ‘‘mean rapacity,” the ‘‘monopolizing spirit,” the ‘‘impertinent jealousy,” the ‘‘ interested sophistry” of the capitalist class. ‘‘Our merchants and manufacturers,” he says—and the remark is not yet out of date—“ complain mucli of the effect of high wages in raising the price, and thereby lessening the sale, of their goods both at home and abroad; they say nothing concerning the bad cffects of high profits; they are silent with respect to the pernicious effects of their own gains; they complain only of those of other people.” ‘Their interest is never exactly the same with that of the public ; they have generally an interest to deceive and even to oppress the public; and they accordingly have upon many occasions both deceived and oppressed it.” This class he regarded, in fact, as corrupting by its selfishness the policy of the European nations and in particular of England, sii as con-

stituting the strength of the opposition, which he feared would be insuperable, to a system of commercial freedom. The general im- pression of its author which the book leaves behind it is that of a large, healthy, and generous nature, earnest in insisting on fair play for all and prompt to denounce with contemptuous vehemence anything which wore the appearance of injustice.

Our principal authority for the biography of Smith is Dugald Stewart's Account of his Life and Writings, originally read (1793) before the Royal Society of Edinburgh, and afterwards prefixed to Sinith's Essays on Philosophical Subjects, as edited by Black and Hutton. Additional particulars are given in Brougham 's Men of Letters and-Science, Burton's Life of Hume, and Alexander Carlyle's Autobiography; and some characteristic anecdotes of him will be found in Memoirs of the Life and Works of Sir John Sinclair (1837). For comments on his Theory of Moral Sentiments, see, besides Stewart, as cited above, Dr T. Brown's Philosophy of the Human Mind, lects. 80 and 81; Sir J. Mackintosh's Dissertation on the Progress of Ethical Philosophy; J. A. Farrer's Adam Smith (1881), in the series entitled English Philosophers; and the art. Erutcs in the present work. On the Wealth of Nations, the student may consult the prefaces to M'Culloch's, Rogers's, and Nicholson's editions of that work; Rogers's Histori- cal Gleanings (1869); the art. "Smith" in Coquelin and Guillaumin's Diction- naire de UV Economie Politique; Bagehot's Economic Studies (1880); and Cossa's Guide to the Study of Political Economy (Eng. trans., 1880), chap. v., where the

author has enumerated the most important memoirs by foreign writers on Smith as an economist. (J. K. 1

SMITH, Apert (1816-1860), an instance of the jour- nalistic rather than the truly literary type of writer, was one of the most popular men of his time; a favourite humourist in the vein of humour then in vogue, but now already rather out of date ; a leading contributor to Punch ; the author of successful books of light social satire ; and, not least, the exponent of " Mont Blanc" in a pre-scientific popular entertainment descriptive of that famous moun- tain. He was born at Chertsey, Surrey, on 24th May 1816, and was educated to follow his father's profession ofasurgeon. Having, in the course of his

medical studies, been to the Hotel Dieu, Paris, his first literary effort was an account of his life there, which appeared in the J/zrror.

172 }

From this time he gradually relinquished his medical work for the more congenial occupation of light literature. He was associated with Punch from its beginning, and was also a regular contributor to Bendley's Miscellany, in

whose pages his first and best book, The Adventures of

Mr Ledbury, first appeared. His other books were A History of Evening Parties, Christopher Tadpole, issued in monthly parts, Pottleton's Legacy, and, as a series of so- called natural histories, Zhe Gent, The Ballet Girl, The Idler upon Town, and The Flirt. Albert Smith also wrote extravaganzas and adapted some of Charles Dickens's stories for the stage. He conducted too for a time a magazine called The Man in the Moon, which was discontinued in 1849. In 1851 he visited the Alps and ascended Mont Blanc, and the year after produced the descriptive enter- tainment before referred to. "China," a similar enter- tainment, was afterwards produced, but less successfully. Smith married in 1859 a daughter of Keeley, the comedian. He died at Fulham, Middlesex, on 23d May 1860, from an attack of apoplexy.

SMITH, AtexanpER (1830-1867), was the most pro- minent representative of the so-called "spasmodic" school of poetry, whose peculiarities first gained for it a hasty repu- tation, and then, having suffered under closer critical exa- mination, it almost as speedily dropped out of mind again. Smith has never yet perhaps had his true position assigned to him. His first book, A Life Drama and other Poems (1853), which made his name, was a work of real promise. Although deficient in dramatic grasp of subject, in restraint of expression, in metrical quality, and although showing too obviously the influence of Keats and Tennyson in certain exaggerations of epithet and phrase, the book yet contains evidence of a poetic faculty which might, under more fortunate conditions, have developed into genuine power. Alexander Smith was one of those writers who require the critical safeguards of the schools to chasten their somewhat importunate energies; and for want of these academic restrictions he wasted his powers in

discursive experiments of not much abiding value. Born at Kilmarnock on the last day of 1830, he received the usual schooling common at that time; and, his parents being too poor to send him to college, he was placed in a linen factory to follow his father's trade of a pattern designer. His literary pro- clivities, however, soon showed themselves, and from time to time his early poems appeared in the Glasgow Citizen, in whose editor, James Hedderwick, he found a sympathiz- ing and appreciative friend. His poems, having attracted the attention also of the Rev. George Gilfillan, found through him an opening in the London Citizen. A Life Drama and other Poems, published in 1858, speedily ran through several editions, and gained Smith the appoint- ment of secretary to Edinburgh university in 1854. In the same year Sydney Dobell, whose name is now familiarly associated with Smith's, came to Edinburgh, and an ac- quaintanceship at once sprang up between the two, which resulted in their collaboration in a book of War Sonnets, inspired by the Crimean War, which was published in 1855. The volumes of verse issued independently by Alexander Smith in the ensuing years did not receive much attention ; their author then turned himself to prose, after publishing City Poems in 1857 and Edwin of Deira, a Northumbrian epic poem, in1861. His first prose work was Dreamthorpe, 1863; it was followed in 1865 by A Summer in Skye, which contains his best prose writing, and is full of a quiet charm and true sympathy with nature. His last work was an experiment in fiction, Alfred Hagart's Household (1866), which ran first through Good Words. In this the same faults of construction, conjoined with the same in- cidental grace of description, that show themselves in his larger poems are repeated. The strain produced by his

literary and other work began to tell towards the end of 1866, and his death followed on 5th January 1867.

A memoir of Smith by P. P. Alexander is prefixed to a volume of remains, entitled Last Leaves, in which will be found a fairly complete account of his life and writings.

SMITH, Corvin (1795-1875), portrait painter, was born at Brechin, Scotland, in 1795. He studied in London in the schools of the Royal Academy and worked in Nolle- kens's studio. He then proceeded to Italy, where he exe- cuted some fine copies from Titian; and at Antwerp he made studies from the works of Rubens. Returning to Scotland in 1827, he settled in Edinburgh, occupying the house and studio which had formerly belonged to Raeburn, Soon he attained a wide practice as a portrait-painter, and among his sitters were Lord Jeffrey, Henry Mackenzie, author of The Man of Feeling, and many of the most cele brated Scotsmen of the time. His portrait of Sir Walter Scott was so popular that he executed some twenty replicas of it, for seven of which he received fresh sittings. His works are distinguished by excellent draftsmanship, by directness and simplicity of treatment, and by well-marked individuality. He died in Edinburgh on 21st July 1875..

SMITH, Hunry Joun SrepuEn (1826-1883), mathema- tician, was born in Dublin on 2d November 1826 and was the fourth child of his parents. When Henry Smith was

just two years old his father died, whereupon his mother

left Ireland for England. Mrs Smith taught her children herself, and until Henry was over eleven he was under her exclusive care and teaching; after that he was educated by private tutors till he went to Rugby in 1841. Whilst under the first of these tutors, in nine months he read all Thucydides, Sophocles, and Sallust, twelve books of Tacitus, the greater part of Horace, Juvenal, Persius, and several plays of Auschylus and Euripides. He also got up six books of Euclid and some algebra, besides reading a considerable quantity of Hebrew and learning the Odes of Horace by heart. On the death of his elder brother in September 1843 Henry Smith left Rugby, and in the end of 1844 gained a scholarship at Balliol College, Oxford. He won the Ireland scholarship in 1848 and obtained a first class in both the classical and the mathematical schools in 1849. He gained the senior mathematical scholarship in 1851. He was elected fellow of Balliol in 1850 and Savilian professor of geometry in 1861, and im 1874 was appointed keeper of the university museum. He was elected F.R.S. in 1861, and was an LL.D. of Cambridge and Dublin. He served on various royal com- missions, and

from 1877 was the chairman of the managing body of the meteorological office. He died at Oxford on 9th February 1883.

After taking his degree he wavered between classics and mathe- matics, but finally chose the latter. After publishing a few short papers relating to theory of numbers and to geometry, he devoted himself to a thorough examination of the writings of Gauss, Le- jeune-Dirichlet, Kummer, &c., on the theory of numbers. The main results of these researches, which occupied him from 1854 to 1864, are contained in his Report on the Theory of Numbers, which appeared in the British Association volumes from 1859 to 1865. This report contains not only a complete account of all that had been done on this vast and intricate subject but also original con- tributions of his own. Some of the most important results of his discoveries were communicated to the Royal Society in two memous upon Systems of Linear Indeterminate Equations and Congruences and upon the Orders and Genera of Ternary Quadratic Forms (Phil. Trans., 1861 and 1867). He did not, however, confine himself to the consideration of forms involving only thrce indeterminates, but succeeded in establishing the principles on which the extension to the general case of 7 indeterminates depends, and obtained the general formule, thus effecting what is probably the greatest ad- vance made in the subject since the publication of Gauss's Disquist- tiones Arithmetice. A brief abstract of Smith's mcthods and re sults appeared in the Proc. Roy. Soc. for 1864 and 1868, In the second of these notices he gives the general formule without de- monstrations. As corollaries to the general formule he adds the formule relating to the representation of a number as a sum of five

squares and also of seven squares. This class of representation ceases when the number of squares exceeds eight. The cases of two, four, and six squares had been given by Jacobi and that of three squares by Eisenstein, who had also given without demon- stration some of the results for five squares. Fourteen years later the French Academy, in ignorance of Smith's work, set the demon- stration and completion of Hisenstein's theorems for five squares as the subject of their ‘‘Grand Prix des Sciences Mathématiques.”

Smith, at the request of a member of the comniission by which the prize was proposed, undertook in 1882 to write out the demonstra- tion of his general theorems so far as was required to prove the re- sults for the special case of five squares. A month after his death,

in March 1883, the prize of 3000 francs was awarded to him. The fact that a question of which Smith had given the solution in 1867, asa corollary from general formule governing the whole class of investigations to which it belonged, should have been set by the French Academy as the subject of their great prize shows how far in advance of his contemporaries his early researches had carried him. Many of the propositions contained in his dissertation are general; but the demonstrations are not supplied for the case of seven squares. He was also the author of important papers in which he extended to complex quadratic forms many of Gauss's in- vestigations relating to real quadratic forms. After 1864 he devoted himself chiefly to elliptic functions, and numerous papers on this subject were published by him in the Proc. Lond. Math, Soc. and elsewhere. At the time of his death he was engaged upon a memoir on the Theta and Omega Funetions, which he left nearly complete.

In 1868 he was awarded the Steiner prize of the Berlin Academy for a geometrical memoir, Sur quelques problémes cubiques et biquadra-

tiques. He also wrote the introduction-to the collected edition of Clifford's Mathematical Papers (1882), The three subjects to which

Smith's writings relate are theory of numbers, elliptic functions,

and modern geometry; but in all that he wrote an ''arithmetical"

mode of thought is apparent, his methods and processes being arith-

metical as distinguished from algebraic. He had the most intense

admiration of Gauss. He was president of the mathematical and

physical section of the British Association at Bradford in 1873 and

of the London Mathematical Society in 1874-76. A memorial edition

of his collected mathematical works is being (1887) printed by the

Oxford university press.

An article in the Spectator of 17th February 1883, written by Lord Justice Bowen, gives perhaps the best idea of Smith's extraordinary personal qualitics and influence, his sound judgment, perfect temper, – gentle and Lelian wisdom, sweetness of character, delicate gaiety of spirit, and brilliant conversational power, which made him one of the most accomplished and attractive ornaments of any edu- cated company in which he moved. :

For further details relating to Henry Smith, reference should be made to

the Fortnightly Review for May 1883 and to the ''Mouthly Notices" of the Roy, Ast. Soc., vol. xliv.

SMITH, Jamus (1775-1839) and Horace (1779-1849), sons of an eminent and prosperous London solicitor, were

born, the former on 10th February 1775 and the latter on

3lst December 1779, both in London. They were joint authors of the Rejected Addresses, described by Horace as "one of the luckiest hits in literature." The occasion of this happy jew d'esprit was the rebuilding of Drury Lane theatre in 1812, after a fire in which it had been burnt down. The managers had offered a prize of £50 for an address to be recited at the reopening in October. Six weeks before that date the happy thought occurred to the brothers Smith of feigning that the most popular poets of the time had been among the competitors and issuing a volume of unsuccessful addresses in parody of their various styles. They divided the task between them, James taking Wordsworth, Southey, Coleridge, and Crabbe, while Byron, Moore, Scott, and Bowles were assigned to Horace.! The parodists were ready with their small volume by October, but they had some difficulty in getting a publisher, although the success of their clever imitations once published was such that seven editions were called for within three months, The Rejected Addresses are the most widely popular

parodies ever published in England, and have taken quite a classical rank in that kind of literature. The brothers fairly divided the honours: the elder brother's Wordsworth is evenly balanced by the younger's Scott, ae

' The particulars of the authorship are given in the 18th edition (1820), and in the memoir of his brother by Horace prefixed to a col- lection of fugitive pieces (1840). James contributed the first stanza to the imitation of Byron, but otherwise they worked independently.

sMivT' Ho

We

and both had a hand in Byron. A striking feature in the parodies is the absence of malice ; none of the caricatured bards took offence, while the imitation is so clever that both Byron and Scott are recorded to have said in effect that they could hardly believe they had not written the addresses ascribed to them.

After this brilliant success James, the elder brother, determined, as he said, ''to leave off a winner" and follow Warburton's advice to Anstey: "Young man, you have written a highly successful work ; never put pen to paper again." He was tempted occasionally to transgress this self-denying ordinance, and made another hit in writing Country Cousins, A Trip to Paris, A Trip to America, and other lively skits for Charles Mathews, earning from the comedian the praise of being "the only man who can write clever nonsense." His social reputation as a wit stood high. He was reputed one of the best of conversers in an age when the art was studied, and it was remarked that he held his own without falling into the great error of wits,—sarcasm. But for all his good-nature he did not wholly escape the Charybdis of great talkers,—the charge of being something of a bore. In his old age the irreverent Fraser's put him in its gallery of living portraits as a gouty and elderly but painstaking joker. He died in London on 26th December 1839,

Horace Smith was less timorously careful of his poetical reputation than his elder brother, whom he survived, and, after making a fortune as a stockbroker, followed in the wake of Scott and wrote about a score of historical novels, —Brambletye House, Tor Hill, Reuben Apsley, Zillah,

The New Forest, Walter Colyton, &e. His sketches of eccentric character are brilliant and amusing; but he was more of an essayist than a story-teller. He began in 1826, when Scott, still retaining his hold on the public, had made suc- cess impossible for imitators with less wealth of historical substance and inferior command of stirring incident. As he went on he encountered such competitors as Bulwer Lytton, Disraeli, Marryat, and Dickens. Still Horace Smith established a fair reputation, and some of his novels may still be found in the smoking-rooms of country houses. He was also a frequent contributor to the WVew Monthly Magazine under the editorship of Campbell. Three volumes of Gareties and Cravities, published in 1826, contain many witty essays both in prose and in verse, but the only single piece that has taken a permanent place is the ‘“ Address to the Mummy in Belzoni’s Exhibition.” There is more of earnest in this than is generally found in his jesting. In private life Horace Smith was not less popular than his brother, though less ambitious of renown as a talker. It was of him that Shelley said: “Is it not odd that the only truly generous person I ever knew who had money enough to be generous with should be a stockbroker 4 He writes poetry and pastoral dramas and yet knows how to make money, and does make it, and is still generous.” Horace Smith died at Tunbridge Wells on 12th July 1849.

SMITH, Jonn (1580-1631), usually distinguished as Captain John Smith, some time president of the English colony in Virginia, was the elder son of George Smith, a well-to-do tenant-farmer on the estate of Lord Willoughby d’Eresby at Willoughby near Alford in Lincolnshire. The life of this Virginian hero falls conveniently into five periods.

The first of these, 1580-1596, that of his early youth, is thus described by himself in his 7’ravels: ‘“‘ He was born [1580] in Willoughby in Lincolnshire and was a scholar in the two free schools of Alford and Louth. His parents, dying [April 1596] when he was thirteen [or rather fifteen | years of age, left him a competent means, which he, not being capable to manage, little regarded. His mind being even then set upon brave adventures, he sold his satchel,

books, and all he had, intending secretly to get to sea, but that his father's death stayed him. But now the guardians of his estate more regarding it than him, he had liberty enough, though no means, to get beyond the sea. About the age of fifteen years,-he was bound an apprentice to Master Thomas Sendall of [King's] Lynn, the greatest merchant of all those parts; but, because he would not presently send him to sea, he never saw his master in eight years after."

The second period, 1596-1604, is that of his adventures in Europe, Asia, and Africa. He first went to Orleans in attendance on the second son of Lord Willoughby. Thence he returned to Paris, and so by Rouen to Havre, where, his money being spent, he began to learn the life of a soldier under Henry IV. of France. On the conclusion of the peace with the League he went with Captain Joseph Duxbury to Holland and served there some time, probably with the English troops in Dutch pay. By this time he had gained a wide experience in the art of war, not merely as an infantry officer, but also in those more technical studies which are now followed by the Royal Engineers. At length he sailed from Enkhuisen to Scotland, and on the voyage had a narrow escape from shipwreck upon Holy Island near Berwick. After some stay in Scotland he returned home to Willoughby, 'where, within a short time being glutted with too much company, wherein he took small delight, he retired himself into a little woody pasture, a good way from any town, environed with many hundred acres of other woods. Here by a fair brook he built a pavilion of boughs, where only in his clothes he lay. His study was Machiavelli's Art of War and Marcus Aurelius; his exercise a good horse with his lance and ring ; his food was thought to be more of venison than anything else; what [else] he wanted his man brought him. The country wondering at such a hermit, his friends per- suaded one Signior Theadora Polaloga, rider to Henry, earl of Lincoln, an excellent horseman and a noble Italian gentleman, to insinuate [himself] into his woodish acquaint- ances, whose languages and good discourse and exercise of riding drew Smith to stay with him at Tattersall… . Thus, when France and the Netherlands had taught him to ride a horse and use his arms, with such rudiments of war as his tender years, in those martial schools, could attain unto, he was desirous to see more of the world, and try his fortune against the Turks, both lamenting and repenting to have seen so many Christians slaughter one another."

Next came his wanderings through France from Picardy to Marseilles. full of pilgrims going to Rome. These, cursing him for a heretic, and swearing they would have no fair weather so long as he was on board, threw him, like another Jonah, ‘nto the sea. He was able to get toa little uninhabited island, from which he was taken off the next morning by a Breton ship of 200 tons going to Alexandria, the captain of which, named La Roche, treated him as a friend. In this ship he visited Egypt and the Levant. On its way back the Breton ship fought a Venetian argosy of 400 tons and captured it. Reaching Antibes (Var) later on, Captain La Roche put Smith ashore with 500 sequins, who then proceeded to see Italy as he had already seen France. Passing through Tuscany he came to Rome, where he saw Pope Clement VIII. at mass, and called on Father R. Parsons. Wandering on to Naples and back to Rome, thence through Tuscany and Venice, he came to Gratz in Styria. There he received information about the Turks who were then swarming through Hungary, and, passing on to Vienna, entered the emperor’s service.

In this Turkish war the years 160] and 1602 soon passed away; many desperate adventures did he go

through, and one in particular covered him with great honour. two armies, as the champion of the Christians, he fought on horseback and killed three Turkish champions in suc- cession. On 18th November 1602, at the battle of Rothen- thurm, a pass in Transylvania, where the Christians fought desperately against an overpowering force of Crim Tatars Smith was left wounded on the field of battle. dress saved him, for it showed that he would be wortha ransom. for a slave and then marched to Constantinople, where he was presented to Charatza Tragabigzanda, who fell in love with him. Fearing dest her mother should sell him, she sent him to her brother Timor, pasha of Nalbrits, on the Don, in Tartary. wrote so much for his good usage that he half suspected as much as she intended ; for she told him, he should there but sojourn to learn the language, and what it was to bea Turk, till time made her master of herself. But the Timor, her brother, diverted all this to the worst of cruelty. For, within an hour after his arrival, he caused his ‘drubman’ to strip him naked, and shave his head and beard so bare as his

hand. bowed like a sickle, was riveted about his neck, and a coat [put on him] with a piece of an undressed skin. more Christian slaves, and nearly a hundred forsados of

There he took ship for Italy in a vessel

[JOHN,

At Regal (Stuhlweissenburg), in the presence of

His rich

As soon as his wounds were cured he was sold

“To her unkind brother this kind lady

A great ring of iron, with a long stalk

made of ulgry’s hair, guarded about There were many

Turks and Moors, and he being the last was the slave of slaves to them all.” While at Nalbrits the English captain

kept his eyes open, and his account of the Crim Tatars is careful and accurate. able estate, as he became a thresher at a grange in a great field, more than a league from the Timor’s house. The pasha, as he oft used to visit his granges, visited him, and

‘So long he lived in this miser-

took occasion so to beat, spurn, and revile him, that for- getting all reason Smith beat out the Timor’s brains with his threshing bat, for they have no flails, and, seeing his estate could be no worse than it was, clothed himself in the Timor’s clothes, hid his body under the straw, filled his knapsack with corn, shut the doors, mounted his horse, and ran into the desert at all adventure.” For eighteen or nineteen days he rode for very life until he reached a Muscovite outpost on the river Don; here his irons were taken off him, and the Lady Callamata largely supplied all his wants. Thence he passed, attracting all the sym- pathy of an escaped Christian slave, through

Muscovy, Hungary, and Austria until he reached Leipsic in Decem- per 1603, There he met his old master, Prince Sigismund, who, in memory of his gallant fight at Regal, gave him a grant of arms and 500 ducats of gold. Thence he wandered on, sightseeing, through Germany, France, and Spain, until he came to Saffi, from which seaport he made an excursion to the city of Morocco and back.

While at Saffi he was blown out to sea on board Captain Merham's ship, and had to go as far as the Canaries. There Merham fought two Spanish ships at once and beat them off. Smith came home to England with him, having a thousand ducats in his purse.

The third period, 1605-1609, is that of Captain Smith's experiences in Virginia. Throwing himself into the colon- izing projects which were then coming to the front, he first intended to have gone out to the colony on the Oyapok in South America; but, Captain Ley dying, and the reinforcement miscarrying, "the rest escaped as they could." Hence Smith did not leave account, But he went heartily into the Virginian project with Captain Bartholomew Gosnold and others. He states that what he got in his travels he spent in colon- izing. 'When I went first to these desperate designs, 1 cost me many a forgotten pound to hire men to go, and

England on this —

ee

:)

— ay gy

8 0 ea

JOHN. |

procrastination caused more to run away than went. I have spared neither pains or money according to my ability, first to procure His Majesty's letters patents, and a com- pany here, to be the means to raise a company to go with me to Virginia, which beginning here and there cost me nearly five

years' [1604-1609] work, and more than five hundred pounds of my own estate, besides all the dangers, miseries, and incumbrances I endured gratis." Two colon- izing associations were formed,—the London Company for South Virginia and the Western Company for North Virginia. Smith was one of the founders of the London Company. The colonies which Sir W. Raleigh had estab- lished at Roanoke and other islands off the American coast had all perished, mainly for want of a good harbour, so that really nothing at all was known of the Virginian coastline when the first expedition left London on 19th December 1606; and therefore the attempt was bound to fail unless a convenient harbour should be found. The expedition consisted of three ships (the " Susan Constant," 100 tons, Captain C. Newport; the "God Speed," 40 tons, Captain B. Gosnold; and a pinnace of 20 tons, Captain J. Ratcliffe), with about 140 colonists and 40 sailors. They made first for the West Indies, reaching Dominica on 24th March 1607. At Nevis, their next stopping place, a gallows was erected to hang Captain Smith on the false charge of conspiracy ; but he escaped, and, though afterwards the lives of all the men who plotted against him were at his mercy, he spared them. Sailing northwards from the West Indies, not knowing where they were, the expedition was most fortunately, in a gale, blown into the mouth of Chesapeake Bay, discover- ing land on 26th April 1607. Anchoring, they found the James river, and, having explored it, fixed upon a site for their capital in the district of the chief or weroance of Paspaheh, its chief recommendation being that there were 6 fathoms of water so near to the shore that the ships could be tied to the trees. Orders had been sent out for the government of the colony in a box, which was opened n 26th April 1607. Captains B. Gosnold, E. M. Wing- field, C. Newport, J. Smith, J. Ratcliffe, J. Martin, and G. Kendall were named to be the council to elect an annual president, who, with the council, should govern. Wingfield was, on 13th May, elected the first president ; and the next day they landed at James Town and com- menced the settlement.

All this while Smith was under restraint, for thirteen weeks in all. His enemies would have sent him home, out of a sham commiseration for him; but he challenged their charges, and so established his innocency that Wingfield was adjudged to give him £200 as damages. After this, on 20th June 1607, Smith was admitted to the council.

As in going to America in those days the great diffi- culty was want of water, so in those colonizing efforts the paramount danger was from want of food. “There were never Englishmen left in a foreign country in such misery as we were in this new discovered Virginia. We watched every three nights [every third night], lying on the bare cold ground, what weather soever came, and warded all the next day, which brought our men to be most feeble wretches. Our food was but a small can of barley sodden in water to five men a day. Our drink, cold water taken out of the river, which was, at a flood, very salt, at a low tide, full of slime and filth, which was the destruction of many of our men.” So great was the mortality that out of 105 colonists living on the 22d June 1607 67 died by the following 8th January. The country they had settled in was sparsely populated by many small tribes of Indians, who owned as their para- mount chief, Powhatan, who then lived at Werowocomoco,

knowledge, and succeeded.

a village on the Pamunkey river, about 12 miles by land from James Town. Various boat expeditions left James Town, to buy food in exchange for copper. They generally had to fight the Indians first, to coerce them to trade, but afterwards paid a fair price for what they bought.

On 10th December 1607 Captain Smith, of whom it is said ‘“‘the Spaniard never more greedily desired gold than he victail,” with nine men in the barge, left James Town to get more corn, and also to explore the upper waters of the Chickahominy. They got the barge up as far as Apocant. Seven men were left in it, with orders to keep in midstream. They disobeyed, went into the village, and one of them, George Cassen, was caught ; the other six, barely escaping to the barge, brought it back to James Town. It so happened that Opecanchan- ough (the brother of Powhatan, whom he succeeded in 1618, and who carried out the great massacre of the English on Good Friday 1622) was in that neighbourhood with two or three hundred Indians on a hunting expedi- tion. He ascertained from Cassen where Smith was, who, ignorant of all this, had, with Jehu Robinson and

Thomas Emery, gone in a canoe 20 miles farther up the river. The Indians killed Robinson and Emery while they were sleeping by the camp fire, and went after Smith, who was away getting food. They surprised him, and, though he bravely defended himself, he had at last to surrender. He then set his wits to confound them with his superior Opecanchanough led him about the country for a wonder, and finally, about 5th January 1608, brought him to Powhatan at Werowoco- moco. “Having feasted him after their best barbarous manner they could, a long consultation was held; but the conclusion was two great stones were brought before Powhatan; then as many as could laid hands on Smith, dragged him to them, and thereon laid his head. And, being ready with their clubs to beat out his brains, Poca-hontas, the king’s dearest daughter, when no entreaty could prevail, got his head in her arms and laid her own upon his to save him from death. Whereat the emperor was contented Smith should live, to make him hatchets, and her bells, beads, and copper; for they thought him as well of all occupations [handicrafts] as themselves.”

The truth of this story was never doubted till 1866, when

the eminent antiquary, Dr Charles Deane of Cambridge,

Mass., in reprinting Smith’s first book, the 7rue Relation of 1609, pointed out that it contains no reference to this hairbreadth escape. Since then many American historians and scholars have concluded that it never happened at all ; and, in order to be consistent, they have tried to prove that Smith was a blustering braggadocio, which is the very last thing that could in truth be said of him. The rescue of a captive doomed to death by a woman is not such an unheard-of thing in Indian stories. If the truth of this deliverance be denied, how then did Smith come back to James Town loaded with presents, when the other three men were killed, George Cassen in particular, in a most horrible manner? And how is it, supposing Sinith’s account to be false, that Pocahontas afterwards frequently, came to James Town, and was next to Smith himself the salvation of the colony? ‘The fact is, nobody doubted the story in Smith’s lifetime, and he had enemies enough.’

a

1 Pocahontas never visited James Town after Smith went to England in October 1609, until she was brought there a state prisoner in April 1613 by Captain 8. Argall, who had obtained possession of her by treachery on the Potomac river. The colony, while treating her well, used her as a means to secure peace with the Indians. In the mean- time, believing Smith to be dead, she fell in love with an English gentleman, John Rolfe, apparently at that time a widower. They Were married about Ist April 1614. Subsequently she embraced Christianity. Sir T. Dale, with Rolfe and his wife, landed at Ply- mouth on 12th June 1616. Before she reached London, Smith

Space fails to describe how splendidly Smith worked after his deliverance for the good of the colony, how he explored Chesapeake Bay and its influents, how (when all others had failed) the presidency was forced on him on 10th September 1608 ; how he tried to seize Powhatan at Werowocomoco on 12th January 1609, but he fled to Orapakes, 40 miles farther off; how with only eighteen men he cowed Opecanchanough in his own house at Pamunkey, in spite of the hundreds of Indians that were there, and made him sell corn; how well he administered the colony all through the spring and summer of 1609.

Meanwhile the establishment of this forlorn hope in Virginia had stirred up a general interest in England, so that the London Company were able in June 1609 to send out 9 ships with 500 colonists. Smith had now got the Indians into splendid order ; but from the arrival on 11th August of the newcomers his authority came to an end. They refused to acknowledge him, and robbed and injured the Indians, who attacked them in turn. Smith did his best to smooth matters, while the rioters were plotting to shoot him in his bed. In the meantime he was away up the river. On his return, “sleeping in his boat, acci- dentally one fired his powder bag, which tore his flesh from his body and thighs, 9 or 10 inches square, in a most pitiful manner; but to quench the tormenting fire frying him in his clothes he leaped overboard into the deep river, where, ere they could recover him, he was nearly drowned.” Thus disabled, he was sent home on 4th October 1609 and never set foot in Virginia again. Nemesis overtook the rioters the winter after he left, which is known in Virginian story as “the starving time.” Out

of 490 persons in the colony in October 1609 all but 60 died by the following March. |

The rest of Smith's life can only be briefly touched upon. The third period, 1610-1617, was chiefly spent in discover- ing Nusconcus, Canada, and Pemaquid in North Virginia, to which, at his solicitation, Prince Charles gave the name of New England. His first object was to fish for cod and barter for furs, his next, to discover the coast-line with the view to settlement. Two attempts, in 1615 and 1617, to settle at Capawuck failed, but through no fault of his. It was in connexion with these projects that the Western Company for North Virginia gave him the title of admiral of New England. We cannot better conclude this sketch of his active operations than in his own words printed in 1631. 'Having been a slave to the Turks; prisoner among the most barbarous savages; after my deliverance commonly discovering and ranging those large rivers and unknown nations with such a handful of ignorant companions that the wiser sort often gave me up for lost ; always in mutinies, wants, and miseries; blown up with gunpowder; a long time a prisoner among the French pirates, from whom escaping in a little boat by myself, and adrift all such a stormy winter night, when their ships were split, more than £100,000 lost which they had taken at sea, and most of them drowned upon the Isle of Rhé—not far from whence I was driven on shore, in my little boat, &c. And many a score of the worst winter months have [I] lived in the fields; yet to have lived near thirty-seven years [1593-1630] in the midst of wars, pesti- lence, and famine, by which many a hundred thousand have died about me, and scarce five living of them that went first with me to Virginia, and yet to see the fruits of my labours thus well begin to prosper (though I have but my

petitioned Queen Anne on her behalf; and itis in this petition of June 1616 that the account of his deliverance by the Indian girl first appears, After a pleasant sojourn of about seven months, being well received both by the court and the people, Pocahontas with her husband embarked for Virginia in the George, Captain S. Argall (her old captor), but she died off Gravesend about February 1617.

s MIT Ss

[JOHN

labour for my pains), have I not much reason, both private] and publicly to acknowledge it, and give God thanks?”

The last period, 1618-1631, of Smith’s life was chiefly devoted to authorship. In 1618 he applied (in vain) to Lord Bacon to be numbered among his servants. In 1619 he offered to lead out the pilgrim fathers to North Virginia ; but they would not have him, he being a Protestant and they Puritans. The London Virginia Company became bankrupt for £200,000 in 1624. A list of his publications will be found at the end of this article. Thus having done much, endured much, and written much, while stil] contemplating a History of the Sea, Captain John Smith died on 21st June 1631, and was buried in St Sepulchre’s Church, London.

Two of the sixty survivors of “the starving time,” Richard Pots and William Phettiplace, thus nobly ext pressed in print, so early as 1612, their estimate of Smith: “What shall I say? but thus we lost him [4th October 1609] that in all his proceedings made justice his first guide and experience his second; ever hating baseness, sloth, pride, and indignity more than any dangers; that never allowed more for himself than his souldiers with him; that upon no danger would send them where he would not lead them himself; that would never see us want what he either had, or could by any means get us; that would rather want than borrow or starve than not pay; that loved actions more than words, and hated falsehood and cozenage than death ; whose adventures were our lives, and whose loss our deaths.”

A fairly complete bibliography will be found in Professor Edward Arber’s reprint of Smith’s Works, Birmingham, 1884, 8vo, The order of their first appearance is, A True Kelation, &c., 1608 (first attributed to a gentleman of the colony, next to Th. Watson, and finally to Captain Smith); 4 Map of Virginia, ed. by William] S[immonds], Oxford, 1612; 4 Description of New England, 1616; New England’s Trials, 1620; New England’s Trials, 2d ed., 1622; The General History of Virginia, New England, and the Summer Isles, 1624; An Accidence for all Young Seamen, 1626 ; the same work recast and enlarged as 4 Sea Grammar, 1627, both works continuing on sale for years, side by side; The True Travels, &e., 1630; Advertisements for the Unexpertenced Planters, &c., 1631. Of some of the smaller texts limited 4to

editions have been published in the United States by Dr C. Deane, J. Carter Brown, and others. (E. A.)

SMITH, Joun Rapwaet (1752-1812), English painter and mezzotint engraver, a son of Thomas Smith of Derby, the landscape painter, was born in 1752. He was apprenticed to a linen draper in Derby, and afterwards pursued the same business in London, adding, however, to his income by the production of miniatures. He then turned to engraving, and executed his plate of the Public Ledger, which had great popularity, and was followed by his mezzotints of Edwin the Minstrel (a portrait of Thomas Haden), after Wright of Derby, and Mercury Inventing the Lyre, after Barry. He reproduced some forty of the works of Reynolds, some of these plates ranking among the masterpieces of the art of mezzotint, and he was ap-pointed engraver to the Prince of Wales. Adding to his artistic pursuits an extensive connexion as a_print-dealer and publisher, he would soon have acquired wealth had it not been for his dissipated habits. He was passionately attached to field-sports, pugilism, and the stage, and was a boon companion of George Morland, whose figure-pieces he excellently mezzotinted. He executed many original portraits in chalks, and painted subject-pictures such as the Unsuspecting Maid, Inattention, and the Moralist, exhibiting in the Royal Academy from 1779 to 1790. Upon the decline of his business as a printseller he made a tour as an itinerant portrait painter through the northern and midland counties of England, producing much hasty and indifferent work, and settled in Doncaster, where he died on 2d March 1812.

As a mezzotint engraver Smith occupies the very first rank. His

ee

oe

SEE aa

SYDNEY. |

prints are delicate, excellent in drawing, and finely expressive of colour, His small full-lengths in crayons and his portraits of Fox, Horne Tooke, Sir

Francis Burdett, and the group of the duke of Devonshire and family support his claims as a successful drafts- man and painter. He was possessed of a very thorough knowledge

of the principles and history of art, and was a brilliant conversa- |

tionalist.

SMITH, JoszepH. See Mormons.

SMITH, Sypney (1771-1845), one of the founders of the Edinburgh Review, and one of the wittiest talkers and political writers of his generation, was the son of an English country gentleman, and was born at Woodford in Essex on 3d June 1771. His father, a man of restless ingenuity and activity, ‘very clever, odd by nature, but still more odd by design,” who bought, altered, spoiled, and sold about nine- teen different estates in England, had talent and eccentricity enough to be the father of such a wit as Sydney Smith on the strictest principles of heredity ; but Sydney was wont him- self to attribute not a little of his constitutional gaiety to an infusion of French blood, his maternal grandfather being a French Protestant refugee of the name of Ollier, who could not speak a word of English. Sydney was the second of a family of four brothers and one sister, all remarkable for their talents. While two of the brothers, ‘‘ Bobus” and Cecil, were sent to Eton, Sydney was sent with the youngest to Winchester, where he rose to be captain of the school, and with his brother so distinguished himself that their schoolfellows signed a round-robin “refusing to try for the college prizes if the Smiths were allowed to contend for them any more, as they always gained them.” From Winchester Sydney went to New College, Oxford, and in due course became a fellow of his college. It was his wish then to read for the bar, but his father would add nothing to his fellowship, and he was reluctantly compelled to enter the church, and became a curate in a small village in the midst of Salisbury Plain. From this dreary in- cumbency he was relieved after two years, and conducted to the scene of the foundation of the Ldinburgh Review by a combination of accidents. The squire of the parish in- vited the new curate to dine, was astonished and charmed to find such a man in such a place, and engaged him after a time as tutor to his eldest son. ‘“‘It was arranged,” he afterwards said, ‘that I and his son should proceed to the university of Weimar. We set out, but before

reaching our destination Germany was disturbed by war, and in stress of politics we put into Edinburgh.” This was in 1797. In Edinburgh, as everywhere else, Smith made numer- ous friends, whose cordiality was in no way abated by his constant quizzing of the national foibles and peculiarities ; and among those friends were the future Edinburgh Re- viewers. It was towards the end of his five years’ residence in Edinburgh, in the elevated residence of the then Mr Jeffrey, ‘‘in the eighth or ninth story or flat in a house in Buccleuch Place,” that Sydney Smith proposed the setting up of a review as an organ for the opinions and a vehicle for the ambition of the young malcontents with things as they were. ‘I was appointed editor,” he says in the preface to the collection of his contributions, ‘‘and remained long enough in Edinburgh to edit the first number [October 1802] of the Hdinburgh Review. The motto I proposed for the Review was ‘Tenui musam meditamur avena’—‘ We cultivate literature on a little oatmeal.’ But this was too near the truth to be admitted, and so we took our present grave motto from Publius Syrus, of whom none of us had, Tam sure, ever read a single line.” He continued to write for the Review for the next quarter of a century, and his brilliant articles were a main element in its success. They represent the very perfection of journalism. They were not merely the most readable, the most entertaining: the solidity of substance and the seriousness of purpose were quite as indisputable as the brilliancy of the execution.

The writer seemed to tackle the gravest of political and social questions in the highest of spirits, yet he never lost sight of his aim in purposeless buffoonery ; and, however heartily the reader might be made to laugh, the laughter was always directed at what seemed to the writer absurd and unreasonable opinion. It was remarked of his wit in conversation that the butts of it were often seen to laugh as heartily as the audience; there was nothing base and personal in Sydney Smith’s raillery. The same with his writing when it was anonymous. His wonderful powers of humorous exaggeration were such as to detach a ridicu- lous opinion as far as possible from its human incarnation and present it in the bare essence of its

absurdity. This was his habit as a controversialist ; and, when his purpose was simply to convey information, to give the gist of a book of travels, or a system of education, or a body of statistics, he was unequalled in the art of amusing the reader with ludicrous images in the most unexpected places without departing from the main lines of a most clear, orderly, and instructive exposition. The fact is that the serious didactic purpose in all Sydney Smith's writing and the closeness of his adherence to the matter in hand are the main obstacles to the living permanence of his fame as the writer of the best colloquial prose of his generation ; for though his range of topics was wide—political, ecclesi- astical, educational, geographical, and otherwise miscellane- ous—they were all of immediate, practical, and passing interest, and his remarks were pushed home to the life of the time so closely as to have comparatively little inde- pendent interest for posterity.

Most of Sydney Smith's contributions to the Ldinburgh Review were sent from the country parish of Foston-le-Clay in Yorkshire, where he spent the best part of his life. He left Edinburgh for good in 1803, when the education of his pupils was completed ; and, yielding to his wife's con- fidence in his powers—he had married Miss Pybus, an English lady of good family, while still unsettled in life— adventured on London, where he rapidly became known as a preacher, a lecturer, and a social lion. His success as a preacher, although so marked that there was often not standing room in the church in Berkeley Square, where he conducted the morning service, was not gained by any sacrifice of dignity: there was no eccentricity, nothing sensational in his preaching; it was a pure triumph of good sense, right feeling, earnestness, and freshness of pulpit oratory. He lectured on moral philosophy at the Royal Institution for three seasons, from 1804 to 1808 ; and here also, handling the ordinary topics of a philosophy chair in a Scotch university, he treated them with such vigour, freshness, and liveliness of illustration that the London world crowded to Albemarle Street to hear him. He made no pretence to originality, and in the main followed Dugald Stewart, whose lectures he had attended in Edinburgh ; but there is more originality as well as good sense in his lectures, especially on such topics as imagination and wit and humour, than in many more pre- tentious systems of philosophy. With the brilliant re- putation that Sydney Smith had acquired in the course of a few seasons in London, he would probably have

obtained some good preferment had he been on the powerful side in politics. His Whig friends came into office for a short time in 1806, and presented him with the living of Foston- le-Clay in Yorkshire. He shrank from this banishment for a time, and discharged his parish duties through a curate; but Mr Percival's Residence Act was passed in 1808, and, after trying in vain to negotiate an exchange, he quitted London in 1809 and moved his household to Yorkshire. His most famous single production, Peter Plymley's Letters on the subject of Catholic emancipation, ridiculing the opposition of the country clergy, appeared

before this migration. From being the idol of London society to being the pastor of a country parish with no educated neighbour within 7 miles was a violent change ; but Sydney Smith accommodated himself cheerfully to his new circumstances, and won the hearts of his parishioners as quickly as he had conquered a wider world. Not the least entertaining chapter in his daughter's biography of him is the account of his Yorkshire life. An interest- ing contrast might be drawn between it and Carlyle's life in somewhat similar circumstances at Craigenputtock. Sydney Smith's life at Foston, with its cheerful energy and ingenuity, its vigorous jesting at difficulties and eccen- tric ways of conquering them, is of much better example, and moralists might do worse than put the story into form for general edification.!

Sydney Smith, after twenty years' service in Yorkshire, obtained preferment at last from a Tory minister, Lord Lyndhurst, who presented him with a canonry in Bristol cathedral in 1828, and afterwards enabled him to exchange Foston for the living of Combe Florey near Taunton. From this time he discontinued writing for the Ldinburgh Review on the ground that it was more becoming in a dignitary of the church to put his name to what he wrote. It was expected that when the Whigs came into power Sydney Smith would be made a bishop. There was nothing in his writings, as in the case of Swift, to stand in the way, for with all his humour and high spirits he had always, as he said himself, fashioned his manners and conversation so as not to bring discredit on his reverend profession. He had been most

sedulous as a parochial clergyman. Still, though he was not without warm friends at head- quarters, the opposition was too strong for them. One of the first things that Lord Grey said on entering Downing Street was, “Now I shall be able to do something for Sydney Smith”; but he was not able to do more than appoint him to a prebendal stall at St Paul’s in exchange for the one of inferior value he held at Bristol. Lord Melbourne is reported to have said that there was nothing he more regretted than the not having made Sydney Smith a bishop. Some surprise must be felt now that Sydney Smith’s reputation as a humourist and wit should have caused any hesitation about elevating him to the episcopal dignity, and perhaps he was right in thinking that the real obstacle lay in his being known as “a high-spirited, honest, uncompromising man, whom all the bench of bishops could not turn upon vital questions.” With characteristic philosophy, when he saw that the promotion was doubt- ful, he made his position certain by resolving not to be a bishop and definitely forbidding his friends to intercede for him, This loss and the much more painful loss of his eldest son did not destroy the cheerfulness of his later life. He retained his high spirits, his wit, practical energy, and powers of argumentative ridicule to the last. His Letters to Archdeacon Singleton on the Ecclesiastical Commission (1837), and his Petition and Letters on the repudiation of debts by the State of Pennsylvania (1843), are as bright and trenchant as his best contributions to the Edinburgh Review. Smith died in London on 22d February 1845.

Lady Holland’s Memoir of her father, containing such specimens of his table talk as give one some idea of his charm and worth as a mirthful companion and philosopher, is one of the most interest- ing of biographies. A cheap edition of his Works was published in 1869. (W. M.)

SMITH, Str Tuomas (1512-1577), the contemporary and friend of Sir John Cheke, was born at Saffron-Walden in Essex in 1512. He became a fellow of Queens’ College, Cambridge, in 1531, and was afterwards appointed to read the public Greek lecture, in the discharge of which function

1 See Lady Holland’s Memoir, chaps. v., vi. Lady Holland, Sydney

Smith’s eldest daughter, was the wife of Sir Henry Holland, the famous physician, —not of Lord Holland, as is sometimes absurdly stated.

he first introduced the new Greek pronunciation,which soon became universal in England. After studying in France and Italy and taking a degree in law at Padua, he wag appointed first regius professor of civil law in Cambridge in 1542. During Somerset's protectorate he entered public life and was sent as ambassador first to Brussels and after- wards to France. In 1548 he was made a secretary of state and knighted. On the accession of Mary he was deprived of all his offices, but in the succeeding reign was frequently employed in public affairs. He died in 1577.

His best-known work, entitled De Republica Anglorwm: the Maner of Government or Polieie of the Realme of England, was pub- lished posthumously in 1583, and passed through many editions, His epistle to Gardiner, De recta et emendata linguex Grace pro- nunciatione, was printed at Paris in 1568; the same volume includes his dialogue De recta et emendata lingue Anglicanex seriptione,

SMITH, Witt1am (1769-1839), called "the father of English geology," and among his acquaintances "Stratum Smith," will be generally remembered as the framer and author of the first complete geological map of England and Wales, and as the discoverer of the principle of the identifi- cation of strata by their included organic remains. He was born at Churchill in Oxfordshire on 23d March 1769. De- prived of his father, an ingenious mechanic, before he was eight years old, he depended upon his father's eldest brother, who was but little pleased with his nephew's love of collecting " pundribs" (Z'erebratulz) and " pound-stones" or "quoit-stones" (large Echinites, frequently employed as a pound weight by dairywomen), and had no sympathy with his propensity for carving sundials on the soft brown "oven-stone" of his neighbourhood. William became a mineral surveyor and civil engineer. In the former capa- city he traversed the Oolitic lands of Oxfordshire and Gloucestershire, the Lias clays and red marls of Warwick-shire, and other districts, studying their varieties of strata and soils. In 1791 he surveyed an estate in Somersetshire and observed the strata of the district. In 1793 he executed the surveys and completed the levellings for the line of a proposed canal, in the course of which he confirmed a previous

supposition, that the strata lying above the coal were not horizontal, but inclined in one direction—to the eastwards—so as to terminate successively at the surface, and to resemble on a large scale the ordinary disposition of the slices of bread and butter on a breakfast plate—an illustration which he was wont to use on all occasions.

On being appointed engineer to the Somerset Coal Canal – in 1794, he was deputed to make a tour of observation with relation to inland navigation. During this tour, which occupied nearly two months, and extended over 900 miles, he carefully examined the geological structure of the country, and corroborated his preconceived generaliza- tion of a settled order of succession in the several strata, a continuity of range at the surface, and a general declina- tion eastwards. Five years subsequently he prepared @ tabular view of the Order of the Strata, and their embedded Organic Remains, in the neighbourhood of Bath, examined and proved prior to 1799. From this period to 1812 he was completing and arranging the data for his large Geological Map of England and Wales, with part of Scot- land, which appeared in 1815, in fifteen sheets, engraved on a scale of 5 miles to 1 inch, The map was reduced to smaller form in 1819; and from this date to 1822 separate county geological maps were published in succes- sive years, the whole constituting a Geological Atlas of England and Wales. In January 1831 the Geological Society of London conferred on Smith the first Wollaston medal; and the Government, at the request of several English geologists, conferred upon him a life-pension of £100 per annum. The degree of LL.D. he received from Dublin, at the meeting of the British Association in that city in 1835. At such meetings he was nearly always

present. In 1838 he was appointed one of the commis- sioners to select building stone for the new Houscs of Parliament. The last years of his life were spent at Hackness (of which he made a good geological map), near Scarborough, and in the latter town. His usually robust health failed in 1839, and on 28th August of that year he died at Northampton. He once said he was born on the Oolite, and should wish to be buried on it; and so he was, at Northampton.

His Memoirs by Professor John Phillips appeared in 1844.

SMITH, Witt1am Henry (1808-1872), best known as the author of Thorndale, is one of those thinkers and students whose work, whilst scarcely recognized in their own day and soon all but overlooked in the larger per- spective of history, is yet of real value for an appreciation of the intellectual character of the time. The literary pro- duction of which Thorndale is the most representative example affords a moral countenance to contemporary workers in philosophy which is invaluable, but which for obvious reasons can never be exactly appraised. With a fine and reflective, rather than robust and active, intel- ligence, Smith deals suggestively in the form of conversa- tion—which he adopts in Thorndale and in his later book Gravenhurst—with the problem of good and evil, with materialism and idealism, with most of the subtle modern perplexities in the interaction of religion, philosophy, and science. But his more exact contributions to thought, such as the Discourse on the Ethics of the School of Paley and the Hssays on Knowing and Feeling, do not work out anything like a complete system, and are somewhat lacking in intellectual grip. Smith also wrote several books of yerse and two plays, one of which, Athelwold, was produced by Macready in 1842. Much graceful reflexion and a true feeling for nature are found in his verse, but it lacks energy. Smith spent a serene uneventful life, chiefly in the studious seclusion which he loved, but which must have tended to foster the inactive tendencies that led him to call himself playfully in his latter days “the snail.” He was born at Hammersmith in 1808 in comfortable sur- roundings, his father being a retired merchant ; his mother was of German extraction, with a vein of mysticism, which is worth noticing in view of the son’s metaphysical tend- encies, He was sent in 1821 to Glasgow, where Byron’s poetry and Scottish metaphysics seem to have had most mfluence upon hin. Then he entered a lawyer’s office, in which he remained for five years. His first writings ap- peared in the Literary Gazette and in the Athenxum, to which he contributed under the name of ‘ Wool-gatherer,” attracting some attention by the delicacy and finish of his style. His ambition was at the outset chiefly poetical, however, and, when his first book appeared and was almost completely ignored, he dug a grave and buried the unsold copies in a fit of Byronic despondency. JLrnesto, a philo- sophical romance, also belongs to this early period. In 1836 he wrote for the Quarterly Review, and in 1839 he formed a connexion with Blackwood’s Magazine, which lasted for thirty years, during the latter part of which he acted as its philosophical critic. In

1846 a visit to Italy led to the writing of a tale entitled Mildred, which Was too purely reflective to be successful. In 1851 he declined the chair of moral philosophy at Edinburgh, having determined a year or two previously to retire to the

English Lake district, there to study in seclusion. There

he completed Thorndale, which was published in 1857. 7ravenhurst appeared in 1862; a second edition contained & memoir of the author by his wife. He died at Brighton on 28th March 1872.

SMITH, Str Winuram Sipney (1764-1840), English admiral, was the second son of Captain John Smith of the Guards, and was born at Westminster on 21st July

1764. He entered the navy, according to his own account, “at the beginning of the American War,” being only about eleven years of age. For his bravery under Rodney: in the action near Cape St Vincent in January 1780, he was on 25th September appointed lieutenant of the “ Alcide.” After serving in the actions against the French fought by Graves off Chesapeake in 1781 and by Rodney at the Leeward Islands in 1782, he was on 6th May of the latter year promoted to be commander of the ‘‘ Fury ” sloop, and on 18th October advanced to the rank of captain. His ship having been paid off in the beginning of 1784, he spent two years in France and afterwards visited Spain. From 1790 to 1792 he was employed in advising the king of Sweden in the war with Russia, receiving for his services the honour of knighthood. After his return to England he was sent on a mission to Constantinople, and, having joined Lord Hood at Toulon from Smyrna in December 1793, he burnt the enemy’s ships and arsenal. In the following years he cleared the Channel of French privateers; but, having with the boats of his squadron boarded in Havre-de-Grace harbour a lugger which was driven by the tide above the French forts, he was on 19th April 1796 compelled to surrender and sent a prisoner to Paris. By means of forged orders for his removal to another prison he made his escape from the Temple, and, crossing the Channel in a small skiff picked up at Havre, arrived in London on 8th May 1798. In Octo- ber he was sent as

plenipotentiary to Constantinople. Learning of Buonaparte's approach to St Jean d'Acre, he hastened to its relief, and on 16th March 1799 captured the enemy's flotilla, after which he successfully defended the town against several furious attacks of the French, compel- ling Napoleon on 20th May to raise the siege and retreat in disorder, leaving all his artillery behind. For this bril- liant exploit he received the special thanks of the Houses of Parliament and was awarded an annuity of £1000. Subsequently he co-operated with Abercromby, under whom he served as brigadier-general at the battle of Aboukir, where he was wounded. On his return to England he was in 1802 elected M.P. for the city of Rochester. In March 1803 he was commissioned to watch the preparations of the French for an invasion of England. Having on 9th Novem- ber 1805 been promoted to be rear-admiral of the blue, he was in the following January despatched on secret ser- vice for the protection of Sicily and Naples. He relieved Gaeta and captured Capri, but on 25th January 1807 received orders to proceed to Malta, whence he joined Sir John Duckworth, who was sent to act against the Turks. On 7th February, with the rear division of the squadron, he destroyed the Turkish fleet and spiked the batteries off Abydos. In November following he was sent to blockade the Tagus and was mainly instrumental in embarking the Portuguese prince regent and royal family and sending them under safe protection to Rio de Janeiro, after which he was sent as commander-in-chief to the coast of South America. On 31st July 1810 he was made vice-admiral of the blue and on 18th July 1812 was despatched as second in command under Sir Edward Pellew to the Mediterranean, but the expedition was uneventful. His term of active service practically closed in 1814, He was made K.C.B. in 1815 and in 1821 admiral. The later years of his life were spent at Paris, where he died on

26th May 1840. See Barrow's Life of Admiral Sir W.S. Snvith, 2 vols., 1848.

SMOKE ABATEMENT. The nuisance created by coal History.

smoke seems to have been recognized in London as early as the reign of Queen Elizabeth ; but it is only in more modern times that the question has come to be regarded as one of real practical importance, and even yet it is far from receiving that general attention which it demands.

Com- A knowledge of the nature of coal and of the chemical | ment is thus seen to resolve itself into the problem of the ae changes that it undergoes when burnt is essential for an | production of perfect combustion.

In 1785 the first smoke-abating invention was patented by James Watt, who, as the inventor of the steam-engine, is responsible for so many boiler fires and so much consump- tion of coal. In 1815 Cutler patented the first would-be smokeless grate for domestic purposes ; and his principle of feeding underneath was afterwards adopted by Dr Neil Arnott in a grate which has now been in use in one form or another for more than half a century. There is now a vast number of such inventions, good and bad. In 1819 the attention of parliament was directed to the question, and a select committee was appointed “to inquire how far persons using steam-engines and furnaces could erect them in a manner less prejudicial to public health and comfort.” This committee gave an encouraging report. In 1843 another select committee recommended the introduction of a bill prohibiting the production of smoke from furnaces and steam-engines. In 1845 yet another select committee reported that such an Act could not in the existing state of affairs be made to apply to dwelling-houses. The Acts of 1845 and 1847 followed as the results of these inquiries ; and since then there has been much legislation brought to bear on factories and railways. The results have been most beneficial; but very much still remains to be done. One is apt to think that, because steam-engines and fac- tories consume individually much more coal than dwelling- houses, they alone are responsible for the smoke nuisance, forgetting how greatly the dwelling-houses outnumber the factories. In reality there is little doubt that domestic fires are mainly responsible for the smoky condition of the atmosphere of our towns; and they for the most part continue to evolve smoke undeterred by legislation or scientific invention. In 1881, however, a movement was commenced by the National Health Society and the Kyrle Society, which resulted in a great smoke-abatement exhi- bition being held at South Kensington. At the close of the exhibition a national smoke-abatement institution, with offices in London, was incorporated by authority of the Board of Trade.

water-vapour, (2) carbonic acid, (3) nitrogen, and (4) sulphurous acid, the first of which contains all the hydro- gen originally present in the coal, the second all the carbon, the fourth all the sulphur, while the nitrogen is liberated as such together with the very much larger volumes of nitrogen derived from the air which has sup- plied the necessary oxygen. All these products of com. bustion are discharged through the chimney.

Two things are necessary for the ensuring of such com- plete combustion, viz., an adequate, but not too large, supply of air, properly adniinistered, and the maintenance of the requisite temperature. In practice, however, these conditions are never perfectly fulfilled, and consequently the combustion of coal is always more or less imperfect and gives rise to a complex mixture of vapours. This

mixture contains not only the combustion products already –

mentioned but also the following unburnt or partly burnt distillation products :—(5) hydrogen, (6) hydrocarbons, (7) carbonic oxide, which contains a lower proportion of oxygen than carbonic acid, (8) unburnt carbon in a very finely divided state,—and also considerable volumes of unused air.

Usually the name “smoke” is applied to this vaporous Smoke.

mixture discharged from a chimney only when it contains a sufficient amount of finely divided carbon to render it dark-coloured and distinctly visible. The quantity, how- ever, of this particular ingredient is apt to be overrated. It always bears an extremely small proportion to the vast volumes of water-vapour, carbonic acid, and nitrogen with which it is mixed; it probably never amounts, even in the worst cases, to 3 per cent. of the weight of the coal from which it is formed ; and its importance, reckoned in terms of so much fuel wasted, is certainly not greater than that of the unburnt hydrogen and hydrocarbons. It is per- haps best to use the name “smoke” for all the products of imperfect combustion (5 to 8) which are avoidable, as con- trasted with the necessary and unavoidable ingredients (1 to 4) of the mixture. The problem of smoke abate-

The first advantage to be gained by the solution of this Adva problem is an important saving in fuel. It has been cal. tages | culated that at least twice as much coal is used in boiler .

a ; ; , smok(| fires and six times as much in domestic fires as is theore- abate

understanding of the smoke problem. More detailed in- formation on these points is given under Coat, where the several varieties are described. For the purposes of this article coals may be classified as smoke-producing and

=:

smokeless, the former including all those varieties most commonly used as fuel. The elementary constituents of such coals are carbon (generally about 80 per cent. of the whole), hydrogen, nitrogen, oxygen, and sulphur ; and they also contain a varying quantity of earthy impurity or ash. The process which occurs in a coal fire consists of two dis- tinct operations. The first, which requires a comparatively low temperature and is independent of the presence of air, is one of destructive distillation, and is similar to that which occurs in the retorts of gasworks. It results in the decom- position of the coal, and in the rearrangement of its con- stituent elements and the formation of the following sub- stances :—(1) hydrogen, marsh gas, carbonic oxide, olefiant gas, benzine, other hydrocarbons of the type of marsh gas or of benzine, water,—all of which are either gaseous at the temperature at which they are formed or capable of being converted into gas at somewhat higher temperatures, and all of which are combustible except the water ; (2) ammonia and other compounds of nitrogen, and certain compounds of sulphur, which are also volatile and combustible ; (3) coke, which consists of carbon (and ash) and is non- volatile but combustible. It is these products of distilla- tion, not the coal itself, that burn, in the strict sense of the word ; and this second process requires the presence of air and also a much higher temperature than the first. Tf the combustion is perfect, the only products are (1)

tically required for the production of the effects obtained. ment.

A considerable portion of this loss is due to causes other than those that can be treated of here, aud some is cer- tainly unavoidable ; but there is no doubt that much of this enormous waste could be prevented by improved methods of combustion, such as would solve the smoke problem. The second advantage to be looked for is @ great gain in cleanliness and public

convenience. Not only would there be an end to sooty chimneys but the atmo- sphere of towns would no longer be polluted as it is now by the discharge of unburnt carbon, whose total quantity is enormous, though the amount contained in any given puff of smoke is very small. The ‘London fog” would be a thing of the past,—not because fogs would become any less frequent than now in London and other large cities, but because they would lose their distinctive char- acter of grimy opacity. It is often stated that these fogs are caused by the smoke that blackens them; but this is an error. The combustion of coal is certainly responsible for their existence, but it is the sulphur of the coal (oxidized ultimately to sulphuric acid), and not the carbon, that is the active agent. And so long as coal is burnt at all this manufacture of sulphuric acid and of fogs must continue; it is not to be got rid of by improved methods of combustion, though the character of the fogs may be materially altered for the better. The evil effects of town

| ejods joke

eh. t

air on plant life and human lungs, also often attributed to preventible smoke, are in like manner due to this non-

‘preventible sulphuric acid. The great gain in cleanliness,

however, that would follow the abolition of smoke cannot be overrated.

The methods that have been suggested for the abolition of smoke may be divided into two great classes, viz., those that seek to attain this end by improving the appliances for the burning of bituminous coal, and those that propose to abolish its use and substitute for it some other kind of fuel. The proposals of the first class may be divided into those applicable to domestic purposes and those applicable to boiler fires and other large-scale operations. Those of the second class may be divided according to the nature of the fuel which they suggest. The innumerable inventions of the first class depend for their success (so far as they are successful) on the attention bestowed on the scientific requisites for complete combustion,

viz., a sufficient but not too great supply of air, the thorough admixture of this air with the products of the destructive distillation of the coal, and the maintenance of a high temperature within the fire. In our old and crude methods the facts which most militate against the attainment of these desiderata are—(1)that large masses of fresh fuel are continually being thrown on at the top, which cool down the fire just at that point where highest temperature is required ; (2) that the products of the distillation of this fresh fuel, heated from below, do not get properly mixed with air till they have been drawn up the chimney; (3) that unduly large volumes of cold air are continually being sucked up through the fire, cooling it and carrying its heat away from where it is wanted, and yet without remedying the second evil. In the improved methods regularity of supply of both fuel and air is sought so as to maintain a steady evolution of distillation products, a steady temperature, and a steady and complete combustion. In many cases it is sought to warm fresh air before it enters the room by a regenerative system, the heat being taken from the escaping gases which would otherwise carry it up the chimney ; and in some cases the air which feeds the fire is heated in the same way.

We cannot here discuss the merits of individual inven- tions ; but we may summarize the chief results of the tests applied at the South Kensington Exhibition. These tests, for domestic grates and stoves, included a chemical ex- amination of the chimney gases, observations of the “smoke-shade” as indicating the proportion of unburnt carbon, and a record of the amount of coal burnt, of the rise of temperature produced, of the radiation, and of the amount of heat lost by being carried away through the chimney. Domestic grates and stoves were divided into six classes as follows :—(1) open grates having ordinary bottom grids and upward draught ; (2) open grates having solid floors (adapted for “slow combustion”) and upward draught ; (3) open grates fed from below,—supplied with fresh fuel beneath the incandescent fuel ; (4) open grates fed from the back or from the sides or from hoppers ; (5) Open grates having downward or backward or lateral draught ; (6) close stoves. Each of these classes was sub- divided according as the apparatus was “‘air-heating ” or * non-air-heating,” 7.e., according as an attempt was or was not made to save heat on the regenerative principle. This attempt does not appear to have been distinctly successful many class except the fifth ; indeed the evidence of the tests as a whole is rather against the air-

heating principle. The following table gives the average results of tests for each class and sub-class as regards general rise of tempera- ture and radiation per pound of coal and smoke-shade. The figures under the last head refer to a standard of shades ranging from 0 (smoke imperceptible) to 10 (black and dense). It was found in practice that the results of

this smoke-shade test were in general accord with those of the chemical examination of the chimney gases. The letters “a” and “n” in the first column signify air-heating and non-air-heating respectively, the average results for the whole class being given before those for each sub-class. All the experiments were made with Wallsend coal, a fair representative of the bituminous coals. —

Average rise of | Average radia- (Gin, No. of appli-| temp. per tb of | tion per tb of Average ances tested.| coal per hour, | coal per hour, | smoke-shade. in degrees Fahr.| in degrees Fahr.

a 19 2°88 3°58 3°01 wae 9 3°37 2°88 3°22 ~ i 10 2°45 4°21 2°78 2 12 2°99 4:07 8°23 4 ® 2 2°81 3°93 4°11 Ae al 10 8‘02 4:09 3°09 3n 5 3°81 3°61 2°82 me none “30 aa 560 4 6 3°05 3°14 2°66 ya 2 2°41 2°42 2°28 4 0 4 3°37 3°50 2°88 5 18 3°38 3°70 2°73 ya 11 3°45 4:00 2-29 oil 7 3°28 3°22 3°21 10 4:14 1°66 211

” 2 3°79 1:78 1°58 a 8 423 1°64 2:25

1-5 (total

average). 60 3°22 3°62 2°89

From this table the following facts, among others, may be deduced :—(a) the air-heating principle has not been applied with success except in class 5; (6) close stoves (class 6) are superior to open grates (total average of classes 1-5) in respect of freedom from smoke and of general heating effect, but they are greatly inferior in radiating power,—a deficiency which partly explains their unpopularity in the United Kingdom ; (c) the “slow-com- bustion” principle gives a high radiation factor, but is otherwise not

successful; (d) the class of air-heating grates with downward, backward, or lateral draughts is, on the whole, most efficient.

Much attention has been devoted for many years to the Boiler question of how to work boiler fires, both for locomotives fires.

and for fixed appliances, with the least possible production of smoke and the greatest possible evaporative power. Here the desiderata are essentially the same as in the case of domestic fires, viz., adequate admixture of the com- bustible vapours given off by the coal with the necessary air and the maintenance of a high temperature ; and the principles involved are consequently also the same, though the appliances are necessarily different. These improve- ments may be all classed under one or other of two heads, according as the mode of supplying the fuel or the mode of supplying the air is the subject of the improvement. These two kinds of improvement may of course be com- bined. The article FurNAcE may be consulted ; see also STEAM-ENGINE, sect. ‘ Boilers.”

In the old forms of furnace fresh fuel, as it is wanted, Mechani-

is supplied by hand labour, the furnace doors being opened 1 and large quantities of coal thrown in. is the inrush of great volumes of cold air, which, aided by the equally cold fuel, lowers the general temperature of the furnace. Mechanical stokers meet this difficulty by supplying the coal regularly in small quantities at a time. They may be divided into those which deliver the coal at the front and gradually push it backward, those which scatter it generally over the surface of the grate, and those which raise it from below so that the products of its dis- tillation pass through the already incandescent fuel. The mechanism by which these results are attained is often of a complex nature.

It is generally recognized that air cannot be efficiently Air-supply.

One result of this *°*e™

Substi- tutes for bitumin- ous coal. Anthra- cite.

Coke.

Liquid fuel.

Gaseous fuel.

supplied to the furnace if admitted only in front, and accordingly there have been many plans devised for supply- ing it also at the back. In some cases currents of air are induced by steam-jets; but this plan has not proved very successful. The best inventions are on the regenerative principle. In them the air, before entering the furnace, is made to circulate through chambers heated externally by the products of combustion, and, having thus acquired a high temperature and absorbed heat that would other- wise have been lost, is admitted through openings at the bridge. Many of these appliances are almost absolutely smokeless, and they are much in use.

The advocates of the total or partial disuse of smoke- producing coals are variously in favour of the following substitutes—anthracite, coke, liquid fuel, and gas.

For some purposes anthracite and other coals containing a high percentage of carbon may be, and have long been, advantageously used as fuel. They yield a much smaller percentage of distillation products than ordinary coals, and produce no smoke, or almost none. But they are difficult to ignite, and in small fires difficult to keep burning ; they give very little flame, and are comparatively expen- sive, so that they are under considerable disadvantage as compared with the usual kinds of coal. Many of the grates and stoves exhibited at South Kensington were specially devised for burning anthracite, and some of them are decidedly successful ; but it is not likely that anthracite will ever take the place of bituminous coal to any great extent in the British Isles. There the great coal-fields undoubtedly are the natural sources of fuel, and no pro- posal involving a complete neglect of this fact can ever be successfully carried out.

This remark, however, does not apply to the use of coke and of gas, which are themselves made from coal. Coke is produced in large quantities both for its own sake and as a bye-product in the manufacture of gas for lighting purposes, and is largely used in various kinds of furnace. It gives no smoke

; but it resembles anthracite also in being but ill adapted to use in open grates on account of the difficulty of ignition and the absence of flame (see FUEL).

In America, where natural petroleum is obtained in such enormous quantities, the experiment has been made of using it as the source of heat for boilers. A jet of superheated steam (at about 600° Fahr.) is blown into the hot combustion chamber and the oil and air enter mixed with it, The results are said to be excellent,—the fire smokeless and the efficiency high. The residue from coal- tar, after the naphtha and light oils have been recovered from it, can also be advantageously used in this way. The chief disadvantage attending the use of liquid fuels such as petroleum seems to lie in the fact that they are some- what dangerous, fatal accidents having occurred in America; and the range of their application is necessarily limited. To use them for the heating of houses is of course quite out of the question.

Of all the schemes and inventions for the abatement of smoke that one which proposes to distil coal in one opera- tion, and to burn the products of the distillation in another and quite separate operation, is without doubt the most thoroughly scientific; and to it, rather than to patent grates and furnaces, we must look for the ultimate solution of the question. Many arguments may be adduced in favour of gas-heating as opposed to coal-heating, the most important of which are here briefly given. (1) Coal gives, on distillation, not only gas and coke, which are both good heating agents, but intermediate products, many of which are of commercial value ; these include ammonia, benzine, carbolic acid, anthracine, &c. As science advances the value of coal-tar will probably be enhanced by further dis- coveries ; already it gives the raw material for the pre-

paration of numberless beautiful dyes, of antiseptics, and of some drugs, and quite lately a substance described as an admirable substitute for sugar has been prepared from it. All these intermediate products are now, according to our barbarous methods of burning coal, used simply as fuel. (2) Gas can be laid on in pipes to any spot, can be lit or turned out at any moment, and can be so managed that less heat is frittered away and more

applied to the specific object than in the case of coal-burning. (3) It produces no smoke and leaves no ash or cinder, so that cleanliness is attained and much labour and expense are saved. (4) The coke produced during the preparation of the gas has uses of its own as solid fuel and for other purposes. (5) As has been already said, sulphur is an ingredient of all coals, and sulphuric acid is one of the necessary results of burning them, not to be got rid of by “smoke abatement.” Coal gas, however, can to a great extent be freed from sulphur compounds, and it is possible that the purification methods in vogue may hereafter be improved, so that we have here a means, if any exist, of curing the chief evils of our present system,—injury to our respiratory organs, production of fogs, and destruction of vegetation in towns. The principal disadvantage of the proposal is to be found in the high cost of coal gas, which now varies generally from 3s. to 4s. per 1000 cubic feet, whereas it has been calculated that it would have to cost not more than ls. or at most 1s. 6d. to compete success- fully with coal. There is no doubt, however, that the cost might, and it probably will, be brought down to this, as the high rate is due to causes not inherent in the nature of things, Sir William Siemens proposed that two sets of mains should be laid in English towns, one for heating and one for lighting gas, and showed that the first and last portions of every preparation of gas are possessed of very low illuminating power, but if collected apart would do excellently for heating purposes, while the rest would be improved for lighting. It is probable, however, that electricity will ultimately drive gas out of the field as an illuminating agent and that it will then be relegated to its true place as a heating agent. When that is done coal will no longer be burnt as a whole, but only those of its products (gas and coke) which are good for heating and for nothing else.

Meanwhile, ordinary coal gas has already, expensive as it now is, been largely applied to certain purposes, notably to cooking stoves and other domestic requirements, to gas engines (in which the generation of steam is unnecessary), and to bakers’ ovens; and these inventions are calculated materially to diminish the smoke nuisance. In order to obtain an economical gas capable of being generated on the spot and used for operations on a large scale, Sir W. Siemens devised a gas-producer in which coal is partially burnt in a limited atmosphere and is wholly converted into gaseous products (chiefly carbonic oxide), only the ash being left. This “ producer-gas” is a

weak fuel, being largely diluted with atmospheric nitrogen, and is therefore in- applicable to domestic purposes ; but for many others It suits admirably, one of the best examples of its application being Siemens's own regenerative gas furnace for melting steel (see SreMENS). Other gas-producers have been patented, and the cost of the gas so made is as low as 4d. per 1000 cubic feet, or even less. It is probably, however, but a temporary substitute for true coal gas. In the use of this latter we shall, without doubt, find the true scientific solution of the smoke-abatement problem. As an example of what gaseous fuel can do, it may be mentioned that in Pittsburgh in Pennsylvania the furnaces are now being fed by natural oil gas and that that city, once one of the dirtiest of manufacturing towns, 1s be- coming one of the cleanest.

Literature.—The specifications of patents may be consulted. See also C. W. Williams, The Combustion of Coal and the Preven- tion of Smoke (London, 1858); W. W. Barr, Praetieal Treatise on the Combustion of Coal (Indianapolis, 1879) ; Oficial Report of the Smoke-Abatement Committee (London, 1882); Smoke-Abatement Exhibition Review (London, 1882); and papers and discussions in the Jowrnal of the Society of Chemical Industry, 1881 and follow- ing years. (O. M.)

SMOLENSK, a government of middle Russia, belonging partly to Great Russia and partly to White Russia, is bounded by Moscow and Kaluga on the E., Orel and Tcher- nigoff on the S., Moghileff and Vitebsk on the W., and Pskoff and Tver on the N. It covers an area of 21,638 square miles in the west of the great central plateau, its northern districts extending towards the hilly region of the Valdais, where the flat-topped gentle declivities reach about 1000 feet above the sea. nt surface is also hilly in the western districts (Smolensk, Dorogobuzh), whence it slopes away gently towards im- mense plains on the east and south. Carboniferous lime- stones, containing a few layers of coal (in Yuchnoff) and quarried for building purposes, occupy the east of Smolensk ; white Chalk appears in the southern extremity; while Tertiary sands, marls, and ferruginous clays cover all the west. The whole is overlain with a thick sheet of boulder clay, with irregular extensions to the north ; Post-Tertiary sands are spread over wide surfaces; and peat-bog fills

the marshy depressions. The soil, mostly clay, is generally unfertile, and stony and sandy in several districts. Many large rivers belonging to the basins of the Volga, the Oka, the Dnieper, and the Dwina have their origin in Smolensk. The Vazuza and the Gzhat, both flowing into the Volga, and the Moskva and the Ugra, tributaries of the Oka, are channels for floating timber. The two tributaries of the Dwina—the Kasplya and the Mezha—are of much more importance, as they and their affluents carry considerable numbers of boats to Riga. The Dnieper takes its origin in Smolensk and waters it for more than 300 miles; but neither this river nor its tributaries (Vop, Vyazma, Sozh, and Desna), whose upper courses belong to Smolensk, are navigable; timber only is floated down some of them. Many small lakes and extensive marshes occur in the north- west. One-third of the area is under forests. The popula- tion of Smolensk reached 1,191,172 in 1882, of whom only 106,133 lived in towns, and consists of White Russians in the west (46°7 per cent.), Great Russians in the east (42:6), and of a mixed population of both (10-4). Nearly 1000 Jews and 1000 Poles are scattered through the towns.

The climate is like that of middle Russia generally, although the moderating influence of the wet climate of western Europe is felt to some extent. The average yearly temperature at Smolensk is 45°“5 Fahr. (January, 13°°5 ; July, 67°-2). Notwithstanding the unproductive soil and the frequent failures of crops (especially in the north-west), the chief occupation is agriculture. In 1884 3,040,000 acres were under crops, and 2,379,600 quarters of grain of various kinds were raised (2,930,400 in 1883), —the potato crop yielding 5,498,400 bushels, Nearly all the land is cultivated by the peasant communes,—only 766,500 acres (out of 6,868,900) in the hands of single individuals being under cultivation. Oats are an important crop. Hemp and flax are largely raised and exported. Cattle-breeding stands at a low level ; the cattle of the peasantry suffer froma want of meadow and pasture land, which is mostly in private ownership. In 1882 there were 329,850 horses, 349,000 homed cattle, 401,000 sheep, and 162,000 pigs. The peasantry are mostly very poor, in consequence not only of the desolation Inflicted on Smolensk in 1812, the effects of which are still felt, Dut also of insufficient allotments and want of meadows. Garden- Ing and bee-keeping, which formerly flourished, have almost disappeared. The timber trade and boat-building are important sources of income, but do not furnish employment

for all who are 7 heed of it; more than one-half of the male population of west

miolensk leave their homes every year in search of work, principally : havvies throughout Russia. “The manufactures are developing

ut slowly, and in 1882 employed only about 5100 workmen, —their Tea Production being valued at £328,800; of this amount the ‘istileries yielded nearly one-third. A few cotton-mills in the fast have a production valued at £62,160 per annum. A lively

The rivers being deeply cut in the plateau, the

183

traffic is carried on on the rivers, principally the Kasplya, the Obzha, and the Ugra, where corn, hemp, hempseed, linseed, and especially timber are shipped to the amount of nearly £400,000 annually. A considerable quantity of corn is imported into the western districts. Smolensk is crossed by two important railways, from Moscow to Warsaw and from Riga to Saratoff; a branch-line connects Vyazma with Kaluga. The educational institutions embrace eleven gym- nasia and progymnasia (8380 ‘boys and 1402 girls), and 394 primary schools (15,031 boys and 2142 girls). Smolensk is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which, with their populations in 1882, are—Smolensk (see below), Byctyi (7150), Dorogobuzh (8400), Duhovshina (3660), Elnya (4850), Gzhatsk (7050), Krasnyi (3550), Poryetchie (4650), Rostavl (9050), Sytchevka (5720), Vyazma (13,000), and Yuchnoff (3230).

SMOLENSK, capital of the above government, is situ- ated on both banks of the Dnieper, at the junction of the railways from Moscow to Warsaw and from Riga to Orel, 262 miles by rail west-south-west of Moscow. The town, with the ruins of its old kremlin, is built on the high crags of the left bank of the Dnieper, its suburbs extending around and on the opposite bank of the river. Its walls are now rapidly falling into decay, as well as all other remainders of its past. The cathedral was erected in 1676-1772, on the site of a more primitive building (erected in 1100); which was blown up in 1611 by the defenders of the city. The picture of the Virgin brought to Russia in

1046, and attributed to St Luke, which is kept in this cathedral, is much venerated throughout central Russia. Two other churches, built in the 12th century, have been spoiled by recent additions. Smolensk is neither a commercial nor a manufacturing centre; its population was 35,830 in 1882.

Smolensk, one of the oldest towns of Russia, is mentioned in Nestor as the chief town of the Crivitchis, situated on the great com- inercial route “from the Varyaghs to the Greeks.” It maintained a lively traffic with Constantinople down to the 11th century, when the principality of Smolensk included Vitcbsk, Moscow, Kaluga, and parts of the present government of Pskoff. The princes of Kieff were often recognized as military chiefs by the vyetche (council) of Smolensk, who mostly preferred Mstislaff and his descendants, and Rostislaff Mstislavovitch became the head of a series of nearly independent princes of Smolensk. From the 14th century these last fell more and more under the influence of the Lithuanian princes, and in 1404 Smolensk was annexed to Lithuania. In 1449 the Moscow princes renounced their claims upon Smolensk; never- theless this important city, which was both a stronghold and a commercial centre with nearly 100,000 inhabitants, was a constant source of contention between Moscow and Lithuania. In 1514 it fell under Russian dominion; but during the disturbances of 1611 it was taken by Sigismund III. of Poland, and it remained under Polish rule until 1654, when the Russians retook it; in 1686 it was definitively annexed to Russia. In the 18th century it played an important part as a basis for the military operations of Peter I. during his wars with Sweden. In 1812 it was well fortitied; but the French took it, when it suffered much from conflagrations, and generally, during the war.

SMOLLETT, Tostas Grorcs (1721-1771), novelist, was born at Dalquhurn, in the valley of Leven, Dumbartonshire, in 1721. His buoyant humour and energy were the gifts of nature, and early experience furnished him with abundant provocation for the harsh and cynical views of human nature to be traced in his novels. At a very early age he was placed in a position calculated to harden the heart of a proud and sensitive child. His father, the youngest son of the laird of Bonhill, a Scottish legal dignitary, married against the ambition of his family, aid died young, leaving three children, of whom the future novelist was the second son, entirely unprovided for. The boy, being thus left dependent on the charity of relatives, grudgingly and

insolently bestowed, as it seemed to him, learned to look with suspicion on kindly professions. He seems to have received the ordinary book education of the place and period. He was sent to the neighbouring granimar-school of Dumbarton—tauglit at the time by one of the most eminent schoolmasters in Scotland—-and thereafter to the university of Glasgow. He wished then to enter the army, as his elder brother had done, but much against his will was apprenticed to a surgeon. His

grandfather died when he was in his eighteenth year, without leaving any provision for the children of his youngest son, and in his nineteenth year Smollett left Glasgow and launched himself on London in quest of for- tune with the tragedy of the Regicide in his pocket. He failed to get the tragedy accepted, and, reduced almost to starvation, was fain to take the situation of surgeon's mate on board a ship of the line. He was present in 1741 at the siege of Cartagena. He soon quitted the navy in disgust, but during his service of a few years he acquired, as Scott says, "such intimate knowledge of our nautical world as enabled him to describe sailors with such truth and spirit of delineation that, from that time, whoever has undertaken the same task has seemed to copy more from Smollett than from nature."

Returning to England in 1746, Smollett made a de- sperate attempt to live by his pen, publishing the satires Advice and Reproof—satire being then in fashion—and pushing the Regicide and other dramatic works on thea- trical managers and patrons. He revenged himself in his satires for the rebuffs given to his plays. Whether he was ever reduced to such straits as Mr Melopoyn, whom Roderick Random met with in the Fleet, is not known for certain, but it is certain that he was sharply pinched; and he did not mend his circumstances by marrying a portion- less lady whom he had met in the West Indies. His buoyant spirit was not in the least broken by adverse fortune, but it was considerably inflamed and embittered. His fierce and distempered mood when he wrote Roderick Random is reflected in the characters of the novel, which are drawn with a much more defiant and contemptuous hand than he used in any of his subsequent works. The author was not a cold-blooded cynic, but a proud warm- hearted man enraged by what he considered unjust usage. He was not in a mood to dwell upon

lovable traits in human nature, or to find pleasure in pretty sentiments. The public, however, when Roderick Random was published —in 1748, a few months before Z'om Jones—did not con- cern themselves with the character of the author. The wealth of humorous incident, the rapidly moving crowd of amusing figures, concealed all those harsher features in the picture of life which quiet reflexion can now trace to the circumstances of the author, smarting as he was under petty insults and real or fancied indignities. This novel at once raised Smollett into reputation. It was followed after an interval of three years by Peregrine Pickle (L751), the immediate popularity of which was helped by the in- sertion into the body of the novel of two stories from real life, the memoirs of a lady of quality (Lady Vane) and the memoirs of the philanthropist M'Kercher. This second masterpiece was written with a much lighter heart than the first, although it must be confessed that the hero is not much of an improvement on Roderick Random. Scott describes him as "the savage and ferocious Pickle, who, besides his gross and base brutality towards Emilia, besides his ingratitude to his uncle, and the savage propensity which he shows in the pleasure he takes to torment others by practical jokes, resembling those of a fiend in glee, exhibits a low and ungentlemanlike tone of thinking, only one degree higher than that of Roderick Random." There is, however, this difference, that the author seems much more conscious of the bad qualities of Pickle than of Random. He expends no sympathy or fine sentiment on either, but Random's defects are represented as the results of the harsh treatment he had himself received, while Pickle's appear rather as the outcome of a naturally harsh and insolent character. Both are far from being model gentlemen, but Pickle is several degrees lower rather than one degree higher than Random. In the second novel there is a still richer crowd of characters,

quaint, amusing, disgusting, and contemptible ; but there is more of a tendency to secure variety by extravagant caricature. For some of the indecencies in the first edition Smollett apologized, and withdrew them in a second edition but he still left enough to satisfy the greediest taste in that particular. sion to Fielding, and in his next novel, The Adventures of Ferdinand, Count Fathom, paid that great rival the com- pliment of imitation. Though Smollett was far from being a, servile imitator, there can

be no doubt that he profited greatly by Fielding's example in all the higher essentials of his craft. same exuberant humour and fresh variety of character, is vastly better in point of constructive skill and sustained power of description. get himself to show that he too as well as the author of

character is so repulsive that the novel is much less often read than others of Smollett's; but it is his greatest feat of invention, being not a mere string of lively adventures, but a connected series in the progressive movement of the villain's career. cynical comments on human motives, as well as passages that illustrate strikingly his real goodness of heart. He was not at home, however, in the direct expression of tender sentiment ; when any of his persons gush, they do so with such wordiness and extravagance as to give them an air of insincerity.

invention seemed to be exhausted for the time.

literary work, translating Don Quixote (published 1756), compiling a Compendium of Voyages and T'ravels (1751),

He also withdrew a very offensive allu-

This, his third effort, although it has not the

It looks as if he had deliberately

Tom Jones could make a plot. The vileness of Fathom's

It contains some of Smollett's most

With the composition of Cownt Fathom in 1753 Smollett's For the

next ten years he occupied himself with miscellaneous

and producing a History of England from the Landing of Cxsar to the Treaty of Aia-la-Chapelle (1757), followed by a continuation down to the date of publication (1761-69). Smollett, in short, from the time of his first success made his living as a professional man of letters. He obtained a medical degree from a German university about 1752, and set up asa physician, but seems never to have acquired much practice. He turned this

experience to account, how- ever, by caricaturing in Count Fathom the arts of rising in the profession. He had very little more success in his attempts to write for the stage. The Regicede was never acted, and, when it was published in 1749 to expose the folly of managers in not accepting it, the verdict of the public was — rather with the managers than with the author. Smollett's single success on the stage was a farce with a political object, The Reprisals, or the Tars. of Old England, produced in — 1757 to excite feeling against the French. Asa journalist also Smollett was not particularly successful, partly perhaps | because he attached himself to the losing side,— the Tory and High Church party. He edited their organ The Or- | tical Review for some years, and in 1759 suffered imprison- ment for an attack on Admiral Knowles. At the beginning of the reign of George III. he supported Lord Bute's ministry in The Briton, but The Briton was driven out of the field by Wilkes's Worth Briton. Altogether Smollett's revenue from play-writing and journalism seems to have been small, unless his party services were requited inde-— pendently of the sale of his papers. But his name stood high with booksellers. He introduces himself in Lumphrey | Clinker as a dispenser of literary patronage, surrounded by a number of humble dependants. These were probably the hacks to whom he gave employment in his journals and in such booksellers' jobs as his translation of Voltaire | and the compilation entitled The Present State of all Nations, containing a Geographical, Ne atural, Commercia, and Political History of all the Countries of the Known World (1763).

SMU—SMY

In the course of this hard miscellaneous task-work, under which Smollett's health gave way completely, he wrote by instalments for the British Magazine (in 1760 and 1761) the curious satirical romance of Sir Lancelot Greaves. It is only in externals that this work bears any resemblance to Don Quixote. The author seems to have hesitated between making Sir Lancelot a mere madman and making him a pattern of perfectly sane generosity. The fun and the seriousness do not harmonize. The young knight's craze for riding about the country to redress wrongs armed cap-a-pie is too harshly out of tune with the right- ness of his sympathies and the grave character of the real abuses against which his indignation is directed. In execu- tion the work is very unequal and irregular, but the open- ing chapters are very

powerful, and have been imitated by hundreds of novelists since Smollett's time.

Upon the failure of his health in 1763 Smollett went abroad and lived in France and Italy for three years. He

ublished two volumes of 7'ravels soon after his return in 1766. Three years more he spent in England, trying in vain to get some consular post abroad, where the climate might suit his shattered constitution. His extremely clever and extremely coarse political satire, Zhe Adventures of an Atom, published in 1769, was probably inspired partly by resentment at the neglect of his own claims by successive ministries. He left England soon after its publication, and spent the last two years of his life in a house at Monte Novo in the neighbourhood of Leghorn. Here, labouring under a painful and wasting disease, he composed his last work, The Haupedition of Humphrey Clinker, published in 1771. 'This is generally regarded as his best novel. It certainly is the most pleasant reading, much softer and more humane in tone, while equally alive with vivid sketches and studies of character and a never-failing supply of ludicrous adventures. The loose and easy plan does not require for its execution the sustained power shown in Count Fathom ; but, on the other hand, it leaves the novelist free to introduce greater variety of character and incident. None of his novels gives a better impression of Smollett's versatility than Humphrey Clinker, and there is none of them to which his successors have been more indebted. But whoever would understand how much the English novel owes to Smollett must read all his five fictions and not merely the most celebrated three. His influence upon novel-writing was wider even than Fielding's. He died at Monte Novo on 21st October 1771. (w. M.)

SMUGGLING denotes a breach of the revenue laws either by the importation or the exportation of prohibited goods or by the evasion of customs duties on goods liable to duty. Smuggling is, as might be expected, most pre- valent where duties are high. The best preventive is the imposition of duties so low in amount and on so few articles that it becomes scarcely worth while to smuggle. Legisla- tion on the subject in England has been very active from the 14th century downwards. In the reign of Edward II. the illicit introduction of base coin from abroad led to the

provision of the Statute of Treasons (25 Edw. ITI. st. 5) making it treason to import counterfeit money as the money called “Lushburgh.” Such importation is still an offence, though no longer treason. After the Statute of ‘Treasons a vast number of Acts dealing with smuggling were passed, most of which will be found recited in the repealing Act of 6 Geo. IV. c. 105. In the 18th and the early years of the 19th century smuggling (chiefly of wine, spirits, tobacco, and bullion) was so generally prac- tised in Great Britain as to become a kind of national fail- ing, and the smuggler was often regarded as a popular hero, like the contrabandista of modern Spain. The prevalence of the offence a century and a half ago may be judged from the report of Sir J. Cope’s committee in 1732 upon the

frauds on the revenue. The smuggler of the 18th century finds an apologist in Adam Smith, who writes of him as “fa person who, though no doubt highly blamable for vio- lating the laws of his country, is frequently incapable of violating those of natural justice, and would have been in every respect an excellent citizen had not the laws of his country made that a crime which nature never meant to be so.” The gradual reduction of duties has brought the offence in the United Kingdom into comparative insig- nificance, and it is now almost confined to tobacco. Most of the existing legislation on the subject of smuggling is contained in the Customs Consolidation Act, 1876 (39 and 40 Vict. c. 36, ss. 169-217).

The main provisions are as follows. Vessels engaged in smug- gling are liable to forfeiture and their owners and masters to a penalty not exceeding £500. Smuggled and prohibited goods are liable to forfeiture. Officers of customs have a right of search of vessels and persons. Fraudulent evasion or attempted evasion of customs duties renders the offender subject to forfeit either treble the value of the goods or £100 at the election of the commissioners of customs. Heavy penalties are incurred by resistance to officers of customs, rescue of person or goods, assembling to run goods, signalling smuggling vessels, shooting at vessels, boats, or officers of the naval or revenue service, cutting adrift customs vessels, offering goods for sale under pretence of being smuggled, &c. Penalties may be recovered either by action or information in the superior courts or by summary

proceedings. In criminal proceed- ings the defendant is competent and compellable to give evidence. The Act applies to the United Kingdom, the Isle of Man, and the Channel Islands. Besides, the Customs Act, 50 Geo. III. c. 41, s. 16 (the corresponding Act for Scotland is 55 Geo. III. c. 71, s. 9), enacts that a hawker's licence is to be forfeited on his conviction for knowingly selling smuggled goods, The Merchant Shipping Act, 1854 (17 and 18 Vict. c. 104, s. 248), makes any seaman or apprentice, after conviction for sung lng whereby loss or damage: is caused to the master or owner of a ship, liable to pay to such master or owner such a sum as is sufficient to reimburse the master or owner for such loss or damage, and the whole or a proportional part of his wages may be retained in satisfaction of this liability. Additional provisions as to cuuee ane are also contained in 42 and 43 Vict. c. 21 and 44 and 45 Vict. c.12. A smuggling contract is generally illegal. But it may be valid, and the vendor may re- cover the price of goods, even though he knew the buyer intended them to be smuggled, unless he actually aids in the smuggling so as to become particeps criminis, Contracts to defraud the revenue of a foreign state are, according to English decisions, not illegal. There is a German decision, more consonant with international morality, to the opposite effect.

The penalties for smuggling in the United States will be found mainly in tit. xxxiv. ch. 10 of the Revised Statutes. The seaman guilty of smuggling is liable to the same penalty as in England, and in addition to imprisonment for twelve months, s. 4596.

A considerable amount of historical information on this subject will be found in Dowell's History of Taxation and Pike's History of Crime in England.

SMYRNA, in ancient times one of the most important and now by far the greatest of the cities of Asia Minor (see vol. xv. Plate II.), has preserved an unbroken con- tinuity of record and identity of name from the first dawn of history to the present time. It is said to have been a Lelegian city before the Greek colonists settled in Asia Minor. The name, which is said to be derived from an Amazon called Smyrna, is indubitably Anatolian, having been applied also to a quarter of Ephesus, and (under the cognate form Myrina) to a city of Aolis, and to a tumulus in the Troad. The AMolic

settlers of Lesbos and Cyme, pushing eastwards by Larissa and Neonteichus and over the Hermus, seized the valley of Smyrna. It was the frontier city between Aolis on the north and Ionia on the south, and was more accessible on the south and east than on the north and west. At the same time it was by virtue of its favourable situation necessarily a commercial city, like the Ionian colonies. It is there- fore not surprising that the Molic element grew weaker ; strangers or refugees from the Ionian Colophon settled in the city, and finally Smyrna passed into the hands of the Colophonians and became the thirteenth of the Ionian states. The change had taken place before 688, when the Ionian Onomastus of Smyrna won the boxing prize at

Olympia, but it was probably then a recent event. The Colophonian conquest is mentioned by Mimnermus (before 600 .c.), who counts himself equally a Colophonian and a Smyrnean. The Molic form of the name, Zpupva, was retained even in the Attic dialect, and the epithet ‘‘ Holian Smyma” remained long after the conquest. The favour- able situation of Smyrna on the path of commerce between Lydia and the west raised it during the 7th century to the height of power and splendour. It lay at the eastern end of an arm of the sea, which reached far inland and admitted the Greek trading ships into the heart of Lydia. One of the great trade routes which cross Anatolia from east to west descends the Hermus valley past Sardis, and then diverging from the valley passes south of Mount Sipylus and crosses a low pass into the little valley, about 7 miles long and 2 broad, where Smyrna lies between the mountains and the sea. Miletus, and at a later time

ground between the hill and the sea. The beauty of the city when seen from the sea, clustering on the low ground and rising tier over tier on the hillside, is frequently praised by the ancients and is celebrated on its coins; the same impression still strikes the spectator, and must in ancient times have been

much stronger, when magnificent build- ings, an imposing acropolis, and the wide circle of massive walls combined with the natural scenery in one splendid picture. Smyrna is shut in on the west by a hill now called Deirmen Tepe, with the ruins of a temple on the summit. The walls of Lysimachus crossed the summit of

this hill, and the acropolis occupied the top of Pagus, Between the two the road from Ephesus entered the city by the "'Ephesian gate," near which was a gymnasium. Closer to the acropolis the outline of the stadium is still visible, and the theatre was situated on the northern slopes of Pagus.

The line of the walls on the eastern side is

Ephesus, situated at the sea end of the other great trade route across Anatolia, } competed for a time successfully with | Smyrna for the conveyance of traffic | from the interior; but both Ephesus and Miletus have long ago lost their | harbours, and Smyrna now remains without a rival. It was of necessity | in close relation with the Lydians, and | when the Mermnad kings raised the } Lydian power and aggressiveness it | was one of the first points of attack. | Gyges (687-653) was, however,defeated | in a great battle on the banks of the } Hermus; the situation of the battle- | field shows that the power of Smyrna | extended far to the east, and probably | included the valley of Nympheum (Nif). A strong fortress, the ruins of whose ancient and massive walls are still imposing, on a hill in the pass between Smyrna and Nymphezum, was probably built by the Smyrnean Ionians to command the valley of Nympheum. According to the poet | Theognis (about 500 B.c.), "pride de- stroyed Smyrna." Mimnermus laments = the degeneracy of the citizens of his || Derm QSei st 0G, » 2

day, who could no longer stem the Ly- ee Ze gece A iii ww e:

dian advance. Finally, Alyattes (610- }p—:\SQ IN Se i, i ANS f° Scale of Half aMfile. 563) conquered the city, and Smyrna [[uj.:: Vo = SSS AAT WS Ff? *

for 300 years lost its place in the list 7 of Greek cities. It did not entirely

cease to exist, but the Greek life and political unity were destroyed, and the Smyrnzan state was organized on the village system (gxelro kwpyddv). It is mentioned in a fragment of Pindar, about 500 B.c., and in an in- scription of 388 B.c. A small fortification of early style, rudely but massively built, on the lowest slope of a hill behind Burnabat, is perhaps a fortified village of this period. Alexander the Great conceived the idea of restoring the Greek city; the two Nemeses who were worshipped at Smyrna are said to have suggested the idea to him in a dream. The scheme was, according to Strabo, carried out by Antigonus (316-301), and Lysi- machus enlarged and fortified the city (301-281). The acropolis of the ancient city had been on a steep peak about 1250 feet high, which overhangs the north-eastern extremity of the gulf; its ruins still exist, probably in much the same condition as they were left by Alyattes. The later city was founded on the site which it still occupies, partly on the slopes of a rounded hill called Pagus near the south-east end of the gulf, partly on the low

Sih & ” iy

eo, Me

Loot) S_ICy

mets

Plan of Smyrna.

unknown ; but they certainly embraced a greater area than is included by the Byzantine wall, which ascends the castle hill (Pagus) from the Basmakhané railway station. Smyrna possessed two harbours,—the outer, which was simply the gulf, and the inner, which was a small basin, with a narrow entrance closed by a rope in case of need, about the place now occupied by bazaars. The inner harbour was partially filled up by Timur in 1402, but it had not entirely disappeared till the beginning of the 19th | century. The modern quay has encroached considerably

on the sea, and the coast-line of the Greek time was about |

90 yards farther to the south. The streets were broad, | well paved, and regularly laid out at right angles; many |

were named after temples: the main street, called the Golden, ran across the city from west to east, beginning probably from the temple on Deirmen Tepe, and continuing towards Tepejik outside the city on the east, where prob- | ably the temple of Cybele, the Metroon, stood. Cybele, | worshipped under the name of Meter Sipylene, from Mount Sipylus, which bounds the Smyrna valley on the north,

a

SNA—SNA

was the tutelar goddess of the city. The plain towards the sea was too low to be properly drained, and hence in rainy weather the streets were deep with mud and water.

The river Meles, which flowed by Smyrna, is famous in literature and was worshipped in the valley. The most common and consistent tradition connects Homer with the valley of Smyrna and the banks of the Meles; his figure was one of the stock types on Smyrnzan coins, one class of which was called Homerian ; the epithet ‘ Mele- sigenes” was applied to him ; the cave where he was wont to compose his poems was shown near the source of the river; his temple, the Homereum, stood on its banks. The steady equable flow of the Meles, alike in summer and winter, neither swollen after rain nor dry during drought, its pleasant water, its short course, beginning and ending near the city, are celebrated by Aristides and Himerius. The description applies admirably to the stream which rises from abundant fountains, now known as Diana’s Bath, some way to the east of the city, and flows into the south-eastern extremity of the gulf. The common belief that the torrent, dry except after rains, which flows by Caravan Bridge is the ancient Meles flatly contradicts the ancient descriptions.

In the Roman period Smyrna was the seat of a conventus which included southern olis and great part of the Hermus valley. It vied with Ephesus and Pergamum for the title ‘‘First (city) of Asia.” A Christian church ex- isted here from a very early time, having its origin in the considerable Jewish

colony. Porycarp (q.v.) was bishop of Smyma. The bishops of Smyrna were originally subject to the metropolitan of Ephesus ; afterwards they became independent (aitoxéfador), and finally were honoured with metropolitan rank, having underthem thebishopsof Phocea, Magnesia ad Sipylum, Clazomenz, Sosandrus (Nymph- um ?), Archangelus (Temnos‘), and Petra (Menemen 4).

When Constantinople became the seat of government the trade between Anatolia and the west lost in import- ance, and Smyrna declined apace. A Turkish freebooter named Tacha seized Smyrna in 1084 and maintained himself there for some time, but it was recovered by the generals of Alexius Comnenus. The city was several times alterwards ravaged by the Turks, and had become quite ruinous when the emperor John Ducas Vatatzes about 1222 rebuilt it. The famous chieftain Aidin conquered it about 1330 and made his son Amur governor. Soon after- wards the knights of Saint John established themselves in the town, but failed to conquer the citadel. In 1402 Timur stormed the town and massacred almost all the in- habitants. The Mongol conquest was only temporary, but Smyrna has remained till the present day in Moham- medan hands, It is now the greatest commercial city in the Levant ; its population is about 200,000, of whom neatly half are Greeks. It is the terminus of the railway system which is gradually spreading over Anatolia. Two lines start from Smyrna: one ascends the Hermus valley by Magnesia and Sardis to Alashehr (Philadelphia), about 110 miles; the other goes south by Ephesus to the Meander Valley beside Magnesia on the Meander and then ascends the valley to the neighbourhood of Laodicea on the Lycus, 143 miles. Since the revival of the Levant trade by the Genoese and Venetians Smyrna has been the emporium for the whole produce of Anatolia ; the chief raw pro- duets ‘exported are valonea, figs, raisins, opium, madder, liquorice, cotton, sponges, emery, d&c.; almost the only articles of native manufacture which are exported from Smyrna are the carpets woven at Geurdiz, Coula, Ushak, and other places in the interior. Smyrna has frequently been partially destroyed by earthquakes ; that of 178 a.p. is the most famous, and in 1688, 1768, and 1880 the town suffered severely. (W. M. RA.)

SNAIL. In England the word “snail” in popular lan-

guage is associated with Gasteropods which inhabit land or fresh water and which possess large conspicuous spiral shells ; terrestrial Gasteropods in which the shell is rudi- mentary and concealed are distinguished as “slugs.” In Scotland the word “slug” is absent from the vernacular vocabulary, both shell-bearing and shell-less inland molluscs being known as snails. Marine Gasteropods are occasionally termed “sea-snails,” and the compounds “pond-snails,” ‘river-snails,” ‘water-snails” are in common use. The commonest land-snails are those species which constitute the family Helicidx, order Pulmonata, sub-order Stylommato- phora. The other two families of the same sub-order, Limacide and Onchidiidz, include all the slugs. In the first of these are comprised all the slugs known in Great Britain, and indeed in Europe. The Onchidiide are entitled to the name “sea-slugs,” as they are shell-less Pulmonates living on the seashore, though not actually in the sea. The term “ water-snails” includes the whole of the remaining sub-order of the Pulmonata, namely, the Basommatophora, in which the eyes are sessile. This division comprises two families, Limnxidx and Auriculide ; some of the members of the first are amphibious, some entirely aquatic; the – snails of the second family are found near but not in the water. Thus the whole of the Pulmonata which breathe air, are destitute of gill-plumes and operculum, and have a complicated hermaphrodite reproductive system. are either snails or slugs. But there are a considerable num- ber of snails, both terrestrial and aquatic, which are not Pulmonates. The land-snails which have no gill-plume in the mantle-chamber and breathe air, but have the sexes separated, and possess an operculum belong to the order Azygobranchia, of which they form a distinct sub-order, the Pnewmonochlamyda, containing three families, Cyclosto- mide, Helicinide, and Aciculide. The fresh-water snails which are not Pulmonates are the Paludinidx, Valvatide, and Ampullaride, together with Weritina, a genus of the Neritidx. These all possess a fully developed gill-plume and are typical Azygobranchiates of the sub-order Holo- chlamyda, most of the members of which are marine. _ The family Helicide has a world-wide distribution. In Helix the spire forms a more or less obtuse-angled cone ; there are above 1200 species, of which 24 are British. Helix nemoralis, L., of which H. hortensis is a variety, is one of the commonest forms. Helix pomatia, L., is the largest species, and is known as the “edible snail” ; it is commonly eaten

in France and Italy, together with other species. It was formerly believed to have been introduced into Britain by the Romans, but there is no doubt that it is a native. In Succinca the cone of the spire is acute-angled ; three species are British. In Vitrina the spire is very flat and the surface glassy. In Bulimus the spire is elongated with a pointed apex. Pupa is named from its resemblance to a chrysalis, the apex being rounded. The shell of Clausilia is sinistral and its aperture is provided with a hinged plate. The commoner European slugs of small size all belong to the genus Limax, in which the opening of the mantle-chamber is posterior. L. flavus is the cellar slug. L. agrestis, L. arborum, L. maximus, occur in gardens and fields. The larger black slugs are species of Arion, of which two are British, A. ater and A. hortensis. Lestacella haliotidea is common in Great Britain and throughout Europe.

The Tapers occur in all parts of the world. Zimnzxus contains the largest species. . pereger, Miiller, is ubiquitous in Great Britain and common all over Europe. All the species are usually infested with Cercariw and Rediz, the larval forms of Trematode parasites of vertebrates. JZ. truncatulus harbours the Cercaria of Fasciola hepatica, the liver-fluke, which causes rot in sheep. Ancylus, which occurs in rivers, has a minute limpet-like shell. Planorbis has the spire of the shell in one plane. Physa is smaller than Limnezus and has the upper part of the spire much shorter. In the Auriculide# the aperture is denticulated. Auricula is confined to the East Indies and Peru. Carychiwm minimum is British.

Of the Cyclostomidz only one species, Cyclostoma elegans, Miiller, is British ; it hides nnder stones and roots. The Helicinide are exotic, ranging from the West Indies to the Philippines. Of the Aciculidz, which are all minute, Acicula lineata is British.

The Ampullaride are confined to the tropics. Ampullaria has very long tentacles and a long siphon formed by the mantle.

188

Valvata is common in fresh waters throughout Britain ; the gill when the animal is expanded is protruded beyond the mantle- chamber. The

Paludinide are common in the northern hemisphere. Paludina and Bithynia are both British genera. In Paludina the

whorls of the spiral are very prominent ; the genus is viviparous. Bithynia is smaller and the shell smoother.

Neritina has a very small spire, the terminal portion of the shell containing nearly the whole animal.

For the morphology and classification of snails, see MoLLusca, vol. xvi. p. 648 sq. A history of the British forms is given in Gwyn Jeffreys's British Conchology, 1862, and by Forbes and Hanley in British Mollusca. For specie- graphical details, see Woodward's Manual of the Mollusca, 1875, and Bronn's Thierreich (Weichthiere). For Fasciola hepatica, fee Thomas, Quart. Journ. Mic. Sci., 1882.

SNAKE-BIRD, to use the name commonly given to it by the English in North America, because of its "long slender head and neck," which, its body being submerged as it swims, "appear like a snake rising erect out of the water" (Bartram's MS., quoted by Ord in Wilson's Am. Ornithology, ix. p. 81), the " Darter" of many authors, and the Plotus anhinga} of ornithology, is the type of a small but very well-marked Family of Birds, Plotde, belonging to the group Steganopodes (the Dysporomorphe of Prof. Huxley), and consisting of but a single genus and three or four species. They bear a general resemblance both outwardly and in habits to Cormorants (see vol. vi. p. 407), but are much more slender in form and have both neck and tail much elongated. The bill also, instead of being tipped with a maxillary hook, has its edges beset with serratures directed backwards, and is sharply pointed,—in this respect, as well as in the attenuated neck, likening the Snake-birds to the Herons (see vol. xi. p. 760); but the latter do not generally transfix their prey as do the former.

The male of the American specics, which ranges from Illinois to the south of Brazil, is in full breeding-plumage a very beautiful bird, with crimson irides, the bare skin round the eyes apple-green

Indian snake-bird (from Col. Tickell's drawing in the library of the Zoological Society).

and that of the chin orange, the head, neck, and most part of the body clothed in black glossed with green; but down each side of the neck runs a row of long hair-like white feathers, tinged with pale lilac. The much elongated scapulars and the small upper wing-coverts bear each a median white mark, which on the former is a stripe pointed at cither end, and on the latter a broad ovate patch." The larger wing-coverts are dull white, but the quill- feathers of the wings and tail are black, the last broadly tipped with brownish-red, passing into greyish-white, and forming a con- spicuous band when the tail is spread in form of a fan, as it often

~j " Anhinga," according to Marcgrave, who first described this bird Nees Rer, Nat. Brasiliw, p. 218), was the name it bore among the natives,

- These feathers are very characteristic of each species of the genus, and in India, says Jerdon, are among the Khasias a badge of royalty.

is under water. The hen differs much in appearance from the cock, having the head, neck, and breast of a more or less deep buff bounded beneath by a narrow chestnut band; but otherwise hee plumage is like that of her mate, only not so bright in colour. The habits of this species have been repeatedly described by American writers, and those of its congeners, to be immediately mentioned seem to be essentially the same. The Snake-bird frequents the larger rivers or back-waters connected with them, where it may be seen resting motionless on some neighbouring tree, generally choos- ing a dead branch, or on a "snag" projecting from the bottom, whence it plunges beneath the surface, in pursuit of its fishy prey,

its slender head and neck. Its speed and skill under water are almost beyond exaggeration, and it exhibits these qualities even in captivity, taking—apparently without effort—tish after fish that

and twist, and only returning to its perch when its voracious appe- tite is for the moment appeased or its supply of food temporarily exhausted. Then, after adjusting its plumage with a few rapid passes of its bill, and often expanding its wings, as though, Cor- morant-fashion, to dry them, it abandons itself to the pleasurable and passive process of digestion,

reawaking to activity at the call of hunger. Yet at liberty it will indulge in long flights, and those of the male at the breeding-season are ostentatiously performed in the presence of his mate, around whom he plays in irregular zigzag courses. The nest is variously placed, but almost always in trees or bushes overhanging the water's edge, and is a large structure of sticks, roots, and moss, in which are laid four eggs with the white chalky shell that is so characteristic of most Steganopodous birds. Not unfrequently several or even many nests are built close together, and the locality that suits the Snake- bird suits also many of the Herons, so that these, its distant relatives, are often also its near neighbours.¢ The African Snake-bird, P. congensis (or levaillanti of some authors), inhabits the part of that continent from Natal northwards ; but, though met with on the White Nile, itis not known to have occurred in Egypt, a fact the more remarkable seeing that Canon Tristram found it breeding in considerable numbers on the Lake of Antioch, to which it is a summer visitor, and it can hardly reach its home without passing over the intervening country. The male bird is easily distinguishable from the American species by its rufous coronal patch, its buff throat and its chestnut greater wing-coverts, A thind species, P. melanogaster, ranges from Madagascar to India, Ceylon,

orneo, Java, and China, This so closely resembles the last-men- tioned that the differences between them cannot be briefly expressed. The Australian region also has its Snake-bird, which is by some

unite it to that last-mentioned, which is perhaps somewhat variable, and it would seem (P. Z. S., 1877, p. 349) that examples from New Guinea differ somewhat from those inhabiting Australia itself

The anatomy of the genus Plotus has been dealt with more fully than that of most forms. Beside the excellent description of the American bird's alimentary canal fur- nished to Audubon by Macgillivray, other important points in its structure have been well set forth by Garrod and Forbes in the Zoological Proceedings (1876, pp. 335- 345, pls. xxvi-xxviii.; 1878, pp. 679-681; and 1882, pp. 208-212), showing among other things that there is an appreciable anatomical difference between the species of the New World and of the Old; while the osteology of P. melanogaster has been admirably described and illus- trated by Prof. Milne-Edwards in M. Grandidier's great

Oiseaux de Madagascar (pp. 691-695, pls. 284, 285). In all the species the neck affords a feature which seems to be unique. The first seven of the cervical vertebra form a continuous curve with its concavity forward, but the eighth articulates with the seventh nearly ata right angle, and, when the bird is at rest, lies horizontally. The ninth is directed downwards almost as abruptly, and those which succeed present a gentle forward convexity. The muscles moving this curious framework are as curiously specialized, and the result of the whole piece of mechanism is to enable the bird to spear with facility its fishy prey. (A. ¥.)

8 This peculiarity, first pointed out to the writer by Mr. Bartlett, who observed it in birds in the Zoological Society's possession, doubt: less suggested the name of " Water-Turkey" by which in some places Plotus anhinga is said to be known. '

4 The curious but apparently well-attested fact of the occurrence 12 England, near Poole, in June 1851, of a male bird of this species

(Zoologist, pp. 8601, 3654) has been overlooked by several writers who profess to mention all cases of a similar character.

to emerge, in the manner before related, showin little more than ~

may be introduced into its tank, however rapidly they may swim

eater —

regarded as forming a fourth species, P. nove-hollandiz ; but others ©

eee =

SN A—

SNAKE-ROOT. In most countries where snakes abound some root or herb is used by the natives as an antidote for the bites of venomous species, and many herbs have consequently received the name of snake-root. Botanically speaking, the name properly belongs to Ophiorrhiza Mungos, L., a plant of the Cinchona family, used in the East Indies for the purpose above

indicated. In medicine, however, the roots of Aristolochia Serpentaria, L., Polygala Senega, L., or Comecifuga racemosa, Elliott, are alike understood by this name, being distinguished respectively as the Virginian, Seneka, and Black Snake-roots. The first is now employed as an aromatic antiseptic tonic in typhoid fever, the second as a stimulant expectorant in bronchitis, and the third as a sedative in rheumatic or inflammatory affections, especially in muscular rheumatism and lumbago. The root of Aristolochia reticulata, Nutt., which is known in the United States as Red River or Texan Snake-root, is the kind most frequently met with in the United Kingdom as Serpentary or Virginian Snake-root. (See Guaco.)

The roots or rhizome of Liatris spicata, Willd., Eryngium aquaticum, L., and Hupatorium altissimum, L., have all been used in North America for snake-bites, the first two being known as Button Snake-root and the last as White Snake-root. The rhizome of Asarwm canadense, L., passes under the name of Canadian Snake-root. All of these con- tain acrid or aromatic principles which, when a warm de- coction of the drug is taken, exercise a powerfully diapho- retic or, in some cases, diuretic action, to which any benefit that may be derived from their use must be attributed.

SNAKES constitute an order (Ophidia) in the olass of Reptiles which is characterized by an exceedingly elongate body, cylindrical or sub-cylindrical, and terminating in a tapering tail. The integuments are folded into flat imbri- cate scales, which are rarely tubercular or granular. The spinal column consists of a very great number of vertebra, with which the numerous ribs are movably articulated. Limbs are entirely absent, or only rudiments of the pos- terior occur more or less hidden below the skin; there is no sternum. The bones of the palate and jaws are mov- able; the mandibles are united in front by an elastic liga- ment and are very distensible. Generally both jaws and the palate are toothed, the teeth being thin and needle- like. There are no eyelids, no ear-opening. The vent is a transverse slit. |

Great as is the difference in appearance between a typical snake and a typical lizard, the two orders of Ophidians and Lacertilians are nearly allied ; the former is probably merely a specialized descendant of the latter or of the pythonomorphous reptiles, or perhaps of both. Moreover, the living

Lacertilians include forms which approach the Ophidians by having a greatly increased number of verte- bree, a much advanced degradation of the scapular and pel- vic arches and limbs, a simple dentition, and the absence of eyelids and external ear-opening. And on the other hand we find Ophidians with a greatly diminished flexibility of the vertebral column, with closely adherent, smooth and polished scales, with a narrow mouth—totally unlike the enormous gape of the typical snakes—and even without that longitudinal fold in the median line of the chin which 18 So characteristic of the order (Typhlopide). Thus of the Ophidian characters as given above only that taken from the loose connexion of the bones of the skull remains as a sharp line of separation between snakes and lizards. The mandibulary symphysis is not by suture but by an elastic band ; the intermaxillary, palatine, and pterygoid bones are so loosely attached to the cranium that they can be easily pressed outwards and forwards, and the maxillary and mandibulary of one side can be moved in those directions independently of their fellows opposite. The intermaxillary is small, generally toothless, and coalesces

Sa a 189

with the nasals and vomer into a single movable bone : finally, the suspensory is much elongate and movable at both ends. This arrangement ensures an extraordinary degree of mobility and elasticity of all parts of the gape, which, however, varies in the different families of the order. For the other characteristic points of their structure and for their distribution, see REPrizEs.

The number of known species of snakes has been given Distribu- The tion and limits of their distribution seem to be the 70th parallel }#bits.

as 1500 by some authorities and as 1800 by others.

N. lat. in Europe, the 54th in British Columbia, and the 40th parallel S. lat. in the southern hemisphere. The num- ber of species and of individuals in a species is small in the temperate zones, but increases as the tropics are approached. In the tropical zone they are abundant, especially where a well-watered soil nourishes a rich vegetation, with glades open to the sun, and where a variety of small animals serve as an abundant and easily obtained

prey. It is in the tropics also that the largest (boas, pythons) and the most specialized kinds occur (tree snakes, sea snakes, the large poisonous snakes). On the other hand, every variety of soil is tenanted by some kind of snakes: they form a contingent in every desert fauna. In accordance with this general distribution snakes show a great amount of differentiation with regard to their mode of life and general organization ; and from the appearance alone of a snake a safe conclusion can be drawn as to its habits. The following categories may be distinguished.

(1) Burrowing snakes, which live under ground and but rarely appear on the surface. They have a cylindrical rigid body, covered with generally smooth and polished scales; a short strong tail; a short rounded or pointed head with narrow mouth ; teeth few in number; small or rudimentary eye; no abdominal scutes or only narrow ones. They feed chiefly on invertebrate animals, and none are poisonous. (2) Ground snakes, living chiefly on the ground, and rarely ascending bushes or entering water. Their body is cylindrical, flexible in every part, covered with smooth or keeled scales, and provided with broad ventral and subcaudal scutes. All the various parts of their body and head are well proportioned; the non- poisonous kinds of ground snakes are in fact the typical and least specialized snakes, and more numerous than any of the other kinds. They feed chiefly on terrestrial vertebrates. The majority are non-poisonous; but the majority of poisonous snakes must be referred to this category. (3) Tree snakes, which are able to climb bushes or trees with facility or pass even the greater part of their existence on trees. Their body is rarely cylindrical, generally compressed and slender; their broad ventral scutes are often carinate on the sides. Those kinds which have a less elongate and cylindrical body possess a dis- tinctly prehensile tail. The eye is generally large. Their coloration consists often of bright hues, and sometimes resembles that of their surroundings. They feed on animals which likewise lead an arboreal life, rarely on eggs. Poisonous as well as innocuous snakes are repre- sented in this category. (4) Freshwater snakes, living in or frequenting fresh waters; they are excellent swimmers and divers. The nostrils are placed on the top of the snout and can be closed whilst the animal is under water. Their body is cylindrical, moderately long, provided with narrow ventral scutes ; the tail tapering; head flat, rather short; and the eyes of small size. They feed on fish, frogs, and other aquatic animals, and are innocuous and vivipar- ous. (5) Sea

snakes are distinguished by the compressed, rudder-shaped tail, supported by erect neural and hemal spines, They never leave the sea (with the exception of one genus) and are unable to move on land. They feed on fishes, are viviparous and poisonous.

Locomo- tion.

Integu- ments.

190

The majority of snakes are active during the day, their energy increasing with the increasing temperature of the air; whilst some delight in the moist sweltering heat of dense tropical vegetation, others expose themselves to the fiercest rays of the midday sun. Not a few, however, lead a nocturnal life, and many of them have, accordingly, their pupil contracted into a vertical or more rarely a horizontal slit. Those which inhabit temperate latitudes hibernate. Snakes are the most stationary of all verte- brates; as long as a locality affords them a sufficiency of food and some shelter to which they can readily retreat, they have no inducement to change it. Their dispersal, therefore, must have been extremely slow and gradual. Although able to move with extreme rapidity, they can- not maintain it for any length of time. Their organs of locomotion are the ribs, the number of which is very great, nearly corresponding to that of the vertebrae of the trunk. They can adapt their motions to every variation of the ground over which they move, yet all varieties of snake locomotion are founded on the following simple process. When a part of the body has found some projection of

Fic. 1.—Diagram of natural locomotion of a snake.

the ground which affords it a point of support, the ribs are drawn more closely together, on alternate sides, there- by producing alternate bends of the body. The hinder portion of the body being drawn after, some part of it © finds another support on the rough ground or a projection ; and, the anterior bends being stretched in a straight line, the front part of the body is propelled (from a to d) in con- sequence. During this peculiar locomotion the numerous broad shields of the belly are of great advantage, as by means of their free edges the snake is enabled to catch and use as points of support

the slightest projections of the ground. A pair of ribs corresponds to each of these ventral shields. Snakes are not able to move over a per- fectly smooth surface. Thus it is evident that they move by dragging their body over the ground, or over some

Fria. 2.—Diagram of conventional idea of a snake's locomotion.

other firm base, such as the branch of a tree; hence the conventional representation of the progress of a snake, in which its undulating body is figured as resting by a series of lower bends on the ground whilst the alternate bends are raised above it, is an impossible attitude. Also the notion that snakes when attacking are able to jump off the ground is quite erroneous; when they strike an object, they dart the fore part of their body, which was retracted in several bends, forwards in a straight line. And sometimes very active snakes, like the cobra, advance simultaneously with the remainder of the body, which, how- ever, glides in the ordinary fashion over the ground ; but no snake is able to impart such an impetus to the whole of its body as to lose its contact with the ground. Some snakes can raise the anterior part of their body and even move in this attitude, but it is only about the anterior fourth or third of the total length which can be thus erected. —

With very few exceptions, the integuments form imbri- cate scale-like folds arranged with the greatest regular- ity ; they are small and pluriserial on the upper parts of the body and tail, large and uniserial on the abdomen, and generally biserial on the lower side of the tail. The folds can be stretched out, so that the skin is capable of a great degree of distension. The scales are sometimes rounded behind, but generally rhombic in shape and more

or less elongate; they may be quite smooth or provided with a longitudinal ridge or keel in the middle line. The integuments of the head are divided into non-imbricate bones or having any relation to them. The form and and scutes, and the

shape and arrange-

value guishing the genera

useful to explain in

shields or plates, symmetrically arranged, but not cor- responding in size or shape with the underlying cranial

numberof thescales

s a fe

oie P é

ment of the head- . shields, are of great in distin-

and species, and it will therefore be

the accompanying woodcut (fig. 3) the terms by which these parts are de- signated, The skin does not form eye- lids; but the epi- dermis passes over the eye, forming a transparent disk, concave like the

glass of a watch,Fro. Eire eye sen of eee (Piya jorvod . : r, Rostral; f, posterior frontal ; ’, anterior frontal; behind which the 4° yertical’’’s, supraciliary or supraccular; 0, oc. eye moves. It is pgp i n/, nasals TP apse 3s on a é or orbital, or preorbital or anteocular; p, post-

the first part which is cast off when

oculars; wu, u, upper labials; ¢, t, temporals; m,

mental; *, *, lower labials; ¢, c, chin-shields. the snake sheds its skin; this is done several times in the year, and the epidermis comes off in a single piece.

The tongue in snakes is narrow, almost worm-like, Tongu generally of a black colour and forked; that is, it terminates in front in two extremely fine filaments. It is often exserted with a rapid motion, sometimes with the object of feeling some object, sometimes under the influence of anger or fear.

Snakes possess teeth in the maxillaries, mandibles, pala- Denti | tine, and pterygoid bones, sometimes also in the inter- tiou: | maxillary ; they may be absent in one or the other of the bones mentioned. In the innocuous snakes the teeth are simple and uniform in structure, thin, sharp like needles, and bent backwards; their function consists merely in seizing and holding the prey. In some all the teeth are nearly of the same size; others possess in front of the jaws (Lycodonts) or behind in the maxillaries (Diacras- terians) a tooth more or less conspicuously larger than the rest ; whilst others again are distinguished by this larger posterior tooth being grooved along its outer face. The snakes with this grooved kind of tooth have been named Opisthoglypht, and also Suspecti, because some herpeto- logists were of opinion that the function of the groove of the tooth was to facilitate the introduction of poisonous saliva into a wound. ‘The venomous nature of these snakes, however, has never been proved, and persons are frequently bitten by them without any evil consequences. Nevertheless as the depth of the groove, the length of the tooth, and the development of the salivary glands in its vicinity vary greatly, it is quite possible that the func- tion and the physiological effect of this apparatus are not the same in all Opisthoglyphs. In the true poisonous snakes the maxillary dentition has undergone a special modification. The so-called Colubrine Venomous snakes, which retain in a great measure an external resemblance to the innocuous snakes, have the maxillary bone not at all, or but little, shortened, armed in front with a fixed, erect fang, and provided with a deep groove or clo

canal for the conveyance of the poison, the fluid being secreted by a special poison-gland. One or more small ordinary teeth may be placed at some distance behind this poison-fang. In the other venomous snakes (Viperines and Crotalines) the maxillary bone is very short, and is armed with a single very long curved fang with a canal and aperture at each end. Although firmly anchylosed to the bone, the tooth, which when at rest is laid backwards, is erectile,—the bone itself being mobile and rotated round its transverse axis by muscles. One or more reserve teeth, in various stages of development, lie between the folds of the gum and are ready to take the place of the one in func- tion whenever it is lost by accident, or shed, which seems to happen at regular intervals. The gland which secretes the poison is described under Ruprrius (vol. xx. p. 457). All snakes are carnivorous, and

as a rule take living prey only ; a few feed habitually or occasionally on eggs. Many swallow their victim alive ; others first kill it by smothering it between the coils of their body (constriction). The effects of a bite by a poisonous snake upon a small mammal or bird are almost instantaneous, preventing its escape; and the snake swallows its victim at its leisure, sometimes hours after it has been killed. The prey is _ always swallowed entire, and, as its girth generally much exceeds that of the snake, the progress of deglutition is very laborious and slow. Opening their jaws to their fullest extent, they seize the animal generally by the head, _ and pushing alternately the right and left sides of the jaws forward, they press the body through their elastic gullet into the stomach, its outlines being visible for some time through the distended walls of the abdomen. Digestion is quick and much accelerated by the quantity of saliva _ which is secreted during the progress of deglutition, and in venomous snakes probably also by the chemical action of the poison. The primary function of the poison- apparatus in the. economy of snakes is without doubt to serve as the means of procuring their food. But, like the weapons of other carnivorous animals, it has assumed the secondary function of an organ of defence. Only very few poisonous snakes (like Ophiophagus elaps) are known _toresent the approach of man so much as to follow him | on his retreat and to attack him. Others, as if conscious

of their fearful power of inflicting injury, are much less

| inclined to avoid collision with man than innocuous kinds, | and are excited by the slightest provocation to use that power in self-defence. They have thus become one of the _ Steatest scourges to mankind, and Sir J. Fayrer! has de- Monstrated that in India alone annually some 20,000 human beings perish from snake-bites. Therefore it will not be out of place to add here a few words on snake- poison and on the best means (ineffectual though they be mMnumerous cases) of counteracting its deleterious effects, Chemistry has not yet suceeeded in separating the aetive princi- ple of snake-poison or in distinguishing between the seeretions of (itferent kinds of poisonous snakes ; In fact it seems to be identieal mall, and probably not different from the poison of seorpions and hany Hymenoptera. The physiological effeets of all these poisons on warm-blooded Vertebrates are identieal, and vary only in degree, the sinallest quantities of the poison

produeing a loeal irritation, whilst in serious eases the whole mass of the blood is poisoned | In the course of some seconds or minutes, producing paralysis of the herve-eentres. That there is some difference, however, in oe action of the poisons upon the blood has been shown by ayter, who found that the poison of Viperine snakes invariably

| Sestroys its eoagulability, whilst nothing of the kind is observed in / animals which perished from the bite of a Colubrine Venomous | a The same observer has also experimentally demonstrated) gua the blood of a poisoned warm-blooded animal assumes poison- | a Properties, and, when injected, kills like the poison itself, F ough the bodies of the animals may be eaten by man with mpunity. On the other hand, he has proved that the opinion Seherally adopted since Redi's time, viz., that snake-poison is

=

- The Thanatophidia of India, fol., London, 1872.

effieacious only through direet injection into the blood, is fallacious, aud that it is readily absorbed through mucous and serous mem- aie Slabs the same effects, though in a milder degree.

e in the first plaee on the quantity of poison injeeted : vigorous snake whieh has not bitten for some time is more to be snake- feared than one of small size or one which is weakly or has ex- bites, hausted its stock of poison by previous bites. The bite of some of the smaller Australian Diemenias and Hoplocephali is followed by no worse eonsequenees than those arising from the sting of a wasp or a hornet, while immediately fatal eases are on reeord of persons bitten by the eobra or the large South-Ameriean Crotalines.

In the second place it depends on the strength of the individual bitten: a man of strong physieal constitution and energetic mental disposition is better able to survive the immediate effeets

of the bite than a ehild ora person wanting in eourage. Thirdly,

it depends on the position and depth of the bite: the bite may

be merely a superficial serateh, or niay penetrate into tissue hay-

ing few blood-vessels, and thus be almost harmless ; or it may be deep in vascular tissue or even penetrate a vein, produeing im- mediate and fatal effeets. It must be mentioned also that Fayrer

is distinetly of opinion that the poison of some kinds is more powerful than that of others. The mere shock produeed by the

bite of a snake upon a nervous person may be sufficiently severe

to be followed by symptoms of eollapse, although no aetual poison-

ing of the blood has taken place, or although the bite was that

of an innoeuous snake. It is said that persons have actually died under sueh eircumstances from x ; mere fright. The local appearanees in the neighbourhood of a poisoned e wound, whieh soon after the bite is * mueh swollen and diseoloured and very painful, readily prove its ehar- aeter ; but this can be often aseer- tained also immediately after the bite by the inspeetion of the wound, —the teeth, which are so differently arranged in poisonous and non- poisonous snakes, leaving a different pattern on the skin. As a non- poisonous snake has four rows of teeth in the upper jaw, the pattern of its bite will more or less resemble fig. 4, whilst a petsoneus snake Fic. 4.—Diagram of toothmarks of leaves two rows of more distinetly an innocuous snake. marked punctured wounds in the Fic. 5.—Diagram of toothmarks of a plaee of the two outer series in the Poisonous snake (cobra), non-poisonous (see fig. 5). Of eourse, there may be modifieations of these patterns, as, for instance, when one fang only hits or penetrates the part aimed at, or when the direction of the stroke is slanting, producing merely a serateh.

° . a

2

e a

=

me

Perey a Cae =

<

“we eaucu*® eesoae eee SITS. e ry seSune “D595 on 900ca0TY POs watt ieee, , ae” Ago “Semeunae e 2e* er? Seoesaseo 2 &?

Fig. 4 Fig. 5.

Unfortunately no antidote is known capable of eounteraeting Remedies Some years ago injee- and treat-

or neutralizing the aetion of snake-poison. tions of ammonia or liquor potasse were recommended, but there ment. is the obvious objeetion that hardly in one out of a thousand eases of snake-bite would either the applianees or the operator be at hand. Fayrer’s experiments, however, have distinctly disproved the effieaey of this remedial measure. Equally useless is permanganate of potassium ; it is indeed true that a solution of this eompound destroys the properties of snake-poison when mixed with it; and therefore sueh of the poison as remains in the wound will be neutralized by the external application or injeetion of the perman- ganate, but the remedy is entirely without effeet after the poison has passed into the eirculation.’ Treatment is therefore limited to endeavours to prevent by meehanieal means the poison from entering the eireulation, or by ehemieal ageneies to destroy or remove as mueh of it as possible that remains in the wound, and to save the patient from the subsequent mental and physical depression by the free use of stimulants. Whatever is or can be done must be done immediately, as a few seconds suffice to earry the poison into the whole vaseular system, and the slightest delay diminishes the ehances of the patient’s reeovery. Courageous persons badly bitten in a finger or toe are

known to have saved their lives by the immediate amputation of the wounded member. To the mode of treatment summarized by Giinther? but little ean be added. (1) If the wound is on some part of the extremities, one or more ligatures should be made as tightly as possible at a short distanee above the wound, to stop eireulation ; this is most effeetually done by inserting a stick under the ligature and twisting it to the uttermost. The ligatures are left until means are taken to destroy the virus in the wound and other remedial measures are resorted to, or until the swelling neeessitates their removal. (2) The punetured wounds should be enlarged by deep ineisions, to eause a free efflux of the poisoned blood, or should be eut out

entirely. (8) The wound should be sucked either by the patient

Reptiles of British India, London, 1864, 4to.

- eos S,. : egree of danger arising from a snake-bite to man depends Causes in- a large fluencing

Propaga- tion.

Classi- fication.

192

or some other person whose mouth is free from any solution of continuity. Cupping-glasses, where they can be applied, answer the same purpose, but not with the same effect. (4) By cauteriza- tion with a red-hot iron, a live coal, nitrate of silver or carbolic or mineral acid, or by injections of permanganate of potassium, the poison which remains in the wound can be destroyed or neutralized. Ammonia applied to the wound as a wash and rubbed into the neighbouring parts is likewise undeniably of great benefit, especially in less serious cases, since it alleviates the pain and reduces the swelling. (5) Internally, stimulants are to be taken freely ; they do not act as specifics against the virus, but are given to excite the action of the heart, the contractions of which become feeble and irregular, to counteract the physical and mental depression, and to prevent a complete collapse. Brandy, whisky, and ammonia in any of its officinal forms should be taken 1n large doses and at short intervals. The so-called ‘‘snake-stones” can have no other

effect than, at the best, to act as local absorbents, and can be of use only in the very slightest cases.

Snakes are oviparous; they deposit from ten to eighty eggs of an ellipsoid shape, covered with a soft leathery shell, in places where they are exposed to and hatched by moist heat. The parents pay no further attention to them, except the pythons, which incubate their eggs by coiling their body over them, and fiercely defend them. In some families, as many freshwater snakes, the sea snakes, Viperidx, and Crotalide, the eggs are retained in the oviduct until the embryo is fully developed. These snakes bring forth living young, and are called “ ovo-viviparous.”

The order of snakes may be divided into the following

sub-orders and families or groups.

First Sub-order.—Hopoterodontes.

Small burrowing snakes, with a cylindrical body, which is nearly of the same thickness from its anterior to its posterior extremity, and is covered with smooth polished scales of the same size in its whole circumference. No mental groove. Head small, not distinct from the trunk, with imbricate scale-like scutes. Eye rudimentary. Mouth very natrow, at the lower side of the head, armed with small teeth in one jaw only.

Family 1. Typanoripz.—Teeth in the upper jaw only.

Genera: Zyphilina, Onychocephalus, Typhlops (see figs. 6, ioe

Family 2. STENOSTOMATID#.—Teeth in the lower jaw only.

Genera: Stenostoma, Siagnodon.

Second Sub-order.—Ophidii Colubriformes.

Innocuous snakes. Teeth in both jaws, noue of the anterior being grooved or perforated. Scales more or less differentiated. A mental groove is generally present. Eye developed.

Family 1. Tortricip#.—Body cylindrical, with a rounded head not distinct from the neck ; tail very short. Rudiments of hind limbs hidden in a small groove on each side of the vent. Scales rounded, polished, those of the ventral series but little enlarged ; only one pair of frontals ; six upper labials. Eye small. Mouth ot moderate width ; teeth few in number, sub-equal in size.

Genera: Ilysia (tropical America) ; Cylindrophis (India).

Family 2. XENOPELTIDS. —Body cylindrical, with a rounded head not distinct from the neck; tail short. No rudimentary hind limbs. Scales rounded, polished ; ventral shields well differentiated ; two pairs of frontals ; occiput covered with five shields. Eye small. Mouth of moderate width ; teeth numerous, sub-equal.

One genus, from the Indian region : Xenopeltis.

Family 38. UROPELTIDS (Rough Tails).—Body cylindrical, with a short head not distinct from the neck ; tail very short, trun- cated or scarcely tapering, frequently terminating in a rough naked disk or covered with keeled scales. Scales rounded and polished, those of the ventral series being always somewhat larger than the rest; only one pair of frontals ; four upper labials. Eye very small. Mouth of moderate width ; teeth few in number, small, sub-equal, none on the palate. Mental groove generally absent. Small burrowing Indian snakes.

Genera: Rhinophis, Uropeltis, Silybura, Plectrurus, Melan- ophidiwm.
Family 4. CaLamarmpa.—Small snakes, with a rather rigid

body; the short head not distinct from the neck; tail more or less short. Scales in from thirteen to seventeen series ; ventral shields well developed, generally less than 200 in number; the

normal number of head-shields always reduced by two or more of

them being confluent. Cleft of the mouth of moderate width ; nostril lateral ; palatine teeth present.

African genera: Homalosoma, Calamelaps, Prosymna, Opistho- tropis, Xenocalamus, Amblyodipsas, Elapops, Urobelus, Uriechis. Europeo-Asiatic genera: Khynchocalamus, Psilosoma. Indian genera: Calamaria, Macrocalamus, Typhlogcophis, Xylophis, Oxycalamus, Brachyorrhos, Elapoides, Rhinosimus, Aspidura,

SNAKES

smooth rounded scales ; nearly always with symmetrical arrow-shaped markings above, Ventral scutes broad ; rostral shield large, more or backwards. Maxillary teeth few in number, the hindmost enlarged not grooved.

the non-venomous snakes and the least specialized forms. body of moderate length compared to its circumference, flexible in every part; the head, trunk, portioned ; nostril lateral ;

the palate, maxillary. divided ‘in accordance with the general habitus or mode of life into several groups, which, however, are connected by numerous intermediate forms.

which swim well when driven into the water, search of food ; they are of moderate or rather large size.

Haplocercus, Achalinus (Japan). North-American genera; Carphophis, Conocephalus, Streptophorus, Contia. Tropical American genera: Homalocranium, Arrhyton, Rhegnops, Colo- bognathus, Geophidium, Catostoma, Stenognathus, Leptocala- mus, Chersodromus, Elapomorphus, Cercocalamus, Microdromus Stcnorhina, Rhinostoma, Rhynchonyx. Genus with wide dis- tribution : Geophis.

Family 5. OLIGODONTID#&.—Body rather rigid, covered with

head short, not distinct from neck, and

less produced

Indian.

Genera: Oligodon, Simotes.

Family 6. CoLusripz.—This family comprises the majority of Their

and tail—in fact all parts—well pro- teeth numerous in the jaws and on but without fangs in front or in the middle of the Double row of sub-caudals. This family may he

The group of (i.) Ground Colubrides, Coronellina, consists of

small forms, generally of brilliant coloration, and comprises the following genera :—

Genera with wide distribution : Ablabes, Cyclophis, Tachymenis, Coronella, Liophis. African: Psammophylax, Ditypophis. Indian: Megablabes, Mymphophidiwm, Odontomus. Tropical American: Erythrolamprus, Pliocercus, Hypsirhynchus.

The group of (ii.) True Colubrides, Colubrina, are land snakes,

or climb when in

Genera with wide distribution: Coluber, Elaphis, Ptyas, Zamenis. African genera: Xenurophis, Herpetzxthiops, Scaphiophis. In- dian genera: Compsosoma, Xenelaphis, Cynophis, Lielaphis, Lytorhynchus. Europeo-Asiatic: Rhinechis. North-American: Pituophis. South-American: Spilotes. Australian: Zamenophis.

The group of (iii.) Bush Colubrides, Dryadina, leads up to the true Tree snakes, its members having a more or less elongate and compressed body, frequently of green colour; they are more numer- ousin the New than in the Old World, and belong to the following

Genera: Dromicus, Herpetodryas, Herpetoreas, Philodryas, Diplo- tropis, Zaocys, Dryocalamus.

Finally, the group of (iv.) Freshwater Colubrides, Natricina, are generally neither elongate nor compressed, and possess frequently keeled scales. They freely enter water in pursuit of their prey,— chiefly frogs and fishes.

Genera with wide distribution: Zropidonotus, Heterodon, African: Grayia, Neusterophis, Limnophis, Hydrethiops, Macrophis. Indian: Xenochrophis, Prymnomiodon,

Family 7. Homa.orsips (Freshwater Snakes).—Body of mode- rate length, cylindrical or slightly compressed ; head rather thick, broad, not very distinct from neck; tail strong, of moderate length. Ventral scutes rather narrow; double row of sub-caudals. Eye small. Nostrils on the upper surface of the head, small, pro- vided with a valve; nasal shields enlarged at the expense of the anterior frontals, which are frequently confluent into a single shield. The other head shields may deviate ftom the usual arrangement,

Indian genera: Fordonia, Cantoria, Cerberus, Hypsirhina, Fer- ania, Homalopsis, Hipistcs, Herpcton (see fig. 8), Gerrarda, Tachyplotus. American genera: Calopisma, LHclicops, Hy- drops, Tachynectes, Hydromorphus.

Family 8. PsAMMOPHIDH (Desert Snakes).—Loreal concave. Scales smooth ; double row of sub-caudals. Cleft of the mouth wide; nostril lateral. Eye of moderate size. Shields of the head normal; posterior frontals rounded or angular behind ; vertical narrow ; supraciliaries prominent. Loreal present. One of the four or five anterior maxillary teeth longer than the others, and the last grooved. Old World.

Genera: Psammophis, Celopeltis, Psammodynastes, Mimophis.

Family 9. RHACHIODONTIDE

region very

Taphromctopon, Rhagerrhis,

(Egg-Eaters).—Body of moderate dimensions ; head short, deep. Eyes small, pupil round. Scales strongly keeled, in twenty-three or twenty-five serics. Maxillary teeth very small and few in number ; the lower spinous processes — of the posterior cervical vertcbre penetrate the cesophagus and act as supplementary teeth. African. One genus: Dasypeltis (see fig. 9). ;
Family 10. DEnpRropHips (Tree Snakes).—Body and. tail much |

compressed or very slender and elongate ; head generally elongate — and distinct from the very slender neck ; snout rather long, obtuse or rounded in front. Cleft of the mouth wide. Eye of moderate size or large, with round pupil. Shields of the head normal ; scales

gencrally narrow and much imbricate ; ventral scutes kceled later- ally; double row of sub-caudals. No large fang cither in front or in the middle of the upper jaw. ‘ ;

African genera: Bucephalus, Hapsidophrys, Rhamnophis, Philo- thamuus, Ithycyphus. Indian and Australian genera: Gonyo- soma, Phyllophis, Dendrophis, Chrysopelea. Tropical American : Ahezxtulla. , ;

Family 11. Dryvopnip™ (Whip Snakes).—Body and tail ex- cessively slender and elongate ; head very narrow and long with tapering snout, which sometimes is produced into a longer or shorter appendage. Mouth very wide. Eye of moderate size, generally with a auiial pupil. Scales very narrow, much imbricate ; double row of sub-caudals, Posterior maxillary teeth grooved.

Genera: Tropidococcyx, Cladophis, Dryophis, Tragops, Passerita

(see fig. 10), Langaha.

Family 12. Dipsapip#2.—Body much compressed, elongate or of moderate length ; head short, broad behind, with short rounded snout distinct from neck. Eye large, generally with vertical pupil. Cleft of the mouth wide. Seales of the vertebral series frequently enlarged. Dentition strong, frequently with enlarged anterior and posterior maxillary teeth.

Genera: Chamzxtortus, Leptodira, Tropidodipsas, Hemidipsas, Thamnodynastes, Dipsas, Dipsadoboa, Rhinobothryum, Pythono- dipsas.

Baily 13. SoyvraLipa#.—Head, trunk, and tail of moderate dimensions. Eye of moderate size, with elliptical pupil. Scales smooth, in seventeen or nineteen rows; anal entire; siugle or double row of sub-caudals. Posterior maxillary teeth grooved, anterior ones equal in length.

Genera: Scytale, Oxyrhopus, Rhinosimus.

Family 14, Lycopontipm. Body of moderate length or rather elongate ; snout generally depressed, flat, and elongate. Eye rather small, often with vertical pupil. Upper head-shields regular, with the posterior frontals enlarged. Maxillary with a fang in front, but without posterior grooved tooth.

African genera: Boodon, Holwropholis, Alopecion, Lycophidium, Bothrophthalmus, Bothrolycus, Lycodryas, Hormonotus, Simo- cephalus, Lamprophis, Indian genera: Lycodon, Dinodon, Tetragonosoma, Leptorhytaon, Ophites, Cercaspis, Ulupe.

Family 15. AmMBLYCEPHALIDZ (Blunt Heads)—Body com-

ressed, slender, and of moderate length ; head short, thick, very Mstinct from neck; nostril in a single shield. Eye with vertical pupil. Cleft of the mouth narrow and not very extensible. Scales smooth or faintly keeled, those of the vertebral series generally enlarged. Maxillary dentition feeble, no grooved tooth.

Indian genera: Digsadomorus, Amblycephalus, Parcas, Astheno- dipsas, Elachistodon. South-American genera: Leptognathus, Opisthophis.

Family 16. Erycipa (Sand Snakes).—Body of moderate eet cylindrical, covered with small short scales; tail very short, with a single series of sub-caudals, Eye small, with vertical pupil. None of the labials are pitted. Anterior teeth longest. Adult individuals of some of the species with rudiments of hind limbs.

Genera: Eryx, Cursoria, Gongylophis, Bolyeria, Ercbophis, Lich-

anura, Calabaria, Wenona, Charina,

Family 17. Borpa#.—Body and tail of moderate length or elon- gate; tail prehensile ; snout rounded in front. Eye with vertical

Hologerrhum, Pseudoxyrhopus,

ea ee

Fia. 6.—Typhlops bothriorhynchus. from India,

i93

loreal absent. Venom-fang grooved ; maxillary long, with short teeth behind the fang.

Genus with wide distribution: Naja (see fig. 13). Indian genera: Callophis, Megerophis, Hemibungarus, Xenurelaps, Bungarus, Ophiophagus. African genera: Pacilophis, Elapsoidea, Cyrt- ophis. South-American genus: Laps (see fig. 14). Australian genera: Vermicella, Brachysoma, Neelaps, Brachyurophis, Lthinelaps, Diemenia, Cacophis, Hoplocephalus, Tropidechis, Pseudechis, Pseudonaja, Pseudohaje, Ogmodon.

Family 2. ATRAcTasP1DID&.—Body cylindrical, of moderate pro- portions ; tail short. Head short, not distinct from neck. Mouth natrow. Maxillary short, with perforated poison-fang, without other teeth behind, Africa.

Genus:

Family 3, Causipa.—Body of moderate proportions, tail moderate or rather short. Head distinct from neck. Mouth wide. Maxil- lary short, with perforated poison-fang, without other teeth behind.

African genera: Sepedon, Cawsus. South-American : Dinodipsas.

Family 4. DinopHipa (Venomous Tree Snakes).— Body and tail much elongate ; head distinct from neck. Mouth wide. A perforated poison-fang, without other teeth behind. Africa.

Genus: Dinophis (Dendraspis).

Family 5. Hyproruipm (Sea Snakes).— Body generally com- pressed, and without broad ventral scutes; tail compressed, rudder- shaped. Nostrils directed upwards. Poison-fangs small, grooved. Viviparous.

Genera: Platurus, Aipysurus, Distetra, Acalyptus, Hydrophis,

Enhydrina, Pelagophis, Pelamis (see fig. 15).

Fourth Sub-order.—Ophidii Viperiformes.

Viperine snakes. Maxillary very short, capable of rotation in its transverse axis, and armed with a single long tooth, which is perforated. Viviparous.

Family 1. VipERip# (Vipers).— Loreal region flat, without pit.

Old World genera: Vipera, Cerastes, Daboia, Echis (see fig. 17), Atheris, Australian: Acanthophis.

Family 2. CroTaLips# (Pit Vipers, Rattlesnakes).—Loreal region

with a pit.

Old World genera: Halys, Hypnale, Trimeresurus (see fig. 18), Calloselasma, Peltopelor. New World genera: Cenchris, Both- rops, Bothriopsis, Bothriechis (Rhinocerophis), Atropos, Tri- gonocephalus, Lachesis, Crotalophorus, Crotalus (see fig. 16).

This list, from which many genera or sub-genera that are not well defined have been excluded, will give an idea of the great variety of forms by which the Ophidian type is represented at the present period. Additions, more or less numerous, are made to it every year; but the

Ya

- ee

discoveries of late years have not revealed any new im- portant modifications of structure, but rather have under- mined the distinctions hitherto made be- tween genera, groups, and families, so that it would appear as if we were acquainted with all the principal forms of snakes now

ae Scales in numerous series; single or double row of sub- living. candals, In some of the genera the upper and lower labials are Sut pitted. Teeth strong, unequal in size, none grooved; no inter- We have ee bas add poms eae on snakes 5 os maxillary teeth. Rudinients of hind limbs are generally present. | tO which special interest is attached, or which a ” Genera: Boa (see fig. 11), Pelophilus, Xiphosoma, Corallus, Epi- | are most frequently brought to the notice of ; ae; lea Chilabothrius, Enygrus, Leptoboa, Ungalia, Trachyboa. | the observer or reader. The snakes most > \ amily 18, PyrHontp# (Rock Snakes).-~Distinguished from + as / p the preceding family by the presence of intermaxillary teeth. remote from the true Ophidian Ape ah the x Genera: Python (see fig. 12), Morelia, Chondropython, Liasis, members of the first family, Z’yphlopide. Aspidiotes, Nardoa, Loxocemus. They are a small degraded form, adapted for Family 19. AcCROCHORDIDE (Wart Snakes).—Body of moderate burrowing and leading a subterranean life gb, covered with small, non-imbricate, tubercular or spiny | jixe worms. Their body is cylindrical, rigid Scales ; tail rather short, prehensile. Head covered with seales ‘uh # oh, hivkl ii bi like the body ; nostrils close together, at the top of the snout. Eye covered wit smooth, short, highly po ished, small, Teeth short, strong, sub-equal in size. Aquatic. Vivi- | and closely fitting scales, without broad ven- parous. India. tral scutes; tail very short; head joined to the Genera: Acrochordus, Chersydrus. trunk without neck-like constriction behind Family 20, XENODERMIDA.—Distinguished from the preceding : ; family by possessing broad ventral and sub-caudal scutes. and short, rounded, or with an acute rostral Fic. 7. — Three

One genus: Xenodermus (Java). ? Nothopsis (Central Amcrica).

Third Sub-order.—Ophidii Colubriformes Venenosi.

Venomous Colubrine snakes. An erect grooved or perforated tooth in front of the maxillary which is not capable of rotation in its transverse axis. Scales differentiated. A mental groove.

Family 1, ELarrp£,—Tail conical, tapering. Head with shield :

i ee nel 4 views of head shield,—the principal instrument for bur- Ce Typhtops bra-

rowing in loose soil or mould, Their eye is ‘minus (India),

quite rudimentary and can only give them a ™*2™***

general perception of light. Their mouth is narrow, small,

armed with but a few teeth in one of the jaws, and not

distensible, allowing them only to feed on very small XXII. — 25

Smooth snake.

Indian rat snakes.

Aascula- pius’s snake.

194

animals, such as worms, larve, and burrowing insects. They are found in all tropical countries and the parts ad- joining, and some of the small species have a wide range, having been probably transported by accident on floating objects to distant countries. Some species attain to a length of 24 inches, whilst others scarcely grow to one- fourth that size.

An almost unbroken series leads from these degraded worm-like snakes to the typical Colubride, of which the Smooth Snake of Europe (Coronella), the Corn Snake of North America (Coluber), the Rat Snake of India and South America (Ptyas, Spilotes), Aisculapius’s Snake of the south of Europe, the common Ring Snake of England (Tropidonotus), are well-known representatives.

The Smooth Snake (Coronella levis) is common in the warmer parts of Europe, extending northwards into the New Forest district of England. In coloration, general habits, and size it somewhat resembles the viper; but,

although it is rather fierce and ready to bite when caught, it is quite harmless and soon becomes tame in captivity. The shields on its head readily distinguish it from the viper. Its chief food consists of lizards, and it attains a length of 2 feet.

The Indian Rat Snakes (Ptyas mucosus and P. korros) are two of the most common species of India, the former in- habiting India proper and Ceylon, the latter the East Indian Archi- pelago, Siam, and southern China. J.

range. Naturalists believed formerly that the occurrence of this snake at widely distant and isolated localities wag due to its introduction by the Romans, who had settle ments in those localities.

The common British Snake or Ring Snake (7Tropi- Britis

donotus natrix) is extremely common all over Europe (except in the northern parts), and belongs to a genus extremely rich in species, which are spread over Europe, Asia, India, Australia, and North America, Some of the species, like the Indian 7’, guincunciatus and 7’. stolatus and the North-American 7’. ordinatus, are perhaps more abun- dant as regards the number of individuals than any other snake. 7’. natrix is easily recognized even at a distance by two yellow or white spots which it has behind its head, It grows rarely to a length of 4 feet; it never bites, and feeds chiefly on frogs and toads. Its eggs, which are of the size and shape of a dove’s egg, and from fifteen to thirty in number, are deposited in mould or under damp leaves, and are glued together into one mass.

A very peculiar genus of snakes, Dasypeltis, represented by three species only, is the type of a separate family and is restricted in its distribution to Central and South Africa, In Cape Colony these snakes are well known under the name of “eyervreter,” ic. “egg-eaters.” Their principal diet seems to consist of eggs, their mouth and cesophagus

“ex aF7-Zz-= ~ – << — <== ee

mucosus is a powerful snake, attaining to a length of 7 feet, the tail being one-third . or rather more; it is — easily recognized by having three loreal * shields, one above the *% other two; its scales \ are arranged in seven- | teen rows. Its food – consists of mammals, \ birds, and frogs; and "< by clearing them of | AN. Lys rats and mice. It is we "

of fierce habits, always ready to bite; when irritated it utters a peculiar diminuendo sound, not unlike that produced by a tuning-fork when struck gently.

Asculapius's Snake (Coluber xsculapw) was probably the species held in veneration by the ancient Romans. It grows toa length of about 5 feet, is of mild disposi- tion, and can be readily domesticated. Its original home is Italy, where it is common, but it has extended its range northwards across the Alps into the south of France, and thence into northern Spain. Following the course of the Inn and the Danube, it has reached the Black Sea; and it is also now & 3s common in several local- ~~ ities along the middle parts of the Rhine. From direct observations made during the last twenty years there can be no doubt that it is still extending its

—

Fig. 8.—Head of Herpeton tentaculatus.

Fic. 9.—Dasypeltis wnicolor, in the act of swallowing a fowl's egg.

Sor" _ = being so distensible that an individual scarcely 20 inches in length, and with a body not surpassing a man's little finger in circumference, is able to swallow a hen's egg. The teeth in the jaws are very small and few in number; but the inferior processes of the posterior cervical vertebra are prolonged and provided with a cap of enamel, and penetrate the oesophagus, forming a kind of saw. As the egg passes through the cesophagus its shell is broken by this apparatus, and, whilst its contents are thus retained and swallowed without loss, the hard fragments of the shell are rejected. This peculiar apparatus occurs also in another snake, Elachistodon, which belongs to the Indian fauna and has been referred (provisionally) to the family Amblycephalidx. Also two prominences at the base of the skull of the Indian Coronelline Vymphophidium probably have

the same function. Besides the snakes mentioned, we have observed species of Dipsas feeding on eggs of parrots, the eggs reaching the stomach entire, as these

ring | snake,

Ege.

eaters,

SNAKES

195

snakes lack a special apparatus for breaking the shell. | bars, the bands of each pair being separated by a narrow

The Indian cobra also is said to rob birds of their eggs. The Tree Snakes (Dendrophide) are among the greatest ornaments of tropical fauna. The graceful form of their body, the elegance and rapidity of their movements, and the exquisite beauty of their colours have been the admiration of all who have had the good fortune to watch them in their native haunts. The majority lead an exclu- sively arboreal life ; only a few descend to the ground in search of their food. They prey upon every kind of

C2 VRS)

My b D A h

arboreal animal,—birds, tree-frogs, tree-lizards, &c. All seem to be diurnal, and the larger kinds attain to a length of about 4 feet. The most beautiful of all snakes are perhaps certain varieties of Chrysopelea ornata, a species extremely common in the Indian Archipelago and many parts of the continent of tropical Asia. One of these varie- hes is black, with a yellow spot in the centre of each scale; these spots are larger on the back, forming a series of tetrapetalous flowers; the head is similarly ornamented. Another variety has a red back, with pairs of black cross-

yellow space ; sides brown, dotted with black ; belly dark green, the outer portion of each ventral shield being yellow, with a blackish spot.

The features by which the tree snakes are distinguished Whip are still more developed in the family of Whip Snakes snakes.

(Dryophidx), whose excessively slender body has been compared to the cord of a whip. Although arboreal, like the former, they are nocturnal in their habits, having a horizontal instead of a round pupil of the eye. They are said to be of a fierce disposition, feeding chiefly on birds ; and indeed a long tooth placed about the middle of the maxillary seems to assist them much in penetrating the thick covering of feathers and in obtaining a firm hold on their victims. In some of the species the elongate form of the head is still more exaggerated by a pointed flexible appendage of the snout (Passerita), which may be nearly half an inch in length, and leaf-like, as in the Madagascar Langaha.

The well-defined family of Lycodontide is chiefly com- Lyco- posed of ground snakes, but a few of its members have a dontide.

sufficiently elongate body to indicate arboreal habits. The Indian genera are principally reptilivorous, while the African prey upon mice, rats, and other small nocturnal mammals. Scarcely any other snake is so common in collections as the Indian Lycodon aulicus, which inhabits the continent of India and Ceylon, some of the islands of the East Indian Archipelago (Timor), and the Philippines. It occurs in many varieties, but generally is of a uniform brown, or with some whitish crossbands on the anterior part of the body. Although only 2 feet long, it is a fierce snake, which when surprised bites readily, but its bite is innocuous.

The Borde are so similar in their habits to the Pythons Boas.

(see PyrHon, vol. xx. p. 144) that it is sufficient to refer in a few words to the species most frequently mentioned in the literature dealing with the fauna of the virgin forests of tropical America. The real Boa constrictor iscom- 4 mon from the north- G4 ern parts of Central America to southern Brazil, and is fre- quently brought alive to Europe. Generally it is only about 7 feet long; but the present writer has seen skins of specimens which

must have been nearly twice that length. The giganticsnakes of from 20 to 30 feet in length mentioned in books of South-American travels belong to a different species, the Anaconda or Jb. murina, which has the same habits as the £B. constrictor, haunting the banks of rivers and lakes and lying in wait for peccaries, deer, and other mammals of similar size, which come to the water to drink. It has already been stated (see Ruprizxs) that this family is not restricted to South Anierica, but is well represented in the tropical Pacific region. The Boid most common in that region is Hnygrus, which ranges all over New Guinea, the Fiji Islands, the Solomon group, Samoa, and many other Pacific islands; it is of small size, scarcely 30 inches long.

We pass now to the Venomous Colubrine snakes, that is, snakes which combine with the possession of a perfect poison apparatus the scutellation and general appearance of the typical non-poisonous snakes. It is a remarkable

Fic. 12.—Head of Python reticulatus.

Cobras,

fact, however, that the snakes of this sub-order agree in the absence of the small shield on the side of the snout, the so-called “loreal”; and this is all the more remarkable as the same shield has by no means a similar taxonomic significance in the non-venomous snakes, many of whicli are without it, although it is present in the majority. No snake of this sub-order is more widely known and more dreaded than the species of the genus Vaja or cobras. Probably more than two species should be distinguished ; but the two which cause the greatest loss of life are the Indian Cobra or Cobra di Capello or Naga (WV. tripudians) and the African Cobra (WV. haje). In a report to the Bengal Government the commissioner of Burdwan states that he has ascertained from statistics collected during a series of nine years that above 1000 persons are killed annually by snakes in a population of nearly 6,000,000, the majority being bitten by the cobra, which is by far the most common. And other districts in India seem to suffer still more severely, although it is difficult to obtain information of all the accidents caused by snakes. The cobra is found throughout India, extending westwards to the

Sutle}] and eastwards to the Chinese island of Chusan; in the Hima- layan alps it reaches an altitude of 8000 feet ; it occurs also in abundance in many of the islands of the East Indian Archipelago, and is here joined by another apparently dis- tinct species (V. sputatriz), whilst in the central portions of Asia, which geographically separate it from the African cobra, it is replaced by a fourth, WV. owi- ana. The Indian cobra appears in # many varieties of } colour, which are & distinguished by — separate names in the nomenclature of the Hindu snake-charmers. The ground colour varies from a yellowish olive to brown and to black with or without whitish or white crossbands on the back, and with from one to four or without any black bars across the anterior part of the belly. Some of these varieties are characterized by a pair of very con- spicuous white, black-edged spectacle-like marks on the expansible portion of the neck, called the “hood”; but these marks may lose their typical form and become merely a pair of ocellated spots, or be confluent into a single ocellus, or may be absent altogether. All these varieties, however, are the same species, which generally attains to a length of 5 feet, but sometimes exceeds 6. It is more of nocturnal than of diurnal habits, feeding on every kind of small Ver- tebrates and also eating eggs. The cobra and the other species of this genus have the anterior ribs elongated, and can move them so as to form a right angle with the spine. The effect of this movement is the dilatation of that part behind the head which is generally ornamented with the spectacles or ocelli, When the cobra is irritated or excited it spreads its “hood,” raising the anterior third of the body from the ground, gliding along with the pos- terior two-thirds, and holding itself ready to strike forwards or sidewards. All accounts agree that the cobra is not aggressive unless interfered with or impelled by a sense of danger. It is said to share the habitations of man where superstition prevents people from molesting it, and to live peaceably with the inmates; and there is no doubt that professional snake-charmers exercise a certain control over them, for, although generally the cobras exhibited are rendered harmless by the removal of the poison-fangs, they very rarely attempt to injure their masters even after the fangs have been reproduced. Of the natural enemies of the cobra, the mongoos (see vol. xii. p. 629) does probably the greatest amount of execution ; many are destroyed by

S Fic. 13.—Head of cobra.

_be frequently without serious effect, owing to their narrow

fowls shortly after being hatched. The cobra is oviparous, depositing from eighteen to twenty-five eggs in the year, The African cobra is extremely similar to its Indian cop- gener in size, form, and habits, and varies in coloration to the same extent. It inhabits the whole of Africa, from Egypt to the Cape of Good Hope, but has been nearly exterminated in the cultivated districts of the Cape Colony, One of its greatest enemies (as indeed of all snakes) is the secretary bird of South Africa (Serpentarius), which, there- fore, is protected by law. Accidents from this snake do not appear to be of common occurrence; they happen more frequently to domestic animals than to man. In the Egyptian hieroglyphics the cobra occurs constantly with the body erect and hood expanded; its name was ouro, which signifies “king,” and the animal appears in Greek literature as owraios and basiliscus. With the Egyptian gnake-charmers of the present day the cobra is as great a favourite as with their Hindu colleagues. They pretend to change the snake into a rod, and Geoffroy St-Hilaire main- tains that the supple snake is made stiff and rigid by a strong pressure upon its neck, and that the animal does not seem to suffer from this operation, but soon recovers from the cataleptic fit into which it has been temporarily thrown. More dangerous than either of the species of cobra, Ophio | which it exceeds in size, is Hamadryas or Ophiophagus phagis | elaps, the largest poisonous snake of the Old World, — attaining to a length of 14 feet. It has almost the same geographical range as the cobra, but is much scarcer ; it greatly resembles it also in general habit, but differs from it in scutellation, possessing three large shields behind the occipitals, . It has the reputation of occasionally attacking and pursuing man; its favourite food consists of other snakes. Snake-charmers prize it highly for exhibition on account of its size and its docility in captivity, but are always careful to extract the fangs. It lives in captivity for many years. | The species of Bungarus, four in number, are extremely Bun. common in India, Burmah, and Ceylon, and are distinguished garum| by having only one row of undivided sub-caudal shields. Three of the species have the body ornamented with black rings, but the fourth and most common (B. coeruleus), the “krait” of Bengal, possesses a dull and more uniform coloration. The fangs of the bungarums are shorter than those of

the cobras, and cannot penetrate so deeply into the wound. Their bite is therefore less dangerous and the effect on the general system slower, so that there is more prospect of recovery by treatment. N evertheless, according to Fayrer, the krait is probably, next to the | cobra, the most destructive snake to human life in India. | Several genera of this sub-order of Venomous Colubrines Nar } are similar to the innocuous Calamariide in general habit pmoutty that is, their body is of a uniform cylindrical shape, me terminating in a short tail, and covered with short polished scales; their head is short, the mouth rather narrow, and the eye small. They are the tropical American Elaps, the Indian Callophis, the African Pecilophis, and the Australian Vermicella. The majority are distinguished by the beautiful arrangement of their bright and highly ornamental colours; many species of Elaps have the pattern of the so-called coral snakes, their body being encircled by black, red, and yellow rings,—a pattern which is peculiar to snakes, venomous as well as non-venomous, of the fauna of tropical America. Although the poison of these narrow: mouthed snakes is probably as virulent as that of the pre- ceding, man has much less to fear from them, as they bite only under great provocation. Moreover, their bite must

mouth and the small size of their poison-fangs. They are also comparatively of small size, only a few species rarely exceeding a length of 3 feet.

SNAKES

No part of the world possesses so many snakes of this

+ gub-order as Australia, where, in fact, they replace the non-

venomous Colubrine snakes. Of the genus Diemenia six species, of Pseudechis three, and of Hoplocephalus some twenty species have been described, and many of them are extremely common and spread over a considerable area.

ar ERE zu Fig. 14.—A poisonous snake (Klaps fulvius) swallowing a non-poisonous (Homalocranium semicinctum).

Fortunately the majority are of small size, and their bites are not followed by more severe effects than those from the sting of a hornet, especially if

the simple measures of sucking or cauterizing the wound are resorted to. Only the following are dangerous to man and larger animals : —the Brown Snake (Diemenia superciliosa), found all over Australia and attaining to a length of over 5 feet; the Black Snake (Pseudechis porphyriacus), likewise common throughout the Australian continent, especially in low marshy places, and upwards of 6 feet in length; it is black, with each scale of the outer series red at the base ; when irritated it raises the fore part of its body and flattens out its neck like a cobra ; the Brown-banded Snake (Loplo-cephalus curtus), with a similar distribution, and also com- mon in Tasmania, from 5 to 6 feet long, and considered the most dangerous of the tribe. The small family Causidx contains two African genera ‘well known to and much feared by the inhabitants of South Africa. One, Sepedon hemachates, is named by the Boers “roode koper kapel” or “Ring-Neck Snake,” the latter name being, however, often applied also to the cobra. It resembles in colour some varieties of the latter snake, and, like this, it has the power, though in a less degree, of expanding its hood. But its scales are keeled and its form is more robust. It is equally active and courageous, hot rarely attacking persons who approach too near to its resting-place. In confinement it evinces great ferocity, opening its mouth and erecting its fangs, from which the poison is seen to flow in drops. During such periods of excitement it is even able, by the pressure of the muscles on the poison-duct, to eject the fluid to some distance ; hence it shares with the cobra a third Dutch name, that of “spuw slang” (Spitting Snake). It grows to a length of 2 or 3 feet. The second African snake of this family is the “schapsticker” (Sheep Stinger), Causus rhombeatus. It is extremely common in South Africa and extends far north- wards along the eastern as well as western coast. It is of smaller size than the preceding and causes more injury to animals, such as sheep, dogs, &c., than to man. It vanes in colour, but a black mark on the head like an hiverted V remains nearly always visible.

Good descriptions and figures of all these snakes are given in Krefit’s Snakes of Australia, Sydney, 1869, 4to.

The Dinophide are the arboreal type of this sub-order ; Dino- they resemble non-venomous tree snakes in their gracile P12.

form, narrow scales, generally green coloration, and in their habits ; nevertheless the perfect development of their poison-apparatus, their wide mouth, their large size (they grow to a length of 7 feet), leave no doubt that they are most dangerous snakes. They do not appear to be com- mon, but are spread over all districts of tropical Africa in which vegetation flourishes.

Of Sea Snakes (Hydrophide) some fifty species are known. Sea All are inhabitants of the tropical Indo-Pacific ocean, and snakes.

most numerous in and about the Persian Gulf, in the East Indian Archipelago, and in the seas between southern China and northern Australia. One species which is ex- tremely common (Pelamis bicolor), and which is easily re- cognized by the black colour of its upper and the yellowish tints of its lower parts (both colours being sharply defined), has extended its range westwards to the sea round Madagascar, and eastwards to the Gulf of Panama. Sea snakes are viviparous and pass their whole life in the water; they soon die when brought on shore. The most striking feature in their organization is their ele- vated and compressed tail. The hind part of the body is compressed, and the belly forms a more or less sharp ridge. The ventral shields would be of no use to snakes moving through a fluid, and there- fore they are either only rudimentary or entirely absent. The genus Platurus, how- ever, is a most remarkable exception in having broad ventral shields; probably these serpents frequently go on shore, sporting or hunting over marshy ground. In many sea snakes the hind part of the body is curved and prehensile, so that they are able to secure a hold by twisting this part of the body round corals, sea- weed, or any other projecting object. Their tail answers all the purposes of the same organ in fish, and their motions in the water are almost as rapid as they are un- certain and awkward when the animals are removed out of their proper element. Their nostrils are placed quite at the top yyo, 15.— of the snout, as in crocodiles and in fresh- water snakes, so that they are enabled to breathe whilst the entire body and the greater part of the head are immersed in the water. These openings are small and subcrescentic, and are provided with a

valve interiorly, which is opened during respiration, and closed when the animal dives. They have very capacious lungs, extending backwards to the anus, and consequently all their ribs are employed in performing the respiratory function ; by retaining air in these extensive lungs they are able to float on the surface of the water without the slightest effort, and to remain under water for a considerable length of time. The scales of sea snakes are frequently very different from those of other snakes: they overlap one another in only a few species; in others they are but little imbricate and are rounded behind; and in others they are of a subquadrangular or hexagonal form, placed side by side, like little shields. The less imbricate they are the more they have lost the polished surface which we find in other snakes, and are soft, tubercular, sometimes porous. Sea snakes shed their skin very frequently ; but it peels off in pieces as in lizards, and not as in the fresh- water snakes, in which the integuments come off entire. Several species are remarkable for the extremely slender

Sea snake, Pelamis bicolor,

and prolonged anterior part of the body, which is termed the “neck,” and terminates in a very small head. The eye is small, with round pupil, which is so much con- tracted by the light when the snake is taken out of the water that the animal becomes blinded and is unable to hit any object it attempts to strike. The tongue is short, and the sheath in which it lies concealed opens near to the front margin of the lower jaw; scarcely more than the two terminating points are exserted from the mouth when the animal is in the water. The mouth shuts in a somewhat different way from that of other snakes: the middle of the rostral shield is produced down- wards into a small lobule, which prevents the water from entering the mouth ; there is generally a small notch on each side of the lobule for the passage of the two points of the tongue. Cantor says that when the snake is out of the water and

Fic. 16.—Rattlesnake (Crotalus durissus). blinded by the light it freely makes use of its tongue as a feeler, The food of sea snakes consists entirely of small fish; the present writer has found all kinds of fish in their stomach, among them species with very strong spines (Apogon, Siluroids). As all these animals are killed by the poison of the snake before they are swallowed, and as their muscles are perfectly relaxed, their armature is harmless to the snake, which commences to swallow its prey from the head, and depresses the spines as deglutition proceeds. There cannot be the slightest doubt that sea snakes be- long to the most poisonous species of the whole order. Russell and Cantor have ascertained it by direct observa- tion : tortoises, other snakes, and fish died from their bite in less than an hour, and a man succumbed after four hours. Accidents are rarely caused by them, because they are extremely shy and swim away on the least alarm ; but, when surprised in the submarine cavities forming their natural retreats, they will, like any other poisonous terres- trial snake, dart at the disturbing object ; and, when out of the water, they attempt to bite every object near them,

even turning round to wound their own bodies (Cantor), They cannot endure captivity, dying in the course of two or three days, even when kept in capacious tanks. The greatest size to which some species attain, according to positive observation, is about 12 feet, and therefore far short of the statements as to the length of the so-called sea serpents (see SEA-SERPENT). The largest examples the present writer has seen measured only 8 feet.

Passing over Rattlesnakes (fig. 16) and Vipers, which are treated of in separate articles, we notice the following types of the fourth sub-order, the Ophidii viperiformes.

The sole representative of the sub-order in Australia is Death the Death Adder (Acanthophis antarctica), a short stout adder of |

snake having a similar habitus and habits to vipers and a Tana,

scarcely attaining 3 feet in length.

=

It differs from the

Fia. 17.—Echis carinata (India).

other Viperines in having the poison-fang permanently erect. Although much feared, and justly, there is reason to believe that its bite is not so dangerous as has been represented, and that the majority of the fatal accidents ascribed to it are in fact caused by other snakes, probably Hoplocephalus curtus. It occurs throughout the whole of Australia, except Tasmania and perhaps South Australia. Generally it is of a uniform grey colour, relieved by some forty dark rings of irregular outline.

The “tic-polonga” of the Singalese (Daboia russellit) is beautifully marked: on a light chocolate ground colour three series of large black white-edged rings run along the back and sides of the body, a yellow line borders the surface of the head on each side, the two lines being con- vergent on the snout. It attains to a length of 50 inches, and occurs locally in abundance in southern India, where

it is called “cobra monil”; in Bengal, where it is called

“jessur”; in the plains of central India, as well as in the Himalayas to an altitude of 6000 feet; and in Burmah. It is highly poisonous, probably causing many deaths.

Daboii russel

SNA—SNE

Fortunately its loud hissing when disturbed warns those who come within dangerous proximity to it.

The small Viperine snake, Echis carinata (fig. 17), which scarcely exceeds a length of 20 inches, shares with the pre- ceding part of its range, being found in the arid districts of southern India, and extending through the intervening parts of Asia to North Africa. It isa desert type, having the

lateral scales curiously arranged, strongly keeled, with the tips directed downwards. It produces with their aid a rustling sound. Whilst some observers deny that fatal consequences have resulted from its bite, Dr Imlach reports that it (the “kuppur”) is “ the most deadly poisonous snake

Fig. 18.—Trimeresurus erythrurus (India).

in Sind.” This desert type is replaced farther south in Africa where vegetation flourishes by a closely allied genus, Atheris, which, however, possesses a prehensile tail and vivid coloration and has assumed truly arboreal habits.

Of the pit vipers without rattles the largest and most formidable inhabit tropical America. Z’rigonocephalus araraca, T’. atrox, and J’. lanceolatus attain to a length of 6 feet, the first. two being common in Brazil and northwards to Central America. The last is limited to some islands in the West Indies, especially Martinique and St Lucia, and is generally known by the name of “fer de lance,” which has been given to it from the markings on itshead. It infests the sugar-plantations, and has greatly thultiplied in consequence of the protection which the cover of the cane-fields afforded it, and the abundance of food supplied by the rats which swarm on the plantations. Thus, whilst it did a certain amount of good by the destruction of vermin, it caused a great number of deaths among the black labourers who were engaged in the fields, These three species of Z’rigonocephalus are sur-

passed in size by Lachesis mutus, probably the largest of terrestrial poisonous snakes, ~~which is said to exceed a length of 10 feet, and is bulky in proportion. It is con~~ fined to the hottest parts of tropical America. Similar snakes, but smaller in size, inhabit the warmer and tem- perate parts of North America, viz., the Copper-head (Cenchris contortrix) and the Crater-mocassin (C. pisci- vorus), the former of terrestrial habits, the latter being always found near water and feeding chiefly on aquatic animals. Both are much feared and cause accidents more frequently than rattlesnakes, being more aggressive and striking the intruder without previously warning him of their presence. In the Indian region this type of pit vipers without rattles

is likewise well represented, one genus (Z'rimeresurus) being adapted for an arboreal life, like Atheris among the Viperidx. Their body (fig. 18) is not more elongate than that of other ground Crotalines, but their tail is prehensile, and their colour generally resembles that of the bright foliage among which they live. Some- times bright yellow or red markings render these snakes still more pleasing to the eye. Accidents caused by them are of not uncommon occurrence, but fortunately only a few individuals exceed a length of 2 feet, and the consequences of their bite are less to be dreaded than of that of other allied genera. Indeed, numerous cases are on record which show that the constitutional symptoms caused by their poison were of short duration, lasting only from two to forty-eight hours, and being confined to nausea, vomit- ing, and fever. The bite of larger specimens, of from 2 to 3 feet long, is more dangerous and has occasionally proved fatal. They feed on frogs, mammals, and birds. (A. c. G.)

SNAKE-STONE, a name sometimes applied to Water- of-Ayr stone (see Hons, vol. xii. p. 134). Certain stones reputed, on insufficient grounds, to possess efficacy as antidotes to snake-bites are known as snake-stones (see above, p. 192). The term is also popularly applied to ammonites and certain other fossils which, owing to their spiral shape, were formerly regarded as petrified snakes.

SNEEK, a town of the Netherlands, in the province of Friesland, 18 miles south-south-west of Leeuwarden, with which it is connected by canal and (since 1885) by rail. It is one of the great butter and cheese markets of the country and has communal buildings (1863), a town-house, a court-house, an orphanage, a synagogue, and several churches, in one of which (the Groote or Maartenskerk) is the tomb of the naval hero Lange Pier (Long Peter). The population of the town was in 1870 8456; that of the commune, which numbered only 3253 in 1714, was 9248 in 1870 and 10,496 in 1880.

Sneek appears in the list of Frisian towns in 1268. It was almost reduced to ashes in 1295, and again in 1417 and 1457, In 1515 it was attacked and in 1517 formally besieged by the Burgundians. A diet met in the town in the close of this latter year; and long after, in 1672, Sneek was again the seat of an assembly of the states. In 1570 and in 1825 there were severe inundations.

SNELL, Witteprorp (1591-1626), commonly known as SNELLIUS, astronomer and mathematician, was born at Leyden in 1591. In 1613 he succeeded his father as professor of mathematics in the university of Leyden. In 1615 he planned and carried into practice a new method of finding the dimensions of the earth, by deter- mining the distance of one point on its surface from the parallel of another, by means of a triangulation. His work Hratosthenes Batavus, published in 1617, describes the method and gives as the result of his operations be- tween Alkmaar and Bergen-op-Zoom a degree of the meridian equal to 55,100 toises= 117,449 yards. (A later recalculation has given 57,033 toises = 121,569 yards, after applying some corrections to the measures indicated by himself.) Snell also distinguished himself as a mathe- matician, and discovered the law of refraction, which,

however, is generally attributed to Descartes, who made it more widely known. Snell died at Leyden on 30th

October 1626.

In addition to the Eratosthencs Batavus he published Cyelometria sive de cireult dimensione (Leyden, 1621, 4to), and edited Cali et siderum in eo crrantium observationes Hassiace (ibid., 1618, 4to), containing the astronomical observations of Landgrave William IV. of Hesse. About his Tiphys Batavus s. Histiodromice, de navium cursibus ct re navali (1624), see NAVIGATION, vol, xvii. p. 255, note. A trigonometry (Doctrina triangulorwm) by him was published a year after his death.

SNIPE (Anglo-Saxon Snite, Icelandic Snipa, Dutch Snip, German Schnepfe), one of the commonest Limicoline birds, in high repute no less for the table than for the exciting sport it affords. It is the Scolopax gallinago of Linnzus, but by many later writers separated from that genus, the type of which is the Woopcock (q.v.), and hence has been variously named Gallinago ce#lestis, G. media, or G. scolopacina. Though considerable numbers are still bred in the British Islands, notwithstanding the diminished area suitable for them, most of those that fall to the gun are undoubtedly of foreign origin, arriving from Scandinavia towards the close

of summer or later, and many will outstay the winter if the weather be not too severe, while the home-bred birds emigrate in autumn to return the following spring. Of late years British markets have been chiefly supplied from abroad, mostly from Holland.

The Snipe is fortunately too well known to need description, for a description of its variegated plumage, if attempted, would be long. It may be noticed, however, as subject to no inconsiderable variation, especially in the extent of dark markings on the belly, flanks, and axillaries, while examples are occasionally seen in which no trace of white, and hardly any of buff or grey, is visible, —the place of these tints being taken by several shades of chocolate- brown. Such examples were long considered to form a distinct species, the S. sabiniz, but its invalidity is now generally admitted. Other examples in which buff or rust-colour predominates have also been deemed distinct, and to these has been applied the epithet russata. the tail, whose rectrices normally number 14, and present a rounded termination, has led to the belief in a species, S. brehnvi, now wholly diseredited. But, setting aside two European species, to be pre- sently noticed more particularly, there are at least a score, more or less nearly allied, belonging to various parts of the world, for no considerable territory is without its representative. Thus North America produces G. wilsoni, so like the English Snipe as not to be easily distinguished except by the possession of 16 rectrices, and Australia has G. australis, a larger and somewhat differently coloured bird with 18 rectrices. India, while affording a winter resort to multitudes of the common species, which besides Europe extends its breeding range over the whole of northern Asia, has the so-called Pin-tailed Snipe, @. stenwra, in which the number of rectrices is still greater, varying from 20 to 28, it is said, though 22 seems to be the usual number. This curious variability, de- serving more attention than it has yet received, only occurs in the outer feathers of the series, which are narrow in form and extremely stiff, there being always 10 in the middle of ordinary breadth.

Those who only know the Snipe as it shows itself in the ,shoot- ing-season, when without warning it rises from the boggy ground uttering a sharp note that sounds like scape, seape, and, after a few rapid twists, darts away, if it be not brought down by the gun, to disappear in the distance after a desultory flight, have no con- ception of the bird’s behaviour at breeding-

time. Then, though flushed quite as suddenly, it will fly round the intruder, at times almost hovering over his head. But, if he have patience, he will see it mount aloft and there execute a scries of aerial evolutions of an astounding kind. After wildly circling about, and reaching a height at which it appears a mere speck, where it winnows a random zigzag course, it abruptly shoots downwards and aslant, and then as abruptly stops to regain its former elevation, and this process it repeats many times. A few seconds, more or less according to distance, after each of these headlong descents a mysterious sound strikes his ear—compared by some to drumming and by others to the bleating of a sheep or goat,! which sound evidently comes from the bird as it shoots downwards, and then only ; but how the sound is made is a question on which many persons are still unde- cided. There arc those who maintain that it proceeds from the throat, while some declare it is produced by the wings, which sharp-sighted observers say they can see in tremulous motion. ee SE eee

1 Hence in many languages the Snipe is known by names signifying "Flying Goat," "Heaven's Ram," as in Seotland by "'Heather-bleater."

SNI—SNI

Again, a slight deviation froin the ordinary formation of

Others, again, assert that it is caused by the vibration of the webs of the outer rectrices, and these last have in support of their opinion the fact that a similar sound may be made by affixing those feathcrs to the end of a rod and drawing them rapidly downwards in the same position as they oceupy in the bird's tail while it is performing the feat.? But, however it be produced, the air wil] also ring with loud notes that have been syllabled tinker, tinker tinker, while other notes in a different key, something like djepp, djcpp, djcpp rapidly uttered, may be heard as if in response. The nest is always on the ground and isa rather deep hollow wrought in a tuft of herbage, and lined with dry grass-leaves. The eggs ave four in number, of a dark olive colour, blotched and spotted with rich brown. The young when freshly hatched are beautifully clothed in down of a dark maroon, variegated with black, white and buff.

The Double or Solitary Snipe of English sportsmen, S. major, a larger species, also inhabits northern Europe and may be readily re- cognized by the white bars in its wings and by its 16 or occasionally 18 rectrices. It has also avery different behaviour. When flushed it rises without alarm-cry, and flies heavily. In the breeding season much of its love-performance is exhibited on the ground, an the sounds to which it gives rise are of another character ; but the exact way in which its “drumming” is effected has not been ascer- tained. Its gesticulations at this time have been well described by Prof, Collett ina communication to Mr Dresser’s Birds of Ewrope (vol. vii. pp. 635-637). It visits Great Britain every year at the close of suminer, but in very small numbers, and is almost always seen singly—not uncommonly in places where no one could expect to find a Snipe.

The third species of which any details can here be given is the Jack-3 or Half-Snipe, S. gallinula, the smallest and most beautifully coloured of the group. Without being as numerous as the common or full Snipe, it is of frequent occurrence in Great Britain from Sep- tember to April (and occasionally both earlier and later); but it breeds only, so far as is known, in northern Scandinavia and Russia ; and the first trustworthy information on that subject was obtained by Wolley in June 1853, when he found several of its nests near Muonioniska in Lapland.4 Instead of rising wildly as do most of its allies, it generally lies so close as to let itself be almost trodden upon, and then takes wing silently, to alight at a short distance (if it escape the gun), and to return to the same place ou the morrow, In the breeding-season, however, it is as noisy and conspicuous as its larger brethren while executing its aerial evolutions.

As a group the Snipes are in several respects highly specialized, but here there is only space to mention the sensitiveness of the bill, which, though to some extent noticeable in many Sandpipers (see vol. xxi. p. 260), is in Snipes carried to an extreme by a number of filaments, belonging to the fifth pair of nerves, which run almost to the tip, and open immediately under the soft cuticle ina series of cells that give this portion of the surface of the premaxillaries, when exposed, a honeycomb- like appear- ance, Thus the bill becomes a most delicate organ of sensation, and by its means the bird, while probing for food, is at once able to distinguish the nature of the objects it encounters, though these are wholly out of sight. So far as is

known, the sternum of all the Snipes, except the Jack-Snipe, departs from the normal Limicoline forma- tion, a fact which tends to justify the removal of that species to a separate genus, Limnocryptes.° (A. XN.)

2 Of. Meves, Efvers. K. Vet.-Akad. Forh., 1856, pp. 275-277 (transl. Naumannia, 1858, pp. 116, 117), and Proc. Zool. Society, 1858, p- 202, with Wolley's remarks thereon, Zool. Garten, 1876, pp. 204-208. 3 Though this word is elearly not intended as a nickname, such as is the prefix, which custom has applied to the Daw, Pie, Redbreast, Titmouse, or Wren, one ean only guess at its origin or meaning. It may be, as in Jackass, an indication of sex, for it is a popular belief that the Jack-Snipe is the male of the common species ; OF, again, it may refer to the eomparatively small size of the bird, as the "jack" in the game of bowls is the smallest of the balls used, and as fishermen eall the smaller Pikes Jaeks.

4 His aceount was published by Hewitson in May 1855 (Hogs Br. Birds, 3d ed., ii. pp. 356-358).

5 The so-called Painted Snipes, forming the genus Rhynchea, demand a few words, Four species have been described, natives respectively of South America, Africa, India with China, and Australia. In all of these it appears that the female is larger and more brilliantly eoloured than the male, and in the Australian species she is further distinguished by what in most birds is emphatically a masculine pro- perty, though its use is here unknown,—namely, a eomplex trachea, while the male has that organ simple. He is also believed to under- take the duty of incubation.

SNO—S NO

SNORRO STURLUSON (Snorri, son of Sturla) (1179- 1241), the celebrated Icelandic historian, born in 1179, the youngest son of a chief in the Vestfirdir (western fiords), was brought up by a powerful chief, Jon Loptsson, in Odda, who seems first to have awakened in him an interest for history and poetry. His career begins with his marriage, which made him a wealthy man; in 1206 lie settled at Reykjaholt, where he constructed magnificent buildings and a bath of hewn stones, preserved to the present day, to which water was conducted from a neighbouring hot spring. He early made himself known as a poet, especially by glorifying the exploits of

the contemporary Norse kings and earls ; at the same time he was a learned lawyer, and from 1215 became the ‘logsdgumadr,” or president of the legislative assembly and supreme court of Iceland. The prominent features of his character seem to have been cunning, am- bition, and avarice, combined with want of courage and aversion to effort. By royal invitation he went in 1218 to Norway, where he remained a long time with the young king Hakon and his tutor Earl Skul. When, owing to disputes between Icelandic and Norwegian merchants, Skuli thought of a military expedition to Iceland, Snorro persuaded him to give up this plan, promising to make the inhabitants submit to Hakon of their own free will. Snorro himself became the ‘‘lendrmadr,” vassal or baron, of the king of Norway, and held his lands as a fief under him. On his return home Snorro sent his son to the king as a hostage, and made peace between Norway and Iceland, but his power and influence were used more for his own enrichment and aggrandizement— he was “logsdgumadr ” again from 1222 to 1232—than for the advantage of the king. Hakon, therefore, stirred up strife between Snorro’s kinsman Sturla and Snorro, who had to fly from Reykjaholt in 1236; and in 1237 he left the country and went back to Norway. Here he joined the party of Skuli, who was meditating a revolt. Learning that his cousin Sturla in Iceland had fallen in battle against Gissur, Snorro’s son-in-law, Snorro, although expressly forbidden by his liege lord, returned to Iceland in 1239 and once more took possession of his property. Meanwhile Hakon, who had vanquished Skuli in 1240, sent orders to Gissur to punish Snorro for his disobedience either by capturing him and sending him back to Norway or by putting him to death. Gissur took the latter course, attacked Snorro at his residence, Reykja- holt, and slew him on 22d September 1241.

Snorro is the author of the Edda and of the Sagas of the Nor- wegian Kings. ‘The Edda, now called the Prose Edda, to distinguish it from the Poetic or Semund’s Edda, was finished in 1222, and con- sists of three parts. (1) The Gylfaginning, or the Delusion of Gylfi, with a short preface, gives a suminary of the ancient Norse myth- ology, founded on the Véluspdé and othcr mythical poems; the author gives a euhemeristic account of the ancient gods, regarding them as chiefs versed in witchcraft who had immigrated to the north and there introduced their special religion. (2) The Skdlds- kaparmdl, or Art of Poetry, gives, under the form of a dialogue between the god Bragi and the giant (jotun) Agir, an explanation of all

figurative mythological expressions of the ancient poetry, and the rules for using them. (3) The Hdttatal, or Enumeration of Metres, is a running commentary on three poems composed by Snorro in 1222 in honour of Hakon and Skuli, the stanzas of which, numbering about a hundred, are each in a different metre. In the MSS. the Hdda has received many additions, which are wrongly aseribed toSnorro. For different editions see Eppa. The Sagas of the Norwegian Kings gives a connected series of biographies of the kings of Norway down to Sverri in 1177; here the author stops, because the history of Sverri and his successors had already boen written. The work opens with the Ynglinga Saga, a brief history of the pre- tended immigration into Sweden of the Asir, of their successors in that eountry, the kings of Upsala, and of the oldest Norwegian kings, their deseendants. Next come the biographies of the succeeding

orwegian kings, the most detailed being those of the two mission- ary kings Olaf Tryggvason and St Olaf. Snorro's sources were partly Sueeinct histories of the realm, as the chronological sketch of Ari ; partly more voluminous early collections of traditions, as the Noregs Konungatal (Fagrskinna) and the Jarlasaga; partly legendary

lographies of the two Olafs; and, in addition to these, studies and

collections which he himself made during his journeys in Nor- way. All these he worked up with great independence and critical sagacity into an harmonious whole. His critical principles are ex- plained in the preface, where he dwells on the necessity of starting as much as possible from trustworthy contemporary sources, or at least from those nearest to antiquity,—the touchstone by which verbal traditions can be tested being contemporary poems. He inclines to rationalisin, rejecting the marvellous and recasting legends containing it in a more historical spirit ; but he makes an exception in the accounts of the introduction of Christianity into Norway and of the national saint St Olaf. Snorro's style is peculiar to himself. He strives everywhere to impart life and vigour to his narrative, to express the sentiments and feelings of the actors, and he gives the dialogues in the individual character of each person. Especially in this last he shows a tendency to epigram and often uses humorous and pathetic expressions.

Besides his principal work, he elaborated in a separate form its better and larger part, the History of St Olaf (the great Olaf's Saga). In the preface to this he gives a brief extract of the earlier history, and, as an appen- dix, a short account of St Olaf's miracles after his death ; here too he employs critical art, as appears from a comparison with his source, the Latin legend.

The Sagas of the Norwegian Kings has been preserved in several MSS. of the 13th century ; the oldest of these, no longer extant, had lost at an early period its first leaf containing the preface, and thus came to begin with the words, Kringla heimstns(=orbis terrarum), which caused first this MS. and later (about 1700) the whole work to be called the Heimskringla. Editions: —by Pering- skidld, 3 vols. fol., Stockholm,1697; by Gerhard Schoning and Skule Thorlacius, 3 vols. fol., Copenhagen, 1777-1783; by C. R. Unger, 1 vol. 8vo, Christiania, 1868. Modern translations :—into Danish, by N. F. 8. Grundtvig, 1818-22 ; Norwegian, by Jacob Aall, 1833-39, and by P. A. Munch, 1859; Swedish, by Richert, 1816- 29, and by H. Hildebrand, 1869-71 ; German, by Wachter, 1835-36; English, by Laing, 1844. (G. 8.

SNOW. See Mergorotocy, vol. xvi. p. 154; also GxoLoey, vol. x. pp. 280-281.

SNOWDROP, Galanthus nivalis, is the best-known representative of a small genus of Amaryllids, all the species of which have bulbs, linear leaves, erect flower- stalks, destitute of leaves but bearing at the top a solitary pendulous bell-shaped flower. The white perianth is six- parted, the outer three segments being larger and more convex than the inner series. The six anthers open by pores or short slits. The ovary is three-celled, ripening into a three-celled capsule. The snowdrop is a doubtful native of Great Britain, but is largely cultivated for market in Lincolnshire. There are numerous varieties, differing in the size of the flower and the period of flowering. The double form is probably the least attractive. Other dis- tinct species of snowdrop, not to be confounded with the varieties before mentioned, are the Crimean snowdrop, G. »licatus, with broad leaves folded like a fan, and G@. LElwesii, a native of the Levant, with large flowers, the three inner segments of which have a much larger and more conspicuous green blotch than the commoner kinds. All the species are very graceful, and as universal favourites ainply repay cultivation.

SNOW-SHOES are a kind of foot gear used by Indians and trappers in Canada for travelling over the frozen surface of snow. In the long North-American winters they are the sole means of locomotion whenrailways and roads are snowed up, as the frozen surface of snow is not sufficiently consistent to support the weight of the human body without artificial aid. The snow-shoer protects his feet by wearing moccasins of moose-skin, The framework of a snow-shoe consists of a long narrow piece of pliable hickory wood, placed edge- ways and then bent round with an oval-shaped front, and is adorned on the sides with tufts of crimson wool. The ends taper gradually to the rear, where they are fastened firmly to each other. The total length is about 39 inches and the width from 13 to 16 inches. Across the oval, and fitted into the inside of the framework by mortices, are two battens of wood, 5 or 6 inches clear of both ends. Over the front one at an open space a deerskin thong is fastened, forming an aperture for the reception of the great toe.. The thong is then crossed over the top of the foot, passed round and tied to the sides. This leaves the heel free to move up and down on the shoe and rests the weight of it on the toes. Over the remainder of the oval

is stretched a network of tightly drawn strips of leather. At a convention held in Montreal on 30th December 1871 a rule was passed that a “pair of racing shoes, including strings, shall not weigh less than 14 tb nor measure less than 10 inches of gut in width.” The motion of a snow- shoer in the distance is curious and resembles that of some ungainly web-footed animal. On using the implements the knees must be turned inwards and the fore part of the feet outwards to avoid wounding the ankles with the frameworks. At first the fatigue and consequent stiffness are great ; but with practice this wears off and the motions become easy. ‘The speed attained as compared to that in skating is not quick. The following are the best recorded times in Montreal, Canada, with shoes of regulation size and weight :—100 yards, 12 sec. ; 220 yards, 26 sec. ; + mile, 1 min. 72 sec. ; 4 mile, 2 min. 33 sec. ; # mile, 4 min. 21 sec.; 1 mile, 5 min, 424 sec.; 2 miles, 11 min, 523 sec.; 3 miles, 20 min. 18 sec.; 4 miles, 27 min, 10) see. ; 41 miles, 30 min. 36 sec. ;

5 miles, 33 min. 494 sec. The best history of the pastime and its records is Montreal Snow-shoe Club, sm. 8vo, Montreal, 1882.

SNUFF. See Tosacco,

SNYDERS, Franz (1579-1657), painter of animals and still life, was born at Antwerp in 1579. In 1593 he was studying under Peter Breughel, and afterwards he received instruction from Henry van Balen, the first master of Vandyke. He devoted himself to painting flowers, fruit, and subjects of still life, but afterwards turned to animal-painting, and executed with the greatest skill and spirit hunting pieces and combats of wild animals, His composition is rich and varied, his drawing correct and vigorous, his touch bold and thoroughly ex- pressive of the different textures of the furs and skins of the animals represented. His excellence in this depart- ment excited the admiration of Rubens, who frequently employed him to paint animals, fruit, and still life in his own pictures, and he assisted Jordaens in a similar manner. In the lion and boar hunts which bear the name of Snyders the hand of Rubens sometimes appears. He was appointed principal painter to the archduke Albert, governor of the Low Countries, for whom he executed some of his finest works. One of these, a Stag-Hunt, was presented to Philip IIL, who commissioned the artist to paint several subjects of the chase, which are still pre- served in Spain. Snyders died at Antwerp in 1657.

SOAP may in general terms be defined as a chemical compound resulting from the union of fatty oils and fats with alkaline bodies. In a scientific definition the com- pounds of fatty acids with basic metallic oxides, lime, magnesia, lead oxide, &c., should also be included under soap ; but, as these compounds are insoluble in water, while the very essence of a soap in its industrial relations is solubility, it is better to speak of the insoluble compounds as “ plasters,” limiting the name “soap” to the compounds of fatty acids with soda and potash. Soap both as a medi- cinal and as a cleansing agent was known to Pliny (H.W, xxviii. 51), who speaks of two kinds—hard and soft—as used by the Germans. He mentions it as originally a Gallic invention for giving a bright hue to the hair (“ruti- landis capillis”). There is reason to believe that soap came to the Romans from Germany, and that the detergents in use in earlier times and mentioned as soap in the

Old Testament (Jer. ii. 22; Mal. iii. 2, &c.) refer to the ashes of B97), and other such purifying agents (comp. vol. x. p. 697).

Till Chevreul's classical researches on fatty bodies (1811- 23) it was believed that soap consisted simply of a binary compound of fat and alkali. Claude J. Geoffroy in 1741 pointed out that the fat or oil recovered from a soap solution by neutralization with a mineral acid differs from

the original fatty substance by dissolving readily in alcohol which is not the case with ordinary fats and oils. The significance of this observation was overlooked ; and equally unheeded was a not less important discovery by Scheele in 1783. In preparing lead plaster by boiling olive oil with oxide of lead and a little water—a process palpably analogous to that of the soap-boiler—he obtained a sweet substance which, called by himself ' Oelsiiss" (" principium dulce oleorum"), is now known as "glycerin." These discoveries of Geoffroy and Scheele formed the basis of Chevreul's researches by which he laid bare the con- stitution of oils and the true nature of soap. (See Oits, yol. xvii. p. 740, and Giycerrn, vol. x. p. 697.) In those articles it is pointed out that all fatty oils and fats are mixtures of glycerides, that is, of bodies related to the alcohol glycerin C;H,(OH),, and some fatty acid such as palmitic acid (C,,H,;0,)H. Under suitable conditions C,H,(OH)s + 8(CygHs,0.)H give C3H53 + 3H,0 Glycerin. Palinitic Acid. Palmitin, Water.

The corresponding decomposition of palmitin into palmitic acid and glycerin takes place when the glyceride is distilled in superheated steam, and similarly it can be realized by

boiling in water mixed with a suitable proportion of caustic

potash or soda, But in this case the fatty acid unites

with the alkali into its potash or soda salt, forming a soap— C3H, (CigH3102)s + 8Na0H = 8NaC,gH:0. + C,H;(OH), Palmitin. Soda Hydrate. Soap. Glycerin.

Of the natural fats or glycerides contained in oils the most

important in addition to palmitin are stearin and olein, and these it may be sufficient to regard as the principal fatty bodies concerned in soap-making.

The general characters of a soap are a certain greasiness

to the touch, ready solubility in water, with formation of

viscid solutions which on agitation yield a tenacious froth or “lather,” an indisposition to crystallize, readiness to

amalgamate with small proportions of hot water into homogeneous slimes, which on cooling set into jellies or

more or less consistent pastes. Soaps give an alkaline reaction and have a decided acrid taste; in a pure condi- tion—a state never reached in practice —they have neither smell nor colour. Almost without exception potash soaps even if made from the solid fatty acids are “soft,” and soda soaps, although made with fluid olein, are “hard”; but there are considerable variations according to the pre- vailing fatty acid in the compound. Almost all soda soaps are precipitated from their watery solutions by the addition of a sufficiency of common salt. Potash soap with the same reagent undergoes double decomposition—a proportion being changed into a soda soap with the forma- tion of chloride of potassium. Soap when dissolved in a large amount of water suffers hydrolysis, with formation of a precipitate of alkaliferous fatty acid and a solution con- taining free alkali. Its cleansing power is ordinarily ex- plained by this reaction ; but it is difficult to see why a solution which has just thrown off most of its fatty acids should be disposed to take up even a glyceride. It 1s more likely that the cleansing power of soap is due to the inherent property of its solution to emulsionize fats.

Resin soaps are compounds of soda or potash with the complex acids (chiefly abietic) of which coniferous resins consist. ‘Their formation is not due to a true process of saponification ; but they occupy an important place ™ compound soaps.

MANUFACTURE.—The varicties of soaps made are numerous ; the purposes to which they are applied are varied ; the materials em- ployed embrace a considerable range of oils, fats, and other bodies ; and the processes adopted undergo many modifications, As regards processes of manufacture soaps ay be made by the direct combina- tion of fatty acids, separated from oils, with alkaline solutions. In the manufacture of stearin for candles, &c., the fatty matter is de- composed, and the liquid olein, separated from the solid fatty acids, is employed as an ingredient in soap-making. A soap SO made 1s

a

SO

not the result of saponification but of a simple combination, as is the case also with resin soaps. All other soaps result from the com- bination of fatty oils and fats with potash or soda solutions under conditions which favour saponification. The soap solution which results from the combination forms soap-size and is a mixture of soap with water, the excess alkali, and the glycerin liberated from the oil. In such condition ordinary soft soaps and certain kinds of hard soap are brought to the market. In curd soaps, however, which form the basis of most household soap, the uncombined alkali and the glycerin are separated by ‘‘salting out,” and the soap in this condition contains about 30 per cent. of water. Soap may be framed and finished in this state, but almost invariably it receives a further treatment called “refining ” or “ fitting,” in which by remelting with water, with or without the subsequent addition of other agents to harden the finished product, the soap may be made to contain from 60 to 70 per cent. of water and yet present a firm hard texture.

Among the raw materials used by the soap-boiler the principal fatty bodies are tallow, lard, palm oil, palm-kernel oil, olive oil, cotton-seed oil, sesame oil, and cocoa-nut oil for hard soaps, and fish oils, linseed oil, marrow fat, and the lower qualities of other oils obtained by extraction, &c., for potash or soft soaps. Almond oil, sperinaceti, cocoa-butter, ground-nut oil, and some others form the basis of certain toilet and medicinal soaps. Resin and colophony form essential ingredients in yellow soaps. The alkalis are used almost exclusively in the condition of caustic lyes,—solutions of their

respective hydrates in water. Caustic soda is now obtained direct from the soda manufacturer, and one operation, causticizing the soda, is thus spared the soap-boiler. Potash lyes are, however, principally sharpened or causticized by the soap-boiler himself from potash carbonate, the process for which is described under PorAssiuM METALS (vol. xix. p. 589).

The process of soap-boiling is carried out in large iron boilers called “soap pans” or “coppers,” some of which have capacity for a charge of 30 tons or more. The pan proper is surmounted by a great cone or hopper called a curb, to provide for the foaming up of the boiling mass and to prevent loss trom overflowing. Formerly the pans were heated by open firing from below; but now the almost universal practice is to boil by steam injected from per- forated pipes foiled within the pan, such injection favouring the uniform heating of the mass and causing an agitation favourable to the ultimate mixture and saponification of the materials. Direct firing is used for the second boiling of the soap mixture ; but for this superheated steam may with advantage be substituted, either aniied by a steam-jacket round the pan or by a closed coil of pipe within it. In large pans a mechanical stirring apparatus is pro- vided, which in some cases, as in Morfit’s steam ‘‘ twirl,” is formed of the steam-heating tubes geared to rotate. Closed cylinders in which the materials are boiled under pressure are also employed for certain soaps.

Curd Soap.—The oil mixture used differs in the several manu- facturing countries, and the commercial name of the product is correspondingly varied. In Germany tallow is the principal fat ; in France olive oil occupies the chief place and the product is known as Marseilles or Castile soap ; and in England tallow and palm oil are largely used. But in all countries a mixture of several oils enters into the composition of curd soaps and the proportions used have no fixity. For each ton of soap to be made from 12 to 16 cwts. of oil is required. The soap pan is charged with the tallow or other fat, and open steam is turned on. So soon as the tallow is melted a quantity of weak lye is added, and the agitation of the injected steam causes the fat and lye to become intimately mixed and pro- duces a milky emulsion. ‘As the lye becomes absorbed, a condition Indicated by the taste of the goods, additional quantities of lye of mereasing strength are added. After some tiine, the contents of the pan begin to clear and become in the end very

transparent. Lye still continues to be poured in till a sample tastes distinctly alkaline,—a test which indicates that the whole of the fatty acids have been taken up by and combined with the alkali. Then with- out further addition of alkali the boiling is continued for a few minutes, when the soap is ready for salting out or ‘ graining.” Hither common salt or strong brine in measured quantity is added to the charge, and, the soap being insoluble in such salt solution, 4 separation of constituents takes place: the soap collects on the surface in an open granular condition, and the spent lye sinks to the bottom after it has been left for a short time to settle. Suppos- Ing now that a pure soap withont resin is to be made—a product little scen in the market —the spent lye is run off, steam is again turned on, ure water or very weak lye run in, and the contents boiled up till the whole is thin, close, and clear. The soap is from this again grained off or salted out, and the underlye so thrown down carries with it coloured impurities which may have been in the materials or which arise from contact with the boiler. Such Washing process may have to be repeated several times when im- Pure materials have been used. The spent lye of the washing being drained off, the soap now receives its strengthening boil. Steam 18 turned on, and, the mass being brought to a clear condition with

weak lye or water, strong lye is added and the boiling continued with close steam till the lye attains such a state of concentration that the soap is no longer soluble in it, and it will separate from. the caustic lye as from a common salt solution. The contents of the pan are once more allowed to cool aud settle, aud the soap as now formed constitutes a pure curd soap, carrying with it some pro- portion of uncombined alkali, but containing the minimum amount of water. It may be skimmed off the underlye and placed direct in the frames for solidification ; but that is a practice scarcely at all followed, the addition of resin soap in the pan and the sub- sequent ‘‘crutching in” of silicate of soda and adulterant mixings being features common to the manufacture. The lye from the strengthening boil contains much alkali and is used in connexion with other boilings,

Afottled Soap.—A pure curd soap always carries with it into the cooling frame a considerable amount of coloured impurity, such as iron sulphate,

&c. When it is permitted to cool rapidly the colouring matter remains uniformly disseminated throughout the mass ; but when means are taken to cause the soap to cool and solidify slowly a segregation takes place: the stearate and palmitate form a semi-crystalline solid, while the oleate, solidifying more slowly, comes by itself into translucent veins, in which the greater part of the coloured matter is drawn. In this way mottled or marbled soap is formed, and such mottled appearance was formerly highly valued as an indication of freedom from excess of water or other adulteration, because in fitted soaps the impurities are either washed out or fall to the bottom of the mass in cooling. Now, however, the most perfect mottle can be produced by working colouring matter into the soap in the frame, and mottling is very far from being a certificate of excellence of quality.

Yellow Soap consists of a mixture of any hard fatty soap with a variable proportion—up to 40 per cent. or more—of resin soap. That substance by itself has a tenacious gluey consistence, and its intermixture in excess renders the resulting compound soft and greasy. The ordinary method of adding resin consists in stirring it in small fragments into the fatty soap in the stage of clear- boiling ; but a better result is obtained by separately preparing a fatty soap and the resin soap, and combining the two in the pan after the underlye has been salted out and removed from the fatty soap. The compound then receives its strengthening boil, after which it is fitted by boiling with added water or weak lye, continu- ing the boil till by examination of a sample the proper consistency has been reached. On settling a dark-coloured “nigger” or under- lye separates out, which, because it contains some soap and alkali, is saved for future use,

Marine Soap.—Cocoa-nut oil behaves as regards saponification quite differently from all other oils and fats in relation to the caustic alkalis. It does not form an emulsion with weak alkalis ; these even under prolonged boiling have no influence on the fat. With strong alkaline solutions, on the other hand, it saponifies with the utmost readiness even without heat, and forms without the separation of any underlye a soap of stiff firm consistence notwith- standing the presence of a very large percentage of water. Such soap is not insoluble in a strong solution of salt ; hence it forms a lather and can be used for washing with sea-water, from which peculiarity it derives its name ‘‘marine soap.” Being thus soluble in salt water it cannot of course be

salted out like common soaps ; but if a very concentrated salt solution is used precipitation is effected, aud a curd soap is separated so hard and refractory as to be practically useless. Cocoa-nut soap is usually prepared by the so-called cold method, in which the fat heated to 80° C. is treated with a calculated quantity of caustic soda solution of sp. gr. 1°350, the two constituents being stirred together till the setting and hardening of the combination prevents further agitation. The property that cocoa-nut soap possesses of absorbing large propor- tions of water, and yet presenting the appearance of a hard solid body, makes the material a favourite basis for highly sophisticated compounds, in which water, sulphate of soda, and other alkaline solutions, soluble silicates, fuller's earth, starch, &c., play an im- portant and bulky part. Cocoa-nut soap is little prepared by itself; but it forms a principal ingredient in compound soaps meant to imitate curd and yellow soaps. Two principal methods of prepar- ing such compound soaps are employed. In the first way the ordinary oil and the cocoa-nut oil are mixed and saponified together with such a measured quantity of alkaline solution as serves to produce a hard soap without any salting out or separation of under- lye. According to the second plan, the ordinary oil is treated as for the preparation of a curd soap, and to this the cocoa-nut soap separately saponified is added in the pan and both are boiled to- gether till they form a homogeneous soap.

Silicate Soaps.—A further means of enabling a soap to contain large proportions of water and yet present a firm consistence is found in the use of silicate of soda. The silicate in the form of a concentrated solution is crutched or stirred into the soap in a mechanical mixing machine after the completion of the saponifica- tion, aud it appears to enter into a distinct chemical combination with the soap. While silicate soaps bear heavy watering, the

soluble silicate itself is a powerful detergent, and it possesses certain advantages when used with hard waters, so that, taking its cheap- ness into account, the question whether its introduction into soap is a fraud may be fairly discussed and much said in its defence.

Framing.—The frames into which hard soaps are ladled for cooling and solidification consist of rectangular boxes made of iron plates and bound and clamped together in a way that allows the sides to be removed when required. The solidification is a very gradual pro- cess, depending, of course, for its completion on the size of the block ; but before cutting into bars it is essential that the whole should be set and hardened through and through, else the cut bars would not hold together. Many ingenious devices for forming bars have been produced ; but generally a strong frame is used, aeross which steel wires are stretched at distances equal to the size of the bars to be made, the blocks being first cut into slabs and then into bars.

Soft Soup.—As already said, soft soaps are made with potash lyes, although in practice a small quantity of soda is also used to give the soap some consistence. There is no separation of underlyes in potash soap, consequently the product contains the whole eonsti- tuents of the oils used, as the operation of salting out is quite im- practicable owing to the double decomposition which results from the action of salt, producing thereby a hard principally soda soap with formation of chloride of potassium. Owing to this circum- stance it is impossible to ‘‘fit” or in any way purify soft soap, and all impurities whieh go into the pan of necessity enter into the finished product. The making of soft soap, although thus a much less complex process than hard soap making, is one that demands much skill and experience for its suceess. From the conditions of the manufacture care must be taken to regulate the amount and strength of the alkali in proportion to the oil used, and the degree of concentration to which the boiling ought to be continued has to be determined with close observation. ;

Toilet Soaps, &c.—Soaps used in personal ablution in no way

differ from the soaps previously alluded to, and may consist of any of the varieties. It is of consequence that they should, as far as nossible, be free from excess of alkali and all other salts and foreign ingredients which may have an injurious effect on the skin. The manufacturer of toilet soap generally takes care to present his wares in convenient form and of agreeable appearance and smell; the more weighty duty of having them free from uncombined alkali is in many cases entirely overlooked. Transparent soaps are prepared by dissolving ordinary soap in strong alcohol and

distilling otf the greater portion of the alcohol till the residue comes to the condi- tion of a thick transparent jelly. This, when cast into forms and allowed to harden and dry slowly, comes out as transparent soap. A class of transparent soap may also be made by the cold process, with the use of cocoa-nut oil, castor oil, and sugar. It generally contains a large amount of uncombined alkali, and that, with its unpleasant odour of cocoa-nut oil, makes it a most undesirable soap for personal use. Toilet soaps of common quality are perfumed by simple melting and stirring into the mass some eheap odorous body that is not affected by alkalis under the influence of heat. The finer soaps are perfumed by the cold method ; the soap is shaved down to thin slices, and the essential oil kneaded into and mixed with it by special machinery, after which it is formed into cakes by pressure in suitable moulds.

Glycerin soap ordinarily consists of about equal parts of pure hard soap and glycerin (the latter valuable for its emollient properties). The soap is melted by heat, the glycerin is stirred in, and the mixture strained and poured into forms, in which it hardens but slowly into a transparent mass. With excess of glycerin a fluid soap is formed, soap being soluble in that body, and such fluid soap has only feeble lathering properties. Soap containing small proportions of glycerin, on the other hand, forms a very tenacious lather, and when soap bubbles of an enduring character are desired glycerin is added to the solution. Soaps are also pre- pared in which large proportions of fine sharp sand, or of powdered pumice, are incorporated, and these substances, by their abrading action, powerfully assist the detergent influence of the soap on hands much begrimed by manufacturing operations.!

Medicated soaps contain certain substances which exercise a specific influence on the skin.

The following table indicates the average conzposition of several commercial soaps :—

sn ie ee a a eS 1 “Soap powders” and “ soap extracts” are simply preparations of alkalis.

Soda.

3 2 a ‘ Fatty y 28 3 oa Water.) scid.|Com-| ree! & |S) 2) 55 1°™ bined. | 7°” | & | ale On Tallow soap ….| 28°8 580 6°8 16 23 | 25 Marseilles soap, mothled . is… 10°15 | 76°0 8°65 | 0°25 = 4°95 Palm-oil soap ..| 35°4 | 49°9 | 7:0 | 10 « 11 | 56 Yellow soap ….| 22°23 | 62°95] 8°03) .. He 6°79 Cocoa-nutoilsoap| 58°74 | 32°82 | 4:26) 1°50 er. 2°26 | 0-42 Silicate soap ….| 50°4 eo MOF fs a, OBS ES Be ¥ Bottsoap ssc ws 43°3 | 41°9 a lor? oo Be A

Soap Analysis. —Here it will be sufficient to mention a few tests

which can be executed without special chemical knowledge. To de- termine the water in a soap—a most important question—a few thin slices are weighed and dried in a stove at 105°C. so long as loss of weight continues. water in the sample. phates, &c. and insoluble earthy adnuixtures are detected by boiling a sample with alcohol, in which only the soap proper dissolves, The residue is colleeted in a filter, washed with hot alcohol, and weighed. An excessive proportion of surplus alkali can be detected by dissolving the soap in hot water and adding

The loss of weight is the measure of uncombined Added salts, such as alkaline silicates, sul-

a sufficiency of saturated solution of common salt to salt it out. The alkali remains

in solution and can be determined by the amount of a standard acid

solution it neutralizes. ;

Commerce. —Marseilles has long been recognized as the most im- portant centre of the soap trade, a position that city originall achieved through its ready command of the supplies of olive oil, The city is still very favourably situated for obtaining supplies of oils both local and foreign, including sesame, ground nut, castor oil, &e. In England the soap trade did not exist till the 16th century. In the reign of Charles I. a mnonoply of soap-making was farmed to a corporation of soap-boilers in London,—a proceed- ing which led to serious complications. From 1712 to 1853 an excise duty

ranging from 1d. to 3d. was levied on soap made in the United Kingdom, and that heavy impost (equal when 8d. to more than 100 per cent.) greatly impeded the development of the industry. In 1798, when the excise duty was 24d. on hard and 12d. on soft soap, the revenue yielded was a little over £400,000 ; in 1815 it was almost £750,000; in 1835, when the duty was levied at 14d. and 1d. respectively (and when a drawback was allowed for soap used in manufactures), the revenue was almost £1,000, 000; and in 1852, the last year in which the duty was levied, it amounted to £1,126,046, with a drawback on exportation amount- ing to £271,000. What the manufacture has risen to since that time there is no accurate way of estimating. (W. D.—d. PA.)

SOAP BARK. A vegetable principle known as “sap- onin,” and chemically analogous to the arabin of soluble gums and to mucilage, forms with water a lather, and is on that account available as a substitute for soap. Saponin is obtainable from soap nuts, the fruit of a tree, Saponaria officinalis and allied species; but its most important source is the Quillai bark of Chili yielded by a large tree, Quillaja saponaria. The inner bark of the tree, reduced to powder, is employed in Chili as a substitute for soap.

SOBIESKI, Joun, king of Poland. See JonN TII., vol.

xiii. p. 714, and Poanp, vol. xix. p. 295. SOCAGE is a form of tenure. Bracton, Britton, and other old writers derived the word from the French soe, ‘a ploughshare.” Modern etymologists, however, prefer to derive it from the Old English soc, “a franchise ” or “ privi- lege,” or the land over which such franchise or privilege was exercised. Socage differs from knight service in being agricultural rather than military in its nature, and from frankalmoign in being based on temporal rather than spiritual services. It is either free or villein. Free socage in capite was abolished by 12 Car. II. c. 24. That form of free socage called common socage is the ordinary modern freehold tenure. Varieties of it are burgage, gavelkind, and petit serjeanty. Scutage, while it existed, was another variety. The only representative of villein socage is the comparatively rare tenure of ancient demesne confined to manors, described in Domesday Book as terre regis. Socage tenure is said to have formerly existed in Scotland. The descent of socage lands in

Scotland seems to have been to all the sons equally, as was originally the case 10 England. (See BurGacE, GavELKIND, Ruat Estate, ScuracE.)

2 Including resin aeids.

SOCIALISM’

HE word “socialism” is of comparatively recent origin, having been coined in England in 1835. In that year a society which received the grandiloquent. name of the ‘“*‘ Association of all Classes of all Nations” was founded under the auspices of Robert Owen; and the words “socialist” and “‘socialism” were first used during the discussions which arose in connexion with it. As Owen and his school had no esteem for the political reform of the time, and laid all emphasis on the necessity of social improvement and reconstruction, it is obvious how the name came to be recognized as suitable and distinctive. The term was borrowed from England by a distinguished French writer, Reybaud, in his well-known work the Reformateurs modernes (1839), in which he discussed the theories of Saint-Simon, Fourier, and Owen. Through Reybaud it soon gained wide currency on the Continent, and is now the accepted world-historic name for one of the most remarkable movements of the 19th century.

The name was thus first applied in England to Owen’s theory of social reconstruction, and in France to those also of Saint-Simon and Fourier. The best usage has always connected it with the views of these men and the cognate opinions which have since appeared. The word, however, is used with a great variety of meaning not only in popular speech and by politicians but even by economists and learned critics of socialism. The general tendency is to regard as socialistic any interference with property undertaken by society on behalf of the poor, the limitation of the principle of /atssez-faire in favour of the suffering classes, radical social reform which disturbs the present system of private property as regulated by free competition. It is probable enough that the word will be permanently used to express the tendency indicated in these phrases, as a general name for the strong reaction that has now set in against the overstrained individualism and one-sided freedom which date from the latter half of the 18th century.

The application is neither precise nor accurate; but it is use and wont that determine the meaning of words, and this seems to be the tendency of use and wont.

Even economic writers differ greatly in the meaning they attach to the word. The great German economist ’ Roscher defines it as including “those tendencies which demand a greater regard for the common weal than consists with human nature.” Adolf Held says that “we may define as socialistic every tendency which demands the subordina- tion of the individual will to the community.” Janet more precisely defines it as follows :—‘‘ We call socialism every doctrine which teaches that the state has a right to correct the inequality of wealth which exists among men and to legally establish the balance by taking from those who have too much in order to give to those who have not enough, and that in a permanent manner, and not in such and such a particular case,—a famine, for instance, a public calamity, dc.” Laveleye explains it thus: “In the first place every socialistic doctrine aims at introducing greater equality in social conditions, and in the second place at realizing those reforms by the law or the state.” Von Scheel simply defines it as the “economic philosophy of the suffering classes.” Of all these definitions it can only be said that they more or less faithfully reflect current opinion as to the nature of socialism. They are either too vague

——__

4 The aim of the present article is essentially to give a history and ex- position of socialism in its leading phases and principles. The point of view is objective,—to explain what socialism has been and is. A controversial or critical article on the many vexed questions sug-

gested by the subject would have been inconsistent with the plan of this work,

or they are misleading, and they quite fail to bring out the clear and strongly marked characteristics that distinguish the phenomena to which the name of socialism is properly applied. To say that socialism exacts a greater regard for the common weal than is compatible with human nature is to pass sentence on the movement, not to define it. In all ages of the world, and

under all forms and tendencies of government and of social evolution, the will of the individual has been subordinated to the will of society, often unduly so. It is also most misleading to speak as if socialism must proceed from the state as we know it. The early socialism proceeded from private effort and experiment. A great deal of the most notorious socialism of the present day aims not only at subverting the existing state in every form but all the existing political and social institutions. The most powerful and most philosophic, that of Karl Marx, aimed at superseding the existing governments by a vast international combination of the workers of all nations, without distinction of creed, colour, or nationality.

Still more objectionable, however, is the tendency not Socialism unfrequently shown to identify socialism with a violent noe pcg

ially vio- d, lent and t lawless,

and lawless revolutionary spirit. As sometimes use ‘“‘socialism” means nothing more nor less than the mos modern form of the revolutionary spirit with a suggestion of anarchy and dynamite. This is to confound the essence of the movement with an accidental feature more or less common to all great innovations. Every new thing of any moment, whether good or evil, has its revolutionary stage in which it disturbs and upsets the accepted. beliefs and institutions. The Protestant Reformation was for more than a century and a half the occasion of national and international trouble and bloodshed. The suppression of American slavery could not be effected without a tremen- dous civil war. There was a time when the opinions com- prehended under the name of “liberalism” had to fight to the death for toleration; and representative government was at one time.a revolutionary innovation. The fact that a movement is revolutionary generally implies only that it is new, that it is disposed to exert itself by strong methods, and is calculated to make great changes. It is an unhappy feature of most great changes that they have been attended with the exercise of force, but that is be- cause the powers in possession have generally attempted to suppress them by the exercise of force.

In point of fact socialism is one of the most elastic and protean phenomena of history, varying according to the time and circumstances in which it appears and with the character and opinions and institutions of the people

who adopt it. Such a movement cannot be condemned or approved en bloc. Most of the current formule to which it has been referred for praise or censure are totally errone-

ous and misleading. Yet in the midst of the various Its cen- theories that go by the name of ‘‘socialism” there is a kernel] tral prin- ciple eco- nomic.

of principle that is common to them all. That principle is of an economic nature, and is most clear and precise. The central aim of socialism is to terminate the divorce of the workers from the natural sources of subsistence and} of culture. The socialist theory is based on the historical assertion that the course of social evolution for centuries has gradually been to exclude the producing classes from the possession of land and capital and to establish a new stibjection, the subjection of workers, who have nothing to depend on but precarious wage-labour. The socialists maintain that the present system (in which land and capital are the property of private individuals freely struggling for increase of wealth) leads inevitably to social and

Points of differ- ence amongst socialists.

Great changes implied in social- ism.

economic anarchy, to the degradation of the working man and his family, to the growth of vice and idleness among the wealthy classes and their dependants, to bad and in- artistic workmanship, and to adulteration in all its forms ; and that it is tending more and more to separate society into two classes, wealthy millionaires confronted with an enormous mass of proletarians,—the issue out of which must either be socialism or social ruin. To avoid all these evils and to secure a more equitable distribution of the means and appliances of happiness, the socialists propose that land and capital, which are the requisites of labour and the sources of all wealth and culture, should become the property of society, and be managed by it for the general good. In thus maintaining that society should assume the management of industry and secure an equit- able distribution of its fruits

socialists are agreed, but in the most important points of detail they differ very greatly.

They differ as to the form society will take in carrying out the socialist programme, as to the relation of local bodies to the central government, and whether there is to be any central government, or any government at all in the ordinary sense of the word, as to the influence of the national idea in the society of the future, &c. They differ also as to what should be regarded as an “equitable” system of distribution, The school of Saint-Simon advocated a social hierarchy in which every man should be placed according to his capacity and rewarded according to his works. In the communities of Fourier the minimum of subsistence was to be guaranteed to each out of the common gain, the remainder to be divided between labour, capital, and talent,—five-twelfths going to the first, four- twelfths to the second, and three-twelfths to the third. At the revolution of 1848 Louis Blanc proposed that remu- neration should be equal for all members of his social workshops. In the programme drawn up by the united social democrats of Germany (Gotha, 1875) it is provided that all shall enjoy the results of labour “‘according to their reasonable wants,” all of course being bound to work. It is needless to say also that the theories of socialism have been held in connexion with the most varying opinions in philosophy and religion. A great deal of the historic socialism has been regarded as a necessary implicate of idealism. Most of the prevailing socialism of the day is based on the frankest and most outspoken revolutionary materialism. On the other hand, many socialists hold that their system is a necessary outcome of Christianity, that socialism and Christianity are essen- tial the one to the other; and it should be said that the ethics of socialism are closely akin to the ethics of Chris- tianity, if not identical with them.

Still it should be insisted that the basis of socialism is economic, involving a fundamental change in the relation of labour to land and capital,—a change which will largely affect production, but will entirely revolu- tionize the existing system of distribution. But, while its basis is economic, socialism implies and carries with it a change in the political, ethical, technical, and artistic arrangements and institutions of society which would con- stitute a revolution greater probably than has ever taken place in human history, greater than the transition from the ancient to the medizval

world, or from the latter to the existing order of society. In the first place, such a change generally assumes as its political complement the most thoroughly democratic organization of society. The early socialism of Owen and Saint-Simon was marked by not a little of the autocratic spirit; but the tendency of the present socialism is more and more to ally itself with the most advanced democracy. So- cialism, in fact, claims to be the economic complement of democracy, maintaining that without a fundamental

economic change political privilege has neither meaning nor value. In the second place, socialism naturally goes with an unselfish or altruistic system of ethics. The most characteristic feature of the old societies was the exploita- tion of the weak by the strong under the systems of slavery, serfdom, and wage-labour. Under the socialistic régime it is the privilege and duty of the strong and talented to use their superior force and richer endowments in the service of their fellow-men without distinction of class or nation or creed. In the third place, socialists maintain that under their system and no other can the highest excellence and beauty be realized in industrial production and in art, whereas under the present system beauty and thoroughness are alike sacrificed to cheapness, which is a necessity of successful competition. Lastly, the socialists refuse to admit that individual happiness or freedom or character would be sacrificed under the social arrangements they propose. They believe that under the present system a free and harmonious development of indi- vidual capacity and happiness is possible only for the privi- leged minority, and that socialism alone can open up a fair opportunity for all. They believe, in short, that there is no opposition whatever between socialism and indi- viduality rightly understood, that these two are comple- ments the one of the other, that in socialism alone may every individual have hope of free development and a full realization of himself.

Having seen, then, how wide a social revolution 1s Bssence

implied in the socialistic scheme of reconstruction, let us of sovia ism,

repeat (1) that the essence of the theory consists in this —associated production with a collective capital with the view to an equitable

distribution. In the words of Schiftle, ‘the Alpha and Omega of socialism is the trans- formation of private competing capitals into a united collective capital” (Quwintessenz des Socialismus). A. Wag- ner’s more elaborate definition of it (in his Grundlegung) is entirely in agreement with that of Schiiffle. This is the principle on which all the schools of socialism, how- ever opposed otherwise, are at one. Such a system, while insisting on collective capital (including land), is quite consistent with private property in other forms, and with perfect freedom in the use of one’s own share in the equitable distribution of the produce of the associated labour. A thoroughgoing socialism demands that this principle should be applied to the capital and production of the whole world; only then can it attain to supreme and perfect realization. But a sober-minded socialism will admit that the various intermediate stages in which the principle finds a partial application are so far a true and real development of the socialistic idea. (2) Socialism is both a theory of social evolution and a working force im the history of the 19th century. Some of the most eminent socialists, such as Rodbertus, regard their theory as a pro phecy concerning the social development of the future rather than as a subject of agitation. In their view socialism 1s the next stage in the evolution of society, destined after many generations to supersede capitalism, as capitalism displaced feudalism and feudalism succeeded to slavery. Even the majority of the most active socialists consider the question as still in the stage of agitation and propaganda, their present task being that of enlightening the masses until the consummation of the present social development, and the declared bankruptcy of the present social order, shall have delivered the world into their hands. Socialism, therefore, is for the most part a theory affecting the future, more or less remote, and has only to a limited degree gained a real and practical footing in the life of our time. Yet it should not be forgotten that its theories have most powerfully affected all the ablest recent

economic writers of Germany, and have even considerably

ES

ee

SpOe@LALIS M

modified German legislation. Its influence is rapidly growing among the lower and also among the most ad- vanced classes in almost every country dominated by European culture, following as a destroying negation the development of capitalism. (3) In its doctrinal aspects socialism is most interésting as a criticism of the present economic order, of what socialists call the capitalistic system, with which the existing land system is connected. Under the present economic order land and capital (the material and instruments without which industry is impossible) are the property of a class, employing a class of wage- labourers handicapped by their exclusion from land and capital. Competition is the general rule by which the share of the members of those classes in the fruits of pro- duction is determined. Against this system critical social- ism is @ reasoned protest ; and it is at issue also with the prevailing political economy, in so far as it assumes or maintains the permanence or righteousness of this eco- nomic order. Of the economic optimism implied in the historic doctrine of Jazssez-faire socialism is an uncom- promising rejection. (4) Socialism is usually regarded as a phase of the struggle for the emancipation of labour, for the complete participation of the working classes in the material, intellectual, and spiritual inheritance of the human race. This is certainly the most substantial and most prominent part of the socialist programme, the working classes being the most numerous and the worst sufferers from the present régime. This view, however, is rather one-sided, for socialism claims not less to be in the interest of the small capitalist gradually crushed by the competition of the larger, and in the interest also of the large capitalist, whose position is endangered by the huge unmanageableness of his success, and by the world-wide economic anarchy from which even the greatest are not secure. Still it is the deliverance of the working class that stands in the front of every socialistic theory ; and, though the initiative in socialist speculation and action has usually come from the middle and upper classes, yet it is to the working men that they generally appeal.

While recognizing the great confusion in the use of the word “socialism,” we have treated it as properly a pheno- menon of the 19th century, beginning in France with Saint-Simon and Fourier, in England with Robert Owen, and most powerfully represented at the present day by the school of Karl Marx. As we have seen, however, there are definitions of the word which would give it a wider range of meaning and a more ancient

beginning, com- pared with which capitalism is but of yesterday,—which would, in fact, make it as old as human society itself. In the early stages of human development, when the tribe or the village community was the social unit, the subordina- tion of the individual to the society in which he dwelt was the rule, and common property was the prevalent form. In the development of the idea of property, especially as re- gards land, three successive historical stages are broadly re- cognized,—common property and common enjoyment of it, common property and private enjoyment, private property and private enjoyment. The last form did not attain to full expression till the end of the 18th century, when theprinciple of individual freedom, which was really a reaction against privileged restriction, was proclaimed as a positive axiom of government and of economics. 'The free individual struggle for wealth and for the social advantages dependent on wealth is a comparatively recent thing. In all periods jof history the state reserved to itself the right to interpose In the arrangements of property,—sometimes in favour of the poor, as in the case of the English poor law, which may thus be regarded as a socialistic measure. Moreover, all through history revolts in favour of a rearrangement of Property have been very frequent. And in the societies

of the Catholic Church we have a permanent example of common property and a common enjoyment of it.

How are we to distinguish the socialism of the 19th century from these old-world phenomena, and especially from the communism? which has played so great a part in history? To this query socialists, especially of the school of Marx, have a clear and precise answer. Socialism is a stage in the evolution of society which could not arrive till the conditions necessary to it had been established. The first and most essential of these was the development of the great industrialism which after a long period of pre- paration and gradual growth began to reach its culminating point with the inventions and technical improvements, with the application of steam and the rise of the factory system, in England towards the end of the 18th century. Under this system industry was organized into a vast social operation, and was thus already socialized ; but it was a system that was

exploited by the individual owner of the capital at his own pleasure and for his own behoof. Under the pressure of the competition of the large industry, the.small capitalist is gradually crushed out, and the working pro- ducers become wage-labourers organized and drilled in immense factories and workshops. The development of this system still continues and is enveloping the whole world. Such is the industrial revolution. Parallel with this a revolution in the world of ideas equally great and equally necessary to the rise of socialism has taken place. This change of thought which made its world-historic announcement in the French Revolution made reason the supreme judge and had freedom for its great practical watchword. It was represented in the economic sphere by the school of Adam Smith. Socialism was an outcome

Genesis

of social-

ism.

of it too, and first of all in Saint-Simon and his school Saint- professed to give the positive and constructive corrective to Simon,

a negative movement which did not see that it was merely negative and therefore temporary. In other words, Saint- Simon may be said to aim at nothing less than the com- pletion of the work of Voltaire, Rousseau, and Adam Smith. Thus socialism professes to be the legitimate child of two great revolutions,—of the industrial revolution which began to establish itself in England towards the end of the 18th century, and of the parallel revolution in thought which about the same time found most prominent expression in France. Robert Owen worked chiefly under the influence of the former; Saint-Simon and Fourier grew up under the latter. The conspiracy of Babeuf is properly to be regarded as a crude revolutionary communism not essen- tially different from the rude efforts in communism made in earlier periods of history. With Saint-Simon and Owen historic socialism really begins, and is no longer an isolated fact, but has had a continuous and widening development, the succession of socialistic teaching and propaganda being taken up by one country after another throughout the civilized world.

We have.seen, then, that the rise of socialism as a new and reasoned theory of society was relative to the industrial revolution and to the ideas proclaimed in the French Revolution, prominent among which, besides the much emphasized idea of freedom and the less easily realized ideals of equality and fraternity, was the conception of the worth and dignity of labour. Though Owen was most largely influenced by the former and Saint-Simon and Fourier by the latter, it is certain that all three were

1 As used in current speech, and also in economics, no very definite line of distinction between communism and socialism can be drawn. Generally speaking communism is a term for a system of common property, and this should be accepted as the reasonably correct usage of the word ; but even by socialists it is frequently used as practically synonymous with socialism. Collectivism is a word which has recently come into vogue to express the economic basis of socialism as above explained.

greatly affected by both the new movements. The motive power in Owen's career was the philanthropy and humani- tarjanism of the 18th century. He had grown up in the midst of the industrial revolution ; he was one of the most successful pioneers in the improvement of the cotton manu- facture. No one could be more deeply conscious of the enormous abuses of the factory system ; and no one better knew the wonderful services it could render if technical improvement were only made subordinate to human well- being. In the career of Owen we see the new spirit of the 18th century seeking to bring the mechanism of the new industrial system under the direction of a nobler prin- ciple, in which the good of all should be the great and sole aim. The position of Saint-Simon was considerably different, yet akin. As Owen had before his eyes the evils of a young but gigantic industrialism, Saint-Simon con- templated the hoary abuses of an idle and privileged feudalism, fearfully shaken no doubt by the Revolution, but still strong in Europe, and in France as elsewhere powerfully revived during the period after Waterloo. Saint- Simon saw that a new world, an industrial

world resting on labour, had arisen, while the old feudal and theological world—fainéant courtiers and a clergy steeped in ignorance still ruled. All this array of parasites, who had no longer any useful function to perform for society, Saint-Simon sought to replace by the industrial chiefs and scientific leaders as the real working heads of the French people. Only he expected that these exceptionally gifted men, instead of exploiting the labour of others, should control an industrial France for the general good. Neither Owen nor Saint-Simon was revolutionary in the ordinary sense. Owen was most anxious that the English and other Govern- ments should adopt his projects of socialistic reform. Leading statesmen and royal personages befriended him. He had no faith in the political reforms of 1832; he reckoned the political side of chartism as of no account, and he preferred socialistic experiment under autocratic guidance until the workmen should be trained to rule themselves. The same autocratic tendency was very pro- nounced in Saint-Simon and his school. His first appeal was to Louis XVIII. He wished to supersede the feudal aristocracy by a working aristocracy of merit. His school claim to have been the first to warn the Governments of Europe of the rise of revolutionary socialism. (For further information as to Saint-Simon and his school, see SAINT- Srmon.) The good and bad aspects of the Saint-Simon socialism are too obvious to require elucidation in this article. The antagonism between the old economic order and the new had only begun to declare itself. The extent and violence of the disease were not yet apparent ; both diagnosis and remedy were superficial and premature. Such deep-seated organic disorder was not to be conjured away by the waving of a magic wand. The movement was all too utopian and extravagant in much of its activity. The most prominent portion of the school attacked social order in its essential point—the family morality—adopting the worst features of a fantastic, arrogant, and prurient sacerdotalism, and parading them in the face of Kurope. Thus it happened that a school which attracted so many of the most brilliant and promising young men of France, which was so striking and original in its criticism of the existing condition of things, which was so strong in the spirit of initiative, and was in many ways so noble, un- selfish, and aspiring, sank amidst the laughter and indigna- tion of a scandalized society. The beginning of socialism may be dated from 1817, the ear when Owen laid his scheme for a socialistic com- munity before the committee of

the House of Commons on the poor law, the year also that the speculations of Saint-Simon definitely took a socialistic direction. The

SOCLALLiOM@

outlines of the history of socialism are very simple, Till 1850 there was a double movement in France and England. In the former country after Saint-Simon and Fourier the movement was represented chiefly by Proudhon and Louis Blanc. In England after Owen the movement was taken up by the body of Christian socialists associated with Maurice and Kingsley. The more recent socialism is due chiefly to German and also Russian thinkers, but is

generally international both in sympathy and activity. Considered as a purely literary and speculative product} Fourier }

the socialism of Fourier was prior to those of both Owen and Saint-Simon. His great work, Théorie des Quatre Mouve- ments, was published as early as 1808. The socialism of Fourier, however, scarcely attracted any attention and exercised no influence till those of Owen and Saint-Simou were on the decline. His system is one in which the wildest fantasy is mixed with ingenious theory and the most searching criticism of the present competitive system ; even yet it is almost unrivalled in pungency and effective- ness. The pantheistic conception of the world which underlay the Saint-Simonian theory of the “ rehabilitation of the flesh” formed the basis also of the social ethics and arrangements of Fourier. According to Fourier, evil is the artificial product and attendant of civilization, the result of

perverted human institutions, which have run counter to the

ordinances of the Creator in pronouncing passions and affec- tions to be bad which are simply natural. Between the creature and the Creator there have been 5000 years of misunderstanding. There is but one way of removing this

misunderstanding,—to give a free and healthy and com-

plete development to our passions. This Fourier sought to accomplish in his phalanges, which, united in a system of free federation, would, as he believed, soon cover the world (see FouRIER).

The year 1830 was an important turning-point in the Revol-| that tiou of

800,

history of socialism. During the fermentation of time the activity of the Saint-Simon school came toa crisis, and the ideas of Fourier had an opportunity of taking practical effect. Some of the Saint-Simonians joined him. The movement in France was short-lived; and the numerous experiments tried in America were not more successful. One of the most notable societies suggested by Fourier's influence, but entirely free from his immoral tendencies, was Brook Farm, established by George Ripley and other cultured Americans in 1840. A most praiseworthy and successful institution also suggested by the teaching of Fourier is the Familistére at Guise (Aisne) conducted by M. Godin. But by far the greatest result of the revolution of 1830 was the definitive establishment of the contrast be- tween the bourgeoisie and the proletariat. Hitherto these two classes had fought side by side against feudalism and the reaction. The bourgeoisie were now rulers, and the proletariat became the revolutionary party, the first outbreak under the new conditions taking place at Lyons in 183], when the starving workmen rose to arms with the device, "Live working or die fighting." During the latter half of the reign of the bourgeois king Louis Philippe Paris be- came more than ever the centre of socialistic fermentation. In 1839 Louis Blanc published his Organisation du Travail, and Cabet his Voyage en Icarie. In 1840 Proudhon pub- lished his book on property. At this period Paris counted among her visitors Lassalle, the

founder of the social de- mocracy of Germany; Karl Marx, .the chief of scientific international socialism; and Bakunin, the apostle of anarchism.

The socialism of Saint-Simon and Fourier was largely speculative, imaginative, and utopian, and had only a very remote connexion with the practical life of ther time J With Louis Blane (1811-1882) socialism came into real Loui) contact with the public history of France. The most cod

spicuous feature of Louis Blanc's teaching was that he demanded the democratic organization of the state as pre- paratory to social reorganization. His system, therefore, had a positive and practical basis, in so far as it allied itself to a dominant tendency in the existing state. Louis Blane was an eminent journalist, born at Madrid, where his father had a high post on the finances of King Joseph. His celebrated work on socialism, Organisation du Travail, exerted a very large influence on the thought of France. The formula of progress, says Louis Blanc, is double in its unity,—moral and material amelioration of the lot of all by the free co-operation of all and their fraternal associa- tion. He saw, however, that the great end of social re- form could not be attained without political reform. It was not enough to discover the true methods for inaugurat- ing the principle of association and the organization of labour according to the rules of reason, justice, and human- ity. It was necessary to have political power on the side of social reform, political power resting on the chambers, on the tribunals, and on the army ; not to take it as an in- strument was to meet it as an obstacle. For these reasons he wished to see the state constituted on a thoroughly democratic basis as the first condition of success. He demanded that the state thus reformed should establish associations, which he called social workshops, for co-opera- tive production. The money should be provided by the state, which also should draw up the rules. The state should appoint the functionaries for the first year. After that the workmen should elect their own managers. "Though the false and anti-social education given to the present generation makes it difficult to find any other motive of emulation and encouragement than a higher salary, the wages will be equal, as the ideas and character of men will be changed by an absolutely new education." Louis Blanc hoped that private firms would not be able to exist

under the competition of such associa- tions, and that the latter would in time absorb all the production of the country. Notwithstanding the influence exerted by Louis Blanc and the working men's party in the provisional Government of 1848, it cannot be said that his plans obtained a fair hearing or a fair trial. His schemes were certainly not carried out in the national workshops of that year. These were really a travesty of Louis Blane's proposals, instituted expressly to discredit them. They were simply means of finding work for a motley proletariat thrown out of employment during the period of revolutionary disturbance ; and these men were put to unproductive work, whereas of course Louis Blanc contemplated nothing but productive work, and the men he proposed to invite to join his associations were to give guarantees of character. The months following the re- volution of February were, moreover, a period of industrial stagnation and insecurity, when any new project of trade, either on the old or new lines, had very little prospect of Success. 'This remark applies largely also to the private associations for co-operative production subsidized by the republican Government. These were more closely akin to the plans of Louis Blanc ; but to them also the times were unfavourable, and the help given them was both scanty and injudicious. As one of the leaders during this diffi- cult crisis Louis Blanc had neither personal force nor enduring political influence sufficient to secure any con- siderable success for his cause. He was an amiable and Senial enthusiast, but without weight enough to be a,con- troller of men on a wide scale. 'The labour conferences at

the Luxembourg, over which he presided, ended also as.

8 opponents desired, without any tangible result. The proletariat at Paris, incensed at the closing of the national Workshops, rose in armed insurrection, which was over-

thrown by Cavaignac in the sanguinary days of June (see |

_ wretched in the extreme.

209

Cavaienac). Louis Blane was in no way implicated in the revolt, but he found it necessary to go into exile in England. With the bloodshed of the

days of June French socialism ceased for a time to be a considerable force, Socialism in the true acceptation of the word was indeed only partially responsible for the insurrection. It was a rising of a proletariat not particularly versed in theories of social reconstruction, but deeply incensed at the re- actionary measures of their rulers. Inasmuch, however, as it destroyed the most enterprising leaders of the work- men and quelled the spirit of the remainder, it thoroughly repressed the tendency to innovation amongst them for a long time to come, while the false prosperity of the second empire removed their most crying grievances. Under Napoleon III. there was consequently comparative quiet- ness in France. Even the International had very little influence on French soil, though French working men had an important share in starting it.

Compared with the parallel movement in France the England, early socialism of England had an uneventful history (see Owen.

Owen). In order to appreciate the significance of Owen's work it is necessary to recall some of the more important features of the social condition of the country in his time. The English worker had no fixed interest in the soil. He had no voice either in local or national government. He had little education or none at all. His dwelling was The right even of combination was denied him till 1824. The wages of the agricultural labourer were miserably low. The workman's share in the benefits of the industrial revolution was doubtful. Great numbers of his class were reduced to utter poverty and ruin by the great changes consequent on the introduction of improved machinery; the tendency to readjustment was slow and continually disturbed by fresh change. The hours of work were mercilessly long. He had to compete against the labour of women, and of children brought fre- quently at the age of five or six from the workhouses. These children had to work the same long hours as the adults, and they were sometimes strapped by the over- seers till the blood came. Destitute as they so often were of parental protection and oversight, with both sexes huddled together under immoral and insanitary conditions, it was only natural that they should fall into the worst habits, and that their offspring should to such a lament- able degree be vicious, improvident, and physically de- generate. In a country where the labourers had neither education nor political or social rights, and where the peasantry were practically landless serfs, the

old English poor-law was only a doubtful part of an evil system. All these permanent causes of mischief were aggravated by special causes connected with the cessation of the Napole- onic wars, which are well known. It was in such circum- Stances, when English pauperism had become a grave national question, that Owen first brought forward his scheme of socialism (1817). In his communities, which were intended to be self-dependent units, Owen sought to provide the best education and the constant exercise of unselfish intelligence, to unite the advantages of town and country, and to correct the monotonous activity of the factory with the greatest variety of occupation, while utilizing all the latest improvements in industrial technique. The causes of Owen's failure in establishing his communi- ties are obvious enough. Apart from the difficulties in- herent in socialism, he injured the social cause by going out of his way to attack the historic religions and the accepted views on marriage, by his quixotry and tediousness, by refusing to see that for the mass of men measures of transition from an old to a new system must be adopted. If he had been truer to his earlier methods and retained the autocratic guidance of his experiments, the chances of XXII, — 27

ad

Chartism.

Christian socialism in Eng- land.

210

success would have been greater. Above all, Owen had too great faith in human nature, and he did not understand the laws of social evolution. His great doctrine of the influence of circumstances in the formation of character was only a very crude way of expressing the law of social continuity so much emphasized by recent socialism. He thought that he could break the chain of continuity, and as by magic create a new set of circumstances, which would forthwith produce a new generation of rational and unselfish men. The time was too strong for him, and the current of English history swept past him. Evena very brief account of Owen, however, would be incomplete without indicating his relation to Malthus. Against Mal- thus he showed that the wealth of the country had, in con-

sequence of mechanical improvement, increased out of all proportion to the population. The problem, therefore, was not to restrict population, but to institute rational social arrangements and to secure a fair distribution of wealth. Whenever the number of inhabitants in any of lis communities increased beyond the maximum, new ones should be created, until they extended over the whole world, uniting all in one great republic with one interest. There would be no fear of over-population for a long time to come. Its evils were then felt in Treland and other coun- tries ; but that condition of things was owing to the total want of the most ordinary common sense on the part of the blinded authorities of the world. ably never arrive when the earth would be full; but if it should the human race will be good, intelligent, and rational, and would know much better than the present irrational generation how to provide for the occurrence. Such was Owen's socialist treatment of the population problem.

In England the reform of 1832 had the same effect as the revolution of July (1830) in France : it brought the middle class into power, and by the exclusion of the work- men emphasized their existence as a separate class. The discontent of the workmen now found expression in Chart- ism. As is obvious from the contents of the charter, Chartism was most prominently a demand for political reform; but both in its origin and in its ultimate aim the movement was more essentially economic. As regards the study of socialism, the interest of this movement hes greatly in the fact that in its organs the doctrine of ' sur- plus value" afterwards elaborated by Marx as the basis of his system is broadly and emphatically enunciated. While the worker produces all the wealth, he is obliged to con- tent himself with the meagre share necessary to support lis existence and the surplus goes to the capitalist, who, with the king, the priests, lords, esquires, and gentlemen, lives upon the labour of the working man (Poor Man's Guardian, 1835).

After the downfall of Owenism began the Christian socialist movement in England (1848-52), of which the leaders were Maurice, Kingsley, 'and Mr Ludlow. The abortive Chartist demonstration of April 1848 excited in Maurice and his friends the deepest sympathy with the sufferings of the English working class,—a feeling which was intensified by the revelations regarding '' London Labour and the London Poor" published in the Morning Chromele (1849). Mr Ludlow, who had in France become

acquainted wvith the theories of Fourier, was the economist of the movement, and it was with him that the idea originated of starting co-operative associations. In Politics for the People, in the Christian Socialist, in the pulpit and on the platform, and in Yeast and Alton Locke, well-known novels of Kingsley, the representatives of the movement exposed the evils of the competitive system, carried on an unsparing warfare against the Manchester school, and maintained that socialism rightly understood was only Christianity applied to social reform, Their labours in

The period would prob- ,

SOC ALPS #

insisting on ethical and spiritual principles as the true bonds of society, in promoting associations, and in diffusing a knowledge of co-operation were largely beneficial. In the north of England they joined hands with the co-operative movement inaugurated by the Rochdale pioneers (1844) under the influence of Owenism. Productive co-operation made very little progress, but co-operative distribution has proved a great success.

In 1852 the twofold socialist movement in France and England had come toa close, leaving no visible result of any importance. From that date the most prominent leaders of socialism have been German and Russian. To reach the beginnings of German socialism we must go back a little, as it took its rise in the years preceding the revolu- tion of 1848. Its most conspicuous Friedrich Engels, two, see LassALLE and Ropsertus). The greatest and most influential of the four was unquestionably Marx, who and his like-minded companion Engels are the acknow- ledged heads of the “scientific and revolutionary” school of socialism, which has its representatives in almost every country of the civilized world, and is generally recognized as the most serious and formidable form of socialism. Karl Marx (1818-1883) was of Jewish extraction, He was born at Treves, and studied at Berlin and Bonn, but neglected the speciality of law, which he nominally adopted, for the more congenial subjects of philosophy and history. He was a zealous student and apparently an adherent of Hegelianism, but soon gave Up his intention of following an academic career as a teacher of philosophy and jomed the staff of the Rhenish Gazette, published at Cologne as an organ of the extreme democracy. In

1843, after marry ing the sister of the Prussian minister Von Westfalen, he removed to Paris, where he applied himself to the study of economic and social questions and began to publish those youthful writings which must be reckoned among the most i powerful expositions of the early form of German socialism. With Arnold Ruge he edited the Deutsch-Franzisische Jahrbiicher. In 1845 he was expelled from Paris and settled in Brussels, where he published his Discours sur le Libre Echange, and his criticism of Proudhon's Philosophie de la Misere, entitled Misére de la Philosophie. Yn Paris he had already met Friedrich Engels, who was destined to be his lifelong and loyal friend and companion-in-arms, and who in 1845 published his important work Die Lage der arbeitenden Klasse in England. The two friends found that they had arrived at a complete identity of opinion ; and an opportunity soon occurred for an emphatic expres: sion of their common views. A society of socialists, a kind of forerunner of the International, had established itself in London, and had been attracted by the new theories of Marx and the spirit of strong and uncompromising convic- tion with which he advocated them. They entered into re- lation with Marx and Engels; the society was reorganized under the name of the Communist League ; and a congress was held, which resulted (1847) in the framing of the Mant- festo of the Communist Party, which was published in most of the languages of western Europe, and is the first proclamation of that revolutionary socialism armed with all the learning of the 19th century, but expressed with the fire and energy of the agitator, which in the Interna tional and other movements has so startled the world. During the revolutionary troubles of 1848 Marx returned to Germany, and along with his comrades Engels, Wolff, &e., he supported the most advanced democracy in the New Rhenish Gazette. In 1849 he settled in London, where till his death in 1883 he applied himself to the elaboration of his economic views and to the realization of his revolutionary programme. During this period he published Zur Kritik der politischen Ockonomie (1859);

chiefs are Karl Marx, Karl Lassalle, and Rodbertus (for the last Mar.

wore I 2 bs at

and the first volume of his great work on capital, Das Kapital (1867).

The causes which have variously contributed to the rise of German socialism are sufficiently clear. With the acces- ‘sion of the romanticist Frederick William IV. to the throne of Prussia in 1840 German liberalism received a fresh expansion. At the same time the Hegelian school began to break up, and the interest in pure philosophy began to wane. It was a time of disillusionment, of dis- satisfaction with idealism, of transition to realistic and even to materialistic ways of thinking. This found strongest expression in the Hegelian left, to which, after the ideals of the old religions and philosophies had proved unsub- stantial, there remained as solid residuum the real fact of man with his positive interests in this life. The devotion and enthusiasm which had previously been fixed on ideal and spiritual conceptions were concentrated on humanity. To adherents of the Hegelian left, who had been delivered from intellectual routine by the most intrepid spirit of criticism, and who, therefore, had little respect for the conventionalisins of a feudal society, it naturally appeared that the interests of humanity had been cruelly sacrificed in favour of class privilege and prejudice. The greatest thinkers of Germany had recognized the noble elements in the French Revolution. To recognize also the noble and promising features of French socialism was a natural thing, especially for Germans who had been in Paris,—the great hearth of the new ideas. Here they found themselves definitely and consciously in presence of the last and greatest interest of humanity, the suffering and struggling proletariat of western Europe, which had so recently made its definite entry in the history of the world. Thus social- ism became a social, political, and economic creed to Karl Marx and his associates. But they felt that the theories which preceded them were wanting in scientific basis ; and it was henceforward the twofold aim of the school to give scientific form to socialism and to propagate it in Europe by the best and most effective revolutionary methods.

The fundamental principle of the Marx school and of the whole cognate socialism is the theory of “surplus value,”— the doctrine, namely, that, after the labourer has been paid the wage necessary for the subsistence of himself and family, the surplus produce of his labour is appropriated by the capitalist who exploits it. This theory is an applica- tion of the principle that labour is the source of value, which was enunciated by many of the old writers on economics, such as Locke and Petty, which was set forth with

some vagueness and inconsistency by Adam Smith, and was more systematically expounded by Ricardo. The socialistic application of the principle in the doctrine of surplus value had been made both by Owenites and chart- ists. It was to prevent this appropriation of surplus value by capitalists and middlemen that the Owen school tried the system of exchange by labour notes in 1832,— the value of goods being estimated in labour-time, repre- sented by labour notes. The principle that labour is the source of value has been accepted in all its logical conse- quences by Marx, and by him elaborated with extraordinary dialectical skill and historical learning into the most com- plete system of socialism that has ever been formulated. A like application of the principle but in a less rigorous fashion has been made by Rodbertus ; and it is the same theory that underlies the extravagancies and paradoxes of Proudion, The question whether the priority in the Scientific development of the principle is due to Marx or Rodbertus cannot be fully discussed here. But it may be said that, while the Social Letters of Rodbertus to Von Kirehmann were published in 1850, the importance of the Principle was understood by the Marx school as early as 1845, and in a broad and general way had indeed become

the common property of socialists. The historical import- ance and scientific worth of the writings of Rodbertus should not be overlooked ; nor are they likely to be when so much attention has been given to him by A. Wagner and other distinguished German economists. But in the great. work of Marx the socialist theory is elaborated with a fulness of learning and a logical power to which Rodbertus has no claim. With Marx the doctrine of surplus value receives its widest application and develop- ment ; it supplies the key to his explanation of the history and influence of capital, and consequently of the present economic era, which is dominated by it. It is the basis, in fact, of a vast and elaborate system of social philosophy. In any case it is an absurdity as well as an historical error to speak of Marx as having borrowed from Rodbertus. Marx was an independent thinker of great originality and force of character, who had made the economic develop- ment of modern Europe the study of a laborious lifetime, and who was in the habit, not of borrowing, but of strongly asserting the results of his own research and of impressing them upon other men.

The great work of Marx may be described as an exposi- Capital.

tion and criticism of capital. But it is also indirectly an exposition of socialism, inasmuch as the historical evolu- tion of capital is governed by natural laws, the inevitable tendency of which is towards socialism. It is the great aim of Marx to reveal the law of the economic movenient of modern times. Now the economic movement of modern times is dominated by capital. Explain, therefore, thie natural history of capital, the rise, consolidation, and de- cline of its supremacy as an evolutionary process, and you forecast the nature of that into which it is being trans- formed,—socialism, Hence the great task of the Marx school is not to preach a new economic and social gosjel, not to provide ready-made schemes of social regeneration after the fashion of the early socialists, nor to counteract by alleviating measures the wretchedness of our present system, but to explain and promote the inevitable process of social evolution, so that the domination of capital may run its course and give place to the higher system that is to come.

The characteristic feature of the régime of capital, or, as Marx usually calls it, the capitalistic method of produc- tion, is, that industrial operations are carried on by indi- vidual capitalists employing free labourers, whose sole dependence is the wage they receive. Those free labourers perform the function fulfilled in other states of society by the slave and the serf. It is the tendency of the capital- istic system to consolidate those two classes,—the capitalist class, enriching itself on the profits of industry, which they control in their own interest, and the class of workers, nominally free, but without land or capital, divorced, there- fore, from the means of production, and dependent on their wages,—the modern proletariat. The great aim of the capitalist is the increase of wealth through the accumula- tion of his profits. This accumulation is secured by the appropriation of what the socialists call surplus value. The history of the capitalistic method of production is the history of the appropriation and accumulation of surplus value, To understand the capitalistic system is to under- stand surplus value. With the analysis of value, there- fore, the great work of Marx begins.

The wealth of the societies in which the capitalistic method of production prevails appears as an enormous collection of commodities. A commodity

is in the first place an external object adapted to satisfy human wants ;

and this usefulness gives it value in use, makes it a use Value These use values form the material of wealth, 2nd

value. whatever its social form may be. In modern societies, where the business of production is carried on to meet the

Develop- ment of capital- istic régime.

demands of the market, for exchange, these use values appear as exchange values. Exchange value is the pro- portion in which use values of different kinds exchange for each other. But the enormous mass of things that circulate in the world market exchange for each other in the most different proportions. They must, however, have a common quality or they could not be compared. This common quality cannot be any of the natural properties of the commodities. In the business of exchange one thing is as good as another, provided you have it in sufficient quantity. Leaving out of consideration, there- fore, the physical qualities that give commodities use value, we find in them but one common characteristic, — that they are all products of human labour. They are all crystallized forms of human labour. It is labour applied to natural objects that gives them value. What con- stitutes value is the human labour embodied in commo- dities. And the relation of exchange is only a phase of this value, which is therefore to be considered independ- ently of it. Further, the labour-time spent in producing value is the measure of value, not this or that individual labour, in which case a lazy or unskilled man would pro- duce as great a quantity of value as the most skilful and cnergetic. We must take as our standard the average labour-force of the community. The labour-time which we take as the measure of value is the time required to produce a commodity under the normal social conditions of production with the average degree of skill and intensity of labour, Thus labour is both the source and the measure of value.

As we have seen, the characteristic feature of the capitalistic system of production is that industry is con- trolled by capitalists employing free wage-labour ; that 4s, while the capitalist owns and controls the means of

pro- duction, the free labourer has lost all ownership in land and capital and has nothing to depend on but his wage. This condition of things was established only after a long and gradual process of social change, which Marx copiously illustrates from the history of England, as the classic land of the fully developed capitalism. In the Middle Ages the craftsman and peasant were the owners of the small means of production then extant, and they produced for their own needs and for their feudal superior ; only the super- fluity went into the general market. Such production was necessarily small, limited, and technically imperfect. Towards the close of the Middle Ages a great change set in caused by a remarkable combination of circum- stances, —the downfall of the feudal system and of the Catholic Church, the discovery of America and of the sea route to India. Through the breaking up of the feudal houses with their numerous retainers, through the trans- formation of the old peasant-holdings into extensive sheep- runs, and generally through the prevalent application of the commercial system to the management of land instead of the Catholic and feudal spirit, the peasantry were driven off the land, a multitude of people totally destitute of property were thrown loose from their old means of liveli- hood, and were reduced to vagabondage or forced into the towns, It was in this way that the modern proletarians made their tragic entry in history. On the other hand, there was a parallel development of the capitalist class, brought about by the slave trade, the exploitation of the American colonies and of both the Indies, and by the robbery, violence, and corruption which attended the trans- ference of the land from the Catholic and feudal to the inodern régime. The opening and extension of the great world market, moreover, gave a great stimulus to industry at home. The old guilds having already been expropriated and dissolved, the early organization of industry under the control of an infant capitalism passed through its first

form of free contract. labour market with the sole commodity of which he has to dispose, his labour force, at the price it can bring,

painful and laborious stages, till with the great mechanical inventions, with the application of steam as the motive- power, and the rise of the factory system towards the close of the 18th century, the great industrial revolution

was accomplished, and the capitalistic method of production attained to its colossal manhood.

The capitalistic systcm thus established, we have to Capita. remember that in all its forms, and throughout all the istic ap.

stages of its history, the great aim of the capitalist is to a

100,

‘ncrease and consolidate his gains through the appropria-

tion of surplus value. This appropriation of surplus value is a very old phenomenon in human society. In all the forms of society which depended on slave labour,

and under the feudal régime, the appropriation of the results of other men’s labour was open and undisguised,

Under the capitalistic system it is disguised under the The workman appears on the

and sells it for a specified time which we call his wage, and which is equivalent to the average means of subsistence required to support himself and to provide for the future supply of labour (in his family). But the labour force of the workman as utilized by the capitalist in the factory or the mine produces a net value in excess of his wage. That is, over and above his entire outlay, including the wage paid to his workmen, the capitalist finds himself in possession of a surplus, which can only represent the “unpaid labour” of his workmen. This surplus is the surplus value of Karl Marx, the product of unpaid labour. This it is which the capitalist seeks to obtain and to accumulate by all the methods available. These methods are described by Marx with great detail and elaboration through several hundred pages of his first volume, His account, supported at every step by long and copious citations from the best historical authorities and from the blue-books of the various parliamentary com- missions, is a lurid and ghastly picture of the many abuses of English industrialism. It is the dark and gloomy reverse of the industrial glories of England. The fearful prolongation of the hours of

labour, the merciless exploita- tion of women, and of children from the age of infancy, the utter neglect of sanitary conditions, whatever could lessen the costs of production and swell the profits of the capitalist, though every law of man and nature were violated m the process,—such are the historical facts which Marx emphasizes and illustrates with an overwhelming force of evidence. They receive ample confirmation in the history of the English Factory Acts, imposed on greedy and un- scrupulous capitalists after a severe struggle prolonged for half a century, and required to prevent the moral and physical ruin of the industrial population.

Tt will be seen that the first and most conspicuous result Results | of the capitalistic system is that, while production is aged | social operation carried on by men organized and assocl- system. ated in factories, the product is appropriated by individual capitalists : it is social production and capitalistic appro priation. Another conspicuous and important result is that, while we have this organization in the factories, we have outside of them all the anarchy of competition, We have the capitalistic appropriators of the product of labout contending for the possession of the market, without systematic regard to the supply required by that market— each one filling the market only as dictated by his own interest, and trying to outdo his rivals by all the methods of adulteration, bribery, and intrigue,—an economic wat hurtful to the best interests of society. With the develop- ment of the capitalistic system' machinery is more and more perfected, for to neglect improvement is to succumb in the struggle ; the improved machinery renders labour supe!

SO ecLA L its

uous, which is accordingly thrown idle and exposed to starvation. But, as the technique improves, the productive power of industry increases, and continually tends more and more to surpass the available needs of the market, wide as it is. 'The consequence is that the market tends to be overstocked even to absolute repletion; goods will not sell, and a commercial crisis is established, in which we have the remarkable phenomenon of widespread panic, jnisery, and starvation resulting from a superabundance of wealth,—a "crise pléthorique," as Fourier called it, a crisis due to a plethora of wealth. These crises occur at periodic intervals,

each one severer and more widespread than the preceding, until they now tend to become chronic and permanent, and the whole capitalistic world staggers under an atlantean weight of ill-distributed wealth. Thus the process goes on in obedience to its own inherent laws. Production is more and more concentrated in the hands of viammoth capitalists and colossal joint-stock companies, under which the proletariat are organized and drilled into yast industrial armies. But, as crisis succeeds crisis, until panic, stagnation, and disorder are universal, it becomes clear that the bourgeoisie are no longer capable of control- ling the industrial world. The incompatibility between social production and anarchic distribution decidedly de- clares itself, With the progress of democracy the prole- tariat seizes the political power, and through it at last takes complete control over the economic functions of society. It expropriates the private capitalist and appropriating le means of production manages them in its own interest, which is the interest of society as a whole; society passes into the socialistic stage through a revolution determined by the natural laws of social evolution, and not by a merely arbitrary exercise of power. It is a result determined by the inherent laws of social evolution, independent of the will and purpose of individual men. All that the most powerful and clear-sighted intellect can do is to learn to divine the laws of the great movement of society, and to shorten and alleviate the birth-pangs of the new era. The efforts of reactionaries of every class to turn the wheel of history backwards are in vain. But an intelligent apprecia- tion of its tendencies and a willing co-operation with them will make progress easier, smoother, and more rapid.

It will have been seen that what Marx and his school contemplate is an economic revolution brought about in accordance with the natural laws of historic evolution. But in order to understand the full import of this revolu- tion in the mind of Marx we must remember that he regards the economic order of society as the groundwork of the same, determining all the other forms of social order. The entire legal and political structure as well as philosophy and religion are constituted and controlled in accordance with the economic basis. This is in harmony with his method and his conception of the world, which is the Hegelian reversed. ‘For Hegel the thought process, which he transforms into an independent subject under the name idea, is the creator of the real, which forms only its external manifestation.

With me, on the contrary, the ideal is nothing else than the material transformed and translated in the human brain." His conception of the world is a frank and avowed materialism. His method is the dialectic applied to a world thus understood ; the busi- ness of inquiry, namely, is to trace the connexion and concatenation in the links that make up the process of historic evolution, to investigate how one stage succeeds another in the development of society, the facts and forms of human life and history not being stable and stereotyped things, but the ever-changing manifestations of the fluent and unresting real, the course of which it is the duty of science to reveal. The whole position of the Marx school may therefore be characterized as evolutionary and revolu-

tionary socialism, based on a materialistic conception of the world and of human history. Socialism is a social revolution determined by the laws of historic evolution— a revolution which, changing the economic groundwork of society, will change the whole structure.

It will be seen that the work of Marx is a natural history of capital, especially in its relation to labour, and in its most essential features is a development of two of the leading principles of the classic economics,— that labour is the source of value, but that of this value the labourer obtains for himself merely a subsistence wage, the surplus being appropriated by the exploiting capitalist. Marx's great work may be described as an elaborate historical de- velopment of this glaring fundamental contradiction of the Ricardian economics, the contradiction between the iron law of wages and the great principle that labour is the source of wealth. Marx's conception of labour is the same as that of Ricardo, and as a logical exposition of the historic contradiction between the two principles on the basis of Ricardo the work of Marx is quite unanswerable. It is obvious, however, that the definition of labour assumed both in Ricardo and Marx is too narrow. The labour they broadly posit as the source of wealth is manual labour. In the early stages of industry, when the market was small and limited and the technique was of the simplest and rudest description, labour in that sense might correctly enough be described as the source of value. But in modern industry, when the market is world-wide, the technique most

complex, and the competition most severe, when inventiveness, sagacity, courage, and decision in ini- tiative, and skill in management, are factors so important, no such exclusive place as has been claimed can be assigned to labour. The Ricardian principle, therefore, falls to the ground, And it is not historically true to maintain, as Marx does, that the profits of the capitalist are obtained simply by appropriating the products of unpaid labour. In initiating and managing the capitalist is charged with the most difficult and important part of the work of pro- duction. As a natural consequence it follows that Marx is also historically inaccurate in roundly explaining capital as the accumulation of unpaid labour appropriated by the capitalist. In past accumulation, as in the control and management of industry generally, the capitalist has had the leading part. Capital, therefore, is not necessarily robbery, and in an economic order in which the system of free exchange is the rule, and the mutually beneficial interchange of utilities, no objection can be raised to the principle of lending and borrowing of money for interest. In short, in his theory of unpaid labour as supplying the key to his explanation of the genesis and development of the capitalistic system Marx is not true to history. It is the perfectly logical outcome of certain of the leading principles of the Ricardian school, but it does not give an adequate or accurate account of the facts of economic evolution.

It may indeed be maintained that in his theory of un- paid labour Marx is not consistent with the gencral principles of his own philosophy of social evolution. With him history is a process determined by material forces, a succession of orderly phenomena controlled by natural laws. Now we may waive the objection suggested by the principle enunciated in the Marx school itself, that it is not legitimate to apply ethical categories in judgment on economic processes that are merely natural, which, how- ever, Marx does with revolutionary emphasis throughout some hundreds of pages of his great work. It is more important to point out, in perfect consistency with the principles of the school, that the energy and inventiveness of the early capitalists especially were the most essential factors in determining the existence and development of a

Criticism of Marx’s

views.

great economic era, and that the assertion of freedom was an indispensable condition in breaking the bonds of the old feudal order, which the new system displaced. In- stead, therefore, of living and growing rich on the produce of unpaid labour, the capitalist had a great social and industrial function to perform, and played a great part in historic evolution. The position and function of the workman was subordinate.

There can be no doubt that in his theory of surplus value obtained from unpaid labour Marx as agitator and controversialist has fallen into serious contradiction with himself as scientific historian and philosopher. The theory that labour is the source of value was widely accepted among economists during his early life, and by its justice and nobleness it was well adapted to the comfortable optimism prevalent among so many of the classical school. The economists, however, did not follow the principle to its obvious conclusion, that if labour is the source of wealth the labourer should enjoy it all. It was otherwise with the socialists, who were not slow to perceive the bearing of the theory on the existing economic order. In his controversial treatise against Proudhon Marx gives a list of writers (beginning with the political economy of Hopkins, published in 1822, only five years after the appearance of Ricardo's great work) by whom the principle was applied to revolutionary purposes. Its simplicity and seeming effectiveness must have made it most attractive. As posited by the classic economy and applied by the socialists Marx accepted the principle. It was an un- answerable argumentum ad hominem when addressed to an economist of the Ricardian school; but it should have broken down when confronted with historical fact. Never- theless it was made and continued to be the foundation stone of the system of Marx, and is really its weakest point. His doctrine of surplus value is the vitiating factor in his history of the capitalistic system. The most obvious excuse for him is that he borrowed it from the classic economists. It would be the greatest possible mistake, however, to make this a reason for undervaluing the re- markable services rendered to economics by Karl Marx. He spent forty laborious years almost wholly in exile as the scientific champion of the proletariat. In the combina- tion of learning, philosophic acumen, and literary power he is probably second to no economic thinker of the 19th cen- tury. He seems to

have been master of the whole range of economic literature, and wielded it with a logical skill not less masterly. But his great strength lay in his knowledge of the technical and economic development of modern industry and in his marvellous insight into the tendencies in social evolution determined by the technical and economic factors. Whether his theories in this department are right or wrong they have suggested questions that will demand the attention of economic thinkers for a long time to come. It is in this department and not in his theory of surplus value that Marx's significance as a scientific economist is to be found.

The great merit of Marx, therefore, lies in the work he has done as scientific inquirer into the economic movement of modern times, as the philosophic historian of the capi- talistic era. It is now admitted by all inquirers worthy of the name that history, including economic history, is a succession of orderly phenomena, that each phase in the line of succession is marked by facts and tendencies more or less peculiar to itself, and that laws and principles which we now condemn had formerly an historical necessity, justifica- tion, and validity. In accordance with this fundamental principle of historical evolution arrangements and institu- tions which were once necessary, and originally formed a stage in human progress, may gradually develop contradic- tions and abuses and thus become more or less antiquated.

SOCIALISM

The economic social and political forms which were the progressive and even adequate expressions of the life of one era become hindrances and fetters to the life of the succeeding times. This, the school of Karl Marx says, is precisely the condition of the present economic order. The existing arrangements of landlord, capitalist, and wage. labourer under free competition are burdened with contra- diction and abuse. The life of society is being strangled by the forms which once promoted it. They maintain that the really vital and powerful tendencies of our time are towards a higher and wider form of social and economic organization,—towards socialism. This we believe to be the central point of the whole question; but the fuller discussion of it can more conveniently be postponed to the close of this article, when we come to consider socialism as a whole.

The opinions of Marx were destined to find expression in two movements, which have played a considerable part in recent history,—the International and the social democracy of Germany. Of the International Marx was the inspiring and controlling head from the beginning ; and the German social democracy, though originated by Lassalle, before long fell under Marx's influence. Marx wrote the famous inau- gural address of the International and drew up its statutes, maintaining a moderation of tone which contrasted strongly with the outspoken vigour of the communist manifesto of 1847. But it was not long before the revolutionary socialism which underlay the movement gained the upper hand. This found. strongest expression in the address drawn up by Marx in 1871 after the suppression of the commune, and entitled Zhe Civil War in France. The International was not responsible for the revolt of the commune, which was a rising for the autonomy of Paris, supported chiefly by the lower classes. It was a protest against excessive centralization raised by the democracy of Paris, which has always been far in advance of the provinces, and which found itself in possession of arms after the siege of the town by the Germans. But, while it was prominently an assertion of local autonomy, it was also a revolt against the economic oppression of the moneyed classes, and thus contained within it strong socialistic tendencies. The socialists properly so called were only a small minority. In this address, however, Marx and his associates made themselves morally solidazre with the commune. They saw in it a great rising against the existing conditions of the Parisian proletariat, which only partially saw the way of deliverance, but was tired of oppression and full of just indignation against the tyrannous upper classes, that controlled the central government of France. This address, if it tended to increase the prestige of the International, greatly reduced 'its real influence. Its last meeting as controlled by Marx took place at The Hague in 1872. The chief himself was present, and succeeded in casting out the anarchist following of Bakunin; but it was the expiring effort. See INTER- NATIONAL.

This loss of influence by Marx was in the meantime more than compensated by his success in gaining control over the social democracy of Germany. Of the workmen's unions which had grown so rapidly in Germany in the years following 1860, and which had first been patronized by the Progressist party, some had attached themselves to the national socialism of Lassalle, but many held aloof from that movement, and under

the influence of Liebknecht and Bebel were gradually drawn over to the views of Marx. At Lassalle's death in 1864 his "general working-men's union of Germany " numbered only 4610 members. After losing its founder the union had a changeful and somewhat precarious career for a time; and it was only under the presidency of Von Schweitzer, which lasted for four years

The Inter national,

German } social de | mocracy |

peor 1 Sh ls mM

(1867-1871), that it began moderately to flourish, In the meantime the adverse party also made considerable progress. The confederation of German unions, which was founded in 1863, declared in 1865 for universal suffrage, pronounced against the Schulze-Delitzsch schemes in 1866, and in the congress at Nuremberg of 1868 by a large majority declared their adhesion to the International. In a great congress at Eisenach in 1869 they founded the "social democratic working-men's party," and in the same year sent repre- sentatives to the International congress at Basel. Great efforts were made for a fusion of the Eisenach and the Lassalle party, and this was effected in a congress at Gotha (May 1875). At this congress 25,000 regular members were represented, of whom 9000 belonged to the Marx party and 15,000 to that of Lassalle. The united body assumed the name of the "socialistic working-men's party of Germany," and drew up a programme, which, as the most important manifesto hitherto published by any socialist body, deserves to be given entire.

I. Labour is the source of all wealth and all culture, and as use- ful work in general is possible only through society, so to society—

pl: that is, to all its members—belongs the entire product of labour by an equal right, to each one according to his reasonable wants, —all

big- being bound to work.

In the existing society the instruments of labour are a monopoly of the capitalist class; the subjection of the working class thus arising is the cause of misery and servitude in every form.

The cmancipation of the working elass demands the transforma- tion of the instruments of labour into the common property of society and the co-operative control of the total labour, with application of the produet of labour to the common good, and just distribution of the same.

The emancipation of labour must be the work of the labouring elass, in contrast to which all other classes are only a reaetionary mass.

II. Proceeding from these prineiples, the socialistie working-men's party of Germany aims by all legal means at the establishment of the free state and the socialistic society, to destroy the iron law of wages by abolishing the system of wage-labour, to put a term to exploitation in every form, to remove all social and political in- equality.

The socialistie working-men's party of Germany, though working first of all within the national limits, is conseious of the inter- national character of the labour movement, and resolved to fulfil all duties which this imposes on the workmen, in order to realize the universal brotherhood of men.

In order to prepare thie way for the solution of the social question, the socialistic working-men's party of Germany demands the estab- lishment of socialistic productive assoeiations with state help under the democratic control of the labouring people. The productive associations are to be founded on such a seale both for industry and agriculture that out of them may develop the socialistic organi- zation of the total labour.

The socialistic working-men's party demands as bases of the state —(1) universal, equal, and direct right of electing and voting, with secret and obligatory voting, of all eitizens from twenty years of age for all elections and deliberations in the state and local bodies ; the day of cleetion or voting mst be a Sunday or holiday; (2) direet legislation by the people ; questions of war and peace to be decided by the people ; (3) universal military duty ; a people's army in place of the standing armies; (4) abolition of all excep- tional laws, especially as regards the press, unions, and meetings, and

generally of all laws which restrict freedom of thought and inquiry ; (5) administration of justice by the people ; free justice ; (6) universal and equal education by the state ; compulsory eduea- tion ; free education in all public places of instruction ; religion declared to be a private concern.

Within the existing society the socialistic working-men's party of Germany demands — (1) greatest possible extension of political rights and liberties in the sense of the above demands ; (2) a single fogressive income-tax for state and local purposes, instead of the existing taxes, and especially of the indireet taxes that oppress the people ; (3) unrestricted right of combination ; (4) a normal work- mg-day corresponding to the needs of society ; prohibition of Sun- day labour ; (5) prohibition of labour of ehildren, and of all women's Work injurious to health and morality ; (6) laws for the protection of the life and health of workmen ; sanitary control of workmen's

Wellings ; inspection of mines, of factories, workshops, and house- labonr, by offieials chosen by the workmen ; an effective employers' hability Act ; (7) regulation of prison labour ; (8) workmen's funds to be under the entire control of the workmen.

By this time the socialism of Germany began to be a

power, which was calculated to excite grave alarm among the ruling classes. The social democrats had returned five members to the North German diet in 1867. For the German diet in 1871 they had counted only 120,000 votes, and returned two members ; but in 1877 they had returned twelve members and polled nearly half a million. In Berlin the socialist voting strength had risen from 6695 in 1871 to 57,511 in 1878,—an increase which was all the more remarkable that Lassalle could hardly obtain a hear- ing in the capital when he commenced his career. A much more significant feature of the movement was the admirable state of organization to which the socialist propaganda had attained. A large number of skilful, intelligent, and ener- getic agitators spread their doctrines throughout Germany ; a whole machinery of newspapers, pamphlets, treatises, social gatherings, and even almanacs diffused the new creed. In all the great centres of population, in Berlin, Hamburg, and the industrial towns in Saxony and on the Rhine, the

socialists were rapidly tending to become the strongest party. The Government accordingly intervened with exceptional legislation, which in 1878 was carried during the excitement occasioned by the attempts on the emperor's life of Hédel and Nobeling. These exceptional laws, though administered with great rigour, have not by any means succeeded in arresting the progress of the move- ment, as at the election to the Reichstag in 1884 the socialists polled about 600,000 votes and returned twenty- four members. Berlin alone counted 68,000 socialist voters. In the last report relating to the anti-socialist law laid before the Reichstag (1885) the continued pro- gress of the party is admitted.

The participation of the Catholic Church of Germany in the social question dates from the period of the Lassalle agitation. In 1863 Déllinger recomniended that the church should intervene in the movement, and Bishop von Ketteler of Mainz lost no time in expressing sympathy with Lassalle. In a treatise entitled Die Arbeiterfrage und das Christenthum (1864) Ketteler criticizes the liberalism of the Manchester school in substantially the same terms as Lassalle, and recommends the voluntary formation of productive associations with capital supplied by the faith- ful. In 1868 the Catholic socialism of Germany took a more practical form: it started an organ of its own and began to organize unions for the elevation of the working men. 'The principles of the movement have been with some precision expounded by Canon Moufang in an elec- toral address at Mainz (1871), and by the writers in their organ. All agree in condemning the principles of liberal- ism, especially in its economic aspects, as destructive of society and pernicious to the working-man, who, under the pretence of freedom, is exposed to all the precariousness and anarchy of competition and sacrificed to the iron law of wages. Self-help as practised in the Schulze-Delitzsch schemes is also considered to be no sure way of deliverance. This general remedy is union on Catholic principles, especially the formation of trade guilds suited to modern exigencies, which some of their leaders would make a compulsory measure enforced by the state. The views of Moufang, which are most definite, may be thus summar- ized; legal protection for the workers, especially as regards hours of labour, wages, the labour of women and children, sanitation ; subventions for workmen's productive associa- tions; lightening of taxes on labour; control of the moneyed and speculating interests. In the organization of unions the

success of Catholic socialism has been great; and the social democrats admit that they can make no progress in Catholic districts where the church has developed its social activity.

The socialist activity of the Protestant Church of Germany Protestant The most important literary product of Socialism.

dates from 1878.

Catholie socialism

of Ger- many.

the movement is a work by Pastor Todt entitled Der radi- kale deutsche Socialismus und die christliche Gresellschaft. In this work Todt condemns the economics of liberalism as unchristian, and seeks to show that the ideals of liberty, equality, and fraternity are entirely Scriptural, as are also the socialist demands for the abolition of private property and of the wage system, that the labourer should have the full produce of his labour, and that labour should be associated. The chief leader of the movement is the court preacher Sticker, the head also of the anti-Semitic agitation, which is largely traceable to economic causes. Stocker founded two associations,—a central union for social reform, consisting of members of the middle classes inter- ested in the emancipation of labour, and a Christian social working-men's party. The former has had considerable success, especially among the Lutheran clergy. The move- ment has met with the most strenuous resistance from the social democratic party and has been greatly hampered by the anti-socialist law of 1878. State go- Little can here be said of the state socialism of Bismarck, cialism. —a very recent movement, which has not yet had time to pass into history. Its leading principles were announced in an imperial message to the Reichstag in November 1881. Besides the repressive measures necessary to restrain the excesses of the social democracy, the emperor declared that the healing of social evils was to be sought in positive measures for the good of the working man. The measures proposed were for the insurance of the workmen against accident, sickness, old age, and inability to work by ar- rangements under state control. "The

finding of the right ways and means for this state protection of the working man is a difficult task, but also one of the highest that concern every society standing on the ethical foundations of the Christian national life.” The message then proceeds to speak of measures for “organizing the life of the people in the form of corporative associations under the protection and furtherance of the state,”—a clause which might be taken as an admission of the collectivist principle. As yet the imperial programme has only been partially realized. It will be obvious that such measures can be rightly appreciated only with reference to the general theory and practice of Prussian government. Anarch- The acknowledged father of anarchism is PRoUDHON (g.%.)3 ism of but the doctrine owes its development chiefly to Russian Bakunin. thinkers who had been trained in the Hegelian left. The great apostle of the system in its advanced and most characteristic stage was Michael Bakunin, Bakunin was sprung from the highest Russian aristocracy, and was born at Torshok, in the government of Tver, in 1814. Leaving the army, in which he served for some time, he visited western Europe, chiefly Paris, where he met George Sand and Proudhon in 1847. For his share in the German disturbances of 1849 he was imprisoned in Russia for several years and then sent to Siberia, from which he escaped, and spent the rest of his life in exile in western Europe, principally in Switzerland. In 1869 he founded the Social Democratic Alliance, which, however, dissolved in the same year and entered the International. In 1870 he attempted a rising at Lyons on the principles afterwards exemplified by the Paris commune, At The Hague congress of the International in 1872 he was outvoted and expelled by the Marx party. Bakunin’s activity was most remarkable as an agitator. ‘The international socialism of the Romance countries, especially that of Spain and Italy, has been largely moulded by him. He died at Bern in 1876. Nothing can be clearer or more frank and comprehensive in its destructiveness than the socialism of Bakunin. It is revolutionary socialism based on materialism and aim- ing at the destruction of external authority by every

available means. He rejects all the ideal systems in every name and shape, from the idea of God downwards; and he rejects every form of external authority, whether emanating from the will of a sovereign or from universal

suffrage. “The liberty of man,” he says in his Diew e L’ Etat, “consists solely in this, that he obey the laws of nature, because he has himself recognized them as such, and not because they have been imposed upon him ex. ternally by any foreign will whatsoever, human or divine, collective or individual.” In this way will the whole problem of freedom be solved : that natural laws be ascer- tained by scientific discovery, and the knowledge of them be universally diffused among the masses. Natural laws being thus recognized by every man for himself, he cannot but obey them, for they are the laws also of his own nature ; and the need for political organization, adminic- tration, and legislation will at once disappear. Nor will he admit of any privileged position or class, for “it is the peculiarity of privilege and of every privileged position to kill the intellect and heart of man. The privileged man, whether he be privileged politically or economically, is a man depraved in intellect and heart.” “In a word, we object. to all legislation, all authority, and all influence, privileged, patented, official, and legal, even when it has proceeded from universal suffrage, convinced that it must always turn to the profit of a dominating and exploiting minority, against the interests of the immense majority enslaved.” The anarchy of Bakunin is therefore essen- tially the same as that of Proudhon, but expressed with- out paradox, and with a destructive revolutionary energy which has seldom been equalled in history. What they both contemplate is a condition of human enlightenment and self-control in which the individual shall be a law to himself, and in which all external authority shall be abolished as a despotic interference with personal freedom. It is an ideal to which the highest religion and philosophy look forward as the goal of man, not as one, however, which can be forthwith reached through the wholesale destruction of the present framework of society, but through a long process of ethical and social improvement. The error of the anarchists consists in their impatient i- sistence on this proclamation of absolute freedom in the present debased condition of the great mass of the people in every class. They insist on taking the last step in social development before they have quite taken the first. The other leading principles of anarchism will be best understood from the following extracts taken from the programme of the International Social Democratic Alliance. The Alliance demands above all things the definitive and complete abolition of classes, and political, economic, and social equality of individuals and sexes, and abolition of inheritance, so that in the future every man may enjoy a like share in the

produce of labour ; that land and soil, instruments of labour, and all other capital, becoming the common property of the whole society, may be used only by the workers, that is, by associations of cultivators and industrialists. It looks forward to the final solution of the social question through the universal and international solidarity of the workers of all countries, and condemns every policy grounded on so-called patriotism and national jealousy. It demands the universal federation of all local associations through the principle of freedom. Bakunin's methods of realizing his revolutionary pro gramme are not less frank and destructive than his principles. The revolutionist, as he would recommend him to be, is a consecrated man, who will allow no private interests or feelings, and no scruples of religion, patriot- ism, or morality, to turn him aside from his mission, the aim of which is by all available means to overturn the existing society. His work is merciless and universal

destruction. The future organization will doubtless pro- ceed out of the movement and life of the people, but it is the concern of coming generations. In the meantime all that Bakunin enables us to see as promise of future re- construction is the free federation of free associations,— associations of which we find the type in the Russian commune.

Bakunin, as we have seen, has had great influence on the socialism of the Romance countries. The important risings in Spain in 1873 were due to his activity ; and the socialism of Italy has been largely inspired by him. In those countries, as well as in France and French Switzer-

of Bakunin are still in vogue, and are advocated by men of mark in literature and science like Kropotkine and Elisée Reclus. The views of the propaganda which they repre- gent were most clearly and distinctly brought out during the great anarchist trial at Lyons in 1883. What they aim at is the most absolute freedom, the most complete satisfaction of human wants, without other limit than the impossibilities of nature and the wants of their neighbours equally worthy of respect. They object to all authority and all government on principle, and in all human rela- tions would in place of

legal and administrative control substitute free contract, perpetually subject to revision and cancelment. But, as no freedom is possible in a society where capital is monopolized by a diminishing minority, they believe that capital, the common inheritance of humanity, since it is the fruit of the co-operation of past and present generations, ought to be at the disposal of all, so that no man be excluded from it, and no man seize part of it to the detriment of the rest. In a word, they wish equality, equality of fact, as corollary or rather as primordial condition of freedom. From each one accord- ing to his faculties; to each one according to his needs. They demand bread for all, science for all, work for all ; for all, too, independence and justice. Even a government based on universal suffrage gives them no scope for effective action in the deliverance of the poor, as they maintain that of the eight million electors of France only some half a million are in a position to give a free vote. In sucha state of affairs, and in view of the continued misery and degradation of the proletariat, they proclaim the sacred right of insurrection as the wltima ratio servorum.

It is an interesting fact that socialism has taken its most aggressive form in that European country whose civilization is most recent. The revolutionary opinions of Russia are not the growth of the soil, and are not the natural and normal outcome of its own social development : they have been imported from abroad. Falling on youth- ful and enthusiastic temperaments which had not previously been inoculated with the principle of innovation, the new ideas have broken forth with an irrepressible and uncom- promising vigour which has astonished the older nations of Europe. Another peculiarity of the situation is that the Government is an autocracy served or controlled by a camarilla largely foreign both in origin and sympathy. In this case, then, we have a revolutionary party inspired by the socialism of western Europe fighting against a Govern- ment which is also in many ways an exotic and is not rooted in the mass of the people. The chief support of the Government is to be found in the reverence of the peasantry for the person and office of the czar, while the nihilists look upon the communal institutions of the country as their great ground of hope. Considered as a national movement, three distinct stages are recognized in the phenomena called Russian nihilism. In its first stage it was a speculative and anti-religious tendency, destructive of all orthodox tradition and

authority. It was the spirit of the Hegelian left frankly accepting the materialism of

Biichner and Moleschott as the final deliverance of philo- sophy ; and the time was the early years of Alexander IL, when the old despotic restraints were so largely removed,— a period of reform and innovation and comparative freedom. Jn a country where religion had little influence among the educated classes, and where philosophy was not a slow and gradual growth of the native mind, but a fashion imported from abroad, the most destructive materialism found an easy conquest. It was the prevalent form among the advanced thinkers; it was clear, simple, and thorough ; and it suited well the anti-religious mood of the time. By the side of this negative speculation, however, the Russian youth became aware of a new creed, destructive also in its beginnings, but full of the positive promise of future recon- struction and regeneration,—socialism. Here they saw the struggle of the proletariat, so terribly conspicuous in the Paris commune, which attracted universal attention in 1871, a proletariat represented in Russia by a nation of peasantry sunk in immemorial ignorance and wretched- ness, At this period hundreds of young Russians of both sexes were studying in western Europe, especially in Switzerland. In 1873 they were by an imperial ukaze recalled home, but they carried the new ideas with them. The period of speculation was succeeded by a period of socialist propaganda, which naturally met with implacable opposition and merciless repression from the Government. As they received no mercy, the nihilists determined to show none; and in 1878 began the terrible duel of the Russian revolutionists against the autocracy and its servants, which culminated in the violent death of Alexander II. in 1881. How far we are to regard the revolutionary movement of Russia as cognate in principle with anarchism is not easy to determine. In despotic countries, where consti- tutional reform and opposition to government are not tolerated, resolute innovators are naturally driven to secret conspiracy and to violent action. What distinguishes the Russian revolutionary party from other movements of a like nature is the intensity of the enthusiastic devotion and self- sacrifice with which they have braved death, imprisonment, exile, and privation in every form and the calculating skill with which they have called the

resources of modern chemistry to their aid. There is no doubt that the doctrines of men like Bakunin have had great influence on Russian socialism; but so have the writings of Marx, as also of J. 8. Mill and other advanced thinkers, who have no connexion with anarchism. It is certain that the leaders of the revolutionary party resorted to violent measures only after their peaceful propaganda was being ruthlessly suppressed. With regard to political reform many of their leaders have declared that they would be satisfied with constitutionalism. In the address sent to the emperor Alexander III. after the death of his father in March 1881, the executive committee of the revolu- tionary party offered to submit unconditionally to a national assembly duly elected by the people. In this recognition of constitutionalism, as well as in the strongly centralized organization of their executive, the Russian revolutionary party are essentially at variance with anarchism. In economics they advocate a thoroughgoing collectivism.

We have now given a brief outline of the various forms Classifi- of socialism as they have historically appeared. It may cation of

be useful to group them as accurately and clearly as possible. (1) Experiments in socialism conducted by private initia- tive, as carried on in the schools of Saint-Simon, Fourier, and Owen; not that they objected to state help, but that, in point of fact, their efforts were conducted by pri- vate means. (2) Productive associations with state help : the programme of economic change favoured by Louis Blanc and Lassalle. (3) The Marx school of socialism, scientific and revolutionary, beyond all comparison the most im- XXII. — 28

portant and most influential of all forms of socialism. (4) Anarchism. (5) Nihilism. (6) Christian socialism ; imasmuch as the various phases of Christian socialism condemn the principle of competition as operating in modern industry, and favour the organization of labour on united principles, and especially of productive associations with a common capital and an equitable system of distri- bution, they must be regarded as true forms of socialism. (7) To these should be added the speculative socialism of which Rodbertus is the most remarkable example ; recog- nizing the fundamental evils of the present system and agreeing with the Marx school in holding

that socialism is the next stage in social evolution, Rodbertus believed that the period of its realization is so remote that any decidedly practical effort towards that end is inapplicable ; hence he could only recommend transitional remedial measures, which will at least circumscribe the mischief inherent in the present economic order and also pave the way towards a better state. (8) And last of all may be added the various forms of state socialism, which are all examples of state action on behalf of the poor, especially of the use of the public resources for that purpose. The word "socialism" is very frequently used in this sense. As the continued use of the word in such a way is almost a certainty, this phase of the subject must be recognized here. It may be described as socialistic inasmuch as it fully admits the responsibility of society for all its members ; but in many respects its tendencies are opposed to true socialism. It is a vague movement which has not yet had time to take shape, and cannot be discussed here. "Socialism of the chair" has already been discussed under PorrricaL Economy, vol. xix. p. 393.

The above classification can of course pretend only to be a rough and general one. The various heads of the classification are not exclusive. The first variety has chiefly an historical interest. The American communities (dis- cussed under Communism) are really cases of the old crude communism. Productive associations with state help stand on the Gotha programme of the social democrats of Germany. They are recommended by Christian socialists, both Catholic and Protestant, and they form an important item in the programme of the "knights of labour" of America. The resemblance in type between the '"com- munity" of Owen, the phalange of Fourier, the mir or commune of Russia, and the free commune of Bakunin is apparent. It is the social unit as determined by obvious economic, local, and historical conditions, and in socialism naturally becomes the point of departure for a new con- struction of society. It will have been noted that most of the important phases of socialism have been and are international in sympathy and activity. The Marx so- cialism is spreading in nearly every country of the civilized world, the doctrine being diffused by energetic agitators, and not seldom by men of philosophic and literary culture. In late years this is true both of France and England. It is well known how active anarchism has been. The Christian socialist

movement is more or less operative in Belgium, France, Germany, Austria, and to some extent in England.

In this article our aim has been to give an expository and historical account of the various phases of socialism. It is impossible even to refer to all the different questions suggested in our sketch; and to discuss the relations of antagonism and affinity between socialism and the pre- vailing social and economic ideas and institutions would require a long and elaborate treatise. In the course of the article many obvious points of relationship, and parti- cularly of contrast, between socialism and political economy have presented themselves. All that we can now do is to emphasize a few of the more important of these. The

scope of the current political economy of Great Britain may be broadly defined as follows :—given the existing arrangements with regard to land, capital, and labour, to determine the economic phenomena and the economic laws that will prevail under a system of free individual competition. As we have abundantly seen, socialism is diametrically opposed to the permanent continuance of these arrangements. It looks forward to the time when the present system of individual property in land and

capital served by wage-labour will pass away, and when

free competition on that basis will cease with the system of which it is a part. It regards the present economic order with the laws and conditions peculiar to it as a pass- ing phase in the historic evolution of mankind, with no greater claim to permanence or finality than other historic eras which have had their day. What enlightened socialism above all demands is that an unprejudiced science should endeavour to distinguish between such economic laws as are permanently grounded in the nature of man and his en- vironment and such as have their validity only in the exist- ing economic order, between such as are enduringly founded on nature and such as are only the accidents or temporary manifestations of a changing civilization. Socialists appeal to history to prove that what the orthodox economy con- sidered the natural and normal order of things, with its dis-

tribution of wealth under the three categories of rent, profit, and wages, is really an exceptional phenomenon limited both in extent and duration. It is therefore an obvious error to speak of socialism as roundly controverting econo- mic law. It is no business of socialism to controvert a law grounded in nature, such as the physiological basis of the law of population; but it denies the applicability of the Malthusian precept under the present condition, when wealth is superabundant, but badly distributed owing to causes for which neither nature nor science, but human selfishness and ignorance are responsible. Nor does it lie in the principles of socialism to question the validity of those special economic laws that hold good under the present economic order. Some of these, such as the iron law of wages, socialism is disposed rather to accentuate unduly as a necessity of the present system. It is the aim of socialism to abolish the conditions under which such laws have their validity. Socialists object to the present economic order because of the necessity of results which are opposed to human wellbeing. They object entirely to the existing order with its distribution of the produce of labour into the three categories of rent, profit, and wages, because on it are founded class distinctions, with the consequent antagonism of classes, and the subjection and degradation of the lower classes,—holding that economic subjection involves all other forms of subjection and degradation. In short, scientific socialism as represented by Marx and Friedrich Engels appeals against the existing economic order, of which the orthodox political economy is an exposition and for which it is so frequently an apology, to the higher laws and principles of social evolu- tion as determined by the nature of man in relation to the environment in which he lives and develops.

There is no space here to trace historically the influence of political economy in the genesis of socialism, nor that of socialism on the recent political economy. It has natu- rally been the tendency of socialism to emphasize the idea of the worth and significance of labour, so prominent in the school of Adam Smith. This was one of the most valuable features of the Saint-Simon school, otherwise so much dis- figured with utopianism and extravagance. As we have seen, the socialism of Marx is in some of its most 1m- portant aspects a development of Ricardian principles. Turning to the influence of socialism on political economists, we need but refer to that exercised by French socialism

Relation to politi. cal eco- omy.

=

SOCIALISM

on J. 8. Mill, as described in his Autobiography. The economics of Germany has for the last fifteen years been most powerfully affected by the theories of Lassalle, Marx, and latterly also of Rodbertus. The causes which have produced socialism have also affected economics; but a large part of the change is due directly to the teaching of the socialists, especially of Marx, whose great work is re- cognized as of the first importance. Without commanding assent to its leading conclusions, socialism has given a new direction to most of the recent Continental research in political economy. The German “socialism of the chair,” the influence of which is by no means confined to the country that produced it, is sufficient evidence of this.

As we have already seen, Marx and his school accept in the completest form the doctrine of evolution, which they * learned first in Hegel, but finally hold as taught by Darwin; and, in common with most socialists, from Saint-Simon downwards, they recognize three stages in the economic development of society,—slavery, serfdom, and wage-labour, —which last they believe will be displaced by an era of associated labour with a collective capital. But how, it is asked, does this theory of socialism as the next goal of society consist with the Darwinian doctrine of the struggle for existence and the survival of the fittest? Is not com- petition, this bée noire of the socialists, simply the social and economic form of the struggle for existence? Is not competition, therefore, the very condition of social progress ? Is not socialism, therefore, inconsistent with progress? The question suggested is a large and complicated one, to which we cannot here pretend to give an exhaustive or determinate answer, but can only indicate some of the main lines of discussion. (1) In all periods of human development, and especially in its higher stages, progress consists most essentially in a growing social and ethical virtue and in the cultivation of the beautiful both in sentiment and art. With such an enlarging ideal of progress, how harmonize a system of competition like the present, by which millions in every great European country are effectively deprived of the means of development, and even of bare livelihood? The struggle for

existence has always been modified by social and ethical conditions. If it is to continue, as it will in various forms, it should be carried on under higher conditions, suitable to a higher and less animal stage in the evolution of man. (2) Human progress has undoubtedly been attained through struggle, especially through the struggle for existence; but the struggle has essentially been one of men united in society, of tribe against tribe, of city against city, of nation against nation, and race against race. Thus it is easy to exagger- ate unduly the importance of the struggle of the individual man. History has only too often seen the abnormal de- velopment of private selfishness, so overgrown as to weaken, and finally dissolve and overthrow, the society in which it acted, thereby accomplishing its own destruction. This is indeed the open secret of the ruin of most of the com- munities that have existed. In short, a happy and healthy individual development can be secured only through its due subordination to social virtue and the general welfare. Human progress has been by strong societies with a well- developed social and public virtue. The excessive develop- ment of “individualism” within a society has been its weakness and ruin. (3) While emphasizing the extreme inportance of the hereditary principle, especially as con- nected with the fundamental institution of the family, we should also recognize its tendency to abuse in perpetuating the enormous inequalities of property and condition, many of which originated in a less perfect system of society. The hereditary principle has indeed greatly contributed to the solidity and continuity of the social order; but it also Sives an exceptional advantage in the struggle for existence

to the privileged few. In this point, therefore, the present system does not best fulfil the requirements of the evolution theory as applied to society. The struggle is not one of merit. It is frequently one of merit against hereditary privilege ; not seldom it is one of privilege against privilege without regard to merit at all. (4) In considering the possibilities of human progress afforded by the present system of society in the light of the evolution theory, it is impossible to ignore the fact that the continuance of the race depends most on the less fit members of society, on the lower strata, which are thriftless, the worst fed, and worst educated. While the classes which are most in- telligent and endowed with self-control abstain

from marriage or defer it, those who have the lowest organiza- tion marry early and have large families. Even to per- petuate disease and deformity is not considered wrong. It may be that prohibitory and restrictive laws, even if passed, would prove inoperative and ineffectual in restrain- ing so many hasty and ill-considered unions that only serve to multiply misery and disease; but it is surely excusable at least to inquire whether this abuse of freedom could not be curtailed by strengthening the social union and increasing the pressure of the enlightenment and moral sense of the community. (5) Above all, as the tendency of the present order is to give the victory to cheapness, it may be asked whether competition,—the economic form of the struggle for existence—is really such a sure and potent element of progress, unless most powerfully counteracted by other principles? In short, history is the resultant of many complex forces, and it is easy to push too far the formule of any-system. It is out of the balance and harmony of many principles, of which the struggle for existence is but one, that human progress can proceed. (6) The main point is that in social evolution the widest phase of the struggle for existence is between forms of social organization. Hence the great question as regards socialism is whether it is the fittest form of social organ- ization for the time coming? Is it best adapted to carry forward and develop in wider and more adequate form the progressive life of the future ?

While many socialists have announced lax views regard- ing marriage and the family, it cannot in view of popular misunderstanding be sufficiently emphasized that the essence of socialism is an economic change. It enunciates no special doctrine on the relation of the sexes. In common with other social reformers, socialists generally advocate the equality of the sexes and the emancipation of women ; they object to the mercenary element so common in mar- riage ; and they abhor prostitution as one of the worst and vilest of existing evils, believing, moreover, that it is a necessary result of the present distinction of classes and of the unequal distribution of wealth. The views of the anarchists have already been noted. In the Marx school there is a tendency to denounce the legally binding con- tract in marriage. But such views all belong to the accidents of socialism.

So with regard to religion. Socialism has been and still is very frequently associated with irreligion and atheism. The same remark applies to

Continental liberalism, and partly for a like reason: the absolute Governments of the Continent have taken the existing forms of religion into their service and have repressed re- ligious freedom. On religion as on marriage socialism has no special teaching. While the anarchists of the school of Bakunin would overturn all forms of religion and reject the idea of God, the social democrats of Ger- many in their Gotha programme of 1875 declare religion to be a private concern. As we have seen, Christian socialism is a considerable force in many European coun- tries ; and in many of the other schools, especially that of

a

Marriage and family.

Religion.

In rela- tion to politics.

Conclu- sion.

with that of Christianity are unmistakable.

In their revolutionary impatience the anarchists have avowed their hostility to all the existing political forms except the free commune, which alone will be left standing amid the general wreck they contemplate. The Marx school, as represented by its ablest living exponent, Friedrich Engels, also look forward to a period in the evolution of society when the state will become superfluous, and, having no longer any function to perform, will die away. The state they regard as an exploiting institution, an organiza- tion of the ruling classes for retaining the workers in economic subjection. The International was an attempt to supersede the exploiting states by a combination of the workers of all countries without distinction of creed, colour, or nationality. When the workers in the name of the whole society seize political power and take over the con- trol of production, the rule of classes, their conflicts and the excesses of the struggle for existence among them, will cease. Instead of a government over persons we shall have an

administration of things and the control of pro- ductive processes. Obviously the Marx school reserve the realization of this idea till the evolution of society has prepared the way for it. In the conduct of the International they insisted on a strongly centralized form of organization as against the free federalism and the rejection of all authority maintained by Bakunin and his followers. This opposition between centralization and federalism does not concern us here ; it isa question common to theoretical and practical politics. It is necessary, however, to say a word about the opposition between the national tendency of the Lassalle school and the international socialism of Marx. As we have seen, a compromise was effected in the Gotha programme of 1875, in which the importance of the nation as an existing form of human society is amply recognized. The question is still discussed in the organs of the social democrats ; but the international tend- ency is decidedly the prevalent one. “ Want of patriotism ” is one of the current epithets of reproach cast at them. It is needless to point out that as most new movements of importance have been revolutionary, 80 also have they for good or evil been international. In becoming international the labour movement has only followed the example set by commerce, finance, diplomacy, religion, philosophy, art, music.

We have now reviewed the most important aspects of the socialist movement. As we have seen, socialism is a new form of social organization, based on a fundamental change in the economic order of society. Socialists believe that the present economic order, in which industry is carried on by private competitive capital, must and ought to pass away, and that the normal economic order of the future will be one with collective means of production and associated labour working for the general good. This principle of socialism is cardinal and fundamental. All the other theories so often connected with it and so im- portant in relation to religion, philosophy, marriage, patriotism, d&c., are with regard to socialism non-essential. Questions of method, though supremely important, must also be distinguished from the essential principle. At the same time it will be seen that an economic change, such as that contemplated in socialism, would most powerfully affect every other department of human life. Socialism, in short, means that in industry, in the economic arrange- ments of society, the collective or co-operative principle shall become normal or universal, that all who are able should contribute to the service of

society, and that all should share in the fruits of the associated labour according to some good and equitable principle. In such a condition of things the noblest field for ambition will be in the

Louis Blane, the kinship and even identity of ethical spirit

service of society,—an ideal which is already partially real- ized in the democratic state. It is in this fundamental sense that J. S. Mill declared himself a socialist.! It ig in this sense also that Albert Schiafile, one of the first living authorities on economics and sociology, has, after long years of study of the subject, come to the conclusion that “the future belongs to the purified socialism.”?

Scientific socialists strongly insist that this economic order of the future cannot be realized by utopian schemes or arbitrary legislation or mere revolutionary disturbance. Tf it come at all, it must come as the consummation of the dominant tendencies of modern social development ; it must be realized under the conditions prescribed by our nature and environment. In discussing the doctrines of Marx we stated that the central point of the question was

this—do the strongest forces of the social development of

our time really tend towards the superseding of the present economic order and towards the establishment of a new

and wider order based on collective capital and associated labour? Socialists maintain that they do, and that there is at present going forward a double process of dissolution and reconstruction,—the dissolution of individualism with a constructive tendency towards collectivism. From the socialist point of view the following may be signalized as indicative of such a process. | economic anarchy already explained in treating of Marx’s views. crises succeeding each other, resulting in stagnation and depression which now threaten to be chronic and permanent. While the productive forces of the world are enormously increasing, they only tend the more to intensify national and international competition, and to render labour super-

fluous, precarious, and dependent. Under this system the worker has neither freedom nor security. All this variety of symptoms are only a sign of the break-down of the present economic order both in principle and method. They are the necessary results of the competitive system, which has thus finally revealed its real nature and tendency, —economic and social anarchy. (2) The constant and inevi- table tendency towards concentration in industrial opera- tions, which began with the introduction of steam and of the factory system, through which the small producer has

(1) The tendency towards

Over the whole industrial world we see great

been superseded by the capitalist, the smaller capitalist by the larger. And now the single capitalist is being absorbed in the company, a growing proportion of the world's busi- ness being so large that only a great company can provide the requisite capital and organization ; whilst in the large companies there is a tendency, in case they cannot drive each other out of the field, to bring about a fusion of interests. In all this we see a great constructive process inevitably going on as the result of the inherent tendencies of industrial development. Thus the control of industry will be concentrated in a few colossal companies and their chiefs. It is obvious how this process could simplify the transference of the whole to a collective management by society. (3) This leads us toa third important point, the growing tendency towards state control of industry, and the growing sense of the responsibility of society for all its members, observable in German politics, not less than under the more democratic conditions of France and Eng- land. It is apparent how under this influence the existing state might absorb one by one all the large social functions, as has already happened with regard to education, means of communication, &c. Naturally this could be accom- plished only through a most comprehensive development of local and subordinate bodies of every kind. Socialism by no means implies that such an enormous burden of

1 See his Autobiography ; also his Pol. Economy, chapter on the

probable future of the labouring classes. 2 Bau und Leben, vol. ii. 120.

-

a an lls nly Be

SOC—SOC

work should be thrown on the central government. Most socialist schools have contemplated a vast increase of com- munal or local autonomy,—a course which, on the other hand, does not carry with it the subversion of the central government. (4) In England during the last half century we have seen a long succession of efforts, partially success- ful, towards a new organization of society rendered neces- sary by the changes due to the industrial revolution. In economics as in other spheres the watchword of the new era has been freedom, the removal of restraint. But it has been found that positive measures of reconstruction were also necessary. Factory legislation carried in oppo- sition to the prevailing economic theory, trades unions, employers' combinations, industrial partnerships, boards of conciliation, the co-operative system,—all these are real, if partial, endeavours towards a new organization of society suited to the new conditions. Socialism claims to be the comprehensive scheme of organization which embraces in a complete and consistent unity all these partial efforts. (5) But the great social force which is destined to work out the vast transformation consists of the human beings most directly interestedin the colossalstruggle,—the modern democracy. This democracy is marked by a combination of characteristics which are new to history. It is being educated and enlightened in the school and by the cheap press; it is being drilled and organized in large factories, in the national armies, by vast popular demonstrations, in the gigantic electoral struggles of the time. Thus it is becoming conscious of its enormous power, and able to make use of it. It is becoming conscious also of its unsatis- factory social and economic position. The democracy which has become the master-force of the civilized world are economically a mass of proletarians dependent on pre- carious wage-labour. Having transformed the political condition of things, they are ready now for an economic transformation. But the inevitable process of concentra- tion of industrial operations already referred to is entirely against the continuance or restoration of the small producer, whether workman or peasant proprietor. Such efforts of continuance or

restoration are reactionary; they are econo- mically unsound and must fail. Production and distribu-

SOCIETIES. Under Acaprmy will be found an ac- count of the various bodies of which that word forms part of the titles, usually denoting some kind of state support or patronage. The present article is restricted to scien- tific, archeological, and literary societies, chiefly those founded and carried on by private collective effort. Cer- tain academies omitted in the previous article are, how- ever, referred to. Governmental, collegiate, and univer- sity institutions do not come within our scope, neither as a rule do endowed societies, nor yet institutions which, although they bear the name, carry on no kind of joint literary or scientific work. With a few exceptions here and there, the societies mentioned are still flourishing.

In their modern form learned and literary societies have their origin in the Italian academies of the Renaissance ; but private scientific societies have arisen chiefly during the 19th century, being due to the necessity of increased organization of knowledge and the desire among scholars for 2 common ground to meet and compare results and collect facts for future generalization. These bodies rapidly tend to increase in number and to become more and more specialized. Many efforts have been made from time to time to tabulate and analyse the literature pub- lished in their proceedings, as, for instance, in the indexes of Reuss (1801-21) and the Royal Society (1867-79) for physics and natural science, and those of Walther (1845) and Koner (1852-56) for history. A further development

tion ever tend to larger dimensions. The only issue out of the present economic condition is concentrated collect- ive industry under the control of the new democracy and its chosen leaders. On the irresistible momentum of these two inevitable and ever-growing forees—the concen- tration of industry and the growth of the new democracy— socialism depends for the realization of its scheme of trans- formation.

Such are the tendencies to which philosophic socialists point as already working towards a transformation of society of the kind they expect. It is essentially a question of the future, with which we have no concern in this

article. Our duty has simply been to point out the forces which socialists believe to be actually at work for the realization of their theory of social organization ; and here we must leave the subject.

Literature.—The literature of socialism is enormous and rapidly growing ; besides those named under the special articles we now give a list of some of the leading works which are in whole or in part devoted to it :—Karl Marx, Das Kapital (1st vol., 3d ed., Ham- burg, 1883; 2d vol., Ist ed., Hamburg, 1885); Friedrich Engels, Eugen Dithring's Umwileung der Wissenschaft, a controversial work, but containing a remarkably clear and able exposition of the Marx position by its best living exponent (2d ed., Hottingen-Zurich, 1886) : Albert Schiffle, Bau wnd Leben des socialen Kérpers (Tiibingen, 1878 ; the third vol. of this work supersedes his Kapitalisimus und Social- ismus, Tiibingen, 1870), Quintessenz des Socialismus (7th ed., Gotha, 1879) ; Adolf Held, Sozialismus, Sozial-Demokratie, und Sozial- Politik (Leipsic, 1878) ; Von Sybel, Die Lehren des heutigen Social- tsmus und Communismus (Bonn, 1872); Lujo Brentano, Die christ- lich-soziale Bewegung tn England (Leipsic, 1883) ; Von Scheel, Die Theorie der sozialen Frage (Jena, 1871); Alphons Thun, Geschichte der revolutioniren Bewegungen in Russland (Leipsic, 1883); Rudolf Meyer, Der Emaneipations-kampf des vierten Standcs (2d ed., Berlin, 1882); Franz Mehring, Die Deutsche Socialdemokratie, thre Geschichte und thre Lchre (Bremen, 1879); Laveleye, Le Socialisme Contem- porain (2d ed., Paris, 1883); Paul Janet, Les Origines du Socialisme Contemporain (Paris, 1883) ; Paul Leroy- Beaulieu, Le Collectivisme (Paris, 1884); Le Procés des Anarehistes (Lyons, 1883); John Rae, Contemporary Socialism (London, 1884); Stepniak, Underground Russia (London, 1883); Hyndman, Historical Basis of Socialism in England (London, 1884), See also the relative chapters in Roscher's Grundlagen der Nationalékonomie; Adolf Wagner's Lehrbuch der politisehen Oekonomie (vol. i., Grundlegung, 2d ed., Leipsic, 1879) ; Mill's Political Keonomy and Autobiography ; and Sidgwick's Prin- ciples of Political Economy. (IU, Tika)

of the work done by societies was made in 1822, when, chiefly owing to Humboldt, the Gesellschaft deutscher Naturforscher und Aerze first met at Leipsic. This inau- guration of the system of national congresses was followed in 1831 by the British Association for the Advancement of

Science, which has served as the model for similar societies in France, America, and elsewhere. The merit of intro- ducing the idea of migratory congresses into France is due to the distinguished archeologist, M. Arcisse de Cau- mont (1802-73), who established the Association Normande, which since 1845 has held a reunion in one or other of the towns of the province for the discussion of matters relating to history, archeology, science, and agriculture, with local exhibitions. From the same initiation came the Congrés Archéologique de France (1834), which was organized by the Société Prancarse pour la Conservation des Monuments Historiques, the Congrés Scientifique, which held its first meeting at Caen in 1833 (directed by the Jnstitut des Provinces), and the Congrés des Sociétés Savantes des Départements, which for many years after 1850 held its annual sittings at Paris, The idea received the sanction of the French Government in 1861, when a Congrés des Socétés Savantes was first convoked at the Sorbonne by the minister of public instruction. In Italy Charles Bonaparte, prince of Canino, started an association with like objects, which held its first meeting at Pisa in 1839. Russia has had an itinerant gathering of naturalists since

1867. International meetings are a natural growth from congresses in which specialists of one country or speech are alone represented. Two remarkable examples of these cosmopolitan societies are the Congrés International Archéologie et Anthropologie Préhistoriques, founded at Spezzia in 1865, and the Congres International des Orientalistes (1873). Another step towards more com- plete organization was taken when the Smithsonian Insti- tution (Washington, U.S.) developed the admirable system of international exchanges of its publications, as well as of other works and specimens, among societies and indi- viduals. The Institution has agents in every part of the globe, and entertains relations with all the leading societies in the world. The International Scientific Bureau, a pri- vate enterprise, was established at Haarlem by Dr Van Baumhauer to facilitate the sending of parcels among so- cieties and scientific men in Holland. Since 1875 the French ministry of public instruction has organized a distribution of foreign publications among societies in France. In Eng- land local scientific societies are now officially represented at the meetings of the British Association. In 1883 rules were framed for the admission of corresponding

societies and for the institution of a conference of delegates to hold sittings contemporaneously with the annual meeting of the Association, for the purpose of discussing " propositions bearing on the promotion of more systematic observation and plans of operation, and of greater uniformity in the mode of publishing results," as well as for the consideration of "matters in which the co-operation of corresponding societies is desired." A committee was appointed in 1882 at the Montreal meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science "to confer with committees of foreign associations for the advancement of science with reference to an international convention of scientific associa- tions ;" and a fund for the purpose has been started.

It has been thought desirable to classify the societies treated of in the present article under the following head- ings, the first of which includes those of the widest scope, dealing with the whole range of natural history, or with archeology and literature as well as science :—I. science generally; II. mathematics ; III. astronomy ; TV. physics ; V. chemistry; VI. geology, mineralogy, and paleontology ; VII. meteorology; VIII. microscopy; IX. botany and horticulture; X. zoology; XI. anthropology; XII. sociology (embracing economic science, statistics, law, and educa- tion); XIII. medicine, surgery, &c.; XIV. engineering and architecture; XV. naval and military science; XVI. agri- culture and trades; XVII. literature, archeology, and history ; XVIII. geography.

I. SclENCE GENERALLY.

Unirep Kincpom.—First in antiquity and dignity among English societies comes the RovaL SocrEty (g.v.) of London, which dates from 1660. In 1683 William Molyneux, the author of The Case of Ireland Stated, exerted himself to form a society in Dublin after the pattern of that of London. In consequence of his efforts and labours the Dublin Philosophical Society was established in January 1684, with Sir William Petty as first president. The members subsequently acquired a botanic garden, a laboratory, and a museum, and placed themselves in communication with the Royal Society of London. Their meetings after 1686 were few and irregular, and came to an end at the commencement of hostilities between James II.and William III. The society was reorganized in 1693 at Trinity College, Dublin, where

meetings took place during several years. On 25th June 1731, chiefly owing to the exertions of Dr 8. M. Madden, the Dublin Socicty for Improving Husbandry, Manufac- turcs, and other Useful Arts came into existence. In January 1737 they commenced to publish the Dublin Society's Weekly Observa- tions, and in 1746 the society was placed on the civil establishment, with an allowance of £500 a year from the Government.

agriculture and manufactures were distributed by the society, which claims to be the oldest scientific body in the United Kingdom after the Royal Society of London. Ithas published Z'ransactions(1799- 1810); and its Proceedings (1764-75; 1848, &c.) and Journal (1858 &e.) are still issued. For the Royal Irish Academy, see AcADEMY.

The Royal Physical Society of Edinburgh was instituted in 1771 and incorporated in 1788 ; it is exclusively devoted to natural his- tory and the physical sciences. With it have been merged many other societies, such as the Chirurgo-Medical in 1796, the American Physical in 1796, the Hibernian Medical in 1799, the Chemical in 1803, the Natural History in 1812 (which brought in Brougham and Mackintosh), and the Didactic in 1818. It issues Proccedings (1858, &e.). From the Philosophical Society of Edinburgh (1739) was de- veloped the Royal Society of Edinburgh, whose charter is dated 29th March 1783. It was to comprise a physical and a literary class; among the members of the latter were Robertson, Hume, Burke, and Reid, and among those of the former Hutton, Black, Playfair, Dugald Stewart, and Watt. The literary division has been much less productive than the other. A second charter was obtained in 1811. The society has published Transactions (4to, 1788, &c.) and Proceedings (8vo, 1845, &c.).

The Linnean Society for the promotion of zoology and botany was founded in 1788 by Dr (afterwards Sir) J. E. Smith, in order to supplement the work of the Royal Society, and obtained a royal charter in 1802. The herbarium and collections of Linnzus, with the founder's additions, were purchased after his death. It re- moved from Sir Joseph Banks's old house in Soho Square to Bur- lington House (London) in 1857, and assumed the apartnients it now occupies in 1873. It has published Proceedings (1849,

&c.). The Journal (8vo, 1857, &c.) and the Transactions (4to, 1791, &c.) are divided into zoological and botanical sections. The Society for the Encouragement of Arts, Commerce, and Manufactures took its origin in 1753 from an academy established in the Strand by the landscape painter William Shipley. Attention was paid to the application of science to practical purposes, a subject passed over by the Royal Society. Exhibitions of pictures by native artists were held, and the first exhibition of the Royal Academy took place in its rooms. A fresh start in a new career was made by the Society of Arts in 1847, when it obtained a charter and the presidency of the Prince Consort. The International Exhibition of 1851 sprang from the smaller exhibitions previously held in its rooms. The East Indian gection dates from 1869, the foreign and colonial and the chemical sections from 1874. Its organs have been Transactions (1783-1849) and the Journal (1853, &c.). Sir Joseph Banks, Count Rumford, and other fellows of the Royal Society started the Royal Institution in 1799, when a site was purchased in Albemarle Street for “an establishment in London for diffusing the knowledge of useful mechanical improvements,” to ‘‘teach the application of science to the useful purposes of life.” The institution was incorporated in the following year. One of the most important epochs in the history of chemistry must be dated from the establishment of the laboratory where Davy and Faraday pursued their investigations. Belonging to the institution are foundations for professorships in natural philosophy, chemistry, and physiology. Courses of lectures on special subjects are given as well as discourses (once a week) of amore general and literary character. Its Jowrnal has been issued since 1802. The London Institution was established on a similar basis in 1805 and incorporated in1807. The building in Finsbury Circus was erected in 1819. The British Association for the Advancement of Science was instituted at York on 27th September 1831 in imita- tion of the itinerant scientific parliament held in Germany since 1822 (already referred to), and arose from a proposal by Sir D. Brewster. A mecting is held annually in one of the chief provincial towns of the United Kingdom. The object of the association is to promote science, to direct general attention to scientific matters, and to facilitate intercourse between scientific workers. Abstracts of the proceedings and reports of committees are published in the annual Report (1833, &c.). The Historical Society of Science (1841) printed a couple of volumes ; and the Ray Society (1844), instituted for the printing of original and scarce old works (38 vols. have

appeared) in zoology and botany, still flourishes. The Royal Colonial Institute was founded in 1868 and incorporated in 1882. It provides a place of meeting for gentlemen connected with the colonies and British India, undertakes investigations into subjects relating to the British empire, has established a museum and library; and gives lectures in its new building in Northumberland Avenue (London). It has published Proceedings since 1870. The Victoria Institute, or Philosophical Society of Great Britain, was founded in 1865 to form a connecting bond between men of seience and. others engaged in investigating important questions of philosophy and science, more especially those bearing upon the truths revealed in Holy Scripture. Its organ is the Journal (1867, &e.), The Balloon Society of Great Britain (1880) is not restricted to aero- nautics, but deals with recent discoveries and inventions, and science generally. The foundation in 1821 of the Socicty for the Encouragement of the Useful Arts in Scotland, now usually known as the Royal Scottish Socicty of Arts, for the promotion of the useful

POCIENRn@TIAS

arts and such branches of science as bear upon them was due to Sir D. Brewster, Sir J. Mackintosh, and others; it was incorporated in 1841, and has published Z'ransactions since that year.

The leading provincial societies of Great Britain of a general character are as follows. Aberdeen, Nat. Hist. Soc. (1863), Trans.; Phil. Soc. (1840). Alloa, Soc. of Nat. Hist. and Arch, (1863), Proc. (1865, &c.). Banffshire Field Club and Sc. Soc. (1880), Proc. Bath, Nat. Hist. and Antiq. Field Club (1866), Proc. (1867, &c.). Bedfordshire Nat. Hist. Soc. (1875), Trans. Belfast, Nat. Hist. and Phil, Soc. (1821), Proc. (1852, &¢.); Naturalists' Field Club (1863), Proc. (1875, &c.). Berwickshire Naturalists' Club (1831), Proc. (1834, &c.). Birkenhead, Lit. and Se. Soc. (1857). Birmingham, Nat. Hist. and Mier. Soc. (1858), Proc. (1869, &c.); Birmingham and Midland Institute Sc. Soc. (1870), Trans. of archeological sec- tion (1871, &¢c.); Phil. Soc. (1876), has a fund for promotion of original research, Proc.; Midland Union of Nat. Hist. Societies (1877), Midland Naturalist. Bolton, Lit. and Phil. Soc. (1871). Bradford, Phil. Soc. (1865), with various local societies affiliated to it. Brighton, Brighton and

Sussex Nat. Hist. Soc. (1854), Ann. Re- ports (1855, &c.). Bristol, Muscum and Library (formed by the amalgamation of the Institution for the Advancement of Sc., Lit., and the Fine Arts with the Lit. Soc., founded 1772); Naturalists' Soc. (1862), Proc. (1866, &e.). Burnley, Lit. and Se. Club (1873), Trans. Burton-on-Trent, Nat. Hist. and Arch. Soc. (1876). Cambridge, Phil. Soc. (1819 ; incorporated 1832), for the promotion of

hilosophy and natural science, owns museum and library, Proc. (1865, &c.), Trans. 1821, &e.). Cardiff, Naturalists' Soc. (1867), Trans. Chester, Soc. of Nat. Se. (1871), Proc. Cork, Royal Inst. (1807), library ; Cuvierian and Arch. Soc. (1836). Cornwall Royal Inst., at Truro (1818), devoted to natural philosophy, natural history, and antiquities, Jowrnal (1864, &c.); Royal Polytechnic Soc., at Falmouth (1833 ; founded by the daughters of R. W. Fox and others), for the encouragement of science and the fine and iudustrial arts, Trans. (1835, &c.). Cumberland Assoc. for the Advancement of Lit. and Sc. (1876), provides a means of union for the local scientific societies of Cumberland and Westmoreland, Trans. Derry Nat. Hist. and Phil. Soc. (1870). Devonshire Assoc. for the Advance- ment of Sc. (1862). Dorset Nat. Hist. and Antig. Club (1875). Dumfriesshire and Galloway Sc., Nat. Hist., and Antig. Soc. (1876), Trans. Dundee, Natu- ralists' Soc. (1873). Eastbourne, Nat. Hist. Soc. (1867), Proc. (1869, &¢.). East of Scotland Union of Naturalists' Societies (1884), Trans. Ebbw Vale, Lit. and Se. Inst. (1850), owns laboratory. Elgin, Elgin and Morayshire Lit. and Sc. Assoc. (1836). ssea Field Club (1880), at Buckhurst Hill, Trans. Exeter, Naturalists' Cluband Arch. Assoc. (1862). Glasgow, Phil. Soc. (1802), Proc. (1844, dsc.); Nat. Hist. Soc. (1851), Proc. (1868, &c.); Soc. of Field Naturalists (1872), Trans. (1872, &c.). Gloucester, Lit. and Sc. Assoc. (1838). Greenock, Phil. Soc. (1861). Hiali- fax, Phil. and Lit. Soc. (1830), muscum and library. Hereford, Woolhope Natu- ralists Field Club, Hereford Pomona and Trans. (1866, &c.). Hertfordshire Nat. Hist. Soc. and Field Club, formed in 1879 from the Watford Nat. Hist. Soc. (1875), Trans. High Wycombe, Nat. Hist. Soc. (1865), Magazine(1866, &c.). Hull, Lit. and Phil. Soc. (1822), Trans. (1824, &c.). Inverness, Sc. Soc. and Field Club (1875). Isle of Wight Phil. and Sc. Soc. (1850). Kent (East) Nat. Hist. Soc., at Canter- bury (1858), Trans. Leeds, Phil. and Lit. Soc. (1820); Naturalists' Club (1870), Trans. Leicester, Lit. and Phil. Soc. (1837), Trans. Lewes, Lewes and East Sussex Nat. Hist. Soc. (1864). Liverpool, Lit. and Phil. Soc.

(1812; united with Nat. Hist. Soc. in 1844), Proc. (1845, &c.); Philomathic Soc. (1825), Trans. ; Polytechnic Soc. (1838), Journal (1838, &c.); Naturalists' Field Club (1860). Manchester, Lit. and Phil. Soc. oe two sections, one physical and mathematical, the other for microscopy and natural history,—the original statements respecting the atomic theory were given by Dalton in the Memoirs (1789, &c.); Field Naturalists' and Arch. Soc. (1860), Trans.; Scientific Students Assoc. (1861). Montrose, Nat. Hist. and Antig. Soc. (1836), museum. Newbury, District Field Club (1870), Trans. (1871, &c.). Newcastle-on-Tyne, Lit. and Phil. Soc. (1793), library ; Northum- berland, Durham, and Newcastle Nat. Hist. Soc. (1829), a museum (opened in 1884), Trans. Norfolk, Norfolk and Norwich Naturalists' Soc. (1869), Trans. (1870, &c.). Nottingham, Lit. and Phil. Soc. (1864). Orkney Antig. and Nat. Hist. Soc. (1837), museum. Oxford, Ashmolean Soc. (1828), promotes all branches of practical knowledge. Paisley, Phil. Institutton (1808), free library and museum

fr Coats presented his observatory in 1882. Penzance, Nat. Hist. and Antiq.

Soc. (1839), museum, Proc. (1845, &.). Perth, Lit. and Antig. Soc. (1784) 3 Perth- shire Soc. of Nat. Sc. (1867), Proc. (1869, &c.), The Scottish Naturalist 1870, &c.). Plymouth, Plymouth Inst. and Devon and Cornwall Nat. Hist. Soc. (1812), museum, art gallery, and library. Richmond, Richmond and North Riding Naturalists' Field Club (1863), Trans. Ripon, Naturalists' Club and Sc. Assoc. (1882). Scar- borough, Phil. and Arch. Soc. (1831), museum and library. Severn Valley Natu- ralisis Field Club, at Bridgenorth (1863). Sheffield, Lt. and Phil. Soc. (1822). Shetland Lit. and Se. Soc., at Lerwick (1861). Shropshire and North Wales Nat. Hist. and Antig. Soc. (1885), at Shrewsbury. Somersetshire Arch. and Nat. Hist. Soc., at Taunton (1849), Proc. (1851, é&c.), Southampton, Hartley Institution (founded under bequest of H. R. Hartley in 1859, incorporated 1862), for the promotion of scientific, antiquarian, and Oriental studics and the fine arts, owns @museum and library. Staffordshire (North) Naturalists' Field Club and Arch. Soc. (founded as a natural history society in 1865; enlarged 1877), holds movable meetings. Stirling, Nat. Hist. and Arch. Soc. (1878), Trans. \Stock- port, Soc. of Naturalists (1884), Trans. Suffolk Inst. of Arch. and Nat. Hist. ' at Bury St Edmunds' (1848), Proc. (1848, &c.), The Hast Anglian (1859, &c.). Swansea, Royal Institution (founded 1835;

incorporated 1883), with a museum and library, promotes natural history and applied science, literature and fine arts, local history and antiquities. Tamworth, Nat. Hist., Geolog., and Antiq. Soc. (1871). Teign Naturalists' Field Club (1858). Torquay, Nat. Hist. Soc. (1844), museuin and library. Tweedside and Kelso Physical and Antig. Soc. (1834). Warrington, Lit. and Phil. Soc. (founded in 1870 upon the Micr. Soc.). Warwick- shire Nat. Hist. and Arch. Soc. (1836), has a library and geological museum ; vw arwickshire Field Club(1854). Whitby, Lit.and Phil.Soc.(1822), owns a museum. Wiltshire Arch, and Nat. Hist. Soc., at Devizes (1853), Wiltshire Magazine (1853, &c.). Windsor, Windsor and Eton Sc. Soc., Trans. Witney, Nat. Hist. and Lit, Soc. (1858). Yorkshire Phil. Soc. (1822), the museum in the grounds of St Mary's Abbey, York, contains a remarkable collection of Roman remains ; Geolog. and Polytechnic Soc. (1837), quarterly meetings in various Yorkshire towns; Natwralists' Union of the natural history and scieutific societies of the county (founded in 1861 as the West Riding Consolidated Naturalists' Soc. ; Teorganized in 1876), the Naturalist (1876, &c.)

Arrica: Cape Town, South Afr. Phil. Soc., Trans. (1878, &c.); Mauritius, Roy. Soc. of Arts and Sc., Proc. (1846, &c.) and Trans. (1848, &c.). Canapa: Iialifax, Nova Scotian Inst., Proc. (1863, &¢.; 1867, &c.). Montreal, Nat. Iist. Soc., Cana- dian Naturalist (1857, &c.). Ottawa, Lit. and Sc. Soc. Toronto, Canadian Inst., Canadian Journal (1852-76), Proc. (1879, &c.). Winnipeg, Hist. and Sc. Soc. WEST Ixpizs : Kingston, Roy. Soc. of Arts of Jamaica, Trans. (1854, &c.). Port of Spain, Se. Assoc. of Trinidad, Proc. (1866, &c.). AUSTRALIA and New ZEALAND ; Adelaide, Phil. Soc., Trans. (1865, &c.); South Australian Inst. (1836), library ; Roy. Soc. ofS. Australia. Auckland, Auckland Inst. Brisbane, Queensland Phil. Soc, Christchurch, Phil. Inst. Hobart Town, Roy. Soc. of Van Diemen's Land, Papers (1851, &.); Roy. Soc. of Tasmania, Monthly Notices (1869, &c.). Mel- bourne, Roy. Phil. Soc. of Victoria, Trans. (1855, &¢.); Nat. Hist. Soc.: Zoolog. and ae Soc., Proc. (1872). Sydney, Linnean Soc. of N. &. W., Proc. (1876, &c.); a Soc., Trans. (1862, &c.; 1866, &c.); Roy. Soc. of N. S. W., Trans. (1867,

¢), Wellington, New Zealand Inst., Trans. (1869, é&¢.).

Unitep States.—The first scientific society in the United States originated from a Proposal for Promoting Useful Knowledge among the British Plantations, issued by Dr Franklin in 1743, In the following year the American Philo- sophical Society was founded at Philadelphia, with Thomas Hopkinson as pre- sident and Franklin as secretary. With it was united on 2d January 1769 another Philadelphia society, The Junto (1758), the records of which have been preserved. The American Phtlosophical Society is still in vigorous life, and is an exclusively scientific body and the oldest organized society in the United States for the pursuit of philosophical investigation in its broadest sense. It publishes Transactions (4to, 1771, &c.) and Proceedings (Svo, 1840, &c.). Although not a society in the exact sense of the word, the Smithsonian Institution, the inost important scientific body in America, must not be overlooked. It was founded at Washington by James Lewis Macie, afterwards called Smithson, a natural son of Hugh Smithson, duke of Northuinberland. He died in 1829, leaving by will a sum of money which in 1838 amounted to over half a million dollars, ‘‘to found at Washington, under the name of the Smithsonian Institu- tion, an establishment for the increase and diffusion of knowledge among men.” The institution was established by Act of Congress in 1888. The endowment has now been increased to half as much again as the original bequest. ‘The National Museum, founded in 1842, the nucleus of which was the natural history collections brought home by the Wilkes and other exploring expeditions, was given into the custody of the Smithsonian Institution in 1858. It has since been largely increased and is now particularly rich in the ethnology, zoology, and mineralogy of the United States. The chief function of the institution is to assist scientific research and to act as an organized centre for the exchange of books and specimens with scientific bodies and individuals throughout the whole world. The Annual Reports date from 1846 (8vo, 1847, &c.), the Smith- sonian Contributions to Knowledge (4to) from 1848, and the Miscellaneous Collec- tions from 1856 (8vo, 1862, &c.). The Proceedings and Bulletin (1875, &c.) of the National Museum are issued under the authority of the Smithsonian Institu- tion, as well as the publications of the Bureau of Ethnology and the Bulletin of the Philosophical Society of Washington. Second in point of date comes the American Academy of Arts and Sciences

of Boston, incorporated in 1780 with the object of furthering the study of the antiquities and natural history of the country. Its Memoirs (4t0, 1785, &c.) and Proceedings (8vo, 1848, &c.) are still published. The Connecticut Academy of Arts and Sciences was incorporated at New Haven in 1799. At first only devoted to matters connected with the State of Connecticut, it now embraces the whole field of the sciences and useful arts. It has issued Memoirs (1810-16), and now publishes Transactions (1866, &c.). One of the leading societies in the United States, the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia, founded in 1812 and incorporated in 1817, possesses the best natural history library (35,000 vols.) in the country and one of the largest natural history museums in the world, being especially rich in conchology. It issues a Journal (1817, &c.) and Proceedings (1843, &c.). The American Entomo- logical Society is merged with it. The Franklin Institute of the same city, in- corporated in 1824, possesses a library, gives lectures, and issues a Journal (1826, Bos, The Boston Society of Natural History was founded upon the Linnean Society (1814) in 1830 and incorporated in 1831. It possessesa library and a cabinet of specimens. It published the Boston Journal of Natural History (8vo, 1837-63), followed by Memoirs (4to, 1866, &c.); Procecdings (1844, &c.) are also issued. The Lyceum of Natural History, New York, was incorporated in 1817 and has published Annals from 1823 (1824, &c.) and Proceedings (1870, &.). In 1876 the name was changed to New York Academy of Sciences. A number of American naturalists and geologists, having held meetings in various cities be- tween 1840 and 1847, resolved themselves at their Boston congress in the latter year into the American Association for the Advancement of Science, which was incorporated in 1874, Its object is ‘‘ by periodical and migratory meetings to promote intercourse between American scientists.” Ithas published Proceedings (1849, &c.). The National Academy of Science was incorporated at Washington in 1863 with a view to making the knowledge of specialists available for the service of Government. There are two classes of members, those in mathe- matics and physics and those in natural history. It has issued Annuals (Cambridge, 1865, &c.) and Reports, as well as Memoirs (1866, &c.). The Academies of Sciences at San Francisco (1853), St Louis (1856, incorporated 1857), Chicago (1857, incorporated 1865), and Davenport (1867) deserve special mention.

Among the remaining societies of a general scientific character are—Albany Inst. (1828), Trans. (1830, &c.), Proc. (1870, &c.). Ann Arbor, Se. Assoc, (1875). Baltimore, Maryland Acad. of Se. and Lit., Trans. (1837). Buffalo, Soc. of Nat. Se. (1861), Bulletin (1873, &c.). Charleston, Hlliot Soc. of Nat. Hist. (1853), Proc. (1855, &c.), Journal (4to, 1859, &e.). Cincinnati, Soc. of Nat. Hist. (1870), Proc. (1876, &c.). Cleveland, Acad. of Nat. Sc. (1852), Annals and Proc. Dubuque, Lowa Inst. of Sc. and Arts, Trans. Indianapolis, Acad. of Sc., Trans. (1872, &c.). Madison, Wisconsin Acad. of Sciences, Arts, and Letters (1870), Bulletin (1870, &c.), Trans. (1872, &c.). Minneapolis, Minnesota Acad. of Nat. Se. (1873), Bulletin. New Orleans, Acad. of Sc. (1853), Proc. Portland (Maine), Soc. of Nat. Hist. (1850), Proc. (1862, &c.). Poughkeepsie, Soc. of Nat. Hist. (1874), Proc. (1874, &c.; 1876, &c.). Rochester, Acad. of Nat. Sc. (1881). Salem (Mass.), Lissex County Nat. Hist. Soc. (1833 ; now merged in the Essex Institute), published the American Naturalist (1867-68), afterwards issued by the Peabody Acad. of Science, as well as Proc. (1856, &c.) and Bulletin (1869, &c.). Topeka, Kansas Acad. of Sc. (1867), holds meetings in various cities, Trans. (1872, &c.).

Francr.—The Institut de France (see INSTITUTE OF FRANCE), Which includes five separate acadeinies, stands at the head of all French societies. ‘The Société Philotechnique, founded in 1795 and recognized as of public usefulness by a de- cree of 11th May 1861, has for its object the encouragement and study of litera- ture, science, and the fine arts. Two public meetings are held annually. The Annuaire (1840, &c.) is its literary organ. The Société d’ Encouragement pour UIndustrie Nationale was founded in 1801 for the amelioration of all branches of French industry, and was recognized by the state in1824. Prizes and medals are Offered. It publishes a Bulletin. The Acudémie Nationale, Agricole, Manu- Jacturiére, Commerciale was founded by the duc de Montmorency in 1830, and also offers prizes and medals, and brings out a Bulletin (1830, &c.). The Asso- ciation Francaise pour PT Avancement des Sciences (1871), founded on the model of the British Association, holds migratory meetings and publishes Comptes Rendus. The scientific congresses whose origin was due to the initiation of M. A. de Caumont have been noticed at the beginning of the article.

The departmental societies are very numerous and active. The chief are the following. Abbeville, Soc. d'Emulation (1797), Mém. (1797, &c.). Agen, Soc. d' Agr., Sc., et Aris (1784), Recuetl (1804, &e.). Aix, Acad. des Sc., &c. (1829), based on Soc. des Amis de la Sc. (1808), Mém. (1819, &c.). Alais, Soc. Sc. et Litt. (1868), Bull. (1868, &e.). Amiens, Acad., based on Soc. Litt. (1746), Mém. (1835, &c.); Soc. Linnéenne (1838), Mém. (1866, &c.). Angers, Soc. Acad. de Maine et Lotre (1857), Mém. (1857, &c.); Soc. d'Agr., dc. (1818), Mém. (1881, &c.); Soc. Linn. de Af, et L. (1852), Annales (1853, &c.). Angouléme, Soc. d' Agr., &c., de la Charente (1803), Annales (1819, &e.). Annecy, Soc. Florimontane (1851), Annales (1851, &e.)and Rev. Savoisienne (1860, éc.). Apt, Soc. Litt., Sc., et Art. (1863), Annales (1865, &c.). Arras, Acad. (1738), Mém. (1818, &c.)and other publications. Autun, Soc. Eduenne (1836), Mém. (1837, &c.) and other publications. Auxerre, Soc. dcs Se. (1847), Bull. (1847, &c.). Bar-le-Duc, Soc. des Lettres, &c. (1870), Mém. (1871, &c.), Beauvais, Soc. Acad. (1847), Mém. (1847, &c.). Besancon, Acud. des Sc., &c. (1752; suppressed in 1793; re-established 1805), Séances publ. (1806, &c.); Soc. d' Emulation (1840), Mém. (1841, &e.). Béziers, Soc, Arch., Sc., &c. (1834),

(1845). Metz, Acad., based on Soc. des Lettres, &e. (1819), Mém. (1828, &c.); Soe.

a'Hist. Nat., Mém. (1848) and Bull. (1844, &c.). Nuremberg, Naturhist. Ges, (1801), Abhandl. (1852, &c.) ; German. Museum, Jahresber. (1854, &c.) and Anzeig. (1853, &c.). Pesth, Magyar Tudomdnyos Akademia or Hung. Acad. of Sciences

many publications; Kirdlyrt Magyar Természett. Tarsalat or R. Hung. Soc. of Nat. Sciences, many publications. Prague, K. Bohm. Ges., Abhandl. (1785, &c.) and Sitzungsber. (1859, &e.); Naturhist. Ver. Lotos, Lotos (1851, &c.). Pressburg

Ver. f. Naturk., Verhandl. (1856, &e.). Ratisbon, Zoolog. -mineralog. Ver. (1846, 7 since 1883 called Naturwiss. Ver.), Abhandl. (1849, &c.). Reichenbach (Voigtiand, Saxony), Ver. f. Naturk. (1859), Mittheil. Roveredo, Imp. Accad. (1750), Ath (1826, &c.). Strasburg, Soc. des Sc.

Agr. et Arts (1802), Mém. (1811, &c.) and Bull. (1843, &¢.). Stuttgart, Ver. f. vaterl. Naturk. (1822), Jahresber. (1850, &c.). Thorn

Copernicus Ver. (1839). Trieste, Soc. Adriatica, Boll. Ulm, Ver. f. Mathem. u Naturwiss., Verhandl. Vienna, K. Akad. d. Wiss., Denkschriften (1850, &e.), and Sitzungsber. (1848, &c.); K. k Zoolog.- Bot. Ges., Verhandl. (1851, &e.); Verein g. Verd. Naturwiss. Kentnisse, Schriften (1862, &c.). Wiesbaden, Nas- sawischer Ver. f. Naturk. (1829), Jahrbticher (1844, &e.). Zweibriicken, Naturhist. Ver. (1863), Jahresber. (1864, &C.).

SwiTZERLAND : Basel, Naturforsch. Ges., Ber. (1835, &¢.) and Verhandl. (1857, &e.). Bern, Naturforsch. Ges., Mittheil. (1844, &c.). Chur, Naturforsch. Ges., Jahresber. (1856, &c.). Geneva, Soc. de Phys. et @'Hist. Nat., Mém. (1821, &c.); Inst. des Sc., des Lettres, &c., Mém. and Bull. Wausanne, Soc. Vaudoise des Sc, Nat., Bull. (1842, &c.). Neuchatel, Soc. des Sc. Nat., Mém. (1835, &c.) and Bull. (844, &c.). St Gall, Naturwiss. Ges., Ber. (1860, &c.). Solothurn, Naturhist. Kantonal-Ges., Jahresber. (1825, &e.). Zurich, Naturforsch. Ges., Abhandl. (1761-66), Mitthetl. (1846, &e.), and Vierteljahrschr. (1856, &c.); Allg. Schweizer. Ges. f. d. Naturwiss., Verhandl., Aneeiger, and Denkschr. (1829, &c.).

Iraty: Congresso degli Scienziati Ttaliani, Atti (1844-45); Riwntone degli Se. Ttal., Atti (1839-47 ; 1873, &c.). Bologna, Accad. delle Sc. dell' Istit. di Bologna, Rendic. (1833, &¢c.), and Mem, (1850, &¢.). Brescia, Accad., afterwards Ateneo, Comment. (1808, &c.). Catania, Accad. Gioenia di Sc. Nat., Attt (1825, &c.). Florence, R. Museo dt Fis. e Stor. Nat., Annali (1808, &c.). Lucca, R. Accad. Lucchese, Atti (1821, &c.). Messina, R. Accad. Peloritana. Milan, Accad. Fis.- Med. Statist., Diario ed Atti (1846, &e.); RB. Istit. Lombardo, Mem. (1819, &e.), Giornale (1840, &c.), Atti (1860, &c.), and Rendic. (1864, &c.); Soc. Ital. delle Se. Nat., Atti (1860, &c) and Mem. (1865, &¢.). Modena, R. Accad. di Sc., &c., Mem. (1833, &¢.); Soc. Ital. delle Sc., Mem. (1782, &c.). Naples, R. Istit. d''Incoragg. alle Se. Nat., Atti (1811, &c.). Padua, R. Accad. di Se., Lett., ed Arti, Saggi (1786, &c.) and Revista (1851, &c.). Venice, RB. Istit. Veneto di Sc., &c., Attt (1841, &e.) and Mem. (1843, &c.).

Beucium: Brussels, Acad. Roy. des Sc., des Lettres, et des Beaux Arts founded by Maria Theresa in 1772; reorganized in 1845), Mém. (1818,

&c.), Bull. (1832, &e.), and Annuaire (1835, &e.); Soc. Roy. des Sc. Nat. et Méd. (1822), Journ. de Méd. (1848) and Journ. de Pharm. (1845, &c.) ; Soc. Roy. Linn. (1835), Bull. (1872, &e.). Liége, Soc. Roy. des Se. (1835), Mém. (1843, &c.). Mons, Soc. Prov. des Sc., &c., du Hainaut (1833), Mem. (1839, &c.).

Hortanp: Amsterdam, K. Nederlandsch Institwut, Proc.~~Verb. (1808, &¢.), Verhandel. (1812, &¢.), Tijdschrift (1847); Genootschap ter Bejord. der Natuur~~, &e., Kunde, Maanblad (1807, &c.) and Werken (1870, &c.); Hollandsche Maat- schappij, Werken (1810, &c.); K. Akad. van Wetensch., Verslagen (1853, &c.), Verhandel. (1854, &c.), and Jaarboek (1857, &e.). Arnheim, Natwurkundig Genoot- schap, Tijdschrift (1844, &.). Bois-le-Due, Provinc. Genootschap, Handelingen (1837, &c.). Groningen, Natuurk. Genootschap, Versl. (1862, &c.). Haarlem, Hollandsche Maatschappij der Wetensch., Verhandel. (1754, &c.). The Hague, K. Zoolog.~~Botanisch Genootschap, Versl. (1864, &c.). Luxembourg, Soc. des Se. Nat., Publ. (1853, &¢.). |Middelburg, Zeeuwsch Genootschap der Wetensch., Ver~~handel. (1769, &c.) and Archief (1856, &c.). Utrecht, Provinc. Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetensch., Verhandel. (1781, &c.) and Aanteekeningen (1845, &c.). Batavia: Bataviaasch Genootschap van Kunsten en Wetensch., Verhandel. (1779, &¢.), Tijdschrift (1852, &c.), and Notulen (1864, &e.); Natwurk. Vereeniging in Nederl. Indié, Tijdschrift (1850, &c.) and Verhandel. (1856, &c.).

DENMARK: Copenhagen, K. Danske Videnskabernes Selskab, based on Kjoben- hawnske Selskab (1743-1813), Skrifter (1781, &c.) and Afhandlinger (1824, &e.) ; Naturhist. Forening, Meddelelser (1849, &c.).

SwEDEN : Gottenburg, K. Vetenskaps och Vitterhets Saumhéille, Handlingar 1778, &c.). Stockholm, K. Svenska Vetenskaps Akademi, Handlingar (1740, &c.) and Arberdttelser (1820, &c.). Upsala, K. Vetenskaps Societeten, Acta (1720, &c.).

Norway: Christiania, Phystographiske Forening, Mag. for Natur-Vidensk. (1832, &e.); Videnskabs-Selskabet, Forhandl. (1859, &c.). Throndhjem, K. Norske Vidensk.-Selskab, Skrifter (1817, &c.).

Spain: Madrid, R. Acad. de Cien. Exactas, Fis., y Nat., Mem. (1850, &c.); Soc. Espafi. de Hist. Nat., Anales (1872, &c.). San Fernando, R. Acad., Mem.

Russa: Siczd Russkikh Yestestvoispytately (Meeting of Russ. Naturalists), first meeting at St Petersburg 1867-68, Trudy or Trans. (4to, 1868, &c.). Dorpat, Naturforsch. Ges., Sitzungsber. (1853, &c.) and Archiv (1854, &c.); Gelehrte Estnische Ges., Verhandl. (1846, &c.), Schriften (1863, &c.), and Sitzwngsber. (1866, &c.). Helsingfors, Soc. Scient. Fennica, Acta (1842, &c.). Kaminietz, Naturforsch. Ges. Kazan, Soc. of Naturalists at University, Protokoly (1870, &e.) and Trudy (1872, &c.). Kharkoff, Soc. of Scientists at Univ., Trudy (1870, &e.) and Protokoly (1870, &c.). Kieff, Soc. of Naturalists, Zapiski. Moscow, Imp. Soc. of the Friends of Nat. Hist., Anthrop., &c., Izviestiya or Bull. (1865, &c.) ; Soc. Imp. des Natura- listes, Mém. (4to, 1806) and Bull. (8vo, 1829, &e.). Odessa, Soc. of Naturalists of New Russia, Zapiskt (1872, &c.) and Protokoly (1874, &e.). Riga, Naturforsch. Ver., Corr.-Blatt (1846, &¢.) and Arbetten (1865, &c.). St Petersburg, Soc. of Naturalists, Trudy (1870, &¢.). Warsaw, Soc. of Friends of Sc., Rocentkt (1802-28).

Rovmanta: Bucharest, Soc. Acad. Romdnd, Annalile (1867, &c.). ’

CENTRAL and SouTaH AMERICA: Bogota, Soc. de Naturalistas Neo-Granadinos, Contribuciones (1860, &c.). Buenos Ayres, Soc. Cientifica Argentina. Caracas, Soc. de Ciencias, Boletin (1868, &¢.). Cordova, Acad. Nacion., Bol. (1874 &e.). Guatemala, Instit. Nac. Havana, Acad. de Cien., Anales (1864, &c.). Mexico, Soc. Méx. de Hist. Nat., La Natuwraleza (1869, &c.). Rio de Janeiro, Palestra Cient., Archivos (1858, &¢.). Santiago, Soc. de Hist. Nat.

Bull. (1836, &e.). Blois, Soc. des Se. et Lettres de Lotr-et-Cher (1832), Mem. (1833, &e.). Bordeaux, Acad. (17125 suppressed 1793; re-established 1816), Actes (1839, &c.) 5 Soc. Linn. (1818), Bull. (1826-29) and Actes (1838, &c.); Soc. des Sc. (1850), Mém. (1855, é&c.). Boulogne, Soc. Acad. (1863), Mem. (1864, &c.). Bourg, Soc. d’fmulation (1783), Comptes R. (1802-22) and Annales (1868, &c.). Bourges, Soc. Hist., &c., du Cher (1849), Mém. (1857, &c.). Caen, Acad. Nat. (1652), Mem. (1754-60 and 1822, &¢.); Soc. Linn. (1823), Mém. (1824, &c.), and Bull. (1855,

&¢.). Cambrai, Soc. d'Emvulation (1804), Mém. (1808, &c.). Cannes, Soc. des Se. (1868), Mém. (1869, &c.). Chambéry, Acad. (1819), Mém. (1825, &c.). Chateaudun, Soc. Dunoise (1864), Bull. (1864, &e.). Cherbourg, Soc. Acad. (1755), Mém. (1833, &e.) ; Soc. Nat. (1851), Mém. (1852, &e.). Clermont-Ferrand, Acad. (1747), Annales (1828, &c.) and Mem. (1859, é&c.). Dijon, Acad. (1740; suppressed 1793; re-established 1800), Mém. (1769, &¢.). Douai, Soc. d'Agr., &c., du Dép. du Nord (1799), Mém. (1826, é&c.). Draguinan, Soc. d'Etudes Sc. (1855), Bull. (1856, &c.). Dunkirk, Soc. Dunkerquoise (1851), Mem. (1853, &e.). Epinal, Soc. d@ Emulation. (1825), Annales (1831, &¢.). Evreux, Soc. Libre d'Agr., &c. (1807), Recueil (1830, &e.). Grenoble, Acad. Delphinale (1789), pased on Soc. Litt. (1772), Bull. (1846, &c.). Laon, Soc. Acad. (1850), Bull. (1852, é&c.). La Rochelle, Acad. (1732 ; suppressed 1791; reconstituted in 1803 as Lycée Rochelais and in 1853 under its former name), Annales (1854, &¢.). Le Havre, Soc. des Sc. et Arts (1868), Bull. (1868, &c.). Le Mans, Soc. d' Agr., &c., de la Sarthe (founded in 1761 ; reorganized on several occasions, and finally in 1839), Bull. (1833, &c.). Le Puy, Soc. d'Agr., Sc., &c. (1819), Annales (1826, &c.) and Bull. (1836, &c.). Lille, Soc. des Sc., &c. (founded 1802 as Soc. d' Amateurs), Mém. (1819, &c.). Limoges, Soc. d'Agr., Sc., &e., de la Haute- Vienne (1759), Bull. (1822, &c.). Lons-le-Saunier, Soc. d'Emulation du Jura (1817), Mém. (1818, &c.). Jayons, Acad. (1700), Mém. (1845, &¢.); Soc. d'Agr., Hist. Nat., &¢. (1761), Comptes R. (1806, &c.) and Mém. (1838, &e.); Soc. Linn. (1822), Annales (1836, &c.). Macon, Acad. (1805), Comptes R. (1818-47) and Annales (1853, &¢.). Marseilles, Acad. (1726; in 1766 called Soc. des 'Sciences; suppressed in 1793 ; re- organized in 1799, and finally in 1802), Recueil (1727-86) and Mém. (1803, &c.). Meanx, Soc. Libre d'Agr., Sc., &c. (1798 ; reorganized in 1820), Publ. (1833, &e.). Mende, Soc. d'Agr., &c., du Dép. de la Loztre (1819), Mém. (1827, &c.) and Bull. (1850, &¢.). Montbéliard, Soc. d' Em, (1852), Mém. (1852, &e.). Montpellier, Acad. (founded in 1706 as Soc. Royale ; suppressed in 1793 ; finally reorganized in 1846), Mém. (1846, &c.); Soc. d@Horticult., &e., de U' Hérault (1860), Annales (1860, &e.). Moulins, Soc. d'Hm. de U Allier (1846), Mém. et Bull. (1850, &c.). Nancy, Acad. de Stanislas (1750), Mém. (1754, &c.) ; Soc. des Sc. (1878), founded on Soc. des Se. Nat. de Strasbourg (1828), Mém. (1830, &c.) and Bull. 1866, &¢.). Nantes, Soc. 'Acad. de la Lotre Inf, (1848), founded in 1798 as Institut Déparimental, Annales (1830, &¢.). Nevers, Soc. Nivernaise

(1851), Bull. (1851, &c.). Nice, Soc. des Lettres, &c., des Alpes-Marit. (1861), Annales (1865, &c.). Nimes, Acad. du Gard (1682), Mém. Niort, Soc. de Statist. Sc., &c., des Deux-Sevres (1836), Mém. (1836, &c.) and Bull. (1852, &¢.). Orleans, Acad. de Sainte-Croix (1863), Lect. et Mém. (1865, &c.) ; Soc. d'Agr., Sc., &«. (1809), Bull. (1810-13), Ann. (1818-37), and Mém. (1887, &c.). Pau, Soc. des Sc., Lettres, &c. (1841), Bull. (1841, &c.). Périgueux, Soc. ad Agr., Sc., &e., de la Dordogne (1820), Annales (1840, &c.). Perpignan, Soc. Agr., &c., et Litt. des Pyrénées-Or. (1833), Bull. (1834, &e.). Poitiers, Soc. dAgr., Belles-Lettres, &e. (1789), Bull. (1818, &e.). Privas, Soc. des Sc. Nat. et Hist. (1861), Bull. (1861, &e.). Rheims, Acad. Nat. (1841), Séances (1844, &c.). Rochefort, Soc. ad' Agr., Belles-Lettres, &c. (1806), Travaua (1854, &e.). Rodez, Soc. des Lettres, Sc, &e., de ? Aveyron (1836), Mém. (1838, &c.) and Proces-Verb. (1864, &c.). Rouen, Acad. re Précis Analyt. (1744, &c.); Soc. des Amis des Sc. Nat. (1864), , Bull. (1865,

¢.). Saint-Brieuc, Soc. @km., Bull. et Mém. (1861, &c.). Saint-Etienne, Soc. d' Agr., &c., de la Loire (1856), Bull. Saint-Jean d'Angély, Soc. Hist. et Sc. (1863), Bull. (1863, &c.). Saint-Quentin, Soc. Acad. (1825), Mém. (1830, &c.). Semur, Soc. des Sc. Hist. et Nat. (1842), Bull. (1864, &c.). Soissons, Soc. Arch., Hist., et Sc. (1846), Mém. (1847, &c.). Tarbes, Soc. Acad. des Hautes-Pyrénées (1853), Bull. (1854, &e.). Toulon, Soc. Acad. du Var (1811), Mém. (1832, &c.). Toulouse, Acad. (founded in 1640; known to 1704.as Soc. des Lanternistes and by other names to 1807, when present title was acquired), Hist. et Mém (1782-90) and Mém. (1827, &¢.); Soc. d' Hist. Nat. (1866), Bull. (1867, &c.); Soc. des Sc. (1872), Bull. (1872, &e.). Tours, Soc. d'Agr., &¢., d' Indre-et-Lotre (founded in 1761 as Soc. Roy. ad Agr.), Recueil (1763 and 1803-10) and Annales (1821, &e.). Troyes, Soc. Acad., based on Soc. Acad. de VAube (1801), Mém. (1801, &c.). Valenciennes, Soc. d'Agr., Sc., et Arts (1831), Mém. (1833, &c.; 1865, &e.) and Revue Agricole (1849, &e.) Vannes, Soc. Polymathique du Morbihan (1826), Comptes R. (1827, &c.) and Bull. (1857, &e.). Vendome, Soc. Arch., Se., et Litt. (1862), Bull. (1862, &c.). Verdun, Soc. Philomath. (1822), Mém. (1840). Versailles, Soc. d' Agr. et des Arts (1798), Mém. (1799-1864) and Bull. (1866, d&e.); Soc. des Sc. Nat. et Méd. (1832), Mem. (1835, &e.). Vesoul, Soc. d'Agr., &c., de la Haute-Sadne (1801; reorganized in 1819 and 1832), Recueil Agronom. (1836, &e.), Mém.

(1859, &¢.), and Bull. (1869, &c.). Vitry-le-Frangois, Soc. des Sc. et Arts (1861), Bull. (1867, &c.).

Germany and Avsrria-HunecaRy: Agram, Jugo-slavenska Akademija or South Slav. Acad. (1866), various publications. Altenburg, Naturforsch. Ges. d. Osterlandes (1817), Mittheil. Augsburg, Naturforsch. Ver. (1846), Ber. (1848, &c.). Bamberg, Naturforsch. Ges. (1834), Ber. (1852, &c.). Berlin, Ges. naturf. Freunde (1773), Sitzungsber. (1862, &c.). Blankenburg, Naturwiss. Ver. des Harzes (1831), Ber. (1841, &¢.). Bonn, Naturh. – Verein (1843), Verhandl. (1844, &c.); Gorres Ges. (1876), Hist. Jahrbtich. (1880, &e.); Niederrhein. Ges. (1818 ; reorganized 1839). Bremen, Naturwiss. Ver. (1864), Abhandl. (1868, &c.). Breslau, Schles. Ges. f. vaterl. Kultur (1803), Jahresber. (1804, &c.). Briinn, K. k. Mdhr.-Schles. Ges., Mitthetl. (1821, &c.). Cassel, Ver. f, Naturkunde, Jahresber. (1837, &c.). Colmar, Soc. d'Hist. Nat. (1859), Bull. (1860, &e.). Cracow, Towarzystwo Naukowe, afterwards Akademija Umiejetnosci or Acad. of Science, many publications. Dantzic, Naturforsch. Ges., Versuche (1745-57) and Schriften (1820, &c.); Bot.~~Zoolog. Ver. (1878). Donaueschingen, Ver. f. Gesch. u. Naturgesch. (1801), Schrifien. Dresden, Naturwiss. Ges. Ists (1833), Sitzungsber. (1861, &c.); Ges. f. Natur~~ w. Heil-Kunde (1818), Jahresber. (1848, &c.); Ges. f- Botanik u. Zoologie, Nunquam Otiosus (1870, &c.). Diirkheim, Pollichia, Naturwiss. Ver., Jahresber. (1843, &c.). Elberfeld, Naturwiss. Ver., Jahresber. (1851, &c.). Emden, Naturforsch. Ges. (1814), Jahresber. (1837, &c.). Frankfort, Seckenbergische naturforsch. Ges., Museum (1834-35) and Abhandl. (1854, &c.). Freiburg (in Baden), Naturforsch. Ges. (1821), Ber. (1858, &e.). Fulda, Ver. f. Naturkunde (1865), Ber. (1870, &c.). Giessen, Oberhess. Ges. f. Natur- und Heil-Kunde, Ber. (1847, &¢.). Gorlitz, Ober- lausitzer Ges. d. Wiss. (1779), Magazin ; Naturforsch. Ges., Abhandl. (1827, é&c.). Gorz, Soc. Imp. Reale, Mem. Gottingen, K. Ges. d. Wissensch., Anzeiger (1739, &¢c.), Abhandl. (1845, &c.), and Nachr. (1845, &.). _ Gratz, Naturwiss. Ver., Miitheil. (1863, &c.). Greifswald, Naturwiss. Ver. von Neu-Vorpommern, Mittheil. (1869, &c.). Halle, Naturf. Ges. (1779), Abhandl. (1853, &c.); Naturwiss. Ver., Zeitschrift (1853, &c.). Hamburg, Naturwiss. Ver., Abhandl. (1846, &c.). Hanau, Wetterauische Ges. (1808), Jahresber. (1852, &c.). Heidelberg, Naturhist.~~Med. Ver., Verhandl. (1857, &c.). Hermannstadt, Siebenbiirgisch. med. Ver. f. Natur~~ wiss., Verhandl. (1849, &c.). Innsbruck,

Ferdinandewm, Bettrdge (1825-34) and Neue Zeitschrift (1835, &c.). Jena, K. Leopold.-Carol. Akad., Athenxum (1875, &c.); K. Leopold.-Carol. D. Akad. d. Naturf., Leopoldina (1859, &c.); Med.~~natur~~ wiss. Ges., Jen. Zettschr. (1864, &c.). Karlsruhe, Naturwiss. Ver., Verhandl. (1864, &c.). Klausenburg, Siebendurg. Museum, Annalen. Leipsic, K. Stichs. Ges. d. Wiss., Ber. (1846, &c.) and Abhandl. (1850, &c.). Lemberg, Ges. v. Galizien, Ber. Liineburg, Naturwiss. Ver., Jahresber. (1852, &e.). Magdeburg, Naturwiss. Ver., Abhandl. 1869, &c.). Mainz, Rhein. naturforsch. Ges. (1834). Mannheim, Ver. f. Naturk., Jahresber. (1834, &c.). Marburg, Ges. f. d. Gesch. naturwiss., Schriften (1823, &c.) and Stizungsber. (1866, &c.). Meissen, Ver. f. Erdk. Isis

JI. MATHEMATICS.

Many of the general scientific societics (see class i.) have mathematical and other special sections. Among defunct English societies may be mentione the Mathematical Society, which used to meet in Spitalfields (1717-1845) and possessed a library, and the Cambridge Analytical Society, which published Memoirs (4to, 1813). The London Mathematical Soctety, Proc. (1865, &c.), and the Edinburgh Mathematical Society (1883), Proc. (1883, &c.), are still flourishing,

FRANCE: Paris, Soc. Mathém. de France (1872), Bull. (1873, &c.). GERMANY « Berlin, Mathem. Ver. der Univ. (1861), Ber. (876, &c.). Cassel, Geometer-Ver. (1878). Dresden, Ver. praktisch. Geometer (1854), Jahresber. (1861, &e.). Essen, Feldmesser-Ver. (1869). Frankfort, Phys. Ver. (1824). Gottingen, Mathemat. Ver. (1868). Hamburg, Mathemat. Ges. (1690), Mittheil. Konigsberg, Geometer-Ver- (1872). Strasburg, Geometer-Ver. (881). Stuttgart, Deutscher Geometer-Ver., Zeitschrift (1872, &c.). HOLLAND: Amsterdam, Genootschap der Mathemat. Wetensch. Kunstoefinengen (1782-88), Mengelwerken (1793-1816), and Archief' (1856, &e.). Sparn: Valladolid, R. Acad. de Matematicas (1803, &e.), now dissolve Russia: Moscow, Mathemat. Soc. Japan: Mathemat. Soc. of Tokio, Journa (1878, &¢.).

SOCIETIES

If]. Astronomy.

Astronomical observatorics and their publications have been already treated and enumerated in the article OpseRvaTory. The Royal Astronomical Soctety was founded in 1820 under the title of Astronomical Society of London, and was incorporated on 7th March 1831. It occupies rooms in Burlington House, and has published Memoirs (1822, &c.) and Monthly Notices (1831, &c.). There are also societies at Bristol (1869), Reports; Liverpool (1881); and Leipsic, Astrono- mische Ges. (1863), Publ. (1865, &c.) and Vierteljahrsschrift (1866, &c.).

IV. Puysics,

The Physical Soctety of London was founded in 1874 and registered under the Companies Act ; it has published Proceedings (1874, &c.). The London Electrical Society (1836), did useful work in its Transactions (1837-40, vol. i.) and Proceedings (1841-43). Sir W. Siemens was one of the originators of the Society of Telegraph Engineers and Electricians, which was founded in 1871 and registered in 1883. It owns the Ronalds library of electricity and magnetism and publishes a Journal.

Unitep States: Chicago, Amer. Electrical Soc., Journ. (1875). New York, National Telegr. Union, Telegrapher (1864-70). FRanceE: Cambrai, Soc. Mag- nétique, Archives (1845). Paris, Soc. Frang. de Phys. (recognized as of public utility on 15th January 1881), Bull. Germany: Berlin, Physikalische Ges. (1843), Fortschritte der Physik (1847, &c.); Elektrotechnisch. Ver. (1877), Ztschr. (1880, &e.). Breslau, Physikalischer Ver. Frankfort, Physikalischer Ver., Jahresber. Iraty: Naples, Rk. Accad. delle Sc. Fis. e Matem., Rendic. (1856, &c.) and Atti (1863). Rome, Soc. degli Spettroscopisti Ital. Hottann: Rotterdam, Bataa/sch. Genootschap van Proefondervindelijke Wijsbegeerte, Verhandel. (1774, &€¢.).

Y. CHEMISTRY.

Pharmaceutical socicties are placed in class xiii. (Medicine, &c.). The Chemical Society of London for the promotion of chemistry and the sciences immediately connectcd with it was instituted on 23d February 1841; a charter of incorporation was obtained in 1848. It publishes Memoirs (1843, &c.) and Quarterly Journal (1849, &c.). Chemistry and its connexion with the arts, and agricultural and technical matters, form the subjects of the

Institute of Chemistry, founded on 2d September 1877 and incorporated on 2d October 1877. The Soctety of Chemical Industry (1881) is specially devoted to the branch of chemical engineers. The Society of Public Analysts publishes the Analyst (1876, &c.). The oldest of the numerous photographic societies is the Photographic Society of Great Britain (1853), which issues a Journal. The Royal College of Chemistry was founded in July 1845, and had a brief career; it published Reports (1849). The Cavendish Society was instituted in 1846 for the publica- tion and translation of works and papers on chemistry. It came to an end in 1872 after having issued 30 vols.

Unitep States: New York, American Chemical Soc. (1876), Proc, (1876) and Journ. (1879, &c.), FRANCE: Paris, Soc. Chimique, Bull. (1858, &c.), GERMANY! Berlin, Deutsche Chemische Ges. (1867), Ber. (1868, &c.). Frankfort, Chem. Ges. Jena, Chem. Laborat. Wiirzburg, Chemische Ges. (1872). Bonemra: Prague, Spolek Chemiku Ceskych or Soc. of Bohemian Chemists, Zpravy or Trans. (1872, – a St Petersburg, Russ. Chem. and Phys. Soc. at Univ., Journal 1869, &c.).

VI. GroLooy, MiNERALOGY, AND PALAONTOLOOY.

Among these the Geological Society of London, founded in 1807 and incorporated in 1826, is the largest and most important; it has Paisned Proccedings (1834- 46), Transactions (1811, &c.), and a Quarterly Journal (1845, &c.). The Geologists' Association was instituted in 1858, and issues Proceedings (1859, &c.). The Mineralogical Society (1876) has united with it the Crystallogical Society; it issues the Mineralogical Magazine (1876, &c.). The Palewontographical Society was founded in 1847 for the delineation and description of British fossils ; it issues Publications (39 vols. 4to, 1847, &c.). The Cornwall Royal Geological Society (1814) devotes special attention to the mining interests of the county, and publishes Lransactions (1818, &c.). Itholds its meetings at Penzance. In Scotland there are the Geological Society of Edinburgh (1834), which has Transactions (1870, &c.), and the Glasgow Geological Society (1858), which also has Transactions (1860, &e.). The Royal Geological Society of Ireland (1832) is chiefly directed to the geology of the country. It publishes a Jowrnal (1837, &c.). There are also the Geological Associations of Leeds

(1874) and Liverpool (1880), Trans., the Societies of Liverpool (1859), Proc., Manchester (1838), T'rans., and Norwich (1864), Proc., and the Yorkshire Geological and Technological Society, Proc. (1839, &c.).

Unirep Srares: Louisville, Ky., Ohio Falls Geolog. Soc. San Francisco, California State Geolog. Soc. (1876). FRAaNcE: Lille, Soc. Géol. du Nord (1870), Annales (1874, &e.). Havre, Soc. Géol. de Normandie, Bull. (1873, &c.). Paris, Soc. Géol. de France (1830, recognized 1882), awards the Prix Viquesnel (£40) every three years, Bull. (1830, &c.) and Mém. (1833, &¢.); Soc. Frang. de Minér- alogie (recognized 1886), formerly Soc. Minéral. de France, Bull. Saint-Etienne, Soc. d Ind. Minérale (1855), Bull. (1855, &c.). Germany and AusTRIA-HUNOARY ! Berlin, Deutsche Geol. Ges. (1848), Ztschr. (1849, &e.). Briinn, Wernerscher Geol. Ver., Jahresber. Darmstadt, Mittelrheinischer Geol. Ver. (1851), Mittheil (1855, &c.). Dresden, Gebirgs-Ver. (1855). Pesth, Geol. Ver. f Ungarn, SwitTzERLAND: Schweizerische Geol. Ges. (1882), section of Allg. Schw. Ges. Znrich, Schweiz. Paldontol. Ges. (1874), Abhandl. (1875, &e.). Itary: Soc. Geol. Ital., founded at the second International Geological Congress. Brxcium: Antwerp, Soc. Paléontol. (1857), Bull. Charleroi, Soc. Paléontol. (1863), Documents et Rapports (1866, &¢.). Liége, Soc. Géol. de Belgique, Annales (1874, &c.). Swepen: Stock- holm, Geologiska Forening, Férhandlingar (1872, &c.). Russia: St Petersburg, Imp. Russian Mineralog. Soc., Trans. (1830, &¢.). ARGENTINE REPUBLIC: Buenos Ayres, Soc. Paleontol.

VII. MetTEoro.oey.

The International Meteorological Congress first met at Vienna in 1873. The Royal Metcorological Society (1850) of London was incorporated in 1866 ; its organ 18 Quarterly Journal (1873, &e.). To this must be added the British Rainfall Society and the Scottish Meteorological Society, which holds its Ineetings at Edin- burgh and issues a Journal (1866, &c.). Port Louis (Mauritius), Metcorolog. Soc., Trans. (1853, &c.). Paris, Soc. Météorolog. de France, Annuaire (1849, &c.) and Nouvelles Mééorolog. (1868, &c.). Hamburg, Deutsche Meteorolog. Ges. (1883), Zischr. Magdeburg, Ver. f landwirthsch. Wetterkunde (1881). Meissen,

Gesellsch. Isis. Vienna Ocsterreich. Ges. f. Meteorol., Zeitschrift (1866, &c.). Modena, Soe, Meteorolog. Ital. 5 : a j

VIII. Microscopy.

The Royal Microscopical Society (1839, incorporated 1866), with Transactions Sey) and Journal (1869, &c.); the Quckett Microscopical Club (1865), with a Journal (1868, &c.); and the Postal M icroscopic Society (1873), also with a Journal, are located inLondon. There are suburban societies at Ealing (1877), Hackney a, Highbury (1878), South London (1871), and Sydenham (1871). Amongst

ose in the provinces nay be mentioned the ones at Bath (1859), Birminghain eo) Bolton (1877), Bradford (1882), Bristol (1843), Carlisle, Chichester (Trans.), wo (1870, Trans.), Dublin (1840), East Kent (1858), Liverpool (1868, Trans.), ot (1880), New Cross (1872), and Sheffield (1877). Inthe United States

e State Microscop. Soc. of Illinois publishes the Lens (1872, &c.); Buffalo, Amer.

225

Soe. of Microscopists; New York, Microscop. Soc. Brussels, Soc. Belge de Micro- scop. (1875), Proc.~~Verb. (1875, &c.) and Annales (1876, &c.). Berlin, Ges. f. Mikro~~ skop. (1877), Ztschr. (1878, &¢.). Hanover, Ges. f. Mikroskop. (1879), Jahresber,

IX. Borany anp HortTIcULTURE.

Linnzan societies, which usually deal with both zoology and botany, are placed in the general class (No. i.). The Congrés International d' Horticulture first met at Brussels in 1864 and the Congrés International de Botanique at Amsterdam in 1865. The Royal Botanic Society of London (incorporated 1839) has gardens in the inner circle of Regent's Park, and issues a Quarterly Record (1880, &¢.). The Royal Horticultural Society (established in 1804, incorporated in 1809) has gardens at Chiswick, and publishes a Journal (1846, &e.). The chief pro- vincial societies are—Aberdeen, North of Scotl. Hortic, Assoc. (1879), Trans. Ar- broath, Hortic. Assoc. (1880). Birmingham, Bot. and Hortic. Soc. (1830), gardens. Dublin, Roy. Hortic. Soc. (1830). Edinburgh, Bot. Soc. (1836), Proc. (1887, &c.)

and Trans. (1844, &c.); Scottish Arboric. Soc. (1854), Trans.; Cryptogamvic Soc. of Scott. (1875). Canapa: Kingston, Bot. Soc. of Canada (1860), Annals (1861, &c.).

UniTep Staves: Boston, Hortic. Soc. (1829). New York, Torrey Botanical Club, Bull. (1870, &e.). San Francisco, State Hortic. Soc. FRANCE: Beauvais, Soc. d' Hortic. et de Bot. (1864), Bull. (1864, &c.). Bordeaux, Soc. d'Hortic. Chartres, Soe. d' Hortic. et de Viticulture. Chauny, Soc. de Pomologie. Dijon, Soc. d' Hortic. Fontenay-le-Comte, Soc. d'Hortic. Lisieux, Soc. d'Hortic. et de Bot. (1866), Bull. (1866, &c.). Lyons, Soc. d'Hortic. Pratique (1844), Bull. (1844, &e.); Soc. Bot. (1872), Annales (1872, &c.); Soc. Pomologique (1872), Bull. (1872, &c.). Moulins, Soc. d'Hortic. Nimes, Soc. d'Hortic. Niort, Soc. d'Hortic. Orleans, Soc. d' Hortic. (1839), Bull. (1841, &c.). Paris, Soc. Nat. d'Hortic. (1827; declared of public utility 1852), Jowrnal ; Soc. Bot. de France, Bull. (1854, &¢.). Rouen, Soc. Centr. a@Hortic. Saint Germain-en-Laye, Soc. d'Hortic. Senlis, Soc. d'Hortic. Troyes, Soc. d'Hortic. Versailles, Soc. d'Hortic. GERMANYand AUSTRIA-HUNGARY? Berlin, Bot. Ver. (1859), Verhandl. (1859, &c.); Deutsche Bot. Ges. (1882); Horticult. Ges. Blankenburg, Bot. Ver. Bonn, Bot. Ver. (1818), Jahresber. (1887, &c.). Dresden, Flora-Ges. f. Bot., Mittheil. (1841, &c.). Erfurt, Gartenbau Ver. Frankfort, Gartenbau Ges. Freiburg, Bot. Ver. Gérlitz, Gartenbau Ver. Gotha, Thiiringer Gartenbau Ver. Klagenfurt, Kdrninerische Gartenbaw Ges. Landshut, Bot. Ver. (1864). Meiningen, Ver. f. Pomologieu. Gartenbau. Munich, Baierische Gartenbau Ges. Ratisbon, K. Baterische Bot. Ges. (1790), Flora (1818, &c.) and Repertoriwm (1864, &c.). Reutlingen, Pomolog. Inst. Sondershausen, Bot. Ver. Stuttgart, Gartenbau Ges., Flora. Vienna, K. k. Gartenbau Ges.; Botan. Ver., Verhandl. (1851, &e.). Weimar, Ver. f. Blumistik. Wiirzburg, Bot. Inst., Arbeiten (1871, &e.). Iraty: Milan, Soc. Crittog. Ital., Atti (1878, &c.). Briarum: Fédération des Soc. a' flortic. de Belgique (1860), Bull. Antwerp, Soc. Roy. d'Hortic, et d'Agr.; Soc. Phytologique, Annales (1864, &c.). Bruges, Soc. d'Hortic. et dela Bot. Brussels, Soc. Roy. de Bot. (1862), Bull. (1862, &c.); Soc. Roy. de Flore; Soc. Centr. d' Arbvoric., Annales. Liége, Soc. Roy. d'Hortic. HoLuanp: Leyden, Nederl. Bot. Vereen. Luxem- bourg, Soc. de Bot., Recueil (1874, &c.). Nimeguen, Nederl. Bot. Vereen., Archief (1871, &c.). Denmark: Copenhagen, Bot. Forening, Tidsskrift (1866, &c.).

X. Zoouooy.

Societies dealing with natural history in general, or zoology and botany together, are arranged under class i. The Zoological Society of London (founded 1826, incorporated 1829) is famous for its collection of live animals in its gardens at Regent's Park. It publishes Proceedings (Svo, 1830, &c.) and Trans- actions (4t0, 1835, &c.). The other metropolitan societies are—British Ornitho- logists' Union (1859) ; Entomological Society of London (1833), Trans. (1834, &¢.) ; National Fish Culture Association (1883). The Marine Biologtcal Association of Great Britain (1884), for the study of marine food fishes and shell-fish, has a laboratory at Plymouth. The Royal Zoological Society of Ireland (1831) has gardens in the Phoenix Park. There is the British Beekeepers' Association (1874), AusTRaLiA and New Zyatanp: Auckland, Acclimatisation Soc. Bris- bane, Acclimat. Soc. Christchurch, Acclimat. Soc. Melbourne, Zoolog. and Acclimat. Soc. of Victoria, Report (1861, &c.). Sydney, Acclimat. Soc. of N.S. Wales, Report (1862, &c.); Entomolog. Soc. of N.S.W., Trans. (1863, &c.). Wel- lington, Westland Nat. and Acclimat. Soc. Arrica: Cape Town, Zoolog. Soc. Port Louis (Mauritius), Soc. d'Acclimat. Canapa: Toronto, Entomolog. Soc. ; Beekeepers' Assoc.

Unitep States: Cambridge, Nuttall Ornitholog. Club, Quart. Bull. (1876, &c.); and Entomolog. Club, Psyche (1874, &c.). Cincinnati, Zoolog. Soc. (1874), Report (1875, &.). Illinois Central Beekeepers' Association. Philadelphia, Zoolog. Soc. (1873), Report (1874, &c.); and Amer. Entomolog. Soc., merged in the Acad. of Nat. Sc. Washington, Biolog. Soc.; and Entomolog. Soc. FRANCE: Alais, Soc. Séricicole, Bull. (1876, &c.). Amiens, Soc. d'Apiculture, Bull. (1875, &c.). Cler- mont, Soc. Centr. d Apicult., Bull. (1875, &c.). Lille, Inst. Zoolog. & Wimereus, Travaux (1877, &c.). Paris, Soc. Nat. d'Acclimat. (1854), Bull. Mensuel (1854, &c.) and Chron. Bimens. (1875, &c.); Soc. Zoolog. de France, Bull. (1876, &¢.) ; Soc. Entomolog. de France; and Soc. de Biologie, Comptes Rendus (1850, &c.). GeRMAny and AusTRIA-HunGcaRY: Wanderversammlung Deutscher Bienenziichter, Verhandl. (1856, &c.). Bendorf, Akklimat.-Ver. Berlin, Akklimat.-Ver. (1856), Zeitschr. (1858, &c.); Central-Inst. f. Akklimat., Mittheil. (1859, &c.); Deutsche Zoolog. Ges. ; Deutsche Ornithologen-Ges. (1845), Ber. (1850, &c.); Deutsche Fisch- eret Ver.,

Publikat. (1871, &c.); Deutsche Entomolog. Ges. (1856), Entomolog. Zeitschr. (1857, &c.); Ver. zum Beford. des Seidenbaues, Jahresber. (1869, &c.); Physiolog. Ges., Verhandl. (1877, &c.). Breslau, Physiolog. Inst., Studien (1861, &e.); Ver. f. Schles. Insektenkunde, Zeitschr. (1847, &c.). Brunswick, Deutsche Ornitholog. Ges. Carlsruhe, Badischer Ver. f. Gefitigelzucht, Monatsblatt (1872, &c.). Frankenberg, Bienenwirthschaftl. Haupt-Ver., Sdchs. Bienenfreund (1865, &c.). Frankfort, Zoolog. Ges., Der Zoolog. Garten (1860, &c.); Deutsche Malako- zoolog. Ges., Jahrbtich. (1874, &c.) and Nachrichtsblatt (1869, &c.). Halberstadt, Deutsche Ornitholog. Ges.; Halle, Ornitholog. Central-Ver. Hamburg, Zoolog. Ges., Ber. (1862, &c.). Hanover, Bienenwirthschafil. Central-Ver., Centralblatt (1865, &c.). Leipsic, Sdchs. Seidenbau Ver., Zeitschr. (1868, é&c.). Munich, Entomolog. Ver. (1876); Fischereit Ver., Mittheil. (1876, &c.). Nordlingen, Ver. Deutscher Bienenwirthe, B.-Zeitung (1845, &c.). Ratisbon, Zoolog.-Mineralog. Ver. (see class i,). Stettin, Ornitholog. Ver. (1873), Jahresber. (1878, &c.) 3 Entomolog. Ver. (1837), Ent. Zeitung (1840, &c.). Triest, Zoolog. Inst. uw. Zoolog. Station, Arbeiten (1878, &c.). Troppau, Schles. Bienenzucht-Ver. (1873). Vienna, Entomolog. Ver.; Embryolog. Inst., Mittheil. (1871, &c.); Ornitholog. Ver. Wiirz- burg, Zoolog.~~Zootomisches Inst. (1872), Arbeiten (1874, &c.). SwiTZERLAND: Bern, Schweiz. Entomolog. Ges. Geneva, Assoc. Zoolog. du Léman; Soc. Ornith~~ olog. Suisse (1865), Bull. (1866, &¢.). Itauy: Casale, Soc. Bacologica, Boll. (1866, &c.). Florence, Soc. Allantina Ital., La Sericicultura (1865, &c.); Soc. Entomo- log. Ital., Bull. (1869, &c.), Naples, Zoolog. Station, Mittheil. (1878). Palermo, Soc. di Acclimaz., Atti (1861, &c.). Pisa, Soc. Malacolog. Ital., Bull. (1875, &c.). Rome, Soc. di Pisicolt. Ital. (1872). BeLerum: Antwerp, Soc. Roy. de Zoologie. Brussels, Soc. Roy. de Zoologie; Soc. Entomolog. de Belgique (1855), Annales and Bull. (1857, &c.); Soc. Malacolog. (1863), Annales (1863, &c.) and Procés-Verb. (1872, &c.). Hottanp: Amsterdam, K. Zoolog. Genootschap “Natura Artis Magistra,” Jaarboekje (1852, &c.) and Tijdschr. (1863, &c.). The Hague, Nederl. Entomolog. Vereen., Tijdschr. (1857, &c.). Rotterdam, Nederl. Dierkundige Vereen., Tijdschr. (1874, &c.). Norway: Bergen, Selskabet for Norges Fiskerier. SweEpDEN: Stockholm, Entomolog. Forening. Russta: Moscow, Acclimat. Soc. St. Petersburg, Russtan Entomolog. Soc. ARGENTINE REPUBLIC: Buenos Ayres, Soc. Zoolog. Argentina, Period. Zoolog. (1875, &c.); Soe. Entomolog. Argent.

Assoc., Trans. (1877, &c.). Inpra: Bombay, Med. and Physical Soc., Trans, (1838, &¢.). Calcutta, Med. Soc., Trans. (1888, &c.).

Untrep Staves: Amer. Pub. Health Assoc., Reports (1873, &c.); Amer. Dental Asgoc., Trans. (1860, &¢.); and Amer. Inst. of Homeop., Trans. (1878, &¢.). The. State medical associations include those of Alabama, Trans. (1869, &c.); Georgia Trans. (1878, &c.); Maine, Trans. (1853, &c.); Missouri, Trans. (1851, &c.); ant. South Carolina, Trans. The State medical societies include those of Arkansas Trans. (1877, &e.); California, Trans. (1870, &¢.); Illinois, Trans. (1851, &e.): Kansas, Trans. (1867, &¢.); Michigan, Trans. (1869, &c.); Minnesota, Trans. (1874, &c.); Nebraska, Trans. (869, &c.); New Jersey, Trans. (1859, &c.); Pennsylvania, Trans. (1851, &e.); Rhode Island, Trans. (1877, &c.); Texas, Trans. (1874) ; and Wisconsin, Trans. (1880, &¢.). To these have to be added the following town associations, Albany, Med. Soc., Trans. (1807, &c.). Balti- more, Med. and Chirurg. Faculty of Maryland, Trans. (1856, &c.). Boston Amer, Gynecolog. Soc., Trans. (1876, &e.); Mass. Medico-Legal Soc., Z’rans. (1878, &e.). New York, Acad. of Med., Trans. (1847, &c.) and Bull. (1860, &c.); Med. Soc., Trans. (1815, &¢.) ; Medico-Chirurg. Soc., Trans. (1878, &c.); Amer. Surg. Assoc., Trans. (1883, &e.) 5 Medico-Legal Soc., Sanitarian (1873, &c.); Amer, Ophthalmolog. Soc., Trans. (1865, &¢.). Philadelphia, Amer. Med. Assoc., Trans, |

XI. ANTHROPOLOGY.

The Congres International d’ Anthropologie et d’ Archéologie Préhistoriques held its first meeting at Neuchftel in 1866 ; it issues Comptes Rendus (1866, &c.). The Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland was founded in 1871 upon the Hthnological Society (1843), which published a Journal (1848-56) and Transactions (1859 -69), and the Anthropological Society (1863), which issued Memoirs (1863-69) and the Anthropological Review (1864-70). The Institute brings out a Journal (1871, &c.).

Unirep Staves: Ashtabula Anthropolog. Soc. New York, Amer. Ethnolog. Soc., Trans, (1845-53) and Bull. (1860-61) ; Anthropolog. Inst., Journ. (1871, &c.). Washington, Anthropolog. Soc. France: Paris, Soc. d' Anthropologie (1859 ; re- cognized 1864), Bull. and Mém. (1860, &¢.); Soc. d'Ethnogr., Annuaire (1862, &c.) and Revue (1869, &c.); Soc. des Traditions Populatres (1886), Revue. GERMANY and AUSTRIA-HUNGARY: Berlin, Ges. f Anthropologie, &c. (1869), Zischr. (1870, &e.)and Verhandl. (1871, &e.). Brunswick, Dewtsche Ges. f. Anthropologie, Archiv (1870, &c.) and Corr.-Blatt. (1874, &c.). Gottingen, Anthropolog. Ver., Mittheil. (1874, &c.). Leipsic, Ver. f. Anthropolog., Ber. (1871, &c.), afterwards joined to the Ver. der Erdk. Munich, Ges. f. 'Anthropolog. (1870), Beitr. (1876, &¢.). Stuttgart, Anthropolog. Ges. Vienna, Anthropolog. Ges., Mittheil. (1870, &c.). TraLy: Florence, Soc. Ital. di Antropologia, Archivio (1878, &¢.). SWEDEN: Stockholm, Antropologiska Séllskapet, Tidskr. (1875, &c.). Spain: Madrid, Soc. Antropoldg. Esp., Revista (875, &e.). Havana (Cuba), Soe. Antropoldg. Russra: Imp. Soc. for Friends of Research in Nat. Sc., Anthropology, &c.

(1848, &c.); Med. Soc., Trans. (1850, &¢.); Obstet. Soc., Trans. (1869, &c.); Amer. Pharm, Assoc., Proc. ; Patholog. Soc. Richmond, Med. Soc., Trans. (1871, &c.). FRANCE: Besancon, Soc. de Méd. (1845), Bull. (1845, &c.). Bordeaux, Soc. de Méd. (1798), Journ. (1829, &c.) 5 Soc. de. Pharm. (1834), Bull. (1860, &c.); Soc. de Méd. et de Chirurg. Caen, Soc. de Méd. (1799 ; known by its present name since | 1875), Année Méd. (1876, &c.). Chambéry, Soc. Méd. (1848), Comptes Rend. (1848, &e.) and Bull. (1859, &c.). Grenoble, Soc. de Méd. et de Pharm. Havre, Soc. de Pharm. (1858), Mém. Lille, Soc. Centr. de Méd. (1845), Bull. (1846, &c.). Lyons, Soe. Nat. de Méd. (1789), Le Lyon Méd. (1869, &c.). Marseilles, Soc. de Med, (1800), Comptes Rend. (1826-53) and Le Mars. Méd. (1869, &c.); Soc. Méd.-Chirurg. (1872). Paris, Soc. de Méd. Pratique (1808), Bull. ; Acad. Nat. de Méd. (1820); Soe de Chirurg. (1848, reorganized 1859), Mém. (1847, &c.) and Bull. (1848, &¢.); Soe. | Anat., Bull. (1826, &c.)5 Soc. Clinique, Bull. (1877, &¢.); Soc. Med. des Hopitaun, Bull. (1849, &c.) ; Soc. Méd. Legale; Soc. de Pharm., Journ. (1815, &c.); Soe. de Thérapeutique; Soc. Fran. de Hygitne; Soc. Centr. de Méd. Vétérinaire. Rouen, Soc. de Méd. (1821), Union Méd. (1861, &c.); Soc. Libre des Pharmaciens (1802), Bull. Toulouse, Soc. de Méd. (1804), Bull. and Revue

(1867, &c.). Tours, Soc. Méd. (1801). Grrmany and AUSTRIA-HUNGARY: Deutscher Aeraztevereinsbund (1872), Verhandl. 5 Central Ver. d. Zahndrzte (1859), Mittheil. ; D. Veterinirrath iy D. Apotheker-Ver. (1820), Archiv (1822, &c.). Berlin, Ver. f. Heilkunde eee , Magazin (1835, &c.); Ges. f Geburishiilfe u. Gynakologie (1876), Zischr'. 1877, &c.); Ges. f. Heilkunde (1855); Berl. Med. Ges. (1860), Verhandl. (1865, &¢.); Physiolog. Ges. (1860), Verhandl. (1877, &¢.); D. Ver. f. Med. Statistik (1868); Ver. Homéop. Aerate (1871), Zischr. (1882, &¢c.)3 D. Ges. f. Chirurgie (1872), Verhandl. Bonn, Verband der Aeratl. Vereine (1865). Breslau, Ver. f. Physiolog. Heilkunde (1848), Zéschr. (1850, &c.) 5 Verband d. Schles. Aerzte-Ver. (1878). Cologne, Rhein, Med.~~Chirurg. Ver. (1848), Organ (1852, &c.). Darmstadt, Aerzil. Kreisver. (1844). Dresden, Ges. f, Naiur~~ u. Heil-Kunde (1818), Jalresber. (1848, &c.). Erlangen, Physik.~~Med. Soc. (1808), Sttzungsber. (1870, &c.). Frankfort, Aerzil. Ver. (1845), Jahresber. (1857, &¢.). Hamburg, Aerzil. Ver. (1816). Hanover, Ver. Analyt. Chemiker (1878). Heidelberg, Ophthal. Ges. (1857). Konigsberg, Ver. f. wiss. Heil~~ kunde (1851). Leipsic, Med. Ges. (1829); Ges. f. Geburtshilfe (1854), Mittheil.; Homéop. Central-Ver. (1829). Magdeburg, D. Chirurgen-Ver. (1844), Zéschr. (1847, &c.). Munich, Aerzil. Ver. (1833), Int.-Blatt (1854, &c.). Strasburg, Soc. de Aféd. (1842), Mém. (1850, &c.); Soc. Vétérin. (1864). Stuttgart, Weirtiemb. Aeratl. Ver. (1831), Corr.-Blatt. (1832, &¢.); Hahnemannia (1868), Mittheil. (1873, &c.); Apotheker-Ver. (1822), Pharm. Wochenblatt (1861, &c.). Vienna, K. k. Ges. der 'Aerzate, Ztschr. (1844, &c.). Weimar, Med.-Naturwiss. Ver. (1863). Wiirzburg, Physikal.-Med. Ges. (1849), Verhandl. (1850, &¢c.). SwiTZERLAND: Geneva, Soe. Méd. Zurich, Soc. de Méd. 3 Schweiz. Apotheker-Ver. Itaty: Bologna, Soc. Med.- Chirurg. Genoa, Accad. Med. Chirurg. Milan, Soc. Ital. d'Igiena. Modena, Soc. Med.-Chirurg. Naples, Real. Accad. 'Med.-Chirurg. Rome, &. Istit. Fisico-Pato- logico. Turin, Accad. Real. Med.~~Chirurg. Beucrum: Antwerp, Soc. de Méd. (1839), Annales. Brussels, Acad. Roy. de Méd. (1841), Bull. (1841, &c.) and Mém.; Soc. Roy. de Pharm. (1856), Bull. 5 Soc. Anat. Pathalog. (1857), Annales; Soe. Belge. de Méd..Homeop. Ghent, Soc. de Méd. (1834), Annales. Liége, Soc. Med. Chirurg. HoLuaNnD: Amsterdam, Genootschap ter Bevordering der Genees~~ eit Tleel-Kunde, Verhandel. (1841, &c.)5 Nederl. Maatschappij ter Bevord. der Phar- macie. Batavia (Java), Geneeskundige Vereeniging. DENMARK: Copenhagen, A. Med, Selskab; Veterinaer Selskab. NORWAY: Christiania,

Med. Selskab. SWEDEN: Stockholm, Farmaceutiska Inst. Spain and Porrucau: Lisbon, Soc. de Se. Med.; Soc. Pharm. Lusitana. Russia: Dorpat, Pharm. Soc. Moscow, Phys.- Med. Soc. Riga, Soc. of Practical Physicians. St Petersburg, Soc. of Practical Physictans ; Imp. Pharm. Soc. Warsaw, Med.-Chirurg. Soc. GREECE: Athens, Soc. Méd. Turkey; Constantinople, Soc. Imp. de Méd.; Soc. de Pharm, CENTRAL and Sours AmrErica: Buenos Ayres, Asoc. Med. Caracas, Escuela Med. Guadalajara (Mexico), Soc. Med. Merida (Mexico), Soc. Med. Mexico, Acad. de Med. ; Soc. Mcd. Monte Video, Soc. de Med. Santiago, Soc. Med. JAPAN: Tokio

des Sciences Soctales and the Congres International de Statistique, which first met at Brusselsin 1853. Both have issued Comptes Rendus. The Congres International

migratory meeting, and publishes Transactions (1858, &e.) and Social Science (1866, &c.). The Statistical Soctety (1834), with a Journal (1839, &c.); Political

was appointed registrar of solicitors ten years later, and obtained supple-inentary charters in 1845 and 1878; it has fifty provincial law societies in association. The Verulam Society (1846) published a few books and came to an end. The Selden Society for the promotion of the study of the history of Jaw was established in 1887. The headquarters of the Association for the Reform and Codification of the Law of Nations are in London, but conferences are held in various Continental towns. The Institute of Patent Agents (incor- porated 1882) issues Transactions. The Juridical Society of Edinburgh (1773) has published five editions of a Complete System of Conveyancing. The Ascham Society was founded in 1879 for the improvement of educational methods ; and the Society for the Development of the Science of Education (1875) issues Transactions.

Unirep Srates: Boston, Amer. Assoc. for Promotion of Soc. Se; Amer. Statist. Assoc., Collections (1847, &c.). New York, Soc. for Polit. Education, Publ. FRANCE: Grenoble, Soc. de Statist. (1838), Bull. (1840, &¢.). Marseilles, Soc. de Statist. (1827), Répertoire (1837, &c.). Paris, Soc. Int. des Etudes Pratiques d’ Econ. (1856, recognized 1869); La Réforme Soc.; Soc. Fran. de Statist. Univ. (1829), Journal issued jointly with Acad. Nat. since 1849; Soc. de Statist. de Paris (1860, recognized 1869), Journ.

(1860, &c.); Soc. de Législatton Comparee (1869 recognized 1873), Bull., Annuaire de Lég. Frang., and Ann. de Lég. Biran.; Soc. pour U Instr. Elément. (1815, recognized 1831), Bull. St Maixent, Soc. de Statist. des Deua- Sbures. GERMANY: Berlin, Volkswirths. Ces. (1860), Volkswirths. Zeitfragen (1879, &c.); Ver. f. deutsche Volkswirths. (1876), Zischr. (1880, &c.); Ver. f. Forde- rung d. Handelsfreiheit (1878), Mittheil. (1879, &c.); Ver. f. d. Statist.; Jurist. Ges. (1859), Jahresber. (1863, &c.). Dresden, Statistischer Ver. (1831), Mittheil. Erank- fort, Statistische Ges.; Juristische Ges. (1866), Rundschaw (1867, &c.). Laibach, Jurist. Ges. Leipsic, Ver. f. wiss. Pddagogik, Jahrbuch and Miitheil. Brtcium: Brussels, Ligue del Enseignement (1864), Bull. ; Soc, Centr. des Institutewrs Belges (1860), Le Progrés. HOLLAND: Amsterdam, Ver. voor de Statist. in Nederland, Jaurboekje (1849, &c.) and Jaarcijfers (1882, &c.). Spain: Madrid, Junta Estadist. Russa: Moscow, Juridical Soc, St Petersburg, Pedagogical Soc. Eayrr: Cairo, Bureau Central de Statist. Japan: Tokio, Statist. Soc.

XIII. Mrpicrne, SuRcERY, &c. Soc. for Adv. of Med. Sc., Trans. (1885, &¢.). The first meeting of the Congrés Medical International was held at Paris in 1867 ; a Bulletin has been issued annually since 1868. The Proceedings of the XIV. ENGINEERING AND ARCHITECTURE,

British National Veterinary Congress date from 1881. The Royal Colleges of ee é : : 4 F ; ! – Physicians and of Surgeons of London, Edinburgh, and Dublin do not come | |. The principal English society dealing with, mechanical science is the Institu- within our scope. The Medical Society of London (1773) is the oldest in the | tion of Civil Engineers (established in 1818, incorporated in 1828), which pub- metropolis; it has issued Memoirs (1787-1805), Transactions (1810, &c.), and | lishes Transactions (4to, 1836-42) and Minutes of P roceedings (VO, 1837, &e.). Proceedings (1872, &¢.). The other London societies include the Abernethian | George Stephenson was the first president of the Institution of Mechanteal Society (1795), which issues Proceedings ; British Dental Association (1879), with | Engineers, which was founded at Birmingham in 1847, removed to London in a Journal (1880, &¢.); British Gynacological Society (1884); British Homeopathic 1877, and registered under the Companies Act in 1878. It holds ni ‘Association (1859), with Annals (1860, &c.); British Medical ‘Association (1832), | meetings and publishes Proceedings. The Society of

Engineers (1854), a 1 Which has more than forty home and colonial branches, and publishes British | Transactions (1sél, &c.); the Civil and Mechanical Engineers' Soctety (1854); Medical Jowrnal (1857, &c.); Clinical Society (1867), with Transactions; Dermato- | the Iron and Steel Institute (1869), with Transactions ; the Surveyors bial logical Society (1882); Epidemiological Society (1850), with Transactions (1855, &.), (1868, incorporated in 1881), which publishes Trantarons and holds re Hahnemann Publishing Society (1852), Materia Medica (1852, &c.) ; Harveian | sional examinations; and the Aeronautical Society of Great Britain (1866) a BO Society (1831) ; Homeopathic Association (1845); Hunterian Soctety (1819); New | meet in London. There are institutions in the provinces at Cardiff eel Sydenham Soctety (1858), which publishes Biennial Retrospect (1867, &c.), and incorporated in 1881), Chesterfield (1871), Dublin (1835, incorporated i) translations and reprints of books and papers of value, suececded the Old Syden- | Glasgow (1857, with Transactions), Middlesborough (1864), and Neweastle-on ham Society (1844-57), which issued 40 vols.; Obstetrical Soctety (1858), with Trans- | Tyne (1852, incorporated in 1876, with Transactions). a xitee actions (1860, &¢.); Odontological Society (1856), with Transactions (1858, &c.); The leading architectural society 1s the Royal Institute of British Are , Bee Ophthalmological Society (1880) ; Parkes Musewm (1876), founded in memory of | founded in 1834, incorporated in 1837, and granted a new charter in 1887. the services of Dr. E. A. Parkes to sanitary science ; Pathological Society (1846) i 1 Transactions ; Pharmaceutical Society (1841), with museum, which has a branch | &¢.) and Proceedings (1879, &c.). it 'ate at Edinburgh, Pharmaceutical Journal (1842, &¢.); Physiological Association | (1874), Edinburgh (1850), Exeter (1843), Glasgow (1868), Leeds (1876), Lee (1876), Journ. of Physiology (1878, &c.); Royal Medical and Chirurgical Society | shire (1855), Liverpool (1848), Manchester (1875), Newcastle-on-Tyne, anc Br 1805; charter 1834), with library, and Transactions (1809, &c.) and Proccedings societies of Manchester (1865) and Oxford (1837). 'The Architectural a Pe 1857, &c.); Sanitary Institate (1876), the council of which appoint examiners ; | of London publishes a Sketch Book (1870, &c.). The "Architectural Publishing ociety of Medical Officers of Health (1856), Transactions. The provincial societies Society (1848) has published Essays (1848-52), and since 1852 has are very numerous and include—Birminghamn, Midland

Med. Soc. (1848). Dublin, out a Dictionary of Architecture. There is also a Society of Architects, – vel Acad. of Med. in Ireland (1882), Trans. (1883, &e.). Edinburgh, Roy. Med. Soc. Unirep States: Easton, Pa., Inst. of Mining Engineers. New Yo (1737 ; charter 1778); Harveian Soc. (1752) ; ‘Medico-Chirurg. Soc. (1821), Trans. | Soc. of Civ. Eng., Trans, ; Amer, Inst. of Min. Eng. ; Amer. Inst. of Arch on (1824, &c.); and Obstetrical Soc. (1340). Glasgow, Medico-Chirurg. Soc. (1866), based | FRANCE: Lyons, Soc. Acad. d’ Arch. (1830), Annales (1867, &e.). Paris, a upon Med. Soc. and Med.~~Chirwrg. Soc. (both 1814). Manchester, Med. Soc. (1834). Ingénieurs Civils, Mém. (1848, &c.); Soc. Cent. des Architectes, Bull, (1851, eo ‘AUSTRALIA: Melbourne, Med. Soc. of Victoria, Austr. Med. Journ. (1856, &e.). | and Annales (1875, &¢.); it has held a congress since 1875. Saint~~ noe ne Canapa: Montreal, Union Méd. du Canada, Revue (S72, &c.); Canada Med. de U Industrie Min. (855), Bull. Germany and AustTRiA-HuNGARY: Bertil,

SOCIETIES

Ver. Deutscher Ingenieure, Ztschr. (1857) and Wochenschrift (1877, &c.); Ver. f. Eisenbahnkunde ; Akad. des Bauwesens; Architekten-Ver., Ztschr. Breslau, Ver. f, Ges. der Bild. Ktinste (1862). Constance, Mtinsterbau Ver. (1881). Dres- den, Sachs. Ingen.- u. Architeken-Ver., Protok. Hanover, Arch.- wu. Ingen.-Ver., Zischr. Klagenfurt, Berg-wnd Hutten-Mannischen Ver. Leoben, K. k. Berg-Akad. Munich, Bayr. Arch.- uw. Ingen.~~Ver., Ztschr. Prague, Arch.~~ und Ingen.~~Ver. Vienna, Oesterr. Ingen.~~ u. Arch.~~Ver., Zischr.; Ges. f. Bild. Kiinste. SwitzEr~~ LAND: Lausanne, Soc. Vaudoise des Ingén. et des Arch. Zurich, Ver. Schweiz. Ingen. u. Arch. Ivaty: Turin, Soc. degli Ingenert, Atti (1868-70). BrLcIuM: Brussels, Assoc. des Ingén. Liége, Assoc. des Ingén. (1847), Annuaire (1851, &c.). Hoitianp: Amsterdam, Maatschapptj tot Bevordering der Bowwkunst, Bouwkun- dige Bijdragen (1843, &c.). The Hague, Kon. Inst. van Ingen., Verslag (1848, &c.), Verhandel. (1848, &c.) and Tijdschr. (1870, &c.). Spain and Porrucar: Lisbon, Assoc. dos Engenheiros Civ. Port.; Soc. dos Architectos e Archeologos. Madrid, Soc. Central de Arquitectos.

XV. Nava anp Minirary Scrence.

The Royal United Service Institution, first known as the Naval and Military Library and Musewm (1831), took the name of the United Service Institution in 1839, and was incorporated in 1860; it has a professional museum and publishes 2 Journal (1857, &c.). The home of the society is in London, as is also that of the Institution of Naval Architects (1860), which publishes Transactions (4to, 1860, &e.). The Royal Artillery Institution (1838), which issues Minutes of Proceedings (1858, &c.), is at Woolwich, and the Royal Engineers Institute (1875), which issues Royal Engineers Professional Papers, at Chatham. Canapa: Toronto, Military Inst. Inv1a: Simla, United Service Institution.

Unirep States: New York, Military Scrvice Inst., Journal (1879, &c.). FRANCE: Paris, Réunion des Offciers, now Cercle Militaire, Bull. (1871, &c.). GERMANY and AvusTRIA-Hunaary: Munich, AMilitdr. Ges. (1868), Jahrbiich. (i871, &c.); Vienna, K.k. Milit.~~Geogr. Inst., Arbeiten (1871, &c.). Houuanp: Utrecht, Vereen. tot Verspreiding van Kennis aangaande s'Lands Verdcdiging, Joarsverslag (1872 &c.) and Werken, Norway: Christiania, Militere Samfund, Nordsk Milit. Tidsskrift (1848, &c.). Denmark: Copenhagen, Krigsvidenskab~~ elige Sclskab, Milit. Tidsskrift (1872, &c.).

XVI. AGRICULTURE AND TRADES.

The Royal Agricultural Society of England began as the Engtish Agricultural Society in 1838 and was incorporated in 1840. It holds annually one migratory meeting in some part of England or Wales and two meetings in London, where are its head-quarters; it publishes a Journal (1840, &c.). The leading pro- vincial agricultural societies and associations are—Aberdeen, Roy. Northern Agr. Soc, (1843). Arbroath, Angus Agr. Assoc. Banbury (1834), Basingstoke, Roy. Counties Agr. Soc, (1859). Bath, Bath and West of Engl. Soc. and Southern Counties Assoc. (founded in 1777, enlarged in 1852, and reorganized in 1866), Letters and Papers (1780-1816) and Journal (1852, &c.). Belfast, Chemico-Agr. Soc. of Ulster (1845), Proc.; N. E. Agr. Assoc. of Ireland. Birkenhead, Wirrel and Birkenhead Agr. Soc. (1842). Brecknock (1855). Carluke (1833). Chelmsford, Essex Agr. Soc. (1858). Chertsey (1833). Doncaster (1872). Dublin, Roy. Agr. Soc. of Ireland (1841). Edinburgh, Highland and Agr.

Soc. of Scotland (1784, incorporated in 1787), Trans. (1799, &c.). Halifax (1839, enlarged in 1858).

Ipswich, Suffolk Agr. Assoc. (1831). Otley, Wharfedale Agr. Soc. Paisley, Renfrewshire Agr. Soc. (1802). Warwick. Worcester (1838). Arrica; Cape Town, Agr. Soc. AvusTRALIA: Sydney, Agr. Soc. of N. S. Wales. Britisa

GuIANA: Georgetown, Roy. Agr. and Commercial Soc. CaNnapa: Montreal, Soc. @Agr. Invia: Calcutta, Agr. and Hortic. Soc., Journ. (1842, &c.).

Unirep States; Albany, State Agr. Soc., The Cultivator and Journal. Atlanta, State Agr. Soc. Boston, Inst. of Technology. Hoboken, Stevens Inst. of Technol. Madison, State Agr. Soc., Trans. (1852, &c.). Sacramento, Soc. of Agr. and Hortic. San Francisco, Agr. and Hort. Soc. Troy, Rensselaer Polytechnic Inst. Worcester, Free Inst. of Industry.

France: Algiers, Soc. d' Agr. (1840), Bull. Amiens, Soc. Industrielle (1861), Bull. Angers, Soc. Industr. et Agr. (1830), Bull. Bordeaux, Soc. d Agr. Boujogne, Soc. d'Agr. Caen, Assoc. Normande pour lAgr., Industrie, &c. (1831), Annuaire (1835, &c.); Soc. d'Agr. et de Commerce (1762), Mém. (1853-58) and Bull. (1858, &e.). Chalons-sur-Marne, Soc. d'Agr., &c. (1798), Mém. (1807, &c.). Elbeuf, Soc. Industr. (1858), Bull. Grenoble, Soc. d' Agr. et d'Hortic. (1835), Sud- Est (1855, &c.). Le Mans, Soc. du Matériel Agr. (1857), Bull. Lyons, Soc. des Se. Industr. (1862), Annales. Montpellier, Soc. d' Agr. (1799), Bull. (1808, &c.). Nancy, Soc. Centr. d' Agr. Paris, Soc. Nat. d Agr. de France (1761; reconstructed in 1878 with a view of instructing Government on agricultural matters), Mém. and Bull. Rheims, Soc. Industr. (1833), Bull. (1858, &c.). Rouen, Soc. Industr.

1872), Bull.; Soc. du Commerce et de UInd. Saint-Jean-d'Angély, Soc. d'Agr.

819), Bull. (1833, &c.). St Quentin, Soc. Industr. (1868), Bull. Toulouse, Soc. d' Agr. GERMANY and AusTRIA-HuncaRy: The migratory Congress Deut- scher Volkswirthe first met at Gotha in 1858. Agram, Kroatisch-Slav. Land- wirths, Ges., Bldtter. Augsburg, Landwirths. Ver., Landw. Blatter. Berlin, Vereinigt. Berlinerkanfleute uw. Indusir.; Ver. f: Beford. des

Gewerbeficisses. Bonn, Landwirthsch. Central-Ver. Bremen, Landwirths. Ver. Breslau, Land- wirths. Central-Ver.; Schles. Central Gewerbe-Ver. Cassel, Landwirths. Central- Ver., Mittheil. Cracow, Akerbau Ges., Annalen. Dantzic, Volkswirths. Ges. (1850). Darmstadt, Landwirths. Ver., Ztschr. Dresden, K. Ockonomie Ges. ; K. Sdchs. Polytechnicum. Firth, Gewerbe-Ver. Gratz, K.k. Steiermarkische Laundwirths. Ges. Greifswald, Baltischer Central-Ver. Tlalle, Landwirths. Cen- tral-Ver. Wanover, Gewerbe-Ver. Innsbruck, K. k. Landwirths. Ges., Wochen- schr.; Kdrnt. Industrie- u. Gewerbe-Ver. Jena, Landwirths. Inst. K6nigsberg, Ostpreuss. Landwirths. Central-Ver. Leipsic, Landwirths. Kreis-Ver.; Polytechn. Ges. Linz, K. k. Landwirths. Ges. Liibeck, Landwirths. Ver., Mittheil. Miihl- hausen, Soc. Industr., Bull. Munich, Landwirths. Kreis-Ver.; Polytechn. Ver. Nuremberg, Polytechn. Ver. Pesth, Ungar. Akerbau Ges., Mittheil. ; Industrielle Ges. Prague, Bohmischer Gewerbe-Ver.; Industrie Ges., Mittheil. and Annalen. Ratisbon, Landwirths. Kreis-Ver., Bauernfreund. Stuttgart, K. Wiirttemd. Central-Stelle, Wochenblatt. Trieste, Akerbau Ges. Tiibingen, Landwirths. Ver. Vienna, K. k. Reichs Landwirths. Ges., Ztschr. Wiesbaden, Gewerbe-Ver. Swit- ZERLAND: Bern, Oekonom. Ges. Lausanne, Soc. d’ Agr. de la Suisse Romande. Zurich, Ver. f. Landwirths. u. Gartenbau. Iraty: Bologna, Soc. Agraria, Annali. Cagliari, Soc. Agr. ed Econom. Florence, Soc. Econom. ed Agr., Rendiconti. Milan, Soc. Agr. di Lombardia; Soc. Gen. degli Agricolt. Ital. ; Soc. d’Incoragg. di Artie Mestiert, Discorsi. Perugia, Soc. Econom. ed Agr., Atti. Turin, Accad. Reale di Agricolt.; Assoc. Agr. Ital., Esercitaziont. Verona, Accad. d’Agricolt. BELGIUM : Soc. Centr. d’ Agricult, (1854), Bull. Ghent, Soc. Roy. d’Agr. et de Bot. Liége, Soc. d’Agr., Journ. (1850, &c.). Verviers, Soc. Industr. et Commerc. (1863), Bull. Wouranp: Amsterdam, Aardrijskundig Genootschap ; Vereeniging voor Volksvlijt. DENMARK: Copenhagen,K. Landhwusholdnings Selskab; Det Statist. Tabelverk, Norway: Christiania, Polytekniske Forcening. SwEDEN: K. Landt- bruks Akademien. Spain and PortrucaL: Barcelona, Soc. Econom., Actas. Lisbon, Inst. Real de Agric. ; Soc. Promotora de Industr. Madrid, Soc. Econom. Matritense, Anales, Oporto, Acad. Polytcchn. Russta: Dorpat, K. Livldndische Oekonom. Gcs., Jahrbuch. Kazan, Imp. Econom. Soc., Monthly Reports. Moscow, Imp. Soc. of Agriculturalists. Odessa, Imp. Agronom. Soc. of S. Russia. Riga, Technical Soc. St Petersburg, Imp. Econom. Soc., Trans. ; Technical Soc. Rov- Mania. Bucharest, Soc. Roumaine d’ Agr.

XVII. Literature, History, anD ARCHAOLOGY.

The Congres International des Orientalistes first met at Paris in 1873; it issues Comptes Rendus (1874, &c.). The Congrés Bibliographique International held its first meeting in 1878, and the Congres des Américanistes its first meeting in 1875. The Royal Society of Literature (1823, incorporated in 1826), with Trans- actions (4to, 1829-39; 8vo, 1843, &c.), and the Royal Asiatic Society (1823), with Journal (1834, &c.), have their headquarters in London, as well as the following literary societies and printing clubs, all of which issue publications : —Aristotelian (1879), Authors (1884), Ballad (1868), Browning (1881), Carlyle (1879), Chaucer (1868), Early English Teat (1864), East India Association (1866), English Dialect (1873), Gaelic, Hebrew Literature (1872), Hellenic Studies (1879), Index (1877), Library Association (1877), London Dialectical (1865), New Shakspere (1873), Oriental Translation Fund (1828), Pali Text, Philobiblon (1853), Philological (1842), Roxburghe Club (1812), Shorthand, Wordsworth (1880), Wyclif (1882). ‘The Cambridge Philological Society, the Glasgow Hunterian Club (1871), the Lancashtre and Cheshire Historical Society (1828), at Liverpool, the Manchestcr Literary Club, with Transactions and Papers (1874, &c.), and the Manz Society (1858), at Douglas, may also be mentioned.

The oldest and most important society in England dealing with history and archeology is the Soctety of Antiquaries of London, which enthusiasts trace to an association founded by Archbishop Parker in 1572. The meetings were not publicly recommenced until 1707 ; the present body was incorporated in 1751; it publishes Vetera, Monwmenta (fol., 1747, &c.), Archeologia (4to, 1770, &c.), and Proceedings (8v0, 1849, &c.). The Royal Archexological Institute (1843), issuing the Archeological Journal (1845, &c.); the British Archeological Association (1843), with Journal (1846, &c.); the Numismatic Society (1836), issuing the Numismatic Chronicle (1838, &c.); and the Royal Historical Society (1868), with Transactions, belong to London, as well as the following historical and anti- quarian societies, all of which issue publications :—Arundel (1848), Camden

(1838), Cymmrodorion (1751-73, revived in 1820), Dilettanti (1734), Folk Lore (1877), Harleian (1869), Holbein, Huguenot (1885), London and Middlesex Archeol. (1855), Medallists (1885), Middlesex County Records (1884), Palwographical, Pipe Roll (1883), Rabelais Club (1879), Seal (1883), Soc. Bibl. Arche#ol. (1870), Soc. for Prot. Anc. Buildings (1877), Topographical (1880). The Society of Antiquaries of Scotland (1790), at Edinburgh, and the Irish Archeology and Celtic Society, at Dublin, are the leading associations outside London. Among others are— Aberdeen, New Spalding Club (1886); Bedfordshire Archeol. and Architect. Soc. eed Bristol, Bristol and Gloucester Arch. Soc. (1876); Cambrian Arch. Assoc. 1846) ; Cambridge Antig. Soc. (1840); Dublin, Roy. Hist. and Arch. Soc. ; Durham, Surtees Soc, (1834); Essex Arch. Soc. (1852); Exeter, Diocesan Arch. Soc. (1841); Glasgow Arch. Soc, (1856); Kent Arch. Soc. (1857); Lanc. and Cheshire Antigq. Soc. (1883); Manchester, Chetham Soc. (1843); Newcastle-on-Tyne Soc. of Antig. (1818) ; Norwich, Norfolk and Norwich Arch. Soc. (1846); Oxford, Architect. and Hist. Soc. (1839) and Hist. Soc. (1883); Purbeck Soc.; Sussex Arch. Soc. (1846); Welshpool, Powys Land Club (1867); and Yorkshire Arch. and Topogr. Assoc. (1863).

Canapa: Montreal, Soc, Hist., Mém. (1859, &c.); Numism. and Antiq. Soc., Journ. (1872, &c.). Quebec, Lit. and Hist. Soc., Trans. (1837, &c.). Toronto, Lit. and Hist. Soc. Cutna: Hong Kong, Roy. Asiatic Soc. Shanghai, Roy. Asiatic Soc., Journ. (1858, &c.). Inpra: Bombay, Roy. Asiatic Soc. (1841), Journ. (1844, &c.), Calcutta, Asiatic Soc. of Bengal, Journ. (1832, &c.) and Proc. (1865, &c.). Colombo, Roy. Asiatic Soc., Journ. (1844, &c.). Singapore, Roy. Asiatic Soc. ,

Unirep Starrs: Baltimore, Hist. Soc. Boston, Mass. Hist. Soc., Collections (1792, &c.) and Proc. (1859, &c.); New Engl. Hist.-Gen. Soc, (1846), Proc. ; Amer. Oriental Soc. (1843), Journ. (1849, &c.). Brunswick, Hist. Soc. Chicago, Hist. Soc. Concord, Hist. Soc., Coll. (1824, &c.). Hartford, Amer. Philolog. Soc. ; Hist. Soc., Coll. (1860, &c.). Madison, Hist. Soc., Coll. (1855, &c.). Minneapolis, Hist. Soc., Coll. (1869, &c.). Montpelier, Hist. Soc. of Vermont, Coll. (1869, &c.). New York, Hist. Soc., Coll. (1811, &¢.); Genealog. Soc.; Amer. Library Assoc. (1876), Libr. Jowrn. Philadelphia, Mist. Soc., Mem. (1826, &c.); Nwmism. and Arch. Soc.

1865). Portland, Maine Hist. Soc., Coll. (1831, &c.). Providence, Hist. Soc., Coll. 1827, &¢.). Richmond, Virg. ist. and Phil. Soc., Pubdl. (1874, &c.). St Louis, Missouri Hist. Soc. Savannah, Hist. Soc., Coll, (1840, &c.). Topeka, Hist. Soc., Trans. (1881,&c.). Worcester, Amer. Antig. Soc.,Proc.and Arch. Amer. (1820,&c.).

France: The Congres Archéologique de la France first met in 1834. Algiers, Soc. Iist. (1856), Revue (1856, &c.). Amiens, Soc. des Antiq. (1836), Mém. (1838, &c.) and Bull. Angouléme, Soc. Arch. et Hist. (1844), Bull. Bordeaux, Soc. Archéol. (1873). Caen, Soc. des Antiq. de Normandie (1824), Mém. (1825, &c.) and Bull. (1860, &c.); Soc. Fran. d' Arch. (1834), Comptes Rend. (1834, &c.) and Bull. Mens. (1835, &c.). Constantine, Soc. Arch. (1852), Recueil. Dijon, Comm. des Antiquités (1830), Mém. (1832, &¢.). Limoges, Soc. Hist. et Arch. (1845), Bull. Lyons, Soc. Hist., Litt., et Arch. (1807), Mém. (1861, &c.). Montpellier, Soc. Arch., Mém. (1835, &c.). Nancy, Soc. d'Arch. de Lorraine (1848), Mém. (1850, &c.) and Journ. (1852, &c.). Nantes, Soc. Arch. (1845), Bull. (1859, &e.). Orleans, Soc. Arch. et Hist. (1849), Mém. (1851, &c.) and Bull. Paris, Soc. Nat. des Antiq. de Fr. (based on the Académie Celtique), Mem. (1817, &c.) and Bull. (1857, &c.); Soc. de U Hist. de France (1833), has published about 270 vols. ; Soc. de U'Ecole Nat. des Chartes (1854), Bibliotheque; Soc. Asiatique (1822), Journal Asiat. (1822, &c.), &c.; Soc. Fran. d@ Arch. et dc Numvism. ; Soc. de U' Hist. du Prot. Fran. 5 Soc. de Linguistique ; Soc. Bidliogr. (1868), Polybiblion. Poitiers, Soc. des Antigq. (1834), Mém. Rouen, Soc. de l'Hist. de Norm. (1869), Publ. Toulouse, Soc. Arch. (1831), Tours, Soc. Arch. (1840), Mém. (1842, &c.). GERMANY and AUSTRIA- Hunaary: Gesam. Ver. d. D. Gesch. u. Alt. Vereine (1852). Agram. Ges. fi Stid- Slay. Alterth. Altenburg, Gesch. wu. Alterthums Ges. (1838), Mittheil. (1841, &c.). Augsburg, Hist. Ver. (1820, reorganized in 1834), Jahresber. (1835, &c.). Baden, Alterthwms-Ver. (1844), Schriften. Bamberg, Hist. Ver. (1830), Ber. (1834, &c.). Berlin, Ver. f. Gesch. d. Mark Brandenb. (1836), Forschungen (1841, &c.); Ver. f. d. Gesch. Berlins (1865), Schriften; Hist. Ges. (1872), Mittheil.; Archdolog. Ges. (1841), Archdol. Zeitung; Numism. Ges. (1848), Jahresber. (1845, &c.), Herold (1869) ; Phil. Ges. (1843), Der Gedanke (1861, &c.); Ges. fi D. Philologie (1877), Jahresber. (1879, &¢.). Bonn, Ver. f. Alterth. (1841), Jahresber. ; Soc. Philologa (1854). Bran- denburg, Hist. Ver. (1868), Jahresber. (1870,

&c.). Braunsberg, Hist. Ver. (1856), Ztschr. (1858, &¢.). Breslau, Ver. f. Gesch. u. Alt. Schl. (1846), Zischr. (1856, &c.); Breslawer Dichterschule (1860). Cassel, Ver. f. Hess. Gesch. (1834), Ztschr. (1837, &e.). Cologne, Hist. Ver. (1854), Annalen (1855, &e.). Darmstadt, Hist. Ver. (1834), Archiv (1835, &c.). Dresden, K. Stiehs. Alt, Ver. (1824), Jahresber. (1835, &ec.) and Mittheil. (1835, &c.). Frankfort, Ges. f. Deutschlands dlt. Geschichts- kunde (1819; since 1875 under guidance of Central-Dir. d. Mon. Gcerm.), Mon. Germ. (1826, &¢.); Ges. f. Gesch. u. Kunst (1837), Mittheil. (1858, &c.); Fretes D. Hochstijt in Goethe's Vaterhaus (1859). Halle, Thiir.-Sdchs. Ver. (1819), Mittheil. (1822, &c.); D. Morgenl. Ges. (1844), Ztschr. (1847, &c.) and Abhandl. (1859, &c.). Hanover, Hist. Ver. (1835), Ztschr, Kiel, Ges. f. Gesch. Schl.~~Holst, (1833, re~~ organized in 1873), Archiv (1833, &c.)and Zéschr. (1870, &c.). Leipsic, D. Ges 2. Erforschung vaterl. Spr. u. Alterth. (1697, reorganized in 1824), Jahresber. (1825, &c.) and Mittheil. (1856, &¢.); Ftrstlich Jablonowski's Ges. (1768), Acta (1772 &c.); Borsenver. d. D. Buchhandler (1825), Borsenblatt (1834, &c.) ; Hist. Theolog. Ges. (1814). Liibeck, Hansischer Ges. Ver. (1870), Munich, Hist. Ver. (1837), Archiv (1839, &c.);

Stuttgart, Lit. Ver. (1839), Bibliothek (1843, &c.); Wiirttemb. Alterth. Ver. (1848). Vienna, K. k. Orient. Akad. Weimar, D. Shakespeare Ges. (1864), Jahrbuch (1865, &¢.). Wiesbaden, Ver. f. Nass. Alterth. (1821), Annalen (1830, &c.). Wiirzburg, Hist. Ver. (1830), Archiv (1833). SWITZERLAND: Basel, Hist. w. Antiq. Ges. Bern, Schweiz. Hist. Ges. Freiburg, Soc. d' H ist. Geneva, Soe. d Hist. et d' Arch. Lausanne, Soc. d'Hist. Zurich, Soc. d' Hist. ; Antiq. Ges. Iraty: Genoa, Soc. di Storia Patria. Naples, R. Accad.; R. Accad. Ercolanese. Rome, Accad. Rom. di Arch. ; Soc. Rom. di Storia Patria; Inst. di Corr, Arch.; Brit. and Amer. Arch. Soc. ; K. Deutsch. Archéolog. Inst., Arch. Zing. (1843-85) and Jahrb. Turin, Real Deputaz. di Stor. Pair, BELGIUM: Antwerp, Acad. d'Archéol. (1842), Bull. (1865, &c.). Bruges, Soc. powr U'Hist. ct les Antig. de la Flandre (1839), Publ. Brussels, Soc. de l' Hist. de Belgique (1858), Publ. ; Soc. Roy. de Numism. (1841), Revue; Soc. des Bibliophtles (1865). Ghent, Soc. Roy. des Beaux-Arts et de la Litt. (1808), Annales (1844, &c.); Willems Fond (1851). Liége, Inst. Archéol. (1852), Bult. (1852, &c.). Louvain, Soc. Litt, (1839), Mém.

and Publ. Mons, Cercle Archéol. (1856), Annales (1857, &c.). Tournai, Soc. Hist. et Litt. (1846), Bull. (1849, &c.). Verviers, Soc. Arch. Ypres, Soc, Hist. (1861). Houianp: Leyden, Acad. Lugduno-Batava. Luxembourg, Inst. Archéol. (1846, reorganized in 1862), Annales (1849, &c.). Utrecht, Hist. Genootschap. DENMARK: Copenhagen, Island. Litt. Selskab 3 K. Danske Selskab ; K. Nordisk Oldskrift Selskab. Reykjavik (Iceland), Fornleifarfelag, Norway: Christiania, Norske Hist. Forening ; Norske Oldskrift Selskab. SweDEN: K. Vitterhets Hist. och Antiq. Akad. ; Svenska Akad. Spain: Barcelona, R. Acad. de Buenas Letras; Madrid, R. Acad. de Cienc. Mor. y Pol. ; R. Acad. Esp. Arg. ; R. Acad. de la Hist. Greece: Athens, Soc. Archéol. Russta: Helsingfors, Finska Litt. Sdillskapet. Mitau, Cowrland Soc. of Lit. and Art. Moscow, Imp. Russ. Soc. of Hist. and Antiq.; Archzolog. Soc. Narva, Archeolog. Soc. Odessa, Hist. and Antig. Soc. Riga, Lett. Lit. Ges. ; Hist. and Antiq. Soc. St Petersburg, Russ. Hist. Soc. Turkey: Constantinople, Soc. for Adv. of Turkish Lit.; Hellenic Philolog. Soc. JAPAN: Yokohama, Asiatic Soc. of Japan, Trans. (1874, &¢.). XVIII. Geoerarzy.

The Congres International pour les Progrés des Sciences Géographiques first met in 1871. The Royal Geographical Society of London, founded in 1830, had joined to it in the following year the African Association (1788), the successor of the Saturday Club; the Palestine Association (1805) became merged with it in 1834. 1t publishes Jowrnal (1882, &c.) and Proceedings (1857, &c.). The Hakluyt Society (1846) has printed more than 70 vols. of rare voyages and travels. The Alpine Club (1858). whose publications are Peaks Passes, and Glaciers (1859-62) and Journal (1863, é&c.), and the Palestine Exploration Fund (1865), publishing Quarterly Statement (1869, &c.)and Memoirs, meet in London. The Scottish Geographical Society (1884) has its centre at Edinburgh, and issues the Scottish Geographical Magazine. Manchester has also a Geographical Society. AUSTRALIA: Melbourne, Geogr. Soc. Sydney, Geogr. Inst. CaNaDa: Quebec, Geogr. Soe. Inpia: Bombay, Geogr. Soc., Trans. (1836, &c.).

Unirep States: New York, Amer. Geogr. (and Statist.) Soc., Bull. (1852, &c.), Journ. (1859, &c.), and Proc. (1862, &c.); Palestine Exploration Soc. (1870). France: Bordeaux, Soc. de Géogr. Commerciale (1874), Bull. Lyons, Soc. de Géogr. (1873), Bull. Marseilles, Soc. de Géogr. (1876), Bull.

Paris, Soc. de Géogr. (1821, reorganized in 1827), Bull. (1822, &c.). GerMaNy and AusTRiA-HUNGARY ‘ D. Geographentag (1881), Verhandl. 5 D. Alpen-Ver. (1869), Zischr. u. Jahro. (1869, &e.). Berlin, Ges. f. Erdkunde (1828), Ztschr, (1853, &c.) and Verhandl, (1873,

&e.); Ges. zur Erforschung Aequat. Afrikas (1873), Corr.-Blatt. ; Afrik, Ges. (1878), Mittheil. Bremen, Geograph. Ges. Ges), Geogr. Blatter. Carlsruhe, Badische Geogr. Ges. (1880), Verhandl. Cassel, Ver. f. Erdk. (1882), Darmstadt,

Ver. f. Erdk. (1845), Notizblatt (1854, &c.). Dresden,Ver. f. Erdk. (1863), Jahresber. Frankfort, Ver. f. Geogr. u. Statist. (1836), Jahresber. Halle, Ver. f. Erdk. (1878). Hamburg, Geogr. Ges. (1873), Jahresber. Hanover, Geogr. Ges. (1878), Jahresber. Jena, Geogr. Ges. (1880), Mittheil. Leipsic, Ver. f. Erdk. (1861), Jahresber. Liibeck, Geogr. Ges. (1880). Munich, Geogr. Ges. (1869), Jahresber. Pesth, Hung. Googr. Soc, (1873). Vienna, K. k. Geogr. Ges., Mitth. (1857, &c.); Ver. der Geogr. Weimar, Geogr. Inst. SwirzeRLaNp: Bern, Inst. Geogr.; Schweiz. Alpen- Club. Geneva, Soc. de Géogr., Mém. (1860, &e.). Zurich, Karten-Ver. Iraty: Rome, Soc. Geogr. Ital., Bull, (1868, &c.). Turin, Circolo Geogr. Ital. (1868). Bertaium: Antwerp, Soc. Belge de Géogr. (1870), Bull. Brussels, Soc. Belge de Géogr. Hottanp: Amsterdam, Het Aardrijkskundig Genoot., Tijdschrift (1874, &c.); Landkundige Genootschap. DENMARK: Copenhagen, Geogr. Selskab. SPAIN and PortuaaL: Lisbon, Soc. de Geogr., Bol. (1876, &c.). Madrid, Soc. Geogr., Bol. (1876, &¢.).. Russia: Irkutsk, Geogr. Soc., Bull. (1871, &c.). St Petersburg, Imp. Russ. Geogr. Soc., Mem. (1849, &c.) and Bull. (1865, &c.). Tiflis, Geogr. Soc., Mem. (1852, &¢.). Haypr: Cairo, Soc. Khédiviale de Géogr., Bull. (1876, &c.). Japan: Tokio, Geogr. Soc. CentTRAL and Sourm America: Buenos Ayres, Inst. Geogr. Argent. Mexico, Soc. de Geogr. ed Estad., Bol. (1861, &c.), Rio Janeiro, Roy. Geogr. Soc.

Breui0GRapHy.—The Catal. of Printed Books in the British Museum (1841), folio, s.v. “ Academies,” contains a list of all the publications of societies at that time in the museum. This has been re-arranged and greatly enlarged as Academies (1885-86), 5 parts folio. See also Annuaire des Soc. Sav. de la France et de UEtranger (1846), 8vo; A. d’Héricourt, Annuaire, 1863-66, 3 pts. 8vo; Cat. of Periodicals in Bodleian Lib., pt. iii. Foreign, 1880, 8vo; 8. H. Scudder, Cat. of Scientific Serials, 1633-1876,Camb. (U. 8.),1879, 8vo,very complete; P. E. Richter, Periodica im Besitze des k. off. Bibl. zu Dresden, 1880, 8vo; Cat. of Trans., &c., in Radcliffe Lib., 1884, 8vo; List of Foreign Corr. of the Smithsonian Inst. 1886, 8vo. British societies are now well represented in the Year Book of the Scientific and Learned Societies of Great Brit. and Ireland, 1884, &c. See also Hume’s Learned Societies and Printing Clubs of the U. K., 1853, 8vo; E. Mailly, Inst. Se. de la Grande Bret., 1861-67, 6 pts.; H. G. Bohn, App. to Bibliographer’s Manual, 1864, 8vo; Engl. Catal. of Books, 1864-82, 3 vols. 8vo; and “Sc. Societies and Field Clubs,” in Nature, v., viii. For France, see U. Robert, Bibl. des Soc. Sav de la France, pt. i., 1878; F. Bouillier, L’ Institut et les Acad. de Province, 1879, 8vo ; Bibliogr. des Travaua Hist. et Arch. publ. par les Soc. Sav. de la France, 1885, &c., 4to (in prog.). For Germany and Austria-Hungary, see H. A. Stohr, Allg. Deutsches Vereinshandbuch, 1873, &c., 8vo; J. Miiller, Die wiss. Vereine u. Ges. Deutschiands im 19ten Jahrh. , 1883, 4to (in prog.) ; J. Winckler, Die period. Presse Oesterreichs, 1875, 8vo; and P. A. F. Walther for German historical societies (1845). E. Huth, Verzeichniss, Berlin, 1887, &c. (in prog.), describes publica- tions of societies relating to natural science. See also “‘ Les Congres Scienti- fiques,” by Count de Marsy, in Compte Rendu du Congres Bibliogr., 1879. For Belgium, see Introd. a la Bibl. de la Belgique, 1875. For Italy, see G. Ottino, La Stampa Periodica in Italia, 1875, 8vo. For Russia, consult C, Woldemar, Gesch. d. russ. Gelehrten- und Schul-Anstalten, St Petersburg, 1865, 8vo, and Kawall, Die neuen russ, Naturforschergesellschaften, Riga, 1872-74. (H. R. T.).

SOCIETY ISLANDS. See Tanrri ARCHIPELAGO.

SOCINUS, the Latinized form of the Italian Soccini, Sozini, or Sozzini.

I. Lenio Francesco Maria Sozrnt (1525-1562), theo- logical inquirer, was born at Siena on 29th January 1525. His family descended from Sozzo, a banker at Percena,

whose second son, Mino Sozzi, settled as a notary at Siena in 1304. Mino Sozzi's grandson, Sozzino (d. 1403), was the ancestor of a line of patrician jurists, of whom Mariano Sozzini, senior (1397-1467), was the first and the most famous. Lelio was the sixth son of Mariano Sozzini, junior (1482-1556), by his wife Camilla Salvetti. The family name is variously spelled (usually ''Soccini" by modern writers) ; Lelio invariably uses the form "Sozini," Latin- izing it "Sozinus" ; his nephew Favsro (see below) writes "Sozzini" and "Socinus." Sozini was educated as a jurist under his father's eye at Bologna. According to Melan- chthon, it was his desire to reach the fontes juris which led him to Biblical studies and hence to the rejection of "the idolatry of Rome." Later on he acquired some knowledge of Hebrew and Arabic (he gave to Bibliander a manuscript of the Koran) as well as Greek, but he was never a labori- ous student. His father supplied him with means, and on coming of age he went to Venice, the headquarters of the evangelical movement in Italy. A tradition first published by Sand in 1678, and amplified by subsequent writers, makes Sozini the leading spirit in certain alleged theological conferences at Vicenza, about 1546, which are said to have forecast the main positions of the Unitarian heresy; but the whole account, including the story of the flight of Sozini, must be rejected as mythical. At this period the standpoint of Sozini was that of evangelical Protestantism ; his mental temper presents a singular union of enthusiastic piety with a love for the subtleties of theological speculation. It was at Chiavenna in 1547 that he came under the influence of a gentle mystic, Camillo of Sicily, surnamed " Renato," whose teaching anticipated at many points that of the early Quakers. Pursuing his religious travels, Sozini visited Switzerland, France, England, and Holland, returning to Switzerland at the close of 1548. He had commendatory letters to the Swiss churches from Nicolas Meyer, envoy from Wittenberg to Italy; but his family name was a sufficient passport, and wherever he went his personal charm won friends. We find him in 1549-50 at Geneva and Basel (with Sebastian Mister), but chiefly at Zurich, where he lodges with Pellican. He spends

eleven months (July 1550 to June 1551) at Wittenberg, at first under Melanchthon's roof, then with Johann Forster for the im- provement of his Hebrew. From Wittenberg Sozini re- turned to Zurich (end of 1551) after visiting Prague, Vienna, and Cracow. Political events attracted him back to Italy in June 1552. Two visits to Siena (where free- dom of speech was for the moment possible, owing to the shaking off of the Spanish yoke) brought him into fruitful contact with his young nephew Fausto, He was at Padua (not at Geneva, as is often said) at the date of Servetus's execution (27th October 1553). Thence he made his way to Basel (January 1554), Geneva (April), and Zurich (May), where he took up his abode.

Calvin, as well as Melanchthon, received Sozini with open arms. Melanchthon (though a phrase in one of his letters has been strangely misinterpreted) never regarded him with theological suspicion. To Calvin's keen glance Sozini's over-speculative tendency and the genuineness of his religious nature were equally apparent. A passage often quoted from one of Calvin's letters to Sozini (1st January 1552) has been construed as a breaking off of amicable intercourse; but, while more than once uneasy apprehensions arose in Calvin's mind, there was no breach of correspondence or of friendship. Of all the Reformers Bullinger was Sozini's closest intimate, his warmest and wisest friend. Sozini's theological difficulties turned upon the resurrection of the body, predestination, the ground of salvation (these were the points on which he corresponded with Calvin), the doctrinal basis of the original gospel (queries addressed to Bullinger), the nature of repentance

(to Rudolph Gualther), the sacraments (to Johann Wolff). Not till the fate of Servetus had directed his mind to the question of the Trinity did he throw out any doubts upon this subject. At Geneva, in April 1554, he had uttered incautious remarks on the common doctrine, emphasized in a subsequent letter to Martinengo, the Italian pastor. Bullinger, warned by several correspondents (including Calvin), questioned Sozini as to his faith, and received from him an explicitly orthodox confession, afterwards reduced to writing (15th July 1555), with a frank reserva- tion of the right of further inquiry. A month before this Sozini had been sent with Martino Muralto to

Basel to secure Ochino as pastor of the Italian church at Zurich. There can be little doubt that the minds of Sozini and Ochino (a thinker of the same order as Camillo, but with finer dialectic skill) acted powerfully on each other in the radical discussion of theological problems. Sozini lost his father in 1556, an event which involved him in pecuniary anxieties. ‘To what property he was entitled does not appear ; he got nothing under his father’s will. Fortified with the most influential introductions (including one from Calvin), he visited in 1558 the courts of Vienna and Cracow to obtain support for his appeal to the reigning duke of Florence. His object was to realize his own estate and secure that of his family. It is a sufficiently curious circumstance that Melanchthon’s letter introducing Sozini to Maximilian IJ. invokes the historic parallel of the emperor Constans rendering a hospitable reception to Athanasius, when he fled from Egypt to Treves. Well received out of Italy, Sozini (who does not appear to have got beyond Venice) found he could do nothing at home. The Inquisition had its eye on his family: his brother Cornelio was imprisoned at Romie; his brothers Celso and Camillo and his nephew Fausto were “reputati Luterani” at Siena, and Camillo had taken refuge in flight. In August 1559 Sozini returned to Zurich, and we hear little more of him. His brief career ended on 14th May 1562, at his lodging in the house of Hans Wyss, silk-weaver.

The news of his death reached his nephew at Lyons through Antonio Maria Besozzo. Fausto repaired to Zurich and got his uncle’s papers, comprising very little connected writing, but a good many notes. Fausto has so often been regarded as a plagiarist from Lelio that it may be well here to state that his debt to Lelio, somewhat over-estimated by himself, was twofold. (1) He derived from him in con- versation (1552-53) the germ of his theory of salvation ; (2) Lelio’s paraphrase (1561) of dépy% in John i. 1 as “the beginning of the gospel” gave Fausto a hint of Biblical exegesis by help of which he constructed a new Christology. Apart from these suggestions, Fausto owed nothing to Lelio except a curiously far-fetched interpretation of John viii. 58, and the stimulating remembrance of his pure character and brilliant gifts. The two men were of totally different genius. Lelio, impulsive and inquisitive, was in quest of the spiritual ground of religious truth ; the drier mind of Fausto sought in external authority a basis for the ethical teaching of Christianity.

Sozini’s extant writings are (1) De Sacramentis Dissertatio, four parts, 1560, and (2) De Resurrectione, a fragment. Both were first printed in F. ct L. Socini, item E. Soncri Tractatus, Amsterdam, 1654,16mo. To these may be added his Confession, 1555 (printed in Hottinger, Hist. Eccles. N. 7., vol. ix., sec. 16, part 5, 1667), and about twenty-four Ictters, some still unprinted ; but the most im- portant will be found in Illgen and Trechsel, and (the earliest) in the edition of Calvin’s works by Baum, Cunitz, and Reuss. Sand adds a Rhapsodia in Esatam Prophetam, of which nothing is known. Beza suspected that Sozini had a hand in the De Hereticis, an sint Persequendi, 1553, and to him has also been assigned the Contra Libellum Calvini, 1554; but these ascriptions were not made till his nephew had identified his name with active heresy, and are not supported by internal evidence. To Lelio also Beza assigned

(in 1567) an anonymous Fxplicatio (1562) of the proem of St John’s Gospel, which was the work of Fausto. This error, adopted by

Zanchi, has been the chief source of the misconception which repre- sents Lelio asa heresiarch. In Franc. Guinio’s Defensio Cath. Doct. de S. Trin., 1590-91, is an anonymous enwmeratio of motives for adhering to the doctrine of the Trinity, by some ascribed to Lelio, by others, with somewhat more probability, to Fausto.

For the life of L. Sozinithe best guide is Trechsel, Die Prot. Antitrin. vor F. Socin, vol. ii., 1844; but there are valuable materials in Ilgen, Vita L. Socini, 1814, and especially Symbole ad Vitam et Doctrinam L. Soc., &c., 1826. Wallace (Antitrin. Biog., 1850, ii. 63) gives the ordinary Unitarian view, relying on Bock, Da Porta, and Lubienecki; see also Bonet-Maury’s Early Sources of English Unit. Christ., 1884, chap. 9. Use has been made above -of unprinted sources.

Il. Favsro Paoro Sozzinz (1539-1604), theological writer, was born at Siena on 5th December 1539, the only son of Alessandro Sozzini, “ princeps subtilitatum,” by Agnese, daughter of Borghese Petrucci. He was thus descended on the one side from the long line of great lawyers, of whom Mariano the elder is traditionally said to have been the first heretic of the

family, on the other from Pandolfo Petrucci, the Cromwell of Siena. His father died in 1541 at the early age of thirty-one. Fausto re- ceived no regular education ; he was brought up at home with his sister Fillide. The influence of the able women of his family communicated a strong moral impress to his thought. His youth was spent in desultory reading at Scopeto, the country seat of his family. His early intel- lectual stimulus came from his uncle Celso, an esprit fort, though always nominally a Catholic, and the founder of the Accademia dei Sizienti (1554), of which Fausto was a member. In 1556 his grandfather's will made him inde- pendent by leaving him one-fourth of the family estates. Next year he was enrolled in the famous Accademia degli Intronati, the centre of the intellectual life of Siena. His academic name was "Tl Frastagliato"; he took as his badge 'un mare turbato da venti," with the motto '"turbant sed extollunt." About this time Panzirolo (De Claris Legg. Interpp., not published till 1637) describes him as a young man of fine talent, and bespeaks for him a legal career. But Fausto despised the law, and preferred the writing of sonnets. He was suspected of Lutheranism in 1558-59 ; soon after he came of age (1561) he went to Lyons, being probably employed there in mercantile business; he re- visited Italy after his uncle Lelio's death; we next find him enrolled for a short time in 1562 as a member of the Italian church at Geneva; he returned to Lyons next year. The evangelical position was not radical enough for him. His Hxplicatio (1562) of the proem to St John's Gospel shows that already he attributed to our Lord an official instead of an essential deity; a letter of 1563 rejects the natural immortality of man (a position developed long after in his disputation with Pucci). Towards the end of 1563 he conformed again to the Catholic Church, and spent the next twelve years in Italy, partly at court. Przypkowski, regardless of chronology, places him in the service of Francesco, grand-duke of Tuscany. His unpub- lished letters show that he was in the service only of Isabella de' Medici, Francesco's sister. This portion of his life is obscure, and he afterwards regarded it as wasted. Till 1567 he continued to give some attention to legal studies. He found time to write (1570) his treatise De Auctoritate S. Scripturx. In 1571 he was in Rome, per- haps with his patroness. At the end of 1575 he left Italy, and after Isabella's death (strangled by her husband in 1576) declined the overtures of Francesco, who pressed him to return. Francesco was probably aware of the motives which led Sozzini to quit Italy ; for there is every reason to believe the statement of Przypkowski that the grand- duke

agreed to protect him in the enjoyment of the in- come of his property so long as he published nothing in his own name. Sozzini now fixed himself at Basel, where he gave himself to close study of the Bible, began a poetic version of the Psalms, edited posthumous dialogues of Castellio, and, in spite of his increasing deafness, became a

recognized centre of theological discussion. One of these discussions was on the doctrine of salvation, with Jacques Couet. It resulted in a bulky treatise, De Jesu Christo Servatore (finished 12th July 1578), the circulation of which in manuscript appears to have commended his powers to the notice of Giorgio Biandrata (1515-1588), court physician in Transylvania, and an unscrupulous ecclesiastical wire- puller.

Transylvania had for a short time (1559-71) enjoyed religious liberty under an antitrinitarian prince, John Sigismund. But the existing ruler, Christopher Bathori, favoured the Jesuits, and it was an object with Biandrata to limit the “Judaic” tendencies of the antitrinitarian bishop, Francis David (1510-1579), with whom he had previously acted. By the alleged discovery of a stain upon Biandrata’s morals of the gravest sort his influence with David was destroyed. Now Sozzini’s scheme of doctrine encouraged the use of seemingly orthodox language in an heretical sense. Christ was to be called God, and invoked with divine honours, though without any inherent title to such homage, but as “un Dio subalterno, al quale in un dato tempo il Dio supremo cedette il governo del mondo” (Cant). It occurred to Biandrata that, if Sozzini could convert the eloquent David to this view, all would be well. Accordingly in November 1578 Sozzini reached Kolozsvar (Klausenburg), and did his best, during a visit of four months and a half under David’s roof, to teach him the doctrine of the invocation of Christ. Though Sozzini did not (as Biandrata desired) urge the absolute necessity of this invocation, the result was a public explosion on David’s part against the cultus of Christ in any shape or form. His trial followed, on a charge of innovation. Sozzini hurried off to Poland before it began. He cannot be ac- cused of a guilty complicity with what he calls the rage of Biandrata, for he was no party to the incarceration of David at Déva, where the old man miserably perished in prison. But he was willing that David should be

prohibited from preaching pending the decision of the controversy by a general synod; and his references to the case show that (as in the later instances of Jacobo Paleologo, Christian Franken, and Martin Seidel) theological aversions, though they never made him uncivil, froze up his kindness and blinded his perceptions of character. Biandrata ultimately conformed to the Catholic Church; yet as late as 1584 Sozzini, always constant to the leanings of friendship, sought his patronage for his treatise De Jesu Christi Natura, in reply to the Calvinist Andrew Wolan. The remainder _ (1579-1604) of Sozzini's life was spent in Poland. Excluded at first by his views on baptism from the Minor or Anti- trinitarian Church (anabaptist in its constitution), he ac- quired by degrees a predominant influence in its synods. He converted the Arians from their avowal of our Saviour's pre-existence and their refusal to honour Him by invoca- tion; he repressed the semi-Judaizers whom he could not convince. Through correspondence with his friends in official places he ruled also the policy of the Antitrinitarian Church of Transylvania. Forced to leave Cracow in 1583, he found a home with a Polish noble, Christopher Morsztyn, whose daughter Elizabeth he married (1586). She died in the following year, a few months after giving birth to ~T Biandrata was Sozzini's evil genius. Born of an old family in Piedmont and educated in France, Biandrata had attached himself to the left wing of Protestantism, and had moved here and there among the upper circles of the Reformed, depending for professional advance- ment on a special knowledge of the diseases of women. Driven east- wards a second time in 1558 (after fomenting antitrinitarian heresy in the Italian church of Geneva), he had for twenty years been the confi- dential adviser of ladies of the reigning house, first in Poland and then in Transylvania, In both countries he was a dexterous meddler in church affairs; his policy was the establishment of a kind of broad

church, with a confession nakedly Scriptural in its terms, and a resolute suppression of all compromising extremes.

sSOoOCcCYN Vs

a daughter, Agnese, afterwards the wife of Stanislau Wisz. owaty. In 1587 the grand-duke Francesco died, and to this event Sozzini's biographers attribute the loss of his Italian property. But he was on good terms with

Fran- cesco’s successor, and might have continued to receive hig rents had not family disputes arisen respecting the inter- pretation of his grandfather’s will. The holy office at Siena disinherited him in October 1590; but he was allowed a pension, which does not seem to have been paid. The failure of supplies from Italy dissolved the compact under which his works were to remain anonymous. He began to publish under his own name. was that in 1598 a mob expelled him from Cracow, wreck- ing his house and grossly ill-using his person. Friends gave him a ready welcome at Luslawice, 30 miles east from

The consequence

Cracow; and here, having long been troubled with colic

and the stone, he died on 4th March 1604. A limestone

block, with illegible inscriptions, marks his grave. Sozzini’s works, as edited by his grandson Andrew Wiszowaty and the learned printer F. Kuyper, are contained in two closely printed folios, Amsterdam, 1668. They are usually reckoned the first two volumes of the Bibliotheca Fratrum Polonorwm, but in fact the works of Crell and Schlichting preceded them in the series. They include all Sozzini’s extant theological writings,

‘except his essay On Predestination (in which he denies that God

foresees the actions of free agents), prefixed to Castellio’s Dialog: IV., 1578 (reprinted 1618), and his revision of a school manual, Instrumentum Doctrinarum Aristotelicwm, 1586. His pseudonyms, easily interpreted, were Felix Turpio Urbevetanus, Prosper Dysidzus, Gratianus Prosper, and Gratianus Turpio Gerapolensis (=Senensis), Some of his early poetry will be found in Ferentilli’s Sciclia di Stanze di Diverst Autori Toscani, 1579 (reprinted 1594); other specimens are given in Cantu, and in the Athenwum, 11th August 1877. Sozzini himself considered that his Contra Athcos, which perished in the riot at Cracow, was his ablest work. In later life he began, but left incomplete, more than one work intended to exhibit his system as a whole. His reputation.as a thinker must rest on (1) his De Auctoritate S. Seripture, and (2) his De Jesu Christo Servatore. The former was first published at Seville (1588) by Lopez, a Jesuit, who claimed it as

his own, but prefixed a preface in which, contrary to a fundamental position of Sozzini, he maintains that man by nature has a knowledge of God. A French version (1592) was approved by the ministers of Basel; and the English translation (1731) by Edward Coombe was under- taken in consequence of the commendation of the work in a charge (1728) by Bishop Smalbroke, who observes that Grotius had laid it under contribution in his De Veritate Christ. Rel. In a small compass it anticipates the whole argument of the ‘‘ credibility ” writers; but in trying it by modern tests it should be remembered that Sozzini regarded it (in 1581) as not adequately meeting the cardinal difficulties attending the proof of the Christian religion, and subsequently began to reconstruct its argument in his un- finished Lectiones Sacre. His treatise on salvation constitutes his main service to theology, placing orthodoxy and heresy in new relations of fundamental antagonism, and narrowing the conflict to the central interest of religion. Of the person of Christ in this treatise he says nothing; he deals exclusively with the work of Christ, which in his view operates upon man alone; and it is by the persistency with which this idea tends to recur that we must estimate the theological sagacity of Sozzini. Though his name has been attachcd to a school of opinion (Socinianism), he disclaimed the role ofa heresiarch, and declined to give his unreserved adhesion to any one sect. The confidence with which he relied upon the conclusions of his own mind has gained him the repute of a dogma- tist ; but it was his constant aim to reduce and simplify the funda-

mentals of Christianity, and it is not without ground that the memorial tablet at Siena (inscription by Brigidi, 1879) characterizes him as a vindicator of human reason against the supernatural. his non-theological doctrines the most important is his assertion of the unlawfulness, not only of war, but of the taking of human life in any circumstances. Hence the comparative mildness of his pro- osals for dealing with religious offenders; but it cannot be said that he had grasped the full idea of toleration. Hence too his con- tention that magisterial office is unlawful for a Christian.

For the biography of Sozzini the best materials are his letters. There is @ collection in his works; others are given by Cant; some are unpublished. In his ‘correspondence he delineates himself freely, not sparing his weak points of character or of attainment. ‘The earliest life, prefixed (with

engraved por- trait) to the works, is by Przypkowski (1636), translated into English by Bidle (1653). This is the foundation of the article by Bayle, the Memoirs by Toulmin

2 No trace is discoverable on the stone of the alleged epitaph—

‘Tota ruit Babylon: destruxit tecta Lutherus, Calvinus muros, sed fundamenta Socinus.”

Ss 0 C—

(1777), and_the Life by Wallace (Antitrin. Biog., 1850, ii. 306). The sketch by Cant in Gli Eretici d’Italia, 1866, vol. ii., gives a genealogy of the Sozzini (needing some correction). The best defence of Sozzini in his relations with David is by James Yates, in Christ. Pioneer, February 1834; a less favourable yiew is taken by the Hungarian biographer of David (Jakab, David F. Emleéke, 1879). Of his system, most generally known through the Racovian Catechism, 1605 (planned by Sozzini, but chiefly carried out by others, principally Schmalz; translated by Rees, 1818), there is a special study by Fock, Der Socintanismus, 1847. See also ‘The Sozzini and their School,” in Theol. Rev., 1879 (corrected in Christ. Life, 25th August 1883). Use has been made above of unpublished papers in the archives at Florence, with others in the archives, communal library, and collection of Padre Toti at Siena. (A. GO.)

SOCORRO, a town of the United States, in a county of the same name in New Mexico, 76 miles south of Albu- querque junction on the Atchison, Topeka, and Santa Fé Railroad, is beautifully situated in the Rio Grande valley. It is the centre of a silver and lead mining district, and has a stamp mill and smelting-works, JF ruit-growing and cattle-breeding are prosecuted in the vicinity. The popula- tion, including old and new town, was about 5000 in 1887.

SOCOTRA, or Socotora (Arabic Sokotrd), an island of the Indian Ocean, 150 miles from Cape Gardafui and about 220 from the Arabian coast. Its length from east to west is 71 miles, its greatest breadth 22. A plain 2 to 4 miles wide skirts the greater part of the coast, while the interior is mountainous. The granite peaks behind Tamarida (a village on the north

coast and the chief place in the island, but now much decayed) rise to a height of 4000 feet, and a limestone chain connected with these runs north and south with an average height of about 1900 feet. The climate is moist, but not unhealthy, with much rain, especially during the south-west monsoon. At this season the temperature rises to 80° or even 95°, but on the whole the heat is not excessive. The scenery of the island is very striking, with bare rocky heights and fertile valleys; but there is little cultivation, the inhabitants living mainly by their vast flocks of sheep and goats, or on dates, home- grown and imported. Milch cows are numerous near Tamarida, The population is about 5000, of two distinct types. The nomad inhabitants of the uplands are a peculiar race, well built, with good features and long curling but not woolly hair; they resemble neither the Arabs nor the somal. In Tamarida and other villages and towards the eastern end of the island the population is a mixture of Arab, African, and other elements, even including Portu- guese. The native speech is not intelligible to ordinary Arabs, but Wellsted says that it can sometimes be made out by Arabs from the opposite (Mahra) coast. ‘In fact,

according to Ibn Mojawir and Hamdant, the Socotrans in

the Middle Ages were regarded as Mahra and spoke the Mahra dialect. Their way of life is rude and simple in the extreme, but they are hospitable and generally well- behaved, though they have almost no government; they are nominally dependent on the sultan of Keshin. A certain dependence (at least of places on the coast) on some sove- reign of the Arabian coast has endured for many centuries, except during the short Portuguese occupation of Tamarida by Albuquerque. From 1876 to 1886 the sultan of Keshin was bound by treaty not to cede the island to a foreign power or allow settlements on it without the consent of England. In 1886 it was formally annexed by Great Britain.

The fauna and flora of Socotra are peculiar. As regards mammalia the civet cat is found, but the ordinary wild beasts of Arabia are unknown. The flora was studied by Professor Bailey Balfour in 1880, and his account of it is about to be published by the Royal Society of Edinburgh. The most valuable vegetable products are now, as in the Middle Ages, aloes and dragon’s-blood. The Socotran aloes (the French chicotin) is esteemed the

best in the world When unadulterated. In old times the ambergris of Socotra was also famous.

Socotra was known to the ancients as the isle of Dioscorides ; this name, and that by which the island is now known, are usually

traced back to a Sanscrit form, Dvipa-Sakhddhdra, ‘the island abode of bliss,”” which again suggests an identification with the

SOc 231

vijoot evdaluoves of Agatharchides (§ 103). The Periplus of the Erythrean Sea speaks of the island as peopled only in one part by a mixed race of Arab, Indian, and Greek traders. It was subject to the king of the Incense Country, and was a meeting-place of Arabian and Indian ships. Cosmas in the 6th century says that the people spoke Greek and were largely Christian, with a bishop sent from Persia. The Arab geographers also had a tradition of an early Greek settlement (which they naturally ascribe to Alex- ander), but also of later Persian influence, followed by a settlement of Mahra tribes, who partly adopted Christianity. The Socotrans remained Nestorian Christians, with a bishop under the metro- politan of Persia, through the Middle Ages (Assemani, B.0., ii. 459 ; comp. Mohallebi, in Abulfeda, p. 871); but in their isolated position they have gradually lost all trace of Christianity except reverence for the cross, and practise the old South Arabian moon worship. ‘There was much more at least of the forms of Christ- ianity when Europeans first visited the island in the 16th century. In the Middle Ages Socotra was a station of the Indian corsairs who harassed the Arab trade with the far East. The population seems then to have been much larger; Arabian writers estimate the fighting men at 10,000.

See, for the history of Socotra, Yule, Marco Polo, ii. 400 sq., and, besides the authorities there cited, Yakut, s.v.; Hamdani, p. 52; Kazwinl, ii. 54. For the state of the island at the beginning of the 18th century, see the account of the French expedition to Yemen in 1708 (Viaggio nell’ Arabia Felice, Venice, 1721) ; and, for the present century, Wellsted, City of the Caliphs, vol. ii. (1840). For the topography, &c., see Red Sea Pilot, 2d ed., 1882.

SOCRATES, son of the statuary Sophroniscus and of the midwife Pheenarete, was born at Athens, not earlier than 471 nor later than May or June 469 B.c. Asa youth he received the customary instruction in gymnastic and music ; and in after years he made himself acquainted with geometry and astronomy and studied the methods and the doctrines of the leaders of Greek thought and culture. He began life as a sculptor; and in the 2d century a.D. a group of the Graces, supposed to be his work, was still to be seen on the road to the Acropolis. But he soon aban- doned art and gave himself to what may best be called education, conceiving that he had a divine commission, witnessed by oracles, dreams, and signs, not indeed to teach any positive doctrine, but to convict men of ignorance mis- taking itself for knowledge, and by so doing to promote their intellectual and moral improvement. He was on terms of intimacy with some of the most distinguished of his Athenian contemporaries, and, at any rate in later life, was personally known to very many of his fellow-citizens. His domestic relations were, it is said, unhappy. The shrewishness of his wife Xanthippe became proverbial with the ancients, as it still is with ourselves. Aristotle, in his remarks upon genius and its degeneracy (/het., ii. 15), speaks of Socrates's sons as dull and fatuous; and in Xenophon's Memorabilia, one of them, Lamprocles, re- ceives a formal rebuke for undutiful behaviour towards his mother. ©

Socrates served as a hoplite at Potideea (432-429), where Public on one occasion he saved the life of Alcibiades, at Delium life.

(424), and at Amphipolis (422). In these campaigns his bravery and endurance were conspicuous. But, while he thus performed the ordinary duties of a Greek citizen with credit, he neither attained nor sought political position. His "divine voice," he said, had warned him to refrain from politics, presumably because office would have en- tailed the sacrifice of his principles and the abandonment of his proper vocation. Yet in 406 he was a member of the senate ; and on the first day of the trial of the victors of Arginusx, being president of the prytanes, he resisted — first, in conjunction with his colleagues, afterwards, when they yielded, alone—the illegal and unconstitutional pro- posal of Callixenus, that the fate of the eight generals should be decided by a single vote of the assembly. Not less courageous than this opposition to the "civium ardor prava jubentium" was

his disregard of the “vultus instantis tyranni” two years later. During the reign of terror of 404 the Thirty, anxious to implicate in their crimes men of repute who might otherwise have opposed their plans, ordered five citizens, one of whom was Socrates, to go to

Authori- ties.

precluded from dogmatic exposition, we have in the “Aropvynpovetpata or Memoirs and other works of Xeno- phon records of Socrates’s conversation, and in the dialogues of Plato refined applications of his method. Xenophon, having no philosophical views of his own to develop, and no imagination to lead him astray,—being, in fact, to

Salamis and bring thence their destined victim Leon. Socrates alone disobeyed. But, though he was exception- ally obnoxious to the Thirty,—as appears, not only in this incident, but also in their threat of punishment under a special ordinance forbidding “the teaching of the art of argument,”—it was reserved for the reconstituted demo- cracy to bring him to trial and to put him to death. In 399, four years after the restoration and the amnesty, he was indicted as an offender against public morality. His accusers were Meletus the poet, Anytus the tanner, and Lycon the orator, all of them members of the democratic or patriot party who had returned from Phyle with Thrasy- pulus. The accusation ran thus: “Socrates is guilty, firstly, of denying the gods recognized by the state and introducing new divinities, and secondly, of corrupting the young.” In his unpremeditated defence, so far from seek- ing to conciliate his judges, Socrates defied them. He was found guilty by 280 votes, it is supposed, against 220. Meletus having called for capital punishment, it now rested with the accused to make a counter-proposition ; and there can be little doubt that, had Socrates without further re- mark suggested some smaller but yet substantial penalty, the proposal would have been accepted. But, to the amaze- ment of the judges and the distress of his friends, Socrates proudly declared that for the services which he had ren- dered to the city he deserved, not punishment, but the reward of a public benefactor,—maintenance in the Pry- taneum at the cost of the state; and, although at the close of his speech he professed himself willing to pay a fine of one mina, and upon the urgent entreaties of

his friends raised the amount of his offer to thirty minas, he made no attempt to disguise his indifference to the result. His attitude exasperated the judges, and the penalty of death was decreed by an increased majority. Then in a short address Socrates declared his contentment with his own conduct and with the sentence. Whether death was a dreamless sleep or a new life in Hades, where he would have opportunities of testing the wisdom of the heroes and the sages of antiquity, in either case he esteemed it a gain to die. Inthe same spirit he refused to take advantage of a scheme arranged by his friend Crito for an escape from prison. Under ordinary circumstances the condemned criminal drank the cup of hemlock on the day after the

trial; but in the case of Socrates the rule that during.

the absence of the sacred ship sent annually to Delos no one should be put to death caused an exceptional delay. For thirty days he remained in imprisonment, receiving his intimates and conversing with them in his accustomed manner. How in his last conversation he argued that the wise man will regard approaching death with a cheer- ful confidence Plato relates in the Phedo; and, while the central argument—which rests the doctrine of the soul's immortality upon the theory of ideas—must be accounted Platonic, in all other respects the narrative, though not that of an eye-witness, has the air of accuracy and truth.

But what were the personal characteristics which won for this man, poor in worldly goods, the affectionate regard of the best of his contemporaries? Why was it that the Athenians, forgetting his loyal performance of civic duties, his virtuous life, and his disinterested anxiety for their welfare, brought him to trial, condemned him, put him to death? What were the principles upon which his teach- ing rested, and what was the message which, instant in season, out of season, he carried to his countrymen? How were his principles interpreted by his followers, and what influence did his teaching exert upon subsequent specula- tion? These are the questions which demand considera- tion in the present article.

Happily, though Socrates left no writings behind him, and indeed, as will hereafter appear, was by his principles

witness. The “Atopvnpovedpara or Memorabilia are in- deed confessedly apologetic, and it is easy to see that nothing is introduced which might embitter those who, hating Socrates, were ready to persecute the Socratics ; but the plain, straightforward narrative of Socrates’s talk, on many occasions, with many dissimilar interlocutors, carries with it in its simplicity and congruity the evidence of sub- stantial justice and truth. Plato, though he understood his master better, is a less trustworthy authority, as he makes Socrates the mouthpiece of his own more advanced and even antagonistic doctrine. Yet to all appearance the Apology is a careful and exact account of Socrates’s habits and principles of action ; the earlier dialogues, those

Socrates what Boswell was to Johnson,—is an excellent

which are commonly called “Socratic,” represent, with such changes only as are necessitated by their form, Socrates’s method ; and, if in the later and more important dialogues the doctrine is the doctrine of Plato, echoes of the master’s teaching are still discoverable, approving themselves as such by their accord with the Xenophontean testimony. In the face of these two principal witnesses other evidence is of small importance.

Personal Characteristics. —What, then, were the personal characteristics of the man? Outwardly his presence was Personal mean and his countenance grotesque. Short of stature, appear thick-necked, and somewhat corpulent, with prominent ®™™ eyes, with nose uptumed and nostrils outspread, with large mouth and coarse lips, he seemed the embodiment of sensu- ality and even stupidity. Inwardly he was, as his friends Moral knew, “so pious that he did nothing without taking qualities counsel of the gods, so just that he never did an injury to any man, whilst he was the benefactor of his associates, so temperate that he never preferred pleasure to right, so wise that in judging of good and evil he was never at fault,—in a word, the best and the happiest of men.” “His self-control was absolute; his powers of endurance were unfailing ; he had so schooled himself to moderation that his scanty means satisfied all his wants.” “To want nothing,” he said himself, “is divine ; to want as little as possible is the nearest possible approach to the divine life”; and accordingly he practised temperance and self- denial to a degree which some thought ostentatious and affected. Yet

the hearty enjoyment of social pleasures was another of his marked characteristics ; for to abstain from innocent gratification from fear of falling into excess would have seemed to him to imply either a pedantic formalism or a lack of real self-control. In short, his strength of will, if by its very perfection it led to his theoretical identification of virtue and knowledge, secured him in practice against the ascetic extravagances of his associate Antisthenes.

The intellectual gifts of Socrates were hardly less re- me markable than his moral virtues, Naturally observant, i. acute, and thoughtful, he developed these qualities bee constant and systematic use. The exercise of the mental powers was, he conceived, no mere occupation of leisure hours, but rather a sacred and ever-present duty ; because, moral error being intellectual error translated into act, he who would live virtuously must first rid himself of ignor- ance and folly. He had, it may be conjectured, but little turn for philosophical speculation; yet by the careful study of the ethical problems which met him in himself and in others he acquired a remarkable tact in dealing with questions of practical morality ; and in the course of

the lifelong war which he waged against vagueness of thought and laxity of speech he made: himself a singularly apt and ready reasoner.

While he regarded the improvement, not only of himself but also of others, as a task divinely appointed to him, there was in his demeanour nothing exclusive or pharisai- cal. On the contrary, deeply conscious of his own hmita- tions and infirmities, he felt and cherished a profound sympathy with erring humanity, and loved with a love \passing the love of women fellow-men who had not learnt, as he had done, to overcome human frailties and weak- nesses. Nevertheless great wrongs roused in him a righteous indignation which sometimes found expression in fierce and angry rebuke. Indeed it would seem that Plato in his idealized portrait gives his hero credit not only for a deeper philosophical insight but also for a greater urbanity than facts warranted. Hence, whilst those who knew him best met his affection with a regard equal to his own, there were, as will be seen hereafter, some who never forgave his stern reproofs, and many who regarded him as an impertinent busybody.

He was a true patriot. Deeply sensible of his debt to the city in which he had been born and bred, he thought that in giving his life to the spread of sounder views in regard to ethical and political subjects he made no more than an imperfect return; and, when in the exercise of constitutional authority that city brought him to trial and threatened him with death, it was not so much his local attachment, strong though that sentiment was, as rather his sense of duty which forbade him to retire into exile before the trial began, to acquiesce in a sentence of banish- ment when the verdict had been given against him, and to accept the opportunity of escape which was offered him during his imprisonment. Yet his patriotism had none of the narrowness which was characteristic of the patriotism of his Greek contemporaries. His generous benevolence and unaffected philanthropy taught him to overstep the limits of the Athenian demus and the Hellenic race, and to regard himself as a "'citizen of the world."

He was blest with an all-pervading humour, a subtle but kindly appreciation of the incongruities of human nature and conduct. In a less robust character this quality might have degenerated into sentimentality or cynicism ; in Socrates, who had not a trace of either, it showed itself principally in what his contemporaries knew as his "accustomed irony." Profoundly sensible of the in- consistencies of his own thoughts and words and actions, and shrewdly suspecting that the like inconsistencies were to be found in other men, he was careful always to place himself upon the standpoint of ignorance and to invite others to join him there, in order that, proving all things, he and they might hold fast that which is good. "' Intel- lectually the acutest man of his age," says W. H. Thompson in a brilliant and instructive appendix to his edition of Plato's Phedrus, "he represents himself in all companies as the dullest person present. Morally the purest, he affects to be the slave of passion, and borrows the language of gallantry to describe a benevolence too exalted for the comprehension of his contemporaries. He is by turns an eparris, a mpoaywy6s, a paotpoTds, a paevtixds, disguising the sanctity of his true vocation by names suggestive of vile or ridiculous images. The same spirit of whimsical paradox leads him, in Xenophon's Banquet, to argue that his own satyr-like visage was superior in beauty to that of the handsomest man present. That this irony was to some extent calculated is more than probable ; it disarmed ridicule by anticipating it; it allayed jealousy and propi- tiated envy ; and it possibly procured him

admission into gay circles from which a more solemn teacher would have been excluded. But it had for its basis a real greatness

of soul, a hearty and unaffected disregard of public opinion, a perfect disinterestedness, an entire abnegation of self. He made himself a fool that others by his folly might be made wise; he humbled himself to the level of those among whom his work lay that he might raise some few among them to his own level; he was ‘all things to all men, if by any means he might win some.’” It would seem that this humorous depreciation of his own great qualities, this pretence of being no better than his neigh- bours, led to grave misapprehension amongst his contem- poraries. That it was the foundation of the slanders of the Peripatetic Aristoxenus can hardly be doubted.

Socrates was further a nian of sincere and fervent piety. Piety.

‘No one,” says Xenophon, “ever knew of his doing or saying anything profane or unholy.” There was indeed in the popular mythology much which he could not accept. It was incredible, he argued, that the gods should have committed acts which would be disgraceful in the worst of men. Such stories, then, must be regarded as the inventions of lying poets. But, when he had thus purified the con- temporary polytheism, he was able to reconcile it with his own steadfast belief in a Supreme Being, the intelligent and beneficent Creator of the universe, and to find in the national ritual the means of satisfying his religious aspira- tions. For proof of the existence of ‘‘the divine,” he appealed to the providential arrangement of nature, to the universality of the belief, and to the revelations and warn- ings which are given to men through signs and oracles. Thinking that the soul of man partook of the divine, he maintained the doctrine of its immortality as an article of faith, but not of knowledge. While he held that, the gods alone knowing what is for man’s benefit, nan should pray, not for particular goods, but only for that which is good, he was regular in prayer and punctual in sacrifice. He looked to oracles and signs for guidance in those matters, and in those matters only, which could not be resolved by experience and judgment, and he further supposed himself to receive special warnings of a mantic character through what he called his “divine sign” (Sarpoviov, Saupdviov onpetov).

Socrates’s frequent references to his “divine sign” were, says Divine Xenophon, the origin of the charge of “introducing new divinities” sign.

brought against him by his accusers, and in early Christian times, amongst Neoplatonic philosophers and fathers of the church, gave rise to the notion that he supposed himself to be attended by a “genius” or “demon.” Similarly in our own day spiritualists have attributed to him the belief—which they justify—in “an intelligent spiritual being who accompanied him through life,—in other words, a guardian spirit” (A. R. Wallace). But the very pre- cise testimony of Xenophon and Plato shows plainly that Socrates did not regard his “customary sign” either as a divinity or as a genius. According to Xenophon, the sign was a warning, either to do or not to do which it would be folly to neglect, not superseding ordinary prudence, but dealing with those uncertainties in respect of which other men found guidance in oracles and tokens ; Socrates believed in it profoundly, and never disobeyed it. According to Plato, the sign was a “voice” which warned Socrates to refrain from some act which he contemplated; he heard it frequently and on the most trifling occasions ; the phenomenon dated from his early years, and was, so far as he knew, peculiar to himself. These statements have been variously interpreted. Thus it has been maintained that, in laying claim to supernatural revelations, Socrates (1) committed a pious fraud, (2) indulged his “accustomed irony,” (3) recognized the voice of conscience, (4) indicated a general belief in a divine mission, (5) described “the inward voice of his individual tact, which in consequence partly of his experience and penetration, partly of his knowledge of himself and exact apprecia- tion of what was in harmony with his individuality, had attained to an unusual accuracy,” (6) was mad (“était fou”), being subject not only to hallucinations of sense but also to aberrations of reason. Xenophon’s testimony that Socrates was plainly sincere in his belief excludes the first and the second of these theories ; the char- acter of the warnings given, which are always concerned, not with the moral worth of actions, but with their uncertain results, warrants the rejection of the third and the fourth; the fifth, while it suffi- ciently accounts for the matter of the warning, leaves unexplained its manner, the vocal utterance; the sixth, while it plausibly ex-

plains the manner of the warning, goes beyond the facts when it attributes to it irrationality of matter. It remains for us, then, modifying the fifth hypothesis, that of Diderot, Zeller, and others, and the sixth, that of Lélut and Littré, and combining the two, to suppose that Socrates was subject, not indeed to delusions of mind, but to hallucinations of the sense of hearing, so that the rational suggestions of his own brain, exceptionally valuable in consequence of the accuracy and delicacy of his highly cultivated tact, seemed to him to be projected without him, and to be returned to him through the outward ear. It appears that, though in some of the best known instances—for example, those of Cowper and Sidney Walker—hallucinations of the sense of hearing, otherwise closely resembling Socrates's "divine sign," have been accompanied by partial derangement of reason, cases are not wanting in which "the thoughts transformed into external scnsorial impressions"

SOCRATIS

and the senate. Again, there were others who saw in Socrates at once master, counsellor, and friend, and hoped by associating with him "to become good men and true capable of doing their duty by house and household, by relations and friends, by city and fellow-citizens" (Xenophon). Finally, there was a little knot of intimates who having something of Socrates's enthusiasm, entered more deeply than the rest into his principles, and, when he died, transmitted them to the next generation. Yet even those who belonged to this inner circle were united, not by any common doctrine, but by a conmmon admiration for their master's intellect and character.

are perfectly rational. The eccentricity of Socrates's life was not less remark- able than the oddity of his appearance and the irony of his

For the paradoxes of Socrates's personality and the Plato's eccentricity of his behaviour, if they offended the many, Pane- fascinated the few. "It is not easy for a man in my con-5!™%

Mode of life.

conversation. His whole time was spent in public,—in the market-place, the streets, the gymnasia. Thinking with Dr Johnson that “a great city is the school for studying life,” he had no liking for the country, and seldom passed the gates. ‘Fields and trees,” Plato makes him say, “‘won’t teach me anything; the life of the streets will.” He talked to all comers,—to the craftsman and the artist as willingly as to the poet or the politician,—questioning them about their affairs, about the processes of their several occupations, about their notions of morality, in a word, about familiar matters in which they might be expected to take an interest. The ostensible purpose of these inter- rogatories was to test, and thus either refute or explain, the famous oracle which had pronounced him the wisest of men. Conscious of his own ignorance, he had at first imagined that the God was mistaken. When, however, experience showed that those who esteemed themselves wise were unable to give an account of their knowledge, he had to admit that, as the oracle had said, he was wiser than others, in so far as, whilst they, being ignorant, sup- posed themselves to know, he, being ignorant, was aware of his ignorance. Such, according to the Apology, was Socrates’s account of his procedure and its results. But it is easy to see that the statement is coloured by the accus- tomed irony. When in the same speech Socrates tells his judges that he would never from fear of death or any other motive disobey the command of the god, and that, if they put him to death, the loss would be, not his, but theirs, since they would not readily find any one to take his place, it becomes plain that he conceived himself to hold a commission to educate, and was consciously seeking the intellectual and moral improvement of his countrymen. His end could not be achieved without the sacrifice of self. His meat and drink were of the poorest; summer and winter his coat was the same; he was shoeless and shirt- less. ‘A slave whose master made him live as you do,” says a sophist in the Memorabilia, “would run away.” But by the surrender of the luxuries and the comforts of life Socrates secured for himself the independence which was necessary that he might go about his appointed business, and therewith he was content.

but in other ways also.

dition,” says the intoxicated Alcibiades in Plato’s Sym- posium, “to describe the singularity of Socrates’s character, But I will try to tell his

praises in similitudes. He is like the piping Silenes in the statuaries' shops, which, when you open them, are found to contain images of gods, Or, again, he is like the satyr Marsyas, not only in out- ward appearance—that, Socrates, you will yourself allow— Like him, you are given to frolic, —I can produce evidence to that; and, above all, like him, you are a wonderful musician. Only there is this difference,—what he does with the help of his instrument you do with mere words ; for whatsoever man, woman, or child hears you, or even a feeble report of what you have said, is struck with awe and possessed with admiration. As for myself, were I not afraid that you would think me more drunk than I am, I would tell you on oath how his words have moved me,—ay, and how they move me still. When I listen to him my heart beats with a more than Corybantic excitement; he has only to speak and my tears flow. Orators, such as Pericles, never moved me in this way,—never roused my soul to the thought of my servile condition ; but this Marsyas makes me think that life is not worth living so long as Iam what Iam. Even now, if I were to listen, I could not resist. So there is nothing for me but to stop my ears against this siren's song and fly for my life, that I may not grow old sitting at his feet. No one would think that I had any shame in me; but I am ashamed in the presence of Socrates."

The Accusation and its Causes.—The life led by Socrates Popular

was not likely to win for him either the affection or the esteem of the vulgar. Those who did not know him per- sonally, seeing him with the eyes of the comic poets, con- ceived him as a "visionary" (uerewpoAdyos) and a "bore" (ad0Aéoxs). Those who had faced him in argument, even if they had not smarted under his rebukes, had at any rate winced under his interrogatory, and regarded him in con- sequence with feelings of dislike and fear. But the eccen- tricity of his genius and the ill-will borne towards him by individuals are not of themselves sufficient to account for the tragedy of 399. It thus becomes necessary to study

judices.

the circumstances of the trial, and to investigate the

Contem- His message was to all, but it was variously received. | motives which led the accusers to seek his death and the eal Those who heard him

perforce and occasionally were apt | people of Athens to acquiesce in it.
vents, +e regard his teaching either with indifference or with irri-| Socrates was accused (1) of denying the gods recog: Theat

tation,—with indifference if, as might be, they failed to | nized by the state and introducing instead of them strange cusation

see in the elenchus anything more than elaborate trifling ; with irritation if, as was probable, they perceived that, in spite of his assumed ignorance, Socrates was well aware of the result to which their enforced answers tended. Amongst those who deliberately sought and sedulously cultivated his acquaintance there were some who attached themselves to him as they might have attached themselves to any ordinary sophist, conceiving that by temporary contact with so acute a reasoner they would best prepare themselves for the logomachies of the law courts, the assembly,

divinities (Sarjdvic), and (2) of corrupting the young. The first of these charges rested upon the notorious fact that he supposed himself to be guided by a divine visitant or sign (Saiudveov). The second, Xenophon tells us, was supported by a series of particular allegations,—(a) that he taught his associates to despise the institutions of the state, and especially election by lot; (6) that he had numbered amongst his associates Critias and Alcibiades, the most dangerous of the representatives of the oligarchical and democratical parties respectively ; (c) that he taught the

th

k-

of 403. | idiosyncrasies were more than ever familiar, and when the

S OC hes 1 fs

young to disobey parents and guardians and to prefer his own authority to theirs; (d) that he was in the habit of quoting mischievous passages of Homer and Hesiod to the

prejudice of morality and democracy.

It is plain that the defence was not calculated to con- | Nevertheless, it is at first sight * difficult to understand how an adverse verdict became

ciliate a hostile jury.

possible. If Socrates rejected portions of the conventional mythology, he accepted the established faith and performed its offices with exemplary regularity. If he talked of a Sayoviov, the daudviov was no new divinity, but a mantic sign divinely accorded to him, presumably by the gods of the state. If he questioned the propriety of certain of the institutions of Athens, he was prepared to yield an un- hesitating obedience to all. He had never counténanced the misdeeds of Critias and Alcibiades, and indeed, by a sharp censure, had earned the undying hatred of one of them. Duty to parents he inculcated as he inculcated other virtues; and, if he made the son wiser than the father, surely that was not a fault. The citation of a few lines from the poets ought not to weigh against the clear evidence of his large-hearted patriotism ; and it might be suspected that the accuser had strangely misrepresented his application of the familiar words.

To the modern reader Xenophon’s reply, of which the foregoing paragraph is in effect a summary, will prob- ably seem sufficient, and more than sufficient. But it must not be forgotten that Athenians of the old school approached the subject from an entirely different point of view. Socrates was in all things an innovator,—in reli- gion, inasmuch as he sought to eliminate from the theology of his contemporaries “those lies which poets tell”; in politics, inasmuch as he distrusted several institutions dear to Athenian democracy; in education, inasmuch as he waged war against authority, and in a certain sense made each man the measure of his own actions. It is because Socrates was an innovator that we, who see in him the founder of philosophical inquiry, regard him as a great man; it was because Socrates was an innovator that old- fashioned Athenians, who saw in the new-fangled culture the origin of all their recent distresses and disasters, re-garded him as a great criminal. It is, then, after all in no Wise strange that a majority was found first to pronounce

him guilty, and afterwards, when he refused to make any

submission and professed himself indifferent to any miti- gation of the penalty, to pass upon him the sentence of death. That the verdict and the sentence were not in any way illegal is generally acknowledged.

But, though the popular distrust of eccentricity, the irri-

| tation of individuals and groups of individuals, the attitude

of Socrates himself, and the prevalent dislike of the intel- lectual movement which he represented go far to account for the result of the trial, they do not explain the occasion of the attack. Socrates's oddity and brusquerie were no new things; yet in the past, though they had made

_ him unpopular, they had not brought him into the courts. _ His sturdy resistance to the demus in 406 and to the _ Thirty in 404 had passed, if not unnoticed, at all events

unpunished, His political heresies and general unortho- doxy had not caused him to be excluded from the amnesty Why was it, then, that in 399, when Socrates's

constitution had been restored, the toleration hitherto ex- tended to him was withdrawn? What were the special circumstances which induced three members of the patriot

| party, two of them leading politicians, to unite their efforts , 2gainst one who apparently was so little formidable ?

For an answer to this question it is necessary to look to the history of Athenian politics. Besides the oligarchical

4 party, properly so called, which in 411 was represented by

the Four Hundred and in 404 by the Thirty, and the de. mocratical party, which returned to power in 410 and in 403, there was at Athens during the last years of the Peloponnesian War a party of "moderate oligarchs," antagonistic to both. It was to secure the cooperation of the moderate party

that the Four Hundred in 411 promised to constitute the Five Thousand, and that the Thirty in 404 actually constituted the Three Thousand. It was in the hope of realizing the aspirations of the moderate party that Theramenes, its most prominent representative, allied himself, first with the Four Hundred, afterwards with the Thirty. In 411 the policy of Theramenes was temporarily successful, the Five Thousand superseding the Four Hun- dred. In 404 the Thirty outwitted him ; for, though they acted upon his advice so far as to constitute the Three Thousand, they were careful to keep all real power in their own hands. But on both occasions the " polity"—for such, in the Aristotelian sense of the term, the constitution of 411-410 was, and the constitution of 404-403 professed to be—was insecurely based, so that it was not long before the "unmixed democracy " was restored. The programme of the '' moderates "—which included (1) the limitation of

'the franchise, by the exclusion of those who were unable

to provide themselves with the panoply of a hoplite and thus to render to the city substantial service, (2) the abolition of payment for the performance of political functions, and, as it would seem, (3) the disuse of the lot in the election of magistrates—found especial favour with the intellectual class. Thus Alcibiades and Antiphon were amongst its promoters, and Thucydides commends the con- stitution established after the fall of the Four Hundred as the best which in his time Athens had enjoyed. Now it is expressly stated that Socrates disliked election by lot ; it is certain that, regarding paid educational service as a species of prostitution, he would account paid political service not a whit less odious; and the stress laid by the accuser upon the Homeric quotation (Iliad, ii. 188-202) —which ends with the lines damdw', drpéuas foo, Kal dru poOov dxove of o€0 Péprepol cious od S darroXenos Kal avaXdkis, ore ror' év rodgum évaptOpw0s ovr' evi BovrAyn— becomes intelligible if we may suppose that Socrates, like Theramenes, wished to restrict the franchise to those who were rich enough to serve as hoplites at their own expense. Thus, as might have been anticipated, Socrates was a "moderate," and the treatment which he received from both the extreme parties suggests—even if with Grote we reject the story told by Diodorus (xiv. 5), how, when Thera- menes was dragged from the altar, Socrates attempted a rescue—that his sympathy with the moderate party was pronounced and notorious. Even in the moment of

demo- cratic triumph the ‘“ moderates” made themselves heard, Phormisius proposing that those alone should exercise the franchise who possessed land in Attica; and it is reason- able to suppose that their position was stronger in 399 than in 403. These considerations seem to indicate an easy explanation of the indictment of Socrates by the democratic politicians, It was a blow struck at the “moderates,” Socrates being singled out for attack because, though not a professional politician, he was the very type of the malcon- tent party, and had done much, probably more than any man living, to make and to foster views which, if not in the strict sense of the term oligarchical, were confessedly hostile to the ‘‘unmixed democracy.” His eccentricity and heterodoxy, as well as the personal animosities which he had provoked, doubtless contributed, as his accusers had foreseen, to bring about the conviction; but, in the judg- ment of the present writer, it was the fear of what may be called “philosophical radicalism” which prompted the action of Meletus, Anytus, and Lycon. The result did not disappoint their expectations. The friends of Soérates

Theory of educa- tion.

Dialect- ical method.

Its two pro- cesses.

236 jo ©) “Om

abandoned the struggle and retired into exile ; and, when they returned to Athens, the most prominent of them, Plato, was careful to confine himself to theory, and to announce in emphatic terms his withdrawal from the practical politics of his native city.

Method and Doctrine.—Socrates was not a “philosopher,” nor yet a ‘‘ teacher,” but rather an “educator,” having for his function ‘* to rouse, persuade, and rebuke ” (Plato, Apology, 30 EK). Hence, in examining his life’s work it is proper to ask, not What was his philosophy ? but What was his theory, and what was his practice, of education? It is true that he was brought to his theory of education by the. study of previous philosophies, and that his practice led to the Platonic revival; but to attribute to him philosophy, except in that loose sense in which philosophy: is ascribed to

one who, denying the existence of such a thing, can give an account of his disbelief, is misleading and even erroneous.

Socrates's theory of education had for its basis a profound and consistent scepticism ; that is to say, he not only rejected the con- flicting theories of the physicists,—of whom ‘‘some conceived existence as a unity, others as a plurality ; some affirmed perpetual motion, others perpetual rest ; some declared becoming and perish- ing to be universal, others altogether denied such things,”—but also condemned, as a futile attempt to transcend the limitations of human intelligence, their ¢:Aocodia, their “ pursuit of knowledge for its own sake.” Unconsciously, or more probably consciously, Socrates rested his scepticism upon the Protagorean doctrine that man is the measure of his own sensations and feelings , whence he inferred, not only that knowledge such as the philosophers had sought, certain knowledge of nature and its laws, was unattainable, put also that neither he nor any other person had authority to overbear the opinions of another, or power to convey instruction to one who haditnot. Accordingly, whereas Protagoras and others, abandoning physical speculation and coming forward as teachers of culture, claimed for themselves in this new field power to instruct and authority to dogmatize, Socrates, unable to reconcile himself to this inconsistency, proceeded with the ‘investigation of prin- ciples until he found a resting-place, a rod o7&, in the distinction between good andevil. While all opinions were equally true, of those opinions which were capable of being translated into act some, he conceived, were as working hypotheses more serviceable than others. It was here that the function of such a one as him- self began. Though he had neither the right nor the power to force his opinions upon another, he might by a systematic inter- rogatory lead another to substitute a better opinion for a worse, just as a physician by appropriate remedies may enable his patient to substitute a healthy sense of taste for a morbid one. lo ad- minister such an interrogatory and thus to be the physician of souls was, Socrates thought, his divinely appointed duty ; and, when he described himself as a ‘‘ talker” or “¢converser,” he not only negatively distinguished himself from those who, whether philosophers or sophists, called themselves ‘‘ teachers ” (S:édexaNor), but also positively indicated the method of question and answer (dcadexrex}) which he consistently preferred and habitually practised.

That it was in this way that Socrates was brought to regard « dialectic," " question and answer," as the only admissible method of education is, in the opinion of the present writer, no matter of mere conjecture. In the review of theories of knowledge which has come down to us in Plato's Theatetws mention is made (172 B) of certain "incomplete Protagoreans," who held that, while all impressions are equally true, one impression is better than another, and that the 'wise man" is one who by his arguments causes good impressions to take the place of bad ones, thus reforming the soul of the individual or the laws of a state by a process similar to that of the physician or the farmer (166 D sq.) ; and these '' incomplete Protagoreans" are identified with Socrates and the Socratics by their insistence (167 D) upon the characteristically Socratic distinc- tion between disputation and dialectic, as well as by other familiar traits of Socratic converse. In fact, this passage becomes intel- ligible and significant if it is supposed to refer to the historical Socrates ; and by teaching us to regard him as an 'incomplete Protagorean " it supplies the link which connects his philosophical scepticism with his dialectical theory of education. It isno doubt possible that Socrates was unaware of the closeness of his rela- tionship to Protagoras ; but the fact, once stated, hardly admits of question.

In the application of the '' dialectical" or "' maieutic" method two processes are distinguishable,—the destructive process, by which the worse opinion was eradicated, and the constructive process, by which the better opinion was induced. In general it was not mere "ignorance" with which Socrates had to contend, but "ignor- ance mistaking itself for knowledge" or "false conceit of wisdom,'— a more stubborn and a more formidable foe, who, safe so long as he remained in his entrenchments, must be drawn from them, circum- vented, and surprised. Accordingly, taking his departure from some apparently remote principle or proposition to which the re-

ATES

spondent yielded a ready assent, Socrates would draw from it an

unexpected but undeniable consequence which was plainly incon-

sistent with the opinion impugned. In this way he brought his interlocutor to pass judgment upon himself, and_reduced lim to a state of "doubt" or

“perplexity” (dwopla). “Before I ever met you,” says Meno in the dialogue which Plato called by his name ° (79 E), “I was told that you spent your time in doubting and lead- ing others to doubt ; and it is a fact that your witcheries and spells have brought me to that condition ; you are like the torpedo: as

‘it benumbs any one who approaches and touches it, so do you.

For myself, my soul and my tongue are benumbed, so that I have no answer to give you.” Even if, as often happened, the respond- ent, baftled and disgusted by the édeyxos or destructive process, at this point withdrew from the inquiry, he had, in Socrates’s judg- ment, gained something ; for, whcreas formerly, being ignorant, he had supposed himself to have knowledge, now, being ignorant, he was in some sort conscious of his ignorance, and accordingly would be for the future more circumspect in action. If, however, having been thus convinced of ignorance, the respondent did not shrink from a new effort, Socrates was ready to aid him by further ques- tions of a suggestive sort. Consistent thinking with a view to con- sistent action being the end of the inquiry, Socrates would direct the respondent’s attention to instances analogous to that in hand, and so lead him to frame for himself a generalization from which the passions and the prejudices of the moment were, as far as might be, excluded. In this constructive process, though the element of surprise was no longer necessary, the interrogative form was studi- ously preserved, because it secured at each step the conscious and responsible assent of the learner. *

Of the two processes of the dialectical method, the édeyxos OF Maieutic destructive process attracted the more attention, both in conse- in Plato quence of its novelty and because many of those who willingly or and nnwillingly submitted to it stopped short at the stage of “ perplex- Xenophon, ity.” But to Socrates and his intimates the constructive process was the proper and necessary sequel. It is true that in the dia- logues of Plato the destructive process is not always, or even often, followed by construction, and that in the Memorabilia of Xenophon construction is not always, or even often, preceded by the destruc- tive process. There is, however, in this nothing surprising. On the one hand, Xenophon, having for his principal purpose the defence of his master against tla calumny, seeks to

show by effective examples the excellence of his positive teaching, and accordingly is not careful to distinguish, still less to emphasize, the negative procedure. On the other hand, Plato's aim being not so much to preserve Socrates's positive teaching as rather by written words to stimulate the reader to self-scrutiny, just as the spoken words of the master had stimulated the hearer, he is compelled by the very nature of his task to keep the constructive element in the background, and, where Socrates would have drawn an w- mistakable conclusion, to confine himself to enigmatical hints. For example, when we compare Xenophon's Memorabilia, iv. 6, 2-4, with Plato's Zuthyphro, we note that, while in the former the in- terlocutor is led by a few suggestive questions to define ' picty" as 'the kuowledge of those laws which are concerned with the gods," in the latter, though on a further scrutiny it appears that "piety" is 'that part of justice which is concerned with the service of the gods," the conversation is ostensibly inconclusive.

In short, Xenophon, a mere reporter of Socrates's conversations, gives the results, but troubles himself little about the steps which led to them ; Plato, who in early manhood was an educator of the Socratic type, withholds the results that he may secure the advan- tages of the elenctic stimulus, . |

What, then, were the positive conclusions to which Socrates Induction carried his hearers? and how were those positive conclusions and de- obtained? Turning to Xenophon for an answer to these questions, finition. we note (1) that the recorded conversations are concerned with practical action, political, moral, or artistic ; (2) that in general there is a process from the known to the unknown through a generalization, 'expressed or implied ; (8) that the generalizations are sometimes rules of conduct, justified by examination of known instances, sometimes definitions similarly established. Thus, 2 Memorabilia, iv. 1, 8, Socrates argues from the known instances of horses and dogs that the best natures stand most in need of training, and then applies the generalization to the instance under discus- sion, that of men; and in iv. 6, 13-14, he leads his interlocutor to a definition of 'the good citizen," and then uses it to decide between two citizens for whom respectively superiority is claimed. Now in the former of these cases the proccss—which Aristotle would describe as ''example" (wapddevyya), aud a modern might regard as ''induction" of an uncritical

sort—sufficiently explains itself. The conclusion is a provisional assurance that im the particular matter in hand a certain course of action is, or 18 not, to be adopted. But it is necessary to say a word of explanation about the latter case, in which, the generalization being a definition, that is to say, a declaration that to a given term the interlocutor attaches in general a specified meaning, the conclusion is a Pr visional assurance that the interlocutor may, or may not, with

Pe 7 ee Oe

out falling into inconsistency, apply the term in question to a certain person or act. Moral error, Socrates conceived, is largely due to the misapplication of general terms, which, once affixed to a person or to an act, possibly in a moment of passion or prejudice, too often stand in the way of sober and careful reflection. It was ’ in order to exclude crror of this sort that Socrates insisted upon 7d bpltecOar xafddov with émaxrixol Moyo for its basis. By requiring a definition and the reference to it of the act or person in question, he sought to secure in the individual at any rate consistency of thought, and, in so far, consistency of action. Accordingly he spent lis life in secking and helping others to seek ‘‘the what” (rd ri), or the definition, of the various words by which the moral

pO wy AT Eh S

2a7

and ~~caricatured the austere example; Euclides of Megara prac~~ tised and perverted the elenctic method; Plato the Academic, accepting the whole of the Socratic teaching, first developed it harmoniously in the sceptical spirit of its author, and, afterwards conceiving that he had found in Socrates’s agnosticism the germ of a philosophy, procceded to construct a system which should embrace at once ontology, physics, and ethics. From the four schools thus established sprang subsequently four other schools,— the Epicureans being the natural successors of the Cyrenaics, the Stoics of the Cynics, the Sceptics of the Megarians, and the Peri- patetics of the Academy. In this way the teaching of Socrates made itself felt throughout the whole of the post-Socratic philo-

quality of actions is described, valuing the results thus obtained, | sophy. Of the: influence which he exercised upon Aristippus, not as contributions to knowledge, but as means to right action in | Antisthenes, and Euclides, the ‘incomplete Socratics,” as they the multifarious relations of life. are commonly called, as well as upon the “complete Socratic” leis While, however, Socrates sought neither knowledge, which in | Plato, something must now be said. Vk the strict sense of the word he held to be unattainable, nor yet, The “incomplete Socratics” were, like Socrates, sceptics ; but, Incom-] except as a means to right action, true opinion, the results of ob- | whereas Aristippus, who seems to have been in contact with Pro-’ plete Soc- ; servation accumulated until they formed, not perhaps a system of | tagoreanism before he made acquaintance with Socrates, came to ratics. ; ethics, but at any rate a body of ethical doctrine. Himself blessed | scepticism, as. Protagoras had done, from the standpoint of the \ with a will so powerful that it moved almost without friction, he | pluralists, Antisthenes, like his former master Gorgias, and Euclides, | fell into the error of ignoring its operations, and was thus led to | in whom the ancients rightly saw a successor of Zeno, came to j regard knowledge as the sole condition of well-doing. Where there | scepticism from the standpoint of Eleatic monism. In other words, | is knowledge,—that is to say, practical wisdom (¢pédvyots), the only | Aristippus was sceptical because, taking into account the subjective } knowledge which he recognized,—right action, he conceived, fol- | element in sensation, he found himself compelled to regard what lows of itself; for no one knowingly prefers what is evil ; and, if | are called ‘‘things” as successions of feelings, which feelings are

te es ee

Se ae ae eee

there are cases in which men seem ‘to act against knowledge, the inference to be drawn is, not that knowledge and wrongdoing are compatible, but that in the cases in question the supposed know- ledge was after allignorance. Virtue, then, is knowledge, knowledge at once of end and of means irresistibly realizing itself in act. Whence it follows that the several virtues which are commonly dis- tinguished are essentially one. ‘‘Picty,”

‘“‘justice,” ‘‘courage,” and “temperance” are the names which ‘‘ wisdom” bears in differ- ent spheres of action: to be pious is to know what is due to the gods ; to be just is to know what is due to men; to be courageous is to know what is to be feared and what is not ; to be temperate is to know how to use what is good and avoid what is evil. Further, inasmuch as virtue is knowledge, it can be acquired by education and training, though it is certain that one soul has by nature a greater aptitude than another for such acquisition.

But, if virtue is knowledge, what has this knowledge for its object? To this question Socrates replies, Its object is the Good. What, then, isthe Good? Itis the useful, the advantageous. Utility, the immediate utility of the individual, thus becomes the measure of

Accordingly, each precept of which Socrates delivers himself is re- commended on the ground that obedience to it will promote the pleasure, the comfort, the advancement, the wellbeing of the indi- vidual ; and Prodicus’s apologue of the Choice of Heracles, with its commonplace offers of worldly reward, is accepted as an adequate statement of the motives of virtuous action. Of the graver diffi- culties of ethical theory Socrates has no conception, having, as it would seem, so perfectly absorbed the lessons of what Plato calls “‘nolitical virtue” that morality has become with him a second nature, and the scrutiny of its credentials from an external stand- point has ceased to be possible. His theory is indeed so little systematic that, whereas, as has been seen, virtue or wisdom has the Good for its object, he sometimes identifies the Good with virtue or wisdom, thus falling into the error which Plato (Republic, vi. 505 C), perhaps with distinct reference to Socrates, ascribes to certain ‘‘cultivated thinkers.” In short, the ethical theory of Socrates, like the rest of his teaching, is by confession unscientific ; it is the statement of the convictions of a remarkable nature, which statement emerges in the course of an appeal to the individual to study consistency in the interpretation of traditional rules of con- duct. For a critical examination of the ethical teaching which is here described in outline, see ETHIcs.

The Socratics.

conduct and the foundation of all moral rule and legal enactment. °

themselves absolutely distinct from one another ; while Antisthencs and Euclides were sceptical because, like Zeno, they did not under- stand how the saine thing could at the same moment. bear various and inconsistent epithets, and consequently conceived all predica- tion which was not identical to be illegitimate. Thus Aristippus recognized only feclings, denying things; Antisthenes recognized things, denying attributions ; and it is probable that in this matter Euclides was at one with him. For, though since Schlciermacher many historians, unnecessarily identifying the eldav piho of Plato's Sophist with the Megarians, have ascribed to Euclides a theory of ''ideas," and on the strength of this single passage thus con- jecturally interpreted have added a new chapter to the history of Megarianism, it is difficult, if not impossible, to see how, if the founder of the school had broken loose from the trammels of the Zenonian paradox, his successors, and amongst them Stilpo, should have re- conciled themselves, as they certainly did, to the Cynic denial of predication.

While the "incomplete Socratics" made no attempt to overpass the limits which Socrates had imposed upon himself, within those limits they occupied each his department. Aristippus, a citizen of the world, drawn to Athens by the fame of Socrates, and retained there by the sincere affection which he conceived for him, inter- preted the ethical doctrine of Socrates in accordance with his own theory of pleasure, which in its turn came under the refining in- fluence of Socrates's theory of ¢pdvyots. Contrariwise, Antisthenes, a rugged but not ungenerous nature, a hater of pleasure, troubled himself little about ethical theory and gave his life to the imita- tion of his master's asceticism. Virtue, he held, depended upon ''works," not upon arguments or lessons ; all that was necessary to it was the strength of a Socrates (Diog. Laert., vi. 11). Yet here too the Socratic theory of ¢péynois had a qualifying effect ; so that Cyrenaic hedonism and Cynic asceticism sometimes exhibit unexpected approximations. The teaching of Euclides, though the Good is still supposed to be the highest object of knowledge, can hardly be said to have an ethical element ; and in consequence of this deficiency the dialectic of Socrates degenerated in Megarian hands, first into a seyies of exercises in fallacies, secondly into a vulgar and futile eristic. In fact, the partial Socraticisms of the incomplete Socratics necessarily suffered, even within their own narrow limits, by the dismemberment which the system had under- gone. Apparently the maieutic

theory of education was not valued by any of the three; and, however this may be, they deviated from Socratic tradition so far as to establish schools, and, as it would seem, to take fces like the professional educators called Sophists.

Of the relations in which the metaphysic of Plato stood to the Plato's Socratic search for definitions there are of necessity almost as many meta- theories as there are interpretations of the Platonic system. Hence physical in this place the writer must content himself with a summary state- theories.

It has been seen that, so far from having any system, physical or metaphysical, to enunciate, Socrates rejeectd 'the pursuit of knowledge for its own sake" as a delusion and a snare,—a delusion, inasmuch as knowledge, properly so called, is unattainable, and a

ie

snare, in so far as the pursuit of it draws us away from the study of conduct. He has therefore no claim to be regarded as the founder of a philosophical school. But he had made some tentative contributions to a theory of morality; he had shown both in his life and in his death that his principles stood the test of practical application; he had invented a method having for its end the recti- fication of opinion; and, above all, he had asserted ''the autonomy of the individual intellect." Accordingly, not one school but several schools sprang up amongst his associates, those of thein who had a turn for speculation taking severally from his teaching so much as their pre-existing tendencies and convictions allowed them to assimilate. Thus Aristippus of Cyrene interpreted hedo- nistically the theoretical morality ; Antisthenes the Cynic copied

ment of his own views. Initiated into philosophical speculation by the Heraclitean Cratylus, Plato began his intellectual life as an absolute sceptic, the followers of Heraclitus having towards the end of the 5th century pushed to its conclusion the unconscious scepticism of their master. There would have been then nothing to provoke surprise, if, leaving speculation, Plato had given him- self to politics. In 407, however, he became acquainted with Socrates, who gave to his thoughts a new direction. Plato now found an occupation for his intellectual energies, as Socrates had done,

in the scrutiny of his beliefs and the systematization of his principles of action. But it was not until the catastrophe of 399 that Plato gave himself to his life's work. An exile, cut off from political ambitions, he came forward as the author of dialogues

Plato's ethical theories.

238

which aimed at producing upon readers the saine effect which the voice of the master had produced upon hearers. Fora time he was content thus to follow in the steps of Socrates, and of this period we have records in those dialogues which are commonly designated Socratic. But Plato had too decided a bent for metaphysics to linger long over propedeutic studies. Craving knowledge —not merely provisional and subjective knowledge of ethical concepts, such as that which had satisfied Socrates, but knowledge of the causcs and laws of the universe, such as that which the physicists had sought—he asked himself what was necessary that the " right opinion" which Socrates had obtained by abstraction from particular instances might be converted into "knowledge" properly so called. In this way Plato was led to assume for every Socratic universal a corresponding unity, eternal, immutable, suprasensual, to be the cause of those particulars which are called by the common name. On this assumption the Socratic definition or statement of the "what" of the universal, being obtained by the inspection of particulars, in some sort represented the unity, form, or "idea" from which they derived their characteristics, and in so far was valuable; but, inasmuch as the inspection of the particulars was partial and imperfect, the Socratic definition was only a partial and imperfect representation of the eternal, immutable, suprasensual idea. How, then, was the imperfect representation of the idea to be converted into a perfect representation? To this question Plato's answer was vague and tentative. By constant revision of the provisional defini- tions which imperfectly represented the ideas he hoped to bring them into such shapes that they should culminate in the de- finition of the supreme principle, the Good, from which the ideas themselves derive their being. If in this way we could pass from uncertified general notions, reflections of ideas, to the Good, so as to be able to say, not only that the Good causes the ideas to be what they are, but also that the Good causes the

ideas to be what we conceive them, we might infer, he thought, that our definitions, hitherto provisional, are adequate representations of real existences. But the Platonism of this period had another ingredient. It has been seen that the Eleatic Zeno had rested his denial of plural- ity upon certain supposed difficulties of predication, and that they continued to perplex Antisthenes as well as perhaps Euclides and others of Plato's contemporaries. These difficulties must be dis- posed of if the new philosophy was to hold its ground; and ac- cordingly, to the fundamental assertion of the existence of eternal immutable ideas, the objects of knowledge, Plato added two sub- ordinate propositions, namely, (1) ''the idea is immanent in the particular," and (2) ''there is an idea wherever a plurality of particulars is called by the same name." Of these propositions the one was intended to explain the attribution of various and even inconsistent epithets to the same particular at the same time, whilst the other was necessary to make this explanation available in the case of common terms other than the Socratic universals. Such was the Platonism of the Republic and the Phedo, a provi- sional ontology, with a scheme of scientific research, which, as Plato honestly confessed, was no more than an unrealized aspiration. It was the non-Socratic element which made the weakness of this the earlier theory of ideas. Plato soon saw that the hypothesis of the idea's immanence in particulars entailed the sacrifice of its unity, whilst as a theory of predication that hypothesis was in- sufficient, because applicable to particulars only, not to the ideas themselves. But with clearer views about relations and negations the paradox of Zeno ccased to perplex; and with the consequent withdrawal of the two supplementary articles the development of the fundamental assumption of ideas, eternal, immutable, supra- sensual, might be attempted afresh. Inthe more definite theory which Plato now propounded the idea was no longer a Socratic uni- versal, perfected and hypostatized, but rather the perfect type of a natural kind, to which type its imperfect members were related by imitation, whilst this relation was metaphysically explained by means of a "thoroughgoing idealism '' (R. D. Archer-Hind). Thus, whereas in the earlier theory of ideas the ethical universals of Socrates had been held to have a first claim to hypostatization in the world of ideas, they are now peremptorily excluded, whilst the idealism which reconciles plurality and unity gives an entirely new significance to so much of the Socratic element as is still retained. The growth of the metaphysical system necessarily influenced Plato's ethical

doctrines ; but here his final position is less remote from that of Socrates, Content in the purely Socratic period to elaborate and to record ethical definitions such as Socrates himself might have propounded, as soon as the theory of ideas offered itself to Plato's imagination he looked to it for the foundation of ethics as of all other sciences. Though in the earlicr ages both of the indi- vidual and of the state a sound utilitarian morality of the Socratic sort was useful, nay valuable, the morality of the future should, he thought, rest upon the knowledge of the Good. Such is the teaching of the Republic. But with the revision of the metaphysical system came a complete change in the view which Plato took of ethics and its prospects. Whilst in the previous period it had ranked as the first of sciences, it was now no longer a science ; because, though Good absolute still occupied the first place, Good

relative and all its various forms—justice, temperance, courage, wisdom—not being ideas, were incapable of being "known." Hence it is that the ethical teaching of the later dialogues bears an in. telligible, though perhaps unexpected, resemblance to the simple practical teaching of the unphilosophical Socrates.

Yet throughout these revolutions of doctrine Plato was ever true to the Socratic theory of education. His manner indeed changed ; for, whereas in the earlier dialogues the characteristics of the master—

'The soft and intricate discourse,

The wit that makes us tolerant perforce,

The mystic legend, and the verse that drops

As snowflakes shower on wintry forest tops,

The questions working wedge-like to the proof,

The threads of prayer froin old religion's woof,

The courteous skill of keen rebukes that chide

The learner’s folly and the sophist’s pride” — are studiously and skilfully preserved, in the later dialogues Socrates first becomes metaphysical, then ceases to be protagonist, and at last disappears from the scene. But in the later dialogues, as in the earlier, Plato’s aim is the aim which Socrates in his con- versation never lost sight of, namely, the dialectical improvement of the learner.

Bibliography. Of the histories of Greek philosophy enumerated in the article PARMENIDEsS the most important for the study of Socrates’s life and work is Zeller’s Philosophie d. Griechen. The part in question has been translated into English under the title of Socrates and the Socratic Schools, London, 1877. Schwegler’s Geschichte d. griechischen Philosophie will also be found instructive. It is plainly impossible to supply here such a list of special treatises as is given by Ueberweg in his Grundriss d. Geschichte d. Philosophie, and still more so to provide a complete bibliography. But the following sources of informa- tion may be mentioned :—F. Schleiermacher, ‘‘ Veber d. Werth d. Sokrates als Philosophen,” in Abh. d. Berliner Akad. d. Wissensch., 1818, and Werke, iti, 2, 287-308, translated into English by C. Thirlwall, in the Philosophical Museu, Cambridge, 1833, ii. 538-555; L. F. Lélut, Du Démon de Socrate, Paris, 1836, 1856, reviewed by E. Littré in Médecine et Médecins, Paris, 1872; G. Grote, History of Greece, ch. Ixvili., and Plato and the other Companions of Sokrates, London, 1865; C. F. Hermann, De Socratis accusatoribus, Gottingen, 1854; W. H. Thompson, The Phedrus of Plato, London, 1868, Appendix I. ; T. Wildauer, D. Psychologie d. Willens bei Sokrates, &c., Innsbruck, 1877. For the view taken in the present article with regard to the daudéviov, see the writer’s paper “On the datudviov of Socrates,” in the Journal of Philology, v. ; and comp. Chr. Meiners, Vermischte philosophische Schriften, Leipsic, 1776 —‘‘in moments of ‘Schwarmerei’ Socrates took for the voice of an attendant genius what was in reality an instantaneous presentiment in regard to the issue of a contemplated act.” Fora fuller statement of the writer’s view of Plato’s relations to Socrates, see a paper on Plato’s Republic, vi. 509 D sq., in the Journal of Philology, x., and a series of papers on ‘‘ Plato’s later Theory of Ideas,” in vols. x., xi., xiii., xiv. of the same periodical. Comp. Sopuists and (by all meaus) Eruics. (H. JA.)

SOCRATES, church historian. In the course of the last twenty-five years (425-450) of the reign of Theodosius II. (the first thoroughly Byzantine emperor) at least six church histories were written in Greek within the limits of the Eastern empire,—those, namely, of Philostorgius the Arian, of Philippus Sidetes, of Socrates, of Sozomen, of Theodoret, and of Hesychius. Of these the first, no longer extant except in fragments, seems to have been the most important. Those of Philip and of Hesychius (the former an untrustworthy and dreary performance) have also perished. The remaining three are now our main sources for church history from Constantine to Theodosius II. None of them has ventured upon a fresh treatment of the period dealt with by Eusebius; all three begin their narratives about the point where his closes. In the West the Church History of that author had already been continued by Rufinus and his Chronicle by Jerome, and the work of Rufinus was certainly known to the Byzantines. Nor did these write independently of each other, for SozomEN (q.v.) certainly had before him the work of So- crates, and THEODORET (¢.v.) knew one or both of them. The three histories together became known in the West from the 6th century through the selection which Cassio- dorus caused to be made from them, and it is to this selec- tion (if we leave Rufinus and Jerome out of account) that the Middle Ages were mainly indebted for all they knew of the Arian controversies, and of the period generally between the councils of Nice and Ephesus.

The ’ExxXeovacrix ‘Ioropia of Socrates, still complete, in several books, embracing the period from 306 to 489, was written about, or at all events not later than, 440. He was born and brought up at Constantinople; the date of his birth is uncertain, but it can hardly have been be- fore 385. Of the facts of his life we know practically nothing, except that he was not a cleric but a “scholas- ticus” or advocate. Of the occasion, plan, and object of

Dp eo R ate Ss

his work he has himself informed us in the prologues to It is dedicated

his first, second, fifth, and sixth books. to one Theodorus, who had urged him to write such a his- tory. He had no thorough preparation for the task, and for the period down to the death of Constantius (361) was practically dependent on Rufinus. His work finished, he became a student of

Athanasius and came to see how untrustworthy his guide had been. He accordingly re- wrote his first two books, and it is only this revision that has reached us. The chief sources from which he drew were—(1) the Church History, the Life of Constantine, and the theological works of Eusebius; (2) the Church History of Rufinus ; (3) the works of Athanasius; (4) the no longer extant Dvvaywyi) Tov DvodiKov of the Mace- donian and semi-Arian Sabinus,—a collection with com- mentaries of acts of councils, brought down to the reign of Theodosius I. (this was a main source); (5) collections of letters by members of the Arian and orthodox parties ; (6) the Ancoratus of Epiphanius ; (7) works of Archelaus, Gregory of Laodicea, Evagrius, Palladius, orations of Nes- torius, &c. Theological literature proper—as, for example, the writings of the Cappadocians—he quite neglected. On the other hand, he appears to have known some of Origen's work, and the Apologia pro Origene of Pamphilus. It is to Origen and Origen's immediate disciples that he refers when he speaks of "the old church writers," or of "the Christian philosophers"; the last designation, how- ever, also includes the monks. Jeep alleges, but does not adduce any adequate proof, that Socrates made use of Philostorgius. As regards profane history his materials were exceedingly defective. Thus, for example, he con- fesses his reason for not relating the political history of Constantine to be that he has been unable to ascertain anything about it. Jeep has instituted an examination into the fasti, containing historical notes, made use of by our author with the following results. His chronological data with the facts he appends to them are of the highest value, especially in those cases where, as sometimes hap- pens, data.are preserved which are less precisely given in other fasti and chronicles. Somewhere about the year 395-400 his use of these precisely dated records of profane history comes to an end. From this point his information is purely ecclesiastical (dates of ordination and death of

_, bishops and the like); that is to say, he makes use of

church fasti. The secular fasti of Socrates come down precisely to the same point as those which lay in the first rank before Idatius.! His reckonings by Olympiads are generally wrong, the error arising not from any systematic ' source but merely from carelessness. It is not altogether impossible, however, after all that Socrates may have taken the historical data of his

fasti at second hand from the profane historians. He certainly made use of Eutro- pius; but that he had any recourse to Eunapius and Olympiodorus is more doubtful, and indeed would be quite _ improbable if it could be proved that he had Philostorgius _ before him. There is no evidence of his having known the works of Dexippus and Zosimus. But he is greatly indebted to oral tradition and to the testimony of eye- | witnesses, especially of members of the Novatian com- munity in Constantinople ; something also he has set down from personal knowledge. The contents of the closing books are for the most part derived from oral tradition, | from the narratives of friends and countrymen, from what was still generally known and current in the capital about | past events, and from the ephemeral literature of the day.

_ _ The theological position of Socrates, so far as he can be said to have had one, is at once disclosed in his unlimited admiration for Origen. All the enemies of the great Alexandrian he regards

_ Merely as empty and vain obscurantists ; for the orthodoxy of his

1 See Holder-Egger, Newes Archiv f. deutsche Gesch., ii. 61.

hero he appeals to Athanasius. Closely conncted with his high regard for Origen are his appreciation of science generally and the moderation of his judgment on all dogmatic questions. According to him, éAdnvixh mardela is quite indispensable within the church ; many Greek philosophers were not far from the knowledge of God, as is proved by their triumphant arguments against atheists and gainsayers of divine providence. The apostles did not sct them- selves against the study of Greek literature and science ; Paul had even made a thorough study of them himself. The Scriptures, it is true, contain all that appertains to faith and life, but give no clue to the art of confuting gainsayers. Greek science, therefore, must not be banished from the church, and the tendency within the church so to deal with itis wrong. This point of view was the common one of the majority of educated Christians at that period, and is not to be regarded as exceptionally liberal. The same holds true of the position of Socrates in regard to dogmatic questions. On the one hand, indeed, orthodoxy and heresy are

symbolized to his mind by the wheat and the tares respectively ; he clings to the naive opinion of Catholicism, that contemporary orthodoxy has prevailed within the church from the first; he recognizes the true faith only in the mystery of the Trinity ; he judges heretics who have been already condemned as interlopers, as impudent innovators, actuated by bad and self-seeking motives ; he apologizes for having so much as treated of Arianism at all in his history of the church ; he believes in the inspiration of the ecclesiastical councils as much as in that of the Scriptures themselves. But, on the other hand, he takes absolutely no interest in dogmatical subtleties and clerical disputes ; he regards them as the source of great evils, and expresses his craving for peace: ‘‘one ought to adore the ineffable mystery in silence.” This attitude, which was that of most educated Byzantine laymen, has in particular cases made it possible for him to arrive at very free judgments. Even granting that some feeble remains of antique reserve may have contributed to this, and even although some of it is certainly to be set down to his disposition and temperament, still it was his religious passivity that here determined the character of Socrates and made him a typical ex- ample of the later Byzantine Christianity. If Socrates had lived about the year 325, he certainly would not have ranked himself on the side of Athanasius, but would have joined the party of mediation. But—the duooveros has been laid down, and must be recognized as correctly expressing the mystery ; only one ought to rest satisfied with that word and with the repudiation of Arianism. Anything more, every new distinction, is mischievous. The con- troversy in its details is a vuxrowaxla to him, full of misunder- standings. Sometimes he gives prominence, and correctly, to the fact that the disputants partially failed to understand one another, because they had separate interests at heart,—those on the one side desiring above everything to guard against polytheism, those on the other being most afraid of Sabellianism. He did not fail, how- ever, to recognize also that tle controversies frequently had their root in mere emulation, slander, and sophistry. Not unfrequently he passes very sharp judgments on whole groups of bishops, In the preface to his fifth book he excuses his trenching on the region of political history on the ground of his desire to spare his readers the disgust which perusal of the endless disputes of the bishops could not fail to excite, and in that to his sixth book he prides himself on never having flattered even the orthodox bishops. This attitude of his has given him a certain measure of impartiality. Constantius, and even Julian—

not Valens, it is true—are esti- mated very fairly. The Arian Goths who died for their religion are recognized as genuine martyrs. His characterizations of Cyril and Nestorius, aud his narrative and criticism of the beginnings of the Christological controversy, are models of candour and his- torical conscientiousness. In frequent instances, moreover, he acknowledges his own incompetency to give an opinion and hands the question over to the clergy. For the clergy as a whole, in spite of his criticism of individuals, he has the very highest respect, as also for the monks, without himself making any inordinate religious professions. In a special excursus of considerable length he lias paid a tribute of the highest order to monachism, and in his characterization of Theodosius II. also (where he has made use of the brightest colours) he does not fail to point out that in piety the emperor could almost compete with the monks. But, apart from these two cliapters (iv. 28, vii. 22), it is but seldom that one could learn from the pages of Socrates that there was such a thing as monasticism in those days. To his mind the convent is not far removed from the church, and as a layman he is not at all inclined to accept the principles of monachism as applying to himself or to square his views of history in accordance with them. He has even gone so far as formally to express his sympathy with Paphnutius, the champion of the right of bishops to marry.

As a source for the period within which he wrote, the work of Socrates is of the greatest value, but as ‘‘history” it disappoints even the most modest expectations. Eusebius, after all, had some conception of what is meant by “church history,” but Socrates has none. ‘As long as there is peace there is no material for a history of the church”’; but, on the other hand, neither do heresies by rights

come into the story. What, then, is left for it? A collection of anec- dotes and a series of episodes. In point of fact this is the view actually taken by Socrates. His utter want of care and consistency appears most clearly in his vacillation as to the relations between ecclesiastical and political history. At one time he brings in politics, at another he excuscs himself from doing so. He has not failed to observe that church and state act and react wpon each other ; but he has no notion how the relation ought to be conceived.

Nevertheless his whole narrative follows the thread of political—that is to say, of imperial—history. This indeed is characteristic of his Byzantine Christian point of view; church history becomes metamorphosed into a history of the cmperors and of the state, because a special church history is at bottom impossible. But even so onc hardly hears anything about state or court except great enterprises and anecdotes. Political insight is wholly wanting to Socrates ; all the orthodox emperors blaze forth in a uniform light of dazzling splendour ; even the miserable Arcadius is praised, and Theodosius II. figures as a saint whose exemplary piety turned the capital into a church. If inaddition to all this we bear in mind that in his later books the historian's horizon is confined to the city and patriarchate of Constantinople, that he was exceedingly ill informed on all that related to Rome and the West, that in order to fill out his pages he has introduced narratives of the most unimportant description, that in not a few instances he has evinced his credulity (although when compared with the majority of his contemporaries he is still entitled to be called critical), it becomes sufficiently clear that his History, viewed asa whole and asa literary production, can at best take only a secondary place. One great excellence, however, cannot be denied him, his honest and sincere desire to be impartial. He tried also, as far as he could, to distinguish between the certain, the probable, the doubtful, and the untrue. He made no pretence to be a searcher of hearts and frequently declines to analyse motives. He has made frank confession of his nescience, and in certain passages his critical judgment and sober sense and eircumspection are quite striking. . He writes a plain and unadorned style and shuns super- fluous words. Occasionally even there are touches of good humour and of trenchant satire,—always the sign of an honest writer. In short, the rule to be applied in the criticism of Socrates is that his learning and knowledge can be trusted only a little but his good- will and straightforwardness a great deal. Considering the eircum- stances under which he wrote and the miseries of the time, it can only be matter for congratulation that such a man should have become our informant and that his work has been preserved to us. Finally, it is to be noted that Socrates was either himself origin- ally a Novatianist who had afterwards joined the Catholie Church, or that whether through his ancestors or by education he had stood in most intimate relations with the Novatianist Church. In his History he betrays la sympathy with that body, has gone with exactness into its history in Constantinople and Phrygia, and

is indebted for much of the material of his work to Novatianist tradi- tion and to his intercourse with prominent members of the sect. Both directly and indirectly he has declared that Novatianists and Catholics are brothers, that as such they ought to scek the closest relations with one another, and that the former ought to enjoy all the privileges of the latter. His efforts, however, had only this result, that he himself afterwards fell under suspicion of Nova- tianism. For bibliography, see SoZOMEN. . (A. HA.)

SODIUM anp SODA. Sodium is one of the two prin- cipal alkali metals, regarding the general properties of which the reader is referred to CHEmIstRY (vol. v. p. 524) and the introductory portion of Porassium (vol. xix. p. 588). In combination sodium is a generally diffused and most abundant element. The salt dissolved in sea water consists chiefly of chloride of sodium (NaCl), and according to Dittmar's calculation (see Sea Water) the oceans of the world contain of sodium calculated as chloride not less than 36,000 × 1022 (z.e., 36,000 million million) tons, whilst of potassium calculated as sulphate the amount in sea water is 1141 × 10!2(1141 million million) tons. From sea water have been deposited the enormous beds of rock salt found in many parts of the world (see Satur). Sodium carbonates are also widely dispersed in nature, forming constituents of many mineral waters, and occurring as principal saline components in natron or trona lakes, as efflorescences in Lower Egypt, Persia, and China, and as urao in Mexico, Colombia, and Venezuela. The solid crusts found at the bottom of the salt lakes of the Araxes plain in Armenia contain about 16 per cent. of carbonate and 80 of sulphate of soda. In New Granada there occurs a double salt, Na,CO,+CaCO,+5H,O, known as gay-lussite. In Wyoming, California, and Nevada enormous deposits of

carbonates, mixed in some cases with sulphate and with chloride, occur. over the vast pusztas (steppes) between the Theiss and the Danube, and from the Theiss up to and beyond Debreczin, the soil contains sodium carbonate, which frequently assumes the form of crude alkaline crusts, called " szekso," and of small saline ponds. Debreczin soda was found to contain as much as 90 per cent, of real carbonate (NaCO,) and 4 of common salt. Natural sulphate occurs in an anhydrous condition as thenardite

(Na,SO,) at Tarapaca, Peru, and in the rock- salt deposits at Espartinas near Aranjuez, Spain. Hy- drated sulphates occur at several localities in the province of Madrid and in other provinces of Spain, and at Miihlingen in Aargau, and copious deposits of glauberite, the double sulphate of sodium and calcium, are met with in the salt-mines of Villarrubia in Spain, at Stassfurt, and in the province of Tarapaca, Peru, &c. A native nitrate of soda is obtained in great abundance in the district of Atacama and the province of Tarapaca, and is imported into Europe in enormous quantities as cubical nitre for the preparation of saltpetre (see Nirrocen, vol. xvii, p. 518), Cryolite, a fluoride of aluminium and sodium, AIF, + 3NaF, is extensively mined in Greenland for industrial purposes. These form the principal natural sources of sodium com- pounds,—the chloride as rock salt and in sea water being of such predominating importance as quite to outweigh all the others. together the mass of sodium they represent is as much as

About Szegedin in Hungary and all

A purified specimen of such

But it is questionable whether taken al-

that disseminated throughout the rocky crust in the form of soda felspar (i.e., as silicate of soda) and in other soda- containing rocks. From this source all soils contain small proportions of sodium in soluble forms, hence the ashes of plants, although they preferably imbibe potassium salts, contain traces and sometimes notable quantities of sodium salts. Sodium salts also form essential ingredients in all animal juices.

Considered industrially, by far the most important bodies are the carbonates, the sulphates, and caustic soda (sodium hydrate), the manufacture of which forms the basis of the soda industry. Immense quantities of these bodies are used in the manufacture of soap and glass, and under the name of “washing soda” or “soda crystals ” the consumption of the hydrated carbonate for domestic washing is also very great. There are indeed few chemical industries in which soda in one form or another does not play an important part, and the combinations of economic value into which it enters are numberless. It will be convenient to treat of the

manufacture as a whole by itself, after speaking of sodium and its salts in their chemical relations.

Sodium, in German Natriwm (symbol, Na; atomic weight, 23°053; O = 16), is a univalent metal. It occurs nowhere in nature in an uncombined condition, and was first isola d in 1807 by Sir Humphrey Davy through the mein voltaic electricity. It is prepared by distillation of intimate mixture of carbonate of soda with charcoal. The process is quite analogous to that followed in making metallic potassium (PoTassrum, vol. xix. p. 590), but much easier of execution, and free from certain dangers which attend the preparation of the other. The distillation is con- ducted in cylindrical iron retorts protected against the fire by means of fireclay tubes fitting closely round them. In the charge is included a certain proportion of chalk, which, giving off carbonic acid, aids in driving over the metallic vapour and protects the distillate against oxidation. The metal cast into the form of cakes or ingots is protected from the air by a coating of paraffin and secured in closely fitting soldered-up tinned-iron boxes. Metallic sodium 1s very similar in properties and appearance to potassium. The principal points of difference are its pure white colour,

its specific gravity (0°9735 at 13°°5 C.), and its fusing point (95°°6 C.). In thin layers its vapour is colourless, but dense fumes have a purple tint. It decomposes water violently, but the hydrogen evolved does not take fire, although the reaction is more dangerous than the corresponding pheno- mena developed by potassium, because it leads frequently ‘ to most violent explosions. Yet the process serves in practice for the preparation of pure soda hydrate. In this operation a piece of sodium is placed in a silver basin standing in a shallow cold-water bath. Drop by drop water is added—the metal between the additions being allowed to expend its energy—till the desired quantity of hydrate is formed.. The process, in short, is so conducted that, except at first, the metal never touches water in any other form than that of a strong soda lye. Sodium is largely made for use as an agent in the manufacture of aluminium and magnesium, and asa reagent in laboratory operations. The metal does not affect carbonic oxide at any temperature ; it acts on hydrogen as potassium does ; but the compound is

less stable. On ammonia gas it acts, as in the parallel case of potassium, with the formation of NH,Na, only the reaction is less energetic. Sodium has less powerful affinity to oxygen than potassium ; in dry | air or oxygen it burns into the dioxide Na,O,,—a product obtainable also by heating the nitrate or nitrite. A white solid soluble in cold water, forming a hydrate, Na,O,+8H,O, is obtainable in crystals, the solution of which is strongly alkaline. With acids it yields sodium salts and peroxide of hydrogen. Sodium tetroxide (Na,O,) is not known to exist.

Caustic Soda (NaHO) is prepared from carbonate by means of caustic lime, just as caustic potash is made from its carbonate (see Potassium). The analogy between the two caustic alkalis is so perfect that we need only summarize the points of difference between them. Com- pared with caustic potash, caustic soda is less easily soluble in water, less caustic, less energetically basilous, less prone _ when fused in air to pass into peroxide, hence less de-

structive to platinum, iron, nickel, and silver vessels.

_ Sodium Chloride (NaCl) occurs in nature in a nearly pure state. Absolutely pure salt is made from commercial salt by precipitating from a solution the lime and magnesia by pure carbonate of soda, filtering, neutralizing with pure hydrochloric acid, concentrating by evaporation, and then precipitating the pure salt by a stream of hydrochloric / acid gas. The crystalline precipitate is collected over glass wool, washed with pure fuming hydrochloric acid, and dried by heating in a platinum basin. It forms non- hygroscopic crystals, free from combined water, having a | Specific gravity at 16° C. of 2°162 (Stolba), and according to Carnelley fusing at 776°C. The solubility of pure salt in water is almost independent of temperature ; 100 parts of water dissolve—

at 0° 14° 60° 100° 109°°7 q (boiling) 39°52 = 85°87 = 8725 39°61 40°53 parts of NaCl.

Regarding its commercial relations, &c., see SALT.

_ Chlorate of Soda (NaClO,) is a salt of some industrial Importance, from its use in the manufacture of aniline black. It may be made from the potash

salt (a) by de- _ composing this with hydrofluosilicic acid (which precipi- _ tates the potassium as fluosilicate and yields a solution of _ chloric acid), and neutralizing the chloric acid solution | with soda, or (6) by double decomposition with bitartrate of soda, NaHC,H,O,,—the cream of tartar (KHC,H,O,) | Separating out almost completely, whilst the chlorate of _ Soda remains in solution. According to Weldon, it is best _ manufactured from caustic soda by the direct action of chlorine, the two salts NaCl and NaClO, being separated by erystallization. Chlorate of soda forms cubes which often exhibit tetrahedral faces; 100 parts of water dis-

IUM 24]

solve at 0° 81:9, at 20° 99, and at 100° C. 233 parts of the salt. Hence it is much more soluble than the potash salt, on which account it is preferred for aniline black printing.

Sulphate (Na,SO,) is the most largely produced of all soda salts in manufacturing operations, although it is re- garded principally as an intermediate product. The an- hydrous salt readily combines with water into a crystalline soluble compound, Na,SO,+10H,O, known as Glauber's salt. This forms large transparent monoclinic crystals, and is characteristically prone to form supersaturated solutions. 100 parts of water dissolve—

at 0° 11°67 25°05 3273 38°88 1217 26°38 99°48 3221 312°] parts of Na,SO,+10 H,0,

5°02 10°12 2811 50°65 50:4 parts of NaSO,. As the temperature rises beyond about 33°, the solu- bility decreases (Gay-Lussac). Glauber's salt, when ex- posed to dry air, especially in summer heat, gradually falls into a powder of anhydrous sulphate. It is much less volatile than the chloride. The thiosulphate, Na,S,O, (commercial hyposulphite of soda), and soda salts of other lower sulphur acids, are reserved for SULPHUR.

Of all sodium compounds, except common salt, the car- bonates are by far the most important, both industrially and chemically. These comprise the following.

Normal Carbonate, Na,CO,,—The anhydrous salt usually presents itself in the form of a white opaque porous solid, specific gravity 2°65 (Karsten). According to Carnelley, it fuses at 818° C. (dull red heat) into a colourless liquid. On fusing it loses some of its carbonic acid, and at a bright red heat it volatilizes appreciably. The porous salt absorbs water from the air; when moistened with water it gives off heat and unites into crystalline hydrates, of which the important compound is

Decahydrate, Na,CO,+10H,O.—This salt, known as soda crystals or washing soda, forms large transparent monoclinic rhomboidal prisms or double pyramids. The salt dissolves readily in water, forming strongly alkaline solutions, which emulsionize fats, though less readily than is done by caustic lyes. 100 parts of water dissolve—

at 0° 16° 20° 30° 38° 104° 21°33 63°20 92°82 2736 11422 §89°6 of crystals, 697 1620 21:71 37°24 51°67 46-47 of Na,CO, (Léwel). According to this observer, the dissolved salt

from 38° C. upwards assumes the form of lower hydrates, hence the diminution in solubility at higher temperatures. A saturated solution, when evaporated down ~~by heat, deposits a granular salt of the composition Na,CO,(H,O or 2H,O). The decahydrate, when exposed to dry air even at ordinary temperatures, loses water, with the forma~~ tion of monohydrate, Na,CO,H,O. It also readily takes up carbonic acid with the formation of

Bicarbonate, NaHCO,.—Its formation may be thus for- mulated —Na,CO, + 10H,O + CO, = 2NaHCO, + 9H,0. The bicarbonate remains as a crystalline mass, while the liberated water runs off with more or less of dissolved car- bonate and the saline impurities which may be present. Bicarbonate forms small four-sided monoclinic plates with a feebly alkaline taste and reaction. 100 parts of water dissolve—

at 0° 20° 40° 60° 6:90 9°60 12°70 16°40 of NaHCO, (Dibbits). From about 70° C. upwards the solution gives off carbonic acid with formation of Sesquicarbonate,—2Na,O +3C0, + 4H,O0 = Na,CO,2NaHCO,+3H,O. This salt, found in nature as trona or urao, forms in its pure state crystals which do not lose water in the air. At 20° C. 100 parts of water dissolve 18°3 parts of the salt calculated as anhydride, 2Na,O3CO,. Both bicarbonate and

sesquicar- bonate when heated dry break up readily (below redness) into normal carbonate, water, and carbonic acid. XXII — 31

242

Other salts of soda which are of importance on account of their acid constituents—nitrate, silicate, phosphate — are dealt with under NirrocEN, SILica, PHOSPHORUS.

The estimation and analysis of alkalis are sufficiently dealt with at the close of the article PoTassIUM.

3 Soda Manufacture.

The ancients probably did not know soda in other than its native forms, and till about the end of the 18th century potash was, of the two alkalis, the more abundant and generally used substance. In- deed it was not till well into that century that the chemical dis- tinctions of the alkalis were established; they were previously spoken of indifferently as nitrum, natron, kali, alkali, and soda, names simply meaning a fixed alkali. Soda has properly a separate history only from 1736, when Duhamel established the fact that common salt and mineral alkali have the same base,—a body different from the salt of tartar or vegetable alkali. Yet soda, from both mineral and vegetable sources, had long previously been used in Europe, the Arabs having probably brought into Spain a knowledge of the alkali and its sources. Apart from the trona and soda lakes, &c., already alluded to, the only source till the close of the 18th century was the ashes of certain plants which grow on the sea-coast and in salt-impregnated soils. ‘These plants, principally species of Sadsola and a few other genera of the natural order Aériplicew, on incineration yield an ash containing in some cases about 50 per cent. of carbonate of soda. The ash of these plants, fiuxed by red heat into a pasty mass and broken into con- venient lumps, forms the barilla of commerce, which in former times was a product of the first importance on the shores of Spain, Sicily, Sardinia, and other coasts of the Mediterranean. In 1834 as much as 12,000 tons of barilla were introduced into England from Spain alone, and, in spite of the cheapness of artificial soda, the manu- facture of barilla is still—or at least was till recently—carried on at various localities on the Mediterranean. On the west coasts of Scotland and Ireland

large amounts of impure soda carbonate were obtained from the kelp burned from certain sea-weeds; but the introduction of artificial soda early extinguished that industry, although in connexion with the production of iodine and other products a small quantity of sea-weed soda continues to be made in Scotland till the present day.

The increasing price of potash salts and the discovery of Duhamel led to strenuous attempts to produce the carbonate from common salt. In 1775 the French Academy of Sciences offered a prize of 2400 livres for a practical method of converting salt into soda, But it was never awarded, although the problem was soon triumphantly solved. Indeed in that same year Scheele succeeded in making soda from common salt by means of litharge. Several claims were made for the prize, the first being based on a process invented by a Benedictine monk, Malherbe, in 1778, which was worked with some success for several years. Some time about or before 1787 De la Métherie proposed a plan for calcining with charcoal the sulphate prepared from chloride,—an impracticable proposal, because nearly all the resulting product is sulphide.? But this proposal has historical importance, because from the pub- lished account of it Le Blane received in 1787, according to his own statement, the first suggestion of his process,—probably the most valuable and fertile chemical discovery of all times. Nicolas Le Blanc, born at Issoudun (Indre) in 1753, was private surgeon to the duke of Orleans. He was a chemist as well as a surgeon, and the prospect of the Academy prize attracted his attention to the soda problem. He added to the sulphate and charcoal mixture proposed by De la Methérie a certain proportion of chalk, and by fluxing the mixture in crucibles succeeded in effecting the desired transformation. The chemist D'Arcet and his assistant Dizé, having recognized the sounduess of the process, the duke of Orleans, early in 1790, agreed to provide a capital of 200,000 francs for working the process. In September 1791 the National Assembly granted Le Blane a patent for fifteen years, and under the superintendence of Le Blanc himself, with Dizé and Henri Shée, the steward of the duke of Orleans, a work was established at Saint Denis. But on the fall and execution of his patron Le Blanc, and all others owning and working soda processes, were ordered to resign thein to the state for the public benefit, he receiving the miserable compensation of 4000 francs. In 1800 his works were reconveyed to him, but in 1806,

broken in hope, health, spirit, and resource, he perished by his own hand in a workhouse.

Le Blanc's process continued to hold the field against all compet- ing schemes till within the last few years, and that essentially in

1 It is well established, however, that carbonate of soda can be pro- duced in this manner. It was Liebig, we believe, who showed that the first step in the Le Blanc process is approximately thus— 2Na,80,+ 6C=Na,S,+Na,CO,;+5CO, only the disulphide and the carbonate on continued heating act on each other and on the carbon to form Na,S.—— Na,S, + Na,CO3+2C=2Na,S + 3C0.

its original form. Owing to the raw materials employed in it and the products evolved, it became the basis of a serics of import- ant industries, and many interesting collateral processes have been grafted on the manufacture. Its origin was contemporaneous with the introduction of bleaching-powder (see CHLORINE, Vol. y. p- 678), and the hydrochloric acid given off in the conversion of chloride into sulphate of soda became the raw material of that industry, the two processes being worked in conjunction. Since the days of Le Blanc many other methods for more directly manu- facturing artificial soda have been proposed ; but only one— the so- called "ammonia process "—has seriously threatened to supplant it.

Le Blane's Proccss.—This consists of two stages. In the first stage common salt is converted into sulphate of soda by the action of | sulphuric acid. At first acid sulphate of soda is produced thus— 2NaCl+H,SO,=HCl+NaHSO,NaCl; but subsequently at a sufficient temperature the acid sulphate decomposes the remainder of the salt thus— NaHSO, NaCl=Na,SO,+ HCl, so that all the chlorine is expelled as hydrochloric acid with formation of normal sulphate of soda. In the second stage the sulphate mixed with ' limestone and coal (charcoal in Le Blanc's original proposal) is calcined in a reducing flame, whereby a mixture of sulphide of calcium (CaS) and carbonate of soda is formed, oxygen being gen- erally supposed to pass off as carbonic oxide, CO. According to Lunge, however, the gas produced consists chiefly of carbonic acid, so that

the reaction should correspond essentially to the equation Na,SO,+2C +CaCO,=Na,CO,+CaS+2CO, The sulphide of cal- cium being practically insoluble in water and only very slowly acted on by a solution of carbonate of soda at temperatures under 45° C., the carbonate is extracted by systematic lixiviation with water at a temperature under that limit and is recovered froin the solution by evaporation. If an excess of lime is used, more or less of the soda assumes the caustic form (NaHO). All crude soda-ash lyes contain some caustic alkali besides the following impurities :—chloride of sodium, sulphate of soda, sulphide of sodium combined with sulphide of iron into a soluble green compound which occa- . sions much trouble to the manufacturer. This solution contains also occasionally cyanide or ferrocyanide of sodium, produced by the action of cyanide on the soluble form of sulphide of iron.

Salt Cake Making. —The conversion of the salt into sulphate, called ‘* salt cake,” is effected by means of sulphuric acid of about 60 per cent. (chamber acid), and may be, and still very commonly is, carried out in reverberatory furnaces having flat soles of cast iron, attached to one end of which is a pan of the same material. The waste heat froin the reverberatory furnace is utilized to heat the charge placed in the pan, where the first part of the change is effected, the reaction . beginning briskly with evolution of copious fumes of hydrochloric acid immediately the acid and salt are mixed. Before the Alkali Act of 1863 hydrochloric acid was freely allowed to escape through the stalk with the smoke and fire gases, carrying destruction to the vegetation of vast tracts around the works; but now all the acid is everywhere carefully collected, both because it is a source of profit and from sanitary considerations. Hence in modern ‘‘open roasters,” as these reverberatory furnaces are called, the pan and the calcining sole are separated, so that the comiparatively pure and undiluted fumes from the pan can be led away and collected by themselves, leaving the mixed air, fire gases, and acid fumes from the furnace hearth to be separately dealt with. In another class of furnace, called a “blind roaster,” the calcination of the half-finished sulphate is carried out in a muffle, so that none of the hydrochloric acid is mixed with air and fire gases. Certain ad- vantages attend each class of furnace. In working these hand- furnaces there is much unpleasant manual labour, to avoid which inechanical furnaces have been devised, in which the stirring of the charge, &c., isaccomplished by machinery. The

first mechanica roaster actually used was patented by Jones & Walsh in 1875. In it the whole operation from beginning to end is carried out on the sole of a large cast-iron pan heated from above. Through the roof of the chamber enclosing the pan passes a vertical shaft geared to rotate, to which are attached four horizontal arms, and to these slanting rods are fixed which terminate in scrapers. These scrapers are fixed at different lengths from the shaft centre, so that when the shaft is in motion they pass through and turn over the whole of the charge strewn over the sole of the pan. The acid is passed into the pan by a pipe from a tank situated above the roaster. The hot mixture of fire gases and acid fumes is led through a long pipe to cool down before reaching the condensers.

Hargreaves's Process for making sulphate without the direct use of sulphuric acid is based on the employment of sulphurous acid obtained by the ignition of pyrites aided by air and steam. In this way Mr Hargreaves may be said to get his sulphuric acid ex tempore. The process has only been elaborated as thie result of a most extensive series of investigations and experiments carried out in conjunction with Mr Robinson, their first patent having been obtained in January 1870. The reaction on which the process Ge pends may be thus formulated—2NaCl+SO0,+H,0+0 =Na,S0,+ SHC. The salt used is rendered porous by first moistening it with water and then redrying it by passing it through a hot-air channel

oO D

on an endless chain of plates. The salt so prepared is distributed in a range of not less than eight cast-iron cylinders, which are per- yaded successively by a current of mixed superheated steam and sulphurous acid given off by pyrites. The reaction begins at about 400° C. and increases in energy with the rise of temperature, but it is impracticable to force the heat beyond 500° to 550°, as the charge then begins to fuse and ceases to be permeable by gases. The condensation of the hydrochloric acid given off in these processes is effected by a variety of means according to the purpose in view in securing the gas. In Continental works a favourite method is to pass the gas through a range of Woulfe's bottles arranged in an ascending series, — fresh water entering the topmost and passing through the whole, till in the last and lowest, highly charged with acid, it meets the gas coming direct

from the roaster. After leaving the last and highest bottle the gas is generally washed thoroughly out by passing it into a small coke tower, in which it meets a downward trickle of water. In English works Woulfe's bottles are not employed, and the gases are commonly conducted by a long range of piping, in which they are cooled, to one or a series of coke towers, in which they are exposed to an enormously extended condensing surface of water trickling over the coke, stones, or brick with which the interiors of the towers are filled. ~ Black Ash Making.—The conversion of the crude sulphate or salt cake into carbonate of soda, peculiarly the process of Le Blanc, is conducted in what is termed a "balling furnace." In its simplest form this consists of a long reverberatory furnace in which the fuel occupies a lower grating at one extremity of the flat sole, on which the whole reaction is carried out. This sole has usually two beds, that more distant from the fire-bridge being a little higher than the front division ; and on front and back beds two separate charges at different stages of advancement are treated simultaneously. The salt-cake is taken as it comes from the roaster, mixed with lime- stone or chalk (crushed to pieces not bigger than a walnut) and with coal or anthracite in the form of slack or culm. The proportions of these ingredients used in different works vary widely ; but, generally stated, to each 100 parts of sulphate there are added from 100 to 140 parts of chalk or limestone and from 40 to 70 of coal. These ingredients roughly mixed are passed by a hopper into the back bed of the furnace, where they become dried and heated, while a revious charge is being finished on the hot front or working bed. hen the charge on the working bed has been withdrawn, the mixture on- the back bed is pushed forward and spread over the highly heated sole. During the time it is exposed to the flames the ball-furnaceman is constantly at work with a paddle or rake turning over and exposing equally the whole charge to the action of the flame. Very soon the mixture begins to soften and fuse on the surface, and by degrees the whole mass assumes a stiff pasty form. Meantime bubbles of carbonic acid gas are copiously given off, the material becoming of thinner consistence ; but afterwards the charge becomes again stiff, and carbonic oxide instead of carbonic acid is evolved, which as it is given off burns in long pointed flames, called "'pipes" or "candles." The copious appearance of these flames indicates the completion of the operation, and the ball of black ash must now be withdrawn without delay. The time required for working off a charge is from forty to fifty minutes, The manual labour of

black ash balling is extremely hard and trying, while it demands for its success considerable judgment and experience. On these accounts the efforts of manufacturers were early directed to the introduction of mechanical furnaces ; and in 1848 W. W. Pattinson patented a rotating ball-furnace, which, how- ever, owing to severe tear and wear, was unsuccessful. Improve- ments on the revolving furnace were effected by Elliot & Russell, Stevenson & Williamson, Mactear, and others, which have reudered the working of revolvers a complete success. In its general features a revolver consists of a large boiler-like cylinder of cast iron, lined internally with fire-bricks, and suspended horizontally so that it can be made to rotate about its axis. One of the two open ends communicates with a furnace, which sends its flame through the cylinder. From the other end the hot gases are led away for evapo- rating black-ash liquor. The cylinder is surmounted by a platform or railway from which it receives the charge through a manhole in its side. The charge is made in two separate instalments,—the whole of the chalk and two-thirds of the coal being first introduced, and the cylinder slowly rotated till a portion of the chalk has been burned to lime. Then the sulphate and the remainder of the coal, well mixed, are added, the revolver going slowly at first, but more rapidly as the end approaches, the whole balling being completed in from two to two and a half hours. The manhole door being opened, the revolver is turned round to allow the fluid black ash to pour out by it into a series of vessels placed beneath it. Under Mactear's improved process the whole of the charge is introduced into the revolver at first, and after the decomposition is complete a sinall proportion of caustic lime is thrown in and quickly mixed with the charge, which is thereon at once drawn. The lixiviation of the black ash is conducted in a systematic Manner so as to extract all the soda with the minimum of watcr. The apparatus generally employed—the Buff-Dunlop system—

consists of a series of at least four tanks each provided with a false bottom and two outlet pipes, and so arranged that the liquid part of the contents can be made to flow from any one of the tanks into any other. The method of working consists in making fresh water meet nearly exhausted ash, and the liquid, passing on through the series of tanks and becoming gradually stronger, meets ash less and less exhausted, till in the last tank of the series

the watery solution in its most concentrated state comes in contact with fresh black ash. As soon as the ash in the first tank is completely exhausted the waste residue is withdrawn and a fresh charge introduced. It then becomes the last of the series, number two taking the first place ; and so the work goes on in regular rotation, The lye obtained is allowed to clear in large tanks, from which it is drawn for evaporation.

Boiling Down.—The evaporation of the tank-liquor is generally effected in flat iron pans, heated from the top by the waste heat of the black-ash furnaces. So soon as a certain degree of concentra- tion is passed, soda begins to separate out in the form of granular crystals. These are ladled out and allowed to drain for subsequent calcination and conversion into soda ash. The purity of the granular salt decreases as the evaporation proceeds, chloride and sulphate of sodium, with the sulphides of iron and sodium, separat- ing out with the carbonate. The red liquor which remains with the salt owes its colour to the iron sulphide it contaius. It is intensely caustic, containing much caustic soda. In draining from the soda it carries off with it much of the sulphide and minor impurities from the tanks. The impure soda obtained from the evaporating pans is known as black salt and consists essentially of a monohydrate, Na,CO;+H,0O. A process for évaporation from the bottom is also worked in Lancashire and on the Continent.

Carbonating.—Salts that are fished out of the evaporating pan in the early stage of boiling down, being comparatively pure, require little treatment for finishing as soda ash. They have simply to be dried at a moderate heat to expel the water of crystallization. But with the ordinary black salt, which contains a considerable amount of both caustic soda and sodium sulphide, a special purifying and finishing treatment, called “carbonating,” has to be adopted. For carbonating black salt the strong lye in the evaporating tanks is mixed with sawdust and evaporated down to dryness. The mixture is then introduced into a carbonating furnace, where the heat is gradually raised till thé whole of the sawdust it contains is burnt off, and by the agency of the carbonic acid given off in its com- bustion the sulphide of sodium and the caustic soda present are con- verted into carbonate. Mechanical carbonating furnaces have been introduced, the most successful of which is that of Mactear, in which there is a rotating circulat hearth acted on by scrapers or ploughs. Ordinary soda ash is at best an impure product containing always

some caustic soda, which, however, considering the purposes for which it is used, can scarcely be regarded as an impurity or defect. Its value is determined by analysis and is calculated from the amount of anhydrous soda (Na,O) it contains as carbonate or hydrate.

In many soda-works the black-ash process is purposely so con- ducted as to produce much caustic soda, and the red liquor is then worked up into caustic soda in the following manner. It is first highly concentrated by boiling in a deep iron pan. To the con- centrated solution nitrate of soda is added, which decomposes the sulphide present with evolution of ammonia and formation of sulphate, thus Na,S + NaNO,+2H,0 = Na,SO, + NH; + NaHO. The evaporation is continued till practically all the water is ex- pelled, and the heat is forced till fusion sets in. Then the remain- ing sulphide of sodium with the cyanide is oxidized by the nitrate, which breaks up thus—2NaNO,=Na,0 + 2N +50, with formation of sulphate of soda and oxide of iron. Part of the carbon of the cyanogen separates as graphite (Pauli). The fused mass is allowed to stand, when the suspended matter, including, singularly, most of the alumina, settles down, leaving a perfectly clear liquid, which is run into iron drums, where it solidifies. By means of this process, which has been principally elaborated by Herr Ph. Pauli of Hochst near Wiesbaden, a remarkably pure product can be obtained from a very dirty liquor.

Refined Alkali.—Ordinary soda ash is sufficiently pure for most purposes for which the alkali is required in bulk; but for glass making, &c., it is necessary to remove all traces of iron. For this purpose the ash is dissolved in water, and if a well-carbonated ash is under treatment it is merely well agitated and allowed to stand quietly till impurities settle. By some manufacturers a small amount of carbonate of lime is added to the settling tank to carry down the impurities. Ash containing iron salts, sulphide, and coloured impurities is treated with a small proportion of chloride of lime to oxidize the iron and cause its precipitation as hydrated ferric oxide. The settled liquor is boiled down, the crystals drained, dried, and heated in a reverberatory furnace, and finally ground for the market.

Soda Crystals (washing soda) are similarly prepared, by forming a strong solution of soda ash, allowing the liquor to settle, and running it into large

coolers or crystallizing cones, in which the crystals form in from one to two weeks, according to the coolness of the position. When the crystallization is complete the crust is

broken, the mother-liquor, still holding a large amount of soda, is run off for future use, and the crystals are broken up, drained, and dried for packing and use. Soda crystals contain 63 per cent. of water, and their principal employment is for domestic washing, for which their comparative non-causticity well fits then.

Sulphur Reeovery.—Of the several raw materials of the Le Blanc process, sulphur, now always used in the form of pyrites, is by far the most expensive. The sulphuric acid employed passes out in valueless combination as crude sulphide of calcium, and accumulates in huge mounds. Under the influence of rain sulphide of calciuin in these heaps gradually assumes the forms of sulphide of hydrogen and hydrated oxide of calcium,—CaS + 2H,0 =CaOH,0+H,8. The hydrogen sulphide combines in its turn with another quantity of sulphide of calcium into CaS,H., which being soluble in water runs off as yellow liquor to contaminate streams and give off sulphuretted hydrogen gas with its disgusting smell. By the action of atmo- spheric oxygen part of the CaS,H, loses its hydrogen as water, and the remaining CaS, passes into thiosulphate of calcium, CaS,03, with simultaneous formation of polysulphides. Upon this latter tendency Mond founded his original method for recovering sulphur. He hastened the oxidation by blowing air through the moist waste till a certain proportion of the sulphide was converted into thiosul- phate, and the residue into sulphhydrate CaH,S,, or polysulphide. The inass is lixiviated with water, the liquor decanted off, and mixed with excess of hydrochloric acid, which produces H,S, and in general sulphur, from the sulphhydrate and sulphides of calcium, with SO, and sulphur from the thiosulphate. But 2H,S +S0O, decompose each other into 88+2H,0. Hencc it is obvious that, if the process of oxidation is stopped at the right point, the whole of the sulphur will be recovered as such. The precipitated sulphur is mixed with water placed in a closed cylinder and fused by raising the temper- ature of water round it in an outer casing above the melting point of sulphur. The sulphur then runs

together in the lower part of the cylinder, whence it is drawn off by a pipe and cast into rolls. The Mond process, of all the many sulphur-recovery processes yet intro- duced, is the best ; but even it no more than pays working expenses, and enables the manufacturer to end his process with an innocuous chloride of calcium (CaCl,) without actual loss of money.

About 1880 considerable excitement was caused by a sulphur- recovery process patented by Schaffner and Helbig in 1878, which was expected to revolutionize the soda trade. As these hopes have not been realized, we merely state the principle of the process. The soda waste is digested with a solution of chloride of magnesium, which in the first instance leads to the formation of CaCl, and Mgs. But the latter is at once decomposed, with formation of magnesia and sulphuretted hydrogen, —MgS +2H,0=MgOH,0+H,8. The sulphuretted hydrogen is caused to act on sulphurous acid within a solution of chloride of calcium,- when the sulphur settles in a filtrable form. The liquor remaining after the expulsion of H,S from the mixture of waste and chloride of magnesium consists of a precipitate of magnesia and a solution of chloride of calcium. By blowing carbonic acid into the mixture the following decomposi- tion is effected— MgO + CO, + CaCl, = CaCO; + MgCl,—so that the magnesium is recovered in its original form and the calcium of the waste obtained as carbonate, which may again be returned to the black ash roaster. This very pretty and complete process might probably have been worked out as a practical success had the con- viction not arisen that even with profitable sulphur recovery the Le Blanc process will not long be able to hold its own against the ammonia process.

Ammonia Soda Process. —This process is based on the fact that bicarbonate of ammonia, when added to a strong solution of common salt, decomposes the salt with formation of a precipitate of bicar- bonate of soda and a solution of ammonium chloride (sal-ainmoniac), thus NaCl HCO,=NH,Cl NaHCO,. The ammonia is re- coverable from the sal-ammoniac by distillation with lime, and, supposing no waste to occur, is usable ad infinitum. From bicar- bonate the normal salt is easily prepared by the application of heat —2NaHCO,=Na,0O,+CO,+H,0. Thus by theory one-half of the carbonic acid is recovered, and, supposing the quicklime for the decomposition of the sal-ammoniac to be made by heating limestone,

the loss of carbonic acid is made up incidentally from that source. The only waste product which remains for disposal is the entirely innocuous chloride of calcium made in recovering ammonia by means of lime from sal-ammoniac. The ammonia process was first enun- ciated and patented in England by Dyar & Hemming in 1838; and works on the system were established in Cheshire and some localities on the Continent, where it attracted great attention. Numerous patents, both English and Continental, followed, and many experi- mental works were erected, which all failed to sustain themselves in competition with the Le Blanc works. The principal difficulties to be overcome were imperfect conversion of the salt, and more especially the loss of ammonia ; and it was not till 1861 that real economical success in the ammonia recovery apparatus was attained by Ernest Solvay of Couillet near Charleroi, Belgium. Works on the Solvay principle were established at Couillet in 1868 ; and since that date by the inventor and others, among whom ouglit to be men-

tioned Ludwig Mond, the process has been so perfected that its general adoption now appears to be only a matter of time. Already on the Continent it has practically displaced the Le Blanc process

but in the United Kingdom there is as yet only one establishment manufacturing ammonia soda.

The first essential stage in Solvay’s process consists in saturating the brine with ammonia, The brine, treated with milk of lime and ammonium carbonate to precipitate magnesium and calcium salts, and of proper density, is placed in two cylindrical close iron tanks which communicate by pipes at top and bottom with the ammonia dissolver placed between them. The ammonia dissolvecr is a cylin- drical vessel having the same height as the tanks and provided with a perforated false bottom, down to which a tube is led through the centre of the vessel, and by this tube the ainmonia gas is introduced. Coiled within the cylinder is a worm pipe, through which cold water circulates. Each brine tank is put alternately in connexion with the dissolver. Circulation from the brine tank into the dissolver is kept up by mechanical agitation. As the ammonia becomes ab- sorbed by the brine the temperature of the liquid rises rapidly, and the cold water circulating within

the coiled pipe keeps the temper- ature down. As soon as sufficient ammonia has been passed into the brine the stirrers in the brine tank are stopped ; the sludge of lime and magnesia precipitate is drawn off as it settles at the bottom of the brine tank, or when such precipitate is abundant it is settled and withdrawn in a special decanting tank. The decanted liquor is filtered through fine cloth by pressure, and the filtrate is cooled down in a refrigerating apparatus previous to the next operation.

Treating the Ammoniacal Brine with Carbonie Aeid.—For this purpose a cylindrical tower is employed, divided internally into a series of superimposed segments by diaphragms consisting of per- forated dome-shaped plates. The tower is about 40 to 50 feet in height and is kept nearly full of liquid, which is introduced by a pipe half way up its side. Carbonic acid under a pressure 1°5 to 2 atmospheres is forced in at the bottom of the tower and works its way gradually upwards through the perforations in the diaphragms, thus coming into intimate contact with the ammoniacal brine, Every half hour a part of the pasty mixture of bicarbonate of soda and ammonium chloride solution is drawn off and replaced by fresh liquor. The solid bicarbonate is separated out either by centrifugal action or by a vacuum filter; as thus obtained it is still contaminated with ammonia, of which it smells. To free the bicarbonate from this impurity water is squirted over it till the smell almost entirely disappears.

Conversion into Soda Ash of the bicarbonate is essential, because there is a comparatively limited demand for bicarbonate, and that salt, moreover, obstinately retains an ammoniacal odour, which lessens its value. The preparation of soda ash is attended with considerable practical difficulties, owing to the necessity of retain- ing the contained ammonia. comparatively low heat in a closed roaster, after which it is finished in a muffle furnace at a bright red heat. The gases given off are drawn by an air-pump into a washing apparatus, where the ammonia is retained, and the carbonic acid, which passes on, is conducted to the absorption tower for again impregnating the ammoniacal brine. By this process the whole of the chlorine of common salt comes away as waste in the form of chloride of calcium. To obtain

‘that body in combination as hydrochloric acid, Solvay proposed

in his patent of 1872 to employ magnesia in place of lime in the decomposition of the sal-ammoniac, the solution of chloride of magnesium remaining after the distillation is boiled to dryness, and being by the action of steam separated into magnesia and _hydro- chloric acid,—MgCl, + HO=Mg0O+2HCL The magnesia theoreti- cally works in a circle, being changed into chloride on the liberation of the ammonia from the sal-ammoniac, and recovered again as magnesia with the formation of hydrochloric acid, as aboye indi- cated. But the expense of the process has hitherto been greater than the value of the product obtained, and the one weak point of the Solvay process is the loss of the hydrochloric acid, which forms an important element in the Le Blanc cycle. The loss of ammonia calculated as sulphate in the early days of the Solvay process was as much as 9 per cent. on the carbonate of soda pro- duced ; but by successive improvenients it has been reduced to not more than 5 per cent. The Solvay plant is very expensive, amount- ing, according to his own estimatc, to £1600 per ton of soda ash produced daily ; but other authorities put the capital expenditure as high as £2400 per ton worked daily.

Cryolite Soda.—Of the many processes other than those above mentioned, which have been proposed for soda-making, the only one practically employed is that in which cryolite forms the Taw material. Cryolite, a fluoride of aluminium and sodium, AIF3+ 3NaF, is a mineral substance found in extensive deposits at Ivikat (Ivigtut) (61° 34’ N. lat.) in south-west Greenland. For soda- making the mineral is treated by a process discovered in 1850 by Professor Julius Thomsen of Copenhagen. It is ignited with chalk or limestone, whereby carbonic acid is driven off and fluoride of calcium and aluminate of soda are formed—2(AIF,;3NaF) 6CaCO, = 6CaF, + 8Na,0, Al,0,+6CO, The aluminate of soda 18

The bicarbonate is first exposed to a ~

separated from the artificial fluoride of calcium by lixiviation, and the solution so obtained is decomposed by treatment with carbonic acid, which produces a precipitate of alumina available for alum- making, &c., leaving a solution of carbonate of soda. About 8000 tons of cryolite are annually treated in Pennsylvania and in Denmark.

Statistics of Soda Trade.—No means exist for obtaining an accurate statement of the extent of the soda trade; and such estimates as are published can only be accepted as approximations based on knowledge of the productive capacity of existing works and the general course of trade. Speaking at the Society of Chemi- cal Industry (London section) in January 1883, the late Walter Weldon gave the following estimate (in tons) of the soda produc- tion of the world at that date :—

Le Blane Ammonia Soda. Soda. Total. MOR TIBTICAIN 0. cae ewe es ee oe 880,000 432,000 PEE ILC OMPVe oral opel vie av eretisr eves orecete 70,000 127,125 MEPOTMOUATIY. 5c ieie, 8/0. .0.sisi’s.0: sie eieiniese» 56,500 100,500 S01 ge OS TOREs « OR EIR ae tee 89,000 40,000 EME DUITY Byte cteleie «\a pielise aieneies.0% ae 8,000 WMitediStates:.. ..ecccssceecee! a 1,100

545,500 708,725

In these figures the whole of the products made—soda ash crystals, bicarbonate, caustic soda, &c.—are calculated in terms of pure car- bonate, NaCO,. Assuming the fairness of the calculation, we are warranted in stating the present (1887) production of alkali, as pure carbonate, to be not less than three quarters of a million of tons annually. (W. D.—J. PA.)

SODOM anp GOMORRAH. See Duan Sza, vol. vii. pp. 1-3; comp. Pua@nicta, vol. xviii. p. 803, and Lov.

SODOMA, It, or, more properly, Sopona (c. 1479- 1549), Italian painter. Grannanronio Bazzr (who until receut years was erroneously named Razzi) appears to have borne also the name of “Sodona” as a family name ; itis signed upon some of his pictures. While ““Bazzi” was corrupted into “ Razzi,” ‘“Sodona” was corrupted into “Sodoma” ; and Vasari, followed by other writers on art, accounts for the latter nanie by giving various and explicit details which we leave undiscussed, for, if the painter did not really pass by the appellation of ““Sodoma,” we may fairly infer that explanations which would have been ger- mane to that appellation are not germane to the man himself. Bazzi was born at Vercelli in Piedmont towards 1479, and appears to have been in his native place a scholar of the painter Giovenone. Acquiring thus the strong colouring and other distinctive marks of the Lom-

bard school, he was brought to Siena towards the close of the 15th century by some agents of the Spannocchi family ; and, as the bulk of his professional life was passed in this Tuscan city, he counts as a member of the Sienese school, although not strictly affined to it in point of style. He does not seem to have been a steady or laborious student in Siena, apart from some attention which he bestowed upon the sculptures of Jacopo della Quercia. Along with Pinturicchio, he was one of the first to establish there the matured style of the Cinquecento. His earliest works of repute are seventeen frescos in the Benedictine monastery of Monte Oliveto, on the road from Siena to Rome, illus- trating the life of St Benedict, in continuation of the series which Luca Signorelli had begun in 1498; Bazzi completed the set in 1502. Hence he was invited to Rome by the celebrated Sienese merchant Agostino Chigi, and was em- ployed by Pope Julius II. in the Camera della Segnatura in the Vatican. He executed two great compositions and various ornaments and grotesques. The latter are still extant; but the larger works did not satisfy the pope, who engaged Raphael to substitute his Justice, Poetry, and Theology. In the Chigi palace (now Farnesina) Sodona painted some subjects from the life of Alexander the Great; Alexander in the Tent of Darius and the Nuptials of the Conqueror with Roxana are more particu- larly noticed, When Leo X. was made pope (1513) Bazzi presented him with a picture of the Death of Lucretia (or of Cleopatra, according to some accounts) ; Leo gave him

a large sum of money in recompense and created him a cavaliere. Bazzi afterwards returned to Siena, and ata later date went in quest of work to Pisa, Volterra, and Lucca. From Lucca he returned to Siena, not long before his death, which took place on 14th February 1549 (the older narratives say 1554). He had squandered his pro- perty and died in penury in the great hospital of Siena. Bazzi had married in youth a lady of good position, but the spouses disagreed and separated pretty soon afterwards.

_A daughter of theirs married Bartolommeo Neroni, named

also Riccio Sanese or Maestro Riccio, one of Bazai’s princi- pal pupils.

It is said that Bazzi jeered at the History of the Painters written by Vasari, and that Vasari consequently traduced him ; certainly he gives a bad account of Bazzi's morals and demeanour, and is niggardly towards the merits of his art. According to Vasari, the ordinary name by which Sodona was known was "Il Mattaccio" (the Madcap, the Maniac),—this epithet being first bestowed upon him by the monks of Monte Oliveto. He dressed gaudily, like a mountebank ; his house was a perfect Noah's ark, owing to the strange miscellany of animals which he kept there. He was a cracker of jokes and fond of music, and sang some poems composed by himself on indecorous subjects. In his art Vasari alleges that Bazzi was always negligent,—his early success in Siena, where he painted many portraits, being partly due to want of competition. As he advanced in age he became too lazy to make any cartoons for his frescos, but daubed them straight off upon the wall. Vasari admits, nevertheless, that Bazzi produced at intervals some works of very fine quality, and during his lifetime his reputation stood high.

The general verdict is that Sodona was an able master in ex- pression, motion, and colour. His taste was something like that of Da Vinci, especially in the figures of women, which have grace, sweetness, and uncomnion earnestness. He is not eminent for drawing, grouping, or general elegance of form. His easel pictures are rare. His most celebrated works are in Siena. In S. Domenico, in the chapel of St Catherine of Siena, are two frescos painted in 1526, showing Catherine in ecstasy and fainting as she is about to receive the Eucharist from an angel,—a beautiful and pathetic treatment. In the oratory of S. Bernardino, scenes from the history of the Madonna, painted by Bazzi in conjunction with Pacchia and Beccafumi (1536 to 1538)—the Visitation and the Assumption—are noticeable. In §S. Francesco are the Deposition from the Cross (1513) and Christ Scourged ; by many critics one or other of these paintings is regarded as Bazzi's masterpiece. In the choir of the cathedral at Pisa is the Sacrifice of Abraham, and in the gallery of Florence a St Sebastian.

SOEST, an ancient industrial town in Westphalia, Prussia, is situated in a fertile plain (Soester Bérde), 27 miles to the east of Dortmund and 34 to the south- east of Miinster. Its early importance is borne witness to by its six fine churches, of which the most striking are St Peters, St Mary-in-the-

Fields, founded in 1314 and restored in 1850-52, and the Roman Catholic cathedral, founded in the 10th century by Bruno, brother of Otho the Great, though the present building was erected in the 12th century. This last, with its very original facade, is one of the noblest ecclesiastical monuments of Germany. Remains of the broad wall (now partly enclosing gardens and fields) and one of the gates still remain; but the thirty-six strong towers which once defended the town have disappeared and the moats have been converted into promenades. Jron-working, the manufacture of soap, hats, cigars, and bricks and tiles, linen-weaving, tanning, and brewing, together with market-gardening and farming in the, neighbourhood, and trade in cattle and grain, are the leading industries. The population in 1880 was 13,985, and in 1885 14,848, of whom about 6000 were Roman Catholics.

Mentioned in documents as early as the 9th century, Soest was _ one of the largest and most important Hanseatic towns in the Middle Ages, with a population estimated at from 30,000 to 60,000. Tt was one of the chief emporiums on the early trading route be- tween Westphalia and Lower Saxony. Its code of municipal laws (Schran ; jus susatense), dating from 1144 to 1165, was one of the earliest and best, and served as a model even to Liibeck. On the fall of Henry the Lion, duke of Saxony, Soest passed with the rest of Angria to Cologne. In the 15th century the strife between the townsmen and the archbishops broke out in open war, and in 1444

the strong fortifications of the town withstood a long siege by an army of 60,000 men. The women of Soest are said to have distin- guished themselves in this contest (Soester Fehde), Papal interven- tion ended the strife and Soest was permitted to remain under the protection of the dukes of Cleves. The prosperity of the town waned in more modern times: in 1763 its population was only 3800 ; in 1816 it was 6687.

SOFALA, a seaport town on the east coast of Africa, at the mouth of a river of the same name to the south of 20° S. lat., the seat of a Portuguese commandant. It is now

a wretched place of about 1000 inhabitants, with not more

than twenty European residents, and, as its port is ob-

structed with sandbanks, there is only a small coasting trade with Chiluan and Inhambane. But Sofdla was formerly a town of considerable importance, with a harbour capable of holding a hundred large vessels. Previous to its conquest by the Portuguese in 1505 it was the chief and populous centre of a wealthy Mohammedan state ; and the first governors of the Portuguese East African posses- sions were entitled captains-general of Sofala. The identi- fication of Sofdla with Solomon's Ophir, to which Milton alludes (Par. Lost, xi, 399-401), is untenable.

See Bull. Geogr. Soe. Mozambique (1882) for an account of the Sofala mines; and, generally, Edrisi, Climate i., 8th section ; Dapper ; Baines, The Gold 'Regions of South Africa (1877); and Burton's notes to his edition of Camoens.

SOFIA, since 1878 the capital of Bulgaria, though previously only a district town of the Tuna (Danube) vilayet of Turkey, is situated 1755 feet above the sea, in the midst of a dreary plain between the Stara Planina or main range of the Western Balkans and the bare but im- posing granite mass of the Vitosh Mountains (3400 feet). It stands at the meeting of five great routes from Nish and Belgrade, Lom and Vidin, Plevna and Rustchuk, Philip- popolis and Constantinople, and Késtendil and Salonica. At present (1887) it is two days' journey from the nearest railway station (Tatar-bazarjik), and as the seat of govern- ment is inconveniently near the south-west extremity of the kingdom ; but it lies on the prospective great railway route between Constantinople and Belgrade, and was in the eyes of those who selected it the prospective capital of a much more extensive territory. The climate of Sofia is subject to severe seasonal and diurnal changes: in January the thermometer sinks 4° below zero and in August ap- proaches 100°, and the daily range is frequently 27 or 28 degrees. Minarets and gardens give a certain beauty to the aspect of the town itself, but the outskirts are pain- fully destitute of foliage. In an eastern suburb stands the royal palace, a vast building which cost more than 4,000,000 francs ; and in that neighbourhood, on the site of an abandoned Turkish quarter, quite a new " European " town has sprung up. The rest of Sofia retains its Turkish character, with tortuous streets and mean wooden houses. The modern

cathedral and the archbishop's palace are both large edifices of no special note. Of the many mosques the most striking is the Buyuk-Jami, with its nine metal cupolas ; but more historical interest attaches to the Sophia mosque, occupying the highest point in the town to which it gave its name. It is now completely in ruins (the result of an earthquake), but tradition, which in this case is con- firmed by the architecture of the building, asserts that it was a Christian church erected by a certain Byzantine princess Sophia. Kanitz in 1871 still observed remains of old Byzantine frescos in the narthex. The public baths occupy a very extensive building, with separate suites of apartments for different nationalities or rather religions. The water as it issues from the springs has a temperature of 117°. Sofia exports hides and skins to Vienna, &c., and especially goat-skins to Marseilles ; its principal imports are Indian corn, wheat, and alcoholic liquors—the last a very large item. Formerly the popu- lation was 50,000. In 1870 Kanitz found 19,000—a

liberal estiniate—8000 being Bulgarians, 5000 Turks, 5000 Jews (a colony dating from the expulsion from Spain), 900 Gipsies. At present (1887) the total is 20,000. Close to the north of the town are extensive remains of strong Roman fortifications.

Sofia is the Serdica or Sardica of the Romans and Greeks (so called after the Serds or Sards), the Zriaditza of the Byzantine writers, and the Sredee of the Slavs. ‘‘Sardica is my Rome,” said Constantine before he thought of his new capital on the Bosphorus, It had already been made the capital of Dacia Ripensis by Aurelian, and about 343 it became famous as the seat of a church council, The town was plundered by Attila ; and in 809 it was captured by the Bulgarians, who held it until the Turks got possession of it by stratagem in 1878, or more probably 1882. In 1448 Sofia was for a brief period occupied by the Hungarian John Hunyady (Corvinus), and on the defeat of his enterprise was laid waste by the retreating army. In 1829 it was the headquarters of Mustapha Pasha of Scutari, whose ravages have made the name of Albanian a word of terror to the children in Sofia even now. The Russians entered

Sofia on 4th January 1878, after Gourko's passage of the Balkans. See Kanitz, Donaw Bulgarien, 1877; Laveleye, La Péninsule des Balkans, 1886.

SOGDIANA, or Soepraneg, in Old Persian Sughuda, a province of the Achemenian empire, the eighteenth in the list in the Behistun inscription of Darius (i. 16), corresponded to the modern districts of Samarkand and Bokhara; that is, it lay north of Bactriana between the Oxus and the Jaxartes and embraced the fertile valley of the Polytimetus or Zarafshan. Under the Greeks Sogdiana, was united in one satrapy with Bactria, and subsequently it formed part of the Bactrian Greek kingdom till the "Scythians " (the Yue-chi) occupied it in the middle of the _ 2d century B.c. (comp. vol. xviii. pp. 586 sq., 592 sq.). The valley of the Zarafshan about Samarkand retained even in the Middle Ages the name of the Soghd of Samarkand. Arabic geographers reckon it as one of the four fairest spots in the world.

SOHAR, the second port of 'Oman, Arabia, situated on the Gulf of 'Oman in 24° 29' N. lat. and 56° 45' E. long. It is a place of considerable trade and industry, well built, fortified with walls and a castle, and inhabited by a hospitable and far from bigoted population of the 'Ibad{ sect. The anchorage is good, sheltered between two promontories, and the surrounding country is populous and fertile. Indeed the coast-land of 'Oman is naturally

the most favoured part of Arabia.

The town of Sohdr is older than Islam, and its cloths are men- tioned in the life of Mohammed (Ibn Hisham, p. 1019). Before the Moslem conquest it was in the hands of the Persians, and the Persian name Maziin is not uncommonly applied to it by older Arabic writers. Under Islam it became the capital of 'Oman, and it is sonietimes called 'Oman, from which fact it has sometimes, but very precariously, been identified with the Omana of classical writers. In the earlier Middle Ages Sohar was one of the first commercial cities of Islam on the Indian Ocean and had an active part in the China trade. This prosperity was unabated when Mokaddast wrote of it (p. 92) towards the close of the 10th century; in the 12th century, when Edris{ wrote, the China trade was a thing of the past ; and about 1230 Ibn Mojawir describes it as a ruin in- habited by the demons of the desert. Its decay

appears to be connected with the rise of other ports—Kalhat on the Arabian and Ormuz on the Persian side of the Persian Gulf—but more especially with the political convulsions of ‘Oman. This district, which has always had an isolated position in Eastern history, early became a stronghold of the Khawarij (‘Ibadiya) and paid very in- termittent obedience to the caliphs till it was reduced by Mo’tadid about the year 900. Even after this conquest the native imams held their ground in the mountainous inland country at Nazwa (Istakhri, p. 26), and renewed the struggle for independence with the Buwaihid and Seljuk sovereigns of Fars, who succeeded in these regions to the power of the caliphate. Ibn Mojawir connects the destruction of Sohar with these struggles, and, though he seems to imply a later date, it is possible that his statement is to be com- bined with what Ibn al-Athir (ix. 387) tells of the rising of Al-Rashid billdh about 1050. After this event there is a period of obscurity in the annals of ‘Oman; the independence of the country was ultimately secured under the native (Azdite) princes of Nazwa, but Sohar never recovered its importance. It is mentioned, however, by Marco Polo, under the name of Soer, as trading in horses with Malabar, and also by Ibn Batita, and must therefore have been resettled soon after the time of Ibn Mojawir. Sohar was seized by

the Portuguese in 1508 and held by them till about 1650. In the 18th century Niebuhr speaks of it as a quite unimportant place ; Wellsted in 1836 assigned to it a population of 9000; Palgrave in 1863 estimated the population at 24,000, an estimate the more re- markable that in the interval the town had suffered scverely from the Wahhabis. The Red Sea Pilot (1883) gives the more probable figure of 4000 to 5000.

SOISSONS, a city of France, in the department of Aisne, the seat of a bishopric and a fortified post on the left bank of the Aisne at the junction of the Crise, lies 65 miles north-east of Paris by the railway to Laon. The population in 1881 was 10,895 (11,112 in the commune). The cathedral of Notre Dame St Gervais and St Protais, begun in the second half of the 12th century and finished about the end of the 13th, is 328 feet long and 87 wide; the vaulting of the nave is 100 feet above the pave- ment. The single tower dates from the middle -of the 13th century and is a fairly good imitation of

those of Notre Dame of Paris, which it equals in height (216 feet). The transepts are of different dates and dissimilar in their arrangement. In the north transept there is a very fine door on the east; the south transept is the oldest and most graceful portion of the whole edifice. The choir is surrounded with eight square chapels, and the apse with five large polygonal chapels, of which the three in the middle (as well as the high windows of the choir) still retain their fine 13th-century glass. The rose-window of the north transept represents the life of the Virgin in twelve medallions. The high altar is flanked by two marble figures representing the annunciation and above it is an Adoration of the Shepherds ascribed to Rubens ; the cathedral also has some rich 16th-century tapestries. Considerable remains still exist of the magnificent abbey of St Jean des Vignes, where Thomas a Becket resided from 1161 to 1170, and which was rebuilt in the 13th century; these include the ruins of two cloisters (the smaller dating from the Renaissance), the refectory, and above all the cathedral- like facade of the church (recently restored). Of the three portals with twisted columns the central one is adorned with statues ; above them runs a gallery, over which again is a large window; the two unequal towers (230 and 246 feet) of the 15th and 16th centuries are surmounted by beautiful stone spires, which command the town. The ruins of this fine building are unfortunately occupied by the military authorities. The church of St Léger, erected in 1139 and rebuilt at the beginning of the 13th century, was formerly attached to an abbey of the Génové- fains. Beneath are two crypts of the 12th and 13th centuries. Of the abbey church of St Pierre, built in the 12th century in the Romanesque style, the only remains are the facade and two bays of the choir. The royal abbey of Notre Dame was founded in 660 for monks and nuns by Leutrade, wife of Ebroin, the celebrated mayor of the palace. The number of the nuns (216 in 858), the wealth of the library in manuscripts, the valuable relics, the high birth of the abbesses, the popularity of the pilgrimages, all contributed to the importance of this abbey, of which there exist only some inconsiderable remains. The wealthiest of all the abbeys in Soissons and one of the most important of all France during the first two dynasties was that of St Médard, on the right bank of the Aisne, founded in 560 by Lothaire I., beside the villa of Syagrius, which had become the palace of the Frankish kings. St Médard, apostle of Vermandois, and Kings Lothaire and Sigebert were buried in the monastery, which became the residence of 400 monks and the meeting-

place of several councils. It was there that Childeric ITI., the last Merovingian, was deposed and Pippin the Short was crowned by the papal legate ; and there Louis the Pious was kept in captivity in 833. The abbots of St Médard coined money, and in Abelard's time (12th century) were lords of 220 villages,

farms, and manors. At the battle of Bouvines (1214) the abbot commanded 150 vassals. In 1530 St Médard was visited by a procession of 300,000 pilgrims. But the religious wars ruined the abbey, and, although it was restored by the Benedictines in 1637, it never recovered its former splendour. Of the seven churches and the con- ventual buildings of the ancient foundation there hardly remains a trace. The site is occupied by'a deaf and dumb institution, the chapel of which stands over the crypt of the great abbey church, which was altered in the 12th century. In the crypt is a stone coffin, said to have been Lothaire's, and close at hand is an underground chamber, reputed to have been the place of captivity of Louis the Pious. The civil buildings of Soissons are not of much interest. The hétel de ville contains a museum with scientific and archeological collections; the hétel dieu goes back to the 13th century ; the library contains 40,000 volumes and curious manuscripts. . Among the industrial establishments are tanneries, saw-mills, and foundries and factories for the production of stoves, agricultural im- plements, candles, and chocolate. Grain, flour, haricot beans of exceptional quality, pease, wool, hemp, flax, cattle, timber, and charcoal are the principal articles of trade. There is also a large bottle factory, and work is

done for the flannel and blanket factories of Rheims. Soissons is generally believed to occupy the site of the oppidum of Gallia Belgica called Noviodunum by Cesar; but some writers identify this place with Noyon, Noyant, or Nouvion. One thing is clear, that this oppidum was the capital of the Sucssiones, who occupied twelve towns and whose king, Divitiacus, one of the most powerful in Gaul, had extended his authority even beyond the sea among the Britons. In 58 B.c. Galba, king of the Suessiones, separated from the confederation of the Belgians and submitted to the Romans, At the beginning of the empire Noviodunum took the name of

Augusta Suessionum, and afterwards that of Swessiona, and became the second capital of Gallia Belgica, of which Rheims was the metropolis. The town was before long surrounded with a regular wall and defended by a citadel ; and it became the starting- point of several military roads (to Rheims, Chateau-Thierry, Meaux, Paris, Amiens, and St Quentin). Christianity was introduced by St Crispin and St Crispinian, men of noble birth, who, however, earned their livelihood by shoemaking, and thus became patrons of that craft. After their martyrdom in 297 their work was continued by St Sinitius, the first bishop of Soissons. After the barbarians had crossed the Rhine and the Meuse Soissons became the metro- polis of the Roman possessions in the north of Gaul, and on the defcat of Syagrius by Clovis the Franks seized the town. It was at Soissons that Clovis married Clotilde, and, though he afterwards settled at Paris, Soissons was the capital of his eldest son Lothaire, and afterwards of Chilperic I., king of Neustria. It was not till the time of Chilperic's son, Lothaire II., that the kingdom of Soissons was incorporated with that of Paris. In 752 Pippin the Short was at Soissons proclaimed king by an assembly of leudes and bishops, and he was there crowned by the papal legate St Boniface before being crowned at Saint Denis by the pope himself. Louis the Pious did penance there after being deposed by the assembly at Com- piégne. Under Charles the' Vat (886) the Normans failed in an attempt against the town, but laid waste St Médard and the neigh- bourhood. In 923 Charles the Simple was defeated outside the walls by the supporters of Rudolph of Burgundy, and Hugh the Great besieged and partly burned the town in 948. Under the first Capets Soissons was held by hereditary counts, frequently at war with the king or the citizens. Thus the latter bought in 1131 a communal charter from Louis VI. and their bishop. In 1155, at an assembly of prelates and barons held at Soissons, Louis VII. issued a famous decree forbidding all private wars for a space of ten years ; and in 1325 Charles the Fair replaced the mayor of Soissons bya royal provost dcpendenton the bailiwick of Vermandois, the inhabitants retaining only the right of electing four échevins. Louis of Chatillon, count of Soissons, was killed at Crécy, and his son, a hostage for King John in England, sold his countship to Enguerrand de Coucy to obtain money for his ransom in 1367. Finally the last count of Soissons, sprung from a branch of the house of Bourbon, rebelled against Louis XIII., and defeated the royal troops at La Marfée in 1641, but pcrished in the battle. The town had to suffer severely during the war of the Hundred Years ; in

1414, when it was held by the Burgundians, it was captured and sacked by the Armagnacs under the dauphin; and this same fate again befell it six times within twenty years. The treaty of Arras (1435) brought it again under the royal authority. It was sacked by Charles Y. in 1544 and in 1565 by the Huguenots, who

laid the cliurches in ruins and, supported by the prinee of Condé, count of Soissons, kept possession of the town for six months. During the League Soissons eagerly joined the Catholic party. Mayenne made the town his principal residence, and he died there in 1611. A European congress was held there in 1728. In 1814 Soissons was captured and recaptured by the allies and the French. In 1815, after Waterloo, it was a rallying point for the vanquished, and it was not oecupied by the Russians till the 14th of August. In 1870 it capitulated to the Germans after a bombardment of three days.

‘SOKOTO, an important Fulah kingdom or empire in Central Soudan, comprising whiat are frequently called the Haussa states. Its boundaries (see vol. i. pl. IT.) are irregu- larly marked off by the plateau lands of Air or Asben on the north, the kindred Fulah state of Gandu on the west, while the river Binué practically forms its southern limit as far as the nieridian of 10° E.; beyond this it runs south into the Congo basin. On the east lies the kingdom of Bornu. From north-west to south-east Sokoto has a length little short of 900 English miles and its average breadth is about 280. The whole area has been roughly computed to be equal to that of Spain (about 195,000 square miles), and to have a population of from ten to twelve millions. The country may be described as a great undulating plain, rarely exceeding 1000 feet in height, with the exception of the province of Bauchi in the centre, which runs into a highland region with heights of 3000 feet, and the still more imposing masses of Adamawa in the south, which are sald to attain an altitude of 10,000 feet in Mount Alantika, In other respects Sokoto presents more varied features, chiefly determined by the amount of rainfall, though the varying fertility of the soil is a not unimport- ant factor. In the southern parts, where there are almost perpetual rains, large streams and rivers are numerous, —the feeders of the Binué, the great eastern (left-hand) tributary of the Niger. Here grow the virgin forests with giant growths and exuberant

foliage, with creepers, with bananas and plantains, palm-oil trees and yams. In the more temperate— because more elevated —districts of the middle area, with a smaller rainfall, the vegetation is less luxuriant, and such fruits as the date, lime, and pome- granate are cultivated. In the northern parts the climate is still more arid, and the country is burned up for the greater part of the year. This is the region of acacias and

mimosas, of baobabs, of the branching dum palm and the

curiously bulged deléb. Here are no forests nor rank grass, while the exigencies of a dense population have caused the clearing away of the bush except on the most barren spots, where it supplies the necessary fuel for domestic purposes. In this northern district there-are no streams except in the wet season, and the wants of the people are supplied by fountains in the more favoured places, and by wells—frequently very deep—ain those not so advantageously situated. Lying within the tropics, Sokoto is subject to excessive heat,—damp and steamy in the south, dry and furnace-like in the north, where it suffers from the hot winds from the Sahara. In Adamawa the rainy season—or, to be more correct, the season of excessive rains—commences in April and lasts till October or later, while in Gober in the north the rains commence in June and seldom last more than three months, during which the country becomes transformed from a repellent desert into a well-cultivated nursery garden.

For Central Africa Sokoto may be described as fairly healthy, though, as may be expected from a conjunction of excessive heat with exeessive rain, fevers are not uneommon in the southern parts, while ophthalmia is prevalent in the north, especially among the poorer classes, who are compelled to expose themselves to the blind- ing dust from the deserts and the excessive glare of the sun reflected from the burning sands.

The natural produetions of Sokoto are such as are more or less common throughout the whole of the Soupan (q¢.v.). Among cereals rice and wheat are cultivated in many parts, though the staple productions are Kaffre corn, millet, and maize. Sweet potatoes,

$0 K=8 OK

ground nuts, yams, onions, and other vegetables are largely grown, Of fruits dates, pomegranates, citrons, and bananas abound in more restricted areas. The Shea butter tree supplies an excellent oj} for lamps, and also for cooking, though it is only nsed by the poorer classes. The palm-oil tree is only found in the damp basin of the Binué. The most important vegetable products are cotton and indigo, which are universally grown. The cotton is manufactured into cloth, being used by the native population as well as largely exported to neighbouring eountrics. In some parts a species of silk found in the forests is largely used, and the people of Yakoba in Bauchi are said to rear the silkworm. Of mincral products there secm to be few, though it is known that both silver and lead occur in the Binné area, Iron is extensively diffused and of excellent quality.

The inhabitants of this extensive region, held together by a conquering race and not by any natural tie into one common kingdom, are of diverse tribes and affinities. They, however, may be roughly divided into three groups. (1) First come the pure Negro races of Adamawa, of which the chief tribe is the Batta. (2) The Haussa form the mass of the population except in Adamawa. They are pre-eminent among Negroes for their physical appeararice and intellectual abilities. They are wonderfully skilled in various arts and industries and noted for their commercial genius and enterprise, Mohammedanism is their religion, and indeed in all respects they are well advanced on the road to civilization. They are very fond of voluminous elothes. (8) The Fulahs are a Hamitic race, who from being simple herdsmen in the beginning of the 19th century have become the rulers and masters over a hundred alien races be- tween the Atlantic and Lake Tehad. They have not the commercial or industrial skill of the Haussa, but in other respects have reached ahigher level. They are of slender build and are distinguished by their light coppery colour. The inhabitants of Sokoto live mostly in large towns, many of which contain from 10,000 to 20,000 in- habitants. These towns are all protected by strong mud walls and outer dry moats. Their interior is divided into a series of com- pounds, each entered through a flat-roofed audience chamber. Inside are the beehive-shaped huts of the household. The gate- ways are also strongly fortified. The ruler over Sokoto is a Fulah sultan, whose power is absolute, though tempered by a species of feudal system. The governors of some of the larger provinces, though owning allegiance to the sovereign, are mostly hereditary, and

beyond sending a ycarly tribute are practically independent. The tie indeed is more religious than anything else. The great weakness of the empire is its want of coherence and the absence of a strong central Government. Yet, though always appearing to be on the point of falling to pieces, it contrives to keep tonathel The condition in which Barth found it in 1855 was practically the same as when the present writer visited it in 1885,

The chief provinces of Sokoto are Zamphoro, Zaria, Katsena, Bauchi, Kano, and Adamawa. The most important towns are— Sokoto, the acknowledged capital of the empire, famed chiefly for its leather-work and straw hats (it divides with Wurnu the dis- tinction of being the residence of the sultan; Clapperton died here in 1887); Wurnu, about 18 milcs farther east, the present (1887) headquarters of the court ; Kano, the great commercial emporium of Central Soudan ; and Yakoba, chiefly noted for its large size,— said to contain 150,000 inhabitants.

The history of Sokoto may be said to have commeneed with the 19th century. Previous to that date little is known further than that the country was divided among a number of small chiefs, a prey to the powerful kings of Bornu, Kebbi, and Songhwai (Songhai). In 1802 the Fulahs, then little regarded and semi- serfs in position, were scattered all over the country, apparently without any national tie to unite them to common action. At last, however, an imam—one Othman dan Fodio—appeared, who with the watchword of Islam gave a new life to his tribesmen and in an incredibly short time transformed them from peaceable nomads into soldiers of the Crescent, and after a few initial reverses swept like a whirlwind over an enormous area, establishing himself as ruler and Mohammedanism as the religion of the whole of Central Soudan. At his death the parts now known as Sokoto fell to the share of his son Bello, and in the family of Othman the reins of government have since remained, though the descent is not as a rule from father to son, but either to a brother or a brother’s son. The latest phase in the history is the proclaiming of a protector- ate over a part of Sokoto on the Binué by the British Govern- ment, and the handing over of the administration of the Niger region to the Royal Niger Company. To this company the sultan has conceded all his rights on the Binué and a monopoly of trade throughout his dominions, thus making them practically masters of all foreign intercourse.

The most important sources of information regarding Sokoto are—Clapperton's Journeys in the early part of the 19th century ; Barth's Travels in Central Africa between 1849 and 1855—a perfect mine of information ; and Rollfs's Reise durch Nordafrika vom Mittelmeer nach dem Tschad-See in 1866-67. Among later and ininor travellers have been Flegel, who visited Sokoto in 1880, and Thomson, who conducted a commercial and political mission to the court of the sultan in 1885,

SOLAN GOOSE. See Gannet.

SOLARIO, Antonio (c. 1382-1455), a painter of lead- ing importance in the Neapolitan school, is commonly called Lo Zingaro, or The Gipsy. His father is said to have been a travelling smith. To all appearance Antonio was born at Civita in the Abruzzi, although it is true that one of his pictures is signed 'Antonio de Solario Venetus," which may possibly be accounted for on the ground that the signature is not genuine. Solario is said to have gone through a love-adventure similar to that of the Flemish painter, Quintin Massys. He was at first a smith, and did a job of work in the house of the prime Neapolitan painter Colantonio del Fiore; he fell in love with Colantonio's daughter, and she with him; and the father, to stave him off, said if he would come back in ten years an accomplished painter the young lady should be his. Solario studied the art, returned in nine years, and claimed and obtained his bride. The fact is that Colantonio del Fiore is one of those painters who never existed; consequently his daughter never existed, and the whole story, as relating to these particular personages, must be untrue. Whether it has any truth, in relation to some un- identified painter and his daughter, is a separate question which we cannot decide. Solario made an extensive round of study,—first with Lippo Dalmasio in Bologna, and afterwards in Venice, Ferrara, Florence, and Rome. On returning to Naples he rapidly took the first place in his art. His principal performance is in the court of the monastery of S. Severino—twenty large frescos illustrat- ing the life of St Benedict, now greatly decayed; they present a vast variety of figures and details, with dexterous modelling and colouring. Sometimes, however, Lo Zingaro's colour is crude, and he generally shows weakness of draughtsmanship in hands and feet. His

tendency is that of a naturalist,—the heads life-like and individual, and the landscape backgrounds better invented and cared for than in any contemporary. In the Studj gallery of Naples are three pictures attributed to this master, the most remarkable one being a Madonna and Child Enthroned with Saints. The heads here are reputed to be mostly portraits. Solario initiated a mode of art new in Naples ; and the works painted between his time and that of Tesauro are locally termed “Zingareschi.” He had many scholars, but not of pre-eminent standing— Nicola Vito, Simone Papa, Angiolillo Roccadirame, Pietro and Ippolito dal Donzello. It has often been said that Solario painted in oil, but of this there is no evidence.

SOLDER is a metallic alloy or metal employed for cementing or binding together two metallic surfaces. The solder is applied to the surfaces to be united in a molten state, and it is therefore generally either a more fusible body than the metal to be acted on or it is presented in a more fusible condition. The process of autogenous soldering consists in uniting the individual metallic edges themselves by melting and fusing them in the heat of the oxyhydrogen blowpipe or by means of an ignited blast of mixed coal gas and air. Autogenous soldering is extensively used in connexion with large plumber work. Ordinary solders are divided into hard and soft classes, the hard comprising such as require a red heat for their melting. The soft solders used by plumbers and tinsmiths consist of variable mixtures of lead and tin, and for pewterers’ use bismuth is added to these. The hardest brazing solder has equal parts of copper and zinc, and for softer qualities increased amounts of zinc with tin and sometimes antimony are employed. For fine jewellery alloys of gold, silver, and copper are used ; silver solder is employed for inferior qualities, and even common soft solder finds extensive employment in the jewellery trade. Silver is the proper solder for German silver manufactures

also; and gold is the medium for joining the edges of platinum vessels. In soldering, the metallic edges to be united must be free from oxidation and dirt ; and to keep them unoxidized during the operation several fluxes are used, such as borax in brass soldering, rosin and solution of zinc chloride for tin-plate, zinc chloride for zinc, rosin and tallow for lead and tin, and olive oil in pewter work. Special machinery has been devised for the soldering of the tinned cases now so extensively employed in the preserved

food trade. In common soft soldering the solder is melted and applied to the joint by a heated iron or copper soldering bolt, but solders are also applied by being melted on in the open fire, or in the muffle furnace, by immersing the joint in a bath of molten solder, or by pouring the molten material on the joint. In dealing with liard solders the leat of the blowpipe flame is used.

SOLE. Soles are a group of Flat-Fishes (Pleuronec- tudx), which is represented by numerous species in all suit- able localities within the temperate and tropical zones ; they become, however, scarce in the southern parts of the southern temperate zone, and are absent altogether in some districts—for instance, on the coasts of southern Australia. Many of the species enter fresh water freely, and some have become thoroughly acclimatized in it. Soles are a highly specialized type of flat-fish; their mouth is very narrow, twisted round to the blind side, and small teeth are developed on that side only. As they always lie or swim on one side, the pectoral fins have ceased to have a function, and consequently these organs are reduced in size, and in many of the species are mere rudiments or are lost entirely. The eyes are small, invariably on the right side of the fish, the upper occupying a position more or less in advance of the lower. Soles are littoral fishes, inhabiting sandy bottoms, shifting with the season from shallow into somewhat deeper water. Like all flat-fishes they are carnivorous, but feed on small animals only; none attain to a large size, scarcely exceeding that of 2 feet. Of the forty species known of the genus Solea, four are found on the British coast; the one most gene- rally known and commercially most important is the Common Sole (Solea solea) ; it seems to occur in greater or less abundance on all flat coasts of Europe, but its numbers have been considerably thinned within the last quarter of a century, at least on the British coasts, doubt- less in consequence of the introduction of the trawl. At any rate, that over-fishing is the cause of the decrease of this valuable table fish is amply proved by the fact that simultaneously with the quantity the average weight of the fish has been diminished, soles of 12 inches in length and of 8 ounces in weight being now in many localities the largest that can be obtained. At present young specimens form the majority of the soles in the market, and are sold under the names of ‘‘slips” or “ tongues.” During the breeding-season, which falls in the months from February to April, soles lose much of their flavour. It is a singular fact that male soles seem to be almost unknown, and some ichthyologists account for it by sup- posing that the males remain much

smaller than the females, and are overlooked in consequence. The Lemon Sole (Solea aurantiaca) is much less esteemed than the common sole, and more rarely seen in the market, prob- ably because it is locally distributed in deeper water. It is of a yellow colour, marbled with brown and irregularly spotted with black; the pectoral fin is ornamented with an ovate black spot on its hinder half. Even when this bright coloration has disappeared in the fish after death, it may always be distinguished from the common sole by its large dilated nasal opening on the blind side, which is surrounded by a broad fringe. The Variegated Sole (Solea variegata) is at times taken in considerable numbers XXII. — 32

on the south coast by meaus of the trawl, and esteemed as a table fish. It differs from the two preceding species by the rudimentary condition of the pectoral fins, that of the blind side being minute. The colour is brown; darker bands cross the body, and are darkest on the dorsal and anal fins, where they appear as a row of about six large spots. It does not appear to grow to the same size as the common sole. The fourth British species, Solea minuta, is still smaller, not much exceeding 5 inches in length ; it is therefore not of commercial importance, although it may be caught at times in the trawl in large numbers. As in the preceding species, the pectoral on the blind side is minute, but that of the right side is large enough to show a distinct black spot. The colour of the body is brownish or greyish, with small black spots, and every sixth or seventh ray of the dorsal and anal fins is black.

Flat-fishes resembling soles abound on the shores of the Indian Ocean beside the true soles, but they have the eyes on the left side of the head and lack pectoral fins altogether. ‘They have been referred, therefore, to distinct genera, such as Plagusia and Cynoglossus.

SOLEURE, or Sototuurn, is one of the cantons of Switzerland, ranking as tenth in the Confederation, and taking its name from its chief town. As it consists simply of the territories won by the city, its irregular shape is easily accounted for. It takes in most of the valley of the Aar between the towns of Soleure and Olten, but stretches across the eastern Jura to Dornach not far from Basel, while to the south it tends in the direction of Bern. The total

area is 305°9 square miles, of which all but 254 square miles is classed as ‘‘ productive,” 103°3 square miles of this being covered by forests. In other words, 91°7 per cent. is fertile. The highest point in the canton is the Hasenmatte (4754 feet), in the range behind the town of Soleure, in which too is the Weissenstein (4213 feet), so well known as a great centre for the air and whey cure, as also for its fine view. In 1880 the population of the canton was 80,424 (an increase of 5754 on the census of 1870), the women outnumbering the men by 1704. Of these no fewer than 79,514 are German-speaking.

Soleure now includes 63,037 Roman Catholics to 17,114 Protestants, but in the ten years 1870-1880 the latter increased by 4666, the former only by 965. Ecclesiastic- ally the districts now forming part of the canton belonged till 1814 to the dioceses of Lausanne, Basel, and Con- stance; but since the complete reorganization of 1828 it is part of the diocese of Basel, and the bishop of Basel lives in the city of Soleure.

The only places of any size in the canton are its capital, Soleure (7668 inhabitants), which possesses the finest armoury in Switzerland, and Olten (3979). It is counted as one of the most fertile and productive cantons in the Confederation, and exports iron, wood, marl, marble, glass, &e. In educational matters it takes a high place, and its two chief towns are connected by a railway, Olten being one of the principal railway junctions in Switzerland, and the meeting-place of the St Gotthard railway with the main lines branching off to the north, east, and west.

An old rhyme claims for the town of Soleure the fame of being the oldest place in “Gallia” save Treves. Certainly its name “Salodurum” is found in Roman inscriptions (the termination possibly pointing to a Celtic origin), and its position as command- ing the approach to the Rhine from the south-west has led to its being more than once strongly fortified. Situated just on the borders of Alamannia and Burgundy, it seems to have inclined to the latter allegiance, and it was at Soleure that in 1038 the Burgundian nobles made their final submission to the emperor Conrad IJ. The medieval town grew up round the house of secular canons founded in honour of St Ursus and St Victor (two of the Theban legion who are said to have been martyred here in the 3d eentury) by Queen Bertha, either the mother of Charlemagne

and wife of Pippin (8th century) or the more famous wife of Rudolph II., king of Burgundy (10th century), and was naturally in the

diocese of Lausanne. The prior and canons had many rights over the town, but criminal jurisdiction and the “advocatia” of the house remained with the kings of Burgundy, passed to the Ziringen dynasty, and on its extinction in 1218 reverted to the emperor. The city thus became a free imperial city, and in 1252 shook off the jurisdiction of the canons and took them under its protection, In 1295 we find it allied with Bern, and this connexion is the key to its later history. It helped Bern in 1298 in the great fight against the nobles at the Dornbiihl, and again at Laupen in 1339 against the jealous Burgundian nobles. It was besieged in 1322 by Duke Leopold of Austria (the defeated of Morgarten) during the struggle for the empire, but he was eompelled to withdraw. In the 14th eentury the government of the town fell into the hands of the guilds, which practically filled all the public offices. Through Bern (which became a member in 1853) Soleure was drawn into association with the Swiss Confederation. An attempt to surprise it in 1382, made by the decaying Kyburg branch of the Hapsburgs, was foiled, and resulted in the admittance of Soleure in 1385 into the Swabian League and in its sharing in the Sempach war. Though Soleure took no part in that battle, she is included in the Sempach ordinance of 1893 and in the great treaty of 1894 by which the Hapsburgs renounced their elaims to all territories within the Confederation. In 1411 she in vain sought to be admitted into the Confederation, a privilege only granted to her in 1481 at the diet of Stanz, after fie iad taken part in the Aargau, Italian, Toggenburg, and Burgundian wars. It was also in the 15th century that by purchase or eonquest the town acquired the main part of the territories forming the present canton. In 1529 the majority of the “communes” went over to the Reformers, and men were sent to fight on Zwingli’s side at Kappel (1531), but in 1538 the old faith regained its sway, and in 1586 Soleure was a member of the Golden or Borromean League. Though the city ruled the surrounding districts, the peasants were fairly treated, and hence their revolt in 1653 was not so desperate as in other places. Soleure was the usual residence of the French ambassador, and no doubt this helped on the formation of a “ patriciate,” for after 1681 no fresh citizens were admitted,

and later we find only twenty- five ruling families distributed over the eleven guilds. Serfage was abolished by Soleure in 1785. The old system of the city ruling over eleven bailiwicks came to an end in Mareh 1798, when Soleure opened its gates to the French army. She was one of the six “directorial” cantons under the 1808 constitution. In 1814 the old aristocratic government was set up again, but this was finally broken down in 1839, Soleure in 1832 joining the League of the Seven to guarantee the maintenance of the new cantonal constitutions. Though distinctly a Roman Catholic canton, she did not join the “ Sonderbund,” and voted in favour of the federal constitutions of 1848 and 1874. Since 1830 she has revised her constitution in 1840, 1850, 1856, and 1875, besides three partial revisious of 1867, 1869, and 1881. The present constitution may be described as an ultramontane democracy, the priests having very great influence. The “Kantonsrath” or iaeletine assembly is elected by all citizens over twenty years of age, in the proportion of one member to 800 inhabitants. This assembly selects the “ Regierungsrath ” or executive, consisting of five members. In both cases the period of office is five years, though on the demand of 4000 citizens a popular vote must be taken as to whether the existing members shall continue to sit or not. In the eanton the “obligatory referendum” and the “initiative” are legal. By the former all laws passed by the assembly, and all financial resolutions involving the expenditure of 100,000 francs or of an annual sum of 20,000 francs, must be approved by a popular yote. By the latter 2000 citizens can compel the assembly to consider any proposal for making a new law or for amending an old one. Further, the demand of the majority of the assembly or of 3000 citizens 1s sufficient to necessitate a popular vote as to the advisability of revising the constitution, the revised draft itself requiring a further popular vote.

SOLI, an ancient town of Asia Minor, on the coast of Cilicia, between the rivers Lamus and Pyramus, from each of which it is about 62 miles distant. Colonists from Argos in Greece and Lindus in Rhodes are described as the founders of the town, which is first mentioned in history at the time of the expedition of the younger Cyrus. In the days of Alexander the Great it was 80 wealthy that that conqueror exacted from its inhabitants a fine of 200 talents. In the war between Mithradates and the Romans Soli was destroyed by Tigranes, but it was subsequently rebuilt by Pompey, who settled there many of the pirates whom he had captured, and called the town after

himself, Pompeiopolis. Soli was the birthplace of Chrysippus the Stoic and of the poets Philemon and Aratus. The bad Greek spoken there gave rise to the

term coAotxicpos, ‘solecism,” which has found its way into all the modern languages of Europe. Extensive ruins still mark the site of the town; the place is now called Mezetlu.

SOLICITOR. See Arrorney. It should be noticed that by the Supreme Court of Judicature Act, 1873, § 87, all persons admitted as solicitors, attorneys, or proctors of any English court, the jurisdiction of which was transferred by the Act to the High Court of Justice or the Court of Appeal, were thenceforth to be called solicitors of the supreme court. The title of attorney-general, however, still remains as that of the highest law officer of the crown. The Legal Practitioners Act, 1876, and the Solicitors Act, 1877, enabled solicitors to practice as proctors in the eccle- siastical courts (see Procror). The Conveyancing Act, 1881, having made great changes in the practice of con- veyancing, it became necessary to place the remuneration of solicitors upon a new basis. This was done by the Solicitors Remuneration Act, passed on the same day as the Conveyancing Act. It provides for the framing of general orders, fixing the principles of remuneration with reference inter alia to the skill and responsibility involved, not, as was generally the case before, with reference simply to the length of the documents perused or prepared. General orders in pursuance of the Act were issued in

1882.

In Scotland solicitors in the supreme court are not, as in England, the only persons entitled to act as law agents. They share the privilege with writers to the signet in the supreme court, with solicitors at law and procurators in the inferior courts. This difference is, however, now of little importance, as by the Law Agents Act, 1873, any person duly admitted a law agent is entitled to practise before any court in Scotland. In the United States the term solicitor is used in some States in the sense which it bore in England

before the Judicature Act, viz., a law agent practising before a court of equity.

Many of the great public offices in England and the United States have their solicitors. In England the treasury solicitor fills an especially important position. He is responsible for the enforce- ment of payments due to the treasury. The office of queen's proctor is now combined with that of treasury solicitor. Under his powers as queen's proctor the treasury solicitor acts as administrator of the personal estate of an intestate which has lapsed to the crown, and intervenes in cases of divorce where collusion is alleged (see Drvorce). Since the Prosecution of Offences Act, 1884, he has'also acted as director of public prosecutions. In the United States the office of solicitor to the treasury was created by Act of Congress in 1830. His principal duties are to take measures for protecting the revenue and to deal with lands acquired by the United States by judicial process or vested in them by security for payment of debts.

SOLICITOR-GENERAL. See ArrorNey-GENERAL. The position of the solicitor-general for Scotland in the main corresponds with that of the English solicitor- general, He is next in rank to the lord-advocate. In the United States the office of solicitor-general of the United States was created by Act of Congress in 1870.

SOLIMAN, or Sunerman, sultan of the Ottomans, surnamed The Magnificent, born about 1490, was the only son of Selim I., whom he succeeded in 1520. He died while he was besieging Sziget in Hungary, on September 5, 1566. See Turkey.

SOLIMAN, or Suteman, shah of Persia. vol. xviii. p, 639.

SOLINGEN, a Prussian town, in the province of the Rhine, stands on a height near the Wupper, 13 miles east- by-south of Diisseldorf. It is one of the chief seats of the German iron and steel industry, its specialty consisting in all kinds of cutting implements of steel. Solingen sword- blades have been celebrated for centuries, and probably form part of the equipment of every modern army, while bayonets, knives, scissors, surgical instruments, files, steel frames, and the like are also produced in enormous quan- tities.

These articles are largely made by the workmen at their own homes and supplied to the depéts of the large

See Persia,

dealers ; there are about 30,000 workers in steel in Solin- gen and its vicinity. The population of the town in 1885 was 18,643, of whom three-fourths were Protestants.

Solingen is an ancient place, and received its town charter in 1374. Sword-blades have been made here since the early part of the Middle Ages, and tradition affirms that the art was intro- duced during the crusades by smiths from Damascus.

SOLIS, Anronro DE (1610-1686), Spanish dramatist and historian, was born in 1610 at Alcala de Henares, and studied law at Salamanca, where he is said to have produced a comedy which was acted in 1627. About 1640 he became secretary to the duke of Oropesa, whom he accompanied in various official missions; in 1654 he became one of the secretaries of Philip IV., and afterwards he was appointed chronicler. In his later years he joined one of the religious orders. He died at Madrid in 1686.

Of the nine extant plays of Solis two at least haye some place in the history of the drama,—I Amor al Uso (“Love & la Mode”) having afterwards been adapted by T. Corneille, while La Gitanilla de Madrid (“ The Gipsy of Madrid ”), itself founded on the “ novela” of Cervantes, has been made use of by Rowley and Middleton, P. A. Wolff, and, directly or indirectly, by other more recent authors. The titles of the remaining seven are Triunfos de Anvor y Fortuna, Hrudice y Orfeo, El Alcazar del Secreto, Lus Amazonas, Lil Doctor Carlino, Un Bobo haze ciento, and Amparar al Enemigo. The Historia de la Conquista de Mejico, covering the three years between the appointment of Cortes to command the invading force and the fall of the city, deservedly ranks as a Spanish prose classic. It first appeared in 1684; there have been numerous reprints, the most recent being that published with notes by Revilla (Paris, 1858); an English translation by Townshend appeared in 1724. A volume of Poesias sagradas y hwmanas by Solis was

published in 1692, and several unimportant letters of his may be read in the Hpistolario Espaitol of Rivadeneyra.

SOLOMON (Hebrew Mi57¥, Shelamé for Shélomon, “man of peace”; the English form follows the YoAspwv of N.T. and Josephus; the Latin Salomo agrees with YoAduur, one of several variant forms shown in MSS. of the LXX.), son of David by Bathsheba, and his successor in the kingdom of Israel. The reign of Solomon has been sketched in IsraEt (vol. xili. p. 405), and his relation to the philosophical and proverbial literature of the Hebrews, the so-called chokma, or “wisdom,” has been critically considered in the article Proverss. The political system of Solomon fell to pieces at his death, but the fame of his wisdom and splendour in succeeding generations was all the greater that none of his successors at Jerusalem was in a position to rival him. The many floating and frag- inentary notes of various dates that have found a place in the account of his reign in the book of Kings (q.v.) show how much Hebrew tradition was occupied with the monarch under whom the throne of Israel reached its highest glory; and that time only magnified in popular imagination the proportions of so striking a figure appears alike in the unfriendly picture of Solomon in the Song of Solomon (originally, it would seem, sketched in the Northern kingdom, however much it may have been retouched and overlaid by additions of later date—see CanrTictEs) and in the monologue of EcciusiasTes (9.v.) placed in the mouth of the wise king who had tasted all that life can offer by one of the latest writers of the Old Testament. In the apocryphal book of Wisdom, again, the composi- tion of an Egyptian Hellenist, who from internal evidence is judged to have lived somewhat earlier than Philo, Solomon is introduced uttering words of admonition, imbued with the spirit of Greek philosophers, to heathen sovereigns. The so-called Psalter of Solomon, on the other hand, a collection of Pharisee psalms written in Hebrew soon after the taking of Jerusalem by Pompey, and pre- served to us only in a Greek version, has nothing to do with Solomon or the traditional conception of his person, and seems to owe its name to a transcriber who thus distinguished these newer pieces from the older “Psalms

of David.”! In New Testament times Solomon was the current type alike of magnificence and of wisdom (Matt. vi. 29; Luke xi. 31). But Jewish legend was not content with this, and, starting from a false interpretation of Eccles. ii. 8, gave him sovereignty over demons, to which were added (by a perversion of | Kings iv. 33) lordship over all beasts and birds, and the power of understanding their speech. These fables passed to the Arabs before the time of Mohammed (Nabigha, i. 22), found a place in the Koran, and gave Solomon (Suleiman) a lasting fame throughout the Moslem East. The story of Solomon, the hoopoe, and the queen of Sheba in sur. xxvii. of the Koran closely follows the second Targum to Esther i. 2, where the Jewish fables about him may be read at large: Solomon was supposed to owe his sovereignty over demons to the possession of a seal.on which the “‘most great name of God” was engraved. See Lane, Arabian Nights, introd., note 21, and chap, i. note 15.

SOLOMON, Sone or. See CANTICLEs.

SOLOMON, Wispom or. See APocRYPHA.

SOLOMON ISLANDS, an extensive group of islands, the largest and as yet least known of any in the Pacific Ocean, though among the very first that were discovered. They form a double chain of seven large and many small islands, extending for over 600 miles in a north-west and south-east direction between 5° 8. lat., 154° 40’ E. long., and 10° 54’ S. lat., 162° 30’ E. long. The northern extremity stretches to within 120 miles of New Ireland, the south-eastern point to 200 miles west of Santa Cruz, and the nearest portion of New Guinea lies about 400 miles to the south-west of the group.? See vol. xix. Plate ITI.

The Solomon Islands vary considerably both in size and character. It is as yet doubtful which of them is the largest, but seven are from 50 to over 100 miles in length and from 15 to 30 miles in breadth; several must there- fore equal the county of Cornwall in area. They are well watered, though the streams seem to be small; their coasts afford some good harbours.? All the large and some of the smaller islands appear to be composed of ancient volcanic rock, with an incrustation of coral limestone showing here and there along the coast. Their interior is mountainous, and Guadalcanal, where there is an active volcano, reaches an altitude of 8000 feet. Malanta

and Christoval are over 4000, Ysabel and Choiseul 2000 feet high. The mountains of the latter fall steep to the sea, and the whole of its north-east portion forms an elevated wooded plain. There is some level land in Bougainville, which is also said to possess an active volcano. Every traveller has extolled the beauty and fertility of the islands. In San Christoval deep valleys separate the gently-rounded ridges of its forest-clad mountains, lofty spurs descend from the interior, and, running down to the sea, terminate, on the north, in bold rocky headlands 800 to 1000 feet in height, while, on the south, they form and shelter bays of deep water. On the small high island of Florida there is much undulating grass land, interspersed

1 The most ancient tradition, that of the LXX., gives Solomon no part in the authorship of the canonical psalter ; see vol. xx. p. 29.

2 Tslands of the Archipelago.—The larger are—in the eastern chain, Bougainville, Choiseul, Ysabel, Malanta; and in the western chain, New Georgia, Guadalcanal (often misspelt Guadalcanar), San Christoval. The smaller are—Buka (the most northern), Shortland, Treasury, aro, Simba (Eddystone), Rubiana, Hammond, Marsh, Savo, Buena Vista, Anuda, Ngela (Florida), Ulawa (Contrariété), Ugi, Three Sisters, Sta Anna, Sta Catalina, Bellona, Rennel (the most southern). Mendafia mentions seeing near Buena Vista a small island in a state of violent eruption; he named it Sesarga. Ongtong Java is a group of coral islands in the north-east, but it does not, geographically, form part of the group.

3 Blanche Bay, Bougainville; Port Praslin, Ysabel; Maruvo, New . Georgia; Port Wiseman, Florida; Curagoa Harbour in Maran Sound,

Guadalcanal; Recherche Bay, Makira Bay, and Vanga Harbour, San Christoval.

with fine clumps of trees; but patches of cultivated land surround its numerous villages, and plantations on the hill-sides testify to the richness of its soil. To the south of Choiseul lies a small cliff-girt islet, Simba (Shortland’s Eddystone), with a peak ending in acrater 1200 feet high, on

the side of which are a solfatara and two boiling springs. It is inhabited, and has a small safe harbour. Surgeon Guppy, late of H.M.S. ‘“‘ Lark,” has recently made valuable geological observations in the north and south of the group. The whole chain of islands appear to be rising steadily, and traces of ancient upheaval are very general,— for instance, Treasury Island, where a coral-encrusted volcanic peak has been raised 1200 feet, and the atoll of Sta Anna, the ring of which now stands hundreds of feet above the present level of the sea. Some of the smaller islands are of recent calcareous formation. Barrier and fringing reefs, as well as atolls, occur in the group, but the channels between the islands are dangerous, chiefly from the strong currents which set through them.

The climate is very damp and debilitating. The rain- fall is unusually heavy. Fever and ague prevail on the coast, but it is likely that the highlands will prove much more healthy. The dry season, with north-west winds, lasts from December to May.

A comparatively shoal sea—under, 1000 fathoms— surrounds the Archipelago, and, including the New Britain and Admiralty Islands, stretches to New Guinea and thence to Australia. This sufficiently accounts for the Papuan character of its fauna, of which, however, it is the eastern limit, in spite of the fact that this shoal water extends to the extreme south of the New Hebrides. Here the strange little marsupial the cuscus (see PHaLANGER) is still to be met with; the hornbill, the cockatoo, the crimson lory, and birds of a dozen other genera have already been discovered, ‘‘all,” as Wallace remarks, ‘highly characteristic of the Moluccas and New Guinea, and quite unknown in any of the more remote Pacific islands.” But, like the New Hebrides, the Solomon Islands possess a megapode (Jf. brenchleyi) which is peculiar to itself. An alligator frequents the coast, and the sea teems with fish. Insects seem to be fairly well repre- sented. The flora has been even less studied than the zoology, but it also shows strong Papuan affinities. Vege- tation is most luxuriant: unbroken tracts of magnificent forest clothe the mountains, where sandalwood, ebony, and lignum vitee have already been found. Mangrove swamps are common on the coasts.

The Solomon Islanders, excepting those of Bellona and Rennell in the south, and Ongtong Java in the north—who are pure Polynesians—are a small sturdy Melanesian race, taller in the north than in the south, but averaging about 5 feet 4 inches for men, and 4 feet 9 inches for women. They are well proportioned, with nicely rounded limbs. Projecting brows, deeply-sunk dark eyes, short noses, either straight or arched, but always depressed at the root, and moderately thick lips, with a somewhat receding chin, are general characteristics. The expression of the face is not unpleasing. The mesocephalic appears to be the preponderant form of skull, though this is unusual among Melanesian races. In colour the skin varies from a black-brown to a copperish hue, but the darker are the most common shades. The hair is dark, often dyed red or fawn. Crisp, inclining to woolly, it naturally hangs in a mop of ringlets 8 to 8 inches in length; but, when carefully tended, it forms one smooth bush—the usual fashion for

both sexes. Epilation is practised; little hair, as a rule, grows on the face, but hairy men are not rare.4 Skin diseases are pre- valent.

The Solomon Islanders are intelligent, of a quick and nervous temperament, crafty, thievish, and revengeful, yet, quickly amen- able to good treatment, they make faithful servants. They are fond of dancing; their music is a monotonous chant with an

4 On the islands in Bougainville Strait tribes with lank, almost straight, black hair and very dark skin are found. The mountains of the large islands seem to be thinly inhabited by a smaller and ruder race, with whom the coast tribes wage perpetual war and for whom they express great contempt.

accompaniment of bamboo drums. They make pan-pipes and jew’s harps. Of their religion and manners and customs very little is known. Their language is of pure Melanesian type though a number of dialects are spoken throughout the group,—many even on the same island. Broken into numerous clans, they are rarely at peace with each other; but the attention bestowed on planta-. tions proves them good agriculturists. Yams, arum-roots, bread- fruit, cocoa-nuts, and fish constitute the chief of their food. Pigs, dogs, and fowls are also eaten, and, as these are mentioned by Men-

dana, they must have been known in the islands for over three hundred years. The islanders are great betel-chewers, but little palm arrack or kava seems to be drunk. © The respect paid to chiefs and elders varies in different islands, They are cannibals, though to what extent isunknown. Trophics of human skulls are common, and preserved heads—the face inlaid with shell—have been procured in Guadalcanal and Rubiana. They are said to pay honour to departed spirits. Carvings representing both men and animals often form the posts of houses and sheds, and adorn the prows of canoes. Thcir houses are square or oblong, strongly built, with high projecting roofs, which sometimes, as in their canoe-sheds, almost reach to the ground. The floor-mats are very rough. Large halls and spirit-houses exist in some of the villages, and great care and skill are bestowed on their decoration.) Great nicety of finish characterizes their weapons. They are mostly light and graceful, and consist of bows and arrows, spears, and clubs ; the sling seems unknown. Some of the spears have the barbed head carved out of a human leg or arm bone; others, if not cut out of the solid. wood, have bones, thorns, or splinters of wood attached ina most masterly manner. Arrows are similarly fashioned, and their reed shafts ornamented with incised lines. None of them appear to be poisoned. The bows, often large and powerful, are made of palm-wood or a strip of bamboo. Clubs vary considerably in shape; their butts are sometimes covered with finely-plaited coloured grass. Some, which are long and slight, are sickle- or scythe-like, others lanceolate or spoon-shaped ; and some, smaller, resemble a very broad dagger. This is, in the Pacific, the eastern limit of the shield. It is an unknown weapon in the other islands —Melanesian as well as Polynesian, —but to the west, in the New Britain group, and in New Guinea, various forms of it occur, whence, through the Malay islands, it may be traced back to the Asiatic continent. The shield is also used by the Australians. That of the Solomon Islanders is made of reeds, and is of an oval or oblong form. Their canoes are built of planks sewn together and caulked, and are the most beautiful in the Pacific. “They are very light, slim, and taper, 20 to 60 feet in length, with 1 to 3 feet beam, but they balance so well that an outrigger is dispensed with. The high carved prow and stern—which are said to act as a shield from arrows when stem on—give the craft almost a crescent shape. These and the gunwale are tastefully inlaid with mother-of-pearl and wreathed with shells and feathers. Sails are not used, but the narrow pointed paddles propel the canoes with great speed through the

water.2 Graceful bowls, with some bird or animal for model, are also made. They are cut out of the solid, and sometimes measure over 8 feet in length. Stone adzes appear to be now used only in the interior and in the north of the group. They are well ground, flat and pyriform in shape, and very different from any made in the neighbouring groups of islands. Clothing is of the scantiest. Both men and women not unfre- quently go naked ; but, as a rule, some slight covering is worn, and neatly-made fringed girdles are used in some districts. Tattooing and scarring of the body is but slightly practised. Ornaments are used in profusion, and often are very tasteful. Carved wooden belts, coloured shell-bead bands, and a variety of armlets, combs, and feather head-dresses are worn, also shell disks covered with tortoise-shell fretwork. Necklaces of teeth and shell are common and multiform ; one much prized is made of human incisors. The ears, and, in men, the scptum of the nose, are pierced, —frequently, also, the cartilage of one or both nostrils. In these the strangest ornaments are inserted, such as tortoise-shell rings, bones, teeth, shells, crab-claws, and the like.? fistory.—The Spanish navigator Mendafia must be credited with the discovery of these islands, though it is somewhat doubtful whether he was actually the first European who set eyes on them. He sailed from Callao in 1567, by command of the governor of Peru, to discover the southern continent, the presumed existence of which in the then unknown region between America and Asia had already given rise to much speculation ; but he seems to have been strangely unfortunate. Sailing west he discovered only a few coral islets (?Ellice group) until, having crossed more than 7000 miles of ocean, he fell in with an archipelago of large islands. By. their size and position he considered them to form part of the land

1 See frontispiece to Brenchley’s Curacoa.

- Rude outrigger canoes with mat sails are used in some parts of the archipelago.

3 Of the island manufactures fine specimens may be seen in the British, Cambridge, and Maidstone museums.

. two.

he was in search of, and in pleasing anticipation of their natural riches he named them Islas de Salomon. The expedition surveyed the southern portion of the group, and named the three large islands San Christoval, Guadalcanal, and Ysabel. On his return to Peru Mendafia endeavoured to organize another expedition to colonize the islands, but it was not before June 1595 that he, with Quiros as second in command, was enabled to set sail for this purpose. The Marquesas and Santa Cruz Islands were now discovered ; but on these latter islands, after various delays and troubles, Mendaiia died, and the expedition eventually collapsed.

Even the position of the Solomon Islands was now veiled in uncertainty, and they were quite lost sight of until, in 1767, two centuries after their first discovery, Carteret lighted on their eastern shores at Gower Island, and passed to the north of the group, Without, however, recognizing that it formed part of the Spanish discoveries. In 1768 Bougainville found his way thither. He discovered the. three northern islands (Buka, Bougainville, and Choiseul), and sailed through the channel which divides the latter t In 1769 Surville explored the east coast, and was the first, in spite of the hostility of the natives, to make any lengthened stay in the group. He brought home some detailed information con- cerning the islands, which he called Terres des Arsacides; but their identity with Mendafia's Islas de Salomon was soon established by French geographers, In 1788 Shortland discovered New Georgia, with some of the smaller islands ; and in 1792 Manning sailed through the strait which separates Ysabel from Choiseul and now bears his name. In the same year, and in 1798, D'Entrecasteaux surveyed portions of the coast-line of the large islands. In 1794 Butler visited the group, and Williamson in the " Indispensable " explored the channels which divide Guadalcanal from San Christoval and Ysabel from Malanta. There was a break of nearly half a century before D'Urville in 1838 took up the survey.

Traders now endeavoured to settle in the islands, and missionaries began to think of this fresh field for labour, but neither met with

much success, and little was heard of the islanders save accounts

of murder and plunder perpetrated by them. In 1845 the French Marist fathers went to Ysabel, where Mgr Epaulle, first vicar-apostolic of Melanesia, was killed by the natives soon after landing. Three years later

this mission had to be abandoned; but since 1881 work has again been resumed. In 1856 John Coleridge Patteson, afterwards bishop of Melanesia, paid his first visit to the islands, and native teachers trained at the Melanesian mission college have since establishcd themselves there, as well as a few traders. About this date the yacht ‘‘Wanderer” cruised in these seas, but her owner was kidnapped by the natives and never afterwards heard of. In 1878 the “foreign-labour” traffic in plantation hands for Queensland and Fiji extended its baneful influence from the New Hebrides to these islands. Noteworthy recent visits are those of H.M.S. “Curagoa” in 1865, H.M.S. ‘“‘Blanche” and Mr C. F. Wood’s yacht in 1872, the German war-ship “Gazelle” in 1876, and H.M.S. “Lark” in 1881-84.

See Dalrymple, Voyages and Discoveries in the South Pacific Ocean (Spanish

| voyages), 1770, i.; Hawkesworth, Collection of Voyages (Carteret, &c.), 1792,

i.; Fleurien, Decouvertes des Francois en 1768 et 1769 (Spanish voyages and Surville); Labillardiere (D’Entrecasteaux), Recherche de La Pérousé, 1791-9), i.; Dumont d’Urville, Voyage au Pole Sud, d&c., 1837-40, v., and Voyage autour du Monde, ii.; Meade, Ride through the Disturbed Districts of New Zealand, &c.; Brenchley, Cruise of JI.M.S. ‘‘ Curacoa,” 1865; Wood, Yachting Cruise tn the South Seas; Romilly, The Western Pacific, &c.; Schleinitz, ‘‘ Geogr, u. Ethnogr. Beobachtungen auf Neu Guinea, &c.” (S.M.S. Gazelle, 1874-76), Zetts. Ges. Erdkunde, xii., 1877+: Guppy, ‘‘ Recent Calcareous Formations of the Solomon Group,” Z’rans. Roy. Soc. Hdin., xxxii., and “ Physical Characters of the Solomon Islanders,” Journ. Anth. Inst., xv. ; Flower, Cat. Mus. Royal Coll. of Surgeons, pt. 1, Man; Codrington, The Melanesian Language ; Meinicke, Die Inseln des Stillen Oceans; Wallace, Australasia; Yonge, Life of Bishop Patteson; Redlick, “A Cruise among Cannibals,” Geogr. Review, i. (A. v. H.)

SOLON. The legislation of the Athenian Solon, which to a large extent moulded the subsequent political life of Athens, belongs to the early part of the 6th century 3.c.4 It followed almost immediately on an unsuccessful attempt to overthrow the government of the aristocratic families of Attica, one of which, however, that of the Alemzonids, was driven into exile ; and

it preceded by a short interval the famous usurpation of Pisistratus. Solon had won the confidence of his fellow-citizens by having recovered for them the island of Salamis, close to the shores of Attica, an old and valued possession, which their neighbours of Megara had taken from them. Solon, himself a native of

‘Salamis, encouraged them to fight once again for the

“lovely island,” as he called it, in a short poem which he publicly recited, feigning, it is said, the excitement of a madman. Through Spartan intervention in the war between Athens and Megara Salamis was restored to the Athenians, and Solon had the credit of the result. In

4 The dates of his birth and death are approximately 638 and 559.

594 s.c. he was summoned under the constitutional title of ‘‘archon” to undertake the work of sweeping political reforms, which, in consequence of bitter party strifes and the poverty and indebtedness of the small farmers or proprietors of Attica, were sorely needed. The Athenian like the Roman debtor had often sunk, under the legalized oppression of his creditor, into an actual slave, and had from time to time been sold and exported. Many poor creatures had fled away from home, and were supporting themselves by the labour of their hands in foreign countries. Many men who still clung to their little pro- perties could, with all their pinching, barely keep their heads above water. The governing classes themselves felt that a crisis was at hand, and they appealed to Solon and made him practically dictator. Had he chosen to work on the popular discontent, he might have easily crushed the aristocracy and become a despot, or, as the Greeks called it, a tyrant, as many had done in other states of Greece by coming forward as champions of the people against the great ruling families. Solon obeyed a nobler impulse and aimed at saving his country without too violent a revolution. His first step was to give immediate relief to the poor debtor, to the wretchedly impoverished small farmer or proprietor, and to interpose between him and his creditor and landlord. On very many of the little properties of Attica were to be seen stone pillars with the name of the mortgagee and the amount of the mortgage inscribed on them. By a relief

law, ‘‘a shaking-off of burdens” (cewcax6e/a), he annulled all mortgages, justifying no doubt so extreme a measure by the harshness of the contracts imposed by mortgagees on needy tenants and proprietors and by the urgent necessity of prompt release for the multitude of such small debtors. Thus the “mortgage pillars” were swept away and the land was once more free. Such a setting aside of the rights of property, expedient as it may have been under circumstances of acute public distress, must have inflicted a heavy loss on the wealthier class, and the landlord and the mortgagee would also have a fair claim for relief. This, it appears, Solon accomplished by a device which has been variously explained, a deprecia- tion of the currency which relieved to a considerable extent—27 per cent., according to Grote’s! calculation— the wealthier debtors of the landlord and mortgagee class. Grote here remarks that, had Solon cancelled all debts and contracts, there would have been no need to interfere with the currency and lower the standard of money. His relief law could not have been so sweeping and revolu- tionary as it has sometimes been represented. There was no redistribution or confiscation of the land, no universal remission of debts. For the great majority of the people indeed there was substantial relief. The land was free from incumbrance, and the small cultivator had a fresh start in life; there was no imprisonment or slavery for the debtor; and it would seem that debtors who had sought refuge abroad were purchased back and restored to their homes. Such on the whole appears to have been the character of Solon’s first great reform, though some of the details remain obscure. The reconstruction of the political system on the principle that every citizen was to have a share in the government was Solon’s next work. A few noble families, Eupatrids, as they were called, had hitherto had all the power in their own hands. Solon made property the measure of political power, and con- fined the higher offices of state to the wealthiest citizens ; but election to these offices was to be made by the whole body of the people, the tenure of office was limited as to time, and an account had to be rendered publicly as to its exercise. The citizens were distributed into four classes 1 History of Greece, ch. xi.

SOLO”

according to a graduated scale of property, the first class being alone eligible to the archonship or highest office and to military and naval

commands. The actual administra- tion of public affairs was thus restricted to the wealthy few. The second class were the knights or horsemen—the men who could keep a war-horse for the service of the state; these were assessed at three-fifths of the amount of the first class. The third class answered to our yeomen, and had to serve as heavy-armed infantry. These three classes were subject to direct taxation in the form of a graduated income tax, which was, however, simply an extraordinary tax, levied only in special emergencies at varying amounts per cent. on a citizen's rateable property, as set down in a public schedule. The fourth and lowest and most numerous class, which supplied light troops and sailors for the fleet, was exempt from all direct taxation, but paid indirect taxes; it would be made up of small farmers, tradesmen, and artisans, and consist in fact of quite the poorest and humblest class of citizens. Its members could not hold any office ; but they had a large amount of political power through their votes in the popular assembly which elected the magistrates and called them to account, and through the very great judicial powers with which they were intrusted, and in virtue of which the Athenian juror practically decided questions both of fact and of law. Solon's constitution thus gave the people ample means of protecting themselves from mis- government and oppression, every magistrate being directly responsible to them. Not that Solon himself contemplated anything like pure democracy; there is every reason to believe he shrank from it; but pure democracy was pretty sure to follow as soon as the people distinctly realized their power. Solon's council of 400, taken exclusively from the first three classes, must have been meant to furnish the popular assembly with political guidance, and this it did by preparing and introducing measures for discussion and superintending its meetings and exercising some direction over its proceedings. It is impossible for us to define its peculiar functions precisely. It was, how- ever, ultimately under the control of the popular assembly, by which probably it was annually elected, and to which it had annually to render an account. We are not to suppose that either the council or the popular assembly originated with Solon. What he really did was to put them on a new footing, and to the latter, which previously in all probability had hardly any weight or influence, he gave greatly enlarged powers. The archons and magistrates and the council itself were elected by the popular assembly, and were responsible to it for good behaviour during their term of office. In this assembly met the citizens of all four classes, and consequently the great

majority of its members would be poor men and almost peasants. The voting was by show of hands; every voter was allowed to speak ; and in the voting there was no distinction of classes, all being on a perfectly equal footing. Although theoretically they could not originate any measure, but had to accept for discussion what had been prepared for them by the council, they had an absolute power of veto; and, as the election of the council was in their hands, it must have been easy for them to get that body to bring forward any proposal which they might wish to discuss. Thus it may be truly said that Solon laid the foundation of the future democracy. And through the Heliwa, as it was called,—a body of 6000 citizens annually elected by lot to act as jurors for the trial specially of political offences,—the people acquired 4 complete control over public affairs. There was but one proviso: the Athenian juror must be upwards of thirty years of age. In the Athenian courts which were formed out of these 6000 citizens the functions of judge and jury

were united in one and the same person, and political questions were continually decided when, as often happened, a citizen was put on his trial for some alleged illegal or unconstitutional proposal. By such means popular rights and privileges were effectually protected, and the democratic character of the constitution enlarged and confirmed, as we see in the subsequent history of Athens. Solon, indeed, retained (he did not create) the famous senate of the Areopagus, and aimed at making it respected and capable of exercising a general superintend- ence over the morals and social life of the citizens. It was to be an aristocratic body, consisting only of archons who had acquitted themselves well and honourably during their year of office. It seems that he did not attempt to prescribe to it any special or particular duties, but that he rather trusted to its making its influence felt from the fact that it was, as every one knew, composed of men of acknowledged merit and ability. Consequently, as Thirl- wall observes (Hist. of G’r., ch. xi.), “it could only exercise its powers with advantage as long as it retained the confidence of its fellow-citizens; when that was lost it became time that its legal authority should cease.” Solon evidently felt that, for a time at least, there must be checks on popular government. Had it been hinted to him that under his constitution power must finally drift down to

the lowest social stratum, he would perhaps have replied that he had endeavoured to supply the entire people with a political training which should by degrees qualify them for absolute self-government.

Solon encouraged commerce and manufacturing indus- try, and drew a number of settlers from foreign parts to Athens, on condition of their paying an annual tax and putting themselves under the protection of a citizen who was to be their legal representative—their "* patronus," according to Roman phrase. These settlers (eroiKou, "'metics") had none of the political privileges of the Athenian citizen, and they could not acquire landed

property. Many of them, however, flourished and grew

rich, and had every reason to be satisfied with their position, which, ina kindly and tolerant community like that of Athens, was continually improving. Solon, too, like all the legislators of antiquity, endeavoured to regulate every department of life, compelling the attend- ance of the youths from sixteen to eighteen at the public gymnastic schools, and requiring them to serve the next two years on garrison duty. Restraints were put upon Women as to their appearance in public, and even as to their mourning at funerals. Solon's punishments were for the most part rather lenient, and indicated a humane and generous temper. It is of course not to be supposed that all the details of his legislation were maintained, but they undoubtedly left their mark on the Athenian character. Having done his work, Solon left Athens and travelled for ten years in Egypt, Cyprus, and Asia, gathering fresh stores of knowledge for himself and giving counsel to others. One would like to believe the beautiful story Herodotus tells of his interview with Croesus, king of Lydia, whom he warned with the memorable saying that "we must not pronounce any man happy till we have seen his end." Unfortunately, Crcesus did not begin to reign till several years after Solon's travels, and with Grote we must be content to take the story as merely an " illustra- tive fiction." On his return to Athens in his old age he found the old feuds once more raging, and Pisistratus, his kinsman, and his friend in past days, intriguing for power. The two men had, it seems, a sincere respect for one another, but Solon protested against the complete surrender of the government to Pisistratus, the danger of which he publicly pointed out,

though without effect. The crisis ended in the rule, in many respects an enlightened and

beneficent rule, of Pisistratus and his sons, of which Solon lived only to see the first beginning. He died, soon after having made his honourable protest, at the age of eighty, leaving behind him the good effects of a work which only aman of rare intelligence and wide sympathies could have accomplished. He was something of a poet, and several fragments of his poems, written generally with a practical purpose, have come down to us, and throw light on his political aims and sentiments,

Grote and Thirlwall in their histories of Greece give a full ac- count of Solon's legislation. Plutarch's life of Solon, not a very critical performance, is our chief original authority. (W. J.B.)

SOLOTHURN. See Sorzurz,

SOMALI, Som4r, a Hamitic people of east Central Africa, mainly confined to the eastern "horn" of the continent, which from them takes the name of Somali Land, probably the Punt of the ligyptian records. Here they are conterminous towards the north-west with the kindred Afars (Dankali), and elsewhere with the more closely related Gallas, from whom they are separated on the south-west by the river Juba. Tajurra Bay, with the lower course of the Hawash, is usually given as the north- west frontier ; but, according to the recent explorations of Abargues de Sostén in eastern Abyssinia, there appears to be here an overlapping of the three peoples, the Isa Somali encroaching on the Afar domain north of Tajurra Bay nearly to the parallel of Asab Bay (13° N.), while the Dawari Gallas penetrate between this Somali tribe and the lower Hawash eastwards to the coast at Obok (ZS Nt). A line drawn from the Strait of Bab-el-Mandeb through the Harrar district and the headwaters of the Haines river (Webbe-Shebeyli or 'Leopard river") southwards to the equator at the mouth of the Juba will roughly define the landward frontier of the SomAli territory, which is else- where sea-girt,—by the Gulf of Aden on the north, by the Indian Ocean from Cape Guardafui to the equator.

Our first contact with the Somali people may be said to date from the English occupation of Aden in 1839. But, notwithstanding the early visits of Cruttenden, Ch. H. Johnston, Captain Burton, and one or two others, very little was known about them before the seizure of Berberah by the Egyptians in 1874. This event led to the estab- lishment of permanent relations with the coast tribes, and was followed by several excursions into the interior, of which the most fruitful in results have been those of Sacconi, Revoil, F. L. James, Paulitschke, Von Hardegger, and Josef Menge, the last three bringing our information down to the year 1885. From the reports of these ob- servers the true relations of the Somali have been gradually determined, and we now know that they form a distinct branch of the eastern (“ Ethiopic”) Hamitic stock, of which the other chief members are the neighbouring Gallas and Afars, the Abyssinian Agau, and the Bejas (Bishari) of the steppe lands between the Nubian Nile and the Red Sea. Their close affinities both in physical type and in speech with the surrounding Gallas are obvious, and like them they are described as a fine race,} tall, active, and robust, with fairly regular features, but not free from an infusion of Negro blood, as shown both in their dark, often almost black complexion, and still more in their kinky and even woolly hair, sometimes short, sometimes long enough to be plaited in tresses hanging down to the shoulders.2 Like

1 Captain Wharton, who has been recently surveying the Somali seaboard, describes the coast tribes near the equator as “the hand- somest race of men and women he had ever seen,” black in colour, but with magnificent physique (Proc. Roy. Geog. Soc., Oct., 1885). Captain F. M. Hunter also describes them as a tall, fine-looking people, with oval face, high rounded forehead, full lips, strong regular teeth, bright restless eye, but lower limbs seldom well developed (A Grammar of the Somal Language, Bombay, 1880).

- The occasional presence of “ steatopyga” (Topinard) shows that all these features are undoubtedly due to Negro intermixture.

the Gallas also they are still in the tribal state, broken up into an endless number of clans and septs, variously grouped by different writers.

According to Captain Guillain! there are three main divisions-—the Aji on the north and north- east coast, the Hawiya on the south-east coast, and the Rahhanwin in the interior. But these are reduced by James to two, Isak and Darode (apparently the Edur and Darrud of older observers), with several main branches as under :— Habr Gerhaji, south from Berberah, beyond the coast range. Habr Tjaleh, east from Berberah, north of the coast range. (Habr Awal, Berberah district. Mejertain, east coast from Guardafui to 4° north. Dolbohanti, Nogal River. Darode 4 Warsangueli, north coast, west from Guardafui. Marehan, between the Mejertain and Ogadain. Ogadain, Webbe basin, and widespread in interior.

To these, however, must be added the powerful Gadabirsi west from Berberah and the Isa (Issa) of the Hawash basin, besides the three low-caste tribes dispersed amongst the others,—Tomal (ironworkers), Ebir (dealers in charms), and Midgan (ostrich breeders).

The Somali, who are mainly Mohammedans of a somewhat fanatical type, are a fierce lawless people, impatient of control, and yielding a reluctant obedience even to their own rulers. Hence the tribal chiefs enjoy little more than a nominal authority, although some of the more powerful amongst them affect the title of sultan, At present the great Habr Gerhaji nation appears to be split into two sections, each under a chief claiming this rank. All go armed with spear, shield, and short sword, the latter exactly like that of the ancient Egyptians, whom the Somili are otherwise said to resemble more than any other African people. The weapons are freely used in their disputes, although the tribal laws against homicide are severe, heavy fines of camels or other property being imposed, which must be paid either by the criminal or the community. They are great talkers, keenly sensitive to ridicule, and quick-tempered, although amenable to’reason if they can be induced to argue the point. According to the character of the soil and climate they live a settled or nomad life, in some places breeding numerous herds of camels, goats, and fat-tailed

sheep, in others growing large crops especially of durrah, or collect-

ing the gums—frankincense and myrrh—for which the land has always been famous. The Marehan (properly Murreyhan) tribe is said to have given its name to the myrrh, which is obtained in the greatest perfection in their district, although the term seems too old to admit of this derivation, and is more probably conncted with a Semitic root mar, mur=bitter. Through the ports of Ber- berah and Zeyla, a considerable export trade to Arabia, Egypt, and India is carried on with these articles and the other natural pro- ducts of the country, such as hides, horns, ostrich feathers, coffee of a very fine quality, indigo, salt. But the natives take little part in this movement, which from remote times has been in the hands of the Indian banians settled at various points on the coast. In 1879-80 the total value of the exports was estimated at about £140,000. Like many other Mohammedan peoples, the Somali claim Arab descent, their progenitor having been a certain Sherif Ishak b. Ahmad, who crossed over from Hadramaut with forty followers about five hundred years ago. Other traditions go farther back, tracing their origin to the Himyaritic chiefs Sanhdj and Samamah, said to have been coeval with a King Afrikus, who is supposed to have conquered Africa about 400 a.p. These legends should perhaps be interpreted as pointing at a series of Arab immigra- tions, the last two of which are referred to the 18th and 15th centuries. But these intruders seem to have been successively absorbed in the Somél stock; and it is remarkable that the Arabs never succeeded in establishing permanent settled or nomad com- munities in this region, as they have done in so many other parts of the continent. Their influence has been very slight even on the Somal language, whose structure and vocabulary are essentially Hamitic, with marked affinities to the Galla on the one hand and to the Dankali (Afar) on the other. Captain Hunter's Grammar, with exercises and vocabularics (Bombay, 1880), utilizing the materials published by General Rigby in the Proceedings of the Bombay Gcographical Society (1849), is the only comprehensive treatise on the language, which appears to be spoken with great uniformity throughout the whole of Somali Land. Hunter mentions an eastern and a western dialect, differing, however, but little from one another, which is the more remarkable that there is no written standard and little oral literature, beyond some proverbial sayings, short stories inculcating certain moral teachings, and some simple love-songs. Although the rhythm is defective, these chants are

1 Documents sur Uhistoire, &c., de lV Afrique Orientale, 1856-59.

not lacking in poetical ideas, and often betray an unexpeeted refinement of feeling not inferior to that of similar compositions amongst more civilized peoples. (A. H. K.) SOMERS, Jonn (1652-1716), was born on March 4, 1652, at Worcester,—the eldest son of John Somers, an attorney in large practice in that town who had formerly fought on the side of the Parliament, and of Catherine Ceaverne of Shropshire. After being at school at Worcester he was entered as a gentleman commoner at Trinity College, Oxford, and afterwards studied law under Sir Francis Winnington, who became solicitor-general, and joined the Middle Temple. He appears, in addition to his legal studies, to have written several poems and pamphlets. He soon became intimate with the leaders of the country party, especially with Essex, Russell, and Algernon Sidney, but never entered into their plans so far as to commit himself beyond recall. He was the author of the History of the Succession of the Crown of England, collected out of Records, dc., and was reputed to have written the Just and Modest Vindication of the Two Last Parliaments, which was put forward as the answer to Charles II.'s famous declaration of his reasons for dis- solving them. This, however, was by Sidney, though probably Somers was responsible for the final draft. When the grand jury of Middlesex threw out the bill against Shaftesbury, and were vehemently attacked for so doing, Somers wrote in defence of the rights of grand juries. In 1683 he was counsel for the sheriffs Pilkington and Shute before the Court of King's Bench, and secured a reputation which continually increased until the trial of the seven bishops, in which he was junior counsel. "Somers rose last. He spoke little more than five minutes, but every word was full of weighty matter ; and when he sat down his reputation as an orator and a constitutional lawyer was established." In the secret councils of those who were planning the revolution Somers took a leading part, and in the Convention Parliament was elected a member for his native town. He was immediately appointed one of the managers for the Commons in the conferences between the Houses, and in arguing the questions whether James IT. had left the throne vacant by abdication and whether the Acts of the Convention Parliament were legal—that parliament having been summoned without the usual writs—he displayed great

learning and legal subtlety. He was further distinguished by being made chairman of the committee which drew up the celebrated Declaration of Right. On May 9, 1689, Somers was made solicitor-general. He now became William III.'s most confidential adviser. In the controversy which arose between the Houses on the question of the legality of the decision of the Court of King's Bench regarding Titus Oates, and of the action of the Lords in sustaining this decision, Somers was again the leading manager for the Commons, and has left a clear and interesting account of the debates. He was next employed in January 1690 as chairman of the select committee of the House of Commons on the Corporation Bill, by which those corporations which had surrendered their charters to the crown during the last two reigns were restored to their rights; but he refused to associate himself with the violent measures of retaliation which the Whigs on that occasion endeavoured to include in the bill, In April a speech by him carried through the Lower House, without opposition, the bill which declared all the laws passed by the Convention Parliament to be valid. As solicitor-general he had to conduct the prose- cution of Preston and Ashton in 1691, and did so with a moderation and humanity which were in marked contrast to the customs of the former reigns. He was shortly appointed attorney-general, and in that capacity strongly

opposed the bill for the regulation of trials in cases of high treason. On March 23, 1693, the great seal having mean-

while been in commission, Somers was appointed lord- keeper, with a pension of £2000 a year from the day on which he should quit his office, and at the same time was made a privy councillor. He had previously been knighted. Somers now became the most prominent member of the Junto, the small council which comprised the chief members of the Whig party. When William left in May 1695 to take command of the army in the Netherlands, Somers was made one of the seven lords-justices to whom the administration of the kingdom during his absence was entrusted ; and he was instrumental in bringing about a reconciliation between William and the princess Anne.

The question of improving the currency now became pressing, and Somers was the author of the bold sugges- tion that a proclamation should be issued simultaneously all over the kingdom, announcing that henceforth all clipped and hammered coins were to be reckoned only by weight. But all possessors of such coins might, by delivering them up on a certain day, receive a note entitling them to draw from the treasury at a future time the difference between the actual and nominal values. The difficulties of the plan, however, rendered its adop- tion impossible. In April 1697 Somers was made lord chancellor, and was created a peer by the title of Baron Somers of Evesham. When the discussion arose on the question of disbanding the army, he summed up the case against disbanding, in answer to Trenchard, in a remark- able pamphlet called " The Balancing Letter." In August 1698 he went to Tunbridge Wells for his health. While there he received the king's letter announcing the first Partition Treaty, and at once replied with a memorandum representing the necessity in the state of feeling in England of avoiding further war. When the king, on the occasion of the Disbanding Bill, expressed his determination to leave the country, Somers boldly remonstrated, while he clearly expressed in a speech in the Lords the danger of the course that was being taken. Hitherto Somers's character had kept him free from attack at the hands of political opponents ; but his connexion in 1699 with the notorious Kidd, who, being sent out to put down the pirates in the Indian Ocean, turned pirate himself, and to the defraying of whose expedition Somers had given £1000, afforded an opportunity; the vote of censure, however, proposed upon him in the House of Commons for giving Kidd a commission under the great seal was rejected by 199 to 131. The attack was renewed shortly on the ground of his having accepted grants of crown property to the amount of £1600 a year, but was again defeated. On the subject of the Irish forfeitures a third attack was made in 1700, a motion being brought for- ward to request the king to remove Somers from his counsels and presence for ever ; but this again was rejected by a large majority. In consequence, however, of the incessant agitation, William now requested Somers to resign ; this he refused to do, but gave up the seals to William's messenger. In 1701 he was impeached by the Commons on account of the part he had taken in the hegotiations relating to the Partition Treaty in 1698, and defended himself most ably before the House, answering the charges seriatim. The impeachment was voted and sent up to the Lords, but was there dismissed. On the death of the king Somers retired

almost entirely into private life. He was, however, active in 1702 in opposing the Occasional Conformity Bill, and in 1706 was one of the managers of the union with Scotland. In the same year he carried a bill regulating and improving the proceedings of the law courts. He was made president of the council in 1708 upon the return of the Whigs to

power, and retained the office until their downfall in 1710. From this time his powers of mind rapidly declined, and after being almost imbecile for six years he died of apoplexy on April 26, 1716. Somers was never married, but left two sisters, of whom the eldest, Mary, married Charles Cocks, whose grandson, Sir Charles Cocks, Bart., became the second Lord Somers in 1784. ;

For a contemporary character of Somers Addison's paper in the Freeholder for May 14, 1716, should be referred to ; and there is in Macaulay's History (vol. iv. p. 58) an eloquent and worthy tribute to his stainless character and comprehensive learning. A catalogue of his publications will be found in Walpole's Royal and Noble Authors. (O. A.)

SOMERSET, a maritime county in the south-west of Plate England, bounded E. by Wiltshire, S.E. by Dorset, S.W. HI.

and W. by Devonshire, N.W. by the Bristol Channel, and N. by Gloucestershire. The total area of land and water is 1,049,815 acres or 1640 square miles.

The shape of the county is determined by the nearly rectangular bend taken by the coast not far from Bridg- water. It falls into three natural divisions, which answer remarkably to the three waves of West-Saxon conquest and to the parliamentary divisions as they stood till the latest changes. The range of Mendip, breaking off from the high ground in the east of the county, completely shuts off the northern part, between Mendip and Bristol, itself hilly. Mendip itself, running slightly north-west- ward towards the Channel, has for its summit a tableland sloping much more gently to the north than to the south. Its most striking though not its highest points are towards the Channel, where it ends in the promontory of Brean Down, while the Steep

Holm stands as an outpost between the hills of Somerset and those of Glamorgan. The sides of Mendip are broken by many passes or combes, the most marked of which are Ebbor rocks near Wells and the greater pass of Cheddar cliffs, whose varied outlines, in the many turns of the pass, are probably the most noteworthy of their kind in England. Between Mendip and the region of loftier hills in the south lies a great alluvial plain, known generally as Sedgemoor, but with different names in different parts. This plain, intersected by ditches known as rhines, and in some parts rich in peat, is broken by isolated hills and lower ridges, of which the most conspicuous are Brent Knoll near Burnham, the Isle of Avalon, rising with Glastonbury Tor as_ its highest point, and the long low ridge of Polden ending to the west in a steep bluff. In the south is Blackdown on the border of Devonshire, the higher range of Quantock (highest point 1262 feet) stretching to the sea, and to the west again the mountainous region of Brendon and Exmoor, commonly believed by tourists to be part of Devonshire. Here are hills of much greater height and bolder outline, the highest point being that of Dunkery (1709 feet) above Porlock. The two principal rivers are the Lower Avon and the Parret. ‘The Avon, after forming for a short distance the boundary with Wilts, crosses the north-eastern corner of the county, encircling Bath, and forms the boundary with Gloucestershire till it reaches the sea 6 miles beyond Bristol. It is navigable for barges as far as Bath. The Parret from South Perrott in Dorset, on the borders of Somerset, crosses the centre of the county north-westwards by Bridgwater, receiving the Ivel or Yeo and Cary on the right, and the Isle and Tone on the left. Among other streams are the Axe, which rises at Wookey Hole in the Mendips and flows north-westward along their base to the Bristol Channel near Blackrock ; the Brue, which rises to the east of Bruton, near the borders of Wiltshire, and enters the Bristol Channel near the mouth of the Parret ; and the Exe (with its tributary the Barle), which rises in Exmoor forest and passes south- ward into Devon.

The diversified surface of the county is accounted for by the variety and complexity of its geological structure. The Old Red Sandstone, composed

of sandbanks and mud- banks of a land-locked lake, is met with in the Mendip Hills and on the banks of the Avon, but presents no feature of importance. The Devonian rocks, after plunging beneath the Triassic strata of the low ground between Williton and Taunton, rise again to the surface in the well-wooded Quantock Hills. The Carboniferous strata occupy a considerable area between Bristol and the Mendip Hills, forming a portion of the Bristol and Somerset coal- field. The Carboniferous limestone, built up mainly of petrified shells and corals, forms a truncated arch in the Mendip Hills, which owe their steepness and rugged contours to its compact and jointed structure, and their ravines and caves to atmospheric influences and to streams acting on the formation at and below the surface. It overlaps to the south the plain of Somerset, and plunges northwards under the coal-measures and Triassic rocks, reappearing in isolated and picturesque masses. The coal- measures, which have a thickness of about 7000 feet, include an upper and a lower series, separated by beds of grit about 2000 feet in thickness, also containing beds of coal (see Coat, vol. vi. p. 52). It is supposed that similar beds underlie the marshes to the south at a depth of from 1000 to 1200 feet. A large portion of the Carboniferous rocks are covered unconformably with the New Red Sandstone and Liassic and Oolitic strata. Triassic rocks prevail over the whole western area, from the Mendips to Exmoor. The highly fossiliferous Rheetic strata rest on the grey marls of the Trias, and constitute the lower part of the bold scarp of the Lias limestone and clays of the ranges from the sea to the Poldens. Plunging beneath the Oolitic strata, they occupy a large but scattered area in the east between Yeovil and Bath; and these in their turn pass under the Cretaceous strata of the serried Black- down Hills. A large extent of the county is occupied by alluvial deposits. Caves are common in the body of the

From 100 to 800 Acres.

From 50 to 100 Acres.

50 Acres and under.

From 800 to 500

RSET

hills, among which the greatest are the bone cave near Banwell, the stalactite caves at Cheddar, and Wookey Hole. Hard by the last-named is the hyena cave dis- covered in 1852, and explored in 1857-63, when, besides animal remains belonging to a great variety of species, flint and chert implements were also discovered.

Minerals. Though the exposed arca of the coalfield of Somerset is only about 14 square miles, it is estimated to extend over 238 square miles. The amount of coal raised within the county in 1884 was 843,487 tons, valued at £295,202. Spathose iron ore has been long worked in the Brendon Hills, but the industry is declining, —26,041 tons, valued at £13,021, having been obtained in 1858 and only 3582 tons, valued at £2619, in 1884. Lead mining has been carried on in the Mendips from time immemorial, but the industry is of much less importance than it was in earlier times, the amount of dressed lead ore obtained in 1884 being only 664 tons, of lead obtained in smelting 178 tons, of silver obtained from the lead 2760 ounces, and the value of the ore at the mines £1055. Next to coal the most important mineral production is freestone from the Oolitic strata, the largest quarries being in the neighbour- hood of Bath. Copper and manganese are obtaincd in small quanti- ties, as well as fuller's earth, marl, cement from the Lias, and ochre. Railways.—The county is so completely intersected by branches of the Great Western Railway in the north and west, and of the South Western in the south and east, that there is perhaps no hamlet more than seven miles from a railway station. Manufactures. —Woollen and worsted goods are manufactured in a large number of towns; silk at Frome, Taunton, and Shepton Mallet ; gloves at Yeovil, Taunton, and other places; crape at Dulverton and Shepton Mallet. There are large potteries at Bridgwater and Weston-super-Mare; at the former town and at Bath there are extensive carriage-works ; and there are paper-mills on several of the streams. Most of the commerce of the county passes through Bristol, which is situated mainly in Gloucestershire. Agriculture.—In the hilly districts much of the land is unculti- vated and barren, although affording some pasturage for sheep. There are large tracts of rich meadow land along the banks of the rivers, and the vale of Taunton is well adapted for wheat. On account of the extensive damage frequently caused in the lower grounds by floods, the Somerset Drainage Act was passed by parliament 11th June 1877, providing for the appointment of commissioners to take measures for the

drainage of lands in the valleys of the Parret, Ile, Yeo, Brue, Axe, Cary, and Tone, where extensive damage is frequently caused by floods. The following table gives a classification of the holdings in 1875 and 1880:—

From 500 to 1000 | anove 1000 Acres. Total.

Acres. Acres,

No. Acres. >——

1,812

1,750

Acres. Acres.

396,215 402,421

136,068 140,912

132,687 129,838

13,300

Out of a total area of 1,049,815 acres there were 867,469 acres in 1885 under culture, of which 625,957 acres, or nearly three-fourths, were in permanent pasture, 58,863 under clover and rotation grasses, 115,005 undcr corn crops, 61,650 green crops, 560 flax, and 5434 fallow. Of the corn crops the largest area—49,199 acres —was occupied by wheat, barley occupying 27,934 acres, oats 24,783, beans 11,349, pease 1576, and rye 164, About one half of the area under green crops was occupied by turnips, which covered 30,891 acres, mangold coming next with 10,867 acres, while vetches occupied 8881, potatoes only 7517, and carrots 212. Horses in 1885 numbered 34,848, of which 23,229 were used solely for purposes of agriculture. The number of cattle was 236,899, of which 110,068 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf. Cattle- fecding and dairy-farming are the principal branches of husbandry. Large numbers of cattle are brought from Devon to be grazed on the rich Somersctshire meadows. The district cast and west of Wells, with that of Cheddar, is famed for the cheese of that

name, and cheese is also extensively made in other districts. Sheep, chiefly Leicesters and Southdowns, are grazed, the number in 1885 being 601,020. The number of pigs in 1885 was Ti /9) andor poultry 414,803. In the extent of its orchards, chiefly apple trees, Somerset comes next among the counties of England to Hereford and Devon, the area in 1885 being 28,660 acres. The apples arc principally made into cider, which is the common drink of the peasantry. The area under market gardens was 759 acres, and under nursery grounds 170 acres. There were 39,850 acres in 1881 under wood.

According to the Landowners Return Somerset in 1873 was divided among 382,765 owners, possessing 940,483 acres, at an annual value of £2,705,393, 18s., or an average value all over of about £2, 17s. 6d. per acre. There were 20,370 proprietors, or about 62 per cent., who possessed less than one acre, and 19,246

No.

341 358

Acres.

836,401 854,870

No. Acres.

37,966 43,168

Acres.

127,111 62 182,745 72

acres were common land. The following possessed over 9000 acres each:—Viscount Portman, 24,171 ; Sir T. D. Acland, 16,320; Sir J. H. G. Smyth, 13,548; Earl of Ilchester, 13,169; G. F. Luttrell, 12,732 ; Earl of Carnarvon, 12,732; Karl Poulett, 10,118; A. G. Lethbridge, 9108; and Sir A. A. Hood, 9008.

Administration and Population.—Somerset comprises forty hun- dreds, two liberties (Hampton and Claverton, Mells and Leigh), the cities of Bath (population 51,814 in 1881) and Wells (4634), part (38,131) of the city of Bristol, and the municipal boroughs of Bridgwater (12,007), Chard (2411), Glastonbury (3719), Taunton (16,614), and Yeovil (8479). For parliamentary purposes the county, which was formerly divided into East, Mid, and West Somerset, was by the Act of 1885 parted out in seven separate divisions—North, South, East, West (or Wellington), Bridgwater, Frome, and Wells. The borough of Frome was in 1885 merged in its county district. The city of Bath returns two members, and a portion of the East Division of Bristol is within the limits of the county. In addition to the boroughs the following urban sanitary districts are situated within the county:—Burnham (1904), Clevedon (4869), a rising watering-place, Frome (9377), Midsomer- Norton (4422), Radstock (3074), Shepton Mallet (5322), Street (2514), Wellington (6360), Weston-super-Marc (12,884), a favourite watcring-place, and Wiveliscombe (1624). The county has one court of quarter sessions, and is divided into twenty-two petty and special sessional divisions. The city of Bath and the borough of Bridgwater have commissions of the peace and separate courts of quarter sessions ; and the city of Wells and the borough of Yeovil have commissions of the peace. The county contains 489 civil parishes, with parts of three others. Ecclesiastically it corresponds closely to the diocese of Bath and Wells. From 973,577 in 1801 the population had increased in 1831 to 403,795, in 1851 to 443,916, in 1871 to 463,483, and in 1881 to 469,109, of whom 220,582 were

males and 248,527 females. The number of persons to an acre in 1881 was 0°45 and of acres to a person 2°24,

History.—Somerset, the land of the Swmorsetan, is one of the West-Saxon shires which grew by gradual conquest from the Welsh, as opposed to the Mercian shires mapped out round a town and called by itsname. The name may well enough be what it seems at first sight, as it is called in Welsh Wlad-yr-haf, and in Latin some- times xstiva regio, Anyhow the land bears the name of the folk. There has never been any central town or

acknowledged capital, though Somerton bears a name cognate with the land. Assizes, elections, and the like have been held at different places at different times. There is uo distinct name for the land earlier than the English conquest ; it does not preserve the name of any British tribe, like the neighbouring Damnonii and Durotriges. But there are abundance of remains both of prehistoric and of Roman times, beginning with the stones which have given their name to Stanton Drew and the great giant's chamber at Wellow. Many ofthe hills are crowned with camps, as Cadbury, seven acres in extent, the remains on Hampton Down, near Bath, the fortress of Maesbury Castle, remarkably well preserved, the camp on Worlebury Hill, containing a number of hut circles, Dolbury camp on the Mendips, of great extent and sur- rounded by a stone ditch and rampart, and Norton Fitzwarren, near Taunton. At Bath the Romans had an important city, dque Sulis, on the line of the "fosse" which crossed the centre of Somerset, skirting the eastern ridges of the Mendips by Shepton Mallet and Ilchester (Ichalis) to the ancient Mforidunwm. From I\chester an- other Roman road passed to Durnoviwm (Dorchester). From Brean Down, where there was a Roman port, a road crossed south-east- wards by the Mendips and Shepton Mallet to Sorbiodwnwm (Salis- bury). The completeness of the Roman occupation is evidenced not only by the variety and importance of the relics which have been discovered, but by the wide area over which they are spread. That lead was wrought by the Romaus in the Mendips is evidenced by laminw found at various places bearing the imperial stamp ; froni the remains of old pottery kilns that have been discovered it would appear that this industry then as now was of considerable importance ; the foundations of Roman villas are very common, and there arc many remarkably fine specimens of Roman pavements. After the withdrawal of the Roman power, the district formed part of the British kingdom of Damnonia or West Wales, and it plays its part in the legends of Arthur, which seem to have grown out of the history of that kingdom. The religious history gathers round the Isle of Avalon and its monastery, known in Welsh as Ynysvitrin and in English as Glastonbury, names of somewhat uncertain origin and use, and which must not be pressed too strongly. Wild. legends connect the place with Joseph of Arimathea and a crowd of saints from Ireland and elsewhere. It is enough to say that it undoubtedly was a religious house, though perhaps of no very great antiquity, before the English conquest reached so far, and that it was the one great church (as Exeter was the one great city) which lived on

uninterruptedly through the English conquest. That conquest began in 577 with the campaign of Ceawlin, when, after the battle of Deorham, he took Gloucester, Cirencester, aud Bath and advanced his frontier to the Axe. This was the last heathen conquest ; before the second advance under Cenwealh the West-Saxons had become Christians. His two victories in 652 and 658 carried the English frontier to the Parret, and took in Glastonbury. The later stages are less clear; Centwine in 672 '* drove the Bretwealas to the sea," and Ine fought with the Welsh king Gerest in 710 and made Taunton a border fortress at some time before 722. By this time the conquest was complete. In the Danish wars Ailfred in 878 found shelter at Athelney and then went forth to his victory at Ethandun (Edington in Wiltshire), after which peace was made with the Danes at Wedmore. We hear of several later Danish invasions, but the Danes never made any settlements. Under Edward the Confessor Soinerset formed part of the earldom, first of Swegen and then of Harold. 1t prob- ably submitted to the Norman Conqueror after the taking of Exeter in 1068, and an English revolt in the next year was put down. In 1088 Ilchester stood a siege in the cause of William Rufus, and the county plays its part in the wars of Stephen. During the Middle Ages onward to the period of the civil war the historical events of Somerset— with the exception of the episode of Perkin Warbeck, who seized and abandoned Taunton in 1497— are chiefly associated with BrisTot (g.v.). The great mass of the people, especially those in the towns, took the Parliament side in the great conflict, but from 1648 to 1645 the shire was in the hands of the Royalists, with the exception of Taunton, which held out heroically under Blake till relicved by Fairfax on the 11th May of the latter year, which was followed by other successes until the whole district was regained by the Cromwellian party. The continuance of a strong Puritan feeling in the district was evidenced forty years later by the support given to the Monmouth rebellion, the latest historical event of special importance con- nected with the eounty.

The history of the county and its existing remains of antiquity have been largely affected by its ecclesiastical history. First part

of the single bishopric of Wessex at Winchester, then of that of Sherborne, the land of Sumorsetan became a distinct diocese in 909 with its bishopstool at Wells. The seat and style of the bishop have changed several times, but the boundaries of the diocese have changed remarkably little. Nowhere except in Sussex have the shire and the diocese been so nearly the same thing at all times. The great possessions of the bishopric and of the abbey of Glastonbury led to a remarkable lack of castles in the mid part of the county,

and also tended to overshadow all other ecclesiastical foundations.

Even in the other parts of the county castles are not a prominent feature, and no monastic church remains perfect except those of Bath and its cell Dunster. To Bath the bishopstool was removed in 1088, and after some shiftings, including a transfer to Glaston- bury, the double style of Bath and Wells was established, the monks of Bath and the canons of Wells forming two separate chapters for the bishop, At the dissolution of monasteries Bath was suppressed, Wells became the sole chapter, but the name of Bath was still kept in the bishop's style. The monastery of Glaston-

bury was destroyed, as were most of the smaller monasteries also.

Of those which have left any remains, Woodspring, Montacute (Cluniac), Clecve (Cistercian), and Michelney are the most remark- able. Athelney, founded by Alfred on the spot whcre he found shelter, has utterly perished. Montacute and Dunster fill a place in both ecclesiastical and military history. The castle of Robert of Mortain, the Conqueror's brother, was built on the peaked hill (mons acutus) of Leodgaresburh, where the holy cross of Walthem was found. 'The priory arose at the foot. Dunster, one of the few inhabited castles in England, stands on a hill crowned by an English

mound. Besides these there are also remains at Nunney and Castle

Carey; but castles are not a strong point in Somerset antiquities.

In ecclesiastical architecture the two great churches of Wells and Glastonbury supply a great study of the development of the earlier Pointed style out of Romanesque. But the architectural

strength of the county lies in its great parish churches, chiefly in the Perpendicular style, of which they present a characteristic variety. In the same style among greater churches are Bath abbey, Sherborne minster in Dorset, and Saint Mary Redcliff at Bristol (locally in Somerset and till lately in the diocese), a parish church on the type of a minster. Of earlier work there is little Norman, and aly any Primitive Romanesque, but there is a characteristic local style in some of the smaller buildings of the 14th century. The earlier churches were often cruciform, and sometimes with side towers. In domestic remains no district is richer ; Somerset stands alongside of Northamptonshire owing to the abundance of good stone in both. Clevedon Court is a very fine inhabited manor-house of the 14th century, and the houses, great and small, of the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries are endless, Indeed, the style has never quitc gone out, as the gable and the mullioned window have lingered on to this day. Barrington Court in the 16th century and Montacute House in the 17th are specially fine examples. There are also some very fine barns, as at Glaston-bury, Wells, and Pilton.

Among the more illustrious natives of Somersetshire are Dunstan, Roger Bacon, John Locke, Admiral Blake, Pym, Bishop Ken, Fielding, Cudworth, and the poet Daniel.

See Collinson, History of Somersetshire, 3 vols., 1791; Phelps, Modern Somerset- shire, 18389; Proceedings of the Somersetshire Archxological and Natural History

Society; Eyton, Somerset Survey, 2 vols., 1880; Hunt, Diocesan History of Bath and Wells, 1885; Freeman, English Towns and Districts, pp. 103 sq.

SOMERSET, Epwarp Srymour, DUKE or (c. 1500- 1552), eldest brother of Jane Seymour, Henry VIII.'s third wife, was created earl of Hertford in 1537, on the birth of his nephew, afterwards Edward VI. In 1544 he commanded in the war with Scotland, and sacked Edinburgh. Next year he again commanded against the Scots ; and he was employed by Henry in many important negotiations throughout the latter part of his reign. On the accession of Edward VI. he was made protector by the council, and was soon afterwards created duke of Somerset. He at once made use of his power to encour- age the extreme Reformers, and a general destruction of ecclesiastical works of art was the result. In September 1547, finding the Scots unwilling to listen to his pro- posals for a marriage between Edward and Mary Stuart, he marched an army into Scotland and won the battle of Pinkie Cleugh,—a worthless victory, which only threw Scotland into the arms of France. War with that country followed, and the result was the loss of Boulogne. Equally disastrous was the protector's domestic policy. He was animated by a dislike of arbitrary government, and by a desire to improve the condition of the poor, but was at the same time a slave to his own ambition. He

pushed on the Protestant Reformation with inconsiderate speed, repealed the Treason Acts of Henry VIII.'s reign, and issued a commission to inquire into agricultural distress. The agitation into which these measures threw the country produced insurrections in the west and east, which were with some difficulty suppressed. Irritated by his arrogance, rashness, and incapacity, the council, in October 1549, turned against him, deprived him of the protectorate, and confined him in the Tower. Released in 1550, he recovered much of his influence through the misgovernment of his successors, and~ contemplated a return to power at their expense. His plans being dis- covered, he was tried on a charge of felony, and executed on January 22,

1552. His popularity was immense, and in some respects deserved; but he aspired to a tyranny, and had he retained or recovered power he would have gone far towards ruining the nation.

Authorities. —Holinshed's Chronicle; Calendars of State Papers for the Reign of Edward VI.; Strype's Memorials; Froude's History of England.

SOMERSET, Ropert Carr, Eart or (c. 1590-1645), came of a good Scottish family, the Kers of Ferniehurst. The date of his birth seems uncertain, but he was a lad when James I. ascended the English throne. When this event occurred Carr gave up the position which he had hitherto occupied as page at the Scottish court, and sought for a time to make his fortune in France. Returning to England he entered the service of Lord Hay, and soon attracted the attention of the king. Entirely devoid of all higher qualities, Carr was endowed with good looks, excellent spirits, and considerable personal accomplish- ments. These advantages were sufficient for James, who knighted the young man and at once took him into favour. In 1607 an opportunity enabled the king to con- fer upon him a more substantial mark of his affection. Sir W. Raleigh had through his attainder forfeited his life-interest in the manor of Sherborne, but he had previously executed a conveyance by which the property was to pass on his death to his eldest son. This document was, unfortunately, rendered worthless by a flaw which gave the king eventual possession of the property. Acting on Salisbury's suggestion, James resolved to confer the manor on Carr. The case was argued at law, and judgment was in 1609 given for the crown. Lady Raleigh received some compensation, apparently inadequate, and Carr at once entered on possession. His influence was already such that in 1610 he persuaded the king to dissolve the parhament, which had shown signs of attacking the Scottish favourites. Next year Carr was made an English peer, and took his seat in the House of Lords as Viscount Rochester. Shortly afterwards he became a privy coun- cillor, and in the autumn of 1613 he was created earl of Somerset. In 1614 he became lord chamberlain.

He was now at the zenith of his power, but the event had already occurred which was to prove his ruin. Before 1609, while still only Sir Robert Carr, he had commenced an intrigue with Lady Essex. In 1613 that lady set about procuring a divorce from her husband, with the object of afterwards

marrying Carr. James favoured the cause of Lady Essex; the court pronounced a decree of divorce; and in December 1613 she married the earl of Somerset. Ten days before the court gave judginent, Sir Thomas Overbury, who apparently knew facts concerning Lady Essex which would have been fatal to her success, was poisoned in the Tower. No idea seems to have been entertained at the time that Lady Essex and her future husband were implicated. For two years more Somerset continued to exercise a paramount influence over James, and it was not till 1615 that his arrogant behaviour began to alienate the king. His fall was due, however,

not to the loss of the king's favour nor to the combination at court against him, but to the discovery of the circum- stances of Overbury's death. In July 1615 Somerset obtained a full pardon from the king for all offences which he might have committed. Soon afterwards the truth about the murder came out. Coke and Bacon were set to unravel the plot. After four of the principal agents had been convicted and punished, the earl and countess were brought to trial. The latter confessed, and of her guilt there can be no doubt. Somerset's share is far more diffi- cult to discover, and probably will never be fully known. The evidence against him rested on mere presumption, and he consistently declared himself innocent. Probabili- ties are on the whole in favour of the hypothesis that he was not more than an accessory after the fact. James let matters take their course, and both earl and countess were found guilty. The sentence was not carried into effect against either culprit. The countess was pardoned immediately. The earl appears to have refused to buy forgiveness by concessions, and it was not till 1624 that he obtained his pardon. Thenceforward he disappears from public view. He died, without heirs, in 1645.

Authorities.—State Trials; Carew Letters; Life and Letters of Bacon, ed. Spedding; Spedding, Studies im+ Hnglish History; Gardiner, History of England.

SOMERVILLE, previous to its recent incorporation with Boston a city of the United States, in Middlesex county, Massachusetts, lying on Mystic river, 2 miles north-west of the Boston state-house. It was named in honour of Richard Somers, a naval officer, and was incor- porated as a city in 1872.

The population was 24,933 in 1881. Glass-works, bottle-works, flour-mills, a bleachery, and a brass-tubing factory are among the industrial establishments. .

SOMERVILLE, Mary (1780-1872), scientific writer, was the daughter of Admiral Sir William George Fairfax, and was born 26th December 1780 in the manse of Jed- burgh, the house of her mother's sister, wife of Dr Thomas Somerville, author of Jfy Own Life and Times, whose son was her second husband. She received a rather desultory education, and mastered algebra and Euclid in secret after she had left school, and without any extraneous help. In 1804 she married her cousin Captain Samuel Greig, who died in 1806; and in 1812 she married another cousin, Dr William Somerville, inspector of the army medical board, who encouraged and greatly aided her in the study of the physical sciences. After her marriage she made the acquaintance on the Continent and in London of the most eminent scientific men of the time, among whom her talents had attracted attention before she had acquired general fame, Laplace paying her the compliment of stating that she was the only woman who understood his works. Having been requested by Lord Brougham to translate for the Society for the Diffusion of Useful Know- ledge the Mécanique Céleste of Laplace, she greatly popularized its form, and its publication in 1831 under the title of The Mechanism of the Heavens at once made her famous. She was elected an honorary member of the Royal Astronomical Society, and her bust by Chantrey was placed in the hall of the Royal Society of London. Her other works are the Connection of the Physical Sciences (1834), Physical Geography (1848), and Jfolecular and Microscopie Science (1869). Much of the popularity of her writings is due to their clear and crisp style, and the underlying enthusiasm for her subject which pervades them. In 1835 she received a pension of £300 from Government. She died at Naples 28th November 1872. In the following year there appeared her Personal Recollections, consisting of reminiscences written during her old age, and of great interest both for what they

reveal of her own character and life and the glimpses they afford of the literary and scientific society of bygone

times. SOMME, a department of northern France, formed in

1790 of a large part of the province of Picardy (compris-

ing Vermandois, Santerre, Amiénois, Ponthieu, Vimeu, and Marquenterre) and a small portion of Artois, It is bounded on the N. by Pas-de-Calais and Nord, E. by Aisne, 8. by Oise, and S,W. by Seine-Inférieure, and its sea-coast extends 28 miles along the English Channel, Two streams flowing into the Channel—the Authie on the north and the Bresle on the south-west—bound it in these directions. The surface consists of great rolling plains, generally well-cultivated and very fertile. The highest point, hardly 700 feet above the sea, lies in the south-west, not far from Aumale. From the mouth of the Authie to the Bay of the Somme the coast is lined with a belt of sand-dunes about 2 miles broad, behind which is the Marquenterre, a tract of 50,000 acres reclaimed from the sea by means of dykes and traversed by drainage canals, The Bay of the Somme, obstructed by dangerous sand-banks, but containing the three ports of Crotoy in the north, St Valery in the south, and Hourdel in the south-west, has also been considerably encroached upon by the same methods. Next come the shingle banks, behind which the low fields of Cayeux (25,000 acres) have been reclaimed; and then at the hamlet of Ault commence the chalk cliffs, which continue onwards into Normandy. The river Somme traverses the department from south-east to north-west for a distance of 125 miles, through a marshy valley abounding in peat. Commanded by Ham, Péronne, Amiens, and Abbeville, this valley forms a northern line of defence for Paris, Apart from the water-power it supplies, the Somme is of great com- mercial value, being accompanied by a canal all the way from its source wherever it is not itself navigable. From Abbeville to St Valery its lower course forms a maritime canal 165 feet wide, 13 feet deep, and 8 to 9 miles long, capable of bearing at high tide vessels of 300 tons burden. From St Valery to the open sea the channel is bounded on the south by a towing-path embankment 2 miles long, and on the north by a dyke, capable of being laid under water, 1 mile long, and there the current hollows out a very variable bed accessible at certain tides for vessels of 500 tons. The most important affluents of the Somme—the Ancre from the north-east by way of Albert and Corbie, the Avre from the south-east by Roye, and the Selle from the south by Conty—join the main stream at Amiens. The Authie and the Bresle are respectively

65 and 45 miles loug. The latter ends in a maritime canal about 14 feet deep between Eu and Treport. The mean temperature is lower than that of Paris (49° Fahr. at Abbeville). Rain falls on 175 days per annum (33 inches at Abbeville).

Of the total area of 1,522,520 acres, 1,178,184 acres are under tillage, 68,844 are under meadows and pasture land, 133,837 are occupied by wood, while 30,514 acres are heaths or uncultivated tracts. In 1881 the live stock included 78,069 horses, 940 mules, 6125 asses, 140,512 cattle, £49,675 sheep (wool-clip 1117 tons), 82,755 pigs, 21,726 goats; there were also 27,902 hives (116 tons of honey and 86 of wax), The department, especially in the north-east, is one of the best-cultivated in France, Beetroot for sugar is the staple crop of the Péronne arrondissement ; cercals, fodder, oil plants (especially the poppy), hemp, and potatoes are grown throughout the department, the latter more largely on the

seaboard. No wine is grown, but the cider harvest of 1883 amounted to 8,904,100 gallons, and beer is a common beverage.

In 1884 there were grown 7,072,106 bushels of wheat, 1,810,437 of

meslin, 1,008,932 of rye, 1,789,089 of barley, 4207 of buckwheat, 11,197,392 of oats, 4,930,067 of potatoes, 1,161,665 tons of beetroot for sugar, and 208,686 tons of beetroot for fodder, 40 tons of hops, 242 tons of hempseed, 651 tons of hemp fibre, 1128 tons of flax, 5245 tons of colza seed, and 240,311 tons of fodder. Peat-cutting (84,335 tons in 1882) gives employment to 2640 hands, the best qualities and the deepest workings being in the valley of the Somme, between

Amiens and Abbeville. The peat of inferior quality is burned on the spot and the ashes used as manure. Textile industries employ 36,000 hands. The linen and hemp manufacture is carried on in dressing establishments and spuining and weaving factories with 50,000 spindles, 2250 power-looms, and 4000 hand-looms, and the manufactures comprise canvas for packing and sail-making, and linen (including damask). Cotton is spun by 72,800 spindles and woven by 745 power-looms and 5000 hand-lcoms. Moleskins

and velvets for upholstery and other purposes are among the articles manufactured. Wool is wrought in 44 establishments with 124,000 spindles, 120 power-looms, and 400 hand-looms, pro- ducing yarns of all kinds, “Scotch cashmeres,” ‘* China satins,” Serges, merinos, repps, poplins, &c. Tulles, embroidery, laces, ribbons, plush, carpets, cotton, and woollen hose are also manu- factuted. The last industry employs half the population of Santerre. About 6400 workmen are engaged in the iron and copper industries, steam-engine and boiler inaking, and the pro- duction of spinning-mill machinery, railway plant, and umbrella frames. The arrondissement of Abbeville is the centre of a great lock-manufacture, employing from 4000 to 5000 workmen. There are also chemical factories, bleachcries, tanneries, paper-mills (470 hands, product 6108 tons in 1881), saw-mills, and soap and candle works. Beetroot sugar is manufactured in 66 establish- ments (5090 horse-power and 6450 workmen). In 1881 53,177 tons of sugar were produced and 2,247,146 gallons of spirit distilled from the molasses and the beet. The total number of hands employed in the industries of the department is 64,000, and the total horse-power 13,181. Thirty-seven decked boats with 400 hands are engaged in the deep-sea fisheries, in the coast fishery 182 small boats with 800 hands. Cereals, horses of the Boulogne or Norman breed, cattle, hemp and linen, and the manufactured goods are the exports of the department. Vegetables and other food- stuffs are sent to England, and shingle for the manufacture of earthenware. Besides the raw materials for the manufacturing industries, wines, timber, dye-stuffs, and coal (727,783 tons in 1882) are imported. There are 385 miles of national and 5033 miles of local roads, 119 miles of navigable river or canal, and 379 miles of railway. Administratively the department comprises 5 arrondissements (Amiens, Abbeville, Doullens, Montdidier, and Péronne), 41 cantons, and 836 communes, The population in 1881 was 550,887. The department constitutes the diocese of Amiens, which city (population in 1881, 67,874) is also the seat of a court of appeal and the eae of the 2d corps d’armée, in which the department is included

SOMMERFELD, an industrial town of Prussia, in the province of Brandenburg, lies on the Lubis, 40 miles to the south-east of Frankfort-on-the-Oder. Its manu- factures of woollen cloth are important, —the annual value of the goods produced being upwards of half a million sterling ; and it

also contains finishing and dye works, an iron foundry, boiler-works, &c. The population in 1885 was 11,364, almost all Protestants.

SOMNAMBULISM. See Sieur, supra, p. 157.

SOMNATH, an ancient but decayed city of peninsular Guzerat, India, with a population in 1881 of 6644, mostly Mohammedans, is situated on a bay of the Arabian Sea, in 20° 53’ N. lat. and 70° 24’ E. long. The port, which is called Verdwal, is distinct from the city proper (Deva- Pattan, Somnath-Pattan, or Prabhas). The latter occupies a prominence on the south side of the bay, is surrounded by massive fortifications, and retains in its ruins and numerous tombs many traces of its former greatness as a commercial port. But the city was most famous for the temple just outside its walls in which stood the great idol or rather columnar emblem of Mahadeo called Somnath (Moon’s lord), which was destroyed by Mahmud of Ghazni see the details in vol. xv. p. 287. For the so-called “gates of Somnath,” now at Agra, see Guaznq, vol. x. p. 560. The temple was again plundered by Al4 el-Din in 1300, and appears to have been converted into a mosque. See Yule’s edition of Marco Polo, vol. ii. p. 389 9,

SONDERSHAUSEN. See Scuwarzeurc-Sonpzrs- HAUSEN,

SONNET (Ital. Sonetto, dim. of Suono, Fr. Sonnet). The sonnet in the literature of modern Europe is a brief poetic form of fourteen rhymed verses, ranged according to prescription. It does not, however, belong to what has been called, properly perhaps, under Ronprau (g.v.), the poetry

of ingenuity. Although in a language like the English it does no doubt require considerable ingenuity to construct a satisfactory sonnet of octave and sestet running upon four rhymes, this ingenuity is only a means to an end, the end being properly that a single wave of emotion, when emotion is either too deeply charged with thought, or too much adulterated with fancy, to pass spontaneously into the movements of pure lyric, shall be embodied in a single metrical flow and return. Whether any given sonnet be composed like that of Pier delle Vigne (of two quatrains with rhymes running a, b, a, b, a, b a, b, and of two tercets with rhymes running ¢, d, e, c, d, e), or

whether the verses be arranged (on the authority of Shakespeare and Drayton) in three quatrains of alternate rhymes clinched by a couplet, or, as in the sonnet of Petrarch, in an octave of two rhymes and a sestet of either two or three rhymes, —in each case the peculiar pleasure which the ear derives from the sonnet asa metrical form lies in the number and arrangement of the verses being prescribed, and distinctly recognizable as being prescribed. That the impulse to select for the rendering of single phases of feeling or reflexion a certain recognized form is born of a natural and universal instinct is perhaps evidenced by the fact that even when a metrical arrangement discloses no structural law demanding a prescriptive number and arrangement of verses, the poet will nevertheless, in certain moods, choose to restrict himself to a prescribed number and arrangement, as in the cases of the Italian stornello, the Welsh tvéban, and the beautiful rhymeless short ode of Japanese poetry, for the knowledge of which we are indebted to Mr Chamberlain, And perhaps, if space permitted us to probe the matter deeply, we should find that the recognized prescription of form gives a sense of oneness that nothing else save the refrain can give to a poem which, being at once too long for a stanza in a series and too short to have the self-sustaining power of the more extended kinds of poetic art, suffers by suggesting to the ear a sense of the fragmentary and the inchoate. It is not then merely the number of the verses, it is also their arrangement as to rhymes,—an arrangement leading the ear to expect a prescribed sequence and then satisfying that expectation,—which entitles a form of fourteen verses to be called a sonnet.

Hence the so-called irregular sonnets of 8. T. Coleridge, which lead the ear of the reader to expect the pleasure of a prescribed arrangement when what they have to offer is a pleasure of an exactly opposite kind—the pleasure of an absolute freedom from prescribed arrangement—are un- satisfactory, while (as the present writer has often pointed out) the same poet’s fourteen-line poem, “ Work without Hope,” in which the reader expects and gets freedom from prescription, is entirely satisfactory. This same little poem of Coleridge’s also affords an excellent illustration of another point in connexion with the sonnet. If we trace the history and the development of the sonnet from Pier delle Vigne to Rossetti we shall find that the poet’s quest from the very first has been to write a poem in fourteen verses so arranged that they should, better than any other number and arrangement of

verses, produce a certain melodic effect upon the ear, and an effect, moreover, that should bear iteration and reiteration in other poems similarly constructed. Now if we ask ourselves whether, beautiful as is this poem, ‘“ Work without Hope,” taken as a single and original metrical arrangement, we should get out of a series of poems modelled line for line upon it that pleasure of iteration which we get out of a series of Petrarchan sonnets, we shall easily see why the regular sonnet of octave and sestet on the one hand, and what is called the Shakespearean sonnet on the other, have survived all other competing forms.

In modern Europe the sonnet has always had a peculiar fascination for poets of the first class—poets, that is, in whom what we have called poetic energy (see PorTRy) and

plastic power are equally combined. It would seem that

the very fact that the sonnet is a recognized structure sug-

gestive of mere art—suggestive in some measure, indeed, of

what Schiller would call “sport” in art—has drawn some of the most passionate poets in the world to the sonnet as the medium of their sincerest utterances. Without being coldly artificial, like the rondeau, the sestina, the ballade, the villanelle, &c., the sonnet is yet so artistic in structure, its form is so universally known, recognized, and adopted as being artistic, that the too fervid spontaneity and reality of the poet’s emotion may be in a certain degree veiled, and the poet can whisper, as from behind a mask, those deepest secrets of the heart which could otherwise only find expression in purely dramatic forms.

That the sonnet was invented, not in Provence, as French critics pretend, but in Italy in the 13th century, is pretty clear, but by whom is still perhaps an open question. Mr S. Waddington (Sonnets of Living Writers) and several other contemporary critics attribute to Fra Guittone the

honour of having invented the form. But Mr J. A.

Symonds has reminded us that the sonnet beginning Perd ch' amore, attributed to Pier delle Vigne, secretary of state in the Sicilian court of Frederick, has claims which no student of early Italian poetry can ignore.

As regards English sonnets, whether the Petrarchan and the Shakespearean are really the best of all possible forms we need not inquire. But, inasmuch as they have become so vital and so dominant over other sonnet forms that when- ever we begin to read the first verse of an English sonnet we expect to find one or other of these recognized rhyme- arrangements, any departure from these two arrangements, even though the result be such a magnificent poem as Shelley's "Ozymandias," disappoints the expectation, bafiles the ear, and brings with it that sense of the fragmentary and the inchoate to which we have before alluded. If, however, some writer should arise with sufficient originality of metrical endowment and sufficient poetic power to do what Keats, in a famous experiment of his tried to do and failed,—impress the public ear with a new sonnet structure, impress the public ear so powerfully that a new kind of expectance is created the moment the first verse of a sonnet is recited,—then there will be three kinds of English sonnets instead of two.

With regard to the Petrarchan sonnet, all critics are perhaps now agreed that, while the form of the octave is invariable, the form of the sestet is absolutely free, save that the emotions should govern the arrangement of the verses. Butas regards the division between octave and sestet, Mr Mark Pattison says, with great boldness, but perhaps with truth, that by blending octave with sestet Milton missed the very object and end of the Petrarchan scheme. Another critic, however, Mr Hall Caine, in his preface to Sonnets of Three Centuries, contends that by making "octave flow into sestet without break of music or thought" Milton consciously or unconsciously invented a new form of sonnet; that is to say, Milton, in his use of the Petrarehan octave and sestet for the embodiment of intellectual substance incapable of that partial disin- tegration which Petrarch himself always or mostly sought, invented a species of sonnet which is English in impetus, but Italian, or partially Italian, in structure. Hence this critic, like Mr William Sharp (Sonnets of thes Century), divides all English sonnets into four groups :—(1) sonnets of Shakespearean structure; (2) sonnets of octave and sestet of Miltonic structure ; (3) sonnets of contemporary structure, 4.¢, all

sonnets on the Petrarchan model in which the metrical and intellectual "wave of flow and

SO P—SOP

ebb" (as originally formulated by the present writer in a sonnet on the sonnet, which has appeared in most of the recent anthologies) is strictly observed, and in which, while the rhyme-arrangement of the octave is invariable, that of the sestet is free; (4) sonnets of miscellaneous structure.

With regard to what is called the contemporary form, —a Petrarchan arrangement with the sestet divided very sharply from the octave,—the crowning difficulty and the crowning triumph of the sonnet writer has always been to so handle the rhythm of the prescribed structure as to make it seem in each individual sonnet the inevitable and natural rhythm demanded by the emotion which gives the individual sonnet birth, and this can perhaps only be achieved when the richness and apparent complexity of the rhyme-arrangement is balanced by that perfect lucidity and simplicity of syntax which is the special quest of the "sonnet of flow and ebb."

The wave theory has found acceptance with most recent students of the sonnet, such as Rossetti and the late Mark Pattison, Mr J. A. Symonds, Mr Hall Caine, and Mr William Sharp. Mr Symonds, indeed, seems to hint that the very name given by the Italians to the two tercets, the volta or turn, indicates the metrical meaning of the form. 'The striking metaphorical symbol," says he, 'drawn from the observation of the swelling and declining wave can even in some examples be applied to sonnets on the Shakespearean model; for, as a wave may fall gradually or abruptly, so the sonnet may sink with stately volume or with precipitate subsidence to its close. Rossetti furnishes incomparable examples of the former and more desirable conclusion; Sydney Dobell, in Home in War Time, yields an extreme specimen of the latter."

And now as to the Shakespearean sonnet. Some very acute critics have spoken as if this form were merely a lawless succession of three quatrains clinched by a couplet, and as if the number of the quatrains might just as well have been two or four as the present prescribed number of three. If this were so, it would unquestionably be a serious impeachment of the

Shakespearean sonnet, for save in the poetry of ingenuity no metric arrangement is otherwise than bad unless it be the result of a deep metrical necessity.

If the prescriptive arrangement of three quatrains clinched by a couplet is not a metrical necessity, if it is not demanded in order to prevent the couplet from losing its power, such an arrangement is idle and worse than idle ; just as, in the case of the Petrarchan sonnet, if it can be shown that the solid unity of the outflowing wave can be maintained as completely upon three rhymes as upon two, then the restriction of the octave to two rhymes is sunple pedantry. But he who would test the metrical necessity of the arrangement in the Shakespearean sonnet has only to make the experiment of writing a poem of two quatrains with a couplet, and then another poem of four quatrains with a couplet, in order to see how inevitable is the metrical necessity of the Shakespearean number and arrangement for the achievement of the metrical effect which Shakespeare, Drayton, and others sought. While in the poem of two quatrains the expected couplet has the sharp epigrammatic effect of the couplet in ordinary stanzas (such as that of oftava rima, and as that of the Venus and Adonis stanza), destroying that pensive sweet- ness which is the characteristic of the Shakespearean sonnet, the poem of four quatrains is just sufficiently long for the expected pleasure of the couplet to be dispersed and. wasted.

The quest of the Shakespearean sonnet is not, like that of the sonnet of octave and sestet, sonority, and, so to speak, metrical counterpoint, but sweetness ; and the sweetest of

all possible arrangements in English versification is a succession of decasyllabic quatrains in alternate rhymes knit together and clinched by a couplet—a couplet coming not so far from the initial verse as to lose its binding power, and yet not so near the initial verse that the ring of epigram disturbs the “linked sweetness long drawn out” of this movement, but sufficiently near to shed its influence over the poem back to the initial verse. A chief part of the pleasure of the Shakespearean sonnet is the expectance of the climacteric rest of the couplet at the end (just as a chief part of the pleasure of the sonnet of octave and sestet is the expectance of

the answering ebb of the sestet when the close of the octave has been reached); and this expectance is gratified too early if it comes after two quatrains, while, if it comes after a greater number of quatrains than three, it is dispersed and wasted altogether.

The French sonnet has a regular Petrarchan octave with a sestet of three rhymes beginning with a couplet. The Spanish sonnet is also based on the pure Italian type, and is extremely graceful and airy. The same may be said of the Portuguese sonnet—a form of which the illustrious Camoens has left nearly three hundred examples. (T. W.)

SOPHIA DOROTHEA (1666-1726), the daughter and heiress of Duke George William of Brunswick-Liineburg- Celle, was born on September 15, 1666. On November 21, 1682, she was married to Prince George Louis of Hanover, afterwards George I. of England, to whom she bore in 1683 a son, afterwards King George II., and in 1687 a daughter, Sophia Dorothea, afterwards the wife of Frederick William I. of Prussia and the mother of Frede- rick the Great. For her illicit relations with Count Philip Christopher von Kénigsmark (see vol. x. p. 420) Sophia Dorothea was divorced from her husband the elector in December 1694, and the remainder of her life was spent in a dignified captivity under a military guard at her ancestral seat of Ahlden. She died on November 13, 1726. Her correspondence with Kénigsmark was dis- covered at Lund by Prof. Palmblad, and published by him in 1847; see also the Count von Schulenburg's Her- zogin von Ahiden (Leipsic, 1852).

SOPHISTS. Sophist, or"manof wisdom," was the name given by the Greeks about the middle of the 5th century B,C, to certain teachers of a superior grade who, distinguish- ing themselves from philosophers on the one hand and from artists and craftsmen on the other, claimed to prepare their pupils, not for any particular study or profession, but for civic life. For nearly a hundred years the sophists held almost a monopoly of general or liberal education. Yet, within the limits of the profession, there was con- siderable diversity both of theory and of practice, Four principal varieties are distinguishable, and may be described as the sophistries of culture, of rhetoric, of politics, and of eristic or disputation. ach of these predominated in its turn, though not to the exclusion of others, the sophistry of culture

beginning about 447, and leading to the sophistry of eristic, and the sophistry of rhetoric taking root in central Greece about 427, and merging in the sophistry of politics. Further, since Socrates and the Socratics were educators, they too might be, and in general were, regarded as sophists ; but, as they conceived truth—so far as truth was attainable—rather than success in life, in the law court, in the assembly, or in debate, to be the right end of intellectual effort, they were at variance with their rivals, and are commonly ranked by historians, not with the sophists, who confessedly despaired of knowledge, but with the philosophers, who, however unavailingly, continued to seek it. With the establishment of the great philosophical schools—first, of

the Academy, next of the Lyceum—the philosophers took the place of the sophists as the educators of Greece.

The sophistical movement was then primarily an attempt to provide a general or liberal education which should supplement the customary instruction in reading, writing, gymnastic, and music, But, as the sophists of the first period chose for their instruments grammar, style, literature, and oratory, while those of the second and third developments were professed rhetoricians, sophistry exercised an important influence upon literature. Then again, as the movement, taking its rise in the philoso- phical agnosticism which grew out of the early physical systems, was itself persistently sceptical, sophistry may be regarded as an interlude in the history of philo- sophy. Finally, the practice of rhetoric and eristic, which presently became prominent in sophistical teaching, had, or at any rate seemed to have, a mischievous effect upon conduct ; and the charge of seeking, whether in exposition or in debate, not truth but victory—which charge was impressively urged against the sophists by Plato—grew into an accusation of holding and teaching immoral and unsocial doctrines, and in our own day has been the subject of eager controversy. In the present article the matters above indicated will be dealt with under the following heads:—(1) the genesis and development of sophistry ; (2) the relations of sophistry to education, literature, and philosophy ; (3) the theory of Grote.

(1) Genesis and Development of Sophistry.—Sophistry arose out of a crisis in philosophy. The earlier Ionian physicists,;—Thales, Anaximander, and Anaximenes,—in their attempts to trace the multiplicity of things to a single material element, had been troubled by no misgivings about the possibility of knowledge. But, when Heraclitus to the assumption of fire as the single material cause added the doctrine that all things are in perpetual flux, he found himself obliged to admit that things cannot be known. ‘Thus, though, in so far as he asserted his funda- mental doctrine without doubt or qualification, he was a dogmatist, in all else he was a sceptic. Again, the Eleatic Parmenides, deriving from the theologian Xenophanes the distinction between émornyn and dda, conceived that, whilst the One exists, and is the object of knowledge, the Multiplicity of things becomes, and is the object of opinion ; but, when his successor Zeno provided the system with a logic, the consistent application of that logic resolved the fundamental doctrine into the single proposi- tion “One is One,” or, more exactly, into the single identity “One One.” Thus Eleaticism, though professedly dogmatic, was inconsistent in its theory of the One and its attributes, and openly sceptical in regard to the world of nature. Lastly, the philosophers of the second physical succession,—Empedocles and Anaxagoras,—not directly attacking the great mystery of the One and the Many, but in virtue of a scientific instinct approaching it through the investigation of phenomena, were brought by their study of sensation to perceive and to proclaim the inade- quacy of the organs of sense. Thus they too, despite their air of dogmatism, were in effect sceptics. In short, from different standpoints, the three philosophical succes- sions had devised systems which were in reality sceptical, though they had none of them recognized the sceptical inference.

Towards the middle of the 5th century, however, Protagoras of Abdera, taking account of the teaching of the first, and possibly of the second, of the physical successions, and Gorgias of Leontini, starting from the teaching of the metaphysical succession of Elea, drew that sceptical inference from which the philosophers had shrunk. If, argued Protagoras in a treatise entitled Z’ruth, all things are in flux, so that sensation is subjective, it

follows that ‘‘ Man is the measure of all things, of what is, that it is, and of what is not, that it is not”; in other words, there is no such thing as objective truth. Simi- larly, Gorgias, in a work On Nature, or on the Nonent, maintained (a) that nothing is, (0) that, if anything is, it cannot be known, (c) that, if anything is and can be known, it cannot be expressed in speech; and the sum- maries which have been preserved by Sextus Empiricus (Adv. Math., vii. 65-87) and by the author of the De Melisso, &c. (cc. 5, 6), show that, in defending these pro- positions, Gorgias availed himself of the arguments which Zeno had used to discredit the popular belief in the exist- ence of the Many; in other words, that Gorgias turned the destructive logic of Zeno against the constructive ontology of Parmenides, thereby not only reducing Eleaticism to nothingness, but also, until such time as a better logic than that of Zeno should be provided, precluding all philosophical inquiry whatsoever. Thus, whereas the representatives of the three successions had continued to regard themselves as philosophers or seekers after truth, Protagoras and Gorgias, plainly acknowledging their defeat, withdrew from the ungrateful struggle.

Meagre as were the results which the earlier thinkers had obtained, the extinction of philosophy just at the time when the liberal arts became more technical, and consequently less available as employments of leisure, threatened to leave a blank in Hellenic life. Accordingly Protagoras, while with the one hand he put away philo- sophy, with the other offered a substitute. Emphasizing the function of the teacher, which with the philosophers had been subordinate, and proclaiming the right end of intellectual endeavour to be, not “truth” (éA7Gea) or “wisdom” (codia), which was unattainable, but “virtue” or “excellence” (dperj), he sought to communicate, not a theory of the universe, but an aptitude for civic life. ‘The lesson which I have to teach,” Plato makes him say (Prot., 318 E), “is prudence or good counsel, both in respect of domestic matters, that the man may manage his household aright, and in respect of public affairs, that he may be thoroughly qualified to take part, both by deed and by word, in the business of the state. In other words, I profess to make men good citizens.” As instruments of education Protagoras used grammar, style, poetry, and oratory. Thus, whereas hitherto the young Greek, having completed his elementary training in the schools of the ypoppatioTys, the KOapiorys, and the adorpifns, was left to prepare himself for his life’s work as best he

might, by philosophical speculation, by artistic practice, or otherwise, one who passed from the elementary schools to the lecture-room of Protagoras received from him a “higher education.” The programme was exclusively literary, but for the moment it enabled Protagoras to satisfy the demand which he had discovered and evoked. Wherever he went, his lecture-room was crowded with admiring pupils, whose homage filled his purse and enhanced his reputation.

After Protagoras the most prominent of the literary sophists was Prodicus of Ceos. Establishing himself at Athens, he taught “virtue” or “excellence,” in the sense attached to the word by Protagoras, partly by means of literary subjects, partly in discourses upon practical ethics. It is plain that Prodicus was an affected pedant. Yet Ins simple conventional morality found favour, and Plato (Rep., 600 C) couples him with Protagoras in his testi- mony to the popularity of the sophists and their teaching.

At Athens, the centre of the intellectual life of Greece, there was soon to be found a host of sophists: some of them strangers, others citizens; some of them bred under Protagoras and Prodicus, others self-taught. ih the teaching of the sophists of this younger generation

eoPH IES fs

two points are observable. First, their independence of philosophy and the arts being assured, though they continued to regard “civic excellence ” as their aim, it was no longer necessary for them to make the assertion of its claims a principal element in their exposition. Secondly, for the sake of novelty they extended their range, includ- ing scientific and technical subjects, but handling them, and teaching their pupils to handle them, in a popular way. In this stage of sophistry then, the sophist, though not a specialist, trenched upon the provinces of specialists ;

and accordingly Plato (Prot. 318 E) makes Protagoras’

pointedly refer to sophists who, “‘ when young men have made their escape from the arts, plunge them once more into technical study, and teach them such subjects as arithmetic, astronomy, geometry, and music.” The sophist of whom the Platonic Protagoras is here thinking was Hippias of Elis, who

gave popular lectures, not only upon the four subjects just mentioned, but also upon grammar, mythology, family history, archeology, Homerology, and the education of youth. In this polymath we see at once the degradation of the sophistry of culture and the link which connects Protagoras and Prodicus with the eristics, who at a later period taught, not, like Hippias, all branches of learning, but a universally applicable method of dis- putation.

Meanwhile, Gorgias of Leontini, who, as has been seen, had studied and rejected the philosophy of western Greece, gave to sophistry a new direction by bringing to the mother country the technical study of rhetoric, —especially forensic rhetoric (Plato, Gorg., 454 B; cf. Aristotle, Rhet., 1354 b 26),—which study had begun in Sicily with Corax and Tisias nearly forty years before. Gorgias was already advanced in years and rich in honours when, in 427, he visited Athens as the head of an embassy sent to solicit aid against Syracuse. Received with acclamation, he spent the rest of his long life in central Greece, win- ning applause by the display of his oratorical gifts and acquiring wealth by the teaching of rhetoric. There is no evidence to show that at any period of his life he called himself a sophist; and, as Plato (Gorg., 449 A) makes him describe himself as a fyjrwp, it is reasonable to sup- pose that he preferred that title. That he should do so was only natural, since his position as a teacher of rhetoric was already secure when Protagoras made his first appear- ance in the character of a sophist; and, as Protagoras, Prodicus, and the rest of the sophists of culture offered a comprehensive cducation, of which oratory formed only a part, whilst Gorgias made no pretence of teaching ‘civic excellence” (Plato, Afeno, 95 C), and found a substitute for philosophy, not in literature generally, but in the professional study of rhetoric alone, it would have been convenient if the distinction between sophistry and rhetoric had been maintained. But, though, as will be seen hereafter, these two sorts of education were some- times distinguished, Gorgias and those who succeeded him as teachers of rhetoric, such as Thrasymachus of Chalce- don and Polus of Agrigentum, were commonly called by the title which Protagoras had assumed and brought into familiar use.

Rhetorical sophistry, as taught by Gorgias with special reference to the requirements of the law courts, led by an easy transition to political sophistry. During the century which had elapsed since the expulsion of the

Pisistratids and the establishment of the democracy, the Athenian constitution had developed with a rapidity which produced an oligarchical reaction, and the discussion of constitu- tional principles and precedents, always familiar to the citizen of Athens, was thus abnormally stimulated. The Peloponnesian War too not only added a deeper interest to ordinary questions of policy, but also caused the

relations of dissentient parties, of allied and belligerent states, of citizens and aliens, of bond and free, of Greeks and barbarians, to be eagerly debated in the light of present experience. It was only natural then that some of those who professed to prepare young Athenians for public life should give to their teaching a distinctively political direction; and accordingly we find Isocrates recognizing teachers of politics, and discriminating them at once from those earlier sophists who gave popular Instruction in the arts and from the contemporary eristics. To this class, that of the political sophists, may be assigned Lycophron, Alcidamas, and Isocrates himself. For, though that celebrated personage would have liked to be called, not "'sophist," but 'political philosopher," and tried to fasten the name of "sophist" upon his opponents the Socratics, it is clear from his own statement that he was commonly ranked with the sophists, and that he had no claim, except on the score of superior popularity and success, to be dissociated from the other teachers of political rhetoric. It is true that he was not a political sophist of the vulgar type, that as a theorist he was honest and patriotic, and that, in addition to his fame as a teacher, he had a distinct reputation asa man of letters ; but he was a professor of political rhetoric, and, as such, in the phraseology of the day, a sophist. He had already reached the height of his fame when Plato opened a rival school at the Academy, and pointedly attacked him in the Gorgias, the Phxdrus, and the Republic. Thenceforward there was a perpetual controversy between the rhetorician and the philosopher, and the struggle of educational systems continued until, in the next generation, the philosophers were left in possession of the field.

While the sophistry of rhetoric led to the sophistry of politics, the sophistry of culture led to the sophistry of disputation. It has been seen that the range

of subjects recognized by Protagoras and Prodicus gradually extended itself, until Hippias professed himself a teacher of all branches of learning, including in his list subjects taught by artists and professional men, but handling them from a popular or non-professional point of view. The successors of the polymath claimed to possess and to com- municate, not the knowledge of all branches of learning, but an aptitude for dealing with all subjects, which aptitude should make the knowledge of any subject superfluous. In other words, they cultivated skill in disputa- tion. Now skill in disputation is plainly a valuable accomplishment ; and, as the Aristotelian logic grew out of the regulated discussions of the eristics and their pupils, the disputant sophistry of the 4th century deserves more attention and more respect than it usually receives from historians of Greek thought. But when men set them- selves to cultivate skill in disputation, irrespective of the matter debated, when men regard the matter discussed, not as a serious issue, but as a thesis upon which to practise their powers of controversy,—they learn to pursue, not truth, but victory ; and, their criterion of excellence having been thus perverted, they presently prefer in- genious fallacy to solid reasoning, and the applause of bystanders to the consciousness of honest effort. Indeed, the sophists generally had a predisposition to error of this sort, not only because sophistry was from the beginning a substitute for the pursuit of truth, but also because the successful professor, travelling from city to city, or settling abroad, could take no part in public affairs, and thus was not at every step reminded of the importance of the “material” element of exposition and reasoning. Paradox, however, soon becomes stale, and fallacy wearisome. Hence, despite its original popularity, eristical sophistry could not hold its ground. The man of the world who had cultivated it in his youth regarded it in riper years asa

foolish pedantry, or at best as a propedeutic exercise ; while the serious student, necessarily preferring that form of disputation which recognized truth as the end of this as of other intellectual processes, betook himself to one or other of the philosophies of the revival.

In order to complete this sketch of the development of sophistry in the latter half of the 5th century and the earlier half of the 4th, it is necessary next to take account of Socrates and the Socratics. A foe to philosophy and a renegade from art, Socrates took his departure from the same point as Protagoras, and moved in the same direc- tion, that of the education of youth. Finding in the cul- tivation of “virtue” or “excellence” a substitute for the pursuit of scientific truth, and in disputation the sole means by which “virtue” or “excellence” could be attained, he resembled at once the sophists of culture and the sophists of eristic. But, inasmuch as the “virtue” or “excellence” which he sought was that of the man rather than that of the official, while the disputation which he practised had for its aim, not victory, but the elimination of error, the differences which separated him from the sophists of culture and the sophists of eristic were only less considerable than the resemblances which he bore to both ; and further, though his whole time and attention were bestowed upon the education of young Athenians, his theory of the relations of teacher and pupil differed from that of the recognized professors of education, inasmuch as the taking of fees seemed to him to entail a base surrender of the teacher’s independence. The principal character- istics of Socrates’s theory of education were accepted, mutatis mutandis, by the leading Socratics. With these resemblances to the contemporary professors of education, and with these differences, were Socrates and the Socratics sophists or not? To this question there is no simple answer, yes or no. It is certain that Socrates’s contem- poraries regarded him as a sophist; and it was only reasonable that they should so regard him, because in opposition to the physicists of the past and the artists of the present he asserted the claims of higher education. But, though according to the phraseology of the time he was a sophist, he was not a typical sophist,—his principle that, while scientific truth is unattainable by man, right opinion is the only basis of right action, clearly differentiat- ing him from all the other professors of “virtue.” Again, as the Socratics—Plato himself, when he established him- self at the Academy, being no exception—were, like their master, educators rather than philosophers, and in their teaching laid especial stress upon discussion, they too were doubtless regarded as sophists, not by Isocrates only, but by their contemporaries in general ; and it may be con- jectured that the disputatious tendencies of the Megarian school made it all the more difficult for Plato and others to secure a proper appreciation of the difference between dia-

lectic, or discussion with a view to the discovery of truth, and eristic, or discussion with a view to victory. Changing circumstances, however, carry with them changes in the meaning and application of words. Whereas, so long as philosophy was in abeyance Socrates and the Socratics were regarded as sophists of an abnormal sort, as soon as philo- sophy revived it was dimly perceived that, in so far as Socrates and the Socratics dissented from sophistry, they preserved the philosophical tradition. This being so, it was found convenient to revise the terminology of the past, and to include in the philosophical succession those who, though not philosophers, had cherished the sacred spark. As for Socrates, he ranked himself neither with the philosophers, who professed to know, nor with the sophists, who pro- fessed to teach ; and, if he sometimes described himself as a iAdcodos, he was careful to indicate that he pretended to no other knowledge than that of his own limitations.

8 0 Pl & Series

It would seem then, (1) that popular nomenclature included under the term "'sophist" all teachers—whether professors, or, like Socrates, amateurs—who communi- cated, not artistic skill, nor philosophical theory, but a general or liberal education ; (2) that, of those who were commonly accounted sophists, some professed culture, some forensic rhetoric, some political rhetoric, some eristic, some (2¢., the Socratics) dialectic; (3) that the differences between the different groups of sophists were not inconsiderable, and that in particular the teaching of the rhetoricians was distinct in origin, and, in so far as its alm was success in a special walk of life, distinct in character, from the niore general teaching of the sophists of culture, the eristics, and the dialecticians, while the teaching of the dialecticians was discriminated from that of the rest, in so far as the aim of the dialecticians was truth, or at least the bettering of opinion; and, conse- quently, (4) that, in awarding praise and blame to sophistry and its representatives, the distinctive characteristics of the groups above enumerated must be studiously kept in view.

Lapse of time and change of circumstances brought with them, not merely changes in the subjects taught, but also changes in the popular estimate of sophistry and sophists. The first and most obvious sentiment which

sophistry evoked was an enthusiastic and admiring interest. The sophist seemed to his youthful hearers to open a new field of intellectual activity and thereby to add a fresh zest to existence. But in proportion to the fascination which he exercised upon the young was the distrust which he inspired in their less pliable elders. Not only were they dismayed by the novelty of the sophistical teaching, but also they vaguely perceived that it was subversive of authority, of the authority of the parent over the child as well as of the authority of the state over the citizen. Of the two conflicting sentiments, the favour of the young, gain- ing as years passed away, naturally prevailed; sophistry ceased to be novel, and attendance in the lecture-rooms of the sophists came to be thought not less necessary for the youth than attendance in the elementary schools for the boy. The lively enthusiasm and the furious opposition which greeted Protagoras had now burnt themselves out, and before long the sophist was treated by the man of the world as a harmless, necessary pedagogue.

That sophistry must be studied in its historical development was clearly seen by Plato, whose dialogue called the Sophist con- tains a formal review of the changing phases and aspects of sophistical teaching. The subject which is discussed in that dialogue and its successor the Statesman being the question “Are sophist, statesman, and philosopher identical or different ?” the Eleate who acts as protagonist seeks a definition of the term “sophist”” by means of a series of divisions or dichotomies. In this way he is led to regard the sophist successively—(1) as a practitioner of that branch of mercenary persuasion in private which professes to impart ‘‘virtue” and exacts payment in the shape of a fee, in opposition to the flatterer who offers pleasure, asking for sustenance in return; (2) as a practitioner of that branch of mental trading which purveys from city to city dis- courses and lessons about “virtue,” in opposition to the artist who similarly purveys discourses and lessous about the arts; (3) and (4) as a practitioner of those branches of mental trading, retail and wholesale, which purvey discourses and lessons about ‘virtue ” within a city, in opposition to the artists who similarly purvey discourses and lessons about the arts; (5) as a practitioner of that branch of eristic which brings to the professor pecuniary emolument, cristic being the systematic form of antilogic, and dealing with justice, injustice, and other abstractions, and antilogic being that form of disputation which uses question and answer in private, in opposition to

forensic, which uses continuous discourse in the law-courts; (6) as a practitioner of that branch of education which purges away the vain conceit of wisdom by means of cross-exainination, in opposition to the traditional method of reproof or admonition. These definitions being thus various, the Elcate notes that the sophist, in consideration of a fee, disputes, and teaches others to dispute, about things divine, cosmieal, metaphysical, legal, political, technical, —in fact, about everything,

—not having knowledge of them, becausc universal knowledge is unattainable ; after which he is in a position to define the sophist (7) as a couscious impostor who, in private, by discontinuous discourse, compels his interlocutor to contradict himself, in opposi- tion to the dyuodroyinds, who, in public, by continuous discourse, imposes upon crowds.

It is elear that the final definition is preferred, not because of any intrinsic superiority, but because it has a direct bearing upon the question “Arc sophist, statesman, and philosopher identical or different?” and that the various definitions represent different stages or forms of sophistry as conccived from different points of view. Thus the first and second definitions represent the founders of the sophistry of culture, Protagoras and Prodicus, from the respective points of view of the older Athenians, who disliked the new culture, and the younger Athenians, who admired it; the third and fourth definitions represent imitators to whom the note of itinerancy was not applicable; the fifth definition represents the carlier eristics, contemporaries of Socratcs, whom it was necessary to distinguish from the teachers of forensic oratory; the sixth is framed to meet the anomalous case of Socrates, in whom many saw the typical sophist, though Plato conceives this view to be unfortunate ; and the seventh and final definition, having in view eristical sophistry fully developed, distinguishes it from dnuoroyirh, i.¢., political rhetoric, but at the same time hints that, though gopiorixy and Syuoroyin may be discriminated, they are neverthe- less near akin, the one being the ape of philosophy, the other the ape of statesmanship. In short, Plato traccs the changes which, in less than a century, had taken place in the meaning of the term, partly through changes in the practice of the sophists, partly through changes in their surroundings and in public opinion, so as to show by a familiar instance that general terms which do not describe natural kinds eannot have a stable connotation.

Now it is easy to see that in this careful statement Plato recognizes three periods. The first four definitions represent the period of Protagoras, Prodicus, and their immediate successors, when the object sought was “virtuc,” ‘‘excellence,” ‘ culture,” and the means to it was literature. The fifth and sixth definitions represeut the close of the 5th century, when sophistry handled eristically, and perhaps, though Plato demurs to the inclusion, dialectically, questions of justice, injustice, and the like, dinaverct or forensic rhetoric being its proximate rival. The seventh definition represents the first half of the 4th century, when sophistry was eristical in a wider field, having for its rival, not forensic rhetoric, but the rhetoric of the assembly. Plato’s classi- fication of educational thcories is then substantially the classifica- tion adopted in this article, though, whereas

here, in accordance with well-attested popular usage, all the educational theories mentioned are included under the head of sophistry, Plato allows to rhetoric, forensic and political, an independent position, and hints that there are grounds for denying the title of sophist to the dialectician Socrates. Incidentally we gather two important facts,— (1) that contemporary with the dialectic of Socrates there was an eristic, and (2) that this eristic was mainly applied to ethical ques- tions. Finally, we may be sure that, if Plato was thus careful to distinguish the phases and aspects of sophistical development, he could never have fallen into the modern error of bestowing upon those whom the Greeks called sophists either indiscriminate censure or indiscriminate laudation.

(2) Relations of Sophistry to Education, Literature, and Phalosophy.—If{ then the sophists, from Protagoras to Isocrates, were before everything educators, it becomes necessary to inquire whether their labours marked or pro- moted an advance in educational theory and method. At the beginning of the 5th century 3.c. every young Greek of the better sort already received rudimentary instruction, not only in music and gymnastics, but also in reading and writing. Further, in the colonies, and especially the colonies of the West, philosophy and art had done some- thing for higher education. Thus in Italy the Pytha- gorean school was, in the fullest sense of the term, an educational institution ; and in Sicily the rhetorical teach- ing of Corax and Tisias was presumably educational in the same sense as the teaching of Gorgias. But in central Greece, where, at any rate down to the Persian Wars, politics, domestic and foreign, were all-engrossing, and left the citizen little leisure for self-cultivation, the need of a higher education had hardly made itself felt. The overthrow of the Persian invaders changed all this. Henceforward the best of Greek art, philosophy, and literature gravitated to Athens, and with their concentra- tion and consequent development came a general and

growing demand for teaching. As has been seen, it was just at this period that philosophy and art ceased to be available for educational purposes, and accordingly the literary sophists were popular precisely because they offered advanced teaching which was neither philosophical nor artistic.

Their recognition of the demand and their attempt to satisfy it are no small claims to distinction. That, whereas before the time of Protagoras there was little systematic education in the colonies and less in central Greece, after his time attendance in the lecture- rooms of the sophists was the customary sequel to attend- ance in the elementary schools, is a fact which speaks for itself.

But this is not all. The education provided by the sophists of culture had positive merits. When Protagoras included in his course grammar, style, interpretation of the poets, and oratory, supplementing his own continuous expositions by disputations in which he and his pupils took part, he showed a not inadequate appreciation of the requisites of a literary education; and it may be conjectured that his comprehensive programme, which Prodicus and others extended, had something to do with the develop- ment of that versatility which was the most notable element in the Athenian character.

There is less to be said for the teachers of rhetoric, politics, and eristic, who, in limiting themselves each to a single subject,—the rhetoricians proper or forensic rheto- ricians to one branch of oratory, the politicians or political rhetoricians to another, and the eristics to disputation,— ceased to be educators and became instructors. Neverthe- less, rhetoric and disputation, though at the present day strangely neglected in English schools and universities, are, within their limits, valuable instruments; and, as specialization in teaching does not necessarily imply specialization in learning, many of those who attended the lectures and the classes of a rhetorician or an eristic sought and found other instruction elsewhere. It would seem then that even in its decline sophistry had its educational use. But in any case it may be claimed for its professors that in the course of a century they discovered and turned to account most of the instruments of literary education.

With these considerable merits, normal sophistry had one defect, its indifference to truth. Despairing of philosophy,—that is to say, of physical science,—the sophists were prepared to go all lengths in scepticism. Accordingly the epideictic sophists in exposition, and the argumentative sophists in debate, one and all, studied, not matter but style, not accuracy but effect, not proof but persuasion. In short, in their hostility to science

they refused to handle literature in a scientific spirit. That this defect was serious was dimly apprehended even by those who frequented and admired the lectures of the earlier sophists; that it was fatal was clearly seen by Socrates, who, himself commonly regarded as a sophist, emphatically reprehended, not only the taking of fees, which was after alla mere incident, objectionable because it seemed to preclude independence of thought, but also the fundamental disregard of truth which infected every part and every phase of sophistical teaching. To these contemporary censures the modern critic cannot refuse his assent.

To literature and to oratory the sophists rendered good service. Themselves of necessity stylists, because their professional success largely depended upon skilful and effective exposition, the sophists both of culture and of rhetoric were professedly teachers of the rules of grammar and the principles of written and spoken discourse. Thus, by example as well as by precept, they not only taught their hearers to value literary and oratorical excellence,

but also took the lcad in fashioning the style of their time. Their influence in these respects was weighty and import- ant. Whereas when sophistry began prose composition was hardly practised in central Greece, the sophists were still the leaders in literature and oratory when Plato wrote the Republic, and they had hardly lost their position when Demosthenes delivered the Phzlippics. In fact, it is not too much to say that it was the sophists who provided those great masters with their consummate instrument, and it detracts but little from the merit of the makers if they were themselves unable to draw from it its finer tones. The relation of sophistry to philosophy was throughout one of pronounccd hostility. From the days of Protagoras, when this hostility was triumphant and contemptuous, to the days of Isocrates, when it was jealous and bitter, the sophists were declared and consistent sceptics. But, al- though Protagoras and Gorgias had examincd the teaching of their predecessors so far as to satisfy themselves of its futility and to draw the sceptical inference, their study of the great problem of the day was preliminary to their sophistry rather than a part of it; and, as the overthrow of philosophy was complete and the attractions of

sophistry were all-powerful, the question, ‘“‘What is knowledge?” ccased for a time to claim or to reccive attention, There is then no such thing as a “sophistical theory of know- ledge.” Similarly, the recognition of a ‘sophistical ethic” is, to say the least, misleading. It may have been that the sophists’ preference of seeming to reality, of success to truth, had a mischievous effect upon the morality of the time; but it is clear that they had no common theory of ethics, and there is no warrant for the assumption that a sophist, as such, specially interested himself in ethical questions. When Protagoras asserted “civic excellence” or “virtue” to be the end of education, he neither expressed nor implied a theory of morality. Prodicus in his platitudes reflected the customary morality of the time. Gorgias said plainly that he did not teach “virtue.” Jf Hippias, Polus, and Thrasymachus defied conventional morality, they did so independently of one another, and in this, as in other matters, they were disputants maintaining paradoxical theses, rather than thinkers announcing heretical convictions. The morality of Isocrates bore a certain resemblance to that of Socrates. In short, the attitude of the sophists towards inquiry in general precluded them, collectively and individually, from attachment to any particular theory. Yet among the so-called sophists there were two who had philosophical leanings, as appears in their willingness to be called by the title of philosopher. First, Socrates, whilst he conceived that the physicists had mistaken the field of inquiry, absolute truth being unattainable, maintained, as has been seen, that one opinion was better than another, and that consistency of opinion, resulting in consistency of action, was the end which the human intellect properly proposes to itself. Hence, though an agnostic, he was not unwilling to be called a philosopher, in so far as he pursued such truth as was attainable by man. Secondly, when sophistry had begun to fall into contempt, the political rhetorician Isocrates claimed for himself the time- honoured designation of philosopher, “herein,” says Plato, “resembling some tinker, bald-pated and short of stature, who, having made money, knocks off his chains, goes to

the bath, buys a new suit, and then takes advantage of.

the poverty and desolation of his master’s daughter to urge upon her his odious addresses” (Rep., vi. 495 E). It will be seen, however, that neither Socrates nor Isocrates was philosopher in any strict sense of the word, the

speculative aims of physicists and metaphysicians being foreign to the practical theories both of the one and of the other.

SOP hist

As for the classification of sophistical methods, so for their criticism, the testimony of Plato is all-important. It may be conjectured that, when he emerged from the purely Socratic phase of his earlier years, Plato gave himself to the study of contemporary methods of cducation and to the elaboration of an educational system of his own, and that it was in this way that he came to the inetaphysical speculations of his maturity. It may be imagined further that, when he established himself at the Academy, his first care was to draw np a scheme of education, including arithmetic, geometry (plane and solid), astronomy, harmonics, and dialectic, and that it was not until he had arranged for the carrying out of this programme that he devoted himself to the special functions of professor of philosophy. However this may be, we find amongst his writings, —intermediate, as it would secm, between the Socratic conversations of his first period of literary activity and the meta- physical disquisitions of a later time,—a serics of dialogues which, however varied their ostensible subjects, agrec in having a direct bearing upon education. Thus the Protagoras brings the educa- tional theory of Protagoras and the sophists of culture face to face with the educational theory of Socrates, so as to expose the limita- tions of both; the Gorgias deals with the moral aspect of the teach- ings of the forensic rhctorician Gorgias and the political rhetorician Isocrates, and the intellectual aspect of thcir respective theories of education is handled in the Phedrus; the Afeno on the one hand exhibits the strength and the weakuess of the teaching of Socrates, and on the other brings into view the makeshift method of those who, despising systematic teaching, regarded the practical poli- tician as the true educator; the Huthydemus has for its subject the eristical method; finally, having in these dialogues characterized the current theories of education, Plato procecds in the Republic to develop an original scheme. Plato’s criticisms of the sophists are then, in the opinion of the present writer, no mere obiter dicta, introduced for purposes of literary adornment or dramatic effect, but rather the expressions of profound and reasoned convic- tion, and, as such, entitled at any rate to respect. For the details of Plato’s critique, the reader should go, not to the summaries of

commentators, but to the dialogues themselves, In this place it is sufficient to say that, while Plato accounts no education satis- factory which has not knowledge for its basis, he emphatically prefers the scepticism of Socrates, which, despairing of knowledge, seeks right opinion, to the scepticism of the sophists, which, de- spairing of knowledge, abandons the attempt to better cxisting beliefs.

(3) The Theory of Grote.—The post-Platonic historians and critics, who, while they knew the earlier sophistry only through tradition, were eye-witnesses of the sophistry of the decadence, were more alive to the faults than to the virtues of the movement. Overlooking the differences which separated the humanists from the eristics, and both of these from the rhetoricians, and taking no account of Socrates, whom thcy regarded as a philosopher, they forgot the services which Protagoras and Prodicus, Gorgias and Isocrates, had rendered to education and to literature, and included the whole profession in an indiscriminate and contemptuous censure. This prejudice, establishing itself in familiar spcech, has descended from antiquity to modern times, colouring, when it does not distort, the narratives of biographers and the criticisms of commentators. ‘The sophists,” says Grote, “are spoken of as a new class of men, or sometimes in language which implies a new doctrinal sect or school, as if they then sprang up in Grecce for the first time—ostentatious impostors, flattering and duping therich youth fortheir own personal gain, under- mining the morality of Athens, public and private, and encouraging their pupils to the unscrupulous prosecution of ambition and cupidity. They are even affirmed to have succeeded in corrupting the general morality, so that Athens had become miserably degenerated and vicious in the latter years of the Peloponnesian War, as compared with what she was in the time of Miltiades and Aristeides ;” and, although amongst the pre-Grotian scholars there were some who saw as clearly as Grote himself that “the sophists are a much-calumniated race” (G. H. Lewes), it is certain that historians of philosophy, and editors of Plato, especially the ‘acumen plumbeum Stallbaumii,” had given ample occasion for the energetic protest contained in the famous sixty-seventh chapter of Grote’s History of Greece. Amongst the many merits of that admirable

peor Hh is is

scholar, it is one of the greatest that he has laid “the fiend called die Sophistck,” that is to say, the theory that sophistry was an organized conspiracy against law and morals. Nevertheless, in this matter he is always an advocate; and it may be. thought that, while he success- fully disposes of the current slander, his description of his clients needs correction in some important particulars. Hence the following paragraphs, while they will resume and affirm his principal results, will qualify and impugn some of his positions.

In so far as he is critical, Grote leaves little to be desired. That the persons styled sophists ‘‘ were not a sect or school, with common doctrines or method,” is clear. Common doctrine, that is to say, common doctrine of a positive sort, they could not have, because, being sceptics, they had nothing which could be called positive doctrine; while there was a period when even their scepticism was in no wise distinctive, because they shared it with all or nearly all their contemporaries. Neither were they united by a common educational method, the end and the instru- ments of education being diversely conceived by Prota- goras, Gorgias, and Isocrates, to say nothing of the wider differences which separate these three from the eristics, and all the four normal types from the abnormal type represented by Socrates.

Again, it is certain that the theoretical and practical morality of the sopliists, regarded as a class, was “neither above nor below the standard of the age.” The taking of fees, the pride of professional success, and the teaching of rhetoric are no proofs either of conscious charlatanism or of ingrained depravity. Indeed, we have evidence of sound, if conventional, principle in Prodicus’s apo- logue of the “Choice of Heracles,” and of honourable, though eccentric, practice in the story of Protagoras’s treatment of defaulting pupils. But, above all, it is antecedently certain that defection from the ordinary standard of morality would have precluded the success which the sophists unquestionably sought and won. In fact, public opinion made the morality of the sophists, rather than the sophists the morality of public opinion. Hence, even if we demur to the judgment of Grote that “Athens at the close of the Peloponnesian War was not more corrupt than Athens in the days of Miltiades and Aristeides,” we shall not “consider the sophists as the cor- ruptors of Athenian morality,” but rather with Plato lay

the blame upon society itself, which, “in popular meet- ings, law-courts, theatres, armies, and other great gather- ings, with uproarious censure and clamorous applause” (Zeep., vi. 492), educates young and old, and fashions them according to its pleasure.

Nor can we regard “Plato and his followers as the authorized teachers of the Greek nation and the sophists as the dissenters.” On the contrary, the sophists were in quiet possession of the field when Plato, returning to Athens, opened the rival school of the Academy; and, while their teaching in all respects accommodated itself to current opinion, his, in many matters, ran directly counter to it.

But if thus far Grote’s protest against prevalent assumptions carries an immediate and unhesitating con- viction, it may be doubted whether his positive statement can be accounted final. ‘‘The appearance of the sophists,” he says, ‘was no new fact….. The paid teachers— whom modern writers set down as the sophists, and denounce as the modern pestilence of their age—were not distinguished in any marked or generic way from their predecessors.” Now it is true that before 447 B.c., besides the teachers of writing, gymnastic, and music, to whom the young Greek resorted for elementary instruc- tion, there were artists and artisans who not only practised

their crafts but also communicated them to apprentices and pupils, and that accordingly the Platonic Protagoras recognizes in the gymnast Iccus, the physician Herodicus, and the musicians Agathocles and Pythoclides fore- runners of the sophists. But the forerunners of the sophists are not to be confounded with the sophists them- selves, and the difference between them is not far to seek. Though some of those who resorted to the teachers of rudiments and the artists derived from them such sub- stitute for “higher education” as was before 447 generally obtainable, it was only incidentally that the teachers of rudiments and the artists communicated anything which could be called by that name. Contrariwise, the sophists were always and essentially professors of the higher education ; and, although in process of time specialization assimilated sophistry to the arts, at the outset at any rate, its declared aim—the cultivation of the civic character— sufficiently

distinguished sophistical education both from rudimentary instruction and from artistic training. It is true too that in some of the colonies philosophy had busied itself with higher education; but here again the forerunners of the sophists are easily distinguished from the sophists, since the sophists condemned, not only the scientific speculations of their predecessors, but also their philosophical aims, and offered to the Greek world a new employment for leisure, a new intellectual ambition.

Nor is it altogether correct to say that "the persons styled sophists had no principles common to them all and distinguishing them from others." Various as were the phases through which sophistry passed between the middle of the 5th century and the middle of the 4th, the sophists— Socrates himself being no exception—had in their declared antagonism to philosophy a common characteristic ; and, if in the interval, philosophical speculation being tempor- arily suspended, scepticism ceased for the time to be peculiar, at the outset, when Protagoras and Gorgias broke with the physicists, and in the sequel, when Plato raised the cry of "'back to Parmenides," this common characteristic was distinctive.

Further, it may be doubted whether Grote is sufficiently careful to distinguish between the charges brought against the sophists personally and the criticism of their educa- tional methods. When the sophists are represented as conscious impostors who " poisoned and demoralized by corrupt teaching the Athenian moral character," he has, as has been seen, an easy and complete reply. But the question still remains—Was the education provided by Protagoras, by Gorgias, by Isocrates, by the eristics, and by Socrates good, bad, or indifferent? And, though the modern critic will not be prepared with Plato to deny the name of education to all teaching which is not based upon an ontology, it may nevertheless be thought that normal sophistry—as opposed to the sophistry of Socrates—was in various degrees unsatisfactory, in so far as it tacitly or confessedly ignored the "material" element of exposition or reasoning.

And if Grote overlooks important agreements he seems also to understate important differences. Regarding Pro- tagoras, Gorgias, and Isocrates as types of one and the same sophistry (pp. 487, 493, 495, 499, 544, 2d edition), and neglecting as slander or exaggeration all the evidence in

regard to the sophistry of eristic (p. 540), he conceives that the sophists undertook “ to educate young men so as to make them better qualified for statesmen or ministers,” and that ‘‘that which stood most prominent in the teach- ing of Gorgias and the other sophists was, that they cultivated and improved the powers of public speaking in their pupils.” Excellent asa statement of the aim and method of Isocrates, and tolerable as a statement of those of Gorgias, these phrases are inexact if applied to

Protagoras, who, making “civic virtue” his aim, regarded statesmanship and administration as parts of “civic virtue,” and consequently assigned to oratory no more than a subordinate place in his programme, while to the eristics—whose existence is attested, not only by Plato, but also by Isocrates and Aristotle—and to Socrates— whom Grote himself accounts a sophist—the description is plainly and palpably inappropriate.

Grote’s note about the eristical sophists is perhaps the least satisfactory part of his exposition. That ‘there were in Athens persons who abused the dialectical exereise for frivolous puzzles ” he admits; but ‘‘to treat Euthydemus and Dionysodorus as samples of ‘The Sophists’ is,” he continues, “altogether un- warrantable.” It would seem then that, while he regards rhetoric as the function of normal sophistry, taking indifferently as his types Protagoras, Gorgias, and Isocrates, he accounts Euthydemus and Dionysodorus (together with Socrates) as sophists, but as sophists of an abnormal sort, who may therefore be neglected. Now this view is inconsistent with the evidence of Plato, who, in the Sophist, in his final and operative definition, gives prominence to the eristical element, and plainly accounts it the main character- istic, not indeed of the sophistry of the 5th century, but of the sophistry of the 4th. It must be presumed then that, in virtue of his general suspicions of the Platonie testimony, Grote in this matter leaves the Sophist out of account. Thcro is, however, another theory of the significance of Plato’s allusions to eristical sophistry, that of Prof. H. Sidgwick, whose brilliant defence of Grote is an indispensable supplement to the original document. Giving a hearty general assent to Grote’s theory, Sidgwick never- theless introduces qualifications similar to some of those which are suggested in this article. In particular he allows that ‘there was at

any rate enough of charlatanism in Protagoras and Hippias to prevent any ardour for their historical reputation," that the sophists generally ''had in their lifetime more success than they deserved," that it was ''antagonism to their teaching which developed the genius of Socrates," and, above all, that, 'in his anxiety to do justice to the Sophist, Grote laid more stress than is at all necessary on the partisanship of Plato." Now this last admission precludes Sidgwick from neglecting, as Grote had done, the evidence of the Huthydemus. Pointing out that the sophists of that dialogue "profess eis dperijs émiméAciay mpotpévar by means of dialogue," that "they challenge the intcrlocutor éméyeuw Adyov," that '' their examples are drawn from conmon objects and vulgar trades," that ''they maintain positions that we know to have been held by Megarians and Cynics," he infers that '' what we have here presented to us as 'sophistic' is neither more nor less than a caricature of the Megarian logic ;" and further, on the ground that ''the whole conception of Socrates and his effect on his eontemporaries, as all authorities combine to represent it, requires us to assume that his manner of discourse was quite novel, that no one before had systematically attempted to show men their ignorance of what they believed themselves to know," he is "disposed to think that the art of disputation which is ascribed to sophists in the Huthydemvus and the Sophistes (and exhaustively analysed by Aristotle in the wep) Sopiortedv "EAéyxwv) originated eutirely with Socrates, and that he is altogether responsible for the form at least of this second species of sophistic." 'To this theory the present writer is unable to subscribe. 'That Plato was not care- ful to distinguish the Megarians and the Cynics from the eristical sophists, and that the disputants of the 4th century affected some of the mannerisms of the greatest disputant of the 5th century, he willingly concedes. But he cannot allow either that the Megarians and the Cynics were the only eristics, or that eristical sophistry began with Socrates. Plainly this is not the place fora full exa- mination of the question ; yet it may be remarked—(1) that the previous history of the sophists of the Luthydemus, who had been professors of tactics (Xenophon, Mfem., iii. 1, 1), swordsmanship, and forensic argumentation, implies that they came to eristic, not from the sophistry of Socrates, but from that of the later human- ists, polymaths of the type of Hippias; (2) that the fifth and sixth definitions of the Sophist, in which 'that branch of eristic which brings pecuniary gain to the practitioner" is opposed to the "'patience-trying, purgative elenchus" of Socrates, indicate that contemporary with Socrates

there were eristics whose aims were not his ; (3) that, whereas the sophist of the final definition ‘disputes, and teaches others to dispute, about things divine, cosmical, meta- physical, legal, political, technical, in fact, about all things,” we have no ground for supposing that the Megarians and the Cynics used their eristic for any purpose. except the defence of their logical heresies.

Nor is it possible to accept the statements that “the splendid genius, the lasting influence, and the reiterated polemics of Plato have stamped the name sophist upon the men against whom he wrote as if it were their

SOPs tsi

recognized, legitimate, and peculiar designation,” and that “Plato not only stole the name out of general circulation, in order to fasten it specially upon his opponents the paid teachers, but also connected with it express discreditable attributes which formed no part of its primitive and recognized meaning and were altogether distinct from, though grafted upon, the vague sentiment of dishke associated with it.” That is to say, Grote supposes that for at least eight and forty years, from 447 to 399, the paid professors had no professional title ; that, this period having elapsed, a youthful opponent succeeded in fastening an uncomplimentary title, not only upon the contemporary teachers, but also, retrospectively, upon their predecessors; and that, artfully enhancing the indignity of the title affixed, he thus obscured, perverted, and effaced the records and the memories of the past. Manifestly all three propositions are antecedently im- probable. But more than this: whereas in the nomen- clature of Plato’s contemporaries Protagoras, Gorgias, Socrates, Dionysodorus, and Isocrates were all of them sophists, Plato himself in his careful investigation sum- marized above limits the meaning of the term so that it shall include the humanists and the eristics only. Now, if his use of the term was stricter than the customary use, he can hardly be held answerable for the latter.

Nor is Grote altogether just in his account of Plato’s attitude towards the several sophists, or altogether judicious in his appreciation of Plato’s testimony. How- ever coutemptuous in his portraiture of Hippias and Dionysodorus, however severe in his polemic against Isocrates, Plato regards Protagoras with admiration and Gorgias with respect. While he

emphasizes in the later sophists the consequences of the fundamental error of sophistry,—its indifference to truth,—he does honour to the genius and the originality of the leaders of the movement. Indeed, the author of this article finds in the writings of Plato a grave and discriminating study of the several forms of sophistry, but no trace whatsoever of that blind hostility which should warrant us in neglecting his clear and precise evidence.

In a word, the present writer agrees with Grote that the sophists were not a sect or school with common doctrine or method; that their theoretical and practical morality was neither above nor below that of their age, being, in fact, determined by it; and that Plato and his followers are not to be regarded as the authorized teachers of the Greek nation, nor the sophists as the dissenters, but vice versa. At the same time, in opposition to Grote, he maintains that the appearance of the sophists marked a new departure, in so far as they were the first professors of “higher education” as such; that they agreed in the rejection of ‘‘philosophy ”; that the education which they severally gave was open to criticism, inasmuch as, with the exception of Socrates, they attached too much import- ance to the form, too little to the matter, of their discourses and arguments; that humanism, rhetoric, politic, and disputation were characteristic, not of all sophists collectively, but of sections of the profession; that Plato was not the first to give a special meaning to the term “sophist” and to affix it upon the professors of education ; and, finally, that Plato’s evidence is in all essentials trustworthy.

Bibliography.—On the significance of the sophistical move- ment, see E. Zeller, Philosophie d. Griechen, 4th ed., Leipsic, 1876, i, 932-1041 (Presocratie Philosophy, London, 1881, ii. 394-516); G. Grote, History of Greece, London, 1851, &c., ch. Ixvii.; E. M. Cope, “On the Sophists,” and ‘‘ On the Sophistical Rhetoric,” in Jour. Class. and Sacr. Philol., Cambridge, ii. 1855, and iit. 1857, an erudite but inconclusive reply to Grote; H. Sidgwick, ‘‘ The Sophists,” in Jour. of Philol., Cambridge, iv. 1872, and v. 1874, a brilliant defence of Grote; A. W. Benn, The Greek Philosophers, London, 1882, i. 53-107. Compare Eruics, vol. viii. pp. 576-577.

SOP—SOP

For lists of treatises upon the life and teaching of particular sophists, see Ueberweg, Grundriss d. Gesch. d. Philos., i. §§ 27-32 (History of

Philosophy, London, 1880). On the later use of the term **sophist," see RHETORIC. (H. JA.)

SOPHOCLES, the most perfect, and next to fEschylus the greatest, of Greek tragic poets, was born 495 zc, and died 406 B.c. As in the case of other Athenian cele- brities, various particulars of his life are handed down, few of which, however, deserve much attention, even the reports attributed to contemporaries being mostly trivial if not puerile. He is known to have reached old age, and his career as a dramatist is believed to have extended over more than sixty years (468-406). His father's name was Sophillus, of the deme Colonus Hippius, the aristocratic quarter, where the Government of the Four Hundred was afterwards constituted. The family burial-place is said by the anonymous biographer to have been ten stadia from the city, on the Decelean Way. 'These facts run counter to the tradition, which seems to have been already discredited by Alexandrian critics, that Sophillus was an artisan, The date assigned for the poet's birth is in accordance with the tale that young Sophocles, then a pupil of the musician Lamprus, was chosen to lead the chorus of boys (7Oéwv Acxrot, Hd. Tyr., 18) in the celebration of the victory of Salamis (480 3.c.). The time of his death is fixed by the allusions to it in the Frogs of Aristoplianes and in the Muses, a lost play of Phrynichus, the comic poet, which were both produced in 405 B.¢., shortly before the capture of the city. And the legend which implies that Lysander allowed him funeral honours is one of those which, like the story of Alexander and Pindar's house at Thebes, we can at least wish to be founded on fact, though we should probably substitute Agis for Lysander. Apart from tragic victories, the event of Sophocles's life most fully authenticated is his appointment at the age of fifty-five as one of the generals who served with Pericles in the Samian War (440-439 B.C.). Conjecture has been rife as to the possibility of his here improving acquaintance with Herodotus, whom he probably met some years earlier at Athens (see HeEroporvus). But the distich quoted by Plutarch—

'Qidhy Hpoddry redtev Soponags et éwy dy Nlévr' ém) wevthxovta—

is a slight ground on which to reject the stronger tradition according to which Herodotus was ere this established at Thurii; and the coincidences in their writings may be accounted for by their having drawn from a common

source, The fact of Sophocles’s generalship is the less sur- prising if taken in connexion with the interesting remark of his biographer (whose Life, though absent from the earliest MS. through some mischance, bears marks of an Alexandrian origin) that he took his full share of civic duties, and even served on foreign embassies :—KaAds 7° eraidev6n Kal éerpddn ev eéropla, Kab év mwoAtreia Kal év mpeaBetars eEnrdtero. The large acquaintanceship which this implies, not only in Athens, but in Ionic cities generally, is a point of main importance in considering the opportunities of information at his command. And, if we credit tlis assertion, we are the more at liberty to doubt the other statement, though it is not incredible, that his

- appointment as general was due to the political wisdom of

the Antigone.

The testimony borne by Aristophanes to the amiability of the poet’s temper (6 & edxodos ev evOdS’, ebkodos & éxet) agrees with the record of his biographer that he was universally beloved. And the anecdote recalled by Cephalus in Plato’s Republic, that Sophocles welcomed the release from the passions which is brought by age, accords with the spirit of his famous Ode to Love in the Antéi- gone. The Sophocles who, according to Aristotle (Rhet.,

iii, 18), said of the Government of the Four Hundred that it was the better of two bad alternatives (probably the same who was one of the probuli) may or may not have been the poet. Other gossiping stories are hardly worth repeating,—as that Pericles rebuked his love of pleasure and thought him a bad general, though a good poet; that he humorously boasted of his own “ generalship ” in affairs of love; or that he said of 4ischylus that he was often right without knowing it, and that Euripides represented men as they are, not as they ought to be. Such trifles rather reflect contemporary or subsequent impressions of a superficial kind than tell us anything about the man or the dramatist. The gibe of Aristophanes (Pax, 695 sq.), that Sophocles in his old age was become a very Simonides in his love for gain, may turn on some perversion of fact,! without being altogether fair to either

poet. It is certainly irreconcilable with the remark (Vit. Anon.) that in spite of pressing invitations he refused to leave Athens for kings' courts. And the story of his indictment by his son Iophon for incompetence to manage his affairs,—to which Cicero has given some weight by quoting it in the De Senectute,—appears to be really trace- able to Satyrus (flor. c. 200 B.c.), the same author who gave publicity to the most ridiculous of the various absurd accounts of the poet's death,—that his breath failed him for want of a pause in reading some passage of the Antigone. Satyrus is at least the sole authority for the defence of the aged poet, who, after reciting passages from the Gd. Col., is supposed to have said to his accusers, "Jf I am Sophocles I am no dotard, and if I dote I am not Sophocles." On the other hand, we need not the testimony of biographers to assure us that he was devoted to Athens and renowned for piety. He is said to have been priest of the hero Alcon (or Halon) in his old age, and himself to have received divine honours after death.

That the duty of managing the actors as well as of training the chorus belonged to the author is well known. But did Aischylus act in his own plays? This certainly is implied in the tradition that Sophocles, because of the weakness of his voice, was the first poet who desisted from doing so. In his Thamyras, however, he is said to have performed on the lyre to admiration, and in his Nausicaa (perhaps as coryphzus) to have played gracefully the game of ball. Various minor improvements in decora- tion and stage carpentry are attributed to him,—whether truly or not who can tell? It is more interesting, if true, that he wrote his plays having certain actors in his eye; that he formed an association (G/acov) for the pro- motion of liberal culture; and that he was the first to introduce three actors on the stage.2 It is asserted on the authority of Aristoxenus that Sophocles was also the first to employ Phrygian melodies. And it is easy to believe that Aj., 693 sqg., Zrach., 205 sq., were sung to Phrygian music, though there are strains in Aschylus (e.g., Choeph., 152 sg., 423 sq.), which it is hard to distinguish essentially from these. Ancient critics had also noted his familiarity with Homer, especially with the Odyssey, his power of selection and of extracting an exquisite grace from all he touched (whence he was named the " Attic Bee"), his mingled felicity and boldness, and, above all, his subtle delineation of human nature and feeling. They observed that the balanced proportions and fine articula- tion of his work are such that in a

single half line or phrase he often conveys the impression of an entire character.

1 Tf any of Sophocles's elegies or odes were ' pot-boilers," this might be duc rather to his easy temper (ebxoAfa) in yielding to a prevalent habit of the time than to any meanness (Bavavala or yAtoxpérys).

? If this was so, it must have been previous to the appearance of the Orestean trilogy.

Nor is this verdict of antiquity likely to be reversed by modern criticism. The object of the present article, however, is not to praise Sophocles, but rather to describe him. And it is time to turn from Alexandrian or Byzantine fancies and judgments to the poet's extant works.

His minor poems, elegies, pans, &c., have all perished ; and of his hundred and odd dramas only seven remain. These all belong to the period of his maturity (he had no decline) ; and not only the titles (as Lessing said) but some scanty fragments of more than ninety others have been preserved. Several of these were, of course, satyric dramas. And this recalls a point of some importance, which has been urged on the authority of Suidas, who says that "Sophocles began the practice of pitting play against play, instead of the tetralogy." If it were meant that Sophocles did not exhibit tetralogies, this statement would have simply to be rejected. For the word of Suidas (950 A.D.) has no weight against quotations from the lists of tragic victories (dtdacKaAiar) which there is no other reason for discrediting. The remark might be due to the impression made on some critics by the greater complexity and completeness of a play of Sophocles—say the Hdipus Tyrannus or Antigone—as compared, say, with the Persx or the Septem contra Thebas. It is distinctly asserted, for example, on the authority of the ddackadia, that the Bacche of Euripides, certainly as late as any play of Sopho- cles, was one of a trilogy or tetralogy. And if the custom was thus maintained for so long it was clearly impossible for any single competitor to break through it. But it seems probable that the trilogy had ceased to be the continuous development of one legend or cycle of legends,—'" pre- senting Thebes or Pelops' line,"—if, indeed, it ever was so exclusively ;

and if, as Scholl and others have suggested, a Sophoclean tetralogy was still linked together by some subtle bond of tragic thought or feeling, this would not affect the criticism of each play considered as an artistic whole. At the same time it appears that the satyric drama lost its grosser features and became more or less assimilated to the milder form of tragedy. And _ these changes, or something like them, may have given rise to the statement in Suidas.!

If the diction of Sophocles sometimes reminds his readers of the Odyssey, the subjects of his plays were more frequently chosen from those later epics which subse- quently came to be embodied in the epic cycle,—such as the dthiopis, the Little Iliad, the Iliupersis, the Cypria, the Wosti, the Zelegonia (all revolving round the tale of Troy), the Zhebaica, the Oiyadlas dAwors, and others, in- cluding probably, though there isnomention of such athing, some early version of the Argonautic story. In one or other of these heroic poems the legends of all the great cities of Hellas were by this time embodied; and, though there must also have been a cloud of oral tradition floating over many a sacred spot, the dramatic poet does not seem, unless in the Gdipus Coloneus, to have directly drawn from this. He was content to quarry from the epic rhapsodies the materials for his more concentrated art, much as Shakespeare made use of Hollingshed or Plutarch, or as the subjects of Tennyson's Jdylls of the King have been taken from Sir Thomas Malory. As Sophocles has been accused of narrowing the range of tragic sympathy from Hellas to Athens, it deserves mention here that, of some hundred subjects of plays attributed to him, fifteen only are connected with Attica, while exactly the same

1 The advantages and defects of the trilogy as a dramatic form are admirably stated by G. Giinther, Grundziige der Trugischen Kunst, Berlin, 1885, The small number of victories attributed to Sophocles, in proportion to the number of his plays, is only intelligible on the supposition that these were presented in groups.

number belong to the tale of Argos, twelve are Argonautic, and thirty Trojan. Even Corinthian heroes (Bellerophon, Polyidus) are not left out. It seems probable on the whole that, within the limits allowed by convention,

Sophocles was guided simply by his instinctive perception of the tragic capabilities of a particular fable. This was evidently Lessing's view, and may be confirmed by quoting his striking remarks upon the subject of one of the lost tragedies, the Thyestes at Sticyon :—

"Nach der abschculichen Mahlzeit, die ihm scin Bruder bereitete, flog er nach Sicyon. Und hier war es wo er, auf Befragung des Orakels, wie cr sich an seinem Bruder richen sollte, die Antwort bekam, er sollte seine eigne Tochter cntehren. Er iiberfiel dies auch unbekannter Weise; und aus diesem Beischlafe ward Agisth, der den Atreus hernach umbrachte, erzeugt. Die Verzweiflung einer geschindeten Prinzessin! Von einem Unbekannten! In welchem sie endlich ihren Vater erkennt! Eine von ihrem Vater entehrte Tochter! Und aus Rache entehrt! Geschindet, einen Morder zu gebiren! Welche Situationen ! welche Scenen !"

To say that subsidiary or collateral motives were never present to Sophocles in the selection of a subject would, however, be beyond the mark. His first drama, the Triptolemus, must have been full of local colouring ; the Ajax appealed powerfully to the national pride; and in the Wdipus Coloneus some faint echoes even of oligarch- ical partisanship may be possibly discerned. But, even where they existed, such motives were collateral and subsidiary ; they were never primary. All else was sub- ordinated to the dramatic, or, in other words, the purely human, interest of the fable. This central interest is even more dominant and pervading in Sophocles than the otherwise supreme influence of religious and ethical ideas. The idea of destiny, for example, was of course inseparable from Greek tragedy. Its prevalence was one of the conditions which presided over the art from its birth, and, unlike A'schylus, who wrestles with gods, our poet simply accepts it, both as a datum of tradition and a fact of life. But in the free handling of Sophocles even fate and providence are adminicular to tragic art. They are instruments through which sympathetic emotion is awakened, deepened, intensified. And, while the vision of the eternal and unwritten laws was holier yet, for it was not the creation of any former age, but rose and culminated with the Sophoclean drama, still to the poet and his Periclean audience this was no abstract notion, but was inseparable from their impassioned contemplation of the life of man—so great and yet so helpless, aiming so high and falling down so far, a plaything of the gods and

yet essentially divine. This lofty vision subdued with the serenity of awe the terror and pity of the scene, but from neither could it take a single tremor or a single tear. Emotion was the element in which Greek tragedy lived and moved, albeit an emotion that was curbed to a serene stillness through its very depth and intensity.

The final estimate of Sophoclean tragedy must largely depend upon the mode in which his treatment of destiny is conceived. That AXschylus had risen on the wings of faith to a height of prophetic vision, from whence he saw the triumph of equity and the defeat of wrong as an eternal process moving on toward one divine event,—that he realized sin, retribution, responsibility, as no other ancient did,—may be gladly conceded. But it has been argued ? that because Sophocles is saddened by glancing down again at actual life,—because in the fatalism of the old fables he finds the reflexion of a truth,—he in so far takes a step backward as a tragic artist. Now is this altogether just? His value for what is highest in man is none the less because he strips it of earthly rewards, nor is his reverence for eternal law less deep because he knows that its workings are sometimes pitiless. Nor, once more,

2 Giinther, op. cit.

does he disbelieve in providence, because experience has shown him that the end towards which the supreme powers lead forth mankind is still unseen. We miss some- thing of the exultant energy of the Marathonian man, but under the grave and gentle guidance of his successor we lose nothing of the conviction that, “because right is right, to follow right were wisdom in the scorn of conse- quence.” Not only the utter devotion of Antigone, but the lacerated innocence of Cidipus and Deianira, the tempted truth of Neoptolemus, the essential nobility of Ajax, leave an impress on the heart which is ineffaceable, and must elevate and purify while it remains. In one respect, however, it must be admitted that Sophocles is not before his age. There is an element of unrelieved vindictiveness, not merely inherent in the fables, but inseparable from the poet’s handling of some themes, which is only too consistent with the temper of the “tyrant city.” /lschylus

represents this with equal dramatic vividness, but he associates it, not with heroism, but with crime.

Sophocles is often praised for skilful construction. But the secret of his skill depends in large measure on the profound way in which the central situation in each of his fables has been conceived and felt. Concentration is the distinguishing note of tragedy, and it is by greater concentration that Sophocles is distinguished from other tragic poets. In the Septem contra Thebas or the Prometheus there is still somewhat of epic enlargement and breadth; in the Hecuba and other dramas of Euripides separate scenes have an idyllic beauty and tenderness which affect us more than the progress of the action as a whole, a defect which the poet sometimes tries to compensate by some novel denouement or catastrophe. But in following a Sophoclean tragedy we are carried steadily and swiftly onward, looking neither to the right nor to the left; the more elaborately any scene or single speech is wrought the more does it contribute to enhance the main emotion, and if there is a deliberate pause it is felt either as a welcome breathing space or as the calm of brooding expectancy.

The result of this method is the union, in the highest degree, of simplicity with complexity, of largeness of design with absolute finish, of grandeur with harmony. Superfluities are thrown off without an effort through the burning of the fire within. Crude elements are fused and made transparent. What look like ornaments are found to be inseparable from the organic whole. Each of the plays is admirable in structure, not because it is cleverly put together, but because it is so completely alive.

The spectator of a Sophoclean tragedy was invited to witness the supreme crisis of an individual destiny, and was possessed at the outset with the circumstances of the decisive moment. Except in the Vrachiniz, where the retrospective soliloquy of Deianira is intended to emphasize her lonely position, this exposition is effected through a brief dialogue, in which the protagonist may or may not take part. In the Wdipus Tyrannus the king’s entrance and his colloquy with the aged priest introduce the audicnce at once to the action and to the chief person. In the Ajax and Philoctetes the entrance or discovery of the hero is made more impressive by being delayed. Immediately after the prologos the chorus enter, number- ing

fifteen, either chanting in procession as in the Antigone and Gd. Tyr., or dispersedly as in the Gd. Col. and Philoctetes, or, thirdly, as in the Electra, where, after entering silently during the monody of the heroine, and taking up their position in the orchestra, they address her one by one. With a remarkable exception, to be noted presently, the chorus having once entered remain to the end. They always stand in some carefully adjusted

relation to the principal figure. The elders of Thebes, whose age and coldness throw into relief the fervour and the desolation of Antigone, are the very men to realize the calamity of CEdipus, and, while horror-stricken, to lament his fall. The rude Salaminian mariners are loyal to Ajax, but cannot enter into his grief. The Trachinian maidens would gladly support Deianira, who has won their hearts, but they are too young and inexperienced for the task. The noble Argive women can sympathize with the sorrows of Electra, but no sympathy can soothe her distress.

The parodos of the chorus is followed by the first scene or epeisodion, with which the action may be said to begin. For in the course of this the spectator’s interest is strongly roused by some new circumstance involving an unforeseen complication,—the awakening of Ajax (Aj.), the burial of Polynices (Ant.), the dream of Clytzmnestra (Z/.), the dark utterance of Tiresias (d. Tyr.), the arrival of Lichas with Tole (Z'rach.), the report of Ismene announcing Creon’s coming (Gd. Col.), the sudden entreaty of Philoctetes crossed by the entrance of the pretended mariner (Phil.). The action from this point onwards is like a steadily flow- ing stream into which a swift and turbulent tributary has suddenly fallen, and the interest advances with rapid and continuous climax until the culmination is reached and the catastrophe is certain. The manner in which this is done, through the interweaving of the pyoes and ortxouvOia, of the dialogue with the ordow.a of the chorus, and the xoupot and kouparixd (where there is interchange between the chorus and the persons), is very different in different dramas, one of the principal charms of Sophocles being his power of ingenious variation in the employment of his

resources. Not less admirable is the strength with which he sustains the interest after the peripeteia,! whether, as in the Antigone, by heaping sorrow upon sorrow, or, as in the first dipus, by passing from horror to tenderness and unlocking the fountain of tears. The extreme point of boldness in arrangement is reached in the Ajax, where the chorus and Tecmessa, having been warned of the impending danger, depart severally in quest of the vanished hero, and thus leave not only the stage but the orchestra vacant for the soliloquy that precedes his suicide.

No such general description as has been here at- tempted can give even a remote impression of the march of Sophoclean tragedy,—by what subtle yet firm and strongly marked gradations the plot is unfolded ; how stroke after stroke contributes to the harmonious totality of feeling; what vivid interplay, on the stage, in the orchestra, and between both, builds up the majestic, ever- moving spectacle. Examine, for example, the opening scene or mpoXoyos of the Wdipus Tyrannus. Its function is merely to propound the situation; yet it is in itself a miniature drama. First there is the silent spectacle of the eager throng of suppliants at the palace gate,—young children, youths, and aged priests. To them the king appears, with royal condescension and true public zeal. The priest expresses their heartfelt loyalty, describes the distress of Thebes, and, extolling CEdipus's past services, implores him to exercise his consummate wisdom for the relief of his people. The king's reply unveils yet further his incessant watchfulness and anxious care for his subjects. And he discloses a new object to their expect- ancy and hope. Creon, a royal person, had been sent to Delphi, and should ere then have returned with the response of Apollo. At this all hearts are trembling in suspense, when a figure is seen approaching. He is wreathed with Apollo's laurel ; he looks cheerfully. What has Phoebus said? Another moment of suspense is interposed. Then the oracle is repeated,—so thrilling to

1 A tragic action has five stages, whence the five acts of the modern drama :—the start, the rise, the height, the change, the close.

Xo, = 36

the spectator who understands the story, so full of doubt and hope and dread to all the persons of the drama: “Ttis for the blood of Laius—his murderers are harboured in the land of Thebes. The country must be purged.” That is the culminating point of the little tragedy. While CEdipus asks for information, while in gaiety of heart he undertakes the search, while he bids the folk of Cadmus to be summoned thither, the spectators lave just time to take in the full significance of what has passed, which every word that is uttered sends further home. All this in 150 lines !

Or, once more, consider the employment of narrative by this great poet. The Zyrannus might be again adduced, but let us turn instead to the Antigone and the Trachiniz. The speech of tlie messenger in the Axtzgone, the speeches of Hyllus and the Nurse in the Zrachinix, occur at the supreme crises of the two dramas. Yet there is no sense of any retardation in the action by the report of what has been happening elsewhere. Much ratlier the audience are carried breathlessly along, while each speaker brings before their mental vision the scene of which he had himself been part. Itis a drama within the drama, an action rising from its starting point in rapid climax, swift, full, con- centrated, until that wave subsides, and is followed by a moment of thrilling expectation. Nor is this all. The narrative of the messenger is overheard by Eurydice, that of Hyllus is heard by Deianira, that of Nurse by the chorus of Maidens. And in each case a poignancy of tragic significance is added by this circumstance, while the pnow in the Antigone, and that of Hyllus in a yet higher degree, bind together in one the twofold interest of an action which might otherwise seem in danger of distract- ing the spectator.

So profound is the contrivance, or, to speak more accur- ately, such is the strength of central feeling and conception, which secures the grace of unity in complexity to the Sophoclean drama.

The proportion of the lyrics to the level dialogue is considerably less on the average in Sophocles than in ‘ Aischylus, as might be expected from the development of the purely dramatic element, and the consequent subord- ination of the chorus to the protagonist. In the seven extant plays the lyrical portion ranges from one-fifth to nearly one-third, being highest in the Antigone and lowest in the Wdipus Tyrannus. The distribution of the lyrical

parts is still more widely diversified. In the Lectra, for instance, tle chorus has less to do than in the Wdipus Tyravnus, although in the former the lyrics constitute one-fourth, and in the latter only one-fifth of the whole. But then the part of Electra is favourable to lyrica] out- bursts, whereas it is only after the tragic change that Cidipus can appropriately pass from the stately senarius to the broken language of the dochmiac and the “lamenting” anapest. The protagonists of the Ajax and the Phzloctetes had also large opportunities for vocal display.

The union of strict symmetry with freedom and variety which is throughout characteristic of the work of Sophocles is especially noticeable in his handling of the tragic metres. In the iambics of his dialogue, as compared with those of Auschylus, there is anadvance which may be compared with the transition from ‘“ Marlowe’s mighty line ” to the subtler harmonies of Shakespeare. Felicitous pauses, the linking on of line to line, trisyllabic feet introduced for special effects, alliteration both hard and soft, length of speeches artfully suited to character and situations, adaptation of the cesura to the feeling expressed, are some of the points which occur most readily in thinking of his senarti. A minute speciality may be noted as illustrative of his manner in this respect. a line is broken by a pause towards the end, and the latter

Where.

SO P—S8 OP

phrase runs on into the following line, elision sometimes takes place between the lines, eg. (Gd. Tyr., 332-3) :—

“Eye ob éuavtoy obte @ aGAyuve. rt Trader’ AAws €A€yxELS 5

This is called synaphea, and is peculiar to Sophocles.

He differentiates more than Aischylus does between the metres to be employed in the xoypoi (including the Kopparixa) and in the choral odes. ‘The dochmnius, cretic, and free anapzest are employed chiefly in the koppot. In the stasima he has greatly developed the use of logacedic and particularly of glyconic rhythms, aud far less fre- quently than his

predecessor indulges in long continuous runs of dactyls or trochees. The light trochaic line 4 J v4. —, so frequent in Atschylus, is comparatively rare in Sophocles. If, from the very severity with which the choral element is subordinated to the purely dramatic, his lyrics have neither the magnificent sweep of A'schylus nor the "linked sweetness" of Euripides, they have a concinnity and point, a directness of aim, and a truth of dramatic keeping, more perfect than is to be found in either. And even in grandeur it would be hard to find many passages to bear comparison with the second stasimon, or central ode, either of the Antigone (eddaipoves otot kaxov) or the first Cdipus (et pou gvvetn épovrr). Nor does anything in Euripides equal in grace and sweet- ness the famous eulogy on Colonus (the poet's birthplace) in the @dipus Coloneus.

Sophocles was cdited (probably from the Venetian MSS.) by Aldus Manutius, with the help of Musurus, in 1502. The Juntine editions, in which the text of Aldus was slightly modificd with the help of Florentine MSS., were published in 1522, 1547, respectively. An edition of the Scholia, very ncarly corresponding to those on the margin of the Mcdicean or chief Laurentian MS. (La or L) had previously appeared at Rome in 1518. The first great modification of the text was duc to Turnebus, who had access to the Parisian MSS.; but he was not fortunate in his selection. The earliest editors had been aware that the traditional arrange- ment of the metres was faulty, but little way had bcen made towards a readjustment. Now it so happens that the Parisian MS. T, which is a copy of the recension of 'Triclinius, an early 14th- century scholar, contains also the metrical views of the same editor ; and, having found (as he erroneously supposed) a sound authority, Turnebus blindly adopted it, and was followed in this by H. Stc-

hanus (1568), Capperonier, and Vauvillers in France, and Canter in Holland (who was the first to mark the eorrespondenee of strophe and antistrophe). This error was to a large extent corrected by Brunck (1786), who rightly preferred Par. A (2712), a 13th-century MS., belonging, as it happened, to the same family with Ven. 467, which Aldus had mainly followed. Thus after nearly three centuries the text returned (though with many conjectural varia- tions, some of which were due to Scaliger, Auratus, and other earlier scholars) into nearly the same channel as at first. Meanwhile the study of Greek metres had greatly advaneed, and, while much licence was given to

conjecture (in which Valcknaer and Porson were especially happy), documentary evidence was also better weighed and sifted. The collation of the Laurentian MS. by Peter Elmsley in 1825 (with his transcription of the Scholia) may be _ said to mark the most important epoch in the textual criticism of Sophocles. But the great work of Gottfried Hermann, whiose editions (1823-1830), which are critical in every sense of the word, are adorned with an ample Latin commentary, made perhaps the longest step in advance. Since Hermann the editors of Sophocles have been very numerous. The list, from Schneidewin to Wecklein and Pappageorgius amongst Continental scholars and from Linwood to Jebb (who is last, not least) amongst our own, is too long for insertion here. (L. C.)

SOPHRON of Syracuse, next to Epicharmus the greatest representative of Sicilian comedy, flourished about 430 B.c. He was the author of mimes, written in prose, containing both male and female characters—Mipor dvdpetor and Mtyou yuvarxetor—and depicting scenes from the daily life of the Sicilian Greeks. From the extremely scanty fragments which remain of his writings we can only see that he used the local dialect, frequently sacrificing refine- ment to vigour; he sometimes reminds us of Plautus in his employment of bold and expressive figures and turns of expression. But we can judge of the dramatic power

/ /

and vivacity of his compositions from the story that Plato first introduced them to Athens, and studied them in order to give animation to his own dialogues; and some idea of the general character of his mimes may be derived from the 2d and 15th idyls of Theocritus, which are said to have been imitated from the “Axéorpi and “IoOuclovoo of his Syracusan predecessor.

The fragments of Sophron, most of which have been preserved to illustrate some point of grammar or dialect, are collectcd in Ahrens, De Grace Lingux Dialectis, vol. ii. pp. 464-476.

SOPRON. See OzpENBURG.

SORA, a city of Italy, at the head of a circondario in the province of Caserta (Terra di Lavoro), is built in a plain on the banks of the Garigliano and on the highway from Rome via Tivoli and Avezzano to Naples. It is the seat of important manufactures,—wool-spinning, cloth- weaving, and paper-making,—this last industry dating from the time of Murat. The original cathedral, conse- crated by Pope Adrian IV. in 1155, was destroyed by the earthquake of 1634. The population of the city was 8768 in 1861 and 5411 (commune 13,208) in 1881.

Sora, an ancient Volscian town, was thrice captured by the Romans, in 345, 314, and 305 B.c., before they managed, in 303, by means of a colony 4000 strong, to confirm its annexation. In 209 it was one of the colonies which refused further contributions, By the lex Julia it became a municipium, but under Augustus it was colonized by soldiers of the 4th legion. The castle of Sorella, built on the rocky height above the town, was in the Middle Ages a stronghold of some note; on one occasion it held out successfully against a whole year's vigorous siege by William II. of Sicily. Alfonso of Aragon made Sora a duchy for the Cantelmi; it was afterwards seized by Pius II., but, being restored to the Cantelmi by Sixtus IV., it ultimately passed to the Della Rovere of Urbino. Against Cxsar Borgia the city was heroically defended by Giovanni di Montefeltro. Captured by the marquis of Pescara for Charles V., it was by him bestowed on Carlo Ceares, duke of Croy and Arescot, but, Ceares being afterwards bought out, the duchy was restored to the dukcof Urbino. By Gregory XIII. it was purchased for 11,000 ducats and bestowed on his son Buoncompagni, the aucestor of the line of Buoncompagni-Ludovisi. In ancient times Sora was the birthplace of the Decii, Attilius Regulus, and Lucius Mummius ; and of its modern celebrities Cardinal Baronius is one. The uow ruined abbey church of San Domenico, founded in 1104 on the left bank of the Liri above the town, is believed to occupy the site of Cicero's family villa and birthplace. It consisted of a nave and two aisles, all ending in circular apscs.

SORAU, an industrial town and railway junction in the south of Brandenburg, Prussia, is situated 54 miles to the south-east of Frankfort-on-the-Oder, and not far from the Silesian border. Said to be one of the oldest towns in Lower Lusatia, Sorau contains a number of ancient buildings, among which the most prominent are several of the churches (one dating

from 1204), the town-house, built in 1260, and the old palace of 1207. The new palace was erected in 1711. The varied manufactures of the town comprise cloth, linen, wax candles, starch, bone-meal, &c. The population, 3764 in 1816, was 13,668 in 1885, up- wards of 12,000 of them being Lutherans.

Sorau is said to have existed in 840 and to have belonged to the abbey of Fulda till the 12th century. It received town-rights in 1260. With the surrounding district, known as the barony of Sorau, it became the seat of successive noble families ; and in 1400 it was united with the barony of Triebel. The last count of Promnitz, whose ancestor had purchased both baronies from Frederick of Bohemia in 1556, sold them to the elector of Saxony for an annuity of 12,000 thalers (£1800). In 1815 Saxony had to cede them to Prussia, after holding them for fifty ycars.

SORBONNE, the name formerly borne by the old faculty of theology in Paris, and now applied to the seat of the académie of that city and of the three faculties of theology, science, and literature. (See FRANCE, vol. ix. p. 513; Paris, vol. xviii. p. 281; and UNiversiTiEs.) The Sorbonne owes its origin and its name to Robert de Sorbon, a poor priest of Champagne, who, arriving in Paris about the beginning of the reign of St Louis, attained high repute by his sanctity and eloquence, and was

appointed by the king to be his chaplain. Assisted by royal liberality, he built upon Mont Sainte-Geneviéve a modest establishment in which were accommodated seven priests charged with the duty of teaching theology gratuit- ously ; to this he added a college of preparatory studies, all under the direction of a provisor, under whom was an annual prior who had the actual management. The new institu- tion was authorized by letters patent of 1255, and canonic- ally sanctioned by Pope Alexander IV. in 1259. Destined originally for poor students, the Sorbonne soon became a meeting-place for all the students of the university of Paris, who resorted thither to hear the lectures of the most learned theologians of the period,—Guillaume de Saint- Amour, Eudes de Douai, Laurent PAnglais, Pierre d’Ailly. At the close of the century it was organized into a full faculty of theology, and under this definitive form it con- ferred bachelor’s, licentiate’s, and doctor’s

degrees, and the severity of its examinations gave an exceptional value to its diplomas. The so-called “thdse Sorbonique, ” instituted towards the beginning of the 14th century, became the type of its order by the length and difficulty of its tests. Ultimately the professors of the Sorbonne came to be resorted to, not only for lectures and examinations, but also for dogmatic decisions and judgments in canon law; the clergy of France and of the whole Catholic world had recourse to them in difficult cases, and the Curia Romana itself more than once laid its doubts before them, giving them the title of “Concilium in Gallia subsistens.” The Sorbonne took a leading part in the religious discussions which agitated France during the 16th and 18th centuries, and its influence thus inevitably extended to political questions. During the insanity of Charles VI. it helped to bring about the absolution of Jean Sans-Peur for the assassination of the duke of Orleans. Shortly afterwards it demanded and supported the condemnation of Joan of Arc; during the Reformation it was the animating spirit of all the persecutions directed against Protestants and unbelievers : without having advised the massacre of St Bartholomew, it did not hesitate to justify it, and it inflamed the League by its vigorous anathemas against Henry ITI. and the king of Navarre, hesitating to recognize the latter even after his abjuration. From this point dates the beginning of its decadence, and, when Richelieu in 1629 ordered the reconstruction of its church and buildings, the following prophetic couplet was circulated— Instaurata ruet Jamjam Sorbona. Caduca Dum fuit, inconcussa stetit ; renovata peribit.

The declaration of the clergy in 1682, which it subscribed, proved fatal to its authority with the Curia Romana; it revived for a short time under Louis XV. during the struggle against Jansenism, but this was its last exploit ; it was suppressed like the old universities in 1790. To the Sorbonne belongs the glory of having introduced printing into France in 1469: within its precincts it assigned quarters for Ulric Gering and two companions in which to set up their presses.

When the university of France was organized in 1808 the Sorbonne became the seat of the académie of Paris ; and between 1816 and 1821 the faculties of theology, science, and literature were installed there with their libraries. All the great university functions are held within its great amphitheatre. Since 1861 there has annually been held in the Sorbonne at Easter an

official congress in which are represented the learned societies of the departments; there are five sections—those of archeology, history, the moral and political sciences, the physical sciences, geography,—which hold separate sittings. The fine arts form a sixth section, with a special organization.

A reconstruction of the buildings of the Sorbonne, pro-

jected by Napoleon III., was begun in 1884, under the architectural direction of Nénot. The old church con- taining the tomb of Richelieu is to be retained on account of its artistic merit.

SORGHUM. See Mitter.

SORIA, a province of Spain, in Old Castile, bounded on the N. by Logrofio, E. by Saragossa, 8S. by Guadalajara, and W. by Segovia and Burgos; the area is 3836 square miles. It isa bleak and lofty region, being bounded on three sides by mountains. A range of low sierras on the north, and the great Sierra de Moncayo on the east, separate the valley of the Duero (Douro) from that of the Ebro, while on the south it is divided from that of the Tagus by a continuation of the Sierra Guadarrama. The whole of the province belongs to the region watered by the Duero and its affluents. This river rises in the northern mountains, and traverses the province in a circuitous course, first to the south and then to the west. The other rivers are mostly affluents of the Duero, such as the Tuerto, San Pedro, &c.; but a few of the tributaries of the Ebro have their sources within the limits of the province. The soil is not remarkable for fertility ; on the contrary, a large proportion of the area is occupied with barren mountains, which are covered with snow for a great part of the year. There are, however, in some places extensive forests of pine, oak, and beech; while in others there are large tracts of pasture land, on which numbers of cattle, sheep, and swine are reared. Grain and veget- ables are raised, but neither of very good quality nor in sufficient quantities to supply the wants of the population. The climate is cold and dry, and the scenery grand, but not very pleasing in its character. Most of the people are employed in farming and rearing cattle; but the cutting and sawing of timber and the preparation of charcoal also

occupy a considerable number. ‘There is a great want of roads in this part of the country; and commerce is consequently very limited. Fine wool was formerly an important production of the province ; but of late years it has considerably fallen off. The only important article of trade at present is timber, which is sent to Madrid and Aragon. Soria is divided into five partidos judiciales and 345 ayuntamientos. The population was returned in 1877 as 153,654. There is a bishop (suffragan of Burgos), resi- dent at Osma. The only town of more than 5000 inhab- itants is Soria.

SORIA, the capital of the above province, on a hill on the right bank of the Duero, 113 miles north-east of Madrid, is an ancient town, still surrounded by walls which were built in the 13th century. It contains several squares, in one of which stand the court-house and prisons and in another the spacious palace of the dukes of Go- mara. ‘T’he churches of Santo Domingo and San Nicolas, the cloisters of the convent of San Juan, and several other ecclesiastical buildings are fine specimens of Romanesque work of the 12th and 13th centuries. The population is chiefly agricultural; but there are also flour-mills, tanneries, potteries, é&c.; and some trade in timber, wool, and fruit is carried on. Three and a half miles distant is the site of the ancient Numantia. But few traces of the old city, however, remain. A railway has long been pro- jected between Soria and Calatayud, upon the Madrid and Saragossa line. The population in 1877 was 6286.

SORREL. See Horricunrurg, vol. xii. p. 288.

SORRENTO, a city of Italy, in the province of Naples, on the north side of the peninsula that separates the Bay of Naples from the Bay of Salerno, about 14 miles to the east of Capo di Sorrento, crowned by the ruins of a temple of Neptune. Sorrento contains only a few unimportant remains of the magnificent buildings which made it in the time of Augustus a finer city than N aples ; and its present

genes, he settled the chronological question.

prosperity depends mainly on the reputation it enjoys as a summer watering-place, with a delightful and healthy climate, and situated amid

picturesque coast scenery. The chief local industry is the inlaying of wood. In ancient times the Surrentine wines had a great repute. The population was 4254 in 1861 and 6089 ir 1881.

Surrentum was of very ancient origin, but it does not appear frequently in history. A famous temple of Minerva stood on the Promontorium Surrentinum (now Punta della Campanella). In 1558 the corsair Pialy attacked the town and carricd off 2000 prisoners. Statius celebrated the delights of the Surrentine villa owned by his friend Pollius Felix; it was at Sorrento that Bernardo Tasso wrote his Amadigi ; and Torquato Tasso was born in the town in 1544.

SOSIGENES, the astronomer who was employed by Julius Cesar to reform the Roman calendar, 46 B.c. (see CALENDAR). Of his life nothing further is known, with the exception of two references to him by Pliny, which show that he left some astronomical treatises. The chief one is as follows :—

‘‘Tres autem fuere sect, Chaldea, Agyptia, Greca. His addidit quartam apud nos Cesar dictator annos ad solis cursum redigens singulos, Sosigene perito scientiz ejus adhibito ; et ea ipsa ratio postea comperto errore correcta est, ita ut XII. annis con- tinuis non intercalaretur, quia cceperat sidera annus morari qui prius antecedebat. Et Sosigenes ipse trinis commentationibus, quamquam diligentior ceteris, non cessavit tamen addubitare ipse semet corrigendo.”—A. N., xviii. 25.

From another passage (H. W., ii. 8) we infer that Sosigenes maintained that Mercury moved in an epicycle about the sun; this doctrine is referred to by his contem- porary Cicero, and it was also that of the Egyptians (see Protemy). Sosigenes is commonly called an Egyptian and a Peripatetic, but this has arisen from his having been confounded with a Peripatetic philosopher of the same name who lived in the 2d century of the Christian era, and who will be briefly noticed below. It is most probable, however, that he was a Greek of Alexandria, for the follow- ing reasons. (1) Czesar had just returned victorious from his Alexandrian expedition, which occupied parts of the years 48 and 47 B.c., when, with the assistance of Sosi- (2) We learn from Plutarch (Cexs., 59) that ‘“Czesar laid the problem (viz., the correction of the calendar) before the ablest philosophers and mathematicians,” and at that time the school of Alexandria was world-

famous. (3) We know that Caesar was himself a diligent student of astronomy. Lucan, in a passage which refers to his correction of the calendar, represents him as saying that even in the midst of his campaigns he had always found time for astrono- mical pursuits :—

‘‘ media inter prelia semper

Stellarum celique plagis superisque vacavi ;

Nec meus Eudoxi vincetur Fastibus annus.” —x. 185-7. (4) Macrobius says that Cesar wrote a work on the motion of the stars, and expressly states, moreover, that he derived from the Egyptian schools his information on this sub- ject, and also what he required for the correction of the calendar.! (5) Ceesar’s arrangement was substantially the same as the reform of the Egyptian calendar in the year 238 B.c. under Ptolemy ITI. Euergetes, a fact which remained unknown until the discovery of the Decree of Canopus by Lepsius at Sanor Tanis in Egypt in the year 1866.

Zeller (Phil. d. Gr., vol. iii. part 1, 2d ed., p. 705-6, note of p. 708, and p. 694, note 3), and after him, but in a more complete manner, Th. H. Martin (Annales de la Faculté des Lettres de Bordeaux, 2° fasc., 1879), have shown, in opposition to the prevail- ing opinion, which had been formerly held by Zeller himself, that

1 ‘Nec mirum si hee digeries morsum reprehensionis evasit, cui arcessita est ab Algypto postreme correctionis auctoritas. Nam Julius Cesar, ut siderum motus, de quibus non indoctos libros reliquit, ab Aigyptiis disciplinis hausit, ita hoe quoque ex eadem institutione mutuatus est, ut ad solis cursum finiendi anni tempus extenderet.”— Sls, lal.

SO T—SOU

the subject of this article has nothing in common but the name with Sosigenes the Peripatetic philosopher, author of a work on restituent spheres (Swovyévns wep) rav dvedrrtrovoay [cpaipay)), which is referred to by Proclus (Hypotyp., p. 111, ed. Halma) and followed by Simplicius in his Commentary on the treatise of Aristotle, De Cxlo, author also of some other works, and master of Alexander of Aphrodisias, who lived at the end

of the 2d and beginning of the 3d century after Christ, and who was the most celebrated of the commentators on Aristotle.

SOTO. See Dr Soro.

SOUBISE, Benszamin DE Rowan, Duc pz (c. 1589- 1641), was the second son of René IL, Vicomte de Rohan, and Catherine de Parthenay, and the younger brother of the soldier-writer Henri de Rowan (¢.v.). The seigneury of Soubisc came to the Rohans through Catherine, and Benjamin took the title as her second son. The exact date of his birth does not seem to be known, but it is believed to be 1589. He served his apprentice- ship as a soldier under Prince Maurice of Orange in the Low Countries. But he hardly becomes an historical character before 1621, when the religious wars once more broke out in France. He and his brother Rohan were the soul of the Huguenot party,—the elder brother chiefly taking command on land and in the south, Soubise in the west and along the sea-coast. His exploits in the conflict have been sympathetically related by his brother, who, if he was not quite an impartial witness, was one of the best military critics of the time. Soubise's chief performance was a singularly bold and well-conducted attack (in 1625) on the royalist fleet in the river Blavet (which included the cutting of a boom in the face of superior numbers after a style suggestive of the best days of the English navy) and the occupation of Oleron. Soubise commanded at Rochelle during the famous siege, and if we may believe his brother the failure of the defence and of the English attack on Rhé was mainly due to the alternate obstinacy of the townsfolk and the English commanders in refus- ing to listen to Soubise's advice. When surrender became inevitable he fled to England, which he had previously visited in quest of succour. He died in 1641, and lus title afterwards served as the chief second designation (not for heirs-apparent, but for the chief collateral branch for the time being) of the house of Rohan-Chabot, into which the older Rohan honours were carried by his niece Marguerite four years after his death.

SOUBISE, Cuaries DE Ronan, Prince DE (1715- 1787), peer and marshal of France, grandson of the Prin- cesse de Soubise, who is known to history as one of the mistresses of Louis XIV., was born in Paris on July 15, 1715. He accompanied Louis XV. in the campaign of 1744-48, and attained high

military rank, which he owed more to his courtiership than to his generalship. Soon after the beginning of the Seven Years' War, through the influence of Madame de Pompadour, he was put in com- mand of a corps of 24,000 men, and on 4th November 1757 he sustained the crushing defeat of Rossbach (see vol. ix. pp. 588-591, where also some subsequent and more favourable episodes of his military career are briefly indicated). After 1763 he lived the life of an ordinary courtier in Paris, dying on July 4, 1787.

SOUDAN, or Stpan (Bildd es-Stidan, "Country of the Blacks "), a term applied by medizeval Arab geographers to the region of Africa south of the Sahara mainly inhabited by peoples of Negro blood, hence corresponding to the ex- pressions Nigritia, Negroland, at one time current amongst European writers. It lies mainly between 5° and 18° N. lat., consequently entirely within the tropics, and in its widest sense stretches right across the continent from Cape Verd on the Atlantic to Massowah on the Red Sea. But the term is more usually restricted to the region bounded N. by the Sahara, 8. by Upper Guinea and the

lands draining to the Congo basin, W. and E. by Sene- gambia and the Abyssinian highlands respectively (see vol. i. plate II.). Within these limits it has an extreme length of about 3000 miles between the Senegal river and Abyssinia, extending southwards at some points 660 miles, with a total area of perhaps 2,000,000 square miles, and a population approximately estimated at from 80 to 90 millions. From the arid and sandy northern wastes to the well-watered and arable Soudanese lands the transi- tion is effected by an intermediate zone of level grassy steppes, partly overgrown with mimosas and acacias, with a mean breadth of about 60 miles, between 17° and 18° N. lat., but towards the centre reaching as far south as 15° N. Excluding this somewhat uniform transitional zone, the Soudan, properly so called, may be described as a moderately elevated region, diversified with extensive open or rolling plains, level plateaus, and even true high- lands, especially in the south-west. It constitutes three distinct hydrographic systems, corresponding to the three main physical divisions of Western Soudan, draining through the Niger southwards to the Atlantic; Central Soudan, draining to the great central depression and land- locked basin 6f

Lake Tchad; and Eastern (Egyptian) Soudan, draining through the Nile northwards to the Mediterranean. Between these systems the chief water-partings are—(1) the Marrah Mountains of Dar-Fur, whence flow the Bahr es-Salamat west to the Shari, and numerous intermittent wadies east to the Nile; (2) the Monbuttu uplands (Mount Baginze), separating the western head- streams of the White Nile from the Welle (Bahr Kuta), which, according to the latest information, flows, not to the Shari as Schweinfurth supposed, but to the Congo through the Mbangi; (3) the so-called "Kong" Moun- tains, dividing the Niger basin from the Volta and other streams flowing in independent channels south to the Gulf of Guinea. The Adamawa highlands, culminating in Mount Alantika (9000 to 10,000 feet), do not form a divide, as was supposed, between the Binue (the main eastern tributary of the Niger) and the Logon and other streams flowing east to the Shari (the great southern afflu- ent of Lake Tchad). Flegel, who has recently explored the upper course of the Binue, found that it sweeps right round the east foot of Mount Alantika, and is even navigable round this bend and some way southwards. On the other hand, the central hydrographic system of Lake Tchad has been greatly reduced in size since Lupton, Grenfell, and other recent explorers have made it evident that the Bahr- Kuta (Welle) flows not to the Shari but to the Congo basin. The Shari basin, which is now known not to reach farther south than about 6° N. lat., may even be almost considered, physically as well as politically, as subsidiary to the Niger hydrographic system, for there are.indications that the Logon once flowed into the Binue by the Mayo- Kebbi, The Mayo-Kebbi is a long flat trough or valley in 9° 30' N, lat., with a level swamp at the bottom receiving as a backwater the overflow of the Logon, and also draining through the Binue to the Niger. By canalizing the Mayo- Kebbi the Binue and Shari basins might be permanently connected, in which case the Niger system would afford a navigable waterway from the Gulf of Guinea to the southernmost limits of Baghirmi.

From the Kong highlands, some of whose peaks appear to attain elevations of 6000 to 7000 feet, Western Soudan falls gradually towards the north and north-east down to the Great Desert, where the city of Timbuktu still main- tains an altitude of 770 feet above sea-level (Lenz). South- east of the Niger the land rises in terraces of 1000 and even 3000 feet, above which isolated

crests range from 5000 to 9000 feet. This little-known western highland region, comprised between the Binue and the lower Niger,

and extending from Adamawa to the Cameroons on the Bight of Biafra, corresponds with the eastern highland region of Abyssinia, lying between the Blue Nile and the Tagazze and dominating the Red Sea. North of Adamawa the land falls rapidly down to the vast depression of Central Soudan, whose lowest part is flooded with the waters of Lake Tchad (Chad or Tsad), the largest area of inland drainage, next to the Aral-Caspian basin, in the eastern hemisphere. This freshwater lacustrine de- pression, usually 10,000 square miles in extent, expands to 40,000 and even 50,000 square miles when swollen by the flood-waters of its great feeders,—the Logon-Shari from the south and the Komadugu from the west. From the Tchad depression, which is still 1150 feet above the sea, the ground rises again eastwards in the direction of Wadai and Dar-Fur, to heights of 3000 feet and upwards, culminating in the voleanic Jebel Marrah (6000 feet), which forms the natural eastern limit of Central Soudan, and the great divide between the Tchad and Nile basins. But politically the line between Central and Eastern Soudan is usually drawn more to the west along the con- ventional frontiers of Wadai and Dar-Fur, the latter pro- vince, although never completely reduced, being claimed as part of Egyptian Soudan. This region constitutes two distinct physical divisions,—the first comprising the pro- vinces of Dar-Fur and Kordofan, bounded E. by the White Nile and S. by the Bahr el-Arab, a tableland in which the steppe formation predominates, while the second is skirted east by the Bahr el-Jebel and stretches from the Bahr el-Arab southwards to the Monbuttu uplands, a vast plain watered by the numerous south-western headstreams of the White Nile. This plain rises gradually towards the south and south-west to the highlands, which appear to culmin- ate in Mount Baginze, and which form the water-parting between the Nile and Congo basins. Included in Eastern Soudan is also the extensive plain of Senaar, stretching from the Nile eastwards to the Abyssinian uplands, and rising southwards to the Fazokl and Berta highlands.

The prevailing geological formations are the crystalline rocks, such as granites, diorites, slates, gneiss, underlying the old and new alluvia of the

plains, aud found associated with sandstones in the highlands. In the Kong Mountains the granites underlie the sandstoucs, but in the Tagalé group (South Kordofan) they pass over to porphyries and syenites, interspersed with extensive diorites and auriferous quartz veins. Volcanic rocks (basalts, lavas, tufas) appear to be restricted to the isolated Defafaung and Alantika Mountains (Adamawa), although solfataras occur in the Tagalé district, where sulphur abounds. Mineral waters are also found in Dar-Fur and Adamawa. The most widely diffused minerals are iron and copper, the oxides of iron occurring almost everywhere from the White Nile to the Niger, while pure copper is met espe- cially in Dar-Fur and Fertit. Gold is chiefly restricted to the Tagalé and Kong Mountains, Bambarra, and Adamawa; and lead, antimony, and tin are confined to a few isolated districts. Characteristic is the apparently total absence of limestones, coal, salt, and natron, the supplies of salt being imported mainly from the Sahara. Report, however, speaks of a large lake in the Jebel Marrah, from which salt is obtained.

The climate of Soudan is distinctly tropical, with two well-defined seasons, hot and rainy from April or May to October, warm and dry for the rest of the year. The former is accompanied by tremendous thunderstorms and continuous downpours flushing all the khors, wadies, and other watercourses, flooding large tracts along the lower courses of the Shari, Logon, Komadugu, and Niger, and interrupting the eommunications for weeks together in Baghirmi and Bornu. Before the rains set in the glass seldoni falls below 98° or 100° F., rising at noon to 104°, while the mean annual temperature at Kuka (Bornu) is about 82°F. But in the dry season it is often lowered to 58° or 60°, and under the influence of the cool north-east winds water often freezes on the uplands, snow falls in Dar-Fur, and fires are kept up in the houses in the central districts of Kano. The chief ailments are ague and other marsh fevers in the low-lying tracts subject to inundations, the Guinea-worm, cutaneous diseases, and leprosy. The fevers are dangerous alike to Europeans and natives.

An exuberant forest vegetation is favoured by the rich alluvial soil and tropical heat wherever moisture abounds. Of large growths the

most characteristic and widespread are—the baobab (Adansonia), reaching north to the 18th parallel and attaining a girth of 80 feet ; the superb deleb palm, covering extensive tracts especially in the east, where it grows to a height of over 120 feet; the shea or butter tree (Bassia butyracca), in the Niger basin and Kong uplands; the cotton-tree, dum palm, tamarind, several varieties of euphorbias, acacias, and mimosas, the heglyg (Balanites egyptiaca), and jerjak of Wadai, which yields a kind of vegetable honey. Owing to the absence of salt the date-palm is very rare. The chief cultivated plants are cotton, maize, several kinds of durrah (Sorghum vulgare, S. cernuum, &c.), hemp, tobacco, gourds, water-melons, indigo (of excellent quality and growing everywhere, wild and cultivated), and lastly the guru or kola nut (Sterculia acwminata and 8. macro- carpa), which in Soudan takes the place of the coffee berry. Cotton of the finest quality has been raised on the rich alluvial plain of Taka and Senaar.

The beasts of prey, nowhere very numerous, are chiefly repre- sented by the lion, panther, hyena, and jackal. Elephants in herds of 400 or 500 frequent the swampy districts about Lake Tchad, but are not found farther north than the 12th or 13th parallel. The ordinary African rhinoceros is common, and the rare one- horned species appears to have been met with in Wadai. The wild ass, zebra, giraffe, and antelopes iu considerable variety abound on the eastern steppe lands, and endless species of monkeys in the forest districts. Crocodiles, some of great size, from 16 to 18 feet long, infest all the large rivers, the sangwai,—a web-footed variety, occurring in the Niger. The hippopotamus also abounds in these waters, which teem with fish, mostly of unknown species. These attract numerous flocks of waterfowl,—pelicans, spoonbills, cranes, ducks, and many unknown species. In the Tchad, Fittri, and other districts the fish are captured, dried, and exported in large quantities to Fezzan and the countries beyond the Niger. Flies and mosquitoes swarm in the marshy, and locusts in the dry districts ; and in the woodlands insect life is represented by inyriads of ter- mites and some very large species of bees, wasps, and ants, besides beetles and butterflies in considerable variety.

The term Bilad es-Sudan is fully justified by the ethnical con- ditions of this region, which may be regarded as the true home of the Negro variety of mankind. Here this still everywhere forms the substratum of the population,

constituting the distinct aboriginal element, in many places exclusively, in others intermingled with foreign intruders from the north and cast. As far as ean now be determined, these intruders belong to two separate branches of the Caucasic stock—the Hamitic and the Semitic. The Hamitic is represented by three divisions—Fulahs,! Tibus, and Berbers—all of whom arrived in remote prehistoric times; the Semitic by one division—the Arabs, who arrived at various periods since the spread of Islam in North Africa. The bulk of the Arab tribes appear to have penetrated from the Nile basin through Kordofan to Dar-Fur and Wadai, or from the Mediterranean seaboard through Fezzan and across the Sahara to the T'chad basin, and henceare still mostly restricted to the central and eastern districts. Owing to their later appearance and stronger racial sentiment they have kept more aloof from the surrounding populations than the Hamites, who have everywhere intermingled with the aboriginal Negro element. The result is that the preseut inhabitants of Soudan are of a very mixed character,—more or less pure Negro peoples predominating in the Niger basin, in Adamawa, Baghirmi, Wadai, parts of Dar- Fur and Kordofan, and in the Nile basin south of 10° north latitude; half-caste Negroes and Fulahs especially in Western Soudan ; half-caste Negroes and Berbers in the northern districts of Western and Central Soudan ; half-caste Negroes and Tibus (Dasas) mainly in Kanem and Bornu; true Fulahs scattered in isolated groups between the Niger and Tehad basins; true Berbers (Tuaregs) in the Timbuktu and Moassina distriets ; true Arabs chiefly in Baghirmi, Wadai, Dar-Fur, and Kordofan.

In the subjoined table of the chief Soudanese raccs the Negro divisions have little more than a linguistic value.

Negro and Negroid Peoples.

Mandingoes : Mandinka, Malinka, and in the east Vangarawa, the dominant race between the Joliba (Upper Niger) and Kong Mountains, where their simple and harmonious speech is everywhere eurrent as the chief medium of intercourse 3 fine Negro type, tall, very dark eomplexion from eoffee-brown to black, long frizzly and woolly hair; agriculturists and traders; mostly Mohammedans out-

wardly; population six to eight millions. Chief subdivision the Bambarras, whose eapital is Sego on the Joliba ; population 2,000,000.

1 Most ethnologists, adopting Fr. Miiller's general elassification, group the , Fulahs with the Nubians in a separate division ("Nuba-Fulah family"), and elass the Tibus as Negroes, But more reeent researeh has shown—(1) that the Fulahs and Nubians differ fundamentally in speeeh and physique, the former being of Caneasic and the latter of Negrotype (Krause, Riippel), and (2) that the true Tibus, the Tedas of Tibesti as distinguished from the Dasas or southern group, are not Negroes but Hamites, akin to the Tuaregs of the Western Sahara, , although the two languages are totally distinet (Nachtigal). The Tibu language has been deseribed as a Negro form of speech; but this is also a mistake. It forms an independent linguistie group, the oldest and purest braneh of whieh is that of the Northern Tedas. From Tibesti it appears to have spread southwards to Kanem and Bornu, where the Dasa, Kanuri, and other dialeets have been exposed to Negro influences. Had Tibu been originally a Negro language, its most primitive form would be found, not in Tibesti, but in Soudan. and its pro-

gress would have been thenee northwards, not from the Sahara southwards.

bOU—SOU

Sonrhai or Songhai: An historical race whose empire stretehed in the 16th century from the northern bend of the Niger to the Atlantie and Moroeco; speech of a monosyllabie type, still eurrent in the Timbuktu district and oases of Western Sahara; population 2,000,000.

Tombo, Mosso, Gurma: Three little known Negro peoples west of the Niger, within the great bend; affinities uncertain ; form semi-independent petty states, apparently tributary to Moassina and Gando.

Nupe or Nufe: Large Negro nation along both sides of the Niger from Rabba to the Binue eonfluenee, subject to Gando.

Yoruba: Powerful Negro people between lower Niger and Dahomey ; eapital Tlosin; Mohammedans, pagans, and Christians (Protestant),

Batta: The ehief Negro people in Adamawa, now subjeet to the Fulahs; pagans and Mohammedans,

Haussa: Largest, most widespread, and intelligent of all the Sudanese Negro peoples, mainly between the Niger and Bornu ; speeeh very musieal, the ehief eommercial medium in Western and Central Soudan, and current in parts of Tripolitana; shows distinct traces of Hamitic influenees (Krause); mostly Mohammedans.

Mosgu or Masa: Widespread Negro family between Lake Tchad and Adamawa and stretching east to the Shari; chief subdivisions—Mandara, Margi, Logon, Gamergu, Margomi, Keribina; mostly pagans and uneultured,

Yedina (Buduma) and Kuri: Predatory Negro tribes in the islands of Lake Tehad; appear to be related to the Kolokos or Mekari of Logon and Bornu; nominal Mohammedans; population 30,000,

Baghirmi: The dominant people in Baghirmi; eultured Mohammedans; very industrious and skilled weavers and dyers; population over a million.

Maba: The chief Negro nation in Wadai, mainly in the Wara and Abeshr districts, about the headstreams of the Batha.

Fur or For: The dominant race in Dar-Fur, which takes its name from them 5 akin to the Nubas; chief subdivision Kunjara,

Nubas ; Large Negro nation; Jebel Nuba, and other parts of Kordofan, the orig- inal stock of the Nile Nubians; ehief subdivisions—Kargo, Kulfan, Kolaji, Tumali.

Nilotic Negroes: Shilluks, Dinkas, Bongos, Baris, A-Madi (Mittu), and many others about the Bahr el-Jebel and south-western tributaries of the White Nile.

Funj; A very mixed Negroid race, Senaar, :

Hamites—Pure and Mixed,

Tuaregs : A main braneh of the Berber race, dominant throughout the Western Sahara and southern steppes ; powerful, especially in the Timbuktu district and on the north frontier of Bornu.

Sorinka or Assuanek: Called also Serckuli or Serrakolet, ¢.¢., “ white people ”; half-caste Tuareg and Negro nation scattered in small communities from the Niger to the Atlantic, and numerous especially in Senegambia and Moassina ; cultured Mohaminedans, and aetive traders. ;

Fulahs : The most powerful, intelligent, and widespread of all the Soudanese peoples; from their original home in Senegambia (Futa-Toro, Futa-Jallo) have spread since the 18th century throughout Western and Central Soudan, and as far cast as Dar-Fur, everywhere propagating Islam, overthrowin g the native Haussa and other states, and founding new kingdoms in the Niger basin, in Adamawa, and Central Soudan; are called Fellani by the Haussas, Fuldu by the Arabs, Felldta by the Kanuri, the term meaning “fair” or “light coloured ”; pure type, distinctly Caucasic, regular f eatures, long blaek hair, brown or ruddy complexion, slim well-proportioned figures; but the language, which presents several remark- able features, shows only faint traees of Berber influence, and appears on the whole to be essentially a Negro form of spcech, adopted probably during residence from the remotest times in Negroland; population seven to eight millions,

Dasas: The southern branch of the Tibns, ehiefly in Kanem and northern Bornu; type and speeeh show distinct Negro-influenees,

Kanembu: The people of Kanem, with settlements in eastern Bornu ; also originally Tibus, but betraying still more decided Negro influenee,

Kanuri: The ruling vaee in Bornu ; speech a development of the Dasa and Kanem; type half-easte Tibu and Negro.

Zoghawa, Baele, Ennedi: Mixed Tibu and Negro trihes; northern Dar-Fur, origin- ally from Borku and Wanganya, Eastern Sahara > Speech akin to Dasa.

Semites,

Auldd Soleimdn Arabs; In Kanem,

Auldd Rashid, Mahdmid: South-east of Borku, and in Dar-Fur.

Salémdt, Aulad Tamed: Between the lower Shari and Bahr el-Ghazdl.

Hamr, Hamrén: Kordofan,

i al “Goatherds ;” widespread along west side Nile, from Kordofan to ongola,

Bakkdra: “ Cowherds;” south of tle Kababish to left bank of Bahr el-Arab.

Politically Western and Central Soudan are divided into eight independent and semi-independent states, which in their order from west to east are as under :— :

Bambarra, divided into two nearly equal sections py the J. oliba, which traverses it from south-west to north-east, is ruled by the Negro Bambarras of Mandingo stock. It has recently been brought under the influence of the French penetrating eastwards from their possessions on the Senegal. The capital is Sego, on the right bank of the Joliba.

Moassina, Gando, Sokoto, Adamawa, the four so-called “Fulah States,” occupy the Niger basin between Bambarra and the Binne confluence, the whole of the Binue basin, and the region lying betwecn the Niger and Bornu. Afoassina (Massina) lies on both banks of the N iger from Bambarra to Kabara, the port of Timbuktn, and is peopled by Fnlahs, Bambarras, and Sonrhais ; capital Hamda-Alahi, on the right bank of the N iger, below Jenne, which is its chief trading place. Timbuktu, with surrounding district constitutes a Separate territory governcd by a kadia, or hereditary inayor, who lately sent an envoy to Paris for the purpose of seeking French protection against the rival Tuareg and Fulah tribes. Gando, so called from its capital on an eastern tributary of the Niger, stretches along the main stream southwards to the Binue confluence, including the Nufe territory and part of Yoruba. The lower part is extremely fertile, abounding in cotton, indigo, rice, and all varieties of African grains. It comes within the limits of the region over which the British protectorate has recently been extended.

Besides the capital, there are several large towns, such as Bida (30,000 to 50,000 inhabitants) in the north ; Rabba (40,000 to 50,000), head of the stcam navigation on the Niger, and a chief station on the great trade route running from Lagos on the

ginger, melons,

| officers of the khedive.

240

Guinea Coast northwards to Gando and Sokoto ; Egga (8000), on the left bank of the N iger, centre of the British trade ; Lokoja, facing the Binue confluence, an English factory, headquarters of an Anglican mission and seat of a N egro bishop. Sokoto, sometimes spoken of as the “empire of Sokoto,” is the largest and most power- fnl of all the Soudanese states, stretching from Gando to Bornu, and from the Binue northwards to the Sahara (see Soxoro), In it are absorbed all the former “ Haussa States,” and to it Adamawa is also tributary. The inhabitants are chiefly Fulahs and Haussas, intermixed with many aboriginal Negro peoples, especially in the south and south-east. The land is generally fertile, yielding rich crops of cereals, cotton, tobacco, indigo, sugar, yams, black pepper, The capital and residence of the sultan is Sokoto, in the extreme north-west. Other large towns are—Katsena, before the Fulah invasion a place of 100,000 inhabitants, now reduced to 7000; Kano, in Barth’s time the “ London of Soudan,” and still with 50,000 souls (Matteucci); Wurnu (15,000) ; Gombe, in the province of Calam (20,000) ; Yakoba, or Garu n-Bauchi (150,000) ; Keffi Abd es-Senga (30,000), in Zegzeg, a great centre of the ivory trade, and converging point of the two great caravan routes from the north (Kano) and the west (Egga). Adamawa, so named from its Fulah conqueror Adama, and formerly known as Fumbina, or “Southland,” is ruled by a Fulah vassal of Sokoto, who keeps in subjection the Battas and innumerable other N egro peoples; it lies between Sokoto, Bornu, and Baghirmi, merging southwards in the unexplored equatorial region back of the Cameroons. The capital is Yola, at the northern foot of Mount Alantika. Adamawa appears to be one of the finest and healthiest regions in Africa, splendidly diversified with lofty highlands, fertile valleys, and grassy plains, overgrown in some places with forests of bananas, baobabs, and plantains, in others yielding abundant

harvests of cereals, cotton, and indigo. The horses and cattle introduced by the Fulahs thrive well on the rich pastures, and elephants abound in the woodlands,

Bornu, with Kanem, in the north, now reduced, and the tributary state of Logon in the south, completely encircles Lake Tchad, except at the south-east corner, where Baghirmi is wedged in between Logon and Wadai ; it is mostly a flat low-lying region with fertile plains yielding durrah, maize, cotton, and indigo, watcred by the Komadugn, Logon, and Shari, all of which flood their banks for miles during the rainy season. The ruling race are the Kanuri, cultured but fanatical Mohammedans of mixed Tibu and Negro stock. The capital of Bornu is Kuka (50,000 to 60,000 in- habitants), near the west coast of Lake Tchad, a great centre of the Soudanese trade with the Sahara and Tripolitana, and terminus of the main caravan route from Murznk (Fezzan) across the desert to the Tchad basin ; the capital of Logon is Logon-birni, residence of a vassal prince. Population of Bornu estimated at 5,000,000.

Baghirmi, a Negro state, since 1871 tributary to Wadai, comprises the rich and well-watered plains of the lower Shari, with undefined southern limits. Capital Masena 3 population about 1,500,000, of whom three-fourths Baghirmi, the rest Kotokos, Fulahs, and Arabs.

Wadai, a powerful Mohammedan state occupying the whole region between Baghirmi and Kanem in the west and Dar-Fur in the east, and claiming exclusive ivory and slave-hunting rights in the southern (upper) Shari basin. The capital is Abeshr, on a head-stream of the Batha. The country is mainly a hilly plateau rising to 3000 feet above the sea, and yielding good crops of maize, dukhn, durrah, cotton, indigo. Population four to six millions, chiefly Mabas and other Negroes, and numerous Arab tribes, with some scattered Baghirmi, Fulah, and Kanuri settlements.

Eastern Sondan, comprising Dar-Fur, Kordofan, Senaar, Taka, and the Negro countries on the White Nile and its south-western tributaries, respectively called the Equatorial and Bahr-Gazal Pro- vinces, belonged politically to Egypt till the rebellion of the late Mahdi. Since his death in 1885 most of these provinces appear to have lapsed into a state of anarchy and barbarism, in which few vestiges remain of the peace and order

introduced by the European The Equatorial Province, however, and the Suakin district have been exempt from these troubles,—the former being still held till 1886 by the governor, Emin Bey, for the khedive, while in the latter the natives themselves succecded in the same year in putting down the ‘‘rebels” or party of Osman Digma. For details of Eastern Soudan, see articles N ILE, Nupia, and SENAAR, (AoE, ee)

SOULT, Nicotas Jean pe Dinu, duke of Dalmatia and marshal of France (1769-1851), was born at Saint- Amans-la-Bastide (now in department of the Tarn), on March 29, 1769, and was the elder son of a country notary at that place. He was fairly well educated, and intended for the bar, but his father’s death when he was still a boy made it necessary for him to seek his fortune, and he enlisted as a private in the regiment of royal infantry in 1785. His superior education ensured his promotion to the rank of sergeant after six years’ service, and in July

1791 he became instructor to the first battalion of volunteers .

of the Bas-Rhin. He served with his battalion in 1792, and rapidly rose to the position of adjutant-general, colonel, and chief of the staff to General Lefebvre. Soult it was who practically directed the operations of Lefebvre’s divi- sion in 1794, and after the battle of Fleurus he was pro- moted general of brigade by the representatives on mission. For the next five years he was constantly employed in Germany under Jourdan, Moreau, Kléber, and Lefebvre. The attack of the French left at the battle of Altenkirchen, which won the day, was directed by Soult, and in 1799 he was promoted general of division and ordered to proceed to Switzerland. It was at this time that he laid the foundations of his military fame, and he particularly dis- tinguished himself in Masséna’s great Swiss campaign, and especially at the battle of Zurich. He accompanied Masséna to Genoa, and acted as his principal lieutenant throughout the protracted siege of that city, during which he operated with a detached force without the walls, and after many successful actions he was wounded and taken prisoner at Monte Cretto on 13th April 1800. The victory of Marengo restoring his freedom, he received the command of the southern part of the kingdom of Naples, and in 1802 he was appointed one of the four generals commanding the guard of the

consuls. Though he was one of those generals who had served under Moreau, and who therefore, as a rule, disliked and despised Napoleon, Soult had the wisdom to show his devotion to the ruling power ; in consequence he was in August 1803 appointed to the command in chief of the camp of Boulogne, and in May 1804 he was made one of the first marshals of France. When Napoleon decided to lead the troops of the camp of Boulogne into Germany, Soult took the command of the right wing, and it was by his capture of the heights of Pratzen that the great battle of Austerlitz was decided. He played a great part in all the famous battles of the grand army, except the battle of Friedland, and after the conclusion of the peace of Tilsit he returned to France and was created duke of Dalmatia. In the following year he was appointed to the command of the 2d corps of the army with which Napoleon intended to conquer Spain, and after winning the battle of Gamonal he was detailed by the emperor to pursue Sir John Moore, whom he only caught up at Corufiia. For the next four years Soult remained in Spain, but it is impossible to do more than allude to his most important feats of arms. In 1809, after his defeat by Sir John Moore, he invaded Portugal and took Oporto, but, deluded by the idea of becoming king of Portugal, he neglected to advance upon Lisbon, and was eventually dislodged from Oporto by Sir Arthur Wellesley. After the battle of Talavera he was made major-general of French troops in Spain, and on 12th November 1809 won the great victory of Ocafia. In 1810 he invaded Andalusia, which he speedily reduced, with the exception of Cadiz. In 1811 he marched north into Estremadura, and took Badajoz, and when the Anglo- Portuguese army laid siege to it he marched to its rescue, and fought the famous battle of Albuera (16th May). In 1812, however, he was obliged, after Wellington’s great victory of Salamanca, to evacuate Andalusia, and was soon after recalled from Spain at the request of Joseph Bonaparte, with whom he had always disagreed. In March 1813 he assumed the command of the 4th corps of the grand army and commanded the centre at Liitzen and Bautzen, but he was soon sent, with unlimited powers, to the south of France to try and repair the damages done by the great defeat of Vittoria. His campaign there is the finest proof of his genius as a general, although he was repeatedly defeated by the English under Wellington, for his soldiers were but raw conscripts, while those of Wellington were the veterans of many campaigns.

Such was the military career of Marshal Soult. His political career was by no means so creditable. After the first abdication of Napoleon he declared himself a royalist, received the order of St Louis, and acted as minister for war from 3d December 1814 to 11th March 1815. When Napoleon returned from Elba Soult at once declared him- self a Bonapartist, and acted as major-general to the emperor in the campaign of Waterloo. For tls conduct he was exiled, but not for long, for in 1819 he was recalled and in 1820 again made a marshal of France. He once more tried to show himself a fervent royalist and was made a peer in 1827. After the revolution of 1830 he made out that he was a partisan of Louis Philippe and constitutional royalty, and served as minister for war from 1830 to 1834, as ambassador extraordinary to London for the coronation of Queen Victoria in 1838, and again as minister for war from 1840 to 1844. In 1848, when Louis Philippe was overthrown, Soult again declared himself a republican. He died at his castle of Soultberg near his birthplace in 1851.

SOUND. See Acoustics.

SOUNDING to ascertain the depth of the sea has been practised from very early times for purposes of navigation, but it is only since the introduction of submarine tele- graphy that extensive efforts have been made to obtain a complete knowledge of the contour of the ocean-bed. As early as the middle of last century a few deep soundings were recorded in various parts of the world: Ellis made one in 1749 of 891 fathoms off the north-west coast of Africa. But these early results must be accepted only with great caution, for the methods then in use were not such as to ensure accuracy at any depth greater than a few hundred fathoms. Sir John Ross, the arctic explorer, was much in advance of his times as regarded such investiga- tions ; he invented a “deep-sea clamm” for bringing up a portion of the bottom, and on September 1, 1819, in Possession Bay, made a successful sounding at a depth of 1000 fathoms, which is especially memorable because it was clear, from the organisms which came up entangled in the line, that animal life existed at that depth.

The Operation of sounding is readily performed in shallow water by letting down a weight attached to a cord, which is marked off into fathoms by worsted tucked under the strands, the tens and hundreds being indicated by

different colours. The bottom of the weight usually presents a hollow, which is filled with tallow, so that a portion of the material from the bottom may be brought up and give an indication of its nature. Some- times a valved cavity is used instead of the tallow. It is easy to see that the longer the line let out the greater will be its friction in passing through the water, the more slowly the weight will descend, and the slighter will be the shock transmitted to the upper extremity when it reaches the bottom; indeed, at what are now considered very moderate depths this becomes quite imperceptible : hence in deep-sea sounding the line is carefully watched as it runs out, and the time each 100-fathom mark enters the water is noted down. Owing to the increasing friction these intervals gradually lengthen, but any sudden incre- ment indicates that the bottom has been reached, for it shows that the weight has ceased to act, and that further descent of the line is due merely to its own gravitation. For instance, in one of the "Challenger" soundings, with a line 1 inch in circumference, and with a weight of 4 ewts. attached, the time occupied in descending from 2900 to 3000 fathoms was 2 m. 10 s.; from 3000 to 3100 fathoms 2 m. 13 s., and from 3100 to 3200 fathoms 3 m. 14 s., this sudden increase showing that the bottom had been reached in the interval.

Furthermore, the weight required to sink a line in deep

water with sufficient rapidity for purposes of accurate ob- servation is so great that it is found impracticable to bring it up again without putting an undue

strain upon the rope or seriously pro-

longing the operation. Hence in 1854

Brooke, an American, devised an ap-

paratus by which the weight was de-

tached when it reached the bottom and only a small tube containing a sample of the bottom was brought up. This was in fact a modifica- tion of

an apparatus which had been devised by Hooke in the 17th century ; he made an arrangement in which a light sphere was sunk by a heavy weight, but was liberated on reach- ing the bottom,—the depth being then de- duced from the time which elapsed between the sinking of the globe and its reappearance at the surface. Of the f various modifications of Brooke's sounding ma- chine, perhaps the most MA famous is that con- structed by the black- sinith of H.M.S. " Hy- dra," and commonly known as the " Hydra sounding rod." It was used on the cruises of the "Lightning" and "Porcupine" and dur- ing the earlier part of ; the "Challenger" expe- Fis: 1. Fig. 2.

dition. This apparatus is shown in fig. 1, where AB is the rod, terminating in a tube below so that it may bring up a sample of the bottom ; the weights F fit loosely round it and are supported by the wire E which passes over the stud D, where a spring presses against it, the strength of which is so adjusted that it is unable to displace the wire as long as the strain of the weights

:

Lh U

—

——

Hig. 3. Fig. 4. Fig. 5.

is upon it, but so soon as this is relieved by their rest- ing on the bottom the wire is thrust off the stud, and

281

when the line is hauled in the weights and wire are left behind.

An improved apparatus has recently been invented by Mr J. Y. Buchanan, and used by him on board the tele- graph ships " Dacia" and " Buccaneer," which can be used either in shallow or deep water, and has the advantage of

bringing up samples both of the water and of the mud from the bottom. It consists of a hollow cylinder A, fig. 2, at the top and bottom of which are india-rubber valves HK, opening upwards, so that water passes freely through them during the descent but is retained as soon as a plug of mud occupies the tube B. The weight EE which sur- rounds the cylinder is supported by a wire F passing over a peculiar hook D, shown separately in figs. 3, 4,5; when sounding in shallow water it is not necessary to detach the weight, and the wire is therefore placed as in fig. 3; when working at greater depths the wire rests on the other side of the hook, as in fig. 4,—the result being that on the bottom being reached it falls into the upper part of the notch, fig. 5, and continues to press the tube into the mud, but when hauling up commences the wire slips out alto- gether and the weight is left at the bottom. A valve L, M, N is sometimes used to retain the sample of the bottom,

At the present time deep-sea sounding is extensively practised for telegraphic purposes, and is almost entirely conducted by means of wire instead of rope, a method introduced by Sir William Thomson. The friction of the wire in passing through the water is of course very much less than that of rope, and hence it runs out and can be hauled in much more rapidly; a smaller sinker may be used, and in very many instances it can be recovered, It is customary in sounding for cables to make very frequent obser- vations (once in from 1 to 50 miles), for it is found that the laying can be accomplished with much less risk of accident if the contour of the ocean-bed be accurately known. The saving of time by the use of wire is very considerable; but the advantage is not so obvious in running out as in hauling in, because a heavier weight is used to increase the rate, this of course involving a loss of iron sinkers. For instance, an apparatus similar to that mentioned above as being used by the “Challenger” took on an average 24 m. 22s. to sink 2000 fathoms, whilst in a recent sounding by the ‘* Albatross” the weight ran out 2000 fathoms in 20 m. 30s. and was hauled in in 21 m. 9 s.,a rate which would have been quite unattainable by the aid of rope. The saving in the matter of sinkers is by no means inconsiderable; instead of 8 or 4 ewts. , only 50 to 60 Ib are used, and Sigsbee has calculated that this difference is sufficient to pay for any extra loss there may be by the breaking of the wire. Captain Magnaghi of the Italian navy and Captains Sigsbee and Belknap of the American Survey have

successfully developed the method of sounding with wire, and owing to its use the last-mentioned officer was able to survey the route from San Francisco to Japan, doing all his sounding by hand, which would have been quite impossible had hempen rope been used. When soundings are made for scientific purposes it is customary to ascertain the temperature, both at the bottom and at intermediate depths, by a thermometer of special construction.

For further information, see Sir Wyville Thomson, The Depths of the Sea (London, 1874); Warrative of thé Cruise of H.M.S. ‘‘ Chailenger” (London, 1885); Sigsbee, Deep-Sea Sounding and Dredging (Washington, 1880); Wille, Norwegian North Atlantic Expedition, pt. iv., ‘Apparatus and how used,’ 1876-78; Mill, The Scottish Marine Station (Edinburgh, 1885) 5 and, for an improved apparatus used on board the ‘‘Talisman,” La Nature, xii. p. 120, 1884; also the annual Reports of the U.S. Fish Commission. (W. E. HO.)

SOUTH, Rozserr (1633-1716), one of the wittiest of English divines, was the son of a London merchant, and was born at Hackney, Middlesex, in 1633. He was educated at Westminster school, whence in 1651 he was elected to Christ Church, Oxford. He became B.A. in 1654, and the same year wrote several Latin verses to congratulate Cromwell on concluding peace with the Dutch, which were published in a collection of university poems. The following year he published a Latin poem, entitled Musica Incantans. After commencing M.A. in 1657 he was in the habit before obtaining orders in 1658 of preaching as the champion of Calvinism against Socinianism and Arminianism. He was also at this time a strong supporter of Presbyterianism, but on the approach of the Restoration his views on church government under-

went a change. In fact he adhered successively to the triumphant party as represented by Cromwell, Charles, James, and William, and there are substantial grounds for the assertion of Anthony Wood that he was much indebted for his preferments to his zeal for “the powers that be.” On 10th

August 1660 he was chosen public orator of the university, and in 1661 domestic chaplain to Lord Clarendon. In March 1663 he was made prebend of Westminster, and shortly afterwards he received from his university the degree of D.D. In 1667 he became chaplain to the duke of York. He was a zealous advocate of the doctrine of passive obedience, and also strongly opposed the Toleration Act, declaiming in unmeasured terms against the various nonconformist sects. In 1676 he was appointed chaplain to Lawrence Hyde (afterwards earl of Rochester), ambassador-extraordinary to the king of Poland, and of his visit he sent an interesting account to Dr Edward Pocock in a letter, dated Dantzic, 16th December 1677, which was printed along with South's Posthumous Works in 1717. In 1678 he was promoted by the chapter of Westminster to the rectory of Islip, Oxfordshire. Owing, it is said, to a personal grudge, South in 1693 published Animadversions on Dr Sherlock's Book, entitled a Vindication of the Holy and Ever Blessed Trinity, in which the views of Sherlock were attacked with much sarcastic bitterness. Sherlock, in answer, published a Defence in 1694, to which South replied in Tritheism Charged upon Dr Sherlock's New Notion of the Trinity, and the Charge Made Good. The controversy was carried by the rival parties into the pulpit, and occasioned such keen feeling that the king interposed to stop it. During the greater part of the reign of Anne South re- mained comparatively quiet, but in 1710 he showed himself a keen opponent of Sacheverell. He died 8th July 1716, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

The style of South is vigorous, pungent, and brilliant, though tending to exuberance. His sermons are strongly practical, but his theory of life is not ascetic. His wit gencrally inclines towards sarcasm, and it was probably the knowledge of his quarrelsome temperament that prevented his promotion to a bishopric. If he sacrificed principle to his desire for preferment, his ambition was not of a sordid kind, for he was noted for the extent of his charities. He published a large number of single sermons, and they appeared in a collected form in 1692 in six volumes, reaching a second edition in his lifetime in 1715. His Opera Posthuma Latina, including his will, his Latin poems, and his orations while public orator, with memoirs of his life, appeared in 1717. His Works were published with a memoir by the Clarendon press in 1823, and have been several times reprinted. The contemporary notice of South by Wood in his Athen is characterized by a

strongly hostile tone, partly to be explained by a criticism of South at Wood's expense.

SOUTH AFRICAN REPUBLIC. See Transvaat.

SOUTHAMPTON, a municipal and parliamentary borough, which gives name to Hampshire, or the county of Southampton, and one of the principal seaports on the south coast of England, is beautifully situated at the head of Southampton Water, forming the mouth of the Test, on a sloping peninsula, bounded on the east by the Itchen, at the terminus of the South-Western Railway, 79 miles south-west of London, 13 south-south-west of Winchester, and 24 west-north-west of Portsmouth. Southampton is also a county of itself,—the county of the town of Southampton. It preserves much of its antique ap- pearance, but, although in the older parts the streets if picturesque are narrow and irregular, it may still claim the distinction it enjoyed in Leland's time of ranking "as one of the fairest that is in England," handsome and. spacious shops lining the principal streets, while the suburbs are studded with numerous villas and mansions embosomed in woods. There are still considerable remains of the old town walls built in the time of Richard II., the most remarkable being a portion of the west walls, with an

arcade on its exterior face. Four of the seven gates are comparatively well preserved—North or Bar Gate, South Castle Gate, Westgate, and Blue Anchor Gate. The finest of these is Bargate, in a room above which is the ancient Guildhall, where the quarter sessions are held. The representations of Sir Bevis of Hampton and the giant Ascupart which formerly stood on each side have recently been obliterated. The castle, originally a Saxon fortress, and rebuilt when the walls were erected, was partly demolished in 1650. After its rebuilding had been begun by the marquis of Lansdowne in 1805, it was sold, and in 1818 the site was parcelled out for building plots. In the vicinity of the castle there are some houses of very ancient date, including King's House (Early Norman). The two old churches, St Michael's (originally Norman about the date of 1080) and Holyrood, have been in a great degree modernized ; the former contains a beautiful Byzantine font and a monument to Sir R. Lyster, chief- justice in the 16th

century. The French chapel of St Julien, originally attached to the hospital of God’s House, founded by Henry VIII. for eight poor persons, is of Norman architecture ; it contains the burial-place of the

gy ‘3 j. Als 22. ore — ? a a 2 Ben iy inf

+)

| : ee a Bee

7

Ks 3 ‘ Petar =P: hn £0 | I 5 S— Corned arlene i “ r Son > * us

5;

= a Victor. : i i pi re D by é a (f ra bi SQ y arg > bien

5

}

Seale of ¥e a Mile

JBartholomon Edit Plan of Southampton.

earl of Cambridge, Lord Scrope, and Sir Thomas Grey, who in 1415 were executed outside the Bargate for con- spiring against Henry V. Among the modern public buildings are the Watts memorial hall, erected in 1876 at a cost of £8000, the municipal office, occupying the old audit-house, the custom-house, the philharmonic hall, the assembly rooms, the county court-house, the corn exchange and chamber of commerce, and two theatres. The educa- tional institutions include the Hartley Institution, founded by bequest for the advancement of natural history, astro- nomy, antiquities, and classical and Oriental literature, and now embracing a library, reading-room, museum, art gallery, laboratories, and schools of science and art associated with South Kensington ; the Edward VI. grammar school,

founded in 1550, and reorganized in 1875; and Alderman Taunton's school, founded in 1752, and lately remodelled. The school board was established in 1871. The benevolent and charitable institutions are numerous, embracing the dispensary (1809), the royal South Hants infirmary (1838), the female orphan asylum, the homeopathic dis- pensary (1873), St Mary's cottage hospital (1873), and the Palk memorial home (1876). To the north of the town is Southampton Common, formerly part of the manor of Shirley ; and adjoining the town to the north of Above Bar Street is the Public Park, prettily laid out and containing statues of Lord Palmerston, Dr Watts, and Mayor Andrews. The town is supplied with water partly from artesian wells and partly from reservoirs. The population of the muni- cipal borough (area 2004 acres) in 1871 was 53,741, and in 1881 it was 60,051. In 1885 the area of the parlia- mentary borough, formerly coextensive with that of the municipal borough, was extended to include the parish of Millbrook, the ecclesiastical district of the Holy Saviour, Bitterne, the parish of St Mary Extra, and the detached portion of Hound included within St Mary Extra. The population of this area in 1881 was 84,384. It is repre- sented by two members.

The importance of the port dates from the Norman Conquest, and was originally due to its relation to Winchester. It had a con- siderable trade in wine as early as 1152, and from Queen Mary it obtained a monopoly in the importation of sweet wines from the Grecian islands. With Venice and Italy it had a large trade as early as the 14th century, and in the subsequent century it had a eounexion with Newfoundland, while its Channel trade and its shipbuilding were also of importance. About the end of the 16th century its trade had, however, begun to decline, and the visitation of the plague in 1665 tended still further to aid its retrogression. Some improvement took place in its prospects by the creation of a Pier and Harbour Commission in 1803, and the erection of the Royal Victoria pier in 1831 was a further step towards prosperity, but its modern trade really dates from the opening up of railway communication with London in 1840. It possesses one of the finest natural harbours and has the advantage of a double tide, a second high tide oecurring two hours after the first. While largely dependent for its import trade on its connexion with London and its easy communication with France, it has become an outlet for the manufactures of the midland and northern towns. Its great tidal dock, completed in 1842 at a cost of

£140,000, has an area of 16 acres with a depth of 18 feet at low water, and the inner dock, completed in 1851, an area of 10 acres and a depth of 28 feet. Two other docks embracing an area of 50 acres are being con- structed. ‘There are also four dry docks, capable of receiving vessels of the largest tonnage at all tides. Within recent years the port has lost the overland trade between London and India by the removal to London of the headquarters of the Peninsular and Oriental Steam Navigation Company. At present itis the head- quarters of the Royal Mail Steam Packet Company for the West Indies and the Pacific (via Panama) and for Brazil and the River Plate, the Union Line for the Cape of Good Hope, Natal, and East Africa, and the London and South Western Railway Company’s steamers to the French coast. Steamers also sail regularly for Ireland and various ports on the west coast of England; and the steamers of the North German Lloyd Company touch at the port on the way to and from New York, and also to and from Asiatic and Australian ports. The total number of vessels that entered the port in 1876 was 7840 of 1,201,301 tons, of whieh 3780 with a tonnage of 201,434 were sailing vessels, and 4060 with a tonnage of 999,867 were steamers. T’he number that cleared in the same year was 8047 of 1,174,365 tons, of which 3994 (196,064 tons) were sailing vessels, and 4053 (978,301 tons) were steamers. In 1885 the number of vessels that entered the port was 9768 of 1,539,357 tons, of which 3456 (175,900 tons) were sailing vessels, and 6312 (1,363,457 tons) were steamers. The number that eleared in the same year was 9641 of 1,523,759 tons, of which 3350 (182,688 tons) were sailing vessels, and 6291 (1,341,071 tons) were steamers. Since 1845 the trade has increased more than tenfold, although within recent years the port has suffered from the prevailing dulness. The total value of imports and exports in 1845 was £1,475,000 ; in 1880 the value of the imports was £9,205,183 and in 1884 it was £7,544,354 ; for these last years the value of the exports of United Kingdom produee was £9,306, 326 and £6,909,072; while the value of the exports of foreign and colonial produce and manufactures in 1882 was £1,589, 652 and in 1884 £1,150,954. Among the principal in1ports are cocoa, coffee, corn (including maize), apples, provisions (especially butter, eggs, and potatoes from France and the Channel

Isles), rum and brandy, sugar, wine, wool, and rags. Among the prineipal exports of the produce of the United Kingdom are apparel, cottou goods, leather, linen goods, machinery, copper and iron goods, woollen and worsted goods. ‘The number of ships built at the port in 1885 was 19, of 17,875 tons burden.

The Roman station of Clausentum was situated at Bitterne on the opposite side of the Itchen, where extensive Roman remains have been found. The present town was founded by the West Saxons, probably soon after their landing under Cerdic and Cynric on the shores of Southampton Water in 495. The name Hantun-scire (Hamptonshire) oeeurs in the Saxon Chronicle under date 7 55, and Hamtuu is first mentioned separately in 837. The prefix ‘‘South” was probably added after the annexation of Wessex to Merciain 920, to distinguish it from the Hampton in Mercia afterwards called Northampton. The town was frequently ravaged by the Danes in the 9th and 10th centuries. Canute, after his establishmeut on the throne, made it his occasional residence, and Southampton beach is reputed to have been the seene of his rebuke to the flattery of his courtiers, by the demonstration of his powerlessness to control the waves. Southampton is mentioned in Domesday as Hantune. It possessed a mint as early as 925. It was frequently visited by successive monarehs from the time of Henry I. In 1338 it repulsed an attaek of the French and Genoese. – In 1415 it was the rendezvous of the army of Henry V. for France, and during his stay in the town he detected the conspiracy against him of the earl of Cambridge, Lord Scrope, and Sir Thomas Grey, who were exeeuted outside the Bargate. In 1512 the marquis of Dorset embarked from the port with 10,000 men to the aid of

| Ferdinand of Spain against France, aud in 1522 the earl of Surrey

set out from it with a large fleet to eseort Charles V. Queen Elizabeth held a court at Southampton in 1569. On aecount of the outbreak of the plague in London in 1625 the council was transferred by the king to Southampton, where on the 7th September a treaty was signed with the United Provinces. The town received its first charter from Henry IJ., and a charter of incorporation from Henry VI. in 1445 under the style of ‘‘ mayor, bailiff, and burgesses.” This charter was somewhat modified by that granted by

Charles I. which remained the governing charter till the passing of the Municipal Act. The corporation act as the urban sanitary authority. The town first returned members to parliament in 1295. Among eminent persons connected with Southampton are Dibdin the song writer, Bishop Peaeoeke, Thomas Fuller, and Dr Watts. See History of Southampton, by J. Sylvester Davies, 1883.

SOUTH AUSTRALIA, which lies between 129° and Plate 141° E. long., has New South Wales and Victoria on lV.

the E., Western Australia on the W., and the Southern Ocean on the S. Originally its northern line was 26° S. lat., but by the addition of the Northern Territory, or Alexandra Land, the area has been extended from 380,070 square miles to 903,690, and the northern border carried to the Indian Ocean. The length is therefore from lat. 38° 8. to 11° S., nearly 2000 miles. Being much more northern and less southern than the neighbouring colony, its present designation is incorrect in point of fact.

The southern coast-line shows two large gulfs, Spencer and St Vincent,— the first 180 miles long, the other 100. Spencer Gulf is open to the ocean, while St Vincent Gulf is partly shielded by Kangaroo Island, with Investigator Straits as its westerly entrance and Backstairs Passage for an easterly one. Yorke Peninsula separates the two gulfs. Port Lincoln and Sleaford Bay are at the south-west of Spencer Gulf. On the western side of Eyria Peninsula— the land westward of Spencer Gulf—are the following bays :—Coffin, Anxious, Venus, Streaky, Denial, and Fowler. The junction of South and Western Australia is on the Australian Bight. Encounter Bay is on the Victo- rian side, with Lacepede, Guichen, Rivoli, and Macdonnell Bays to the south-east. Flinders, Investigator, and Nuyt Islands are south-west. Cape Jervis is at the eastern entrance of St Vincent Gulf, Spencer at the western. In Northern Territory are Melville, Adam, Arnhem, and Raffles Bays, Van Diemen's Gulf, Port Essington, and Port Darwin (lat. 12° §.). The Gulf of Carpentaria divides the territory from Cape York Peninsula of Queens- land. Melville, Bathurst, and Groote-Eylandt are northern islands. The ranges of hills are few, rarely reaching 3000 feet. One chain runs north from Cape Jervis. Flinders range has Brown and Arden, 3000 feet. Lofty,

near Adelaide, is 2330 feet. Volcanic cones, as Gambier and Schanck, are south-east, near Victoria. In general the country is level, where not slightly undulating. It is far from being well watered, especially to the west- ward and in the interior. The Murray, passing through Lake Victoria, had previously received most of the drain- age of the three eastern colonies. The Torrens flows by Adelaide. Few streams reach the ocean. Cooper's Creek drains part of Western Queensland. The Indian seas receive the Alligator, Liverpool, Roper, Macarthur, Daly and Victoria rivers. Albert and the Coorong are lakes at the Murray mouth. The depressed area northward con- tains Lakes Torrens, Eyre, Gairdner, Blanche, Hope, and Amadeus. The overland telegraph to Port Darwin passes mostly through an ill-watered country, with oases around springs. The population, 330,000, is principally within 100 miles of Adelaide, the capital, in lat. 35° S. The leading places north of Adelaide are Gawler, 25 miles, Barossa 38, Kapunda 49, Angaston 51, Port Wakefield 60, Clare 90, Kooringa of Burra Burra 100, Moonta 100 north-west, Kadina 96 north-west, Blyth 100, Morgan or North-West Bend 105, Broughton 150, St Petersburg 154, Port Pirie 155 north-west, Port Augusta 240 north- west, Colton 320, Blinman 350. 'To the east are Barker 21, Echunga 23, Nairne 25, Kingston or Port Caroline 170 south-east, Narracoorte 220, Penola 250, Gambier 290, Macdonnell 304. Lincoln is 210 west. Adelaide Port is 7, Glenelg 7, Brighton 10, Willunga 30 south; Goolwa, the Murray port, is 60 south. Palmerston of Port Darwin is the chief town of Northern Territory; Southport is 25 miles south of it. Other settlements are inland mining townships. There are 36 counties, 4 pas- toral districts, 23 municipalities, and 112 district councils in South Australia proper.

Climate.—Excepting Western Australia, this is the driest portion of the island continent. The rain clouds from the Pacific or the Indian Ocean have little store left on reach- ing the South Australian districts. The north-west summer monsoons favour the northern coast-lands, though the rains penetrate but few miles inland. The trade-winds bring only dry blasts from the Queensland side. A large propor- tion of the south-western shore has a very partial deposi- tion, and even the southern Yorke Peninsula, laved by two great gulfs, seldom shows any surface water. The conflict between the polar and equatorial currents occasionally throws down rain in the interior, though many a thunder- storm fails to let fall more than a few drops. But the

south-eastern coast catches a fair amount of rain from the western breezes off the Southern Ocean. The settled districts have winter rains, when Adelaide plains are transformed from parched sterility to luxuriant vegetation. The average annual rainfall there is but 20 inches, with an evaporation of three times that amount. In 1885 (a dry year) Adelaide had only 16 inches. In some years only 5 inches have fallen, even on parts of the sea-shore. The interior, however, has been known to have extensive floods after sudden storms. The northern coast, as at Port Darwin, has from 50 to 70 inches, though for several months without a shower. The heat is considerable during the dry summer time, though cold is felt severely on winter mornings and nights, even in the tropics, when a dozen degrees of frost may be followed in a few hours by a tem- perature of 80° or 90°.

The health conditions of the colony are but little inferior, except in Adelaide and Port Darwin, to those ‘ruling in Tasmania and New Zealand, which are so much cooler and wetter. Dry heat is never so prejudicial as a moist heat. A raging hot wind from the north and north-west, to which Adelaide is so unpleasantly exposed, is trying to young children, though it never brings noxious

gases. On the contrary, when passing over eucalyptus forests it brings down health-giving airs, in spite of 160° in the sun, or even 120° in the shade. Diarrhoea may trouble in summer, and catarrh in winter; but, with a birth-rate of 39 in the thousand and a death-rate of from 12 to 17, South Australia stands more favourably than England in relation to health. Recently, several town- ships had for the year but seven deaths in the thousand, exhibiting a freedom from mortality three times greater than London. The death-rate of the colony during 1885 was only 12°48 to the thousand, while the birth-rate was 37°70. One-third of the deaths were in Adelaide. Reports from the tropical Northern Territory speak of fever and ague, especially among imprudent gold-miners.

Geology.—The few mountain ranges scattered throughout the colony were once, in all probability, but islands rising in a mediterranean sea that connected the Indian Ocean and Java Sea with the Southern Ocean. Over at least the southern half of South Australian territory the water flowed in

Tertiary times. The elimatic effect of such an archipelago of islands must have been very different from what now is realized in that region. The rise of the country displayed that vast extent of arenaceous limestone forming the southern coast floor, and extending westward hundreds of miles in Western Australia, and far eastward in Victoria. The south coast is still rising. The Murray cuts its channel through this vast coralline formation. According to the Rev. J. Tenison Woods, the newer Pliocene is near Adelaide, while the older is at Mount Gambier. The Murray cliffs are Upper Miocene, and the Murray flats are Lower Miocene. He anes little or none of Eocene. Flint bands occur in this lime- stone, particularly at Gambier. The Biscuit country, south-east, has flat limestone concretionary cakes on the surface, more or less rounded. Beds of sand cover large areas of the recent rock. Caves abound in the Gambier district, provided with stalactites and stalagmites. Subterranean rivers flow through some of the caverns, and are occasionally reached by natural sloping wells. Gambier exhibits much Bryozoan limestone. Its 40 species and 16 genera of Polyzoa are in Lower Crag. The coral limestone there has extensive flint bands. Foraminifera are of many kinds; some of the Rhizopods are still existing in Australian waters. Sharks' teeth and large nautili are frequently met with. Most fossils are in casts, except Pecten, Bryozoa, Echini, &c. The Murray cliffs mark the remains of an extensive formation, since largely denuded. The Gambier deposits prove the presence of an ancient deep sea, when little of Australia, as we now perceive it, had any existence. The South Australian ranges are generally of Primary order, the Silurian formation being often pierced or flooded by igneous rocks, which have transmuted the strata. While granites and granitoids are in great masses, the basalts and greenstones of a later age are not wanting in the ranges. The Primary rocks are observed, also, in Eyria Peninsula, Port Lincoln, the central continental districts, and very prominently in the Northern Territory. Flat-topped sandstone hills prevail north- ward. Westward and south-eastward the Tertiary rests on a granite floor. Eastward there is the same Primary presence, with erystalline mountains developing silver mines just over the border. Mctamorphic rocks, rising amidst Tertiary beds, are strong in Yorke Peninsula, producing much copper. The tablelands are of horizontal sandstone, often on spirifcrous limestone. Desert sand- stone may be Miocene. Near the Victorian boundary, in the south-east corner of South Australia, recent volcanic action is apparent. Several of the lakes there were ouce craters. The deep Blue

Lake, or Devil’s Inkstand, occupies the centre of Mount Gambier. The banks are nearly 300 feet high, and are formed of lavas and volcanic ashes. Cinder walls are detected, and other varieties of volcanic products. Scveral smaller cones surround the great mount. The country itself is of the usual Tertiary lime- stone, more or less covered with ashes. Mount Schanck, between Gambier and the sea, is known as the Devil’s Punchbowl. This cone of lava has an empty crater 200 feet deep. Gambier and Schanck are landmarks to passing mariners. Among the fossil forms in Tertiary Pliocene strata are those of the huge Diprotodon, a marsupial vegetable feeder 16 fect in height, with gigantic kangaroos, emus, wombats, &c.

Minerals.—South Australia, though without coal, was the first Australian colony to have a metallic mine, and the first to possess a gold mine. In 1841 the wheel of a dray, going over a hill near Adelaide, disclosed to view silver-lead ore. In the midst of the bad times in 1843 the Kapunda copper mine was found. In 1845 the wonderful Burra Burra copper was first wrought. The land, 10,000 acres, cost £10,000; and for several years the dividends to shareholders were 800 per cent. perannum. The first colonial mineral export was 30 tons of lead ore, value £128, in

1843. The copper declined as prices fell. It was £322,983 in 1885, when rates were £50 a ton, but £762,386 ten years before with over £90. In 1886 most of the mines were closed. Between 250 and 400 miles north of Adelaide a very rich copper district exists. Lead is very abundant. Manganese, nickcl,- bismuth, antimony, and silver have been mincd. ‘Tin is seen in granitic places. Iron occurs in almost all formations and in all conditions. There is abundance of hematite, micaceous, bog, and other ores rieh in the metal. Talisker and other mines paid in silver. The wonderful Silverton, of Barrier Ranges, in a desert, is just outside the boundary, though 300 miles only from Adclaide while 600 from Sydney. Gold was got from a quartz vein at the Vietoria mine, near Adelaide, as early as 1846, but did not pay the company. Partial gold working has been conducted at Echunga, &c., in southern hills. There are rich alluvial and quartz gold mines in Northern Territory, at from 100 to 150 miles south of Port Darwin. For the year 1884 the yield was £77,935. Of 1849 miners 1205 were

Chinese. Gold is now worked at Waukaringa, 225 miles north of Adelaide. Copper, tin, and silver are found in Northern Territory. Among other minerals asbestos, roofing slates, and fine marbles may be named. Some forty years ago precious stones, especially garnets and sapphires, were gathered in the Barossa Hills. Carbonaceous material is found at the Coorong, &c., yielding 50 per cent. of oil. Lake Eyre has a rnde coal. Kapunda marble quarry is a success. In 1885 there were 16,493 acres leased for minerals. The value of minerals exported in 1885 was £338,132.

Agricultwre.—This is essentially an agricultural colony. In its first establishment, farming was intended as the main occupation.

The land was cut up for sale into eighty-acre lots with the view of scttling the people on arrival, and concentrating them, instead of

having them scattered as in the neighbouring colonies, in which pastoral pursuits completely dwarfed the farming industry. This wise provision made the eolony for years the supplier of breadstuffs to Sydney, Melbourne, Brisbane, Perth, and Auckland. As neigh- bours became wheat-producers, Adelaide merchants had to seek markets in Natal, Mauritius, the Cape, or even Europe. At all times the state has lent every assistance to agriculture. As the colony suffers more from drought than anything else, public reser- voirs are constructed and artesian wells are sunk. Forest culture has especially attracted Government attention. Reforesting and the establishment of nurseries for the trees, fruits, and vegetables of other lands go handinhand. Forest reserves already amount to 150,000 acres. Hundreds of thousands of trees are annually planted.

The land system, sound at the beginning, has been repeatedly amended, especially with a view to the advancement of pastoral interests. Instead of cash sales, as formerly, conditional purchases may be made, extending over a long period, subject to conditions of residence and cultivation. At the end of 1884 only ten million aeres had been purchased. There were, however, 53,000,000 acres enclosed, chiefly for pasturage, and 2,785,490 under cultivation. The crop for March 1885 was as follows :—wheat, 1,942,653 acres ; fallow, 450,536; hay, 308,429; artificial grasses, 28,217; barley, 15,697; lucerne, 8649; oats, 7264; orchard, 5825; potatoes, 5666 ; pease, 4601; vineyard, 4590. The culture indicates a warm and dry climate,

different from New Zealand or the tropical coast of Queensland. The product of South Australian fields is so much smaller per acre than in any of the neighbouring colonies that only an open level country of cheap land, with effective machinery at moderate cost, could be managed at a profit. Going northward from Adelaide the country becomes too dry for roots, and then too precarious even for wheat. The county of Adelaide is very favourably placed for vineyards, oliveyards, and orchards. About half the olive trees and a third of the almond trees are there. Of 3,704,107 grape vines in the colony, Adelaide county had 2,158,468, and Light, in the neighbouring hills, had 860,356. There were in 1884 478,535 gallons of wine made. The commissioners lately reported that the light white wines kept sound and good, while full-bodied red wines continue to improve with age. The Water Conservation Department is of great service to agriculture. Tropical cultivation receives some attention already in Northern Territory. The Chinese raise rice crops, there being heavy rains near the coast. Daly river has excellent soil and climate for sugar and coffee.

The pastoral progress has been considerable, notwithstanding want of moisture. In 1885 there were 1528 leases over 214,916 square miles, besides 257 annual leases with 11,214 square miles. There were then 168,420 horses, 389,726 catztle, 163,807 pigs, 6,696,406 sheep (twenty sheep per head of population). Of these the settled counties had 151,058 horses, 179,206 cattle, and 4,995,394 sheep. In Northern Territory, with 136,000 cattle, there were in December 1885 6000 horses and 40,000 sheep, that country, excepting in the dry interior, being unfitted for wool- bearers. The total export of wool grown in South Australia had only the value of £1,671,775 in 1885. The prices obtained were a fourth less than ten years before. The rabbit pest is felt as seriously in pastoral as in agricultural operations. Kangaroos are far less troublesome to stockholders than in Queensland. Where water can be procured by dams, reservoirs, or wells stock can be kept,

- is well represented in South Australia.

since, where, the grass fails, cotton bush and various saline plants supply sufficient food. An artesian well lately was sunk 1220 feet, Wool is

remarkably fine there. While a South Australia merino has 2720 serrations to an inch of wool, a Leicester sheep has but 1850.

Founa.—South Australia is not separated from the neighbour- ing colonies by any natural boundaries ; hence the fauna ineludes many animals which are also to be found in the land lying to the east and west. The northern half of the colony lies within the tropies, and possesses a tropical fauna, which is, however, practic- ally identieal with that of northern Queensland, In spite of its immense extent north and south, and a corresponding diversity in climate, the eolony is poorer in animal life than its neighbours. It possesses thirty-five genera of mammals. These include both genera of the order Monotremata,—the Echidna, or spiny ant- eater, and the Ornithorhynchus, or duck-billed platypus, both of which are found also in eastern Australia and Tasmania, The other order of Mammalia associated with Australia, the Marsupialia, It contains seven genera of Macropodidx or kangaroos, including the wallaby and kangaroo rat, four genera of Phalangistidx, or opossums, and five species of Dasyuridx, or ‘native eats.” Two genera of this family are peculiar to the region—the Chatocercus and the Antichinomys ; the latter is found in the interior. It is a mouse-like animal with large ears, and is remarkable for the elongation of its fore-arm and hind-foot and for the complete absence of the hallux. The Phascolomys, or wombat, onc of the largest of the marsupials, is also found in South Australia, and the curious Myrmccobius, or ant- eater of Western Australia. This remarkable animal is about the size of a squirrel ; it possesses fifty-two teeth (a greater number than any known quadruped), and, unlike the other members of its order, the female has no pouch, the young hanging from nipples concealed amongst the hair of her abdomen. The Cheropus, with peculiarly slender limbs and a pouch opening backwards, is found in the interior. The remaining Mammalia consist of the dingo, or native dog, and a few species of Muridx, the mouse family, and Cheiroptera, or bats. There are about 700 specics of birds, including 60 species of parrots. Of the 9 families peculiar to the Australian region, 5 are well represented, including the Meliphagidex (honey-suckers), Cacatwide (cockatoos), Platycercidzx (broad-tailed and grass parroquets), Megapodide (mound-makers!) and Casuaridx (cassowaries), The last-named family is represented by the Dromeus, or emu, which is hunted in some parts of the colony. Reptiles are fairly represented: there are fifteen species of poisonous snakes. The lizards

are very peculiar; South and Western Australia contain twelve peculiar genera. No tailed Amphibia exist in the continent, but frogs and toads are plentiful.

Flora.—The plant species resemble those of the eastern colonies and Western Australia, but are more limited in variety. The

‘colony, from its dryness, lacks a number known elsewhere.

Enormous areas are almost destitute of forests or of timber trees. The Hucalyptus family, so valuable for timber and gum as well as for sanitary reasons, are fairly represented. Acacias arc abundant, the bark of some being an article of commerce. Flinders range has much of the valuable sugar-gum, Zucalyptus Corynocalyz, which is being now preserved in forest reserves. Its timber is very hard and strong, not warping, resisting damp and ants. The head-flowered stringybark, Huc. capitellata, has a persistent bark. A sort of stringybark, uc. tetrodonta, is found in Northern Territory. The gouty-stem trce (Adansonia) or monkey-bread of the north is a sort of baobab. About 500 northern plants are Indian. The Tamarindus indica occurs in Arnhem land, with native rice, rattans, and wild nutmeg. The cedar is of the Indiau variety. Pines are numerous in the south, palms in the north; among the most beautiful is the Kentia-acwminata. Banksias are very common in sandy districts. Flowering shrubs are common in the south, There are 180 known grasses in Northern Territory.

Fisheries.—Whaling was formerly an importaut industry about Encounter Bay, as sealing was in Kangaroo Island. The whales have migrated, and the’seals are exterminated. On the northern side trepang or béche-de-mer fishery has commenced, and pearl fisheries have been established. Of fish within colonial waters there are forty-two peculiar genera. The tropical north has similar fish to those of North Queensland, while those of southern bays resemble many of the species of Victoria, Tasmania, and New South Wales. There are the barracouta, bonito, bream, carp, catfish, rock eod and Murray cod, conger, crayfish, cuttle, dogfish, eel, flatfish, flat- head, flounder, flying-fish, gadfish, grayling, gurnard, hake, John Dory, ray, salmon (so-called), schnapper, seahorse, shark, sole, squid, swordfish, whiting, &. Though called by English names, the fish do not always correspond to those in Europe. The Murray cod is a noble freshwater fish,

Commerce. —There is little speculative trade, the shipping being employed in the conveyance of the exports of the colony and the introduction of needful supplies. The imports during 1884 amounted to £5,749,3538, of which £2,983,296 came from the United eee ee eee

1 One genus of this remarkable family—the Zipoa—is confined to the district. –

Kingdom, £997,785 from New South Wales, £714,272 from Victoria, £38,460 from Tasmania, £34,675 from New Zealand, £97,230 from India, £28,011 from Natal, £55,598 from Hongkong, £19,201 from Canada, £239,093 from Mauritius, £54,945 from China, £49,028 from France, £61,727 from Germany, £72,214 from Norway and Sweden, £186,236 from the United States. Of the exports, £6,623,704, there went to the United Kingdom £4,081,864; New South Wales, £773,240; Victoria, £651,019; Queensland, £255,746; Cape Colony, £249,844; India, £144, 287 ; Western Australia, £132,554; Natal, £78,118; France, LOT, 000% Mauritius, £52,010; Belgium, £33,092. Among the exports during 1884 were wool, £2,616,626; wheat, £1,694,005; flour, £794,812; copper, £469,231; sheepskins, £87,455; silver-lead, £66,592; bark, £45,049; jams, £35,338; horses, £30,845; tallow, £28,403; wine, £17,061; gold, £15,469. There were imported overland 411,307 sheep, and exported 168,770. Of shipping, there entered 1120 vessels of 909,335 tons, and eleared 1111 of 925,197. The British amounts were 768,301 and 783,121 tons vespeetively. In the Northern Territory the imports were £140,229, exports £90,411; the gold export for the last six months of 1885 was £33,869. The assets of the eleven banks at the close of 1885 were £13,380,716,—total deposits £5,880,950. The Govern- ment savings banks, on June 30, 1885, had 53,164 depositors, with £1,571,283 as balances—five per cent. interest being allowed. Manufacturcs.—Inereased attention has been lately directed to local industries, and a more protective tariff has been enforced with a view to their development. The official returns for March 31, 1886, gave 640 works, employing 7952 men and 1350 women. Communication.—The district councils have charge of many of the roads. The general dryness of the country is favourable to the condition of roads. Railways have been

constructed for the con- veyance of farming produce to market, the carriage of minerals to port, and the tapping of the Murray river traffic from the east. At the beginning of 1886 there were 1211 miles of railway open, and 570 in course of construction. The working expenses during 1885 came to £386,000, and the revenue to £556,000. There are several tramways, supplementing railway traffic. Water-Supply.—The Government is aiding the railway movement for opening out the interior by the construction of waterworks and public reservoirs. Tosupply Adelaide, independently of the Torrens river, there has been an expenditure of £866,942. “Kapunda has a reservoir of 41,200,000 gallons; Port Pirie of 25,700,000; Mount Barker of 6,000,000; Port Augusta of 666,000; Mount Gambier and Gawler each of 279,000. There are large storage tanks at many places, e.g., for 810,000 gallons at Moonta. Administration.—The governor is the representative of the crown. The legislative council, of twenty-four members, one third retiring every three ycars, is chosen by 32,000 electors. The house

of assembly, of fifty-two members, is appointed for three years by

60,000 electors. Responsible government dates from 1856. The public debt, contracted for useful public works, was £18,000,000 in 1886. For the year 1884-85 the revenue was £2,157,931, but expenditure was £2,430,518. A revision of the tariff was necessary. Customs yielded £511,280; railways, £662,455, against working expenses £411,850; land sales, £333,369; land rents, £132,013; waterworks, £72,366. The expenditure included £811,189 for public works, besides loans; police, £102,784; civil establish- ments, £73,828 ; legal, £50,051; charitable institutions, £86,968 (there being no poor law); military defences, £39,478 ; immigra- tion, £31,129, &e. The Northern Territory gave £71,518 as re- ceipts to the state, but with £85,000 charges. The revenue for 1885-86 was £2,279,039, and the expenditure £2,383,290. No Australasian colony has done so much for the good of the aborigines and the advance of good morals as South Australia. The adminis- tration is just and firm, being well sustained by public sentiment. Education.—Not being so wealthy as its eastern neighbours, the colony has not been able to devote so large an amount to schools ; still, a grant of £126,000 was made during 1884-85 towards the instruction of 50,000 pupils. Of 450 schools, half are called publie, half provisional for thinly-peopled districts. Payment from scholars is not dispensed with as in

Victoria. Lands are being set apart as educational grants for the future. All religious denominations are equal in the sight of the law, none receiving any state aid. Bible reading is sanctioned before school hours, and any religious lessons may be given at the close of school time. The Adelaide university, so richly endowed by the colonists, re- ceives an annual grant of £2550 from the local parliament. Population.—Ineluding the Northern Territory, the population was returned in 1881 as 279,865 (149,530 males, 180,335 females), in addition to 6346 aborigines (3478 males, 2868 females), The births during 1885 were 12,046, and the deaths 3987 (2205 males and 1782 females). Classed at the last census according to religion, the population may be thus stated :—Church of England, 76,000 ; Roman Catholie, 42,920 ; Wesleyans, 42,103 ; Lutherans, 19,617 ; Presbyterians, 17,917 ; Baptists, 14,000 ; Bible Christians, 10,500; Primitive Methodists, 10,350 ; Congregationalists, 9908. The population in the Northern Territory, 3500, eontains only about

a hundred females, but has 3000 Chinamen. More than half the people of South Australia, whether of English or German parentage, are native-born. In 1886 the population was 325,000. History.—Though the coast of Northern Territory was well known to Portuguese and Spanish navigators as early as perhaps 1530, being ealled Great Java, it was not surveyed till 1644, when Tasman laid down the line of shore pretty accurately. The western part of the southern coast had been seen and named Nuyt's Land in 1627. But Flinders, by his discovery of the two great gulfs, Kangaroo Island, and Encounter Bay, in 1802, was the first to reveal South Australia proper. Captain Sturt deseended the Murray in 1830, and looked over the hills near Adelaide. The first to direct attention to a settlement there was Major Baron, who communicated with the eolonial offiee in February 1831, His suggestion was to establish, at no charge to the British Government, a private company, that should settle a party on Yorke Peninsula. He believed a large river entered Spencer Gulf. In August Colonel Torrens and others proposed to purehase land between 132° and 141°—500,000 acres at 5s. an acre. Some were in favour of Speneer Gulf, others of Kangaroo Island, and a few for the mainland towards the Murray. Memorialists in 1832 sought a charter for the South Australian Association, giving extensive powers of self-government. Land sales were to pay the passages of free labour, chiefly young married people, and no con- victs were ever to be sent thither. Lord Goderich did not favour the scheme, and thought a colony with free institutions might prejudice the interests of New South Wales, while free trade would interfere with the English navigation laws. After much negotiation, the English authorities regarded the scheme more favourably, but would not consent to give the company the powers they sought. The company receded in their demands, and offered security for the proper observance of law and order, while deposit- ing cash for the purchase of land. Captain Sturt in 1834 informed the colonial secretary that Spencer Gulf and Kangaroo Island were objectionable, but that the eastern side of St Vineent Gulf was the best locality. In 1835 the ministry got an Act passed for the erection of a colony, under commissioners appointed by the crown, who would be responsible for their acts to the British Government. It was arranged that a local government should be established when the settlement had 50,000 people. Mr George Fife Angas advanced a large sum as security to the state. Though the first settlers were sent to Kangaroo Island, all were

afterwards gathered on the Adelaide plains. The colony was proclaimed under a gum tree, December 28, 1836. Great delay took place in the survey of land. The South Australian Company purchased large tracts from the commissioners at 12s. per acre and sold at 20s. A general speculative spirit arrested progress. Governor Gawler went into extravagant outlay on public buildings, &e., and drew against orders upon the English treasury. Such difficulties arose that the British rulers had to suspend the charter in 1841 and make South Australia a crown colony. A revival of prosperity took place when the farms were tilled and poverty had taught prudenee. Copper and lead mines were subsequently discovered. Kapunda in 1843, and the Burra Burra copper mine in 1845, greatly aided in the restoration of commercial credit. The gold fever in Victoria drew off numbers in 1852; but the good prices then realized for breadstuffs gave a great impetus to farming. It deserves to be mentioned that rarely if ever has a colony been so favoured as South Australia in the character of its early settlers. (J. BO.)

SOUTH BEND, a city of the United States, the county seat of St Joseph county, Indiana, received its name from its position at a great bend of the St Joseph river, which is navigable to this point from its mouth at St Joseph on Lake Michigan. By railway the city is 85 miles east of Chicago. It is a great manufacturing centre, with iron- works, carriage, waggon, plough, and sewing machine factories, flour-mills, paper-mills, &c. The court-house is one of the best buildings in the State; and the Roman Catholic university of Notre Dame, St Mary’s academy, and St Joseph’s academy are institutions of some import- ance. The population of the city numbered 1652 in 1850, 7206 in 1870, and 13,280 in 1880.

SOUTH CAROLINA, one of the original thirteen Plate V.

States of the American Union, commonly known as the Palmetto State, from the abundance of this kind of palm on the coast, once formed a part of that vast territory of the New World claimed by the Spaniards under the name of Florida and by the French under that of New France ; or, to be more concise, it comprised the southern or lower portion of what was formerly styled Carolina, and subse- quently divided into North and South Carolina. It lies

between 32° 4’ 30” and 35° 12’ N. lat. and between 78° 25’ and 83° 49’ W. long. In shape it is an irregular triangle, the vertex resting upon the Blue Ridge Mountains in the extreme north-west, while the Atlantic forms its base. It is bounded N. and N.E. by North Carolina, 8.E. by the Atlantic, and S.W. by the Savannah river, which, with its tributaries the Tugaloo and Chatauga, separates it from Georgia. The state is 189 miles long and 160 broad, containing 30,961 square miles or 19,815,040 acres, and is divided into thirty-four counties (formerly districts). At the census of 1880 the population nunibered 995,577, of whom 391,105 were white, the rest coloured. Very few Indians are to be found. The surface may be about equally divided into high, middling, and low land, the last-named rising from the sea-coast, where it is very flat and level, and gradually increasing in elevation towards the interior, where it attains a mean of 250 feet, continuing to the north line, where, after varying from 300 to 800 feet it reaches its highest elevation of 1000 feet. The land along and near the coast is low, marshy, and swampy, especially on the rivers’ banks, rolling and diversified towards the centre, and undulating near the mountain slope, but in places abrupt, King’s Mountain rising almost perpendicularly 500 feet. The chief eleva- tions in this section are the Saluda Mountains, spurs of the Blue Ridge, King’s Mountain (1692 feet), Paris Mountain (2054 feet), Table Rock (3000 feet), Ceesar’s Head (3118 feet), and Mount Pinnacle (3436 feet). This region abounds in beautiful and picturesque scenery, rendering it attractive to tourists, and making it a great summer resort.

The land is irrigated and well-drained by numerous rivers, the largest of which is the Santee, formed by the Saluda, Congaree, Catawba, and Wateree, uniting at the centre of the State. The other rivers of any size are the Waccamaw, Lynch’s, Great and Little Peedee, forming the Peedee, Black, Wando, Ashley, Cooper, Edisto, Combahee, Ashepoo, Coosaw, Port Royal, and Broad (on the coast), this last being more of a bay. The sea-coast is fringed by numerous islands, and indented by bays and inlets,— Winyaw and Bull’s Bays, Charleston Harbour, Stono Inlet, North and South Edisto Inlets, St Helena Sound, and Port Royal,—the last one of the finest harbours in the world, as its name, said to have been given on this account by the early discoverers and explorers, would imply. The entire coast south of Winyaw is composed of a network of creeks and sounds, so that, for small craft, navigation inland may be had from this point to the mouth of the

Savannah on the extreme south-west. Most of the rivers rising in the mountains are navigable nearly to the foot-slope. Here numerous rapids and waterfalls afford excellent mill-power. Canals throughout the State are not numerous, the few formerly in use having been abandoned in favour of the railroads. The Santee Canal, connecting that river with the headwaters of the Cooper, 22 miles in length, has given place to the North-Eastern Railway.

The climate of South Carolina is mild and genial, snow falling in the mountains but rarely in the middle sections, and seldom or never along the coast. The sea islands generally, as well as the pine barrens, are healthy, furnish- ing the planter with a summer home and safe retreat from the malaria of the rice lands. These regions were formerly innocuous to the whites, as they still are to the negroes, but subsequent clearance and cultivation have rendered them fatal in summer. The midlands are considered healthy in all parts except here and there along the creeks, while the mountain region is unexceptionable.

The eoast of South Carolina, like places in the same latitude, is subject to violent storms, tornadoes, and cyelones, which make their annual visits on or about the autumnal equinox, doing much

damage. Till quite recently the district has never bcen seriously troubled with earthquakes, Slight tremors have indeed been felt

and recorded since 1754, without, however, causing serious injury. But on the night of the 81st August 1886 Charleston was visited by an earthquake which was followed by other shocks and tremors, which continued night and day at intervals with greater or less violence, as the following list shows :—

August 27…1 shock, slight. Sept. 8…1 shock, slight. August 28…1 shoek, slight. Sept. 10…1 shock, slight. August 31…5 shocks, destructive. Sept. 12…1 shock, slight.

Sept. 1…8 shoeks, severe. Sept. 15…2 shocks, moderate. Sept. 2…3 shocks, severe. Sept. 21…1 shoek, severe.

Sept. 8…2 shocks, severe. Sept. 22…1shock,moderate, local. Sept. 4…2 shoeks, slight. Sept. 27…1 shock, severe.

Sept. 5…1 shock, moderate. |Sept. 28…1 shock, moderate. Sept. 7…2 shocks, slight. Sept. 30…1 shock, slight.

The main shock was very destructive to property, while about forty lives were lost, and many more were injured. Creviees

‘several yards in length and varying from onc to four inches in

width appeared, and in some places in the suburbs of the city fissures of much larger proportions threw up water to the height of several fect. There was no warning given except that in the small town of Summerville, about 22 miles to the north, eonsider- able disturbance was caused by thuds and tremors with detona- tions on the 27th and 28th, felt on the latter date to some extent in Charleston. The violence of these shocks was confined almost exclusively to this State, though they were felt in a slighter degrce in Georgia and North Carolina.

The soil in the low country is remarkably fertile, the river swamps and reclaimed marshes being admirably adapted to the cultivation of rice, while the sandy loam of the sea islands and surrounding main produces the finest long staple, black seed, or sea island cotton of silky fibre. As we recede from the salt the staple becomes shorter and the plant has a less luxuriant growth. The rice produced here, noted abroad as Carolina rice, is considered first in the markets of the world. The State was the first to introduce rice culture in America, the seed having been brought in 1693 by a vesscl from Madagascar. Abundant crops are raised of wheat, rye, maize, oats, barley, buckwheat, pease, beans, sugar, tobacco, indigo, sorghum, broom-corn, sunflower, guinea-corn, sweet and Irish potatoes, hemp, flax, and hops. Numerous orchards, all over the State, furnish quantities of apples, pears,

uinces, plums, peaches, nectarines, apricots, cherries, and along

the coast figs, oranges, lemons, olives, and pomegranates. The raspberry, blackberry, mulberry, and whortleberry are produced, The strawberry is extensively cultivated along the coast, and shipped in immense quantitics to the northern markets. Of nuts, the walnut, pecan, chestnut, hickory, shell-bark, hazel nut, and chinquapin may be mentioned. The grape grows wild in many portions of the State, and in great varieties, which, when culti- vated, yield adelicious wine. In certain sections hundreds of aeres arc devoted to the culture. The gardens and farms produce in abundance turnips, beets, parsnips, carrots, artichokes, mustard, benne, rhubarb, arrowroot, water and musk melons, eucumbers, cabbages, kale, lettuce, eayenuc pepper, squashes, okra, pumpkins, onions, lecks, beans, radishes, celery, grcen pease, and tomatoes, — the last two from early spring to mid-winter. The jasmine, Cherokee rose or nondescript, wild honeysuckle, and sweet-brier perfume the woods ; the dog-wood and fringe tree abound in the forest ; and garden flowers in the cities, especially Charleston, Columbia, and Beaufort, are the admiration of strangers. Con- spicuous among these are the Camellia japonica of all varieties and shades, azalea in every hue, roses of numberless descriptions, hyacinth, snowdrop, violet, dahlia, tulip, verbena, sweet olive, and heliotrope. Valuable and almost inexhaustible forests extend over the greater part of the State, the long leaf or ycllow pine, confined chiefly to the low country, covering 10,000,000 acres, and furnishing immense quantities of timber, tar, pitch, turpentine, and rosin. Here and elsewhere are found the magnolia, sweet and blaek gum, white, water, red, and live oak, black walnut, elm, hickory, maple, syeamore, ash, cypress, chestnut, beeeh, locust, persimmon, dogwood, poplar. ‘The palmetto is peculiar to the coast.

The forests abound in deer, wild turkeys, foxes, wild eats, raccoons, opossums, rabbits, and squirrels; and along the water- courses are found the musk otter, &. Among the birds are pigeons, doves, partridges, woodcock, snipe, immense floeks of wild dueks, including the English or canvas-back, teal, blackhead, &c. Freshwater fish of every variety are taken in all the streams in the interior, and the bays and inlets furnish whiting, mackerel, bass, flounder, sheephead, shad, mullet, blackfish, sturgeon, terrapin, turtle, shrimps, crabs, and oysters. Quantities of salmon and carp have been furnished by the fish commissioners for stocking the waters,

Minerals are liberally diffused over the State. Gold is found in Lancaster, York, Union, Spartanburg, Greenville, Pickens, and Abbeville counties ; copper in York, Spartanburg, and Pickens ; lead in the last; iron of a superior quality in Union, Spartanburg, Greenville, and Pickens ; manganese in Lancastcr, York, Chester,

Vegeta- tion.

Animals,

Minerals,

Railways.

In- dustries,

288

Union, Spartanburg, Greenville, Pickens, Anderson, Abbeville, and Edgefield ; bismuth in Chesterfield and Lancaster ; plumbago in Spartanburg ; soapstone in Fairfield, Chester, York, burg, Laurens, Greenville, Pickens, Abbeville, and Edgefield ; coal in Chesterfield and Marlboro. Limestone abounds in nearly all the upper counties, but chicfly in Laurens and Spartanburg. The finest blue and grey granite is found in the middle and upper sections ; sandstone, burrstone, and flagstone in Edgefield, Pickens, York, and Fairfield. Pottery and poreelain clay, quartz, and sand for glass exist in many places. Tuomey states that “the aluminous formations that oceur in immense beds of the finest porcelain clay are oftcn exposed by the denuding effects of water and lie in rich strata upon the very surface, ready to the hand of the manufacturer. Between Aiken and Graniteville the beds are in many cases 60 feet thick, while those in the Savannah river near Hamburg are from 10 to 15 feet and of unsurpassed purity.” The Aiken council committee report in this vicinity immense beds of different kinds of clay, from the purest and whitest kaolin to the dark-coloured mud of which bricks are made, sands of all hues, some as fine as flour, others with large coarse crystals, siliceous earths of many kinds, ferru- ginous sandstones, conglomerate shell, burrstone, mica, feldspar, and ochres of different colours. Buta short distance off a deposit of magnesia is

found, and potash can readily be made in the surrounding forests. Experts have pronounced the sands to be admirably adapted for making glass and crystal, and the quality of the kaolin is admitted to be equal, if not superior, to that of which Staffordshire ware is made. It is doubtful if the combination of the ingredients of glass and earthenware can be found in such immediate proximity anywhere else. Mineral springs exist in several of the upper counties.

Railroads are on the increase. The South Carolina Railway, between Charleston and Augusta, Ga., was, at the time of its com- pletion, the longest continuous railroad in the world.

Manufactures are growing in importance; chief among them are cotton yarn and cloth, flour, lumber, turpentine, and fertilizers, The capacity of twenty-nine mills now in operation is estimated at 14,821,166 tb of yarn, 79,442,327 yards of cloth, and the value of product $9,097,464. In 1880 there were 82,324 spindles and 1676 looms; in 1884 195,112 spindles and 3652 looms. The number of lumber mills at work is 729, employing 5894 hands and a capital of $2,920,870. The value of their annual production is $5,592,565. Of turpentine stills there are 291, with 6991 hands and a capital of $1,454,800, with an annual production to the value of $2,912,271. These figures show an increase of 100 per cent. in less than four years. The fertilizers are valucd at $3,346,400, and the miscellaneous manufactures at $2,114,680. The whole value of manufactured products was in 1860 $8,615,195; in 1870, $9,858,981; in 1880, $16,738,008; in 1884, $32,324,404. South Carolina phosphates are of recent date, but their importance may be shown by stating that they pay yearly, by direct taxation, an amount for royalty which is 20 per cent. of the whole income of the State. The value of this rock was first pointed out by Mr Jonathan Lucas, a planter, who afterwards materially assisted in developing its usefulness. The first company, the Charleston South Carolina Mining and Manufacturing Company, was formed in 1867, There are now fourteen land and eleven river mining companies with capital ranging from $10,000 to $200,000, In addition to these there are a number of individuals who are licensed by the State to mine in the navigable streams, employing an estimated capital of about $50,000. The total amount of phosphate rock mined and shipped in 1868-70 was 20,000 tons; in 1871, 50,000 tons; in

1875, 115,000 tons; in 1880, 190,000 tons; and in 1883, 355,000 tons,—the total since 1868 being 2,290,000 tons. Of this amount 1,078,070 tons were river and 1,211,830 land rock. The capital invested in the former is $525,000, and 649 hands are employed (wages $259,300), with an annual production of $907,170; in the latter the corresponding figures are—capital $1,980,000, hands 1286, wages $363,560, production $1,283, 830.

The six gold-mining counties report eleven mines in operation, employing 600 hands, with a capital of $440,000 and an annual production of $90,000. The same counties report eighteen gold mines or gold-bearing areas not now worked; one of the mines has a capital of $40,000. Ten counties report quarries or kaolin beds. Worked and unworked, there are twenty-five granite quarries, five kaolin beds, and one soapstone quarry. ‘There are also in the State large unworked deposits of mica, pyrites, corundum, and marl, with some silver. The quarries and’ kaolin works, with a capital of $96,350, have an annual production of $220,000.

The upland cotton crop of 1883 was 468,227 bales of 400 ib. The corn area was 1,359,593 acres, and the production 10,876,744 bushels. 321,958 acres in oats yielded a crop of 4,187,082 bushels. Of wheat (182,215 acres) the yield was 1,388,731 bushels. The rice crop of 1883-84 was 33,600 tierces. The sea-island cotton crop was 9500 bags. This last, as well as the small grain and subsidiary crops, has suffered a decline in the last few years of 25 to 35 per cent.

The proportions of white and coloured labour in the State are about 30 per cent. and 70 per cent. respectively. The rate of wages

paid is from $8 to $9 a month for men and $6 for women, with board. About 28 per cent. of white women and children work on the farms, and about 61 per cent. of the coloured. The systems used are—the contract, in which services rendered are paid by giving the labourer the use of the land and house, or where the wages are paid monthly, or a portion monthly and the remainder at the end of the year; and the tenant system, in which the

labourer rents the land, and from the crop pays the landlord the rent and for the use of the animals. Land varies in price from 50 cents for pine barren to $100 for ehoice farming land. Horses and mules are raised at very little cost.

herded for branding or for driving to market. Sheep thrive away from: the salt, and are profitable in the mountains. Hogs, not improved breeds, like cattle, have the liberty of the woods, and are taken with dogs when needed. According to estimates of im- proved stock, there are 792 Jerseys, 177 Ayrshires, 50 Devons, 33 Holsteins, 1 Guernsey, besides a number of Shorthorns and Brahmins. Merino, South Down, Oxford Down, and Broad-Tail sheep are raised in many parts of the State, with Essex and Berkshire hogs.

Free schools trace their origin as far back as 1710. of free schools was inaugurated in 1811. school system was established in 1868. It provides free instruction to pupils of both races, in primary and intermediate grades. Their management is under the direction of the State board of examincrs, consisting of the State superintendent of education, and four other persons appointed by the governor. In each county the school commissioner is elected by the people for two years. The schools are supported entirely by taxation. There are 3562 public schools in the State. The number of persons in the State between the ages of six and sixteen is 281,664, of whom 51,440 are white males, 49,749 white females, 90,897 coloured males, 89,578 coloured females, The number of pupils enrolled is 178,023 (41,819 white males, 36,6389 females, 48,418 coloured males, 51,147 females). The number of male whitc teachers cm- ployed is 1137, females 1205; coloured males 982, females 449,— making a total of 3773. There are 3562 public schoolhouses, valued at $405,097.31. Institutions for higher edueation, sup- ported by the State, are the South Carolina College and South Carolina Military Academy for white males, and the Claflin College for coloured persons of both sexes, There is an institution for the education of the deaf, dumb, and blind. There are, besides, numerous private schools and colleges.

Churches of all denominations multi colonial period, and subsequently Episcopalians, Presbyterians, Independents, Baptists, and French Protestauts established congre- gations in Charleston just after 1680.

Methodists and Romanists came a century later, Jews in 1756, German Lutherans in 1759. The coloured people are for the most part Methodists, some being Baptists and Presbyterians, a few Episcopalians,

CHARLESTON (g.v.) is the largest city of the State. (g.v.), the capital, has (1886) a population of 20,000, while that of Charleston is 60,000. Greenville, in the north-west portion of the State, is a growing railway centre and manufacturing city, with a population of 10,000. Georgetown and Beaufort on the coast doa good shipping business in lumber and other exports. Spartanburg and Aiken are important places, the former as a railway centre, the latter as a health resort for invalid strangers in winter, when the population is more than doubled. Other towns are Newberry, Orangeburg, Florence, Camden, Suinter, Graniteville, Chester, Anderson, Abbeville, Winnsboro, Yorkville, Union, Cheraw, Wal- halla, Piedmont, Port Royal, Marion, Darlington, Lancaster.

Ordinary scrub Live cattle are seldom housed, roaming the forests at will, except when stock.

A system Educa- The present public- tion,

lied in the State during the Religion.

CoLUMBIA Cities,

The executive department consists of a governor, licutenant- Govern- governor, who is ex oficto president of the senate, comptroller- ment,

general, treasurer, secretary of state, attorney-general, and a superintendent of education ; these are elected by the people, to serve two years. The legislative department embraces a senatc and a house of representatives, which together are called the gencral assembly. The former is composed of thirty-seven members, elected for four years, one from each county, except Charleston, which sends two. The house of representatives consists of 124 members, elected for two years. The judicial department consists of a supreme court and of circuit, probate, and justices' courts. The supreme and circuit court judges are elected by the general assembly,—the former for six

years, the latter for four. The probate judges for each county are elected by the people, and the Justices of the peace are appointed by the goveruor.

The first attempt to settle Carolina was in 1562, when Admiral History.

Coligny obtained from Charles IX. of France permission to plant a colony of Protestants on the coast of Florida. An expedition was fitted out at the expensc of the crown, and placed under the command of Jean Ribault. Fear of the Spaniards perhaps induced them to change their plans, and, entcring Port Royal, they landed on Lemon Island, where they erected a pillar, and afterwards a fort, which they named, in honour of the king, Arx Carolina. Leaving a sufficient number to garrison the fort, Ribault returned to France. Two years later a second expedition under Laudonniete,

one of Ribault's men, was fitted out, but on landing at Port Royal it found no traces of the former. This colony likewise met with disaster, being massacred by the Spaniards from Florida. It was not until a century later that a permanent settlement was made by the English, who, after the Restoration, began to recognize their claim to a large territory in the southern district of North America. In 1662 a grant was obtained from Charles II., and in 1667 an expedition sailed under command of Capt. William Sayle. They reached Port Royal, where they made a settlement, but a few years after removed to the west bank of the Ashley, and built a town which they called, after the English monarch, Charlestown. Subsequently they again removed to Oyster Point, the present site of Charleston. (W. SL)

SOUTHCOTT, Joanna (1750-1814), was born in Devonshire about 1750, and was for a considerable time a domestic servant. She was originally an adherent of the Methodists, but, becoming persuaded she possessed supernatural gifts, she wrote and dictated prophecies in rhyme, and announced herself as the woman spoken of in the Apocalypse (ch. xii.), affirming, when beyond the age of sixty, that she would be delivered of Shiloh on the 19th October 1814. For some days previous tc this she was attended by her followers night and day, but Shiloh failed to appear, and it was given out that she was in a trance. She died of dropsy on the 29th of the

same month. Her followers are said to have numbered over 100,000, and so late as 1860 they were not extinct.

Among her publications, which number over sixty, and are all equally incoherent in thought and grammar, may be mentioned Strange Hffects of Faith, 1801-2; Free EKaxposition of the Bible, 1804 ; The Book of Wonders, 1813-14 ; and Prophecies annowneing the Birth of the Prinee of Peace, 1814. A lady named Essam left large sums of moncy for printing and publishing the Sacred Writings of Joanna Southcott. The will was disputed by a niece on the ground that the writings were blasphemous, but the Court of Chanecry sustained it.

Sce Roberts, Observations on the Divine Mission of Joanna Southcott, 1807;

Reece, Correct Statement of the Circumstances attending the Death of Joanna Southcott, 1815.

SOUTHEND, a watering-place of Essex, is situated on the north bank of the Thames, 5 miles west of Shoeburyness, and by the London, Tilbury, and Southend Railway, 42 miles east of London, with which it is also connected by steamer. It first sprang into notice from a visit of Queen Caroline in 1804, and, as it is the nearest watering-place to London, it is much frequented by excursionists, espe- cially by the poorer classes. It is clean and well built, and at Cliff Town there are a number of large villas. Opposite Cliff Town there is a public garden called the Shrubbery. The bathing is good, but the tide recedes with great rapidity and for nearly a mile. The pier, which is 14 miles in length, and on which there is a tram-way, permits the approach of steamers at all tides. The public hall was erected in 1872 at a cost of £3000, and a mechanics' institution dates from 1881. The Rochford county court is held every alternate month in the public hall. A local board of health was established in 1866. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 3441 acres) in 1871 was 4561, and in 1881 it was 7979.

SOUTHERNE, Tuomas (1660-1746)—'" Honest Tom Southerne," to give the author of The Fatal Marriage the name by which his contemporaries usually called him— was a clever craftsman for the stage, according to the

degenerate tradition of the Restoration dramatists, —with the eye of a born opportunist for the popular interests of the hour in so far as they could be turned to histrionic account, but without deeper seeing of the functions of the drama. Born in Dublin in 1660, he came to London and entered the Middle Temple in 1678, but only to desert law very Speedily for dramatic authorship. His first play, The Persian Prince, or the Loyal Brother, is a good example, in its diplomatic reference to passing events and its veiled compliment to James, duke of York, of his ready tact as a playwright. The most important practical result of the play, which was remarkably successful on the stage, was

an ensign's commission, noteworthy in that it supplied Southerne with materials for later dramatization. After an interval of active service more plays followed, and were produced with equal success ; of these The Fatal Marriage (1694), known also by the name of its heroine, Isabella, has the best claim to remembrance. Its strain of pathetic quality echoes the later Elizabethans in a way that con- trasts suggestively with the shallow, if spirited, indecencies of Southerne's comedies, which, although their author was commended by Dryden for his purity as a playwright, are certainly not overweighted with delicacy. Sir Anthony Love, or the Rambling Lady, in which the hero assumes female disguise without accession of modesty, is a good example of the rest; one utterance of its hero, "Every day a new mistress and a new quarrel," might indeed serve as a good motto of Restoration comedy in general. Except to the student, Southerne's work, however, is hardly of permanent interest. The Southerne of whom Pope, who ranked him as friend and praised him for his sterling qualities, remarked in some lines that "Heaven sent down to raise The price of prologues and of plays"

exemplifies what business tact and dramatic ingenuity can accomplish, for of real artistic faculty he had little. His plays resulted, through ingenious management, in a pecun- iary return which dazzled Dryden and made their author a wealthy citizen, but they have not the quality of work which endures. He died in 1746.

SOUTHEY, Carotine (1786-1854), the second wife of Robert Southey, was born at Lymington, Hants, on December 6th, 1786. As a girl Caroline Ann Bowles showed a certain literary and artistic aptitude, the more remarkable perhaps from the loneliness of her early life and the morbidly delicate condition of her health,—an aptitude, however, of no real distinction. When money difficulties came upon her in middle age she determined to turn her talents to account in literature. Her first venture was the sending anonymously of a narrative poem called Ellen Fitzarthur to Southey, and this led to the acquaintanceship and lifelong friendship which in 1839 culminated in their marriage. len Fitzarthur (1820) may be taken as typical, in its prosy simplicity, of the rest of its author's work, which reproduced the studied unadornment of certain portions of Southey's and Words- worth's poetry without that glamour which, especially with the second of these writers, so often redeemed simplicity from mere baldness. Mrs Southey's poems were published in a collected edition in 1867. Her prose is on the whole more interesting than her verse, though— with rare exceptions— infected with like dulness. Among her prose writings may be mentioned Chapters on Church- yards (1829), her best work ; Zales of the Moors (1828) ; and Selwyn in Search of a Daughter (1835). Her most interesting memorial is her correspondence with Southey, which, somewhat unfairly overlooked in the edition of the poet's Life and Letters edited by his son, has been pub- lished by Prof. Dowden in the Dublin University Press Series. It was soon after her marriage that her husband's mental state became hopeless, and from this time till his death in 1843, and indeed till her own, her life was one of much suffering. Mrs Southey died at Buckland Cot- tage, Lymington, on July 20th 1854, two years after the queen had granted her an annual pension of £200.

Besides the works already mentioned, she wrote The Widow's Tale, and other Poems, 1822; Solitary Hours (prose and verse), 1826; Tales of the Factories, 1833; The Birthday, 1836; Robin Hood, written in conjunction with Southey, at whose death this metrical production was incomplete.

SOUTHEY, Roserr (1774-1843), was born in Bristol on the 12th of August 1774. His father, a native of Somerset, was an unsuccessful draper. To his mother,

Margaret Hill, Southey owed his buoyant spirits, his practical sense, and his earliest friends. The first of these, Miss Tyler, his mother's half-sister, took possession of him when he was three; under her care he saw and heard a great deal of theatres and of acting. His solitary life in an old maid's household threw him upon his own resources and developed a taste for reading. He was sent to several private schools, and had good fortune at none of them; in 1788 he went to Westminster, where he was scarcely more fortunate. After a brief sojourn he was expelled in 1792, because an essay of his on flog- ging, in a school magazine called The Mlagellant, was resented by Dr Vincent, the head-master. At West- minster he gained the friendship of two boys who were faithful to him and helpful throughout his life; these were Charles Winn and Grosvenor Bedford. About this time his father died; his aunt, however, determined that he should go to Oxford. He was refused at Christ Church on account of the essay in The Plagellant; but Balliol gave him a home. At Oxford he led his own life, lived in his own thoughts, and got little or nothing from the university. In 1794 Coleridge dashed at Southey, took him by storm, and filled his head with plans for an ideal colony in the wilds. The new society, whose members were to have all things in common, was to be called "The Pantisocracy." Their life was to com- bine manual labour and domestic bliss; to attain the latter, Southey set his affections on a Miss Edith Fricker, whose sister married Coleridge. All this was intolerable to Miss Tyler, and Southey was banished. He and Coleridge then tried, by lecturing and journalism, to raise money for their American schemes ; but luckily Southey's uncle, who had educated him,—Mr Hill, the English chaplain at Lisbon,—advised him to travel. On the 14th of November 1795, before he started, he was secretly married to Edith Fricker. On his return from Lisbon the marriage was acknowledged, and Southey wandered from one house to another in the south of England. He tried, or was urged to try, the three professions which are by courtesy styled "learned"; it might be more true to call them the technical, the stereotyped professions. Southey was scared from all three,—from clericalism by dogma, from medicine by the dissecting-room, from law by its crabbed dulness. In literature alone he found his proper sphere; and in 1803 he

settled down in his life- long home, Greta Hall, near Keswick. Henceforth his years were even and uneventful. He wrote and read with mechanical, with appalling regularity; his library grew to fourteen thousand volumes. He had children, and lost several; and his house was a refuge for the wife and family of Coleridge. With Wordsworth and Landor he formed close friendships. In 1813 he was made poet- laureate ; and some years before his death he was offered a baronetcy—which, however, he with good reason declined. Two great sorrows embittered his life: in 1809 he lost his eldest boy Herbert, and in 1834 his wife was taken to a madhouse, whence she came back to die. In 1839 he married Caroline Bowles. That same year his memory failed, his speech became uncertain, and his power of writing soon went; softening of the brain had taken irre- mediable hold of the once tireless intellect. To the last he would hover round his books and handle them lovingly. He died on the 21st of March 1843; he is buried, near his first wife and her children, in Crosthwaite churchyard.

The amount of Southey's work in literature is enormous. His collected verse, with its explanatory notes, fills ten volumes; his prose occupies about forty. But his greatest works were left un- completed, and this, in some sense, is typical of Southey's whole achievement in the world of letters; there is always something

unsatisfying, disappointing, about him. He seldom realized or seldom found scope for his true bent in literature. This is most

true of his efforts in verse, In his childhood Southey fell in with Tasso, Tasso led him to Ariosto, and Ariosto to Spenser. These beautiful, these luxuriantly imaginative poets captivated the boy; and Southey mistook his youthful enthusiasm for an abiding, a life- long inspiration. His inspiration was not genuinely imaginative ; he had too large an infusion of prosaic commonplace in his nature to be a true follower of Ariosto and Spenser. Southey, quite early in life, resolved to write a series of epics on the chief religions of the world. The subject was dangerous, and one epic is a life's work; it is not surprising that the too ambitious poet failed. His failure is twofold: he was wanting in artistic power and in poetic sympathy. With regard to the first, he says of himself, "It was long before I acquired this

power,”—the power of plan and con- struction, —‘‘not fairly, indeed, till I was about five or six and thirty.” The fact is, he never acquired it; he never could con- struct a dramatic plot or mould it into artistic details. When his epics are not wildly impossible they are incurably dull; at the best their interest is extrinsic rather than intrinsic, pervaded by the glamour of historic romance rather than the light of pure poetry. And a man is not fit to write epics on the religions of the world when he can say of the prophet who has satisfied the gravest races of mankind,—Mohammed was ‘‘far more remarkable for audacious profligacy than for any intellectual endowments.” Southey’s age was bounded, and had little sympathy for anything beyond itself and its own narrow interests; it was violently Tory, narrowly Protestant, defiantly English. And in his verse Southey truthfully reflects the feeling of his age. This led him to say dreadful things about the Eastern religions in his prefaces to Kehama and Thalaba; it made Joan of Are an incongruous blend- ing of Rousseau, of Horace Walpole’s romanticism, of the Surrey theatre, and of Lady Huntingdon; it gave Madoc, a Celt of the 12th century, the mind of a cold middle-class Saxon evangelical of the regency. In the shorter pieces Southey’s commonplace asserts itself, and if that does not meet us we find his bondage to his gener- ation. This bondage is quite abject in The Vision of Judgment ; Southey’s heavenly personages are British Philistines from Old Sarum, magnified but not transformed, engaged in endless placid adoration of an infinite George III. When Southey sets himself to fondle the regent, he loses all sense of measure and propriety. In the Funeral Ode to the Princess he can assert of her father— “Such the proud, the virtuous story, Such the great, the endless glory Of her father’s splendid reign! ”

This famous ode, ‘‘with the grace and beauty of which,” Sir Henry Taylor thinks, ‘‘no facts could compete,” is, it must be said, in many of its couplets, too like the average hymn. The twang of the hymn spoils two of Southey’s best pieces. The Holly Tree ends—

“That in my age as cheerful 1 might be As the green winter of the holly tree.” The last lines of Stanzas Written in his Library, a poem dear to the book-lover, are painfully like a rhyme on a tomb-stone :— ‘Yet leaving here a name, I trust, That will not perish in the dust.” Some of his subjects, The Poct’s Pilgrimage, for instance, he would have treated delightfully in prose;

others, like the Botany Bay Eelogues, Songs to American Indians, The Pig, The Daneing Bear, should never have been written. The Retrospect, of which this is a fair specimen, — “There where my little hands were wont to rear With pride the earliest salad of the year,”— a living critic and biographer of Southey has compared to The Deserted Village. Southey was not in the highest sense of the word a poet ; but if we turn from his verse to his prose we are in a different world ; there Southey is a master in his art, who works at ease with grace and skill. “Southey’s prose is perfect,” said Byron ; and, if we do not stretch the “ perfect,” or take it to mean the supreme perfection of the very greatest masters of style, Byron was right. For good prose, plain, unassuming, natural, he is not surpassed in English. In his charming story of The Three Bears a phrase is often used which exactly describes his style ; when the old lady finds what is neither too hot nor too cold, too large nor too small, she says it is “just right.” Southey’s prose is ‘‘just right,”—it expresses his meaning with simple and admirable precision. In his prose and in his criticism we of a later generation could do worse than learn from Southey ; his sober writing is an excellent corrective for our prevailing faults. In prose the real Southey emerges from his conventionality. His interest and his curiosity are unbounded, as his Common-Place Book will prove; his stores of learning are at his readers’ scrvice, as in The Doetor; his patriotism is vigorous and healthy, as in the Lie of Nelson ; his criticism is sound, as in the Lives of Cowper and of Wesley. But the truest Southey is in his Letters: the loyal, gallant, tender-hearted, faithful man that he was is revealed in them. Southey’s fame will not rest, as he supposed, on his verse ; all his faults are in that,—all his own weakness, and all the false taste of his age. But his prose assures him a high place in English literature, though not a place in the first rank even of prose writers.

SO U—SO0OZ

SOUTHPORT, a municipal borough of Lancashire, England, and a favourite seaside resort, is situated between the estuaries of the Mersey and the Ribble, 18 miles north of Liverpool, and is a terminal] station of three railway systems. Its foreshore consists of a great expanse of firm, bright sands, to the radiation of heat from which is attributed the mildness of its winter climate. Its proximity to Liverpool, Manchester, and other large

manufacturing towns has drawn to it a large resident population, and its visitors, in quest of health and pleasure, number many thousands annually. Its spacious streets, laid out at right angles to each other, are bordered with trees and ornamental gardens. The promenade along the shore is two miles in length; in its centre is the pier, a mile long, down which tramcars are drawn by a stationary steam-engine. Other facilities for outdoor enjoyment are provided in Hesketh Park (presented to the town by the late Rev. Charles Hesketh, rector of North Meols, and one of the lords of the manor), the Botanic Gardens, Kew Gardens, and the Winter Gardens. The last, laid out at a cost of £130,000, include a large conservatory, a fine enclosed promenade, a theatre, and an aquarium, There is also a glaciarium, or skating and curling hall, in which those amusements may be practised on real ice all the year round. The Victoria baths were erected in 1870 at an expenditure of £50,000. The principal public buildings are the town-hall, the Cambridge hall (used for concerts &e.), and an extensive range of markets, erected in 1881 at a cost of £40,000. Among the benevolent institutions are a general infirmary, a convalescent hospital, a sana- torium for children, and a neuro-hydropathic hospital. Southport has also a free library and art gallery (the gift of the late William Atkinson), a literary and philosophical institute, and a college (Trinity Hall) for the education of the daughters of Wesleyan ministers; and the town council are now (1886) engaged in building a museum and schools of scienceand art. The first house in Southport (an inn for the reception of sea-bathers) was built in 1791, and soon after other houses were erected on the site now known as Lord Street. The population, which in 1809 was 100, had increased in 1851 to 4766, and in 1861 to 10,097. In 1867 the town received a charter of incorporation, and since then its progress has been remarkable. In 1871 the population of the borough (area 7526 acres) was 18,086 ; in 1881 this had grown to 32,206, and in 1886 it was estimated at 36,596. Its sanitary arrangements are very perfect, and the water supply is abundant and excellent. Southport gives its name to one of the parlia- mentary divisions of South-West Lancashire.

SOUTH SHIELDS. See Suretps, Souru.

SOUTHWARK. See Lonpon.

SOUVESTRE, Emirz (1806-1854), a French novelist of merit, was born on April 15, 1806, and died on July 5, 1854, He was a native of Morlaix, and his affection for Brittany coloured most of his best work in after life. He had rather a chequered career of employment besides his literary pursuits. He was by turns a bookseller's assistant, a private schoolmaster, a journalist, and professeur at the grammar schools of Brest and Mulhouse. In 1848 he received what may sound to English ears the odd appoint- ment of "professor of administrative style" in a school founded for the instruction of civil servants. His literary work, however, was his labour of love. He began like most Frenchmen with the drama, but was never very successful with it. In novel-writing he did much better, and with Jules Sandeau (though on a somewhat lower level of writing, construction, and grasp of character) may be said to rank as the chief recent French novelist who deliberately aimed at making the novel an engine of moral Instruction. With less genius and less sense of art than

Sandeau, he did not always escape the reproach of dulness. His best work is undoubtedly to be found in the charming Dermers Bretons (1835-1837) and Foyer Breton (1844) (where the folklore and natural features of his native province are worked up into story form, with a success hardly excelled by any other writer), and in Un Philosophe sous les Torts, which received the honour of an academic prize in the year 1851. This Souvestre deserved, not merely for his sentiments, but for his easy and agreeable style. He also wrote a not inconsiderable number of other works—novels, dramas, essays, and miscellanies. SOWERBY, Jamus (1757-1822), was at first a painter, but soon applied his art to the illustration of botanical and conchological works, which are still highly valued,

especially his Hnglish Botany (12 vols. 8vo, 1846). His

son George (1788-1854) followed in his father's steps, and produced a monumental work on conchology.

SOWERBY BRIDGE, a manufacturing town in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on both sides of the river Calder, at the termination of the Rochdale Canal, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 2 miles

south-west of Halifax, and 8 north-west of Huddersfield. Christ church, dating from 1526, was rebuilt in 1819. The other public buildings include the town-hall (1857) and the local board offices, opened in 1878, attached to which are the public baths and the slaughter-houses. The town is almost entirely the growth of the last fifty years. It possesses worsted and cotton mills, iron-works, dye- works, and chemical works. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 536 acres) in 1871 was 7041, and in 1881 it was 8724.

SOZOMEN, church historian. Hermias Salamanes (Salaminius) Sozomenus came of a wealthy family of Palestine, and it is exceedingly probable that he himself was born (not later than 400 a.p.) and brought up there, —in Gaza or the neighbourhood. What he has to tell us of the history of South Palestine was derived from oral tradition. His grandfather, as he himself tells us, lived at Bethel near Gaza, and became a Christian, probably under Constantius, through the influence of Hilarion, who among his other miracles had miraculously healed an acquaintance of the grandfather, one Alaphion. Both men with their families became zealous Christians and conspicu- ous for their virtues. The historian's grandfather became within his own circle a highly esteemed interpreter of Scripture, and held fast his profession even in the time of Julian. The descendants of the wealthy Alaphion founded churches and convents in the district, and were particularly active In promoting monasticism. Sozomen himself had conversed with one of these, a very old man. He was brought up under monkish influences; so he expressly states, and his history bears him out. As a man he retained the impressions of his youth, and his great work was to be also a monument of his reverence for the monks in general and for the disciples of Hilarion in particular. He became a lawyer and advocate in Constantinople, where as such he wrote his "ExxAyovacrixy Iotwpia about the year 440. The nine books of which it is composed begin with Constantine and come down to the death of Honorius (423); but according to his own statement the author intended to continue it as far asthe year 439. From Sozomen himself (iv. 17), and statements of his excerptors Nicephorus and Theophanes, it can be made out that the work did actually come down to that year, and that consequently it has reached us only in a somewhat mutilated condition, at least half a book being wanting. A flattering and bombastic dedication to Theodosius II. is prefixed. When

compared with the history of SocRaTESs (q.v.), it is plainly seen to be a plagiarism from that work, and that on a large scale. Some three-fourths of the

materials, essentially in the same arrangement, have simply been appropriated from his predecessor without his being so much as named even once, the other sources to which Sozomen was indebted being, however, expressly cited. All that can be said to the credit of Sozomen is that he has been himself at the trouble to refer to the principal sources used by Socrates (Rufinus, Eusebius, Athanasius, Sabinus, the collections of epistles, Palladius), and has not unfrequently supplemented Socrates from them, and also that he has adduced some new authorities, in particular sources relating to Christianity in Persia, Arian history, monkish histories, the Vita Martini of Sulpicius, books of Hilarius; the whole of the ninth book is entirely drawn from Olympiodorus.

It is difficult to discern the motive for a work which was merely an enlarged edition of Socrates. But it is probable that Sozomen did not approve of Socrates's freer attitude towards Greek science, and that he wished to present a picture in which the clergy should be still further glorified, and, above all, monasticism brought into still stronger prominence. In Sozomen everything is a shade more ecclesiastical—but only a shade—than in Socrates. Perhaps also he wrote for a different circle,— say, the monks in Palestine,—and could be sure that in it the work of his predecessor would not be known.

Sozomen is everywhere an inferior Socrates. What in Socrates still betrays some vestiges of historical sense, lis moderation, his reserve in questions of dogma, his impartiality,—all this is wanting in Sozomen. In many cases he has repeated the exact words of Socrates, but with him they have passed almost into mere phrases. The inferiority of Sozomen to Socrates as an historian appears as much in the manner in which he transcribed him as in those passages where he introduces something new. The chronological scrupulosity of the earlier writer has made no impression on his follower; he has either wholly omitted orinaccurately repeated the chronological data. He writes more wordily and difluscly. In his characterizations of persons,

borrowed from Socrates, he is more dull and colonrless. After Socrates he has indeed repeated the caution not to be too rash in discerning the fiuger of God ; but his way of looking at things is throughout mean and rustic. Two souls inhabit his book : one, the better, is borrowed from Socrates ; another, the worse, ishisown. Wherever he abandons his leader he frequently falls into mere retailing of stories, and prostrates him- self in reverence before the poorest products of the religious fantasy of a degenerating age. Evidence of a boundless credulity with regard to all sorts of monkish fables is to be mct with everywhere. Raisings of the dead are quite common occurrences with him, and he repeatedly gives accounts of enormous dragons. In the finding of the bones of saints he takes the highest interest, and even be- lieves in the rediscovery of the tombs of the Old Testament prophets.

Where we still possess Socrates's account that of Sozomen very sel- dom has any consequence, but some of the additions he has made are instructive and important. The number of new acts of councils introduced by him is small. His monkish histories are as sources almost utterly valueless ; his account of the Christians in Persia absolutely swarms with mistakes. It must, however, be noted that for the period from Theodosius I. onward he has emancipated himself more fully from Socrates and has followed Olympiodorus in part, partly also oral tradition ; here accordingly his statements possess greater Value.

Editions and Literature.—Soerates and Sozomen have been edited by Stephanus (Paris, 1544; Geneva, 1612), Valesius (Paris, 1659-73), Reading (Cambridge, 1720), Hussey (Oxford, 1853, 1860), They are also to be found in vol. Ixvii. of Migne's Patrologia, and there is an Oxford school edition (1844) after Reading. Bright edited Socrates according to the text of Hussey in 1878. There are "'Testimonia Veterum" in Valesius; and Nolte's papers in Tubing. Quartalschr., (1859) p. 518 sq., (1861) p. 417 sg., contain emendations in Hussey's text, and notes towards the history of the text and editions ; see also Overbeck, in Theol. Lit. Ztung. (1879), No. 20.

Special studies have been made by Baronius, Mirzus, Labbé, Valesius, Halloix, Scaliger, Ceillier, Cave, Dupin, Pagi, Ittig, Tillemont, Waleh, Gibhon, Schroeckh, Lardner. See also Voss, De Histor. Grecis; Fabricius-

Harless, Biblioth. Gr. vol. viis Rossler, Bibliothek d. Kirchenvdter; Holzhausen, De Fontibus quibus Socr., Soz., ac Theod. in scribenda Historia Sacra ust sunt, (Gottingen, 1825; Stiudlin, Gesch. u, Lit. d@. A.-G., Hanover, 1827; Baur, Epochen (1825); Harnack, ‘‘Socr. u. Soz.,” in Herzog-Plitt’s Theol. Encykl. Detached details are given also in works upon Constantine (Manso), Julian (Miicke, Rode, Neumann, Rendall), Damasus (Rade), Arianism (Gwatkin’s Studies of Arianism, 1882, gives a severe but trustworthy eritieism of Rufinus and discusses the manner in which Soerates was related to him), the emperors after Julian (De Broglie, Richter, Clinton, the Weltgeschichte of Ranke, the Gesch, d, Kaiser Arcadius u. Theod, 1I,, 1885, of Giildenpenning, and the Kaiser Theodostus d. Gr., Halle, 1878, of 1ffland, the last-named work diseussing the relation of Socrates to Sozomen), the barbarian migrations (Wietersheim, Dahn), the Goths (Waitz, Besscl, Kauffmann, and Scott’s Ulfilas, 1885). Lastly, reference may be made to Rosenstein, Forsch. z. deutsch. Gesch., vol. i.,—Arit.

SPA—SPA

Untersuch. tib. d. Verhdltniss zu Olympiodor, Zosimus, u. Soz.; Sarrazin, De Theodoro Lectore, Theophanis Fonte Precipuo, 1881 (treats of the relation between

Soerates and Sozomen, and of the completeness of the former’s work); Jeep,

Quellenuntersuch. z. d. griech. Kirchenhistorikern, Leipsic, 1884. (A. HA.)

SPA, a watering-place of Belgium, in the province of

Liége, 20 miles by rail from Liége via Pepinster, is beauti- fully situated, at a height of 814 feet above the sea, in the valley of the Wayai (a small sub-tributary of the Meuse).

On the north and north-east it is protected by the wooded

range of hills known as the Spaloumont, or in its several parts as Bois de la Reid, Bois du Chiencul, &c.; and on the south are a number of beautiful

ravines cut in the Primary rocks of the district by small affluents of the Wayai. Much

of the charm of the place is due to the promenades and drives along the sides and crests of the hills. The principal mineral spring called the Pouhon (a local word for “ well ”) is enclosed in a pump-room in the centre of the Place Pierre le Grand. Public baths, fed by chalybeate streams collected in a remarkable reservoir at the hamlet of Nivesé, occupy a large building in Place Royale, erected in 1868 ; and in the same neighbourhood is the casino, with ball and concert rooms. An English church was built in 1872-76. A local industry is the production of fancy articles in lacquered wood (bois de Spa). A liqueur resembling Chartreuse is also manufactured under the name of “elixir de Spa.” The population of the commune was 6930 in 1884. Several springs in the neighbouring district are nearly as celebrated as those of Spa proper; the Sauveniére waters, supposed to be effective against sterility, are half a mile distant.

Spa, said to derive its name from a Walloon word, Espa, for “fountain,” was practically founded by a certain Wolf, or Collin le Loup, iron-master of Breda, who had obtained benefit from the waters, and purchased the piece of ground containing the Pouhon spring from Erard de la Marck, bishop of Liége, in 1826. At the beginning of the 15th century the little town numbered 250 houses, The European celebrity of the waters dates from the 16th century, when they were drunk by the duke of Nevers, Margaret of Valois, Henry III. of France, and Alexander Farnese, and the fashion of visiting Spa became thoroughly established in the 18th century. The French Revolution, and, as far as English visitors were con- cerned, the attractions of the German watering-placcs made known by Sir Francis Head, for a time turned the tide elsewhere ; but since the middle of the century Spa has taken a new lease of prosperity.

SPAGNA, Lo (? ~-c. 1529), the usual designation (due to his Spanish origin) of Giovanni di Pietro, one of the chief followers of Perugino. Nothing whatever is known of his early life, or of the circumstances under which he became a member of the Perugian school. A large number of panel pictures by him exist, of which some are painted with much grace and refinement of touch. There is, however, a very marked absence of

individuality about his style, which seems like an imitation of the earliest inanner of Raphael and that of Pinturicchio in a weaker and less virile form. The chief of his numerous panel paintings are the Nativity, in the Vatican, and the Adoration of the Magi, at Berlin. In 1510 Lo Spagna executed many frescos at Todi, and in 1512 several other mural paintings in and near Trevi. His most important works were frescos at Assisi and Spoleto, of which some exist in good preser- vation. He received the freedom of the city of Spoleto in 1516, as a reward for his work there. As is so often the case, Lo Spagna's frescos reach a much higher standard of merit than his panel pictures. The museum of the Capitol in Rome now possesses a very beautiful series of life-sized fresco figures by him, representing Apollo and the Nine Muses. 'These are drawn with a strong feeling for grace of pose and beauty of expression, and are very remarkable for the delicate refinement of their colouring ; in style they strongly recall Raphael's earliest manner. Lo Spagna was alive in 1528, but he appears to have died before 1530, as in that year a pupil of his named Doni completed a fresco in 8. Jacopo, near Spoleto, which Lo Spagna had begun.

SPAGNOLETTO. See Riper.

|

ij urface,

SPAIN

PART IL—GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

PAIN, a country rather more than twice the size of Great Britain including the adjacent small islands, constitutes in its mainland portion about eleven-thirteenths of the Iberian Peninsula, and has in addition an insular area (in the Balearic and Canary Islands) of nearly 5000 square miles. On all sides except that of Portugal the boundaries are natural, the Peninsula being separated from France by the Pyrenees and on every other side being surrounded by the sea. On the side of Portugal a tract of inhospitable country led originally to the separa- tion between the two kingdoms,

inasmuch as it caused the reconquest of the comparatively populous maritime tracts from the Moors to be carried out independently of that of the eastern kingdoms, which were also well peopled. The absence of any such means of intercom- inunication as navigable rivers afford has favoured the continuance of this isolation. The precise line of this western frontier is formed for a considerable length by portions of the chief rivers or by small tributaries, and on the north (between Portugal and Galicia) it is determined to a large extent by small mountain ranges. The British rock of Gibraltar, in the extreme south of the peninsula, is separated from Spain by a low isthmus known as the Neutral Ground. The coast-line on the north and north-

“west is everywhere steep and cliffy. On the north there

are numerous small indentations, many of which form more or less convenient harbours, but the current flowing along the coast from the west often leaves in the stiller water at their mouths obstructive bars. The best harbours are to be found on the vias or fiord-like indenta- tions in the west of Galicia, where high tides keep the inlets well scoured; here occur the fine natural harbours of Pontevedra and Vigo, Corufia and Ferrol, the last one of the chief stations of the Spanish fleet. Less varied in outline but more varied in character are the Spanish coasts on the south and east. Flat coasts prevail from the frontier of Portugal to the Straits of Gibraltar. Between the mouth of the Rio Tinto and that of the Guadalquivir they are sandy and lined by a series of sand- dunes (the tract known as the Arenas Gordas). Next follows a marshy tract at the mouth of the Guadalquivir, after which the coast-line becomes more varied, and includes the fine Bay of Cadiz. From the Straits of Gibraltar a bold and rocky coast is continued almost right round to Cape Palos, a little beyond the fine natural harbour of Cartagena. North of Cape Palos a line of flat coast, beginning with the narrow strip which cuts off the lagoon called the Mar Menor from the Mediterranean, bounds half of the province of Alicante, but in its northern half this province, becoming mountainous, runs out to the lofty headland of Cape Nao. The whole coast of the Bay of Valencia is low and ill-provided with harbours; and along the east of Catalonia stretches of steep and rocky coast alternate with others of an opposite character.

The surface of Spain is remarkable at once for its strik- ing contrasts and its vast expanses of dreary uniformity. There are mountains rising with Alpine grandeur above the snow-line, but often sheltering rich and magnificent valleys at their base. Naked walls of white lmestone tower above dark woods of cork, oak, and olive. In other parts, as in the Basque country, in Galicia, in the Serrania de Cuenca (between the head waters of the Tagus and those of the Jucar), in the Albarracin (between the head Waters of the Tagus and those of the Guadalaviar), there are extensive tracts of undulating forest-clad hill country,

and almost contiguous to these there are apparently boundless plains, or tracts of level tableland, some almost uninhabitable, and some streaked with canals and richly cultivated—like the Requena of Valencia. While, again, continuous mountain ranges and broad plains and table- lands give the prevailing character to the scenery, there are here and there, on the one hand, lofty isolated peaks, landmarks for a wide distance round, such as Monseny, Monserrat, and Mont Sant in Catalonia, the Peiia Golosa in Valencia, Moncayo on the borders of Aragon and Old Castile, and, on the other hand, small secluded valleys, such as those of Vich and Olot among the Catalonian Pyrenees.

The greater part of the interior of Spain is composed of Central a tableland bounded by the Cantabrian Mountains in the tableland.

north and the Sierra Morena in the south, and divided into two by a series of mountain ranges stretching on the whole from east to west. The northern half of the table- land, made up of the provinces of Leon and Old Castile, has an average elevation estimated at about 2700 feet, while the southern half, made up of Estremadura and New Castile, is slightly lower—about 2600 feet. On all sides the tableland as a whole is remarkably isolated, and hence the passes on its boundary and the river valleys that lead up to it from the surrounding plains are geographical features of peculiar importance. The isolation on the side of Portugal, where the tableland gradually sinks to the sea in a succession of terraces, has already been referred to. On the north-west the valley of the Sil and a series of valleys further south, along both of which military roads have been carried from an early period, open up communication between Leon and the hill country of Galicia, which

explains why this province was united to Leon even before the conquest of Portugal from the Moors. The passes across the Cantabrian Mountains in the north are tolerably numerous, and four of them are already crossed by railways. The two most remarkable are the Pass of Pajares, across which winds the railway from Leon to Oviedo and the seaport of Gijon, and that of Reinosa leading down to the deep valley of the Besaya, and now crossed by the railway from Valladolid to Santander. In its eastern section the chain is crossed by the railways from Burgos to Bilbao and San Sebastian, the latter of which winds through the wild and romantic gorge of Pancorbo (in the north-east of the province of Burgos) before it traverses the Cantabrian chain at Idiazabal.

On the north-east and east, where the edge of the tableland sweeps round in a wide curve, the surface sinks on the whole in broad terraces to the valley of the Ebro and the Bay of Valencia, and is crowned here and there by more or less isolated mountains, some of which have been already mentioned. On the north-east by far the most important communication with the Ebro valley is formed by the valley of the Jalon, which has thus always formed a mihtary route of the highest consequence, and which is now traversed by the railway from Madrid to Saragossa. Further south the mountains clustered on the east of the tableland (Albarracin, Serrania de Cuenca) render direct communication between Valencia and Madrid extremely difficult, and the principal communica- tions with the east and south-east are effected where the southern tableland of La Mancha merges in the hill country which connects the interior of Spain with the Sierra Nevada,

In the south the descent from the tableland to the

Can- tabrian Moun- tains.

Central moun- tain chains.

valley of the Guadalquivir is again comparatively gradual, but even here in the eastern half of the Sierra Morena the passes are few, the most important being the Puerto de Despefiaperros, where the Rio Magafa has cut for itself a deep gorge through which the railway now ascends from Andalusia to

Madrid. Between Andalusia and Fstremadura farther west the communication is freer, the Sierra Morena being there broken up into series of small chains.

Of the mountains belonging to the tableland the most continuous are those of the Cantabrian chain, which stretches for the most part from east to west, parallel to the Bay of Biscay, but ultimately bends round towards the south between Leon and Galicia. Almost everywhere it consists of two parallel ranges, the higher of which, the more southerly, is the immediate continuation of the Pyrenees. The highest summits of the chain belong to the Jura limestones of the Pefias de Europa, on the borders of the provinces of Santander, Oviedo, Leon, and Palencia. The highest of all is the Torre de Ceredo, which attains the height of at least 8750 feet, and next is the Pefia Prieta (8300 feet). At the sources of the Si] the main chain divides into two branches, enclosing the fertile and thickly-populated district known as El Vierzo, once the bed of a lake, now watered by the stream just mentioned and its tributaries. The whole chain is remarkable for its intricate ramifications and its wild grandeur, but, as already indicated, is not so much of a barrier to communication as might be expected from its general aspect. Besides the railways above mentioned it is crossed at many points by bridle-paths and roads.

A peculiar feature of the chain and the neighbouring parts of the tableland is formed by the parameras or isolated plateaus, surrounded by steep rocky mountains, sometimes even by walls of naked rock. Among the larger of these are the bleak districts of Siguenza and Soria, round the headwaters of the Duero,—districts which separate the mountains of the so-called Iberian system on the north-east of the tableland from the eastern. portion of the central mountain chains of the peninsula. Of these chains, to which Spanish geographers give the name Carpetano-Vetonica, the most easterly is the Sierra de Guadarrama, the general trend of which is from south- west to north-east. It is the Montes Carpetani of the ancients, and a portion of it (due north of Madrid) still bears the name of Carpetanos. Composed almost entirely of granite, it has an aspect when seen from a distance highly characteristic of the mountains of the Iberian Peninsula in general, presenting the appearance of a saw- like ridge (sierra) broken up into numerous sections. Its mean height is about 5250 feet, and near its centre it

has three summits (the highest named the Pico de Pefialara) rising to the height of nearly 8000 feet.

A region with a highly irregular surface, filled with hills and parameras, separates this sierra from the Sierra de Gredos farther west. This is the loftiest and grandest sierra in the whole series. Its culminating point, the Plaza de Almanzor, attains the height of 8725 feet, not far short of that of the highest Cantabrian summits. Its general trend is east and west; towards the south it sinks precipitously, and on the north it descends with a somewhat more gentle slope towards the longitudinal valleys of the Tormes and Alberche which separate it from another rugged mountain range, forming the southern boundary of the paramera of Avila. On the west another rough and hilly tract, similar to that which divides it from the Sierra de Guadarrama in the east, separates it from the Sierra de Gata, the westernmost and the lowest of the Spanish sierras belonging to the series. These hilly intervals between the more continuous sierras greatly facilitate the communica-

tion between the northern and southern halves of the Spanish tableland. The Guadarrama is indeed crossed by three good pass-roads, and even the Sierra de Gredos has a road across it connecting Avila with Talavera de la Reina by the Puerto del Pico; but for the most part there are only bridle-paths across the sierras, and up to the present date not a single railway crosses any one of the sierras directly. The only railway crossing the central system of mountains is that from Madrid to Avila, which traverses the interval between the Sierras de Gredos and Guadarrama, passing through numerous tunnels on the way.

Morena—is even less of a continuous chain than the two systems last described. As already intimated, its least continuous portion is in the west. In the east and middle portion it is composed of a countless number of irregularly- disposed undulating mountains all nearly equal in height.

Even more important than the mountains bounding or crossing the tableland are those in the north-east and in the south, which are connected with the tableland only at their extremities. The former are the PYRENEES (¢.2.),

the latter are the Sierra Nevada, and the coast ranges still Sierra farther south. The Sierra Nevada, or “snowy sierra,” is Nevada.

a well-defined chain, between 50 and 60 miles in length, and about 25 miles in breadth, situated to the south of the valley of the Guadalquivir, and stretching from the upper part of the valley of the Jenil in the west to the deep valley of the Almeria in the east. It is composed chiefly of soft micaceous schists, sinking precipitously down on the north, but sloping more gently to the south and south-east. Its culminating summit, the Cerro de Mulahacen (11,660 feet), is the highest in Spain, and the range contains several other peaks upwards of 10,000 feet in height, and above the limit of perpetual snow. On both sides deep transverse valleys (barrancas) follow one another in close succession, in many cases with round basin-shaped heads, like the cirques of the Pyrenees. In many of these cirques repose alpine lakes, and in one of them, the Corral de Veleta, there is even a small glacier, the most southerly in Europe. On the south the transverse valleys of the Sierra Nevada open’ into the mountainous longitudinal valley of the Alpujarras, into which open also on the other side the transverse valleys from the most easterly of the coast sierras, the Sierra Contraviesa and the Sierra de Almijara. The latter are continued farther west by the Sierra de Alhama and Sierra de Abdalajiz. Immediately to the west of the latter sierra lies the gorge of the Guadal- horce, which now affords a passage for the railway from Malaga to Cordova; and beyond that gorge, to the west and south-west, the Serrania de Ronda, a mountain group difficult of access, stretches out its sierras in all directions. To Spanish geographers the coast ranges just mentioned are known collectively as the Sierra Penibetica. North- east of the Sierra Nevada two small ranges, Alcaraz and La Sagra, rise with remarkable abruptness from the plateau of Murcia, where it merges in that of the interior.

The only two important lowland valleys of Spain are Lowland The former Valleys |

those of the Ebro and the Guadalquivir. occupies the angle in the north-east between the Pyrenees

1 About 3700 feet above the level of Madrid, 2700 feet above that of Segovia.

The southern system Sierra of mountains bounding the Iberian tableland—the Sierra Morena.

Sierras of south

coast.

:

i

MOUNTAINS AND RIVERS. |

and the central tableland, and is divided by ranges of heights proceeding on the one side from the Pyrenees, on the other from the base of the Moncayo, into two portions. The uppermost of these, a plateau of between 1000 and 1300 feet above sea-level, is only about one-fourth of the size of the remaining portion, which is chiefly lowland, but is cut off from the coast by a highland tract connect- ing the interior tableland with spurs from the Pyrenees. The Guadalquivir basin is likewise divided by the con- figuration of the ground into a small upper portion of con- siderable elevation and a much larger lower portion mainly lowland, the latter composed from Seville downwards of a perfectly level and toa large extent unhealthy alluvium (las marismas). The division between these two sections is indicated by the change in the course of the main stream from a due westerly to a more south-westerly direction.

The main water-parting of the peninsula is everywhere near the edge of the tableland on the north, east, and south, and hence describes a semicircle with the convexity to the east. The Ebro alone of the great rivers flows into the Mediterranean. The following table gives the length of the principal Iberian rivers, with the area of their basins,—the length according to

different authorities, the area of the basins according to Strelbitsky, whose measure- ments of area appear to be more trustworthy than those made by him of the length of rivers :—

Length in English Miles. Area in

<> = = jenn Square

Wagner. | Ritter. | Strelbitsky. Miles.

[ELRO) » cote dO Seo ee Rene 442 416 470 38,580 Duero (Douro)..... 452 507 485 36,710 ‘IN227018 ,9t50;on0 eee oEeEEEee 565 5538 566 31,865 (EMMA CAMA <...-. 02000600 510 490 316 25,300 Guadalquivir…..... 337 350 374 21,580

With the exception of the Guadalquivir, none of the Iberian rivers is of great service for inland navigation, so far as they lie within the Spanish frontier. On the other hand, those of the east and south are of great value for irrigation, and the Jucar and Segura in the south-east are employed in floating timber from the Serrania de Cuenca.

The Epro and Tacus are described in separate articles (¢.v.). }

The Mito (Portug. Minho, the Minius of the Romans) is formed by the union of two small streams in the north of the province of Lugo, and flows first southwards, then on the whole south-westwards to the Atlantic, forming in the lower part of its course the boundary between Spain and Portugal. It becomes navigable for small vessels at Salvaterra, 25 miles above its mouth. Large vessels cannot cross the bar at its moyth. Its only important tributary is the Sil (left), which at the confluence is the larger river of the two.

The Duero (Portug. Dowro, the Durius of the Romans) emerges from the rock as a small stream among the mountains of Urbion on the borders of the provinces of Logrofio and Soria, and, after deseribing a wide sweep to the east, flows westwards across the northern half of the Spanish tableland and across Portugal. For a distance of nearly 60 miles it forms the boundary between the two countries. It begins to be navigable 80 miles above its

mouth, but sea-going vessels ascend only to Oporto, and even so far, on aecount of a bar at the mouth, only at high tide. The principal tributaries on the right are the Pisuerga and Esla, on the left the Adaja, Tormes, and Coa (the last in Portugal).

The Guadiana (i.e… Wadi Ana, the Anas of the ancients) was long believed to take its rise in the district known as the Campo de Montiel, where a string of small lakes known as the Lagunas de Nuidera (partly in Ciudad Real, partly in Albacete) are connected by a stream which, on leaving the last of them, flows north-westwards towards the Zancara and then disappears within two or three miles of that river. About 22 miles to the south-west of the point of

slisappearance the stream was believed to re-emerge in the form of several large springs which form a number of lakes at no great

‘stance from the Zancara, and these lakes are hence known as the “eyes of the Guadiana” (los ojos de Guadiana). The small stream issuing from them is known as the Guadiana and soon joins the Zancara, It has now been ascertained, however, that the stream

pPATN

295

which disappears higher up can have no such course, but that in fact its waters flow or trickle underground to the Zaneara itself, which is therefore entitled to be regarded as the upper Guadiana. It has its source not far from that of the Jucar in the east of the plateau of La Mancha, and flows westwards till, under the name of the Guadiana, it turns south-south-west on the Portuguese frontier. In piercing the Sierra Morena it forms a series of foam- ing rapids, and it begins to be navigable only at Mertola, about 42 miles above its mouth.

The Guadalquivir (i.¢c., Wadi-el-Kebir, “the great river,” the Betis of the ancients), though the shortest of the great rivers of the Peninsula, is the only one that at all seasons of the year is a full- bodied stream, being fed in winter by the rains, in summer by the melting of the snows on the Sierra

Nevada. What is regarded as the main stream rises in the Sierra de Cazorla in the east of the province of Jaen, but it does not beconte a considerable river till after it is joined by the Guadiana Menor (from the Sierra Nevada), on the left bank and the Guadalimar on the right. Lower down the principal tributary which it receives is the Jenil (left). In the days of the Moors the Guadalquivir was navigable for large vessels to Cordova, but, having been allowed to become silted up in the lower part of its course, it has only recently again been made navigable for vessels of 1200 tons burden to Seville.

The only considerable lakes in Spain are three coast Lakes.

lagoons,—that of Albufera in the province of Valencia, the Mar Menor in Murcia, and the Laguna de la Janda in Cadiz behind Cape Trafalgar. Small alpine and other lakes are numerous, and small salt lakes are to be found in every steppe region.

The geological structure of the Spanish Peninsula is Geology.

comparatively simple. Upon a fundamental platform of ancient crystalline rocks, which had previously been upraised into detached ridges, a series of sedimentary formations was laid down, among which occur representa-tives of most of the geological systems from the older Palzeozoic rocks up to those of Quaternary date. Arranged in order of age, with their respective areas, these various groups of rock are shown in the subjoined table :—

QUATCINGTY:. .ccscsesscesesess covering 49,477 sq. kilom., or 10°00 °/, of whole surfacc. WPIOCCHEN ss ..cseuesvseresses 9,064 5 1°80 7% Miocene and Oligocene, », 187,867 4 27°85 i) IDOAEING: cy apeenbanoudecsbodenan 3 23,564 > 5 4°80 i Cretaceous….. 9 47,002 op 9°50 5 Jurassic…..... 00 0 22,697 Pr 4°45 i UTE 5) |@honapaggoonsiapsnasogndd rf 22,443 6 4°45 re Carboniferous …..... A 11,301 0 2°22 i DGYONIAN ccs scecseesnases . 5,780 is 1:40 a Silurian (and Cambrian) », 114,382 00) 23°18 4 ATCHEAMN.....s.000sscerersees ’ nig 0°35 – Eruptive rocks of vari-

OMSTAIBES Ia ehsevernserersice », 49,665 55 10°00 a

Archean rocks are exposed in the northern half of the Peninsula, particularly along the great Pyrenean axis, in Galicia, Estremadura, the Sierra Morena, the Sierra Nevada, and Serrania de Ronda. They consist of granites, gneisses, and mica-schists, with tale- schists, amphibolites, and crystalline limestones. The oldest Paleozoic strata are referred, from their included fossils, to the Cambrian and Silurian divisions. They range through a vast region of Andalusia, Estremadura, Castile, Salamanca, Leon, and Asturias, and along the flanks of the Pyrenean and Cantabrian chain. They consist of slates, reywackes, quartzites, and diahases. Grits, quartzites, and shales referable to the Devonian system occur in a few scattered areas, the largest and most fossilifcrous of these occurring in the Asturias. The Carboniferous rocks of Spain are divisible into three groups, the lowest consisting of limestones with sandstones and shales, the middle of conglomeratcs and sandstones, and the upper of sandstones, conglomerates, shales, and coals. They lie in detached basins, and have not yct been well explored. One of these areas covers a considerable space in the Asturias, whence it stretches more or less continuously through the provinces of Leon, Palencia, and Santander, covering altogether an area of 6500 square kilometres. Another tract occurs at San Juan de las Abadesas in Catalonia, where it occupies about 200

_ square kilometres ; while a third, about 500 square kilometres in

exteut, runs from the province of Cordova into that of Badajoz. There are other smaller areas containing little or no coal, but showing by the included plant-remains that the strata undoubtedly belong to the Carboniferous system.

The Triassic system is well developed in the north of the Peninsula along the Cantabrian chain and eastwards to the Meditcrranean. It is composed of red and variegated sandstones, dolomitcs, and marls, traversed in some places by ophitic rocks, and containing deposits of gypsum, aragonite, and rock-salt. These strata are overlain by members of the Jurassic series, which

| are especially conspicuous in the eastern part of the Peninsula

Climate.

between Castile and Aragon, along the Mediterranean border, in Andalusia, and likewise along the flanks of the Pyrenees. The Lias is best represented. The Cretaceous system is distributed in four great districts: the largest of these extends through the kingdoms of Murcia and Valencia; a second stretches betwcen the two Castiles; a third is found in the Basque Provinces and the Asturias; and a fourth spreads out along the southern slopes of the Pyrenees from Navarre to the Mediterrancan. The lower members of the Cretaceous series include an important freshwater formation (sandstones and clays), which extends from the Cantabrian coast through the provinces of Santander, Burgos, Soria, and Logrofio, and is supposed to represent the English Wealden series. The higher members comprise massive hippurite limestones, and in the Pyrenean district representatives of the upper subdivisions of the system, including the Danian.

Deposits of Tertiary age cover rather more than a third of Spain. They are divisible into two great series, according to their mode of origin in the sea or in fresh water. The marine Tertiary accumula- tions commence with those that are referable to the Eocene series, consisting of nummulitic limestones, marls, and siliceous sand- stones. These strata are developed in the basin of the Ebro, and in a belt which extends from Valencia through Murcia and Andalusia to Cadiz. Marine Miocene deposits occupy some small tracts, especially on the coast of Valencia. But most of the sandy Tertiary rocks of that district are Pliocene. The Tertiary masses of Andalusia have coarse conglomerates (Middle Miocene) at their base, followed by thick beds of Bryozoan molasse and younger (Pliocene) beds. These strata are specially noteworthy for con- taining an important metalliferous deposit, that of the native silver of Herrerias, which is found in a Pliocene bed in the form of flakes, needles, and crystals. But the most extensive and interesting Tertiary accumulations are those of the great lakes which in Oligocene and Miocene time spread over so large an expanse of the tableland. These sheets of fresh water covered the centre of the country, including the basins of the Ebro, Jucar, Guadalaviar, Guadalquivir, and Tagus. They have left behind them thick de- posits of clays, marls, gypsum, and limestone, in which numerous remains of the land-animals of the time have been preserved.

Quaternary deposits spread over about a tenth of the area of the country. The largest tract of them is to be seen to the south of the Cantabrian chain; but another, of hardly inferior extent, flanks the Sierra de Guadarrama, and spreads out over the great plain from Madrid to Caceres. Some of these alluvial accumula- tions indicate a former greater extension of the snowfields that are now so restricted in the Spanish sierras. Remains of the reindeer are found in caves in the Pyrenees. ;

Eruptive rocks of many different ages occur in different parts of Spain. The most important tract covered by them is that which stretches from Cape Ortegal to Coria in Estremadura and spreads over a large area of Portugal. They likewise appear in Castile, forming the sierras of Gredos and Guadarrama; farther south they rise in the mountains of Toledo, in the Sierra Morena, and across the provinces of Cordova, Seville, Huelva, and Badajoz as far as Evora in Portugal. Among the minor areas occupied by them may be especially mentioned those which occur in the Triassic districts. Of rocks included in the eruptive series the most abundant is granite. There occur also quartz-porphyry (Sierra Morena, Pyrenees, &c.), diorite, porphyrite, diabase (well developed in the north of Andalusia, where it plays a great part in the structure of the Sierra Morena), ophite (Pyrenees, Cadiz), serpentine (forming an enormous mass in the Serrania de Ronda), trachyte, liparite, andesite, basalt. The last four rocks occur as a volcanic series distributed in three chief districts—that of Cape Gata, including the south-east of Andalusia and the south of Murcia, that of Catalonia, and that of La Mancha.

Climate. —In accordance with its southerly position, its differences of elevation, and the variety in its superficial configuration in other respects, Spain presents within its borders examples of every kind of climate to be found on the northern hemisphere, with the sole exception of that of the torrid zone. As regards temperature, the heart of the tableland is characterized by extremes as great as are to be met with in almost any part of central Europe. The northern and north-western maritime provinces, on the other hand, have a climate as equable, and, it may be added, as moist, as that of the west of England or Scotland.

Four zones of climate are distinguished. The first zone may be called that of the tableland, although to it also the greater part of the Ebro basin may be referred. This is the zone of the greatest extremes of temperature. Even in summer the nights are often decidedly cold, and on the high parameras it is not a rare thing to see hoar-frost in the morning. In spring cold wetting mists occasionally envelop the land for entire days, while in summer the sky is often perfectly clear for weeks together. At all seasons of the year sudden changes of teinperature, to the extent of from 30° to 50° F., are not infrequent. The air is extremely dry, which is all the more keenly felt from the fact that it is almost constantly in motion, At Madrid (2150 feet above sca-level) it regularly

freezes so hard in December and January that skating is carried on on the sheet of water in the Buen Retiro ; and, as winter through- out Spain, except in the maritime provinces of the north and north-west, is the season of greatest atmospheric precipitation, snowfalls are frequent, though the snow seldom lies long except at high elevations. The summers, on the other hand, are not only extremely warm but almost rainless, the sea-winds being deprived of their moisture on the edge of the plateau. In July and August the plains of New Castile and Estremadura are sun- burnt wastes ; the roads are several inches deep with dust; the leaves of the few trees are withered and discoloured ; the atmo- sphere is filled with a fine dust, producing a haze known as calina, which converts the blue of the sky into a dull grey. In the greater part of the Ebro basin the heat of summer is even more intense. The treeless mostly steppe-like valley with a bright- coloured soil acts like a concave mirror in reflecting the sun’s rays, and, moreover, the mountains and highlands by which the valley is enclosed prevent to a large extent the access of winds, and thus hinder the renewal of the air, which in the lowest parts is little disturbed.

The second zone is that of the Mediterranean provinces, exclusive of those of the extreme south. In this zone the extremes of teniperature are less, though the summers here also are warm, and the winters decidedly cool, especially in the north-east.

The southern zone, to which the name of African has been given, embraces the whole of Andalusia as far as the Sierra Morena, the southern half of Murcia, and the province of Alicante. In this zone there prevails a genuine subtropical climate, with extremely warm and alinost rainless summers and mild winters, the temperature hardly ever sinking below freezing-point. The hottest part of the region is not the most southerly district but the bright-coloured steppes of the coast of Granada, and the plains and hill terraces of the south-east coast from Almeria to Alicante. Snow and frost are here hardly known. It is said that at Malaga snow falls only about once in twenty-five years. The winter, in fact, is the season of the brightest vegetation : after the long drought of summer the surface gets covered once more in late autumn with a fresh green varied with bright-coloured flowers, and so it remains the whole winter through. On the other hand, the eastern part of this zone is the part of Spain which is liable to be visited from time to time by the scorching and blasting Jewche, the name given in Spain to the sirocco, as well as by the solano, a moist and less noxious east wind.

The fourth zone, that of the north and north-west maritime provinces, presents a marked contrast to all the others. The temperature is mild and equable ; the rains are abundant all the year round, but fall chiefly in autumn, asin the west of Europe

enerally. Monthly roses bloom in the gardens at Christmas as peanieliblly and as plentifully asin summer. The chief drawback of the climate is an cxcess of rain in some parts, especially in the west. Santiago de Compostella, for example, has one of the highest rainfalls on the mainland of Europe (see table below). he figures given in the following table ({.),! although based only on data of short periods (from 34 to 20 years), will help to illustrate the preceding general remarks. Greenwich is added for the sake of comparison.

/Mean Temperature, F.| pa;

/ Height) fail ne

oe al Jan. | July. | Year. | inches. Tableland TDG, oooenanon oa ASN | ie Tai || fae || Ue zone Mia cliicl eer. 2150 | 41 76 | 56 15 oauiiienn come San Fernando 90 | 52 75 | 68 30 Malaga…..... 75 | 54 vo || ee Br Mediterranean

| Murcia……..... 140 | 49 79 63 14 zone Mehon……..... apa |) (52 77 | 64 oF Neesweetacs Bilbao……..... 50 | 46 70 | 58 46 diate Bete OVAEMO. ose sccne 750 | 48 66 | 54 36 Santiago…..... 750 | 45°5 | 66 | 55 66 Greenwich…... 39 63 | 50 25

Vegetation.—The vegetation of Spain exhibits a variety in keeping Flora.

with the differences of climate justdescribed. Thenumber of endemic species is exceptionally large, the number of monotypic genera in the Peninsula greater than in any other part of the Mediterranean domain. The endemic species are naturally most numerous in the mountains, and above all in the loftiest ranges, the Pyrenees and the Sierra Nevada ; but it is a peculiarity of the Spanish tableland, as compared with the plains and tablelands of central Europe, that it also possesses a considerable number of endemic plants and plants of extremely restricted range. This fact, however, is also in harmony with the physical conditions above described, being explained by the local varieties, not only of climate, but also of

1 By conversion from Th. Fischer’s Klima der Mittelmeerldnder.

soil. Altogether no other country in Europe of equal extent has so great a wealth of species as Spain. According to the Prodromus Flore Hispanice of Willkomm and Lange (completed in 1880), the number of species of vascular plants then ascertained to exist in the country was 5096. a ‘ ;

Spain may be divided botanically into four provinces, corre- sponding to the four climatic zones.

In the tableland province (including the greater part of the Ebro valley) the flora is composed chiefly of species characteristic of the Mediterranean region, generally of species eonfined to the Peninsula. A peculiar character is imparted to the vegetation of this province by the growth over large tracts of evergreen shrubs and large herbaceous plants belonging to the Cistinew and Labiate. Areas covered by plants of the former group are known to the Spaniards as jarales, and are particularly extensive in the Mancha Alta and on the slopes of the Sierra Morena, where the ladanum busli (Cistus

ladaniferus) is specially abundant ; those covered by plants of the latter group are known as tomillares (from tomillo, thyme), and occur chiefly in the south, south-west, and east of the table- land of New Castile. In the central parts of the same tableland huge thistles (such as the Onopordum nervoswm), centaureas, artemisias, and other Compositz are scattered in great profusion. Fron the level parts of these tablelands trees are almost entirely absent. On the lofty parameras of Soria and other parts of Old Castile the vegetation has an almost alpine eharacter.

The southern or African province is distinguished chiefly by the abundance of plants which have their true home in North Africa (a fact easily understood when we consider the geologieally recent land connexion of Spain with that continent), but is also remarkable for the oceurrenee within it of numerous Eastern plants (natives of Syria and Asia Minor), and plants belonging to South Africa and the Canaries, as well as natives of tropical America which have become naturalized here (see below under Agriculture). In this province the maritime parts of Malaga and Granada present scenes of almost tropical riehness and beauty, while, on the other hand, in Murcia, Alicante, and Almeria the aspect is truly African, fertile oases appearing in the midst of rocky deserts or barren steppes. A peculiar vegetation, consisting mainly of low shrubs with fleshy glaucous leaves (Inula crithmoides, &e.), covers the marisimas of the Guadalquivir and various parts of the south-west coast where salt-marshes prevail. Everywhere on moist sandy ground are to be seen tall thickets of Arwndo Donazx.

The Mediterranean province is that in which the general aspect of the vegetation agrees most closely with that of southern France and the lowlands of the Mediterranean region generally. On the lower slopes of the mountains and on all the parts left uncultivated the prevailing form of vegetation consists of a dense growth of shrubs with thick leathery leaves, such as are known to the French as magquis, to the ltalians as macchic, and are called in Spanish monte bajo,1 shrubs which, however much they resemble each other in external appearance, belong botanically to a great variety of families,

The northern maritime province, in accordance with its climate, has a vegetation resembling that of central Europe. Here only are to be found rich grassy meadows adorued with flowers sueh as are seen in Nnglish fields, and here only do forests of oak, beech, and ehestnut cover a large proportion of the area, The extra- ordinary abundance of ferns (as in western France) is likewise charaeteristic.

The forest area of Spain generally is relatively small. The whole extent of forests is estimated at little more than 3 millions of hectares (74 million acres), or less than 6 per cent. of the area of the kingdom. Evergreen oaks, chestnuts, and conifers are the prevailing trees, The cork oaks of the southern provinees and of Catalonia are of immense value, but the groves containing this tree have suffered greatly from the reckless way in whieh the product is colleeted. Among other characteristic trees are the Spanish pine (Pinus hispanica), the Corsican pine (P. Laricio), the Pinsapo fir (Abics Pinsapo), and the Quercus Tozza, the last belonging to the slopes of the Sierra Nevada. Besides the date- palm the dwarf-palm grows spontaneously in some parts of the south, but it nowhere makes up a large element of the vegetation.

The Spanish steppes deserve a special notice, since they are not confined to one of the four botanieal provinces, but are found in all of them exeept the last. Six considerable steppe regions are counted :—(1) that of Old Castile, situated to the south of Valladolid, and composed chiefly of hills of gypsum ; (2) that of New Castile, In the south-east (the district of La Mancha); (3) the Aragonese, Oeeupying the upper part of the basin of the Ebro; (4) the littoral, Stretehing along the south-east coast from Alicante to the neighbourhood of Almeria; (5) the Granadine, in the east of Upper Andalusia (the former kingdom of Granada); and (6) the Beetie, in Lower Andalusia, on both sides of the valley of the Jenil. All of these are originally salt-steppes, and, where the soil is still highly

mostly members of the Salsolaccw, with thick, greyish green, often downy leaves. A different aspect is presented by the grass steppes of Murcia, La

Mancha, the plateaus of Guadix and Huescar in the province of Granada, &c., all of which are covered chiefly with the valuable esparto grass (Macrochloa tenacissima).

Fauna,—The Iberian Peninsula belongs to the Mediterranean Fauna.

subregion of the Palearetic region of the animal kingdom, a division which includes also the north of Afriea. The forms that betray African affinities are naturally to be found chiefly in the south. Among the mammals that fall under this head are the common genet (Genetta vulgaris), which extends, however, pretty far north, and is found also in the south of France, the fallow-deer, the porcupine (very rare), and a species of ichneumon (Herpestcs widdringtonii), whieh is confined to the Peninsula, and is the only European species of this characteristically African genus. The magot or Barbary ape (Inwus ecaudatus), the only species of inonkey still found wild in Europe, is also a native of Spain, but the only flock still surviving, on the rock of Gibraltar, has often been on the point of extinetion, and has to be renewed from time to timie by importations from the north of Africa. Of the mammals in which Spain shows more affinity to the fauna of central and northern Europe, some of the most characteristic are the Spanish lynx (Lynx pardinus), a species confined to the Peninsula, the Spanish hare (Lepus madritensis), and the species mentioned in the article Pyrenrrs. The birds of Spain are very numerous, partly no doubt in consequence of the fact that the Peninsula lies in the route of those birds of passage which eross from Afriea to Europe or Europe to Afriea by way of the Straits of Gibraltar. Many species belonging to central Europe pass the winter in Spain, especially on the south-eastern coasts and in the valley of the Guadalquivir. Innumerable, for example, are the snipes which in that season are killed in the latter district and brought to the market of Seville. Among the birds of prey may be mentioned, besides the cinereous and bearded vultures, the Spanish vulture (Gyps occidentalis), the African or Egyptian vulture (Neophron percnoptcrus), which is found among att the mountains of the Peninsula, the Spanish imperial eagle (Aguila adaibcrti), the short-toed eagle (Circactus gallicus), the southern eagle-owl (Bubo atheniensis), besides various kites and falcons. Among gallinaceous birds, besides the red-legged partridge, which is met with every- where on the steppes, there are found also the Pteroclcs alchita and P. arenarius; and from among the

birds of other orders the southern shrike (Lantus meridionalis), the Spanish sparrow (Passer cyaneus), and the blue magpie (Cyanopica cooki) may be singled out as worthy of mention. The last is highly remarkable on account of its distribution, it being confined to Spain while the species most closely allied to it (Cyanopica cyanea) belongs to the east of Asia. The flamingo is found native in the Balearic Islands and on the southern coasts, and oceasionally a stray specimen is to be seen on the tableland of New Castile. Other birds peculiar to the south are two specics of quails, the Andalusian hemipode (Turnix sylvatica), confined to the plains of Andalusia, the southern shearwater (Pufinus cinereus), and other water-birds. Amphibians and reptiles are particularly numerous in the southern provinces, and among these the most remarkable are the large southern or eyed lizard (Lacerta ocellata), whieh sometimes attains 8 feet in length and is very abundant, the Platydactylus saccicularis, the grey amphisbena (Blanus cinereus), the European pond-tortoise (Emys curopea), and another species, Emys sicgrizti. Insect life is remarkably abundant and varied. More than 350 species of butterflies, many of them endemic, have been counted in the province of Madrid alone. Besides the ordinary European scorpion, which is generally distributed in southern Europe, there is another species, the sting of whicli is said to be still more severe, found chiefly in the basin of the Ebro. Trout abound in the mountain streams and lakes, barbel and many other species of Cyprinide in the rivers of the plains. For the sea fauna, see under Fisherics below.

Extent.—The total area of the mainland of Spain, according to Extent.

the calculations of Strelbitsky, is 495,612 square kilometres or 191,365 square miles, that of the Balearic Islands 4982 square kilometres or 1923 square miles, and that of the Canary Islands, which, though belonging geographically to Africa, are admin- istratively associated with the kingdom of Spain, 7611 square kilometres or 2939 square miles; so that the total area of the kingdom is 508,205 square kilometres or 196,225 square miles. This total agrees pretty closely with that in Justus Perthes’s table given below (Table I1.), although eonsiderable differences will be observed in the arcas assigned to the mainland provinces and the two island groups respeetively. The length of the coast-line of the mainland, aecording to Strelbitsky, is 2662 miles, which is equivalent to 1 mile of coast for every 72 square miles

of area, about the same proportion as in France, The greatest length from north-east to south-west is 420 miles,

impregnated with salt, liave only a sparse covering of shrubs, Territorial Divisions and Population,—For administrative pur- Admin- % ae 2 : oe poses the kingdom of Spain has since 1833 been divided into forty- istrative ‘ As distinguished from monte alto, the collective name for forest trees, nine provinces, forty-seven of which belong to the mainland. divisions.

Sl — 35

Popula- tion.

298

Before 1833 the mainland was divided into thirteen provinces, also enumerated below, whichtook their namesfrom theancient kingdoms and principalities out of which the modern kingdom was gradually builtup. The present provinces are subdivided into judicial districts (partidos judiciales) and eommunes (ayuntamientos). Per

It is probable that the population of Spain attained its highest development during the period of the early Roman empire, when it has been estimated, though of course on imperfect data, to have numbered forty or fifty millions. The best evidence of a dense population in those days is that afforded by the specific estimates of ancient writers for some of the larger cities. The population of Tarraco (Tarragona) was estimated at 2} millions, and that of Nova Carthago (Cartagena), Italica (Sevilla la Vieja), and others at several hundreds of thousands. Emerita Augusta (Merida) had a Roman garrison of 90,000 men, which also implies a large population.’

Table II.—Area and Population of the Former and Present

Provinces.

Area in Pooulats Population | Increase a

Provinces. Square Bes7 on Dec. 31, or : a Miles. 1877. Decrease. ae

1877.

Nsw CASTIEE....0<..0<.0- 28,018 | 1,477,915 | 1,627,131 | + 10°1 58 AVC OIG Ea ecoogconnaener: 2,997 475,785 594,194 + 24°8 198 Guadalajara……...0 4,869 199,088 201,288 + 11 41 MEOVCUO?, oa csccenseces+ ses 5,586 328,755 335,038 | + 18 60 6,726 229,959 236,253 | + 3°3 84

7,840 244,328 260,358 | -+ 66 33

25,409 | 1,609,948 | 1,654,718 | + 2°8 65

5,651 833,356 332,625 — 02 59

1,945 173,812 174,425 + 0-4 89

2,112 214,441 235,299 + 97 111

2,982 164,039 180,436 + 10°0 60

2,714 146,839 150,052 | + 21 55

3,836 147,468 158,652 | + 42 40

8,126 185,970 180,771 | — 28 58

3,043 244,023 247,458 | + 14 80

ASTURIAS ....0ccsccceeeroes 4,091 524,529 576,352 | +9°9 | 140 OVIEdO…..ccceseesrveres 4,091 524,529 576,352 | + 99 140 15,242 861,434 885,625 | + 3°0 57

4,940 263,516 285,695 | + 8:3 58

4,135 249,162 249,720 | + 0-2 60

6,167 348,756 350,210 |} + 04 57

ESTREMADURA.....esceeee 16,702 707,115 739,403 | +4°6 44 ISHAONOZE cc cene noses 8,688 404,981 432,809 | + 69 50 CACETESS....2…00c-0005-] 9,014 302,134 306,594 | + 1° 38 GAEICIAN...θ CpBSHODEOBONC 11,343 |1,776,879 | 1,848,027 | + 4°0 | 163 Corufia 8,078 551,989 596,436 |} + 8:0 193 Lugo…. 3,787 424,186 410,810 | — 33 310 Orense…..... 2,739 371,818 388,835} -+ 46 142 Pontevedra. .ecrseceseee 1,739 428,886 451,946 | + 5-4 260 ANDALUSIA .....000eeeee-] 83,926 | 2,937,183 | 3,283,436 | + 11°7 94 ANTEHIAT. c.00c'vscess0 ese: 3,302 315,664 849,076 | +108 106 Granada….. : 4,937 444,629 479,066 | + 75 96 ILO pecoapoedseocnnsec 2,824 451,406 500,322 | + 10°8 177 GOLdGVa)...:ccccsees oer Be 5,300 351,536 885,482 | + 97 73 UNGMie econ ericcsscternes 5,184 345,879 423,025 | -+ 22°3 82 Cadiz (with Ceuta)... 2,828 390,192 429,206 | + 10-2 152 MOV Ciesvestessscscasecse 5,429 463,486 506,812 | + 93 93 TMHCNVAscresrcseccecsseees 4,122 174,391 210,447 |} +208 51 WVABENCIA,, «.-.scctse «| 8,897 | 1,246,485 | 1,374,592 | + 101 154 Castellon de la Plana 2,446 260,919 283,981 + 88 116 WEIGH CIE .JATICHI GE cccscesscoessceee 2,098 378,958 411,565 | + 86 194 IMSGROTANccscsseccinneessoses 10,449 582,087 670,669 | + 15°2 64 AYDACELC..esseeeseeeeees 5,972 201,118 219,058 | + 89 36 Murcia …..... 4,477 380,969 451,611 | -++ 185 101 CATALONIA ... .| 12,4838 | 1,652,291 | 1,752,033 | + 5:9 | 140 Lerida…..... 4,775 306,994 285,339 — 76 60 GEELOMMeeaeessccvesesecse's 2,272 310,970 299,702 — 39 131 Barcelona 2,985 713,734 836,887 +172 280 ABREVA LONG sts. eseseses 2,451 320,593 830,105 + 3:0 138 ARAGON (i500 s.0.c0ssescesee 17,979 880,643 894,991 +1°6 50 EEIECSGieescassseaceeassess 5,878 257,839 252,239 — 22 44 SATALOSSA...0…scccs0e 6,607 384,176 400,587 + 42 60 MerUelincss.sccotecereows|') Oreoe 238,628 242,165 |} + 15 44 NAVARRA codsadondgonaceccc: 4,046 297,422 304,184 + 2°3 75 INGEVOUEMaceleesciesiswsscess 4,046 297,422 304,184 + 23 75 BasQuE PROVINCES csee| Se 413,470 450,699 + 8°9 162 Vizcaya (Biscay)... 849 160,579 189,954 | +183 224 GUIPUZCO AN. vescssc ce 728 156,493 167,207 + 68 229 UAVS. cidesessscacsscs sot 1,205 96,398 93,538 | — 31 78 Balearic Islands…..... 1,860 262,893 289,035 9'9 155 Canary {slands ….... 2,944 234,046 280,974 Pies 95 FLODMCoresesetsscerss 196,171 {15,464,340 16,631,869 ie: Tey 85

Presidios of North Africa (exclusive of Ccuta)... 2,476

16,634,345

1 Garrido, La Espafia Contemporanea, i. 489.

Sral

[STATISTICS.

Tho first Spanish census was made in 1594, but some of the provinces now included in the kingdom were for one reason or another not embraced in the enumeration, so that the total popula- tion assigned to Spain within its present limits for that date is obtained by adding the results of enumerations at different dates in the provinces then excluded. The total thus arrived at is 8,206,791. No other census took place till 1787, when the total was found to be 10,268,150; and this census was followed by another in 1797, when the population was returned as 10,541,221. Various estimates were made within the next sixty years, but the census of 1857 proved that some of these estimates must have been greatly below the truth. The total population then ascertained to exist in Spain was 15,464,340, an increase of not much less than 50 per eent. since the census of 1797. The last census took place on December 31, 1877, and the total population then ascertained, 16,631,869, shows an increase of only 74 per cent., equal to an annual increase at the rate of 0°35 per cent.—lower than in any other country in Europe except France.

As Table lI. shows, the density of population in Spain as a whole is little more than that of the most thinly peopled county of England in 1881 (Westmoreland, 82 to the square inile), Looking at the old provinces, we find that the most thickly peopled are all maritime, and that all the maritime provinces except Andalusia and Murcia have a density exceeding 100 to the square mile. The most densely peopled province of all is not Catalonia, in which manufacturing industries are so highly de- veloped, nor the Basque Provinces with their great iron industry, but Galicia, where there are neither manufactures nor minerals to speak of, but where tillage occupies a relatively larger area than anywhere else in Spain. Of the modern provinces the most thinly peopled are Cuenca and Ciudad Real, in the barren region of

the east and south of New Castile, and Albacete in the Murcian steppe, in each ease the density being less than half of that of the most thinly peopled English county. The column indicating the increase (or decrease) per cent. of the population between 1857 and 1877 shows that, outside of the province in which the capital is situated, the increase points chiefly to the reeent development of manu- factures and mining,—to the development of eopper mines in Huelva, lead mines in Jaen, iron mines in Vizcaya, cotton manu- factures in Barcelona. In Murcia it points no doubt to the San development of the trade in esparto as well as in southern fruits. On the other hand the decrease in Lerida and Gerona indicates how the attraction of higher wages in the manufacturing districts of Catalonia tends to deplete the neighbouring country districts.

As regards the distribution of population between town and country, Spain contrasts in a marked manner with Italy, Spain having but few large towns and a relatively large country popula- tion. In 1877 there were only five towns with more than 100,000 inhabitants :—Madrid (397,816), Barcelona (248,943), Valencia (143,861), Seville (134,318), and Malaga (115,882). Only uine had a population between 50,000 and 100,000, and besides these only 171 had a population above 10,000.

The birth-rate in Spain is 33°9 per thousand as against 35°1 in England and Wales, the death-rate 29°1 (21°4 in England and Wales); the number of marriages per thousand inhabitants was 7°32? (8-08 in England and Wales). The percentage of illegitimacy is 5‘6.. The number of males born for every 100 females averages 107, a higher proportion than in any other eountry of Europe for which statistics are obtainable except Greece (112) and Roumania (111).

Foreign Possessions.—The population of the principal foreign Foreign

possessions of Spain in 1877 numbered 7,822,128, made up as follows :— : @ubarereeee: Berens ,... 1,521,684 Philippine Islands 5,567,685 Rorvowicor sac 731,648 Her aMdOwl Opsess. si fccter 1,106

Besides the Philippine Islands in the Eastern Archipelago, Spain possesses the greater part of the Sulu Archipelago, and, in the Pacific, the Marianne, Pelew, and Caroline Islands. Off the Guinea coast she possesses the Island

of Annobon as well as that of Fernando Po, and on the coast itself the district round Corisco Bay. She has likewise declared a protectorate over the West African coast between Capes Bojador and Blanco (desert of Sahara). The presidios, whose population is given in Table II., are Pefion de Velez, Alhucemas, and Melila (besides Ceuta).

Agriculture.—Agriculture is by far the most important Spanish Agri- industry, nearly 73 per cent. of those whose occupations were clas- culture,

sified at the census of 1877 being entered under that head. In general it is in a backward condition, and is now much less pro- ductive than in the time of the Romans and again under the Moors. The expulsion of the latter people in many places inflicted upon agriculture a+ blow from which it has not recovered to this day. Aragon and Estremadura, the two most thinly peopled of all the old provinces, and the eastern half of Andalusia (above Seville),

i

2 In all these cases the figures for Spain are the means of the years 1865-70 and 1880-83 inclusive.

Cereals.

AGRICULTURE. |

have all suffered particularly in this manner, later occupiers never having been able to rival the Moors in overcoming the sterility of nature, as in Aragon, or in taking advantage of its fertility, as in Andalusia and the Tierra de Barros. The implements in general use are of the rudest description. The plough is merely a pointed stick shod with iron, crossed by another stick which serves as a share, scratching the ground to the depth of afew inches. But the regular import now of agricultural implements (chiefly from Eng- land and France) betokens an improvement in this respect. In general there has been considerable improvement in the condition of agriculture since the introduction of railways, and in every province there is a royal commissioncr entrusted with the duty of supervising and encouraging this branch of industry. Among other institutions for the promotion of

agriculture the royal central school at Aranjuez, to which is attached a model farm, is of special importance.

The provinces in which agriculture is most advanced are those of Valencia and Catalonia, in both of which the river valleys are thickly seamed with irrigation canals and the hill-slopes carefully terraced for cultivation. In neither province is the soil naturally fertile, and nothing but the untiring industry of the inhabitants, favoured in the one case by the rivers which traverse the province from the tableland of New Castile and the numerous small streams (nacimientos) that issue from the base of the limestone mountains of which the province is largely composed, and in the other case by the numerous torrents from the Pyrenees, has converted them into two of the most productive regions in Spain. In the Basque Provinces and in Galicia the cultivable area is quite as fully utilized, but in these the difficulties that have to be contended with are not so great. The least productive tracts, apart from Aragon and Estremadura, are situated in the south and east of New Castile, in Murcia, and in Lower Andalusia—the marshes or marismas of the lower Guadalquivir and the arenas gordas between that river and the Rio Tinto. By far the greater part of the tableland, however, is anything but fertile, the principal exceptions being the Ticrra de Campos, said to be the chief corn-growing district in Spain, occupying the greater part of Palencia in the north-west of Old Castile, and the Tierra de Barros, in the portion of Badajoz lying to the south of the Guadiana in Estremadura, another district noted for its corn.

Except in Leon and the ‘provinces bordering on the Bay of Biscay and the Atlantic irrigation is almost everywhere necessary for cultivation, at least in the case of certain crops. Almost all kinds of vegetables and garden-fruits, oranges, rice, hemp, and other products are generally grown solely or mainly on irrigated land, whereas most kinds of grain, vines, and olives are eultivated chiefly on dry soil. The water used for irrigation is sometimes derived from springs and rivers in mountain valleys, whence it is conveyed by long canals (acequias) along the mountain sides and sometimes by lofty aqueducts to the fields on which it is to be used. Sometimes the water of entire rivers or vast artificial reservoirs (pdntanos) is used in feeding a dense network of canals distributed over plains many square miles in extent. Such plains in Valencia and Murcia are known by the Spanish name

of hucrtas (gardens), in Andalusia by the Arabic name of vegas, which has the same meaning. Many of the old irrigation works,—such, for example, as those of the plain of Tarragona,—date from the time of the Romans, and many others from the Moorish period, while new ones are still being laid out at the present day. Where no running water is available for irrigation, water is often obtained from wells by means of waterwhcels (norias) of simple construction. In most cases such wheels merely have earthenware pitchers attached to their cireumfcrence by means of wisps of esparto, and are turned by a horse harnessed to a long arm fitted to a revolving shaft. In recent years many artesian wells have been sunk for irrigation. According to Higgin (see Bibliography), the total area of irrigated land in Spain amounts to 4439 square miles. The effect of irrigation is shown by the fact that the irrigated portion of Murcia has a population of 1681 to the square mile as against 101 for the whole province, and Orihuela a population of 767 to the square mile as against 194 for the whole province of Alicante to which it belongs.

Cereals constitute the principal object of cultivation, and among these wheat ranks first, the next in importance being barley, the ehief fodder of horses and mules. Both of these grains are cultivated in all parts—on the plains as well as among the mountains, but chiefly on the more level parts of the two Castiles and Leon, and on the plains of the basin of the Guadalquivir. Oats and rye are cultivated only inthe higher parts of the mountains, the former as a substitute for barley in feeding horses and mules, the latter as a breadstuff. Maize also is cultivated in all the provinces; nevertheless the total extent of its cultivation is limited, since, being a summer crop, it requires irrigation except in the Atlantic provinces, and other products generally yield a more profitable return where irrigation is pursued. Rice is cultivated on a large scale only in Valencia. Among cereals of less importance are buckwheat (in the mountainous regions of the

north), millets, including both the common millet (Panicum miliaceum) and the so-called Indian millet (Sorghum vulgare, the jodri of India, the durrah of Africa), and even (in La Mancha) guinea-corn (Penicillaria spicata). As

to the quantity of cereals produced in the country we are without official informa- tion, and the estimates of the average annual production of cereals of all kinds are very discrepant, varying from 250 to 430 million bushels. The average production of wheat alone has been esti- mated! at 177 million bushels, and the average produce of that crop per acre at 11°13 bushels (that of England being about 29 bushels). If these figures can be taken as approximately correct, it follows that the average acreage under wheat in Spain is nearly 16 million acres, or between five and six times the average in Great Britain, which has less than half the area of Spain, The produce per acre just indicated places Spain among those countries of Europe in which the return is least, which is probably fully accounted for by the backward state of cultivation generally and in particular by the small expenditure on manure. Asa rule, in fact, the straw left on the ground is the only manure which the land receives.

The cereal and especially the wheat production of the country regularly furnishes a considerable export. During the five years 1879-83 the value of the export of cereals and pod-fruits of all kinds was nearly 8 per cent. of the total value of the exports; but this export is balanced by a large import, especially of wheat flour. In bad years, indeed, the value of the import under this head greatly exceeds that of the export.

In the production of pod-fruits and kitchen vegetables Spain is ahead of all other countries in Europe. The chick pea forms part of the daily food of all classes of the inhabitants; and among other

od-fruits largely cultivated are various kinds of beans and pease, entils (Zrvwm Icns), Spanish lentils (Lathyrus sativus) and other species of Lathyrus, lupines, &c. The principal fodder-crops are lucerne (Medicago sativa) and esparcette (a variety of sainfoin). Clover, particularly crimson clover (Trifoliwm incarnatwm), is grown in the northern provinces. Among vegetables garlic and onions take the chief place, and form an indispensable part of the diet of all Spaniards ; besides these, tomatoes and Spanish pepper are the principal garden crops. It is upon such crops that the Spanish peasant in general bestows his chief care.

As regards the quantity of the product wine comes next after cereals among the objects of cultivation in Spain. Here again we are dependent only upon

vague estimates of the average amount produced, but usually the average annual Spanish production of wine is estimated at between 440 and 500 million gallons, an estimate which places Spain third (next after France and Italy) among the wine-producing countries of Europe. So faras quantity is concerned the principal wine-producing districts are in the north- east, but the only wines of Spain which have a world-wide reputation are those of the south, and more particularly those which take the name of ‘‘sherry,” from the town of Jerez, in the neighbourhood of which they are grown. The total area under the vine is estimated at about 3,480,000 acres (or about 2°8 per cent. of the entire surface), and of this total about 772,700 acres belong to the Catalonian provinces, chiefly Barcelona, The provinces which produce most wine are Barcelona, Saragossa, Cadiz, and Malaga, the annual amount of the production being in the order in which the provinces are mentioned.

The official tables distinguish the wines exported from Spain as common wines, sherry and similar wines, and other full-bodied wines (vino generoso). ‘The returns of recent years, as will be seen from Table III. given below, show that of late an enormous increase has taken place in this export both as regards quantity and value, this increase being chiefly due to the extension of the export of the commoner wines to France by way of Barcelona.

Average of Five} Average of Five

Years 1874-78. | Years 1879-83. —— man , ‘3 Nn -s 3 Dw – 3 on Bes | 298 | B83 | fo | 283 | fee 35/222 | 235/285 | 935 | 285 26 oy pad =] a, at = Ss ae! S oom aes | GOR seo | cor | aes Hos cg ii Hs 3 ae Guo ae wey re) 2a Common wine…….....+6 40,524 2,547 | 183,562 | 7,748 | 135,452 | 8,865 Sherry and similar)| ¢ 446 | 9,466| 5,874 5,368| 1,465 WIMES . wcccccccccccce tees Other full – oni 2,044) 470] 3,388 2,420} 498

There is also a large export of grapes and raisins, especially from

the southern provinces (Malaga and Almeria). The average quantity of the two together exported in each of the five years

1 In an article by M. P. A. Delboy in the Journal of the Statistical Society for Mareh 1884, translated from the Journal de la Société de Statistique de

Paris, September 1883.

Fruits.

Sugar.

Live stock.

300

1879-83 was about 50 millions of kilogramines (110 million tb), the average value about £1,560,000. The vines whose fruit is intended for table use as grapes or raisins are trained on espaliers or on trees, especially the nettle-tree (Celtis australis). ; ae 3

Among fruit-trees the first place belongs to the olive, which is estimated to cover about 8 per cent. of the surface, and accordingly about an equal area to that occupied by the vine. Its range in Spain embraces the whole of the southern half of the tableland, the greater part of the Ebro valley, aud a small strip on the west coast of Galicia. Along the base of the Sierra Morena from Andujar to the vicinity of Cordova there run regular forests of olives, embracing hundreds of square miles. The annual production of oil is estimated at 55 millions of gallons, and might be greatly increased in quantity and improved in quality if more attention were bestowed upon the cultivation of the trees and the prepara- tion of the oil. Oranges, excluded from the plateau by the severity of the winter cold, are grown in great quantity on the plains of Andalusia and all round the Mediterranean coast; and figs, almonds, pomegranates, carobs, and other southern fruits are also grown abundantly in all the warmer parts, the first two even in central Spain and the more sheltered parts of the northern maritime provinces. In these last, however, the prevailing fruit- trees are those of central Europe, and above all the apple, which is very extensively cultivated in Asturias, the Basque Provinces, and Navarre. ‘The date-palm is very general in the south-castern half of the kingdom, but is cultivated for its fruit only in the province of Alicante, in which lics the celebrated date-grove of Elche. In the southern provinces flourish also various subtropical exotics, such as the banana, the West Indian cherimoya, and the prickly pear or Indian fig (Opuntia vulgaris), the last frequently grown as a hedge-plant, as in other

Mediterranean countries, and extend- ing even to the southern part of the tableland. It is specially abundant on the Balearic Islands. The agave or American aloe is cultivated in a similar manner throughout Andalusia. Cotton is now cultivated only here and there in the south; but, on the other hand, sugar-cane, the cultivation of which was introduced by the Arabs in the 12th century or later, and was of great importance in the kingdom of Granada at the time of the expulsion of the Moors at the close of the 15th century, but has since undergone great vicissitudes, first in consequence of the introduction of the cane into America, and afterwards because of the great development of beet- sugar in central Europe, is now becoming every year more and more ofa staple in the provinces of Granada, Malaga, and Almeria. The annual production on the Spanish mainland is estimated at about 75,000,000 1b. Such prosperity as this branch of agriculture at present enjoys is largely due to the protection which it receives at the hands of the Spanish Government. A duty imposed on all imported sugars in 1876, while inflicting a severe blow on the Spanish colony of Cuba, has had the desired effect of stimulat- ing the native production, but according to the law at present in force (passed on June 80, 1882) the amount of this duty, as far as regards the produce of the Spanish colonies, is being gradually reduced, and the duty will be entirely abolished on July

1, 1892.

Among the vegetable products not yet mentioned the most important are the mulberry, grown in almost all provinces, but principally in those bordering on the Mediterranean, and above all in Valencia, the chief seat of the Spanish silk production and manufacture; hemp and flax, grown chiefly in Galicia and other northern provinces; among dye-plants, madder, saffron, woad (Isatis tinctoria), and wild woad or dyer’s weed (Reseda lutcola) ; ground-nuts (Arachis hypogexa), grown for their oil, for the pre- paration of which the nuts are exported in considerable quantity to France; liquorice, cummin, colocynth, &c.

The rearing of animals has likewise been recciving in recent ycars increased attention at the hands of both Government and people, though here also we are without recent official statistics to show the consequent advance. The middle of the present century appears to have been the time when this industry was at its lowest point, and the following table (IV.) shows the increase in numbers that has taken place at certain subsequent dates for which official returns or estimates are obtainable :—

1858. Sout aL, 1G88. Estimate 1878.

IIOMSCS sans ceecscce sues 298,722 672,559 700, 000 Mules. .....c0ccccscss ee. 499,172 | 1,001,878 | 1,200,000 EASES SR ene ce 496,516 1,290,814 1,300,000 1 1,557,033 | 2,904,598 | 3,000,000 Sheep. ...cccsecseseceees 16,443,950 | 227054967 | 23,000,000 ee 3,034,701 | 4,429,576 | 4,500,000 Swine ..occcscecsseee. 1,272,978 | 4.264.817 | 4,500,000 (amie Ss ee semeceone ce 3,104 ee

In 1865 horses were reared chiefly in the provinces of Seville, Corufia, and Cadiz, mules in Toledo, Cuenca, Teruel, Saragossa,

and Badajoz, asses in Badajoz, Toledo, Murcia, Seville, and Granada, cattle in Oviedo, Corufia, Leon, and Pontevedra, sheep in Badajoz, Leon, Teruel, Soria, and Saragossa, goats in Caceres and Badajoz, camels mainly on the Canary Islands, the total number on the Spanish mainland at the date of the enumeration being less than a hundred. Badajoz was the richest of the provinces in live-stock of all kinds, containing about one-fourteenth of the total number of domestic animals in the kingdom.

The only animals belonging to Spain still noted for their excellence are mules and asses, which are recognized as the best to be found anywhere. The quality of the horses has been greatly improved, however, since the establishment of Government studs more than forty years ago. Besides the cattle reared throughout the kingdom for field-labour and (in the northern

provinces) for regular dairy farming, bulls for the great national pastime of bull- fighting are specially reared in many parts of the country, par- ticularly in the forests of Navarre, the mountains separating the two Castiles, the Sierra Morena, and the Serrania de Ronda in Granada, and also in separate enclosures on the islands of the Guadalquivir. Spanish sheep, which in former times enjoyed so high a reputation and formed so important a part of the national wealth, are far from having the same relative importance at the present day, though sheep-rearing also is sharing in the general rise of agricultural and other industries. The most famous breeds of Spanish sheep are the merinos or migrating shcep, which once brought immense revenues to the state as well as to the large proprietors to whom they mostly belonged. These sheep, which are distinguished by their long slim legs and still more by their long wool, are pastured in different districts in sumuner and winter. Their winter quarters are in the lower parts of Leon and Estremadura, La Mancha, and the lowlands of Andalusia, their summer quarters the more mountainous districts to the east and north (Plasencia in the province of Caceres, Avila, Segovia, Cuenca, Valencia), which are not so much affected by the summer droughts of the Peninsula. The mode of the migration and the routes to be followed are prescribed by law. Each herd consists of about 10,000 individuals, under the command of a mayoral, and is divided into sections containing about 1000 each, each section under the charge of an overseer (capataz), who is assisted by a number of shepherds (pastores) attended by dogs. The shepherds, rudely clad in a sleeveless sheepskin jacket, the wool outside, and leather breeches, and loosely wrapped in a woollen mantle or blanket, are one of the most striking and characteristic objects in a Spanish landscape, especially on the tableland. The migration to the summer quarters takes place at the beginning of April, the return at the end of September. At one time the owners of merino herds enjoyed the right of pasturing their herds during their migrations on a strip of ground about 100 yards in breadth bordering the routes along which the migrations took place, a strip which had accordingly to be left uncultivated; but this right (the mesta, as it was called) was abolished in 1836 as prejudicial to cultivation. Since that date the migrating sheep have been compelled to keep the roads. The average quantity of wool exported in the five years 1879-83 was about 9,000,000 tb. Even in the best of the years (1883-84) the total export of Spanish wool to all countries was only about

one-thirtieth of the total average import of that commodity into the United Kingdom during the corresponding

eriod,

. Bees are reared chiefly on the cistus heaths and the districts abounding in tomillares (see p. 297), The rearing of the silkworm on the mulberry trees of the Mediterranean provinces has already been referred to; the total annual production of raw silk in Valencia is estimated at 1,500,000 tb, in Murcia at 500,000 tb, and in Cata- lonia at 200,000 tb. The rearing of the cochineal-insect, which was introduced into southern Spain in 1820, is being carried on with more and more success, especially round Malaga, Velez-Malaga, and Motril.

Fisheries. —The catching of tunnies, sardines, anchovies, and Fisheries, salmon on the coasts employs large numbers of fishermen, and the –

salting, smoking, and packing of the first three give employment to many others. Spanish fishermen likewise dive for coral on the coasts of Andalusia and the north of Africa. The fishermen of Catalonia and Valencia have the greatest reputation for their skill. The centre of the principal tunny fisheries of Spain is a small rocky islet called Cristina about three leagues from the mouth of the Guadiana. The fishing lasts from May to August, that of sardines from August to the end of January. The average value of the export of fish in 1879-83 was nearly £120,000.

Minerals.—The mineral resources of Spain are vast and varied, Minerals.

but are as yet far from being adequately turned to account. No European country produces so great a variety of minerals in large amount, and in the production of copper ore, lead orc, and quick- silver Spain heads the list. In the production of salt and silver it is excelled only by Austria-Hungary, and, as regards silver, not always even by it. The following table (V.) gives particulars regarding the production of some of the principal minerals in the years named :—

INDUSTRIES. |

1863, 1883.

ial Persons employed. 2 a Valter) | ee S| ae Thousands | Thousands chousands ais f Metric | of Metrie : r= ee 1 T of Pounds 8 2 ge ens we at the : g 3 e 5 produced. | produced. ines s 5 a Bg x elo |40 ROTOVGN. cceecs os 223 4,526 506°1 12,157 | 472 | 2,550 | 766 Lead ore…....-+ 270 “280 1,405-2 | 14,874 | 110| 2,538 | 871 an pentiferous 40 25 1575 | 8,578} 72| 192; 92 lead ore, ... SiIVOE ONC ss c1+.~~- ee 88°3 539 2 14| 16 Copper ore…...~~ 246 2,455 1,094°5 9,716 | 684; 1,265 | 38 MEMCULY ..cvcssers 169 23 209°1 Bee 1 309’| 12 7803s oper Co EDC 481 54 56°4 Wan) 92370) 97. Common salt…. ae 202 17°4 871) 94) 108/ 53 Cialis 1,044 463-6 7,235 680 | 1,865 | 465

Of the minerals mentioned in the preceding table it will be seen that iron and copper orcs are those which show the greatest advance as eompared with 1863. The production of these two orcs advaneed with rapid strides during the ten years 1874-1883. In the former year the production of both stood at about 500,000 tons. ‘The iron ore is chiefly obtained in Vizcaya and Murcia, the former yielding by far the greatest quantity (in 1883 four-fifths of the total production of Spain), but the latter yielding the best quality (average value of Murcian iron in 1883, 5 pesetas=4s. per ton at the mine, as against 2°25 pesetas, or 1s. 9}d., the average for the Vizcayan ore). All except a small fraetion of the copper ore is obtained from the province of Huelva, in which lie the well-known mines of Rio Tinto. The lead ore is obtained chiefly in Murcia and Jacn. Thé famous mines of Linares belong to the latter province. Argentiferous lead is chiefly produccd in Almeria, which also produces most of the silver ore of other kinds except argentifcrous copper ore, which is entirely obtained from Ciudad Real. The still miore cclebrated cinnabar (mercury) mines of Almaden, the richest in the world till the discovery of the Californian mines of New Almaden, belong to Ciudad Real, and this province, together with that of Oviedo, furnishes the whole of the Spanish production of this mineral. Spanish salt is partly marine, partly derived from brine-springs and partly from rock-salt, of which last there is an entire mountain at Cardona in Barcelona. Coal is chiefly obtained in Oviedo, Palencia, and Cordova. The production is quite insignificant compared with the extent of the coal-bearing beds, whieh are estimated to cover an area of about 3500 square miles, of which nearly a

third belongs to Oviedo, between one- eighth and one-seventh to Burgos and Soria, and about one-tenth to Tcruel and Cordova. Among the less important Spanish minerals are manganese (chiefly in Ciudad Real), antimony, gold, cobalt, sodic sulphate, sulphate of barium (barytes), phosphorite (a valu- able manure, a variety of apatite found in Caccres), alum, sulphur, kaolin, lignite, asphalt, besides a variety of building and orna- mental stones.

The total number of mines (including springs for the production of mineral waters) in operation in Spain in 1883 was 2620, and the total number of labourers employed in them in that year was 57,626. The working of the mines is carried on under state supervision. For this purpose the whole kingdom, including the Balearic and Canary Islands, is divided into three sections, and each of these into four districts. Each section is under the eharge of an inspector-general of the first class, and each of the districts under an inspector of the second class. By the law of July 6, 1859, a large number of important mines, including all tle salt-works and rock-salt mines, were reserved as state property, but financial necessities have compelled the Government to sur- render one mine after another, so that at present the state possesses ouly the cinnabar mines and some salt-works. Many of the mines have been granted to foreign (principally English) companies.

Of the metallic ores produced in Spain, those of lead and mercury are the only ones which are chiefly reduced in the country. Though the working of iron is an industry of old standing in Spain, and a primitive kind of forge takes its name from Catalonia (see Iron), the total production of iron, refined and unrefined, in Spain in 1883 was only 200,000 tons, and by far the greater part of the Spanish ore is exported, as will be seen by comparing Tables V. and VI. The production of iron in Spain is, however, rapidly and steadily increasing, the total amount in the first year of the decade ending in 1883 having been less than 60,000 tons. During the same decade the amount of copper produced in the kingdom increased from about 5000 to 32,000 tons, The amount of stecl produced in the kingdom is quite insignificant (little more than 400 tons in 1883). The following table (VI.) gives partieulars regarding the export of the chief mineral products of Spain in 1883 :—

1A metrie ton=1000 kilogrammes=2205 Ibs., or 35 Ibs. less than a ton avoirdupois.

- Exclusive of 100,000 tons produced in the state salt works of Torrevieja (Alicante).

ep Pars

301

Minerals. To United | 1) prance. | Total export to

Kingdom. all Countrics. Metrie Tons.| Metric Tons.| Metric Tons.

TrOMkOne eee. teaser eee 2,895,000 511,000 4,226,0008 Argentiferous galena.. 2,400 2,000 13,000 Lead! one: ccs. ceesssac cee ae 1,400 2,500 COPPEINOLGresccsrcersescceccccecconaseesecers 555,000 565,000 Zine ores—

GalbImitiessssesccssetosscsvessesseieeees 20,000 30,0004

Blend es sesereeeereteeivass ete ee es 15,0004 PATSEMIMOWYAORC rs cccecsecceescocerecistr ce: 70 ae Oe | INAIIBANEBeRC cor eco e esc sehesceccnecs 3,300 4,500 IPNOSPNOUILCssc21 cc osssevtsececccscevceoe nc 1,000 5 56,0005 TONE wcscestvanecesaccutesosas i seecvensesas sacs A 13,000 30,000 Argentiferous lead…….....ssssccssesee 31,000 20,000 51,000 Non-argentiferous lead(unwrought)| 51,000 25,000 77,000

Z. Ze Oz. Olde esccarescassssssescscseseternes ccasececeut 243, 522 765 TLV Oliessaeescecsseseevesseecssicerncerecticen 190,595 549,090 739,686 Lbs. Lbs. Lbs.

RON CUR Vanes. cscocsesnuieecnksaussvenrnetne 910,037 23,924 1,189,932 Wrought-iron and steel…....cc0..000 7,440 68,708 186,510 Lead in tubes and other forms…... ip 305 546,4257

opper, brass, and bronze in :

plates, tubes, and other et 171,408 187,844 atta)

Manufactures.—At the census of 1877 only about 3 per cent. of Manu- the classified population was returned as engaged in manufactur- factures.

ing industries. The principal manufacture is that of cotton, and the following table, which shows the position of Spain relatively to the other countries of Europe with reference to this branch of manufacturing industry, will also serve to some extent as an index of the rank belonging to Spain in mechanical industries generally :—

TABLE VII.—Average Import of Raw Cotton for Home Consumption in the Prineipal Countries of Hurope during 1879-1883.

Millions of tb. | Millions of tb.

United Kingdom..| 1460°8 Sygalllresncecesncee eee 100°3 GOMMOMY s.avansvans: 336°9 [EL 260 ene = 94°8 IEPATICOR <.. scacaceare 309°6 Belgien.

The average import per head of population during the same period was as follows:—United Kingdom, 41:7 tb; Holland,.23°6; Switzerland, 18°7; Belgium, 9°9; France, 8°2; Germany, 8°92; Spain, 6:0; Austria-Hungary, 46; Sweden, 4°6; Italy, 4:0; Russia, 2°9. It thus appears that Spain occupies the seventh placc in the consumption of raw cotton, both in absolute amount and relatively to population. In the five years 1874-78 the average import of raw cotton into Spain was 79,690,000 tb, so that the increase of the average in the succeeding period of five years amounted to 25°8 per cent. Nevertheless the products of this branch of industry in the country do not yet suffice to meet the wants of the population. There is every year a considerable import of cotton manufactures, while the export of this commodity is too trifling to be included in the list of chief exports. The maritime provinces, being those most favourably situated for the import of coal, and, where necessary, of raw material, are the chief seats of Spanish manufactures, and the cotton industry is principally centred in Catalonia and, above all, in Barcelona and the surround- ing district. This region is indeed the only distinctively manu- facturing portion of Spain, and in it also the manwtactures of linen and woollen goods and of lace are mainly carried

on. Flax- spinning and the manufacture of linen goods are pursued to a considerable extent in Galicia and Asturias. The silk industry, which is likewise of high importanee, but inadequate to meet the home demand for silk fabrics, is chiefly centred in Valencia, next to which come Murcia and Seville. Metal industries are ehiefly carried on in the Basque Provinces, where various articles in iron and copper are made. A royal factory for the making of artillery and other weapons of war exists at La Trubia, in Asturias. Toledo is still noted, as it has been from the earliest times, for the excellence of its sword-blades. The manufacture of leather, another Spanish industry of old renown, is still extensively carried on in Catalonia and elsewhere, but the making of cordwain has long ceased to be a specialty of Cordova, from which it takesits name. Boots and shoes and other articles in leather form the only considerable ex- port of manufaetured goods. Gloves are made in great quantity in Madrid, shoes in the Balearic Islands. _The paper industry is very flourishing, especially in Catalonia and Valencia. Esparto is twisted into cords and ropes, and plaited into a variety of other articles, in Murcia and Alicante and elsewhere. The refining of cane-sugar is largely carried on in Barcelona, Malaga, Almeria, and Granada, and

3 Of this total 478,000 tons were exported to Holland, 142,000 to Belgium, and 199,000 to the United States.

4 All the blende and one-third of the ealamine were exported to Belgium.

5 Chiefly to Portugal.

8 Of this total 158,760 lbs. were exported to Belgium. 7 Chiefly to Cuba.

the making of olive oil and brandy is general. So also is the making of charcoal, which in most parts of Spain takes the place of coal for all ordinary heating purposes, and even in some cases In mechanical industries. ‘The large furnaees for the distillation of mereury at Almaden were at one time, if they are not still, heated solely with charcoal obtained from the Cistus ladaniferus. Among manufac- turing industries of less importance are the making of porcelain (at the royal factory of Moncloa, near Madrid), glass and earthenware, soap, choeolate, and cork-stoppers. The manufacture

of tobacco, which is a royal monopoly, is carried on at seven factories—at Seville, Madrid, Santander, Gijon, Coruiia, Valencia, and Alicante, —that of Seville being the largest.

Foreign Commerce.—Possessing such varied resources as it does, and being peculiarly favourably situated for commerce, Spain might be expected to take a leading place among the trading communities of Europe. This it did at one time hold, when the treasure acquired by the discovery of America and the conquest of Mexico and Peru was squandered in the purehase of various commodities from England, the Netherlands, and other countries. This period of outward prosperity, however, was also that in which the seeds of decline were planted. The expulsion of the Moors from Granada was contemporaneous with the discovery of the New World. Hundreds of thousands of Moors were driven out from the country on subsequent occasions, and in the aet Spain lost the best of her agriculturists and handicraftsmen. For the stay-at- home industry by which the resources of the land could be de- veloped as they had been by the Moors the Spaniards of that day had no taste. Excited by the hope of rapidly-acquired wealth and the love of adventure, the more enterprising spirits embarked upon a career of discovery, and agriculture and manufacturing industry fell into contempt. ‘The mercantile supremacy of the eountry was thus short-lived. Political causes supervened to hasten the country’s decline, and it is only within recent times, since the in- troduction of railways, that the commerce of the country has begun to revive. Theaverage value of the imports and exports combined during the period of ten years from 1875 to 1884 was equal to rather less than £2 per head, asagainst about £18 per head during the same period in the United Kingdom ; but even this state of matters shows a considerable advance compared with 1859, when the total value of the exports and imports was equal to only about £1, 12s. per head. The following table (VIII.) gives total value in round numbers of imports and exports, with percentages from and to Great Britain and France, at various dates from 1849 (the year after the opening of the first railway in Spain) to 1884 :—

ales Pac from from Britain. | France.

Value of Exports.

Value of

Years. Imports.

t Britain. | France.

£6,360,000

14,833,000 16,262,000

£5,240,000

10,982,000 12,864,000 15,982,000 18,081,000 25,999,000 26,836, 000 30,615,000 23,779,000 24,768,000

32,667,000 35,738,000 31,186,000

_ On the average of the five years 1879-83 the principal exports, in the order of their importance, were wine, metals and mineral ores, fruit, oil, and cork,—wine being by far the most valuable ; the principal imports, in the order of their importance, raw cotton, brandy and spirits, sugar, machinery, tobacco, coal and coke, timber, eod-fish, iron (wrought and unwrought), hides and skins, ehemical products, cocoa, cotton manufactures, and mineral oils. The large imports of cod-fish (from Norway and British North America) are due to the large consumption of fish, especially during Lent; the great demand for mineral oil as a source of light is a consequence of the dearness of coal. Itis interesting to note the high place which cocoa takes among the imports. The average import of that commodity is nearly double that of coffee, and that of tea is quite insignificant (in 1884 only 155,777 Ibs.).

The foreign ecommerce of Spain is chiefly earried on with the United Kingdom, France, Cuba, and the United States. In the ten years 1873-82 France, the United Kingdom, and the United States together (in the order named) furnished on an average rather more than 67 per cent. of the imports, and the United King- dom, Franee, and Cuba (also in the order named) reeeived on an average during the same period 75 per cent. of the exports. Next to the three countries mentioned, those which had the largest

share in the import trade during the same period were Cuba Portugal, and the Argentine Confederation, and in the export trade Portugal, the United States, and the Argentine Confederation. From the United Kingdom Spain received in 1884 chiefly coal and eoke, iron and articles in iron (articles in wrought-iron and steel however, in rather greater amount from Belgium), locomotives

1 An increasc of the population since 1877 at the rat ; ry allowed for in making the calculation, ae ae

(also from Belgium), jute and jute yarn, hemp and flax yarn, sulphur (for use in the vineyards), and alkaline carbonates ; from France, chiefly wool and woollen goods, silk and silk goods, and wheat flour; from the United States, petroleum, raw cotton, and tobacco (also from the Philippine Islands) ; from Cuba chiefly sugar and fine woods ; from the Argentine Confederation chiefly untanned hides and skins and animal fats. Wheat was received chiefly from Russia, and spirits from Germany, which also supplied a large pro- portion of the sugar consumed in the country.

Of the principal export of Spain—wine—by far the greater proportion goes to France. In 1884 that country received four- fifths of the conimon wine, and the quantity is rapidly inereasing. The wine classed as full-bodied also went chiefly to France, but that entered under the head of sherry and similar wines was imported chiefly by the United Kingdom. The destination of the minerals is shown above (‘Table V1.). Oranges were sent mainly to the United Kingdom, France, the United States, and Germany ; raisins ehiefly to the United States and the United Kingdom ; olive oil chiefly to Cuba, Denmark, and France, but in considerable quantity also to other eountries ; esparto grass almost entirely to England; cork and wool chiefly to Portugal and France ; cattle chiefly to Portugal and England ; raw silk mainly to France ; and wheat flour and chickpease chiefly to the Spanish West Indies.

The foreign trade of the country is of course carried on mainly by sea. In 1884 more than 80 per cent. both of the imports and exports were

transmarine, and of the land commerce by far the largest proportion is with or through France. The smallness of the trade with Portugal, which on an average furnished less than 14 per cent. of the imports and received less than 5% per eent. of the exports during 1873-82, is partly due no doubt to the similarity of the chief products of the two countries, but also to the defective- ness of the communications between the two countries, a circum- stance largely accounted for by the physical conditions already alluded to. The introduction of railways has as yet only partially served to bring the countries into more intimate relations. On the first of January 1885 not a single line connected with the general system of Spanish railways entered Portugal north of the Tagus, though Lisbon was connected by rail both with Madrid by way of Caceres and with Valencia by way of Ciudad Real and Albacete. At the date mentioned, however, a railway intended to eonnect Salamanca with the mouth of the Mondego was in course of con- struction, and a branch from the Portuguese coast-line in the north was in process of being connected with the Spanish railway to Corufia, and by way of Leon with other northern seaports.

The foreign commerce of Spain is greatly hampered by the number and amount of the custom duties, which are imposed on all the principal articles both of export and import. On imports the duties vary from 6 to 28°33 per cent. of the value of the eom- modities, the highest duties being upon cotton yarn, sugar, and cocoa (to protect home or eolonial industries). For protectivo reasons high import duties are levied also on iron manufactures, woollen manufactures, live animals, eoffee, and wine. Export duties are levied mostly in proportion to quantity. In the case of sherry it amounts to 200 pesetas (£8) per hectolitre (22 gallons); full-bodied wines pay 112 pesetas per hectolitre, and ordinary wines 33 pesetas per hectolitre. In the case of “the most favoured” nations slight reductions are made in the amount of the duties, and under a treaty which eame into operation on the 15th of August 1886 Great Britain enjoys the benefit of the most favoured nation treatment in consideration of a reduction in the import duties levied at British ports on Spanish wines.

Shipping and Navigation.—Relatively to the extent of its coast- Ship- line and the number and excellence of its seaports (of which there ping?

are sixty on the Mediterranean coast, fifty-six on the Atlantic), tho amount of shipping belonging to Spain is small. In 1884 the total register tonnage was 524,000 tons, not much more than that of Sweden at the same date, and only about half that of Italy. The number of vessels was 1803, including 301 steamers. Nearly half the transmarine imports (reckoned by value) and 58 per cent. of the transmarine exports were carried under a foreign flag. The following table (IX.) gives further particulars as to the shipping of 1884 :—

Metric Tons (in Thou-

> sands) of Cargo. Percentage of Total.

Flag. 2 Seseaien: Sa eeees Discharged.| Loaded, | Imports. | Exports..

National….. 623 766 22°6 13°0 British… 1394 8866 50°5 65°7 Dutch . i 54 0°3 0°9 French… 174 666 6°3 11:3
Germaiiacscscscceesscccesserssanssecass 76 123 27 2°1
(GQiGCleerereretesecseeseuoseessesenes: 41 2 15 es

Wt ligvitccs css cssccsscsesnescerasasieaese 131 165 4:7 2°38
NOLWCEIANL ....-eceaseessseeeceeereenes 121 67 43 11 RUSSiaihse-
csess ses erences 2s asasesuces 60 27 2:1 0-4
SWe1SHvecccscssccsessccsssaseseses sss 57 39 2-1 0°7

Total (under all flags)..... 2760 5880

Roads.

ways.

Post offiee,

Tele-

graphs,

Army,

STATISTICS. |

The following table (X.) gives the number, &c., of ships entered and cleared with cargo at Spanish ports in 1884 :—

Under the Spanish Flag. Under Foreign Flags. : Metric Metric Entered from No. of | Capacity] Tons | No. of | Capacity! Tons Vessels.| in Tons.| Dis- | Vessels.| in Tons. Dis- charged. charged. 74,122| 17,888| 140 | 69,360| 4,937, Pa ie 288 | 191,122] 54,587

199,744 87,522 11 29,121 498

711,241 | 140,055 | 1,058 | 452.970| 169,631 3,551} 2,635| 261 81,796| 35,850 194,278 | 19,256] ... see he 712,363 | 240,368 | 1,721 960,135 | 1,256,285 Total from all — S eouttries:::; 5,652 | 2,376,861 | 623,156 | 5,470 | 2,694,876 2,137,222 Under the Spanish Flag, Under Foreign Flags. Cleared for No. of Capacity cay No. of Capacity a Vessels.| in Tons, Loaded, Vessels.} in Tons. Loaded: 536 | 76,585| 13,476] 36 | 49,198 621 86 60,548 | 17,893 145 110,538 | 119,105 * 439 612,258 | 97,553 7 14,854 171 France …. ~~| 2,847 | 1,126,607 | 226,713 | 1,858 936,247| 695,408 NOrway…..~~.seceeeerere roy sek aoe 73 28,524 24,167 Philippine Islands…. 94 243,245 8,849 a ey sua United Kingdom…... 907 638,518 | 200,570 | 3,790 2,988,857”| 3,132,671 ope al} 5,966 | 3,500,207 | 766,208 | 7,844 | 5,638,259 | 5,114,082

The total number of vessels entered with cargo under the national and foreign flags in 1884 was thus 11,122, and the total quantity of cargo discharged by them at Spanish ports 2,760,378 metric tons, the total number of vessels cleared with cargo 13,110, and the total quantity of cargo taken on board by them at Spanish ports 5,880,385 metric tons. Of the total number of vessels entered with cargo 6768 were steamcrs, which discharged 2,052,937 tons of cargo, and 4354 were sailing vessels, which discharged 707,441 tons of cargo. Of the number of vessels cleared with cargo 9506 were steamers, which took on board at Spanish ports 5,300,866 metric tons of cargo, and 3604 were sailing vessels, which took on board 580,019 metric tons of cargo.

Communication.—The communications in Spain have been greatly improved since the beginning of the present century. In 1808 there were little more than 500 miles of carriage roads, but now there are over 28,000.

At the end of 1882 14,600 miles were state roads, all well built and well maintained, and 3027 miles of state roads were in course of construction. The aggregate length of the provincial roads then completed was 2714 miles, and that of the communal roads 10,760 miles. In the mountainous districts, where there are only narrow paths, frequently rather steep, it is still not uncommon to meet long trains of mules.

Railways have made great advance since the middle of the century. The oldest line is that from Barcelona to Mataro, 173 miles, which was opened on the 28th of October 1848. Of late years railway construction has been going on pretty rapidly. In 1880 the number of miles open for traffic was 4645, and in the four succeeding ycars it was 4800, 4867, 5118, and 5386. All the Spanish railways belong to private companies, but most of them have obtained subventions from the Government, to which most of the Spanish railways will revert at the end of a term of ninety- nine years. In granting a concession for a new railway the regular practice is to give it to whatever company offers to construct it with the lowest subvention. The total amount of the subventions for railway construction up to the end of 1884 was £25, 676,690. For strategical reasons the Spanish gauge was made different from that of France.

The postal and telegraphic systems have been placed on the same footing as in other eivilized countries. The total number of letters, post-cards, and samples (including official and international letters, &c.) that passed through the post office in 1882-83 was 111 millions. The length of state telegraphic lines on January 1, 1883 was 10,664 miles, and of wires 25,989 miles. The number of messages in 1883 was 3,020,000, nearly 80,000 being transit mes- sages and 654,000 from or to foreign countries.

Army and Nawy.—Military (or naval) service is obligatory on all Spaniards, but in certain cases recruits are allowed to buy themselves off. According to the law of January 8, 1882, the period of service for all arms is twelve years, of which three years tnust be passed with the colours, three years in the active reserve, and six years in the second reserve. The minister of war is empowered, however, on financial grounds to transfer troops Serving with the eolours to the aetive reserve before the period of three years’ service has been fulfilled. Liability to service begins with the first

day of the ealendar year in which the twentieth ycar 1s completed. Persons holding a civil appointment or pursuing

any handicraft independently are allowed to buy themselves off for 1500 pesetas (£60), and brothers are allowed to take each others' place in service, or to exchange the numbers that have fallen to them by lot in the raising of the recruits for the year. For carry- ing out the law Spain is divided into fourteen milftary districts, the boundaries of which do not at all coincide with those of pro- vinces.

The actual strength of the regular army is fixed at about 94,000 men for the kingdom (including the Balearic and Canary Islands), but this number may be brought up to 400,000 in time of war. The strength of the regular army in Cuba is about 22,500 men, in Porto Rico about 3200, and on the Philippine Islands about 8200. The active army is divided into 140 battalions, besides the same number of depét and reserve battalions ; 24 cavalry regiments, and the same number of depét squadrons and reserve cavalry regiments ; 9 regiments of field artillery, and 3 of mounted artillery, besides 6 reserve regiments of artillery, and 10 battalions of engineers. There are also 18 battalions of fortress artillery.

The following statement shows the strength of the navy in Navy.

1885 :—First Class—4 ironclad frigates (55 guns), 4 screw frigates (97 guns), 6 eruisers (48 guns); Second Class—5 frigates (104 guns), 3 cruisers, 12 corvettes aud troopships (89 guns); Third Class—1 ironclad monitor (8 guns), 1 floating battery, 79 gunboats, trans- ports, &c. (124 guns).

There were at the same time building one ironclad of the first class, five cruisers of the second class, besides torpedo boats, tugs, and other vessels. For the defence of the colonies, and more par- ticularly those of the West Indies, there are thirty-five screw gunboats, all of the same size (about 5 feet draught), and each carrying a 100-pounder pivot-gun at the bow.

The navy is manned by conscription in the maritime districts, In 1885 the number of seamen was about 14,000, that of marines about 7000.

Religion.—Roman Catholicism is the established religion, and Religion.

the church and clergy are maintained by the state. The immense majority of the people (in 1877 16,603,959. out of a total of 16,634,345) are professed adherents of this faith, so that, so far as numbers go, Spain is still the most ‘‘ Catholic” country in the world, as it has long been styled. According to Willkomm, how- ever, religious indifferentism is now very general, not only among the educated but also among the lower classes ; and of the bigotry and fanatieism whieh in former times led to the destruction of hundreds of thousands of vietims at the hands of the Inquisition the only traces at the present day are to be found, says the same authority, in the provinces of Aragon, Navarre, and Estremadura, where the clergy still exereise a considerable influence over the lower orders. By the constitution of 1876 non-Catholics are per- mitted to exereise their own forms of worship, but they must do so in private and without making any public anuouneement of their services. At the census of 1877 the total number of Pro- testants was 6654, a number below that of those entered as rationalists (9645). There are nine archbishopries (Toledo, Madrid, Burgos, Granada, Santiago, Saragossa, Seville, Tarragona, Valencia, and Valladolid) and forty-five bishoprics. The archbishop of Toledo is primate.

Edwcation.—By the law of July 17, 1857, primary education was Educa- declared eompulsory on all children of school age (originally fixed tion.

at six to nine) and made free to the poor, but the results of the census of 1877, though showing an advance in elementary educa- tion as eompared with previous years, makes it clear that this law is far from being efficiently carried out. At that date the total number who eould both read and write was 4,071,828, equal to 24°48 per cent. of the population, as against 19°97 per cent. in 1860. The provinces in which the percentage of those able to read and write was greatest were Alava, Burgos, Pontevedra, Madrid, Santander; those in which it was least were the Canary Islands, Granada, Malaga, Almeria, Alicante, Castellon.

There are ten universities—those of Madrid (founded in 1836 to replace the long-celebrated university of Alcala), Barcelona, Granada, Salamanca, Seville, Valencia, Santiago, Saragossa, Valladolid, and Oviedo ; that of Madrid is now the most celebrated and the best attended, while that of Salamanca, so renowned in the Middle Ages, is now in least repute.

Political Administration,—Spain is an hereditary monarchy, the Adminis- constitution of which rests on the fundamental law of June 30, tration.

1876. The sovereign becomes of age on completing his or her six- teenth year. The sovereign is grand-master of the eight Spanish orders of knighthood, the principal of which is that of the Golden Fleece (Toison de Oro), founded in 1481 by Philip of Burgundy. The chain of this order surrounds the royal arms, in which are included, besides the arms of Castile, Leon, Granada, and the lilies of the royal house of Bourbon, the arms of Austria, Sicily, Savoy, Brabant, and others. The national colours are red and yellow. The flag is divided into three horizontal stripes—two red stripes, with a yellow one between bearing the royal arms.

The legislative authority is exercised by the sovercign in con- junction with the cortes, a body composed of two houses—a senate

Justice.

Finance.

Plate VII.

and a chamber of deputies. The senate is composed of members of three classes :—(1) members by right of birth or office—princes, the wealthier nobles holding the rank of grandee (grande), a dignity conferred by the king either for life or as an hereditary honour, and the highest state officials ; (2) members nominated by the king for life; and (3) members elected by the state corporations and by the most highly taxed subjects of the state for a period of five years. The members belonging to the first two classes must not excced 180 in number, and there may be the same number of members

of the third class) ‘The chamber of deputies consists of members elected for five years, in the proportion of one deputy for every 50,000 of the population. The electors must be twenty-five years of age and must have paid land-tax of twenty-five pesetas (£1) for one year, or an industrial tax of fifty pesetas for two years. — The executive administration is entrusted to a responsible minis- try (consejo de ministros), in which the presidency belongs either to one of the ministers or to a president without portfolio. There are eight ministerial departments—the first secretaryship of state, to which belongs the management of foreign affairs, the secretary- ships of grace and justice, finance, and the interior, the department for the promotion of material and intellectual interests (seeretaria de fomento), and the secretaryships of war, marine, and the colonies. The civil administration is under the secretary for the interior. In each province is a civil governor nominated by the crown, and the governor presides over a council, the members of which are elected by the representatives of each commune (ayuntamiento). Law and Justice. —Spanish law is founded on the Roman law, the Gothic common law, and the national code proclaimed at the meeting of the cortes at Toro in 1501 (the leyes de Toro). There is a court of first instance in each of the 501 partidos judietales into which the kingdom is divided; and a court of second instance in each of 15 audteneias territoriales into which the partidos judiciales are grouped; and there sits at Madrid a supreme court modelled on the French cour de eassation. The administration of justice is public. Except in commercial cases the parties to a suit must

always be represented by sworn counsel (abogados fiseales).

Finance.—The following statement (Table XI.) shows the equi- valent in English money of the budget estimates for the years noted ; it should be explained, however, that these estimates have only a limited value, inasmuch as the public accounts of Spain have not been audited since 1870, and have not been passed by the cortes since 1867 :—

Years. Revenue. | Expenditure. |! Years.

Revenue. | Expenditure.

1860-61

£18,923,440 | £18,773,698 | 1881-82 | £31,492,920 | £32,584,598 1870-71 | 277901,746 | 32,819,424 |; 1882-83 | 31,259,769 | 31,573,083 1874-75 | 21,792000 | 20,821,000 | 1883-84 | 32,095,075 | 32,053,999 1877-78 | 29,433,000 | 29,480,000 | 1884-85 | 31,444,682 | 31,003,969 1880-81 | 31,666,031 | 33,466,047 || 1885-86 | 34,900,575 | 35,885,869

The chief heads of revenue, according to the budget estimates of 1885-86, were—excise (including stamp duties and government monopolies), £10,534,480; direct taxes on land, trade, mines, &c., £10,393,920; taxes on Government salaries, registration, &c.,

£5,362,000; customs, £5,360,000. The chief items of expenditure were—the charges of the public debt, £10,966,937; the charges of the ministry of war, £6,050,944; those connected with the adminis- tration of state property, £5,748,593; the charges belonging to the ministerto de fomento, £4,177,983; those of grace and justice, £2,237,844; those of marine, £1,756,022.

The expenses of quelling the insurrection in Cuba of 1868-78, and those subsequently arising out of a civil war in the Peninsula,

sPadgw®

[HISTORY.

raised the total amount of the Spanish debt on the Ist of January 1881 to about £512,000,000 ; but, as it was by that time manifest that Spain was unable to meet the obligations thus incurred, an arrangement was come to by which the capital and interest of the debt were reduced. The bulk of the debt now bears interest at the rate of 4 per cent., and on the Ist of October 1884 the capital stood at 6356 million pesetas, or £254,250,000, and the total anriual charge was 238 million pesetas, or £9,522,857. The principal items are the perpetual foreign debt, amounting in October 1884 to £78,840,000, a perpetual internal debt, amounting in October 1884 to £77,840,000, and a redeemable debt (internal and external) amounting to £70,480, 000.

Currency, Weights, and Mcasures.—The French monetary system and the metric system of weights and measures have been intro- duced—the latter in 1859, the former in 1871. In the case of the weights and measures the French names also have been adopted, with only the necessary linguistic changes. In the case of the currency the old Spanish name of peseta was retained for the unit (the franc), and the peseta is divided into 100 centimos. According to the present value of the peseta, therefore, 25 pesetas may be taken as about equal to £1. Previously to the introduction of the French monetary system the peseta was the fifth part of a peso duro, which was equal to 20 reales de vellon, or rather more than a five-franc piece. The only paper money in Spain consists of the notes of the Banco de Espatia.

Bibliography.—The most comprchensive work on the geography of Spain fs the Diccionario Geografico-historico e Statistico de las Provincias de Espana of Madoz, 16 vols., 1846-50. A more summary account is contained in the Resefias Geografica, Geologica, y Agricola de Espafia, by D. Fr. Coello, &c., Madrid, 1859; and in Die Pyrendische Halbinsel, by Dr Moritz Willkomm, Leipsic, 3 vols., 1884-86. Numerous notices regarding the geography of Spain arc to be found in the Boletin de la Sociedad Geografica de Madrid. See also F. Garrido, La Espawia Contemporanea, Barcelona, 2 vols., 1865-67 (the French edition, Brussels, 1862, is comparatively meagre) ; Davillicr, L'Espagne, Paris, 1873: A. J. C. Hare, Wanderings in Spain; A. Gallenga, Iberian eminiscences, London, 1883; Webster, Spain, London, 1882; Harrison, Spain, Boston, 1852; Higgin, Commercial and Industrial Spain, London, 1886; together with the guide-books of Ford (Murray) and O'Shea (Black).

The botany of Spain is very fully treated in various works by Willkomm, Besides the Prodromus Flore Jlispanice, Stuttgart, 8 vols. 4to, 1861-80, the most important are Jllustrationes Flore Jitspanizx, Stuttgart, 1831, &c., fol., and Die Strand- und Steppengebiete der iber. Halbinsel,,Leipsic, 1852, 8vo, Of another flora by Don M. Colmciro, entitled Znumeracion de las Plantas de la Peninsula Hispano-Lusitana e Islas Baleares, one volume has been published (Madrid, 1885). It is expected to be completed in 4 vols.

There is no recent general work on the zoology of Spain.

The geology of the Iberian Peninsula is treated ina series of articles, illustrated by several inaps, by D. Federico de Botclla, in the above-mentioned Boletin, vol. ii., 1877. Sec also Macpherson, Succession Estratigrayica de los Terrenos Arcatcos de Espafia; W. K. Sullivan, Notes on the Geology and Mineralogy of the Spanish Provinces of Santander and Madrid. The geological maps of Spain already com- pleted are those of De Verneuil and Collomb, Paris, 1864, 2d ed. (now out of print) 1868, and De Botella y de Hornos, Madrid, 1879. A geological survey of the provinces of Spain is now in progress, and on the conclusion of the survey a map will be published in sixteen sheets on the scale of 1: 400,000.

Among the more important annual or periodical official statistical publications are the Estadistica General del Comercio Exterior de Espaita; Boletin Mensual de Estadistica Demografico-Sanitaria; Situacion de los Ferrocarriles ; and Esta- distica Minera de Espatia,

The best topographical map of Spain is that of C. Vogcl, in four sheets, in Sticler's Hand Atlas, on the scale of 1: 1,500,000. Among other maps that may be referred to are that of D. Fr. Coello, scale 1: 1,000,000, Madrid, 1561, and the Mapa Itinerario Militar de Espaiia Formado por el Cuerpo de Estado Mayor del Ejercito &t 1865, scale 1: 500,000. An excellent map, on the scale of 1: 50,000, indicating the clevations by means of contour lines at intervals of 20 mctres, and by figures for particular spots (the clevations reduced to the mean level of the Mediterranean at the port of Alicante), and distinguishing cultivated and un- cultivated ground, and in the former distinguishing hucrtas, gardens, oliveyards, vineyards, orangeries, &c., where they excecd an area of 10 hectares, is now being published by the Instituto Geografico y Estadistico de Madrid. Of this map, however, only about 20 out of 1080 shcets have as yet been issued. Among those which have already appeared is that containing Madrid. (G. G. C.)

PART IL—HISTORY.

Section I.—ANcIENT History.

Hispania was the name by which the Romans called the great peninsula made up of Spain and Portugal, but we know nothing certain as to the origin

of the name, or whether it was in general use among the ancient inhabit- ants of the country.!

To the Greeks Spain, or rather its coastline on the Mediterranean, was known vaguely as Iberia, a name we meet with in Herodotus (i. 163) in connexion with the Pheenician Tartessus, which is generally understood to have been the country about the mouth of the Guadal- quivir and to be the Tarshish of Scripture. It was the Phoczeans, a branch of the Ionian Greeks settled in Asia Minor, who according to Herodotus first opened up to the

1 Humboldt derives it from the Basque espana (border), as signifying

the part of Europe bordering on the ocean, but his conjecture seems strained and fanciful.

Greek world this remote region of the extreme West, which had hitherto been a land of mystery and enchantment, imagined to be the home of the setting sun, and known only by the reports of adventurous Phoenician mariners. The hero-god Hercules, it was fabled, had left traces of his presence and mighty working here, and the twin rocks at the entrance of the Mediterranean were called by his name, 'the Pillars of Hercules,"—the "world's end" to the Greeks, nothing but the all-encircling ocean-river lying beyond. The Greeks seem to have planted no colonies in Spain, with the exception of Emporium, on the coast just under the eastern spur of the Pyrenees, founded probably from Massilia (Marseilles) by the Phoczans, and perhaps of Saguntum. In fact they had but very hazy notions about the country, and Iberia, as they called it, was to them little more than a name for an indefinite extent of territory in the Far West, in the occupation of

Cartha- ginian ascend- ency.

UNDER CARTHAGINIANS. |

barbarous Celts and Iberians, with some Phoenician settle- ments for the purposes of trade on its southern coasts. Several of these places were just known to them by name ; but even of Gades, rich and populous as it seems to have been in quite early days, nothing but vague hearsay had reached them, and Herodotus, who mentions it as Gadeira (iv. 8), merely defines its

position as ‘on the ocean outside of (beyond) the Pillars of Hercules.” Tarraco, one of the oldest and most important of the cities of Spain, and one of which we hear continually in the subscquent history of the country, was also in all probability a Phcenician colony. Thereare still here remains of very ancient walls, possibly Pheenician work. Gades, Tartessus, Tarraco, all seem to have been of Phoenician origin! and of unknown antiquity, and they were flourishing places in the 7th century B.c., when the Greeks first made a slight acquaint- ance with them,—an acquaintance, however, which they did not follow up. The result is that we really know nothing about Spain till the first war between Rome and Carthage (264-241 B.c.). There was indeed, in the 4th century B.C., an embassy to Alexander the Great from the remote West, of Gauls and Iberians, and from that time learned Greeks began to discuss the geography of Spain. But again the country drops out of sight till the 3d century B.c., when we find a close connexion established between it and Carthage, which, being itself a Phoenician colony, would feel itself almost at home on the southern shores of Spain. According to Polybius, Carthage (before the First Punic War) had acquired at least something like a protectorate over the Iberian tribes as far as the Pyrenees, the then recognized boundary between the Iberians and Celts,—between, in fact, Spain and Gaul. Spanish troops served as volunteers in Carthaginian armies. There must have been a good deal of Phcenician blood in the south of Spain for many centuries, and this no doubt prepared the way for Carthaginian ascendency in the country. Not, however, till after the First Punic War and the loss of Sicily was there anything that could be called a Carthaginian empire in Spain. It was in 237 B.c. that Hamilcar Barca, the father of Hannibal, crossed the Straits of Gibraltar and set foot in Spain, not, how- ever, with any commission from the home Government at Carthage, but with the deliberately formed design of making the country, with its warlike population and great mineral wealth, into a Carthaginian province, and ulti- mately into a basis of operations in a future war with Rome (see Hamitcar, Hasprusat, Hannipat). There were rich mines in the mountains, which had drawn the Pheenicians sonie way into the interior, and among the native tribes there were the elements of a brave and hardy soldiery. A good army might very well be organized and paid out of the resources of Spain. All this Hamilcar clearly saw, and in the true spirit of a statesman he set himself to the work, not merely of subjugating the coun- try, but of making the Spaniards into loyal subjects of Carthage. He

encouraged marriages between his officers and soldiers and the native women : his own son Hannibal married a Spanish woman. He showed them how to work their gold and silver mines to the best advantage ; in every way, in short, he made them feel that he was their friend. The great work of which he had laid the foundation was carried on after his death in 228 by his son-in-law Hasdrubal, under whom New Carthage, with its fine harbour, founded probably by Hamilcar, became the capital of the country. It would seem that by this time the Carthaginian empire in Spain was as firmly established over the southern half of the country as the fickle and uncertain temper of the native tribes would admit. The

CIR ee 1 For the Pheenician colonization of Spain, see PHa@nicia, vol. xviii. p. 806.

oa)

Spaniard of that day, as indeed more or less throughout his whole history, was particularly amenable to personal influence, and an Hamilcar or a Hannibal could sway him as he pleased. From 228 to 221 Hasdrubal was extending and strengthening the Carthaginian rule in Spain, while the Romans were fighting in Cisalpine Gaul. One pre- caution, indeed, they had taken, an understanding with Hasdrubal, which might be regarded as a treaty, that the Carthaginian conquests were not to be pushed east of the Ebro. West of that river there was one town, Saguntum, a Greek colony, in alliance with Rome; this Hasdrubal had spared. His successor, Hannibal, after two years' continuous fighting, which resulted in the submission of hitherto unconquered tribes and the undisputed supremacy of Carthage throughout almost all Spain, attacked and took the place in 218.

This was the beginning of the Second Punic War. Spain was now for the first time entered by Roman armies, under the command of the two Scipios, —the brothers Cneius and Publius. Six years of hard fighting ended in the defeat and death of these two brave men, but in 210 the son of Publius, the elder Africanus, struck a decisive blow at the Carthaginian power in Spain by the sudden capture of New Carthage. The war, however, still dragged on

till 205, in which year it may be said that Spain, or at least that part of it which had been

under Carthage, was fairly conquered by the arms of Roman

Rome. Andalusia, Granada, Murcia, Valencia, Catalonia, Aragon, may be said to have become Roman territory. Rome had now to deal simply with the native Spaniards, without the fear of any foreign interference. Hence from 205 the reduction of the country into a Roman province was only a matter of time. It proved, however, to be a tedious and troublesome work, and more than once Rome's hold on Spain was seriously imperilled. An oppressive governor, or a governor without tact and sympathy, was sure to unsettle the restless and impressionable tribes, and to stir up all manner of dangerous jealousies and heart-burnings. The Scipios, the elder Africanus espe- cially, knew how to manage the people, and yet even in 205, the year of those brilliant successes of Africanus, there was a great rising of several of the tribes, headed by a local chieftain, against the dominion of Rome. It was quelled after a sharp engagement; there was a general submission on the part of the Spaniards, and many of them became Roman tributaries. . It was some time, however, before the country, or even the southern half of it, was really subdued into complete peace and order. The moun- tains and the forests were a formidable obstacle to the Roman legions, and favoured that guerilla warfare which makes conquest slow and laborious. For a long period many of the tribes were rather the allies and dependants of Rome than her subjects, and might at any moment be roused into war. In fact, Rome's dominion west of the Ebro—Further Spain (Hispania Ulterior), as the province was called—must for very many years have been little more than nominal. Rome's policy was to keep the native tribes disunited, and to have as many of them as possible under a friendly protectorate. There seem to have been wide differences between these tribes,—some, especially those in the interior and in the north, being fierce and utterly barbarous, and others in the south and south-west comparatively mild and civilized. The Celtiberi, in the interior, were a group of warlike tribes, and were always uncertain and intractable. At one time they would fight for Rome; at another they would serve as meicenaries for Rome's bitter foe, the Carthaginian. Continually were they breaking out into revolt and defying the arms of

Rome. The “Celtiberian War” often figures in the pages of Roman histories, and it generally meant a war XXII. — 39

Cato.

Gracchus.

Mum. mius.

Mar- cellus.

Viri- athus.

Siege of Nu- mantia.,

Scipio.

306

involving the greater part of Spain. In 195 the elder Cato had to put down a rising in the country, In which the Celtiberi took the lead, but he offered them favour- able terms, and showed himself particularly anxious to conciliate them. His Spanish campaigns were so far a success as to establish the Roman power east of the Ebro, and along with peace and order came better administra- tion and a development of the resources of the district now known as Hither Spain (Hispania Citerior). Cato is said to have disarmed the inhabitants of this part of Spain, and to have even compeiled the Spaniards, from the Pyrenees to the Guadalquivir, to pull down their fortifications, but still the smouldering fires of rebellion were not trampled out. Some few years afterwards, in 179 and 178, we find the father of the famous Gracchi governor of Hither Spain, and fighting with the troublesome Celtiberi, win- ning victories over them, capturing one hundred and three of their towns, and then securing his conquests by show- ing himself as great in peace as he had been in war. He seems to have anticipated in Spain the work attempted by his sons in Italy, making grants of land on favourable conditions to the poorer natives. Much must have been accomplished by Gracchus towards producing contentment with the Roman rule, but in the west, in the valleys of the Douro and the Tagus, and

in the region known as Lusitania, answering to Portugal, there seems to have been almost incessant fighting, and what one general won another general often lost. Under Mummius, a governor of Further Spain (154),—the Mummius who in 146 took and sacked Corinth,—the Romans suffered a disastrous defeat from the Lusitanians, of which the Celtiberi took prompt advantage, and there was another Roman defeat, with a massacre of Roman citizens in one of the towns of the interior. These losses were avenged in 152 by Claudius Marcellus, grandson of Hannibal's illustrious antagonist, during whose command in Spain Corduba is said to have been established as a Roman colony. Marcellus was too humane and considerate to the Spaniards to suit the ideas of the Roman senate, which we may well suppose to have been greatly provoked by the trouble which Spain had given them. The new governors, Lucius Lucullus and Servius Galba, by a combination of perfidy and extortion, drove the country into a most formidable revolt, with which the Romans, whose hands were tied by the Third Punic War, could not for some time effectually deal. A guerilla chief of Lusitania (which had been specially ill-treated by the Romans), Viriathus, headed the revolt, and from 147 to 140 army after army of the Romans was cut to pieces; the formidable Celtiberi had joined his standard, and Spain seemed well-nigh lost to Rome.

before had (see Scrp1o). The province of Hither Spain was rendered safe from Celtiberian incursions. Shortly afterwards Lusitania and its towns, after some obstinate fighting, were reduced to submission by the consul Junius Brutus, and thus Spain, with the exception of its northern coasts, the home of its most barbarous tribes, was nomin- ally Roman territory. There must have been by this time a considerable mixture of Roman blood with the native population; there were several towns—Carteia, Valentia, Tarraco especially among them—with a Latin municipal constitution and with a number of Latin- speaking people. The growth of Roman civilization had fairly begun, and it was promoted by a commission sent out by the senate after Scipio's victories. Piracy in the Mediterranean was checked in the interest of native Spanish commerce, and the Roman administration gene-

rally favoured the development of the country's prosperity. The extensive mountain districts were still the shelter of banditti, but, on the whole, order was well maintained, and Spain from this time flourished under Roman rule. It abounded in flocks and herds, and had a number of thriving populous towns, particularly on its Mediterranean shores. It seems, too, that it was never oppressed and impoverished by some of those forms of tribute, —such as the exaction of a tenth of the produce,—under which many of Rome's provincials smarted. Fixed money payments, and military service in the Roman armies, were the chief burdens which the conquered Spaniards had to bear. Rome on the whole, by comparison, dealt tenderly with them. Several of their towns had the privilege of coining the silver money of Rome; and the flourishing cities along the Mediterranean coast, which were so many centres of civilization to the adjacent districts, were treated rather as allies than as subjects. In these parts the Romanizing process went on rapidly and under favourable

'conditions, while the west and the north and a great

portion of the interior remained barbarous, and Roman merely in name. In 105 it seemed possible that the Romans might be utterly swept out of the country; in that year a great wave of invasion passed over the inland regions from the Cimbri, who had destroyed two Roman consular armies on the Rhone. Spain toa great extent was cruelly ravaged, and Rome was too seriously menaced by the barbarians nearer home to be able to protect her. The country was saved by the brave Celtiberi, whose determined resistance forced the Cimbri back upon Gaul. Again in 97 and 96 we hear of arising of these same Celtiberians against Rome, and of campaigns in the interior, in which for the first time we meet the name of

the famous Sertorius, a name almost as conspicuous in Sertorius

ancient Spanish history as that of Hamilcar or Hannibal. For the remarkable episode of the eight years' wars of Sertorius in Spain against the generals of Sulla and against the great Pompey, and his almost successful attempt to render the country independent of the home Government at Rome, we must refer the reader to the article Serrorius. It was to his skill in winning the hearts of the Spaniards, more even than to his very considerable military ability, that he owed his successes. Rome was financially most grievously

embarrassed by this tedious and difficult war, and Spain, with its Roman civilization and its Latinized towns on the Mediterra- nean, suffered severely. By the year 71 the country had

been reconquered by Pompey for Rome, and the two Pompey.

provinces of Hither and Further Spain were reorganized under a somewhat more stringent rule, the tribute in some districts of the latter province being raised, and some of the towns in both losing their municipal inde- pendence. Further Spain, and carried the arms of Rome into the

In 61 the great Cesar was governor of Cesar.

UNDER ROMANS. |

imperfectly conquered regions of the west and north-west, the country of the Lusitanians and of the Galleci, and with a fleet from Gades is said to have occupied a point in the north-west answering to Corufia. But he was too short a time in Spain to reduce these barbarous regions to permanent subjection, and the work still remained to be accomplished. In the civil war with Pompey in 49 he was in Hither Spain, winning decisive victories over Pompey's generals, Afranius and Petreius. Once more, in 45, he had to enter Further Spain at the head of an army, and to defeat his rival's sons at Munda, some- where probably in the neighbourhood of Cordova, a victory which made him undisputed master of the Roman

SPAIN

307

Portugal. The centres of administration were—for Tarra- conensis, Tarraco; for Beetica, Corduba; for Lusitania, Emerita Augusta. We may see, in part, on what prin- ciples this division of the country was adopted. Lusitania and Betica had tolerably distinct features, the latter having been from the earliest times the most civilized and the most tractable district of Spain. came a much wilder region, the home of excitable and warlike tribes; this in great part, so as to include the country of the Celtiberi, was thrown into Tarraconensis, which, and also Lusitania, were under the empire "Ceesaris

provinciz," the governors of them being nomin- ated by the emperor. The smaller and quieter province

North of the Tagus ©

The world. Spain, however, the northern part at least, was | of Batica wasa "senate's province"; and its finances were

north not thoroughly subdued—" pacified," in Roman phrase, | under the charge of the old republican official known as a

| am —till the reign of Augustus, whose ambition it was to | " queestor." The governor of Tarraconensis seems to have

ame advance the boundaries of empire to the ocean. In the | held decidedly the first position in the country ; he had as north was a wild and warlike highland population, a | a matter of course the greater part of the army under his collection of tribes known as the Astures in the north- | command, and he was usually, it may be presumed, an west, and their neighbours the Cantabri to the east, | ex-consul. The governorship, indeed, of this province between a mountain range and the coast, 'the last," as | must have been one of the best appointments in the Gibbon says (Decline and Fall, ch. i.), "to submit to the | emperors' gift. arms of Rome and the first to throw off the yoke of Under the empire Spain was divided for the general Spain the Arabs." Ovesar's flying visit in 61 had done some- | purposes included under the head of local administration under thing to cow these tribes, but ever and again they | into fourteen "conventus," that is, provincial parliaments **° , would assert their independence. In 27 the emperor | or assemblies made up of a union or combination of so "™P™**

Augus- Augustus himself penetrated their strongholds, and he | many communities or townships. 'The town or city which

tus, passed two years in Spain; decisive victories were won | was the centre of each "conventus" was the place where over the northern tribes, and their towns and villages | justice was administered to the inhabitants of the district, were converted into military posts in the occupation of | and would, so far, answer to our assize-town. In Tarra- the legionary veterans. Such was

the origin of Saragossa, | conensis there were seven of these
"'conventus,"—'Tarraco, a modern survival of the name of Cesar Augusta
then | New Carthage, and Cesar Augusta being the chief : dim given to an
old town on the Ebro, henceforth an important | Bzetica, four,—Gades and
Corduba being of the number ; Roman centre in Spain. The successes of
Augustus were | in Lusitania, the least populous and civilized district, three
commemorated by the same title bestowed on other | —Emerita Augusta
the principal, Pax Julia, perhaps the ancient Spanish towns, Bracara
Augusta (Braga) in the | modern Beja, and Scalabis not far from the mouth
of the north-west, Asturica Augusta (Astorga) still further north, | Tagus.
Pliny (the elder), to whom we are indebted for Emerita' Augusta (Merida)
on the Guadiana, which | these details, enumerates 360 cities in Spain in the
time became a Roman city of the first class;—"the Rome of | of Vespasian.
These included every variety of township,— Spain," as it has been called,
—and Pax Augusta, perhaps | the "colonia" which originated in a camp or a
settlement the modern Badajoz. The work of consolidating the | granted to
old soldiers, the town whose inhabitants had Roman dominion in Spain was
completed in 19 by his | all been made Roman citizens in the fullest sense
("muni- friend and minister, Marcus Agrippa, and now at last | cipium" in
Roman phrase, under the empire), the town the '"Cantaber non ante
domabilis," as Horace has it, | that had the inferior franchise ("jus Latii"),
the "free

Roman acknowledged Rome's supremacy. Spain was fairly con- | town,"
which might at any time have its freedom taken

conquest quered ; the warlike peoples of the north were cowed and

com- plete.

broken ; the south was thoroughly Romanized, the popula- tion having
adopted Latin manners and the Latin tongue. Some of the best specimens of
Roman architecture, some of the finest Roman coins, have been discovered
in the cities of Spain, which from the time of Augustus became rapidly
prosperous, and were famous for their schools and their scholars. Spain, in
fact, was more completely

from it, and the “tributary” town (“ civitas stipendiaria”). Spain presented types of all these various communities till Vespasian, it is said, gave them all the “jus Latii,” which opened an easy door for the provincials to the full privileges of citizenship. A native-born Spaniard might now rise to the imperial dignity, as Trajan did ; and the Spaniards generally must have felt themselves to all intents and purposes Romans.

The provincial constitution of Spain was revised and Re- modified to some extent in the 2d century in the ae time, it would seem, of the Antonines and Hadrian. The ™*t°

Roman than any province beyond the limits of Italy. The country which had hitherto harassed Rome with

incessant risings and insurrections was at last peaceful pt

and contented, a happy land which for the next 400 years may be said to have had at least no military history.

vast and unwieldy province of Tarraconensis was sub- divided, and the divisions distinguished as Gallecia (the

Three Under Augustus the old political constitution into two | north-west), Carthaginiensis with New Carthage for its Roman provinces, Further and Hither Spain, of which the Ebro | capital, Tarraconensis (the old name being then stall Tc had been the boundary, was set aside, and exchanged for | retained for one division) with Cesar Augusta for its

a division into the three provinces of Lusitania, Beetica, and ‘Tarraconensis, sometimes spoken of as the “Three Spains.” Of these Betica, so called from the Betis (the Guadalquivir), and answering nearly to Andalusia inclu- sive of Granada, was the smallest ; Tarraconensis, which embraced Hither Spain and the interior and all the north, was much the largest. Lusitania corresponds to modern

7 Emerita, from ‘‘emeriti,” soldiers whose term of service had expired, —in fact, “ veterans from the legions.”

capital, and the Balearic Isles, which had always been regarded as Spanish territory. Constantine accepted this arrangement, including, however, in it a strip of the western coast of Africa, part of the old Mauritania, which, from an ancient Moorish town, Tinge (Tangier), took the name of Tingitana among the later Roman provinces.

vinces.

Spain in 256 a.D. was invaded and ravaged by the Frankish Franks; Tarraco was almost destroyed, and _ several invasion.

flourishing towns reduced to mere villages. It was, how-

Jnroad of bar- barians.

Walia.

Theo- doric.

308

ever, but a passing storm,—the only interruption, in fact, to the peace and prosperity of the country during 400 years. With the departure of the Franks Spain soon recovered herself, and when we next hear of her early in the 5th century we find commerce and civilization well established, and cities ranking among the finest and richest in the Roman world, In 409, however, the year of the sack of Rome under Alaric, a tide of barbarism swept over the country , Suevi, Alani, Vandals ‘‘ ravaged,” says a writer of the time, quoted by Gibbon (ch. 31), “with equal fury the cities and the open country.” Spain, long so quiet and prosperous, was brought down to the lowest depth of misery. At this point the precise order of events is not quite clearly ascertainable. It seems that in 414 or 415 a Visigothic host entered Spain under their king, Ataulphus, Alaric’s successor by election, who had married Placidia, the sister of Honorius, emperor of the West, son of the great Theodosius. Ataulphus was now Rome’s ally, and fought as her champion in Spain against Suevi and Vandals. A new era seemed to have opened, and we may see in this alliance a prophecy of the ultimate fusion of Latin and German peoples,—the beginnings, in fact, of the modern world.

To Ataulphus, who was murdered at his new capital Barcelona, succeeded after a brief interval in 415 Walia, a warlike and ambitious chief, who may be said to have established the Visigothic or West-Gothic kingdom in Spain on the ruins of the old Roman province. Walia concluded a treaty with the emperor Honorius, and, putting himself at the head of his brave Goths, in a three years' war he destroyed or drove 'nto remote corners the barbarous hordes of Vandals, Alani, and Suevi that had settled down in the country. Spain, thus reconquered, was nominally subject to Rome, but soon became really independent and began to be the seat of a Christian civilization.

Section II.—SPaIN UNDER THE West-Gortus.

The West-Gothic or Visigothic kingdom in Spain, founded by Walia, lasted for nearly three centuries, from 418 to 711, when it fell before the Arab or Saracen inva- sion. 'Toulouse was its headquarters ; here was held the court of the West-Gothic kings, while Toledo became the centre of administration for Spain. The relations of the West-Goths with Rome varied from time to time: some- times they were her friendly allies, sometimes, nominally at least, her dependants ; sometimes they rose in revolt and were her open enemies. Walia, after his victories in Spain, professed to restore the country as once more a Roman pro- vince to the rule of the emperor Honorius, and again we hear of the oppressions of imperial officers and functionaries, which seem to have been even more intolerable to the Spaniards than the strifes and wars of Vandals, Alani, and Suevi. Nor were these troubles finally ended ; Walia had by no means thoroughly consolidated his conquests ; and the West-Gothic kingdom in Spain cannot be said to have been firmly established till the 6th century. In northern Spain, in Galicia more especially, the Vandals and Suevi still had settlements, and were quarrelsome neighbours. In 428 they routed an allied army of Romans and Goths, and overran the southern districts, plundering some of the chief cities on the coast before they quitted the country for Africa under their king, the famous and savage Gen- seric. The Suevi yet remained, but at the solicitation of the Romauized Spanish provincials of the southern cities, who felt themselves threatened with utter extinction by these barbarians, Rome offered its intervention, which was effectually carried out by the king of the West-Goths, Theodoric IT., grandson of Alaric. Crossing the

Pyrenees in 456, as Rome's representative and ally, Theodoric crushed the Suevi by a decisive victory in the north-west of Spain,

near Astorga. It would seem that from this time the Suevic power was confined within the limits of Galicia, which became in fact a mere dependency of the West- Gothic kingdom. Theodoric's victories, so far from strengthening Rome's hold on Spain, greatly weakened it ; and this was what he himself really intended. He did not even make a pretence of restoring the country to the imperial rule. persistently defied the empire, completing Theodoric's work, and establishing by further successes in Spain, carried into its remotest western districts, the West-Gothic kingdom in that country in full and avowed independence. Euric was something more than a successful warrior : he aspired to be a legislator, and he had the ''customs of the Goths" recorded in writing and embodied in a code. The work was continued by his successor Alaric II. in the beginning of the 6th century, under the superintendence of civil and ecclesiastical lawyers, and it was based mainly on what was known as the Theodosian code (see Brevt- artuM ALARICANUM). The result was that a thoroughly Roman character was impressed on the West-Gothic legis- lation, and that Roman institutions, ideas, and manners long survived in Spain. With the conversion of the West- Goths from Arianism to the orthodox faith in the latter

part of the 6th century, under their king Recared (586— Recared.

589), came in new influences and a great accession of power to the ecclesiastics. 'Recared was the first Catholic king of Spain. With the zeal of a convert he set himself to root out Arianism, burning Arian books of theology and frightening his Arian bishops into the profession of the Catholic belief. He seems to have been thoroughly suc- cessful, and richly endowed churches and monasteries grew up in every part of Spain. Pope Gregory the Great acknowledged the good work of Recared by a gift of sacred relics.

7th century came a savage persecution of the Jews, multi- tudes of whom had long been settled in Spain and had thriven, as elsewhere, by trade and industry. The Jew up to this time seems to have found in Spain a particularly safe and comfortable home. Now, at the instance of a West-Gothic king, he was so cruelly ? oppressed and per- secuted that even the Catholic clergy interposed to some extent on his behalf. A decree for the expulsion of the entire Jewish community was promulgated on one occasion with the sanction of the council of Toledo; but the Jew still held his ground in Spain and prospered and grew rich, and his presence in the country contributed to the rapid spread of Arab conquest in the next century.

Among the most conspicuous features of the West- Features @ 3 of West-

Gothic kingdom in Spain we may note electiv

monarchy, the great and indeed overshadowing pOWET rule,

of the church, an aristocracy which had in its hands a very large part of the administration, a uniform code of laws for all Spaniards, with both a distinctly Roman and ecclesiastical impress on it. The church on the whole seems to have been the guiding spirit, and the Spanish bishops and clergy were held in high esteem for their learning and virtue. It was they who mainly inspired the legislation of the great national councils of Toledo, which to the West-Goths of Spain were what the Witena- gemot was to our Saxon ancestors. The church was the centre round which the whole of society moved. In this fact we see foreshadowed much of the future of Spanish history, the supremacy of ecclesiastics, the extraordinary powers of the Inquisition. It had from the first its evil

1 Furic is said to have assassinated his brother Theodoric.

2 Ninety thousand Jews were compelled to receive baptism (Gibbon’s Decline and Fall, ch. 37).

3 Limited, however, to pure Gothic blood.

His brother and successor Euric! (466-485) Euric.

Unhappily the seeds of bigotry and religious The J ews intolerance had been sown, and with the beginning of the ™ Spall

Decline and fall of the West- Gothic power,

The Arab invasion.

UNDER VISIGOTHS, |

it the same time the means of giving Spain laws very far above the average ideas of a barbarous people,—laws indeed which in many respects were rational, humane, enlightened, often combining the wisdom of old Rome with the kindly spirit of Christianity. The West-Gothic code recognized the equality of all men in the eye of the law; such bar- barisms as the assessment of a man's value according to his rank and position, or judicial combat or trial by ordeal, find no place in it. It had certainly great merits; its weakness seems to have been in leaving too much scope on one side to the king, on the other to the clergy. Between the royal and the ecclesiastical powers individual freedom was liable to disappear. There was a danger, too, of human thought and speculation being wholly absorbed into theology. In anything like general litera- ture Spain seems to have been decidedly poor during this period, while among her neighbours in the south of Gaul Greek philosophy was a fashionable study, testifying to the presence of considerable intellectual activity. Spain under its West-Gothic kings and its Catholic clergy may have been a fairly well governed country, but long before the end came there must have been languor and decay amongst its people. After the conquest of Africa by Belisarius for the emperor Justinian, it seemed possible that the country might be. once again annexed to the empire as a province; and an unsuccessful candidate for the throne,— which, it will be remembered, was elective,— went so far as to conclude a treaty of alliance, and actually to cede to the troops of the empire several towns on the Mediterranean coast. That a Gothic king should con- descend to ask support from such a quarter, and allow himself to be spoken of as in any sense the empire's vassal, marks a very decided decline in the old inde- pendent spirit of the nation. We may certainly assume that repeated disputes as to the royal succession had undermined its power for resistance, and the numerous and not very well affected Jewish colony in their midst must have been a permanent source of danger. By the end of the 7th century northern

Africa to the Straits of Gibraltar had passed wholly under Saracenic dominion. The struggle had been long and hard, and the West- Gothic kings, who had recovered the towns on the southern coasts, and even made some small conquests on the African shores, had done something to prolong it ; but in 710 a little band of Saracens landed unopposed at Gibraltar, returned in safety, and urged their brethren at once to cross the straits and take possession of the country. In the following year (711) Tarik, at the head of about 5000 Saracen volunteers, entered Spain.

Section II].—MeEp124vau History.

The Arab invasion of Spain had been intended by Musa, the governor of Africa, to be merely a plundering raid (compare MoHAMMEDANISM, vol. xvi. p. 573). A single

1 For the West-Gothic kingdom in Spain, Gibbon's Decline and Fall should be consulted, chapters 31, 36, 37, 38, 41, 51. In note 122 (ch. 38) he remarks on the obscurity of the subject, Spain having had during this period no chronicler like Bede for the Saxons or Gregory of Tours for the Franks. As to the West-Gothic laws, there is a good deal of easily accessible information in Guizot's History of Civilization, lectures 3, 6, 10, 11. Compare Roman Law, vol. xx. p. 712, and Satic Law, vol. xxi. p. 216, section (11).

oP @YN

side in tendeucies to bigotry and persecution, but it was | unexpected success turned it into a conquest.

309

Tarik had already made himself master of Cordova and Toledo when Musa arrived from Africa and rewarded his too successful lieutenant by consigning him to prison. But his military ability was too valuable to be dispensed with, and he was speedily released to aid in completing the conquest. Within four years the whole Peninsula, except the mountainous districts in the north, had submitted to the invaders. It was now Musda's turn to suffer from the jealousy of his superior. Recalled to Damascus by

Walid, he arrived just after the caliph's death, and at once fell under the dis- pleasure of his successor Suleimdn. His sons, who had been left to rule in Spain, were involved in his disgrace, and the father aied broken-hearted on a pilgrimage to Mecca.

Few things in history are more remarkable than the Causes ease with which Spain, a country naturally fitted for of its defence, was subdued by a mere handful of invaders, SU°°°S*

The usual causes assigned are the misgovernment of the Visigoths, the excessive influence enjoyed by the clerical caste, internal factions and jealousies, and the discontent of numerous classes, and especially of the Jews. All of these doubtless co-operated to facilitate the conquest and to weaken the power of resistance, but the real cause is to be sought in the fact that the Visigoths had never really amalgamated with the conquered population. The mass of the inhabitants regarded their rulers as aliens, and had no reason to resent a change of masters. This feeling was strengthened by the conduct of their new conquerors. The Arab invasion undoubtedly brought with it consider- able bloodshed and destruction of property, but it was merciful when compared with the previous inroads of the German tribes, and in the end it proved a blessing rather than a curse to the country. To all who submitted the Arabs left their laws and customs, and allowed them to be administered by their own officials. The cultivation of the fields was left to the natives, and the overthrow of the privileged classes gave rise to a system of small hold- ings or properties, which was one of the causes of the flourishing condition of agriculture under Arab rule. The slaves found their lot much improved under a religion which taught that the enfranchisement of a slave was a meritorious action. The Jews, as they had suffered most under the Visigoths, were the chief gainers from a con- quest which they had greatly contributed to bring about.

But nothing was so influential in securing ready submission Toler- Even ance,

to the Arabs as their tolerance in religious matters. the most bigoted adherents of Islam found a practical check to their zeal for proselytism in the loss that would accrue to the exchequer. The Christians had to pay a poll-tax, which varied according to the class to which they belonged. All

property was subject to the khardj, a tax proportioned to the produce of the soil, but converts to Mohammedanism were excused from the poll-tax. A cleri- cal chronicler of the 8th century, while bewailing the sub- jection of Spain to an alien race, says nothing against the conquerors as the professors of a hostile religion. His silence is an eloquent testimony to the haughty tolerance of the Arabs.

As time went ou, and the Arabs felt more secure in their position, their rule became not unnaturally harsher. Many of the treaties which had secured favourable terms to the conquered were broken, and the Christians were provoked to resistance by persecution. A notable instance of this was the edict making circumcision compulsory for Christians as well as Moslems. Greater hardships still were endured by the ‘ renegades,” most of whom had embraced Mohammedanism from a desire for safety or for temporal gain, and who found that return to the old faith was blocked both to themselves and to their children by

Moham- medan discords.

OMAY- YADS.

“Abd al- Rahman.

the law which punished a perverted Mussulman with death. At the same time their social position was intoler- able, and they were excluded from all lucrative offices and from all share in the government. Their discontent led to numerous and stubborn rebellions, but they belong to a later period, and in the 8th century the chroniclers record only a single rising, that of the Christians of Beja, and they seem to have been merely the tools of an ambitious Arab chieftain.

Tt was fortunate for the Arabs that they succeeded at first in conciliating the natives, as otherwise their rule in the Peninsula would have been short-lived. Internal discord offered the Christians an easy opportunity for suc- cessful revolt if they had chosen to avail themselves of it. The conquerors were united by religion but not by race. When the task of conquest was

achieved, and the need for unity was removed by the submission of the vast majority of the natives, quarrels arose between the various races which had taken part in the invasion. Besides the Arabs proper, who regarded themselves as the true conquering race, there were Berbers or Moors, Egyptians, and Syrians. So difficult was it to prevent their quarrels that it was found necessary to subdivide the conquered territory and to allot separate settlements to the different tribes, a measure which only tended to perpetuate their differences. Matters were made worse by the constant efforts of ambitious chieftains to raise themselves to power or to ruin their more successful equals. The first forty years of Arab rule in Spain are a period of woeful confusion, and it is difficult even to enumerate the names of the emirs who followed each other in rapid succession. The great empire of the Arabs began to fall to pieces as soon as it had reached its greatest extent. A movement whose end was conquest began to fail directly it ceased to conquer. The overthrow of the Omayyad dynasty by the Abbasids was a proof that disorder prevailed at the centre. The extremities inevitably displayed the same symptoms. Each new caliph sent a fresh emir to Spain; the governor of Africa claimed to interfere in the affairs of a province which had been conquered by one of his predecessors ; and the native chiefs were often unwilling to submit to a new ruler whose arrival was the result of a revolution in which

they had no share and which they would have prevented |

if they could. A capable and energetic governor, con- fronted with internal dissension and always dreading the arrival of a successor to supersede him, could only devise one way of solving the problem. The Arabs were unable to live at peace, and the one means of preventing them from warring with each other was to find them new lands to conquer. now ruled by the degenerate Merwings, which resulted in the conquest of the provinces of Septimania and Nar- bonne, and at one time threatened to subject the whole of western Europe to the successor of Mohammed. But the battles of Toulouse (721) and of Tours (732) checked the advance of the Moslems, and by 759 they had been com- pelled to retire from all possessions beyond the Pyrenees. Thus thrown back upon the peninsula, it seemed probable that their empire in Spain would speedily succumb to the disruptive forces which had no longer any external outlet.

From this fate the Arab power was saved by ‘Abd al- Rahman (Abderame), the one survivor of the Omayyad dynasty, who succeeded after a long series of romantic adventures in escaping from the general massacre of his family (see vol. xvi. p. 578). His arrival in the Peninsula was welcomed by those Arab chieftains who had ends of their own to gain or who saw how impossible it was for Spain to be ruled from a distant centre like Damascus or Baghdad. The resistance of the Abbasid emirs, Yusuf and ‘Ali b. Moghith, was overcome. and ‘Abd al-Rahmdn was

sPAT.N

Hence came the frequent invasions of Gaul, |

[IsTORY.

enabled to found a new Omayyad dynasty at Cordova. He and his immediate successors seem to have contented themselves with the title of emir, but all connexion with the eastern caliphate was cut off, and Spain became inde- pendent under its new rulers. The reign of ‘Abd al- Rahman J. was spent in almost constant warfare. No sooner had he reduced the southern provinces than a revolt broke out in Saragossa under Hosein b. Yahya. Driven from Spain, where he had raised the black standard of the Abbasid caliph, Hosein fled to the court of Charlemagne and implored his assistance. The Frankish army restored Hosein to power, but on its return was almost destroyed by the Basque mountaineers in the famous valley of Ronces- valles (778). After a siege of two years Saragossa was taken, Hosein was put to death as a rebel, and the whole country up to the Pyrenees was compelled to submit to the Omayyad. A formidable rising of the sons of Yusuf was put down in 786, and ‘Abd al-Rahmaan was enabled to devote the last two years of his life to the arts of peace and to the construction of his famous mosque at Cordova. Before his death he settled the succession on his third son, Hisham, who had been born in Spain, and compelled his followers and his elder sons to swear fealty.

Hish4m’s reign, which lasted only eight years (788- Hishdm.

796), was comparatively uneventful. He was successful in foiling the attempt of his elder brothers to seize the throne, but a projected invasion of

Gaul was repulsed by the courage of the count of Toulouse. Hish4m was a devotee, —strict in the performance of religious duties and absorbed in works of charity. He completed the mosque which his father had begun, and endeavoured to make Cordova the educational centre of Islam. His son and

successor, Al-Hakam, was of a very different temperament. AI- With a keen enjoyment of the pleasures of life, Al-Hakam Hakam.

disregarded the precepts of the Koran which forbade the use of wine, and his lax practices irritated the fakths, the “scribes” of Mohammedanism. The inability of the Arabs to adapt themselves to a life of peace found expres- sion in a number of isolated risings, of which the most notable took place in Toledo and Cordova. The inhabit- ants of Toledo had never forgotten that their city had once been the capital of Spain, and most of them belonged to the class of ‘‘renegades,” who had no real attachment to the dominant faith. Al-Hakam determined to suppress their discontent by a notable act of cruel treachery. Feigning the most complete goodwill, he invited the chief citizens to a banquet in honour of the presence of his son in Toledo. As they entered the door they were conducted to an inner chamber and massacred by a band of assassins. More than seven hundred are said to have perished on this “day of the fosse” (807), and the citizens, deprived of their leaders, submitted with the torpor of despair. The fate of Toledo terrified the Cordovans, and postponed their rising for seven years. But in 814 the murder of a blacksmith by one of Al-Hakam’s bodyguard provoked a terrible outbreak. Besieged in his palace by the infuriated mob, Al-Hakam only escaped death by his own coolness and presence of mind. A detachment of his guard was sent to fire the houses of the citizens ; the mob hurried off to save their families and goods; and a sudden charge of the emir and his soldiers threw them into complete disorder. With politic severity Al-Hakam destroyed a whole quarter of the city and condemned all the inhabitants to exile. Part of them found a new home in Africa, but others, after a temporary sojourn in Alexandria, conquered Crete, where they founded a dynasty, which lasted till 961, when the island was recovered by the Greeks. The fakihs, the real instigators of the rebellion, were treated with con- spicuous leniency, and their leader, Talit, was even admitted to Al-Hakam’s favour.

CHRIS- TIAN STATES.

RISH OF CHRISTIAN STATES. |

By the end of the 8th century it had become evident that the Arabs had committed a great error in not reduc- ing the whole Peninsula, and that the contemptuous indifference with which they had left the northern mountains to a handful of refugees was destined to bring its own punishment. The early history of the Christian states of Spain is wrapped in a mist of fable and legend, but it is not hard to discern the main outlines. A scanty band of warriors, headed by Pelayo, probably a member of the Visigothic royal family, found refuge in the cave of Covadonga, aniong the inaccessible mountains of Asturias. Their own bravery and the difficulties of the country enabled them to hold their own, and they became the rallying point for all who preferred a life of hardship to slavish submission. The formation of a Christian kingdom was the work of Pelayo's grandson, Alfonso I., who seized the opportunity when the Arabs were occupied in the disputes attending the accession of 'Abd al-Rahman I. After driving the Berbers from Galicia, Alfonso advanced with his victorious troops as far asthe Douro. But he had not followers enough to colonize the conquered territory, and contented himself with the northern districts, leaving a desert to form a natural boundary between himself and the Moors. Alfonso's son and successor, Fruela I. (765-775), fixed his capital at Oviedo, but the greater part of his reign was occupied with the suppression of internal disorders, and he ultimately fell a victim to assassination. His throne was successfully usurped by his cousin Aurelia and his nephew Silo, both of whom sought security against domestic enemies in an alliance with 'Abd al-Rahman. On the death of Silo (784) a party among the nobles elected Fruela's son, Alfonso II., but for six years the western half of the kingdom obeyed a bastard son of Alfonso I. by a Moorish captive, nicknamed from his origin El Maurecato. Under Alfonso the Chaste, whose long reign lasted till 842, the Christian kingdom of Oviedo was firmly established. It is impossible to find any accurate account of his achieve- ments. 'The monkish chroniclers are hardly trustworthy authorities for military history, and they prefer to confine themselves to the more congenial subject of the found- ing and endowment of churches. The discovery of the pretended tomb of St James at Compostella is in their eyes the greatest event of the reign, and it

undoubtedly aided to give a religious character to the war which was destined to be the great crusade of the west.

Alfonso IL.'s reign witnessed the establishment of another Christian state in Spain. Charles the Great had been too much occupied elsewhere to avenge the great disaster at Roncesvalles, but he was only waiting for his opportunity. This was offered in 800 by the treachery of another governor of Saragossa, who had revolted against Al-Hakam and sought assistance from the Franks. Charles himself was on his way to Italy to assume the imperial crown, but he sent his son Louis across the Pyrenees. In his first campaign Louis reached the Ebro, but he had to return in 801 to vanquish the obstinate resistance of Barcelona. The administration of the "Spanish mark" was entrusted to Bera, a man of Gothic descent, who proved fully capable of the task imposed upon him. The attacks of the Arabs were repulsed, and their last possessions beyond the Ebro were lost in 811, when Tortosa, after a siege of two years, succumbed to the forces which Louis the Pious had again led over the mountains. Henceforth the province was ruled by the counts of Barcelona, as representatives of the Frankish kings.

To avoid the difficulty of frequent transitions, it will be best to sketch in advance the main outlines of the history of the Christian states down to the formation of the three

oll

kingdoms of Aragon, Castile, and Navarre, leaving their relations with the Moors to be narrated in connexion with the caliphate of Cordova. It is impossible to do much more than trace the dynastic and geographical changes, as their mutual quarrels are intricate and wearisome, and of little importance except as prolonging the rule of the Arabs in the Peninsula. The county of Barcelona may be dismissed with a few words. It continued for some time to be subject to Frankish suzerainty, and it suffered from the disorders that followed the break-up of Charles the Great's empire. Bera, its first count, was exiled, and his successor, Bernhard, played a prominent part in the intrigues of that troubled period. At one moment he added Septimania to the Spanish mark, at another he was disgraced and exiled ; and finally he

was treacherously murdered. In the later part of the 9th century all connexion with Septimania was cut off, and Wilfrid the Hairy (d. 907) was able to make the county hereditary in his family. With its mixed population and its long line of coast the county of Barcelona, or Catalonia as it came to be called, was more involved in the affairs of Gaul than of Spain. Berengar I. annexed the county of Carcassonne and other districts north of the Pyrenees (about 1050-1076), and Berengar III. (1092-1131) obtained Provence by marriage. On the latter's death Catalonia and the transmontane territories were divided between his two sons, and in 1150 Berengar IV., by marriage with Queen Petronilla, obtained the kingdom of Aragon, with which Catalonia was henceforth united.

The history of Oviedo is more important and more complicated. Alfonso II.'s successors, Ramiro I. (842- 850) and Ordofio I. (850-866), had to contend both with the great nobles, who aimed at independence, and with the Basques, who had never learnt to submit to orderly rule. Alfonso III., in a long reign of nearly fifty years (866-910), won the title of "The Great" from the suc- cess which attended his arms. While his plundering raids extended as far as Coimbra and Lisbon, he really advanced his frontiers to the Douro, and in order to defend these more exposed territories he transferred his capital from Oviedo to Leon, on the further side of the mountains. In accordance with the universal custom of the Germans, Alfonso divided his territories among his three sons, Garcia receiving the southern districts with Leon as a capital, Ordofio II. western Galicia, and Fruela II. the original district round Oviedo. In 931, however, the kingdom was again united under Ramiro IL. a son of Ordono II., and henceforth called after the new capital, Leon. Under Ramiro, a great warrior against the Arabs, we first hear of a district that was destined to become the most important in Spain. The border territory, a march to the south-east of Leon, previously Bardulia, was now known as Castile, from the number of castles that had been raised to hold it against the infidels. Its count, Fernan Gonzales, was the most powerful noble in the kingdom of Leon, and sought to make himself inde- pendent. Ramiro reduced him to submission and then bound him to his side by marrying his eldest son to the count's daughter. Ordofio III. (950-957) sought to emulate his father's achievements against the Arabs, but was hampered by the revolt of his brother Sancho and his father-in-law Fernan Gonzales. Sancho I. (957-966) found an enemy in his

recent ally, who attempted to place a rival king upon the throne, and he could only procure restoration to his kingdom by an alliance with the caliph of Cordova. This alliance lasted during the minority of his son, Ramiro III. (966-982), who was deposed by the malcontent nobles in favour of his uncle, Bermudo II. (982-999). The latter, too mild a ruler for such troubled times, had a hard struggle against domestic

County of Barcelona,

(813- 1150).

Kingdom of Oviedo or Leon.

Rise of Navarre, Castile, and Aragon.

treachery and foreign enemies, and left a desolate kingdom to his son Alfonso V. Alfonso succeeded in restoring order, and to his reign are attributed the most important of the fueros, on which were based the local institutions of his kingdom.

Meanwhile a new kingdom had sprung up to the east of Leon, which for a time seemed likely to become the chief state of Christian Spain. The district in the western Pyrenees bordering on the Bay of Biscay was the most defensible position in the Peninsula. It was there that the Basques had held out against the German invaders, and that the Suevi had found a refuge from the Visigoths. The sovereignty of the Moslems and of the Franks had been in turn acknowledged, but had never been more than nominal. About the beginning of the 10th century Sancho founded here the kingdom of Navarre, and he succeeded in extending his rule as far as the lower Ebro. His means of defence were primitive but efficient. When attacked by the infidels in overwhelming numbers he retired to the inaccessible mountains, and recovered the lost ground as soon as the enemy had turned his back. His grandson, Sancho the Great (970-1035), profited by the disasters which befel Leon. He married the sister of Garcia, count of Castile, and when his brother-in-law fell a victim to a conspiracy he seized the opportunity to avenge his death by annexing the northern portion of his country. In 1034

he picked a quarrel with Bermudo Te (1028-1037), the son and successor of Alfonso V., and conquered eastern Leon as far as the river Cea. More important still were his acquisitions in the south-east of Navarre. Partly by marriage connexions, and partly by the sword, he obtained possession of the counties of Aragon, Sobrarbe, and Ribagorga, which had for years been struggling to maintain their independence against the Mussulman governor of Saragossa. These consider- able territories Sancho divided on his death (1035) among his four sons, and the division is an important event in the history of Spain. Garcia, the eldest, received Navarre, with a small district on the right bank of the Ebro ; Ferdinand, the second son, obtained Castile, with the addition of the district of Palencia, which had been wrested from Leon; the counties of Ribagorca and Sobrarbe passed to Gonzalo, and that of Aragon to Ramiro, a bastard.

The death of Sancho the Great seemed to offer Bermudo TIT. an opportunity for recovering his lost territories, and he at once collected his forces to attack Ferdinand. Ina pitched battle near the river Carrion, Bermudo was defeated and killed, and the conqueror at once annexed Leon with its dependencies— Galicia and Asturias—to his new kingdom of Castile (1037). The eldest brother, Garcia, resented a change which threatened to deprive Navarre of the pre-eminence which it had enjoyed under his father. To gratify his jealousy he did not scruple to ally himself with the emirs of Saragossa and Tudela. But in the battle of Atapuerca (1054) the unnatural coalition was defeated, Garcia lost his life on the field, and Ferdinand added to Castile the district on the right of the Ebro, leaving the rest of Navarre to his nephew, Sancho IV. Meanwhile Ramiro, equally ambitious and successful, got rid of his brother Gonzales, and seized upon Sobrarbe and Ribagorga to form, with his own inheritance, the kingdom of Aragon. Henceforth the history of Christian Spain centres round the two great states of Castile and Aragon. Leon, much to the disgust of its inhabitants, becomes a province of the former, and Navarre is soon afterwards deprived of independence by its more powerful neighbour.

We must now return to the history of the Arabs. Under “Abd al-Rahman II. (822-852), one of the mildest

and most cultivated of the Omayyad dynasty, began a period of disorder and anarchy which might have ruined his power if the northern states had been prepared to take advantage of it. Toledo, which had recovered its independence soon after the ‘‘day of the fosse,” was not reduced until after a desperate struggle of eight years, and then its fall was mainly due to internal quarrels. More serious was the growing spirit of insubordination among the Christian population of the south. In spite of the tolerance with which they were treated, the priests persisted in preaching against the rule of the infidel. Under the leadership of Eulogius and his friend Alvaro, a fanatical sect was formed which sought to emulate the glory of the early martyrs. So averse was the Govern- ment to resort to persecution that it was only by publicly blaspheming Mohammed that they could bring themselves under the penalties of the law. Eleven persons were put to death for such conduct, who are celebrated in Spanish history as the “martyrs of Cordova.” It was in vain that the moderate party denounced their conduct as wanton suicide; the enthusiasts persisted in their defiant conduct. Mohammed (852-866), sterner and more nar- row-minded than his predecessor, was not unwilling to take repressive measures, and the execution of Eulogius, who had been chosen archbishop of Toledo, seems to have checked for a time the thirst for martyrdom. But the movement had succeeded in provoking a feeling of dis- trust between the two religions, and it was difficult to return to the old attitude of easy tolerance. The “rene- gades” found their position altered for the worse, and under Mohammed they were jealously excluded from all the higher offices of state.

A series of revolts showed how prevalent was the feel- ing of discontent. The Gothic family of Beni-Cas{, which

-had embraced Mohammedanism in order to advance itself,

had become extremely powerful in Aragon. Mus4, the head of this family, made himself master of Saragossa, Tudela, and Huesca, concluded a close alliance with Toledo, which had again recovered its independence, and claimed to be the “third king in Spain.” Musd’s death in 862, in a war with Ordofio I. of Oviedo, enabled Mohammed to regain Tudela and Saragossa, but his troops were soon expelled by Musé’s sons, and the Bent- Casi, with

the help of Alfonso IIL, were for a long time able to bid defiance to the authority of the emir. About the same time an independent state was formed in the west by Ibn-Merwan, a renegade of Merida. But by far the most formidable of these risings was that of ‘Omar b. Hafstin, who began as a brigand in the mountains of Andalusia, but whose castle at Bobastro became the centre of all the dissatisfied Christians and renegades of the south. Neither Mohammed nor his son and successor Mondhir (886-888) could reduce this impregnable fortress, and for years ‘Omar was the real ruler of Andalusia, His authority was far greater than that of the emirs had ever been; his administration of justice was rude but efficient; and the Arab historians maintain that a girl laden with treasure could in his time cross the mountains in safety. The premature death of Mondhir, a brave and chivalrous prince, gave the succession to his brother “Abdallah (888- 902), who ascended the throne at a very critical moment. Not only had the rising of the Christians and renegades assumed an almost national character, but the Arab nobles had taken advantage of the general disorder to assume the independence that was so congenial to them. ‘Abd- allah, considering the latter danger the nore formidable, sought to gain over the Spaniards, and even offered Ibn Hafsin the government of Regio, on condition that he would acknowledge himself as sovereign. But the negotiation came to nothing, and the only result was to

OMAYe YADS

pias

1031).

‘Abd al-

Rahman it.

Moham- med.

‘Abdallah. |

‘Abd al- Rahman.

OMAYYADS, 822-1031. |

provoke the indignation of his own race against the emir. Luckily for him the Spaniards had an old debt to pay off against the Arabs, who had long treated them with insufferable contempt. In various districts a desperate civil war broke out, which was destructive of all law and order, but was not directly aimed against the central Government. The most violent struggle was in the pro- vince of Elvira, where for a time the natives got the upper hand, and it was only after a desperate conflict that the Arab domination was maintained by the heroism of two successive leaders, Sauwar and Said. In Seville a similar contest arose, and ‘Abdallah, after attempting in vain to hold the balance between the two parties, was at last compelled to espouse the cause of the Arabs. An insurrection, in which the life of Mohammed, the emir’s eldest son, was in imminent danger, was punished with ruthless severity; but it was the Arab nobles who profited by the success to make themselves absolute masters of the province. The central authority was almost powerless. Most of the provincial governors had thrown off all con- nexion with Cordova, and the others only rendered obedience when it was convenient to themselves. But at the moment when matters seemed at their worst the tide turned. In 890 ‘Abdallah won his first victory over Ibn-Hafstin, and during the remainder of his reign he gradu- ally recovered power in the revolted provinces. The work was continued by his son and successor, “Abd al- Rahman (or Abderame) III. (912-961), the greatest of the rulers of Cordova. Under this prince, who at last assumed the title of caliph, the unity of Mussulman Spain was for the time restored.

No sooner had ‘Abd al-Rahman completed the first part of his task by the reduction of the family of Ibn-Hafstin than he found himself confronted by two dangers. In Africa the Fatimites were establishing a great empire, and it

was almost certain that they would turn their attention to Spain as soon as their power was secure in the southern continent. In the north the Christian states had profited by the long anarchy among their old foes and were assuming a very threatening attitude. Alfonso III. had moved his capital across the mountains to Leon, and Sancho had recently created the kingdom of Navarre. As regards Africa, ‘Abd al-Rahman contented himself with encouraging aud subsidizing the princes that still held out against the Fatimites, and with obtaining possession of Ceuta, so as to have complete command of the straits. The northern danger was the more pressing. In 914 Ordotio II. made a successful raid into the territory of Merida, and two years later he defeated the army which had been sent to avenge the insult. Although Merida had not yet returned to submission, “Abd al-Rahman was determined to conciliate his subjects by proving his ability to defend them. He spared no pains to collect a magni- ficent army, and his efforts were rewarded in 918 bya great victory over the combined forces of Leon and Navarre. This was the first of a series of successful campaigns, in the course of which he penetrated as far as Sancho’s capital, Pamplona. But his victories brought him little beyond glory and revenge. As soon as his troops were withdrawn, the enemy showed himself to be really unconquered. In 921 Ordofio is said to have advanced within a day’s journey of Cordova, and in 923 Sancho excited a panic in Mussulman Spain by the cap- ture of Viguera. But the disorders in Leon that followed Ordojio II.’s death were a great blow to the Christians, and enabled ‘Abd al-Rahmdn to complete his work of internal reorganization and to turn his attention to resist- ing the Fatimite conquest of Mauretania. On the death of Sancho, his widow Tota recognized the caliph as suze- rain of Navarre.

SP ai N

|

313

In his later years “Abd al-Rahman was less uniformly successful. The Arabs were disgusted by his policy of excluding the nobles from all share in the government and of filling the chief offices with ‘‘Slavs,” the generic title for all foreign servants of the court. Ramiro II. had succeeded in restoring unity to Leon, and resumed the warlike policy of his predecessors.

In 939 he inflicted a serious defeat upon the army of the caliph at Alhandega, and was only prevented from following up his victory by a quarrel with the famous count of Castile, Fernan Gon- zales. The divisions which followed Ramiro's death were an additional advantage to "Abd al-Rahman; and in 960 he gained the most conspicuous success of his reign when his troops restored the deposed Sancho J. to the throne of — This was almost his last act, as he died in October

961.

"Among the Omayyad princes of Spain 'Abd al-Rahman III. incontestably holds the first place. His achievements bordered on the fabulous. He had found the empire in a state of anarchy and civil war, divided amongst a crowd of chiefs of different race, exposed to constant raids from the Christians of the north, and on the verge of being absorbed either by Leon or by the Fatimites. In spite of innumerable obstacles he had saved Andalusia both from itself and from foreign rule. He had given to it internal order and prosperity and the consideration and respect of foreigners. He found the treasury in disorder ; he left it in the most flourishing condition. A third of the annual revenues, which amounted to 6,245,000 pieces of gold, sufficed for the ordinary expenditure; another third was kept as a reserve; tle rest was devoted to buildings. The condition of the country was equally prosperous. Agriculture, industry, commerce, the arts and sciences, flourished together. The foreigner was lost in wonder at the scientific system of irrigation, which gave fertility to lands that appeared most unpromising. He was struck by the perfect order which, thanks to a vigilant police, reigned in the most inaccessible districts. Commerce had developed to such an extent that, accord- ing to the report of the superintendent of the customs, the duties on imports and exports constituted tlle most con- siderable part of the revenue. A superb navy enabled 'Abd al-Rahman to dispute with the Fatimites the empire of the Mediterranean, and secured him in the possession of Ceuta, the key of Mauretania. A numerous and well-disciplined army, perliaps the best in the world, gave him a preponder- ance over the Christians of the north. The most haughty sovereigns were eager for his alliance. Ambassadors were sent to him by the emperor of Constantinople and by the sovereigns of Germany, Italy, and France."— Dozy, iii. 90.

The new caliph, Al-Hakam II. (961-976), was distin- Al- guished as a patron of literature and a collector of books. Hakam The number of volumes in his library was reckoned at ~”

400,000, and he is said to have read and annotated them all. For politics he had comparatively little taste. Naturally averse to war, he was only forced into hostilities by the obstinate refusal of Sancho I. to fulfil the treaty which he had signed on his restoration, and he hastened to conclude peace on an empty renewal of the treaty. The disorders which arose during the minority of Ramiro III. put an end to all danger on the side of Leon, and the death of Fernan Gonzales in 970 removed a ruler who had always been a thorn in the side of the infidel. The most notable event of Al-Hakam’s reign is the rise to influence of a man who was destined to play a more prominent part in the history of Spain than any of the caliphs, not exclud- ing “Abd al-Rahman III. Mohammed Ibn-abi—Amir was the descendant of a family which had long been distin- guished in the civil administration, but had never been admitted to the higher nobility of the sword. From his XXII. — 40

Hisham it,

Alman- sor.

314

earliest youth he was inspired with the thought that he was destined to rule. His ability and the favour of Al-Hakam’s favourite wife, Sobh, combined to bring about his speedy advance, and by the time of the caliph’s death he held a high office in the court. Al-Hakam had done all in his power to secure the succession of his son by Sobh, Hisham, a boy of ten years of age. But the chief eunuchs, dreading the influence which a minority would give to Moshafi, the Adjib or chief minister, sought to give the crown to Moghira, a brother of Al-Hakam. With the help of Ibn-abi-“Amir, Moshafi defeated the plot; Moghira was put to death, and Hisham succeeded to his father’s throne. But he never really ruled. Ibn-abi-“Amir, still aided by Sobh, whose lover he was popularly supposed to be, gradu- ally rose to absolute power. Moshafi, a man of little real ability, was charged with peculation and deposed, and his younger rival was appointed Adib in his place. To free himself from all danger fro the mob at Cordova, the all-

powerful minister transferred the government and the court to Zahra, which he built for the purpose. There the young caliph was immured in a magnificent palace, and was carefully secluded from' all contact with public affairs. His education was purposely neglected, and he never made the slightest effort to free himself from his gilded imprisonment. To remove all obstacles to his authority, Ibn-ab{-"Amir reorganized the army. He filled the ranks with Moors from Africa and with Spaniards from Leon, Castile, and Navarre, whom he bound to his cause by lavish generosity. The old tribal distinctions among the Arabs, so long the source of jealousy and quarrels, he completely disregarded in the forming of regiments, and thus completed the work of assimilation which 'Abd al-Rahmin III. had commenced. Though trained to the study of the law and experienced only in civil affairs, he speedily mastered the art of war and con- ciliated the popular favour by victories such as no caliph had ever won. In 981 he defeated Ramiro III. and his allies in a pitched battle, took Zamora and Simancas, and was only prevented by a storm from capturing Leon. On his return he assumed the name of Almansér (victorious by the help of God), by which he is usually known in history. Bermudo II., whom the nobles of Leon raised to the throne in place of the defeated Ramiro, could only secure himself by paying tribute to the ruler of Cordova. In 985 Almansér invaded Catalonia, which had hitherto been respected as a Frankish fief, drove the count Borrel into exile, and took and sacked Barcelona. When Bermudo II. sought to free himself from the harsh conditions that had been imposed upon him and drove the Moslem troops from his kingdom, Almansér took a terrible revenge. In 987 he stormed Coimbra and razed it to the ground. In the next year he advanced into the heart of the kingdom. Leaving Zamora, where Bermudo awaited him, on one side, he marched against the city of Leon, and took it after an obstinate resistance. The fortifications were utterly destroyed, with the exception of one gate, which was left to commemorate the victor's triumph. Zamora was then attacked, and Bermudo fled fe his northern territories, which were all that were left to im.

In spite of these successes Almansér had to face more than one conspiracy on the part of those who were jealous of his pre-eminence. The most formidable of these was fomented by his former patroness, Sobh, who found her- self more and more thrust into the background. She succeeded in gaining over her son, but Almansér soon recovered his ascendency over the

feeble caliph, from whom he extorted a document transferring all powers to himself. A refusal of Bermudo II. to continue the payment of

tribute led to the last and most famous of his campaigns, |

PA

[HISTORY.

in which he took Compostella and carried off the gates and bells from the shrine of St James, the patron saint of the Christians. At the same time his generals were gaining victories in Mauretania, and his power was almost equally dreaded on both sides of the straits. His death in 1002 deprived the Spanish Moslems of the greatest ruler and warrior, considering his origin, that their race had pro- duced. His campaigns against the Christians, which are reckoned by the Arab historians as more than fifty, were almost uniformly successful. Three capitals—Leon, Pam- plona, and Barcelona—had been conquered by him. His home administration was as successful as his generalship, and much of his attention was devoted to the construction of roads and bridges, so as to facilitate communication between all parts of Spain. He was a zealous, if not an intelligent, patron of literature, but his real interests were always practical. Finding that he was suspected by the people of a laxness in religious belief, he did not hesitate to prove his orthodoxy by an act of politic vandalism. Taking the chief ‘wlemd into the library of Al-Hakam IL, he begged them to collect all the books on philosophy, astronomy, and other prohibited sciences; and when they had completed their task he ordered the condemned books to be burnt on a vast pile.

Almansér had been absolute in everything but name. He had desired at one time to take the final step and to supersede the incapable Hish4m II. in the caliphate, but he dreaded the inveterate attachment of the people to the Omayyad dynasty. He had, however, taken steps to secure the continuance of his family in power. His son, “Abd al-Melik Mozaffar succeeded to the office of Adjib, and ruled with the same authority and success as his father. But the position was really untenable. An _ hereditary monarchy is intelligible, but an hereditary line of chief ministers is not. The early death of ‘Abd al-Melik (1008) gave the government to the weaker hands of his

brother ‘Abd al-Rahman. The latter was hated by the Moham- medan clergy, partly because he indulged in the use of wine, and partly because his mother had been born a Christian. She was the daughter of a Sancho, either the king of Navarre or the count of Castile, and her son was nicknamed Sanchol, or the little Sancho. The Amirids were not popular. Their exaltation irritated, not only the families that claimed a higher rank by birth, but also those who thought themselves their equals. Without having any actual grievance to complain of, the people vaguely desired a change of rulers. It was easy under the circumstances to effect a revolution. When Sanchol returned from a campaign against Leon in 1009 he found that his power had been completely overthrown. Moham- med, a great-grandson of “Abd al-Rahmaan ITI., had headed an insurrection in the capital and had gained possession of the caliph’s person. Sanchol was put to death, and the magnificent palace which his father had erected at Zahra was razed tothe ground. The Amirids fell, and with them ended the grand period in the history of Moslem Spain.

Mohammed was not long content with the office of Moham- Scrupling to kill the unfortunate Hisham, who had med.

hajrb. never made any opposition to the acts that had been com- mitted in his name, he closely imprisoned him, and buried the corpse of a Christian who bore a strong personal resemblance to the caliph. Mohammed was now raised to the caliphate, and assumed the title of Al-Mahd{ (guided by God). But his reign was not destined to be long or un- troubled. He had been raised to power by a combination of orthodox Moslems, of the so-called “Slavs” (foreign slaves serving in the royal harem and in the army of the caliph) and of Berbers, and he alienated each in turn. The Berbers, who formed an important part of the army, were the first to revolt. Raising the standard of Solei-

Soleiman.

Ham- tZ . mudites.

Decline of the Omay- yads.

OMAYYADS, 822-1031. |

man, a member of the Omayyad family, they obtained assistance from Count Sancho of Castile, marched upon Cordova, and inflicted a serious defeat upon the troops which Mohammed imprudently led out to meet them. Mohammed endeavoured to strengthen his position by producing Hisham II., whom he had given out as dead. But the Berbers refused to be turned from their purpose, and occupied Cordova in November 1009. The wretched Hisham was compelled to abdicate in favour of Soleiman, and returned to his prison. Mohammed, who had escaped to Toledo, now turned for assistance to the Christians, who, by a sudden change of circumstances, had become the arbiters of Mohammedan affairs. With the help of troops from Catalonia he recovered Cordova, which had to pay in constant sieges a terrible penalty for the levity with which it had welcomed the fall of the Amirids. In pursuing the Berbers, however, Mohammed was again defeated. The Slavs, who had hitherto supported him for their own ends, determined to desert the unsuccessful caliph. Hisham IJ. was again dragged from prison to assume the throne, and Mohammed was murdered in his presence. Wadih, the leader of the Slavs, was now Adjib, and aspired to play the part of Almansér. But his resources were at an end. An attempt to increase the taxes roused general indignation, and he was put to death by his own followers (1011). Two years later the nominal reign of Hisham II. came to an end. Cordova was taken by Soleiman and the Berbers, and the caliph disappeared

(1013). His fate remains one of the unsolved secrets of history. Soleiman was now formally proclaimed caliph, but his

power was more nominal than real. The provincial governors had taken advantage of the civil war to make themselves independent, and Soleiman's authority was only recognized by five towns—Cordova, Seville, Niebla, Oksonoba, and Beja. Even within this district he soon found an opponent. The Slavs were unwilling to submit to the domination of the Berbers, whose excesses the caliph was unable to chéck. Their most powerful leader, Khairén, had been badly wounded in the late struggle, but on his recovery he determined to avenge his defeat. He found a capable ally in 'A b. Hammid, a descendant of the famous son-in-law of the Prophet, but whose family had almost ceased to be Arab in their long residence in Africa. 'Alf relied not only upon the Slavs but also upon the Berbers, who regarded

Soleiman with contempt, and looked upon ‘Alf as a fellow-countryman. Soleiman’s government was easily overthrown (1016), but Khairdn’s attempt to discover Hish4m II. was unsuccessful, and he had to acknowledge ‘Ali as caliph and to content himself with the office of hdjib. The Hammiudite dynasty, thus established in Cordova, was not destined to enjoy a long tenure of power. Khairdén revolted against a sovereign who was too able and spirited for the part of a Hisham II, and set up an anti-caliph in the person of another Omayyad, “Abd al-Rahman IV., a great-grandson of ‘Abd al-Rahman III., who took the name of Mortadé. ‘Ali was murdered in his bath (1017), but his supporters rallied round his brother Kasim. For five years a confused civil war raged which was complicated by the hostility to Kasim of ‘Ali’s son, Yahyé. In 1023 Mortada was slain in battle, and the Omayyad party gave the crown to another ‘bd al-Rahman, a brother of the detestable Mahdi. Two months later the young prince was murdered, but his successful rival, Mohammed b. ‘Abd al-Rahmdn was driven from Cordova in 1025. The Hammuidite caliph, Yahya, now occupied the capital, but was slain in attempt- ing to reduce the rebellious wdli of Seville to obedience. Hisham III., a brother of ‘Abd al-Rahmdn Mortad4, was now raised to the throne. But all central government

was by this time at an end; no revenues could be drawn from the rebellious provinces; and in 1031 Hisham abdicated a title which had ceased to have any meaning, and sought peace and retirement in the neighbourhood of Saragossa. His death five years later was almost unnoticed even in Cordova. With him ended the Omayyad dynasty, which had ruled in Spain for nearly three centuries, and which had produced princes worthy to be ranked with the greatest of their contemporaries. Its decline dates from the time when it allowed power to slip from its hands and to be wielded by ambitious ministers.

Ever since the death of Almansér Moslem Spain had been gradually splitting up into a number of independent principalities. With the extinction of the Omayyads the last semblance of unity disappeared. ‘The Berber generals shared the south; the Slavs ruled in the east; the rest was divided

either among successful adventurers or among the small number of noble families who had been fortunate enough to escape the blows which ‘Abd al-Rahman and Almansér had struck at the aristocracy. Finally, the two most considerable towns, Cordova and Seville, were organized as republics” (Dozy). Into the history of the numerous dynasties which were established during this period it is impossible to enter here, but the reader will find the subject not only fully but attractively treated in the fourth volume of Dozy’s Histoire des Musulmans d@’Es- pagne. See also Plate VII.

It was of additional moment that this disruption of the States of Mussulman power was contemporary with the formation Castile

of the great Christian states of Aragon and Castile. They were not slow to profit by the opportunity held out to them. It was in this century that the Christian cause found a champion in the famous Ruy Diaz Campeador, who under the name of “The Cid” became the traditional hero of Spanish medieval history. Ferdinand I. of Castile (1037-1067) captured the strong places of Viseu, Lamego, and Coimbra, and was only diverted from the conquest of Toledo by the humble submission of the emir, who undertook to pay tribute to the Christian king. The unfortunate division of his territories between his three sons gave occasion to civil wars, which were only ter- minated in 1072 by the reunion of the whole kingdom under Alfonso VI. Following up his father’s successes, Alfonso made himself master of Toledo, which once more became the capital of a Christian state. Meanwhile Ramiro I. of Aragon (1035-1063) drove the Moors from their last possessions in the counties of Aragon and Sobrarbe. His son, Sancho Ramirez (1063-1094), joined Alfonso VI. in an attack on Navarre which resulted in the partition of that state between the two kings, and commenced a war against the emir of Saragossa which ended, under his successors Pedro (1094-1104) and Alfonso I. (1104-1136), in the conquest of Huesca and Saragossa. The latter town became henceforth the recog- nized capital of Aragon.

This period is also important in another aspect. Relations Hitherto the Christian kingdoms of Spain had _ been with But the Rome,

naturally isolated from the rest of Europe. papacy, under the guiding hand of Hildebrand (Gregory VII.), was now making its ecclesiastical supremacy

a reality, and was not likely to tolerate independence even in the most distant members of the church. Aragon, which lay nearest to the other states of Western Christen- dom, made little difficulty about complying with the papal demands. Ramiro not only agreed to adopt the Roman ritual in his kingdom, but even sent tribute to Alexander II. Castile, lying farther distant, was more inclined to resent dictation. At a council at Burgos (1077) it was formally decided to retain the Gothic ritual. But Alfonso VI. realized the danger of isolating his state from the rest

Almor- The Christian victories of the 11th century seemed | gloriously begun by the capture of Tudela and Saragossa,

avid likely at one time to annihilate the Mohammedan power | but in 1134 he was completely defeated in the battle of

ae in Spain. From this fate, however, it was saved, not by | Fraga, a disaster which hastened his death. As he had

e Spain any internal strength, but by the arrival of assistance | no children, he bequeathed his territories to the great

(1069- from Africa. The emir of Seville, Al-Mo‘tamid, the most crusading order of the Templars. The Aragonese, however,

91). powerful of the Moslem princes, watched with profound refused to recognize this testament, and gave the crown to misgiving the progress of the Castilian arms. When | his brother, Ramiro IT. (1134-1137), who was brought out Toledo fell before Alfonso VI. he determined to appeal to | of a monastery to continue the dynasty. Ramiro fulfilled Yusuf b. Tashufin, the king of the Almoravids,—a con- | his duties by marrying a sister of the duke of Aquitaine, fedcration of Berber sectaries that had recently established | who bore him a daughter, Petronilla. At the age of two a vast empire reaching from the Senegal to Algiers. | the child was betrothed to Raymond Berengar IV. of Yusuf, who had established his capital at Morocco in | Barcelona, and Ramiro, leaving the administration of the 1069, was at this time eighty years of age, but he did not kingdom to his son-in-law, hastened to return to his hesitate to accept the prospect of a new field of conquest | cloister. Thus a permanent union was effected between and adventure. In

1086 he sailed from Ceuta to | Aragon and Catalonia, both of which passed in 1162 to Algesiras, the cession of which he had demanded as the | Petronilla's son, Alfonso II. But, if Catalonia was gained, price of his aid, and was at once joined by the forces of | another province, Navarre, was lost. The Navarrese had Navarre the emirs of Andalusia. Alfonso VI. hastened to obtain | long desired to recover their independence, and on the independ: j assistance from the king of Aragon and the count of | death of Alfonso I. they refused to acknowledge Ramiro, eit Barcelona, and witha larger force than had ever before | and chose a ruler of their own, Garcia Ramirez. Ramiro, been assembled in the Christian cause he met the Moors | who needed Garcia's generalship against a threatened in the battle of Zalldka (Sacralias), a few miles from | attack from Castile, recognized him, first as a vassal of Badajoz (October 1086). After an obstinate struggle | Aragon and afterwards as an independent king. Thus victory declared for the infidels, and Alfonso had great | Navarre regained its place among the kingdoms of Spain, difficulty in escaping with his life. Luckily for the | though it never enjoyed its old importance.

Castilians, Yusuf was recalled to Africa by the death of The main interest of Spanish history in the 13th Crusading his eldest son, whom he had left at Ceuta, and his victory, | century centres round the war against the Moors, which o'er. which might have been as decisive as that of Tarik, was | was beginning to attract the interest and assistance of the

not followed up. Alfonso even ventured to resume his | other European states. It was the age of the great ageressions, and laid siege to the important towns of | crusades, and Christendom was absorbed in the struggle

Murcia and Almeria. Mo'tamid, seeing that the danger | against the infidel, both in the East and West. Spain, like

was as great as ever, proceeded to Africa in person in order | Palestine, had its crusading orders, which vied with the

to urge the return of Yusuf. The Almoravid prince, on | Templars and Hospitallers both in wealth and military

whom the attractions of Andalusia had made a profound | distinction. The order of Calatrava was founded in 1158, impression, crossed again to Algesiras (1090), and this | that of St James of Compostella in 1175, and the order

time the predictions of the princes who had foreseen the } of Alcantara in 1176. The kingdom of Portugal, which

risk of calling in so powerful an ally were fully verified. | had risen with great rapidity in the 12th century, had a Postponing the task of resisting Alfonso, Yusuf set to work | no less distinguished order, that of Evora. These military

to make himself master of Andalusia. Mo‘tamid himself | priests, debarred by their profession from the ordinary

had to fly from his territories, after a futile appeal for aid | interests of humanity, gave a firmness and consistency to

to the king of Castile. Captured by the Africans, the | the Christian cause which had too often been sacrificed to

emir of Seville was condemned to end his life in close | the dynastic quarrels of the temporal princes. imprisonment. In the course of a few years the whole of The empire of the Almoravids, like so many of its Struggles } Moslem Spain was reunited under the king of Morocco, | predecessors, had soon begun to fall to pieces. It was too of Almor- and the death of the Cid in 1099 enabled the Moors to | large and unwieldy for permanence. Its real centre was Pilate | recover Valencia, which he had taken in 1094. This was | at Morocco, and the attention of the caliphs was absorbed hades. the last event of the reign of Yusuf, who in 1103 handed | in the affairs of Africa, while the extortion and misgov-

over the government to his son ‘Ali and returned to Africa, | ernment of their viceroys excited discontent among the

where he died three years later at the ripe age of a | Mohammedans of Spain. This state of things gave a hundred years. great advantage to Alfonso

VII. of Castile, who revived

Alfonso Alfonso VI. of Castile had raised his kingdom to such | the title of emperor of Spain, allied himself with Raymond

pre-eminence in the Peninsula that he had assumed the | Berengar of Barcelona and Aragon, and sought to emulate

asile. title of ‘ emperor of Spain.” Buta great disaster clouded | the achievements of his grandfather. For the second time his later years. In 1108 his only son Sancho perished | the Moorish power in Spain was only saved from dissolu- with the flower of the Castilian chivalry on the fatal field | tion by the arrival of reinforcements from Africa. As of Ucles, and most of Alfonso’s conquests passed into the | happened so often in Mussulman history, a movement hands of the victorious “Ali, In 1109 the emperor died, | which began with religious reform ended with the forma- leaving the succession to his daughter Urraca, the widow | tion of an empire. Mohammed b. ‘Abdallah, an Arab

Tempo- of Count Raymond of Burgundy. In order to secure the | from Mount Atlas, gave himself out as the expected

Aaah ‘i unity of the Christian kingdoms, Urraca was married to | Mahdi, and formed a sect known as the Almohades

Castile Alfonso il of Aragon (1104-1134), who imitated his | (Unitarians). His disciple, “Abd al-Mu’min, was chosen

and father-in-law in assuming the imperial title. But the | as his successor, and soon overthrew the power of the

Aragon. marriage failed to produce the desired result. Urraca | Almoravids. TAshufin, ‘Ali’s son, made a vigorous but

of Europe, and of his own accord conceded the demands of Gregory VII. From this time Christian Spain was directly

connected with Rome, and became the most faithful, if not the most servile, of Roman Catholic countries.

induced the Castilian nobles to revolt against the Aragonese rule and to set up Alfonso VII., her son by her first marriage. A civil war ensued, which was only ended

Sor 2 ie

in 1127 by the separation of the kingdoms. Alfonso I. retained Aragon and Navarre, while Castile, with Leon and Galicia, passed to Alfonso VII. Alfonso of Aragon renewed the war against the Moors which he had so

ineffectual resistance, and the conqueror crossed the sea to complete his work by the reduction of Spain (1146). The success of ‘Abd al-Mu’min, if less rapid than that of Yusuf,

Separa- tion of Castile and Leon.

Downfall of the Almo- hades,

Castile and Leon reunited,

was quite as complete. The Almoravids appealed to the Christians, and both Castile and Aragon came to their aid. Alfonso VII, with the help of the Genoese and Pisan fleets, besieged and took Almeria, while Raymond Berengar captured Tortosa. But tliese successes were only teniporary. In ten years the Almoravids had been driven from the mainland, and only a small remnant found refuge in the Balearic Islands. Almeria was again wrested from the Castilians, and in 1157 Alfonso VII. died, the last of the series of ‘emperors of Spain.” His territories were divided between his two sons, the elder, Sancho, succeed- ing to Castile, while Leon went to his brother Ferdinand. The quarrels which resulted from this: partition would probably have been fatal to the Christian cause but for the exertions of the great

knightly orders. The successors of ‘Abd al-Mu’min (d. 1163), Yusuf and Ya‘kib Almansér, continued to advance the power of the Almohades, and the latter inflicted a crushing defeat at Alarcos (1195) upon Alfonso VIII. of Castile, who had succeeded his father Sancho in 1158. Castile was at this time dis- tracted by the feuds of the great families of Lara and Castro, and the count of Castro, who had been worsted by his rival, rendered conspicuous service to the infidels in the battle. Even Sancho of Navarre, out of jealousy of the rival kings, concluded an alliance with the Almo- hades.

Luckily for the Christians Ya‘kub, the most formidable opponent they had had to face since the great Almansér, died in 1199, and his death was followed by a rising of the Almoravids which took five years to suppress. Mean- while successful efforts had been made by the pope and clergy to arrange the differences among the Christian states, and a confederation was formed between the five kings of Castile, Aragon, Leon, Navarre, and Portugal. When Ya‘ktib’s successor, Mohammed al-N4sir, had suc- ceeded in restoring order in Andalusia and prepared to march against the Christians, he was confronted by the allies in the famous battle of Las Navas de Tolosa, in the Sierra Morena (July 16, 1212). After an obstinate struggle the Christians gained a decisive victory, and their success decided the fate of Spain. The religious impulse which had constituted the original strength of the Almohades had come to an end; they were regarded as infidels by the orthodox Moslems, and the first failure necessarily led to their downfall. The cruelties with which they sought to repress the rising discontent only excited popular feeling against them, and when Al-Mota- wakkil, a descendant of the family of Ibn Héd which had once ruled in Saragossa, raised the standard of revolt in Andalusia, the bulk of the population joined him, and Al-Ma’mun, the last of the Almohades who held any power in Spain, fled to Africa in 1232. The chief result of their rule was to depress the Arab element in the Mus- sulman population of Spain. Hitherto the Arabs, though numerically in a minority, had retained the preponderance due to their original prestige. Henceforth the infidels of Spain can only be considered and spoken of as Moors.

After the fall of the Almohades the triumphs of the Christian arms were rapid and decisive. The separation of Castile and Leon, which had been

productive of so much disaster, was finally terminated in 1230 by the accession of Ferdinand IIT., the son of Alfonso IX. of Leon and Berengaria of Castile. The province of Estre- madura had been annexed to Leon by Alfonso IX., and now formed part of the united kingdom which under Verdinand III. rapidly extended itself southwards. In 1233 the Castilian army won a great victory over the Moors under Al-Motawakkil, and three years later Ferdin- and himself captured Cordova, so long the capital of the Mohammedan rulers and one of the most wealthy and

beautiful cities of Europe. In 1237 Al-Motawakkil was assassinated, and with him perished the last semblance of Moorish unity. The numerous emirs became independent rulers, and the most powerful of them, Mohammed Ibn al-Ahmar of Granada, became a tributary of Castile and ceded the strong town of Jaen (1246). In 1248 Seville, the second of the Mohammedan cities, submitted to Ferdinand, who within a few years annexed Xerez de la Frontera, Medina Sidonia, and Cadiz. By these acquisitions the frontier of Castile was extended to the southern coast before Ferdinand ITI.'s death in 1252. A considerable number of Moors submitted to the rule of Castile, but the Christians had become intolerant during the long war, and most of the conquered population sought a new home either in Granada or in Africa.

Meanwhile Aragon had taken a no less important part Successes

in the struggle. Pedro I. (1196-1213), the successor of Alfonso II., had excited the discontent of his subjects, partly by seeking coronation from Pope Innocent IIL, and partly by his excessive taxation. The "union" of nobles and towns compelled the king to diminish his ex- actions. Pedro took part in the battle of Navas de Tolosa, but his attention was diverted from Spanish affairs by his relationship with Raymond of Toulouse, which involved him in the Albigensian crusade, where he met his death. His son James I. (1213-1276), however, resumed the war against the infidels, and won in it the title of 'The Conqueror." With the help of his Catalonian subjects, at that time perhaps the most accomplished sailors in the world, he conquered the Balearic Islands (1229-1233), which had long been a

stronghold of the Moslem and a centre for piratical attacks upon the Christian states. Still more important was his reduction of Valencia (1238), which had once before been conquered by Ruy Diaz. The last achievement of the great king was the conquest of the province of Murcia (1266), the last of the Moorish territories in Spain except Granada. Murcia, though reduced by Aragon, was handed over to Castile. By the acquisition of Algarve Portugal had already acquired frontiers which correspond roughly to those which it has at the present day.

From the latter half of the 13th century the crusading energy of the Spaniards came to a sudden standstill, and the Moors were allowed to retain possession of Granada for more than two centuries. The causes of this abrupt termination of the war before it had reached what seemed to be its natural and legitimate end have often been dis- cussed. In the first place Castile was henceforth the only state which was directly interested in the war. By the acquisition of Sevilleand Murcia it had separated Granada both from Portugal and Aragon, neither of which states had henceforth any conterminous frontier with the Moors. The state of Granada, though small when compared with Castile, was by nature easily defensible, as was made amply apparent in the last campaigns under Ferdinand and Isabella. The attention of Castile was often distracted by foreign interests or by internal dissensions. Again, the Moors were more concentrated and homogeneous in Granada than they had been when their rule was more extensive. The large subject population, many of whom were Christians or renegades, had been a great source of weakness, and this no longer existed. They, like their opponents, had given up the tolerance that had once dis- tinguished them, and hardly any but true Mohammedans can have remained in Granada. Something, too, must be attributed to the wily policy and well-timed submission of Mohammed Ibn al-Ahmar, who even gave assistance to Ferdinand III. against the other Moorish emirs.

With the termination of the crusade Spanish history loses what little unity it had possessed for the last two

of Aragon.

Cessation of the crusade,

Moorish

Granada.

CASTILE

(1252- 1479).

Consti- tution of the king- dom.

centuries, and it becomes necessary to follow the fortunes of each state separately. Into the history of Granada it is as impossible as it would be tedious to enter within the limits of this article. It is a long record of revolution and civil war, in which nothing above the most petty personal interests are concerned. There is no change of dynasty, but one perpetual struggle between members of the same family. It would not be easy to enumerate even the names of the successive rulers, many of whom were several times deposed and restored to power. Even during the final struggle, when the existence of the king- dom was at stake and the one hope of resistance lay in unity, the national cause was sacrificed to the jealous rivalry of three claimants of the throne. The history of Castile and Aragon, on the other hand, assumes a new character and interest when the attention of kings and people ceased to be absorbed in the overwhelming excite- ment of a great religious war.

The constitution of Castile traced its origin back to the institutions of the Visigoths, which had been carried by the original refugees into the mountains of Asturias, but it had been profoundly modified by the circumstances under which the kingdom had risen to greatness. The war with the infidel, while it had given strength and unity to the monarchy, had at the same time compelled the granting of considerable independence to the nobles and the great towns. ‘The religious character of the war had enabled the clergy to retain greater powers than they possessed in any other European country, though they had lost that omnipotence which they had enjoyed under the Visigoths. Their councils and synods, which had once formed the sole constitutional machinery of the country, had been

superseded by the secular assembly of the cortes. The early' history of the cortes is wrapped in great obscurity, but its main outlines are fairly discernible. Originally a meeting of the great nobles and royal house- hold, it had attained the position of a national assembly in 1162, when the deputies of the chief towns were admitted to membership. Its powers and procedure developed gradually, and naturally varied according to the character of the different kings. Its first functions were the approval of legislation and the granting of extraordinary taxation, though it is difficult to say when its sanction of such measures was regarded as essential. The assembly consisted of the three estates—clergy, nobles, and citizens —who deliberated sometimes separately and sometimes together. Representation existed only in the case of the third estate, whose members were elected at first by all free citizens and afterwards by the municipal magistrates. The number of cities which sent deputies varied very much at different times. As to what constituted the right of attendance in the case of the nobles and clergy there is great obscurity, but it probably depended partly upon tenancy-in-chief and partly upon royal summons. As both classes were exempt from taxation, their functions were less important than those of the third estate, and on more than one occasion we find meetings of the cortes in which the upper orders took no part. The weakness of the assembly, as contrasted with the English parliament, lay mainly in the absence of any class like the knights of the shire to form a link between the burgesses and the great nobles. In early times, probably the most effective check upon the royal power lay in the independent §privi- leges claimed and exercised by the chief feudatories. Their tenants were bound to feudal service; and the right of private war made them petty sovereigns on their own estates. The long feud of the families of Castro and Lara is only a notable example of the difficulties which the central power had to contend with. For the protec- tion of their privileges, both nobles and towns claimed

the right of forming an armed union or hermandad, which resembled the right of "confederation" exercised in later times by the nobles of Poland. The ordinary adminis- tration, except when war was going on, was local

rather than central. The nobles had judicial powers within their domains, though it appears that these were granted by the crown rather than derived from their territorial position. The bishops and higher clergy administered ecclesiastical jurisdiction as in other countries, and at the same time exercised the same powers as the secular lords over the large estates which the piety or superstition of generations of benefactors had conferred uponthem. ‘The connexion with Rome, though established in the 11th century, had not become very close before the middle of the 12th century ; the appointment to most of the benefices was in the hands of the crown, and the church of Castile was more independent even than that of England. In the cities and great towns, most of which included a consider- able extent of adjacent territory, the administration both of justice and of local affairs was in the hands of elected corporations, which had received grants of liberties at the time when they had served as important outposts against the attacks of the infidel. In theory, probably, there existed in all cases a right of appeal to the crown, but this was a right which, in the nature of things, was rarely exercised. The attempt of subsequent kings to control or supersede the local administration of justice by the appointment of corregidores was always resisted as an encroachment upon traditional liberties. Even the taxes, though granted by a central assembly, were assessed and collected by the local officials, and jealous care was taken to secure that they should only be applied to the purpose for which the grant had been made.

Ferdinand [IL, “The Saint,” was succeeded in 1252 Alfonso The new king gave the Wise, |

by his son, Alfonso X., ‘The Wise.” up the military policy of his father, and the only territorial acquisition of his reign, the province of Murcia, was won for him by the arms of Aragon. On the other hand, he was a great student and patron both of literature and science, especially of astronomy. He invited to his court the most distinguished scholars not only in Christian but also in Arabic lore, and he raised the university of Salamanca to rank with the great schools of Paris and Oxford. He also turned his attention to legislation, and his code, the Svete Partidas, is one of the great legislative monuments of an age which produced the L¢ablissements of St Louis and the great statutes of Edward I. Com- piled under the influence of the civil and canon laws, the Stete Partidas was in some respects disadvantageous,

especially as admitting papal encroachments upon the ecclesiastical power of the crown. Though drawn up under Alfonso X., it did not finally supersede the ancient fueros until 1348, when it was formally approved by the cortes. But Alfonso's reign, though distinguished in the history of literature and law, was not on the whole a prosperous period for Castile, and it was to a great extent his fault that the opportunity of driving the Moors from the Peninsula was allowed to slip. On the fall of the Hohenstaufen he came forward as a candidate for the imperial dignity, and through the period known as the "oreat interregnum " he and Richard of Cornwall, chosen by rival parties among the electors, bore the empty title of king of the Romans. The expense of bribing the electors and of maintaining a magnificent court involved Alfonso in pecuniary difficulties and compelled him to alienate his subjects by imposing heavy taxes and by debasing the coinage. But the hardships inflicted on the country by the king's futile ambition were as nothing compared with those which arose from a disputed succes- sion to the crown. By the old custom of Castile nearness

Sancho IV.

Ferdinand infant son Ferdinand IV. (1295-1312).

| TA

CASTILE, 1252-1479. |

of blood gave a superior claim to priority of descent, so that the second son of a king would be preferred to the children of the eldest son. The Siete Partidas recognized the more modern rule of succession ; but, as that code had not yet been accepted by the cortes, its ruling had no bind- ing force. The question arose in 1275, when Alfonso's eldest son, Ferdinand de la Cerda, perished in a campaign against the Moors, leaving two sons, Ferdinand and AI- fonso. The king's second son, Sancho, was at once declared heir to the crown, but the widow, Blanche, announced her intention to uphold the rights of her children, and she received support both from Pedro IIL. of Aragon and from her brother, Philip III. of France. A long war followed, which was further complicated when Alfonso X., having quarrelled with his son, proposed a partition between the rival claimauts. So far did the dispute go that the Moors, instead of being attacked in Granada,

were called upon to give their assistance to the factions among their enemies.

The result of these internal quarrels was to increase the already excessive power of the noble families, and this was productive of further disturbances in the reign of Sancho IV. (1284-1295). The family of Castro seems to have sunk into comparative insignificance, but the Laras had found a new rival in the house of Haro. The whole state was divided by their feuds, and the king found himself degraded from the position of arbiter to that of a partisan. The condition of affairs became even worse when the death of Sancho gave the crown to his In an early stage of society a minority is always an evil, and Castile at this period had more than a fair share of such misfortunes. The crown was contested, not only by the late king's brother John, but also by Alfonso de la Cerda, who returned from France to maintain a claim which had already been negatived by the accession of Sancho. The king of Aragon supported Alfonso, while the rulers of Portugal and Granada mixed themselves up in the quarrel to obtain advantages for themselves. The regency had been bequeathed by Sancho to his widow, Maria de Molina, but her marriage had been declared uncanonical by the pope, so that a slur was cast upon the legitimacy of her son. Nothing but the great skill and capacity dis- played by the regent could have secured victory under such discouraging circumstances. By mingled submission and defiance she disarmed one opponent after another, induced the pope to ratify her marriage, and finally suc- ceeded in transferring the government to her son on his coming of age. Ferdinand's harshness provoked a renewal of the conflict ; but ultimately the treaty of Camillo (1305) put an end to the struggle, and compensated the princes of La Cerda with lavish cessions of territory. Alfonso preferred to remain an exile rather than to abandon his claims, but his son accepted the proffered conditions and became the founder of the great house of Medina Sidonia. But the treaty made little difference to the country. Disorder and civil war had become a chronic disease in Castile, and Ferdinand IV. was himself too deeply imbued with the spirit of the age to maintain peace with a strong hand. The story that is told about his death illustrates his character. In spite of a solemn promise made twice during his reign that every accused person should have a fair trial, he ordered two brothers of the name of Carvajal to be put to death without the pretence of judicial forms. They summoned him to appear

before the supreme tribunal within thirty days, and on one morning within that period he was found dead in his bed. ‘The cause of his death was never ascertained, but the people regarded the event as a judgment, and he has received from this story the name of “The Summoned” (Zl Emplazado).

Ferdinand IV.’s death was followed by another and still

longer minority, as his son, Alfonso XI. (1312-1350), Alfonso The regency was XL

was only two years old at the time. claimed by the late king’s brother Don Pedro and by his uncle Don John, and from this dispute arose a civil war fiercer and more destructive than any of its predecessors. The central authority ceased to exist; both nobles and towns had to protect themselves as best they could; the royal domains were seized upon by rapacious neighbours, and the person of the young king was only saved by his being concealed in the cathedral of Avila. At last the mediation of the pope and of Maria de Molina brought about a compromise, and the administration was divided between the two regents,—Pedro taking the south-eastern and John the north-western provinces (1315). But a few years later they were both killed in a joint campaign against the emir of Granada, and the disorders broke out with worse violence than ever (1319). Four “ infants,” as the members of the royal family were called, contended for the government, and the assumption of power by the king himself at the age of fifteen failed to put a stop to their feuds. The character of Alfonso XI. was as harsh and brutal as was to be expected in a man who had been educated in such troubled times. He invited his cousin, a younger Don John, to a banquet in the royal palace, and treacherously murdered him. His treatment of his first wife, whom he divorced in order to marry a daughter of the king of Portugal, provoked her father, Don John Emanuel, a nephew of Alfonso X., to head a rising which took years to suppress. The Portuguese princess was also repudiated by her husband, who had been inspired with a passion for the beautiful Eleanor de Guzman, and the forces of Portugal were added to those of the Castilian rebels. After a long struggle (1335-1337) Alfonso XI.

succeeded in reducing his opponents to submission, while he conciliated Alfonso IV. of Portugal by restoring his daughter to her position as queen. The restoration of unity was extremely opportune, as Spain was threatened at this moment by a new invasion from Africa. Abu ’] Hakam, the head of the Merinids and emir of Fez, crossed over to Gibraltar with a huge army in 1339, and was acknowledged as suzerain by the ruler of Granada. Assistance was obtained both from Aragon and Portugal, and in 1340 Alfonso XI. marched to the relief of Tarifa, which was besieged by the Moors. On the banks of the Salado the Christians won a great victory, which destroyed the last chance of a revival of the Mohammedan power in Spain. Abu 7] Hakam fled to Africa, and in 1344 Alfonso concluded a glorious war by the reduction of Algesiras. . In the hope of cutting off all connexion between Granada and Africa, Alfonso laid siege to Gibraltar in 1350, but before he could accomplish his design he was carried off by the Black Death. His victories over the infidel have led the Spanish historians to gloss over the acts of cruelty and treachery which have left an ineffaceable stain upon his character. His reign, troubled as it was, constitutes an important epoch in the history of Castilian liberties. In 1328 he issued two laws which formed the firmest basis of the powers of the cortes. He recognized the right of that assembly to be consulted in all important matters of state, and he solemnly pledged himself and his successors not to impose any new tax without its approval and consent. These concessions were to some extent counterbalanced by his restriction of the right of electing deputies to the regidores or magistrates of each city. This narrowing of the franchise was a great blow to the popular rights, and it gave the crown facilities for tamper- ing with the elections which were frequently abused in later days. But at the time the municipal magistrates enjoyed considerable independence, and for several genera- tions the cortes showed no signs of subservience. In fact

Alfonso’s position made him dependent upon the support of the citizens against the great lords, so that he was not likely to aim at diminishing the power of the former class. Another important event of the reign was the

granting by the cortes, for the expenses of the Moorish war, of the alcavala, a tax of a twentieth upon every sale of real or personal property. This tax, one of the most ruinous that can be conceived, illustrates the want of economical insight in the 14th century, and was destined in later times to seriously impede the industrial and commercial development of Spain.

The atrocities of Alfonso XI.'s reign sink imto insignifi- cance when compared with those committed by his son and successor, Pedro I. (1850-1369). The story of the latter's rule is mainly derived from the narrative of his avowed enemies, but there is no reason to doubt the substantial accuracy of the charges which have given him the name of "The Cruel." Some of his actions may perhaps be attri- buted to a politic desire to destroy the ascendency of the great nobles, whom the priuces of the royal house had often headed against the crown; but most of them can only be explained by a thirst for bloodshed which almost amounted to mania. He ascended the throne at the age of sixteen, and was at once urged by his mother Maria of Portugal to avenge the wrongs which she had endured at the hands of her rival, Eleanor de Guzman. 'The unfortunate Eleanor was strangled in prison, and her sons could only secure safety by flight. The eldest, Henry of Trastamara, found a refuge first in Portugal and afterwards in France. A wife was now found for the young king in Blanche, daughter of the duke of Bourbon, in the hope of strengthening his throne by a French alliance. But Pedro had formed a connexion with Maria de Padilla ; and, when he was at last induced to go through the marriage ceremony with Blanche, he quitted her immediately to return to his mistress, whose brothers he advanced to the chief offices of state. A conspiracy of nobles, headed by Alfonso of Albuquerque, lately the king's favourite, was suppressed with ruthless severity. Pedro now concluded a second marriage with Juana de Castro, although Blanche was still living, but he again returned to Maria de Padilla. Another conspiracy, backed up by the pope and the French king, was more successful. After standing a long siege in Tordesillas, Pedro was compelled to concede the demands of the coalition and to acknowledge Blanche as his lawful queen. But his submission was only feigned. Seizing the opportunity of a hunting-party to escape from the imprisonment in which he was kept at Toro, he rallied a mercenary arnly round him and took terrible vengeance upon his opponents (1355-56). Henry of Trastamara, who had joined in the rising, escaped to France, where he took part in the war against the English.

It would be wearisome to catalogue the long list of cruelties, begin- ning with the murder of the unfortunate Blanche of Bour- bon, of which Pedro was guilty during the next ten years. It seems almost incredible that such a monster should have been allowed to reign in a country which had already shown so much independence as Castile. But several causes combined to secure him against deposition. In the first place, it was upon the nobles and the Jews that his hand fell with such severity, while to the citizen class he was on the whole a lenient ruler. This explains why it was that the cortes made little or no opposition when he endeavoured to secure the succession to his own children. In 1362 he solemnly swore that he had been lawfully married to Maria de Padilla, and his four children by her were recognized as heirs to the crown. His son Alfonso, however, died in the same year, and only two daughters, Constance and Isabella, survived their father. Another point in Pedro's favour was the outbreak in 1356 of a war

with Aragon, which lasted almost without intermission for the rest of the reign, and in the course of which the Aragonese king was joined by Henry of Trastamara. Much as the Castilian nobles hated Pedro, they hated Aragon still more, and they were unwilling to accept a king who might seem to be forced upon them by the neighbouring kingdom. 'This war was ina way harmful to the interests of both kings. They were both eager to depress the powerful nobles in their territories, but their continued hostilities only enabled these nobles to extend their power. On more than one occasion this community of interest was on the verge of leading to an agreement which would probably have excluded the house of Trasta- mara for ever from Castile, but each time national and personal enmity combined to revive the quarrel. Though Castile was larger and possessed of more resources than. its rival, the presence of a large number of Castilian exiles in Aragon made the combat fairly even. But in 1365 Henry of Trastamara obtained new and more formidable auxiliaries. Charles V. of France, who was now beginning to reorganize that country after the English wars, was only too glad to allow the disorderly bodies of disbanded soldiers to seek employment in Spain under the leadership of Bertrand du Guesclin. To these formidable enemies

Pedro did not venture to offer resistance, and fled to Bayonne, while his half-brother Henry was everywhere acknowledged as king (1366). But Pedro succeeded in convincing the Black Prince of the justice of his cause and of the impolicy of allowing the French king to gain over- whelming influence in the Peninsula. Before the end of the year Edward's army had crossed the Pyrenees, a number of English mercenaries in Du Guesclin's service deserted to the banner of their old leader, and in April 1367 was fought the great battle of Najera or Navarrete, near Logrofio. Du Guesclin was taken prisoner; Henry of Trastamara fled to France; and Pedro was restored to his throne. But the Castilian king had learnt no wisdom from adversity. His barbarity disgusted his allies, who were further alienated by his failure to furnish his promised supplies. The fever had already begun to decimate his troops and to weaken his own health when the Black Prince quitted Castile. His departure gave another opportunity to Henry of Trastamara, who had obtained fresh reinforcements from Charles V. In 1369 the battle of Montiel was decided in Henry's favour. Pedro was taken prisoner, and was killed in a personal struggle with his rival, into whose tent he was brought. His two surviving daughters had been left as hostages at Bordeaux, and were married to two brothers of the Black Prince, —John of Gaunt, and Edmund Langley, duke of York.

Henry II. (1369-1379) was of illegitimate birth, and Henry II

his marriage with the heiress of the La Cerdas was hardly sufficient to remove all doubts as to his claim to the succession. But within his kingdom he met with little opposition. The Castilians were glad to settle down under an orderly government after the late reign, and the few malcontents exiled themselves to join the foreign claimants of the throne. The most important of these was Pedro I. of Portugal, whose grandmother belonged to the legitimate line of Castile, and John of Gaunt, who came to Spain to vindicate the rights of his wife Constance. Pedro I. proved for a time a formidable enemy. He allied him- self with the Moors, who seized the opportunity to recover Algesiras, and with the king of Aragon, who annexed the border districts of Castile. But Pedro was an incapable warrior, and soon abandoned his own claim to obtain the English support by acknowledging John of Gaunt. But this enabled Henry to renew his alliance

with France, and with the help of French troops he invaded Portugal, besieged Lisbon, and compelled Pedro to make peace.

John I.

Henry TKI,

CASTILE, 1252-1479. |

Two years later a treaty was concluded with the king of Aragon, by which his conquests were restored. For the remainder of his reign Henry's throne was secure, and he left the kingdom in peace to his son John I. (1379-1390). The chief interest of the new reign centres round the relations with Portugal. The first renewal of the war was the work of the Portuguese king Ferdinand, who again supported the English claims upon Castile. But the alliance with England was not popular in Portugal, and in 1383 a treaty was concluded, which, however, proved productive rather of evil than of good. Beatrix, the only daughter of Ferdinand, was married to the Castilian king , and it was agreed that her children, whether male or female, should succeed to the throne of Portugal. A few months later Ferdinand died. Beatrix was at once pro- claimed queen, and her mother undertook the regency. But the idea of union with Castile, which would involve the subordination of the smaller kingdom, was intensely unpopular at Lisbon. A rising overthrew the authority of the queen-inother, and the administration was entrusted to John, a brother of the late king. John of Castile at once entered Portugal to enforce what he considered to be the rights of his wife. But his high-handed measures only added strength to the opposition, and made the new regent the leader of a national movement. In 1384 the Castilian forces laid siege to Lisbon, which held out with obstinate resolution for five months, when the besiegers retired. Exulting in their success, the Portuguese determined to have nothing more to do with Beatrix; and an assembly of the cortes gave the crown to the regent John. The Castilian king now made a determined effort to uphold his failing cause, but at the great battle of Aljubarrota (August 1385) his army suffered a crushing defeat. It was now the turn of the Portuguese to take the aggressive, and the arrival of Jolin of Gaunt enabled them once more to take up his cause. Jt was only the aid of France and the dislike of the Castilians for the foreign-bred Constance and her husband that enabled John to make head against his numerous enemies. In

1387 he succeeded in termin- ating the English part of the quarrel. His eldest son Henry, the first heir to the crown who received the title of prince of Asturias, was betrothed to Catherine, daughter of Constance, in whose favour John of Gaunt renounced all claims on behalf of his wife (1387). The war with Portugal now sunk into a chronic struggle on the frontier, but was still going on when John I. died in 1390.

With the accession of Henry ITI. (1390-1406), a boy of eleven, Castile was again face to face with the difficulties of a minority, and these were the more formidable on account of the absence of any prince of the blood-royal to assume the regency. By the will of the late king the administra- tion was entrusted to a council to be formed by joint representation of the three estates. But the composition of this body was altered so as to give more power to the great nobles and prelates, and their quarrels soon involved the kingdom in the troubles of a civil war, from which it had been comparatively free in the last two reigns. Luckily for Castile, the young king, who assumed the government in 1393, showed himself to be a man of equal insight and resolution. By throwing himself boldly upon the support of the third estate, and by giving them the predominance in the cortes, he succeeded in taking efficient measures against the nobles. All domain-lands which had been alienated during his minority had to be restored, and all confederations among the barons were

declared illegal and dissolved. The discontent which

these measures provoked was promptly suppressed before it could develop into insurrection. At the same time the country enjoyed the blessings of external peace. Henry’s marriage with Catherine of Lancaster secured him against

hostilities not only from England but also from Portugal, whose queen was Catherine’s sister. Unfortunately for the kingdom which he ruled with such wisdom and success, Henry III. died in 1406 at the early age of twenty-seven, leaving an infant son to succeed him.

The minority of John II. was the most orderly period John II.

of his reign (1406-1454). The government was wielded by the able hands of his uncle Ferdinand, to whom the Castilians would have given the crown if he had been willing to supplant his nephew. Even after his accession to the throne of Aragon in 1412 he continued to give his advice to the queen-mother. The administration during these years was strong and orderly. The fortress of Antequera was taken from the Moors, and the Castilian nobles were kept in the same subjection as in the late reign. A new and disastrous period commenced in 1417, when the death of his mother transferred the reins of government to John II. at the age of fourteen. Averse to the cares of business and absorbed in personal pleasures, the young king was only too ready to allow himself to be guided by any one who would take the responsibility of rule upon his own shoulders. Before many years had elapsed he had fallen completely under the influence of Alvaro de Luna, grandmaster of the order of St James and constable of Castile. The minister, possessed of all the qualities which would have endowed a great monarch, set himself to increase the royal power. Not only were the nobles depressed to a condition of impotence which they had never yet experienced, but steps were also taken to diminish the powers of the third estate. Many of the lesser towns in Castile, as in England at the same period, found that the right of representation involved pecuniary burdens which they were eager to get rid of. This made it easy for the minister to reduce the number of towns sending deputies to the cortes to some seventeen or eighteen of the larger cities. This diminution of the third estate, though not resented, was an insidious blow at its real interests, and made it easy for Charles V. and his successor to reduce the cortes to impotence. The arbitrary government of John II., which might have been endured if it had been really directed by the king himself, was intolerable to the nobles when it was known to be inspired by his minister. The reign is filled by a series of conspiracies, in which the domestic malcontents found powerful allies in John II.’s cousins, Jolin and Henry of Aragon. But Alvaro de Luna was a warrior as well as a politician, and succeeded in foiling all direct attempts to effect his overthrow. His ultimate fall was due to the ingratitude of the king whom he had served too well. John’s second wife, Isabella of Portugal, disgusted at the small amount of influence which the minister allowed her to exercise, set herself to effect his overthrow. Once deprived of the royal favour, Alvaro de Luna had no further support to rest upon. The very absolutism which he himself had built up was turned against him, and he was executed

after a trial which was notoriously unfair. A year later John II. followed him to the grave, and the

crown passed to his son, Henry I’V., the feeblest sovereign Henry that ruled in Castile before the 17th century. His mind IV.

was as feeble as his body, and the contempt of his sub- jects has fixed upon him the title of “The Impotent.” His first favourite, the marquis of Villena, was supplanted, after Henry’s marriage with Joanna of Portugal, by Beltran de la Cueva, whom scandal declared to be the queen’s paramour. The birth of a daughter did nothing to check these rumours, and the unfortunate infanta was only known as “la Beltraneja.” The government was not exactly oppressive, but it failed to command respect, and personal jealousies and ill-feeling were sufficient to pro- duce a revolt. The leaders were the marquis of Villena XXIL — 41

Isabella.

ARAGON

(1213- 1479).

Consti- tution.

o22

and Carillo, archbishop of Toledo, both of whom had objects of their own to serve. In 1465 the rebellion broke out, and its first act was the formal deposition of Henry at Avila, after an absurd ceremony in which the king was represented by a puppet. The conspirators denounced the infanta Joanna as illegitimate, and offered the crown to Henry’s brother Alfonso. In the course of the civil war which followed, Alfonso died (1468), and his partisans at once put forward the claims of his sister Isabella. But the infanta, who already displayed a wisdom and moderation beyond her years, refused to be involved in hostilities with her elder brother, and she succeeded in arranging a treaty by which she was recog- nized as Henry IV.’s heiress. The king himself struggled

hard to evade these conditions, and after his death in _

1474 Joanna’s cause was espoused by her uncle, Alfonso V. of Portugal. But Isabella succeeded in securing her accession to the throne, and her marriage with Ferdinand of Aragon, by paving the way for the union of the two kingdoms, begins a new period in which for the first time there is a real history of united Spain.

The kingdom of Aragon which we left in the reign of James the Conqueror (1218-1276), consisted of the three provinces of Aragon, Catalonia, and Valencia. ach pro- vince retained its own laws and institutions, and Valencia and Catalonia regarded with the keenest jealousy any attempt to govern them on the principles which prevailed in Aragon. The powers of the crown were far more limited than in the neighbouring kingdom of Castile. The great nobles, or 7%cos hombres, formed a small and exclusive class, whose privileges made them almost the equals of the monarch. All conquests had to be divided between them, and the king was forbidden to confer a fief or honour upon any person outside their ranks. They possessed and exercised the right of private war, and were entitled at will to renounce their allegiance to their sovereign. ‘The smallness of their numbers made them much more united than the nobles of Castile, and propor- tionately more formidable. The difference between the two kingdoms was recognized by Ferdinand the Catholic with his usual acuteness when he said that “it was as difficult to divide the nobles of Aragon as it was to unite those of Castile.” But the privileges of the nobles, great as they were, were not the only check upon the royal power. Each province had its own cortes, which possessed from a very early date the right of granting taxes and approving legislation. In Valencia and Catalonia the cortes consisted, as in Castile, of the ordinary three estates ; but in Catalonia, where a maritime life had in- spired the inhabitants with a passionate love of freedom, the commons enjoyed a predominance which was hardly to be paralleled in any other country in the Middle Ages. The cortes of Aragon, which were more important, and whose history has been more carefully elucidated, consisted of four estates or arms (brazos). Besides the great prelates and the ricos hombres, both of whom had the right of appearing by proxy, there was a separate chamber of smaller landholders. This contained the infanzones, or lesser tenants-in-chief, and the caballeros or knights, who were tenants of the greater barons

but whose military rank gave them the right of personal attendance. The fourth chamber alone was representative, and consisted of the deputies of the towns. Their presence is first men- tioned in 1133, thirty years before anything is heard of popular representation in Castile. Their numbers were naturally small, as the kingdom was of very limited extent, but it seems to have been early established that a town which had once sent deputies was permanently entitled to the privilege, and this preserved them from having their rights tampered with by the crown as was

done in Castile. Besides their legislative and taxative functions, the Aragonese cortes were also a supreme court of justice, and in this capacity were presided over by the justiciar, an official whose unique powers have attracted the attention of all writers on Spanish history. In its origin the office had nothing very remarkable about it, and it is only the peculiar circumstances of the kingdom which forced it into such prominence. The justiciar was not at first entrusted with any political functions, but the difficulty of adjusting the relations between the king and the barons led to his being called in as mediator. By the 14th century he had become almost the supreme arbiter in all constitutional questions. To him the people could appeal against any infraction of their liberties, while the king regarded him as his chief councillor and as the most efficient barrier against armed rebellion, which was the only alternative method of settling disputes between his subjects and himself. As the justiciar thus became the pivot of the constitution, it was of great importance to secure that he should exercise his functions with firmness and impartiality. As the ricos hombres were exempted from corporal punishment, he was always chosen from the lesser nobles or knights, and was made responsible to the cortes under penalty of death. The dignity of the office was enhanced by the character of its successive holders ; and the medieval history of Aragon abounds with instances of their fearless opposition to the crown and of their resolute resistance to despotism on the one hand and to anarchy on the other.

The glorious reign of James (I.) the Conqueror was disturbed towards its close by quarrels which arose from his scheme of partitioning his conquests

among his children. The death, however, of his youngest and favourite son put an end to these projects, and the most

important of the provinces passed into the hands of Pedro Pedro Under Pedro and his son and suc- IIL

III. (1276-1285). cessor Alfonso III. (1285-1291), attention was almost wholly diverted from internal affairs to the conquest of Sicily. By his marriage with Constance, the daughter of Manfred, Pedro could put forward a claim to succeed to the Hohenstaufen in Naples and Sicily, but it is not probable that he would have been able to make any use of the claim if the Sicilian Vespers (1283) had not thrown that island into his hands. The result was a long series of wars with the Angevin rulers of Naples, but the hold upon Sicily was steadily retained. These wars had a notable influence upon Aragonese history, as they compelled the kings to purchase the support of their subjects by concessions which could only with great difficulty have been extorted from them. Thus in 1283 Pedro III. granted the famous ‘‘ General Privilege,” the Magna Carta of Aragon. By this the crown formally laid down a number of rules to secure all classes against oppression. The General Privilege is quite as important a document as the English charter ; it is even more full and precise, and its numerous confirmations show that it was as highly prized. It had the additional advantage of being issued to a people already possessed of institutions sufficiently developed to employ and defend the national liberties. But if Pedro’s concessions were for the advantage of his country, his successor went to an extreme which was equally harmful.

In 1287 Alfonso III. signed the famous ‘Privilege of Alfonso Union,” by which his subjects were formally authorized to 11.

take up arms against their sovereign if he attempted to infringe their liberties. The right of revolt, while it is and must be the ultimate safeguard against oppression, becomes at once liable to abuse when it is formulated and discussed. The act of 1287 gave an unlimited licence to disorder, which could always disguise itself under the pretence of defending liberty. Until it was repealed

|”

James IJ.

Alfonso IV.

| Pedro | IV.

——

TO

fons0

ARAGON, 1213-1479. |

SPAIN

323

there was always a danger that the constitution would | from this moment the rebellion began to be split up by

succumb, not to the tyrannical usurpations of the crown, but to the selfish interests of the nobles.

On the death of Alfonso III. the crown passed to his brother James II. (1291-1327). The new king handed over Sicily to his younger brother Frederick, thus creating a separate dynasty in that island. In the hope of depressing the greater barons, James IT. strengthened the hands of the justiciar and sought to conciliate the clergy and citizens to the crown. By these steps he succeeded in avoiding any open conflict during his reign, and at the same time he sought to secure external unity by an edict which declared the three provinces of Aragon, Catalonia, and Valencia to be for ever indivisible (1319). But his successor, Alfonso IV. (1327-1336), did not hesitate to break this edict, in spirit if not in letter, by carving out great fiefs for his second wife, Eleanor of Castile, and her children. By this measure he gave rise to the difficulties, and indirectly to the triumphs, of his son, Pedro IV. (1336-1387). Pedro’s reign is a great epoch in Aragonese history, as to him is due the arrest of the tendencies which threatened to divide and destroy the kingdom. He began by recalling his father’s excessive grants to

his stepmother and his half-brothers. The intervention of Alfonso XI. of Castile on behalf of his sister failed to make any impres- sion upon the king, and it was only the pressing danger from the Moors, which was removed in 1340 by the Castilian victory on the Salado, that induced him at last to consent to a compromise. The same desire to unite all the possessions of the Aragonese crown is apparent in his treatment of the king of Majorca, James II., the descendant of James I.'s younger son, who had received from his father the Balearic Islands with Roussillon and Cerdagne as a vassal kingdom. As James If. showed inclination to evade his legal duties towards his suzerain, Pedro seized the first opportunity to pick a quarrel with him. In 1344 all the territories of the king of Majorca were declared to be united to Aragon; and, though James II. made an obstinate resistance, he met with little sup- port from his former subjects, and the hopeless struggle was ended by his death in 1348.

These high-handed measures not unnaturally excited the misgivings of the nobles of Aragon, whose privileges. were not likely to be very scrupulously respected by a prince with such an obvious sense of his own rights and duties. In 1347 chance gave them an eminent and capable leader. There was no law against female succession in Aragon, and there was the precedent of Queen Petronilla in its favour. On the other hand, there was a strong prejudice against it, and as arule preference had been given to males, although further removed from the direct line. Pedro IV. had an only daughter, Constance, and he was eager to secure the succession to her in preference to his brother James, who was popularly regarded as the heir to the throne. This unconcealed intention excited the indignation of James, who was already discontented at the harsh treatment of the king of Majorca. He had no difficulty in inducing most of the chief nobles, including his half-brothers, to form a "Union," which was also joined by several of the towns in their discontent at the projected settlement of the succession (1347). Pedro was taken by surprise and could only gain time by concessions. He promised to convoke annual meetings of the cortes, to choose his councillors with the approval of the estates, to revoke his will in favour of his daughter, and to recognize his brother as his heir. Soon after this agreement, which left the Union master of the situation, James died; and men were not slow in attributing his death to the machinations of the king.

This event was of the greatest advantage to Pedro, as it deprived his opponents of their leader, and

personal rivalries. The king and his advisers were not slow to avail themselves of the opportunity thus offered. The opposition was strongest in Aragon and Valencia, and Pedro succeeded in gaining over the Catalonians, who were always prone to act in isolation from the other provinces. With the troops thus acquired he met the army of the Union at Epila (1348) and won a complete victory. He followed up his success by destroying all the charters which gave any sanction to armed resistance to the crown, and especially the Privilege of Union of 1287. His elder half-brother Ferdinand, who had succeeded James as leader of the revolt and as heir-apparent to the throne, fled to Castile, but the chief nobles were severely punished, and the power of the crown was raised to a height which it had never before attained.

Thus Aragon, following the tendencies of the age, became centralized under a powerful monarchy, and the forces of feudal disunion received a final check. But Pedro IV. was far from establishing anything like a despotism. While destroying the Privilege of Union, he took a solemn oath to respect the political and personal liberties of his subjects, and enjoined the same oath upon his successors. At the same time he strengthened the powers of the justiciar, whose pre-eminence dates from this reign. The position of the king was immensely strengthened by the birth of a son, which destroyed the claims of his half-brothers. The later part of his reign was occupied with a war against Henry II. of Castile, which has been referred to above, and with resistance to James III. of Majorca, who made an unsuccessful effort to recover the territories of his father. Pedro concluded a second marriage with Sibilla, daughter of a Catalonian knight, and her influence involved him in a quarrel with his eldest son, whom he attempted to deprive of the office of lieutenant-general, which custom assigned to the heir to the throne. But he found that the authority of the justiciar was now strong enough to restrain the crown as well as the nobles. Dominic de Cerda, who now held the office, pronounced that the infant was legally entitled to the dignity from which he had been ousted, and compelled

the king to restore him. The brief reign of John [. John I.

(1387-1395) was mainly occupied with wars in Sicily and Sardinia. The expense which these involved, which was increased by the luxury of a magnificent court, excited the most lively discontent on the part of the cortes. The remonstrances of his subjects were resented by the king, but they were backed up by the authority of the justiciar, and John I. gave way so far as to banish the unpopular favourites from the court. On the king's death his daughters were passed over, and the crown was transferred

to his brother Martin, who was occupied in restoring the Martin.

Aragonese supremacy in Sicily. Under Martin a private war between the great families of Urrea and Luna was put down, and the dependence of the great nobles was more firmly secured. But the death in 1409 of the king's only son, Martin the younger, brought the kingdom face to face with the difficulty of a disputed succession. There were two male claimants,—the count of Urgel, a great- grandson of Alfonso IV., and the duke of Gandia, a grandson of James IJ. The former was the undoubted heir if the succession was absolutely limited to males, while the latter was advanced in years and could only bring forward the old contention of nearness to the royal stock. But, although precedent was in favour of the exclusion of females, there was no definite rule to prevent the succession of their male descendants. Of such claimants there were two,—Louis of Calabria, the son of John I.'s daughter Violante, and Ferdinand, infant of Castile, the son of Martin's sister Eleanor. Moreover.

Martin the younger had left an illegitimate son, Frederick, count of Luna, and if the question had arisen a century earlier, before the clergy had obtained so much power, it is probable that his claims would have been preferred. The question was still unsettled on the death of the elder Martin in 1410, with whom ended the male line of the counts of Barcelona, A prolonged civil war seemed inevitable, and for two years the kingdom endured the evils of an interregnum. If the dispute was to be settled by force of arms, the count of Urgel seemed likely to carry all before him, as he had the pretty unanimous support both of the Catalans and of the powerful family of Luna. But his followers, confident in their superiority, allowed themselves to indulge in acts of violence which alienated the more orderly

part of the population. The justiciar, Juan de Cerda, who had acted with such impartial firmness in the reign of John J., succeeded in forming a patriotic party which determined to settle the dispute by a legal decision. Jealousy of the De Lunas gave to this party the support of the rival house of Urrea. ‘hey succeeded in procuring the appointment of a joint commission of nine members,—three from the cortes of each province. After a careful examination of all the claims, the commissioners decided, on what principle it is difficult to determine, in favour of the infant Ferdinand, who was then acting as regent of Castile for his nephew John II. (1412). As far as ability and merit went, the choice was probably the best that could have been made. By mingled firmness and concession Ferdinand succeeded in restoring order and unity to the kingdom and its dependencies. A revolt headed by the disappointed count of Urgel in the next year was suppressed, and its leader was punished with the confiscation of his territories and perpetual imprisonment.

Thus the house of Trastamara succeeded in obtaining the crown of Aragon as well as that of Castile. Ferdinand 1., the first king of the new dynasty, did not live long to wield the sceptre which he had so fortunately acquired. On his death in 1416 the crown passed to his son Alfonso V. (1416-1458). The new prince played little part in Aragonese history, as his attention was almost wholly absorbed in the affairs of Italy. To his inherited posses- sions of Sicily and Sardinia he added the kingdom of Naples after a seven years’ contest with the Angevin claimant, René le Bon of Provence (1435-1442). From this time he never quitted his new kingdom, where his politic rule and his patronage of literature acquired for him the name of ‘The Magnanimous.” During his absence the government of Aragon was entrusted to his brother John, as lieutenant-general. The arbitrary char- acter of this prince, which is so clearly visible in his subsequent history, seems to have been foreseen by his subjects. In order to secure the justiciar from undue influence on the part of the crown, a law was made in 1442 that the office should be held for life, and that its occupant could only be dismissed by the king with the express approval of the cortes. In 1461 this provision was followed up by another law which directed that all complaints against the justiciar should be heard before a commission regularly chosen from the four estates.

The history of John, both as regent for his brother and later as king in his own right, centres round the family quarrels which finally led to a formidable rebellion against him. His first wife was Blanche, widow of Martin of Sicily and heiress of Navarre. This little kingdom, which comprised territory on both sides of the Pyrenees, had been more closely connected with France than with Spain since its separation from Aragon on the death of Alfonso I. (1134). In the 13th century it was united to the French crown by the marriage of Jeanne of Navarre with

the French king, Philip IV., but it again became independent on the death of Louis X. in 1315. His daughter Jeanne was the undoubted heiress of Navarre, and, though she was kept out of her rights by her uncles, Philip V. and Charles IV., she was allowed to succeed after their death. In 1329 she was crowned at Pamplona with her husband, Philip of Evreux. Her son, Charles the Bad (13849-1387), obtained an unenviable notoriety for the part which he played in French history during the troublous period of the English wars. His son, Charles III. (1387-1425), was a peace-loving prince, who devoted more attention to art and literature than to politics. The marriage of his daughter Blanche with John of Aragon brought the mountain-kingdom once more into close connexion with the western peninsula. By her marriage contract, Navarre was to pass on her death to her children and not to her husband, but a later agreement cnjoined her son, before assuming the sovereignty, to obtain “‘ the goodwill and approbation of his father.” When Blanche died in 1442, John seems to have considered that this later stipulation justified him in retaining the title of king of Navarre, though he entrusted the administration of the kingdom to his son, Charles of Viana. For some time no difficulty was made about this arrangement. Butin 1447 John married a second wife, Joanna Henriquez, a de- scendant of the royal family of Castile, and a few years later he sent Joanna to share the government of Navarre with his son. This appointment, coupled with the arrogant conduct of his stepmother, was regarded as an insult by Charles of Viana, who was not slow to remember that by right he was entitled to the crown. The old parties of Navarre, the Beaumonts and

Agramonts, seized the opportunity to renew their feuds,—the former espous- ing the cause of the prince, the latter that of the queen. Before long the dispute developed into civil war, and John marched into Navarre to assist his wife, who was besieged in Estella by her stepson. At Aybar the hostile forces met in open conflict, but the superior discipline of the royal troops gave them a complete victory, and Charles fell a prisoner into his father's hands (1452). The prince was released after a short imprisonment, but the recon- ciliation was only a hollow one. The birth of a son to Joanna Henriquez (1452), afterwards famous as Ferdinand the Catholic, was a serious blow to the interests of the elder son. The queen scarccly concealed her desire to secure the succession to her own child, and her influence over her husband was unbounded. Charles found that his defeat had given the supremacy in Navarre to the hostile party, and after a vain attempt to recover his power he went to Naples to appeal to his uncle Alfonso V. But his hopes in this quarter were destroyed by Alfonso's death in 1458. Sicily, and Sardinia passed to his brother John II., while Naples, as a private acquisition of his own, was bequeathed to his natural son Ferdinand. The Neapolitan barons, dreading the gloomy and tyrannical character of their new ruler, offered to support Charles of Viana as a candidate for the throne, but he refused to oppose his cousin, and retired to Sicily, where he spent the next two years in seclusion. In 1460 he was induced to return by the solicitations of his father, who seems to have been dis- quieted by the popularity which the prince had obtained among the Sicilians. The intrigues of Joanna were not long in exciting the old mistrust between father and son, and her hostility towards Charles was increased by his attempts to obtain the hand of Isabella of Castile, whom she had already fixed upon as a suitable bride for her own son Ferdinand. In 1461 Charles was induced to meet his father at Lerida, and was at once imprisoned. When asked about the cause of this arbitrary proceeding, John

Of his possessions, Aragon, John 1

=

i i

ARAGON, 1213-1479.]

only replied with obscure hints at a conspiracy. But his subjects were not prepared to acquiesce in this unnatural treatment of a prince whom they had learned to love and whom they regarded as their future ruler. The Catalans, always easily moved, rose in arms and marched upon Lerida, and it was only by a hasty retreat that John was able to escape with his court to Saragossa. But the revolt speedily spread from Catalonia to the other pro- vinces, and even to Sicily and Sardinia, while it found supporters in the king of Castile and in the faction of the Beaumonts in Navarre. Surrounded by enemies, John II. found it necessary to yield. He not only released his son, professing that he did so at his wife's request, but appointed him lieutenant-general of Catalonia and pro- mised not to enter that province without the permission of the cortes. But no sooner had Charles of Viana regained his liberty than he died, on September 23, 1461; and the circumstances led ready credence to be given to the suspicion that he had been poisoned during his captivity. The crown of Navarre now devolved by right upon Charles's elder sister Blanche, who had been married to and afterwards repudiated by Henry IV. of Castile. But she had incurred her father's enmity by the support which she had given to her brother; and John II. was not unwilling to curry favour with France by securing Navarre to his second daughter Eleanor of Foix, whose son Gaston had married a sister of Louis XI. The unfortunate Blanche was committed to the guardianship of her younger sister, and after two years of imprisonment in the castle of Orthez she died of poison. But Eleanor reaped little advantage from the crime which all historians impute toher. Her father retained the crown of Navarre till his death, and she only survived him a few weeks. She was succeeded by her grandson Francis Phoebus, but he only lived for four years, and his sister and heiress Catherine brought the crown of Navarre by her marriage to the French house of D'Albret, from which it was wrested by Ferdinand the Catholic in 1512. This third union with Aragon proved permanent, although the district north of the Pyrenees was subsequently annexed to France. Meanwhile the troubles of John II. were by no means removed by his son's death. In Aragon the young Fer- dinand was acknowledged as heir, and was then sent with his mother to Catalonia to receive the oath of allegiance from that province. But the Catalans rose again in rebel- lion, and besieged Joanna and her son in the fortress of Gerona. As John II. was unable to advance through the revolted province to his wife's relief, he purchased the assistance of Louis XI. by a promise of

200,000 gold crowns, as security for which he pledged the counties of Roussillon and Cerdagne (1462). The Catalans replied to this alliance by throwing off their allegiance to John and proclaiming a republic. As, however, Gerona was relieved by the French, and the royal troops succeeded in reducing several of the chief towns, they determined to appeal for foreign aid. The crown was offered first to Henry IV. of Castile and then to the constable of Portugal, who was descended from the old counts of Barcelona. On the death of the latter in 1466 the rebels turned to the traditional rivals of the house of Aragon, and offered the crown to René le Bon, the head of the Angevin house. René, whose life had been spent in putting forward claims which he had never been able to enforce, accepted the offer and sent his chivalrous son John of Calabria to assist the Catalans (1467). John II's fortunes were now at their nadir. He had lost his eyesight, and the death of his wife in 1468 deprived him of the companion and adviser who had for years directed and inspired his policy. John of Calabria, whose enterprise was secretly encouraged by the treacherous king of France, was steadily regaining

much of the ground which had been lost by the Catalans before his arrival. But the old king, whose sight was restored by a surgical operation, fought on with a dogged obstinacy worthy of a better cause. The death of the duke of Calabria in 1469 deprived his opponents of their leader, and from this moment their ultimate defeat was inevitable. The fall of Barcelona (1472) completed the reduction of Catalonia. But John did not venture to abuse the victory which he had so hardly won. He granted a general amnesty, and took a solemn oath to respect the constitution and liberties of the conquered province. The only notable event of the remaining years of John IT.'s reign was an attempt to recover Roussillon and Cerdagne. But Louis XI. kept a firm hold by arms upon the provinces which his diplomacy had won, and they were only restored to Aragon in 1493 when Charles VIII.

ceded them to Ferdinand the Catholic. In 1479 the death Ferdinand

of John IL., at the ripe age of eighty-two, transferred the 4 crown to his son Ferdinand, who ten years before had con- cluded his marriage with Isabella of Castile.

Literature.—Lafuente, Historia General de Espatia; Ortiz, Compendio General de la Historia de Espatia; Mariana, Historia General de Espatia; Lembke, Schafer, and Schirrmacher, Gesehichte von Spanien (down to 1295); Dozy, Histoire des Musulmans @ Espagne (to 1110); Desormeaux, Abrégé Chronologique de U Histoire d'Espagne. For the constitutional history the chief books of reference are—for Castile, Marina, 7'corta de las Cortes, and Sempére, Histoire des Cortés d' Espagne, and for Aragon, Blancas, Commentartt Rerum Aragonensium ; but a fair summary of their conclusions may be found in chapter iv. of Hallam's Middle Ages and in the introduction to Prescott's Ferdinand and Isabella. The history of the Castilian cortes has been recently elucidated by Don Manuel Colmeiro in his Cortes de los Antiguos Reinos de Leon y de Castilla (Madrid, 1883). The chief medieval chroniclers may be found, though not well edited, in Florez, Espatta Sagrada, and Schott, Hispania Jilustrata. (R. L:)

Section IV.—MopERN History.

The history of Spain asa united state dates from the Ferdinand

union of Castile and Aragon by the marriage of Isabella and Ferdinand. The marriage took place in 1469, before the accession of either sovereign. In 1474 the crown of Castile was claimed by Isabella on the death of her brother Henry IV., whose daughter Joanna was uni- versally believed to be illegitimate. It was contended by the partisans of Ferdinand that female succession was prohibited in Castile, and that he was entitled to the crown as the nearest male heir after his father. Ulti- mately the question was settled in Isabella's favour, and she obtained the most important rights of sovereignty, though the government was carried on in their joint names. It is possible that Ferdinand would have refused to accept this arrangement, if concerted action had not been necessary to oppose the party which espoused the cause of Joanna. A number of the Castilian nobles, headed by the marquis of Villena, dreaded the danger to the privileges of their order that might arise from the establishment of a strong government. They found an ally in Alfonso V. of Portugal, who was Joanna's uncle by the mother's side, and who cherished the design of obtaining the Castilian throne by a marriage with his niece. In 1476 the confederates were routed in the battle of Toro, and Alfonso departed to France with the chimerical plan of seeking

assistance from Louis XI. The treaty of St Jean de Luz between France and Castile in 1478 ruined these hopes, and in the next year Alfonso was compelled, by the treaty of Lisbon, to abandon the cause of his niece. This terminated the war of succession in Castile; and Joanna, known from her reputed father as La Beltraneja, retired into a convent. A few months before the treaty of Lisbon the death of John IL (January 20, 1479) gave to Ferdinand the succession to Aragon, | Sicily, and Sardinia. Navarre, which had been brought

Adminis- trative reforms.

to John II. by his first wife, passed to his daughter by that marriage, Eleanor, countess of Foix. Two provinces of the Aragonese crown, Roussillon and Cerdagne, had been pledged by John to Louis XI. of France, and were still retained by that monarch. The union of Castile and Aragon effected in 1479 was merely a personal union. Each province retained its own institutions and its own laws, and each would have resented the idea of absorption in the other.

The first care of the two sovereigns was to reform the system of government, especially in Castile, where the recent civil wars had given rise to serious disorders. One of their chief objects was to depress the nobles, whose privileges, acquired during the long struggle against the Moors, were inconsistent with a strong centralized govern- ment. In accordance with true policy and with the spirit of the age Ferdinand and Isabella sought to counterbalance the nobles by relying upon the burgher class. The Santa Hermandad, or Holy Brotherhood, which was organized in 1476, was a popular confederation of the whole kingdom for police and judicial purposes. Its affairs were managed by local courts,—from which appeals could be made to a supreme tribunal,—and by a general junta composed of deputies from all cities, which was convened once a year.

The increased prosperity of the country is well illus- trated by the steady rise of the revenue. “In 1474, the year of Isabella’s accession, the ordinary rents of the Castilian crown amounted to 885,000 reals; in 1477 to 2,390,078; in 1482, after the resumption of the royal grants, to 12,711,591;

and finally, in 1504, when the acquisition of Granada and the domestic tranquillity of the kingdom had encouraged the free expansion of all its resources, to 26,283,334, or thirty times the amount received at her accession. All this was derived from the customary established taxes, without the imposition of a single new one" (Prescott, ii. 575). No attack was made upon the liberties of the subjects; the cortes of Castile were frequently convened; the same towns were called upon to send deputies ; and the only innovation was the frequent neglect to summon the nobles. The numerous pragmaticas, or royal ordinances, were mostly limited to administrative matters or to the interpretation of the law. The credit for the domestic administration rests mainly with Isabella. Ferdinand busied himself more with military and diplomatic affairs, and comparatively few innovations were made in Aragon. The Hermandad was introduced, and in some other points the example of Castile was followed. But the advanced constitutional liberties of Aragon were uncongenial to Ferdinand. He summoned the cortes as rarely as possible ; and when that assembly

met he spared no pains to influence its composition and its decisions. The centralizing tendencies of the reign were carried still further in both provinces in the later period when Ximenes, who became archbishop of Toledo in 1495, exercised the chief influence. Five councils were entrusted with the administration of affairs :—the "royal council," the chief court of justice; the 'council of the supreme" for ecclesiastical business ; the "council of the orders" for the great military fraternities; the "council of Aragon" for the management of that kingdom and of Naples; and the "council of the Indies" for the great discoveries of Columbus and his companions.

The political unity of Spain was to be based upon its religious unity. Both Ferdinand and Isabella were imbued with that stern spirit of orthodoxy with which the Spaniards were inspired by their long crusade against the infidel. No institution of their reign was so important as the Inquisition, which was authorized by a bull of Sixtus IV. in 1478, and constituted for the two kingdoms in 1483 under the presidency of Torquemada. Its extension to

Aragon was bitterly protested against by the liberty- loving people, but was forced upon them by the iron will of Ferdinand. The activity of the Holy Office was at first directed against the Jews, whose obstinate adherence to their faith in spite of persecution was punished by an edict for their expulsion in 1492. Their departure deprived Spain of many industrious inhabitants ; but its importance has been much exaggerated by authors who have failed to notice that it was followed, not by the decline of Spain, but by the period of its greatest pro- sperity. In spite of their orthodoxy, however, Ferdinand and Isabella were by no means slavish adherents of the papacy. The claim of the popes to appoint to important benefices was strenuously resisted, and the chief control of ecclesiastical affairs was successfully vindicated for the crown.

The steady extension of the royal power in Spain was due in no small degree, as Machiavelli has pointed out, to the constant succession of enterprises in which the attention of the nobles was absorbed. These enterprises may be summarized under three heads :—(1) the union of the Peninsula ; (2) the extension of colonial empire ; and (3) the acquisition of foreign territories.

(1) Under the first head the most important achievement was the final extinction of the Moorish power in Spain. The war which began in 1481 was carried on in a desultory manner for ten years, and was completed in 1492 by the conquest of Granada. The Moors, who had fought with the courage of despair, received very lenient terms from their conquerors. They were secured in the free exercise of their religion, and were allowed to retain their own laws, customs, and language. In some points, such as the trade with Africa, they obtained privileges which were not even shared by the Castilians. But the spirit of proselyt- ism was too strong in Spain to allow this treaty to be observed. The measures taken by Ximenes to bring about the conversion of the Moors provoked a revolt in 1500, which was put down with great severity. They were com- pelled to choose between conversion or banishment, and, although most of them accepted the former alternative, the Moriscoes, as they were now called, found themselves henceforward in the hopeless position of a proscribed and hated minority. In 1493 Ferdinand extorted from the fears and hopes of Charles VIII. of France the restoration of Roussillon and Cerdagne by the treaty of

Barcelona. In 1512, after Isabella's death, he annexed Navarre. 'The whole Peninsula was now united, with the exception of Portugal, and steps had been taken for the acquisition of that kingdom by marriage. Isabella, Ferdinand's eldest daughter, was married to Alfonso, the son and heir of

Religious |

unity.

Union of || the Pen- |}

insula.

/ Death of

| Wabella. time by the dcath of Isabella.

FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.|

John IT. of Portugal. After the death of that prince his widow married Emanuel, who succceded to the Portuguese erown in 1495. Isabella herself died in giving birth to a son, but the connexion was still maintained by the marriage of Emanuel to her younger sister Mary. The fruits of this persistent policy were not reaped, however, till the reign of Philip IT.

(2) Maritime discovery was the task of the age, a task

. forced upon it by the Turkish occupation of the Levant,

which had closed the old commercial routes to the East. The foremost pioneers in the work were the Portuguese and Spaniards, whose efforts brought them into rivalry with each other. The treaty of Lisbon in 1479 secured the western coast of Africa to Portugal, but enabled Spain to complete the annexation of the Canaries. The Spaniards now turned further westwards, and a wholly uew problem was created by Columbus's discovery of the West Indies in 1492. His voyage had been undertaken under the patronage of Isabella, and the new territories were regarded as pertaining to Castile. To solve any difficulties that might arise, a bull was obtained from Alexander VI. in 1493, which granted to Spain all dis-

coveries west of an imaginary line drawn 100 leagues to the west of the Azores and the Cape Verd Islands. As this arrangement excited Portuguese discontent, it was modified by a treaty at Tordesillas in 1494, which removed the boundary line to 370 leagues west of the Cape Verd Islands. This modification had important results for the Portuguese, as giving them their subsequent claim to Brazil. In the meanwhile Spain redoubled its exertions. In 1498 Columbus landed on the continent of South America, and in a few years the whole western coast was explored by subsequent adventurers. In 1512 Ponce de Leon dis- covered Florida, and in the next year Balboa crossed the Isthmus of Darien and gazed for the first time upon the Pacific. No exertions were spared by the Government to encourage settlement in its new territories; but the regu- lations of colonial trade, and especially the provision that it should pass through the single port of Seville, were con- ceived in a narrow and selfish spirit which prevented the full development of their resources.

(3) The foreign affairs of the reign, which were almost wholly connected with Italy, were conducted by Ferdinand

- on behalf of Aragon, just as the extension of the colonies

was directed for the benefit of Castile. Charles VITII.'s invasion of Naples, which was ruled by an illegitimate branch of the house of Aragon, was undertaken in the full belief that the support or at least the neutrality of Spain was secured by the treaty of Barcelona. But Ferdinand, jealous of the rapid success of the French, seized the first pretext to disregard the treaty, and became a member of the league which was formed at Venice in 1495 against Charles. His troops, under the famous Gonsalvo de Cordova, took a prominent part in restoring Ferdinand Il. to the Neapolitan throne. With the accession of Louis XII. came a great change in Ferdinand's policy, and he determined to advance the claim to Naples which he himself possessed as the legitimate head of the Aragonese house. By the treaty of Granada in 1500 Naples was to be divided between France and Spain, and the reigning king Frederick could make no resistance to such over- whiclming forces. But a quarrel naturally arose about the terms of the partition, and by 1504 Gonsalvo de Cordova succeeded in expelling the French from Naples, which was henceforth annexed to the crown of Aragon.

In 1504 the unity of Spain was interrupted for a The successive deaths of the infant John (1497), of Isabella of Portugal (1498), and of her infant son Miguel (1500) had left the succes- sion in Castile to the second daughter, Joanna; she was

sPA IW

O27

married to the archduke Philip, con of Maximilian I, and ruler, through his mother Mary of Burgundy, of the Netherlands and Franche-Comté. Unfortunately Joanna, who was the mother of two sons, Charles and Ferdinand, had already given signs of that insanity which was to cloud the whole of her subsequent career. Philip, who had visited Spain in 1502, had then excited the distrust of his wife's parents, and Isabella by her will left the regency in Castile to her husband until the majority of their grandson Charles. But Ferdinand, in spite of his brilliant successes, was not popular among the Castilian nobles, who seized the opportunity to support the more natural claims of Philip to govern on behalf of his wife. Ferdinand showed his disgust by actions which threatened to undo all the previous objects of his policy. He con- cluded a treaty with Louis XII. in 1505, by which he undertook to marry the French king's niecc, Germaine de Foix. To her Louis resigned his claims upon Naples, but in case of her death without issue his share in the kingdom by the treaty of Granada was to revert to Irance. Thus Ferdinand was willing to gratify his spite and to perpetuate the division between Aragon and Castile, under the penalty of forfeiting his recent conquests in Italy. His second marriage was concluded in March 1506, and two months later he resigned the regency in Castile to Philip, and soon afterwards sailed to Naples.

But the division of the Peninsula was not destined to last long. On September 25 Philip died at the age of twenty-eight, and the devotion of Ximenes secured the restoration of the regency to Ferdinand. Joanna, who had been devotedly attached to her husband, lost all semblance of reason aftcr his death, and made no attempt to exercise any influence over the conduct of affairs. The remaining part of Ferdinand's reign is uneventful in the history of Spain. The government was carried on on the same system, but with more avowed absolutism, as during the lifetime of Isabella.

Ximenes, whose energies found insufficient occupation in the compilation of his Polyglott Bible and in the foundation of the university of Alcala de Henares, fitted out and headed an expedition to Oran in 1509, which resulted in extensive but short-lived con- quests in northern Africa. Ferdinand threw himself with more energy than ever into the current of European polli- tics. By joining the league of Cambray he wrested from Venice five important towns in Apulia which had been pawned to the republic by Ferdinand II. Asa member of the Holy League against France he succeeded in con- quering Navarre in 1512. Navarre had passed to the French family of Albret by the marriage of Catharine de Foix with Jean d'Albret, and it was the close connexion with France which gave Ferdinand a pretext for its invasion. In 1515 his new conquest was formally in- corporated with the kingdom of Castile. This was Ferdi- nand's last success; and he died on January 23, 1516. His will recognized Joanna as his heiress in Aragon, an his grandson Charles as the regent in both kingdoms. Until his arrival, the administration of Castile was entrusted to Cardinal Ximenes and that of Aragon to his own natural son, the archbishop of Saragossa.

With the death of Ferdinand begins the period of uninterrupted Hapsburg rule in Spain, which lasted for nearly two centuries. In the course of this period the monarchy obtained absolute authority, and Spain, after rising for a time to be the foremost state in Europe, sank to the position of a second- rate power, from which it has never since emerged. At first the condition of affairs was by no means promising for the crown. The unity of Spain, which had advanced with such rapid strides after the marriage of Ferdinand and Isabella, had been seriously shaken by the selfish policy pursued by the king since his

Death of

Ferdi-

d nand.

Hapsburg

rule

(1516- 1700)

328

wife’s death. Aragon and Castile were distinct kingdoms, and the former was again divided into the three provinces of Aragon, Catalonia, and Valencia, each of which had its own cortes, its own privileges, cherished traditions of independence. where divided against each other, and within each class jealousies and quarrels were frequent. The foreign possessions of the two crowns were a source of weakness rather than of strength. earliest opportunity to contest the possession of Navarre with Castile, and that of Naples with Aragon.

Charles The difficulties of domestic government were increased

1 by the fact that the prospective ruler was a youthful

(emperor foreigner, who had never visited Spain, and who was

oe completely ignorant of the customs and even of the language of the country. Charles had been born and

educated in the Netherlands, of which he had been nominal ruler ever since the death of his father in 1506. All his friends and advisers were Flemings, who cared nothing for Spanish interests and had already acquired an evil reputation for selfish greed. The first symptom of discontent in Spain was excited by Charles’s demand to be recognized as king, in utter disregard of his unfortunate mother. In Aragon the demand was unhesitatingly refused, but in Castile the vigorous measures of Ximenes secured Charles’s proclamation. ‘The regent, however, had great difficulties to face. The nobles, delighted to be rid of the strong government of Ferdinand, wished to utilize the opportunity to regain the privileges and independence they had lost. In this crisis the loyal devotion of Ximenes saved the monarchy. Throwing himself upon the support of the citizen class, he organized a militia which overawed the nobles and maintained order. A French invasion of Navarre was repulsed, and to avoid any danger from the discontent of the inhabitants all the fortresses of the pro- vince, with the single exception of Pamplona, were dis- mantled. These distinguished services were rewarded

with more than royal ingratitude by Charles, who came to Spain in 1517, and who allowed the aged cardinal to die on November 8 without even granting him an interview.

The young king soon felt the loss of so able and experi- enced an adviser. His Flemish ministers, with Chiévres at their head, regarded Spain as a rich booty to be plundered at will. The Castilians, the proudest nation in Europe, found all the places of honour and profit seized by greedy foreigners. The cortes had shown their loyalty by acknowledging Charles as joint-king with his mother and by granting him an unprecedented service of 600,000 ducats. But they had accompanied their grants with eighty-eight significant demands, which the young king accepted but made no pretence of fulfilling. In Aragon and Catalonia more difficulty was experienced. Nearly two years were wasted in obtaining the recognition of the royal title, and no supplies were forthcoming. Valencia was not visited at all, and the attempt to induce the people to do homage to a viceroy was a failure. A civil war broke out in the province between the privileged nobles and a germandada, or brotherhood, of the burgher class. ‘The Government exasperated parties by supporting each in turn, but ultimately threw in its lot with the nobles.

Meanwhile the death of Maximilian had given Charles the succession to the considerable Hapsburg territories in Germany, and in 1519 the German electors had chosen him to be king of the Romans. He was now the first prince in Europe; and it was necessary for him to leave Spain to look after his interests in Germany and to cement there alliances which he needed against the inevit- able hostility of France. But his elevation by no means increased his povularity in Castile. The Castilians had

and the most warmly- Classes were every-

France stood ready at the

already plenty of grounds for complaint in the rapacity of the Flemings and in Charles’s failure to perform his promises to the cortes. But these were as

nothing com- pared with the prospect that Castile might no longer be the primary state of their king, and that their revenues might be employed in the attainment of objects in which they had not the slightest interest. While opinions were thus excited, Charles, who had been reduced to great straits by his military preparations and his promises to the German electors, summoned the cortes to meet at Santiago (Compostella) in Galicia, and thence transferred them to Coruiia in order to embark as soon as he had obtained the supplies he needed. The place of meeting was carefully chosen so as to isolate the assembly and to expose it to royal influence or intimidation. The lead of

‘the opposition was taken by Toledo, which refused to

send its two deputies, as being too favourable to the crown, but sent other representatives to remonstrate with Charles and to encourage the other cities. They were driven from Corufia, and the deputies of Salamanca were excluded from the cortes. By these and similar means the desired grant was extorted. Charles hastened to quit Spain with the first favourable wind, leaving Adrian of Utrecht. as regent in Castile, and two native nobles in Aragon and Catalonia. His departure was really neces- sary for his other interests; but it must have seemed reckless to the Spaniards at a time when Valencia was in the flames of civil war and Castile was on the verge of rebellion. Before starting he had ordered the removal of the magistrates of Toledo, and had sent a new governor to reduce the city to obedience. The citizens, headed by a young noble, Juan de Padilla, resisted this order and raised the standard of insurrection. Other cities hastened to join the movement, and a central committee, known as the “Holy Junta,” established itself at Avila. The unfor- tunate regent, a churchman of distinguished piety and gentle character, found himself face to face with difficul- ties that would have taxed all the resources of Ximenes. His attempt to reduce Segovia by arms was a lamentable failure, and he had to confess his utter defeat by disband- ing his forces. The nobles, alienated by the appointment of a foreigner to the regency, made no attempt to check a movement against a Government they detested. The insurgents had matters their own way, and Padilla, advancing to Tordesillas, made himself master of the person of Joanna, in whose name it was intended to con- duct the government. But this move was less advan- tageous than it at first appeared. Joanna refused

to transact any business or to sign any document, and this public proof of her incapacity served to justify Charles's contention that he was the only possible ruler. The Castilians were not prepared to get rid of the monarchy, so that it was necessary for the rebels to consider the possibility of coming to terms with Charles. The " Holy Junta," which had moved from Avila to Tordesillas, drew up a series of demands, which, if acceded to, would have established a constitutional monarchy in Spain. But their envoys to Germany found it impossible even to secure an audience from the king, and meanwhile the failure of the insurrection was decided. The very ease with which the rebels had triumphed proved an evil, because it encouraged internal dissensions which opposition might have healed. Especially Burgos showed its jealousy of the leading position which had been assumed by Toledo. Class differences, the bane of every country in the Middle Ages, supplied the final stumbling-block. Many of the demands of the communes were diametrically opposed to the interests of the nobles, whose eyes were at last opened to the danger of their attitude of neutrality. Their chief grievance had been removed by Charles's appointment of

Rising o the com

munes. |

CHARLES 1.|

the admiral and constable of Castile as joint-regents with Adrian. An army was raised, and on the field of Villalar the forces of the communes were utterly defeated (April 23, 1522). Padilla, who had shown more enthusiasm than ability, was executed, and one city after another was reduced to submission. A portion of the victorious army was sent to the assistance of the nobles in Valencia, where the germandada was at last crushed. The return of Charles to Spain in June 1522 completed the triumph of the monarchy. In 1523 he convened the Castilian cortes, and compelled them to grant supplies before presenting their petitions for redress, thus establishing a precedent which was conclusive for the future.

Charles's reign belongs to the history of Europe rather than to that of Spain, and has been sufficiently treated else- where (see Cuarues V.). His enormous inheritance was increased by the successes of Cortes in Mexico

and of Pizarro in Peru, by his own annexation of the Milanese, and by his conquests in northern Africa. In the government of this vast empire Spain played an important but on the whole a subordinate part. Its soldiers and its subsidies were Charles's most effective weapons, and to render them more readily available it was necessary to depress still further the liberties of the country. The independence of the towns had been crushed at Villalar, but only by the intervention of the nobles; and these had now to pay the penalty of their selfish loyalty. In 1538, after Charles had for a time concluded his struggle with France by the truce of Nice, he proposed to raise supplies in Castile by an excise upon commodities. The nobles objected on the ground of their exemption from taxation, and the emperor had to give way. But he took his revenge by excluding them altogether from the cortes, which henceforth consisted only of thirty-six deputies from eighteen towns, a body that was powerless to oppose the wishes of the crown.

The vast enterprises in which Charles was involved ex- hausted his energies, and the failure of his policy in Ger- many reduced him to despair. In 1555-56 he resigned all his dignities, and ended his life in 1558 in retirement at Yuste. From this time the house of Hapsburg is divided into the two branches of Spain and Austria. Charles's brother Ferdinand became king of the Romans and obtained the German territories of the family, to which he

- had added the crowns of Bohemia and Hungary. Philip IL, Charles's only legitimate son, succeeded to the Spanish and Burgundian inheritance, with the addition of Milan. Philip IL, like his father, played a great part in European history (see Puinip II.), but with this important differ- ence that Castile was definitely the central point of his monarchy, and that his policy was absolutely directed by Spanish interests. In character and education he was a Spaniard of the Spaniards, and after 1559 he never quitted Spain. He gave the country a capital, which it had never yet possessed, by fixing his residence at Madrid. Castile, under the direct supervision of the king, was sub- jected to the most crushing despotism. Aragon, Catalonia, and Valencia were governed as mere provinces, in the same manner as Milan, Naples, and Sicily. The con- tinuance of the old divisions of the country, while it lessened its strength, was an immense advantage to the royal power. It was easy for the king to employ the forces of one province to crush the liberties

of the others. And Philip possessed a formidable weapon in the Inquisition, which he did not scruple to use for secular purposes. Political independence was crushed with the same relent- less severity as religious dissent. Hitherto Aragon had preserved its medieval privileges almost intact. The king was not entitled to the allegiance of the province until he had solemnly sworn to observe its “fueros.” For the decisions of the cortes unanimity was required, so

that each deputy had a practical right of veto. The authority of the justiciar rivalled that of the crown. It was natural that Philip should seize the first opportunity of attacking institutions which could thwart his will. In 1590 Antonio Perez (see Perrz), a minister who had incurred the king’s displeasure, fled to Aragon and appealed to its fueros for protection. Philip had him brought before the Inquisition, and when the people rose in defence of their liberties they were crushed by troops fron Castile. The justiciar was put to death, and his successors became nominees of the crown. The cortes were assembled in 1591 at Tarragona, and compelled to abolish the most obnoxious fueros. Their control over the judicial administration was abrogated, and the necessity of unanimity was only retained in certain specified cases, notably the granting of supplies. To avoid any danger from the few privileges that were left, a citadel was built in Saragossa for the reception of a royal garrison. The creation of a regular standing army completed the edifice of absolutism, while the militia which had been established by Ximenes was retained and extended for the suppression of local disorders.

Philip’s internal administration was everywhere success- ful in obtaining the objects which he set before himself, A rising of the Moors in the Alpujarras was crushed by the military ability of his famous half-brother, Don John of Austria. In 1580 a claim to the crown of Portugal, which Philip derived from his mother, was successfully asserted. Thus the unity of the Peninsula was at last completed, while the colonial territories of Spain were

immensely extended. Unfortunately, no attempt was made to conciliate the Portuguese to their new ruler. The kingdom was treated as a conquered province; all who had resisted the Spanish invasion were punished as traitors ; the native nobles were excluded from all share in the government, which was entrusted solely to Spaniards ; the commerce of the country was ruined by provisions which conferred a practical monopoly upon Spain. The result of this short-sighted policy was that the Portuguese stifled their discontent, and eagerly awaited the first opening for the recovery of their independence.

Outside Spain Philip's policy proved a complete failure. His religious: intolerance excited the revolt of the Nether- lands, which ended in the loss of the seven northern provinces. His grand schemes against England were utterly ruined by the destruction of the Spanish Armada. And, finally, his endeavour to establish a preponderant Spanish influence over France was foiled by the accession and triumph of Henry IV. The treaty of Vervins, by which he acknowledged his humiliating defeat, was almost the last act of Philip IL's reign, which ended with his death on September 13, 1598.

Philip II. left to his son and successor, Philip III., an empire which was noninally undiminished, as the inde- pendence of the United Provinces had never been recog- nized, and the war for their reduction was still going on. But the unwieldy mass was suffering from internal exhaustion. The resources of Spain and the New World had been squandered in the prosecution of schemes of ambition which had ended in failure. The attention of the people had been distracted from peaceful industry to the unprofitable occupation of war. The soldiery of Spain, once reckoned invincible, had lost their prestige in the marshes of Holland. The enormous taxes, from which nobles and clergy were exempted, fell with ruinous severity upon the productive classes. Castile had suffered most, because it was most completely subject. The provinces which retained their liberties longest were more prosperous, even though they had no share in the riches that were poured into Castile from the western colonies. But they,

too, had suffered from the king's reckless ambition and from an economic policy which followed the most glaring errors of the Middle Ages. Every other consideration had been sacrificed to the accumulation of specie, with the result that prices were forced up to an abnormal height, while the wealth of the country bore no proportion to the currency. The nobles were carefully excluded from all political affairs and ceased to take the slightest 'nterest in the administration. When this exclusion came to an end after Philip II.'s death, they appear as mere courtiers, rivalling each other in the extravagance of their expenditure, but contributing nothing to the efficiency of the state. The government had been centralized by suc- cessive kings, but it was carried on without either wisdom or impartiality. The administration of justice was venal and incompetent. The people had been deprived of their liberties, but they failed to receive compensation in increased order and security. Spain had to pay dearly for its period of glory. Its rapid decline in the 17th century was the inevitable penalty for the faults and errors of the 16th.

"God," said Philip IL, "who has been gracious in giving me so many States, has capable of governing them." His successor was the natural product of his father's system : the exhaustion of Spain was inevitably accompanied by the degeneracy of its rulers. Philip IZ, who was twenty-one years old at his accession, had been brought up among priests and women, and showed all the defects of his education. Spanish writers are never weary of dilating upon his piety and his devotion. to his favourite, the duke of Lerma, while he contented himself with the performance of religious duties and the ceremonies of a stately court. The change of rulers was significantly marked in a quarrel with the province of Biscay, which still retained its ancient privileges intact. An attempt was made in 1601 to impose new duties by a royal ordinance; the Biscayan deputies protested vigorously against this encroachment upon their liberties, and openly threatened to seek another ruler. Philip ITI. hastened to avert the storm by withdrawing the obnoxious ordinance. Thus the policy of centralization was abandoned, and the tendencies to division and isolation were confirmed.

The piety of Philip ITI, which was as disastrous to Spain as the more masculine bigotry of his predecessors, found characteristic expression in the persecution of the Moriscoes. Ever since the suppression of their first revolt in 1502,—a revolt which was provoked by the breach of the compact made on the fall of Granada,—the conquered Moors had been cruelly oppressed. Charles V. renewed the edict of 1502 in 1526, and the overt profession of Mohammedanism was extinguished in Spain. But in secret they continued to cherish the faith of their ancestors, and this was enough to exasperate a monarch who preferred to have no subjects at all rather than to rule over heretics. An edict of Philip II. in 1566 forbade them to speak or write in Arabic, and ordered them to renounce all their traditional habits and ceremonies. Futile remonstrances were followed by a desperate rising, which was quelled in 1570. The most obstinate of the rebels were exiled to Africa, but most of them sullenly submitted. Philip III. determined to prove his zeal for orthodoxy by completing the work which his father had left unfinished. In 1609 all the Moriscoes were ordered to depart from the Peninsula within three days, and the penalty of death was decreed against all who failed to obey, and against any Christians who should shelter the recalcitrant. The edict was obeyed, but it was the ruin of Spain. The Moriscoes were the backbone of the industrial population, not only in trade and manufactures, but also in agriculture. The haughty and indolent

short |

not given me an heir |

The cares of government he left entirely |

SPATS

_ adoption.

Spaniards had willingly left what they considered degrad- ing employments to their inferiors. The Moors had intro- duced into Spain the cultivation of sugar, cotton, rice, and silk. They had established a system of irrigation which had given fertility to the soil. The province of Valencia in their hands had become a model of agricul- ture to the rest of Europe. In manufactures and com- merce they had shown equal superiority to the Christian inhabitants, and many of the products of Spain were eagerly sought for by other countries. All these advant- ages were sacrificed to an insane desire for religious unity.

The resources of Spain, already exhausted, never recovered from this terrible blow. Under these circum- stances it was an absolute necessity that the ambitious schemes of previous rulers should be abandoned ; and it was fortunate that Lerma was personally inclined to a policy of peace and that events occurred to favour its The accession of James I. in England gave a convenient opportunity for concluding the long war that had been carried on with Elizabeth. English mediation brought about a twelve years' truce in 1609 with the United Provinces, which amounted to a practical recogni- tion of their independence. The death of Henry IV. and the regency of Mary de' Medici enabled Lerma to arrange an alliance with France, which was cemented by a double marriage. Louis XIII. married the infanta Anne of Austria, and Elizabeth of France was betrothed to the son and heir of Philip III. For the moment Spain occupied a higher position in Europe than it had held since the defeat of the Armada. James I. was weakened by quarrels with his parliament and by the want of a definite policy. France under the regency had abandoned the attitude of Henry IV. and was distracted by internal squabbles. The empire was in the feeble hands of Mathias, and the Austrian Hapsburgs were still divided by the family jealousies that had arisen from the deposi- tion of Rudolph II. The Turks had declined since the days of Soliman the Magnificent with a rapidity char- acteristic of Oriental powers. In the midst of these states Spain, subject to an apparently absolute monarchy, enjoyed much the same prestige as in the best days of Philip II. With the consciousness of power the old ambitions revived. An arrangement was being discussed for the recognition of the archduke

Ferdinand as the successor of Mathias in the Austrian territories. Philip IIL, however, advanced a claim to Hungary and Bohemia on the ground that his mother was a daughter of Maximilian II., whereas Ferdinand was only descended from that emperor's brother. The claim was by no means indisputable, but it was inconvenient to Ferdinand to have to discuss it. He agreed therefore to purchase the support of Spain by ceding Alsace, and the vacant imperial fief of Finale in Italy (1617), and on these terms he succeeded in effecting his designs. Thus a prospect was opened to Spain of connecting its Italian possessions with the Netherlands and of forming a compact Spanish dominion in central Europe. At the same time the old policy of advancing Roman Catholicism was resumed, as the success of Ferdinand promised to secure a signal victory for the Counter-Reformation in Germany. But this forward policy was distasteful to Lerma, who found it necessary to retire in 1618. His withdrawal from affairs was not accompanied by any loss of the royal favour, and the offices which he had held were conferred upon his son, the duke of Uzeda.

The alliance between the two branches of the house of Hapsburg was not finally completed by the arrangement with Ferdinand. It was vigorously urged by Oftate, the Spanish representative at Vienna, by Khevenhiiller, the

Austrian envoy at Madrid, and by the Spanish party, headed by Zufiiga, which had always opposed the policy of Lerma. But neither Uzeda nor the royal confessor Aliaga was in favour of an alliance by which Spanish blood and treasure were to be expended in securing the interests of Austria. Philip IIL, however, was gained over by an appeal to his religious feelings, and in January 1620 he undertook to send assistance in men and money to Ferdinand II. Thus Spain was involved in the Thirty Years' War, which had been commenced in 1618 by the revolt of Bohemia against Ferdinand, and the acceptance of the crown by the elector-palatine Frederick V. Spanish troops from Italy aided Tilly to win the battle of the White Hill, and Spinola led an army from the Netherlands against the Palatinate. But the party of peace was still strong in Spain. Frederick V. was the son-in-law of James L, and his complete humiliation would hinder the long-cherished project of a marriage between Prince Charles and the Spanish infanta. The truce with

Holland would expire in April 1621, and if the war was to be resumed with the Dutch it was essential to isolate them by concluding the alliance with England. Moreover, the finances of Spain were by no means in a condition to support the extraordinary expenses of a European war. All these considerations pointed to peace, and Philip III. was on the point of recalling Lerma, when he died in March 1621. His reign had not been glorious or advantageous to Spain, but it contrasts favourably with those of his successors. Spanish literature and art, which had received a great impulse from the intercourse with foreign countries under previous rulers, reached their zenith during his lifetime. Three writers have obtained European fame-—Cervantes, who produced the immortal Don Quixote between 1605 and 16138, and two of the most fertile of romantic dramatists, Lope de Vega and Calderon. In the domain of art Spain produced two of the greatest masters of the 17th century, Velazquez and Murillo.

The time which Philip ITI. had spent on his devotions was given by his successor to the more secular pleasures of hunting and the theatre. But Philip IV. shared to the full his father's disinclination to burden himself with the cares of government. The office of first minister was given to Zufiiga, the chief advocate of an aggressive policy in the late reign. Lerma and Uzeda were banished from the court. But the chief influence over the adminis- tration was exercised from tle first by the royal favourite, the count of Olivares, who succeeded to Zuiiiga's office on the latter's death. Olivares was a man of considerable industry and ability, though his reputation has suffered from the inevitable comparison with his great contem- porary and rival, Richelieu. He conceived the plan of restoring Spain to its former greatness by returning to the policy of Philip II., regardless of the change in the internal resources of the country. All ideas of peace were abandoned, and Spain plunged headlong into the European struggle. The truce with the United Provinces was unpopular because the commercial progress of the Dutch was fatal to the trade of the Spanish Netherlands, and Amsterdam had already begun to take the place of Ant- werp. The expiration of the truce in April 1621 was followed by an immediate renewal of the war. To make the war successful it was imperative to secure the alliance with England, but this was sacrificed because the emperor insisted upon confiscating the Palatinate, which was conferred upon Maximilian of Bavaria. The match with the Spanish infanta

was broken off, and Prince Charles married Henrietta Maria of France. The alienation of England was enough in itself to ensure the ultimate failure of the Dutch War. On the mainland the succes-

sl at &

dol

sive stadtholders, Maurice and Frederick Henry, held their own even against the experienced Spinola, and after the latter's recall in 1629 had a distinct advantage. But it was by sea that the Dutch gained their most con- spicuous successes. In 1628 the Spanish treasure-fleet was captured by Admiral Hein, whose booty was estimated at seven millions of guilders. The greater part of Brazil, together with Malacca, Ceylon, Java, and other islands, were conquered by the Dutch sailors. Instead of con- quering the northern provinces, Spain had to make great mo to defend the frontiers of the southern Nether- ands.

In central Europe the fortune of war was more favour- able to Spain and her allies. The crushing defeat of the elector-palatine was followed by the humiliation of the Protestant champion, Christian IV. of Denmark. Ferdinand II. enjoyed for a moment greater power than any other successor of Charles V., and the Edict of Restitution seemed to complete the triumph of the Catholic reaction in Germany. But the revival of the Hapsburg power awakened the jealousy of France, which in 1624 had fallen under the strong rule of Richelieu. The Spaniards had occupied the Valtelline, an" important pass which connected Lombardy with Tyrol. A French army expelled the conquerors in 1624, and the treaty of Mongon restored the pass to the community of the Grisons. For a time France was occupied with the suppression of a Huguenot rising, but no sooner had La Rochelle fallen than Richelieu again interfered to thwart the designs of Spain in the question of the Mantuan succession. The Spaniards endeavoured to exclude the duke of Nevers, the rightful heir to the duchy, on account of his connexion with France. But Richelieu forced the Spanish troops to raise the siege of Casale, and ultimately extorted the treaty of Cherasco (1631), by which the emperor recognized the succession of the duke of Nevers in Mantua. The occupation of Pinerolo in this war gave the French an opening into Italy and threatened the ascendency which Spain had so long exercised in the Peninsula. Mean-

while the victories of Gustavus Adolphus had destroyed the imperial and Catholic ascendency in Germany. The Spaniards were ignominiously driven from the positions which they occupied on the Rhine.

The death of Gustavus Adolphus at Liitzen inspired the Roman Catholic powers with new hopes. Spain determined to strain every nerve to turn the tide of victory. Philip IV.'s brother Ferdinand, the cardinal- archbishop of Toledo, was sent to raise troops in Italy and to lead them through Germany into the Netherlands. In 1634 Ferdinand effected a junction with the imperial forces, and their combined efforts won a signal victory at Nordlingen. The Lutheran princes, headed by John George of Saxony, hastened to make terms with the emperor in the treaty of Prague (1635). The Swedes were left almost isolated in Germany, and a speedy termination of the war seemed inevitable. At this crisis Richelieu decided to embark in the war as a principal, and concluded a close alliance with the Dutch against Spain. For two or three years the new policy of France seemed likely to be attended with failure. The French troops, unaccustomed to war, were no match for the trained veterans of Spain. Not only were they repulsed from the Netherlands, but the cardinal-infant actually invaded France (1636) and inspired a panic in the capital itself. His success, however, was only temporary, and before long the superior policy of Richelieu gave France the upper hand. The occupation of Alsace, which fell into French hands after the death of Bernhard of Saxe- Weimar, interrupted the connexion between the Nether- lands and Italy. In the latter peninsula the French

dol

gained ground and restored the regent of Savoy, whom the Spaniards had expelled. Finally, more important than all, the alliance with Holland gave France the superiority by sea. The destruction of a great Spanish fleet in the Downs, where it had taken refuge under the neutral flag of England, made it almost impossible to send reinforce- ments from Spain to Brussels. By striking at the points of connexion, Richelieu was breaking the unwieldy Spanish empire to pieces. At this moment his task was imniensely facilitated by the outbreak of internal dissensions.

Olivares had been inspired by the success of his great rival with the idea of strengthening Spain by a vigorous policy of centralization. The monarchy

consisted of a number of scattered provinces, each ruled by a separate council at Madrid, and each possessed of its own separate institutions. They were held together only by the pre- dominance of Castile and by religious unity. This systent Olivares determined to abolish by elevating the royal power to equal absolutism in all the provinces. The dangers from foreign enemies were to be met by forming Spain into one indissoluble whole. But the spirit of pro- vincial independence was still strong, and it was artfully encouraged by the intrigues of Richelieu, who wished to absorb the attention of Spain in its domestic affairs. An edict ordering all able-bodied men to arm for the war, under penalty of confiscation, provoked a revolt in 1640 among the Catalans, who were jealously attached to their old privileges, and whose proximity to the French frontier had already exposed them to intolerable hardships. The Castilian troops were driven from the province, and Catalonia formed itself into a republic under the protection of France. This event exerted a magical influence upon Portugal, where Richelieu's emissaries had also been active, and where the antipathy to Castile was national rather than provincial. In December 1640 a revolution was successfully accomplished in Lisbon, and the crown was assumed by a native noble, John of Braganza, in whose veins ran the blood of the ancient kings. These disasters were fatal to Olivares, to whose system of government they were not unnaturally attributed. In 1643 he was compelled to resign his post, and Philip IV. announced his intention of ruling alone.

The revolt of Catalonia and Portugal, together with the undisguised discontent shown by several of the other provinces, could not but hamper Spain in the conduct of the European War. The conquest of Roussillon in 1642 enabled the French to give effectual assistance to the Catalans, who acknowledged Louis XIII. as count of Barcelona. The successive deaths of Richelieu (1642) and Louis XIII. (1643) made no difference to the policy of France, which was directed by Mazarin under the regency of Anne of Austria. The French had now completely made up the military inferiority which had foiled their efforts at the beginning of the war. In 1643 Enghien (afterwards the great Condé) won the first of a brillant series of victories at Rocroi, and his success was the more important because it placed the domestic authority of the regent upon a firm footing. The disasters of Spain were increased by the formidable rising of Masaniello in Naples (1647), which was carried on by the duke of Guise and was suppressed with

difficulty in 1648. This was fol- lowed by the loss of the Austrian alliance through the treaty of Westphalia. As it would have been impossible for Spain to contend single-handed against the hostile coalition, the opportunity was seized to make terms with Holland. This was only achieved by consenting to great sacrifices. Not only did Spain surrender all claims to sovereignty over the northern provinces, but it also ceded to them the northern districts of Brabant, Flanders, and Limburg, with the strong fortresses of Maestricht, Her-

togenbosch (Bois-le-Duc), Bergen-op-Zoom, and Breda. ite Dutch retained all their conquests in America and the Indies, and secured themselves from the rivalry of Ant- werp by a clause which enjoined the permanent closing of the Scheldt. This marks the final recognition of the United Provinces as an independent state, and also the transference to the northern powers of the maritime supremacy hitherto claimed by Spain.

France and Spain were now left face to face with each other. For the next four years the disturbances of the Fronde gave the Spaniards a great opportunity, of which they were not slow to avail themselves. In the Nether- lands they recovered Gravelines, Ypres, and Dunkirk, while Don John of Austria, a natural son of Philip IV., took Barcelona and reduced the Catalans to submission. But the triumph of Mazarin in 1653 enabled France once more to devote itself to the war, although at the same time it drove the great Condé into the Spanish service. The military operations now reduced themselves to a duel in the Netherlands between the rival generals Condé and Turenne. ‘The old tactics, which were adhered to with Spanish obstinacy, were now out of date, and the once invincible infantry was almost useless against the quick movements of light-armed troops which had been intro- duced by Gustavus Adolphus. The struggle was finally decided by the intervention of England. Both powers had earnestly sued for the support of Cromwell. The rapid advance of the French power was a cogent reason for England to assist Spain, but the religious bigotry that still prevailed at Madrid made the alliance impossible. At last Mazarin gained over the Protector by promising to banish the Stuarts from France and to

cede Dunkirk. Reinforced by 6000 Ironsides, probably the best soldiers in Europe, Turenne was irresistible. Dunkirk was re- duced after an obstinate defence and handed over to the English, to the great scandal of Roman Catholic Europe. One after another the fortresses of Flanders fell into the hands of the French, and, though the death of Cromwell lost them the support of England, it was impossible for Spain to continue the war. In 1659 Mazarin and Don Luis de Haro, the successor of Olivares, met on a small island in the Bidassoa, and there arranged the treaty of the Pyrenees. Spain had again to make great sacrifices. Besides Artois and several fortresses in the Netherlands, Roussillon and Cerdagne were ceded to France, and thus the Pyrenees were fixed by law as the boundary between the two countries. Louis XIV. was to marry the infanta Maria Theresa, who was to receive a large dowry, but was to renounce all eventual claims to the Spanish crown. The only concessions made by France were the pardon of Condé, the recognition of Catalonia as a province of Spain, and the promise to give no more assistance to the Portuguese.

Now that Spain was freed from external hostilities, it scemed possible that the reduction of Portugal might be at last accomplished. But the alliance of France was speedily replaced by that of England, and Catherine of Braganza was married to Charles II. Louis XIV., too, tried to obtain from the Spanish Government an acknowledgment of his wife's claims to the succession, and failing in this he continued to send secret assistance to the Portuguese. A French general, Schomberg, defeated Don John of Austria in 1663, and two years later routed the Spanish forces at the battle of Villa Viciosa. This final disaster crushed the declining energies

1665.

the government to his widow Maria Anna of Austria, with a special junta to advise her in the conduct of affairs. As the Spanish monarchy had declined, its

CHARLES I1.]

authority had been exercised by a series of chief ministers, —Lerma, Olivares, and Haro,—and this was the only way in which the unity of the executive power could now be maintained. The favour of the queen-mother

raised to this position her confessor, Father Nithard, a native of Styria. He was a man of ability and experience, and set himself to cope with the most glaring evils of the state. He endeavoured to dimininish the public expenditure by limiting the salaries of officials, and by putting an end to the abuses which hindered the commerce with the colonies. But he was soon called upon to face unexpected difficulties. Louis XIV. advanced a claim, on behalf of his wife, to certain territories in the Nether- lands in virtue of the so-called “law of devolution.” This was an old custom by which the children of the first marriage succeeded, to the exclusion of all later descendants. As Spain resisted the claim, the French invaded Flanders and overran Franche-Comté. The regent was compelled to purchase the restoration of the latter province by ceding part of Flanders to France in the treaty of Aix- la-Chapelle (1668). At the same time the independence of Portugal was finally acknowledged. These disasters increased the jealousy with which the Spanish nobles regarded the rule of a Jesuit anda foreigner. A strong opposition party was formed under the leadership of Don John of Austria, and in 1669 Nithard was compelled to resign. But ainong the nobles themselves there was little unity, and a difference arose as to the policy to be pursued when Louis XIV. attacked Holland in 1672. The queen- mother was naturally on the side of Austria, and her influence was sufficient to secure the adhesion of Spain to the first European coalition against France. This success she followed up by obtaining the post of chief minister for another favourite, Fernando de Valenzuela, who was appointed marquis of Villafierra and raised to the rank of a grandee of Spain. This revived the jealousy of the nobles, who again formed a league for the maintenance of their privileges under Don John of Austria. This time they were completely successful. Not only was Valenzuela banished, but Maria Anna herself was compelled to retire from the court and to take up her residence in Toledo. Don John was now all-powerful. A natural antipathy to the policy of the regent led him to draw aloof from the Austrian alliance and to attach himself to France. A marriage was concluded between Charles II. and Maria Louisa of Orleans. It was hoped that by this means better terms would be obtained from Louis XIV., but in the treaty of Nimeguen Spain had to surrender Franche- Comté and fourteen fortresses in Flanders. This treaty marks the complete loss by Spain of its position as a first-rate power. Henceforth it could only exist by the support of those states which resented the aggrandizenient of France. Don John was no more successful

in his domestic than in his foreign policy. His industry was as unwearying as that of Philip IL. himself, and he deter- mined to rule independently of all interested advisers. The reform from which he hoped most was a revocation of the crown domains which had passed into private hands. But the scheme met with natural opposition from the nobles, and he died in 1679 without having accomplished anything. Fora year Charles II. endeavoured to rule in person with the help of the ordinary council, but the attempt only showed how the strength of the monarchy was bound up with the personal character of the ruler. “Charles V.,” says Mignet, “had been both general and king; Philip II. was merely king, Philip III. and Philip IV. had not been kings; Charles II. was not even a man.” From infancy Charles’s health had been so defective that his death had appeared an imminent contingency, and his intellect was as feeble as his body. It was impossible for

ep PAN

4

3393

hini to exercise any effective control over the government, and he was little more than a tool in the hands of the nobles, who, under Don Luis de Haro, had recovered much of the political influence from which Olivares had excluded them. In 1680 the office of first minister was given to the greatest of Spanish magnates, the duke of Medina- Celi. It was at this time that Louis XIV. was conducting his famous réunions, and the weakness of Spain enabled him to annex without opposition Courtrai, Dixmude, and the great fortress of Luxemburg. Medina-Celi, dis- gusted with his thankless task, resigned in 1685, and his place was taken by Count Oropesa. The new minister revived the alliance with Austria, and Spain became a member of the league of Augsburg in 1686. The success of the league seemed to be almost assured by the Revolution which gave the crown of England to William III., the leader of the opposition to Louis XIV. But in spite of apparently overwhelming odds France more than held her own, and Spain was humiliated by the capture of Urgel and Barcelona. Ministers held office only at the will of court factions, and the first disaster was fatal to Oropesa. Spain continued to play a secondary part in the war, which was concluded in 1697 by the treaty of Ryswick, the first for many years in which France

did not obtain any addition of territory. The chief motive for Louis XIV.'s moderation was the desire to devote his attention to the approaching question of the Spanish succession.

The decline. of Spain in the 17th century is not to be measured by its territorial losses. Holland had extorted a tardy recognition of its independence; Portugal was once more a separate kingdom; Catalonia was reduced only to very doubtful submission; France had seized upon Roussillon and Cerdagne, Franche-Comté, and great part of the southern Netherlands; French influence had been established in Italy as a counterpoise to that of Spain. But the weakness of the extremities, to which these facts bear conclusive testimony, was the result of still greater weakness at the centre. The population of the peninsula, estimated at twenty millions under the Arabs and at twelve under Ferdinand and Isabella, had fallen to less than six millions in the reign of Charles II. This decrease of numbers was doubtless due in the first place to the religious bigotry which had condemned thousands of Jews and Moriscoes to death or exile, but it is partly traceable to a fatal decline in the economic prosperity of the country. Agriculture, for which many parts of Spain were peculiarly fitted, had suffered from the departure of the Moriscoes and from a number of other causes. The want of any law of mortmain had led to the accumulation of at least one-fourth of the land in the hands of the monasteries, the most charitable but the most careless and conservative of landlords. Thanks to their obstinate adherence to obsolete methods of cultiva- tion, their estates produced little more than one per cent. on the outlay. The system of entail, which earlier monarchs had striven to restrict, made enormous strides in the 16th century, and most of the secular estates were inalienably concentrated in the hands of a few great nobles, who lived at Madrid and spent their revenues in lavish extravagance without any regard to the interests of their tenants. In the fertile provinces of Andalusia and Estremadura agriculture was entirely ruined by the system of sheep-farming. In the 12th century, when the country was exposed to the destructive forays of the Moors, the inhabitants had been forbidden to enclose their lands with either hedges or ditches, and successive kings had encouraged the rearing of huge flocks of sheep which could easily be driven over the open country into a place of safety. In the 16th and 17th centuries the condition

Decline of

Spain in the 17th century,

do4

of things had entirely changed, but the old regulations were jealously maintained by the company of La Mesta, one of the most powerful and independent corporations in Spain. This body, which derived large revenues from the sale of wool, was enabled to retain its privileges intact until the reign of Charles [1]. Every summer their flocks poured down the northern mountains, and the absence of enclosures made it impossible to defend the crops from their ravages. Besides making agriculture impossible, the exclusive attention to sheep-rearing led to the gradual disappearance of the old forests, and, as no one ventured to plant new trees, great parts of Castile became an arid desert. Every kind of industry suffered in the same way as agriculture. The true Spaniard despised all who earned a living by handicraft, and when the Moriscoes had been banished it was impossible to obtain skilled artisans except by importing them. The Spaniards could not even cut their own timber into ships or construct fortifications for their own towns. Madrid and other cities were crowded with foreigners, who hastened to make a fortune that they might carry it back to their native land. The Government was quite as much to blame as individuals. The gold from the New World would have enabled Spain to command the markets of Europe, but the medizval restrictions on the exportation of the precious metals were strictly enforced. The high price of commodities was attributed, not to the superfluity of the medium of exchange, but to the competition of foreign and colonial markets. It was forbidden to export one article after another, and the colonies were expected to send gold without receiving anything in exchange. A more ruinous policy could hardly be conceived; but it was supported by the merchants themselves, who refused to fill their vessels with anything but gold and silver, and left the indigo, cotton, and other commodities to the English and the Dutch. Domestic production, crippled by these restrictions, was almost destroyed by the exces- sive taxation rendered necessary by the ambitious schemes of Philip II. and his descendants. It is notorious that Austria could never have carried on the Thirty Years’ War so long but for the supplies received from Spain. Spain,

in fact, was the great subsidizing power in the 17th century, as England was in the 18th. The enormous expenditure thus necessitated was wrung from the classes least able to pay it, as the Government was not strong enough to attack the exemption of the nobles and clergy. The alcavala, the tax on sales which Ximenes had abolished, was restored under Philip IL, and in the 17th century reached the enormous amount of 14 per cent. The traders naturally sought to evade a tax which it was impossible to pay. But this only increased the vigilance of the revenue officers, who endeavoured to collect the tax at every opportunity, on the raw material, on the manu- factured product, and again every time that it changed hands. ‘Taxation in Spain was a caricature of Alva’s system in the Netherlands, and was even more ruinous than that had been. Foreign nations reaped all the advantages which the short-sighted policy of the Spaniards threw away. It has been calculated that five-sixths of the manufactured commodities consumed in Spain were provided by foreigners, and that they carried on nine- tenths of the commerce with the Spanish colonies. By law all foreign trade with the colonies was prohibited, but the decline of native industry made it impossible to enforce the laws, and the Spanish Government had to con- nive at acontraband trade of which other countries gained all the profit. The policy of the earlier kings had made the colonies dependent upon European products, and

when Spain could no longer supply them they had to be obtained elsewhere.

5s P&T.

Circumstances in the latter half of | least for one of his grandsons.

[HISTORY.

the 17th century allied Spain with England and Holland against France, and the English and Dutch founded their commercial supremacy upon the trade which Spain threw into their hands. The country which had sent a hundred vessels to Lepanto, and which in 1588 had despatched the great Armada against England, was reduced under Charles II. to borrowing Genoese vessels to maintain its con- nexion with the New World. The army, which had once been the terror of Europe, had sunk at this time to an effective force of little more than 20,000 men. In litera- ture and art the decadence of

Spain was equally con- spicuous and complete. The religious unity of the country was preserved, but all touch with the intellectual advance of Europe was deliberately sacrificed.

In spite of its loss of power and prestige, the crown of The ff Spain was still regarded as a prize well worth winning. Spanish |

Ever since Charles IT.'s accession the Spanish succession had been a prominent question for European diplomacy, and from 1697 it became the pivot on which international relations turned. Charles II.'s first wife, Maria Louisa of Orleans, had died childless in 1689, and his second marriage to Maria Anna of Neuburg was equally unfruit- ful. The male line of the Spanish Hapsburgs was evidently on the verge of extinction, and by law and tradition the crown would pass to the nearest female or her heir. But the question was complicated in many ways. Of Charles II.'s two sisters, the elder, Maria Theresa, had married Louis XIV., and had renounced her claims, but her husband had always protested against the renunciation, and the non-payment of the stipulated dowry gave him an argument for its nullity. The younger, Margaret Theresa, had married the emperor Leopold I., and had made no renunciation ; but she had since died, leaving an only daughter, Maria, who married the elector of Bavaria. Going a generation back, the two sisters of Philip IV. had also married into the houses of Bourbon and Hapsburg. Anne of Austria, whose renunciation of the Spanish crown was undisputed, was the mother of Louis XIV., while Maria Anna was the mother of Leopold I. Ever since the division of the house of Hapsburg into two branches it had been agreed

by a family compact that if either became extinct the

other should succeed to its territories. Leopold I. was extremely anxious to restore the unity of the family by securing the observance of this compact, and he had a great advantage in the fact that Charles IL.'s mother was his own sister, and Charles's second wife was his sister- in-law. The will of Philip IV. had arranged that, after Charles IL and his descendants, the crown should pass, first to Margaret Theresa and her children, and secondly to Leopold and his children. It was a great disappointment to Leopold that his first wife left him only a daughter, but he tried to secure the claims of his family by extort- ing from her on her marriage a renunciation of her rights

to the crown of Spain. This renunciation the Spanish Government had never recognized, and the queen-mother, whose adherence to the Hapsburg interests was overcome by her feelings for her own family, induced Charles II. to make a will in 1696 in which he named Joseph Ferdinand, the infant electoral prince of Bavaria, as his heir. But the queen-mother's death withdrew the dominant influence at the court of Madrid and enabled the Austrian envoy, Count Harrach, with the help of the queen, to procure the revocation of this will. The succession now became the subject of party quarrels and intrigues, in which the rival envoys of Austria and France took a prominent part. The aim of Leopold I. was to obtain the succession of his second son, the archduke Charles, while Louis XIV. hoped to procure the Spanish crown, if not for his son, at The office of first minister

successid question|}

THE SPANISH SUCCESSION. |

in Spain had not been filled up since the fall of Oropesa, and the most influential man in the kingdom was Cardinal Portocarrero, archbishop of Toledo. He was a bitter opponent of the queen, who was extremely unpopular, and all his efforts were directed to thwart the schemes of Austria. To depress the cardinal, Maria Anna induced Charles II. to recall Oropesa, but the latter declined to return to the Austrian alliance which he had previously championed, and espoused the cause of the electoral prince. There was no semblance at this time of a French party in Madrid, but Louis XIV. availed himself of the cessation of hostilities to send thither an able diplomatist, Count Harcourt, who speedily contrived to exercise considerable influence over the course of events.

Too many European interests were involved in the succession to allow it to be settled as a mere question of doniestic politics. The idea of the balance of power dominated European diplomacy at this time, and William III. of England was its avowed and recognized champion. England and Holland, the two countries with which William was connected, were vitally interested in the Spanish trade. The accession of a French prince in Spain would almost inevitably transfer to France all the advantages which they at present enjoyed It was obvious that William III. must have a voice in the settle- ment of this succession, and Louis XIV., whe had no desire for a new

European war, was willing to recognize this. The negotiations between England and France resulted in the first treaty of partition (October 11, 1698). The electoral prince was to receive the bulk of the Spanish empire, viz., Spain itself, the Netherlands, Sardinia, and the colonies; the dauphin was to have Naples, Sicily, Finale, and Guipuzcoa ; while Lombardy was to go to the archduke Charles. This treaty had one fatal defect—that it was based solely on the interests of the contracting powers and took no account of the wishes of the Spaniards, who resented any proposal for tle division of the empire. The first hint of the treaty irritated Charles II. into making a second will in November in favour of the electoral prince, and all parties in Spain agreed in its approval. But within three months both treaty and will were rendered null by the sudden death of the infant prince (February 1699), and the question, thus reopened, became more thorny than ever, as the choice now lay definitely between Austria and France. It seemed almost impossible to prevent the outbreak of a general war, but William III. patiently reunited the broken threads of his diplomacy, and arranged with France a second treaty of partition. The Spanish monarchy was to be divided into two parts. The larger, consisting of Spain, the Netherlands, Sardinia, and the colonies, was to go to the archduke Charles. The dauphin was to receive the share stipulated in the former treaty, with the material addition of Lorraine. The duke of Lorraine was to be compensated with the Milanese. This treaty, unlike the first, was communicated to Austria; but the emperor, who was now confident of securing the whole inheritance, refused to accept it.

Meanwhile the death of the electoral prince had de-

er et i

Spaniards. The Austrian party hoped to utilize the popular feeling against Louis XIV. as a party to the hated treaty. But Harcourt adroitly contrived to suggest that the best way of annulling the partition project was to enlist Louis’s own interests against it. The view steadily gained ground that the house of Bourbon was the only power strong enough to secure the unity of the Spanish empire. Portocarrero succeeded in inducing Pope Innocent XII. to support the French claim. Charles IL, feeble to the last, succumbed to

this combination of influences, and signed a testament bequeathing the succession to Philip of Anjou, the second grandson of Louis XIV., on condition that he would renounce all claims to the crown of France (October 3, 1700). Thus his last act was to disinherit his own family in favour of the enemy with whom he had been at war almost all his reign. He died on the lst of November 1700.

Everything now depended upon the decision of Louis XIV. ‘The treaty of partition offered substantial advant- ages to France ; Charles I1.’s will would exalt the honse of Bourbon above every other family in Europe. His hesitation, whether real or feigned, did not last long. On November 16 he introduced his grandson to the French court as Philip V. of Spain. the king was also based upon sound policy. In the face of Spanish opinion and of the emperor’s refusal it was impossible to carry out the partition treaty. And for the moment it appeared that the accession of a Bourbon prince would be secured without difficulty. Philip V. was proclaimed in all parts of the Spanish monarchy amid popular acclamations. Leopold I. protested and prepared to attack Lombardy, but he could not hope to obtain the whole succession for his son without the assistance of the maritime powers. William III., who saw the aims of his life threatened with ruin, was eager for war, but his subjects, both in England and Holland, were resolute to maintain peace. In these circumstances Louis XIV. played into the hands of his enemies. He expelled the Dutch garrisons from the fortresses of the Netherlands which they had occupied since the treaty of Ryswick, and replaced them by French troops. He showed a cynical intention to regard Spain as a province of France, and he took measures to secure for the French the commercial advantages hitherto enjoyed by England and Holland. William III. was thus enabled to conclude the Grand Alliance (September 7, 1701), by which the contracting powers undertook to obtain the Netherlands and the Italian provinces of Spain for the archduke Charles and to preserve the mercantile monopoly of the English and Dutch. A few days afterwards James II. died at St Germains, and Louis XIV. was injudicious enough to acknowledge his son as king of England. This insult exasperated public opinion in that country; the Tory parliament was dissolved; and the last obstacle to William’s warlike policy was swept away. William him- self died in March 1702, but he left the continuance of his policy to the able hands of Marlborough and Heinsius. The war which the

emperor had commenced single-handed in 1701 became general in the next year.

The dynastic ambition of Philip V.

stroyed the temporary unanimity at Madrid. Portocarrero and his partisans were gained over to the side of France by Harcourt. Oropesa fell back upon a scheme of his own for uniting the whole Peninsula under the king of

It is needless to follow the military operations of the War of War of the Spanish Succession, which have been rendered the | famous by the exploits of Eugene and Marlborough. The SP22’sh

chief scenes of hostilities were the Netherlands, Germany, a

Portugal. The queen returned to her old allegiance to her brother-in-law, and formed a close alliance with Harrach for the advancement of the interests of the arch- duke Charles. A popular rising overthrew Oropesa and enabled Portocarrero to regain his ascendency. At this juncture came the news of the second partition treaty, which again irritated the tender susceptibility of the

and Italy, in each of which the French suffered fatal and humiliating reverses. At first the peninsula of Spain was not directly concerned in the war. The Grand Alliance did not aim at excluding Philip from the Spanish monarchy as a whole, but only from those parts which the maritime powers wished to preserve from French influence. But in 1703 Pedro IL. of Portugal deserted the cause of

France and concluded the Methuen treaty with England. This opened the Peninsula to the allied forces and necessitated a revision of the terms of the alliance. Pedro’s support could only be purchased by the expulsion of the French from Spain, and the allies now determined to claim the whole Spanish inheritance for the archduke Charles. In 1704 the archduke appeared in Portugal, and the English fleet, under Sir George Rooke, captured Gibraltar. As the assistance of the Portuguese was only half-hearted, it was decided in 1705 to seek a new open- ing in the east.

Catalonia, always inclined to revolt against its rulers, and recently irritated by the conduct of Philip V., offered a convenient base of operations. The brilliant but eccentric earl of Peterborough succeeded in capturing Barcelona, and by the end of the year the arch- duke was acknowledged as Charles III. in Catalonia, Valencia, and Aragon. A great effort on the part of Philip to recover the lost provinces was repulsed, and a simultaneous advance of the allies from the east and from Portugal compelled him to evacuate Madrid, where Charles III. was formally proclaimed. But the provincial dis- union, which had so often hampered the Hapsburg kings, proved the salvation of their Bourbon successor. The Castilians refused to obey a king who was forced upon them from Aragon, and their religious instincts were offended by the alliance of Charles with the heretics of England and Holland. Disunion among the allies aided the revolt of Castile, and by the end of 1706 Charles III. found himself compelled to evacuate his recent conquests and to return to Barcelona. In 1707 the allies attempted another invasion of Castile, but they were routed by the duke of Berwick at Almanza, and Aragon and Valencia were forced to return to their allegiance to Philip V. For the next two years the war in the Peninsula languished. Charles III. received reinforcements from Austria under Stahremberg, but he was unable to do more than retain his hold upon Barcelona. In 1710 the cause of the allies received a new impulse from the arrival of Stanhope with supplies of men and money from England. Under the joint command of Stanhope and Stahremberg the army advanced westwards from Barcelona, defeated Philip V. at Almenara and Saragossa, and for the second time occupied Madrid. The disasters which the French had experienced in other parts of Europe had broken the pride of Louis XIV., and he was prepared to purchase peace by sacrificing his grandson. A treaty would have been concluded to this effect at Gertruydenburg, if the allies had not insisted that the French troops should be employed in forcing Philip V. to accept it. Louis XIV. refused to take arms against his own family, and a sudden change in the current of fortune saved him from the humiliation which his enemies wished to force upon him. Charles III. found it impossible to maintain Madrid in face of the enthusiasm of the Castilians for his rival. The capital of Spain was of no importance from a military point of view, and the allies determined on its evacuation. On their retreat they were followed by Vendéme, whom Louis XIV. had sent to his grandson’s assistance. Stan- hope, attacked at Brihuega, was compelled to capitulate

with all his forces before Stahremberg could arrive to his assistance. The latter was defeated after an obstinate struggle at Villa Viciosa. Aragon and Valencia again submitted to Philip, and the archduke was once more confined to Catalonia.

At this juncture two events occurred which completely altered the balance of the contending powers. The fall of the Whig ministry through a court intrigue gave the con- trol of English policy to the Tories, who had always been hostile to the war. The death of Joseph I. in April 1711 left the Austrian territories to his brother, the archduke

Charles, who was soon afterwards elected emperor as Charles VI. To allow him to obtain the Spanish succes- sion would be to revive the empire of Charles V., and would be even more dangerous to the balance of power than the recognition of Philip V. with adequate securities against the union of France and Spain. The object for which the allies had been making such immense exertions was now a result to be averted at any cost.

Tn these altered circumstances, Bolingbroke, the English Treaty «

minister, hurried on the negotiations with France which resulted in the treaty of Utrecht between England, France, Spain, and Holland. Philip V. was acknowledged as king of Spain, on condition that he should formally renounce all eventual claims to the crown of France. But the partition of the Spanish monarchy was insisted upon by the allies. The Netherlands were to be handed over to Austria, on condition that the Dutch should garrison the barrier fortresses. Austria was also to receive the Italian provinces of Spain, with the exception of Sicily, which was given to the duke of Savoy with the title of king. England naturally obtained considerable advant- ages from a war in which she had borne so prominent a part. The acquisition of Gibraltar and Minorca gave her the control of the Mediterranean. The asiento conferred upon her the privilege of importing slaves into the Spanish colonies, and she also obtained the right of sending a single vessel into the South Seas. France had to recog- nize the Protestant succession,

and to cede Newfoundland, Acadia (Nova Scotia), and Hudson's Bay. Charles VI. refused to accept the terms offered to him at Utrecht, but he found it impossible to carry on the war by himself, and in 1714 he made peace with France by the treaty of Rastatt. But he still retained the title of king of Spain, and showed no willingness to acknowledge Philip V.

The great blot on the conduct of the allies in arranging

the treaty of Utrecht was the desertion of the Catalans, who had rendered such loyal services during the war. They were left to the tender mercies of Philip V., who sent Berwick to reduce the rebellious province. Barcelona resisted for many months with the heroism of despair, and was well-nigh reduced to ashes before it could be taken (September 1714). With its fall all resistance came to anend. 'The three Aragonese provinces were deprived of the last remnants of their ancient privileges, and were henceforth ruled from Madrid under Castilian laws. With the final accession of a Bourbon king Spain entered upon a new period of history, in which it once more played a considerable part in European politics. The death of Louis XIV. (1715), and the acquisition of the regency in France by the duke of Orleans, destroyed the close connexion that had hitherto existed between France and Spain. Philip V. was hypochondriacal and bigoted, the slave of his wife and his confessor, but he had certain definite schemes to which he clung with the obstinacy of a weak character. In spite of his solemn renunciations and the guarantee of the European powers, he never relinquished the idea of ultimately succeeding to the French throne. In what was regarded as the probable event of Louis XV.'s death, he was determined to enforce his hereditary claim, even if he had to resign the crown of Spain. His interests were diametrically opposed to those of the duke of Orleans, who was, after Philip's family, the natural heir to Louis XV. Philip V. had one other guiding passion, enmity to Charles VI., who had robbed the Spanish monarchy of its fairest provinces in Italy. These provinces he set his heart upon regaining, and in this project he was encouraged by the two people who had most influence over him,—his wife and his minister.

Philip V.'s first wife, Maria Louisa of Savoy, had died in 1714, leaving him two sons, Louis and Ferdinand. A suc-

|

dminis- on the French throne. ration of Spanish affairs for a short period to her countryman }iberoni. Ajberoni, one of the strangest personages of the 18th -century. The son of a gardener at Piacenza, he had

cessor was speedily found for her in the person of Elizabeth Farnese, niece of the duke of Parma, who was suggested by Alberoni, at that time agent for Parma at Madrid.

The new queen speedily obtained unlimited ascendency

over her husband's mind, and she displayed an unbridled ambition and a capacity for intrigue astounding in one who had been brought up in complete retirement. As Philip's sons by his first wife would exclude her own children from the Spanish throne, she was anxious to obtain for the latter the reversion of the duchies of Parma and Tuscany, to which she had an eventual claim. With this end in view she encouraged her husband's designs in Italy, while personal ambition made her eager to see him Her favour gave the conduct of

sought a career in the church, and had come to Spain in the suite of Vendéme, whose favour he had won by com- bining the functions of a cook and a buffoon. After the death of his patron he remained in Spain, and conceived an ardent affection for the country of his adoption. to power by the part he had played in effecting the king's marriage, he determined to exalt Spain from its long de- pression to the position it had once occupied in Europe. His domestic reforms showed that he had a real capacity for government. Commerce and industry revived under his patronage ; the army was reorganized, and the revenue increased. But his chief attention was given to the navy, the real foundation of the former greatness of Spain. Foreigners who had known the country under Charles II. or during the Succession War were astounded at the strides which it had made under the new administration. Alberoni himself is said to have assured Philip that with five years of peace he would make him the most powerful sovereign of Europe. But these years of peace he was not destined to have. Alberoni cordially approved the Italian designs of Philip, and hoped to employ the

restored might of Spain in freeing his native country from the hated rule of Austria. He had less sympathy with the

king’s hankering after the French crown and his enmity |

to the regent Orleans. But he held office only by the royal favour, and could not venture to set up his own will against that of his master. He was convinced, and not without reason, that everything would go well if he could secure the English alliance.

But the attitude of Spain had already awakened sus- picion in France, and the ready mind of Dubois had conceived a plan for thwarting Alberoni. He determined to desert the policy of Louis XIV. and to conclude a close alliance between France and England. This was to be based upon the common danger from rival pretenders, which urged the houses of Orleans and Hanover to main- tain the provisions of the treaty of Utrecht. An agree- ment was arranged between the two states in 1716, and, being joined by Holland in January 1717, was known as the Triple Alliance. This was a great blow to Alberoni, and made him anxious to postpone all hostilities until his preparations were complete. But his hand was forced by the indignation excited in Philip V.’s mind by an insult offered to him by the emperor. The grand inquisitor of Spain was arrested in Lombardy as a rebel against Charles III., his lawful king. Philip V. decided for an immediate rupture, and Alberoni against his will had to send an expedition to Sardinia, which overran the island in 1717. The enthusiasm excited in Spain by the unwonted news of a military success was increased in 1718 when another Spanish force occupied Sicily. But meanwhile Charles VI. had appealed to France and Eng- land for assistance against this rupture of the treaty of

S ba iN

Raised |

oot

Utrecht. The Triple Alliance, reinforced by the junction of Austria, became the Quadruple Alliance (August 1718). The resolution of the allies was

convincingly displayed in a naval encounter in which Admiral Byng destroyed the Spanish fleet off Cape Passaro.

Hitherto the only fault to be found with Alberoni's schemes is that they were attempted prematurely, and this was the fault of the king rather than of the minister. But the Quadruple Alliance drove him in despair to form those far-reaching projects which are generally associated with his name, and which have given rise to the unjust impression that his whole policy was chimerical and unsound. To meet the hostility of England and France he must make use of internal divisions. He invited the Pretender to Spain, prepared an expedition in his behalf, and concerted with Count Gérz, the minister of Charles XIL., a grand scheme by which Sweden and Russia were to combine in supporting the Jacobites against George I. At the same time, through the Spanish envoy Cellamare, he organized a conspiracy among the numerous opponents of the regent. All these schemes broke down simul- taneously. Charles XII. was killed at the siege of an obscure town in Norway; Gorz was executed by his successor ; the Spanish fleet which was to carry the Pre- tender to England was wrecked; the conspiracy of Cel- lamare was discovered and suppressed. France declared war, and sent an army under Berwick across the Pyrenees. An English fleet gratified the national love of a maritime monopoly by burning along the Spanish coast the vessels and docks which Alberoni had created. The emperor, who had just ended a war with Turkey by the treaty of Passarowitz, was able to send a force which succeeded in recovering Sicily. Alberoni was sacrificed to appease the enemies of Spain, and was exiled ,from the kingdom he had served so loyally in December 1719. A month later Philip V. accepted the terms imposed upon him by the Quadruple Alliance. He had to confirm his renunciation of the French crown, and also to abandon all claims on

the provinces of Spain which had been ceded to Austria

by the treaties of Utrecht and Rastatt. He also allowed the emperor to retain Sicily, the duke of Savoy being compensated with Sardinia. On the other hand Charles VI's pretensions to the Spanish crown were definitely abandoned, and the allies recognized the eventual claims to Parma and Tuscany of Philip's children by his second marriage, on condition that those duchies should never be united with Spain.

In spite of the conclusion of peace, Philip coutinued to cherish his animosity against Charles VI., especially as the latter showed an inclination to evade the condition about Parma and Tuscany by encouraging other claimants to come forward. ‘To gratify this passion, Philip went so far as to lay aside his old enmity against the duke of Orleans, and to authorize the negotiation of a close alliance with France. His eldest son, Don Luis, was married to a daughter of the regent, and Louis XV. was betrothed to the infanta Maria Anna. But the death of Orleans in 1723 gave a new direction to the king’s policy. In 1724 Europe was astounded by the news that Philip had abdicated in favour of Don Luis, and had gone into retirement at San Ildefonso. This act was generally attri- buted to the indolence and superstition which formed the basis of his character, but the real motive was undoubtedly a desire to remove tle chief obstacle to his accession in France. Louis XV., however, disappointed his expecta. tions by continuing to live, and the queen soon wearied of her unwonted seclusion. Luis only survived his accession eight months, and to the surprise of the world Philip V. emerged from his retreat to resume the crown which he had laid down of his own accord.

XXII. — 43

Ripperda.

338

The queen returned to power more determined than ever to carry out her favourite scheme of obtaining an Italian principality for her eldest son Don Carlos. As France and England had shown themselves lukewarm in the matter, she resolved to turn to her husband’s enemy, Charles VI. This scheme was suggested by a Dutch adventurer, Ripperda, who inspired Elizabeth with a belief that the Austrian alliance would enable her not only to effect her object in Italy, but also to regain Gibraltar and Minorca for Spain. This was rendered the more probable by the fact that Charles VI. had quarrelled with England about the foundation of the Ostend Com- pany. ‘The conduct of the affair was entrusted to Rip- perda himself, and while he was at Vienna a great impulse was given to the negotiation by a complete rupture between Spain and France. The duke of Bourbon, who had become chief minister in France after the death of Orleans, had set himself to

reverse the policy of his pre- decessor. To complete this, he sent the infanta back to Spain and married Louis XV. to Maria Leczinska, daughter of the ex-king of Poland. This insult removed the last scruples of Philip V. about the Austrian alliance, and in April 1725 Ripperda concluded the treaty of Vienna. The mutual renunciations arranged by the Quadruple Alliance were confirmed : Spain recognized the settlement of the Austrian succession by the Pragmatic Sanction and promised great commercial privileges to the Ostend Company, while Charles VI. pledged himself to secure the succession of Don Carlos in Parma and Tuscany and to use his influence with England to obtain the restitu- tion of Gibraltar and Minorca. By a secret treaty Charles further undertook, in the case of England's refusal, to assist Spain with arms and also to send aid to the Jacobites. These terms were soon divulged by the indis- creet vanity of Ripperda himself, and England and France formed the counter-league of Hanover (September 1725), which was also joined by Frederick William I. of Prussia, though only for a short time.

Ripperda returned to Spain, to be rewarded with the office of chief minister. But his success seems to have turned his head; his boasts about the grand results to be expected from the Austrian alliance proved to be ill- founded, and his fall was as sudden as his rise had been. After a brief period of exile in England, he sought a new home in Morocco, where he became a convert to Islam and died in 1737. But his policy was continued by his successor, Don Joseph Patiiio, who sent a fleet to lay siege to Gibraltar. Europe was now divided into two hostile leagues, but the outbreak of a general war was averted, partly by the pacific inclinations of Walpole in England and Fleury in France, and partly by the growing coolness between Austria and Spain. Charles VI. had been led into the treaty of Vienna by a momentary pique against England, but he soon realized that he had more to lose than to gain by favouring the Spanish designs upon Italy. Accordingly, in May 1727, while the siege of Gibraltar was proceeding, he threw over his obligations to Spain and signed the preliminaries of a peace with England and France. The Ostend Company was suspended, and the questions about Parma, Tuscany, and Gibraltar were referred to a European congress at Soissons. The Spanish Government found it impossible to hold out in isolation, and accepted these terms by the convention of the Pardo (March 1728).

The congress of Soissons was a complete failure, and the irrepressible energy of the Spanish queen discovered a new method of obtaining her ends. The birth of a son to Louis XV. removed into the background all idea of the succession in France, and the attitude of Charles VI. proved that he would do nothing for Don Carlos.

Ssr4aitgsz

i

these circumstances there was no alternative but to sacri- fice the prospect of recovering Gibraltar and Minorca and to seek the alliance of England and France. By the treaty of Seville (November 1729) these powers, with Holland, concluded an offensive and defensive alliance with Spain. The privileges which the latter country had conferred upon the Ostend Company were revoked. Don Carlos was recognized as the heir to Parma and Tuscany, and to enforce his claims these provinces were to be occupied by 6000 Spanish troops. Charles VL., astounded at this sudden change in the aspect of affairs, took active steps to oppose this occupation of the duchies. He collected 30,000 troops in Italy, and when the old duke of Parma died in January 1731 he seized his territories as an imperial fief. Elizabeth called upon her allies to carry out the treaty of Seville, but Walpole and Fleury were unwilling to resort to hostilities. Luckily Charles VI. thought more of securing his daughter’s succession in Austria than of anything else. By promising that Eng- land would guarantee the Pragmatic Sanction, Walpole induced the emperor to conclude the second treaty of Vienna (March 1731), which dissolved the Ostend Com- pany and confirmed the provisions of the treaty of Seville. In 1732 English ships conveyed Don Carlos and the Spanish troops to Italy. Parma and Piacenza were immediately occupied, and the grand-duke of Tuscany acknowledged Don Carlos as his heir.

In the long and intricate series of negotiations of which we have given a brief summary the guiding thread is the grasping ambition of the queen of Spain. That ambition was by no means satisfied by the results obtained in the treaty of Vienna. Austria still held the Italian provinces of Spain and was looking out for an opportunity to expel Don Carlos from central Italy.

England retained her hold upon Gibraltar and Minorca, and claimed a maritime and colonial supremacy which threatened to thwart all schemes for the revival of Spanish commerce. Elizabeth never relinquished for a moment the hope of humiliating England and expelling the Hapsburgs from Italy. Cir- cumstances at this time were more favourable than they had ever been before. The able administration of Patiiio, “the Colbert of Spain,” had restored order in the Spanish finances, and had already made considerable strides towards the creation of a formidable fleet. But the great advantage lay in the fact that the death of Orleans and the birth of children to Louis XV. had removed all obstacles in the way of an alliance between Spain and France. The close union between the two branches of the house of Bourbon, which the Grand Alliance had endeavoured to avert, and which circumstances had post- poned for twenty years, was now to become an accom- plished fact. In 1733 “an eternal and irrevocable family compact” was signed by the Count Rottembourg and Don Joseph Patifio. France and Spain pledged themselves to pursue a common policy in regard both to Austria and England, the object of which was to destroy the Italian ascendency of the one and the commercial monopoly of the other. This treaty, which constituted a danger to Europe hardly less than the aggressions of Louis XIV., was kept a profound secret, and, though its existence was more than suspected at the time, its full importance has not been apprehended until recent times.

The first opportunity for carrying out this common policy was offered by the dispute about the Polish succes- sion which broke out in 1733 between Stanislaus Leczin- ski and Augustus III. of Saxony. Austria and Russia supported the latter prince, while Louis XV. espoused the cause of his father-in-law. But the war in Poland itself was of very secondary importance compared with the

Under | hostilities to which it gave rise in southern Europe.

War | the P’)

|

‘Varof the ijustrian

jon

on,

PHILIP V. |

France, Spain, and Sardinia concluded the league of Turin (October 1733) for the partition of Charles VI.'s Italian provinces. The chief events of the war, from the Spanish point of view, were the occupation of Naples and Sicily by Don Carlos. It was intended that he should keep these kingdoms, and that Parma and Tuscany should be transferred to his younger brother Don Philip. But Fleury, seeing an opportunity of securing his own ends, refused to continue the war for the aggrandizement of Spain. In 1735 he concluded the preliminaries of a peace with Austria by which Don Carlos was to be recognized as king of the Two Sicilies, Charles VI. was to be com- pensated with Parrna, and his son-in-law was to receive Tuscany in exchange for Lorraine, which was eventually to pass to France. The Spanish queen was bitterly indig- nant at the desertion of her ally, at the cession of her native Parma to Austria, and at the failure to provide anything for her second son. She struggled hard to pro- long the war, but the only result of her manceuvres was to postpone the conclusion of the definitive treaty until 1739, when the preliminaries were confirmed.

Meanwhile Spain had become involved in a maritime quarrel with England. The restrictions imposed by the treaty of Utrecht upon English trade with the Spanish colonies had been systematically evaded by the develop- ment of a system of organized smuggling on the part of the British traders. The Spaniards, encouraged by the secret compact with France, refused to tolerate an abuse which their weakness had compelled them to connive at in the previous century. To puta stop to it they rigidly enforced their right of search, often seizing British vessels on the high seas and treating the crews with gross brutality. This gave rise to great ill-feeling between the two nations, which was increased by other colonial dis- putes about the right of gathering logwood in Campeachy Bay and on the frontiers of Florida. The popular indigna- tion in England, which Walpole's opponents fanned for their own purposes, was raised to fever-heat by the story of Jenkins, an English captain, who maintained that he had been tortured and his ears cut off by a Spanish guarda costa. Walpole, who had refused to believe in the

Family Compact, and had steadily adhered to a policy of peace, was compelled by the popular clamour to declare war in October 1739. The maritime operations which followed were insignificant. Admiral Vernon took Porto Bello, and Anson plundered Payta; but England was distracted by party jealousies and her naval organization had fallen into disorder during the long peace. Luckily for her, Patiiio had died in 1736, and the impulse which he had given to the Spanish navy ended with him. But before long the quarrel was absorbed in the great European war which arose about the Austrian succession.

Charles VI. had persuaded almost every European power to guarantee the Pragmatic Sanction, but the suc- cession of Maria Theresa to his territories was not in the least facilitated by the paper promises to support her. England was almost the only power that adhered to its engagements. Frederick of Prussia advanced an obsolete claim to Silesia, and France seized the. opportunity to humiliate the house of Hapsburg. Spain hastened to join the coalition against the unfortunate heiress. Philip V. claimed to represent the Spanish branch of the Hapsburgs, and pleaded the old family agreement by which they were to succeed on the extinction of the Austrian line. There was no possibility of so absurd a claim being recognized, but it opened the prospect of recovering the lost provinces in Italy. Sardinia was gained over by the promise of part of Lombardy. Naples and Sicily were already in the hands of Don Carlos. It seemed hardly possible that

Maria Theresa, pressed by enemies on every side, could | brother.

successfully defend her Italian territories. A Spanish army under Montemar was embarked in French vessels, and, after evading the English fleet, landed in the Gulf of Genoa in 1741. The first news was discouraging, as Charles Emmanuel of Sardinia, ready like his predecessors to sell his alliance to the highest bidder, had been bought off by Maria Theresa. It was not till 1742 that the campaign began with an advance upon Modena, where the duke had promised his support to Spain. But the Austrians and Sardinians were the first in the field. They expelled the duke of Modena

from his territories, and drove Montemar to retreat towards Naples. At the same time the English fleet appeared before Naples, and the threat of an immediate bombardment compelled Don Carlos to promise a strict neutrality during the rest of the war. Count Gages, who was sent to supersede the unsuccessful Montemar, was unable to recover the lost ground, and the first campaign ended without any serious advantage to either side beyond the Austrian occupation of Modena. In 1743 Gages again attempted the invasion of Lombardy, but was defeated at Campo Santo and repulsed. Austria and Sardinia concluded a close alliance in the treaty of Worms (September 1743), which was negotiated by England. France and Spain sought to meet this coalition by renewing the Family Compact at Fontainebleau (October 1743). France undertook to aid in conquering the Milanese for Don Philip, to declare war against England, and not to make peace until Gibraltar, and if possible Minorca too, had been restored to Spain. Don Philip himself was sent with a Spanish army through southern France, but he failed to force a passage through the Alps. The campaign of 1744 was indecisive, but in the next year the great efforts made by Maria Theresa to recover Silesia gave her opponents in Italy an opportunity of which they were not slow to avail theniselves. Gages effected a junction at Genoa with the combined French and Spanish troops under Maillebois and Don Philip. Advancing into Piedmont the allies took Tortona, and after occupying Parma and Piacenza they invaded Lom- bardy. This move effected the desired object of separat- ing the Austrians and Sardinians. Schulenburg hurried off to the defence of his mistress's territories, and the allies at once turned upon Charles Emmanuel and defeated him at Bassignano. The French wished to complete the conquest of Piedmont, but the Spaniards insisted upon renewing the invasion of Lombardy. That province was now entirely undefended, as the Austrians had returned to the assistance of Charles Emmanuel, who detained them by the threat that if he were deserted he would make terms with the allies. One town after another surrendered or was taken, and in December Don Philip entered Milan in triumph. But meanwhile Maria Theresa had ended the Silesian War by the treaty of Dresden, and was thus enabled to send reinforcements into Italy. The tide of success turned with marvellous rapidity. The Spaniards evacuated Lombardy, and were soon driven from all their conquests in Piedmont except Tortona. At Piacenza, to which the Bourbon army had retreated, it was completely defeated by the Austrians.

At this juncture the news arrived from Spain that Ferdi- Philip V. had died on July 9, and had been succeeded by nand VI.

Ferdinand VL., the only surviving son of his first marriage. Elizabeth Farnese, “the termagant,” as Carlyle calls her, whose ambition had kept Europe embroiled for thirty years, went into retirement at San Ildefonso. This event naturally influenced the war in Italy. It was not likely that the new king, who had never been on good terms with his stepmother, would expend more of his country’s blood and treasure to obtain a principality for his half- His first act was to supersede Gages by the

Charles III.

340

marquis of Las Minas, who found the Spanish army at Tortona and hastened to withdraw it from Italy into Savoy, which Don Philip had occupied since 1742. The Austrians at once besieged and captured Genoa, thus cutting off the possibility of a renewed invasion of Italy, except through the well-guarded passes of the Alps. From this time the military operations ceased to have any direct importance for Spain, and all interest centred in the negotiations which were carried on at Breda in 1747 and transferred to Aix-la-Chapelle in the next year. The chief obstacle to peace was the demand of a principality for Don Philip, which Ferdinand VI. persisted in as necessary for the honour of Spain. Maria Theresa had already made sacrifices to Prussia and to Sardinia, and resented the idea of ceding any more of her territories. But the persistence of England carried the day, and in the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle (October 1748) Don Philip obtained Parma, Piacenza, and Guastalla as an hereditary principality, on condition that they should revert to Austria on extinction of his male descendants. This was the sole advantage gained by Spain. Austria retained Lombardy, shorn of the portion promised to Charles Emmanuel; and the commercial and naval ascendency of England remained unshaken. The recovery of Gibraltar, which at one time Philip V. had confidently expected, was now further off than ever.

Ferdinand VI. was as feeble in health and as averse to business as his father had been, but he was equally obstinate on certain points. He would have nothing to do with the aggressive policy of his stepmother or with the

Bourbon schemes for the humiliation of England. His accession broke off the Family Compact, and gave to Spain the unaccustomed boon of thirteen years' peace. His aim was to hold the balance between the rival powers of western Europe, and in this he was aided by the discord between his two ministers, Ensenada and Carvalho, of whom the former favoured France and the latter England. When Kaunitz, the Austrian envoy at Versailles, was endeavouring to negotiate an alliance between the Haps- burgs and Bourbons, Ferdinand seized the opportunity to conclude the treaty of Aranjuez, which guaranteed the neutrality of the Italian provinces of the two families. On the outbreak of the Seven Years' War in 1756 great efforts were made to draw Spain into the struggle. France offered Minorea, which had been lost by Byng at the first outbreak of hostilities, and England hastened to make the counter-proposition of a cession of Gibraltar. Ferdinand, however, refused both bribes, and maintained his policy of peace till his death in 1759.

This event gave the Spanish crown to Charles III., who had ruled the Two Sicilies since 1735. His accession threatened a speedy reversal of Spanish policy. The new king was a true Bourbon, and naturally inclined to the French alliance. He had an old grudge against England for the treatment he had received in the War of the Austrian Succession. He also owed a debt of gratitude to Maria Theresa for enabling him to transfer the crown of Naples to his third son, whereas by the treaty of Aix- la-Chapelle it ought to have passed to his brother, Philip of Parma. In spite of these motives, he hesitated for two years to take a decisive step. Spain was not pre- pared for war, and Charles had never cordially approved the change of policy at Versailles which had united France with its old rival Austria. But the rapid successes of England under Pitt's administration, and the danger of a vast extension of the maritime and colonial ascendency of that country, soon overcame his scruples. In 1761 the third Family Compact was concluded, and Spain under- took to give active assistance to France unless peace were concluded within a year. Pitt, suspecting the existence

of this agreement, proposed an immediate declaration of war against Spain, but he failed to convince his cabinet and resigned. His successors, however, were driven to adopt his policy, and in January 1762 hostilities com- menced between the two countries. But Spain only entered the war to share the disasters which France had already begun to suffer. An invasion of Portugal, which had been regarded as a defenceless prey, was foiled by English assistance, and the English fleet captured Mar- tinique and Havana. The Bourbon powers found it neces- sary to implore peace, and it was fortunate for them that the English government had passed into the hands of Bute, who was eager to diminish the influence of Pitt by terminating the war. By the treaty of Paris (February 1763) England recovered Minorca, extended its colonies in every direction at the expense of France, and rejected all the demands which Charles JIJ. had advanced on behalf of Spain.

In spite of the treaty Charles III.'s foreign policy continued to be guided by jealousy of England, and he clung to the French alliance as the only means by which he could avenge his recent humiliation. In this he was encouraged by his foreign minister, Grimaldi, who was so devoted to France that Choiseul declared himself to be more powerful at Madrid than at Versailles. In 1770 a dispute about the Falkland Islands, from which the English settlers had been expelled by a Spanish force, would probably have led to a renewal of war if a domestic intrigue had not succeeded at this juncture in overthrow- ing Choiseul. For the next few years a marked coolness grew up between France and Spain, which was increased when Louis XVI. disappointed the hopes that had been formed of his accession and left Choiseul in retirement. Grimaldi, chagrined at the failure of an alliance on which all his schemes were based, resigned office in 1777 and was succeeded by Count Florida Blanca, one of the most distinguished of the able ministers who ruled Spain during this period. The change of ministers made no difference to the policy of Charles III., whose obstinacy was in no way inferior to that of his predecessors. For many years Spain and Portugal had been engaged in disputes about the frontiers of their territories in South America, disputes which were rendered more bitter by the arrogance of Pombal, the Portuguese minister. The death of Joseph I. in 1777 and the consequent dismissal of Pombal enabled Florida Blanca to negotiate the treaty of San Ildefonso, by which Sacramento and the navigation of the Rio

de la Plata were ceded to Spain, and a definite boundary was drawn between Brazil and Paraguay on the one side and Peru on the other. This was followed in March 1778 by the conclusion of a perpetual alliance at the Pardo, by which Portugal was attached to the interests of the Bourbon states. These treaties, which Florida Blanca regarded as among the most signal successes of his ministry, came very opportunely to enable Charles III. to resume the schemes that had lain in abeyance since 1763. England was involved in a desperate struggle with the revolted colonies of North America, and this offered the Bourbons the long-desired opportunity for revenge. In 1778 France entered into close alliance with the colonists, and in the next year Spain followed her example. Every- thing seemed to favour the allies. The Northern powers, irritated by the high-handed way in which England had asserted and exercised her maritime supremacy, formed the "armed neutrality" under the lead of Catherine II. of Russia. Even Holland, the oldest and most constant ally of England, was involved in the general coalition. England, which had failed single-handed to coerce its own subjects, was now face to face with the whole maritime power of Europe, and was also hampered by domestic and

Trish troubles. Spain succeeded in capturing Minorca and laid close siege to Gibraltar. Many of the West- Indian islands were captured from the English, and the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown destroyed the last hope of restoring American dependence. The most con- fident hopes were entertained of stripping England of the great bulk of its colonial possessions. But in 1782 the tide of success turned. Rodney, by the novel manceuvre of breaking the line, destroyed the French fleet in the West Indies, while the heroic defence of General Elliott and the opportune arrival of supplies under the convoy of Lord Howe saved Gibraltar from overwhelming odds. The want of unanimity among the allies, each of whom thought only of its own interests, hastened the conclusion of peace in 1783. The treaty of Versailles, by which Spain kept Minorca and obtained the Floridas, was the most honourable which that country had concluded since Catcau Cambrésis. But the failure to recover Gibraltar was a bitter

disappointment to Charles III, who con- tinued till his death (December 14, 1788) to cherish the scheme of renewing the war, though the growing disorders in France made it more and more certain that he could no longer rely upon the assistance of that country.

The reigns of the first three Bourbon kings form a period of great importance in Spanish history. At the end of the 17th century Spain appeared to be a lifeless corpse, over which the other powers of Europe could con- tend at will. In the 18th century men were astounded to see that country rise with renewed vigour to play once more an independent part on the international stage. This revival was due in the first place to the change of dynasty. Another Hapsburg would probably have con- tinued the obsolete policy of his predecessors, The accession of the Bourbons introduced into Spain the methods and ideas of government which had raised France to greatness under Richelieu, Mazarin, and Colbert. The two great problems to be grappled with were the profound depression of trade and agriculture and the fatal wealth and ascendency of the church. Philip V., feeble as he was personally, began the movement in advance even during the Succession War. ‘The abolition of the old provincial independence rendered possible a more regular and centralized government, an increase of the revenue, and the removal of the old impediments to trade between the various provinces. The French officers who accom- panied the king gave a new organization and new tactics to the Spanish army. Under the influence of the princess Orsini Philip seemed inclined to attack even the prescrip- tive privileges of the clergy. His marriage with Elizabeth Farnese saved the hierarchy and diverted his attention to wars of aggrandizement. But these wars were directed by purely political motives; the old Hapsburg idea of a religious propaganda was for ever abandoned. And even during the war the task of internal reform was hindered rather than neglected. The efforts of Alberoni and Patifio gave Spain a navy more powerful than that of Philip II. The conquest of the Two Sicilies and the acquisition of Parma, though they brought little direct advantage to Spain, yet gave conclusive evidence that the old lethargy had been shaken off and that the country was capable of exertions and sacrifices which had long appeared impossible. The period of peace under Ferdi- nand VI. was an inestimable boon to Spain. Taxation was lightened, production was facilitated by the removal of the most crushing burdens, yet at the same time the revenue improved and the

chronic deficit of previous reigns was replaced by a surplus. And this prince took a step which no one would have expected from him. The concordat of 1753 was the first vindication of the political interests of Spain against the pretensions of Rome. The crown

asserted its right to appoint to all important benefices, and the number of papal presentations was reduced from twelve thousand to fifty-two. The revenue derived by the curia from Spain was proportionately diminished, and the clergy were compelled to recognize their obligations as members of the body politic. This measure was followed by an edict that henceforth papal bulls should not be obeyed until they had received the royal sanction.

The work of reform, thus tentatively commenced under Philip V. and Ferdinand VI., was carried still further by Charles ITI., whose reign is regarded with more pride by the Spaniards than any other since that of Philip II. Charles had served an apprenticeship in the art of govern- ment in Naples, where, with the help of his minister Tanucci, he had successfully grappled with evils similar to those from which Spain was suffering. He would have been a prince quite after the heart of the 18th century if he had not retained too large a share of the superstition of his family. He shared to the full that conception of the rights and duties of monarchy which inspired the reforms of Frederick the Great and Joseph IL, and his allegiance to the church was fortunately counterbalanced by his desire for absolutism. His greatest work, the expulsion of the Jesuits, would never have been carried out if he had not been persuaded of its political necessity. The order had already been driven by Pombal from Portugal and by Choiseul from France, when Charles III. was convinced that a riot in Madrid, provoked by the financial measures of Squillaci, had been promoted by the Jesuits. This conviction overpowered all scruples; the fathers were promptly removed from the country, and Spain joined the other Bourbon courts in demanding that suppression of the order which was finally decreed by Clement XIV. in 1773. The Rubicon once crossed, Charles’s ministers urged him on in the

path of ecclesias- tical reform. The increase of lands in mortmain was restricted; the number of monasteries was diminished; and the Inquisition was compelled to moderate its procedure and to subordinate its independence to the royal will. For the papal jurisdiction was substituted a national — court, the Rota, established at Madrid.

These measures, of which the importance in a country like Spain can hardly be over-estimated, were accompanied by others no less notable for the development of trade and agriculture. The colonial trade was freed from the old restriction which compelled it to pass through Cadiz, and other ports were opened for its reception. Native manu- factures were encouraged in every way, and a famous ordinance in 1773 endeavoured to remove the old pre- judice against trade by declaring that the engaging in industrial occupations should not involve any loss of rank or its privileges. Internal communication was facilitated by the construction of canals. Agriculture was revived by the removal of the old prohibition against enclosures, — so long maintained by the selfish influence of the Mesta, —by the planting of trees in the arid deserts of central Spain, and by the rapid growth of population, which rose in the course of the century from 5,700,000 to 10,541,000. These measures, which are only selected from a large number tending in the same direction, are to be credited to three ministers, whose names reflect its chief lustre upon Charles III.'s reign. D'Aranda, who succeeded the Italian Squillaci as finance minister, was an Aragonese noble who had imbibed the spirit of philosophical speculation from France. He was the first layman who presided in the council of Castile, and he introduced into the Spanish administration a liberal tendency quite opposed to the traditions of the country. His views, however, were not congenial to the king, and, after completing his work with regard to the Jesuits and the Inquisition, he retired to the

'clerical schemes of D'Aranda.

embassy in Paris and was succeeded by Campomanes. The latter was not only a distinguished statesman but also one of the foremost representatives

of Spanish litera- ture. He was one of the earliest students of political economy, and many of the most enlightened measures for the relief and encouragement of trade are to be assigned to him. But his administration, which aimed at educat- ing the people to a share in political life, was almost as alien to the wishes of Charles IIL. as the liberal and anti- A far more congenial minister was found in Florida Blanca, whose aim was to promote the material interests of Spain by the supervision of an internal despotism, who stopped the attack on the church when its subordination was secured, who supported the economic reforms of Campomanes, but would only carry them out bya rigid bureaucracy, and who conciliated the king by falling in with his foreign policy even when it conflicted with the national welfare.

Meritorious as Charles III.'s reforms were, it would give a false impression to represent them as completely successful. The regeneration of Spain was by no means accomplished, and many of the abuses which had been growing for centuries survived the attempt to effect their annihilation. One of the chief causes of this failure was the corruption and ignorance of the lower officials. The reforming impulse was confined to the educated classes, and made little impression upon the bulk of the people. It was of little use to devise the most enlightened measures when there was no efficient machinery to carry them out. Many of the most promising reforms remained mere paper schemes. The methods employed, too, were not always the best calculated to obtain their end. The state took too much upon itself, and attempted to dis- charge functions which would have been better left to local enterprise. Roads were constructed on a magnificent scale, but only too often in directions where they were not wanted, and they remained almost unused. Thus the debt was increased without any improvement of the revenue. The return of Charles III. toa military policy imposed serious burdens upon the country, and it would have been better to have prolonged the peace of Ferdi- nand VI.'s reign, inglorious as it appeared to an ambitious king. Undoubtedly a great advance was made, but equal exertions would have produced a greater result in any other country. The population of Spain remained to a great extent sunk in sloth and superstition. Much might be hoped from a steady persistence in ameliorative measures, but unfortunately the work of reform was interrupted just at the moment when success appeared to be within reach.

The death of Charles III. and the accession of Charles IV. were contemporary with the outbreak of the French Revolution, which was destined to exercise a decisive influence over the fortunes of the adjacent peninsula. Florida Blanca, who continued to hold office during the first three years of the new reign, found it impossible to continue his policy. The revival of Spain could only be effected by the restoration of its naval and colonial ascendency at the expense of England, and for the carry- ing out of this scheme the support of France was impera- tively necessary. But the French alliance rested upon the relationship between the two branches of the house of Bourbon, and the Family Compact ceased to exist when Louis XVI. was deprived of power by his subjects. Of this conclusive evidence was given in 1791. Some English merchants founded a settlement at Nootka Sound on the west coast of America, which provoked an indignant protest from Spain. But the French national assembly refused to send any assistance, and Florida Blanca was compelled to conclude a humiliating treaty and to give up

epraAatrs

il

all hope of opposing the progress of England. This failure was attributed by the minister to the Revolution, of which he became the uncompromising opponent. The reforms of Charles III.'s reign were abandoned ; all liberal tend- encies in Spain were suppressed ; and the Government set itself to restore the old lethargy under absolute rule from which the country had been gradually awakened. The movement of reform had made so little progress among the mass of the people that reaction was really easier than progress, But Florida Blanca was not content with suppressing liberalism in Spain; he was eager to avenge his disappointment by crushing the Revolution in France. He opened negotiations with the emigrants, urged the European powers to a crusade on behalf of legitimacy, and paraded the devotion of Charles IV. to the head of his family. This bellicose policy, however, brought him into collision with the queen. Maria Louisa of Parma, a woman whose real abilities were perverted to the gratification of sensual lusts, was unwilling to allow the minister to share her ascendency over the

feeble mind of her husband, and she feared that the outbreak of war would diminish the revenues which she squandered in self-indulgence. She. had already removed from the ministry Campomanes and other supporters of Florida Blanca, and had compelled the latter to restrict himself to the single department of foreign affairs. Early in 1792 she completed her task by inducing Charles IV. to banish Florida Blanca to Murcia, and his place was entrusted to the veteran D'Aranda. But the new minister found that he held office only at the favour of the queen, and that this had to be purchased by a disgraceful servility to her paramour, Emanuel Godoy. Spain withdrew from the projected coalition against France, and sought to maintain an attitude of neutrality, which alienated the other powers, while it failed to conciliate the republic. The repressive measures of Florida Blanca were withdrawn; society and the press regained their freedom; and no opposition was offered to the propaganda of French ideas. D'Aranda's policy might have been successful if it had been adopted earlier, but the time for temporizing was now past, and it was necessary for Spain to choose one side or the other. But the decision was not allowed to rest with the man who had always shown a sympathy with the revolutionary prin- ciples. In November 1792 the queen felt herself strong enough to carry out the scheme which she had been long maturing. D'Aranda was dismissed, and the office of first minister was entrusted to Godoy, who had recently received the title of duke of Alcudia. Godoy, who was at once the queen's lover and the personal favourite of the king, had had no education for the part which he was called upon to play. Though endowed with a natural quickness of parts and a capacity for intrigue, he had no habits of application, no experience of the routine of office, and above all no settled policy. His appointment was regarded with jealousy by the grandees of Spain, while his undisguised relations with the queen outraged the moral feelings of the best part of the nation. Luckily for Godoy, the course to be pursued was decided for him. The execution of Louis XVI. (January 21, 1793) made a profound impression in a country where loyalty was a superstition. Charles IV. was roused to demand ven- geance for the insult to his family, and from one end of Spain to the other a cry resounded for immediate war with the impious rebels who had shed the blood of an anointed king. Godoy had nothing to do but to follow the national impulse, and Spain became a member of the first coalition against France. Everything seemed to promise a rapid and complete success. The number of volunteers who offered their services

rendered conscription unnecessary ; and the southern provinces of France were so preponder-

atingly royalist that they were ready to welcome the Spaniards as deliverers. These advantages, however, were nullified by the shameful incompetence and carelessness of the Government. The troops were left without supplies ; no plan of combined action was imposed upon the com- manders ; and each regiment was left to act of its own will. The military action of Spain provoked the contempt of Europe. The two campaigns of 1793 and 1794 were one long catalogue of failures. The bravery of the soldiers was rendered useless by the incapacity of their officers, and the maladministration of the central Government excited such disgust that an outbreak of revolutionary disturbance in Spain itself seemed more than possible. Instead of reducing the southern provinces of France, the Spaniards were driven from the strong fortresses that guarded the Pyrenees, and the French advanced almost to the Ebro. And at the same time the English, the hated rivals of Spain, were utilizing the war to extend their colonial power and were establishing more firmly that maritime supremacy which the Spanish Government had been struggling for almost a century to overthrow. Under the circumstances it is no wonder that the queen and Godoy hastened to follow the example set by Prussia, and concluded the treaty of Basel with France. The terms were unexpectedly favourable. Spain purchased the evacuation of her territories and fortresses by the cession of her share of St Domingo, which had little but a sentimental value as the first discovery of Columbus, and which had already been occupied by the English. So great was the joy excited in Madrid that popular accla- ination greeted the bestowal upon Godoy of the title of “Prince of the Peace.” But the moderation of the treaty was only a flimsy disguise of the disgrace that it involved. Spain found herself tied hand and foot to the French republic. Godoy had to satisfy his allies by the encourage- ment of reforms which both he and his mistress loathed, and in 1796 the veil was removed by the conclusion of the treaty of San Ildefonso. This was a virtual renewal of the Family Compact of 1761, but with far more dis- advantageous terms to Spain. Each power was pledged to assist the other in case of war with

twenty-five ships, 18,000 infantry, and 6000 cavalry. The real object of the treaty, which was to involve Spain in the war against

England, was cynically avowed in the eighteenth article, |

by which, during the present war, the Spanish obliga- tions were only to apply to the quarrel between England and France. A scheme was prepared for a joint attack on the English coast, but it was foiled by the battle of St Vincent, in which Jervis and Nelson forced the Spanish fleet to retire to Cadiz. This defeat was the more disastrous because it cut off the connexion with the colonies and thus deprived Spain of the revenues derived from that quarter. The finances, already exhausted by extravagance and maladministration, were in no con- dition to meet the expenses of a naval war. England seized the opportunity to punish Spain for its conduct in the American War by encouraging discontent in the Spanish colonies, and in the Peninsula itself both nobles and people were bitterly hostile to the queen and her favourite. It was in vain that Godoy sought to secure the friendship of the reforming party by giving office

SPAIN

|

{

to two of its most prominent members, Jovellanos and |

Saavedra, the French occupation of Rome and the erection of a republic in the place of the papal government. The treatment of the duke of Parma by the Directory was keenly resented by the queen. Godoy found himself between two parties, the liberals and the ultramontanes, who agreed only in hatred of himself. At the same time the Directory, whose mistrust was excited by his attitude

Spanish pride and bigotry were offended by |

in the question of Parma, insisted upon his dismissal. Charles IV. could not venture to refuse a demand from France ; the queen was alienated by Godoy's notorious infidelities ; and in March 1798 he was compelled to resign his office. But he did not forfeit his hold on the king's favour, and he only waited for a favourable opportunity to emerge from his retirement.

Godoy's office was entrusted to Saavedra, but the reformers did not obtain the advantages which they expected from the change. Jovellanos was compelled in August to retire on account of ill-health,—the result, it was rumoured, of attempts on the part of his opponents to poison him. His place was taken by Caballero, an ardent opponent of reform, who restored all the abuses of the old bureaucratic administration and pandered to the most bigoted prejudices of the clergy and the court. The ministry was hopelessly divided, and the policy of the country was directed by the basest and most paltry intrigues. The only advantage which Spain enjoyed at this period was comparative independence of France. The military plans of the Directory were unsuccessful during the absence of their greatest general in Egypt, and the second coalition gained successes in 1799 which had seemed impossible since 1793. But the return of Bona- parte, followed as it was by the fall of the Directory and the establishment of the Consulate, commenced a new epoch for Spain. As soon as the First Consul had time to turn his attention to the Peninsula, he determined to restore Godoy, who had already regained the affection of the queen, and to make him the tool of his policy. Maria Louisa was easily gained over by playing on her devotion to the house of Parma, and on October 1, 1800, a secret treaty was concluded at San Ildefonso. Spain undertook to cede Louisiana and to aid France in all her wars, while Bonaparte promised to raise the duke of Parma to the rank of king and to increase his territories by the addition either of Tuscany or of the Roman Legations. This was followed by Godoy's return to power, though he left the department of foreign affairs to a subordinate. Spain was now more servile to France than ever, and in 1801 was compelled to attack Portugal in the French interests. Bonaparte was indignant against Portugal, partly because its fleet had aided his enemies in Egypt, and partly because its harbours offered great naval advantages to the English. The Spanish invasion, which was commanded by Godoy in person, met with no resistance, and the prince ventured to conclude a peace on his own authority by which Portugal promised to observe a strict neutrality on coudition that

its territories were left undiminished. But Bonaparte resented this show of independence, and compelled Charles IV. to refuse his ratification of the treaty. Portugal had to submit to far harsher terms, and could only purchase peace by the cession of territory in Guiana, by a disadvantageous treaty of commerce, and by a payment of twenty-five millions of francs. This insult to his ally Bonaparte followed up by others. In the preliminary treaty with England he ceded the Spanish colony of Trinidad without even consulting the court of Madrid, while he sold Louisiana to the United States in spite of his promise not to alienate it except to Spain. For these humiliations Spain had to console itself with the empty honour of being the first signatory of the treaty of Amiens.

For nearly three years Spain was allowed to remain at peace. Its finances were partially revived by the restora- tion of free intercourse with the colonies and by the pay- ment of the supplies which had been withheld for the last six years. But the administration was as incompetent and misdirected as ever. Godoy, since his return to office, had abandoned all connexion with the reforming party

and had thrown himself into the reactionary policy of Caballero. The Spanish church was once more placed in

strict subjection to the Roman see, from which for a short time it had been freed. But the worst evil lay in the

undisguised domination of France, which the Government |

was wholly incapable of shaking off. As soon as Bona- parte saw himself involved in a new war with England,

he turned to Spain for assistance and extorted a new |

treaty (October 9, 1803), which was still more burdensome than that of 1796. Spain had to pay a monthly subsidy of six million franes, and to pledge itself to enforce a strict neutrality upon Portugal. Thus the country was involved in a new and still more disastrous war with England. The last

remnants of its maritime power were shattered in the battles of Cape Finisterre and Trafalgar, and the English seized Buenos Ayres. The popular hatred of Godty was roused to passion by these disasters, and many competent observers believed that Spain stood on the brink of revolution. At the head of the opposition was the crown prince Ferdinand, as insignificant as his rival, but endowed with all good qualities by the credulous favour of the people. To maintain himself against his domestic enemies Godoy turned to France, where Bona- parte, now the emperor Napoleon I., was irritated by the crown prince's marriage with a daughter of the king of Naples. The court quarrels at Madrid were fomented from Paris in order to complete the subordination of Spain. Napoleon was at this time eager to humble Eng- land by excluding it from all trade with Europe. The only country which had not accepted his "continental system " was Portugal, and he determined to reduce that kingdom by force. It was not difficult to bribe Godoy, who was conscious that his position could not be main- tained after the death of Charles IV. In October 1807 Spain accepted the treaty of Fontainebleau, which arranged a partition of Portugal into three parts. The northern provinces were to be given to the young king of Etruria, who was to purchase them by the cession of Tuscany. In the south a principality was to be carved out for Godoy himself. The central district was to be kept in pledge by France until the conclusion of a general peace. 'The treaty was hardly concluded when a French army under Junot marched through Spain to Portugal, and the royal family of that country fled to Brazil. But Spain was destined to share the same fate as its neigh- bour. The crown prince, whose wife had died in 1806, determined to imitate his rival by bidding for French support. He entered into secret relations with Beauhar- nais, Napoleon's envoy at Madrid, and went so far as to demand the hand of a Bonaparte princess. Godoy, who discovered the intrigue, induced Charles IV. to order his son's arrest. Napoleon at once seized the opportunity to make himself absolute master of Spain, and ordered French troops to cross the Pyrenees in support of the prince. This act terrified Godoy into a reconciliation with his opponents, but the French invasion was not delayed by the removal of its pretext. Charles IV. and his minister, conscious that they could expect no support from the people, determined on flight. The news of this intention, however, excited a popular rising in Madrid, and the king was compelled to abdicate in favour of his son Murat, however, who commanded the French, refused to be turned aside by this

change of circumstances. He obtained from Charles IV. a declaration that his abdica- tion had been involuntary, and occupied Madrid (March 23, 1808). Meanwhile Napoleon advanced to the frontier, and Ferdinand was lured by French agents to an interview with the emperor at Bayonne. There he was confronted with his parents and Godoy, and was intimidated into restoring the crown to his father, who at once made a

second abdication. Napoleon now divulged the real inten- tion of his actions, and the crown of Spain was formally

conferred upon his brother Joseph Bonaparte, who two Joseph Bona- parte,

years before had been made king of Naples.

But Spanish loyalty was too profound to be daunted even by the awe-inspiring power of the French emperor. For the first time Napoleon found himself confronted, not by terrified and selfish rulers, but by an infuriated people. The rising in Spain commenced the popular movement which ultimately proved fatal to his power. At first he treated the novel phenomenon with contempt, and thought it sufficient to send his less prominent generals against the rebels. Madrid was taken without difficulty, but the capital was absolutely devoid of military importance, and the Spaniards showed great capacity for the guerilla warfare in the provinces. The French were repulsed from Valencia; and Dupont, who had advanced into the heart of Andalusia, was compelled to retreat and ultimately to capitulate with all his forces at Baylen (July 10). The Spaniards now advanced upon Madrid and drove Joseph from the capital, which he had just entered. Unfortun- ately the insurgents displayed less political ability than military courage. The government was entrusted in Ferdinand’s name toa central junta of thirty-four members, a number which was far too large for the conduct of executive business. Napoleon’s arrival in Spain was enough to restore victory to the French. In less than a week the Spanish army was broken through and scattered, and Napoleon restored his brother in Madrid. Sir John Moore, who had advanced with an English army to the relief of the

capital, retired when he found he was too late, and an obstinate battle, in which the gallant general lost his life, had to be fought before the troops could secure their embarkation at Corufia. Napoleon, thinking the work accomplished, had quitted the Peninsula, and Soult and Victor were left to complete the reduction of the provinces. The capture of Seville resulted in the dis- solution of the central junta, and the Peninsula was only saved from final submission by the obstinate resistance of Wellington in Portugal and by dissensions among the French. The marshals were jealous of each other, and Napoleon's plans were not approved by his brother. Joseph wished to restore peace and order among his subjects in the hope of ruling an independent nation, while Napoleon was determined to annex Spain to his own overgrown empire. So far did these disputes go that Joseph resigned his crown, and was with difficulty induced to resume it. Meanwhile Cadiz became the capital of what was left of independent Spain, and there the cortes met in 1810 for the purpose of drawing up a new constitution. The fall of the old monarchy and thie exigencies of self-defence had given to the reforming party an ascendency which they had never before possessed. In the constitution which was promulgated early in 1812 the – principles of the French constituent assembly were closely followed. The Inquisition had already perished, and the last relics of the old autocratic government shared its fate. Supreme legislative power was placed in the hands of a single national assembly, and effective checks were devised to restrict the power of the monarchy whenever it should

"be revived. The freedom of the press was established, and

the property of the clergy was confiscated to defray the expenses of the war. The great defect of the constitution was that it was the work of one party, to which circum- stances had given a temporary supremacy, and it failed to command the support of the united nation. The nobles and priests were bitterly hostile, and the latter bad more influence in Spain than in any European country except Treland.

The restoration of Spanish independence could hardly

have been accomplished without the assistance of England. Wellington had already made two attempts to advance from Portugal into the adjacent kingdom, but had been foiled by superior forces. In 1812 he determined on a great effort. He secured his base of operations by the capture of Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz, and at Salamanca he completely routed the opposing army of Marmont. This victory enabled the English general to enter Madrid (August 12), and Joseph retreated to Valencia. But further advance was prevented by the concentration of the French forces in the east, and Wellington found it advisable to retire for the third time to winter-quarters on the Portuguese frontier. It was during this winter that Napoleon suffered his first and greatest reverse in the retreat from Moscow and the destruction of his grand army. This was the signal for the outbreak of the “ war of liberation” in Germany, and French troops had to be withdrawn from Spain to central Europe. For the first time Wellington found himself opposed by fairly equal forces. In the spring of 1813 he advanced from Ciudad Rodrigo and defeated Jourdan at Vittoria, the battle which finally decided the Peninsular War. Joseph retired altogether from his kingdom, and Wellington, eager to take his part in the great European contest, fought his way through the Pyrenees into France. Napoleon, who had suffered a crushing defeat at Leipsic, hastened to recognize the impossibility of retaining Spain by releasing Ferdinand VII., who returned to Madrid in March 1814. After the convulsions it had endured Spain required a period of firm but conciliatory government, but the ill-fate of the country gave the throne at this crisis to the worst of her Bourbon kings. Ferdinand VII. had never pos- sessed the good qualities which popular credulity had assigned to him, and he had learnt nothing in his four years’ captivity except an aptitude for lying and intrigue. He had no conception of the duties of a ruler; his public conduct was regulated by pride and superstition, and his private life was stained by the grossest sensual indulgence. Spain was still governed under the constitution of 1812, but the king’s first act was to dissolve the cortes and to abrogate the constitution, promising, however, to grant a new one inits place. But no sooner was he established on the throne, and conscious of the strong reaction in favour of the monarchy, than he threw his promises to the wind and set himself to restore the old absolutism with all its worst abuses. The nobles recovered their privileges and their exemption from taxes; the monasteries were restored ; the Inquisition resumed its activity; and the Jesuits returned to Spain. The liberals were

ruthlessly per- secuted, together with all who had acknowledged Joseph Bonaparte. A camarilla of worthless courtiers and priests conducted the government, and urged the king to fresh acts of revolutionary violence. For six years Spain groaned under a royalist “reign of terror,” and isolated revolts only served as the occasion for fresh cruelties. The finances were squandered in futile expeditions to recover the South American colonies, which had taken advantage of Napoleon’s conquest of Spain to establish their independence. In his straits for money Ferdinand ventured to outrage national sentiment by selling Florida to the United States in 1819. Discontent found expres- sion in the formation of secret societies, which were especially powerful among the neglected and _ ill-paid soldiers. At last, in 1820, Riego and Quiroga, two officers of an expedition which had been prepared for South America, raised the standard of revolt in Cadiz. Ferdinand and his advisers proved as incapable as they were tyrannical, and their feeble irresolution enabled the movement to spread over the whole country. In March the king gave way and accepted the constitution of 1812.

or 2 PW

345

The royalists or serviles, as they were called, were dismissed from office and their places taken by liberals. The cortes met in July, and at once proceeded to dissolve the monasteries and the Inquisition, to confiscate the clerical tithes, to abolish entails, and to secure the freedom of the press and of popular meetings. Great results might have been achieved if the moderate party, under Martinez de la Rosa, had been able to grapple with the task of suppress- ing disorder and establishing a permanent constitution. But this was the last thing which the king desired, and the moderates were defeated by a factious combination of the serviles and the radicals. Risings took place among the loyal and bigoted peasants of the provinces, and their suppression contributed to the victory of the extreme party, which seemed to be secured in 1822 by the election of Riego as president of the cortes.

But Spain was not allowed to work out its own salva- tion. Europe was dominated at this time by the Holy Alliance, which disguised a resolution to repress popular liberties and to maintain despotism under a pretended zeal for piety, justice, and brotherly love. At the con- gress of Verona (October

1822) France, Austria, Russia, and Prussia agreed upon armed intervention in Spain, in spite of the protest of Canning on the part of England. Spain was to be called upon to alter her constitution and to grant greater liberty to- the king, and if an unsatis- factory answer were received France was authorized to. take active measures. The demand was unhesitatingly refused, and a French army, 100,000 strong, at once entered Spain under the duke of Angouléme (April 1823). No effective resistance was made, and Madrid was entered by the invaders (May 23). The cortes, however, had carried off the king to Seville, whence they again retreated to Cadiz. The bombardment of that city terminated the revolution and Ferdinand was released (October 1). His first act was to revoke everything that had been done since 1819. The Inquisition was not restored, but the secular tribunals took a terrible revenge upon the lcaders of the rebellion, The protest of the duke of Angouléme against these cruelties was unheeded. Even the fear of revolt, the last check upon despotism, was removed by the presence of the French army, which remained in Spain till 1827. But Spain had to pay for the restoration of the royal absolutism, as Canning backed up his protest against the intervention of France by acknowledging the independence of the Spanish colonies.

Ferdinand VII. was enabled to finish his worthless and disastrous reign in comparative peace. In 1829 he married a fourth wife, Maria Christina of Naples, and at the same time he issued a “Pragmatic Sanction” abol- ishing the Salic law in Spain. No one expected any practical results from this edict, but a formal protest was made against it by the king’s brothers, Carlos and Francisco, and also by the French and Neapolitan Bour- bons. toa daughter, Isabella, who was proclaimed as queen on H. her father’s death in 1833, while her mother undertook the office of regent. Don Carlos at once asserted his intention of maintaining the Salic law, and rallied round him all the supporters of absolutism, especially the inhab- itants of the Basque Provinces. Christina was compelled to rely upon the liberals, and to conciliate them by the grant of a constitution, the estatuto real, which established two chambers chosen by indirect election. But this con- stitution, drawn up under the influence of Louis Philippe of France, failed to satisfy the advanced liberals, and the Christinos split into two parties, the moderados and pro- gresistas. In 1836 the latter party extorted from the

regent the revival of the constitution of 1812. All this time the Government was involved in a desperate struggle

XXII. — 44

In the next year, however, the queen gave birth Isabella

346

with the Carlists, who at first gained considerable successes under Zumalacarregui and Cabrera. But the death of Zumalacarregui in 1835 and the support of France and England ultimately gave the regent the upper hand, and in 1839 her general, Espartero, forced the Basque Pro- vinces to submit to Isabella. claims in favour of his eldest son, another Carlos, and retired to Trieste, where he died in 1855. Christina now tried to sever herself from the progresistas, and to govern with the help of the moderate party who enjoyed the patronage of Louis Philippe. But England, jealous of

French influence at Madrid, threw the weight of her in-|

fluence on to the side of the radicals, who found a powerful leader in Espartero. In 1840 Christina had to retire to France, and Espartero was recognized as regent by the cortes. But his elevation was resented by the other officers, while his subservience to England made him un- popular, and in 1843 he also had to go into exile. Isabella was now declared of age. and the moderados under Narvaez obtained complete control over the government. This was a great victory for France, and Louis Philippe abused his success by negotiating the infamous “Spanish marriages.” A husband was found for Isabella in her cousin, Francis of Assis, whose recommenda- tion in French eyes was the improbability of his begetting children. On the same day the queen’s sister, Maria Louisa, was married to Louis Philippe’s son, the duke of Mont- pensier. By this means it was hoped to secure the reversion of the Spanish throne for the house of Orleans. The scheme recoiled on the heads of those who framed it. The aliena- tion of England gave a fatal impulse to the fall of Louis Philippe, while the subsequent birth of children to Isabella deprived the Montpensier marriage of all importance. Spanish history during the reign of Isabella II. presents a dismal picture of faction and intrigue. The queen herself sought compensation for her

unhappy marriage in sensual indulgence, and tried to cover the dissoluteness of her private life by a superstitious devotion to religion and by throwing her influence on to the side of the clerical and reactionary party. Every now and then the progre- sistas and moderados forced themselves into office, but their mutual jealousy prevented them from acquiring any permanent hold upon the government. In 1866 Isabella was induced to take vigorous measures against the liberal opposition. Narvaez was appointed chief minister; and the most prominent liberals, Serrano, Prim, and O'Donnell, had to seek safety in exile. The cortes were dissolved, and many of the deputies were transported to the Canary Islands. The ascendency of the court party was main- tained by a rigorous persecution, which was continued after Narvaez's death (April 1868) by Gonzales Bravo. Common dangers succeeded at last in combining the various sections of the liberals for mutual defence, and the people, disgusted by the scandals of the court and the

contemptible camarilla which surrounded the queen, |

rallied to their side. In September 1868 Serrano and Prim returned to Spain, where they raised the standard

Don Carlos renounced his |

sk 4

Christina returned to Madrid, |

[LANGUAGE.

of revolt and offered the people the bribe of universal suffrage. The revolution was speedily accomplished, and Tsabella fled to France, but the successful rebels were at once confronted with the difficulty of finding a successor for her. During the interregnum Serrano undertook the regency, and the cortes drew up a new constitution, by which an hereditary king was to rule in conjunction with a senate and a popular chamber. As no one of the Bourbon candidates for the throne was acceptable, it became neces- sary to look round for some foreign prince. The offer of the crown to Leopold of Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen excited the jealousy of France, and gave

Napoleon III. the oppor- tunity of picking a quarrel, which proved fatal to himself, with the rising state of Prussia. (1870) in Amadeus of Aosta, the second son of Victor Eni- manuel, who made an honest effort to discharge the diffi- cult office of a constitutional king in a country which was hardly fitted for constitutional government. But he found the task too hard and too distasteful, and resigned in 1873. A provisional republic was now formed, of which Castelar was the guiding spirit. But the Spaniards, trained to regard monarchy with superstitious reverence, had no sympathy with republican institutions. Don Carlos seized the opportunity to revive the claim of inalienable male succession, and raised the standard of revolt in the Basque Provinces, where his name was still a power. The dis- orders of the democrats and the approach of civil war threw the responsibility of government upon the army. The cortes were dissolved by a military coup Wétat; Castelar threw up his office in disgust; and the administra- tion was undertaken by a committee of officers. Anarchy was suppressed with a strong hand, but it was obvious that order could only be restored by reviving the monarchy. Foreign princes were no longer thought of, and the crown

was offered to and accepted by Alfonso XII., the young Alfons son of the exiled Isabella (1874). His first task was to XII

terminate the Carlist War, which still continued in the north, and this was successfully accomplished in 1876. Time was required to restore the prosperity of Spain under a peaceful and orderly government and to consolidate by prescription the authority of the restored dynasty. Unfortunately a premature death carried off Alfonso XII. in 1885, before he could complete the work which circum- stances laid upon him. The regency was entrusted to his widow, Christina of Austria, and the birth of a post- humous son (May 17, 1886), who is now the titular king of Spain, has excited a feeling of pitying loyalty which may help to secure the Bourbon dynasty in the last kingdom which is left to it.

Literature.—Lafuente, IJistoria General de Espaiia; Ortiz, Compendio General

| dela Historia de Espatia; Mariana, Historia General de Espaiia (cont. from

1516 to 1600 by Mifiana); Desormeaux, Abrégé Chronologique de UITistoire d'Espagne. For shorter periods sec Prescott, Ferdinand aud Zsabella; Baum- garten, Geschichte Karls V. (the first volume, the only one which has appeared, contains the best account of the rising of the communes) ; Prescott, History of Philip II.; Forneron, I/istotre de Philippe I1.; Weiss, L' Espagne depuis Philippe IT.; Ranke, Die Osmanen und die Spanische Monarchie; Mignet, Nego- tiations relatives & la Succession d Espagne sous Louis X/V.; lippeau, Avénement des Bourbons au tr'éne d'Espagne; Coxe, Memoirs of the Kings of Spain of the House of Bourbon; Baumgarten, Geschichte Spantens vom Ausbruch der Sranzos. Revolution; Lauser, Geschichte Spaniens von dem Sturz Isabellas. (R. L.)

PART IIL—LANGUAGE.

The Iberian Peninsula is not a linguistic unity. Not to speak of the Basque, which still forms an island of some importance in the north-west, three Romance languages

share this extensive territory :—(1) Portuguese-Galician, | spoken in Portugal, Galicia, and a small portion of the |

province of Leon ; (2) Castilian, covering about two-thirds of the Peninsula in the north, centre, and south; (3)

Catalan, occupying a long strip of territory to thie east and south-east.

These three varieties of the Romana Rustica are marked

off from one another much more distinctly than is the case with, say, the Romance dialects of Italy ; they do not interpenetrate one apother, but where the one ends the other begins. It has only been possible to establish at the points of junction of two linguistic regions the exist- ence of certain mixed jargons in which certain forms of each language are intermingled; but these jargons,

| called into existence for the necessities of social relations

by bilinguists, have an essentially individualistic and artificial character. The special development of the vulgar

At last a king was found Amade

CATALAN. |

Latin tongue in Spain, and the formation of the three linguistic types just enumerated, were promoted by the peculiar political circumstances. From the 9th century onwards Spain was slowly recaptured from the Moham- medans, and the Latin spoken by the Christians who had taken refuge on the slopes of the Pyrenees was slowly carried back to the centre and ultimately to the south of the Peninsula, whence it had been driven by the Arab invasion. Medieval Spain divides itself into three con- quistas—that of Castile (much the most considerable), that of Portugal, and that of Aragon; and to these three political conquests correspond an equal number of linguistic varieties. Ifa given province now speaks Catalan rather than Castilian, the explanation is to be sought simply and solely in the fact that it was conquered by a king of Aragon and peopled by his Catalan subjects.

J. CaraLan.—This domain now embraces, on the main- land, the Spanish provinces of Gerona, Barcelona, Tarragona, and Lerida (the old principality of Catalonia), and of Cas- tellon de la Plana, Valencia, and Alicante (the old kingdom of Valencia), and, in the Mediterranean, that of the Balearic Islands (the old kingdom of Majorca). Catalan, by its most characteristic features, belongs to the Romance of southern France and not to that of Spain; itis legitimate, therefore, to regard it as imported into Spain by those Hispani whom the Arab conquest had driven back beyond the mountains into Languedoc, and who in the 9th century regained the country of their origin; this conclusion is confirmed by the fact that the dialect is also that of two French provinces on the north of the Pyrenees—Roussillon and Cerdagne. From the 9th to the 12th century Catalan spread further and further within the limits of Catalonia, properly so called; in 1229 it was brought to Majorca by Jaime el Conquistador, and in 1238 the same sovereign carried it to Valencia also. Even Murcia was peopled by Catalans in 1266, but this province really is part of the Castilian conquest, and accordingly the Castilian element took the upper hand and absorbed the dialect of the earlier colonists. The river Segura, which falls into the

Mediter- ranean in the neighbourhood of Orihuela, a little to the north of Murcia, is as nearly as possible the southern boundary of the Catalan domain ; westward the boundary coincides pretty exactly with the political frontier, the provinces of New Castile and Aragon not being at all encroached on. Catalan, which by the reunion of Aragon and the countship of Barcelona in 1137 became the official language of the Aragonese monarchy,—although the king- dom of Aragon, consisting of the present provinces of Saragossa, Huesca, and Teruel, has always been Castilian in speech,—established a footing in Italy also, in all parts where the domination of the kings of Aragon extended, viz., in Sicily, Naples, Corsica, and Sardinia, but it has not maintained itself there in modern times except in a single district of the last-named island (Alghero) ; every- where else in Italy, where it was not spoken except by the conquerors, nor written except in the royal chancery, it has disappeared without leaving a trace.

From the 13th century the name given to the vulgar tongue of eastern Spain has been Catalanesch (Cata- laniscus) or Catalé (Catalanus),—the idiom of the Cata- lans! By Catalanesch or CatalA was understood, essen- tially, the spoken language and the language of prose, while that of poetry, with a large admixture of Provencal forms, was early called Lemosi, Limosi, or language of Limousin,—Catalan grammarians, and particularly the most celebrated of them, Ramon Vidal de Besalu, having adopted Lemost as the generic name of the language of the troubadours. These grammarians carefully distinguish the vulgar speech, or pla Catald, from the refined trobar

1 The origin of the name Catalanus is unknown.

O47 idiom, which originally is simply a more or less modified form of Provengal. Afterwards, and especially in thesc parts of the Catalan domain outside of Catalonia which did not care to acknowledge that they derived their language from that province, Zemosi received a more extensive signification, so as to mean the literary language in general, whether of verse or of prose. To this hour, particularly in Valencia and the Balearics, Zemosi is em- ployed to designate on the one hand the old Catalan and on the other the very artificial and somewhat archaizing idiom which is current

in the “jochs florals”; while the spoken dialect is called, according to the localities, Valencia (in Valencia), Majorqué and Menorqui (in Majorca and Minorca), or Catald (in Catalonia); the form Cata- lanesch is obsolete.

The principal features which connect Catalan with the Romance of France and separate it from that of Spain are the following. (1) To take first its treatment of the final vowels,—Catalan, like French and Provencal, having only oxytones and paroxytones, does not tolerate more than one syllable after the tonic accent: thus anima gives arma, cdmera gives cambra. All the proparoxytones of modern Catalan are of recent introduction and due to Castilian influence. Further, the only post-tonic Latin vowel pre- served by the Catalan is, as in Gallo-Roman, a: mare gives mar, gratu(s) gives grat, but anima gives arma; and, when the word terminates in a group of consonants requir- ing a supporting vowel, that vowel is represented by an e: arb(o)rem, Cat. abre (Prov. and Fr. arbre, but Cast. drbol) ; pop(u)l(us), Cat. poble (Prov. poble, Fr. peuple, but Cast. pueblo) ; sometimes, when it is inserted between the two consonants instead of being made to follow them, the supporting vowel is represented by an o: escdéndol (sc4ndalum), frévol (frivolus), cércol (circulus). In some cases a post-tonic vowel other than a is preserved in Catalan, as, for example, when that vowel forms a diphthong with the tonic (Deu, Deus; Hbriu, Hebreus); or, again, it sometimes happens, when the tonic is followed by an 7 in hiatus, that the 7 persists (ddldvi, diluvium ; servict, servicium ; ldbi, labium; ciri, cereus); but in many cases these ought to be regarded as learned forms, as is shown by the existence of parallel ones, such as servey, where the atonic 7 has been attracted by the tonic and forms a diphthong with it (servici, servi, servey). What has just been said as to the treatment of the final vowels in Catalan must be understood as applying only to pure Catalan, unaltered by the predominance of the Castilian, for the actual language is no longer faithful to the principle we have laid down; it allows the final o atonic in a number of substantives and adjectives, and in the verb it now con- jugates canto, temo, sento,—a thing unknown in the ancient language. (2) As regards conjugation, only two points need be taken up here :—(a) it employs the form known as the inchoative, that is to say, the lengthening of the radical of the present in verbs of the third conjugation by méans of the syllable ex or 2x, a proceeding common to Italian, Walachian, Provengal, and French, but altogether unknown in Hispanic Romance; (0) the

formation of a great number of past participles in which the termination is added, as in Provengal, not to the radical of the verb, but to that of the perfect : tingut formed from tinch, pogut from poch, conegut from conech, while Castilian says tenido (formerly also tenudo), podido, conocido, that is to say, it forms those participles from the infinitive.

As for features common alike to Catalan and Hispanic (Castilian and Portuguese) Romance, on the other hand, and which are unknown to French Romance, there is only one which possesses any importance, the conservation, namely, of the Latin w with its original sound, while the same vowel has assumed in French and Provencal, from a

very early period,—earlier doubtless than the oldest exist- ing monuments of those languages, —a labio-palatal pro- nunciation (7). It is not to be supposed that the separa- tion of Catalan from the Gallo-Roman family should have occurred before the transformation had taken place ; there is good reason to believe that Catalan possessed the & at one time, but afterwards lost it in its contact with the Spanish dialects. The question, however, is one for further examination.

Catalan being a variety of the langue doc, it will be convenient to note the peculiarities of its phonetic and inflexion as compared with ordinary Provengal.

Tonic Vowels. —With regard to a, which is pronounced alike in open and close syllables (amar, amare ; abre, arbor), there is nothing to remark. The Latin , whieh is treated like %, gives ¢, sometimes close, sometimes open. On this point Catalan is more hesitating than Provengal; it does not distinguish so clearly the pronunciation of ¢ according to its origin ; while é (2) is capable of yielding an open ¢, the is often pronounced close, and the poets have no difficulty in making words in ¢ close and_in e open rhyme together, which is not the case in_Provengal. The Latin 2 never yields ze in Catalan as it does in French and occasionally in Pro- vengal; sedet becomes sew (where w represents the final d), pedem makes peu, and ego ew; in some words where the tonic éis followed by a syllable in which an ¢ occurs, it

may become ¢ (77, héri; mig, médius; mils, mélius); and the same holds good for éin a similar situation (ciri, cérius, céreus; fira, féria), and for ¢ in a close syllable before a nasal (ewimpli, exemplum ; mintré for mentiré, gint for gent). Itonic longand ¢ short, when in hiatus with another vowel, produce % (amich, amicus; via, via). O tonic long and o short are represented by 0 close aud 0 open (amor, amorem; pobdie, populus). O short is never diphthongized into wo or we; such a treatment is as foreign to Catalan as the diphthongization of 2 into te. Just as ¢ before a syllable in which an ¢ occurs is changed into 4, so in the same circumstances 0 becomes wv (full, folium ; vil, volio for voleo) and also when the accented vowel precedes a group of consonants like cl, pl, and the like (ull, oc' lus; escull, scop'lus). Latin w persists with the Latin pronunciation, and, as already said, does not take the Franco-Provengal ronunciation i. Latin aw becomes o (cosa, causa; or, aurum); Old Catalan has kept the diphthong better, but possibly we should attribute the examples of aw which are met with in texts of the 13th and 14th centuries to the literary influence of Provence. Latin wa tends to become o (cor, quare).

Atonic Vowels.—As for the Latin post-tonic vowels already spoken of, it remains to be noted that a is often represented in writing by e, especially before s; in old Catalan, the substantives, adjectives, and participles readily form their singular in a and their plural in es: arma, armes (anima, animas); bona, bones (bona, bonas); amada, amades (amata, amatas). This ¢ is neither open nor close, but a surd ¢ the pronunciation of which comes very near a. In the same way the supporting vowel, which is regularly an e in Catalan, is often written a, especially after 7 (abra, arborem; astra, astrum; para, patrem); onc may say that in the actual state of the language post-tonic ¢ and become indistinguishable in a surd sound inter- mediate between the French a and mutee. Before the tonic the same change between and e¢ constantly takes place; one finds in manuscripts enar, emor for anar, amor (the same manner of writing extends even to the case of the tonic syllable, ten and sent from tantum and sanctum being far from rare), and, on the other hand, antre, arrar, for entre, crrar. JI atonic is often represented by ¢ even when it is long (vehi, vicinus). O atonic close, which in genuine Catalan exists only before the tonic, has become w; at the present day truvar, cuntradir is the real prouunciation of the words spelt trovar, contradir, and in the final syllables, verbal or other, where under

Castilian influence an o has come to be added to the normal Catalan form, this o has the value of a w: trovo (genuine Catalan, trop) is pronounced trovw ; bravo (genuine Catalan, braw) is pronounced bravu. U atonic keeps its ground.

The only strong diphthongs of the spoken language are di, dw (rather rare), éi, éu, éu, 6i, du, ui, uu. At produced by a + 7% or by a + a palatal consonant has for the greater part of the time become an ¢ in the modern language ; factwm has yielded fait, fett, and then jet, the last being the actual form ; arius has given er alongside of aire, ari, which are learned or scmi-learned forms. Of the two weak diphthongs 76 and wd, the latter, as has been secn, tends to become o close in the atonic syllable, and is pronounced w: quaranta has become coranta, then cwranta. After the tonic ua often becomes @ in the Catalan of the mainland (ayga, aqua, ilenga, lingua), while in Majorca it becomes o (aygo, llengo).

Consonants.—Final t readily disappears after 7 or / (tan, tantum; aman, venin, partin, for amant, venint, &c.; mol, multum; ocul, ocultum); the ¢ reappears in composition before a vowel (fon, fontem, but Font-alba). On the other hand, a ¢ without etymo-

logical origin is frequently added to words ending in 7 (cart for car, quare; mart for mar, mare; amart, ohirt, infinitive for amar, ohir), and even to some words terminating in a vowel (gentt, ingenium;

premit, premium), or the addition of the ¢ has taken place by

assimilation to past participles in 74. The phenomenon occurs also in Provengal (sce Romania, vii. 107, viii. 110). Mcdian intervocal d, represented by s (z) in the first stage of the language, has dis- appeared: fidelis gave fesel, then feel, and finally fel; videtis became vezets, then veets, vets, and vew. Final d after a vowel has produced w (pew, pedem; niu, nidum; mou, modum); but, when the d, in consequence of the disappearance of the preceding vowel, rests upon a consonant, it remains

and passes into the correspond- ing surd : frigidus gives fred (pronounced fret). The group dr, when produced by the disappearance of the intermediate vowel, becomes us (creure, credere; ociwrc, occidere; veure, vidére; seure, sedére). Final n, if originally it stood between two vowels, falls away (bo, bonum; vt, vinum), but not when it answers to mn (thus donum makes do, but domnum don; sonum makes so, but somuum son). Nd is reduced to 22 (demanar, comanar for demandar, comandar). Assibilated c before e,7 is treated like d; within a word it disappears after having becn represented for a while by s (lucere gives llusir, lluhir; recipere gives rezcbre, reebre, rebre); at the end of a word it is replaced by wu (vew, vicem; few, fecit). The group c'r gives ur, just like d'r (jawre, jacére; naure, nocére; plaure, placére; but facere, dicere, ducere, make far (fer), dir, dur. Initial 7 has been preserved only in certain monosyllables (the article Jo, los); everywhere else it has been replaced by 7 mouillée (Prov. 7), which in the present ortho- graphy is written 77 as in Castilian, but formerly used to be repre- sented by ly or yl (lletra, litera; Wengua, lingua). JP readily disappears after m, like ¢ after n (cwm, campum ; tems, tempus). B is replaced by the surd p at the end of a word (¢robar in the in- finitive, but trop iu the present tense) ; so also in the interior of a word when it precedes a consonant (supvenir, subvenire, sopte, sub'to). Median intervocalic f gives v (Estéve, Stephanus); it has disappeared from profundus, which yiclded the form preon, then pregon (g being introduced to obviate the hiatus). V, wher- ever it has been preserved, has the same pronunciation as } ; at the end of a word and between vowels it becomes vocalized into w (swau, suavis; viure, vivere). C guttural, written gw before ¢ and i, keeps its ground as a central and as a final letter ; in the latter position it is generally written ch (amich, amicum ; joch, jocum). @G guttural is replaced as a final letter by surd c (longa, but lone ; trigar, but trich). Tj after a consonant gives ss (cassar, captiare) ; between vowels, after having been represented by soft s, it has disappeared (rationem gave razd, raysd, then rahd) ; at the end of every word it behaves like ts, that is to say, changes into w (pre, pretium); instead of ts the second person plural of the verb —at(i)s, et(i)s, it(i)s—now has au, en, tu after having had ats, ets, its. Dj gives g between vowels (verger, viridiarum), and é asa terminal (written either zg or tx: goig, gaudium, mig, mita, medium). St and sc before ¢ and ¢, as well as « and ps, yield the sound sh, represented in Catalan by « (angoxa, angustia ; concixer, cognoscere; dix, dixit; mateix,metipse). Jalmost everywhere has taken the sound of the French j

(jutgc, &c.). Lj and Il give 1 mouillée (22 in the present orthography: ili, filium ; consell, con- silium; null, nullum). In the larger portion of the Catalan domain this 7 mouillée has become y ; almost everywhere iy is pro- nounced for fill, consey for consell. Nj and nn give n mouillée (ny in both old and modern spelling: senyor, seniorem; any, anuum). Sometimes the ny becomes reduced to y; one occasionally meets in manuscripts with scyor, ay, for senyor, any, but this pronunciation has not become general, as has been the case with the y having its origin in 72, Lingual r at the end of a word has a tendency to dis- appear when preceded by a vowel: thus the infinitives amare, temere, *legire are pronounced amd, temé, llegt. It is never pre- served except when protected by the non-etymological ¢ already spoken of (Jlegirt or liegt, but never Jegir) ; the r reappears, never- theless, whenever the infinitive is followed by a pronoun (donarme, dirho). Rs is reduced to s (cos for cors, corpus). H is merely an orthographic sign ; itis used to indicate that two consecutive vowels do not form a diphthong (vehi, raho), and, added to c, it denotes the pronunciation of the guttural ¢ at the end of a word (amich). Inflecion.—Catalan, unlike Old Provengal and Old French, has never had declensions. It is true that in certain texts (cspecially metrical texts) certain traces of case-endings are to be met with, as for example Deus and Deu, amors and amor, clars and clar, forts and fort, twyt and tots, abdwy and abdos, senyer and senyor, emperaire and emperador; but, since these forms are used convertibly, the nominative form when the word is in the objective, and the accusative form when the word is the subject, we can only recog- nize in these cases a confused recollection of the Provengal rules known only to the literate but of which the transcribers of manu- scripts took no account. Catalan, then, makes no distinctions save in the gender and the number of its nouns. As regards the forma- tion of the plural only two observations are necessary. (1) Words which have their radical termination in but which in the singular

drop that , resume it in the plural before s: homin-em makes ome in the singular and omens in the plural; asin-wm makes ase and asens. (2) Words terminating in s surd or sonant and in z anciently formed their plural by adding to the singular the syllable es (bras, brasses ; pres, preses; mateiaz, mateixes), but subsequently, from about the 15th century, the Castilian

influence substituted os, so that one now hears brassos, presos, mateixos. The words in tw, se, st have been assimilated to words in s (x); from bosch we originally had the plural bosches, but now boscos; from trist, tristes, but now ¢ristos. or these last in s¢ there exists a plural formation which is more in accordance with the genius of the language, and consists in the suppression of the s before the ¢; from aquest, for example, we have now side by side the two plurals aquestos, in the Castilian manner, and aguets. The article is lo, los (pro- nounced Ju, dus in a portion of the domain), fem. Ja, les (las). Some instances of /¢ occur in the ancient tongue, applying indif- ferently to the nominative and the objective case; ef applying to the singular is also not wholly unknown. .On the north-western border of Catalonia, and in the island of Majorca, the article is not a derivative from ile but from ipse (sing. masc. es or so, fem. sa; pl. masc. es, and also ets, which appears to come from istos,—ets for ests, like aquets for aquests,—fem. sas). Compare the corresponding Sardinian forms sw, sa, pl. sos, sas. On the pronouns it has only to be remarked that the modern language has borrowed from Castilian the composite forms nosaltres and vosaltres (pronounced also nosaltros and nosatrus), as also the form vostd, vusté (Castilian wsted for vuestra mereed).

Conjugation.—Catalan, and especially modern Catalan, has greatly narrowed the domain of the 2d conjugation in Gre ; a large number of verbs of this conjugation have been treated as if they belonged to the 8d in ére ; debere makes deure, videre, veure, and alongside of haber, which answers to habére, there is a form heure which points to habére. A curious fact, aud one which has arisen since the 15th ceutury, is the addition of a paragogic 7 to those infinitives which are accented on the radical ; in a portion of the Catalan domain one hears erewrer, veurer. Some verbs origin- ally belonging to the conjugation in ére have passed over into that ini; for example tenére gives tenir alongside of tindre, remanére romanir and romandre. In the gerundive and in the present participle Catalan differs from Provengal in still distinguishing the conjugation in ir from that in er, re,—saying, for example, sentimt. As in Provengal, the past participle of a large number of verbs of the 2d and 8d conjugations is formed, not from the infinitive, but from the perfect (pogut, volqut, tingut suggest the perfects poch, voleh, tinch, and not the infinitives poder, voler, tenir). In the present indicative and subjunctive many verbs in ir take the inchoative form already

described, by lengthening the radical in the three persons of the singular and in the third person of the plural by means of the syllable ese (ise) ; agrahir has the present indicative agraeseh, agrahcixes, agraheiz, agrahetixen, the present subjunctive agraesea, -as, -a, -an (or more usually now agraesqui, -1s, -t, -in). The old perfect of the conjugation in ar had ¢ (also 7) in the Ist pers. sing. and -d in the 3d; alongside of the -d, which is proper to Catalan exclusively, we also find, in the first period of the language, -ct as in Provencal. Subsequently the perfect of the three conjugations has admitted forms in -r (amdres, amirem, amdreu, amaren), derived from the ancient pluperfect amara, &¢., which has held its ground down to the present day, with the meaning of a conditional in some verbs (one still hears fora, haguera). But the simple perfect is no longer employed in the spoken language, which has substituted for it a periphrastic perfect, composed of the infinitive of the verb and the present of the auxiliary anar: vaig pendre, for example, does not mean ‘I am going to take,” but ‘‘I have taken.” The earliest example of this periphrastic perfect carries us back to the 15th century. The most usual form of the subj. pres. in spoken Catalan is that in -i for all the three conjugations (amt, -ts, -t, -em, -cu, -in; temi, -is, &e.; senti, -is, &c.) ; it appears to be an abbreviation from ~~ta, and in effect certain subjunctives, such as cdntia, témia, tinguia, vinguia (for cante, tema, tinga, vingia), evidently formed upon sia (subj. of esser), have been and still are used. The same? of the present sub~~ junctive, whatever may be its origin, is still found in the imper- fect : amés, -essts, -e8, -essim, &c.

Catalan Dialect of Alghero (Sardinia).—As compared with that of the mainland, the Catalan of Alghero, introduced into this portion of Sardinia by the Aragonese conquerors and colonists, does not present any very important differences ; some of them, such as they are, are explicable by the influence of the indigenous dialects of Sassari and Logudoro. In phonetics one observes—(1) the change of Yj into y as an initial before 7 (yitx, yigis ; lego, legis), a change Which does not take place in the Catalan of the mainland except in the interior, or at the end of the word 3 (2) the frequent change of 1 between vowels and of J after é, 9,f, p or b into r (taura, tabula; candera, candela; sangrot, singultum ; frama, flama). In conjuga- tion there are some notable peculiarities. The 1st pers. sing. does hot take the o which continental Catalan has borrowed from Castilian (cant, not canto, &c.); the imp. ind. of verbs of the 2d

and 8d eonjugations has eva, iva instead of ta, a form which also occurs in the conditional (cantariva, drumiriva) ; the simple per- fect, of which some types are still prescrved in the actual language (¢.g., anighé, aghé), has likewise served for the formation not only of tho past participle but also of the infinitive (agher, habere, can only be explained by aeh, 3d person of the perfect); the infinitives with r paragogic (viurer, seurer, plourer) are not used (viure, secure, ploure instead); in the conjugation of the present of the verb essar or esser, the 2d pers. sing. ses formed upon the persons of the plural, while continental Catalau says ets (anciently est), as also, in the plural, sem, sew, instead of som, sow, are to be noted ; tenere has passed over to the conjugation in re (trenda=tendre), but it is at the same time true that in ordinary Catalan also we have tindrer alongside of tenir the habitual form; diccre gives not dir but diwre, which is more regular.

II. Castitran,—This name (derived from the kingdom of Castile, the most powerful element in the Spanish monarchy) is the most convenient designation to apply to the linguistic domain which comprises the whole of central Spain and the vast regions of America and Asia colonized from the 16th century onwards by the Spaniards. We

‘might also indeed call it the Spanish domain, narrowing

the essentially geographical meaning of the word Espaiiol (derived, like the other old form Hspaiion, from 1 ispania), and using it in a purely political sense. But the first expression is to be preferred, all the more because it has been long in use, and even the inhabitants of the domain outside the two Castiles fully accept it and are indced the first to call their idiom Castellano. It is agreed on all hands that Castilian is one of the two branches of the vulgar Latin of Spain, Portuguese-Galician being the other ; both idioms, now separated by very marked differ- ences, can be traced back directly to one common source —the Hispanic Romance. One and the same vulgar tongue, diversely modified in the lapse of time, has pro- duced Castilian and Portuguese as two varieties, while Catalan, the third language of the

Peninsula, connects itself, as has already been pointed out, with the Gallo-Roman.

Within the Castilian domain, thus embracing all in Spain that is neither Portuguese nor Catalan, there exist linguistic varieties which it would perhaps be an exag- geration to call dialects, considering the meaning ordinarily attached to that word, but which are none the less worthy of attention. Generally speaking, from various circum- stances, and especially that of the reconquest, by which the already-formed idiom of the Christian conquerors and colonists was gradually conveyed from north to south, Castilian has maintained a uniformity of which the Romance languages afford no other example. We shall proceed in the first instance to examine the most salient features of the normal Castilian, spoken in the provinces more or less closely corresponding to the old limits of Old and New Castile, so as to be able afterwards to note the peculiarities of what, for want of a better expression, we must call the Castilian dialects.

In some respects Castilian is hardly further removed from classical Latin than is Italian; in others it has approximately reached the same stage as Provencal. As regards the tonic accent and the treatment of the vowels which come after it, Castilian may be said to be essentially a paroxytonic language, though it does not altogether refuse proparoxytonic accentuation and it would be a mistake to regard vocables like lémpara, ldgrima, rapido, &c., as learned words. In this feature, and in its almost universal conservation of the final vowels e, 7, w (0), Castilian comes very near Italian, while it separates from it and approaches the Gallo-Roman by its modification of the consonants.

Vowels.—Normal Castilian faithfully preserves the vowels é, 7, 6, %; the comparatively infrequent instances in which @ and 6 are

treated like 2 and 6 must be attributed to the working of analogy. It diphthongizes % in ze, o in we, which may be regarded as a

weakening of uo (see Romania, iv. 30). Sometimes te and wc in the modern language are changed into 7 and e: silla from s¢lla (Old Cast. siella),

vispera from véspera (Old Cast. viespera), castillo from castéllum/(Old Cast. castiello), frente from frontem (Old Cast. fruente), fleco from floccus (Old Cast. flueco). The words in which %and Jv have kept their ground are either learned words like médico, mérito, or have been borrowed from dialects which do not suffer diphthongization. In many cases the old language is more rigorous ; thus, while modern Castilian has given the preference to mentc, como, modo, we find in old texts miente, cuemo, muedo. Lat. au makes 0 in all words of popular origin (cosa, oro, &c.).

Consonants. —On the liquids J, m, n, 7 there is little to be re- marked, except that the last-named letter has two pronunciations— one soft (voiced), asin amor, burla, the other hard (voiceless), as in rendir, tierra (Old Cast. in this case goes so far as to double the initial consonant : rrcndir)—and that is often inserted before s and d: ensayo, mensage, rendir (reddere), L mouillée (written 77) re- presents not only the Latin J, 1, , but also, at the beginning of words, the combinations cl, gl, pl, bl, fl: llama (flamima), llave (clavis), Ulorar (plorare); the tendency of the modern language is, as in Catalan, to reduce JJ to y; thus one readily hears yeno (plenum). NV mouillée (7) corresponds to the Latin xn, mn, nj, and sometimes to initial n: afo (annum), dafio (damnum), fiudo (nodum). Passing that are popularly current and belong to the old stoek of the language, can only be derived from Lat. ét, pt, and sometimes ct, as in meter (mittere), catar (captare), punto (punctum); but it is to be observed that the habitual mode of representing c in normal Castilian is by ch (prou. tch), as in derecho (directum), pecho (pectus), so that we may take those words in which ¢ alone represents cf as secondary forms of learned words; thus we have bendito, otubre, santo as secondary forms of the learned words bendicto, octubre, sancto, alongside of the old popular forms bendicho, ochubre, sancho. D corresponds in Castilian to Latin ¢ between vowels, or ¢ before 7: amado (amatus), padre (patrem), At the present day the d of the suffixes ado, ido is no longer pronounced throughout the whole extent of the domain, and the same holds good also of the final d: salw, poné, for salud, poned (from salutem, ponite). Sometimes d takes the interdental sound of z (English th), or is changed into J; witness the two pronuuciations of the name of the capital—Madriz and Madril (adj. Madrileno). The study of the spirants c, 2, 3; 9, j is made a very delicate one by the circumstance that the interdental pronunciation of ¢, 2 on the one

hand, and the guttural pronunciation of g, j on the other, are of comparatively recent date, and convey no notion of the value of these letters before the 17th century. It is admitted, not without reason, that the spirants c, z, which at present represent but one interdental sound (a lisped s, or a sound between s and Eng. th in thing), had down till about the middle of the 16th century the voiceless sound ¢s and the voiced sound dz respectively, and that in like manner the palatal spirants g, j, 2, before assuming the uniform pronunciation of the guttural spirant (=Germ. ch in Buch), had previously represented the voiced sound of % (Fr. 7) and the voiceless sound of § (Fr. ch), which are still found in Portuguese and in the Castilian dialects of the north-west. The substitution of these interdental and guttural sounds for the surd and sonant spirants respectively did certainly not take place simul- taneously, but the vacillations of the old orthography, and afterwards the decision of the Spanish Academy, whieh suppressed x (=3; x was retaincd for cs) and allows only c and g before e and 7, z and j before a, 0, «, make it impossible for us to follow, with the help of the written texts, the course of the transformation. S uow has the voiceless sound even between vowels: casa (pronounced cassa) ; final s readily falls away, especially before liquids: todo dos for todos los, vamono for vamos nos. The principal sources of j (g) are—Lat. y and g before e and 7 (juego, jocum ; gente, gentem); Lat. initial s (jabon, saponem); Lat. x (cojo, coxum); J, ol (consejo, con- silium; ojo, oc'lum). The sources of z © are Lat. cc, gy, Y, 8 (cielo, caclum; calza, ealcea; razon, rationem; zampona, sym- phonia). As regards the spirants fand 4, itis to be observed that at the beginning of a word f has in many instances been replaced by the aspirated / (afterwards silent), while in others no less current among the people the transformation has not taken place; thus we have Azjo (filium) alongside of fiesta (festa). In some cases the iP has been preserved in order to avoid confusion that might arise from identity of sound: the fin fied (fidelis) has been kept for the sake of distinction from hiel (fel). As for v, it has a marked tendency to beeome confounded, especially as an initial letter, with the sonant explosive 0; Joseph Scaliger's pun—bibere est vivere—is applicable to the Castilians as well as to the Gaseons. fH is now uothing more than a graphie sign, except in Andalusia, where the aspirate sound represented by it comes very near j. Words be- ginning in hue, where the h, not etymologically derived, marks the inseparable aspiration of the initial diphthong we, are readily pronounced giie throughout almost the whole

extent of the domain : giele for hucle(olet); giieso for hweso (os). This gie extends also to words beginning with bwe: gieno for bucno (bonum).

sSParty

to the dentals, except as an initial, ¢ in words’

LANGUAGE.

Inflewion.—There is uo trace of declension either in Castilian or in Portuguese. Some nominative forms—Diés (anciently Déos, and in the Castilian of the Jews Dio), Cdrlos, Marcos, sastre (sartor)— have been adopted instead of forms derived from the accusative, but the vulgar Latin of the Peninsula in no instance presents two forms (subjective and objective case) of the same substantive. The article is derived from ille, as it is almost everywhere throughout the Romance regions: el, Ja, and a neuter lo; los, las. The plural of the first and second personal pronoun has in the modern language taken a composite form—zosotros, vosotros—which has been initated in Catalan. Quien, the interrogative pronoun which has taken the place of the old qui, seems to come from quem,

Conjugation.—The conjugation of Castilian (and Portuguese) de- rives a peculiar interest from the archaic features which it retains. The vulgar Latin of Spain has kept the pluperfeet indicative, still in eurrent use as a secondary form of the conditional (cantdra, ven- diéra, partiéra), and, what is more remarkable still, as not occurring anywhere else, the future perfect (cantare, vendiére, partiérc, formerly cantéro, vendiéro, partiéro). The Latin future has been replaced, as everywhere, by the periphrasis (eantare habeo), but it is worth noticing that in certain old texts of the 13th century, and in the popular songs of a comparatively ancient date which have been preserved in Asturias, the auxiliary can still precede the infinitive (habeo cantare), as with the Latin writers of the decadence: ‘“‘Mucho de mayor pregio a seer el tu manto Que non serd el nuestro a (Berceo, S. Lawr., str. 70), where a seer (habet sedere) corresponds exactly to serd (sedere habet). The vulgar Latin of the Peninsula, moreover, has preserved the 2d pers. pl. of the imperative (cantad, vendcd, partid), which has disappeared from all the other Romance languages.. Another special feature of Castilian-Portuguese is the complete absence of the form of conjugation known as

inchoative (intercalation, in the present tense, of the syllable ise or csc between the radical and the inflexion), although in all the other tenses, except the present, Spanish shows a tendency to lay the accent upon the same syllable in all the six persons, which was the object aimed at by the inchoative form, Castilian displaces the accent on the Ist and 2d pers. pl. of the imperfeet (cantdbamos, cantdbais), of the pluperfect indicative (cantdramos, cantdrais), and of the imperfect subjunctive (cantdsemos, cantdseis) ; possibly the impulse to this was given by the forms of future perfect cantdremos, cantdrets (cantartmus, cantaritis). The 2d persons plural were formerly (except in the perfect) -ades, -cdes, ~~ides ; it was only in the course of the 16th century that they got reduced, by the falling away of d, to ais, eis, and ts, The verb essere has been mixed, not as in the other Romance languages with stare, but with sedere, as is proved by older forms seer', sicdes, sieden, seyendo, obviously derived from sedere, and which have in the texts sometimes the meaning of 'to be seated," sometimes that of 'to be," and sometimes both. In old Latin charters also sedere is frequently met with in the sense of esse: c.g., "sedeat istum meum donativum quietum et securum" (anno 1134), where sedeat=sit, The 2d pers. sing. of the present of ser is eres, which is best explained as borrowed from the imperfect (eras), this tense being often used in Old Spanish with the meaning of the present; alongside of cres one finds (but only in old documents or in dialects) sos, formed like sois (2d pers, pl.) upon somos, The aceentuation in the inflexion of perfects in the conjugation called strong, like hubiéron, hiziéron, which cor~~ respond to habuérunt, fecérunt (while in the other Romanee lan- guages the Latin type is érunt: Fr. curent, firent), may be regarded as truly etymological, or rather as a result of the assimilation of these perfects to the perfects known as weak (amdron), for there are dialectic forms having the aceent on the radical, such as dixon, hizon. The past participle of verbs in e7 was formerly wdo (utus) in most cases ; at present do serves for all verbs in er and ir, except some ten or twelve in which the participle has retained the Latin form accented on the radical : dicho, hecho, visto, &e. It ought to be added that the past participle in normal Castilian derives its theme not from the perfect but from the infinitive: habido, sabido, from haber, saber, not from hubo, sipo.

CastitIAN DrALEcrs.—To discover the features by which these are distinguished from normal Castilian we must turn to old charters aud to

certain modern compositions in which the provincial forms of speech have been reproduced more or less faithfully.

Asturian.—The Asturian idiom, called by the natives bable, is differentiated from the Castilian by the following characters. Je oceurs, as in Old Castiliau, in words formed with the suffix cllum (castiellu, portiellw, while modern Castilian has reduced ze to 7. E, i, uw, post-tonic for a, ¢, 0: penes (penas), gracics (gracias), esti (este), frenti (frente), lecht (leche), nuecht (noche), wnu (uno), primeru (primero). There is no guttural spirant, j, but, according to circumstances, y or # (8); thus Lat. cl, j gives y: vey (*veelus), espeyu (spec'lum), conseyw (consilium); and after an @ this y is hardly perceptible, to judge by the forms fiw (filium), escoidos (Cast. escogidos), Castia (Castilla) ; Lat. g before c and 7, Lat. initial j, aud Lat. ss, a, give x ($)—«iente (gentem), wudiu (Judaeus), baxu (bassus), cou (coxus), floxu (fluxus). Lat. initial / has | kept its ground, at least in part of the province: jiu, fucya (Cast.

a. ae

CASTILIAN. |

hijo, hoja). Avery marked feature is the habitual ‘‘mouillure” of Zand m as initial letters : leche, lleer, lluna, llutu; fion, fiunca, fiueve, fiube. With respect to inflexion the following forms may be noted :—personal pronouns : 7 (¢2/2), yos (dllos); possessive pro- nouns: mid, pl. mids; to, tos; so, sos for both masc. and fem.; verbs: 8d pers. pl. imp. of the 2d and 8d conjugations in in for ien (Cast. ian); train, tenin, facin (from facer), fiin (from fer), and even some instances of the 2d pers. sing. (abis; Cast. habias) ; instances of pres. subj. in ia for a (strvia, métia, sépia). The verb ser gives yes (sometimes yeres) in the 2d pers. sing., ye in the 8d. Facere appears under two forms—/acer and fer,—and to the abridged form correspond /fcis, fiendo, fiin, ke. Ire often appears under the form dir (antes de diros=antes de iros), which it is not neeessary to explain by de-ire (see Schuchardt, Ztschr. f. rom. Philol., v. 312).

Navarrese-Aragonese.—In its treatment of the post-tonic vowels this dialect parts company with normal Castilian and comes nearer Catalan, in so far as it drops the final ¢, especially after nt, rt (mont, plazient, muert, fuert,

parents, gents); and, when the atonic ehas dropped after a v, this v becomes a vowel—brew (brevem), gricu (*grevem), nucw (novem). Navarrese-Aragonese has the diphthongs ze, wc from tonic % and 8, and adheres more strictly to them than normal Castilian does,—cwende (cSmitem), huey (hodie), pucyo (podium), yes (Est), yeran (érant), while Castilian says conde, hoy, poyo, cs, cran. The initial combinations cl, pl, fi, have withstood the transformation into Z/ better than in Castilian : plano, pleno, plega, clamado, flama are current in old documents ; and at the present day, although the 7 has come to be *‘mouillée,” the first consonant has not disappeared (pllwma, pllord, pllano— pronounced pijuma, &c.). Lat. ct gives it, not ch as in Castilian : nucyt (noctem), destruito (destructum), proveito (provectum), dito for diito (dictum). D between vowels kept its ground longer than in Castilian : documents of the 14th century supply such forms as vidieron, vido, hudio, provedir, redemir, prodeza, Benedit, vidiendo, &c.; but afterwards y came to be substituted for d or dj: veyere (videre), seyer (sedere), seya (sedeat), goyo (gaudium), enueyo (inodium). Initial fdoes not change intoh: jillo, feito. Navarrese- Aragonese does not possess the guttural spirant (j) of Castilian, which is here rendered according to circumstances either by g (Fr. Jj) or by i (7 mouillée), but never by the Asturian x Certain forms of the conjugation of the verb differ from the Castilian: dar, cstar, haver, saber, poner readily form their imperfects and imperfect subjunetives like the regular verbs in ar and er,—havicron (Cast. hubieron), estaron (Cast. estubieron), sabié (Cast. supo), dascn (Cast. diesen), ponicse (Cast. pusiesc) ; on the other hand, past participles and gerundives formed from the perfect are to be met with, —fisiendo for faciendo (perf. fiso), tuviendo and tuvido for teniendo, tenido (perf. twvo). In the region bordering on Catalonia the simple perfect has given way before the periphrastic form proper to Catalan: voy cayer (I fell), va fé (he has done), vamos ir (we went), &e.; the imperfects of verbs in er, ir, moreover, are found in eba, tba (comeba, subiba, for comia, subia), and some presents also occur where the Catalan influence makes itself felt : estigo (Cat. cstich), vaigo (Cat. vaig), veigo (Cat. veig). Navarrese-Aragonese makes use of the adverb cn asa pronoun: no les en daren pas, non hi ha.

Andalusian.—The word “dialect” is still more appropriately applied to Andalusian than either to Asturian or Navarrese- Aragonese. Many

peculiarities of pronunciation, however, are commonly called Andalusian which are far from being confined to Andalusia proper, but are met with in the vulgar speech of many parts of the Castilian domain, both in Europe and in America. Of these but a few occur only there, or at least have not yet been observed elsewhere than in that great province of southern Spain. They are the following. JL, n, 7, d between vowels or at the end of a word disappear: sd (sal), sé (sol), vice (viene), tiec (tienc), paa and pa (para), mia (mira), naw and na (nada), too and to (todo). D is dropped even from the beginning of a word: e (de), inero (dinero), on (don). Before an explosive, 2, r, d are often represented

Y 4: saiga (salga), vaiga (valga), laigo (largo), maire (madre), paire (padrc). Lat. f is more rigorously represented by h than in normal Castilian, and this A here preserves the aspirate sound which it has lost elsewhere ; habld, horma (forma), hoder, are pronouneed with a very strong aspiration, almost identical with that of 7. The Andalusians also very readily write these words jabld, jorma, joder. This aspirate, expressed by 7, often has no etymologieal origin; for example, Jdéndalo, a nickname applied to Andalusians, is simply the word Andaluz pronounced with the strong aspiration characteristic of the inhabitants of the province. C, 2 are seldom pronounced like s; but a feature more peculiar to the Andalusians is the inverse process, the softened and interdental ee non of the s (the so-called ceceo): zefior (sefior), &c.

efore a consonant and at the end of a word s becomes a simple aspiration : mihmo (mismo), Dioh (Dios), do reales (dos reales). In the inflexion of the verb there is nothing speeial to note, except Some instances of 2d pers. sing. of the perfect in tes for te: estuvistes, estuvites, for estuviste,—evidently a formation by analogy from the 24 pers. of the other tenses, which all have:s.

csPrPAiN

301

It is with the Andalusian dialect that we can most readily asso- ciate the varieties of Castilian which are spoken in South America. Here some of the most characteristic features of the language of the extreme south of Spain are reproduced,—either because the Cas- tilian of America has spontaneously passed throngh the same phonetic transformations or because

the Andalusian element, very strongly represented in colonization, suceeeded in transporting its local habits of speech to the New World.

Leonesc. —Proceeding on inadequate indications, the existence of a Leonese dialect has been imprudently admitted in some quarters ; but the old kingdom of Leon cannot in any way be considered as constituting a linguistic domain with an individuality of its own. The fact that a poem of the 13th century (the Alexandro), and certain redactions of the oldest Spanish code, the Fuero Juzgo, have a Leonese origin has been made too much of, and has led to a tendency to localize excessively certain features common to the whole western zone where the transition takes place from Castilian to Galician- Portuguese,

Ill. Porrucursr.—Portuguese-Galician constitutes the second branch of the Latin of Spain. In it we must dis- tinguish—(1) Portuguese (Portuguez, perhaps a contraction from the old Portugalez = Portugalensis), the language of the kingdom of Portugal and its colonies in Africa, Asia, and America (Brazil) ; (2) Galician (Gallego), or the language of the old kingdom of Galicia (the modern provinces of Pontevedra, La Corufia, Orense, and Lugo) and of a portion of the old kingdom of Leon (the territory of Vierzo in the province of Leon). Portuguese, like Castilian, is a literary language, which for ages has served as the vehicle of the literature of the Portuguese nation constituted in the be- ginning of the 12th century. Galician, on the other hand, which began early in the Middle Ages a literary life,—for it was employed by Alfonso the Wise in his cantigas in honour of the Virgin,—decayed in proportion as the monarchy of Castile and Leon, to which Galicia had been annexed, gathered force and unity in its southward conquest. At the present day Gallego, which is simply Portuguese variously modified and with a development in some respects arrested, is far from having as a dialect the same importance as Catalan, not only because the Spaniards who speak it (1,800,000) number much less than the Catalans (3,500,000), but also because, its literary culture having been early abandoned in favour of Castilian, it inevitably fell into the vegetative condition of a provincial patois. Speaking generally, Portuguese is further removed than Castilian from Latin; its development has gone further, and its actual forms are more worn out than those of the sister language, and hence it has, not with- out reason, been compared to French, with which it

has some very notable analogies. But, on the other hand, Portuguese has remained more exclusively Latin in its vocabulary, and, particularly in its conjugation, it has managed' to preserve several features which give it, as compared with Castilian, a highly archaic air. Old Portuguese, and more especially the poetic language of the 13th century, received from the language of the trouba- dours, in whose poetry the earlier Portuguese poets found much of their inspiration, certain words and certain turns of expression which have left upon it indelible traces.

Vowcls.~~—Lat. @, 6 with the aceent have not been diphthongized into te, wo, ue: pé (pedem), dez (deeem), bom (bonus), pode (potet). On the other hand, Portuguese has a large number of strong diphthongs produced by the attraction of an 7 in hiatus or the resolution of an explosive into 7: raiba (rabia), feira (feria), feito (factum), seéxo (saxum), otto (oeto). A quite peculiar feature of the language occurs in the ''nasal vowels," which are formed by the Latin accented vowels followed by m, n, or nt, nd: bz (bene), gra (grandem), 66(bonum). These nasal vowels enter into com~~ bination with a final atonic vowel: irma&o (germanus); also amdo (amant), sermdo (sermonem), where the 0 is a degenerated repre- sentative of the Latin final vowel. In Old Portuguese the nasal vowel or diphthong was not as now marked by the il (~), but was expressed indifferently and without regard to the etymology by m or n: bem (bene), tan (tantum), disscrom (dixerunt), sermom (sermonem). The Latin diphthong aw is rendered in Portuguese by ow (owro, aurum ; powco, paucum), also pronounced of. With regard to the atonic vowels, there is a tendency to reduce a into a

vowel resembling the Fr. ¢ ' muet," to pronounce o as u, and to drop ¢ after a group of consonants (dent for dente).

Consonants. —Here the most remarkable feature, and that which most distinctly marks the wear and tear through which the language has passed, is the disappearance of the median consonants J and 7: eoréa (corona), lua (luna), pér formerly poer (ponere), conego (canonieus), vir (venire), dér, formerly door (dolorem), paco (palatium), saude (salutem), pego (pelagus). Latin b passes regularly into Uv: cavallo (caballus), fava (faba), arvore (arborem) ; but, on the other hand, Latin initial v readily tends to become 6:

bexiga (vesica), bodo (votum). Latin initial 7 never becomes h: fazer (facere), filo (filum). Latin c before ¢ and i is represented either by the hard sibilant s or by the soft z. Latin g between vowels is dropped before ¢ and 4: ler for leer (legere), dedo (digitum); the same is the case with d, of eourse, +n similar circumstances: remir_ (redimere), rir (ridere), Latin j has assumed the sound of the French 7. The Latin combinations cl, fl, pl at the beginning of words are transformed in two ways in words of popular origin. Either the initial consonant is retained while the 7 is changed into r: eravo (clavum), prazer (placere), fror (florem); or the group is changed in ch (=Fr. ch, Catal. 2) through the intermediate sounds kj, fj, wi: chamar (clamare), chao (planus), chamma (flamma). Within the word the same group and other groups also in which the second consonant is an / produce / mouillée (written 7h, just as mouillée is written nh, as in Provengal): ovelha (ovic'la), velho (*veclus); and sometimes ch: facho (fac'lum), ancho (a mplum). Lat. ss or s¢ before e and 4 gives a (Fr. ch): batmo (bassus), faa (fascia). The group cf is reduced to tt: letto (lectum), pedto (pectus), notte (noctem); sometimes to ut: dowto (doctus). Such words as fruto, reto, dileto are modern derivatives from the learned forms /ructo, recto, dilecto. Latin cs becomes 1s: seis (sex); or isc, @ (=Fr. ich, ch): seiaxo (saxum), Jwao (luxum); or even ss: disse (dixi).

Inflexion.—The Portuguese article, now reduced to the vocalic form 0, @, 08, as, was lo (exceptionally also el, which still survives in the expression El-Rei), la, los, las in the old language. Words ending in / in the singular lose the 7 in the plural (because it then becomes median, and so is dropped): sod (solem), but soes (soles); those having do in the sing. form the plural either in des or in des aceording to the etymology: thus cao (canem) makes cdes, but ra¢do makes racdes. As regards the pronoun, mention inust be made of the non-etymological forms of the personal mim and of the feminine possessive minha, where the second 7 has been brought in by the initial nasal. Portuguese conjugation has more that is interesting. In the personal suffixes the forms of the 2d pers. pl. in ades, edes, ides lost the d in the 15th century, and have now become ats, ets, ts through the intermediate forms aes, ces, eis. The form in des has persisted only in those verbs where it was protected by the eon- sonants 7 or 7 preceding it: pondes, tendes, vindes, amardes, and also no doubt in some forms of the present of the imperative, where the theme has been reduced to an extraordinary degree

by the disappear- ance of a consonant and the contraction of vowels: ddes, credes, ledes, &e. Portuguese is the only Romance language which possesses a per- sonal or conjugated infinitive: amar, amar-es, amar, amar-mos, amar-des, amar-em ; &g., antes de sair-mos, ‘““before we go out.” Again, Portuguese alone has preserved the pluperfect in its original meaning, so that, for example, amara (amaveram) signifies not merely as elsewhere ‘‘I would love,” but also ‘‘l had loved.” The future perfect, retained as in Castilian, has lost its vowel of in- flexion in the 1st and 3d pers. sing. aud consequently becomes liable to be confounded with the infinitive (amar, render, partir). Portuguese, though less frequently than Castilian, employs ter (tenere) as an auxiliary, alongside of aver ; and it also supplements the use of essere with sedere, which furnished the subj. sea, the imperative se, sede, the gerundive sendo, the participle sido, and some other tenses in the old language. Among the peculiarities of Portuguese conjugation may be mentioned—(1) the assimilation of the 3d pers. sing. to the 1st in strong perfects (howve, pude, qwiz, fez), while Castilian has hube and hubo; (2) the imperfeets punha, tinha, vinha (from por, ter, and vir), which are accented on the radical in order to avoid the loss of the 2 (ponta would have made pota), and which substitute w and 7 for o and ¢ in order to dis- tinguish from the present subjunctive (ponha, tenha, venha).

sf a ae

(LITERATURE.

Galictan.—Almost all the phonetic features which distinguish Portuguese from Castilian are possessed by Gallego also. Portu- guese and Galician even now are practically one language, and still more was this the ease formerly: the identity of the two idioms would become still more obvious if the orthography employed by the Galicians were more strictly phonetic, and if certain trauscrip- tions of sounds borrowed from the grammar of the official language (Castilian) did not veil the true pronunciation of the dialect. It is stated, for example, that Gallego does not possess nasal diph- thongs ; still it may be conceded once for all that such a word as planus, which in Galician is written sometimes chau and sometimes chan, cannot be very remote from the Portuguese nasal pronuncia- tion chao. One of the most notable differences between normal Portuguese and Galician is the

substitution of the surd spirant in place of the sonant spirant for the Lat. j before all vowels and g before ¢ and i: xuez (judicem), Port. juiz; aunto (junctum), Port. junto; xente (gentem), Port. gente. In eonjugation the peculiarities of Gallego are more marked ; some find their explana- tion within the dialect itself, others seem to be due to Castilian influence. The 2d persons plural have still their old form ades, edes, ides, so that in this instance it would seem as if Gallego had been arrested in its progress while Portuguese had gone on pro- gressing ; but it is to be observed that with these full forms the grammarians admit contracted forms as well: ds (Port. ais), és (Port. eis), és (Port. 1s). The Ist pers. sing. of the perfect of conjugations in er and ir has come to be complicated by a nasal resonance similar to that which we find in the Portuguese mim ; we have vendin, partin, instead of vendi, parti, and by analogy this form in in has extended itself also to the perfect of the con- jugation in ar, and falin, gardin, for falet, gardei are found. The second persons of the same tense take the endings che, ches in the singular and ehedes in the plural: falache or falaches (fabulasti), falachedes as well as faldstedes (fabulastis), bateche or batiche, pl. hatestes or batechedes, &c. Ti (tibi) having given che in Galician, we see that falasti has become falache by a phonetic process. The 3d pers. sing. of strong perfect is not in ¢ as in Portuguese (houve, pode), but in o (houbo, puido, sorbo, coubo, &e.) ; Castilian influence may be traceable here. If a contemporary grammarian, Saco Arce, is to be trusted, Gallego would form an absolute exception to the law of Spanish accentuation in the imperfect and pluperfect indica- tive: falabdémes, falabddes ; batidmos, batiddes; pididmos, pididdes ; and falardmos,falarddes, baterdmos, baterddes; pidirdmos, pidirddes. ‘The future perfect indicative and the imperfect subjunctive, on the other hand, would seem to be accented regularly : faldremos, Sald- semos. The important question is worth further study in detail.

Bibliography.—On the general subject the only books to be mentioned are the Grammatik der romanischen Sprachen and the Ltymologisches Worterbuch of Diez. 1. CaTaLAn. On the old language see Manuel Mild y Fontanals, De los Trovadores en Espafia, Barcelona, 1861, and several essays by the same author in the Revue des Langues Romanes, the Janrb. f. roman, u. engl. Literatur, vol. y., and the Revista Histérica of Barcelona; P. Meyer in Romania; A. Mussafia inthe introduction to Die Catalanische

metrische Version der sieben wetsen Meister, Vienna, 1876; and Morel-Fatio in Romania, Yor modern Catalan, see Ballot y Torres, Gramatica y Apologia de la Llengua Cathalana, Barcelona, 1814; A. de Bofarull, Estudios, Sistema Gramatical y Crestomatia de la Lengua Catalana, Barcelona, 1864; and, before all, Manuel Mild y Fontanals, Estudios de Lengua Catalana, Barcelona, 1875. The dialectic varieties of Valencia and the Balearics have not yet been sufficiently investigated. Onthe Catalan of Alghero (Sardinia) there is a memoir by G. Morosi in the Miscellanea di Filologia dedicata alla Memoria dei Prof. Caix e Canello, Florence, 1885, 2. CasTitian. Since Diez's time no general work upon Castilian has been published, with the exception of a treatise on Spanish "doublets" by Mme. Carolina Michaelis, Studien zur ronan- ischen Wortschépfung, Leipsic, 1876, and a Spanische Sprachlehre, by Paul Forster, Berlin, 1880, which leayes much to be desired. On the grammar of Old Castilian the remarkable articles of Cornu in Romania must be consulted. Hitherto the dialects have received but little attention, For Asturian there is a Coleccion de Poesias en Dialecto Asturiano, published at Oviedo in 1839, and some lexico-graphical notes ("Apuntes Lexicograficos sobre una Rama del Dialecto Asturiano") Navarrese-Aragonese has 2d ed.,

in Portuguese to the pages of Romania. For Galician Saco Arce's Gramatica Gallega, Lugo, 1868, and A. Fernandez y Morales i Berciano, with introduction and glossary by Mariano Cubf y Soler, Leon, ought to be consulted, (A, M.

PART IV.—LITERATURE.

_ The name Spanish is now generally restricted to the literature of the Castilian tongue. In the present article it is taken in the wider sense as embracing the literature of the whole Iberian Peninsula, with the exceptions of Por- TUGAL (q.v.) and of Galicia, the latter of which as regards language and literature belongs to the Portuguese domain. Spanish literature thus considered falls into two divisions —Castilian and Catalan.

L. Castitian LrreraturE.—Of the Castilian texts now extant none are of earlier date than the 12th century, and very probably none go farther back than 1150. That accepted as the oldest—the Mystery of the Magian Kings, as it is rather inappropriately designated—is a fragment of a short semi-liturgical play meaut to be acted in the church of Toledo at the feast of Epiphany. Manifestly an imita- tion of the Latin Judi represented in France in the 12th

Poems of 13th jeentury,

CASTILIAN. |

century, the Spanish piece cannot have been composed much before 1150.

The great national hero Rodrigo Diaz de Bivar (died 1099), better known in history by the Arabic surname of the Crp (q.v.), was celebrated in the vulgar tongue less than a century after his death in two poems, neither of which, however, has come down to us in its entirety. The first cantar, usually entitled Poema del Cid since the first edition by Tomas Antonio Sanchez, relates in its first part the valiant deeds (/a gesta) of the Cid subse- quent to his quarrel with King Alfonso VI.; in the second the capture of Valencia, the reconciliation of the hero with the king, and the marriage of his daughters with the “infantes” of Carrion;! and then in the third the treason of the infantes, the vengeance of the Cid, and the second marriage of his daughters with the infantes of Navarre and Aragon. The narrative of the last years of the Cid, which closes this third part, is very much curtailed. Whilst in the Poema the Cid appears as the loyal vassal, faithful to his king and deploring the necessity of separ- ating from him, the Cid of the second poem, Crdnica

rimada del Cid, is almost a rebel and at least a refractory vassal who dares treat his sovereign as an equal. The por- tion of the Crdénica which has been preserved deals in the main with the youth (mocedades) of Rodrigo ; it contains the primitive version of his quarrel with the Count Gomez de Gormaz, and the marriage of the slayer of the count with Ximena, his daughter, and also a series of fabulous episodes, such as the Cid's journey to France to fight with the twelve peers of Charlemagne, &c. If the Poema really belongs to the 12th century, some doubt attaches to the date of the Crénica; it would seem that the form under which this latter text has reached us is more recent than that of the Poema, but, on the other hand, several tradi- tions collected by the author bear an incontestable stamp of antiquity. The versification of both poems is very barbarous, the metre very irregular. Normally this great epic measure ought to be divided into two hemistichs of seven or eight syllables each; but here the lines some- times fall short of this number and sometimes exceed it. Instead of rhyme, assonance steadily prevails throughout ; the strophes follow the model of the laisses of the French chansons de geste,—that is, they have a single assonance and vary greatly in extent.

The other heroes of Spanish history, such as the last Gothic king Roderick, Bernardo del Carpio, the infantes of Lara, have not given rise to long poems; at least we are acquainted with none cf which they are the subject. Still some may have existed; and in fact the frequent allusions in the chronicle of Alfonso the Wise (13th century) to the narratives of the juglares suggest that Castilian heroic poetry was richer than the scarcity of the monuments still extant would lead us to believe. Fernan Gonzalez, first independent count of Castile (10th century), has alone been celebrated in a poem of the 13th century, composed in single-rhyme quatrains.

With the heroic poetry which takes its themes from the national history and legends, there grew up in the 13th century a religious and didactic poetry, the most eininent representative of which is Gonzalo de Berceo (1198-1268). This poet, born at Berceo in the province of Logrofio, composed several lives of Spanish saints (St Domingo de Silos, St Millan de la Cogulla, St Oria), and also devotional poems, such as the Miracles and the Praises of the Virgin, and some religious hymns. Berceo names his poems

prosa, decir, dictado, indicating thereby that he intended them to be read and recited, not sung like the cantares, They are written in single-rhyme

Carrion de los Condes is a district in the province of Valencia.

» Phen

09d

quatrains and in verses of twelve to fourteen syllables, according as the ending of each hemistich is masculine or feminine. In the same kind of versification were composed, also in the 13th century, two long poems,—one on Alexander the Great, the other on Apollonius of Tyre, —after Latin and French sources. The author of the first of these poems contrasts his system of versification, which he calls mester de clerecia, with the mester de joglaria, the one of the heroic poetry, intended to be sung, and declares that this singlerhyme quatrain (curso rimado por la quaderna via) consists of counted syllables. The composer of Appolonio calls this same versification nueva maestria. The single-rhyme quatrain, introduced in imitation of the French poetry of the 12th century into Castilian literature, became from the time of Berceo and the Alexandro and Appolonio the regular form in Castilian narrative and didactic poetry, and prevailed down to the close of the 14th century.

To the 13th century seem also to belong a Life of St Mary the Egyptian, translated from the French, perhaps through a Provengal version, and an Adoration of the Three Kings, in verses of eight or nine syllables rhyming in pairs (aa, bb, cc, &c.), as well as a fragment of a Debate between Soul and Body, in verses of six or seven syllables, evidently an imitation of one of those medizval Latin poems entitled Rixa Animi et Corporis. Mention may here also be made of the cantigas (“songs”) of Alfonso the Wise in honour of the Virgin, although, being in the Galician dialect, these properly belong to the history of Portuguese literature.

The 14th century saw the birth of the most original Poetry medizval Spanish poet. Juan Ruiz (1300-1350), arch- of 14th has left us a poem of century.

priest of Hita (near Guadalajara), rather irregular composition, in which, while reproducing apologues translated from the Latin or French fabulists, and extracts from Ovid's Art of Love, or from a poem entitled Pamphilus de Amore, or, lastly, from fabliaux and dits, such as the Bataille de Karesme et de Charnage, the author frequently gives way to his own inspiration. Ruiz celebrates love and woman ; his book is of buen amor, that is, he shows by his own experience and the example of the authors whom he follows how a man ought to set to work to be a successful lover. The character of the female go-between, named " Trota-Conventos," here plays an im- portant part ; it was suggested to Ruiz by the Pamphilus, but he has greatly strengthened the characteristics and thus prepared the way for the Celestina of the close of the 15th century. By way of precaution, the author repre- sents himself as one who has survived his illusions, and maintains that carnal love (/oco amor) must in the long run give place to divine love ; but this stratum of devotion is a thin one and ought not to disguise the real character of the work. His form of versification is the single-rhyme quatrain in the narrative portions; as to the "songs" (cantigas) which sometimes interrupt the narrative, and of which the most successful are a "song of scholars" and a "song of the blind," their rhythm is different and much more varied. The Rimado de Palacio of the grand chan- cellor of Castile, Pedro Lopez de Ayala (1332-1407), does not exclusively refer to court life ; the author takes up all classes of laymen and churchmen, whose vices he depicts in jocular style. Amid the tirades of this long moral poem there occur occasionally some cantares or even decires in strophes of eight lines of twelve syllables. Akin to this Rimado de Palacio are the Proverbios Morales of the Jew Santob (Shemtob) of Carrion, dedicated to King Pedro the Cruel, who reigned from 1350 to 1369, as well as the General Dance of Death and a new version of the Debate between Soul and Body, both in eight-line strophes of arte mayor (verses of twelve syllables), and both imitations of XXIL — 45

French originals.) The 14th century also produced a long historical composition in verse, the Rhymed Chronicle of Alfonso XI, (died 1350), by Rodrigo Yanez, important fragments of which have come down to us; the versifica- tion of this chronicle is similar to that of Santob's Proverbs

(strophes of four octosyllabic verses rhyming abab). Ro- The word romance not only signifies in Spain, as in mances. ther Romanic countries, the vulgar tongue, but also bears the special meaning of a shiort epic narrative poem (historic ballad) or, at a later date, a short lyric poem. As regards the form, the ‘“‘ romance” (Spanish e/ romance, in contrast to French, &c., Ja romance) is a composition in long verses of fourteen syllables ending with one rhyme, or assonance, which have been generally, but wrongly, divided into two short lines, the first of which, naturally, is rhymeless. This being the form of the romance verse, the Cronica rumada del Cid, and even the Poema (though in this case the in- fuence of the French alexandrines is perceptible), might be considered as a series of romances tagged on one after the other ; and in fact several of the old romances of the Cid, which form each an independent whole and have been printed as separate poems in the 16th century, are partly to be found in the Crénica. Other romances, notably those dealing with the heroes of the Carlovingian epic, so popular in Spain, or with the heroes which Spanish patriot- ism opposed at a certain period to the French paladins,— as, for example, Bernardo del Carpio, the rival and the conqueror of Roland in Castilian tradition,—seem to be portions severed from those cantares de gesta composed. by juglares of which Alfonso X. makes mention. It is only at the close of the 15th century, and especially during the 16th, that the romances, which had previously passed from mouth to mouth by song and recitation, began to be written down and afterwards to be printed, at first on broadsheets (pliegos sueltos) and subsequently in collections (roman- ceros), either general, in which romances of very different date, character, and subject are mixed up, or restricted to a single historical or legendary episode or to a single per- sonage (for example, the Romeancero del Cid). In those collections the epic verse is always regarded as octosyllabic and printed as such ; occasionally certain editions divide the romance into strophes of four verses (cwartetas). Prose King Alfonso X. (died 1284), under whose patronage or sae were published the memorable code entitled Las Siete coftiites! Partidas and great scientific compilations, such as the Libros de Astronomia and the Lapidario, was also the founder of Spanish historiography in the vulgar tongue. The Crénica General, composed under his direction, con- sists of two distinct parts: the one treats of universal history from the creation of the world to the first centuries of the Christian era (La General é Grant Listoria), the other exclusively of the national history (La Cronica 6

Historia de Espaiia) down to the death of Ferdinand III. (1252), father of Alfonso. The main sources of the Cronica General are two Spanish chroniclers of the 13th century,—Lucas of Tuy and Rodriguez of Toledo,—who wrote in Latin, but whose works were early translated into the vernacular. In the Historia de Espaiia of Alfonso X., which has collected many legends and which occasionally refers to the songs of the juglares (for the purpose, however, of refuting them), the narrative relating to the Cid is partly based on an Arabic text. This portion has frequently been printed by itself, under the title of Cronica del Cid. Alfonso's example bore fruit. In the 14th century we find another Cronica General de Espana or de Castilla, constructed on the model of the first and embracing the years 1030-1312; next, the Grant Crénica de Espana and the Grant Crénica de los Conqueridores, compiled by command of the grandmaster of the order of St John of Jerusalem, Juan Fernandez de Heredia, about

1390. Special chronicles of each king of Castile were soon written. Our information is at fault in regard to the authorship of the chronicles of Alfonso X., Sancho IV., Ferdinand IV., and Alfonso XI.; but the four following reigns—those of Pedro I., Henry II., John J., and Henry TIL—were dealt with by Pedro Lopez de Ayala, and here we can recognize the man of literary culture, who had acquired some knowledge of ancient history, for the form of the narrative becomes freer and more personal and the style rises with the thought. Several authors had a hand in the chronicle of John IL, but the final redaction was by Fernan Perez de Guzman. The sad reign of Henry IV. was related by Diego Enriquez del Castillo and Alfonso de Palencia, the glorious reign of the Catholic sovereigns Ferdinand and Isabella by Fernando del Pulgar and Andrés Bernaldes. Along with those royal chronicles must be mentioned some biographies of important persons. Thus in the 15th century the chronicle of Pedro Niiio, count of Buelna (1379-1452), by Gutierre Diez de Gamez ; that of Alvaro de Luna, constable of Castile (died 1458) ; also a very curious book of travels, the narrative of the embassy sent by Henry III. of Castile to Timur in 1403, written by the head of the mission, Ruy Gonzalez de CLAviso (q.v.).

The other productions of Castilian prose in the 13th and 14th centuries are for the most part didactic and senten- tious compositions, which, however, contain illustrations or tales of Eastern origin. The Spanish translation of

Kalida and Dimna, made direct from an Arabic text, dates from the middle of the 13th century, and the romance of the Seven Sages (Sindibad), published under the title of En- gatos @ Assayamientos de las Mugeres, must be referred to almost the same period. From the second half of the 13th century the collections of sentences, dits, apologues, and moral tales become very numerous: first of all, ver- sions of the Secretum Secretorum, attributed in the Middle Ages to Aristotle, one of which is entitled Poridat de las Poridades, next the Proverbios Buenos, the Bocados de Oro or Libro de Bonium, Rey de Persia, the Libro de los Gatos, which is derived from the Narrationes of Eudes of Cheriton. But the most celebrated is the Libro de los Castigos y Documentos of King Sancho IV. (died 1295), who also composed a Lucidario, a kind of encyclopedia of theology, morals, and natural history. It was during the first half of the 14th century that the uephew of Alfonso X., the infant Juan Manuel (1282-1349), wrote those various works which place him in the first rank of medi- eval Spanish prose writers. Tho best known is the collection of tales, many of them borrowed from Oriental sources, entitled Hl Conde Lucanor ; but besides this con- tribution to light literature he wrote graver and more specially instructive works, notably the Libro de los Estados or Libro del Infante, a kind of manual of education, domestic economy, and politics ; the Libro del Caballero é del Escudero, a practical treatise on chivalry somewhat re- sembling a work of Raymond Lully on the same subject. Unfortunately Juan Manuel's poems, which he had col- lected ina Libro de las Cantigas or de los Cantares, have been lost. The knowledge of antiquity, previously so poor and vague, made remarkable progress in the 14th century. It was thought desirable to learn more about certain epi- sodes of ancient history, such as the War of Troy, and therefore the poem on that subject by the Frenchman Benoit de Sainte-More and the Latin narrative of Guido de Columna were both translated. Pedro Lopez de Ayala translated or caused to be translated Pierre Bersuire's French version of Livy, Boetius, and various writings of Isidore of Seville and Boccaccio.

While the Carlovingian cycle is mainly represented in Spain by romances, of which the oldest seem to be frag-

chive

Bio- graphics

Other prose | works | of 18th and 14] centuri¢

Book

CASTILIAN. |

ments of lost poems of the juglares, the British cycle (Lancelot, Tristram, Merlin, &c.) is represented almost exclusively by works in prose (compare Romance). Those narratives are known, it is true, only by 15th and 16th century editions in which they have been more or less modified to suit the taste of the time, but it is impossible not to recognize that books such as £7 Baladro del Sabio Merlin and La Demanda del Sancto Grial (1515) presup- pose a considerable antecedent literature of which they are only the afterglow. The principal French romances of the Round Table were translated and imitated in Spain and in Portugal as early as the first half of the 14th century at least; of that there is no doubt. And, even if there was not on this point satisfactory testimony, the prodigious development in Spanish literature of the caba- llerias or “book of chivalry,” incontrovertibly derived from fictions of British origin, is proof enough that the Spaniards have at an early date been familiarized with this romance from France. The first book which begins the series of strictly Spanish caballerias is the Amadis de Gaula (1.e., of Wales, not France). We know the Amadis only by the version made about 1480 in four books by Garci Ordojiez de Montalvo (the oldest edition extant is dated 1508), but the work in its original form (three books), already widely distributed and celebrated by various Castilian poets from about 1350, must have been composed at the latest in the second third of the 14th century. A few rather vague hints and certain senti- mental considerations lead one to seek for the unknown author of the first Amadis in Portugal, where the romances of the Round Table were even more highly appreciated than in Spain, and where they have exercised a deeper influence on the national literature. To Mont- alvo, however, falls the honour of having preserved the book by republishing it; he only made the mistake of diluting the original text too much and of adding a poor continuation, Las Sergas de Esplandian. Allied to Montalvo’s Amadis with its Esplandian appendage are the Don Florisando and the Lisuarte de Grecia, the Amadis de Grecia, the Don Florisel de Niquea, &c., which form

what Cervantes called the ‘‘Amadis sect.” Along with the Amadises range the Palmerines, the most celebrated of which are the Palmerin de Oliva, the Primaleon, and the Palmerin de Inglaterra. None of those caballerias inspired by the Amadis were printed or even written before the 16th century; and they bear in language and style the stamp of that period; but they cannot be separated from their medizeval model, the spirit of which they have pre- served intact. Among the caballerias we may also class

some narratives belonging to the Carlovingian epic,—the |.

Mistoria del Emperador Carlomagno y de los Doce Pares, a very popular version still reprinted of the French romance of Merabras, the Espejo de Caballerias, into which has passed a large part of the Orlando Innamorato of Boiardo, the Mistoria de la Reina Sibilla, &e. The first half of the 15th century, or, what comes almost to the same thing, the reign of John II. of Castile ‘ (1407-1454), is as regards its literature characterized by three facts —(1) by the development of a court poetry, . artificial and pretentious; (2) by the influence of Italian literature on Castilian prose and poetry, the imitation of Boccaccio and Dante, especially of the latter, which intro- duced into Spain a liking for allegory; and (3) by more assiduous intercourse with antiquity—a fuller understand- Ing of the Latin writers who had been brought to the front by the Italian renaissance. After the example of the Pro- vencals, whose literary doctrines had made their way into Castile through Portugal and Catalonia, poetry is now styled the arte de trobar. The arte de trobar is strictly “court” poetry, which consists in short pieces of rather

ePaAtLWN

complicated versification,—love plaints, debates, questions, and repartees, motes with their glosas, burlesque and satirical songs,—a poetry wholly “occasional,” and which when separated from its natural environment loses great part of its charm. In order to understand and appreciate those pieces they must be read in the collections made by the poets of the time, and the one must be brought to throw light on the other. The most celebrated cancionero of the 15th century is that compiled for the amusement of his

sovereign by Alfonso de Baena (who has not designated him- self a Jew, as has been supposed, the word judino attached to his name in the preface being nothing but indino); it is, so to say, the official collection of the poetic court of John II., although it also contains some pieces by poets of earlier date. After Baena's collection may be mentioned the Cancionero de Stufiiga, which contains the Castilian poems of the trobadores who followed Alfonso V. of Aragon to Naples. Those cancioneros, consisting of the productions of a society, a group, were succeeded by collections of a more general character in which versifiers of very different periods and localities are jumbled together, the pieces being classed simply according to their type. The earliest Cancionero General is that compiled by Juan Fernandez de Constantina, which appears to have issued from the Valencia press in the very beginning of the 16th century ; the second, much better known, was published for the first time at Valencia in 1511; its editor was called' Fernando del Castillo. The other poetic school of the 15th century, which claims to be specially related to the Italians, had as its leaders Juan de Mena (1411-1456), author of the Coro- nacion and the Labirinto or Las Trecientas (a long poem so called because of the number of stanzas which, accord- ing to the scheme, were to compose it), and the marquis of Santillana, D. Iiigo Lopez de Mendoza (1398-1458), who in his sonnets was the first to imitate the structure of the Italian endecasillabo. Along with those two, who may be designated poetas, in distinction from the decidores and the trobadores of the cancioneros, must be ranked Francisco Imperial, a Genoese by descent, who also helped to acclimatize in Spain the forms of Italian poetry. The marquis of Santillana occupies a considerable place in the literature of the 15th century, not only by reason of his poems, but quite as much if not more through the support he afforded to all the writers of his time, and the impulse he gave to the study of antiquity and to the labours of translators who at his request turned Virgil, Ovid, Seneca, &e., into Castilian. He himself was not acquainted with Latin; but the generous efforts he made to stir up his fellow-countrymen to learn it have justly procured him the title of father of Spanish humanism. That he had an extensive knowledge of the national literature and of the literatures of France and Italy he has shown in the preface to his works, which is a sort of avs poetica as well as an historical exposition of the kinds of poetry cultivated in the Middle Ages by the Spaniards and the neighbouring nations.

With the exception of the chronicles and some caballerias, the prose of the 15th century contains nothing very striking. The translation of Virgil by Enrique de Villena (died 1434) is very clumsy and shows no advance on the versions of Latin authors made in the previous century ; better worth reading is the 7'rabajos de Hercules, a whimsical production but with some savour in its style. A curious and amusing book, full of details about Spanish manners, is the Corbacho of the archpriest of Talavera, Alonso Martinez de Toledo, chaplain to King John II. ; the Corbacho belongs to the numerous family of satires against women, and its title ("The Lash" or " Whip ") borrowed from a work of Boccaccio's, with which it has otherwise nothing akin, correctly indicates that he has not spared them.

Prose of 15th century.

Dra- matic litera- ture.

396

The ancient liturgical Spanish theatre is known to us only by fragments of the play of the Magian Kings, of which mention has already been made ; but certain regulations of the code of the Siete Partidas (compiled be- tween 1252 and 1257) prove that this theatre existed, and that at the great festivals, such as Christmas, Epiphany, and Easter, dramatic representations were given in church. These representations, originally a mere com- mentary on the liturgy, grew more complicated in course of time ; they were gradually adulterated with buffoonery, which frequently brought down the censure of the clergy. Alfonso the Wise even thought it necessary formally to forbid the "clerks" playing juegos de escarnios, and per- mitted in the sanctuary only dramas destined to conmem- orate the principal episodes of the life of Christ. Of all the church festivals, the most popular in Spain was that of Corpus Christi, instituted by Urban IV. in 1264. At an early date was introduced the custom of accompanying the celebration of this festival with dramatic representa- tions intended to explain to the faithful the Eucharistic mystery. Those dramas, called autos sacramentales, ac- quired more and more importance ; in the 17th century, with Calderon, they become grand allegorical pieces, regular theological dissertations in the form of dramas. To the auto sacramental corresponds the auto al nacimiento, or drama of the Nativity. 'The secular theatre is in Spain as elsewhere a product of the

religious theatre. Expelled from the church, the juegos de escarnios took possession of the public squares and there obtained a free development ; they cease to be a mere travesty of dogma to become a separate type, a drama whose movement is no longer determined by the liturgy, and whose actors are bor- rowed from real life in Spanish society. This new theatre starts about the close of the 15th century with the little pastoral pieces of Juan del Encina (died 1534), which, after Virgil's example, he calls eglogas. Genuine shep- herds, clumsy, rude, and long-haired (melenudos), are the interlocutors of those bucolics, into which are also sometimes introduced students, and even, by Lucas Fernandez, a contemporary and pupil of Encina's, gen- tlemen (caballeros) and soldiers. A book which, strictly speaking, does not belong to the theatre, the Tragicomedia de Calixto y Melibea, by Fernando de Rojas, much better known as La Celestina, and dating from about 1492, caused the new theatre, still so childish in the attempts of the school of Encina, to make a gigantic step onwards. The history of two lovers, who are brought together by a go-between (Celestina), and who after various vicissitudes ultimately commit suicide,—this astonishing novel taught the Spaniards the art of dialogue, and for the first time exhibited persons of all classes of society (particularly the lowest) speaking in harmony with their natural surround- ings, thinking and acting in accordance with their con- dition of life. The progress caused by the Celestina may be estimated by means of the Propaladia of Bartolomé Torres Naharro (Naples, 1517), a collection of pieces represented at Rome in presence of Leo X. and distri- buted by their author into two groups—comedias a noticia, those treating of things really known and seen, and comedias a fantasia, those bringing fictions on the stage, though it may be with the appearance of reality. The most interesting, if not the best composed, are the comedia soldadesca, depicting to the life the Spanish man-at-arms of the time, and the comedia tinelaria, a picture of the manners of the menials of the pontifical court. Torres Naharro is the first Spaniard who borrowed from France the division of the play into "days" (jornadas) ; shortly after Naharro we find the comedy of manners in Lope de Rueda, goldbeater of Seville (died about 1566), whose dramatic work is composed of regular comedies constructed

on the model of Naharro and Italian authors of the begin- ning of the 16th century, and also of little pieces intended for performance in the intervals between the larger plays (entremeses and pasos), some of which, such as El Con- vidado, El Rufian Cobarde, Las Aceitunas, are storehouses of sprightliness and wit. Some of Naharro's and espe- cially of Rueda's pieces have already the character of the comedy of intrigue, which is emphatically the type of the classic stage. But to reach Lope de Vega the Spanish stage had to be enlarged in relation to national history. A poet of Seville, Juan de la Cueva (born about 1550), first brought on the boards subjects such as the exploits of the Cid, Bernardo del Carpio, and others, which had previously been treated of only in the " romances." Toa poet called Berrio, of whose work nothing has been pre- served, are attributed the comedias of Moors and Christians, in which were represented famous episodes of the age-long struggle against the infidel. And it is at this period that Cervantes (1585) experimented in the dramatic line ; in his Tratos de Argel he gives us a picture of galley-life, painful recollections of his long captivity in Algiers. There is no need to linger over certain attempts at tragedy of the ancient type by Geronimo Bermudez (born 1530), Cristobal de Virues (born about 1550), Lupercio Leonardo Argensola (1562-1613), &e., the only successful specimen of which is the Numancia of Cer- vantes; these works in fact, cold and manneristic, mere exercises in style and_versification, remained without influence on the development of the Spanish stage. The pre-classic period of this stage is, as regards dramatic form, one of indecision. Some write in prose, like Rueda; others, like Naharro, show a preference for the redondillas of popular poetry ; and there are those again who, to elevate the style of the stage, versify in hendeca- syllabics. Hesitation is also evident as to the mode of dividing the drama. At first a division into five acts, after the manner of the ancients, is adopted, and this is still followed by Cervantes in his first pieces ; then Juan de la Cueva reduced the five acts to four, and in this he is imitated by most of the poets to the close of the 16th century (Lope de Vega himself in his youth composed pieces in four acts). It was only at this time that the custom which is still maintained of dividing all dramatic works into three acts or days was introduced,—exception of course being made of short pieces like the loa (pro- logue), the entremes, the paso, the baile (different kinds of entr'acte).

The golden age of Spanish literature,

ing, only a Castilian literature, not very self-reliant and largely influenced by imitation first of France and then of Italy ; the union of the two crowns of Aragon and Castile, and afterwards the advent of the house of Austria and the king of Spain's election as emperor, proved the creation at once of the political unity of Spain and of Spanish literature. After the death of Philip IV. (1665) this fair- shining light went out ; the nation, exhausted by distant expeditions, the colonization of America, Continental wars, and bad administration, produced nothing; its literary genius sank in the general decline, and Spain is destined ere long to be subjected again to the influence of France, to which she had submitted during all the first period of the Middle Ages. In the 16th and 17th centuries the literature is eminently national. Of course all is not equally original, and in certain kinds of literature the Spaniards continue to seek models abroad.

Lyric poetry, cspecially that always inspired by the Italian masters.

as it is called, Clas: belongs to the 16th and the 17th centuries, extending 98° approximately from 1550 to 1650. Previous to the reign ya), of the Catholic sovereigns there exists, strictly spceak- turie

of the highest order, is Ly) An irresistible P® |

| {

CASTILIAN. |

tendency leads the Spanish poets to rhyme in hendeca- syllabics—as the marquis of Santillana had formerly done, though his attempts had fallen into oblivion—and to group their verses in tercets, octaves, sonnets, and canciones (canzont). Garcilaso de la Vega (1503-1536), Juan Boscan (1493-c. 1550), and Diego de Mendoza (1503— 1575) are the recognized chiefs of the school al italzco modo, and to them belongs the honour of having successfully transplanted to Spain those different forms of verse, and of having enriched and improved the poetic language of their country. The few uncouthnesses of which Mendoza and Boscan more especially are guilty (such as certain faults of rhythmic accentuation) were corrected by their

disciples Gutierre de Cetina, Gregorio Silvestre, Hernando de Acuiia, by the poets of the so-called school of Seville, headed by Fernando de Herrera (died 1597), and also by those of the rival school of Salamanca, rendered famous mainly by the inspired poetry of Fr. Luis de Leon (1528-1591). Against those innovators the poets faithful to the old Castilian manner, the rhymers of redondillas and romances, hold their own; under the direction of Cristébal de Castillejo (1556) they carry on a fierce war of the pen against the ‘ Petrarchists.” But by the last third of the 16th century the triumph of the new Italian school is assured, and no one any longer thinks of reproaching it for its foreign flavour. Only a sort of schism is effected from that period between the higher poetry and the other varieties: the former employs ouly the hendecasyllabic and the heptasyllabic (quebrado), while the popular poets, or those who affect a more familiar tone, preserve the national metres. Almost all the poets, however, of the 16th and 17th centuries have tried their powers in both kinds of versification, using them in turn according to the nature of their subjects. Thus Lope de Vega, first of all, who wrote La Jerusalem Conquistada (1609), La Dragontea (1602), La Hermosura de Angélica (1602), in Italian verses and in octaves, composed his long narrative poem on Isidore, the husbandman patron of Madrid (1599), in quintils of octosyllabic verse, not to mention a great number of “romances.” As regards this last form, previously disdained or almost so by artistic poets, Lope de Vega gave it a prestige that brought it into favour with the literates of the court. A host of poets were pleased to recast the old “‘romances” or to compose new ones. The 17th century, it may be said, is characterized by a regular surfeit of lyric poetry, to which the establish- ment of various literary academies in the Italian style con- tributed not a little. Of this enormous mass of verses of all sorts and sizes very little still keeps afloat: the names of three-fourths of the versifiers must be forgotten, and in addition to those already cited it will be sufficient to mention Luis de Gdéngora (1561-1626) and Francisco de Quevedo Villegas (1580-1645). Géngora is especially famous as the founder of the “cultist ” school, as the intro- ducer into Castilian poetry of a flowery, bombastic, and periphrastic style, characterized by sonorous vocables and artificial arrangements of phrase. The Spaniards have given the name of culto to this pompous and manneristic style, with its system of inversions based on Latin syntax. The Soledades of Géngora are the monument par excellence of Spanish mannerism, which made numerous victims and inflicted on the poetry of

the Peninsula irreparable injury. But Géngora, a poet of really great powers, had started better, and as often as he cares to forget about being sonorous and affected, and is contented to rhyme romances, he finds true poetic accents, ingenious ideas, and felicitous expressions. Quevedo, much greater, moreover, in his prose works than in his verse, displays real power only in Satire, epigram, and parody. ‘There are in some of his Serious pieces the stuff of a Juvenal, and his satiric and

burlesque romances, of which several are even written in slang (yermania), are in their way little masterpieces. Another commonplace of Spanish poetry at this period was epic poetry after the style of Tasso’s Gerusalemme. None of those interminable and prosaic compositions in octavas reales come near their model ; none of them could even be compared in style, elevation of thought, and beauty of imagery to the Lusiadas. They are in reality only rhymed chronicles, and consequently, when the author happens to have taken part in the events he narrates, they have a genuine historical interest. Such is the case with the Araucana of Alonso de Ercilla (1533-1594), of which it may be said that it was written less with a pen than with a pike. In burlesque poetry the Spaniards have been rather more successful: La Gatomaguia of Lope de Vega and La Mosquea of Villaviciosa (died 1658) are somewhat agreeable pieces of fun.

The departments of imaginative literature in which the Ro- genius of the new Spanish nation revealed itself with most ™ances.

vigour and originality are the novela and the drama. By novela must be understood the novel of manners, called pearesca (from picaro, a rogue or “picaroon”) because of the social status of the heroes of those fictions; and this kind of novel is quite an invention of the Spaniards. Their pastoral romance, on the other hand-—the best known examples of which are the Diana Hnamorada of Jorge de Montemayor (died 1561), continued by Alonso Perez and Gaspar Gil Polo, the Galatea of Cervantes, and the Arcadia of Lope de Vega, as well as their novel of adventure, started by Cervantes in his Vovelas Ejemplares (1613), and cultivated after him by a

host of writers—is directly derived from Italy. The Arcadia of Sannazaro is the source of the Diana and of all its imitations, just as the Italian novelliert alone are the masters of the Spanish novelistas of the 17th century. The picaresque novel starts in the middle of the 16th century with the Vida de Lazarillo de Tormes, sus Fortunas y Adversidades (1554), the work of a very bold intellect whose personality un- fortunately remains unknown, there being no satisfactory reason for assigning this little book, which is as remarkable for the vigour of its satire as for the sobriety and firmness of its style, to Diego Hurtado de Mendoza. A supple- ment to the adventures of Lazarillo appeared at Antwerp in 1555 ; it is probably, however, not the production of the author of the original romance. The impetus was given, and the success of Lazarillo was so great that imitators soon appeared. In 1599 Mateo Aleman published, under the title of Atalaya dela Vida Humana, the first part of the adventures of another picaroon, Guzman de Alfarache; and, as he was in no hurry to finish this narrative, another writer, jealous of his success, took possession of it and issued in 1603, under the pseudonym of Mateo Luxan, a continuation of the first Guzman. Aleman, not to be thwarted, resumed his pen, and published the second part of his romance in 1605. Quite unlike that of the Lazarillo, the style of Mateo Aleman of Seville is eloquent, full, with long and learned periods, sometimes diffuse. Nothing could be more extravagant and more obscure than the history of Justina the beggar woman (La Picara Justina) by Francisco Lopez de Ubeda (1605), an assumed name which concealed the person of the Dominican Andrés Perez de Leon. The other picaresque romances are— Alonso Mozo de muchos Amos, by Geronimo de Alcal4 (two parts, 1624 and 1626) ; the Historia y Vida del Gran Tacato Pablo de Segovia (1626), in which Quevedo has made his most brilliant display of style and wit; the Garduiia de Sevilla (1634) of Alonso de Castillo Solor- zano; La Vida y Hechos de Estebanillo Gonzalez (1646), described as compuesto por el mesmo, but an Estéban Gonzalez is unknown in the literary history of the 17th century.

Drama of 17th century.

By degrees the picaresque romance was combined with the novel of Italian origin and gave rise to a new type,— half novel of manners, half romanceof adventure,—of which the characteristic example appears to be the Relacion de la Vida y Aventuras del Escudero Marcos de Obregon (1618), by Vicente Espinel, one of the most genial and best written works of the 17th century. To the same class belong almost all the novels of Alonso Gerdénimo de Salas Barbadillo, such as La Ingentosa Helena, Don Diego de Noche, El Caballero puntual, &c. ; Luiz Velez de Gue- vara's Diablo Cojuelo (1641), the model of Lesage's Diable Boiteux ; and Francisco Santos's highly popular pictures of life in Madrid, Dia y Noche de Madrid (1663), Periquulo, el de las Gallineras, &c. Tirso de Molina (Los Cigarrales de Toledo, 1624), Perez de Montalban (Para Todos, 1632), Maria de Zayas (Novelas,

1637),

of Cervantes, and consequently of the Italian type.

Among the so-called historical romances one only deserves

to be mentioned,—the Guerras Civiles de Granada by

Cines Perez de Hita, which deals with the last years of

the kingdom of Granada and the insurrection of the

Moors of the Alpujarras in the time of Philip II. Don

Quixote, the masterpiece of Miguel Cervantes de Saavedra (1547-1616), is too great a work to be treated along with others ; and, besides, it does not fall strictly within the limits of any of the classes just mentioned. If it has to be defined, it may be described as the social romance of 16th and 17th century Spain. Cervantes undoubtedly owed much to his predecessors, notably to the picaresque romancers, but he considerably enlarged the scope of the

type, and, what had as yet been done by no one, supported

the framework of the story by a lofty moral idea. His main purpose was, turn into ridicule the books of chivalry, which were already out of fashion by his time, but to show by an example pushed to absurdity the danger of hidalgism, of all those deplorable prejudices of pure blood and noble race with which three-fourths of the nation were imbued, and which, by the scorn of all useful labour which they involved, were destined to bring Spain toruin. The lesson is all the more effective as his /idalgo, although ridiculous, was not put beyond the pale of the reader's sympathy, and the author condemns only the exaggeration of the chivalrous spirit, and not true courage and devotion when these virtues have a serious object. The same thing happened to Don Quixote which had happened to Guzman de Alfarache. After the publication of the first part (1605), Cervantes allowed his pen to lie too long idle ; and so it occurred to some one to anticipate him in the glory of completing the story of the heroic deeds of the knight of La Mancha, In 1614 a second part of the adventures of Don Quixote made its appearance—the work of a certain Avellaneda, a pseudonym under which people have sought to recognize the inquisitor Luis de Aliaga. Cervantes was thus roused from inactivity, and the following year gave to the world the true second part, which soon effaced the bad impression produced by Avellaneda's heavy and exaggerated imitation.

The stage in the 17th century in some measure took the place of the romances of the previous age ; it is, as it were, the medium of all the memories, all the passions, and all the aspirations of the Spanish people. Its style, being that of the popular poetry, made it accessible to the most illiterate classes, and gave it an immense range of subject. From the books of the Bible, the acts of the martyrs, national traditions, the chronicles of Castile and Aragon, and foreign histories and novels, down to the daily incidents of contemporary Spanish life, the escapades and nightly brawls of students, the gallantries of the Calle

SP ALN

On the contrary, the novels of

are more in the manner of the Wovelas Hjemplares

as we are beginning to realize, not to

Mayor and the Prado of Madrid, balcony escalades, sword thrusts and dagger strokes, duels and murders, fathers befooled, jealous ladies, pilfering and cowardly valets, inquisitive and sprightly waiting-maids, sly and tricky peasants, fresh country girls,—all are turned to dramatic account. The enormous mass of plays with which the literature of this period is inundated may he divided into two great classes—asecular and a religious, the latter again subdivided into (1) the liturgical play, @.¢., the auto either sacramental or al nacimiento, and (2) the comedia divina and the comedia de santos, which have no liturgical element and differ from a secular play only in the fact that the subject is religious, and frequently, as one of the names indicates, derived from the history of a saint. In the secular drama, classification might be carried almost to any extent if the nature of the subject be taken as the criterion. It will be sufficient to distinguish the comedia (i.e, any tragic or comic piece in three acts) according to the social types brought on the stage, the equipment of the actors, and the artifices resorted to in the representa- tion. We have (1) the comedia de capa y espada, which represents any everyday incident, the actors belonging to the middle class, simple caballeros, and consequently wearing the garb of ordinary town_life, of which the chief items were the cloak and the sword, and (2) the comedva de teatro or de ruido, or again de tramoya or de aparencias (i.e. the theatrical, spectacular, or scenic play), which prefers kings and princes for its dramatis persone and makes a great display of mechanical devices and deco- rations. Besides the comedia, the classic stage has also a series of little pieces subsidiary to the play proper: the Joa or prologue, the entremes, a kind of interlude which afterwards developed into the saynete, the bade, or ballet accompanied with singing, and the zarzuela, a sort of operetta thus named after the royal residence of La Zarzuela, where the kings of Spain had a theatre. As to the dramatic poets of the golden age, even more numerous than the lyric poets and the romancers, it is rather difficult to group them. All are more or less pupils or imitators of the great chief of the new school, Lope Felix de Vega Carpio (1562-1635); everything has ultimately to be brought back to him whom the Spaniards call the “monster of Nature.” Among Lope’s contemporaries, only a few poets of Valencia (Gaspar de Aguilar, Fran- cisco Tarrega, Guillem de Castro (1569-1631), the author of the Mocedades del Cid (from

which Corneille derived his inspiration), formed a small school, as it were, less subject to the master than that of Madrid, which was bound to merit the applause of the public by copying as exactly as possible the manner of the great initiator. Lope left his mark on all varieties of the comedia, but did not attain to equal excellence in all, He was especially successful in the comedy of intrigue (enredo), of the capa y espada class, and in dramas whose subjects are derived from national history. His great and most incontestable merit is to have given the Spanish stage a range and scope of which it had not been previously thought capable, and of having taught his contemporaries to find dramatic situations and to carry ona plot. It is true he wrote nothing perfect: his prodigious productiveness and facility allowed him no time to mature anything; he wrote negligently, and, besides, he considered the stage an inferior department, good for the vulgo, and consequently did not judge it worthy of the same regard as lyric or narrative poetry borrowed from the Italians. Lope's first pupils exag- gerated-some of his defects, but, at the same time, each, according to his own taste, widened the scope of the comedia. Antonio Mira de Amescua and Luis Velez de Guevara (died 1644) were successful especially in tragic histories and comedias divinas. Fr. Gabriel Tellez (1570-

1648), better known under the pseudonym of Tirso de Molina, one of the most flexible, ingenious, and inventive of the dramatists, displayed no less talent in the comedy of contemporary manners than in historical drama. Z/ Burlador de Sevilla (Don Juan), the most celebrated of his plays since the Italians and the French have taken possession of the subject, is reckoned his masterpiece ; but he showed himself a much greater poet in Zl Vergonzoso en Palacio, Don Gil de las Calzas Verdes, Marta la Pia- dosa. Finally Juan Ruiz de Alarcon (died 1639), the most serious and most observant of Spanish dramatic poets, successfully achieved the comedy of character in La Verdad Sospechosa, closely followed by Corneille in his Menteur. The remaining play-writers hardly did anything but increase the number of the comedias; they added nothing to the real elements of the drama. The second epoch of the classical drama is represented mainly by Pedro Calderon de la Barca (1600-1681), the Spanish dramatist who has obtained most celebrity abroad, where his pieces have been studied and admired (perhaps extra-

vagantly) by certain critics who have not feared to rank him with Shakespeare. It is Calderon who first made honour, or more correctly the point of honour, an essen- tial motive in the conduct of his personages (e.g., ZI Médico de su Honra) ; it is he also who made the comedia de capa y espada uniform even to monotony, and gave the comic “part” of the gracioso (confidential valet of the caballero) a fixity which it never previously possessed. There is depth and poetry in Calderon, but vagueness also and much bad taste. His most philosophic drama, La Vida es Suciio, is a bold and sublime idea, but indistinct and feebly worked out; that his autos sacramentales give evidence of extensive theological knowledge is all that can be said in their favour. Calderon was imitated, as Lope had been, by exaggerating his manner and perverting his exccllencies. Two poets only of the second half of the 17th century deserve to be cited along with him—Francisco de Rojas, author of the fine historic play Del Key abajo ninguno, and Agustin Moreto (1618-1662), author of some pleasant comedies. Among those who worked in secondary forms mention must be made of Luis Quijiones de Benavente, a skilful writer of entremeses, and in fact the greatest master of the form.

A new manner of writing appears with the revival of learning: the purely objective style of the old chroniclers, with their tagging on of one fact after another, without showing the logical connexion or expressing any opinion on men or things, begins to be thought puerile. An attempt is now made to treat the history of Spain in the manner of Livy, Sallust, Tacitus, whose methods of narra- tion were directly adopted. The 16th century, however, still presents certain chroniclers of the medieval type, with more erudition, precision, and a beginning of the critical element. La Cronica General de Espaia by Ambrosio de Morales, the Compendio Historial of Estéban de Garibai, the Historia General de las Indias Occidentales by Antonio de‘Herrera, are, as far as the style is concerned, continuations of the last chronicles of Castile. Gerdénimo de Zurita (1512-1580) is emphatically a scholar ; no one tm the 16th century knew as he did how to turn to account documents and records for the purpose of completing and correcting the narratives of the ancient chronicles; his Anales de la Corona de Aragon is a book of great value, though written in a painful style. With Juan de Mariana (1536-1623) history ceases to be a mere compilation of facts or a work of pure erudition, in order to become a work of art and of thought. The

Historia de Espaia by the celebrated Jesuit, at first written in Latin in the interest especially of foreigners, was afterwards rendered by

•

its author into excellent Castilian ; as a general survey of

its history, well-planned, well written, and well thought out, Spain possesses nothing that can be compared with it; it 1s eminently a national work, steeped throughout in the prejudices of therace. Various works of less extent, — accounts of more or less important episodes in the history of Spain,—may take their place beside Mariana's great monument: for example, the Guerra de Granada by Diego Hurtado de Mendoza (a history of the revolt of the Moors of the Alpujarras under Philip IT.), written about 1572, immediately after the events, but not published till about thirty years later, after the anthor's death ; the narrative of the expedition of the Catalans in the Morea in the 14th century by Francisco de Moncada (died 1635); that of the revolt of the same Catalans under the reign of Philip IV. by Francisco Manuel de Melo (died 1666), a Portuguese by birth; and that of the conquest of Mexico by Antonio de Solis. Each of these writers has been more or less inspired by some Latin author, one pre- ferring Livy, another Sallust, &c. These imitations, it must be admitted, have something artificial and stilted, which in the long run proves as fatiguing as the unskilfulness and heaviness of the chroniclers of the Middle Ages. On the other hand, the historians of the wars of Flanders, such as Carlos Coloma, Bernardino de Mendoza, Alonso Vazquez, Francisco Verdugo, are less refined, and for that very reason are more vivid and more thoroughly interest us in that struggle of the two races, so foreign to each other and of such different genius. As for the accounts of the trans-Atlantic discoveries and conquests, they are of two kinds,—either (1) memoirs of the actors or witnesses of those great dramas, as, ¢.g., the M/istoria Verdadera de la Conquista de la Nueva Espatia by Bernal Diaz del Castillo, one of the companions of Cortes, and the Historia de las Indias by P. Bartolomé de las Casas, the apostle of the Indians; or (2) works by professional writers, such

as Francisco Lopez de Gomara,—official his- toriographers who wrote in Spain on information sent to them from the newly-discovered lands.

Letter writers, a rather numerous body in Spanish Letter

literature, are nearly related to the historians; in fact, letters written to be read by others than the persons addressed, or in any case revised afterwards, are only another method, a little more familiar, of writing history. Fernando del Pulgar appended to his Claros Varones a series of letters on the affairs of his time; and at the commencement of the 16th century Antonio de Guevara (died 1545) collected, under the title of Epistolas Fami- liares, his correspondence with his contemporaries, which throws a great light on the early part of the reign of Charles V., although it must be used with caution because of the numerous 7ifacimentos it has undergone. A cele- brated victim of Philip II, Antonio Perez (died 1611), revenged himself on his master by relating in innumer- able letters, addressed during his exile to his friends and protectors, all the incidents of his disgrace, and by selling to the ministers of France and England the secrets of the Spanish policy in which he had a hand; some of these letters are little masterpieces of sprightliness and gallantry.

Philosophy is rather poorly represented in the 16th and Philo- The sophy.

17th centuries in the literature of the vernacular. greater number of the Spanish thinkers of this epoch, whatever the schoo] to which they belonged, —scholastic, Platonic, Aristotelian, or independent,—wrote in Latin.

Ascetic and mystical authors alone made use of the vulgar Mysti- tongue for the readier diffusion of their doctrine among cism.

the illiterate, from whose ranks a good number of their disciples were recruited. Fr. Luis de Granada (died 1588) the great preacher, Juan de la Craz (1542-1591), Fr, Luis de Leon (1528-1598), Teresa de Jesus (1515-

Moralists.

18th century.

1582), and Malon de Chaide are the brighter lights of |

this class of writers. Some of their books, like the Guia de Pecadores of Fr. Luis de Granada, the Confessions of St Teresa, Malon de Chaide's Conversion of the Magdalen, have obtained a brilliant and lasting success beyond the limits of the Peninsula, and have not been without some 'nfluence on the development of mysticism in France. The Spanish mystics are not only remarkable for the depth or subtlety of their thoughts and the intensity of the divine love with which they are inspired ; many of them are masters of style; some, like Juan de la Cruz, have composed verses which rank with the most delicate in the language. A notable fact is that those men who are regarded as illuminati profess the most practical ideas +n the matter of morality. Nothing is more sensible, nothing less ecstatic, than the manual of domestic economy by Fr. Luis de Leon—La Perfecta Casada. Lay moralists are very numerous in the 16th and 17th centuries. Some write long and heavy treatises on the art of governing, the education of princes, the duties of subjects, &c. Pedro Fernandez de Navarrete's Conservacion de Monarquias, Diego de Saavedra Faxardo's Idea de un Principe Cris- tiano, Quevedo's La Politica de Dios y Gobierno de Cristo, give a correct idea of the ability which the Spaniards have displayed in this kind of didactic and preceptorial literature,—ability of no high order, for the Spaniard, when he means to teach and work out a doctrine, loses himself in distinctions and rapidly becomes diffuse, pedantic, and obscure. But there isa kind of morality in which he indubitably excels, namely, in social satire, which, under all its forms,—dialogue and dream in the style of Lucian, epistle after the manner of Juvenal, or pamphlet,—has produced several masterpieces and a host of ingenious, caustic, and amusing compositions. Juan de Valdes, the most celebrated of the Spanish Protestants, led the way by his Dialogo de Mercurio y Caron, where all the great political and religious questions of the first half of the 16th century are discussed and resolved with admir- able vigour and freedom. The king in the department of social satire, as in those of literary and political satire, is Quevedo. Nothing escapes his scrutinizing spirit and pitiless irony. All the vices of the society of his time are, in his Suetos and many other little pamphlets, remorse- lessly placed in the pillory and cruelly cut to pieces. While this great satirist, in philosophy a disciple

of Seneca, imitates his master even in his style of writing, he ig none the less one of the most vigorous and original writers of the 17th century. The only serious defect in his style is that it is too full, not of figures and epithets, but of thoughts. His phrases are of set purpose charged with a double meaning, and we are never sure On reading whether we have taken in all that the author meant to convey. Conceptism is the name that has been given to this vefinement of thought, which was doomed in time to fall into the ambiguous and equivocal; it must not be con- founded with the cultism of Géngora, the artifice of which lies solely in the choice and arrangement of words. This new school, of which Quevedo may be regarded as the founder, had its Boileau in the person of Baltasar Gracian, who in 1642 published his Agudeza y Arte de Ingenio, in which all the subtleties of conceptism are very exactly reduced to @ code. Gracian, who had the gift of senten- tious moralizing rather than of satire, produced in his Criticon animated pictures of the society of his own day, while he also displayed much ingenuity in little collections of political and moral aphorisms which have procured him a great reputation abroad,—H/ Leroe, H1 Politico er- nando el Catolico, Oraculo Manual y Arte de Prudencia. Spanish thought as well as public spirit and all other forms of national activity began to decline towards the

‘ who were possessed of

close of the 17th century. The advent of the house of Bourbon, and the increasing invasion of French influence in the domain of politics as well as in literature and science, confirmed this decay by rendering abortive the efforts of a few writers who had remained faithful to the pure Spanish tradition. In the hands of the second-rate ‘mitators of Calderon the stage sank ever lower and lower ; lyric poetry, already compromised by the pomp and gali- matias of Géngora, was abandoned to wretched rhymsters, who tried without success to make up by extravagance of style for meanness of thought. In a word, everything was suffering from anemia. The first symptoms, not of a revival, but of a certain resumption of intellectual production appear in the department of linguistic study. In 1714 there was

created, on the model of the French academies, La Real Academia Espaiiola, intended to main- tain the purity of the language and to correct its abuses. This Academy set itself at once to work, and in 1726 was able to commence the publication of its dictionary in six volumes folio, the best title of this association to the | gratitude of men of letters. The Gramatica de la Lengua Castellana, drawn up by the Academy, did not appear till 1771. For the new ideas which were introduced into Spain as the result of more intimate relations with France, and which were in many cases repugnant to a nation for two centuries accustomed to live a self-contained life, it was necessary that fully sanctioned patrons should be found. D. Ignacio de Luzan, well read in the literatures of Italy and France, a disciple of Boileau and the French rhetoricians, yet not without some originality of his own, undertook in his Poetica (1737) to expound to his fellow- countrymen the rules of the new school, and, above all, the principle of the famous “ynities” accepted by the French stage from Corneille’s day onward. What Luzan had ~ done for letters, Benito Feyjoo (167 6-1764), a Benedictine of good sense and great learning, did for the sciences. His Teatro Critico (1726-1729) and Cartas Eriditas y Curiosas (1742-1760), collections of dissertations in almost every department of human knowledge, intro- duced the Spaniards to the leading scientific discoveries of foreign countries, and helped to deliver them from many superstitions and absurd prejudices. The study of the ancient classics and the department of learned research in the domain of national histories and literatures had an eminent representative in Gregorio Mayans y Siscar (died 1782), who worthily carried on the great traditions of the renaissance ; besides publishing good editions of old Spanish authors, he gave to the world in 1757 a Retérica which is still worth consulting and a number of learned memoirs. What may be called the littérature @agrément did not recover much lost ground ; it would seem as if

the vein had been exhausted. Something of the old Rom |

picaresque novel came to life again in the Historia del Famoso Predicador Fray Gerundno de Campazas of the Jesuit José Francisco de Isla, a biographical romance which is also and above all—to the detriment, it is true, of the interest of the narrative—a satire on the follies of the preachers of the day ; the history of Fray Clerundio is merely a pretext, as it were, for displaying and holding up to ridicule the eloquence of the pulpit at the sorry

pass to which it had then been brought by the ignorance and bad taste of the Spanish clergy. Isla is known also by his translation of Gal Blas, a» work which he professed to restore to his native country, trying to make out—unsuccessfully, of course—that Le Sage had no other merit than that of rendering it into French. The lyric poetry of this period is very when compared with its dazzling splendour in the preced- ing century. Nevertheless one or two poets can be named refinement of taste, and whose

pale and colourless Poe}

collections of verse, though wanting in genuiue inspiration, at least show respect for the language and will always meet with some appreciation. At the head of the new school is Juan Menendez Valdés (1754-1817), and with his are associated the names of P. Diego Gonzales (1733- 1794), José Iglesias de la Casa (1748-1791), known especially by his letrillas, Nicasio Alvarez de Cienfuegos (1764-1809), and some others. of the 18th century who produced odes and didactic poetry it is only necessary to mention Leandro Fernandez de Moratin (1760-1828) and Manuel José Quintana (1772-1857), but the latter belougs rather to the present century, during the first half of which he published his most important works. The poverty of the period in lyric poetry is even exceeded by that of the stage. Here no kind of comedy or tragical drama arose to take the place of the ancient comedia, whose platitudes and absurdities of thought and expression had ended by disgusting even the least exacting portion of the public. The attempt was indeed made to introduce the comedy and the tragedy of France, but the stiff and pedantic adaptations of such writers as Agustin de Montiano y Luyando (1697-1764), Tomas de Iriarte (1750-1791), Garcia de la Huerta, and the well-known economist Gaspar de Jovellanos (1744-1811) were unable to interest the great mass of play- goers. The only one who was really successful in com- posing on the French pattern some pleasant comedies, which owe much of their charm to the great purity of the language in which they are written, is Leandro Fernandez de Moratin; his best pieces are La Nueva Comedia, a parody on the extravagant work of Comella, a playwright of the period, Hl Vigo y la Nita, El Baron, and parti- cularly HZ Si de las Niitas. It has to be added that the saynete was

cultivated in the 18th century by one writer of genuine talent, Ramon de la Cruz; nothing helps us better to an acquaintance with the curious Spanish society of the reign of Charles IV. than the intermezzos of this genial and light-hearted author.

The terrible struggle of the War of Independence – (1808-1814), which was destined to have such important consequences in the world of politics, did not exert any immediate influence on the literature of Spain. One might have expected as a consequence of the rising of the whole nation against Napoleon that Spanish writers would have given up seeking their inspiration from those of France, and would ‘shave tried to resume the national traditions which had been broken at the end of the 17th century. But nothing of the sort occurred. Not only the afrancesados (as those were called who had accepted the new régime), but also the most ardent partisans of the patriotic cause, continued in literature to be the submis- sive disciples of France. Quintana, who in his inflam- matory odes preached to his compatriots the duty of resistance and revenge, has nothing of the innovator about him; by his education and by his literary doctrines he remains a man of the 18th century. The same may be said of Francisco Martinez de la Rosa (1789-1848), who, however, from his intercourse with Horace, whom he trans- lated with skill into good Castilian verse, had a greater independence of spirit and a more highly trained and classical taste. And, when romanticism begins to find its way into Spain and to enter into conflict with the spirit and habits of the 18th century, it is still to France that the poets and prose writers of the new school turn, much more than either to England or to Germany. The first decidedly romantic poet of the generation which flourished about 1830 was the duke of Rivas, Angel de Saavedra (1791-1856) ; no one succeeded better in reconciling the genius of Spain and the tendencies of modern poetry ; his

ve AT ®

Among the verse writers [

361

6 la Fuerza del Sino belong as much to the old romances and old theatre of Spain as to the romantic spirit of 1830. On the other hand, José de

Espronceda (1808-1842), who has sometimes been called the Spanish Musset, savours much less of the soil than the duke of Rivas; he isa quite cosmopolitan romanticist of the school of Byron and the French imitators of Byron; an exclusively lyric poet, he did not live long enough to give full proof of his genius, but what he has left is certainly exquisite. José Zorrilla (born 1817) has a more flexible and exuberant but much more unequal talent than Espronceda, and if the latter has written too little it cannot but be regretted that the former should have produced too much; nevertheless, ainong a multitude of hasty performances, brought out before they had been matured, his Don Juan Tenorio, a new and fantastic version of the legend treated by Tirso de Molina and Moliére, will always remain as one of the most curious specimens of Spanish romanticism. In the dramatic literature of this period it is noticeable that the tragedy more than the comedy is modelled on the examples furnished by the French drama of the Restoration ; thus, if we leave out of account the play of Garcia Gutierrez (born 1813) entitled £7 Trovador, which inspired the well-known opera of Verdi, and Los Amantes de Teruel of Juan Eugenio Hartzenbusch (born 1806), and a few others, all the dramatic work belonging to this date recalls more or less the manner of the professional playwrights of the boulevard theatres, while on the other hand the comedy of manners still preserves a certain originality and a genuine local colour. Manuel Breton de los Herreros (1796-1873), who wrote as many as a hundred comedies, some of them of the first order after their kind, apart from the fact of their being written in language of great excellence, adheres with great fidelity to the tradition of the 17th century; he is the last of those writers who have preserved the feeling of the ancient comedia. One prose writer of the highest talent must be mentioned along with Espronceda, with whom he has in the moral aspect several features in common,—namely, D. José de Larra (1809-1837), so famous by his pseudonym of “Figaro,” with which he signed the greater number of his works. Caustic in temper, of a keenly observant spirit, remarkably sober and clear as a writer, he was specially successful in the political pamphlet, the article @actualités ; to this category belong his Cartas de un Pobrecito Hablador, in which he ridicules without pity the vices and oddities of his contemporaries ; his reputation is much more largely due to these letters than either to his somewhat feeble play of Macias or to his not very attractive novel £7 Doncel de Enrique el Doliente. With Larra must be associated two other humoristic writers. The first of these is Ramon Mesonero

Romanos, “El Curioso Parlante” (born 1803), whose Lscenas Matritenses, although not possessed of the literary value of Larra’s articles, give pleasure by their good-natured gaiety and by the curious details they furnish with regard to the contemporary society of Madrid. The other is Serafin Estébanez Calderon, ‘El Solitario ” (1799-1867), who in his Hscenas Andaluzes sought to re- vive the manner of the satirical and picaresque writers of the 17th century ; in a uselessly archaic language of his own, patched up from fragments taken from Cervantes, Quevedo, and others, he has delineated with a peculiar but somewhat artificial grace various piquant scenes of Anda- lusian or Madrilenian life. The most prominent literary critics belonging to the first generation of the century were Alberto Lista (1775-1848), whose critical doctrine may be described as a compromise between the ideas of French classicism and those of the romantic school, and Agustin Duran (died 1862), who made it his special task to restore

epic poem LE Moro Esposito and his drama of Don Alvaro | to honour the old literature of Castile, particularly its

Dect, 046

romances, which he had studied with unequalled thorough- ness, and of which he published highly esteemed collections.

If the struggle between classicists and romanticists continued even after 1830, and continued to divide the literary world into two opposing camps, it is plain that the new generation—that which occupied the scene from 1840 till about 1868—had other preoccupations. The triumph of the new ideas is now assured ; only a few reactionaries are still seen to cling to the principles bequeathed by the 18th century. What was now being aimed at was the creation of a new literature which should be truly national and no longer a mere echo of that beyond the Pyrenees. To the question whether contem- porary Spain has indeed succeeded in calling into exist- ence such a literature, we may well hesitate to give an affirmative answer. It is true that in every species of com- position, the gravest as well as the lightest, it can show works of genuine talent; but many of them are strik- ingly deficient in originality ; all of them either bear un- mistakable traces of

imitation of foreign models, or show (more or less happily) the imprint of the older literature of the 17th century, to which the historical criticism of Duran and the labours of various other scholars had given a flavour of novelty. With this observation before him, the student can divide the authors of this period into two groups,——the one composed of those who, won by modern ideas, are more or less liberal in politics, and draw their inspiration in all they write from France or from what they are able to assimilate of other literatures through France ; the other consisting of ultra-conservatives, whose dream in every sphere—letters, art, and politics—is the restoration of the Spain of the past. Nowhere does this antagonism manifest itself more clearly than in the drama. A play of Aureliano Fernandez Guerra might have been conceived and written by a contemporary of Lope or of Calderon, while a comedy of Adelardo Lopez de Ayala is moulded in the pattern given by the younger Dumas and by Augier. In the department of romance, on the other hand—much neglected by the writers of the first half of the century— the Spaniards have recovered something of the genius of Cervantes and their 17th century novelas picarescas, The art of constructing a story and of telling it in an agreeable way, which seemed for a long time to have been lost, is recovered in such authors as Fernan Caballero, Antonio de Trueba, Pedro Antonio de Alarcon, Juan Valera, Perez Galdos, and Pereda. These novelists are far from alike in method or in spirit ; how widely separated, for example, are the somewhat banal facility and the sentimental catholicism of Fernan Caballero on the one hand, and the searching psychological analysis and the fine scepticism of Juan Valera on the other. But all have this in common, that they understand how to interest their readers, and how to make their characters live and speak. Incontestably the novel is the triumph of contemporary Spanish literature ; it is almost the only kind of composition that actually lives with a life of its own and makes steady progress. One cannot say as much of lyric poetry, represented feebly enough by Ramon de Campoamor, Nufiez de Arce, and some others. Deficient inspiration, diffuseness of style, and want of precision in language characterize them all ; it is unfortunately very easy to make mediocre verses in Spanish, and too many people give themselves over to the pursuit. Passing from the literature of amusement, we have still some very distinguished names to enumerate. Philosophy, indeed, has but one representative of merit, the traditionalist Jaime Balmes,—for the Krausist school, an importation from Germany, may be ignored here,— but

history and literary criticism have been cultivated during the last thirty years or so with genuine success. Modesto Lafuente is in some sort the Mariana of the 19th

century; much inferior as a writer to the celebrated Jesuit, he has, however, always manifested the same passion for his subject, the same persevering determination to raise &

worthy monument of his fatherland; his Historia de Espaia, in spite of all its defects, deserves respect, and is at least readable. Although primarily a politician, Antonio Cano- vas del Castillo has many of the qualities which go to the making of a good historian ; he has evinced greater acute- ness and larger acquirements than Lafuente, and his Lnsayo sobre la Casa de Austria en Espana, founded upon a careful examination of a large number of documents, gives evidence of a correct judgment and praiseworthy impartiality. The literary history of old Spain has been treated in a masterly manner by Aureliano Fernandez Guerra in various studies devoted to the great writers of the 17th century, notably Quevedo, and also quite recently by a young and talented scholar, Marcelino Menéndez Pelayo, whose Historia de las Ideas Estéticas en Espata, a work as solid in its substance as it is pure in its style, would do honour to any veteran in literature. As regards criticism of contemporary litera- ture, no one shows more spirit and taste than Juan Valera, whose delicate Andalusian nature has been matured by a refining education and by an adequate knowledge of foreign literatures.

Bibliography.—The base of the student’s operations is always the great work of Nicolas Antonio, Bibliotheca Hispana Vetus aud Bibliotheca Hispana Nova, in the revised and completed edition of Francisco Perez Bayer, Tomas Antonio Sanchez, and Juan Antonio Pellicer (Madrid, 1783-88, 4 vols. fol.). The student can afford to disregard all the general histories which preceded Ticknor’s History of Spanish Literature (New York, 1849, 3 vols. 8vo; 4th ed., Boston, 1872, 3 vols. 8vo), a work of solid value, especially from the pe ie a point of view; it is quite indispensable that the

reader should consult also the Spanish translation by D. Pascual de Gayangos and Enrique de Vedia (Madrid, 1851-56) and the German translation of Julius with some important additions by Ferdinand Wolf (Leipsic, 1852-67). Nothing can be said in favour of the French translation by J. G. Magnabal (Paris, 1864— 72), The Historia Critica de la Literatura Espatiola of José Amador de los Rios (Madrid, 1861-65, 7 vols. 8vo), although de- ficient in criticism and full of errors in fact, supplies some useful information as to the period prior to the 15th century, with which it exclusively deals. Menendez Pelayo's Historia de las Ideas Esté- ticas en Espatta (Madrid, 1884-86, 3 vols. 8vo), already referred to, is very instructive. For the 18th century, Leopoldo A. de Cueto's " Bosquejo Histdrico-Critico de la Poesia Castellana en el Siglo xviii.," prefixed to the first vol. of Rivadeneyra's Poetas Ltricos del Siglo wviit., is indispensable. For the 19th century there is not as yet any satisfactory work dealing with the literature as a whole ; that of M. G. Hubbard, Histoire de la Littérature Contenyporaine en Espagne (Paris, 1876, 1 vol. 8vo), although superficial and inaccurate, is useful in the absence of anything better. Some descriptions of Castilian literature have been specially studied with care and competence, notably the drama, on which we have two thorough works,— Frederick von Schack's Geschichte der drama- tischen Literatur wu. Kunst in Spanien (Frank fort-on-the-Main, 1846-54, 3 vols. 8vo), unfortunately now much behindhand, and in no way improved in this respect in the Spanish translation now in course of publication at Madrid under the superintendence of Eduardo de Mier, and Cayetano Alberto de la Barrera's excellent Catdlogo Bibliografico y Biogrdfico del Teatro Antiguo Espatiol (Ma- drid, 1860, large 8vo). On the Castilian literature of the Middle Ages, the works to be consulted are Ferdinand Wolf's Studien zur Geschichte der Spanischen u. Portugicsischen Nationallitcratur (Berlin, 1859, 1 vol. 8vo) and Manuel Mila y Fontanals's De la Poesia Heroico-Popular Castellana (Barcelona, 1874, 1 vol. 8vo).

IL Caranan Lrrerature.—Although the Catalan lan- Poet} guage is simply a branch of the southern Gallo-Roman, M44 the literature, in its origin at least, ought to be considered * Bf as a mere appendix of that of Provence. Nay more, until about the second half of the 13th century there existed in the Catalan districts no other literature than the Provencal, and the poets of north-eastern Spain used no other language than that of the troubadours.

Guillem de Bergadan, Uc de Mataplana, Ramon Vidal de Besalu, Guillem de Cervera, Serveri de Gerona, and several other verse writers of a still more recent date are all genuine Provencal poets, in the same sense as are those of

a he

CATALAN. |

Limousin, Quercy, or Auvergne, since they write in the langue doc and make use of all the forms of poetry culti- vated by the troubadours north of the Pyrenees. Ramon Vidal (end of 12th century and beginning of 13th) was a grammarian as well as a poet; his Rasos de Trobar became the code for the Catalan poetry written in Pro- vengal, which he called Lemosi, a name still kept up in Spain to designate, not the literary idiom of the trouba- dours only, but also the local idiom—Catalan,—which the Spaniards choose to consider as derived from the former. The influence of R. Vidal and other grammarians of his school, as well as that of the troubadours we have named, lasted for a very long time; and even after Catalan prose—an exact reflexion of the spoken language of the south-east of the Pyrenees—had given evidence of its vitality in some considerable works, the Catalan poetry remained faithful to the Provencal tradition. From the combination of spoken Catalan with the literary language of the troubadours there arose a sort of composite idiom, which has some analogy with the Franco-Italian current in certain parts of Italy in the Middle Ages, although in the one case the elements of the mixture are more distinctly apparent than are the romance of France and the romance of Italy in the other. The poetical works of Raymond Lully (Ramon Lull) (died 1315) are among the oldest examples of this Provengalized Catalan ; one has only to read the fine piece entitled Lo Desconort (“Despair”), or some of his stanzas on religious subjects, to apprehend at once the eminently composite nature of that language. Muntaner in like manner, whose prose is exactly that spoken by his contemporaries, becomes troubadour when he writes in verse ; his Sermé on the conquest of Sardinia and Corsica (1323), introduced into his Chronicle of the kings of Aragon, exhibits linguistically quite the same mixed character as is found in Lully, or, we may venture to say, in all the Catalan verse writers of the 14th century. These are not very numerous, nor

are their works of any great merit. The majority of their compositions consist of what were called noves rimades, that is, stories in octosyllabic verse in rhymed couplets. There exist poems of this class by Pere March, by a certain Torrella, by Bernat Metge (an author more celebrated for his prose), and by others whose names we do not know; among the works belonging to this last category special mention ought to be made of a version of the romance of the Seven Sages, a translation of a book on good breeding entitled Facetus, and certain tales where, by the choice of subjects, by various borrowings, and even occasionally by the whole- sale introduction of pieces of French poetry, it is clearly evident that the writers of Catalonia understood and read the langue dow. Closely allied to the noves rimades is

tends to become the same as that of prose and of ordinary conversation. With Pere and Jaume March, Jordi de Sant Jordi, Johan de Masdovelles, Francesch Ferrer, Pere Torroella, Pau de Bellviure, Antoni Vallmanya, and, above all, the Valencian Auzias March (died 1459), there flourished a new school, of which the éclat lasted till the end of the 15th century, and which, as regards the form of its versi- fication, is distinguished by its almost exclusive employ- ment of eight-verse cobles of ten syllables, each with ‘crossed ”” or “chained” rhymes (cobla crohada or encade- nada), each composition ending with a tornada of four verses, in the first of which the “device” (divis or senyal) of the poet is given out. The greater number of these poems are still unedited or have only recently been extracted from the cangoners, where they had been col- lected in the 15th century. Auzias March alone, the most inspired, the most profound, but also the most obscure of the whole group, had the honour to be printed in the 16th century ; his cants @amor and cants de mort contain the finest verses ever written in Catalan, but the poet fails to keep up to his own high level, and by his studied obscurity occasionally becomes unintelligible to such a degree that one of his editors accuses him of having written in Basque. Of a wholly different class, and in quite another spirit, is the Libre de les Dones of Jaume Roig (died 1478), a Valencian also, like March ; this long poem is a

nova rimada, only comediada, that is to say, it is in quadrisyllabic instead of octosyllabic verse. A bitter and caustic satire upon women, it purperts to be a true history,—the history of the poet himself and of his three unhappy marriages in particular. Notwithstanding its author's allegations, however, the Libre de les Dones does not seem to be other than a fiction; but it derives a very piquant interest from its really authentic element, its vivid picture of the Valencia of the 15th century and the details of the manners of that time. After this bright period of efflorescence Catalan poetry rapidly fell off, a decline duc more to the force of circumstances than to any fault of the poets. The union of Aragon with Castile, and the resulting predominance of Castilian throughout Spain, inflicted a death blow on Catalan literature, especially on its artistic poetry, a kind of composition more ready than any other to avail itself of the triumphant idiom which soon came to be regarded by men of letters as the only noble one, and alone fit to be the vehicle of elevated or refined thoughts. The fact that a Catalan, Juan Boscan, inaugurates in the Castilian language a new kind of poetry, and that the Castilians themselves regard him as the head of a school, is important and characteristic ; the date of the publication of the works of Boscan (1543) marks the end of Catalan poetry.

another analogous form of versification—that of the codo- lada, consisting of a series of verses of eight and four syllables, rhyming in pairs, still made use of in one por-

The earliest prose works in Catalan are later indeed than Prose of the poems of the oldest Catalan troubadours of the Pro- holo vencal school, not dating farther back than from the close °&t™es.

aft

of 15th century,

tion of the Catalan domain (Majorca).

The 15th century is the golden age of Catalan poetry. At the instigation and under the auspices of John I. (1387-1395), Martin I. (1395-1410), and Ferdinand I. (1410-1416), kings of Aragon, there was founded at Barcelona a consistory of the "Gay Saber," on the model of that of Toulouse, and this

official protection accorded to poetry was the beginning of a new style much more emancipated from Provencal influence. It cannot be denied, indeed, that its forms are still of foreign importa- tion, that the Catalan verse writers accept the prescrip- tions of the Leys d@'Amor of Guillaume Molinier, and the names which they gave to their cobles (stanzas) are all borrowed from the same art de trobar of the school of Toulouse ; but, a very noteworthy fact, their language begins to rid itself more and more of Provengalisms and

of the 13th century, but they have the advantage of being entirely original ; their language is the very language of the soil which we see appearing in charters from about the time of the accession of James I. (1213). This is true especially of the chronicles, a little less so of the other writings, which, like the poetry, have difficulty in escaping the influence of the more polished dialect of the country to the north of the Pyrenees. Its chronicles are the best ornament of medieval Catalan prose. Four of them,—that of James I., apparently reduced to writing a little after his death (1276) with the help of memoirs dictated by himself during his lifetime; that of Bernat Des Clot, which deals chiefly with the reign of Pedro III. of Aragon (1276-1286); that of Ramon Muntaner (first half of the 14th century), relating at length the expedition of the Catalan company to the Morea and the conquest

of Sardinia by James II.; finally that of Pedro IV., The Ceremonious (1336-1387), genuine commentaries of that astute monarch, arranged by certain officials of his court, notably by Bernat Des Coll,—these four works are distinguished alike by the artistic skill of their narration and by the quality of their language ; it would not be too much to liken these Catalan chroniclers, and Muntaner especially, to Villehardouin, Joinville, and Froissart. The Doctor Illuminatus, Raymond Lully, whose acquaintance with Latin was very poor,—his philosophical works were done into that language by his disciples,—wrote in a some- what Provencalized Catalan various moral and propagandist works,—the romance Blanquerna in praise of the solitary life, the Libre de les Maravelles, into which is introduced a '"bestiary" taken by the author from Kalilah and Dim- nag, and the Libre del Orde de Cavalleria, a manual of the perfect knight, besides a variety of

other treatises and opuscula of minor importance. The majority of the writings of Lully exist in two versions,—one in the vernacular, which is his own, the other in Latin, originating with his disciples, who desired to give currency throughout Christendom to their master's teachings. Lully—who was very popular in the lay world, although the clergy had a low opinion of him and in the 15th century even set themselves to obtain a condemnation of his works by the Inquisition—had a rival in the person of Francesch Ximenez or Eximeniz, a Franciscan, born at Gerona some time after 1350. His Crestid (printed in 1483-84) is a vast encyclopedia of theology, morals, and politics for the use of the laity, supplemented in various aspects by his three other works—Vida de Jesu Christ, Libre dels Angels, and Libre de les Dones; the last-named, which is at once a book of devotion and a manual of domestic economy, con- tains a number of curious details as to a Catalan woman's manner of life and the luxury of the period. Lully and

in fact, furnishes literary history with hardly more than a single poet at all worthy of the name—Pere Serafi, some of whose pieces, in the style of Auzias March, but less obscure, are graceful enough and deserve to live; his poems were printed at Barcelona in 1565. Prose is somewhat better represented, but, to tell the truth, it is only the erudite who persist in writing in Catalan,—antiquaries and historians like Pere Miguel Carbonell, compiler of the Chroniques de Espanya (1547), Francesch Tarafa, Pere Anton Beuter, also chroniclers, and some others not so well known. In the 17th and 18th centuries the decadence becomes still more marked. A few scattered attempts to restore to the Catalan, now more and more ueglected by men of letters, some of its old life and brilliance, fail miserably. Neither Hieronim Pujades the historian, author of a Coronica Universal del Principat (Barcelona, 1609), nor even Dr Vicens Garcia, rector of Vallfogona (1582-1623), a verse-writer by no means destitute of verve or humour, but whose literary talent and originality have been very greatly exaggerated by the Catalans of the present day, was able to bring back his countrymen to a cultivation of the local idiom. Some sermons, some lives of saints, some books of devotion, some relations and complaints for the

use of the people, exhaust the catalogue of everything written in Catalan throughout the whole area of its domains down to the beginning of the present century; not a single book of importance can be mentioned. Writers who were Catalan by birth had so completely unlearned their mother-tongue that it would have seemed to them quite inappropriate, and even ridiculous, to make use of it in serious works, so profoundly had Castilian struck its roots in the eastern provinces of Spain, and so thoroughly had the work of assimilation been carried out to the advantage of the official language of the court and of the Government.

Eximeniz are the only Catalan authors of the 14th century In 1814 appeared the Gramdtica y Apologia de la Reviv whose works written in a vulgar tongue had the honour of | Llengua Cathalana of Joseph Pau Ballot y Torres, which Ff |

may be considered as marking the origin of a genuine ae oS

renaissance of the grammatical and literary study of andij

being translated into French shortly after their appearance. We have chiefly translators and historians in the 15th

centuries. literary independence in the Catalonian countries.

century. Antoni Canals, a Dominican, who belongs also to ‘the previous century, translates into Catalan Valerius Maximus and a treatise of St Bernard; Bernat Metge, himself well-versed in Italian literature, presents some of its great masters to his countrymen by translating the Griselidis of Petrarch, and also by composing Lo Sompni (“The Dream ”), in which the influence of Dante, of Boccac- cio, and, generally speaking, of the Italy of the 13th and 14th centuries is very perceptible. The Feyts d’ Armes de Catalunya of Bernat Boades, a knightly chronicle brought to a close in 1420, reveals a spirit of research and a con- scientiousness in the selection of materials which are truly remarkable for the age in which it was written. On the other hand, Pere Tomich, in his //istories é Conquestes del Reyalme d’Arago (1438), carries us back too much to the manner of the medizval chroniclers ; his credulity knows no bounds, while his style has altogether lost the naive charm of that of Muntaner. To the list of authors who

represent the leading tendencies of the literature of the 15th century we must add the name of Johanot Martorell, a Valencian, author of the celebrated romance of chivalry Tirant lo Blanch (finished in 1460), which the reader has nowadays some difficulty in regarding as that “treasury of contentment” which Cervantes will have it to be.

With the loss of political was bound to coincide that of Cata- lan fell to the rank of a patois and was written less and less; lettered persons ceased to cultivate it, and the upper classes, especially in Valencia, owing to the proximity of Castile, soon affected to make no further use of the local speech except in familiar conversation. Tle 16th century,

Catalan. Although the author avows no object beyond ture. |

the purely practical one of giving to strangers visiting Barcelona for commercial purposes some knowledge of the language, the enthusiasm with which he sings the praises of his mother-tongue, and his appended catalogue of works which have appeared in it since the time of James I, sufficiently show that this was not his only aim. In point of fact the book, which is entitled to high consideration as being the first systematic Catalan grammar, written, too, in the despised idiom itself, had a great influence on the authors and literary men of the principality. Under the helping influence of the new doctrines of romanticism twenty years had not passed before a number of attempts in the way of restoring the old language had made their appearance, in the shape of various poetical works of very unequal merit. The Oda dé la Patria (1833) of Buenaven- tura Carlos Aribau is among the earliest if not actually the very first of these, and it is also the best ; the modern Catalan school has not produced anything either more inspired or more correct. Following in the steps of Aribau, Joaquin Rubid y Ors (Lo Gayter del Llobregat), Antonio de Bofarull (Lo Coblejador de Moncada), and soon afterwards a number of other verse writers took up the lyre which it might have been feared was never to sound again since it fell from the hands of Auzias March. The movement spread from Catalonia into other provinces of the ancient kingdom of Aragon ; the appeal of the Catalans of the principality was responded to at Valencia and in the Balearic Isles. Later, the example of Provence, of the felibritge of the south of France,

accelerated still further this renaissance movement, which received official recogni-

gay saber.

tion in 1859 by the ereation of the jochs florals, in which prizes are given to the best competitors in poetry, of whom some sueeeed in obtaining the diploma of mestre en It is of course impossible to foresee the future of this new Catalan literature,—whether it is indeed destined for that brilliant eareer which the Catalans them- selves anticipate. In spite of the unquestionable talent of poets like Mariano Aguilé (Majorea), Teodoro Llorente (Valencia), and, among the younger of them, Jacinto Verdaguer (Catalonia), author of an epic poem Atlantida and of very faseinating Cants Mistichs, it is by no means eertain that this generation will be succeeded by another to follow in its footsteps, or that such a restoration of a provincial literature has much chanee of permanenee at the very moment when all the peoples of Europe are tend- ing rather towards unity and centralization in the matter of language. At all events, in order to secure even a comparative suecess for sueh a revival, it would be well if the language serving as its instrument were some- what more fixed, and if its writers would no longer

arehaism and the incorrectness of the most vulgar col- loquialism. The few attempts of modern Catalans in the direction of romance writing and dramatic composition have not hitherto been particularly felicitous, and have not led to anything noteworthy.

Bibliography.—José Rodriguez, Biblioteca Valentina, 1 vol. fol., Valencia, 1747 ; Ximeno, Escritores del Reyno de Valencia, 2 vols. fol., Valencia, 1747-49; Fuster, Biblioteca Valenciana, 2 vols. fol., Valencia, 1827-30; Torres Amat, Memorias para ayudar & formar un Diccionario Critico de los Escritores Catalanes, Barcelona, 1836 ; supplement by J. Corminas, Burgos, 1849; F. R. Cambouliu, Essai sur 0 Histoire dela Littérature Catalane, Paris, 1858; A. Hel- ferrich, Raymond Lull und die Anfiinge der Catalonischen Literatur, Berlin, 1858 (compare on the last two works the article by Ad.

Ebert in the Jahrb. f. romanische uw. englisehe Literatur, it. 241) 3 Manual Mila y Fontanals, De los Trovadores en Espana, Barcelona, 1861; Id., “Catalanische Dichter” (14th and 15th centurics), in Jahrb. f. rom. Lit., v. 187; Id., “Resenya Histérica Critica dels Antichs Poetas Catalans,” in the Jochs Florals of Barcelona for 1865; Id., various articles in the Revue des Langues Romanes; P.

| Meyer in Romania, passim; Morel-Fatio, ibid. For the modern

period see Joaquin Rubid y Ors, Breve Resefia del Actual Renact- miento de la Lengua y Literatura Catalanas, Barcelona, 1877, and Tubino, Historia del Renacimiento Literario Contemporaneo en

hesitate, as they at present do, between a pretentious

‘Abdallah, 312.

‘Abd al-Rahmdn (Abde- rame) I.-1II,, 310-813,

Aeademia Espafiola, 360.

Administration, 303.

Agrieulture, 298,

Alberoni, 337,

Aleman, 357.

Alfonso 1.-II. (Aragon),

316.

Alfonso I1J., 322.

Alfonso 1V., 323.

Alfonso V., 324.

Alfonso VI.~~V11I. (Cas~~ tile), 316.

Alfonso X., 318, 354.

Alfonso XI., 319.

Alfonso I, -III.(Leon),311.

Alfonso X11. (Spain), 346.

Al-Hakam I., 310.

Al-Hakam IT., 313,

Almansor, 314.

Almohades, 316.

Almoravids, 316.

Alvaro de Luna, 321.

Amadeus of Aosta, 346.

Amadis de Gaula, 355.

American possessions,

327, 340.

Amirids, 314.

Andalusian dialect, 351.

Animals, 297,

Arab rule, 309.

Aragon, 312, 315, 317,

322-325.

Area, 298, 297.

Aribau, 364,

Army, 803.

Asturian dialect, 350.

Baena, 355.

Balearic Islands, 323.

Ballot y Torres, 364,

Barcelona connty, 311.

Berbers, 310.

Berceo, 353.

Bermudo I-III. (Leon),

3811, 312,

Bosean, 357, 363.

Breton de los Herreros,

361.

Calderon, 359,

Cancioneros, 355,

Carlist War, 346,

Carlos, Don, 345,

Carlos, Don (king of Naples), 338.

Carthaginian rule, 308.

Castile, 312, 315, 318-322.

Castile and Leon, 317.

Castilian language, 349.

Castilian literature, 353.

Castillejo, 357,

Castro, 358.

Catalan language, 347,

Catalan literature, 362.

Catalonia, 325.

Cattle, 300.

Celtiberi, 305.

Cervantes, 356, 357, 358.

Charles I., 328.

Charles IL., 333.

Charles 11I., 340.

Charles IV., 342,

Charles of Viana, 324,

Chivalry, books of, 354,

Christianity, early, 311,

Christina, 345,

Chronicles, 354, 363.

Church, 303,

Cid, 316, 353,

Climate, 296.

Colonies, 298, 327.

Columbus, 327,

Commerce, 302.

Communes, rising of, 328.

Crusaders, 316,

D’Aranda, 341.

Don Quixote, 358.

Drama, Castilian, 356, 358.

Education, 303.

Elizabeth Farnese, 337.

England,interventions of,

336, 338, 344,

Espartcro, 346.

Espinel, 358.

Espronceda, 361,

Eximeniz, 364.

Exports, 302,

Family compact, 339, 342.

Fauna, 297,

Ferdinand I. (Aragon),

324,

Ferdinand I.

315.

Ferdinand III., 317,

Ferdinand IV., 319, 354.

Ferdinand V. and Isa- bella, 325.

(Castile),

| Fisheries, 300. | Flora, 296.

| Gonzales, 361.

Catalutia, Baleares, y Valencia, Madrid, 1879.

INDEX.

Ferdinand VI. (Spain),339, | Ferdinand VII1., 345. Feyjoo, 360. Finance, 304.

Florida Blanca, 340.

Forests, 297.

Franks, 307.

French invasion, 344.

Fruit, 300.

Galician dialect, 352.

Game, 297.

Garcia, Vicens, 364,

Geology, 295.

Germany, relations with,

329.

Godoy, 342.

Goéngora, 357.

Gothic rule, 308.

Government, 303,

Gracian, 360.

Granada, 318,

Guzman, Perez de, 354.

Hammudite dynasty, 315.

Hapsburg line, 327, 334.

Harbours, 293.

Tlenry II. (Castile), 320.

Henry III.-1V., 321.

Henry of Trastamara, 320.

Hermandad, 326.

Ilerrera, 357,

Dlisham II, 814.

Tlispania, 304,

llistorical works, 359, 363,

Ifistory, 304.

Hita, Perez de, 358,

Imports, 302.

Inquisition, 329, 345.

Isabella I, 325.

Isabella II., 345, 346.

Italian possessions, 327,

339.

James I, (Aragon), 317,

322.

James IT., 323.

Jenkins’s ear, war of, 339.

Jesuits expelled, 341; restored, 345,

Jews, 308; expelled, 326.

Joanna Henriquez, 324.

Joanna Ja Beltraneja,

325.

Joanna of Castile, 527.

John 1. (Aragon), 323.

John II., 324.

John I.-II. (Castile), 321.

John, Don, of Austria,

382.

Joseph Bonaparte, 344.

Junta, Holy, 328,

Justice, 304.

| Lakes, 295.

Language, 346,

Larra, 361,

Law, 304.

Leon, 311,

Leon and Castile, 317.

‘ Leonese dialect, 351.

Letter writers, 359. Literature, 352.

Live stock, 300.

Lope de Vega, 857, 358. Lopez de Ayala, 353, Lopez de Ubeda, 357.

| Louis XIV. of France,

335,

Lucas of Tuy, 354. Luis de Leon, 357, 360, Lully, 263. Luzan, 360. Manuel, Juan, 354. Manufactures, 301. March, Auzias, 363, Maria Anna, 332. Maria Louisa, 342. Maria Theresa of Austria,

339.

Mariana, 359, Martin of Aragon, 323. Martinez de Toledo, 355. Martorell, 364. Mayans y Siscar, 360. Mendoza, 357, 359. Mesta, La, 334. Methuen treaty, 336. Minerals, 300. Mohammed, 312, 314. Mohammedan rule, 309, Molina, Maria de, 319. Montalvo, 355. Montemayor, 357. Moors, 3810; expelled,

330.

Moratin, 361. Moriscoes, 330, Mountains, 294,

Muntaner, 363,

Musa, 312,

Naharro, 356,

Naples acquired, 327.

Napoleon I., relations with, 348,

Navarre, 312,324, 325.

Navarrese-Aragonese dialect, 351.

Navigation, 302,

Navy, 303,

Netherlands, relations with, 328, 332,

Nimeguen treaty, 333,

Olivares, 331,

Omayyads, 310.

Ordoiio I.-ITl.,, 311,

Oviedo, 311,

Padilla, Juan de, 328,

Padilla, Maria de, 320.

Papacy, relations with,

315,

Patifio, 338.

Pedro I, (Aragon), 317,

Pedro III., 322.

Pedro IV., 323.

Pedro I. (Castile), 320.

Peninsular War, 344,

Perez, Antonio, 329,

Philip I., 327.

Philip II., 329,

Philip ITl., 330.

Philip IV., 381.

Philip V., 335.

Physical features, 293,

297,

Picaresque novels, 315.

Poetry, 353, 360, 363.

Polish succession, 338,

Population, 298,

Portocarrero, 335,

Portugal, relations with,

329, 332, 333, 343.

Portuguese language,

351,

Post office, 303.

Pragmatic sanction, 338.

Provinces, 298.

Quadruple alliance, 337.

Quevedo, 357, 360.

Quifiones de Benevente,

359,

Quintana, 361.

Railways, 303.

(A. M.-F.)

Ramiro I.-]1I., 311.

Religion, 303,

Richelieu, 331,

Ripperda, 338.

Rivas, 362,

Rivers, 295,

Roads, 303.

Rodriguez of Toledo, 354.

Roig, 363.

Rojas, 356, 359.

Roman rule, 305.

Romances, 354, 357, 363.

Rome, papal, relations with, 315.

Rosa, Martinez de Ja, 361.

| Rueda, 356.

Ruiz, 353.

Ruiz de Alarcon, 359.

Sancho IV, (Castile), 319.

Sancho I. (Leon), 311,

Sancho the Great, 312,

Sannazaro, 357.

Santillana, 355.

Santob, 353.

Seven Years' War, 339.

Seville treaty, 338.

Sheep, 300.

Shipping, 302.

Sierras, 294.

Siete Partidas, 318, 354.

Soleimdn, 315.

Spanish marriages, 346.

Spanish succession, 334.

Steppes, 297.

Sugar culture, 300.

Tellez, 358,

Theatre, 356, 358.

Thirty Years’ War, 331.

Tirso de Molina, 359.

Union of kingdoms, 325,

326.

Utrecht, treaty of, 336.

Valdés, 360, 361.

Vega, Garcilaso de la, 357.

Vega, Lope de, 357, 358.

Vidal, 363.

Visigothic rule, 308.

Wellington, 344,

West-Gothic rule, 308.

West Indies discovered,

327.

Wine, 299,

Ximenes, 327,

Zurita, 359.

SPALATIN, Grorce (1484-1 545). George Burkhardt, a subordinate figure of some interest in the history of the Reformation in Germany, was born on January 17, 1484, at Spalt (whence he assumed the name Spalatinus), about 25 miles from Nuremberg, where his father was an artisan.

He went to Nuremberg for edueation when he was thirteen years of age, and two years afterwards to the university of Erfurt, where he took his bachelor's degree within a year, in 1499. There he attraeted the notice of Marschalk, the most influential professor, who made Spalatin his amanu-

ensis and took him to Wittenberg. In 1505 Spalatin went to Erfurt to study jurisprudence, was recommended to Mutianus, and was welcomed by the little band of German humanists of whom Mutianus was chief. His friend got him the post of teacher of young monks in a convent in the Georgenthal and pastor in the high church there. In 1508 he was ordained priest by Bishop John von Laasphe, who had ordained Luther. He had no great love for convent or pastoral work, and in 1509 Mutianus recommended him to Frederick the Wise, the elector of Saxony, who employed him to act as tutor to his son, the future elector, John Frederick. This appointment really determined Spalatin's life and work. He speedily gained the confidence of the famous elector, who employed him in many affairs. He gent him to Wittenberg in 1511 to act as tutor to his nephews, and procured for him a canon's stall in Altenberg. In 1512 the elector made him his librarian. This brought him into correspondence with a large number of literary men, and

he began to collect all kinds of literary and espe- cially of historical information, of which he made extensive use later in his chronicles. He was promoted to be court chaplain and confidential secretary to the elector, and took charge of all his private and public correspondence. He thus became one of the most important men at the elec- toral court, which then was the centre of German life.

Spalatin had never cared for theology, and, although a priest and a preacher, had been a mere humanist. It was to Luther that he owed his awakening to the reality of a spiritual life. How he first became acquainted with the reformer it is impossible to say—probably at Wittenberg ; but Luther from the first exercised a great power over him, and became his chief counsellor in all moral and religious matters. His letters to Luther have been lost, but Luther's answers remain, and are extremely interest- ing. Spalatin was Luther's devoted friend during the stormiest days of the Reformation, and was the means of bringing the great elector to take the side of the out-spoken professor in his university of Wittenberg. He read Luther's writings to the elector, and translated for his benefit those in Latin into German. He accompanied Frederick to the diet of Augsburg, and shared in the negotiations with the papal legates, Cajetan and Miltitz. He was with the elector when Charles was chosen emperor and when he was crowned. He was with his master at the diet of Worms. In short, he stood beside Frederick as his confidential adviser in all the troubled diplomacy of the earlier years of the Reformation. Singularly cautious, perhaps timid, before the crisis came and while it could be averted, Spalatin found courage when the crisis had come. He would have dissuaded Luther again and again from publishing books or engaging in overt acts against the papacy, but, when the thing was done, none was so ready to translate the book, or to justify the act.

On the death of Frederick the Wise, Spalatin was as much engaged in diplomatic service as before, but he no longer lived at court. He went into residence as canon at Altenberg, and incited the chapter to institute reforms some-

what unsuccessfully. He married in the same year. During

the later portion of his life, from 1526 onwards, he was chiefly engaged in the visitation of churches and schools in electoral Saxony, reporting on the confiscation and applica- tion of ecclesiastical revenues. His practical experience in German affairs made him very successful in his delicate task, and he was asked to undertake the same work for Albertine Saxony. He wasalso permanent visitor of Wittenberg uni- versity, and made an annual report of its condition to the elector. Shortly before lis death he fell into a state of pro- found melancholy, and died January 16, 1545, at Altenberg.

Spalatin left behind him a large number of literary remains, both published and unpublished. His original writings are almost

all historical. Spalatin als stéchs. Historiograph, 1878. Spalatin, nor can there be until his letters have been collected and edited, a work still to be done.

SPA—SPA

A list of them may be found in Scclhcim's George There is no good life of

SPALATO (Slav. Split), a city of Dalmatia, at tho

head of one of the thirteen departments (area 730 square miles; population in 1880 31,003), is situated on the seaward side of a peninsula lying between the Gulf of

Braza and the Gulf of Salona. Though not the capital, it

is the most important city in the principality, is the sec of a bishop, has a valuable museum of antiquities, and carries on an extensive trade in wine and oil. been the terminus of a railway running northwards to

Since 1879 it has

Sebenico and Siveric. Built on the low ground at the

head of a beautiful bay, and thrown into relief by a back-

ground of picturesque hills rising close behind, Spalato

has a striking sea-front, in which the leading feature is

still the ruined facade of the great palace of Diocletian, erected in 303 A.D., to which the city owes its origin. In ground plan this is almost a square, with a quadrangular tower at each of the four corners. ‘Its faces correspond nearly with the four points of the compass. The south front (towards the harbour) measures 521 feet, or, with the towers, 598 feet 8 inches, and the eastern and western sides are each 705 feet 8 inches” (Wilkinson). The area included is 348,175 square feet, or, comprising the towers, 352,614 square feet, a little more than eight acres, or rather less than the area of the Escorial. There were four principal gates, with four streets meeting in the middle of the quadrangle, after the style of a Roman camp. The eastern gate (Porta Aenea) is destroyed ; but, though the side towers are gone, the main entrance of the building, the beautiful Porta Aurea, in the west front, is still in fairly good preservation. The streets were lined with massive arcades. The vestibule now forms the Piazza del Duomo or public square ; to the north-east of this lies the mausoleum (not, as the older antiquaries had it, the temple of Jupiter), which has long been the smallest and darkest of cathedrals; and to the south-east is the temple of Asculapius, which served originally as a kind of court chapel and has long been transformed into a baptistery. Architecturally the most important of all the many striking features of the palace is the arrangement in the vestibule by which the supporting arches spring directly from the capitals of the large granite Corinthian columns. This, as far as the known remains of ancient art are concerned, is the first instance of such a method; and thus, in Mr Freeman’s words, “all Gothic and Romanesque architecture was in embryo in the brain of Jovius or his architect.”

The name Spalato, or Spalatro (a very old spelling), which used to be explained as a corruption of Salonx Palatium, is pretty cer- tainly of different origin—the oldest form extant being Aspalathum (Constantine Porphyrogenitus) and early variants Spalathon, Spa- lathron, Spalatrum (Geogr. Rav.). Dr Evans suggests a connexion with Aspalathus (the name of a prickly shrub) or perhaps with Asphaltus. Not long after Diocletian’s death the buildings seem to have been turned into an imperial cloth factory, and as most of the workers were women we find it called a gynaciwm (Notitta). About 4 miles from the palace lay the ancient city of Salona

(Zadava or Sad@va), which consisted of two parts, the earlier Roman city to the west and a later portion incorporated previous to the time of the Antonines. There are still remains at Salona of ancient city walls, an amphitheatre, &., and a long line of walls extending ‘from the western side of the city for a mile and more nearly along the present road to Trau (Tragurium).” The purpose of this line of walls is not evident, and the date of its construction has been the subject of much discussion. Mr Freeman is disposed to consider them Roman workmanship.

Salona in its best days was onc of the chief ports of the Adriatic, on one of the most central sites in the Roman world. Madea Roman colony after its second capture by the Romans (B.c. 78), it appears as Colonia Martia Julia and Colonia Claudia Augusta Pia Veteranorum, and bears at different periods the titles of respublica, conventus, metropolis, prefectura, and_pretorium. In Christian times it became a bishop’s sec ; and St Doimo or Domninus, its first bishop, still gives his name to the cathedral of Spalato. The city

_____

» PA.

was taken by Odoacer in 481 and by Totila in the 6th century. Recovered by Justinian in 535, it was in 544 and 552 the starting-

oint of Belisarius and Narses for tlcir Italian expeditions. In the 7th century Salona was completely destroyed by the Avars ; but the empty palace of Diocletian afforded an asylum for its inhabitants. The limits of the building proved sufficient for the new city up to the time that it passed under Hungarian and Venctian protection. Hungarian additions may still be seen above the Porta Aurca ; and the large octagonal tower bears the name of Torre d’Harvoye from the Bosnian general who was created duke of Spalato by Ladislaus. The Venetians enclosed the town with regular curtains and bastions in 1645-1670. About 1807-1809 the castle was dismantled and parts of the walls were thrown down.

See Robert Adam, Ruins of the Palace of Diocletian, 1764; Cassas and Lavallée, Voyage Pittoresque et Historique de I’Istrie, 1802; Wilkinson,

Dalmatia and Montenegro, 1848; Freeman, Historical Essays, 3d series, 1879, and Subject and Neighbour Lands of Venice, 1881. Both the first-mentioned works contain magnificent views and restorations of the arehitecture of the palaee.

SPALDING, a market-town of Lincolnshire, England, in the Parts of Holland, is situated on the river Welland, and on the Great Northern and Great Eastern Railways, 93 miles from London. The town, standing in the heart of the Fens, is the centre of a rich agricultural district. Amongst the public buildings are five churches, the John- son hospital (1881), the corn exchange (1856-57), the buildings of the mechanics' institute and of the Christian association and literary institute, and the district union- house. The parish church of St Mary and St Nicholas was built in 1284 and restored in 1865-66. The adjoining lady chapel (St Mary and St Thomas a Becket) was built in 1315; in 1588 it was appropriated for the grammar school endowed in 1568 by John Blanke and again in 1588 by John Gamlyn. A new grammar school was erected in 1881. Spalding has had a prison for upwards of 600 years; the present building, erected in 1824—25, was closed in 1884. The Welland is crossed at Spalding by two stone bridges. The existing high bridge, con- structed in 1838, tvuok the place of a wooden erection dating from the end of the 17th century ; this last was built on the site of an older Roman bridge of two arches, the foundations of the centre pier of which were disclosed when the wooden bridge was constructed. The popula- tion of the town in 1871 was 9111, and in 1881 9260.

In 1051 Thorold of Bockenhale (now Bucknall, near Horncastle) gave his castle of Spalding and the chapel attached to itas a cell or monastery for the Benedictines of Geeviand. Out of this grew the priory, which, however, was dissolved in 1535 ; the last fragments of its ruins were removed in 1832. About two miles north-east of Spalding stands the ruined chapel of Wykeham, dedicated to St Nicholas and built in 1811 by Prior Clement Hatfield. The build- ing is of the Decorated period, and has been roofless since 1782; its interior dimensions are 48 feet long by 22 fect wide ; the walls are 44} feet high. ach side contains three three-light windows with moulded flowing tracery, and each cnd one four-light window of similar character. The only one which retains its original mullions and tracery is the

centre window on the south side. After the Con- quest the estates and priory of Spalding were given by William I. to Ivo Tailbois, who found such a stout antagonist in Hereward the Wake, lord of Brunne or Bourn.

SPALDING, Wituram (1809-1859), logician and literary historian, was born in Aberdeen in 1809. After @ thorough education at the grammar school and at Marischal College there, he came to Edinburgh in 1830, where he was called to the bar in 1833. In that year he published a Letter on Shakespeare's Authorship of the Two Noble Kinsmen, which, by its critical acumen and the knowledge of the old dramatists which it displayed, attracted the notice of Jeffrey and procured the author an invitation to become a contributor to the Hdinburgh fteview. Before settling down to the business of the bar he undertook a prolonged Continental tour. He was absent fifteen months, the greater part of the time being spent in Italy, and in 1841 the fruits of his stay appeared mn three volumes entitled Jtaly and the Italian Islands Jrom the Earliest Ages to the Present Time. This learned and Comprehensive work went through five editions in a few years. His attempts to gain a legal practice not proving

successful, he became a candidate in 1838 for the chair of rhetoric in Edinburgh university, which he held till 1845, when he was appointed professor of logic in the

university of St Andrews. He held the latter post till his death on the 16th November 1859.

Besides the works already mentioned, and various articles contributed to the Edinburgh Review and Blackwood's Magazine, he was the author of a concise History of English Literature, which has many merits and has been much used as a text book. He also wrote the articles " Logic" and '' Rhetoric" (as well as a number of literary biographies) for the eighth edition of the Eneyclopaxdia Britannica. 'he former article, written mainly on Hamiltonian lines, constitutes a systematic treatise on Formal Logic, and is honourably distinguished by its clear scientific exposition. By these two

artieles and his History of English Literature Spalding is chiefly remembered.

SPALLANZANT, Lazaro (1729-1799), is one of the most important and certainly also one of the most pictur- esque figures in the history of science during the 18th cen- tury. Born at Scandiano in Modena in 1729, he was at first educated by his father, who was an advocate. At the age of fifteen he was sent to the Jesuit college at Reggio di Modena, and was pressed to enter that body. He went, however, to the university of Bologna, where his famous kinswoman Laura Bassi, was professor, and it is to her influence that his scientific impulse has been usually attributed. With her he studied natural philo- sophy and mathematics, and gave also great attention to languages, both ancient and modern, but soon abandoned the study of law, and afterwards took orders. His reputation soon widened, and in 1754 he became professor of logic, metaphysics, and Greek in the university of Reggio, and in 1760 was translated to Modena, where he continued to teach with great assiduity and success, but devoted his whole leisure to natural science. He declined many offers from other Italian universities and from St Petersburg until 1768, when he accepted the invitation of Maria Theresa to the chair of natural history in the uni- versity of Pavia, which was then being reorganized. He also became director of the museum, which he greatly enriched by the collections of his many journeys along the shores of the Mediterranean. In 1785 he was invited to succeed Vallisneri at Padua, but to retain his services his sovereign doubled his salary and allowed him leave of absence for a visit to Turkey, where he remained nearly a year, and made many observations, among which may be noted those of a copper mine in Chalki and of an iron mine at Principi. His return home was almost a triumphal pro- gress: at Vienna he was cordially received by Joseph IT, and on reaching Pavia he was met with acclamations outside the city gates by the students of the university. During the following year his students exceeded five hundred. His integrity in the management of the museum was called in question, but a judicial investigation speedily cleared his honour, to the satisfaction even of his accusers. In 1788 he visited Vesuvius and the volcanoes of the Lipari Islands and Sicily, and embodied the results of his researches in a large work published four years later. He died from an apoplectic seiZure, in 1799, at the age of seventy.

His indefatigable exertions as a traveller, his skill and good for- tune as a collector, his brilliance as a teacher and expositor, and his keenness as a controversialist no doubt aid largely in accounting for Spallanzani's exceptional fame among his contemporaries, yet greater qualities were by no means lacking. His life was one of incessant eager questioning of nature on all sides, and his many and varied works all bear the stamp of a fresh and original genius, capable of stating and solving problems in all departments of sclence,—at one time finding the true explanation of ‘‘ ducks and drakes ” (formerly attributed to the elasticity of water) and at another helping to lay the foundations of our modern vulcanology and meteorology. His main discoveries, however, were in the ficld of physiology: he wrote valuable and suggestive papers on respira- tion, on the senses of bats, &c., while his highly important con- troversy with Needham and Buffon, in which he experimentally disproved the occurrence of spontaneous gencration, has been already

referred to under AbilocENrsiIs. In this regard also he was led to pay considerable attention to the infusorial animalcules. His great work, however, is the Dissertationt de Fisica Animale e Vegetale (2 vols., 1780). Here he first interpreted the process of digestion, which he proved to be no mere mechanical process of trituration, but one of actual solution, taking place primarily in the stomach, by the action of the gastric juice. Verifying this by the important

experiment of artificial digestion outside the stomach in sealed tubes, he was attacked by John Hunter, but emerged victorious from the encounter. Of no less importance are his researches on reproduc- tion, in which he experimentally settled the relative functions of the ovum and the spermatozoon. Sec REPRODUCTION.

SPANDAU, a strongly-fortified town in the province of Brandenburg, Prussia, is situated at the confluence of the Havel and Spree, 8 miles to the north-west of Berlin. It has recently been converted into a fortress of the first class, and is now the key of the defences of the capital. The Julius tower in the citadel, which is surrounded by water, contains the imperial war treasure (Reichskriegs- schatz),—a sum of £6,000,000 in gold, kept in

readiness for any warlike emergency. Besides numerous barracks, Spandau contains various military establishments appro- priate to an important garrison town ; and its chief industries are connected with the preparation of munitions of war. The Government factories for the manufacture of small arms, artillery, gunpowder, &c., cover upwards of 200 acres, and employ about 4000 workmen. The other industries are not very important ; they comprise miscellaneous manufactures, fishing, boat-building, and some shipping on the Havel. The population in 1885, including the garrison of nearly 4000 men, was 31,463.

Spandau is one of the oldest places in the Altmark, and received town-rights in 1232. It afterwards became a favourite residence of the Hohenzollern electors of Brandenburg, and was fortified in 1577-83. In 1635 it surrendered to the Swedes, and in 1806 to the French. A short investment in 1813 restored it to Prussia. The population in 1816 was 6250.

SPANGENBERG, Aveust Gorriimp (1704-1792), Count Zinzendorf's successor, and bishop of the Moravian Brethren, was born July 14, 1704, at Klettenberg, on the south of the Harz Mountains, where his father was court- preacher, and ecclesiastical inspector of the grafschaft of Hohenstein. Left an orphan at the early age of ten, he was sent to the excellent high school at Ilefeld, and passed thence (1722), in poorest circumstances, to Jena to study law. Prof. Buddeus received the poor youth into his family, and a "stipendium" was procured for him. Theology rather than law was his natural destination, and it needed only the impulse of the remark of Buddeus that the inevitable prospect before a true theologian is ignominy and trial to convert the student of law, who was pro- foundly exercised with religious conflicts, into a student of theology. Somewhat after the manner of the Wesleys at Oxford a little later, he studied the mystics, read the Bible, observed rigid devotional exercises, sought to quicken his sense of sin, avoided taking the Lord's Supper with unbelievers in the Lutheran Church, and took an active part in a religious union of students and in schools for poor children just outside Jena. He took his degree in 1726, and began to give free lectures on theo- logy. In 1727 he made the acquaintance of the Moravian colony at Herrnhut and its head, Count Zinzendorf. A "collegium pastorale practicum" for the care of the sick and poor was in consequence founded by him at Jena, which the authorities at once broke up as a

‘“Zinzen- dorfian institution.” But Spangenberg’s relations with the Moravians were confirmed by several visits to the colony, and the accident of an unfavourable appeal to the lot alone prevented his appointment as chief elder of the community, March 1733. Meanwhile his free lectures in Jena met with much acceptance, and led to an invitation from Gotthelf Francke to the post of assistant professor of theology and superintendent of the educational depart-

ment of his orphanage at Halle. He accepted the invitation, and entered on his duties in September 1732. But it soon appeared that the differences between the Pietists of Halle and himself were far too serious to admit of any harmonious .co-operation. He found their religious life too formal, legal, external, and worldly ; and they could not sanction his comparative indifference to doctrinal correctness and his incurable tendency to separatism in church life. Spangenberg’s participation in private obser- vances of the Lord’s Supper brought matters to a crisis. His intimate connexion with Count Zinzendorf was made a further charge against him. His preaching was pro- nounced “singular,” and an “affected humility towards common people” obnoxious. He was offered by the senate of the theological faculty of Halle the alternative of doing penance before God, submitting to his superiors, and separating himself from Zinzendorf, or leaving the matter to the decision of the king, unless he preferred to “leave Halle quietly.” The case came before the king, and on April 8, 1733, Spangenberg was conducted by the military outside the gates of Halle. At first he bent his steps to Jena, but Zinzendorf at once sought to secure him as a fellow-labourer, though, with that ‘“jesuitry” of which Wesley subsequently complained, the count wished to obtain from him a declaration which would remove from the Pietists of Halle all blame with regard to the disruption. Spangenberg found amongst the Moravians his life-work. He could amongst them carry out his fundamental principle that the churches are but spheres in all of which Christians are to be found, and that the one church of Christ is only where believers live in Christian fellowship. He joined the Moravians at a momeut when the stability of the society was threatened, and a wise organizer, enterprising missionary, and theo- logical teacher was imperatively required. He became its theologian,

its apologist, its statesman and corrector, through sixty long years of incessant labour. For the first thirty years (1733-62) his work was mainly devoted to the superintendence and organization of the extensive missionary enterprises of the body in Germany, England, Denmark, Holland, Surinam, Georgia, and elsewhere. His missionary work tended to still further modify and broaden his theological opinions, unsatisfactory as the Pietists of Halle had found them in 1733, It was on an island off Savannah that Spangenberg startled John Wesley with his questions and profoundly influenced his entire future career. One special endeavour of Spangen- berg in Pennsylvania was to bring over the scattered Schwenkfeldians to his faith In 1741-42 he was in England collecting for his mission and obtaining the sanc- tion of the archbishop of Canterbury. During the second half of this missionary period of his life he superintended as bishop the churches of Pennsylvania, defended the Moravian colonies against the Indians at the time of war between France and England, became the apologist of his body against the attacks of the Lutherans and the Pietists, and did much to moderate the mystical extravagances of Zinzendorf, with which his simple, practical, and healthy nature was out of sympathy. The second thirty years of his work (1762-92) were devoted to the consolidation of the German Moravian Church. Zinzendorf's death (1760) had left room and need for his labours at home. At Herrnhut there were conflicting tendencies, doctrinal and practical extravagances, and the organization of the brethren was very defective. Spangenberg proved him- self to be the man required. In 1777 he was commiis- sioned to draw up an idea fidei fratrum, or compendium of the Christian faith of the United Brethren, which was published two years afterwards and became the accepted declaration of the Moravian belief. As compared with

Zinzendorf's own writings, this book exhibits the finer balance and greater moderation of Spangenberg's nature, while those offensive descriptions of the relation of the sinner to Christ in which the Moravians at first indulged are almost absent from it. In his last years Spangenberg devoted special attention to the education of the young, in which the Moravians have since been so successful. He died at Berthelsdorf, September 18, 1792. In addition to the Idea Fidet Fratrum, Spangenberg wrote, besides other

apologetic books, a Declaration tiber die zeither gegen uns ausgegangenen Beschuldigungen (Leipsic, 1751), an Apologetische Schlussschrift (1752), Leben des Grafen Zin- zenilorf (1772-75) ; and his hymns are well known beyond the Moravian circle.

See Risler, Leben Spangenbergs, Barby, 1794; K. F. Ledderhose, Das Leben Spangenbergs, Heidelberg, 1846; Frick, Beitrdge zur

Lebensgeschichte A. G. Spangenberg's, Halle, 1884; Herzog-Plitt's Realeneyklopidie, s.v. " Spangenberg."

SPARROW (A.8. Spearwa; Icel. Spérr; Old High Germ. Sparo), a word perhaps (like the equivalent Latin Passer) originally meaning almost any small bird, but gradually restricted in signification and nowadays in common English applied to only four kinds, which are further differentiated as Hedge-Sparrow, House-Sparrow, Tree-Sparrow, and Reed-Sparrow—the last being a BUNTING (vol. iv. p. 525)—though when used without a prefix the second of these is usually intended.

1. The Hepce-Sparrow, called "Dunnock" in many parts of Britain, the

2. The Housr-Sparrow, the Fringilla domestica of Linneus and Passer domesticus of modern authors, is far too well known to need any deseription of its appearance or habits, being found, whether In country or town, more attached to human dwellings than any other wild bird; nay, more than that, one may safely assert that itis not known to thrive anywhere far away from the habitations or works of men, extending its range insuch countries as Northern Scandinavia and many parts of the Russian empire as new settle- ments are formed and land brought under cultivation. Thus eons arise as to whether it should not be considered a parasite throughout the greater portion of the area it now occupies, and as to what may have been its native country. Moreover, of late years it has been inconsiderately introduced to several of the large towns of North America and to many of the British colonies, in nearly all of which, as had been foreseen by ornithologists, it has multi- plied to excess and has become an intolerable nuisance, being Unrestrained by the natural checks which partly restrict its merease in Europe and Asia. Whether indeed in the older seats of civilization the House-Sparrow is not decidedly injurious to the agriculturist

and horticulturist has long been a matter of dis- Cussion, and no definite result that a fair judge can accept has yet been reached. It is freely admitted that the damage done to sowing crops is often enormous, but as yet the service frequently tendered by the destruction of insect-pests cannot be calculated.

oth friends and foes of the House-Sparrow write as violent parti- sans, and the truth will not be known until a series of experiments,

1 The most recent attacks upon it are contained in the various issues of the Report of Observations of Injurious Insects and Common Crop Pests, annually made by Miss Eleanor Ormerod, and iu a little volume bearing the title of The House Sparrow, published in 1885,

|

conducted by scientifically-trained investigators, has been in- stituted, which, to the shame of numerous agricultural and horti- cultural societies, has not yet been done. It is quite likely that the result will be unfavourable to the House-Sparrow, from whet has been said above as to its being so dependent on man for its subsistence ; but, while the evil it does is so apparent, —for instance, the damage to ripening grain-crops,—the extent of the counter- balancing benefit is quite uncertain, and from the nature of the case is often overlooked. In the South of Europe the House- Sparrow is in some measure replaced by two allied species, P. laspaniolensis and P, italiz, whose habits are essentially identical with its own ; and it is doubtful whether the Sparrow of India, P. indicus, is specifically distinct ; but Africa has several members of the genus which are decidedly so.

3. The TrEE-Sparrow, the Fringilla montana of Linneus and Passer montanus of modern writers, in appearance much resembling the House-Sparrow, but easily distinguishable by its reddish-brown crown, the black patch on the sides of its neck, and its doubly- barred wings,” isa much more local species, in England generally frequenting the rows of pollard-willows that line so many rivers aud canals, in the holes of which it breeds ; but in some Eastern countries, and especially in China, it frequents houses, even

in towns, and so fills the place of the House-Sparrow. Its geogra- phical distribution is extensive, and marked by some curious characters, among which may be mentioned that, being a great wanderer, it has effected settlements even in such remote islands as the Feroes and some of the Outer Hebrides.

That the genus Passer properly belongs to the /ringill- idx is admitted by most ornithologists, yet there have been

some who would refer it to the Weaver-birds, Ploceide, if

_ they are to be accounted as forming a distinct Family,—a

matter which is not at all clear. The American birds called “Sparrows” have little in common with the members of the genus Passer, and probably belong rather to the family Emberizide than to the Fringillide, (A. N.)

SPARROWHAWK. See Haws.

SPARTA, after Athens, was the most powerful and important of the Greek states. Her fame rested mainly cn her soldiers, her military discipline, her somewhat narrow patriotism, and her intense political conservatism; in general intellectual culture, in art and in everything con- nected with it, she was immeasurably inferior to Athens, and even to some of the other Greek states, though there is evidence to show that a genius and a taste for sculpture and music were by no means wanting to her citizens. Her eminent men were almost all eminent as soldiers, and few of them had any pretensions to rank as able and en- lightened statesmen. No such man as Themistocles or Pericles ever appeared in Sparta; she produced no great thinkers or philosophers ; the typical Spartan, in short, was a brave and well-trained soldier, with a decided simplicity of character and strong religious scruples, amounting to what we must call superstition, which from time to time were a hindrance to prompt action and discredited the state in the public opinion of Greece.

Sparta was not so much a city as a cluster of open villages in a plain in the heart of Laconia (see vol. xi. plate I.), in the middle valley of the Eurotas, on the west bank of the river, between the ranges of Taygetus and Parnon,

and built in part on the spurs of these mountains. Its situation was very picturesque: ‘hollow, lovely Lacedeemon”? is Homer’s description. Taygetus on the west rises to its greatest height of nearly 8000 feet just above the city, with primeval forests on its lower slopes, in which Spartans hunted the stag and the wild boar. Sparta seems to have been about six miles in circuit; it was not, like most Greek cities, near the coast,—
Gythium, and consisting chiefly of three essays by Mr J. H. Gurney, jun., Lieut.~~Col, C. Russell, and Prof. Coues, but the last has only refer~~ ence to the behaviour of the bird in the United States of America, where, from the reason above assigned, its presence was expected by almost all well-informed persons to be detrimental.

? A more important difference is that the two sexes have almost the same plumage, while in the House-Sparrow they are unlike in this respect.

3 Lacedemon was simply another name for Sparta, though some- times it seems to stand for the surrounding district.

at = 44

370

the chief port of Laconia, being 30 miles distant ; nor was it built with anything like the compactness of an Athens or a Corinth. The houses for the most part stood in spacious gardens, an open-air life being altogether to the Spartan taste, and well suited to the pleasant genial climate of the valley. The olive still grows to great per- fection in the neighbourhood, and the silk is said to be of particularly fine quality. The mountain ranges round the city gave it a very strong defensive position, and for a long period Sparta was without walls or fortifications, trusting exclusively to the prowess of her citizens till she was seriously menaced by the victorious Macedonians in the 4th century B.c. The city was never a very splendid one; the houses were plain and simple and there seem to have been no public buildings of striking magnificence. There was the so-called Brazen House of Athene on a hill within a large enclosure, with plates of bronze which gave it its name, on which, among other mythological scenes, were represented the labours of Hercules and the exploits of the great twin brethren, Castor and Pollux, who were specially honoured at Sparta. There was the theatre, still to be traced

in huge quadrangular blocks of stone, and there were porticos and colonnades, and the chapels and tombs of Spartan heroes, such as Lycurgus, Leonidas, Brasidas. Sparta delighted to honour her worthy citizens, and paid them divine honours after death. The site of the city has not been thoroughly investigated, but it is a question whether much remains worth bringing to light. What has hitherto been discovered is poor and disap- pointing. Sparta's greatness as a city, as Thucydides (i. 10) clearly implies, fell very far short of her political importance as a state.}

Sparta's history, passing over her share in the prehistoric Trojan War under her king Menelaus, the brother of Agamemnon, begins with the legislation of Lycurgus in the 9th century B.c. It was this, as has been explained in the article Lycuraus, which made Sparta what she was, a state whose aim it was rather to hold her own within the Peloponnesus than to launch out into doubt- ful enterprises far away from home. Sparta was not naturally aggressive or ambitious; she was not easily roused to action even in great emergencies. She was safe amid her mountains from the perils to which other Greek cities were exposed. It would seem that in early days Argos lad been decidedly the first power in the Pelopon- nesus, Sparta being second to her by a long interval. The relative position of the two states was reversed soon after the time of Lycurgus. The spirit and vigour which his discipline infused no doubt enabled Sparta, after two severe wars in the 8th and 7th centuries, to accomplish at last the complete conquest of Messene, the south-western portion of the Peloponnesus, and so to become the undis- puted mistress of at least two-fifths of the whole penin- sula. By the year 600 B.c. Sparta was quite in the first rank of Greek states, and it was generally felt that she had a right to take the lead in Greek politics. In the 6th century she put down the tyrants, the heads of the democratic and popular party, in several Greek cities, and drove, for a time at least, the reforming and innovating Clisthenes from Athens. Sparta was the steady foe of democracy and popular government. The Spartans were themselves a small landowning aristocracy, in the midst of a comparatively numerous population, consisting of so-called Periceci (dwellers round about), the aboriginal inhabitants, in fact, of Laconia, and of Helots or serfs, taken to a great extent from the conquered Messenians. i

1 For topographical details we must refer the reader to the elabo- rate works of the German scholar Curtius on the Peloponnesus and

works based on them. Mure’s Greece and Leake’s Morea should be consulted.

» PARTS

The government was highly centralized; it was wholly in the hands of the Spartans, the Periceci having no share in it, though many of them may have themselves been land- owners, or at any rate have held land under Spartan land- lords, and been well-to-do and prosperous. The Helots were farm labourers bound to the soil, slaves in every sense of the word, anything like self-respect being studiously made impossible for them. Spartans could put down a popular rising or a slave insurrection with cold- blooded cruelty, and in a panic following on an earthquake of unusual violence in 464 there was a deliberately- planned massacre of a multitude of Helots for the safety of Sparta, carried out and executed by Spartans in person. A calculating selfishness was a marked trait in Spartan character. Sparta seems always to have put her own interests before those of Greece, though she claimed to be the leading and representative Greek state. She was cautious and even timid, though the courage of her indi- vidual citizens in war was unsurpassed. Every Spartan was a hero on the battlefield, and a Spartan army was long assumed to be invincible. Sparta was not much of a colonizing state, but she could point to the famous city of Tarentum in southern Italy as her offspring, and to Lyctus (Z/., ii. 647; xvii. 611) in Crete, whence came warriors to the Trojan War. In 491, when Greece was threatened with invasion by Persia, we find Athens appealing to Sparta and urging a complaint against the AXginetans as traitors to Greece for having given earth and water, the symbols of submission, to the emissaries of the great king. In 480 a Spartan admiral commanded the Greek fleet off Artemisium against Xerxes, and in the following year a Spartan general, Pausanias, commanded the united forces of Greece in the famous battle of Platea. All this implies a distinct recognition of Sparta as the head of Greecc. The Persian War over, Athens under Cimon and Pericles developed extraordinary energy and took Sparta’s place. Sparta indeed seems to have retired upon her laurels, and it was not without reluctance and much urgent

pressure that she embarked in the Pelopon- nesian War, which, after twenty-eight years of hard fighting, ended in the overthrow of the Athenian empire and the capture of Athens by Lysander in 405. Sparta contributed greatly to the final result by despatching an able officer, Gylippus, to the relief of Syracuse in 414, when the city was on the point of surrendering to the Athenian armament. It was the decisive success of Gylippus in Sicily which turned the scale against Athens. The crushing blow of Aigospotami in 405, which annihilated her fleet and left her defenceless, and the subsequent surrender of the city transferred the supremacy of Greece once more to Sparta, but not for much more than thirty years. Sparta's policy was ungenerous and short-sighted ; it consisted in establishing little oligarchical factions under Spartan control in the Greek cities, and soon degenerated into a tyranny which became utterly odious. All Sparta's worst qualities came out during this period: ''autonomy," which had been her watchword throughout the war against Athens, became a dead letter under her rule; and the freedom of city life, so dear to a Greek, was crushed out under her officials and commis- sioners, whom she thrust on a number of Greek cities. Still more did she disgust all the better men of Greece by concluding, after a series of intrigues for her own selfish ends, a peace with Persia in 387, known as the peace of Antalcidas, the Spartan through whom it was negotiated. It was a dishonourable peace for Greece, as its effect was to facilitate Persian intervention in Greek affairs and make the king of Persia the arbiter of Greek disputes and differences. Meanwhile Athens was recovering herself; the tables were soon turned on Sparta, and her maritime

power collapsed before the united action of Athens and Persia. In the Peloponnesus Sparta was still supreme, but Thebes, she felt, might become a dangerous rival and must be humbled. She insisted that the townships of Beeotia must be "autonomous " and independent of Thebes, and so contrived to pick a quarrel with that state, which to Sparta's cost had at that time the famous Epaminondas, the greatest, perhaps, of Greek generals, among her lead- ing citizens. In 371 came Sparta's crushing defeat at Leuctra, a blow from which she never really recovered, though her courage and military discipline long survived it. But her prestige was gone. Epaminondas carried the war into the heart of Laconia and penetrated to

Sparta itself. His victory at Mantinea in 362 gave independence to Messene, and Sparta was now politically ignored by her old allies.

From this time Sparta almost drops out of Greek his- tory. She took no part in the struggle against Macedon ; no Spartan soldier stood by the side of the Athenians and Thebans at Cheronea. She seems to have sunk into polit- ical apathy; very possibly she may have had to concentrate all her remaining strength and energy in keeping down her Helots and the native population of Laconia. When Alexander was winning his victories in Asia, she intrigued feebly against Macedon, and she would take no part in the congress of the Greek states at Corinth which declared Alexander "' Leader of the Greeks."

She appears once again, but as not much more than the ghost of her former self, in the 3d century B.c., attempting vainly in 281 to unite Greece against the Macedonian Antigonus, and repulsing Pyrrhus from her walls in 272, Spartan women working at the city's defence, and a few Spartan warriors driving back the formidable soldier- king. There was still the old spirit about her, but the number of her citizens is said to have dwindled down to 700, and in her last days, with a wealthy few in the midst of a poor and needy people, Sparta had shrunk into the narrowest and feeblest of oligarchies. In the latter half of the 3d century B.c., in the days of the Achean league, a vigorous but unsuccessful attempt at internal reforms and a restoration of the old discipline of Lycurgus was made by two of her kings, Cleomenes and Agis. She sank finally, we know not how, under the degrading dominion of a sort of robber chief, Nabis, who fastened his tyranny upon her by the support of emancipated slaves and mercenaries of the lowest class. Her best citizens were put to death or banished, and she was debased into a refuge of pirates and robbers. Nabis and his vile gang were put down by Philopcemen in the name of the Achzean league, and Philopcemen completed his work by razing the walls of Sparta and abolishing her old institutions. Rome simply looked on, knowing well that she was mistress of the situation, and let matters drag on till 146, when she captured Corinth, and closed the page of Greek history. (w. J. B.)

SPARTACUS, the leader of a formidable insurrection of slaves against Rome in the Ist century B.c., was a Thracian by birth, and perhaps a

descendant of the kings of Panticapseum whose name he bore. He served in the Roman army, but seems to have deserted, for we are told that he was taken prisoner and sold asa slave. Destined for the arena, he, with a band of his fellow-gladiators, broke out of a training-school at Capua and took refuge on Mount Vesuvius (73 B.c.). Here he maintained himself as a captain of brigands, his lieutenants being Crixus and (nomaus, who like himself had been gladiators. Their numbers soon swelled through the. accession of runaway Slaves and desperados from the neighbourhood. A hastily- collected force of 3000 men under Claudius endeavoured to besiege and starve out the rebels, but the latter clambered down the precipices and put the Romans to

flight. Swarms of hardy and desperate men now joined the rebels, and when the praetor Publius Varinius took the field against them he found them entrenched like a regular army on the plain. But they gave him the slip, and when he advanced to storm their lines he found them deserted. From Campania the rebels marched into Lucania, a country better suited for guerilla warfare. Here, in spite of the commands and entreaties of Spartacus, the slaves committed excesses of lust andcruelty. Varinius followed him, but was defeated in several engagements and narrowly escaped being taken prisoner. Spartacus, whose heart was “where his rude cottage by the Danube lay,” now endeavoured to push northward. His object was to cross the Alps and allow the slaves, who were mostly Thracians, Germans, and Gauls, to disperse to their homes, But intoxicated by success his wild followers refused to listen to him ; their thoughts were all of plunder, and their track was marked by the devastation of Italy. Vola, Nuceria, Thurii, Metapontum, were sacked with every circumstance of savage cruelty. In this serious position of affairs the senate despatched both consuls against the rebels (72 3.0.). The German slaves under Crixus, who had separated from the rest, were defeated and cut in pieces at Mount Gargarus in Apulia by the preetor Arrius. But Spartacus overthrew both consuls, one after the other, and then pressed towards the Alps. Cassius, governor of Cisalpine Gaul, and the preetor Manlius flung themselves in his way at the head of 20,000 men, but were trampled under foot. Freedom was within sight, but with fatal infatuation the slaves declined to abandon Italy.

Spartacus led them against Rome, but their hearts seem to have failed them, for the capital was not attacked. Spartacus then occu- pied the port of Thurii and tried to procure supplies of iron and bronze, probably through the pirates. He also endeavoured by means of the herds of horses captured in southern Italy to form a body of cavalry. The conduct of the war against Spartacus, together with eight legions, was now committed to the pretor Marcus Crassus. Te restored discipline by decimating the first troops that ran before the enemy. In the next battle Spartacus was worsted and retreated towards the straits of Messina, intending to cross into Sicily, where he would have been welcomed by fresh hordes of slaves; but the pirates who had agreed to transport his army proved faithless, Crassus endeavoured to shut in the rebels by carrying a ditch and rampart right across the peninsula, a distance of: 32 miles. But on a wintry night Spartacus forced the lines, and once more Italy lay at his feet. Disunion, however, was at work in the rebel camp. The Gauls and Germans had again drawn off from the main body. Crassus attacked and destroyed them. Spartacus was now fain to secure a retreat into the mountains of Petelia (near Strongoli in Calabria), and succeeded in inflicting a reverse on the pursuing army. But his men refused to retreat farther, and in a pitched battle which followed soon afterwards the rebel army was annihilated. Spartacus, who had stabbed his horse before the battle began, fell sword in hand. A body of the rebels which had escaped from the field was met and cut in pieces by Pompey, who, with his usual knack of reaping where other men had sowed, claimed and received the credit of having put an end to the war (71 3.c.). Six thousand slaves, who had not found a soldier’s death, were crucified along the high road from Capua to Rome.

A history of the war against Spartacus has to be pieced together with much uncertainty from the vague, scrappy, and somewhat dis- crepant accounts of Plutarch (Crassus, 8-11), Appian (Bell. Civ., i. 116-120), Florus (ii. 8 [iii. 20]), Livy (Zpit., xev., xcvi., xcvii.), and Sallust (fragments of the Histories). ‘Sallust’s description seems

to have been full and graphic, but unfortunately only a few frag- ments of it remain.

SPECIES. In logic the term “species” is applied to any group of individuals agreeing in some common attribute or attributes, and included along with other groups in a higher category, that of “genus,” which comprehends the fewer and more general attributes in which all agree and ignores those in which they differ. The application of these terms in logic is thus purely relative ; any genus, however large, may be but a species of a still larger genus. But in arranging the innumerable objects of the natural sciences the naturalist finds it necessary to restrict the terms “species” and “ genus” to the two lowest groupings and to distinguish the higher aggregates by special terms, as “family,” “order,” “class,” &c. Early writers had but a loose conception of many different “kinds” of animals and plants, and spoke only of species and genus in their purely logical relations, with varying breadth of content. The term “species” was limited to its natural history usage in the end of the 17th century by John Ray. His con- ception of ‘specific characters” rested, not only on close and constant resemblance in outward form, but also on the likeness of offspring to parent, a considerable measure of variability being, however, recognized. Amongst sub- sequent authors this conception of common descent or parentage became more and more prominent, while the progress of successful definition of species made the limits of their variability seem always narrower and of less im- portance ; and in this way the useful working conception of the tolerable definiteness of species gradually crystallized into the absolute dogma of their fixity. Then Linneus in his Philosophia Botanica gave the aphorism ‘species tot sunt diverse, quot diversee forme ab initio sunt create” (we reckon just as many species as there were forms created at the beginning), which was generally accepted. Buffon’s obstinate rejection of the Linnzean classification was asso- ciated with a belief in the modifiability of species, and showed some foresight of the doctrine elaborated soon afterwards by LAMARCK (q.v.). The general acceptance of this dogma was, however, effected by the influence of Cuvier ; its overthrow dates only from the publication of Darwin’s Origin of Species (1859), of which the argument need not be here repeated. (See EvoLution, Morpxo- Locy.) The genealogical conception of species was thus established more firmly than ever, though cleared from its former associations ; in Haeckel’s phrase, the species is the whole succession of organisms which exhibit the same form in the same environment. The rash generalization, that distinct species are to be recognized by their inca- pacity for the production of fertile hybrids,

was next over- thrown, while closer study has cleared away the notion of the equal definiteness of all specific forms. We now know that, while many forms, like the pearly nautilus or the Venus's fly-trap, do indeed exhibit the most perfect specific definiteness, the demarcation of equally definite species in other genera is rendered impossible by the existence of the most complete series of transitional forms, and the number of the species defined thus comes to depend simply on the personal equation of the systematist, on his predilection for "lumping" or '"'splitting," as the case may be. Thus, for example, the number of described German species of hawkweed (Hieracium) has ranged from 300 for one author, through 106 for another and 52 for a third, to less than 20 fora fourth. Similar instances of variable genera are afforded by the willows and the brambles, and many other common forms. This wide variability, as might be expected, seems to be more pre- valent among the lowest forms of life, and the classical example of the relativity and variability of species has been furnished by Haeckel's beautiful monograph on the calcareous sponges (Monographie der Kalkschwiémme, Jena, 1872), in which he offers twelve distinct arrangements of

the same set of forms from various points of view, among which the two most nearly conventional propose respect- ively 21 genera and 111 species and 39 genera and 289 species. All such variable forms are in fact species in the making, which become definite in proportion as certain varieties become especially adapted to their environment, and become isolated by the dying out of the intermediate forms. With these limitations, however, the working use- fulness of the morphological conception of species remains undiminished. The want of any absolute standard of specific difference is largely made up by practical experi- ence and common sense; and the evolutionary systematists are less in danger than were their predecessors of either exaggerating or understating the importance of mere varieties. (See VARIATION.)

SPECIFIC GRAVITY. See Hyprometer, vol. xii. p. 536 sq.

SPECTACLES are flat glasses, prisms, spherical or cylindrical lenses, employed to detect and correct defects of the eyes. They are made usually

of crown glass or rock crystal (“‘‘ pebbles”), the latter being somewhat lighter and cooler to wear. They are mounted in the well-known rigid spectacle frame when for continuous use,—eye-glasses being preferable where they are worn intermittently, and hand- glasses or lorgnettes where they are required to supplement temporarily the spectacles usually worn, or where, as with extreme shortness of sight, no glass could be employed with comfort for any length of time.

Preserves.—Preserves are used to conceal deformities or to protect the eyes in the many conditions where they cannot tolerate bright light, such as ulceration and inflammation of the cornea, certain diseases of the iris, ciliary body, choroid, and retina. They are made of bluish, “smoked,” or almost black coloured glass, and are of very various shapes, according to the amount of obscuration necessary.

Prisms.—Prisms are of great value in cases of double vision due to a slight tendency to squinting, caused by weakness or over-action of the muscular apparatus of the eyeball, Prisms deflect rays of light towards their bases. Hence, if a prism is placed in front of the eye with its base towards the nose, a ray of light falling upon it will be bent inwards, and seem to come from a point further out from the axis of vision, Conversely, if the base of the prism is turned towards the temple, the ray of light will seem to come from a point nearer the axis, and will induce the eye to turn inwards, to converge towards its fellow. In cases of myopia or short-sight owing to weakness of the internal recti muscles, the eyes in looking at a near object, instead of converging, tend to turn outwards, and so double vision results. If a suitable prism is placed in front of the eyes the double vision may be prevented. These prisms may be combined with concave lenses, which correct the myopia, or, since a concave lens may be considered as composed of two prisms united at their apices, the same effect may be obtained by making the distance between the cen- tres of the concave lenses greater than that between the centres of the pupils. Again, to obviate the necessity for excessive convergence of the eyes so common in hyper- metropia, the centre of the pupil should be placed outside the centre of the corrective convex lenses; these will then act as prisms with their bases inwards. Where, on the other hand, there is no tendency to squinting, care must be taken in selecting spectacles that the distances between the centres of the

glasses and the centres of the pupils are quite equal, otherwise squinting, or at any rate great fatigue, of the eyes may be induced.

Spherical Lenses.—Biconcave, biconvex, and concayvo- convex (meniscus) lenses are employed in ophthalmic prac- tice in the treatment of errors of refraction. Until recently these spherical lenses were numbered in terms of their focal

| ngth, the inch being used as the unit. Owing principally t) differences in the length of the inch in various countries, this method had great inconveniences, and is now giving place to a universal system, in which the unit is the refrac- tive power of a lens whose focal length is one metre. This unit is called a “dioptric” (usually written ““D”). A lens of twice its strength has a refractive power of 2 D, anda focal length of half a metre, and so on.

Concave lenses are used in the treatment of myopia or short-sight. In this condition the eye is elongated from before backwards, so that the retina lies behind the principal focus. All objects, therefore, which lie beyond a certain point (the conjugate focus of the dioptric system of the eye, the far point) are indistinctly seen; rays from them have not the necessary divergence to be focused in the retina, but may obtain it by the interposition of suitable concave lenses. Concave lenses should never be used for work within the far point ; but they may be used in all cases to improve distant vision, and in very short-sighted persons to remove the far point so as to enable fine work such as sewing or reading to be done at a convenient distance. The weakest pair of concave lenses with which one can read clearly test types at a distance of 18 feet is the measure of the amount of myopia, and this fully correcting glass may be worn in the slighter forms of short-sight. In higher degrees, where full correction might increase the myopia by inducing a strain of the accommodation, somewhat weaker glasses should be used for near work. In the highest degrees the complete correction may be employed, but lorgnettes are generally preferred, as they can be removed when the eyes become fatigued. It must be remembered that short-sight tends to increase during the early, especially the school, years of life, and that hygienic treatment, good light, good type, and avoidance of stooping are important for its prevention.

Convex Lenses.—In hypermetropia the retina is in front of the principal focus of the eye. Hence in its condition of repose such an eye cannot distinctly see parallel rays from a distance and, still less, divergent rays from a near object. The defect may be overcome more or less com- pletely by the use of the accommodation. In the slighter forms no inconvenience may result ; but in higher degrees prolonged work is apt to give rise to aching and watering of the eyes, headache, inability to read or sew for any length of time, and even to double vision and internal strabismus. Such cases should be treated with convex lenses, which should be theoretically of such a strength as to fully correct the hypermetropia. Practically it is found that a certain amount of hypermetropia remains latent, owing to spasm of the accommodation, which relaxes only gradually. At first glasses may be given of such a strength as to relieve the troublesome symptoms; and the strength may be gradually increased till the total hypermetropia is corrected. Young adults with slighter forms of hypermetropia need glasses only for near work ; elderly people should have one pair of weak glasses for distant and another stronger pair for near vision. These may be conveniently combined, as in Franklin glasses, where the upper half of the spectacle frame contains a weak lens, and the lower half, through which the eye looks when reading, a stronger one.

Anisometropia.—lIt is difficult to lay down rules for the treatment of cases where the refraction of the two eyes is tmequal. If only one eye is used, its anomaly should be alone corrected ; where both are used and nearly of equal Strength, correction of each often gives satisfactory results.

Presbyopia.—Where distant vision remains unaltered, but, owing to gradual failure of the accommodative appa- ratus of the eye, clear vision within 8 inches becomes im- possible, convex lenses should be used for reading of such

ale

a strength as to enable the eye to see clearly about 8 inches distance. Presbyopia is arbitrarily said to commence at the age of forty, because it is then that the need of spectacles for reading is generally felt ; but it appears later in myopia and earlier in hypermetropia. It advances with years, re- quiring from time to time spectacles of increasing strength.

Cylindrical Lenses.—In astigmatism, owing to differ- ences in the refractive power of the various meridians of the eye, great defect of sight, frequently accompanied by severe headache, occurs. This condition may be cured completely, or greatly improved, by the use of lenses whose surfaces are segments of cylinders. They may be used either alone or in combination with spherical lenses. The correction of astigmatism is in many cases a matter of con- siderable difficulty, but the results to vision almost always reward the trouble.

Convex spectacles were invented towards the end of the 18th century, perhaps by Roger Bacon. Concave glasses were intro- duced soon afterwards. Airy, the astronomer, about 1827, corrected his own astigmatism by means of a cylindrical lens. Periscopic glasses were introduced by Dr W. H. Wollaston. (A. BR.)

SPECTROSCOPY. The spectroscope is an instrument which separates luminous vibrations of different wave- lengths, as far as is necessary for the object in view. It consists of three parts,—the collimator, the prism or grat- ing, and the telescope. The collimator carries the slit through which the light is admitted and a lens which con- verts the diverging pencil of light into a parallel pencil. The pencils carrying light of different wave-lengths are turned through different angles by the prism or grating, which is therefore the essential portion of the spectro- scope. The telescope serves only to give the necessary magnifying power, and is dispensed with in small direct vision spectroscopes. For a description of the different kinds of prism used, see Orrics ; and for an explanation of the action of the grating, see UNDULAToRY THEORY. The most important adjustment in the spectroscope is that of the collimator. Especially in instruments of large re- solving power it is essential for good definition that the light should enter the prism or fall on the grating as a parallel pencil. For a method allowing an easy and accurate adjustment for each kind of ray, see an article in Phil. Mag., vol. vii. p. 95 (1879).

Prisms are nearly always used in the position of mini- mum deviation, but, if the collimator is properly adjusted, this is by no means a necessary condition for good defini- tion. Prisms as generally cut, with an isosceles base, give the greatest resolving power in the position of minimum

deviation, but the loss in resolving power is not great for a small displacement. The dispersion and magnifying power of a prism can be considerably altered by a change of its position, and a knowledge of this fact is of great value to an experienced observer. The use of a prism in a position different from that of minimum deviation is, however, a luxury which only those acquainted with the laws of optics can indulge in with safety.

Lord Rayleigh has given the theory of the spectro- scope under Optics, and shown on what its resolving power depends. There is no connexion between resolving power and dispersion, any value of resolving power being consistent with any value of dispersion. To obtain large resolving power with small dispersion requires, however, the use of inconveniently large telescopes and prisms or gratings. It is easy, on the other hand, to obtain small resolving power together with large dispersion.

The following definitions would be found of general use if adopted. Resolving Power.—The unit resolving power of a spectroscope in any part of the spectrum is that resolving power which allows the separation of two lines differing by the thousandth part of their own wave-length or wave-number,—the wave-number being the number

of waves in unit length. Purity—The unit purity of a spectrum is that purity which allows the separation of two lines differing by the thousandth part of their own wave-length or wave-number. We speak of the resolving power of a spectroscope and of the purity of a spectrum. The resolving power is a constant for each spectroscope, and independent of the width of the slit. The purity of a spectrum, on the other hand, depends on the width of the slit, unless that width is small compared toa certain quantity presently to be mentioned. The resolving power of a spectroscope is numerically equal to the greatest purity of spectrum obtainable by it. ; Adopting these definitions, we get from Lord Rayleigh’s equations for the resolving power & of a grating

1000 R=mn,

where 2 is the total number of lines used on the grating and m the order of the spectrum. For a spectroscope with simple prisms we get

5

1000 R= — (t,-t,) a?

where ¢, and ¢, are the greatest and smallest lengths of paths in the dispersive medium. If we put for the re- fractive index of the medium = A + B/A? we may write 1000 R=2B(t, —t,)/r.

It will be seen that, while the resolving power of a spectro- scope with grating depends only on the order of the spec- trum and is independent of the wave-length for each order, the resolving power of a spectroscope with prism will vary inversely as the third power of the wave-length X, so that the resolving power will be about eight times as great in the violet as in the red (see Optics). If compound prisms are used we must write

1000 R=2(Byty — Byty)/d’, where ¢, is the greatest effective length of path in one medium, ¢, in the other medium, B, and B, being the dis- persive constants for the two media.

The purity P of a spectrum is given by the equation

r

l= nan”

where d denotes the width of slit and y is the angle sub- tended by the collimator lens at the slit. If the slit is sufficiently narrowed, dy may be made small compared to A, and in that case the purity of the spectrum is independ- ent of the width of slit and equal to the resolving power. If, on the other hand, a wide slit is used, so that d yw is large compared to A, the purity becomes inversely pro- portional to the width of slit. In actual work the slit is generally of such width that neither term in the denomi- nator of the expression for purity can be neglected.

There is a necessary limit to the resolving power of all optical instruments, depending on the fact that light con- sists of a series of groups of waves incapable of interfering with each other. If it is true, as is generally believed, but without sufficient reason, that a retardation of 50,000 wave-lengths is sufficient to destroy the capability of interfer- ence—that is to say, that the groups consist on the average of approximately 50,000 waves —the maximum purity ob- tainable in any spectroscope is 50. The closest line resolved with a grating, as far as the present writer is aware, requires a resolving power of about 100. Professor Piazzi Smyth has with prisms realized a purity of 50. It would seem, therefore, that the theoretical limit of purity has very nearly been reached, for, though the estimate of 50,000 waves to the group is in all probability too small, there are other considerations which render it highly improbable that the total number of waves to the group should, for sunlight at any rate, be more than two or three times larger. The limit of possible purity will very likely depend on the temperature of the luminous body.

SPECT Rte CO © Fr

Almost the greatest practical difficulty which the spectro- scopist has to contend with generally is the want of suffi- cient light. The following remarks apply to line spectra principally, but they hold also almost entirely for the spectra of fluted bands, which break up into lines under high resolving power. The maximum illumination for any line is obtained when the angular width of the slit is equal to the angle subtended by one wave-length at a distance equal to the collimator aperture. In that case d y=A and the purity is half the resolving power. Hence when light is a consideration we shall not, as a rule, realize more than half the resolving power of the spectroscope. If the visual impression depended only on the intensity of illumination, a further widening of the slit should not increase the visi- bility of a line. As a matter of fact spectroscopists gener- ally work with slits wider than that which theoretically gives full illumination, The explanation of the fact is physiological, visibility depending on the apparent width of the object. If different spectroscopes have their slits of such width that the apparent width of a line as seen by the eye is the same, and if the magnifying power is such that the pupil is just filled with light, the purity of the spectrum is directly proportional to the resolving power. We come to the

conclusion, therefore, that for both narrow and wide slits the efficiency of a spectroscope depends ex- clusively on its resolving power. It has been pointed out by Lord Rayleigh that, owing to the want of definition in the optical images on the retina when the full aperture of the pupil is used, the pencil must be contracted to a third or a quarter of its natural width, if full resolving power is to be obtained. This is accompanied with a serious loss of light, which can be partly obviated by contracting the horizontal aperture only (the refracting edge being supposed vertical). There are two ways of doing this. One con- sists in the use of magnifying half prisms. But the loss of light by reflexion in simple half prisms more than counterbalances the advantage ; compound half prisms like those used by Christie may, however, be employed. We may also use prisms of three or four times the height of the effective horizontal aperture, with correspondingly large telescopes, and then by the eye-piece contract the beam until its vertical section fills the pupil. The latter plan, though theoretically best, involves more expensive appa- ratus and prisms of very homogeneous material.

The question of illumination is important also when photography is used for spectroscopic analysis. For a given intensity of the source of light the intensity of the image on the sensitive film will be directly proportional to the solid angle of the cone of light forming the last image, and will be independent of the arrangement of inter- mediate lenses. Hence lenses with as short a focus com- pared to aperture as is consistent with good definition should be used in the camera.

The methods of recording and reducing spectroscopic observations are described in all books and treatises on the subject and may therefore be passed over here.

A lens is often used to concentrate the light of the source on the slit. There is some loss of light due to reflexion from the surface of the lens, but its position, aperture, and focal length do not affect the luminosity of the spectrum seen as long as the whole collimator is filled with light.

Bodies are rendered luminous for spectroscopic investi- gation either by being placed in the Bunsen flame or by the help of the electric current. A little difficulty may arise where the body is given in solution and does not show its characteristic lines in the flame. Lecoq de Bois- baudran takes the

spark from the surface of the solution. The present writer has found the tube sketched in the figure on the next page a great improvement on those commonly used, if a sufficient quantity of the solution is at

hand ; otherwise the method is too wasteful. The current is brought into the solution by a platinum wire, sealed into a small glass tube; the platinum wire reaches about to the level of the open end f of the tube. A capillary of thick-walled glass tubing is placed over the platinum wire; the liquid rises in the capillary and sparks can be taken as from a solid. The lines due to the glass are easily eliminated. If a small quantity of material only is available, the plan adopted by Bunsen and ex- | tensively used by Hartley! seems the most successful. Pointed pieces of charcoal (Bun- sen) or pieces of graphite pointed to a knife edge (Hartley) are impregnated with the liquid, and the spark is taken from them.

Some sub- stances, when introduced into a vacuum tube, especially near the negative pole, and under great exhaustion, show

a characteristic phosphorescence. Becquerel was the first to examine the spectra shown under these circumstances, and Crookes has lately used the same method with great

success. Spectra of Metalloids.

A good deal of discussion has taken place on the spectra of the metalloids, owing to the fact that they seem to be able to give different spectra under different circumstances, Spectra have occa- sionally been assigned to the elements which on further investiga- tion were found to belong to some compound present. According to the general opinion of spectroscopists at present, different spectra of the same elements are always due to different allotropic condi- tions. If a complex molecule breaks up into simpler molecules the breaking up is always accompanied by a change of spectrum.

Nitrogen.—({a) The line spectrum appears whenever a strong spark (jar discharge) is taken in nitrogen gas. It is always present when metallic spectra are examined by the ordinary method of allowing the jar discharge to pass between metallic poles.2 Hartley (Phil. Trans., 1884, part i.) has measured the ultra-violet lines of the air spectrum, but has not separated the

oxygen from the nitrogen lines. (6) The band spectrum of the positive discharge, which is generally called the band spectrum of nitrogen, always appears when the discharge is sufficiently reduced in intensity. The spectrum con- sists of two sets of bands of different appearance, one in the less re- frangible part and one in the more refrangible part of the spectrum, —the two sets of bands overlapping in the green. Hence some observers believe the spectrum to be made up of two distinct spectra. Pliicker and Hittorf (Phil. Trans., 1865) give a coloured drawing of this spectrum, which is one of the most beautiful that can be observed. The most complete drawing of it is given by Piazzi Smyth (Trans. Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. xxxii. part iii.), and there is also a good drawing by Hasselberg (Mém. Acad. Imp. de St. Pétersb., vol. xxxii.). (c) The glow which surrounds the negative electrode in an exhausted tube shows in many cases a spectrum which, as a tule, is not seen in any other part of the tube. The memoir of Hasselberg contains a drawing of it. The spectrum seen when a weak spark is taken in a current of ammonia is neither that of nitrogen nor that of hydrogen, but must be due toa compound of these gases. When the pressure of the gas is reduced, a single band 1s seen having a wave-length from 5686 to 5627 Xth metres (Nature, vi. p. 359). When a spark is taken from a liquid solution of ammonia a more complicated spectrum appears (Lecoq de Bois- baudran), and, if ammonia and hydrogen are burnt together either In alr or oxygen, a complicated spectrum is obtained the chemical origin of which has not been satisfactorily explained. Drawings of It are given by Dibbits (Pogg. Ann., cxxii. p. 518) and by Hofmann (Pogg. Ann., cxlvii. p- 95). The absorption spectrum of the red fumes of nitrogen tetroxide has often been mapped ; the most per- fect drawing is given by Dr B. Hasselberg (Mém. Acad. Imp. de St. Pét., xxvi.). According to Moser (Pogg. Ann., clx. p. 177), three bands close to the solar line C disappear when the vapour is heated. Recently Deslandes has obtained in vacuum tubes some ultra- violet bands which seem to be due to a compound of nitrogen and oxygen (C. R., chap. i. p. 1256, 1885).

Oxygen.—(a) The elementary line spectrum of oxygen is that which appears at the highest temperature to which we can subject oxygen, that is, whenever the jar and air break are introduced into the electric circuit. It consists of a great number of lines, especially in the more refrangible part of the spectrum. (5) The compound

; Phil. Trans., elxxv. p. 49 (1884). We may refer onee for all to Watts, Index of Spectra, for a list of wave-lengths of the different speetra.

Se ECOTE GS cary

375

line spectrum of oxygen appears at lower temperatures than the first. It consists, according to Piazzi Smyth, of six triplets and a number of single lines. This spectrum corresponds to the band spectrum of nitrogen. (c) The continuous spectrum of oxygen appears at the lowest temperature at which oxygen is luminous. The wide part of a Pliicker tube, for instance, filled with pure oxygen generally shines with a faint yellow light, which gives a continuous spectrum. Even at atmospheric pressure this spectrum can be ob- tained by putting the contact breaker of the induction coil out of adjustment, so that the spark is weakened. (d) The spectrum of the negative glow was first aecurately described by Wiillner, and is always seen in the glow surrounding the negative electrode in oxygen. It consists of five bands, three in the red and two in the green. For further information respecting these spectra, see Schuster (Phil. Trans,, clxx. p. 37,1879) and Piazzi Smyth (Trans, Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. xxxii. part iii.), According to Egoroff, the A and B lines of the solar spectrum are due to absorption by oxygen in our atmosphere, and some recent observations of Janssen seem to support this view.

Carbon. —(a) The line spectrum appears when a very strong spark is sent through carbonic oxide or carbonic acid. The ultra-violet lines observed by Hartley when sparks are taken from graphite electrodes also belong probably to this spectrum. () Considerable discussion has taken place as to the origin of the spectrum seen at the base of a candle or a gas flame. At first observations seemed to point to the fact that it was due toa hydrocarbon. It has been ascertained, however, that sparks taken in cyanogen gas, even when dried with all care, show the spectrum, and a flame of cyanogen and oxygen gives the same bands brilliantly. These facts have convinced the majority of observers that the spectrum is a true carbon spectrum. The best drawing is given by Piazzi Smyth, who ascribes the spectrum, however, to a hydrocarbon. The flame of cyanogen, which had already been examined by Faraday and 3 og before the days of spectrum

analysis, shows a series of bands in the red, reaching into the green. There is no doubt that they are due to a compound of nitrogen and oxygen. Another series of bands in the blue, violet, and ultra-violet have been also proved by Liveing and Dewar to be due to a compound of nitrogen and carbon. If the discharge is passed at low pressure through carbonic acid or carbonic oxide a spectrum is seen which seems to belong to earbonic oxide. A very beautiful and remarkable drawing of this spectrum, especially of its most brilliant band, has been published by Piazzi Smyth.

Very little need be said of the remaining metalloids, as we do not possess a sufficiently careful examination of their spectra. Chlorine, bromine, and iodine show bands by absorption. If a spark is passed through the gases line spectra appear. Sulphur volatilized in a vaeuum tube inay show either a line or a band spectrum under the influence of the electric discharge. The absorption through the vapour of sulphur is continuous at first on volatilization, but as the vapour is heated to 1000° the continuous spectrum gives way to a band spectrum. A spark through the vapour of phosphorus gives a line spectrum. We may obtain the spectra of fluorine, silicon, and boron by comparing the spectra given by sparks taken in atmospheres of fluoride of boron and fluoride of silicon.

Spectra of Metals and their Compounds.

Hydrogen.—If sparks are taken through hydrogen, four well- known lines appear in the visible region of the spectrum. The remarkable series of ultra-violet lines photographed by Dr Huggins in the spectra of some stars which in their visible part show hydro- gen chiefly has suggested the question whether the whole series is not due to that gas. This has now been proved to be the case by Cornu, who has recently examined the hydrogen spectrum with great care. In vacuum tubes filled with hydrogen a complicated spectrum often appears which is so persistent that nearly all ob- servers have ascribed it to hydrogen (though Salet had given reasons against that conclusion). According to Cornu, the purer the gas the feebler does this spectrum become, so that the above-mentioned line spectrum seems to be the only true hydrogen speetrum. A flame of hydrogen in air or oxygen shows a number of lines in the ultra-violet belonging apparently to an oxide

of hydrogen (Live- ing and Dewar, Huggins). Aqueous vapour gives an absorption spectrum principally in the yellow.

Alkali Metals.—The metals of the alkali group are distinguished by the fact that their salts give the true metal spectra when ren- dered luminous in the Bunsen burner ; that is to say, their salts are decomposed and the radiation of their metallic base is sufficiently powerful to be visible at the temperature of the flame. Their spectra are not so easily seen if sparks are taken from the liquid solution, but Lecoq de Boisbaudran has obtained fine spectra of sodium and potassium by taking the spark from a semi-fiuid bead of the sulphates. The most complete description of the spectra of sodium and potassium seen when the metals are heated up in the voltaic arc is given by Liveing and Dewar (Proc. Roy. Soc., xxix. p. 378, 1879), who have also mapped their ultra-violet lines (PAdd. Trans., 1883, pt. i.). Abney has found a pair of infra-red lines

belonging to sodium, with wave-lengths 8187 and 8199 (Proc. Roy. Soc., xxxli. p. 448, 1881). Becquerel finds lines in the infra-red at 11,420. he vapour of sodium and potassium heated up in a tube is coloured and shows a spectrum of fluted band; but in the case of sodium the yellow line is always present at the saine time. It is probable that the band spectrum belongs to the vapour, con- taining two atoms in each molecule, and that at higher tempera- tures the molecules are split up, the single atoms showing the line spectra. Both potassium and sodium show an additional absorption line (5510 for Na and 5780 for Ka) at the temperature at which the fluted bands appear. According to a suggestion of Liveing and Dewar, these lines may depend on the presence of hydrogen, which it is very difficult to exclude. These expcrimenters have also de- scribed interesting but complicated absorption phenomena depend- ing on the simultaneous presence of two or more metals. Thus sodium and magnesium show a band in the green (A=5300), which does uot appear when sodium alone or magnesium alone is volati- lized. Potassium and magnesium show similarly two lines in the red (Proc. Roy. Soc., xxvii. p. 850, 1878). Ifa spark is taken from potassium in an atmosphere of carbonic oxide a band appcars (5700) depending probably on a combination between the potassium and the

carbonic oxide. Lockyer has observed certain curious phenomena (Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxii. p. 378) taking place at the temperature at which the band spectrum of sodium changes into the line spectrum ; these phenomena deserve a fuller investigation. Lithium furnishes a good example of a change in the relative in- tensity of lines at different temperatures. At the temperature of the flame the red line is the most powerful, an orange line being also seen. When aspark is taken from a liquid solution the orange line is far the strongest, and a blue line is scen, which in its turn rapidly gains in intensity as the temperature is raised. When the spark is taken from solutions of different strengths the more con- centrated solution shows a change in relative intensity of lines in the direction in which an increase of temperature would act. Com- bination of the metals with transparent acids does not when in solution show any appreciable absorption in the visible part of the spectrum ; but Soret has mapped their ultra-violet absorption.

Metals of Alkaline Earths.—Calcium, strontium, and barium are distinguished by the fact that their volatile compounds give fine spectra in the Bunsen flame. The more stable salts, as the phos- phates and silicates, give the reaction only feebly or not at all. When a salt like the chloride of barium is introduced into the flame the spectrum is seen to change gradually; the spectrum seen at first is different according as the chloride, bromide, or iodide is used, while the spectrum which finally establishes itself is the same for the different salts of the same metal. Mitscherlich, who was the first to investigate carefully these phenomena (Pogg. Ann., cxxi. p. 459, 1864), ascribes the spectra seen at first to the compound placed in the flame, while gradually the oxide spectrum gets the upper hand. This explanation has always .been waagol, and receives support froin the fact that the bromide spectrum is strengthened by introducing bromine vapour into the flame, and the other compound spectra can be similarly strengthened by introducing suitable vapours. There is an observation, however, made by Pro- fessors Liveing and Dewar which in one casc is not compatible with Mitscherlich's explanation, ''A mixture of barium carbonate, aluminium filings, and lamp-black heated in a porcelain tube gave two absorption lines in the green, corresponding in position to bright lines seen when sparks are taken from a solution of barium chloride, at wave-lengths 5242 and 5136, marked a and B by Lecoq de Boisbaudran." These two lines, or rather bands, are the brightest in the spectrum

commonly ascribed to barium chloride. In addi- tion to the compound spectra the brightest of the metallic lines seen at a low temperature appear in the flame. The metallic line is in the violet with calcium, in the blue with strontium, and in the green with barium. Sparks taken from a solution of the metallic salts show the compound spectra well, and in addition more of the true metallic lines than the flame. The best drawings of the compound spectra are those given in Lecoq de Boisbaudran's Atlas ; but measurements with higher resolving powers are much wanted. When the salts are introduced into the voltaic arc numer- ous metallic lines appear which have been mapped by Thalén. Liveing and Dewar have investigated those lines which can be reversed and have also mapped the ultra-violet spectra. Captain Abney has mapped a pair of infra-red lines belonging to calcium between 8500 and 8600, and, according to Becquerel, with the help of a phosphorescent screen bands or lines appear of still lower refrangibility (8880 to 8880). Lockyer (Phil. Trans., clxiii. p. 253, 1873, and clxiv. p. 805, 1874) has measured and mapped as regards their length the lines of these as well as of many of the other metals.

_ Mctals of Magnesium Group.—Beryllium presents comparatively simple spectroscopic phenomena, as far as it has hitherto been in- vestigated. Two green lincs were mapped by Thalén and five in the ultra-violet by Hartley (Jowr. Chem. Soc., June 1883). The Spectrum of magnesium is well known from its green triplet ; but the vibrations of the metal seem very sensitive to a change of

| temperature a spectrum of fluted bands (Lockyer).

conditions. Full details are given by Liveing and Dewar in Proe, Roy. Soe., xxxii. p. 189. These authors have found that some of the bands seen occasionally, when magnesium wire is burned in air, are due to a compound of magnesium and hydrogen. 'The spec- trum appears when sparks are taken from magnesium poles in an atmosphere containing hydrogen. For a description of the pccu- liarities of the flame, arc, and spark spectrum, the reader is referred to the original paper. The ultra-violet spectrum, which contains several repetitions of the green triplet, has also been mapped and measured by Hartley and Adeney (Phil. Trans., clxxv., 1874, pt. i). The

spectra of zinc and cadmium are obtained either by sparks from liquid solution or by the spark, with Leyden jar, from the metal poles. The ultra-violet spectra show for both elements a remarkable scries of triplets, the lines of the cadmium triplet being about three times as far apart as those of the zinc triplets. The least refrangible of the series is in the blue with wave-lengths 5085°1, 4799°1, 4677-0 for cadmium, and 4809°7, 4721°4, 4679°5 for zine.

Lead Group.—The spectrum of lead is best obtained by taking the spark from the metallic poles. Care must be taken, however, to renew the surface frequently, otherwise the oxide spectrum will gradually make its appearance. The oxide itself shows its spectruin, according to Lecog de Boisbaudran, in the Bunsen burner, ‘Ihe salts of thallium show the principal metal line at the temperature of the flame. The spark spectrum is more complicated. The ultra- violet spectra of both lead and thallium have been mapped.

Copper Group.—The spectra of the metals belonging to this group are easily obtained in the ordinary way. When copjer chloride is introduced into the Bunsen flame a fine spectrum of bands is seen. It is the same spectrum which is found when com- mon salt is thrown upon white hot coals. This rcaction for copper chloride is very sensitive, but it has never been satisfactorily decided whether the presence of copper is really necessary for its production or whether the spectrum belongs to a peculiar condition of chlorine vapour. Silver when first volatilized gives a green vapour, which at a low temperature shows continuous absorption, but at a higher Mercury shows its lines with great brilliancy if introduced and heated in a vacuum tube. Some of the lines widen easily, and at higher pressures a con- tinuous spectrum completely covers the background. The copper salts in aqueous solution absorb principally the red end of the spectrum, the green salts also the violet end. The glass, coloured green with oxide of copper, transmits through sufficient thickness exclusively the yellow and green rays between D and E (H. W. Vogel),

Canin Group.— Yttrium gives a good spark spectrum from the solution of the chloride ; the salts show no absorption bands. Crookes has found, however, that a certain substance yields brilliant phosphorescent bands

under the influence of the negative pole in a vacuum tube. These bands he has, after a lengthy investigation, put down to yttrium compounds, and explained the changes they undergo in different compounds and the sensitiveness of the reaction. Lecoq de Boisbaudran, who obtains the same spectrum by taking a spark (without Leyden jar) from solutions, making the solution the positive pole, has expressed au opinion that the bands are not due to yttrium but to two substances provisionally called by him Za and ZS. He has also under certain conditions seen a higher temperature spectrum, which he ascribes to Zy, leaving it undecided whether Zy is a new substance or identical with Za (Phil. Trans., 1883, p. 891, and C.R., ci. p. 552, cii. p. 153). —Lanthanum is easily recognized by a strong spark spectrum.—Ceriwm, like yttrium and lanthanum, has no peculiar absorption spectrum when in combin- ation and solution ; although the salts are strongly coloured yellow, its line spectrum has characteristic lines in the blue.—Didymiun is characterized spectroscopically by the fine absorption spectra of its salts. Different salts show slightly different spectra, but they can be recognized at first sight as didymium spectra. The crystals of didymium salts show remarkable differences in the absorption spectra according to the direction in which the ray traverses the crystal. Light reflected from the powdered salts shows the character- istic spectrum. According to Auer von Welsbach (Monatsschr. We Chemie, vi. p. 477), didymium has lived up to its name didupor, “twins,” for by fractional crystallization he has found it to be an intimate mixture of two substances, each of them giving half the ab- sorption spectrum and half the emission spectrum of didymium. —Terbium has a characteristic line spectrum when the spark is taken from a solution of the salts.—The salts of erbiwm give a characteristic absorption spectrum, but till recently the drawings of it contained also absorption bands due to thulium and holmium. The spectrum of erbium, as previously mapped by Thaleén, belongs almost exclusively to ytterbium; but he has recently mapped the lines belonging to what is now known as erbium (C.2., xcl. p- 326). Erbium salts heated in the Bunsen burner show a spectrum of bright bands without apparent volatilization. —Véterbium, discovered by Marignac (atomic weight 17°38, Nilson), gives an ab- sorption band in the ultra-violet. Its luminous spectrum 1s rich in lines (Thalén, C.R., xci. p. 826).—Samarium, also discovered by

Marignac and called by him originally Yf, gives absorption bands in the visible part and in the ultra-violet (Soret, C.R., xc. p. 212). It frequently occurs with didymium, and most of the maps of the didymium spectrum contain the samarium bands. When pre- cipitated with another metal it shows a brilliant phosphorescent spectrum (Crookes), which, however, is slightly different accord- ing to the metal. The peculiar yttrium spectrum is very weak even when it is mixed in considerable quantities with samarium. 3ut when the quantity of yttrium is increased to about 60 per cent. a very rapid change takes place, and afterwards it is the samarium spectrum which is very weak. A band in the orange peculiar to the mixture, weak in pure sainarium and absent in yttrium, is strongest in a mixture containing about 80 per cent. of samarium and 20 per cent. of yttrium.—Holmium, identified as a separate element by Soret (C.#., xci. p. 378), has absorption bands in the visible part of the spectrum (6405, 5363, 4855 on Lecoq's map of chloride of erbium), and also a strongly marked ultra-violet absorption spectrum. —Thuliwm, likewise first recognized by Soret, is band 6840 on Lecoq's drawing of chloride of erbium, and also possesses a band at 4645. Thalén has measured the bright linc spectrum (C.2., xci. p. 876, 1880).—Scandiwm is characterized by a bright line spectrum (Thalén, C.R., xci. p. 48, 1880).—Gadoliniwm (Marignac's Ya) has a weak absorption spectrum in the ultra- violet and a characteristic phosphorescent spectrum (Proc. Roy. Soc., February 1886); but the latest researches of Crookes have rendered it probable that it is a mixture of several new clements (Proc. Roy. Soc., 10th June 1886).—The mosandrium of Lawrence Smith scems a mixture of gadolinium and terbium. The philippium of De la Fontaine was a mixture of yttrium and terbium ; and the latest decipium of the same chemist is probably holmium.

Aluminium Growp.—The spectra of the metals belonging to this group can be obtained in the ordinary way by means of the electric spark. The chloride of indium shows the two strongest metallic lines, one in the indigo and one in the violet, when intro- duced into the Bunsen flame. According to Claydon and Heycock, a number of other lines appear when the spark is

taken from the metal electrodes. When a weak spark is taken from aluminium electrodes in air a band spectrum is often seen belonging apparently to the oxide, for it disappears when the spark is taken in hydrogen. Gallium, anothcr metal belonging to this group, was first discovered by means of its spectroscopic reaction. The chloride shows two violet lines feebly in the Bunsen flame, but strongly if a spark is taken from the liquid solution. The ultra-violet lines of indium and of aluminium have been photographed by Hartley and Adeney, as well as by Liveing and Dewar. Some of the lines had been pre- viously mapped by Cornu, whose researches extend furthest into the ultra-violet. According to Stokes, aluminium shows lines more refrangible than those of any other metal, and the wave-lengths of their lines as measured by Cornu are for one double line 1934, 1929, and for another 1860, 1852.

Metals of the Iron Group.—The spectroscopic phenomena of this group are somewhat complicated. The line spectra can be obtained either by taking sparks from the metal or from the solution of a salt, aud also by placing the metal in the voltaic are. The lines are very numerous and very liable to alter in relative intensity under different cireumstances. The great difference shown, for instance, between the are and spark spectra of iron in the ultra-violet region is shown in the map by Liveing and Dewar in Phil. T’rans., 1885, pt. i. The visible part has also been investigated by the same authors and by Lockyer, and much information has thus been added to the knowledge previously obtained by Kirchhoff,

ngstrom, and Thalén. That part of the iron spectrum lying between a wave-length of 4071 and 2947 has been mapped by Cornu ; Liveing and Dewar’s observations refer chiefly to the more re- fraugible region. Considering the very important part which the iron spectrum plays in solar observations, a full investigation of its ehanges by a variation of temperature would at the present time be of great value. If observations with the method adopted by Lecoq de Boisbaudran were repeated with higher resolving powers they would add much to our knowledge. Some of the manganese salts, such as the chloride or carbonate, secm to be the only salts belonging to this group which show a characteristie spectrum when heated in the Bunsen burner or the oxyhydrogen flaine. The Spectrum observed in these cases is, according to Watts, the charaeteristic speetrum of the Bessemer flame, whieh

disappears at the right moment for stopping the blast ; it is probably due to an oxide of manganese. When a spark spectrum is taken from a solution of the chloride the same spectrum is seen, but the relative mitensity of the lines depends on the length and the strength of the spark. The green-coloured manganates show a continuous absorption at the two ends of the spectrum, transmitting in con- centrated solutions almost exclusively the green part of the spec- trum. The absorption bands of permanganate of potassium are Well known and seem to be due to the permanganic acid, as they appear also with other permanganates. The green salts of nickel show a continuous absorption at the two ends of the spectruin.

q

The eobalt salts show well-defined absorption bands. Their careful

ond

investigation by Dr W. J. Russell deserves special notice (Proc. Roy. Soc., XXxii. p. 258, 1881).

Metals of Chromium Group.—The metallic spectra of this group have been measured principally by Thalén in the usual way. Lockyer and Roberts have obtained a channelled spectrum of chromium by absorption. As regards the spectra of compounds of chromium, the absorption of the vapour of chloro-chromic anhydride has been measured by Emerson and Reynolds (Phil. Mag., xlii. p. 41, 1871), and consists of a series of regularly dis- tributed bands. The chromium salts all possess a decided colour and show interesting absorption phenomena. The chromates ab- sorb the violet and blue completely, also the extreme red, and transmit only the orange, yellow, and in dilute solutions part of the green. The most complete investigation of the salts in which chromium plays the part of a base is due to Erhard in a dissertation published at Freiburg. Potassium ehrom-alum, am- monia chrom-alum, sulphate of chromium, when in solution, give an identical absorption for the same amount of chromium. The extreme red is freely transmitted by the violet solution, but the absorption grows rapidly towards the yellow. An indistinct absorption band (A=6790 to \=6740) is seen when the layer is thick or the solution concentrated. The strongest absorption takes place for a wave-length of 5800. The green is transmitted again more

freely, the minimum absorption taking place for a wave-length 4880; the absorption then grows rapidly towards the violet. When the solutions are heated the colour changes to green, the absorp- tion is increased throughout the speetrum, except in the green, where it remains nearly unchanged, and the minimum of absorption shifts to a wave-length of 5090. The solution, which remains green on cooling, has, when compared with its original state, an increased absorption in the red and bluc and a slightly diminished absorption in the grcen. When light is sent through plates cut out of crystals of potassium chrom-alum or ammonia chrom-alum, three absorption bands (6860, 6700, 6620) are seen in the red. The green and blue show the same absorption as the solution. The chloride in solution gives the same absorption as the chrom-alums,—transmitting, how- ever, slightly more light for the same quantity of chromium. The hot solution also shows the same changes, but with this difference that colour and absorption phenomena are almost entirely recovered on cooling. The nitrate (solution of chromic hydroxide in nitric acid) agrees with chrom-alum, but transmits more light. Red erystals of potassic chromic oxalate only transmit the red with an absorption band slightly less refrangible than B (A=6867). The blue salt has the absorption band at a wave-length of 7040 and transmits part of the light in the green and blue. The solutions of the salts show the sane absorption as the crystals, with the position of the absorption band apparently unchanged. The warm solutions absorb more than the cold ones. The oxalate of chromium gives an absorption band of 6910 to 6860 and transmits the green and blue more freelythan the double salt. The tartrate only shows the absorp- tion band in the red very weakly and absorbs more red than the previously mentioned solutions. The acetate transmits more yellow than the other salts and has some broad absorption bands near a wave-length of 7170. When the solution is heated it becomes green, absorbing the red more than when cold, but leaving the green and blue absorption unchanged. The absorption phenomena shown by uranium salts are more complieated than those of the chromium salts, but they are at the same time more characteristic, as the spectra are inore definitely broken up into bands. According to Vogel, the uranic and uranous salts behave differently (Praktische Spectral-Analyse, p. 247), but a more careful investigation is de- sirable. Sorby finds that a mixture of zirconium and uranium dissolved in a borax bead shows characteristic bands, which are visible neither with uranium nor with zirconium alone.

There is little to be said as regards the remaining groups of metals (tin, antimony, gold). Their spectra are best obtained by taking the spark from metallic electrodes or by volatilization in the voltaic are.

Influence of Temperature and Pressure on Spectra of Gases.

If the spectrum of an element is examined under different con- ditions of temperature or pressure, it is often found to differ con- siderably. The change may be simall—that is to say, the lines or bands may only show a different distribution of relative intensity— or it may be so large that no relationship at all can be discovered between the spectra. It has been pointed out by Kirchhoff that a change in the thickness of the luminous layer may produce a change in the appearance of the spectrum, and Zollner and Wiillner have endeavoured to explain in this way a number of important varia- tions of spectra. But their explanation does not stand the test of close examination. The thickness of layer cannot be neglected in the discussion of solar and stellar spectra, or in the comparison of absorption spectra of liquids; but none of the phenomena which we shall notiee here are affected by it.

Widening of Lines.—The lines of a spectrum are found to widen under certain conditions, and, although probably all spectra are subject to this change, some are much more affected by it than

others. The lincs of hydrogen and sodium, for instance, widen so easily that it is sometimes difficult to obtain them quite sharp. When a system of lines widens it is generally found that the most refrangible lines widen most easily. A line may expand equally towards both sides or chiefly towards one side ; in the latter case the expansion towards the less refrangible side preponderates pretty nearly in every case. It is the almost unanimous opinion of spectro- scopists that the widening is produced by an increase of pressure. If sparks are passed through gases, the lines are always broader at high than at low pressures, and the metallic lines are also broader when a spark is taken from them at higher pressures. Without altering the pressure,

we may often produce a widening of lines by an increase in the, intensity of the discharge, but here the pressure is indirectly increased by the rise of temperature. According to the molecular theory of gases, the following explanation might be given for the widening of lines. As long asa molecule vibrates by itself uninfluenced by any other molecule, its vibrations will take place in regular periods. The lines of its spectrum will couse- quently be sharp. But, if the molecule is placed in proximity with others, its vibrations will be disturbed by occasional encounters. During each encounter forces may be snpposed to act between the molecules, and these forces will affect the regularity of the vibra- tion. The question arises, whether for a given temperature and pressure a line may be of different width according as the molecule is placed in an atmosphere of similar or dissimilar molecules. Such a difference exists in all probability. If gases are mixed in differ- ent proportions, the lines are sharper when an element is present in small quantities, although the total pressure may be the same. There is one cause which limits the sharpness of spectroscopic lines: the molecules of a gas have a translatory motion. Those molecules which are moving towards us will send us light which is slightly more refrangible than those which move away from us ; hence each line ought to appear asa band. In reality the width of lines generally is greater than that due to this cause.

Spectra of Different Orders.—Spectra may be classified according to their general appearance. The different classes have been called orders by Pliicker and Hittorf. At the highest temperature we always obtain spectra of lines which need no further description. Ata lower temperature we often get spectra of channelled spaces or fluted bands. When seen in spectroscopes of small resolving power these seem made of bands which have a sharp boundary on one side and gradually fade away on the other. With the help of more perfect instruments it is found that each band is made up of a number of lines which lie closer and closer together as the sharp edge is approached. Occasionally the bands do uot present a sharp edge at all, but are made up of a number of lines of equal intensity at nearly equal distances from each other. Continuous spectra, which need not necessarily extend through the whole range of the spectruin, form a third order, and appear generally at a lower temperature than either band or line spectrum. Oncand the same element may at different temperatures possess spectra of different orders. A discussion has naturally arisen as to the cause of these remarkable

changes of spectra, and it is generally believed that they are due to differences of molecular structure. Thus sulphur vapour when volatilized shows by absorption a continuous spectrum until its temperature is raised to 1000°, when the continuous spectrum gives way to a spectrum of bands. We know that the molecule of sulphur is decomposed as the temperature is raised, and we are thus justified in saying that the band spectrum belongs to the molecule containing two atoms, while the continuous spectrum belongs to the more complex molecule which first appears on volatilization. When a strong electric spark is passed through the vapour of sulphur a bright line spectrum is seen, and this is believed to be due to a further splitting up of the molecule into single atoms.

Long and Short Lines.—If the spectrum of a metal is taken by passing the spark between two poles in air the pressure of which 1s made to vary, the relative intensity of some of the lines is often secn to change. Similar variations take place if the intensity of the discharge is altered, as, for instance, by interposing or taking out a Leyden jar. It is a matter of importance to be able to use a method which in the great majority of cases will give at once a sure indication how each line will behave under different cireum- stances. This method we now proceed to describe. It has often been remarked, even by the earlicst observers, that the metallic lines when seen in a spectroscope do not always stretch across the field of view, but are sometimes confined to the neighbourhood of the metallic poles. Some observations which Lockyer made jointly with Professor Frankland led him to conclude that the distance which each metallic line stretched away from the pole could give some clue to the behaviour of that line in the sun. In 1872 Lockyer worked out his idea. An image of the spark was formed on the slit of the spectroscope, so that the spectrum of each section of the spark could be examined. Some of the metallic lines were then seen to be confined altogether to the neighbour- hood of the poles, while others stretched nearly across the whole field. The relative length of all the lines was estimated. Tables

and maps are added to the memoir.! The longest lines (that is, those which stretch away farthest from the pole) are by no means always the strongest ;

and there are many instances where a faint line is seen to stretch nearly across the whole field of view, while a strong line may be confined to the neighbourhood of the pole, or is reduced sometimes to a brilliant point only. We give a few conspicuous examples of lines which are long and weak or short and strong. In lithium the blue line (4602-7) is brilliant but short. In lead 4062°5, one of the longest lines, is faint and according to Lockyer difficult to observe. In tin 5630-0 is the longest line, but it is faint, while the stronger lines near it (5588°5 and 5562°5) are shorter. The zinc lines 4928°8, 4911-2, 4809°7, 4721°4, 4679°5 are given by Thalén as of equal intensity, but the three most refrangible ones are longer. On reduction of pressure Lockyer found that some of the shorter lines rapidly decreased in length, while the longer lines remained visible and were some- times hardly affected. When the spark was taken from a metallic salt instead of from the metal the short lines could not be seen, but only the long lines remained. An alloy behaves in the same manner as a compound, and by gradually reducing one constituent of an alloy we may gradually reduce the number of lincs, which disappear in the inverse order of their length. Subsequent work has shown that the longest lines are also generally those which are most persistent on reduction of temperature, so that in the voltaic arc the longest lines seen in the spark are absent. In order to explain these facts it scems necessary in the first place to assume that the short lines are lines coming out at a high temperature only ; but this explanation is not sufficient. Why should a mixture of different elements only show the longest lines of that constituent which is present in small quantities? In the case of chemical combinations we might assume that, the spark having to do the work of decomposition, the temperature of the metal is lowered, and that therefore the short lines are absent. But this cannot be if a chemical compound is replaced by a mechani- cal mixture. All these facts would be explained, however, if we assume that the spectrum of a molecule that is excited by molecules of another kind consists of those lines chiefly which a molecule of the same kind is already capable of bringing out at a lower temperature. It would follow from this that the effects of dilution are the same as those of a reduction of temperature,— which is the case.

Other Changes in Relative Intensity of Lines.— Besides the changes we have noticed, there are others which have not been brought under any rule as yet. Lines appear sometimes at a low temperature which behave

differently from the proper low-tem- perature lines. These require further investigation. They may, in some cases at least, be due to some compound of the metal with other elements present. We give some examples. Ifa spark is taken from lead without the condenser the line 5005 appears, and Huggins has found it to be sensibly coincident with the chief line of the nebule. It is given as a strong line by Lecoq de Bois- baudran, who used fecble sparks, and in many cases it seems to behave as a low-temperature line; it ought to be a long line therefore, but it is in reality short. In line 6100 of tin, Salet noticed that when a hydrogen flame contains a compound of tin an orange line appears, which is apparently coincident with the orange line of lithium. This line does not figure on any of the maps of the tin spectrum. Lockyer found that zinc, volatilized in an iron tube, showed by absorption a green line. It is very likely the line 5184 scen by Lecoq de Boisbaudran in sparks taken from solution of zinc salts. In the absorption spectra of sodium and potassium lines appear in the green which were shown by Liveing and Dewar not to be coincident with any known line of these metals. It was suggested by them that they are due to hydrogen compounds. The wave- length of the sodium line is 5510 and that of the potassium line 57380. Lecoq de Boisbaudran mentions that an increase of tempcrature is often accompanied by a relatively greater increase in the bril- liancy of the more refrangible rays. It is often said that such an increase is a direct consequence of the formula established by Kirchhoff. If the absorbing power of a molecule remains the same while the temperature is increased, it follows that the blue rays gain more quickly in intensity than the red ones, but the less refrangible rays ought never to decrease in intensity, the quantity of luminous matter remaining the same. Now such a decrease is actually observed in many cases when there is no reason to suppose that the quantity of luminous matter has been reduced. We must conclude, therefore, that the observed differences in the spectra are not solely regulated by Kirchhoff’s law; but it is a perfectly plausible hypothesis that a higher temperature is in general accompanied by a decrease in the absorbing power of the less refrangible rays. Asa stronger impact often brings out higher tones, stronger molecular shocks may bring out waves of smaller length. There are several instances of a regular increase in the relative intensity of the blue rays which may be ascribed to this cause. The most remarkable instance is perhaps seen in the spec-

1 Phil. Trans., clxiii. p. 253 (1873).

trum of phosphoretted hydrogen. If a little phosphorus is intro- duced into an apparatus generating hydrogen, the flame will show a series of bands chiefly in the green. The spectrum gets more brilliant if the flame is cooled. This can be done, according to Salet,! by pressing the flame against a surface kept cool by means of a stream of water or by surrounding the tube, at the orifice of : which the gas is lighted, by a wider tube through which cold air is blown. The process of cooling the flame, according to Lecoq,? chauges the relative intensity of the bands in a perfectly regular ; manner. The almost invisible least refrangible band becomes strong, and the second band, which was weaker than the fourth, now becomes stronger. Another example of a similar change is the spectrum shown bya Bunsen burner. By charging the burner with an indifferent gas' (N, HCl, CO,) the flame takes a greenish colour, and, though the spectrum is not altered, the least refran- gible of the bands are increased in intensity. While in these in- stances the changes are perfectly regular, the more refrangible rays gaining in relative intensity as the temperature is increased, there are other cases, some of which have already been mentioncd, in which the changes are very irregular ; such are those which take place in the spectra of tin, lithium, and magnesium. In the case of zinc the less refrangible of the group of blue rays gains in relative intensity. We cannot, therefore, formulate any general law.

Numerical Relations between the Wave-lengths of Lines belonging to the Spectrum of a Body.

It seems @ priori probable that there is a numerical relation be- tween the different periods of the same vibrating system. In certain sounding systems, as an organ-pipe or a stretched string, the relation is a simple one, these periods being a submultiple of one which is called the fundamental period. The harmony of a com- pound sound depends on the fact that the different times of vibra- tion are in the ratio of small integer numbers, and hence two vibrations are said to be in harmonic relation when their periods are in the ratio of integers. We may with advantage extend the expression "harmonic relation" to the case of light, although the so- called harmony of colours has nothing to do with such connexions. We shall therefore define an ‘‘

harmonic relation ” between different lines of a spectrum to be a relation such that the wave-lengths or wave-numbers are in the ratio of integers, the integers being sufti- ciently small to suggest a real connexion. Some writers use the word in a wider sense and call a group of lines harmonics when they show a certain regularity in their disposition, giving evidence of some law, that law not being in general the harmonic law. We shall here use the expression in its stricter sense only. We begin hy discussing the question whether there are any well-ascertained cases of harmonic relationship between the different vibrations of the same inolecule. The most important set of lines exhibiting such a relationship are three of the hydrogen lines which, when pro- perly corrected for atmospheric refraction, are, as poiuted out by Johnstone Stoney, very accurately in the ratio of 20 : 27 : 32 (Phil. Mag., xli. p. 291, 1871). Other elements also show such ratios ; but when a spectrum has many lines pure accident will cause several to exhibit whatever numerical relations we may wish to impose on them. If we calculate the number of harmonic ratios which, with an assumed limit of accuracy, we may expect in a spectrum like that of iron, we find that there are in reality fewer than we should have if they were distributed quite at random (Proc. Roy. Soc., Xxxi. p. 337, 1881). With fractions having a denominator smaller than seventy the excess of the calculated over the observed values is very marked, while there are rather more coincidences than we should expect on the theory of probability if we take fractions having a denominator between seventy and a hundred. The cause of this, probably, is to be sought in the fact that the lines of an clement are liable to form groups and are not spread over the whole spectrum, as they would be if they were distributed at random. This increases the probability of coincidence with fractions between high numbers, and diminishes the probability of coincidence with fractions between lower numbers. There is one point which deserves renewed investigation. When the limits of agreement between Which a coincidence is assumed to exist are taken narrower, there 1s an increased number of observed as compared with calculated coincidences in the iron spectrum ; and this would seem to point to the existence of some true harmonic ratios. With the solar maps and gratings put at our disposal by Professor Rowland, we may hope to obtain more accurate measurements, and therefore more definite information. Even if the wave-lcngths of two lines are found to be occasionally in the ratio of small integer numbers, it does not follow that the vibrations of

molecules are regulated by the same laws as those of an organ-pipe or of a stretched string. E. J. Balmer* has indeed lately suggested a law which differs in ‘1 important manner from the laws of vibration of the organ-

1 Ann. Chim. Phys., xxviii. p. 57 (1878). 2 Spectre Lumineua, p. 188 (1874).

3 Op. cit., p. 48 (1874).

4 Wied. Ann., xxv. p. 80 (1885).

pipe and which still leaves the ratios of the periods of vibration integer numbers. According to him, the hydrogen spectrum can be represented by the equation

m2

m4 =’

where \, is some wave-length and m an intcger number greater than 2. The following table (I.) shows the agreement between the calculated and observed hydrogen lines. And the agreement is a very remarkable one, for the whole of the hydrogen spectrum is re- presented by giving to m, successive integer values up to sixteen.

Ay =3645.

Np =3645. |

Observed Observed

: > | Hydrogen || |. | £Hydrogen

m-. | m2Xo/(m2—4). Spectrum. ™. | m2No/(m2 — 4). | Spectrum.

| 8 6561-0 65621 | 10 3796‘9 3795-0 4 4860°0 4860-7 ie: 3769°6 3767 ‘5

5 4339°3 4340°1 ae 3749-1 3745°5

6 4100°6 4101°2 a8 3733°3 3780°0

7 3969-0 3968-1 | 14 3720°9 8717°5

8 3888-0 3887 °5 | 15 3711-0 3707°5

9 3834°3 3834:0 | 16 3702°9 3699-0

The differences between the observed and the calculated numbers show a regular increase towards the ultra-violet. It might be thought that a better agreement could be obtained by taking a number slightly different from four in the denominator; but this is not the case. On the contrary, the agreement in the visible part is at once destroyed if we make the ultra-violet lines fit better. The agreement is not improved but rendered slightly worse if we take account of atmospheric refraction.

As a first approximation Balmer's expression gives a very good account of the hydrogen spectrum. If the law was general we should find that in the iron spectrum, for instance, which is the only spectrum carefully examined, those fractions would occur more frequently than others which cau be put into the form m?/(m? ~ n2), that is to say, 2 and $ for fractions made up of numbers smaller than 10. A reference to the table in Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxxi. p. 337, shows that these fractions do not occur more frequently than others, But, if we change the sign of n? in the denominator, we find § and 35 as the only fractions falling within the range of spectrum examined, and these two fractions are indeed those which occur more frequently than any others made up of uumbers smaller than 10.

It might be worth trying to see whether the wave-lengths of lines

2

making up a fluted band can be put into the form a Xo 3 accord-

ing to the sign chosen in the denominator, the band would shade off towards the blue or red. The form of expression seems at first sight well adapted, for

it shows how by giving m gradually in- creasing numbers the lines come closer and closer together towards what appears in the spectrum as the sharp edge of the band. If we take periods of vibration instead of wave-lengths Balmer's expression would reduce to

r=nfs-(2)]

where T, is a fixed period of vibration, a constant integer, and m an integer to which successive values are given from » upwards.

It is often observed, and has already been mentioned, that the spectrum of some elements contains in close proximity two or three lines forming a characteristic group. Such doublets or triplets are often repeated, and if the harmonic law was a general one we should expect the wave-lengths of these groups to be ruled by it ; but such is not the case. The sodium lines which lie in the visible part of the spectrum are all double, the components being the closer to- gether the more refrangible the group. But neither are the lines themselves in any simple ratios of integers, nor do the distances between the lines show much regularity. The ultra-violet lines of sodium as photographed by Liveing and Dewar are single, with the exception of the least refrangible of them (3301). But this line is a very close double, and it may be that the others will ultimately be resolved. Some elements, such as magnesium, calcium, zinc, cadmium, show remarkable series of triplets; and the relative dis- tances of the three lines seem well maintained in each of them. Even the distances when mapped on the wave-number scale are so nearly the same for each element that it would be a matter of great importance to settle definitively whether the slight variations which are found to exist are real or due to errors of measurement. In the following table (II.) we give the position of the least refrangible line of each triplet together with the distances between the first and second (column B) and between the second and third line of each triplet (column C). The figures in column A represent the number of waves in one millimetre. For the zine and calcium triplets the measurements of Liveing and Dewar are given; the magnesium triplets are put down as measured by Cornu as well as by Hartley and Adeney. The differences in these measurements will give au idea of the degree of uncertainty. The triplets of cadmium are farther apart and are mixed up with a greater number of single lines.

Zine Triplets. Calcium Triplets.

A. B. C:

2245 10 5

2517 alg 5

2744 10 6 2868 10 6 2977 10 5 3044 11 6 3101 11 5

‘8174 10 5 3208 10 on

Magnesium Triplets. Cornu. Hartley and Adeney.

A. B. C. A. B. C. 1929°31 4°2 1°9 2605°6 3°9 20 2605°8 41 n Oy § 2997-4 4°0 24 2999°2 3°8 2°7 8229°8 4°5 aL 8230-4 3°9 1°9 8399-0 2 41 ee

Relation between Spectrum of a Body and Spectra of its Compounds.

The spectrum of a body is due to periodic motion within the molecules. If we are justified in believing that the molecule of mercury vapour contains a single atom, it follows that atoms are capable of vibration under the action of internal forces, for mercury vapour has a definite spec- trum. We may consider, then, the spectrum to be de- termined in the first place by forces within the atom, but to be affected by the forces which hold together the different atoms within the molecule. The closer the bond of union the greater the dependence of the vibrations on the forces acting between the different atoms. Experimental evidence seems to favour these views, for we observe that whenever elements are loosely bound together we can recognize the influence of each constituent, while in the compounds which are sufficiently stable to resist the temperature of incandes- cence the spectrum of the compound is perfectly distinct from the spectra of the elements. The oxides and haloid salts of the alkaline earths, for instance, have spectra in which we cannot trace the vibrations of the component atoms; but the spectra of the different salts of the same metal show a great resemblance, the bands being similar and similarly placed. The spectrum

seems displaced towards the red as the atomic weight of the haloid increases. No satisfactory numerical relationship has, however, been traced between the bands. The number of compounds which will endure incandescence without decomposition is very small, and this renders an exhaustive investigation of the relationship between their spectra very difficult.

The compounds whose absorption spectra have been investigated have often been of a more unstable nature, and, moreover, dis- sociation seems going on in liquid solutions to a large extent; the influence of the component radicals in the molecule is more marked in consequence. Dr Gladstone,' at an early period in the history of spectrum analysis, examined the absorption spectra of the solu- tion of salts, each constituent of which was coloured. He concluded that generally, but not invariably, the following law held good: "When an acid and a base combine each of which has a different influence on the rays of light a solution of the resulting salt will transmit only those rays which are not absorbed by either, or, in other words, which are transmitted by both." He mentions as an important exception the case of ferric ferro-cyanide, which, when dissolved in oxalic acid, transmits blue rays in great abundance, though the same rays are absorbed both by ferro-cyanides and by ferric salts. Soret has confirmed, for the ultra-violet rays, Dr Gladstone's conclusions with regard to the identity of the absorption spectra of different chromates. The chromates of sodium, potassium, and ammonia, as well as the bichromates of potassium and ammonia, were found to give the same absorption spectrum. Nor is the effect of these chromates confined to the blocking out simply of one end of the spectrum, as in the visible part, but two distinct absorption bands are seen, which seem unchanged in position if one of the above-mentioned chromates is replaced by another. Chromic acid itself showed the bands, but less distinctly, and Soret does not ee a ee

1 Measured by Thalén. 2 Measured by Liveing and Dewar.

% Phil. Mag., xiv. p. 418 (1857).

SPECTROBSBECUFE

consider the purity of the acid sufficiently proved to allow him to draw any certain conclusion from this observation. Erhard's work on the absorption spectra of the salts in which chromium plays the part of base has already been mentioned. Nitric acid dnd the nitrates of transparent bases, such as potassium, sodium, and ammonia, show spectra, according to Soret, which are not only qualitatively but also quantitatively identical; that is to say, a given quantity of nitric acid in solution gives a characteristic absorption band of exactly the same width and darkness, whether by itself alone or combined with a transparent base. It also shows a continuous absorption at the most refrangible side, beginning with each of the salts mentioned at exactly the same point. The ethereal nitrates, however, give different results. In 1872 Hartley aud Huntington examined by photographic methods the absorption spectra of a great number of organic compounds. The normal alcohols were found to be transparent to the ultra-violet rays, the normal fatty acids less so. In both cases an increased number of carbon atoms increases the absorption at the most refrangible end. The fact that benzene and its derivatives are remarkable for their powerful absorption of the most refrangible rays, and for some characteristic absorption bands appearing on dilution, led Hartley to a more extended examination of some of the more complicated organic substances. He determined that definite absorption bands are only produced by substances in which three pairs of carbon atoms are doubly linked together, as in the benzene ring. More recently ' he has subjected the ultra-violet absorption of the alkaloids to a careful investigation, and has arrived at the conclusion that the spectra are sufficiently characteristic to "offer a ready and valuable means of ascertaining the purity of the alkaloids and particularly of establishing their identity." "In comparing the spectra of substances of similar constitution it is observed that in such as are derived from bases by the substitution of an alkyl radical for hydrogen, or of an acid radical for hydroxyl, the curve is not altered in character, but may vary in length when equal weights are examined. This is explained by the absorption bands being caused by the compactness of structure of the nucleus of the molecule, and that equal weights are not molecular weights, so that by substituting for the hydrogen of the nucleus radicals which exert no selective absorption the result is a reduction in the ab- sorptive power of a given weight of the substance…. Bases which contain oxydized radicals, as hydroxyl, methoxyl, and

carboxyl, increase in absorptive power in proportion to the amount of oxygen they contain.”

It would seem, however, by comparing the above results with those obtained by Captain Abney and Colonel Festing® that the absorption of a great number of organic substances is more char- acteristic in the infra-red than in the ultra-violet. Some of the conclusions arrived at by these experimentalists are of great im- portance, as the following quotations will show :—“ Regarding the general absorption we have nothing very noteworthy to remark, beyond the fact that, as a rule, in the ate den of the same series those of heavier molecular constitution seem to have less than those of lighter.” This effect agrees with the observations inade by Hartley and Huntington in the ultra-violet, in so far as a general shifting of the absorption towards the red seems to take place as the number of carbon atoms is increased. Such a shifting would increase the general absorption in the ultra-violet as observed by Hartley and Huntington, and decrease it in the infra-red as observed by Abney and Festing. Turning their atten- tion next to the sharply defined lines, the last named, by a series of systematic experiments, concluded that these must be due to the hydrogen atoms in the molecule. ‘‘A crucial test was to observe spectra containing hydrogen and chlorine, hydrogen and oxygen. and hydrogen and nitrogen. We therefore tried hydrochloric acid and obtained a spectrum containing some few lines. Water gave lines, together with bands, two lines being coincident with those in the spectrum of hydrochloric acid. In ammonia, nitric acid, and sulphuric acid we also obtained sharply marked lines, coincidences in the different spectra being observed, and nearly every line mapped found its analogue in the chloroform spectrum, and usually in that of ethyl iodide. Benzene, again, gave a spectrum consisting prin- cipally of lines, and these were coincident with some lines also to be found in chloroform. It seems, then, that the hydrogen, which is common to all these different compounds, must be the cause of the linear spectrum. In what manner the hydrogen annihilates the waves of radiation at these particular points is a question which is, at present at all events, an open one, but, that the linear absorp- tions, common to the hydrocarbons and to those bodies in which hydrogen is in combination with other elements, such as oxygen and nitrogen, are due to hydrogen, there can be no manner of doubt. The next point that required solution was the effect of the presence of oxygen on the body under

examination. . . . It appears that in every case where oxygen is present, otherwise than as a part of the radical, it is attached to some hydrogen atom in such a way that

4 Phil. Trans., part ii. (1885). 5 Phil. Trans., iii. p. 887 (1881).

~~

it obliterates the radiation between two of the lines whieh are due to that hydrogen. . . . If more than one hydroxyl group be pre- sent, we doubt if any direct effect is produeed beyond that produeed by one hydroxyl group, exeept a possible greater general absorption ; a good example of this will be found in einnamie aleohol and phenyl- propyl alcohol, which give the same spectra as far as the special absorptions are eoncerned. . . . Hitherto we have only taken into account oxygen whieh is not eontained in the radieal ; when it is so contained it appears to aet differently, always supposing hydrogen to be present as well. We need only refer to the speetrum of aldehyde, whieh is inclined to be linear rather than banded, or rather the bands are bounded by absolute lines, and are more defined than when oxygen is more loosely bonded.”

“An inspeetion of our maps will show that the radieal of a body is represented by eertain well-marked bands, some differing in position aceording as it is bonded with hydrogen, or a halogen, or with carbon, oxygen, or uitrogen. There seem to be eharaeteristie bands, however, of any one series of radieals between 1000 and about 1100, which would indieate what may be ealled the central hydroearbon group, to whieh other radieals may be bonded. The clue to the eomposition of a body, however, would seem to lie between A 700 and A 1000. Certain radieals have a distinetive absorption about 700 together with others abont A 900, and if the first be visible it almost follows that the distinetive mark of the radical with whieh it is connected will be found. Thus in the ethyl series we find an absorption at 740, and a charaeteristie band, one edge of whieh is at 892 and the other at 920. If we finda body containing the 740 absorption and a band with the most refrangible edge commencing at 892, or with the least refrangible edge terminating at 920, we may be pretty sure that we have an ethyl radieal

present. So with any of the aromatie group; the crucial line is at 867. If that line be eonneeted with a band we may feel certain that some derivative of benzine is present. The benzyl group show this remarkably well, since we see that phenyl is present, as is also methyl. It will be advantageous if the spectra of ammonia, benzine, aniline, and dimethy] aniline be com- pared, when the remarkable eoineidenees will at once beeome apparent, as also the different weighting of the moleeule. The spectrum of nitro-benzine is also worth comparing with benzine and nitrie acid. . . . In our own minds there lingers no doubt as to the easy deteetion of any radical whieh we have examined, .. . and it seems highly probable by this delicate mode of analysis that the hypothetieal position of any hydrogen whieh is replaced may be identified, a point which is of prime importanee in organie ehemistry. The deteetion of the presence of ehlorine or bromine or iodine in aeompound is at present undeeided, and it may well be that we may have to look for its effects in a different part of the speetrum. The only traee we ean find at present is in ethyl bromide, in whieh the radical band about 900 is curtailed in one wing. The difference between amyl iodide and amyl bromide is not sufficiently marked to be of any value."

The absorption speetra of the didymium and cobalt salts afford many striking examples of the eomplieated effects of solution and combination in the spectra. It is impossible to explain these with- out the help of illustrations, and we must refer the reader, therefore, to the original papers.! Some very interesting ehanges have been notieed in the position of absorption bands when eertain colouring matters are dissolved in different liquids. Charaeteristie absorp- tion bands appear for each colouring matter in slightly different positions aeeording to the solvent. Hagenbach, Kraus, Kundt,? and Claes* have studied the question. In a preliminary examina- tion Professor Kundt had eome to the eonelusion that solvents displaeed absorption bands towards the red in the order of their dispersive powers; but the examination of a greater number of cases has led him to recognize that no generally valid rule ean be laid down, At the same time highly dispersive media, like bisul- phide of earbon, always displace a band most towards the red end, while with liquids of small dispersion, like water, aleohol, and ether, the band always appears more refrangible than with other solvents ; and asa general rule the order of displacement is approximately that of dispersive power.

Relations of the Spectra of Different Elements.

Various efforts have been made to connect together the Spectra of different elements. In these attempts it is generally assumed that certain lines in one spectrum corre- Spond to certain lines in another spectrum, and the ques- tion is raised whether the atom with the higher atomic weight has its corresponding lines more or less refrangible.

_1 Bunsen, “On the Inversion of the Bands in the Didymium Absorp- tion Speetra,” Phil. Mug., xxviii. p. 246 (1864), and xxxii. p. 177 (1866); Russell, “On the Absorption Speetra of Cobalt Salts,” Proc. Roy. Soe., xxii. p. 258 (1881). 2 Wied. Ann., iv. p. 34 (1878).

- Wied. Ann., iii. p. 389 (1878).

No definite judgment can as yet be given as to the success of these efforts. Lecoq de Boisbaudran has led the way in these speculations, and some of the similarities in different spectra pointed out by him are certainly of value. But whether his conclusion, that “the spectra of the alkalis and alkaline earths when classed according to their refran- gibilities are placed as their chemical properties in the order of their atomic weight,” will stand the test of further research remains to be seen. Ciamician* has also pub- lished a number of suggestive speculations on the question, and Hartley’ has extended the comparison to the ultre- violet rays.

When metallic spectra are examined it is often found that some line appears to belong to more than one metal. This is often due to a common impurity of the metals; but such impurities do not account for all coincidences. The question has been raised whether these coincidences do not point to a common constituent in the different elements which show the same line. If this view is correct, we should have to assume that the electric spark decom- poses the metals, and that the spectrum we observe is not the spectrum of the metal but that of its constituents, Further investigation has shown, however, that in nearly all cases the assumed coincidences were apparent only. With higher resolving powers it was found that the lines did not occupy exactly the same place. With the large numbers of lines shown

by the spectra of most of the metals some very close coincidences must be expected by the doctrine of chances. The few coincidences which our most powerful spectroscopes have not been able to resolve are in all probability accidental only. A. 8*,

SPEECH-SOUNDS, the sounds actually used for the conveyance of thought by speech. See PHONETICS,

1. Symbolization.—It is necessary to have some system of writing speech-sounds, in order to talk of them. The system used in the present article is the palaeotype of the present writer's Zarly English Pronunciation. All letters or words thus written will be enclosed in (). The following preliminary list of the ordinary sounds, with examples, will render what follows intelligible. For an alphabetical list, see art. 20.

English.—1. beet bait baa bought boat boot (biit beet baa baat boot buut). 2. knit net gnat knot nwt nook (nit net net not not nuk). 3. file fozl fowl fuel (fa'il fo'dl fa'ul fiuurdl). 4. hay (hee). 5. pea bee, toe doe, cape gape (pii bii, too doo, kecp geep). 6. whey way, feel veal, thin then, seal zeal, rush rouge, hue you (whee wee, fil viil, thin dhen, siil ziil, resh ruuzh, shiuu gun). 7. ear ring, gull little (iia réq, gol lit'l). 8. sum ehasm, sun open, sung (som kez'm, son oop'n, seq). 9. chest jest (tyest djest).

Foreign.—¥ Freneh, G German, 1T Italian. 10. béte ¥, ldehe F, nd IT, dé F, few ¥, veuf ¥, vin F, vent F, vont F, un F, soin F, sot ¥, lui ¥ (bEEt, laash, no, dyy, fa, voef, ves, vaa, vo, ced, silea, stia, lyt). 11. dach teich, tage siege, wahl, all c (dakh taikjh, itaaghe, ziigjhe, bhaal). 12. pagdia rr, besogne F (pa']ja, bgzonj).

2. Nature of Speech-Sounds.—Speech-sounds result from shocks given to the air by the organs of speech, received by the drumskin of the ear, and transmitted to the auditory nerves in the cochlea. The apparatus is explained by Helm- holtz, who deals with musical sounds. But speech is not musical, and its sounds are much obliterated when rendered musical.° An original quality of tone generated by the vocal chords is modified by the cavities through which it passes, as explained by Helmholtz (Sensations of Tone) cn the principle of resonance. There are tliree ways in which speech-sounds may be produced—(1) by the air in the mouth, without additional breathing,

by smacks and clicks ; (2) by drawing in air, as orally in chirps, whistles, sobs, gasps, and nasally in snuffles, snores ; (3) by expelling air, as in the greater number of speech-sounds. The last are

4 Wien. Ber., lxxviii. (1878). ® Journul Chem. Soc,, September 1883. 8 Ellis, Speech in Song, sect.. iv.

either flated, the vocal chords being wide apart and hence not vibrating, but allowing breath to pass freely, or voiced, the vocal chords being close together and vibrating fully, or else whispered, the vocal chords approximating but not touching, and their edges only vibrating. The last 1s only a variation of the second and needs no further consideration. Flated and voiced sounds are either jixed, the position of the vocal organs remaining unchanged throughout, or changing, the position constantly altering from one fixed position to another, forming “ glides.”

3. Generic and Specific Speech-Sounds.—Fixed speech- sounds, intended to be the same, vary from speaker to speaker, and in the same speaker at different times. Those who attempt to write sounds from dictation rapidly find that they have to disregard these specific differences, and simply discriminate genera. And much difference of opinion has always existed as to the discrimination and number of genera.

4, Vowels, that is, vocals, are so called because their positions allow the voice-sounds to pass with least obstruc- tion. The three genera (ii, aa, uu), which have always been distinguished, differ greatly in the positions of the tongue and lip, that is, in their mouth cavities, and hence resonance. The usual method of describing speech-sounds is by the shape of the cavity, which, however, could be shown to be insufficient for many reasons. As differently shaped cavities resound to a note of the same pitch, Helmholtz proposed the last for discrimination. The pitches of (ii, aa, uu) are widely different, (ii) having the highest and (uu) the lowest ; but the extreme diversity of results in attempting to assign the actual pitch of vowel cavities shows that this will not suffice. Resonance cavities do not create but merely modify original vowel qualities of tone, and these last seem to depend upon the will of the speaker, guided by his powers of appreciation and imitation,

both extremely variable, partly hereditary, partly depending on conformation of brain, and partly acquired during adolescence.

Melville Bell, Sweet, Storm, and Sievers, and all who have latterly examined the subject distinguish at least two series of vowel genera, that is, two forms of each genus, called “narrow” and “wide”; but they are far from being agreed as to what the difference consists in and how it is produced. Sweet differs from Bell, and Sievers does not wholly agree with Sweet. All, however, call (ii, uu) narrow, and (7, «) wide.

Besides these two series Bell introduced another distinc- tion applying to both, termed “rounding,” consisting in a greater or less closure of the lips, slight for (aa), much for (uu), and intermediate for (00). But this character is not scientifically precise, because all the vowels can be produced with the mouth wide open (by means of a com- pression of the arches of the palate), and still more easily with the mouth at least as much closed as ordinarily for (uu). Other phonetists wish to introduce distinctions based upon the shape of the apertures between the lips.

There is also a feeling of intermediateness between vowel- sounds. Thus (yy) is felt by many to lie “ between ” (ii, uu), and (cece) between (00, ce). But we also have other intermediates which arise spontaneously when listening to new languages and dialects. Thus in west Somerset there is a vowel between (9, i), one between (y, 2), and another between (a, oc), and the positions for these vowels have not been ascertained. These are only specimens of numerous cases. Hence the positional discrimination breaks down at present. Nevertheless it is very good so far as it goes, but must not be pressed to extremes.

All the vowels may be also flated and whispered ; that is, the position and dictating vowel-intention remaining, the totally or partially open vocal chords forbid voice and

produce sound more or less recognized as substitutes for the true vowels. Write (ii) voiced, (‘ii) whispered, (*41i) flated. This distinction becomes of more importance for consonants.

5. Glottids and Physems.—A glottid is the action of the vocal chords in altering the form of the glottis or tongue- shaped space between them. (1) The glottid is clear when there is no attempt to utter the vowel until the chords are brought together, yet the utterance takes place at that instant. This may be written (,ii) initial. Similarly, a vowel may end with a clear glottid (,1i,), no flatus escaping after the vowel ceases. This clear glottid is usually inferred and not written. (2) The glottid is gradual, written (1), when flatus passes through the vowel position before the chords are sufficiently approximated for voice, or after they are separated, thus (iit) is really (“Gi+ Gi+ii+ i+ “4i). This is an exceedingly common habit with some speakers. (3) The check glottid (;), Arabic hamza +, arises from keep- ing the chords tightly closed so that they cannot vibrate, and then releasing them with an explosion. It may be final in reverted order in Arabic, and it is common as an initial in German, as ;eine ;er,innerung, and is used as the catch accent in Danish, as ma,nd, a man, distinct from man =F on. (4) An exaggeration of (;) gives Arabic (gain) & the bleat, with a rattle in the cartilaginous glottis.

Physems are the bellows-actions of the lungs. (1) The jerk (a) or sudden puff of either vocalized or flated breath, accompanying either clear or gradual glottid. The first, with voice only, is the singer’s and Bengali aspirate ; the second, with flatus, is the Scotch or German aspirate. (2) The wheeze (h), Arabic O° stated by Czermak to arise from

suddenly forcing breath through the cartilaginous glottis.

6. Vowel Glides and Vanishes.—So far the positions of the vowel above the larynx have been supposed to remain unchanged. In this case many degrees of length may be distinguished, as (&) very short, (a) short, (&) medium, (aa) long, (a&) drawled, (aaa) extravagantly prolonged. If the vowel sign consists of two parts, as (ah), only the first is marked doubled or tripled for these lengths, as (ah, aah), &c. In English it is felt very difficult to pre- serve the positions for long (ee, aa, 00), and these vowels gravitate to, without by any means reaching, (i, 9, u). The first and last may be written (eej, oo’w), implying what are termed vanishes or gliding alterations of

sound, accom- panied by alterations of position as the vowel ceases. This change is generally unintended and mostly used uncon- sciously.

7. Diphthongs.—But there are conscious changes to quite different positions. The first and last vowels are then taken as fixed, one of them having the chief stress, and there is a vowel glide between them. These form diph- thongs; the stress and glide being the chief characteristics are marked by (’), and the two elements are juxtaposed. The glide is generally short and close in English, longer in German, still longer and looser, or “slurred,” in French and Italian. There are many typical classes. 1. With weak final (i), unanalysed (ai), analysed (ai, 47, 0%, a7, éi, ei, Bd, w’t), &e., all common. ii. With weak final (u), unanalysed (a’u), analysed (Au, au, o’u, a’u, éu, éu, EU, ze’u), &e., all very common. iii, Weak final (y), theoretic German ew (dy, ay), Devonshire ow (a’y,°). iv. Weak initial (i) or (i), used for (3) in Italy, France, Wales, &e. v. Weak initial (y) in Fr. vi. Weak initial (u) or (it), used for (w) in Italy, Spain, France, Wales, &c. vii. Murmur diphthongs ending in weak (%), common in English, but generally with the option of trilling an (x) after it, and hence written (1), as in ear, air, oar, lord, poor, pure, pyre, power (ii1, eed, ood, LAAtd, puus, piwud, pa’ts, pa’us); ther is always trilled in Scotland. viii. The vanish diphthongs

(céj, 00’), just considered. ix. Inchoant diphthongs, first grave, where the speaker begins too low and corrects him- self, as (4i, du), and secondly acute, where he begins with the mouth too open and corrects himself as he proceeds, as (a0); both are common in English dialects.

8. Glides from and to Mutes, Post-Aspirates, Sonants.— The essence of the diphthongal character was the glide, which was independent of the sounds of the first and last elements. These might be absolutely mute, as in (piip, taat, kook) peep, taught, coke, in which (p, t, k) are mere positions without sounds. But the results are quite dif- ferent from (ii, AA, 00), because while the consonant positions are opened out the vowel is at the same time sounded. Similarly in the reverse order, when final. But here the enclosure of the breath is felt to be uncomfortable, and, if there is no vowel to fall upon, the mouth is opened and a puff of flatus (‘), called the “recoil,” is heard in England, as (piip‘) peep! Using then (+) for the gliding sounds, we

have (p+iit+p+‘); but there is no recoil in (p+ii+p+7 +q) or (pt+ii+pb-+o00’w!) peeping, peep-bo! Various nations have very different habits in this respect. In Indian languages (p‘) would be felt as a final post-aspirated mute. So initially in Germany, the (p) position is usually released, not on a vowel with a clear glottid, as in England and Italy, but on a vowel with a gradual glottid, as (pyii), and hence flatus is heard before the vowel. When this is exaggerated, as (pthii) or (puyhii), we have the true Indian post-aspirated mute.

But an attempt to utter the vowel through a mute position may be made before the position is quite opened out, or the vowel may be continued into it after it has been assumed. This gives the English, Italian, and Indian “sonant,” as in (beeb) babe. The German is not quite the same. Here the glides are (b+ee+b), with possibly a voiced recoil (b+ee+b-+’), where (’) represents the most amorphous voice. This voiced recoil is strong in French, but seldom heard in English, except in declamation, is regular in modern Indian, and impossible to a German, who says at most (beebp‘) or (beep‘) ; also Indians and Irish sometimes jerk out their vowel after sonants, as (bueebH‘), producing the sonant post-aspirates. The ancient Indian never ended words in the pause with sonants, post-aspirated mutes, or post-aspirated sonants, but only with simple mutes, and avoided the recoil.

9. Glides to and from Hisses, Buzzes.—In the case of a hiss, flatus passes through the consonant position and is continued part of the time during which the vowel position is assumed, but towards the end of that time voice is put on. Hence in (s+ii) see, the glide (+) is partly flated and partly voiced, so that (s) acts in much the same way as a gradual glottid ; similarly when final, as (s+ii+s) cease, where thie hiss replaces the recoil, But the proportion of voice and flatus in the glide may vary. The voice may be put on during the hiss, and then the change takes place in the hiss position. The result, far less clear than a vowel, is a hiss (s), followed without a positional glide by the buzz (z), then an entirely vocal glide, the vowel, and a vocal glide, a buzz, and a hiss, as (sziizs) seize, sees. The initial (sz) is regular in Germany, where no vowel precedes, as sie sehen (szii zee’n), they or you see ; and the reverse (zs) is regularly in English seize (siizs) in the pause, and similarly (haavf, briidhth, ruuzhsh, djoadjshj) halve, breathe, rouge,

judge. In the south-west of England Saxon Words beginning with s, f are pronounced with (z, v) initial, Which passes through (sz-, fv-) to (s, f).

10. Glides to and Jrom Flaps.—F laps are consonants Where there is a slack organ which flaps with the breath aS It passes. The r is very varied, but properly voiced, though the flated form occurs. The flap may be made (1) With the lips, as (brh), used in Germany to stop horses ; (2)

with the tip of the direct tongue, (r, ,r), used in Italy; with the tip of the reverted tongue, (r), used in the south of Eng- land and in modern (not ancient) Indian, where it is called “cerebral” ; (3) with the uvula, (7), common in France and north Germany, labialized (7w) in Northumberland, and harsher in Greek and Arabic; (4) with the glottis, (a), usual in Denmark; and soon. In the educated south of England the tongue is often raised to the ® position, but not allowed to flap, and is treated as a buzz (ES):

The above form the central flaps; if the point of the tongue is fixed and the voice escapes by the side it causes minute lateral flaps of the tongue. The place of the point of the tongue discriminates the various sounds which differ but slightly—(,1), advanced tongue at gums, Continental ; (1), coronal, tongue near the crown of the palate, English ; (L), reverted, in connexion with ® in south-west England.

Both flaps, especially the latter, are extremely vocal, and the glides from and to them are like those from and to vowels, while they glide readily to and from mutes, sonants, hisses, and buzzes.

ll. Glides to and from Hums, Orinasals.—For (p, t,k) both nasal or oral passages are cut off, the former by press- ing the uvula against the back of the pharynx. Let this pressure be relaxed so that the nasal passage is opened, the oral passage remaining closed. The voice passes through the nose, forming the three hums (m, n, q). The glide from these to ordinary vowels is the same as from (b, d, g), and the peculiarity consists in the preceding hum and the closing of the nasal passage as the vowel position is assumed. If the nasal passage is left open at all the vowel is “nasalized,” and as it resounds partly in the nose and partly in the mouth it becomes an

“orinasal.” Four principal orinasals exist in French, as an, on, un, vin (aa, OA, cea, ves); there are more in Portuguese, and many others in the modern Indian languages. The oral vowel is altered in character by nasalization, and it is not possible to assign the oral to the orinasal form precisely. If the oral passage is only slightly open, a “nasalized tone” is produced, as in Gaelic, some south German, and American dialects, written as (a,). The hum also may be prolonged, and (’mpaa, ’mbaa, ’ntaa, ‘ndaa, ’qkaa, ’qgaa) result. These forms exist in South African languages.

The final hum may be continued like a vowel. If the nose entrance is closed and the voice continued (lim, lem, koom) become (Icimb, leemb, koomb), which, as the ordinary spelling shows, were probably once pronounced. But not only the nasality, the voice itself may be cut off, and then we have the mere stops (p, t, k), thus (lémp, lint, Iqk), which in the pause have the recoil. Some phonetists consider (m, n, q) to become flated in this case, as (mh, nh, qh). This is no more necessary than to suppose a vowel to be flated before a mute, so that (lep, meet, hak) lap, mat, hack should be (I‘ep, m‘“et, h‘ek), a usage unknown.

12. Palatalization and Labialization.—When a conso- nant precedes a diphthong of classes iv, v, vi, in art. 7 begin- ning with weak (i, y, u), there is a tendency to take these vowels as nearly as possible simultaneously with the con- sonant, expressed by writing (j, wj, w) after the consonant. To say (tj) at least two-thirds the length of the tongue from the tip backwards must lie against the palate, for (kj) two- thirds from the root forwards. The first occurs in Hun- garian ; the second was very common among older speakers of English before (2), as (kjend’l). Both (tj, kj) are apt to develop into (ty); compare nature, kirk, say (neetj va, kjoorkj), with colloquial modern (neetye, tyooty). Similarly the voiced sounds (dj, gj) become (dj), compare rig, ridge. These (ty, dj) are consonantal diphthongs = (tjshj, djzhj), as in chest, Jest, and are distinct from the Indian sounds (kj, gj) ™% ¥, which are true mutes, produced by bringing the tongue from

the position for (3) tight up against the extreme back of the hard palate so as to produce a complete stop. The most important of the palatalized letters are (Ij, nj), the Italian gli, gn in miglior, ognor (miljo’r, onjo’r), where the

palatal- ization brings the Italian advanced (,1, \n) to the position of the English (1, n). The (Ij) has degenerated to (i) or (3) in France during the 19th century. It exists in Spanish 7/, Portuguese /h. The (nj) exists as gn in French, #% in Spanish, and nA' in Portuguese.

Parallel to the palatal are the labial forms, of which English queen, guano (kwiin, gwaa'no) are examples. They seem to exist in abundance in French, as in toi, doigt (,twa, dwa). The palato-labial form (wj), as in jucn (zhujea), is uch disputed, and a diphthong (zhyéa) is usually assumed.

13. Syllables—A group of speech-sounds increasing in volume from a mute, sonant, hiss, buzz, or flap to a full vowel and decreasing again to one of the former constitutes the ideal syllable (rvAAaB%, collection), The initial and final parts may sink to clear glottids, and the middle part toa simple vowel. The type of a syllable is then < >, crescendo followed by diminuendo, as in (,aa, iaai, tiaait', stlaaits), theoretical, and (dyodjd, streqkth, teelfths), actual syllables. The hisses or recoil before or after a stop are not felt as belonging to fresh syllables, because they have uo vowel, which is the soul of the syllable. Monosyllables present no difficulty, but the division of syllables in poly- syllables is not easy to understand. In (pii+p+7q) the middle (p) ends one set of glides and begins another. One syllable ends and the other begins with the assump- tion of the (p) position which is absolutely mute, so that the end of the first and the beginning of the second syllable are simultaneous, as the end of one hour and the beginning of the next. In this case (p) is said to be "'medial." But there may be and often is a sensible pause between the two syl- lables, and then (p) is said to be '" double," as (pii + pp +79, piippiq), in which case no recoil can be used, as (piip'pzq). In "syllabizing," a totally artificial process, doubling is necessary, and very frequently the recoil is used, but it never is inspeech. In (sii+s+7q) ceasing, there is a sens- ible hiss between the glides which end the first syllable and those which begin the second, and the syllable divides during that hiss. If we wished to produce the effect of doubling, we must break the hiss into two either by a silence or a diminution of force, as (mzssent). The same remarks hold for sonants, buzzes, and flaps, where we have a sensible voice sound during which the syllable divides. Syllables may even divide during a vowel, as French payen, Fayence, vaillant (paiea, faiaas, vaiaa), where the syllable divides during (i), which may even be

lengthened to show the two syllables ; but, if the syllables have to be sung to notes with a pause between them, we must double the (i), thus (pai ies, fai iaas), as either (pai ea, fai aas) or (pa iea, faiaas) would be unintelligible. The sensation of separate syllables is always easy. It is the essence of versification, the oldest form of literature.

14. Accent and Emphasis.—Generally several syllables form a single word, and in many languages—by no means all languages—one syllable in a word is rendered conspicu- ous. Several plans have been adopted for this purpose. (1) Quantity or length of syllables, which seems to be all that is known to modern Indians, Arabs, and Persians. (2) Heightened or lowered or descending gliding pitch (con portamento) of one syllable, which were the acute, grave, and circumflexed syllables of Sanskrit, Latin, and Greek, the position of these syllables in a word there depending partly on the quantity of the syllables and partly on sense ; this pitch difference remains in a more complicated form in Norwegian and Swedish. (3) Greater force given to one syllable ; this is the English, German, and Italian “stress,” and from the end of the 3d century a.p., when the feeling

for quantity faded, was used instead of high pitch in Latin and Greek. The modern Italian and modern Greek as a general rule preserve the memory of the syllable which had the high pitch by giving it greater force, with but few exceptions, as Italian cade’re ri‘dere, to fall, to laugh. (4) By a peculiar pronunciation, as the “catch” of the Danes. In French none of these methods seem to be consciously adopted. Some declare that the last syllable (not counting mute e) always has the stress, others that it never has the stress ; others, again, consider the stress to be intentionally even, and when altered to depend mainly on grammatical construction, while there is certainly a raised pitch, fre- quently towards the close of a phrase or sentence, but sometimes on a penultimate syllable. Turks and Japanese have also even stress. All these modes of rendering a syllable conspicuous are apt to be called “accent,” the Latin translation of tpoa@dia, the song added to the word, which properly applied to class (2) only. Where pitch accent prevailed there may have been also stress, but that stress was probably as

little subject to strict rule as altera- tion of pitch is in English speech, where it undoubtedly exists, without properly affecting signification. Hence we may say roughly that in Latin and Greek pitch was fixed and stress free, but in English and German stress is fixed and pitch free.

What accent is to a word, emphasis is to a sentence. But there is this difference. Accent always falls on a fixed syllable of a word. Emphasis varies with the word to be made conspicuous. Emphasis does not consist merely in making the stressed syllable of a word louder. It depends upon a number of most subtle varieties of qualities of tone, length, and pitch of utterance,—in short, of those tricks and wiles of spcech which form the stock-in-trade of actors and orators. The same words will mean totally different things according to the place and nature of the emphasis used. Different nations emphasize differently. To an Englishman French emphasis is apt to seem placed on the wrong word.

15. Intonation.—Although musical accent does not exist in English, almost every county has its peculiar sing-song mode of utterance. And even among educated men the sing-song may frequently be heard in public speaking, or in declaiming poetry, or recitation, or reading aloud generally. For these things no invariable rule exists. But in England questions require the pitch of the voice to be raised, and affirmations to be lowered, towards the end of a clause. In Scotland the pitch is raised in both cases, so that to an Englishman a Scotchman seems to be always asking questions.

16. Analysis of Speech-Sounds.—What is heard are sentences consisting of various fixed sounds cemented by gliding sounds, which act one on the other, and thus become greatly modified. To construct an alphabet it is necessary from this mass to separate the fixed elements and the changing glides, to crystallize them into symbols, and finally to make the value of those symbols known to the reader. The last cannot be done satisfactorily except by viva voce instruction, but much can be accomplished by a review of the relations of sounds, made dependent on the relations of the motions of the organs of speech by which they are produced. There is a preliminary difficulty in defining an element. Perhaps position, flatus, whisper, and voice are the only ultimate elements. But it is usual to be very lax. Thus (p, t, k) have position only, (f, s, sh, kh) position and flatus, (i, a, u, w, z, zh, gh)

position and voice. The analysis is therefore only into “proximate” and not “ultimate” elements. Again, when a new mass of sound is presented to the ear, a long time passes before the ear becomes sufficiently accustomed to the sound to distinguish the proximate elements and their combinations,

Sp frHEC Ee

and therefore before the voice can imitate them at all satisfactorily. Hence the best phonetists differ. It may certainly be considered impossible from a knowledge of a few languages to construct an alphabet which will serve for all. Nevertheless a consideration of some partial schemes is of great value as a stepping-stone. We give Mr Melville Bell’s vowel system and Mr Henry Sweet’s alteration of Mr M. Bell’s consonant system, both supposed to be universal, but neither properly appreciating Asiatic, African, and American-Indian languages and habits of speech. After these follows a modification of a confessedly partial system by the present writer, applying chiefly to English, German, Italian, Spanish, and French, with a few partly theoretical sounds, introduced to show connexions. In all these the sounds will be expressed by palaeotype symbols without any explanation in the tables themselves, because that is furnished at better length than would there be possible in the alphabetical list of art. 20.

17. Mr Melville Bell’s‘ Visible Speech” Vowels.—These arearranged primarily according to the height of the tongue, which is supposed to be divided into ‘‘back”’ and ‘‘front”’ or central part, beyond which lies the ‘‘ point.” The heights refer first to the ‘‘ back” and lastly to the ‘‘ front,” and between them lie the “mixed,” for which both back and front are more raised than the “front,” so that there is generally a hollow between them. Each set is then divided into “narrow” and ‘‘ wide,” the precise meaning of which, as stated in art. 4, is not settled. Finally come the ‘‘rounded” vowels, there being three degrees of rounding,—one for ‘‘ high,” one for ‘‘ mid,” and one for “low” tongue. For convenience here the back, the mixed, and the front are formed into separate groups, and all the vowel signs are numbered, being referred to in the following lists by V and the nuniber, thus V4 is (w), which in Mr Bell’s nomencla- ture would be called ‘‘ high-back wide-round.” The letters », w, nr, wr at the heads of columns mean “ narrow, wide, narrow-round, wide-round.”

Mr. Melville Bell’s ‘‘Visible Speceh”” Vowel Table.

Tongue Tongue Back. | Mixed. | Tongue Front.

Height. w. | nr. | wr. || m | w. | mr} wr. jj nm | w. | nr | wr. Wigh..|1@| 2e| 3u/ 4u/13¥ |14y 115 v [16 uh| 25 | 264 |271 28 y Mid ../5a | 6a| 70) 80/170 |18ah|19oh/20 oh) 29¢ | 30€|31 \32@

Low..|9@ 10a{11a/120 i2 ahj 22.0 |23.ah 24 oh] 33 B34 35 0h 36h)

These positions being insufficient, although supposed to be pre- cisely known, may be ‘‘ modified” by raising the tongue more (a!) or lowcring it more (a,), or bringing it nearer the teeth (,a) or nearer the throat (a,). And, even this not sufficing, Mr Sweet has contrived a uumber of new inodifiers, here passed over. And with all this none of the sounds ean be produced purely through any position without an effort of will dependent on a conception of the sound. The characteristic of the vowel notation contrived by Mr Bell is that each sign shows at once the position of the sound in the Table.

18. Mr. Henry Sweet’s ‘‘ Sound Notation” Consonant Table.

. a. b. C. a4 e. Bi g. h. t. ongue | Tongue | Tongue | Point Blade] ; « Lip | Li Back. | Front. | Point. Teeth. Blade. Point. Lips. Back. Teeth.

Voiceless Consonants. 1. Open..! kh gh rh th s | sh ph wh if 2. Divided! Th yh lh dh ph) | .. ad 3. Shut .. | k kj t . p 4, Nasal..| qh qjh nh nh mh

Voiced Consonants.

5. Open .. gh J Ts dh Zz zh | bh w v 6. Divided} 7 y 1 i el a 7. Shut .. g} d id | b 8. Nasal..} q qj n \n | ™

These signs will be referred to as S8e, or Sweet, line 8, col c, giving (n). The consonants are modified in a similar manner to the vowels. Columns a, b, ¢ indicate straits or contacts between the palate and the parts of the tongue named. By the “‘ blade” is meant the part of the tongue between the ‘‘front” and the ‘‘point.” Mr Sweet’s substitutes for glottids and physems,

and his and Mr Bell’s notation of glides are omitted for brevity. Their notation throughout is entirely different from that here used.

19, A. J. Ellis’s partial schemes, modified from his Speech in Song. ME Sacer. ee

Vowel Trigram. j

my OP 3e | 4e 5H | 62 | Fah oo l16y 17 a 18 ce Ug ae | 20a 2a |—8= 224 lou | 4u |] 130 | 120 Ta) STOR 9a

(oar ee

you, DS 385

The meaning of this arrangement is that, if we pronounce the vowels in the order of the numbers, they will form a sufficiently unbroken series of qualities of tone, or, if each line be so pronounced leading to 8=22a, three series of the same kind are produced, and also that the speaker feels that the vowels in the middle line lie ‘‘between ” the vowels in the first and third lines between which they are written. These intermediate characters refer only to qualities of tone and not to the vowel positions, as they apparently did in the older ‘‘vowel triangles” from which the trigram is adapted. The arrangement of Mr Bell is excellent for showing the relations of the positions, but gives no more clue to the relations of sound than the indispensable ratios 1: 2,2:8,3:4,4:5,5:6give to the musical sensations of the intervals known as the octave, fifth, fourth, major third, and minor third. Hence the advantage of this additional arrangement. It will be referred to as T‘6, that is, trigram, vowel 6, or (e).

Consonant Table.

files 18 RAESES EAR SEE OE) § ‘ Bi a ae A III. | IV. SPER ac ee Ton \ Tongue Point | Lips % | Con- | i : i aa 2 sagmor | | at a) e | g [Stites +] 228 Ise 8./e8l2./6‘8. Id formed alae am ||ES| o ES Sa) FS| 2| Fe |8)// = by [Ei Aes “a g ga om 8 = Be oH! 3 5 PEE 8° (se) 8 sd es) Fa) oi ee SF 2 asa (2 ism Fea | Sla ie ee ee eee eS || ORAL. ConTacts.| ij Mute ..‘x\kw k ki | ke itj i it th P |p, |p ii| Sonant ..|a\gw g gj |gi’ dj jip jdr, ja B |b, jb STRAITS.

Fized. iii] Flated ..!../kwh kh kjh| gh! sj jsh_ jshj s,s th, th |) f |ph|wh iv} Voiced..|,./gwh gh r,|/gjh|} 3 | 2j |‘zhR,‘zh) 2,z dh, dh’|v|bhiw Flaps. | Central. | ; v| Flated .. |. mene | ae || ee | +s rh rh fo Wesliac \ienee vi| Voiced ..|.. serh‘7 |} ..|..!.. jm it an +. |j..fa |brh | Lateral. | | } | vais elatedsc | ct ae as we leee |e. Jhon gilhel Shlain: Willi] VOICE eels) | ce or foo Hable tS lhl NASAL. | | || ix| Flated .. |..| .. lqh ore oem eee, a oh jh}... j!..|.. jimh 5a] Weel on eal! na Kel qj |} nN 2 (in ‘ged bere pen { ‘ i i

This table will be referred to as C iv 7, or consonant table, class iv, column 7 = (zh). The glottids and physems are sufficiently explained in art. 5, and are here omitted.

20. Alphabetical List and Explanation of the Palacotype Symbols.— Small letters, italics, small capitals, and the forms resulting from turning them must be sought under the large capital of the same class, where the order of all the letters is specified. Explanations are greatly condensed and often confined to references to the preced- ing articles and tables, or to an example. The notation for differ- ences of length is explained in art. 6.

Abbreviations. Abbreviations.

AR. Arabic. PL. Polish.

B. Melville Bell. pr. Portuguese.

(OL A. J. Ellis’s consonant | S. Sweet’s consonants table (art. 19). (art. 18).

DN Danish. sn. Sanskrit.

E. A.J. Ellis. sp. Spanish.

EK. English. St. Stori.

F. French. Sv. Sievers.

G. German. Sw. Sweet.

Tee: Italian. swD. Swedish.

LLB. Prince Louis- Lucien | T. A. J. Ellis’s vowel Bonaparte. trigram (art. 19).

ts. Lowland Scotch. Vv Bell’s visible speech

mc. Modern Greek. vowels (art. 17).

oce. oecasionally.

A. (a ah ai at aa a’y, a}, a ah, A, 2). (a) V6, T8=T 22, short c mann, long E father, art. 6. (ah) V 18, T7, occ. E pass, path. (ai) art. 7i, unanalysed diphthong, E eye, e7. (au) art. 7ii, unanalysed diphthong, E how, & bau. (aA) art. 11, F vent, a conventional form. (a’y) art. 7 iii, unanalysed G freude, often (0‘2). (a!) or (a) with higher tongue, 17 and F short a, nearly = (ah). (2) V10,T 9. B. hears it in & father, arms, alms; FE. docs not. Sw. and E. hear it in us father, E. and LLB. in F diable, E. in F péte, pas. (ah) V 23. B. says (A) with advanced tongue = (A), (A) on the road to (a). (A) Vil, T10, short open in E authority, long closed k azul, alinost peculiarly E. XXII. — 49

(ev) V2,T19. B. hears it in dungeon, motion, conscious, aban- don, honowr, bellows. E. hears it in these syllables and in E parental, capable, eapacious, China, and & gabe. Sw. and Sv. hear (9) in all these cases.

Zi. (e, eh).

(e) V34, T6, E gnat, almost peculiarly E. ;

(eh) V 36. B. hears it as a Cockney substitute for ow, ow in out, now, which E., a born Londoner, does not know. Sv. finds it to be ‘“‘open” G 4G, see (y).

B. (b bh brh, b,, bh,, B).

(b) S7g, Cii 18, art. 8, H bee, edd. i.e

(bh) S5g, Civ 12, c w, lips flat, not touching teeth, see (ph).

(brh) C vi 18, used by Germans to stop horses, as wo / is in England.

(b,) Ciil2, sonant of (p,), which see, theoretical.

(bh,) S 6g, sonant of (ph,), which see, theoretical.

(ps) Ciill, sonant of (Pp), which see, theoretical.

C. @9h,37, ¢ Ge cc:

(0) V12, T11, = knot, almost peculiarly £, replaced on the Continent by (0, oh, oh), which see.

(oh) V24. 8B. calls it an advanced (0), that is (0), and hears it as regular short Irish-English 0, Cockney ask, American Chicago. Sw. hears it inswp son. Sv. gives no example. E. does not know it.

(o’t) art. 7i, diphthong E fozl, by some taken as (A’2). ;

(¢) reverted (s), the under part of the point of the tongue against the palate. St.) hears it in East Norwegian bérse and also in SWD.

(gh) reverted (sh), sN. Y, the under part of the point of the tongue against the palate, but lower than for (¢) and pointing further back, see (7).

(c) buzz of (¢), theoretical.

(ch) reverted (zh), buzz of (ch), see (DJ).

D. (d dj dh dj, d, dh, d, D Dj Dh, B 4).

(d) S7c, Cii8, E doe, sonant of (t), which see.

(dj) art. 12, E judging, consonantal diphthong = (djzhj), usually assumed as (dzh), and also as sn §, for which see (gj), and AR », which Lepsius thinks was also once (gy).

(dh) S5d, Civ 10, & then, mc 6, AR 5, buzz of (th), see (dh,).

(dj) Cii6, Hungarian gyongy, pearl, art. 12.

(d) S7d, Cii9, Fdoux, tip of tongue against gums, used in some midland and northern E dialects before 7, -er.

(dh,) Civ 10, sp lid, lisped (z), retracted (dh).

(@) AR, J (daad), described by Lepsius as close emphatic (.,1), see (s, t, 2) and especially (K).

(p) Cii7, reverted or cerebral sN Z, common in south-west Eng- land, in connexion with (Rr), which see, by some taken to be retracted (d,), parent of B (d).

(Dj) a reverted consonantal diphthong = (p+¢h), heard in Wilt- shire (aRDj) ridge.

(ph) reverted (dh), under part of point of tongue against teeth, theoretical.

(0) Irish Gaelic dair, an oak, ‘‘ broad” post-aspirated sonant. The place of tip of tongue unimportant, but generally taken as dental or interdental. Essential points, tongue laterally expanded and slack, back raised, leaving a hollow ‘‘front.” Followed by a slow voice glide, resembling a preponderating E (sh) mixed with (gh). This glide, occur- ring between a sonant and a vowel, is closer at first than for an ordinary buzz and then more open. Constantly used for (dh) by Irish speakers of E. [Lecky, MS. communi- cation.]

(dj) Irish Gaelic deas, palatalized or slender (3); glide from it like preponderating (J) mixed with (z). [Lecky, MS. communication.]

E. (e ea, ¢, E, 9 oh, a, a ch, a,, g, a’0).

(e) Y 30, T 4, & net, spe, medial between F and IT close and open (¢, E), often (£) in dialectal E. B. hears it only long in E there. Sw. gives F pére, which E, hears with (EE). Sv. gives E men, G mdnner, dhre, DN tre. LLB. hears it always and only in unaccented 1T syllables.

(eA) art. 11, orinasal, F vin, conventional symbol.

(e) V 29, T 3, F dé, G ehre. B. says it is found in E always and only in the vanish (ce'j), art. 6; but E. hears the vanish from received speakers only in the pause, otherwise he fre- quently hears (ee) without vanish. Sw., Sv., and St. do not admit (ee) in E without vanish.

(rz) ViS3s1 5: _B, considers it the regular E sound in net, see (e). E hears it long in @ sprdche, F béte, rr open e. Sw. hears it in E air, Ls men, F vin (vEA). Sv. also in DN lara.

(2) V 17, T 20. E. hears it in his E nut, which B. wrote (nat) from

1 Englische Philologie – I. Die lebende Sprache, p. 42.

E.'s dictation ; many think (a,9) are used respectively in 5 accented and unaccentcd syllables where E. hears (9, v), and he is very familiar with (a) in dialects. Sv. gives 'stage G" gabe, DN normal gave, SWD gosse.

V 21. Sw. gives E bird, where E hears (a). B. heard it only in Somerset sir and Cockney penny; the whole effect of the first appears to E. due to Somerset ®, the second he does not know.

intermediate between (a) and (2), written % in Mr Elworthy's West-Somerset graminar, a very common and characteristic sound in the dialect, but difficult and strange beyond it.

V 31, T 17, F feu, pew. B. hearsit in F dd, bdt and in ts. E. hears it long in eG héhle. Sv. says the & sound is (cece), not (29), see (y).

V 35. 3B. hears it long in F peur, G schéne, &c., short in F jewne, co stécke. E. hears (a2) in schéne and (ce) in the rest. See Sv. in (y).

intermediate between (a) and (ce), a common west Somerset sound ; possibly Sv.'s ''open G i." See under (y).

V5,T21. B. hears it in E done, young, wp, twopence, where it sounds dialectal to E., who hears (9), which see.

art. 7 ix, acute inchoant diphthong.

(f, 3).

81 7, C iii 11, E fecl, lower lip against upper teeth.

a turned f,a modifier, laxly used ; see mute and sonant (kj, 23), lateral flap (1j), nasals (nj, dj) and consonant diphthongs (ty dj, TJ Dj).

(g gy gh gj gjh grh gw gwh, c ch).

S7a, C ii 3, art. 8, E gape, egg.

S 7b, Cii 5, sn ‘§, sonant of (kj), which see, and also (dj).

S 5a, Civ 3, mid e tage, buzz of (kh), which see, and also (gjh, gwh).

C ii 4, 1r la ghianda, sonant of (kj), which see, formerly common in E before (a,), as guard, garrison, now generally preserved in girl, even in the vulgar form (gjel).

Civ 4, mid G siege, buzz of (kjh), which see, confused by Germans themselves with (5), palatalized (gh).

Cvi3, AR Sean), or (gh) with the uvula slightly trilled,

frequent Dutch g, Me y before (a, 0, u) in a mild form; Lepsius takes the Ar sound to be (ch), which see.

art. 12, C ii 2, E guano, sonant of (kw), which see ; the posi- tions for (¢) and (w) are assumed at the same time.

Civ 2, c auge, fuge, sonant of (kwh), which see; labialized (gh) after (2).

C ii 1, sonant of (kK), which see, theoretical.

buzz of (G), see above under (grh).

. (hh ph, Bea).

when no letter, and, at most, some sign precedes, used for the unanalysed physem, art. 5; after a letter very laxly used asa modifier of vowels (ah oh), and consonantal hisses or buzzes (th dh sh zh kh gh), &e.

simple flatus, the (h) omitted when another letter preccdes, as in the recoil (hep‘) hap, art. 8.

the crudest voice producible, opposed to (‘h), the (h) omitted in the voiced recoil (ded’) dead, art. 8, and in (‘l, ’m, ’n, ’r) syllabic.

smack or click, art. 2, (1), the (h) is omitted after consonants showing theclicking parts, as (Kt, tjf, tj8t, tt, rt) guttural, palatal, unilateral, dental, and reverted click, see the turned numerals (g # 4 ¢ Z), which are used for brevity.

art. 5, physem (2), the AR » (haa), or ‘‘ wheeze.”

art. 5, physem (1), the ‘‘jerk” or unflated aspirate, used as post-aspirate after Indian sonants, as sN a (bHo).

jerked flatus with gradual glottid, art. 5, physem (1), the usual aspirate of Scotland and Germany, and the Indian post-aspirate after mutes, thus sN Ware (kujh, tnyh,

(puyh), usually written kh, th, ph, but not to be confused with the palaeotype (kh, th, ph).

(i ia iis, ¢ 4i, 2).

V 25, T1, short F fil (very different from & fill), loug B feel.

art. 7 iv, typical initial weak (i) diphthong, often confused with (Ja).

art. 7 vii, typical murmur diphthong with following per- missive trill.

V 26, T2, £ knit, almost peculiarly E and Icelandic, but often heard in Germany ; long & (ii) is often replaced by (zz), especially before and after ® and in singing.

art. 7 ix, typical grave inchoant diphthong.

V.27. B. hears it in G éiber, glick ; Sw. in F lune, where B. hears (y); E. inclines to (1) in Gc, but Sv. thinks differ- ently, see (y).

7

|

SrPEE C H-

J. G iJ, 3 sb). i oe (j) a modifier, symbol of palatalization, art. 12, but this simul- taneous palatal action is constantly confused with success- ive (J, i). jy art. 7 Ze to express tlie vanish of (ce, e) towards (i), ending in an approach to the consonant (J), thus (cc'j, e'j). (J) or (j) without a dot, marks a semipalatalization, the tongue being only approximated to the palatalizing position, ob- served in several Uralie languages by LLB. (3) $50, Civd, E yea. $10, Ciii5, n hew, hue (shin), hiss of (s) very close to flated ("i1), art. 4. K. (k kj kh kj kjh krh kw kwh, K Kh). (k) S8a, Ci, © cape, perfectly mute, art. 8.

(kj) S86, Ci5, sw ~, the "back" and ''front" of the tongue

brought closely into the (k) and (3) positions, forming a complete stop; the ''point" may rest against the lower guins, and had better do so to avoid the jump up to (tj) chest, with which this mute is constantly confused ; but (tz) is more like wy (kynqh) or post-aspirated (ky), which supplies the necessary hiss.

Sla, C iii 3, a dach, sp 7, see (kjh kwh).

(kj) Ci4, rr la chiave, palatalized (k), art. 12. In the 17th and 18th centuries constantly used in E before (a, x), it may be now constantly heard in

London before ow in count, called (kjz’unt), or finer (kjéunt) for (ka’unt).

(kjh) Ciii4, @ teich, palatalized (kh), confused with (sh) by German theorists, but the back of the tongue is higher for (kjh). English people confuse it with concave (sh), which it ought never to approach, though it comes near convex (shj). Either (kjh) or (kgh), the hiss of (kj), which was not dis-

tinguished from (sh), was the original sv yy, now called (sh) and confused with y, properly (gh), see under C. (krh) Cv3, aR ‘é a (kh) with the uvula slightly trilled, as in

Dutch ch ; Lepsius considers both to be (kh). (kw) Ci2, art. 12, © queen (kwiin), not (kwiin). (kwh) C iii 2, Ls guhat (kwhat), G auch, buch, art.12 labialized (kh). (k) Cil, ar G (Kaaf), the tongue greatly retracted and wedged

against the uvula. Lepsius considers the proper sound of AR; to be (a), the sonant of (k). By Syrian Moham-

medans and often by Egyptians the ; is lost or rather

becomes hamza (;), as (;aa‘la) for (Kaa‘la) said. ‘‘Em- phatic” character attaches to aR 5.56 (6 (yo is, here

written (K krh grh ¢ ds z), which Lepsius takes to have the values (¢ KH Gh .d!, .1}, .s!, .dh!) respectively; this ‘‘consists in a modification of the vowel by narrowing [the passage below] the soft palate”; these letters are called “high” by the Arabs because of this very high back of the tongue. They call the emphatic pronunciation ‘‘ thick, rough, fatty.” In fact (a) becomes (a), (0) remains, (e, i) become (8, 2,), (u) is scarcely changed. Europeans recog- nize the consonants mainly by this vowel change.

hiss of (kK), considered by Lepsius to be the proper sound of

what is here written as (krh). eet ly Iph 1h Jj 18 18h, ’1, 1 Jh, Z dh, u xh, | hj, { 1h, 2).

(1) S6c, Cviii8, art.10, © gull, tip of the tongue far behind the gums, replaced on the Continent by (1).

(j) S60. Sw. says ‘‘(1) formed in the place of (s),” and hears

it in 1T giz, sp 11, pR dh, where LLB. and E. hear (1)).

S20. B. says it is ‘‘a variety of defective s,” theoretical.

(Ih) S2c, C vii 8, flated (1), not Welsh 22. B. hears it before (t) in fe/t, as (felht). E. hears no trace of it, any more than he

; hears (‘‘e) in (wet).

(lj) Cviii6, art. 12, 17 gli, sp 7, pr 7h. LLB. and E. hear this asa palatalized © (1), not Continental (1), the palatalization having retracted the (\1).

(IS) C viii 8, voiced form or buzz of unilateral Welsh JZ, see (18h).

Cvii 8, or more conveniently (Ihh), Welsh @dad/; put tongue

in position for (1), raise the left side to touch the palate, let flatus escape by the right side. The tongue is then in the position assumed after making the unilateral click (tjSt), see (th) under H. This unilaterality is insisted on by Salesbury,! and E. was thus taught in Wales. Sw.? also insists on it. Some Welshmen do not.

(1) __& littZe, syllabic (1), the voice of the lateral flap sufficing to form a syllable when final.

(1) S6d,C viii 9, ¥ ait, the tip of the tongue against the gums, as is usual out of England.

(lh) S2d, Cvii9, flated (1), occ. F peuple.

1 Welsh Pronunciation, 1550. 2 “Spoken North Welsh,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1882-84, p. 418.

(2) S6a, pu guttural or ‘‘barred” 7, that is, 7 with a slanting line drawn through it. The back of tongue is raised as high as for (k). St.? finds B/ after a vowel in the same syllable half guttural; this is unknown to Englishmen.

S2a. B. calls it ‘the hiss of a water-fowl,” the hiss of (2), theoretical.

(tL) Cviii7, reverted /, the underpart of the point of the tongue

coming against the hard palate, used in conjunction with (R) in south-west England, as world (warD’L). Those who used retracted ‘(r,) say (war,d,’1,).

(th) Cvii7, flated form of (1), theoretical.

(1) Irish Gaelic ‘‘ broad ” 2, as in alt (the 2 being written singly because of the following ¢; at the end of a word it is always written 71), tongue in the same position as for (3), which see, but with the lateral emission of the Z class. [Lecky, MS. communication. }

(Ij) Irish Gaelic “slender” 2/, as in Irish Gaelic, milZ; this bears the same relation to (1) as (tj) does to (t), see (tj). [Lecky, MS. communication.]

(1) turned 1, the gradual glottid, art. 5. :

(th) an exaggerated form of the gradual glottid, art. 5, and see (ayh) under H.

(1) turned L, DN ret, glottal 7. Donders says ‘‘sing a note as deep as possible, and then try to sing a lower one, the voice will be replaced by a peculiar crackling noise,” which is (1); it is the common form of DN 7.

M. (m mh ’m, 3).

(zh)

(m) S8g, Cx18, art. 11, E mumming.

(mh) S4g, Cix 18, flated form of (m). B. hears it before mutes in place of (m), as camp (kemhp); E. does not, art. 11.

(‘m) syllabic m, B chasm (keez’m).

(w) turned m, Cvil2, & defective 7 in vewy (ven?) very, differ- ing from (brh) by having tight and flat in place of loose and round lips, with minute instead of considerable excur- sions of the te

N. (n nj nh nj, .n nh, ’n, N, 10 nj). (n) S8c, Cx8, EB no, tongue as for (t), mouth open or closed indifferently, as the tongue is an effectual stop, art. 11.

(nj) a nasalized (lj), which those take to be IT gn who assume 1T gi to be (lj), see (nj, qj).

(nh) S4e, Cix8, flated (n), used in Cumberland for initial kn, in know (nhoo). B. hears it before mutes, as in bent (bEnht) ; E. does not, see art. 11.

(nj) nasalized (dj), the tongue lies along the palate.in the same

way as for (dj), but the nasal passages are nowopen, LL). and E. hear it as palatalized E (n), not (\n), IT gn, sP #, PR nh, F gn. St.4 takes the F sound to be (qj). E. has not detected (qj) in native ¥ speakers, after long- continued express observation.

(n) S8d, Cx9, ¥F nain, tongue on gums.

84d, Cix9, flated (n), theoretical.

(n) syllabic (n), E open (oop’n).

(N) Cx7, reverted (n), tongue as for (T), SN Uf, south-west zn

in connexion with (k), as (haRN) ran.

(t) Irish Gaelic ‘‘ broad” nn, as in drant (the n not doubled because of following ¢), tongue as for (t, 3), which see, but with nasal passages open. [Lecky, MS. communica- tion.]

this bears the same relation to (1) that (tj) does to (t), Irish Gaelic ‘‘slender” nn, as in binn. [Lecky, MS. com- munication.]

O. (0 oh oa dy, 0 oh).

(0) V 8, T 12, short 17 open o, nd, long in E ore (001), which is fast degrading in London to (AA’8).

V 20. Sw. and Sy. hear (oh) and neither (0) nor (oh) in ¥ homme, which E. hears as (om), very different from E (om). B. hears (oh) in colloquial eloquence, philosophy, opinion, and American whole, in all of which E. hears (0).

art. 11, F vont, a conventional form, not to be confused with (aA).

art. 7 iii, theoretic form of G eu, see (a’y).

(0) V7, 1-13. B. hears it short in B goer, mower ; E. in poetic, following. B. hears it when long in £ always and only with the vanish (00’w), art. 6, art. 7 viii. EE. hears (00’w) in the pause, but otherwise generally (00), and (dow) is always erroneous.

V 19. B. says this is a mixture of (0) with (1) or is (0) with advanced tongue, that is, (o); he hears it in F homme (ohm), where E. hears (om), see (oh).

CE. (ce ca c’y, @ eu, &, 0 WD).

(ew) V82,T18, F veuf, G bécke. See Sv. under (y).

(ced) art. 11, orinasal F wn, chacwn, conventional symbol.

(o’y) art. 7 iii.

3 Englische Philologie: I. Die lebende Sprache, p. 74. 4 Ibid., p. 47.

(oh)

Ve

SPEHCH-3 OR Ws

Vi. B.hears it in Scotch Gaelic laogh ; it may be produced by saying (uu) and suddenly opening the mouth, see (@’u).

acute inchoant diphthong, art. 7 ix, or (uu), begun with the mouth open and without internal rounding, very common in south Lancashire and Cheshire.

V9. B. makes it the ‘‘narrow” form of (a), and the regular form of Ls wp, come; Sw. occ. Ls form.

V 22. B. hears it as the regular E sound of cr, ir, yr. Sw. hears it in the first element of how (he’w), which E. finds dialectal.

a dialectal south-west English sound of (a) through which a sound of (A, 9) seems to run, and usually appreciated as the latter.

(p ph prh, p,, phy, P).

S3g, Cil3, E peeping, perfectly mute, art. 8.

S 1g, Ciii12, Hungarian f, Mc ¢, an (f) spoken by the lips only without the teeth, mouth in position for blowing to cool, flated forin of (bh), whicli see.

Cv 13, flated form of (brh), common with babies before they can speak.

Cil2, mute of (ph), the lips closed flat to form a complete stop, theoretical.

S2g, middle of lips in contact, flatus expelled from each corner of the mouth, theoretical.

Cill, mute of (f), lower lip forming a complete stop with upper teeth, theoretical.

Q. (q qj qyh gh qj).

S8a, Cx3, E singer, finger, (g) with nasal passages open. S86, Cx5, sn ¥, nasal of the palatal series, see (kj gj).

Bopp considers it to be F gn, and Sw. hears it in F and IT gn, SP fi, PR mh, in all of which LLB. and E. hear (nj) only.

844, flated (qj), theoretical.

S4a, Cix3, flated (q). B. hears it before mutes, as sink (stqhk) ; E. does not, art. 11.

Cx4, palatalized (q), different from (qJ).

(ares Per rh, rh a el)

Cvi8, E ring, tip of tongue far behind gums, flap weak in England, strong in Scotland and Italy.

Cv 8, flated form of ®.

PL przez, tongue in position for (sh) with point flapped.

85 c, Cii 8, imperfect (d), the tongue not quite in contact, almost (zhj) ; imperfect ®, the flap being omitted, con- sidered by B. and Sw. as normal ®, a sign for flapping being added whiere a trill is used. Sv. makes Er before a vowel regularly (.r,). To E.,a born Londoner, (r,) before a vowel is very difficult to utter.

Sic, flated (r,), theoretical.

Cvi9, sp rey, 1T ré, fully trilled r with the point of the tongue advanced to the gums.

Cv9, flated (,r), occ. F nétre.

alveolar unflapped ®, see (r,), possibly the “soft” sp vr in amar, arado, breve.

Cvi3, Parisian Paris, uvular 7, art. 10 (3), resembling (grh).

Cv 8, flated (7), common as a G final 7 in the pause, and then greatly resembling a faint (krh).

C vi 2, labialized uvular ®, regular in Northumberland.

untrilled uvular (7), heard faintly between vowels in North- umberland, in very, merry (valr,z, mair,z), almost (v’at, m/’at), like IT vat, maz. ’

Cvi7, reverted or cerebral 7, the underpart of the point of the tongue brought near the palate, and, according to E.’s observations, allowed to flap, but constantly asserted to be unflapped, see (x,). Common in modern Indian, not in sN, and found in Norway and Sweden.! The charac- teristic of south of England dialectal speech, and parent of received & 7 and the vocal degeneration of 7, art. 7 vii. By some considered as greatly retracted (r,).

Civ7, unflapped variety of ®, supposed to prevail for ®, which see.

art. 7 vii, fully degencrated vocal (Rr), which may be followed permissively by a trilled or flapped ®, forming the mur- mur diphthongs,

(s sh shj sj, \s \sh, s, 8)).

Sle, Ciii 9, & seal, hissing, with a convex tongue forming a central strait, the sides being held firmly by the palate and teeth, poiut tense and unruffled, with many uncon- scious varieties.

$1/, Ciii7, © rush, tongue retracted in respect to (s), upper surface rather hollowed than convex, see (gh, shj) and oce. lips projected, as & hush (hoash®),

Ciii8, (sh) with convex tongue, tip somewhat depressed,

1 Englische Philologie: I. Die lebende Sprache, p. 4.

(sj) (\s)

(sh)

(tj)

(v)

second element in (tj=tjshj), High G s initial before p, f, as spielen, stellen, where (sh) is not admissible.

Ciii6, pu kos’, palatalized (s), art. 12.

Ciui 9, point of tongue advanced nearly to teeth. LLB. hears it in Tuscan sharp IT lo zio, usually taken as (,t,sio).

advanced (shj), tongue convex aud nearer the palate. LLB. hears it in Tuscan pece (pé‘she), and considers it the only proper sound of 17 ¢ before ¢ and 7, which is usually assumed to be (t\sh) or (,ty) ; but an Englishman’s (tJ) is quite in- telligible.

AR. (yo (saad), according to Lepsius a close emphatic s or(.s’),

see (K) and (d, #, z). Irish Gaelic ciste (kjisjtje,) treasure, s of the same series as (tj), which see. [Lecky, MS. communication.]

» {tty thidy & thy tpt wayek If):

S 3c, Ci 8, £ éoo, tip of the tongue far behind the gums, generated by reverted (T), with which it is confused by

Indians, who use their cerebral g & for E(t, d).

E chest =(tjshj), art. 12, uot to be confounded with (kj), which see,

Sid, Ciiil0, & thin, Icelandic p, Ma 0, aR &, point of tongue against back of front teeth, hiss produced by flatus escaping between tongue and teeth, not necessarily be- tween the interstices of the teeth, as Sw. says.

Ci6, Hungarian ty, palatalized (t), art. 12, sce (dj).

S3d, Ci9, F éas, usual Continental alveolar ¢, with the

tongue against gums, SN q, found in some midland and

northern E dialects before 7 or -e7, see (,d).

Ciiil0, sp z everywhere, and c before e,7, voz zopo, cecéo cinto, lisped (s), tongue against gums, and hence a retracted (th), see (dh,). LLB. hears it in 1r vizio, where it is gener- ally assumed to be (,t,s).

AR lb (faad), which Lepsius describes as a close emphatic (..d4), see (K).

Ci7, reverted or cerebral sn %, with underpart of the point

of the tongue against the palate, common in south-west E in connexion with ®, parent of received & (t).

consonantal diphthong=(r¢h), heard in Wiltshire in con- nexion with (Rk), as (€RTJ) rich.

Irish Gaelic “ broad” post-aspirated mute, as in Irish Gaelic alt, ta, ti. The place of the tip of the tongue is apparently unimportant, but it is generally assumed to be dental or interdental. The cssential points are that the tongue is laterally expanded and slack, while the back is raised, leaving a hollow in the “front.” It is followed by a slow flated glide, while the position changes to that of the vowel, resembling a greatly predominating (th) mixed with (kh). The voice is not put on till the vowel position is reached. This is constantly uscd for (th) by Ivish speakers of English. [Lecky, MS. communication.]

Irish Gaelic ‘‘slender” form of post-aspirated mute, as in ailé, of a knuckle ; the tongue is spreading and slack ; the part nearest to the palate is about an inch on the inner side of the tip, being more towards the back than in the position for (s), the ‘‘ front” being also raised ; the tip is not turned up and its position is unimportant. The glide of the post-aspiration sounds like a predominating (sh) mixed with (s), being tigliter at first and looser afterwards than the E(sh). [Lecky, MS. communication.]

. (u ta, w vh du, u,, U).

V3, T15, short & to unemphatic, ¥ pouwle, replaced by (w) inE; long Etoo. Some phonetists make the E long (uu) to be always (au) or (ww).

art.7 vi, where (ii) replaces (w), F ove (tia), oui (iti), in soz, dozgt, &c. LLB. cousiders that (s, \d), &c., are labialized, art. 12.

V 4, T14, © full, wood, woman, could, ‘‘ wide” form of (u).

V 16. B. hears it in the ‘‘colloquial” use of E awful, fissure, nature, fortwne (which E. does not understand), but says also that it is (w) with a raised tongue, and hence=(w’) Sw. hears it in sw upp, Sv. and St. in Norwegian hwska.

art. 7 ix, grave inchoant diphthong, possibly Sw.’s (ww), com- mon dialectally in Cumberland and Westmorland.

midland & vowel replacing (9, a). E. feels it to be near (01), or to be a ‘‘thickened” (w); Mr Hallam, to whom it is native, considers it to have the tongue intermediate to its position for (0, u), and the closure of the jips equal to that for (0), but made with flattened lips. In Yorkshire, Cumberland, and Westmorland it is replaced by (w), with which most received speakers confound it.

V15. Sw. hears it long in Norwegian and swp hws, wt, and says it is not far from ¥F lwne, but sce (y). St.? considers it intermediate between (u, y).

8 Tbid., p. 328.

he –

Sr EC aa

i GesA): (vy) $57,Civ11, E veal, voiced (f), easy for E, F, IT, hopeless to «, sp, AR, MG, and Hungarian. Indians use (v) with lower lip against upper teeth, but the dentality is not prominent ;

they read sN q in this fashion when not following a con- sonant; when it does, it reverts to (i) rather than to (w),

as (anustiaara), not (anuswaara). In Bengali both qq are called (b), which may be compared with sp (bh) for (b, v). (s) a turned v, regarded as an imperfect N, without the last upstroke, y, after a vowel represents F nasality,

art. 11, and used also for that of PR and modern Indian, in which the nasality seems much harsher, written like Greek 7.

W. (w wh, w wij, ’w).

(w) S5h, Civ 18, E we (wii), with which compare F vie (vii), oui (ati) and @ wie (bhii); possibly AR 9.

(wh) S14, Ciii18, E whey, which, wheel, whale, as distinct from way, witch, weal, wail; the distinction, however, is nearly obliterated by received speakers, who use (w) for both (w, wh), which is like saying veal, vale, vile for feel, fail, file ; yet they laugh at the Somersetshire pcasant for using initial (v) for (f). Some consider (wh) to be (hw), meaning (whw), and others to be (hi).

(w) a modifier to show labialization, art. 12, see (kw).

(wj) art. 12, symbol of LLB.’s presumed palato-labialization, by attempting to pronouazce (y) at the same time as a preceding consonant, as F dui, nwit, which on this hypothesis are (leeji, nji), and not (Lyi, nyt).

(w) an indefinite vowel sound approaching to (u), towards which E (00) vanishes, art. 6.

(y yl, yy y ¥): os ;

(y) V28,T16. B.and E. hear thisin F wne. Sw. thinks the F sound to be (1). Sv., speaking of the two series of vowels (1 2 ah) and (y ce eh), says what is equivalent to close c a in tiber = (2), the lips being often pressed against the teeth ; open a in hatte =(9,), somewhat more open than (a) ; close G6in schén = (ce); open 6 in bécke=(eh). Sv. also makes F u in lwne and DN y in lys = (1); F ew in pew = (2) ; sw 6 in fér = (ah), which last he believes to be the vowel nasalizedin Fw. Sw. also makes DN y in lyst = (y) and F ew in peuple = (ce)

(yi) art. 7 v, F hwile, see also (2j).

(y;) intermediate between (y, a), frequent in west Somerset and Devon, where it replaces the received long (uu) and the received diphthong (iu).

(y) V414. B. considers that & (i, 7, e e) when unaccented tend to (y), as in return, limit, Sazut Paul's, captain, there is, and regularly unaccented the. Sw. hears it as occ. E in pretty. E. has not observed this change.

(y) V413. B. hears it long in American sir. Sw.!says ‘‘the only Russian vowel which offers any special difficulty is the bl, first correctly identified by B. as (y).” Lepsius? de- scribes it as having (u)-tongne and (i)-lips, which would give (@), and not (y). Sw.* also identifies both North Welsh « and occ. y, as in swt, ty, with (y), replaced by (7) in South Wales. The pt and Bohemian y have the same sound.

Z. (z zh zhj zj, z zh, 2).

(2) S5e, Civ9, u zeal, buzz, not in sp or Indian.

(zh) S5/f, Civ 7, Edivision, F 7, St.4 says the E and F sounds are different, the F being more dental.

(zhj) Civ 8, voiced (shj), found in © (dj = djzhj).

(2j) ‘ Civ6, PL lez’, voiced (sj), palatalized (z), art. 12.

(2) Civ9, rr lo zelo, according to LLB. Usually conceived as (dz), voiced (\s), which see.

(zh) voiced (sh), which see, heard by LLB. in rr regio, usually accepted as (zh), for which the Englishman's (dj) is sufficiently intelligible.

(2) ar & (zaa). Lepsius considers this to bea close and emphatic (dh)—that is, (.dh?), see (k)—but that in some places it is incorrectly pronounced as an emphatie (.z) and in others as an emphatic (. d).

Noumerats. (Z ¢ eh7¢49,!, 45). (2) Kaffre reverted click = (r+), see (th) under H, Appleyard's q. (8) AR ¢ (gain), see art. 5 (4).

(gh) ‘‘trilled wheeze,” differing from (hk) solcly by a rattle of mucus.

(6) Hottentot bilateral palatal click, Boyce’s ge = (tjt), see (th).

(2) Kaffre dental click, Appleyard’s c = (tt), see (th).

A ., Russian Pronunciation,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1877-79, p. 544. .. _Die Arabischen Sprachlaute und Sclavisches y,” in Trans. Berlin Acad. Bet., 1861, p. 150.

3 “Spoken North Welsh,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1882-84. 4 Ibid., p. 48.

os OWN D’S 389

(2) Kaffre unilateral palatal click, Appleyard’s x = (tj8t), E click to start a horse, see ({h) and (Ish).

(g) Waco (North-American Indian) guttural click = (Kt), see (th).

@) modifier, meaning properly “with raised tongue,” used laxly, see (K).

(x) modifier, meaning properly ‘‘ with lowered tongue,” used very laxly, as in (4, 1, %1, Py, by, pl,, bh,), which see.

() modifier, meaning ‘‘internally rounded” by compressing arches of palate, art. 4, as in a parrot’s puss (p*z4s).

) modifier, meaning ‘‘ with projecting lips,” compare (pus, pws, puts), and Devon (o’y,°), art. 7 iii.

omer. (, 55 237 oy.

) clear glottid, art. 5 (1).

) check glottid, ar hamza, art. 5 (8).

) suddenly stop, orabsencc of recoil inthe pause, as (:serae’wak‘), not (:seraa’wak‘),

) (1) after a vowel shows that the syllable has a secondary stress, as (nd:minee‘shen) nomination; (2) before a whole word indicates the

secondary emphasis usually shown by a capital, as (paal, :paal) pall, Paul.

(G)) before a letter shows that it is especially strongly uttered,

emphasis on a single element, as(. het, h.et, he.t) hat, hat, hat, as distinct from ‘‘at, hot, had,” see (x).

(‘) (1) after a vowel shows that the syllable containing it has the principal stress ; (2) prefixed to a word shows it to be emphatic, a substitute for italics, as (wil) kom? wil ‘hii kem?) will he come? will he come? art. 14.

(’) (1) before (h), see (’h) under H, crude voice; (2) before voiced letters, rendering the voice syllabically prominent, see (’] ’m ’n), &c.; (3) more laxly used in (j, ’w) for indefinite vowels near (i, u); (4) after sonants, voiced recoil, as (ded’) dead, art. 8.

@} (1) abbreviation for (‘h) flatus, which see under H ; (2) before voiced letters indicates whisper, art. 4; (8) after mutes, flated recoil, as (det‘) debt, not written unless it is neccs- sary to call attention to it.

(‘*) before voiced letters, reduces them to flated, as (‘‘ii), art. 4.

(.) after a vowel or consonant nasalized by partial opening of nasal passages, in Gaelic, south G, oce. American.

ACCENTS. (‘ a ou ‘ iwayy mr

(’) (1) mark of diphthongization, placed over or after stressed element, art. 7; (2) after (a) and not over it, as (a’i), dis- tinct from (4i), mark of unanalysed diphthong, art. 7.

(“) in place of (‘), mark of slurred diphthongs, art. 7.

@) (1) after a letter shows retraction, as (d, dh,), &c.; (2) (,) more retraction.

6) (1) over or after a vowel denotes medial length, often united with diphthongal (’) forming a circumflex, as (a7, 0%); (2) after a consonant shows that it is held, the position being maintained throughout even when

mute, as (det); used for the north of England definite article (t'man) the man, distinctly different from (tman, teman, etman). (,) pre- fixed to a letter means ''with tongue advanced towards the teeth," see (t d n); (8, 4) (,, \,,) more advanced, as (t) tongue point some way behind gums, (t) tongue point on gums, (,,t) tongue point on tecth, (,t) tongue point on

upper lip. . Stews. (fii +))1)

@: abridgment of (fh), which see under H.

(3) mark of trill or flap, used in transliterating B. and Sw., thus their equivalent of (1,3) = (r).

(i) symbol of inspiration, art. 2 (2).

(+) symbol of glide or speech-sound with changing position, when simple juxtaposition is insufficient, arts. 2, 8.

()) the second half of a parenthesis ()) eut at the height of a non-ascending letter, symbol of "break," showing that there is no glide between the letters juxtaposed. Thus (s+ii) is usually written (sii), but (sil) are the two letters and their sounds (s,ii) without any glide, of great use in theo- retical discussions.

()) the second half of a parenthesis placed between two letters shows that, though they belong to different words, they run on with a glide as if they belonged to the same word, very convenient in dialect writing, as (ool')d)a*mvn) old woman, usually written ole dumman by dialect writcrs ; here (') shows that (1) is held, but ()) marks that it does not run on to the (d), which, however, is shown by ()) to belong to the same word with (1), but to run on to (a) in the next word.

(.) is [cut at the height of a non-ascending letter and shows that the letter it precedes is scarcely perceptible in speech, as (:madhyijdh,) Madrid.

There are many more palaeotype letters and signs, here omitted

for brevity, but found necessary for phonetical discussions.

21. Practical Alphabets.—The above alphabetical list comprises

243 symbols, made up of 192 elements, 14 vowel diphthongs, 4 consonant diphthongs, 19 modifiers, and 11 other signs. It has been reduced to the smallest possible number suitable for giving a notion of the kind of symbolization required for universal alpha- bets. The list from which it was extracted contained double the number and was still incomplete, even so far as the writer's in- vestigations had extended. A universal alphabet would probably require a thousand cases to be provided for. It would be difficult for even the inventors to use such an alphabet, and absurd to present it for practical use. Inventors have therefore had recourse to radical signs symbolizing what they consider the principal relations and modifiers of these radicals. Some, as Briicke, Merkel, Bell, and Sweet, use entirely new characters, of which Bell's and Sweet's are intended by their shape to recall the positions of the organs of speech in uttering the sounds represented. But these writers are not agreed either as to the shape or valuc of the radicals themselves. The modifiers are very various, and when more than one modifier is required the characters become too complicated for the eye and hand to deal with them rapidly. Universal writing is still a philosopher's stone, though much has been learned in its pursuit. Palacotype is of course a mere typographical makeshift.

Fortunately writing long preceded phonetic knowledge. The number of distinct sounds in any one language seldom exceeds fifty, and practically fewer still are needed, for a native needs only a broad hint of the sound to reproduce it. The signs for English in art. 1 are rather superabundant than deficient, and the small ad- ditions of foreign signs suffice for French, German, and Italian practically, though very deficient scientifically. In fact, the modes of combining sounds in those three languages and English are so different that the alphabet has to be differently conceived for each. This is the final breakdown of universal writing. An English, German, French, and Italian reader, cach requires an alphabet founded on his own linguistic habits, and very insufficiently com- prehends any other. But even a rough appreciation for linguistic purposes is better than the thoroughly false appreciations now ewrent. To obtain a scientific foundation for erecting an

alphabet of any language which shall have scientific valuc, five stages are needed :—(1) the perfect acquisition of a series of words containing every sound used; (2) variation of each word by involving its sounds in different combinations to appreciate the effects of gliding juxtaposition ; (3) the perfect acquisition of short sentences of different characters to understand the effects of construction and emotion; (4) the study of unrestrained conversation between natives from the phonetic point of view ; (5) frequent writing from the dictation of natives and teaching others to read by the signs adopted after the first four stages are passed. How far the charac- ters should indicate the positions of the organs of speech is another point, which need not be considered at first, and can only be ac- complished with extreme roughness even at last. Thus Bell's capi- tally conceived and executed ‘‘ visible speech” requires much ex- planation to be intelligible and after all tells but little. Any signs easy to write and distinct to read without wearying the eye will suffice, provided each be furnished with a full cxplanation (much longer and more explicit than the greatly condensed explanations of art. 20) not only of its separate but its combined power, and the requisite knowledge for furnishing these cannot be obtained without much and long-continued labour. Mr Sweet's studies of Danish, Swedish, Russian, Portuguese, and North Welsh pronuncia- tion are models in their way, especially the last, but suffer from extreme conciselless. ;

The use of such phonetic studies is principally philological, a much smaller amount of precision sufficing for all the purposes of ordinary life,—understanding speech and speaking intelligibly, writing speech from dictation and reading what is written. Our scientific knowledge of speech-sounds has really only just com- menced, and is therefore extremely incomplete and confined to very few people. But what has as yet been learned is of great practical value in the reduction of unwritten dialects and languages to writ- ing, in exhibiting the actual speaking habits of existent written tongues, in divining the intention of systems of writing employed in extinct languages, and hence in historically tracing the cogna- tion and filiation of one language to another and the successive forms assumed in the gradual development of a single form of speech. These great applications of the study of speech-sounds, as well as the practical introduction of systems of spelling easier to read and write than those now found in most of Europe (including European America) and Asia, lic beyond the scope of this article,

which only aims at showing in extremely condensed terms the foundations of the theory of their combinations and some of their most important and best known forms.

Bibliography.—Subjoined is a list of the principal works on the subject since 1844 inclusive, in alphabetical order of the writers. 5. Behnke, Alechanism of the Human Voice, 3d ed., 1882; Behnke and Brown, Voice, Song, and Speech (see Brown) ; A. Graham Bell, ‘‘ Vowel Theories,” in Amer. Jour. of Otology, July 1879; A. Melville Bell, Visible Speech, 4to, 1867 ; Id., Sounds and their Relations, fls. 4to, 1881; Prince L. L. Bonaparte, ‘‘ Vowels and Consonants,” in Ellis’s Farly English Pronunciation ; Id., ‘‘ Portuguese Simple Sounds,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1880-81; Id., ‘‘Simple Sounds of all living Sclavonic Languages,” ibid.;

Lennox Brown and Emil Behnke, Voice, Song, and Speech, 1883 (with photo- graphs of living vocal chords); Ernst Briicke, Grundztige der Physiologie und Systematik der Sprachlaute, lst ed. 1856, 2d ed. 1876; Id., Newe Methode der phonetischen Transcription, 1863; Johann Czermak, “‘ Physiologische Unter. snchungen mit Garcia’s Kehlkopfspiegel,” in Vienna Acad. Math.-Phys., vol. xxix., 1858; Id., ‘‘Spiritus Asper und Lenis, Fliisterstimme, Kehfkopfiante,” ibid., vol. lii., part v.; F. C. Donders, De Physiologie der Spraakklanken, 1870; Alexander J. Ellis, Alphabet of Nature, 1844-45; Id., Essentials of Phonetics, 1848 (printed in phonotypy); Id., Teacher’s Guide to the Reading Reform (intro- ducing ‘‘glides”), 1853; Id., ‘‘ Palaeotype,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1867; Id., Early English Pronunciation, parts i. and ii, 1869, part iii. 1871, part iv. 1874 in progress ; Id., *‘ Accent and Emphasis,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1873 ; Id., Pronun- ciation for Singers, 1877 ; Id., Speech in Song, 1877; W. R. Evans, ‘‘ Phonetic Outlines,” in Spelling Experimenter, 1884, vol. ii.; Ewing (see Jenkin); §. 8S. Haldeman, Analytic Orthography, Trevelyan prize essay, 1860; H. Hale, “Doubtful or Intermediate Articulations,” in Jour. Anthropol. Inst., February 1885; H. Helmholtz, Tonempfindungen, 1st ed. 1862, 4th ed. 1877, 2d ed. of A. J. Ellis’s translation, ‘‘ Vowel Theory,” 1885 ; Fleeming Jenkin and J. A. Ewing, ‘‘ Harmouic Analysis of certain Vowel Sounds,” in Trans. R. Soc. Edin., 1879, vol. xxviii.; Ch. Joret, Du C

dans les langues Romanes, 1874; J. P.N. Land, Uitspraak en Spelling, 1870; R. G. Latham, English Language, 4th ed. 1855, vol. ii. part iii., ‘‘ Phonesis’”; James Lecky, ‘Irish Gaelic Sounds,” in Proc. Philol. Soc., June 1884 and May 1885; R. Lepsius, ‘‘Chinesische und Tibetische Lautverhaltnisse,” in Trans. Berlin Acad. Sci., 1860; Id., ‘‘ Die Arabischen Sprachlaute und Sclavisches y,” ibid., 1861; Id., Standard Alphabet, 1863; J. A. Lundell, ‘‘ Det Svenska Landsmalsalfabet,” 1879, part of Nyare Bidrag till Kénnedom om de Svenska Landsmdlen, 1878, Stockholm; C. L. Merkel, Anthropophonik, 1857; Id., Functionen des menschlichen Schlund- und Kehl-Kopfes, 1862; Id., Physiologie der menschlichen Sprache (Laletik), 1866; G. Michaelis, S-Laute, 1863; F. Max Miiller, Languages of Seat of War in East, ani Missionary Alphabet, 1855; James A. H. Murray, Dialect of Southern Counties of Scotland, 1873; H. Nicol, ‘‘Diphthong au,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1877-79; Id., ‘Old French Labial Vowels,” ibid., 1873-74; W. H. Preece and Augustus Stroh (studies on acoustics), ‘‘On the Synthetic Examination of Vowel Sounds,” in Proc. R. Soc., 27th February 1879, vol. xxviii.; H. B. Rumpelt, Das natirliche System der Sprachlaute, 1869 ; Madame E. Seiler, Altes und Neues tiber die Ausbildung des Gesangorganes, 1861, translated in 1871 in America as The Voice in Singing ; Id., The Voice in Speaking, translated by Dr W. H. Furness, 1875; Edward Sievers, Grundztige der Lautphysiologie, 1876; Id., Grundztige der Phonetik, as 2d ed. of preceding, pp. xv. and 224, 3d ed. 1885 (in his bibliography the author refers to 157 works of eighty-eight authors); Johann Storm,

nglische Philologie: I. Die lebende Sprache; Stroh (see Preece); Carl J. Sundevall, ‘‘Om Phonetika Bokstafver,” in Trans. Swedish Acad. Sci., 1856, vol. i.; Henry Sweet, ‘‘ Danish Pronunciation,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1873-74 ; Id., “History of English Sounds,” ibid.; Id., Handbook of Phonetics, 1877; Id., ‘Sounds and Forms of Spoken Swedish,” in Trans. Philol. Soc., 1877-79; Id., “Russian Pronunciation,” ibid.; Id., ‘Sound Notation,” ibid., 1880-81 (with corrections of the Handbook); Id., ‘‘Spoken Portuguese,” ibid., 1882-84; Id., “Spoken North Welsh,” ibid.; F. Techmer, ‘‘ Naturwissenschaftliche Analyse und Synthese der hérbaren Sprache,” in Internat. Zetisch. f. allg. Sprachwissen- schaft, vol. i.; W. D. Whitney, ‘‘On Lepsius’s Standard Alphabet,” in Jour. Am. Orient. Soc., vol. viii.; Id., ‘‘On Bell’s Visible Speech,” in Orient. and Linguis. Studies, 1876; Id., ‘‘ How

shall we Spell?” ibid.; Id., ‘‘ English Pro- nunciation,” ibid.; Id., ‘‘ Relation of Voweland Consonant,” ibid.; Id., “‘ Accent in Sanscrit,” ibid.; J. Winteler, Die Kerenzer Mundart; O. Wolf, view

Ohr. .J.#. SPEKE, Joun Cannine (1827-1864), an eminem African explorer, who was the first European to cross Central Africa from north to south and to determine the existence and position of the great water basin from which the Nile proper issues full formed. He was born on 4th May 1827 at Jordans near Ilchester, in Somersetshire. Entering the Indian army in 1844, he served in Sir Colin Campbell’s division in the Punjab campaigns, and gradu- ally acquired no small repute both as a military officer and as a sportsman and naturalist. When on furlough Captain Speke often advanced into unexplored portions of the Himalayas, and even crossed the frontier into Tibet; but his attention was at an early date turned to the great problems not of Asiatic but of African geography, and in 1854 he commenced his brief and brilliant African career by an expedition along with Captain Burton into Somali land, the incidents of which are narrated in What led to the Discovery of the Source of the Nile (London, 1864). It was along with the same explorer that the expedition of 1857-59 was undertaken, in the course of which Captain Speke, leaving Captain Burton, unfortunately invalided, at Kazé, struck northwards and reached the shores of Lake Victoria Nyassa in the neighbourhood of a nullah, which he named Jordans after his birthplace. Convinced though he was that this lake belonged to the Nile system, he had no absolute proof to offer to the scepticism of his fellow-traveller and many stay-at-home geographers, until in 1863 he returned from another expedition along with Captain James Augustus Grant, in which he struck the Nile at its exit from the lake, and proved its identity with the river of Egypt by following it most of the way down. Captain Speke was expected to hold a public discussion with Captain Burton as to certain disputed points in the history of his discoveries at the British Association in Bath (1864); but on the very morning (15th September)

ee

fixed for the tournament he was killed by the accidental discharge of his own gun as he was crossing a fence while out shooting.

See Speke, Journal of the Discovery of the Source of the Nile, 2 vols., 1863; J. A. Grant, 4 Walk across Africa, 1864.

SPENCER, Joun CHARLES SPENCER, THIRD Hart (1782- 1845), better known by his courtesy title of Lord Althorp, had the good fortune to be acquainted, through his father's official position in the ministries of Pitt and Grenville, with both Pitt and Fox, and to be the confidential ally, through his own sound judgment and political honesty, of the leaders of the Whig party immediately before and after the Reform Bill of 1832. His father, the second earl, was well versed in books. His mother, the eldest daughter of Lord Lucan, was conspicuous in London society for her gaiety and brightness. Their eldest son, John Charles, was born at Spencer House, London, on 30th May 1782, and sent to Harrow for his education when less than eight years old. At school he was chiefly remarkable for his love of sports and for a shyness which accompanied him throughout life, but fortunately did not prevent him whilst at Harrow from forming two or three acquaintances which proved useful in parliamentary life. In January 1800 he took up his residence at Trinity College, Cambridge, and for some time applied himself energetically to mathematical studies; but during the last year of his life at college he surrendered himself a captive to the pleasures of hunting and racing. Almost immedi- ately after taking the degree of M.A., in June 1802, he set out on a Continental tour, which was cut short, after he had passed some months in the chief cities of Italy, by the renewal of war. Through the influence of Pitt's Government he was returned to parliament for the borough of Okehampton in Devonshire in April 1804, and, although he vacated his seat in February 1806 to contest the uni- versity of Cambridge against Lord Henry Petty and Lord Palmerston (when he was hopelessly beaten), he was re- clected in the same nonth for Okehampton, and rewarded with the emoluments of a lord of the treasury. At the general election in November 1806 the freeholders of Northamptonshire selected him as their representative, and he continued to sit for the county until he succeeded to the peerage. His tastes were then, as ever, for country life, but his indignation at the duke of York's conduct at the Horse Guards led him to move a resolution of the House of Commons

in 1809 for the duke's removal from his post. For the next few years after this speech Lord Althorp occasionally spoke in debate and always on the side of Liberalism, but from 1813 to 1818 he rarely entered the doors of the House of Commons. His absence was partly due to a feeling that it was hopeless to struggle against the will of the Tory ministry, but more particularly to his marriage on 14th April 1814 to Esther, only daughter of Richard Acklom of Wiseton Hall, Notting- hamshire. In 1819, on his return to political life after the death of his wife, and for many years after that date, he pressed upon the attention of the House the necessity of establishing a more efficient bankruptcy court, and of expediting the recovery of small debts; and, although his name is not associated with the attainment of either of these objects, he saw both accomplished before 1825. During the greater part of the reign of George IV. the Whigs lost their legitimate influence in the state from their want of cohesion, but this defect was soon remedied when Lord Althorp was chosen their leader in the Lower House, and his capacity for the position was proved by experience. When Lord Grey's administration was formed at the close of 1830 the chancellorship of the exchequer combined with the leadership of the House of Commons Was naturally entrusted to Lord Althorp, and to him more

aol than to any other man, with the exception of the prime minister and the lord chancellor, may be attributed the success of the Government measures. The budget, it is true, was a failure, but this misfortune was soon forgotten in the struggles over the Reform Bill. The consideration of the preliminaries of this measure was assigned to four ministers, two in the cabinet and two outside that body ; but their proposals were, after careful examination, approved or rejected by Lord Grey and Lord Althorp before they were brought under the notice of the cabinet. When the Bill was ready for introduction to the House of Commons its principles were expounded by Lord John Russell ; but from the commencement of the protracted discussion over its details he had the assistance of Lord Althorp, and after some weeks of incessant toil, which the physique of Lord John Russell could not sustain any longer, the whole responsibility was cast on Lord Althorp. To combat the objections of three such pertinacious oppo- nents as Croker, Sugden, and Wetherell required both skill and courage, and in Lord Althorp these qualities were found. He was constantly on his legs, and on one evening he made as many as twenty speeches. The Reform Bill was

carried at last, and popular instinct was right in assigning to the leader of the House a credit only second to that earned by Lord John Russell. After the dissolution the Whigs returned to power with augmented numbers ; but differences soon showed themselves ainong both leaders and followers, and their majority crumbled away. Their position was strengthened for a time by triumphantly carrying a new poor law Bill ; and even their keenest critics would now allow that, had the Whig propositions on tithes and church-rates been carried into effect, many years of passionate controversy would have been spared. The ministry of Lord Grey was shattered to pieces by difficulties over an Irish coercion Bill,.in which O'Connell thought that he had been unfairly treated. Although Lord Melbourne became premier (14th July 1834), the fortunes of the ministry rested on Lord Althorp's presence in the House of Commons. 'The death of Lord Spencer on 10th November 1834 called his son to the Upper Hause, and William IV. took advantage of this event to summon a Tory cabinet to his side. The new Lord Spencer abandoned the cares of office and returned to country life with un- alloyed delight. Often as he was urged by his political friends to come to their assistance, he rarely quitted the peaceful pleasures which he loved. He died at Wiseton on Ist October 1845. The Whigs required, to carry the Reform Bill, a leader of unstained character, one to whom party spirit could not attach the suspicion of greed of office, and against Lord Althorp malevolence was powerless. No stronger proof of his pre-eminence could be given than the oft-quoted saying of Lord Hardinge that one of Croker's ablest speeches was demolished by the simple statement of Lord Althorp that he had collected some figures which entirely refuted it, but had lost them. The trust which the House put in him then was never wanting.

SPENER, Puttrpp Jaxon (1635-1705), "the father of Pietism," was born 13th January 1635, at Rappoltsweiler in Upper Alsace. He received his earliest education from his subsequent brother-in-law, Joachim Stoll, chaplain to the count of Rappoltstein, whose wife was Spener's god-mother. Aftera brief stay in the grammar-school of Colmar he entered the university of Strasburg in 1651 as a student of theology,—living there with an uncle, and holding quite aloof from the student-life of the place. He devoted him- self to philology, history, and philosophy, and won his degree of master (1653) by a disputation against the phi- losophy of Hobbes. He then became private tutor to the princes Christian and Charles of the

Palatinate, and lectured in the university on philology and history. From 1659 to

oon

1662 he visited the universities of Basel, Tiibingen, and Geneva, and commenced the study of heraldry, which he pursued throughout his life. In Geneva especially his religious views and tendencies were turned in the direction of his subsequent Pietism. He returned to Strasburg in 1663, where he was appointed preacher without pastoral duties, with the right of holding lectures in the university. Three years afterwards he was invited to become the chief pastor in the Lutheran church at Frankfort-on-the-Main. He had previously married a lady of his mother's choice, who made him-an excellent wife and bore him eleven children. Immediately after his removal to Frankfort he commenced that line of pastoral work which issued in the movement called Pretism (g.v.). In 1686 he accepted the invitation to the first court chaplaincy at Dresden. But the elector John George III., at whose personal desire the post had been offered to him, was soon offended at the fearless conscientiousness with which his chaplain sought to dis- charge his pastoral duties ; and the opposition of the Saxon university of Leipsic to the Pietistic movement and to Spener personally served to render the chaplain more de- cidedly a persona ingrata to tlre elector. Spener refused to resign his post, and the Saxon Government hesitated to dismiss him. But in 1691 the Saxon representative at Berlin induced the court of Brandenburg to offer him the rectorship of St Nicolas in Berlin with the title of "con- sistorialrath." In Berlin Spener was held in high honour, though the tendencies of the court and the Government officials were rather rationalistic than pietistic. One of the most important works of this period of his life was the foundation of the university of Halle (1691), which he directed. All his life long Spener had been exposed to the incessant attacks and abuse of the orthodox Lutheran theologians, who generally charged him with the errors in doctrine and extravagances in practice of followers who had borrowed from him everything rather than his wisdom and caution. With his years his opponents multiplied, and the movement which he had inaugurated presented increasingly matter for hostile criticism. In 1695 the theological faculty of Wittenberg formally laid to his charge 264 errors, and only his death (5th February 1705) released him from these fierce conflicts.

Though Spener has been justly called “ the father of Pietism,” hardly any of the errors and none of the extravagances of the movement can be ascribed to him personally. So far was he from sharing them that Ritschl maintains (ii. p. 163) that “ he was him- self not a Pietist,” as he did not advocate the quietistic, legalistic, and semi-separatist practices of Pietism, though they were more or less involved in the positions he assumed or the practices which he encouraged or connived at. The only two points on which he departed from the orthodox Lutheran faith of his day were the requirement of regeneration as the sine gua non of the true theo- logian, and the expectation of the conversion of the Jews and the fall of Papacy as the prelude of the triumph of the church. He did not, like the later Pietists, insist on the necessity of a conscious crisis of conversion, nor did he encourage a complete breach be- tween the Christian and the secular life.

Spener was a voluminous writer. The list of his published works comprises 7 vols. folio, 63 quarto, 7 octavo, 46 duodecimo ; and in one year he had answered 622 and had still to answer 300 letters. The most important of his works for their bearing on his history are Theologisehe Bedenken, in 4 parts, Halle, 1700-1702 ; Letztc theologische Bedenken, with a life of Spener by Canstein, Halle, 1711; Coneilia et judicia theologica Latina (posthumous), Frank- fort, 1709.

See Hossbach, Philipp Jakob Spener und seine Zeit (Berlin, 1828, 2d ed. 1853, 81 ed. 1861); Tholuck, in Herzog-Plitt’s Real-Encyklopddie (2d ed., vol. xiv.); Gass, Protestantische Dogmatik (Berlin, 1857); Ritschl, Gesch. des Pietismus, ii.

. 97, sq. (Bonn, 1884); and Sachsse, Ursprung und Wesen des Pietismus (Wies-

agen, 1884).

_ SPENNYMOOR, a market town of Durham, England, is situated on the Ferryhill and Bishop Auckland branch of the North-Eastern Railway, 34 miles north-west of Ferry- hill and 6 south of Durham by road. Within recent years it has increased with great rapidity owing to the production of coal and iron, and in 1865 it was formed into a market

town under a local board of health. It possesses a town- hall, a mechanics' institute and reading room, and two market halls. A school board was formed in 1875. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 176 acres) in 1871 was 4627, and in 1881 it was 5917.

SPENSER, Epmunp (c. 1552-1599), Elizabethan poet, was born in London about the year 1552. The received date of his birth rests on a passage in sonnet Ix. of the Amoretti. He speaks there of having lived forty-one years; the Amoretti was published in 1595, and described on the title-page as "written not long since"; this would make the year of his birth 1552 or 1553. We know from the Prothalamion that London was his birthplace. This at least seems the most natural interpretation of the words—

'* Merry London, ny most kindly nurse, That to me gave this life's first native source."

It would appear from a recent discovery by Mr R. B. Knowles! that the relationship of the poet to the noble family of Spencer, if it existed at all—and official names such as Spenser (Dispenser) or Stewart (Steward) carry no proof of consanguinity—was remote, and that the poet's kinsmen must be sought among the humbler Spensers of north-east Lancashire. Robert Nowell, a London citizen, left a sum of money to be distributed in various charities, and in the account-books of his executors Mr Knowles has discovered among the names of other beneficiaries "Edmund Spensore, scholar of the Merchant Taylor School, at his going to Pembroke Hall in Cambridge." The date of this benefaction is 28th April 1569. As the poet is known to have been a sizar of Pembroke, the identification is beyond dispute. Till this discovery it was not known where Spenser received his school education. The speculations as to the poet's parentage started by the Nowell-MS. are naturally more uncertain. Mr Knowles found three Spensers in the books of the Merchant Taylors, and concluded that the poorest of them, John Spenser, a "free journeyman" in the "art or mystery of clothmaking," might have been the poet's father, but he afterwards abandoned this theory. Mr Grosart, however, adheres to it, and gives a confident solution of Mr Knowles's difficulties. Nothing approaching certainty can be reached on the point, which is not itself of much

importance. The connexion of Spenser with Lan- cashire is also supported by the Nowell MS. Several Spensers of that county appear among the “poor kins- folk” who profited by Nowell’s bounty.

It is natural that a poet so steeped in poetry as Spenser should show his faculty at a very early age; and there is strong reason to believe that verses from his pen were published just as he left school at the age of sixteen or seventeen. Certain pieces, translations from Du Bellay and Petrarch, afterwards included in a volume of poems by Spenser published in 1591, are found in a miscellany, Theatre for Worldings, issued by a Flemish Protestant refugee, John van der Noodt, on the 25th of May 1569. The translations from Du Bellay appear in blank verse in the miscellany, and are rhymed in sonnet form in the later publication, but the diction is substantially the same ; the translations from Petrarch are republished with slight variations. Poets were so careless of their rights in those days and publishers took such liberties that we cannot draw for certain the conclusion that would be inevitable if the facts were of more modern date ; but the probabilities are that these passages in Van der Noodt’s Theatre, although the editor makes no acknowledgment, were contributed by the schoolboy Spenser. As the exercises of a schoolboy writing before our poetic diction was enriched by the great Elizabethans, they are remarkable for a sustained command of expression which many schoolboys might ex-

1 See The Spending of the Money of Robert Nowell, privately printed, 1877.

hibit in translation now, but which was a rarer and more significant accomplishment when Surrey and Sackville were the highest models in post-Chaucerian English.

Little is known of Spenser’s Cambridge career, except that he was a sizar of Pembroke Hall, took his bachelor’s degree in 1572, his master’s in 1576, and left Cambridge without having obtained a fellowship. Mr Grosart’s inquiries have elicited the fact that his health was not good,—college

allowances while he was in residence being often paid “Spenser zgrotanti.” One of the fellows of Pembroke strongly influenced his destiny. This was Gabriel Harvey, a prominent figure in the university life of the time, an enthusiastic educationist, vigorous, versa- tile, not a little vain of his own culture and literary powers, which had gained him a certain standing in London society. The revival and advancement of English literature was a passion of the time, and Harvey was fully possessed by it. His fancy for reforming English verse by discarding rhyme and substituting unrhymed classical metres, and the tone of his controversy with Thomas Nash, have caused him to be regarded as merely an obstreperous and pragmatic pedant; but it is clear that Spenser, who had sense enough not to be led astray by his eccentricities, received active and generous help from him and probably not a little literary stimulus. Harvey’s letters to Spenser! throw a very kindly light on his character.

Three years after leaving Cambridge, in 1579, Spenser issued his first volume of poetry, the Shepherd’s Calendar. Where and how he spent the interval have formed subjects for elaborate speculation. ‘That most of it was spent in the study of his art we may take for granted. That he lived for a time in the “north parts” of England; that there or elsewhere he fell in love with a lady whom he celebrates under the anagram of “Rosalind”; that his friend Harvey urged him to return south, and introduced him to Sir Philip Sidney ; that Sidney took to him, dis- cussed poetry with him, introduced him at court, put him in the way of preferment,—are ascertained facts in his personal history. Mr Grosart conjectures with consider- able plausibility that he was in Ireland in 1577 in the service of Sir Henry Sidney, Philip’s father, and returned to England with that administrator in 1578.

The interest of the Shepherd’s Calendar is mainly personal to Spenser. Its twelve poems continue to be read chiefly becausc they were the first published essays of the author of the Faery Queen, the poems in which he tried and disciplined his powers. They mark no stage in the history of pastoral poetry. Spenser had too strong a genius not to make his own individuality felt in any form that he attempted, and his buoyant dexterity in handling various schemes of verse must always afford dclight to the con- noisseur in such things. Buta reader not already interested in Spenser, or not already familiar with the artificial eclogue, would find little to attract him in

the Shepherd's Calendar. The poems need a special education ; given this, they are felt to be full of charm and power, a fresh and vivid spring to the splendid summer of the Faery Queen. The diction is a studiously archaic artificial compound, partly Chaucerian, partly North Anglian, partly factitious; and the pastoral scenery is such as may be found in any eountry where there are sheep, hills, trees, shrubs, toadstools, and running streams. That Spenser, having been in the north of England, should have introduced here and therc a touch of north eountry colour is natural enough, but it is not sufficient to give a character to the pocms as pastoral poems. As such they follow eontinuously and do not violently break away from Latin, Italian, and French predecessors, and Mr George Saintsbury is undoubtedly right in indicating Marot as the most immediate model. At the same time one can quite understand on historical grounds why the Shepherd's Calendar was hailed with enthusiasm as the advent of a "new poct." Not only was it a complete work in a form then new to English literature, but the execution showed the hand of a master. 'There had been nothing so finished, so sustained, so masterful in grasp, so brilliant in metre and phrase, since Chaucer. It was felt at once that the poct for whom the age had been waiting had come. The little coterie of friends whose admiration the young poet had won in private were evidently concerned lest the wider

1 Letter-Book of Gabriel Harvey, Camden Society.

public should be bewildered and repelled by the unfamiliar pastoral form and rustic diction. To put the public at the right point of view the poems were published with a commentary by ''E. K.,"— supposed to be one Edward Kirke, who was an undergraduate with Spenser at Pembroke. This so-called ''glosse" explained the archaic words, revealed the poet's intentions, and boasted that, as in the case of Virgil, the pastoral poetry of the ''new poct" was but ''a proving of the wings for higher and wider flights." The '*new poct's" name was withheld ; and the identification of the various ''shepherds''—of Cuddie and Roffy and Diggon Davie, and the beauteous golden-haired " widow's daughter of the glen "— was fortunately reserved to yield delight to the ingenious curiosity of a later age."

The Shepherd's Calendar was published at Gabriel Harvey's instance, and was dedicated to Sir Philip Sidney. It was one out of many poetical schemes on which the young poet was busy in the flush of conscious power and high hopes excited by the admiration of the literary authorities whose approval was then most to be coveted. His letters to Harvey and Harvey's letters to him fur- nish hints for a very engaging fancy picture of Spenser at this stage of his life,—looking at the world through rose-coloured spectacles, high in favour with Sidney and Leicester, dating his letters from Leicester House, gaily and energetically discussing the technicalities of his art, with some provision fron: his powerful friends—certain, but the form of it delightfully uncertain, —going to court in the train of Leicester, growing pointed beard and mustachios of fasliionable shape, and frightening his ever-vigilant friend and mentor Harvey by the light courtier-like tone of his references to women. The studious pastoral poet from 'north parts'' had blossomed with surprising rapidity in the image of the gay fortune-seeking adventurers who crowded the court of the virgin queen in those stirring times. Some of the poems which he mentions to Harvey as then completed or on the anvil—his Dreams, his Nine Comedies, his Dying Pelican, and his Stemmata Dudleiana (singing the praises of the noble family which was be- friending him)—have not been preserved, at least in any form that can be certainly identified. He had sent Harvey a portion of the Faery Queen, which he was eager to continue ; but Harvey did not think much of it—a judgment for which Harvey is often ridiculed as a dull pedant, as if we knew for certain that what was submitted to him was identical with what was published ten years later.

Spenser was appointed secretary to the lord-deputy of Ireland in 1580, and was one of the band of adventurers who, with mixed motives of love of excitement, patriotism, piety, and hopes of forfeited estates, accompanied Lord Arthur Grey of Wilton to Ireland to aid in the suppression of Desmond's rebellion. Regret is sometimes expressed that the author of the Faery Queen, who ought to have been dreamy, meditative, gentle, and refined, should have been found in sucli company, and should have taken part in the violent and bloody scenes of Lord Grey's two years' attempt at ''pacification." But such things must be judged with reference to the circumstances and the spirit of the time, and it must be remembered that England was then engaged in a fierce struggle for existence against the

Catholic powers of the Continent. Of Lord Grey's character his secretary was an enthusiastic admirer, ex- hibiting him in the Faery Queen as Arthegal, the personi- fication of justice; and we know exactly what were his own views of Irish policy, and how strongly he deplored that Lord Grey was not permitted to carry them out. Spenser's View of the State of Ireland, drawn up after fourteen years' experience, is not the work of a gentle dreamer, but of an energetic and shrewd public official.

The View is nota descriptive work ; there is nothing in the style to indicate that it was written by a poet; it is an elaborate state paper, the exposition in the form of a dialoguc of a minutely considered plan for the pacification of Ircland, written out of zeal for the public service for the eyes of the Government of the day. A very thoroughgoing plan it is. After passing in review the history and character of the Irish, their laws, customs, religion, habits of life, armour, dress, social institutions, and finding “evil usages” in every department, he propounds his plan of “ reforma- tion.” Reformation can be effected only by the sword, by the strong hand. The interlocutor in the dialogue holds up his hands in horror. Does he propose extermination? By no means; but he would give the Irish a choice between submission and exter- mination. The Government had vacillated too long, and, fearing the cost of a thorough operation, had spent twice as much without

2 See Mr Grosart’s Complete Works of Spenser, vol. i. XXIT. — 50

in any way mending matters. Let them send into Ireland 10,000 foot and 1000 horse, disperse them in garrisons—a complete scheme of localities is submitted,—give the Irish twenty days to come in ; if they did not come in then, give no quarter afterwards, but hunt them down like wild beasts in the winter time when the covert is thin; ‘‘if they be well followed one winter, ye shall have little work to do with them the next summer”; famine would complete the work of the sword; and in eighteen months’ time peace would be restored and the ground cleared for plantation by English colonists. There must be no flinching in the execution of this plan, —‘‘no remorse or drawing back for the sight of any such rueful object as must thereupon follow, nor for compassion of their calamities, seeing that by no other means it is possible to recover them, and that these are not of will but of very urgent necessity.” The Government had out of foolish compassion drawn back before when Lord Grey had brought the recalcitrant Irish to the necessary extremity of famine ; the gentle poet warns them carnestly against a repetition of the blunder.

Such was Spenser’s plan for the pacification of Ireland, propounded not on his own authority, but as having support in “the consultations and actions of

very wise governors and counsellors, whom he had sometimes heard treat thereof.” He knew that it was “bloody and cruel”; but he contended passionately that it was necessary for the maintenance of English power and the Protestant religion. Commentary on the plan, which has been so much and so warmly discussed, would be out of place here. The method was repugnant to the kindly nature of aver- age Englishmen ; from the time of Lord Grey no English authority had the heart to go through with it till another remorseless zealot appeared in the person of Cromwell. That Cromwell knew the treatise of “the sage and serious Spenser,” perhaps through Milton, is probable from the fact that the poet’s Irish estates were secured to his grandson by the Protector’s intervention in 1657. These estates had been granted to Spenser as his share in the redistribution of Munster,—3000 acres of land and Kilcol- man castle, an ancient seat of the Desmonds, in the north of the county of Cork. The elaborate and business-like character of the View shows that the poet was no sinecur- ist, but received his reward for substantial political ser- vices. He ceased to be secretary to the lord-deputy when Lord Grey was recalled in 1582; but he continued in the public service, and in 1586 was promoted to the onerous position of clerk to the council of Munster.

Amidst all the distractions of his public life in Ireland, Spenser seems to have proceeded steadily with the com- position of the Maery Queen, translating his varied ex- perience of men and affairs into the picturesque forms of his allegory, and expressing through them his conception of the immutable principles that ought to regulate human conduct. He had, as we have seen, conceived a work of the kind and made a beginning before he left England. The conception must have been very much deepened and widened and in every way enriched by his intimate daily contact with the actual struggle of conflicting individuals and interests and policies in a great crisis. Some four or five years later, being asked in a mixed company of English officials in Ireland (as recorded in Lodowick Bryskett’s Discourse of Cwil Life) to give offhand a short sketch of “the ethical part of moral philosophy” and the practical uses of the study, Spenser explained to these simple- minded men that the subject was too intricate for an im- promptu exposition, but that he had in hand a work called the Laery Queen in which an ethical system would be ex- hibited inaction. The respect paid by his official brethren to Spenser as a man, “not only perfect in the Greek tongue,

but also very well read in philosophy, both moral and natural," is an interesting item in his biography. Some years later still, when Spenser was settled at Kil- colman castle, Sir Walter Raleigh found him with three books of the Maery Queen completed, and urged him to come with them to London. London accordingly he re-

visited in 1589, after nine years' absence. There is a very pretty record of this visit in Colin Clout's Come Home Again, published in 1595, but written in 1591, immediately after his return to Kilcolman. The incidents of the visit, by that time matters of wistful memory, are imaged as a shepherd's excursion from his quiet pastoral life into the great world. Colin Clout calls round him once again the masked figures of the Shepherd's Calendar, and describes to them what he saw, how he fared, and whom he met at the court of Cynthia, and how through the influence of "the Shepherd of the Ocean" he was admitted at timely hours to play on his oaten pipe in the great queen's presence.

How much is pure fiction and how much veiled fact in this picture cannot now be distinguished, but it is un- doubted that Spenser, though his chief patrons Leicester and Sidney were now dead, was very graciously received by the great world on his return to London. Not only did the queen grant him an audience, but many ladies of the court, several of whom he afterwards honoured with dedications, honoured him with their patronage. The first three books of the Faery Queen, which were entered at Stationers' Hall on the lst December 1589, were pub- lished in 1590, and he was proclaimed at once with re- markable unanimity by all the writers of the time as the first of living poets.

From the first week of its publication the literary world has con- tinued unanimous about the Faery Queen, except on minor points. None of our great poets has been welcomed with such universal acclaim and upheld without loss of favour through so many changes of fashion. When romanticism was at its lowest cbb Pope read Spenser in his old age with as much delight asin his boyhood. He speaks himself of having had his detractors, of having suffered from the venomous tooth of the Blatant Beast, and he sceims to have had in more than ordinary share the poet's

sensitiveness to criticism ; but the detractors or indifferentists have generally been found among men who, like the lord high treasurer Burghley, have no liking for poetry of any kind. The secret of Spenser's enduring popularity with poets and lovers of poetry lies specially in this that he excels in the poet's peculiar gift, the instinct for verbal music. Shakespeare, or the author of the sonnet usually assigned to him, felt and expressed this when he drew the parallel between 'music and sweet poetry "—

'* Thou lovest to hear the sweet melodious sound

That Phebus' lute, the queen of music, makes ;

And I in deep delight am chiefly drowned

Whenas himself to singing he betakes." This is an early word in criticism of Spenser, and it is the last word about his prime and unquestionable excellence,—a word in which all critics must agree. Whether he had imagination in the highest degree or only luxuriant fancy, and whether he could tell a story in the highest epic manner or only put together a richly varied scries of picturesque incidents, are disputable points; but about the enchantment of his verse there can be no difference of opinion. It matters not in the least that he gains his melody often by archaic affectations, licences of diction that should make Dr Richard Morris '' stare and gasp"; there, however purchased, the marvellously rich music is. In judging of the structure of the Faery Queen we must always remember that, long and diffuse as it is, what we have is but a fragment of the poet's design, and that the narrative is regulated by an allegorical purpose ; but, however intricate, however confuscd, the reader may feel the succession of incidents to be, when he studies the succession of incidents, it is only at the call of duty that he is likely to occupy himself with such a study in reading Spenscr. ;

The ethical value of the allegory has been very variously esti- mated. The world would probably never have divined that there was any allegory if he had not himself drawn attention to it ina prose dedication and in doggerel headings to the cantos, It was apparently at his friend Ralcigh's suggestion that the poet conde- scended to explain his ethical purpose ; otherwise it would have been as problematical as the similar intention in the case of the

Idyls of the King before that intention was cxpressly declared. It is almost to be regretted, as far as the allegory is concerned, that the friendly ‘‘K. K.” was not employed to furnish a ‘‘glosse” to the Faery Queen as he had done to the Shepherd’s Calendar. Un- doubtedly the peculiar “‘ poetic luxury” of the Faery Queen can be enjoyed without any reference to the allegory; even Professor Dowden, the most eloquent champion of Spenser’s claims as a ‘*teacher,” admits that it isa mistake to look for minute corre- spondence between outward syinbol and underlying sense, and that the poet is least enjoyable where he is most ingenious. Still the

allegory governs the structure of the poem, and Spenser himself attached great importance to it as determining his position among poets. The ethical purpose is distinctive of the poem as a whole ; it was foremost in Spenser’s mind when he conceived the scheme of the poem, and present with him as he built up and articulated the skeleton ; it was in this respect that he claimed to have ‘‘ over- passed” his avowed models Ariosto and Tasso. If we wish to get an idea of Spenser’s imaginative force and abundance, or to see his creations as he saw them, we must not neglect the allegory. It is obvious from all that he says of his own work that in his eyes the ethical meaning not only heightened the interest of the marvellously rich pageant of heroes and heroines, enchanters and monsters, but was the one thing that redeemed it from romantic commonplace. For the right appreciation of many of the characters and incidents a knowledge of the allegory is indispensable. For example, the slaughter of Error by the Red Cross knight would be merely dis- gusting but for its symbolic character ; the iron Talus and his iron flail is a revolting and brutally cruel monster if he is not regarded as an image of the executioner of righteous law ; the Blatant Beast, a purely grotesque and ridiculous monster to outward view, ac- quires a serious interest when he is known to be an impersonation of malignant detraction.

After the publication of the Faery Queen Spenser seems to have remained in London for more than a year, to enjoy his triumph. It might be supposed, from what he makes the Shepherd of the Ocean say in urging Colin Clout to quit his banishment in Ireland, that Raleigh had encour- aged him to expect

some permanent provision in London. If he had any such hopes they were disappointed. The thrifty queen granted him a pension of £50, which was paid in February 1591, but nothing further was done for him. Colin Clout's explanation that the selfish scrambling and intriguing of court life were not suited to a lowly shepherd swain, and that he returned to country life with relief, may be pastoral convention, or it may have been an expression of the poet's real feelings on his return to Kaleolman, although as a matter of fact there seems to have been as much scrambling for good things in Munster asin London. Certain it is that he did return to Kilcol- man in the course of the year 1591, having probably first arranged for the publication of Daphnaida and Com- plaints. Daphnaida is a pastoral elegy on the death of the niece of the mistress of the robes. The fact implied in the dedication that he was not personally known to the lady has more than once provoked the solemn remark that the poet's grief was assumed. Of course it was assumed ; and it is hardly less obvious that sincerity of personal emotion, so far from being a merit in the artificial forms of pastoral poetry, the essence of which lies in its dreamy remoteness from real life, would be a blemish and a discord. Any suggestion of the poet's real personality breaks the charm; once raise the question of the poet's personal sincerity and the pastoral poem may at once be thrown aside. The remark applies to all Spenser's minor poetry, including his love-sonnets ; the reader who raises the question whether Spenser really loved his mistress may have a talent for disputation but none for the full enjoyment of hyperbolical poetry. Complaints, also pub- lished in 1591, is a miscellaneous collection of poems Written at different periods. The volume contained Zhe Ruins of Time; The Tears of the Muses; Virgil's Gnat; Mother Hubbard's Tale ; The Ruins of Rome; Muiopotmos ; Visions of the World's Vanity ; Bellay's Visions ; Petrarch's Visions. Some of these pieces are translations already alluded to and interesting only as the exercises of one of our greatest masters of melodious verse ; but two of them, The Tears of the Muses and Mother Hubbard's Tale, have greater intrinsic interest. The first is the complaint of the decay of learning alluded to in Midsummer Night's Dream, v. 1, 52—

'The thrice three Muses mourning for the death Of Learning late deceased in beggary." The lament, at a time when the Elizabethan drama was "mewing its mighty youth," was not so happy as sone

of Spenser’s political prophecies in his View of Ireland; but it is idle work to try to trace the undercurrents and personal allusions in such an occasional pamphlet. Jother Hubbards Tale, a fable in Chaucerian couplets, shows a keenness of satiric force not to be paralleled in any other of Spenser’s writings, and suggests that he left the court in a mood very different from Colin Clout’s.

Spenser returned to London probably in 1595. He had married in the interval a lady whose Christian name was Elizabeth,—Mr Grosart says Elizabeth Boyle. The mar- riage, celebrated on the 11th of June 1594, was followed by a rapid succession of publications. The first was a volume (entered at Stationers’ Hall, 19th November 1594, published 1595) containing the Amoretti, a series of ex- quisite sonnets commemorative of the moods and incidents of his courtship, and the magnificent Epithalamion, in- comparably the finest of his minor poems. As in the case of the Complaints, the publisher for obvious reasons issued this volume nominally without his authority. Colin Clout’s Come Home Again was published in the same year, with a dedication to Sir Walter Raleigh, dated 1591. Early in 1596 the second three books of the Faery Queen were entered in the register of Stationers’ Hall; and in the course of the same year were published his Your Hymns, his Prothalamion, and his Astrophel, a pastoral lament for Sir Philip Sidney, which he dedicated to the countess of Essex.

That Spenser wrote more of the Faery Queen during the last two years of his life, and that the MS. perished in the sack of Kilcolman castle by the rebels, nay plausibly be conjectured, but cannot be ascertained. During those years he would seem to have been largely occupied with political and personal cares. He describes himself in the Prothalamion as a disappointed suitor at court. He drew up his View of Ireland in 1596 when he was in London, and from various circumstances it is evident that he had hopes of some kind from the favour of Essex. The View, with its urgent entreaty that Essex should be sent to Ire- land, was entered at Stationers’ Hall in April 1598, but he did not obtain leave to publish it. Burghley, who had long stood in his way, died in August of that year, and next month Spenser was appointed sheriff of Cork. In October Tyrone’s rebellion broke out, and

Spenser’s house was sacked and burned. The poet himself escaped, and in December was sent to London with despatches. Again he ventured to urge upon the queen his plan for the thorough “reformation” of Ireland. But his own end was near. On 16th January 1599 he died at Westminster, ruined in fortune, if not heart-broken, and was buried in Westminster Abbey, near his master Chaucer.

There have been many editions of Spenser’s works. The most available and complete is the Globe edition, with a carefully edited text by Dr R. Morris, and a memoir by Professor J. W. Hales. Mr Grosart’s edition, with its kecnly argumentative biography and copious collection of variorum researches and critical opinions, is printed for private circulation. (W. M.)

SPERMACETI is a solid waxy body found in special cavities in the head of the sperm whale (Physeter macro- cephalus), where it is held in solution by sperm oil while the creature is in life. At a temperature of about 6° C. the solid matter separates in a crystalline condition, and when purified by pressure and treatment with weak solu- tion of caustic alkali it forms brilliant white crystalline scales or plates, hard but unctuous to the touch, and desti- tute of taste or smell. It is quite insoluble in water, very slightly affected by boiling alcohol, but easily dissolved in ether, chloroform, and carbon bisulphide. Spermaceti

consists principally of cetin or cetyl palmitate, gitin? O, 16°” 33

—an ether composed of cetyl alcohol combined with palmi- tic acid. Spermaceti candles of definite size are employed

as a standard for illuminants on account of the uniform steady light they afford. The substance is further used in the dressing of fabrics and in medicine and surgery, especially in cerates, bougies, ointments, and in cosmetic preparations. For sperm oil, see WHALE OIL.

SPEUSIPPUS, son of Eurymedon and Potone, is sup- posed to have been born about 407 B.c. He was bred in the school of Isocrates; but, when his maternal uncle, Plato, returned to Athens about 387, he yielded to his

influence and became a member of the Academy. In 361, when Plato undertook his third and last journey to Sicily, Speusippus accompanied him. In 347 the dying philo- sopher nominated his nephew to succeed him as scholarch, and the choice was ratified by the school. Speusippus held the office for eight years, and died in 339 after a paralytic seizure. According to some authorities he com- mitted suicide. There is a story that his youth was riotous, until Plato's example led him to reform his ways. In later life he was conspicuously temperate and amiable. He was succeeded by Xenocrates.

Of Speusippus's many philosophical writings nothing survives except a fragment of a treatise On Pythagorean Numbers. Nor have secondary authorities preserved to us any general statement or conspectus of his system. In- cidentally, however, we learn the following details. (A) In regard to his theory of being,—(1) whereas Plato postu- lated as the basis of his system a cause which should be at once Unity, Good, and Mind, Speusippus distinguished Unity, the origin of things, from Good, their end, and both Unity and Good from controlling Mind or Reason ; (2) whereas Plato recognized three kinds of numbers— firstly, ideal numbers, the formal causes of the ideas ; secondly, mathematical numbers, the abstractions of mathematics ; and thirdly, sensible numbers, numbers em- bodied in things —Speusippus rejected the ideal numbers, and consequently the ideas; (3) Speusippus traced number, magnitude, and soul each to a distinct principle of its own. (B) In regard to his theory of knowledge,—(4) he held that a thing cannot be known apart from the knowledge of all things besides; for, that we may know what a thing is, we must know how it differs from other things, which other things must therefore be known ; (5) accord- ingly, in the ten books of a work called "Opowa, he attempted a classification of plants and animals; (6) the results thus obtained he distinguished at once from "'know- ledge" (érictHun) and from "sensation" (aia yous), hold- ing that "scientific observation" (erurtypoviKi ais nots), though it cannot attain to truth, may nevertheless, in virtue of a certain acquired tact, frame "definitions" (Adyoz). (C) In regard to his theory of ethics,—(7) he denied that pleasure was a good, but seemingly was not prepared to account it an evil.

In default of direct evidence, it remains for us to com- pare these scattered notices of Speusippus's teaching with what we know of its original, the teaching of Plato, in the hope of obtaining at least a general notion, firstly, of Speusippus's system, and, secondly, of its relations to the systems of Plato, of contemporary Platonists, such as Aristotle, and of the later Acadeniy.

It has been suggested elsewhere (SocRATES, p. 238 supra) that the crude and unqualified "realism" of Plato's early manhood gave place in his later years to a theory of natural kinds founded upon a " thoroughgoing idealism," and that in this way he was led to recognize and to value the classi- ficatory sciences of zoology and botany. More exactly, it may be said that the Platonism of Plato's maturity included the following principal doctrines :—(i.) the supreme cause of all existence is the One, the Good, Mind, which evolves itself as the universe under certain eternal immutable forms called "ideas"; (ii.) the ideas are apprehended by

finite minds as particulars in space and time, and are then called "things"; (iii.) consequently the particulars which. have in a given idea at once their origin, their being, and their perfection may be regarded, for the purposes of scientific study, as members of a natural kind ; (iv.) the finite mind, though it cannot directly apprehend the idea, may, by the study of the particulars in which the idea is revealed, attain to an approximate notion of it.

Now when Speusippus (1) discriminated the One, the Good, and Mind, (2) denied the ideas, and (3) abandoned the attempt to unify the plurality of things, he explicitly rejected the theory of being expressed in (i.) and (ii.); and the rejection of the theory of being, 2.¢., of the conception of the One evolving itself as a plurality of ideas, entailed consequential modifications in the theory of knowledge conveyed in (iii.) and (iv.). For, if the members of a natural kind had no common idea to unite them, scientific research, having nothing objective in view, could at best afford a Adyos or definition of the appropriate particulars ; and, as the discrimination of the One and the Good im- plied the progression of particulars towards perfection, such a Adyos or definition could have only a temporary value. Hence, though, like Plato, Speusippus (4) studied the differences of natural products (5) with a

view to classification, he did not agree with Plato in his conception of the significance of the results thus obtained ; that is to say, while to Plato the definition derived from the study of the particulars included in a natural kind was an ap- proximate definition of the idea in which the natural kind originated, to Speusippus the definition was a definition of the particulars studied, and, strictly speaking, of nothing else.. Thus, while Plato hoped to ascend through classifi- catory science to the knowledge of eternal and immutable laws of thought and being, Speusippus, abandoning onto- logical speculation, was content to regard classificatory science not as a means but as an end, and (6) to rest in the results of scientific observation. In a word, Speusippus turned from philosophy to science.

It may seem strange that, differing thus widely from his master, Speusippus should have regarded himself and should have been regarded by others as a Platonist, and still more strange that Plato should have chosen him to be his successor. It is to be observed, however, firstly, that the scientific element occupied a larger place in Plato's later system than is generally supposed,! and, secondly, that the only Academics who came into competition with Speusippus agreed with him in his rejection of the theory of ideas. Hence Plato, finding in the school no capable representative of his ontological theory, might well choose to succeed him a favourite pupil whose scientific enthusiasm and attainment were beyond question ; and Speusippus's rivals, having themselves abandoned the theory of ideas, would not be in a position to tax him with his philosophi- cal apostasy.

In abandoning the theory of ideas—that is to say, the theory of figures and numbers, the possessions of universal mind, eternally existent out of space and time, which figures and numbers when they pass into space and time as the heritage of finite minds are regarded as things— Speusippus had the approval, as of the Platonists gener- ally, so also of Aristotle. But, whereas the new scholarch, confining himself to the detailed examination of natural kinds, attempted no comprehensive explanation of the uni- verse, Aristotle held that a theory of its origin, its motions,

1 That Plato did not neglect, but rather encouraged, classificatory science is shown, not only by a well-known fragment of the comic poet Epicrates, which describes a party of Academics engaged in investi- gating, under the

eye of Plato, the affinities of the common pumpkin, but also by the Timeus, which, while it carefully discriminates science

from ontology, plainly recognizes the importance of the study of natural kinds.

SPE—SPH

and its order was a necessary adjunct to the classificatory

sciences; and in nearly all his references to Speusippus

he insists upon this fundamental difference of procedure. Conceiving that the motions of the universe and its parts are due to the desire which it and they feel towards the supreme external mind, so that the cosmical order is initial in the divine mind, final in the phenomenal universe, Aristotle supposes himself thus to secure the requisite unification of the variety of things. Contrariwise, when Speusippus distinguishes One, Good, and Mind, so that Mind, not as yet endowed with an orderly scheme, adapts the initial One to a variety of particular Goods, his theory of nature appears to his rival "'episodical," ae, to consist of a series of tableaux wanting in dramatic unity, so that it reminds him of Homer's line—ovx« dyafov rodAvKorpavin ° els Koipavos «orw, The theory propounded by Aristotle himself is not perhaps impeccable in this respect, but at any rate he does not, like Speusippus, despair of a solution of the traditional problem of the One and the Many.

Speusippus and his contemporaries in the school exer- cised an important and far-reaching influence upon Aca- demic doctrine. When they, the immediate successors of Plato, rejected their master's ontology and proposed to themselves as ends mere classificatory sciences which with him had been means, they bartered their hope of philo- sophic certainty for the tentative and provisional results of scientific experience. Xenocrates indeed, identifying ideal and mathematical numbers, sought to shelter himself under the authority of Plato; but, as the Xenocratean numbers, though professedly ideal as well as mathematical, were in fact mathematical only, this return to the Platonic termino- logy was no more than an empty form. It would seem, then, that Academic scepticism began with those who had been reared by

Plato himself, having its origin in their acceptance of the scientific element of his teaching apart from the ontology which had been its basis. In this way, and, so far as the present writer can see, in this way only, it is possible to understand the extraordinary revolution which converted Platonism, philosophical and dogmatic, into Academicism, scientific and sceptical. It is as the official representative of this scientific and sceptical depart- ure that Speusippus is entitled to a place in the history of philosophy.

Libliography.—J. G. F. Ravaisson, Speusippi de primis rerum principiis placita, Paris, 1888 ; Chr. Aug. Brandis, Gesch. d. Griech- isch-Romischen Philosophie, Berlin, 1853, II. ii. 1, pp. 6-19 ; Zeller, Dic Philosophie d. Gricchen, Leipsic, 1875, II. i. 839, 840, 847-862 ; Mullach, Hragmenta Philosophorwm Grecorum, Paris, 1881, iii. 62.99, (H. JA.)

SPEY, a river in the north of Scotland, rises in the south-east of Inverness-shire from a small tarn called Loch Spey, 5 miles east of the Caledonian Canal, and flows north-eastwards by Kingussie to Grantown in Elginshire, 10 miles below which it reaches Banffshire. After forming for about 15 miles the boundary between Elginshire and Banffshire, it again enters the former county, through which it flows for about 10 miles past Fochabers to the Moray Firth. In the earlier part of its course it is fed by a large number of mountain streams, its principal tribu- taries being, in Inverness-shire, the Tromie and the Feshie from the right and the Dulnain from the left, and on the boundaries of Banff and Elgin the Avon (Aven) and the Fiddich from the right. Its entire length is 96 miles, and it drains an area of about 1200 square miles. The flow of the river is very rapid, and, being fed largely by mountain Streams, it is subject to sudden freshets, which sometimes occasion extensive floods, the greatest being that of 1829. The Spey is, next to the Tay and the Tweed, the most mportant salmon river in Scotland. The scenery in its upper courses is occasionally bare and bleak, but some- times finely picturesque, especially where, as in Elginshire

and Banffshire, its bold and rocky banks are clothed by forests of birch and pine.

See L. Shaw, History of the Province of Moray (1st ed. 1775, 3d ed. 1882), and Sir Thomas Dick Lauder, Account of the Moray Floods (1st’ed. 1830, 4th ed. 1873).

SPEZIA, a city of Italy, in the province of Genoa, 56 miles south-east of Genoa by the railway to Pisa, which has become since the unification of the kingdom one of the principal Italian ports and the seat of a great Government arsenal. It is situated at the north-west angle of the Gulf of Spezia, formerly known as Lunz Portus, the western side of which is formed by a rocky promontory about 4 miles long, terminating in the picturesque little town of Portovenere and the islands of Palmaria and Tino. A great breakwater, constructed about 1860, stretches across the gulf from Santa Maria Point to Santa Tercsa Point for a distance of 7220 feet; and the outer harbour to the south-west of the town, excavated in 1865 to a depth of 32 feet, has an area of 247 acres. The arsenal has a length of 3937 feet and an average breadth of 2460 feet. The first dock covers an area of 20 acres and the second 17 acres ; and there are besides two careening basins, 433 and 354 feet long. Farther south le the extensive mili- tary establishments of San Vito, with storehouses, reser- voir, &c.; and almost right opposite, on the other side of the gulf, are the dock (14 acres), shipbuilding yards, and repair- ing docks of San Bartolomeo. Some of the largest vessels of the Italian navy have been constructed at Spezia. As a commercial centre Spezia suffers from the lack of railway communication with the interior,—the range of the Apen- nines lying between it and the more productive regions of Northern Italy. The whole movement of the port in 1884 was reprasented by 38 vessels engaged in foreign trade (tonnage, 29,251) and 1333 engaged in the coasting trade (tonnage, 198,447). Though the town itself, with the barracks and military hospital as its principal buildings, presents little to attract the foreign visitor, the beauty of the gulf and of the neighbouring country has brought Spezia into some repute as a watering-place, and there are several excellent hotels in the Corso. The walls and gates of the old city are for the most part destroyed. In one of the public squares is a statue of Admiral Chiodo, the founder of the arsenal. The population of the city was 6105 in 1861 (commune 11,556) and 19,864 in 1881 (commune 30,732).

The origin of Spezia is doubtful ; but it probably rose after the destruction of Luna. Sold by one of the Fieschi in 1276 to Genoa, the town was fortified by its new possessors and made the seat of a governor of some importance. It became a city in the 16th cen- tury. The idea of making the Gulf of Spezia a great naval centre was first broached by Napoleon I.

SPHEROMETER, an instrument for the precise mea- surement of the radius of a sphere or the thickness of a thin plate. The usual form consists of a fine screw moving in a nut carried on the centre of a small three-legged table. The lower end of the screw and those of the table legs are finely tapered and terminate in hemispheres, so that each rests ona point. If the screw has two turns of the thread to the millimétre, the head is usually divided into 500 equal parts, so that differences of 0°001 millimetre may be measured without using a vernier. A vertical scale fastened to the table indicates the number of whole turns of the screw and serves as a fixed point for reading the divi- sions on the head. In order to measure the thickness of a plate the instrument is placed on a level plane surface and the screw turned until the point just touches; the exact instant when it does so is defined by a sudden diminution of resistance succeeded by a considerable in- crease. The divided head and scale are read ; the screw is raised ; the thin plate slipped under it ; and the process isrepeated. The difference between the two readings gives

the required thickness. A contact-lever, delicate level, or electric contact arrangement may be attached to the sphero- meter in order to indicate the moment of touching more precisely than is possible by the sense of touch. To mea- sure the radius of a sphere—e.g., the curvature of a lens— the spherometer is levelled and read, then placed on the sphere, adjusted until the four points exert equal pressure, and read again. The difference gives the thickness of that portion of the sphere cut off by a plane passing through the three feet ; and, since the feet are equidistant, this dis- tance (a) being known gives the value (A) of the radius a

3h the lenticular segment. The well spherometer} is adapted for measuring small spherical lenses. The true plane on which the instrument stands is perforated by a cylindrical well of known diameter. A plate applied to the

lower edge of the well by a spring is adjusted to be parallel to the large plane, and the spherometer screw, being centred over the well, is run down until it touches the plate, and then read. The plate is removed; the lens put in its place; the point—still accurately centred—is brought down ; and the screw is read again. The difference be- tween these readings gives the height of the section of the lens above the lower edge of the well. Calling this height hand the radius of the cylindrical well 7, the radius & of

2

the sphere is got by the formula 2.4 = . +h. The sphero-

from the formula 2k == +h, where h is the thickness of

meter can be applied to test the sphericity of a globe, and may be used on either a convex or a concave surface.

SPHINX, a hybrid creature of Egyptian and Greek art and mythology. In Egypt the sphinxes are colossal images of granite or porphyry, with a human head and breast and the body of a lion (wingless) lying down. The largest and most famous is that of Gizeh, described in vol. vii. p. 772. The head of the sphinx is usually that of a man, but female heads are said to occur occasionally. From Egypt the figure of the sphinx passed to Assyria, where it appears with a bearded male head on cylinders; the female sphinx, lying down and furnished with wings, is first found in the palace of Esarhaddon (7th century B.c.). Sphinxes have been found in Pheenicia, one at least being winged and another bearded. In Asia Minor an ancient female sphinx, but wingless, stands on the sacred road near Miletus. Sphinxes of the usual Greek type (female heads with bodies of winged lions) are represented seated on each side of two doorways in an ancient frieze found by Sir Charles Fellowes at Xanthus in Lycia, and now in the British Museum. The same type appears on the early sculptures of the temple at Assus. In the early art of Cyprus—that half-way house between Asia and Greece— sphinxes of this type are not uncommon. On the other hand, on a gem of Pheenician style found at Curium in Cyprus there appear two male (bearded) sphinxes, with the tree of life between them. With regard to Greece proper, in the third tomb on the acropolis of Mycenz were found six small golden sphinxes; they are beardless, but the sex is doubtful. In the

ancient tomb discovered in 1877 at Spata near Athens (which represents a kindred but somewhat later art than the tombs at Mycenze) were found female winged sphinxes carved in ivory or bone. Sphinxes on glass plates have been found in graves at Camirus in Rhodes and on gold plates in Crimean graves. Sphinxes were represented on the throne of Apollo at Amycle ; in the best period of Greek art a sphinx was sculptured on the helmet of the statue of Athene in the Parthenon at Athens; and sphinxes carrying off children were sculptured

on the front feet of the throne of Zeus at Olympia. ee 1 A.M. Meyer, in American Journal of Science, 1886, xxxii. p. 61.

In Greek mythology the most famous sphinx was that of Thebes in Beotia. She is first mentioned by Hesiod (Theog., 326), who calls her the daughter of Orthus and Chimera. According to Apollonius (iii. 5, 8), she was the daughter of Typhon and Echidna, and had the face of a woman, the feet and tail of a lion, and the wings of a bird. She dwelt on a bald rocky mountain at the south- east corner of the Copaic lake; the name of the mountain was Phicium (now Fagas), which was derived from Phix, the Aolic form of sphinx. The Muses taught her a riddle and the Thebaus had to guess it. Whenever they failed she carried one of them off and devoured him. The riddle was this: What is that which is four-footed, three-footed, and two-footed? At last Gidipus guessed correctly that it was man; for the child crawls on hands and feet, the adult walks upright, and the old man supports his steps with a stick, Then the sphinx threw herself down from the mountain.

The story of the sphinx’s riddle first occurs in the Greek tragedians. Milchhofer believes that the story was a mere invention of Greek fancy, an attempt to interpret the mysterious figure which Greek art had borrowed from the East. On the other hand, hc holds that the destroying nature of the sphinx was much older, and he refers to instances in both Egyptian and Greek art where a sphinx is seen seizing and standing upon a man. And, whereas the Theban legend is but sparingly illustrated in Greek art, the figure of the sphinx appears more commonly on tombs, sculptured either in the round or in relief. From this Milchh6fer seems to infer that the sphinx

was a symbol of death. The word “sphinx” is Greek, being derived from o¢iyyew, ‘to draw tight.”

See Brugsch, History of Egypt, vol. i. pp. 79 sq., 414 sq.; Cesnola, Cyprus, pp. 110, 114 sg., 263 sq., and plate xxxvii. No. 13; Schliemann, Mycene, pp.

xly., 184; and especially Milchhofer, in Mitth. d. deutsch. archdol. Instit. in Athen, 1879, p. 46 sq.

SPHYGMOGRAPH. See Vascunar System.

SPICE ISLANDS. See Moruccas.

SPIDER. See Aracunipa, vol. ii. p. 290 sg.

SPIKENARD, or Narp (Hebrew nérd; Gr. vdpdos, from Sanskrit naladwitha, the change from “‘r” to “1” seeming to indicate that the word came through Persia),? a celebrated perfume which seems to have formed one of the most durable aromatic ingredients in the costly un- guents used by the Romans and Eastern nations. The oint- ment prepared from it (“ointment of pistic nard”®) is mentioned in the New Testament (Mark xiv. 3-5; John xii. 3-5) as being ‘very costly,” a pound of it being valued at more than 300 denarii (over £10). This appears to represent the prices then current for the best quality of nard, since Pliny (/.W., xii. 26) mentions that nard spikes reached as much as 100 denarii per tb, and, although he does not mention the price of nard ointment, he states (xiii, 2) that the “unguentum cinnamominum,” a similar preparation, ranged from 25 to 300 denarii according to its quality. Nard ointment also varied considerably in price from its liability to sophistication (Id., xii. 26, 27; xii. 2). The ingredients of the genuine ointment (wn- guentum nardinum swe foliatum), Pliny tells us (xiii. 2), were Indian nard, juncus (the leaves of Andropogon Schoen- anthus, L.), costus (the root of Aplotaxis auriculata, DC.), amomum (the fruits of Amomum Cardamomum, L.), myrrh (the gum-resin of Balsamodendron Myrrha, Nees), balm (the oleo-resin of Balsamodendron Opobalsamum), ompha- cium or oleum omphacinum (the oil expressed from unripe olives), and balaninum (derived from Balanites egyptiaca). Dioscorides (i. 75) also remarks that malabathrum (the leaf of

Cinnamomum Tamala, Nees) was sometimes added. Of these ingredients costus and amomum were most relied upon for increasing the fragrance aud the nard for the stimulating and other virtues of the unguent.4

2 See Fick, in Orient u. Occident, iii. p. 364. The Syrians and Arabs simply call it “spike ’’ (shebalta, sunbul) or “the Indian spike.”

3 The meaning of the word ‘“pistic” is uncertain, some rendering it ‘‘ genuine,” others “liquid,” and others taking it for a local name.

4 The use of alabaster vessels for preserving these fragrant unguents

The exact botanical source of the true or Indian nard was long a matter of uncertainty, the descriptions given by ancient authors being somewhat vague. Theophrastus (De Odor., 28) classes nard amongst roots, and states that it came from India (Hist. Plant., ix. 7, 2), had a biting and hot taste, and resembled iris root in perfuming the air near it (De Odor., 12, 56). He also remarks (0.c., 42) that the ointment was one of the most durable of perfumes. Pliny (H.W., xii. 26, 27) gives a somewhat confused ac- count, from which it appears that both “spike” and leaf were in use, although it is not clear whether the spike (spica) consisted of the flower-head or the fibrous lower portion of the stem. The only definite statement he makes concerning it is that the “sincere” nard is known by its red colour, sweet smell, and especially taste, “for it drieth the tongue and leaveth a pleasant relish behind it.” Dioscorides (i. 6) states that the true nard came fron: India and was collected on mountains beside which the river Ganges flowed. He describes it as blackish with short spikes, smelling something like cyperus. Linnzeus, Blane, Hatchett, and other writers have supposed that spikenard was an Indian grass of the genus Andropogon (A. Nardus, L.); but Sir W. Jones (As. Res., ii. 416, iv. 97) has given convincing reasons for identifying it with Wardostachys Jatamansi,’ a plant of the Valerian order, the fibrous root- stocks or “‘spikes” of which are still collected in the mountains of Bhotan and Nepal. Further evidence is afforded by Lambert (Zlustr. of the Genus Cinchona, App., p. 177), who found the root under the name of “spike- nard” in one of the oldest chemist’s shops in London, also by Dymock (Mat. Med. W. India, 2d ed., p. 347), who states that the principal

use of the drug at the present time is for making hair washes and ointments, the popular opinion being that it promotes the growth and blackness of the hair. The name of “spike” applied to the Indian nard appears to be derived from its resemblance in shape toa spike or ear of bearded corn. The root is crowned by the bases of several stems, each about 2 inches or more in length and as thick as the finger. To these the fibrous tissue of former leaves adheres and gives them a peculiar bristly appearance. It is this portion that is chiefly collected.

Other and inferior varieties of nard are mentioned by Dioscorides and subsequent writers. Celtic nard, obtained from the Ligurian Alps and Istria, consisted of the roots of plants also belonging to the Valerian order (Valeriana celtica and V. salieina). This was exported to the East and thence to Egypt, and was used in the preparation of baths. Mountain nard was collected in Cilicia and Syria, and is supposed to have consisted of the root of Valeriana tubcrosa. The false nard of Dauphiné, used in later times, and still employed as a charm in Switzerland, is the root-stock of Allium Victorialis, It presents a singular resemblance to the spikes of Indian nard, but is devoid of fragrance. It is remarkable that all the nards belong to the natural order Valerianacex, the odour of valerian being considered disagreeable at the present day; that of Nardostachys Jatamansi is intermediate betwecn valerian and patchouli, eae more agreeable than either.

The name “spikenard” has also been applied in later times to several plants. The spikenard of the United States is Aralia racemosa, and another species of the same genus, A. nudicaulis, is SPINACH. See Horricutrvrg, vol. xii. pp. 285, 288. SPINAL CORD. See PuysroLoey, vol. xix. p. 34 sq. For the diseases affecting the spinal cord, see ATAXY ee Was customary at a very early period. Theophrastus (c. 314 B.c.) States that vessels of lead and alabaster were best for the purpose, on account of their density and coolness, and their power of resisting the penetration of the ointinent into their substance, Pliny also recom- mends alabaster for ointment vases. For small quantities onyx vessels a to have been used (Horace, Carm. ivanele2 sel Ten MO sele74): The plant figured by Sir W. Jones is Valeriana Hardwickit (prob- ably the inferior Gangetic nard of Dioscorides and the ozenitis of Pliny); the true plant is figured by Royle and Lambert.

(Locomotor), Paratysis, ParHonoey (vol. xviii. p. 392), and SURGERY.

SPINEL. See Mrveraxoey, vol. xvi. p. 386, and Rusy.

SPINELLO ARETINO (c.1330-c.1410), painter, the son of a Florentine named Luca, who had taken refuge in Arezzo in 1310 when exiled with the rest of the Ghibel- line party, was born at Arezzo about 1330. Spinello was a pupil of Jacopo di Casentino, a follower of Giotto, and his own style was a sort of link between the school of Giotto and that of Siena. In the early part of his life he worked in Florence as an assistant to his master J ACOpo while painting frescos in the church of the Carmine and in Sta Maria Novella. Between 1360 and 1384 he was occupied in painting many frescos in and near Arezzo, almost all of which have now perished.2 After the sack of Arezzo in 1384 Spinello returned to Florence, and in 1387-88 with some assistants covered the walls and vault of the sacristy of S. Miniato near Florence with a series of frescos, the chief of which represent scenes from the life of St Benedict. These still exist, though in a sadly restored condition ; they are very Giotto-like in composition, but have some of the Siena decorative brilliance of colour, In 1391-92 Spinello was painting six frescos, which still re- main on the south wall of the Pisan Campo Santo, repre- senting miracles of St Potitus and St Ephesus. For these he received 270 gold florins. Among his later works the chief are the very fine series of frescos painted in 1407-8 on the walls and vault of a chapel in the municipal build- ings of Siena ; these also have suffered much from repaint- ing, but still are the finest of Spinello's existing frescos. Sixteen of these represent the war of Frederick Barbarossa against the republic of Venice. Spinello died at Arezzo about 1410.

Spinello's frescos are all strong and highly decorative works, drawn with much spirit, and are very superior in style to his panel pictures, many of which appear to be mere bottega produc- tions. The academy of Florence possesses a panel of the Madonna and Saints, which is chiefly interesting for its signature—" Hoc opus pinxit Spinellus Luce Aritio D.I.A.1391." The easel pictures which are to be found in the various galleries of Europe give little or no notion of Spinello's power as a painter.

SPINET. See Pranororte, vol. xix. p. 67 sg.

SPINNING. See Yarn.

SPINOLA, Amprocio Spryoza, Marcuese 1 (c, 1571- 1630), a celebrated general, belonged to a noble and wealthy Italian family, and was born at Genoa about 1571. After the siege of Ostend had languished for more than two years under the direction of the archduke Albert, Spinola, who, though not a soldier by profession, had seen something of campaigning during a season or two, came upon the scene as a condottiere and received charge of the works. He entered upon his task in October 1603, and his courage and vigour were rewarded by the surrender of the place on 20th September 1604. During the next five years, until the conclusion of the armistice of 1609, he frequently encountered Maurice of Orange, but on the whole with undecisive results. In 1620 he was sent by Spain into the Palatinate of the Rhine, and took many places; in the following year, on the renewal of the war with Holland, he returned to the scenes of his earlier campaigns, where his principal exploits were the capture of Jiilich in February 1622 and of Breda after a ten months' siege in June 1625. His health now began to give way; and his spirits are said to have been further de- pressed by Philip's disregard of his pecuniary claims. He died at Castel-Nuovo di Scrivia on 25th September 1630.

SPINOZA, Barucn (1632-1677), or, as he afterwards signed himself, Benedict de Spinoza, philosopher, was born at Amsterdam on 24th November 1632. His parents be-

2 The fine fresco of an Apocalyptic scene which still exists in S, Maria degli Angeli at Arezzo belongs to about 1400.

longed to the community of Jewish emigrants from Portugal and Spain who, fleeing from Catholic persecution in the Peninsula, had sought refuge in the nearly emancipated Netherlands. The name, variously written De Spinoza, D'Espinoza, and Despinoza, probably points to the pro- vince of Leon as the previous home of the family; there are no fewer than five townships so called in the neigh- bourhood of Burgos. Of the philosopher's

parents nothing is known. His father is said to have been a tradesman in fair circumstances, and the house is still shown upon the Burgwal where his son Baruch was born; two sisters, Rebekah and Miriam, formed the remainder of the family. Spinoza received his first training under the senior rabbi, Saul Levi Morteira, whose most promising pupil he soon became. Under Morteira he became familiar with the Talmud and, what was probably more important for his own development, with the philosophical writings of Ibn Ezra and Maimonides, Levi ben Gerson, Chasdai Creskas, and other representatives of Jewish medizeval thought, who aim at combining the traditional theology with ideas got from Aristotle and his Neoplatonic commentators. Latin, still the universal language of learning, formed no part of Jewish education; and Spinoza, after learning the elements from a German master, resorted for further in- struction to a physician named Franz van den Ende, who eked out an income by taking pupils. Van den Ende appears to have been distinctly a man of parts, though of a somewhat indiscreet and erratic character. He was eventually hanged in Paris as a conspirator in 1674. His enthusiasm for the natural sciences may have been the only ground for the reputation he had acquired of instilling atheistic notions into the minds of his pupils along with the Latin which he taught them. But it is quite possible that his scientific studies had bred in him, as in many others at that time, a materialistic, or at least a naturalistic, turn of mind ; indeed we should expect as much in a man of Van den Ende's somewhat rebellious temperament. We do not know whether his influence was brought to bear in this sense upon Spinoza; but it has been suggested that the writings of Bruno, whose spirit of enthusiastic natural- ism and fervid revolt against the church would be especially dear to a man of Van den Ende's leanings, may have been put into the pupil's hand by the master. Latin, at all events, Spinoza learned from Van den Ende to use with correctness, freedom, and force, though his language does not, of course, conform to classical canons. The only romance of Spinoza's life is connected with Van den Ende's household. The physician had an only daughter, Clara Maria by name, who, besides being a proficient in music, understood Latin, it is said, so perfectly that she was able to teach her father's pupils in his absence. Spinoza, the story goes, fell in love with his fair instructress; but a fellow-student, called Kerkering, supplanted him in his mistress's affections by the help of a valuable necklace of pearls which he presented to the young lady. Chronology unfortunately forbids us to

accept this little episode as true. Recent investigation has proved that, while the marriage with Kerkering, or rather Kerckkrink, is a fact, it did not take place till 1671, in which year the bride, as appears by the register, was twenty-seven years of age. She cannot, therefore, have been more than eleven or twelve in 1656, the year in which Spinoza left Amsterdam; and as Kerckkrink was seven years younger than Spinoza, they cannot well have been simultaneous pupils of Van den Ende and simultaneous suitors for his daughter's hand. But, though the details of the story thus fall to pieces, it is still possible that in the five years which followed his retirement from Amsterdam Spinoza, who was living within easy distance and paid visits to the city from time to tie, may have kept up his connexion with Van den

Ende, and that the attachment may have dated from this later period. This would at least be some explanation for the existence of the story; for Colerus expressly says that Spinoza "often confessed that he meant to marry her." But beyond possibility we cannot go in the matter. There is no mention of the Van den Endes in Spinoza's correspondence; and in the whole tenor of his life and character there is nothing on which to fasten the prob- ability of a romantic attachment.

The mastery of Latin which he acquired from Van den Ende opened up to Spinoza the whole world of modern philosophy and science, both represented at that time by the writings of Descartes. He read him greedily, says Colerus, and afterwards often declared that he had all his philosophical knowledge from him. The impulse towards natural science which he had received from Van den Ende would be strengthened by the reading of Descartes; he gave over divinity, we are told, to devote himself entirely to these new studies. His inward break with Jewish orthodoxy dated, no doubt, farther back,—from his ac- quaintance with the philosophical theologians and com- mentators of the Middle Ages; but these new interests combined to estrange him still further from the traditions of the synagogue. He was seldomer seen at its services,— soon not at all. The jealousy of the heads of the synagogue was easily roused. An attempt seems to have been made to draw from him his real opinions on certain prominent points of divinity. Two so-called friends endeavoured, on the plea of doubts of their own, to

lead him into a theo- logical discussion ; and, some of Spinoza's expressions being repeated to the Jewish authorities, he was summoned to give an account of himself. Anxious to retain so promising an adherent, and probably desirous at the same time to avoid public scandal, the chiefs of the community offered him a yearly pension of 1000 florins if he would outwardly conform and appear now and then in the synagogue. But such deliberate hypocrisy was abhorrent to Spinoza's nature. Threats were equally unavailing, and accordingly on the 27th of July 1656 Spinoza was solemnly cut off from the commonwealth of Israel. The curses pronounced against him may be read in most of the biographies. While negotiations were still pending, he had been set upon one evening by a fanatical ruffian, who thought to expedite matters with the dagger. Warned by this that Amsterdam was hardly a safe place of residence for him any longer, Spinoza had already left the city before the sentence of excommunication was pronounced. He did not go far, but took up his abode with a friend who lived some miles out on the Old Church road. His host belonged to the Col- legiants or Rhijnsburgers, a religious society which had sprung up among the proscribed Arminians of Holland. The pure morality and simple-minded piety of this com- munity seem early to have attracted Spinoza, and to have won his unfeigned respect. Several of his friends were Collegiants, or belonged to the similarly-minded community of the Mennonites, in which the Collegiants were after- wards merged. In this quiet retreat Spinoza spent nearly five years. He drew up a protest against the decree of excommunication, but otherwise it left him unmoved. From this time forward he disused his Hebrew name of Baruch, adopting instead the Latin equivalent, Benedictus. Like every Jew, Spinoza had learned a handicraft; he was a grinder of lenses for optical instruments, and was thus enabled to earn an income sufficient for his modest wants. His skill, indeed, was such that lenses of his making were much sought after, and those found in his cabinet after his death fetched a high price. It was as an optician that he was first brought into connexion with Huygens and Leibnitz; and an optical J'reatise on the Rainbow, written by him and long supposed to be lost, has been recently

a a

SPINOZA

discovered and reprinted by Dr Van Vloten. He was also fond of drawing as an amusement in his leisure hours; and Colerus had seen a sketch-book full of such drawings representing persons of Spinoza's acquaintance, one of them being a likeness of himself in the character of Masaniello. oe. The five years which followed the excommunication must have been devoted to concentrated thought and study. Before their conclusion Spinoza had parted company from Descartes, and the leading positions of his own system were already clearly determined in his mind. A number of the younger men in Amsterdam—many of them students of medicine or medical practitioners—had also come to regard him as their intellectual leader. A kind of philosophical club had been formed, including among its members Simon de Vries, John Bresser, Louis Meyer, and others who appear in Spinoza's correspondence. Originally meet- ing in all probability for more thoroughgoing study of the Cartesian philosophy, they looked naturally to Spinoza for guidance, and by-and-by we find him communicating systematic drafts of his own views to the little band of friends and students. 'The manuscript was read out and discussed at their meetings, and any points remaining obscure were referred to Spinoza for further explanation. An interesting specimen of such difficulties, propounded by Simon de Vries and resolved by Spinoza in accordance with his own principles, is preserved for us in Spinoza's correspondence. This Simon de Vries was a youth of generous impulses and of much promise. Being in good circumstances, he was anxious to show his gratitude to Spinoza by a gift of 2000 florins, which the philosopher half-jestingly excused himself from accepting. De Vries died young, and would fain have left his fortune to Spinoza ; but the latter re- fused to stand in the way of his brother, the natural heir, to whom the property was accordingly left, with the con- dition that he should pay to Spinoza an annuity sufficient for his maintenance. The heir offered to fix the amount at 500 florins, but Spinoza accepted only 300, a sum which was regularly paid till his death. The written communica- tions of his own doctrine referred to above belong to a period after Spinoza had removed from the neighbourhood of Amsterdam ; but it has been conjectured that the Short Treatise on God, on Man, and his Wellbeing, which repre- sents his thoughts in their earliest systematic form, was left by him as a parting legacy to this group of friends. It is at least certain, from a reference in Spinoza's first letter to Oldenburg, that such a systematic exposition was in existence before September 1661.1 There are two dialogues somewhat

loosely incorporated with the work which probably belong to a still earlier period. The short appendix, in which the attempt is made to present the chief points of the argument in geometrical form, is a fore- tunner of the Hthics, and was probably written somewhat later than the rest of the book. The term “Nature” is put more into the foreground in the Treatise, a point which might be urged as evidence of Bruno’s influence,—the dialogues, moreover, being specially concerned to establish the unity, infinity, and self-containedness of Nature? s but

1 Various manuscript copies were apparently made of the treatise in question, but it was not printed, and dropped entirely out of knowledge till 1852, when Edward Bohmer of Halle lighted upon an abstract of it attached to a copy of Colerus’s Life, and shortly afterwards upon a Dutch MS. purporting to be a translation of the treatise from the Latin original, This was published in 1862 by Van Vloten with a re-transla- tion into Latin, Since then a superior Dutch translation has been discovered, which has been edited by Professor Schaarschmidt and translated into German. Another German version with introduction and notes has been published by Sigwart based on a comparison of the two Dutch MSS,

- The fact that Spinoza nowhere mentions Bruno would not imply, according to the literary habits of those days, that he was not acquainted with his speculations and even indebted to them. There is no mention,

the two opposed Cartesian attributes, thought and exten- sion, and the absolutely infinite substance whose attributes they are—substance constituted by infinite attributes— appear here as in the Hthics. The latter notion—of sub- stance—is said to correspond exactly to “the essence of the only glorious and blessed God.” The earlier differs from the later exposition in allowing an objective causal relation between thought and extension, for which there is substituted in the Zthics the idea of a thoroughgoing parallelism,

Karly in 1661 Spinoza’s host removed to Rhijnsburg near Leyden, the headquarters of the Collegiant brother- hood, and Spinoza removed with

him. The house where they lived at Rhijnsburg is still standing, and the road bears the name of Spinoza Lane. Very soon after his settlement in his new quarters he was sought out by Henry Oldenburg, the first secretary of the Royal Society.2 Olden- burg became Spinoza's most regular correspondent, —a third of the letters preserved to us are to or from him; and it appears from his first letter that their talk on this occasion was "fon God, on infinite extension and thought, on the difference and the agreement of these attributes, on the nature of the union of the human soul with the body, as well as concerning the principles of the Cartesian and Baconian philosophies." Spinoza must therefore have unbosomed himself pretty freely to his visitor on the main points of his system. Oldenburg, however, was a man of no speculative capacity, and, to judge from his subsequent correspondence, must have quite failed to grasp the real import and scope of the thoughts communicated to him. From one of Oldenburg's early letters we learn that the treatise De Intellectus Emendatione was probably Spinoza's first occupation at Rhijnsburg. The nature of the work also bears out the supposition that it was first undertaken. It is, in a manner, Spinoza's " organon,"—the doctrine of method which he would substitute for the corresponding doctrines of Bacon and Descartes, as alone consonant with the thoughts which were shaping themselves or had shaped themselves in his mind. It is a theory of philosophical truth and error, involving an account of the course of philosophical inquiry and of the supreme object of know- ledge. It was apparently intended by the author as an analytical introduction to the constructive exposition of his system, which he presently essayed in the Zthics. But he must have found as he proceeded that the two treatises would cover to a large extent the same ground, the account of the true method merging almost inevitably in a state- for example, of Hobbes throughout Spinoza's political writing, and only one casual reference to him in a letter, although the obligation of the Dutch to the English thinker lies on the surface. Accordingly full weight must be allowed to the internal evidence brought forward by Sigwart and others to prove Spinoza's acquaintance with Bruno's writings. But in regard to this question, and in regard to the elaborate researches directed to prove that the main determinations of Spinoza's thought are anticipated in the medieval philosophers of his own race, it must be said that these investigations are of comparatively little vital interest. Doubtless Spinoza's thought was coloured by his Hebraic origin and his Hebraic studies ; from these sources, above

all, he may have brought with him to the study of the dualistically expressed philosophy of Descartes the need, and the profound conviction, of unity. But the main strain of Spinoza's thought is sufficiently explained by reference to the Cartesian philosophy itself, the intellectual miliey of the time. Descartes's metaphysics can be shown to lead us to the very threshold of Spinoza's system ; not only the general form, but the very terminology—substance, attributes, and modes—lay waiting to be appropriated by an independent student.

3 Henry Oldenburg (c. 1626-1678) was a native of Bremen, but had settled in England in the time of the Commonwealth. Though hardly a scientific man himself, he had a genuine interest in science, and must have possessed social gifts. He was the friend of Boyle, and acquainted with most of the leaders of science in England as well as with many on the Continent. He delighted to keep himself in this way au courant with the latest developments, and lost no opportunity of establishing relations with men of scientific reputation. It was probably at the suggestion of Huygens that he bent his steps towards Spinoza's lodging.

longed to the community of Jewish emigrants from Portugal and Spain who, fleeing from Catholic persecution in the Peninsula, had sought refuge in the nearly emancipated Netherlands. The name, variously written De Spinoza, D'Espinoza, and Despinoza, probably points to the pro- vince of Leon as the previous home of the family; there are no fewer than five townships so called in the neigh- bourhood of Burgos. Of the philosopher's parents nothing is known. His father is said to have been a tradesman in fair circumstances, and the house is still shown upon the Burgwal where his son Baruch was born; two sisters, Rebekah and Miriam, formed the remainder of the family. Spinoza received his first training under the senior rabbi, Saul Levi Morteira, whose most promising pupil he soon became. Under Morteira he became familiar with the Talmud and, what was probably more important for his own development, with the philosophical writings of Ibn Ezra and Maimonides, Levi ben Gerson, Chasdai Creskas, and other representatives of Jewish medizval thought, who aim at combining the

traditional theology with ideas got from Aristotle and his Neoplatonic commentators. Latin, still the universal language of learning, formed no part of Jewish education; and Spinoza, after learning the elements from a German master, resorted for further in- struction to a physician named Franz van den Ende, who eked out an income by taking pupils. Van den Ende appears to have been distinctly a man of parts, though of a somewhat indiscreet and erratic character. He was eventually hanged in Paris as a conspirator in 1674. His enthusiasm for the natural sciences may have been the only ground for the reputation he had acquired of instilling atheistic notions into the minds of his pupils along with the Latin which he taught them. But it is quite possible that his scientific studies had bred in him, as in many others at that time, a materialistic, or at least a naturalistic, turn of mind ; indeed we should expect as much in a man of Van den Ende's somewhat rebellious temperament. We do not know whether his influence was brought to bear in this sense upon Spinoza; but it has been suggested that the writings of Bruno, whose spirit of enthusiastic natural- ism and fervid revolt against the church would be especially dear to a man of Van den Ende's leanings, may have been put into the pupil's hand by the master. Latin, at all events, Spinoza learned from Van den Ende to use with correctness, freedom, and force, though his language does not, of course, conform to classical canons. The only romance of Spinoza's life is connected with Van den Ende's household. The physician had an only daughter, Clara Maria by name, who, besides being a proficient in music, understood Latin, it is said, so perfectly that she was able to teach her father's pupils in his absence. Spinoza, the story goes, fell in love with his fair instructress; but a fellow-student, called Kerkering, supplanted him in his mistress's affections by the help of a valuable necklace of pearls which he presented to the young lady. Chronology unfortunately forbids us to accept this little episode as true. Recent investigation has proved that, while the marriage with Kerkering, or rather Kerckkrink, is a fact, it did not take place till 1671, in which year the bride, as appears by the register, was twenty-seven years of age. She cannot, therefore, have been more than eleven or twelve in 1656, the year in which Spinoza left Amsterdam; and as Kerckkrink was seven years younger than Spinoza, they cannot well have been simultaneous pupils of Van den Ende and simultaneous suitors for his daughter's hand. But, though the details of the story thus fall to pieces, it is still possible that in the five years which followed his retirement from

Amsterdam Spinoza, who was living within easy distance and paid visits to the city from time to time, may have kept up his connexion with Van den

Ende, and that the attachment may have dated from this later period. This would at least be some explanation for the existence of the story; for Colerus expressly says that Spinoza ‘often confessed that he meant to marry her.” But beyond possibility we cannot go in the matter. There is no mention of the Van den Endes in Spinoza’s correspondence; and in the whole tenor of his life and character there is nothing on which to fasten the prob- ability of a romantic attachment.

The mastery of Latin which he acquired from Van den Ende opened up to Spinoza the whole world of modern philosophy and science, both represented at that time by the writings of Descartes. He read him greedily, says Colerus, and afterwards often declared that he had all his philosophical knowledge from him. The impulse towards natural science which he had received from Van den Ende would be strengthened by the reading of Descartes; he gave over divinity, we are told, to devote himself entirely to these new studies. His inward break with Jewish orthodoxy dated, no doubt, farther back,—from his ac- quaintance with the philosophical theologians and com- mentators of the Middle Ages; but these new interests combined to estrange him still further from the traditions of the synagogue. He was seldomer seen at its services,— soon not at all. The jealousy of the heads of the synagogue was easily roused. An attempt seems to have been made to draw from him his real opinions on certain prominent points of divinity. Two so-called friends endeavoured, on the plea of doubts of their own, to lead him into a theo- logical discussion; and, some of Spinoza’s expressions being repeated to the Jewish authorities, he was summoned to give an account of himself. Anxious to retain so promising an adherent, and probably desirous at the same time to avoid public scandal, the chiefs of the community offered him a yearly pension of 1000 florins if he would outwardly conform and appear now and then in the synagogue. But such deliberate hypocrisy was abhorrent to Spinoza’s nature. Threats were equally unavailing, and accordingly on the 27th of July 1656 Spinoza was solemnly cut off from the commonwealth of Israel. The curses pronounced

against him may be read in most of the biographies. While negotiations were still pending, he had been set upon one evening by a fanatical ruffian, who thought to expedite matters with the dagger. Warned by this that Amsterdam was hardly a safe place of residence for him any longer, Spinoza had already left the city before the sentence of excommunication was pronounced. He did not go far, but took up his abode with a friend who lived some miles out on the Old Church road. His host belonged to the Collegiants or Rhijnsburgers, a religious society which had sprung up among the proscribed Arminians of Holland. The pure morality and simple-minded piety of this com- munity seem early to have attracted Spinoza, and to have won his unfeigned respect. Several of his friends were Collegiants, or belonged to the similarly-minded community of the Mennonites, in which the Collegiants were after- wards merged. In this quiet retreat Spinoza spent nearly five years. He drew up a protest against the decree of excommunication, but otherwise it left him unmoved. From this time forward he disused his Hebrew name of Baruch, adopting instead the Latin equivalent, Benedictus. Like every Jew, Spinoza had learned a handicraft; he was a grinder of lenses for optical instruments, and was thus enabled to earn an income sufficient for his modest wants. His skill, indeed, was such that lenses of his making were much sought after, and those found in his cabinet after his death fetched a high price. It was as an optician that he was first brought into connexion with Huygens and Leibnitz; and an optical T'reatise on the Rainbow, written by him and long supposed to be lost, has been recently

discovered and reprinted by Dr Van Vloten. He was also fond of drawing as an amusement in his leisure hours; and Colerus had seen a sketch-book full of such drawings representing persons of Spinoza's acquaintance, one of them being a likeness of himself in the character of Masaniello.

The five years which followed the excommunication must have been devoted to concentrated thought and study. Before their conclusion Spinoza had parted company from Descartes, and the leading positions of his own system were already clearly determined in his mind. A number of the younger men in Amsterdam—many of them students of medicine or

medical practitioners—had also come to regard him as their intellectual leader. A kind of philo- sophical club had been formed, including among its members Simon de Vries, John Bresser, Louis Meyer, and others who appear in Spinoza's correspondence. Originally meet- ing in all probability for more thoroughgoing study of the Cartesian philosophy, they looked naturally to Spinoza for guidance, and by-and-by we find him communicating sys- tematic drafts of his own views to the little band of friends and students. 'The manuscript was read out and discussed at their meetings, and any points remaining obscure were referred to Spinoza for further explanation. An interesting specimen of such difficulties, propounded by Simon de Vries and resolved by Spinoza in accordance with his own principles, is preserved for us in Spinoza's correspondence. This Simon de Vries was a youth of generous impulses and of much promise. Being in good circumstances, he was anxious to show his gratitude to Spinoza by a gift of 2000 florins, which the philosopher half-jestingly excused himself from accepting. De Vries died young, and would fain have left his fortune to Spinoza; but the latter re- fused to stand in the way of his brother, the natural heir, to whom the property was accordingly left, with the con- dition that he should pay to Spinoza an annuity sufficient for his maintenance. The heir offered to fix the amount at 500 florins, but Spinoza accepted only 300, a sum which was regularly paid till his death. The written communica- tions of his own doctrine referred to above belong to a period after Spinoza had removed from the neighbourhood of Amsterdam ; but it has been conjectured that the Short Treatise on God, on Man, and his Wellbeing, which repre- sents his thoughts in their earliest systematic form, was left by him as a parting legacy to this group of friends. It is at least certain, from a reference in Spinoza's first letter to Oldenburg, that such a systematic exposition was in existence before September 1661.1 There are two dialogues somewhat loosely incorporated with the work which probably belong to a still earlier period: The short appendix, in which the attempt is made to present the chief points of the argument in geometrical form, is a fore- Tunner of the Lthics, and was probably written somewhat later than the rest of the book. The term "Nature" is put more into the foreground in the 7'reatise, a point which might be urged as evidence of Bruno's influence,—the dialogues, moreover, being specially concerned to establish the unity, infinity, and self-containedness of Nature? ; but Sareea ie calle Maa

1 Various manuscript copies were apparently made of the treatise in question, but it was not printed, and dropped entirely out of knowledge till 1852, when Edward Bohmer of Halle lighted upon an abstract of ib attached to a copy of Colerus's Life, and shortly afterwards upon a Dutch MS. purporting to be a translation of the treatise from the Latin original, This was published in 1862 by Van Vloten with a re-transla- tion into Latin. Since then a superior Dutch translation has been discovered, which has been edited by Professor Schaarschmidt and translated into German. Another German version with introduction and notes has been published by Sigwart based on a comparison of the two Dutch MSS.

- The fact that Spinoza nowhere mentions Bruno would not imply, according to the literary habits of those days, that he was not acquainted with his speculations and even indebted to them, 'There is no mention,

the two opposed Cartesian attributes, thought and exten- sion, and the absolutely infinite substance whose attributes they are—substance constituted by infinite attributes— appear here as in the Ethics. The latter notion—of sub- stance—is said to correspond exactly to "the essence of the only glorious and blessed God." 'The earlier differs from the later exposition in allowing an objective causal relation between thought and extension, for which there is substituted in the Lthics the idea of a thoroughgoing parallelism.

Early in 1661 Spinoza's host removed to Rhijnsburg near Leyden, the headquarters of the Collegiant brother- hood, and Spinoza removed with him. The house where they lived at Rhijnsburg is still standing, and the road bears the name of Spinoza Lane. Very soon after his settlement in his new quarters he was sought out by Henry Oldenburg, the first secretary of the Royal Society.2 Olden- burg became Spinoza's most regular correspondent, —a third of the letters preserved to us are to or from him; and it appears from his first letter that their talk on this occasion was 'on God, on infinite extension and thought, on the difference and the agreement of these attributes, on the nature of the union of the human soul with the body, as well as concerning the principles of the Cartesian and Baconian

philosophies.” Spinoza must therefore have unbosomed himself pretty freely to his visitor on the main points of his system. Oldenburg, however, was a man of no speculative capacity, and, to judge from his subsequent correspondence, must have quite failed to grasp the real import and scope of the thoughts communicated to him. From one of Oldenburg’s early letters we learn that the treatise De Intellectus Emendatione was probably Spinoza’s first occupation at Rhijnsburg. The nature of the work also bears out the supposition that it was first undertaken. It is, in a manner, Spinoza’s “ organon,”—the doctrine of method which he would substitute for the corresponding doctrines of Bacon and Descartes, as alone consonant with the thoughts which were shaping themselves or had shaped themselves in his mind. It is a theory of philosophical truth and error, involving an account of the course of philosophical inquiry and of the supreme object of know- ledge. It was apparently intended by the author as an analytical introduction to the constructive exposition of his system, which he presently essayed in the Zthics. But he must have found as he proceeded that the two treatises would cover to a large extent the same ground, the account of the true method merging almost inevitably in a state- for example, of Hobbes throughout Spinoza’s political writing, and only one casual reference to him in a letter, although the obligation of the Dutch to the English thinker lies on the surface. Accordingly full weight must be allowed to the internal evidence brought forward by Sigwart and others to prove Spinoza’s acquaintance with Bruno’s writings. But in regard to this question, and in regard to the elaborate researches directed to prove that the main determinations of Spinoza’s thought are anticipated in the medieval philosophers of his own race, it must be said that these investigations are of comparatively little vital interest. Doubtless Spinoza’s thought was coloured by his Hebraic origin and his Hebraic studies ; from these sources, above all, he may have brought with him to the study of the dualistically expressed philosophy of Descartes the need, and the profound conviction, of unity. But the main strain of Spinoza’s thought is sufficiently explained by reference to the Cartesian philosophy itself, the intellectual miliey of the time. Descartes’s metaphysics can be shown to lead us to the very threshold of Spinoza’s system; not only the general form, but the very terminology—substance, attributes, and modes—lay waiting to be appropriated by an independent student.

3 Henry Oldenburg (c. 1626-1678) was a native of Bremen, but had settled in England in the time of the Commonwealth. Though hardly a scientific man himself, he had a genuine interest in science, and must have possessed social gifts. He was the friend of Boyle, and acquainted with most of the leaders of science in England as well as with many on the Continent. He delighted to keep himself in this way aw courant with the latest developments, and lost no opportunity of establishing relations with men of scientific reputation. It was probably at the suggestion of Huygens that he bent his steps towards Spinoza's lodging.

fat — sa

ment of the truth reached by its means. The Amendment of the Understanding was therefore put aside unfinished, and was first published in the Opera Posthuma. Spinoza meanwhile concentrated his attention upon the Hthies, and we learn from the correspondence with his Amsterdam friends that a considerable part of book i. had been com- municated to the philosophical club there before February 1663. It formed his main occupation for two or three years after this date. Though thus giving his friends freely of his best, Spinoza did not cast his thoughts broad- cast upon any soil. He had a pupil living with him at Rhijnsburg whose character seemed to him lacking in solidity and discretion. This pupil (probably Albert Burgh, who afterwards joined the Church of Rome and penned a foolishly insolent epistle to his former teacher) was the occasion of Spinoza's first publication,—the only publi- cation indeed to which his name was attached. Not deeming it prudent to initiate the young man into his own system, he took for a text-book the second and third parts of Descartes's Principles, which deal in the main with natural philosophy. As he proceeded he put Descartes's matter in his own language and cast the whole arguinent into a geometric form. At the request of his friends he devoted a fortnight to applying the same method to the first or metaphysical part of Descartes's philosophy, and the sketch was published in 1663, with an appendix entitled Cogitata Metaphysica, still written from a Cartesian standpoint (defending, for example, the freedom of the will), but con- taining hints of his own doctrine. The book was revised by Dr Meyer for

publication and furnished by him, at Spinoza's request, with a preface, in which it is expressly stated that the author speaks throughout not in his own person but simply as the exponent of Descartes. A Dutch translation appeared in the following year.!

In 1663 Spinoza removed from Rhijnsburg to Voor- burg, a suburban village about 2 miles from The Hague. His reputation had continued to spread. From Rhijnsburg he had paid frequeut visits to The Hague, and it was prob- ably the desire to be within reach of some of the friends he had made in these visits—among others the De Witts —that prompted his change of residence. He had works in hand, moreover, which he wished in due time to publish ; and in that connexion the friendly patronage of the De Witts might be of essential service to him. The first years at Voorburg continued to be occupied by the composition of the Hthics, which was probably finished, however, by the summer of 1665. A journey made to Amsterdam in that year is conjectured to have had reference to its publication. But, finding that it would be impossible to keep the authorship secret, owing to the numerous hands through which parts of the book had already passed, Spinoza determined to keep his manuscript in his desk for the present. In September 1665 we find Oldenburg twit- ting him with having turned from philosophy to theology and busying himself with angels, prophecy, and miracles. This is the first reference to the Z'ractatus Theologico- Politicus, which formed his chief occupation for the next four years. The aim of this treatise may be best under- stood from the full title with which it was furnished— 7Z'rac- tatus Theologico-Politicus, continens dissertationes aliquot, quibus ostenditur libertatem philosophandi non tantum salva pretate et reipublice pace posse concedi sed eandem nisi cum pace reipublice ipsaque pietate tolli non posse. It is, in fact, an eloquently reasoned defence of liberty of thought and speech in speculative matters. The external side of religion—its rites and observances—must of necessity be

1 The title of the Latin original ran—Renati des Cartes Prineipiorum Philosophixw pars i. et ii. more geometrico demonstrate per Benedictum de Spinoza Amstelodamensem. Accesserunt ejusdem Cogitata Meta- physica.

subject to a certain control on the part of the state, whose business it is to see to the preservation of decency and order. But, with such obvious exceptions, Spinoza claims complete freedom of expression for thought and belief ; and he claims it in the interests alike of true piety and of the state itself. The thesis is less interesting to a modern reader—because now generally acknowledged—than the argument by which it is supported. Spinoza's position is based upon the thoroughgoing distinction drawn in the book between philosophy, which has to do with knowledge and opinion, and theology, or, as we should now say, reli- gion, which has to do exclusively with obedience and con- duct. The xgis of religion, therefore, cannot be employed to cover with its authority any speculative doctrine; nor, on the other hand, can any speculative or scientific investiga- tion be regarded as putting religion in jeopardy. Spinoza undertakes to prove his case by the instance of the Hebrew Scriptures. Scripture deals, he maintains, in none but the simplest precepts, nor does it aim at anything beyond the obedient mind ; it tells us nought of the divine nature, but what men may profitably apply to their lives. The greater part of the treatise is devoted to working out this line of thought ; and in so doing Spinoza consistently applies to the interpretation of the Old Testament those canons of historical exegesis which are often regarded as of compara- tively recent growth. The treatise thus constitutes the first document in the modern science of Biblical criticism. It was published in 1670, anonymously, printer and place of publication being likewise disguised (Hamburgi apud Hein- ricum Kiinraht). The storm of opposition which it encoun- tered showed that these precautions were not out of place, It was synodically condemned along with Hobbes's Lewa- than and other books as early as April 1671, and was con- sequently interdicted by the states-general of Holland in 1674; before long it was also placed on the Index by the Catholic authorities. But that it was widely read appears from its frequent re-issue with false title-pages, represent- ing it now as an historical work and again as a medical treatise. Controversialists also crowded into the lists against it. A translation into Dutch appears to have been proposed; but Spinoza, who foresaw that such a step would only increase the commotion which was so distasteful to him, steadily set his face against it. No Dutch translation appeared till 1693.

The same year in which the Zreatise was published Spinoza removed from his suburban lodging at Voorburg into The Hague itself. He took rooms first

on the Veerkay with the widow Van de Velde, who in her youth had assisted Grotius to escape from his captivity at Loewenstein. This was the house afterwards occupied by Colerus, the worthy Lutheran minister who became Spinoza's biographer. But the widow insisted on boarding her lodger, and Spinoza presently found the expense too great for his slender purse. He accordingly removed to a house on the Pavelioen Gracht near at hand, occupied by a painter called Van der Spijck. Here he spent the remaining years of his life in the frugal independence which he prized. Colerus gives particulars which enable us to realize the almost incredible simplicity and economy of his mode of life. He would say sometimes to the people of the house that he was like the serpent who forms a circle with his tail in his mouth, meaning thereby that he had nothing left at the year's end. His friends came to visit him in his lodgings, as well as others attracted by his reputation—Leibnitz among the rest—and were courteously entertained, but Spinoza preferred not to accept their offers of hospitality. He spent the greater part of his time quietly in his own chamber, often having his meals brought there and sometimes not leaving it for two or three days together when absorbed in his studies. On one occasion he did not leave the house for three

months. '" When he happened to be tired by having applied himself too much to his philosophical meditations, he would go downstairs to refresh himself, and discoursed with the Van der Spijcks about anything that might afford matter for an ordinary conversation, and even about trifles, He also took pleasure in smoking a pipe of tobacco ; or, when he had a mind to divert himself somewhat longer, he looked for some spiders and made them fight together,

or he threw some flies into the cobweb, and was so well"

pleased with the result of that battle that he would some- times break into laughter" (Colerus). He also conversed at times on more serious topics with the simple people with whom he lodged, often, for example, talking over the sermon with them when they came from church. He occasionally went himself to hear the Lutheran pastor preach—the predecessor of Colerus—and would advise the Van der Spijcks not to miss any sermon of so

excellent a preacher. The children, too, he put in mind of going often to church, and taught them to be obedient and dutiful to their parents. One day his landlady, who may have heard strange stories of her solitary lodger, came to him in some trouble to ask him whether he believed she could be saved in the religion she professed. ‘‘Your religion is a good one,” said Spinoza; ‘you need not look for another, nor doubt that you will be saved in it, provided that, while you apply yourself to piety, you live at the same time a peace- able and quiet life.” Only once, it is recorded, did Spinoza’s admirable self-control give way, and that was when he received the news of the murder of the De Witts by a frantic mob in the streets of The Hague. It was in the year 1672, when the sudden invasion of the Low Countries by Louis XIV. raised an irresistible clamour for a military leader and overthrew the republican constitution for which the De Witts had struggled. John De Witt had been Spinoza’s friend, and had bestowed a small pension upon him ; he had Spinoza’s full sympathy in his political aims. On receiving the news of the brutal murder of the two brothers, Spinoza burst into tears, and his indignation was so roused that he was bent upon publicly denouncing the crime upon the spot where it had been committed. But the timely caution of his host prevented his issuing forth to almost certain death. Not long after Spinoza was himself in danger from the mob, in consequence of a visit which he paid to the French camp. He had been in correspondence with one Colonel Stoupe, a Swiss theologian and soldier, then serving with the prince of Condé, the commander of the French army at Utrecht. From him Spinoza received a communication enclosing a passport from the French commander, who wished to make his acquaintance and promised him a pension from the French king at the easy price of a dedication to his majesty. Spinoza went to Utrecht, but returned without seeing Condé, who had in the meantime been called elsewhere ; the pension he civilly declined. There may have been nothing more in the visit than is contained in this narra- tive; but on his return Spinoza found that the populace of The Hague regarded him as no better than a spy. The town was full of angry murmurs, and the landlord feared that the mob would storm his house and drag Spinoza out. Spinoza quieted his fears as well as he could, assuring him that as soon as the crowd made any threatening move- ment he would go out to meet them, “though they should Serve me as they did the poor De Witts. I am a good tepublican and have never had any aim

but the honour and welfare of the state.” Happily the danger passed off without calling for such an ordeal.

In 1673 Spinoza received an invitation from the elector palatine to quit his retirement and become professor of philosophy in the university of Heidelberg. The offer Was couched in flattering terms, and conveyed an express

assurance of ‘‘ the largest freedom of speech in philosophy, which the prince is confident that you will not misuse to disturb the established religion.” But Spinoza’s experience of theological sensitiveness led him to doubt the possibility of keeping on friendly terms with the established religion, if he were placed in a public capacity. Moreover, he was not strong; he had had no experience of public teaching ; and he foresaw that the duties of a chair would put an end to private research. For all these reasons he court- eously declined the offer made to him. There is little more to tell of his life of solitary meditation. In 1675 we learn from his correspondence that he entertained the idea of publishing the Hthics, and made a journey to Amsterdam to arrange matters with the printer. “But, whilst I was busy with this,” he writes, “the report was spread everywhere that a certain book of mine was in the press, wherein I endeavoured to show that there was no God; and this report found credence with many. Where- upon certain theologians (themselves perhaps the authors of it) took occasion to complain of me to the prince and the magistrates ; moreover, the stupid Cartesians, because they are commonly supposed to side with me, desiring to free themselves from that suspicion, were diligent without ceasing in their execrations of my doctrines and writings, and are as diligent still.” As the commotion seemed to grow worse instead of subsiding, Spinoza consigned the manuscript once more to his desk, from which it was not to issue till after his death. His last literary work was the unfinished Zractatus Politicus and the preparation of notes for a new edition of the Z’ractatus Theologico-Politi- cus, in which he hoped to remove some of the misunder- standings which the book had met with. The Zractatus Politicus develops his philosophy of law and government on the lines indicated in his other works, and connects itself closely with the theory enunciated by

Hobbes a generation before. Consumption had been making its insidious inroads upon Spinoza for many years, and early in 1677 he must have been conscious that he was seriously ill. On Saturday the 20th of February he sent to Amsterdam for his friend Dr Meyer. On the following day the Van der Spijcks, having no thought of immediate danger, went to the afternoon service. When they came back Spinoza was no more; he had died about three in the afternoon with Meyer for the only witness of his last moments. Spinoza was buried on the 25th of February "in the new church upon the Spuy, being attended," Colerus tells us, "by many illustrious persons and followed by six coaches." He was little more than forty-four years of age.

Spinoza's effects were few and realized little more than was re- quired for the payment of charges and outstanding debts. '' One need only cast one's eyes upon the account," says his biographer, '*to perceive that it was the inventory of a true philosopher. It contains only some small books, some engravings, a few lenses, and the instruments to polish them." His desk, containing his letters and his unpublished works, Spinoza had previonsly charged his landlord to convey to Jan Rienwertz, a publisher in Amsterdam. This was done, and the Opera Posthuma appeared in the same year, without the author's name, but with his initials upon the title- page. They were furnished with a preface written in Dutch by Jarig Jellis, a Mennonite friend of Spinoza's, and translated into Latin by Dr Meyer. Next year the book was proscribed in a violently worded edict by the states of Holland and West Friesland. The obloquy which thus gathered ronnd Spinoza in the later years of his life remained settled upon his memory for a full hundred years after his death. Hume's casual allusion to ''this famous atheist " and his '' hideous hypothesis" is a fair specimen of the tone in which he is usually referred to; people talked about Spinoza, Lessing said, ''as if he were a dead dog." The change of opinion in this respect may be dated from Lessing's famous con- versation with Jacobi in 1780. Lessing, Goethe, Herder, Novalis, and Schleiermacher, not to mention philosophers like Schelling and Hegel, united in recognizing the unique strength and sincerity of Spinoza's thought, and in setting him in his rightful place among the speculative leaders of mankind. Transfused into their writings, his spirit has had a large share in moulding the philosophic thought

of the 19th century, and it has also been widely influential beyond the schools. Instead of his atheism Hegel speaks of his acosmism, and Novalis dubs him a God-intoxicated man. Schleiermacher's fine apostrophe is well known, in which he calls upon us to ‘‘ offer a lock of hair to the manes of the holy and excommunicated Spinoza.”

Spinoza's personal appearance is described by Colerus from the accounts given him by many people at The Hague who knew him familiarly. ‘‘Hce was of a middle size, and had good features in his face, the skin somewhat dark, black curled hair, and the long eyebrows of the same colour, so that one might easily know from his looks that he was descended from the Portuguese Jews.” Leibnitz also gives a similar description: ‘‘The celebrated Jew Spinoza had an olive complexion and something Spanish in his face.” These characteristics are preserved in a portrait in oil in the Wolfenbiittel library, which was probably the original of the (in that case unsuccessfully rendered) engraving prefixed to the Opera Posthuma of 1677. This portrait has recently been photo- graphed for Dr Martineau's Study of Spinoza. In 1880 a statue was erected to Spinoza at The Hague by international subscription among his admirers.

Spinoza's philosophy is a thoroughgoing pantheism, which has both a naturalistic and a mystical side. The foundation of the system is the doctrine of one infinite substancc, of which all finite existences are modes or limitations (modes of thought or modes of extension). God is thus the immanent cause of the universe ; but of creation or will there can be no question in Spinoza's system. God is used throughout as equivalent to nature (Deus sive natura). The philosophical standpoint comprehends the necessity of all that is—a necessity that is none other than the necessity of the divine nature itself. To view things thus is to view them, according to Spinoza's favourite phrase, swb specie xternitatis. Spinoza's philo- sophy is fully considered in the article CARTESIANISM (see vol. v. p. 152 sq.).

Literature.—The contents of the Opera Posthuma included the Ethies, the Traetatus Politicus, and the De Intelleetus Emendatione (the last two unfinished), a selection from Spinoza's correspondence, and a Compendium of Hebrew Grammar. The Treatise on the Rain- bow, supposed to be lost, was published anonymously in Dutch in 1687. The first collected edition of

Spinoza’s works was made by Paulus in 1802 ; there is another by Gfrorer (1830), and a third by Bruder (1843-46) in three volumes. Van Vloten’s volume, published in 1862, dd Benedicti de Spinoza opera que supersunt omnia supple- mentum, is uniform with Bruder’s edition so as to complete it by a supplementary volume. It contained the early treatise De Deo et homine, the Treatise on the Rainbow, and several fresh letters.

SPIRES (Germ. Speyer or Speier), the chief town of the Rhenish palatinate, Bavaria, and formerly a free im- perial city, is situated on the left bank of the Rhine, at the mouth of the Speyerbach, 21 miles to the south of Worms. The principal streets are broad but irregular, and the general appearance of the town little corresponds to its high antiquity, owing to the fact that it was burned by the French in 1689. The only important ancient build- ing that has survived the flames is the cathedral, a very large and imposing basilica of red sandstone, and one of the noblest examples of Romanesque architecture now extant. Beyond the general interest attaching to it as one of the old

Romanesque churches of the Rhineland, Spires cathedral has a peculiar importance in the history of architecture as probably the earliest Romanesque basilica in which the nave as well as the side arcades was vaulted from the first. Built in 1030-61 by Conrad IT. and his successor, this church has had a chequered history, its disasters culminat- ing in 1689, when the soldiers of Louis XIV. burned it to the bare walls and scattered the ashes of the eight German emperors who had been interred in the kings’ choir. Re- stored in 1772-84 and provided with a vestibule and facade, it was again desecrated by the French in 1794; but in 1846-53 it was once more thoroughly restored and adorned in the interior with gorgeous frescos at the expense of the king of Bavaria. The large cathedral bowl (Domnapf) in front of the west fagade formerly marked the boundary between the episcopal and municipal territories. Each new bishop on his election had to fill the bowl with wine, while the burghers emptied it to his health. The heathen tower to the east of the church, on foundations supposed to be Roman, was probably part of the town wall built in 1080 by Bishop Rudger. Of the Retscher, or imperial palace, so called because built after the model

of the Hradschin at Prague, only a mouldering fragment of wall remains. It was in this palace that the famous diet of Spires met in 1529, at which the Reformers first received the name of Protestants. The Altpértel (alta porta), a fine old gateway of 1246, is a relic of the free imperial city. Among the modern buildings are several churches and schools, a museum and picture gallery, &c. Spires, although rebuilt in 1697, has never recovered from the cruel injuries inflicted by the French in 1689. Its trade is insignificant, although it still has a free harbour on the Rhine. Its manufactures include paper, tobacco and cigars, sugar, sugar of lead, vinegar, beer, and leather. Vines and tobacco are grown in the neighbourhood. The population in 1880 was 15,589 and in 1885 16,228. Spires, known to the Romans as Augusta Nemetwm or Nemete, and to the Gauls as Naviomagus, is one of the oldest towns on the Rhine. The modern name appears first, under the form Spira, about the 7th century. Captured by Julius Cesar in 47 B.¢., it was repeatedly destroyed by the barbarian hordes in the first few centuries of the Christian era. The town had become an episcopal seat in the 4th century; but heathenism supervened, and the present bishopric dates from 610. In 830 Spira became part of the Frankish empire, the emperors having a “palatium” here; and it was especi- ally favoured by the Salic imperial house. The contentions between the bishops and the citizens were as obstinate and severe as in any other city of Germany. The situation of the town opposite the mouths of several roads through the Rhine valley early fostered its trade ; in 1294 it rose to be a free imperial city, although it owned no territory beyond its walls and had a population of less than 80,000. It enjoyed great renown as the seat of the imperial supreme court from 1527 till 1689; it was fifth among the free citics of the Rhine, and had a vote in the Upper Rhenish diet. Numerous imperial diets assembled here. From 1801 till 1814 it was the capital of a department of France ; but it was restored to Bavaria

in the latter year. By the peace of Spires in 1544 the Hapsburgs renounced their claims to the crown of Sardinia.

SPIRITUALISM. The term “spiritualism ” is used by philosophical writers to denote the opposite of materialism. It is also used in a narrower sense to describe the belief that the spiritual world manifests itself by producing in the physical world effects inexplicable by the known laws of nature. The

belief in such occasional manifestations has probably existed as long as the belief in the existence of spirits apart from human bodies, and-a complete exa- mination into it would involve a discussion of the religions of all ages and nations. In 1848, however, a peculiar form of it, believed to be based on abundant experimental evidence, arose in America and spread there with great rapidity and thence over the civilized world. To this movement, which has been called ‘modern spiritualism,” the discussion in the present article is confined. The movement began in a single family. In 1848 a Mr and

PPIRITUALISM

Mrs Fox and their two daughters, living at Hydeville (Wayne), New York, were much disturbed by unexplained knockings. At length Kate Fox discovered that the cause of the sounds was intelligent and would make raps as re- quested, and, communication being established, the rapper professed to be the spirit of a murdered pedlar. An in- vestigation into the matter seemed to show that none of the Fox family were concerned in producing the rappings; but the evidence that they were not concerned is insuffi- cient, although similar noises had been noticed occasionally in the house before they lived there. It was, however, at Rochester, where the two Fox girls soon afterwards went to live with a married sister (Mrs Fish) that modern spirit- ualism assumed its present form, and that communication was, as it was believed, established with lost relatives and deceased eminent men. The presence of certain “‘mediums” was required to form the link between the worlds of the living and of the dead, and Kate Fox and her sister were the first mediums. Spiritualists do not as yet claim to know what special qualities in mediums enable spirits thus to make use of them. The earliest communications were car- ried on by means of “‘raps,” or, as Mr Crookes calls them, “percussive sounds.” It was agreed that one rap should mean “no” and three “‘ yes,” while more complicated mess- ages were—and are —obtained in other ways, such as calling over or pointing to letters of the alphabet, when raps occur at the required letters.

The idea of communicating with the departed was natur- ally attractive even to the merely curious, still more to those who were mourning for lost friends, and most of all to those who believed that this was the commencement of a new revelation. The first two causes have attracted

many inquirers; but it is the last that chiefly gives to modern spiritualism its religious aspect. Many came to witness the new wonder, and the excitement and interest spread rapidly. families, and other mediums discovered, exhibiting pheno- mena of various kinds (see below). The interest in mes- merism and the phenomena of hypnotic trance, which was widely diffused at this time both in America and Europe (see Macnetism, ANIMAL, vol. xv. p. 277 sq.), was favour- able to the new idea. Information about other worlds and from higher intelligences was thought to be obtained from persons who could be put into the sleep-waking state, of whom Andrew Jackson Davis was in America the most prominent example. His work, Wature's Divine Revela- tions (New York, 1847), was alleged to have been dictated in "clairvoyant" trance. Many reputed "clairvoyants" developed into mediums. The movement spread like an epidemic. There is very little evidence to show that it arose anywhere spontaneously!; but those who sat with the Foxes were often found to become mediums them- selves and then in their turn developed mediumship in others. The mere reading of accounts of seances seemed to develop the peculiar susceptibility in some persons, while others, who became mediums ultimately, did so only after prolonged and patient waiting.

There seems to have been little practical interest in spiritualism in Europe till Mrs Hayden, a professional medium from Boston, came over in 1852. It spread like wildfire within a few months of her arrival,—its first de- velopment being in the form of a mania for table-turning, which seems to have prevailed all over Europe in 1853.

Y 1 It is possible that the family of Dr Phelps were unaware of the

Rochester knockings" when the disturbances began in his house at Stratford, Connecticut, in 1850 (see Capron's Modern Spiritualism, its Facts, &e.) ; but these disturbances, as recorded, have a closer re- semblance to the ordinary occurrences at a spiritualistic seance than those which took place at Tedworth in 1661 (see Glanvill's Sadducis- mus Triumphatus) and at Slawensik in 1806 (see Kerner's Seherin von Prevorst), and others too numerous to mention.

"Spirit-circles" were formed in several

Daniel Dunglas Home, the next medium of importance who appeared in London, came over from America in 1855. But it was at Keighley in Yorkshire that spiritual- ism as a religious movement first made any mark in Eng- land, and it was there that the first English spiritualistic periodical, the Yorkshire Spiritual Telegraph, was started in 1855. The extent to which the movement has spread and the present number of spiritualists are very difficult to estimate. Vague calculations have from time to time been attempted: in 1867 one spiritualist estimated the number in America at 11,000,000 or two-fifths of the population, and another has held 3,000,000 to be an ex- treme estimate (see Spiritual Magazine for 1867). The periodicals devoted to spiritualism may perhaps be taken to indicate the present state of the movement. There are in England two weekly newspapers, Light and The Medium and Daybreak; one of these has advertisements of Sunday meetings in sixty different towns and in eighty different rooms. The spiritualistic journals outside Great Britain number about 100, though probably only about a quarter of these are of any importance. Of these 30 are in English (26 published in America and 4 in the Australian colonies), 15 to 20 in French, and 6 in German. But nearly 40 are published in Spanish in Spain and South America. Private circles which meet regularly are believed to be numerous in England ; and there are numerous public and semi-public trance-speaking and clairvoyant mediums, especially among the miners in the north.

In the present article it is impossible to give an ex- haustive catalogue of the phenomena and modes of com- munication of modern spiritualism. Many have not now appeared for the first time in history, though it is difficult to suppose any historical connexion between the new de- velopments and the old. Perhaps the most striking paral- lelism is that between the proceedings at modern seances and those connected with the later Greek oracles.2 The greater part of the phenomena may be divided into two classes. To the first and earliest developed class belong what may be called the physical phenomena of spiritual- ism,—those, namely, which, if correctly observed and due neither to conscious or unconscious trickery nor to hallu- cination

on the part of the observers, exhibit a force hitherto unknown to science, acting in the physical world otherwise than through the brain or muscles of the medium. The earliest of these phenomena were the raps already spoken of and other sounds occurring without apparent physical cause, and the similarly mysterious movements of furni- ture and other objects; and these were shortly followed by the ringing of bells and playing of musical instruments. Later followed the appearance of lights; quasi-human voices ; musical sounds, produced, it is supposed, without instruments; the ‘‘ materialization ” or presence in material form of what seem to be human hands and faces, and ultimately of complete figures, alleged to be not those of any person present, and sometimes claimed by witnesses as deceased relatives ; ‘“‘psychography,” or “direct writing and drawing,” asserted to be done without human inter- vention; ‘‘spirit-photography,” or photographing of human and other forms invisible to all but specially endowed seers ; unfastening of cords and bonds; elongation of the medium’s body; handling of red-hot coals; and the ap- parent passage of solids through solids without disinte- gration. The phenomena observed at Tedworth belong to this class. Somewhat similar was the Cock Lane ghost in 1762.3 A practice of causing heavily loaded tables to rise by “magic” seems to have existed among the German Jews in the 17th century.4 Kerner records movements

2 See Essays Classical, by F. W. H. Myers, 1883.

3 See Gentleman’s Magazine, 1762. 4 Von Harless, Aegyptische Mysterien, 1856, pp. 180-182.

of objects in connexion with Madame Hauffe in 1825-28,! and such movements also occurred in presence of the so- called electric girl in 1846.2 The second class of phenomena, which we may call the automatic, consists in table-tilting and turning with contact ; writing, drawing, &c., through the medium’s hand; convulsive movements and involuntary dancing ; entrancement, trance-speaking, and personation by the medium of deceased persons, attributed to temporary “possession ”; seeing spirits and visions and hearing phan- toi voices. This class bears affinity to some of the pheno- mena of hypnotism and of certain nervous complaints, to certain epidemics of the Middle Ages,? and to phenomena that have occurred at some

religious revivals. According to quotations given by Chevreul,* the divining-rod was used at the end of the 17th century for obtaining answers to ques- tions, as table-tilting now is. Ina third class must be placed the cure of disease by healing mediums. This cannot well be treated apart from mesmeric healing and “faith cures” and ‘mind cures,” and belongs to medical psychology.

The class of automatic phenomena are much the common- est. The investigations of Carpenter on unconscious cerebra- tion and of Faraday on unconscious muscular action > have shown that it is not necessary to look outside the medium’s own brain and organism for the explanation of such things as automatic writing and table turning. It is about the matter communicated by these means that the controversy now turns. Spiritualists maintain that true information is thus given, provably unknown to the medium or other persons present, or at least expressed in a way obviously beyond their powers to originate. Another view, which is now gaining ground, is that the information in some excep- tional cases does not come from the mind of the medium, but is due to the influence wrought on his mind by that of other persons, and more than this is not proved.®

At no period of the spiritualistic movement has the class of physical phenomena been accepted altogether with- out criticism. Most spiritualists know that much fraud in connexion with them has been discovered—frequently by spiritualists themselves—and that the conditions favour- able to obtaining them are often such as favour fraud. It is with a full knowledge of these difficulties in the way of investigation that they maintain that unmistakably genuine phenomena are of constant occurrence. Many volumes containing accounts of such phenomena have been printed, and appeal is often made to the mass of evidence so accumulated. ‘No physical science can array a tithe of the mass of evidence by which psychism” (z.¢., what is usually called spiritualism) ‘‘is supported,” says Serjeant Cox.’ But the majority of these accounts have scarcely any scientific value. Spiritualists have, as a rule, sought to convince not by testimony but by ocular demonstration. Yet, if there is not a mass of scientific evidence, there are a number of witnesses—among them distinguished men of science and others of undoubted intelligence—who have convinced themselves by observation of the genuineness of the phenomena,—a fact of undeniable

importance, even without careful records, when the witnesses are otherwise known to be competent and trustworthy observers. Mr Maskelyne has affirmed® that he has witnessed table- turning where he was satisfied that there was neither trickery nor unconscious muscular action. Moreover, if

1 Seherin von Prevorst.

? Tanchou, Enquéte sur Vauthenticité des phénomenes électriques @ Angélique Cottin, Paris, 1846.

3 See Hecker, Hpidemics of the Middle Ages, 1859.

4 De la baguette divinatoire, &ec., 1854.

5 Atheneum, 2d July 1853 ; see also on this subject Chevreul, op. cit.

5 See Ch. Richet, “La Suggestion Mentale,” in Revue Philosophique, December 1884, and Proc. Soc. for Psychical Research, vols. ii. and iii.

7 Mechanism of Man: What am I? vol. ii. p. 313, 1879.

8 See Pall Mall Gazette, 18th, 20th, and 23d April 1885.

SPIBRBITUALICS

the phenomena are not genuine, we have to assume a large amount of apparently aimless fraud.

Amongst the proposed explanations of these phenomena that of hallucination need not detain us long. Sensory hallucination of several persons together who are not in a hypnotic state is a rare phenomenon, and therefore not a probable explanation. Moreover, it cannot be regarded as being generally applicable, partly because material traces of what occurs often remain, and partly because of the general agreement not only of all the witnesses but of all the senses as to what is perceived, as distinguished from what is inferred. Nevertheless something of the kind may occasionally have happened, especially at some of the seances of Home. If collective hallucination really occurs at seances, it is a very interesting fact, and deserves to be carefully studied.

What may broadly be called conjuring is, however, a much more probable explanation of most of the recorded phenomena; and in the vast majority of cases the wit- nesses do not seem to have duly appreciated the possibili- ties of conjuring, nor to have taken sufficient precautions to exclude it. Besides, not even a conjuror knows all the possibilities of his art and can describe in detail all the accidental circumstances which may on any particular occasion favour deception, and perhaps never exactly recur, We require, therefore, to know not only that the witness is careful and accurate but that he has allowed a suffi- ciently wide margin for the possibilities of conjuring; and some leading spiritualists do not allow this. It is often urged that mediums are not conjurors because they fre- quently fail, whereas "imposture can be reproduced at will," and because they can produce the phenomena in private rooms, and under conditions which exclude the possibility of conjuring. But the phenomena produced by mediums in private rooms would generally be uninteresting and unsuited to public performance, so that it would not pay a professional conjuror to practise them. Amateur con- jurors might do something in this way, and the present writer has seen one imitate successfully some of the phenomena of professional mediums for " direct writing"; but to compete with mediums on really equal terms the con- juror must have the same conditions throughout, and this is difficult to arrange, since it involves securing witnesses who are doubtful as to whether what they see is conjuring or not. Still more important to the conjuror is that very privilege of failing whenever he pleases, so largely used by mediums, that he may avail himself of accidental oppor- tunities for trickery, which would be interfered with by a settled programme. The extent to which the absence of programme obtains at seances appears from the following statement by a leading spiritualist who writes under the nom de plume of 'M.A. (Oxon.)": "In 99 out of every 100 cases people do not get what they want or expect. Test after test, cunningly devised, on which the investi- gator has set his mind, is put aside, and another sub- stituted."!0 In other words, the evidence is rarely strictly experimental, and this not only gives facilities for fraud but makes it necessary to allow a much larger margin for accidents, mistakes, and mal-observation. It must be borne in mind that the most excellent moral character in the medium is no guarantee against trickery, unless it can be proved that he was in no abnormal mental condition when the phenomena

occurred; for extraordinary deceptions have been carried on by hysterical patients and others with no apparent motive but a desire to secure attention.

One of the possibilities to be allowed for is that of un-

9 See, e.g., Report on Spiritualism of the Committee of the London Dialectical Society, 1871, pp. 867-869, 207. See also Guldenstubbe, De la réalité des esprits, 1857, p. 66.

10 Human Nature, 1876, p. 267.

ne el «

usual muscular endowment in the medium. For instance, in 1851, the remarkable loud double raps occurring in the presence of the Fox girls, which in 1849 had puzzled several investigating committees at Rochester, were explained by Professors Flint, Lee, and Coventry of Buffalo as produced by rapidly partially dislocating and restoring the knee and other joints. They stated that they had experimented with another lady who could do the same; and, challenged by Mrs. Fish, they tried some experiments with her and Margaretta Fox which strongly supported their view. Besides the general arguments for supposing that the physical phenomena of spiritualism may be due to con- juring, there are two special reasons which gain in force as time goes on. (1) Almost every medium who has been prominently before the public has at some time or other been detected in fraud, or what cannot be distinguished from fraud except on some violently improbable hypo- thesis ; and (2), although it is easy to devise experiments of various kinds which would place certain phenomena above the suspicion of conjuring, by eliminating the neces- sity for continuous observation on the part of the investi- gators, there is no good evidence that such experiments have ever succeeded. Nevertheless there does exist evi- dence for the genuineness of the physical phenomena which deserves consideration. Count Agénor de Gasparin, in his Tables Tournantes (Paris, 1854), gives an account of what seem to have been careful experiments with his own family and friends, which convinced him that by some unknown force tables could be got to move without con- tact. He did not

believe that spirits had anything to do with it. His experiments were conducted in broad day- light and with sceptical witnesses (whose testimony, how- ever, he does not give) looking on outside the circle. The minutes of the sub-committee No. 1 of the committee of the Dialectical Society (op. cit., pp. 373-391) report that tables moved without contact, whilst all the persons present

knelt on chairs (the backs of which were turned to the

table), with their hands on the backs. The report, how- ever, would be of greater value if the names of the medium and of the working members of the committee were given —we only know that of Sergeant Cox—and if they had written independent accounts of what they witnessed. The conditions of some of Mr Crookes's experiments with D. D. Home on alterations in the weight of a partially sus- pended board} appear to have been so simple that it is difficult to imagine how the witnesses can have been deceived. Some very remarkable evidence is contained in "Researches in Spiritualism during the Year 1872-3," by "M.A. (Oxon.)," published in a spiritualistic periodical called Human Nature, March and August 1874. The papers give accounts of phenomena obtained through the writer's own mediumship, generally in the presence of one or two friends, and extending over almost the whole range of spiritualistic manifestations.

But what chiefly interests spiritualists is the assurance of life and progress after death, and the moral and reli- gious teaching, which they obtain through automatic writ- ing and trance-speaking. It was discovered very early in the movement that the accuracy of these communications could not always be relied on; but it is maintained by Spiritualists that by the exercise of the reason and judg- ment, by prolonged acquaintance with particular com- municating intelligences, and by proofs of identity with persons known to have been trustworthy on earth, it is possible to obtain valuable information from beings not infallible, but with the knowledge of spirit life superadded to their earthly experience. Still the agreement between

1 Quart. Journ. of Science, July and October 1871; republished, with

other papers by Mr Crookes, under the title of Researches on the Pheno- mena of Spiritualism, 1874-76.

communications so received has not been sufficiently great for anything like a universal spiritualistic creed to have been arrived at. In France the doctrine of successive reincarnations with intervals of spirit life promulgated by Allan Kardec (Léon Hippolyte Denisart Rivail) forms a prominent element of spiritualistic belief. This view has, however, made but little way in England and America, where the opinions of the great majority of spiritualists vary from orthodox Christianity to Unitarianism of an extreme kind. Probably it would be impossible to unite spiritualists in any creed, which, besides the generally accepted belief in God and immortality, should postulate more than the progress of the spirit after death, and the power of some of the dead to communicate with the living by means of mediums.

Spiritualism has been accused of a strong tendency to produce insanity ; the charge, however, seems to be in the main a mistaken inference from the fact that the delusions of the insane not unfrequently take the form of supposed converse with invisible beings. It is, however, probable that the spiritualistic theories of possession and obsession sometimes injure persons with incipient insane impulses, by weakening their sense of responsibility for these and their efforts to control them. Spiritualism has also been accused of fostering free love and other doctrines subver- sive of society. But this charge too has been made without adequate grounds ; for, though certain spiritualistic bodies have at times taught such doctrines, they have always been repudiated by the mass of spiritualists. The great.scandal of spiritualism is undoubtedly the encouragement it gives to the immoral trade of fraudulent mediumship.

In addition to the works already mentioned, the student, for a general idea of the whole subject, should consult the following :— E. W. Capron, Modern Spiritualism, its Facts, &c., Boston, 1855, for the early history of the movement in America ; Edmonds and Dexter, Spiritualism, New York, 1854-55; R. Hare, Huperimental Investigations of the Spirit Manifestations, New York, 1856 ; Allan Kardec, Livre des Esprits, Ist ed. 1853; Mrs De Morgan, From Matter to Spirit, London, 1863, with preface by Professor De Mor- gan; Alfred Russel Wallace, Afiracles and Modern Spiritualism, 1876;

M.A. (Oxon.), Spirit Identity and Spirit Teaching; Zollner, Wissenschaftliche Abhandlungen (the part relating to spiritualism has been translated into English under the title Transcendental Physics by ©. C. Massey). A succinct account of typical frauds of spiritualism is contained in D. D. Home's Lights and Shadows of Spiritualism, 2d ed., 1877-78. (E. M. 8.)

SPITZBERGEN. This group of rocky, barren, and Situa.

snowclad islands, lost in the solitudes of the Arctic Ocean, 400 miles north-north-west of the North Cape of Norway (see vol. xix. pl. II.), but nevertheless well known for at least four centuries to European whalers and seal-hunters, has of late acquired new interest from the scientific expeditions by which it has been selected either as a base for attempts to reach the north pole or as a field in which to inaugurate a new era of scientific exploration in the arctic regions. From Spitzbergen Parry started in 1827 on the sledge journey which brought him within 480 miles of the pole ; it was the starting-point of the investigations which led Charles Martins to his brilliant generalizations of the flora, present and past, of the earth ; and numerous Swedish expeditions from 1858 onwards have accumulated an amount of knowledge, so vast and so important, as to be comparable only with the results of the great equatorial and arctic journeys of the first years of the 19th century.

The Spitzbergen archipelago, lying between 76° 30' and Islands.

80° 30' N. lat. and 10° and 30° E. long.—half-way between Greenland and Nova Zembla—consists of six large and a great number of smaller islands. The chief, that of West Spitzbergen, shaped like a wedge pointed towards the south, and deeply indented on the west and north by long branching fjords, has an area of nearly 15,200 square miles, High mountains, reaching 4560 feet in the Horn Sound Tind, cover its southern parts; while a wide plateau,

with an altitude of from 1500 to 2000 feet and covered by a thick ice-sheet, occupies the north. Several fjords— Horn Sound, Bel Sound, Ice Fjord (15

miles wide and 80 long), and the double fjord of King’s Bay and Cross Bay on the west, and Liefde, Wiide, and Lomme Bays on the north—deeply penetrate the island. One of the ramifica- tions (Dickson Bay) of the beautiful Ice Fjord, 150 fathoms deep, nearly reaches the head of Wiide Bay, so as almost to divide the island. A long narrow island, Prince Charles’s

pelago, and this land, which may perhaps be a link between the Spitzbergen archipelago and that of Franz-Josef, has been again sighted by Norwegian seal-hunters. Numerous small islands lie around the larger :—the Danes and Nor- wegians Islands on the north-west, the Seven Islands on the north, Outger Reps, Brock, and Charles XII. Island on the north-east, Waygat Islands and William I. Island in Hinlopen Strait, the Ryk Yse Archipelago, Hope Island, and the Thousand Islands (about a hundred small rocks) to the east and south of Stans Foreland, and many other

smaller ones. Many of these small islands rise toa height | of 1500 to 1700 feet.?

The archipelago, which has the Greenland Sea to the Seas west and Barents Sea to the east, rises from a submarine tound | platform that extends from Bear Island north-eastwards ‘Pi

¢ feqrra EAST LAND!)

prbege bie

UoKings B. axa, roth ae ; WD , Way “Bs, VES Ts@ :SPITZBERGEN®

Laas MWe PVH ‘pleas Pia

- leYeol? Pace Wan Le

Map of Spitzbergen.

Foreland, with peaks of nearly 5000 feet high, runs parallel to part of the west coast of West Spitzbergen, from which it is separated by a narrow

strait. The broad Stor (Great) Fjord, or Wiide Jans Water, separates the main island from two others to the east,—Stans Foreland (2500 square miles) and Barents Land (580 square miles). Formerly these were considered as one, and named Edge Island, until the narrow Walter Thymen Strait which parts them was discovered. A few peaks, estimated at from 1600 to 2000 feet high, protrude above the snow and ice by which these two imperfectly explored islands are covered. To the north-east of West Spitzbergen, separated from it by Hinlopen Strait (7 to 60 miles in breadth) lies North-East Land, with an area of about 6200 square miles. Its western and northern coasts are indented by several bays and fjords ; the southern and eastern shores, on account of the masses of ice by which they are constantly girt, remain unexplored. This island appears like a broad plateau covered by an ice- sheet 2000 to 3000 feet in thickness, from which a few peaks protrude. Slowly moving towards the east, this immense sheet of ice discharges into the sea by a huge ice-wall, unbroken by promontories for 150 miles, thus forming the broadest glacier known,—Dickson's glacier. Eastwards from this group of islands, 100 miles to the north-east of Stans Foreland, rises another island, measur- ing 90 miles from west to east. Marked either Gillis's Land or Wiche's Land in earlier maps, it was seen from Spitzbergen as a snow-clad mass mingling with the fogs of the sea by a Swedish expedition, and later on by Heuglin and Zeil; but it was not until 1872 that the Norwegian whalers Altman, Johnsen, and Nilsen reached it from the east and nearly circumnavigated it. After some discussion about its name, it has received from Pro fessor Mohn the name of King Charles Land, which is now generally accepted. The wide strait which separates it from Spitzbergen is called Olga Strait. It is now established that Gillis saw Gillis's Land to the north-east of the archi-

to Franz Joseph Land, and probably was an immense arctic continent connected with Greenland during the middle of the Tertiary period. The sea around Spitzbergen has a depth of less than 100 fathoms. Owing to this circumstance the ice readily accumulates round the shores; and, although the glaciers of Spitzbergen do not give origin to icebergs so huge as those of Greenland, the smaller icebergs and the pack-ice are thick enough to prevent access to the shores except for a few months in the year. Happily the Gulf Stream, which washes the shores of Norway, after sending a branch to the east, flows north to the western shores of Spitzbergen,

moderating its climate, and leaving an open passage which permits whalers to approach the western coast even under the most unfavourable conditions of ice in the arctic regions, Drift-wood brought from lower latitudes, glass-floats of the Norwegian fishermen, and even the large seeds of the Entada Gigalobium, carried by the Gulf Stream from the Gulf of Mexico, are found at the northern extremity of Spitzbergen. On the other hand, a cold current charged with ice descends from higher latitudes along the eastern coast, rendering approach extremely difficult. On this account King Charles Land remained unknown until 1872, and the eastern coast of North-East Land still continues unexplored.

Owing to the warm current, the climate of Spitzbergen is less Climate)

severe than in the corresponding latitudes of Greenland and Smith Sound. The isotherm of 23° Fahr. (-—5° C.), which crosses the middle of Eastern Siberia, touches its southern extremity, and only the north-east coasts of West Spitzbergen and North-East Land have an average yearly temperature so low as 14° to 10°5 (—10° to-—11°9 C.). At Mussel Bay (79° 53’) the average yearly tem- perature is 16° (January 14°71, July 39°°3). Bear Island, notwith- standing its more southerly position, has a lower temperature, as the Gulf Stream does not touch it. Even in the coldest months of the winter a thaw may set in for a few days; but, on the other hand, snow sometimes falls in July and August. Spring comes in June ; the snow becomes saturated with water and disappears in places, and scurvy grass and the polar willow open their buds. By the end of June the thermometer has ceased to sink below the freezing-point at night; July, August, and September are the best months. In September, however, autumn sets in on shore, though the whalers continue cruising until the end of the month and even reach the highest latitudes. By the end of September the pack-ice rapidly freezes into one solid mass. To move on this mass, however, is exceedingly difficult, for the ice, owing to its contraction and expansion, is either intersected by mA fissures or broken up and piled into heaps, which puts insuperable difficulties in the way of sledge expeditions.

Glaciers are largely developed. On the high grounds the snow Glaciers.

under a level of from 1200 to 1500 feet disappears every year ; but on the plateaus it continually accumulates, so as to cover them with an immense

ice-sheet, like that of Greenland, which slowly discharges by the valleys towards the sea in the form of immens® glaciers. All North-East Land and the interior of West Spitz- bergen are covered with such ice-sheets, which descend to King’s

1 Bear Island, half-way between the North Cape and Spitzbergen, can hardly be reckoned to the Spitzbergen archipelago. It was for- merly renowned for its hunting grounds, but is very seldom visited now. Lying outside the course of the Gulf Stream, it is almost entirely ice-bound.

:

ology.

a _

| | L

Bay by a glacier 15 miles wide, or by that already alluded to in North-East Land, where the ice-cliffs are from 200 to 400 feet high. These glaciers, however, discharging into comparatively shallow yaters, do not produce such icebergs as those of Greenland. The glaciers of the present epoch are but trifling in comparison with what they were during the Glacial period, when the entire country was buried under an ice-sheet, which probably connected all the archipelago into one ice-bound continent and spread far beyond to northern Europe. : ; ;

The backbone of the islands consists of thick layers of granite, gneiss, and other archaic schists. But more recent formations bear- ing witness to a much more genial climate are not wanting. The Carboniferous period is represented by extensive coal-bearing strata, the lowest of which are intermediate with the Devonian (Liefde Bay strata). The Trias, also containing a rich fossil flora, is represented by black clay slate. The J nrassic deposits are widely spread ; they mostly belong to the Kelloway, and many of them are coal- pearing. To the same period belong the frequently occurring layers of what was formerly called hypersthenite, but has now been proved to be (according to Zirkel’s classification) diabase and dolerite. The most interesting formation is, however, the Miocene. At a

period close, geologically speaking, to the subsequent Glacial period, and even to our own, Spitzbergen was covered with a luxuriant vegetation the like of which is now found only in the 60th parallel in Scandinavia. The shores of Bel Sound, Ice Fjord, and Cape Starostine in 78° N. lat. were covered with extensive peat bogs, on the edges of which the marsh cypress flowered, dropping its leaves and blossoms into the marshes. Seqwoix, poplars, birches, planes, and large oaks also grew there, while ivy and thick under- wood freely developed under their shadow, and thousands of insects swarmed in the thicket. The most striking feature of this Miocene vegetation—a feature conclusively established by the researches of Oswald Heer—is that Spitzbergen, Greenland, Franz-Josef Land, and Nova Zembla were at that time parts of one immense con- tinent, thus realizing the very conditions for the coldest climate, if climate had to depend on telluric causes only. Heer has shown, moreover, in a manner that hardly admits of doubt that the luxuri- ant vegetation so unmistakably borne witness to by the Miocene strata of the arctic regions could not have developed had it been condemned to endure the long arctic night it now undergoes. This feature of the arctic Miocene flora is unexplained, and will remain so until higher cosmical laws are formulated to explain changes of climate. A change in the position of the earth's axis of rotation (recently the subject of a serious discussion in England and on the Continent) would seem to be the only adequate hypothesis by which to account for the warm vegetation of the period in ques- tion in such proximity to the pole; but this hypothesis would be so much at variance with the present state of our knowledge that we may well hesitate to advance it. A brief recurrence of a warmer climate —not nearly so warm as the Miocenc, yet somewhat warmer than the present—was also experienced by Spitzbergen after the long period of glaciation as is proved by the occurrence of beds with mussels, which are now fonnd only in much warmer latitudes. This warmer Post-Glacial period —traces of which have been met with throughout the arctic and subarctic regions—was followed by a period of slow upheaval, which still continues.

The flora is of course poor. The only tree is the polar willow, which does not excced 2 inches in height and bears a few leaves not larger than a man's finger-nail ; and the only bush is the crowberry (Empetrum nigrum), to which the recently discovered cloudberry (Rubus Chamexmorus) may be added. But at the foot of the warmer cliffs some loam has been formed

notwithstanding the slowness of putrefaction, and there, in contrast with the brownish lichens that cover the hills, grows a carpet of mosses of the brightest green, variegated with the golden-yellow flowers of the ranunculus (/. sulphureus and hyperboreus), the Silenex, the reddish heads of the Pedicularis, the Oxyria reniformis (a foot high), the large-leaved scurvy grass (Cochlcaria fenestrata), several saxifrages, Ccrastiwm alpinum, Potentilla emarginata, fox-tail grass (Alopecurus alpinus), Dupontia Fischeri, Poa cenisia, pratensis, and stricta, with a few large-flowered Polygona and Andromede ; while on the driest spots yellow poppies and whitlow grasses (Drab), Cardamine bellidifolia, several Dryadex, &c., are found. Even on the higher slopes, 1500 feet above the sea, the poppy, Luzula hyperborea, and Stellaria Edwardsii are occasionally met with. Mosses, mostly European acquaintances, cover all places where peat has accumulated. The slopes of the crags and the blocks of stone on the beach are some- times entirely covered with a luxuriant moss and lichen vegetation, among the last being the so-called ‘‘famine bread” (Umbilicaria aretiea), which has maintained the life of so many arctic travellers. Flowering plants are represented by as many as ninety-six species, of which eighty-one grow in Greenland and sixty-nine in Scan- dinavia ; forty-three species are alpine cosmopolites, and have been inet with on the Himalayas. The ferns are represented by two Species.1 Although thus limited in number, the flora is suggestive ee eee Eee oe

; 1 According to Mr Naathorst’s researches in 1882 (Sv. Vetenskaps Akad. Hand- Ungar, xx.; Botanisches Jahrbuch, iv.), the flora of Spitzbergen is composed

ePEY ADE RG EN

A409

in its distribution. The vegetation of the south has a decidedly Lappish or European alpine character, while that of the north coast is decidedly American, and recalls that of Melville Island. Many flowering plants which are common in north-west Spitz- bergen are absent from the east coast, where the cold current is inimical to both flora and fauna; but, on the other hand, one moss (Pottia hyperborea) and one lichen (Usnea melaxantha) are found there which are of American origin and grow both in North America

and on the Cordilleras. Alg# are most numerous, many, like the brown Laminaria and Nostoc communis, which fill all pools and are the chief food of many birds, being familiar in Europe. Protococcus nivalis covers the snow with its reddish powder.

The fauna, although not very rich in species, is exceedingly rich Fauna.

in individuals. It includes fifteen mammals, only two of which are terrestrial —the reindeer and the ice-fox—besides the usual in- habitant of the arctic regions, the polar bear.2 The number of reindeer is really puzzling. Ina single summer, or rather in the course of a few weeks, no fewer than from 1500 to 2000 reindeer were killed by huntcrs for several consecutive years previous to 1868. Much emaciated in June, they grow very fat towards the end of the autumn, after feeding on the mosses. Great numbers are “marked” (that is, have both ears cut at the same height), and the hunters are persuaded that these individuals come from an un- known continent in the north-east, where they have been marked by the hand of man. However strange this hypothesis, it must be acknowledged that the objections urged against it by the Swedish explorers are not conclusive, and that frost-bite attacking young calves could hardly account for the symmetrical markings on both ears. The immense numbers of the reindeer strongly support the idea of their migration, and the only question is whether they came from Siberia via Nova Zembla, or whether they did not rcally come from the unknown archipelagoes on the north-east, the existence of which is supported by so many other data (immobility of the ice to the east of Spitzbergen, dirty ice, birds met with off North-East Land, as well asseveral other considerations of a more general character).

Eight Cetaceans are met with in the seas off Spitzbergen, viz.,— Balznoptera boops, 80 to 110 feet long; B. gigas and B. rostrata, 30 feet long; the white whale (Beluga catodon), three species of seals (Phoca barbata, grenlandica, and hispida), and the walrus (Trichechus or Odobenus rosmarus). The Greenland whale has completely disappeared in consequence of the great havoc made during the last two centuries: according to Scoresby, no less than 57,590 individuals were killed between 1669 and 1775. A perfectly reckless extermination of seals is still going on. Numberless wal- ruses tumble about in the water, or lie in crowds on the

floating ice; and their number further increases when the flocks of Greenland seals arrive in August.

Birds visit the archipelago in such vast flocks that the cliffs are literally covered with them. The fulmar petrel (Procellaria glacialis)—a herald of polar regions—meets the ships approaching Spitzbergen far away from the coasts. Its colonies cover the cliffs, as also do those of the glaucous gull (Larus glaucus), or the “ burgo- master.” Rotches (AMergulus alba), black guillemots (Uria grylia), ivory gulls (Larus ebwrnews), auks, and kittiwake gulls (Larus tridactylus) breed extensively on the cliffs, while geese, looms, and snipe swarm on and about the lagoons and small freshwater ponds. The bernacle goose (Anser bernicla) is only a bird of passage, as it goes farther north-east to nest. The eider breeds in large colonies on the islands, where its young are safe from the ice-fox, only the glaucous gull and the brent goose (Bernicla brenta) being admitted to keep them company, while the lumme (Mormon arcticus) and the tern confine themselves to separate cliffs. These birds, how- ever, are only guests in Spitzbergen, the snow-bunting (Emberiza nivalis) being the only species which stays permanently; twenty- three species breed regularly on Spitzbergen, and four others (the falcon, snowy owl, swan, and skua) come occasionally.

There are twenty-three species of fishes, but no reptiles. Insects are few : Lepidoptera (one species), Newroptcra (one), Hymenoptera (four), and Diptera (twenty) have been met with by the Swedish expeditions. Arachnids, and especially Pantopods, on the other hand, are very common. Molluscs arealso very numerous, embracing no less than 130 species. In June several Limacince are met with in such numbers on the coast and at the mouth of the glacier streams as to constitute the chief food of the gulls. At some places the mussels and univalves reach a comparatively colossal size and appear in ineredibleabundance. Of Crustaceans no fewer than 100 species have been recognized in the waters of the archipelago.

The marine fauna is exceedingly rich in the bluish warmer waters of the Gulf Stream, and the dredgings of the Swedish expeditions, which were prosecuted even under the ice, never failed to bring to the surface a rich variety of remarkable or new forms. From a depth of 8400 feet the “bull-dog” machine lifted mud of a tempera- as follows :—Rosacea, 7 species ;

Sawifragex, 10; Crucifere, 15; Ranunculacee, 8; Silene and Alsinex, 12; Salia, 2; Composite, 5; Scrophulariacer, 2; Ericacex, 2; Graminex, 23; Cyperacex#, 12; Juncacev, 6; Filices (Ferns), 2; Lyco- podiacew,1. The whole of this flora immigrated during the Post-Glacial period, which was warmer than the present.

2 The existence of the Arvicola hudsonia is not quite proved.

ture of 33° Fahr. (0°3 C.) charged with Radiolarians, Polythalame, Globigering, Biloeuline, Dentalia, and Nonioning, together with some Annelids (Spioehxtopterus and Cirratulus), two Crustaceans (Cuma rubiewnda and Apseudes), one Mollusc, two Holothuriz, one Gephyrea, and one Sponge. Even at a depth of 15,900 feet animal life was found in unexpected profusion, the mud consist- ing almost entirely of brown and white Foraminiferx, among them one Crustacean (a species of Cuma). But marine life is much poorer on the east coast, resembling that of Greenland.

Man does not live on Spitzbergen, and the attempts of the Swedes to winter there have for the most part proved failures, except in the case of the ‘‘Sofia” expedition, which succeeded in wintering without great loss, though not without suffering from scurvy. None but the Russian “Pomory” (inhabitants of the Murman coast) have succeeded in enduring the arctic winters. The patriarch of Spitzbergen, the Pomor Staraschin (Starostine), spent no less than thirty-two winters (fifteen being consecutive) on the islands, dying of old age in 1826. There was a time in the 17th and 18th cen. turies when thousands of Dutch, Danes, and others were attracted to Spitzbergen by the whale-fishing. Whole villages sprang up on the shores, the best being that of the Dutch—Smeerenberg—which is said to have been visited by 18,000 men ina single summer. The ‘fright whale” having disappeared, the whalers ceased to visit Spitzbergen, and ouly quite recently an attempt has been made to renew the pursuit of the Balxnoptera boops.

The chief object of pursuit is the walrus, carried on by Norwegians ; sea-birds and eider are also occasionally sought.

History.—Spitzbergen was discovered in 1596 by William Barents, and his companion, Cornelius Rijp, is believed to have circumnavi- gated the archipelago. Nevertheless it was long considered as a part of Greenland, and described under the names of East Green- land, Newland, King James's Land, until the old name of Spitz- bergen gained the ascendency. But long before Barents discovered it the Russians had known it under the name of Grumant (a word of unknown origin), and when Chancellor arrived at Archangel in 1553 he learned that the Russians visited Grumant for hunting purposes. After the 17th and 18th century whalers, the Russians began to visit the group, chiefly for walruses, seals, foxes, rein- deer, bears, and birds ; their huts and crosses are met with at very many places on the coast. Many wintered for several consecutive winters. Since 1830 their visits have almost ccased. The Nor- wegians began to visit the archipelago about 1795, and their small vessels now visit the Spitzbergen waters in considerable numbers. In 1822 a party wintered successfully, but later attempts have for the most part proved fatal on account of scurvy. 'To these ex- perienced arctic navigators—assisted by Norwegian savants—we are indebted for so many important discoveries in the Barents, Kara, and Siberian Seas.

Several expeditions have made Spitzbergen their base in attempts to reach the north pole. The Russian admiral Tchitchagoff visited it twice, in 1765 and 1766, and reached 80° 28' N. lat. John Phipps mapped the north of Spitzbergen in 1773, and reached 80° 37' N. lat. In 1818 Buchan and Franklin reached 80° 34' to the north of the archipelago. Clavering and Sabine in 1823 explored the islands, and Sabine made his remarkable magnetic observations, while Clavering reached 80° 20' N. lat. Parry, shortly after his return from his third voyage, went to Spitzbergen and reached 82° 44' N. lat. on sledges. In the same year the Norwegian geologist Keilhau visited the group and has related his experiences in a remarkable book, Resa i Ost og West Finmarken. The Swedish pro- fessor Lovén was the first to undertake, in 1837, dredging and geological explorations in Spitzbergen and its vicinity. Next year a body of French, Swedish, Danish, and Norwegian naturalists, among whom was Charles Martins, visited the western coast. From 1858 onwards the archipelago has

been the object of a series of scientific expeditions. At the suggestion of Lovén, Otto Torell, accompanied by Nordenskjéld and Quennerstedt, opened the series, making many important observations and bringing home rich geological collections. In 1861 a larger expedition led by Torell, Nordenskjold, Malmgren, Chydenius, and Petersen set out with the object of finding how far it was possible to obtain a measurement of an arc of meridian of sufficient extent. This aim was only partly accomplished, but the expedition returned with an invaluable stock of various observations. The work of the measurement of the arc was completed in 1864 by another expedition conducted by Nor- denskjéld, assisted by Malmgren and Dunér, who returned again With a vast number of new and important observations. This ex- pedition was followed in 1868 by that of the “Sofia,” under Nor- denskjéld, having on its scientific staff Holmgren, Malmgren, and F. Smitt, zoologists ; Berggren and Fries, botanists ; Lemstrém, physicist ; and Nauckhoff, geologist. They were prevented by ice from getting higher than 81° 42’ N, lat. ; but, to use Oswald Heer’s words, the expedition “achieved more and gave a wider extension to the horizon of our knowledge than if it had returned merely with the information that the ‘Sofia’ had hoisted her flag on the north pole.” In 1870 two young Swedish savants, Nauckhorst and Wilander, visited Spitzbergen in order to examine the phosphoric

Ss PL—

> FP @

deposits, and two years later a colony was formed in Ice Fjord, and a small railway constructed to work the beds. The attempt, how- ever, did not prove successful. Mr Leigh Smith and the Norwegian Captain Ulve visited and mapped parts of East Spitzbergen in 1871, returning with valuable information. They reached 81° 24’ N. lat. In the same year Mr Lamont visited the archipelago. In 1872a great polar expedition set out to winter on Spitzbergen with the intention of attempting in the spring to advance towards the pole on sledges drawn by reindeer. But the expedition encountered a series of misfortunes. The ships were beset in the ice very early in Mussel Bay, and, six Norwegian fishing vessels having been like- wise overtaken and shut in, the expedition had to feed the crews on its provisions and thus to reduce the rations of its own men, The reindeer all

made their escape during a snow-storm ; and, when the sledge party reached the Seven Islands, they found the ice so packed that all idca of going north had to be abandoned. Instead of this, Nordenskjild explored North-East Land and crossed the vast ice-sheet which covers it. The expedition returned in 1873 with a fresh store of important scientific observations, especially in physics and submarine zoology. In 1873 Drasche, the geologist, paid a short visit to Spitzbergen, and the Dutch polar expedition approached it in 1882. In 1882 the Swedish geologists Naathorst and De Geer made a journey to which we are indebted for most interesting data about the flora of the islands. In the same year a polar meteorological station was established at Cape Hordsen for carrying on the observations desired by the international polar committee. The year 1883 being very favourable, the Norwegian walrus-hunters Andreasen and Johannesen pushed to the north-east of Spitzbergen and discovered new land to the north-east of the archipelago apparently extending as far as 39° BE. long.

Bibliography.—The literature of the subject is very voluminous, and for full bibliographical details reference must be made to such works as Chydenius's Svenska Hxpeditionen til Spetsbergen, translated into German by Passarge (Jena, 1869); A. Leslie's Arctic Voyages of A. E. Nordenskjéld_ (London, 1879); and Chavanne's Bibliographie der Polar-Regionen, 1878. The earliest maps of Spitzbergen up to 1864 have been reprinted in a Dutch publication (Tijdschrift van het Aardrijkskundig Genotschap te Amsterdam, pt. iii.); it contains the maps of 1596, 1612, 1625, 1634, 1642, 1648, and soon, Petermann's Mittheilungen, with Ergdnzungshefte, the Geographische Jahrbiicher, the Imer (journal of the Swedish Geographical Society), and the Journal of the Roy. Geog. Society con- tain more or less detailed accounts of all the Swedish expeditions up to date. The scientific results of the Swedish expeditions are embodied in very many papers, amounting to from 6000 to 7000 printed pages, reference to which will be found in the above-mentioned works and periodicals. Oswald Heer's Flora Fossilis Arctica deserves special mention. Every volume of the memoirs and proceedings (Handlingar and Forhandlingar) of the Swedish Academy of Sciences contains some remarkable contributions to our scientific knowledge of the far north, and the same can be said of many volumes of the Christiania Academy of Sciences and the Swedish Geological, Botanical, and Zoological Societies. ING 1))

SPLEEN. See Vascutar System. For diseases of the spleen, see Parnonoey, vol. xviii, p. 376 s9.; also Mauarra and Woot-Sorrer's DIsEASE.

SPOHR, Lupwie (1784-1859), violinist and composer, was born at Brunswick on 25th April 1784, but spent his childhood at Seesen, where in 1789 he began to study the violin, and worked so industriously that at six years old he was able to take the leading part in Kalkbrenner's trios. He received his general education at the Brunswick gram- mar-school,—taking lessons on the violin from Kunisch and studying composition under Hartung. The little he learned from the last-named professor was the only theoreti- cal instruction he ever received, for, as he himself tells us, he taught himself to compose by studying the scores of Mozart. ~ After playing a concerto of his own at a school concert with marked success, he was placed for a time under Maucourt, the leader of the duke's band ; and so rapid was his progress that in 1798 he was able to start on his first artistic tour. This proved a failure 3 but on his return to Brunswick the duke gave him an appointment in his band, and defrayed the expense of his future educa- tion under Franz Eck, in company with whom he visited St Petersburg and other European capitals. His first violin concerto was printed in 1803. In that year Spohr returned to Brunswick and resumed his place in the duke's band. A visit to Paris was prevented by the loss of his favourite violin,—a magnificent Guarnerius, presented to him in Russia. Having played in Berlin, Leipsic, Dresden, and other German towns, his increasing reputation gained for him in 1805 the appointment of leading violinist at the court of the duke of Gotha. Soon after this he married his first wife, Dorette Scheidler, a celebrated harpist. At Gotha he composed his first opera, Die Priifung, but did

not succeed in placing it on the stage. Alruna was equally unfortunate, though it was rehearsed with approval at Weimar in 1808. During this year Spohr accomplished one of the most extraordinary musical exploits on record. Hearing that Talma was performing at Erfurt before the reigning princes assembled for the famous congress, and failing in his attempt to obtain admission to the theatre, he bribed a horn-player to send him as his deputy ; and, though he had never touched a horn in his life, he learned in a

single day to play it so well that in the evening he was able to fulfil his self-imposed duty without excit- ing suspicion or remark. Spohr's third opera, Der Zwei- kampf mit der Geliebten, written in 1809, was successfully performed at Hamburg in the following year. In 1811 he produced his (first) Symphony in Hp, and in 1812 composed his first oratorio, Das jiingste Gericht.1 It was while employed in the preparation of this work that he first felt the inconvenience inseparable from an imperfect theoretical education ; and, with characteristic energy, he set about the diligent study of Marpurg's Abhandlung von der Fuge.

In 1812 Sphor visited Vienna, where his splendid violin- playing created a profound sensation, and he was induced to accept the appointment of leader of the orchestra at the Theater na der Wien. He then began the preparation of his greatest dramatic composition, /aust, which he com- pleted in 1813, though it was not performed until five years later. His strength as a composer was now fully developed; and the fertility of his imagination enabled him to produce one great work after another with aston- ishing rapidity. He resigned his appointment at Vienna in 1815, and soon afterwards made a tour in Italy, where he performed his eighth violin concerto, the Scena Cantante nello Stilo Drammatico,—the finest of his compositions for his favourite instrument. The performer was described by the leading critics of the country as "the finest singer on the violin that had ever been heard." On Spohr's return to Germany in 1817 he was appointed conductor of the opera at Frankfort; and in that city in 1818 he first produced his dramatic masterpiece, Faust. The favour with which this was received led to the composition of Zemire und Azor, a romantic piece founded on the story of Beauty and the Beast, which, though by no means equal to its predecessor in merit, soon attained a much higher degree of popularity. There can, indeed, be no doubt that Maust suffered from the very first from the weakness of its miserable libretto. Had the words been worthy of the music Faust would have taken rank among the finest German operas in existence.

Spohr first visited England in 1820, and on 6th March played his Scena Cantante with great success at the first Philharmonic concert. At the third he produced a new Symphony (No. 2) in D minor, written expressly for this occasion, which is remarkable as the first on. which the conductor's bdton

was used at a concert of the Philharmonic Society. Spohr's new symphony met with an enthusiastic reception, as did the earlier one (No. 1, in Eb), which was played, together with his Wonetto, at the last concert of the series. Indeed he had a triumphant success both as com- poser and as virtuoso; and he on his side was delighted with the performances of the Philharmonic orchestra. Before leaving London he gave a farewell concert, at Which Madame Dorette Spohr played on the harp for the last time. Her health at this period was so delicate that she was recommended to exchange her favourite instru- ment for the less fatiguing pianoforte ; and Spohr, with his accustomed facility, wrote a number of pieces for planoforte and violin, which the husband and wife played

1 Literally The Last Judgment, but not to be confounded with the oratorio now so well known by that name in England.

All

together with perfect artistic sympathy. After supple- menting his visit to England by a short sojourn in Paris, Spohr returned to Germany and settled for a time in Dresden, where German and Italian opera were flourishing side by side under the direction of Weber and Morlacchi. His artistic relations with the composer of Der Freischiitz were not altogether satisfactory ; nevertheless Weber did not hesitate to recommend him strongly to the elector of Hesse Cassel as "'kapellmeister." Spohr entered upon his duties at Cassel on 1st January 1822, and soon afterwards began the composition of his sixth opera, Jessonda, which he produced in 1823. This work—which he himself always regarded as one of his best productions—marks an important epoch in his career as a dramatic composer. It was the first opera he ever wrote with accompanied recitative throughout in place of the usual spoken dia- logue ; and by a remarkable coincidence it was produced in the same year as Weber's Luryanthe, a work charac- terized by the same departure from established custom. Unhappily Weber's early death prevented him from making a second essay in the same direction ; but Spohr consist- ently carried out the idea in his later operas, and always with marked success.

Spohr's appointment at Cassel gave him the opportunity of bringing out his new works on a grander scale and with more careful attention to detail than

he could have hoped to attain in the service of a less generous patron than the elector. And he never failed to use these privi- leges for the purpose of doing justice to the works of other composers. Soon after his instalment in his new office Mendelssohn, then a boy of thirteen, visited Cassel with his father ; notwithstanding the disparity of their years, a firm and lasting friendship sprang up between the rising genius and the already famous composer, which ceased only with Mendelssohn's death in 1847; and in other similar cases Spohr always proved himself ready to ap- preciate and foster the talent displayed by others, though it must be admitted that as a critic he was very difficult to please. The success of Jessonda led him to produce in 1825 a seventh opera—Der Berggevst—founded upon the old German legend of Riibezahl, the ruling spirit of the Riesengebirge. Though less popular than its predecessor, this fine work attained a very fair success. But a far greater triumph awaited the composer at the Rhenish musical festival held at Diisseldorf in 1826. On this occasion his oratorio Die letzten Dinge met with so en- thusiastic a reception that it had to be repeated a few days later for the benefit of a charity. This work, known in England as The Last Judgment, is undoubtedly the greatest of Spohr's sacred compositions, and is remarkable as the first oratorio in which the romantic element is freely introduced, with marked success throughout, and without detriment either to the solemnity of the subject or the sobriety of style which has always been regarded as an indispensable characteristic of sacred music of the highest order. In 1827 Spohr produced his eighth opera, Pietro von Abano, the plot of which depends for its chief interest upon the resuscitation by the famous necromancer of a lady long since dead and committed to the tomb. The work met with a fair, though not a lasting, success; and the same may be said of a much finer opera, Der Alchymist, produced in 1830. Spohr's next publication was of a very different character. His Violin School, produced in 1831, is so useful as a code of instruction for advanced students that there is probably no great violinist now living who has not been more or less indebted to it for the perfection of his technique. It holds with regard to the violin a position no less important than that which Cramer's Studies has so long held in connexion with the pianoforte.

The year 1833 Spohr spent in the preparation of a new

oratorio—Des Heiland's letzte Stunden, known in England as Calvary or The Crucifixion—which was performed at Cassel on Good Friday 1835, and sung in English at the Norwich festival of 1839, under Spohr's own direction, with such unexampled success that he was accustomed to speak of this event as the greatest triumph of his life. For the Norwich festival of 1842 he composed The Fall of Babylon, which also was a perfect success. His last opera, Die Kreuzfahrer, was produced at Cassel in 1845. Of his nine symphonies the finest, Die Weihe der Tone, was produced in 1832. His compositions for the violin include concertos, quartetts, duets, and other concerted pieces and solos, adapted for the chamber and the concert room, and among these a high place is taken by four double quartetts,—a form of composition of which he was both the inventor and the perfecter. He was, indeed, very much inclined to explore new paths, notwithstanding his attachment to classical form, and his freedom from prejudice was proved by the care with which he produced Wagner's Flying Dutchman and Tannhdéuser at Cassel in 1842 and 1853, in spite of the elector's opposition. Spohr retained his appointment until 1857, when, very much against his wish, he was pensioned off. In the same year he broke his arm, but he was able to conduct Jessonda at Prague in 1858. This, however, was his last effort. He died at Cassel on 16th October 1859. (W. S. R.) SPOLETO (Lat. Spoletium), a city of Italy, in Umbria, placed in a commanding position near the Via Flaminia, between Rome and Perugia, is said to have been colonized in 240 B.c, (Liv., Hpit., xx.; Vell. Pat., i. 14), and is called by Cicero (Pro Balb., 21) "colonia Latina in primis firma et illustris." After the battle of Trasimenus (217 B.C.) Spoletium was attacked by Hannibal, who was repulsed by the inhabitants (Liv., xxii. 9). During the Second Punic War the city was a useful ally to Rome. It suffered greatly during the civil wars of Marius and Sulla. The latter, after his victory over Crassus, confiscated the terri- tory of Spoletium and reduced it to the rank of a military colony. Under the empire it again became a flourishing town (Strabo, v. p. 227; Plin., H.M., iii. 14; Ptol., iii,

1, 54). Owing to its elevated position it was an important stronghold during the Vandal and Gothic wars ; its walls were dismantled by Totila (Procop., Bell. Get., iii. 12), Under the Lombards Spoleto became the capital of an independent duchy (from c. 570), and its dukes ruled a considerable part of central Italy. Together with other fiefs, it was bequeathed to Pope Gregory VIL. by the empress Matilda, but for some time struggled to maintain its inde- pendence. In 1881 it had a population of 7969 (commune, 21,507), many of whom are occupied in the weaving of woollen stuffs. It is the seat of an archbishopric for the three dioceses of Spoleto, Bevagna, and Trevi.

The city contains many interesting ancient remains,—traces of an early polygonal wall, a Roman theatre, and parts of three temples, built into the churches of 8, Agostino, 8. Andrea, and §. Giuliano, Remains of a fine Roman bridge were found a few years ago buried in the former bed of a torrent, which now runs along a different line, These remains have recently been buried again under a newly made road. On the citadel, which commands the town, still stands an ancient castle, originally built by Theodoric. This castle was mostly destroyed by the Goths, but was afterwards re- built and enlarged at many different times, especially by Pope Nicholas V. The existing building contains work of many different dates. The cathedral of S. Maria Assunta dates partly from the time of the Lombard duchy, but was much modernized in 1644. Over the main entrance is a very interesting and large mosaic of Christ in Majesty signed “Salsernus,” 1207; at the sides are figures of the Virgin and St John. In the choir and on the half cupola of the apse are some of the finest frescos of Lippo Lippi, represent- ing scenes from the life of the Virgin. Lippo died in 1469, leaving part of the work to be completed by his assistant Fra Diamante. The fine stalls and panelling in the choir are attributed to Bramante. The church of S. Pietro is a fine early example of Lombard archi- tecture, though much modernized. The facade is remarkable for its rich sculptured decorations of grotesque figures, dragons, and foliage. S. Domenico is a fine example of later Italian Gothic with bands of different coloured stones. ‘The three-apsed crypt of the church of S. Gregorio is of great interest ; it probably dates from the found- ing of the church in the 9th century. S$. Niccolo is a beautiful example of Pointed Gothic.

The city is still supplied with water by a grand aqueduct (seo vol. ii. pl. IV.) across the adjacent gorge; it has stone piers and brick arches, and is about 268 feet high and 676 feet long. It is said to have been built in 604 by Theodelapius, the third Lombard duke, and the stone piers belong probably to that time. The brick arches are later restorations.

SPONGES

ye great advance which has been made during the

past fifteen years in our knowledge of the sponges is due partly to the vivifying influence of the evolutional hypothesis, but still more to the opportunities afforded by novel methods of technique. To the strength and weak- ness of the deductive method Haeckel's work on the Kalk-schwémme (6)} is a standing testimony, while the slow but sure progress which accompanies the scientific method is equally illustrated by the works of Schulze (20), who by a masterly application of the new processes has more than any one else reconstructed on a sure basis the general morphology of the sponges. In the general progress the fossil sponges have been involved, and the application of Nicol's method of studying fossil organisms in thin slices has led, in the hands of Zittel and others (24, 35), toa complete overthrow of those older classifications which relegated every obscure petrifaction to the fossil sponges and consigned them all to orders no longer existing. But, whilst many problems have been solved, still more have been suggested. An almost endless diversity in details

differentiates the sponges into a vast number of specific |

forms; the exclusive possession in common of a few simple characters closely unites them intoa compact group, sharply marked off from the rest of the animal kingdom.

ee ee

1 These numbers refer to the bibliography at the end of the article. |

Structure and Form.

Description of a Simple Sponge.—As an example of one Simple

of the simplest known sponges we select Ascetta primordialis (fig. 1), Haeckel. This is a hollow vase-like sac closed at the lower end, by which it is attached, opening above by a comparatively large aperture, the osculum or vent, and at the {f sides by numerous smaller apertures or pores, which perforate the walls. Ex- : cept for the absence of tentacles and § the presence of pores it offers a general resemblance to some simple form of Hydrozoon. Histologically, however, it presents considerable differences, since, in addition to an endoderm and an ecto- derm, a third or mesodermic layer con- tributes to the structure of the walls; and the endoderm consists of cells (see fig. 21g) each of which resembles in all essential features those complicated uni- cellular organisms known as choano- flagellate Infusoria (see Protozoa, vol. xix. p. 858). With this positive charac- ter 18 associated a negative one: nemato- 61 ee cysts are entirely absent. The activity “~~”

SPONGES

of the Ascetta, as of all sponges, is most obviously mani-

A13

Canal System.—We shall now trace the several modifi-

fested, as Grant (5) first observed, by a rapid outflow of | cations which the Olynthus has undergone as expressed in water from the oscule and a gentle instreaming through | the different types of canal system.

the pores,—a movement brought about by the energetic action of the flagella of the WW ia. ff endodermic cells. The in- a i streaming currents bear with WN\\ them into the cavity of the sac (paragastric cavity) both protoplasmic particles (such as Infusoria, diatoms, and other small organisms) and dissolved oxygen, which are ingested by the flagellated cells of the en- doderm. ‘The presence of one or more contractile vacuoles in these cells suggests that they ~ extricate water, urea, and car- bonic acid. The insoluble re- sidue of the introduced food, together with the fluid excreta,

is carried out through the os- cule by the excurrent water. New individuals are produced from the union of ova and spermatozoa, which develop from wandering amceboid cells in the mesoderm. The walls of Ascetta are strengthened by calcareous scleres, more especi- = ally designated as spicules, Mc. 2—Homoderma sycandra, Lfd. Maen eve the form of tri- Ons, half cut sway by o vertical radiate needles. If we make feld (xabout 6).

abstraction of these we obtain an ideal sponge, which Haeckel has called Olynthus (6), and which may be re-

\ }

Quy

SFR x BRS WEES ATE

a Rs 0

ae\

ey

Ween

EH | gg A

/

\

\

=

SS

| | \ \

ih

Fic. 8.—Homoderma sycandra, Lfd. Transverse section, showing radial tubes opening

into central paragastric cavity. After V. Lendenfeld (xabout 12).

garded as the ancestral form from which all other sponges have been derived. To give greater exactness to our ab- Straction we should perhaps stipulate for the Olynthus a somewhat thicker mesoderm and more spherical form than a decalcified Ascon presents.

The simple paragaster of Ascetta may become compli- Ascon cated in a variety of ways, such as by the budding off type.

from a parent form of stolon-like extensions, which then give rise to fresh individuals, or by the branching of the Ascon sac and the subsequent anastomosis of the branches; but in no case, so long as the sponge remains within the Ascon type, does the endoderm become differentiated into different histological elements. The most interesting modification of the

Ascon form occurs in Homoderma sy- candra (z2), in which from the walls of a simple Ascon czecal processes grow out radiately in close regular whorls, each process reproducing the structure of the parent sponge (figs. 2, 3). From this it is but a short step to

the important departure which gives rise to the Sycons.

In the simplest examples of this type the characters of Sycon Homoderma sycandra are reproduced, with the important type. exception that the endoderm lining the paragastric cavity of the original Ascon form loses its primitive character,

Fic. 4.—Heteropegma nodus-gordii, Pol. Part ofa transverse section. The straight lines indicate spicules ; the poriferous surface is uppermost; the branching radial tubes are rendered dark by numerous small circles representing choanocytes. After Polejaeff, ‘‘ Challenger” Report (x50).

and from a layer of flagellated cells becomes converted

into a pavement epithelium, not in any distinguishable

feature different from that of the ectoderm. The

~~_ flagellated cells are thus restricted to the cacal outgrowths or radial tubes. Concurrently with this differentiation of the endoderm a more abun~~ dant development of mesoderm occurs. In some

Sycons (Sycaltis, Hk.) the radial tubes remain

separate and free; in others they lie close together

and are united by trabecule, or by a trabecular network, consisting of mesodermic strands sur- rounded by ectoderm (fig. 4). The spaces between the contiguous radial tubes thus become converted into narrow canals, through which water passes from the exterior to enter the pores in the walls of the radial tubes. These canals are the “inter- canals” of Haeckel, now generally known by their older name of incurrent canals. The openings of the incurrent canals to the exterior are called pores, a term which we have

also applied to the openings which lead directly into the radial tubes or paragastric cavity; to avoid ambiguity we shall for the future distinguish the latter kind of open- ing asa prosopyle. The term “pore” will then be restricted to the sense in which it was originally used by

Grant. The mouth by which a radial tube opens into the

paragaster is known as a gastric ostiwm. In the higher

forms of Sycons the radial tubes nolonger arise as simple out- growths of the whole sponge-wall, but rather as outgrowths

A414

of the endoderm into the mesoderm, which, together with the ectoderm, exhibits an independent growth of its own; and this results in the formation of a thick investment, known as the cortex (fig. 5), to the whole exterior of the

Fic. 5.—Ute Argentea, Pol. Part ofa transverse section. The concentric circles, indicating transverse sections of spicules, lie within the cortex. After Bole- jaeff, “ Challenger” Report (x100).

sponge. The radial tubes may branch, Heteropegma (fig.

4). Ifthe branches are given off regularly, as the radial

tubes were in the first plan, and if at the same time the

original radial tube exchanges its flagellated for a pave- ment epithelium, a structure as shown in fig. 6 (Polejna

Rhagon type.

Fia. 6.—Polejna connexiva, Pol. canals, into which the flagellated chambers open. After Polejaeff, ‘‘ Challenger” Report (x 50).

Part of a transverse section. 2, excurrent

connexiva, Pol.) will result. This form might also be brought about by unequal growth of the gastral endoderm leading to a folding of the inner part of the sponge-wall. Very little direct evidence exists as to which of these two plans has actually been followed. Phylogenetically the transition from a simple Ascon to the most complicated Sycon can be traced step by step; and ontogeny shows that such a Sycon form as Grantia raphanus passes through an Ascon phase in the course of its larval development. Returning to the ancestral form of sponge, Olynthus, let us conceive the endoderm growing out into a number of approximately spherical chambers, each of which com- municates with the exterior by a prosopyle and with the paragastric cavity by a comparatively large aperture, which we may term for distinction an apopyle; at the same time let the endoderm lose its flagellated character and become

converted into a pavement epithelium, except in the spherical chambers. Such a form, called by Haeckel “dyssycus,” may be more briefly named a Rhagon from the grape-like form of its flagellated chambers, which differ from those of a Sycon both by their form and their smaller dimensions. The Rhagon occurs as a stage in the early development of Plakina monolopha (Schulze) and Reniera Jertilis (9) (fig. 7); a calcareous sponge which appears to

Fie. 7.—Vertical section of a Rhagon, partly diagrammatic.

0, oscule; p, After Keller (x about 100).

approach it somewhat is Leucopsis pedunculata, Lid. By the folding of the wall of a Rhagon, or by its outgrowth into lobes, a complicated structure such as that of Plakina monolopha (20) (see fig. 26 f) results. This is character-

Fic. 8.—Transverse section across an excurrent canal and surrounding choano- some of Cydoniwm eosaster, Soll. e, excurrent canal; /, flagellated chambers communicating with it by aphodal canals; 7, an incurrent canal cut across; s, a sterraster ; 0, an oxea cut across. After Sollas, “‘ Challenger” Report (x 125).

ized by the chambers retaining their immediate communi- cation with the incurrent and excurrent canals, opening into the latter by the widely open apopyle and receivin the former by one or A¥pai.ox.rprq ay several prosopyles. This ~ may be termed the eury- + pylous type of Rhagon canal system. The fold- ing of the sponge-wall may be simple, as in the example given, or too complex to unravel. In higher forms of sponges (Geodinide, Stellettide) the chambers cease to open abruptly into the excurrent canals: each is = prolonged into a narrow $% canal, aphodus, or abitus, which usually directly,

sometimes after uniting “a! ay with one or more of its yy. 9.—Diplodal canal system in Cortictwm fellows, opens into an candelabrum, 0.8. e, excurrent canal; the

incurrent canal is shown on the left-hand excurrent canal. The side, near its commencement in the cortex.

prosopyles, now restrict- After F. E. Schulze (x 200). ed to one for each chamber, may remain unchanged in character, or at the most be prolonged into very short

one,

SPONGES

This may be | Jettidx, an early form of the sponge (fig. 11), shows the

tubes, each a prosodus or aditus (fig. 8). termed the aphodal or racemose type of Rhagon system, since the chambers at the ends of the aphodi radiating from the excurrent canal look like grapes ona bunch. As Haeckel, however, has used ‘“‘racemose” in a different sense, we shall adopt here the alternative term. By the exten- sion of the prosodal or adital canals into long tubes a still higher differentiation is reached (fig. 9). This, which from the marked presence of both prosodal and aphodal canals may be termed the diplodal type of the Rhagon canal system, occurs but rarely. Chondrosia is an example.

The following scheme will render clear the foregoing

distinctions :—

1. Ascon type: simple, ex. Ascetia, Hk. ; strobiloid, ex. Homo- derma, Lfd.

2. Sycon type: simple radial tubes, ex. Sycetta, Hk. ; branched radial tubes (cylindrical chambers), ex. Heteropegma, FI.; chamber-layer folded, ex. Polejna, Pol.

3. Rhagon type: eurypylous, with several prosopyles to each chamber, ex. Spongelia; with a single prosopyle to each chamber, ex. Osearella, Thenea; aphodal, aphodal canals well developed, ex. Geodia, Lmk.; diplodal, with both aphodal and prosodal canals well developed, ex. Chondrosia, O.S.

Tn the case of the calcareous sponges Polejaeff has argued forcibly that the eurypylous type arises directly from the Sycon and not from the Rhagon. It is therefore doubtful how far the Rhagon in other sponges is a primitive form derived directly from an Olynthus, or whether it may not be a secondary larval state resulting from the abbreviated development of a former Sycon predecessor. Whatever may have been its past history, the Rhagon serves now at all events as a starting-point for the development of the higher forms of canal system.

In the higher Rhagons, as in the Sycons, further com- plications ensue, owing to an independent growth of the external ectoderm and the adjacent mesoderm. While the endoderm, with its associated mesoderm, is growing out or folding to form the excurrent canal system, the super- ficial mesoderm increases in thickness, and the ectoderm, extending laterally from the sides of the incurrent sinuses, burrows into it, parallel to the surface of the sponge. Thus it forms beneath the skin (7.c., the layer of superficial mesoderm and investing ectoderm) cavities which may be either simple and spacious or be broken up into a number of labyrinthine passages by a network of mesoblastic strands (invested with ectoderm) which extend irregularly from roof to floor of the chamber. ‘These cavities are known as subdermal chambers.

With the appearance of subdermal chambers the sponge becomes differentiated into two almost independent regions, an outer or ectosome and an inner or choanosome, which is

’ characterized by the presence of flagellated chambers.

The ectosome forms the roof and walls of the subdermal chambers, and is in its simplest form merely an investing skin; but in a large number of sponges it acquires con- siderable thickness and a very complicated histological structure. It is then known as a cortex. The thickening which gives rise to a cortex takes place chiefly beneath those parts of the skin which are not furnished with pores. Beneath the pores—in this case collected into sieve-like areas—dome-like cavities are left in the cortex; they open freely into the subdermal cavities below and their roof is formed by the cribriform pore membrane above. In many Sponges (Geodia, Stelletta) the cortical domes are constricted near their communication with the subdermal cavity (sub- cortical crypt) by a transverse muscular sphincter, which defines an outer division or ectochone from an inner or endochone (fig. 10), the whole structure being a chone. The endochone is frequently absent (fig. 10). The early development of the cortex has scarcely yet been studied. In Stelletta phrissens (Soll.), one of the “Challenger” Stel-

Al5

choanosome already characteristically folded within the cortex, which forms a com- plete not-folded envelope – around it. The roots of the incurrent sinuses form : widely open spaces imme- – diately beneath the cortex – and are the rudiments of subcortical crypts. Again, <% in some sponges a part of the endoderm and asso- ciated mesoderm may like- || wise develop independ-|/ ently of the rest of the sponge, as in the Hexac- tinellida, where the choa- nosome forms a middle layer between a reticula- tion of ectosome on the one side and of endoderm and mesoderm, 1.¢., endo- some, on the other. Fin-

5 SS SSE CSS SS,

Fre. 10.—Section through the cortex of C . Endo- ally, the attached or lower donium eosaster, Soll., showing the a some.

sieve overlying the chone, which com- municates through a sphinctrate aperture with the subcortical crypt, lying in the choanosome with its

flagellated chambers. The dotted circles in the cortex are sterr- asters connected by fibrous strands. After Sollas, ‘‘ Challenger” Report (x78).

half of a Rhagon may de- velop in an altogether dif- ferent manner from the other or upper half, the endoderm not producing any flagellated chambers. In this case the upper portion alone is characterized by the flagellated chambers, which are the distinctive mark of a sponge, and hence may be

Fic. 11.—Young sponge of Stelletta phrissens, Soll. tion, showing the choanosome folded within the cortex. Sollas, ‘‘ Challenger” Report (x 50).

called the spongomere ; the lower half, which consists of all three fundamental layers, may be called the hypomere.

The form and general composition of sponges are ex- ceedingly various and often difficult to analyse, presenting, along with some important differences, a remarkable general resemblance to the Ccelentera in these respects. them, some sponges are simple, and others, through asexual multiplication, compound. The only criterion by which the individual sponge can be recognized is the oscu- lum ; and, as it is frequently difficult, and in many cases impossible, to distinguish this from the gastric opening of a large excurrent canal, there are many cases in which the simple or compound nature of the sponge must remain open to doubt. The oscule may also fail (Jipostomosis), and so may the paragastric cavity (lipogastrosis); the problem then becomes insoluble. The loss of the oscule

Longitudinal median see- o, oseule. After

Like Oscule.

may in some cases be due to the continued growth of several endodermal folds towards the exterior, with a corresponding absorption of the mesoderm and ectoderm which lie in the way, till the folds penetrate to the ecto- derm and open at the exterior, thus giving rise to excurrent openings, which are not readily distinguishable from pores. At the same time the original osculum closes up and entirely disappears. Lipogastrosis, on the

other hand, may be produced by the growing together of the roots of the choanosomal folds, thus reducing the paragastric cavity to a labyrinth of canals, which may easily be confounded with the usual form of excurrent canals. While in some sponges the original oscule is lost, in others secondary independent openings, deceptively like oscules, are added. This pseudostomosis is due to a folding of the entire sponge, so as to produce secondary canals or cavities, which may be incurrent (vestibular) or excurrent (cloacal), the opening of the latter to the exterior being termed a false oscule or pseudostome. ‘The faulty use of the term oscule for what is neither functionally nor morphologically a mouth is here obvious, for in one sense the oscule is always a pseudostome ; it would be better if the term pseudoproct could be substituted.

Skeleton.—All sponges, except three or four genera be- longing to the Myxospongiz, possess some kind of skeletal structures. They may be either calcareous or silicious or horny scleres, the latter usually having the form of fibres, which sometimes enclose silicious needles (spicules) or foreign bodies introduced from without. Foreign bodies also contribute to the formation of the skeleton of some silicious sponges, and occasionally form the entire skeleton, no other hard parts being present.

Mineral scleres usually occur in the form of spicules. The spicules of calcareous sponges consist of carbonate of lime, having the crystalline structure and other properties of calcite (29). Each spicule, so far as its mineral com- ponent is concerned, is a single crystal, all the molecules of calcite of which it is built up being similarly oriented. On the other hand, its form and general structure are purely organic. Its surfaces are always curved, and usually it has the form of a cone or combination of cones, each of which consists of concentric layers of calcite surrounding an axial fibre of organic matter,—probably of the same nature as spongiolin or spongin, the chief constituent of the fibres of horny sponges. A thin layer of organi matter, known as the spicule sheath, forms an outer investment to the spicule and is best rendered visible as a residue by removing the calcite with weak acid. Silicious spicules consist of colloid silica or opal, and hence can be distin- guished from calcareous by having no influence upon polar- ized light, Structurally the two kinds of spicules present no important difference. The spicules of different sponges differ greatly both in form and

in size. They may be conveniently divided into two groups,—minute or flesh spicules, which usually serve as the support of a single cell only (mzcroscleres), and larger or skeletal spicules, which usually contribute to the formation of a more or less con- sistent skeleton (megascleres). The distinction is not one that can be exactly defined, and must so far be regarded as of a provisional nature. There is usually but little diffi- culty in applying it in practice, except in some doubtful cases where large spicules do not form a continuous skeleton, or in others where flesh spicules appear to be passing into those of larger size. It is indeed highly probable that all large spicules have originated from flesh spicules (72).

(1) Monaxon Biradiate Type (rhabdus).—By far the commonest form is the oxea, a needle-shaped form pointed at both ends and produced by growth from a centre at the same rate in opposite directions along the same axis. It is therefore uniaxial and equibiradiate (fig.12a). (2) Mon-

axon Uniradiate Type (stylus).—By the suppression of one of the rays of an oxea, an acuate spicule or stylus results — (fig. 126). (3) Lriaxon Triradiate Type.—Linear growth

Fic. 12.—Typical megascleres. a, rhabdus (monaxon diactine); b, stylus (monaxon monactine); ¢, triod (triaxon triactine); d, calthrops (tetraxon tetractine); e, triaxon hexactine; f, desma of an anomocladine Lithistid pein g, sterraster (polyaxon); h, radial section through the outer part of g, showing two actines soldered hhc by intervening silica, the ee terminating in recurved spines and the axis traversed by a central

from a centre in three directions inclined at an angle of

120° to each other gives rise to the primitive form of tri- radiate spicule so eminently characteristic of the calcareous

sponges, but by no means confined to them (fig. 12). (4)

Tetraxon Quadriradiate Type (Calthrops).—Growth from a

centre in four directions inclined at about 110° to each

other produces the primitive quadriradiate form of the

Tetractinellida and of some calcareous sponges (fig. 12 d).

(5) Searadiate Type.—Growth in six directions along three

rectangular axes produces the primitive sexradiate spicule

of the Hexactinellida sponges (fig. 12). (6) Multiradiate

Type.— Extensions radiating in many directions from a

centre produce a stellate form (fig. 12 f). (7) Spherical

Scleres.—Concentric growth of silica about an organic

particle produces the sphere, which occurs as a reduction

of the rhabdus in some species of Pecillastra, or as an overgrown globule (flesh spicule) in Caminus.

Usually conical, the spicular rays often become cylindrical ; usu- Uniax ally pointed (oweate) at the ends, they are also frequently rounded type. off (strongylate), or thickened into knobs (tylotate), or branched (eladose).

Their growth is not always rigorously confined to a

|

Fic. 13.—Modifications of monaxon type. a, strongyle; b, tylote; c, oxea; d, tylotoxea; e, tylostyle; f, style; g, spined tylostyle; h, sagittal triod @ triaxon form derived from the monaxon); j, oxytylote; k, anatriene; J, pro- triene; m, orthotriene; n, dichotriene; 0, centrotriene; p, amphitrisene (this is trichocladose) ; g, crepidial strongyle (basis of Rhabdocrepid Lithistid desma); r, young form of Rhabdocrepid desma, showing crepidial strongyle coated with successive layers of silica; s, Rhabdocrepid desma fully grown. The dotted line through the upper figures marks the origin of the actines.

straight line: frequently they are curved or evenundulating. They are also liable to become spined, either by mere superficial thicken- ing or by a definite outgrowth involving the axial fibre (fig. 13 g, 4).

The rhabdus if pointed at both ends is known as an owea (fig. 18¢); if rounded at both ends as a strongyle (fig. 18a) ; if knobbed

at both ends as a tylote (fig. 138 6); the tylote if pointed at one end is a tylotoxea (fig. 18d); the strongyle similarly becomes a strongyl- oxea. ‘These last two forms are with difficulty distinguished from the stylus, which is usually pointed at the end, and strongylate (fig. 13/) or tylotate (fig. 13 e) about the origin. A particular case of the cladose rhabdus, but one of the most frequent occurrence, is the trizne; in this form one ray of a rhabdus ends in three branches, which diverge at equal angles from each other. The rhabdus then becomes known as the shaft or rhabdome, and the secondary rays are the arms or cladi, collectively the head or cladome of the spicule. The arms make different angles with the shaft: when recurved a grapnel or anatriane is produced (fig. 18 &), when projecting forwards a protrizne (fig. 137), and when extended at right angles an ortho- triwne (fig. 18m). The arms of a triene may bifurcate (dichotriane) once (fig. 18 2), twice, or oftener, or they may trifurcate. Again, they may extend laterally into undulating lamelle, or unite to form a disk, the triene character of which is indicated by the included axial fibre. The shaft may also become trifid at both ends, amphi- triene (fig. 13 p), and the resulting rays all bifurcate, or the cladome may arise from the centre of the rhabdome, centrotriwne (fig. 13 0). Amongst one group of Lithistid sponges (Rhabdocrepida) the normal growth of a strongyle is arrested at an early stage ; it then serves as a nucleus upon which further silica is deposited, and in such a manner as to produce a very irregularly branching sclere or desma (fig. 18 s), within which the fundamental strongyle can be seen en- closed. In such a desma no axial fibre besides that of the enclosed strongyle is formed.

The chief modification of the triradiate spicule is due to an elonga- tion of one ray, distinguished as apical, the shorter paired rays being termed basa/, and the whole spicule a sagittal triradiate. The ‘ angle included by the basal

rays is usually over 120° (fig, 14 a). ‘Some or all of the rays of the primitive calthrops (fig, 14 >) may

Fia. 14.—Modifications of the triaxon and tetraxon types. a, sagittal triradiate or triod; 0, calthrops; c, candelabra (a polycladose microcalthrops); d, a spined microcalthrops ; ¢, Tetracladine Lithistid desina.

subdivide into a number of terminal spines candelabra (fig. 14 ¢) ; or some or all of them may bifurcate once or twice and finally terminate by subdividing into numerous variously oe 7 processes ; such a tetracladine desma (fig. 14) eharacterizes one division of the Lithistid sponges.

By the excess or defect of one or more rays a series of forms such as are represented in fig. 15 arise. In the oxea, which results from

ef LT

Fic. 15.—Modifications of the triaxon hexactine type. a, dagger ; b, c, two varieties of pinnulus; d, amphidisk; e, pentactine; f, staurus; g, dermal thabdus. After Schulze.

the suppression of all rays but two, the sexradiate character is some- times preserved by the axial fibre, which gives off two or four pro- cesses in the middle of the spicule where the defective arms would arise. Let fig. 12 ¢ represent a regular sexradiate spicule with its four horizontal arms extended beneath the dermis of its sponge ; the over-development of the proximal ray and a reduction of the distal ray produce a form known as the dagger (fig. 15 a); the suppression of the proximal ray and the development of spines pro- jecting forwards on the distal ray produce the yinnulus (fig. 15 8, c) ; the suppression of both proximal and distal rays gives the stawrus (fig. 15 7), and the suppression of two of the remaining horizontal rays a dermal rhabdus (fig. 15g). The suppression of a distal ray, excessive development of a proximal ray, and recurved growth of the remaining rays produce an anchor. In Hyalonema (glass rope sponge) anchors over a foot long occur, but their arms or teeth are not restricted to four, and the axial fibre gives off its processes before reaching the head of the spicule. Such a grapnel helps to support the sponge in the ooze of the sea-bed. Other character-

on

Fra. 16.—a, uncinaria ; 0, clavula; c, scopularia. After Schulze.

istic spicules belonging to sponges distinguished by sexradiate spicules are the following :—the wnceinaria (fig. 16 a), a spinose

417

oxea with the spines all pointing one way; the clavula, a tylotate form with a toothed margin to the head (fig. 16 0); the scopularia (fig. 16 c), a besom-shaped spicule with tylotate rays, which vary in number from two to eight; the amphidisk (fig. 15 d), a shaft terminating at each end in a number of recurved rays. When the sexradiate spicules of the Hexactinellida unite together in a manner to be described later, the rays may be bent in a variety of ways out of the triaxial type, so that the sexradiate character alone remains,

Multiradiate Type.—The rays of an aster as of other spicules may be spined or tylotate. In one remarkable form known as a sterraster (fig. 12 9, h), and characteristic of the family Geodinida, the rays are almost infinite in number, and coalesced for the greater part of their length ; the distal ends, however, remain separate, and, becoming slightly tylotate, are produced into four or five re- curved spines, which give attachment to connective tissue fibres by which adjacent sterrasters are united together.

In one aberrant group of Lithistid sponges (Anomocladina) the skeleton is formed of desmas, which are multiradiate, each present- ing a massive centrum (with an included cavity) produced into a variable number (4 to 8) of rays, which rays terminate in expanded ends (fig. 12, f).

Multi- radiate

type.

It is doubtful whether a distinction between megascleres and Micro-microscleres can be maintained in the calcareous sponges, unless scleres.

the minute oxeas which occur in Hilhardia schulzei, Pol. (76), are to be referred to this group. They are widely distributed through- out the silicious sponges, and by their different forms afford charac- ters of the highest importance in classification.

One of the simplest forms is the sigmaspire (fig. 17 a, b); it looks like the letter C or S, according to the direction in which it is

Fig. 17—Microscleres. a, 6, sigmaspire viewed in different directions,—a, along axis, and }, obliquely ; c, toxaspire; d, spiraster; e, sanidaster; f, amphi- aster ; g, sigma or cymba ; h, cymba, with three ptera at each end,—the central one a proral pteron and the lateral, pleural ptera ; 7, one end of another form of cymba, showing seven ptera; k, monopteral cymba,—proral ptera only, developed at ends, tropidial ptera much enlarged ; 1, oocymba, in which proral and pleural ptera have grown towards each other and coalesced ; m, spher- aster; 7, oxyaster; 0, the same, with six actines; p, the same, with four actines ; g, the same, with two actines (a centrotylote microxea); 7, micro- tylote ; s, microxea (q, r, and s are reduced asters); ¢, rosette.

viewed, its actual form being that of a single turn of a cylindrical

spiral, A turn and a part of a turn of a spiral of somewhat higher

pitch than that of a sigmaspire gives the toxaspire (fig. 17¢); a con- tinued spiral growth through several revolutions gives the poly- spire. The sigmaspire becoming spined produces the spiraster or spinispirula (fig. 17 d); this, by losing its curvature, becomes the sanidaster (fig. 17 e), and by simultaneous concentration of its spines into a whorl at each end, the amphiuster (fig. 17 f). By reduction

of the spire the spiraster passes into the stellate or aster (fig. 17 n).

A thickening about the centre of the aster produces the spherastcr

(fig. 17 m), allied to which is the sterraster. By a reduction in the

number of its rays the aster becomes a minute calthrops, from which,

by increased growth, the skeletal calthrops may very well be derived ; by further reduction to two rays a little rhabdus or microrabd re- sults, and of this numerous varieties exist, of which the oxeate microrabd is the most interesting, since it only differs in size from the commonest of all skeletal spicules, the oxeate or acerate rhab- dus. The sigmaspire is formed as a superficial spiral thickening in the wall ofa spicule cell or scleroblast ; as superficial deposits also the next group of spicules, the so-called anchorates, arise.

Take a hen’s egg as the model of a scleroblast, draw round it a

broad meridional band, interrupted only on one side, for 30° above

and below the equator; this will represent a truly C-shaped spicule, which differs from a sigmaspire by the absence of spiral twist.

It may be termed a cymba (fig. 179). The back of the “C” is the

keel or tropis; the points are the prows or prorwx. Now broaden out

the prora on the eggshell into oval lobes (proral pteres) ; and from each pole draw a lobe midway between the prora and the tropis

(pleural pteres), and a common form of anchorate, the pterocymba

results (fig. 17 2). The pterocymba is subject to considerable modi- fications: the prows may be similar (homoproral) or dissimilar

(heteroproral); the pteres may be lamellar or ungual ; additional lamella (tropidial pteres) may be produced by a lateral outgrowth of the keel (fig. 17 &); and by growing towards the equator the opposed proral and pleural pteres may conjoin, producing a spicule of two meridional bands (oocymba ; fig. 177). A curious group of flesh spicules are the trichites. In this group silica, instead of being deposited in concentric coatings around an axial fibre, forms within the scleroblast a sheaf of immeasurably fine fibrille or trichites, whieh may be straight (fig. 17 m) or twisted. The trichite sheaf may be regarded as a fibrillated spicule. Trichite sheaves form in some sponges, as Dragmastra (25), a dense accumulation within the cortex. In Hexactinellid sponges the rays of the aster are limited to six, arranged as in a primitive sexradiate spicule, but divided at the ends into an indefinite number of slender filaments, which may or may not be tylotate, rosettes (fig. 17 t).

Spongin is a horny substance, most similar to silk in chemical composition, from which it differs in being in- soluble in an ammoniacal solution of copper sulphate (cuproso-ammonium sulphate). In Darwinella aurea, F. Miiller, it occurs in forms somewhat resembling tri-, quadri-, and sex-radiate spicules. But usually the spongin skeleton takes the form of fibres, consisting of a central core of soft granular substance around which the spongin is disposed in concentric layers, forming a hollow cylinder (fig. 23 6). The relative diameters of the soft core and of the spongin cylinder differ greatly in different sponges. The fibres branch so as to form antler-like twigs or bushy tree-like growths, or anastomose to form a continuous net-work, as in the bath sponge (Zuspongia officinalis). The detailed characters of the network differ with the species, and are useful in classification. In Janthella certain cells (sponginblasts) become included between the successive layers of the spongin cylinder, and their deep violet colour, contrasting with the amber tint of the spongin, renders them very conspicuous.

In some sponges the scleres are simply scattered through the mesoderm and do not give rise to a continuous skeleton, —Corticiwm, Chondrilla, Thrombus. In the Calcarca and many silicious sponges they are dispersed through the mesoderm, but so numerously that by the overlapping of their rays a loosely felted skeleton is pro- duced. In the calcareous sponges the

spicules are frequently regu- larly disposed ; and in the Sycons in particular a definite arrange-

Fia. 18, —Articulate and inarticulate tubar skelctons of calcisponges. a, artieu-

late; 6, inarticulate skeleton. After Haeckel.

ment, on two plans, the articulate and inarticulate, can be traced in the skeleton of the radial tubes. On the latter plan the triradi- ate or quadriradiate spicules, the apical rays of which are of con- siderable length, are arranged in two sets, one having the basal rays lying in the mesoderm of the paragastral wall and the other with the corresponding rays in the dermal mesoderm. The apical rays of each set lie in the mesoderm of the radial tubes parallel to their length, but pointing in opposite directions (fig. 18 6). In the articulate division numerous spicules, small in comparison with the size of the radial tubes, form a series of rows round the tubes, their basal rays lying parallel to the paragastric surface and the apical pointing towards the ends of the radial tubes (fig. 18 a).

In the Silicispongia sheaves of long oxeate spicules radiate from the base of the sponge if of a plate-like form, or from the centre if globular, and extend to the surface. If triznes are present their arms usually extend within the mesoderm immediately below the

dermal surface (fig. 19). Single spicules reach from centre to sur- face only in small sponges. As the sponge increases in size the spicules must either correspondingly lengthen, or fresh spicules must be added, if a continuous skeleton is to be formed. The latter is the plan fol- lowed in fact: the ad- ditional spicules over- lap the ends of those first formed like the fusiform cells in a woody fibre. With the formation of a fibre, often strengthened by spongin or bound to- gether with connective tissue, there appears to be a tendency for the constituent spicules to diminish in size, and the length of each in the most markedly Fic. 19.—Mode of arrangement of spieules in a fibrous sponges is in- Ce ae, Dragmastra norman, significant when com- pared with the length of the fibre. The spicular fibre thus formed may be

simple or echinated by spicules either similar to those which form its mass or different. More usually they are different, and generally styles, often spinose about their origin. The spongin which sometimes cements together the spicules of a fibre may progressively increase in quantity and the spicules di- minish in number, till a horny fibre containing one or more rows of small oxeas results. In an echinated fibre the axial spicules may disappear and the eehinating spicules persist. Finally all spieules may be suppressed and the horny fibre of the Ceratose sponges results. The horny fibres may next acquire the habit of einbedding foreign bodies in their substance, though foreign en- closures are not confined to the Ceratosa but occur in some Silici- spongiz as well. The included foreign bodies may increase in uantity out of all proportion to the horny fibres ; and finally the skeleton may consist of them alone, all spongin matter having disappeared.

In the Lithistid sponges a skeleton is produced by the articula- tion of desmas into a network. The rays of the desmas (figs. 12/, 13 s, 14) terminate in apophyses, which apply themselves to some part of adjacent desmas, either to the centrum, shaft, arms, or similar apophyses, and then, growing round them like a saddle on a horse’s baek, elasp them firmly without anehylosis. Thus they give rise to a rigid network, in conjunction with which fibres com- posed of rhabdus spicules may exist. In the Hexactinellida both spicular felts and fibres occur, and in one division (Dictyonina) a rigid network is produced, not, however, by a mere clasping of apophyses, but by a true fusion. The rays of adjacent spicules overlap and a common investment of silica grows over them.

Mistology.

The ectoderm usually consists of simple pavement Eeto- | epithelial cells (pinnacocytes), the margins of which can de™.|

be readily rendered visible by treatment with silver nitrate, best by Harmer’s method. The nucleus and nucleolus are usually visible in preparations made from spirit speci- mens, the nucleus being often readily recognizable by its characteristic bulging beyond the general surface. In some sponges (Thecaphora) the epithelium may be replaced locally by columnar epithelium, and the cells of both pave- ment and columnar epithelium may bear flagella (Aplysilla

wolacea, Oscarella lobularis). The endoderm presents the Endo- same characters as the ectoderm, except in the Ascons and 4e™. |

the flagellated chambers of all other sponges, where it is formed of collared flagellated cells or choanocytes,—cells with a nearly spherical body in which a nucleus and nucleo- lus can be distinguished and one or more contractile vacu- oles. The endoderm extends distally in a cylindrical neck or collum, which terminates in a long flagellum surrounded by a delicate protoplasmic frill or collar (fig. 21g). In Tetractinellida, and probably in many other sponges—cer- tainly in some—the collars of contiguous choanocytes coalesce at their margins so as to produce a fenestrated membrane, which forms a second inner lining to the flagel-

1 §. F. Harmer, ‘‘On a Method for the Silver Staining of Marine Objects,” Mitth. Zoolog. Station zu Neapel, 1884, p. 445.

lated chamber (fig. 20, ii.). The presence of this membrane | enters abruptly. This abrupt termination of the incurrent

Fic. 20.—Choanocytes with coalesced collars. (i.) Longitudinal section through two flagellated chambers of Anthastra communis, Soll.; i, prosopyles; ¢, aphodal canals leading from the flagellated chambers ; e, excurrent canal ; the tissue surrounding the chambers is sarcenchyme (X3860). (ii.) Diagram showing the fenestrated membrane (m) produced by coalesced collars of choanocytes. After Sollas, “ Challenger” Report.

incurrent face of the chamber, since its convex surface is always turned towards the prosopyle. In sponges with an

Fig. 21.—Histological elements. a, collencytes, from Thenea muricata; 6, chondrenchyme, from cortex of Corticium candelabrum (the unshaded bodies are microscleres); c, cystenchyme, from Pachymatisma johnstoni (partly dia- grammatic); d, desmacyte, from Dragmastra normani; e,

myocytes in con- hexion with collencytes, from Cinachyra barbata ; f, thesocyte, from Thenea

icata; g, choanocyte, from Sycandra raphanus; h-n, scleroblasts—h, of & young oxea, froin an embryo of Craniella cranium; 1, of a fully grown oxea, from an adult C. cranium; j, orthotriene, with associated scleroblast from Stelletta, ; k, of a tetracladine desma, from Theonella swinhoet ; 1, of a sigma- spire, from Craniella cranium; m, of an orthodragma, from Disyringa dis- similis; n, of a sterraster, from Geodia barretti. Figs. b and g after Schulze, the others after Sollas.

aphodal canal system the flagellated chambers usually pass gradually into the aphodal canal, but the incurrent canal

enables us readily to distinguish the excurrent from the | canal appears to mark the termination of the ectoderm

and the commencement of the endoderm. The flagellated chambers differ greatly in size in different sponges, and evidently manifest a tendency to become smaller as the canal system increases in complexity; thus Sycon are always larger than Rhagon chambers, and eurypylous than aphodal Rhagon chambers. In most sponges except the Ascons the

mesoderm is largely developed, and in many it undergoes Meso- In its com- derm.

a highly complex histological differentiation. monest and simplest form it consists of a clear, colourless, gelatinous matrix in which irregularly branching stellate cells or connective tissue corpuscles are embedded ; these may be termed collencytes (fig. 21 a) and the tissue collen- chyme. In the higher sponges (Geodia, Stelletta) it consists of small polygonal granular cells either closely contiguous or separated by a very small quantity of structureless jelly, and in this form may be termed sarcenchyme (fig. 20). Collenchyme does not originate through the transformation of sarcenchyme, as one might expect, for it precedes the latter in development. Schulze (20), who has compared collenchyme to the gelatinous tissue which forms the chief part of the umbrella of “‘jelly-fish,” describes it as becoming granular immediately in the neighbourhood of the flagel- lated chambers in the bath

sponge, the granules becoming more numerous in sponges in which the canal system acquires a higher differentiation, till at length the collen- cytes are concealed by them. According to this view, sarcenchyme would appear to originate from a densely granular collenchyme. Amceboid wandering cells or arche- ocytes (fig. 22) are scattered through the matrix of the collenchyme. They evidently serve very different purposes : some appear to act as carriers of nourishment or as scavengers of useless or irritant foreign matter; others may possibly contribute to the formation of higher tissues, some certainly becoming converted into sexual products.

Their parentage and early history are unknown.

A tissue (cystenchyme) which in some respects resembles certain forms of vegetable parenchyme occurs in some sponges, particularly Geodinide and other Tetractinellida, It consists of closely ad- jacent large oval cells, with thin well-defined walls and fluid contents. Somewhere about the middle of the cell is the nucleus with its nucleolus, supported by protoplasm, which extends from it in fine threads to the inner side of the wall, where it spreads out in a thin investing film (fig. 21¢). Cystenchyme very commonly forms a layer just below the skin of some Geodinida, particularly of Pachymatisma, and, as on teasing the cortex of this sponge a large number of refringent fluid globules immiscible with water are set free, it is just possible that it is sometimes a fatty tissue, and if so the contained oil must be soluble in alcohol, for alcoholic prepara- tions show no trace of it. A tissue resembling cartilage, chondren- chyme, occurs in Corticid# (fig. 21 b).

Connective-tissue cells or desmacytes are present in most Desma- sponges ; they are usually long fusiform bodies, consisting cytes.

of a clear, colourless, often minutely fibrillated sheath, surrounding a highly refringent axial fibre, which stains deeply with reagents (fig. 21d). In other cases the des- macyte is simply a fusiform granular cell, with a nucleus in the interior and a fibrillated appearance towards the ends. The desmacytes are gathered together, their ends overlapping, into fibrous strands or felted sheets, which in the ectosome of some sponges may acquire a considerable thickness, often constituting the greater part of the cortex. The spicules of the sponge often furnish them with a sur- face of attachment, especially in

the Geodinidx, where each sterraster of the cortex is united to its neighbours by des- macytes, in the manner shown in fig. 10.

Contractile fibre cells or myocytes occur in all the higher Myo- sponges. They appear to be of more than one kind. Most cytes.

usually they are fine granular fusiform cells with long filiform terminations, and with an enclosed nucleus and nucleolus (fig. 21 ¢). In the majority of sponges both ex- current and incurrent canals are constricted at intervals

by transverse diaphragms or vela, which contain myocytes concentrically and sometimes radiately arranged. The excessive development of myocytes in such a velum gives rise to muscular sphincters such as those which close the chones of many corticate sponges, such as Pachymatisma. In this sponge, which occurs on the British shores, the function of the oscular sphincters can be readily demon- strated, since irritation of the margin of the oscule is invariably followed after a short interval by a slow closure of the sphincter.

those cases in which it would be most interesting to find such a connexion absolute proof of it is wanting.

The colour of sponges usually depends on the presence Pigmen of cells containing granules of pigment ; though dispersed cells, | generally through the mesoderm, these cells are most richly developed in the ectosome. Pigment granules also occur in the choanocytes of some sponges,— Oscarella lobularis and Aplysina aerophoba, for instance. In the latter the pigment undergoes a remarkable change of colour when the sponge is exposed to the air, and finally fades away.

Aistha- Supposed sense-cells or xsthacytes (fig. 22) were first | In many cases sponges borrow their colours from parasitic cytes. observed by Stewart and have since been described by | algee (Oscillatoria and Nostoc) with which they are infested, Von Lendenfeld (z2). According to the latter, they are | The colours of sponge-pigments are very various. They spindle- shaped. cells, 0°01 mm. long by 0°002 thick ; the | have been examined by

Krukenberg and Merejknovsky. distal end projects beyond the ectodermal epithelium in a Zoonerythin, a red pigment of the lipochrome series, is one fine hair or palpocil ; the body is granular and contains a | of the most widely diffused ; it is regarded as having a large oval nucleus; and the inner end is produced into respiratory function. Reserve cells or thesocytes (fig. 21 f) fine threads, which extend into the collenchyme and are | have been described in several sponges as well as amylin supposed—though this is not proved—to become con- | and oil-bearing cells, tinuous with large multiradiate collencytes, which Von Each spicule of a sponge originates in a single cell Sclero. Lendenfeld regards as multipolar ganglion cells (fig. 22). | (fig. 21 hn), within which it probably remains enclosed blasts. | : SS me Tt until it has completed its full growth; the cell then prob- Vy ably atrophies. During its growth the spicule slowly passes from the interior to the exterior of the sponge, and Ry is finally (in at least some sponges, Geodia, Stelletta) cast out as an effete product. The sponge is thus constantly producing and disengaging spicules; and in this way we may account for the extraordinary profusion of these struc- tures in some modern marine deposits and in the ancient stratified rocks. Within the latter these deciduous spicules have furnished silica for the formation of flints, which have been produced by a silicious replacement of carbonate of lime (26), F1a. 22.—Transverse section through the edge of a pore in Dendrilla cavernosa, Lfd.; cells in the middle to the right, archocytes; fusiform cells on each side of them, myocytes; g, above and below these, with processes terminating against the epithelium, gland cells; fusiform cells terminating against the epithelium at s, esthacytes; at their inner ends these are con- tinuous with ganglion cells, After Von Lendenfeld (x 800). More recently he has described an arrangement of these cells curiously suggestive of a sense-organ. Numerous esthacytes are collected over a small area, and at their inner ends pass into a granular mass of .cells with well- marked nuclei, but with boundaries not so evident ; these he regards as ganglion cells. From the sides of the gan- OSDORS glion other slender fusiform cells, which Von Lendenfeld is “Felt regards as nerves, pass into the mesoderm, running tan- oy gentially beneath the skin. The inner end of the ganglion is in communication with a membrane formed of fusiform cells which Von Lendenfeld regards as muscular. If his observations and inferences are confirmed, it is obvious that we have here a complete apparatus for the conversion of external impressions into muscular movements. Proto- In most sponges a direct

connexion can be traced by as means of their branching processes between the collen- ; tnuity, SYS OF (ihe mesoderm tnd the cells of the ectodermal | Fs. 28seetin, trough the homy fre and asiolted tienes ofa homy

and endodermal epithelium and the choanocytes of the flagellated chambers. As the collencytes are also united amongst themselves, they place the various histological constituents of the sponge in true protoplasmic continuity. Hence we may with considerable probability regard the

at the sides by the lateral mantle of sponginblasts, and at the ends by the terminal cap. A desmachymatous sheath, a, surrounds the whole (X 150). B, transverse section; in the centre is the soft core, surrounded by wavy spongin layers, the outermost being surrounded by sponginblasts, and these by a fibrous sheath; 4, part of an incurrent canal lined by flagellated epi-thelium ; ¢, part of an excurrent canal; f, part ofa flagellated chamber (x 150). After Von Lendenfeld.

collencytes as furnishing a means for the transmission of impulses: in other words, we may attribute to them a rudimentary nervous function. In this case the modifica- tion of some of the collencytes in communication with the ectoderm might readily follow and special zesthacytes arise. Fusiform collencytes perpendicular to the ectoderm, and with one end touching it, are common in a variety of sponges ; but it is difficult to trace the inner end into connexion with the stellate collencytes, so that precisely in

lateral sponginblasts are elongated radially to the fibre; the terminal cells are polygonal and depressed. The latter give rise to the soft granular core and the former to the spongin-walls of the fibre. Cells similar to the lateral sponginblasts, and regarded as homologous with them, occur in a single layer just below the outer epithelium of some horny sponges (Aplysilla and Dendrilia), and under certain circumstances secrete a large quantity of slimy mucus (77).

Classification.

het. The phylum Parazoa or Spongiz consists of two main tion. branches, as follows :—

Branch A.— MHGAMASTIC- Branch B. — MICROMASTIC- TORA. TORA. Class CALCAREA, Grant. Class I. — Myxosroncia, Order 1.— Homocela, Pol. Haeckel.

Order 1.—Halisancina. Order 2.—Chondrosina. Class II. - SILICISPONGIZ.

Sub-class i.— HEXACTINELLIDA, O. Schmidt. Order 1.—Lyssacina, Zittel. Order 2.—Dictyonina, Zittel.

Sub-class ii.—DE=MosPoNGIaz,

Order 2.—Heterocela, Pol.

Sollas.

Tribe a.—Monaxonida. Order 1.—Monaxona. Order 2.—Ceratosa, Grant.

Tribe 6. — Tetractinellida, Marshall. Order 1.—Choristida, Sollas. Order 2. —Lithistida, O.S. Tlition By the possession of both sexual elements and a complex histo- j/nimal logical structure, and in the character of their embryological devel- dom. opment, the sponges are clearly separated from the Protozoa ; on the other hand, the choanoflagellate character of the endoderm,

which it retains in the flagellated chambers throughout the group without a single exccption, as clearly marks them off from the Metazoa. They may therefore be regarded as a separate phylum derived from the choanoflagellate Infusoria, but pursuing for a certain distance a course of development parallel with that of the Metazoa. : Different views have been propounded by other authors. Savile Kent regards the sponges as Protozoa (ro); Balfour suggested that { they branched off from the Metazoan phylum at a point below the Celentera, and considered them as intermediate between Protozoa and Metazoa; Schulze regards them as derived from a simple ancestral form of Celentera (27) ; Marshall advocates the view that they are degraded forms derived from Ccelenterates which were already in possession of tentacles and mesenteric pouches (74). ohdivi. Asa phylum the Spongix are certainly divisible into two branches, 1in one including the

Calcarea and the other the remaining sponges, ps, Which Vosmaer has termed Non-Calcarea, and others Plethospongiz. | Since, however, the choanocytes of the Calcarca are usually, if not universally, larger than those of other sponges, we may make use of this difference in our nomenclature, and distinguish one branch as the Megamastictora (uacrlkrwp, ‘‘scourger”) and the other as the Micromastictora.

Branch A.—MHGAMASTICTORA.

Sponges in which the choanocytes are of comparatively large size, 0°005 to 0009 mm. in diameter (Haeckel, 6).

Class CALCAREA.

tore in which the skeleton is composed of calcareous spicules.

Order 1. Homocaia.—Calcarea in which the endoderm consists wholly of choanocytes. Examples: Zeucosolenia, Bwk.; Homo- derma, Lfd.

Order 2. HrTreroca1ia.—Calcarea in which the endoderm is dif- ferentiated into pinnacocytes, which line the paragastric cavity and excurrent canals, and choanocytes, which are restricted to special recesses (radial tubes or flagellated chambers). Examples: Sycon, 0.8.; Grantia, Fl.; Leuconia, Bwk.

Branch B.—MICROMASTICTORA.

(Non-Calearea, Vosmaer; Picthospongixv, Sollas.) Sponges in peich the choanocytes are comparatively small, 0°003 mm. in | ameter,

eo

(caren,

Class I. MYXOSPONGIZA

Micromastictora in which a skeleton or scleres are absent.

_ Order 1. Hanisancina.—Myxospongix in which the canal system Is simple, with simple or branched Sycon or eurypylous Rhagon chambers.

An ectosome sometimes and a cortex always absent. Examples: Halisarca, Duj.; Oscarella, Vosm.; Bajalus, Lfd.

Order 2. Cuonprosina.— Myxospongie in which the canal system is complicated, with diplodal Rhagon chambers and a well-developed cortex. Example: Chondrosia, 0.8.

The Halisarcina are evidently survivals from an ancient and primitive type. The simplicity of the canal system is opposed to the view that they are degraded forms; we may therefore regard the absence of scleres as a persistent primary and not a secondary acquired character. They are as interesting, therefore, from one

aha

chgie

point of view (absence of scleres) as the Ascons are from another (undifferentiated endoderm). With the Chondrosina the case is different ; they differ only from Chondrilla and its allies by the absence of asters; these differ only from the Z'ethyidw by the absence of strongyloxeas ; and we may very reasonably assume that in these three groups we have a series due to loss of characters, the Chondrille being reduced Tethyidew and the Chondrosina reduced Chondrillz. Still, as Huxley has well remarked, "classification should express not assumptions but facts"; and therefore till we are in possession of more direct evidence it will be well to exclude the Chondrosina from the Silicispongix.

Class II. SILICISPONGLE.

Micromastictora possessing a skeleton or scleres which are not calcareous.

Sub-class i, HEXACTINELLIDA.

Silicispongiz characterized by sexradiate silicious spicules. Hexacti Canal system usually simple, with Sycon chambers. Sponge nedlida. differentiated into ecto-, choano-, and endo-some.

Order 1. Lyssacina.—Hexactinellida in which the skeleton is formed of separate spicules, or, if united, then by a subsequent not a contemporaneous deposit of silica. Examples: Huplectella, Owen ; Asconema, 8. Kent ; Hyalonema, Gray ; Rossella, Ortr.

Order 2. Dicryonina. — Hexactinellida in which sexradiate spicules are cemented together by a silicious deposit into a con- tinuous network part passu with their formation. Examples: Farrea, Bwk.; Hurete, Marshall; Aphrocallistes, Gray 3 Myliusia, Gray ; Dactylocalyx, Stutchbury.

The Hexactinellida are a very sharply defined group, impressed with marked archaic features. No other Silicispongix# possess, so far as is known, so simple a syconate canal system. ‘The oldest known fossil sponge is a member of the Lyssacina (7 and 24), viz., Protospongia, Salter, from the Menevian beds, Lower Cambrian, St David’s Head, Wales. The group is almost world-wide in distri- bution, chiefly affecting deep water, from 100 to 300 fathoms, but often extending into abyssal depths ; occasionally, however, though rarely, it frequents shallow water (Cystispongia superstes dredged off Yucatan in 18 fathoms).

Sub-class ii. DEMOSPONGIZA, Stlicispongi# in which sexradiate spicules are absent Tribea. MONAXONIDA.

Demospongiz in which the skeleton consists either of silicious py which are not quadriradiate, or of horny scleres or in- cluded foreign bodies, or of one or more of these constituents in conjunction.

Order 1. Monaxona.—The skeleton is characterized by either uniaxial or polyaxial spicules. Examples: Amorphina, O.S. (“crumb of bread” sponge); Spongilla, Lmk. (‘‘ freshwater” sponge); Chalina, Bwk.; Tethya, Lmk.

Order 2, CuratTosA.—The skeleton consists of horny scleres which never include ‘‘ proper” spicules, or of introduced foreign bodies, or of both these

in conjunction. Examples: Darwinella, F, Miiller ; Zuspongia, Bronn (the ‘‘ bath” sponge).

Tribe 6. TETRACTINELLIDA.

Demospongiz possessing quadriradiate or triene spicules or Lithistid scleres (desmas).

Order 1. CHorisTipa.— Tetractinellida with quadriradiate or triene spicules, which are never articulated together into a rigid network. Examples: Tctilla,O.8.; Thenea, Gray; Geodia, Lmk.; Dercitus, Gray.

Order 2. LirHistipa.— Tetractinellida with branching scleres (desmas), which may or may not be modified tetrad spicules, arti- culated together to form a rigid skeleton. Trine spicules may or may not be present in addition. Examples: Theonella, Gray ; Coral- listes, O.S.; Azorica, Crtr.; Vetulina, O.S.

Thislarge sub-class embraces the great majority of existing sponges. Its external boundaries are fairly well defined, its internal divisions much less so, as its various orders and families pass into each other at many points of contact. Although there does not appear to be much resemblance between a Lithistid sponge, such as 7’heonella, a Monaxonid such as Amorphina, and an ordinary ‘‘ bath” sponge (Euspongia), yct between thesc extremes a long series of inter- mediate forms exists, so nicely graduated as to render their dis- ruption into groups by no means an casy task. If the delimitation of orders is difficult, that of genera is often impossible, so that they are reduced to assemblages depending on the tact or taste of the author. Thus Polejaeff states that with a single exception “none of the genera of Ceratosa are separable by absolute charac- ters.” The chief spicules of Mfonaxona are uniaxial, often accom- panied by characteristic microscleres. Although distinguished as a group by the absence of quadriradiate or triene spicules, two ex- ceptions are known in which these occur (T’ricentrion, Ehlers, and Acarnus, Gray); these, however, present unusual characters which suggest an independent origin. The canal system of Jfonaxona has not yet been fully investigated ; it appears usually to follow the

Demo- spongizx

Classifi- cation in families,

eurypylous Rhagon type, but the aphodal is not unknown. The Ceratosa contain all sponges with a horny skeleton, except those in which the horny fibres are cored or spined with silicious spicules secreted by the sponge (“ proper” spicules) ; these are arbitrarily assigned to the A/onaxona. There is convenience in this proceed- ing, for horny matter is widely disseminated throughout the Demo- spongix, occurring even in the Lithistida, and it frequently serves to cement the oxeate spicules of the Mfonaxona into a fibre, without at the same time forming a preponderant part of the skeleton. It would be wellnigh impossible to say where the line should be drawn

between a fibre composed of spicules cemented by spongin and one ” consisting of spongin with embedded spicules, while there is com-

paratively no difficulty in distinguishing between fibres containing spicules and fibres devoid of them. That the distinction, however, is entirely artificial is shown by the fact that, after spicules have disappeared from the horny fibre, they may still persist in the mesoderm ; thus Von Lendenfeld announces the discovery of micro- scleres (cymba) in an Aplysillid sponge and of strongyles in a Cacospongia, both horny sponges. (A form intermediate between this Aplysillid and the Desmacidonidx would appear to be Tomo- chalina, Ridley.) The Ceratosa frequently enclose sand, Fora- minifera, deciduous spicules of other sponges and of compound Ascidians, and other foreign bodies within the horny fibres of their

skeleton ; they also sometimes attach this material, probably by a _

secretion of spongin, to their outer surface, and thus invest them- selves in a thick protective crust. In some Ceratosa no other skeleton than that provided by foreign enclosures is present. The canal system is syconate or eurypylous in the simpler forms and diplodal in the higher. The Monaxonida make their earliest ap- pearance in the Silurian rocks (Climacospongia, Hinde), and are now found in all seas at all depths. The only sponges inhabiting fresh water belong to this group. The Tetractinellida adhere to the Monaxonida at more than one point, and one of

these groups has probably been a fruitful parent to the other, but which is offspring and which parent is still a subject for discussion. The Choristida in its simplest forms presents a eurypylous Rhagon system, in the higher an aphodal system. It is in this group that the most highly complex cortex is met with; in the Geodinide, for instance, it consists usually of at least five distinct layers. Thus, proceeding outwards, next to the choanosome is a layer of thickly felted desmachyme, passing into collenchyme on its inner face ; then follows a thick stratum of sterrasters united together by desmacytes ; this is succeeded by a layer of cystenchyme or other tissue of variable thickness ; external to this is a single layer of small granular cells and associated dermal asters; and finally, the surface is invested by a layer of pavement epithelium. The Lithistida, like the Ceratosa, are possibly of polyphylitic origin ; in one group (Zetracladina) the articulated scleres are evidently modified calthrops spicules (see fig. 14), and associated with them are free triwnes, which support the dermis and resemble precisely the trienes of the Choristida. In another group (Rhabdocrepida) the scleres are moulded on a Monaxonid base (see fig. 18 g-s); but, associated with them, trienes sometimes occur similar to those of

the Tetracladina. Both these groups are in all probability derived

from the Choristida, and a distinct passage can be traced from the Tetracladose to the Rhabdocrepid group. In the Rhabdocrepida we find forms without trienes; these may possibly be degenerate forms. The third group of Lithistids is derived from the Rhabdo- crepida, the Anomocladine desma being derivable from the Rhabdo- crepid by a shortening of the main axis into a centrum. The thick centrum, from which the arms, variable in number, ori- ginate, is hollowed out by a cavity, which appears during life to have been occupied by a large nucleus, like that of a scleroblast, and it is quite conccivable that the scleroblast, which in the Tetracladine Lithistids lies in an angle between the arms, may have become enclosed in an overgrowth of silica, from which addi- tional arms were produced. The eonstancy with which spicules in other sponges maintain their independence is very striking. When once a persistent character like this is disturbed, excessive variability may be predicted, as in the Anomocladine scleres,

The classification of the sponges into families is shown in the following scheme.

Class CALCAREA. Order 1. Homoceia, Pol.

Family 1. Asconips, Hk.—Homocela which are simple or com-

posite, but never develop radial tubes. Examples: Ascctta, Hk. (fig. 1) ; Leueosolenia, Bwk.

Family 2. Homoprrmipm, Lfd.—Homocela with radial tubes. Example: Homoderma, Lfd. (figs. 8, 4).

Order 2, HETEROCGLA, Pol. Tribe a. tSyconaria.2

The flagellated chambers are either radial tubes or cylindrical sacs.

Family 1. Syconrpm.—The radial tubes open directly into the paragastric cavity.

SPONGES

Sub-family a. Syconina.—The radial tubes are free for their whole length, or at least distally, Examples ; Sycetia, Hk.; Syeon, O.S,

Sub-family 6. Uteina, Lfd.—The radial tubes are simple and entirely united. The ectosome is differentiated from the choanosome and sometimes develops into a cortex. Examples: Grantissa, Lfd. ; Ute, O.S. (fig. 5); Syeortusa, Hk.; Amphoriscus, Pol.

Sub-family ce. Grantina, Lfd.—The radial tubes are branched. The incurrent canal system is consequently complicated. An ecto- some is present. Examples: Grantia, FI. ; Hetcropegma, Pol. (fig. 4); Anamacxilia, Pol.

Family 2. SyiLersipa, Lfd.—The choanosome is folded. The flagellated chambers (which are partly rhagose in Vosmaeria) communicate with the paragastric cavity by excurrent canals, Examples: Polejna, Lfd. (fig. 6) ; Vosmacria, Lfd.

Family 3. TEIcHonELuip”, Carter.—Composite Syllcibide with the oscules and pores occurring on different parts of the surface, Example: Zeichonclla, Crtr.

Tribe 6. +LEUCcONARIA.

The canal system belongs to the eurypylous Rhagon type.

Family 1. Levconipa, Hk.—The outer surface is not differentiated into osculiferous and poriferous areas, Examples: Leucetta, Hk.; Lcuealtis, Hk.; Leucortis, Hk,

Family 2. ErnHarpipa, Pol.—Composite Leuconaria, with the outer surface differentiated into spccial osculiferous and poriferous areas. Example: Hilhardia, Pol.

The arrangement adopted above is founded on Von Lendenfeld’s revision (77) of the elassification propounded by Polejaeff (76), who in a masterly survey has thrown an unexpected light on the struc- ture and inter-relationships of a group which Haeckel has rendered famous. It should not be overlooked that Vosmaer (37) had pre- viously explained the structure of the Leucones. However errone- ous in detail, Haeckel’s views are confirmed in their broad outlines, and it was with true insight that he pronounced the Calearca to offer one of the most luminous expositions of the evolutional theory. In this single group the development in general of the canal system of the sponges is revealed from its starting-point in the simple Ascon to its almost eompleted stage in the Leucon, with a complete-ness that leaves little further to be hoped for, unless it be the re- quisite physiological explanation.

Class MY XOSPONGLA. Order 1. HALISARCINA.

Family 1. Hatisarcipa, Lfd.—The flagellated chambers are syconate. Examples: Halisarca, Duj. (with branched chambers) ; Bajatus, Lfd. (with simple chambers),

Family 2. OscarELiips, Lfd.— The flagellated chambers are eurypylous and rhagose, Example: Oscarelia, Vosm.

Order 2. CHONDROSINA.

Family 1. CHonprosi1pm.—With the characters of the order. Example: Chondrosia, 0.8 Class SILICISPONGL&. Sub-class I. HEXACTINELLIDA. Order 1. HLYSSACINA,

Family 1. Evprecreriipa.—The spicules of the dermal mem- brane are ‘‘daggers” (fig. 15 a). Examples: Euplectelia, Owen ; Hotlascus, E. Sch.; Habrodictyum, W.T

Family 2. AsconematTIp#.—The dermal spicules are “ pinnuli” (fig. 15 6,c). Examples: Asconema, 8S. Kent ; Sympagella, 0.8.; Caulopheus, Schulze.

Family 8. HyALoNEMATIDa’.—The dermal spicules are pinnuli and amphidisks (fig. 15 d). Example: Hyalonema, Gray.

Family 4, }RossuL1pa#.—The dermal spicules are gomphi, stauri (fig. 15 f), and oxeas. Examples: Rossella, Crtr.; Cratcromorpha, Gray ; Aulochona, E. Sch.

Family 5. *Recepracutipa, Hinde,—The distal ray of the dermal spicules is expanded horizontally into a polygonal plate. Example : *Reccptaculites, Defy.

Order 2. +DICTYONINA,

Sub-order 1. UNCINITARLIA. Uncinate spicules are present.

Tribe a CLAVULARIA. Clavulz (fig. 16 c) are present. Family 1. Farreip#. —Characters those of the tribe. Example : Farrea, Bwk. Tribe 6. ScoPULARIA. The dermal spicules are scopularie (fig. 16 3). Family 1. +Evretip#.—Branched anastomosing tubes, or goblet- shaped, with lateral outlets. Examples: Hurete, Marshall; Pert-

phragella, Marshall; Lefroyella, Schulze.

Family 2. {MEtiirronip2,—Tubular or goblet-shaped, with honeycomb-like walls. Example: Aphrocallistes, Gray.

1 An* indicates that the

group is only known in the fossil state, a + that it is both recent and fossil.

SPrPON’G ES

Family 3. +CHONELASMATID&.—F lat or beaker-shaped; straight funnel-shaped canals perforating the wall perpendicularly and opening laterally on each side. Kxample: Chonclasma, Schulze.

Family 4. +VOLVULINIDZ.—Tubular, goblet-shaped, or massive ; crooked canals more or less irregular in their course. Examples: Volvulina, Schulze ; Fieldingia, 8. Kent.

Family 5. ScLeRoTHAMNID#.—Arborescent body ; perforated at the ends and sides by round narrow radiating canals. Example: Sclerothamnus, Marshall.

Sub-order 2, INERMTA.

Dictyonina without uncinati, clavule, or scopularie.

Family 1. tMyxiustp“.—Depressed cup-shaped; a complex folding of the wall produces lateral excurrent tubes. Example: Myliusia, Gray. ‘

Family 2. tDActyLocaLyc1pz.—Goblet-shaped_ or pateriform, with a thick wall consisting of numerous parallel anastomosing tubes, of uniform breadth, which terminate at the same lcvel within and without. Examples: Dactylocalyx, Gray ; Scleroplegma, 0.8.; Margaritclla, O.S.

Family 8. tEvrypLecMAtip#2.—Goblet-shaped or resembling ear-shaped saucers ; the wall decply folded longitudinally so as to produce a number of dichotomously branched canals or covered-in grooves. Example: Hurypicgma, Schulze.

Family 4. tAvLocyst1pz.—Of massive rounded form, with an axial cavity ; wall consisting of a system of obscurely radiating anastomosing tubes and intervening inter-canals ; both inter-canals and the external terminations of the tubes are covered by a thin membrane, which is perforated by slit-like

openings over the lumina of the tubes, and thus assumes a sieve-like character. Examples: Aulocystis, Schulze ; Cystispongia, Roemer.

This arrangement of the Hewactinellida is taken from the latest work on the subject, Schulze's Preliminary Report on the "Challcn- ger" Hexactinellida. The reference of fossil forms to the families here instituted is rendered difficult by the disappearance of the requisite ‘‘ guiding" spicules in the process of mineralization. A revision of the fossil familics to bring them into harmony with the recent has certainly been rendered necessary, but this is too large a task to undertake in this place.

Sub-class II. DEMOSPONGIA. Tribe a. MoNAXONIDA. Order 1. MONAXONA.

Family 1. Teruyip#.—Skeleton consisting of radiately arranged strongyloxeas (except in the genus Chondrilla, which is without megascleres) and large spherasters. The ectosome isa thick fibrous cortex. Example: Zethya, Lmk.; Chondrilla, O.S.

Family 2. PotyMAstip#£.—Skeleton consisting of styles radiately arranged and cortical tylostyles. The oscules in many cases open at the ends of long papille. Examples: Polymastia, Bwk.; Theca- phora, O.S.; Trichostenma, Sars.

Family 8. Susrriripa2.—Skeleton consisting of strongylate or tylotate styles, arranged to forma felt. The flesh spicules when

resent are usually microrabds or spirasters. Examples: Suberites,

ardo ; Cliona, Grant; Potcrion, Schlegel.

Family 4. DrsMAcIDoNID#.—The flesh spicules are cymbas. Examples: Espercila, Vosm.; Desmacidon, Bwk.; Cladorhiza, Sars.

Family 5. THaticHonpripaz.—The flesh spicules when present are never cymbas. Examples: Halichondria, Fl.; Reniera, O.S.; Chalina, Bwk.; *Pharetrospongia, Soll.

Family 6. Ecryonipa#.—The skeleton consists of fibres echinated by projecting spicules. Examples: Plocamia, 0.8.3; Eetyon, Gray ; Clathria, O.S.

Family 7. tSroncittipa#.—Halichondrideg which are reproduced both sexually and by statoblasts. Habitat freshwater. Examples: Spongilla, Lmk.; Hphydatia, Lmk.; Parmula, Crtr.; Potamolepis, Marshall.!

The foregoing classification is purely provisional ; the group re- quires a complete revision.

Order 2. CERATOSA.

Family 1. DarwinrLLipa2.—Canal system of the eurypylous Rhagon type. Flagellated chambers, pouch-shaped, large; the sur- Tounding collenchyme not granular. Horny fibres with a thick core. Examples: Darwinella, Fritz Miiller; Aplysilla, F.ES.; Janthella, Gray.

Family 2. Sponcrnipz.—Canal system as in the Darwinellida, but the flagellated chambers more or less spherical. Horny fibres with a thin core, and usually containing foreign enclosures. Examples: Velinca, Vosm. ; Spongelia, Nardo; Psammoclema, Marshall ; Psammopemma, Marshall.

Family 3. Sponcipm.—Canal system aphodal. Chambers small and spherical ; surrounding collenchyme granular. Fibres with a thin core. Examples: Huspongia, Bronn; Coscinoderma, Crtr.; Phyllospongia, Ehlers. C—O

1 Z Freshwater sponges without statoblasts are excluded from this family, and eft for distribution amongst allied marine genera.

Family 4. Apiystnipa.—Canal system diplodal ; collenchyme surrounding the fiagellated chambers densely granular. Fibres with a thick core. Examples: Zuffaria, Duch. and Mich.; Veron- gia, Bwk.; Aplysina, Nardo.

The species of sponge in common use are three,—Huspongia officinalis (Linn.), the fine Turkey or Levant sponge; H. zimocca (O.8.), the hard Zimocca sponge ; and Aippospongia equina (O.8.), the horse sponge or common bath sponge. The genus Huspongia is distinguished by the regular development of the skeletal network throughout the body, its narrow meshes, scarcely or not at all visible to the naked eye, and the regular radiate arrangement of its chief fibres. I2ippospongia is distinguished by the thinness of its fibres and the labyrinthic character of the choanosome beneath the skin. Asa consequence its chief fibres have no regular radiate arrangement. The species of Huspongia are distinguished as fol- lows. In EF. officinalis the chief fibres are of different thicknesses, irregularly swollen at intervals, without exception cored by sand grains; in 2. zimocca they are thinner, more regular, and almost free from sand. In J&. officinalis, again, the uniting fibres are soft, thin, and elastic; whilst in #. zimocca they are denscr and thicker, to which difference the latter sponge owes its characteristic hard- ness. Finally, the skeleton of Z. officinalis is of a lighter colour than that of £. ztmocca. The common bath sponge (Hippospongia equina) has almost always a thick cake-like form ; but its specific characters are not yet further defined.

Tribe 6. TETRACTINELLIDA. Order 1. CHORISTIDA. Sub-order 1. SIGMA TOPHORA.

The microsclere is a sigmaspire.

Family 1. Terittrpa.—The characteristic megasclere is a pro- triene. Canal system in the lower forms eurypylous, in the higher aphodal. The ectosome in the simpler forms is a dermal membrane, in the higher a highly differentiated cortex. Examples: Tetilla, 0.8.; Cranielia, O.S8. (fig. 21 h, 7).

Family 2. Samipa#.—The characteristic megasclere is an amphi- triene. Example: Samus, Gray.

Sub-order 2. ASTHROPHORA.

The microsclere is an aster.

Group 1. SprrasTrosa.—aA spiraster is usually present.

Family 1. Turnripa, Carter.—The flesh spicule is a spiraster. Canal system eurypylous. Ectosome not differentiated to form a cortex. Exaimples: Z'henea, Gray (fig. 21a, f); Pecillastra (Nor- mania), Bwk.

Family 2, tPACHASTRELLIDZ.—Canal system eurypylous in the . lower, aphodal in the higher forms. Examples: Plakortis, F.E.S.; Dercitus, Gray.

Group 2. EvastrossA.—Spirasters are absent. ;

Family 1. tSTELLETTIDZ.—Canal system aphodal, but approach- ing the eurypylous in the lower forms. The cortex chiefly consists of collenchyme in the lower forms; in the higher it is highly differ- entiated. Example: Stelletta, O.S. (fig. 11); Ancorina, O.8. ; Myriastra, Soll.

Family 2. Trrayip2.—Although this family has been placed in the Monaxonida, this seems to be its more natural position.

Group 8. SrERRAsTROsA.—A sterraster is present, usually in addition to a simple aster.

Family 1. tGropin1pa.—The megascleres are partly trines. Canal system always aphodal. Cortex highly differentiated. Ex- amples: Geodia, Lmk. (fig. 21"); Pachymatisma, Bwk. (fig. 21 c); Cydonium, Miiller (fig. 10); Hrylus, Gray.

Family 2. PLAcosponcipa.—The megasclere is a tylostyle. Trizenes are absent. Example: Placospongia, Gray.

Sub-order 8. MICROSCLEROPHORA.

Microscleres only are present.

Family 1. Puaxinip#, Schulze.—Canal system very simple, belonging to eurypylous Rhagon type. Characteristic spicules candelabra. Examples: Plakina, F.E.S. (fig. 26).

Family 2. Cortictpz.—Canal system aphodal or diplodal. Mesoderm a collenchyme crowded with oval granular cells; the spicules either

candelabra, amphitrisenes, or trianes irregularly dispersed in it. Example: Corticiwm, O.S. (figs. 9, 21 0).

Family 8. THromBip#.—Canal system diplodal. Spicules tricho- trienes. Example: Zhrombus, Soll.

The Pachastrellide or the Corticide ave probably the families from which the Tetracladine Lithistids have been derived. In the Tctillide the characteristic microsclere may occasionally fail, but there is never any difficulty in identifying the sponge in this case, as the trienes are of a very characteristic form: the arms of the protrienes are slender, simple, and directed very much forwards, making a very large angle with the shaft. Microscleres, having the form of little globules, are sometimes present with the sigmaspires,

Order 2, LITHISTIDA, O.S. Sub-order 1. TETRACLADINA, Zittel. The desmas are modified calthrops spicules.

Asexual multipli- cation.

Sexual repro- duction,

Family 1. TerracLaApIpz.—With the characters of the sub- order. Examples: Theonella, Gray (fig. 21k); Discodermia, Boeage; * Siphonia, Parkinson. :

Sub-order 2. RHABDOCREPIDA.

The desmas are of various forms, produced by the growth of siliea over a uniaxial spicule.

Family 1. Mrcamorintipa.—The desmas are comparatively large. ‘Trisenes, usually dichotrienes, help to support the ecto- some. Microscleres usually spirasters. Examples: Corallistes, 0.8.; *Hyalotragos, Zittel; Lyidium, O.8.; *Dorydermia, Zittel.

Family 2. Mickomorinipa.—The desmas are eomparatively small. Triznes and microscleres are both absent. Examples: Azoriea, Crtr.; *Verruelina, Zittel.

Sub-order 3. AVOMOCLADINA. Desmas with a massive nucleated centrum, from which a variable

number of arms (28) extend radiately (see fig. 12 7). Examples: Vetulina, O.8.; *Astylospongia, Roemer.

Reproduction and Embryology.

Fresh individuals arise by asexual gemmation, both external and internal, by fission, and by true sexual repro- duction.

Fission is probably one of the processes by which com- pound sponges are produced from simple individuals. Artificial fission has been practised with success in the cultivation of commercial sponges for the market. Ex- ternal gemmation has been observed in Thenea, Tethya, Polymastia, and Oscarella. A mass of indifferent sponge- cells accumulates at some point beneath the skin, bulges out, drops off, and gives rise to a new individual. Internal gemmation, which results in the formation of a statoblast, is only known to occur in the freshwater Spongillide. The statoblasts consist of a mass of yolk-bearing mesoderm cells, invested by a capsule, which in Lphydatia flunatilis is composed of an inner cuticle of spongin separated from a similar outer layer by an intermediate zone of amphidisks and interspersed protoplasmic cells. On one side of the capsule is a hilum which leads into the interior.

Their development has recently been studied by Gétte, with results that confirm the conclusions of Carter (3) and Lieberkiihn (z3). The process eommences with an accumulation of amceboid cells within the mesoderm to form a globular cluster; yolk granules develop within them, especially in those that lie nearer the centre. The external eells give rise to the investing capsule; some resemble sponginblasts and secrete the inner and outer horny euticle ; others give rise to the amphidisks and interspersed cells of the middle layer. Under favourable conditions the interior cells creep out through the pore of the capsule, and form a spreading heap, which by

subsequent differentiation gives rise to a young Spongilla. Since the freshwater sponges can only be regarded as modified descendants of ancient marine species (prob- ably of the family Haliehondridx), we may consider the internal gemmules, like the similar statoblasts of the freshwater Polyzoa, as special adaptations to a changed mode of life. They appear primarily to serve a protective purpose, ensuring the persistence of the race, since they only appear in extreme climates on the approach of drought,.and in cold ones on the approaeh of winter. As a secondary function they serve for the dispersal of the species; some are light enough to float down a stream, but not too far, so that there is no danger of their being carried to sea; others, which are character- ized by large air-chambers, are possibly distributed by | the wind.

Both sexual elements may be formed in the same individual, e.g., Oscarella lobularis, Grantia raphanus, and many others; but even in herm- aphrodites one or other element usually occurs to excess in different individuals, so that some are Fie. 25.

granules ; at first they exhibit lively amceboid movements, but later pass into a resting stage. The cavity of the mesoderm within which they are situated becomes lined

Fia. 24.—Spermatozoa. a-h, Development of spermatozoa in Sycandra raph- anus, highly magnified ; h, mature spermatozoa. After Polejaeff (x 792). j, Asperm ball in Oscarella lobularis (500); %, an isolated mature spermatozoon. After Schulze (x 800).

by a layer of epithelium, which may not appear, however,

till a late stage of segmentation. In Luspongia officinalis

the ova occur congregated in groups within the mesoderm, thus presenting an early form of ovary. The spermatozoa, which also develop from wandering amceboid cells, are

minute bodies with an oval or pear-shaped head and a

long vibratile tail (fig. 24%). Each ameeboid cell produces

a large number of spermatozoa, which occur in spherical

clusters or sperm-balls. The heads of the spermatozoa,

as in the Metazoa, are produced from the nucleus of the mother-cell, the tails from the surrounding protoplasm. The development in detail is upon two plans. In Grantia

SS

FSS | Ta ‘0 7X

—Development of a caleareous sponge (Sycandra raphanus), a, ovum; b,c, ovum seg-

predominantly male and others predominantly female. Polejaeff found only one such male form

mented,—d, as seen from above, ¢, lateral view; d, blastosphere ; e, amphiblastula; 7, com- mencement of the invagination of the flagellated cells of the amphiblastula; g, gastrula attached by its oval face; h, j, young sponge (Ascon stage),—h, lateral view, j, as seen from

to 100 female forms in Grantia raphanus. In above. other sponges—Reniera fertilis, Euspongia officinalis—the sexes are distinct. The ova develop from archzocytes or wandering amceboid cells, which increase in size and ac- quire a store of reserve nourishment in the form of yolk

After Schulze.

raphanus (z5) the nueleus of the mother-eell divides into two fig. 24 b); one of the resulting daughter nuclei undergoes no further change, but with a small quantity of peripheral protoplasm forms a “cover-eell” to the other or primitive sperm nucleus and its associated protoplasm. The sperm nucleus repeatedly divides, with-

SPONGES

out involving the surrounding protoplasm (fig. 24 c-f). The result- ing nuclei at length cease to exhibit a nucleolus, and become directly transformed into the heads of spermatozoa; the tails are appropriated by each head from the common protoplasmic residue. The mother- cell in this case undergoes no increase in volume as development proceeds, and itis not enclosed within an ‘‘endothelial” layer. In the second and apparently more usual case (20) no ‘‘ cover- cell” is formed, but the mother-cell divides and subdivides,

rotoplasm as well as nuclei, till a vast number of minute cells results; the nucleus of each becomes the head of a spermatozoon and the protoplasm its tail. In this case the sperm-ball does increase in bulk: it grows as it develops, and the cavity containing it becomes lined by epithelium, or so-called ‘‘endothelium ” (fig. 247). No doubt (zs) the development of the epithelium stands in direct physiological

connexion with the growth of the sperm-ball. a) bees Oq06

Obscure as are the details of this subject, suffi- Base

cient is known to enable us to make out two chief ‘“esGoovs types of development. One, common amongst the “ceed

calcareous sponges, and possibly occurring in a single genus (Gummina) of the Micromastictora, is char- ¢ acterized by what is known as the “amphiblastula ” stage; the other, widely spread amongst the Micromastictora (Reniera, Desmacidon, Huspongta, Spongelia, Aplysilla, Oscarella), is characterized by a “planula” stage.

The first has been most thoroughly investigated in Grantia raphanus by Schulze (20). The ovum by repeated segmentation gives rise to a hollow vesicle, the wall of 7 which is formed by a single layer of cells— dblastosphere ANS & (fig. 25 d). Hight cells at one pole of the blastosphere % now become differentiated from the rest; they remain =) rounded in form, comparatively large, and become filled with granules (stored nutriment), while the others, rapidly > multiplying by division, become small, clear, columnar, and flagellated. By further change the embryo becomes egg-shaped; the granular cells, now increased in number Sie to

thirty-two, form the broader end, and the numerous “X small flagellated cells the smaller end. Of the granular % cells sixteen are arranged in an equatorial girdle adjoin- ing the flagellate cells. A blastosphere thus differen- » tiated into two halves composed of different cells is > known as an amphidlastula. The amphiblastula (fig. 25 ¢) ~ now perforates the maternal tissue, and is borne along an —

excurrent canal to the oscule, where it is discharged to Ryo, 26.— Development of a Demospongia (Plakina should be shaded). 0, Section through side of planula; ec, flagellated cells; fi, their flagella; col, coenoblast. Section across the foregoing. fully grown sponge; the attached basal layer is the hypomere; the spongomere is folded so as to produce incurrent and excurrent canals; the canal system is eurypylous ; ov, ova (a segmented ovum lies between two of them); 07, blastospheres. After Schulze.

the exterior and swims about in a whirling lively dance. It then assumes a more spherical form, a change premoni- tory of the next most remarkable phase of its career. In this the flagellated layer becomes flattened, depressed, and finally invaginated within the hemisphere of granular cells, to the inner face of which it (ape itself, thus entirely obliterating the cleavage cavity, but by the same process originating another (the invagination cavity) at its expense (fig. 25 f). The two-layered sac thus produced is a paragastrula ; its outer layer, known as the epiblast, gives rise to the ectoderm, the inner layer or hypoblast to the endoderm. The paragastrula next becomes somewhat beehive- shaped, and the mouth of the paragastric cavity is diminished in size by an ingrowth of the granular cells around its margin. The larva now settles mouth downwards on some fixed object, and ex- changes a free for a fixed and stationary existence (fig. 25 g). The granular cells completely obliterate the original mouth, and grow along their outer edge over the surface of attachment in irregular pseudopodial processes, which secure the young sponge firmly to its seat (fig. 25). The granular cells now become almost trans- parent, owing to the exhaustion of the yolk granules, and allow the a within to be readily seen; a layer of jelly-like material, the rudimentary mesoderm, is also to be discerned between the two layers. The spicules then become visible; slender oxeas appear first, and afterwards tri- and quadri-radiate spicules. The larva

now elongates into a somewhat cylindrical form ; the distal end flattens ; and an oscule opens in its midst. Pores open in the walls; the endodermal cells, which had temporarily lost their flagella, reacquire them, at the same time extending the character- istic collar, In this stage (fig. 25 h, 7) the young sponge corresponds to a true Ascon, no trace of radial tubes being visible ; but as they characterize the parent sponge they must arise later, and thus we have clear evidence through ontogeny of the development of a Sycon sponge from an Ascon.

The three most striking features in the history of this larva are, first, the amphiblastula stage ; next the invagination of the flagel- late cells within the granular, instead of invagination in the reverse order ; and third the attachment of the larva by the oral instead of the aboral surface. Should Schulze be correct in deriving the Sponges from the Celentera, it is probable that the reversal of the

Sk eee

Ceelenterate history as exemplified in the last two events will furnish an explanation of the remarkable divergencies which distinguish the two phyla. The history of the second or planula type has been thoroughly worked out by Schulze (20) in a little incrusting Tetrac- tinellid sponge (Plakina monolopha, Schulze). The ovum by regu- lar segmentation produces a blastosphere, the blastomeres of which

OnGie

=o

2AVe 20S Y

8

fs Ley

‘ \ at y 2s

3%

tr Aas e monolopha). a, planula (the central part

c, Attached gastrula (the paragaster is formed by fission). 4d, e, Young sponge (Rhagon). jf, Part ofa section through

increase in number by further subdivision till they become con- verted into hyaline cylindrical flagellated cells (fig. 267). Thus a blastosphere is produced consisting wholly of similar flagellated cells. It becomes egg-shaped, and, hitherto colourless, assumes a rose-red tint, which is deepest over the smaller end. The larva (now a planula, fig. 26 a, by the filling in of the central cavity) escapes from the parent and swims about broad end foremost. In this stage thin sections show that the cleavage cavity is obliterated, its place being occupied by a mass of granular gelatinous material contain- ing nuclei (fig. 26 5). In from one to three days after hatching the larva becomes attached. It then spreads out into a convex mass, and a cavity is produced within it by the splitting of the central jelly (fig. 26 c,d; compare Hucope and others amongst the Ccelen- terates). This cavity becomes lined by short cylindrical cells (endo- derm), while the flagellated cells of the exterior lose their flagella and become converted into pinnacocytes (ectoderm). The gelatin- ous material left between the two layers now formed acquires the characters of true collenchyme and thus becomes the mesoderm. The endoderm then sends off into the mesoderm, as buds, rounded chambers, which communicate with the paragastric cavity by a wide mouth and with the exterior by small pores (fig. 26¢). An oscule is formed later, and the sponge enters upon the Rhagon phase. Subsequent foldings of the sponge-wall give rise to a very simple canal system (fig. 26 7). In addition to these two well-ascertained modes of development others have been described which at present appear aberrant. In Oscarella lobularis, O.S. (27), a curious series of early developmental changes results in the formation of an irregular paragastrula, the walls of which become folded (while still within the parent sponge) in a complex fashion, so as to produce a form in which the incurrent and excurrent canals appear to be already sketched out before the flagellated chambers are differenti- ated off. In Spongilla Gotte describes the ectoderm as becoming entirely lost on the

attachment of the larva, so that the future sponge proceeds from the endoderm alone. As Spongilla, however,

XXII. — 54

Asexual multipli- cation.

Sexual repro- duction.

424

Family 1. TeTrRaAcLaADID#.—With the characters of the sub- order. Examples: Theonella, Gray (fig. 21k); Discodermia, Bocage; *Siphonia, Parkinson. ;

Sub-order 2. RHABDOCREPIDA.

The desmas are of various forms, produced by the growth of silica over a uniaxial spicule.

Family 1. MzecAmMoRINIDAZ.—The desmas are comparatively large. ‘Trienes, usually dichotriznes, help to support the ecto- some. Microscleres usually spirasters. Examples: Corallistes, 0.8.; *Hyalotragos, Zittel; Lyidium, O.8.; *Dorydermia, Zittel.

Family 2. MicroMoRINIDZ.—The desmas are comparatively small, Triznes and microscleres are both absent. Examples: Azorica, Crtr.; * Verruclina, Zittel.

Sub-order 8. ANOMOCLADINA.

Desmas with a massive nucleated centrum, from which a variable number of arms (28) extend radiately (see fig. 12,7). Examples: Vetulina, O.8.; * Astylospongia, Roemer.

Reproduction and Embryology.

Fresh individuals arise by asexual gemmation, both external and internal, by fission, and by true sexual repro- duction.

Fission is probably one of the processes by which com- pound sponges are produced from simple individuals. Artificial fission has been practised with success in the cultivation of commercial sponges for the market. Ex- ternal gemmation has been observed in Thenea, Tethya, Polymastia, and Oscarella, A mass of indifferent sponge- cells accumulates at some point beneath the skin, bulges out, drops off, and gives rise to a new individual. Internal gemmation, which results in the formation of a statoblast, is only known to occur in the freshwater Spongillide. The statoblasts consist of a mass of yolk-bearing mesoderm cells, invested by a capsule, which in Ephydatia fluviatilis is composed of an inner cuticle of spongin separated from a similar outer layer by an intermediate zone of amphidisks and interspersed protoplasmic cells. On one side of the capsule is a hilum which leads into the interior.

Their development has recently been studied by Gatte, with results that confirm the conclusions of Carter (7) and Lieberkiihn (73). The process commences with an accumulation of amceboid cells within the mesoderm to form a globular cluster; yolk granules develop within them, especially in those that lie nearer the centre. The external cells give rise to the investing capsule; some resemble sponginblasts and secrete the inner and outer horny cuticle ; others give rise to the amphidisks and interspersed cells of the middle layer. Under favourable conditions the interior cells creep out through the pore of the capsule, and form a spreading heap, which by subsequent differentiation gives rise to a young Spongilla. Since the freshwater sponges can only be regarded as modified descendants of ancient marine species (prob- ably of the family Halichondridx), we may consider the internal gemmules, like the similar statoblasts of the freshwatcr Polyzoa, as special adaptations to a changed mode of life. They appear primarily to serve a protective purpose, ensuring the persistence of the race, since they only appear in extreme climates on the approach of drought,.and in cold ones on the approach of winter. As a secondary function they serve for the dispersal of the species; some are light enough to float down a stream, but not too far, so that there is no danger of their being carried to sea ; others, which are character-

ized by large air-chambers, are possibly distributed by | the wind.

Both sexual elements may be formed in the same individual, ¢.g., Oscarella lobularis, Grantia raphanus, and many others; but even in herm- aphrodites one or other element usually occurs to excess in different individuals, so that some are predominantly male and others predominantly female. Polejaeff found only one such male form to 100 female forms in Grantia raphanus. In above. other sponges—Reniera fertilis, Huspongia officinalis —the sexes are distinct. The ova develop from archzocytes or wandering amceboid cells, which increase in size and ac- quire a store of reserve nourishment in the form of yolk

granules ; at first they exhibit lively amceboid movements, but later pass into a resting stage. The cavity of the mesoderm within which they are situated becomes lined

Fia. 24.—Spermatozoa. a-h, Development of spermatozoa in Sycandra raph- anus, highly magnified ; 4, mature spermatozoa. After Polejaeff (x 792). j, Asperm ball in Oscaretla lobularis (500) ; &, an isolated mature spermatozoon, After Schulze (x 800).

by a layer of epithelium, which may not appear, however,

till a late stage of segmentation. In Luspongia officinalis

the ova occur congregated in groups within the mesoderm, thus presenting an early form of ovary. The spermatozoa, which also develop from wandering amceboid cells, are

minute bodies with an oval or pear-shaped head and a

long vibratile tail (fig. 24%). Each amceboid cell produces

a large number of spermatozoa, which occur in spherical

clusters or sperm-balls. The heads of the spermatozoa,

as in the Metazoa, are produced from the nucleus of the mother-cell, the tails from the surrounding protoplasm. The development in detail is upon

two plans. In Grantia

y PCM ek Ny. PS

\ ats, SREY [ele

Fia. 25.—Development of a calcareous sponge (Sycandra raphanus). a, ovum; b,c, ovum seg- mented,—®, as seen from above, c, lateral view ; d, be igri ¢e, amphiblastula ; jf, com- mencement of the invagination of the flagellated cells o attached by its oval face; h, j, young sponge (Ascon stage),—A, lateral view, j, as seen from

After Schulze.

the amphiblastula; g, gastrula

raphanus (z5) the nucleus of the mother-cell divides into two (fig. 24 6); one of the resulting daughter nuclei undergoes no further change, but with a small quantity of peripheral protoplasm forms a “ cover-cell”’ to the other or primitive sperm nucleus and its associated protoplasm. The sperm nucleus repeatedly divides, with-

out involving the surrounding protoplasm (fig. 24 c-f). The result- ing nuclei at length cease to exhibit a nucleolus, and become directly transformed into the heads of spermatozoa; the tails are appropriated by each head from the common protoplasmic residue. The mother- cell in this case undergoes no increase in volume as development proceeds, and it is not enclosed within an ‘‘endothelial” layer. In the second and apparently more usual case (20) no ‘‘ cover- cell” is formed, but the mother-cell divides and subdivides,

rotoplasm as well as nuclei, till a vast number of minute cells results; the nucleus of each becomes the head of a spermatozoon and the proto lasm its tail. In this case the gperm-ball does increase in bulk: it grows as it develops, and the cavity containing it becomes lined by epithelium, or so-called ‘‘endothelium”’ (fig. 247). No doubt (zs) the development of the

epithelium stands in direct physiological connexion with the growth of the sperm-ball.

Obscure as are the details of this subject, suffi- cient is known to enable us to make out two chief types of development. One, common amongst the calcareous sponges, and possibly occurring in a single genus (Gummina) of the Micromastictora, is char- acterized by what is known as the “amphiblastula ” stage; the other, widely spread amongst the Micromastictora (Reniera, Desmacidon, Euspongia, Spongelia, Aplysilla, Oscarella), is characterized by a “planula” stage.

The first has been most thoroughly investigated in Grantia raphanus by Schulze (20). The ovum by repeated segmentation gives rise to a hollow vesicle, the wall of

‘7 Xe > ; se which is formed by a single layer of cells—dlastosphere fe |

(fig. 25 d). Hight cells at one pole of the blastosphere % now become differentiated from the rest; they remain =| rounded in form, comparatively large, and become filled er with granules (stored nutriment), while the others, rapidly —) multiplying by division, become small, clear, columnar, ** and flagellated. By further change the embryo becomes egg-shaped; the granular cells, now increased in number to thirty-two, form the broader end, and the numerous “xy small flagellated cells the smaller end. Of the granular <™

cells sixteen are arranged in an equatorial girdle adjoin- ing the flagellate cells. A blastosphere thus differen- @ tiated into two halves composed of different cells is 7 known as an amphiblastula. The amphiblastula (fig. 25 e) now perforates the maternal tissue, and is borne along an +

Ceelenterate history as exemplified in the last two events will furnish an explanation of the remarkable divergencies which distinguish the two phyla. The history of the second or planula type has been thoroughly worked out by Schulze (20) in a little incrusting Tetrac- tinellid sponge (Plakina

monolopha, Schulze). The ovum by regu- lar segmentation produces a blastosphere, the blastomeres of which

excurrent canal to the oscule, where it is discharged to Pye, 26.—Development of a Demospongia (Plakina monolopha). a, planula (the central part

the exterior and swims about in a whirling lively dance. It then assumes a more spherical form, a change premoni- tory of the next most remarkable phase of its career. In this the flagellated layer becomes flattened, depressed, and finally invaginated within the hemisphere of granular cells, to the inner face of which it applies itself, thus entirely obliterating the cleavage cavity, but by the same proccss originating another (the invagination cavity) at its expense (fig. 25 f). The two-layered sac thus produced is a paragastrula ; its outer layer, known as the epiblast, gives rise to the ectoderm, the inner layer or hypoblast to the endoderm. The paragastrula next becomes somewhat beehive- shaped, and the mouth of the paragastric cavity is diminished in size by an ingrowth of the granular cells around its margin. The larva now settles mouth downwards on some fixed object, and ex- changes a free for a fixed and stationary existence (fig. 25 g). The granular cells completely obliterate the original mouth, and grow along their outer edge over the- surface of attachment in irregular pseudopodial processes, which secure the young sponge firmly to its seat (fig. 25). The granular cells now become almost trans- parent, owing to the exhaustion of the yolk granules, and allow the hypoblast within to be readily seen; a layer of jelly-like material, the rudimentary mesoderm, is also to be discerned between the two layers. The spicules then become visible ; slender oxeas appear first, and afterwards tri- and quadri-radiate spicules. The larva now elongates into a somewhat cylindrical form; the distal end flattens ; and an oscule opens in its midst. Pores open in the walls; the endodermal cells, which had temporarily lost their flagella, ge gi them, at the same time extending the character- istic collar. In this stage (fig. 25 h, 7) the young sponge corresponds to a true Ascon, no trace of radial tubes being visible ; but as they characterize the parent sponge they must arise later, and thus we have clear evidence through ontogeny of the development of a Sycon sponge from an Ascon.

The three most striking features in the history of this larva are, first, the amphiblastula stage ; next the invagination of the flagel- late cells within the granular, instead of invagination in the reverse order ; and third the attachment of the larva by the oral instead of the aboral surface. Should Schulze be correct in deriving the Sponges from the Celentera, it is probable that the reversal of the

should be shaded). 0, Section through side of planula; ec, flagellate flagella ; col, ccenoblast. Section across the foregoing. fully grown sponge ; the attached basal layer is the hypomere ; the spongomere is folded soas to produce ineurrent and excurrent canals; the canal system is eurypylous ; ov, ova (a segmented ovum lies between two of them); 61, blastospheres. After Schulze.

cells; fl, their c, Attached gastrula (the paragaster is formed by fission). d, e, Young sponge (Rhagon). jf, Part of a section through

increase in number by further subdivision till they become con- verted into hyaline cylindrical flagellated cells (fig. 26/). Thus a blastosphere is produced consisting wholly of similar flagellated cells. It becomes egg-shaped, and, hitherto colourless, assumes a rose-red. tint, which is deepest over the smaller end. The larva (now a planula, fig. 26a, by the filling in of the central cavity) escapes from the parent and swims about broad end foremost. In this stage thin sections show that the cleavage cavity is obliterated, its place being occupied by a mass of granular gelatinous material contain- ing nuclei (fig. 26 b). In from one to three days after hatching the larva becomes attached. It then spreads out into a convex mass, and a cavity is produced within it by the splitting of the central jelly (fig. 26 c,d; compare Lucope and others amongst the Ccelen- terates). This cavity becomes lined by short cylindrical cells (endo- derm), while the flagellated cells of the exterior lose their flagella and become converted into pinnacocytes (ectoderm). The gelatin- ous material left between the two layers now formed acquires the characters of true collenchyme and thus becomes the mesoderm. The endoderm then sends off into the mesoderm, as buds, rounded chambers, which communicate with the paragastric cavity by a wide mouth and with the exterior by small pores (fig. 26¢). An oscule is formed later, and the sponge enters upon the Rhagon phase. Subsequent

foldings of the sponge-wall give rise to a very simple canal system (fig. 26). In addition to these two well-ascertained modes of development others have been described which at present appear aberrant. In Oscarella lobularis, O.S. (27), a curious series of early developmental changes results in the formation of an irregular paragastrula, the walls of which become folded (while still within the parent sponge) in a complex fashion, so as to produce a form in which the incurrent and excurrent canals appear to be already sketched out before the flagellated chambers are differenti- ated off. In Spongilla Gotte describes the ectoderm as becoming entirely lost on the attachment of the larva, so that the future sponge proceeds from the endoderm alone. As Spongilla, however,

is a freshwater form, anomalies in its development (which remind us of those in the development of the freshwater Hydra) might almost be expected. . ‘

Probably in no other single group is the doctrine of homoplasy enunciated by Lankester more tellingly illus- trated than in the sponges. The independent develop- ment of similar types of canal system in different groups, sometimes within the limits of a single family, is a remark- able fact. In’the following table the sign x shows inde- pendent evolution of similar types of canal system in different groups:—

Rhagon.

Ascon, | Sycon. ee. Aphodal.|Diplodal.

Class Calcarea …..... x x x nag Order Halisarcina…... x x wee Order Monazxona …... — x x Order Ceratosa …..... x x x x Sub-order Microsclero-

SDHOTO ac enters x x 5 Order Choristida …... x x Family Tetillidz …... x x

In the gross anatomy of the canal system similar homo- plasy obtains; thus, to cite one case amongst many, a peculiar type of canal system characteristic of Siphonia (Lithistid) occurs also in Hmploca (Hexactinellid), Schmidtia (Monaxonid), and other apparently unrelated genera. The development of a cortex has likewise taken place inde- pendently, but on parallel lines, in the Syconidx, Leu- conidx, Monaxona, Tetillide, and Stellettide. Calcareous and silicious spicules have evidently an independent his- tory, and yet all the chief forms of the former are repeated in the latter. Quite as remarkable is the similarity of the independently evolved horny spicules of Darwinella aurea to the quadri- and sex-radiate silicious spicules. We have now sufficient knowledge of the morphology and evolu- tion of the sponge to furnish the physicist with data for an explanation of the skeleton, at least in its main outlines, The obvious conclusion from this is that variation does not depend upon accident, but on the operation of physical laws as mechanical in their action here as in the mineral world. Another important consequence follows: if homo- plasy —.e., the independent evolution of similar structures —is of such certain and quite common occurrence in the case of the sponges, it is also to be looked for in other groups, and polyphylitic origin, so far from being improb- able, is as likely an occurrence as monophylitic origin.

Physiology and Atiology.

Under the head of “physiology” we have almost a blank. At present we do not even know what cells of the sponge are primarily concerned in the ingestion of food. If a living sponge, such as Spongilla, be fed with carmine for a few minutes, then immersed in dilute osmic acid, and examined in thin sections, its flagellated chambers are found to be all marked out as red circular patches, and a closer investigation shows that the choanocytes, and they alone, have ingested the carmine. In this way we con- firm the earlier observations of Carter made by teasing carmine-fed sponges. This might be thought to decide the question ; but, though it effectually disposes of Pole- jaeff’s argument that the choanocytes do not ingest nutri- ment because mechanical disadvantages (conceived a prior) make it impossible, it has not

proved a final solution, Von Lendenfeld, by feeding sponges such as Aplysilla with carmine for a longer interval—a quarter of an hour—finds that amceboid cells crowd about the sides and particularly the floor of the subdermal cavities, and are soon loaded with carmine granules ; after a time they wander away to the flagellated chambers and there cast out into the ex-current canals the carmine they have absorbed, apparently

in an altered state. On the other hand, the choanocytes, though they at first absorb the carmine, soon thrust it out, apparently in an unaltered state. Hence Von Lendenfeld concludes that it is the epithelium of the subdermal cavities which is charged with the function of ingestion, and that the amceboid cells subsequently digest and distribute ita and finally cast out the worthless residues, There may be much truth in this view, but it requires to be supported by further evidence. (1) Sufficient proof is not adduced to show that the carmine granules expelled from the amc- boid cells are really more decomposed than those rejected by the choanocytes. (2) There is at present no proof that carmine is a food, or that if it is sponges will readily feed upon it. In either case one would expect the ameboid cells to play the part which they perform in other organisms and to remove as soon as possible useless or irritant matter from the surface which it encumbers; at the same time the choanocytes, not having found the food to their liking, would naturally eject it. (3) If the choanocytes do not ingest food, how does the Ascon feed, since in this sponge

all the pinnacocytes are external? It is, however, a very

noticeable fact that, as the organization of a sponge increases in complexity, the choanocytal layers become reduced in volume relative to the whole bulk of the individual; and it is quite possible that as histological differentiation proceeds it may be accompanied by physio- logical differentiation which relieves the choanocytes to some extent of the ingestive part of their labours.

The origin of the sponges is to be sought for among Aiid! the choanoflagellate Jnfusoria; and Savile Kent has de- logy!

scribed a colonial form of this group which is suggestively similar to a sponge. Its differences, however, are as marked as its resemblances, and have been sufficiently pointed out by Schulze (23). Kent has called this form Protospongia, a name already made use of, and fortunately, as the organism is not in any sense a true sponge ; the present writer proposes, therefore, to call it Savillia, in honour of its discoverer. It consists of choanoflagellate Infusoria (see Prorozoa, vol. xix. p. 858, fig. XXT., 15} half projecting from and half embedded in a structureless jelly or blastema, within which other cells of an amoeboid character and reproductive function are immersed, Pro- fessor Haddon arrives at the generalization that conjuga- tion amongst the Protozoa always takes place between individuals of the same order: flagellate cells conjugate with flagellate, amceboid with amceboid, but never with flagellate ; while in true sexual reproduction the conjuga- tion occurs between two individual cells in different stages of their life cycle: a flagellate cell conjugates with a resting amoeboid cell. Now Savillia would appear to be extremely near such a true sexual process, since the simultaneous coexistence of cells in two different stages of life and within easy reach of each other—a necessary preliminary, one would think, to the union—has already been brought about. That coalescence between two different histological elements should result in products similarly histologically differentiated (compare amphiblastula stage of Calcarea) has in it a certain fitness, which, however, has still to be: explained. The mode by which an organism like Savillia might become transformed into an Ascon cannot be sug- gestively outlined with any satisfactory results till our knowledge of the embryology of sponges is more advanced. The minute characters of the flagellate cells of the amphi- blastula and other sponge larvee are still a subject for research. They often possess a neck or collum; but the existence of a frill or collar is disputed. Kent asserts that it is present in several embryos which he figures; and Barrois makes the same assertion in respect to the larva of Oscarella, and illustrates his description with a figure. On the other hand, Schulze and Marshall both

deny its existence, and the former attributes Kent’s observations to error. One constant character they do possess: they are provided with flagella at some stage of their existence, but never with cilia. Ciliated cells, in- deed,

are unknown amongst the sponges, and, when pinna- cocytes exceptionally acquire vibratile filaments, as in Oscarella and other sponges, these are invariably flagella, never cilia. An Ascon stage having been reached at some point in the history of the sponges, the Sycon tubes and Rhagon chambers would arise from it by the active pro- liferation of choanocytes about regularly distributed centres, possibly as a result of generous feeding. Vosmaer recog- nized as the physiological cause of Sycon an extension of the choanocytal layer. Polejaeff, relying on Von Lenden- feld's experiments, which seem to prove that it is the pinnacocytes and not the choanocytes which are concerned in the ingestion of nutriment, argues that, as in Sycon the pinnacocytal layer is increased relatively to the choano- cytal, we have in this a true explanation of the transition. The existence of Homoderma, Lfd., however, shows that in the first stage there was not a replacement of choano- cytes by pinnacocytes, but that this was a secondary change, following the development of radial tubes, and therefore cannot be relied upon to explain them. The radial tubes having been formed by a proliferation of choanocytal cells, the reduction of those lining the para- gastric cavity to pinnacocytes would follow in consequence of the poisonous character of the water delivered from the radial tubes to the central cavity, since this water not only parts with its dissolved oxygen to the choanocytes it first encounters, but receives from them in exchange urea, carbonic acid, and fecal residues. The development of subdermal cavities is explicable on Von Lendenfeld's hypothesis,

Distribution.

Our knowledge of this subject is at present but frag- mentary ; we await fuller information in the remaining reports on the sponges obtained by the "' Challenger." The sponges are widely distributed through existing seas, and freshwater forms are found in the rivers and lakes of all continents except Australia, and in numerous islands, in- cluding New Zealand. Many genera and several species are cosmopolitan, and so are most orders,

As instances of the same species occurring in widely remote localities we take the following from Polejaeff :—Sycon arcticwm is found at the Bermudas and in the Philippine Islands, as also are Leuconia muiltiformis and Leucilla uter ; Sycon raphanus occurs at Tristan da Cunha and the

Philippines ; Heteropegma nodus-gordii and Leuconia dura at the Bermudas and Torres Straits. We do not know, however, whether these species are isolated in their distribu- tion or connected by intermediate localities. Of the Calcarca about eighty-one species have been obtained from the Atlantic, twenty- two from the Pacific, and twenty-two from the Indian Ocean ; but these numbers no doubt depend largely on the extent to which the several oceans have been investigated, for the largest number of species has been found in the ocean nearest home. Schulze states that the Heaactinellida brought home by the 'Challenger " were obtained at seventeen Atlantic stations, twenty-seven Pacific, and nineteen in the South Seas. In the last the number of species Was greatest, in the Atlantic least. They flourish best on a bottom of diatomaceous mud. The Calcarea and Ceratosa are Most abundant in shallow water and down to 40 fathoms, but they descend to from 400 to 450 fathoms. The Hexactinellida are most numerous over continental depths, z.¢., 100 to 200 fathoms; but they extend downwards to over 2500 fathoms and upwards mto shallow water (10 to 20 fathoms). The Lithistida are not such deep-water forms as the Hexactinellida, being most numerous from 10 to 150 fathoms. Only one or two species have been dredged from depths greatcr than 400 fathoms, and none from 1000 fathoms. The Choristida range from shallow water to abyssal depths.

Until about 1876 one of the chief obstacles to the inter-

pretation of fossil sponges arose from a singular mineral replacement which most of them have undergone, leading to the substitution of calcite for the silica of which their skeletons were originally composed. This change was de- monstrated by Zittel (35) and Sollas (2¢), and, though it was at first pronounced impossible, owing to objections founded on the chemical nature of silica, it has since be- come generally recognized. These observers also showed that the fossil sponges do not belong to extinct types, but are assignable to existing orders. Zittel in addition sub- jected large collections to a careful analysis and marshalled them into order with remarkable success. Since then several paleeontologists have worked at the subject, — Pécta, Dunikowski, and Hinde (7), who has published a Cata- logue— which is much more than a catalogue—of the sponges preserved in the

British Museum. The result of their labours is in general terms as follows. Fossil sponges are chiefly such as from the coarseness or consistency of their skeletons would be capable of preservation in a miner- alized state. Thus the majority are Hexactinellida, chiefly Dictyonina ; Tetractinellida, chiefly Lithistida ; and Cal- cared, chiefly Leuconaria. Monaxonid sponges rarely occur; the most ancient is Climacospongia, Hinde, found in Sil- urian rocks. A very common Halichondroid sponge of this group (Pharetrospongia strahani, Soll.) occurs in the Cam- bridge greensand; it owes its preservation to the collection of its small oxeate spicules into dense fibres. The Choristida, though not so common as the Lithistids, are commoner than the Monaxonids, particularly in Mesozoic strata.

The distribution of fossil sponges in the stratified systems may be summarized as follows, CALcCAREA.—Homoce@la, none. Hetero- cela, a Syconid, in the Jurassic system. Numerous Leuconaria from the Devonian upwards. Myxosponera.—None ; not fitted for preservation. HEXACTINELLIDA.—Lyssacina, from the Lower Cambrian upwards. Dictyonina, commencing in the Silurian ; most numerous in the Mesozoic group; still existing. Monaxonrpa.— Monaxona, from the Silurian upwards. Ccratosa, none; few are fitted for preservation. TETRACTINELLIDA.— Choristida, from the Carboniferous upwards ; most numerous in the Cretaceous system. Lithistida, from the Silurian upwards; most numerous in the Mesozoic group. In ancient times the Hexactinellids and Lithistids seem not to have been so comparatively uncommon in shallow water as they are at the present day. Thus, in the Lower Jurassic strata of the south-west of England we find Dictyonine Hexactinel- lids, Lithistids, and Leuconarian Calcarea associated together in a shelly breccia and in company with littoral shells, such as Patella and T’rochus. Several Paleozoic Hexactinellids actually occur in a fine-grained sandstone. Of the Chalk, which is the great mine of fossil sponges, we must speak with caution, owing to the insufficient evidence as to the depth at which it was deposited.

As shown by Protospongia, the phylum of the sponges was in existence in very early Cambrian times, and probably much earlier. Before the end of the Silurian period its main branches had spread themselves out, and, developing fresh shoots since then, they have extended to the present day. Of the offshoots none of higher value than families are known to have

become extinct, and of these decayed branches there are very few. The existence in modern seas of the Asconid#, which must surely have branched off very near the base of the stem, is another curious instance of the persistence of simple types, which would thus appear not to be so vastly worse off in the struggle for existence than their more highly organized descendants.

Bibliography.—A fairly complete list of works on sponges published before 1882 will be found in Vosmaer's article ‘‘ Poriferc," in Bronn's Klassen und Ordnungen, vol. ii. D'Arcy Thompson's Catalogue of Papers on Protozow and Coelenterata, a still more complete list, extends to 1884.

The following is a list of works, including those referred to in the preceding pages :—(z) C. Barrois, Embryologie d. quelques Eponges d. 1. Manche, Paris, 1876. (2) Bowerbank, A Monograph of British Spongiade, vols. i.-iv., 1864-82 (vol. iv. is posthumous, edited by Dr Norman). (3) Carter, a series of papers in the Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., from 1847 to the present time (1887). (g) J. Clark, On the Spongie ciliate as Infusoria flagellata, 1865. (5) Grant, Edin. Phil. Journ., 1825. (6) Haeckel, Monographie d. Kalkschwiimme, 1871. (7) Hinde, A Cata- logue of the Sponges in the British Museum, 1883. (8) Id., ‘"On the Receptaculitidea," in Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., xl. 795, 1884. (9) Keller, ‘Studien ti. Organisation u. Entwickelung d. Chalineen," in Ztschr. f. wiss. Zool., xxxiii., 1879. (zo) Kent, "‘Notes on the Embryology of the Sponges," in Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., 1878, ii. 189. (zz) Von Lendenfeld, "On Aplysinid#," in Ztschr. f. wiss. Zool., XxXviii. (72) Id., *‘A Monograph of Australian Sponges," in Proc. Linn. Soc., N.S. Wales, vols. ix., x. (other papers by Von Lendenfeld will be found under this reference, and also in the Zool. Anzeiger). (13) Lieberkiihn, ‘‘ Developmental History of Spongilla," in Mill. Archiv, 1856. (74) Marshall, Jenaische Ztschr., Xviii., 1885 (translated in Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist.). (75) Polejaeff, "On Sperma and Spermatogenesis in Sycandra raphanus," in Sttz.-Ber. Acad. wiss. Zool.,

Distribu- tion.

Fishing.

Inst. d. Universitit Graz. (16) Id., ‘‘Challenger” Report on the Calcarea, 1883. (77) Id., Ditto on the Ceratosa, 1884. (78) Ridley, On the Zool. Collection of the “ Alert,” 1884. (79) Schmidt, Sponges of the Adriatic Sea, 1862, with Supple- ment 1 in 1864, and Supplement 2 in 1866; Sponges of the Coast of Algiers, 1868; Sponge-Fauna of the Atlantic, 1870; Sponges of the Gulf of Mexico, 1879. (20) F. E. Schulze, investigations into the structure and development of sponges, in Zischr. f. wiss. Zool.,—‘‘ On Halisarca,” vol. xxviii., 1877 ; ‘‘On Chondroside,” xxix., 1877; “On Aplysinida,” xxx., 1878 ; ‘‘On Metamorphosis of Sycandra raphanus,” xxxi., 1878; ‘On Spongelia,” xxxii.,. 1878; ‘On Spongide,” id. ; ‘On Hircinia and Oligoceras,” xxxili., 1879; ‘‘On Plakinide#,” xxxiv., 1880; “On Corticiwm candelabrum,” xxxv., 1881. (27) Id., ‘On Soft Parts of Euplectella aspergillum,” in Trans. Roy. Soc, Edin, xxix., 1880. (22) Id., Preliminary Report on the ‘‘ Challenger” Hexactinellida. (237) Id., ‘‘On the Relationship of the Sponges to the Choanoflagellata,” in Sitz.-Ber. d. k.-preuss. Akad. f. wiss. Z., Berlin, 1885, translated in Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., 1885. (24) Sollas, ‘‘On Stawronema,” in Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., xix., 1877; ‘On Pharetrospongia,” in Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., xxxiii., 1877; ‘On Siphonia,” tb.; “On Protospongia,” 1b., xxxvi., 1880. (25) Id., ‘The Sponge-Fauna of Norway,” in Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., 1880-82. (26) Id., “The Flint-Nodules of the Trimmingham Chalk,” 7b., vi., 1879. (27) Id., ‘Development of Halisarca lobularis,” in Quart. Journ. Micr. Sci., xxiv., 1884. (28)Id., “On Vetulina and the Anomocladina,” in Proc. R. Irish Acad., iv., 1885. (29) Id., ‘‘Physical Characters of Sponge-Spicules,” in Proc. R. Dub. Soc., 1885. “30) Vejdovsky, ‘The Freshwater Sponges of Bohemia,” in Abh. d. k. Bohm. Akad. d. Wiss., ser. vi., vol. xii., 1883. (37) Vosmaer, On Leucandra aspera (doctor’s diss., Leyden, 1880). (32) Id., “On the Desmacidinide,” in Notes from the Leyden Museum, vol. i. (33) Sponges ofthe Willem Barents Expedition, 1884. (34) “ Poriferse,” in Bronn’s Klassen und Ordnwngen, vol. ii., 1882, and stillin progress. (35) Zittel, studies of fossil sponges, in Abh. d. k. bayer. Akad., —Hexactinellida, 1877 5 Lithistida, 1878; Monactinellida and Calcarea, 1878.

Commerce.

When the living matter is removed from a Ceratose sponge a network of elastic horny fibres, the skeleton of the animal, remains behind. This is the

sponge of com- merce. Of such sponges the softest, finest in texture, and most valued is the Turkey or Levant sponge, Huspongia officinalis, Lin. The other two varieties are the Hippo- spongia equina, O. Schmidt, and the Zimocca sponge, Huspongia zimocca, O.S., which is not so soft as the others (see p. 423 above). All three species are found at from 2 to 100 fathoms along the whole Mediterranean coast, includ- ing its bays, gulfs, and islands, except the western half of its northern shores as far as Venice and the Balearic Isles, Corsica, Sardinia, and Sicily. Bath sponges occur around the shores of the Bahamas, and less abundantly on the north coast of Cuba. They are of several kinds, one not dis- tinguishable from the fine Levant sponge; others, the “yellow” and “hardhead” varieties, resemble the Zimocca sponge ; and of horse sponges there appear to be several varieties, such as the “lamb’s-wool” and the “velvet” sponge (Hippospongia gossypina and ZH. meandriformis). The fine bath sponge occurs on the shores of Australia (Torres Straits, the west coast, and Port Phillip on the south coast). A sponge eminently adapted for bathing purposes (Coscinoderma lanuginosum, Crtvr.; Euspongia mathewsi, Lfd.), but not yet brought into the market, occurs about the South Caroline Islands, where it is actu- ally in use, and at Port Phillip in Australia. The fine bath sponge occurs in the North Pacific, South Atlantic, and Indian Oceans, so that its distribution is world-wide.

The methods employed to get sponges from the bottom of the sea, where they grow attached to rocks, stones, and other objects, depend on the depths from which they are to be brought. In comparatively shallow water they may be loosened and hooked up by a harpoon ; at greater depths, down to 30 or 40 fathoms, they are dived for 3 and at depths of from 50 to 100 fathoms they are dredged with a net. The method of harpooning was the earliest practised, and is still carried on in probably its most primitive form by the Dalmatian fishermen. Small boats are used, manned by a single harpooner with a boy to steer ; when, however, the expedition is to extend over night the crew is doubled. The harpoon is a five-pronged fork with a long wooden handle, and if this is not long enough another harpoon is lashed on to it. The Greek fishers use a large boat furnished with two or three smaller ones, from which the actual harpooning is carried on; the crew numbers seven or eight. One of the chief difficulties is to see the bottom

distinctly through a troubled surface. The Dalmatian fishers throw a smooth stone dipped in oil

a yard or so in front of the boat; the stone scatters drops of oil as it flies and so makes a smooth track for the “look- out.” The Greeks use a zinc-plate cylinder about 14 feet long and 1 foot wide, closed at the lower end by a plate of glass, which is immersed below the surface of the sea; on looking through this the bottom may be clearly seen even in 30 fathoms. This plan is also adopted in the Bahamas, where harpooning carried on after the Greek system gives employment to over 5000 men and boys.

The primitive method of diving with no other apparatus than a slab of stone to serve as a sinker and a cord to communicate with the surface is still practised in the Mediterranean. The diver carries a net round his neck to hold the sponges. On reaching the bottom he hastily snatches up whatever sponge he sees. After staying down as long as he is able—an interval which varies from two: to at the most three minutes—he tugs violently at the cord and is rapidly drawn up. On entering the boat from depths of 25 fathoms he quickly recovers from the effects of his plunge after a few powerful respirations ; but after working at depths of 30 to 40 fathoms or more he reaches the surface in a swooning state. At the beginning of the season blood usually flows from the mouth and nose after a descent ; this is regarded as a symptom of good condition ; should it be wanting the diver will scarcely venture a second plunge for the rest of the season. The work is severe, and frequently the diver returns empty-handed to the boat. Diving is usually carried on in the summer months; in winter it is too cold, at all events without a diving-dress, The ordinary diver’s dress with pumping apparatus is largely used by the Greeks. The diving is carried on from a ship manned by eight or nine men, including one, or rarely two, divers. At a depth of from 10 to 15 fathoms the diver can remain under for an hour, at greater depths up to 20 fathoms only a few minutes ; the consequences of a longer stay are palsy of the lower extremities, stricture, and other complaints. Dredging is chiefly carried on along the west coast of Asia Minor, principally in winter after the autumn storms have torn up the seaweeds covering the bottom. The mouth of the dredge is 6 yards wide and

1 yard high; the net is made of camel-hair cords of the thickness of a finger, with meshes 4 inches square. It is drawn along the bottom by a tow-line attached to the bowsprit of a sailing vessel or hauled in from the shore.

of Lesina, off the Dalmatian coast, and experiments were carried on there for six years (1867-72) under the super- intendence of Von Buccich. The results were on the whole successful, but all expectations of creating a new source of income for the sponge-fishers of Dalmatia were defeated by the hostility of the fishers themselves.

The details of the method of sponge-farming as practised by Von Buccich are briefly as follows. The selected speci- mens, Which should be obtained in as uninjured a state as possible, are placed on a board moistened with sea water and cut with a knife or fine saw into pieces about 1 inch square, care being taken to preserve the outer skin as in- tact as possible. The operation is best performed in winter, as exposure to the air is then far less fatal than in summer. The sponge cuttings are then trepanned and skewered on bamboo rods; the rods, each bearing three cuttings, are secured in an upright position between two parallel boards, which are then sunk to the bottom of the sea and weighted with stones. In choosing a spot for the sponge-farm the mouths of rivers and proximity to submarine springs must be avoided ; mud in this case, as in that of reef-building

repara- on for s

corals, is fatal. A favourable situation is a sheltered bay with a rocky bottom overgrown with green seaweed and freshened by gentle waves and currents. So favoured, the cuttings grow to a sponge two or three times their original size in one year, and at the end of five to seven years are large enough for the market. Similar experi- ments with similar results have more recently been carried on in Florida. The chief drawback to successful sponge-farming would appear to be the long interval which the cultivator has to wait for his first crop.

After the sponge has been taken from the sea, it is ex- posed to the air till signs of decomposition set in, and then without delay either beaten with a thick stick or trodden by the feet in a stream of flowing water till the skin and other soft tissues are completely removed. If this process is postponed for only a few hours after the sponge has been exposed a whole day to the air it is almost impossible to completely purify it. After cleaning it is hung up in the air to dry, and then with others finally pressed into bales. If not completely dried before pack- ing the sponges “heat,” orange yellow spots appearing on the parts attacked. The only remedy for this is to unpack

SPONSOR. The presence of some suitable sponsor or sponsors to give the answers required and undertake the vows involved would seem to be almost essential to the right administration of the sacrament of baptism, in the case of infants at least. In this aspect, however, as in many others, the early history of the development of the rite of baptism remains obscure. The Greek word for the person undertaking this function is dvadoyos, to which the Latin susceptor is equivalent. The word “sponsor” in this ecclesiastical sense occurs for the first time, but incidentally only, and as if it were already long familiar, in Tertullian’s treatise De Baptismo (c. 18), where, arguing that in certain circumstances baptism may conveniently be postponed, especially in the case of little children, he asks, ‘“ For why is it necessary that the sponsors likewise should be thrust into danger, who both themselves by reason of mortality may fail to fulfil their promises, and may also be disappointed by the development of an evil disposition [in those for whom they become sponsors]?” There is nothing to make it unlikely that the sponsors here alluded to may have been in many cases the actual parents, and even in the 5th century it was not felt to be inappropriate that they should be so; Augustine, indeed, in one passage appears to speak of it as a matter of course that parents should bring their children and answer for them “ tanquam fidejussores” (Hpist. . . . ad Bonif., 98). The compara- tively early appearance, however, of such names as com- patres, commatres, propatres, promatres, patrim, matrine is of itself sufficient evidence, not only that the sponsorial rela- tionship had come to be regarded as a very close one, but also that it was not usually assumed by the natural parents. How very close it was held to be is shown by the Justini- anian prohibition of marriage between godparents and godchildren. On the other hand, the anciently allowable practice of parents becoming sponsors

for their own children seems to have lingered until the 9th century, when it was at last formally prohibited by the council of Mainz (813). For a long time there was no fixed rule as to the necessary or allowable number of sponsors, and sometimes the number actually assumed was large. By the council of Trent, however, it was decreed that one only, or at most two, these not being of the same sex, should be permitted. The tubric of the Church of England according to which " there shall be for every male child to be baptized two godfathers and one godmother, and for every female one godfather and two godmothers," is not older than 1561; in the

the bale and remove the affected sponges. The orange- coloured spots produced by this "pest," or "cholera" as the Levant fishermen term it, must not be confounded with the brownish red colour which many sponges naturally possess, especially near their base. The sponges on reaching the wholesale houses are cut to a symmetrical shape and further cleaned. The light-coloured sponges often seen in chemists' shops have been bleached by chemical means which impair their durability. Sponges are sold by weight ; sand is used as an "adulteration."

It is difficult to obtain recent statistics as to the extent of the sponge trade ; the following table gives a summary of the sponges sold in Trieste, the great European sponge market, in the year 1871 :—

For Export. For Home Consumption. Description of Sponge. ; r ; 4 Mean price ° Mean price Value in £ per pound. Value in £ per pound, Horse sponge……..... £60,000 6s. £4400 6s. Zimocca sponge …... 20,000 6s. 650 6s. Fine Levant sponge…. 20,000 14s. 950 14s. Fine Dalmatian sponge 2,000 8s. me 00 rrr

Catechism the child is taught to say that he received his name from his ''godfathers and godmothers." At the Reformation the Lutheran churches retained godfathers and godmothers, but the Reformed churches reverted to what they believed to be the more primitive rule, that in ordi- nary circumstances this function should be undertaken by a child's proper parents. All churches, it may be added, of course demand of sponsors that they be in full communion. In the Church of Rome priests, monks, and nuns

are dis- qualified from being sponsors, either "'because it might involve their entanglement in worldly affairs," or more probably because every relationship of fatherhood or motherhood is felt to be in their case inappropriate.

SPONTINI, Gasparo Luicr Pacirico (1774-1851), dramatic composer, was born at Majolati (Ancona) in Italy, 14th November 1774, and educated at the Conservatorio de' Turchini at Naples under Sala, Tritto, and Salieri. After producing some successful operas at Rome, Florence, Naples, and Palermo, he settled in 1803 at Paris. His reception in the French capital was anything but flatter- ing. His first comic opera, Jule, proved a failure; his second, La Petite Maison, was hissed. Undaunted by these misfortunes, he abandoned the light and somewhat frivolous style of his earlier works, and in Ailton, a one- act opera produced in 1804, achieved a real success. Spontini henceforth aimed at a very high ideal, and during the remainder of his life strove so earnestly to reach it that he frequently remodelled his passages five or six times before permitting them to be performed in public, and wearied his singers by introducing new improvements at every rehearsal. His first masterpiece was La Vestale, completed in 1805, but kept from the stage through the opposition of a jealous clique until 15th December 1807, when it was produced at the Académie, and at once took rank with the finest works of its class. The composer's second opera, ferdinand Cortez, was received with equal enthusiasm in 1809; but his third, Olympia, was much less warmly welcomed in 1819.

Spontini had been appointed in 1810 director of the Italian opera; but his quarrelsome and grasping disposi- tion led to his summary dismissal in 1812, and, though reinstated in 1814, he voluntarily resigned his post soon afterwards. He was in fact very ill fitted to act as director; yet on 28th May 1820, five months after the failure of Olympia, he settled in Berlin by invitation of Frederick William ITI., commissioned to superintend all

music performed at the Prussian court and compose two new grand operas, or three smaller ones, every three years. But he began by at once embroiling himself with the in- tendant, Count Brithl. Spontini's life at Berlin may be best described as a ceaseless struggle for precedence, under circumstances

which rendered its attainment impossible in the sense in which he desired it. Yet he did good work, and did it well. Dze Vestalin, Ferdinand Cortez, and Olympia—the last two entirely remodelled—were produced with great success in 1821. A new opera, Vourmahal, founded on Moore's Lalla Rookh, was performed in 1822, and another, entitled Alcidor, in 1825; and in 1826 Spontini began the composition of Agnes von Hohenstaufen, a work planned on a grander scale than any of his former efforts. The first act was performed in 1827, and the complete work in three acts graced the marriage of Prince William in 1829. Though the German critics abused it bitterly, Agnes von Hohenstaufen is undoubtedly Spontini's greatest work. In breadth of conception and grandeur of style it exceeds both Dze Vestalin and Ferdinand Cortez, and its details are worked out with untiring conscientious- ness; yet Spontini was utterly dissatisfied with it, and at once set to work upon an entire revision, which on its repre- sentation in 1837 was in many parts scarcely recognizable by those who had heard the opera in its original form.

This was his last great work. He several times began to rewrite his early opera, Jfilton, and contemplated the treatment of many new subjects, such as Sappho, La Colére d'Achille, and other classical myths, but with no definite result. He had never been popular in Berlin ; and he has been accused of endeavouring to prevent the performance of Huryanthe, Oberon, Die Hochzeit des Camacho, Jessonda, Robert the Devil, and other works of genius, through sheer envy of the laurels won by their composers. But the critics and reviewers of the period were so closely leagued together against him that it is difficult to know what to believe. After the death of Frederick William III. in 1840, Spontini's conduct became so violent and imperious that in 1842 Frederick William IV. dismissed him, with power to retain his titles and live wherever he pleased in the enjoyment of his full salary. He elected to settle once more in Paris, after a short visit to Italy ; but beyond conducting occasional per- formances of some of his own works he made but few attempts to keep his name before the public. In 1847 he revisited Berlin and was invited by the king to conduct some performances during the winter. In 1848 he became deaf. In 1850 he retired to his birthplace, Majolati, and died there on 14th January 1851, bequeathing all he pos- sessed to the poor of his native town.

SPOONBILL. The bird now so called was formerly known in England as the Shovelard or Shovelar, while that which used to bear the name of Spoonbill, often amplified into Spoon-billed Duck, is the SHoVELER (see vol. xxi. p. 842) of modern days—the exchange of names having been effected, as already stated (Joc. cit.) about 200 years ago, when the subject of the present notice—the Platalea leucorodia of Linnzeus as well as of recent writers—was doubtless far better known than now, since it evidently was, from ancient documents, the constant concomitant of Herons, and with them the law attempted to protect it.) Mr Harting (Zoologist, 1886, pp. 81 et seg.) has cited a case from the ‘ Year-Book” of 14 Hen. VIII. (1523),

1 Nothing shows better the futility of the old statutes for the protection of birds than the fact that in 1534 the taking of the eggs of Herons, Spoonbills (Shovelars), Cranes, Bitterns, and Bustards was visited by a heavy penalty, while there was none for destroying the parent birds in the breeding-season. All of the species just named, except the Heron, have passed away, while there is strong reason to think that some at least might have survived had the principle of the Levitical law (Deut. xxii. 6) been followed.

wherein the then bishop of London (Cuthbert Tunstall) maintained an action of trespass against the tenant of a close at Fulham for taking Herons and ‘“Shovelars” that made their nests on the trees therein growing, and has also printed (Zoologist, 1877, pp. 425 et seg.) an old document showing that ‘‘Shovelars” bred in certain woods in west Sussex in 1570. Nearly one hundred years later (circa 1662) Sir Thomas Browne, in his Account of Birds found in Norfolk (Works, ed. Wilkin, iv. pp. 315, 316), stated of the “Platea or Shouelard” that it formerly ‘built in the Hernerie at Claxton and Reedham, now at Trimley in Suffolk.” This last is the latest known proof of the breeding of the species in England ; but more recent evidence to that effect may be hoped for from other sources. That the Spoonbill was in the fullest sense of the word a “‘native” of England is thus incontestably shown; but for many years past it has only been a more or less regular visitant, though not seldom in con- siderable numbers, which would doubtless, if allowed, once more make their home there ; but its conspicuous appear- ance renders it an easy mark for the greedy gunner and

the contemptible collector. What may have been the case formerly is not known, except that, according to Belon, it nested in his time (1555) in the borders of Britanny and Poitou; but as regards north-western Europe it seems of late years to have bred only in Holland, and there it has been deprived by drainage of its favourite resorts, one after the other, so that it must shortly become merely a stranger, except in Spain or the basin of the Danube and other parts of south-eastern Europe.

The Spoonbill ranges over the greater part of middle and southern Asia,? and breeds abundantly in India, as well as on some of the islands in the Red Sea, and seems to be resident throughout Northern Africa. In Southern Africa its place is taken by an allied species with red legs, P. cristata or tenwirostris, which also goes to Madagascar. Australia has two other species, P. regia or melanorhynchus, with black bill and feet, and P. flavipes, in which those parts are yellow. The very beautiful and wholly diffcrent P. ajaja is the Roseate Spoonbill of America, and is the only one found on that continent, the tropical or juxta-tropical parts of which it inhabits. The rich pink, deepening in some parts into crimson, of nearly all its plumage, together with the yellowish green of its bare head and its lake-coloured legs, sufficiently marks this bird; but all the other species are almost wholly clothed in pure white, though the English has, when adult, a fine buff pectoral band, and the spoon-shaped expanse of its bill is yellow, contrast- ing with the black of the compressed and basal portion. Its legs are also black. In the breeding season, a pendent tuft of white plumes further ornaments the head of both sexes, but is longest in the male. The young of the year have the primary quills dark- coloured.

The Spoonbills form a natural group, Platalerdz, allied, as before stated (Izis, vol. xii. p. 606), to the Ibididz, and somewhat more distantly to the Storks (see Stork), —all belonging to the Pelargomorphe of Prof. Huxley. They breed in societies, not only of their own kind, but in company with Herons, either on trees or in reed-beds, making large nests in which are commonly laid four eggs, —white, speckled, streaked, or blotched, but never very closely, with light red. Such breeding-stations have been several times described, and among the more recent accounts of one of them are those of Messrs Sclater and W. A. Forbes (Zbis, 1877, p. 412), and Mr Seebohm (Zoologist, 1880, p. 457), while a view of another has been

attempted by Schlegel (Vog. Wederland, taf. xvii.). The latest systematic revision of the group is by Dr Reichenow (Journ. fiir Ornithologie, 1877, pp. 156-159), but his views have not been wholly accepted in the

present article. (A. N.)

2 Omithologists have been in doubt as to the recognition of two species from Japan described by Temminck and Schlegel under the names of P. major and P, minor. Lately it has been suggested that the former is only the young of P. lewcorodia, and the latter the young of the Australian P. regia.

_2=— =

SPO—SPO

SPORADES, the islands “scattered” (as the name, from ovefpewv, ‘to sow,” imports) about the Greek Archi- pelago, are distinguished on the one hand from the Cyclades, which are grouped around Delos, and on the other from the islands attached, as it were, to the mainland of Europe and Asia. The distinction is not in either case a very definite one, and hence both ancient and modern writers differ as to the list of the Sporades. Details of classifi- cation are given by Bursian (G’riechenland, ii. 348 sq.). The Doric Sporades—Melus (MeEtos),! Pholegandrus, Sicinus, THERA, Anaphe, Astypalea, and Cos—were by some considered a southern cluster of the Cyclades. In modern times the name Sporades is more especially applied to two groups—the Northern Sporades, which lie north-east of Negropont (Eubcea), along with which they constitute a nomarchy of the kingdom of Greece ; and the Southern Sporades, lying off the south-west of Asia Minor, and included in the Turkish vilayet of the ‘Islands of the White Sea.” The Northern, which have altogether an area of 180 square miles and a population of 13,394 (1879), comprise Skiatho, Khiliodromi or Ikos, Skopelo, Pelagonisi, Giura, Pipari, and Skiro (Scyros), with their adjacencies. The Southern are as follows :—TIcaria, Patmos, Leros, Calymno, Astypalea (Stampalia), Cos (Stanko), Nisyros, Tilos or Episcopi, Sime, Khalki, RuopeEs, Crere, and a multitude of lesser isles.

SPORTS, Tue Book or, or more properly the Duciara- TION OF SPoRTs, was issued by James I. in 1617 on the recommendation of Thomas Morton,

bishop of Chester, for use in Lancashire, where the king on his return from Scotland found a conflict on the subject of Sunday amuse- ments between the Puritans and the gentry, many of whom were Roman Catholics. Permission was given for dancing, archery, leaping, vaulting, and other harmless recreations, and of “having of May games, Whitsun ales, and morris dances, and the setting up of May-poles and other sports therewith used, so as the same may be had in due and con- venient time without impediment or neglect of divine service, and that women shall have leave to carry rushes to church for the decorating of it.” On the other hand, “bear and bull baiting, interludes, and (at all times in the meane sort of people by law prohibited) bowling” were not to be permitted on Sunday (Wilkins, Concilia, iv. 483). In 1618 James transmitted orders to the clergy of the whole of England to read the declaration from the pulpit ; but so strong was the opposition that he prudently withdrew his command (Wilson, in Kennet, ii. 709; Fuller, Church History, v. 452). In 1633 Charles I. not only directed the republication of his father’s declaration (Rush- worth, ii. 193) but insisted upon the reading of it by the clergy. Many of the clergy were punished for refusing to obey the injunction. With the fall of Laud all attempt to enforce it necessarily came to an end.

SPOTSWOOD, or Spotiswoop, Joun (1565-1639), archbishop of St Andrews, was the son of John Spotswood, minister of Calder and “superintendent” of Lothian, and was born in 1565. He was educated at Glasgow, and suc- ceeded his father in the parish of Calder when but eighteen years of age. In 1601 he attended Ludowick, duke of Lennox, as his chaplain, in an embassy to the court of France, and returned in the duke’s retinue through Eng- land. In 1603 he was nominated by the king to the see of Glasgow, but his consecration (in London) did not take place until October 1610. In 1615 he was translated as Successor of Gladstanes to St Andrews, and thus became primate and metropolitan of Scotland. In this capacity he presided in several assemblies of the Church of Scotland.

4 The names of those Sporades which are treated under separate headings are printed in small capitals.

A431 At that of Perth, in 1618, over which he presided, he used. his influence to obtain a reluctant assent to the Five Articles. He continued in

high esteem with James VI. and Charles I., who was crowned by him in 1633 at Holyrood. In 1635 Spotswood was advanced to the chancellorship, but the increasing strength of the Covenanters compelled his resignation in 1638. He was deposed and excommunicated by the Glasgow assembly in that year ; charges affecting his moral character were brought against him, but no attempt was made to substantiate these. He died in London on 26th December 1639 and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

In 1620 he published Refutatio Libelli de Regimine Ecclesizx Scoticane—an answer to a tract of Calderwood, who replied in the Vindicie subjoined to his Altare Damascenum. The only other writing of Spotswood published during his lifetime was the sermon he preached at the Perth assembly. His most considerable work appeared posthumously—The History of the Church and State of Scotland, beginning the year of our Lord 203 and continued to the end of the reign of James VI. of ever blessed memory, London, 1655, fol. It displays considerable research and sagacity, and even when dealing with contemporary events gives a favourable impression, upon the whole, of the author's candour and truth. An appendix was afterwards added by Thomas Middleton.

Spotswood left two sons,—Sir John Spotswoode of Dairsie in Fife, where the archbishop erected a church and bridge, which are still extant, and Sir Robert, a lawyer of great learning, who became president of the Court of Session, and was executed in 1646 for taking part in the expedition of Montrose.

SPOTTISWOODE, Wititam (1825-1883), mathe- matician and physicist, was born in London, 11th January 1825. His father, Andrew Spottiswoode, who was de- scended from an ancient Scottish family, represented Colchester in parliament for some years, and in 1831 became junior partner in the firm of Eyre & Spottiswoode, printers. William was educated at Laleham, Eton, Harrow, and Balliol College, Oxford. His bent for science showed itself while he was still a schoolboy, and indeed his re- moval from Eton to Harrow is said to have been occasioned by an accidental explosion which occurred whilst he was performing an experiment for his own amusement. At Harrow he obtained in 1842 a Lyon scholarship, and at Oxford in 1845 a first-class in mathematics, in 1846 the junior and in 1847

the senior university mathematical scholarship. In 1846 Spottiswoode left Oxford to take his father's place in the business, in which he was engaged until his death. In 1847 he issued five pamphlets entitled Meditationes Analytice. This was his first publication of original mathematical work ; and from this time scarcely a year passed in which he did not give to the world further mathematical researches. In 1856 Spottiswoode travelled in eastern Russia, and in 1860 in Croatia and Hungary; of the former expedition he has left an interesting record entitled A Yarantasse Journey through Eastern Russia in the Autumn of 1856 (London, 1857). In 1870 he was elected president of the London Mathematical Society. In 1871 he began to turn his attention to experimental physics, his earlier researches bearing upon the polarization of light and his later work upon the electrical discharge in rarefied gases. He wrote a popular treatise upon the former subject for the ‘‘ Nature" series (1874). In 1878 he was elected president of the British Association, and in the same year president of the Royal Society, of which he had been a fellow since 1853. He died of fever on 27th June 1883, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

As a mathematician he occupied himself with many branches of lis favourite science, more especially with higher algebra, in- cluding the theory of determinants, with the general calculus of symbols, and with the application of analysis to geometry and mechanics. The following brief review of his mathematical work is quoted from the obituary notice which appeared in the Procecd- ings of the Royal Society (vol. xxxviii. p. 34): —‘“‘ The interesting series of communications on the contact of curves and surfaces which are contained in the Philosophical Transactions of 1862 and

subsequent years would alone account for the high rank he obtained asa mathematician. . . . The mastery which he had obtained over the mathematical symbols was so complete that he never shrank from the use of expressions, however complicated—nay, the more complicated they were the more he seemed to revel in them—pro- vided they did not sin against the ruling spirit of all his work, — symmetry. To a mind imbued with the love of mathematical symmetry the study of determinants had naturally every attraction. In 1851 Mr Spottiswoode published in the form of a

pamphlet an account of some elementary theorems on the subject. This having fallen out of print, permission was sought by the editor of Credle to reproduce it in the pages of that journal. Mr Spottiswoode granted the request and undertook to revise his work. The sub- ject had, however, been so extensively developed in the interim that it proved necessary not merely to revise it but entirely to re- write the work, which became a memoir of 116 pages. To this, the first elementary treatise on determinants, much of the rapid development of the subject is due. The effect of the study on Mr Spottiswoode's own methods was most pronounced ; there is searcely a page of his mathematical writings that does not bristle with determinants." The Royal Society's Catalogue of Scientific Papers (vols. i.~~viii.) shows a list of 49 papers by Spottiswoode, to which must be added about 66 more, the titles of which have not yet been printed in that catalogue. These were published princi~~ pally in the Philosophical Transactions, Proceedings of the Royal Society, Quarterly Journal of Mathematics, Proceedings of the London Mathematieal Soeiety, and Crelle, and one or two in the Comptes Rendus of the Paris Academy. Another list of his papers, arranged according to the several journals in which they originally appeared, with short notes upon the less familiar memoirs, is given in Nature, vol. xxvii. p. 599.

SPRAIN. See Surcsry, p. 682, infra.

SPRAT, a marine fish (Clupea sprattus), named "garvie" in Scotland, one of the smallest species of the genus Clupea or herrings, rarely exceeds 5 inches in length, and occurs in large shoals on the Atlantic coasts of Europe. It is found also in the southern hemisphere, on the coasts of Tasmania and New Zealand, where, however, it seems to be less abundant, since its presence at the antipodes has been discovered only recently, and it does not seem to be the object of a regular fishery. Sprats are very often con- founded with young herrings, which they much resemble, but can always be distinguished by the following characters: they do not possess any teeth on the palate (vomer), like herrings ; their gill-covers are smooth, without the radiat- ing strize which are found in the shad and the pilchard ; the anal fin consists of from seventeen to twenty rays, and the lateral line of forty-seven or forty-eight scales. The ven- tral fins are even with the origin of the dorsal fin; and the spine consists of from forty-seven to forty-nine vertebree. The sprat is

one of the more important food-fishes on account of the immense numbers which are caught when the shoals approach the coasts. They are somewhat capri- cious, however, as regards the place and time of their appearance, the latter falling chiefly in the first half of winter. They are caught with the sein or.with the bag- net in the tideway. Large quantities are consumed fresh, but many are pickled or smoked, and others prepared like anchovies. Frequently the captures are so large that the fish can be used as manure only.

SPREMBERG, a small town of Prussia, in the province of Brandenburg, is situated about 75 miles to the south- east of Berlin, partly on an island in the river Spree and partly on the west bank. It carries on considerable manu- factures of woollen cloth, and has greatly advanced in importance and population since the beginning of the 19th century. In 1885 its population numbered 11,011. The only building of note is the chateau, built by a son of Elector John George about the end of the 16th century.

SPRENGEL, Kurr (1766-1833), German botanist and physician, was born on 3d August 1766 at Boldekow in Pomerania. His father, a clergyman, provided him with a thorough education of wide scope; and the boy at an early age distinguished himself as a linguist, not only in Latin and Greek, but also in Arabic. He appeared as an author at the age of fourteen, publishing a small work

called Anlettung zur Botamk fiir Frauenzsimmer in 1780. In 1784 he commenced in the university of Halle to study theology and medicine, but soon relinquished the former, He graduated in medicine in 1787. In 1789 he was ap- pointed an extraordinary professor of medicine in his alma mater, and in 1795 was promoted to an ordinary profes- sorship. He devoted much of his time to medical work and to investigations into the history of medicine; and he published several very valuable works in this department of knowledge, and made himself well known as one of the ablest medical men in Germany. He held a foremost rank in medicine and in botany as an original investigator, and in both published works of great value, besides numer- ous articles in scientific journals and in the proceedings of learned societies. His accomplishments as a linguist probably, in part at least,

determined him in the choice of the department to which he most fully devoted himself, and in which he stood facile princeps. Among the more important of his many services to the science of botany was the part he took in awakening and stimulating micro- scopic investigation into the anatomy of the tissues of the higher plants, though defective microscopic appliances rendered the conclusions arrived at by himself unreliable. He also made many improvements in the details of both the Linnzan and the “natural” systems of classification, His life passed quietly at Halle in the pursuit of the studies dear to him, and in the enjoyment of the honours bestowed upon him by over seventy learned societies, and also by monarchs. In 1828 the death of a son, professor of surgery at Greifswald, was felt by him very severely. He experienced several apoplectic seizures, and died in one on 15th March 1833.

Subjoined is a list of the more important of his works:—Bettrdge zur Geschichte d. Pulses, 1787; Galens Fieberlehre, 1788; Apologie des Hippokrates, 1789; Versweh einer pragmatisehen Geschichte der Arzneikunde, 1792-99; Handbuch der Pathologie, 1795-97; In- stitutiones Mediew, 1809-16 (in 6 vols.); Gesehichte der Mediein, completed in 1820; Antiquitatwm botaniearwm specimen, 1798; Historia ret herbariw, 1807-8; Anleitung zur Kennéiniss der Gewiiehse, 1802-4, and again 1817-18; Geschichte der Botanik, 1817- 18; Von dem Baw und der Natur der Gewétiehse, 1812; Flora Halensis, 1806-15, and in 18382; Speetes umbelliferarum minus cognite, 1818; Neue Entdeekung im ganzen Umfang der Pflanzen- kunde, 1820-22. He edited an edition of Linneus’s Systema vegeta- biliwm in 1824 and of the Genera plantarum in 1830. His short papers are too numerous to be quoted; a list of those in botany, from 1798 onwards, will be found in the Royal Society’s Catalogue of Setentifie Papers.

SPRINGBOK. See AnTELop#, vol. ii. p. 101.

SPRINGFIELD, a city of the United States, capital of Illinois and the county seat of Sangamon county, 185 miles south-west of Chicago and 95 north-east of St Louis, at the intersection of the main lines of the Chicago and Alton and the Wabash, St Louis, and Pacific Railways. It is situated in 39° 48’ N. lat. and 89° 33’ W. long., on a plateau 4 miles south of the

Sangamon river. The State capitol (1868-1886) is constructed of Joliet marble in the form of a Greek cross, with porticos of granite; it 1s 385 feet long and 296 wide, and has a central dome surmounted by a lantern with a ball on the pinnacle (360 feet). It contains a general library, a law library, geological and agricultural museums, and a memorial hall of the Civil War, as well as the usual Government offices. Other buildings of note are the United States executive mansion, custom-house and post-office (1866-68), and the house formerly occupied by Lincoln. In Oak Ridge cemetery, adjacent to the city, is the Lincoln monument (1874), beneath which that president was buried. The monument, designed by Larkin G. Mead, consists of a granite obelisk, reaching a height of 984 feet from the centre of a spacious basement (1194 feet long and 724 wide), which contains a catacomb and a memorial hall,—the latter a museum of Lincolniana.

of figures in bronze, symbolizing the army and navy of the United States, are arranged round the foot of the obelisk. The town has a public library, two hospitals, two orphan- ages, and various other charitable institutions. Extensive deposits of bituminous coal occur in and near Springfield, which is the seat of extensive iron-rolling mills, watch factories, railway machine shops, plough works, and wool- len, paper, and flour mills. It is also the headquarters of six of the principal live-stock associations of the country. The population was 4533 in 1850, 9820 in 1860, 17,364 in 1870, 19,743 (1328 coloured) in 1880, and in 1887 it was estimated at 25,000. .

Laid out in 1822, Springfield was selected as State capital in 1837, and was inade a city in 1840.

SPRINGFIELD, a city of the United States, the county seat of Hampden county, Massachusetts, on the east bank of Connecticut river, opposite West Springfield, with which it is connected by road and railway bridges. By rail it is 98 miles west by south of Boston on the route to Albany, and it forms a very important railway junction. The western part of Springfield is built on low and level ground, the eastern on the ascent from the river valley. The streets are wide and well shaded with elm and maple. A United States arsenal (founded 1777) and armoury (1794), employing some 460 hands, is the largest in the republic. The Springfield breech-loading rifle of 45 calibre has been the regulation pattern in the United States army since 1873. A

pistol-factory, car-works, manufactories of cotton and silk goods, buttons, needles, envelopes, paper, watches, skates, and brass-work may be mentioned among the industrial establishments. The city hall (1855), a Romanesque building with an audience-room capable of holding 2700 persons; the city free library (1871), a Gothic building of brick, which contains 56,000 volumes and a museum; the granite court-house; the Roman Catholic cathedral of St Michael; Christ Church, Epis- copal; the Church of the Unity, a fine Gothic structure in brown stone; the South Congregational church ; the office of the Boston and Albany Railroad, a niassive granite block; and the high school areamong the chief architectural features of the city. Races are held in Hampden Park by the river side. The population was 15,199 in 1860, 26,703 in 1870, 33,340 in 1880 (775 coloured), and 37,577 in 1885.

Springfield was settled in 1636 by William Pynchon and emi-

rants from Roxbury,—the determination of the founder being to imit the "town" to forty or at most fifty families. The name was at first Agawam ; but the present designation was adopted in 1641 in memory of Springfield (Essex), Pynchon's residence in his native country, England, to which he was obliged to return in 1652 to escape the clerical persecution called forth by his book on the Meritorious Price of Christ's Redemption. The town was burned by the Indians in 1675 ; and in 1787 the arsenal was attacked by Shays's rebels. The opening of the Boston and Albany Railroad In 1839 was the beginning of rapid development, and the town was made a city in 1852. The manufacture of firearms carried on here during the Civil War, 1861-65, gave the city a great impulse.

SPRINGFIELD, a city of the United States, county seat of Greene county, Missouri, occupies a pleasant and healthy site on the Ozark Hills, 238 miles by rail south- west of St Louis by the St Louis and San Francisco Rail-road, which here joins with the Kansas City, Fort Scott, and Gulf Railroad. Springfield is the chief commercial centre of south-west Missouri, one of the great lead and zinc miming districts of the States. It contains a number of factories (cotton, wool, waggons, furniture, tobacco, &c.), and is the seat of a court-house and of Drury College (1873), Which provides scientific and classical training and has a musical conservatory attached. The

population was 5555 in 1870, 6522 in 1880, and in 1886 was estimated at 18,000.

Originally an Indian trading post and frontier village, Springfield Was incorporated in 1830 and began to be a prosperous place at the close of the Civil War, during which it had several times changed hands and been the scene of hostilities.

SPRINGFIELD, a city of the United States, county seat of Clarke county, Ohio, lies at the confluence of Mad river and Lagonda Creek (sub-tributaries of the Ohio through the Miami), 84 miles north-east of Cincinnati. It has a large trade in the agricultural produce of the fertile and populous district in which it is pleasantly situated, and is the seat of a very large manufactory of agricultural machinery, which turns out 75,000 reapers and mowers per annum, besides grain-drills, steam-engines, cider-mills, and a great variety of articles. In 1870 the population of the city was 12,652, in 1880 20,730 (township, 24,455), and 33,484 in 1886. Among the public institutions are Wittenberg College (Lutheran), founded in 1845, and a small public library.

SPRINGS. See GxEoLoay, vol. x. pp. 223, 269 sq., and MINERAL WATERS.

SPRUCE. See Fir, vol. ix. p. 222.

SPURZHEIM, Kaspar, phrenologist, was born at Longwich near Treves on 31st December 1776, and died at Boston, United States, on 10th November 1832. See PHRENOLOGY.

SQUARING (or QuapRaTURE) OF THE CIRCLE is the problem of finding a square equal in area toa given circle. Like all problems, it may be increased in difficulty by the imposition of restrictions ; consequently under the designation there may be embraced quite a variety of geometrical problems. It has to be noted, however, that, when the “squaring” of the

circle is especially spoken of, it is almost always tacitly assumed that the restrictions are those of the Euclidean geometry.

Since the area of a circle equals that of the rectilineal triangle whose base has the same length as the circum- ference and whose altitude equals the radius (Archimedes, KvxAov pérpyots, prop. 1), it follows that, if a straight line could be drawn equal in length to the circumference, the required square could be found by an ordinary Euclid- ean construction ; also, it is evident that, conversely, if a square equal in area to the circle could be obtained, it would be possible to draw a straight line equal to the circumference. Rectification and quadrature of the circle have thus been, since the time of Archimedes at least, practically identical problems. Again, since the circum- ferences of circles are proportional to their diameters—a proposition assumed to be true from the dawn almost of practical geometry —the rectification of the circle is seen to be transformable into finding the ratio of the cir- cumference to the diameter. This correlative numerical problem and the two purely geometrical problems are inseparably connected historically.

Probably the earliest value for the ratio was 3. It was so among the Jews (1 Kings vii. 23, 26), the Babylonians (Oppert, Journ. Asiatique, August 1872, October 1874), the Chinese (Biot, Journ. Asiatique, June 1841), and probably also the Greeks. Among the ancient Egyptians, as would appear from a calculation in the Rhind papyrus, the number (4)4, ie. 3°16…, was at one time in use.! The first attempts to solve the purely geometrical problem appear to have been made by the Greeks (Anaxagoras, &c.),2 one of whom, Hippocrates,? doubtless raised hopes of a solution by his quadrature of the so-called menzscoz, As for Euclid, it is sufficient to recall the facts that the original author of prop. 8 of book iv. had strict proof of the ratio being <4, and the author of prop. 15 of the ratio being >8, and to direct attention to the importance

1 Hisenlohr, Hin math. Handbuch d. alten Aegypter, iibers. u. erklaért, Leipsic, 1877 ; Rodet, Bull. de la Soc. Math. de France, vi. pp. 139-149.

2? Hankel, Zur Gesch. d. Math. im Alterthum, &c., chap. v., Leipsic, 1874; Cantor, Vorlesungen iiber Gesch. d. Math., i., Leipsic, 1880 ; Tannery, Mém. de la Soc., &c., @ Bordeaux; Allman, in Hermathena.

3 Tannery, Bull. des Sc. Math., [2], x. pp. 213-226.

XXIT. — 55

of book x. on incommensurables and props. 2 and 16 of book xii., viz., that “circles are to one another as the squares on their diameters” and that “in the greater of two concentric circles a regular 27-gon can be inscribed which shall not meet the circumference of the less,” how- ever nearly equal the circles may be. With Archimedes (287-212 B.c.) a notable advance was made. Taking the circumference as intermediate between the perimeters of the inscribed and the circumscribed regular n-gons, he showed that, the radius of the circle being given and the perimeter of some particular circumscribed regular polygon obtainable, the perimeter of the circumscribed regular polygon of double the number of sides could be calculated ; that the like was true of the inscribed polygons; and that consequently a means was thus afforded of approximating to the circumference of the circle. As a matter of fact, he started with a semi-side AB of a circumscribed regular hexagon meeting the circle in B (see fig. 1), joined A and B with O the centre, bisected the ~AOB by OD, so that BD became the semi-side of a circumscribed regular

12-gon; then as AB: BO: OA::1: /3:2 he sought an approximation to V3 and found that AB: BO>158 : 265. Next he applied his theorem!
BO+OA:AB::OB: BD

to calculate BD ; from this in turn he cal- culated the semi-sides of the circumscribed a regular 24-gon, 48-gon, and 96-gon, and ©

so finally established for the circumscribed 6 a) regular 96-gon that perimeter : diameter Fig 1. < 34:1. Ina quite analogous manner he proved for the inscribed regular 96-gon that perimeter : diameter > 332: 1. The conclusion from these therefore was that the ratio of cir- cumference to diameter is <3? and >3%°. This is a most notable piece of work ; the immature condition of arith- metic at the time was the only real obstacle preventing the evaluation of the ratio to any degree of accuracy whatever.” No advance of any importance was made upon the achievement of Archimedes until after the revival of learn- ing. His immediate successors may have used his method to attain a greater degree of accuracy, but there is very little evidence pointing in this direction. Ptolemy (fl. 127- 151), in the

Great Syntawis, gives 3°141552 as the ratio; and the Hindus (c. 500 a.p.), who were very probably indebted to the Greeks, used 62832/20000, that is, the now familiar 3°1416.4 It was not until the 15th century that attention in Hurope began to be once more directed to the subject, and after the resuscitation a considerable length of time elapsed before any progress was made. ‘The first advance in accuracy was due to a certain Adrian, son of

Anthony, a native of Metz (1527), and father of the better- .

known Adrian Metius of Alkmaar. In refutation of Duchesne (Van der Eycke) he showed that the ratio was <3;45 and >3,4,°,, and thence made the exceedingly lucky step of taking a mean between the two by the quite unjusti- fiable process of halving the sum of the two numerators for a new numerator and halving the sum of the two denomi- nators for a new denominator, thus arriving at the now well-known approximation 354%, or #38, which, being equal to 3°1415929…, is correct to the sixth fractional place.® The next to advance the calculation was Viéte (De Viette, Vieta), the greatest mathematician of his age. By finding the perimeter of the inscribed and that of the circumscribed regular polygon of 393216 (a.e., 6 × 21°) sides, he proved

1 In modern trigonometrical notation, 1+sec @:tan 0::1: tan 30.

? Tannery, ‘‘Sur la mesure du cercle d’Archiméde,” in Mém. . . .

Bordeaux, [2], iv. pp. 318-339 ; Menge, Des Archimedes Kreismessung, Coblentz, 1874.

3 De Morgan, in Penny Cyclop., xix. p. 186.

4 Kern, Aryabhatttyam, Leyden, 1874, trans. by Rodet, Paris, 1879.

® De Morgan, art. ‘‘ Quadrature of the Circle,” in English Cyclop. ; Glaisher, Mess. of Math., ii. pp. 119-128, iii, pp. 27-46 ; De Haan, Nieww Archief v. Wisk., i. pp. 70-86, 206-211.

SQUARING PEE CIRCLE

that the ratio was >3°1415926535 and <3°1415926537, so that its value became known (in 1579) correctly to 10 fractional places. The theorem for angle-bisection which Viete used was not that of Archimedes, but that which would now appear in the form 1 — cos 6=2 sin? 46. With Viéte, by reason of the advance in arithmetic, the style of treatment becomes more strictly trigonometrical ; in- deed, the Universatles Inspectiones, in which the calculation occurs, would now be called plane and spherical trigono- metry, and the accompanying Canon Mathematicus, a table of sines, tangents, and secants.6 Further, in comparing the labours of Archimedes and Viéte, the effect of increased power of symbolical expression is very noticeable. Archi- medes's process of unending cycles of arithmetical opera- tions could at best have been expressed in his time by a "rule" in words; in the 16th century it could be condensed into a "formula." Accordingly, we find in Viéte a formula for the ratio of diameter to circumference, viz., the intermi- nate product 7—

WES EAE Eta E From this point onwards, therefore, no knowledge what- ever of geometry was necessary in any one who aspired to determine the ratio to any required degree of accuracy: the mere arithmetician's art and length of days were the only requisites. Thus in connexion with the subject a genus of workers became possible who may be styled "-computers,"—a name which, if it connotes anything uncomplimentary, does so because of the almost entirely fruitless character of their labours. Passing over Adriaan van Roomen (Adrianus Romanus) of Louvain, who pub- lished the value of the ratio correct to 15 places in his Idea Mathematica (1593),8 we come to the notable com- puter Ludolph van Ceulen (d. 1610), a native of Germany, long resident in Holland. His book, Van den Circkel (Delf, 1596), gave the ratio correct to 20 places, but he continued his calculations as long as he lived, and his best result was published on his tombstone in St Peter's church, Leyden. The inscription, which is not known to be now in existence,® is in part as follows:— | . . » Qui in vita sua multo labore circumferentiae circuli proxi- mam rationem ad diametrum invenit sequentem— quando diameter est 1 tum circuli circumferentia plus est

3141592653589793238462643383279502 88

4N2™ 100000000000000000000000000000000000 et minus

81415926535897 9323846264338327950289

IN2™ 1000000000000000000000000000000000000.. . This gives the ratio correct to 35 places. Van Ceulen’s process was essentially identical with that of Viete. Its numerous root extractions amply justify a stronger expres- sion than ‘“multo labore,” especially in an epitaph. In Germany the “Ludolphische Zahl” is still a common naine for the ratio,!° Up to this point the credit of most that had been done may be set down to Archi- medes. A new departure, c however, was made by Willebrord Snell of Ley- den in his Cyclometria, 4 0 8 a published in 1621. His Fig. 2. achievement was a closely approximate geometrical solu- 6 Vieta, Opera Math., Leyden, 1646; Marie, Hist. des Sciences Math., iii. p. 27 sqg., Paris, 1884. * Kliigel, Math. Worterb., ii. pp. 606, 607. 8 Kastner, Gesch. d. Math., i., Gottingen, 1796-1800. 9 But see Les Délices de Leide, Leyden, 1712; or De Haan, Mess. of Math., iii. pp. 24-26. 10 For minute and lengthy details regarding the quadrature of the circle in the Low Countries, see De Haan, “ Bouwstoffen voor de geschie- denis, &c.,’’ in Versi. en Mededeel. der K. Akad. van Wetensch., ix., X.5

xi., xii, Amsterdam ; also his “ Notice sur quelques quadrateurs, &c.,” in Bull. di, Bibliogr. e di Storia delle Sci. Mat. e Fis., vii, pp..99-144.

. Ts ——

SQUARINGITHEH’ CIRCLE

tion of the problem of rectification (see fig. 2). ACB being a semicircle whose centre is O, and AC the arc to be rectified, he produced AB to D, making BD equal to the radius, joined DC, and produced it to meet the tangent at Ain E; and then his assertion (not established by him) was that AE was nearly equal to the arc AC, the error being in defect. For the purposes of the calculator a solution erring in excess was also required, and this Snell gave by slightly varying the former construction. Instead of producing AB (see fig. 3) so that BD e! was equal to 7, he pro- duced it only so far that, when the extremity D’ was A c B D! joined with C, the part of Fig. 3.

D’C outside the circle was equal to 7; in other words, by a non-Euclidean construction he trisected the angle AOC, for it is readily seen that, since FD’= FO=OC, the angle FOB=4AOC.! This couplet of constructions is as im-

portant from the calculator’s point of view as it is interest- ing geometrically. To compare it on this K score with the fundamental proposition of C

Archimedes, the latter must be put into a form similar to Snell’s. AMC being an arc of a circle (see fig. 4) whose centre is O, AC its chord, and HK the tangent «+ 4 drawn at the middle point of the arc and Fag, 4

bounded by OA, OC produced, then, according to Archi- medes, AMCAC. In modern trigonometrical notation the propositions to be compared stand as follows :—

2tan$0>0>2sin40 (Archimedes) ;

; 3 sin tan 40+2sin 10>0> crane (Snell).

uM

It is readily shown that the latter gives the best approxi-

mation to ; but, while the former requires for its applica- tion a knowledge of the trigonometrical ratios of only one angle (in other words, the ratios of the sides of only one right-angled triangle), the latter requires the same for two angles, and 40. Grienberger, using Snell’s method, cal- culated the ratio correct to 39 fractional places.2 Huy- gens, in his De Circuli Magnitudine Inventa, 1654, proved the propositions of Snell, giving at the same time a number of other interesting theorems, for example, two inequalities which may be written as follows 3— 4 chd 6 +sin 6

cd 0+ chd 6+ Sein 6?

As might be expected, a fresh view of the matter was taken by Descartes. The problem he set himself was the exact converse of that of Archimedes. A given straight line being viewed as equal in ; length to the circumference of a circle, he sought to find the dia- meter of the circle. His con- struction is as follows (see fig. 5). Take AB equal to one-fourth of the given line; on AB describe a square ABCD; join AC; in AC produced find, by a known process, a point O, such that, when O,B, ¢ ae is drawn perpendicular to AB pro- Fig. 6. duced and C,D, perpendicular to BC produced, the rect- angle BC, will be equal to ABCD; by the same process find a point C, such that the rectangle B,C, will be equal to tBC,; and so on ad infinitum. The diameter sought is the

It is thus manifest that by his first construction Snell gave an approximate solution of two great problems of antiquity.

2 Elementa Trigonometrica, Rome, 1680; Glaisher, Messenger of Math., iii. p. 35 sq.

® See Kiessling's edition of the De Circ. Magn. Inv. , Flensburg, 1869 ;

or Pirie's tract on Geometrical Methods of Approx. to the Value of 7, London, 1877.

(chd 6 — sin 0)>6>chd 6 + 4(chd 6 — sin 0).

straight line from A to the limiting position of the series of B's, say the straight line ABw. As in the case of the process of Archimedes, we may direct our attention either to the infinite series of geometrical operations or to the corresponding infinite series of arithmetical opera- tions. Denoting the number of units in AB by 4c, we can express BB,, B,B,,...in terms of 4c, and the identity ABo =AB+BB,B,B, ... gives us at once an expres- sion for the diameter in terms of the circumference by means of an infinite series. The proof of the correctness of the construction is seen to be involved in the following theorem, which serves likewise to throw new light on the subject :—AB being any straight line whatever, and the above construction being made, then AB is the diameter of the circle circumscribed by the square

ABCD (self-evi- dent), AB, is the diameter of the circle circumscribed by the regular 8-gon having the same perimeter as the square, AB, is the diameter of the circle circumscribed by the regular 16-gon having the same perimeter as the square, and so on. Essentially, therefore, Descartes's process is that known later as the process of csoperimeters, and often attributed wholly to Schwab.°

In 1655 appeared the Arithmetica Infinitorum of Wallis, where numerous problems of quadrature are dealt with, the curves being now represented in Cartesian coordinates, and algebra playing an important part. In a very curious manner, by viewing the circle y=(1—«)t as a member of the series of curves y=(1 —«?)!, y=(1 —«?)?, &e., he was led to the proposition that four times the reciprocal of the ratio of the circumference to the diameter is equal to

SEALE De LC Gel Bias

and, the result having been communicated to Lord Broun- ker, the latter discovered the equally curious equivalent expression J

The work of Wallis had evidently an important influence on the next notable personality in the history of the sub- ject, James Gregory, who lived during the period when the higher algebraic analysis was coming into power, and whose genius helped materially to develop it. He had, however, in a certain sense one eye fixed on the past and the other towards the future. His first contribution® was a variation of the method of Archimedes, The latter, as we know, calculated the perimeters of successive polygons, passing from one polygon to another of double the number of sides; in a similar manner Gregory calculated the areas. The general theorems which enabled him to do this, after a start had been made, are Ay, =VA,A', (Snell's Cyclom.), it u ey ae or a a (Gregory),

where A, A', are the areas of the inscribed and the circum- scribed regular 2-gons respectively. He also gave approxi- mate rectifications of circular arcs after the manner of Huy- gens; and, what is very notable, he made an ingenious and, according to Montucla, successful attempt to show that quadrature of the circle by a Euclidean construction was impossible." Besides all this, however, and far beyond it in importance, was his use of

infinite series. This merit he shares with his contemporaries Mercator, Newton, and Leibnitz, and the exact dates of discovery are a little uncertain. As far as the circle-squaring functions are con-

4 See Euler, “ Annotationes in Locum quendam Cartesii,” in Mov. Comm. Acad. Petrop., viii.

5 Gergonne, Annales de Math., vi.

8 See Vera Circuli et Hyperbole Quadratura, Padua. 1667; and the Appendicula to the same in his Hzercitationes Geometric, London, 1668.

7 Penny Cyclop., xix. p. 187.

cerned, it would seem that Gregory was the first (in 1670) to make known the series for the arc in terms of the tangent, the series for the tangent in terms of the are, and the secant in terms of the arc; and in 1669 Newton showed to Barrow a little treatise in manuscript containing the series for the arc in terms of the sine, for the sine in terms of the arc, and for the cosine in terms of the arc. These discoveries formed an epoch in the history of mathematics generally, and had, of course, a marked influence on after investigations regarding circle-quadrature. Even among the mere computers the series O=tan 6-4 tan? 0+4 tan’ A-...,

specially known as Gregory’s series, has ever since been a necessity of their calling.

The calculator’s work having now become easier and more mechanical, calculation went on apace. In 1699 Abraham Sharp, on the suggestion of Halley, took Gregory’s series, and, putting tan 0 =}./3, found the ratio equal to

= ul 1 1 :

ViB(1-ggtzg—pgt-) from which he calculated it correct to 71 fractional places. About the same time Machin calculated it correct to 100 places, and, what was of more importance, gave for the ratio the rapidly converging expression, 16 1 il 1 4 il 1 F-gatperet) = Seepage which long remained without explanation.? Fautet de Lagny, still using tan 30°, advanced to the 127th place.®

Euler took up the subject several times during his life, effecting mainly improvements in the theory of the various series. With him, apparently, began the usage of denot- ing by 7 the ratio of the circumference to the diameter.® The most important publication, however, on the subject in the 18th century was a paper by Lambert,® read before the Berlin Academy in 1761, in which he demonstrated the irrationality of z. The general test of irrationality which he established is that, if

aa b,4£% iia;

as a

be an interminate continued fraction, a), ay…, b), b)...

be integers, ih 7 … be proper fractions, and the value of

2 9

, , tu every one of the interminate continued fractions +

tly Gy Bad x

=

represents an irrational quantity. If this be applied to _the right-hand side of the identity

... be < 1, then the given continued fraction

ee

SN… it follows that the tangent of every arc commensurable with the radius is irrational, so that, as a particular case,

an arc of 45°, having its tangent rational, must be incom-

mm tan —=— ma 2 nm = m

; , , a : mensurable with the radius; that is to say, 7 18 an Incom-

mensurable number.’ This incontestable result had no

effect, apparently, in repressing the 7-computers. Vega

1 See Sherwin’s Math. Tables, London, 1705, p. 59.

2 See W. Jones, Synopsis Palmariorum Matheseos, London, 1706 ; Maseres, Scriptores Logarithmici, London, 1791-96, vol. iii. pp. 159 sq. ; Hutton, Tracts, vol. i. p. 266.

3 See Hist. de? Acad., Paris, 1719; 7 appears instead of 8 in the 118th place.

- Comment. Acad. Petrop., ix., xi.; Nov. Comm. Ac. Pet., xvi. ; Nova Acta Acad. Pet., xi.

5 Introd. in Analysin Infin., Lausanne, 1748, chap. viii.

8 Mém. sur quelques propriétés remarquables des quantités transcend- antes, circulatres, et logarithmiques.

7 See Legendre, Eléments de Géometrie, Paris, 1794, note iv.; Schlé- milch, Handbuch d. algeb. Analysis, Jena, 1851, chap. xiii.

in 1789, using series like Machin’s, viz., Gregory’s series and the identities ‘

que tan-!4+2 tan-!.8, (Euler, 1779),

7 tan-144+2tan-14 (Hutton, 1776),

neither of which was nearly so advantageous as several found by Hutton, calculated w+ correct to 136 places.® This achievement was anticipated or outdone by an un- known calculator, whose manuscript was seen in the Rad- cliffe Library, Oxford, by Baron von Zach towards the end of the century, and contained the ratio correct to 152 places. More astonishing still have been the deeds of the m-computers of the 19th century. A condensed record compiled by Mr Glaisher (Messenger of Math., ii. p. 122) is as follows :—

No. of | No. of Date. | Computer. (fr.digits fr.digits caled. |correct.

1842| Rutherford | 208 | 152 | Trans. Roy. Soc., Lond., 1841, p.

283.

1844|Dase …... 205 | 200 | Crelle's Jowrn., xxvii. p. 198.

1847 | Clausen …| 250 | 248 | Astron. Nachr., xxv. col. 207.

1853|Shanks …| 318 | 318 | Proc. Roy. Soc., Lond.,1853, p.273.

1853} Rutherford | 440 | 440 | Zbid.

Place of Publication.

1853|Shanks …| 530 0 | 2bed.

1853|Shanks …| 607 … |W. Shanks, Rectification of the Circle, London, 1858.

1853 | Richter …| 333 | 330 | Grunert's Archiv, xxi. p. 119.

1854| Richter …| 400 | 330 | Lbid., xxii. p. 473.

1854 | Richter …) 400 | 400 | Zdid., xxiii. p. 476.

1854| Richter …) 500 | 500 | Jdid., xxv. p. 472. 1873] Shanks …) 707 iu. | PFoe. Roy. Soe.) Mond. xxt

By these computers Machin's identity, or identities ana- logous to it, ¢.g.,

= tan- +tan—},

ee |

=4 tan~!4- tan 7, 4+tan-! y,

and Gregory's series were employed.?

A much less wise class than the 7-computers of the 19th century are the pseudo-circle-squarers, or circle-squarers technically so called, that is to say, persons who, having obtained by illegitimate means a Euclidean construction for the quadrature or a finitely expressible value for 7, insist on using faulty reasoning and defective mathematics to establish their assertions. Such persons have flourished at all times in the history of mathematics ; but the interest at- taching to them is more psychological than mathematical.!

It is of recent years that the most important advances in the theory of circle-quadrature have been made. In 1873 Hermite proved that the base ¢ of the Napierean logarithms cannot be a root of a rational algebraical equation of any degree.!4 To prove the same proposition regarding 7 is to prove that a Euclidean construction for circle-quadrature is impossible. For in such a construction every point of the figure is obtained by the intersection of two straight lines, a straight line and a circle, or two circles ; and, as this implies that, when a unit of length is introduced, numbers employed, and the problem trans- formed into one of algebraic geometry, the equations to be solved can only be of the first or second degree, it follows that the equation to which we must be finally led is a rational equation of even degree. Hermite'? did not

8 Nova Acta Petrop., ix. p. 41; Thesaurus Logarithm. Completus,

. 638.

; 9 On the calculations made before Shanks, see Lehmann, " Beitrag zur Berechnung der Zahl 7," in Grunert's Archiv, xxi. pp. 121-174.

10 See Montucla, Hist. des rech. sur la quad. du cercle, Paris, 1754, 2d ed, 1831; De Morgan, Budget of Paradoxes, London, 1872.

11 “Sur la fonction exponentielle,” Comptes Rendus, Paris, 1xxvii. pp. 18, 74, 226, 285.

2 See Crelle’s Journal, lxxvi. p. 342.

succeed in his attempt on 7; but in 1882 Lindemann, following exactly in Hermite’s steps, accomplished the desired result.) Mathematicians are agreed that the full demonstration leaves something to be desired in the matter of simplicity, and attempts at simplification have already been made by Markoff and Rouché.?

Besides the various writings mentioned, see for the early history of the subject, Montucla, Hist. des Math., 6 vols., Paris, 1758, 9d ed. 1799-1802 ; Murhard, Bibliotheca Mathematica, ii. pp. 106- 128, Leipsic, 1798; Reuss, Repertoriwm Comment., vil. pp. 42-44, Gottingen, 1808. Fora few approximate geometrical solutions, see Leybourn’s Math. Repository, vi. pp. 151-154; Grunert’s Archiv, xii. p. 98, xlix. p. 3; Mieuw Archicf v. Wisk., iv. pp. 200-204. For experimental determinations of 3, dependent on the theory of prob- ability, see Mess. of Math., ii. pp. 118, 119; Casopis pro pitstovdnt math. a fys., X. pp. 272-275; Analyst, ix. p. 176. (T. MU.)

SQUASH (Cucurbita Melopepo). See Gourn.

SQUILL, the name under which the bulbous root of Urginea maritima, Baker, is used in medicine. The plant was formerly placed in the genus Scilla, from which it has been separated because the seeds are flat and discoid in- stead of triquetrous, as in the latter genus. The name of “squill” is also applied by gardeners to the various.species of Scilla. The medicinal squill is a native of the countries bordering the Mediterranean, and grows from the sea-level up to aa elevation of 3000 feet. The bulbs are globular and of large size, often weighing more than 4 fb. Two varieties are met with, the one having white and the other pink scales. They are collected in August, when they are leafless, the membranous outer scales being removed and the fleshy portion cut transversely into slices and dried in the sun. These are then packed in casks for exportation. They are chiefly

imported into the United Kingdom from Malta. When reduced to powder and exposed to the air the drug rapidly absorbs moisture and cakes together into ahard mass. Squill has been used in medicine from a very early period. The ancient Greek physicians pre- scribed it with vinegar and honey almost in the same manner as it is used at present. Its medicinal properties are expectorant and diuretic. It is chiefly prescribed in bronchitis when the phlegm is tenacious and expectorated with difficulty, and in cardiac dropsy. When given in large doses it acts as an irritant poison, and its use is therefore contra-indicated in active inflammatory conditions of the mucous membrane or of the kidneys. The fresh bulb rubbed on the skin causes redness and irritation, due in part to the presence of minute crystals of oxalate of calcium.

The aetivity of the drug appears to be due to the active principles, scillipicrin, scillitoxin, and scillin, which were first obtained by Merck in 1878. The first has a bitter and burning taste, powerfully uritating the mucous membrane of the nose. It is soluble in alcohol and ether and partly in alkalis, but insoluble in water ; if mixed with sugar it dissolves readily and can then be absorbed if Injected subeutaneously. Scillitoxin is hygroscopie, very soluble m water, and has a bitter taste. These two principles have an action on the heart resembling that of Digitalis; in large doses the former stops its action in systole and the latter in diastole. Scillin 18 crystalline, tasteless, and soluble in alcohol, though only with difficulty in water. It is present only in very small quantity in squill, and appears to be the cause of the subsidiary effects of that drug, such as vomiting, &c.

An allied species, Urginea indica, Baker, is used in India in the same manner as the European species. The true squills are repre- sented in Great Britain by two species, Scilla autwmnalis and S. verna. The former has a racemose inflorescence ; the latter has the flowers arranged in a corymbose manner, and is confined to the sea- Coast. Several species are cultivated in gardens, S. bifolia and 8. sibiriea being remarkable for their beautiful blue flowers, which are produced in early spring. The name of Chinese squill is applied by

gardeners to Barnardia scilloides and that of Roman squill to species of Bellevalia. :

SQUINT. See OpHrHatmotoey, vol. xvii. p. 785. SQUIRREL. In the article MarMor (vol. xv. p. 559) an account was given of the three genera forming the Ce ‘ See “‘ Ueber die Zahl +,” in Math. Annalen, xx. p. 213. * Nouv. Annales, 8d ser., ii. p. 5.

Arctomyina, or Marmot sub-family of the large family Sciuridx, and in the present article the members of the other and more typical sub-family, the Sciwrina, are noticed. The systematic position of the Sciwride as a whole and their relations to other rodents are shown in the article Mammatta (vol. xv. p. 418); so it is merely with the component genera of the group that we now have to deal.

Of the Scitwrina six genera are commonly recognized, the first being the typical one, Sciwrus, in which the common English squirrel is included. The characters of the genus are—form slender and agile; tail long and bushy; ears generally well developed, pointed, often tufted ; feet adapted for climbing, the anterior pair with four toes and a rudimentary thumb, and the posterior pair with five toes, all the toes having long, curved, and sharp-pointed claws; mamme from four to six in number ; skull (see fig. 1) lightly built, very similar in

Fie, 1.—Skull of Sciwrus bicolor; natural size.

shape throughout the genus; post-orbital processes long and curved ; incisors narrow and compressed ; premolars either one or two above and one below; when two are present above, the anterior one is quite minute and very different from the corresponding tooth in the marmots ; molars three on each side above and below.

True squirrels are found throughout the greater part of the tropical and temperate regions of both hemispheres, although they are absent both from Madagascar and the Australian region. The species are both largest and most numerous in the tropics, and reach their greatest develop- ment in the Malay parts of the Oriental region.

Squirrels vary in size from animals no larger than a mouse, such as Sciurus soricinus of Borneo, or S. minu- tus of West Africa, to others as large as a cat, such as the black and yellow S. bicolor of Malaysia (see fig. 1). The very large squirrels, as might be expected from their heavier build, are somewhat less strictly arboreal in their habits than the smaller ones, of which the common English species may be looked upon as typical. The Common Squirrel, S. vulgaris, whose general habits are too well known to need special description, ranges over the whole of the Palearctic region, from Ireland to Japan, from Lapland to North Italy ; but specimens from different parts of this wide range differ so much in colour as to have been often looked upon as different species. Thus, while the common squirrels of north and west Europe are of the bright red colour we are accustomed to see in England, those of the mountainous regions of southern Europe are nearly always of a deep blackish grey ; those from Siberia again are a clear pale grey colour, with scarcely a tinge of rufous. These last supply the squirrel fur used for lining cloaks. The pairing time of the squirrel is from February to April, and after a period of gestation of about thirty days it brings forth from three to nine young. In addition to all sorts of vegetables and fruits the squirrel is exceedingly fond of animal food, greedily devouring mice, small birds, and eggs.

Although the English squirrel is a most beautiful little

animal, it is far surpassed by many of the tropical mem- bers of the group, and especially by those of the Malayan region, where nearly all the numerous species are bril- liantly marked, and many are ornamented with variously coloured longitudinal stripes along their bodies. One of the commonest and best known of the striped species is the little Indian Palm Squirrel (S. palmarum), which in large numbers runs about every Indian village. Another Oriental species (S. caniceps) presents almost the only known instance among mammals of the temporary assump- tion during the breeding season of a distinctly ornamental coat, corresponding to the breeding plumage of birds. For the greater part of the year the animal is of a uniform grey colour, but about December its back becomes a brilliant orange-yellow, which lasts until about March, when it is again replaced by

grey. The squirrel shown in fig. 2 is a native of Burmah and Tenasserim, and is

WSs SSS %

Nt

iM 9

Fie. 2.—Burmese squirrel.

closely allied to S. caniceps, but goes through no seasonal change of colour.

The number of species in the genus Sciwrus is about 75, of which 3 belong to the Palearctic, 15 to the Ethiopian, about 40 to the Oriental, and 16 to the combined Nearctic and Neotropical regions.

Genus Rheithrosciurus.

A single very striking species of squirrel, confined to Borneo, and as yet only known from three or four examples, has been separated generically under the above name. The ae shape of its skull is very different from that of other squirrels; but its most peculiar characteristic is the presence of from seven to ten minute parallel vertical grooves running down the front face of its incisors, both above and below, no other squirrel having really grooved incisors at all, and no other member of the whole order of rodents incisor grooves resembling these. Its premolars only number }, and its molars are stmpler and less ridged than in the other genera. This squirrel (2h. macrotis) is a magnificent animal, far larger than the English species, with an enormously long bushy tail, long tufted ears, and black and white bands down its sides.

Genus Xerus.

Fur coarse and spiny. Claws long and comparatively straight. Ear-conches minute or entirely absent. Skull with the post-orbital processes short and directed backwards, the bony palate prolonged considerably behind the tooth-row, and the external ridge on the

front face of the anterior zygoma-root more developed, and con- tinued much further upwards, than in Sciurws. Premolars ?; molars as in Sctwrus. This genus contains four well-marked species, known as Spiny Squirrels, all natives of Africa. They are terrestrial in their habits, living in burrows which they dig for themselves, X. getulus, a striped species of North Africa, has much the size and appearance of the Indian palm squirrel ; the others are all a little larger than the English squirrel.

Genus Tamias.

The members of this genus are characterized by the possession of internal cheek-pouches, and by their style of coloration, all being ornamented on the back with alternate bands of light and dark colour. Their skulls are slenderer and lighter than those of the true squirrels, from which they differ in several unimportant details. There is only one functional premolar,—the small anterior one usually found in Seiwrus being either absent altogether or quite small and functionless. There are four species, all found in North America, one extending also through Siberia into eastern Europe. They are known in America as ‘‘ Chipmunks,” and are among the commonest and best known of the indigenous rodents. The members of this group seem rather to lead into the genus Spermo- philus (see MarMor) of the sub-family Arctomyina, so that the division of the Scetwride into two sub-families, although very con- venient for classification and description, is rather of an artificial nature, there being no well-defined line of scparation between them.

Genera Pteromys and Sciuropterus.

The Flying Squirrels, although they cannot fly in the true sense of the word, can yet float through the air for considerable distances by the aid of an extension of skin connecting their fore and hind limbs, and forming a sort of parachute. This parachute is merely a lateral extension of the ordinary skin of the body, which passes outwards between the limbs and terminates at the wrists and ankles. In addition to the lateral membrane there is a narrow and in- conspicuous one passing from the cheek along the front of the shoulder to the front of the wrist, and another—at least in the larger species—stretching across behind the body from ankle to ankle and

involving the base of the tail. he flying squirrels are divided into two genera, of which Pteromys contains the larger and Scturopterus the smaller species. The two differ in certain details of dentition, and in the greater development in the former of the expanded membranes, especially of the ‘‘interfemoral ” or posterior membrane, which is in the latter almost wholly absent. In Pteromys the tail is cylindrical and comparatively thin, while in Sciwropterus it is broad, flat, and laterally expanded, and evidently compensates for the absence of the interfemoral membrane by acting as a supplementary parachute. In appearance flying squirrels resemble the non-flying forms, although they are even more beau: tifully coloured than the latter. Their habits, food, &c., are also very similar to those of the true squirrels, except that they are more decidedly nocturnal, and are therefore less often seen by the ordinary observer. Their method of leaping from tree to tree and floating long distances on their extended parachutes is precisely similar to that of the flying phalangers of Australia, a graphic description of which is quoted in PHALANGER (vol. xviii. p. 729). Of each of the two genera there are about thirteen or fourteen species, all natives of the Oriental region, except that one of Sciwropterus is found in North America, and another in Siberia and eastern Europe,—the latter, the Secwrus volans of Linneus’s Systema Nature, being the first flying squirrel that was known to European naturalists. (0.

SRINAGAR. See Kasumir, vol. xiv. p. 11.

SRIRANGAM, or SrrmncHam, a town of India, in Trichinopoli district, Madras presidency, situated in 10° 51°50” N, lat. and 78° 43’ 55” E. long., 2 miles north of Trichinopoli city and almost in the centre of the island of Srirangam. The island is formed by the bifurcation of the river Kaveri (Cauvery) and by the channel of the Colerun. The town is celebrated for its great temple dedicated to Vishnu, composed of seven square enclosures, 350 feet distant from each other. Each enclosure has four gates with high towers, placed one in the centre of each side opposite to the four cardinal points. The outer wall of the temple is not less than 4 miles in circumference. From 1751 to 1755 the island and its pagodas were the object of frequent contests between the French and the British. Srirangam was constituted a municipality in 1871, and since then much has been done

to improve the place. In 1881 the population was 19,773 (9330 males and 10,443 females).

SRIRANGAPATAM. See SzRINGAPATAM.

-

ee

STA—STA

STAAL, MarcusrITE JEANNE CorpiER DrLauNay, BaronneE DE (1684-1750)—often called in history and literature Madame de Staal-Delaunay, to distinguish her more completely from Madame de Stael-Holstein—was born at Paris on May 30, 1684. Her father wasa painter named Cordier. He seems to have deserted her mother, whose name was Delaunay, and who made her daughter take that surname instead of Cordier. She was well-educated, and entered the household of the Duchesse du Maine at Sceaux, at first in no higher capacity than that of femme de chambre. She was, however, promoted before long to the office of amanuensis and (practically) companion to her mistress. Her literary talent soon manifested itself in the literary court of the duchess, who is said, but chiefly on the waiting lady's own authority, to have been not a little jealous of her attendant. Enough, however, is known of the duchess's imperious and capricious temper to make it improbable that her service was agreeable. Madame Delaunay, however, was a sufficiently devoted swvante, and in the affair: of the Cellamare conspiracy had to endure a visit to the Bastille, where she remained for two years. Even here, however, she represents herself as having made conquests, though she was far from beautiful. She returned on her liberation

to the service of the ducliess, refused, it is said, Dacier, the

widower of.a wife more famous than himself, and in 1735, being then more than fifty, married the Baron de Staal. She continued, however, to form part of the duchess's household. She died on June 16,1750. Her Memoirs appeared about five years later, and have often been reprinted, both separately and in collections of the memoirs of the 17th and 18th centuries,

to both of which the author belonged both in style and character. She has much of the frankness and seductive verve of Madame de Sévigné and her contemporaries, but a little alloyed with the sensibilité of a later time. It may be doubted whether she does not somewhat exaggerate the discomforts of her position and her sense of them. But her book is an ex- tremely aniusing one to read, as well as not a little instruc- tive. The humours of the "court of Sceaux" are depicted as hardly any other society of the kind has ever been. Besides her Memoirs Madame de Staal left two comedies and some letters, the answers to which are in some cases extant, and show, as well as the references of contemporaries, that the writer did not exaggerate her power of attracting men.

STADE, a small commercial town in the province of Hanover, Prussia, is situated on the navigable Schwinge, 3} miles above its confluence with the Elbe, and 20 miles to the north-west of Hamburg. It carries on a number of small manufactures and has some shipping trade, chiefly with Hamburg, but the rise of Harburg has deposed it from its former position as the chief port of Hanover. There are several brickfields in the neighbourhood, and deposits. of gypsum and salt. The fortifications, erected in 1755 and strengthened in 1816, began to be demolished in 1882. Population in 1885, 10,003.

According to the legend, Stade was the oldest town of the Saxons and was built in 321 B.c. Historically it cannot be traced farther back than the 10th century, when it was the capital of a line of counts. In the 12th century it passed to the archbishopric

of Bremen. Subsequently entering the Hanseatic League, it rose to some commercial importance.! In 1648 Stade became the eS

1 The Stade Elbe-dues (Stader Elbezoll) were an ancient impost upon all goods carried up the Elbe, and were levied at the village of Bruns- hausen, at the mouth of the Schwinge. The tax was abolished in 1267 by the Hanseatic League, but it was revived by the Swedes in 1688, and confirmed by Hanover. The dues were fostered by the srowing trade of Hamburg, and in 1861, when they were redeemed (for £427,600) by the nations trading in the Elbe, the exchequer of Hanover was in the yearly receipt of about £45,000 from this source.

Hamburg and Great Britain each paid more than a third of the redemp- tion money,

capital of the principality of Bremen under the Swedes ; and in 1719 it was ceded to Hanover, the fate of which it has since shared. The Prussians occupied it without resistance in 1866. STAEL, MapameE pe (by her proper name and title Anne Louise GerMAInE NEcKER, BARONESS oF STAEL-HOLsTEIN), was born at Paris on April 22, 1766, and died there on July 14, 1817. Her father was the famous financier Necker, her mother Suzanne Curchod, who is almost equally famous as the early love of Gibbon, as the wife of Necker, as the mistress of one of the most popular salons of Paris, and as the mother of Madame de Stael. Between mother and daughter there was, however, little sympathy. Madame Necker, despite her talents, her beauty, and her fondness for philosophe society, was strictly decorous, somewhat reserved, and disposed to carry out in her daughter's case the rigorous discipline of her own childhood. The future Madame de Stael was from her earliest years a romp, a coquette, and passionately desirous of prominence and attention. There seems more- over to have been a sort of rivalry between mother and daughter for the chief place in Necker's affections, and it is not probable that the daughter's love for her mother was increased by the consciousness of her own inferiority in personal charms. Madame Necker, if her portraits as well as verbal descriptions may be trusted, was of a most refined though somewhat lackadaisical style of beauty, while her daughter was a plain child and a plainer woman, whose sole attractions were large and striking eyes and a buxom figure. She was, however, a child of unusual intellectual power, and she began very early to write though not to publish. She is said to have written her father a letter on his famous Compte-Rendu and other inatters when she was not fifteen, and to have injured her health by excessive study and intellectual excitement. But in reading all the accounts of Madame de Stael's life which come from herself or her intimate friends it must be carefully remembered that she was the most dis- tinguished and characteristic product of the period of sensibilité—the singular fashion of ultra-sentiment which required that both men and women, but especially women, should be always palpitating with excitement, steeped in melancholy, or dissolved in tears. Still, there is no

doubt that her father's dismissal from the ministry, which followed the presentation of the Compte, and the con- sequent removal of the family from the busy life of Paris, were beneficial to her. During part of the next few years they resided at Coppet, her father's estate on the Lake of Geneva, which she herself made famous, But other parts were spent in travelling about, chiefly in the south of France. They returned to Paris, or at least to its neigh- bourhood, in 1785, and Mademoiselle Necker resumed literary work of a miscellaneous kind, including two plays, Sophie and Jane G'rey, which were printed sooner or later. It became, however, a question of marrying her. Her want of beauty was compensated by her fortune, for she was the only child of one of the richest bankers in Europe. But her parents are said to have objected to her marrying a Roman Catholic, which, in France, consider- ably limited her choice. There is a legend that William Pitt the younger thought of her; the somewhat notorious lover of Mademoiselle de Lespinasse, Guibert, a cold- hearted coxcomb of some talent, certainly paid her addresses. But she finally married Eric Magnus, Baron of Stael-Holstein, who was first an attaché of the Swedish legation, and then minister. For a great heiress and a very ambitious girl the marriage scarcely seemed brilliant, for Stael had no fortune and no very great personal dis- tinction. A singular series of negotiations, however, secured from the king of Sweden a promise of the ambassadorship for twelve years and a pension in case of

,

its withdrawal, and the marriage took place on January 14,1786. The husband was thirty-seven, the wife twenty. Madame de Stael was accused of extravagance, and latterly an amicable separation of goods had to be effected between the pair. But this was a mere legal formality, and on the whole the marriage seems to have met the views of both parties, neither of whom had any affection for the other. They had three children ; there was no scandal between them ; the baron obtained money and the lady obtained, as a guaranteed ambassadress of a foreign power of con- sideration, a much higher position at court and in society than she could have secured by marrying almost any Frenchman, without the inconveniences which might

have been expected had she married a Frenchman superior to herself inrank. The particular fancy of Marie Antoinette for Sweden, caused by the fantastic devotion of Count Fersen and the king himself to her, secured moreover a reception which might have been otherwise difficult to gain. Madame de Stael was not a persona grata at court, but she seems to have played the part of ambassadress, as she played most parts, ina rather noisy and exaggerated manner, but not ill. Then in 1788 she appeared as an author under her own name (Sophie had been already published, but anonymously) with some Lettres sur J. J. fousseau, a fervid panegyric showing a good deal of talent but no power of criticism. She was at this time, and indeed generally, enthusiastic for a mixture of Rousseauism and constitutionalism in politics, and her father's restora- tion to power excited extravagant hopes in her, though Necker himself knew better. She exulted more than ever in the meeting of the states-general, and most of all when her father, after being driven to Brussels by a state intrigue, was once more recalled and triumphally escorted into Paris. Every one knows what followed. Her first child, a boy, was born the week before Necker finally left France in unpopularity and disgrace ; and the increasing disturbances of the Revolution made her privileges as ambassadress no mere matters of ornamental distinction gratifying to vanity, but very important safeguards. She visited Coppet once or twice, but for the most part in the early days of the revolutionary period she was in Paris taking an interest and, as she thought, a part in the councils and efforts of the Moderates. At last, the day before the September massacres, she fled, befriended by Manuel and Tallien. Her own account of her escape is, as usual, so florid that it provokes the question whether she was really in any danger. Directly it does not seem that she was; but she had generously strained the privi- leges of the embassy to protect some threatened friends, and this was a serious matter,

She. betook herself to Coppet, and there gathered round her a considerable number of friends and fellow- refugees, the beginning of the quasi-court which at inter- vals during the next five-and-twenty years made the place so famous. In 1793, however, she made a visit of some length to England, and established herself at Mickleham in Surrey as the centre of the Moderate Liberal emigrants, —Talleyrand, Narbonne, Jaucourt, Guibert, and others. There was not a little scandal about her relations with Narbonne; and it is

very much to be doubted whether this can safely be set down, as her panegyrists usually set it, to the mere spite of the first or royalist emigrants, to whom she and her party were almost more obnoxious than the Jacobins. It is certain that this Mickleham sojourn (the details of which are known from, among other sources, the letters of Fanny Burney) has never been altogether satisfactorily accounted for. In the summer she returned to Coppet and wrote a pamphlet on the queen's execution. The next year her mother died, and the fall of Robespierre opened the way back to Paris. M. de Stael (whose mis-

sion had been in abeyance and himself in Holland for three years) was accredited to the French republic by the regent of Sweden; his wife reopened her salon and fora time was conspicuous in the motley and eccentric society of the Directory. She also published several small works, the chief being an essay De I''Injfluwence des Passions (1796), and another De la Littérature Considérée dans ses Hapports avec les Institutions Sociales (1800). It was during these years that Madame de Stael was of chief political importance. Narbonne's place had been supplied by Benjamin Constant, who had a very great influence over her, as in return she had over him. During the Directory she had some real and more imaginary power as a politician, and both personal and political reasons threw her into opposition to Bonaparte. Her own pre- ference for a moderate republic or a constitutional mon- archy was quite sincere, and, even if it had not been so, her own character and Napoleon's were too much alike in some points to admit of their getting on together. For some years, however, she was able to alternate between Coppet and Paris without difficulty, though not without knowing that the First Consul disliked her. In 1797 she, as above mentioned, separated formally from her husband. In 1799 he was recalled by the king of Sweden, and in 1802 he died duly attended by her. Besides the eldest son Auguste Louis, they had two other children,—a son Albert, and a daughter Albertine, who afterwards became the Duchesse de Broglie.

The exact date of the beginning of what Madame de Stael's admirers call her duel with Napoleon is not easy to determine. Judging from the title of

her book Diz Années d’Hxil, it should be put at 1804; judging from the time at which it became pretty clear that the first man in France and she who wished to be the first woman in France were not likely to get on together, it might be put several years earlier. ‘The whole question of this duel, however (marked as it was by Napoleon’s unscrupu- lous exercises of power, which reached a climax in the suppression of the De l’Allemagne after it had been carefully submitted to his censorship), requires considera- tion from the point of view of common sense. It dis- pleased Napoleon no doubt that Madame de Stael should show herself recalcitrant to his influence. But it prob- ably pleased Madame de Stael to quite an equal degree that Napoleon should apparently put forth his power to crush her and fail. Both personages had the curious touch of charlatanerie so common in the late 18th century, and ‘‘made believe” in a fashion bewildering and a little incredible to posterity. If Madame de Stael had really desired to take up her parable against Napoleon seriously, she need only have established herself in England at the peace of Amiens and have lived quietly there. She did nothing of the kind. She lingered on at Coppet, con- stantly hankering after Paris, and acknowledging the hankering quite honestly. In 1802 she published the ~ first of her really noteworthy books, the novel of Delphine, in which the “femme incomprise” was in a manner intro- duced to French literature, and in which she herself and not a few of her intimates appeared in transparent dis- guise. In the autumn of 1803 she returned to Paris. Whether, if she had not displayed such extraordinary anxiety not to be exiled, Napoleon would have exiled her remains a question; but, as she began at once appealing to all sorts of persons to protect her, he seems to have thought it better that she should not be protected. She was directed not to reside within forty leagues of Paris, and after considerable delay she determined to go to Germany. She journeyed by Metz and Frankfort to Weimar, and arrived there in December. There she stayed during the winter, and then went to Berlin, where she

od

Sater LL

made the acquaintance of August Wilhelm Schlegel, who afterwards became one of her intimates at Ceppet. Thence she travelled to Vienna,

where, in April, the news of her father's dangerous illness and shortly of his death (April 8) reached her. She returned to Coppet, and found her- self its wealthy and independent mistress, but her sorrow for her father was deep and certainly sincere. She spent the summer at the chateau with a brilliant company ; in the autumn she journeyed to Italy accompanied by Schlegel and Sismondi, and there gathered the materials of her most famous work, Corinne. She returned in the summer of 1805, and spent nearly a year in writing Corinne ; in 1806 she broke the decree of exile and lived for a time undisturbed near Paris. In 1807 Corinne, the first esthetic romance not written in German, appeared. It is in fact, what it was described as being at the time of its appearance, ''a picturesque tour couched in the form ofa novel." The publication was taken as a reminder of her existence, and the police of the empire sent her back to Coppet. She stayed there as usual for the summer, and then set out once more for Germany, visiting Mainz, Frankfort, Berlin, and Vienna. She was again at Coppet in the summer of 1808, and set to work at her book De PAllemagne, It took her nearly the whole of the next two years, during which she did not travel much or far from her own house. She had bought property in America and thought of moving thither, but chance or fatality made her determine to publish De (Allemagne in Paris. The submission to censorship which this entailed was sufficiently inconsistent, and she wrote to the emperor one of the unfortunate letters, at once undignified and provok- ing, of which she had the secret. A man less tyrannical or less mean-spirited than Napoleon would of course have let her alone, but Napoleon was Napoleon, and she perfectly well knew him. The reply to her letter was the condemna- tion of the whole edition of her book (ten thousand copies) as "not French," and her own exile, not as before to a certain distance from Paris, but from France altogether. The act was unquestionably one of odious tyranny, but it is impossible not to ask why she had put herself within reach of it when her fortune enabled her to reside any- where and to publish what she pleased. She retired once more to Coppet, where slie was not at first interfered with, and she found consolation in a young officer of Swiss origin named Rocca, twenty-three years her junior, whom she married privately in 1811. The intimacy of their relations

could escape no one at Coppet, but the fact of the marriage.

was not certainly known till after her death.

The operations of the imperial police in regard to Madame de Stael are rather obscure. She was at first left undisturbed, but by degrees the chateau itself became taboo, and her visitors found themselves punished heavily. Mathieu de Montmorency and Madame Récamier were exiled for the crime of seeing her; and she at last began to think of doing what she ought to have done years before and withdrawing herself entirely from Napoleon's Sphere. In the complete subjection of the Continent which preceded the Russian War this was not so easy as it would have been earlier, and she remained at home during the winter of 1811, writing and planning. On May 23 she left Coppet almost secretly, and journeyed y Bern, Innsbruck, and Salzburg to Vienna. There she obtained an Austrian passport to the frontier, and after some fears and trouble, receiving a Russian passport in Galicia, she at last escaped from the dungeon of Napo- leonic Europe, swearing never to return thither. It Seemed likely that the proclamation of war between oa and Russia, on June 22, would help her to keep

3 vow.

She journeyed slowly though Russia and Finland to

44]

Sweden, making some stay at St Petersburg, spent the winter in Stockholm, and then set out for England. Here she received a brilliant reception and was much lionized during the season of 1813. She published De Allemagne (a book much more really remarkable than Corinne) in the autumn, was saddened by the death of her second son Albert, who had entered the Swedish army and fell in a duel brought on by gambling, under- took her Considérations sur la Révolution Francaise, and when Louis XVIII. had been restored returned to Paris, Both in the summer and in the winter of 1814 she visited Coppet, and was meanwhile a prominent figure in Parisian society. She was in Paris when the news of Napoleon's landing arrived and at once fled to Coppet, but a singular story, much discussed, is current of her having approved Napoleon's return, There is no direct evidence of it, but the conduct of her close ally Constant may be quoted in its support, and it is certain that she had no affection for the Bourbons. In October, after

Waterloo, she set out for Italy, not only for the advantage of her own health but for that of her second husband, Rocca, who was dying of consumption. Her daughter married Duke Victor de Broglie on February 20, 1816, at Pisa, and became the wife and mother of French statesmen of distinction. The whole family returned to Coppet in June, and Byron now frequently visited Madame de Stael there. He had quizzed her a good deal in London, but liked her better in her own house, though even there he noticed her constant straining to be something different from herself. Despite her increasing ill-health she returned to Paris for the winter of 1816-17, and her salon was much frequented. But in March she is spoken of as “dying,” and she had already become confined to her room, if not to her bed. She died on the 14th of July, and Rocca survived her little more than six months. Nor was her eldest son long- lived. After editing a collected edition of his mother’s works he died at the age of thirty-seven in 1827.

Madame de Stael occupies a singular position in French liter- ature. The men of her own time exalted her to the skies, and the most extravagant estimates of her (as “the greatest woman in literary history,” as the ‘‘foundress of the romantic movement,” as representing ‘‘ideas,” while her contemporary Chateaubriand only represented words, colours, and images, and so forth) are to be found in those histories of literature which faithfully repeat second- hand and traditional opinions. On the other hand, it is acknow- ledged that she is now very little read. Sainte-Beuve, who professes a “‘culte” for her, and who has treated her at great length and with much indulgence ; M. Scherer, a compatriot and co-religionist, whois strongly prejudiced in her favour ; Doudan, a kind of literary retainer of her connexions,—all allow this, and any one who speaks with an intimate knowledge of current French literature must agree that since they spoke neglect of her has increased. No writer of such eminence is so rarely quoted ; none is so entirely destitute of that tribute of new and splendid editions which France pays to her favourite classics more lavishly than any other nation ; none is so seldom the subject of a literary causeric. The abundant docu- ments in the hands of her descendants, the families of Broglie and Haussonville, have indeed fnrnished material for papers recently, but these are almost wholly on the social aspect of Madame de Stael, not on her literary merit. Nor when the life and works come to be examined independently is the neglect seen to be without excuse. ,An ugly coquctte,

an old woman who made a ridiculous marriage, a blue-stocking who spent much of her time in pestering men of genius, and drawing from them sarcastic comment behind her back,—these things arc not attractive. Hcr books are seen to be in large part merely clever reflexions of other people's views, or views current at the time, and the famous ''ideas" turn out to be chiefly the ideas of the books or the men with whom she was from time to time in contact. The sentimentality of her sentiment and the florid magniloquence of her style equally disgnst the reader ; and, when it is suggested to him that the revolution of taste and manners hurts novels more than anything else, he is tempted to reply that it has not hurt Don Quéxote, or Gil Blas, or Lobinson Crusoe, or Tom Jones, or Manon Lescaut, or The Antiquary, and that if it has hurt Corinne it is simply because these are great books and Corinne is not a great book. There is truth in this, but to state it alone would be in the highest degree unfair. Madame de Stael's faults are great ; her style is of an age not for

eR — <6

See vol. Eclis Plate Vall,

all time; her ideas are mostly second-hand and frequently super- ficial, But nothing save a very great talent could have shown itself so receptive. Take away her assiduous frequentation of society, from the later phtlosophe coteries to the age of Byron,—take away the influence of Constant and Schlegel and her other literary friends,—and probably little of her will remain. But to have caught from all sides in this manuer the floating notions of society and of individuals, to reflect them with such vigour and clearness, to combine them with such not inconsiderable skill into connected books, is not anybody's task. Her two best books, Corinne and De lV' Allemagne, are in all probability almost wholly unoriginal, a little sentiment in the first and a little constitutionalism in the second being all that she can claim. But Corinne is still a very remarkable exposition of a certain kind of estheticism, and De l' Allemagne is still perhaps the most remarkable account of one country by a native and inhabitant of another which exists in literature. This praise, and it is very high praise, can be given to Madame de Stael. But the merits which it allows are not merits of

the class which secure readers for ever. Neither in style nor in thought was she of the first class or perhaps of the second ; and

besides thought and style nothing will save books.

Baron Auguste de Stael edited, as has been said, the complete works of his mother in seventeen volumes (Paris, 1820-1), and the, edition was afterwards re- published in a compacter form, and, supplemented by some uvres Inédites, is still obtainable in 3 vols. large 8vo (Didot). The Considérations and the Dix Années 'Exil had been published after Madame de Stacl's death. There is no recent reissue of the whole, and the minor works have not been reprinted, but Corinne, Delphine, and De l Allemagne are easily accessible in cheap and separate forms. Of recent works on Madame de Stael, or rather on Coppet and its society, those of MM. Caro and Othenin d'Haussonyille may be mentioned. In English there is an elaborate biography by A. Stevens (London, 1880), full of information, but unluckily not at all critical, (G. SA.)

STAFFORD, an inland county of England, is bounded on the §.E. by Warwickshire, 8. by Worcestershire, W. by Shropshire, N.W. by Cheshire, and E. by Derbyshire, just touching Leicestershire. It is of irregular outline, and has been likened to an elongated and compressed pear, somewhat tapering at both ends. Its greatest length from north to south is 53 miles, and its greatest breadth is 35 miles. The area is 748,433 acres—about 1170 square miles.

Surface and Geology.—Although the general aspect of the county is that of a plain, it has been pronounced "rather a subalpine or hilly district"; but its highest hill, Axe Edge, is only 1756 feet above the level of the sea. In the north the land is undulating and very picturesque ; the hills here are the loftiest in the county, as Axe Edge, Cloud Thorpe, Mow Cop, and other hillocks and mounds called "edges." These are mostly composed of millstone grit. In the south we have sandstone, gravel, limestone, and basalt, represented respectively by Kinfare Edge, Barr and Cannock Chase, Sedgley, and Clent. The prin- cipal rivers are the Trent, the Tame, the Sow, the Penk, the Stour, the Blythe, the Tern, the Churnet, the Lyme, the Smestow, and the Manyfold ; of these the Trent is the most important. The Severn has a short part of its course within the county, traversing the coal-

field at Arley. The Dove separates Staffordshire from Derby- shire. Several of the rivers are well supplied with fish.

Geologically the county is included in the New Red Sandstone district of England, and is of the Carboniferous, Permian, and Triassic systems of formation. It is rich in limestone and coal. According to Mr Garner (Natural History of the County of Stafford), the following is a sum- mary of its geological characters :—the Polley coal-field occupies 51 square miles; the South Staffordshire coal- field (excluding about 11 miles of it situated in other counties), 65; the Silurian limestone, &c., in the south of the county, 16; the Rowley basalt, 1; the Clent basalt, 2; the Arley coal-field, basalt, cornstone, &c., 7; the mountain limestone, 40; the Cheadle coal-field, 18; the Chiddleton coal-field, 1; the Meerbrook coal-field, 4; the millstone grit, 100 ; the New Red Sandstone (marl, gravel, rock, sand, and peat), 825.

The county is very rich in fossils. In the coal, the limestone, and the Silurian deposits the remains of marine animals and plants are especially numerous. The museums in several towns have good collections of corals, calamites,

Ss T A—

et A

and ferns ; and probably the finest examples of trilobites and encrinites have been found in this part of England. The teeth of the Megalichthys have been found in the coal strata, and the Dudley museum contains a specimen of A. hibberti, nearly entire. The county is very rich in mineral productions. In a single year 12,000,000 tons of coal and 1,173,866 tons of iron have been obtained. The greatest quantity of iron is raised in the north and of coal in the south. Of the places at which the various products are found may be named—Birch Hills for anthra- cite coal; Hanley Green for peacock coal; Longton for cannel coal; Wednesbury for hematite iron ore ; Langley Close for grey marble; the Rowley Hills for basalt. At Bilston casting sand, at Kingswinford fire-clay and fire bricks, at Tutbury alabaster, at Powke Hull black marble, and at Hemley Green red ochre are produced. In December 1885 an important discovery of coal was made near Dudley. Mr 8. Blewitt has driven from tlie Grace Mary pits about 250 yards towards the Ivy House estate, through the igneous rocks, and come upon a large area of

the best hard coal, about thirty feet in thickness, and some thirty acres in area.

Climate and Agriculture.—As regards climate the county shares the characteristics common to the midland district of England. Agriculture, though not its distinctive feature, forms a very import- ant item in the industry and wealth of Staffordshire. The returns for 1886 furnish the following report: in corn crops there were 94,273 acres ; roots, artificial grasses, &c., 48,343; clover and grasses, 46, 832; permanent pasture, 412,566; fallow, 7203; orchards, 1188; market gardens, 866; nursery grounds, 233; woods and plantations, 34,91L From the same returns we learn that tle number of horses em- ployed in agriculture was 16,031; unbroken horses and brood mares, 7802; cows in milk or in calf, 74,868; cattle under two years old, 56,224; two years and upward, 25,922; one-year-old sheep, 142,955; sheep under one year, 106,950; and pigs, 48,569. The total number of proprietors in the county was returned in 1873 as 43,371, possessing 638,084 acres, producing an annual rental of £3,630,254. The estimated extent of waste or common land was 7809 acres. Of the owners 38,672 owned less than one acre each, Eight proprietors were owners of more than 10,000 acres each, viz., Earl of Lichfield, 21,433; Earl of Shrewsbury, 18,954; Lord Hatherton, 14,901; Marquis of Anglesey, 14,344; Sir J. H. Crewe, 14,256; Duke of Sutherland, 12,744; Lord Bagot, 10,993; Sir T. F, F. Boughey, 10,505.

Manufactures.—The manufactures of Staffordshire are of a very varied character. Almost everything which is made of iron is manufactured in one town or another; and it would only be tedious to enumerate the almost infinite variety of goods produced. Wolverhampton and Willenhall are famous for locks, Cradley for nails, Oldbury for railway carriages, Walsall for spurs, bits, and saddlery, Tipton for anchors, Smethwick for glass, Soho for steam engines and hydraulic jacks, Wednesfield for keys, Bilston for tinplate wares, and Bloxwich for bits, Thanks to the labours of Josiah Wedgwood and Flaxman, the pottery work of Stafford- shire ranks among the most famous manufactures of the kingdom, and Etruria is a household word wherever the admirable and artistic Wedgwood ware is known. The ale produced at Burton- on-Trent finds a market in almost every civilized country in the world, and in some that can scarcely be so described.

Communication.—The county is admirably provided with rail- ways, canals, and tramways. The main roads are excellent, and are well maintained and kept in capital condition.

Administration and Population.—The population in 1861 was 746,948; in 1871 858,326; and in 1881 981,013 (males 492,009, females 489,004), an average of 1°31 persons to an acre. Stafford- shire is in the Oxford circuit, and is nearly all in the diocese of Lichfield. The seat of the bishopric and the will courts are at Lichfield. The assize town is Stafford. There are five hundreds, each having two divisions :—North Totmonslow (Leek) and South Totmonslow (Cheadle), North Pirehill (Potteries) and South Pirehill (Stone), North Offlow (Burton-on-Trent) and South Offlow (Walsall), East Cuttlestone (Rugeley) and West Cuttlestone (Gnosall), North Seisdon (Sedgley) and South Seisdon (Kinfare). The county has one court of quarter sessions, and is divided into twenty-two petty and special sessional divisions; and there are 247 civil parishes and sixteen poor law unions. The municipal boroughs number twelve: —Bursleni, population 26,522; Burton-on-Trent (partly in Derby- shire), 39,288; Hanley, 48,361; Lichfield, 8349 ; Longton, 18,620; Newcastle-under-Lyme,. 17,508; Stafford, 19,977; Stoke-on-Trent, 19,261 ; Tamworth (partly in Warwickshire), 4891; Walsall 58,795 5 West Bromwich, 56,295 ; Wolverhampton, 75,766.

Sa Ar On D

By the Redistribution of Seats Act, 1885, the parliamentary representation of Staffordshire was arranged as follows:—seven boroughs each returning one member, oue borough returning three, and seven county divisions with one member to each,—making seventeen meinbers for the whole county. The county divisions are named respectively Burton, Handsworth, Kingswinford, Leek, Lichfield, North-West, and West. The following is a list of the boroughs, with populations given by or based on the census of 1881 :— Wolverhampton (three members), 164,332; Hanley, 75,912; Newcastle-under-Lyme, 49,293; Stafford, 19,977; Stoke-on-Trent, 64,091; Walsall, 59,402; Wednesbury, 68,142; West Bromwich,

56, 295.

History and Antiquities.—Much antiquarian learning has been employed in showing that Staffordshire was in early ante-Roman days famous for the presence and power of the Druids. Cannock Chase has been described as their headquarters in Britain; and Barr Beacon has been generally accepted as one of their principal plaees of worship, of which Drood or Druid Heath by its name stil] preserves the tradition. At the time of Cssar's arrival in the island this part of England was peopled by tribes whom the Roman authors designate as Cornavii or Carnabii. The conquerors named the central part of the country, which included Stafford- shire, Flavia Cesariensis. Two of their most famous roads, Watling Street and Icknield Street, passed through the county, —the first-named from Fazeley through Wall (Htocetwm) to Wroxeter (Uriconiwm), and the Icknicld Street through Birming- ham to Wall, and by Burton-on-Trent to Derby. In Saxon times Staffordshire formed part of the great kingdom of Mercia, which was remarkable for the tenacity with which the people clung to their old faith and resisted the introduction of Christianity. 'The new faith, however, prevailed over paganism, and a cathedral was founded at Lichfield. Through the influence of Offa, Pope Adrian in 786 made the see an independent archbishopric, but this honour was only possessed for a short period. Mercia was frequently invaded by the Danes, and several battles were fought in Staffordshire, notably at Tettenhall and Wednesfield (Woden's Field), and a large number of Dancs settled in this part. So rapidly did they occupy the land that in 1016, when the Danish king Canute divided his conquests into four earldoms, Mercia was believed to have as many Danish as Saxon inhabitants. After the Norman Conquest the county was divided among the Conqueror's retainers, the barons De Torri, De Montgomery, Fitz-Ansculf, and De Ferrers coming in for the lion's share. Of after historical events the most noted are the defeat and execution of the earl of Lancaster by Edward IT. in 1322, and the battle at Blore Heath in 1459, in which the Yorkists were victorious over the Lancasterians. During the Civil War Lichfield cathedral was besieged in 1643, and Lord Brook was killed by a shot fired from the battlements of the great tower. Mary queen of Scots was imprisoned in Tutbury Castle from 1569 to 1572. In 1745 Charles Edward, the Young Pretender, in his attempt to win the crown of England, penetrated as far as Leek,

Early British remains exist in various parts of the county; and a large number of barrows have been opened in which human bones, urns, fibule, stone hammers, armlets, pins, pottery, and other articles have been found. In the neighbourhood of Wetton no fewer than twenty-three barrows have been opened, and British ornaments have been found in Needwood Forest. Several Roman eamps also exist in different parts. But of medimval times the chief legacy is the cathedral at Licurre.p (q.v.), one of the most beautiful in the kingdom. Of other interesting places the most worthy of notice are Beaudesert, Bentley Hall, Chillington, Dudley Castle, Enville Hall, Ingestre, Stafford Castle, Tamworth Castle, Tixall, and Wrottesley Hall. More modern mansions are Tlam all, Alton Towers, Shugborough, Patteshull, Keele Hall, and Trentham. Of famous personages belonging to the county are John Dudley (duke of N orthumberland), Cardinal Pole, Archbishop Sheldon, Col. John Lane, General Harrison, Lord Anson, Earl St Vineent, Izaak Walton, Dr Samuel J ohnson, David Garrick, Josiah Wedgwood, Miss Seward, Mary Howitt.

See Plot, Vatural History of Staffordshire, 1686; Erdeswick, Survey of Stafford- shire, 1717; Shaw, History and Antiquities of Staffordshire, 1798-1801; Pitt, Topographical History of Staffordshire, 1817; Garner, Natural History of the County of Stafford, 1844; Langford, Staffordshire and Warwickshire, 1874; and the publications of the Salt Archeological Society.

STAFFORD, a parliamentary and municipal borough of England, and the county town of Staffordshire, is situated on the left bank of the river Sow, almost in the heart of England. It is 123 miles from London and 29} from Birmingham, and is in the southern division of the hundred of Pirehill. The principal trades of the town are tanning and the manufacture of boots and shoes, more especially for ladies, The oldest church is that of St Chad, said to be originally of Saxon origin. It was formerly a large and beautiful church, with chancel, nave, aisles, transepts, and

a central tower, but has suffered severely from time, neglect, and rough treatment. Restoration was begun in 1855, and the operations led to the discovery of some fine interlacing Norman arches anda beautiful Norman archway with some rich sculptured work between the nave and tower.

These were restored in 1856 and a new roof was put on the chancel in memory of Izaak Walton. In 1874, the nave, arcades, and open-timbered roof were restored in memory of Mr Thomas Salt ; in 1874-75 the south aisle was rebuilt, and in 1884-85 the tower. The finest of the churches in Stafford is undoubtedly St Mary's, which was admirably restored in 1844-45 by Sir Gilbert Scott, at a cost of £30,000. It contains some good monuments, and seve- ral very fine memorial windows of stained glass. Other churches worthy of mention are Christ Church, St Paul's, and St Thomas's. The grammar school is a very old foundation, enlarged by Edward VI.; the present building was erected in 1862. The free library was opened in 1882, and is now fairly well supplied with books, The William Salt library contains a unique collection of books, deeds, autographs, engravings, and drawings relating to the county, collected by Mr Salt and presented by his widow. It contains some 7000 volumes, between 2000 and 3000 deeds, and more than 9000 drawings, auto- graphs, and valuable MSS., mostly relating to the history, topography, &c., of the county. The town also possesses a good museum, collected principally by Mr Clement L. Wragge, and called by his name ; specially interesting is its almost perfect collection of fossils. Stafford also contains a good school of art and a mechanics' institute. Other prominent buildings are the shire hall, in which the assizes and quarter sessions are held, and the borough hall; the latter contains the municipal offices, and also has a large hall for public meetings. Stafford is well supplied with charitable institutions, among which may be mentioned the general infirmary, built in 1766; the county lunatic asylum in 1818; and the Coton Hill institution for the insane in 1854, beautifully situated on rising ground, which commands extensive views of some of the loveliest country in the county, while its own grounds are tastefully laid out. The householders of Stafford formerly possessed the right of using some very extensive common land situated north of the town; in 1880, however, all that remained (134 acres) was enclosed, and is now held for the people by a committee of house- holders elected annually. A part of this land, called Stone Flat, is preserved as a public recreation ground. Of another common named Coton Field, consisting of about 180 acres, 70 acres were in 1884 transferred abso- lutely to the freemen, and have been divided into 401 garden allotments, which are let at a small rental to resident freemen or their widows. The parliamentary borough (area 774 acres, with population of 18,904 in 1881) was extended in 1885, and is now

identical with the municipal borough. The area of this is 1012 acres, and the population, 14,437 in 1871, was in 1881 19,977. The Act of 1885 reduced the parliamentary representation from two members to one.

Stafford was of considcrable importance before the Conquest. The site was at first known as Berteliney or Betheney, from the island on which the earliest houses were built. As the town grew its name was changed into that of Statford or Stadford. In

913 Ethelfleda, sister of Edward the Elder, erected a fortification here, generally called a castle, but doubtless one of those de-

‘fensive mounds which from their admirable positions were after-

wards selected by the Normans as the sites of their castles and strongholds, About a year and a half afterwards Edward the Elder built a tower, with walls and a fosse round it. Pennant says this was on the mount called Castle Hill by Speed. Stafford is mentioned in Domesday as a city paying £9 in customs. There © were 18 royal burgesses, and the earls of Mercia possessed twenty mansions. ‘The number of houses entered is 178. William built a castle on the old site, of which he appointed Robert de Torri

44-4

governor, who took the name De Stafford from that of the town, and was the originator of the great family of the Staffords. At this time it contained a royal mint ; some of the coins are still extant, bearing on the obverse the head and name of the king, and on the reverse ‘‘Godwinne on Staef.” Godwinne was the ‘‘king’s moneyer.” The castle of Robert de Torri was rebuilt by Ralph de Stafford in the reign of Edward III.; during the Civil War it was held for the Royalists by the earl of Northampton, but was taken for the Parliament by Sir William Brereton in May 1648. The castle was soon afterwards demolished by order of the Parliament. When fortified, Stafford had four gates. That on the south, near the river bridge, called the Green-gate, was taken down in 1780. The arch of the East-gate was standing a few years ago. The Gaol-gate was in ruins in 1680. The site of the fourth gate is unknown. King John confirmed and enlarged the privileges granted by the old charter. This was again confirmed by Edward

VI., and on August 6, 1575, Elizabeth visited the town. Stafford adopted the Local Government Act, 1858, on April 23, 1872; and in 1876 an Act was obtained for extending the borough boundaries. The corporation now consists of a mayor, eight aldermen, and twenty-four councillors.

STAG. See DEER.

STAHL, Grore Ernst (1660-1734), chemist, was born on 21st October 1660 at Ansbach, studied at Jena, and became court-physician to the duke of Weimar in 1687. In 1694 he was appointed professor of medicine in Halle and in 1716 physician to the king of Prussia. He died at Berlin on May 14, 1734. His Theoria Medica Vera appeared at Halle in 1707 (see MeEpicINE, vol. xv. p. 812), and his Lapervmenta et Observationes Chemice at Berlin in 1731 (see Cuumistry, vol. v. pp. 460-61).

STAIR, James Datrympie, First Viscount (1619- 1695), was born in May 1619 at Drummurchie in Ayrshire. He was descended from a family for several generations in- clined to the principles of the Reformation, and had ances- tors both on the father's and the mother's side amongst the Lollards of Kyle. His father James Dalrymple, laird of the small estate of Stair in Kyle, died when he was an infant ; his mother, Janet Kennedy of Knockdaw, is described as "a woman of excellent spirit," who took care to have him well educated. From the grammar school at Mauchline he went in 1633 to the university of Glasgow, where he graduated in artson July 26, 1637. Next year he went to Edinburgh, probably with the intention of studying law, but the troubles of the times then approaching a crisis led him to change his course, and we next find him serving in the earl of Glencairn's regiment in the war of the Covenant. What part he took in it is not certainly known, but he was in command of a troop when recalled in 1641 to compete for a regency (as a tutorship or professorship was then called) in the university of Glasgow. He was elected in March. Mathematics, logic, ethics, and politics were the chief subjects of his lectures, and a note- book on logic by one of his students has been preserved. His activity and skill in matters of college business were praised by his colleagues, who numbered amongst them some of the leading Covenanting divines, and his zeal in teaching was gratefully acknowledged by his students. After nearly seven years' service he resigned his regency, and removed to Edinburgh, where he

was admitted to the bar on February 17, 1648. This step had probably been rendered easier by his marriage four years before to Margaret Ross, co-heiress of Balneil in Wigtown. Stair's practice at the bar does not appear to have been large ; his talents lay rather in the direction of learning and business than of oratory or advocacy. His reputation and the confidence reposed in him were shown by his appoint- ment in 1649 as secretary to the commission sent to The Hague to treat with Charles II. by the parliament of Scotland. The negotiation having been broken off through the unwillingness of the young king to accept the terms of the Covenanters, Stair was again sent in the following year to Breda, where the failure of Montrose's expedition forced Charles to change his attitude, and to return to

Scotland as the covenanted king. Stair had preceded him, and met him on his landing in Aberdeenshire, probably carrying with him the news of the execution of Montrose, which he had witnessed. During the Commonwealth Stair continued to practise at the bar; but like most of his brethren he refused in 1654 to take the oath of allegiance to the Commonwealth and abjuration of royalty. Three years later, on the death of Lord Balcomie, Stair was appointed one of the commissioners for the administration of justice in Scotland on the recommendation of Monk. His appointment to the bench on Ist July 1657 by Monk was confirmed by Cromwell on the 26th. Stair's association with the English judges at this time must have enlarged his acquaintance with English law, as his travels had extended his knowledge of the civil law and the modern European systems which followed it. He thus acquired a singular advantage when he came to write on law, regarding it from a cosmopolitan or international rather than a merely local 'or national point of view. His actual discharge of judicial duty at this time was short, for after the death of Cromwell the courts in Scotland were shut,—a new commission issucd in 1660 not having taken effect, it being uncertain in whose name the commission ought to run. It was during this period that Stair became intimate with Monk, who is said to have been advised by him when he left Scotland to call a full and free parliament. Soon after the Restoration Stair went to London, where he was received with favour by Charles, knighted, and included in the new nomination of judges in the Court of Session on 13th February 1661. He was also put on various

important commissions, busied himself with local and agricultural affairs, and, like most of the Scottish judges of this anc the following century, acted with zest and credit the part of a good country gentleman. In 1662 he was one of the judges who refused to take the declaration that the National Covenant and the Solemn League and Covenant were unlawful oaths, and, forestalling the deposition which had been threatened as the penalty of continued non-compliance, he placed his resignation in the king's hands. The king, however, sum- moned him to London, and allowed him to take the decla- ration under an implied reservation. The next five years of Stair's life were comparatively uneventful, but in 1669 a family calamity, the exact facts of which will probably never be ascertained, overtook him. His daughter Janet, who had been betrothed to Lord Rutherfurd, was married to Dunbar of Baldoon, and some tragic incident occurred on the wedding night, from the effects of which she never recovered. As the traditions vary on the central fact, whether it was the bride who stabbed her husband, or the husband who stabbed the bride, no credence can be given to the mass of superstitions and spiteful slander which surrounded it, principally levelled at Lady Stair. In 1670 Stair served as one of the Scottish commissioners who went to London to treat of the Union; but the project, not seriously pressed by Charles and his ministers, broke down through a claim on the part of the Scots to what was deemed an excessive representation in the British par- liament. In January 1671 Stair was appointed president of the Court of Session. In the following year, and again in 1673, he was returned to parliament for Wigtownshire, and took part in the important legislation of those years in the department of private law. During the bad time of Lauderdale's government Stair used his influence in the privy council and with Lauderdale to mitigate the severity of the orders passed against ecclesiastical offenders, but for the most part he abstained from attending a board whose policy he could not approve. In 1679 he went to London to defend the court against charges of partiality and injustice which had been made against it, and was

(l

STATIR

thanked by his brethren for his success. When in the following year the duke of York came to Scotland, Stair distinguished himself by a bold speech, in which he con- gratulated the duke on his coming amongst a nation which was entirely Protestant. This speech can have been little relished, and the duke was henceforth his implacable enemy. His influence prevented Stair from being made. chancellor in 1681, on the death of the duke of Rothes.

The parliament of this year, in which Stair again sat, was memorable for two statutes, one in private and the other in public law. ‘The former, relating to the testing of deeds, was drawn by Stair, and is sometimes called by his name. Although it is susceptible of some improve- ment, the two centuries during which it has regulated this important branch of practical conveyancing is a testimony to the skill of the draftsman. The other was the infamous Test Act, probably the worst of the many measures devised at this period with the object of fettering the conscience by oaths. Stair also had a minor share in the form which this law finally took, but it was confined to the insertion of a definition of “the Protestant religion” ; by this he hoped to make the test harmless, but his ex- pectation was disappointed, and the form in which it emerged from parliament was such that no honest man could take it. Yet, self-contradictory and absurd as it was, the Test Act was at once rigidly enforced. Argyll, who declared he took it only in so far as it was consistent with itself and the Protestant religion, was tried and condemned for treason, and narrowly saved his life by escaping from Edinburgh Castle the day before that fixed for his execution. Stair, dreading a similar fate, went to London to seek a personal interview with the king, who had more than once befriended him, perhaps remembering his services in Holland; but the duke of York intercepted his access to the royal ear, and when he returned to#cot- land he found a new commission of judges issued, from which his name was omitted. He retired to his wife’s estate in Galloway, and occupied himself with preparing for the press his great work, Zhe Institutions of the Law of Scotland, which he published in the autumn of 1681, with a dedication to the king.

He was not, however, allowed to pursue his legal studies in peaceful retirement. His wife was charged with attending conventicles, his factor and tenants severely fined, and he was himself not safe from prosecution at any

moment. A fierce dispute arose between Claverhouse and his son, the master of Stair, relative to the regality of Glenluce ; and, both having appealed to the privy council, Claverhouse, as might have been expected, was absolved from all the charges brought against him, and the master was deprived of the regality. Stair had still powerful friends, but his opponents were more powerful, and he received advice to quit the country. He repaired to Holland in October 1684, took up his residence, along with his wife, some of his younger children, and his grandchild, afterwards the field-marshal Stair, at Leyden. While there he published the Decisions of the Court of Session between 1666 and 1671, of which he had kept a daily record, and a small treatise on natural philosophy, entitled Physiologia Nova Experimentalis.

In his absence a prosecution for treason was raised against him and others of the exiles by Sir G. Mackenzie, the lord advocate. He was charged with accession to the rebellion of 1679, the Ryehouse plot, and the expedition of Argyll. With the first two he had no connexion; with Argyll's unfortunate attempt he had no doubt sympa- thized, but the only proof of his complicity was slight, and was obtained by torture. The proceedings against him were never brought to an issue, having been continued by successive adjournments until 1687, when they were

dropped. The cause of their abandonment was the ap- pointment of his son, the master of Stair, who had made his peace with James II., as lord advocate in room of Mackenzie, who was dismissed from office for refusing to relax the penal laws against the Catholics. The master only held office as lord advocate for a year, when he was "degraded to be justice clerk ""—the king and his advisers finding him nota fit tool for their purpose. Stair remained in Holland till the following year, when he returned under happier auspices in the suite of William of Orange. William, who had made his acquaintance through the pensionary Fagel, was ever afterwards the firm friend of Stair and his family. The master was made lord advocate; and, on the murder of President Lockhart in the following ycar, Stair was again placed at the head of the Court of Session. An unscrupulous opposition, headed by Montgomery of Skelmorlie, who coveted the office of secretary for Scot-

land, and Lord Ross, who aimed at the presidency of the court, sprang up in the Scottish parliament ; and an anony- mous pamphleteer, perhaps Montgomery himself or Fer- guson the Plotter, attacked Stair in a pamphlet entitled The Late Proceedings of the Parliament of Scotland Stated and Vindicated. He defended himself by publishing an Apology, which, in the opinion of impartial judges, was a complete vindication. Shortly after its issue he was created Viscount Stair. He had now reached the summit of his prosperity, and the few years which remained of his old age were saddened by private and public cares. In 1692 he lost his wife, the faithful partner of his good and evil fortune for nearly fifty years. ‘The massacre of Glencoe, which has marked the master of Stair with a stain which his great services to the state cannot efface,—for he was undoubtedly the principal adviser of William in that treacherous and cruel deed,—was used as an opportunity by his adversaries of renewing their attack on the old president. His own share in the crime was remote; it was alleged that he had as a privy councillor declined to receive Glencoe’s oath of allegiance, though tendered, on the technical ground that it was emitted after the day fixed, but even this was not clearly proved. But some share of the odium which attached to his son was naturally reflected on him. Other grounds of complaint were not difficult to make up, which found willing supporters in the opposition members of parliament. A disappointed suitor brought in a bill in 1693 complaining of his partiality. He was also accused of domineering over the other judges and of favouring the clients of his sons. Two bills were introduced without naming him but really aimed at him,—one to disqualify peers from being judges and the other to confer on the crown a power to appoint temporary presidents of the court. ‘The complaint against him was remitted to a committee, which after full inquiry completely exculpated him; and the two bills, whose incompetency he demonstrated in an able paper addressed to the commission and parliament, were allowed to drop. He was also one of a parliamentary commission which prepared a report on the regulation of the judicatures, afterwards made the basis of a statute in 1695 supple- mentary to that of 1672, and forming the foundation of the judicial procedure in the Scottish courts down to the present century. On November 29, 1695, Stair, who had been for some time in failing health, died in Edinburgh, and was buried in the church of St Giles.

In the same year there was published in London a small volume with the title 4 Vindication of the Divine Perfections, Illustrating the Glory of God in them by Reason and Revelation, methodically digested, By a Person of Honowr. lt was edited by the two Nonconformist divines, William Bates and John Howe, who had been in exile in Holland along with Stair, and is undoubtedly his work. Perhaps it had been a sketch of the ‘‘ Inquiry Concerning Natural Theology” which he had contemplated writing in 1681.

It is of no value as a theological work, for Stair was no more a theologian than he was a man of scienee, but it is of interest as showing the serious bent of his thoughts and the genuine piety of his character.

It is as a legal writer and a judge that he holds a pre-eminent place amongst many distinguished countrymen belonging to his profession. The full title of lus great work, which runs as follows— The Institutions of the Law of Scotland, deduced from its Originals, and collated with the Civil, Canon, and Feudal Laws and with the Customs of Neighbouring Nations—is fully borne out by the contents, and affords evidence of the advantage Stair had enjoyed from his philosophical training, his foreign travels, and his intercourse with Continental jurists as well as English lawyers. It is no narrow technical treatise, but a comprehensive view of jurisprudence as based on philosophical principles and derived from a Divine Author. But neither docs it lose itself in generalities; for it is the work of a lawyer and judge intimately acquainted with every detail in the practical application of law in his native country. Unfortunately for its permanent fame and use, much of the law elucidated in it has now become antiquated through the decay of the feudal part of Scottish law and the large introduction of English law, especially in the departments of commercial law and equity. But its spirit still animates Scottish law and educates Scottish lawyers, and it may be hoped will continue to do so, saving them from being the slaves of precedent or the victims of the utilitarian philosophy whieh regards all positive law as conventional and destitute of necessary principles derived from the nature of the world and man.

The Physiologia was favourably noticed by Byyle, and is inter- esting as showing the activity of mind of the exiled judge, who returned to the

studies of his youth with fresh zest when physical science was approaching its new birth. But he was not able to emancipate himself from formule which had cramped the educa- tion of his generation, and had not caught the light which Newton spread at this very time by the communication of his Principia to the Royal Socicty of London.

Stair was fortunate in his descendants. “The family of

Dalrymple,” observes Sir Walter Scott, ‘‘ produced within two j}

centuries as many men of talent, civil and military, of literary, political, and professional eminence, as any house in Scotland.” His five sons were all remarkable in their professions. The master of Stair, who became the first earl, was an able lawyer, but still abler politician. Sir James Dalrymple of Borthwick, one of the principal clerks of session, was a very thorough and accurate historical antiquary. Sir Hew Dalrymple of North Berwick suc- ceeded his father as president, and was reckoned one of the best lawyers and speakers of his time. Thomas Dalrymple became physician to Queen Anne. Sir David Dalrymple of Hailes was lord advocate under Anneand George I. Stair’s grandson the field- inarshal and second earl gained equal credit in war and diplomacy. His great-grandson Sir David Dalrymple, Lord Hailes, also rose to the bench, where he had an honourable character for learning as a civil and humanity as a criminal judge. But his literary exceeded his legal fame. As an honest and impartial historian he laid the foundations of the true narrative of Scottish history, from which all his successors have largely borrowed.

For a fuller account of the life of Stair, see Annals of the Viscount and First and

Second Earls of Stair, by J. Murray Graham, and Memoir of Sir James Dalrymple, First Viscount Stair, 1875, by A. J. G. Mackay. (4. M.)

STALYBRIDGE, a municipal and parliamentary bor- ough of England, partly in Lancashire but principally in Cheshire, is situated on the Tame, 1 mile east of Ashton- under-Lyne, and 74 east of Manchester. The Tame is crossed by bridges connecting the counties of Chester and Lancaster. The principal public buildings are the town- hall (1831), the Foresters’ hall

(1836), the district infir- mary, the mechanics' institute (1861), the people's institute (1864), the market-hall (1866), and the Oddfellows' hall (1878). Stamford park, extending to about 60 acres, and lying between Stalybridge and Ashton, was opened 12th July 1873. The town is one of the oldest seats of the cotton manufacture, the first cotton mill having been erected in 1776 and the first steam engine in 1795. In addition to extensive cotton mills, it possesses woollen factories, iron and brass foundries, machine works, nail works, and paper mills. Stalybridge was created a market- town in 1828, was incorporated as a municipal borough in 1857, and obtained the privilege of returning a mem- ber to parliament in 1867. The municipal borough (area 806 acres) had a population of 21,092 in 1871, and 22,785 in 1881; its limits were extended in 1881] to 3120 acres, with a population of 25,977. The population

of the parliamentary borough (area 2214 acres) in 1871 was 35,114 and in 1881 it was 39,671. The area added to the municipal borough in 1881 was in 1885 included in the parliamentary borough also,—the population of this extended area being 42,863 at the census of 1881.

STAMFORD, a municipal borough and market-town, chiefly in Lincolnshire but partly in Northamptonshire, is situated on the river Welland, and on branches of the Midland, the London and North Western, and the Great Northern railway lines, 89 miles north of London and 55 south of Lincoln. The ancient bridge over the Welland was in 1849 superseded by a new structure of stone, erected at a cost of £8500. The town formerly possessed fourteen parish churches, but now has only six, viz., St Mary's, erected at the end of the 13th century, possessing an Early English tower, with Decorated spire, the princi- pal other parts of the building being Perpendicular; All Saints, also of the 13th century, the steeple being built at the expense of John Brown, merchant of the staple at Calais, in the beginning of the 15th century ; St Michael's, rebuilt in 1836 on the site of one erected in 1269; St George's, Early English, Decorated, and Perpendicular, for the most part rebuilt in 1450 at the expense of Willian Bruges, first garter king-at-arms; St John Baptist's, Per- pendicular, erected about 1452; and St Martin's, Perpen- dicular, in which Lord Treasurer Burghley is buried. Formerly there were several religious houses : —the Bene- dictine monastery of St Leonard's, founded in the 7th century,

of which there are still some remains; the Car- melite monastery (1291), of which the west gate still stands ; and houses for grey friars (time of Henry IIL), Dominicans (1240), Gilbertines (1291), and Augustinians (1316). The prir-ipal secular buildings are the town-hall (rebuilt 1776), the corn exchange (1859), and the literary and scientific institute (1842), with a library of 6000 volumes. There are a large number of charitable institu- tions, including the Stamford and Rutland infirmary (1828), Browne's hospital, founded in the time of Richard ITI., Snowden's almshouses (1604), Truesdale's almshouses (1700), and Burghley hospital, founded by Lord Treasurer Burghley (1597). Ratcliffe's and Browne's high school for boys was lately erected at a cost of £7000 on the site of Ratcliffe's free school; and Brown's school for girls in St Martin's was erected in 1876 at a cost of £5000. The prosperity of the town depends chiefly on its connexion with agriculture. It possesses iron foundries, agricultural implement works, waggon factories, and breweries. There is also some trade in coal, timber, stones, and slates. The population of the municipal borough (area 1766 acres) in 1871 was 7846 and in 1881 it was 8773; that of the parliamentary borough (area 1894 acres) in the same years was 8086 and 8993. The latter was merged in the counties in 1885, giving its name to a parliamentary division of Lincolnshire.

The town is of very remote antiquity, and is supposed to have grown into importance after the decay of the Roman village of Bridge Casterton two miles distant. Its name, an early form of which was Staenford, was derived from a passage at the town across the Welland by stone. It was the scene of the first battle of the Picts and Scots against the Britons and Saxons in 449, and subsequently became one of the five great Danish boroughs. A castle was built early in the 10th century on the south bank of the river opposite the town, but has long disappeared ; and of another on the north-west of the town, fortified by Stephen, only the foundations now remain. The town was at one time enclosed by walls, and there are still traces of gateways on the east and west sides. Inthe reign of Henry III. the lectures of the Carmelites on divinity and the liberal arts led to the erection of colleges, and Stamford beeame celebrated as a place of education. When dissen- sions arose among the students of Oxford in the reign of Edward III. many removed thither, and ultimately the universities both of Oxford and Cambridge thought it necessary to pass statutes prohibiting their students from proceeding to

other places for any part of their education, Stamford being specially mentioned in the

a

Oxford statute. At the time of the Conquest Stamford was governed by aldermen. It was incorporated by charter in the reign of Edward IV. In 1668 it received a charter from Charles II., constituting its chief magistrate a mayor. It returned two members to parliament from the reign of Edward I. till 1867, and one from 1867 to 1885. The deanery of Stamford is an ancient neculiar, the appointment being vested in the bishop of Lincoln.

STAMFORD, a borough of the United States, in t Fairfield county, Connecticut, is situated on Long Island Sound, 35 miles north-east of New York city, on the New York, New Haven, and Hartford Railroad. It has a small harbour accessible to steamboats by means of a canal ; and among its public buildings are the town-hall and several handsoine churches. Locks, carriages, stoves, fire-bricks, edge-tools, cranes, hardware, hosiery, and especially log- wood extract and liquorice are manufactured in the | borough. The population was 9714 in 1870 and 11,297 in 1880. * STAMMERING, or Srurrerine, designates a spas- modic affection of the organs of speech in which the | articulation of words is suddenly checked and a pause ensues, often followed by a repetition in rapid sequence of the particular sound at which the stoppage occurred. Of this painful affection there are many grades, from a slight inability to pronounce with ease certain letters or syllables, or a tendency to hesitate and to interject unmeaning sounds in a spoken sentence, to the more severe condition in which there is a paroxysm of spasms of the muscles, not only of the tongue and throat and face, but even of those of respiration and of the body generally. To under- stand in some degree the explanation of stammering it is ; necessary to consider shortly the physiological mechanism of articulate speech. Speech is the result of various muscular movements affecting the current of air as it passes in expiration from the larynx through the mouth. If the vocal cords are called into action, and the sounds thus produced are modified by the muscular movements of the tongue, cheeks, and lips, we have vocal speech ; but if the glottis is widely open and the vocal cords relaxed the current of

air may still be moulded by the muscular apparatus so as to produce speech without voice, or whisper- ing (see Voicz). In both cases, however, the mechanism is very complicated, requiring a series of nervous and Inuscular actions, all of which must be executed with pre- cision and in accordance. In vocal speech, for example, it is necessary that the respiratory movements, more espe- cially those of expiration, occur regularly and with nice adjustment to the kind of articulate expression required ; that the vocal cords be approximated and tightened by the muscles of the larynx acting with delicate precision, So as to produce the sound of the pitch desired; that the rama glottidis (or aperture of the larynx) be opened so as to produce prolonged sounds, or suddenly closed so as to cut off the current of air; that the movements of the muscles of the tongue, of the soft palate, of the jaws, of the cheeks, and of the lips occur precisely at the right time and to the requisite extent; and finally that all of these muscular adjustments take place with rapidity and Smoothness, gliding into each other without effort and without loss of time. Exquisite co-ordination of muscular movement is therefore necessary, involving also complicated hervous actions. Hence is it that speech is acquired by long and laborious effort. A child possesses voice from the beginning ; it is born with the capacity for speech ; but articulate expression is the result of education. In Infaney, not only is knowledge acquired of external objects, and signs attached in the form of words to the ideas thus awakened, but the nervous and muscular mechanisms by which these signs or words receive vocal expression are trained by long practice to work harmoniously. It is not surprising, therefore, that in certain cases,

owing to soine obscure congenital defect, the co-ordination is not effected with sufficient precision, and that stammer- ing is the result. Even in severe cases no appreciable lesion can be detected either in the nervous or muscular mechanisms, and the condition is similar to what may affect all varieties of finely co-ordinated movements. The mechanism does not work smoothly, but the pathologist is unable to show any organic defect. Thus the co-ordinated moveinents necessary in writing are disturbed in scrivener’s palsy, and the skilful performer on the piano or on any instrument requiring minute manipulation may find that he is losing the power of delicate adjustment. Stammer- ing is occasionally hereditary. It rarely shows itself

before the age of four or five years, and asa rule it is developed between this age and puberty. Men stammer ina much larger proportion than women. It may occur during the course of nervous affections, such as hysteria, epilepsy, or tabes dorsalis; sometimes it follows febrile disorders ; often it develops in a child ina feeble state of health, without any special disease. In some cases a child may imitate a stammerer and thus acquire the habit. Any general enfeeblement of the health, and especially nervous excitement, aggravates the condition of a con- firmed stammerer.

Stammerers, as a rule, find the explosive consonants 3, p, d, t, k, and hard g the most difficult to articulate, but many also are unable easily to deal with the more con- tinuous consonants, such as 2, f, th, s, z, sh, m,n, y, and in severe cases even the vowels may cause a certain amount of spasm. Usually the defect is not observed in whispering or singing; but there are exceptions to this statement. In pronouncing the explosive sounds the part of the oral apparatus that ought suddenly to open or close remains spasmodically closed, and the stammerer remains for a moment voiceless or strives pitifully to overcome the obstruction, uttering a few successive pufis or sounds like the beginning of the sound he wishes to utter. The lips thus remain closed at the attempted utterance of } and p; the tip of the tongue is pressed against the hard palate or the back of the upper front teeth ind and ¢; and the back of the tongue presses against the posterior part of the palate in pronouncing g hard and &. In attempting the continuous consonants, in which naturally the passage is not completely obstructed, the stammerer does not close the passage spasmodically, but the parts become fixed in the half-opened condition, or there are intermittent attempts to open or close them, causing either a drawling sound or coming to a full stop. In severe cases, where even vowels cannot be freely uttered, the spasm appears to be at the rima glottidis (opening of the larynx). Again, in some cases, the spasm may affect the respiratory muscles, giving rise to a curious barking articulation, in consequence of spasm of the expiratory muscles, and in such cases the patient utters the first part of the sentence slowly, grad- ually accelerates the speed, and makes a rush towards the close. In the great majority of cases the spasm affects the muscles of articulation proper, that is, those of the pharynx, tongue, cheeks, and lips. In the most aggravated cases the condition of the patient is pitiable. .It has thus been well described by Dr Bristow in an article full of inter- esting details :—

‘The most distressing cases are those in which the spasm extends to parts unconnected with speech,—it may be to nearly the whole muscular organism. In snch a case the spasm com- mences, let us assume, at the base of the tongue; the mouth opens widely and remains in that position; the muscles of expiration work convulsively ; the glottis contracts; respiration becomes arrested ; the face becomes congested and the veins dilated; violent spasmodic movements involve the trunk and limbs; and only after some time, either when the paticnt becomes exhausted, or when

he resolutely restrains his attempts to articulate, does his paroxysm come to an end.”—Quain’s Dictionary of Medicine, p. 1518.

448

Such a case is not common; it is more paroxysmal than habitual ; and in ordinary conversation, when the patient is free from nervous excitement, the defect may be scarcely observed. STAMPS. The stamp duty is a tax imposed upon a great variety of legal and other documents, and forms a branch of the national revenue. The stamp is a cheap and convenient mode of certifying that the revenue regula- tions have been complied with. Stamp duties appear to have been invented by the Dutch in 1624. They were first imposed in England in 1694 by 5 and 6 Will. and Mary, c. 21, as a temporary means of raising funds for carrying on the war with France. They now depend upon a very large number of statutes, the principal one being the Stamp Act, 1870, 33 and 34 Vict. ¢ 97 (which extends to the United Kingdom). The amount of stamp duty varies from one halfpenny (postage) to thousands of pounds (probate or succession). It appears scarcely

sf oF ee

necessary in this place to set out at length the various stamp duties payable in the United Kingdom, inasmuch as those of the most usual occurrence will readily be found in ordinary books of reference.

Stamp duties are either fixed, such as the duty of one penny on every cheque irrespective of its amount, or ad valorem, as the duty on a colveyance, which varies according to the amount of the purchase money. The duty is denoted generally by an impressed, less frequently by an

adhesive, stamp, sometimes by either at the option of the person stamping. Thus an inland bill of exchange (unless payable on demand) must have an impressed stamp, a foreign bill of exchange an adhesive stamp, while an agreement or receipt stamp may be of either kind. It should be noticed that cer- tain documents falling within a class which as a rule is subject to stamp duty are for reasons of public policy or encouragement of trade exeinpted from the duty by special legislation. Examples of such documents are Bank of England notes, agreements within § 17 (but not those within § 4) of the Statute of Frauds (see Fraup), agreements between a master of a ship and his crew, transfers of ships or shares in ships, indentures of apprenticeship for the sea service, petitions forwarded by post to the crown or a House of Parliament, and most instruments relating to the business of building and friendly societies.

As a general rule a document must be stamped at the time of execution, or a penalty (remissible by the commissioners of inland revenuc) is incurred. The penalty isin most cases £10, sometimes much more; in the case of policies of marine insurance it is £100. Some instruments cannot be stamped at all after execution, even with payment of the penalty. Such are bills of exchange and promissory notes (whcre an impressed stamp is necessary), bills of lading, proxies for voting at meetings of proprietors of joint-stock companies, and receipts after a month from date. An unstamped instrument cannot be pleaded or given in evidence except in criminal proceed- ings or for a collateral purpose. If an instrument chargeable with duty be produced as evidence in a court, the officer whose duty it is to read the instrument is to call the attention of the judge to any omission or insufficiency of the stamp, and if the instrument is one which may legally be stamped after execution, it may, on payment of the amount of the unpaid duty and the penelty payable by law, and a further sum of £1, be received in evidence, saving all just exceptions on other grounds. The rules of the Supreme Conrt, 1883 (Ord. xxxix. r. 8, re-enacting a provision of the Common Law Procedure Act), provide that a new trial is not to be granted by reason of the ruling of a judge that the stamp upon any document is sufficient or that the document does not require a stamp. The stamp upon a document subject to the stamp laws of a foreign state is usually admissible in evidence in a court of the United Kingdom if it conform in other respects to the rules governing the admissibility of such documents, even though it

be improperly stamped according to the law of the foreign country. The admissibility of documents helongs to the ordinatoria litis rather than the decisoria litis, and is governed by the lex fort rather than the lex loci contractus, unless indeed that law makes a stamp necessary to the validity of the instrument. As to bills of exchange, the Bills of Exchange Act, 1882, 45 and 46 Vict. c. 61, § 72, provides that where a bill is issued out of the United Kingdom it is not invalid by reason only that it is not stamped in accordance with the law of the place of issue, and that where a bill issued out of the United Kingdom conforms as regards requisites in form to the law of the United Kingdom it may for the purpose of enforcing payment thereof be treated as valid as between all persons who negotiate, hold, or become parties to it in the United Kingdom.

By the Stamp Dutics Management Act, 1870, 38 and 384 Vict. c. 98, the stamp duties are put under the management of the commissioners of inland revenue, who are empowered to grant licences to deal in stamps, and to make allowance for spoiled or misused stamps. Certain offences, such as forging a die or stamp, selling or using a forged stamp, &c., are made felonies punishable with penal servitude for life as a maximum.

United States. —The subject of stamp dutics is of unusual historical interest, as the passing of Grenville's Stamp Act of 1765 (5 Geo. III. c. 12) directly led to the American revolution. The Act was, indeed, repealed the next year as a matter of expediency by 6 Gco. III. c. 11, but 6 Geo, III. c. 12 declared the right of the British legislature to bind the colonies by its Acts. The actual yield of the stamp duties under the Act of 1765 was, owing to the opposition in the American colonies, only £4000—less than the expenses of putting the Act into force. The stamp duties of the United States are now under the super- intendence of the commissioner of internal revenue. 'These duties, which depend upon a great body of statutory law, will be found in the Revised Statutes, tit. xxxv.

The principal authorities on the subject of this article are Tilsley, Stamp Laws, and Dowell, Stamp Duties.

STANDARDS. See WEIGHTS AND MEASURES.

STANFIELD, Wittiam CrarKson (1794-1867), marine ainter, was born of Irish parentage at Sunderland in 1794. As a youth he was a sailor, and during many long voyages he acquired that intimate acquaintance with the sea and shipping which was admirably displayed in his subsequent works. In his spare time he diligently occupied himself in sketching marine subjects, and so much skill did he acquire that, after having been incapacitated by an accident from active service, he received an engagement, about 1818, to paint scenery for the “Old Royalty,” a sailor’s theatre in Wellclose Square, London. Along with David Roberts he was afterwards employed at the Cobourg theatre, Lambeth ; and in 1826 he became scene-painter to Drury Lane theatre, where he executed some admirable. work, especially distinguishing himself by the production of a drop-seene, and by decorations for the Christmas pieces for which the house was celebrated. Meanwhile he had been at work upon some easel pictures of small dimensions, and was elected a member of the Society of British Art- ists. Encouraged by his success at the British Institution, where in 1827 he exhibited his first important picture— Wreckers off Fort Rouge —and in 1828 gained a premium of 50 guineas, he before 1830 abandoned scene-painting, and in that year made an extended tour on the Continent. He now produced his Mount St Michael, which ranks as one of his finest works; in 1832 he exhibited his Opening of New London Bridge and Portsmouth Har- bour—commissions from William IV.—in the Royal Academy, of which he was elected an associate in 1832 and an academician in 1835; and until his death on the 18th of May 1867 he contributed to its exhibitions a long series of powerful and highly popular works, dealing mainly with marine subjects, but occasionally with scenes of a more purely landscape character.

Among these may be named—the Battle of Trafalgar (1836), executed for the United Scrvice Club; the Castle of Ischia (1841), Isola Bella (1841), among the results of a visit to Italy in 1839; French Troops Fording the Margra (1847), the ‘‘ Victory” Bearing the Body of Nelson owed into Gibraltar (1853), the Abandoned (1856). He also cxecuted two notable series of Venetian subjects, one for the banqueting-hall at Bowood, the other for Trentham. He was mueh employed on the illustrations for The Picturesque Annual, and published a collection of lithographic views on the Rhine, Moselle, and Meuse; and forty of his works were en- graved in line

under the title of ‘‘Stanfield’s Coast Scenery.” Four of his engraved pictures are in the National Gallery, and his works may also be studied in the South Kensington Museum. A large collection of his productions were ineluded in the Royal Academy’s Winter Exhibition for 1870. The whole course of Stanfield’s art was powerfully influenced by his early practice as a scene-painter. But, though there is always a touch of the spectacular and the scenic in his works, and though their colour is apt to be rather dry and hard, they arc large and effective in handling, powerful in their treatment of broad atmospheric effects, and telling in composition, and they evince the most complete knowledge of the artistic materials with which their painter deals.

STANHOPE, Cuaries Stanwopr, THIRD Fart (1753- 1816), was born on 3d August 1753, and educated under the opposing influences of Eton and Geneva, devoting himself whilst resident in the Swiss city to the study of mathematics, and acquiring from the associations con- nected with Switzerland an intense-love of liberty. He contested the representation of the city of Westminster without success in 1774, when only just of age; but from the general election of 1780 until his accession to the peerage on the 7th of March 1786 he represented through the influence of Lord Shelburne the Buckinghamshire borough of High Wycombe, and during the sessions of 1783 and 1784 he gave his support to the administration of William Pitt, whose sister Lady Hester Pitt he married on 19th December 1774. When Pitt ceased to be inspired by the Liberal principles of his early days, his brother-in- law severed their political connexion and opposed with all

the impetuosity of his fiery heart the arbitrary measures which the ministry favoured. Lord Stanhope’s character was without any taint of meanness, and his conduct was marked by a lofty consistency never influenced by any petty motives; but his speeches, able as they were, had no weight on the minds of his compeers in the upper chamber, and, from a disregard of their prejudices, too often drove them into the opposite lobby. He was the chairman of the ‘‘ Revolution Society,” founded in honour of the Revolution of 1688, the members of which in 1790 expressed their sympathy with the aims of the French republicans. He brought forward in 1794 the case of Muir, one of the Edinburgh politicians who were trans-

ported to Botany Bay, and in 1795 he introduced into the Lords a motion deprecating any interference with the internal affairs of France. In all of these points he was hopelessly beaten, and in the last of them he was in a "minority of one"—a sobriquet which stuck to him throughout life,—whereupon he seceded from _parlia- mentary life for five years. The lean and awkward figure of Lord Stanhope figured in a host of the caricatures of Sayers and Gillray, reflecting on his political opinions and his personal relations with his. children. His first wife died on 20th July 1780, and he married on 17th March 1781 Louisa, daughter and sole heiress of the Hon. Henry Grenville (governor of Barbados in 1746 and ambassador to the Porte in 1762), a younger brother of the first Earl Temple and George Grenville. Through his union with this lady, who survived until March 1829, he was doubly connected with the family of Grenville. By his first wife he had three daughters, one of whom was Lady Hester Stanhope (see below), and his second wife was the mother of three sons. Lord Stanhope died at the family seat of Chevening, Kent, on 15th December 1816.

Earl Stanhope was elected a fellow of the Royal Society so carly as November 1772, and devoted a large part of his ineome to experiments in science and philosophy.. He invented a method of securing buildings from fire (which, however, proved impracticable), the printing press and the lens which bear his name, and a monochord for tuning musical instruments, suggested improvements in canal locks, made experiments in steam navigation in 1795-97, and contrived two calculating machines. When he acquired an extensive property in Devonshire, he projected a canal through that county from the Bristol to the English Channel and took the levels himself. Electricity was another of the subjects which he studied, and the volume of Principles of Electricity which he issued in 1779 contained the rudiments of his theory on the "return stroke" resulting from the contact with the earth of the electric current of lightning, which were afterwards amplified in a contribution to the Philosophical Transactions for 1787. His principal labours in literature consisted of a reply to Burke's Reflections on the French Revolution (1790) and an Essay on the rights of juries (1792), and he long meditated the compilation of a digest of the statutes. His scientific theories, his mechanical experiments, and his studies in music absorbed all his thoughts, and for them he neglected his wives and his children. His youngest daughter, Lady Lucy Rachael Stanhope, eloped with Mr Thomas

Taylor of Sevenoaks, the family apothecary, and her father refused to be reconciled to her, an inconsistency in a republican which subjected him to a caricature from Gillray. Lady Hester Stanhope abandoned her home and went to live with her mother's relations. Lord Stanhope's high qualities were marred by an impracticable disposition.

STANHOPE, Lapy Hxster Lucy (1776-1839), the eldest child of the third Earl Stanhope (noticed above), by his first wife Lady Hester Pitt, eldest daughter of the first earl of Chatham, lived for the earlier part of her life amid the surroundings of a noble mansion, or in close com- munion with her uncle William Pitt, the most prominent minister of his age, and on his early death withdrew whilst still young to brood over the past in the solitudes of Pales- tine. She was born on 12th March 1776, and dwelt at ' her father's seat of Chevening in Kent until early in 1800, when his excitable and wayward disposition drove her to her grandmother's house at Burton Pynsent. A year or

two later she travelled abroad, but her cravings after distinction were not satisfied until she became the chief of her uncle's household in August 1803. She sat at the head of his table and assisted in welcoming his guests, gracing the board with her stately beauty and enlivening the company by her quickness and keenness of conver- sation. Although her brightness of style cheered the declining days of Pitt and amused most of his political friends, her satirical remarks sometimes created enemies when more consideration for the feelings of her associates would have converted them into friends. Lady Hester Stanhope possessed great business talents, and when Pitt was out of office she acted as his private secretary. She was with him in his dying illness, and some of his last thoughts were concerned with her future, but any anxiety which might have arisen in her mind on this point was dispelled through the grant by a nation grateful for her uncle's qualities of a pension of £1200 a year, dating from 30th January 1806, which Lady Hester Stanhope enjoyed for the rest of her days. On her uncle's death she lived in Montague Square, London, but life in London without the interest caused by associating with the principal politicians of

the Tory party proved irksome to her, and she sought relief from lassitude in the fastnesses of Wales. Whilst she remained on English soil happiness found no place in her heart, and her native land was finally abandoned for the East in February 1810. After many wanderings she settled on Mount Lebanon, and from this solitary position she wielded an almost absolute authority over the surrounding districts. Her control over the natives was sufficiently commanding to induce Ibrahim Pasha, when about to invade Syria in 1832, to solicit her neutrality, and this supremacy was maintained by her commanding character and by the belief that she possessed the gift of divination. Her cherished companion Miss Williams, and her trusted physician Dr Charles Lewis Meryon, dwelt with her for some time; but the former died in 1828, and the latter was not with Lady Hester when she died. In this lonely residence, the villa of Djoun, 8 miles from Sidon, in a house "hemmed in by arid mountains," and with the troubles of a household of twenty-three servants, unregulated by a single English attendant or friend and only waiting for her death to plunder the house, Lady Hester Stanhope's strength slowly wasted away, and at last she died on 23d June 1839, aged sixty-three. The disappointments of her life, and the necessity of overaweing her servants as well as the chiefs who surrounded Djoun, had intensified a temper naturally imperious. In appearance as in voice she resembled her grandfather, the first Lord Chatham, and like him she domineered over the circle, large or small, in which she was placed.

Some years after her death there appeared three volumes of Memoirs of the Lady Hester Stanhope as related by herself in Con- versations with her Physician (i.e, Dr Meryon), 1845, and these were followed in the succeeding year by three volumes of Z'ravels of Lady Hester Stanhope, forming the Completion of her Memoirs narrated by her Physician. They presented a lively picture of this strange woman's life and character, and contained many

anecdotes of Pitt and his colleagues in political life for a quarter of a century before his death,

STANHOPE, Puitre Dormer, fourth earl of Chester- field. See CHESTERFIELD.

STANISLAU (Pol. Stanislavof’), the chief town in the district of the same name in Galicia, Austria, on the Albrecht and Lemberg-Czernowitz railways, in 49° 4’ N, lat., 24° 30’ E. long., has two real-schools, a gymnasium, and large ironworks. It has also a good trade in corn. The population (1885) numbers 18,626:

STANISLAUS (1677-1766), king of Poland. Stanislaw Leszezynski or Leszinski was horn at Lemberg on October

20, 1677. His father, Raphael Leszezynski, was a Polish nobleman, distinguished by his rank and the important offices which he held, but still more by his personal qualities. Stanislaus, after visiting the courts of Vienna, Paris, and Rome, was raised to the dignity of voivode of Posen, and in 1704 was sent as ambassador by the assembly of Warsaw to Charles XII. of Sweden, who had just declared the deposition of the recently elected Augustus II. The king was so greatly taken with the ambassador that he recommended him to the diet as a suitable candidate for the vacant throne; the election accordingly followed on 12th July 1704, but the corona- tion of Stanislaus and his wife Catharina Opalinska did not take place until 4th October of the following year (compare PoLAND, vol. xix. p. 297). After the reverse of Pottava in 1709 Augustus returned to Poland, and, assisted by the Russians, compelled Stanislaus to leave the country. The next five years saw him leading a wander- ing and somewhat adventurous life in Europe, one of his objects being to procure a favourable peace for Charles (compare CHARLES XII.). He then settled on Charles's estate at Zweibriicken, and after Charles's death in 1718 had a residence assigned to him by the French court at Weissenburg in Alsace. In 1725 his daughter Maria became the wife of Louis XV. of France. On the death of Augustus in 1733 Stanislaus once more returned to Poland, where a majority declared for him, but his com- petitor, the young elector of Saxony, had the advantage of the support of the emperor Charles VI., and also of the empress of Russia. Dantzic, to which Stanislaus had retired, was quickly taken by the Russians and the Saxons, and with great difficulty the unfortunate prince succeeded in making good his escape in disguise, after hearing that the Russians had set a price on hishead. In 1736, when peace was concluded between the emperor and France, it was agreed that Stanislaus should abdicate the throne, but that he should be acknowledged king of Poland and grand-duke of Lithuania, and continue to bear these titles during life, and further, that he should be put in peaceable possession of the duchies of Lorraine and Bar, but that immediately after his death those duchies should be united for ever to the crown of France. The remaining years of his life were prosperous and happy. He died at Lunéville on February 23, 1766, in consequence of injuries received from his nightdress accidentally taking fire. Stanislaus,

who wasa patron of thearts and sciences, wrote several works in politics and philosophy, which were collected and published at Paris in 1763, in 2 vols. 8vo, under the title @uwvres du Philosophe Bienfaisant. The Guvres Choisies de Stanislas, Roi de Pologne, Duc

de Lorraine et de Bar, with an historical notice by Madame de Saint-Ouen, were published in an 8vo volume at Paris in 1825.

STANISLAUS AUGUSTUS, the last king of Poland, was born at Wolczyn in Lithuania in 1732 and died at St Petersburg in 1798. See PontatowskI, vol. xix. p. 453, and PoLAND, vol, xix. pp. 297-8.

STANLEY, Arruur Penruyn (1815-1881), dean of Westminster from 1863, was born at Alderley in Cheslure on December 13, 1815. His father, the Rev. E. Stanley, rector of Alderley, bishop of Norwich from 1837 to1849, was the younger brother of Sir John Stanley of Alderley Park, seventh baronet, who in 1839 was created Baron Stanley of Alderley, and was the representative of a branch of the same family as that of the earls of Derby. His mother, Catherine Stanley, was the daughter of the Rev. Oswald Leycester, rector of Stoke-on-Tern. Both parents were persons of remarkable force and individuality of character. The influence of each is to be traced in the career of their son. It was his father's prayer as bishop of Norwich "that he might be an instrument in God's providence of extending more enlarged and more Christian views among the clergy, and thus the means of disseminating a wider

and more comprehensive spirit of Christianity throughout the land." Of his mother her son not only spoke, after her death in 1862, as "the guardian genius" that "had nursed his very mind and heart," but described her as "sifted with a spiritual insight which belonged to that larger sphere of religion which is above and beyond the passing controversies of the day." Arthur was their third child. His elder brother, Owen, died in 1850 at Sydney, after concluding, as commander of the "Rattlesnake" frigate, the survey of the Coral Sea. His sister Mary, well known for her work in the hospitals at Scutari and among the poor in London, died in 1880. Arthur was a child of highly sensitive organization and precocious intel- lectual

activity. His boyish letters, journals, and poems were singularly like in their characteristic points to his later writings. But his extreme shyness and silence gave no promise of the social gifts which afterwards added so largely to his influence. At theage of fourteen his health, at one time alarmingly delicate, so far improved as to warrant his parents in sending him to Rugby, where Dr Arnold had been recently appointed head master. He remained at Rugby from 1829 to 1834, and of all Arnold's pupils may be said to have been the one who most fully responded to the influence of his master's teaching and character. In 1834 he became an undergraduate of Balliol College, Oxford, having obtained a scholarship in the pre- vious year. Among his tutors at Balliol was Mr Tait, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, and among his junior fellow scholars Benjamin Jowett, afterwards professor of Greek and master of Balliol. Arthur Stanley, after obtain- ing the Ireland scholarship and Newdigate prize for a remarkable English poem (on the Gipsies), was placed in the first class in 1837. In 1839, after a period of residence and study at Oxford, he was elected fellow of University College, and in the same year was admitted to holy orders. In 1840 he left England fora prolonged tour in Greece and Italy, and on his return settled at Oxford, where he resided from October 1841 for the next ten years, being actively engaged during term time as tutor of his college. He very shortly became an influential element in univer- sity life. His personal relations to his pupils were of a singularly close and affectionate nature, and the charm of his social gifts and genial character won him friends on all sides. His literary reputation was early established by the profound impression made by his Life of Arnold, whose sudden death had occurred in 1842, and whose biography, published in 1844, at once secured for its young author a high place among English writers. In 1845 he was appointed select preacher, and published in 1847 a volume of Sermons and Essays on the Apostolic Age, which not only laid the foundation of his fame as a preacher, but also marked his future position as a theologian. In university politics, which at that time wore mainly the form of theological controversy, he from the first took the place which he always retained of an uncompromising advocate of comprehension and toleration. As an undergraduate he had entirely sympathized with Dr Arnold in resenting the agitation led by, but not confined to, the High Church party in 1836 against the appointment of Dr Hampden to the regius professorship of divinity. As a young M.A, during the long-continued agitation which followed the

publication in 1841 of Tract No. 90, and which ended in the withdrawal of the present Cardinal Newman from the English Church, he used all his influence to protect from formal condemnation the leaders and tenets of the “Tractarian” party. In 1847 he did his utmost to resist the movement set on foot at Oxford against Dr Hampden’s appointment to the bishopric of Hereford. Finally, in 1850, in an article published in the Edinburgh Review in defence of the ‘Gorham judgment,” which had secured

45]

the position in the English Church of the Evangelical clergy, he asserted two principles which he maintained to the end of his life,—first, “ that the so-called supremacy of the crown in religious matters was in reality nothing else than the supremacy of law,” and, secondly, “that the Church of England, by the very condition of its being, was not High, or Low, but Broad, and had always included, and been meant to include, opposite and contradictory opinions on points even more important than those at present under discussion.”

It was not only in theological but in academical matters that his sympathies were on the liberal side. Though on many points of essentially conservative tendencies, he was greatly interested in university reform, and towards the end of his residence at Oxford acted as secretary to the royal commission appointed in 1850 to report on and to suggest improvements in the administrative and educa- tional system of the university. Of the important changes in both these respects which, in the face of much opposi- tion at the university, were carried out in due time under the sanction of parliament by an executive commission, Stanley, who took the principal share in drafting the report printed in 1852, was a strenuous advocate. These changes included the transference of the initiative in university legislation from the sole authority of the heads of houses to an elected and representative body, the open- ing of college fellowships and scholarships to competition by the removal of local and other restrictions, the non- enforcement at matriculation of subscription to the Thirty- nine Articles, and various steps taken to increase the usefulness and influence of the professoriate.

Before the report was issued, Stanley, who had lost his father in 1849, and both his brothers, Captain Stanley mentioned above, and Charles, secretary

to the governor of Van Diemen's Land, within a few months of the same date, was appointed to a.canonry in Canterbury cathedral. He held the office from 1851 till his return to Oxford. During his residence at Canterbury he published his Memoir of his father Bishop Stanley (1851), and completed his Commentary on the Epistles to the Corinthians (1855). In the winter and spring of 1852-53 he made the tour in Egypt and the Holy Land, the result of which was his well-known volume on Sinai and Palestine, first published in 1856. In 1857 he travelled in Russia, and collected much of the materials for his subsequent Lectures on the Greek Church, published in 1861. His Memorials of Canterbury, published in 1855, displayed the full maturity of his power of dealing with the events, scenes, and characters of past history which had marked him from childhood. Towards the close of the same period he accepted the office of examining chaplain to Dr Tait, his former tutor at Balliol and afterwards successor to Arnold at Rugby, on his transference from the deanery of Carlisle to the see of London.

At the close of 1856 Stanley was appointed by the crown to the professorship of ecclesiastical history, a post which, with the canonry at Christ Church attached to the office, he held till 1863. In the first of three inaugural lectures the new professor announced his intention of beginning his treatment of the subject with "the first dawn of the history of the church," the call of Abraham; and the first two volumes of his History of the Jewish Church, published in 1863 and 1865, consist of the substance of lectures delivered by him in his capacity as professor. In 1861 he published the volume on the Greek Church already referred to. His second residence at Oxford was marked by the same power of winning per- sonal influence which had distinguished him as a college tutor, and by the efforts which he made, in his wider sphere as professor, to bring together in social intercourse

the leaders of the divergent and hostile parties between which the residents at the university were mainly divided.

Much, however, of his time and efforts was given to religious controversy. From 1860 to 1864 academical and clerical circles were agitated by the storm which followed the publication of Essays and Reviews, a volume to

which two of his most valued friends—Benjamin Jowett and Mr Temple, the former professor of Greek at Oxford, the latter head master of Rugby and afterwards bishop in succession of Exeter and London—had been contributors. For the exceedingly prominent part taken by Stanley in this excit- ing controversy the reader is referred to the second and third of his Lssays on Church and State, collected and published in 1870. The result of his action was greatly to alienate the leaders of the High Church party, who had joined a large portion of the clergy in their efforts to procure the formal condemnation of the views advanced in Essays and Reviews. In this and other questions, such as in the growing controversy on the position of Prof. Maurice at King's College, Cambridge, and on that caused by Bishop Colenso's work on the Pentateuch, he had taken up a position which brought him into conflict with a large portion of the religious public. It should be added that in the last year of his professoriate (1863) he had published a Letter to the Bishop of London, strongly advocating a large relaxation of the terms of clerical subscription to the Thirty-nine Articles and Prayer-book. An important Act amending the Act of Uniformity, and carrying out in some degree Stanley's proposals, was passed in the year 1865.

In the spring of 1862 Stanley, at the queen's desire, had accompanied the prince of Wales on a tour in Egypt and the Holy Land. During his absence he lost his mother, the heaviest domestic bereavement that had yet befallen him. His sense of his debt towards her has been already indicated. It stands recorded in his volume of Memorials of Edward and Catherine Stanley.

Towards the close of the following year he was appointed by the crown to the deanery of Westminster, in succession to Dean Trench, raised to the seeof Dublin. In December he married Lady Augusta Bruce, sister of Lord Elgin, then governor-general of India, herself one of the queen's most trusted friends. In January 1864 he entered on the duties of his new post.

His tenure of the deanery of Westminster was memor- able in many ways. He recognized from the first two im- portant disqualifications,— his indifference to music and his slight knowledge of architecture. he availed himself largely of the aid of others, and threw himself with characteristic energy and entire success into the task of rescuing from neglect, preserving

from decay, and commending to the interest of all classes of his countrymen the treasure of historic monuments in which the abbey is so rich. No visitor can pass through the building, now so often thronged with crowds of the work- ing classes, the mere possibility of attracting whom was spoken of before a royal commission so lately as 1841 as quite chimerical, without recognizing the successful result of his indefatigable labours. The monument to the brothers Wesley, the inscription on the gravestone of Liv- ingstone, and the restored altar in her husband's chantry in which he placed the neglected remains of Catherine of Valois, the queen of Henry V., may be named among the innumerable and ubiquitous records of his wide sympathy and historic ardour. 'Within three years of his appointment he published his Memorials of Westminster Abbey, a work which, although not free from occasional inaccuracies, is a mine of information conveyed in the most picturesque and impressive form. He was a constant

preacher, and gave a great impulse to the practice already —

begun of inviting distinguished preachers to the abbey

On both these subjects

STANLEY

pulpit, especially to the evening services in the nave, which had been established under his predecessor. It is to him that is largely due the vast increase in the number not of visitors only but of worshippers in the abbey. He began the practice, since continued by others of the abbey clergy, of devoting his Saturday afternoons to conducting parties of working men round the abbey and collegiate buildings. His social and personal influence, already unique of its kind, was enormously increased by his removal to London. His circle of friends was constantly widening, and extended from the queen and royal family to the working men of London and elsewhere, some of whom he inspired with a singular devotion. It included men of every denomina- tion, every class, every part of the United Kingdom, and almost of every nation. He was untiring in literary work, and, though this consisted very largely of occasional papers, . lectures, articles in reviews, addresses, and sermons, it in- cluded a third volume of his History of the Jewish Church, a volume on the Church of Scotland, another of Addresses

and Sermons preached in America, and an exceedingly important volume, completed within a few months of his death, on Christian Institutions.

He was continually engaged in theological controversy, and, if his advocacy of all efforts to promote the social, moral, and religious amelioration of the poorer classes and his chivalrous courage in defending those whom he held to be unjustly denounced won him the warm admiration of many of his countrymen, he undoubtedly incurred much and growing odium in influential circles. Among the causes of offence might be enumerated, not only his vigorous defence of one from whom he greatly differed, Bishop Colenso, but his invitation to the holy communion of all the revisers of the translation of the Bible, including a Unitarian among other Nonconformists, as well as the whole tone and teaching of almost every page of his publications. Still stronger was the feeling caused by his efforts to make the recital of the Athanasian Creed optional instead of imperative in the English Church.

In 1874 he spent part of the winter in Russia, whither he and Lady Augusta had gone to take part in the marriage of the duke of Edinburgh. In the spring of 1876, after a long and lingering illness, he lost his wife, the zealous partner of all his social and charitable efforts, and the con- — stant cheerer and sympathizer in his many labours and conflicts. It was a terrible blow, and one from which he never entirely recovered. But in 1878 he was deeply inter- ested by a tour in America, and in the following autumn visited for the last time, with his sister, Mary Stanley, who died before the close of the same year, northern Italy and Venice.

In the spring of 1881 he preached funeral sermons in the abbey on Mr Carlyle and Lord Beaconsfield, winding up with the latter a series of Sermons preached on Public Occasions, mainly on the death or funeral of eminent Englishmen, which form a volume singularly characteristic of his special gifts. He saw also the completion of the latest of his volumes, that already mentioned on Christian Institutions, and was in the course of the summer correct- ing for the press a paper on the Westminster Confession, and preaching in the abbey a course of Saturday Lectures on the Beatitudes. On July 10 he was attacked by a sudden illness, which in a few daysassumed a more alarm- ing character, and ended fatally on the 18th.

The sensa- tion caused by his death was profound and widespread. He was buried in Henry VII.'s chapel, in the same grave as his wife. His pall-bearers comprised representatives of literature, of science, of both Houses of Parliament, of theology, Anglican and Nonconformist, and of the universities of Oxford and Cambridge. The recumbent monument placed upon the spot, and the windows in the

\

—

chapter house of the abbey, one of them a gift from the queen, were a tribute to his memory from friends of every class in England and America.

The influenee of Dean Stanley was no doubt largely due to his marvellous social gifts. His affectionate naturc, his quick and yeady sympathy, his kcen interest in almost every field of know- ledge, his own mental resources, drawn from incessant reading and enriched by travel, observation, and conversation, his familiarity with the persons, places, events, and scenes of history, his tenacious yet discriminating memory, his vivacity and humour, the very charm of his countenance and manner, the delicately sensitive face, "the eye now beaming with sympathy, now twinkling with humour," acted like a spell in winning friends and even in con- eiliating opponents. The courage and fearlessness with which he was always ready to uphold the cause of those whom he held to be unjustly attacked by a powerful or dominant majority was duly appreciated by his countrymen. It may probably be said that no one in the present century was so endeared to so large a circle of

~ personal friends in all parts of the civilized world. His writings

also, apart from their controversial aspect, were of a singularly attractive kind. His Life of Arnold, his Sinai and Palestine, his Lectures on the Jewish Chureh, his Memorials of Canterbury and of Westminster Abbey, would alone have made him one of the most delightful and popular of English authors. His sermons, always interesting and attractive, were at times

singularly eloquent and impressive. His occasional hymns and short poems, full of grace and force, and occasionally of a profound pathos, were fully worthy of his literary position. Throughout all that he ever wrote there is an individuality and a characteristic flavour whieh is saved from manucrism by an inexhaustible freshness of view and a marvellous fertility of illustration. His power of painting the scenes, events, and persons of past history, ‘‘the picturesque sensibility,” to use a phrase applicd to him by Lord Beaconsfield, with which he at once fastened on the main features of an historic building or a famous locality, amounted to genius; they were as marked at the close of his life as in the earliest of his schoolboy letters. They won him readers of every class.

But it would be impossible to speak even briefly of his literary position by itself. To write his life in full would be to give a sketch of English ecclesiastical history for a long generation. Though he resolutely stood aloof from all connexion with party, it is impossible not to recognize even in his least controversial writings the position which he held as, in the eyes of the greatest portion of his countrymen, the leading liberal theologian of his time in England. Throughout his writings in prose or poetry, on almost every subject which he touched, we see the impress, not only of his distinctive genius and of his extraordinary gifts, but also of his speeial views, aims, and aspirations. It may be well to describe these as nearly as possible in his own words. He looked on the age in which he lived as one of mingled hope and gloom, as

_ aperiod of transition, to be followed either by an “ eclipse of faith ”

—a “winter of unbelief’—or by a “revival of Christianity in a wider aspect,” a ‘‘catholic, comprehensive, all-embracing Christi- auity” that ‘‘might yet overeome the world.” He believed, and was never tired of asserting his belief, “that the Christian church had not yet presented its final or its most perfect aspect to the world”; that ‘‘the belief of each successive age of Christendom had as a matter of fact varied enormously from the belief of its predecessor”; that ‘all confessions and similar documents are, if taken 4% final expressions of absolute truth, misleading”; that each “successive form of theology is but the approximation to the truth, not the whole truth itself”; that it was ‘‘the glory of the church to be always

advancing to perfection”; and that ‘‘ there still remained, behind all the controversies of the past, a higher Christianity which neither assailants nor defenders had fully exhausted.”

Already even in his early Sermons on the Apostolic Age, as in Sinai and Palestine, as in the volumes on the Jewish Church, “one increasing purpose” may be recognized. Everywhere we see the sustained effort to ‘‘ bring the events, places, and characters of sacred history within the domain of actual observation and history,” and to reseue them from ‘‘the conventional haze in whieh they had been veiled by a misplaced reverence.” ‘‘ The first duty of a modern theologian” he held to be ‘‘to study the Bible, not for the sake of making or defending systems out of it, but for the sake of discovering what it actnally contains.” “In a faithful study of that virgin mine, the yet insufficiently explored records of the Old and New Testament, lay,” he held, “the best hope of the church of Christ,” and another and a different estimate “of the points on which Scripture lays its most emphatic stress.” To this study he looked for the best hope of such a progressive develop- ment of Christian theology as should avert the danger arising from “the apparently increasing divergence between the intelligence and the faith of our time,” “and should enable the church to deal wisely with new questions which ancient theology had for the most part not even considered.” On the direetion which this develop- ment of theology should assume the last word had not, he knew,

been spoken; but he enforced the duty “of placing in the back- ground whatever was accidental, temporary, or sccondary, and of bringing into due prominence what was primary and essential.” In the former group Stanley would, without doubt or hesitation, have placed:all questions connected with Episcopal or Presbyterian orders, or that deal only with the outward forms or ceremonies of religion, or with the authorship or age of the books of the Old Testament. Even to the question of miraculous and external evidence he would have been inclined to assign a secondary place, as well as to the most elaborate statemeuts of Christian doctrine.

The foremost and highest place, that of the ‘‘ essential and supernatural ” elements of religion, he would have reserved for its moral and spiritual

truths, ‘‘its chief evidence and ehief essence,” ‘the truths to be drawn from the teaching and from the life of Christ,” in whose character he did not hesitate to recognize ‘‘ the greatest of all miracles.” On a large development of Christian teaching in this direction he based all his hopes alike of the pro- gress of the world and of the restitution to Christian theology— “fas something greater and vaster than the theology of. each particular chureh or age,” ‘‘as comprehending all the wholesome elements of thought at work in the world ”—of ‘‘ its natural aseend- ency over the minds of educated men,”

With such views it was not to be wondered at that, from first to last, he never lost an opportunity of supporting a policy of width, toleration, and comprehension in the Church of England. The view which he took in his earliest directly controversial work, his Essay on the Gorham Judgment (1850), as regards both the protec- tion offered by the law to the clergy against “the inquisition of arbitrary prelates and of tumultuous synods,” and ‘‘on the designedly mixed and comprehensive character of the English formularies and English Church,” has already been fully indicated. The same spirit and the same aims guided his line of conduct in other controversies, such asin that on the Lssays and Reviews, on the ritualistic movement, on the question of subscription, on the successive attacks made on men so wholly different from each other as Prof. Maurice, whose influence on the mind of his gene- ration has yet to be fully cstimated, and Bishop Colenso, and in his vain but earnest advocacy of the optional instead of the com- pulsory use of the Athanasian Creed. So again he was always eager to insist on the essential points of union between various denominations of Christians, however apparently divided or estranged; and to recognize the special services conferred on the world, not only by the Eastern, the Roman, the Lutheran, and the Reformed Churches, not only by the Presbyterian Churches of Scotland, but also by the Baptist and Congregational Churches of England and America, and by the community of Quakers. And, while in this respeet he was keen almost to exeess to note points of agreement, so in the very latest volume which’ he published one of his main aims was “‘to look the facts of history in the face” and to point out ‘‘the almost universal departure from primitive usage,” ‘‘the transformation both of letter and spirit through whieh the greatest Christian ordinances had already passed,”’ and ‘‘to fix the cye steadily on the germs

of trnth that were conmmon to the. different forms which the ordinances wore, the moral and spiritual realities for the sake of whieh alone (if Christianity be the universal religion) such forms exist." He was throughout his life an unflinching advocate of the connexion between church and state. By this he understood—(1): ''the recognition and support on the part of the state of the religious expression of the faith of the community," and (2) ''that this religions expression of the faith of the community on the most sacred and most vital of all its intcrests should be controlled and guided by the whole community through the supremacy of law." In the supremacy of the crown, #.e., of law, "over all causes and all persons, ecclesiastical as well as civil," so far from finding "' galling ehains" or ''ignominious bondage," he welcomed it not only as being '' the most powerful and intelligent organ of the whole com- munity," but on two other grounds. First, he considered that supremacy more likely '' to be truly wise and truly just and there- fore truly Christian than the headship either of a bishop or of a synod of any clerical or sectional body," and, secondly, ''as the best security for that gradual growth of religious forms and religious opinions, and for that free expression of individual belief, which is indispensable to any healthy development of religions life and religious truth." At the same time he was in favour of making the ereed of the church as wide as possible,—'' not narrower than that which is even now the test of its membership, the Apostles' Creed,"—and of throwing down all barriers which could be wisely dispensed with to adinission to its ministry. As an immediate step he even advocated as '"'an unmixcd good" "the admission under due restrictions of our nonconforming brethren of England, and our Presbyterian brethren of the Scottish Church," to preach in Anglican pulpits. To the last hour of his life he looked with dismay to the prospect of a combined assault by a triple alliance of the representatives ''of the Puritans, of Voltaire, and of Land" on ''that rare combination which with all its shortcomings exhibits one of the noblest works which God's providence, through a long

course of years, has raised up in Europe," ''ou the most venerable growth of English history, the framework which has sheltered down to this time the freedom of the freest, the teaching of the most learned, and the reason of the

most rational church in Christendom." He believed that the ''success of such an attack would result in throwing away the best opportunity which the world affords for the growth side by side of intellectual activity and religious earnestness"; that to destroy it would be, as he said of the Established Church of Scotland, ''to destroy, so far as human efforts can destroy, the special ideas of freedom, of growth, of comprehension, which are inherent in the very existence of a national churcli"; that its destruction would only produce ''an enslaved clergy amidst an indifferent laity," and tend to degrade the Church of England from its historic position "'to that of an illiterate sect, or a satellite of the Church of Rome."

With such views it was impossible that Stanley could have found much sympathy from either of the two great parties among the English clergy. Indeed it was impossible that any party, or any community, which placed the essence of Christianity in the careful guardianship of any circle of theological doctrines could feel in harmony with one who dwelt with such exceeding and growing emphasis on the secondary nature, not only of all that was cere- monial, but on much that was dogmatic, as compared with that which was spiritual and moral.

By the '' Evangelical" section of the religious world the bio- grapher of Arnold had been looked on from the first with more than suspicion. Later on, even the mode and form of his defence of their own side in the Gorham controversy, his avowed advocacy of a wide freedom of thought on many questions, especially those connected with Biblical criticism, his attitude towards such sub- jects as inspiration, justification, and future punishment, were more than distasteful. His loud acknowledgment of the debt owed by Christendom to German theology, ''to the most laborious, truth- seeking, and conscientious of Continental nations," his persistent claims for a place within the Church of England for views that "went to the verge of Rome," the more than width—the universality —of his religious sympathies, his delight in placing, not Walter Scott only, or Tennyson, or the author of Hece Homo, but Goethe, and Burns, and Matthew Arnold, and J. Stuart Mill in the ranks of religious teachers, were naturally repugnant to those who cared to read his works, and were not content to shrink in silent dismay from the warm sympathizer with Professor Maurice, the enthusi- astic admirer of F.

Robertson, and the apologist in turn of Essays and Reviews and of Bishop Colenso.

Against the feelings provoked by this aspect of his theological position, neither his acknowledged services to Biblical study, nor his profound and entire belief in the true key to the difficulties of the future being involved in the prosecution of that study, nor his sympathy with their own views as to the relation of the individual soul to God, nor his repeated, his almost daily assertions of the sacredness and value of the gospel history, or of the regenerative power of the Divine life and person of Christ as the ‘‘one Master worth living for, worth dying for,” could avail much. Whatever the feelings of individuals, the organs of the party of whose once imperilled claim to remain within the fold of the Church of England he had been the staunchest upholder spoke of him from first to last with almost unqualified aversion. He was, or became in due time, even more obnoxious to at least the more advanced section of the High Church party. Nor was this to be wondered at. The differences between him and them were vital and funda- meutal; and, even where he defended their right—at one time repeatedly challenged—to maintain their distinctive views and observances in the Church of England, he rested their claim on grounds which would hardly win their approval or gratitude. The more clear-sighted of their leaders felt that, if the points of ceremonial, of dress, posture, attitude, ritual, on which they laid exceeding stress, were treated by him with toleration, they were regarded with an indifference that verged upon contempt, as tolerabiles ineptiw, and that he delighted to trace their historical development, and to strip them of all that was essential, signi- ficant, or primitive. They felt even more strongly that in that which, to the leaders at least, gave their real interest and im- portance to all questions of vestments or observances, and even underlay some of the most important questions of religious doc- trine, —the very cxistence of an order of priesthood as the divinely and exclusively commissioned channel of communication between God and man,—the rejection on the part of Stanley of their most cherished and central dogma was absolute and uncompromising. And the difference of view was vital. Much else in his writings might have been welcomed or condoned. His love for the past, his deep and full synipathy with much in the medieval church, his warm admiration for many of its saints and heroes, his aversion to mere iconoclasm, his poetic and imaginative sensibility, had

much to attract them. Even in his treatment of many important religious subjects it was often not so much his actual sentiments as the tendency—the more than tendency, the avowed aim—of all his writings to promote freedom of inquiry and of thought, rather

STANET Y

than submission to church authority, which provoked hostility. But on this question there was no room for compromise. That which they and he alike recognized as the fundamental tenet to which all their distinctive teaching pointed he spoke of as a belief ‘*that they (the clergy) were the depositaries of mystical, super- natural, almost magical influence, independent of any moral or spiritual graces,” and on this point he spoke with no doubtful voice, It was, he said, this belief in a “‘ fixed, external, necessary medium on earth between the soul and God which, if he had rightly read the Psalms of David, the epistles of Paul and the gospel of Christ, true religion is always striving to dispense with,” and “‘the more it can be dispensed with, the nearer and the higher is the com- munion of the human spirit with its Maker and its Redecmer.” And this language (used in 1867) was in entire accordance with the manner in which in his latest volume (1881) he hinted at the possi- bility of ‘‘the growing materialism of the ecclesiastic sacristy so undermining the spiritual element of almost the only external ordinance of Christianity (the Eucharist), unquestionably the greatest religious ordinance in the world,” ‘‘as even to endanger the ordinance itself.” In addition to this fundamental divergence of view, it must be remembered that it was to this party, as the representatives of one ‘‘always forgetful in its gratitude and im- placable in its vengeance,” that he looked for the main danger to freedom of thought and width of comprehension in the future, and that he did not hesitate to remind them, even as he supported their claims to the largest possible interpretation of the Articles, that they ‘‘claimed a latitude themselves which they constantly refused to others.” It will be easily understood therefore that whatever influence Stanley wielded in the church was wholly in- dependent of either of the two great parties into which he found it mainly divided, above all of that which at the time of his death appeared to be every year growing in power and confidence.

What was the extent, what the permanent force of his own influence, is a question not easily answered at present. ‘‘ Dean Stanley,” said Dr Story, “stood higher in the respect and affection of a larger and more varied circle of members of many churches than any ecclesiastic in the world.” It is not easy to disengage his personal and social charm, the affection borne him by all who had even momentarily passed within the circle of his striking and attractive individuality, the warm feelings which much in his life, much in his writings, had called forth from multitudes who never saw him, from the more abiding impression made during his lifetime and after his death by the writings which he has left behind him. Yet if, setting aside one single name, that of Prof. Maurice, he be taken as the most prominent, the most fertile, the most gifted, and the most impressive exponent and defender of liberal theology, some estimate may be formed even now of the mark which he made upon his age. It would be easy to under- value the effect of the work which he did. It might seem at first sight as if his own gloomier anticipations had been fulfilled. He spoke from time to time of a danger of the age being overwhelmed, now by ‘‘a general return of forgotten superstitions,” now “bya general chaos of incredulity,” and of himself as ‘‘having perhaps done no more than make good a starting point for those who come after us, perhaps in the 20th or 2ist century.” He might have seemed to enter into the spirit of his father’s words, ‘‘ My only hope and consolation is that I am a pioneer for better days, and that the seed which I aim, as far as can be, at sowing may bring forth fruit when I am gone to a better and more peaceful world.” But such a view would be to a large extent superficial. If the success achieved by the cause of which Stanley was the main representative is carefully weighed, it will be found to be great in solid and direct results, far greater probably in those which are less easily summed up and tabulated. On the questions which he had most at heart, the real and careful and critical study of the sacred records, the progress made since he first lectured as a tutor at Oxford on the Old and New Testaments has been enormous. The large majority of the works published have been written more or less in the spirit in which he would have largely or entirely sympathized. It may be added that of these there are few which would not have encountered, if not fierce criticism, yet at least grave suspicion, some forty years ago. The combination of a reverent treatment of Holy Scripture with fearless inquiry into all questions connected with its criticism is a new birth im English literature. It is one in which he took a leading part, and in

the defence of which he bore, sometimes in his own behalf, oftener in chivalrous defence of others, much of the brunt of the earlier and later contests. The impulse which he gave to the study alike of the Bible and church history was a great one. In each he may be recognized, not of course as the originator, but as the representative, of a new school of thought and of treatment, and those who are most familiar with his writings can hardly open a new book by any English theologian, hardly read_a sermon of many preachers, above all on any portion of the Old Testament, in which they do not trace his immediate influence. He may be said in a very true sense to colour the writings of many of those who most differ from him, The subjects to which he looked as

2+ + <=

STA—S TA

the most essential of all—the universality of the Divine love, the supreme importance of the moral and spiritual elements of religion, the supremacy of conscience, the sense of the central citadel of Christianity as being contained in the character, the history, the spirit of its Divine Founder—have beyond doubt, if not yet taken fully the place which he claimed for them, yet impressed them- selves more and more on the teaching and the preaching of every elassof clergy inthe church. They have lifted the teaching of those who most differed from him far above the level of a mechanical or merely ceremonial form of medieval worship. The great cause too for which he strove so hard, that of comprehension and mutual toleration, the true ‘‘enlargement of Christ’s church,” has gained much from his efforts,—much in the present, and perhaps, in spite of some appearances to the contrary, more in the future. What- ever storms of party strife may be in store for the church, active and energetic Christians of opposite parties no longer waste their energies in mutual attacks, but have lcarned to work together in Christian teaching and in works of Christian beneficence. His surviving friends may rejoice to remember that no one person had, for, it may be, many generations, done so much as Stanley to draw together in friendly and social intercourse the leaders of various religious partics and of different denominations of Christians. Those who live, and feel that they live, in an age of transition eannot venture to prophesy the precise form and

colour of the religious movement which will in due time succeed that which now seems to be the most prevalent and the most outwardly active. But they may be permitted to hold that its main features were descried and anticipated, even if dwelt on with excessive emphasis, by Stanley, to believe that the next phase of a Christian theology which shall regain a due ascendency over the thought and intell1- gence of the civilized world will be embodied in some larger realization of ‘‘the one unchangeable element in Christianity,” of the witness borne by the teaching and life of Christ to the higher and spiritnal nature and destinies of man and to the “principles of freedom, justice, toleration, beneficence, self-denial, universal sympathy, and fearless love of truth, in which all the hopes of a true and permanent development of Christian theology must take their stand.” None will have laboured more earnestly in this cause than Arthur Stanley. (G. G. B.)

STANTON, Epwin M‘Masters (1833-1869), American statesman, was born in Ohio, December 19, 1814, graduated at Kenyon College in 1833, and was admitted to the bar of his native State. Just at the end of Buchanan’s ad- ministration in 1860-61, Stanton was called upon to act as attorney-general. In 1862, after the inauguration of Lincoln, the new president, who had had great difficulties with his war office, placed Stanton at its head, where he was at home at last. His intense vigour, excellent organ- izing powers, and scrupulous honesty were the life of the Federal war department throughout the Civil War; and it may be worth while to note that, after living through boundless opportunities of peculation, he died, like most of the public servants of the United States, a poor man. In spite of his many services to the country, it was not always easy for his associates to get on with him com- fortably ; and his quarrels with President Johnson were especially bitter in 1867-68, ending in the impeachment of Jonson by the House of Representatives. On the acquittal of the president Stanton resigned, and resumed the practice of law. President Grant, in 1869, made him @ justice of the supreme court; but his work during the war had worn him out, and he died December 24, 1869.

STARAYA RUSSA, a district town of Russia, in the government of Novgorod, 62 miles to the south of that city, on the river Polist, by means of which and Lake Ilmeii it is brought into easy steamer communication with St Petersburg. Some brine springs, of no great strength, on the eastern side

of the town, were used as a source for the supply of salt as late as 1865, yielding about 50,000 ewts. annually ; at present they are used only as mineral waters, having a great resemblance to those of Kreuznach. Some thousands of visitors resort to them every summer, and owing to this circumstance Staraya Russa is better built and kept than any other town in Novgorod. The 13,100 inhabitants are supported chiefly by the summer-visitors. About 100 individuals in all employ theinselves in brick-making, tanning, and sawing timber, and there

is a trade in rye, oats, and flax shipped to St Petersburg to the value of about £50,000 per annum.

The name of Staraya Russa occurs in the Russian annals as far back as 1167. It was one of the minor towns of the republic of Novgorod, and suffered continually in the wars for possession of the region between Russia, Lithuania, and Livonia. It was after- wards annexed to Moscow.

STARCH is an organized product of the vegetable kingdom, forming one of the most important and characteristic elements of plant life, and an abundantly stored reserve material for the discharge of vegetative functions. It originates within the living vegetable cell through the formative activity of chlorophyll under the influence of light, and is consequently an unfailing characteristic of all plants containing that body (compare PuysIoLocy, vol. xix. p. 54). Starch found within leaves and other green parts of plants is assimilated and trans- formed with great rapidity; accumulations of it are carried as starch-formers, and redeposited as starch in special reservoirs or portions of plants as the period of maturity approaches. In this way the body is found to gorge the stems of certain palms—the sago, &c.—just before these plants begin to form their fruit; it is the principal con- stituent of the underground organs of biennial and peren- nial plants, tap-roots, root-stocks, corms, bulbs, and tubers ; and it is abundantly stored in many fruits and seeds, as in the cereals and pulses, in bananas, bread-fruit, &c. It occurs in minute granules varying in diameter from 1 to 100 and even 200 micromillimetres; and the granules from different sources have each a distinct microscopic character, their forms and size being, however, affected according as they are aggregated in clusters or individually formed (see vol.

ii. p. 631, figs. 3 to 6). Under the micro- scope these granules are seen to consist of a nucleus or hilum surrounded by layers arranged concentrically or ex- centrically, and the relations of hilum and layers are the most distinctive features of individual starches. Whether the hilum point bears to the granule the relation of a nucleus is a matter of dispute, the general opinion being that the grains are formed from without inwards, the centre being invariably the softest and most soluble portion, while the outer layers are most closely related to cellulose. Starch consists of a white or yellowish-white glistening powder, which on being rubbed between the fingers emits a crackling sound. It is only slightly acted on by cold water, but under the influence of heat in water it swells up, forming according to the proportions of starch and water a clouded opalescent paste. Iodine acts on it in water by producing a brilliant blue coloration, this reaction forming a very delicate and characteristic test. Diastase and dilute boiling sulphuric acid convert starch into a form soluble in hot water, whence it passes into a series of easily soluble dex- trins, and finally into the condition of the sugars, dextrose and maltose. In its chemical relations starch consists of an intimate mixture of two isomeric bodies,—granulose and starch cellulose, —or rather of a series of gradations from the one to the other, the starch cellulose being principally in the external layers, while the granulose is found in the central portions of the granules. Starch cellulose is a body intermediate between granulose and ordinary cellulose ; from the latter it is distinguished by being reducible to soluble starch by boiling in water and by digesting in caustic alkali. Together, the substances consist of a com- bination of carbon with hydrogen and oxygen, the com- monly received formula being C,H,0,+2H,O; but Nageli, Sachsse, and many other recent investigators show reason why the molecule should be regarded as consisting Of Cg Oneal 2,0.

As an economic product starch in its separate condition is a most important alimentary substance, the chief pure

food starches being ARRowRoorT, Saco, Tapioca (9q-0-); and corn-flour, the starch of the Maize (q.v.). In its combined condition, in cereals, &c., starch is certainly the greatest and foremost of all the elements of nutrition

(com- pare Dinrerics and Nurririon). In its. other industrial relations starch is used—(1) directly, as a thickening material in calico printing, for the dressing and finishing of many textiles, for laundry purposes, adhesive paste, and powder ; and (2) indirectly, for the preparation of dextrin and British gum and starch sugar. Maize, wheat, and rice starch are principally employed for the direct applications ; and for the dextrin and starch-sugar manufacture potato starch is almost exclusively selected.

Iu the preparation of starch the object of the manufacturer is to burst the vegetable cell walls, to liberate the starch granules, and to free them from the other cell contents with which they are associated. When, as in the case of the potato, the associated cell contents, &c., are readily separated by solution and levigation the manufacture is exceedingly simple. Potato starch is prepared principally by carefully washing the potatoes and in a kind of rasping machine reducing them toa fine pulp, which is deposited in water as raw starch. The impurities of this starch—cellulose, albuminoids, fragments of potato, &c.—are separated by washing it in fine sieves, through the meshes of which the pure starch alone passes. The sieves are variously formed, some revolving, others moving horizontally or in such manner as to keep the material in agitation. Thestarch is then received in tanks, in which it settles, and so separates from the soluble albuminoids and salts of the potatoes. The settling of the starch is much retarded by the dissolved albuminoids, and to hasten the separation small quanti- ties either of alum or of sulphuric acid are employcd. Alum coagulates the albumen and to that extent contaminates the starch, while the acid acts on the starch itself and is difficult of neutralization. After the starch has settled, the brown-coloured supernatant liquor is drawn off and the starch again washed either in tanks or in a centrifugal machine. Finally it is dried by spreading it in layers over porous bricks (a process not required in the case of starch washed in a centrifugal machine) and by exposure to the air, after which it still retains a large proportion of water, but is in a condition for making dextrin or starch-sugar. For further drying it is ground to a rough powder, and dried thoroughly in a hot chamber, then reduced to a powder and sifted. A method of reducing potatoes to a pulp by slicing and heaping them up till fermentation takes place is said to give a large yield of starch, but it is not much practised.

In dealing with the starches of the cereals, there is greater difficulty, owing to the presence of gluten, which with water forms a tough elastic body difficult of solution and removal. The difficulty is experienced in greatest measure in dealing with wheat, which contains a large proportion of gluten. Wheat starch is separated in two different ways—(1) the fermentation method, which is the original process, and (2) by mechanical means without preliminary fermentation. In the fermentation process whole wheat or wheaten meal is softened and swollen by soaking in water. Wheat grains are, in this condition, ground, and the pulp, mixed to a thickish finid with water, is placed in tanks, where it ferments, developing acctic and volatile acids which dissolve the gummy constituents of the wheat, with part of the gluten, and render the whole less tenacious. After full fermentation, the period of which varies with the weather and the process employed, the starch is separated in a washing drum. It is subsequently washed with watcr, which dissolves out the gluten, the starch scttling in two layers,—one comparatively pure, the other mixed with gluten and some branny particles. These layers are separated, the second undergoing further washing to remove the gluten, &c., and the remaining operations are analogous to those employed in the preparation of potato-starch. By the mechanical process wheaten flour is kneaded into a stiff paste, which, after resting for an hour or two, is washed over a fine sieve so long as the water passing off continues milky, whereby the starch is liberated and the greater part of the gluten retained as a gluey elastic mass in the sicve. The starch is subsequently purified by fermentation, washing, and treatment in centrifugal machines. The gluten thus preserved is a useful food for diabetic patients, and is made with flour into artificial macaroni and pastes, besides being valuable for other industrial purposes.

Maize starch is obtained by analogous processes, but, the pro- portion of gluten in the grain being smaller, and less tenacious in its nature, the operations, whether chemical or mechanical, present fewer difficulties. Under one method the separation of maize starch is facilitated by steeping, swelling, and softening the grain ina weak solution of caustic soda, and favourable results are also obtained by a process in which the pulp from the crushing mill is treated with water acidulated with sulphurous acid.

In the preparation of rice-starch a weak solution of caustic soda is also employed for softening and swelling the grain. It is then washed with pure water, dried, ground, and sifted, and again treated with alkaline water, by which the whole of the nitrogenous — constituents are taken up in soluble form. An acid process for obtaining rice-starch is also employed, under which the grain, swollen and ground, is treated repeatedly with a solution of hydrochloric acid, which also dissolves away the non-starchy con- stituents of the grain. The laundry starches now in_ use are principally made from rice and from pulse. (J. PA.)

STAR-CHAMBER, the name given in the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries to an English high court of justice, consisting of the members of the ordinary council, or of the privy council only, with the addition of certain judges, and exercising jurisdiction, mainly criminal, in certain cases, The origin and early history of the court are somewhat obscure. The Curia Regis of the 12th century, combining judicial, deliberative, and administrative functions, had thrown off several offshoots in the Court of King's Bench and other courts, but the crown never parted with the supreme jurisdiction whence the subsidiary courts had emanated. When in the 13th century the council became a regular and permanent body, practically distinct from the parliament of estates, this jurisdiction continued to be exercised by the king in council. As the ordinary law- courts became more systematic and important, the inde- finite character of the conciliar jurisdiction gave rise to frequent complaints; and efforts, for the most part fruitless, were made by the parliaments of the 14th century (eg., in 15 Edw. II. and 2 Edw. IIL) to check it. The equitable jurisdiction of the chancellor, which grew up during the reign of Edward III., flowed from this supreme judicial power, like the common law- courts under Henry II., but without drying up the original source. It is in the reign of Edward ILI. that we first hear of the 'chancellor, treasurer, justices, and others" exercising jurisdiction in the "star-chamber" or "chambre de estoiles" at Westminster. In Henry VI's reign one Danvers was acquitted of a certain charge by the king's council "in camera stellata." Hitherto such Acts of Parliament as had recognized this jurisdiction had done so only by way of limitation or prohibition, but in 1453, about the time when the distinction between the ordinary and the privy council first became apparent, an Act was passed by which the chancellor was empowered to enforce the attendance of all persons summoned by the privy

seal before the king and his council in all cases not determinable by common law. At this time, then, the jurisdiction of the council was recognized as supplementary to that of the ordinary law-courts. But the anarchy of the Wars of the Roses, and the decay of provincial justice owing to the influence of great barons and the turbulence of the lower classes, obliged parliament to entrust wider powers to the council. This was the object of the famous Act of 3 Hen. VII., which was quoted by the lawyers of the Long Parliament as creating the court of star- chamber. This, however, as is shown above, it was far from doing. The Act of 3 Hen. VII. empowered @ committee of the council, consisting of the chancellor, treasurer, privy seal, or any two of them, with the chief justices, or in their absence two other justices, a bishop, and a temporal lord, to act as a court of justice for enfore- ing the law in cases where it was thwarted by bribery, intimidation, or partiality. The jurisdiction thus entrusted to a committee of the council was not, therefore, like that granted in 1453, supplementary, but superseded the ordinary law-courts in cases where they were too weak to act. The Act simply supplied machinery for the exercise under special circumstances of that extraordinary penal jurisdiction which the council had never ceased to possess. This jurisdiction, Bacon tells us, was still further developed and organized by Wolsey. The court established by the

Act 3 Hen. VII. continued to exist for about fifty years, but disappeared towards the end of Henry VIII.’s reign. Its powers were not lost, but fell back to the general body of the council, and were among the most important of those exercised by the council sitting in the star- chamber. A court not unlike that created in 3 Hen. VII. was erected in 1540. The Act of 31 Hen. VIII., which gave the king’s proclamations the force of law, enacted that offenders against them might be punished by the usual officers of the council, together with some bishops and judges, “in the star-chamber or elsewhere.” These powers also came after a time, like those granted in 1488, to be exercised by the council at large instead of by certain members of it. It is clear, however,—and this was one of the chief complaints against the court,—that the jurisdic- tion which belonged by law or custom to the whole body of the king’s council was usurped at this time by the inner body of advisers called the privy council, which had engrossed all the other

functions of the larger body. Sir T. Smith (temp. Eliz.) tells us that juries misbehaving “were many times commanded to appear in the star- chamber or before the privy council for the matter.” The uncertain composition of the court is well displayed by Coke, who says that the star-chamber is or may be com- pounded of three several councils—(1) the lords and others of the privy council, (2) the judges of either bench and the barons of the exchequer, (3) the lords of parliament, who are not, however, standing judges of the court. Hudson (temp. Car. I.), on the other hand, considers that all peers had a right of sitting in the court. The latter class had, however, certainly given up sitting in the 17th century. The jurisdiction of the court was equally vague, and, as Hudson says, it was impossible to define it without offending the supporters of the prerogative by a limitation of its powers, or the common lawyers by attributing to it an excessive latitude. In practice its jurisdiction was almost unlimited. It took notice of maintenance and liveries, bribery or partiality of jurors, falsification of panels or of verdicts, routs and riots, murder, felony, forgery, perjury, fraud, libel and slander, offences against proclamations, duels, acts tending to treason, as well as of a few civil matters,—disputes as to land between great men or corporations, disputes between English and foreign merchants, testamentary cases, &c.,—in fact, ‘all offences may be here examined and punished if the king will” (Hudson). Its procedure was not according to the common law; it dispensed with the encumbrance of a jury ; it could proceed on mere rumour or examine wit- nesses ; it could apply torture ; it could inflict any penalty short of death. It was thus admirably calculated to be the support of order against anarchy or of despotism against individual and national liberty. During the Tudor period it appeared in the former light, under the Stuarts in the latter. It was abolished by the Long Parliament in 1641, and was never afterwards revived.!

Authoritics.—Smith, Commonweaith of England; Bacon, Reign of Henry VII.; Hudson, Treatise of the Court of Star-Chamber (Col- lectanea Juridica, vol. ii.); Hallam, Const. Hist. of England ; Gneist, Engl. Verfassungsgeschichte; Dicey, The Privy Cowncil (Arnold Prize Kssay), ‘The pleadings in the star-chamber are in the Record Office ; the decrees appear to have been lost. (G. W. P.)

STARGARD, an ancient manufacturing town in eastern Pomerania, Prussia, is situated on the left bank of the navigable Ihna, 20 miles to the east of Stettin. Formerly a member of the Hanseatic League, the town retains memorials of its early importance in the large church of

‘ The name is probably derived from the stars with which the roof of the chamber was painted; but it has also been derived from a Hebrew word shetar, or sh’tar, a bond, on the supposition that the room was that in which the legal documents connected with the Jews were kept prior to their expulsion by Edward I.

St Mary, built in the 14th and 15th centuries, the 16th- century town-house, and the well-preserved walls with gateways and towers dating from the 14th century. The extensive new law-courts and three large barracks are among the modern buildings. Stargard has a consider- able market for cattle and horses, and carries on trade in grain, spirits, and raw produce. Its manufactures include cigars, tobacco, wadding, and stockings; and there are also iron-foundries and linen and woollen factories in the town. The population in 1885 was 22,109 (in 1816 8706), of whom about 730 were Roman Catholics and about 560 Jews.

Stargard, mentioned as having been destroyed by the Poles in 1120, received town-rights in 1229, and became the capital of eastern Pomerania. As a Hanseatic town it enjoyed considerable commercial prosperity, but had also to undergo siege and capture in the Middle Ages and during the Thirty Years’ War. In 1807 it was taken by Schill. The name Stargard (from the Slavonic Starograd or Starigrod, meaning “old town”) is common to several other towns in the north of Germany, of which the chief are Prussian Stargard, near Dantzic, and Stargard-in-Mecklenburg.

STARLING (A.S. Ster, Stearn, and Sterlyng; Lat. Sturnus; Fr. Etourneau), a bird long time well-known in most parts of England, and now, through the exten- sion of its range within the present century, in the rest of Great Britain, as well as in Ireland, where, though not generally distributed, it is very numerous in some districts. It is about the size of a Thrush, and, though at a distance it appears to be black, when near at hand its plumage is

seen to be brightly shot with purple, green, and steel-blue, most of the feathers when freshly grown being tipped with buff. These markings wear off in the course of the winter, and in the breeding-season the bird is almost

spotless. It is the Stwrnus vulgaris of ornithologists.

To describe the habits of the Starling® within the limits here allotted is impossible. A more engaging bird scarcely exists, for its familiarity during some months of the year gives opportunities for observing its ways that few others afford, while its varied song, its sprightly gestures, its glossy plumage, and, above all, its character as an insecticide—which last makes it the friend of the agriculturist and the grazier—render it an almost universal favourite. The worst that can be said of it is that it occasionally pilfers fruit, and, as it flocks to roost in autumn and winter among reed-beds, does considerable damage by breaking down the stems.* The congrega- tions of Starlings are indeed very marvellous, and no less than the aerial evolutions of the flocks, chiefly before settling for the night, have attracted attention from carly times, being mentioned by Pliny (Hist. Naturalis, x. 24) in the 1st century. The extraordi- nary precision with which the crowd, often numbcring several hundreds, not to say thousands, of birds, wheels, closes, opens out, rises, and descends, as if the whole body were a single living thing— all these movements being executed without a note or cry being uttered—must be seen to be appreciated, and may be seen repeatedly with pleasure. For a resident, the Starling is rather a late breeder. The nest is commonly placed in the hole of a tree or of a building, and its preparation is the work of some little time. The eggs, from 4 to 7 in number, are of a very pale blue, often tinged with green. As the young grow they become very noisy, and their parents, in their assiduous attendance, hardly less so, thus occasionally making themsclves disagreeable in a quiet neighbourhood. The Starling has a wide range over Europe and Asia, reaching India; but examples from Kashmir, Persia, and Armenia have been considered worthy of specific distinction, and the resident Starling of the countries bordering the Mediterranean is generally regarded as a good species, and called S. wnicolor from its unspotted plumage.

Of the many forms allied to the genus Sturnus, some of

which have perhaps been needlessly separated therefrom, those known as Grackies (vol. xi. p. 26) have been already mentioned, and there is only room here to notice one other, Pastor, containing a beautiful species P. rosews,

2 They are dwelt on at some lengthin Yarrell's British Birds, ed, 4, vol. ii. pp. 229-241.

3 A most ridiculous and unfounded charge has been, however, more than once brought against it—that of destroying the eggs of Skylarks. There is little real evidence of its sucking eggs, and much of its not doing so; while, to render the allegation still more absurd, it has been brought by a class of farmers who generally complain that Skylarks themselves are highly injurious.

er — ss

the Rose-coloured Starling, which is not an unfrequent visitor to the British Islands.

the chemical factories are in private hands. About 2000

It isa bird of most irregular | workmen are employed in the Stassfurt salt-industry, and

and erratic habits—a vast horde suddenly arriving at some | about 490,000 tons of raw salt are annually excavated, place to which it may have hitherto been a stranger, and | The population of the town, which contains one or two

at once making a settlement there, leaving it wholly deserted as soon as the young are reared. 'This happened in the summer of 1875 at Villafranca, in the province of Verona, the castle of which was occupied in a single day by some 12,000 or 14,000 birds of this species, as has been graphically told by

Sig. de Betta (Ati del FR. Ist. Veneto, ser. 5, vol. ii.);+ but similar instances have been before recorded,—as in Bulgaria in 1867, near Sniyrna in 1856, and near Odessa in 1844, to mention only some of which particulars have been published.? (A. N.)

STARODUB, a district town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Tchernigoff, 116 miles to the north-east of that town, on the marshy banks of a small tributary of the navi- gable Sudost. It is regularly built, with broad straight streets, the houses being surrounded by large gardens. Its 23,890 inhabitants —Little Russian descendants of former Cossacks, with about 5000 Jews— support themselves chiefly by gardening and agriculture. Tanning is also carried on, and the trade in corn and hemp exported to Riga and St Petersburg has some importance.

Starodub at one time played a prominent part in the history of the Ukraine. As early as the 11th and 12th centuries it was a bone of contention between different Russian princes, who appre- ciated the value of its strategic position. Thc Mongols seem to have destroyed it, and its name does not reappear till the 14th century. During the 15th and 16th centuries the Russians and Lithuanians were continually disputing the possession of its fortress, a a the beginning of the 17th century it became a stronghold of

oland.

STARO-KONSTANTINOFF, a district town of Russia, in the government of Volhynia, situated 121 miles to the west-south-west of Zhitomir. It is an old-fashioned, poorly built town, dating from the 16th century, and is often mentioned in history in connexion with the rising of Cossacks under Bogdan Khmeluitzky. Owing to its excellent position close to the Austrian frontier and its railway communication with south-west Russia, it has a very active trade in corn, cattle, and salt with Austria, Prussia, and Poland. Its population (17,980 in 1884, of whom two-thirds were Jews) is rapidly increasing.

STASSFURT, a town in the Prussian province of Saxony, and one of the chief seats of the German salt- producing industry, is situated on both sides of the Bode, 19 miles to the south-west of Magdeburg. Although saline springs are mentioned here as early as the 13th century, the first attempt to

bore for salt was not made until 1839, while the systematic exploitation of the salt- beds, to which the town is indebted for its prosperity, dates only from 1856. The shafts reached deposits of salt at a depth of 850 feet, but the finer and purer layers lie more than 1100 feet below the surface. Besides the rock-salt, which is excavated by blasting, the saline deposits of Stassfurt yield a considerable quantity of deliquescent salts and other saline products, which have encouraged the foundation of numerous chemical factories in the town and in the neighbouring village of Leopolds- hall, which stands upon Anhalt territory. The formation of the Stassfurt salt-beds and the composition of the rock- salt are described under Sar (vol. xxi. pp. 231, 232). The rock-salt works are mainly Government property, while

1 A partial translation of this paper is given in the Zoologist for 1878, pp. 18-22.

? It is remarkable that on almost all of these occasions the locality pitched upon has been, either at the time or soon after, ravaged by locusts, which the birds greedily devour. Another fact worthy of attention is that they are often observed to affect trees or shrubs bearing rose-coloured flowers, as Neriwm oleander and Robinia viscosa,

among the blossoms of which they themselves may easily escape notice, for their plumage is rose-pink and black shot with blue.

miscellaneous factories, was 16,457 in 1885.

STATE, Great Orricers or. All the principal ministers of the British crown are popularly called the great officers of state. Under this designation are more or less accur- ately included the premier for the time being, the other members of the cabinet, and the leading functionaries of the court. But properly speaking the great offices of state are only nine in number, and it is to the holders of them alone that the description of “the great officers of state” strictly and distinctively applies. They are the lord high steward, the lord high chancellor, the lord high treasurer, the lord-president of the privy council, the lord-keeper of the privy seal, the lord great chamberlain, the lord high constable, the earl marshal, and the lord high admiral. Of these, three—the lord chancellor, the lord-president of the council, and the lord privy seal— are the first and second always and the third almost always

cabinet ministers. ‘The offices of two more—those of the lord treasurer and the high constable—are now executed by commission, the chief of the lords commis- sioners, known severally as the first lord of the treasury and the first lord of the admiralty, being likewise members of the cabinet, while the first lord of the treasury is usually at the head of the Government, But, although it has become the rule for the treasury and the admiralty to be put in commission, there is nothing except usage of longer or shorter duration to prevent the crown from making a personal appointment to either of them, and the functions which formerly appertained to the lord treasurer and the high admiral are still regularly performed in the established course of the national administration. The four offices of the high steward, the great chamberlain, the high constable, and the earl marshal stand on a different footing, and can be regarded at the present day as little else than survivals from an earlier condition of society. They have practically ceased to have any relation to the ordinary routine of business in the country or of cere monial in the palace, and the duties associated with them have either passed entirely into abeyance or are restricted within extremely narrow limits, save on certain occasions of exceptional pomp and solemnity. All of them were once hereditary, and, taking the three kingdoms together, they or their counterparts and equivalents continue to be held by right of inheritance in one or other of them even now. ‘The prince of Wales is the hereditary great steward of Scotland, and the earl of Shrewsbury is the hereditary grand seneschal of Ireland. The great chamberlainship of England is held jointly by Lady Willoughby de Eresby and Lord Carrington on the one part and on the other part by the marquis of Cholmondeley. The hereditary high constable of Scotland is the earl of Erroll, and the hereditary earl marshal of England is the duke of Norfolk. It is of the great offices of the steward, the chamberlain, the constable, and the marshal that we shall at present speak, the rest of those we have mentioned being dealt with under their proper headings, or in the articles CABINET, Ministry, Privy Councit, and Rovant HousEHoLp.

The lord high steward of England ranks as the first of Lord His office is called out of #¥4

the great officers of state. abeyance by commission under the great seal only for coronations and for trials by the House of Lords. At the former he

bears the crown of St Edward immediately before the sovereign in the procession to Westminster Abbey, and he presides at the latter on the arraignment of a peer or a peeress for treason or felony. From the reign of Richard II. to that of Henry VIL. it was the duty of the

| in

lord high steward to sit judicially in the court of claims to hear and determine all claims to render services of grand serjeanty to the king or queen at his or her coronation. Since the accession of the house of Tudor, however, this function has generally been discharged by a specially appointed commission, or a committee of the privy council. According to the tradition once current among lawyers and antiquaries, the steward of England was, under the Norman and Angevin kings, the second personage in the realm, the viceroy in the absence and the chief minister in the presence of the sovereign. Coke says, on the more than doubtful authority of an ancient manuscript, that his office was to superintend under the king and next after the king the whole kingdom and all the ministers of the law within the kingdom in time of both peaceand war. But of this there is no satisfactory evidence. It is not improbable that the steward of England may for a short period after the Con- quest have occupied a position analogous to that of the Saxon heah-gerefa or that of the Norman seneschal, or of the two in combination. But, as Stubbs points out, the chief minister and occasional viceroy, either alone or with others, of the Conqueror and his earlier successors was the person to whom the historians and the later constitutional writers give the name of justiciarius with or without the prefix “summus” or “capitalis.” He adds that most likely the Norman seneschalship was the origin of the English justiciarship, that under Henry II. the seneschal of Nor- mandy receives the name of justiciar, and that it is only in the same reign that the office in England acquires the exclusive right to the definite name of “summus” or “capitalis justitiarius” or ‘“‘justitiarius totius Angliz.” But whatever may have been his original condition the steward had been by that time at the latest eclipsed in his most important functions by the justiciar, and he makes, as Stubbs observes, in his official capacity no great figure in English history. By the reign of Henry II. at any

rate all connexion between the stewardship and the justiciar- ship had come to an end; and, while the second retained its authority unimpaired until its extinction, the first be- came a grand serjeanty, primarily annexed to the barony of Hinckley, it is said, and afterwards to the earldom of Leicester. On the attainder of Simon de Montfort the earldom and stewardship were forfeited, and both were granted by Edward I. to his brother Edmund Plantagenet, earl of Lancaster, from whom they descended to the daughter and eventual heiress of Henry Plantagenet, duke of Lan- caster. She was the first wife of John of Gaunt and the mother of Henry IV. On the accession of her son to the throne they became merged in the crown, from which period the stewardship has been revived only hac vice from time to time as occasion required. It is indeed to John of Gaunt that the pre-eminent position accorded to the office since the end of the 14th century is really due. It emerged from the comparative obscurity in which it had rested for nearly three hundred years as soon as he became the tenant of it by courtesy in right of his deceased wife. As far as any records show to the contrary he was the first steward of England who took part in the coronation of a king or queen, and he was certainly the first steward of England who sat in the court of claims or who presided at a trial by the House of Lords. It seems to have been by him also that the precedence of the stewardship before all the other great offices of state was secured, a restoration or aug- mentation of rank which is the more remarkable in that the steward of Scotland gave place to the chamberlain and the seneschal of Ireland gave place to the constable of the two kingdoms respectively. John of Gaunt may be regarded, In fact, as the creator of the lord high stewardship and all its privileges and prerogatives as they have existed from 18 days to our own.

459

The lord great chamberlain of England ranks as the sixth great officer of state. Whenever the sovereign attends the palace of Westminster the keys are delivered to him, and he is for the time in command of the building. At the opening or closing of the session of parliament by the sovereign in person he disposes of the sword of state to be carried by any peer he may select, and walks him- self in the procession on the right of the sword of state, a little before it and next to the sovereign. He assists at the introduction of all peers into the House of Lords on their creation, and at the

homage of all bishops after their consecration. At a coronation he receives the regalia from the dean and chapter of Westminster, and distributes them to the personages who are to bear them in the cere- mony. On that day it is his duty to carry the sovereign his shirt and wearing apparel before he rises and to serve him with water to wash his hands before and after dinner. The chamberlain was originally a financial officer; his work, Stubbs says, was rather that of auditor or accountant than that of treasurer; he held a more definite position in the household than most of the other great officers, “and in the judicial work of the country he was only less im- portant than the justiciar.” The office was hereditary in the Veres, earls of Oxford, from the reign of Henry I. to the reign of Charles I., when it passed through an heiress to the Berties, Lords Willoughby de Eresby, and after- wards earls of Lindsey and dukes of Ancaster, and from the Berties it was transmitted through coheiresses to the present inheritors of the dignity. The Stuarts, dukes of Lennox, were hereditary great chamberlains of Scotland in the 16th and 17th centuries. The office on their ex- tinction was granted by Charles II. to James, duke of Monmouth and Buccleuch, on whose attainder it passed to Charles, duke of Richmond and Lennox, by whom it was surrendered to the crown in 1703.

The lord high constable of England ranks as the seventh of the great officers of state. His office is called out of abeyance for coronations alone, when it is his duty to assist in the reception of the regalia from the dean and chapter of Westminster, and during the coronation ban- quet to ride into Westminster Hall on the right hand of the champion. The constable was originally the com- mander of the royal armies and the master of the horse. He was also one of the judges of the court of chivalry or court of honour. The constableship was granted as a grand serjeanty with the earldom of Hereford by the empress Maud to Milo of Gloucester, and was carried by his heiress to the Bohuns, earls of Hereford and Essex. Through a coheiress of the Bohuns it descended to the Staffords, dukes of Buckingham ; and on the attainder of Edward Stafford, third duke of Buckingham, in the reign of Henry VIII. it became merged in the crown. The Lacys and Verduns were hereditary constables of Ireland from the 12th to the 14th century; and the Hays, earls of Erroll, have been hereditary constables of Scotland from early in the 14th century until the present time.

Lord great chamber-

Lord

high con-

stable.

The earl marshal of England ranks as the eighth of the Earl

great officers of state. arms, and has the appointment of the kings-of-arms, her- alds, and pursuivants at his discretion. He attends the sovereign in opening and closing the session of parliament, walking opposite to the lord great chamberlain on his or her right hand. It is his duty to make arrangements for the order of all state processions and ceremonials, espe- cially for coronations and royal marriages and funerals. Like the lord high constable he rides into Westminster Hall with the champion after a coronation, taking his place on the left hand, and with the lord great chamberlain he assists at the introduction of all newly-created peers into the House of Lords. The marshal appears in the feudal

He is the head of the college of marshal.

armies to have been in command of the cavalry under the constable, and to have in some measure superseded him as master of the horse in the royal palace. He exercised joint and co-ordinate jurisdiction with the constable in the court of chivalry, and afterwards became the sole judge of that tribunal. The marshalship of England was made hereditary in the Clares and Marshals, earls of Pembroke, in the reign of Stephen or Henry IT., and through a co- heiress passed to the Bigots, earls of Norfolk, and by

Roger Bigot, fifth earl of Norfolk, it was surrendered |

with his other dignities to Edward I. It was granted by Edward II. to his brother Thomas of Brotherton, earl of Norfolk, and, after it had been variously disposed of by Edward IIL, was by Richard II. erected into an

earldom and conferred on Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk, who was the great-grandson and heir of Thomas of Brother- ton. One of the coheiresses of the Mowbrays was the mother of John Howard, duke of Norfolk, who was created earl marshal by Richard III. After several attainders and partial restorations in the reigns of the Tudors and the Stuarts, the earl marshalship was finally entailed by Charles II. on the male line of the Howards, with many specific remainders and limitations, under which settlement it has regularly descended to the present duke of Norfolk. The Clares and Marshals, earls of Pembroke, and the Lords Morley appear to have been hereditary marshals of Ireland from the invasion of the island until the end of the 15th century. The Keiths were Earls Marischal of Scotland from the institution of the office by James II. in 1458 until the attainder of George, the tenth earl, in 1716. On the subject of the great offices of state generally, see Stubbs, Constitutional History, ch. xi.: Freeman, Norman Conquest, ch. xxiv.; Gneist, Constitution of England, ch. xvi., xxxv., and liv.; also Gibbon, Decline and Fall, ch. liii., and Bryce, Holy Roman Empire, ch. xiv. (F. DR.)

STATEN ISLAND, an island of New York State, forming, with some adjacent islands, Richmond county, with a population of 38,991 in 1880, is situated about 5 miles south of New York city, from which it is separated by New York Bay, while the Narrows, commanded by Forts Wadsworth and Tompkins and a line of water- batteries, separate it from Long Island on the north-east, Staten Island Sound from New Jersey on the west, and Newark Bay and the Kill van Kull from the same State on the north. It is of an irregular triangular shape, its greatest length being about 13 miles, its greatest breadth about 8, and the total area 584 square miles. The surface is gently undulating, but a range of hills attaining 310 feet in height extends across the northern portion. Iron

ore is found. The island contains many detached villa }

residences of persons in business in New York. On an artificial island off the east shore is the New York quarantine establishment, and Staten Island is the seat of the “ Sailors’ Snug Harbour,” a retreat for superannuated seamen. Steam ferries ply half-hourly to New York, and on the island there is a railway line from Tompkinsville to Tottenville.

STATE PAPERS. See Recorps, PuBtic.

STATES OF THE CHURCH, or Parat Srarzs (Ital. Stato della Chiesa, Stato Pontificio, Stato Romano, Stato Ecclesiastico ; Fr. Etats de V Eglise, Pontificat Sowverain de Rome, &e.; Germ. Kirchenstaat; in ecclesiastical Latin often Patrimonium Sancti Petri), that portion of central Italy which, previous to the unification of the kingdom, was under the direct government of thesee of Rome. The territory stood at the close as in the annexed table.

With the exception of Benevento, surrounded by the Neapolitan province of Principato Ulteriore, and the small state of Pontecorvo, enclosed within the Terra di Lavoro, the States of the Church formed a compact territory, bounded on the N.W. by the Lombardo-Venetian kingdom,

on the N.E. by the Adriatic, on the S.E. by the kingdom of Naples, on the 8.W. by the Mediterranean, and on the W. by the grand-duchy of Tuscany and the duchy of

Area in

English Square 7 Pree Miles. ;

Comarca of Rome®...scc.ccc-sesecseeeeeee 1752°8 326,509 WO: ... 5. gsccecreece ee eee 1859°2 375,681 @ | PORTA 2s.. cevesccsssseparesseaeoreee 1094 244,524 a HOTLY «vas onset seenene ooeecaccm meee: 718°8 218,483 8, RAVENNA’. cceebessmes meee oes oreo 701°5 175,994 iG Unrbinosswithe besauowres-ss101 see 1414°6 257,751 Of re ee. 571°3 62,013 (AANOOWAS, « 5s scascewares eness cence eer 441°8 176,519 Ma cerntita..ccsomttnes reer cotee 895 243,104 (OfrnitVoy abe Vo mauaeerenc sousoaccoacocadsonder 320 42,991 1 D155 00,0) ae ERR Ie ca eneraer. ociciondo: sou / 110,321 B | ASCO]L….cccceeccesseetseeeesseeeeees 476°3 91,916 JS o| MOUIONE....: 02. cee ccaceeenennorenee 1555°5 234,533 See IES DONEUD: «. .004’s secanneanawronelemengemeaee 1175°9 135,029 ee | HCE a 2s sss ete ces comemecn ee 531°7 73,683 a a Au ieiC Ye} aan ppooncnnocenpeeconacsasacasad 1158°9 128,324 OMaEEOn ee .uusckte esos cas eenoee nets 316°6 29,047 Civita Vecchiapecs.ccssusae-c cee 380

20,701 Frosinone, with Pontecorvo…..... 739 °9 154,559 (Benevento…..... Pres os 613 23,176

3,124,758

Modena. On the Adriatic the coast extended 140 miles,

from the mouth of the Tronto (Truentus) to the southern mouth of the Po, and on the Tyrrhenian Sea 130 miles, from 41° 20’ to 42° 22’ N. lat. See vol. xiii. Plate VL

The divisions shown above were adopted on December 21, 1827, the legations being ruled by a cardinal and the delegations by a prelate. Previously the several districts formally recognized were Latium, the Marittima (or sea- board) and Campagna, the Patrimony of Saint Peter, the duchy of Castro, the Orvietano, the Sabina, Umbria, the Perugino, the March of Ancona, Romagna, the Bolognese, the Ferrarese, and the duchies of Benevento and of Pontecorvo.

The question of the origin of the territorial jurisdiction of the pope has been treated under Poprpom (vol. xix. p. 495). With the moral and ecclesiastical decay of the papacy in the 9th and 10th centuries much of its territorial authority slipped from its grasp; and by the middle of the 11th century its rule was not recognized beyond Rome and the immediate vicinity. By the treaty of Sutri (February 1111) Paschal II. was eompelled by the emperor Henry V. to surrender all the possessions and royalties of the church; but this treaty was soon afterwards repudiated, and by the will of Matilda, countess of Tuscany, the papal see was enabled to lay claim to new territories of great value. By the capitulation of Neuss (1201) Otto IV. recognized the papal authority

over the whole tract from Radicofani in Tuscany to the pass of

Ceperano on the Neapolitan frontier—the exarchate of Ravenna, the Pentapolis, the March of Ancona, the bishopric of Spoleto, Matilda’s personal estates, and the countship of Brittenoro ; but a good deal of the territory thus described remained for centuries an object of ambition only on the part of the popes. The actual annexation of Ravenna, Ancona,

Bologna, Ferrara, &c., dates from the 16th century. The States of the Church were of course sub- merged for a time by the ground-swell of the French Revolution, but they appeared again in 1814. In 1849 they received a consti- tution. On the formation of the kingdom of Italy in 1860 they were reduced to the Comarca of Rome, the legation of Velletri, and the three delegations of Viterbo, Civita Vecchia, and Frosinone; and in 1870 they disappeared from the political map of Europe.

STATICS. See Mecuanics.

STATIONERY. Under the name of stationery are embraced all writing materials and implements, together with the numerous appliances of the desk and of mercantile and commercial offices. In addition to these, the term fancy stationery covers a miscellaneous assemblage of leather and other goods, such as pocket-books, purses, bags, card-cases, and many kindred objects which cannot be classified. The principal articles and operations of the stationery trade are dealt with in detail under separate headings—BooxkBInDING, Empossine, Ink, LITHOGRAPBY,

Paper, Pen, Pencit, SEALING-wAx, &c.; but in connexion with the separate industry of a conimercial stationer there are a number of special operations and machines to which brief allusion may be made.

Paper-Ruling.—The ruling of blue and other coloured lines is usually done on a self-feeding machine provided with as many ruling pens as there are lines to be made, and these fixed in parallel order at intervals the width of the ruled spaces. The pens consist of grooved slips of sheet brass coming to a fine point, which in their upper part are covered by a sheet of felt saturated with a flowing ink, whence each pen obtains the supply required for tracing its line. The paper is carried forward by endless tapes or threads whieh pass around cylinders. In a recent form of machine the rulers consist of metal disks with thin edges, which take up printing ink from an india-rubber cylinder, and print the lines on the paper as it passes around a revolving cylinder.

Paper-Folding machinery is used for numerous purposes in the stationery trade, apart from its application to the folding of sheets for the bookbinder. Devices for folding come most prominently forward-in connexion with the envelope manufacture, an industry which received an enormous development by the introduction of uniform postage rates. In envelope-making the folding is com- monly associated with gumming, and sometimes with embossing, in the same system of machinery. The first efficient automatic machine for envelope manufacture was devised by Edwin Hill and Warren de la Rue,land by them patented in 1845. Many forms of envelope folding and gumming machine now exist. In making envelopes the blanks are first cut out by shaped cutters or punches acting at one stroke on a thickness of froin 200 to 300 sheets of paper. These blanks in the latest form of machine are gummed by a pad which takes gum from a roller and presses it on the edges of the paper, just as printing ink is received from cylinders and pressed on paper in printing. The gummed surface of the pad lifts each blank separately, places it under a plunger, which, descend- ing, passes it to folders, whencc it is ere into a clip in an endless band of considerable length. The envelopes are delivered into the elips in the band at the rate of about 100 to 150 per minute.

Perforating and Punching give rise to a range of machines of varied form and complexity. The idea of perforating paper so as to allow of the ready detaching of portions by tearing was conceived and patented in 1848 by Mr Henry Archer. Of such utility was Mr Areher’s conception deemed by the post-office authorities as a con- venience for detaching stamps from sheets that in 1853 he was awarded £4000 for his patent rights. The applications of perfora- tion are now very numerous, but its value still remains most obvious in connexion with the detachment of adhesive stamps from sheets.

Numbering and Paging constitute another series of stationery operations, for which ingenious machines have been devised. For consecutive numbering a series of printing disks are employed, on the spy phery of which the series of digits 1 to 0 are ~ The outer

isk moves a number after each impression, the second disk moves

onee in ten times, and so on, thus automatically imprinting consecu-

tive numbers up to the limit of the disks on the machine. Such a machine prints only on one side of the paper, and where the numbering is required on both sides the disks must be geared to move two places, numbering only odd or even numbers, two print- ings being thus required. For printing right and left consecutively an endless band machine is used, which prints alternately below and above for the two sides of the sheet.

STATISTICS. The word “statistic” is derived from the Latin status, which, in the so-called Middle Ages, had come to mean a “state” in the political sense. “ Statis- tic,” therefore, originally denoted inquiries into the con- dition of a state. Since the beginning of the 18th century the denotation of the word has been extended so as to melude subjects only indirectly connected with political organizations, while at the same time the scope of the Investigations it implies has become more definite, and at the present day may be said, for practical purposes, to be fixed, though there are still controversies as to the position of statistical studies in relation to other departments of Scientific procedure.

History.—The origin of what is now known as “statistic” (Ger. Die Statistik; Fr. La Statistique; Ital. Statistica) can only be referred to briefly here. As M. Maurice Block has observed in commencing his admirable treatise,

‘It is no exaggeration to say that statistic has existed ever since there were states.” For the first administra- tive act of the first reeular Government was probably to

some degree of accuracy what amount of taxation could be levied on the remainder of the community. As human societies became more and more highly organized, there can be no doubt that a very considerable body of official statistics must have come into existence, and been con- stantly used by statesmen, solely with a view to adminis- tration. The Romans, who may be described as the most business-like people of antiquity, were careful to obtain accurate information regarding the resources of the state, and they appear to have carried on the practice of taking the census, a very comprehensive statistical operation, with a regularity which has hardly been

surpassed in modern times. As to the efficiency of the work done we have unfortunately very little information, but those who are curious on the subject may be referred to an article by Dr Hildebrand, entitled ‘‘Die amtliche Bevolkerungs- statistik im alten Rom,” printed in the Jahrbuch fiir Nationalikonomie und Statistik, 1866, p. 82.

Statistics, or rather the material for statistics, therefore existed at a very early period, but it was not until within the last three centuries that systematic use of the informa- tion available began to be made for purposes of investiga- tion and not of mere administration. According to M. Block, the earliest work in which facts previously known only to Government officials were published to the world was a volume compiled by Francesco Sansovino, entitled Del Governo et Amministrazione di Diversi Regmi et Repub- liche, which was printed in Venice and bears the date 1583. Other works of a similar kind were published towards the end of the 16th century in Italy and France. Regarding these and other early books on the subject reference may be made to Fallati’s Hinleitung in die Wissenschaft der Statistik, Dr G. B. Salvioni’s preface and notes to his translation into Italian of Dr Mayr’s work on statistics, and other authors mentioned at the close of this article.

Works on state administration and finance continued to be published during the first half of the 17th century, and the tendency to employ figures, which were hardly used at all by Sansovino, became more marked, especially in England, where the facts connected with “bills of mortality” had begun to attract attention.

In the year 1660 Hermann Conring, “professor of medicine and politics,” a rather odd combination, in the university of Helmstidt, was in the habit of giving lectures in which he analysed and discussed the circum- stances existing in various countries, in so far as they affected the happiness of the inhabitants. Conring’s example was followed by other writers, in Germany and elsewhere, to whom reference is made by Block (Z’raité, pp. 5, 6) and Haushofer (Lehr- und Handbuch, p. 10, note).

ue best-known member of the ‘‘descriptive” school was Achenwall (1719-1772), who is sometimes spoken of as “the father of modern statistics,” but, as his procedure was essentially the same as that of Conring, though it was

carried out more fully, the title has not been unanimously granted. It is generally admitted, however, that Achen- wall's work gave a great impulse to the pursuit of the studies which are now included under the title of statis- tics. He called his book Staatsverfassung der ewropdischen Reiche in the first two editions (1749, 1752), meaning "Constitution of the States of Europe." Subsequently he added "vornehmsten" and then "heutigen" before " europaischen," evidently with the desire of bringing his work, which may be regarded as the germ of such volumes as the Statesman's Year-Book, "up to date." Achenwall is usually credited with being the first writer who made use of the word "statistics," which he applied to his

number its fighting men, and its next to ascertain with | collection of "noteworthy matters regarding the state"

(Staatsmerkwiirdigkeiten), but the claim has been disputed by M. Block, who points out that the term collegiwm statisticum had been previously employed by Schmeitzel, a follower of Conring, whose lectures at Jena were no doubt attended by Achenwall.

In any case statistics, in the modern sense of the word, did not really come into existence until the publication by J. P. Siissmilch, a Prussian clergyman, of a work entitled Die gittliche Ordnung in den Verdnderungen des Mensch- lichen G'eschlechts aus dem Geburt, dem Tode, und der Lortpflanzung desselben erwiesen. In this book a system- atic attempt was made to make use of a class of facts which up to that time had been regarded as belonging to "political arithmetic," under which description some of the most important problems of what modern writers term 'vital statistics" had been studied, especially in England. Siissmilch had arrived at a perception of the advantage of studying what Quetelet subsequently termed the "laws of large numbers." He combined the method employed by the Conring-Achenwall school of 'descriptive statistics," whose works were not unlike modern school-books of geo- graphy, with that of the " political arithmeticians," who had confined themselves to investigations into the facts regarding mortality and a few other similar subjects, without much attempt at generalizing from them.

Political arithmetic had come into existence in England in the middle of the 17th century, or about the time when Conring was instructing the students of Helmstidt. The earliest example of this class of investigation is the work of Captain John Graunt of London, entitled Natural and Political Annotations made upon the Bills of Mortality, which was first published in 1666. This remarkable work, which dealt with mortality in London only, ran through many editions, and the line of inquiry it sug- gested was followed up by other writers, of whom the most distinguished was Sir William Petty, whose active mind was naturally attracted by the prospect of making use of a new scientific method in the class of speculations which occupied him. Sir William was the first writer to make use of the phrase which for nearly a century after- wards was employed to describe the use of figures in the investigation of the phenomena of human society. He called his book on the subject, which was published in 1683, Five Essays in Political Arithmetick. Other writers, of whom Halley, the celebrated mathematician and astronomer, was one, entered on similar investigations, and during the greater part of the 18th century the num- ber of persons who devoted themselves to “arithmetical ” inquiries into problems of the class now known as statis- tical was steadily increasing. Much attention was given to the construction of tables of mortality, a subject which had a great attraction for mathematicians, who were eager to employ the newly-discovered calculus of probabilities on concrete problems. Besides Halley, De Moivre, Laplace, and Kuler busied themselves with this branch of study. Attempts were also made to deal with figures as the basis of political and fiscal discussion by Arthur Young, Hume, and other historical writers, as well as by the two Mirabeaus.

It is now necessary to return to Siissmilch, who, as already mentioned, endeavoured to form a general theory of society, based on what were then termed “arithmetical ” premisses, treated nearly on the lines laid down by Achen- wall. In modern language, he made use of quantitative aggregate-observation as an instrument of social inquiry. It is true he did not enter on his investigation with an ‘‘open mind.” He desired to support a foregone conclu- sion, as the title of his work already mentioned shows. But nevertheless his work was a most valuable one, since it pointed out a road which others who had no desire to

procure evidence in favour of a particular system of thought were not slow to follow. M. Block makes the following remarks on the influence exercised on his con- temporaries by the work of Siissmilch :—“ If the author of the Géttliche Ordnung had been a professor his influence would have been much greater than it was. In maintain- ing that the movement of population is subject to law, that there is a regularity in the recurrence of such pheno- mena which allows of their being foreseen, he cast into the public mind a leaven which has evidently contributed to the progress of science.” Although for many years after the appearance of Stissmilch’s book there was a good deal of resistance to the introduction of “arithmetic” as the coadjutor of moral and political investigations, yet, practi- cally there was a tacit admission of the usefulness of figures, even by the chiefs of the so-called “ descriptive” school. On the other hand Siissmilch’s success was the origin of a “mathematical” school of statisticians, some of whom carried their enthusiasm for figures so far that they refused to allow any place for mere “ descriptions ” at all. These two schools have now coalesced, each admitting the importance of the point of view urged by the other. They were, however, still perceptibly distinct even as late as 1850, and the ignorant hostility with which many people even among the cultivated classes still regard statistical inquiries into the nature of human society may be re- garded as a survival of the much stronger feeling which showed itself among ‘‘orthodox” professors of law and economics on the publication of Siissmilch’s treatise.

M. Block is of opinion that the descriptive school, by whom figures are regarded merely as accessories to and illustrations of the text, would have maintained its position even now but for the establishment of official statistical offices and the influence of the great Belgian Quetelet. Quetelet’s work was certainly ‘“ epoch-making” in a far higher degree than that of any of his predecessors. To the impulse created by him must be attributed the founda- tion in 1835 of the Statistical Society of London, a body which, though it has contributed little to the discussion of the theory of statistics, has had a considerable and very useful influence on the practical work of carrying out statistical investigations in the United Kingdom and elsewhere. Quetelet’s works were numerous and mullti- farious, but his most important

contribution to the growthof statistical inquiry was his investigation of the theory of pro- babilities as applied to the “ physical and social ” sciences, contained in a series of letters to the duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, and published in 1846. Quetelet was above all things an exponent of the “laws of large numbers.” He was especially fascinated with the tendency to relative constancy of magnitude displayed by the figures of moral statistics, especially those of crime, which inspired him with a certain degree of pessimism. His conception of an average man (l’homme moyen) and his disquisition on the “curve of possibility” were most important contribu- tions to the technical development of the statistical method, though, as M. Block observes, their value may have been somewhat exaggerated by subsequent writers (Block, ch. i. p. 16, and ch. v. p. 112 sg.). It is ge possible to enter at length into Quetelet’s work in con- nexion with statistical science. At the close of this article will be found a list including those of his works which are likely to be of use to students of statistics.

The influence exercised by Quetelet on the development of statistics is clearly seen from the fact that, though there is still considerable controversy among statisticians, the old controversy between the ‘‘descriptive” and arith- metical schools has disappeared, or perhaps we should say has been transformed into a discussion of another kind, the question now at issue being whether there is a science

hea FIST PCs

of statistics as well as a statistical method. It is true that a few books were published between 1830 and 1850 in which the politico-geographical description of a country is spoken of as “statistics,” which is thus distinguished from “political arithmetic.” The title of Knies’s great work, Die Statistik als selbstandige Wissenschaft (Cassel, 1850), is especially noteworthy as showing that the nature of the controversy was changing. The opponents of Siissmilch maintained that ‘‘ political arithmetic” ought not to be spoken of as statistics at all. They clung to the concep- tions of Conring and Achenwall, to whom “statistics ” represented ‘“‘Staatenkunde” or “ Staatszustandskunde,” or, as Herzberg, one of Achenwall’s followers, called it, “die Kenntniss von der politischen Verfassung der Staaten.” Knies claimed that the really ‘‘scientific” portion of statistics consisted of the

figures employed. As Haushofer says, “his starting point is political arithmetic.”

Some eminent statisticians of the latter half of the present century agree with Knies, but the majority of the modern writers on the theory of statistics have adopted a slightly different view, according to which statistics is at once a scvence relating to the social life of man and a method of investigation applicable to all sciences. This view is ably maintained by Mayr, Haushofer, Gabaglio, and Block, who may be taken to represent the opinions held by the majority of statisticians on the Continent.

Having dealt as far as was possible, within the limits of this article, with the history of statistics, we may here enter a little more minutely into the views of the existing Continental school. This is all the more necessary because, singular to say, there has been no systematic exposition of the subject in England. Isolated dicta have been furnished by high authorities, such as the late Dr W. A. Guy, Prof. Ingram, Sir Rawson W. Rawson, Mr Robert Giffen, and to some extent also by John Stuart Mill, Buckle, Sir George Cornewall Lewis, and other historical and economic writers. There are also monographs on particular points connected with the technique of statistical investigation, such as the contribution made by Mr F. Y. Edgeworth to the discussions at the jubilee of the Statistical Society in 1885, and some of the observations contained in @ paper by Mr Patrick Geddes, entitled An Analysis of the Principles of Economics, read before the Royal Society of Edinburgh in 1884. Prof. Foxwell has also lectured on the subject of statistics in his capacity of Newmarch lecturer at University College, London. But there has been no attempt to deal with the subject in a systematic way. The practice of statistical inquiry, on the other hand, has been carried on in England with a high degree of success.

With regard to the few invasions of the domain of theory attempted by English writers, it may be observed that the authorities above mentioned are not unanimous. Dr Guy as well as Sir Rawson Rawson, who handled the subject with great ability at the jubilee meeting of the London Statistical Society in June 1885, both claim that Statistics is to be regarded as an independent science, apart from sociology, while Prof. Ingram, who presided over Section F at the Dublin meeting of the British Association in

1878, maintained that statistics cannot Occupy a position co-ordinate with that of sociology, and went on to say that they ‘constitute only one of the aids oradminicula of science.” Mr Giffen has also expressed himself adversely to the Continental doctrine that there 1s an independent science of statistics, and this opinion appears to be the correct one, but, as Dr Guy and Sir Rawson Rawson have the support of the great body of systematic teaching emanating from distinguished Con- lnental statisticians in support of their view, while their Opponents have so far only the od:ter dicta of a few eminent men to rely upon, it appears needful to examine closely

the views held by the Continental authorities, and the grounds on which they are based.

The clearest and shortest definition of the science of statistics as thus conceived is that of M. Block, who describes it as “la science de ’homme vivant en société en tant qu’elle peut étre exprimée par les chiffres.” He proposes to give a new name to the branch of study thus defined, namely, “Demography.” Mayr’s definition is longer. He defines the statistical science as “ die systema- tische Darlegung und Erérterung der thatsichlichen Vor- gange und der aus diesen sich ergebenden Gesetze des gesellschaftlichen menschlichen Lebens auf Grundlage quantitativer Massenbeobachtungen” (the systematic state- ment and explanation of actual events, and of the laws of man’s social life that may be deduced from these, on the basis of the quantitative observation of aggregates). Gabaglio’s view is practically identical with those adopted by Mayr and Block, though it is differently expressed. He says “ statistics may be interpreted in an extended and in a restricted sense. In the former sense it is a method, in the latter a science. As a science it studies the actual social-political order by means of mathematical induction.”

This discussion regarding the nature of statistics is to a large extent a discussion about names. There is really no difference of opinion among statistical experts as to the subject-matter of statistics, the only question being— Shall statistics be termed a science as well as a method? That there are some investigations in which statistical procedure is employed which certainly do not belong to the domain of the supposed statistical science is

generally admitted. But, as already shown, an attempt has been made to claim that the phenomena of human society, or some part of those phenomena, constitute the subject- matter of an independent statistical science. It is not easy to see why this claim should be admitted. There is no reason either of convenience or logic why the use of a certain scientific method should be held to have created a science in one department of inquiry, while in others the said method is regarded merely as an aid in investigation carried on under the superintendence of a science already in existence. It is impossible to get over the fact that in meteorology, medicine, and other physical sciences statist- ical inquiries are plainly and obviously examples of the employment of a method, like microscopy, spectrum analysis, or the use of the telescope. Why should the fact of their employment in sociology be considered as authorizing the classification of the phenomena thus dealt with to form a new science ?

The most effective argument put forward by the advo- cates of this view is the assertion that statistics are merely a convenient aid to investigation in the majority of sciences, but are tle sole method of inquiry in the case of sociology. Dr Mayr especially (Gesetzmdssigkeit, &c., p. 14 sq.) makes use of this argument, and illustrates it with his usual ability; but his reasoning is very far from being conclusive. When, indeed, it is tested by reference to the important class of social facts which are named economic, it becomes obvious that the argument breaks down. Economics is a branch—the only scienti- fically organized branch—of sociology, and statistics are largely used in it, but no one, so far as we are aware, has proposed to call economics a department of statistical science. Sir Rawson W. Rawson, it is true, has boldly proposed to throw over the term “sociology” altogether, and to describe the study of man in the social state as “statistics,” but common usage is too firmly fixed to make this alteration of nomenclature practicable even if it were desirable. The existence of the works of Mr Herbert Spencer and Dr Schafile alone would render the attempted alteration abortive.

464

Although, however, the above considerations forbid the acceptance of the Continental opinion that the study of man in the social state is identical with statistics, it must be admitted that without statistics the nature of human

society could never become known. For society is an aggregate, or rather a congeries of aggregates. Not only that, but the individuals composing these aggregates are not in juxtaposition, and what is, from the sociological point of view, the same aggregate or organ of the “ body politic” is not always composed of the same individuals. Constancy of sucial form is maintained concurrently with the most extensive changes in the collocation and identity of the particles composing the form. A “nation” is really changed, so far as the individuals composing it are con- cerned, every moment of time by the operation of the laws of population. But the nation, considered sociologically, remains the same in spite of this slow change in the particles composing it, just as a human being is considered to be the same person year by year, although year by year the particles forming his or her body are constantly being destroyed and fresh particles substituted. Of course the analogy between the life of a human being and the life of a human community must not be pressed too far. Indeed, in several respects human communities more nearly resemble some of the lower forms of animal life than the more highly organized forms of animal existence. There are organisms which are fissiparous, and when cut in two form two fresh independent organisms, so diffused is the vitality of the original organism ; and the same phenomenon may be observed in regard to human communities.

Now the only means whereby the grouping of the individuals forming a social organism can be ascertained, and the changes in the groups year by year observed, is the statistical method. Accordingly the correct view seems to be that it is the function of this method to make perceptible facts regarding the constitution of society on which sociology is to base its conclusions. It is not claimed, or ought not to be claimed, that statistical inves- tigation can supply the whole of the facts a knowledge of which will enable sociologists to form a correct theory of the social life of man. The statistical method is essentially a mathematical procedure, attempting to give a quantitative expression to certain facts; and the resolu- tion of differences of quality into differences of quantity has not yet been effected even in chemical science. In sociological science the importance of differences of quality is enormous, and the effect of these differences on the con- clusions to be drawn from figures is sometimes neglected, or insufficiently recognized, even by men of unquestionable ability and good

faith. The majority of politicians, social ‘‘reformers,” and amateur handlers of statistics generally are in the habit of drawing the conclusions that seem good to them from such figures as they may obtain, merely by treat- ing as homogeneous quantities which are heterogeneous, and as comparable quantities which are not comparable. Even to the conscientious and intelligent inquirer the difficulty of avoiding mistakes in using statistics prepared by other persons is very great. There are usually “ pit- falls” even in the simplest statistical statement, the position and nature of which are known only to the persons who have actually handled what may be called the “raw material” of the statistics in question; and in regard to complex statistical statements the “ outsider” cannot be too careful to ascertain from those who com- piled them as far as possible what are the points requir- ing elucidation.

The Statistical Method.—This method is a scientific pro- cedure (1) whereby certain phenomena of ageregation not perceptible to the senses are rendered perceptible to the intellect, and (2) furnishing rules for the correct perform-

ance of the quantitative observation of these phenomena, The class of phenomena of aggregation referred to includes only such phenomena as are too large to be perceptible to the senses. It does not, ¢.g., include such phenomena ag are the subject-matter of microscopy. Things which are very large are often quite as difficult to perceive as those which are very small. A familiar example of this is the difficulty which is sometimes experienced in finding the large names, as of countries or provinces, on a map. Of course the terms ‘‘large,” “too large,” “small,” and “too small” must be used with great caution, and with a clear comprehension on the part of the person using them of the standard of measurement implied by the terms in each particular case. A careful study of the first few pages of De Morgan’s Differential and Integral Calculus will mate- rially assist the student of statistics in attaining a grasp of the principles on which standards of measurement should be formed. It is not necessary that he should become acquainted with the calculus itself, or even possess any- thing more than an elementary knowledge of mathematical science, but it is essential that he

should be fully conscious of the fact that “large” and “small” quantities can only

be so designated with propriety by reference to a common standard.

Sources whence Statistics are Derived.—The term “statistics” in the concrete sense means systematic arrangements of figures representing “primary statistical quantities.” A primary statist- ical quantity is a number obtained from numbers representing phenomena, with a view to enable an observer to perceive a certain other phenomenon related to the former as whole to parts. They represent either a phenomenon of existence ata given point of time or a phenomenon of accretion during a given period. As examples may be mentioned the number of deaths in a given district during a given time, the number of pounds sterling reccived by the London and North Western Railway during a given time, and the number of ‘inches of rain” that fell at Greenwich during a given time. Other examples are the number of tons of pig-iron lying in a par- ticular store at a given date, the number of persons residing (the term ‘‘residing” to be specially defined) in a given territory ata given date, and the number of pounds sterling representing the ‘‘ private deposits” of the Bank of England at a given date.

Primary Statistical Quantities are the result of labours carried on either (A) by Governments or (B) by individuals or public or private corporations.

A. Government Statistics. —(1) A vast mass of statistical material of more or less value comes into existence automatically in modern states in consequence of the ordinary administrative routine of departments. To this class belong the highly important statistical information published in England by the registrar-general, the returns of pauperism issued by the Local Government Board, the reports of inspectors of prisons, factories, schools, and those of sanitary inspectors, as well as the reports of the commissioners of the customs, and the annual statements of trade and navigation prepared by the same officials. There are also the various returns compiled and issued by the Board of Trade, which is the body most nearly resembling the statistical bureaus with which most foreign Governments are furnished. Most of the Government departments publish some statistics for which they are solely responsible as regards both matter and form, and they are very jealous of their right to do so, a fact which is to some extent

detrimental to that uniformity as to dates and periods which should be the ideal of a well-organized system of statistics. Finally may be mentioned the very important set of statistical quantities known as the budget, and the statistics prepared and published by the commissioners of inland revenue, by the post office, and by the national debt com- missioners. All these sets of primary statistical quantities arise out of the ordinary work of departments of the public service. Many of them have bcen in existence, in sone form or other, ever since a settled Government existed in the country. There are records of customs receipts at London and other ports of the time of Edward III., covering a period of many years, which leave nothing to be desired in point of precision and uniformity. It may be added that many of these scts of figures are obtained in much the same form by all civilized Governments, and that it is often possible to compare the figures relating to different countries, and thus obtain evidence as to the sociological phenomena of each, but in regard to others there are differenccs which make comparison difficult.

(2) Besides being respousible for the issue of what may be called administration statistics, all Governments are in the habit of ordering from time to time special inquiries into special subjects

a

SrA Tk

of interest, either to obtain additional information needful for administrative purposes, or, in countries possessed of representative institutions, to supply statistics asked for by parliaments or con- gresses. It is not necessary to refer particularly to this class of” statistical information, except in the case of the census. This is an inquiry of such great importance that it may be regarded as one of the regular administrative duties of Governments, though as the census is only taken once in a series of years it must be mentioned under the head of occasional or special inquiries undertaken by Governments. In the United Kingdom the work is donc by the registrars-general who are in office when the period for taking the census comes round. On the Continent the work is carried out by the statistical bureaus of each country,—except France, where it is under the supervision of the minister of the interior. For further information on this subject reference

may be made to the excellent chapter in M. Maurice Block's Traité entitled ‘‘ Recense- ment.” Sce also “Instructions to the Superintendent Registrar of Births and Deaths as to his duties in taking the Census,” 1871; also Census, vol. v. p. 334 sq.

B. The primary statistical quantities for which individuals or corporations are responsible may be divided into three categorics.

(1) Among those which are compiled in obedience to the law of the land are the accounts furnished by municipal corporations, by railway, gas, water, banking, insurance, and other public companies making returns to the Board of Trade, by trades unions, and by other bodies which are obliged to makc returns to the registrar of friendly societies. The information thus obtained is published in full by the departments receiving it, and is also furnished by the companies themselves to their proprietors or members.

(2) An enormous mass of statistical information is furnished voluntarily by public companies in the reports and accounts which, in accordance with their articles of association, are pre- sented to their proprietors at stated intervals. With these statistics may be classed the figures furnished by the various trade associations, some of them of great importance, such as Lloyd's, the London Stock Exchange, the British Iron Trade Association, the London Corn Exchange, the Institute of Bankers, the Institute of Actuaries, and other such bodies too numerous to mention.

(3) There are cases in which individuals have devoted themselves with more or less success to obtaining original statistics on special points. The great work done by Messrs Behm and Wagner in arriving at an approximate estimate of the population of the earth does not belong to this category, though its results are really primary statistical quantities. Many of these results have not been arrived at by a direct process of enumeration at all, but by ingeni- ous processes of inference. It need hardly be said that it is not easy for individuals to obtain the materials for any primary statistical quantity of importance, but it has been done in some cases with success.

Operations Performed on Primary Statistical Quantities. —Only a brief description of matters connected with the technique of the statistical method can be given in this article. In order to form statistics properly so called the

primary statistical quantities must be formed into tables, and in the formation of these tables lies the art of the statistician. It is not a very difficult art when the prin- ciples relating to it have been properly grasped, but those who are unfamiliar with the subject are apt to underrate the difficulty of correctly practising it.

Simple Tables.—The first thing to be done in the construction a table is to form a clear idea of what the table is to show, and to express that idea in accurate language. This is a matter which is often neglected, and it is a source of much waste of time and occasionally of misapprehension to those who have to study the figures thus presented. No table ought to be eonsidered complete Without a ‘‘ heading” accurately describing its contents, and it is frequently necessary that such headings should be rather long. It has been said that ‘you can prove anything by statistics.” This statement is of course absurd, taken absolutely, but, like most

- assertions which are widely believed, it has a grain of truth in it. If this popular saying ran ‘‘you can prove anything by tables with slovenly and ambiguous headings,” it might be assented to without hesitation. The false “ statistical” facts which obtain a hold of the public mind may often be traced to’some widely circulated table, to which either from stupidity or carelessness an erroneous or inaccurate ‘‘ heading” has been affixed.

A statistical table in its simplest form consists of ‘‘ primaries ” representing phenomena of the same class, but existing at different points of time, or coming into existence during different portions of time. This is all that is essential to a table, though other things are usually added to it as an aid to its comprehension. A table Stating the number of persons residing in each county of England on a given day of a given year, and also, in another column, the Corresponding nuinbers for the same counties on the corresponding day of the tenth year subsequently, would be a simple tabular Statement of the general facts regarding the total population of those counties supplied by two successive censuses. Various figures might, however, be added to it which would greatly add to

its clearness. There might be columus showing the increase or decrease for each county and for the whole kingdom during the ten years, and another column showing what proportion, expressed in percentages, these increases or decreases bore to the figures for the earlier of the two ycars. Then there might be two columns showing what proportions, also expressed as percentages, the figures for each county bore in each year to the figures for the whole kingdom. The nine-column table thus resulting would still be simple, all the figures being merely explicit assertions of facts which are contained implicitly in the original ‘‘ primaries.”

_ Complex Tables.—Suppose now we have another table precisely similar in form to the first, and also relating to the counties of England, but giving the number of houses existing in each of them at the same two dates. A combination of the two would form a complex table, and an application of the processes of arithmetic would make evident a number of fresh facts, all of which would be implied in the table, but would not be obvious to most people until explicitly stated.

The technical work of the statistician consists largely in opera- tions of which the processes just referred to are types.

Proportions. —The most usual and the best mode of expressing the proportion borne by one statistical quantity to another is to state it as a percentage. In some cases another method is adopted —namely, that of stating the proportion in the form ‘‘one in so many.” This method is generally a bad one, and its use should be discouraged as much as possible, the chief reason being that the changing portion of this kind of proportional figure becomes greater or less inversely, and not directly, as the phenomenon it represents increases or diminishes.

Averages.—Averages or means are for statistical purposes divided into two classes, the geometrical and arithmetical. An arithmetical mean is the sum of all the members forming the series of figures under consideration divided by their number, without reference to their weight or relative importance among themselves. A geometrical mean is the sum of such figures divided by their number, with due allowance made for their weight. An example will make this clear, and the simplest exam- ple is taken from a class of statistical quantities of a peculiar kind —namely, prices. The price of a

given article is the approximate matheniatical expression of the rates, in terms of money, at which exchanges of the article for money were actually made at or about a given hour on a given day. A quotation of price such as appears in a daily price list is, if there has been much fluctuation, only a very rough guide to the actual rates of exchange that have been the basis of the successive bargains making up the day's business. But let us suppose that the closing price each day may be accepted as a fair representative of the day's transactions, and let us further suppose that we desire to obtain the average price for thirty days. Now the sum of the prices in question divided by thirty would be the arithmetical mean, and its weak point would be that it made no allowance for the fact that the business done ou some days is much larger than that done on others; in other words, it treats them as being all of equal weight. Now if, as is actually the case in some markets, we have a daily account of the total quantities sold we can weight the members accurately, and can then obtain their geometrical mean. There are cases in which the careless use of arithmetical means misleads the student of the social organism seriously. It is often comparatively easy to obtain arithmetical means, but difficult to obtain geometrical means. Inferences based on the former class of average should be subjected to the most rigid investigation.

Before closing this short survey of the very important subject of averages or means, it is needful to discuss briefly the nature of the phenomena which they may safely be regarded as indicating, when they have been properly obtained. Given a geometric mean of a series of numbers referring to no matter what phenomenon, it is obvious tliat the value of the mean as a type of the whole series will depend entirely on the extent of divergence from it of the members of the series asa body. If weare told that there are in a certain district 1000 men, and that their average height is 5 feet 8 inches, and are told nothing further about them, we can make various hypotheses as to the structure of this body from the point of view of height. It is possible that they may consist of a rather large number of men about 6 feet high, and a great many about 5 feet 5 inches. Or the proportions of relatively talland short men may be reversed, that is, there may be a rather large number of men about 5 feet 4 inches, and a moderate number of men about 5 feet 11 inches. It is also possible that there may be very few men whose height is exactly 5 fect 8 inches, and that the bulk of the whole body con- sists of two

large groups—one of giants and the other of dwarfs. Lastly, it is possible that 5 feet 8 inches may really give a fair idea of the height of the majority of the men, which it would do if (say) 660 of them were within an inch of that height, either by excess or deficiency, while of the remainder one half were all above 5 feet 9 inches and the other half all below 5 feet 7 inches. This latter supposition would most likely be found to be approximately correct if the men belonged to a race whose average height was 5 feet 8

XM 6

s

466

inches, and if they had been collected by chance. The extent of the divergence of the items composing an average from the average itself may be accurately measured and expressed in percentages of the average, the algebraic signs + and — being employed to indicate the direction of the variation from the mean, An average may, therefore, advantageously be supplemented—(1) by a figure showing what proportion of the members from which it is derived differ from the average by a relatively small quantity, and (2) by fignres show- ing the maximum and minimum deviations from the average. The meaning of the term ‘‘ relatively small” must be considered inde- pendently iu each investigation. Further remarks on averages will be found in the works mentioned at the conclusion of this article.

Priccs.—Reference has already becn made to the peculiar class of statistical quantities known as prices, Prices in their widest sense include all figures expressing ratios of exchange. In modern society the terms of exchange are always expressed in money, and the things for which money is exchanged are—(1) concrete entities with physical attributes, such as iron or wheat; (2) immediate rights, such as those given by intcrest-bearing securities of all kinds, by bills of exchange, by railway or steamship contracts to carry either passengers or goods, and by bargains relative to the foreign exchanges; (3) contingent rights, such as those implied in policies of insurance. All these rates of exchange belong to the same category, whether they are fixed within certain limits by law, as in the case of railway charges,

or are left to be determined by the ‘“‘higgling of the market.” All these cases of price may con- ceivably come within the operation of the statistical method, but the only matter connected with price which it is necessary to refer to here is the theory of the index number.

Index Numbers.—The need for these became conspicuous dur- ing the investigations of Tooke, Newmarch, and others into the general cyclical movements of the prices of commodities; and to construct a good system of thesc may be said to be one of the highest technical aims of the statistical method. In comparing the prices of different years it was soon observed that, though whole groups of articles moved upwards or downwards simultancously, they did not all move in the same proportion, and that there were nearly always cases in which isolated articles or groups of articles moved in the opposite direction to the majority of articles. The problem aerate to statisticians therefore was and is to devise a statistical expression of the general movement of prices, in which all prices should be adequately represented. The first rough approximation to the desired result was attained by setting down the percentages representing the movements, with their proper algebraic signs before them, and adding them together algebraically. The total with its proper sign was then divided by the number of articles, and the quotient represented the movement in the prices of the whole body of articles during the period under considera- tion. It was soon seen, however, that this procedure was fatally defective, inasmuch as it treated all prices as of equal weight. Cotton weighed no more than pimento, and iron no more than umbrellas. Accordingly an improvement was made in the pro- cedure, first by giving the prices of several different articles into which cotton, iron, and other important commodities entered, aud only one price each in the case of the minor articles, and secondly by fixing on the price of some one article representing iron or cotton, and multiplying it by some number selected with the view of assign- ing to these articles their proper weights relatively to each other and to the rest. The objection to both these plans is the same,—that the numbers attached to the various articles or groups of articles are purely arbitrary; and of late years attempts have been made to obtain what may be called natwral index numbers, the most suc- cessful so far being that of Mr Robert Giffen, whose index numbers are obtained from the declared values of the imports or exports into or from the United Kingdom of the articles whose prices are dealt with. In the case of

both imports and exports Mr Giffen worked out the proportion borne by the value of each article to the total value for a series of years. Deducting the ‘‘unenumerated”’ articles, a series of nunibers was thus obtained which could be used as the means of weighting the prices of the articles in an investigation of a movement of prices. This procedure is no doubt susceptible of further improvement, like its predecessors, but it isa great advance on the arbitrary systems of index numbers employed in them.

The Desirability of Inereased Uniformity in Statistics.—One of the most serious difficulties in connexion with statistical investigations is the variety of the modes in which primaries of the same order are obtained, as regards dates and periods. This is a matter of which all persons who have occasion to use statistics are made painfully aware from time to time. Some attempts have Iately been made to introduce more harmony into the official statistics of the United Kingdom, and some years ago a committee of the Treasury sat to inquire into the matter. The committee received a good deal of evidence, and presented a report, from which, how- ever, certain members of the committee dissented, preferring to express their views separately. The evidence will be found very interesting by all who wish to obtain an insight into the genesis of the official statistics of the country. The report and evidence

were published in the June number of the Journal of the Statistical Soeicty for 1881, as well as in the usual official form.

The International Institute of Statisties.—The absence of uni- formity in statistics which is felt in England is not so marked in foreign countries, where the principle of centralization in arrange. inents of a political character is more powerful than it is here. In several Continental countries and in the Unitcd States there are statistical burcaus with definite dutics to perform. In the United Kingdom, as already remarked, the nearest approach to a central statistical office is the Commercial and Statistical Department of the Board of Trade, on which the work of furnishing such statistics as are not definitely recognized as within the province of some other state department usually falls. Various attempts have been made to introduce more uniformity into the statistics of all countries, It was with this object

that statistical congresses have met from time to time since 1853. An endeavour was made at the congress held in 1876 at Budapest to arrange for the publication of a system of international statistics, each statistical burcau nndertaking a special branch of the subject. The experiment was, however, foredoomed to be only a very partial success, first because all countries were not then and are not yet furnished with central statistical offices, and secondly because the work which fell on the offices in existence could only be performed slowly, as the ordinary business of the offices necessarily left them little leisure for extra work. In 1885, at the jubilee of the London Statistical Society, a number of eminent statistical officials from all parts of the world except Germany were present, and the opportunity was taken to organize an International Institute of Statistics with a view to remedying the defects already ascertained to exist in the arrange- ments made by the congresses. The only obstacle to securing a proper representation ofall countries was the absence of any German delegates, none of the official heads of the German statistical office being allowed to attend,—apparently on political gronnds. Since then assurauces of a satisfactory kind have been given to the German Government that their servants would be in no way committed to any course disapproved by that Government if they gave their assistance to the institute, from the formation of which it is hoped that much advantage may resnIt. For information as to the constitution and objects of the institute reference may be made to a paper by Dr F. X. von Neumann-Spallart in vol. i (1886) of the Bulletin de UInstitut International de Statistique (Rome, 1886).

Literature.—Maurice Block, Traité Théorique et Pratique de Statistique, Paris, 1878; Luigi Bodio, Della Statistica nei suot Rapporti coll’ Economia Politica, &, Milan, 1869; Antonio Gabaglio, Storia e Teoria Generale della Statistica, Milan, 1880; Max Haushofer, Lehr- u. Handbuch der Statistik, 2d cd., Vienna, 1882; K. Knies, Die Statistik als selbstindige Wissenschaft, Cassel, 1850; Georg Mayr, Die Gesetzmassigkett im Geselischaftsleben, Munich, 1877 (abridged translation in Journ. Stat. Soc., Sept. 1883; the work has also been translated into Italian with valuable notes by G. B. Salvioni, Turin, 1886); Adolphe Quetelet, various works, but especially that entitled Sur I’Homme et le Développement de ses Facultés, ou Essai de Physique Sociale, 2 vols., Paris, 1835, and Letters on the Theory of Probabilities, already referred to; Albert. C. F. Schiffle, Baw und Leben des

socialen Kérpers, Tiibingen, 1881; Herbert Spencer, Principles of Sociology, especially part ii. pp. 465 sq.; Adolf Wagner, article ‘‘ Statistik” in Buntschili-Brater’s Staatsworterbuch, vol. x. (W. HO.)

STATIUS, Pusiius Papinivs, Roman poet, lived from about 45 to 96 a.D., so far as can be judged from indications afforded by his poems. He was, to a great extent, born and trained to the profession of a poet. The Statii were of Greeco-Campanian origin, and were gentle, though impoverished, and the family records were not without political distinctions. The elder Statius, our poet’s father, was the Orbilius of his time, and taught with distinguished success at Naples and Rome. From boy- hood to age he proved himself a champion in the poetic tournaments which formed an important part of the amuse- ments of the early empire. The younger Statius declares that his father was in his time equal to any literary task, whether in prose or verse. Probably our poet inherited a modest competence and was not under the necessity of begging his bread from wealthy patrons. So far as appears he never pursued any occupation but that of poet, as poor an occupation in those days as in ours, if we may believe Juvenal and Martial. Statius certainly wrote poems t0 order (as Stlvae, i. 1, 2, ii. 7, and iii. 4), but there 1s no indication that the material return for them was im- portant to him. In his seventh satire Juvenal speaks of the immense public enthusiasm which attended the recita- tion of the Z’hebais, when the benches “were breaking” with applause; but the poet, he says, might have starved had not Paris, the favourite comedian of the day, bought from him the libretto of a comic opera. This reference

-

»s FATA US

of Juvenal deserves, however, as little to be accepted literally as his misleading allusions to Quintilian in the same satire. Of events in the life of Statius we know little. He married early a young widow, for whom he expresses tender affection in some of the few obviously sincere verses he ever wrote. From his boyhood he was victorious in poetic contests,—many times at his native city Naples, thrice at Alba, where he received the golden crown froin the hand of the emperor. But at the great Capitoline competition (probably on its third celebration in 94 A.D.) Statius failed to win the

coveted chaplet of oak leaves. No doubt the extraordinary popularity of his Thebais had led him to regard himself as the supreme poet of the age, and when he could not sustain this reputation in the face of rivals from all parts of the empire he accepted the judges' verdict as a sign that his day was past, and retired to Naples, the home of his ancestors and of his own young days. We still possess the poem he addressed to his wife on this occasion (Silv., iii. 5). It was a hard task to overcome her objections to turning her back upon the great capital. Chief among them was that which arose from a fear lest it should prove difficult to find in Naples a husband for her daughter (by her first marriage; she had no children by Statius). There are hints in this poem which naturally lead to the surmise that Statius was suffering from a loss of the emperor's favour; he may have felt that a word from Domitian would have won for him the envied garland, and that the word ought to have been given. In the preface to book iv. of the Silvae there is mention of detractors who hated our poet's style, and these may have sueceeded in inducing a new fashion in poetry at court. Such an eclipse, if it happened, must have cut Statius to the heart. He appears to have relished thoroughly the role of court-poet. The statement sometimes made that the elder Statius had been the emperor's teacher, and had bestowed many favours on him, so that the son inherited a debt of gratitude, seems to have no solid foundation. Statius lauds the emperor, not to discharge a debt, but rather to create an obligation. His flattery is as far removed from the gentle propitiatory tone of Quintilian as it is from the coarse and crawling humiliation of Martial. It isin the large extravagant style of a nature in itself healthy and generous, which has accepted the theme and left scruples behind. In one of his prefatory epistles Statius declares that he never allowed any work of his to go forth without invoking the godhead of the divine emperor. The poem on the equestrian statue of Domi- tian set up on the Capitol (Stv., i. 1) is such colossal rodomontade that if the emperor had had a grain of humour in his composition he must have died of merri- ment on receiving it. Statius had taken the full measure of Domitian's gross taste, and carefully puts conscience and sincerity out of view, lest some uneasy twinge should mar his master's enjoyment. But in one poem, that in which the poet pays his due for an invitation to the im- perial table, we have sincerity enough. Statius clearly feels all the raptures he expresses. He longs for the power of him who told the tale of Dido's banquet, and for the voice of him who sang the feast of Alcinous, that he may give forth utterance

worthy of the lofty theme. The poet Seemed, he says, to dine with great Jove himself and to receive nectar from Ganymede the cup-bearer (an odious reference to the imperial favourite Earinus). All his life hitherto has been barren and profitless. Now only has he begun to live in truth. “O ruler over all the lands, and mighty father of the world which thou hast conquered, do I, recumbent, see thee, thou hope of all mankind, and nursling of all the gods? Is it mine to gaze from near at

nd on thy features, with the wine-cup and the feast

beside me, while I am forbidden to rise?” The palace struck on the poet’s fancy like the very hall of heaven; nay, Jove himself marvels at its beauty, but is glad that the emperor should possess such an earthly babitation; he will thus feel less desire to seek his destined abode among the immortals in the skies. Yet even so gorgeous a palace is all too mean for his greatness and too small for his vast presence. ‘But it is himself, himself, that my eager eye has alone time to scan. He is like a resting Mars or Bacchus or Alcides.” Martial too swore that, were Jove and Domitian both to invite him to dinner for the same day, he would prefer to dine with the greater potentate on the earth. Pliny, however, has sketched for us the state dinners of Domitian, where the coarse contempt of the tyrant overclouded the guests, and where a man who still respected himself had torments to endure. Martial and Statius were no doubt supreme among the imperial flatterers. Each was the other’s only serious rival. It is therefore not surprising that neither should breathe the other’s name. Even if we could by any stretch excuse the bearing of Statius towards Domitian, he could never be forgiven the poem entitled ““‘ The Hair of Flavius Earinus,” Domitian’s Ganymede (Stv., iii. 4), a poem than which it would be hard to find a more repulsive example of real poetical talent defiled for personal ends. Well for Statius that he did not, like Martial, live on into the days of Nerva to write sorry palinodes! Everything points to the con- clusion that he did not survive his emperor—that he died, in fact, a short time after leaving Rome to settle in Naples. Apart from the emperor and his minions, the friendships of Statius with men of high station seem to have been maintained on fairly equal

terms. He was clearly the poet of society in his day as well as the poet of the court.

As poet, Statius unquestionably shines in many respects when compared with the other post-Augustans. He was born with exceptional talent, and his poetic expression is, with all its faults, richer on the whole and less forced, more buoyant and more felic- itous, than is to be found elsewhere in the Silver Age of Latin poetry. Statius is at his best in his occasional verses, the " St/vae," which have a character of their own, and in their best parts a charm of their own. 'The title was proper to verses of rapid workmanship, on everyday themes. Statius prided himself on his powers of improvisation, and he seems to have been quite equal to the Horatian feat of dictating two hundred lines in an hour, while standingon one leg. Theimprovisatore was in high honour among the later Greeks, as Cieero's speech for the poet Arehias indicates ; and the poetic contests common in the early empire did much to stimulate ability of the kind. Statius speaks of his ''Silvae" (preface to book i.) as having ''streamed from him under the influence of sudden inspiration, and with a certain pleasure due to their rapidity." No one poem occupied more than two days ; some eame to birth at the dinner table ; many while the poet's friend Pollius sat by his side, and shuddered at the audacity of his pen (preface to book iii.). It is to this velocity that the poems owe their comparative freshness and freedom, along with their loose texture and their inequality. There are thirty-two poems, divided into five books, each with a dedicatory epistle. Of nearly four thousand lines which the books contain, more than five-sixths are hexameters. Four of the pieces (containing about 450 lines) are written in the hendecasyllabic metre, the " tiny metre of Catullus," and there is one Aleaic and one Sapphic ode. But the pocms in these metres are merely the experiments of a poet who knows well that his strength lies in the hexameter, which in his hands shows greater frecdom, variety, and music than it exhibits when handled by other poets of the Silver Latin Age. The subjects of the '€ Silvae" are very various. Five poems are devoted to flattery of the emperor and his favourites; but of these enough has already been said. Six are lamentations for deaths, or consolations to survivors. Statins seems to have felt a special pride in this class of his produetions; and certainly, notwithstanding the excessive and conventional employment of pretty mythological pictures, with other affeetations, he sounds notes of pathos such as only come from

the true poet. There are oftentimes traits of an almost modern domesticity in these verses, and Statius, the childless, has here and there touched on the charm of childhood in lines for a parallel to which, among the ancients, we must go, strange to say, to his rival Martial. One of the epicedia, that on Priscilla the wife of Abascantus, Domitian's freedman (Silv., v. 1), is full of interest for the picture it presents of the official activity of a high

officer of state. Another group of the "' Silvae" give picturesque descriptions of the villas and gardens of the poet's friends. In these we have a more vivid representation than elsewhere of the surroundings amid which the grandees of the early empire lived when they took up their abode in the country. It was of these pieces that Niebuhr thought when he said that the poems of Statius are charming to read in Italy. They exhibit, better even than Pliny's well-known Ictters, the passion of the rich Roman for so constructing his country house that light, air, sun, and leafage should subserve his luxury to the utmost, while scope was Icft for displaying all the resources of art which his wealth enabled him to command. As to the rest of the " Silvae," the congratulatory addresses to friends are graceful but commonplace, nor do the jocose pieces call for special mention here. Jn the '* Kalendae Decembres " we have a striking description of the gifts and amusements provided by the emperor for the Roman popula- tion on the occasion of the Saturnalia. In his attempt at an epithalamium (Silv., 1. 2) Statius is forced and unhappy. But the birthday ode in Lucan's honour (Si/v., ii. 7) has, along with the accustomed exaggeration, many powerful lines, and shows high appreciation of preceding Latin pocts. Some phrases, such as "the untaught muse of high-souled Ennius" and " the lofty passion of sage Lucretius," are familiar words with all scholars. The ode ends with a great picture of Lucan's spirit rising after death on wings of fame to regions whither only powerful souls can ascend, scornfully surveying earth and smiling at the tomb, or reclining in Elysium and singing a noble strain to the Pompeys and the Catos and all the " Pharsalian host," or with proud tread exploring Tartarus and listening to the wailings of the guilty, and gazing at Nero, pale with agony as his mother's avenging torch glitters before his eyes. It is singular to observe how thoroughly Nero had been struck out of the imperial succession as recognized at court, so that the 'bald Nero" took

no umbrage when his flatterer-in-chief profanely dealt with his predecessor’s name.

The epic poems of Statius are less interesting because cast in a commoner mould, but they deserve study in many respects. They are the product of long elaboration. The ‘‘ Thebais,” which the poet says took twelve years to compose, is in twelve books, and has for its theme the old ‘‘tale of Thebes ”—the deadly strife of the Theban brothers. There is also preserved a fragment of an ‘ Achilleis,” consisting of one book and part of another. In the weary length of these epics there are many flowers of pathos and many little finished gem-pictures, but the trammels of tradition, the fashionable taste, and the narrow bars of education check con- tinually the poet’s flight. The public idea of what an epic poem should be was firmly fixed, and Statius would not have towered above the thousand poets of his day in the estimation of his countrymen had he not given full embodiment to the idea. Not merely were the materials for his epics prescribed to him by rigid custom, but also to a great extent the method by which thcy were to be treated. All he could do was to sound the old notes with a distinctive ¢imbre of his own. The gods must needs wage their wonted epie strife, and the men, their puppets, must dance at their nod ; there must needs be heavenly messengers, portents, dreams, miracles, single combats, similes, Homerie and Virgilian echoes, and all the other paraphernalia of the conventional epic. But Statius treats his subjects with a boldness and freedom which contrast pleasingly with the timid traditionalism of Silius Italicus and the stiff scholasticism of Valerius Flaccus. The vocabulary of Statins is conspicuously rich, and he shows audacity, often successful, in the use of words and metaphors. At the same time he carried certain literary tricks to an aggravating pitch, in parti- cular the excessive use of alliteration, and the misuse of mytho- logical allusion, The most well-known persons and places arc described by epithets or periphrases derived from some very remote connexion with mythology, so that many passages are as dark as Heraclitus. The hebais is badly constructed. The action of the epie is hindered and stopped by enormous episodes, one of which fills one sixth of the poem. Nor had Statius a firm grasp or clear imagina- tion of character. So trying are the late ancient epics to a modern reader that he who has read any one of the three—Statius, Silus, and Valerius (Lucan stands apart)—will with difficulty be persuaded to enter on the other two. Yet, if he honestly reads

them all, he can hardly fail to rank Statius the highest of the three by a whole sphere,

The editio princeps of the epics is dated 1470, of the Silvae 1472. Notable editions since have been those of Bernartius (Antwerp, 1595), Gronovius (1653), and Barth (1664). The best text is the Teubner (the Achilleis and Thebais by Kohlmann, the Silvae by Baehrens). Among editions of portions of Statius's works, that of the Sélvae hy Jeremiah Markland, fellow of Peterhouse in Cam- bridge (1728), deserves special attention. The brilliance and erudition of the work mark him out as one of the best Latin scholars who ever lived. A critical edition of the Thebats and Achilleis was begun by O. Miiller (1870) but not completed. The condition of the text of the S¢ivae is one of the most curious facts in the history of ancient literature. Poggio discovcred a MS. at St Gall and brought it into ltaly. This MS. has disappeared, but from it are derived all our existing MSS., except one of the birthday ode to Lucan, now at Florence, and of the 10th century. Politian collated Poggio's MS. with the editio princeps, and the collation has come down to us, and is the principal basis of the text. The MSS. of the cpics are numerous, as was to be expected from thcir great popularity in the Middle

Ages, to which Dante is witness (see Purg., xxi., where an intervi ith shade of Statius is described at some iinet s "G S R)

STA—STA

STATUTE, or Act of Parliament, is a law made by the sovereign power in the state, that is, the king, by and with the advice and consent of the lords spiritual and temporal and commons in parliament assembled. It forms a part of the lex scripta, or written law, which by English legal authorities is used solely for statutory law, a sense much narrower than it bore in Roman law. To make a statute the concurrence of the crown and the three estates of the realm is necessary. Thus a so-called statute of 5 Ric. II. c. 5, directed against the Lollards, was afterwards repudiated by the Commons as passed without their assent. The validity of a statute was indeed at times claimed for ordinances such as that just mentioned, not framed in accordance with constitutional rule, and was actually given to royal proclamations by 31 Hen. VIII. c, 8. But this Act was repealed by 1 Edw. VI. c. 12, and since that time nothing but a statute has possessed the force of a statute, unless

indeed certain rules or orders depending ultimately for their sanction upon a statute may be said to have such force. Examples of what may be called indirect legislation of this kind are orders in council (see Privy Counctt), by-laws made under the powers of the Public Health Act, and rules of court such as those made under the powers of the Judicature Acts and Acts of Sederunt of the Court of Session.

The history of statutory legislation and the modern procedure by which bills become statutes are sufficiently treated under AcT oF PARLIAMENT and PARLIAMENT. It is proposed in this place to deal with the legal rather than the political aspect of the subject, and to give a short list of some of the more important statutes which have been passed by the legislature.

The list of statutes as at present existing begins with the Statute of Merton, 1235.1 Many of the earlier statutes are known by the names of the places at which they were passed, ¢.g., the Statutes of Merton, Marlbridge, Gloucester, Westminster, or by their initial words, ¢.9., Quia Hmptores, Circumspecte agatis. The earliest existing statute roll is 6 Edw. I. (the Statute of Gloucester). After 4 Hen. VIL the statute roll ceased to be made up, and enrolments in Chancery (first made in 1485) take its place. Some of the Acts prior to the Statute of Gloucester are of question- able authority, but have gained recognition by a kind of prescription.

All statutes were originally public, irrespectively of their subject matter. The division into public and private dates from the reign of Richard III. At present statutes are of four kinds—public general Acts, public local and personal Acts, private Acts printed by the queen’s printers, and private Acts not so printed. The division into public general and public local and personal rests upon a reso- lution of both Houses of Parliament in 1798. In 1815 a resolution was passed in accordance with which private Acts are printed, with the exception of name, estate, naturalization, and divorce Acts. The last two are now practically superseded by the provisions of the Divorce Act, 1857, and the Naturalization Act, 1870. Since 1815 it has been usual to refer to public general Acts by Arabic numerals, ¢.g., 5 and 6 Vict. c. 21, public local and per- sonal Acts by small Roman numerals, ¢.g., 5 and6 Vict. ce. xxi. Each Act is strictly but a chapter of the legisla- tion of the session, which is regarded as composing a single Act divided into

chapters for convenience, the chapters themselves being also called Acts. The citation of previous Acts is provided for by 13 and 14 Vict. c. 2], § 3. It is now usual for each chapter or Act to contain

1 Ruffhead's edition of the statutes begins with the Magna Carta of 1225. But in the Revised Statutes that form of Magna Carta which is now law appears as a statute of the year 1297. It is often known

as Confirmatio Cartarum, and is a recital and confirmation by Edward I. of the chief provisions of John's charter.

SrA Ue ©

a short title by which it may be cited, e.g., the Elementary Education Act, 1870. Sometimes a series of Acts is grouped under a generic title, ¢.., the Merchant Shipping Acts, 1854 to 1883.1 8 and 9 Vict. c. 113, § 3, makes evidence the queen's printers' copies of private and local and personal Acts. A private Act not printed by the queen's printers is proved by an examined copy of the parliament roll. A public Act binds all subjects of the realm, and need not be pleaded (except where the law from motives of policy specially provides for pleading certain Acts, as in the defences of not guilty by statute, the Statnte of Frauds, and the Statute of Limitations). A private Act must generally be pleaded, and does not asa rule bind strangers to its provisions. Formerly an Act took effect from the first day of the session in which it was passed. The hardship caused by this technical rule has been obviated by 33 Geo, III. ¢. 13, by which an Act takes effect from the day on which it receives the royal assent, where no other date is named. This has been held to mean the beginning of the day, so as to govern all matters occurring on that day. An Act cannot in the strict theory of English law become obsolete by disuse. Nothing short of repeal can limit its operation. The law has, however, been interpreted in some recent cases with somewhat less rigour. In the case of a prosecution for blasphemy in 1883 (Reg. v. Ramsay) Lord Coleridge said, "though the principles of law remain unchanged, yet (and it is one of the advantages of the common law) their application is to be changed with the changing circum- stances of the times." This would be applicable as much to the interpretation of statutes as to other parts of the common law. The title, preamble, and marginal notes

are strictly no part of a statute, though they may at times aid in its interpretation.

Besides the fourfold division above mentioned, statutes are often classed according to their subject-matter, as perpetual and temporary, penal and beneficial, imperative and directory, enabling and disabling. Temporary Acts are those which expire at a date fixed in the Act itself. Thus the Army Act is passed annually and continues for a year; the Ballot Act, 1872, expired at the end of 1880, and the Regulation of Railways Act, 1873, at the end of five years. By means of these temporary Acts experimental legislation is rendered possible in many cases where the success of a new departure in legislation is doubtful. In every session an Expiring Laws Continuance Act is passed for the purpose of continuing (generally for a year) a con- siderable number of these temporary Acts. By 48 Geo. IIf. c. 106 a continuing Act is to take effect from the date of the expiration of a teniporary Act, where a bill for continuing the temporary Act is in parliament, even though it be not actually passed before the date of the expiration,

Penal Acts are those which impose a new disability, beneficial those which confer a new favour. An imperative Statute (often negative or prohibitory in its terms) makes a certain act or omission absolutely necessary, and sub- Jects @ contravention of its provisions to a penalty. A directory statute (generally affirmative in its terms) recommends a certain act or omission, but imposes no

’ A short title has been occasionally given by retrospection to an Act which did not originally possess it. For instance, the Conveyanc- Ing Act, 1881, enacts that the Act of 5 and 6 Will. IV. c. 62, the original title of which is of unwieldy length, may be cited for the future as the Statutory Declarations Act, 1835. In some cases the title has been changed. Thus the name of the Summary Procedure (Scotland) Act, 1864, was changed in 1881 to that of the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1864.

. This opinion carries out to a certain extent the view of Locke, Who in Article 79 of his Carolina Code recommended the determination

of Acts of the legislature by effluxion of time after a hundred years from their enactment.

469

penalty on non-observance of its provisions. To deter- mine whether an Act is imperative or directory the Act itself must be looked at, and many nice questions have arisen on the application of the rule of law to a particular case.

Enabling statutes are those which enlarge the common law, while disabling statutes restrict it. This division is to some extent coincident with that into beneficial and penal. Declaratory statutes, or those simply in affirmance of the common law, were at one period not uncommon, but they are now practically unknown. The Statute of Treasons of Edward III. is an example of such a statute. Statutes are sometimes passed in order to overrule specific decisions of the courts. Examples are the Factors Act, 1877, the Territorial Waters Jurisdiction Act, 1878, the Sale of Food and Drugs Act, 1879.

The construction or interpretation of statutes depends partly on the common law, partly on statute. The main rules of the common law, as gathered from the best authori- ties, are these. (1) Statutes are to be construed, not accord- ing to their mere letter, but according to the intent and object with which they were made. (2) The relation of the statute to the common law is to be considered. In the words of the resolution of the Court of Exchequer in Heydon's Case, 3 Coke's Rep., 7, the points for considera- tion are—"l, What was the common law before the making of the Act? 2, What was the mischief and defect against which the common law did not provide? 3, What remedy the parliament hath resolved and appointed to cure the disease of the Commonwealth? 4, The true reason of the remedy." (3) Beneficial or remedial statutes are to be liberally, penal more strictly, construed. (4) Other statutes in pari materia are to be taken into con- sideration. (5) A statute which treats of persons of inferior rank cannot by general words be extended to those of superior rank. (6) A statute does not bind the crown, unless it be named therein. (7) Where the pro- vision of a statute is general, everything necessary to make such provision effectual is implied. (8) A later statute repeals an earlier, as far as the two are repugnant, but, if they may stand together, repeal will not be pre- sumed. (9) There is a

presumption against creation of new or ousting of existing jurisdictions, against impairing obligations, against retrospective effect, against violation of international law, against monopolies, and in general against what is inconvenient or unreasonable. (10) Ifa statute inflicts a penalty, the penalty implies a prohibition of the act or omission for which the penalty is imposed. Whether the remedy given by statute is the only one depends on the words of the particular Act. In some cases an action or an indictment will lie; in others the statutory remedy, generally summary, takes the place of the common law remedy. In some few instances the courts have construed the imposition of a penalty as operating not to invalidate a contract but to create a tax upon non-compliance with the terms of the statute. What may be called the statutory rules of construction provide, inter alia, that any Act referring to England includes Wales and Berwick-upon-Iweed (20 Geo. II. ¢. 42), and that all words importing the masculine gender shall be taken to include females, and the singular to include the plural and the plural the singular (13 & 14 Vict. c. 21, § 4). The same Act further provides that, where any Act repealing in whole or in part any former Act is itself repealed, such last repeal shall not revive the Act or provisions before repealed unless words be added to that effect (§ 5), and that, wherever any Act shall be made repealing in whole or in part any former Act and substituting some provision or provisions instead of the provision or provisions repealed, such provision or pro-

visions so repealed shall remain in force until the sub- stituted provision or provisions shall come into operation by force of the last Act (§ 6). Numerous interpretations of particular words are contained in Acts of Parliament, either general, as “month,” ‘‘county,” “land,” and other words in 13 and 14 Vict. c. 21, § 4, or for the purposes of the Act, as “settlement” for the purposes of the Settled Land Act, 1882.

The earlier Acts are generally simple in character and language, and comparatively few in number. At present the number passed every session is enormous; in the session of 1885 it was 80 general and 190 local and personal Acts. Without going as far-as to concede with an eminent legal authority that of such legislation three- fourths is unnecessary and the other

fourth mischievous, it may be admitted that the immense library of the statutes would be but a trackless desert without trust- worthy guides. Revision of the statutes was evidently regarded by the legislature as desirable as early as 1563 (see the preamble to 5 Eliz. c. 4). It was demanded by a petition of the Commons in 1610. Both Coke and Bacon were employed for some time on a commission for revision. At times Consolidation Acts in the nature of digests of law (generally amending as well as consolidating) were passed, such as the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, and the Criminal Law Consolidation Acts of 1861. The most important action, however, was the nomination of a revision committee by Lord Chancellor Cairns in 1868, the practical result of which has been the issue of an edition of the Revised Statutes in eighteen volumes, bringing the revision of statute law down to 1878. This edition is of course subject to the disadvantage that it becomes less accurate every year as new legislation appears. An index to the statutes which are still law is published about every three years by the Council of Law Reporting.

The principal statutes may be classified under various heads according to the matter with which they deal. It should be remembered at the same time that many of them—Magna Carta, for example—might fall with equal correctness under more than one head. A division, con- venient, if not exhaustive, would be into historical, con- stitutional, legal, and social.

Listorical.—Under this head would come those Acts which to a greater or less extent mark important epochs in the national history, such as the Statute of Rhuddlan, the Acts of Union defining the relations of Wales, Scotland, and Ireland to England, the Act of Settlement, the Stamp Act of 1765—the proximate cause of the revolt of the American colonies,—the Acts abolishing the slave trade and the corn laws, and those defining the position of dependencies, such as the Act for the Better Government of India, 1858, and the British North America Act, 1867.

Constitutional.—The principal Acts of this class would be Magna Carta, the statutes De Tallagio non Concedendo and De Prerogativa Regis and those dealing with mort- main and treason, the Petition of Right, the Bill of Rights, the Septennial Act, the Royal Marriage Act, the Mutiny, Militia, Naval Discipline, and Foreign Enlist- ment Acts, and the Acts affecting the

parliamentary franchise from the time of Henry VI. to the Redistri- bution of Seats Act, 1885. Under this head too might be placed the numerous Acts dealing with the question of religion. Some of the more interesting of these are the Articult Cleri, the Statutes of Provisors, the Acts of Henry VIII. abolishing monasteries, the Acts of Supremacy and Uniformity of Henry VIII., Elizabeth, and Charles ‘i. the Toleration, Catholic Emancipation, Tithe Commuta- tion, Church Discipline, Public Worship Regulation, Irish Church, and Scottish Patronage Abolition Acts.

Legal.—The most important of this class are perhaps

the Statutes of Quia Hmptores and De Donis, the Statutes of Uses and of Wills, the Statutes of Limitation, the Statute of Frauds and its amendments, the Fines and Recoveries Act, the Conveyancing, Settled Land and Settled Estates, and Married Women’s Property Acts, and the Acts for the amendment of procedure, e.g., the Chancery Amendment, Common Law Procedure, Judica- ture, and Appellate Jurisdiction Acts.

Social.—Social legislation (other than mere sumptuary laws) is of comparatively modern introduction. Among earlier instances are the Statute of Labourers of Edward III. and the Poor Law of Elizabeth. More modern examples are the Factory, Public Health, and Artisans’ Dwellings Act, and, perhaps greatest of all, the Education Acts. Besides these there are the Acts dealing with patent, copyright, summary jurisdiction, friendly and building societies, trades unions, savings banks, theatres, commons preservation, and agricultural holdings. Acts which have trade for their special object are the Bank Charter, Merchant Shipping, Bills of Lading, Bills of Exchange, Crossed Cheques, Factors, Stamp, Licensing, Bankruptcy, and Trade Marks Acts.

The chief editions of the statutes are the Statutes of the Kealm printed by the queen’s printers, Ruffhead’s, and the fine edition issued from 1810 to 1824 in pursuance of an address from the House of Commons to George III. The safest authority is of course the Revised Statutes. Chitty’s collection of statutes of practical utility is a use- ful compilation. Among the earlier works on statute law may be mentioned the readings on statutes by great

lawyers, such as the second volume of Coke's Institutes, Bacon's Reading on the Statute of Uses, Barrington's Observations on the more Ancient Statutes from Magna Carta to the 21 Jac. I. c. 27 (5th ed. 1796), and the Introduction to Blackstone's Commentaries. Among the later works are the treatises of Dwarris (2d ed. 1848) and Sir P. B. Maxwell (2d ed. 1883) on the interpretation of statutes, and Sir H. Thring's Practical Legislation, or the Composition and Language of Acts of Parliament.

Scotland.—The statutes of the Scottish parliament before the Union differed from the English statutes in two important respects, —they were passed by the estates of the kingdom sitting together and not in separate Houses, and from 1367 to 1690 they were dis- cussed only after preliminary consideration by the Lords of Articles. An Act of the Scottish parliament may in certain cases cease to be binding by desuetude. ''To bring an Act of Parlia- ment like those we are dealing with" (i.c., the Sabbath Profana- tion Acts) ''into what is called in Scotch law the condition of desuetude, it must be shown that the offence prohibited is not only practised without being checked, but is no longer considered or dealt with in this country as an offence against law' (Lord Justice General Inglis in Bute's Case, 1 Couper's Rep., 495). Acts of the imperial parliament passed since the Union extend in general to Scotland, unless that country be excluded from their operation by express terms or necessary implication.

Ireland.—Originally the lord deputy appears to have held parliaments at his option, and their Acts were the only statutory law which applied to Ireland, except as far as judicial decisions had from motives of policy extended to that country the obliga- tion of English statutes. In 1495 the Act of the Irish parliament known as Poyning's Law or the Statute of Drogheda enacted that all statutes lately made in England be deemed good and effeetual in Ireland. This was construed to mean that all statutes made in England prior to the 18 Hen. VII. were valid in Ireland, but none of later date were to have any operation unless Ireland were specially named therein or unless adopted by the Irish parliament (as was done, for instance, by Yelverton's Act, 21 and 22 Geo. III. c. 48, i.) Another article of Poyning's Law secured an initiative of legislation to the English privy council, the Irish parliament having simply a power of acceptance or rejection of proposed legislation. The power of the parliament of Great Britain to make laws to bind the people of

Ireland was declared by 6 Geo. I. c. 5. This Act and the article of Poyning's Law were repealed in 1782, and the short-lived independence of the parliament of Ireland was recognized by 28 Geo. III. c. 28. The application of Acts passed since the Union is the same as in the case of Scotland.

STA—S TA

Colonies and Dependencies.—Acts of the imperial parliament do not extend to the Isle of Man, the Channel Islands, or the colonies, unless they are specially named therein. By 28 and 29 Vict. e. 63 any colonial law repugnant to the provisions of any Act of Parliament extending to the colony is void to the extent of such yepugnancy, and no colonial law is to be void by repugnancy to the law of England unless it be repugnant to such an Act of Parliament. For colonics without representative legislatures the crown usually legislates, subject to the consent of parliament in particular cases. For instance, it was the opinion of the judicial committee of the privy council in 1876 that a cession of British territory in India to a native state would probably need the con- eurrence of the imperial parliament (Damodhar Gordhan v. Deoram Kanji, Law Rep., 1 Appeal Cases, 332). :

United States.—By the constitutions of many States English

statute law, as it existed at the time of the separation from England, and as far as it is applicable, has been adopted as part of the law of the States. The United States and the State are not bound by an Act of Congress or a State law unless specially named. The States legislate for themselves within the limits of their own constitution and that of the United States. Here appears the striking difference between the binding force of a statute of the United Kingdom and an Aet passed by congress or a State legis- lature. In the United Kingdom parliament is supreme; in the United States an Act is only of authority if it is in accordance with the constitution. The courts may declare an Act void if it contravene the constitution of the United States or of a State, so that practically the Supreme Conrt of the United States is the ultimate legislative authority. Examples of recent eases where the constitutionality of an Act has been contested will be found under PAyMunt and Privitecr. The restrictions upon legisla- tion contained in the constitution of the United States provide against the suspension of the writ of habeas corpus, except in case of rebellion or invasion, the passing of a

bill of attainder or ex post facto law, the imposition of capitation or other direct tax, unless in accordance with a previous article of the constitution, or of a tax or duty on exports, the preference of the ports of one State over those of another, the drawing of money from the treasury except by appropriations made by law, and the grant of a title of nobility. The amended constitution contains further limitations, ¢.g., the taking of private property for public use without just compensa- tion, and the abridging of the right of citizens on account of race, colour, or previous condition of servitude. State legislation is limited by § 10:—‘‘ No State shall. .... make anything but gold and silver coin a tender in payment of debts, pass any bill of attainder, ex post facto law, or law impairing the obligation of eon- tracts, or grant any title of nobility.” The section further forbids imposition of duties on imports or exports or any duty of tonnage without consent of congress. State constitutions often contain further restrictions ; among the more usual are provisions against laws with a retrospective operation, or impairing the obligation of contracts, or dealing with more than one subject to be expressed in the title. The time when a statute is to take effect Sher its passing is often fixed by State constitutions. The statutes of the United States were revised under the powers of an Act of Congress passed in 1874 (sess. i. c. 333), and the volume of Revised Statutes (frequently amended since) was issued on February 22, 1875. Many of the States have also issued revised editions of their statutes. The rules of construction arc in general agreement with those adopted in England. See Sedgwick, Statutory Law. _ International Law.—The term statute is used by international Jurists and eivilians to denote the whole body of the municipal law of the state. In this sense statutes are either real, personal, or mixed, A real statute is that part of the law which deals directly with property, whether movable or immovable. A personal statute has for its object a person, and deals with questions of status, such as marriage, legitimacy, or infancy. A mixed statute affects both property and person, or, according to some authorities, it deals with acts and obligations. Personal statutes are of universal valid- ity; real statutes have no extra-territorial authority. The deter- mination of the class under which a particular law ought to fall is one of great difficulty, and one in which there is often a conflict of legal opinion. On the whole the division appcars to have created more difficulties than it has solved, and it is rejected by Savigny a3 unsatisfactory. Sce Story, Conflict of Laws, §§ 12-16; Philli- more, International Law, vol. iv. ch. xvi. (J. Wt.)

STATUTE MERCHANT anp STATUTE STAPLE were two old forms of security, long obsolete in practice, though references to them still occur in some modern statutes. They were originally permitted only among traders, for the benefit of commerce, but afterwards extended by 23 Hen. VIII. c. 6 to all subjects, whether traders or not. The creditor under either form of security was allowed to seize the goods and hold the lands of a

defaulting debtor until satisfaction of his debt. While he held the lands he was termed tenant by statute mer- chant or by statute staple. In addition to the loss of his goods and lands the debtor was liable to be imprisoned.

STAUNTON, a city of the United States, the county- seat of Augusta county, Virginia, lies at the foot of the Blue Ridge Mountains, on the Lewis Creek (a tributary of the Shenandoah), 136 miles west-north-west of Richmond. It is the seat of the State lunatic asylum and of the State institution for the deaf and dumb and blind, and has besides an unusual number of important educational establishments. Jron-works, planing-mills, and flour-mills represent the manufacturing interest. The population was 5120 in 1870 and 6664 in 1880.

STAUNTON, Howarp (1810-1874), Shakespearean scholar and writer on chess, was born about 1810. He was educated at Eton and Oxford, but left the university without taking a degree and settled in London, devoting much of his attention to the study of the English drama- tists of the Elizabethan age. In conjunction with this he also took a great interest in the stage, and as an amateur once played Lorenzo to the Shylock of Edmund Kean. Between 1857 and 1860 he edited in monthly parts an edition of Shakespeare published by Routledge, which has been several times reissued, and must be ranked as superior, as regards both text and notes, to any previously published. His skill as a Shakespearean commentator, combining in a remarkable degree the acuteness and caution which qualified him to excel in chess, and dis- ciplined to rare perfection by a thorough mastery of the literature of the period, is still more strikingly shown in his papers in the Atheneum on “ Unsuspected Corruptions of Shakespeare’s Text,” commenced in October 1872. These formed part of the materials intended to be made use of in an improved edition of

Shakespeare’s works which he proposed to prepare, but which for a variety of reasons was never published. In 1864 he published a facsimile of the Shakespeare folio of 1623, and a finely illustrated work entitled Memorials of Shakspeare. He was also the author of the Great Schools of England,—an Account of the Foundation, Endowments, and Discipline of the Chief Seminaries of Learning in England, 1865. An account of his career as a chess-player, and a notice of his chief publications on the game, will be found under the heading Cuxss (vol. v. pp. 601, 603). He died in London 22d June 1874.

STAVANGER, a seaport town of Norway, the adminis- trative centre of an ‘‘amt” of the same name (population 114,164 in 1876), is situated on the west coast, on the south side of a beautiful fjord, about 127 miles north-west of Christiansand. A railway to connect Stavanger with Christiania has been planned, but as yet only the terminal portions have been constructed, the Stavanger portion, which runs south to Ekersund for 47 miles, being opened in 1878. The town is for the most part a collection of narrow and irregular streets, but signs of the wealth acquired by its shipping trade and herring fishery appear in the well-built stone houses erected since the great fire of 1860. In 1884 314 vessels (70,006 tons) entered the harbour and 267 (57,479 tons) cleared. Though the bishop’s see was removed from Stavanger to Christiansand in 1685, the old cathedral of St Swithun’s, founded by the English bishop Reinald in the end of the 11th century, and rebuilt after being burned down in 1272, still remains, and, next to the cathedral of Trondhjem, is the most interesting piece of Gothic architecture in Norway. The old episcopal palace of Kongsgaard is nowa Latin school. The com- munal hospital is an important institution. The town dates from the 8th or 9th century and became the seat of a bishopric in the 13th. In 1801 the population of

Stavanger was only 2500; by 1855 it was 12,000, and by 1875 20,350.

STAVROPOL, a government of Northern Caucasia, Russia, having an area of 26,530 square miles, and a population (rapidly increasing by Russian immigration) last returned at 637,893. It is bounded by Astrakhan and the province of the Don Cossacks on the N., Kubaji on the W., Terek on the 8.,

and the Caspian Sea on the E,, occupying the eastern part of the broad plains and steppes which fringe the main chain of Caucasus (g.v.) on the north. In the western part of the government a broad undulating swelling, ranging from 1500 to 2000 feet above sea-level, extends northwards from the central mountain chain ; in the southern part of this swelling, in the vicinity of Pyatigorsk, there is a group of sixteen mountains, 2800 to 4600 feet in height—the Beshtau,— which, as shown by Abich, ought to be considered as a porphyritic upheaval which took place at a point where the two predominant directions in Caucasus (south-west to north-east and south-east to north-west) meet. Northward and eastward of the above plateau are extensive steppes, from 400 to 200 feet above the sea, having gentle slopes both to the north (to the depression of the Manytch) and to the east (towards the low and dry steppes of the Caspian littoral). The geological structure of Stavropol is most interesting. The mountains in the southern parts of _ Pyatigorsk consist of trachytic porphyries and volcanic rocks. Numberless hot mineral springs (see PyaTicorsk) occur in this group, and earthquakes are most common in the region. A broad belt of Miocene deposits, represented by the “steppe limestone” with Mactra podolica, girdles the hilly tracts, attaining a breadth of 40 miles or rather more ; while the remainder of the steppes, which gently slope towards the Manytch and the Caspian, are occupied by the Post-Tertiary Caspian formation (loess),

Stavropol is chiefly watered by the Kuma and its tributaries (Podkumok, Karamyk, Buivola, &c.), its basin bemg the most fertile part of the province, but the evaporation is so great that the Kuma never reaches the Caspian except in spring. The Manytch is less a river than a series of lakes occupying a depression which formerly was a connecting channel between the Black Sea and the Caspian. This channel has two slopes, the eastern some- times discharging its scanty water-supply into the Kuma, while on the western slope the elongated lakes which fill up the depression drain into the Don, reaching it, however, only during spring. Two Yegorlyks (Great and Middle), the Kalaus, and the Tchogra (temporary tributaries of the Manytch) water the west part of Stavropol; while the Yeya and the Barsukly —a tributary of the Kubafi—rise in the district of Pyatigorsk. On the whole, irrigation is scanty, and in the eastern steppes water is supplied only by cisterns. Besides the few lakes of the Manytch depres- sion, there are many

smaller salt lakes around the Caspian. Timber is scarce, even in the hilly tracts.

The climate is severe. Although Stavropol and Pyati- gorsk both have an average yearly. temperature of 48° Fahr., frosts of -22° Fahr. are not uncommon, and the average winter temperature is only 28°-7 at Stavropol (January, 25°; July, 71°). Yellow and other endemic fevers, sometimes very severe, are common on the low banks of the Kuma and Manytch.

The region is traversed by both the great highways along the western shore of the Caspian (the Vladikavkaz and the Derbent routes), and accordingly several nations in their migrations have left stragglers on the steppes of Stavropol. Thus we now find in these steppes Lamaite Kalmucks (about 10,000), Mohammedan Turcomans and Nogais (together about 60,000), as well as less con- siderable remains of several other tribes. On the other

hand, immigrants from Great and Little Russia, Poles, Germans, Esthonians, Greeks, and even a few Scots (in a colony close to Pyatigorsk) have settled in the most fertile and best watered parts of Stavropol in the course of the present century. The Russian population is grow-

ing very rapidly, and already numbers upwards of

500,000.

There are three administrative districts, the chief towns of which are Stavropol (35,470 inhabitants in 1884), Pyati- gorsk (11,115), and Alexandrovskaya (8710), and a terri- tory of nomad natives which occupies more than two-fifths of the entire area of the government,

The educational returns for 1883 show 7 gymnasiums and “real schools,” with 1081 boys and 491 girls, and 139 elementary schools, with only 5310 boys and 1034 girls,

Agriculture is the chief occupation of the settled population, and so large is the harvest that no less than 16,000 labourers, attracted by high wages, come annually from European Russia to assist in gathering in the crops. Large amounts of corn are exported both to the mountainous districts of Caucasus and to Russia (Rostoff- on-the-Don). Cattle-breeding is engaged in very largely, not only by the Kalmucks, Turcomans, and Nogais, but also by the Russians, In 1884 Stavropol had 154,000 horses, 808,500 cattle, 2,540,000 sheep, 45,000 goats, 75,000 pigs, and 7500 camels. Cattle and horses, as also wool, hair, hides, and sheepskins, are exported in considerable quantities. A remarkable feature of Stavropol is the rapid

growth among the Russian peasant population of a great variety of domestic trades both for local supply and for exportation, Silk wares are now woven in the villages to such an extent as to become an important article of export to Russia. Many other petty trades have also grown up of late, such as various kinds of cotton- weaving, the manufacture of leather wares, small metallic wares, and so on, Manufactures proper (chiefly distillation) employed some 1000 persons in 1870, and their produce was estimated at about £140,000 per annum. Since that time they have slowly expanded. A brisk trade is carried ou in the above-mentioned articles of export, and twenty-nine village fairs show an aggregate annual return of nearly £300,000.

History.—The northern slopes of Caucasus began to be colonized by Russians at a very early period, and as early as the 11th cent- ury part of the territory now occupied by Stavropol was known to Russian annalists as the Tmutarakaii principality, which had Russiau princes. A new attempt to colonize North Caucasus was made in the 16th century, under Ivan the Terrible, who married a Kabardian princess. This was again unsuccessful, and it was not till 1711 that Russia began regularly to colonize the territory by Cossack settlements. The military colonization was continued during the whole of last century; Kizlar was founded in 1736, Stavropol in 1776 or 1777. Immense tracts were given by Catherine II. to her courtiers, who began to people them with serfs brought from Russia. The flow of immigrants rapidly increased as soon as peace was firmly established, and it is still on the increase, especially since the emancipation of the serfs, so that Stavropol is rapidly becoming a Russian province, with a comparatively limited number of natives in the steppes of its eastern part.

STAVROPOL, capital of the above province, is situated on a plateau 2000 feet above the sea, on the northern slope of the Caucasus, 360 miles to the north-west of Tiflis and 914 miles from Moscow. It is connected by rail with Rostoff-on-the-Don. Although founded only in 1776 for military purposes, it has rapidly grown, and has now a population of 35,500, while it is one of the best built provincial towns of the Russian empire. It has wide streets, and its houses are mostly of stone; large gardens surround the houses; and numerous farms and gardens occupy the territory (nearly 50,000 acres) belonging to the town. It is well provided with educational

institu- tions, there being four gymnasia for boys and girls and several primary schools, Nearly all the manufactures of the province are concentrated in Stavropol. The trade is considerable, large numbers of cattle (more than 35,000 head annually) being sent to Moscow and St Petersburg, while tallow and more than 15,000 sheepskins are exported via Rostoff to Russia. Corn is also exported to the value of nearly £300,000, while manufactured wares are imported to the value of nearly £150,000. Armenian, Georgian, and Persian merchants carry on a lively trade in local wares.

nie 1. A Heat-ENGINE isa machine in which heat is employed of todo mechanical work. In all practical heat-engines, t- work is done through the expansion by heat of a fluid which nes. overcomes resistance as it expands —in steam-engines by the expansion of water and water-vapour, in air-engines by the expansion of hot air, in gas-engines by the expansion of a burnt mixture of air and gas. One of the most simple and historically one of the oldest types of heat-engines are guns, in which heat, generated by the combustion of an ex- plosive, does work in giving energy of motion to a projec- tile. But guns differ so widely from all other types, both in their purpose and in their development, that it is con- venient to leave them out of account in treating of engines which may serve as prime movers to other mechanism.

In 1615 Solomon de Caus gives a plan of forcing up water De Caus. by a steam fountain which differs from Della Porta’s only

in having one vessel serve both as boiler and as displace- ment-chamber, the hot water being itself raised.

4. Another line of invention was taken by Giovanni Branca, Branca (1629), who designed an engine shaped like a 1629. water-wheel, to be driven by the impact of a jet of steam on its vanes, and, in its turn, to drive other mechanism for various useful purposes. But Branca’s suggestion was

unproductive, and we find the course of invention revert to the line followed by Della Porta and De Caus.

5. The next contributor is one whose place is not easily Marquis assigned. To Edward Somerset, second marquis of Wor- of Wor- cester, appears to be due the credit of making the first ay useful steam-engine. Its object was to raise water, and it ;

I. Eagty History oF THE STEAM-ENGINE.

0

BO. Pneumatica of Hero of Alexandria (c. 130 B.c.).

la ta,

2. The earliest notices of heat-engines are found in the Two contrivances described there deserve mention. One is the eolipile, a steam reaction-turbine consisting of a spherical ‘vessel pivoted on a central axis and supplied with steam through one of the pivots. The steam escapes by bent pipes facing tangentially in opposite directions, at opposite ends of a diameter perpendicular to the axis. The globe revolves by reaction from the escaping steam, just as a Barker’s mill is driven by escaping water. Another apparatus described by Hero (fig. 1)! is interesting as the prototype of a class of engines which long after- wards became practically important.

3. From the time of Hero to the 17th century there is no progress to record, though here and there we find evidence that appliances like those described by Hero were used for trivial purposes, such as organ-blowing and the turning of spits. The next distinct step was the publica- tion in 1601 of a treatise on pneumatics by Giovanni Bat- tista della Porta, in which he shows an apparatus similar to Hero’s fountain, but with steam instead of air as the displacing fluid. Steam generated in a separate vessel passes into a closed chamber containing water, from which @ pipe (open under the water) leads out. He also points out that the condensation of steam in the closed chamber may be used to produce a vacuum and suck up water from a lower level. In fact, his suggestions anticipate very fully the engine which a century later became in the hands of

Savery the earliest commercially successful steam-engine. ita ana altuna dill

“e-

Fig. 1.—Hero’s Apparatus, 130 B.c.

- From Greenwood’s translation of Hero’s Pneumatica.

worked probably like Della Porta’s model, but with a pair of displacement-chambers, from each of which alternately water was forced by steam from an independent boiler, or perhaps by applying heat to the chamber itself, while the other vessel was allowed to refill. Lord Worcester’s de- scription of the engine in his Century of Inventions (1663) is obscure, and no drawings are extant. It is therefore . difficult to say whether there were any distinctly novel features except the double action; in particular it is not clear whether the suction of a vacuum was used to raise water as well as the direct pressure of steam. An engine of about two horse-power was in use at Vauxhall in 1656, and the walls of Raglan Castle contain traces of another, but neither Worcester’s efforts nor those of his widow were successful in securing the commercial success of his engine.

6. This success was reserved for Thomas Savery, who Savery, in 1698 obtained a patent for a water-raising engine, 1698.

shown in fig. 2. Steam is admitted to one of the oval vessels A, displacing water, which it drives up through the check-valve B. When the vessel A is emptied ~ of water, the supply of steam is stopped, and the steam al- ready there is con- densed by allowing a jet of cold water from a cistern above to stream over the outer surface of the vessel. This pro- duces a vacuum and causes water to be sucked up through the pipe C and the valve D. Mean-while, steam has been displacing — water fromtheother * vessel, and is ready to be condensed there. The valves B and D open only upwards. The supplementary boiler and furnace E are for feeding water to the main boiler; E is filled while cold and a fire is lighted under it; it then acts like the vessel of De Caus in forcing a supply of feed-water into the main boiler F. The gauge-cocks G, G are an interesting feature of detail. Another form of Savery’s engine had only one displacement- chamber and worked

intermittently. In the use of arti- ficial means to coudense the steam, and in the application XXII. — 60

EP

‘a

=

a,

=TTI

Engine, 1698.

Cylinder and piston engine.

Papin.

474

level lower than that of the engine, Savery’s engine was probably an improvement on Worcester’s ; in any case it found what Worcester’s engine had failed to find,—consider- able employment in pumping mines and in raising water to supply houses and towns, and even to drive water- wheels. A serious difficulty which prevented its general use in mines was the fact that the height through which it would lift water was limited by the pressure the boiler and vessels could bear. Pressures as high as 8 or 10 atmospheres were employed—and that, too, without a safety-valve—but Savery found it no easy matter to deal with high-pressure steam ; he complains that it melted his common solder, and forced him, as Desaguliers tells us, “to be at the pains and charge to have all his joints soldered with spelter.” Apart from this drawback the waste of fuel was enormous, from the condensation of steam which took place on the surface of the water and on the sides of the displacement-chamber at each stroke ; the consumption of coal, was, in proportion to the work done, some twenty times greater than in a good modern steam- engine. In a tract called The Muiner’s Friend, Savery alludes thus to the alternate heating and cooling of the water-vessel: ‘On the outside

of the vessel you may see how the water goes out as well as if the vessel were trans- parent, for so far as the steam continues within the vessel so far is the vessel dry without, and so very hot as scarce to endure the least touch of the hand. SBut as far as the water is, the said vessel will be cold and wet where any water has fallen on it; which cold and moisture vanishes as fast as the steam in its descent takes place of the water.” Before Savery’s engine was entirely displaced by its suc- cessor, Newcomen’s, it was improved by Desaguliers, who applied to it the safety valve (invented by Papin), and substituted condensation by a jet of cold water within the vessel for the surface condensation used by Savery.

7. So early as 1678 the use of a piston and cylinder (long before known as applied to pumps) in a heat-engine had been suggested by Jean Heautefeuille, who proposed to use the explosion of gunpowder either to raise a piston or to force up water, or to produce, by the subsequent cooling of the gases, a partial vacuum into which water might be sucked up. ‘Two years later Huygens described an engine in which the explosion of gunpowder in a cylinder expelled part of the gaseous contents, after which the cooling of the remainder caused a piston to descend under atmospheric pressure, and the piston in descending did work by raising a weight.

8. In 1690 Denis Papin, who ten years before had invented the safety-valve as an adjunct to his “ digester,” suggested that the condensation of steam should be em- ployed to make a vacuum under a piston previously raised by the expansion of the steam. Papin’s was the earliest cylinder and piston steam-engine, and his plan of using steam was that which afterwards took practical shape in the atmo- spheric engine of Newcomen. But

Dy

HH

~

Fie, 3.—Papin, 1705

his scheme was made unworkable by the fact that he pro- posed to use but one vessel as both boiler and cylinder.

of the vacuum so formed to raise water by suction from a { A small quantity of water was placed at the bottom of ~

-densing single-acting steam-pump, with steam-cylinder and

cylinder and heat was applied. When the piston had risen the fire was removed, the steam was allowed to cool, and the piston did work in its down-stroke under the pressure of the atmosphere. After hearing of Savery's engine in 1705 Papin turned his attention to improving it, and devised a modified form, shown in fig. 3, in which the displacement-chamber A was a cylinder, with a floating diaphragm or piston on the top of the water to keep the water and steam from direct contact with one another. 'The water was de- livered into a closed air-vessel B, from which it issued in a continuous stream against the vanes of a water-wheel. After the steam had done its work in the displacement- chamber it was allowed to escape by the stop-cock C instead of being condensed. Papin's engine was in fact a non-con-

pump-cylinderinone. A curious feature of it was the heater D, a hot mass of metal placed in the diaphragm for the pur- pose of keeping the steam dry. Among the many inventions of Papin was a boiler with an internal fire-box, —the earliest example of a construction that is now almost universal.! |

9. While Papin was thus going back from his first New. | notion of a piston-engine to Savery's cruder type, a new coma inventor had appeared who made the piston-engine a – : practical success by separating the boiler from the cylinder = and by using (as Savery had done) artificial means to con- 1705, dense the steam. This was Newcomen, who in 1705, with his assistant Cawley, gave the steam-engine the form shown in fig. 4. Steam admitted from the boiler to the cylinder allowed the piston to be raised by a heavy counterpoise on the other side of the beam. Then the steam- valve was shut and a jet of cold water entered the cylinder and condensed the steam. The piston was consequently forced down by the pressure of the at- mosphere and did work on the pump. The next entry of steam expelled the

condensed — water from the cylinder through an escape valve. The piston was kept tight by a layer of water on its upper surface. Condensation was at first effected by cooling the outside of the cylinder, but the accidental leak- age of the packing water past the piston showed the advan- tage of condensing by a jet of injection water, and this plan took the place of surface condensation. The engine used steam whose pressure was little if at all greater than that of the atmosphere ; sometimes indeed it was worked with the manhole lid off the boiler.

10. About 1711 Newcomen's engine began to be intro- Self | duced for pumping mines; and in 1713 a boy named a Humphrey Potter, whose duty it was to open and shut the | valves of an engine he attended, made the engine self- Potter] acting by causing the beam itself to open and close the Beigh!) valves by suitable cords and catches. Potter's rude device | was simplified in 1718 by Henry Beighton, who suspended from the beam a rod called the plug-tree, which worked the valves by means of tappets. By 1725 the engine was in common use in collieries, and it held its place without material change for about three-quarters of a century 10

1 For an account of Papin's inventions, see his Life and Letters, by Dr E. Gerland, Berlin, 1881.

fH 9 |

Ah un HH]

ifisintitts

e' Ht

rT ASS

Fic. 4.—Neweomen's Atmospherie Engine, 1705.

EARLY HISTORY. |

all.

comen's engine obsolete had been taken by James Watt. –

Compared with Savery’s engine, Newcomen’s had (as a pumping-engine) the great advantage that the intensity of pressure in the pumps was not in any way limited by the It shared with Savery’s, in a scarcely less degree, the defect already pointed out, that steam was wasted by the alternate heating and cooling of the vessel into which it was led. Though obviously cap- able of more extended uses, it was in fact almost exclu- sively employed to raise water,—in some instances for the

pressure of the steam.

purpose of turning water-wheels to drive other machinery.

Even conteniporary writers complain of its ‘‘ vast con- sumption of fuel,” which appears to have been scarcely

smaller than that of the engine of Savery.

t, 11. In 1763 James Watt, an instrument maker in

. Glasgow, while engaged by the university in repairing a

model of Newcomen’s engine, was struck with the waste of steam to which the alternate chilling and heating of

the cylinder gave rise. He saw that the remedy, in his own words, would lie in keeping the cylinder as hot as the steam that entered it. With this view he added to the engine a new organ—an empty vessel separate from the cylinder, into which the steam should be allowed to escape from the cylinder, to be condensed there by the application of cold water either outside or as a jet. To

preserve the vacuum in his condenser he added a pump,

called the air-pump, whose function was to pump from it the condensed steam and water of condensation, as well as the air which would otherwise accumulate by leakage or by being brought in with the steam or with the injection water. Then as the cylinder was no longer used as a condenser he was able to keep it hot by clothing it with non-con- ducting bodies, and in

particular by the use of a steam- jacket, or layer of hot steam between the cylinder and an external casing. Further, and still with the same object, he covered in the top of the cylinder, taking the piston-rod out through a steam-tight stuffing-box, and allowed steam instead of air to press upon the piston's upper surface. The idea of using a separate condenser had no sooner occurred to Watt than he put it to the test by constructing the apparatus shown in fig. 5. There A is the cylinder, B @ surface condenser, and C the air-pump. The cylinder was filled with steam above the piston, and a vacuum was formed in the sur- face condenser B. On opening the stop-cock D the steam rushed over from the cylinder and was condensed, while the piston rose and lifted a weight. After seve- ral trials Watt patented his im- Provements in 1769; they are ~ 3.0 5 —wat's Ex sales described in his specification in "apparatus,

the following words, which, apart from their immense historical interest, deserve careful study as a statement of principles which to this day guide the scientific develop- ment of the steam-engine :—

e "My method of lessening the consumption of steam, and conse- "a- quently fuel, in fire-engines, consists of the following principles :—

"First, That vessel in which the powers of steam are to be employed to work the engine, which is called the cylinder in Common fire-engines, and which I call the stcam-vessel, must, during the whole time the engine is at work, be kept as hot as the steam that enters it; first by enclosing it in a case of wood, or any other materials that transmit heat slowly ; secondly, by surround- Ing it with steam or other heated bodies; and, thirdly, by suffering neither water nor any other substance colder than the steam to enter or touch it during that time.

STEAM-ENGINE

Near the close of its career the atmospheric engine was much improved in its mechanical details by Smeaton, who built many large engines of this type about the year 1770, just after the great step which was to make New-

“Secondly, In engines that are to be worked wholly or partially by condensation of steam, the steam is to be condensed in vessels distinct from the steam-vessels or cylinders, although occasionally communicating with them; these vessels I call condensers; and, whilst the engines are working, these condensers ought at least to be kept as cold as the air in the neighbourhood of the engines, by application of water or other cold bodies.

“Lhirdly, Whatever air or other elastic vapour is not condensed by the cold of the condenser, and may impede the working of the engine, is to be drawn out of the steam-vessels or condensers by means of pumps, wrought by the engines themselves, or otherwise.

“Fourthly, I intend in many cases to employ the expansive force of steam to press on the pistons, or whatever may be used instead of them, in the same manner in which the pressure of the atmo- sphere is now employed in common fire-engines. In cases where cold water cannot be had in plenty, the engines may be wrought by this force of steam only, by discharging the steam into the air after it has done its office. . . .

“Sixthly, Lintend in some cases to apply a degree of cold not capable of reducing the steam to water, but of contracting it con- siderably, so that the engines shall be worked by the alternate expansion and contraction of the stcam.

‘Lastly, Instead of using water to render the pistons and other parts of the engine air and steam tight, I employ oils, wax, resin- ous bodies, fat of animals, quicksilver and other metals in their fluid state.”

The fifth claim was for a rotary engine, and need not be quoted here.

The “common fire-engine” alluded to was the steam- engine, or, as it was more generally called, the “atmo- spheric” engine of Newcomen. Enormously important as Watt’s first patent was, it resulted for a time in the production of nothing more than a greatly improved engine of the Newcomen type, much less wasteful of fuel, able to make faster strokes, but still only suitable for pumping, still single-acting, with steam admitted during the whole stroke, the piston, as before, pulling the beam by a chain working on a circular arc. The condenser was generally worked by

injection, but Watt has left a model of a surface condenser made up of small tubes, in every essential respect like the condensers now used in marine engines.

12. Fig. 6 is an example of the Watt pumping-engine Watt's of this period. It should be noticed that, although the pumping top of the cylinder is 1789." closed and steam has ac- ; cess to the upper side of the piston, this is done only to keep the cylinder and _ piston warm. 'The | engine is still single-acting ; the steam in the upper side merely plays the part which was played in Newcom- en's _— engine by the atmo- sphere; and it is the lower end of the cylinder alone that is ever put in commu- nication with the condenser. Thereare three valves, — the "steam" valve a, the "equilibrium " valve 4, and the "ex- haust" valvec. At the beginning of the down-stroke c is opened to produce a vacuum below the piston and a is

Fie, 6.—Watt's Single-Acting Engine, 1769.

Rotative engine.

Double action.

Expan- sion of steam.

Parallel motion.

Gover: nor.

- pendulum, which con-

Indica- tor.

opened to admit steam above it. At the end of the down- stroke a and care shut and bis opened. This puts the two sides in equilibrium, and allows the piston to be pulled up by the pump-rod P, which is heavy enough to serve as a counterpoise. © is the condenser, and A the air-pump, which discharges into the hot well H, whence the supply of the feed-pump F is drawn.

13. In a second patent (1781) Watt describes the “sun- and-planet” wheels and other methods of making the engine ‘give continuous revolving motion to a shaft pro- vided with a fly-wheel. He had invented the crank and connecting-rod for this purpose, but it had meanwhile been patented by one Pickard, and Watt, rather than make terms with Pickard, whom he regarded as a plagiarist of his own ideas, made use of his sun-and-planet motion until the patent on the crank expired. The reciprocating motion of earlier forms had served only for pumping ; by this invention Watt opened up for the steam-engine a thousand other channels of usefulness. The engine was still single-acting ; the connecting rod was attached to the far end of the beam, and that carried a counterpoise which served to raise the piston when steam was admitted below it.

14. In 1782 Watt patented two further improvements of the first importance, both of which he had invented some years before. One was the use of double action, that is to say, the application of steam and vacuum to each side of the piston alternately. The other (invented as early as 1769) was the use of steam expansively, in other words the plan (now used in all engines that aim at economy of fuel) of stopping the admission of steam when the piston had made only a part of its stroke, and allow- ing the rest of the stroke to be performed by the expan- sion of the steam already in the cylinder. To let the piston push as well as pull the end of the beam Watt devised his so-called parallel motion, an arrangement of links connecting the piston- rod head with the beam in such a way as to guide the rod to move ina very nearly straight line. Hefurtheradded the throttle-valve, for regulating the rate of admission of steam, and the centrifugal gover- nor, a double conical

zg

trolled the speed by acting on the throttle- valve. The stage of de- velopment reached

at this time is illus- m1 | trated by the en- F = gine of fig. 7 (from F = Stuart’s History of HH = the Steam-Engine), 5 which shows the yee = 4,

parallel motion pp, the governor g, the throttle-valve ¢, and a pair of steam and exhaust valves at each end of the cylinder. Among other inventions of

Watt were the “indicator,” by which diagrams showing the relation of the steam-pressure in the cylinder to the movement of the piston are automatically drawn ; a steam tilt-hammer ; and also a steam locomotive for ordinary roads,—but this invention was not prosecuted.

In partnership with Matthew Boulton, Watt carried on in Birmingham the manufacture and sale of his engines with the utmost success, and held the field against all

Fie. 7.—Watt’s Double-Acting Engine, 1782.

STEHEAM-ENGINE

[EARLY HISTORY,

rivals in spite of severe assaults on the validity of his patents. Notwithstanding his accurate knowledge of the advantage to be gained by using steam expansively he continued to employ only low pressures—seldom more than 7 ib per square inch over that of the atmosphere, His boilers were fed, as Newcomen’s had been, through an open pipe which rose high enough to let the column of . water in it balance the pressure of the steam. He intro- Rating | duced the term “horse-power” as a mode of rating engine | engines, defining one horse-power as the rate at which | work is done when 33,000 tb are raised one foot in one a minute. This estimate was based on trials of the work | done by horses ; it is excessive as a statement of what an average horse can do, but Watt purposely made it so in order that his customers might have no reason to complain on this score. 15. In the fourth claim in Watt’s first patent, the Non second sentence describes a non-condensing engine, which ‘etsing | would have required steam of a higher pressure. This, “8 | however, was a line of invention which Watt did not follow up, perhaps because so early as 1725 a non-con- densing engine had been described by Leupold in his Lenpoi Theatrum Machinarum. Teupold’s proposed engine is 172. shown in fig. 8, which makes its action sufficiently clear. ! Watt’s aversion to high-pressure steam was @p strong, and its influence on steam-engine practice long sur- vived the expiry of his patents. So much indeed was this the case that the terms “high- pressure” and ‘non-condens- ing” were for many years synonymous, in contra-

distinction to the ‘‘low- pressure” or condensing Ff __ engines of Watt. This hy nomenclature no longer

= —

—

. rs Sn St ee SS SD

holds ; in modern practice F546 4 . . eeu ei ee

many condensing engines 5 4 2 2et (oe See a FT

‘Eas a eest ¥ 2162 es

use as high pressures as non-condensing engines, and by doing so are able to take advantage of Watt’s great invention of expansive working to a degree which was impossible in his own practice.

16. The introduction of the non-condensing and, at High- that time, relatively high-pressure engine, was effected in St England by Trevithick and in America by Oliver Evans qyovi: about 1800. Both Evans and Trevithick applied their jek au engines to propel carriages on roads, and both used for Evans, boiler a cylindrical vessel with a cylindrical flue inside — |] the construction now known as the Cornish boiler. In | partnership with Bull, Trevithick had previously made direct-acting pumping-engines, with an inverted cylinder set over and in line with the pump-rod, thus dispensing with the beam that had been a feature in all earlier forms. But in these “Bull” engines, as they were called, a con- denser was used, or, rather, the steam was condensed by @ jet of cold water in the exhaust-pipe, and Boulton and Watt successfully opposed them as infringing Watt’s patents. To Trevithick belongs the distinguished honour of being the first to use a steam-carriage on a railway ; 10 1804 he built a locomotive in the modern sense, to run on what had formerly been a horse-tramway in Wales, and it is noteworthy that the exhaust steam was discharged into the funnel to force the furnace draught, a device which, 25 years later, in the hands of George Stephenson, went far to make the locomotive what it is to-day. In this con- nexion it may be added that as early as 1769 a steam

Fre. 8.—Leupold’s You ca Engine,

1725,

_BARLY HISTORY. |

carriage for roads had been built by Cugnot in France, who used a pair of single-acting high-pressure cylinders to turn a driving axle step by step by means of pawls and ratchet-wheels. To the initiative of Evans may be ascribed the early general use of high-pressure steam in the United States, a feature which for many years distin- guished American from English practice.

17. Amongst the contemporaries of Watt one name deserves special mention. In 1781 Jonathan Hornblower ‘ gonstructed and patented what would now be called a compound engine, with two cylinders of different sizes. Steam was first admitted into the smaller cylinder, and then passed over into the larger, doing work against a piston in each. In Hornblower’s engine the two cylinders were placed side by side, and both pistons worked on the same end of a beam overhead. This was an instance of the use of steam expansively, and as such was earlier than the patent, though not earlier than the invention, of ex- pansive working by Watt. Hornblower was crushed by the Birmingham firm for infringing their patent in the use of a separate condenser and air-pump. The compound engine was revived in 1804 by Woolf, with whose name it is often associated. Using steam of fairly high pressure, and cutting off the supply before the end of the stroke in the small cylinder, Woolf expanded the steam to several times its original volume. Mechanically the double-cylinder compound engine has this advantage over an engine in which the same amount of expansion is performed ina single cylinder, that the sum of the forces exerted by the two pistons in the compound engine varies less throughout the action than the force exerted by the piston of the single-cylinder engine. This advantage may have been clear to Hornblower and Woolf, and to other early users of compound expansion. But another and probably a more important merit of the system lies in a fact of which neither they nor for many years their followers in the use of compound engines were aware—the fact that by dividing the whole range of expansion into two parts the cylinders in which these are separately performed are subject to a reduced range of fluctuation

in their tempera- ture. This, as will be afterwards pointed out, limits to a great extent a source of waste which is present in all steam-engines, the waste which results from the heating and cooling of the metal by its alternate contact with hot and cooler steam. The system of compound expansion is now used in nearly all large engines that pretend to economy. Its introduction forms the only great improve- ment which the steam-engine has undergone since the time of Watt; and we are able to recognize it as a very important step in the direction set forth in his “ first principle,” that the cylinder should be kept as hot as the steam that enters it.

18. Woolf introduced the compqund engine somewhat widely about 1814, as a pumping engine in the mines of Cornwall. But here it met a strong competitor in the high-pressure single-cylinder engine of Trevithick, which had the advantage of greater simplicity in construction. Woolf’s engine fell into comparative disuse, and the single- cylinder type took a form which, under the name of the Cornish pumping engine, was for many years famous for its great economy of fuel. In this engine the cylinder was set under one end of a beam, from the other end of which hung a heavy rod which operated a pump at the foot of the shaft. Steam was admitted above the piston for a short portion of the stroke, thereby raising the pump- rod, and was allowed to expand for the remainder. Then an equilibrium valve, connecting the space above and below the piston, as in fig. 6, was opened, and the pump-rod descended, doing work in the pump and raising the engine piston. The large mass which had to be started

and stopped at each stroke served by its inertia to counter- balance the unequal pressure of the steam, for the ascend- ing rods stored up energy of motion in the early part of the stroke, when the steam pressure was greatest, and gave out energy in the later part, when expansion had greatly lowered the pressure. The frequency of the stroke was controlled by a device called a cataract, consisting of a small plunger pump, in which the plunger, raised at each stroke by the engine, was allowed to descend more or less slowly by the escape of fluid below it through an adjustable orifice, and in its descent liberated catches which held the steam and exhaust valves from opening. A

similar device controlled the equilibrium valve, and could be set to give a pause at the end of the piston's down-stroke, so that the pump cylinder might have time to become completely filled. The Cornish engine is interesting as the earliest form which achieved an efficiency coniparable with that of good modern engines. For many years monthly reports were published of the "duty" of these engines, the "duty" being the number of foot- pounds of work done per bushel or (in some cases) per ewt. of coal. The average duty of engines in the Corn- wall district rose from about 18 millions of foot-pounds per cwt. of coal in 1813 to 68 millions in 1844, after which less effort seems to have been made to maintain a high efficiency.!. In individual cases much higher results were reported, as in the Fowey Consols engine, which in 1835 was stated to have a duty of 125 millions. This (to use a more modern mode of reckoning) is equivalent to the consumption of only a little more than 1? tb of coal per horse-power per hour—a result surpassed by very few engines in even the best recent practice. It is diffi- cult to credit figures which, even in exceptional instances, place the Cornish engine of that period on a level with the most efficient modern engines—in which compound expansion and higher pressure combine to make a much more perfect thermodynamic machine; and apart from this there is room to question the accuracy of the Cornish reports. They played, however, a useful part in the process of steam-engine development by directing atten- tion to the question of efficiency, and by demonstrating the advantage to be gained by high pressure and expan- sive working, at a time when the theory of the steam- engine had not yet taken shape.

19. The final revival of the compound engine did not Com- occur until about the middle of the century, and then pound several agencies combined to effect it. In 1845 M'Naught "5

introduced a plan of improving beam engines of the original Watt type, by adding a high-pressure cylinder whose piston acted on the beam between the centre and the fly-wheel end. Steam of higher pressure than had formerly been used, after doing work in the new cylinder, passed into the old or low-pressure cylinder, where it was further expanded. Many engines whose power was proving insufficient for the extended machinery they had to drive were "M'Naughted" in this way, and after conversion were found

not only to yield more power but to show a marked economy of fuel. The compound form was selected by Mr Pole for the pumping engines of Lambeth and other waterworks about 1850; in 1854 John Elder began to use it in marine engines; in 1857 Mr Cowper added a steam-jacketed intermediate reservoir for steam between the high and low pressure cylinders, which made it unnecessary for the low-pressure piston to be just beginning when the other piston was just ending its stroke. As facilities increased for the use of high-pressure steam, compound expansion became more and more general, its advantage becoming more conspicuous with every

1 Min. Proc. Inst. C.H., vol. xxiii., 1863.

Applica- tion to loco- motives.

Applica- tion to steam- boats.

Theory

Carnot,

increase in boiler pressure—until now there are few large land engines and scarcely any marine engines that do not employ it. In marine practice, where economy of fuel is a much more important factor in determining the design than it is on land, the principle of compound expansion has lately been greatly extended by the intro- duction of triple and even quadruple expansion engines, in which the steam is made to expand successively in three or in four cylinders. Even in the building of locomotive engines, where other considerations are of more moment than the saving of coal, the system of com- pound expansion is beginning to find a place.

The growth of compound expansion has been referred to at some length, because it forms the most distinctive improvement which the steam-engine has undergone since the time of Watt. For the rest, the progress of the steam- engine has consisted in its adaptation to particular uses, in the invention of features of mechanical detail, in the recognition and

application of thermodynamical _ prin- ciples, and in improved methods of engineering construc- tion by which it has profited in common with all other machines. These have in particular made possible the use of steam of eight or ten times the pressure of that employed by Watt.

20. The adaptation of the steam-engine to railways, begun by Trevithick, became a success in the hands of George Stephenson, whose engine the " Rocket," when tried along with others on the Stockton and Darlington road in 1829, not only distanced its competitors but settled once and for all the question whether horse traction or steam traction was to be used on railways. The principal features of the "Rocket" were an improved steam-blast for urging the combustion of coal and a boiler (suggested by Booth, the secretary of the railway) in which a large heating surface was given by the use of many small tubes through which the hot gases passed. Further, the cylinders, instead of being vertical as in earlier locomotives, were set in at a slope, which was afterwards altered to a position more nearly horizontal. To these features there was added later the "link motion," a contrivance which. enabled the engine to be easily reversed and the amount of expansion to be readily varied. In the hands of George Stephenson and his son Robert the locomotive took a form which has been in all essentials maintained by the far heavier locomotives of to-day.

21. The first practical steamboat was the tug "Char- lotte Dundas," built by William Symmington, and tried in the Forth and Clyde Canal in 1802. A Watt double- acting condensing engine, placed horizontally, acted directly by a connecting-rod on the crank of a shaft at the stern, which carried a revolving paddle-wheel. The trial was successful, but steam towing was abandoned for fear of injuring the banks of the canal. Ten years later Henry Bell built the "Comet," with side paddle- wheels, which ran as a passenger steamer on the Clyde; but an earlier inventor to follow up Symmington's success was the American Robert Fulton, who, after unsuccessful experiments on the Seine, fitted a steamer on the Hudson in 1807 with engines made to his designs by Boulton and Watt, and brought steam navigation for the first time to commercial success.

22. The early inventors had little in the way of theory to guide them. Watt had the advantage, which he acknowledges, of a knowledge of Black's

doctrine of latent heat; but there was no philosophy of the relation of work to heat until long after the inventions of Watt were complete. The theory of the steam-engine as a heat-engine dates from 1824, when Carnot published his Reflections sur la Puissance Motrice du Feu, and showed

that heat does work only by being let down from a higher to a lower temperature. But Carnot had no idea that any of the heat disappears in the process, and it was not until the doctrine of the conservation of energy was

established in 1843 by the experiments of Joule that the Jou ||

theory of heat-engines began a vigorous growth. From 1849 onwards the science of thermodynamics was devel- oped with extraordinary rapidity

in 1859 of Rankine's Manual of the Steam Engine formed an epoch in the history of the subject by giving inventors a new basis, outside of mere empiricism, from which they could push on the development of the steam-engine. Unfortunately, however, for its bearing on practice, the theory of the steam-engine was to a great extent founded on certain simplifying assumptions which experience has now shown to be far from correct. It was assumed that the cylinder and piston might be treated as behaving to the steam like non-conducting bodies,—that the transfer of heat between the steam and the metal was negligibly small. Rankine's calculations of steam-consumption, work, and thermodynamic efficiency involve this assumption, except in the case of steam-jacketed cylinders, where he estimates that the steam in its passage through the cylinder takes just enough heat from the jacket to prevent a small amount of condensation which would otherwise occur as the process of expansion goes on. If the transfer of heat from steam to metal could be overlooked, the steam which enters the cylinder would remain during admission as dry as it was before it entered, and the volume of steam consumed per stroke would correspond with the volume of the cylinder up to the point of cut-off. It is here that the actual behaviour of steam in the cylinder diverges most widely from the behaviour which the theory assumes. When steam enters the cylinder it finds the metal chilled by

the previous exhaust, and a portion of it is at once condensed. This has the effect of increasing, often very largely, the volume of boiler steam required per stroke. As expansion goes on the water that was condensed during admission begins to be re-evaporated from the sides of the cylinder, and this action is often prolonged into the exhaust. In a later chapter the effect which this exchange of heat between the metal of the cylinder and the work- ing fluid produces on the economy of the engine will be discussed, and an account will be given of experimental means by which we may examine the amount of steam that is initially condensed and trace its subsequent re-evaporation. It is now recognized that any theory which fails to take account of these exchanges of heat fails also to yield even comparatively correct results in calculating the relative efficiency of various steam pressures or various ranges of expansion. But the exchanges of heat are s0 complex thaé there seems little prospect of submitting them to any comprehensive theoretical treatment, and we must rather look for help in the future development of engines to the scientific analysis of experiments with actual machines. Much careful work of this kind has already been done by Hirn and others, and there is room for much more. Questions relating to the influence (on heat-engine economy) of speed, of pressure, of ratio of expansion, of jacketing, of compound expansion, or of superheating must in the main be settled by an appeal to experiment,—experiment guided and interpreted at every step by reference to the principles of thermodynamics and the theory of steam.

References.—Stuart, Descriptive History of the Steam-Engine, 1825; Farey, Treatise on the Steam-Engine, 1827; Tredgold, The Steam-Engine, 1838; Muir- head’s Mechanical Inventions of James Watt, and Life of Wait; Galloway, The Steam-Engine and tts Inventors; Thurston, IZistory of the Grouth of the Steam- Engine; Cowper on the Steam-Engine (Heat Lectures Inst, C.H,, 1884), Tait, Sketch of Thermodynamics,

by Clausius, Rankine, Clansins,| | and Thomson, and was applied, especially by Rankine, to Rankine, | practical problems in the use of steam. The publication Thomm

IJ. Turory oF HEAT-ENGINEs. djs of jmo- the heat received into mechanical energy, which appears as the f – work done by the engine, and rejecting the remainder, still in the : form of heat. the amount of work done, in its relation to the heat supplied and

thermodynamics, which may be stated here as follows :—

mechanical energy, 1 thermal wit every 772 foot-pounds of work spent. The "thermal unit" is the heat required to raise the tempera-

of heat comes into existence for

ture of 1 ib of water 1 degree Fahr. when at its temperature of

maximum density. The equivalent quantity of work, 772 foot-

ounds, was determined by the experiments of Joule, and is called feulk's equivalent. Later researches by Joule and others have indicated that this number is probably too small; it should perhaps be as much as 774 foot-pounds. Joule's original value is still generally used by engineers; and as it enters into many published tables it may conveniently be adhered to until its accuracy is more definitely disproved. Since a definite number of foot-pounds are equivalent to 1 thermal unit, we may, if we please, express quantities of work in thermal units, or quantitics of heat in foot-pounds; the latter practice will frequently be found useful.

Law 2. It is impossible for a self-acting machine, wnaided by any external agency, to convey heat from one body to another at a higher temperature.

This is the form in which the second law has been stated by Clausius. Another statement of it, different in form but similar in effect, has been given by Thomson. Its force may not be immediately obvious, but it will be shown below that it introduces a most important limitation of the power which any engine has

of converting heat into work. So far as the first law shows, there is nothing to prevent the whole heat taken in by the engine from changing into mechanical energy. In consequence of the second law, however, no heat-

engine converts, or can convert, more than a small fraction of the heat supplied to it into work; a large part is necessarily rejected as heat. The ratio Heat converted into work Heat taken in by the engine

is a fraction always much less than unity. This ratio is called the eficiency of the engine considered as a heat-engine. King 24. In every heat-engine there is a working substance which takes | im and rejects heat, thereby suffering changes of form, or more up, commonly of volume, and does work by overcoming resistance to these changes of form or volume. The working substance may be gaseous, liquid, or solid. We can, for example, imagine a heat- engine in which the working substance is a long metallic rod, arranged to act as the pawl of a ratchet-wheel with fine teeth. Let the rod be heated so that it elongates sufficiently to drive the wheel forward through the space of one tooth. Then let the rod be cooled (say by applying cold water), the wheel being meanwhile held from returning by a separate click or detent. The rod, on | cooling, will retract so as to engage itself with the next succeeding | tooth, which may then be driven forward. by heating the rod again, and soon. To make it cvident that such an engine would do work, we have only to suppose that the ratchet-wheel carries round with it a drum by which a weight is wound up. We have, then, a complete heat-engine, iu which the working substance is a solid rod, which receives heat by being brought into contact with some source of heat at a comparatively high temperature, transforms a small part of this heat into work, and rejects the remainder to what we may call a receiver of heat, at a comparatively low qyla- temperature. The greater part of the heat may be said simply to ot pass through the engine, from the source to the receiver, becoming Mra-degraded as regards temperature as it goes. We shall see presently ‘| that this is typical of the action of all heat-engines; when they are doing work, the heat which they reject is rejected at a tempera- ture lower than that at which it is taken in. They convert some | heat into work only by letting down a much larger quantity of

heat from a high to a relatively low temperature. The action is

analogous to that of a water-wheel, which does work by letting

down water from a high to a lower level, but with this important

difference that in the transfer which occurs in heat-engines an

amount of heat disappears which is equivalent to the work done.

25. In almost all actual heat-engines the working substance is a

g fluid. In some it is air, in some a mixture of several gases. In the steam-engine the working fluid is a mixture (in varying proportions) m of water and steam. With a fluid for working substance, work is iby done by changes of volume only ; its amount depends solely on the “ps telation of pressure to volume during the change, and not at all on \ im.) ‘he form of thevessels in which the change takes place. Letadiagram “be drawn (fig. 9) in which the relation of the intensity of pressure

|

STEHEAM-ENGINE

23. A heat-engine acts by taking in heat, converting a part of

The theory of heat-engines comprises the study of to the heat rejected. The theory is based on the two laws of Law 1. When mechanical energy is produced from heat, 1 thermal

unit of heat goes out of cwistence for every 772 foot-pounds of work done; and, conversely, when heat is produced by the expenditure of

479

to the volume of any supposed working substance is graphically exhibited by the line ABC, where AM, CN are pressures and AP, CQ are volumes, then the work done by the substance in expand- ing from A to C is the area of the figure MABCN, And similarly, if the substance be compressed from C back to its original volume in such a manner that the line CDA repre- sents the relation of pressure and volume during compression, the work done upon the substance is the figure NCDAM. Taking the two operations together, we find that the substance has done a net amount of work equal to the arca of the shaded figure ABCDA, or /PdV. This is an ex-

ample and a generalization of the method of representing work which Watt introduced by his inven-

tion of the indicator ; the figure ABCDA may be called the indicator

diagram of the supposed action.

26. Generally in heat-engines the working substance returns Cycle of periodically to the same state of temperature, pressure, volume, operation and physical condition. When this has occurred the substance is of work- said to have passed through a complete cycle of operations. For ing sub- example, in a condensing steam-engine, water taken from the hot- stance. well is pumped into the boiler; it then passes into the cylinder as steam, passes thence into the condenser, and thence again into the hot-well; it completes the cycle by returning to the same con- dition as at first. In other less obvious cases, as in that of the non-condensing steam-engine, a little consideration will show that the cycle is completed, not indeed by the same portion of working substance being returned to the boiler, but by an equal quantity of water being fed to it, while the steam which has been discharged into the atmosphere cools to the temperature of the feed. In the theory of heat-engines it is of the first importance to consider (as was first done by Carnot in 1824) the cycle of operations per- formed by the working substanee as a complete whole. If we stop

2 gq 4? oy

BOLLE I

Wigs uo c

Z ee Ze Lipgggeg y

2 _3anssaya

Fig. 9.

.short of the completion of a cycle matters are complicated by the

fact that the substance is in a state different from its initia] state, and may therefore have changed its stock of internal energy. After a complete cycle, on the other hand, we know at once that, since the condition is the same, the internal energy of the substance is the same as at first, and therefore—

Heat taken in=work done + heat rejected.

27. It will serve our purpose best to approach the theory of Engine heat-engines by considering, in the first instance, the action of working an engine in which the working substance is any one of the witha so-called permanent gases, or a mixture of them, such as air. The perfeet word permanent, as applied to a gas, can now? be understood only gas. as meaning that the gas is liquefied with difficulty—either by the use of extremely low temperature or extremely high pressure or both. So long as gases are under conditions of pressure and tem- perature wklels different from those which produce liquefaction, they conform very approximately to certain simple laws—laws which may be regarded as rigorously applicable to ideal substances called perfect gases. After stating these laws briefly we shall examine the efficiency of a heat-engine using a gas in a certain manner as working substance, and then show that the conclusion so derived has a general application to all heat-engines whatsoever. In this procedure there is no sacrifice of generality, and a part of the process is of independent service in the discussion of actual air-engines. ;

28. The laws of the permanent gases are the following :— Laws of

Law 1 (Boyle). Zhe volume of a given mass of gas varies the per- inversely as the pressure, the temperature being kept constant. manent

Thus, if V be the volume of 1 fb of a gas in cubic feet, and P gases, the pressure in pounds per square foot, so long as the temperature Boyle's is unchanged— law.

Poc V-}, or PV=constant. For air the value of the constant is 26220 when the temperature is 32° F.

29. Law 2 (Charles). Under constant pressure equal volumes of Charles's different gases increase equally for the same increment of tempera- law.

ture. Also, if a gas be heated wnder constant pressure, equal inere- ments of its volume correspond very nearly to equal intervals of tem- perature as determined by the seale of a mercury thermometer.

Thus, let us take, say, 493 cubic inches of hydrogen, also of oxygen, of air, &., all at 32° F., and, keeping each at a constant pressure (not necessarily the same for all), heat all so that their temperature rises 1° F. We shall find that each has expanded by sensibly the same amount and now occupies 494 cubic inches.

And further, if we heat any one through another 1° F. to 34° F., we shall find that its volume is now 495 cubic inches, and so on. Thus for any gas, kept at constant pressure, if the volume was

1 Since the liquefaction of hydrogen and other gases by MM. Cailletet and Pictet.

498 at 82° F., it would be 499 at 3178. 461 at 0°F.,

and finally 0 at ~~461°F., provided the same law were to hold at indefinitely low temperatures. This we may assume to be the case with a perfect gas, although any actual gas would change its physical state long before so low a temperature were reached. Absolute This result may be concisely expressed by saying that if we tempera~~ reckon temperature, not from the ordinary zero but from a point ture. 461° below the zero of Fahrenheit's scale, the volume of a given quantity of a gas, kept at constant pressure, is proportional to the temperature reckoned from that zero. Temperatures so reckoned are called absolute temperatures, and the point — 461° F. is called the absolute zero of temperature. Denoting any temperature according to the ordinary scale by ¢, and the corresponding absolute temperature by 7, we have +=t+461 on the Fahrenheit scale, and +=t+274 on the Centigrade scale. Charles's law shows that if temperatures be measured by thermo- meters in which the expanding substance is air, hydrogen, oxygen, or any other permanent gas, and, if those intervals of temperature be called equal which correspond to equal amounts of expansion, then the indications of these thermometers always agree ver closely with each other, and also agree, though less

closely, with the indications of a mercury thermometer. We shall see later that the theory of heat-engines affords a means of forming a thermometric scale which is independent of the properties, as to expansion, of any substance, and that this scale coincides with the scale of a perfect gas thermometer, a fact which justifies the use of the term absolute, as applied to temperatures measured by the expansion of a gas. 30. Combining laws 1 and 2, we have, for a given mass of any gas, PV = cr, where c is a constant depending on the specific density of the gas and on the units in which P and V aremeasured. In what follows we shall assume that P is measured in pounds per square foot, that V is the volume of 1 tb in cubic feet, and that 7 is the absolute temperature in Fahrenheit degrees… In air, with these units, PV=53‘18r. Regn- The specific heat at constant pressure 4s ault’s law. Specifie

31. Law 8 (Regnault). constant for any gas.

By specific heat at constant pressure is meant the heat taken in by 1 Ib of a substance when its temperature rises 1° F., while the heat at pressure remains unchanged—the volume of course increasing. constant The law states that this quantity is the same for any one gas, no pressure. matter what be the temperature, or what the constant pressure,

at which the process of heating takes place.

Specifie _ 32, Another important quantity in the theory of heat-engines is heat at the specific heat at constant volume, that is, the heat taken in by constant 1 Ib of the substance when its temperature rises 1° F. while the volume. volume reniains unchanged—the pressure of course increasing. We shall denote specific heat at constant pressure by Kp and specific heat at constant volume by Ky. Let 1 tb ofa gas be heated at constant pressure P from temperature 7, to temperature 7) (abso- lute). Let V, be the volume at 7, and V, the volume at To. Heat is taken in, and external work is done by the expansion of the gas, namely—

Heat taken in=K,(r.— 7).

Work done=P(V,- V,)=¢(t2—- 7). The difference between these quantities, or (Kp—c)(t.— 7), 18 the amount by which the stock of internal energy

possessed by the gas has increased during the process. We shall see presently that this gain of internal energy would have been the same had the gas passed in any other manner from 7, to T,.

33. Law 4 (Joule). When a gas expands without doing external work, and without taking in or giving out heat, its temperature does not change.

To prove this, Joule connected a vessel containin, compressed gas with another vessel that was empty, by means ol a pipe with a closed stop-cock. Both vessels were immersed in a tub of water and were allowed to assume a uniform temperature. Then the stop-cock was opened, the gas expanded without doing external work, and finally the temperature of the water in the tub was found to have undergone no change. The temperature of the gas was unaltered, and no heat had been taken in or given out by it, Internal 34. Since the gas had neither gained nor lost heat, and had done energy no work, its internal energy was the same at the end as at the ofa gas beginning of the experiment. The pressure and volume had depends changed, but the temperature had not. We must therefore con- only on elude that the internal energy of a given mass of a gas depends tempera- only on its temperature, and not upon its pressure or volume; in ture. other words, a change of pressure and volume not associated with a change of temperature does not alter the internal energy. Hence

Joule’s law.

STEAM-ENGINE

•

[THEORY OF

in any change of temperature the change of internal energy is inde- pendent of the relation of pressure to volume throughout the opera. ~ tion. Now we have seen above that the quantity ; = (Kp —¢)(t2- 7) – | measures the gain of internal energy when 1 fb of a gas has its temperature changed from 7, to 7. in one particular way, namely, at constant pressure. Henee this same quantity also measures the gain of internal energy when 1 tb of a gas has its temperature

changed from 7, to 7, in any manner whatsoever.

35. Next consider the case of 1 tb of a gas heated from 7, to 7, at Relation constant volume. ‘The heat taken in is of the | K.(t.— 71): two speci | Since no work is done, this is all gain of internal energy, and is fic heats, | therefore (§ 34) equal to

|

Kp — ¢)(T2—- 73).

K,-c=Ky. The ratio K,/K» will be denoted by y; obviously Ky=e/(y-1). The following table of values of Kp, Ky, ¢, andy will be found useful in dealing with air and gas engines.

Hence in any gas

TABLE I.—Properties of Gases.

Kp. Ke. Cc. Y: Foot-lbs. | Foot-lbs., | Foot-lbs,

DDG WAITS soniye, ast wena 183°4 130°2 53°2 1°409 ORY GONG. c:panesereaeeaslaene’s 167°9 119°8 48°1 1°402 INTENO BON sevaces on tose eseeed 188°2 183°4 54°8 1‘411 ByGrOROt 05 otis ¥ «coe, 600-55 26382 1864 768 1412 Carbonic oxide…….06+ 189°1 133°4 55°7 1‘418 Carbonie aGidiis.ciccssoitanes 1674 1382°6 34°8 1°263 Marah G06 ois.5530s.20iecrangs 457°7 | 363°1 94°6 | 1°261 Olefant Bas caacocsyco.sane oe 311°9 257 “7 54:2 1:2138 Steam gas, or highly|| 971 | 9855 | 85°5 | 1:80

superheated steam …

that of § 25, which exhibit the action of a working substance by curves show- ing the relation of P to V during ex- pansion or compression. In most of the instances which occur in the theory of heat-engines such curves may be ex- actly or approximately represented by equations of the form

PV”=constant, where the index 7 has various numer- h ical values. Let AB, fig. 10, be a curve aS ae ” of expansion (of any substance) in Fig. 10. which

PV” is constant, from pressure P, and volume V, at A to pressure P, and volume Vz at B. We have, by assumption,

P,V;” — P,V 3″ .

MY y hfs,

‘DM ib rtete tet tries de Hy, MEE OTS URMILA

The work done is – Vs dV _ PLV”(Vs-*- Ve) = n ee NS 74 PAV=PV “T – This may also be written BY gier**) ~ n—1 : j where r is the ratio V./V,, which may be called the ratio of expansion. ‘ Still another form of the above expression for the work done is The ee PoV5 a-1 — 37. Applying this result to the case of an expanding gas, we have Work done=c(r,— 72) /(n- 1). The loss of internal energy during expansion is, by § 34, K.(7- T.), OF c(T1 — Te) / iy> 1), by § 35. Suppose now that the mode of expansion is such that the loss of internal energy is equal to the external work done, then c(t, —T.)__ (71 — To) nm-1l y-l and the law of expansion is PV =constant. The same formula applies when a gas is being compressed in such a manner that the work spent upon the gas is equal to the ain of internal energy by the gas. . _ . 38. This mode of axpendltl (or compression) is termed adi | batie. It occurs when the working substance is neither gainin, of A nor losing heat by conduction or radiation or internal chemica = | action. It would be realized if we had a substance expanding or sion. being compressed, without chemical change, in a eylinder —_ (with the piston) was a perfect non-conductor of heat, In adiaba

, oOrn=y;

HEAT-ENGINES. |

expansion the external work is done entirely at the expense of the substance’s stock of internal energy. Hence in the adiabatic expan- sion of a gas the temperature falls, and in adiabatic compression it To find the change of temperature in a gas when expanded

ae adiabatically we have only to combine the equations Pave x, Y ee ae ERE ESV so and pays

nd we find : : ‘ig d (V,/V.)” –

It is clear from the above that if, during expansion, ” is less than 7 the fluid is taking in heat, and if m is greater than y the fluid is rejecting heat. ; ,

39. Another very important mode of expansion or compression is that called csothermal, in which the temperature of the working substance is kept constant during the process.

In the case of a gas the curve of isothermal expansion is a rectangular hyperbola, having the equation

PV =constant=cr. When a gas expands (or is compressed) isothermally at tempera- tare r from V, to V, the work done by (or upon) it (per Ib) is

V VedV Y; *pav=Pif, work log r=crlog.r ,

1

where r is the ratio V,/V, as before.!

During isothermal expansion or compression a gas suffers no change of internal energy (by § 34, since r is constant’. Hence during isothermal expansion a gas must take in an amount of heat just equal to the work it does, and during isothermal compression it must reject an amount of heat just equal to the work spent upon it. The expression crlog ,7 con-

SYNSS3ud

STEAM-ENGINE

481

original value 7,. [In other words, the third operation must be stopped when a point d@ is reached such that an adiabatic line drawn through d@ will pass through a.] This completes the cycle.

To find the proper place at which to stop the third operation, we have, by § 38, 7,/7.=(V-/Vs)Y~1 in the second operation, and again T;/T.=(V a/Va)¥~1

in the fourth operation. Hence V./Vs=Va/Va; and Vs/Va, the ratio of isothermal expansion, is equal to V,/Ve, the ratio of isothermal compression. For brevity we shall denote either of these last ratios by 7.

41. The following aro the transfers of heat to and from the working fluid, in successive stages of the cycle :—

(1) Heat taken in from A=cz, log ,r (by § 39).

(2) No heat taken in or rejected.

(8) Heat rejected to C=crelog ,r (by § 39).

(4) No heat taken in or rejected.

Hence, by the first law of thermodynamics, the net external work done by the gas is

c(t ~- 7.) log, r} and the efficiency of the engine (§ 23) is c(7,-7T2)log.r 11-7,

crylog.r TC

This is the fraction of the whole heat given to it which an engine following Carnot's cycle converts into work. The engine takes in an amount of heat, at the temperature of the source, pro- portional to 7, ; it rejectsan amount of heat, at the temperature of the receiver, proportional tor,. It works within a range of tem- perature extending from 7, to T., by letting down heat from 7, to T. (§ 24), and in the process it converts into work a fraction of that heat, which fraction will be greater the lower the temperature t, at which heat is rejected is below the temperature 7, at which heat is received,

sequently measures, not only the work done by or upon the gas, but also the heat taken in during isothermal expan-

42. Next let us consider what will happen if we reverse Carnot's Carnot's cycle, that is to say, if we force this engine to act so that the same cycle indicator diagram as before is traced out, but in the direction reversed.

sion or given out during isothermal compression. In the diagram, fig. 11,
Fig. 11.

the line AB is an example of a curve of isothermal expansion for a perfect gas, called for brevity an isothermal line, while AC is an Gaitatic line starting from the same point A.

40. We shall now consider the action of an ideal engine in which tho working substance is a perfect gas, and is caused to pass through a cycle of changes each of which is either isother- mal or adiabatic. The cycle to be described was first exa- mined by Carnot, and is spoken of as Carnot's cycle of opera- tions. Imagine a cylinder and piston composed of a perfectly non-conducting material, exceptasregardsthebottom 4 | of the cylinder, which is a " conductor. Imagine also a hot body or indefinitely ca-

acious source of heat A, ept always at a tempera- Te

D. . B. -. of a ae eae on

ture 7,, a perfectly non- ¢ conducting cover B, anda . cold body or indefinitely

capacious receiver of heat C, kept always at a temperature T,, which is lower than 7. It is supposed that A, B, or C can be applied to the bottom of the cylinder. Let the cylinder contain 1 tb of a ' perfect gas, at temperature 7,, volume Va, and pressure Pq to begin _. The suffixes refer to the points on the indicator diagram,

Fig. 12,—Carnot's Cycle, with a gas for working substance.

_ (1) Apply A, and allow -the piston to rise' The gas expands isothermally at 7,, taking heat from A and doing work. The pressure changes to P; and the volume toVs.

(2) Remove A and apply B. Allow the piston to go on rising. the gas expands adiabatically, doing work at the expense of its Internal energy, and the temperature falls. Let this go on until the temperaturo is tT 'The pressuro is then P., and the volume V,. _ (8) Remove Band apply C. Force

the piston down. The gas 1s compressed isothermally at 7,, since the smallest increase of

opposite to that followed in § 40, Starting as before from the point a and with the gas at 7,, we shall require the following four

‘ operations :—

(1) Apply B and allow the piston to rise. The gas expands adiabatically, the curve traced is ad, and when d is reached the temperature has fallen to 7».

(2) Remove B and apply ©. Allow the piston to go on rising. The gas expands isothermally at 7), taking heat from C, and the curve dc is traced.

(8) Remove C and apply B. Compress the gas. The process is adiabatic. The curve traced is cb, and when 0D is reached the temperature has risen to 7,.

(4) Remove B and apply A. Continue the compression, which is now isothermal, at 7, Heat is now rejected to A, and the cycle is completed by the curve ba.

In this process the engine is not doing work ; on the contrary, work is spent upon it equal to the area of the diagram, or e(r,—T.) log, 7. eat is taken in from C in the first operation,

to the amount cr,log,r. Heat is rejected to A in the fourth operation, to the amount er,log,r. In the first and third opera-

tions there is no transfer of heat.

The action is now in every respect the reverse of what it was before. The same work is now spent upon the engine as was formerly done by it. The same amount of heat is now given to the hot body A as was formerly taken from it. The same amount of heat is now taken from the cold body C as was formerly given to it, as will be seen by the following scheme :—

Carnot’s Cycle, Direct. Work done by the engine =c(7, — 72) log, 7 ; Heat taken from A=cr,log,7 ; Heat rejected to C=cr,log,7.

Carnot’s Cycle, Reversed. Work spent upon the engine =c (7, — 7,) log,7; Heat rejected to A=cr,log,r ; Heat taken from C=cr,log,7.

The reversal of the work has been accompanied by an exact reversal of each of the trausfers of heat.

temperature above zr, causes heat to pass into C. Work is spent upon the gas, and heat is rejected toC. Let this be continued until a certain point d (fig. 12) is reached, such that the fourth operation will complete the cycle.

43. An engine in which this is possible is called, from the Revers- thermodynamic point of view, a reversible engine. In other words, ible a reversible heat-engine is one which, if forced to trace out its engine.

=f) Removo C and apply B. Continue the compression, which 18 now adiabatic, The pressure and temperature rise, and if the point d has been properly chosen, when the pressure is restored to its original value P,, the temperature will also have risen to its eee re See

im In calculations where this expression is Involved it is convenient to remem- thatlog., the hyperbolic logarithm, of any number is 2°3026 times the common logarithm of the number,

indicator diagram reversed in direction, so that the work which would be done by the engine, when running direct, is actually spent upon it, will reject to the source of heat the same quantity of heat as, when running direct, it would take from the source, and will take from the receiver of heat the same quantity as, when running direct, it would reject to the receiver. By ‘‘ the source of heat” is meant the hot body which acts as source, and by ‘‘ the receiver ” is meant the cold body which acts as receiver, when the

XXII — 61

Reversi- bility the test of per- fection ina heat- engine,

Effi-

engine is runuing direct. Carnot's engine is one example of a reversible engine. The idea .of thermodynamic reversibility is highly important, for the reason that no heat-engine can be more efficient than a reversible engine, if both take in and reject heat at the same pair of temperatures.

44, To prove this, let it be supposed that we have two engines M and N, of which N is reversible in the above sense, and that we have a hot body A capable of acting as a source of heat, and a cold body C capable of acting as a receiver of heat. The engine M is set to work as a heat-engine, taking heat from A and rejecting heat to C. To prove that M cannot be more efficient than the reversible engine N, we shall assume that it ¢s more efficient, and trace the consequences of that assumption.

Let M, working direct, be coupled so as to work N reversed ; if we suppose that the engines are without mechanical friction, and can be coupled up without loss of power, the work represented by the indicator diagram of M is spent on N, and N will therefore reject to Aan amount of heat which we will call Qa and take from B an amount of heat which we willcall Qp. Now, since N is reversible, if it worked direct, taking Qa from A, 1t would do the same amount of work as, in the supposed circumstances, is spent upon it. Hence, if M is more efficient than N it is taking from A an amount of heat less than Qa, and consequently also is giving to B an amount of heat correspondingly less than Qg. The joint effect, therefore, of M working direct and N working reversed is that the heat taken from A by M is less than the heat given to A by N, while the heat given to B by M is less (to an equal extent) than the heat taken from B by N. The consequence is that the hot body A is gaining heat on the whole, and the cold body B is losing an equal amount of heat ; in other words, with the continucd action of the double system heat passes, in indefinitely large quantity, from a cold body to a hot body, by means of an agency which, it is to be observed, is purely self-acting, for if we suppose there is no mechanical friction the system requires no help from without. Now this result is, by the second law of thermodynamics (§ 23), contrary to all experience ; and we are forced to conclude that the assumption that M is more efficient than the reversible engine N, when both take in and reject heat at the same two temperatures, is false. Hence, with given temperatures of source and receiver of heat no engine is more efficient than a reversible engine.

Next, let M and N both be reversible and both work between the same limits, but be different in any other respect. Then by the foregoing argument M cannot be more efficient than N, neither can N beiore efficient than M. Hence all reversible heat- engines taking in and rejecting heat at the same temperatures are equally eflicient.

45, These results imply that reversibility, in the thermodynamie sense, is the criterion of what may be called perfection in a heat- engine. A reversible engine is perfect in the sense that it cannot be improved on as regards efficiency: no other engine, taking in and rejecting heat at the same temperatures, will convert into work a greater fraction of the heat which it takes in. Moreover, if this criterion be satisfied, it is as regards efficiency a matter of complete indifference what is the nature of the working substance, or what, in other respects, is the mode of the engine's action.

46. Further, since all engines that are reversible are equally

ciency of efficient, provided they work between the same temperatures, an

a perfect heat- engine,

Sum- mary of the argu- ment.

expression for the efficiency of one will apply equally to all. Now, the engine whose efficiency we have found in § 41 is one example of a reversible engine. Hence its efficiency

; (11-7) /7y

is the efficiency of any reversible heat-engine whatsoever taking in heat at 7, and rejecting heat at 7,. And, as no engine can be more efficient than one that is reversible, this expression is the measure of perfeet efficiency. We have thus arrived at the immensely important conclusion that no heat-engine can convert into work a greater fraction of the heat which it receives than is expressed by the excess of the temperature of reception above that of rejection divided by the absolute temperature of reception.

47. Briefly recapitulated, the steps of the. argument by which this result has been reached are as follows. After stating the experimental laws to which gases conform, we examined the action of a heat-engine in which the working substance took in heat when at the temperature of the source and rejected heat when at the temperature of the receiver, the change of temperature from one to the other of these limits being accomplished by adiabatic expansion and adiabatic compression. Taking a special case in which this engine had for its working substance a perfect gas, we found that its efficiency was (r,— 7.) /7 ($ 41). We also observed that it was, in the thermodynamic sense, a reversible engine (§ 43). Then we found, by an application of the second law of thermodynamics, that no heat-engine can have a higher efficiency than a reversible engine, when taking in and giving out heat at the same two temperatures 7, and 7,; this was shown by the fact that a contrary assumption leads to a violation of the second law (§ 44). Hence, we concluded that all reversible heat- engines receiving and rejecting heat at the saine temperatures 7,

STEHEAM-ENGINE

[TITRORY

and 7, respectively are equally efficient, and hence that the efficiency (71-72) /7), already determined for one particular reversible engine, measures the efficiency of any reversible engine, and is a limit of efficiency which no engine whatever can exceed.

very similar to that of Sir W. Thomson. Rankine, to whom with dynan

Thomson and Clausius is due the development of the theory of heat- { engines from the point at which Carnot left it, has stated the second law in a form which is neither easy to understand, nor obvious, as an experimental result, when understood. His statement runs ;—

“Tf the absolute temperature of any uniformly hot substance be divided into any number of equal parts, the effects of those parts in causing work to be performed are equal.”!

To make this intelligible we may suppose that any quantity q ot heat from a source at temperature 7, is taken by the first of a series of perfect heat-engines, and that this engine rejects heat at a temperature 7, less than 7, by a certain interval Ar. Let the heat so rejected by the first engine form the heat supply of a second perfect engine working from 7, to 73 through an equal inter- val Av; let the heat which it in turn rejects form the heat-supply of a third perfect engine working again through an cqual interval from rz to 74; and so on. The efficiencies of the several engines

are (by § 46) a“ , AE A a , &c. The amounts of heat supplied to

1 3

Te

them are q, 972, 73, &c. Hence the amount of work done by oT TT,

eT A z each engine is the same, namely, g—~. Thus Rankine’s statement Ti

1

is to be understood as meaning that each of the equal intervals into which any range of temperature may be divided is equally effective in allowing work to be produced from heat when heat is made to pass, doing work in the most efficient possible way, through all the intervals from the top to the bottom of the range.

49, A point of much theoretical interest may be noted in pass- Then ing. In place of measuring temperature, as we have done, by the dyna expansion of a perfect gas, a scale of temperature night be formed absol thus. Starting from any one temperature, let a series’ of intervals measi be taken sucli that a serics of reversible engines, each working ment | with one of the intervals for its range, in the manner described in tempé § 48 (so that the heat rejected by the first forms the supply of the ture.] second, and so on), will each do the same amount of work ; then eall these intervals equal. This gives a scale of temperature (origin- ally suggested by Sir W. Thomson) which is truly absolute in the seuse of being peng a of the properties of any substanee ; it coincides, as is evident from § 48, with the scale we have

been using, in which equal intervals of temperature are defined as those corresponding to equal amounts of expansion of a perfect gas under constant pressure ; and it coincides approximately with the scale of a mercury thermometer when that is graduated to read from the absolute zero by the addition of a suitable constant (§ 29).

50. ‘The availability of heat for transformation into work Cond) depends essentially on the range of temperature through which the tions } heat is let down from the hot source to the cold body into which maxi) heat is rejected ; it is only in virtue of a difference of temperature mum) between bodies that conversion of any part of their heat into work effi- } becomes possible. If 7, and 7, are the highest and lowest tem- cienc} peratures of the range through which a heat-engine works, it is clear that the maximum of efficiency can be reached only when the engine takes in all its heat at 7, and rejects at 7, all that is rejected. With respect to every portion of heat taken in and rejected the greatest ideal efficiency is

_ Temperature of reception — temperature of rejection Temperature of reception :

Any heat taken in at a temperature below 7, or rejected at a temperature above 7, will have less availability for conversion into work thanif taken in at r, and rejected at 7, and hence, with a given pair of limiting temperatures, it is essential to maximum efficiency that no heat be taken in by the engine except at the top of the range, and no heat rejected except at the bottom of the range. Further, as we have secn in § 45, when the temperatures at which heat is received and rejected are assigned, an engine attains the maximum of efficiency if it be reversible,

51. It is therefore important to inquire more particularly what Cond kinds of action are reversible in the thermodynamic sense. A little tions\| consideration will show thata transfer of heat from the source or to never the receiver is reversible only when the working substance is at bility | sensibly the same tempcrature as the source or the receiver, as the case may be, and an expansion is reversible only when it occurs by the gradual displacement of some part of the containing envelope m such a manner that the expanding fluid does external work on the envelope, and does not waste energy to any sensible extent in setting

itselfin motion. This excludes what may be termed free expansion, ——— ae i

1 Manual of the Steam Engine and other Prime Movers, § 243.

such as that of the gas in Joule's experiment, § 33, and it excludes also what may be called imperfectly-resisted expansion, such as would occur if the fluid were allowed to expand into a closed chamber in which the pressure was less than that of the fluid, or if the piston in a cylinder rose so fast as to cause, through the inertia of the ex- panding fluid, local variations of pressure throughout the cylinder.

To make a heat-cngine, working within given limits of tempera- ture, as efficient as possible we must therefore strive—(1) to take in uo heat except at the highest temperature, and to reject no heat except at the lowest temperature ; (2) to secure that the working substance shall, when receiving heat, be at the temperature of the body from which the heat comes, and that it shall, when giving up heat, be at the temperature of the body to which heat is given up ; (3) to avoid free or imperfectly-resisted expansion. If these conditions are fulfilled the engine is a perfect heat-engine.

The first and second of these conditions are satisfied if in the action of the engine the working substance changes its tempera- ture from 7, to t2 by adiabatic expansion, and from rt, to 7, by adiabatic compression, thereby being enabled to take in and reject heat at the ends of the range without taking in or rejecting any by the way. This is the action in Carnot's engine (§ 40).

52. But if we can cause the working substance to deposit heat in some body within the engine while passing from 7, to 72, in such a manner that the transfer of heat from the substance to this body is reversible (satisfying the second condition above), then when we wish the working substance to pass from 7, to tr, we may reverse this transfer and so recover the heat that was deposited in this body. This alternate storing and restoring of heat may then take the place of adiabatic expansion and compression, in causing the tem-

perature of the working substance to pass from 7, to r, and from >

rT, to 7, respectively. The alternate storing and restoring is an action occurring wholly within the engine, and is therefore distinct from the taking in and rejecting of heat by the engine.

53. In 1827 Robert Stirling designed an apparatus, called a re- . generator, by which this process of alternate storing and restoring of heat could be actually performed. For the present purpose it will suffice to describe the regenerator as a passage through which the working fluid can travel in either direction, whose walls have a very large capacity for heat, so that the amount alternately given to or taken from them by the working fluid causes no more than an insensible rise or fall in their temperature. The temperature of the walls at one end of the passage is 7,, and this tapers continuously down to r,at the other end. When the working fluid at tempera-

other way of using it in air-engines was designed by Ericsson, and attempts have been made by C. W. Siemens and F. Jenkin to apply it to steam-engines and to gas-engines. But almost all actual engines, in so far as they can be said to approach the condition of reversibility, do so, not by the use of the regenerative principle, but by more or less nearly adiabatic expansion and compression after the manner of Carnot’s ideal engine.

III. PRopeRTIES oF STEAM AND THEORY OF THE STEAM- ENGINE.

55. We have now to consider the action of heat-engines in which the working substance is water and water-vapour or

Forma- tion of

steam. The properties of steam are most conveniently stated by steam

referring in the first instance to what happens when steam is formed under constant pressure. This is substantially the process which occurs in the

boiler of a steam-engine when the engine is at work. To fix the ideas we may suppose that the vessel in which steam is to be formed is a long upright cylinder fitted with a piston which may be loaded so that it exerts a constant pressure on the fluid below. Let there be, to begin with, at the foot of the cylinder a quantity of water (which for convenience of numerical statement we shall take as 1 fb), at any temperature ¢; and let the piston press on the surface of the water with a force of P ib per square foot. Let heat now be applied to the bottom of the cylinder. As it enters the water it will produce the follow- ing effects in three stages :—

(1) The temperature of the water rises until a certain tempera- ture ¢ is reached, at which steam begins to be formed. The value of ¢ depends on the particular pressure P which the piston exerts. Until the temperature ¢ is reached there is nothing but water below the piston.

(2) Steam is formed, more heat being taken in. The piston (which is supposed to exert a constant pressure) rises. No further increase of temperature occurs during this stage, which continues until all the water is converted into steam. During this stage the steam which is formed is said to be satwrated. The volume which the piston encloses at the end of this stage, — the volume, namely, of 1 Tb of saturated steam at pressure P (and temperature ¢),—will be denoted by V in cubic feet.

(8) If after all the water is converted into steam more heat be allowed to enter, the volume will increase and the temperature will rise. The steam is then said to be superheated.

under

constant pressure.

56. The difference between saturated and superheated steam Saturated may be expressed by saying that if water (at the temperature of and super- the steam) be mixed with steam some of the water will be evaporated heated if the steam is superheated, but none if the steam is saturated. steam.

ture 7, enters the hot end and passes through, it comes out at the cold end at temperature 7, having stored in the walls of the regenerator an amount of

heat which it will pick up again when

sed through in the opposite direction. During the return journey its temperature rises from 7, to 7,. The process is strictly reversible, or rather would be so if the regenerator had an unlimited capacity for heat, if no conduction of heat took place along its walls from the hot to the cold end, and if no loss took place by conduction or radiation from its external surface.

54. Using air as the working substance, and employing his regenerator, Stirling made an engine (to be described later) which, allowing for practical imperfections, is the earliest example of a truly reversible engine. The cycle of operations in Stirling's engine is substantially this :—

(1) Air (which has been heated to 7, by passing through the regenerator) is allowed to expand isothermally through a ratio 7, bing in heat from a furnace and raising a piston. Heat taken in (per tb of air)=cr, log er.

(2) The air is caused to pass through the regenerator from the hot to the cold end, depositing heat and having its temperature lowered to r,, without change of volume. Heat stored in regenerator =K,(7,—- 7). The pressure of course falls.

(3) The air is then compressed isothermally to its original volume at 7, in contact with a refrigerator (or receiver of heat). Heat rejected =cr, log er.

(4) The air is again passed through the regenerator from the cold to the hot end, taking up heat and having its temperature raised to7,. Heat restored by the regenerator =K,,(7, — 72).

em log r—cr,log.7 71-7 Efficiency = lll th lO,

er, log .r Ty

Any vapour in contact with its liquid and in thermal equilibrium is necessarily saturated. When saturated its properties differ con- siderably, as a rule, from those of a perfect gas, but when super- heated they approach those of a perfect gas more and more closely the farther the process of

superheating is carried, that is to say, the more the temperature is raised above #, the temperature of saturation corresponding to the given pressure P.

57. The temperature ¢ at which steam is formed depends on the value of P. Their relation was determined with great care by Regnault, in a series of classical cxperiments on which our knowledge of the properties of steam chiefly depends! The pressure of saturated steam rises with the temperature at a rate which increases rapidly in the upper regions of the scale. This will be apparent from the first and second columns of Table II., given on next page, which is compiled from Rankine's reduction of Regnault's results. The first column gives the temperature on the Fahr. scale; the second gives the corresponding pressure in pounds per square inch. Rankine has also expressed the relation of temperature and pressure in saturated steam by the following formula (which is applicable with other constants to other va- pours ?):—

log p= 6'1007 — a oo ; where p is the pressure in pounds per square inch, and' is the absolute temperature in Fahr. degrees. [or most purposes, how- ever, it is more convenient to find the pressure corresponding to a given temperature, or the temperature corresponding to a given pressure, from the table by interpolation.

Relation

of pres-

sure and tempera~

ture in

saturated

steam.

58. The same table shows the volume V, in cubic feet, occupied Relation by 1 Tb of saturated steam at each pressure, This is a quantity of pres- the

direct experimental measurement of which is of very great sure and difficulty. It may, however, be calculated, from a knowledge of volume.

_ The indicator diagram of the action is shown in fig. 13, and a diagram of the engine is given inchap. XIV. Stirling's engine is important, not as a present-day heat-cngine (though it

has recently been revived in small forms after a long interval of disuse), but because it is typical of the only mode, other than Carnot's plan of adiabatic expansion and compression, by which the action of a heat-engine can be Inade reversible. Valuable as the regenerator has proved in metallurgy and other industrial processes, its actual appheation to heat-engines has hitherto been very limited. An-

Fie. 18.—Air-Engine with Regenerator (Stirling).

other properties of steam, by a process which will be described later (§ 75). The values of V given in the table were determined by Rankine by means of this process; they agree fairly well with such direct observations of the density of steam as have been hitherto

1 Mem. Inst. France, 1847, vol. xxi. An account of Regnault's methods of experiment and a statement of his results expressed in British measures will be found in Dixon's Treatise on Heat.

2 Phil. Mag., Dec. 1854, or Manual of the Steam-Engine, p. 237.

made.! Therelation of P to V may be approximately expressed by the formula? a PV?* =constant = 68500 (nearly),

when P is stated in ib per sq. ft. and V in cub. ft. per Ib.

TasiE 11.—Properties of Saturated Steam.

Heat of Formation.

Temperature.| Pressure. Me oe F WG A. Degrees F. | ib per sq. in. Cub. Ft. Thermal Units. | Thermal Units.

32 0-085 | 3390 1091°8 0 41 0122 | 2406 1094°5 90 50 0173 | 1782 1097°3 18-0 59 0-241 | 1264 1100-0 27:0 68 0°333 935 1102°8 36-0 77 0°452 | 699 1105°5 45-0 86 0°607 529 11082 54:0 95 0°806 405 1111-0 63:0 104 1:06 313 1113°7 720 113 «| 188 244 1116°5 81°0 122. | 1-78 192 1119-2 901 131 2°27 152°4 “1121°9 99°1 140 2°88 122°0 1124°7 1081 149 3°62 98°45 1127°4 71 158 4°51 80°02 1130°2 126-2 167 5°58 65°47 1132°9 135°2 176 6°87 53°92 1135°6 | 144°3 185 8°38 44°70 11384 |) 153-3 194 10°16 37°26 11411 +! 162°4 203 _ 12°26 31°26 | 1143°9 171°4 212 14°70 26:36 1146°6 180°5 221 17°58 2234 1149°3 189°6 20°80 19°08 1152°1 198°7 24°54 | 16:28 1154°8 207°8 28°83 14-00 1157°6 216°9 33°71 12:09 1160°3 2260 39°25 10°48 1163°1 235°2 45°49 9124 1165°8 244°3 52°52 7973 1168°6 2585 60°40 6-992 1171°3 262°7 69°21 6°153 11741 271°9 79°03 5433 1176°8 281°1 89°86 4°816 1179°5 290°3 101°9 4280 1182°2 299°5 115‘1 3°814 1185°0 308°7 129°8 3-410 1187°7 318-0 145°8 3-057 1190°4 327°3 163°3 2-748 1193:2 3366 182°4 2476 1195°9 345°9 203°3 2-236 1198°6 352-2 2259 2-025 120174 364°5 250°3 1838 1204°1 373°9 276°9 1°672 1206°9 383°2 305°5 1°525 1209°6 392°6 336°3 13938 1212°4 402°0

Supply 59. We have next to consider the supply of heat. During the of heat first stage, until the temperature rises from its initial value ¢, to ¢,

informa- the temperature at which steam begins to form under the given

tion of pressure, heat is required only to warm the water. Since the steam _ specific heat of water is nearly constant, the amount of heat taken under in during the first stage is approximately ¢-¢ thermal units or constant J(t—t,) foot-pounds, J being Joule’s equivalent (§ 23), and this

pressure. expression for it will generally serve with sufficient accuracy in practical calculations. More exactly, however, the heat taken in is somewhat greater than this, for Regnault’s experiments show that the specific heat of water increases slightly as the temperature rises. In stating the amount of heat required for this first stage, t) must be taken as a known temperature; for convenience in numerical statement the temperature 32° F. is usually chosen as an arbitrary starting-point from which the reception of heat is to

be reckoned. We shall employ the symbol % to designate the heat required to raise 1 tb of water from 32° F. to the temperature ¢ at which steam begins to form. The value of # in thermal units is given, approximately, by the equation h=t—32.

More exact values, which take account of the variation in the specific heat of water, will be found in the last column of Table II. During the first stage, sensibly all the heat supplied goes to increase the stock of internal energy which the fiuid possesses, the amount of external work which is done by the expansion of the fluid being negligible.

60. The heat taken in during the second stage is what is called the latent heat of steam, and is denoted by L. Of it a part is spent

1 See Fairbairn and Tate, “On the Density of Steam at Different Temperatures,” Phil, Trans., vol. cl., 1860,

2 This is Rankine’s formula,

Latent heat.

Zeuner gives PV1:°646=eonstant.

during evaporation.

in doing external work,—namely, P multiplied by the excess of the volume of the steam over the volume of the water,—and the remainder is the difference of internal energy between 1 Ib of steam at tand 1 tb of water até The volume of 1 tb of water, at sueh temperatures as are usual in steam-engines, is nearly 0°017 cubic feet. We may therefore write the external work (in foot-pounds) done during the production of 1 Ib of steam under constant pressure P,— External work =P(V —0:017).

61. Adding together the heat taken in during the first and second Tota | stages we have a quantity designated by H and called the total heat heat ot ||

of 1 tb of saturated steam :— steam, |

H=A+L. Regnault’s values of II are very accurately expressed (in thermal units) by the formula H=1082 +0°305¢.

They are given in the fourth column of Table IT. A similar for- mula gives approximate values of L, exact enough for use in prac- tical calculations, —

L=1114-0°7¢. The total heat of formation of 1 Ib of steam, when formed under constant pressure from water at any temperature fy, is of course H-hp», where hy corresponds to fp.

62. Of the whole latent heat of stcam, L, the part P(V —0°017) Internal | is, as has been said above, spent in doing external work. The energy. || remainder (in foot-pounds)—

JL-P(V -0:017)— ‘ is the change of internal energy which the substance undergoes This quantity, for which it is convenient to have a separate symbol, will be denoted by p in thermal units, or Jp in foot-pounds. In dealing with the heat required to produce steam we adopted the state of water at 32° F. as an arbitrary start- ing-point from which to reckon the reception of heat. In the same way it is convenient to use this arbitrary starting-point in reckoning what imay be called the internal energy of the substance, which is the excess of the heat taken in over the external work done by the substance during its reception of heat. Thus the internal cnergy I of 1 tb of saturated steam at pressure P is equal to the total heat H, less that part of the total heat which is spent in doing external work, or (in foot-pounds)

JI=JH-P(V-0°017),

or I=L+h-P(V-0°017)/J=h+p. The notion of internal energy is useful in calculating the heat taken in or rejected by steam during any stage of its expansion or compression in an engine. Whena working substance passes from one condition to another, its gain or loss of heat is determined by the equation

Heat taken in =inerease of internal energy + external work. Any of the terms of this equation may be negative; the last term is negative when work is done, not by, but upon the substance.

63. The same equation gives the means of finding the amount Heat oj of heat required to form steam under any assigned conditions, in format | place of the condition assumed at the beginning of this ehapter, under ¢ where the formation of steam under constant pressure was eon- condi- sidered. Whatever be the condition as to pressure under which tions. || the process of formation is carried on, the total heat required is the sum of the internal energy of the steam when formed and the work done by the substance during the process. Thus in general

Heat of formation=I+J~ Je Pav, ; the limits of integration being the final volume of the steam and the original volume of the water. When steam is formed in @ closed vessel of constant volume no external work is done; the heat of formation is then equal to the internal encrgy, and is less than the total heat of formation (H) of steam, when formed at a constant pressure equal to the pressure reached in the vessel, by the quantity P(V -0°017).

ro In caiottieniet which relate to the action of steam in engines Wet | we have generally to deal, not with dry saturated steain, but with steam. wet steam, or steam which either carries in suspension, or 18 otherwise mixed with, a greater or less proportion of water. In every such mixture the steam and water have the same temperature, and the steam is saturated. The dryness of wet steam is measurct by the proportion g of dry steam in each pound of the mixed substance. When that is known it is casy to determine the other physical constants: thus— Latent heat of 1 tb of wet steam=qL; Total heat of 1 tb of wet steam =A+qL; Volume of 1 tb of wet steam =gV+ (1-9q)0‘017 =qV very nearly, unless the steam is so wet as to consist mainly of water; Internal energy of 1 tb of wet steam=/+ gp. ; 65. Steam is superheated when its temperature is raised, in any ol manner, above the temperature corresponding to saturation at the ll actual pressure. When much superheated, steam behaves like a steam. |

oy sTEAM.]

perfect gas, and may be called ‘‘steam gas.” It then follows the equation PV =85‘57,

and the specific heat at constant pressure, K,, is 371 foot-pounds or 0°48 thermal unit. At very low tempcratures steam approximates closely to the condition of a perfect gas when very slightly super- heated, and even when saturated ; at high temperatures a much ater amount of superheating is necessary to bring about an approach to the perfectly gaseous state. The total heat required for the production of superheated steam under any constant pressure, when the superheating is sufficient to bring the steam to the state of steain gas, may therefore be reekoned by taking the total heat of saturated steam at a low temperature and adding to it the product of K, into the excess of temperature above that. Thus Rankine, treating saturated steam at 32° F. as a gas, gives the formula H’=1092 + 0°48(¢’ — 32) , to express the heat of formation (under any constant pressure) of superheated steam, at any temperature ¢ which is so much above the temperature of saturation corresponding to the actual pressure that the steam may be treated as a perfect gas. Calculated from its chemical composition, the density of steam gas should be 0°622 times that of air at the same pressure and temperature. The value of y or K,/K, for steam gasis1°3. These formulas, dealing as they do with steam which is so highly superheated as to be perfectly aseous, fail to apply to high-pressure steam that is heated but Tittle above its temperature of saturation. The relation of pressure to volume and temperature in the region which lies between the saturated and the perfectly gaseous states has been experimented on by Hirn.t Formulas whieh are applicable with more or less accuracy to steam in either the saturated or superheated condition have been devised by Hirn, Zeuner,? Ritter,? and others.

66. The expansion of volume which occurs during the conversion of water into steam under constant pressure—the second stage of the process described in § 55—is isothermal. From what has been already said it is obvious that steam, or any other saturated vapour, can be expanded or compressed isothermally only when wet, and that evaporation (in the one case) or condensation (in the other) must accompany the process. stance which consists of a liquid and its vapour are straight lines of uniform pressure.

67. The form of adiabatic lines for substances of the same class depends not only on the particular fluid, but also on the propor- tion of liquid to vapour in the mixture. In the case of steam, it has been shown by Rankine and Clausius that if steam initially dry be allowed to expand adiabatically it becomes wet, and if initially wet (unless very wet*) it becomes wetter. A part of the steam is condensed by the process of adiabatic expansion, at first in the form of minute particles suspended throughout the mass, The temperature and pressure fall; and, as that part of the sub- stance which remains uncondensed is saturated, the relation of =” to temperature throughout the expansion is that which

olds for saturated steam. The following formula, proved by Rankine® and Clausius® (see § 75), serves to calculate the extent to which condensation takes place during adiabatie expansion, and so allows the relation of pressure to volume to be determined.

Before expansion, let the initial dryness of the steam be g, and its absolute temperature 7,. Then, if it expand adiabatically until its temperature falls to 7, its dryness after expansion is

wo (OFS «then, 22 q at v1 + loge a1). L, and L are the latent heats (in thermal units) of 1 Ib of steam before and after expansion respectively. When the steam is dry to begin with, g,=1.

This formula is easily applied to the construction of the adiabatic eurve when the initial pressure and the pressure after expansion are given, the corresponding values 7 and L being found from the table. It is less convenient if the data are the initial pressure and the Initial and final volumes, or the initial pressure and the ratio of expansion 7, An approximate formula more appropriate in that case is

Pv” =constant, or P/P,=(v/v,)”=7”. Here v and v, denote the volume of 1 tb of the mixture of steam and water before and after expansion respectively, and are to be distinguished from V and V,, which we have already used to denote the volume of 1 fb of dry saturated steam at pressures P

and P;. The index 2 has a value which depends on the degree of |.

initial dryness q,.

Théorie Mécanique de la Chaleur. 7 4ischr. d. Vereins deutscher Ingenteure, vol. xi.

Wied. Ann., 1878. For a discussion of several of these formulas, see a paper by H. Dyer, Trans. Inst. of Engineers and Shipbuilders in Scotland, 1885,

Prof. Cotterill, in his 7reatise on the Steam-Engine, § 79, has calculated (using the equation which follows in the text) that, when a mixture of steam and water expands adiabatically, steam condenses if the proportion of steam be, roughly, hd 50 per cent., but water is evaporated if the proportion of steam be less than al “oe 50 per cent. The exact proportion depends on the initial pressure.

Steam-Engine, § 281,

6 Mechanical Theory of Heat (tr. by W. R. Browne), chap. vi. § 12.

STEAM-ENGINE

Isothermal lines for a working sub-:

485

According to Zeuner,” 7=1°035+0’lg,, so that for

gd 095 09 085 O08 O75 O07

wal ‘Ta5- £130 P25 2100 Tile 1710 1108, Rankine gave for this index the value 4°, which is too small if the steam be initially dry. He determined it by examining the expansion curves of indicator diagrams taken from working steam- engines; but, as we shall sce later, the expansion of steam in an actual engine is by no means adiabatic, on account of the transfer of heat which goes on between the working fluid and the metal of the cylinder and piston. When it is desired to draw an adiabatic eurve for steam, that value of n must be chosen which refers to the degree of dryness at the beginning of the expansion.

68. Weare now in a position to study the action of a heat-engine employing steam as the working substauce. To simplify the first consideration as far as possible, let it be supposed that we have, as before, a long eylinder eomposed of non-conducting material except at the base, and fitted with a non-conducting piston; also a source of heat A at some temperature 7,; a recciver of heat, or, as we may now eall it, a condenser C, at a lower temperature 7,; and a non-con- ducting cover B (as in § 40). Then we ean perform Carnot's cycle of operations as follows. 'T''o fix the ideas, suppose that there is 1 tb of water in the cylinder to begin with, at the temperature r,:—

(1) Apply A, and allow the piston to rise. The water will take in heat and be converted into steam, expanding isothermally at constant pressure P,;. This part of the operation is shown by the line ad in fig. 14.

(2) Remove A and apply B. Allow the expan- sion to continue adiabatically (bc), with falling pressure, until the temperature falls to 7». The pressure will then be P,, corresponding (in Table II.) to r9.

q@ SOTWERmat 3B

(3) Remove B, apply C, and compress. Steam is condensed by rejecting heat to C. The action is iso- thermal, and the pressure remains P,, Let this be continued until a certain Fic, 14.—Carnot's Cycle with water and pores q – reached, after

steam for working substance. which adiabatic compression will complete the cycle.

(4) Remove C and apply B. Continue the eompression, which is now adiabatic. If the point d has been rightly chosen, this will complete the cycle by restoring the working fluid to the state of water at temperature 7}.

The indicator diagram for the cycle is given in fig. 14, as cal- culated by the help of the equations in § 67 and of Table II. fora particular example, in which y,=90 fb per square inch (7,=781), and the expansion is coutinued down to the pressure of the atmo- sphere, 14°7 tb per square inch (7,—673). Since the process is reversible, and since heat is taken in only at7, and

rejected only at ro, the efficiency is (r;—7.)/T.. The heat taken in per tb of the fluid is L,, and the work done is L, (7,- 72)/7, a result which may be used to check the calculation of the diagram.

69. If the action here deseribed eould be realized in practice, we should have a thermodynamically perfect steam-engine using saturated steam. The fraetion of the heat supplied to it whieh such an engine would eonvert into work would depend simply on the temperature, and therefore on the pressure, at which the steam was produced and condensed. The temperature of con- densation is limited by the eonsideration that there must be an abundant supply of some substance to absorb the rejected heat ; water is actually used for this purpose, so that 7, has for its lower limit the temperature of the available water-supply.

To the higher temperature 7, and pressure P, no limit can be set except such as is brought about in practice by the meehanical diffi- culties, with regard to strength and to lubrication, which attend the use of high-pressure steam. By a very special construction of engine and boiler Mr Perkins has been able to use steam with a pressure as high as 500 ib per square inch ; with engines of the usual construction the value ranges from 190 ib downwards.

If the temperature of condensation be taken as 60° F., as a lower limit, the efficiency of a perfect steam-engine, using saturated steam, would depend on the value of P,, the absolute pressure of production of the steam, as follows :—

For perfect steam-engine, with condensation at 60° F.,

P, in Ib per square inch being 40 80 120 160 200

Highest ideal efficiency “284 °326 469°350 49868 86°38 81

But it must not be supposed that these values of the efficiency are actually attained, or are even attainable. Many causes conspire to prevent steam-engines from being thermodynamically perfect, and some of the causes of imperfection cannot be removed. These num- bers will serve, however, as a standard of comparison in judging of

7 Grundztige der Mech. Warmetheorie, p 342. Sce also Grashof, Resultate aus der Mech. Warmetheorte, § 37. In the adiabatic compression of wet steam n=1°034+0 lig,, where g, 1s the dryness at the beginning of compresslon,

Carnot’s eycle with steam for working substance,

Efficiency of a perfeet stean- engine, Limits of tempera- ture

the performance of actual engines, and as setting forth the advan- tage of high-pressure steam from the thermodynamie point of view. Effieieney 70. As a contrast to the ideally perfect steam-engine of § 68

of an we may next consider a eyelic action such as occurred in the early engine engines of Newcomen or Leupold, when steam was used non- using expansively,—or rather, such an action as would have occurred in steam engines of this type had the cylinder been a perfect non-conductor non- of heat. Let the eycle of operations be this :— expan- (1) Apply A and evaporate the water as before at Pj). Heat sively. taken in=1y. (2) Remove A and apply C. This at once condenses a part of the steam, and reduces the pressure to P,. (3) Compress at P,, in contact with C, till condensation is complete, and water at rz is left. | (4) Remove Band apply A. This heats the water again to 7, and completes the cycle. Heat taken in=A, — hy. The indicator diagram for this series of * : E C f Fig. 15. operations is shown in fig. 15. Here the action is not reversible. To caleulate the efficiency, we have Work done _ (P, — P,)(V, — 0°017) Heat takenin J(L,+/,—-/e) The values of this will be.found to range from 0°067 to 0°072 for the values of P, which are stated in § 69, when the temperature of condensation is 60° F. ; Engine 71. In the ideal engine represented in fig. 14 the functions of with boiler, cylinder, and condenser are combined in a single vessel; but separate after what has been said in chap. II. it is scarcely necessary to re- organs, mark that, provided the working substance passes through the same cycle of operations, it is indifferent whether these are performed in several vessels or in one. To approach a little more closely the conditions that hold in practice, we may think of the engine which performs the eyele of § 70 as consisting of a boiler A (fig. 16) kept at 7), a non-conducting cylin- der and piston B, a

surface con- denser C kept at 7,, and a feed-pump D which restores the condensed water to the boiler. Then for every pound of steam supplied and used non-expansively as in § 70, we have work doneonthe piston =(P,—P,) Vj; but an amount of work has to be ex- pended indriving the feed- pump = (P,-P,) 0-017. Dedueting this, the netf- work done per Ib of steam \= is the same as before, and = the heat-taken in is also Fic. 16.—Organs of a Steam-Engine. | the same. An indicator diagram taken from the cylinder would — give the area efgh (fig. 17), where oc=Py, ef=Vj, oh =P, ; an indi- cator diagram taken from the pump would , _ give the negative area hjic, where ci is the « volume of the feed-water, or 0°017 cub. ft. The difference, namely, the shaded area, is the diagram of the complete cycle gone | through by each pouud of the working substance. In experimental measurements of the work done in steam-engiues, only Fig. 17. the action which occurs within the eylinder ~~s shown on the indi~~ cator diagram. Jrom this the work spent on the feed-pump is to be subtracted in any accurate determination of the thermodynamic efficiency. If the feed-water is at any temperature rt, other than that of the condenser as assumed in § 70, it is clear that the heat taken in is H, —/,y instead of H, — hy. How 72, We have now to inquire how nearly, with the engine of fig. nearly 16 (that is to say, with an engine in which the boiler and condenser may the are separate from the cylinder), we can approach the reversible process cycle of § 68. The first stage of that eycle corresponds to the be re- admission of steam from the boiler into the cylinder. Then the versible ? point kuown as the point of ewé-off is reached, at which admis-

sion ceases, aud the steam already in the cylinder is allowed to expand, exerting a diminishing pressure on the piston. This is the second stage, or the stage of expansion. The process of expansion may be carried on until the pressure falls to that of the condenser, in which ease the expansion is said to be complete.

At the end of the expansion release takes place, that is to say, com- –

munication is opened with the condenser. Then the return stroke begins, and a period termed the exhaust occurs, that is to say, steam passes out of the eylinder, into the condenser, where it is condensed at pressure P,, which is felt as a back pressure opposing the return of the piston. So far, all has been

essentially reversible, and identical with the corresponding parts of Carnot's eycle.

But we cannot complete the cycle as Carnot's eycle was com- pleted. The existence of a separate condenser makes the fourth stage, that of adiabatic compression, impracticable, and the best we can do is to continue the exhaust until condensation is com-

plete, and then return the condensed water to the boiler by meang of the feed-pump. a

It is true that we may, and in actual practice do, stop the — exhaust before the return stroke is complete, and compress that portion of the steam which remains below the piston, but this does not materially affect the thermodynamie efficiency; it is done partly for mechanical reasons, and partly to avoid loss of power through clearance (see chap. IY.). – In the present instance it is supposed that there is no elearance, in which case this compression is out of the question. The indicator diagram given bya cylinder in which steam goes through the action de- scribed above is shown to scale in fig. 18 for a par- ticular example, in which it is supposed that 1 cubie

foot of dry saturated steam

is admitted at an absolute

pressure of 90 ib per square . Inch, and is expanded twelve times, or down to a pressure of 5:4 tb per square inch, at which pressure it is dis- charged to the condenser, As we have assumed the cylinder to be non-conducting, and the steain to be initially dry, the expansion follows the law PV!:45— constant. The advantage of expansion is obvious, that part of the diagram which lies under the curve being so much clear gain,

73. To calculate the efficiency, we have

Work done per tb during admission=P,V, ;

‘BGy ws Oe wee wet ws BWnestHY

St PR ses EF ge we wee VO.tuws

Fig. 18.—Ideal Indieator Diagram for Steam used expansively.

of engine |

P,V, ~ P.rV, working n-r1 ” expan- sively,

during expansion to volume 7V,=

(by § 36), =(P,V,— Por V,)/0°185 ;

Work spent during return stroke = P,7V, ;

+ 3, On the feed-pump=(P, ~ P,)0°017;

Heat taken in=H,-Apy.

74, These expressions refer to complete expansion. When the Incon- expansion is incomplete, as it generally is, the expression given plete ex above for the work done during expansion still applies if we take pansion, P, to be the pressure at the end of expansion, while the work spent on the steam during the back-stroke is PyrV, and that spent on the feed-pump is (P, —P.)0°017, P, being the back pressure. Incomplete expansion is illustrated by the dotted line in fig. 18.

It is easy, by the aid of §§ 64 and 67 to extend these calcula- tions to cases where the steam, instead of being initially dry, is supposed to have any assigned degree of wetness. The efficiency which is ealeulated in this way, which for the present purpose may be ealled the theoretical efficiency corresponding to the assumed conditions of working, is always much less than the ideal efficiency of a perfect engine, since the cycle we are now — dealing with is not reversible. But even this theoretical efficiency, short as it falls of the ideal of a perfect engine, is far greater than ean be realized in practice when the same boiler and condenser tem- peratures are used, and

the same ratio of expansion. The reasons for this will be briefly considered in the next chapter; at present the fact is mentioned to guard the reader from supposing that the results which the above formulas give apply to actual engines. » |

75. The results of § 68 have been turned to account by Rankine Caleula- | and Clausius for the purpose of deducing the density of steam tion of from other properties which admit of more exact direct measure- density (meut. Let the perfect steam-engine there described work through saturate/] avery small interval of temperature Ar between two temperatures 7 steam. | andt- Ar. The efficiency is At/r, and the work done (in foot-lbs.) | is JLAc/r. The indicator diagram is now reduced to a long narrow strip, whose length is V -—0°017 and its breadth AP, the difference in pressure between steam at temperatures r and r-—Ar. Hence the work done is also AP(V – 0‘017), and therefore

>? 3)

ne or (in the limit) os is the rate of increase of tempera- ture with increase of pressure in saturated steam at the particular temperature r. It may be found roughly from Table IIL., p. 484, oF more exactly by differentiating the equation given in§ 57. Lisalso known, and hence the value of V corresponding to any assigne temperature may be calculated with a degree of accuracy which it would be difficult to reach in direct experiment. The volumes given in the Table are determined in this way.!

ere ge eee

1 The result of § 75 may be applied as follows to give the formula of § 67 for the adiabatie expansion of wet steam. For brevity we may write V—0°017=u, In adiabatie expansion the work done is equal to the loss of internal energy, or

: Pd(qu) =—Jd1 =—Jd(h-+qp). Since dh=dr, and p=L—Pu/J, this may be written Jdr + Jd(gL)—quaP=0.

JL d £ By § 75, udP=”— dr; henee1 + 4- Ce =0;

Ifere —

and by integration, loge t-+qL/r=eonstant=loge 71+9,Ly/71, whieh is the equation of § 67.

’ |

re-

(lar-

ale,

STEAM IN CYLINDER. |

TV. AcTuAL BEHAVIOUR OF STEAM IN THE CYLINDER.

76. In fig. 18 we have what may be called a first approximation

cator to the theoretical indicator diagram of a steam-engine. In the

y-nal i.) zram.

action then described it was assumed—({1) that the steam supplied was dry and saturated, and had during admission the full (uniform) ressure of the boiler P,; (2) that there was no transfer of heat to or from the steam except in the boiler and in the condenser ; (3) that after more or less complete expansion all the steam was discharged by the return stroke of the piston, during which the back pressure was the (uniform) pressure in the condenser P, ; (4) that the whole volume of the cylinder was swept through by the piston. It remains to be seen how far

=f these assumptions are un- true in practice, and how far

=: Absolute Vacuum > the efficiency is affected in

Fic. 19.—Actual Indicator Diagram froma consequence.

Condensing Steam-Engine. The actual conditions of working differ from these in the following main respects, some of which are illustrated by the practical indicator diagram of fig. 19, which is taken from an actual engine.

77. Owing to the resistance of the ports and passages, and to

Boler Pressure

Atmospheric. Pressure

wing. the inertia of the steam, the pressure within the cylinder is less

than P, during admission and greater than P, during exhaust.

Moreover P, and P, are themselves not absolutcly uniform, and P, is greater than the pressure of steam at the temperature of the condenser, on account of the presence of air in the condenser.

During admission the pressure of steam in the cylinder is less than the boiler pressure by an amount which increases as the piston advances, on account of the increased velocity of the piston's motion and the consequent increased demand for steam. When the ports and passages offer much resistance the steam is expres- sively said to be throttled or "wire-drawn." Wire-drawing of steam is in fact acase of imperfectly-resisted expansion ($51). The steain is dried by the process to a small extent, and if initially dry it becomes superheated. causes the line of admission to lie below a line drawn at the boiler pressure, and to slope downwards. In fairly good practical instances the mean absolute pressure during admission 1s about nine-tenths of the pressure in the boiler.

In the same way, during the exhaust the actual back pressure exceeds the pressure in the condenser (shown by a dotted line in fig. 19) by an amount depending on the freedom with which the steam makes its exit from the cylinder. In condensing engines with a good vacuum the actual back pressure is from 3 to 5 ib per square inch, aud in non-condensing engines it is 16 to 18 Ibin place of the mere 14°7 tb which is the pressure of the atmosphere. The excess of back pressure may be greatly increased by the pre- seuce of water in the cylinder. The effects of wire-drawing do not stop

here. The valves open and close more or less slowly; the points of cut-off and release are therefore not absolutely sharp, and the diagram has rounded corners at 6 and ¢ in place of the sharp angles which mark those events in fig. 18. For this reason release is allowed in practice to occur a little before the end of the forward stroke, hence the toe of the diagram takes a form like that shown in fig. 19. The sharpness of the cut-off, and to a less extent the sharpness of the release, depends greatly on the kind of valves and valve-gear used; valves of the Corliss type (to be described later), which are noted for the suddenness with which admission of steam is stopped, have the merit amongst others of producing a very sharply defined diagram.

78. When the piston is at either end of its stroke there is a small space left between it and the cylinder cover. This space, together with the volume of the passage or passages leading thence to the steam and exhaust valves, is called the clearance. It con- stitutes a volume through which the piston does not sweep, but which is uevertheless filled with steam when admission occurs, and the steam in the clearance forms a part of the whole steam which expands after the supply from the boiler is cut-off. 1f AC be the volume swept through by the piston up to re- lease, OA the volume of the elearance, and AB the volume swept through during admission, the apparent ratio of expansion is AC/AB, but the real i ratio is (OA+AC)/(OA + AB).

i Clearance must obviously be taken account of in any calculation of curves i of expansion. It is conveniently al- lowed for in indicator diagrams by shifting the line of no volume back through a distance corresponding to the clearanee (fig. 20). Tn actual engines OA is from zy to Ay of the volume of the cylinder. _ 79. Clearance affects the thermodynamie efficiency of the engine chiefly by altering the consumption of steam per stroke, and its Influenee depends materially on the compression (§ 72). If during

oa r) _ Fic. 20,—Effect of Clearance,

STEHEAM-ENGINE

In an indicator diagram wire-drawing .

the back stroke the process of exhaust is discontinued before the end, and the remaining steam is compressed, this cushion of steam will finally fill the volume of the clearance ; and by a proper selection of the point at which compression begins the pressure of the cushion may be made to rise just up to the pressure at which stcam is admitted when the valve opens. This may be called eomplete compression, and when it occurs the existence of clearance has no direct effect on the consumption of steam nor on the efficiency ; the whole fluid in the cylinder may then be thought of as consisting of two parts,—a permanent cushion which is alternately expanded and compressed without net gain or loss of work, and the working part proper, which on admission fills the volume AB (fig. 20), and which enters and leaves the cylinder in each stroke. But if eom- pression be incomplete or absent there is, on the opening of the admission valve, an inrush of steam to fill up the clearance space. This increases the consumption to an extent which is only partly counterbalanced by the increased area of the diagram, and the result is that the efficiency is reduced. The action is, in fact, a case of unresisted expansion (§ 51), and consequently tends, so far as its direct effects go, to make the engine less than ever reversible. It is to be noted, however, that by such unresisted expansion the entering steam is dried to some exteut, and this helps in a measure to counteract the cause of loss which will be described below. Compression has the mechanical advantage that it obviates the shock which the admission of steam would otherwise cause, and that by giving the piston work to do while its velocity is being rapidly reduced it reduces those stresses in the mechanism which are due to the inertia of the reciprocating parts.

80. The third and generally by far the most important element Influenee

Compres- sion and eushion-

i

ng.

of difference between the action of a real engine and that of our of

hypothetical engine is that alluded to at the end of chap. I., the cylinder difference which proceeds from the fact that the cylinder and piston walls,

are not non-conductors. As the steam fluctuates in temperature there is a complex give-and-take of heat between it and the metal it touches, and the effects of this, though not very conspicuous on the indicator diagram, have an enormous influence in reducing the efficiency by increasing the consumption of steam. Attention was drawn to this action by Mr D. K. Clark as early as 1855 (Railway Machinery, ov art. STEAM-ENGINE, Ency. Brit., 8th edition?), and the results of his experiments on locomotives were confirmed some years later by Mr Isherwood's trials of the engines of the United States steamer " Michigan." Rankine in his classical work on the steam-engine notices the subject only very briefly, and takes no account of the action of the cylinder walls in his calculations. Its importance has now been established beyond dispute, notably by the experiments of Messrs Loring and Emery on the engines of certain revenue steamers of the United States," and by a protracted series of investigations carried out by M. Hallauer and other Alsatian engineers under the direction of Hirn,? whose name should be specially associated with the rational analysis of engine tests. In the next chapter some account will be given of how steam- engines are experimentally examined and how (following Hirn) we may deduce the exchanges of heat which occur between the steam and the cylinder throughout the stroke. The following is, in gene- ral terms, what experiments with actual engines show to take place.

81. When steam is admitted at the beginning of the stroke, it Initial finds the metallic surfaces of the cylinder and piston chilled by conden- having been in contact with low-pressure steam during the exhaust sation.

of the previous stroke. A portion of it is therefore liquefied, and, as the piston advances, more and more of the chilled cylinder surface is exposed and more and more of the hot steam is con- densed. Atthe end of the admission, when communication with the boiler is cut off, the cylinder consequently contains a film of water spread over the exposed surface, in addition to saturated steam. The boiler has therefore been drawn upon for a supply greater than that corresponding to the volume of steam in the admission space. The importance of this will be obvious from the fact,

demonstrated by experiment, that the steam which is thus condensed during admission frequently amounts to 30 and even 50 per cent. of the whole quantity that comes over from the boiler.

82. Then, as expansion begins, more cold metal is uncovered, Re-

and some of the remaining steam is condensed upon it.

But the evapora-

pressure of the steam now falls, and the layer of water which has tion,

been previously deposited begins to be re-evaporated as soon as the temperature of the expanding steam falls below that of the liquid layer. On the whole, then, the amount of water present will increase during the earliest part of the expansion, but a stage will soon be reached when the condensation which occurs on the newly exposed metal is balanced by re-evaporation of older portions of the layer. The percentage of water present is then a maximum ; and from this point onwards the steam becomes more and more dried by re-evaporation of the layer.

83. If the amount of initial condensation has been small this

1 See also Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., vol. 1xxii. p. 275.

2 A useful abstract of Messrs Loring and Emery's reports is given in Engineer: ing, vols, xix. and xxi., and in Mr Maw's Recent Practice in Marine Engineering,

3 Bull. Soc. Industr. de Mulhouse, from 1877. For other references, see chap. V.

re-evaporation may be complete before release occurs. Very usually, however, there is still an undried layer at the end of the forward stroke, and the process of re-evaporation continues during the return stroke, while exhaust is taking place. In extreme cases, if the amount of initial condensation has been very great, the cylinder walls may fail tp become

quite dry even during the exhaust, and a residue of the layer of condensed water may either be carried over as water into the condenser, or, if the exhaust valves are so badly arranged as to prevent its discharge, this unevaporated residue may gather in the cylinder, requiring perhaps the drain-cocks to be left open to allow of its escape. When any water is retained in this way the initial condensation is enormously increased, for the hot steam then meets not only cold metal but cold water. The latter causes much condensation, partly becauso of its high specific heat, and partly because it is brought into intimate mixture with the entering steam. ;

84. Apart, however, from this extreme case, whatever water is re-evaporated during expansion and exhaust takes heat from the metal of the cylinder, and so brings it into a state that makes con- densation inevitable when steam is next admitted from the boiler. Mere contact with low-pressure steam during the exhaust stroke would cool the metal but little; the cooling which actually occurs is due mainly to the re-evaporation of the condensed water. Thus if an engine were set in action, after being heated beforchand to the boiler temperature, the cylinder would be only slightly cooled during the first exhaust stroke, and little condensation would occur during tho next admission. But the metal would be more cooled in the subsequent expansion and exhaust, since it would part with heat in re-evaporating this water. In the third admission more still would be condensed, and so on, until a permanent régime would be established in which condensation and re-evapora- tion were exactly balanced. The same permanent régime is reachod when the engine starts cold.

85. The wetness of the working fluid to which the action of tho walls of the cylinder gives rise is essentially superficial. A film of wator forms on the walls, but except for this the body of the steam remains dry, until (by adiabatic or nearly adiabatic expansion) it becomes wet throughout its volume. The water formed by the act of expansion takes form as a mist diffused throughout the steam, and on it the sides of tho cylinder exert practically no influence. This latter wetness is in fact increasing while the substance, as a whole, is getting dried by the re-evapora- tion of the liquid film. During expansion the working substance may be regarded as made up of two parts,—a core of steam, which is expanding adiabatically but is at

the same time receiving addi- tions to its amount in the form of saturated steam from the liquid layer, and a liquid layer which is turning into steam.

86. From a thermodynamic point of view all initial condensation of the steam is bad, for, however early the film be re-evaporated, this can take place only after its temperature has cooled below that of the boiler. The process consequently involves a misappli- cation of heat, since the substance, after parting with high tempera- ture heat, takes it up again at a temperature lower than the top of its range. This causes a loss of efficiency (chap. II.), and the loss is greater the later in the stroke re-evaporation occurs. The heat that is drawn from the cylinder by re-evaporation of the condensed film becomes less and less effective for doing work as the end of the expansion is approached, and finally, whatever evaporation continues during the back stroke is an unmitigated source of waste. The heat it takes from the cylinder does no work ; its only effect, indeed, is to increase the back pressure by augmenting the volume of steam to be expelled. A small amount of initial condensation reduces the efficiency of the engine but little; a large amount causes a much more than proportionally larger loss.

87. The action of the cylinder walls is increased by any loss of heat which the engine suffers by radiation and conduction from its external surface. The entering steam has then to give up enough heat to provide for this waste, as well as enough to produco the subsequent re-evaporation of the condensed film. The consequence is that more steam is initially condensed. The loss of efficiency due to this canse will therefore be greater in an unprotected cylinder than in one which is well lagged or covered with non-conducting material. On the other hand, if the engine have a steam-jacket the deleterious action of the walls is reduced. The working substance is then on the whole gaining instead of losing heat by conduction during its passage through the cylinder. The jacket accelerates the process of re-evaporation and tends to make it finish at a point in the stroke when the temperature of the stean is still comparatively high. When the process is complete the cylinder walls give up very little additional heat to the steam during the remainder of the expansion and exhaust, for conduction and radiation between dry steam and the metal of the cylinder are incompetent to cause any considerable exchange of heat. The earlier, therefore, that evaporation is complete the less is the metal chilled, and the less is the

subsequent condensation. Moreover, after this stage in the stroke has passed, a steam-jacket continues

Cooling effect

of re- evapora- tion.

Wetness of steam during expan- sion,

Waste of heat.

Effect of jacket.

to give heat to the mctal during the remainder of the double stroke, and so warms it to a temperature more nearly equal to that of — the boiler steam before the next admission takes place. :

88. Thus a steam-jacket, though in itself a thermodynamically imperfect contrivance, inasmuch as its object is to supply heat to the working substance at a temperature lower than the source, acts beneficially by counteracting, to some extent, the more serious misapplication of heat which occurs through the alternate cooling and heating of the cylinder walls. The heat which a jacket com- municates to working steam often increases the power of an engine to an extent far greater than corresponds to the extra supply of heat which the jacket itself requires. Besides its thermodynamic effect a jacket has the drawback that it increases waste by external radiation, since it both enlarges the area of radiating surface and raises its temperature; notwithstanding this, however, many ex- periments have shown that in large and especially in slow-running engines, the influence of a steam-jackct on the efficiency is, in general, good; and this is to be ascribed to the fact that it reduces, though it does not entirely remove, the evils of initial condensation. To be effective, however, jackets must be well drained and kept full of “live” steam, instead of being, as many are, traps for con- densed water or for air.

89. It is interesting to notice, in general terms, the effects which certain variations of the conditions of working may be expected to produce on the loss that occurs through the action of the cylinder walls. Initial condensation will be increased by anything that augments the range of temperature through which the inner surface of the cylinder fluctuates in each stroke, or that exposes a larger surface of metal to the action of a given quantity of stcam, or that prolongs the contacts in which heat is exchanged. The influence of time is specially important; for it must be borne in Influeno mind that the whole action depends on the rate at which heat of speed is conducted into the substance of the metal. The changes of temperature which the metal undergoes are in every case mainly superficial; the alternate heating and cooling of the inner surface initiates waves of high and low temperature in the iron whose effects are sensible only to a small depth ; and the faster the alter- nate states succeed each other the more superficial are the effects, In an engine making an indefinitely large number of strokes per minute the cylinder sides would behave like non-conductors and the action of the working substance would be adiabatic.

We may conclude, then, that in general an engine running at a high speed will have a higher thermodynamic efficiency than the same engine running at a low speed, all the other conditions of working being the saine in both cases.

Again, as regards range of temperature, the influence of the cylinder walls will be greater (other things being equal) with high than with low pressure steam, and in condensing than in non- condensing engines. On the other hand, high pressure has the good effect of reducing the surface of metal exposed to the action of each pound of steam.

In large engines the action of the walls will be less than in small Influen’| engines, since the proportion of wall surface to cylinder volume is of size. less. This conclusion agrees with the well-known fact that no small engines achieve the economy that is easily reached with larger forms, especially with large marine engines, which eclipse all others in the matter of size.

Cylinder condensation is increased when the ratio of expansion Influen| is increased, all the other circumstances of working being left of vari } unaltered. The metal is then brought into more prolonged tionin contact

with low-temperature steam. The volume of admission is cut-off. | reduced to a greater extent than the surface that is exposed to the entering steam, since that surface includes two constant quantities, the surface of the cylinder cover and of the piston. For these and perhaps other reasons, we may conclude that with an early cut- off the initial condensation is relatively large ; and this conclusion is amply borne out by experiment. An important result is that increase of expansion does not, beyond a certain limit, involve increase of thermodynamic efficiency ; when that limit is passed the augmentation of waste through the action of the cylinder walls more than balances the increased economy to which, on general principles, expansion should give rise, and the result is a net loss. With a given engine, boiler pressure, and speed, a certain ratio of expansion will give maximum efficiency. But the conditions on which this maximum depends are too complex to admit of theoretical solution; the best ratio can be determined only by experiment, It may even happen that an engine which is required to work at a specified power will give better results, in point 0 efficiency, with moderate steam-pressure and moderate expansion, than with high steam-pressure and a very early cut-off. / |

90. The effect of increased expansion in augmenting the action Exper! | of the sides and so reducing the efficiency, when carried beyond a am certain moderate grade, is well illustrated by the American and results. | Alsatian experiments alluded to above. The following figures (Table III.), relating to a single-cylinder Corliss engine, are re uced from one of Hallauer's papers :!\—

1 Bull. Soc. Industr. de Mulhouse, May 26, 1880.

isolated instances to the contrary) experience bears out this con- clusion. In large engines, working with high pressure, much

OF STEAM IN CYLINDER. |

Percentage of Water present Consumption of

Ratio – Steam per Indi- expansion, and a slow stroke, the fact that compound engines are Expansion. a End of * End of oe ee in general more efficient than single engines cannot be doubted. — cei sill ais tahiti Additional evidence to the same effeet is furnished when a com-

pound engine is tested first with compound expansion and then as a

73 24-2 17°8 simple engine with the same grade of expansion in the large cylinder 9-4 308 18°6 alone. Thus inthe American experiments the compound engine of 1B-1 37°5 the ‘‘ Bache” when worked as a simple engine used 24 tb of steam

per I.H.P. per hour, as compared with about 20 fb when the engine worked compound, with the same boiler pressure, the same total expansion, and steam in the jacket in both cases. The necessity for compounding, if efficiency is to be secured, becomes greater with every increase of boiler pressure. So long as the initial pres- sure is less than about 100 tb per square ineh (absolute) it suffices to reduce the range of temperature into two parts by employing two-eylinder compound engines; with the higher pressures now eommon in marine practice triple and even quadruple expansion is being introduced.

The action of the cylinder walls would be greatly reduced if 20° it were practicable to use a non-conducting material as an internal

Here a maximum of efficiency lies between the extreme grades of expansion to which the test extends. In the American experi- ments the best results were ob- tained with even more moderate TABLE IV. ratios of expansion. The com-

ound engines of the United

tates revenue steamer “ Bache,” when tested with steam in the jacket of the large cylinder, with tb the boiler pressure nearly uni- form at 80 tb by gauge, or 95 ib

Consumption of Steam per I.H.P. per Hour.

Ratio of Total Expansion.

per square inch absolute, and 20°3 lining to the cylinder and to the exposed surfaces of the piston. the speed not greatly varied, 20°7 No cure for the evils of initial condensation would be so effectual 25° as this; and in view of the economy of heat which would result,

ave the results shown in ‘Table 1 iv. Mere the efiiciency is very ———_- – little affected by a large variation in the cut-off, but when the ratio of expansion becomes exeessive a distinct loss is incurred. Experiments with engines, in the conditions which hold in ordinary practice, show that it is not unusual to find 20 or 80 per cent. of the steam that comes over from the cylinder condensed during admission. In favourable cases the amount is less than

it is a matter of some surprise that the use of a non-conducting lining has not reeeived more serious attention.

94. The principal reasons have now been named which make Actual the actual results of engine performance differ from the results effi- which wonld be obtained if the steam conformed in every respect cieney to the simple theory stated in chap. III. It remains to state, of steam- very shortly, a few of the results of recent practice as to the actual engines.

filt of

this ; occasionally, on the other hand, the amoun: condensed is as much as half, or even more than half, the whole steam supply.

91. The action of the cylinder walls is reduced—(1) by jacketing, (2) by superheating, and (3) by using compound expansion. The advantage of the steam-jacket has been already mentioned. In high-speed engines its

beneficial effect is necessarily small, and in certain cases the benefit may be even more than neutralized by the drawbacks which have been alluded to above (§ 88). In general, however, the steam-jacket forms a valuable means of reducing the wasteful aetion of the cylinder walls, especially when the ratio of expansion is considerable. Experiments made with and without a jaeket, on the same engine, have shown that jacketing may increase the efficiency by 20 or 25 per cent. When a jacket is working pro- perly it uses, in a single-cylinder engine, 4 or 5 per cent., and in a compound engine 8 to 12 per eent., of the whole steam supply.

92. Superheating the steam before its admission reduces the amount of initial condensation, by lessening the quantity of steam needed to give up a specified amount of heat, and this in its turn lessens the subsequent cooling by re-evaporation. That it has a marked advantage in this respect has been experimentally demonstrated by Hirn. On general thermodynamic grounds superheating is good, because it extends the range of temperature through which the working substance is carried. In modern practice superheating (to any considerable extent) is seldom attempted. It occurs to a small extent whenever dry steam is throttled, and a slight superheating is occasionally given to steam in its passage from the high-pressure to the low-pressure cylinder ofa compound engine. In former years superheated steam was a eommon feature of marine practice, but serious practical difficulties caused engineers to abandon its use and to seek economy rather by increasing the initial pressure and using compound expansion. In those days, however, the theoretical advantage of superheating was less understood than it is now. The economy of fuel whieh its oo would probably secure is so great as to warrant a fresh and energetic attempt to overcome the mechanical difficulties of construction and lubrication that have hitherto stood in the way.

_93. The most important means of preventing cylinder condensa- tion from becoming excessive is the use of compound expansion. If the vessels were non-conductors of heat it would be, from the thermodynamic point of view, a matter of indifference whether expansion was completed in a single vessel or divided betwcen two or more, provided the passage of steam from one to the other was performed without introdueing unresisted expansion (§ 51). But with actual materials the compound system has the important merit that

it subjects each cylinder to a greatly reduced range of temperature variation. For this reason the amount initially condensed in the high-pressure cylinder is greatly less than if admission were to take place at once into the low-pressure cylinder and the whole expansion were to be performed there. Further, the steam which is re-evaporated from tho first cylinder during its exhaust does work in the second, and it is only the re-evaporation that occurs during the exhaust from the second cylinder that is absolutely wasteful. The exact advantage of this division of range, a8 compared with expansion (through the same ratio) in a single eylinder, would be hard to calculate ; but it is easy to see in a general Way that an advantage is to be anticipated, and (though there are

efficiency of steam-engines considered as heat-engines.

The performance of a steam-engine, as regards economy in its consumption of heat, may be stated in a number of ways. In some of these the engine alone is treated as an independent machine ; in others the engine, boiler, and furnace are considered as a whole.

The performance of the engine alone is best expressed by stating Modes of either (1) the thermodynamic “efficiency” or (2) the number of state- These terms re- ment.

thermal units used per horse-power per minute. quire a short explanation. ‘The “efficiency” of a heat-engine has already been defined as the ratio of the work done to the heat sup- plied. The “work done” ought in strietness to be reckoned as the net work done by the working substance in passing through a complete cycle of apne ; it should therefore be determined by subtracting from the work which the substance does in the cylin- der the work whieh is spent upon the substance in the feed-pump. The latter is a comparatively small quantity, and engineers gene- rally neglect it in their calculations of thermodynamic efficiency. In making comparison, however, between the efficiency which is actually realized and the efficiency of a perfect engine or of an engine working under any assumed conditions, account should be taken of the negative work done in the feed-pump, Account should also in strictness be taken of that part of the work spent in driving the air-pump which is done upon the working substance, as dis- tinguished from the water of injection. The “heat supplied” is the total heat

of the steam delivered to the engine, less the heat con- tained in the corresponding amount of feed-water. This quantity depends on the amount of steam used, on the temperature of the feed, on the boiler pressure, and on the extent to which the boiler “primes.” Priming is the delivery by the boiler of water mixed with the steam. Except where there is actual superheating the steam supply is always more or less wet; in a badly designed or overworked hedler large volumes of water may be carried over with the steam, but in a good boiler of adequate size the amount of priming is less (often much less) than 5 per cent. of the whole supply. The effect of priming is, of course, to reduce the supply of heat per Ib of the working substance.

One horse-power is the meehanical equivalent of 42°75 thermal units per minute. The relation between the above two methods of stating engine performance is therefore eee by the equation

c 42°75 Bineleaey amber of TU. per I.H.P. per minute *

Another very common mode is to give the number of pounds of steam supplied per horse-power per hour. This is unsatisfactory, even as a method of stating the comparative economy of different engines, or of one engine in different conditions, for several reasons. It ignores variations in boiler pressure, in feed-water temperature, and in the dryness of the supply, although each of these things affects the amount of heat required for the production of a pound of steam. But the total heat of production of dry steam does not vary greatly within the limits of practical pressures ; moreover, since (in condensing engines) feed-water is generally taken from the hot-well, its temperature does not differ much from that of the air-pump discharge, or (say), 100°F. Finally, in many comparative trials the amount of priming is nearly if not quite constant. Henee it happens that this mode of statement often furnishes a fairly accurate test of the economy of engines, and it

Effi- ciency of boiler and. furnace,

“Duty.”

Results of trials,

has the advantage of putting results in a way that is easy to under- stand and remember.

95. None of these modes of statement include the efficiency of the boiler and furnace. The performance of a boiler is most usnally expressed by giving the number of pounds of water at a stated temperature converted into steam at a stated pressure by the conibustion of 1 tb of coal. The temperature commonly chosen is 212° F., and the water is supposed to be evaporated under atmo- spheric pressure; the result may then be stated as so many pounds of water evaporated from and at 212° F. per 1 tb ofcoal. But the term “efficiency” may also be applied to a boiler and furnace (considered as one apparatus) in the sense of the ratio between the heat that is utilized and the potential energy that is contained in the fuel. This ratio is, in good boilers, about 0°7. Thus, for example, 1 ib of Welsh coal contains about 15,500 thermal units of potential energy, an amount which is eqnal to the heat of pro- duction (L) of about 16 tb of steam from and at 212°. In practice, however, 1 1b of coal serves to evaporate only about 11 ib of water under these conditions, or about 9°5 tb when the feed-water enters at 100° F. and the absolute pressure is 100 1b per square inch.

The efficiency of the engine multiplied by that of the furnace and boiler gives a number which expresses the ratio between the heat converted into work and the potential energy of the fuel,—a number which is, in other words, the efficiency of the system of engine, boiler, and furnace considered as a whole. Instead, how- ever, of expressing this idea by the use of the term efficiency, engineers are more usually in the habit of stating the performance of the complete system by giving the number of pounds of coal consumed per horse-power per hour, It must be borne in mind that this quantity depends on the performance of the boiler as much as on that of the engine, and that the difference in thermal value between one kind of coal and another makes it, at the best, a rough way of specifying economy. It is, however, an easy quantity to measure ; and to most users of engines the size of the coal-bill is a matter of greater interest than any results of thermodynamic ana- lysis. Still another expression for engine performance,

siniilar to this last, is the now nearly obsolete term “duty,” or number of foot-pounds of work done for every 1 cwt. of coal consumed. Its relation to the pounds of coal per horse-power per hour is this—

112 × 33000 × 60

Dashy ™ Number of bs. of coal per I.H.P. per hour’ A good condensing engine of large size, supplied by good boilers, consumes about 2 tb of coal per horse-power per hour; its duty is then about 110 millions.

96. To illustrate the subject of this chapter more fully the follow- ing summary is given of the results of tests of pnmping engines by Mr J. G. Mair, described in two excellent papers in Min. Pro. Inst. Civ. Eng. (vols. xx. and Ixxix.). The first group (Table V.) refers to single cylinder beam rotative engines, all of the same type, working at about 120 horse-power (in all except the last trial there were steam-jackets in use) :-—

Boiler Total Percentage Lbs. of Dry

Pressure Ratio of of Water (Abs.). Expansion. Present at

In these engines, which ran at the slow speed of about 20 revolu- tions per minute, the influence of steam jacketing was very marked. In the trials made with jackets in action, the percentage of water present at cut-off, when plotted in relation to the ratio of expan- sion, gives a diagram which is sensibly a straight line ; by drawing this line it may be seen that with an expansion of 3°8 in a similar jacketed cylinder there would be about 25 per cent. of initial con- densation instead of the much greater amount (37 per cent.) which the absence of a jacket caused in the last trial.

The next group of tests (Table VI.) refer to compound engines, of the types named (for explanation of the terms see chad. VI.) 2—

f|

Sd iuaslo P. § ‘ g |B8/522\2e3.. 08s | 2 Type. ye [Se leed eae lse™ | 8 eh4|$8/ 855/55 88 |2sh8) « Aad)/FA AR alas Ad aad]! a Woolf beam, without jackets..| 58 9:3] 18 51 26°6 | 0°082 a with jackets…... 62 15°8| 20

41 17:3 | 07126 ‘A without jackets..! 89 78} 34 34 19°2 | 0113 9 with jackets…...| 88 96) 34 38 17-4 | 07125 ” ty tenes 68 11°9; 18 25 15°6 0-139 ” oe eee 78 16°5 | 23 31 15°5 =| 0°140 ” ~ sareca| eke 13:2} 27 ae) 15°1 0144 Woolf tandem, without jackets} 86 11°5; 80 43 21°6 | 0°101 Receiver beam, with jackets…| 76 13°6| 24 34 148 | 0°147

1 For other comparative trials, see Hallauer’s papers, especially Bull. Soc. Ind. de Mulhouse, Dec. 30, 1878, and May 26, 1880.

| of indicator lighter linkages are adopted, and other changes have

V. Tue Testine oF STEAM-ENGINES.

97. Under this head we may include experiments made to Objects determine—(a) the horse-power of an engine; (b) the thermody- of tas | namic efficiency, or some more or less nearly equivalent quantity, such as the relation of power to steam supply or to coal consump- tion (§ 95); (c) the distribution of steam, that is, the relation which the several events of steam-admission, expansion, exhaust, and compression bear to the stroke of the piston ; (d) the amount of initial condensation, the wetuess of the steam throughout the stroke, and the transfer of heat between it and the cylinder walls ; (e) the efficiency of the mechanism, or the ratio which the work done by the engine on the machinery it drives bears to the work done by the steam in the cylinder.

Tests (a) and © are of common application ; test (6), in the simple form of a comparison of horse-power with coal burnt per — hour, is not unusual. The actual measurement of efficiency, whether thermodynamic (6) or mechanical (e), and the analysis involved in (ad) have been carried out in eomparatively few instances.

98. In all these operations the taking of indicator diagrams forms The _ a principal part. The indicator, invented by Watt and improved jndj by M‘Naught and by Richards, consists of a small steam cylinder, fitted with a piston which slides easily within it and is pressed down by a spiral spring of steel wire. The cylinder of the indicator is connected by a pipe below this piston to one or other end of the cylinder of the engine, so that the piston of the indicator rises and falls in response to the fluctuations of pressure which

occur in the engine cylinder. The indicator piston actnates a pencil, which rises and falls with it and traces the diagram on a sheet of paper fixed to a drum that is caused to rotate back and forth through a certain arc, in unison with the motion of the engine piston. In M‘Naught’s inticator the pencil is directly attached to the indicator piston, in Richards’s the pencil is movéd by means of a system of links so that it copies the motion of the piston on a magnified scale. This has the advantage that an equally large diagram is drawn with much less movement of the piston, and errors which are caused by the piston’s inertia are consequently reduced. In high-speed engines especially it is important to minimize the inertia of the indicator piston and the parts con- nected with it. In Richards’s indicator the linkage employed to multiply the piston’s motion is an arrangement similar to the parallel motion introduced by Watt as a means of guiding the piston-rod in beam engines (see § 188). In several recent forms

been made with the object of fitting the instrument better for high- speed work. One of these modified forms of Richards’s indicator (the Crosby) is shown in fig. 21. The pressure of steam in the engine cylinder raises the piston P, compressing the spring S and causing the pencil Q to rise ina nearly straight line through a distance proportional, on a magnified scale, to the com- pression of the spring and therefore

2

Y,

MALIA LL

Aas:

oo Me

~

VLILLILLILLLA Le DILTOMUSYD

zr

Fie. 21.—Crosby Indicator.

to the pressure of the steam. At the same time the drum D, which carries the paper, receives motion through the cord C from alii the crosshead of the engine. Inside this drum there is a spiral spring which becomes wound up when the cord is pulled, and serves to turn the drum im the reverse direction during the back stroke. The cap of the indi- cator cylinder has holes in it which admit air freely to the top of the piston, and the piston has room to descend, extending the spring S, when the pressure of the steam is less than that of the atmosphere. The spring is easily taken out and replaced by a more or less stiff one when higher or lower pressures have to be dealt with.
99. To register correctly, an indicator must satisfy two conditions: Errors | (1) the motion of the piston must be proportional to the change indies? of steam pressure in the engine cylinder; and (2) the motion of diagra? the drum must be proportional to that of the engine piston. The first of these requires that the pipe which connects the

|?

STEHEAM-ENGINE

indicator with the cylinder should be short and of sufficient bore, and that it should open in the cylinder at a place where the

ressure in it will not be affected by the kinetic action of the inrushing steam. Frequently pipes are led from both ends of the

491

100. To determine the indicated horse-power, the mean effective Measure- pressure is found by dividing the area of the diagram by the length ment of of its base. This gives a mean height, which, interpreted on the horse- scale of pressures, is the mean effective pressure in pounds per power.

STEAM-ENGINES. |

cylinder to a central position where the indicator is set, so that diagrams may be taken from either end without shifting the instrument ; much better

results are obtained, especially when the cylinder is long, by using a pair of indicators, each fixed with the shortest possible connecting pipe, or by taking ie ent succes- sively from the two ends of the cylinder with a single instrument set first at one end and then at the other. The general effect of an insufficiently free connexion between the indicator and the engine cylinder is to make the diagram too small. The first con- dition is also invalidated to some extent by the friction of the indicator piston, of the joints in the linkage, and of the pencil on the paper. The piston must slide very freely ; nothing of the nature of packing is permissible, and any steam that leaks past it must have a free exit through the cover. The pencil pressure must not exceed the minimum which is necessary for clear marking. By careful use of a well-made instrument the error due to friction in the piston and connected parts need not be serious. Another source of disturbance is the inertia of these parts, which tends to set them into oscillation whenever the indicator piston suffers a comparatively sudden displacement. These oscillations, superposed upon the legitimate motions of the piston, give a wavy outline to parts of the diagram, especially when the speed is great and when the last-named source of error (the friction) is small. When they appear on the diagram a continuous curve should be drawn mid- way between the crests and hollows of the undulations. To keep them within reasonable compass in high-speed work a stiff spring must be used and an indicator with light parts should be selected. Finally, to secure accuracy in the pencil's movement, the strain of the spring must be kept well within the limit of elasticity, so that the strain may be as nearly as possible proportional to the steam pressure. Care must be taken that the spring is graduated to suit the temperature (about 212° F.) to which it is exposed when in use ; its stiffness at this temperature is about 8 per cent. less than when cold.

With regard to the motion of the drum, it is, in the first place, necessary to have a reducing mechanism which will give a sufficiently accurate copy, on a small scale, of the engine piston's stroke. Many contrivances are used for this purpose; in some a rigorous geometrical solution of the problem is aimed at, in others a close approximation only. Fig. 22 shows a good form of indicator gear. A pendulum rod AB is pinned at one end to the crosshead A (the end of the piston-rod) of the engine. Its upper end is carried by a pin which is free to turn and slide in the fixed slot B, A cord from an

intermediate point C leads over pulleys to the indicator drum. The pendulum rod should be much longer than the piston stroke, and the cord should lead off for a con- siderable distance in the direction sketched, at —.é right angles to the mean position of the rods. The accuracy of the drum's motion does not, how- 16? ~Indicator ever, depend merely on the geometrical condition ' of the gear. It depends also on the rigidity of the parts, and especially on the stretching of the cord. The elasticity of the cord will cause error if it is not maintained in a state of uniform tension throughout the double stroke, and this error will be greater the longer and the more extensible the cord is. Hence short cords are to be preferred ; and fine wire, which stretches much less, may often be substituted for cord with great advantage. The stretching of the cord is perhaps the most scrious and least noticed source of error the indicator is subject to in ordinary practice. The tension of the cord varies for three reasons,—the inertia of the drum, the varying resistance of the drum spring, and the friction of the drum, which has the effect of increasing the tension during the forward stroke and of reducing it during the back stroke. This last cause of variation can be minimized only by good construction and careful use of the instrument ; but the other two causes can be made to neutralize one another almost completely. Since the motion is nearly simple harmonic, the acceleration of the drum varies in a nearly uniform manner from end to end of the stroke. The resist- ance of the drum spring also varies uniformly ; and it is therefore only necessary to adjust the stiffness of the drum spring so that the increase in its resistance as the motion of the drum proeeeds may balance the decrease in the force that the cord has to exert in setting the drum into motion. This adjustment will secure an almost uniform tension in the cord throughout the whole stroke ; it mhust, of course, be altered to suit different engine speeds. The indicator plays so important a part in the testing of heat-engines, Whether for practical or scientific purposes, that no pains should be spared to avoid the numerous and serious sources of error to which it is liable through faulty construction or unintelligent use.!

. Valuable discussion and experimental investigation of the errors of the cator will be found in papers by Prof. Osborne Reynolds and Mr H. W.

Linton path

square inch. This has to be multiplied by the effective area of the piston in square inches and by the length of the piston stroke in feet, to find the work done per stroke in foot-pounds on that side of the piston to which the diagram refers. Let A, be the area of the piston on one side and A, on the other; p, and p, the mean effective pressures on the two sides respectively; L the length of the stroke in feet; and m the number of complete double strokes or revolutions per minute. Then the indicated horse-power _2L(pA; + PoAs) ew 33000 F

In finding the mean pressure the area of the diagram may be con- veniently measured by a planimeter or calculated by the use of Simpson's rule. A less accurate plan, frequently followed, is to divide the diagram by lines drawn at the middle of strips of equal width, as in figs. 23 and 24, and to take the mean pressure as the average height of these lines.

101. Space admits of no more than a few illustrations of actual Examples Fig. 23 is a diagram taken from an antiquated of indi-

indicator diagrams. non-condensing engine working without ex- ~__—s—s pansion. The line AB has been drawn ata height which represents the boiler pressure, in order to show the loss of pressure in admission, The line CD.is drawn at atmospheric pressure by the indicator itself. In this engine ad- mission continues till the end of the forward. ——T stroke, and as a result the back pressure is 'nip Sinaeedd great, especially during the first stage of the Hig. @. exhaust. The diagram shows a slight amount of oscillation pro- duced by the sudden admission of steam. This feature, however, is better illustrated by fig. 24, which is another diagram taken from the same engine, at the } same boiler pressure, but with the steam much |! | throttled. } oe

io et

Fig. 25 shows a pair of diagrams taken from. {ii i'! a condensing engine in which the distribution *~ of steam is effected by a common slide valve

(chap. VIII). The two diagrams refer to opposite ends of the cylin- der and are taken on the same paper by the plan already alluded to (§ 99) of fixing the indi- , 4 – cator about midway be- . tween the ends of the cylinder, with a pipe leading from it to each end. Steam is cut off. ata anda', release occurs

at band 6’, and compres- sion begins at ¢ and ¢’. The gradual closing of theslide valves throttles the steam considerably before the cut-off is complete. The line of no pressure EF is drawn 14°7 Ib per square inch below CD, which is the atmospheric line; and the line of no volume AE or BF is drawn (for each end of the cylinder) at a distance (from the end of the diagram) equal to the volume of the clearance. Fig. 26 is a diagram taken from a Corliss engine working with a large ratio of expansion. The Corliss valve-gear, which will be described in chap. IX., causes the admission valve to close suddenly, and consequently defines the point of cut-off pretty sharply in the diagram. Through this point a dotted curve has been drawn (by aid of the equation PV”=const., § 67), which is the curve that would be fol- _ lowed if the expansion were ~ adiabatic. In drawing this Fie. 26,—Indicator Diagram from curve it has been assumed that nie Bape at the end of admission the steam contains 25 per cent. of water. The actual curve first falls below and then rises above this adiabatic curve, in conse- quence of the continued condensation which takes place during the early stages of the expansion and the re-evapora- tion of condensed water during later stages (§ 82). Fig. 27 is another diagram from a Corliss ae, engine, running light, and with ——————_”” the condenser not inaction. Dia- grams of this kind are often taken = when engines are first erected, for ig. H. the purpose of testing the setting of the valves. Other indicator diagrams, for compound engines, will be given in chap. VI.

PRESSURE BY GAUE r)

P z:

~

Fic, 25,—Indicator Diagram from Condensing Engine, with Slide-Valve.

tee Botler Pressure

> wn

ew °o

a

°

Pressure by Gauge

eee Brightmore (Min. Proc. Inst. C.L., vol. 1xxxiii,, 1886). In the discussion which followed the reading of the papers a description will be found of an ingenious apparatus which the makers of the Crosby indicator employ to test the uniform- ity of the cord's tension throughout the stroke.

492

In place of the ordinary indicator an apparatus is occasionally used which integrates the two coordinates which it is the business of the indicator diagram to represent, and exhibits the power developed from stroke to stroke by the progressive movement of an index round a dial.

STEHEAM-ENGINE

Results. Dryness of boiler steam, g=0°96. Supply to eylinder, Mc =M—Mj=1°028 fb per rev. Injection water per rev. =51:1—1-208=49°9 ib. L,=898, hy=278, he=18, hy=41°4, ho=27. Gross supply of heat from boiler to eylinder per revolution

Tests of 102. In tests of thermodynamic efficiency we may measure cither ee

‘ 7 4 : = 96 × 8984-278) =1377 T.U. thermo- the heat supplied or the heat rejected, and compare it with the work | gross supply of heat from = to jackets ri Seveliitien dynamic done. The heat supplied is on the whole capable of more exact =M (gL) A) efficiency, casurement, but in any casc a determination of the heat rejected =0°186 (0°96 × 898-278)=212 T.U.

furnishes a valuable check on the accuracy of the result. The trial must be continued for a period of some hours at least, during which the engine and boiler are to be kept working as uniformly as possible in all respects. The power is determined by taking indicator diagrams at short intervals. The heat supplied is found by noting the amount of feed-water required to keep the water- level in the boiler constant during the trial, the temperature of the

feed, and the pressure of the steam. The only uncertainty which attaches to the measurement of heat-supply is due to priming. Every pound of water that passes over unevaporated to the engine takes less heat by the amount L (§ 60) than if it went over in the state of steam. To measure the degree of wetness in steam is a

- matter of some difficulty ; it may be done by passing the steam

into a known quantity of cold water, so as to condense it, and observing the rise of temperature which has taken place when the whole quantity of water present has increased by a measured amount.

i leave a balance of 93 units unaccounted for.

Total gross supply per revolution=1377 4-212 =1589 T. U. leat restored to boiler per revolution, By feed water=Mh p=1°394 × 27=38 T.U By jaeket drains=0. Net supply of heat per revolution =1589—38 =1551 T.U. Heat eonverted into work, per revolution ts 42 75 oot TU. Total heat rejeeted per revolution =1551—227 = 1824 T.U.

The rejected heat is accounted for as follows :— Net heat rejected in air-pump diseharge=Gross heat rejeeted in air-pump dis- eharge—heat in injection water— heat restored to the boiler by the feed =51‘1× 41°4—49-9 × 18—38=1179 T.U.

Heat rejeeted in jacket drains= Mjh, =0°186 ×278 =52 T.U.

These two items account for 1231 units of rejected heat and unit The balance is made

up of heat rejected in air and vapour by the air-pump, heat lost

by radiation, &c., and errors of experiment. In the example con-

sidered the loss by radiation was estimated at 45 thera units,

[TESTING op

Heat If L, be the latent heat of steam at the boiler pressure, h, the | Which reduces the discrepancy between the two sides of the account sup- heat in the feed-water per tb, /, the heat in the boiler water per tb, | to 48 units, or only about 3 per cent. of the whole heat supplied. plied. and gq the dryness of the steam as it leaves the boiler, the heat The efficiency of the engine is 745 or 0146, The efficiency of a taken in per tb of the substance supplied to the cylinder is perfect engine working between the same limits of temperature, gly +h —hy. 308° F. and 50° F., would be 0°335. To this must be added, in the case of a jacketed engine, the heat | 104. When it is desired to deduce from the test of an engine not Caleyla.. supplied to the jacket, a quantity which depends on the amount of | only the thermodynamic efficiency but also the amount of initial tion of steam condensed there, and also on whether the water that gathers | condensation and the subsequent changes of wetness which the wetney in the jacket is drained back into the boiler or allowed to escape | Working fluid undergoes during expansion, it is necessary to know, of the ll into the hot-well. | in addition to the above data, the volume of cylinder and clearance, steam, Heat re- The heat rejected by an engine fitted with an injection condenser | the relation of pressure to volume during the several stages of the jected. is made up of the following parts :—(a) heat rejected in the con- | stroke, and the whole amount of working substance present in the densed water, less the heat returned to the boiler in the feed (if | cylinder. This last is a quantity whose precise value is not easily the feed is directly drawn from the hot-well without giving the | ascertained. Assuming that the point at which compression begins water time to cool sensibly, this quantity vanishes ; iu a jacketed | can be distinguished on the diagram, we have the pressure and the engine this item must include the heat rejected in the jacket drains); | volume of the steam that is afterwards compressed into the clear- (>) heat used in warming the condenser water from the temperature | ance space. From its pressure and volume we can infer its amount, of injection to the temperature of the air-pump discharge ; (c) heat | if only its degree of dryness be known. The assumption usually rejected in air and vapour from the air-pump; (d@) heat lost by | made is that at the beginning of compression the steam shut up in radiation, conduction to supports, and acrial convection,—or, more | the cylinderis dry. This assumption is to a certain extent supported properly, the excess of this heat over the heat developed within | by the fact that re-evaporation has been going on during

expansion the engine by the friction of piston, valves, &. Of these quanti-
and exhaust ; in good engines it is probably not far from the truth, ties, (a) is
found without difficulty from a knowledge of the amount | though there are
cases where, owing to excessive initial condensa- of the feed-water, its
temperature, the temperature of the air-pump | tion and to the exhaust ports
being badly situated for draining discharge, and amount and temperature of
watcr drained from the | the cylinder, water may accumulate in considerable
quantities. jacket ; (6) is measured by gauging the whole discharge from the
| Except in extreme cases of this kind, however, the assumption that pump,
deducting from it the amount returned to the boiler as feed- | the steam is
dry when compression begins does not introduce an water, and measuring
its temperature and that of the injection | error which can seriously affect the
subsequent calculations. Hav- water; (c) does not admit of direct
measurement; (d) may be | 1ng found the quantity shut up in the clearance,
we add to it the approximately estimated for a jacketed engine by filling the
jacket | quantity delivered from the boiler per single stroke, to find the with
steam while the engine is out of action, and observing the | whole quantity
of working substance in the cylinder. The sub- amount of steam condensed
in the jacket during a long interval, | stance is, and continues, a mixture in
varying proportions of steam through radiation, &c., from the external
surface. and water. Its volume may practically be taken as the volume of In
calculating the supply of heat by the boiler it is convenient | the dry steam it
contains, the volume of the water being compara- to take the temperature
32° F. as a starting point from which to tively small. Taking any point of the
stroke, and measuring the reckon what may be termed the gross supply, and
then to deduct | pressure and the volume there, we can say how much steam
(at from this the heat which is restored to the boiler in the feed-watcr. | that
pressure) would be required to fill the volume which the mix- The
difference, which may be called the net supply, is the true | ture then
occupies. This quantity will always be less than the consumption of heat,
and is to be used in calculating the efficiency | actual amount of the
mixture; and the difference between them 1s of the engine. A similar
convention may be followed in dealing | the amount of water that is present.
This calculation is of special with the heat rejected. interest at two places in
the strokc—the point of cut-off and the Example. 103. This subject is most
easily made intelligible by help of a | point of release. |

numerical example. For this purpose the following data of an actual engine-test have been taken from one of Mr Mair’s papers! ; the data have been independently reduced, with results that differ only to a small and unimportant extent from those stated by Mr Mair. The engine under trial was a compound beam engine, steam- jacketed, with an intermediate receiver between the cylinders. The cylinders were 21 inches and 36 inches in diameter, and the stroke 5} feet. The total ratio of expansion was 13°6. Data.

Boiler pressure, absolute, 76 tb per sq. in.

105. To illustrate it we may continue the numerical example Examp

quoted above. In the high-pressure cylinder of the engine to which the test refers the volume at the beginning of com- pression (including clearance) was 1°52 cubic fect. The pressure, just before compression began, is shown by the indicator diagram (of whieh fig. 28 is a copy) to have been 14°8 Ib per square inch. At this pres-

sure the density (or mass of 1 cubic foot)

of steam is 0‘038 Ib, Hence (on the above , assumption that the steam was then dry) ==

TN OMOR NEM aseuvers cseoesensadtiseseseeess-y0- te 6 hours. the quantity shut up in the clearance was ; q y P RevolUthomsiesor-nsessssecsseearseers +o 8632, or 24-0 per min. 1°52 × 0‘038 =0°058 ib – . ee ee eet | eee : ‘i

BOWIE or cdsrveemmaserccrssserire-cometoa 12,032 tb, or 1°394 tb per rev. (ML). The amount delivered to the cylinder per — ‘ eiregeap area Seems = tb per min., or 51°1 tb per rev single stroke (or half revolution) was 0°604 1b. The whole Sipe

ater drained from jaekets…….s00006. 1605 Ib, or 0°186 Ib per rey. (Mj). “ki issi € Percentage of priming a kh co pe OG of working substance present from the end of the admission to t

“bo”

PiealcciowcadWanssls 50°. Temperature of air-pump diseharge, ¢3 …73°-4, Fe a Ee ee a ee

1 Min. Proc. Inst. C. E., vol. 1xx.

beginning of the exhaust was therefore 0°662 ib.

At the point of cut-off the pressure is shown by the diagram to have been 64 fb per square inch (absolute), and the volume, includ- ing clearance, was 2°92 cubic feet. The density of steam for this

| i}

STRAM-ENGINES. |

pressure is 0°151 tb per cubic foot. Hence, out of the whole mixture, the amount of steam was 2°92 × 0‘151=0°440 ib. The water present at the point of cut-off was thercfore 0°662—0°440 or 0-222 ib. This is 88°5 per cent. of the whole amount of the mix- ture, and shows (after allowing for the priming water) that about 32 per cent. of the steam adinitted was condensed on admission. Next, to find the amount of water present at the end of the expansion. The diagram shows that at this point the pressure was 15:2 tb per square inch and the volume 18:235 cubic fect. Steam of this pressure has a density of 0°0392 Ib per cubic foot. The quan- tity of steam at release was therefore 18°2385 × 0°0892, or 0°519 fb, and the quantity of water 0°662—0°519=0°143 Ib. It appears

STEHEAM-ENGINE

493

in the jacket, if there is one. Then, as the cylinder neither gains nor loses heat on the whole, after a uniform régime has been arrived

at, we h ditt Qzne= Qen + Qna + Qs — Qr.

The quantity Qpc may also be calculated directly from a know- ledge of the gross heat rejected to the condenser, since the gross

heat rejected i pee aa Ip+ Wace + Qse,

Ip being the internal energy of the mixture at release and Wne being the work done upon the steam in expelling it from the cylinder.

108. This heat Qzc, which is taken up by the steam from the Waste of

therefore that re-evaporation from the cylinder walls during ex- pansion reduced the amount of water present by 0°079 Tb, so that the percentage of water fell from 33°5 at the point of cut-off to 21°6 at the point of rclease. The same method of calculation can

cylinder walls during exhaust, is a part of the heat deposited there heat by during admission. It has passed through the cylindcr without con- action of tributing in the smallest degree to the work of the engine. Prob- cylinder ably for this reason it is treated by some writers as a quantity walls.

obviously be applicd to any other point in the expansion curve, and can be extended to the low-pressure cylinder of an engine which (like the one in this example) is compound. The amount of dry steam present at the point of release is sometimes spoken of as the “stcam accounted for by the indicator diagram.”

106. Having completed this analysis of the working-substance, we may proceed to find the quantity of heat which it gives to or takes from the walls of the cylinder during any stage of its action, by considering the changes of internal cnergy which the working substance undergoes, along with the external work done, from stage to stage. If we write m for the amount of steam and m’ for the amount of water present in the cylinder at any one stage, the internal energy of the mixture is (§ 62)

(m+m’\h+mp. Let the value of this quantity be denoted by I, at any one stage in the cxpansion or compression of the mixture, such as the point of cut-off A, and by Ig at a later stage, such as the point of release B, the corresponding volumes of the whole mixture being Va and Vz respectively.

Then in passing from the first condition to the second the substance loses I, —Is of internal aeeey: It also does an amount of external work Wap measured by PdV, or the area A of the figure ABab. If Was is equal to I,— Ig the process is adiabatic ; otherwise the amount of heat taken up (from the cylinder walls) during the process is Qan= Was-(Ia-Iz).

If A is the point of cut-off and B that of release, the quantity so calculated is the heat taken up from the cylinder walls during the whole process of expansion. The calculation applies equally, how- ever, in determining the heat taken up during any stage of the process. When this has a negative value heat has been given up by the substance to the cylinder walls. In the numerical example which has been cited above the internal energy of the mixture at the beginning of expansion was 540 thermal units. At the end of expansion the internal energy was 584 thermal units. Between these points the indicator diagram (fig. 28) shows that the work done was cquivalent to 55 thermal units. 44+55=99 units of heat were therefore taken from the cylinder walls during the process of expansion. A similar calculation, applied to the compression curve, shows that in that part of the operation heat was given up to the cylinder walls. During compression W is of course nega- tive, since work is then spent upon the steam.

107. During admission and also during exhaust another item enters into the account,—the amount of the working substance is then undergoing change. To find the heat given up by the steam during admission we have first to calculate (by the method already described) the internal energy of the mixed steam and water that is shut into the clearance space at the end of the previous stroke; this may be called Ip. The steam which then enters brings with it an additional amount of internal energy which we may calculate froma knowledge of the quantity of steam, its pressure at admission, and its dryness. Let Io denote this additional supply of internal energy. At the end of admission the state of the mixture is known from the indicator diagram; hence its internal energy I, may be found. The work done during admission, Wpa, is also determined ‘from the diagram. Then we have, for the heat given up by the steam during admission,

Qpa=Ip+Io—Ia- Woa.

In attempting to apply the same method of calculation to de- termine the heat taken up from the cylinder walls during exhaust (Qzc), we are met by the difficulty that we do not know the state, as regards dryness, of the mixture during its expulsion from the cylinder. We may, however, estimate the value of Quc as follows. Let Qep and Qpa be, as before, the heat given up by the steam to the cylinder walls during compression and admission respectively, and let Qan be the heat taken from the cylinder walls during ex- haust ; also let Qx be the heat which the cylinder loses (per single stroke) by radiation (less the heat produced by piston and valve friction), and Q; the heat which it gains by condensation of steam

•

which measures the wasteful influence of the cylinder walls. This, however, is not strictly the case. The magnitude of Quc is certainly in some sense an index of the extent to which the alternate heating and cooling of the metal causes inefficiency ; it is so much heat absolutely lost, and lost by the action of the walls. [In the high- pressure cylinder of a compound engine this loss is, of course, absolute only as regards that cylinder ; the heat represented by Qne assists in the work of the low-pressure cylinder.] But besides this loss there is another which the walls cause by taking heat from the steam on admission and restoring it during the later stages of expausion. That part of the heat abstracted during adinission which is restored before the point of release does not appear in Qzc ; nevertheless it is a source of inefficiency. With steam that is dry at the end of the expansion the value of Qzc is almost negligible ; still the cylinder walls may cause a very sensible loss by abstracting heat from the hot steam as it enters and restoring it as the mixture expands. The quantity which has been denoted here by Qpc— that heat, namely, which the steam takes up from the cylinder walls after release and during exhaust—appears in the writings of Hirn and his followers under the symbol R,. He terms it “le re- froidissement au condenseur,”’ and refers to it, somewhat inexactly, as ‘‘l’effet réel des parois.”! Prof. Cotterill applies the name **exhaust waste” to the sum of the two quantities Qzc and Qr.?”
109. It is obvious that the above analysis depends fundament- ally on the strict accuracy with which the indicator diagram not only gives a measure of the work done by the engine under test, but shows the relation of pressure to volume at each stage in the process. Engine tests of a complete

kind have now been made and discussed by a number of independent observers, working with widely different data. The results are in good general agreement. They demonstrate the influence of the sides beyond question, show- ing that 30 per cent. is no unusual amount of water to be present in the mixture at the point of cut-off, even in compound engines of the best types; that half of this water, or even more, is frequently found at the end of expansion ; and that the heat denoted above by Qne ranges from about 10 to 20 per cent. of the whole heat supplied.*

110. An engine employed to drive other machinery delivers to Efficiency it an amount of power less than the indicated power by an amount of the which is wasted in overcoming the friction of piston and piston- mechan- The efficiency of the mechanism ism.

rod, slides, valves, journals, &c. is the ratio of the “effective” or ‘‘brake” horse-power to the indicated horse-power. It may be tested by measuring the power delivered by the engine when at work, either by using a transmission dynamometer or by substituting an absorption dynamometcr for the mechanism usually driven. In the case of a pumping engine the efficiency of the engine and pumps together may be determined by observing the actual work done in raising water or in delivering a measured volume against a known pressure. Attempts are sometimes made to find the amount of power wasted in engine friction by testing the indicated power necded to drive the engine against no other resistance than its own friction. This, however, fails to show the power which will be spent in overcoming friction when the engine runs under ordinary conditions, since the pressures at the slides, the journals, and elsewhere are then widely different from what they are when the engine is running without load. Experiments with large engines show that the efficiency of the mechanism may, in favourable cases, be 0°85 or even 0°9; in small engines, or in large engines running under light loads, it is generally much less than this.

1 Bull. Soc, Ind, de Mulhouse, 1881.

2 The Steam Engine considered as a Heat Engine, p. 54.

3 In this connexion reference should be made to the data supplied by the American experiments (of Messrs Emery and Loring), some of which are

dis- cussed fully by Prof. Cotterill; also to the writings of Hirn and the extensive researches of the Alsatian engineers alluded to in chap. IV. ; also to Mr Mair's paper (§ 96) and to Mr M. Longridge's Reports, as engineer to the Engine, Boiler, and Employers Liability Association, for 1880, 1881, and 1884. The Report for 1884 especially exhibits the results of a test with unique fulness and clearness. The Journal of the Franklin Institute for 1885 contains an account of experiments by Messrs Gately and Kletzsch on one engine, under varied conditions of boiler pressure, expansion, and speed; these, so far as they go, confirm the conclusions stated, on general grounds, inchap. IV. Fora synopsis of Hirn's method of ana-

lysis reference should be made to a paper by M. Poupardin, Bull. Soc. Ind. de Mul- house, March 81, 1875.

494.

VI. CompounD EXPANSION.

STHAM-ENGINE

[coMPOUND EXPANSION,

pressure in consequence of the increase of volume which the steam

is then undergoing through the advance of the low-pressure piston, —

Woolf 111. In the original form of compound engine, invented by | EFGH is the diagram of the low-pressure cylinder drawn alongside engine. Hornblower and revived by Woolf, steam passed directly from the | of the other for convenience in the construction which follows, 1t first to the second cylinder; the exhaust from the first and | has no point of cut-off; its admission line is the continuous curve admission to the second went on together throughout the whole of | of expansion EF, which is the same as the high-pressure exhaust the back stroke. This arrangement is possible only when the | line CD, but drawn to a different scale of volumes.' At any point high and low pressure pistons begin and end their strokes together, | K, the actual volume of the steam is KL+ MN. By drawing OP that is to say, when their movements either coincide in phase | equal to KL+MN, so that OP

represents the whole volume, and or differ by half a revolution, Engines of the ‘‘tandem” type | repeating the same construction at other points of the diagram, we satisfy this condition—engines, namely, whose high and low | may set out the curve QPR, the upper part of which is identical pressure cylinders are in one line, with one piston-rod common to | with BC, and so complete a single diagram which exhibits the both pistons. Engines in which the high and low pressure equivalent expansion in a single cylinder. cylinders are placed side by side, and act either on the same crank In a tandem compound engine of the receiver type the diagrams or on cranks set at 180° apart, may also discharge steam directly | resemble those shown in fig. 30. During CD (which corresponds from one’to the other cylinder; the same remark applies to beam to FG) expansion is taking place into the large or low- engines, whether of the class in which both pistons act on one end pressure cylinder. D and G mark the point of cut-off in of the beam, or of the class introduced by M‘Naught, in which the the large cylinder, after which GH shows the independent high and low pressure cylinders stand on opposite sides of the expansion of the steam now shut within the large cylinder, centre. By a convenient usage which is now pretty general the x and DE shows the compression of name ‘‘ Woolf engine” is restricted to those compound engines | ~ al E steam by continued discharge from which discharge steam directly from the high to the low pressure the small cylinder into the receiver. cylinders without the use of an intermediate receiver. # At the end of the stroke the receiver Receiver 112. An intermediate receiver becomes necessary when the phases J 7 pressure is OE, and this must be engine, of the pistons ina compoundengine donotagree. With twocranks “s “— apa , the same as the pressure at C, if at right angles, for example, a portion of the discharge from the ee Recelver type. ~Sstthere is to be no “drop.” Dims high-pressure cylinder occurs at a time when the low-pressure cylin- grams of a similar kind may be der cannot properly receive steam. The receiver is in some cases an | sketched without difficulty for the case of a receiver engine with entirely independent vessel connected to the cylinders by pipes; very | any assigned phase relation between the pistons.? often, however, a sufficient amount of receiver volume is afforded by 114. By making the cut-off take place earlier in the large cylinder “Drop’ the valve casings and the steam-pipe which connects the cylinders. | we increase the mean pressure in the receiver; the work done in inthe } The receiver, when it is a distinct vessel, is frequently

jacketed. the small cylinder is consequently diminished. The work done in receiver The use of a receiver is of course not restricted to engines in | the large cylinder is correspondingly increased, for the total work which the “Woolf” system of compound working is impracticable. | (depending as it does on the scudsal piosatnee and the total ratio of On the contrary, it is frequently applied with advantage to beam | expansion) is unaffected by the change. The same adjustment and tandem compound engines. Communication nced not then be | serves, in case there is “drop,” to remove it. By selecting a maintained between the high and low pressure cylinders during the | suitable ratio of cylinder volumes to one another and to the volume whole of the stroke; admission to the low-pressure cylinder is stopped | of the receiver, and also by choosing a proper point for the low- before the stroke is completed ; the steam already admitted is allowed | pressure cut-off, it is possible to secure absence of drop along with to expand independently ; and the remainder of the discharge from | equality in the division of the work between the two cylinders. the high-pressure cylinder is compressed into the intermediate re- To determine that point of cut-off in the low-pressure cylinder ceiver. ach cylinder has then a definite point of cut-off, and by | which will prevent drop when the ratio of cylinder and receiver varying these points the distribution of work between the two cylin- | volumes is assigned is a problem most casily solved by a graphic ders may be adjusted at will. In general it is desirable to make | process. The process consists in drawing the curve of pressure both cylinders of a compound engine contribute equal quantities of | during admission to the low-pressure cylinder until it meets the work. If they act on separate cranks this has the effect of giving | curve of expansion which is common to both cylinders.? Thus in the same value to the mean twisting moment on both cranks. fig. 81 (where for the sake of simplicity the effects of clearance are Con- 118. Wherever a receiver is used, care should be taken that neglected) AB represents the pound there is no unresisted expansion into it; in other | words, the admission line and BC the ex- diagrams, PTessure in the receiver should be equal to that in the high-pressure ansion line in the small cylin-

cylinder at the moment of release. Jf the receiver pressure is less than this there will be what is termed a “drop” in the steam pressure between the high-pressure cylinder and the receiver, which will show itself in an

indicator diagram by a sudden fall at the end of the high-pressure expansion. This “drop” is, from the

er. Release occurs at C, and from C to D steam is being Sas taken by the large cylinder. S D

corre-

thermodynamic point of view, irreversible, and therefore wasteful. the cut- It can be avoided by selecting a proper point of cut-off in the low- SS off in the pressure cylinder. When there is no ‘‘drop” the expansion that Fig. 31. Fig. 32. largecylin- occurs in a compound engine has precisely the same effect in doin, Figs. 31 and 32.—Determination of the point of cut-offin the ger which work as the same amount of expansion in a simple engine sontid TOE SPE EERIE Oh, CNL Olea isthepoint

have, provided the law of expansion be the same in both and the waste of energy which occurs by the friction of ports and passages in the transfer of steam from one to the other cylinder be negligible. The work done in either case depends merely on the relation of pressure to volume throughout the process; and so long as that relation is unchanged it is a matter of indifference whether the expansion be performed in one vessel orin more than one. It has, however, been fully pointed out in chap. IV. that in general a compound engine has a thermodynamic advantage over a simple engine using the same pressure and the same expansion, inasmuch as it reduces the exchange of heat between the working substance and the cylinder walls and so makes the process of expansion more neatly adiabatic. The compound engine has also a mechanical advantage which will be presently described. The ultimate ratio

2 of expansion in any com- pound engine is the ratio of the volume of the low- pressure cylinder to the , volume of steam admitted to the high- pressure cylin- der. Fig. 29 illustrates the combined action of the two cylinders in a hypothetical compound engine of the Woolf type, in which for simplicity the effect of clearance is neglected and also the loss of pressure which the steam undergoes in transfer from one to the other cylinder. ABCD is the indicator diagram of the high-pressure cylinder. The exhaust line CD shows a falling

Fig. 29.—Compound Diagrams: Woolf type.

to be found. From D to E steam is being compressed into the receiver. To avoid drop the receiver pressure at His to be the same as the pressure at C. 4 is therefore known, and may be employed as the starting-point in drawing a curve EF which is the admission line of the low-pressure diagram EFGHI. This line is drawn by considering at each point in the low-pressure piston's stroke what is then the whole valgeas of the steam. The place at which EF intersects the continuous expansion curve BCG determines the proper point of cut-off. The sketch (fig. 31) refers to the case of a tandem receiver engine; but the process may also be applied to an engine with any assumed phase relation between the cranks. Fig. 32 shows a pair of theoretical indicator diagrams determined in the same way for an engine with cranks at right angles, the high-pres- sure crank leading. In using the graphic method any form may be assigned to the curve of expansion. Generally this curve may be treated without serious inaccuracy as a' common hyperbola, in which the pressure varies inversely as the volume.

115. If this simple relation between pressure and volume be assumed, it is practicable to find algebraically the low-pressure cut- off which will give no drop, with assigned ratios of cylinder and

1 An intermediate receiver has the thermodynamic advantage that it reduees the range of temperature in the high-pressure cylinder, and so helps to prevent initial condensation of the steam. This will be made obvious by a comparison of fig. 29 and fig. 30. The lowest temperature reached in the high-pressure cylinder is that corresponding to the pressure at D, and is materially higher in fig. 30 than ales i paper by Prof. R. H. Smith, "On the Cut-off in the Large Cylinder of Compound Engines," Zhe Engineer, November 27, 1885. '

receiver volumes. Taking the simplest case—that of a tandem engine, or of an engine with parallel cylinders whose pistons move together or in opposition—we may proceed thus. Since the point of cut-off to be determined depends on volume ratios we may for brevity treat the volume of the small cylinder as unity. Let R be the ratio to it of the receiver's

volume, and L that of the low- pressure cylinder. Let x be the required fraction of the stroke at whieh cut-off is to oecur in the large cylinder; and let p be the ressure at release from the small cylinder. As there is to be no bes, p is also the pressure in the receiver at the beginning of admission to the large cylinder. During that admission the volume changes from 1+R to 1-—2%+R+

¢=(R+1)/(RL+1).

therefore The steam that remains is now com-

pressure therefore rises to

whenco

STEAM-ENGINE

495

high-pressure diagram. There is some drop at the high-pressure

oe release, and, apart from this, there is a loss Ss 80

through friction of the passages, which shows = itself by the admission line to the large cylinder > lying below the exhaust line from the small one. . 118. Fig. 34 is a pair of diagrams taken from #”? a compound tandem re- hey ceiver engine running at hd 50 revolutions per minute, e

with cylinders 30 inches and 52 inches in diameter, and with a 6-feet stroke, The ratio of cylinder vol- umes is therefore 3 to 1. The capacity of the receiver is nearly 14 times that of the small cylinder. There Fig. 34, is a comparatively early cut-off in both cylinders, and a nearly complete absence of drop. The small cylinder, however, does more work than the large one, in the ratio of nearly 3 to 2.

Aa7

Fig. 35 shows the same pair of diagrams combined Combina- by drawing both to the same scale of volume and tion of dia- of pressure, and by setting

out each by an amount grams from equal to the clearance space from the line of no compound volume. This makes the expansion curve in each engines.

Thus, with R=1 and L=3, cut-off should occur in the large cylinder at half-stroke ; with a greater cylinder ratio the cut-off should be earlier.

A similar calculation! for a compound engine whose cranks are at right angles, and in which cut-off occurs in the large cylinder before

half-stroke, shows that the condition of no drop is secured when 2R(wL—1)=1-2a/x(1 -2).

In some compound engines a pair of high-pressure cylinders dis-

charge into a common receiver; in some a pair of low-pressure

cylinders are fed from a receiver which takes steam from one high-

pressure cylinder, or in some instances from two. With these

arrangements the pressure in the receiver may be kept much more

~ nearly constant than is possible with the ordinary two-cylinder type.

116. An important mechanical advantage belongs to the com- pound engine in the fact that it avoids the extreme thrust and pull which would have to be borne by the piston-rod of a single-cylinder engine working at the same power with the same initial pressure and the same ratio of expansion. If all the expansion took place in the low-pressure cylinder, the piston at the beginning of the stroke would be exposed to a thrust much greater than the sum of the thrusts on the two pistons of a compound engine in which a fair proportion of the expansion is performed in the small cylinder. Thus in the tandem engine of fig. 29 the greatest sum of the thrusts will be found to amount to less than two-thirds of the thrust whieh the large piston would be subjected to if the engine were

diagram represent correctly the relation of the pres- sure to the absolute volume of the expanding steam. The broken line is a continuous curve of

adiabatic expansion, drawn from the point of high-pressure cut-off, on the assumption that the steam then con- tained about 25 per cent. of condensed water. If the expansion were actually adiabatic, and if there were no loss in the transfer of the steam, ; the expansion curves ge ee ‘eee -—-—- = for both eylinders would fall into this ==> line. ° ———. 119. Fig. 36 exhi- Fig. 35.—Diagrams of fig. 34 combined. bits, in the same manner as fig. 35, a set of diagrams taken by Mr Kirk from the triple expansion engines of the S.S. ‘‘ Aber- deen.” Hach diagram is set out from the line of no volume by a distance which represents the clearance in the corresponding cylinder. The boiler pressure is 125 Ib per square inch.

Lbs

120

100

simple. The mean thrust throughout the stroke is of course not The cylinders are 32 inches, 46 inches, and 70 affected by compounding; only the range of variation in the thrust ae Bo in diameter, and Sag stroke is 44 feet is reduced. The effort on the crank-pin is consequently made 36 The cranks make 120° ich mach ahh. Tee more uniform, the strength of the parts may be reduced, and the | » means of the diagrams for the two aaide. af friction at slides and journals is lessened. The advantage in this 5 each eylinder have been used in drawing this respeet is obviously much greater when the cylinders are placed | °& ,, \ ail oe next fioure, a practice which ahould side by side, instead of tandem, and work on cranks at right angles. | % \ be followed in deareits tinea diagrams of As a set-off to its advantage in giving a more uniform effort, the | 3 6 the kind here ex- compound engine has the drawback of requiring more working parts | & |, emplified

than a simple engine with one cylinder. But in many instances—as | & 120 Fig 37 in marine engines—two cranks and two cylinders are almost indis- shows in the same pensable, to give a tolerably uniform effort and to get over the dead \-~. way a set of dia- points; and the comparison should then be made between a pair of rg pana ames. D grams taken by

simple cylinders and a pair of compounded cylinders. Another point in favour of the compound engine is that, although the whole ratio of expansion is great, there need not be a very early cut-off in either cylinder ; hence the common slide-valve, which is unsuited to give an early cut-off, may be used in place of a more complex

small to the large cylinder. The diagrams are drawn to the same seale of stroke and therefore to different scales of volume, and the low-pressure diagram is turned round so that it may fit into the

1 Examples of calculations dealing with particular arrangements of two and three cylinder compound engines will be found in an Appendix to Mr R, Sennett's Treatise on the Marine Steam Engine.

-® See a paper by Dr W. Pole, **On the Double Cylinder Expansive Engine," Proc. Inst. M.E., 1862.

BB Stel 8 Mr Brock from the

quadruple expan- Fig. 36. i

sion engines of the 8.8. '*Lohara" (by Messrs Denny & Co.). Here the boiler

arrangement. 'The mechanical advantage of the compound engine (ae has long been recognized, and had much to do with its adoption in ; aging ei me the early days of high-pressure steam.?_ Its subsequent development mo inches, 34inches, 48 inches has been due in part to this, but probably in much greater part to the 2 dad 68 iadhaw in diameter, thermodynamic advantage which has been discussed above (§ 93). Ibs, oh the stroke was 4 feet, and icator 117. Indicator diagrams taken from compound engines show that aii alt & 100 the number of revolutions – the transfer of steam from ON€ ff¢ pserapsssnnsessasseupsoe sss geecigen pT ——_ 3 65 per minute. ms, ¢ylinder to another is never, 8} feck gs aware Tee. Ae 5 1 ss 121. In all of these cases under the most favourablecon- 3[(: a ". ~ 60 a continuous curve, shown ditions, performed without loss 3, a. oe i | 5 ofenergy. Fig. 33 showsa pair Fy BPR gah fb te ory £g 7 of diagrams from the two Gylifia SB 33 een 3 20 ders of atandem Woolfengine, "#%t77= 7 Peet oes 8 20 sy im

which the steam passed ag Oe S directly as possible from the Fig. 83. re Ae Fig. 37.

sack ies Seas eds _. by a broken

line, has been ~drawn to re- present the re- sult of adia- batic expansion, on the same assumption as before—that the steam contains about 25 per cent. of water at the point of cut-off in the

Fig. 38.

Furnace efficiency.

Heating surface,

Draught.

first cylinder. The equation to the curve may then be taken as

10

PV ® =constant (§ 67). In the absence of data regarding the wet- ness of the steam this assumption may be considered fair.

122. Lastly, fig. 38 shows a pair of diagrams, treated in the same manner, for a two-cylinder compound engine with cranks at right angles to each other, the ya 9 aes crank being 90° in advance. During the back stroke of the high-pressure piston there is at first compression into the receiver until the large cylinder opens; the high-pressure diagram consequently takes a peculiar form, which should be compared with the diagram already given for a tandem engine (§ 118). In this example there is a considerable amount of drop and also of loss between the two cylinders.

VII. Tur Propvuction or STEAM.—BOILERS.

128. The first step in the production of steam is to convert the potential energy of fuel into actual heat; the second step is to transfer the heat to

water in the boiler. The efficiency of furnace and boiler is the ratio which the amount of heat taken up by the water bears to the whole potential energy of the fuel. In good boilers this efficiency is about 0°7. The loss is due partly to incomplete combustion of the fuel and partly to incomplete trans- fer of heat from the products of combustion to the boiler water. Under the first head may be classed—(1) waste of fuel in the solid state by bad stoking, and (2) waste of fuel in the gaseous and smoky states by imperfect combustion. Under the second head are comprised—(1) waste by external radiation and conduction, and (2) waste by heat contained in the hot gases which escape by the chim- ney, due (a) to their still high temperature and (0) to the fact that they contain as one of the products of conjbustion steam-gas which passes away uncondensed. Loss of heat by the hot gases is the most important source of waste. Not only are the actual products of combustion rejected at a high temperature, but along with them goes the nitrogen of the air whose oxygen has been used, and also a quantity of additional air which is needed to dilute the products in order that combustion may be fairly complete. Roughly speak- ing, about 12 Ib of air are required to supply oxygen enough for the combustion of 1 tb of coal. Over and above this quantity, about 12 Ib more generally pass through the furnace as air of dilution. In furnaces with forced draught, in which the consumption of coal per square foot of grate surface is much more rapid, the air of dilu- tion may be reduced to half or less than half of this quantity, though to some extent at the expense of completeness in the combustion.

124. The extent to which heat is taken from the hot gases depends on the heating surface through which heat passes into the water. The heating surface is made up of the surface of the fur- nace or combustion-chamber, so far as that is brought into con- tact with the water, and of the flues or tubes through which the hot gases pass on their way to the chimney. Its efficiency depends on the conductivity of the metal, on the difference in temperature between the gases on one side and the water on the other, and on the freedom with which steam, when formed, can escape from the surface. Differences in specific conductivity and in thickness of metal affect the result less than might be expected, on account of the resistance which is offered to the passage of heat through the film of scale and also through the film of water vapour which forms on the metallic surface.

By extending the heating surface sufficiently the hot gases may be deprived of heat to an extent which is only limited by the tempera- ture of the boiler water. This temperature, however, need not form a limit, for after leaving the boiler the gases may be further cooled by being brought into contact with a vessel termed a feed-water heater, through which the feed-water passes on its way to the boiler. Even with a feed-water heater, however, the temperature of the hot gascs is never, in practice, reduced so low as that of the boiler.

125. In nearly all land engines and most marine engines the draught is produced by means of a chimney, which acts in virtue of the column of air within it being specifically lighter than the air outside, so that the pressure within the chimney at its base is less than the atmospheric pressure at the same level outside. The composition of the chimney gases is such that they are heavier than air at the same temperature, and to make them sufficiently lighter to cause a draught they must retain a certain considerable portion of their heat. On the other hand, if they are left too hot the mass of air drawn through the furnace is actually diminished, since then the chimney gases are so much expanded that the increased volume of the draught does not compensate for its diminished density. With a given chimney and furnace the maximum draught is obtained when the gases escape at a tempera- ture about that of melting lead ; by making the chimney more capacious a lower temperature will suffice to give the same draught, and this will of course increase the efficiency of the boiler.

126. In place of using a chimney draught depending merely on the temperature of the rejected hot gases, the air required for com- bustion and dilution may be forced through the furnace either by producing a partial vacuum in the chimney or by supplying air to the grate at a pressure higher than that of the atmosphere. In

locomotives, for example, a partial vacuum is produced in the chimney by means of a blast of exhaust steam from the engine ; and in many naval and a few mercantile steamers a forced draught is produced by having a closed stokehole or a closed ashpit, which is supplied with air at a pressure above that of the atmosphere by the use of a blowing fan.

If heat were thoroughly extracted from the products of com- bustion, a forced draught would be more efficient, from the thermo- dynamic point of view, than a chimney draught, for a chimney is in fact an extremely inefficient heat-engine, and requires a very large amount of heat to be expended in order to effect the comparatively trifling work of maintaining the draught. But where forced draught has been substituted for chimney draught this has hitherto been done for the purpose of increasing not the efficiency but the power of boilers. The motive has been to burn more coal per square foot of grate surface and so to evaporate more water with a boiler of given weight. This is incompatible with very high efficiency. When more coal is burnt by forcing the draught it is true that the products of combustion have a higher temperature (since less air is required for dilution) and the effective- ness of the heating surface is therefore increased. But the heat- ing surface has more hot gas to deal with, and the result is that the boiler is less efficient than when the draught is not forced. The same efficiency could be secured, with forced draught, by increasing the heating surface to a sufficient extent ; and a still greater efficiency could be realized if the heating surface were still further enlarged so that the gases left the flues at a temperature lower than would be needful if the draught depended on the light- ness of the chimney's contents. The most efficient boiler would be one in which the draught was forced by mechanical means, and the gases were then cooled as far as possible by contact with a very extensive heating surface, first in the boiler itself and then ina feed-water lieater. None of the forced draught boilers that have hitherto been introduced have a heating surface so large as to make them more efficient than good ange Rete #5 boilers (in which the rate of combustion is much slower), although the heatin surface bears a much larger ratio to the grate area than is usua. with chimney draughts.

127. Most modern boilers are internally fired; that is to say, the Boilers furnaces are more or less completely enclosed within the boiler. for sta- Externally fired boilers are for the most part much less efficient tionary than internally fired boilers ; they are, however, used to a consider- engines,

able extent where fuel is specially cheap or where the waste heat of other furnaces is to be utilized. Their usual form is that ofa horizontal cylinder

with convex ends; the strength both of the main shell and the ends is derived from their curvature, and no

1

| S SPS et ie en SS

i]

Fann Oat Fie. 39.—Cornish Boiler: longitudinal section.

staying is necessary. The heating surface is entirely external and is of very limited extent.

In large stationary boilers the forms known as the ‘‘ Lancashire” Cornis

(or double flue) and the “ Cor- nish” (or sin- gle flue) are most common. Figs. 39 and 40 show in section a Cor- nish boiler by Messrs Gallo- way, and fig. 41 a Lanca- shire boiler by the same mak- ers. In both the shell is a round horizon- tal cylinder with flat ends. In theCornish boiler there is one internal flue, at the yy, 40,—Cornish Boiler: transverse section, showing flues.

front end of

which is the furnace. The hot gases pass through the flue to the back ; they then return to the front end by two external side flues

[PRODUCTION OF STEAM, —

|

| |

1

|

BOILERS. |

(A, A, fig. 40), and finally pass to the back again by an underneath flue B. ‘The arrangement in the Lancashire boiler is the same, ex- cept that there are two internal flues, each with its own furnace. The shell is made up of rings of riveted plates, larger and smaller in diameteralteruately to :

allow the circumferen- tial seams to be made without bending the edges. The flue is made up of a series of welded rings, joined to each other by a flanged joint with a stiffening ring. This form of joint was in- troduced by Mr Adam- son to stiffen the flue against collapse un- der external pressure. Other joints, designed with the same object, are shown in figs. 42 and 43. The grate is all

made up of firebars, 1c. 41.—Lancashire Boiler: Transverse Section. sloping down towards the back, where they terminate at the “bridge” of fire-brick (C, fig. 39). Beyond the bridge the flue is crossed by a number of tapered ‘‘ Galloway” tubes D, D, which increase the heating surface, promote circulation of the water, and stiffen the flue. ‘The end plates are strengthened by gusset stays

pete, AMR

Fires. 42 and 43.—Joints for Furnace Tubes.

EK, E, riveted to them and to the circumference of the shell by means of angle-irons. The gusset-stays do not extend so far in as to the circumference of the flue (fig. 40), in order that the end plates may retain enough flexibility to allow the flue to “nent 4 and contract under change of temperature. To provide for unequal expansion is one of the most important points in the design of boilers; when it is neglected the boiler is subjected to a racking action which induces leakage at joints and tends to rupture the plates. For this reason the flue is attached to the boiler shell at the ends only, so that it may be free to take an upward camber in consequence of the greater heating of the upper side.

Mild steel is now very generally used for boiler plates, being superior even to the best Yorkshire iron in the qualities of ductility and tensile strength. The following particulars refer to the Lanca- shire boiler of fig. 41, which may be taken as representative of a large number of stationary boilers.

128. The shell is 28 feet long and 7 feet in diameter, and is made up of 9 rings, each of two semi-cylindrical plates. The shell plates are § inch thick ; their edges are planed and fullered, and the rivet holes are drilled. The longitudinal seams, which break joint from ring to ring, are lap-joints double-riveted; the circular seams are Single-riveted. Each end plate is a solid piece of steel 4 inch thick ; the front plate is attached to the shell by riveting to an angle ring ; the back plate is flanged. The flues are each 2 feet 94

inches in diameter, way tubes, tapering from made up of rings of 104 inches diameter at steel § inch thick; the top to 54 inches at bot- longitudinal joints tom. On the top of the are welded and the boiler is the manhole, circular joints are covered with a cast-iron flanged and strength- plate; also a nozzle for ened with stiffening the steam-pipe and two rings. The flues are others for safety-valves. tapered somewhat at One of the safety-valves the back end to facil- is connected with a float itate expansion, and so that it opens if the are attached to the water-level becomes too end plates by welded low. At the bottom, in tac Each front, is another nozzle

ue contains 5 Gallo- for the blow-out tap ; and

ry

| I

in the front plate below the flues is another manhole. Feed-water 18 supplied by a pipe which enters through the front plate on one side, near the top of the water, and extends for a considerable dis-

STEHEAM-ENGINE

497

tance along the boiler, distributing the water by holes throughout the length. A pipe at the same level on the other side serves to collect scum. The fire doors are pro- vided with sliding shutters by means of which the amouut of air admitted above

Mth thf:

Y prom

the fire may be regulated. On the top of each fur- nace is fitted a fusible plug which melts if the furnace crown becomes overheated. No separate steam dome is used ; the steam is collected by an ‘‘anti-priming” pipe shown in fig. 44, which also illustrates the stop- valve by which the delivery of steam from the boiler is started or stopped at will. On the front plate are a pair of glass gauge- tubes for showing the water-level, and a Bourdon pres- sure-gauge. ‘This last important fit- ting consists of a bent tube of oval section, one end of which is closed and free to move while the other is open to the steam and is fixed. The pres- & sure within thetube ~~

tends to straighten ye, 4¢.—Galloway Boiler : Section beyond the Bridge. it, and the extent

to which this takes place is shown by a pointer which travels over a circular dial. A common lever safety-valve is shown in fig. 45. In other forms the valve is kept down by a weight directly applied to it, or by means of springs. Spring safety-valves are liable to the objection that when the valve opens the load on it increases; to remedy this, forms have been proposed in which the spring acts through a bent lever in such a way that when the strain on it increases the leverage at which it acts is re- duced. Ifthespring is of reasonable length, however, the objection is not seri- ous.

129. A modifica- tion of the Lanca- shire type—the ‘* Galloway” boiler — is shown in sec- tional elevation in fig. 46. In it the two flues are joined beyond the bridge into a single flue, of the form shown in the figure, which is traversed by nu- merous Galloway tubes and is also fitted with water- = pockets at its sides. Fie. 47.-Vertical Boiler

130. In other a Ml Water types of boiler an extensive heating surface is obtained by the use of a large number of small tubes through which the hot gases pass. This construc- tion is universal in locomotive and marine boilers. It is applied in some instances to boilers of the ordinary cylindrical form by making small tubes take the place of that part of the flue or flues which lies behind the bridge, or by using small tubes as channels through

which the gases return from back to front after passing through the main flue. Another form of tubular boiler is an exter- nally fired horizontal cylinder fitted with tubes which carry the hot gases from the back to the front.

XXIL — 63

Fie. 48.—Vertical Boiler

with Horizontal Water Tubes,

Galloway boiler.

Multi- tubular boilers.

[Bor ERS,

Vertical 131. Vertical boilers are extensively used in connexion with small | clined welded tubes up which water circulates. These are joined boilers. engines. Examples are shown in figs. 47-49. Fig. 48 isan ordinary | at their ends by cast-iron connecting boxes to one another and toa vertical boiler filled with cross tubes of the Galloway type. Fig. | horizontal drum on the top in which the mixture of steam and water 47 (by Messrs Davey, Paxman, & Co.) is a boiler with | which rises from the tube undergoes separation. At the lowest point curved water tubes, each of which has fitted in the top a | of the boiler is another drnm for the collection of sediment. Root’s” loose cap whose function is to deflect the | boiler is another in which water is heated by circulating through stream of water which circulates up the | inclined tubes exposed to the fire ; it differs from the above form tubes. Fig. 49 isa form of multitubular | chiefly in having the water-level below the top of the tube, boiler by the same makers, in which the | Harrison’s boiler is a group of small globular vessels of cast-iron hot gases escape at the side after passing | strung like beads on rods which tie them together. Sectional from the smoke-box through horizontal | boilers may be constructed without difficulty to bear pressures tubes grouped in circular arcs. In all | greatly in excess of those for which other types are suited. Mr these boilers the grate

is at the foot, and | Perkins has employed a tubulous boiler to deliver steam at a the fire-door is at a mouthpiece in the side | pressure of 500 tb per square inch.! The Herreshof boiler is a of the boiler near the base. In other | continuous coil of tube, arranged as a dome over the fire. Feed- forms of vertical boiler the water is pumped slowly through the coil, and turns to steam heating surface is increased before it reaches the end. by water tubes (fig. 50) which ~ 133. The locomotive boiler consists of a nearly rectangular fire- Loco. hang from the crown of the box, enclosed above and on the sides by water, and a cylindrical motive fire-box, closed at the lower part called the barrel extending horizontally from the fire-box to boilers, end but fitted internally with the front part of the locomotive and filled with numerous tubes, | smnaller tubes which are open Figs. 51 aud 52 show in longitudinal and transverse section a at the bottom. Water circu- boiler of the London and North Western Railway, which may be lates down the inner tubes taken as typical of modern English practice. and up between them and the The barrel is 10 feet long and a little more than 4 feet in outer. Tubes of this kind diameter, and is made up of three rings of steel plates, $$ inch (called Field tubes) are used thick, arranged telescopically. It contains 198 brass tubes, each | in fire-engine boilers and in 12 inches in external diameter. The front tube-plate in which the other cases where it is neces- tubes terminate is of steel ? inch thick; it is stayed to the back sary to get up steam with the tube-plate by the tubes themselves, and the upper part of the front least possible delay. Vertical tube-plate is also tied by longitudinal rods to the back end-plate. wsaiap —Nenaal Boller: boilers of large size are some- a The fire-box is of copper 4 inch thick. It is nearly rectangular, ‘Tubular Form, times used for utilizing the picid Tube, with a horizontal grate. (A grate sloping down in front is often waste heat of iron furnaccs. preferred.) Round its sides, front, and back (except where the Sectional 132. A great variety of boilers have been designed in which the | fire-door intcrrupts) is a water space about 3 inches wide, which or firing is external, and the water space consists of groups of tubes or | narrows slightly towards the bottom. The flat sides of the fire-box tubulous other small sections whose outer surface isexposed to heat. Boilers | are tied to the flat sides of the shcll by copper stay-bolts, 4 inches boilers. of this type are called sectional or tubulous boilers, in distinction to | apart, which are seenred by screwing them into both plates and

tubular boilers, or boilers with tubes in which the hot gases circu- late. A successful example of the tubulous or sectional type is the Babcock & Wilcox water- tube boiler, which consists of a series of in-

riveting over the ends. The roof of the fire-box is stiffened bya number of girders on the top, to which the plates are secured by short bolts. The girders are themselves hung from the top of the shell above them by slings which are secured to angle-irons riveted

ip

ooooo000 0g coo eooo0000g000 0

TT 1

Lot i)

Le

\i

a o

aoo0000000 eocooqgo0000 eoo0o o0 O00 00 00 eooo00000000 00

1 aE

Fie, 51.—Locomotive Boiler.

eo000000

on the inside of the shell plates. A sloping bridge of fire-brick partially separates the upper part of the fire-box from the lower and prevents the flame from striking the tubes too directly. Under the grate is an ashpan, to which the supply of air is regulated by a damper in front. The fire-door opens inwards, and can be set more or less open, to regulate the amount of air admitted above the fire. On top of the barrel is a steam-dome, from which

o oo00000 00

oago00 0000 oao0o000q0 9000

Fig. 62.

the steam supply is taken through a pipe S traversing the forward part of the steam space and passing down to the valve-chest throngh the smoke-box. The stop-valve or ‘‘regulator” R is situ- ated in the smoke-box, and is worked by a rod through the boiler from the cab at the back. Above the fire-box end of the shell are a pair of Ramsbottom safety-valves, V, V—two valves pressed down by a single spring attached to the middle of a cross bar, which is prolonged to form a hand lever by which the valves may be lifted. In front of the forward tube-plate is the smoke-box, containing the blast-pipe B by which the exhaust steam is used to produce a partial vacuum and so force a draught through the furnace.

134. Instead of stiffening the fire-box roof by the use of girder stays, the plan is sometimes followed of staying it directly to the shell above. The outer shell above the fire-box is generally eylindrical; but to facilitate this method of staying it is sometimes made flat. This construction is not unusual in American loco- motive boilers, another feature of which is that the grate is made

much larger than in English practice, for the purpose of butning anthracite coal. An extreme instance is furnished by the Wooton engines of the Philadelphia and Reading Railroad, which burn small coal of poor quality in a fire-box 94 feet long by 8 feet wide, extending over the trailing wheels of the engine. In some cases the fire-box is divided by a sloping partition of plates with water between, which crosses the fire-box diagonally from front to back and has in its centre an opening resembling a fire-door mouthpiece to allow the products of combustion to pass. In others the fire-bridge is supported by water tubes, and water tubes are also used as grate- bars. This is done rather to promote circulation of the water than to give heating surface. The practice of American and English locomotive engineers differs widely as regards the materials of con- struction. American shells are of mild steel, English shells gene-

1 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1877. See also a paper by Mr Flannery, “On High-Pressure Steam Boilers,” Min. Proc. Inst. C.£., 1878. – 7

BOILERS. |

rally of mild steel but often of wrought-iron. In English practice the fire-boxes are of copper and the tubes of brass; in America the fire-boxes are of mild steel and the tubes of wrought-iron.!

The locomotive type of boiler is used for stationary engines of the portable, semi-portable, and semi-fixed types, and also to a limited extent for marine engines in cases were lightness is of special advantage.

135. So long as marine engines used steam of a pressure less

nl than about 35 Ib per square inch the marine boiler was generally a

STEAM-ENGINE

499

box with flat sides, elaborately stayed, with a row of internal furnaces near the bottom opening into a spacious combustion- chamber enclosed within the boiler at the back, and a sct of return tubes leading from the upper part of the chamber to the front of the boiler, where the products of combustion entered the uptake and passed off to the funnel. The use of higher pressures has made this form entirely obsolete. The normal marine boiler is now a short circular horizontal cylinder of steel with flat ends, with internal furnaces in cylindrical flues, internal combustion-

et

ef

0, 6

oO.

°° 0° oe

\ Cat) 30°

$00

158 0 0°O% ODOM

OPP AL F Hoo? Rol 0 O° ©

ooo o oOo 9o

chambers, and return tubes above the flues. In one variety, called the double-ended boiler, there are furnaces at both ends of the shell; each pair leading to a combustion-chamber in the centre that is common to both, or to separate central chambers with a water space between them.

Figs: 58 and 54 show with some completeness a double-ended marine boiler of the most modern construction for high-pressure

- steam. At each end there are three furnaces in flues made of

welded corrugated steel plates. The use of corrugated plates for flues, introduced by Mr Fox, makes thin flues able to resist collapse, and allows the flues to accommodate themselves easily to changes of temperature. One combustion-chamber is common toeach pair of furnaces. It is strengthened on the top by girder Stays and on the sides by stay-bolts to the neighbouring chamber and to the shell, The tubes are of iron, and a certain number of them are fitted with nuts so that they serve as stays be- tween the tube-plate of the combustion-chamber and the front of the boiler. ‘The upper part of the front plate is tied to the opposite end of the boiler by long stays. The uptakes from both ends converge to the funnel base above the centre of the boiler’s length. The boiler shown is one of a pair, which lie side by side In the vessel, the uptake at each end being common to both. Each boiler has a steam-dome, from which the steam-pipce leads to the engine; this consists of a small cylindrical vessel, with flat ends tied together by a central stay. Short pipes connect the dome near each end with the steam space of the main shell. The boilers of figs. 58 and 54, which are by Messrs Gourlay Brothers of Dundee, work at a pressure of 165 ib per square inch above the atmosphere, and are used with triple expansion engines. The shell is 12}

fect in diameter, and 164 feet long. The plates are of mild steel 14 inches thick round the shell and 1 inch in the ends. The tube plates are $ inch and 3 inch thick, and ne corrugated flues 4 inch. The longitudinal seams are treble- Niveted, with inside and outside covering plates. The circum-ferential seams are lap-joints double-riveted. There are 127 tubes at each end, 46 of which are stay-tubes. ‘The tubes are of iron, 34 inches in external diameter. Above these are 18 longitudinal steel 1 See a paper by Mr Fernie, Min. Proc. Inst. C.Z, 1883.

Figs. 53, 54.—Double-Ended Marine Boiler,

stays 2¢ inches in diameter. The steam-dome is a cylinder 24 feet in diameter and 8 feet long, stayed by a central 34-inch rod of steel. The short fire-box stays are also of steel 14 ,, inches in diameter, of 7? inches pitch, and are secured by nuts and washers at both ends. The central combustion-chamber has a round and unstayed roof. The top of each side & combustion – chamber is stayed by three eh steel girders 83 inches * x 24 inches in sec-tion, secured by four © bolts to the roof- plate below. A single- ended marine boiler . by the same makers is shown in fig. 55. Boilers of this class are in some instances set athwartship in- stead of longitudin- ally, and bevelled on the bottom, at the back, to accommo- date them to the shape of the hull. A modification of the cylindrical form is occasionally used, in which the section is an oval, with round top and bottom and flat sides. – The combustion-chambers are sometimes made with rounded tops, which are tied to the back plate by gusset-stays and angle- irons. In naval practice the tubes are frequently of Muntz metal in place of iron.

Mth 89oGnd000 e@oaocecoe000

mia @©sq00000

i

Fig. 55.—Single-Ended Marine Boiler.

Another form of boiler, used to a considcrable Navy extent in the British navy, is a long horizontal eylinder with two type.

Loeo- motive type of marine boiler.

Feeding boilers. Injector.

Hydro- kineter.

Feed- water heaters.

internal furnaces opening into a large combustion-chamber about the middle of the length. From this a set of tubes distributed over nearly the whole water space extend to the back, where the uptake is situated.

136. The locomotive type of boiler has been successfully adap- ted to marine use by Mr Thornycroft and others, especially for torpedo boats. This form gives much greater heating surface than others in proportion to its weight, and allows, especially when worked with forced draught, a large amount of power to be got from a small boiler. Itis probable that, if any further rise is to occur in the steam pressure used in marine engines, comparable to that which has occurred during the last two or three years, the present normal marine boiler will give place to a form more nearly resembling the locomotive type.

137. Boilers are usually fed either by a feed-pump driven by the engine, or by a distinct auxiliary engine called a “donkey,” or by an injector. The injector, invented by the late M. Giffard, and now very generally used on locomotive and other boilers, is illustrated in fig. 56. Steam enters from the boiler at A and blows through an annular orifice B, the size of which is regulated by the handle C. The feed-water flows in at D, and meeting the steam at B causes it to condense. This produces a vacuum at B, and consequently the water rushes in with great velocity, and streams down through the combining nozzle I, its velocity being augmented by the im- pact of steam on the back of the column. In the lower part of the nozzle E the stream expands ; it there- fore loses velocity, and, by a well- known hydrodynamic principle, gains pressure, until at the bottom its pres- sure is so great that it enters the boiler through a check-valve which opens only in the direction of the stream. The escape orifice F and the overflow pipe G

allow the injector to start into action, by providing a channel through which steam and water niay escape be- fore the stream acquires enough energy to force its way into the boiler. The opening for admitting water between D and B is regulated by the wheel H. The exhaust-steam injector works by steam from the exhaust of non-con- densing engines, instead of boiler steam. The steam orifice is then larger in proportion to the other parts, and the steam supply more liberal. In self-starting injectors an arrangement is provided by which overflow will take place freely until the injector starts into action and then the openings are auto- matically adjusted to suit delivery into the boiler. One plan of doing this is to make the combining nozzle under the steam crifice in a piece which is free to slide in the outer casing. Until the injector starts it lies at some distance from the steam orifice, and allows free overflow ; but when the vacuum forms it rises, in conse- quence of pressure at the base. In self-adjusting injectors this rise of the combining nozzle is made use of to contract the water-way round the steam orifice. In another form of sclf-starting injector one side of the combining nozzle is in the form of a hinged flap, opening backwards to allow overflow, but closing up when a vacuum is formed and the injector starts into action.! Weir's hydrokineter for large marine boilers is another apparatus in which the principle of the injector is made use of, with the object of promoting circula- tion of the water during the time steam is being raised. It con- sists of a series of nozzles, with water-inlets between them, through which water is drawn by means of a central jet of steam supplied from a donkey boiler.

138. In stationary engine boilers the feed-water is frequently heated by the products of combustion before these reach the chimney, in what is virtually an extension of the boiler itself. Green's economizer is a contrivance for this purpose, in which the water passes through tubes whose outer surface is exposed to the hot gases and kept clear of deposited soot by the continuous action of a mechanical scraper. In locomotives and other non- condensing engines a portion of the exhaust steam is frequently made use of to heat the feed-water. When an exhanst-steam injector is employed it serves the purpose of a feed-water heater as

Fig, 56.—Giffard's Injector.

well as that of a feed-pump. Besides increasing the efficiency of

the boiler by utilizing what would otherwise be waste heat, a feed-water heater has the advantage that by raising the tempera- ture of the water it removes air, and also, in the case of hard water, causes lime and other substances held in solution to be

1 See papers in Proc, Inst. Mech. Eng., 1860, 1866, 1884.

deposited in the heater instead of being carried into the boiler, where they would form scale. In Weir's feed-heater for marine engines the temperature of the feed-water is raised to about 200° Fahr. by injecting steam from the intermediate receiver.

139. In stationary and marine boilers the steam, after leaving ga)... the boiler, is frequently taken through a separator, the function to, — of which is to separate the dry steam from particles of water held ~ in suspension. Steam is led round a sharp corner, and the water particles thrown off by centrifugal force collect in a trap below, Steam. from which they are discharged by a pipe which is kept open so trap, long as the trap contains watcr, but is closed by a valve at the foot when the trap is empty. 'Traps are also fitted in many cases to steam-pipes for the purpose of returning condensed water to the boiler.

140. To prevent corrosion in boilers it is very usual to introduce Use ot | blocks of zinc in metallic connexion with the shell. These are set zinc in | in the water space, preferably at places where corrosion has been boilers, found specially liable to occur. Their function is to set up a galvanic action, in which zine plays the part of the negative element, and is dissolved while the metal of the shell is kept electro-positive. Otherwise there would be a tendency for difference of electric quality between different parts of the shell to set up galvanic actions between the parts themselves, by which some parts, being negative to others, would be attacked. The zinc raises the potential of the whole shell enough to make all parts positive.

141, Allusion has already been made to the system which is Forced | universal in locomotive boilers of forcing the draught by a blast of draught} | exhaust steam in the chimney. A jet of boiler steam is occasion- | ally used in marine furnaces for the same purpose; but of late years the system which has found most favour is to box in the stokehole and keep the air in it at a pressure of from 1 to 3 inches of water by the use of blowing fans. This system has been applied largely in naval practice, with the result that the power of the boiler is increased in the ratio of about 3 to 2, or even more, as compared with its power under chimney draught. The efficiency of the boiler is, in general, slightly but not very materially reduced. An ordi- nary marine boiler burns 16 to 20%b of coal per hour per square foot of grate with natural draught, and 30 Tb or more with forced draught. In torpedo-boat boilers of the locomotive type the con-

,

| i il

sumption has in sonie cases been forced to more than 100 Tb,

In Mr Howden's system of forced draught the stokehole is enclosing the ashpit and also to another reservoir from which it gets access to the grate above and through the fire-door, On its the uptake in which the hot gases from the furnace are led through tubes. This method of restoring to the furnace what would other- of restoring heat to the boiler by passing the hot gases through a fced-water heater; it is in fact an application to boiler furnaces of

j142. Many appliances have been devised for the mechanical we Mecha ply of coal to boiler furnaces, but these have hitherto taken the cal furnace the fire-bars are in short lengths, jointed by bars to form a continuous chain or web, which rests on rollers and is caused to round which the web is carried at the front and back. Coal is allowed to drop continually on the travelling grate from a hopper is a reciprocating shovel or ram, supplied from a coal-hopper, which throws or pushes a small quantity of coal into the fire at each self-cleansing, by giving alternate fire-bars a rocking or sliding . motion through a limited range. In Mr Crampton's dust-fuel fur- Dust | which it is blown into the furnace by an air-blast, The mixture of fuel and air is so

intimate that the excess of air required for A similar advantage attends the use of gaseous fuel, and of liquid fuel that is blown into the furnace in the form of spray. siderable importance in connexion with the discovery of crude fuel petroleum, in large quantity, at Baku on the Caspian Sea. The crude oil forms an exceedingly cheap fuel, with a calorific value per lb about one-third greater than that of coal. It has now super- employed for locomotives in the south-eastern part of Russia. The oil is injected in the form of spray near the foot of the fire-box by furnace along with the petroleum. In the arrangement for burn- ing petroleum used in iamln locomotives by Mr T. Urquhart “2 The methods and results of these systems of forcing draught are described in Papers read before the Institution of Naval Architects, April 1886.

open, and air is supplied by a blowing fan to a reservoir formed by | way to the reservoir the air is heated by passing across a part of wise be waste heat forms an interesting alternative to the method | the regenerative principle alluded to in chap, II.? | place of hand-firing to only a very limited extent. In Juckes’s stokers| travel slowly in the direction of the furnace’s length by pin-wheels in front of the furnace. A more usual form of mechanical stoker stroke. Along with this devices are employed for making the grate nace the coal is ground to powder and fed by rollers into a pipe from fuel. | dilution is only one-fifth of the amount required for combustion.®

143, The use of liquid fuel for boilers has of late acquired con- Liquid petroleum refuse which is left after distilling paraffin from tho seded coal in the steamers of the Caspian, and has been largely a steam jet arranged in such a way that air will be drawn into the the flame impinges on a structure of fire-brick, built in the fire-box

Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1869.

DISTRIBUTION OF STEAM. |

with numerous openings to allow the products of combustion to dif- fuse themselves throughout the combustion-chamber. This guards against too intense action on the metallic surfaces, and at the same time serves as a rescrvoir of heat to rekindle the flame if combustion

ig intermittent. In getting up steam an auxiliary boiler is used to supply the jet.*

VIII. Tue DistrisuTion oF STEAM.—VALVES AND VALVE MorIONS.

144. Incarly steam-engines the distribution of steam was effected by means of conical valves, worked by tappets from a rod which hung from the beain. The slide-valve, the invention of which in the form now known as the long [-slide is credited to Murdoch, an assistant of Watt, cume into general use with the introduction of locomotives, and is now employed, in one or other of many forms, in the great majority of engines.

The common or locomotive slide-valve is illustrated in fig. 57. The seat, or surface ou which the valve slides, is a plane surface formed on or ee fixed to the side of the eylinder, with three portsor openings, which extend across the great- : er part of the cylin- Fie. 57.—Common Slide-Valve. ; der's width. The central opening is the exhaust-port through which the steam escapes ; the others, or steam ports, which are narrower, lead to the two ends of the cylin- der respectively. The fe is a box-shaped cover which slides over the seat, and the whole is en- closed in a cham- ber called the valve-chest, to which steam from the boiler is ad- mitted. When the valve moves a sufficient distance

oO of tho piston; in other words, the eccentric radins would make a right angle with the crank. Expansive working, however, becomes possible when we give the valve what is called "lap," by making it project over the edges of the steam ports, as in fig. 61, where ois the " outside lap" and zis the "inside lap." Admission of steam (to either side) then begins only when the displacement of the valve from its middle position exceeds the ainount of the outside lap, and continues only until the valve has returned to the same dis- tance from its middle position. Further, exhaust begins only when the valve has moved past the middle by a distance equal to z, and continues until the valve has again returned toa distance 7 from its middle position. Thus on the diagram of the eccentric's travel (fig. 62) we find, by setting off o and 7

on the two sides of the centre, the posi-

tions a, 6, c, and @ of the eccentric

radius at which the four events of ad-

mission, cut-off, release, and conipres-

sion occur for one side of the piston.

As to the other side of the piston, it is 8 only necessary to set off o to the right and z to the left of the centre, but for the sake of clearness we may confine our attention to one of the two sides. Of the whole revolution, the part from a to b is the are of steam admission, from & to ¢ is the are of expansion, from ¢ to d the arc of exhaust, and from d to a the arc of compres- sion. Thorelation of these, however, to the piston's motion is still undefined. If the eccentric were set in advance of the crank by an angle equal to ACa, the opening of the valve would be coincident with the beginning of the piston's stroke. It is, however, desirable, in order to allow the steam free entry, that the valve be already some way open when the piston stroke begins, and thus the eccentric may be set to have a position Ca' at the beginning of the stroke. In that case the valve is open at the beginning of the stroke to the extent mm', which is called the "lead." The amount by which the angle between Ca' (the eccentric)-and CA (the crank) exceeds a right angle is called the angular advance, this being the angle by which the eccentric is set in advance of the position it would occupy if the primitive arrangement without lap were adopted. The quantities lap, lead, and angular advance (0) are connected by the equation

outside lap +lead = half travel x cos 6.

i Compression Fig.' 62,

to either side of the central posi- tion, steam enters one end of the cylinder from the valve-chest and escapes from the other end of the eylinder through the cavity of the valve into the exhaust-port. The valve is generally moved by an eeeentric on the cngine-shaft (fig. 58), which is mechanically equiva- lent to a crank whose radius is equal to the eccentricity, or distance of O, the

centre of the shaft, from P, the centre of the eccentric sheave. The sheave is encircled by a strap forming the end of the eeeentric rod, and the rod is connected by a pin-joint to the valve- rod, which comes out of the valve-chest through

a steam-tight stuffing-box. The eccentric rod

is generally so long that the motion of the

valve is sensibly the same as that which it , a would receive were the rod infinitely long. Thus if a circle (fig. 59) be drawn to represent the path of the eccentrie centre during a revolu- tion of the engine, and a perpendicular PM be : drawn from any point P on a diameter AB, Hig, #8.

the distance CM is the displacement of the valve from its middle position at the time when the eccentric centre is at P, AB is the whole travel of the valve.

145. If the valve when in its middle position did not overlap the steam ports (fig. 60), any movement to the right or the left would admit steam, and the admission would continue until the valve had returned to its middle position, or, in other words, for half a revolution of

An effect of lead is to cause preadmission, that is to say, admis- Graphic sion before the end of the back stroke, which, together with the method compression of steam left in the cylinder when the exhaust port of find- closes, produces the mechanical effect of ‘‘ cushioning,” to which ing the reference has already been made. To examine the distribution of distribu- steam throughout the piston’s stroke, we may now draw a circle to tion of represent the path of the crank pin (fig. 63, where the dotted lines steam.

Fic. 58.—Eccentric.

have been added to show the assumed configuration of piston, con- necting-rod, and crank) and transfer to it from the former diagram the angular positions a, b, c, and d at which the four events oceur. To facilitate this transfer the diagrams of eccentric path and of crank-pin path may by a suitable choice of scales be drawn of the same actual size. Then by

projecting these points on a diameter which represents the piston’s path, by circular arcs drawn with a radius equal to the length of the con- necting-rod, we find p, the position of the piston at which admission oceurs during the back stroke, also qand 1, the position at cut-off and re- lease, during the stroke which takes place in the direction of the arrow, and s, the point at which coinpression begins, It is obviously unnecessary to draw the two circles of figs. 62 and 63 separately; the single diagram

and Path of Piston

the engine. Such a valve would not Serve for expansive working, and as re- gards therelative po- Sition of the crank and eecentrie it would have to be

=O FM

Fig. 60.—Slide-Valve without Lap.

Fie, 61.—Slide-Valve with Lap.

aed wo eee _ Mr T. Urquhart, Mén. Proc. Inst. C.E., 1884; also Engineering,

(fig. 64) contains the solution of the steam distribution with a slide-valve whose laps, travel, and angular advance are known, the same circle serving, on two scales, to show the motion of the crank and of the eccentric.

146. A method of representing graphically the relations of valve Oval and piston motion, sometimes convenient in dealing with valve- diagram.

gears of a more complex character than the single eccentric, is to set off the valve’s and the piston’s simultaneous displacement at right angles to each other, as in fig. 65, the valve’s motion being exaggerated by using a coarser scale for it than for that of tho piston. The result is an oval curve, from which the events in the

Zeuner’s diagram.

002

steam distribution are determined by drawing lines parallel to the piston's path and dis- ;~ sysees tant from it by the amount of the outside and inside lap respectively. ~~' i ie Then a, b, c, and d, and the corre~~ §) NOU giviadeesenn dg Be sponding points 7, g, 7, and s deter- 'S mine the four events as in former y 7 diagrams, Fig. 65 showsataglance the amount of steam-opening at any part of the period of admission. Fig. 65,.—Oval Diagram of Slide- AE is the lead. The events for the Valve Motion. other side of the piston are determined by drawing AB above and CD below the middle line. : 147. The graphic construction most usually employed in slide- valve investigations is the ingenious diagram published by Dr G. Zenner in the Civilingenteur in 1856.1 On the line AB (fig. 66), which represents the travel of the valve, let a pair of circles (called valve- circles) be drawn, each with diameter equal to the half travel. A radius vector CP, drawn in the direction of the eccentric at any instant, is cut by one of the circles at Q, so that CQrepresents the corresponding displace- ment of the valve from its middle position.

AB and CD

ee ers

ag Piston Travel

Fig, 66, That this is so will be seen by drawing PM (as in fig. 59) and join- ing QB, when it is obvious that CQ=CM, which is the displace-

ment of the valve. The line AB with the circles on it may now be turned back through an angle of 90°+6 (@ being the angular advance), so that the valve-circles take the position shown to a larger scale in fig. 67. This makes the direction of CQ (the

~~ ~~

Fia. 67,—Zeuner's Slide-Valve Diagram,

eccentric) coincide on the paper with the simultaneous direction of the crank, and hence to find the displacement of the valve at any position of the crank we have only to draw CQ in fig. 67 parallel to the crank, when CQ

represents the displacement of the valve to the scale on which the diameter of each valve circle represents the half-travel of the valve. CQ, is the valve displacement at the

position of the crank, as cb’, the intercept pg between the circles ig easily seen to be equal to aa’, and is therefore the distance by which the piston has moved from its extreme position at the beginning of the stroke. In practice this diagram is combined with that of fig. 67, by drawing both about the same centre and using different scales for valve and piston travel. A radius vector drawn from the centre parallel to the crank in any position then shows the valve’s displacement from the valve’s middle position by the intercept CQ of fig. 67, and the piston’s displacement from the beginning of the piston’s motion by the intercept pq of fig. 68.

149. In all the figures which have been sketched the events refer to the front end of the cylinder, that is the end nearest to the crank (see fig. 63). To determine the events of steam distribution at the back end, the lap circles shown by dotted lines in fig. 67 must also be drawn, Ca’ being the outside lap for the back end, and Ce’ the inside lap. ‘These laps are not necessarily equal to those at the other end of the valve. From fig. 65 it is obvious that, especially with a short connecting-rod, the cut-off and release occur earlier and the compression later at the front than at the back end if the laps are equal, and a more symmetrical steam distribution can be produced by making the inside lap greater and the outside lap less on the side which leads to the front end of the cylinder. On the other hand, an unsymmetrical distribution may be desirable, as in a vertical engine, where the weight of the piston assists the steam during the down-stroke and resists it during the up-stroke, and this may be secured by a suitable inequality in the laps.

150. By varying the ratio of the laps o and 7 to the travel of the valve, we produce effects on the steam distribution which are readily traced in the oval diagram of fig. 65 or in the other figures, Reduction of travel (which is equivalent to increase of both o and 2) gives later preadmission, earlier cut-off, later release, and earlier compression; the ratios of expansion and of

compression are both increased. The effect of a change in the angular advance is more easily seen by reference to Zeuner’s diagram, which shows that to increase 6 accelerates all the events and causes a slight increase in the ratio of expansion.

151. In designing a slide-valve the breadth of the steam ports in the direction of the valve’s motion is determined with reference to the volume of the exhaust steam to be discharged in a given time, the area of the ports being generally such that the mean velocity of the steam during discharge is less than 100 feet per second. The travel is made great enough to keep the cylinder port fully open during the greater part of the exhaust; for this purpose it is 24 or 8 times the breadth of the steam port. To facilitate the exit of steam the inside lap is always small, and is often wanting or even negative. During admission the steam port is rarely quite un- covered, especially if the outside lap is large and the travel mode- rate. Large travel has the advantage of giving freer ingress and egress of steam, ; with more sharp- £ ly-defined cut- off,compression, ~ and ne sm but a. { 3 ‘ this advantage AS is secured at the : cost of more Fia. 69,— work spent in Trick Valve, moving the valve and more wear of the faces. To lessen the necessary travel without reducing the area of steam ports, double- and even treble- ported valves are often used. An example of a double-ported valve is shown in fig, 85. Fig. 69 shows the Trick valve, an ingenious device for the same purpose.

152. The eccentric must stand in advance of the crank by the Revers}

angle 90° +, as in fig. 70, where CK is the crank, and CE the corre- of mot} sponding position of the eccentric when the engine ‘ with 5! is running in the direction of the arrowa. Toset 9%

beginning of the stroke shown by the arrow. Draw circular arcs ab and cd with C as centre and with radii equal to the outside lap

o and the inside lap 7 respectively. Ca is the position of the crank at which preadmission occurs. The lead is aQ). The greatest steam opening isa,B. The cut-off occurs when the crank has the direction Cd. Cc is the position of the crank at release, and Cd marks the end of the exhaust.

the engine in gear to run in the opposite direction (0) le it is only necessary to shift the eccentric into the ae position CK’, when it will still be 90°+ 6 in advance asain of the crank, In the older engines this reversal was _—*Fig. 70. effected by temporarily disengaging the eccentric-rod from the valve-rod, working the valve by hand until the crank turned back through an angle equal to ECE’, the eccentric meanwhile remaining

148. In this diagram radii drawn from C mark the angular positions of the crank, and their intercepts by the valve circles determine the corresponding displacement of the valve. It remains to find the corre- sponding displacement of the piston. For this Zeuner employs a supple- mentary graphic construction, shown in fig. 68. b’c the crank. With centre ¢ and radius aca circle ap is drawn, and with centre 6 and radius ab another eircle aq. Then for any

1 Zeuner, Treatise on Vaive Gears, transl, by M, Miiller, 1868.

at rest, and then re-engaging the gear. The eccentric sheave,

instead of being keyed to the shaft, was driven by a stop fixed to

the shaft, which abutted on one or other of two shoulders projecting

from the sheave. In some modern forms of reversing gear means

are provided for turning the eccentric round on the shaft, but the

arrangement known as the link-motion is now the most usual gear

in locomotive, marine, winding, and other engines which require to

be often and easily reversed. 4 153. In the link-motion two eccentrics are used, and the ends of Link-

their rods are connected by a link. In Stephenson’s link-motion— moto”)

the earliest and still the most usual form—the link is a slotted bar Stephe||

or pair of bars curved to the same radius as the eccentrie rods (fig. son’s |

71), and capable of being shifted up or down by a suspension

Fig. 68. Here ab or a’b’ represents the connecting rod, and b¢ or

i. 2

_ VALVE MoTIoNs. |

The valve-rod ends in a block which slides within the link, and when the link is placed so that this block is nearly in line with the . forward eccentric rod (R, fig. 71) the valve moves in nearly the same way as if it were driven directly by a single eccentric. This is the position of ‘‘ full forward gear.” In “full backward gear,” on the other hand, the

een enemere

Fie. 71.—Stephenson’s Link-Motion.

link is pulled up until the block is in nearly a line with the back- ward eccentric rod R’. The link-motion thus gives a ready means of reversing the engine,—but it does more than this. By setting the link in an intermediate position the valve receives a motion nearly the same as that which would be given by an eccentric of shorter radius and of greater angular advance, and the effect is to ive a distribution of steam in which the cut-off is earlier than in ull gear, and the expansion and compression are greater. In mid gear the steam distribution is such that scarcely any work is done in the cylinder. The movement of the link is effected by a hand lever, or by a screw, or (in large engines) by an auxiliary steam-engine. A

Fic, 72.—Gooch’s Link-Motion.

to the phrase ‘‘ notching up,” to describe the setting of the link to give a greater degree of expansion. h’s 154. In Gooch’s link-motion (fig. 72) the link is not moved up

©

Fig. 73.—Allan’s Link-Motion.

in shifting from forward to backward gear, but a radius rod between the valve-rod and the link (which is curved to suit this radius rod) is raised or lowered—a plan which has the advantage that the lead ’s. is the same in all gears. In Allan’s motion (fig. 73) the change of gear is effected partly by shifting the link and partly by shifting a radius rod, and the link is straight. ‘

phic 155. The movement of a valve driven by a link-motion may be “jfion_very fully and exactly analysed by drawing with the aid of a tem- ok. plate the positions of the centre line of the link corresponding to a 00. number of successive positions of the crank. Thus, in fig. 74, two direular arcs passing through ¢ and ¢’ are drawn with E and E’ as centres and the eccentric rods are radii. These are loci of two known points of the link, and a third locus is the circle a in which the point of suspension must lie. By placing on the paper a tem- plate of the link, with these three points marked on it, the position

usual arrangement of hand lever, sketched in fig. 71, has given rise |

of the link is readily found, and by repeating the process for other positions of the eccentrics a diagram of positions (fig. 74) is drawn for the assigned state of the gear. A line AB drawn across this dia- gram in the path of the valve’s travel determines the displacements of the valve, and enables the oval diagram to be drawn (as in fig. 65), which is shown to a larger scale in another part of fig.74. The example refers to Stephenson’s link-motion in nearly full forward gear; with obvious modification the same method may be used in the analysis of Gooch’s or Allan’s motion. The same diagram deter- mines the amount of slotting or sliding motion of the block in the link. Ina well-designed gear this sliding is reduced to a minimum for that position of the gear in which the engine runs most usually. In marine engines the suspension-rod is generally connected to the link at the end of the link next the forward eccentric, to reduce this

sliding when the engine is in forward gear. A less laborious, but an less accurate, solution of link-motion problems is reached by the ort

use of what is called the equivalent eccentric—an imaginary eccen- tric, which would give the valve nearly the same motion as it gets from the joint action of the actual eccentrics. The following rule for finding the equivalent eccentric, in any state of gear, is duc to Mr M‘Farlane Gray :—

Connect the eccentric centres E and EH’ (fig. 75) by a circular arc

ee ene EE’ x length of eccentric rod _ £

2 x ee! é) Then, if the block is at any point B, take g EF such that EF: EE’::eB: ee’. CF then “a es represents the equivalent eccentric both in Fig. 75 radius and in angular position. If the rods of the link-motion are crossed instead of open,—an arrangement scldom used,—the arc EFF’ is to be drawn convex towards C.

156. Many forms of gear for reversing and for varying expansion Other have been devised with the object of escaping the use r revers- of two cccentrics, and of obtaining a more perfect | ing gears. distribution of steam than the link-motion can often . j be made to give. Hackworth’s gear, the parent of several others, has a single eccentric E (fig. 76) oppo- : site the crank, with an eccentric-rod EQ, whose mean position is perpendicular to the travel of the valve. The rod ends in a block Q, which slides on a fixed inclined guide-bar or link, and the valve-rod receives its motion through a connecting rod from an inter- mediate point P of the eccentric-rod, the locus of which is an ellipse. To reverse the gear the guide- bar is tilted over to the position shown by the dotted lines, and inter- mediate inclinations give various degrees of expan- ses PE sion without altering the lead. The steam distribu- tion is excellent, and the cut-off is sharper than in Fig. 76.—Hackworth’‘s Valve- Gear. the usual link-motion, but an objection to the gear is the wear ; of the sliding-block and guide. In Bremme’s or Marshall’s form Bremme s this objection is obviated with some loss of sym- @ or Mar- metry in the valve’s motion by constraining the shall’s. motion of the point Q, uot by a sliding-guide, but a suspension-link, . ince makes the —“4*2 path of Q a circular are instead of a F straight line; to reverse : the gear the centre of sus- . pension R of this link is : thrown over to the posi- : tion R’ (fig. 77). In the \ example sketched P is ‘ beyond Q, but P may be ry between Q and the crank (as in fig. 76), in which ease the eccentric is set at 180° from the crank. This gear has been applied in a number of marine

engines. In Joy’s gear, which is extensively used in locomotives, no eccentric is required; and the rod corresponding to the eccentric rod in Hackworth’s gear receives its motion from a point in the connecting rod by the linkage shown in fig. 78, and is either suspended, as in Marshall’s form, by a rod whose suspension centre R is thrown over to reverse the motion, or constrained, as in Hackworth’s, by a slot- guide whose inclination is reversed. Fig. 79 shows Joy’s gear as

|

Pedr

Piston Path

Connecting Rod ton

Fic. 77.—Bremme’s or Marshall’s Valye-Gear.

Separate expan- sion valves.

applied toa locomotive. A slot-guide E is used, and it is curved to allow for the obliquity of the valve connecting-rod AE. C is the crank-pin, B the _ path, and

a fixed centre. The

reversing gears of Wal- schaert, Brown, aud Kitson also dispense with eccentrics, and are closely related to the invention of Hackworth.! A method of reversing with a common slide-valve, which is used in steam steering engincs? and some others, is to supply steam to

Piston Path

Fired Centre

Fig. 78.—Diagram of Joy’s Valve-Gear.

oe ; o Fic. 79.—Joy’s Gear as applied to a Locomotive.

what was (before reversal) the exhaust side of the valve and con- nect the exhaust to what was the steam side. This is done by means of a separate reversing valve through which the steam and exhaust pipes pass,

157. When the distribution of steam is effected by the slide- valve alone the are of the crank’s motion during which compression occurs is equal to the are during which expansion occurs, and for this reason the slide-valve would give an excessive amount of com- pression if it were made to cut off the supply of steam earlier than about half-stroke. Hence, where an early cut-off is wanted it is necessary either to use an entirely different means of regulating the distribution of steam, or to supplement the slide-valve by another valve,—called an expansion-valve, usually driven by a separate eccentric, —whose function is to effect the cut-off, the other events being determined as usual by the slide-valve. Such expansion- valves belong generally to one or other of two types. In one the expansion-valve cuts off the supply of steam to the chest in which the main valve works. This may be done by a disk or double- beat valve (§ 163), as in the Proéll gear mentioned in § 175 below, or by a slide-valve working on a fixed scat (furnished with one or more ports), which forms the back or side of the main valve-chest. Valves of this last type are usually made in the “gridiron” or many-ported form to combine large steam-opening with small travel. Expansion-valves working in a fixed scat may be arranged so that the ports are either fully open (fig. 80) or

closed (fig. 81) when the valve is in its middle pan a position. In the latter case Valve eel the expansion-valve eccentric S is set in line with or oppo- ear ake

site to the crank, if the en- Fig. 80. Fig. 81.

gine is to run in either direction with the same grade of expansion. Cut-off then occurs at P, fig. 82, when the shaft has turned through an angle ¢ from the beginning of the stroke. The expansion valve reopens at Q, and the slide-valve must therefore have enough lap to cut off earlier than 180°—¢ from the beginning of the stroke, in order to prevent a second admis- sion of steam to the cylinder. In : the valve of fig. 80 the expansion r=.

eccentric is set at right angles to the crank, if the action is to be the same in both directions. If not, these angles may be deviated

Fig, 83.—Expansion-Valve on back of Main Slide-Valve.

from, and in this way a more rapid travel at the instant of cut-off may be secured for one direction of running.

1 Reversing gears of this type are generally termed radial gears. A discussion of Mr Joy's and other arrangements will be found in Proc. Jnst. Mech. Eng., 1880. Mr Kirk, Mr Bryce- Douglas, and others have designed forms which more or less resemble those mentioned in the text, 2 Proc. Inst, Mech. Eng., 1867.

STEHEAM-ENGINE

[VALvEs,

158. The other and much commoner type of expansion-valve jg ‘ one sliding on the back of the main slide-valve, which is provided _ with through ports which the expansion- valve opens and closes. Fig. 83 shows one form of this type. Here the resultant rela- tive motion of the expansion-valve and main-valve has to be considered. If ra and rp (fig. 84) are the eccentrics working the main and expansion valves respectively, then CR drawn equal and parallel to ME is the resultant eccentric which determines the motion of the expansion-valve rela- tively to the main-valve. Cut-off occurs at Q, when the shaft has turned through an angle ¢, which brings the resultant eccentric into the direction CQ and makes the relative displacement of the two valves equal to the distance 7. Another form of this valve (corresponding to fig. 81) cuts off steam at the inside edges of the expansion-slides.

159. Expansion-valves furnish a convenient means of varying Variatiy | the expansion, which may be done by altering their lap, travel, or Beato angular advance. Alteration of lap, or rather of the distance Z in the figures, is often effected by having the expansion-valve in two parts (as in fig. 83) and holding them on one rod by right- and left- handed screws respectively ; by turning the valve-rod the parts are made to approach or recede from each

other. In large valves the adjustment is more conveniently made by varying the travel of the valve, which is done by con- necting it to its eecentrie through a link which serves as a lever of variable length.

160. To relieve the pressure of the valve on the { seat, large slide-valves are generally fitted with .% a steam-tight ring, which excludes steam from the ‘ greater part of the back of the valve. The ring fits steam-tight into a recess in the cover of the steam- chest, and is pressed by springs against the back of the valve, which is planed smooth to slide under the ring. Fig. 85 shows a relief ring of this kind fitted on the back of a large double-ported slide-valve for a marine engine. Another plan is to fit the ring into a recess on the back of the valve, and let it slide on the inside of the steam-chest cover. Steam is thus excluded from the space within the ring, any steam that leaks in being allowed to escape to the condenser (or to the intermediate receiver when the arrangement is fitted to the high-pressure cylinder of a compound engine). A flexible diaphragm has also been used, instead of a recess, to hold the ring.

161. The pressure of valves on ; cylinder faces is still more com- pletely obviated by making the back i of the valve similar to its face, and i

Fig. 84.

Fig. 85.

Piston slide. | valve, |

ADIOLILEL SOLE LELLLL SY

7

| € :

Fic. 86.—Piston Slide-Valve.

Fie. 87,—Piston Slide-Valve. causing the back to slide in contact with the valve-chest cover,

which has recesses corresponding to the cylinder ports. This arrangement is most perfectly carried out in the piston slide-valves now very largely used in the high-pressure cylinders of marine engines. The piston slide-valve may be described as a slide-valve

in which the valve face is curved to form a complete cylinder, round whose whole circumference the ports extend. The pistons are packed like ordinary cylinder pistons by metallic rings, and the ports are crossed here and there by diagonal bars to keep the rings from springing out as the valve moves over them. Figs. 86 and 87 show two forms of piston valve designed by Mr Kirk for the supply of high-pressure steam to large marine engines. P, P are the cylinder ports in each.

Fig. 85 illustrates an arrangement common in all heavy slide- valves whose travel is vertical—the balance-piston, which is pressed up by steam on its lower side and so equilibrates the weight of the valve, valve-rod, aud connected parts of the mechanism.

162. The slide-valve sometimes takes the form of a disk revolving or oscillating on a fixed seat, and sometimes of a rocking cyl- inder (fig. 88). This last kind of sliding motion is very usual in stationary engines } fitted with the Corliss gear, which will be described in the next chapter, in which

Fig. 88.—Rocking Slide- Valve. ease four distinct rocking slides are commonly employed to effect thesteam distribution, one giving admission and one giving exhaust at each end of the cylinder (see fig. 127). 163. In many stationary engines Zit or disk valves are used,

ble- worked by tappets, cams, or eccentrics. Lift valves are generally e, of the Cornish or double-beat type (fig. 89), in which equilibrium is secured by the use ~ two ne faces which open or close together. i In Cornish i ee oname, wa ee which retain the single action of Watt’s carly engine, three double- beat valves are used, as steam- valve, equilibrium-valve, and ex- haust-valve respectively. These are closed by tappets on a rod moving with the beam, but are opened by means of a device called a cataract, which acts as follows. Se The cataract is a small pump with cluract, &@ we

ighted plunger, discharging fluid th

desired to alter the speed of the engine. The weighted plunger is raised by a rod from the beain, but is free in its descent, so that it comes down at a rate depending on the extent to which the stop- cock is opened. When it comes down a certain way it opens the steam and exhaust valves, by liberating catches which hold them closed; the ‘‘out-door” stroke then begins and admission continues until the steam-valve is closed: this is done directly by the motion of the beam, which also, at a later point in the stroke, closes the exhaust. Then the equilibrium-valve is opened, and the “in-door”’ stroke takes place, during which the plunger of the cataract is raised. When it is completed, the piston pauses until the cataract causes the steain-valve to open and the next “out-door” stroke begins. By applying a cataract to the equilibrinm-valve also, a

ause is introduced at the end of the “out-door” stroke, Pauses

ave the advantage of giving the pump time to fill and of allowing the pump-valves to settle in their seats without shock.

Fig. 89.—Double-Beat Lift-Valve. rough a stop-cock which can be adjusted by hand when it is

IX. GovEeRNING.

Ithods 164. To make an engine run steadily an almost continuous pro- (regu. cess of adjustment must go on, by which the amount of work done Wing. by the steam in the cylinder is adapted to the amount of external work demanded of the engine. Even in cases where the demand for work is sensibly uniform, fluctuations in boiler-pressure still make regulation necessary. Generally the process of government aims at regularity of speed; occasionally, however, it is some other condition of running that is maintained constant, as when an engine driving a dynamo-electric machine is governed by an electric regula- tor to give a constant difference of potential between the brushes.

The ordinary methods of regulating are either (a) to altcr the eee at which steam is admitted by opening or closing more or ess a throttle-valve

between the boiler and the engine, or (2) to alter the volume of steam admitted to the cylinder by varying the point of cut-off. The former plan was introduced by Watt and is still common, especially in small engines. From the point of view of heat economy it is wasteful, since the process of throttling is essen- tially irreversible, but this objection is to some extent lessened by the fact that the wire-drawing of steam dries or superheats it, and consequently reduces the condensation which it suffers on coming into contact with the chilled cylinder walls. On the other hand, to hasten the cut-off involves a gain rather than a loss of efficiency unless the ratio of expansion is already very great. The second plan of regulating is much to be preferred, especially when the engine is subject to large variations of load, and is very generally ollowed in stationary engines of the larger types.

165. Within certain limits regulation by either plan can be

effected by hand, but for the fiuer adjustment of speed some form Centri- of automatic governor is necessary. Speed governors are commonly fugal of the centrifugal type: a pair of masses revolving about a spindle speed which is driven by the engine are kept gover- from flying out by a certain controlling nors. force. When an increase of speed occurs this controlling force is no longer able to keep the masscs revolving in their former path; they move out until the coutrolling force is sufficiently increased, and in moving out they act on the regu- lator of the engine, which may be a throttle-valve or some form of automatic expansion gear. In the conical pendu- lum governor of Watt (fig. 90) the re- volving masses are balls attached toa vertical spindle by links, and the con- trolling force is furnished by the weight of the balls, which, in receding from the spindle, are obliged to rise. When the speed exceeds or falls short of its normal value they move out or in, and so raise or lower a collar C which is in connexion by a lever with the throttle-valve. The suspension-links may be hung from a cross-bar (figs. 94, 95) instead of being pivoted in the axis of the spindle.

166. In a modified form of Watt’s governor, known as Porter’s, or the loaded governor, a sup- plementary controlling force is given by placing a

weight on the sliding collar (fig. 91). This is equivalent to increasing the weight of the balls without altering their mass. In other governors the controlling force is wholly or partly produced by springs. Fig. 92 shows a gover- nor by Messrs Tangye in which the balls are controlled partly by their own weight and partly by a spring, the tension of which is regulated by turning the cap A.

Fig. 90.—Watt’’s Governor.

Load gover- nor.

UsS

=

7p F07:

Ze

=

GLLLLLELLLSLILI DELP IPPPOPITLIIE

4

ZZ

WW

Fig. 91.—Loaded Governor. Fic. 92.—Spring Governor (Tangye).

167. In whatever way the revolving masses are controlled, the Equi- controlling force may be treated as a force F acting on each ball librium of in the direction of the radius towards the axis of revolution. governor. Then, if M be the mass of the ball, 2 the number of revolutions per second, and r the radius of the ball’s path, the governor will revolve in equilibrium when F =47?n?rM (in absolute units), or

wee. we Dar Mr

In order that the configuration of the governor should be stable, F Condition must increase more rapidly than 7, as the balls move outwards. of sta- In the simple conical pendulum governor, any of the three forms bility. shown in figs, 93, 94, and 95, where the balls have no load to raise

a

Fig. 94, Fig. 96.

Fig. 93. Fig. 95.

but their own weight, the controlling force F is the resultant of Gravity T, the tension in the link, and Mg, the weight of the ball (fig. 96). governor, Let the height of the pendulum, that is, the distance above the

plane of the balls of the point where the suspending-link, or the link produced, cuts the axis, be called hk. Then F:Mg::r:h. Hence

_ Mgr ly: oa pandna=z./f.

Any change of m tends to produce a change of f, and, if the governor itself and the regulating mechanism attached to it were free

XXII. — 64

sensi- bility.

Loaded gravity governor.

Power.

General solution: graphie method.

Isoehron- ism,

506

from friction, only one position of the governor would be possible for any one value of n. It is obvious that neither this governor nor any other stable

governor maintains a strictly constant speed in the engine which it controls. If the boiler pressure or the demand for work is changed, a certain amount of permanent displacement of the balls is necessary to alter the steam supply, and the balls ean retain their displaced position only by virtue of a permanent change in the speed. The maximum range of speed depends on that amount of ehange of 2 which suffices to alter the configuration of the governor from the position whieh gives no steam-supply to the position which gives full steam-supply ; and the governor is said to be sensitive if this range is a small fraction of n,

168. If the governor is loaded, let M’ be the amount of the load per ball, and g the velocity ratio of the vertical movement of the load to the vertical movement of the ball. Then gM’g is the equi- valent increase in the weight of each ball. The effeet of the load is to inerease the controlling force F from Mgr/h to (M+gqM’)gr/h, and the speed at which the governor must now turn, to maintain any assigned height h, is ne ey era)

Qa Mh ; The speed of the loaded governor must therefore be greater than that of an unloaded governor of the same height in the ratio A/(M+qM’) to 4/M.

The sensibility is then the same as that of an unloaded governor of the same height h, but the loaded governor has an important advantage in another respeet—namely, its power or eapability of overcoming frictional resistance to a change of configuration. This quality in a governor is increased whenever the controlling foree F is increased, whether by the addition of a load or by the use of springs.

For let f be the frictional resistance to be overcome per ball, resolved as a force resisting the displacement of each ball in the direetion of the radius 7, Then if m be the speed normal to any configuration this speed must change by a certain amount An before frietion is overeome and the balls begin to be displaced. The controlling foree is now F+/ when the balls are moving out-

wards, and F —/ when the balls are moving inwards. Hence er D F+f mt An=o, \/ Mr’ eee fe and n An= > Mw:

From this, if An be small compared with n, we have An/n=//2F.

Thus, when a given amount of frictional resistanee is to be over- come before the governor ean act, the limits within which this frietion allows the speed to vary are less the greater is the eon- trolling foree F. A loaded governor is more powerful in this respect than an unloaded governor of the same configuration in the

roportion in which F is greater—namely, as M+qM’istoM. A oaded governor may therefore have much lighter revolving masses without loss either of sensibility or of power.

169. The same results are applicable to governors in which the controlling foree is supplied by springs as well as by gravity, or by springs alone. To find the euihigatabiod which the governor will assume at any particular speed, or the speed corresponding to a particular configuration, it is only necessary to determine the whole eontrolling foree F per ball acting along the radius towards the axis for various values of r. Let a curve gb (fig. 97) be drawn showing the relation of F to r, At any assigned value of 7 sct up an ordinate QO=49°n’rM. Join OC. The point c, in which OC euts the curve, de- termines the value of r at which the balls will revolve at the assigned speed n. Or, if that is * given, and the value of m is to be found, the line Oc produced will determine C, and then n?=QOC/49rM. The sensibility of the governor is determined by ° te

é 5 é ig. 97. taking points @ and b corresponding to full steam and no steam respectively, and drawing lines through them to de- termine the eorresponding values of QA and QB.1_ When the fric- tional resistanee / is known, an additional pair of eurves drawn above and below ad, with ordinates F+f and F—f respectively, serve to show the additional variations in speed which are caused by friction. The governor is stable throughout its whole range when the ue ab has a steeper gradient than any line drawn from O to meet it.

170. By § 167 itis evident that, if, when the balls are displaced, the controlling force F changes proportionally to the radius 7, the speed is constant. In other words, the equilibrium of the gover- nor is then neutral; it ean revolve in equilibrium at one, and only at one, speed. At this speed it assumes, indifferently, any one of its possible configurations. The slightest

variation of speed drives it to the extremity of its range ; henee its sensibility is indefinitely ca a ene le eg a

1 See a paper by Mr W. Hartnell, ‘‘On Governing Engi Expansion,” Proc, Inst, Mech. oe, 1882. materi! guises tige/

great. Such a governor is called dsochronous. A gravity governor is isoehronous when f/ is eonstant for all positions of the balls (since noc /g/h). This will be the case if the balls are constrained — to move ina parabolie path (fig. 98), it bein . < a property of the parabola that the subnorma

QM, which is h, is constant. A useful ap- proximation to the same condition, through a limited range, is seeured in Fareot’s gover- nor by the device of hanging the balls by crossed links from the distant ends of a J piece (fig. 95). If each centre of suspension were at the eentre of curvature of a parabolic are which coineided with the aetual circular loeus of the balls at the position of normal speed, the governor would be sensibly isochronous at that speed ; by taking the centres of suspension rather nearer the axis, a suitable

margin of stability is se- cured, but the governor is by! still nearly enough iso- chronous to be exceedingly sensitive.2 Where springs furnish the eontrolling foree, an approach to iso- ehronism can be secured by adjusting the initial tension of the springs, and this forms a convenient means of regulating the sensibility. Thus, in Mr Hartnell’s apparatus (fig. 99), where the balls move in a nearly horizontal di- reetion, and gravity has little to do with the con- trol, the governor ean be made isoehronous byserew- ing down the spring, so that the initial force ex- erted by the spring is to its increase by displace- ment of the balls as the initial radius of the balls’ path is to the inerease of radius by displacement. When the initial foree is increased beyond this the governor beeomesunstable. In fig. 97 the condition of isochronism is secured when the line

ab coineides with a straight line through O.

Fig. 98.

Fic. 99.—Hartnell’s Governor,

171. In practice no governor can be absolutely isochronous, It Huntirl)

is indispensable to leave a small margin of stability for the sake of preventing violent change in the supply of steam, especially when there is much frictional resistance to fe overcome by the governor, or where the influenee of the governor takes much time to be felt by the engine. An over-sensitive governor is liable to fall intoa state of oscillation called hunting. When an alteration of speed begins to be felt, however readily the governor alters its form, the engine’s response is more or less delayed. If the governor aets by elosing a throttle-valve, the engine has stilla capacious valve-ehest on which to draw for steam. Ifit acts by changing the eut-off, its opportunity is passed if the cut-off has already occurred, and the control only begins with the next stroke. This lagging of effect is specially felt in compound engines, where that portion of the steam which is already in the engine continues to do its work for nearly a whole revolution after passing beyond the governor’s control. The result of this storage of energy in an engine whose governor is too nearly isochronous is that, whenever the demand for power suddenly falls, the speed rises so much as to force the gover- nor into a position of over-control, such that the supply of steam is no longer adequate to meet even the redueed demand for power. Then the speed slackens, and the same kind of excessive regulation is repeated in the opposite direction. A state of forced oscillation is consequently set up. The effect is aggravated by the momen- tum whieh the governor balls acquire in being displaced, and also, to a very great degree, by the friction of the governor and the regulating mechanism. Hunting is to be avoided by giving the governor a fair degree of stability, by reducing as far as possible the static frictional resistances, and by introducing a viscous resistance — to the displacement of the governor, which prevents the displace-_ ment from oceurring too suddenly, without affeeting the ultimate

position of equilibrium. For this purpose many governors are Dash-P}

furnished with a dash-pot, which is an hydraulie or pneumatic brake, consisting of a piston connected to the governor, workmg loosely in a eylinder which is filled with oil or with air.

172. In some high-speed engines the governor balls or blocks re-_ aN Alt MT lke an

2 See also a paper by Mr J. Head Proce. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1871.

|

ttle-

_-

GOVERNORS. |

yolve in a vertical plane, about a horizontal axis, and the control is given wholly by ae An example is shown in fig. 100, which is the governor o the Armington and Sims ine referred to in § 197 below. Another example is furnished by the governor of Brotherhood's engine (§ 208, fig. 128).

178. The throttle- valve, as introduced by Watt, was origin- ally a disk turning on a transverse axis aeross theeenitre of the steam- pipe. Itis now usually a double-beat valve (ig 89) or a piston- valve. When regula- tion is effected by varying the eut-off, and an expansion-valve of the slide-valve type is used, the governor generally acts by changing the travel of the valve. Fig, 99 illustrates a common mode of doing

Fie. 100.—Govyernor of Armington & Sims Engine.

<

=O

[/ Va \,

STEHEAM-ENGINE

ee ‘i 0 =e)) 4A 0) (a _ c Spe pe

XO} (f Wwe (eats

IL oes

this, by giving the expansion-valve its motion from an eecentric-rod

through a link, the ries of whieh is varied by the displacement

of the governor balls. In fig. 100, the governor acts on the main Auto- slide-valve of the engine (there being no separate expansion-valve), matic and the displacement of the revolving masses M, M ehanges both variation the throw and the angular advance of the eecentrie, thereby pro- of eut-off. ducing a ehange in the steam supply similar to that-produced by ‘“‘notehing up” a link-motion. The eceentrieity B is altered by

the relative displacement of two parts C, D into which the eeeentric

sheave is divided. In other forms of automatie expansion-gear the

lap of the valve is altered ; in others the governor aets by shifting

the expansion-valve eceentric round on its shaft, and so changing

its angular advance.

174. In large stationary engines the most usual plan of automati- Corliss eally regulating the expansion is to employ some form of trip-gear, gear. the earliest type of which was introdueed in 1849 by G. H. Corliss of Providenee, U.S. In the Corliss system the valves whieh admit steam are distinct from the exhaust-valves. The latter are opened and elosed by a reeiprocating pieee which takes its motion from an eecentrie. The former are opened by a reeiproeating piece, but are elosed by springing back when released by a trip- or trigger-aetion.

The trip oecurs earlier or later in the piston’s stroke aeeording to the position of the governor. The admission-valve is opened by the reeiprocating pieee with equal rapidity whether the eut-off is going to be carly or late. It remains wide open during the admis-

Sue | ey

GEO, P

RY

UB:

1]

SS ee

ee Se

Fre. 101.—Corliss Engine, with Spencer Inglis Trip-Gear.

sion, and then, when the trip-action comes into play, it closes ; through the link E in such a way that wher the speed of the

suddenly. The indicator diagram of a Corliss engine eonsequently has a nearly horizontal admission-line and a sharply defined cut-off. Generally the valves of Corliss engines are eylindrical plates turn- ing in hollow eylindrieal seats whieh extend across the width of the eylinder. Often, however, the admission-valves are of the disk or double-beat type, and spring into their seats when the trip-gear acts. Many forms of Corliss gear have been invented by Corliss himself and by others. One of these, the Speneer Inglis! trip-gear, by Messrs Hick, Hargreaves, & Co., is shown in figs. 101 and 102. A wrist-plate A, which turns on a pin on the outside of the eylinder, receives a motion of oscillation from an eecentric. It opens the cylindrical rocking-valve B by pulling the link C, which eonsists of two parts, conneeted to each other by a pair of spring Bo a,a. Between the clips there is a rocking-eam 0, and as the

k is pulled down this eam places itself more and more athwart the link, until at a eertain point it forces the elips open. Then the ehper part of the link springs back and allows the valve B to elose by the action of a spring in the dash-pot D. When the wrist-plate makes its return stroke the clips re-engage the upper ee of the link C, and things are ready for the next stroke.

e rocking-cam 6 has its position controlled by the governor

1 Proc, Inst. Mech. Eng., 1868.

engine increases it stands more athwart the link C, and therefore

PEPISAI GG, . GROIN

I sa —

Fre. 102,—Corliss Valve-Gear, Spencer Inglis form.

causes the clips to be released at an carlicr point in the stroke. A precisely similar arrangement governs the admission of steam to the other end of the cylinder. The exhaust-valves are situated on the

Proéll’s trip-gear.

Disen- gagement gover- nors,

Knowles’s supple- mentary governor.

508

bottom of the cylinder, at the ends, and take their motion from a separate wrist-plate which oscillates on the same pin with the late A.! : 175. Fig. 103 shows a compact form of trip-gear by Dr Proéll. A rocking-lever a) is made to oscillate on a fixed pin through its centre by a connexion to the crosshead of the engine. When the end a rises, the bell-crank lever c engages the lever d, and when a is de- presscd the lever a is forced down and the valve ¢ is opened to ad- mit steam toone

esenebt {litt

g SINS 7 petttIt fy SSH ogo

SONY Zrcahiee

rere

YU soo

end of the cylin- Y der. As Pion’ IK Dy tinues moving DU down a point is ‘ reachedat which

the edge of ¢ slips past the _. edge of d, and b(*¥ the valve is then forced to its seat by a spring in the dash-pot /. This disengage- ment occurs early or late ac- cording to the © position of the fulcrum piece g, on which the heel of the bell- crank crests dur- ing the opening – of the valve. The -position of g is determined by the governor. A similar action, occurring at the other end of the rocking-bar ad, gives steam to the other end of the cylinder. In one form of Proéil’s gear both ends of ab act on the same steam-valve, which is then a separate expansion-valve fixed on the back of a chest in which an ordinary slide-valve works. 176, In the ordinary form of centrifugal governor the position of the throttle-valve, or the expansion-link, or the Corliss trigger de- pends on the configuration of the governor, and is definite for each position of the balls. In disengagement governors, of which the governor A shown on the right-hand side in fig. 104 is an example, any reduction of speed below A a certain value sets the regu- lating mechanism in motion, and the adjustment continues until the speed has been re- stored. Similarly a rise of speed above a certain value sets the regulating mechan- ism in motion in the other direction. If the spindle a (fig. 104) is connected to the regulator so as to give more steam if it turns one way and less if it turns the other, the speed at which the engine will run in equilibrium must lie between narrow limits, since at any speed high enough to keep 6 in gear with a the supply of steam will go on being reduced, and at any speed low enough to bring c into gear with a the supply will go on being increased. This mode of governing, besides being sensibly isochronous, has the advantage that the power of the governor is not limited by the controlling force on the balls, since the governor acts by deflecting a portion of the power that is being developed by the engine to the work of moving the regulator. It is rarely sce to steam-engines, probably because its

action is too slow. This defect has been ingeniously remedied in the supple- mentary governor of Mr W. Knowles, who has combined a dis- engagement governor with one of the ordinary type in the manner shown in fig. 104.2 Here the spindle a@, driven by the supple- mentary or disengagement governor A, acts by lengthening the rod d which connects the ordinary governor B with the regulator. It does this by turning a coupling nut ¢ which unites two parts of d, on which right- and left-handed screws are cut. Any sudden 1 Numerous forms of Corliss gears are illustrated in W. H. Uhland's work on Corliss engines, translated by A. Tolhausen (London, 1879). A more recent form

of gear by Mr Inglis is described in Engineering, vol. xl. p. 251. 2 Proc. Inst, Mech. Eng., 1884,

Fig, 104,—Knowles's Supplementary Governor.

fluctuation in speed is immediately responded to by the ordinary governor. Any more or less permanent change of load or of steam- pressure gives the supplementary governor time to act. It goes on adjusting the supply until the normal speed is restored, thereby converting the control of the ordinary governor, which is stable, and therefore not isochronous, into a control which is isochronoug as regards all fluctuations of long period. The power of the com- bination is limited to that of the common governor B.

177. Other governors which deserve to be classed as disengage- Relay! ment governors are those in which the displacement of the gover| governor affects the regulator, not directly by a mechanical con- now, | nexion, but by admitting steam or other fluid into what may be called a relay cylinder, whose piston acts on the regulator. In order that a governor of this class should work without hunting, the piston and valve of the relay cylinder should be connected b what is termed differential gear, the effect of which is that for cach displacement of the valve by the governor the piston moves through a distance proportional to the displacement of the valve. An example of differential gear is shown in fig. 105. Suppose that the rod is

connected with the governor e so that it is raised by an acceleration of the engine's speed. The rod c which leads from the relay piston b to the regulator serves as a fulcrum, and the valve-rod d is consequently raised. This admits steam to the upper side of the piston and depresses the piston, } which pulls down d with it, since the end of @ now serves as a fulcrum. Thus by the downward movement of the piston the valve is again restored to its middle posi- tion and the action of the regulator then ceases until a new change of speed occurs. A somewhat similar differential contriv- ance is used in steam-steering engines to make the position of the rudder follow, step by step, every movement of the hand- Fie. 105.—Differential Gear wheel ;3 also, in the steam reversing gear 7 Relay Governor. which is applied to large marine engines, to make the position of the drag-link follow that of the hand-lever ; and also in certain electrical governors.4 The effect of adding a differential gear such as this to a relay governor or other disengagement governor is to convert it from the isochronous to the stable type. \|

178, Another group of governors is best exentplified by the Diffe) } "differential" governor of the late Sir W. Siemens? (fig. 106), A entia| spindle @ driven by the engine drives a piece dyna b (whose rotation is resisted by a friction brake) through the dynamometer coupling c, consisting of a nest of bevel-wheels and a loaded lever d. So long as the speed re- mains constant the rate at which work is done on the brake is constant and the lever dis steady. If the speed accelerates, more power has to be communicated to b, partly to overcome the inertia and partly to meet the increased resistance of the brake, and the lever d is displaced. The lever d works the throttle-valve or other regulator, either directly or by a steam relay. The governor is isochronous when the force employed to hold d in position does not vary ; if the force increases when d is displaced, the governor is stable. A governor of this class may properly be called a dynamometric governor, since it regulates by endeavour- ing to keep constant the rate at which energy is transmitted to the piece b, In one form of Siemens's governor the friction-brake is replaced by a sort of centrifugal pump, consisting of a para- boloidal cup, open at the top and bottom, whose rotation causes a fluid to rise in it and escape over the rim when the speed is sufficiently great. Any increase in the cup's speed augments largely the power required to turn it, and consequently affects the position of the piece

which corresponds tod.® Siemens’s governor is not itself used to any important extent, but the principle it em- bodies finds application in a number of other forms.

179. The ‘‘velometer” or marine-engine regulator of Messrs Durham and Churchill? is a governor of the same type. In it the rotation of a piece corresponding to 6 is resisted by means of a fan revolving in a case containing a fluid, and the coupling piece which is the mechanical equivalent of d in fig. 106 acts on the throttle valve, not directly but through a steam relay. In Silver’s marine governor ® the only friction-brake that is provided to resist the rotation of the piece which corresponds to 6 is a set of air-vanes. The inertia is, however, very great, and any acceleration of the engine’s speed consequently displaces the dynamometer coupling,

SLIPTIPII

SETTLE

os

ATLL /

4

Yj z

3

RLU Roh ZI» Cr e a 2 4G i

ny

4

L a LZ

OHO

N Ik y 1 NIN NIN N NIN Ni MS N NN eee [SS

SS S

Fig. 106.—Siemens’s Governor.

3 See a paper by Mr J. MacFarlane Gray, Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1867. 4 Willans, Min. Proc, Inst. C.£., vol. 1xxxi. p. 166.

5 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1853.

6 Proc, Inst. Mech, Eng., 1866; or Phil. Trans., 1866.

7 Proce. Inst. Mech, Eng., 1879.

8 Brit. Ass. Rep., 1859, p. 123.

WORK ON CRANK-SHAFT. |

and so acts on the regulator in its effort to increase the speed f .

; Another example of the differential type is the Allen! governor, which has a fan directly geared to the engine, revolving in a case containing a fluid. The case is also free*to turn, except that it is held back by a aoe’ or spring and is connected to the regulator. So long as the speed of the fan is constant, the moment required to keep the case from turning does not vary, and consequently the position of the regulator remains unchanged. When the fan turns faster the moment increases, and the case has to follow it (acting on the regulator) until the spring which holds the case from turn- ing is sufficiently extended, or the weight raised. The term “dy- namometric governor” is equally applicable to this form; the power required to drive the fan is regulated by an absorption-dynamometer in the case instead of by a transmission-dynamometer between the engine and the fan. In Napier’s governor the case is fixed, and the reaction takes place between one turbine-fan which revolves with the engine and another close to it which is held from turning by a spring and is connected with the regulator.

180. Pump governors form another group closely related to the differential or dynamometric type. An engine may have its speed regulated by working a small pump which supplies a chamber from which water is allowed to

escape by an orifice of constant size. When the engine quickens its speed water is pumped in faster than it can escape, and the accumulation of water in the chamber may be made to act on the regulator through a piston controlled by a spring or in other ways, This device has an obvious analogy to the cataract of the Cornish pumping-engine (§ 168), which has, however, the somewhat different purpose of introducing a regulated pause at the end of each stroke. The “differential valve-gear” invented by Mr H. Davey, and successfully applied by him to modern pumping-engines, combines the functions of the Cornish cataract with that of a hydraulic governor for regulating the expansion.? In this gear, which is shown dia- gramatically in fig. 107, the valve- rod of the engine (a) receives its motion from a lever }, one end of which (¢) copies, on a reduced scale, the motion of the engine piston, while the other (@), which forms (so to speak) the fulcrum, has its position regulated by at- tachment to a subsidiary piston- rod, which is driven by steam in a cylinder e, and is forced to travel uniformly by a cataract f. The point of cut-off is determined by the rate at which the main piston overtakes the cataract piston, and consequently comes early with light loads and late with heavy loads,

181. The government of marine engines is peculiarly difficult on account of the sudden and violent fluctuations of load to which they are subjected by the alternate uncovering and submersion of the screw in a heavy sea. However rapidly the governor responds to increase of speed by closing the throttle-valve, an excess of work is still done by the steam in the valve-chest and in the high-pres- sure cylinder. To check the racing which results from this, it has been proposed to supplement the control which the throttle-valve on the steam-pipe exercises by throttling the exhaust or by spoilin the vacuum. Probably a better plan is that of Messrs Jenkins al Lee, who give supplementary regulation by causing the governor to open a shunt-valve which connects the top and bottom of the low- pressure cylinder, thus allowing a portion of the steam in it to pass the piston without doing work. In Dunlop’s pneumatic governor® an attempt is made to anticipate the racing of the screw by caus- ing the regulator to be acted on by the changes of pressure on a diaphragm which is connected by an air-pipe with an open vessel fixed under the stern of the ship. A plan has recently been intro- duced by Mr W. B. Thompson to prevent the racing of marine engines by working the valves from a lay shaft which is driven at a uniform speed by

an entirely independent engine. So long as this lay shaft is not driven too fast the main engine is obliged to follow it; if the lay shaft is driven faster than the main engine can follow the main engine pauses so as to miss a stroke, and then goes on. Reversing the motion of the lay shaft reverses the

aes! eee S47

Fic. 107.—Davey's Differential Valve-Gear.

minimum, within the limits of each single stroke, which will be discussed in the next chapter.

X. THe Work on THE CRANK-SHAFT.

183. Besides those variations of speed which occur from stroke Use of to stroke, which it is the business of the governor to check, there fiy-wheel.

are variations within each single stroke over which the governor has of course no control. These are due to the varying rate at which work is done on the crank-shaft during its revolution. To limit them is the function of the fly-wheel, which acts by forming a reservoir of energy to be drawn upon during those parts of the revolution in which the work done on the shaft is less than the work done by the shaft, and to take up the surplus in those parts of the revolution in which the work done on the shaft is greater than the work done by it. This alternate storing and restoring of energy is accomplished by slight fluctuations of speed, whose range depends on the ratio which the alternate excess and defect of energy bears to the whole stock the fly-wheel holds in virtue of its motion. The effect of the fly-wheel may be studied by drawing a diagram of crank-effort, which shows the work done on the crank in the same way that the indicator diagram shows the work done on the piston. The same diagram serves another useful purpose in determining the twisting and bending stress in the crank.

184. The diagram of crank-effort is best drawn by representing, Diagram in rectangular co-ordinates, the relation between the moment which of crank-the connecting-rod exerts to turn the crank and the angle turned effort.

through by the crank. When the angle is expressed in circular measure, the area of the diagram is the work done on the crank. Neglecting friction, and supposing in the first place that the engine runs so slowly that the forces required for the acceleration of the moving masses are negligibly small, the moment of crank- effort is found by resolving the thrust P of the piston-rod into a

Fig. 108.

component Q along the connecting-rod and a coinpanent O normal to the surface of the guide (fig. 108). The moment of crank- effort is

7COSa JP = aan) : where CN is drawn perpendicular to the centre linc or travel of the piston, ris the crank, / the connecting rod, and a the angle ACB which the crank makes with the centre line. A graphic deter- mination of CN is the most convenient in practice, unless the con- necting rod is so long that its obliquity is negligible, when the second term in the above expres- sion vanishes. Fig. 109 shows the diagram of 8 crank-effort de- $ termined in this

1 v) 3 fy € 7 way for an engine tee tonsa yo whose connect-

ing-rod is 34 Fic. 109.—Diagram of Crank-Effort.

times the length of its crank, and in which steam is cut off at half-stroke. The thrust P is determined from the indicator dia- grams of fig. 108 by taking the excess of the forward pressure on one side of the piston over the back pressure on the other side, and multiplying this effective pressure by the area of the piston. The area of the diagram of crank-effort is the work done per revolution.

Q:OM=P-ON=Prsina(1+

2 a o 2 o-

main engine. a 182. In connexion with governors mention may be made of an order. apparatus introduced by Mr Moscrop to give a continuous record

185. The friction of the piston in the cylinder and the piston- Effect of rod in the stuffing-box is easily allowed for, when it is known, by friction. making a suitable deduction from P. Friction at the guides, at

of fluctuations in the speed of engines. It resembles a small centrifugal governor, but the displacement of the balls actuates, not a regulator, but a pencil which moves transversely on a ribbon of paper that is moved continuously by clockwork. The recorder responds so rapidly to changes of speed as to show not only the comparatively slow changes which occur from stroke to stroke, but also those short-period fluctuations between a maximum and

? Proc, Inst. Mech. Eng., 1873. .

a. 2 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng, 1874. Ibid., 1879.

4 Tbid., 1884.

the crosshead, and at the crank-pin has the effect of making the stress at each of these places be inclined to the rubbing surfaces at an angle ¢, the angle of repose, whose tangent is the coefficient of friction. Hence O, instead of being normal to the guide, is inclined at the angle ¢ in the direction which resists the piston's motion (fig. 110); and the thrust along the connecting-rod, instead of passing through the centre of each pin, is displaced far enough to make an angle ¢ with the radius at the point where it meets the pin's surface. 'T'o satisfy this condition let a '' friction-circle" be drawn about the centre of each pin, with radius equal to a sin ¢,

Effect of inertia,

where a is the actual radius of the pin. Any line drawn tangent to this circle will make the angle ¢ with the radius of the pin at the surface of the pin. The thrust of the connecting-rod must be tangent to both circles; it is drawn as in fig. 110, so that it resists the rota- . tion of the pins relatively to the rod. The direction of ro- tation of the pins is shown

Fig. 110. by curved arrows in the figure, where the friction-circles are drawn

to a greatly exaggerated scale. Finally, P (after allowing for the friction of piston-packing and stuffing-box) is resolved into O and Q, and Q°CM, the moment of Q on the shaft, is determined. This gives a diagram of crank-effort, correct so far as friction affects it, whose area is no longer equal to that of the indicator diagram. The difference, however, does not represent the whole work lost through friction of the mechanism, since the friction of the shaft itself, and of those parts of the engine which it drives, has still to be allowed for if the frictional efficiency of the engine as a whole is in question.

186. The diagram of crank-effort is further modified when we take account of the inertia of the piston and connecting-rod. For the purpose of investigating tle effects of inertia, we may assume that the crank is revolving at a sensibly uniform rate of » turns per second, Let M be the mass of the piston, piston-rod, and crosshead in pounds, and a@ its acceleration at any instant in feet per second per second. The force required to accelerate it is Ma/g, in pounds-weight, and this is to be deducted in estimating the effective value of P. The effect is to reduce P during the first part of the stroke and to increase it towards the end, thereby compensating to some extent for the variation which P undergoes in consequence of an early cut-off. If the connecting-rod As so long that its obliquity may be neglected the piston has simvle harmonic motion, and

a= — 42°n?rcosa= — 4r?n®z, where x is the distance of the piston from its middle position. More generally, whatever ratio the length J of the connecting-rod bears to that of the crank 7,

2cos2a+73sin4 a= —da?n’r (cosa+ coset Tats

(12 — r°sin 2a)?

The effect is to make, on the diagram of P, a correction of the character shown in fig. 111, where the broken line cd refers to the case of an indefinitely long con- necting-rod and the full line ab to the case of a

connecting-rod 34 times the length of the crank, In a vertical engine’ the weight of the piston and piston-rod is to be added to or subtracted © from P.

To allow for the inertia of the connecting-rod is a matter of somewhat greater difficulty. Its motion may conveniently be analysed as consisting of translation with the velocity of the crosshead, combined with rota- tion about the crosshead as centre. Hence the force required for

Fig. 111.

its acceleration is the resultant of three components—F,, the force dans

required for the linear ac- celeration a (which is the same as that of the piston); F,, the force required to cause angular acceleration about the crosshead; and F;, the force towards the centre of rotation, which depends on the angular velocity, and is equal and opposite to the so-called centrifugal force. Let be the angle BAC (fig. 112), the angular velocity of the rod about A, and @ its angular acceleration, and let M’ be the mass of the rod. Then F, = M’a/g ?

and acts through the centre of gravity G, parallel to AC;

F,=M’. AG. 6/9, and acts at right angles to the rod through the centre of per- cussion H; i

F3;=M’. AG. 6/9, aud acts along the rod towards A. Also,

/ 27Nr COS @

/? ~r?sin2e’ — 4x°nrsin af]? ~ 7?) Bee SM age),

Fig. 112.

@=

oie (2—72sin a)!

STEAM-ENGINE

The moments of these forces about © are next to be found, aid

to be deducted from the moment of the thrust in the connecting-rod

(and, if the weight of the rod is to be considered, its moment abont C is to be added) in finding the resultant moment of crank-effort, 187. If, however, the friction at the crosshead and crank-pin is to be taken account of, the whole group of forces acting on the rod must be considered as follows. Compound forces equal and oppo- site to F,, F,, and F; into a single force R (fig. 113), which may be called the resultant resistance to acceleration of the connecting. rod. If the weight of the rod is to be considered, let it also be taken

Fig. 113.

Fig. 114.

as a wl aie in reckoning R. Then the rod may in any position

be regarded as in ep on under the action of the forces Q, R, and 8, where Q and S are the forces exerted on it by the crosshead and crank-pin respectively. These three forces meet in a point p in R, which is to be found by trial, the condition being that in the diagram of forces, fig, 114, after the triangle POQ has been drawn, and the force R set out, the force-line S shall be parallel to a line drawn from p tangent to the friction-circle of the crank-pin, as in fig. 118. When this condition has been satisfied by trial, the value of S, which is the thrust on the crank-pin, is determined, and §.CM is the moment of crank-effort. This method is due to the late Prof. Fleeming Jenkin, who has applied it with great generality to the determination of the frictional efficiency of ma- chinery in two important papers,! the second of which deals in detail with the dynamics of the steam-engine. Fig. 115, taken

Fig. 115.

from that paper, shows the diagram of crank-effort in a horizontal —

direct-acting engine,—the full line with friction, and the dotted line without friction,—the inertia of the piston and connecting rod being taken account of, as well as the weight of the latter. It exhibits well the influence which the inertia of the reciprocating parts has in equalizing the crank-effort in the case of an early cut- off. ‘The cut-off is supposed to occur pretty sharply at about one- sixth of the stroke. The engine considered is of practical propor- tions, and makes four turns per second; and the initial steam pressure is 50 tb per square inch. It appears from the diagram that, with a slightly higher speed, or with heavier rods, a better balance of crank-effort might be secured, especially as regards the stroke towards the 7 crank, which comes first in the dia- gram; on the other hand, by unduly increasing the mass of the reciprocat- ing pieces or their speed the inequal- ity due to expan-

Fig. 116.—Crank-Effort Diagram for Two Cranks. — sion would be over-corrected and a new inequality would come in.

188. When two or more cranks act on the same shaft, the

joint Combine | |

moment of crank-effort is found by combining the diagrams for diagra

the separate cranks, in the manner illustrated by fig. 116, which refers to the case of two cranks at right angles.

Another graphic method of exhibiting the variations of moment Cireuler exerted on the crank-shaft during a revolution is to draw a circular diagram.

diagram of crank-effort, in which lines proportional to the moment are set off radially from a circular line which represents the zero of moment. An example of this plan is given in fig. 117, which shows the resultant moment determined by Mr A. ©. Kirk for one of his triple-expansion engines with three cranks set at 120 from cach other. Curves arc drawn for various speeds, giving in each case the resultant moment due to the steam pressure (as

! Trans. Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. xxviii. p. 1 and p. 703.

determined from actual indicator diagrams) combined with the moments due to the inertia of the reciprocating parts. The line marked 0 is the steam line without inertia—or, in other words,

me, “.

~,

™,

, ~~.

.

3a. es

=

o — —_— ee

out papers

oe

*.

he th

Sqpogeee”

Fi¢, 117,—Cireular Diagram of Crank-Effort for a Three-Cylinder Engine.

the curve corresponding to an indefinitely slow speed. The other curves refer to the number of revolutions per minute marked on them.

189, To determine the fluctuations of speed during a revolution, the resultant diagram of work done on the crank-shaft is to be compared with a

similar diagram drawu to show the work done by the shaft in overcoming its own friction, and in overcoming the resistance of the mechanism which it drives. In general the re- sistance may be taken asconstant, and the diagram of effort exerted by the crank-shaft is then a straight line, as EFGHIJKL in fig. 118. At ¥F, G, H, I, J, and K the rate at which work is being done on and by ; the shaft is the ion same; hence at + these points the

fly- wheel _ is | neither gaining nor losing speed. The shaded area above FG is an exeess of work

Fig. 118.

done on the crank, and raises the speed of the fly-wheel from a mini- mum at F to a maximum at G. From G to H the fly-wheel supplies the defect of energy shown by the shaded area below GH, by which the demand for work exceeds the supply ; its speed again reaches a

minimum at H, and again a maximum at I. The excesses and de- fects balance in each revolution if the engine is making a constant number of turns per second, In what follows it is assumed that they are only a small fraction of the whole energy held by the fly-wheel.

Let AE be the greatest single amount of energy which the fly- Wheel has to give out or absorb, as determined by measuring the shaded areas of the diagram ; and let w, and w, be the maximum and minimum values of the wheel’s angular velocity, which occur at the extremes of the period during which it is storing or sup- plying the energy AE. The mean angular velocity of the wheel @o Will be sensibly equal to 4(w,+,) if the range through which the speed varics is moderate. Let Ey be the energy of the fly-wheel at this mean speed. Then

Ey = $1w,? ?

where I is the moment of inertia of the fly-wheel.

They Bis yg’? Apa ser) Tayo — @.) = 2E,.

(; – g) Wo 3 which we may write g, is the ratio of the

The quantity °— “2 | Wy extreme range of specd to the mean speed, and measures the degree of unsteadiness which the fly-wheel leaves uncorrected. If the problem be to design a fly-wheel which will keep g down to an assigned limit, the energy of the wheel must be such that AE

| t Ey= 29 .

The Moserop recorder, alluded to in § 182, exhibits the degree of Unsteadiness during a single revolution by the width of the line

oll

which it draws. On the other hand, any bending of the line implies the quite independent characteristic of unsteadiness from one revolution to another. ‘he former is due to insufficient fly-whecl energy, the latter to imperfect governing.

190. An interesting consequence of the periodic alternations in crank-effort which occur in each revolution has been pointed out by Mr M. Longridge.t_ The fly-wheel receives its alternate ac- celeration and retardation through changes of the torsional stress in the shaft. If these occur at intervals nearly equal to the period of free torsional vibration which the fly-wheel possesses in virtue of the torsional elasticity of the shaft between it and the crank, strains of great amplitude will arise; and Mr Longridge has suggested that this may account for the observed fact that engine- shafts have been ruptured when running so that the fluctuations of crank-effort occurred with one particular frequency, although the pares effort was itself much less than the shaft would safely

ear.

XI. EXAMPLES oF STEAM-ENGINES. STATIONARY ENGINES.

191. In classifying engines with regard to their general Deserip- arrangement of parts and mode of working, account has tive to be taken of a considerable number of independent %™* characteristics. We have, first, a

general division into condensing and non-condensing engines, with a subdivision of the condensing class into those which act by surface condensation and those which use injection. Next there is the division into compound and non-compound, with a further classification of the former as double-, triple-, or quadruple-expansion engines. Again, engines may be classed as single or double-acting, according as the steam acts on one or alternately on both sides of the piston. Again, a,few engines—such as steam-hammers and certain kinds of steam-pumps—are xon-rotative, that is to say, the reciprocating motion of the piston does work simply on a reciprocating piece; but generally an engine does work on a continuously revolving shaft, and is termed rotative. In most cases the crank-pin of the revolving shaft is connected directly with the piston-rod by a con- necting-rod, and the engine is then said to be direct-acting ; in other cases, of which the ordinary beam-engine is the most important example, a lever is interposed between the piston and the connecting-rod. The same distinction applies to non-rotative pumping engines, in some of which the piston acts directly on the pump-rod, while in others it acts through a beam. The position of the cylinder is another element of classification, giving horizontal, vertical, and inclined cylinder engines. Many vertical engines are further distinguished as belonging to the inverted cylinder class ; that is to say, the cylinder is above the connecting- rod and crank. In oscillating cylinder engines the connect- ing-rod is dispensed with; the piston-rod works on the crank-pin, and the cylinder oscillates on trunnions to allow the piston-rod to follow the crank-pin round its circular path. In trunk engines the piston-rod is dispensed with ; the connecting-rod extends as far as the piston, to which it is Jointed, and a trunk or tubular extension of the piston, through the cylinder cover, gives room for the rod to oscillate. In rotary engines there is no piston in the ordinary sense ; the steam does work on a revolving piece, and the necessity is thus avoided of afterwards converting reciprocating into rotary motion.

192. In the single-acting atmospheric engine of New- comen the beam was a necessary feature; the use of water- packing for the piston required that the piston should move down in the working stroke, and a beam was needed to let the counterpoise pull the piston up. Watt’s improve- ments made the beam no longer necessary ; and in one of the forms he designed it was discarded—namely, in the form of pumping-engine known as the Bull

engine, in which a vertical inverted cylinder stands over and acts directly on the pump-rod. But the beam type was generally

1 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., May 1884, p. 163.

Parallel motion in beam- engines.

retained by Watt, and for many years it remained a favourite with builders of engines of the larger class. The beam formed a convenient driver for pump-rods and valve- rods; and the parallel motion invented by Watt as a means of guiding the piston-rod, which could easily be applied to a beam-engine, was, in the early days of ergine- building, an easier thing to construct than the plane surfaces which are the natural guides of the piston-rod in a direct-acting engine. In modern practice the direct- acting type has to a very great extent displaced the beam type. For mill-driving and the general purposes of a rota- tive engine the beam type is now rarely chosen. In pumping engines it is more common, but even there the tendency is to use direct-acting forms.

193. The only distinctive feature of beam-engines requir- ing special notice here is the “ parallel motion,” an ordinary form of which is shown diagram- I matically in fig. 119. There MN is the path in which the piston- * rod head, or crosshead, as it is <5". often called, is to be guided. ; ABC is the middle line of half “ j the beam, C being the fixed centre yg, 119,-watt’s Parallel about which the beam oscillates. Motion.

A link BD connects a point in the beam with a radius link ED, which oscillates about a fixed centre at E. A point P in BD, taken so that BP: DP :: EN : CM, moves in a path which coincides very closely with the straight line MPN. Any other point F in the line CP or CP produced

a. elu ¢

ore ae”

below it, the guiding surfaces at Q are avoided, but the path of P is then only very nearly straight. An example of the linkage in this form, with the further modification that A is shifted out, and B is brought nearer to P, occurs in the pumping engine of fig. 130 below.

In by far the greater number of modern steam-engines the crosshead is guided by a block sliding on planed sar- faces. In many beam-engines, even, this plan of guiding the piston has taken the place of the parallel motion.

STEAM-ENGINE

ae TZ,

Fig. 121.—Small Horizontal Direct-Acting Steam Engine: Side Elevation.

: —— es ree

[STATIONARY

is made to copy this motion by means of the links AF and FG, parallel to BD and AC. In the ordinary application of — the parallel motion a point such as F is the point of attach- ment of the piston-rod, and P is used to drive a pump-rod, Other points in the line CP produced are occasionally made use of, by adding other links parallel to AC and BD. Watt's linkage gives no more than an approximation to straight-line motion, but in a well-designed example the amount of deviation need not exceed one four-thousandth of the length of stroke. It was for long believed that the production of an exact straight-line motion by pure linkage was impossible, until the problem was solved by the invention of the Peaucellier cell.2 The Peaucellier linkage has not been applied to the steam-engine, except in isolated cases. | 194. Another " parallel motion" which has been used in gyott, steam-engines is shown in fig. 120. AB is a link pivoted Russel | on a fixed centre at A, and connected to the middle of Patil another link PQ, which is twice tn the length of AB. Q is guided j to move in a straight line in the | direction of AQ. P then moves ! in an exact straight line through *" A. This is not a pure linkage, ; since Q slides in a fixed guide, j, but the distance through which Fig. 120. Q has to be guided is small compared with

the stroke of P. If Q is guided to move in the arc of a circle of large radius, by using a radius rod from a fixed centre above or

| |

|

ms ee

== 4

aL)

Fig. 122.

Fig. 122,—Plan. Fig. 128.—Section on AB in fig. 121,

195. No type of steam-engine is so common as the horizontal Hor- | direct-acting. A small engine of this type, made by Messrs zontal | Tangye, and rated as a 10-horse-power engine, is illustrated in figs. direct- | 121 to 124. It furnishes a good example of a very numerous class, acting } and serves to illustrate the principal parts of a complete engine. engin) Fig. 121 is a side elevation, fig. 122 a plan, fig. 123 a transverse section through the bedplate in front of the cylinder, on the line

1 The kinematics of the parallel motion are discussed in Rankine's Magkiae and Mill Work, p. 275, and rules are given for the proportions and positions 0 the parts.

2 See Kempe's How to Draw a Straight Lina ("Nature Serles,"), 1877

•

ENGINES. |

AB ; and fig. 124 is a horizontal section through the cylinder, valve- chest, valve, stuffing-boxes, piston, and crosshead. The bedplate

=

SIS

N SOMO \ DINAN | SS i] » ‘ Cs LN BS

Fig, 124.—Horizontal Seetion through Cylinder and Valve-Chest.

is a single hollow casting, with two surfaces planed on it to serve as guides (see fig. 123). At one end the bedplate forms a pillow- block for the shaft, which has another main bearing independently supported beyond the fly-wheel. At the other end the bedplate is shaped so as to form the cylinder cover ; the cylinder is bolted to this and overhangs the bed. =

The cylinder (of 10 inches diameter and 20 inches stroke) con- sists of an internal ‘‘ liner” of cast-iron, exactly bored, and fitted within an external cylindrical casting, of which the ports and sides of the valve-chest form part. The space between the liner and the external cylinder serves as a steam-jacket. The use of a separate liner within the main cylinder is now general in large engines. In the front cylinder cover there is a stuffing-box through which the piston-rod passes. The stuffing-box is kept steam-tight by a soft packing which is pressed in by a gland. In some in- stances the packing consists of metallic rings. The cylinder cover and gland are lined with a brass ring in the hole through which the piston-rod passes. The valve-rod is brought out of the valve- chest in the same way. The piston is a hollow casting into which the piston-rod is screwed and riveted over. It is packed by two * rings of cast-iron, which are sprung into recesses turned in the circumference of the piston. This mode of packing is used in locomotives and small engines. For large pistons the usual plan is to employ wider split rings, called floating rings, pressed against the sides of the cylinder, not by their own elasticity, but by sepa- rate springs behind them in the body of the piston ; they are held in place by a movable flange called a junk-ring on one face of the

iston, One example of the packing of a large piston is shown in fig. 134. The crosshead consists of a steel centre-piece with a round boss, in which the piston-rod is secured by a cotter, and a forked front, where the end of the connecting-rod works on a pin. A pair of pins at top and bottom carry the steel shoes or sliding- blocks, whose distance from the centre is

adjustable by nuts to take up wear. There is no crank; the connecting-rod works on a pin

fixed in a disk on the end of the shaft in front of the main bear-

water streams continuously through perforations in the pipe B, which has a cock outside to regulate the supply. The pump draws condensed water down to the lower part of the vessel] at either end alternately through the valves C, and forces it up thence through the valves D to a chamber E, from which the delivery-pipe leads out. The pump is a gun-metal piston working in a cylinder fitted with a gun-metal liner. The valvesare flat india-rubber rings held down in the centre by a spring, which allows them to open by rising bodily, as well as by bending.

197. The engine of figs. 121-4 makes 85 revolutions per minute, and its mean piston speed is consequently about 280 feet per minute. In some special forms of small horizontal engine the design is adapted to a much more rapid reciprocation of the moving masses, and the piston speed is raised to a valueseldom exceeded in the largest land engines, although still higher values are now cominon in marine practice. Experience shows that the weight of engines of any one type varies roughly as the piston area. Their power depends on the product of piston area, piston speed, and pressure; and hence, so long as the pressures are similar, the ratio of power to weight is nearly proportional to piston speed. Cases present themselves in which it is desirable to make this ratio as great as possible; and, apart from this, an enginc making a large number of re- volutions per minute is a convenient motor for certain high-speed machines.

A good example of a small horizontal engine, specially designed Arming-

by the symmetry and balance of its parts, by tee of the ton and bearing surfaces, and by very perfect lubrication, to stand the Sims strains which are caused by high speed, is the Armington & Sims engine. engine, made in America by the patentees and in England by Messrs Greenwood & Batley.

The bedplate is symmetrical about the line of motion of the crosshead; it supplies two very long main bearings for the shaft, at each end of which there is an overhung fly-wheel. The bearings have an adjustable side-block to take up wear. They are formed entirely of white-metal, cast on to the cast-iron pillow-blocks. In the middle are two disks, forming crank-cheeks, which are weighted opposite the crank-pin, so that they balance the pin and that part of the connecting-rod which may be treated as having its mass applied there. The crank-pin and the crosshead-pin are wide enough to give a large bearing area. The crosshead-block is a hollow bronze casting, giving an excep- tionally large surface of contact with the guides. The valve is a piston-valve of the Trick type, which works sufficiently tight without packing. The valve-rod and eccentric-rod are connected through a block which slides on a fixed guide. The governor, which has been already illustrated in fig. 100, is contained within one of the fly-wheels. An engine of this type, with a cylinder 12 inches in diameter and a stroke of 12 inches, makes 275 revo- lutions per minute, has a piston speed of 550 feet per minute, and indicates about 80 horse-power. Other good examples of high speed combined with double action are furnished by the Porter- Allen engine! and by the very light engines which Mr Thorneycroft and others have introduced for driving fans to supply air to the closed stokeholes of torpedo-boats. In these a speed of 1000 revolutions per minute is made possible by the use of light recipro- cating parts and large bearing surfaces.

198. Fig. 127 shows a large non-compound horizontal Corliss Large

High- speed

engines.

horizontal

engine for mill-driving, by Messrs Hick, Hargreaves, & Co. The horizontal cylinder is 34 inches in diameter, the stroke 8 feet, and the speed Corliss 45 revolutions per minute, giving a mean piston speed of 720 feet engine.

f

|

4

‘ser

Fig. 125, Fig. 126.

Condenser and Air-Pump.

Within the condenser, is a horizontal plunger or piston-pump worked by a ‘‘tail-rod”—that is, a continuation of the piston-rod past the piston and through the back cover of the cylinder. Figs. 125 and 126 show in section one of Messrs Tangye’s small condensers fitted with a double-acting air-pump to be driven by a tail-rod. The condenser proper is the chamber A, and into it the injection-

per minute. The cylinder is steam-jacketed round the barrel in the space between the liner and the outer cylinder, and also at the ends, which arc cast hollow for this purpose. In large horizontal engines the weight of the piston tends to cause excessive wear on the lower side of the cylinder. In the example shown a part of the weight is borne by a tail-rod, ending in a block, which slides on a fixed guide behind the cylinder. _ To further diminish wear the piston is sometimes made much wider from front to back than the one shown here; and the device is sometimes resorted to of giving the piston- rod “‘ camber”’—that is to say, an upward curvature in the middle – portion, which the weight of the piston reduces to straightness. Fig. 127 illustrates a common method of attaching the air-pump and condenser in large horizontal engines. The condenser is placed in a well in front of the cylinder, and the air-pump, which is a vertical bucket-pump, is worked by a bell-crank lever, connected with the crosshead by a link. The fly-wheel of this engine is grooved for ee it is cast in segments, which are bolted to one another and to the spokes, and the spokes are secured by cotters in tapered sockets in the nave. It is large and heavy, to suit the inequality of driving effort which is caused by the use of a single cylinder and a very early cut-off in engines of this class. To facili- tate startiug and valve-setting, mill engines are often provided with an auxiliary called a “‘ barring” engine. The barring engine turns a toothed pinion, which gears into a toothed rim in the fly-wheel, and is contrived to fall automatically out of gear as soon as the main engine starts.

1 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eing., 1868.

XXIL — 65

Coupled engines,

Con- pound horizontal engines.

Direct- acting vertical cylinder engine,

514

199. When uniformity of driving effort or the absence of dead- points is specially important, two independent cylinders are often coupled to the same shaft by cranks at right angles to each other, an arrangement which allows the engine to be started readily from any position. The ordinary locomotive is an example of this form. Among fixed engines of the larger kind, winding engines, in which ease of starting, stopping, and reversing is essential, are very gene- rally made by coupling a pair of horizontal cylinders, with cranks at right angles to each other, on opposite sides of the winding-drum, with the link-motion as the means of operating the valves.

200. Non-compound engines of so large a size as that of fig. 127 are comparatively uncommon. Horizontal engines of the larger class are generally compounded either (1) by having a high and a low pressure cylinder side by side, working on twocranks at exactly or nearly right angles to each other, or (2) by placing one cylinder behind the other, with the axes of both in the same straight line. The latter is called the tandem arrangement. In it one piston-rod is generally common to both cylinders; occasionally, however, the piston-rods are distinct, and are connected to one another by a framing of parallel bars outside of the cylinders. Another con-

go

=_oos=

Bet cerrsert

Fie. 127.—-Horizontal Corliss Condensing Engine,

of compound engines, the cut-off is usually effected either by an expansion slide-valve or by some form of Corliss or other trip- ear.

For mill engines the compound tandem and compound coupled types are now the most usual, and the high-pressure cylinder is very generally fitted with Corliss gear. In the compound coupled arrangement the cylinders are on separate bedplates, and the fly- wheel is between the cranks.

201. The general arrangement of vertical engines differs little from that of horizontal engines. The cylinder is usually supported above the shaft by a cast-iron frame resembling an inverted A, whose sides are kept parallel fora part of their length to serve as guides for the crosshead. Sometimes one side of the frame only is used, and the engine is stiffened by a wrought-iron column be- tween the cylinder and the base on the other side. Wadll-engines are a vertical forin with a flat frame or bedplate, which is made to be bolted against a wall ; in these the shaft is generally at the top. Vertical engines are compounded, like horizontal engines, either by coupling parallel eylinders to cranks at right angles (as in the ordinary marine form, which will be illustrated later, § 218), or, tandem fashion, by placing the high-pressure cylinder above the other. In vertical condensing engines the condenser is situated at the base, and the air-pump, which has a vertical stroke, is gene- rally worked by a lever connected by a short link to the cross- head. In some cases the pump is horizontal, and is worked by a crank on the main shaft.

202. Engines making 400 to 1600 revolutions per minute have been extensively applied, in recent years, to the driving of dynamos and other high-speed machines. These are for the most part single-

position, with its connecting-rod working on the same crank.

struction, rarely followed, is to have parallel cylinders with both piston-rods acting on one crank by being joined to opposite ends of one long crosshead.

In some recent compound engines the large cylinder is horizontal, and the other lies above it in an inclined

pin.

In tandem engines, since the pistons move together, there ig no need to provide a receiver between the cylinders. It is practic- able to follow the ‘‘ Woolf” plan of allowing the steam to expand directly from the small into the large cylinder; and in many instances this is done. In point of fact, however, the connecting. pipe and steam-chest form an intermediate receiver of considerable size, which will cause loss by ‘‘ drop” (§ 118) unless steam be cut off in the large cylinder before the end of the stroke. Hence it is more usual to work with a moderately early cut-off in the low-pressure cylinder than to use the ‘* Woolf” plan of admitting steam to it throughout the whole stroke. Unless it is desired to make the cut-off occur before half-stroke, a common slide-valve will serve to distribute steam to the large cylinder. For an earlier cut-off than this a separate expansion-valve is required on the low-pressure cylinder, to supplement the slide-valve ; and in any case, by providing a separate expansion-valve, the point of cut- off is made subject to easy control, and may be adjusted so as to avoid drop or to divide the work as may be desired between the two cylinders.! For this reason it is not unusual to find an expan- sion-valve, as well as a common slide-valve, on the low-pressure cylinder even of tandem engines. In many cases, however, the common slide-valve onlyis used. On the high-pressure cylinder

|

| acting ; steam is admitted to the back of the piston only, and the High-| connecting-rod is in compression throughout the whole revolution. speed | Besides simplifying the valves, this has the important advantage single | that alternation of strain at the joints may be entirely avoided, acting} with the knocking and wear of the brasses which it is apt to cause. engin

To secure, however, that the connecting-rod shall always push, there must be much cushioning during the back or exhaust stroke. From a point near the middle of the back stroke to the end the piston is being retarded ; and, as this must not be done by the rod (which would thereby be required to pull),

cushioning must begin there, and the work spent upon the cushion must at every stage be at least as great as the loss of energy on the part of the piston and rod. In some single-acting engines this cushioning is done by compressing a portion of the exhaust steam ; in others the rod is kept in compression by help of a supptementary piston, on which steam from the boiler presses ; in Mr Willans's engine the enshion- ing is done by compressing air.

203. A very successful example of the multiple-cylinder single- Broth

acting high-speed type is the three-cylinder engine introduced by hood

in figs. 128 and 129. Fig. 128 isa longitudinal and fig. 129 a trans verse section. Three cylinders, set at 120° apart, project from 4 closed casing, the central portion of which forms the exhaust The pistons are of the trunk type —that is to say, there is a jot in the piston itself which allows the piston-rod to oscillate, and s0 makes a separate connecting-rod unnecessary. The three rods work on a single crank-pin, which is counterbalanced by masses

1 Or, alternatively, the adjustment may be made so that the steam undergoes ‘ equal changes of temperature in both cylinders.

Mr Brotherhood in 1873, the most recent form of which is show” engin’

fixed to the crank checks on the other side of the shaft. Steam is admitted to the back of the pistons only. It passes first through athrottle-valve, which is controlled by a centrifugal spring-governor (fig. 128), and is then distributed to the cylinders by three piston-

ENGINES. | O15 valves A, worked by an eccentric, the sheave of which is mado hollow so as to overhang one of the main bearings (fig. 128). Release takes place by the piston itself uncovering exhaust ports in the circumference of the cylinder, and the rocking motion of the

Fie. 128,—Brotherhood’’s Three-Cylinder Engine: longitudinal section.

piston-rod is taken advantage of to open a supplementary exhaust port (B, fig. 129), which remains open during a sufficient portion of the back stroke. The flexible coupling C shown in fig. 128, in which the twisting moment of the shaft is transmitted throngh disks of leather, prevents straining of the shaft and bearings through any want of alignment between the shaft of the engine and that of the mechanism it drives. Besides its use as a steam-engine, Mr Brotherhood's pattern has been extensively applied in driving torpedoes by means of compressed air. As a steam-engine it is compounded by placing a high-pressure cylinder outside of and tandem with cach low-pressure cylinder.

204. In other engines of this type a pair of cylinders, or a high and a low pressure cylinder, are set vertically side by side, to work on cranks opposite each othcr. The cranks and connecting-rods are completely enclosed, and are lubricated by dipping into a mixture of oil and water with which the lower part of the casing is filled. In the Westinghouse engine, where there are two vertical cylin- ders to which steam is admitted by a piston-valve, the crank-shaft is situated half a crank's length out of the line of stroke, to reduce the effects of the connecting-rod's obliquity during the working stroke.1 In Mr Willans's latest form of engine the high and low

ressure cylinders are tandem, and the space between the piston orms an intermediate receiver. The piston-rod is hollow, and has a piston-valve in it which controls the admission of steam to the high-pressure cylinder and its transfer to the low-pressure cylinder. The piston-valve within the rod takes its differential motion from an eccentric on the crank-pin. The crosshead is itself a piston working in a cylindrical guide, in which it compresses air as it rises during the back stroke in order to cushion the reciprocating parts."

205. 1n engines for pumping or for blowing air it is not essential to drive a revolving shaft, and in many forms the reciprocating motion of the steam-piston is applied directly or through a beam to produce the reciprocating motion of the pump-piston or plunger. On the other hand, pumping engines are frequently made rotative for the sake of adding a fly-whecl. When the level of the suction water is sufficiently high, horizontal engines, with the pump behind the cylinder and in line with it, are gencrally preferred ; in other cases a beam-engine or vertical direct-acting engine is more common.

Horizontal engines are, however, employed to pump water from any depth by using triangular rocking frames, which serve as bell- crank levers between the horizontal pistou and vertical pump-rods.?

Fig. 180 shows a compound inverted vertical pumping engine of the non-rotative class, by Messrs Hathorn, Davey, & Co. Steam is distributed through lift valves, and the engine is governed by the differential gear illustrated in fig. 107, in conjunction with a cataract, which makes the pistons pause at the end of each stroke. The pistons are in line with two pump-rods, and are coupled by an inverted beam which gives guidance to the crossheads by nieans of an approximate straight-line motion, which is a modification of that of fig. 120. Surface condensers are frequently used with pumping engines, the water which the engine pumps serving as circulating water.

206. In a very numerous class of direct-acting steam-pumps, the Steam-piston and the pump-piston or plunger are on the same piston-rod. In some of these a rotative element is introduced, partly to secure uniformity of motion, and partly for convenience of working the valves ; a connecting-rod is taken from some point

5 oe Engineering, August 13, 1886.

; See “Discussion on High Speed Motors,” Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., Nov. 1885.

For an account of beam and other forms of rotative pumping engines, see a

Paper by Mr Rich, and remarks by Mr J. G. Mair, in Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., April 1884,

Fig, 129.—Brotherhood’s Three-Cylinder Engine: transyerse section.

slotted crosshead fixed to the rod gives rotary motion to a crank- pin gearing into the slot, the line of the slot being perpendicular to that of the stroke. Many other steam-pumps are strictly non-rota- tive. In some the valve is worked by tappets from the piston-rod. In the Blake steam-pump a tappet worked by the piston as it reaches each end of its stroke throws over an auxiliary steam-valve, which

=i a NE

‘f

ji

4

Fic. 180,—Vertical Non-Rotative Pumping Engine.

admits steam to one or other side of an auxiliary piston carrying the main slide-valve. In Cameron & Floyd’s form one of a pair of tappet-valves at the ends of the cylinder is opened by the piston as it reaches the end of the stroke, and puts one or other side of an auxiliary piston, which carries the slide-valve, into communication with the exhaust, so that it is thrown over. In the Worthington engine—a design which has had much success in America, and is now being introduced in England by Messrs Simpson—two steam cylinders are placed side by side, each working its own pump-piston. The piston-rod of each is connected by a short link to a swinging bar, which actuates the slide-valve of the other steam-cylinder. In this way one piston begins its stroke when the motion of the other is about to cease, and a smooth and continuous action is secured.

207. The Worthington engine has been extensively applied, on a Worth- large scale, to raise water for the supply of towns and to force oil ington In the larger sizes it is engines.

through ‘‘ pipe-lines”’ in the United States. made compound, each high-pressure cylinder having a low-pressure cylinder tandem with it on the same rod. Owing to the lightness of the reciprocating asses, and their comparatively slow accelera- tion, their inertia does not compensate, to any great extent, for the inequality of pressure on the pump-piston that would be caused by an early cut-off in the steam cylinder (see § 186). To meet this difficulty, and make high expansion practicable, an ingen- ious addition has recently been made to the cngine.* A cross- head A (fig. 181) fixed to each of the piston-rods is connected to the piston-rods of a pair of oscillating cylinders B, B, which contain water and communicate with a reservoir full

of air compressed to a pressure of about 300 Ib per square inch. When the stroke (which

4 Min. Proc. Inst. C_E£., 1886, part iv. ; Engineering, August 20, 1886,

The pulso- meter,

Davey’s safety motor,

first forced in, and work is at first done by the main piston-rod, through the compensating cylinders B, B, on the compressed air in the reservoir. This continues until the crosshead has advanced so that the cylinders stand at right angles to the line of stroke. Then for the re- mainder of the stroke the compen- ~~~ sating eylinders assist in driving the main piston, and the compressed air gives out the energy which it stored in the earlier portion. The volume of the air reservoir is so much greater than the volume of the cylinders B, B that the air pressure remains nearly constant throughout the stroke. Any leak- age from the cylinder or reservoir is made good by a small pump which the engine drives. One advantage which this method of equalizing the effort of a steam-engine piston has (as compared with making use of the inertia of the reciprocating masses) is that the effort, when adjusted to be uniform at one speed, remains uniform although the speed be changed, provided the inertia of the recipro- cating parts be small. In the Worthington ‘‘ high-duty” engine, where this plan is in use, the high and low pressure cylinders are each provided with a separate expansion-valve of the rocking- cylinder type, as well as a slide-valve ; the cut-off is early, and the efficiency is as high as in other pumping engines of the best class.

208. Mr Hall’s ‘‘pulsometer” is a peculiar pumping engine without cylinder or piston, which may be regarded as the modern representative of the engine of Savery (§ 6). The sectional view, fig. 182, shows its prineipal parts. There are two chambers A, A’, narrowing towards the top, where the steam-pipe Benters. A ball-valve C allows steam to pass into one of the chambers and closes the other. Steam entering (say) the right-hand chamber forces water out of it past the clack-valve V into a delivery pas- sage D,

whieh is connected with an air- vessel. When the water-level in A sinks so far that steam begins to blow through the delivery-passage, the water and steam are disturbed and so brought into intimate contact, the steam in A is condensed, and a partial vacuum is formed. This causes the ball-valve C to roek over and close the top of A, while water rises from the suc- tiou-pipe H to fill that chamber. At the same time steam begins to enter the other chamber A', discharging water from it, and the same series of actions is repeated in either chamber alternately. While the water is being driven out there is comparatively Fie. 132.—Pulsometer. little condensation of steam, partly because the shape of the vessel does not promote the formation of eddies, and partly because there is a cushion of air betweeu the steam and the water. Near the top of cach chamber is a small air-valve opening inwards, which allows a little air to enter each time a vacuum isformed. When any steam is condensed, the air mixed with it remains on the cold surface and forms a non-con- ducting layer. The pulsometer is, of course, far from effieient as a thermodynamic engine, but its suitability for situations where other steam-pumps cannot be used, and the extreme simplicity of its working parts, make it valuable in certain cases.

209. We have seen that the tendency of modern steam prac- tiee is towards higher pressures, and that this means a gain both in effieiency and in power for a given weight of engine. High pressure, or indeed any pressure materially above that of the atmosphere, is out of the question when engine and boiler are to work without the regular presence of an attendant. Mr Davey has recently introduced a domestie motor which deserves notice from the fact that it employs steam at atmo- spheric pressure. One form of this successful little engine is shown in fig. 133. The boiler—whieh serves as the frame of the engine —is of east-iron, and is fitted with a cast-iron internal fire-box, with a vertical flue which is traversed by a water-bridge. The

Fig. 181.

Fig. 133,—Davey Motor.

takes place in the direetion of the arrow) begins the pistons are at

| walls the shafts project.

| will suffer a periodic increase and diminution of volume, between

cylinder, which is enclosed within the upper part of the boiler, and the piston are of gun-metal, and work without lubrication, Steam is admitted by an ordinary slide-valve, also of gun-metal, worked by an eecentric in the usual way. The condenser stands behind the boiler ; it consists of a number of upright tubes in a box, through which a current of cold water circulates from a supply-pipe at the bottom to an overflow-pipe at the top. In larger sizes of the motor the cylinder stands on a distinct frame, and the boiler has a hopper fire-box, whieh will take a charge of coke sufficient to drive the engine for several hours without attention. About 6 or 7 bof coke are burned per horse-power per hour. 210. From the earliest days of the rotative engine attempts have Rota, | been made to avoid the intermittent reciprocating motion which an eno 3 ordinary piston-engine first produces and then converts into motion of rotation. Murdoch, the contemporary of Watt, proposed an engine consisting of a pair of spur-wheels gearing with one another in a chamber through which steam passed by being carried round the outer sides of the wheels in the spaces between successive teeth,! In a more modern wheel-engine (Dudgeon’s) the steam was admitted by ports in side-plates into the elearance space be- hind teeth in gear with one another, just after they had passed the line of centres. From that point to the end of the are of contaet the clearance space increased in volume; and it was there- fore possible, by stopping the admission of steam at an intermediate point, to work expansively. The difficulty of maintaining steam- tight eonnexion between the teeth and the side-plates on which the faces of the wheels slide is obvious; and the same difficulty has Pw the success of many other forms of rotary engine. These ave been devised in immense variety, in many cases, it would seem, with the idea that a distinct mechanical advantage was to be secured by avoiding the reciprocating motion of a piston.? In point of faet, however, very few forms entirely escape having pleces with reciprocating motion. In all rotary engines, with the exeep- tion of steam turbines, —where work is done by the kinetic impulse of steam,—there are steam chambers which alternately expand and contract in volume, and this

action usually takes place through a more or less veiled reciprocation of working parts. §8o long as engines work at a moderate speed there is little advantage in avoid- ing reciprocation ; the alternate starting and stopping of piston and piston-rod does not affect materially the frictional efficiency, throws no deleterious strain on the joints, and need not disturb the equi- librium of the machine asa whole. The case is different when very high speeds are concerned ; it is then desirable as far as possible to limit the amount of reciprocating motion and to reduce the masses that partake in it. \4 211. A recent interesting and successful example of the rotary Tower's| type is the spherical engine of Mr Beauchamp Tower,' which, like spherice| several of its predecessors,' is based on the kincmatic relations of engine | the moving pieces in a Hooke's joint. Imagine a Hooke's joint, uniting two shafts set obliquely to one another, to be made up of a central disk to which the two shafts are hinged by semicircular plates, each plate working in a hinge which forms a diameter of the central disk, the two hinges being on opposite sides of the disk and at right angles to one another. Further, let the disk and the hinged pieces be enclosed in a spherical chamber through whose As the shafts revolve each of the four spaces bounded by the disk, a hinged piece, and the chamber wall

limits which depend on the angle at which the shafts are set. In Mr Tower's engine this arrangement is modified by using spherieal sectors, each a quarter sphere, in place of semicircular plates, for the pieces in which the shafts terminate. The shafts are set at 135°. Each of the four enclosed cavitics then alters in volume from zero to a quarter sphere, back to zero, again to a quarter sphere, and again back to zero, in a complete revolution of the shafts. In practice the central disk is a plate of finite thickness, whose edge is kept steam-tight in the enclosing chamber by spring-packing, and the sectors are reduced to an extent corresponding to the thickness of the central disk. One shaft is a dummy and runs free, the other is the driving-shaft. Steam is admitted and exhausted by ports in the spherical sectors, whose backs serve as revolving slide-valves. It is admitted to each cavity during the first part of each periodical increase of the cavity's volume. It 1s then cut off and allowed to expand as the cavity further enlarges, and is exhausted as the cavity contracts. If the working shaft, to which the driven mechanism serves as a fly-wheel, revolves unl formly, the dummy shaft is alternately accelerated and retarded. Apart from this, the only reciprocating

motion is the small amount of oscillation which the comparatively light central disk undergoes. ; Another rotary engine of the Hooke’s-joint family is Mr Field- 1 See Farey’s Treatise on the Sieam Engine, p. 676. 2 A large number of proposed rotary engines are described, and their kine- matic relations to one another are discussed, in Reuleaux’s Ainematics of Machinery, translated by Prof. Kennedy. 3 Proc. Inst, Mech. Eng., March 1885. Ss 4 One of these, the disk-engine of Bishop, was used for a time in the printing office of The Times, but was discarded in 1857.

3 of me nes,

nes.

‘gonal sures of steam. enines,

=

MARINE ENGINES. |

ing’s,! in which a gimbal-ring and four eurved pistons take the place of the disk. ‘Iwo curved pistons are fixed on each side of the gimbal-ring, and as the shafts revolve these work in a correspond- ing pair of cavities, which may be called curved cylinders, fixed

to each shaft. A 212. Attempts have been made from time to time to devise

steam-engines of the turbine class, where rotation of a wheel is pro- duced either by reaction from a jet of escaping steam or by impact of a jet upon revolving blades. A revolving piece which is to extract even a respectable fraction of the kinetic energy of a steam jet must move with excessive velocity. In Mr C. A. Parsons’s steam-turbine this difficulty is overcome and a moderate degree of efficiency is secured by using a series of central-flow turbine wheels, in the form of perforated disks, all on one shaft, with fixed disks between which are perforated to serve as guide-blades. Steam

asses from end to end of the series, giving up a small portion of its energy to each, but retaining little at the end.

XII. Marine ENGINES,

213. The early steamers were fitted with paddle-wheels, and the engines used to drive them were for the most part modified beam-engines. Bell's "Comet" (§ 21) was driven by a species of inverted beam-engine, and another form of inverted beam, known as the side-lever engine, was for long a favourite with marine engineers. In the side-lever engine the cylinder was vertical, and the piston-rod pro- jected through the top. From a crosshead on the rod a pair of links, one on each side of the cylinder, led' down to the ends of a pair of horizontal beams or levers below, which oscillated about a fixed gudgeon at or near the middle of their length. The two levers were joined at their other ends by a crosstail, from which a connecting- rod was taken to the crank above. The side-lever engine is now obsolete.

In American practice, engines of the beam type, with a braced-beam supported on A frames above the deck, are still common in river-steamers and coasters.

914, An old form of direct-acting paddle-engine was the steeple-engine, in which the cylinder was set vertically below the crank. Two piston-rods projected through the top of the cylinder, one on each side of the shaft and of the crank. They were united by a crosshead sliding in vertical guides, and from this a return-connecting-rod led to the crank.

215. Modern paddle-wheel engines are usually of one of the following types. (1) In oscillating cylinder engines

- the cylinders are set under the crank-shaft, and the piston-

rods are directly connected to the cranks. The cylinders are supported on trunnions which give them the necessary freedom of oscillation to follow the movement of the crank. Steam is admitted through the trunnions to slide-valves on the sides of the cylinders. In some instances the mean position of the cylinders is inclined instead of vertical; and oscillating engines have been arranged with one cylinder before and another behind the shaft, both pistons working ononecrank. The oscillating cylinder type is best adapted for what would now be considered comparatively low pres- (2)

Diagonal engines are direct-acting engines of the ordinary connecting-rod type, with the cylinders fixed on an inclined bed and the guides sloping up towards the shaft.

216. When the screw-propeller began to take the place of paddle-wheels in ocean-steamers, the increased speed which it required was at first supplied by using spur-wheel gearing in conjunction with one of the forms of engines then usual in paddle steamers. After a time types of engine better suited to the screw were introduced, and were driven fast enough to be connected directly to the screw-shaft. The smallness of the horizontal space on either side of the shaft formed an obstacle to the use of horizontal engines, but this difficulty was overcome in several ways. In Penn's trunk-engine, still used in the

Atin, Proc. Inst. C.#., November 1885,

navy, the engine is shortened by attaching the connecting- rod directly to the piston, and using a hollow piston-rod, called a trunk, large enough to allow the connecting-rod to oscillate inside it. The trunk extends through both ends of the cylinder and forms a guide for the piston. It has the drawback of requiring very large stuffing-boxes, of wasting cylinder space, and of presenting a large surface of metal to alternate heating by steam and cooling by con- tact with the atmosphere. The use of high-pressure steam is likely to make the trunk-engine obsolete.

217. The return-connecting-rod engine is another hori- zontal form much used in the navy. It is a steeple-engine placed horizontally, with two, and in some cases four, piston-rods in each cylinder. The piston-rods pass clear of the shaft and the crank, and are joined beyond it ina guided crosshead, from which a connecting-rod returns.

Ordinary horizontal direct-acting engines with a short stroke and a short connecting-rod are also common in war- ships, where the horizontal is frequently preferred to the vertical type of engine for the sake of keeping

the machinery below the water-line. In horizontal marine engines the air-pump and condenser are generally placed on the oppo- site side of the shaft from the cylinder, which balances the weight and allows the air-pump to be driven direct.

218. In merchant ocean-steamers one general type of en- gine is universal, and the same type is now to an increasing extent adopted in naval practice. This is the inverted verti- cal direct-acting engine, generally with two or more cylinders placed side by side directly over the shaft. In exceptional cases a single cylinder has been used, with a fly-wheel on the shaft. Two, three, and four cylinders are common.

The most usual form of existing marine engine is the two- eylinder eompound arrangement, with cranks at right angles or nearly at right angles, of which figs. 135, 136, 187 (pp. 518-20) show a characteristic example (the engines of the s.s. ‘‘Tartar,” by Messrs John & James Thomson, Glasgow).

Fig. 135 is an end elevation, fig. 186 a longitudinal section through the centre of the engines, and fig. 187 a thwart-ship section through the condenser and air-pump. The cylinders are 50 and 94 inches in diameter, and the stroke is 5 feet. Both eylinders are fitted with liners, and are steam-jacketed. Double-ported slide- valves are used on both, and the high-pressure valve has a relief- ring. The crosshead guides are fitted on the side on which the

" "

hollow box behind the guiding surface, and cold water is kept circulating in this to prevent the guides from heating.

a The crank-shaft is of Vicker’s Zi” lj

steel, 174 inchesin diameter. The eondenser is in the place it usually has in engines of this type,— in the lower part of the back frame, with its tubes running horizon- tally from end to end of the engine. There are 1400 tubes, of 1 inch diameter and 14 inch pitch. The air-pumps are of the single- acting bucket kind, and are driven by a lever from the erosshead. Centrifugal

circulating pumps are used, driven by a pair of independent small vertical engines. The link-motion is worked by steam starting and reversing gear, which appears on the left side of the engine in fig. 185. These engines work with a boiler pressure of 90 tb, and indicate 3560 horse-power. Fig. 134 shows, on @ larger scale, the piston packing, which consists of a pair of floating rings, pressed out by a spiral spring behind them.

219. Two other arrangements of double compound (as distin- guished from triple-expansion) marine engines of the inverted vertical type require notice. One is the tandem arrangement, largely adopted in the steamers of the ‘‘ White Star” line. In these each crank is operated by an independent pair of eompound cylinders, the high-pressure eylinder being on top of the low-pressure eylinder, with one piston-rod common to both. The valves of both are worked by a single pair of eccentrics with a link-motion ; the valve-rod of the low-pressure cylinder extends through the top of its valve-chest, and is joined either directly or by a short lever with the valve-rod of the high-pressure eylinder. Generally two pairs of tandem cylinders are placed side by side, one pair abaft the other, to work on cranks at right angles, In exceptionally large engines three pairs have been used, working ou

Da

Fig. 134,—Piston Packing.

Trunk engiues.

Return- connect- ing-rod engines.

Horizon-

tal direct-

acting engines.

Inverted vertical engines,

Example.

Tandem vertical engines.

Three- cylinder arrange- ment.

Triple- expan- sion engines.

cranks 120° apart,! an arrangement greatly superior to that of two cranks in uniformity of effort on the shaft. To facilitate removing the pistons from the cylinders, the large cylinder has in some cases been set above the other.

220. The other arrangement of double compound marine engine has three cylinders set in line fore aud aft. The middle one is the high-pressure cylinder ; the other two receive steam from it, and form together the equivalent of one large low-pressure cylinder. The three work on cranks at 120° apart. Besides securing the advantage in uniformity of effort which three cranks have over two, this form avoids the use, in very powerful engines, of a low- pressure cylinder of excessive size. On the other hand, the three- cylinder form takes up more space, and has a larger number of working parts. In the most powerful engines that have yet been constructed this three-cylinder arrangement is followed. The “Umbria” and ‘‘ Etruria” have a 71-inch high-pressure cylinder between two 105-inch low-pressure cylinders, with a stroke of 6 feet. These engines, which were built just before the introduction of triple expansion, are supplied with steam at a pressure of 110 Ib by gauge, and indicate 14,300 horse-power.

In this and in the ordinary two-cylinder form of marine engine, the low-pressure valve-chest and the casing of the engine be- tween the cylinders form an intermediate receiver for the steam.

221. During the last two or three years a great advance has taken place in marine engineering by the general introduction of triple-expansiou engines, and by an increase in steam pressure which the system of triple expansion makes practicable. In 1874 the steamer ‘‘ Propontis” was fitted with a set of three-crank triple-expansion engines, de- signed by Mr A. C. Kirk. The experiment was prevented from being fully successful by the failure of the boilers, which were of a special type. Another experiment with triple engines in the yacht ‘‘Isa” in 1877 prepared the way for their application to regular ocean service. In 1882 the steam- ship ‘‘Aberdeen,” with triple

engines, de- signed by Mr Kirk, to work with steam of 125 ib pressure, supplied from double-ended steel boilers of the ordinary marine type, demon- strated the advantage and safety of the system. Since then its use has become general in new steamers, and in many cases the older double engines are being removed to give place to engines of the triple-expansion type, with the effect of reducing the consumption of coal by about 25 per cent.?

222. In the most common ar- rangement of triple-expansion |)# engines three cylinders are ranged in line, fore and aft, working on cranks at 120° apart. Piston-valves are generally pre- ferred, and these are not un- cominonly worked by some form of radial valve-gear instead of the ordinary link-motion. An advantage of this is that the space which would be taken up by eccentrics upon the shaft is saved, and longer main bearings are in consequence possible, without spreading the engines in the fore-and-aft direction. An objectionable feature of the three-cylinder triple engine is its length; on the other hand, the high speed and high pressure which are features of modern practice make long bearings indis- pensable,

1 See description of the engines of the ‘‘ City of Rome,” with three 46-inch and three 86-inch cylinders, with a stroke of 6 feet, working up to 11,890 I. H. P., Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1880. 3

2 The rapid progress of the system of triple expansion may be judged from the fact mentioned by Mr W. Parker of Lloyds in a recent paper (Engineering, July 30, 1886), that, out of 199 engines then being built for merchant steamers, 128 sets were of the triple-expansion type. For war- ships also triple engines are bmn mt bee up to aver “ipod nic no For a discussion of several import-

nt points in the design of triple-expansion engines, see r by R. i Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., Oct. 1886, r ae ane

STEAM-ENGINE

Se Se

[wa RINK

223. To avoid the length of the three-crank engine, Mr Brock and others have made engines of the triple-expansion type with _ two cranks, by putting the high and the intermediate pressure cylinders above and tandem with two low-pressure cylinders. Mr

Brock has also built daurieylindbe quadruple-expansion Qyaq.

working with the same pressure of steam.

224. Steam-jackets are retained by some but not by all builders ; where they are employed the boiler steam is usually reduced in pressure before admission to the intermediate and low-pressure cylinder jackets and to the receiver-jackets. The feed-water is frequently heated to about 200° F. by Weir's plan of condensing in it, by common injection, a quantity of steam taken from the second receiver; this has the advantage of freeing it of air, and of preventing local chilling in the boiler. In present-day prac- tice the boiler pressure, for a triple- expansion engine, ranges from 120 to 170 tb per square inch (by gauge), and it does not appear that any material increase of this is possible without a complete de- parture from the present type of marine boiler, On the other hand, with- out a material increase of pressure there is little advantage in quadruple expansion.

SDOGOGSOOOOOO S|

SSO

mest i marine engines by S. Hall sers, in 1831, but was not brought into general use until much later. Pre- vious to this it had been necessary, in order to avoid the accumulation of too dense brine in the boiler, to blow off a por-

Fig. 135,—End Elevation of Marine Engine.

tion of the brine at short intervals and replace it by sea water, a process which of course involved much waste of heat. By the use of surface condensers it became possible to use the same portion of water over and over again. The very freedom of the condensed water from dissolved mineral substances was for a time an obstacle to the adoption of surface

condensers, for it was found that the boiler, no longer protected by a deposit of scale, became rapidly corroded through the action of acids formed by the decomposition of the lubricating oil. This objection was overcome by introducin

a sufficient amount of salt watcr to allow some scale to form, an

the use of surface condensers soon became universal on steamers plying in sea water. The marine condenser consists of a multitude

engines of a similar form (with two cranks), and esti- rypla. mates that they show an economy in coal consumption Pansion | of 5 per cent. as compared with triple-expansion engines engines, |

225. Surface condensa- Surface tion was introduced in conden

ENGINES. |

of tubes, generally of brass, about # of an inch in diameter. Through these cold sca-water is made to circulate, while the steam is brought into contact with their outside surfaces. In some cases, especially in Admiralty practice, cold water circulates outside the tubes and the steam passes inside.

226, The ordinary marine engine has four pumps:—the air-pump, which is made large enough to serve in case injection instead of surface-coudensation should at. any time be resorted to; the feed- pump; the circulating-pump, which maintains a current of sea- water through the tubes of the condenser; and the bilge-pump, which discharges any water accumulated by leakage or otherwise in the bilge of the ship. The pumps are so arranged that in the event of a serious leak the circulating-pump ean also draw its sup- ply from the bilge. In most engines, especi-

x

over 1000 feet per minute. The economy in coal consumption brought about by the change from double-expansion engines work- ing at (say) 80 Ib to triple engines at 160 Ib or more is variously estimated at from 18 to 25 per cent. Much of this is due simply to the increased range of temperature through which the working substance is carried ; but it appears that the actual performance of the triple engine is better than that of the double compound ina ratio greater than that by which its ideal efficiency—as an engine using a wider range of temperature—exceeds that of the other; and this is to be ascribed to the same causes as i have been already dis- | cussed in speaking of the advantage of the compound over the simple engine. Apart from its greater eco- nomy of coal, the triple engine owes some of its practical success to the mechanical superiority of three driving cranks over two.

ally those of less re- cent construction, the four pumps are placed.

228. The relation of Relation weight of machinery of weight to power developed, to power.

behind the condenser, and are worked by a single crosshead driven by a lever, the other end of which is con- nected by a short link with one of the cross- heads of the engine. It is now becoming common to usea smal! engine, distinct from the main engine, to drive the feed-pump, and to supply circulat- ing water by a centri- fugal pump also driven by a separate engine. 227. Inthe improve- ment of the marine en- gine two points are note- worthy,—reduction in the rate of consump- tion of cval per horse- ower, and reduction in the weight of the machine (comprising the engine proper and the boilers) per horse- power. The second consideration isinsome cases of even more moment than the first, especially in war-ships. Progress has been made, in both respects, by increase of steam pressure, and, in the second respect espe- cially, by increase of piston speed. Fifty years ago the boilers of marine engines made steam at a pressure of about 5 Ib per square inch above that of the atmosphere. By 1860 compound engines were in use with pressures ranging from 25 to 40 tb. In 1872 statistics collected for nineteen ocean steamers showed that the average con- sumption of coal was then 2°11 tb per H.P. per hour, the boiler- pressure 45 to 60 Ib, and the mean piston speed about 375 feet per minute.’ These were for the most part two-

cylinder compound engines of the vertical inverted type. Nine years later statistics for thirty engines of the same type showed a consumption of 1°83 Tb of coal, a mean boiler pressure of 774 tb, and a mean piston speed of 467 ~ feet per minnte.? In recent triple-expansion engines the pressure is as hgh as 165 Ib; a piston speed of 700 or 800 feet per minute is not uncommon in naval engines, and in some cases it has risen to

ZZ

1 Sir F. J. Bramwell, Proc, Inst. Mech. Eng., 1872. 2 F.C. Marshail, Proc. Jnst. Mech. Eng., 1881.

Fig. 136.—Longitudinal Section of Marine Engine.

and the causes which ® affect this ratio, have p, receutly been discussed ‘ by Messrs Marshalland $ Weighton,*from whose paper the following figures are taken. Be- » fore the introduction of triple expansion and forced draught the weight of engines in the mercantile marine, including the boilers and the water in them, was 480 tb per I.H.P. In the navy this was reduced, chiefly by the use of lighter framing, with the object of minimizing weight, to 3601b. Triple-engines of the merchant type, without forced dranght, areonly slightly lighter than double engines ; but in naval practice, where forced draught, greatly increased speed, and the nse of steel for frames and working parts have combined to reduce the ratio of weight to power, a marked reduction in weight is apparent. A recent set of vertical triple engines, whicli with natural draught indicate 2200 H.P., and with a draught forced by pressure in the stokehole equal to 2 inches of water indi- cate 4000 H.P., weigh under the latter condi- tion (along with the boilers) only 155 tb per I.H.P. In another set, in which the draught is forced by a pres- sure of 3 inches, and the cylinders are only 153, 24, and 37 inchies in diameter, with a stroke of 16 inches, the indicated horse-power is 4200, and the weight of engines and boilers is 136 tb per I.H.P. In these the boilers are of the locomotive type, and the mean piston speed is 1066 feet per minute. Even these light weights are sur- passed in smaller engines, such as those of torpedo boats. In so far as this immense development of power from a small weight of machinery is duc to high piston speed, it is secured without loss —indeed with some gain—of thermodynamic efficiency ; forced

—

Th

draught, however, without a corresponding extension of the heating el ma ee A a A Se

3 Marshall and Weighton, Proc. North-East Coast Jnst. Engineers and Ship-butiders, 1886. Loc, cit.

Loco- motive engines.

Driving- wheels.

Inside and outside cylinder engines,

520

surface, leads to a less efficient expenditure of fuel. With a given type of engine there is a certain ratio of expansion which gives a minimum in the ratio of weight to power ; when this ratio of expan- sion is exceeded the engines have to be enlarged to an extent that

Sb } Sop Ob ° 00’S

[900 GG9G00

Be

0

ei 5°,

gocob co?

°

0 0% 2 ‘0%0)

oP,

x

°0%o)

°

2.

oD.

Fia. 137.—Section through Condenser and Air-Pump.

more than counterbalances the saving in boiler weight; when a less ratio of expansion is used the boilers have to be enlarged to an extent that more than counterbalances the reduction of weight in the engine proper.!

XIII. Locomotrvz Enatnes.

229. The ordinary locomotive consists of a pair of direct acting horizontal or nearly horizontal engines, fixed in a rigid frame under the front end of a boiler of the type described in § 133, and coupled to the same shaft by cranks at right angles, each with a single slide-valve worked by a link-motion, or by a form of radial gear. The engine is non-condensing, except in special cases, and the exhaust steam, delivered at the base of the funnel through a blast-pipe, serves to produce a draught of air through the furnace. In some instances a portion of the exhaust steam, amounting to about one-fifth of the whole, is diverted to heat the feed-water. In tank engines the feed-water is carried in tanks on the engine itself ; in other engines it is carried behind in a tender.

230. On the shaft are a pair of driving-wheels, whose frictional adhesion to the rails furnishes the necessary tractive force. In some engines a single pair of driving- wheels are used ; in many more a greater tractive force is secured by having two equal driving-wheels on each side, connected by a coupling-rod between pins on the outside of the wheels. In goods engines a still greater proportion of the whole weight is utilized to give tractive force

by coupling three and even four wheels on each side. These arrangements are distinguished by the terms “ four- coupled,” ‘‘six-coupled,” and “ eight-coupled ” applied to the engines. In inside-cylinder engines the cylinders are placed side by side within the frame of the engine, and their connecting-rods work ou cranks in the driving shaft. In outside-cylinder engines the cylinders are spread apart far enough to lie outside the frame of the engine, and to work on crank-pins on the outsides of the driving wheels. This dispenses with the cranked axle, which is the weakest part of a locomotive engine. Owing to the frequent

10n the general subject of marine engines, reference should be made to Mr A. E, Seaton’s Manual of Marine Engineering ; to Mr R. Sennett’s Treatise on the Mar- tne Steam Engine; andto Mr W.H. Maw’s Recent Practice in Marine Engineering.

alternation of strain to which it is subject, a locomotive crank axle is peculiarly liable to rupture, and has to be removed after a certain amount of use.

In some locomotives the leading wheels are coupled to Ip J driving wheels behind them, but it is now generally pre- whee || ferred to have under the front of the, engine two or four smaller wheels which do not form part of the driving | system. These are carried in a bogie, that is, a small truck 4 upon which the front end of the boiler rests by a swivel- pin or plate which allows the bogie to turn, so as to adapt itself to curves in the line, and thus obviate the grinding of tyres and danger of derailment which would be caused — by using a long rigid wheel-base. The bogie appears to have been of English origin ;? it was brought into general use in America, and is now common in English as well ag in American practice. Instead of a four-wheeled bogie,

a single pair of leading wheels are also used, carried bya Bissel pony truck, which has a swing-bolster pivoted by a Pony radius bar about a point some distance beliind the axis of truck, the wheels. This has the advantage of combining lateral with radial movement of the wheels, both being required if the wheel base is to be properly accommodated to the curve. Another

method of getting lateral and radial Radial freedom is the plan used by Mr Webb of carrying the axle leading axle in a box curved to the arc of a circle, and free to slide laterally for a short distance, under the con- trol of springs, in curved guides.®

231. In inside-cylinder engines the slide-valves are fre- Valves, quently placed back to back in a single valve-chest between the cylinders. The width of the engine within the frame leaves little room for them there, and they are reduced to the flattest possible form, in some cases with split ports, half above and half below a partition in a central hori- zontal plane. In some of Mr Stroudley's engines the valves are below the cylinders, with faces sloping down towards the front, while the cylinders themselves slope slightly up. In many engines the valves work on hori- zontal planes above the cylinders ; this position is specially suitable when Joy's or some other form of radial gear is used instead of the link-motion. Radial valve-gears have the advantage, which is of considerable moment in inside-cylinder engines, that the part of the shafts' length which would otherwise be needed for eccentrics is : available to increase the width of main bearings and crank-pins, and to ! strengthen the crank-cheeks. Wal- | shaert's gear is very extensively used on Continental locomotives, and Joy's ! % has now been applied toa large num- 4 ber of British engines. tp

232. In a powerful locomotive of '— the ordinary type the cylinders are 17 to 19 inches in diameter, with a stroke of about 26 inches. 'The steam pressure is 130 to 175 hb. The horse-power ranges up to about 700. A passenger engine for express | service has driving-wheels from 7 to i 8 feet in diameter, and weighs, with- out the tender, about 40 tons. Of this nearly 15 tons is borne by each + driving axle.4 i

Fig. 138 shows a half section } through the smoke-box and one cyl- F inder of an inside-cylinder engine (of the Midland Railway), and illustrates how in an engine of

Tnside-

1G. 188.—Inside-Cylinder eylinder | Loeomotive. engine,

2 Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., vol. liii. 8, p. 50. 3 Proc. Inst. Mech, Eng., 1883. 4 For aceount of many details in recent English practice in locomotive building, reference should be made to a valuable paper by Mr Stroudley, and a discus-

sion upon it (Afin, Proc. Inst. C. E., 1xxxi.).

this type the cylinders are situated with regard to the frame, which consists of a single pair of steel plates, ex- tending from end to end and united by other transverse plates, one of which, called the motion-plate, gives support to the guide-bars, and another holds the draw-bar. Another form of frame is built up of two longitudinal plates on each side. In the engine illustrated the valves are above the cylinders, and are worked by Joy's gear. A bogie truck ap- pears in section below the engine. S is the steam-pipe, and B the blast-pipe, which is tapered in the fore-and-aft plane. 933. The outside-cylinder type is adopted by several British makers; in America it is universal. There the cylinders are in castings which are bolted together to form a saddle on which the bottom of the smoke-box sits. The slide-valves are on the tops of the cylinders, and are worked through rocking levers from an ordi- nary link-motion. Other features by which American practice is dis- tinguished are the use of bars in- stead of plates for the frames, of cast-iron wheels with chilled rims instead of wrought-iron wheels with 5 steel rims shrunk or forced on, and : steel fire-boxes and wrought-iron ; tubes instead of copper fire-boxes ; and brass tubes. Fig. 139, which is a half section through one cyl- inder of an American locomotive, by the Balwin Company of Phila- delphia, shows the position of the cylinders and valves. 234. Locomotive engines have been compounded in

Fic. 139.—American Outside- Cylinder Locomotive.

several ways. In 1876 M. A. Mallet! introduced, on the Bayonne and Biarritz Railway, a type of compound loco- motive in which one small

high-pressure cylinder and one large low-pressure cylinder were used in place of the two equal cylinders of a common locomotive. Outside cylinders were used in the first instance, but Mallet's system is also applied to inside-cylinder engines. The pipe from the high to the low-pressure cylinder takes a winding course through the smoke-box ; this gives a sufficient volume of intermediate receiver, and also dries the steam before it enters the large cylinder. A reducing valve is provided through which steam of a pressure lower than that of the boiler can be admitted direct to the low-pressure cylinder to facilitate starting. The reversing gear is arranged to act on both cylinders by one movement, and also to permit a separate adjustment of the cut-off in each. Engines on Mallet's system have been successfully used on other Con- tinental railways and in India, in some instances by con- version from the non-compound form.? His plan has the advantage of permitting this (in certain cases), and of re- quiring scarcely any more working parts than are needed in a common locomotive ; but it gives an unsymmetrical engine. He has also proposed an engine with four cylinders,—one high-pressure cylinder tandem with one low-pressure cylinder on each side. Another symmetrical form has been used, in which a pair of outside high- pressure cylinders are compounded with a pair of inside low-pressure cylinders.

235. The most important experiment yet made in the compounding of locomotives is that which Mr F. W. Webb, of the London and North-Western Railway, has been conducting on a large scale since 1881.3 In Mr Webb's

system three cylinders are used. Two equal high-pressure

;

|

tO O Za-

Sees

Fie. 140.—Webb's Compound Locomotive.

cylinders are fixed outside the frames, and drive the rear driving axle by crank-pins at right angles to one another. A single low-pressure cylinder of very large size is set beneath the smoke-box, and drives a crank in the middle of the forward driving axle. The driving axles are not coupled, and the phase-relation of the low-pressure to the high-pressure stroke is liable to alter through unequal slip on the part of the wheels, This, however, is of no material consequence, on account of the large size of the intermediate receiver and the uniformity with which the two high-pressure cylinders deliver steam to it. The receiver is formed, as in M. Mallet's arrangement, by lead- ing long connecting pipes through the smoke-box. All three slide-valves are worked by Joy's gear. Those of the low-pressure cylinders are placed below the cylinders (an arrangement which has the advantage of letting the valve fall away from the port-face when the engine is running down hill with the steam-valve closed); the valve of the large cylinder is above it. The arrangement is completely symmetrical ; it has the important mechanical advantage of dispensing with coupling rods, while retaining the

greater tractive power of four drivers; only one axle is cranked, and that with a single crank in the centre, which leaves ample room for long bearings. A plan of Mr Webb's engine, half in section, is given in fig. 140. The results of Mr Webb's experiments have been, in his judg- ment, so satisfactory that for express passenger service he is now building engines only of the compound type. In some recent examples the small cylinders are 14 inches, and the large cylinder 30 inches in diameter, with a stroke of 24 inches, and the boiler pressure is 175 ib. Engines of the same type are also being introduced in India, South America, and the continent of Europe.

236. Experiments on the saving of fuel by compound- ing locomotives point to an economy of from 10 to 20 per cent. It may be expected, for reasons which have been discussed above, that a compound engine, even when working at the high speed of a locomotive, will have a somewhat higher efficiency than a non-compound engine,

1 Proc. Inst. Mech, Eng., 1879.

2 Von Borries, Ztschr. des Ver. deutscher Ingenieure, 1880; Sandiford, Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1886.

3 See Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1883 ; also Engineering, May 1885,

XXIT. — 66

Com- pound loco- motives

Webb’s system.

Tramway

loco- motives.

Fireless loco- motive.

522

But, apart from this, an important merit of the compound system is that, while it absolutely prevents the grade of expansion from being reduced below a certain minimum, depending on the ratio of cylinder volumes, it also permits a comparatively high degree of expansion, which in an ordinary locomotive would involve the use of specially large cylinders and a separate cut-off valve. Experiments on the steam-jacketing of locomotive cylinders have not hitherto been attended by success.

237. Tramway locomotives for the most’ part resemble railway locomotives in the general features of their design. The boiler is of the usual locomotive type. A pair of cylinders in front, either inside or outside the frames, are connected directly to the hindmost of two coupled driving axles. Owing to the smallness of the driving-wheels, the axles lie near the road, and the cylinders are set sloping at a considerable angle upwards to keep them clear of dirt. To prevent the discharge of steam into the atmosphere, the exhaust steam is often led into an atmospheric con- denser, consisting of a large number of pipes set on the top of the engine, and exposed to free contact with the air. In some instances the common locomotive type is widely departed from: a mixed vertical and horizontal boiler is used, and the engine is connected to the driving axle by worm-wheel or other gear, or by a rocking lever between the connecting-rod and the crank.!

238. In the “ fireless ” tramway locomotive of M. Léon Francq, a reservoir which takes the place of an ordinary boiler is charged at the beginning of the journey with water heated under pressure by injecting steam from stationary boilers at a pressure of 15 atmospheres. The thermal capacity of the water is sufficient—without further addition of heat—to supply steam to the engine during the journey, at a pressure which gradually falls off.2. The system has not come into general use.

239. Several forms of tramway engine have been devised in which the motive power is supplied by compressed air.® In the Mekarski system the compressed air, on its way from the reservoir to the cylinders, passes through a vessel containing hot water and steam under pressure (charged, as in Francq’s system, by injecting steam at a station). In this way the air is heated, and may then expand in the

by Mr R. W. Thomson’s plan of surrounding each wheel

with a thick tyre of india-rubber, protected on the outside

by an armour of small plates. In most modern traction- engines the rim is itself rigid, but is connected to the nave through a system of springs which allow it to take up an eccentric position, and the tyres have skew bars on the surface to increase their adhesion to the road.

XIV. Arr AND Gas ENGINES.

[AIR AND Gag

241. Under this head we may include all heat-engines Aira;

in which the working substance is air, or the gaseous pro-gas_ | ducts of the combustion of fuel and air, whether the fuel gine

be itself solid, liquid, or gaseous. When air alone forms the working substance, it receives heat from an external furnace by conduction through the walls of a containing vessel, as the working substance in the steam-

engine takes in heat through the shell of the boiler. An engine sup- plied with heat in this way may be called an external- combustion engine, to distinguish it from a very important class of engines in which the combustion which supplies heat occurs within a closed chamber containing the work- ing substance. The ordinary coal-gas explosive engine is the most common type of ¢nternal-combustion engine.

242. Compared with an engine using saturated steam, air and gas engines have the important advantage that the temperature and the pressure of the working substance are independent of one another. Hence it becomes pos- sible to use an upper limit of temperature greatly higher than in the ordinary steam-engine, and if the lower limit is not correspondingly raised an increase of thermodynamic efficiency results. It is true that the same advantage might be obtained in the case of steam, by excessive super- heating; but this would mean substantially the conversion of the engine into the type we are now considering, the working substance being then steam gas.

243. A simple, thermodynamically perfect form of external- combustion air-engine would be one following Carnot's cycle (§ 40), in which heat is received while the air is at the highest tempera- ture 7,, the air meanwhile expanding isothermally. After this the supply of heat is stopped, and the air is allowed to expand adia- batically until its temperature falls to the lower extreme 7» At this it is compressed isothermally, giving out heat, and finally the cycle is completed by adiabatic compression, which restores the initial high temperature 7.

cylinder without having its temperature lowered to an

mer , iabati i ing the Stirlin objectionable degree. 244. In place of adiabatic expansion as a means of changing the ptiring |

temperature from 7, to rz we may follow Stirling's plan (§ 54) of air-

Traction engines.

240. Steam road-locomotives or traction-engines have usually a boiler of the locomotive type, with a cylinder or compound pair of cylinders,

generally on the top, driving a shaft from which motion is taken by a gearing chain or spur-wheels toa single driving axle at the fire-box end. The engine is steered by means of a leading axle, whose direction is controlled by a hand-wheel and chain-gear. To facilitate rapid turning the driving-wheels are connected to their axle by a differential or compensating gear which allows them to revolve at different speeds. This is a set of four bevel-wheels like White's dynamometer coupling : the outside bevel-wheels are attached to the driving- wheels ; the intermediate ones, which gear with these, turn in bearings in a revolving wheel driven by the engine. So long as both driving-wheels are equally resisted both are driven at the same speed, but if one is retarded (as the inner wheel is in turning a curve) it acts to some extent as a fulcrum to the bevel gear, and the outer wheel takes a greater share of the motion. An important feature in traction engines is the elasticity of the driving-wheels. Many devices have been employed, partly to give the wheels an extended tread, or arc of contact with the ground, and partly to avoid shocks in passing overrough ground. Both objects are accomplished

1 See Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., vol. xxix., 1884; also Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1880. 2 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1879. 3 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1878, 1881.

storing the heat in a re- engine. ||

generator, from which it will afterwards be taken up and so produce the elevation of temperature from 2 to 7, which in the above cycle was per-formed by adiabatic com- pression.

Stirling's air-engine, in which the action approximated to the perfect cycle described in § 54, is diagramatic- ally shown in fig. 141. A is a closed vessel containing air, externally heated by a furnace beneath it. A pipe from the top of A leads to the working cyl- inder B. At the top of A isa refr-gerator C, consisting of pipes through which cold water circulates. In there is a displacer plunger D, which is driven vy the engine; when this raised the air in A is heated, whereas when D is lowered the air in A is brought into contact with the refriger- ator and cooled. On its way from the bottom to the top of A, or vice versa, the air must pass through an annular lining of wire-gauze BE. This is the regenerator. At the beginning of the cycle D is up.

The air is then receiving heat at 7,, and is expanding isothermally; this is the first stage in § 54. Then the plunger D descends. The at

Vitis YW: YW

Yo Wi Yi Wil std ee a AU UAY WOWIW. Fie. 141.—Stirling's Air-

Engine.

Z

is driven through the regenerator, where it deposits heat, and its —

temperature on emerging at the top is tz. Next, the working:

k -&

fjon's

on.

|

ENGINES. |

piston makes its down-stroke (in the actual engine the working cylinder was double-acting, another heating vessel, precisely like A, being connected with the cylinder B above the piston); this com- presses the air isothermally, the heat produced by compression being taken up by C. Finally the plunger is raised, and the working air again passes through the regenerator, taking up the -heat it left there, and rising tor, The theoretical indicator diagram has been given in fig. 13.

245. The actual forms in which Stirling's engine was used are described in two patents by R. & J. Stirling (1827 and 18401). An important feature in them was that the air was compressed (by means of a pump) to a pressure greatly above that ~~of the atmo~~ sphere. Stirling's cycle is theoretically perfect whatever the density

of the working air, and compression did not in his case increase what

may be called the theoretical thermodynamic efficiency. It did, however, very greatly increase the mechanical efficiency, and also, what is of special importance, it increased the amount of power yielded by an engine of given size. To see this it is sufficient to consider that with compressed air a greater amount of heat was dealt with in each stroke of the engine, and thercfore a greater amount of work was produced. Practically it also increased the thermodynamic efficiency by reducing the ratio of the heat wasted by external conduction and radiation to the whole heat.

A double-acting Stirling engine of 50 I.H.P., used in 1848 at the Dundee foundry, appears to have realized an efficiency of 0°8, and, notwithstanding very inadequate means of heating the air, con- sumed only 1°7 fb of coal per J.H.P. per hour.? This engine re- mained at work for three years, but was finally abandoned on account of the failure of the heating vessels. In some forms of Stirling's engine the regenerator was a separate vesscl; in others the plunger D was itself constructed to serve as regenerator by filling it with wire-gauze and leaving holes at top and bottom for the passage of the air through it.

246. Another mode of using the regenerator was introduced in America by Ericsson, in an engine which also failed, partly because the heating surfaces became burnt, and partly because their area was insufficient. In Ericsson's engine the temperature of the working substance is changed (by passing through the regenerator) while the pressure remains constant. Cold air is compressed by a pump into a receiver, from which it passes through a regenerator into the working cylinder. In so passing it absorbs heat from the regene- ratorand expands. The air in the cylinder is then further expanded by taking in heat from a furnace under the cylinder. The cycle is completed by the discharge of the air through the regenerator. The indicator diagram approximates to a form bounded by two isother- mals and two lines of constant pressure.

247. Externally-heated air-engines are now employed only for very small powers—from a fraction of 1 H.P. up to about 3 H.P. Powerful engines of this type are impracticable on account of their relatively enormous bulk. Those that are now manufactured resemble the original Stirling engine very

closely in the main features of their action, and comprise essentially the same organs.

248. Internal-combustion engines form a far more important class of motors. The earliest example of this class appears to have been the hot-air engine of Sir George Cayley,® of which Wenham's® and Buekett's' engines are recent forms. In these engines coal or coke is burnt under pressure in a closed chamber, to which the fuel is fed through a species of air-lock. Air for combustion is supplied by a compressing pump, and the engine is governed by means of a distributing valve which supplies a greater or less proportion of the air below the fire as the engine runs slow or fast. The products of combustion, whose volume is increased by their rise in tempera- ture, pass into a working cylinder, raisiug the piston. When a certain fraction of the stroke is over the supply of hot gas is stopped, and the gases in the cylinder expand, doing more work and becoming reduced in temperature. During the return stroke they are discharged into the atmosphere, and the pump takes in a fresh supply of air. Fig. 142 is a diagram section of the Buckett engine. A is the working piston, the form of which is such as to protect the tight sliding surface (at the top) from contact with the hot gases; B is the compressing pump, C the valve by which the governor regulates the rate at which fuel is consumed, and D the air-lock through which fuel is supplied.

249. In engines of this class the degree to which the action is thermodynamically efficient depends very largely on the amount of cooling the gases undergo by adiabatic or nearly adiabatic expansion under the working piston. Without a large ratio of expansion the thermodynamic advantage of a high initial tem-

1 The 1827 patent is reproduced in F, Jenkin's Lecture on Gas and Caloric

Engines, Inst. Civ. Eng., Heat Lectures, 1883-84, See also Min. Proc. Inst. C.E, 1845 and 1854,

2 See Rankine's Steam Engine, p. 367. The consumption per brake H.P. was much greater,

3 For a diagram of Ericsson’s engine see Rankine’s Steam Engine, or Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1873,

4 For description of Robinson’s, Bailey’s, and Rider’s hot-air engines see F. Jenkin’s lecture, loc. cit,

5 Nicholson’s Art Journal, 1807.

7 6 Proc. lst, Mech. Eng., 18738.

F, Jenkin, Joc. eit, Fig, 142 is taken from this paper.

was that of Lenoir (1860).

perature is lost ; but, as the gases have to be discharged at atmo- spheric pressure, a large ratio of expansion is possible only when there is much initial compression. Compression is therefore an

Fig, 142.—Buckett Engine.

essential condition, without which a heat-engine of this type can- not be made efficient. It is also, as has already been pointed out, essential in all air-engines to the development of a fair amount of power by an engine of moderate bulk.

250. Internal-combustion engines using solid fuel have hitherto been little used, and that only for small powers. Several small engines employ liquid fuel (namely, petroleum) injected in a state of spray, or even vaporized before entering the combustion-chamber. In some forms, of which the Brayton petroleum engine is a type, combustion occurs as the fuel is injeeted ; in others the action approaches closely that of gas-engines, that is to say, of engines in which fuel (generally coal-gas) is supplied in a perfectly gaseous state, and is burnt in a more or less explosive manner. These last are the only heat-engines that have as yet entered into serious competition with steam-engines.

251. The earliest gas-engine to be brought into practical use

During the first part of the stroke air and gas, in proportions suitable for combustion, were drawn into the cylinder. At about half-stroke the inlet valve closed, and the mixture was immediately exploded by an electric spark. The heated products of combustion then did work on the piston during the remainder of the forward stroke, and were expelled during the back stroke. The engine was double-acting, and the cylinder was prevented from becoming excessively heated by a casing through which water was kept circulating. The water-jacket has been re- tained in nearly all later gas-engines.

An indicator diagram from a Lenoir engine is shown in fig. 143.8 After explosion the line falls, partly from expansion, and partly from the cooling action of the cylinder walls ; on the other hand, its level is to some extent maintained by the phenomenon of after-burn- ing, which will be discussed later. In this engine, chiefly because there was no compres- Fig. 143.—Lenoir Engine sion, the heat removed by the water-jacket Diagram. bore an exceedingly large proportion to the whole heat, and the efficiency was comparatively low; about 95 cubic feet of gas were used per horse-power per hour. Hugon's engine, introduced five years later, was a non-compressive engine very similar to Lenoir's. A novel feature in it was the injection of a jet of cold water to keep the cylinder from becoming too hot. These engines are now obsolete ; the type they belonged to, in which the mixture is not compressed before explosion, is now represented by one small engine—Bischoff's—the mechanical simplicity of which atones for its comparatively wasteful action in certain cases where but little power is required.

252. In 1866 Otto and Langen introduced a curious en- gine,® which, as to economy of gas, was distinctly superior to its predecessors. Like them it did not use compression. The explosion occurred early in the stroke, in a vertical cylinder, under a piston which was free to rise without doing work on the engine shaft. The piston rose with great velocity, so that the expansion was much more nearly adiabatic than in earlier engines. Then after the piston had reached the top of its range the gases cooled, and their pressure fell below that of the atmosphere ; the piston consequently

8 Slade, Jour. Franklin Inst., 1866. » Proc. inst. Mech. Eng., 1875.

Petro- leum engines.

Gas- engines,

Lenoir.

Hugon.

Bischoff,

Otto and

Langen.

Otto’s engine.

Clerk’s engine.

came down, this time in gear with the shaft, and doing work. The burnt gases were discharged during the last part of the down-stroke. A friction-coupling allowed the piston to be automatically thrown out of gear when rising, and into gear when descending. This “atmospheric” gas engine used about 40 cubic feet of gas per horse-power per hour, and came into somewhat extensive use in spite of its noisy and spasmodic action. After a few years it was displaced by a greatly improved type, in which the direct action of Lenoir’s engine was restored, but the gases were compressed before ignition.

253. Dr Otto’s “silent” engine, introduced in 1876, was the first successful motor of the modern type. It isa single-acting engine, generally horizontal in form, and the explosive mixture is compressed in the working cylinder itself. This is done by making the cycle of the action extend through two revolutions of the engine. During the first forward stroke gas and air are drawn in by the piston. During the first back-stroke the mixture is compressed into a large clearance space at the end of the cylinder. The mixture

is then ignited, and the second forward stroke (which is the only working stroke in the cycle) is performed under the pressure of the heated pro- ducts of combustion. During the second back-stroke the products are discharged, with the exception of so much as remains in the clearance space, which serves to dilute the explosive mixture in the next cycle. The principal parts of Otto's engine (as made by Messrs Crossley) are shown in the diagram section, fig. 144. The cylinder is kept

Fig, 144.—Otto's Gas Engine.

cool by a water-jacket AA. B is the clearance space into which the mixture is compressed before explosion. Its volume is usually about two-thirds of the stroke, or 40 per cent. of the whole volume to which the gases afterwards expand. Cis the exhaust-valve, which is opened during the second back-stroke of each cycle. Gas and air are admitted at D, through a slide-valve E, which reciprocates once in each complete cycle of two revolutions. This slide-valve is shown toa larger scale in fig. 145, in the position it occupies while gas meen ford oy IS entering from g and air from LZiidded aia Ga. 1. To ignite the mixture a gas- \ "CAS jet is kept burning atc. In the a slide-valve there is an igniting pe port d, which is supplied with gas from a groove in the cover. As the slide moves towards the right, the igniting port d carries a flame from c¢ to D. Just before reaching D a little of the compressed mixture from the cylinder enters the igniting port by a small open- ing which does not appear in the figure, and by the time D is reached the contents of d are so much raised in pres- sure by their own combustion that a tongue of flame shoots into the cylinder, firing the mixture there. The speed is regulated by a centrifugal governor, which cuts off the sup- ply of gas when the speed exceeds a certain limit. In some small Otto engines of recent construction the inertia of a reciprocating piece is used instead of the inertia of revolving pieces to effect the same end. 254. In Mr Clerk's engine the cycle of operations is essentially the same as in Otto's, but a charging cylinder

SS

i

is introduced, with the effect of allowing an explosion to take place in the working cylinder once in every revolution, — As in Otto's, there is a large clearance space behind the piston, and the mixture is compressed into this space by the backward movement of the working piston. The peculiar- ity of the engine lies in the manner in which the charge is introduced. As the piston advances after an explosion it uncovers exhaust ports in the sides of the cylinder, close to the end of its forward stroke. "While it is passing the dead-point there the plunger of the charging cylinder (which has meanwhile taken in a mixture of gas and air) delivers this mixture into the cylinder, driving the products of the previous combustion out of the cylinder through the exhaust ports. The charging cylinder is so arranged that the first part of the charge consists almost wholly of air,gnd this is followed by the explosive mixture of gas and air. The working piston then returns, closing the exhaust ports and compressing the mixture, which is – ignited after compression by means of a slide-valve similar to Otto's. In Otto's engine the explosive mixture is diluted, and the sharpness of the explosion thereby reduced, by the residue of burnt products which fill the clearance space at the end of the discharge stroke. In Clerk's en- gine the mixture is diluted by an excess of air. It does not appear that this difference has any material effect on the action.

255. Over 20,000 Otto engines are now in use, of power ranging up to about 40 H.P. Besides the engines which have been named, others are manufactured in which the operations are essentially of the same kind, though in some cases the mechanical details are widely varied. In one of these, Mr Atkinson's ingenious '" differen- tial" engine, the working chamber consists of the space between two pistons working in one cylinder. During exhaust the pistons come close together ; they recede from each other to take in a fresh charge; they approach for compression ; and finally they re- cede again very rapidly and farther than before, after — ignition of the mixture, thus giving a comparatively large ratio of expansion. At the same time, by mov- ing bodily along through the cylinder, the pistons uncover admission and exhaust ports and an ignition- tube, which is kept permanently incandescent.

256. If the explosion of a gaseous mixture were practi- Theo- cally instantaneous, producing at once all the heat due totes! | the chemical

reaction, and if the expansion and compres- i sion were adiabatic, the theoretical indicator diagram of of dito | an engine of the Otto type would have the form shown in engine o, fig. 146. OA represents the volume of clearance; AB is the admission, at atmo- spheric pressure; BC is the compression (which is assumed to be adiabatic) ; CD is

the rise of pressure caused by —

explosion ; DE is adiabatic ex- £ pansion during the working stroke ; and EBA is the exhaust. a 77 a The height of the point D above Fig. 146. C may be calculated when we know the temperature at C (an element of considerable uncertainty in practice), the specific heat (at constant vol- ume) of the burnt mixture, the amount of heat evolved by explosion, and the change of specific density due to the change of chemical constitution which explosion brings about. With the proportion of coal-gas and air ordinarily employed this last consideration may generally be neg- lected, as the volume of the products would differ by less than 2 per cent. from the volume of the mixture before explosion if both were reduced to the same pressure and temperature. 257. The rise of pressure observed in the indicator

diagrams of gas-engines is found to be in all cases much less than the calculated rise of pressure which would be caused by a strictly instantaneous explosion. An actual diagram from an Otto engine working in its normal manner is given in fig. 147, where the reference letters distinguish the parts of a complete cycle, as in fig. 146. It shows a rapid rise of pressure on explosion, so rapid that the vol- ume has not very materially altered when the maximum of pressure is reached ; and the specific heat at constant volume may therefore be used without serious error in calculating the amount of heat which this rise accounts for. When ’ this calculation is made,! it turns out that only about 60 or 70 per cent. of the potential heat of combustion in the mixture is required to produce the rise of temperature corresponding to the point of greatest pressure. The re- mainder continues to be slowly evolved during the subse- quent expansion of the hot gases. The process of com- bustion—a term evidently more appropriate than explosion —is essentially gradual ; when ignition takes place it be- gins rapidly, but it continues to go on at a diminishing rate throughout the stroke. That part which takes place after the maximum pressure is passed is the phenomenon of after-burning to which allusion has been made above. 258. The existence of “‘after-burning” is proved not only : by the fact that the maximum pressure after ignition is much less than it would be if

combustion were then com- plete, but also by the form which the curve of subsequent expansion takes. During expansion the gases are losing much heat by conduction through the cylinder walls. The water-jacket absorbs rather more than half of the whole heat developed in the engine,? and the greater part of this is of course taken up from the gases during the working stroke. Notwithstanding this loss, the curve of expansion does not fall much below the adiabatic curve ; in some cases it even lies higher than the adiabatic curve. This shows that the loss to the sides of the cylinder is being made up by continued development of heat within the gas. The process of combustion is especially protracted when the explosive mixture is weak in gas ; the point of

— Rano

late in the stroke ; and it is probable that the products Hie. 148.—Otto Engine Diagram with Which are discharged in the weak explosive mixture. exhaust contain some incom- pletely-burnt fuel. Fig. 148 is the indicator diagram of an Otto engine supplied with a mixture containing an ex- ceptionally large proportion of air: it exhibits well the very gradual character of the explosion in such a case. 259. Much light has been thrown on this subject by the experiments of Mr Clerk, who has exploded mixtures of gas and air, and also mixtures of hydrogen and air, in a closed vessel furnished with an apparatus for recording the time-rate of variation of pressure. In these experi- ments the pressure fell after the explosion only on account of the cooling action of the containing walls. The tem- perature before ignition being known, it became possible to calculate from the diagrams of pressure the highest temperature reached during combustion (on the assump- tion that the specific heat of the gases remained unchanged

1 See two important papers by Mr Dugald Clerk, ‘‘On the Theory of the Gas- Engine,” and “On the Explosion of Homogeneous Gaseous Mixtures,” Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., 1882 and 1886. Reference should also be made, on the subject of gas- engines generally, to Mr Clerk’s book, The Gas-Engine, 1886.

2 Clerk, loc. cit. Also, Brooks and Steward, Van Nostrand’s Eng. Mag., 1883; Ayrton and Perry, Phil. Mag., July 1884; Slaby, Report quoted in F. Jenkin’s Lecture, Inst, C.E., 1884.

4)

Fig. 147.—Otto Engine Diagram.

STEAM-ENGINE

|

025

at high temperatures), and to compare this with the tem- perature which would have been produced had combustion been at once complete. Mixtures of gas and air were exploded, the proportion of gas varying from }; to }, and the highest temperature produced was generally a little more than half that which would have been reached by instantaneous combustion of the mixture. With the best proportion of coal-gas to air (1 to 6 or 7) the greatest pressure and hottest state was found one-twentieth of a second after ignition, and the temperature was then 1800° C.,— instead of 3800°, which would have been the value had all the heat been at once evolved. With the weakest mixtures about half a second was taken to reach a maxi- mum of temperature, and its value was 800° C., instead of 1800° C. In this case, however, the degree of com- pleteness of the combustion is not fairly shown by a com- parison of these temperatures, since much cooling occurred during the relatively long interval that preceded the instant of greatest pressure.

260. To explain the phenomenon of after-burning or Dissocia- delayed combustion, it has been supposed that the high tion.

temperature to which the gases are raised in the first stages of the explosion prevents union from being com- pleted,—just as high temperature would dissociate the burnt gases were they already in chemical union,—until the fall of temperature by expausion and by the cooling action of the cylinder walls allows the process of union to goon. The maximum temperature attained in the gas- engine is high enough to cause a perceptible amount of dissociation of the burnt products; it may therefore be admitted that this explanation of delayed combustion is to some extent true. On the other hand, the phenomenon is most noticeable with mixtures weak in gas, in

which the maximum temperature reached is low, and the dis- sociation effect is correspondingly small. It appears, therefore, that dissociation is not the main cause of the action; apart from it the process of combustion of a gaseous mixture is gradual, beginning fast and going on at a continuously-diminishing rate as the combustible mixture becomes more and more diluted by the portions already burnt. If the mixture is much diluted to begin with, the process is comparatively slow from the first.

261. Much stress has been laid by some makers of gas- engines on the desirability of having a stratified mixture of gases in the cylinder, with a part rich in gas near the ignition port and a greater proportion of residual product or air near the piston. It has even been supposed that stratification of the gases is the cause of their gradual combustion. Mr Clerk's experiments are conclusive against this; the mixtures he used, which gave in some cases very gradual explosions, were allowed to stand long enough to become sensibly homogeneous. In dealing with weak mixtures it is no doubt of advantage to have a small quantity of richer fluid close to the igniting port to start the ignition of the rest,—but beyond this stratification has probably little or no value. And it may be questioned whether, in the ordinary working of a gas-engine, any general stratification can occur, when account is taken of the commotion which the air and gas cause as they rush into the cylinder at a speed exceeding that of an express train.

Stratifi- cation,

262. A compression gas-engine of the Otto type burns Efficiency

from 20 to 25 cubic feet of coal-gas per hour per indicated horse-power. Good coal-gas has a heating power equiva- lent to about 500,000 foot-pounds per cubic foot, and hence, with a consumption of 20 cubic feet the efficiency which the engine realizes is nearly 0:2. The efficiency of a large steam-engine is about 0°14, and in steam-engines that are small enough to be fairly compared with actual gas-engines the efficiency is not more than 0-1, The superiority of gas-engines over steam-engines, from the

of gas- engines,

thermodynamic point of view, is well shown by comparing their consumption of fuel. In the steam-engine we find in good engines of large size a consumption of 2 tb or 1f bb of coal per I.H.P. per hour, and by triple expansion this is reduced in large marine engines to about 14 ib. On the other hand, in small-power engines the consumption is at least 24 tb, and is generally 3 Ib or more. When Mr Dowson's cheap gas,! which is produced by passing a mixture of superheated steam and air through red-hot anthracite, is used to drive an Otto engine, the consump- tion of coal has been found to be only 1:1 fb per I-H.P. per hour, or less than half the amount used by a steam- engine of similar size. What gives this comparison additional interest is the fact that the gas-producer for a 40 or 50 H.P. engine need not take up more space than the boiler of a steam-engine of the same power.

263. In another sense the gas-engine is much less perfect than the steam-engine. The actual efficiency of the latter is about half the ideal efficiency which a perfect engine would show when working through the same range of temperature. In the gas-engine the actual is less than one-fourth of the ideal efficiency. Taking the highest temperature as 1900° C.—a value reached in some of Mr Clerk's experiments—and the lowest temperature as 15° C., the efficiency of a perfect engine would be 0:87, while that of the actual engine is 0-2. This only means that the gas-engine has all the greater margin for future improvement.

264. At present the main causes of waste in gas-engines are the action of the sides of the cylinder and the water-

1 Min. Proc. Inst. C.H., vol. \xxiii. p. 311.

jacket, and the high temperature of the exhaust gases. The water-jacket absorbs about half the whole heat, only to keep the cylinder cool enough to permit of lubrication, The waste gases are discharged at a temperature of about 420° C., and so carry away a large amount of heat which might in part be saved by having a greater ratio of expan- sion, or by the use of a

regenerator. Another source of thermodynamic imperfection is the after-burning, which gives heat to the working substance at a temperature lower than the maximum.

In an engine constructed by the late Sir William Siemens it was attempted to do away with or reduce the two main causes of loss—(1) by using a separate combustion-chamber, distinct from the cylinder in which the piston worked, and (2) by passing the exhaust gases through a regenerator, which afterwards gave up heat to the incoming air and gas,? The late Prof. Fleeming Jenkin endeavoured to attain the same ends by adapting the Stirling type of engine to inter- nal combustion, a mixture of gas and air being exploded under a displacer like that of fig. 141. Practical difficulties have hitherto prevented regenerative internal-combustion engines from coming into use, but it can scarcely be doubted that their development is only a question of time. With regard to the probable future of heat-engines, it is important to notice that the internal-combustion engine using gaseous fuel, though already much more efficient than the steam- engine, is crude and full of defects which further inven- tion ought to remove, while the steam-engine has been improved so far that little increase in its efficiency can be expected, and more than a little is impossible. _ (J. A. E.)

“2 Siemens, “Discussion on the Theory of the Gas-Engine,” Min, Proc. Inst. C.E., 1882. ‘

Absolute temperature, 29,

49,

Adiabatic expansion, 38; of steam, 67, 75.

fHolipile, 2.

Air-engines, 240-247; Stirling’s, 54, 244-245; Ericsson’s, 246.

Air-pump, 11, 196, 226.

Alsatian experiments, 80,

90.

American experiments,

80, 90, 93.

American locomotive, 134, |

233.

Angular advance, 145.

Anti-priming pipe, 128.

Automatic expansion gear, 173-175,

Barring engines, 198,

Beam-engines, 192.

Bearings, 195.

Beighton, 10.

Bogie, 230.

Boilers, 123-148; Cor- nish, 16, 127; Lanca- shire, 127-128; Gallo- way, 129; tubular, 130, vertical, 131; sectional or tubulous, 132; loco-

motive, 183 — 134; marine, 135; use of zine in, 140.

Boyle’s law, 28.

Branca, 4,

Bremme or Marshall gear,

156.

Brotherhood engine, 203.

Cataract, 163,

Cawley, 9.

Charles’s law, 29.

Chimney draught, 125.

Circulating pump, 228.

Clark, D. K., 80.

Clausius, 22, 75.

Clearance, 78.

Clerk’s gas-engine, 254; experiments on explo- sion, 259, 261.

Compound engine, 17, 111-122, 191; advan- tages of, 93, 116.

Compression in steam- engines, 79; in air and gas engines, 245, 249.

Condensation, initial, 80—

93,

Condenser, 71, 196, 225.

Corliss gear, 174; engine,

198.

Cornish boiler, 16, 127; engine, 18; valve, 163.

Crank-effort, diagram of,

183-188.

Crank shaft, torsional vi- bration of, 190.

Crosby indicator, 98.

Cushioning, 79, 202.

Cut-off, 72; variation of,

159, 173-175,

Cycle of operations, 26; Carnot's, 40, 68.

Cylinder walls, influence of, 80-93.

Dash-pot, 171.

De Caus, 3.

Della Porta, 3,

Diagonal engines, 215.

Dowson gas, 262.

Drop in compound en- gines, 113.

Dust fuel, 143.

Duty of engines, 18, 95.

Eccentric, 144,

Efficiency of a heat-en- gine, 23, 94; perfect, 46, 69; methods of testing, 97, 102; results of tests of, 95, 96, 103; of boiler and furnace, 95; of mechanism, 110; of gas-engines,

262-264.

Evans, 16,

Exhaust, 72.

Exhaust waste, 108.

Expausion, adiabatic, 38, 67; isothermal, 39;

INDEX. The numerals refer to the sections.

actual, in steam-en- gines, 82; incomplete, 74; work done in, 36.

Expansion slide-valve,157

-159.

Expansive use of steam,

14, 72.

Feed-pump, 137, 226.

Feed-water-heater, 138,

224,

Fly-whecls, theory of,

189.

Forced draught, 126, 141,

228,

Fusible plug, 128.

Galloway boiler, tubes, 127.

Gas-engines, 250-264; Lenoir’s, 251; Otto and Langen’s, 252; Otto’s, 258; Clerk’s, 254; theory of, 256-264; efficiency of, 262-264,

Gases, permanent, laws of, 28-33.

Governors, 164-181; dis- engagement, 176; dif- ferential, 178; marine,

179, 181.

Hackworth

156.

Hallauer, 80, 90.

Heat-engine defined, 1; theory of, 23-54; per- fect, 46.

Heautefeuille, 7.

Hero of Alexandria, 2.

High-speed engines, 197,

202-204.

Hirn, 22, 80, 92.

Historical sketch, 2-22.

Horizontal engine, 195-

217.

Hornblower, 17.

Horse-power, 14; meas- urement of, 100.

Hunting, 171.

Huygens, 7.

Hydrokineter, 137,

valve-gear,

Indicator, 14, 98, 99.

Indicator diagram, 25; examples of, 101; com- pound, 117-122; in gas-engines, 251, 257, 258.

Injector, 137.

Internal-combustion en- gines, 248-264,

Internal energy, 34.

lsochronism of governors,

170.

Isothermal expansion, 39.

Joule’s equivalent, 23.

Joule’s law, 33.

Joy valve-gear, 156.

Lap, 145.

Lead, 145.

Leupold, 15.

Liner, 195.

Link motion, 152-155,

Liquid fuel, 143.

Locomotive, 229-240; early, 20; compound, 234-236; tramway,

237-239; fireless, 238 ; road, 240.

Locomotive boiler, 133-

134,

M‘Naught, 19, 98.

Mallet’s compound loco- motive, 234.

Marine engines, 213-228.

Mechanical equivalent of heat, 23,

Mechanical stokers, 142.

Moscrop recorder, 182.

Newcomen, 9, 10.

Oscillating-cylinder gines, 215,

Otto’s gas-engine, 253.

Papin, 8.

Parallel motion, 193-194.

Petroleum engines, 250.

Piston packing, 195,

Piston-valves, 161.

Pony truck, 230.

Potter, 10.

Pressure gauge, 128.

Priming, 94.

en-

Proéll

175.

Pulsometer, 208. Pumping engines, 205-

208.

Quadruple-expansion en- gines, 120, 223, Radial axle-box, 230. Radial valve-gears, 156. Rankine, 22, 75; his statement of second law of thermodyna- mics, 48, Receiver, 112. Regenerative gines, 264. Regenerator, 53. Regnault's law, 31; his experiments on steam, idle Release, 72. Relief rings, 160. Reversibility, 43-45; con- ditions of, 50-52. Reversing gear, 152-156. Richards's indicator, 98. Rotary engines, 210. Safety motor (Davey),

209.

Safety-valve, 8, 128. Savery, 6. Separator, 139. Side-lever engines, 213. Siemens, 178, 264, Slide-valve, theory of,

144-150.

Specific heat, 31; of gases, 35; of water, 59. Stationary engines, 191— Pale Steam, properties of, 55- 67; latent heat of, 60, saturated, 55; super- heated, 55, 65; den- sity of, 58, 75; total heat of, 61; internal energy of, 62; adia- batic expansion of, 67, 75; heat of formation

expansion gear,

gas-en-

of, 63; wet, 64, 67, 74, 104; isothermal ex- pansion of, 66.

Steam-gas, 65.

Steam-jacket, 11, 87, 88.

Steam turbine, 212.

Steeple-engine, 213.

Stirling’s air-engine, 53-

54, 244-245,

Sun-and-planet wheels,

13.

Tandem engines, 111.

Thermodynamics, laws of,

23.

Thomson, Sir W., 22, 49,

Tower’s spherical engine,

211.

Traction engines, 240.

Tramway locomotives,

237-239,

Trevithick, 16.

Trick valve, 151,

Triple-expansion engines,

119, 221-223,

Trunk engine, 216,

Valves, slide, 144-162; gears, radial, 156; expansion, 157; piston, 161; lift or disk, 163; Corliss, 174; throttle,

173; safety, 8, 128; Trick, 151; double- ported, 151.

Vertical engines, 201,218. Wall engines, 201. Watt, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15. Webb's compound loeo- motive, 235. ; Weight of engines, 225. Winding engines, 199. Wire-drawing, 77. Woolf, 17, Woolf engine, 111. Worcester, marquis of, 5. Working substance, 24. Worthington engine, 206-

207.

Zeuner's slide-valve dia- gram, 147.

STE—STE

STEAM HAMMER. See Hammer. ;

STEARINE, in commerce, designates a solid mixture of fatty acids (chiefly palmitic and stearic) which is being produced industrially from animal fats and used largely for the making of candles. In chemistry it is a generic term for the three "esters " derivable from glycerin, C,H;(OH),, by the replacement of one or more of the three (OH)'s by the residue C,,H.,O,, which, in stearic acid, is combined with ""H." Of these tri-stearine, C,H; (C,.H,O.)., is the most important ; it occurs in animal fats only, largely in tallow. It crystallizes from ether in white pearly nodules, insoluble in cold but easily soluble in boiling alcohol. It can be distilled undecomposed im vacuo. On gradual ex- posure to higher temperatures it fuses at 55° C.; it then resolidifies, and then fuses again (permanently) at 71°:5 (Heintz). The specific gravity of the liquid is 0°9245 at 65°'5 C. (Duffy).

STEEL. See Iron.

STEELE, Str Ricwarp (1672-1729), one of the most active and prominent men of letters in the reign of Queen Anne, inseparably associated in the history of literature with his personal friend Addison. He cannot be said to have lost in reputation by the partnership, because he was far inferior to Addison in purely literary gift, and it is Addison's literary genius that has floated their joint work above merely journalistic celebrity ; but the advantage was not all on Steele's side, inasmuch as his more brilliant coadjutor has usurped not a little of the merit rightly due to him. Steele's

often-quoted generous acknowledgment of Addison's services in The Tatler has proved true in a somewhat different sense from that intended by the writer :—''I fared like a distressed prince, who calls in a powerful neighbour to his aid; I was undone by my auxiliary; when I had once called him in I could not subsist without dependence on him." The truth is that in this happy alliance the one was the complement of the other; and the balance of mutual advantage was much more nearly even than Steele claimed or posterity has generally allowed.

The famous literary pair were born in the same year, 1672,—Steele in Dublin, the senior by less than two months. Steele's father, who is said to have been a lawyer, died before he had reached his sixth year, but the boy found a protector in his maternal uncle, Henry Gascoigne, secretary and confidential agent to two suc- cessive dukes of Ormonde. Through his influence he was nominated to the Charterhouse in 1684, and there first met with Addison. Five years afterwards he pro- ceeded to Oxford, and was a postmaster at Merton when Addison was a demy at Magdalen. Their schoolboy friendship was continued at the university, and probably helped to give a more serious turn to Steele's mind than his natural temperament would have taken under different companionship. Addison's reverend father also took an interest in the warm-hearted young Irishman; but their combined influence did not steady him sufficiently to keep his impulses within the lines of a regular career ; without waiting for a degree he volunteered into the army, and served for some time as a cadet "under the command of the unfortunate duke of Ormonde." This escapade was Inade without his uncle's consent, and cost him, according to his own account, "the succession to a very good estate in the county of Wexford in Ireland." Still, he did not lack advancement in the profession he had chosen. A poem on the funeral of Queen Mary (1695), dedicated to Lord Cutts, colonel of the Coldstream Guards, brought him under the notice of that nobleman, who took the gentleman trooper into his household as a secretary, made him an officer in his own regiment, and ultimately pro- cured for him a captaincy in Lord Lucas's fusiliers.

His name was noted for promotion by King William, but the king's death took place before anything had been done for Captain Steele. He would seem to have remained in the army, though never on active service, for several years longer.

Steele probably owed the king's favour to honest admira- tion of the excellent principles of The Christian Hero, his first prose treatise, published in 1701. The "reforma- tion of manners" was a cherished purpose with King William and his consort, which they tried to effect by proclamation and Act of Parliament; and a sensible well- written treatise, deploring the irregularity of the military character, and seeking to prove by examples—the king himself among the number—'that no principles but those of religion are sufficient to make a great man," was sure of attention. Steele complained that the reception of Lhe Christian Hero by his comrades was not so respect- ful; they persisted in trying him by his own standard, and would not pass "the least levity in his words and actions" without protest. The sensitive and hot-headed "hero" would seem to have been teased into fighting a duel,—his first and last, for he wounded his antagonist dangerously, and from that time was a staunch opponent of affairs of honour. His uneasiness under the ridicule of his irreverent comrades had another curious result: it moved him to write a comedy. 'It was now incumbent upon him," he says, ''to enliven his character, for which reason he writ the comedy called The Funeral." Although, however, it was Steele's express purpose to free his character from the reproach of solemn dulness, and prove that he could write as smartly as another, he showed greater respect for decency than had for some time been the fashion on the stage. The purpose, afterwards more fully effected in his famous periodicals, of reconciling wit, good humour, and good breeding with virtuous conduct was already deliberately in Steele's mind when he wrote his first comedy. It was produced and published in 1701, was recelved on the stage with favour, and owing to its comparative purity helped, along with The Christian Hero, to commend its author to King William. In his next comedy, Zhe Lying Lover, or the Ladies' Friendship, pro- duced two years afterwards, in 1703, Steele's moral purpose was directly avowed ; and the play, according to his own statement, was ''damned for its piety." The Tender Hus- band, produced eighteen months later (in April 1705), though not less pure in tone, was more successful ; in this play he gave unmistakable evidence of

his happy genius for conceiving and embodying humorous types of character, putting on the stage the parents or grandparents of Squire Western, Tony Lumpkin, and Lydia Languish. It was seventeen years before Steele again tried his fortune on the stage with The Conscious Lovers, the best and most successful of his comedies, produced in 1722.

Meantime the gallant captain had turned aside to another kind of literary work, in which, with the assistance of his friend Addison, he obtained a more enduring reputation. There never was a time when literary talent was so much sought after and rewarded by statesmen. Addison had already been waited on in “his humble lodgings in the Haymarket,” and advanced to office, when his friend the successful dramatist was appointed to the office of gazetteer. This was in May 1707. It was Steele’s first connexion with journalism. The periodical was at that time taking the place of the pamphlet as an instrument for working on public opinion. The Gazette gave little opening for the play of Steele’s lively pen, his main duty, as he says, having been to “keep the paper very innocent and very insipid”; but the position made him familiar with a new field of enterprise in which his inventive mind soon discerned materials for a project of

his own. 12th of April 1709. It was partly a newspaper, a journal of politics and society, published three times a week. Steele’s position as gazetteer furnished him with special advantages for political news, and as a popular habitué of coffee-houses he was at no loss for social gossip. But Steele not only retailed and commented on social news, a function in which he had been anticipated by Defoe and others; he also introduced into The Tatler as a special feature essays on general questions of manners and morality. It is not strictly true that Steele was the inventor of the English “essay,”—there were essayists before the 18th century, notably Cowley and Temple ; but he was the first to use the essay for periodical pur- poses, and he and Addison together developed a distinct species, to which they gave a permanent character and in which they had many imitators. As a humbler motive for this fortunate venture Steele had the pinch of im- pecuniosity, due rather to excess of expenditure than to smallness of income. He had £300 a year from his gazetteership, £100 as gentleman usher to Prince George, £500

from the Barbados estates of his first wife,! and some fortune by his second wife—Mrs Mary Scurlock, the “Dear Prue” of his charming letters. But Steele lived in considerable state after this second marriage, and was reduced to the necessity of borrowing before he started Z’he Tatler. The assumed name of the editor was Isaac DBickerstaffe, but Addison discovered the real author in the sixth number, and began to contribute in the eighteenth. It is only fair to Steele to state that the success of The Tatler was established before Addison joined him, and that Addison contributed to only forty-two of the two hundred and seventy-one numbers that had appeared when the paper was stopped in January 1711.

Only two months elapsed between the stoppage of The Tatler and the appearance of The Spectator, which was the organ of the two friends from March 1, 1711 till December 6, 1712. Addison was the chief contributor to the new venture, and the history of it belongs more to his life. Nevertheless it is to be remarked as characteristic of the two writers that in this as in The Tatler Addison generally follows Steele’s lead in the choice of subjects. The first suggestion of Sir Roger de Coverley was Steele’s, although it was Addison that filled in the outline of a good-natured country gentleman with the numerous little whimsicalities that convert Sir Roger into an amiable and exquisitely ridiculous provincial oddity. Steele had neither the fineness of touch nor the humorous malice that gives life and distinction to Addison’s picture; the Sir Roger of his original hasty sketch has good sense as well as good nature, and the treatment is comparatively common- place from a literary point of view, though unfortunately not commonplace in its charity. Steele’s suggestive vivacity gave many another hint for the elaborating skill of his friend.

The Spectator was followed by The Guardian, the first number of which appeared on the 12th of March 1713. It had a much shorter career, extending to only a hundred and seventy-five numbers, of which Steele wrote eighty-two and Addison fifty-three. This was the last of his numerous periodicals in which he had the assistance of the great essayist. But he continued for several years to project journals, under great variety of titles, some of them political, some social in their objects, most of them very short-lived. Steele was a warm partisan of the principles of the Revolution,

ardent and earnest in his political as in his other convictions. The Englishman

1 The name of this lady—a widow, Mrs Margaret Stretch—and

some facts abou: her have been ascertained by Mr George A. Aitken. See Athen#um, May 1, 1886, and Mr Dobson's Steele, pp. 51, 218.

ST E—S TE

The Tatler made its first appearance on the | was started in January 1714, immediately after the

stoppage of 7'he Guardian, to assail the policy of the Tory ministry. Zhe Lover, started some six weeks later, was more general in its aims; but it gave place in a month or two to The Reader, a direct counterblast to the Tory Examiner. The Englishman was resuscitated for another volume in 1715; and in the same year he projected in rapid succession three unsuccessful ventures,—Zown Talk, The Tea Table, and Chit-Chat. Three years later he started his most famous political paper, The Plebeian, rendered memorable by the fact that in it he had to contend against his old ally Addison. The subject of controversy between the two life-long friends was Sunder- land's Peerage Bill. Steele's last venture in journalism was The Theatre, 1719-20, the immediate occasion of which was the revocation of his patent for Drury Lane. So ready was Steele in this kind of enterprise, which he could always conduct single-handed, that apparently whenever he felt strongly on any subject he at once started a journal to give vent to his feelings. Besides these journals he wrote also several pamphlets on passing questions,—on the disgrace of Marlborough in 1711, on the fortifications of Dunkirk in 1713, on the "crisis" in 1714, An Apology for himself and his Writings (important biographically) in the same year, on the South Sea mania in 1720.

The fortunes of Steele as a zealous Whig varied with the fortunes of his party. He lost his gazetteership when the Tories came into power in 1710. Over the Dunkirk question he waxed so hot that he threw up a pension and a commissionership of stamps, and went into parliament as member for Stockbridge to attack the ministry with voice and vote as well as with pen.

But he had not sat many weeks when he was expelled from the House for the language of his pamphlet on Zhe Crisis, which was stigmatized as seditious. The Apology already mentioned was his vindication of himself on this occasion. With the accession of the house of Hanover his fortunes changed. Honours and substantial rewards were showered upon him. He was made a justice of the peace, deputy-lieutenant of Middlesex, surveyor of the royal stables, governor of the royal company of comedians—the last a lucrative post, and was also knighted (1715). After the suppression of the Jacobite rebellion he was appointed one of the commis- sioners of forfeited estates, and spent some two years in Scotland in that capacity. He obtained a patent for a plan for bringing salmon alive from Ireland. Differing from his friends in power on the question of the Peerage Bill in 1718, he was deprived of some of his offices, but when Walpole became chancellor of the exchequer in 1721 he was reinstated. But with all his emoluments the imprudent, impulsive, ostentatious, and generous Steele could never get clear of financial difficulties, and he was obliged to retire from London in 1724 and live in the country. He spent his last years on his wife's estate of Llangunnor in Wales, and, his health broken down bya paralytic seizure, died on the lst of September 1729.

A selection from Steele's essays has been edited by Mr Austin Dobson, who prefixes a careful and sympathetic memoir. Mr Dob-

son has since written a fuller biography in Mr Lang's series of English Worthies. (W. M.)

STEELYARD, MercHants or THE, were Hanse mer- chants who settled in London in 1250 at the steelyard on the river side, near Cosin Lane, now Iron Bridge Whari. Henry III. in 1259, at the request of his brother Richard, earl of Cornwall, conferred on them important privileges, which were renewed and confirmed by Edward I. It was chiefly through their enterprise that the early trade of London was developed, and they continued to flourish till, on the complaint of the Merchant Adventurers in the reign

eee

ace,

of Edward VI., they were deprived of their privileges. Though Hamburg and Liibeck sent ambassadors to inter- cede for them, they were not reinstated in their monopolies, put they succeeded in maintaining a footing in London till expelled by Elizabeth in 1597. Their beautiful guild- hall in Thames Street, described by Stow, was made a naval store-house. It contained two famous pictures, painted in distemper by Holbein, representing Poverty and Riches, which were presented by the Hanse merchants to Henry, prince of Wales, and came into the possession of Charles I., but are supposed to have perished in the fire which destroyed Whitehall.

STEEN, Jan Havicxsz (1626-1679), subject-painter, was born at Leyden in 1626, the son of a brewer of the place. He studied at Utrecht under Nicholas Knuffer, an historical painter, and about 1644 went to Haarlem, where he worked under Adrian van Ostade and under Jan van Goijen, whose daughter he married in 1649. In the previous year he had joined the painters' guild of the city. In 1667 he is said to have been a brewer at Delft, and in 1672 he received municipal authority to open a tavern. The accounts of his life, however, are very con- fused and conflicting. Some biographers have asserted that he was a drunkard and of dissolute life, but the number of his works—Van Westrheene, in his Jan Steen, Biude sur VArt en Holland, has catalogued nearly five hundred—is sufficient in itself to disprove the charge. His later pictures bear marks of haste and are less care- fully finished than those of his earlier period. He died at Leyden in 1679.

The works of Jan Steen are distinguished by correct- ness of drawing, admirable freedom and spirit of touch, and clearness and transparency of colouring. But their true greatness is due to their intellectual qualities. In the wide range of his subjects, and their dramatic charac- ter, he surpasses all the Dutch figure-painters, with the single exception of Rembrandt. His productions range from the stately interiors of grave and wealthy citizens to tavern scenes of jollity and debauch. He painted cliem- ists in their laboratories, doctors at the bedside of their patients, card-parties, marriage feasts, and the festivals of St Nicholas and Twelfth Night,—even religious

subjects, though in these he was least successful. His rendering of children is especially delightful. Dealing often with the coarser side of things, his work is full of humour; he de- picts the comedy of human life in a spirit of very genial toleration, but now and again there appear keenly telling touches of satire which recall such a pictorial moralist as Hogarth.

The National Gallery contains one picture by Jan Steen,—the Music Master; and other excellent examples of his art are pre- served in the Royal, the Bute, the Ashburton, and the Northbrook collections, at Apsley House and Bridgewater House, and in the oes of The Hague, Amsterdam, and the Hermitage, St Peters-

urg.

STEFFANI, Acosrino (1655-1730), ecclesiastic, diplo- matist, and musical composer, was born at Castelfranco in 1655, and at a very early age was admitted as a chorister at St Mark's in Venice. In 1667 the beauty of his voice attracted the attention of Count Tattenbach, by whom he was taken to Munich, where his education was completed at the expense of Ferdinand Maria, elector of Bavaria, who-appointed him '" Churfiirstlicher Kammer- und Hof- musikus," and granted him a liberal salary. After receiving instruction from Johann Kaspar Kerl, and possibly Ercole Bernabei, he was sent in 1673 to study in Rome, where, among other works, he composed six motets, the original MSS. of which are now in the Fitzwilliam Museum at Cambridge. On his return to Munich in 1674 he pub- lished his first work, Psalmodia Vespertina, a part of which Was reprinted in Martini's Saggio di Contrappunto in 1674.

O29

In 1675 he was appointed court organist, and in 1680 he was ordained priest, with the title of abbate of Lepsing. His ecclesiastical status did not, however, prevent him from turning his attention to the stage, for which, at different periods of his life, he composed works which un- doubtedly exercised a potent influence upon the dramatic music of the period. Of his first opera, Marco Aurelio, produced at Munich in 1681, the only copy known to exist is a MS. score preserved in the royal library at Buckingham palace. It was followed by Solone in 1685, Servio Tullto in 1686, Alarico in

1687, and Niobe in 1688 ; but of these four last-named works no trace can now be discovered. Nzobe was the last opera Steffani composed at Munich. Notwithstanding the favour shown to him by the elector Maximilian Emanuel, he accepted in 1689 the appointment of kapellmeister at the court of Hanover, where he speedily gained the goodwill of Ernest Augustus, duke of Brunswick-Liineburg (afterwards raised to the dignity of elector of Hanover), the duchess Sophia Charlotte (afterwards electress of Brandenburg), the philosopher Leibnitz, the abbate Ortensio Mauro, and many men of letters and intelligence, and where, in 1710, he showed great kindness to Handel, who was then just entering upon his glorious career. He inaugurated a long series of triumphs in Hanover by composing, for the opening of the new opera-house in 1689, an opera called Enrico il Leone, which was produced with extraordinary splendour and achieved an immense reputation. For the same theatre he composed La Lotta d'Ercole con Achilleo in 1689, La Superbia d Alessandro in 1690, Orlando Generoso in 1691, Le Rivali Concordi in 1692, La Liberta Contenta in 1693, I Trionfi del Lato and I Baccanali in 1695, and Briseide in 1696. 'The libretto of Brvserde is by Palmieri. 'Those of most if not all the others are by the abbate Mauro. The scores are preserved at Buck- ingham palace, where, in company with five volumes of songs and three of duets, they form part of the collec- tion brought to England by the elector of Hanover in 1714. But it was not only asa musician that Steffani distinguished himself in his new home. The elevation of Ernest Augustus to the electorate in 1692 led to difficul- ties, for the arrangement of which it was necessary that an ambassador should visit the various German courts, armed with a considerable amount of diplomatic power. The accomplished abbate was sent on this delicate mission in 1696, with the title of envoy extraordinary ; and he fulfilled his difficult task so well that Pope Innocent XI, in recognition of certain privileges he had secured for the Hanoverian Catholics, consecrated him bishop of Spiga in partibus infideium. In 1698 he was sent as ambas- sador to Brussels ; andafter the death of Ernest Augustus in the same year he entered the service of the elector palatine, John William, at Diisseldorf, where he held the offices of privy councillor and protonotary of the holy see. Invested with these high honours, Steffani could scarcely continue to produce dramatic compositions in public with- out grievous breach of etiquette. But his genius was too real to submit to repression ; and in 1709 he ingeniously avoided the difficulty by producing

two new operas—Lnea at Hanover and Zassilone at Diisseldorf—in the name of his secretary and amanuensis Gregorio Piva, whose sig- nature is attached to the scores preserved at Buckingham palace. Another score—that of Arminto—in the same collection, dated Diisseldorf, 1707, and evidently the work of Steffani, bears no composer's name.

Steffani did not accompany the elector George to Eng- land; but in 1724 the Academy of Antient Musick in London elected him its honorary president for life; and in return for the compliment he sent the association a

magnificent Stabut Mater, for six voices and orchestra, AXXIT. — 67

030

aud three fine madrigals. The MSS. of these are still in existence ; and the British Museum possesses a very fine Conjitebor, for three voices and orchestra, of about the same period. All these compositions are very much in advance of the age in which they were written ; and in his operas Steffani shows an appreciation of the demands of the stage very remarkable indeed at a period at which the musical drama was gradually approaching the character of a mere formal concert, with scenery and dresses. But for the MSS. at Buckingham palace, these operas would be utterly unknown ; but Steffani will never cease to be remembered by his beautiful chamber duets, which, like those of his contemporary Carlo Maria Clari (1669-1745), are chiefly written in the form of cantatas for two voices, accompanied by a figured bass. The British Museum possesses more than a hundred of these charming compositions,! some of which were published at Munich in 1679. Steffani visited Italy for the last time in 1729, in which year Handel, who always gratefully remembered the kindness he had received from him at Hanover, once more met him at the palace of Cardinal Ottoboni in Rome. This was thie last time the two composers were destined to meet. Steffani returned soon afterwards to Hanover, and died in 1730 while engaged in the transaction of some diplomatic business at Frankfort.

STEIBELT, Dantet (c. 1760-1823), pianist and com- poser, was born between the years 1755 and 1765 at Berlin, where he studied, at the expense of the crown prince Frederick William, under Kirnberger. Very little is known of his artistic life before 1790, when he settled in Paris, and attained

great popularity as a virtuoso by means of a pianoforte sonata called La Coquette, which he composed, in conjunction with Hermann, for Queen Marie Antoinette, and almost equal credit as a dramatic composer by an opera entitled Lomeo et Juliette, produced at the Theatre Feydeau in 1793. In 1796 Steibelt re- moved to London, where his pianoforte playing attracted an amount of attention which in 1798 was raised to an absolute furore by the production of his concerto (No. 3, in E>) containing the famous “Storm Rondo”—a work that ensured his popularity, in spite of the far higher claims of Clementi, Dussek, and John Baptist Cramer, whose attainments as virtuosi, composers, and thoroughly accomplished artists were infinitely superior to his own. In the following year Steibelt started on a professional tour in Germany ; and, after playing with sonie success in Hamburg, Dresden, Prague, and Berlin, he arrived in May 1800 at Vienna, where, with the arrogance which formed one of the most prominent characteristics of his nature, he challenged Beethoven to a trial of skill, which naturally resulted in his irretrievable discomfiture. His position in Germany being no longer tenable after’ this pitiful failure, he retired to Paris, and during the next eight years lived alternately in that city and in London, where his reputation continued undiminished. In 1808 he was invited by the emperor Alexander to St Peters- burg, and there he resided, in the enjoyment of a lucrative appointment, until his death on September 20, 1823.

Besides his dramatic music, Steibelt left behind him an enormous number of compositions for the pianoforte, many of which exhibit a certain amount of originality, though they can scarcely be regarded as works of genius. His playing, though exceedingly brilliant, was wanting in the higher qualities which so strikingly characterized that of his contemporaries, John Cramer and Muzio Clementi; but he was undoubtedly gifted with talents of a very high order, and the reputation he enjoyed was fairly earncd and honourably maintained to the end.

STEIN, Hermvricn Frrepricu Kart, BARON VOM UND zUM (1757-1831), one of the greatest of German statesmen, and perhaps the most influential forerunner of Bismarck in

1 Add. MSS. 5055 sq.

the creation of German unity, was born at Nassau on October 26, 1757. He was a member of the independent noblesse or knighthood of the German empire (Reichsritter. schaft), and his ancient family seat, Burg Stein, lies on a hill rising above the Lahn opposite Nassau. In his auto. biography he speaks of his parents as “ pious and genuinely German,” and ascribes to their teaching his own religious and patriotic feelings, his sense of the dignity of his family and order, and his conviction of the duty of devoting his life to the public weal. Though the youngest but one of ten children, Stein was selected by his parents as the ‘‘Stammhalter,” or representative and maintainer of the family name and dignity, and ‘his elder brothers acqui- esced in this arrangement.

From 1773 to 1777 Stein studied political economy, jurisprudence, and history at the university of Gottingen, where he made his first acquaintance with English insti- tutions, his knowledge and appreciation of which are often manifest in his later career. His original intention was to qualify for an appointment in the imperial courts, but this sphere of work was little to his taste, and in 1780 he took the step, somewhat unusual for an imperial knight, of entering the service of Prussia. He became an official in the mining department, and by 1784 had risen to be head of the administration of mines and manufactures for Westphalia. In 1796 he was made supreme presi- dent of the provincial chambers of Westphalia, an appoint- ment which gave him opportunity to evince his great administrative talents. In 1785 his administrative career was interrupted for a short time by a diplomatic mission to the elector of Mainz, and in 1786-87 he made a long professional tour in England, chiefly in the mining districts.

In 1804 Stein was created a minister of state, with the portfolio of excise, customs, manufactures, and trade. In this capacity he abolished the internal customs duties throughout Prussia, and effected several other needed reforms ; but he was unable to modify the general disas- trous tenour of the Prussian policy, which was now ripen- ing for the catastrophe of Jena. Stein’s remonstrances with the king and his strictures upon the course of the administration were couched in the most open and unspar- ing language, and they were specially directed against the system of government through

privy cabinet counsellors, who had practically come to supplant the ministers with- out possessing either an official knowledge of affairs or a ministerial responsibility. He refused to join in the reconstituted ministry after Jena unless this abuse were done away with, and Frederick William III., already wounded by the frankness of Stein's criticism, sent him his dismissal in a most ungracious form (January 3, 1807), When the king, however, found himself left in the lurch by his ally Russia, at the peace of Tilsit (July 9, 1807), he turned in despair to the strong and candid counsellor he had dismissed half a year before, and invited Stein to re-enter his service, practically on his own terms. Curiously enough Stein's appointment as minister pre- sident was encouraged by Napoleon, who seems to have seen in him merely the clever organizer and financier, who would most easily put Prussia in a position to pay the enormous war indemnity levied on it. Stein took office on October 4, 1807, and at once began that weighty series of organic reforms with which his name is most indis- solubly connected. The emancipation edict appeared on October 9, 1807, a few days after the formal receipt of his powers, and the municipal ordinance was published on November 19, 1808. In the interim he co-operated zealously with Scharnhorst in the reconstitution of the army, carried out a number of important financial and ad- ministrative reforms, and prepared the way for a thorough

.

reconstruction of the whole framework of government, which, however, he himself was not to have an opportunity to effect.

Stein's momentous ministry did not last much more than a year. Napoleon soon awoke to the eminently patriotic and energetic character of the man he had incautiously re- commended, and an intercepted letter gave him the oppor- tunity to demand Stein's dismissal. Frederick William had no option but to comply, as he shrank from the only possible alternative of an open breach with the French emperor. Stein was proscribed by Napoleon, his property in Westphalia was confiscated, and he himself had to take refuge in Austria from the French troops.

Tn 1812 the czar Alexander invited Stein to St Peters- burg, where he filled the post of unofficial adviser to his imperial majesty on German or rather on anti-Napoleonic affairs; and it would perhaps be difficult to overestimate the influence of the proximity of such a man in keeping Alexander's courage screwed to the sticking-point. When the scene of the campaign of 1812 was transferred to Germany, Stein was entrusted witli the administration of the Prussian districts occupied by the Russian troops, and he shares with Yorck the merit of arousing East Prussia to take arms against the French, and so of calling the "Landwehr" into existence for the first time. To Stein also mainly belongs the credit of effecting that union of Russia and Prussia (treaty of Kalisch, February 27, 1813) which was perhaps the main factor in the over- throw of Napoleon. After the battle of Leipsic Stein became supreme president of a central commission appointed to administer the lands occupied by the allied armies, in which post he was indefatigable in providing the men and material necessary for a successful prosecu- tion of the war. When the military struggle was over Stein's work was practically done. The two tendencies of absolutism on the one hand and particularism on the other which determined the tone of the Vienna congress were equally repugnant to him, and he took little part in its deliberations. He also refused the invitations of Austria and Prussia to represent them at the Frankfort diet, a makeshift in which he had no confidence or hope. The rest of his life he spent in retirement, sharing his time between Frankfort and his property in Westphalia, and the only office he ever again filled was that of marshal of the provincial estates. In 1819 he founded the society for the publication of the Monumenta Germamix Historica, which has since done such admirable work. He died on June 29, 1831, in his seventy-fourth year, on his estate of Cappenberg in Westphalia, leaving a family of three daughters. His wife was Countess von Walmoden-Gim- born of Hanover, a granddaughter of George II.

Stein's distinguishing merit as a statesman is that he was practically the first to see the urgent necessity of German unity, to contemplate its realization as possible, and to inaugurate a policy likely to bring it about. That which, now that it has been accomplished by Stein's great successor, seems to us almost a matter of course, was a merc chimera to most of our forefathers, and it required the faculty of a political seer to attain Stein's clear views of future possibilities. Stein saw, too, that the only hope of salvation lay in the

people as such,—that he must enlist the sympathies of the nation and raise its moral tone. To this end a series of great and just reforms was necessary. If a dcep national Sentiment was to be evoked, the people must be freed from feudal burdens; if they were to carry on an effective struggle for Independence, they must first acquire personal liberty. His emancipation edict, therefore, which has becn called the habeas corpus act of Prussia, abolished serfdom, did away with the dis- tinctions of caste, and abrogated the feudal restrictions upon the free disposition of person and property (compare PRusstA, vol. xx.

‘ The belief that Stein occupied himself during his retirement in propagating his opinions through the ‘‘ Tugendbund ” seems from recent vestigations to be erroneous. He had no sympathy with secret Societies, and all indications go to show that he rather disapproved of the league than otherwise.

O31

pp. 11, 12). This reform, however, Stein found, in a sense, ready to his hand ; it was demanded by the spirit of the times, and can hardly be looked on as a purely individual achievement. His most distinctive work was a great scheme of political reform, in which he contemplated the conversion of the absolute monarchy of Prussia into a free representative state. He wisely began the process by introducing the principle of free local government in his Stadte-Ordnung, or municipal ordinance. The people had to be roused to take an interest in governing themselves, and it was easier to expand this interest from the local to the national than to work down from the national to the local. Stein did not see much more than this beginning of his plans, but the famous “ Political Testament ” he drew up on leaving office shows how wide-sweeping were the reforms he contemplated. The right of self-government was to be extended to the rural communes, and a thorough reform of every branch of the administration was to be effected, while the coping-stone of the new edifice was to take the form of a free representative parliament. Time, however, has been on his side, and it is not too much tosay with Prof. Von Treitschke that every advance Germany has since made in political life has brought it nearer the ideals of Stein.

The standard work on Stein is the biography by G. H. Pertz, 6 vols., 1849-55, but few English readers will feel the need of going beyond Prof.

Seeley’s ad- mirable Life and Times of Stein, London, 1879, which also contains a full biblio- graphy, (J. F. MM.)

STEINAMANGER (Hung. Szombathely ; Lat. Sabaria), the chief town of the trans-Danubian county of Vas, Hungary, is an old place of some interest. Though it has only 12,000 inhabitants, it is the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop, and has a Dominican convent, a seminary, gymna- sium, chamber of advocates, large orphanage, fine theatre, and a number of superior Government offices. The in- terior of the cathedral is of great beauty, in the Italian style. The town is at the junction of four different rail- ways, and is rapidly rising in importance.

STEINER, Jaxos (1796-1863), one of the greatest geometricians of all ages, was born on the 18th of March 1796 at the Swiss village of Utzendorf (canton Bern). Here he grew up helping his father in his agricultural pursuits, learning to write only at the age of fourteen. At eighteen he became a pupil of Pestalozzi, and_after- wards studied at Heidelberg. Thence he went to Berlin, earning a livelihood here as in Heidelberg by giving private lessons. Here he became acquainted with Crelle, who, encouraged by his ability and by that of Abel, then also staying at Berlin, founded his famous Journal (1826). After Steiner’s publication (1832) of his Systematrsche Entwickelungen he got, through Jacobi’s exertions, who was then professor at Kénigsberg, an honorary degree of that university ; and through the influence of Jacobi and of the brothers Alexander and Wilhelm von Humboldt a new chair of geometry was founded for him at Berlin (1834). This he occupied till his death, which took place in Bern on April 1, 1863, after years of bad health.

Steiner’s mathematical work was confined to geometry. This he treated synthetically, to the total exclusion of analysis, which he hated, and he is said to have considered it a disgrace to synthetical geometry if equal or higher results were obtained by analytical methods. In his own field he surpassed all his contemporaries. His investiga- tions are distinguished by their great generality, by the fertility of his resources, and by a rigour in his proofs which rivals that of the ancients, so that he has been considered the greatest geometrical genius since the time of Apollonius.

In his Systematische Entwickelung der Abhdngigkett geometrischer Gestalten von einander he laid the foundation on which synthetic geometry in its present form rests. He introduces what are now called the geometrical forms (the row, flat pencil, &c.), and estab- lishes between their elements a one-one correspondence, or, as he calls it, makes them projective. He next gives by aid of these projective rows and pencils a new generation of conics and ruled quadric surfaces, “which leads quicker and more directly than former methods into the inner nature of conics and reveals to us the organic connexion of their innumerable properties and mysteries.”

In this work also, of which unfortunately only one volume ap- peared instead of the projected five, we see for the first time the

do2

principle of duality introduced from the very beginning as an im- mediate outflow of the most fundamental properties of the planc, the line, and the point, so that a proof of its correctness is not required.

In a second little volume, Die geometrisehen Construetionen ausge- fihrt mittelst der geraden Linie und eines festen Kreises (1833), he shows, what had becn already suggested by Poncelet, how all prob- lems of the second order can be solved by aid of the straight-edge alone without the use of compasses, as soon as one circle is given on the drawing paper.

The rest of Steiner’s writings are found in numerous papers mostly published in Crelle’s Journal, the first volume of which contains his first fonr papers. The most important are those relating to algebraical curves and surfaces, especially the short paper Allgemeine Eigenschaften algebraischer Curven. This contains only results, and there is no indication of the method by which they were obtained, so that, according to Hesse, “ they are, like Fermat’s theorems, riddles to the present and future generations.” Eminent analysts succeeded in proving some of the theorems, but it was reserved to Cremona to prove them all, and that by a uniform synthetic method, in his book on algebraical curves. Other import- ant investigations relate to maxima and minima. Starting from simple elementary propositions, Steiner advances to the solution of problems which analytically require the calculus of variation, but which at the time altogethcr surpassed the powers of that

cal- culus. Connected with this is the paper Vom Kriimmingsschwer- punete ebener Curven, which contains numerous properties of pedals and roulettes, especially of their areas.

Steiner's papers have been collected and published in two volumes by the Berlin Academy. His lectures on synthetic geometry, con- taining the theory of conics, have been published since his death, edited by Gciser and Schroter. Biographical notices are contained in Geiser's pamphlet Zur Erinnerung an J. Steiner (Schaffhansen,

1874).

STENDAL, a manufacturing town and important rail- way junction in Prussian Saxony, and the former capital of the Altmark, is picturesquely situated on the Uchte, 33 miles to the north-east of Magdeburg. Among the relics of its former importance are the cathedral, built in 1420-24 (though originally founded in 1188) and restored in 1857, the Gothic church of St Mary, founded in 1447, a " Roland column" of 1535, and two fortified gateways, dating from the 13th century. The last form the chief remains of the ancient fortifications, the site of which is now mostly occupied by promenades. A monument to the archzologist Winckelmann (1717-68) commemorates his birth in the town. Stendal is the seat of a large railway workshop, and carries on various branches of textile industry, besides the manufacture of tobacco, machinery, stoves, gold-leaf, &c. The earliest printing-press in the Altmark was erected here, and published an edition of the Sachsenspiegel in 1488 as its first book. The population in 1885 was 16,186.

Stendal was founded in 1151 by Albert the Bear, on the site of a Wendish settlement, and soon afterwards acquired a municipal charter. Becoming capital of the Altmark and a frequent imperial residence, it rose to a considerable degree of prosperity, in part recently restored to it by its railway connexions. When the mark was divided in 1258, Stendal became the seat of the elder or Stendal branch of the house of Ascania, which, however, became extinct in 1820. The original Wends were gradually fused with the later Saxons, although the Platea Slavonica, mentioned in 1475, was still distinguished as the Wenden Strasse in 1567. The population still exhibits a marked Slavonic element.

STENOGRAPHY. See SHortTHAND.

STEPHANUS BYZANTIUS, the author of a geo- graphical dictionary entitled “Evid, of which, apart from some fragments, we possess only the beggarly epitome of one Hermolaus. This work was first edited under the title epi wéAewv (Aldus, Venice, 1502); there are modern editions by Dindorf (1825), Westermann (1839), and Meineke (vol. i., 1850). Even in the imperfect form in which we have it the book is of great value from the references to ancient writers which it preserves. Her- molaus dedicates his epitome to Justinian; whether the first or second emperor of that name is meant is disputed, but it seems probable that Stephanus flourished in the earlier part of the 6th century.

STEPHEN, St, described in late MSS. of Acts xxii. 20 and in subsequent ecclesiastical tradition as mpwrépaprtvs,

S TEHE—S TE

was one of the first seven deacons who were chosen by the church in Jerusalem at the instance of the apostles, He is spoken of as “a man full of faith and the Holy Spirit,” and, though his official function was rather the “serving of tables” than the ministry of the word, the narrative of the book of Acts shows him to have been principally and pre-eminently a preacher. After a brief period of popularity he was accused before the sanhedrin as a blasphemer, and, without being allowed to finish his speech in his own defence, he was hurried without the city walls and stoned to death (c. 37 a.D.). “Devout men ”— an expression apparently used to denote the uncircumcised adherents of the synagogue (see Acts x. 2)— buried Stephen and made great lamentation over him. His martyrdom igs commemorated in the Latin Church on December 26 and in the Greek on December 27. Ecclesiastical tradition tells that in the year 415 his remains were discovered by Lucian, priest of Caphar-Gamala near Jerusalem ; after being deposited for some time in Jerusalem, they were removed by the younger Theodosius to Constantinople, and thence by Pope Pelagius to Rome. Some relics of Stephen were also brought from Palestine to the West by Orosius. Their discovery is commemorated on August 3.

The ministry and martyrdom of Stephen marked a great crisis in the history of the relations of the Christian church to the Gentile world. At first, we are informed, the early disciples, numbering three thousand souls, “had favour with all the people” (Acts ii. 47), who protected them against the rulers, elders, and scribes ; “for all men glori- fied God for that which was done” (Acts iv. 21), and the people “‘magnified” the apostles (v. 13). It was this great popularity of the disciples of Jesus in Jerusalem that led to the ordination of the deacons. Soon a great revulsion of feeling took place. Stephen, “‘full of grace and power,” had wrought “great wonders and signs among the people” (vi. 8); then suddenly arose “certain of the synagogue,” disputing with Stephen, and were “unable to withstand the wisdom and spirit by which he spoke.” What was the new and offensive element intro- duced by Stephen into the apostolic preaching? The accusations against him, and his speech in his own de- fence, alike show that he was the first to realize with any clearness the greatness of the Christian revolution,—the incompatibility of the Mosaic institutions with the spiritu- ality and freeness of the gospel and with its destiny to become a message of salvation for the whole world. The entire drift of his speech is to show the progressive character of revelation, and to show that, as God had often manifested Himself apart from the forms of the law and the synagogue, these could not be held to be of the essence of religion. The seed of much that is most distinctive of the Pauline epistles was sown by the preaching of Stephen.

STEPHEN I., bishop of Rome from about 254 to 257, followed Lucius I. He withdrew from church fellowship with Cyprian and certain Asiatic bishops on account of their views as to the necessity of rebaptizing heretics (Euseb., H. #., vii. 5; Cypr., Epp., 75). He is also mentioned as having insisted on the restoration of the bishops of Leon and Astorga, who had been deposed for unfaithfulness during persecution but afterwards had repented. He is commemorated on August 2. His successor was Sixtus IT.

STEPHEN II., pope from March 752 to April 757, was in deacon’s orders when chosen to the vacant see within twelve days after the death of Zacharias! The main

1 Zacharias died March 15, 752, and a presbyter named Stephen was forthwith chosen to succeed him, who, however, dicd four days afterwards

and before consecration. This Stephen is occasionally called Stephen II., the number of popes of the name being thus raised to ten,

Sth PH EN

difficulty of his pontificate was in connexion with the ageressive attitude of Aistulf, king of the Lombards. After unsuccessful embassies to Aistulf himself and appeals to the emperor Constantine, he, though in feeble health, set out to seek the aid of Pippin, by whom he was received in the neighbourhood of Vitry le Brulé in the beginning of 754. He spent the greater part of that year at St Denis. The result of his negotiations was the Frankish invasion of Aistulf's territory and the famous " donation " of Pippin (see Popgpom, vol. xix. p. 495; and compare France, vol. ix. p. 531). The death of Stephen took place not long after that of Aistulf. He was succeeded by Paul I.

STEPHEN IIL., pope from August 1, 768 to January 94, 772, was a native of Sicily, and, having come to Rome during the pontificate of Gregory III., gradually rose to high office in the service of successive popes. On the deposition of Constantine II., Stephen was chosen to succeed him. Fragmentary records are preserved of the council (April 769) at which the degradation of Con- stantine was completed, certain new arrangements for papal elections made, and the practice of image-worship confirmed. The politics of Stephen's reign are obscure, but he inclined to the Lombard rather than to the Frankish alliance. Ile was succeeded by Adrian I.

STEPHEN IV., pope from June 816 to January 817, succeeded Leo III., whose policy he continued. Immedi- ately after his consecration he ordered the Roman people to swear fidelity to Louis the Pious, to whom he found it prudent to betake himself personally in the following August. After the coronation of Louis at Rheims in October he returned to Rome, where he died in the beginning of the following year. His successor was Paschal I.

STEPHEN V., pope from 885 to 891, succeeded Adrian III., and was in turn succeeded by Formosus. In his dealings with Constantinople in the matter of Photius, as also in his relations with the young Slavonic church, he pursued the policy of Nicholas I. His pontificate was otherwise unimportant.

STEPHEN VI., pope from May 896 to July-August 897, succeeded Boniface VI., and was in turn followed by Romanus. He is remembered only in connexion with his conduct towards the remains of Formosus, his last pre- decessor but one (see Formosvus). It excited a tumult, a ended in his imprisonment and his death by strang- ing.

STEPHEN VII. (February 929 to March 931) and STEPHEN VIII. (July 939 to October 942) were virtually nonentities, who held the pontificate during the so-called “ornocracy” of Theodora and Marozia (see Roms, vol. xx. p. 787-8).

STEPHEN IX., pope from August 1057 to March 1058, succeeded Victor II. (Gebhard of Hichstaédt). His baptisnial name was Frederick, and he was a younger brother of Godfrey, duke of Upper Lorraine, who, as marquis of Tuscany (by his marriage with Beatrice, widow of Boniface, marquis of Tuscany), played a prominent part in the politics of the period. Frederick, who had been raised to the cardinalate by Leo IX., discharged for some time the functions of papal legate at Constantinople, and was with Leo in his unlucky expedition against the Normans. He shared the vicissitudes of his brother’s fortunes, and at one time had to take refuge from Henry Tif, in Monte Cassino. Five days after the death of Victor II. (who had made him cardinal-priest and abbot of Monte Cassino), he was chosen to succeed him. He showed great zeal in enforcing the Hildebrandine policy as to clerical celibacy, and was planning large schemes for the expulsion of the Normans from Italy, and the eleva-

tion of his brother to the imperial throne, when he was seized by a severe illness, from which he only partially and temporarily recovered. He died at Florence March 29, 1058, and was succeeded by Benedict X.

STEPHEN (1105-1154), king of England, the second son of Stephen, earl of Blois, and Adela, daughter of William the Conqueror, was born at Blois in 1105. He obtained the county of Mortain by the gift of his uncle Henry I. and that of Boulogne by marriage with Maud, daughter of Count Eustace. As one of the chief barons of Normandy he had sworn to aid in securing the succession to the crown of England for his cousin the empress Matilda and

her infant son, afterwards Henry IJ. Never- theless, on the death of Henry I. in 1135, Stephen at once crossed over to England, and was welcomed by the citizens of London as king. Aided by his brother Henry, bishop of Winchester, and the justiciar, Bishop Roger of Salis- bury, he made himself master of the royal treasure, and was formally elected and crowned on St Stephen's day, December 26, 1135. In a brief charter issued at the time of his coronation he promised to observe the laws and liberties of the land. A fuller charter, the second of our great charters of liberties, was issued early in 1136. In this document, which was based on that of Henry I., each of the three estates came in for its share of promises, but the leading position of the church and the importance of the aid which it gave the king are shown by the pre- dominant attention paid to ecclesiastical privileges. So far all seemed going well, but the troubles of the reign soon began. A false report of Stephen's death in the summer of 1136 caused revolts to break out in the east and west of England. Roger Bigot seized Norwich, and Baldwin of Redvers occupied Exeter. Stephen, who possessed considerable military skill, speedily put down these rebellions, but the outbreak showed the lightness of the feudal bond and the defectiveness of Stephen's title. In 1137 he crossed over into Normandy to defend his dominions there from Geoffrey of Anjou, and was success- ful enough to make a satisfactory peace, but he returned to find England aflame. A mysterious conspiracy was hatched in the diocese of Ely, where the fenlands may have still concealed some remnants of the opposition to Stephen's grandfather. David, king of Scotland, who had already taken up arms on behalf of his niece Matilda, but had been bought off by the surrender of Carlisle, marched an army into England and advanced as far as Yorkshire. Robert, earl of Gloucester, the strongest of the English nobles, raised the standard of rebellion at Bristol. Against these numerous enemies Stephen contrived at first to make head. The conspiracy at Ely was nipped in the bud; the Scotch invasion was checked in the battle of the Standard, near Northallerton, in 1138, and even against Robert of Gloucester Stephen won some success. But his own weakness and folly proved his ruin. In order to conciliate the barons who remained true to him, he allowed them to build castles, each of which became a centre of petty but intolerable tyranny. Instead of relying on the support of his English subjects, Stephen surrounded himself with a body of foreign mercenaries, who pillaged all alike. He granted earldoms at random, thereby splitting up the royal authority and diminishing the royal revenues.

Lastly,—and this was the worst mistake of all,—he broke with the church, and especially with the great family of Bishop Roger, who had the administrative machinery in their hands. On the ground that they had no right to fortify their castles he arrested the bishops of Lincoln and Salisbury, together with Roger the chancellor, son of the latter. He thus enforced the surrender of the castles, but the church, with the new archbishop, Theobald, and Stephen's brother, Henry of Winchester, now legate, at its

head, declared against him. Henry called a council, laid formal charges against the king, and threatened to appeal to Rome. In the midst of this crisis Matilda and her half-brother, Robert of Gloucester, landed in the south of England, and a civil warbegan. From this time forward, for fourteen dismal years, the land knew no peace. It is needless to go into details. Neither party was strong enough to deal a final blow at the other. The nobility changed sides as they pleased, fighting generally for their own interests or for plunder; bands of freebooters wandered up and down the country ; upwards of a thousand castles, each of which was a den of robbers, were erected; the church found threats and persuasion equally ineffective to restore peace and order. ‘‘Men said openly," we are told by the chronicler, "that Christ and His saints slept." At the battle of Lincoln in 1141 Stephen was taken prisoner. After this Matilda was elected queen, but she soon forfeited the allegiance of her supporters. The Londoners revolted, the empress fled to Oxford, and the earl of Gloucester was taken prisoner. He was exchanged for Stephen, and matters went on as before. About 1147 there came a change. Matilda left the country, and her son Henry took the lead. His predominance was further secured by the death of Robert of Gloucester in 1148. Three years later Henry became count of Anjou on the death of his father, while his marriage with Eleanor of Aquitaine made him one of the most powerful princes in Europe. This great accession of strength enabled him to meet Stephen on more than equal terms, and Stephen on the death of his son Eustace was more inclined to peace. In November 1153 the treaty of Wallingford brought the long struggle toanend. It was agreed that Stephen should reign till his death, and that Henry should succeed him. A scheme of reform was drawn up, which Stephen endeavoured, during the short remainder of his reign, to carry out. He died on October 25, 1154. A

brave man, a good soldier, merciful and generous, but devoid of moral strength and political insight, he was utterly incapable to discharge a task which demanded all the skill and energy of his great successor. His nominal reign was a period of anarchy in English history, important only as a full justification for the tyrannies of Henry I. and Henry II.

Authorities. —Ordericus Vitalis, ed. Le Prévost; William of Malmesbury, ed. Hamilton (Rolls Series); Gesta Stephani, ed. Sewell (Engl. Hist. Soe.); Gervase of Canterbury, ed. Stubbs (Rolls Series); Henry of Huntingdon, ed. Arnold (Rolls Series) ;

English Chronicle, ed. Thorpe (Rolls Series); Freeman, Norman Conquest, vol. v.; Lappenberg, Gesch. Englands, vol. iii. (G. W. P.)

STEPHEN, Sir James (1789-1859), historian, was the son of James Stephen, master in chancery, author of Zhe Slavery of the West India Colonies and other works, and was born in London 3d January 1789. He was educated at Trinity Hall, Cambridge, graduating B.A. in 1812, after which he studied for the bar and was called at Lincoln’s Inn. He obtained an extensive practice as a chancery barrister, being ultimately counsel to the colonial depart- ment and counsel to the Board of Trade. In 1834 he be- came assistant under-secretary for the colonies, and shortly afterwards permanent under-secretary. On his retirement in 1847 he was made a knight commander of the Bath. In 1849 he was appointed regius professor of modern history in the university of Cambridge, having already distinguished himself by his brilliant studies in ecclesi- astical biography contributed to the Edinburgh Review, which were published that year under the title Essays in Ecclesiastical Biography and Other Subjects ; a 4th edition, with a short memoir, appeared in 1860. He was also the author of Lectures on the History of France, 2 vols., 1851, 3d ed. 1857, and Desultory and Systematic Reading, a lecture, 1853. He died at Coblentz on the 15th of September 1859.

STE—STE

STEPHENS, the incorrect English form of the name of Lstienne, the distinguished French family of scholars and printers.

The founder of the race was Henri EStiEnNE (d. 1520), the scion of a noble family of Provence, who came to Parig in 1502, and soon afterwards set up a printing establish- ment at the top of the Rue St Jean de Beauvais, on the hill of Sainte-Geneviéve opposite the law school. He died in 1520, and, his three sons being minors, the business was carried on by his foreman Simon de Colines, who in 152] married his widow.

Ropert Estrenne (1503-1559) was Henri's second son, After his father's death he acted as assistant to his step- father, and in this capacity superintended the printing of a Latin edition of the New Testament in 16mo (1523). Some slight alterations which he had introduced into the text brought upon him the censures of the faculty of theology, It was the first of a long series of disputes between him and that body. It appears that he had intimate relations with the new Evangelical preachers alinost from the beginning of the movement, and that soon after this time he definitely joined the Reformed Church. In 1526 he entered into pos. session of his father's printing establishment, and adopted as his device the celebrated olive-tree (a reminiscence doubtless of his grandmother's family of Montolivet), with the motto from the epistle to the Romans (xi. 20), Noli altwm sapere, sometimes with the addition sed time. In 1528 he married Perrette, a daughter of the scholar and printer Josse Bade (Jodocus Badius), and in the same year he published his first Latin Bible, an edition in folio, upon which he had been at work for the last four years. In 1532 appeared his Thesaurus Lingue Latine, a dictionary of Latin words and phrases, upon which for two years he had toiled incessantly, with no other assistance than that of Thierry of Beauvais. A second edition, greatly enlarged and improved, appeared in 1536, and a third, still further improved, in 3 vols. folio, in 1543. Though the 7hesaurus is now superseded, its merits must not be forgotten. It was vastly superior to anything of the kind that had ap- peared before ; it formed the basis of future labours, and even as late as 1734 was considered worthy of being re- edited. In 1539 Robert was appointed king's printer for

'Hebrew and Latin, an office to which, after the death of

Conrad Neobar in 1540, he united that of kiny's printer for Greek. In 1541 he was entrusted by Francis I. with the task of procuring from Claude

Garamond, the engraver and type-founder, three sets of Greek type for the royal press. The middle size were the first ready, and with these Robert printed the editio princeps of the Lcclesiasticex Historie of Eusebius and others (1544). The smallest size were first used for the 16mo edition of the New Tes- tament known as the O mirificam (1546), while with the largest Size was printed the magnificent folio of 1550. This edition involved the printer in fresh disputes with the faculty of theology, and towards the end of the following year he left his native town for ever, and took refuge at Geneva, where he published in 1552 a caustic and effec- tive answer to his persecutors, under the title Ad Censuras Theologorum Parisiensium, quibus Biblia a R. Stephano, Lypographo Regio, excusa calumniose notarunt, eiusdem R. S. Responsio. A French translation, which is remarkable for the excellence of its style, was published by him in the same year (printed in Rénouard's Annales de Imprimerie des Estienne). At Geneva Robert proved himself an ardent partisan of Calvin, several of whose works he published. He died there September 7, 1559.

It is by his work in connexion with the Bible, and especially as an editor of the New Testament, that he is on the whole best known. The text of his New Testament of 1550, either in its original form

or in sueh slightly modified form as it assumed in the Elzevir text of 1634, remains to this day the traditional text. But, as modern

scholars have pointed out, this is due rather to its typographieal beauty than to any critical merit. The readings of the fifteen MSS. which Robert's son Henri had collated for the purpose were merely introduced into the margin. The text was still almost exactly that of Erasmus. It was, however, the first edition ever published with a critical apparatus of any sort. Of the whole Bible Robert printed eleven editions, —eight in Latin, two in Hebrew, and one in French ; while of the New Testament alone he printed twelve, —five in Greek, five in Latin, and two in French. In the Greek New Testament of 1551 (printed at Geneva) the present division into verses was introdueed for the first time. The cditiones principes which issued from Robert's press wero eight in number, viz., Husebius, includ- ing the Preparatio Evangelica and the Demonstratio Evangelica as well as the Historia Ecclesiastica

already mentioned (1544-46), Moschopulus (1545), Dionysius of Halicarnassus (February 1547), Alexander Trallianus (January 1548), Dio Cassius (January 1548), Justin Martyr (1551), Xiphilinus (1551), Appian (1551), the last being completed, after'Robert's departure from Paris, by his brothcr Charles, and appearing under his name. These editions, all in folio, except the Moschopulus, which is in 4to, are unrivalled for beauty. Robert also printed numerous editions of Latiu classics, of whieh perhaps the folio Virgil of 1532 is the most noteworthy, and a large quantity of Latin grammars and other educational works (many of them written by his friend Maturin Cordier) in the interests of that cause of which he proved himself so stout a champion,—the new learning.

Cuarzes Estrenne (1504 or 1505-1564), the third son of Henri, was, like his brother Robert, a man of con- siderable learning. After the usual humanistic training he studied medicine, and became a doctor of that faculty in the university of Paris. In 1540 he accompanied the French ambassador Lazare Baif to Italy in the capacity of tutor to his natural son Antoine, the future poet. In 1551, when Robert Estienne left Paris for Geneva, Charles, who had remained a Catholic, took charge of his printing establishment, and in the same year was appointed king's printer. He died in 1564, according to some accounts in prison, having been thrown there for debt.

His principal works are Preadiwm Rusticwm, a collection of tracts which he had conzpiled from aneient writers on various branches of agriculture, and which continued to be a favourite book down to the end of the 17th century; Dictionarium Historicum ac Pocticum (1558), the first French eneyclopedia; Thesaurus Ciccronianus ; and Paradoxes, a free version of the Paradossi of Ortensio Landi, with the omission of a few of the paradoxes and of the iinpious and indecent passages (Paris, 1553; Poitiers, 1553). He was also the author of a treatise on anatomy and of several small cducational works,

Henri Estrenne (1528-1598), sometimes called "Henri II.," was the eldest son of Robert. In the preface to his edition of Aulus Gellius (1585), addressed to his son Paul, he gives an interesting account of his father's household, in which, owing to the various nationalities of those who were employed on the press, Latin was used as a common lan- guage, being

understood and spoken more or less by every member of it, down to the maid-servants. Henri thus picked up Latin asa child, but at his special request he was allowed to learn Greek as a serious study before Latin. At the age of fifteen he became a pupil of Pierre Danés, at that time the first Greek scholar in France. Two years later he began to attend the lectures of Jacques Toussain, one of the royal professors of Greek, and in the same year (1545) was employed by his father to collate a MS. of Dionysius of Halicarnassus. In 1547, after attending for a time the lectures of Turnébe, Toussain's successor, he went to Italy, where he spent two years in hunting for and collating MSS. and in intercourse with learned men. In 1550 he was in England, where he was favourably received by Edward VI. Thence he went to Flanders, where he learnt Spanish. In 1551 he joined his father at Geneva, which henceforth became his home. In 1554 he gave to the world, as the firstfruits of his researches, two first editions, viz., a tract of Dionysius of Halicarnassus and Anacreon, both printed by his uncle Charles. In 1556 Henri was again in Italy, where he discovered at Rome ten new books (xixx.) of Diodorus Siculus. In 1557 he issued

from the press which in the previous year he had set up on his own account at Geneva three first editions, viz., Athena- goras, Maximus Tyrius, and some fragments of Greek his- torians, including Appian's 'AvviBadixy and "TBypicy, and an edition of Aischylus, in which for the first time the Aga- memnon was printed in entirety and as a separate play. In 1558 he was appointed printer to Huldrich Fugger, one of the celebrated family of Augsburg bankers, a post which he held for ten years. In 1559 he printed a Latin transla- tion from his own pen of Sextus Empiricus, and an edition of Diodorus Siculus with the new books. In 1566 he published his best known French work, the Apologie pour Hérodote, or, as he himself called it, Z'Lntroduction au Traté de la Conformité des Merverlles Anciennes avec les Modernes ou Traité preparatif a? Apologie pour Hérodote. Some passages in the original edition being considered objectionable by the Geneva consistory, he was compelled to cancel the pages containing them. The book became highly popular. Within sixteen years twelve editions were printed. In 1572 Henri published the great work upon which he had been labouring for many years, the Z'he- saurus Grece Linguex, in 5 vols. folio,

The publication in 1578 of his Dialogues du nouveau Frangois Italianizé brought lim into a fresh dispute with the consistory. To avoid their censure he went to Paris, and resided at the French court for the whole of 1579. On his return to Geneva in the spring of 1580 he was summoned before the consistory, and, proving contumacious, was imprisoned for a week. From this time his life became more and more of a nomad one. He is to be found at Basel, Heidelberg, Vienna, Pesth, everywhere but at Geneva, these journeys being undertaken partly in the hope of procuring patrons and purchasers for his books (for the large sums which he had spent on such publications as the Thesaurus and the Plato of 1578 had almost ruined him), partly from the increasing restlessness of his disposition. But the result of these long absences was that his press stood nearly at a standstill. A few editions of classical authors were brought out, but each successive one showed a falling off. Such value as the later ones had was chiefly due to the notes furnished by Casaubon, who in 1586 had married Henri's daughter Florence. Henri's last years were marked by ever-increasing infirmity of mind and temper. In 1597 he left Geneva for the last time. After visiting Montpellier, where Casaubon was now professor, he made for Paris, but was seized with sudden illness at Lyons, and died there in his seventieth year, at the end of January 1598. Few men have ever served the cause of learning more devotedly. For over thirty years the amount which he produced, whether as printer, editor, or original writer, was enormous. The productions of his press, though printed with the same beautiful type as his father's books, are, owing to the poorness of the paper and ink, inferior to them in general beauty. The best, perhaps, froma typographical point of view, are the Poctxw Greci Principes (folio, 1566), the Plutarch (13 vols. 8vo, 1572), and the Plato (8 vols. folio, 1573). It was rather Henri Estienne's scholarship which gave value to his editions. He was not ouly his own press-corrector but his own editor. Though by the latter half of the 16th century nearly all the important Greek and Latin authors that we now possess had been published, his untiring aetivity still found some gleanings. Eighteen first editions of Greek authors and one of a Latin author are due to his press. The most important have been already mentioned. Henri's reputation as a scholar and editor has increased of late years. His familiarity with the Greek language has always been admitted to have been quite exceptional ; but he has been accused of want of taste and judgment, of carelessuess and rashness. Special censure has been passed on his Plutarch,

in which he is said to have intro- duced conjectures of his own into the text, while pretending to have derived them from MS. authority. But a recent editor, Sintenis, has shown that, though like all the other editors of his day he did not give references to his authorities, every one of his supposed eonjectures can be traced to some MS. Whatever may be said as to his taste or his judgment, it seems that he was both careful and scrupulous, and that he only resorted to conjecture when authority failed him, And, whatever the merit of his conjectures,

036

he was at any ratc the first to show what conjecture could do towards restoring a hopelessly corrupt passage. The work, how- ever, on which his fame as a scholar is most surely based is the Thesaurus Greee Linguxz. After making due allowance for the fact that considerable materials for the work had been already collected by his father, and that he received considerable assistance from the German scholar Sylburg, he is still entitled to the very highest praise as the producer of a work which was of the greatest service to scholarship and which in those early days of Greek learning could have been produced by no one buta giant. Two editions of the Thesaurus have been published in this century—at London by Valpy (1815-25) and at Paris by Didot (1831-63). It was one of Henri Estienne's great merits that, unlike nearly all the French scholars who preceded him, he did not neglect his own lan- guage. While Budé wrote French with difficulty and considered it hardly a fit language for a scholar to use, Henri Estienne was loud in its praises and gave practical proof of its capabilities. Of his French writings three were devoted to this theme :—(1) Conformité du Langage Frangois avec le Gree (published in 1575, but without date; ed. L. Feugére, 1850), in which French is shown to have, among modern languages, the most affinity with Greek, the first of all languages ; (2) Dewx Dialogues du nouveau Francois Italianizé (Geneva, 1578 ; reprinted, 2 vols., 1883), directed against the fashion prevailing in the court of Catherine de' Medici of using Italian words and forms; (3) Project du Livre Intitulé de la Pre- cellence du Langage Francois (Paris, 1579; ed. Feugére, 1853), which treats of the superiority of French to Italian. An interesting feature of this tract is the account of French proverbs, and, Henry III. having expressed some doubts as to the genuineness of some of them, Henri

Estieune published, in 1594, (4) Les Premices ou le J. livre des Proverbes Epigrammatizez (never reprinted and very rare). Finally, there remains (5) the Apologie pour Hérodote, the work by virtue of which Henri Estienne belongs to literature. The ostensible object of the book is to show that the strange stories in Herodotus may be paralleled by equally strange ones of modern times. Virtually it is a bitter satire on the writer's age, especially on the Roman Church. Put together without any method, its extreme desultoriness makes it difficult to read continuously, but the numer- ous stories, collected partly from various literary sources, notably from the preachers Menot and Maillard, partly from the writer's own multifarious experience, with which it is packed, make it an interesting commentary on the manners and fashions of the time. But satire, to be effective, should be either humorous or righteously indignant, and, while such humour as there is in the Apologie is decidedly heavy, the writer's indignation is generally forgotten in his evident relish for scandal. The style is, after all, its chief inerit. Though it bears evident traces of hurry, it is, like that of all Henri Estienne's French writings, clear, easy, and vigorous, uniting the directness and sensuousness of the older writers with a suppleness and logical precision which at this time were almost new elements in French prose. An edition of the Apologie has recently been published by Liseux (ed. Ristelhuber, 2 vols., 1879), after one of the only two copies of the original uncancelled edition that are known to exist. The very remarkable political pamphlet en- titled Discours Mervetlleux dela Vie et des Déportements de Catherine de Médicis, which appeared in 1574, has been ascribed to Henri Estienne, but the evidence both internal and external is conclusive against his being the author of it. Of his Latin writings the most worthy of notice are the De Latinitate falso suspecta (1576), the Pscudo-Cicero (1577), and the Nizoliodidascalus (1578), all three written against the Ciceronians, and the Francofordiense Emporium (1574), a panegyric on the Frankfort fair (reprinted with a French translation by Liseux, 1875). He also wrote a large quantity of indifferent Latin verses, including a long poem entitled Musa Monitrix Principum (Basel, 1590).

The primary authorities for an account of the Estiennes are their own works. In the garrulous and egotistical prefaces which Henri was in the habit of pre- fixing to his editions will be found many scattered biographical details. Twenty- seven letters from Henri to John of Crafftheim (Crato) (ed. F.

Passow, 1830) have been printed, and there is one of Robert's in Herminjard's Correspondance des Reéformateurs dans les Pays de Langue Frangaise (7 vols. published), while a few other contemporary references to him will be found in the same work. The secondary authorities are Janssen van Almelovecn, De Vitis Stephanorum (Amst., 1683); Maittaire, Stephanorum Historia (Lond., 1709); A. A. Rénouard, Annales deU Imprimerie des Estienne (2d ed., Paris, 1843); the article on Estienne by A. F. Didot in the Nouv. Biog. Gén.; and an article by Mark Pattison in the Quart. Rev.

for April 1865. There is a good account of Henri's Thesaurus in the Quart. Rev. for January 1820, written by Bishop Blomfield. NGA)

STEPHENS, A.exanper Hamitton (1812-1883), American statesman, was born in Georgia, February 11, 1812. In spite of many difficulties imposed by poverty and ill-health, he became a lawyer and politician of great reputation and popularity. He was one of the Whig leaders of his State until about 1850, and then drifted into the Democratic party through the rising discussions of slavery, serving in Congress from 1843 until 1859. In 1860 he opposed secession warmly ; but when his State

STH Ph 2 s

had seceded he "' followed his State," and was elected vice- president of the Confederate States. Whatever there wags of opposition to the despotic tendencies of Jefferson Davis gathered around Stephens as a centre; and the vice-pre- sident was never an influential member of the Confederate administration. His popularity in Georgia was unbounded, and he was elected representative in Congress in 1877-82, and governor, 1882-83, dying in office. In person he was small and extremely emaciated, seldom weighing more than 90 pounds, and always in delicate health; but his powers as an orator were remarkable.

Cleveland's A. H. Stephens in Public and Private and Johnston and Browne's Life of A. H. Stephens are the main authorities for

Stephens's life. His political opinions are fully given in his work, The War between the States.

STEPHENS, Joun Luoyp (1805-1852), traveller, was born 28th November 1805, at Shrewsbury, N.J., United States. Having been admitted to the bar, he practised his profession for about eight years in New York city, In 1834, the state of his health rendering it advisable that he should travel, he visited Europe, and for two years made a tour through many countries of that continent, extending his travels to Egypt and Syria. On his return to New York he published (under the name of “George” Stephens) in 1837 Incidents of Travel in ELgypt, Arabia Petrxa, and the Holy Land. This work was followed next year by the publication, also in two volumes, of Incidents of Travel in Greece, Turkey, Russia, and Poland. In 1839 Stephens arranged with Frederick Catherwood of London, who had accompanied him on some of his travels, and illustrated the above-mentioned publications, that they should make an exploration together in Central America, with a view to discovering and examining ancient art said to exist in the dense forests of that tropical region. Stephens, meantime, was appointed United States minister to Central America. The joint travels of Stephens and F. Catherwood occupied some eight months in 1839 and 1840. As the result of these researches Stephens published in 1841 Jncidents of Travels in Central America, Chiapas, and Yucatan. In the autumn of 1841 the two travellers made a second explora- tion of Yucatan, the fruits of which were gathered up in a work published by Stephens in 1843,—Jncidents of Travel in Yucatan. This work describes the most exten- sive travels executed till that date by a stranger im the peninsula, and, as the author claims, “contains account of visits to forty-four ruined cities or places in which remains or vestiges of ancient populations were found.” It fixed the sites of many prehistoric cities and supplied correct delineations of their existing monuments. This publica- tion enjoyed a wide popularity, and made such an impres- sion on Prescott the historian that he urged Stephens to prosecute his researches of American antiquities in Peru. Stephens was, however, disinclined to so distant an expedi- tion. He became a director of the newly-formed American Ocean Steam Navigation Company, which established the first American line of trans-Atlantic steamships, He visited Panama to reconnoitre the ground with a view to the construction of a railway across the isthmus, and, first as vice-president and then as president of the Panama Rail- way Company, spent the greater part of two years In superintending the project. His health was, however, entirely undermined

by his long and incautious exposure to the deadly climate of Central America, and he died at New York on the 10th October 1852.

Stephens made no pretensions to the title of a scientific traveller. He had, however, a natural curiosity after all kinds of human knowledge, shrewd and accurate powers of observation, and a more than common measure of per- severance, tact, and resource.

Ss T E—

STEPHENSON, Grorce (1781-1848), perfecter of the locomotive, was the son or Robert Stephenson, fireman of a colliery engine at Wylam, near Newcastle, where he was born 9th June 1781. In boyhood he was employed as a cowherd, and occupied his leisure in erecting clay engines and sinilar mechanical aniusements. Afterwards he drove the ginhorse at a colliery, and in his fourteenth year became assistant to his father in firing the engine at 9 shilling a day. He set himself diligently to qualify himself for higher duties, and in his seventeenth year was appointed engineman or plugman. As yet he was unable to read, but, stimulated by the desire to obtain fuller information regarding the wonderful inventions of Boulton and Watt, he began in his eighteenth year to attend a night school, and soon made remarkably rapid progress. In 1801 he obtained the situation of brakesman, and in 1812 was appointed engine-wright at Killingworth high pit at a salary of £100 a year. Meantime he had been employing his leisure in watch and clock cleaning, in studying mechanics, and in various experiments with a yiew of solving the difficulties connected with the con- struction of a satisfactory locomotive. Having obtained permission from Lord Ravensworth, the principal partner of the Killingworth colliery to incur the outlay for con- structing a “travelling engine” for the tramroads between the colliery and the shipping port nine miles distant, he made a successful trial with the engine, which he named “My Lord,” 25th July 1814. Setting himself diligently to improve his invention, he thoroughly satisfied himself that for the proper success of the locomotive a railway as nearly as possible level was an essential condition. In 1822 he succeeded in impressing with the importance of his invention the projectors of the Stockton and Darlington Railway, who had contemplated using horses for their waggons, and was appointed engineer of the railway, with liberty to carry out his own

plans, the result being the opening, 27th September 1825, of the first railway over which passengers and goods were carried by a locomotive. The success of the Stockton and Darlington Railway led to the employment of Stephenson in the construction of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway, which, notwithstanding prognostications of failure by the most eminent engineers of the day, he carried successfully through Chat Moss. He also succeeded in persuading the directors to give the locomotive a trial; and, as his improved invention, the “Rocket,” during her trial trip made 29 miles an hour, his suggestion met with complete approval; with the opening of the line, 15th September 1830, the modern era of railways may be said to have been definitely inaug- urated. While his experiments in connexion with loco- motives were in progress, the construction of a safety lamp for use in mines occupied much of his attention. There can be no doubt regarding the justice of his claims to be considered the first inventor of the tube safety lamp, not- withstanding that the name of Sir Humphry Davy has been chiefly associated with the discovery. In recognition of the “valuable service he had thus rendered to man- kind,” subscriptions were in 1815 collected in behalf of Stephenson which amounted to £1000, a sum which he found of great convenience in connexion with his locomo- tive experiments. Stephenson was closely connected with the more important of the railway projects which the success of the Liverpool and Manchester line called into existence, but he strongly disapproved of the railway mania which ensued, and predicted that only ruin could result from the prevalent disposition towards railway speculation. He was frequently consulted in regard to the construction of foreign railways, and in this connexion visited Belgium and Spain in 1845. Towards the close of his life he retired from active duties, and at his residence at Tupton House,

Chesterfield, interested himself chiefly in farming and horticultural pursuits. He died 12th August 1848.

See Story of the Life of George Stephenson, by Samuel Smiles, 1857, new ed. 1873 ; and Smiles’s Lives of British Engincers, vol. iii.

STEPHENSON, Roserr (1803-1859), engineer, son of the preceding by his first wife Fanny Henderson, was born at Willington Quay, 16th October

1803. Remembering his own early difficulties owing to deficient instruction, his father bestowed special care on his education, sending him in his twelfth year to attend Mr Bruce's school in Percy Street, Newcastle, where he remained about four years. In 1819 he was apprenticed to a coalviewer at Killingworth to learn the business of the colliery, after which, to perfect his training in technical science, he was sent in 1822 to attend the science classes at the university of Edinburgh. On his return he assisted his father in the survey of various railway lines, but in 1824 he accepted an engage- ment to take charge of the engineering operations of the Columbian Mining Association of London. On account of the harassing difficulties of the situation he resigned it in 1827, and after his return to England undertook the management of his father's factory in Newcastle, greatly aiding him in the improvement of his locomotives, the result being the construction of the "Rocket," which firmly established the practicability of steam locomotion on railways. Subsequently his services were in great request as a railway engineer, and after the retirement of his father he was regarded as the chief authority on the subject. In this connexion his most remarkable achieve- ments were his railway viaducts on the tubular system, constructed with the aid of the practical knowledge of Sir William Fairbairn, and justly characterized as 'the greatest discovery in construction in our day." Among his more notable bridges are the Royal Border bridge at Berwick-on-Tweed, the high-level bridge at Newcastle-on- Tyne, the Britannia tubular bridge over the Menai Straits, the Conway tubular bridge, and the Victoria tubular bridge over the St Lawrence, Canada. In 1847 he entered the House of Commons as member for Whitby. He was frequently consulted in the construction of foreign railways, and was decorated for his services by the king of Belgium, the king of Sweden, and the emperor of the French. In 1855 he was elected president of the Institute of Civil Engineers. He died 12th October 1859, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

See The Story of the Life of George Stephenson, including a Memoir of his Son Robert Stephenson, by Samuel Smiles, 1857, new ed. 1873; Jeaffreson, Life of Robert Stephenson, 2 vols., 1864; and Smiles's Lives of British Engineers, vol. iii.

STEREOCHROMY. See Sizica.

STEREOSCOPE is an optical instrument for repre- senting in apparent relief and solidity all natural objects by uniting into one image two representations of these objects as seen by each eye separately. That the two eyes form different images of any objects which are near enough to have dissimilar perspective projections has been long known, and may be readily tested by any one. Euclid proved it geometrically with reference to a sphere (26th, 27th, and 28th theorems of his Treatise on Optics) ; Galen showed how the demonstration might be made.! Porta (q.v.), in his work on Refraction, also writes on the subject, and Leonardo da Vinci adduced the want of correspond- ence between the parts of the background intercepted by a near object seen by the two eyes singly "as the reason why no painting can show a rilievo equal to that of natural objects seen by both eyes within a moderate distance."2 In 1613 Aguilonius, a Jesuit, in his work on Optics, attributed the union of the two unlike pictures into

1 De Usu Partium Corporis Humant, Lyons, 1550, p. 598. 2 Trattata della Pietura, Scultura, ed Architettwra, Milan, 1584.

a clear image to a 'common sense" which gave its aid equally to each eye, —this common sense being specially exerted when the object is placed much nearer to one eye than to the other, so that the sizes as well as the forms of the two retinal pictures are sensibly different. The sub- ject was merely touched by various other writers after Aguilonius until 1775, when Harris! observes: "We have other helps for distinguishing prominences of small 'parts besides those by which we distinguish distances in general, as to their degrees of light and shade, and the prospect we have round them. Again, by the parallax, on account of the distance betwixt our eyes, we can distinguish, besides the front part, the two sides of a near object not thicker than the said distance, and this gives a visible rilievo to such objects, which helps greatly to raise or detach them from the plane in which they lie. Thus the nose on a face is the more remarkably raised by our seeing both sides of it at once." This was undoubtedly a con- siderable step towards a sound theory of binocular vision, but it cannot be said to have anticipated the invention of the stereoscope. This instrument owes its origin entirely to the

experimental researches of Sir Charles Wheatstone on binocular vision, and the following passage from Mayo's Outlines of Human Physiology, p. 288, published in 1833, is the first clear enunciation of the principle on which it is constructed :—" A solid object, being so placed as to be regarded by both eyes, projects a different per- spective figure on each retina; now if these two perspect- ives be actually copied on paper, and presented one to each eye, so as to fall on corresponding parts, the original solid figure will be apparently reproduced in such a manner that no effort of the imagination can make it appear as a representation on a plane surface." Sir Charles Wheat- stone's 'Contributions to the Physiology of Vision, Part the First" appeared in the Philosophical Transactions of 1838, but this paper was the result of investigations extending over a period of years, and there is evidence that reflecting stereoscopes were constructed for Wheat- stone by Newman, a well-known philosophical instrument maker, so early as the winter of 1832. Wheatstone no doubt also, as early as 1845, employed photographic pictures for his reflecting stereoscope. The subject was taken up by Sir David Brewstcr, and was developed more particularly in two papers read to the Royal Society of Kdinburgh in January 1843 and April 1844. These re- searches led Brewster to the invention of the lenticular or refracting stereoscope. The discoveries of Daguerre and Talbot, and the rapid development of the art of photo- graphy, enabled photographs to be taken suitable for the Stereoscope, thus superseding the geometrical drawings previously employed, and in 1849 Duboscq, a Parisian optician, began the manufacture of lenticular stereoscopes and executed a series of binocular daguerrotypes of living individuals, statues, bouquets of flowers, and objects of natural history. For many years the refracting stereoscope of Brewster was one of the most popular of scientific in- struments, and was to be found, along with an appropriate collection of pictures, in every drawing-room, but of late years it has somewhat fallen into the background, and the manufacture by photographers of stereoscopic views now forms but a small portion of their work. Whilst much credit is due to Brewster for his writings on binocular vision, and for the efforts he made to introduce the stereo- scope to the public, there is no doubt that Wheatstone was not only the real inventor of the instrument but he also laid down in his paper published in 1838, and in a second con- tribution which appeared in the Philosophical Transactions in 1852, the true principles of binocular vision.2

1 Opticks, vol. ii. pp. 41 and 245.

2 See Brewster on the Stereoscope, 1856 ; Wheatstone’s Scientific

STEGER OSCOTrE

When we look at an external object with both eyes it is seen generally as a single object, although there must be two retinal pictures, one for each eye. This depends on the fact that the excitation of certain associated spots on the two retin is referred to the same point in space, or, in other words, that the luminous impression which originates by the irritation of two associated points appears as one point in the visual field. Such associated points or areas of the retina are said to be corresponding or identical, When an object is seen single by two eyes, the two images must fall on corresponding points of the retina. If one eye be pushed to the side, the image on the retina of that eye is displaced from its appropriate identical point, and a double image is the result. Now the term horopter ig applied to represent an imaginary surface containing “all those points of the outer world from which rays of light passing to both eyes fall upon identical points of the retina, the eyes being in a certain position.” The horopter varies with the different positions of the eyes (see Eyx, vol. vill. p. 826). But it is a familiar experience that we not only see a single object with two eyes, but the object, say a cube or a book lying on the table, is seen in relief, that is, we take cognizance of the third dimension occupied by the body in space, although the two retinal pictures are ona plane. Itis clear that the two images of the object which do not coincide with the horopter cannot be completely united so as to furnish one single visual impres- sion, Further, it can readily be demonstrated that the two retinal pictures are dissimilar, and yet the two images are fused into one and give the impression of a single object occupying three dimensions. To explain these phenomena, Wheatstone put forward the theory that the mind completely fused the dissimilar pictures into one, and that whenever there occurs such complete mental fusion of images really dissimilar, and incapable of mathematical coincidence, the result is a perception of depth of space, or solidity, or relief. The objection to this theory as stated by Wheatstone is that complete fusion does not take place. It is always possible by close analysis of visual perceptions to distinguish between the two retinal pictures. Further, if the

fusion is mental, as stated by Wheatstone, it is an example of unconscious cerebration. Another explanation has been suggested by Briicke.? When we look at objects near at hand the optic axes are converged strongly, and they become less and less converged as we gaze at objects farther and farther away. There is thus a series of axial adjustments, the necessary muscular movements giving rise to definite sensations, by which we estimate the relative distance of objects in the field of view. A man with one eye cannot judge by this method. We habitually depend upon binocular vision for the guidance of all such movements as require an exact estimate of the respective proximity of two or more objects. ‘A very good test experiment is to suspend a curtain ring in such a manner as to present its edge at the distance of four or five feet from the eye, and then to try to push sideways through its hoop the curved handle of a walking stick held by the lower end ; in this

Papers, published by the Physical Society of London, 1879; and an article by the late Dr William Carpenter in Hdinburgh Review for

1858.

3 This theory is usually attributed to Briicke, but something very similar to it was taught by Brewster. Brewster, however, did not attach importance to muscular sensations as an element in the question, and was content with pointing out that, in looking at the stercoscopice pictures of a bust, for example, “the cyes will instantly, by means of their power of convergence, unite the separated points of the eyes, and then the still more separated points of the ears, running over each part of the bust with the rapidity of lightning, and uniting all the corresponding points in succession, precisely as it does in looking at the bust itself.” See his article ‘‘ Stcreoscope,” in Hneye. Britan.; 8th ed., vol. xx. p. 689.

feat, which can be readily accomplished under the guidance of binocular vision, large odds may be laid that success will not be attained when one eye is closed, until a suc- cession of trials shall have enabled the experimenter to measure the distance of the ring by the muscular move- ments of his arm.”! According to Briicke, the two eyes are continually in a

state of motion, and their position of convergence, now greater now less, passes from one side to the other, so that the observer combines successively the different parts of the two pictures, thus giving rise to sensations of depth of space and of subjects stand- ing out in relief. Briicke's theory, in short, is that our perception of depth depends on the fusion of muscular sensations, or rather of nervous impressions arising from the muscles of the eyeballs. It was, however, pointed out by Dove that the sensation of relief, solidity, or per- spective is perfect even when natural objects or stereoscopic pictures are seen momentarily by an electric flash lasting only yz,t-yp of a second, during which time it is in- conceivable that there can be any change in the degree of convergence of the optic axes. This experiment is fatal to Briicke's theory, and Wheatstone was right in asserting that the sensation of relief is instantaneous. A third theory is that of Joseph Le Conte, advanced in 1871, and thus stated by himself :—" All objects or points of objects either beyond or nearer than the point of sight are doubled, but differently,—the former homonymously, the latter hetcronymously. The double images in the former case are united by less convergence, in the latter case by greater convergence, of the optic axes. Now, the observer knows instinctively and without trial, in any case of double images, whether they will be united by greater or less optic convergence, and therefore never makes a mistake, or attempts to unite by making a wrong movement of the optic axes. In other words, the eye (or the mind) in- stinctively distinguishes homonymous from heteronymous images, referring the former to objects beyond, and the latter to objects this side of, the point of sight." Thus, according to Le Conte, the mind perceives relief znstantly but not zmmediately, and it does so by means of double images. This theory does not possess the merit of simpli- city, and, whilst it may explain the phenomenon of relief as experienced by those who have been specially trained to the analysis of visual perceptions, it does not satis- factorily account for the experience of everyday life. We are therefore obliged to fall back on the theory of Wheatstone, somewhat modified, namely, that there are, behind the phenomena referred to the retina, psychical operations, unconsciously performed, which fuse together the results of the retinal impressions. In the language of Hermann, "corresponding points are therefore such points as furnish images, which, as experience teaches, are habitually combined or fused. But, as it appears necessary to effect these combinations in order to obtain correct impressions of objects, we get into

the habit of fusing also the images of the two not perfectly corresponding points which, under ordinary circumstances, we should perceive as double. It can easily be demonstrated that simultaneous images which fall upon corresponding points are not united, although it is true that they do not form second images. When the mind must unite images which do not fall upon corresponding points, the process must be associated with the conception that the corresponding points in the object occupy the situation for which the eye would have to be arranged, in order that the image should coincide.”*

To dbtain binocular pictures suitable for the stereoscope, the camera must be placed successively in two points of the circum-

Carpenter, Edinburgh Review, 1858. 2 American Journal of Science and Arts, vol. ii., 1871. 8 Hermann’s Physiology, translated by Gamgee, p. 480.

ference of a circle of which the object is the centre, and the points at which the camera is so placed must have the angular distanco representing the convergence of the optic axes when the object is to be vicwed in the stereoscope. For example, if the pictures are to be seen in the stereoscope at a distance of 8 inches before the eyes, the convergence will be 18°, and the camera must be stationed at two points on the circle at the same angular distance. This distance of the camera from the object only affects the magnitude of the picture. Usually two cameras are employed, fixed at the proper angular positions. Wheatstone gives the following table of the inclination of the optic axes at different distances, and it also shows “ the angular positions of the camera required to obtain binocular pictures which shall appear at a given distance in the stereoscope in their true relief.” ee CO Oe We i ie we rer we we Distance in inches 71:5 35°7 23-8 17-8 13-2 11:8 10-1 8°8 7°8 7°0 6-4 5°8 5:4 5°0 4°6 “The distance is equal to 4a cotang 4 6,—a denoting the distance between the two eyes and @ the inclination of the optic axes” (Wheatstone, Scientific Papers, p. 270).

Suppose two stereoscopic pictures thus taken are presented to

the two eyes; ; C)

it is possible by an effort so to converge the eyes as to throw the im- anne ou corres- onding points, ad “

The principle of Wheatstone’s reflecting stereoscope is illustrated in fig. 2. It consisted of two plane mirrors, about 4 inches square, fixed in frames B and so adjusted that their backs form an angle of 90° with each \ other. These mirrors | \ /

Fig. 1.—Stereoscopic figures. pyramid.

A, cone; B, ten-sided

> ‘ie

7

a

~

hy

.

ae

~

are fixed to an upright against the middleline of a vertical board cut Ss away so as to allow the

eyes to be placed be-a fore the mirrors. On each side there is a panel bearing a groove above and below into which the correspond- , } ing pictures can be?* slid. Mechanical ar- rangements also exist for the purpose of moving the pictures to or from the mirrors and also for inclining the pictures at any ft angle (fig.3). There is one position in which the binocular image will be immediately seen single, of its pro- per size, and without fatigue, “because in this position only the

i

Uy

2

»

Fic. 2.—Diagram of Wheatstone’s Reflecting Stereo- scope. K, K, right and left eyes; S, 8’, 8S”, mirrors; L, R, panels for holding pictures; a@ 0, picture on

_left side; a, b,, picture on right side; a, 8, A and a, B, p are corresponding points on retine; ALB, object as seen in relief in mirrors; 6, seen by left eye in position B, and image on retinaat 8; Lsecn at LR, and retinal image at A; @ seen at A, and retinal image at a; a’ seen at A, and retinal image

5 : ata; Rscenat RL, and retinal image atp; 6’ seen

ordinary relations be- atB, and retinal image at 6.—Landois and Stirling’s

tween the magnitude Physiology.

of the pictures in the retina, the inclination of the optic axes, and

the adaptation of the eye to distinct vision at different distances

are preserved ” (Wheatstone). Although somewhat cumbrous, the

reflecting stereoscope is a most useful instrument, and enables one

040

to perform a greater variety of experiments on binocular vision than can be carricd out easily with the more common form.

Fic. 3.—Wheatstone’s Reflecting Stereoscope.

Wheatstone also invented a form of stereoscope in which the pic- tures were brought on corresponding points of the retina by refrac- tion instead of by reflexion. This had a form very like the ordinary stereoscope, but, instead of lenses in the apertures to which the eyes are directed, it had “a pair of glass prisms having their faces inclined 15° and their refractive angles turned towards each other… . A pair of plate-glass prisms, their faces making with each other an angle of 12°, will bring two pictures, the corresponding points of which are 23 inches apart, to coincide at a distance of 12 inches, and a pair with an angle of 15° will occasion coincidence at 8 inches,’

The form of stereoscope generally used is that invented by Sir David Brewster, and is known as the refracting stereoscope. The arrangement is shown diagrammatically in fig. 4. Let the left eye be at A and the right at B; let @ and b be the corresponding pic- tures for each eye, and Pi, Po, two prisms of glass. A prism refracts rays of light so that the object seen through the prism appears to be nearer to the refracting edge; the prism 7, therefore refracts the ray ap, in the direction pA, as if it proceeded from ¢. The prism p, refracts the ray bp, so that to the eye at B it ae ‘i also appears to proceed ss from “5 The effect of cata i . es: this is that the object Fig. 4.—Diagram of the Refracting Stereoscope. really appears to be atc. Andas the points a and b combine to form the point c, sod and ¢ unite to form the point /, and g and hk to form the point 4 (Weinhold). This stereoscope consists of a pyramidal box blackened inside and having a lid for the admission of light (fig. 5). At the narrow end of the box are two tubes carrying the lenses. The tubes move up and down to suit eyes of different focal lengths, and sometimes convex or concave lenses are in- serted over the prisms to meet the wants of long-sighted or short-: sighted persons. Fig.6 shows the upper end of the stereoscope, with the lenses in position.

A. Stroh (without knowing that H. Grubb

Fie. 5.—Sir David Brewster’s Stereoscope. had described the essentials of the apparatus in 1879) has recently invented a new form of stereoscope based on the well-known effects

1 Wheatstone’s Scientific Papers, p. 267.

of the persistence of vision. T’wo stereoscopic pictures are simul. taneously projected by two lanterns on a screen so as to overlap, — and disks having suitable slits : are rotated in front of the lan- q@me== terns and also in front of the eyes of the observer, in such a way that only one picture is thrown on the screen at a time, and also that the view of the picture is seen with the right and left eyes alternately. Further, the eonnexion between the disks is so arranged that the time of © obscuring the view of the observer’s right eye or left eye coincides with the time when the light is shut off from the right or left lantern, and thus the left eye sees the picture of the left lanten _ and the right eye that of the right lantern. The two eyes never see at the same time, and each eye views its picture after the other, but the impressions come so fast as to be fused in consciousn and the result is, the image stands out “in solid relief” (Prog, Roy. Soc., No. 244, vol. xl., April 1, 1886). a

During his researches into the physiology of vision, Wheatstone was led to study what he termed conversions of relief. Sometimes when we look at a geometrical figure such as a cube or rhom- boid it may be imagined to represent one of two dissimilar figures. In fig. 7 the rhomboid AX is drawn so that the solid angle A should be scen nearest, and solid angle X farthest, and face ABCD foremost, while XDC is behind. Look steadily and the posi- tion will change: X will appcar nearest, solid angle A farthest; face ACDB will recede behind XDC.? The effects are most obvious when seen with one eye, and ‘‘no illusion of this kind can take place . when an object of three dimensions is seen with both eyes while the optic axes make a sensible angle Fig. 7. with each other, because the appearance of two dissimilar figures, one to each eye, prevents the possibility of mistake” (Wheat- stone). The conversion of a cameo into an intaglio and of an in- taglio into a cameo is a well-known instance of this illusion, Wheatstone observed the conversion of relief exhibited by binocular

ictures in the stereoscope when they are transposed, reficcted, or inverted, and this led him to the invention of the Psewdoscope, an instrument which conveys to the mind false perceptions of all ex- ternal objects. “Two rectangular prisms of flint glass, the faces of which are 1‘2 inch square, are

placed in a frame with their hypo- thenuses parallel and 271 inches from each other; each prism has a motion on an axis corresponding with the angle nearest the cyes, that they may be adjusted so that their bases may have any inclination towards each other” (Wheatstone’s Scientific Papers, p. 275). In fig. 8 there is a diagram of the instrument. Ifa spherical surface be exa- mined with this instrument, it will appear hollow; whilst a hollow surface will appear convex, It is remarkable, however, that the converting powers of this instrument are greatest where the new forms can be conceived without effort. Thus a cameo and an intaglio, a plaster cast in relief and its mould, or any object similar in its op- posite relicfs is at once changed by the pseudoscope into the converse form. As A pointed out by Dr Carpenter, by gazing we can reverse the interior of a mask so as to see the countenance stand out in relief; it is more difficult to throw the features of a bust into the shape of a mould; whilst it is impossible to effect any conversion upon , the features of the living face. “The op- tical change is identically the same in its nature in every one of these cases; and there is nothing in the form of the features which refuses to present a converse, this converted shape being presented by the mask; but the mind, which will admit the . conception of the converted form when suggested by the inanimate mask or bust, is steeled by its previous experience against the notion that actual flesh and blood can undergo such a metamorphosis” (Car- penter, Hdinburgh Re- view, 1858, p. 460).

A little consideration will show that the pic-

. Fig. 6.—Lenses m Refracting Stereoscope.

c

7 :

Fic. 8.—Diagram of Wheat- stone’s Pseudoscope. A,B, tubes containing prisms; a, 6;, and a, B, corre- sponding points; 4a, 8 ¢, positlon of points in visual field.

tures of objects placed © o 0 Os ata great distance from lic, 9.—-Diagram of Von Helmholtz’s Telestereoscope.

the eye are practically

if not wholly identical. Here there is scarcely any stereoscopic

2 Necker, Phil. Mag., 3d series, vol. i. p. 357,

effect, and the landscape may appear to be flat, as in a picture. To obtain a stereoscopic view of a landscape Von Helmholtz invented the Telestercoscope, an instrument which places as it were the point of view of both eyes wide apart. It consists of two mirrors L and R, cach of which projects its image upon 1 and 7, to which the eyes O and o are directed. The eyes O and o are placcd as it were at O, and 0,, according to the distance between L and R; consequently two dissimilar pictures are obtained ; these are mentally combined, with the result that the landscape is seen like a stereoscopic view. The principle of the stereoscope was successfully applied by Wenham in 1854 to the construction of the binocular microscope. See Microscove (vol. xvi. p. 272), and also two papers in the Jour. Roy. Micr. Soc., 1884 :—(1) “On the Mode of Vision with Objectives of Wide Aperture,” by Prof. E. Abbe, p. 20; and (2) “On the Physiology of Binocular Vision with the Microscope,” by Dr Carpenter, p. 486. Prof. Abbe shows, however, that “oblique vision in the microscope is entirely different from that in ordinary vision, inasmuch as there is uo perspective, so that we have no longer the dissimilarity which is the basis of the ordinary stercoscopic effect, but an essentially different mode of dissimilarity between the two pictures.” In the microscope there is no per- spective foreshortening. There is no difference in the outline of an object viewed under the microscope by an axial or by an oblique pencil. There is simply a lateral displacement of the image—an entircly different phenomenon to that which occurs in non-micro- scopic vision, ‘Thus, whilst the mode of formation of dissimilar pictures in the binocular microscope is different from the production of ordinary stereoscopic pictures, the brain mechanism by which they are so fused as to give rise to sensations of solidity, depth, ‘and perspective is the same. (J. G. M.)

STEREOTYPE. See TypoGRAPHY.

STERLING, a city of the United States, in White- side county, Illinois, on Rock River (a tributary of the Mississippi), 110 miles west of Chicago. Mainly on account of the abundant water-power produced by the natural rapids of the river and a dam 1100 feet long, it has become the seat of the most varied manufacturing industry. An artesian well 1000 feet deep, discharging 18,000 gallons per hour, contributes to the water-supply of the town. The population was 5312 in 1870 and 5087 in 1880. Sterling was laid out in 1836 and incorporated in 1857.

STERLING, Joun (1806-1844), author, was descended from a family of Scottish origin which had settled in Treland about the Cromwellian period. His father, Edward Sterling, born at Waterford 27th February 1773, had been called to the Irish bar, but, having fought as a militia captain at Vinegar Hill, afterwards volunteered with his company into the line. On the breaking up of his regiment he went to Scotland, and took to farming at Kames Castle in Bute, where John, the second son, was born 20th July 1806. In 1810 the family removed to Llanblethian, Glamorganshire, and during his residence there Edward Sterling, under the signature of ‘“‘ Vetus,” contributed a number of letters to the Z’%imes, which were reprinted in 1812, and a second series in 1814. In the latter year he removed to Paris, but, the escape of Napoleon from Elba in 1815 compelling him to return to England, he took up his permanent residence in London, obtaining a connexion with the Zimes newspaper, and ultimately being promoted editor. Carlyle, who allows him the dubious credit of being one of the best of newspaper editors, represents him as manifesting “a thoroughly Irish form of character, fire and fervour, vitality of all kinds in genial abundance, but in a much more loquacious, ostentatious, much louder style than is freely patronized on this side of the Channel.” His fiery, emphatic, and oracular mode of writing conferred those characteristics on the Times which were recognized in the sobriquet of the “Thunderer.” The frequent changes of the family residence during the early years of young Sterling rendered his education somewhat desul- tory, but on the settlement in London it became more systematic. After studying for one year at the univer- sity of Glasgow, he in 1824 eutered Trinity College, Cam- bridge, where he had for tutor Julius Charles Hare. At Cambridge he did not distinguish himself except in the

debates of the union, where, “none,” it was related, “ever came near him except the late Charles Buller.” He removed to Trinity Hall with the intention of graduating in law, but left the university without taking a degree. During the next four years he resided chiefly in London, employing himself actively in literature. Along with Frederick Maurice he purchased the Atheneum from J. Silk Buckingham, but the enterprise was not a pecuniary success. Through Maurice he became an “assiduous pilgrim” to the shrine of Coleridge at Hampstead. He also formed an intimacy with the Spanish revolutionist General Torrijos, in whose unfortunate expedition he took an active interest. Shortly after his marriage in 1830, symptoms of pulmonary disease induced him to take up his residence in the island of St Vincent, where he had inherited some property, but after fifteen months he returned to England. After spending some time on the Continent he found his health so much re-established that in June 1834 he accepted a curacy at Hurstmonceaux, where his old tutor Julius Hare was vicar. Acting on the advice of his physician he resigned his clerical duties in the following February, but according to Carlyle ill-health was only the external occasion of his resignation, the primary cause being a partly unconscious divergence from the opinions of the church. Be this as it may, the threaten- ing progress of the insidious disease under which he laboured soon rendered “public life in any professional form” quite impossible. There remained to him the “resource of the pen,” but, having to “live all the rest of his days as in continual flight for lis very existence,” his literary achievements were necessarily fragmentary, and cannot be regarded asa criterion of his capabilities. He published in 1833 Arthur Coningsby, a novel, which at- tracted little attention, and his Poems (1839), the Election, a Poem (1841), and Strafford, a tragedy, were not more successful. He had, however, established a connexion with Blackwood’s Magazine, to which he contributed a variety of papers and several tales, which gave proiise that under more favourable conditions he might have “achieved greatness.” He died at Ventnor 18th September 1844. His father survived him till 1847.

Sterling’s papers were entrusted to the joint care of Thomas Carlyle and Archdeacon Hare, aud it was agreed that the selection of his writings for publication and the preparation of a memoir should be undertaken by the

latter. Essays and Tales, by John Sterling, collected and edited, with a memoir of his life, by Julius Charles Hare, appeared therefore in 1848 in two volumes. So dissatisfied was Carlyle with the memoir, chiefly because it unduly maguified the ecclesiastical side of Sterling's life, that he resolved to give his own "testimony " about his friend, and 'record clearly" what his 'knowledge of him was." His vivid portraiture of Sterling in the Life which appeared in 1851 has perpetuated the memory of Sterling after his writings have ceased to be of interest on their own account,

STERNBERG, a manufacturing town in Moravia, Aus- tria, is situated 9 miles to the north of Olmiitz and 47 miles to the north-east of Briinn. It is the chief seat of the Moravian cotton industry, and it also carries on the manufacture of linen, stockings, liqueurs, sugar, and bricks. Its six suburbs and the surrounding districts are also en- gaged in the textile industry. Fruit, especially cherries, and tobacco are grown in the neighbourhood. The popu- lation in 1880 was 14,243. Sternberg is said to have grown up under the shelter of a castle founded by Yaroslaff of Sternberg on the site of his victory over the Mongols in

1241,

STERNE, Laurence (1713-1768), one of the greatest of English humorists, was the son of an English officer, and great-grandson of an archbishop of York. Nearly all our information about the first forty-six years of his life before he became famous as the author of Tristram Shandy is derived from a short memoir jotted down by

himself for the use of his daughter. It gives nothing but the barest facts, excepting three anecdotes about his in- fancy, his school-days, and his marriage. The date of his birth coincides with the close of the Marlborough wars. He was born at Clonmel, Ireland, on November 24, 1713, a few days after the arrival of his father's regiment from Dunkirk. The regiment was then disbanded, but very soon after re-established, and for ten years the boy and his mother moved from place to place after the regiment, from England to Ireland, and from one part of Ireland to another. The familiarity thus acquired with military life and character stood Sterne in good stead when he

drew the portraits of Uncle Toby and Corporal Trim, and the influence of the excitements, shifts, and hardships of this life of vagabond gentility may also be traced in his own character. To its hardening effect we may fairly refer some part of his later reckless defiance of clerical proprieties and comical persistence in self-conscious eccen- tricity. After ten years of wandering, he was fixed for eight or nine years at a school near Halifax in Yorkshire. His father died when he was in his eighteenth year, and he was indebted for his university education to one of the members of his father's family. His great-grandfather the archbishop had been master of Jesus College, Cambridge, and to Jesus College he was sent in 1732. He was ad- mitted to a sizarship in July 1733, and took his B.A. degree in 1736. One of his uncles was a prominent church dignitary in Yorkshire. Young Sterne took orders, and through his influence obtained in 1738 the living of Sutton, some 8 miles north of York. On his marriage three years afterwards he was presented to the neighbour- ing living of Stillington, and did duty at both places. He was also-a prebendary of York.

Sutton was Sterne's residence for twenty uneventful years—years at least concerning which his biography is silent. The only ascertained fact of consequence is that he kept up an intimacy which had begun at Cambridge with John Hall Stevenson, a witty and accomplished epicurean, owner of Skelton Castle in the Cleveland dis- trict of Yorkshire. Skelton Castle is nearly 40 miles from Sutton, but Sterne, in spite of his double duties, seems to have been a frequent visitor there, and to have found in his not too strait- laced friend a highly congenial companion. Stevenson's various occasional sallies in verse and prose—his ables for Grown Gentlemen, his Crazy Tales, and his numerous skits at the political opponents of Wilkes, among whose "'macaronies" he numbered himself,—were collected after his death, and it is impossible to read them without being struck with their close family resemblance in spirit and turn of thought to Sterne's work, inferior as they are in literary genius. Without Stevenson Sterne would probably have been a more decorous parish priest, but he would probably never have written Z'ristram Shandy or left any other memorial of his singular genius. The two friends began to publish late in life and in the same year. The first two volumes of Tristram Shandy were issued on the Ist of January 1760, and at once made a sensation. York was scandal- ized at its clergyman's indecency and indignant at his caricature of a local physician; London was charmed

with his audacity, wit, and graphic unconventional power. He went to London early in the year to enjoy his triumph, and found himself at once a personage in society,—was called upon and invited out by lion-hunters, was taken to Windsor by Lord Rockingham, and had the honour of supping with the duke of York.

For the last eight years of his life after this sudden leap out of obscurity we have a faithful record of Sterne's feelings and movements in letters to various persons,

ST Tay N

end of the famous Sermon on Conscience in vol. ii. of Tristram he had intimated that, if this sample of Yorick's pulpit eloquence was liked, "there are now in the posses- sion of the Shandy family as many as will make a hand- some volume at the world's service—and much good may they do it." Accordingly, when a second edition of the first instalment of Z'ristram was called for in three months, two volumes of Sermons by Yorick were announced, Although they had little or none of the eccentricity of the history, they proved almost as popular. Sterne's clerical character was far from being universally injured by his indecorous freaks as a humorist: Lord Faulconberg presented the author of Z'ristram Shandy with the living of Coxwold. To this new residence he went in high spirits with his success, "fully determined to write as hard as could be," seeing no reason why he should not give the public two volumes of Shandyism every year and why this should not go on for forty years. By the beginning of August he had another volume written, and was "so delighted with Uncle Toby's imaginary character that he was become an enthusiast." The author's delight in this wonderful creation was not misleading; it has been fully shared by every generation of readers since. For two years in succession Sterne kept his bargain with himself to produce two volumes a year. Vols. iii. and iy. appeared in December 1760; vols. v. and vi. in January 1762. But his sanguine hopes of continuing at this rate were frustrated by ill-health. He was ordered to the south of France; it was two years and a half before he returned ; and he came back with very little accession of strength. His reception by literary circles in France was very flattering. He was overjoyed with it. ''Tis comme & Londres," he wrote to Garrick from Paris ; "TI have

just now a fortnight's dinners and suppers upon my hands." And again, "Be it known I Shandy it away fifty times more than I was ever wont—talk more nonsense than ever you heard me talk in your days, and to all sorts of people." 'Through all his pleasant experiences of French society, and through the fits of dangerous illness by which they were diversified, he continued to build up his history of the Shandy family, but the work did not progress as rapidly as it had done. Not till January 1765 was he ready with the fourth instalment of two volumes ; and one of them, vol. vii., leaving the Shandy family for a time, gave a lively sketch of the writer's own travels to the south of France in search of health. This was a digression of a new kind, if anything can be called a digression in a work the plan of which is to fly off at a tangent whenever and wherever the writer's whim tempts him. In the first volume, anticipating an obvious complaint, he had protested against digressions that left the main work to stand still, and had boasted—not without justice in a Shandean sense —that he had reconciled digressive motion with progres- sive. But in vol. vii. the work is allowed to stand still while the writer is being transported from Shandy Hall to Languedoc. The only progress we make is in the illustra- tion of the buoyant and joyous temper of Tristram himself, who, after all, is a member of the Shandy family, and was due a volume for the elucidation of his character. Voll. viii. begins the long-promised story of Uncle Toby's amours with the widow Wadman. After seeing to the publication of this instalment of Zristram and of another set of sermons,—more pronouncedly Shandean in their eccentri- city,—he quitted England again in the summer of 1768, and travelled in Italy as far as Naples. The ninth and last and shortest volume of Tristram, concluding the episode of Toby Shandy's amours, appeared in 1767. This despatched, Sterne turned to a new project, which had probably been suggested by the ease and freedom with

published after his death by his daughter. At the | which he had moved through the travelling volume im

Tristram. The Sentimental Journey through France and Italy was intended to be a long work: the plan admitted of any length that the author chose, but, after seeing the first two volumes through the press in the early months

of 1768, Sterne's strength failed him, and he died in his London lodgings on the 18th of March, three weeks after the publication. The loneliness of his end has often been commented on; it was probably due to its unexpectedness. He had pulled through so many sharp attacks of his " vile influenza" and other lung disorders that he began to be scriously alarmed only three days before his death. Sterne's character defies analysis in brief space. It is too subtle and individual to be conveyed in general terms. For comments upon him from points of view more or less diverse the reader may be referred to Thackeray's Humorists, Prof. Masson's Novelists, and Mr H. D. Traill's sketch -in the "English Men of Letters" series. The fullest biography is Mr Percy Fitzgerald's. But the reader who cares to have an opinion about Sterne should hesitate till he has read and re-read in various moods considerable portions of Sterne's own writing. This writing is so singularly frank and unconventional that its drift is not at once apparent to the literary student. The indefensible indecency and overstrained sentimentality are on the

surface ; but after a time every repellent defect is forgotten

in the enjoyment of the exquisite literary art. In the delineation of character by graphically significant speech and action, introduced at unexpected turns, left with happy audacity to point their own meaning, and pointing it with a force that the dullest cannot but understand, he takes rank with the very greatest masters. In Toby Shandy he has drawn a character universally lovable and admirable; but Walter Shandy is almost greater as an artistic triumph, considering the difficulty of the achieve- ment. Dr Ferriar, in his Z//ustrations of Sterne (published in 1812), pointed out several unacknowledged plagiarisms from Rabelais, Burton, and others; but it is only fair to the critic to say that he was fully aware that they were only plagiarisms of material, and do not detract in the slightest from Sterne's reputation as one of the greatest of literary artists. (w. M.) STESICHORUS of Himera, a very famous lyric poet, lived between 630 and 550 B.c. His name was originally Tisias, if we may trust Suidas, but it was changed to Stesichorus on account of his eminence in choral poetry. He was famed in antiquity for the richness and splendour of his imagination and his style, although Quintilian censures his redundancy and Hermogenes remarks on the excessive sweetness that results from his abundant use of epithets. We

are told that he warned his fellow-citizens against Phalaris, whom they had chosen as their general, by relating to them the well-known fable of the horse and the stag. The story that he was struck blind for slandering Helen in a poem, and afterwards recovered his sight when he had sung a recantation, is told first by Plato, and afterwards, with many additions, by Pausanias and others. We possess some fragments of the former poem, censuring the daughters of Tyndarcus, who ‘“‘ wed two, nay three husbands, and leave their lords” (Fr. 26), and three lines from the palinode, “This is no true tale, nor yet wentest thou in the strong benched ships, or camest to the tower of Troy” (Fr. 32). It seems probable that Stesichorus did really write his recantation in consequence of a dream which he had soon after composing his poem on Helen ; and his is not the only case in literature where an apparently miraculous cure is said to have followed some such act of atonement. We possess about thirty fragments of his poems, not counting single words, pre- served in Athenzeus and elsewhere. None of them is longer than six lines. They are written in the Doric

dialect, with epic licences and occasional Molisms; the metre is dactylico-trochaic. Brief as they are, they show us what Longinus meant by calling Stesichorus ‘“ most like Homer”; they are full of epic grandeur, and have a stately sublimity that reminds us of Pindar. Stesichorus indeed made a new departure by using lyric poetry to celebrate gods and heroes rather than human feelings and passions ; this is what Quintilian means by saying that he “sustained the burden of epic poetry with the lyre.” Several of his poems sung of the adventures of Heracles ; one dealt with the siege of Thebes, another with the sack of Troy. The-last—to which the Zabula Iliaca (see Otto Jahn’s Griechische Bilderchroniken, ed. A. Michaelis) is a sort of commentary—possesses an interest for us as the first poem in which occurred that form of the story of fEneas’s flight to which Virgil afterwards gave currency in his 4ineid. Stesichorus also completed the choral ode by adding to the strophe and antistrophe the epode; and not to know “‘Stesichorus’s three” passed into a proverbial expression for unpardonable ignorance.

Bergk, Poetw Lyrict Greet, vol. iii. pp. 205-234, Leipsic, 1882.

STETHOSCOPE. See AuscuLrarion,

STETTIN, the chief town of Pomerania, and the leading seaport in Prussia, is situated on the Oder, 17 miles to the south of the Stettiner Haff and 30 miles from the Baltic Sea. The main part of the town occupies a hilly site on the left bank of the river, BALTIC SEA and is connected by four bridges (includingamass- ive railway swing-bridge) with the suburbs of La- stadie ("lading place," from lastadium, " bur- A& den,") and Silberwiese, P™" on an island formed by the Parnitz and Dunzig, which here diverge from the Oder to Dammsche- See. Until 1874 Stettin was closely girdled by very extensive and strong fortifications, which pre- vented the expansion of the town proper, but the steady growth of its commerce and manufactures en- couraged the foundation of numerous industrial suburbs beyond the line of defence. Some of these are themselves "towns," as Grabow, with 13,672 inhabitants in 1880, and Bredow with 11,255 inhabitants ; but all combine with Stettin to form one industrial and commercial centre. Since the removal of the fortifications their site has begun to be built upon. Apart from its commerce, Stettin is a comparatively uninteresting city. The church of Sts Peter and Paul, originally founded in 1124 and restored in 1816- 17, was the earliest Christian church in Pomerania. St James's church, dating from the 13th and the two follow- ing centuries, is remarkable, like several other Pomeranian churches, for its size. The old palace, now occupied by Government offices, is a large unattractive edifice, scarcely justifying the boast of an old writer that it did not yield in magnificence even to the palaces of Italy. Among the more modern structures are the theatre and the new town-house, superseding an earlier one of 1245. Statues of Frederick the Great and of Frederick William ITI. adorn one of the five open squares of the old town. Asa prosperous commercial town Stettin has numerous educa- tional, benevolent, and scientific institutions.

The manufactures are very important; many of the largest factories are in the neighbouring villages, beyond Stettin proper. The shipbuilding yards (among which

Environs of Stettin.

that of the Vulcan Company deserves mention) have com- paratively recently attained some reputation for their iron- clads and war-vessels. Machinery, cement, chemicals, and soap are produced in large quantities, and there are also

REFERENCES

5 Kreisgericht

6 Post Office

7 Old Town House

1 Exchange

2 St James‘Ch.

3 §t John’s Ch.

4% Qhof $.S.Peter&Paul 8 New Town House 9 Palace

Plan of Stettin.

large sugar-refineries, besides a vast miscellany of other smaller industrial establishments. The trade of Stettin is very flourishing. More than any other harbour it may be regarded as the port of Berlin, from which it is 93 miles north-east by railway; and a larger number of vessels enter and clear at Stettin than at any other German port except Hamburg and Bremerhaven. SwineminpE (¢.v.) serves as its fore-port. The forest and river scenery of the neighbourhood of Stettin is picturesque, but the low level and swampy nature of the soil render the climate bleak and unhealthy. In 1885 the population was 99,475; in 1880 it was 91,756, of whom 85,727 were Protestants, 3112 Roman Catholics, and 2388 Jews.

In 1885 3809 ocean vessels (2207 steamers) and 1965 coasting and river eraft, besides 10,089 Oder barges, entered the port. In 1885 Stettin possessed (besides a large number of river craft) a fleet of 127 sea-going ships, with a burden of 47,066 tons, of which 26,754 tons were distributed in 59 steamers. The chief exports are grain, spirits, and wood; the chief

imports petroleum, train-oil, wine, and herrings. The annual value of the former is about £7,500,000 and of the latter about £6,000,000.

Stettin is said to have existed as a Wendish fishing-village as early as 830 A.D., and it appears as Stedyn in the time of the Saxon emperors. From the 12th century it was the seat of the dukes of Pomerania, who became extinct in 1637. Passing then to Sweden, it remained united with that kingdom for eighty-three years, with one brief interval, but in 1720 it was ceded to Prussia. Gustavus Adolphus undertook to improve its fortifications in 1630, but Frederick the Great was the first to convert it into a strong modern fortress. From 1806 till 1818 it was held by the French, to whom it was surrendered without a blow. Known even in the 12th century as the leading trading-town on the Oder, Stettin entered the Hanseatie League in 1360, The development of its trade in modern times dates chiefly from the deepening and pro-

tection of the Swine in the former half of last century. See ODER.

STE—STE

STEUART, Str James Dennam (1712-1780), Barr, author of An Inquiry into the Principles of Political Eco- nomy (see PoLtiTicaAL Economy, vol. xix. p. 365), was the only son of Sir James Steuart, solicitor-general for Scotland under Queen Anne and George I., and was born at Edin- burgh on October 21, 1712. After passing through the university of Edinburgh he was admitted to the Scottish bar at the age of twenty-four. He then spent some years on the Continent, and while in Rome entered into relations with the Pretender. He was in Edinburgh in 1745, and so compromised himself that after the battle of Culloden he found it necessary to return to the Continent, where he remained until 1763. It was not indeed until 1771 he was fully pardoned for any complicity he may have had in the rebellion. He died at his family seat, Coltness, in Lanarkshire, on November 26, 1780.

The Works, Political, Metaphysieal, and Chronological, of the late Sir James Steuart of Coltness, Bart., now first collected, with Aneedotes of the Author, by his Son, General Sir James Denham Steuart, were eae in 6 vols. 8vo in 1805. Besides the Jn- quiry (originally published in 2 vols. 4to in 1767), they inelude— A Dissertation upon the Doetrines and Prineiples of

Money applied to the German Coin (1758), Apologie du Sentiment de M. le Chevalier Newton sur 0 Anetenne Chronologie des Grecs (4to, Frankfort-on-the- Main, 1757), The Prineiples of Money applied to the Present State of Bengal, published at the request of the East India Company (4to, 1772), A Dissertation on the Poliey of Grain (1783), Plan for Introdueing Uniformity in Weights and Measures within the Limits of the British Empire (1790), Observations on Beattie's Essay on Truth, A Dissertation coneerning the Motive of Obedience to the Law of God, and other treatises.

STEUBENVILLE, a city of the United States, county seat of Jefferson county, Ohio, lies 43 miles west of Pitts- burgh, on the west bank of the Ohio river, here a third of a mile wide and crossed by a railway bridge. Built above a productive coalfield, and with an abundant supply of natural gas for fuel purposes, Steubenville has naturally become a manufacturing centre (foundries, rolling-mills, nail and glass factories, potteries, machine-shops, flour- mills, &c.), and as the surrounding district is a good farming, wool-growing, and stock-raising country it is the seat of considerable commercial activity. The court-house is a particularly fine building. In 1870 the population was 8107, in 1880 12,093. Steubenville, so called after Baron Steuben, one of Washington's generals, grew up round a fort erected in 1787. It became a city in 1851.

STEVENS, AtFrep. See ScuLprourg, vol. xxi. p. 561.

STEVENS, Tuapprvs (1792-1868), was born at Peacham, Vermont, U.S., April 4, 1792, graduated at Dartmouth College in 1814, and then settled in Penn- sylvania. He soon became a leading lawyer of Lancaster, Pa., so far interested in politics as to be elected by the Whig party to the State legislature for several terms and to the federal house of representatives 1849-63. When the mass of the Northern Whig party went into the new Republican party he went with it, and returned to Wash- ington as a Republican representative in 1859, just before the outbreak of the Civil War. This position he retained until his death, just outlasting the Civil War and recon- struction. During this period of American history he was one of the leading characters. The methods on which he proposed to conduct the war were always drastic: the wholesale confiscation of lands in the seceding States, the disfranchisement of insurgent citizens, the emancipation and

enfranchisement of the negroes, all found in him their earliest and warmest advocate. While other parties and leaders were continually shifting their ground, changing their theories of the relations of the Union to the seceding States as the struggle grew more intense, Stevens was con- sistent from beginning to end. The almost universal theory was that the war was prosecuted only to enforce the constitution ; it was therefore incumbent on those who prosecuted it to obey the constitution punctiliously, how-

ever puzzling might be the difficulties into which it led them. Stevens, on the contrary, insisted that armed resistance to the constitution had the effect of suspending the constitution within the area of the resistance ; that the success of the resistance would show whether the suspen- sion was to be temporary or permanent ; and that, in the meantime, those who resisted the constitution were entitled to no rights under it,—in fact, to no rights except those reserved under the laws of war. This was too radical even for the war party; but, at the end of the war, Stevens's pronounced ability gave him the leadership of the house committee on reconstruction. Even in this position, he never obtained a formal endorsement of his theory; but the practical management of reconstruction shows its strong influence in many features otherwise inexplicable. He lived to take a leading part in the unsuccessful impeachment of President Johnson, and to see the admis-) gion of the first instalment of reconstructed States, and , died at Washington, August 11, 1868. | Stevens's life has been written from a friendly and from a hostile point of view,—the former in the volume entitled Thaddeus Stevens, | Commoner, the latter in Harris's Political Conflict in America.

STEVENSON, Rosert (1772-1850), civil engineer, was the only son of Alan Stevenson, partner in a West Indian house in Glasgow, and was born in that city 8th June 1772. Having lost his father in infancy, he removed with his mother to Edinburgh. In his youth he assisted his step- father, Thomas Smith, in his lighthouse schemes, and at the early age of nineteen was sent to superintend the erection of a lighthouse on the island of Little Cumbrae. During successive winters he attended classes at Anderson's ' College, Glasgow, and at Edinburgh university. He suc- ceeded his stepfather, whose daughter he married in 1799, as engineer to the Board of Northern Lighthouses, and at the same time began general practice as a civil

engineer. – During his period of office from 1797 to 1843, he designed and executed no fewer than eightcen lighthouses, the most ’ important being that on the Bell Rock, begun in 1807 and completed in 1810, in which he improved considerably on the designs of Smeaton for the Eddystone lighthouse (see LigutHouse, vol. xiv. p. 616). For its illumination he introduced an improved apparatus ; he was also the author | of various other valuable inventions in connexion with lighting, including the intermittent and flashing lights, and the mast lantern for ships. In his general practice as a civil engineer he was employed in the construction of many county roads, in various important improvements in connexion with the approaches to Edinburgh, including that by the Calton Hill, in the erection of slips at ferries, in the construction of harbours, docks, and breakwaters, in the improvement of river and canal navigation, and in the construction of several important bridges. It was he that brought into notice the superiority of malleable iron rods for railways over the old cast iron, and he was the inventor of the movable jib and balance cranes. It was chiefly througli his interposition that an Admiralty survey was established, from which the Admiralty sailing direc- tions for the coasts of Great Britain and Ireland have been preparéd. Stevenson was elected a fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh in 1815, and afterwards became a member of the Geological and Astronomical Societies of London and the Wernerian and Antiquarian Societies of Scotland. He published an account of the Bell Rock lighthouse in 1824, and, besides contributing important articles on engineering subjects to Brewster’s Zdinburgh Encyclopedia and the Encyclopedia Britannica, was the author of various papers read before the societies he was connected with. He died at Edinburgh 12th July 1850.

A Life of Robert Stevenson, by his son David Stevenson, appeared in 1878. David Stevenson (1815-86), who along with

O40

his brother Alan succeeded to his father’s business, was the author of a Sketeh of the Civil Engineering of North America (1888, re- published in “ Weale’s Series,” 1859), Marine Surveying (1842), Canal and River Engincering (1858; 2d ed. enlarged, 1872; 3d ed. 1886), and of various papers read before learned societies.

STEVINUS, Simon (1548-1620). This great mathe- matician was born in 1548 at Bruges (where the Place Simon Stevin contains his statue by Eugen Simonis) and died in 1620 at The Haguc or in Leyden. Of the circum- stances of his life very little is recorded ; the exact day of his birth and the day and place of his death are alike uncertain. It is known that he left a widow with two children ; and one or two hints scattered throughout his works inform us that he began life as a merchant's clerk in Antwerp, that he travelled in Poland, Denmark, and other parts of northern Europe, and that he was intimate with Prince Maurice of Orange, who asked his advice on many occasions, and made him a public officer,—at first director of the so-called ‘‘ waterstaet," and afterwards quartermaster-general. The question whether Stevinus, like most of the rest of the prince's followers, belonged to the Protestant creed hardly admits of a categorical answer. A Catholic, it may be said, would never in those times have risen' to so high a position. A Catholic would per- haps not have been.so ready as Stevinus to deny the value of all authority, whether of an Aristotle, of an Euclid, or of a Vitruvius. A Catholic could not well have boasted, as Stevinus in a political pamphlet did, that he had always been in harmony with the executive power. But against these considerations it might be urged that a Protestant had no occasion to boast of a harmony most natural to him, while his further remark, in the same pamphlet, to the effect that a state church is indispensable, and that those who cannot belong to it on conscientious grounds ought to leave the country rather than show any opposition to its rites, seems rather to indicate the crypto-Catholic, who wishes for reasons of his own to remain in the Netherlands. The same conclusion is supported by the ascertained fact that Stevinus, a year before his death, bequeathed a pious legacy to the church of Westkerke in Flanders, out of the revenues of which masses were to be said. But, however it may be answered, the question is fortunately of little importance to us, as Stevinus was neither a political personage nor did he engage in religious controversy. He was mainly, as already said, a great mathematician, and it is chiefly in this quality that we must try to get acquainted with him. His claims to fame are most varied. Some of them appealed strongly to the men of his time, but many were such as could not well be understood by most of his contemporaries, and have found due acknowledgment only in later times.

His contemporaries were most struck by his invention of a carriage with sails, a little model of which was pre- served at Scheveningen till 1802. The carriage itself had been lost long before; but we know that about the year 1600 Stevinus, with Prince Maurice of Orange and twenty- six others, made use of it on the sea-shore between Scheven- ingen and Petten, that it was propelled solely by the force of the wind, and that it acquired a speed which exceeded that of horses. Another idea of Stevinus, for which even Grotius gave him great credit, was his notion of a bygone age of wisdom. Mankind once knew everything knowable, but gradually forgot most of it, till a time came when little by little the forgotten knowledge was reacquired ; the goal to be aimed at is the bringing about of a second age of wisdom, in which mankind shall have recovered all its early knowledge. The fellow-countrymen of Stevinus were proud that he wrote in their own dialect, which he thought fitted for a universal language, as no other abounded like Dutch in monosyllabic radical words.

History has been much less enthusiastic than his con-

temporaries in admiring these claims to fame, but it has discovered in Stevinus's works various inventions which did not at once receive the notice they deserved, He was the first to show how to fashion regular and semiregular polyhedra by delineating their frames ina plane. Stev- inus also distinguished stable from unstable equilibrium. He proved the law of the equilibrium on an inclined plane. He demonstrated before Varignon the resolution of forces, which, simple consequence of the law of their com-position though it is, had not been previously remarked. He discovered the hydrostatic paradox that the downward pressure of a liquid is independent of the shape of the vessel, and depends only on its height and base. He also gave the measure of the pressure on any given portion of the side of a vessel. He had the idea of explaining the tides by the attraction of the moon.

It reniains to enumerate those claims of Stevinus to immortality which were recognized from the first and which succeeding ages have not lessened,— his writings on military science, on book-keeping, and on decimal fractions.

That the man who was quartermaster-general to Maurice of Orange should have been possessed of more than ordinary merit, and have left behind him military papers of lasting value, is hardly more than might have been expected. This expectation, in the case of Stevinus at least, is fully borne out in the opinion of competent judges. Prince Maurice is known as the man who con- quered the greatest number of fortresses in the shortest time, and fortification was the principal aim of his adviser. Stevinus seems to be the first who made it an axiom that strongholds are only to be defended by artillery, the defence before his time having relied mostly on small fire-arms. He wrote upon temporary fortifications, but the excellence of his system was-only slowly discerned. He was the inventor of defence by a system of sluices, which proved of the highest importance for the Netherlands. His plea for the teaching of the science of fortification in universities, and the existence of such lectures in Leyden, have led to the impression that he himself filled this chair ; but the belief is quite erroneous, as Stevinus, though living at Leyden, never had direct relations with its uni- versity.

Book-keeping by double entry may have been known to Stevinus as clerk at Antwerp either practically or through the medium of the works of Italian authors like Paccioli and Cardan. He, however, was the first to recommend the use of impersonal accounts in the national household. He practised it for Maurice, and recommended it in a small pamphlet to Sully the French statesman ; and, if public book-keeping has grown more and more lucid by the intro- duction of impersonal accounts, it is certainly to Stevinus that the credit of the improvement is due.

His greatest success, however, was a small pamphlet, first published in Dutch in 1586, and not exceeding seven pages in the French translation (which alone we have seen). This translation is entitled La Disme, enseign- ant facilement expédier par Nombres Entiers sans rompuz, tous Comptes se rencontrans aux Affaires des LHommes. Decimal fractions had been employed for the extraction of square roots some five centuries before his time, but nobody before Stevinus established their daily use; and so well aware was he of the importance of his innovation that he declared the universal introduction of decimal coinage, measures, and weights to be only a question of time. His notation is rather unwieldy. The point separating the

integers from the decimal fractions seems to be the invention of Bartholomeus Pitiscus, in whose trigonometrical tables (1612) we have found it, and it was accepted by Napier in his logarithmic papers (1614 and 1619). Stevinus printed little circles round the ex-

ponents of the different powers of one-tenth. For instance, 237,%58, was printed 237 (°) 4) Q) 7 @) 8 (2); and the fact that Stevinus meant those encircled numerals to de- note mere exponents is evident from his employing the very same sign for powers of algebraic quantities, C9,

9 ()-14)+6)-5 to denote 9a! — 140 + 6m — 5, He does not even avoid fractional exponents (‘Racine cubique de (2) serait 3 en circle”), and is ignorant only of negative exponents. Powers and exponents have also been carried back toa period several centuries earlier than Stevinus, and it is not here intended to give him any undue credit for having maintained them ; but we believe it ought to be recognized more than it generally is, that for our author there was a connexion between algebraic powers and decimal fractions, and that even here Stevinus the pro- found theorist is not lost to view behind Stevinus the man of brilliant practical talents. (M. CA.)

STEWART, or Stuart. For the royal house of this name, see STUART.

STEWART, Ducatp (1753-1828), one of the most influential of the Scottish philosophers, was born at Edinburgh on the 22d of November 1753. His father, Matthew Stewart (1715-85), was professor of mathematics in the university of Edinburgh from 1747 till 1772, and was an enlinent investigator in his own department, applying the geometrical methods of Simson, who had been his teacher in Glasgow. Dugald Stewart’s early years were passed partly in Edinburgh and partly at Catrine in Ayrshire, where his father had a small property, to which the family removed every summer on the close of the academical session. Burns was an occasional visitor at Catrine, which is only a few miles from Mossgiel ; and the philosopher and the poet had various meetings as well as some slight correspondence in later years. Dugald Stewart was educated at the high school and university of his native town. At school he laid the foundation of the classical knowledge and literary taste which are con- spicuous in his works, and which lent a

charm to his prelections. At the university his chief subjects were the mathematical sciences—in which he attained great pro- ficiency—and philosophy. Adam Ferguson, the historian of the Roman republic, was then professor of moral philo- sophy in Edinburgh, and his bracing ideal of ethical and political virtue commended itself highly to Stewart. In 1771, having thoughts of entering the English Church, Stewart proceeded to Glasgow with a view to the Snell exhibitions tenable by Glasgow students at Oxford. Here he listened to the lectures of Reid, whose Inquiry, pub- lished seven years before, had laid the effective founda- tion of what is called distinctively the Scottish philosophy. Reid became Stewart's acknowledged master and also his friend, while Stewart's academic eloquence and powers of elegant exposition gained for their common doctrines @ much wider acceptance than they could have secured in the clumsier and less attractive presentation of Reid him- self. In Glasgow Stewart boarded in the same house with Archibald Alison, afterwards author of the Hssay on Taste, and a close friendship sprang up between them, which remained unbroken through life. After no more than a single session in Glasgow, Dugald Stewart was summoned by his father, whose health was beginning to fail, to conduct the mathematical classes in the university of Edinburgh. Though only nineteen years of age he discharged his duties with marked ability and SUCCESS 5 and after acting three years as his father's substitute he was elected professor of mathematics in conjunction with him in 1775. Three years later Adam Ferguson was appointed secretary to the commissioners sent out to the American colonies, and at his urgent request

Stewart lectured as his substitute. Thus during the session 1778-79, in addition to his mathematical work, he delivered an original course of lectures on morals. 'To this season," says his son, "che always referred as the most laborious of his life; and such was the exhaustion of the body from the intense and continued stretch of the mind that on his departure for London at the close of the academical session it was necessary to lift him into the carriage." In 1783 Stewart married Helen Banna- tyne, who died in 1787, leaving an only son, Colonel Matthew Stewart, from whose short memoir of his father the above is a quotation.

In 1785, on the resignation of Ferguson, he was trans- ferred to the chair of moral philosophy, which he filled for a quarter of a century and made a notable centre of intel- lectual and moral influence. Young men of rank and of parts were attracted by his reputation from England, and even from the Continent and America. A very large number of men who afterwards rose to eminence in litera- ture or in the service of the state were thus among his students. Sir Walter Scott, Jeffrey, Cockburn, Francis Horner, Sydney Smith, Lord Brougham, Dr Thomas Brown, James Mill, Sir James Mackintosh, and Sir Archi- bald Alison may be mentioned among others. There is a unanimous testimony to the attractive eloquence of Stewart's lectures and the moral elevation of his teaching. "Dugald Stewart," says Lord Cockburn, 'was one of the greatest of didactic orators. Had he lived in ancieut times, his meniory would have descended to us as that of one of the finest of the old eloquent sages. No intelligent pupil of his ever ceased to respect philosophy, or was ever false to his principles, without feeling the crime aggra- vated by the recollection of the morality that Stewart had taught him." Dr John Thomson, afterwards medical professor in Edinburgh, was accustomed to say that the two things by which lie had been most impressed in the course of his life were the acting of Mrs Siddons and the oratory of Dugald Stewart. Lord Cockburn, in his Memorials, has left an interesting portraiture of Stewart's appearance and manner :—" Stewart was about the middle size, weakly-limbed, and with an appearance of feebleness which gave an air of delicacy to his gait and structure. His forehead was large and bald, his eyebrows bushy, his eyes grey and intelligent, and capable of conveying any emotion from indignation to pity, from serene sense to hearty humour, in which they were powerfully aided by his lips, which, though rather large perhaps, were flexible and expressive. The voice was singularly pleasing ; and, as he managed it, a slight burr only made its tones softer. His ear, both for music and for speech, was exquisite ; and he was the finest reader I have ever heard. His gesture was simple and elegant, though not free from a tinge of professional formality ; and his whole manner was that of an academical gentleman, ... calm and expository, but rising into greatness or softening into tenderness whenever his subject required it." The course on nioral philosophy embraced, besides ethics proper, lectures on political philosophy or the. theory of govern- ment, and from 1800 onwards a separate course of lectures was delivered on political economy. These last were extremely

important in spreading a knowledge of the fundamental principles of the science at a time when they were still almost unknown to the general public. Stewart's enlightened political teaching was sufficient, in the times of reaction succeeding the French Revolution, to draw upon him the undeserved suspicion of disaffection to the constitution.

In 1790 Stewart married a second time. Miss Cran- stoun, who became his wife, was a lady of birth and accom- plishments, and he was in the habit of submitting to her

criticism whatever he wrote. A son and a daughter were the issue of this marriage. The death of the former in 1809 was a severe blow to the failing health of his father, and was the immediate cause of his retirement from the active duties of his chair. Before that, however, Stewart had not been idle as an author. In 1792 he published the first volume of the Llements of the Philosophy of the Human Mind ; the second volume appeared in 1814, and the third not till 1827. In 1793 he printed a text-book, Outlines of Moral Philosophy, which went through many editions ; and in the same year he read before the Royal Society of Edinburgh his account of the Life and Writings of Adam Smith. Similar memoirs of Robertson the historian and of Reid were afterwards read before the same body and appear in his published works. In 1805 Stewart took an active part in what was known as the Leslie case, that is to say, the public controversy arising out of the appointment of Mr (afterwards Sir John) Leslie to the chair of mathe- matics in the university of Edinburgh. Leslie was attacked by the presbytery of Edinburgh, ostensibly on account of his views on the nature of causal connexion, which were said to approximate to Hume's. In two pamphlets Stewart defended Leslie's doctrine as_philo- sophically tenable and theologically innocuous. In 1806 he received in lieu of a pension the nominal office of the writership of the Hdinburgh Gazette, with a salary of £300. When the shock of his son's death incapacitated him from lecturing during the session of 1809-10, his place was taken, at his own request, by Dr Thomas Brown, who in 1810 was appointed conjoint professor. On the death of Brown in 1820, Stewart, who had taken no further active part in lecturing, retired altogether from the professorship, which was conferred

upon John Wilson, better known as “Christopher North.” From 1809 onwards Stewart lived mainly at Kinneil House, Linlithgowshire, which was placed at his disposal by the duke of Hamilton. From this retirement he continued to send forth a succes- sion of works. In 1810 appeared Philosophical Essays, in 1814 the second volume of the Zlements, in 1815 the first part and in 1821 the second part of the “ Dissertation” written for the Encyclopedia Britannica “Supplement,” entitled ““A General View of the Progress of Metaphysi- cal, Ethical, and Political Philosophy since the Revival of Letters.” In 1822 he was struck with paralysis, but re- covered a fair degree of health, sufficient to enable him to resume his studies. In 1827 he published the third volume of the Zlements, and in 1828, a few weeks before his death, Zhe Philosophy of the Active and Moral Powers. He died in Edinburgh after a short illness on the 11th of June 1828. A monument to his memory was erected on the Calton Hill by his friends and admirers.

An edition of his Collected Works, in eleven volumes (1854-58), was edited by Sir William Hamilton, on whose death in 1856 it was carried to completion and furnished with a memoir of Stewart by Prof. Veitch. Stewart was an elegant writer rather than a profound or original thinker, and he cannot be said to have added much to the philosophy of Reid (see Rurp), though he contributed very largely to its dissemination. His psychological observations, however, are acute and varied, and his general powers of mind contributed largely to elevate the study of philosophy in the United Kingdom. His reputation rests more upon the tradition of his inspiring and elevating cloquence than upon any definite achieve- ments within the province of philosophy proper. (A. SE.)

STEYR, Srermr, or SrevEeR, an industrial town in Upper Austria, is situated on an island at the junction of the Steyr and Enns, 20 miles to the south of Linz and 92 miles to the west-south-west of Vienna. The main town is connected by two bridges with the suburbs of Steyrdorf and Ennsdorf. The Gothic parish church was built in 1443; the town-house is modern. The interest- ing old castle of the princes of Lamberg, dating from the 10th century, rises on an eminence near the town. Steyr

is one of the chief seats of the iron and steel industry in Upper Austria (AustRiA, vol. iii. p. 120), and very large quantities of cutlery, scythes, sickles, and edge-tools are annually produced in the town and neighbourhood. The Werndl small-arms factory, now carried on by a joint-stock company, and employing 4500 hands, is the largest in Austria. The population in 1880 was 17,199. Steyr was the capital of an early countship or grafschaft, at first belonging to Styria, but annexed to Austria in 1192.

STICKLEBACK is the name applied to a group of small fishes (Gastrosteus) which inhabit the fresh and brackish waters as well as the coasts of the temperate zone of the northern hemisphere. Although some of the species live chiefly cither in fresh or in salt water, they readily accommodate themselves to a change, and, as far as the European

kinds are concerned, all may be met with in the brackish

water of certain littoral districts. The majority have a compressed well-proportioned body, which in the marine species is of a more elongate form, leading to the allied group of Flute-Mouths (Mistulariidx), which are, in fact, gigantic marine sticklebacks. Their mouth is of moderate width, oblique, and armed with small but firmly set teeth. But their most distinctive characteristic consists in the armature of their head and body. The head is nearly entirely protected by hard bone; even the cheeks, which in the majority of fishes are covered with a naked or scaly skin, are in this genus cuirassed by the dilated infraorbital bones. There are no scales developed on any part of the body, but a series of hard and large scutes protects a greater or lesser portion of the sides. The first dorsal fin and the ventrals are transformed into pointed formidable spines, and joined to firm bony plates of the endoskeleton. With regard to the degree in which this armature is developed, not only do the species differ from each other, but almost every species shows an extraordi- nary amount of variation, so that some older naturalists have distinguished a multitude of species, whilst the majority of the present day are inclined to reduce their number considerably. About ten kinds may be taken to be specifically distinct.

So far as is known at present, all sticklebacks construct a nest for the reception of the spawn, which is jealously guarded by the male until the young are hatched, which event takes place in from ten to eighteen days

after oviposition. He also protects them for the first few days of their existence, and provides them with food, until they gradually stray from their home. The construction of the nest varies in the different species.

Sticklebacks are short-lived animals; they are said to reach an age of only three or four years; yet their short life, at least that of the males, is full of excitement. During the first year of their existence, before the breed- ing-season begins, they live in small companies in still pools or gently flowing brooks. But with the return of the warmer season each male selects a territory, which he fiercely defends against all comers, especially against intruders of his own species and sex, and to which he invites all females, until the nest is filled with ova. At this period he also assumes a bridal dress, painted with blue and red tints. The eggs are of comparatively large size, one female depositing only from 50 to 100; but, as the females deposit their spawn in nests of different males, the number of ova contained in one nest does not exceed one hundred.

Of the species known not one has so wide a geographical range, and has so well been studied, as the common British Three- Spined Stiekleback (Gastrosteus aculeatus). It is found everywhere in northern and eentral Europe, northern Asia, and North America. The development of its scutes and spines varies exceedingly, and

specimens may bc found without any lateral scutes and with short spines, others with only a few scutes and moderately sized spines,

and again others whieh possess a complete row of scutes from the head to the caudal fin, and in which the fin-spines are twice ag

long and strong as in other varieties. On the whole, the smooth —

varieties are more numerous in southern than in northern local. ities. This species swarms in some years in prodigious num.

Gastrosteus aculeatus, var. noveboracensis, Three-Spined Stickleback,

bers; in Pennant’s time amazing shoals appeared in the fens of Lincolnshire every seven or eight years, ‘Their numbers may perhaps be conceived from the fact that a man employed in eollecting them gained, for a considerable time, four shillings a day by sclling them at the rate of a halfpenny a bushel. No instance of a similar increase of this fish has been observed in our time, and this possibly may be due to the diminished number of suitable breeding-places in consequence of the general introdue- tion of artificial drainage. This species usually constructs its nest on the bottom, excavating a hollow in which a bed of grass, rootlets, or fibres is prepared; walls are then raised, and the whole is roofed over with the like material. The nest is an inch and more in diameter, with a small aperture for an entrance. ;

The Ten-Spined Stickleback (Gastrosteus pungitius) is so called from the number of spines nsually se Scan its first dorsal fiu, which, however, may be sometimes reduced to cight or nine or increased to eleven. It is smaller than the three-spined species, rarely exceeding 2 inches in length. Its geographical range nearly coincides with that of the other species, but it is move locally distributed, and its range in northern Asia is not known. With regard to its habits, it differs from the common species only in the selection of the site for its nest, which is generally placed among weeds above the bottom of the water. Breeding males are readily recognized at a distance by the intensely black colour of the lower parts of their body. ‘ ;

Both these species are for their size extremely voracious, causing no sinall amount of injury if allowed in breeding-ponds in which valuable fish are preserved. During the whole time they are not engaged in their brecding operations they are in pursuit of food. A small stickleback kept in an aquarium devoured, in five hours’ time, seventy-four newly-hatched dace, which were abont a quarter of an inch long. Two days after it swallowed sixty-two, and would probably have caten as many every day, could they have been procured. ;

The Sea Stickleback (Gastrosteus spinachia) is a much larger and more slender species than those mentioned; it attains to a length of 7 inches, and is armed with fifteen short spines on the back. It is extremely common round the British coasts, but never con- gregates in large shoals, At suitable localities of the coast which are sheltered from the waves and overgrown

with sea-weed, .espe- cially in rock-pools, one or two males establish themselves with their harems, and may be observed without difficulty, being quite as fearless as their freshwater cousins. Harbours and shallows covered with Zostera are likewise favourite haunts of this species, although the water may be brackish. The nest is always firmly attached to sea-weed, and sometimes suspended from an over- hanging frond. This species inhabits only the northern coasts of Europe.

STIGMATIZATION, literally the infliction of stagmata, i.e., marks tattooed or branded on the person, the term used with specific reference to the infliction of wounds like those of Christ.

An ancient and widespread method of showing tribal connexion, or relation to tribal deities, is by marks set upon the person; thus Herodotus, in describing a temple of Hercules in Egypt (ii. 113), says that it is not lawful to capture runaway slaves who take refuge therein if they receive certain marks on their bodies, devoting them to the deity. Some such idea is perhaps alluded to by Paul (Gal. vi. 17) in the words, “from henceforth let no man trouble me, for I bear branded on my body the stigmata of Jesus”; and some few authors have even understood the passage as referring to stigmatization in the modern sense (Molanus, De Historia SS. Imaginum et Preturarum, Ce. Paquot, iii. 43, p. 365). Branding, as indicative of servi

–

perme seer PAA TION

tude, is mentioned in many of the classics (Pliny, Z/. V., xviil. 3; Varro, De Ke [ustica, i. 18 ; Suetonius, Caligula, xxvii. &c.), and was forbidden by Constantine.

In the period of persecution Christian martyrs were sometimes branded with the name of Christ on their fore- heads (Pontius, “De Vit. 8. Cypriani,” Biblioth. Veterum Patrum, iii. p. 472, § vii.). This was sometimes self-inflicted as a disfigurement by nuns for their protection, as in the case of St Ebba, abbess of Coldingham (see Baronius, Annales, xv. p. 215, anno 870, also Tert., De Vel. Virg.). Some Christians likewise marked themselves on their hands or arms with the cross or the name of Christ (Procopius, Jn

Hsaam, ed. Curterius, p. 496), and other voluntary mutilations for Christ's sake are men- tioned (Matt. xix. 12; Fortunatus, Life of St Rhadegund, ed. Migne, col. 508; Palladius, Lausiac History, cxii. ; Jerome's Letter to St Hustochium, &c.).

In the life of St Francis of Assisi we have the first example of the alleged miraculous infliction of stigmata (see vol. ix. p. 692). While meditating on the sufferings of our Lord, in his cell on Mount Alverno, we are told by his biographers, Thomas of Celano and Bonaventura, that the Lord appeared to him as a seraph and produced upon his body the five wounds of Christ; of these we are told that the side wound bled occasionally, though Bonaven- tura calls it a scar, and the wounds in the feet had the appearance and colour of nails thrust through. After his death St Clare endeavoured but in vain to extract one of these. Pope Alexander IV. and other witnesses declared that they had seen these marks both before and after his death (Raynaldus, ad annum 1255, p. 27). . The divinely- attested sanctity of their founder gave to the newly- established order of Franciscans a powerful impulse, so that they soon equalled and threatened to overshadow in influence the previously-founded order of St Dominic.

The reputation of the latter order was, however, equally raised in the next century by the occurrence of the same wonder in the case of a sister of the third rule of St Dominic, Catherine Benincasa,—better known as St Catherine of Siena. From her biographer's account we gather that she was subject to hystero-epileptic attacks, in one of which, when she was twenty-three years old, she re- ceived the first stigma (see vol. v. p. 230). In spite of her great reputation, and the number of attesting witnesses, this occurrence was not universally believed in. Pope Sixtus IV, published a bull in 1475 ordering, on pain of anathema, the erasure of stigmata from pictures of St Catherine, and prohibiting all expressions of belief in the occurrence. Pope Innocent VIII. similarly legislated "ne de cetero 8. Catherina cum stigmatibus depingatur ; neve de ejus stigmatibus fiat verbum, aut sermo, vel pr- dicatio ad tollendam omnem scandali occasionem" (see references in Raynaud, De Stigmatisme, cap. xi., 1665). In the years which followed, cases of stigmatization occurred thick and fast,—now a Franciscan, now a Dominican, very rarely a religieuse of another order, showing the marks. Altogether about ninety instances are on record, of which eighteen were

males and seventy-two females. Most of them occurred among residents in religious houses, and took place after the austeritics of Lent, usually on Good Friday, when the mind was intently fixed on our Lord's Passion ; and, from their occurrence being for the most part among members of the two orders to which St Francis and St Catherine belonged, the possibility of the recep- tion of the marks was constantly before their eyes and thoughts. The order of infliction in the majority of cases was that of the crucifixion, the first token being a bloody Sweat, followed by the coronation with thorns; after- wards the hand and foot wounds appear, that of the side being the last. The grade of the infliction varied in

individual cases, and they may be grouped in the follow- ing series :—

I. As regards full stigmatization, with the visible production of the five wounds, and generally with the mark of the crown as well, the oldest case, after St Francis, is that of Ida of Louvain (1800), in whom the marks appeared as coloured circles; in Gertrude von Oosten of Delft (1344) they were coloured scars, and disappeared In auswer to prayer as they also did on Dominica de Paradis; in Sister Pierona, a Franciscan, they were blackish grey. They were true wounds in Margaret Kbnerin of Nuremberg (d. 1851), but

'they also disappeared in answer to her prayer (see her Life, Augs-

burg, 1717), as was the case with Brigitta, a Dominican tertiary (1890), and also with Lidwina. An intermission is described in the marks on Johanna della Croce of Madrid (1524), in whom the wound in the side was large, and the others were rose-coloured circular patches. The marks appeared on each Friday and vanished on Sunday. These emitted an odonr of violets; but in Sister Apol- lonia of Volaterra they were fetid while she lived. Angela della Pace (1634) was fully stigmatized at nine years of age, being even marked with the sponge and hyssop on the mouth; while Joanna de Jesu-Maria at Burgos (1618), a widow, who had entered the convent of Poor Clares, was marked in her sixtieth year. To her in vision two crowns were offered,—one of flowers and one of thorns; she chose the latter and immediately was seized with such pain that her confessor heard her skull

cracking. This case was investigated by the officers of the Inquisition. The stigmatization of Veronica Giuliani (1696) was also the subject of inquiry, and in this case the nun drew on a paper a representation of the images which she said were engraved on her heart. On a post-mortem examination being made in 1727 by Prof. Gentili and Dr Bordiga, the image of the cross, the scourge, &c., were said to have been impressed on the right side of the organ (Vita della Veronica Giuliant, by Salvatori, Rome, 1803). The case of Christina Stun- belen, a Dominican at Cologne, is noteworthy, as on her skull there was fonnd a raised ridge or crown which was at first green, with red dots. This relic is still preserved. In Lucia di Narni (1546) the marks were variable, as they also were on Sister Maria di S. Dominico. On the body of St Margaret of Hungary the stigmata were found fresh and clear when her body was exhumed some time after her death for transportation to Presburg. Other stigmatized persons were Elizabeth von Spalbeck, a Cistercian; Sister Coleta, a Poor Clare; Matilda von Stanz; Margaret Bruch of Endringen (1508); Maria Razzi of Chios (1582); Catharina Januensis; KEliza- beth Reith of Allgau; Stieva zu Hamm in Westphalia; Sister Mary of the Incarnation at Pontoise; Archangela Tardera in Sicily (1608) ; Catharina Ricci in Florence (1590); and Joanna Maria della Croce, a Poor Clare at Roveredo (d. 1678), upon whom the inarkings of the thorn crown and spear wound were especially deep.

Ik. In some cases, although the pains of stigmatization were felt, there were no marks apparent. This occurred to Helen Brumsen (1285); Helena of Hungary (1270); Osanna of Mantua (1476); Columba Rocasani; Magdalena de Pazzis; Anna of Vargas; Hiero- nyma Carvaglio; Maria of Lisbon, a Dominican; Joanna di Ver- celli; Stephania Soncinas, a Franciscan; Sister Christina, a Car- thusian ; and Joanna Rodriguez, a Poor Clare. In the case of Ursula Aguir de Valenza, a tertiary of St Dominic (1608), and Catharine Cialina (d. 1619) the pain was chiefly that of the crown of thorns, as it was also in Ainelia Bicchieri of Vercelli, an Augustinian.

III. In a third series some of the marks were visible on the body, while others were absent or only subjectively indicated by severe pains. ‘Ihe crown of thorns only was marked on the head of Vincentia Ferreria at Valencia (d. 1515) and Philippa de Santo Tomaso of Montemor (1670), while according to Torellus the Augustinian Ritta von Cassla (d. 1430) had

a single thorn wound on the forehead. The crown was marked on Catharina of Raconizio (b. 1486), who also suffered a severe bloody sweat. In the case of Stephano Quinzani, in Soncino (1457), there was a profuse bloody sweat and the wounds were intermitting, appcaring on Friday and Saturday, vanishing on Snnday. Blanche Gazinan, daughter of Count Arias de Sagavedra (1564), was marked only on the right foot, as also was Catherine, a Cistercian nun. The heart wound was visible in Christina Mirabilis (1282). Gabrielda de Piezolo (d. 1478) died from the bleeding of such a wound, and similar wounds were described in Maria de Acosrin in Toledo; Eustochia, a tertiary of St Francis; Clara de Bngny, a Dominican (1514); Cecilia Nobili, a Poor Clare of Nuceria (d. 1655). In the last instance the heart wound was found after death—a three-cornered puncture. A similar wound was seen in the heart of Martina de Arilla (d. 1644). Maria Villana, a Poor Clare, daughter of the margrave of La Pella, was marked with the crown and the spear thrust, and after death the impresses of the spear, sponge, and reed were found on her heart (d. 1670). The wound was usually on the left side, as in Sister Masrona of Grenoble, a tertiary of St Francis (1627); it was on the right in Margareta Columna, also a Clare. In Maria de Sarmiento it was said to have been inflicted by a seraph in a vision.

550

IV. In a fourth set of cases the imprints were said to have been found on the heart, even thongh there was no surface marking. Thus the Dominican Paula de St Thomas was said to have had the stigmata on her heart. The heart of Clare of Montfancon (1308) was said to have been as large as a child’s head and impressed with the cross, the scourge, and the nails. Similar appearances were found in Margaret of Citta di Capello and Johanna of Yepes

(1591).

The instances of masculine stigmatization are few. Benedict di Rhegio, a Capuchin at Bologna, had the marks of the crown (1602); Carolus Sazia, an ignorant lay brother, had the wound in his side. Dodo, a Pre- monstratensian lay brother, was fully stigmatized, as also was Philip de Aqueria. The marks after death were found on the heart of Angelos del Pas, a minorite of Perpignan, as also on Matheo Carery in Mantua, Melchior of Arazel in

Valentia, Cherubin de Aviliana (an Augustinian), and Agolini of Milan. Walter of Strasburg, a preaching friar (1264), had the heart-pain but no mark, and the same was the case with a Franciscan, Robert de Malatestis (1430), and James Stephanus. On Nicholas of Ravenna the wounds were seen after death, while John Gray, a Scotsman, a Franciscan martyr, had one wound on his foot.

Within the last hundred years several cases have occurred. Anna Katharina Emmerich, a peasant girl born at Minster in 1774, afterwards an Augustinian nun at Agnetenberg, was even more famous for her visions and revelations than for the stigmata. Biographies, with records of her visions, have been published by Brentano at Munich in 1852 and the Abbé Cazalés at Paris (1870). Colombe Schanolt of Bamberg (1787) was fully stigma- tized, as also was Rose Serra, a Capuchin of Ozieri in Sardinia (1801), and Madeleine Lorger (1806). Two well- known cases occurred in Tyrol,—one " L'Ecstatica " Maria von Mérl of Caldaro, a girl of noble family, stigmatized in 1839, the other "L'Addolorata" Maria Dominica Lazzari, a miller's daughter at Capriana, stigmatized in 1835 (see Boré, Les Stigmatisées du Tyrol, Paris, 1846). A case of the second class is that of Elizabeth Eppinger of Niederbrunn in Bavaria (1814), reported on by Kuhn. An interesting example of stigmatic trance also occurred in the case of a Protestant young woman in Saxony in 1820, who appeared as if dead on Good Friday and Satur- day and revived on Easter Sunday.

The last case recorded is that of Louise Lateau, a peasant girl at Bois de Haine, Hainault, upon whom the stigmata appeared April 24, 1868. This case was investi- gated by Professor Lefebvre of Louvain, who for fifteen years was physician to two lunatic asylums. In her there was a periodic bleeding of the stigmata every Friday, and a frequent recurrence of the hystero-cataleptic condition. Her biography has been written by Lefebvre and published at Louvain (1870).

On surveying these ninety cases, we may discount a certain number, including all those of the second class, as examples of subjective sensations suggested by the con- templation of the pains of crucifixion. A second set, of which the famous case of Jetzer (Wirz, /Telvetische Kirchen- geschichte, 1810, iii. p. 389) is a type, must be also set aside as obvious and intentional

frauds produced on victims by designing persons. A third series, and how large a group we have not sufficient evidence to decide, we must regard as due to the irresponsible self-infliction of injuries by persons in the hystero-epileptic condition, those perverted states of nervous action which Charcot has done so much to elucidate. To any experienced in this form of disease, many of the phenomena described in the records of these examples are easily recognizable as characteristic of the hystero-epileptic state.

There are, however, some instances not easily explained, where the self-infliction hypothesis is not quite satisfactory.

STI—S TI

Parallel cases of physical effects due to mental suggestion are well authenticated. Beaunis vouches for rubefaction and vesication as produced by suggestion in the hypnotic state, and Bourru and Burot describe a case, still under observation, of bloody sweat, and red letters marked on the arm by simple tracing with the finger. See Congrés Screntifique de Grenoble, Progrés Medicale, 29 Aug. 1885, and Berjon's La Grande Hystérie chez 1 Homme, Paris, 1886. We know so little of the trophic action of the higher nerve centres that we cannot say how far tissue nutrition can be controlled in spots. That the nerve centres have a direct influence on local nutrition is in some cases capable of experimental demonstration, and, in another sphere, the many authenticated instances of connexion between maternal impression and congenital deformity seem to indicate that this trophic influence has wider limits and a more specific capacity of localization than at first sight seems possible. There is no known pathological condition in which blood transudation can take place through an unbroken skin.

Literature.—See references to each name in deta Sanetorwm or Hueber, Menologiwm Franeiseanorwm, 1698 ; Henriquez, Alenologium etstersiense; Marchese, Sagro Diario ; Steill, Ephemerides Domin- eano Saerx, Dillingen, 1692; Pctrus de Alva y Astorga, Prodigium Nature Portentium Gratiw, Strasburg, 1664; Thiepolus, De Passione Christi, tract. xli.; Meyer, Blatter fiir héhere Wahrheit, vil. 5; Hurter, Tablean des Institutions et des Meurs de l Equise aw Moyen Age, Paris, 1842; Goérres, Die Christliche Mystik, Ratisbon, il. p. 410 sy.; Franciscus Quaresmius, De Vulneribus Domini, Venice, 1652, 1.4; Raynaud, Opera, vol. xiii., Lyons,

1665; Dublin Review, 1871, p. 170; Maury, A/agie et Astrologie ; Beaunis, Recherches exp. sur UV Activité Cerebrale, Paris, 1886; Bourbeyre, Les Stigmatisées, Paris, 1886; Ennemoser, Der Magnetismus im Verhdltiiss zur Reli- gion, Stuttgart, 1853, § 92; Tholuck's Vermisehte Schriften, Hamburg, 1839, p. 97; Schmieder, in Lvang. Kirchenzeitung, Berlin, 1875, pp. 180, 345 ; Comptes Rendus de la Société de Biologie, 12th July 1885. (A. MA.)

STILICHO, Fiavius, Roman general and statesman, was of Vandal origin, and was born about 359 a.p. Atan early age he entered the imperial army, where his father before him had served under Valens; and he speedily attained high promotion. He had already become magister equitum when in 384 he was sent by Theo- dosius as his ambassador to Persia; his mission was very successful, and soon after his return he was made comes domesticus and commander-in-chief, receiving also in marriage Serena, the emperor's niece and adoptive daughter. Theodosius, when dying, made Stilicho and Serena the guardians of Honorius and his other children. Honorius, in 398, was married to Stilicho's daughter Maria, and in 408 to her sister Thermantia. It was by Stilicho that Alaric in 396 was compelled to quit the Peloponnesus (see Atartc), and that in 398 the revolt of the Mauretanian prince Gildo was repressed. Stilicho again encountered Alaric at Pollentia in 402, and at Verona in 403, compelling his retreat into Illyria, and was rewarded with a triumph on his return to Rome. In 405 he almost annihilated the army of Radagaisus, the leader of the Ostrogoths, at Fiesole. The arrangements into which he subsequently entered with Alaric (see ALARIc) were made use of by his enemies to alienate the emperor from him, and when at last revolt was the only course that might possibly have saved him his continued loyalty proved fatal. Abandoned by his troops he fled to Ravenna, and, having been induced by false promises to quit the church in which he had taken sanctuary, he was beheaded on August 23, 408. Stilicho is the hero of much of the poetry of CLAUDIAN (¢q.v.).

STILL, Joun (c. 1543-1607), bishop of Bath and Wells, and now best known as the probable author ("Mr 8. Master of Arts") of Gammer G'urton's Needle, the earlies comedy but one in the English language (see Drama, vol. vii. p. 428), was a native of Grantham, Lincolnshire, and

was born about 1543. He became a student of Christ's College, Cambridge, where he duly graduated and took orders. He was appointed in 1570 Lady Margaret's pro- fessor of divinity in his university, subsequently held livings in Suffolk and Yorkshire, and was master successively of St John's College (1574) and of Trinity College (1577). Still was raised to the bishopric of Bath and Wells in 1592, and, after enjoying considerable fame as a preacher and disputant, he died on February 26, 1607, leaving a large fortune from lead mines discovered in the Mendip Hills. STILLING, Hernricu. See June. STILLINGFLEET, Epwarp (1635-1699), a con- spicuous figure in the church of the Restoration, was descended from the Stillingfleets of Stillingfleet, in the neighbourhood of York, and was born at Cranbourne in Dorset on the 17th April 1635, There and at Ringwood he received his preliminary education, and at the age of thirteen was entered at St John's College, Cambridge, as Isaac Barrow five years before and at the same age had been entered at Peterhouse. He took his bachelor's degree in 1652, and in the following year was elected to a fellowship. After residing as tutor first in the family of Sir Roger Burgoin in Warwickshire and then with the Hon. Francis Pierrepont in Nottingham, he was in 1657 presented by the former to the living of Sutton in Bed- fordshire. Here he brought to completion and published (1659) his Zrenicum, in which he sought to give expression to the prevailing weariness of faction and to find some ecclesiastical compromise in which all could conscientiously unite. Schemes of comprehension were then the most familiar topics of conversation. There seemed every probability that a moderate Episcopacy might attract all parties ; and it was to be expected that a learned and able scholar fresh from the atmosphere of Cambridge Platonism should desire to help present entanglements towards a liberal solution. Much may still be learned from his cogent and earnest exposition of the great principle that it is unwarrantable for the church to make other conditions of her communion than our Saviour did of discipleship. In 1662 he reprinted the Zreniewm with an appendix, in which he sought to prove that "the church is a distinct society from the state, and has divers rights and privileges of its own, .. . resulting from its constitution as a Christian society, and that these rights of the church cannot be alienated to the state after their being united in a Christian country." In the same year the country gave its answer to his and

all similar proposals in the Act of Uniformity, which, by requiring that all clergymen should be episcopally ordained and should use the revised liturgy, lost to the church of England such men as Richard Baxter, John Howe, and Philip Henry. Stillingfleet's actions were as liberal as his opinions. He sheltered in his rectory at Sutton one ejected minister and took for another a large house to be used as a school. But, as time wore on, his liberalism degenerated and gave occasion to Hovwe's remark that the rector of Sutton was a very different person from the dean of St Paul's. But, though in 1680 he published his Unreasonableness of Separation, his willingness to serve on the ecclesiastical commission of 1689, and the interpretation he then proposed of the damnatory clauses of the Athanasian creed, are proof that to the end he leaned towards toleration. Another work which Stillingfleet published in 1662 won for him the confidence and admiration of his church. This was his Origines Sacre, or a Rational Account of the Christian Faith as to the Truth and Divine Authority of the Scriptures and the Matters therein contained. Rendered Obsolete though it be by the general advance of the discussion, this apologetic made a deep impression at the time, and rapid preferment followed its publication.

dol

Henchman, bishop of London, employed him to write a vindication of Laud's answer to Fisher the Jesuit. In 1665 the earl of Southampton presented him to St Andrew's, Holborn; two years later he became prebendary of St Paul's, in 1668 chaplain to Charles IL, in 1670 canon residentiary and in 1677 dean of St Paul's. Finally, but under different auspices, he was consecrated bishop of Worcester 13th October 1689. During these years he was ceaselessly engaged in controversy with Nonconformists, Romanists, Deists, and Socinians. His unrivalled and various learning, his dialectical expertness, and his massive judgment rendered him a formidable antagonist; but the respect entertained for him by his opponents was chiefly aroused by his recognized love of truth and superiority to personal considerations. He had the courage, along with the saintly and noble-minded Ken and the other six bishops, to incur the anger of James II. by resisting his proposed Declaration of Indulgence (1688). Strangely enough, he crossed swords both with Dryden and Locke,—with Dryden in connexion with the papers favourable to the authority of the Church of

Rome which were found in the strong box of Charles II. and were supposed to have been written by him, and with Locke because the theologian considered that the philosopher's definition of substance was prejudicial to the doctrine of the Trinity. In most of his writings there is a small residuum of permanent value. The range of his learning is most clearly seen in his Bishops' Right to Vote in Parliament in Cases Capital. His Origines Britannice, or Antiquities of the British Church (1685), is a surprising mixture of critical and uncritical research; and his Discourse concerning the True Reason of the Sufferings of Christ (1669), written in answer to Crellius, contains a most forcible statement of the doctrine of Christ's substi- tution. So handsome in person as to have earned the sobriquet of "the beauty of holiness," Stillingfleet was twice married,—first to Andrea, daughter of William Dobbyns of Wormington, by whom he had two danghters, who died in infancy, and one son; afterwards to Eliz- abeth, daughter of Sir Nicholas Pedley, by whom he had seven children. He died in his house at Westminster, 28th March 1699, and was buried in his own cathedral, where a handsome monument briefly records his virtues. His library was bought by Marsh, archbishop of Armagh, to form the foundation of a public library in Dublin.

A collected edition of his works, with life prefixed, was published in London (1710); and a most useful edition of The Doctrines and Practices of the Church of Rome Truly Represented was published in 1845 by Dr Cunningham.

STILLWATER, a city of the United States, at the head of Washington county, Minnesota, on the west bank of the St Croix river, 18 miles north-east of St Paul. It is a great centre of the lumber trade, contains a State prison, a high school, and a public library, and increased its population from 4124 to 9055 between 1870 and

1880.

STILT, or Lone-LeEGGED PLovER, a bird so called for reasons obvious to any one who has seen it, since, though no bigger than a Snipe, the length of its legs (their bare part measuring 8 inches), in proportion to the size of its body, exceeds that of any other bird's. The first name (a translation of the French Echasse, given in 1760 by Brisson) seems to have been bestowed by

Rennie only in 1831; but, recommended by its definiteness and brevity, it has wholly supplanted the second and older one. The bird is the Charadrius himantopus! of Linneus, the Himantopus Hexmatopus has been already mentioned (OYSTERCATCHER, vol. xviii. p. 111, note 2). Mimantopus, with its equivalent Loripes, “by an

awkward metaphor,” as remarked by Gilbert White, ‘‘ implies that the legs are as slender and pliant as if cut out of a thong of leather.”

552

candidus or melanopterus of modern writers, and belongs to the group Limicolx, having been usually placed in the Family Scolopacide, though it might be quite as reason- ably referred to the Charadriidx, and, with its allies to be immediately mentioned, would seem to be not very distant from Hematopus, notwithstanding the wonderful development of its legs and the slenderness of its bill.

The very peculiar form of the Stilt naturally gave Buffon occasion (ist. Nat. Oiseaux, viii. pp. 114-116) to lament the shortcomings of Nature in producing an animal with such “ enormous defects,”— its long legs in particular, he supposed, scarcely allowing it to reach the ground with its bill. But he failed to notice the flexibility of its proportionately long neck, and admitted that he was ill-informed as to its habits. No doubt, if he had enjoyed even so slight an opportunity as occurred toa chance observer (/dis, 1859, p. 397), he would have allowed that its structure and ways were in complete conformity, for the bird obtains its food by wading in shallow water and seizing the insects that fly over or float upon its surface or the small crustaceans that swim beneath, for which purpose its slender extremities are, as might be expected, admirably adapted. Widely spread over Asia, North Africa, and Southern Europe, the Stilt has many times visited Britain—though always as a straggler, for it is not known to breed to the northward of the Dannbe valley,—and its occurrence in Scotland (near Dumfries) was noticed by Sibbald so long ago as 1684. It chiefly resorts to pools or lakes with a margin of mud, on which it constructs a slight nest, banked round or just raised above the level so as to keep its eggs dry (bis, 1859, p. 860); but sometimes they are laid in a tuft of grass. They are four in number, and, except in size, closely resemble those of the

OYSTERCATCHER (vol. xviii. p. 111). The bird has the head, neck, and lower parts white, the Lack and wings glossy black, the irides red, and the bare part of the legs pink. In America the genus has two representatives, one! (fig. 1) closely resembling that just described, but rather smaller and with a black crown and nape.

Fig. 1.—Black-Necked American Stilt. (After Gosse.)

This is H. nigricollis or mexicanus, and occurs from New England to the middle of South America, beyond which it is replaced by H. brasiliensis, which has the crown white. The Stilt inhabiting India is now recognized to be H. eandidus, but Australia possesses a distinct species, H. nove-hollandiz#, which also occurs in New Zealand, though that country has in addition a species peculiar to it, H. nove-zelandiz, differing from all the rest by assuming in the breeding-season an altogether black plumage. Australia, however, presents another form, which is the type of the genus Cladorhynchus, and differs from Himantopus both in its style of plumage (the male having a broad bay pectoral belt), in its shorter tarsi, and in having the toes (though, as in the Stilt's feet, three in number on each foot) webbed.

Allied in many ways to the Stilts, but differing in many undeniably generic characters, are the birds known as

Avosets,? forming the genus Recurvirostra of Linneus.

1 This species was made known to Ray by Sloane, who met with it in Jamaica, where in his day it was called ‘‘ Longlegs.”

? This word is from the Bolognese Avosetta, which is considered to be derived from the Latin avis—the termination expressing a diminu- tive of a graceful or delicate kind, as donnetta from donna (Prof. Salvadori tm epist.).

Sr iL?

Their bill, which is perhaps the most siender to be seen in the whole Class, curves upward towards the end, and has given the oldest known species two names which it formerly bore in England,—‘ Cobbler’s-awl,” from its likeness to the tool so called, and ‘‘Scooper,” because it resembled the scoop with which mariners threw water on their sails. The legs, though long, are not extraordinarily so, and the feet, which are webbed, bear a small hind toe,

This species (fig. 2), the 2. avocetta of ornithology, was of old time plentiful in England, though doubtless always restricted to certain

ae

: S by – 1 an” . . . Na ior, ea © é a

+1 Won BO ae, Oo A ah: –

not a few on the Severn, and Plot mentions it so as to lead one to suppose that in his time (1686) it bred in Staffordshire, while Willnghby (1676) knew of it as being in winter on the eastern coast, and Pennant in 1769 found it in great numbers opposite to Fossdyke Wash in Lincolnshire, and described the birds as hovering over the sportsman’s head like Lapwings. _In this district they were called “ Yelpers” from their cry ;3 but whether that name was elsewhere applied is uncertain, At theend of the last century they frequented Romney Marsh in Kent, and in the first quarter of the present century they bred in various suitable spots in Suffolk and Norfolk, —the last place known to have been inhabited by them being Salthouse,

where the people made puddings of their eggs, while the birds were killed for the sake of their feathers, which were used in making artificial flies for fishing. The extirpation of this settlement took place between 1822 and 1825 (ef. Stevenson, Birds of Norfolk, ii. pp. 240, 241).4 The Avosct's mode of nesting is much like that of the Stilt, and the eggs are hardly to be dis- tinguished from those of the latter but by their larger size, the bird being about as big asa Lapwinc (vol. xiv. p. 308), white, with the exception of its crown, the back of the neck, the inner scapulars, some of the wing-coverts and the primaries, which are black, while the legs are ofa fine light blue. It seems to get its food by Mie its bill from side to side in shallow pools, and catching the smal crustaceans or larvie of insects that may be swimming therein, but not, as has been stated, by sweeping the surface of the mud or sand —a process that would speedily destroy the delicate bill by friction. Two species of Avoset, 2. americana and FR. andina, are found in the New World ; the former, which ranges so far to the northward as the Saskatchewan, is distinguished by its light cinnamon-coloured head, neck, and breast, and the latter, confined so far as known to the mountain lakes of Chili, has no white in the upper parts except the head and neck. Australia produces a fourth species, 2. nove- hollandiw or rubrieollis, with a chestnut head and neck ; but the European 2. avocctia extends over nearly the whole of middle and southern Asia as well as Africa.

A recent proposal (Ibis, 1886, pp. 224-239) to unite the Avosets and Stilts in a single genus seems to have little to recommend it but its novelty, and will hardly meet with acceptance by systematists. (A. N. i ae OT —™

3 Of, '*Yarwhelp" (Gopwit, vol. x. p. 720) and ''Yaup … '"Whaup * (CURLEW, vol. vi. p. 711). "Barker" and " Clinker seem to have been names used in Norfolk. 'ed

4 The same kind of lamentable destruction has of late been cart on in Holland and Denmark, to the extirpation probably of the species in each country,

e UTR

STIRLING, a midland county of Scotland, is bounded N. by Perthshire, N.E. by Clackmannan and the Firth of Forth, S.E. by Linlithgowshire, 8. by

Lanarkshire and a detached portion of Dumbartonshire, and S.W. and W. by Dumbartonshire. In the north-east there are two isol- ated portions,—one forming the parish of Alva, bounded partly by Clackmannan and partly by Perthshire, and the other forming part of the parish of Logie and bounded by Perthshire. The outlines of the main portion are ex- tremely irregular, the boundary on the north following for the most part the windings of the Forth, while on the west it passes through the middle of Loch Lomond, and on the south coincides to a considerable extent with various streams. The extreme length of the county from north-west to south-east is about 45 miles, and the great- est breadth from north to south about 18 miles. The land area is 286,338 acres, and the total area 298,579 acres, or about 466 square miles. Apart from the district round Loch Lomond, the principal charm of the scenery of Stirlingshire is in the views of the valley of the Forth with the winding river, and for background the distant peaks of the Grampians, or the nearer ranges of the Ochils, which encroach on the north-eastern corner and detached sections of the county. The valley of the Forth runs along nearly the whole of the northern border, widening towards the cast. ‘The centre of the county from north-east to south-west is occupied by the broad irregular ranges of the Lennox Hills, which are known under four different names, according to the parishes in which they are principally situated,—the Gargunnock Hills (attaining a height of 1591 feet), the Fintry Hills (1676), the Kilsyth Hills (1393), and the Campsie Fells (1894). Nearly the whole of the county to the north-east of Loch Lomond is occu- pied by a spur of the Grampians, reaching in Ben Lomond a height of 3192 feet. Besides Loch Lomond, situated partly in Dumbartonshire, and Loch Katrine, which bounds the county at its north-western corner, the prin- cipal lakes are Loch Arklet to the south of Loch Katrine, Loch Coulter, in the south of St Ninians parish, Loch Ellrig in Falkirk parish, and Black Loch partly in Lanark- shire. he river Forth, from its junction with the Kelty near Gartmore, forms the northern boundary of the county, except where it bounds on the north the part of Kippen parish which is in Perthshire and separates a portion of Lecropt parish from that of St Ninians and a portion of Logie from that of St Ninians and Stirling. It receives from the north the Teith, which touches the county at Lecropt parish, and the Allan, which separates the parishes of Lecropt and Logie, and from the south the Boquhan burn, the Touch burn, and the Bannock burn. The Carron water flows eastwards from the Fintry Hills to the Firth of Forth at Grangemouth.

On the south there are a number of streams which form at various places the boundary of the county,—the Endrick water flowing west- wards from the Fintry Hills to Loch Lomond, the Kelvin from near Kilsyth flowing south-westwards to the Clyde, and the Avon from Lanarkshire flowing north-eastwards to the Firth of Forth. The Forth and Clyde Canal crosses the south-eastern corner of the county from Castlecary to Grangemouth.

_ The whole of the district to the north of Loch Lomond Is occupied by the crystalline schists of the Highlands, which, by the existence of a great fault, are connected on the east with the Old Red Sandstone, which occupies the broad valley between the base of the Highland hills and the chain of the Ochils. These latter heights, portions of which are included in detached areas of the county, con- sist of volcanic rocks associated with the Old Red Sand- Stone (see vol. x. p. 343). The Lennox Hills in the centre of the county are formed by volcanic rocks of Carbonifer-

ous age resting on strata of red and white sandstone (see vol. x. p. 346). The lower grounds are deeply buried under glacial drifts, and conspicuously marked by broad terraces that represent former sea-margins. On one of these, at a height of 50 feet above the present sea-level, lies the Carse of Falkirk. Another stands at an elevation of about 100 feet. There are saline mineral springs at Bridge of Allan.

The coalfield runs obliquely along the south-east of the county, the principal seams being in Denny, Kilsyth, Larbert, Falkirk, and Slamannan parishes. Ironstone, fire- clay, and oil-shale are also found. Limestone is extensively wrought in the Campsie district, and there are a number of sandstone quarries in various parts of the county. The total output of coal in 1884 was 1,182,891 tons, of iron- stone 75,351 tons, of fireclay 15,872, and of oil-shale 4535.

Agriculture.—According to the landowners return of 1872-78 the land was held by 4257 proprietors, possessing 284,751 acres, at an an- nual valuation of £521,407, an average value all over of £1, 16s. 33d. Of the proprietors 3409 possessed less than one acre. The follow- ing possessed over 5000 acres each:—Duke of Montrose, 68,878 ; William Forbes, 18,041; Rear-

admiral Sir William Edmonstone, 9778 ; Hon. Mrs. Margaret Lennox, 7606; Alex. Graham Speirs, 7172; W. C. G. Bontine, 6981; Lieutenant-Col. John Murray, 6818 ; Sir Alex. C. R. Gibson-Maitland, 6023 ; Henry Fletcher Campbell, 5679; and James Johnstone, 5840. The two arable soils of Stirling- shire arc distinguished locally as carse and dryfield, the remainder of the county being occupied by mountain pasture land, moor, and moss. The Carsc of Stirling extends along the banks of the Forth from Buchlyvie to the eastern extremity of the county,— a length of about 28 miles, with a breadth varying from 1 to 4 miles, the total area being about 30,000 acres. ‘The carse soil consists of the finest clays, without stones, but interspersed with strata of marine shells. It has been partly reclaimed from superincumbent peat moss, of which there are still considerable areas adjoining it. It requires a great deal of labour, but, by means of draining, subsoil ploughing, and the use of lime, has been rendered oue of the most fertile mi in Scotland, being specially well adapted for wheat and beans. The dryfield occupies the slopes of the hills above the carse and the valleys in the interior of the county, which constitute the more fertile portions, the crops for which it is best suited being potatoes and turnips. A great part of the dryfield has been re- claimed from moor within the present century. The Lennox Hills, occupying about a fourth of the total area of the county, form one of the most valuable tracts of pasture land in Scotland. The follow- ing table gives a classification of the holdings in 1875 and 1885 :—

50 acres | 50 to 100 | 100 to 300: 300 to 500| 500 to | Above andunder.| acres. acres. | acres. | 1000 ac./1000 ac.

Ac. | No.| Acres. 1418}1537)| 109,831

1418/1492 115,076)

Total.

Acres. |No.| Ac. |No.

10,411| 7 |4299| 1 10,825, 5 |3489) 1

Acres.|No.

28, 493/329

27,876|370

No./Acres. No,

1875 |789 | 1885 |725

13,130)382

12,550|363

peal ak

52,080′ 29

59,418 | 28

According to the agricultural returns for 1886, out of a total of 295,285 acres 115,477, or nearly 39 per cent., were arable land, the arca under corn crops amounting to 29,306 acres, undcr green crops to 8752, rotation grasses 30,664, permanent pasture 45,232, flax 15 and fallow 1508. Oats, the principal corn crop, occupied 19,662 acres, wheat 2065 acres (a decrease of about one half within twenty years), barley 4297 acres, rye 30, beans 8221, and pease 3]. Of green crops the principal are potatoes (3500 acres) and turnips (4623 acres). Considerably more than half of the arable area is occu- pied by rotation grasses and permanent pasture, and their acreage is constantly increasing, which is sufficiently accounted for by the steady increase in the numbers of sheep and cattle. The number of horses in 1886 was 4616, of which 3176 were used solely for purposes of agriculture, and 1440 were unbroken horses and mares kept solely for purposes of breeding. The Clydesdale breed are in general use on the largerfarms, Cattle in 1886 numbered 29,422, of which 10,745 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf, aud 8684 were other cattle two yearsold and above. Butter-making is largely prac- tised on the dryfield farms, the Ayrshire being the principal breed of cows, but cattle-feeding is also an important industry, for which Irish cattle and cross breeds are frequently bought, a considerable number of shorthorns being also reared. Sheep, chiefly blackfaced, for

which there is extensive pasturage on the Lennox Hills and the slopes of the Grampians, numbered 109,897 in 1886, and pigs 1775.

Though, as is evident from the remains of trees in the mosses, an extensive district of the county was at one time occupied by forest, it is now comparatively devoid of timber, the area under woods in 1881 being only 12,483 acres. There is a natural tendency to the growth of birch on the lower slopes of the mountains in the parishes

do4 |

of Buchanan and Drymen, and oaks grow extensively on the borders of Loch Lomond. Larch and Scotch firs principally occupy the modern plantations in the other parts of the county. In 1886 there were only 31 acres under orchards, 27 under market gardens, and 53 under nursery grounds,

Manufactures. —The Carron ironworks, founded in 1760, fora long time led the van in British iron manufacture, and are still among the most extensive in the kingdom. The Falkirk ironworks, founded in 1819, are the next to them in importance in the county, but there are many others in the same district. The woollen manufacture is next to iron in importance, It includes carpets, tartans, shawls, and tweeds, the principal seats of the industry being Alva, Bannock- ‘burn, Cambusbarron, and Stirling. Calico printing is carried on in the western part of the county, especially at Campsie and Milngavie. There are chemical works at Stirling, Falkirk, Denny, and Campsie. Throughout the county there are a considerable number of breweries and distilleries. At Grangemouth, the principal . port in the county, shipbuilding is carried on.

Administration and Population.—Stirling is included with Dumbarton and Clackmannan in the same sheriffdom, but has two sheriff-substi- tutes, who sit at Stirling and Falkirk respect- ively, and there are prisons in both towns. The high court of justiciary holds circuit courts at Stirling. There are 21 entire civil parishes within the county and parts of 5 others. Stir- ling (population 12,194) is a royal and police burgh, Falkirk (13,170) a police burgh and burgh of regality, Kilsyth (5405) a police burgh and burgh of

barony, and Alva (4961), Bridge of Allan (3005), Denny and Dunipace (4080), Grange- mouth (4424), and Milngavie (2686) police burghs. In addition to these the following ia had each upwards of 2000 inhabitants:

annockburn (2549), Lennoxtown (3249), and Stenhousemuir (2617). From 39,761 in 1765 the population of the county had by 1801 increased to 50,825, by 1831 to 72,621, by 1861 to 91,926, by 1871 to 98,176, and by 1881 to 112,443, of whom 56,147 were males and 56,296 were females. The number of persons to the square mile is 251, and in point of density Stirling |y ranks ninth among the counties of Scotland. One member is returned to parliament by the county, and Stirling and Falkirk are members of separate districts of burghs, which are' re- spectively named from them, each returning one member.

History.—In 81 A.D. the Romans under Agri- cola penetrated as far north as the firths of Clyde (Clota) and Forth (Bodotria). To secure their conquests they erected between these a line of forts or presidia, generally two miles apart. In 139 Lollius Urbicus erected along the line of the forts the rampart of Antoninus's wall, afterwards known as Graham's dyke. The wall, after crossing the parish of East Kilpatrick, passed outside the present county of Stirling, tillit reached Castlecary, whence it oth by Camelon and Falkirk to Carriden in Linlithgowshire. Castlecary, where many Roman remains have been found, was perhaps the principal Roman station on the line of the wall, and there was another important one at Camelon. A Roman road, the Camelon causeway, passed east- wards from Castlecary to the south of the rampart, and after two miles crossed it and held on to Camelon, whence it went northward by Bannockburn, St Ninians, and Stirling to the Forth, where there was an important station near the present bridge of Drip. Thence it passed north by Keir to Dunblane. To the north-east of the Carron ironworks there was at one time a finely-preserved circular Roman building, called Arthur's Oon (oven) or Julius's Hof, which was demolished in 1748, but of which a drawing is pre- served in Camden's Britannia. In the parish of Dunipace are two beautiful mounds called "the Hills of Dunipace," which some have supposed to have been erected as monuments of peace between the Romans and Caledonians, but which are more probably of natural origin. The remains of what was supposed to have been an early British stronghold were discovered at Torwood in 1864, A group of

cairns at Craigmaddie, near Milngavie, is supposed to mark the scene ofa battle between the Picts and Danes. Among the remains of old feudal castles may be mentioned Graham's castle, among the Fintry Hills, which belonged to Sir John de Graham, who was killed in the battle of Falkirk in 1298 ; Herbertshire, on the north bank of the Carron near Denny, originally a royal hunting seat, and still one of the finest embattled residences in the county (now a boarding school); the ancient keep of Castlecary, partly destroyed by the Highlanders in 1715 ; Torwood, surrounded by the remains of the Caledonian forest, in one of the oaks of which Wallace took refuge ; and the round tower of Carnock, called Bruee's castle, of unknown history. Sir William Wallace lived occasionally with his uncle, the parson of Dunipace, and the county is specially associated with

his exploits and those of Robert Bruce, being the scene of some of the prineipal battles in the struggle for Scottish independengg (Stirling bridge, September 10, 1297; Falkirk, July 22, 1298; Ban. nockburn, June 24, 1314). At Sauchieburn, 11th June 1488, Jameg III. was defeated by his insurgent nobles, and during his flight, having stopped at a cottage in the village of Milton, was there stabbed to death. Kilsyth saw the defeat of the Covenanters by Montrose, 15th August 1645, a result which for a time laid Scotlan

at Montrose's feet ; and a hundred years afterwards—17th January 1746—the Highlanders under Prince Charles Edward routed tho Hanoverians at Falkirk.

See Sir Robert Sibbald's Description of Stirlingshire,

I : 1710; and Nimmo's His. tory of Stirlingshire, 1777 (MacGregor Stirling's edition

is the best). (T. F, H.)

Plan of Stirling. of an isolated eminence overlooking the valley of the Forth and abruptly precipitous towards the north-west, at the junction of several railway lines, 36 miles west-north-west of Edinburgh and 30 north-north-east of Glasgow. Ori- ginally the town was protected on all the accessible sides of the rock by a wall, of which there are still some remains at the southern end of the Back Walk. There were two principal entries to the town,—the South Port, originally 100 yards more to the west of the present line of Port Street, and the bridge over the Forth to the north. The earliest bridge was at Kildean, a mile to the west ; the existing old bridge, now disused, probably dates from about the end of the 13th century ; the new bridge was erected in — 1829, from the designs of Stevenson, at a cost of £17,000, The streets of the old town are for the most part steep, narrow, and irregular, and contain a large number of quaint and antique dwellings. The town has now much outgrown its ancient limits, and the surrounding suburbs on the low grounds contain numerous villas. The castle crowning the eminence, and commanding a splendid pano- ramic view of the wide valley between the Lennox Hills and the Highland mountains and Ochils, with the links of the Forth and the widening estuary to the east, is of unknown antiquity, but from the time that Alexander I. died within its walls in 1124 till James VI. ascended the

throne of England it was intimately associated with the

fortunes of the Scottish monarchs, and after the accession of the Stuarts it became a favourite royal residence, The building was extended by James IIL, who erected the parliament hall, now used as a barrack-room. The palace, begun by James V. and finished in the reign of Mary, is

a

Oe:

—

I

SP ren LNG

at the south-west of the fortress, and forms a quadrangle, the front and pillars of which are adorned by quaintly sculptured figures. ‘The royal chapel founded by Alex- ander I., rebuilt in the 15th century, and again by James VI., was subsequently converted into an armoury and is now used as a store. ‘To the west of it is the Douglas room, the scene of the treacherous murder of William, eighth earl of Douglas, by James II. in 1452. Below the castle on the north-east is the road of Ballangeich, which supplied a fictitious title to James V. when wandering in disguise. Beyond it is the Gowan or Gowlan Hill, at the west corner of which is Mote Hill or Heading Hill, where Murdoch, duke of Albany, and several of his relatives were beheaded in 1425. On the north-east side of the esplanade a statue of King Robert Bruce was erected in 1877. Below the castle rock to the south-west were the king’s gardens, now laid out in grass, with an octagonal mound, called the King’s Knot, in the centre. Farther south is the King’s Park, now used for recreation, and as a drill ground. In the cemetery to the south of the castle esplanade there are a number of interesting monuments. Near the main entrance to the esplanade is the building called Argyll’s Lodging, erected by the poet, Sir William Alexander, who was created carl of Stirling by Charles I. It passed into the possession of the Argylls in 1640, and was the head- quarters of John, duke of Argyll, during the rebellion of 1715. South-west of it is Mar’s Work, the ruins of the palace built as a residence by the earl of Mar about 1570, from the ruins of Cambuskenneth Abbey. Next to the castle the most interesting public building is the Greyfriars church, some portions of which date from the 13th century, although the monastery with which it was connected was not founded till 1494. The greater part of it is in the Later Pointed style. The church was the scene of the coronation of James VI., 29th July 1567, when John Knox preached the coronation sermon. The site of the Dominican monas- tery founded by Alexander ITI. in 1223 is now occupied by the National Bank. In the immediate neighbourhood of Stirling, on the other side of the Forth, in Clackmannan county, is the beautiful ruin of Cambuskenneth Abbey, chiefly Early English or First Pointed, founded by David I. in 1147 for canons regular, associated with the meeting of parliaments and other interesting events in Scottish history, and the burial-place of James III. and his queen, Margaret of Denmark.

The principal secular buildings are the old town-house, erected in 1701; the new town buildings ; the jail, ereeted in 1848 at a cost of £12,000 ; the county buildings (1875, £15,000); the Smith institute, founded by the bequest of £22,000 and a valuable collec- tion of paintings by Thomas Stewart Smith, and embracing a picture gallery, a museum, and a reading room; the public halls (1883, £12,000); and the high school (1855, £5600 ; now being extended ata cost of £8000). Aimong the benefactions are Cowane's hospi- tal, founded by the bequest of John Cowane, dean of guild in 1638, for twelve decayed members of the guildry, but the distribution of the charity has since been altered, and the building erected in 1639 now forms the guild hall; Spittal's hospital, founded by Robert Spittal, tailor to James IV., about 1530 for decayed tradesmen; Allan's hospital, founded in 1725 for the maintenance of children of poor townsmen; and Cunningham's mortification, founded in 1808 with an endowment of £4000 for the clothing and schooling of sons of mechanics, By the operation of the Endowed Schools and Hospitals Act the charities are now largely devoted to education.

As early as the 15th century Stirling had a trade with the Nether- lands in worsted cloth, shalloons, stockings, and thread, but the manufactures afterwards declined. The cotton manufacture carried on in the beginning of the present century has now entirely ccased. During the last century the manufacture of tartans and carpets was earried on, but this also languished about the end of the century, and was not revived till about 1820. The woollen manufacture is now the staple industry, the principal goods being carpets, tartans, tweeds, andshawls. There are also breweries, coachbuilding works, and agricultural implement works. The population of the royal burgh in 1871 was 10,873, and in 1881 12,194. The population of the parliamentary burgh, which includes the village of St Ninians, in 1871 was 14,279, and in 1881 it was 16,001.

Sy935)

The town is of unknown antiquity, and undoubtedly owed its origin to the fortress on the rock, which became one of the most important strongholds in Scotland and the centre of the struggle between Scotlaud and England. As carly as 1119 the town was a royal burgh, and under Alexander I. it became

one of the four towns which constituted the Court of the Four Burghs, superseded under James III. by the Convention of Royal Burghs. — Its earliest charter was that of Alexander II. in 1226, who first made the castle a royal residence. Its last governing charter was obtained from Charles I. in 1641. On account of a combination of three members of the council to retain themselves in office it was deprived of its corporate privileges in 1773, and they were not restored till 1781. The castle was held by William the Lion before 1174, was occupied by Edward I. with his army in 1296, and was burned with the town in 1298 by the Scots on their retreat from the battle of Falkirk. Between this time and 1841 it was frequently besieged and taken by the English, the longest period during which it remained in their hands being from its capture by Edward I. in 1304 till his son's defeat 10 years afterwards at the battle of Ban- nockburn. It was the birthplace of James II. in 1480, and, it being

'the jointure house of his mother, lie was removed to it in 1438

from Edinburgh to thwart the ambitious purposes of Sir William Crichton. It was in one of its rooms that James, as stated above, slew the earl of Douglas, after which the town was burned by the earl's brothers. James V. took refuge in it after his escape from Falkland in 1528. During the reign of Mary and the period of the Reformation, Stirling occupied a position of almost as great prominence as during the wars of Scottish independence. Fo the infant queen was crowned by the cardinal's party in 1543; here her son, afterwards James VI., was baptized according to the Roman Catholic ritual, 17th December 1566; and here he was crowned by the leaders of the congregation on July 29th of the following year. In 1571 rival parliaments were held by the queen's party in Edinburgh and the king's lords at Stirling, shortly after which an attempt was made by the queen's adherents to surprise Stirling castle, which was almost successful, the regent (Lennox) being slain in the fray. On the 26th April 1578 the castle was surprised by Morton, after which a reconciliation took place between the two parties, In 1584 the castle was occupied by the earls of Angus and Mar, the Protestant leaders, but on the approach of the king with a large force they fled to England. Returning with a formidable army collected in the south in the following year, they compelled James after the flight of Arran to open the gates to them, safety to his person having been guaranteed. The town was

the scene of the baptism of Prince Heury with great pomp in August 1594, for which purpose the ehapel royal was rebuilt on a larger scale “to entertain the great number of strangers expected.” The meetings of the privy council and court of session were held in 1637 at Stirling on account of the disturbed condition of Edinburgh, and a parliament was held at it in 1645, on account of Edinburgh having been visited by the plague, but the outbreak of the disorder in Stirling caused an adjournment to Perth. During the Civil War Stirling was held by the Covenanters, and the committees of ehurch and state adjourned to it after the victory of Cromwell at Dunbar 3d September 1650. In August of the following year the castle was taken by General Monk. In 1715 it was held by Argyll to prevent the passage of the Forth by the Jacobites ; and during the rebellion of 1745 it was unsuccessfully besieged by the Highlanders.

See History of the Chapel Royal of Stirling, Grampian Club, 1882; Local Notes and Queries relating to Stirling, 1883; Charters of Stirling, 1884; Burton, History of Scotland. (T. F. 1.)

STIRLING, Eart or. vol. i. p. 493.

STIRLING, Jamus (1692-1770), mathematician, third son of Archibald Stirling of Garden, and grandson of Sir Archibald Stirling of Keir (Lord Garden, a lord of session), was born at Garden, Stirlingshire, in 1692. Part of his early education was probably obtained at Glasgow, but at eighteen years of age he went to Oxford, where, chiefly through the influence of the earl of Mar he was nominated (1711) one of Bishop Warner’s exhibitioners at Balliol. During his residence at Oxford he made for himself considerable reputation as a student of mathe- matics. In 1715, however, he was expelled on account of his correspondence with members of the Keir and Garden families, who were noted Jacobites, and had been accessory to the ‘Gathering of the Brig of Turk” in 1708. From Oxford he made his way to Venice, where he occupied himself as a professor of mathematics. In 1717 appeared his’ Linee Tertu Ordinis Newtonianz, sive… . (8vo, Oxford), which contained one or two notable additions

See ALEXANDER, SiR WILLIAM,

‘ to the theory. While in Venice, also, he communicated,

through Sir Isaac Newton, to the Royal Society a paper entitled "' Methodus Differentialis Newtoniana illustrata " (Phil. Trans., 1718, p. 1050; Abridg., vi. p. 428). Fear- ing assassination on account of having discovered a trade secret of the glass-makers of Venice, he returned with Newton's help to London about the year 1725. In London he remained for ten years, being most part of the time connected with an academy in Tower Street, and devoting his leisure to mathematics and correspondence with eminent mathematicians, In 1730 his most im- portant work was published, the Methodus Differentialis, swe Tractatus de Summatione et Interpolatione Serierum Infintarum (4to, London), which, it must be noted, is something more than an expansion of the paper of 1718. In 1735 he communicated to the Royal Society a paper "'On the Figure of the Earth, and on the Variation of the Force of Gravity at its Surface" (Phil. Trans., Abridg., vill. pp. 26-30). In the same year his worldly fortunes changed permanently for the better, through his appoint- ment to be manager for the Scots Mining Company at Leadhills, an appointment which gave scope both to his scientific talents and to his great, though hitherto latent, administrative ability, and which was eminently fortunate for his employers. We are thus prepared to find that his next paper to the Royal Society was concerned, not with pure, but with applied science—* Description of a Machine to blow Fire by the Fall of Water" (Phil. Trans., 1745, p. 815; Abridg., ix. pp. 109, 110). His name is also con- nected with another practical undertaking since grown to vast dimensions. The accounts of the city of Glasgow show that the very first instalment of ten millions sterling spent in making Glasgow a seaport, viz.,a sum of £28, 4s. 4d., was for a silver tea-kettle to be presented to "James Stirling, mathematician, for his service, pains, and trouble in surveying the river towards deepening it by locks." This was in 1752. Stirling died in Edinburgh on 5th December 1770.

See W. Fraser, The Stirlings of Keir, and their Family Papers, Edinburgh, 1858; " Modern History of Leadhills," in Gentleman's Magazine, June 1858; Brewster, Memoirs of Sir Isaac Newton, ii, pp. 300, 307, 411, 516; J. Nicol, Vital Statistics of Glasgow, 1881-5, p. 70; Glasgow Herald, 5th August 1886.

Another edition of the Linew Tertii Ordinis was published in Paris in 1797; another edition of the Methodus Differentialis in London in 1764; and a translation of the latter into English by Halliday in London in 1749, A considerable collection of literary remains, consisting of papers, letters, and two manuscript volumes of a treatise on weights and measures, are still preserved at Garden by Stirling's great-grandson and namesake.

STOAT. See Ermine.

STOBAUS, Joannes, a native of Stobi in Macedonia,— whence the surname Stobzeus or Stobensis,—is known to us as the compiler of a very valuable series of extracts from Greek authors. Of his life nothing is known, but he probably belongs to the latter half of the 5th century. From his silence in regard to Christian authors, it is in- ferred with some probability that he was not a Christian; that he was a man of wide culture and general reading is clear from the anthology which bears his name.

The extracts were intended by Stobeeus for his son Septimius, and were preceded by a letter briefly explaining the purpose of the work and giving a summary of the contents. From this summary (which is preserved in Photius's Bibliotheca) we learn that Stobseus divided his work into four books ; the first contained sixty chapters, the second forty-six, the third forty-two, and the fourth fifty-eight. In most of our MSS. the work is divided into three books, of which the first and second are generally called "ExAoyal pvoixal cai #O.xat, and the third 'AvOo- Adyvov (Morilegium or Sermones). As each of the four books is sometimes called *AvOoAdyiov, it is probable that this name originally belonged to the entire work :

the full title, as we know from Photius, was "Ex)oyéy atopbeypatav brobykav BuBria rértapa. Between the account which Photius gives of Stobecus's work and the form in which we have it there are several marked discre- pancies. The second book in particular is little more than a fragment. From this and other indications Wachsmuth has made it probable that our Stobzeus is only an epitome of the original work, made about the end of the 11th century at Byzantium, "ab homine Platonis Aristotelisque amantissimo."

The didactic aim of Stobzeus's work is apparent throughout. The first book teaches physics—in the wide sense which the Greeks assigned to this term —by means of extracts. Itis often untrustworthy : Stobzeus betrays a tendency to confound the dogmas of the early Ionic — philosophers, and he occasionally mixes up Platonism with Pythagoreanism. For part of this book and much of book ii, he depended on the works of Aetius, a Peripatetic philosopher, and Didyinus. The third and fourth books, like the larger part of the second, treat of ethics; the third, of virtues and vices, in pairs; the fourth, of more general ethical and political subjects, frequently citing extracts to illustrate the pros and cons of a question in two successive chapters. In all, Stobszeus quotes more than five hundred writers, generally beginning with the poets, and then proceeding to the historians, orators, philosophers, and physicians. It is to him that we owe many of our most important fragments of the dramatists, particularly of Euripides.

The first complete edition of Stobeus was published at Geneva in 1609; the last is Mcineke's (Leipsic, 1855-1864). The best critical edition of books i. and ii. is by Wachsmuth (Berlin, 1884) ;

a companion cdition of books iii. and iv. (the Florilegiwm) is pro- mised by Otto Hense.

STOCK EXCHANGE, a market for the purchase or sale of all descriptions of public securities. Previous to 1773 the London stockbrokers conducted their business in and about the Royal Exchange, but in that year, having formed themselves into an association under the designation of the Stock Exchange, they, after temporarily locating their headquarters in Sweeting Ally, Threadneedle Street, removed to Capel Court, Bartholomew Lane. The growth of business necessitating improved accommodation, a capital of £20,000 in four hundred shares of £50 each was raised in 1801 for the purpose of erecting a new building in Capel Court, which was finished and occupied in the following year, the members at that date number- ing about five hundred. With the occupation of the new building new rules came into force; all future members were admitted by ballot, while both members and their authorized clerks were required to pay a subscription of ten guineas each. As only the wealthier members of the association had provided the capital for the new building, the Stock Exchange henceforth consisted of

two distinct bodies—proprietors and subscribers. In 1854, the member- ship having increased to about one thousand persons, an extension of the premises in Capel Court was effected at a cost of £16,000. A further and very extensive increase in the accommodation was made in 1885, the number of members and authorized clerks having risen at that date to above two thousand five hundred. The extended build- ings now occupy the whole of a triangle to the east of the Bank of England, having as its base Bartholomew Lane, its north side Throgmorton Street, and its south side por- tions of Threadneedle Street and Old Broad Street. The completed buildings comprise two large halls, where the various markets are held, settlement rooms, reading room, committee rooms, managers' rooms, and various other offices. It is intended ultimately to remove the partition between the two halls, when a vast business apartment,

=

having an area of about 16,000 square feet, will be avail- able for the use of members. The immensely valuable property of the Stock Exchange is now owned by about 1050 proprietors, additions both to the proprietary and to the capital invested in the buildings having been from time to time effected during the past fifty years. The interests of the proprietors are attended to by nine of their number, who are termed managers, and by a secretary and staff of clerks. The income of the association now amounts to about £130,000 per annum, and is derived from the annual subscriptions of members and their clerks, from entrance fees paid by new members, and from rents and investments. All members of the Stock Exchange are not proprietors, neither are all proprietors necessarily members. Admission as a member is open to any person not engaged in another business. He must, however, be recommended by three members, who each guarantee to the committee of the house payment of £750 in the event of the new member being declared a defaulter within two years of his election. A personal guarantee of this de- scription is imperative, the object being to exclude all persons of doubtful character. Elections are by ballot, and for one year only, all members being theoretically liable to exclusion at the expiry of that period.

The stock exchange opens every morning at 11 o’clock and closes at 4, except on Saturday, on which day the doors are shut at 2 o’clock. All members of the house are either jobbers or brokers, the former term being applied to those who are dealers in stocks. It is contrary to the etiquette of the London Stock Exchange for brokers to deal with brokers, and all transactions are accordingly effected between brokers (representing their clients) and jobbers. Brokers’ charges vary from one-sixteenth to as much as one-half per cent., and the jobbers’ “turn” or profit from one-eighth to two or three per cent., according to the character of the stock dealt in. The turn of the jobber amounts in the aggregate to an enormous tax upon the British public, and the question of the utility of this inter- mediary has been much discussed at various times. On buyers and sellers the tax operates in this way :—A wishes to buy and B wishes to sell £1000 of Caledonian Railway stock, but, brokers being forbidden to deal with brokers, recourse is had to the jobber C, who makes a price to the brokers of say 98 to 984, that is to say, he offers to buy at 98 or to sell at 984; the buyer A accordingly pays 984 plus his broker’s commission, and the seller B receives 98 minus his broker’s commission, the jobber C pocketing the difference or “turn” of 4 per cent. The argument in favour of the jobber is that he supplies at all times and in all circumstances a ready market, and it must be allowed that in ordinary times he is a very convenient functionary. But, as a matter of fact, in excited times the system often breaks down, as the jobbers frequently shut their books and refuse to deal at the very moment when their help is most needed. What are known as the ‘‘markets” in the stock exchange are simply groups of jobbers distributed here and there on the floor of the house. Habit or con- venience seems to have determined the particular spots occupied, which are known as the consol market, the Eng- lish railway market, the foreign stock market, and so on.

In active times the business transacted daily on the London stock exchange amounts to an enormous total. Yet no written contracts or notes pass between jobbers and brokers, verbal communications being alone in use. Notwithstanding this apparent looseness of practice where millions of property are bought and sold almost hourly, there is hardly a single instance of attempted repudiation on record. All transactions are entered into for the fortnightly settlements, the precise dates for which are always fixed a few weeks in advance by the committee of

the house. Each fortnightly settlement includes three days: the first is the continuation or contango day, when all transactions of a merely speculative description are continued for another fortnight, the second the ticket day, when names are passed for actual purchases or sales, and the third the pay day, when all amounts or balances are paid or received. As the great bulk of business is purely speculative, the contango or continuation day is by far the busiest of the entire fortnight. The floor of the house is then crowded with an eager throng of from 2000 to 3000 brokers, jobbers, and clerks, and during the greater part of the day little is done beyond arranging the account. Con- tinuation rates or contangos vary with the value of money and the state of the account. When money is dear, or speculative buying active, rates are high, but when specula- tive selling has preponderated, and the account has become what is called a ‘“‘bear” account, rates are light. An enormous amount of capital is engaged in stock exchange speculation in London. Banks, financial companies, and private firms and individuals lend freely on stock exchange securities, and thus encourage, if they do not initiate, most of the great speculative movements. Besides the great central institution in London, stock exchanges exist in nearly all the large cities of the United Kingdom. The principal are those of Glasgow, Liverpool, and Manchester, which provide excellent markets for local stocks and shares.

On the Continent the two chief centres for the transaction of stock exchange business are Paris and Berlin. In Paris the business can be traced back for about five hundred years, but it was not until 1726 that the Bourse was legally recognized, sixty agents de change for the transaction of business being appointed in that year by the king. The Bourse now consists of two distinct bodies, known as the parquet and the coulisse. The parquet is composed of the sixty official’ brokers or agents de change appointcd by the Government, who alone are admitted to the inner business ring of the Bourse. The cowltsse arc the outside dealers or brokers, but, unlike the same class in London, these comprise firms of solid standing, bankers, and arbitrage houses. Although a partial settle- ment occurs once a fortnight, the great bulk of the business on the Paris Bourse is settled for once a month, the arrangements con- nected therewith occupying no less than six days. Another pecu- liarity in the mode of conducting business in Paris is that

sellers can be compelled to deliver stock at any time during the currency of the account. At Berlin the Bourse is not under Government control, and although a certain number of licences are issued any one may act as a broker. The Bourse can be used by the public on payment of an annual subscription, and all debts incurred there are as obligatory in law as ordinary commercial debts. The scttle- ment occupies three days, and occw's at the end of each month.

Although stock exchange business in the United States has now attained enormous proportions, it is of comparatively recent origin. The first organization of brokers in New York dates from about 1820. The mode of conducting business in Wall Street differs in some respects from both the English and the Continental procedure, Transactions entered into on one day are settled on the following, and the full amounts involved, and not the mere differences, are paid and received. The jobber, who is of so much importance under the English system, is unknown in New York, as in all cases brokers deal direct with brokers. While stock exchange business in London is of immense variety, and comprises all descriptions of home and foreign Government bonds, railway stocks, and miscella- neous shares, in New York it is confined almost entirely to American railway bonds and shares. In these securities, however, the volume of business in active times is enormous, the vast railway system of the United States providing an ample choice for the investor and a wide field for speculative manipulation. (We Pcie)

STOCKHOLM, the capital of Sweden, is situated at the point where Lake Malar mixes its waters with those of the Baltic, and at the meeting-place of two provinces, Upland and Sédermanland. The old cities of Sweden are regularly found in places where in early times the inhabitants of neighbouring districts came together for purposes of ex- change or sometimes of worship, or where a river brought the interior of the country into closer connexion with the coast. By the passages that wind among the numerous isles off Stockholm ships at an early date came to the mouth of the lake, only to continue their voyage into its

remoter parts. The two provinces mentioned were densely peopled, and the cultivated regions extended to the mouth of the lake, as is shown by groups of tumuli still to be seen in the immediate neigh- |2 23 bourhood of the present city. [25 Still Stockholm does not rank among the oldest cities of Sweden; the exceedingly eligible site had long been neglected owing to its exposure to the incursions of pirates.!

Stockholm was first founded by Birger Jarl, it is said, in the middle of the 13th century, at a time when pirate

lS Tye: = ACB . Can

LOH

Environs of Stockholm.

7 Wy = . mth VS Wy wo i} Di, i — “i RL 4 nN \ \ ss IS, A XN SS “aps \I y -e » 7 swe wut te S$ Os ZN 3 c

5. Mint. 6. Church of St Nicholas.

1. Chureh of St John. |

3. Kungstradgard. 2, Humlegard.

4, Carl XII. Torg.

which had been enclosed was found to be insufficient, and houses were built outside the walls, which thus lost their defensive character. The castle, two towers belonging to the older works, and some newer walls nearer the water became the sole fortifications. The citizens began also to build on the neighbouring shores, though there, in the event of a siege, all houses had to be destroyed, so as not to give shelter to the enemy. A tendency to increased

1 Before the rise of Stockholm Bjorké, Sigtuna, and Upsala were places of great importance. Bjérké (“ the isle of birches”), by foreign authors called Birca, was a kind of capital where the king lived ocea- sionally at least ; history speaks of its relations with Dorestad in the Netherlands, and the extensive refuse heaps of the old city, as well as the numerous sepulchral

monuments, show that the population must have been large. But, though situated at a central point on the Malar Lake, it was destroyed, apparently before the beginning of the 11th century, we do not exactly know when nor by whom; and, once de- stroyed, it never recovered. Sigtuna, lying on the shore of a far-reaching northern arm of Lake Malar, also a royal residence and the scat of the first mint in Sweden, where English workmen were employed by King Olaf at the beginning of the 11th century, was, thongh much more sheltered than Bjérk6, destroyed in the course of the 12th century.

BOD

STOCKHOLM

fleets were less common than they had been, and the

Government was anxious to establish commercial relations —

with the towns which were now beginning to flourish on the southern coast of the Baltic. The city was originally founded as a fortress on an island at the mouth of Lake Miilar ; this island, which is not large, consists of a hill of gravel resting upon rocky ground, having its highest side towards the north, and sloping in the other directions, The castle was erected on the north-eastern corner, and the city was surrounded with walls having fortified towers on the north and south. It came to be called Stockholm (“the isle of the log,” Lat. Zolmia, Germ. Holm) ; the true explanation of the name is not known. Soon the space

CaBllt

KASTELLHOLM\e c

UT

een BNO

Ces

mil

| 9. Birger Jarls Torg.

=

7. Stortorg. 8. Riddarhustorg. development has steadily showed itself throughout the Middle Ages and in modern times. On an islet in the stream, between the original Stockholm and the northern shore, was founded, in the 14th century, a hospital of the Holy Ghost, and a new tower was erected to defend the approach to the city. On another islet closely adjoining the original Stockholm on the west, a Franciscan monas- tery was founded towards the end of the 13th century. The present city has an area of 12°6 square miles (44 being water) ; its extreme length from north to south is » about 3°8 miles and its circumference 14}. The different parts of the actual city are the following. (1) Staden is the old “city”; its ancient origin is apparent in the narrow and winding streets. The individual houses are not very old, owing to the ravages of frequent fires ; still, some are to be seen with very narrow frontage and gables turned towards the street, asin North Germany. The old market, still called Stortorget (‘the great market”), is now one of the smallest in Stockholm. The royal palace, dating from

the Middle Ages, but enlarged and partly rebuilt ata later”

Pp Pweck iO 1

period, was destroyed by fire in 1697, the body of Charles XI. being with difficulty rescued from the flames. A new palace, after plans by Nicodemus Tessin, was not com- pleted (owing to wars and the general distress) until 1754 ; it is a quadrangular structure on the summit of the hill, with two wings towards the east and four towards the west (two straight and two in a semicircle). The style of the building is noble and refined, the royal apartments rich in treasures of art. In the immediate vicinity of the palace is the church of St Nicholas, the oldest in Stockholm, but in many parts changed from what it was; the chancel was demolished in the 16th century to give more room for the palace. Staden is the commercial centre of the city, containing the exchange, the bank of Sweden, and the custom-house, as well as the offices of many merchants. On the eastern side a very large quay, called the Skeppsbro (“the bridge of ships”), extends from the statue of Gus- tavus III. opposite the palace to where the traffic between Lake

Malar and the Baltic is carried on through a sluice or lock. ‘The Skeppsbro is the landing-place for steamers to the northern provinces of Sweden and foreign ports. On the other side of the palace is the Kanslihus, con- taining the offices of most of the ministries; and a little farther on is a market, named from the palace on its northern side, the Riddarhus, belonging to the Swedish nobility. The principal hall of the Riddarhus has its walls adorned with the armorial bearings of the noble families of Sweden. The representatives of these families meet here every third year for consultation as to their common interests. In front of the building stands the statue of Gustavus I. The town-hall stands in the same square. (2) Liddarholmen contains the old Franciscan church, which, however, is not now used for divine service. Since the time of Gustavus Adolphus it has been the burial-place of the royal family ; it also contains many trophies from the European wars of Sweden. On one side of the church stand the houses of parliament ; on the other is the statue of Birger Jarl, the founder of Stockholm. A large part of the island is occupied by Government offices, including the record office. Along the shore most of the steamers for different parts of Lake Malar and farther on through the canal of Sédertelge, for the Baltic, have their landing- places. (3) Helgeandsholmen (“the isle of the Holy Ghost”) is at present occupied by the royal stables. The Norrbro (“north bridge”), connecting the old town with the northern shore, passes the eastern extremity of the island. (4) Vorrmalmen (“the northern suburb”) begins at the Norrbro with the market of Gustavus Adolphus, where his statue stands between the theatre royal and the crown prince’s palace. Norrmalmen is one of the best- built parts of the city, with broad straight streets; it contains four parish churches and also the English church, the Roman Catholic church, and the Jewish synagogue. In the south-eastern corner is a large open space, Kungs- tridgairden (“the royal garden”), with the statues of Charles XII. and Charles XIIL. and a fountain, one of the prin- cipal playgrounds for children. Near it is another park, with the statue of Berzelius. Norrmalmen has several public buildings, such as the post-office, the principal rail- way station, the academy of art, the academy of sciences, the high technical school, and the school of metallurgy, the technical school, the observatory, &c. On the northern side of Norrmalmen lies the principal cemetery. (5) Blasie- holmen, united with Norrmalmen since the filling up of the canal which formerly separated them, contains the national Museum, the academy of music, &c. (6) Skeppsholmen (“the isle of ships”) and (7) Castellholmen

both belong to the admiralty. (8) Kwngsholmen (“the isle of the king”), to the west of Norrmalmen, contains a parish church, the mint, the high school of medicine, several hospitals, and

O09

many factories. (9) Ladugardslandet takes its name from the farm yard (/adugdard) of the royal castle, which formerly occupied a great part of its area. It became a part of the city in the middle of the 17th century, but until recently played a very subordinate part, owing to want of water. Since the introduction of the new water-supply this part of Stockholm ‘has grown wonderfully, and is now the finest part of the city, with more than 40,000 inhabitants. It has a fine park, Humlegarden (“hop garden”), with the royal library and the statue of Linneus. Most of the barracks of Stockholm, as well as the high military school, are situated in this quarter of the town. (10) Djurgarden (‘deer garden”) is a royal park, with villas, restaurants, shipbuilding yards, &e. (11) Sédermalmen (‘the southern suburb”) is separated from Staden by the sluice already mentioned. On an open space at the side of the channel stands the statue of Charles XIV. (Bernadotte). The larger part of this suburb, with its two parish churches, chapels, hospitals, &c., stands at a considerable elevation, and com- munication has been facilitated by the construction of two elevators. On the outskirts are factories, foundries, &c.

A glance at the map at once shows how important have been its water-facilities in forming the character of Stockholm. From all sides the water permeates the different parts of the city, separating them, yet at the same time helping to unite them. Stretching far away to east and to west between shores and islands sometimes open and cultivated, sometimes rocky and covered with trees, the water entices the inhabitants to make excursions and to reside for a part of the year in the country; in the summer the city is largely deserted. The site is universally recognizcd as extremely picturesque. The great water-surface has also a beneficent influence upon the climate. In 1884 the mean temperature was 42°°47 Fahr., the highest temperature of the year being 72°°4 Fahr. (2nd and 5th July), the lowest -0°:4 Fahr. (80th November). The year’s rainfall amounted to 18°3 inches, the number of rainy days being 129. The best time for visiting Stockholin is

the latter half of June, when the evening and morning lights, reflected from the water and scen through the young and luxuriant verdure, produce singularly beautiful and varied effects.

In Sweden the cities formerly played a comparatively subordinate part. During the Swedish Middle Ages the prominent classes were the nobility, the clergy, and the peasantry. The anti-aristocratic revolution of the 14th and the 15th centuries had in Sweden its principal supporters among the peasants. But the importance of the cities has gradually increased, and recent times have witnessed an accelerated development, which is best exemplified by the history of Stockholm. The number of inhabitants was, in 1800, 75,517; in 1825, 79,478; in 1850, 98,070; in 1860, 112,391; in 1870, 186,016; in 1880, 168,775; in 1884, 205,123; and in December 1885, 215,688. In 1884 11,916 were qualified to take part in the election of members of the lower house of parliament. Along with the rapid increase of population went a correspondingly increased industrial activity and a considerable development in the means of communication. The number of mechanics in 1884 was 11,064 (8716 of the wage-earning class), the corresponding numbers for 1880 being 9664 and 7483. The number of factories in 1884 was 275, employing 9810 workpeople (including 2638 women), and producing to the value of 32,355,565 Swedish crowns (£1,797,5381). The merchants in 1884 numbered 3828, with 6554 assistants. In the same year 87,561 vessels entered (21,460 steamers), while 37,699 (21,565 steamers) cleared. Of these 1688 entered from and 1159 cleared for foreign ports. In former times Stockholm had the com- mand of all the foreign commerce for the country round Lake Malar, and for the whole of northern Sweden; but more recently the northern cities have: made themselves to a certain extcnt inde- pendent of the capital.

For communication between the different parts of Stockholm omnibuses and small rowing boats have now given place to small steamers; in 1884 sixty-three of these were in use in the city and its immediate vicinity. In 1880 tramways were constructed for Staden, Norrmalmen, Kungsholmen, and Ladugardslandet.

The city forms a separate administrative district under a gov- crnor (éfverstéthallare). In ecclesiastical matters it belongs to the archbishopric of

Upsala, and the archbishop has the right to preside in its consistory, of which the president generally is the pastor primarius, the rector of St Nicholas. The members of this consistory are the rectors of the other seven territorial parishes and the rectors of the Finnish and German congregations. There is also a court consistory, presided over by the chief court preacher.

It was not until modern times that Stockholm became the capital of Sweden. The medieval kings visited year by year

different parts of the kingdom, where they lived for a shorter or longer time. When, from the development of state affairs, the need of a capital came to be felt, no city could compete with the claims of Stockholm. It is the usual residence of the king; in the summer he lives generally in one of the palaces in the neighbour- hood ; some part of every year he passes in his Norwegian eapital. The supreme court of justiee has its seat in Stockholm, as well as the Svea Hofratt, the next highest tribunal for central and northern Sweden. It is also the seat of all the other central governmental boards.

Stockholm is also the seat of seven academies. (1) The Swedish Academy, with cighteen members, founded in 1786, deals with the language and literature of Sweden. It is engaged upon a Swedish dictionary, and celebrates every year the memory of some renowned Swede. (2) The academy of sciences, founded in 1739, with 100 ordinary members, distributed into nine classes, and 75 foreign members, has charge of the royal museum of natural history, the physical, astronomical, and meteorological institutes, and the botanieal garden. (3) The academy of belles lettres, history, and antiquities, founded in 1753, reformed in 1786, now occuples itself only with history and antiquities; it has 14 honorary members, 20 ordinary members, 16 foreign members and corre- spondents. The seeretary of this academy is, at the same time, as royal antiquary of Sweden and garde des médailles, director of the archeological, historical, aud numisniatical state collections, and inspector of the antiquities of the kingdom. (4) The academy of agriculture, founded in 1811, with 24 honorary members, 136 ordinary and 75 foreign members, occupies itself with agriculture and fisherics. It has an experimental institution for agricultural chemistry, physiology of plants, gardening, and practical

agricul- ture. (5) The academy of fine arts, founded in 1735, has charge of the official school of art. (6) The academy of music, founded in 1771, has the care of the state conservatory of music. (7) The academy of military sciences was founded in 1796. Each: of these academies is a distinct body; most of them publish their trans- actions, and eacli has its own library.

There are several private societies of a scientific character, such as the society for publication of historical documents, the historical society, the society of anthropology and geography, the society of national antiquities, the geological society, the society of natural sciences, the entomological society, &c.

Stockholm has no state university, but there is a high school of medicine (Carolinska Institute), which has several professors of mathematics and natural science. The city has also a high tech- nical school, a technical school, a high military school, and a military school (in the palace of Carlberg, outside of the city), a veterinary school, a school of pharmacy, seven more or less complete secondary schools, and two seminaries for female teachers, besides private schools. The number of pupils in the secondary schools in 1884 was 2294 and in the primary schools 14,351.

The following are the principal public collections. (1) The royal historical museum (in the national museum) contains a remarkably rich series of the prehistoric antiquities of the country. Founded in the 17th century, it has made greatest progress since 1837. (2) The royal numismatical collection (in the national museum) contains about 90,000 coins and medals. The series of Anglo-Saxon coins found in Sweden is very important. (3) The numismatical collec- tion of the Bank of Sweden (in the bank offices) contains very good series of Swedish coins and medals. (4) The royal collection of armour and royal dresses (in the royal palace) is very rich in speci- mens of the 17th and 18th centuries. (5) The royal museum of fine and industrial arts (in the national museum) contains sculptures, pictures, engravings, drawings, &e. The collection of Swedish art is, of coursc, very rich. Of foreign schools that of the Netherlands is best represented. The collection illustrating the development of industrial arts consists principally of gifts of Charles XV. and Count A. Bjelke. (6) The royal museum of natural history (in the palace of the academy of sciences), with very rich

zoological, botanical, palzontological, and mineral series, is exceedingly rich in objects from the arctic regions. Other collections deserving mention are (7) the museum of the geological survey of Sweden ; (8) the museum of the school of medicine ; (9) the northern museum, a private institution, a very rich collection representing the life of all social classes of the north ; (10) the royal library, very rich in books and manuseripts ; and (11) the royal archives.

See Elers, Stockholm, 4 vols., 1800-1801 ; Ferlin, Stockholms Stad; Berdttelser angaende Stockholms Kommunalférvaltning. (H. T1.).

STOCKINGS. See Hosiery.

STOCKPORT, a market-town and municipal and parliamentary borough of England, in Cheshire and partly in Lancashire, is situated on an elevation above the Mersey at the junction of the Tanie and Goyt, and of a number of railway lines, 46 miles east-north-east of Chester, 37 east of Liverpool, and 6 south-south-east of Manchester. Owing to the lie of the ground the streets are very irre-

gular and uneven, and occasionally precipitous, while in the south they rise above the river in tiers. The Mersey is crossed by a number of bridges, including one of eleven arches opened in 1826 at a cost of £40,000. None of the ecclesiastical buildings are of special interest, the principal being the church of St Mary, erected in 1817, at a cost of £30,000, on the site of one of the 15th century, of which the chancel and vestry remain. The free grammar school was founded and endowed in 1487 by Sir Edward Shaa or Shaw, knight. The present building was erected in 1831 by the Goldsmiths' Company, who further endowed it with £290 a year, and handed it over to the corpora- tion. The Stockport Sunday school, erected in 1805, has accommodation for 4000 scholars. There is a free public library, established in 1875. The principal public build- ings are the court-house, the market-house, the union workhouse, the mechanics' institute, the infirmary, the institution for the blind and deaf and dumb, and the fine new public baths. In St Peter's Square there is a statue, unveiled 27th November 1886, of Richard Cobden, who was elected member for the borough in 1841 and

1847, Vernon Park, finely situated about a mile from the town, contains a free museum, built in 1858 at the expense of the members for the borough, and since enlarged by the corporation. The staple industries are the spinning and weaving of cotton and felt-hat making, There are also breweries, foundries, machine-works, and flour-mills. The limits of the municipal and parliamentary boroughs are co-extensive. The area is 2200 acres, with a population in 1871 of 53,014 and in 1881 of 59,553.

Thongh not referred to in any of the Roman itineraries, and possessing neither Roman nor Saxon remains, Stockport is supposed. to have been a Roman camp or outpost, which occupied the hill on which the Normans afterwards built a baronial castle. It is not mentioned in Domesday. The castle was held in 1178 by Geoffrey de Costentyn against Henry JJ., but whether in his own right or not is uncertain. In the beginning of the 13th century it was possessed by the first Baron Ranulf de Dapifer, progenitor of the Despensers, from whom it passed to Robert de Stockeport, who in the reign of Henry III. made the town a free borough, and in 1260 received for it from the earl of Chester the grant of a market. The town was visited by the plague in 1605-6. It was of some import- ance during the Civil War, and was taken by the Royalists under Prince Rupert in May 1644. During the insurrection of 1745 Prince Charles Edward rested at the town-on the 28th November. The town was enfranchised in 1882, with the right, which it still retains, of returning two members, and was incorporated under the Corporations Act in 1835.

STOCKS, as a form of punishment, are now quite obsolete. They were originally established in England after the passing of the Statute of Labourers, 23 Edw. If. c. 1. That Act enjoined that stocks (ceppes) should be made in every town between the passing of the Act and Pentecost of that year (1350). By numerous other statutes, until comparatively modern times, the punish- ment of the stocks was inflicted for offences of a less heinous kind, e.g., breaches of the Sunday Observance Acts of Charles I. and Charles II. In the United States the stocks were formerly used as a means of punishing slaves.

STOCKTON, a city of the United States, county seat of San Joaquin county, California, at the head of the Stockton navigable channel which joins the

San Joaquin river, and 48 miles south-south-east of Sacramento, by the western division of the Central Pacific Railroad. It is the business centre of the San Joaquin valley, a great wheat market, and the seat of the State lunatic asylum (founded in 1853). Artesian wells 80 to 1000 feet deep provide the city with a perennial supply of water. Two public libraries, several public schools, and a convent may be mentioned among its important institutions; and it manufactures leather, agricultural implements, paper, flour, &c. The population was 10,066 in 1870 and 10,282 in

1880. Stockton was laid out in 1849, and was incor- porated as a city in 1850.

STOCKTON-ON-TEES, a market-town and municipal and parliamentary borough and seaport of Durham, on the borders of the North Riding of Yorkshire, into which the parliamentary borough extends, is situated on the Tees, which is crossed by an iron bridge (completed in 1887 at a cost over £80,000, to supersede the stone bridge of 1769) leading to South Stockton, and on the Stockton and Dar- lington and the Sunderland and West Hartlepool branches of the North-Eastern Railway, 20 miles south-south-east of Durham, and 4 miles west-south-west of Middlesborough. The principal street is about a mile in length. Of the ancient castle commanding the Tees, which was destroyed in 1652, the last remains were removed in 1865. Among the principal public buildings are the town-hall, with a clock-tower and spire, the borough hall (erected in 1852 at a cost of £32,000), the freemasons' hall, the temperance hall, the theatre, the exchange hall, the literary institute, the hospital, the dispensary, the free library, and the blue-coat school. Stockton is a seaport of considerable importance. The management of the Tees, vested in 1808 in the Tees Navigation Company, was in 1852 vested in the Tees Conservancy Commissioners, incorporated by Act of Parlia- ment, under whose auspices the river has been greatly improved. 'The trade of the port is chiefly with Holland and the ports of the Baltic, and there is a considerable coasting trade with the Tyne ports and with Hull and London. Its chief exports are iron manufactures, coal, coke, and agricultural produce, the average annual value for the five years 1880-84 being about £72,000. The principal imports are timber, iron, grain, and

provisions, the average annual value for the five years 1880-84 being about £240,000. In 1885 the number of vessels that entered the port was 649, of 149,628 tons, the number that cleared 700, of 175,647 tons. The rapid increase of the town within the last quarter of a century is largely owing to the development of the iron and steel trade in the district. There are extensive steel works, blast- furnaces, iron and brass foundries, and rolling-mills, and iron-shipbuilding is also an important industry. There are also sailcloth works, potteries, breweries, and brick and tile works. The population of the municipal borough (area 1189 acres) in 1871 was 27,738, and in 1881 it was 41,015. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 7157 acres) in the same years was 37,612 and 55,457. The parliamentary borough includes the suburb of South Stockton on the opposite side of the river, forming @ separate urban sanitary district (area 1052 acres), with a population in 1871 of 6794 and in 1881 of 10,665, It has a temperance hall, a mechanics' institute, and a national school, and its manufactures are similar to those of Stockton.

The place is of great antiquity, and is supposed to have been occupied bythe Romans. Before the Conquest the manor belonged to the see of Durham. It was probably first.incorporated by Bishop Hugh de Pudsey, who in the reign of Richard I. occupied the castle. The castle, which was for a long time the residence of the bishops, stood on the north bank of the Tees. The town was destroyed by the Scots in 1822, but the castle seems to have escaped. During the Civil War it was garrisoned for the king, but was afterwards delivered up to the Parliamentary party, and in 1645 was held by the Scots. The town suffered severely from inundations of the Tees in 1771, 1788, and 1822. Though Stockton was placed under the Municipal Act of 1835 it remained divided into two parts, the one called the "borough," where the land was freehold, governed by the corporation, and the other called the "town," where the land was copyhold or leasehold, held under the vicar and vestry- men, and outside the corporate jurisdiction. To remedy this state of matters an " Extension and Improvement Act" was passed in 1852. The town was enfranchised in 1867, and returns one member.

STOICS, a school of philosophers founded at the close of*the 4th century B.c. by Zeno of Citium, and so called from the Stoa or painted corridor (crod mouxidy) on the

north side of the market-place at Athens, which, after its restoration by Cimon, the celebrated painter Polygnotus had adorned with frescos representing scenes from the Trojan War. But, though it arose on Hellenic soil, from lectures delivered in a public place at Athens, the school is scarcely to be considered a product of purely Greek intellect, but rather as the firstfruits of that interaction between West and East which followed the conquests of Alexander. Hardly a single Stoic of eminence was a citizen of any city in the heart of Greece, unless we .make Aristo of Chios, Cleanthes of Assus, and Panetius of Rhodes exceptions. Such lands as Cyprus, Cilicia, and Syria, such cities as Citium, Soli, Heraclea in Pontus, Sidon, Carthage, Seleucia on the Tigris, Apamea by the Orontes, furnished the school with its scholars and presi- dents; Tarsus, Rhodes, and Alexandria became famous as its university towns. As the first founder was of Phe- nician descent, so he drew most of his adherents from the countries which were the seat of Hellenistic (as distinct from Hellenic) civilization; nor did Stoicism achieve its crowning triumph until it was brought to Rome, where the grave earnestness of the national character could appreciate its doctrine, and where for two centuries or more it was the creed, if not the philosophy, of all the best of the Romans. Properly therefore it stands in marked antithesis to that fairest growth of old Hellas, the Academy, which saw the Stoa rise and fall,—the one the typical school of Greece and Greek intellect, the other of the Hellenized East, and, under the early Roman empire, of the whole civilized world. The transcendent genius of its author, the vitality and romantic fortunes of his doctrine, claim our warmest sympathies for Platonism. But it should not be forgotten that for more than four centuries the tide ran all the other way. It was Stoicism, not Platonism, that filled men’s imaginations, and exerted the wider and more active influence upon the ancient world at some of the busiest and most important times in all history. And this was chiefly because before all things it was a practical philosophy, a rallying point for strong and noble spirits contending against odds. Nevertheless, in some departments of theory, too, and notably in ethics and jurisprudence, Stoicism has dominated the thought of after ages to a degree not easy to exaggerate.

The history of the Stoic school may conveniently be divided in the usual threefold manner: the old Stoa, the middle or transition period (Diogenes of Seleucia, Boethus of Sidon, Panzetius, Posidonius), and the later Stoicism of Roman times. By the old Stoa is meant the period (c. 304-205 B.c.) down to the death of Chrysippus, the second founder ; then was laid the foundation of theory, to which hardly anything of importance was afterwards added. Confined almost to Athens, the school made its way slowly ainong many rivals. Aristo of Chios and Herillus of Carthage, Zeno's heterodox pupils, Perszus, his favourite disciple and housemate, the poet Aratus, and Spherus, the adviser of the Spartan king Cleomenes, are noteworthy minor names; but the chief interest centres about Zeno, Cleanthes, Chrysippus, who in succession built up the wondrous system. What originality it had—at first sight it would seem not much—belongs to these thinkers ; but the loss of all their works except the hymn of Cleanthes, and the inconsistencies in such scraps of information as can be gleaned from unintelligent witnesses, for the most part of many centuries later, have rendered it a peculiarly difficult task to distinguish with certainty the work of each of the three. The common standpoint, the relation to contemporary or earlier systems, with all that goes to make up the character and spirit of Stoicism, can, fortunately, be more certainly established, and may with reason be attributed to the founder. Zeno's residence at Athens

XXII. — 71

Zeno.

Cleanthes.

062

fell at a time when the great movement which Socrates originated had spent itself in the second generation of his spiritual descendants. Neither Theophrastus at the Lyceum, nor Xenocrates and Polemo at the Academy, nor Stilpo, who was drawing crowds to hear him at Megara, could be said to have inherited much of the great reformer's intellectual vigour, to say nothing of his moral earnestness. Zeno visited all the schools in turn, but seems to have attached himself definitely to the Cynics ; as a Cynic he composed at least one of his more important works, "the much admired

Republic," which we know to have been later on a stumbling-block to the school. In the Cynic school he found the practical spirit which he divined to be the great need of that stirring troublous age. For a while his motto must have been "back to Socrates," or at least "back to Antisthenes." The Stoics always counted themselves amongst the Socratic schools, and canonized Antisthenes and Diogenes; while reverence for Socrates was the tie which united to them such an accom. plished writer upon lighter ethical topics as the versatile Perseus, who, at the capital of Antigonus Gonatas, with hardly anything of the professional philosopher about him, reminds us of Xenophon, or even Prodicus. Zeno com- menced, then, as a Cynic; and in the developed system we can point toa kernel of Cynic doctrine to which various philosophemes of other thinkers (more especially Hera- clitus and Aristotle, but also Diogenes of Apollonia, the Pythagoreans, and the medical school of Hippocrates in a lesser degree) were added. Thus, quite apart from the general similarity of their ethical doctrine, the Cynics were materialists ; they were also nominalists, and combated the Platonic ideas ; in their theory of knowledge they made use of "reason" (Adyos), which was also one of their leading ethical conceptions. In all these particulars Zeno followed them, and the last is the more important, because, Chrysippus having adopted a new criterion of truth,—a clear and distinct perception of sense,—it is only from casual notices we learn that the elder Stoics had approxi- mated to Cynicism in making right reason the standard. At the same time, it is certain that the main outlines of the characteristic physical doctrine, which is after all the foundation of their ethics and logic, were the work of Zeno. The Logos, which had been an ethical or psycho- logical principle to the Cynics, received at his hands an extension throughout the natural world, in which Hera- clitean influence is unmistakable. Reading the Ephesian doctrine with the eyes of a Cynic, and the Cynic ethics in the light of Heracliteanism, he came to formulate his distinctive theory of the universe far in advance of either. In taking this immense stride and identifying the Cynic "reason," which is a law for man, with the "reason" which is the law of the universe, Zeno has been compared with Plato, who similarly extended the Socratic " general notion " from the region of morals,—of Justice, temperance, virtue,—to embrace all objects of all thought, the verity of all things that are. If the recognition of physics and logic as two studies co-ordinate with ethics is sufficient to differentiate the mature Zeno from the Cynic author of the Lepublic, no less than from his

own heterodox disciple Aristo, the elaboration on all sides of Stoic natural philo- sophy belongs to Cleanthes, who certainly was not the merely docile and receptive intelligence he is sometimes represented as being. He carried on and completed the assimilation of Heraclitean doctrine; but his own contributions were more distinctive and original than those of any other Stoic. Zeno's seeming dualism of God (or force) and formless matter he was able to transform into the lofty pantheism which breathes in every line of the famous hymn to Zeus. Heraclitus had indeed declared all to be in flux, but we ask in vain what is the cause for the

SO res

unceasing process of his ever-living fire. It was left for Cleanthes to discover this motive cause in a conception familiar to Zeno, as to the Cynics before him, but restricted to the region of ethics,—the conception of tension or effort, The soul of the sage, thought the Cynics, should be strained and braced for judgment and action; his first need ig firmness (edrovia) and Socratic strength. But the mind is a corporeal thing. Then followed the flash of genius; this varying tension of the one substance everywhere present, a purely physical fact, accounts for the diverse destinies of all innumerable particular things; it is the veritable cause of the flux and process of the universe, Herein lies the key to the entire system of the Stoics, as Cleanthes's epoch-making discovery continually received fresh applications to physics, ethics, and epistemology, Other of his innovations, the outcome of his crude materialism, found less favour with his successor, who declined to follow him in identifying the primary substance with fire, or in tracing all vitality to its ultimate source in the sun, the "ruling power" of the world,—a curious anticipation of scientific truth. Yet under this poetical Heraclitean mystic the school was far from flourishing, The eminent teachers of the time are said to have been Aristo, Zeno's heterodox pupil, and Arcesilas, who in Plato's name brought Megarian subtleties and Pyrrhonian agnosticism to bear upon the intruding doctrine; and after a vigorous upgrowth it seemed not unlikely to die out. From all danger of such a fate it was rescued by its third great teacher, Chrysippus ; "but for Chrysippus there had been no Porch." Zeno had caught the practical spirit of his age,—-the desire for a popular philosophy to meet individual needs. But there was another tendency in post-

Aristotelian thought,—to lean upon authority and substitute learning for independent research,—which grew stronger just in proportion as the fresh interest in the problems of the universe and the zeal for discovery declined, —a_ shadow, we may call it, of the coming Scholasticism thrown a thousand years in advance. The representative of this tendency, Chrysippus addressed Chryip himself to the congenial task of assimilating, developing, pus systematizing the doctrines bequeathed to him, and, above all, securing them in their stereotyped and final form, not simply from the assaults of the past, but, as after a long and successful career of controversy and polemical author- ship he fondly hoped, from all possible attack in the future. To his personal characteristics can be traced the hair- splitting and formal pedantry which ever afterwards marked the activity of the school, the dry repellent technical pro- cedure of the Dialecticians par excellence, as they were called. He created their formal logic and contributed much that was of value to their psychology and epistem- ology ; but in the main his work was to new-label and new-arrange in every department, and to lavish most care and attention on the least important parts,—the logical terminology and the refutation of fallacies, or, as his opponents declared, the excogitation of fallacies which even he could not refute. In his Republic Zeno had gone so far as to declare the routine education of the day (eg., mathematics, grammar, dc.) to be of no use. Such Cynic crudity Chrysippus rightly judged to be out of keeping with the requirements of a great dogmatic school, and he laboured on all sides after thoroughness, erudition, and scientific completeness. In short, Chrysippus made the

Stoic system what it was, and as he left it we proceed to

describe it. And first we will inquire, What is philosophy? No || idle gratification of curiosity, as Aristotle fabled of his mio life intellectual (which would be but a disguise for refined sophy. pleasure), no theory divorced from practice, no pursuit of science for its own sake, but knowledge so far forth as it

eo

el OLECS

can be realized in virtuous action, the learning of virtue by exercise and effort and training. So absolutely is the “rare and priceless wisdom ” for which we strive identical with virtue itself that the three main divisions of philo- sophy current at the time and accepted by Zeno,—logic, physics, and ethics,—are defined as the most generic or comprehensive virtues. How otherwise could they claim our attention? Accordingly Aristo, holding to Cynicism when Zeno himself had got beyond it, rejected two of these parts of philosophy as useless and out of reach,— a divergence which excluded him from the school, but strictly consistent with his view that ethics alone is scientific knowledge. Of the three divisions logic is the least important; ethics is the outcome of the whole, and historically the all-important vital element; but the foundations of the whole system are best discerned in the science of nature, which deals pre-eminently with the macrocosm and the microcosm, the universe and inan, including natural theology and an anthropology or psycho- logy, the latter forming the direct introduction to ethics. The Stoic system is in brief—(a) materialism, (6) dynamic mnaterialism, lastly © monism or pantheism. (a) The first of these characters is described by anticipation in Plato’s Sophist (246 © sq.), where, arguing with those “ who drag everything down to the corporeal” (cdpa), the Eleatic stranger would fain prove to them the existence of some- thing incorporeal, as follows. ‘‘ They admit the existence of ananimatebody. Is soul then something existent (oicia) ? Yes. And the qualities of soul, as justice and wisdom — are they visible and tangible? No. Do they then exist? They are in a dilemma.” Now, however effective against Plato’s contemporary Cynics or Atomists, the reasoning is thrown away upon the Stoics, who take boldly the one horn of this dilemma. That qualities of bodies (and therefore of the corporeal soul) exist they do not deny ; but they assert most uncompromisingly that they are one and all (wisdom, justice, &c.) corporeal. And they strengthen their position by taking Plato’s own definition (247 D), namely, “being is that which has the power to

ial- act or be acted upon,” and turning it against him. Tor

this is only true of Body; action, except by contact, is inconceivable ; and they reduce every form of causation to the efficient cause, which implies the communication of motion from one body to another. Again and again, therefore, only Body exists. The most real realities to Plato and Aristotle

had been thought and the objects of thought, vots and vonrd, whether abstracted from sensibles or inherent in “matter,” as the incognizable basis of all concrete existence. But this was too great an effort to last long. Sucli spiritualistic theories were nowhere really maintained after Aristotle and outside the circle of his immediate followers. The reaction came and left nothing of it all; for five centuries the dominant tone of the older and the newer schools alike was frankly materialistic. “Tf,” says Aristotle, “there is no other substance but the organic substances of nature, physics will be the highest of the sciences,” a conclusion which passed for axiomatic until the rise of Neoplatonism. The analogues therefore of metaphysical problems must be sought in physics; particularly that problem of the causes of things for which the Platonic idea and the Peripatetic “constitutive form ” . had been in turn received solutions. (b) But the doctrine that all existence is confined within the limits of the sensible universe,—that there is no being save corporeal being or body,—does not suffice to characterize the Stoic system; it is no less a doctrine of the Epicureans. It is the idea of tension as the essential attribute of body, in contradistinction to passive inert matter, which is dis- tinctively Stoic. The Epicureans leave unexplained the primary constitution and first movements of their atoms

or elemental solids; chance or declination may account for them. Now, to the Stoics nothing passes unexplained ; there is a reason (Adyos) for everything in nature. Every- thing which exists is at once capable of acting and being acted upon. In everything that exists, therefore, even the smallest particle, there are these two principles. By virtue of the passive principle the thing is susceptible of motion and modification ; it is matter which determines substance (otoia). The active principle makes the matter a given determinate thing, characterizing and qualifying it, whence it is termed quality (zoidrys). For all that is or happens there is an immediate cause or antecedent ; and as “cause” means “cause of motion,” and only body can act upon body, it follows that this antecedent cause is itself as truly corporeal as the matter upon which it acts. Thus we are led to regard the active principle “force” as everywhere co-extensive with “matter,” as pervading and permeating it, and together with it occupying and filling space. This is that famous doctrine of universal permea- tion (kpaous 5:

ddov), by which the axiom that two bodies cannot occupy the same space is practically denied. Thus that harmony of separate doctrines which contributes to the impressive simplicity of the Stoic physics is only attained at the cost of offending healthy common sense, for Body itself is robbed of a characteristic attribute.

Matter and force,

between matter and its cause, which is always a corporeal Monism.

current, and therefore matter, although the finest and subtlest matter. In fact they have reached the final result of unveiled hylozoism, from which the distinction of the activé and passive principles is discerned to be a merely formal concession to Aristotle, a legacy from his dualistic doctrine. His technical term Form (edos) they never use, but always Reason or God. This was not the first time

ob4

that approaches had been made to such a doctrine, and Diogenes of Apollonia in particular was led to oppose Anaxagoras, who distinguished Nous or Thought from every other agent within the cosmos which is its work, by postulating as his first principle something which should be at once physical substratum and thinking being. But until dualism had been thought out, as in the Peripatetic school, it was impossible that monism (or at any rate materialistic monism) should be definitely and consciously maintained. One thing is certain: the Stoics provided no loophole of escape by entrenching upon the “ purely material” nature of matter; they laid down with rigid accuracy its two chief properties,—extension in three dimensions, and resistance, both being traced back to force. There were, it is true, certain inconsistent concep- tions, creations of thought to which nothing real and external corresponded, namely, time, space, void, and the idea expressed in language (Aexrdév). But this inconsist- ency was covered by another: though each of these might

Ss TORCS

civilized men connects vitality with the air inhaled in respira- tion; the disciples of Hippocrates, without much modifying this primitive belief, explained the maintenance of vital warmth to be the function of the breath within the organism. In the time of Alexander the Great Praxagoras discovered the distinction between the arteries and the veins. Now in the corpse the former are empty; henee in the light of these preconceptions they were declared to be vessels for conveying Pneuma to the different parts of the body. A generation afterwards Erasistratus made this the basis of a new theory of diseases and their treatment. Vital spirit, inhaled from the outside air, rushes through the arteries till it reaches the various centres, especially the brain and the heart, and there causes thought and organic movement. But long before this the peculiar character of air had been recognized as something intermediate to the corporeal and the ineorporeal: wher Diogenes of Apollonia revived the old Ionian hylozoism in opposition to the dualism of Anaxagoras, he made this, the typical example of matter in the gaseous state, his one clement. In Stoicism, for the moment, the two conceptions arc united, soon, however, to diverge, —the medical conception to receive its final development under Galen, while the philosophical conception, passing over to Philo and others, was shaped and modified at Alexandria under the influence of Judaism, whence it played a great part in the develop. ments of Jewish and Christian theology.

be said to be something, they could not be said to exist. The distinction of force and matter is then something transitory

and relative. Its history will serve as a sketch of the eosmogony

of the Stoics, for they too, like earlier philosophers, have their

The influenee upon Stoicism of Heraclitus has been differently Contras: | conceived. Siebeck would reduce it within very small dimensions, to Hera. | but this is not borne out by the concise history found at Hercula- ¢litns,

Cosmo- gony.

Pneuma.

‘*fairy tale of science.” Before there was heaven or earth, there was prinuitive substanee or Pneuma, the everlasting presupposition of particular things. This is the totality of all existence; out of it the whole visible universe proceeds, hereafter to be again resolved into it. Not the less is it the creative force, or deity, which develops and shapes this universal order or cosmos. To the question, What is God? Stoicism rejoins, What is God not? In this original state of Pneuma God and the world are absolutely identical. But even then tension, the essential attribute of matter, is at work. Though the force working everywhere is one, there are diversities of its operation, corresponding to various degrees of tension. In this primitive Pneuma there must reside the utmost tension and heat ; for it is a fact of observation that most bodies expand when heated, whence we infer that there is a pressure in heat, an expansive and dispersive tendency. The Pneuma cannot long withstand this intense pressure. Motion backwards and forwards once set up goes to cool the glowing mass of fiery vapour and to weaken the tension. Hereupon follows the first differentia- tion of primitive substance,—the separation of force from matter, the emanation of the world from God. The germinal world-making powers (omepuarixol Adyor), which, in virtue of its tension, slumbered in Pneuma, now procecd upon their creative task. The primitive substance, be it remembered, is not Heraclitus’s fire (though Cleanthes also called it flame of fire, @Adt) any more than it is the air or “breath” of Anaximenes or Diogenes of Apollonia. Chrysippus determined it, following Zeno, to be fiery breath or ether, a spiritualized sublimed intermediate element. The cycle of its transformations and successive condensations constitutes the life of the universe, the mode of existence proper to finite and particular being. For the universe and all its parts are only different embodiments and stages in that metamorphosis of primi- tive being which Heraclitus had called a progress up and down (650s &yvw xdrw). Out of it is separated, first, elemental fire, the fire which we know, which burns and destroys; and this, again, condenses into air or aerial vapour ; a further step in the downward path derives water and earth from the solidification of air. At every stage the degree of tension requisite for existence is slackened, and the resulting element approaches more and more to “inert” matter. But, just as one element does not wholly pass over into another (¢.g., only a part of air is transmuted into water or earth), so the Pneuma itself does not wholly pass over into the elements. The residue that remains in original purity with its

tension yet undiminished is the ether in the highest sphere of the visible heavens, encircling the world of which it is lord and head. From the elements the one substance is transformed into the multitude of individual things in the orderly universe, which again is itself a living thing or being, and the Pneuma pervading it, and con- ditioning life and growth everywhere, is its soul. But this pro- cess of differentiation is not eternal; it continues only until the times of the restoration of all things. For the world which has grown up will in turn decay. The tension which has been relaxed will again be tightened ; there will be a gradual resolution of things into elements, and of elements into the primary substance, to be consummated in a general conflagration when once more the world will be absorbed in God. Then in due order a new cycle of development begins, reproducing the last in every minutest detail, and so on for ever.

The doctrine of Pneuma, vital breath or “spirit,” arose in the medical schools. The simplest reflexion among savages and half-

neum (Index Here., ed. Comparetti, col. 4 sg.). They substituted primitive Pueuma for his primitive fire, but so far as they are hylo- zoists at all they stand upon the same ground with him. Moreover, the commentaries of Cleanthes, Aristo, and Spheerus on Heraclitean writings (Diog. L., vii. 174, ix. 5, 15) point to common study of these writings under Zeno. Others again (¢.g., Lassalle) represent the Stoies as merely diluting and distorting Heracliteanism. But this is altogether wrong, aud the proofs offered, when rightly sifted, are often seen to rest upon the distortion of Heraclitean doctrine in the reports of later writers, to assimilate it to the better known but essentially distinct innovations of the Stoics. In Heraclitus the constant flux is a metaphysical notion replaced by the inter- change of material elements which Chrysippus stated ‘as a simple proposition of physics. Heraclitus offers no analogy to the doctrine of four (not three) elements as different grades of tension; to the conception of fire and air as the ‘‘form,” in Aristotelian terminology, of particulars; nor to the function of organizing fire which works by methodic plan to produce and preserve the world (mip rexvikdy 63¢ BadiCoy él yéveoty xdcuov). Nor, again, is there any analogy to the peculiar Stoic doctrine of universal intermingling (xpaots 6¢ 8Aov). The two active elements interpenetrate the two lower or more relaxed, winding through all parts of matter and so pervading the greater masses that

there is no mechanical mixture, nor yeta chemical combination, since both ‘‘force” and ‘‘matter” retain their relative characters as before. Even the distinction between “force” and “matter”—so alien to the spirit of Heraclitus—is seen to be a necessary consequence. Once assume that every character and property of a particular thing is determined solely by the tension in it of a current of Pneuma, and (since that which causes currents in the thing cannot be absolutely the same with the thing itself) Pneuma, though present in all things, must be asserted to vary indefinitely in quantity and intensity. So condensed and coarsened is the indwelling air-current of inorganic bodies that no trace of elasticity or life remains; it cannot even afford them the power of motion ; all it can do is to hold them together (auvextue} ddvauts), and, in technical language, Pneuma is present in stone or metal as a retaining principle (2s =hold), explaining the attri- butes of continuity and numerical identity (cuvexH ka qyvwpeva) which even these natural substances possess. In plants again and all the vegetable kingdom it is manifest as something far purer and possessing greater tension, called a ‘‘nature,” or principle of growth (gvois). Further, a distinction was drawn between irra- tioual animals, or the brute creation, and the rational, 7.e., gods and men, leaving room for a divergence, or rather development, of Stoic opinion. The older authorities conceded a vital principle, but denied a soul, to the brutes: animals, they say, are (ga but not gupvxa. Later on much evidence goes to show that (by a divergence from the orthodox standard perhaps due to Platonic influence) it was a Stoic tenet to concede a soul, though not a rational soul, throughout the animal kingdom. To this higher manifestation of Pneuma can be traced back the “‘ esprits animaux ” of Descartes and Leibnitz, which continue to play so great a part even in Locke. The universal presence of Pneuma was confirmed by observation. A certain warmth, akin to the vital heat of organic being, seems to be found in inorganic nature: vapours from the earth, hot springs, sparks from the flint, were claimed as the last remnant of Pneuma not yet utterly slackened and cold. They appealed also to the velocity and dilatation of aeriform bodies, to whirlwinds and inflated balloons. The Logos is quick and power- ful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the

hg

Ler s

dividing asunder of the jointsand marrow. Tension itself Cleanthes defined as a fiery flash (Anyi updos). Take the fundamental pro- perties of body—extension and resistance. The former results from distance; but distanees, or dimensions, are straight lines, 7.¢., lines of greatest tension (e%s &kpov TETAMEVN). ; Tension produees dila- tation, or increase in distanee. Resistance, again, is explained by cohesion, whieh implies bindiug force. Again, the primary substance has reetilinear motion in two directions, backwards and forwards, at onee a condensation, which produces cohesion and substance, and ‘ adilatation, the cause of extension and qualities. How near this comes to the scientific truth of attraction and repulsion need hardly be noted. From the astronomers the Stoics borrowed their picture of the universe, —a plenum in the-form of a series of layers or con- centric rings, first the elements, then the planetary and stellar spheres, massed round the eartli as centre,—a picture which dominated the imagination of men from the days of Eudoxus down _ to those of Dante or cven Copernicus. As to the physieal consti- tution of bodies, they were content to reproduce the Peripatetic doctrine with slight modifications in detail, of hardly any import- ‘ ance when compared with the change of spirit in the doctrine taught. But they rarely prosecuted researches in physics or | astronomy, and the newly created sciences of biology and compara- tive anatomy reccived no adequate recognition from them.

no- Lf, however, in the science of nature the Stoics can | lay claim to no striking originality, the case is different when we come to the science of man. In the rational creatures—man and the gods—Pneuma is manifested in a high degree of purity and intensity as an emanation from the world-soul, itself an emanation from the primary substance of purest ether,—a spark of the celestial fire, or, more accurately, fiery breath, which isa mean between fire and air, characterized by vital warmth more than by dryness. The pliysical basis of Stoic psychology deserves the closest attention. On the one hand, soul is corporeal, else it would have no real existence, would be incapable of extension in three dimensions (and therefore of equable diffusion all over the body), incapable of holding the body together, as the Stoics contended that it does, herein pre- , senting a sharp contrast to the Epicurean tenet that it is _ the body which confines and shelters the light vagrant | atoms of soul, On the other hand, this corporeal thing is | veritably and identically reason, mind, and ruling principle (Adyos, vois,

wyeuovixdv) ; in virtue of its divine origin Cleanthes can say to Zeus, “ We too are thy offspring,” and a Seneca can calmly insist that, if man and God are not on perfect equality, the superiority rests rather on our) side. What God is for the world that the soul is for man. The Cosmos must be conceived as a single whole, its variety being referred to varying stages of condensation in ‘ Pneuma. So, too, the human soul must possess absolute simplicity, its varying functions being conditioned by the degrees or species of its tension. It follows that of _ “parts” of the soul, as previous thinkers imagined, there can be no question; all that can consistently be main- tained is that from the centre of the body—the heart—seven | distinct air-currents are discharged to various organs, which are so many modes of the one goul’s activity! The _ ethical consequences of this position will be seen at a later stage. With this psychology is intimately connected the iW Stoic theory of knowledge. From the unity of soul it follows ‘ that all psychical processes, —sensation, assent, impulse,— _ proceed from reason, the ruling part ; that is to say, there is no strife or division: the one rational soul alone has sensations, assents to judgments, is impelled towards _ objects of desire just as much as it thinks or reasons. Not that all these powers at once reach full maturity. The soul at first is void of content; in the embryo it has | not developed beyond the nutritive principle of a plant _ (dtors): at birth the “ruling part” is a blank tablet, | ‘ These derivative powers inelude the five senses, speech, and the Teproductive faculty, and they bear to the soul the relation of qualities to a substanee. The ingenious essay of Mr R. D. Archer Hind on the Platonic psychology (Jour. of Phil., vol. x. p. 120)

aims at establishing « parallel unification ou the spiritualistie side; comp. Rep., x. 612 A,

—

although ready prepared to receive writing. This excludes all possibility of innate ideas or any faculty akin to intuitive reason. The source of all our knowledge is experience and discursive thought, which manipulates the materials of sense. Our ideas are copied from stored-up sensations. No other theory was possible upon the found- ation of the Stoic physics.

Note the parallel between the macrocosm and the microcosm. The soul of the world fills and penetrates it: in like manner, the human soul pervades and breathes through all the body, informing and guiding it, stamping the man with his essential character of rational. There is in both alike a ruling part, though this is situate in the human heart at the centre,—not in the brain, as the analogy of the celestial ether would suggest. Finally, the same cause, a relaxation of tension, accounts for sleep, decay, and death of man and for the dissolution of the world ; after death the dis- embodied soul can ouly maintain its separate existence, even for a limited time, by mounting to that region of the universe which is akin to its nature. It was a moot point whether all souls so sur- vive, as Cleanthes thought, or the souls of the wise and good alone, which was the opinion of Chrysippus ; in any case, soouer or later individual souls are merged in the soul of the universe, from which they proceeded. The relation of the soul of the universe to God is quite clear: it isan inherent property, a mode of His activity, an effluence or emanation from the fiery ether which surrounds the universe, penetrating and permeating it. A Stoic might consist- ently maintain that World-Soul, Providence, Destiny, and Germinal Reason are not mere synonyms, for they express different aspcets of God, different relations of God to things. We find ourselves on the verge of a system of abstractions, or ‘‘attributes turned into entities,” as barren as any excogitated in medieval times. In a certain sense, Seholasticism began with Chrysippus. To postulate different substances as underlying the different forces of nature would have been to surrcuder the fundamental thought of the system. What really is—the Pncuma—neither increases nor diminishes ; but its modes of working, its different currents, can be conveniently distinguished and enumerated as evidence of so many distinet attributes.

Oue inevitable consequence of materialism is that subject and Pereep- object can no longer be regarded as one in the act of perception, as tion.

Plato and Aristotle tended to assume, however imperfectly the assumption was carried out. The presumption of some merely external connexion, as between any other two corporeal things, is alone admissible, and some form of the representative hypothesis is most easily called in to account for perception. The Stoics explained it as a transmission of the perceived quality of the object, by means of the sense organ, into the percipient’s

mind, the quality transmitted appearing as a disturbance or impression upon the corporeal surface of that ‘‘thinking thing,” the soul. Sight is taken as the typical sense. A conical pencil of rays diverges from the pupil of the eye, so that its base covers the object seen. In sensation a presentation is conveyed, by an air-current, from the sense organ, here the eye, to the mind, i.¢., the soul’s “ruling part” in the breast ; the presentation, besides attesting its own existence, gives further information of its object,—visible colour or size, or whatever be the quality in the thing seen. That Zeno and Cleanthes crudely compared this presentation to the impres- sion which a seal bears upon wax, with protuberances and inden- tations, while Chrysippus more prudently determined it vaguely as an occult modification or ‘‘mode” of mind, is an interesting but not intrinsically important detail. But the mind is no mere passive recipient of impressions from without, in the view of the Stoics. Their analysis of sensation supposes it to react, by a variation in tension, against the current from the sense-organ ; and this is the mind’s assent or dissent, which is inseparable from the sense presentation. The eontents of experience are not all alike true or valid : hallucination is possible ; here the Stoics join issue with Epicurus. It is necessary, therefore, that assent should not be given indiscriminately ; we must determine a criterion of truth, a special formal test whereby reason may recognize the merely plausible and hold fast the true. In an earlier age such an inquiry would have seemed superfluous. To Plato and Aristotle the nature and operation of thought and reason constitute a sufficient criterion. Since their day not only had the opposition between sense and reason broken down, but the reasoned secpticism of Pyrrho and Arcesilaus had made the impossibility of attaining truth the primary condition of wellbeing. Yet the standard which ultimately found acceptance in the Stoic school was not put for- ward, in that form, by its founder. Zeno, we have reason to believe, adopted the Cynic Logos for his guidance to truth as well as to morality. Asa disciple of the Cynics he must have started with a theory of knowledge somewhat like that developed in the third part of Plato’s Theetetus (201 C sg.),—that simple ideas are given by sense, whereas “opinion,” which is a complex of simple ideas, only becomes knowledge when joined with Logos. We may

Criterion of truth.

Degrees of know- ledge.

further suppose that the more obvious of Plato's objections had led to the correction of "reason" into ''right reason." However that may be, itis certain from Aristotle (Vie. Eth., vi. 18, 1144b, 17) that virtue was defined as a ''habit" in accordance with right reason, and (Diog. Laer., vii. 54) from that the earlier Stoics made right reason the standard of truth. The law which regulates our action is thus the ultimate criterion of what we know, — practical knowledge being understood to be of paramount importance. But this criterion was open to the persistent attacks of Epicureans and Academics, who made clear (1) that reason is dependent upon, if not derived from, sense, and (2) that the utterances of reason lack consistency. Chrysippus, therefore, conceded something to his opponents when he substituted for the Logos the new standards of sensation (afc@nors) and general conception (mpéanyis =anticipa- tion, z.¢., the generic type formed in the mind unconsciously and spontaneously). At the same time he was more clearly defining and safeguarding his predecessors' position. For reason is con- sistent in the general conceptions wherein all men agree, because in all alike they are of spontaneous growth. Nor was the term sensation sufficiently definite. The same Chrysippus fixed upon a certain characteristic of true presentations, which he denoted by the much disputed term "apprehensive" (xatadnatixh pavracta). Provided the sense organ and the inind be healthy, provided an external object be really seen or heard, the presentation, in virtue of its clearness and distinctness, has the power to extort the assent which it always lies in our power to give or to withhold.

Formerly this technical phrase was explained to mean "the perception which irresistibly compels the subject to assent to it as true." But this, though apparently supported by Sextus Empiricus (4dv. Math., vii. 257), is quite erroneous ; for the presentation is called xaraAnmrdy, as well as karadnmtixh gavracta, so that beyond all doubt it is something which the percipient subject grasps, and not that which grasps or ''lays hold of" the percipient. Nor, again, is it wholly satisfactory to explain Karadnm@rTixy as virtually passive, ''apprehcnsible," like its opposite axatdAnmros ; for we find ayTiAnmrixh tay broKxeméevwy used as an alternative phrase (7b., vii. 248). It would seem that the perception intended to constitute the standard of truth is one which, by producing a mental counterpart of a really

existent external thing, enables the percipient, in the very act of sense, to ‘‘lay hold of” or apprehend an object in virtue of the presentation or sense impression of it excited in his own mind. The reality of the external object is a necessary condition, to exclude hallucina- tions of the senses; the exact correspondence between the external object and the internal precept is also necessary, but naturally hard to secure, for how can we compare the two? The external object is known only in perception. However, the younger Stoics endeavoured to meet the assaults of their persistent critic Carneades by suggesting various modes of testing a single presentation, to see whether it were eonsistent with others, especially such as occurred in groups, &c.; indeed, some went so far as to add to the definition “coming from a real object and exactly corresponding with it” the clause ‘‘ provided it encounter no obstacle.”

The same criterion was available for knowledge derived more –

directly from the intellect. Like all materialists, the Stoics can only distinguish the sensible from the intelligible as thinking when the external object is present (aic@dvec@a:) and thinking when it is absent (évvoeiv). The product of the latter kind includes memory (though this is, upon a strict analysis, something intermediate) and conceptions or general notions, under which were confusedly elassed the products of the imaginative faculty. The work of the mind is seen first in ‘‘assent”; if to a true presenta- tion the result is ‘‘simple apprehension ” (xardantis : this stands in close relation to the xaraAnmrixh pavracta, of which it is the necessary complement) ; if to a false or unapprehensive presentation, the result is “ opinion ” (dda), always deprecated as akin to error and ignorance, unworthy of a wise man. ‘These processes are conceivable only as ‘‘modes” of mind, changes in the soul’s substance, and the same is true of the higher conceptions, the products of generalization. But the Stoics were not slow to exalt the part of reason, which seizes upon the generic qualities, the essential nature of things. Where sense and reason conflict, it is the latter that must decide. One isolated ‘‘ apprehension,” however firm its grasp, does not constitute knowledge or science (émothun) ; it must be of the firmest, such as reason cannot shake, and, further, it must be worked into a system of such apprehensions, which can only be by the mind’s exercising the “habit” (és) of attaining truth by continuous tension. Here the work of reason is

assimilated to the force which binds together the parts of au inorganic body and resists their separation. There is nothing more in the order of the universe than extended mobile bodies and forces in tension in these bodies. So, too, in the order of knowledge there is nothing but sense and the force of reason maintaining its tension and connecting sensations and ideas in their proper sequence. Zeno compared sensation to the out- stretched hand, flat and open; bending the fingers was assent; the clenched fist was ‘‘simple apprehension,” the mental grasp of

sTOLes

an object ; knowledge was the clenched fist tightly held in the other hand. The illustration is valuable for the light it throws on the essential unity of diverse intellectual operations, as well ag for enforcing once more the Stoic doctrine that diffcrent grades of knowledge are different grades of tension. Good and evil, virtues and vices, remarks Plutarch, are all capable of being ‘ perceived”; sense, this common basis of all mental activity, is a sort of touch by which the ethereal Pneuma which is the soul’s substance recognizes and measures tension.

With this exposition we have already invaded the logic. To this the Stoics assigned a miscellany of studies— rhetoric, dialectic, including grammar, in addition to formal logic, —to all of which their industry made contributions. Some of their innovations in grammatical terminology have lasted until now : we still speak of oblique cases, genitive, dative, accusative, of verbs active (ép04), passive (Sra), neutcr (oddérepa), by the names they gave. Their corrections and fancied improvements of the Aristotelian logic are mostly useless and pedantic. Judgment (aéiwma) they defined as a complete idea capable of expression in language (Aexrdy abroreAgs), and to distinguish it from other enunciations, as a wish or a.command, they added ‘‘ which jg either true or false.” From simple judgments they proceeded to compound judgments, and declared the hypothetical syllogism to be the normal type of reason, of which the categorical syllogism is an abbreviation. Perhaps it is worth while to quote their treatment of the categories. Aristotle made ten, all co-ordinate, to serve as ‘‘heads of predication” under which to collect distinct scraps of information respecting a subject, probably a man. For this the Stoics

substituted four swmma genera, all subordinate, so that each in turn is more precisely determined by thc next. They are Something, or Being, determined as (1) substance or subject matter, (2) essential quality, ¢.¢., substance qualificd, (3) mode or chance attribute, 7.e., qualified substance in a certain condition (mas éxov), and, lastly, (4) relation or relative mode (in full broxefnevoy mowdy pds th wws €xov). The zeal with which the school prosecuted logical inquiries had one practical result,—they could use to perfection the unrivalled weapon of analysis. Its chief employ- inent was to lay things bare and sever them from their surround- ings, in order that they might be contemplated in their simplicity, with rigid exactness, as objects of thought, apart from the illusion and exaggeration that attends them when presented to sense and imagination. The very perfection and precision of this method constantly tempted the later Stoics to abuse it for the systematic depreciation of the objects analysed. :

The practical philosophy of: the Stoics stands in the Bihia,

closest connexion with their physics and psychology. Holding that man is a being who acts as well as thinks, and that this is the all-important side of his life, they find the link between the two in the mind's assent ; for, when impelled towards certain objects by a prompting or "impulse" (épuy= movement of the soul seeking to possess itself of certain external things), whether of nature or reason, 2 man must needs judge the objects to be desirable ; the subsequent movement, as it were, translates this judgment into action. Against the sceptical position it was necessary to maintain—(1) that motion, and there- fore moral action, cannot follow upon the mere present- ment of an idea, unless the idea so suggested receive assent, and (2) that assent alone does not suffice without the motive faculty which is found in all animals. Of our various impulses, some in the mature man are (a) rational ; some, as in the child, are (@) non-rational, because anterior to reason ; while (y) the impulse of the man may be contrary to reason, under the influence of the affections or passions.

proceeding upon a single plan (16 doAoyoupévus Liv, TovTO d éort Kaif? eva Adyov Kal cuudaves Ljv) : in this there 1s a certain symmetry or beauty, the attraction which excites rational impulse towards it. Clearly this definition of the end of action comes from the Cynics, who pithily

expressed it by saying that in order to live man needs either reason or a halter (Setv Adyov } Bpdxov). But during Zeno’s early studies another conception had been current, that of agree- ment with nature. Apparently it had been started by the Old Academy, where probably the technical phrase “ first pasteeeteienebinhedee_ A smmesshcinier tibet iia mttaer

= \ y l wdoas 5¢ Tas Sppas cuyxatabérers elvat, Tas 5é mpaKTUas ral

7d KivnTixey Tepiexery,—Stobeus, Hcl. Hth., ii. 164.

province of Logie,

(2) Now reason, as a spring of a action, has for its aim harmony or self-consistency, a life ™?”’

[oe

yp ro rmes

objects according to nature,” ra rpdra kara dicw, had its origin. Now the slightest acquaintance with Stoic physics shows that reason and nature are at one; we may there- fore well believe that Zeno himself had explained his harmonious or self-consistent life to mean a life in harmony with nature (Diog. Laer., vii. 87, quoting Zeno, ‘“‘On the Nature of Man”). At all events that was the orthodox formula adopted and interpreted by Cleanthes and Chry- sippus,—the former, as we might have expected from his Heraclitean tendencies, representing it to mean “ harmony with the universal nature,” the latter emphasizing that not only is it the nature of the universe, but the particular nature of man, that ismeant. Cleanthes’s interpretation is at once novel and fruitful: reason being the true self or nature of man, and being essentially the same in him with the reason in the All, its procedure in him should corre- spond to and reproduce its procedure in the All. It is reasonable, therefore, for the individual to submit to and co-operate with the indwelling reason, or law of the universe, and in obedience to this universal law (xowds vouos) imitate the uniform methodic march of the divine creative fire. Here we note the conception of morality as obedience to an objective law, though, as reason attains to consciousness of itself only in man, it is a law of which he himself, gua rational, is lawgiver.

But Chrysippus, in his reading of the formula, had no intention of relaxing the close dependence of ethics upon physics. A new light is thrown upon the study of external nature by the essential unity of reason in the macrocosm and in the microcosni : what we learn of its operations there is pro- fitable for instruction here, and life should be directed in accordance with the experience we have acquired of the course of nature (iv kar' éurepiay trav dice ocupPBouvédv- tov, Chrysippus ap. Stob., Hcl., ii. 134), Whether man will comply with the commands of the universal law or not, whether therefore the ethical end is realized in him, must depend upon himself. The whole tendency of the physical theory is towards a system of rigid determinism, nay, almost of fatalism; but, so soon as we reach the ethical region, the problem of indeterminism is forced upon us in all its perplexity.

(8) Having determined the end of rational action, we must now give a glance at the earlier, instinctive activity of beings properly without reason (i.e., of children and the brute creation) ; this too has its importance, since before reason is developed the agent follows the " uncorrupted impulses" of nature. Here we come upon a controversy which still has an interest for the psychologist, for Epicurus had declared pleasure to be the end of all instinctive activity, while the Stoics combated his position and sought to prove that not pleasure but self-preservation is really sought. According to them, the child or the animal would speedily be crushed out of existence if it did not move at all or if its movements were not governed by some plan ; a vague consciousness of itself and a love for its own constitution must be postulated to account for the impulse which, together with sensation, distinguishes animal life from the life of the plant.1 That all motion is excited by pleasure in prospect, or the hope of cessation from pain, is (they argue) contrary to fact. Efforts to Move are made perseveringly even where they occasion pain. The whole life of unreasoning infancy and of the brutes can be satisfactorily explained on the assumption

1 prov oixeioy elvar mayr) (Om thy adtod atoracw Kal Thy tatrns oweldnow. The oboracis of an organic being is an outcome of internal forces, a mutual relation of varying elements,—in man, a relation of the ruling part of the soul, ¢.e., the rational soul, to the rest. By oixelwous is

meant that nature inspires this self-love, “ for it is improbable that nature should estrange the living thing from

itself, or that she should leave the creature she had made without either estrangement from, or affection for, its own constitution.”

067

of sense and impulse acting mechanically, somewhat after the fashion indicated rather than worked out in detail in the Peripatetic application of the practical syllogism to the motion of animals. the Stoics approximate very decidedly to Aristotle. It is, as he said, a concomitant (érvyévympa), but not of all activities; on the contrary, the highest are without it, and it is invariably of no significance where it is found. Moreover, while Aristotle had asserted that it adds a certain zest or finish to natural activity, the Stoics declared that it never appears at all except as a mark of the decline or relaxation of vital energy, the bloom which is indeed a mark of ripeness but also the certain precursor of decay.

(y) To return to impulse,—there remains the case of The affec- action against reason under the influence of the passions, tions.

Although nature may guide man towards the right objects, she does not control the impetus or velocity of the soul’s movement. If this be in excess, the rational soul is hurried into an inflamed disorderly condition, the source of which is an erroneous judgment or false opinion, though its effects are seen in the evident elation or depression, and the stings of excitement, which are the symptoms of mental disorder. Anxious to uphold individual respon- sibility, the Stoics pronounced the false opinion to be voluntary ; that once granted, the subsequent reaction of the mind (ze, the emotional effects on which Zeno especially dwelt), the compulsion and extravagance which are characteristic of the passions, may be said to follow inevitably, so that under the sway of blind impulses the man is still acting voluntarily. This sets in a striking light the close dependence of ethics upon psychology. The Peripatetics had made the intellectual soul with virtues of its own something altogether distinct from the lower nature, the seat of the emotions and of the moral virtues which consist in their regulation. The Stoic doctrine of the essential unity of soul is a vehement protest against all

this: the soul’s unity is shown in a unity of activity, whether it be in a healthy or a disordered state. As all virtues are essentially one, though they differ according to the different relations to which the knowledge of good and evil is applied, so, too, emotion is not something antagonistic to reason, but perverted reason. There is no such struggle of vicious inclinations against virtue, a contest waged by two separate powers, as Aristotle had imagined in his account of moral weakness ; the proper simile isa mutiny or revolt in one and the same city, Mansoul now in allegiance to the rightful authority and now in open rebellion. The lower animals and children are incapable of emotion; it is only found where reason is fully developed. The analysis and classi- fication of these affections start with the false opinion or judgment or imagination, which may relate to the present or the future, to fancied good or fancied ill. Hence there are four types of the affections: all are grouped around pleasure, an impulse towards present fancied good ; desire, an impulse towards future fancied good ; grief, an impulse to shun fancied evil in the present ; fear, an impulse to shun fancied evil in the future. On the analogy of bodily disease, these disorders of the mind are further divided into (1) chronic ailments (voojara), such as avarice, where the belief that money is a good is persistent and deep-seated, leading to a habit of feeling and acting, or ambition, a similar erroneous judgment in respect of public honours, and (2) infirmities (éppworyjpara), sud- den attacks of error to which the patient momentarily succumbs. This remarkable development of Stoic prin- ciples leads to the demand for the entire suppression of the affections (drdfem), in contradistinction to that regulation and governance of them for which Plato and

In their theory of pleasure itself Pleasure.

Right reason.

Virtue.

568

the Old Academy contended (erpiordGe). Further, it explains the incessant war which the later Stoics waged with imagination.

The end of action has then been explained to be a con- sistent life, a rational life, and, lastly, a life according to nature. Now the Cynics had already traced back con- sistency to a certain Herculean strength or force of will, which again is an effect of the bracing or tension of the soul's substance, so that this ever-recurring attribute is as available to explain will as intelligence. Herein we discover, as it were, an internal source of the external harmony and regularity of a consistent life. Our will should be directed to this source rather than to its manifestations,—to "right" (¢., inflexible and straight) "reason," which has attained a character of intense rigidity, an intensive energy raised to an impassable degree. For this infallible firmness of the reason the technical term is did6ects, a '* disposition " which, like straightness or crookedness in a line, admits of no degrees of less or more; thence comes harmony, regularity, and consistency in all our acts, which alone is truly beautiful (kaAdvy= fair or noble ; for which tlle Romans characteristically said honestwm = honourable). Not even Christianity laid more stress upon inwardness, or taught more explicitly that motive counts for every- thing and external performance for very little. Once let the reason become "right" and it imparts this same character to all that it affects. First the soul is made strong, healthy, beautiful ; when, therefore, it thus fulfils all the conditions of its being, it is absolutely perfect. Now the perfection of anything is called its virtue; the virtue of man, then, is the perfection of his soul, 2.¢., of the ruling part or rational soul. But 'out of the heart are the issues of life": make the soul perfect and you make the life perfect. From such a " disposition " must proceed a life which flows on smoothly and uniformly, like a gentle river (evpoia Biov). No longer is there anything to hope or fear ; this harmonious accord between impulses and acts is itself man's wellbeing or welfare (eddaipovia). Cleanthes scouts the notion of adding to such perfection that occasional result of a decaying activity entitled pleasure ; Chrysippus remonstrates indignantly with Plato for appealing to the "moral bugbears" of future rewards or punishments. There is no '" wages of virtue," not even the continuance of her activity ; for lapse of time can add nothing to perfect wellbeing ; it is complete, whole, and indivisible now.

Virtue, then, as right reason, is at once knowledge and strength of will; for a right comprehension of Stoic psychology shows that these two are identical, The unity of all virtue is sufficiently apparent, but the Stoics also

acknowledged a plurality of specific virtues grouped round the four cardinal virtues of Plato. Wisdom (¢pdvnots) was, according to Zeno and Cleanthes, the common element ; according to Aristo, it should rather be termed knowledge (émiorhun); and this view was adopted in the school to avoid the awkwardness of using the same term (¢pdévnois) both for a special virtue and for the generic attribute of them all. Wisdom or knowledge in distributing to others is justice, in endeavour it is temperance, in endurance it is courage or fortitude; but in every virtuous act all four of the virtues are implicit. Virtue is thns the unconditional good ; it is at once the absolute end and the means to the end.

Goodness must be interpreted, as Socrates used to interpret it, that which furnishes some advantage or true utility; its opposite, evil, as that which produces harm or disadvantage. Obviously only virtue, and that which comes from virtue, confers any real advantage; only vice can really do harm. Goodness is a wider genus than virtue; all virtue is good, but not all goods are virtnes. There are goods of soul, such as habits and happy aptitudes which may be acquired in varying degrees (i.e, they are ers not diabéces); others are only single actions (évépyeim). A friend again may be a means to good (moimrikdy réAous). All these goods are utilities (@peAfuara), and therefore deserve to be sought (aiperd). Similarly evils may be classified as—(1) vices, settled dispositions contrary to rightreason, proceeding from that ignorance which infallibly attends on a slackening of the soul’s fibre; (2)

or Oe ss

evil habits or inclinations (edxaragopiat); (3) isolated vicious All these evils alike are to be shunned (fevxrd); all alike are harmful (SAdupara) ; the moral responsibility rests with

actions.

the individual, in so far as he is ignorant or has his soul relaxed,

Good and evil, however, is not an exhaustive classifica:

tion. There isa large class of things which are neither

the one nor the other; which do not conduce to ogp tt

attainment of the end, nor hinder us therefrom ; which are neither to be pursued nor shunned, but are simply in- different (aduaopa). To all these objects the attitude of the Cynics was complete indifference, wherein they were followed by Aristo; that of the sceptics professedly utter insensibility. Now the most original feature of the Stoic ethics is the classification of things indifferent and their arrangement in a certain scale in accordance with the value, positive or negative (dia, dmragia), to be assigned to them either intrinsically or in certain circumstances (kata repioracv). Some objects are so unimportant that in regard to them Aristo's attitude of complete indiffer- ence is justified. Placing them at the zero point, we may advance in both directions, assigning to all the objects of instinctive natural impulses a positive value, in virtue of which they are to be picked out (Ayra) in preference to other indifferent things not of this description. Thus bodily health, though not a good, is entitled to a certain value ; disease, though not an evil, has a certain negative value. The former class is according to nature, the latter contrary to nature ; the former are instinctively sought by children as tending to maintain their "constitution" or nature ; the latter their 'uncorrupted impulses" (ddu- atpopor adoppat) lead them to shun as tending to mar, cripple, or destroy life. Similarly, actions may be classi- fied : all virtuous actions are right actions (xaropOapara) ; all vicious actions are wrong actions or "sins" (dpapri- para). The attainment of any one of the objects in the class of things indifferent, looked at in itself, is neither right nor wrong. But, if the object picked out be that object out of all at the moment present to us which has the highest value, then the action of selecting it admits

of being defended on probable grounds, and as such is Fitnes entitled to be called (quite apart from the agent's disposi ore | tion, whether virtuous or vicious), materialiter, an act™™

"meet and fit" to do (kajxov). Such an act need not be preceded by any reasoning at all ; in the case of the brutes and of children it is always instinctive, yet in all cases it is capable of being justified on grounds of probability (8 mpaxOev evrAoyov exer drodoyiav). Similarly with the selection of an object which has less value in preference to one of higher

value: such a blunder is not, taken in itself, a wrong action, but it violates fitness (rapa ro xabijxor). Amongst fitting actions, some are always fitting, others only at times, under given circumstances ; some indifferent objects we select for their own sakes, others merely as means. The range of such human functions is wide enough to include the acquisition of information, the exercise of temperance and courage, even altruistic con duct. And yet some actions in man are on a level with the nutritive functions of the plant (Diog. Laer., vii. 86). Again, our human functions compose our whole conscious life ; even life, then, considered in itself, has in it n0 moral good ; we may, if need be, under certain circum- stances, voluntarily withdraw from it.

The Stoics maintain that the variety of things indifferent is essential to virtue, because it is the ficld upon which reason 18 exercised. Virtue is a body, therefore it is corporeal ; therefore its active principle needs a passive material to act upon. Things indifferent are capable of being put to a good or a bad use, though some lend themselves to use more easily than others. Nor does virtue merely avail itself, now and then, of things indifferent,—tl can do nothing else than avail itself of them. Though they are not goods, and though their attainment does not confer wellbeing, yet all virtue is the selection or choice of them. For how is 4

|

‘virtuous life manifested? In a series of external acts, each one of which is the choice of some natural end, some object according to ‘nature, as possessing at the moment the highest value. ‘The samc external act may be done by an irrational agent, and in his ease the act is not virtuous. For there is as great a gulf fixed between fitting and virtuous actions as between things indifferent having positive value and the good. No increase of value can raise a thing indifferent to the class of good; no degree of fitness in the external ‘et done can render it virtuous. As right actions consist in following reason in the selection of things according to nature, it follows that such right actions (as distinct from the fitting actions of which all living things are capable) are the exclusive privilege f rational beings. So, too, with wrong actions: only rational eings can perform them ; although children or the brutes may “un counter to fitness, and pursue objects contrary to nature,

they annot be said to sin or do wrong. All actions, then, of rational peings must be either virtuous or vicious; there is no mean etween the two. But what of fitting actions? Are not they also lone by rational agents? Is not the distinction between right sonduct and mere external fitness continually drawn when the toies are referring to the activity of rational human beings ?

nquestionably so; but in examining a given act it is necessary ~~o view it on the formal as well as on the material side,—as pro~~ weding from a virtuous or vicious disposition, and again as tend- ng, when taken in itself and apart from this disposition, to pro- ‘note or destroy the agent’s nature or constitution, ¢.e., as some- ‘hing “‘meet and fit” to do, or as contrary to fitness (or, in rare bases, as having no tendency in either direction), Lastly, the hnalysis of conduct is incomplete unless the external object which she agent aims at attaining by the act is also taken into account: t+ may be natural, and may therefore excite desire ; or it may be sxontrary to nature, and excite aversion ; or it may be absolutely ndifferent. Now the Stoic classifications of (a) external objects and (0) actions (as they have come down to us from not very dis- sriminating sources) are hampered by the inclusion of right actions ind wrong actions, which are made species of the wider genera, Under objects according to nature come (a) fitting actions, (8) right ietions, () virtues ; z.¢., conduct which is perfect contains all that ‘n the imperfect imitates perfection: a right action has ipso facto ull the fitness of a fitting action, and all the accord with nature of a ching according to nature. So with the opposite class: the vicious nan, by the very fact of not having the tension of soul which is virtue, commits a sin in his every action ; all that he does, there- ore, is on this ground contrary to fitness and contrary to nature. Any defect in external conduct proves it to be a sin ; the mere ab- ‘sence of defect does not establish its claim to be right conduct. It \9 aS easy to prove a given person is unwise (and therefore a sinner) asitis hard to prove him a sage. Virtue is one, vice is manifold. _ No act in itself is either noble or base; even the grossest violation f fitness, if it could be done with the right intention, would count 1s virtue, and the most fitting deeds without that intention are iaught (see Orig., C. Cels., iv. 45; Sext. Emp., Adv. Math., xi. 190; Pyrrh. Hyp., iii. 245, is therefore wrong). It does not ppear, then, that there is any divergence in principle between the loctrine of the end of action and the doctrine of fitness or relative uty; nor should the lattcr be regarded (as is done by Cicero and some modern expositors) as au

afterthought, intended to soften the too rigorous demands of the Stoic ideal. For from the first it was an integral part of the system: Zeno wrote a treatise ep) rod aéqkovros ; indeed he adopted it as a technical term. That this loctrine was a stumbling-block to the small band of his early liseiples seems not unlikely; for Aristo and Herillus, who left aim, asis believed, on independent grounds, modified it in their own ethical theories aftcrwards put forth. According to Hirzel Untersuch., ii. p. 54), however, the views of these two heterodox Stoics more closcly approximated than at first sight appears: Herillus, as well as Aristo, maintained that all actions intermed- ate to vice and virtue are absolutely indifferent (Diog. Laer., vii. 155); and Aristo, like Herillus, defined virtue as knowledge, aud neld that the wise man will never form opinions, i.e., will not act pon anything short of knowledge.

| In their view of man's social relations the Stoics are Zreatly in advance of preceding schools. We saw that virtue is a law which governs the universe: that which 'heason and God ordain must be accepted as binding upon the particle of reason which is in each one of us. Human law comes into existence when men recognize this obli- gation ; justice is therefore natural, and not something merely conventional. The opposite tendencies, to allow 'to the individual responsibility and freedom, and to demand of him obedience to law, are both features of the ystem ; but in virtue even of the freedom which belongs

| |

wrores

to him gua rational, he must recognize the society of |

069

rational beings of which he is a member, and subordinate his own ends to the cnds and needs of this society. Those who own one law are citizens of one state, the city of Zeus, in which men and gods have their dwelling. In that city all is ordained by reason working intelligently, and the members exist for the sake of one another ; there is an intimate connexion (cvpadfea) between them which makes all the wise and virtuous friends, even if

personally unknown, and leads them to contribute to one another's good. Their intercourse should find expression in justice, in friendship, in fanuly and political life. But practically the Stoic philosopher always had some good excuse for withdrawing from the narrow political life of the city in which he found himself. The circumstances of the time, such as the decay of Greek city-life, the foundation of large territorial states under absolute Greek rulers which followed upon Alexander's conquests, and afterwards the rise of the world-empire of Rome, aided to develop the leading idea of Zeno's Republic. There he had anticipated a state without family life, without law courts or coins, without schools or temples, in which all differences of nationality would be merged in the common brotlierhood of man. This cosmopolitan citizenship remained all through a distinctive Stoic dogma ; when first announced it must have had a powerful influence upon the minds of men, diverting them from the distractions of 'almost parochial politics to a boundless vista. There was, then, no longer any difference between Greek and barbarian, between male and female, bond and free. All are members of one body as partaking in reason, all are equally men. Not that this led to any movement for the abolition of slavery. For the Stoics attached but slight importance to external circumstances, since only the wise man is really free, and all the unwise are slaves. Yet, while they accepted slavery as a permanent institution, philosophers as wide apart as Chrysippus and Seneca sought to mitigate its evils in practice, and urged upon masters humanity in the treatment of their slaves.

The religious problem had peculiar interest for the Religion.

school which discerned God everywhere as the ruler and upholder, and at the same time the law, of the world that He had evolved from Himself. The physical groundwork lends a religious sanction to all moral duties, and Cleanthes's noble hymn is evidence how far a system of natural religion could go in providing satisfaction for the cravings of the religious temper : —

''Most glorious of immortals, O Zeus of many names, almighty and everlasting, sovereign of nature, directing all in _accord- ance with law, thee it is fitting that all mortals should address. . . Thee all this universe, as it rolls circling round the earth, obeys wheresoever thou dost guide, and

gladly owns thy sway. Sucha minister thou holdest in thy invincible hands, —the two-edged, fiery, ever-living thunderbolt, under whose stroke all nature shudders. No work upon earth is wrought apart from thee, lord, nor through the divine ethereal sphere, nor upon the sea; save only whatsoever decds wicked men do in their own foolishness. Nay, thou knowest how to make even the rough smooth, and to bring order out of disorder ; and things not friendly are friendly in thy sight. For so hast thou fitted all things together, the good with the evil, that there might be one eternal law over all… Deliver men from fell ignorance. Banish it, father, from their soul, and grant them to obtain wisdom, whereon relying thou rulest all things with justice.”

To the orthodox theology of Greece and Rome the sys- tem stood in a twofold relation, as criticism and rational- ism. That the popular religion contained gross errors hardly needed to be pointed out. The forms of worship were known to be trivial or mischievous, the myths un- worthy or immoral. But Zeno declared images, shrines, temples, sacrifices, prayers, and worship to be of no avail. A really acceptable prayer, he taught, can only have re- ference to a virtuous and devout mind: God is best woi- shipped in the shrine of the heart by the desire to know

and obey Him. At the same time the Stoics felt at liberty to defend and uphold the truth in polytheism. Not only is the primitive substance God, the one su- preme being, but divinity must be ascribed to His mani- festations, —to the heavenly bodies, which are conceived, like Plato’s created gods, as the highest of rational beings, to the forces of nature, even to deified men ; and thus the world was peopled with divine agencies. Moreover, the myths were rationalized and allegorized, which was not in either case an original procedure. The search for a deeper hidden meaning beside the literal one had been begun by Democritus, Empedocles, the Sophists, and the Cynics.

It remained for Zeno to carry this to a much greater extent, and to seek out or invent “natural priu- ciples ” (Adyot dvorkot) and moral ideas in all the legends and in the poetry of Homer and Hesiod. In this sense he was the pattern if not the “father” of all such as allegorize and reconcile. Etymology was pressed into the service, and the wildest conjectures as to the meaning of names did duty as a basis for mythological explanations. The two favourite Stoic heroes were Hercules and Ulysses, and nearly every scene in their adventures was made to disclose some moral significance. Lastly, the practice of divination and the consultation of oracles afforded a means of communication between God and man,—a con- cession to popular beliefs which may be explained when we reflect that to the faithful divination was something as essential as confession and spiritual direction to a devout Catholic now, or the study and interpretation of Scripture texts to a Protestant. Chrysippus did his best to recon- cile the superstition with his own rational doctrine of strict causation. Omens and portents, he explained, are the natural symptoms of certain occurrences. There must be countless indications of the course of Providence, for the most part unobserved, the meaning of only a few having become known to men. His opponents argued, “if all events are foreordained, divination is superfluous”; he replied that both divination and our behaviour under the warnings which it affords are included in the chain of causation. Even here, however, the bent of the system is apparent. They were at pains to insist upon purity of heart and life as an indispensable condition for success in prophesying and to enlist piety in the service of morality.

When Chrysippus died (Ol. 143 =208-204 B.c.) the structure of Stoic doctrine was complete. With the Middle Stoa we enter upon a period at first of compara- tive inaction, afterwards of internal reform. Chrysippus’s immediate successors were Zeno of Tarsus, Diogenes of Seleucia (often called the Babylonian), and Antipater of Tarsus, men of no originality, though not without ability ; the two last-named, however, had all their ener- gies taxed to sustain the conflict with CARNEADES (¢.v.). This was the most formidable assault the school ever encountered ; that it survived was due more to the fore- sight and elaborate precautions of Chrysippus than to any efforts of that “pen-doughty” pamphleteer, Antipater (xoAawoBdas), who shrank from opposing himself in per- son to the eloquence of Carneades. The subsequent his- tory testified to the importance of this

controversy. The special objects of attack were the Stoic theory of knowledge, their theology, and their ethics. The physical basis of the system remained unchanged but neglected ; all creative force or even original research in the departments of physics and metaphysics vanished. Yet problems of interest bearing upon psychology and natural theology continued to be discussed. Thus the cycles of the world's existence, and the universal conflagration which terminates each of them, excited some doubt. Diogenes of Seleucia is said to have wavered in his belief at last ; Boethus, one of his pupils, flatly denied it. He regarded the Deity as

yr Oeics

the guide and upholder of the world, watching over it from the outside, not as the immanent soul within it, for according to him the world was as soulless as a plant, We have here a compromise between Zeno's and Aristotle's doctrines. But in the end the universal conflagration was lianded down without question as an article of belief. Jf is clear that the activity of these teachers was chiefly directed to ethics: they elaborated fresh definitions of the chief good, designed either to make yet clearer the sense of the formulas of Chrysippus or else to meet the more urgent objections of the New Academy. Carneades had emphasized one striking apparent inconsistency: it had been laid down that to choose what is natural is man's highest good, and yet the things chosen, the " first objects according to nature," had no place amongst goods, Antipater may have met this by distinguishing "the attainment" of primary natural ends from the activity directed to their attainment (Plut., De Comm. Not., 27, 14, p. 1072 F) ; but, earlier still, Diogenes had put forward his gloss, viz., " The end is to calculate rightly in the selection and rejection of things according to nature." Archedemus, a contemporary of Diogenes, put this in plainer terms still: '* The end is to live in the performance of all fitting actions " (rdvra Ta Kabjxovra eritehotvras Civ). Now it is highly improbable that the earlier Stoics would have sanctioned such interpretations of their dogmas. The mere performance of relative or imperfect duties, they would have said, is something neither good nor evil; the essential constituent of human good is ignored. And similar criticism is actually passed by Posidonius: " This is not the end, but only its necessary concomitant ; sucha mode of expression may be useful for the refutation of objections put forward by the Sophists"

(Carneades and the New Academy 2), “but it contains nothing of morality or wellbeing” (Galen, De Plac. Hipp. et Plat., p. 470 XK), There is every ground, then, for concluding that we have here one concession extorted by the assaults of Carneades. For a sinilar compromise there is express testimony: “‘good repute” (eddogia) had been regarded as a thing wholly indifferent in the school down to and including Diogenes. Antipater was forced to assign to it “ positive value,” and to give it a place amongst “ things preferred ” (Cic., De Fin., iii. 57). These modifications were retained by Antipater’s successors. Hence come the increased im- portance and fuller treatment which from this time for- ward fall to the lot of the “external duties ” (ka@mxovra). The rigour and consistency of the older system became sen- sibly modified.

To this result another important factor contributed. The In all that the older Stoics taught there breathes that %%* enthusiasm for righteousness in which has been traced the earnestness of the Semitic spirit; but nothing presents more forcibly the pitch of their moral idealism than the doctrine of the Wise Man. All mankind fall into two classes,—the wise or virtuous, the unwise or wicked,— the distinction being absolute. He who possesses virtue possesses it whole and entire ; he who lacks it lacks it altogether. To be but a hand’s-breadth below the surface of the sea ensures drowning as infallibly as to be five hundred fathoms deep. Now the wise man is drawn as perfect. All he does is right, all his opinions are true ; he alone is free, rich, beautiful, skilled to govern, capable of giving or receiving a benefit. And his happiness, since length of time cannot increase it, falls in nothing short of that of Zeus. In contrast with all this, we have a picture of universal depravity. Now, who could claim to have attained to the sage’s wisdom? Doubtless, at the first founding of the school Zeno himself and Zeno’s pupils were inspired with this hope ; they emulated the Cynics Antisthenes and Diogenes, who never shrank out

LO tics

modesty from the name and its responsibilities. But the development of the system led them gradually and reluct- antly to renounce this hope, as they came to realize the arduous conditions involved. Zeno indeed could hardly have been denied the title conferred upon LEpicurus. Cleanthes, the ‘‘

second Hercules," held it possible for man to attain to virtue. From anecdotes recorded of the tricks played upon Aristo and Spherus (Diog. Laer., vii. 162, 117) it may be inferred that the former deemed himself infallible in his opinions, 7.e., set up for a sage; Perszeus himself, who had exposed the pretensions of Aristo, is twitted with having failed to conform with the perfect generalship which was one trait of the wise man, when he allowed the citadel of Corinth to be taken by Aratus (Athen., iv. 102 D). The trait of infallibility especially proved hard to establish when successive heads of the school seriously differed in their doctrine. The prospect became daily more distant, and at length faded away. Chrysippus declined to call himself or any of his contem- poraries a sage. One or two such manifestations there may have been—Socrates and Diogenes ?'—but the wise man was rarer, he thought, than the phoenix. If his suc- cessors allowed one or two more exceptions, to Diogenes of Seleucia at any rate the sage was an unrealized ideal, as we learn from Plutarch (De Comm. Not., 33, 1076 B), who does not fail to seize upon this extreme view. Posi- donius left even Socrates, Diogenes, and Antisthenes in the state of progress towards virtue. Although there was in the end a reaction from this extreme, yet it is impos- " gible to mistake the bearing of all this upon a practical system of morals. So long as dialectic subtleties and exciting polemics afforded food for the intellect, the gulf between theory and practice might be ignored. But once let this system be presented to men in earnest about right living, and eager to profit by what they are taught, and an ethical reform is inevitable. Conduct for us will be separated from conduct for the sage. We shall be told not always to imitate him. There will be a new law, dwell- ing specially upon the 'external duties" required of all men, wise or unwise ; and even the sufficiency of virtue for our happiness may be questioned. The introducer and expositor of such a twofold morality was a remarkable man. Born at Rhodes c. 185 B.c., a citizen of the most flourishing of Greek states and almost the only one which yet retained vigour and freedom, Paneetius lived for years in the house of Scipio Africanus the younger at Rome, accompanied him on embassies and campaigns, and was perhaps the first Greek who in a private capacity had any insight into the working of the Roman state or the character of its citizens. Later in life, as head of the Stoic school at Athens, he achieved a reputation second only to that of Chrysippus. He is the earliest Stoic author from whom we have, even indirectly, any consider- able piece of work, as

books i. and ii. of the De Officiis are a réchauffé, in Cicero's fashion, of Panetius " Upon External Duty " (zept tod xaOyjKovtos). } The introduction of Stoicism at Rome was the most 'momentous of the many changes that it saw. After the first sharp collision with the jealousy of the national authorities it found a ready acceptance, and made rapid progress amongst the noblest families. It has been well said that the old heroes of the republic were unconscious Stoics, fitted by their narrowness, their stern simplicity, and devotion to duty for the almost Semitic earnestness of the new doctrine. In Greece its insensibility to art and the cultivation of life was a fatal defect ; not so with the shrewd men of the world, desirous of qualifying as advocates or jurists. It supplied them with an incentive to scientific research in archeology and grammar; it penetrated jurisprudence until the belief in the ultimate

ov)

identity of the jus gentium with the law of nature modified the preetor's edicts for centuries. Even to the prosaic religion of old Rome, with its narrow original conception and multitude of burdensome rites, it became in some sort a support. Sceevola, following Paneetius, explained that the prudence of .statesmen had established this public institution in the service of order midway between the errors of popular superstition and the barren truths of enlightened philosophy. Soon the influence of the pupils reacted upon the doctrines taught. Of specula- tive interest the ordinary Roman had as little as may be ; for abstract discussion and controversy he cared nothing. Indifferent to the scientific basis or logical development of doctrines, he selected from various writers and from dif- ferent schools what he found most serviceable. All had to be simplified and disengaged from technical subtleties.

To attract his Roman pupils Panzetius would naturally Panetius,

choose simple topics susceptible of rhetorical treatment or of application to individual details. He was the represen- tative, not merely of Stoicism, but of Greece and Greek literature, and would feel pride in introducing its greatest masterpieces: amongst all that he studied, he valued most the writings of Plato. He admired the classic style, the exquisite purity of language, the flights of imagination, but he admired above all the

philosophy. He marks a reaction of the genuine Hellenic spirit against the narrow austerity of the first Stoics. Zeno and Chrysippus had in- troduced a repellent technical terminology ; their writings lacked every grace of style. With Panetius the Stoa became eloquent: he did his best to improve upon the uncouth words in vogue, even at some slight cost of accu- racy, ¢.g., to discard zponypévoy for evypyorov, or else de- signate it “so-called good,” or even simply “ good,” if the context allowed.

The part Panetius took in philological and historical studies is characteristic of the man. We know much of the results of these studies ; of his philosophy technically we know very little. He wrote only upon ethics, where historical knowledge would be of use. Crates of Mallus, one of his teachers, aimed at fulfilling the high functions of a “ critic ” according to his own definition,—that the critic must acquaint himself with all rational knowledge. Panetius was competent to pass judgment upon the critical ‘* divination” of an Aristarchus (who was perhaps himself also a Stoic), and took an interest in the restoration of Old Attic forms to the text of Plato. Just then there had been a movement towards a wider and more liberal cducation, by which even contemporary Epicureans were affected. Diogenes the Babylonian had written a treatise on language and one entitled The Laws. Along with grammar, which had been a prominent branch of study under Chrysippus, philosophy, history, geography, chronology, and kin- dred subjects came to be recognized as fields of activity no less than philology proper. It has been recently established that Polybius the historian was a Stoic, and it is clear that he was greatly influ- enced by the form of the system which he learned to know, in the society of Scipio and his friends, from Panetius.! Nor is it im- probable that works of the latter served Cicero as the originals of his De Republica and De Legibus.2 Thus the gulf between Stoicism and the later Cynics, who were persistently hostile to culture, could not fail to be widened.

A wave of eclecticism passed overall the Greck schools in the Ist Eclectic- Platonism and scepticism had left undoubted traces ism.

century B.C. upon the doctrine of such a reformer as Panetius. He had doubts about a general conflagration ; possibly (he thought) Aristotle was right in affirming the eternity of the present order of the world. He doubted

the entire system of divination. On these points his disciples Posidonius and Hecato seem to have reverted to orthodoxy. But in ethics his innovations were more suggestive and fertile. He separated wisdom as a theoretic virtue from the other three which he called practical. Hecato slightly modified this: showing that precepts (ewphuara) are needed for justice and temperance also, he made them scientific virtues, rescrving for his second class the unscientific virtue (&4Gedpyntos aperh) of courage, together with

2 Hirzel, Untersuch., ii. p. 841 sq. Polybius's rejection of divina- tion is decisive. See, ¢.g., his explanation upon natural causes of Scipio the elder's capture of New Carthage, " by the aid of Neptune, : x. 11 (ef. x. 2). P. Voigt holds that in vi. 5, 1, riow Erépas trav girocddpey is an allusion to Panetius.

2 This, at least, is maintained by Schmekel.

Posi- donius.

The later Stoics,

Ot2

health, strength, and such like ‘‘ excellencies.” Further, Panetius had maintained that pleasure is not altogether a thing indifferent: there is a natural as well as au unnatural pleasure. But, if so, it would follow that, since pleasure is an emotion, apathy or eradica- tiou of all emotions cannot be unconditionally required. The gloss he put upon the definition of the end was “a life in accordance with the promptings given us by nature”; the terms are all used by older Stoics, but the individual nature (juiv) seems to be emphasized. From Posidonius, the last representative of a com- prehensive study of nature and a subtle erudition, it is not surpris- ing that we get the following definition: the end is to live in con- templation of the reality and order of the universe, promoting it to the best of our power, and never led astray by the irrational part of the soul. The heterodox phrase with which this definition ends points to innovations in psychology which were undoubtedly real and important, suggested by the difficulty of maintaining the essential unity of the soul. Panetius had referred two faculties (those of speech and of reproduction) to animal impulse and to the vegetative ‘‘naturc” (@dors) respectively. Yet the older Stoics held that this Pdo1s was changed to a true soul (Wuxh) at birth. Posidonius, unable to explain the emotions as “judgments ” or the effects of judgments, postulated, like Plato, an irrational principle (including a concupiscent and a spirited element) to account for them, although he subordinated all these as faculties to the one substance of the soul lodged in the heart. This was a serious departure from the principles of the system, facilitating a rcturn of later Stoicism to the dualism of God and the world, reason and the irrational part in man, which Chrysippus had striven to surmount.!

Yet in the general approximation and fusion of opposing views which had set in, the Stoics fared far better than rival schools. Their system became best known and most widcly used by indi- vidual eclectics, All the assaults of the sceptical Academy had failed, and within fifty years of the death of Carneades his degener- ate successors, unable to hold their ground on the question of the criterion, had capitulated to the enemy. Antiochus of Ascalon, the professed restorer of the Old Academy, taught a medley of

Stoic and Peripatetic dogmas, which he boldly asserted Zeno had first borrowed from his school. The wide diffusion of Stoic phraseology and Stoie modes of thought may be secn on all hands,—in the language of the New Testament writers, in the compendious ‘histories of philosophy” industriously circulated by a host of writers about this time (of. H. Diels, Doxographi Greci).

The writings of the later Stoics have come down to us, if not entire, in great part, so that Seneca, Cornutus, Persius, Lucan, Epictetus, Marcus Aurelius are known at first hand. They do not profess to give a scientific exposi- tion of doctrine, and may therefore be dismissed somewhat briefly (see Eprcrerus and Auretius). We learn much more about the Stoic system from the scanty fragments of the first founders,” or even from the epitomes of Diogenes Laertius and Stobseus, than from these writers. They tes- tify to the restriction of philosophy to the practical side, and to the increasing tendency, ever since Panztius, towards a relaxation of the rigorous ethical doctrine and its approxi- mation to the form of religious conviction. This finds most marked expression in the doctrines of submission to Providence and universal philanthropy. Only in this way could they hold their ground, however insecurely, in face of the religious reaction of the first century. In passing to Rome, Stoicism quitted the school for actual life. The fall of the republic was a gain, for it released so much intellec- tual activity from civic duties. The life and death of Cato fired the imagination of a degenerate age in which he stood out both as a Roman and a Stoic. To a long line of illus- trious successors, men like Peetus Thrasea and Helvidius Priscus, Cato bequeathed his resolute opposition to the dominant power of the times ; unsympathetic, impractic- able, but fearless in demeanour, they were a standing re- proach to the corruption and tyranny of their age. But eee ee ee eee ee

‘ Works of Posidonius and Hecato have served as the basis of extant Latin treatises, Cicero, De Divinatione, perhaps De Natura Deorum, i., ii., comes in part from Posidonius ; Cicero, De Finibus, iil,, and Seneca, De Benefictis, i.-iv., from Heeato, who is also the source of Stobeus, Eel. Hth., ii, 110. Cf H. H. Fowler, Panztii et Lecatonis Fragmenta, Bonn, 1885.

2 Cf. C. Wachsmuth, Commentationes Ll, de Zenone Citiensi et Cleanthe Assio, Gottingen, 1874, Baguet's Chrysippus, Louvain, 1822, is unfortunately very incomplete.

crowds of hearers.

S Tors

when at first, under Augustus, the empire restored order, philosophy became bolder and addressed every class in society, public lectures and spiritual direction being the two forms in which it mainly showed activity. Books of direction were written by Sextius in Greek (as afterwards by Seneca in Latin), alinost the only Roman who had the ambition to found a sect, though in ethics he mainly followed Stoicism. was the popular lecturer of that day, producing a powerful effect by his denunciations of the manners of the time,

His contemporary Papirius Fabianus

Under Tiberius, Sotion and Attalus were attended by In Sencca's time there was a professor, badly attended it is true, even in a provincial town like Naples. At the same time the antiquarian study of Stoic writings went on apace, especially those of the earliest teachers,—Zeno and Aristo and Cleanthes.

Seneca is the most prominent leader in the direction a

which Roman Stoicism now took. His penetrating intellect had mastered the subtleties of the system of Chrysippus, but they seldom appear in his works, at least without apology. Incidentally we meet there with the doctrines of Pneuma and of tension, of the corporeal nature of the virtues and the affections, and much more to the same effect. But his attention is claimed for physics chiefly as a means of elevating the mind, and as making known the wisdom of Providence and the moral govern- ment of the world. To reconcile the ways of God to man had been the ambition of Chrysippus, as we know from Plutarch's criticisms. He argued plausibly that natural evil was a thing indifferent,—that even moral evil was required in the divine economy as a foil to set off good, The really difficult problem why the

prosperity of the wicked and the calamity of the just were permitted under the divine government he met in various ways: some- times he alleged the forgetfulness of higher powers ; some times he fell back upon the necessity of these contrasts and grotesque passages in the comedy of human life, Seneca gives the true Stoic answer in his treatise On Pro- wdence : the wise man cannot really meet with misfortune; all outward calamity is a divine instrument of training, designed to exercise his powers and teach the world the indifference of external conditions. In the soul Seneca recognizes an effluence of the divine spirit, a god in the human frame ; in virtue of this he maintains the essential dignity and internal freedom of man in every human being. Yet, in striking contrast to this orthodox tenet is his vivid conception of the weakness and misery of men, the hopelessness of the struggle with evil, whether in society or in the individual. Thus he describes the body (which, after Epicurus, he calls the flesh) as a mere husk or fetter or prison of the ‘soul; with its departure begins the soul’s true life. Sometimes, too, he writes as if he accepted an irrational as well as a rational part of the soul. In ethics, if there is no novelty of doctrine, there is a surprising change in the mode of its application. The ideal sage has receded ; philosophy comes as a physician, not to the whole but to the sick. We learn that there are various classes of patients in “ progress ” (apoxory), 1.¢., OM their way to virtue, making painful efforts towards it. The first stage is the eradication of vicious habits: evil tendencies are to be corrected, and a guard kept on the corrupt propensities of the reason. Suppose this achieved, we have yet to struggle with single attacks of the passions : irascibility may be cured, but we may succumb toa fit of rage. To achieve this second stage the impulses must be trained in such a way that the fitness of things indifferent may be the guide of conduct. Even then it remains to give the will that property of rigid infallibility without which we are always liable to err, and this must be effected by the training of the judgment. Other

-

|

/ :

,

peculiarities of the later Stoic ethics are due to the con- dition of the times. Ina time of moral corruption and oppressive rule, as the early empire repeatedly became to the privileged classes of Roman society, a general feeling of insecurity led the student of philosophy to seek in it a refuge against the vicissitudes of fortune which he daily beheld. The less any one man could do to interfere in the government, or even to safeguard his own life and prop- erty, the more heavily the common fate pressed upon all, levelling the ordinary distinctions of class and character. Driven inwards upon themselves, they employed their energy in severe self-examination, or they cultivated resig- nation to the will of the universe, and towards their fellow- men forbearance and forgiveness and humility, the virtues of the philanthropic disposition. With Seneca this resig- nation took the form of a constant meditation upon death. Timid by nature, aware of his impending doom, and at times justly dissatisfied with himself, he tries all means of reconciling himself to the idea of suicide. The act had always been accounted allowable in the school, if circum- stances should call for it: indeed, the first three teachers had found such circumstances in the infirmity of old age. But their attitude towards the “way out” (é6aywyj) of incurable discomforts is quite unlike the anxious senti- inentalism with which Seneca dwells upon death.

From Seneca we turn, not without satisfaction, to men of sterner mould, such as Musonius Rufus, who certainly deserves a place beside his more illustrious disciple, Epictetus. As a teacher he commanded universal respect, and wherever we catch a glimpse of his activity in these perilous times—whether banished by Nero, or excepted from banishment by Vespasian, as the judicial prosecutor of that foul traitor Egnatius Celer, or as thrusting himself between the ranks of Vespasianists and Vitellianists, to preach conciliation on the eve of a battle—he appears to advantage. His philosophy, however, is yet more con- centrated upon practice than Seneca’s, and in ethics he is almost at the position of Aristo. Virtue is the sole end, but virtue may be gained without many doctrines, mainly by habit and training. Epictetus testifies to the powerful hold he acquired upon his pupils, each of whom felt as if Musonius spoke to his heart. Amongst a mass of his practical precepts, we come across an original thought, the

famous distinction between “things in our power,” we, our ideas and imaginations, and “things beyond our power,” 2.¢., the course of events and external advantages. The practical lesson drawn from it is, that we must school ourselves to accept willingly the inevitable.

In the life and teaching of Epictetus this thought bore abundant fruit. The beautiful character which rose superior to weakness, poverty, and slave’s estate is also presented to us in the Discourses of his disciple Arrian as a model of religious resignation, of forbearance and love towards our brethren, that is, towards all men, since God 1S our common father. With him even the “ physical basis” of ethics takes the form of a religious dogma, ——the providence of God and the perfection of the world. We learn that he regards the Sauer or “ guardian angel” as the divine part in each man ; sometimes it is more nearly conscience, at other times reason. His ethics, too, has a religious character. He begins with human weakness and man’s need of God: whoso would become good must first be convinced that he is evil. an argument which almost amounts to a retractation of

the difference between things natural and things contrary | _ two members, but by the Act of 1885 a large part of this | went to form the new borough of Hanley. The population

to nature, as understood by Zeno. Would you be cut off from the universe? he asks. Go to, grow healthy and rich. But if not, if you are a part of it, then become resigned to your lot. Towards this goal of approximation to Cynicism the later Stoics had all along been tending.

Submission is enforced by |

573

Withdrawal from the active duty of the world must lead to passive endurance, and, ere long, complete indifference. Musonius had recommended marriage and condemned unsparingly the exposure of infants. Epictetus, however, would have the sage hold aloof from domestic cares, another Cynic trait. So, too, in his great maxim “ bear and forbear,” the last is a command to refrain from the external advantages which nature offers.

_ Epictetus is marked out amongst Stoics by his renuncia- Aure- tion of the world. He is followed by a Stoic emperor, M. lius.

Aurelius Antoninus, who, though in the world, was not of it. The Meditations give no systematic exposition of belief, but there are many indications of the religious spirit we have already observed, together with an alinost Platonic psychology. Following Epictetus, he speaks of man as a corpse bearing about a soul; at another time he has a threefold division—(1) body, (2) soul, the seat of impulse (xvevpariov), and (3) vods or intelligence, the proper ego. Tn all he writes there is a vein of sadness: the flux of all things, the vanity of life, are thoughts which perpetually recur, along with resignation to the will of God and for- bearance towards others, and the religious longing to be rid of the burden and to depart to God. These peculiarities in M. Antoninus may perhaps be explained in harmony with the older Stoic teaching; but, when taken in con- nexion with the rise of Neoplatonism and the revival of superstition, they are certainly significant. None of the ancient systems fell so rapidly as the Stoa. It had just touched the highest point of practical morality, and in a generation after M. Antoninus there is hardly a professor to be named. Its most valuable lessons to the world were preserved in Christianity ; but the grand simplicity of its monism slumbered for fifteen centuries before it was re- vived by Spinoza.

Literature. —The best modern authority is Zeller, Phil. d. Griech., iii. pt. i. (8d ed., 1880), —Eng. transl. Stoics, by Reichel (1879), and Eelectics, by 8. F. Alleyne (1883). Of the 214 numbers to which the bibliography of Stoicism extends in Ueberweg-Heinze, Grund- riss dcr Gesch. der Phil. (7th ed., 1886), may be cited F. Ravaisson, Essai sur ‘e Stoicismce, Paris, 1856; M. Heinze, Die Lehre vom Logos, Oldenburg, 1872; H. Siebeck, Untersuchungen zur Phil. d. Grtechen, Halle, 1873, and Gesch. d. Psychologie, i. 2, Gotha, 1884; R. Hirzel, “Die Entwicklung der stoisch. Phil.,” in Untcrsuch- ungen zu Ciccros Schriften, li. pp. 1-566, Leipsic, 1882; Ogereau, Essai sur le Systeme des Stoicicns, Paris, 1885; L. Stein, Die Psy- chologie der Stoa, i., Berlin, 1886. (R. DHE.)

‘ STOKE-UPON-TRENT, a market-town and municipal and parliamentary borough of Staffordshire, is situated on the Trent, on the Trent and Mersey Canal, where it unites with the Cauldon Canal, and on the London and

North- Western and North Staffordshire railway lines, 2 miles east of Newcastle-under-Lyme, and 15 north of Stafford. It is connected with Burslem and other places by steam tramway. The principal public buildings are the town- hall (1835), with assembly rooms, the new market-hall (1883), the Minton memorial building (1858), containing rooms for art and science classes, the free library and museum (1878), and the North Staffordshire infirmary, founded in 1815 and removed to its present site in 1868. A cemetery 21 acres in extent was laid out in 1883. There are statues of Josiah Wedgewood (1863) and of Colin Minton Campbell (1886). The head offices of the North Staffordshire Railway Company are in the town. Stoke has no antiquarian interest, and owes its importance to the porcelain and earthenware manufactures. It may be regarded as the centre of the " Potteries" district. Stoke was created a parliamentary borough in 1832, with

of the municipal borough (formed in 1874, with an area of 1660 acres) was 19,261 in 1881; the area has since been increased to 1720 acres. The population of the

O74

parliamentary borough (area 9081 acres) in 1571 was 130,985, and in 1881 it was 152,394; the population of the borough as adjusted in 1885, which returns only one member, is estimated at 65,000.

STOLBERG, or STOLLBERG, an industrial and mining town in Rhenish Prussia, is situated on the Vicht, 7 miles east of Aix-la-Chapelle. It is the centre of a very active and varied industry, exporting its produce to all parts of the world. The leading branch is metal-working, which is here carried on in important zinc, brass, and iron foundries, smelting-works of various kinds, puddling and rolling works, and manufactories of needles, pins, and other metal goods. The ore is mostly found in the mines around the town, but some is imported from a considerable distance. In or near the town there are also large chemical works, glass- works, a mirror-factory, and various minor establishments. Extensive coal-mines in the neiglibourhood provide the enormous supply of fuel demanded by the various indus- tries. The population in 1885 was 11,841.

The industrial prosperity of the town was founded in the middle of the 17th century by French religious refugees, who introduccd

the art of brass-founding. An ancient castle in the town is popu- larly believed to have been a hunting-lodge of Charlemagne.

STOLBERG, Count Curist1an (1748-1821), German poet, was born at Hamburg on the 15th October 1748. His father, Count Christian Giinther, was a privy councillor in Denmark. Stolberg studied at Gottingen, where he formed one of a ‘ Dichterbund,” which afterwards became famous. It included, besides Stolberg and his brother, Boie, Biirger, Miller, Voss, Hélty, and Leisewitz. In 1777 he became an official in the civil service at Tremsbiittel in Holstein, and married Louise, the countess of Reventlow, whose beauty he had often celebrated in his verses. He resigned his office in 1800, and afterwards lived upon his estate in Schleswig. He died January 18, 1821.

Stolberg was not a poet of high originality, but in some of his poenis he gave vigorous expression to sincere and ardent feeling. He excelled, too, in the utterance of gentle and delicate sentiment. Much of his work appcared in association with that of his brother, whose genius was bolder and more impressive than his own. They published together a volume of poems in 1779, and Schauspiele mit Chéren in 1787, their object in the latter work being to revive a love for the Greek drama. The dramas contributed to this volume by Christian Stolberg are Balsazar and Otanes. In 1815 the brothers issued a volume of Vaterldéndische Gedichte. Christian Stolberg was the sole author of Gedichte aus dem Griechischen (1782) and of a translation of the works of Sophocles (1787). All his poetical works are included in the Werke der Briider Stolberg (20 vols., 1820-25).

STOLBERG, Count FrepErick Leopotp (1750-1819), the brother of the preceding, was born on the 7th November 1750, at Bramstedt in Holstein. Like his brother he studied at Géttingen, and was a member of the “ Dichter- bund.” In 1776 he went to Copenhagen as ambassador of the prince-bishop of Liibeck, and in 1789 he was sent to Berlin as the ambassador of the king of Denmark. His first wife, whom he had married in 1782, having died, he married the Countess Sophia von Redern in 1790, and in the following year he was appointed president of the government of the

prince-bishop at Eutin. In 1800 he resigned his office, and at Miinster joined the Church of Rome, taking with him all the members of his family except his eldest daughter Agnes, who had married Count Ferdinand von Stolberg-Wernigerode. Stolberg's friends and admirers were astonished by his conversion to the Roman Church, and he was hotly attacked by Voss, whose intervention gave rise to a bitter controversy. After his change of faith Stolberg issued an elaborate Geschichte der Religion Jesu Christi, in which he hardly even attempted to write with impartial judgment. He died near Osna- briick on the 5th December 1819.

In association with his brother he published Gedichte ; Schau- spicle mit Choéren; and Vaterldéndische Gedichte. He also wrote

LIamben (1784), a series of satires on the vices and prejudices of his time; and he translated the Jiiad, some of Plato's dialogues, four tragedies of Aischylus, and Ossian's poems. Among his prose writings may be mentioned Die Insel, a romance (1788); Eine Reise in Deutschland, der Schweiz, Italien, und Sicilien (1794); and his Leben Alfred's des Grossen (1815). He was a master' of man forms of poetical expression, and in his best period he produced a strong impression on his contemporaries by his passion for nature and freedom.

Biographies of Stolberg have been written by Nicolovius, Menge, Wiedel, Hennes, and Janssen.

STOLP, or STOLPE, an ancient trading-town in the bleak coast-plain of eastern Pomerania, Prussia, is situated on the Stolpe, 10 miles from the Baltic Sea and 64 miles to the west of Dantzic. The large church of St Mary, with a lofty tower, dating from the 14th century, the Renaissance castle of the 16th century, now used as a prison, and one of the ancient town-gates restored in 1872 are memorials of the time when Stolp was a prosperous member of the Hanseatic League. The manufacture of amber articles, tobacco and cigars, cigar-boxes, &c., with some iron- founding, linen-weaving, and salmon-fishing in the Stolpe, are the chief industrial occupations of the inhabitants, who also carry on trade in grain, cattle, spirits, fish, and geese. Stolpmiinde, a fishing-village and summer resort, at

the mouth of the river, is the port of Stolp. The population of Stolp in 1885 was 22,431 (in 1816 5260), about 600 being Roman Catholics and about 1000 Jews.

Stolp, mentioned in the 11th century, received town-rights in 1273. From the 14th to the 16th century it was a member of the Hanseatic League. Until 1637, when it passed to Brandenburg, the town was generally in the possession of the dukes of Pomerania,

STOMACH. See DicEstrvE ORGANS.

STOMACH, Disrasses or THE. Only the more com- mon and serious varieties of gastric disease can be here referred to. The majority of them exhibit, as their most marked and sometimes their only feature, the symptoms of DyspEpsia (q.v.). Hence the diagnosis of the forms of stomach disease is frequently a matter of much difficulty. Nevertheless a careful consideration of the history and the manifested phenomena of a given case may often lead toa correct identification of its nature. The present notice refers in general terms to the most prominent symptoms which usually characterize the chief gastric disorders.

The stomach is liable to inflammatory affections, of which the condition of catarrh, or irritation of its mucous membranc, is the most frequent and most readily recognized. This may exist in an acute or a chronic form, and depends upon some condition, either local or general, which produces a congested state of the circula- tion in the walls of the stomach. ;

Acute Gastrie Catarrh may arise from various causes, of which the most important are—(1) coustitutional conditions, such as the gouty or rheumatic, or an inherited tendency to irritability of the digestive organs; (2) errors in diet, particularly excessive quantity, indigestible quality, imperfect mastication, extremes of temperature of the food, toxic agents, especially alcohol, in excess, or food in a state of decomposition; (8) atmospheric influences, as appears evl-

_dent from its tendeucy to occur in very warin or very cold weather

or in the case of sudden temperature alternations.

The chief change the stomach undergoes affects its mucous membrane, which is in a state of congestion, either throughout or in parts. It is more than probable that this condition produces au alteration in the secreting function of the organ, and that its peptic juices become less potent, the effect of which will be to retard the process of digestion and favour the occurrence of decomposl- tion and fermentation in its contents, thus aggravating the original evil. The symptoms are those well known as characterizing an acute ‘‘bilious attack,” consisting in loss of appetite, sickness or nausea, and headache, frontal or occipital, often accompanied with giddiness. The tongue is furred, the breath fcetid, and there 1s pain or discomfort in the region of the stomach, with sour eructa- tions, and frequently vomiting, first of food and then of bilious matter. An attack of this kind tends to subside in a few days, especially if the exciting cause be removed. Sometimes, howevel, the symptoms recur with such frequency as to lead to the more serious chronic form of the disease.

The treatment bears reference, in the first place, to any known source of irritation, which, if it exist, may be expelled by an emetic or purgative. This, however, is seldom necessary, since vomitmg is usually present. For the relief of sickness and pain the sucking

!

of ice and counter-irritation over the region of the stomach are of service. Further, remedies whieh exercise a soothing effect upon an irritable mucous membrane, such as bismuth or weak alkaline fluids, and along with these the use of a light milk diet, are usually sufficient to remove the symptoms.

Ohronic Gastric Catarrh may result from the acute or may arise independently. It is not unfrequently connected with antecedent disease in other organs, such as the lungs, heart, liver, or kidneys, and it is specially common in persons addicted to aleoholic excess. In this form the texture of the stomach is more seriously affected than in the acute. It is permanently in a state of congestion, and its mucous membrane and muscular coat undergo thickening and other changes, which, besides markedly affecting the funetion of digestion, may lead to stricture of the pyloric orifice of the

stomach and its results, to be subsequently referred to. The symptoms are those of dyspepsia in an aggravated form (see Dyspepsia), of whieh discomnfort and pain after food, with distension and frequently vomit- ing, are the chief ; and the treatment must be condueted in reference to the eauses giving rise to it. The careful regulation of the diet (see Drererics), both as to the amount, the quality, and the inter- vals between meals, demands special attention. Of medicinal agents, bismuth, arsenic, nux vomica, and the mineral acids are all of acknowledged efficacy, as are also preparations of pepsin.

Uleer of the Stomach (gastric ulcer, perforating ulcer) is of not unfrequent occurrence, and is a disease of much gravity. Its causes are probably not fully understood, yet the following points may be regarded as generally admitted :—(1) that the disease is twice as common in females as in males, and that it is found to affect domestie servants more frequently than any other class; (2) that it occurs for the most part in early life, the period from twenty to thirty including the great majority of the cases; (8) that it appears to be connected in many instances with:impairment of the circulation in the stomach and the formation of a clot in a small blood-vessc] (thrombosis) ; (4) that such an occurrence may arise in connexion with an impoverished state of the blood (anemia), which is actually the condition present in many of the eases, but that it may also arise from diseased blood-vessels, the result of long-con- tinued catarrh, or from the irritation and debilitating effects of hot or cold substances.

It is held that when any such obstruction takes place in a blood- vessel the nutrition of a limited area of the stomach is cut off, and the part is apt to undergo disintegration all the more readily from the unresisted action of the gastric juices upon it. Hence an ulcer is formed. This ulcer is usually of small size (} to 1 inch in diameter), of round or oval form, and tends to advance, not superficially, but to penetrate through the coats of the stomach. Its most usual site is upon the posterior wall of the upper or lesser curvature of the stomach and near to the pyloric oritiee. It may undergo a healing process at any stage, in which case it may leave but little trace of its existence ; while, on the other hand, it may in the course of cieatrizing produce such an ainount of contraction as to lead to stricture of the pylorus. But, again, perforation may take place, which in most cases is quickly fatal,

unless previously the stomach has become, as it may, adherent to another organ, by which the dangerous effects of this occurrence may be averted. Usually there is but one ulcer, but sometimes there are more.

The symptoms to which this disease gives rise are often exceed- ingly indefinite and obscure, and in some cases the diagnosis has been first made out by the sudden occurrence of a fatal perforation. Generally, however, there are certain evidences more or less distinct which tend to indicate the probable presence of a gastric ulcer. First among these is pain, which is in some measure present at all times, but is markedly inereased after food. This pain is situated either in front, at the lower end of the sternum, or fully more commonly behind, about the middle of the back. Sometimes it is felt at one or both sides. It is often extremely severe, and is usually accompanied with much tenderness to touch, and also with a sense of oppression and inability to wear tight clothing. The pain is probably largely due to the active movements of the Stomach set up by the presence of the food. Accompanying the pain there is frequently vomiting, either very soon after the food is swallowed or at a later period. This tends in some measure to relieve the pain and discomfort, and in many instances the patient rather encourages this act. Vomiting of blood (heamatemesis) is a frequent symptom, and is most important diagnostieally. It may show itself either to a slight extent, and in the form of a brown or coflee-like mixture, or as an enormous discharge of pure blood of dark colour and containing elots. The source of the blood is some vessel or vessels whieh the ulcerative process has ruptured. Blood is also found mixed with the discharges from the bowels, rendering them dark and tarry looking. The general eondition of a patient with gastric ulcer is as a rule that of ill-health, showing pallor, more or less emaciation, and debility. The tongue presents a red irritable appearance, and there is usually constipation of the bowels. _ The course of a case of gastric ulcer is very variable. In some Instances it would appear to be acute, making rapid progress to a favourable or unfavourable termination. In most, however, the

disease is chronic, lasting for months or years; and in those cases where the ulcers are multiple or of extensive size ineomplete healing may take place

and relapses of the symptoms occur from time to time. Ulcers are sometimes present and give rise to no marked symptoms; and it has occurred to the writer to see more than one instance of this kind where fatal perforation suddenly took plaee, and where post-mortem examination revealed the existence of long- standing ulcers which could not possibly have been made out by any evidences furnished during life. While gastric ulcer is always to be regarded as a dangerous disease, its termination, in the great majority of cases, is in recovery. It frequently, however, leaves the stomaeh in a delicate condition, necessitating the utmost care as regards diet. Occasionally, though rarely, the disease proves fatal by sudden hemorrhage but a fatal result is more frequently due to perforation and the extrusion of the contents of the stomach into the peritoneal cavity, in whieh case death usually oecurs in from twelve to forty-eight hours, either from shock or from peri- tonitis. Should the stomaeh become adherent to another organ, and fatal perforation be thus prevented, there may remain as the result of this a permanent condition of dyspepsia, owing to inter- ference with the natural movements of the stomach during diges- tion ; while again stricture of the pylorus and consequent dilatation of the stomach is an occasional result of the cicatrization of an ulcer in its neighbourhood,

Of prime importanee in the treatment of this disease is the careful adjustment of the diet, the conditions existing in the stomach obviously requiring that the food administered should be of as bland and soft a character as possible. Of all substances inilk forms the most suitable aliment, and, while there may be instances in which it fails to agree, even when mixed with lime water or previously boiled, these are comparatively few. The peptonized foods originally suggested by Sir Wm. Roberts of Manchester are frequently found of mueh service in this disease. Light soups as well as milk may sometimes be administered in this way with benefit. The quantity, the intervals between the times of ad- ministration, and the temperature, as well as the quantity, of the food demand careful attention. In severe cases, where the pre- sence of food in the stomach gives rise to much suffering, nourish- ment by the bowel may be given for a time with great advantage. Of medicinal remedies the most serviceable are large doses of bismuth, with whieh it may be necessary to conjoin small doses of opium or of hydrocyanic acid for the relief of pain. The eareful administration of nitrate of silver has been reeommended as a means of

promoting the healing of the ulcers, but this end is pro- bably more readily accomplished by the remedies and especially by the method of diet already referred to, combined with rest. When hemorrhage occurs it is relieved by ice and by such stypties as gallic aeid, ergot of rye, lead, alum, &c., while in the dread event of perforation the only means of affording relief is opinm.

Cancer of the Stomach is one of the most common forms of internal cancerous disease. It occurs for the most part in persons at or after middle life, and in both sexes equally. Hereditary tendency may not unfrequently be traced.

The most common varieties of cancer affecting the stomach are scirrhus, medullary, and eolloid, and the parts affeeted are usually the inlet or ontlet orifices ; but the morbid process may spread widely in the stomach wall. When in the neighbourhood of the pylorus a stricture is frequently produced as the disease advances. The eancerous growth usually commences in the submucous tissue, but as it progresses it tends to uleerate through the mucous mem- brane, and in this process hemorrhage and hematemesis may occur. The symptoms of this disease are in many instances so indefinite as to render the diagnosis for a long time conjectural. They are mostly those of dyspepsia, with more or less pain, dis- comfort, and vomiting, particularly after meals. The vomited matters are often of coffee-ground appearanee, due to admixture with blood, but copious hematemesis is less frequent than in cases of gastric ulcer. The patient loses flesh and strength and soon comes to acquire the cachectie aspeet eommonly associated with cancer. The diagnosis is rendered all the more certain when, as is frequently the case, a tumour can be detected on examination over the region of the stomach, but there are many instances where no sueh evidence is obtained and where the nature of the disease is left to be made out by the age of the patient and by the intract- able and progressive character of the symptoms. Cases of eancer of the stomaeh advance with more or less rapidity to a fatal termination, which is usually quickest in the medullary form. In most instances death takes place in from six to twelve months. The treatment can only be palliative, but much relief may often be afforded by a careful attention to diet, by the treatment appli- cable to dilatation of the stomach, and by the use of opium.

Stricture of the Pylorus may, as has been already indicated, result from the various morbid conditions affecting the stomach to whieh reference has been made, namely, catarrh, uleer, and cancer. By whatever means produced, the effect is an obstruction to the trans- mission through the pylorie orifice into the intestines of the con- tents of the stomach, the oecurrence of dilatation of the organ, with

weakening of its walls, and the consequent accumulation and fer- mentation of partially digested food. ‘his condition gives rise to much discomfort, heartburn, and pain, and to the occurrence every few days of a copious vomiting of fermenting matcrial, in which may be found on microscopic examination the fungoid growths of Sarcina aud Torul#. With: the continuance of the disease the syinptoms tend to increase and to wear out the patient’s strength, since little or no assimilation is possible, and death sooner or later takes place from inanition. For a long time this condition was regarded as incurable in every casc, till the method of treatinent, originally suggested by Kiissmaul, of washing out the stomach daily or less frequently was found to yield remarkably beneficial results in almost all cases, and, in many instances of non-cancerous disease, to accomplish an actual cure. This plan of treatment is now largely resorted to, and it has proved to be a valuable addition to the therapeutics of gastric diseascs. @ Or A.)

STONE, a market-town of Staffordshire, England, on the river Treut, and on the North Staffordshire Railway, 7 miles south of Stoke and 7 north of Stafford. Part of the walls remain of an abbey which dates from the foun- dation of a college of canons in 670. The present church was openedin 1750. The inhabitants are employed chiefly in shoemaking, but malting, brewing, and tanning are also carried on. The population of the urban sanitary district (estimated area 1000 acres) was 5669 in 1881.

STONE. See VesicaL DIsEAsEs.

STONEHENGE, one of the most remarkable examples of the ancient stone circles, is situated in Salisbury Plain, Wiltshire, about 7 miles north of Salisbury. It consists of two circles aud two ovals with a large stone in the

centre. The outer circle, about 300 feet in circumference, is composed of upright stones about 16 feet in height and 18 feet in circumference, with others of similar size placed horizontally on their tops. Originally there were thirty uprights and thirty imposts, but now only seventeen uprights and seven imposts retain their position. The inner circle, which is about 9 feet distant from the outer circle, consisted originally of forty single stones, much smaller in size, and, unlike those of the outer circle, showing no evidence of having been hewn. The larger of the ovals was composed of five pairs of trilithons standing separate from each other, and rising gradually in height from east to west. Only two of these now remain entire ; one of the uprights of the grand central trilithon has fallen, and is broken in two pieces; the impost though fallen is entire, and the other impost is 9 feet out of the perpendicular ; another trilithon fell outward on the 3d June 1797; and of a third one of the uprights is still standing, the other upright and the impost having in their fall been broken into three pieces. The inner oval con- sisted originally of nineteen stones, of which there are remains of eleven, tapering in form and taller than those of the inner circle. In the centre of the smaller oval is the supposed altar stone, 15 feet in length. The whole is surrounded by a vallum and ditch about 370 yards in circumference. From the north-east an avenue, marked by a bank and ditch on each side, proceeds for a distance of 594 yards, after which it divides into two branches, one going eastwards up a hill between two groups of barrows, and the other north-westwards about 300 yards to the cursus orrace-course. The cursus, which is enclosed between two parallel banks and ditches running east and west, is a mile and 176 yards in length, with a breadth of 110 yards. There is a smaller cursus a little to the north. In the avenue there is a cromlech or bowing-stone 16 feet in length, called the Friar’s Heel, and in a line with it, within the area of the work, there is a large prostrate stone on which it is supposed the victims were immolated. Barrows lie around on all sides.

Stonehenge is first mentioned by Nennius, in the 9th century, who asserts that it was erected in commemoration of the 400 nobles who were treacherously slain near the spot by Hengist in 472. A similar account of its origin is given in the triads of the

Welsh bards, where its erection is attributed to King Merlin, the |

successor of Vortigern. Inigo Jones, in his work on Stonehenge, published in 1655, endeavours to prove that it was a temple of the Romans, but later writers of authority are generally agreed that it is of Druidical origin, although there are differences of opinion as to its probable date, some placing it at 100 years before Christ and others in the 5th century. It seems most probable that the inner circle and inner oval, constructed of smaller stones of granite, which must have been brought from a distance, is of earlier origin than the outer circle and oval.

Among numerous writings on Stonehenge may be mentioned Stonehenge and Abury, by Dr William Stukeley, 1740, reprinted in 1840; Davies's Celtic Researches, 1804, and Mythology of the Druids, 1809; Hoare's Ancient Wiltshire, vol. i., 1812; Browne, An Illustration of Stonehenge and Abury, 1823; the article on Stonehenge in the Quarterly Review for July 1860; Long's Stonehenge and its Barrows, 1876; Gidley, Stonehenge Viewed in the Light of Ancient History and Modern Ubserva- tion, 1877

STONE MASONRY. See Buizping, vol. iv. p. 468.

STONINGTON, a borough and seaport of the United States, in New London county, Connecticut, is situated on Long Island Sound, 139 miles from New York by the railway to Providence and Boston. It is built on a narrow rocky point, and is a quiet quaint-looking town, largely fre- quented as a summer watering-place. Its industries com- prise silk-throwing and the manufacture of silk machinery, and it has a considerable interest in sealing. Here and there may still be seen traces of the bombardment by the British under Sir Thomas Hardy in August 1814. The har. bour is protected by two breakwaters; it is the terminus of a daily line of steamers from New York. The popula- tion of the township was 6313 in 1870, and 7355 in 1880. Settled in 1649, the borough was incorporated in 1801.

STORACE, StrepHen (1763-1796), dramatic composer, was born in London in 1763. His father, Stefano Storace, an Italian contrabassist, taught him the violin so well that at ten years old he played successfully the most difficult music of the day. After completing his educa- tion at the Conservatorio di Sant' Onofrio at Naples, he produced his first opera, Gla

Sposi Malcontentt, at Vienna, in 1785. Here he made the acquaintance of Mozart, in whose iVozze di Ligaro his sister, Anna Selina Storace, first sang the part of Susanna. Here also he produced a second opera, Gli Hqguivoci, founded on Shakespeare's Comedy of Errors, and a " Singspiel" entitled Der Doctor und der Apotheker. But his greatest triumphs were achieved in England, whither he returned in 1787. After creating a favourable impression by bringing out his "Singspiel" at Drury Lane, under the title of Zhe Doctor and the Apothecary, Storace attained his first great success in 1789, in The Haunted Tower, a genuine English opera, which ran for fifty nights in succession, and retained its popularity long after the opening of the present century. No Song No Supper was equally successful in 1790; and The Siege of Belgrade scarcely less so in 1791. The music of The Pirates, produced in 1792, was partly adapted from Gli Equivoct, and is remarkable as affording one of the earliest instances of the introduction of a grand finale into an English opera. These works were followed by some less successful productions; but Zhe Cherokee (1794) and The Three and the Deuce (1795) were very favourably received, and the music to Colman's play, The Iron Chest, first performed March 12, 1796, created even a greater sensation than Zhe Haunted Tower. This was Storace's last work. He caught cold at the rehearsal, and died in consequence, March 19, 1796.

The character of Storace's music is pre-eminently English; but his early intercourse with Mozart gave him an immense advantage over his contemporaries in his management of the orchestra, while for the excellence of his method of writing for the voice he was no doubt largely indebted to the charming vocalization of his sister Anna. This lady, who has attained lasting honour as te original representative of Susanna in Le Nozze di Figaro, was born in London in 1766, completed her education at Venice under Sacchini, sang for Mozart at Vienna, and first appeared at the King's Theatre in London in 1787. After contributing greatly to the success of The Haunted Tower and her brother's later operas, she crowned a long and brilliant career by winning great laurels at

the Handel Commemoration at Westminster Abbcy in 1791, retired from public life in 1808, and died August 24, 1817. During her stay in Vienna

she married John Abraham Fisher, a celebrated ey, ce but he used her so cruelly that she refused to bear his

name, and in her will—bequeathing property to the amount of

£50,000—styled herself ‘‘ spinster.”

STORAX. It has been explained in INcENsE (vol. xii. p. 718) and LiquipaAMBAR (vol. xiv. p. 687) that the storax of commerce and the pharmacopceia (used as an emollient) is derived from the Oriental liquidambar tree. The storax of the ancients, on the other hand, a solid gum which does not now occur in commerce, appears to have been the product of the beautiful white-flowered shrub Styrax officinalis, which is still common on Carmel and elsewhere in Syria. It was much used as an incense, and formed an early and important article of Phoenician trade (see Movers, Phénizier, ii. 3.101, 223 sq.). It is probable that the Greek word orvpaég is of Semitic origin, represent- ing the Hebrew “y, which the English version renders “balm” (Lagarde, Mittheilungen, p. 234 sq.).

STORK (A.S8. Store ; Germ. Storch), the Ciconia alba of ornithology, and, through picture and story, one of the best known of foreign birds; for, though often visiting Britain, it has never been a native or even inhabitant of the country. It is a summer-visitant to most parts of the European continent,—the chief exceptions being France (where the native race has been destroyed), Italy, and Russia,—breeding from southern Sweden to Spain and Greece, and being especially common in Poland.’ It reappears again in Asia Minor, the Caucasus, Persia, and Turkestan, but further to the eastward it is replaced by an allied species, C’. boyciana, which reaches Japan. Though occasionally using trees (as was most likely its original habit) for the purpose, the Stork most generally places its nest on buildings,’ a fact familiar to travellers in Denmark, Holland, and Germany, and it is nearly everywhere a cherished guest, popular belief ascribing good luck to the house to which it attaches itself? Its food, consisting mainly of frogs and insects, is gathered in the neighbouring pastures, across which it may be seen stalking with an air of quiet dignity; but in the season of love it indulges in gestures which can only be called grotesque,—leaping from the ground with extended wings in a kind of dance, and, absolutely voiceless as it is, making a loud noise by the clattering of its mandibles. At other times it

may be seen gravely resting on one leg on an elevated place, thence to sweep aloft and circle with a slow and majestic flight. Apart from its considerable size,—and a Stork stands more than three feet in height,— its contrasted plumage of pure white and deep black, with its bright red bill and legs, makes it a conspicuous and beautiful object, especially when seen against the fresh green grass of a luxuriant meadow. In winter the Storks of Europe retire to Africa,—some of them, it would seem, reaching the Cape Colony,— while those of Asia visit India. _A-second species, with much the same range, but with none of its relative's domestic disposition, is the Black Stork, C. nigra, of which the upper parts are black, bril- liantly glossed with purple, copper, and green, while it is white beneath,—the bill and legs, with a patch of bare skin round the eyes, being red. This bird breeds in lofty , 1 In that country its numbers are said to have greatly diminished since about 1858, when a disastrous spring-storm overtook the home- ward-bound birds. The like isto be said of Holland since about 1860.

- To consult its convenience a stage of some kind, often a cartwheel,

is in many places set up and generally occupied by successive gener- ations of tenants.

3 Its common Dutch name is Ooijevaar, which can be traced through many forms (Koolmann, Wéorterb. d. Ostfries. Sprache, i. p. 8 sub voce '"Adebar") to the old word Odeboro (" the bringer of good"). In countries where the Stork is abundant it enters largely into popular tales, songs, and proverbs, and from the days of Alsop has been a favourite in fable.

trees, generally those growing in a large forest. Two other dark-coloured, but somewhat abnormal, species are the purely African C. abdimii, and the C. episcopus, which has a wider range, being found not only in Africa but in India, Java, and Sumatra. The New World has only one true Stork, C. maguari,* which inhabits South America, and resembles not a little the C. boyciana above mentioned, differing therefrom in its greenish-white bill and black tail. Both these species are very like C. alba, but are larger, and have a bare patch of red skin round the eyes.

The Storks form the Pelargi of Nitzsch, as separated by him from the Herons and the Ibises, but all three are united by Prof. Huxley in his group Pelargomorphe. The relations of the Storks to the Herons may be doubt- ful; but there is no doubt that the former include the JaBIRU (vol. xiii. p. 529) and its allies, as well as the curious genus Anastomus (with its lower mandible hol- lowed out so as only to meet the maxilla at the base and the tip), of which there are an African and an Asiatic species. Two other remarkable forms probably belong to the Pelargi. These are Baleniceps rex and Scopus

Shoe-Bill or Whale-Headed Stork. (After Wolf in Trans. Zool. Soc.)

umbretta, each the sole member of its own genus, and both from Africa. The former, first brought to Europe by Mr M. Parkyns from the White Nile, was regarded by Gould, who described it in the Zoological Proceedings (1851, pp. 1, 2, pl. xxxv.), as an abnormal Pelican. This view was disputed by Reinhardt (op. cit., 1860, p. 377), and wholly dispelled by Prof. Parker in the Zoological

4 This was formerly believed to have occurred in Europe, but errone- ously, as was shewn by Schlegel (Rev. Critique, p. 104). XXIL — 45

Transactions (iv. pp. 269-351), though these two authors disagreed as to its affinities, the first placing it with the Storks, the last assigning it to the Herons. In singularity of aspect few birds surpass Saleniceps, with its gaunt grey figure, some five feet in height, its large head sur- mounted by a little curled tuft, the scowling expression of its eyes, and its huge bill in form not unlike a whale’s head—this last suggesting its generic name—but tipped with a formidable hook. The shape of the bill has also prompted the Arabs to call it, according to their idiom, the “Father of a Shoe,” and it has been designated “Shoe-bill” in English! The other form that remains to be noticed is the Scopus wmbretta of ornithologists, called the “Umbre” by Pennant. This was discovered by Adanson the French traveller in Senegal about the middle of the last century, and was described by Brisson in 1760. It has since been found to inhabit nearly the whole of Africa and Madagascar, and is the ‘ Hammerkop” (Hammerhead) of the Cape

colonists. Though not larger than a Raven, it builds an enormous nest, some six feet in diameter, with a flat-topped roof and a small hole for entrance and exit, and placed either on a tree or a rocky ledge.2 The bird, of an almost uniform brown colour, slightly glossed with purple, and its tail barred with black, has a long occipital crest, generally borne horizontally, so as to give rise to its common name. It is somewhat sluggish by day, but displays much activity at dusk, when it will go through a series of strange performances. In all the Storks, so far as is known, the eggs are white, and in most forms distinguishable by the grain of their shell, which, without being rough, is closely pitted with pore-like depressions. (A. N.)

STORMS. See MrtEorooey, vol. xvi. p. 154.

STORY, Joseru (1779-1845), was born at Marble- head, Massachusetts, September 18, 1779, graduated at Harvard in 1798, and was admitted to the bar in Massa- chusetts in 1801. He was a member of the Democratic party, then weak in New England but all-powerful in the rest of the Union; and his district made him its repre- sentative in Congress for 1808-9. In 1811 one of the associate-justiceships of the United States supreme court became vacant, and Story was appointed to it, retaining the office for life. Here he found his true sphere of work. The traditions of the American people, their strong pre- judice for the local supremacy of the States and against a centralized government, had yielded reluctantly to the establishment of the federal legislative and executive in 1789. The federal judiciary had been organized at the same time, but had never grasped the full measure of its powers. Soon after Story’s appointment the supreme court began to bring out into plain view the powers which the constitution had given it over State courts and State legislation, The leading place in this work belongs to Chief-Justice John Marshall, but Story has a very large share in that remarkable series of decisions and opinions, from 1812 until 1832, by which the work was accom- plished. In addition to this he built up the department of admiralty law in the United States courts; and his Commentaries on the American Constitution are still the leading authority on the interpretation of that instrument. He died at Cambridge, Massachusetts, where he was the head of the Harvard law school, September 10, 1845.

See Story’s Life and Letters of Joseph Story; Story’s Miseel- laneous Works; Story’s Commentaries on the Constitution of the eee oe

1 Under one or other of these names it is meutioned by many African travellers ; but the best account of it is that given by Von Heuglin (Orn. Nordost-Afrika’s, pp. 1095-1099). In 1860 two living birds

were brought to England by Mr Petherick and exhibited in the Zoological Gardens.

® Two figures of the nest are given by Holnb and Von Pelzeln (Beitr. Orn. Siidafrikas, p. 279).

‘and librarian in 1817.

United States, and a great number of standard law-books of which he was the author. His supreme court decisions are in Cranch’g Wheaton’s, and Peters’s Reports; his circuit decisions in Gallison’s. Mason’s, Sumner’s, and Story’s Reports. :

STOTHARD, Cuartzes Aurrep (1786-1821), antiqua- rian draughtsman, son of Thomas Stothard, noticed below. was born in London on July 5, 1786. After studying i the schools of the Royal Academy, he began, in 1810, his first historical piece, the Death of Richard II. in Pomfret Castle. Having taken a strong interest from an early period in the costumes of different ages and nations, he published in 1811 the first part of his valuable work, The Monumental Kfigies of Great Britain. He was appointed historical draughtsman to the Society of Antiquaries, and was deputed by that body to visit Bayeux, to make draw. ings of the well-known tapestry. He was made a fellow of the society in 1819, and subsequently engaged in numer. ous journeys with the view of illustrating the works of D, Lysons. While engaged in tracing a portrait from one of the windows of the church of Beer-Ferrers, Devonshire, he fell and was killed on the spot (May 27, 1821). His widow (afterwards Mrs Bray), along with her brother, completed his Monumental Efigzes, left unfinished at his death. A biography, by his widow, was published in 1823.

STOTHARD, Tuomas (1755-1834), subject painter, was born in London on August 17, 1755, the son ofa

well-to-do innkeeper in Long Acre. Being a delicate child,

he was sent at the age of five to a relative in Yorkshire, and attended school at Acomb, and afterwards at Tad castle and at Ilford in Essex. Showing a turn for draw- ing he was apprenticed to a draughtsman of patterns for brocaded silks in Spitalfields, and during his leisure hours he attempted illustrations to the works of his favourite poets. Some of these drawings were praised by Harrison, the editor of the Wovelist's Library, and, Stothard's master having died, he resolved to devote himself to art. In 1778 he became a student of the Royal Academy, of which he was elected associate in 1791, full academician in 1794, He married before he was thirty ; and it is recorded that, after attending the wedding ceremony, he spent the afternoon in quietly drawing in the schools, and, on leaving, requested a fellow student to accompany him ''to a family party." 'Do come," he said, "for I have this day taken unto myself a wife." He died in London on the 27th of April 1834.

Among his earliest book illustrations are plates engraved for Ossian and for Bell's Poets; and in 1780 he becaine a regular con- tributor to the Novelist's Library, for which he executed one hundred and forty-eight designs, including his eleven admirable illustrations to Peregrine Pickle and his graceful subjects from Clarissa and Sir Charles Grandison. Soon his hands were full of work, for all commissions were welcome to him. He contentedly designed plates for pockct-books, tickets for concerts, illustrations to almanacs, portraits of popular players,—and into even the slightest and most trivial sketches he infused a grace and distine- tion which render them of value to the collectors of the present time. Among his more important series are the two sets of illustra- tions to Robinson Crusoe, and the plates to The Pilgrim's Progress (1788), to The Rape of the Lock (1798), to the works of Gessner (1802), to Cowper's Poems (1825), and to The Decameron; while his figure-subjects in the superb editions of Roger's Jtaly (1830) and Poems (1834) prove that even in latest age his fancy was still unexhausted and his hand hardly at all enfeebled. He is at his best in subjects of a domestic or a gracefully ideal sort; the heroic and the tragic

were beyond his powers. The designs by Stothard have been estimated by Mr Wornum to number five thousand, and of these about three thousand have been engraved. His oil pictures are usually small in size, and rather sketchy in handling. Their colouring is often rich and glowing, being founded upon the prac- tice of Rubens, of whom Stothard was a great admircr. He was 4 contributor to Boydell's Shakespeare Gallery, but his best-known painting is the Procession of the Canterbury Pilgrims, the engravm, from which, begun by Schiavonetti and finished by Heath, attaine an immense popularity. It was followed by a companion work, the Flitch of Bacon, which was drawn in sepia for the engraver, but was never carried out in colour. d

In addition to his easel pictures. Stothard adorned the gran

staircase of Burleigh Housc with subjects of War, Intemperance, and the Descent of Orpheus in Hell (1799-1803); the mansion of Hafod, North Wales, with a series of scenes from Froissart and Monstrelet (1810) ; the cupola of the upper hall of the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh (now occupied by the Signet Library), with Apollo and the Muses, and figures of poets, orators, &c. (1822) ; and he prepared designs for a frieze and other decorations for St James's Palace. He also designed the magnificent shield pre- sented to the duke of Wellington by the merchants of London, and executed with his own hand a series of eight etchings from the various subjects which adorned it.

An interesting, but most indiscriminately eulogistie biography of Stothard, by his daughter-in-law Mrs Bray, was published in 1851.

STOURBRIDGE, a market-town of Worcestershire, England, stands on an eminence on the south bank of the Stour, and on the Great Western Railway, on the borders of Staffordshire, 4 miles south-west of Dudley and 10 west of Birmingham. A branch canal connects the town with the Staffordshire and Worcestershire Canal. The Stour is crossed by a railway viaduct erected in 1882 at a cost of £13,835. The town possesses a corn exchange, a mechanics' institute, an Edward VI. grammar school, a Government school of art, and a blue-coat or hospital school. The manufacture of glass was

established in 1556 by emigrants from Hungary, the place where they erected their manufactory being still known as Hungary Hill. Valuable fire-clay is obtained in the neighbourhood, and a great variety of fine bricks are made. There are also large iron and leather works. ‘The town was originally called Bedcote, a name which the manor still retains. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 450 acres) in 1871 was 9376, and in 1881 it was 9757.

STOVES anp FIREPLACES are structures of iron and other materials in which fuel is burned for heating and ventilating apartments and for cooking food. Follow- ing the primitive open hearth, the first separate heating apparatus used by Egyptians, Greeks, and Romans was the brazier, an open basin of metal in which charcoal was consumed. The brazier is still in common use for industrial purposes, and in Continental countries it is widely employed both for cooking and for domestic heating. The Romans further were acquainted with the hypocaust, a separate chamber under the floor of the apartment to be heated (see Barus, vol. iil. p. 434). In an improved form of hypocaust, flues were provided which conveyed the heat and products of combustion to the floors of other apartments at some distance from the fire. In the remains of Roman villas found in Britain the hypocaust is an invariable feature. The introduction of chimneys into houses in the early part of the 14th century opened the way to all modern improvements in the heating arrangements of apartments, and the efforts of inventors have been devoted to the securing of the thorough combustion of the fuel used, and to the utilization of the maximum amount of heat therefrom in the most healthful and agreeable manner. Compare SMokE ABATEMENT.

The stove or close range, as distinguished from the open fire- place, distributes the largest amount of heat from the fuel it burns. In its simplest form the common stove consists of a case of iron, closed above, with its sole raised from the floor on which it stands. It has two small openings in one side, one on the level of the fire- bars for draught, and the other above for supplying fuel; and on the opposite side the products of combustion are carricd away by a flue-pipe passing into a chimney. In a more complex form the height of the case or body is increased, and a series of horizontal flues or spaces are formed inside, through which the heated air and smoke pass,

thus extracting more thoroughly the heat before it enters the chimney, and giving a greatly increased heating surface. Such stoves overdry the air in rooms, and, when they are externally heated to ahigh degree, floating particles are burned by falling on their surfaces, whence arises the disagreeable stuffy smell almost inseparable from their use. To mitigate this evil of overheating, linings of tiles, firebricks, and other non-conducting materials are with great advantage introduced between the heated iron and the air of the apartment. In ventilating stoves the outside casing of Iron is entirely protected from the direct action of fire by a lining of firebrick. The inside is divided into several spaces or flues, and

_ grates made entirely of iron.

o79

air drawn from without enters by a separate flue, and passing through these spaces is heated and delivered into the apartment as a warm current. In another class, of which the gill stove is the type, there radiates from the fire-case a range of flanges or gills a few inches apart, which conduct the heat outwards and enormously extend the heating surface, counteracting at the same time the tendency to overheating. Cooking stoves or ranges have in their centre a fire space covered above with a removable top-plate, in which are circular openings whereby the cooking vessels can be brought into direct contact with the fire. At both sides there arc one or more compartments which form ovens, and around these the heat from the fire is carried by flues; or at onc side a water boiler may be placed, although generally a high-pressure boiler occupics a spacc Immediately behind the fire. The flues which pass around all these spaces, and that also leading directly to the chimney, are controlled by dampers, so that the heat can be directed along any desired course.

Both as a heating and cooking agent coal gas is now being largely used, and many forms of stoves have been devised to meet its peculiar conditions as a gaseous fuel, Gas stoves present the obvious advantages of cleanliness, comparative freedom from smoke, and immediate readiness for use; and the flame and heat are under the most perfect control. Gas is used in open fireplaces as well as in stoves, a most cflicient open heating arrangement being that deviscd by the late Sir Chas. W. Siemens, in which a combined

fire of charcoal and coal gas is made. Small lamp stoves for burning mineral oils are also in use ; but they share the serious disadvantage of certain simple gas stoves, from which the whole pro- ducts of combustion pass into the room in which they are placed.

Fireplaces are cntirely open in front ; they radiate heat into the apartment ; aud flame, smoke, &c., pass direct into the chimney, The rapid passage of the heated air into the chimney carries away a large proportion of the heat, and this loss is particularly great in In modern grates of good quality the sides and back of the fire-basket are of fire-brick, which retains and throws out much heat. In slow-combustion grates the fire-basket is sct low on the hearth, and air is admitted to the fuel only through the fire-bars in front. The back of the grate slopes in towards the hearth, where the fire space is comparatively narrow. By means of a door sliding down over the front from the upper part of the grate, the indraught of air can be modified at pleasure, In ventilating fireplaces the fire-basket is of iron lined with fire- brick, and in the space between the back of the grate and the wall flues are formed which are heated from the fire. Into these flues air from without is introduced, which, after being there warmed, passes into the apartment at suitable openings.

STOW, Joun (1525-1605), historian and antiquary, was the son of Thomas Stow, a tailor, and was born in London, in the parish of St Michael, Cornhill, in 1525. His parents do not appear to have been rich, for his father’s whole rent for his house and garden was only 6s. 6d. a year, and Stow himself in his youth went every morning to fetch the milk for the family from a farm belonging to the nunnery of Minories. He learned the trade of his father, but possibly did not practise it much after he grew up to manhood. In 1549 he “kept house” near the well within Aldgate, but afterwards he removed to Lime Street ward, where he resided till his death. His first publication was A Summary of Englische Chronicles in 1561, which was frequently reprinted, with slight variations, during his lifetime. Of the first edition a copy was said to have been at one time in the Grenville library. In the British Museum there are at present copies of the editions of 1567, 1573, 1587, 1590, 1598, and 1604. Stow having in his dedication of 1567 referred to the rival publication of Richard Grafton in contemptuous terms, the dispute between them became extremely embittered. Stow’s anti-

quarian tastes brought him under ecclesiastical suspicion asa person “ with many dangerous and superstitious books in his possession,” and in 1568 Grindal, bishop of London, caused his study to be searched. An inventory was taken of certain books he possessed ‘in defence of Papistry,” but he was apparently able to satisfy his interrogators of the soundness of his Protestantism. A second attempt to incriminate him in 1570 was also without result. In 1580 Stow published his Annales, or a Generale Chronicle of England from Brute until the present yeare of Christ 1580; it was reprinted in 1592, 1601, and 1605, the last being continued to the 26th March 1605, or within ten days of

his death ; editions “‘amended” by Howes appeared in 1615 and 1631. The work by which Stow is best known is his Survey of London, published in 1598, not only interesting from the quaint simplicity of its style and its amusing descriptions and anecdotes, but of unique value from its minute account of the buildings, social condition, and customs of London in the time of Elizabeth. A second edition appeared in his lifetime in 1608, a third with addi- tions by Anthony Munday in 1618, a fourth by Munday and Dyson in 1633, a fifth with interpolated amendments by Strypein 1720, and a sixth by the same editor in 1754. The edition of 1598 was reprinted, edited by W. J. Thoms, in 1842, in 1846, and with illustrations in 1876. Through the patronage of Archbishop Parker Stow was enabled to print the (lores Historiarum of Matthew of Westminster in 1567, the Chronicle of Matthew Paris in 1571, and the Historia Brevis of Thomas Walsingham in 1574. At the request of Parker he had himself compiled a “ farre larger volume,” but circumstances were unfavourable to its publi- cation and the manuscript is now lost. Additions to the previously published works of Chaucer were twice made through Stow’s “own painful labours ” in editions of 1561 and 1597. A number of Stow’s manuscripts are in the Har- leian collection in the British Museum. Some are in the Lambeth Library (No. 306); and from the volume which includes them were published by the Camden Society, edited by James Gairdner, Three Pifteenth-Century Chron-

acles, with Historical Memoranda by John Stowe the Anti—

quary, and Contemporary Notes of Occurrences written by him (1880). Stow's literary labours did not prove very remunerative, but he accepted poverty in a cheerful spirit. Ben Jonson relates that once when walking with him Stow jocularly asked two mendicant cripples ‘‘ what they would have to take him to their order.” This favour he, however, obtained from King James, who in March 1604 authorized him and his deputies to collect ‘amongst our loving sub- jects their voluntary contributions and kind gratuities,” and himself began “ the largesse for the example of others.” If the royal appeal was successful Stow did not live long to enjoy the increased comfort resulting from it, as he died on the 6th April following. He was buried in the church of St Andrew Undershaft, where the monument erected by his widow, exhibiting a terra-cotta figure of him, still remains.

STOWELL, Wirt1am Scott, Baron (1745-1836), one of the ablest and most accomplished of English judges, especially in international law, was born at Heworth, a village about four miles from Newcastle, on 17th Octo- ber 1745. His father was a “ coalfitter” (or tradesman engaged in the transport of coal); his mother was the daughter of a small tradesman, Atkinson by name; his younger brother John became the famous Lord Chancel- lor Expon (¢.v.). Scott was educated at the Newcastle grammar school under the able tuition of the Rev. Hugh Moises. In February 1761 he gained a Durham scholar- ship at Corpus Christi College, Oxford, and was imme- diately admitted as a student of the university. In 1764 he graduated as bachelor of arts, and became first a pro- bationary fellow and then—as successor to William (after- wards the well-known Sir William) Jones—a tutor of University College. In 1767 he took his M.A. degree. In 1772 he graduated as bachelor of civil law. As Camden reader of ancient history he rivalled the reputation of Black- stone (1774). Although he had joined the Middle Temple in 1762 (June 24), it was not till 1776 that Scott devoted himself to a systematic study of law. In 1779 (June 23) he graduated as doctor of civil law, and, after the customary “year of silence,” commenced practice in the ecclesiastical courts. His professional success was rapid. In 1783 he became registrar of the Court of Faculties, and

in 1788 judge of the Consistory Court and advocate. general, in that year too receiving the honour of knight. hood ; and in 1798 he was made judge of the High Court of Admiralty. Sir William Scott twice contested the representation of Oxford university,—in 1780 without success, but successfully in 1801. He also sat for Downton jn 1790. Upon the coronation of George IV. (1821) he was raised to the peerage as Baron Stowell. After a life of distinguished judicial service Lord Stowell retired from the bench,—from the Consistory Court in August 182], and from the High Court of Admiralty in December 1827. His mental faculties became gradually feebler in his old age, and he died on January 28, 1836. Lord Stowell was twice married,—on April 7, 1781, to Anna Maria, eldest daughter and heiress of John Bagnall of Early Court, Berks, and on April 10, 1813, to the dowager marchioness of Sligo. By his first marriage he had four children, of whom two (a son and a daughter) died in infancy, a third (a son) died unmarried in middle life, while the eldest (a daughter) was twice married and sur- vived her father.

Lord Stowell's judgments are models alike of literary execution and of judicial reasoning. His style is chaste yet not inornate, nervous without abruptness, and perfectly adjusted in every instance to the subject with which he deals. His decisions in the cases of Dalrymple v. Dalrymple (Dr Dodson's Report) and Evans v. Evans (1 Hagg., 35)—from their combined force and grace, from the steadiness with which every collateral issue is set aside, from their subtle insight into human motives, and from the light which they cast on the philosophy and dark history of marriage law—deserve and will repay attentive perusal, Lord Stowell composed with great care, and some of the MSS. which he revised for Haggard and Phillimore's Reports were as full of interlineations as a bill of the Lower House corrected by the Lords. Stowell's mind was judicial rather than forensic,—reasoning, not as for a dialectic victory nor so as to convince the parties on whose suit he was deciding, but only with sufficient clearness, fulness, and force to justify the decision at which he had arrived.

The chief doctrines of international law with the assertion and illustration of which the name of Lord Stowell is identified are these :—the perfect equality and entire independence of all states (Le Louis, 2 Dod., 243)—a logical deduction from the Austinian philosophy and still one of the fundamental principles of English Jurisprudence ; that the elementary rules

of international law bind even semi-barbarous states (Hurtige Hans, 2 Rob., 325); that blockade to be binding must be effectual (The “ Betsey,” 1 Rob., 98); that there cannot bea legal where there is no actual blockade; and that contraband of war is to be determined by “ probable destina- tion” (The “Jonge Margaretha,” 1 Rob., 189). In the famous Swedish convoy case (The “ Maria,” 1 Rob., 350; see too The “Recovery,” 6 C. Rob., 348-9) Lord Stowell, in defiance of the complaints of those greedy merchants who, as Pufendorf, himself by choice a Swedish civilian, tells us, cared not how things went pro- vided they could but satisfy their thirst of gain, asserted that “a prize court is a court not merely of the country in which it sits but of the law of nations.” ‘The seat of judicial authority,” he added, in words which have become classic, ‘‘is indeed locally here, in the belligerent country, but the law itself has no locality.”

The judgments of Lord Stowell were, almost without excepton, confirmed on appeal, are to this day the international law of England, and have become presumptive though not conclusive evidence of the international law of America. “I have taken care, wrote Justice Story, “ that they shall form the basis of the maritime law of the United States, and I have no hesitation in saying that they ought to do so in that of every civilized country in the world.

See Townsend, Lives of Twelve Eminent Judges, vol. ii.; Quarterly Review, yol, Ixxv.; W. E. Surtees, Skeich of Lords Stowell and Eldon; Creasy, First Platform of International Law; Decisions, by Dodson and Haggard.

STRABISMUS. See OpHTHaLmozoey, vol. xvii. p. 785.

STRABO, the famous geographer and historian, was born at Amasea in Pontus, a city which had been Hellenized toa great extent. Of his father’s family we know nothing; but several of his mother’s relations, who were probably Greeks, had held important posts under Mithradates Euer- getes and his famous son Mithradates Eupator. Dorylaus, a distinguished general of Mithradates Euergetes, was the great-grandfather of Strabo’s mother. After the murder of that king, Dorylaus, who at that time was collecting mercenaries in Crete, where he had obtained the command

el

~ in a successful war of the Cnossians against Gortyn, settled – at Cnossus. By Sterope, a Macedonian, he had a daughter and two sons,—Lagetas and Stratarchus. Dorylaus had a brother Phileteerus, whose son Dorylaus was brought up – with Mithradates Eupator. This king, at the instance of his friend invited back to Pontus the family of Dorylaus, who was himself now dead, as was also his son Lagetas. Strabo saw Stratarchus in extreme oldage. The daughter of Lagetas was the mother of Strabo's mother. Moaphernes, an uncle of Strabo's mother, probably on the father's side, was governor of Colchis under Mithradates Eupator. His mother's father must have held an important position, for, seeing the impending downfall of the king, and also in anger against him for having put to death his kinsmen Tibius and Theophilus, he handed over fifteen forts to Lucullus. In spite of this, with the ruin of the king the fortunes of the family fell, since Pompey refused to ratify the rewards promised by Lucullus.

Life.—Though the exact date of Strabo's birth is unknown, a close approximation is possible. Clinton places it not later than 54 8.c. The most probable date lies between 64 and 62, since he speaks of certain events occurring at the former as "a little before my time," whilst he describes an occurrence in the latter year as "in my own time," phrases which he uses elsewhere with great exactness in speaking of persons and events. He received | a good education in the Greek poets, especially Homer ; he studied at Nysa under the grammarian Aristodemus, under Tyrannio the grammarian at Rome, under the philosopher Xenarchus either at Rome or Alexandria, and he had studied Aristotle along with Boethus (possibly at Rome under Tyrannio, who had access to the Aristotelian writings in Sulla's library). It is to be noted that from none of those teachers was he likely to learn mathematics or astronomy. He was at Corinth in 29 B.c., where he saw Octavian on his return from Egypt to celebrate his triumph for Actium. He was in Egypt in 24 B.c., and took the opportunity of ascending the Nile in company with the prefect A'lius Gallus. He was at Rome after 14 A.D., for he describes (v. 236) as an eyewitness the place where the body of Augustus was burnt in the Campus. He was still writing in 21 a.p. The date of his death is unknown. Strabo's statement that he saw P. Servilius Isauricus has caused some difficulty. This Servilius died at Rome in 44 B.c. at an advanced age. Some suppose that Strabo confused him with P. Servilius Casca, also called Isauricus, or some other distinguished Roman

whom he had seen in Asia, but by his words he clearly means the conqueror of the Isaurians. This difficulty only arises from an entirely unwarranted assumption that Strabo was on his way to Rome for the first time in 29 B.C. We have seen that he studied under Tyrannio in that city; if he did so after 29 B.c. Tyrannio must have _ been very old, which Strabo would probably have men- tioned, as he does in the case of Aristodemus. Although he had seen a comparatively small portion of the regions which he describes, he had travelled much, as he states himself ; “Westward I have journeyed to the parts of Etruria opposite Sardinia; towards the south from the Euxine to the borders of Ethiopia; and perhaps not one of those who have written geographies has visited more _ places than I have between those limits. For those who have gone farther west have not gone so far eastward, and the case is the same with the regions between the northern and southern limits.” The fulness of his descrip- tion in certain places, contrasted with the meagreness and maccuracy in others, seems to indicate that in the former cases he had actually visited the places, but that he is | dependent on second-hand information for the latter. He

and Philz, Comana in Cappadocia, Ephesus, Mylasa, Nysa and Hierapolis in Phrygia, Gyarus, and Populonia. Of Greece proper he saw but little; he visited Corinth, Athens, Megara, and places in their vicinity, and perhaps Argos, although he was not aware that the ruins of Mycenz still existed; he had seen Cyrene from the sca, probably on his voyage from Puteoli to Alexandria. He remained at the latter place a long time, probably amassing materials, and studying astronomy and mathematics. For nowhere could he have had a better means of consulting the works of historians, geographers, and astronomers, such as Eratosthenes, Posidonius, Hipparchus, and Apollodorus. When and where he went from Egypt we know not. It has been commonly assumed that he returned home to Amasea. For this there are no grounds. Probabilities are in favour of his having returned to Rome, where he undoubtedly resided in his old age. The place of his death is unknown; but, since we find him at Rome in what must in the course of nature have been the closing years of his life, it is not unreasonable to suppose that there he died. Various passages in his work indicate that he held by the Stoic rule.

Works.—His earliest writings were two (not one, as commonly stated) historical works now lost, which he himself describes (xi. 515) as his Hestorical Memoirs and his Continuation of Polyhius. There can be no doubt but that these were two distinct works ; for he speaks (ii. 70) of having treated of the exploits of Alexander in his Memoirs, a topic which could not have found a place in a work which began where that of Polybius ended (146 B.c.). According to Suidas, the continuation of Polybius was in forty-three books. Plutarch, who calls him " the Philosopher," quotes Strabo's Memoirs (Luc., 28), and cites him as an historian (Sud/a, 26). Josephus, who constantly calls him "the Cappadocian," often quotes from him, but does not mention the title of the work.

The Geography is the most important work on that science which antiquity has left us. It was, as far as we know, the first attempt to collect all the geographical knowledge at the time attainable, and to compose a general treatise on geography. It must not be regarded as nothing more than a new edition of Eratosthenes. In general outline it follows necessarily the work of the last-named geographer, who had first laid down a scientific basis for geography on which his successors could not help building. Strabo made considerable alterations, but not always for the better. The three books of the older work formed a strictly technical geographical treatise. Its small size prevented it from containing any such general description of separate countries as Strabo rightly conceived to fall within the scope of the geographer. "Strabo indeed appears to be the first who conceived a complete geo- graphical treatise as comprising the four divisions of mathematical, physical, political, and historical geography, and he endeavoured, however imperfectly, to keep all these objects in view." Moreover, the incidental historical notices, which are often of great value and interest, are all his own. These digressions at times interrupt the sym- metry of his plan; but Strabo had all the Greek love of legendary lore, and he discusses questions relating to the journeyings of Heracles as earnestly as if they were events within recent history. He regarded Homer as tlie source of all wisdom and knowledge, and consequently accepted the Homeric geography in its entirety, as needing only proper explanation for the removal of all difficulties. On the other hand, he treats the work of Herodotus with undeserved contempt, and classes him with Ctesias and

other “marvel-mongers”; and yet in some respects Herodotus had better information—for instance, in regard

tells us that he had seen Egypt as far south as Syene| to the Caspian—than that possessed by Strabo himself.

582

Again, Strabo may be censured for discarding the state- ments of Pytheas respecting the west and north of Europe, accepted as they had been by Eratosthenes. But in this he relied on Polybius, whom he might justly consider as having from his position at Rome far better means of gaining accurate information about those regions. A critical sagacity far stronger than that of Strabo might well have erred at a time when the data for forming accurate judgments on such questions were so meagre and chaotic. It must be admitted that the statements of Pytheas did not accord with the theory of Strabo just in those very points where he was at variance with Erato- sthenes. He showed likewise an unwarranted scepticism in reference to the island of Cerne on the west coast of Africa, which without doubt the Carthaginians had long used as an emporium. Strabo has been censured for not making a greater use of Roman authorities. Although the Roman arms had opened up much of the north and west, he follows the Greek writers almost exclusively in his description of Spain, Gaul, Britain, Germany, and even Italy. For, although he refers to Cesar’s Commentaries once by name, and has evidently made use of them in other passages, he but imperfectly availed himself of that work. He designed his geography as a sequel to his his- torical writings, and it had as it were grown out of his historical materials. Such materials were chiefly Greek. We cannot wonder if a man who at an advanced age has commenced a new work utilizes his old material, and has not the energy to undertake fresh researches. Again, if Strabo amassed his material in the library of Alexandria, Greek authorities would naturally furnish the great bulk of his collections. This involves the questions—When and where did he compose the work? He began it probably later than 9 s.c. For he says that, just as Alexander had opened up knowledge of the East, so the Roman arms had now opened up the geography of the West as far as the Elbe. This Drusus accomplished in 9 B.c. Strabo was still engaged on the work, or certain parts of it, in 19 a.p.,

for he mentions in the fourth book the conquest of the Taurisci as having taken place thirty-three years before ; he also speaks, in the sixth book, of Germanicus, who died in 20 a.p., as still alive, and in the seventeenth book he speaks of the death of Juba II. (21 a.p.) as a recent event. As it is not probable that he wrote for the first time all of his work except the first three books between 19 and 21 A.D., we must not make use of these passages as data for determining the date of composition of the whole work, or even of particular books, but rather ought we to regard them as insertions. Strabo, as already pointed out, was at Rome after the death of Augustus (14 a.D.); in book vii. 290 and in book xiii. 609 he uses the terms “here” and “hither” in reference to Rome. It may be inferred from these passages that Strabo certainly revised, if he did not write, the entire work at Rome. If he returned to Rome after a long sojourn in Alexandria, this explains the de- fectiveness of his information about the countries to the east of his native land, and renders it possible for him to have made use of the chorography of Agrippa, and to have obtained the few incidents from Roman sources which here and there appear in his work.

He designed the work for the statesman rather than for the student. He therefore endeavours to give a general sketch of the character, physical peculiarities, and natural productions of each country, and consequently gives us much valuable information respecting ethnology, trade, and metallurgy. It was almost necessary that in such an attempt he should select what he thought most important for description, and at times omit what we deem of more importance. With respect to physical geography, his work is a great advance on all preceding ones. Judged

by modern standards, his description of the direction of rivers and mountain-chains seems defective, but allowance must be made for difficulties in procuring information, and for want of accurate instruments. In respect of mathematical geography, his want of high scientific train. ing was of no great hindrance. He had before him the results of Eratosthenes, Hipparchus, and Posidonius. The chief conclusions of astronomers concerning the spherical figure and dimensions of the earth, its relation to the heavenly bodies, and the great circles of the globe—the equator, the

ecliptic, and the tropics—were considered ag well established. He accepted also the division into five zones ; he quotes approvingly the assertion of Hipparchus that it was impossible to make real advances in geography without astronomical observations for determining lati-

tudes and longitudes.

The work consists of seventeen books, of which the seventh is imperfect. The first two books form a general introduction; the next ten deal with Europe, the four following with Asia, and the last with Africa. The first two books are meant to comprise a general survey of the progress of geography from the earliest times down to his own day. Unmethodical though they are, we owe to these books almost all we know of the geographical systems of his predecessors, especially that of Eratosthenes. Unfortunately he contents himself with disjointed criticism of detail instead of giving us an orderly statement of the previous systems. ‘The first book begins with his claim to have geography regarded as a branch of philosophy, and he supports this elaim by enumerating the philo. sophers who have studied it, beginning from Homer, as proofs of whose knowledge he adduces his acquaintanee with the Ocean, the Ethiopians, and the Seythians. This discussion of Homer’s geogta- phy takes up more than half the book. Passing over the early geo- graphers, not even mentioning Herodotus, he censures Eratosthenes for using unreliable authorities, and for casting doubts on the voyages of Jason and other early navigators. He next criticizes the physical views of Eratosthenes concerning the changes in the ails surfaee, and especially the hypothesis, adopted from Strato, that by sudden disruptions of land the Euxine and Mediterranean had become united to the ocean, and had sunk to their present level, which theory they supported by pointing to sea shells at places high above the sea. This doctrine Strabo rightly rejected, and referred sueh phenomena to those changes which with constant operation produce subsidences and elevations of the land ; and he quotes many instances of places engulfed by earthquakes, the disappearance of some islands, and the appearing of others. Hence he thinks it possible that even Sieily has been thrown up by the fires of Etna. Sir ©. Lyell eulogizes Strabo’s geological speculations for a soundness of view very unusual on sueh subjects amongst the ancients. Examining the second book of Eratosthenes, he discusses the length and

breadth of the inhabited world, and its division into three continents. He blames Eratosthenes for believing Pytheas, and denies tle existence of Thule, consequently rejecting the latitude assigned to it by Eratosthenes, who had taken it as the northernmost limitof the inhabited world. Strabo holds Ierne (Ireland), which lies north of Britain, to be the farthest land in that direction, and brings the northern limit much farther south. As he adopts Eratosthenes's southern limit,—that through the Cinnamon Region and Taprobane (Ceylon),—it follows that in his view Eratosthenes had made the inhabited world too broad. As the Greeks assumed that the world was twice as long as it was broad, Eratosthenes accordingly had made it too long likewise ; but, though Strabo shortens it on the west, there is no material difference between him and Eratosthenes. In this con- nexion he gives his remarkable speculation that, as the inhabited world was only one-third of the globe's circumference, there might be two or more inhabited worlds besides. In the second book he discusses the ehanges introduced by Eratosthenes, and rightly defends him from the attaeks of Hipparchus. He adopts for Asia the map of Eratosthenes as a whole, for little additional knowledge had been gained in the interval. He even still regards the Caspian as opening into the Northern Ocean, as stated by Patrocles. In the general outline of Africa he makes no change, but he rejects the statement of Eratosthenes about Cerne. It is with respect to western and northern Europe that Strabo had knowledge denied to Eratosthenes. Roman conquest had opencd up many places and peoples, yet his general map of Europe is inferior to that of his predecessor. After discussing the "seals" of Eratosthenes, he considers the views of Posidonius and Polybius, and recounts the voyages of Eudoxus of Cyzicus. Then having dealt with the division into zones, due to Parmenides, he states his own Views, discussing briefly the mathematical geography: the earth 18 spherical and placed in the centre of the universe ; he assumes five zones, and the circles on the sphere —the equator, the ecliptic oF

zodiac, the tropics, and the arctic circles ; he assumes the earth's circumference as given by Eratosthenes, 252,000 stades (= 25,200 geographical miles), and his division of the great eircle into sixtieth parts; the habitable world, the geographer's proper province, shaped like a

chlamys, occupies a quadrilateral space in the northern hemi- sphere, filling little more than one-third of the north temperate zone ; its maximum length is 70,000 stades, its breadth less than 30,000 stades. Whilst correcting the error by which his predecessors placed Massilia and Byzantium in the same latitude, he falls into an equal mistake by placing the former city two degrees south, instead of two degrees north of Byzantium. As Massilia is his cardinal point for measurements, this error distorts his whole map of the Mediterranean and western Europe, the mouths of the Rhine and Danube being in the same latitude. He next gives directions for making a plane map of the world, as a globe of sufficient size, like that of Crates, is too cumbrous. All lines that are circles on a globe must be straight lines on the map. Before describing each country in detail, he gives a general sketch of the habitable world with reference to seas, continents, and peoples, and explains the doctrine of climate and of the shadows projected by objects in consequence of the sun's varying position with respeet tothem. In the third book, starting from the Straits, he begins his description with Iberia, which he likens in shape to a bull's hide. His chief authorities were Artemidorus, whom he uses for the coasts of the Mediterranean and ocean generally, Eratosthenes, Posidonius, Polybius, Pherecydes, Timosthenes, Asclepiades, Myrleanus, and Dicearchus. He gives a valuable aceount of the Roman administrative system, probably gained from his own inquiries, also of the native tribes, of the mines and methods of mining, and of the remains of the Greek and Pheenician settle- ments; he describes the Balearic Isles, following Artemidorus, and at the end of the book mentions the Cassiterides, which he seems to have identified with the Scilly Isles, poy erroneously, and describes their inhabitants as wearing long black garments, and walking about with long wands in their hands, looking like the Furies of tragedy. It is remarkable that he has no notion of the proximity of the Tin Islands to Britain, but treats them in connexion with Spain. The fourth book deals with Gaul in its fourfold division under Augustus, gives a meagre account of Britain, its trade and relations with Rome, and mentions Ireland, the natives of which were said to be cannibals and to hold their women in common, and finally treats of the Alps. His authorities were Posidonius, who had travelled in Gaul and Britain, Artemidorus, Ephorus, Timagenes, Aristotle, Polybius, Asinius Pollio, and Cesar. For Britain Pytheas, as quoted by others, furnished some important details. His description of Gallia Narbonensis is fuller than that of the rest of Gaul. He mentions the

four great Roman roads converging at Lyons, prob- ably following the chorography of Agrippa. He conceives the Pyrenees as running north and south, and parallel to the Rhine, aud Britain as lying north of Gaul, extending from the Pyrenees to the Rhine's mouths. Of the Alpine region he gives an excellent description. He undoubtedly must have gathered much informa- tion for this book at Rome. The fifth and sixth books contain an accurate description of Italy and the adjacent islands. Besides his own observation he used Eratosthenes, Polybius, Artemidorus, Ephorus, Fabius Pictor, Coelius, Antiochus of Syracuse for south- ern Italy, and the ''chorographer," who was certainly a Roman, as he gave his distances in miles, and who probably was Agrippa, the chief objection to such an authorship being the wrong assump- tion that Strabo was not in Italy after 24 B.c., whilst Agrippa's work was not published until after his death 12 p.c. The sixth book ends with a short but valuable sketch of the extent and con- dition of the Roman empire. The seventh comprises northern and eastern Europe, both north and south of the Danube, Illyricum, Pannonia, Dalmatia, the coast of Thrace and the Euxine, and Epirus. The part which dealt with Macedonia and Thrace is only known to us from the epitomes. We do not know his authorities for the German tribes, but he probably used Roman materials. For the other northern tribes he had Posidonius, whilst for the region south of the Danube he had Aristotle's lost work on Polities, Polybius, Posidonius, Theopompus, and Ephorus. The eighth, uinth, and tenth books contain his description of the mainland of Greece and the islands, which he treats rather as an antiquarian than a geographer, using chiefly, besides Homer, Apollodorus, Demetrius of Scepsis, Ephorus, and Endoxus. Personally he had but little knowledge. With the eleventh begins Asia. © Divided from Europe by the Don, it is split up into two large masses by the Taurus. Beginning with the region bounded by the Taurus,

aspian, and Euxine, he next describes the part east of the Caspian, then those south of the Caucasus, Media, and Armenia. His authorities are Artemidorus, Eratosthenes, Theophanes, Herodotus, Apollodorus of Artemita, Patrocles, Metrodorus of Scepsis,

ypsicrates of Amisus, Posidonius, and Aristobulus. In the twelfth he describes Asia Minor, basing his description on oral Information, personal

observation, and the Greek writers. In the thirteenth he continues with Asia Minor, devoting mucli space to

583

| the Troad, his sources being Demetrius, Menecrates, and the

Greek mythographers. With the fourteenth he ends Asia Minor and the islands lying off it, using, in addition to the authorities for the last, Pherecydes, Thucydides, Anaximenes of Lampsacus, Herodotus, Ephorus, Artemidorus, Eratosthenes, and Posidonius. The fifteenth deals with India and Persia, giving much valuable information from Patrocles, Aristobulus, Nearchus, the historians of the campaigns of Alexander and Seleucus, and with reserve from Megasthenes, Onesicritus, Deimachus, and Clitarchus. In the sixteenth he treats of Assyria, under which he includes Babylonia and Mesopotamia, Syria, Phenieia, Palestine, the Persian Gulf, the Red Sea and the coast of Ethiopia, and Arabia. For Asia he used the historians of Alexander, Eratosthenes and Herodotus; for Judea and Syria probably Posidonius, himself a native of Apamea; for Arabia and the eoast of Libya Eratosthenes and Artemidorus, the latter of whom followed Agatharchides of Cnidus. Strabo must have got many details about Arabia from Alius Gallus and the Stoic Athenodorus. The last book comprises Egypt, Ethiopia, and the north coast of Libya. He describes Egypt from his own observation, having gained much information at Alexandria in addition to that of Eudoxus, Aristo, Eratosthenes, Polybius, and Posidonius, using the last three with the addition of Iphicrates for Libya, and for Ethiopia Petronius, Herodotus, and Agatharchides. Though probably acquainted with the work of Juba, he did not make mueh use of it. The book concludes with a summary of the provinces of the Roman empire, as organized by Augustus into senatorial and imperial.

Epitions.—Aldus, Venice, 1516, Hopper and Heresbach, Basel, 1549; Xylander, Basel, 1571; Casaubon, Geneva, 1587, Paris, 1620 (Casaubon revised the text) ; Almeloveen, Amsterdam, 1707, reprinted Casaubon’s text; Falconer, Oxford, 1807, reprinted Almeloveen’s text; Siebenkees and Tzschucke, Leipsic, 1811; Koray, Paris, 1815-18, the first really critical edition; Kramer, Berlin, 1844-52; C. Muller, Paris, 1853; Meineke, Leipsic, 1877. TraNsLATIoNs.—Zatin : Guarini and Gregorio, 1471; Xylander,

1571. /rench: Koray and Letronne, 1805-19. German: Groskurd, 1833 (with dissertations), J¢alian: Ambrosoli, 1828. Dis- SERTATIONS, &c.—Bunbury, Ancient Geography; Heercn; Hasenmiiller ; Niese, Hermes, 1878. (W. RI.)

STRADELLA, ALzEssaNnDRO, composer, singer, and performer on various instruments, was one of the most accomplished Italian musicians of the 17th century. The generally accepted statement that he was born at Naples about 1645 rests upon no trustworthy founda- tion; and the few biographical notices that we possess savour so strongly of romance that we can only be said to know him truly through his works, which show extra-ordinary genius, and have exercised a highly beneficial influence upon Italian art. The story of his life was first circumstantially narrated in Bonnet-Bourdelot's Histovre de la Musique et de ses Effets (Paris, 1715). According to this account, Stradella not only produced some successful operas at Venice, but also attained so great a reputation by the beauty of his voice that a Venetian nobleman engaged him to instruct his mistress, Ortensia, in singing. Stradella, the narrative goes on to say, shamefully betrayed his trust, and eloped with Ortensia to Rome, whither the outraged Venetian sent two paid bravi to put him to death. On their arrival in Rome the assassins learned that Stradella had just completed a new oratorio, over the performance of which he was to preside on the following day at 8. Giovanni in Laterano. Taking advantage of this circumstance, they determined to kill him as he left the church ; but the beauty of the music affected them so deeply that their hearts failed them at the critical moment, and, confessing their treachery, they entreated the composer to ensure his safety by quitting Rome immediately. Thereupon Stradella fled with Orten-sia to Turin, where, notwithstanding the favour shown to him by the regent of Savoy, he was attacked one night by another band of assassins, who, headed by Ortensia's father, left him on the ramparts for dead. Through the connivance of the French ambassador the ruffians suc- ceeded in making their escape; and in the meantime Stradella, recovering from his wounds, married Ortensia, by consent of the regent, and removed with her to Genoa. Here he believed himself safe; but a year later he and Ortensia were murdered in their house by a third party of assassins in the pay of the implacable Venetian.

Bonnet-Bourdelot gives 1670 as the date at which the assassina-

tion actually took place; but the oratorio San Giovanni Battista, assumed to be that which saved its author's life, is dated "Roma,

O84

1676"; and a cantata, called 2 Barcheggio, is known to have been composed by Stradella for the marriage of Carlo Spinola and Paola Brignolo in 1681. These discrepancies are not, however, of suffieient moment to justify the rejection of Bonnet-Bourdelot's aceount, which has been accepted as genuine by Burney, Hawkins, Fétis, and many other careful writers, including the remarkably accurate and conscientious Wanley.4 And it must be remembered, in its defence, that Pierre Bourdelot, by whom the materials for the Histoire de la Musique et de ses Effets were originally compiled, was an actual contemporary of Stradella, and died as early as 1685, when a host of the composer's friends must still have been living, and able to give evidence on the subject of his fate. It seems there- fore only reasonable to assume that the main facts of the narrative are correctly given, though the dates may need confirmation; while for the embroidered versions of later writers the authors of the Histotre are certainly not responsible.

The finest collection of Stradella's works extant is that at the Biblioteca Palatina at Modena, which contains 148 MSS., includ- ing eleven operas and six oratorios. A collection of canti a voce sola was bequeathed by the Contarini family to the library of St Mark at Venice; and some MSS. are also prescrved at Naples and in Paris. Eight madrigals, three duets, and a sonata for two violins and bass will be found among the Additional MSS. at the British Museum, five picces among the Harleian MSS., and eight cantatas and a motet among those in the library at Christ Church, Oxford. Very few of thesc compositions have been published; but an extremely beautiful aria di chiesa, entitled Pieta Signore,? has been frequently printed, under the name of Stradella, and popularly accepted as the air which produced so marvellous an effect upon the assassins. The piece, however, is not to be found in San Giovanni Battista; and its style so little resembles that of Stradella's other works that no less decisive evidence than the discovery of an undoubted autograph could justify its ascription to him. On

the other hand, no more extravagant mistake could be made than that of deseribing it, as some have done, as a forgery, perpetrated either by Fétis, Rossini, or Niedermeyer. Not one of these great musieians could have written it; and it is certainly no forgery, but a genuine work of the 17th century or the opening decade of the 18th. In the absenee of trustworthy doeumentary evidence, all attempts to ascertain the real authorship of the piece must necessarily end in mere conjecture; but the extraordinary similarity of its style to that cultivated by Francesco de' Rossi, who is known to have been flourishing at Bari at the time of Stradella's death, is very significant.

Mueh controversy has also been excited by another work, lately attributed to Stradella, viz., a serenata for voices and instruments, of which two copies only are known to exist,—one at the Con- servatoire at Paris, and the other, a late transeript, now at the Royal College of Music in London. The date of this screnata is absolutely unknown. Of evidence proving it to be a genuine work by Stradella there is none in existence. Yet the question of its authenticity is a most important one, for upon the strength of it Handel may perhaps be some day gravely accused of having stolen from the Italian composer some of the finest passages in Israel in Egypt.

The compositions of Stradella are remarkable for their graceful form and the tenderness of their expression. Detached move- ments will be found in Burney's History of Music and the modern collection called Gemme @' Antichita.

STRADIVARIUS. See Viotry.

STRAFFORD, Tuomas WenrwortH, EARL oF (1593-1641), son of Sir William Wentworth, of Went- wortl Woodhouse, near Rotherham, was born in 1593 in Chancery Lane, London. He was educated at St John's College, Cambridge, and in 1611 was knighted, and mar- ried Margaret, daughter of Francis, earl of Cumberland. In 1614 he represented Yorkshire in the Addled Parlia- ment, but, as far as is now known, it was not till the parliament of 1621 that he took part in the debates. His position towards the popular party was peculiar. He did not sympathize with their eagerness for war with Spain, and he was eager, as no man of that time except Bacon was eager, for increased activity in domestic legislation. He was what, in

modern times, would be called a reformer, and in those days a reformer was necessarily an upholder of the authority of the crown, in whose service the most experienced statesmen might be expected to be found, whilst the members of a House of Commons only sum-

1 See No. 1272 in Cat. Harl. MSS., Brit. Mus. Wanley, how- ever, believed Stradella alone tv have been murdered and the lady to have eseaped. Called in some editions Se ¢ miei sospiri.

moned at considerable intervals would be deficient in the qualities necessary for undertaking successful legislation.. On the other hand, James's conduct of the diplomatic struggle with Spain was not such as to inspire confidence, and Wentworth's bearing was therefore marked by a certain amount of hesitation. He was, however, more than most men prone to magnify his office, and James's contemptuous refusal to allow the House of Commons to give an opinion on foreign politics seems to have stung him to join in the vindication of the claims of the House of which he was a member. He was at all events a warm supporter of the protestation which drew down a sentence of dissolution upon the third parliament of James.

In 1622 Wentworth's wife died, and in February 1625 he married Arabella Holles, the daughter of the earl of Clare. Of the parliament of 1624 he had not been a member, but in the first parliament of Charles I. he again represented Yorkshire, and at once marked his hostility to the proposed war with Spain by supporting a motion for an adjournment before the House proceeded to business, His election was declared void, but he was re-elected, When he returned to parliament he took part in the op- position to the demand made under the influence of Buckingham for war subsidies, and was consequently, after the dissolution, made sheriff of Yorkshire, in order to exclude him, as hostile to the court, from the parliament which met in 1626. After the dissolution of that par- liament he was dismissed from the justiceship of the peace and the office of custos rotulorum of Yorkshire.

Wentworth's position was very different from that of the regular opposition. He ~~was anxious to serve the crown, but he disapproved of the king's policy. "My rule," he wrote December 1625, "which I will never transgress, is~~

~~never to contend with the prerogative out of parliament, nor yet to contest with a king but when I am constrained thereunto or else make shipwreck of my peace of conscience." In January 1626 he had asked for the presidency of the Council of the North, and had visited and made overtures to Buckingham. His subse~~ quent dismissal was probably the result of his resolution not to support the court in its design to force the country to contribute money without a parliamentary grant. At all events, he refused in 1627 to contribute to the forced loan, and was placed in confinement in Kent for his refusal.

Wentworth's position in the parliament of 1628 was a striking one. He joined the popular leaders in resistance to arbitrary taxation and imprisonment, but he tried to obtain his end with the least possible infringement of the prerogative of the crown, to which he looked as a reserve force in times of crisis. With the approbation of the House he led the movement for a bill which would have secured the liberties of the subject as completely as the Petition of Right afterwards did, but in a manner less offensive to the king. The proposal was wrecked upon Charles's refusal to make the necessary concessions, and the leadership was thus snatched from Wentworth's hands by Eliot and Coke. Later in the session he fell into conflict with Eliot, as, though. he supported the Petition of Right in substance, he was anxious to come to a compro- mise with the Lords, so as to leave room to the king to act unchecked in special emergencies. f

On July 22, 1628, not long after the prorogation, Wentworth was created Lord Wentworth, and received @ promise of the presidentship of the Council of the North at the next vacancy. Even on political matters he had never been quite at unison with the parliamentary opposition, and in church matters he was diametrically opposed to them. Since the close of the discussion on the Petition of Right, church matters had come into greater prominence

than ever, and Wentworth was therefore thrown strongly on the side of Charles, from whom alone opposition to

Puritanism could possibly come. This attachment to

Charles was doubtless cemented by Buckingham's murder,

but, if he took the king’s part with decision and vigour, it

must be remembered that, as has been already said, he _ was above all a man prone to magnify his office, and that things would look differently to him than they had done before he was in his new position. For the charge of apostasy in its ordinary meaning there is no foundation.

As yet Wentworth took no part in the general govern- ment of the country. In December he became Viscount _ Wentworth and president of the Council of the North. In the speech delivered at York on his taking office he announced his intention of doing his utmost to bind up the prerogative of the crown and the liberties of the subject in indistinguishable union. ‘‘ Whoever,” he said, “ravels forth into questions the right of a king and of a people shall never be able to wrap them up again into the comeliness and order he found them.”

The session of 1629 ended in a breach between the king and the parliament which made the task of a moderator hopeless. Wentworth had to choose between helping a Puritan House of Commons to dominate the king and helping the king to dominate a Puritan House of Commons. He instinctively chose the latter course, and he threw himself into the work of repression with characteristic energy, as if the establishment of the royal power was the one thing needful, Yet even when he was most resolute in crushing resistance he held that he and not his antagonists were maintaining the old constitution which they had attempted to alter by claiming supremacy for _ parliament.

In November 1629 Wentworth became a_ privy councillor. In October 1631 he lost his second wife, and in October 1632 he married Elizabeth Rhodes. In January 1632 he had been named lord-deputy of Ireland, having performed his duties at York to the king’s satis- faction, though he had given grave offence to the northern gentry by the enforcement of his authority. It was a _ cardinal point of his system that no wealth or station _ should exempt its possessor from obedience to the king. ‘ Not only was the announcement of this principle likely to | give offence to those who were touched by it, but in its

application Wentworth was frequently harsh and over- bearing. In general he may have been said to have _ worked rather for equality under a strong Government than for liberty.

In Ireland Wentworth would have to deal with a people which had not arrived at national cohesion, and amongst which had been from time to time introduced _ English colonists, some of them, like the early Norman _ settlers, sharing in the Catholicism of the natives, whilst _ the later importations stood aloof and preserved their ‘ Protestantism. There was also a class of officials of English derivation, many of whom failed to reach a high standard of efficiency. Against these Wentworth, who arrived in Dublin in July 1633, waged war sometimes with scanty regard to the forms of justice, as in the case of Lord Mountnorris, whom he sent before a court-martial on a merely formal charge, which necessarily entailed a death sentence, not because he wanted to execute him, but because he knew of no other way of excluding him from official life.

__ The purifying of official life, however, was but a small part of Wentworth’s task. In one way, indeed, _ he conceived his duty in the best spirit. He tried at the same time to strengthen the crown and to benefit gy the poor by making the mass of the nation less dependent _ on their chiefs and lords than they had been before, and,

smi ’

____ ____

pee Zr rom D

585

though Wentworth could not do away with the effects of previous mistakes, he might do much to soften down the existing antagonism between the native population and the English Government. Unhappily his intentions were frustrated by causes resulting partly from his own character and partly from the circumstances in which he was placed. :

In the first place, Wentworth's want of money to carry on the Government was deplorable. In 1634 he called a parliament at Dublin, and obtained from it a consider- able grant, as well as its co-operation in a remarkable series of legislative enactments. The king, however, had previously engaged his word to make certain concessions known as the ‘‘ graces,” and Wentworth resolved that some of these should not be granted, and took upon himself to refuse what his master had promised. The money granted by parliament, however, would not last for ever, and Wentworth resolved to create a balance between revenue and expenditure before the supply was exhausted. This he succeeded in doing, partly by making a vast improve- ment in the material condition of the country, and partly by the introduction of monopolies and other irregular payments, which created wide dissatisfaction, especially amongst the wealthier class.

Towards the native Irish Wentworth's bearing was benevolent but thoroughly unsympathetic. Having no notion of developing their qualities by a process of natural growth, his only hope for them lay in converting them into Englishmen as soon as possible. They must be made English in their habits, in their laws, and in their religion. “T see plainly,” he once wrote, “that, so long as this kingdom continues Popish, they are not a people for the crown of England to be confident of.” It is true that he had too much ability to adopt a system of irritating persecution, but from time to time some word or act escaped from him which allowed all who were concerned to know what his real opinion was. For the present, however, he had to content himself with forging the instrument by which the hoped-for conversion was to be effected. The Established Church of Ireland was in a miserable plight, and Wentworth busied himself with rescuing from the hands of such men as the earl of Cork the property of the church, which had in troublous times been diverted from its true purpose, and with enforcing the strict observance of the practices of the English Church, on the one hand upon recalcitrant Puritans, and on the other hand upon lawless disregarders of all decency. In this way he hoped to obtain a church to which the Irish might be expected to rally.

Till that time came, he must rely on force to keep order and to prevent any understanding growing up between the Irish and foreign powers, With this object in view he resolved on pouring English colonists into Connaught as

James had poured them into Ulster. To do this he had taken upon himself to set at naught Charles's promise that no colonists should be forced into Connaught, and in 1635 he proceeded to that province, where, raking up an obsolete title, he insisted upon the grand juries in all the counties finding verdicts for the king. One only, that of Galway, resisted, and the confiscation of Galway was effected by the Court of Exchequer, whilst he fined the sheriff £1000 for summoning such a jury, and cited the jurymen to the castle chamber to answer for their offence. He had succeeded in setting all Ireland against him.

High-handed as Wentworth was by nature, his rule in Treland made him more high-handed than ever. As yet he had never been consulted on English affairs, and it was only in February 1637 that Charles asked his opinion on a proposed interference in the affairs of the Continent. In reply, he assured Charles that it would be unwise to

undertake even naval operations till he had secured –

absolute power at home. The opinion of the judges had given the king the right to levy ship-money, but, unless his Majesty had ''the like power declared to raise a land army, the crown" seemed "to stand upon one leg at home, to be considerable but by halves to foreign princes abroad." The power so gained indeed must be shown to be beneficent by the maintenance of good government, but it ought to exist. A beneficent despotism supported by popular gratitude was now Wentworth's ideal.

In his own case Wentworth had cause to discover that Charles's absolutism was marred by human imperfections. Charles gave ear to courtiers far too often, and frequently wanted to do them a good turn by promoting incom- petent persons to Irish offices. To a request from Went- worth to strengthen the position of the deputy by raising him to an earldom he turned a deaf ear. Yet to make Charles more absolute continued to be the dominant note of his policy, and, when the Scottish Puritans rebelled, he advocated the most decided measures of repression, and in February 1639 he offered the king

£2000 as his contri- bution to the expenses of the coming war. He was, how- ever, too clear-sighted to do otherwise than deprecate an invasion of Scotland before the English army was trained.

In September 1639, after Charles's failure in the first Bishops' War, Wentworth arrived in England to conduct in the star-chamber a case in which the Irish chancellor was being prosecuted for resisting the deputy. From that moment he stepped into the place of Charles's prin- cipal adviser. Ignorant of the extent to which opposition had developed in England during his absence, he recom- mended the calling of a parliament to support a renewal of the war, hoping that by the offer of a loan from the privy councillors, to which he himself contributed £20,000, he would place Charles above the necessity of submitting to the new parliament if it should prove restive. In January 1640 he was created earl of Strafford, and in March he went to Ireland to hold a parliament, where the Catholic vote secured a grant of subsidies to be used against the Presbyterian Scots. An Irish army was to be levied to assist in the coming war. When in April Strafford returned to England he found the Commons holding back from a grant of supply, and tried to enlist the peers on the side of resistance. On the other hand, he attempted to induce Charles to be content with a smaller grant than he had originally asked for. The Commons, however, insisted on peace with the Scots, and on May 9, at the privy council, Strafford, though reluctantly, voted for a dissolution.

After this Strafford supported the harshest measures. He urged the king to invade Scotland, and, in meeting the objection that England might resist, he uttered the words which cost him dear, ‘‘ You have an army in Ire- land,”—the army which, in the regular course of affairs, was to have been employed to operate in the west of Scotland,—‘‘ you may employ here to reduce this king- dom.” He tried to force the citizens of London to lend money. He supported a project for debasing the coinage and for seizing bullion in the Tower, the property of foreign merchants. He also advocated the purchasing a loan from Spain by the offer of a future alliance. He was ultimately appointed to command the English army, but he was seized with illness, and the rout of Newburn made the position hopeless. In the great council at York he showed his hope that if Charles maintained the defen- sive the country would still rally round him, whilst he proposed, in order to secure

Ireland, that the Scots of Ulster should be ruthlessly driven from their homes.

When the Long Parliament met it was preparing to impeach Strafford, when tidings reached its leaders that

Strafford, now lord-lieutenant of Ireland, had come to |

London and had advised the king to take the initiative by accusing his chief opponents of treason. On this the impeachment was hurried on, and the Lords committed Strafford to the Tower. At his trial in Westminster Hal] he stood on the ground that each charge against him, even if true, did not amount to treason, whilst Pym urged that, taken as a whole, they showed an intention to change the Government, which in itself was treason. Undoubtedly the project of bringing over the Irish army, probably never seriously entertained, did the prisoner most damage, and when the Lords showed reluctance to condemn him the Commons dropped the impeachment and brought in a bil] of attainder. The Lords would probably have refused to pass it if they could have relied on Charles's assurance to relegate Strafford to private life if the bill were rejected, Charles unwisely took part in projects for effecting Strafford'

escape and even for raising a military force to accomplish

that end. The Lords took alarm and passed the bill. Op May 9, 1641, the king, frightened by popular tumults, reluctantly signed a commission for the purpose of giving to it the royal assent, and on the 12th Strafford was executed on Tower Hill. (8. Raga

STRAITS SETTLEMENTS, the collective name given to the British possessions in the MaLay PENINSULA (see vol. xv. p. 320, and Plate VI.), derived from the straits which separate the peninsula from Sumatra and which form so important a sea-gate between India and China. The Straits Settlements are defined, by letters patent 17th June 1885, as consisting of the island of Singapore (which contains the seat of government), the town and province of Malacca, the territory and islands of the Dindings (off

Perak), the island of Penang, and Province Wellesley, with their dependencies actual or prospective. The Cocos or Keexine Istanps (9.v.), formerly attached to Ceylon, were transferred to the Straits Settlements in 1886, These possessions have formed a crown colony since 1867, previous to which they were administered as a presidency of the Indian empire. The governor, appointed for six years, is assisted by an executive and a legislative council. Resident councillors are stationed at Penang and Malacca, and since 1874 British residents have exercised supervision at the native courts of Perak, Selangor, and Sungei Ujong, and are assisted by a staff of European officials.

The following are the area and population (with details of race divisions) of the settlements :—

Population in 1881.

Area Population

alee in 1871 Euro- A Natives

miles : Total peans. Malays, Chinese. |) inaia, Singapore…| 206 97,181 139,208 | 2,769 | 22,155] 86,766 | 12,058 Penang…... 107 90,951 612 | 21,772) 45,185 | 15,7380 Province 131,889

Wellesley.| 270 97,324 76 | 58,723 | 21,687 | 10,616

Malacca….| 659 77,755 93,579 40 | 67,518 | 19,741 | 1,891 Dindings…. 00s eee 2,322 Sat ar S08 os

‘he population, which thus was 306,775 in 1871 and 423,384 im 1881, was estimated at 473,000 in 1884. The increase is solely produced by immigration of Chinese and natives of India; for, while the total number of births registered in Singapore, Penang, Province Wellesley, and Malacca was in the threc years 1881-88 only 21,184, the deaths were 37,151.! In 1883 61,206 Chinese landed at Singapore and 48,419 in Penang; and, though the influx of Indian coolies has been retarded by the stringent protective laws of the Indian Government, the stream of immigration has been steadily increasing in volume. The number of Chinese 1 probably

below the truth, as they were very reluctant to fill up the returns. In 1867, the date of the transfcr to the crown, the colony had, it was estimated, not more than 283,384 inhabitants.

The revenue, which was in 1868 only about 1,301,843 dollars, had risen by 1886 to 8,710,639, a large proportion being derived ee Eee eee

1 The number of hospital cases, and consequently the death-rate, is affected, however, by the fact that natives from the rest of the penii sula, whose diseases prove beyond native skill, are often brought to the colonial hospitals.

from opium and spirit taxation (712,600 dollars in 1868 and

The expenditure in the same period increased from 1,197,177 to 3,652,771 dollars. In 1868 12,400 dollars were devoted to education (95,600 in 1884). Public works were credited with 146,800 dollars in 1868 but with 1,170,000in 1884. The ports of the Straits Settlements are all free. In 1867 the total burden was 1,237,700 tons, in 1873 2,507,000 tons, and in 1883 4,290,600. The value of the united imports and exports was in 1867 about

2,152,700 in 1884).

. £14,040,000, and in 1883 it was estimated by Sir Frederick Weld at £38, 624, 200.

The imports usually somewhat exceed the exports. MaxaccA.—The territory of Malacca lies between the river

. Linggi and the Kesang, which separate it respectively from Sungei

Ujong to the north-west and the Moar district of Johor to the east. ‘To the north it marches with Negri Sembilan. Forest conservancy is beginning to be carefully attended to, and pepper growing has recently been started with success at Arra Kudah by Achinese settlers. Tapioca and tin are among the exports, the latter, brought from the Selangor mines, being smelted in

Malacca. The average birth-rate in 1881-83 was 2046 and the death-rate 2642. The city of Malacca has already been described, vol. xv. p. 312.

Prince or WALES IsLAND (or Penang) and SINGAPORE are treated in separate articles.

Province WELLESLEY, which lies opposite Penang, was at one time part of the Kedah territory, from which it is now separated by the Kwala Muda river. Southwards it extends (since 1874) a little to the south of the Krian river and marches with Perak. The boundary was rectified by treaty with Siam in 1867. Butter- worth is the seat of the Government headquarters. The country consists for the most part of fertile plain, and the remainder, about one-eleventh of the whole, is low wooded hills (highest 1843 feet). Some of the low land is rich dark alluvial soil, and much of it is sandy; in the hills a ferruginous sandy loam of rather poor quality prevails. Sugar-growing has long been a staple industry, and tca plantations began to be formed in 1869-70.

Tur Dinpines belonged originally to the state of Perak. The British territory extends some 26 miles from north to south. Though it hasa magnificent natural harbour, “it has not hitherto,” says Sir Frederick Weld, ‘‘been a progressive district. But [think its time is at hand. It produces tin, timber, and ebony, and turtles frequent the neighbouring islands.” Dinding Island lies off the mouth of the river of the same name.

PERAK is an extensive tract of country, comprising the grcat part of the basin of the Perak river (which runs north and south, almost parallel with the coast of the peninsula, for upwards of 130 miles, excluding the windings, before it turns abruptly west to the Strait) and all the basin of the Bernam river. The boundary towards Patani cuts the Perak river at the rapids of Jeram Panjang. The population of the states is about 110,000, among the more noteworthy tribes being the Sakeis. Perak was brought into closer relation to Britain by the treaty signed at Pankor (Pangkore) in the Dindings, 20th January 1874, which authorized the appointment of a British resident and assistant resident. The first resident, J. W. Birch, was murdered in November 1875; but British troops from India and China, under General (Sir Francis) Colborne, soon suppressed the insurrectionary movement. One column crossed from Larut to Kwala Kungsa and defeated the rebels at

Kotah Lamah, Enggar, and Prek, and another advanced from Banda Baru (where Mr Birch was buried) to Blanja, the residence of the ex-sultan Ismail, and thence to Kinta on the Kinta river, the capital of Perak. As it was discovered that Abdullah, the ruling sultan, had been accessory to the murder of Mr Birch, he was deposed in 1877 and banished to Mahe (Sey- chelles). he residency of Lower Perak was removed from Banda Baru to Durian Sabatang, the place where the Bidor and Batang Padang join the main stream of the Kungsa or Perak, and it has again been removed to Teluk Anson (Teluk Mah Intan), lower down, the centre of the inland trade. ‘The residency of Upper Perak is at Kwala Kungsa. Perak has made wonderful advance since the war. Jts revenue was 312,875 dollars in 1877, and in 1884, at a moderate estimate, 1,435,697. In 1877 there was only one line of good road in the country,—from Larut through the pass of Bukit Berapit to Kwala Kungsa; now large tracts have been opened up with roads and bridle-paths. ‘‘Rivers have been cleared of ob- structions, telegraph lines laid down, court-houses, hospitals, police-stations, &c., built, and a line of railway (8 miles) cou- structed from Port Weld, the port of Larut, at Teluk Kartang, where vessels drawing 13 to 15 feet can enter to Taipeng (Thai- peng).” The revenue is mainly derived from a duty on tin, which is largely mined in Larut, &. The mines of the Capitan China in 1883 produced to the value of £105,000. Coffee and tea plant- Ing seem to promise well.

SELANGOR lics to the south of Perak, and consists mainly of the basins of the Selangor, the Klang, and the Langat, of which the last two meet in a common delta to the south of 3° N. lat. Previous to 1880 the seat of the British resident and staff was at Klang, at the head of 13-feet navigation on the Klang river; at that date it was transferred to Kwala Lumpur, at the junction of the Gombah

with the Klang, the highest point reached by the cargo boats which bring up provisions for the tin-miners and return with tin, gutta- percha, and other produce. There are tin mining settlements at Kanching, Ulu Selangor, Ulu Bernam, Ulu Gombah, Ulu Klang, Ulu Langat, Sungie Pateh Reeko, Kajang, Ampagnan, &c. The mine at Ampagnan was bought for 170,000

dollars by Singapore merchants. The population of Selangor (50,000,—29,000 of them Chinese) is rapidly increasing by immigration from China, India, and Sumatra. Since the close of the civil war (1867-74) and the acceptance of the British resident the country has rapidly devel- oped. At the mouth of the Selangor lies the town of that name, with ruins of an old Dutch fort and the stone on which the sultans of Selangor receive investiture. At Klang, up the Klang river, lies the principal port of the country, now connected by railway with Kwala Lumpor (22 miles distant), the capital, which has grown into a considerable town, with a hospital, Government house, residency, &c. The sultan resides at Jugra, on a deltaic branch of the Langat. The revenue of Selangor was estimated at 596,877 dollars in 1884; but the war debt was still 259,000 dollars in 1883.

SunceI Usone (500 square miles, including Lukut and Sungei Riah ; population 14,000, the greater part being Chincse) also shows steady progress. Its revenue rose from 67,000 dollars in 1874-75 to 121,176 in 1884. European coffee and cocoa plantations and Chinese tapioca, pepper, and gambier plantations are at work.

The interference of the British Government is frequently sought in the territory of the Negri Sembilan (the so-called ‘‘ Nine States,” which are now really seven in number), Sri Menanti, Numbaw, Johole, Jellye, Muar, Jempolt, Segamet.

See Journal of the Straits Asiatic Society, Singapore; Dowden, The Malay Peninsula, 1882; Vacher, Zwelve Years in Malaya; M‘Nair, Perak and the Malays, 1878; W. B. D’Almeida, “ Geography of Perak and Salangore,” in J. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1876; Sir Frederick Weld, ‘‘ Straits Settlements,” in Proceedings of Royal Colonial Institute, 1883-84; The Straits Directory, 1886; and the works mentioned in the article MaLay Pxninsuwa,

STRALSUND, a seaport and small manufacturing town in Western Pomerania, Prussia, is situated on the Strelasund, an arm of the Baltic Sea, 2 miles wide, which separates the island of Rtigen from the mainland, 115 miles to the north of Berlin and 85 miles to the north- west of Stettin. The position of the town on a small triangular islet, only connected with the mainland by moles and bridges at the angles, has always rendered its fortification comparatively easy, and down to 1873 it was a fortress of the

first rank. The quaint architecture of the houses, many of which present their curious and handsome gables to the street, gives Stralsund an interesting and old-fashioned appearance. The three vast Gothic churches of St Nicholas, St Mary, and St James, erected in the 14th and 15th centuries, and the town-house, dating in its oldest part from 1316, are among the more striking buildings. The public library, founded in 1709, contains 60,000 volumes. The manufactures of Stralsund. are more miscellaneous than extensive; they include machinery, beer, oil, paper, playing-cards, and sugar. The trade is chiefly confined to the shipping of grain, malt, and timber, with some cattle and wool. In 1884 542 sea-going ships and 1964 river-craft entered the har- bour, which is protected by the fortified island of Dan- holm, and 513 ships and 1964 river-craft cleared. In 1882 the port owned a fleet of 247 sea-going ships, with a burden of 41,176 tons, besides numerous smaller craft below 60 tons. The population in 1880 was 29,481, in 1885 28,981. More than a fourth of the inhabitants re- side in the Knieper, Tribseer, Franken, and Harbour sub- urbs on the mainland. About 1000 are Roman Catholics and 140 Jews.

Stralsund was founded in 1209 by Jaromar I., prince of Riigen, and, though several times destroyed, steadily prospered. It was one of the five Wendish towns whose alliance extorted from King Eric of Norway a favourable commercial treaty in 1284-85 ; and in the 14th century it was second only to Liibeck in the Hanseatic League. Although under the sway of the dukes of Pomerania, the city was able to maintain a marked degree of independence, which is still apparent in its municipal privileges; it is also the only town in Prussia, with the exception of Breslau, which has an independent municipal ecclesiastical consistory. Its carly Protestant sympathies placed it on the side of Sweden during the Thirty Years' War; and in 1628 it successfully resisted a siege of eleven weeks by Wallenstein, who had sworn to take it ''though it were chained to heaven." He was forced to retire with the loss of

12,000 men; and a yearly festival in the town still celebrates the occasion. After the peace of Westphalia Stralsund was ceded with the rest of Western Pomerania to Sweden; and for more than a ccntury and a half it was

exposed to attack and capture as the téte-de-pont of the Swedes in Continental Europe. In 1815 it passed to Prussia. In 1809 it was the scene of the death of Major Schill, in his gallant though ineffectual attempt to rouse his countrymen against the French invaders.

STRANGE, Sir Ropert (1721-1792), an eminent line engraver, was descended from the Scottish family of Strange, or Strang, of Balcasky, Fife, and was born in the Mainland of Orkney, on July 14, 1721. In his youth he spent some time in an attorney's office; but, having mani- fested a taste for drawing, he was apprenticed, in 1735, to Richard Cooper, an engraver in Edinburgh. After leaving Cooper in 1741, he started on his own account as an en- graver, and had attained a fair position when, in 1745, he joined the Jacobite army as a member of the corps of life guards. He engraved a half-length of the Young Pre- tender, and also etched plates for a bank-note designed for the payment of the troops. He was present at the battle of Culloden, and after the defeat remained in hiding in the Highlands, but ultimately returned to Edinburgh, where, in 1747, he married Isabella, only daughter of William Lumisden, son of a bishop of Edinburgh.

In the following year he proceeded to Rouen, and there studied drawing under J. B. Descamps, carrying off the first prize in the Academy of Design. In 1749 he removed to Paris, and placed himself under the celebrated Le Bas. It was from this master that he learned the use of the dry point, an instrument which he greatly improved, and employed with excellent effect in his own engravings. In 1750 Strange returned to England. Presently he settled in London along with his wife and daughter, and super- intended the illustrations of Dr William Hunter's great work on the Gravid Uterus, published in 1774. The plates were engraved from red chalk drawings by Van Rymsdyk, now preserved in the Hunterian Museum, Glas- gow, and two of them were executed with great skill by Strange's own hand. By his plates of the Magdalen and Cleopatra, engraved after Guido in 1753, he at once established his professional reputation.

He was invited in 1759 to engrave the portraits of the prince of Wales and Lord Bute, by Allan Ramsay, but declined, on the ground of the insufficient remunera- tion offered and of the pressure of more congenial work after the productions of the Italian masters. His refusal was attributed to his Jacobite

proclivities, and it led to an acrimonious correspondence with Ramsay, and to the loss, for the time, of royal patronage. In 1760 Strange started on a long-meditated tour in Italy. He studied in Florence, Naples, Parma, Bologna, and Rome, execut- ing innumerable drawings, of which many—the Day of Correggio, the Danae and the Venus and Adonis of Titian, the St Cecilia of Raphael, and the Barberini Magdalen of Guido, &c.—were afterwards reproduced by his burin. On the Continent he was received with great distinction, and he was elected a member of the academies of Rome, Florence, Parma, and Paris. He left Italy in 1764, and, having engraved in the French capital the Justice and the Meekness of Raphael, from the Vatican, he carried them with him to London in the following year.

The rest of his life was spent mainly in these two cities, in the diligent prosecution of his art. In 1766 he was elected a member of the Incorporated Society of Artists, and in 1775, piqued by the exclusion of engravers from the Royal Academy, he published an attack on that body, entitled An Enquiry into the Rise and Progress of the Royal Academy of Arts at London, and prefaced by a long letter to Lord Bute. In 1787 he engraved West's Apotheosis of the Princes Octavius and Alfred, and was

rewarded with the honour of knighthood. He died jp London on the 5th of July 1792.

_In the technique of engraving Strange was a master. His line is tender and flowing, without monotony or confusion, and his expression of flesh is characterized by uncommon delicacy and transparency. In draftsmanship his works are often defective,

After his death a splendid edition of reserved proofs of his engravings was issued; and a catalogue of his works, by Charles Blanc, was published in 1848 by Rudolph Weigel of Leipsic, forming part of Le Graveur en Taille Douce. Sec Memoirs of Sir Robert Strange, Knt., and his Brother-in-law Andrew Lumisden, by James Dennistoun of Dennistoun, 1855,

STRANRAER, a royal burgh of Wigtownshire, Scot. land, is situated on the North Channel, at the head of Loch Ryan, 7 miles north-east of Portpatrick,

and 59 miles south-south-west of Ayr. In the centre of the town is the old baronial castle of the 15th century occupied by Claverhouse when he held the office of sheriff of Galloway, The principal public buildings are the old town-hall, the new town-hall and court-house (1873), and the academy (1845). A reformatory provides accommodation for 100 boys, and there is a combination poorhouse for the county and a few parishes beyond it. The town possesses a library and public reading-room. ‘The harbour, which is tidal, only admits the entrance of vessels of 150 tons, but there is good anchorage in the loch, and the east pier permits of the approach of large steamers, which ply in connexion with the railway daily to Larne in Ireland, There is also steam communication with Glasgow, Liver- pool, and other towns; but since the construction of the Girvan and Portpatrick Railway the trade of the port has been on the decline. The principal import is coal, and the principal exports are agricultural produce. The town is chiefly dependent on agriculture. The fishing industry is of minor importance. The population in 1881 of the royal burgh (area 55 acres) was 3455, and of the police burgh 6342. The town was created a burgh of barony in 1596, and a royal burgh in 1617. In 1885 its parlia- mentary representation (it had been one of the Wigtown burghs) was merged in that of the county.

STRASBURG (Germ. Strassburg, Fr. Strasbourg), the principal town of Alsace, and a fortress of the first rank, is situated at the junction of the Ill and the Breusch, about two miles to the west of the Rhine, in one of the most fertile districts in the upper Rhenish plain. It lies about 90 miles to the north of Basel, 250 miles to the east of Paris, and 370 of Berlin. Since 1871 Te it has been the seat pZ2ePs<'l of government for the Beats German crownland of Alsace-Lorraine (Elsass- Lothringen) ; and it is also the see of a Roman Catholic bishop

ee EN 7 + SS AE es

Yo Wen pears

Environs of Strasburg.

and the headquarters of the 15th corps of the German

army. The town proper is divided by the arms of the III into

three parts, of which the central is the largest and most

important. Most of the streets are narrow and irregular, and the quaint aspect of a free medizval town has to a considerable extent been maintained. The quarters which suffered most in the bombardment of 1870 have, how- ever, been rebuilt in a more modern fashion, and the recent widening of the circle of fortifications, with the destruction of the old walls, has given the city opportunity to expand in all directions, ;

By far the most prominent building is the minster, or cathedral, which in its present form represents the activity of four centuries. Part of the crypt dates from about 1015; the apse shows the transition from the Romanesque to the Gothic style; and the nave, finished

-

in 1275, is a fine specimen of pure Gothic. Of the elaborate west facade, with its singular screen of double tracery, the original design was furnished by Erwin of Steinbach (c. 1318). The upper part of the facade and the towers were afterwards completed in accordance with a different plan, and the intricate open-work spire on the north tower, 465 feet high, was added in 1435. The sculptural ornamentation both without and within is very rich. The astronomical clock in the south tran- sept, constructed in 1838-42, contains some fragments of the famous clock built by Dasypodius in 1571. The church of St Thomas, a Gothic building of the 13th and 14th centuries, contains a fine monument to Marshal Saxe, considered the chef d’ccuvre of the sculptor Pigalle. Other notable buildings are the Temple-Neuf, or Neukirche, re- built since 1870; the old episcopal palace (1731-41), now the library; the old prefecture; the theatre; the town- house ; and the so-called “aubette,” containing the conser- vatorium of music. The university of Strasburg, which was suppressed in the French Revolution as a stronghold of German sentiment, was reopened in 1872, and now occupies

4 i N G ah gFBQ S Se) Sy took ~~

yy

4,

Vie, YY.

fg nr)

100 0 100 200 300 400 500 600

Plan of Strasburg.

I, Cathedral, 6, 6. Barracks, 10. Imp. Palace. | 15. Prot. Gymna- 2. Library. 7. Akademie. 11. Theatre. sium. 3. St Thomas's Ch. | 8. Govt. Tobacco | 12. Law Courts. | 16. Arsenal. 4, Hospital. Factory. 13. Aubette. 17, Military Hos- 5,5. Univ.Med.Fac.| 9. University. 14, Neukirche. pital.

a handsome new building erected for it in 1884. The university and town library, containing about 600,000 volumes, consists largely of the books sent from all parts of Germany to compensate for the town library destroyed in the bombardment of 1870. The precious incunabula and manuscripts which then perished are, however, irre- placeable. General Kleber, who was a native of Strasburg, and Gutenberg, who spent part of his life here, are both commemorated by statues. Many private houses are most quaint and interesting illustrations of timber architecture. Pleasant public parks and gardens fringe the town.

The population in 1880 was 104,471, including 51,859 Roman Catholics, 48,691 Protestants, and 3521 Jews. In 1885 the total population had risen to 112,091, showing an Increase of 7:29 per cent. The town, strictly so called, does not contain more than 90,000 inhabitants, the rest belong- ing to the suburban villages. Even before the war of 1870- 71 More than half of the inhabitants spoke German as their mother-tongue, and this proportion has probably been Somewhat increased since. The sympathies of the people, however, like those of most of the Alsatians, lay with France, and it will require the growth of a new generation to bring about a complete reconciliation to German rule.

589

The chief industries of Strasburg are tanning, brewing, and the making of steel goods, machinery, and tobacco. To these must be added the stall-fattening of geese for its celebrated pdtés de foie gras, an occupation which forms a most uscful source of income to the poorer classes. The annual value of these ‘‘ fat liver pies” sent out from Strasburg is over £100,000. The position of the town at the intersection of natural highways between France and Germany, Switzerland and Belgium, early made it a place of considerable commercial importance, and it now carries on a brisk trade in agricultural produce, hams, sausages, sauerkraut, and hops. Its full development in this direction, though favoured by the canals connecting the Rhine with the Rhone and the Marne, has been somewhat hampered by the iron girdle of fortifications.

Strasburg has always been a place of great strategic importance, and as such strongly fortified. The pentagonal citadel constructed by Vauban in 1682-84 was destroyed during the siege of 1870. The new German system of fortifications consists of a girdle of fourteen detached forts, at a distance of three to five miles from the centre of thetown. Kehl, the éte-de-pontof Strasburg, and several villages are included within this enceinte, and three of the outworks lie on the right bank of the Rhine, in the territory of Baden. In case of need a great part of the environs can be laid under water by the garrison.

The site of Strasburg seems to have been originally occupied by a Celtic settlement, which the Romans conquered and replaced by the fortified station of Argentoratum, afterwards the headquarters of the eighth legion. In the year 357 the emperor Julian saved the frontier of the Rhine by a decisive victory gained here over the Alemanni, but about half a century later the whole of the district now called Alsace fell into the hands of that Teutonic people. Towards the end of the 5th century the town passed to the Franks, who named it Strataburgum. The famous “Strasburg oaths ” (see GERMANY, vol. x. p. 480) were taken here in 842 ; and in 923, through the homage paid by the duke of Lorraine to Henry I., began the connexion of the town with the kingdom of Germany which was to last for more than seven centuries. The bishopric of Strasburg was founded in the Merovingian period, and soon attained great wealth and importance. The early history of Strasburg, as in the case of most episcopal citics, consists mainly of a record of the struggle between the bishops and the citizens,—the latter, as they grew in wealth and power, feeling the fetters of ecclesiastical rule inconsistent with their full development. The conflict was finally decided in favour of the citizens by the battle of Oberhausbergen in 1262; and the position of free imperial city, which had been conferred upon Strasburg by Philip of Swabia, was not again disputed. The throwing off of the episcopal yoke was followed by an internal revolution (1332), which admitted the guilds to a share in the government of the city and impressed upon it the democratic character that it bore down to the French Revolu- tion. Strasburg now became one of the most flourishing of all the imperial towns, and the names of natives or residents like Sebastian Brant, Tauler, Fischart, and Geiler von Kaysersberg show that its pre-eminence was not confined to the material sphere. On the other hand, its fair fame is sullied by such acts as the burning in 1349 of 2000 Jews, accused of causing a pestilence by poisoning the wells. In 1381 Strasburg joined the Stadtebund, or Swabian League, and about a century later it rendered efficient aid to the Swiss confeder- ates at Granson and Nancy. The Reformation found ready accept- ance at Strasburg, its foremost champion here being Martin Bucer, and the city was skilfully piloted through the ensuing period of religious dissension by its ‘‘stadtmeister’’ Jacob Sturm, who se- cured for it very favourable terms at the end of the Schmalkald War. Inthe Thirty Years’ WarStrasburg escaped without molesta- tion by observing a prudent neutrality. In 1681, during a time of peace, it was suddenly seized by Louis

XIV., and this unjustifiable action received formal recognition at the peace of Ryswick in 1697. The immediate effect of the change of superiors was a partial reaction in favour of Roman Catholicism, but the city remained essentially German until the French Revolution, when it was deprived of its privileges as a free town and sank to the level of a French provin- cial capital. It was at Strasburg that Louis Napoleon made his first ineffectual attempt to grasp power. In the war of 1870 Stras- burg, with its garrison of 17,000 men, surrendered to the Germans after a siege of seven weeks. The town and cathedral suffered con- siderably from the bombardment, but all traces of the havoc have now disappeared.

STRASS, or Paste. See Gass, vol. x. p. 665.

STRATEGY. See War.

STRATFORD, usually designated StraTFoRD-on-AVoN, a market-town and municipal borough of England, in War- wickshire, near the Gloucestershire border, is pleasantly situated on the Avon, and on the Great Western and Mid- land Railway lines, 26 miles south of Birmingham and 8 south-west of Warwick. The Avon is crossed by a stone bridge of fourteen arches, built by Sir Hugh Clopton in the

reign of Henry VIL, and widened in 1814; by a bridge of nine arches, built of brick in 1826 ; and by a foot-bridge erected in 1867, at a cost of £500, on the site of a foot- bridge originally erected in 1599, and rebuilt in1812. The streets are wide and regular, crossing each other generally at right angles, and, says J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps, “ with the exception of a few diffused buildings, scarcely one of which is in its original condition, there is no resemblance between the present town and the Shakespearean borough ” (compare article SHAKESPEARS, vol. xxi. pp. 741 sg.). The church of the Holy Trinity occupies the site of a Saxon monastery, which existed before 691, when the bishop of Worcester received it in exchange from Ethelred, king of Mercia, It is a fine cruciform structure, partly Early English and partly Perpendicular, with a central tower and lofty octagonal spire. It was greatly improved in the reign of Edward ITI. by John de Stratford, who rebuilt the south aisle. He also in 1332 founded a chantry for priests, and in

1351 Ralph de Stratford built for John's chantry priests "a house of square stone," which came to be known as the college, and in connexion with which the church became collegiate. The present beautiful choir was built by Dean Balshall (1465-91), and in the reign of Henry VII. the north and south transepts were erected. The mural monu- ment of Shakespeare, who is buried in the chancel, is of special interest from its effigy of the poet, undoubtedly an authentic representation, though somewhat altered and damaged by time. The foundation of the chapel of the guild of the Holy Cross was laid by Robert de Stratford, The guild, to which both sexes were admitted, was in exist- ence early in the 13th century, and it was incorporated by a charter from Edward III. in 1322. It was dissolved in 1547. The house in which Shakespeare was born still

stands, —although its external appearance is much altered, |

—and an apartment is by immemorial tradition pointed out as his birth-room. In 1597 Shakespeare purchased New Place for his residence (see vol. xxi. p. 765). Shakespeare's house was pulled down by Sir John Clopton in 1702, and the large new mansion erected on its site was pulled down by Sir Francis Gastrell in 1759. Chiefly through the exer-

tions of J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps, the site of New Place was.

purchased by public subscription, and in 1876 handed over to the trustees of the birthplace. The old theatre, which had occupied part of the ground, was taken down in 1872, and in 1877 a new memorial theatre was erected at a cost of £30,000. The other principal buildings of the town are the town-hall, originally erected in 1633, almost entirely rebuilt in 1767-68, after having been severely injured by an explosion, and greatly altered in 1863 at a cost of £2000; the market-house (1820) ; the corn exchange (1850) ; the children's hospital (1871); and the new hospital (1884). The Edward VI. grammar school, where Shakespeare re- ceived his education, was founded in 1553. The town is chiefly dependent on the agriculture of the neighbourhood. The population of the borough in 1871 was 7183, and in 1881 (area extended in 1879 to 3865 acres) it was 8054.

There is no authentic mention of Stratford earlier than the 7th century. It received a charter for a market in the-reign of Richard I., but was not

incorporated till the reign of Edward VI. The charter of Charles II., granted in his 26th year, remained the governing charter of the town till the passing of the Municipal Act in 1835. The town suffered from a severe epidemic in 1564, from inundations in 1588, and from fire in 1598.

See S. L. Lee, Stratford-on-Avon, 1884; J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps, Outlines of

the Life of Shakspeare, sixth edition (with a history of New Place), 1886; and the article SHAKESPEARE. ;

STRATFORD, a town of Canada, capital of Perth county, Ontario, lies on the river Avon (a tributary of the Thames which discharges into Lake St Clair), about 45 miles by rail south-east of Goderich, at the junction of the Goderich and Buffalo division with the main line of the Grand Trunk Railway. In 1849 it was a village of only

200 inhabitants; but between 1871 and 1881 its popu- lation rose from 4313 to 8239. It hasa town-hall, ex. tensive repairing shops, and several manufactures. STRATFORD DE REDCLIFFE, Stratrorp CANNING, Viscount (1786—1880), diplomatist, was the first cousin of George Canning the statesman, and the youngest son of Stratford Canning, who, having been disinherited for marrying beneath his rank, settled in London as a mer- chant in Clement’s Lane, where young Canning was born 4th November 1786. Shortly afterwards the father died, and the family removed to Wanstead, the boy attending the village school and afterwards a school at Hackney until 1794, when he went to Eton. Ultimately he became captain of the school, and he also manifested his literary predilections by publishing, in conjunction with Wellesley and others, a collection of essays entitled The Miniature. In 1805 he was elected scholar of King’s College, Cambridge, and, while still attending the univer- sity, became in 1807 précis writer to his cousin, who had been appointed foreign minister. At the close of the year he went to Copenhagen as one of the secretaries of a special diplomatic mission, and after his return he was appointed in June 1808 first secretary at Constantinople, On the. removal of his chief Mr Adair to Vienna in July 1810, Canning remained minister plenipotentiary, making

use of the opportunity to give indications of that over- mastering purpose and bold yet subtle diplomacy which were to have such an important influence on the history of the Eastern question. In 1812 he succeeded in effecting the treaty of Bucharest between Russia and Turkey, which was signed on the 12th May, shortly before the arrival of his successor. This was properly the inaugura- tion of that English influence in Turkey which did not cease until within recent years. The treaty was also of immense immediate advantage by freeing the Russian army to act against Napoleon, and on his return to Eng- land Canning was rewarded bya pension of £1200 a year. He remained in London, occupying himself with litera- ture, and contributing some articles to the Quarterly Leview, then newly founded, until in May 1814 he was appointed by Lord Castlereagh minister plenipotentiary to Switzerland, where he succeeded in effecting the federa- tion of the cantons as a neutral state. He returned to England in 1817, and in August 1820 was sent as pleni- potentiary to the United States, to arrange certain out- standing differences between the States and England ; but, although a convention was signed 13th March 1824, this was rejected by the American senate, and matters for several years remained, so far as any actual arrangement was concerned, im statu quo. In October 1825 Oanning was sent on a second commission to Constantinople, chiefly to promote the independence of Greece, but after long and complicated negotiations the attack, without the knowledge of the ambassadors, on the Turkish fleet by the allies under Sir E. Codrington at Navarino, 20th October 1827, caused a conference then being held to be suddenly broken up, and rendered necessary the with- drawal of the ambassadors from Constantinople. They, however, again met at Poros towards the close of the following year, and ultimately Turkey was compelled, by the treaty of Adrianople, 14th August 1829, following @ short war with Russia, to loose her grasp on Greece, and consent to the arrangement of a frontier limit. On his return to England Canning was made G.C.B. In 1828 he had been elected to the House of Commons for Old Sarum, and he sat for different boroughs until 184], when he again accepted the office of ambassador to Turkey. During the next twelve years he gradually suc ceeded in winning the confidence of the sultan, as well as awakening his wholesome awe, by convincing him, nob

merely of his sincere interest in the welfare of Turkey, put of his sole ability to thwart the wiles of the Russian emperor. There is no doubt a certain degree of exaggera- tion in Kinglake's description of Canning as the " Great Elchi," at whose slightest frown the Turks were ready to quail, and by whose matchless skill and coolness the em- peror Nicholas was placed at his wits' end; but the con- summate ability with which he managed the negotiations connected with the question of the Holy Places, so as to place the emperor as much as possible in the wrong, and to render his act of hostility on 3d July 1853—which led to the Crimean war—unjustifiable, cannot be denied. During the war he retained his position at Constantinople, but at its conclusion he returned in 1858 to London. In 1852 he had been raised to the peerage with the title Viscount Stratford de Redcliffe. His later years were spent chiefly in retirement, and, except when the Eastern question came prominently into notice, he took little part in political dis- cussion. On Eastern politics he contributed several papers to the Times and the Nineteenth Century. He died with- out surviving male issue 14th August 1880.

His essays were collected and published in 1881 under the title of the astern Question, with a memorial preface by Dean Stanley. A memoir by Stanley Lane Poole is in preparation.

STRATO. See PERIpaTETics, vol. xviii. p. 545.

STRAUBING, an ancient town in the most fertile part of Lower Bavaria, is situated on the right bank of the Danube, 25 miles to the south-east of Ratisbon. Its oldest and most characteristic building is the tall square tower of the town-hall, with its five pointed turrets, dating from 1208. The church of St James is a good Late Gothic edi- fice (1292-1512), with some paintings ascribed to Wohl- gemuth, and the old Carmelite church contains a handsome monument to Duke Albert II. of Bavaria. The industries of Straubing are tanning, brewing, and trade in grain and cattle. The population in 1880 was 12,625, nearly all Roman Catholics.

Straubing isa town of remote origin, believed to be identical with the Koman station of Serviodwrum. In definite history, however, it is known only asa Bavarian town, and from 1333 to 1425 it was the seat of the collateral ducal line of Baiern-Straubing. Its chief historical interest attaches

to its connexion with the unfortunate Agnes Bernauer, who lived at the chateau here with her husband Duke Albert IIT. During the latter's absence his father, Duke Ernest, exasperated at the mesalliance, cruelly and unjustly con- demned his son's low-born wife to death, and caused her to be hurled into the Danube from the bridge (1485). A chapel in the church- yard of St Peter's is said to cover her remains. Fraunhofer the optician was born at Straubing in 1787.

STRAUSS, Davin Frieprica (1808-1874), author of the Leben Jesu, was born at Ludwigsburg, near Stuttgart, January 27, 1808. He was the son of a small tradesman who loved literature and thought more than business, and his mother was a bright intelligent woman whose piety was practical rather than meditative, while she had an open eye for the beauties of art and nature. In his thirteenth year the boy was sent to the evangelical seminary at Blau- beuren, near Ulm, to be prepared for the study of theo- logy. Amongst his school-fellows were youths destined to become equally distinguished with himself, of whom he has given sketches in his Christian Marklin. Amongst the principal masters in the school were Professors Kern and F. C. Baur, who infused into their pupils above all a deep love of the ancient classics. In 1825 Strauss passed from school to the university of Tiibingen. The course of study was two years of philosophy and history and three of theology. The professors of philosophy failed to interest him, and he accordingly followed pretty much his own devices in this field, devoting himself especially to Schelling, the writers of the romantic school, Jacob Bohme, and even to somnambulistic and other modern supersti- tions. In 1826 his previous teachers, Kern and Baur,

removed to Tiibingen, and the latter introduced him to the writings of Schleiermacher, which awoke his keen dialectical faculty and delivered him from the 'vague- ness and exaggerations of romantic and somnambulistic mysticism, while for a time he found satisfaction for his religious nature in Schleiermacher's idea of religion. In the last year of his stay at Tiibingen he read with Marklin Hegel's Phdnomenologie, which was the beginning of his abandonment of Schleiermacher for Hegel. In 1830 he passed his examination brilliantly, and became assistant to a country clergyman, and

was greatly beloved as preacher and pastor by the parishioners. After nine months in this position he accepted the post of professor in the high school at Maulbronn, having to teach Latin, history, and Hebrew. Here also he was most successful and highly valued. But in October 1831 he resigned his office in order to study under Schleiermacher and Hegel in Berlin. Hegel died just as he arrived, and, though he regularly attended Schleiermacher's lectures, it was only those on the life of Jesus which exercised a very powerful influence upon him. It was amongst the followers of Hegel that he found kindred spirits. Under the leading of Hegel's distinction between " Vorstellung" and " Begriff," he had already conceived the idea of his two principal

| theological works—the Life of Jesus and the Christian

Dogmatics. In 1832 he returned to Tiibingen and became repetent in the university, lecturing on logic, history of philosophy, Plato, and history of ethics, with great success. But in the autumn of 1833 he resigned this positton in order to devote all his time to the completion of his pro- jected Life of Jesus. In a year the manuscript was fin- ished, and in 1834 the first volume and in 1835 the second were given to the world. The work produced an immense sensation and created a new epoch in the treatment of the rise of Christianity. The chief replies to it were by Tholuck, Neander, A. Schweizer, Ullmann, and Bruno Bauer. In 1837 Strauss replied to his critics (Streitschriften zur Vertheadigung meiner Schrift tiber das Leben Jesu). In the third edition of the work (1839), and in Zwei Sriedliche Blitter, he made important concessions to his critics, which he withdrew, however, in the fourth edition (1840, translated into English by George Eliot, with Latin preface by Strauss, 1846). In 1840 and the following year he published his Christliche Glaubenslehre (2 vols.), the principle of which is that the history of Christian doctrines is their disintegration. Between the publication of this work and that of the Mriedliche Bldtter he had been elected to a chair of theology in the university of Zurich. But the appointment provoked such a storm of popular ill-will in the canton that the authorities considered it wise to pension him before he entered upon his duties, although this concession came too late to save the Govern- ment. With his Glaubenslehre he took leave of theology for upwards of twenty years. In August 1842 he married Agnes Schebest, a cultivated and beautiful opera singer of high repute, but

not adapted to be the wife of a scholar and literary man like Strauss. Five years afterwards, when two children had been born, a separation by arrange- ment was made. Strauss resumed his literary activity by the publication of Der Romantiker auf dem Throne der Cexsaren, in which he drew a satirical parallel between Julian the Apostate and Frederick William IV. of Prussia (1847). In 1848 he was nominated as member of the Frankfort parliament, but was defeated. He was elected for the Wiirtemberg chamber, but his action was so con- servative that his constituents requested him to resign his seat. He forgot his political disappointments in the prot duction of a series of biographical works, which secured for him a permanent place in German literature (Schubar?'s Leben, 2 vols., 1849; Christian Marklin, 1851; Frischlin,

O92

1855 ; Ulrich von IHutten, 3 vols., 1858-60, 4th ed., 1878 ; Hf. S. Reimarus, 1862). With this last-named work (see REIMARUS) he returned to theology, and two years after- wards (1864) published his Leben Jesu fiir das Deutsche Volk (4th ed., 1877). It failed to produce an effect com- parable with that of the first Z2fe, but the replies to it were many, and Strauss answered them in his pamphlet Die Halben und die Ganzen (1865), directed specially against Schenkel and Hengstenberg. His Christus des Glaubens und der Jesus der Geschichte (1865) is a severe criticism of Schleiermacher's lectures on the life of Jesus, which were then first published. From 1865 to 1872 Strauss resided in Darmstadt, where he made the personal acquaintance of the princess Alice and the crown-princess of Germany, receiving from both ladies many marks of esteem. In 1870 he published his lectures on Voltaire (3d ed., 1872), which were written for the princess Alice and delivered before her. In the works of these years it seemed that the truth of Christianity had become still more problematic to Strauss, and this was more obvious than ever in his next and last important work, his confession, and final summary answer to the four great questions —Are we Christians ? Have we still religion? What is our conception of the world? How are we to regulate our lives? (Der Alte und der Neue Glaube, 1872, 11th ed., 1881, English translation by M. Blind, 1873). The work produced a greater sensa- tion than his first Lzfe of Jesus, and not least amongst Strauss's own friends, who wondered at his one-sided view of

Christianity, his professed abandonment of all spiritual philosophy, the strange inconsistencies of his thought, his scientific credulity, and the offensive form of his negations. To the fourth edition of the book he added a Nachwort als Vorwort (1873). The same year symptoms of a fatal malady appeared, and death followed February 7, 1874. Though his last book renounced in almost frivolous lan- guage the hope of immortality, he read Plato's Phedo in the Greek during his last days, and Zeller says "his friends bade him adieu with feelings such as Plato has described at the end of that dialogue."

Strauss's mind was almost exclusively analytical and critical, without depth of religious feeling, or philosophical penetration, or historical sympathy. His work was accordingly rarely construct- ive, and, save when he was dealing with a kindred spirit, he failed as an historian, biographer, and critic, strikingly illustrating Goethe's profoundly true principle that loving sympathy is essential for productive criticism. His first Life of Jesis was directed against not only the traditional orthodox view of the Gospel narratives, but likewise the rationalistic treatment of them, whether after the manner of Reimarus or that of Paulus. The mythical theory that the Christ of the Gospels, excepting the most meagre outline of personal history, was the unintentional creation of the early Christian Messianic expectation he applied with merciless rigour and mechanical inconsideration to the narratives. But his opera- tions were based upon fatal defects, positive and negative. He held a narrow theory as to the miraculous, a still narrower as to the relation of the divine to the human, and he had no true idea of the nature of historical tradition, while, as C. F. Baur complained, his critique of the Gospel history had not been preceded by the essential preliminary critique of the Gospels themselves. With a broader and deeper philosophy of religion, juster canons of historical criticism, with a more exact knowledge of the date and origin of the Gospels, his rigorous application of the mythical theory with its destructive results would have been impossible. In his second Life of Jesus, though conceding something to C. F. Baur, he adhcres substantially to his mythical theory, while he seeks to make good one defect of the first Life by supplying a previous examination of the Gospels. But this examination shows little independent research, being searcely more than the adoption of the conclusions of C. F. Baur and his earlier disciples. Another advance on the first work is the addition of a

sketch of the historical facts of the life of Jesus and of his religious character, but he adheres to his early limited and shallow view of the relation of the divine and the auman, and still fails to apprehend the true mission of the founder of the Christian religion. But the estimate of the religious mission of Jesus, and of the historical trustworthiness of the Gospels, is far higher in this Zife than the final one in Der Alte und der Neue Glaube. As in his philosophical development he exhibited waver-

ing uncertainty, so it is impossible to reconcile his views of Christ and Christianity at different periods of his life. Some of the expressions of his last book in this respect are in glaring zontrast with the positions he maintained in earlier years.

Strauss's works are published in a collected edition in 12 vols., by Zeller Bonn, 1876-78, without bis Christliche Dogmatik. On his life and works see Zeller's David Friedrich Strauss in seinem Leben und seinen Schriften, Bonn 1874; A. Hausrath's D. F. Strauss und die Theologie seiner Zeit, 2 vols., Heidel: berg, 1876-78; his own essay on Julius Kerner; F. J. Vischer's Kritische Géinge, i. 3. Karl Schwarz, Zur Geschichte der neuesten Theologie, 4th ed., 1869; Hein. rich Lang, Meligiése Reden, vol. ii.; Dorner, Geschichte der protestantischen Theologie, 1876; Nippold, Handbuch der neuesten Kirchengeschichte, 1868; J. Scholten, "Strauss and Christianity," in Theological Review, 1874, Jan. and April; Hase, Geschichte Jesu, 1876, give critiques from different points of view of Strauss's theological works, particularly his Lives of Jesus. (J. F.S.)

STRAUSS, Jonann (1804-1849), orchestral conductor and composer of dance-music, was born at Vienna, March 14, 1804. In 1819 he obtained his first engagement as a violinist in a small band then playing at the Sperl, in the Leopoldstadt. Shortly afterwards he joined Lanner, with whom he remained associated as deputy-conductor until 1825, when he organized a little band of fourteen performers on his own account. It was during the carnival of 1826 that Strauss inaugurated his long line of triumphs by introducing his band to the public of Vienna at the Schwan, in the Rossau suburb, where his famous Taziberl- Walzer (op. 1) at once established his reputation as the best composer of dance-music then living, Upon the

strength of this success he was invited back to the Sperl, where he accepted an engagement, with an increased orchestra, for six years. Soon after this he was appointed kapellmeister to the lst Biirger regiment, and entrusted with the duty of providing the music for the court balls ; while the number of his private engagements was so great that he found it necessary to enlarge his band from time to time until it consisted of more than two hundred performers. In 1833 he began a long and extended series of tours throughout northern Europe, eventually visiting England in 1838. In Paris he associated himself with Musard, whose quadrilles became not much less popular than his own waltzes; but his greatest successes were achieved in London, where he arrived in time for the coronation of Queen Victoria, and played at seventy-two public concerts, besides innumerable balls and other pri- vate entertainments. The fatigue of these long journeys seriously injured Strauss's health; but he soon resumed his duties at the Sperl; and on May 5, 1840 he removed with his band to the Imperial '' Volksgarten," which thence- forth became the scene of his most memorable successes. Those who enjoyed the privilege of hearing him conduct there could never forget the wonderful delicacy of the per- formance, over which the master presided with a quiet power which ensured the perfection of every minutest nuance. In 1844 Strauss began another extensive series of tours. In 1849 he revisited London, and, after his fare- well concert, was escorted down the Thames by a squadron of boats, in one of which a band played tunes in his honour. This was his last public triumph. On his return to Vienna he was attacked with scarlet fever, of which he died, Sep- tember 25, 1849.

Strauss was survived by three sons, Johann (born 1825), Joseph (1827-1870), and Edward (born 1835), all of whom have distin- guished themselves as composers of dance-music, and assisted mm recruiting the ranks and perpetuating the traditions of the still famous band.

STRAUSS-DURCKHEIM, Hercuts (b. 1790, d. 1865), an eminent French entomologist, was the author of ana tomical works of exquisite precision and fulness of detail. Two of these (his monographs of the anatomy of the cock- chafer and of the cat) are permanent classics, of which the influence has aided greatly in raising the standard of zoological works. i

STRAWBERRY (Fragaria). Apart from its interest as a dessert fruit (see HortTIcULTURE, vol. xii. p. 276), the strawberry has claims to attention by reason of the pecu-

jiarities of its structure and the excellent illustrations it offers of the inherent power of variation possessed by the plant and of the success of the gardener in availing himself of this tendency. The genus /ragaria consists of a small number (three to four, according to Hooker) of species, native of the temperate regions ®f both hemispheres, as | well as of mountain districts in warmer climes. The tufted ‘character of the plant, and its habit of sending out long slender branches (runners) which produce a new bud at | the extremity, are well known. The leaves are usually palmately three-parted, but the number of leaflets may be increased to five or reduced to one. While the flower has the typical Rosaceous structure, the so-called fruit is very peculiar, but it may be understood by the contrast it pre- sents with the “hip” of the rose. In the last-named plant the top of the flower-stalk expands as it grows. into a vase- shaped cavity, the “hip,” within which are concealed the | true fruits or seed-vessels. In the rose the extremity of the floral axis is concave and bears the carpels in its interior. In the strawberry the floral axis, instead of becoming concave, swells out into a fleshy, dome-shaped or flattened mass in which the carpels or true fruits, commonly called pips or seeds, are more or less imbedded but never wholly concealed. A ripe strawberry in fact may be aptly compared to the “fruit” of a rose turned inside out.

The common wild strawberry of Great Britain, which indeed is found throughout Europe and great part of North America, is /”. vesca, and this was the first species brought under cultivation in the early part of the 17th century. Later on other species were introduced, such as _F. elatior, a European species, the parent stock of the hautbois strawberries, and especially 7’. virginiana from the United States and F. chiloensis from Chiloe. From these species, crossed and recrossed in various manners, have sprung the vast number of different varieties now enumerated in catalogues, whose characteristics are so inextricably blended that the attempt to trace their exact parentage or to follow out their lineage has become impos- sible.

It must suffice to say that the varieties at present cultivated vary in the most remarkable degree in size, colour, flavour, shape, degree of fertility, season of ripen- ing, liability to disease, and constitution of plant. Some, as previously stated, vary in foliage, others produce no runners, and some vary materially in the relative develop- ment of their sexual organs, for, while in most cases the flowers are in appearance hermaphrodite, at least in struc- ture, there is a very general tendency towards a separation of the sexes, so that the flowers are males or females only as to function, even although they may be perfect in con- | struction. This tendency to dicecism is a common charac- _ teristic among Rosacex, and sometimes proves a source of disappointment to the cultivator, who finds his plants

barren where he had hoped to gather a crop. This happens in the United States more frequently than in Britain, but | when recognized can readily be obviated by planting male

varieties in the vicinity of the barren kinds. Darwin, in . alluding to the vast amount of variability in the so-called

“ fruit,”—a change effected by the art of the horticulturist

in less than three centuries,—contrasts with this variability _ the fixity and permanence of character presented by the true fruits, or pips, which are distributed over the surface of the swollen axis. The will and art of the gardener have been directed to the improvement of the one organ, while he has devoted no attention to the other, which conse- | quently remains in the same condition as in the wild plant. _ Too much stress is not, however, to be laid on this point, _ for it must be remembered that the foliage, which is not

Specially an object of the gardener’s “selection,” neverthe- _ less varies considerably.

——

593

STRAW MANUFACTURES. Straw forms the raw

material of some not unimportant industries. It serves for the thatching of roofs, for a paper-making material, for or- namenting small surfaces as a "'straw mosaic," for plaiting into door and table mats, mattresses, &c., and for weaving and plaiting into light baskets, artificial flowers, &c. These applications, however, are insignificant in comparison with the place occupied by straw as a raw material for the straw bonnets and hats worn by both sexes. Of the various materials which go to the fabrication of plaited head-gear the most important is wheaten straw. It is only in certain areas that straw suitable for making plaits is produced. The straw must have a certain length of "pipe" between the knots, must possess a clear delicate golden colour, and must not be brittle. The most valuable straw for plaits is grown in Tuscany, and from it the well-known Tuscan plaits and Leghorn hats are made. The straw of Tuscany, specially grown for plaiting, is distinguished into three qualities, Pontederas Semone being the finest, IMazzuolo the second quality, from which the bulk of the plaits are made, while from the third quality, Santa fFioro, only "Tuscan pedals" and braids are plaited. The wheat-seed for these straws is sown very thickly on comparatively elevated and arid land, and it sends up long attenuated stalks. When the grain in the ear is about half developed the straw is pulled up by the roots, dried in the sun, and subsequently spread out for several successive days to be bleached under the influence of alternate sunlight and night-dews. The pipe of the upper joint alone is selected for plaiting, the remainder of the straw being used for other purposes. These pipes are made up in small bundles, bleached in sulphur fumes in a closed chest, assorted into sizes, and so prepared for the plaiters. Straw plaiting is a domestic industry among the women and young children of Tuscany and some parts of Emilia. Tuscan plaits and hats vary enormously in quality and value; the plait of a hat of good quality may represent the work of four or five days, while hats of the highest quality may each occupy six to nine months in making. The finest work is excessively trying to the eyes of the plaiters, who can at most give to it two or three hours' labour daily. The exports of plaits and manufactured hats from Leghorn average in value £480,000 annually, about one half of the goods going to America.

The districts around Luton in Bedfordshire and the neighbouring counties have, since the beginning of the 17th century, been the British home of the straw-plait industry. The straw of certain varieties of wheat culti- vated in

that region is, in favourable seasons, possessed of a fine bright colour and due tenacity and strength. The straw is cut as in ordinary harvesting, but is allowed to dry in the sun before binding. Subsequently straws are selected from the sheaves, and of these the pipes of the two upper joints are taken for plaiting. The pipes are assorted into sizes by passing them through graduated openings in a grilled wire frame, and those of good colour are bleached by the fumes of sulphur. Spotted and dis- coloured straws are dyed either in pipe or in plait. The plaiters work up the material in a damp state, either into whole straw or split straw plaits. Split straws are pre- pared with the aid of a small instrument having a project- ing point which enters the straw pipe, and from which radiate the number of knife-edged cutters into which the straw is to be split. The plaiting of straw in the Luton district formerly gave employment to many thousands of women and young children; but now vast quantities of plaits are imported at a very cheap rate from Canton in China. The result is that, while the Luton trade is extending, the number of persons it there gives occupation is greatly diminished. In 1871 about 50,000 persons

Stress.

State of stress,

094

powerful pressure, according to the dictates of fashion. The annual output of the straw-plait industry in England is estimated to amount in value to about £4,000,000.

In the United States straw-plait work is principally

centred in the State of Massachusetts.

Many substances besides straw are worked into plaits and braids for bonnets. Among these may be noticed thin strips of willow

and cane, and the fronds of numerous palms. “Brazilian” hats made from the fronds of the palmetto palms, Sabal Palmetto and S. mexicana, are now largely made at St Albans. The famous Panama hats, fine qualities of which at one time were worth £20 to £30 each, are made from the leaves of the screw pine, Carludovica palmata. They are now manufactured at Dresden, Strasburg, and Nancy, and can be purchased at 30s, on ea

STREET, Grorcz Epmunp (1824-1881), one of the ablest architects of the present century, was born at Woodford in Essex in 1824. He obtained his archi- tectural education in the office of Mr Owen Carter at Winchester, and afterwards worked for five years as an “improver” with Sir G. G. Scott in London. At an early age Street became deeply interested in the principles of Gothic architecture, and devoted an unsparing amount of time and labour to studying and sketching the finest examples of medizval buildings in fngland and on the Continent. He was a draughtsman of a very high order ; his sketches are masterpieces of spirit and brilliant touch. In 1855 he published a very careful and well illustrated work on Zhe Brick and Marble Architecture of Northern

Jtaly, and in 1865 a book on The Gothic Architecture of

Spain, with very beautiful drawings by his own hand. Street’s personal taste led him in most cases to select for

his design the 13th-century Gothic of England or France, ;

STRENGTH OF MATERIALS

aie HE name “strength of materials” is given to that

part of the theory of engineering which deals with the nature and effects of stresses in the parts of engineering structures. Its principal object is to determine the proper size and form of pieces which have to bear given loads, or, conversely, to determine the loads which can be safely applied to pieces whose dimensions and arrangement are already given. It also treats of the relation between the applied loads and the changes of form which they cause. The subject comprises experimental investigation of the properties of materials as to strength and elasticity, and mathematical

discussion of the stresses in ties, struts, beams, shafts, and other elements of structures and machines.

2. Stress is the mutual action at the surface of contact between two bodies, or two imaginary parts of a body, whereby each of the two exerts a force upon the other. Thus, when a stone lies on the ground there is at the surface of contact a stress, one aspect of which is the force directed downwards with which the stone pushes the ground, and the other aspect is the equal force dirccted upwards with which the ground pushes the stone. A body is said to be ina state of stress when there is a stress between the two parts which lie on opposite sides of an imaginary surface of section. A pillar or block supporting a weight is ina state of stress be- cause at any cross section the part above the section pushes down against the part below, and the part below pushes up against the part above. A stretched rope is in a state of stress, because at any cross section the part on each side is pulling the part on the other side with a force in the direction of the rope's length. A plate of metal that is being cut in a shearing machine is in a state of stress, because at the plane which is about to become the plane of actual section the portion of metal on each side is tending to drag the portion on the other side with a force in that plane.

were employed in the straw industry, and in 1881 the number was only about 31,000. The plaits are sewed partly by hand and in a special sewing-machine, and the hats or bonnets are finished by stiffening with gelatin size, and blocking into shape with the aid of heat'and

his knowledge of which was very great, especially in the skilful use of rich mouldings. By far the majority of the buildings erected by him were for ecclesiastical uses, the chief being the convent of East Grinstead, the theological college at Cuddesden, and a very large number of churches, such as St Philip and St James's at Oxford, St John's at Torquay, All Saints at Clifton, St Saviour's at Hast bourne, St Margaret's at Liverpool, and St Mary Mag. dalene, Paddington. His largest works were the nave of Bristol cathedral, the choir of the cathedral of Christ Church in Dublin, and, above all, the new Courts of Justice in London, second only in architectural import- ance (during this century) to the Houses of Parliament, After a

prolonged competition Street was appointed architect to the Courts of Justice in 1868 ; but the building was not complete at the time of his death in December 1881. A great deal of somewhat unfair criti. cism has been lavished on this building; but it should be remembered that Street was much hampered both by want of a sufficiently large site and by petty economies in money insisted on by the commissioner of works. Though perhaps deficient in unity of composition, this great build- ing possesses much grace in its separate parts, and hag great refinement of detail throughout. Street was elected an associate of the Royal Academy in 1866 and R.A. in 1871; at the time of his death he was professor of history to the Royal Academy, and had just finished a very interesting course of lectures on the development of medi- eeval architecture. He was also a member of the Royal Academy of Vienna, and a knight of the Legion of Honour, His somewhat sudden death, on December 18, 1881, was hastened by over-work and professional worries connected with the erection of the law courts. He was buried in the nave of Westminster Abbey, where his grave is marked by a handsome sepulchral brass designed by Mr Bodley. STREETS. See Roans.

8. In a solid body which is in a state of stress the direction of Yom stress at an imaginary surface of division may be normal, oblique, and ta. or tangential to the surface. When oblique it is often con- gential veniently treated as consisting of a normal and a tangential com- she, ponent. Normal stress may be either push (compressive stress) of pull (tensile stress). Stress which is tangential to the surface is called shearing stress. Oblique stress may be regarded as so much push or pull along with so much shearing stress. The amount of stress per unit of surface is called the intensity of stress, Stress is said to be uniformly distributed over a surface when each fraction of the area of surface bears a corresponding fraction of the whole stress. Ifa stress Pis uniformly distributed over a plane surface of area 8, the intensity is P/S. If the stress is not uniformly distrib- uted, the intensity at any point is 8P/8S, where dP is the amount of stress on an indefinitely small area 88 at the point considered.

For practical purposes intensity of stress is usually ex ressed in tons weight per square inch, pounds weight per square inch, or kilo- grammes weight per square millimetre or per square centimetre,’ –

4. The simplest possible state of stress is that of a short pillar Simple or block compressed. by opposite forces applied at its ends, or that long | of a stretched rope or other tie. In these cascs the stress is wholly tudinal | in one direction, that of the length. These states may be distin- sits. guished as simple longitudinal push and simple longitudinal pull.

In them there is no stress on planes parallel to the direction of the applied forces.

A more complex state of stress occurs if the block is compressed Com or cxtended by forces applicd to a pair of opposite sides, as well as pout by forces applied to its ends,—that is to say, if two simple longi- stress | tudinal stresses in different directions act together. A still more complex state occurs if a third stress be applied to the remaining pair of sides. It may be shown that any state of stress which can possibly exist at any point of a body may be produced by the joint action of three simple pull or push stresses in three suitably chosen directions at right angles to cach othcr.2 These three are

1 One ton per sq. in.=2240 ib per sq, in.=1°511 kilos. per sq. mm. 2 See Evasticiry, vol. vii. p. 819.

_ along another it is less, than in any other direction.

called principal stresses, and their directions are called the axes of principal stress. These axes have the important property that the intensity of stress along one of them is greater, and cee

These are called respectively the axes of greatest and qT

— least principal stress.

5. Returning uow to the case of a single simple longitudinal stress, let AB (fig. 1) be a portion of a tie or a strut which is being pulled or pushed in the direction of the axis AB with a total stress P. On any plane CD taken at right angles to the axis_we have a normal pull or push of intensity p=P/S, a?

being the area of the normal cross-section. Ona plane EF whose normal is inclined to the axis at an anglo we have a stress still in the direction of the axis, and i therefore oblique to the plane EF, of intensity P/S′, i where 9′ is the area of the surface EF, or S/cosé. The 4 whole stress P on EF may be resolved into two com- Fig. 1 ponents, one normal to EF, and the other a shearing oi stress tangential to EF. The normal component (Pp, fig. 2) is Pcos@; the tangential component (P;) is Psin@. Hence the inten- sity of normal pull or push on EF, or pn, is pcos? 6, and the intensity of shearing stress EF, or gy, is psin@cosé. This expression makes p, a maximum when @=45°: p planes inclined at 45° to the axis are called planes of maximum shearing stress; the intensity of shearing stress on them is $p. P 6. Shearing stress in one direction is necessarily ac- ” companied by an equal intensity of shearing stress in Fie 2 another direction at right angles to the first. To provo * this it is sufficient to consider the equilibrium of an indefinitely small cube (fig. 8), with one pair of sides parallel to the direc- tion of the shearing stress P;. This stress, act- ing ou two opposite sides, produces a couple which tends to rotate the cube. No arrange- ment of normal stresses on any of the three pairs of sides of the cube can balance this couple ; that ean be done only by a shearing stress Q; whose direction is at right angles to the first stress P, and to the surface on which P; acts, and whose intensity is the same as that of P, The shearing stresses P; and Q; may exist alone, or Fig. 3.

as components of oblique stress.

7. lf they exist alone, the material is said to be in a state of simple shearing stress. This state of stress may be otherwise described

| by reference to the stresses on diagonal planes of the cube ABCD. | Thus P; and Q; produce a nornial stress R on a diagonal plane,

and the equilibrium of

: : A Cy the triangular prism * P.2%

(fig. 4) requires that R=Pr/2. But Racts % . _on a surface which is / greater than each of _ the sides in the ratio R of4/2:1. The inten- Pe= Qe D sity of normal stress Fig, 4 on the diagonal plane aes AC is therefore the same as

the intensity of shearing stress on AB or BC. The same considerations apply to the other diagonal plane BD at right angles to AC, with this difference, that the stress on it 1s normal pull instead of push. Hence we may regard a state of simple shearing stress as compounded of two simple longitudinal stresses, one of push and one of pull, at right angles to each other, of equal intensity, and inclined at 45° to the direction of the shcar- | Ing stress.

8. StRAIN is the change of shape produced by stress. If the stress is a simple longitudinal pull, the strain consists of lengthen- ing in the direction of the pull, accompanied by contraction in

both directions at right angles to the pull. If the stress is a simple

_ push, the strain consists of shortening in the direction of the push

and expansion in both directions at right angles to that; the stress and the strain are then exactly the reverse of what they are in the case of simple pull. If the stress is one of simple shearing, the strain consists of a distortion such as would be produced by the sliding of layers in the direction of the shearing stresses. | A material is clastic with regard to any applied stress if the strain disappears when the stress is removed. Strain which per- _ sists after the stress that produced it is removed is called perma- _ nent set. For brevity, it is convenient to speak of strain which , disappears when the stress is removed as elastic strain.

| 9 Actual materials are generally very perfectly elastic with

) Yegard to small stresses, and very imperfectly elastic with regard

to great stresses. If the applied stress is less than a certain limit, the strain is in general small in amount, and disappears wholly or almost wholly when the stress is removed. If the applied stress exceeds this limit, the strain is, in general, much greater than before, and the principal part of it is found, when the stress

is removed, to consist of permanent set. The limits of stress within which strain is wholly or almost wholly elastic are called limits of elasticity.

For any particular mode of stress the limit of elasticity is much more sharply defined in some materials than in others. When well defined it may readily be recognized in the testing of a sample from the fact that after the stress exceeds the limit of elasticity the strain begins to-increase in a much more rapid ratio to the stress than before. This characteristic goes along with the one already mentioned, that up to the limit the strain is wholly or almost wholly elastie.

10. Within the limits of elasticity the strain produced by a Hooke's stress of any one kind is proportional to the stress producing it. law, This is Hooke's law, enunciated by him in 1676.

In applying Hooke's law to the case of simple longitudinal stress,

-—such as the case of a bar stretched by simple longitudinal pull,— we may measure the state of strain by the change of length per unit of original length which the bar undergoes when stressed. Let the original length be 7, and let the whole change of length be 37 when a stress is applied whose intensity p is within the elastic limit. Then the strain is measured by 8//l, and this by Hooke's law is proportional to y, This may be written Se isia: HE,

where E is a constant for the particular material considered. The same value of E applies to push and to pull, these modes of stress being essentially continuous, and differing only in sign.

11. This constant E is called the modulus of longitudinal Young's extensibility, or Young's modulus. Its value, which is expressed modulus, in the same units as are used to express intensity of stress, may be measured directly by exposing a long sample of the material to longitudinal pull and noting the extension, or indirectly by measuring the flexure of a loaded beam of the material, or by ex- periments on the frequency of vibrations. It is frequently spoken of by engineers simply as the modulus of elasticity, but this name is too general, as there are other moduluses applicable to other modes of stress. Since E=p//8/, the modulus may be defined as the ratio of the intensity of stress p to the longitudinal strain 57/2.

12. In the case of simple shearing stress, the strain may be Modulus measured by the angle by which cach of the four originally right of angles in the square prism of fig. 3 is altered by the distortion of rigidity, the prism. Let this angle be ¢ in radians; then by Hooke's law p/p=C, where p is the intensity of shearing stress and C is a con- stant which measures the rigidity of the material. C is called the modulus of rigidity, and is usually determined by experiments on torsion,

13. When three simple stresses of equal intensity y and of the Modulus same sign (all pulls or all pushes) are applied in three directions, of eubic the material (provided it be isotropic, that is to say, provided its compres- properties are the same in all directions) suffers change of volume sibility. only, without distortion of form. Ifthe volume is V and the chango of volume 3YV, the ratio of the stress p to the strain 5V/V is called the modulus of cubie compressibility, and will be denoted by K.

The state of stress here considered is the only one possible in a fluid at rest. The intensity of stress is equal.in all directions.

14. Of these three moduluses the one of most importance in engineering applications is Young's modulus E. When a simple longitudinal pull or push of intensity p is applied to a piece, the longitudinal strain of extension or compression is p/E. This is accompanied by a lateral contraction or expansion, in each trans- verse direction, whose amount may be written »/oE, where o is the ratio of longitudinal to lateral strain. It is shown in the article

Exasriorry, § 47, that E= °C 2(3K + C)

a+ 0 M19″ "3K-90 ;

15. Beyond the limits of elasticity the relation of strain to stress Plastic becomes very indefinite. Materials then exhibit, to a greater or Strain. less degree, the property of plasticity. The strain is much affected by the length of time during which the stress has been in opera- tion, and reaches its maximum, for any assigned stress, only after a long (probably an indefinitely long) time. Finally, when the stress is sufficiently increased, the ratio of the increment of strain to the increment of stress becomes

indefinitely great if time is given for the stress to take effect. In other words, the substance then assumes what may be called a completely plastic state ; it flows under the applied stress like a viscous liquid.

16. The ultimate strength of a material with regard to any stated Ulti- mode of stress is the stress required to produce rupture. In reckon- mate ing ultimate strength, however, engineers take, not the actual in- strength, tensity of stress at which rupture occurs, but the value which this intensity would have reached had Ss og ensued without previous alteration of shape. Thus, if a bar whose original cross-section is 2 square inches breaks under a uniformly distributed pull of 60 tons, the ultimate tensile strength of the material is reckoned to be 30 tons per square inch, although theactual intensity of stress which produced rupture may have been much greater than this, owing to the con- traction of the section previous to fracture. The convenience of this usage will be obvious from an example. Suppose that a piece

Factor of

safety.

of material of the same quality be used in a structure under con- ditions which cause it to bear a simple pull of 6 tons per square inch ; we conclude at once that the actual load is one-fifth of that which would cause rupture, irrespective of the extent to which the material might contract in section if overstrained. The stresses which occur in engineering practice are, or ought to be, in all cases within the limits of elasticity, and within these limits the change of cross-section caused by longitudinal pull or push isso small that it may be neglected in reckoning the intensity of stress.

Ultimate tensile strength and ultimate shearing strength are well defined, since these modes of stress (simple pull and simple shearing stress) lead to distinct fracture if the stress is sufficiently increased. Under compression some materials yield so continu- ously that their ultimate strength to resist compression can scarcely be specified ; others show so distinct a fracture by crushing (§ 43 below) that their compressive strength may be determined

with some precision. In what follows, the three kinds of ultimate strength will be designated by the symbols f;, fs, and /., for tension, shearing, and crushing respectively.

Some of the materials used in engineering, notably timber and wrought-iron, are so far from being isotropic that their strength is widely different for stresses in different directions. In the case of wrought-iron the process of rolling develops a fibrous structure on account of the presence of streaks of slag which become inter- spersed with the metal in puddling ; and the tensile strength of a rolled plate is found to be considerably greater in the direction of rolling than across the plate. Steel plates, being rolled from a nearly homogeneous ingot, have nearly the same strength in both directions.

17. In applying a knowledge of the ultimate strength of materials to determine the proper sizes of parts in an engineering structure, these parts are proportioned so that the greatest intensity of stress (which for brevity is called the working stress) will be only a cer- ultimate strength

working stress is called the factor of safety.! The choice of a factor of safety depends on many cousiderations, such as the probable accuracy of

tain fraction of the ultimate strength. The ratio

the theory on which the calculation of working stress has beep based; the uniformity of the material dealt with, and the extent to which its strength may be expected to conform to the assumed value or to the values determined ‘by experiments on samples; the deviations from the specified dimensions which may be caused by bad workmanship ; the probable accuracy in the estimation of loads ; the extent to which the materials will deteriorate in time, The factor is rarely less than 3, is very commonly 4 or 5, and ig sometimes as much as 12, or even more.

The ultimate strength for any one mode of stress, such as simple pull, has been found to depend on the time rate at which stress is applied ; this will be noticed more fully later (§§ 28-34). It has also been found to depend very greatly on the extcnt and frequency of variation in the applied stress. A

stress considerably Jess than the normal ultimate strength will suffice to break a piece when it is frequently applied aud removed; a much smaller stress will cause rupture if its sign is frequently reversed ; and hence in a structure which has to bear what is called live load the permis. sible intensity of stress is less than in a structure which has to bear only load and also on its frequency of variation (8§ 45, 46 below).

18. From an engineering point of view, the structural merit of a material, especially when live loads and possible shocks have to be sustained, depends not only on the ultimate strength but also on the extent to which the material will bear deformation without rupture. This characteristic is shown in tests made to determine tensile strength by the amount of ultimate elongation, and also by the contraction of the cross-section which occurs through the flow of the metal before rupture. It is often tested in other wa' such as by bending and unbending bars in a circle of specified radius, or by examining the effect of repeated blows. Tests by impact are generally made by causing a weight to fall through a regulated distance on a piece of the material supported as a beam.

19. Ordinary tests of strength are made by submitting the piece Tests of | Testing strength, |

to direct pull, direct compression, bending, or torsion. machines are frequently arranged so that they may apply any of these four modes of stress ; tests by direct tension are the most common,

———— EER ee t] hae Pe 7: ot

<

eeemae" neemaend Lo

CATT Se re

fs AY

seseaeeee -°

Fig. 5.

.

and next to them come tests by bending. When the samples to be tested for tensile strength are mere wires, the stress may be applied directly by weights ; for pieces of larger section some mechanical multiplication of force becomes necessary. Owing to the plasticity of the materials to be tested, the applied loads must be able to follow considerable change of form in the i : thus in test- ing the tensile strength of wrought-iron or steel provision must be made for taking up the large extension of length which occurs before fracture. In most modern forms of large testing machines the loads are applied by means of hydraulic pressure acting on a piston or plunger to which one end of the specimen is secured, and the stress is measured by connecting the other end to a lever or system of levers provided with adjustable weights. In small

1 French engineers usually estimate the permissible working stress as a certain fraction of the elastic strength (that is, of the stress which reaches the

limit ba elasticity), instead of estimating it as a certain fraction of the ultimate strength.

Scale of Feet

ot

Fig. 6.

Wicksteed’s Single-Lever Testing Machine.

machines, and also in some large ones, the stress is applied by screw gearing instead of by hydraulic pressure. Springs are sometimes used instead of weights to measure the stress, and another plan 1s to make one end of the specimen act on a diaphragm forming part of a hydrostatic pressure-gauge (§ 23 below).

20. Figs. 5 and 6 show an excellent form of single-lever testing Single

machine designed by Mr J. H. Wicksteed,? in which the stress is lever applied by an hydraulic plunger and é : at steelyard and a movable weight. The illustration shows ae 30-ton machine, but machines of similar design have been built to exert a force of 100 tons or more. AA is the lever, on which there is a graduated scale. The stress on the test-plece T 1s measured by a weight W of 1 ton (with an attached vermer scale), which is moved along the lever by a screw-shaft 8; this screw' shaft is driven by a belt from a parallel shaft R, which takes jceminahdmendimpensieneseimmnt Minedamesere arin

2 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., August 1882.

is measured by a lever or testité

)

- axis of the fulcrum, jou

|] |

- the lever.

|

tion in fig. 5, exerts its thrust.

STRENGTH OF MATERIALS

through bevel-wheels and a Hooke's joint in the from the hand-wheel H. (The Hooke's nt in the shaft R is shown in a separate sketch above the lever in fig. 6.) The holder for the upper end of the sample hangs from a knife-edge three inches from the fulcrum of The lower holder is jointed to a crosshead C, which is connected by two vertical screws to a lower cross-

its motion,

ead B, upon which the hydraulic plunger P, shown in sec-

G is a counterpoise which ushes up the plunger, when the water is allowed to escape. Hydraulic pressure may be applied to P by pumps or by an accumulator. In the present instance it is applicd by means of an auxiliary plunger Q, which aera by screw gearing into an auxiliary cy- tiller. bis ea by a belt on the pulley D. This puts stress on the specimen, and the weight W is then run out along the lever so that the lever is just kept floating between the stops E, E. Before the test-piece is put in, the distance between the holders is regulated by means of the screws con- necting the upper and lower cross- heads C and B, these screws being turned by a handle applied at F. Fig. 7 is a section of one of the holders, showing how the test-piece T is gripped by serrated wedges. The knife-edges are made long enough to prevent the load on them ever exceeding 5 tons to the linear inch.

91. Another example of the single-lever type is the Werder testing machine, much used on the continent of Europe. In it the specimen is horizontal ; one end is fixed, tho other is at- tached to the short vertical arm of a bell-crank lever, whose ful- crum is pushed out horizontally by an hydraulic ram.t In

Fig. 7.

itij)- many other testing machines a system of two, three, or more

jis. was that of Major

|

| i l i

i

levers is employed to reduce the force between the specimen and the measuring weight. Probably the earliest machine of this class ade,? in which one end of the specimen was held in a fixed support, and the stretch was taken up by screwing up the fulcrum plate of one of the levers. In most multiple-lever machines, however, the fulcrums are fixed, and the stress is applied to one end of the specimen by hydraulic power or by screw gearing, which of course takes up the stretch, as in the single-lever machines already described. Mr Kirkaldy, who was one of the earliest as well as one of the

most assiduous workers in this field, applies in his 1,000,000 tb machine a horizontal hydraulic. press directly to one end of the horizontal test-piece. The other end of the piece is connected to the short vertical arm of a bell-crank lever; the long arm of this lever is horizontal, and is connected to a second lever to which weights are applied. In some of Messrs Fairbanks's machines the multiple-lever system is carried so far that the point of application of the weight moves 24,000 times as far as the som of attachment to the test-piece. The same makers have emp oyed a plan of adjusting automatically the position of the measuring weight, by making the scale lever complete an electric circuit when it rises or falls so that it starts an electric engine which runs the weight out orin.? Generally the measuring weight is adjusted by hand. In some, chiefly small, machines, the weight adjusts itself by means of another device. It is fixed at oue point of a lever which is arranged as a pendulum, so that, when the test-piece is pulled by force applied at the other end, the pendulum lever is de- flected from its originally vertical position and the weight acts with increasing leverage.

Multiple-lever machines have the advantage that the measuring weight is reduced to a conveniently small value, and that it can be easily varied to suit test-pieces of different strengths. On tho other hand, their multiplicity of joints makes the leverage some- what uncertain and increases friction. Another drawback is the inertia of the working parts. It is impossible to avoid oscilla- tions of the levers ; and, to prevent them from producing important errors in the recorded stress, the inertia of the oscillating system should be minimized. In a testing machine in which the specimen is directly loaded the inertia is simply that of the suspended weight M. In a lever machine, which multiplies the weight " times, the weight applied to the lever is reduced to M/n, but its inertia, when iors to the test-piece, is(M/n) x or Mn. The inertia which is effective for producing oscillation is thus increased m times, so far as the weight alone is concerned, and this detri- mental effect of leverage is increased by the inertia of the levers Eaeenelres. The effect will be more serious the greater is the everage 1.

22. Whitworth and others employ machines in which one end of the specimen is held in a fixed support; an hydraulic press acts ieee ila lat ila AT a

1 Maschine zum Priifen d. Festigkeit d. Materialen, &c., Munich, 1882.

2 Report of Experiments on Metals for Cannon, Philadelphia, 1856 ; also Ander- son's Strength of Materials, p. 15. _ 3 Abbott, On Testing Machines, New York, 1884, or Van Nostrand's Engineer- tng Mag., 1884.

O07

on the other end, and the stress is calculated from the pressure of fluid in the press, this being observed by a pressure-gauge. Machines of this class are open to the obvious objection that the friction of the hydraulic plunger causes a large and very uncertain difference between the force exerted by the fluid on the plunger and the force exerted by the plunger on the specimen. It appears, however, that in the ordinary conditions of packing the friction is very nearly proportional to the fluid pressure, and its effect may therefore be allowed for with some exactness. The method is not to be recommended for work requiring precision, unless the plunger be kept in constant rotation on its own axis during the test, in which case the effects of friction are almost entirely eliminated.

23. In another important class of testing machines the stress Dia- (applied as before to one end of the piece, by gearing or by phragm

hydraulic pressure) is measured by con- necting the other end to a flexible dia- phragm, on which a liquid acts whose eee is deter- mined by a gauge. Fig. 8 shows : sone ple machine of this class (used in 1873 for testing wire by Sir W. Thomson and the late Prof. F. Jenkin). The wire is stretched by means of a screw at the top, and pulls up the lower side of a hydrostatic bellows ; water from the bel- lows rises in the gauge-tube G, and its height measures the stress. Fig. 9 is Thomasset's testing machine, in which one end of the specimen is pulled by an hydraulic press A. The other end acts through a bell-crank lever B on a horizontal diaphragm C, consist-

Fie. 8,—Hydraulic Machine for Testing Wire.

ing of a metallic plate and a flexible ring of india-rubber. The pressure on the diaphragm causes a column of mer- cury to rise in the gauge-tube D.

The same principle is made use of in the testing machines of Chauvin and Marin-

3

L Uy

Fia. 9.—Thomasset's Testing Machine.

Darbel, Maillard,* and Bailey.

Emery. This is a horizontal machine, taking specimens of any length up to 30 feet, and exerting a pull of 860 tons or a push of 480 tons by an hydraulic press at one end. The stress is taken at the other end by a group of four large vertical diaphragm presses, which communicate by small tubes with four similar small dia- phragm presses in the scale case. The pressure of these acts on a system of levers which terminates in the scale beam. The joints and bearings of all the levers are made frictionless by using flexible steel connecting plates instead of knife-edges. The total multipli- cation at the end of the scale beam is 420,000.°

24. The results of tests are very commonly exhibited by means Stress- or diagrams showing the relation of strain

A few typical diagrams for wrought-iron and diagrams.

of stress-strain diagrams,

strain to stress. 1 steel in tension are given in fig. 10, the data for which are taken

from tests of long rods by Mr Kirkaldy.® Up to the elastic limit these diagrams show sensibly the same rate of extension for all the materials to which they refer. Soon after the limit of elasticity is passed, a point, which has been called by Prof. Kennedy the yield- point, is reached, which is marked by a very sudden extension of

4 For descriptions of several of these machines, see a paper by MM. Denizeau

and Lechien, Mémorial de U Artillerie et de la Marine, 1883. 5 See Report of the U.S. Board appointed to test Iron, Steel, and other Metals, 2 vols., 1881. For full details of the Emery machine, see Report of the U.S. Chief

of Ordnance, 1883, appendix 24. ’ ; : 6 Experiments on the ‘Mechanical Properties of Steel by a Committee of Civil

Engineers, London, 1868 and 1870.

It has found its most important ap- Water- plication in the remarkable testing machine of Watertown arsenal, town built in 1879 by the U.S. Government to the designs of Mr A. H. machine.

Auto- graphic re- corders,

the point of rupture the metal again begins to draw out rapidly.

PER SQUARE

TONS

STRESS.

EXTENSION, PER CENT.

Fig. 10,

When this stage is reached rupture will occur through the flow of the metal, even if the load be somewhat decreased. The diagram may in this way be made to come back towards the line of no load, by withdrawing a part of the load as the end of the test is

approached (§ 29 below).

25. Fig. 11 is a stress-strain diagram for cast-iron in extension The

and compression, taken from Hodgkinson’s experiments.1 extension was mea- – ;

sured on a rod 50 feet long ; the com- pression was also measured on a long rod, which was pre- vented from buckl- ing by being sup- ported in a trough with artitions, The full line gives the strain produced by loading ; it is continuous through the origin, showing that Young’s mod- ulus is the same for pull and push. (Similar experi- ments on wrought- iron and steel in extension and com- pression have given ; the same result.) wigs

The broken line shows the set produced by each load. Hodgkinson found that some set could be detected after even the smallest loads had been applied. This is probably due to the existence of initial internal stress in the metal, produced by unequally rapid cooling in different portions of the cast bar. ‘A second loading of the same piece showed a much closer approach to perfect elasticity. The elastic limit is, at the best, ill defined ; but by the time the ultimate load is reached the set has become a more considerable part of the whole strain. The pull curves in the diagram extend to the point of rupture; the compression curves are drawn only up to a stage at which the bar buckled (between the partitions) so much as to affect the results.

26. Testing machines are now frequently fitted with autographic appliances for drawing strain diagrams. When the load is meas- ured by a weight travelling on a steelyard, the diagram may be drawn by connecting the weight with a drum by means of a wire or cord, so that the drum is made to revolve through angles proportional to the travel of the weight.

fg ; tiie of the Commissioners on the Application of Iron to Railway Structures,

STRENGTH OF

the specimen. After this the extension becomes less rapid; then it continues at a fairly regular and gradually increasing rate; near

At the same time

MATERIALS

another wire, fastened to a clip near one end of the specimen, and passing over a pulley near the other end, draws a pencil through distances proportional to the strain, and so traces a diagram of stress and strain on a sheet of paper stretched round the drum, Apparatus of this kind has been used by Messrs Fairbanks, Unwin, Aspinall, and others.2 In Mr Wicksteed's autographic recorder the stress is determined by reference, not to the load on the lever, but to the pressure in the hydraulic cylinder by which stregg is applied. The main cylinder is in communication with a small auxiliary hydraulic cylinder, the plunger of which is kept rotati to avoid friction at its packing. This pene abuts against a spring, so that the distance through which it is pushed out varies with the pressure in the main cylinder. A drum covered with paper moves with the plunger under a fixed pencil, and is algo caused to rotate by a wire from the specimen through distances propor. tional to the strain. The scale of loads is calibrated by occasional reference to the weighted lever.? In Prof. Kennedy's machine autographic diagrams are drawn by applying the stress to the test. piece through an clastic master-bar of larger section. The master- bar is never strained beyond its elastic limit, and within that limit its extension furnishes an accurate measure of the stress; this gives motion to a pencil, which writes on a paper moved by the extension of the test-piece.4 In Prof. Thurston's pendulum machine for — torsion tests, a cam attached to the pendulum moves a panel ; through distances proportional to the stress, while a paper drum attached to the other end of the test-piece turns under the pencil through distances proportional to the angle of twist.®

27. The elastic extension or compression of a test-piece of ordinary Measyy, dimensions is so small as to require for its measurement refined me methods which are seldom employed in everyday practical testing, ¢ Measurements of this class must be made simultaneously on oppo strajp, site sides of the test-piece, to guard against error through the bend- ing of the piece. Microscopes and also various forms of micro- meter calipers are used for the purpose. A method capable of great delicacy, which has been used by Bauschinger' and others, is to measure the strain by light reflected from a pair of small mirrors attached to rollers which turn as the specimen extends or contracts. With apparatus of this kind it may be shown that iron, steel, or other materials with a well-defined yield-point begin to show a marked defect of elasticity at a somewhat lower stress, The true elastic limit

comes considerably earlier in the test than the point which usually passes by that name.8

28. In testing a plastic material such as wrought-iron or mild Viscosity, | steel it is found that the behaviour of the metal depends very materially on the time rate at which stress is applied. When once the elastic limit is passed the full strain corresponding to a given load is reached only after a perceptible time, sometimes even a long time. If the load be increased to a value exceeding the elastic limit, and then kept constant, the metal will be seen to draw out (if the stress be one of pull), at first om and then more slowly. When the applied load is considerab y less than the — ultimate strength of the piece (as tested in the ordinary way by steady increment of load), it appears that this process of slow extension comes at last to an end. On the other hand, when the M4 gee load is nearly equal to the ultimate strength, the flow of the metal continues until rupture occurs. Then, as in the former case, extension goes on at first quickly, then slowly, but, finally, instead of approaching an asymptotic limit, it quickens again as the piece approaches rupture. The same phenomena are observed in the beniling of timber and other materials when in the form of beams. If, instead of being subjected to a constant load, a test- piece is set in a constant condition of strain, it is found that the stress required to maintain this constant strain gradually decreases.

29. The gradual flow which goes on under constant stress— approaching a limit if the stress is moderate in amount, and con- tinuing without limit if the stress is sufficiently great—will still go on ata diminished rate if the amount of stress be reduced. _ Thus, in the testing of soft iron or mild steel by a machine in which the stress is applied by hydraulic power, a stage is reached soon after the limit of elasticity is passed at which the metal begins to flow with great rapidity. The pumps often do not keep pace with this, and the result is that, if the lever is to be kept floating, the weight on it must be run back. Under this reduced stress the

2 For descriptions of these and other types of autographic recorder, see a paper by Prof. Unwin, ‘‘On the Employment of Autographic Records in Testing Materials,” Jour. Soc. Arts, Feb., 1886; also Prof. Kennedy’s comprehensive paper, ‘‘On the Use and Equipment of Engineering

Laboratories,” Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., 1886, which contains much valuable information on the whole sub- ject of testing and testing machines. 3 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1886. An interesting feature of this apparatus is a device for preventing error in the diagram through motion of the test-piece a8 & whole. 4 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng.,1886; also Min. Proc. Inst, C.E., vol. Ixxxviii., 1886, pl.1. 5 Thurston’s Materials of Engineering, part ii. For accounts of work — with this machine, see Zrans. Amer. Soc. Civ. Eng., from 1876; also, Report 0 the American Board, cited above. : 6 See a paper by Prof. Unwin, Phil. Mag., March, 1887, : 7 Mitth. aus dem Mech.-Tech. Lab. in Miinchen, Heft 5, ,~ 8 Cf. Bauschinger, loc. cit.; Kennedy, loc. cit.; Jenny Festigkeits Versuché, Vienna, 1878,

flow continues, more slowly than before, until presently the pumps recover their lost ground and the increase of stress is resumed. Again, near the point of rupture, the flow again be- comes specially rapid ; the weight on the lever has again to be run back, and the specimen finally breaks under a diminished load. These features are well shown by fig. 12, which is copied from ie a aphic diagram of a test ¥ of anil steel.} ud

30. But it is not only through what we may call the viscosity of matcrials that the time rate of load- ing affects their behaviour under test. In iron and steel, and probably in some other metals, time has an- other effect of a very re- markable kind. Let the test be carried to any point a (fig. 13) pe the original limit of elasticity. Let the load then) be removed ; during the first stages of this removal the matcrial

continues to stretch slightly, as has been explained above. Let

the load then he at once replaced and loading continued. It will

then be found that there is a new yield-point 6 at or near the value

of the load formerly reached ; up to this point there is little other ‘than clastic strain. 30-— The full line bc in fig. 13 shows the sub- sequent behaviour of the piece. But now let the experiment be repeated on another sample, with this dif- ference, that an inter- val of time, of a few hours or more, is al- lowed to elapse after the load is removed and before it is re- placed. It will then be found that a process of hardening has been going on

during this ° 5 interval of rest; for, when the loading is ‘eontinued, the new – yield-point appears, Oo 5 0 JS a> te Ts not at > as formerly, Extension, Per Cent. Extension. Per Cent but at a higher load d. Fig. 13 Fig. 14 Other evidence that a — ong change has taken place is afforded by the fact that the ultimate a) is reduced and the ultimate strength is increased (e,

g. 18).

81. A similar and even more marked hardening occurs when a load (exceeding the origina elastic limit), instead of being removed and replaced, is kept on for a sufficient length of time without change. When loading is resumed a new yield-point 1s found only after a considerable addition has been made to ‘the load. The result is, as in the former case, to give greater ‘ultimate Strength and less ultimate elongation, Fig. 14 exhibits two ee ments of this kind, made with annealed iron wire. A load of 234 tons per square inch was reached in both cases; ab ‘shows the result of continuing to load after an interval of five jminutes, and acd after an interval of 454 hours, the stress of 234 tons being maintained during the interval in both cases. 32. It must not be supposed that in a material hardened by strain the elasticity is perfect up to the yield-points which are : shown. in fig. 13 at 6 and dor in fig. 14atc. In experiments made for this article, it has been found that, after a piece of very soft /}ron wire has been hardened (as in fig. 14) by the continued appli-

ation of a load which had caused stretching, if a small addition /be made to the load (bringing it to a value between a and the a ew yield-point), although there is at first no apparent drawing out, ‘. if time be given the wire begins again to draw, and |a large amount of stretching at an increased pace may ensue. In this way wires have been broken with loads considerably short of

EXTENSION

Fig. 12.—Autographie Diagram for a test of mild steel.

re re

STRESS tN TONS PER SQ INCH.

| , The increase of strain without increase of stress, which goes on without mit when a test-piece under tension approaches rupture, is a special case of the general phenomenon of “ flow of solids,” which has been exhibited, chiefly for Compressive stresses, in a series of beautiful experiments by Tresca (Mémoires sur coulement des Corps Solides, also Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1867 and 1878).

those which would have been required had the process of loading, from the point a onward, been continued at a moderately rapid rate. A slow process of viscous deformation may in fact be occur- ring at the same time that the metal shows a quasi-elasticity with respect to rapid alteration of stress. Bauschinger’s micrometric experiments have shown that after a piece has been hardened by rest the true limit of elasticity, or the point at which Hooke’s law begins to fail, comes far short of the yield-point. He has also shown that a long interval of rest after the set has taken place produces a slow rise of the true limit of elasticity,? apparently a mie rise than the lapse of time causes in the yield-point itself.

33. In the testing of iron and steel the time during which any state of (pull) stress (exceeding the original elastic limit) exists affects the result in two somewhat antagonistic ways. It augments exten- sion, by giving the metal leisure to flow. This may be called the viscous effect. But, on the other hand, it reduces the amount of extension which subsequent greater loads will cause, and it increases the amount of load required for rupture in the way which has just been described. This may be called the hardening effect. When a piece is broken by continuous gradual increment of load, these two effects are occurring at all stages of the test. If the viscous effect existed alone, or if the hardening effect were small, the material would show to greater advantage as regards elongation, and to less advantage as regards ultimate strength, the more slowly the load were applied. ‘Tin and lead may be cited as mate- rials for which this is the case. But when the hardening effect is relatively great, as in iron and steel, the material shows less

elongation and a higher breaking strength the more slowly it is tested. An excellent illustration of this is given by the following experiment of Mr Bottomley. Pieces of iron wire, annealed and of exceptionally soft quality, when loaded at the rate of 1 Ib in 5 minutes, broke with 443 fb and stretched 27 per cent. of their original length. Other picces of the same wire, loaded at the rate of 1 Tb in 24 hours, broke with 47 tb and stretehed less than 7 per cent.? Again, it has been found that an excessively rapid application of stress (by the explosion of gun-cotton) makes soft steel stretch twice as much as in ordinary testing.4 The case is very different, however, if the material has been previously hard- ened by strain. It does not appear that such varia- tions in the rate of loading as are liable to occur in practical tests of iron or steel have much influence on the extension or thestrength, great as the effects of time are when the metal is loaded either much more slowly or mueh more quickly. In fig. 15 the results are shown of tests of two similar pieces of soft iron wire, one loaded to rupture in 4 – minutes and the other at a rate about 5000 times 5 10 is 20. 2s 30 slower. e

34. The hard- EXTENSION, PER CENT. ening effect whieh Fig. 15. intervals of rest from load or of constant load produce, once the primitive elastic limit is passed, has been examined by Beardsley,> Thurston,® Bauschinger,® Ewing,’ and others. The effect of even a few minutes’ pause is perceptible, an hour or two of constant stress has a very marked influence, and after 24 hours or so there appears to be little further hardening. The Ameriean Board found that iron bars, previously stressed to about 50,000 fb per square inch, gained in strength, by intervals of rest from stress, to the extent of about 9 per cent. in one day, 16 per cent. in three days, and 18 per cent. in six months.§

35. It may be concluded that, when a piece of metal has in any way received a permanent set by stress exceeding its limits of

2 Mitth. aus dem Mech.-Tech. Lab. in Miinchen, Heft 13, 1886.

3 Proc, Roy. Soc., 1879, p. 221. See also Exasticity, § 80.

4 See remarks by Col. Maitland, Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., vol. Ixxvi. p. 104, 5 See Report of the U.S. Board on Tests of Metals, vol. i. section 4,

§ Loc. cit.

7 Proc. Roy, Soc., June 1870. The autographic diagrams given in figs. 13 and 14 are taken from these tests. 8 Loc. cit., p. 111.

oe

TONS PER SQUARE INCH.

STRESS,

Anneal- ing.

Harden- ing and temper- ing of steel,

Contrac- tion of section at rup- ture.

600

elasticity, it is hardened, and (in some cases at least) its physical properties go on slowly changing for days or even months. Instances of the hardening effect of permanent set occur when plates or bars are rolled cold, hammered cold, or bent cold, or when wire is drawn. When a hole is punched in a plate the material contiguous to the hole is severely distorted by shear, and is so much hardened in consequence that when a strip containing the punched hole is broken by tensile stress the hardened portion, being unable to cxtend so much as the rest, receives an undue proportion of the stress, and the strip breaks with a smaller load than it would have borne had the stress been uniformly distributed. This bad effect of punching is especially noticeable in thick plates of mild steel. It disappears when a narrow ring of material surrounding the hole is removed by means of a rimer, so that the material that is left is homogeneous. Another remarkable instance of the same kind of action is seen when a mild-steel plate which is to be tested by bending has a piece cut from its edge by a shearing machine. The result of the shear is that the metal close to the edge is hardened, and, when the plate is bent, this Liesl being unable to stretch like the rest, starts a crack or tear which quickly spreads across the plate on account of the fact that in the metal at the end of the crack there is an enormously high local intensity of stress

(see ELAsTiIcity, § 72). By the simple expedient of planing off the hardened edge before bending the plate homogeneity is restored, and the plate will then bend with- out damage.

36. The hardening effect of strain is removed by the process of annealing, thatis, by heating to redness and cooling slowly. In iron, very mild steel, and most other metals the rate of cooling is a matter of indifference; but in steel that contains more than about 0°2 per cent. of carbon another kind of hardening is produced if the metal, after being heated to redness, is cooled suddenly. When the hones of carbon is considerably greater than this, steel may

e rendered excessively hard and brittle (‘‘ glass-hard ”) by sudden cooling from a red heat. Further, by being subsequently heated to a moderate temperature, it may be deprived of some of this hardness and rendered elastic through a wide range of strain. This process is called the tempering of steel ; its effects depend on the temperature to which the steel is heated after being hardened, and the grade of temper which is acquired is usually specified by the colour (blue, straw, &c.) which appears on a clean surface of the metal during this heating, through the formation of a film of oxide. In the ordinary process of rolling plates or bars of iron or mild steel the metal leaves the rolls at so high a temperature that it is virtually annealed, or pretty nearly so.1 The case is different with plates and bars that are rolled cold: they, like wire sup- plied in the hard-drawn state (that is, without being annealed after it leaves the draw-plate), exhibit the higher strength and greatly reduced plasticity which result from. permanent set.

87. The extension which occurs when a bar of uniform section is pulled is at first general, and is distributed with some approach to uniformity over the length of the bar. Before the bar breaks, however, a large additional amount of local extension occurs at and near the place of rupture. The material flows in that neighbour- hood much more than in other parts of the bar, and the section is much more contracted there than elsewhere. The contraction of area at fracture is frequently stated as one of the results of a test, and is a useful index to the quality of materials. Ifa flaw is pre- sent sufficient to determine the section at which rupture shall occur the contraction of area will in general be distinctly diminished as compared with the contraction in

a specimen free from flaws, although little reduction may be noted in the total extension of the piece. Local extension and contraction of area are almost

absent in cast-iron and hard steel ; on the other hand they are specially prominent in wrought-iron, mild steel, and other metals

Fig. 16,

that combine plasticity with high tensile strength. An example is shown in fig. 16, which is copied from a photograph of a broken test-piece of Whitworth soft fluid-compressed steel.

38. Experiments with long rods show that the general extension which occurs in parts of the bar not near the break is somewhat irregular ;? it exhibits here and there incipient local stretching, which has stopped without leading to rupture. This is of course due in the first instance to want of homogeneity. It may be

_ 1 In several of Mr Kirkaldy's papers, a comparison is given of the elastic limit, ultimate strength, and ultimate extension of samples which were annealed before testing, and of samples which were tested in the commercial state; in general the annealed samples are distinctly, though not very materially, softer than the others (On the Relative Properties of Wrought-Iron Plates from Essex and Yorkshire, London, 1876; also Experiments on Fagersta Steel, London, 1878).

2 See Kirkaldy's Experiments on Fagersta Steel, London, 1873; also Report of the Steel Committee, part i.

supposed that when local stretching begins at any point in the earlier stages of the test it is checked by the hardening effect of the strain, until, finally, under greater load, a stage is reached in which the extension at one place goes on so fast that the hardenin

effect cannot keep pace with the increase in intensity of stresg which results from diminution of area; the local extension is then unstable, and rupture ensues. Even at this stage a pause in the loading, and an interval of relief from stress, may harden the locally stretched part enough to make rupture occur somewhere

else when the loading is continued. i¢

89. Local stretching causes the percentage of elongation which Info, a test-piece exhibits before rupture (an important quantity in en. of ly gineers' specifications) to vary greatly with the length and section stp, of the piece tested. It is very usual to specify the length which ing is to exhibit an assigned percentage of elongation. This, however, total is not enough ; the percentage obviously depends on the relation elony of the transverse dimensions to the length. A fine wire' of iron tion, or steel, say 8 inches long, will stretch little more in proportion to its length than a very long wire of the same quality. An 8-inch bar, say 1 inch in diameter, will show something like twice as much the percentage of elongation as a very long rik The ex. periments of M. Barba*® show that, in material of uniform quality, the percentage of extension is constant for test-pieces of similar form, that is to say, for pieces of.various size in which the transverse dimensions are varied in the same proportion as the length. It is to be regretted that in ordinary testing it is not practicable to reduce the pieces to a standard form, with one proportion of transverse dimensions to length, since an arbitrary choice of length and cross-section gives results which are incapable of direct comparison with one another.

40. The form chosen for test-pieces in tension tests affects not Influen only the extension but also the ultimate strength. In the first on place, if there is a sudden or rapid change in the area of cross strength section at any part of the length under tension (as at AB, fig. 17), the stress will not be uniformly distributed there. The intensity will be greatest at the edges A and B, and the piece will, in consequence, pass its elastic limit at a Jess value of the total load than would be the case if the change from the larger to the smaller section were gradual. In a non-ductile material, rup- ture will for the same reasou take place at AB, with a less total load than would otherwise be borne. On the other hand, with a sufficiently ductile material, although the

section AB is the first to be permanently deformed, rupture will preferably take place at some section not near AB, because at and near AB the contraction of sectional area which precedes ruptnre is partly prevented by the presence of the projecting portions Cand D. Hence, too, with a ductile material samples such as those of fig. 18, in which the part of smallest section between the shoulders or enlarged ends of the piece is short, will break with a greater load than could be ‘Y borne by long uni- form rods of the same section. In good wrought-iron and mild steel the flow of metal pre- ceding rupture and causing local con- traction of section =. extends over a length six or eight times the width of the piece; and, if the length throughout which the section is uniform be materially less than this, the process of flow will be rendered more difficult and the breaking load of the sample will be raised.*

These considerations have of course a wider application than to the mere interpretation of special tests. An important practical case is that of riveted joints, in which the metal left between the rivet-holes is subjected to tensile stress. It is found to bear, per square inch, a greater pull than would be borne by a strip of the same plate, if the strip were tested in the usual way with uniform section throughout a length great enough to allow complete freedom of local flow.®

41, The tensile strength of long rods is affected by the Jength eis in quite a different way. With a perfectly homogeneous matert » para

no difference should be found in the strength of rods of equal ae ee ee 3 Mém. de la Soc. des Ing. Civ., 1880; see also a paper by Mr W. Hackney, and “On the Adoption of Standard Forms of Test-Pieces,” Min. Proc. Inst. CB. short

1884.

4 The greater strength of nicked or grooved specimens seems to have been rods, first remarked by Mr Kirkaldy (Experiments on Wrought Iron and Steel, p. 14, also Experiments on Fagersta Steel, p. 27). See also a paper by Mr E. Richards, on tests of mild steel, Jour. Iron and Steel Inst., 1882. 5 5 See Kennedy’s “‘ Reports on Rivetted Joints,” Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1881-5. In the case of mild stecl plates a drilled strip may have as much as

12 per cent, more tensile strength per square inch than an undrilled strip. With punch holes, on the other hand, the remaining mctal is much weakened, for the reason referred to in § 35.

Tig. 17.

|

sectional area and of different lengths, proviced the length of both were great enough to prevent the action described in § 40 from affect- ing the result. But, since no material is perfectly homogeneous, ‘the longer rod will in general be the weaker, offering as it does ‘more chances of a weak place; and the probable defect of strength ‘in the long rod will depend on the degree of variability of the material. When this has becn established by numerous tests of short samples, the strength whieh a rod of any assigned length may be expected to possess can be calculated by an appli- ‘cation of the theory of probabilities. A theory of the ; strength of long bars has been worked out on this basis by Prof. Chaplin,’ and has been experimentally eonfirmed by tests of long and short samples of wire. The theory does not apply when the length is so small that the action of § 40 enters into the case, and the experimental data on which it is based must be taken from tests of samples long enough to exclude that action.

42, In tension tests, rupture may occur, as in fig. 19, by direct separation over a surface which is nearly ylane and normal to the line of stress. This is usual in hard steel and other comparatively non-ductile mate- rials, Or it may occur by shearing along an oblique

plane, as in fig. 20, which shows the fracture of a piece of steel softer than the speci- men of fig. 19. In very duc- tile samples these two modes of rupture are frequently found in com- bination, as in fig. 21, where a central core # is broken by direct tension while round it $ isariug over which separation has taken place by shearing. In this instance the Fig. 20, Mg. 21. ring is in two parts, one above and one below the surface of rupture of the central flat core. In other instances, such as that of the sample shown in fig. 16, the shorn ring forms a continuous cone or crater round a flat core. 48, In compression tests of a plastic material, such as mild steel, _ a process of flow may go on without limit; the piece (which must ® of course be short,

to avoid buckling) shortens and bulges out in the form of acask. This is illustrated

by fig. 22 (from one of Fairbairn's expe- _ riments), which shows the compression H _ of a round block of steel (the original height and diameter of which are shown : by the dotted lines) by a load equal to ;

100 tons per square inch of original sec- f i" tional area. The surface over which the q | stress is distributed becomes enlarged, ¥ (_ and the total load must be increased in CLL a corresponding degree to maintain the Fig. 22. | process of flow.?. The bulging often produces longitudinal cracks, | asin the figure, especially when the material is fibrous as well as plastic (asin the case of wrought-iron), A brittle material, such as cast-iron brick, or stone, yields by shearing on inelined planes as in figs. 23 and 24, which are taken from Hodgkinson's experiments on cast-iron.? \ The simplest fracture of this kind is exem-

plified by fig. 23, where a single surface (ap-

Sesh aciacaset

| |

ah

Fig, 23,

| proximately a plane) of shear divides the compressed block into two wedges. With cast-iron the slope of the plane is such that this og mode of fracture can take place only if the height of the block is not less than about 3 the width of the base. When the height is less the action is more complex. Shearing must then take place over more than one plane, as in fig. 24, so that cones or wedges are formed by which the surrounding portions of the block are split off. The stress required to erush the block is eon- ee eee ee

' Van Nostrand's Engineering Magazine, Dec. 1880; Proc. Engineers' Club of Philadelphia, March, — : : For examples, see Fairbairn's experiments on steel, Rep. Brit, Ass., 1867. Report of the Royal Commissioners on the

Application of Iron to Ratiway Structures, 1849; see also Brit, Ass, Rep., 1837,

sequently greater than if the height were sufficient for shearing in a single plane.

44, The inclination of the surfaces of shear, when fracture takes place by shearing under a simple stress of pull or push, is a matter of mueh interest, throwing some light on the question of how the resistance which a material exerts to stress of one kind isaffected by the presence of stress of another kind,—a question scarcely touched by direct experiment. At the shorn surface there is, in the ease of tension tests, a normal pull as well as a shearing stress, and in the case of compression tests a normal push as well as shearin

Plane of shear.

stress. If this normal eomponent were absent the materia (assuming it to be isotropic) would shear in the surface of greatest shearing stress, which, as we have seen in § 5, is a surface inclined at 45° to the axis. In fact, however, it does not shear on this surface. Hodgkinson's experiments on the compression of cast- iron give surfaces of shear whose normal is inclined at about 55° to the axis of stress,4 and Kirkaldy's, on the tension of steel, show that when rupture takes place by shear the normal to the surface is inclined at about 25° to the axis. These results show that normal pull diminishes resistance to shearing and normal push increases resistance to shearing. In the ease of cast-iron under eompression, the material prefers to shear on a section where the intensity of shearing stress is only 0°94 of its value on the surface of maxinium shearing stress (inclined at 45°), but where the normal push is reduced to 0°66 of its value on the surface of maxi- mum shearing stress.

Fatigue of metals.

45. Fatigue of Metals,—A matter of great practical as well as scientific interest is the weakening which materials undergo by

repeated changes in their state of stress. It appcars that in some if not in all materials a limited amount of stress-variation may be repeated time after time without appreciable deterioration in the strength of the piece; in the balanee-spring of a watch, for instance, tension and compression suceeed each other some 150 millions of times in a year, and the spring works for years without apparent injury. In sueh eases the stresses lie well within tho elastic limits. On the other hand, the toughest bar breaks after a smal] number of bendings to and fro, when these pass the elastic limits, although the stress may have a value greatly short of the normal ultimate strength. A laborious research by Wohler,® ex- tending over twelve years, has given much important information regarding the effects on iron aud steel of very numerous repeated alternations of stress from positive to negative, or between a higher and a lower value without change of sign. By means of ingeniously contrived machines he submitted test-pieces to direct pull, alter- nated with complete or partial relaxation from pull, to repeated bending in one direetion and also in opposite directions, and to re- peated twisting towards one side and towards opposite sides. The results show that a stress greatly less than the ultimate strength (as tested in the usual way by a single application of load continued to rupture) is suffieient to break a pieee if it be often enough removed and restored, or even alternated with a less stress of the same kind. In that case, however, the variation of stress being less, the number of repetitions required to produce rupture is greater. In general, the number of repetitions required to produce rup- ture is increased by reducing the range. through whieh the stress is varied, or by lowering the upper limit of that range. If the greatest stress be chosen small enough, it may be reduced, re- moved, or cven reversed many million times without destroying the piece. Wohler’s results are best shown by quoting a few figures selected from his experiments. The stresses are stated in eentners per square zoll;® in the case of bars subjected to bending they refer to the top and bottom sides, which are the most stressed parts of the bar.

I. Iron bar in direct tension :—

Stress. Number of Applications ; Stress. Number of Applications Max. Min causing Rupture. Max. Min. causing Rupture.

480 0 800 320 0 10,141,645

440 0 106,901 = ae

400 0 340,853 440 209 2,373,424

360 0 480,852 440 £40 Not broken with 4 millions.

II. Iron bar bent by transverse load :—

Stress, Number of Bendings Stress. Number of Bendings Max. Min. causing Rupture. Max, Min. causing Rupture.

550 0 169,750 400 0 1,320,000

500 0 420,000 350 0 4,035,400

450 0 481,950 300 0 Not broken with 48 millions.

1IJ. Stecl bar bent by transverse load: —

Stress. Number of Bendings Stress. Number of Bendings Max. Min. causing Rupture. Max. Min. causing Rupture.

900 0 72,459 900 400 225,300

900 200 81,200 900 500 764,900—mean of two trials. 900 3800 156,200 900 600 Not broken with 332 mills. 4 Op. ctt.

5 Die Festigketts-Versuche mitt Etsen und Stahi, Berlin, 1870, or Zettschn. fur Bauwesen, 1860-70; see also Engineering, vol. xi., 1871. For early experiments by Fairbairn on the same subject, see Phil. Trans., 1864,

6 According to Bauschinger (loc. cit., p. 44), the centner per square zoll in which Wohier gives his results is equivalent to 6°837 kilos per square cm., or 0°0434 ton

er square inch. 7 XXII. — 76

Wohler’s experi- ments.

IV. Iron bar bent by supporting at one end, the other end being loaded ; altcrnations of stress from pull to push caused by rotating the bar :—

Stress, Number of Rotations Stress, Number of Rotations From + to — causing Rupture. From + to — causing Rupture.

320 ; 220 3,632,888 200 99,000 200 4,917,992 280 183,145 180 19,186,791

260 479,490 160 Not broken with 1323 240 909,810 millions,

46. From these and other experiments Wohler concluded that the wrought-iron to which the tests refer could probably bear an indefinite number of stress changes between the limits stated (in round numbers) in the following table (the ultimate tensile strength

was about 194 tons per square inch) :— Stress in Tons per Sq. Inch.

+7

From pull to push…….0.00 to —7

From pull to no StTCS8. ese. sccercsseccre, 13 to 0 From pullitojless pulll…..ccccssesseees 19 to 10%

Hence it appears that the actual strength of this material varies in a ratio which may be roughly given as 8 : 2 : 1 in the three cases of (a) steady pull, (6) pull alternating with no stress, very many times repeated, and (¢) pull alternating with push, very many times repeated, Factors of safety applicable to the three cases might therefore rationally stand to one another in the ratio of 1:2; 8. For steel Wohler obtained results of a generally similar kind. His experiments were repeated by Spangenberg, who extended the inquiry to brass, gun-metal, and phosphor-bronze.!_ On the basis of Wohler’s results formulas have been devised by Launhardt, Weyrauch, and others to express the probable actual strength of metals under assigned variations of stress; these are, of course, of a merely cmpirical character, and the data are not yet extensive enough to give them niuch value.?

47. Wchler’s cxperiments, dealing, as all experiments must, with a finite number of stress-changes, leave it an open question whether there are any limits within which a state of stress might be indefinitely often varied without finally destroying the material. It is natural to suppose that a material possessing perfect elasticity would suffer no deterioration from stress-changes lying within limits up to which the elasticity is perfect. But these limits, if they exist at all, are probably very narrow. Indeed, in the case of iron, there is indirect evidence that all alteration of stress whatso- ever affects the molecular structure in a way not consistent with the notion of perfect elasticity. When the state of stress in iron is varied, however slowly and however little, the magnetic and thermo-electric qualities of the metal are found to change in an essentially irreversible manner.? Every variation leaves its mark on the quality of the picce; the actual quality at any time is a function of all the states of stress in which the piece has previously becn placed. It can scarcely be doubted that sufficiently refined mcthods of experiment would detect a similar want of reversibility in the mechanical effects of stress, even when alterations of stress occur slowly enough to escape the effects of viscosity which have been examined by Sir William Thomson and discussed under ELASTICITY (vol. vii. pp. 802 sq.). In any case, the viscosity investi- gatcd by Thomson causes such stress-changes as occur rapidly to do work on the material, and the destructive cffect of repeated changes may be due in great part to this causc. His experiments show that rapid stress-changes often repeated do produce a cumulative effect in reducing the modulus of elasticity; and it is very probable that this fatigue of elasticity is associated with fatigue of strength.

There are as yet no experiments showing how far fatigue of strength is affected by the frequency, as distinguished from the mere number, of the stress-changes, nor whether a pcriod of rest, after fatigue has been induced, restores strength. That it does so may be conjectured from Thomson’s discovery that rest restores elasticity after elastic fatigue. The conjecture is strengthened by Bauschinger’s discovery that, after a permanent set has been pro- duced and a period of rest follows, the apparent limit of elasticity (in the strict sense of that term) rises slowly with the lapse of time. Both questions are of obvious practical interest. 4

48. When a strain is produced within the limits to which Hooke's law applies, the work done in producing it is half the product of the stress into the strain. A load applied to a piece suddenly, but without impact, does an amount of work in straining the piece which is measured by the weight of the load into the distance it sinks in consequence of the strain. Hence, provided

1 Ueber das Verhalten der Metalle bet weiderholten Anstrengungen, Berlin, 1875,

2 See Weyrauch, "On the Calculation of Dimensions as depending.on the Ultimate Working Strength of Materials," Min. Proc. Inst. C.E,, vol. lxiii. p. 275; also a correspondence in Zngineering, vol. xxix., and Unwin's Machine Design, chap. ii, 3 Ewing, Phil. Trans, , 1885, 1886.

4 For interesting notices of the fatigue of metals in railway axles, bridge ties, &c., and results of expcriments showing reduced plasticity in fatigued metal, see Mr B, Baker's address to the Mechanical Section of the British Association, 1885. In most cases where the fatigue of metals occurs in engineering practice the phenomenon is complicated by the occurrence of blows or shocks whose energy is absorbed in producing strains often excceding the elastic limits, sometimes of a very local character in consequence of the inertia of the strained pieces, Such shocks may cause an accumulation of set which finally leads to rupture in a way that is not to be confused with ordinary fatigue of strength. It appears that the effects of fatigue may be removed by annealing.

this strain falls within the elastic limit, the strain and the stress are twice as great as the same load would produce when in equi- librium. Instances of load applied with complete suddenness, and Spi, yet without shock, are rare; but it is a common case for loads to i be applied so rapidly that the stress reaches a value intermediate } between that due to a static load and the double stress due to the lo same load applied at once. Thus the Railway Commissioners found that certain bridges were Weflected by a train passing at a speed of 50 miles per hour + more than by the same load at rest. The fact that a "live" load produces greater stress than a dead load ig of course

to be distinguished from the question Wéohler’s experi. ments deal with— the greater destructiveness of the intermitted or varied stress which a live load causes. In many cases engineers allow in one operation for these quite independent influences of g live load by choosing a higher factor of safety for the live than for the dead part of the whole load on a structure, or (what is the same thing) by multiplying the live load by a coefficient (often 13), adding the product to the dcad load, and treating the sum as if all were dead load.

49. A useful application of diagrams showing the relation of Resili strain to stress is to determine the amount of work donc in strain. ence ing a picce in any assigned way. The term “resilience” is conven. iently used to specify the amount of work done when the strain just reaches the corresponding elastic limit. Thus a rod in simple tension or simple compression has a resilience per unit of volume =/?/2H, where fis the greatest elastic pull or push. A blow whose energy exceeds the resilience (reckoned for the kind of stress to which the blow gives rise) must in the most favourable case pro- duce a permanent set; in less favourable cases local permanent set will be produced although the energy of the blow is less than the resilience, in consequence of the strain being unequally dis- tributed. In a plastic material a strain excceding the limit of elasticity absorbs a relatively large amount of cnergy, and generally incrcases the resilience for subsequent strains. Fracture uuder sue- cessive blows, as in the testing of rails by placing them as beams — on two supports, and allowing a weight to fall in the middle from a given height, results from the accumulated set which is brought about by the energy of each blow exceeding the resilience

50. In an important paper® which is reprinted in the article Inter

EasticiTy, and should be carefully studied in this connexion, stress, Prof. James Thomson has pointed out that the effect of any externally applied load depends, to a very material extent, on whether there is or is not initial internal stress, or, in other words, whether the loaded piece is initially in what Prof. Hearson has called a state of ease. . Internal stress, existing without the application of force from without the piece, must satisfy the con- dition that its resultant vanishes over any complete cross-section. It may exist in consequence of sct causcd by previously applied forces (a case

of which instances are given below), or in conse- quence of previous tempcrature changes, as in cast-iron, which is thrown into a state of internal stress by uncqually rapid cooling of the mass. Thus in (say) a spherical casting an outside shell solidifies first, and has become partially contracted by cooling by the time the inside has become solid. The inside then contracts, and its contraction is resisted by the shell, which is thereby compressed in a tangential direction, while the metal in the interior is pulled in the direction of the radius. Allusion has already been made to the fact, pointed out by J. Thomson, that the defect of elasticity under small loads which Hodgkinson discovered in cast-iron is probably due to initial stress. In plastic metal a nearly complete state of case is brought about by annealing; even annealed pieces, however, sometimes show, in the first loading, small defects of elasticity, which are probably due to initial stress, as they disappear when the load is reapplied.

51, Little is exactly known with regard to the effect of tempera- Effect of ture on the strength of materials. Some mctals, notably iron or tempet steel containing much phosphorus, show a marked increase im brittle- ture om ness at low temperatures, or ‘cold shortness.” Experiments on the strength. tensile strength of wrought-iron and steel show in general little variation within the usual atmospheric range of heat and cold.

The tensile strength appears to be slightly reduced at very low temperatures, and to reach a maximum when the metal is warmed to a temperature between 100° C. and 200°C. When the tempera- ture exceeds 300° C. the tensile strength begins to fall off rapidly, and at 1000° C. it is less than one-tenth of the normal value. Reference may be made, in this connexion, to the effect which a “blue heat,” or temperature short of red heat, is believed to have on the plasticity and strength of iron, and more especially of mild stcel. It appears that steel plates and bars bent or otherwise ee ee

5 Report of Commissioners on the Application of Iron to Railway Structures, 1849, A mathematical investigation of this effect of rolling load is given in an appendix to the Report.

§ Camb. and Dub. Math. Journ., Nov., 1848. . :

7 See Report of a Committee of the Pranklin Institufe, 1837 ; Fairbairn, Brit. Ass. Rep,, 1856 ; Styffe on Iron and Steel, trans. by C. P. Sandberg. Notices 0 these and other experiments will be found in Thurston's Materials of Engineer at if, chap. x., and in papers by J. J. Webster, Min. Proc. Inst. C.H., vol. 1X. a0 4 A, Martens, Zeitschr. des Ver. Deutsch. Ing., 1883.

Young's! Mod. of| | Stress the intensity Moduius| Rigidity| | y at any point P is | je Se | Js BE. C. eR to the | a 54 t0103125 to 65|9to13 |) |, ~~+| | distance of P from Se | gee) asec: || a tare MN. 'called ,, Ameriean (ordnance) 2 14 | 36 to 58 -, La the neutral axis, which lies in the plane of the stressed surface and | . Be vasenaies Funtcas, 15 to 20] 60 to 75 = | al at right angles to the direction AB, which is assumed to be that in Wrought-iron— which the intensity of stress varies Finest Lowmoor and York- {| 27 to 29 along the fibre nee most rapidly. There is novaria- , _ shire Plates…,...cceserreees . "= tion of stress along lines parallel 4 Staffordshire…..ssressersevers 24 across 5, 18 to to MN. If MN passes through J along 4, 22, or oe 5000 C, the centre of gravity of the sur- Bea MOH .ewsscietveonesvsessnss 19 a about 13,000 face, as in fig. 27, it may easily be shown that the total pull stress ed 25 20 | ms | on one side of the neutral axis is equal to the total push stress on Soft DI decisis 19 to 24} the other side, whatever be the form of the surface AB. The re- Wrought-iron wire… } 25 to 50 one sultant of the whole stress on AB is in that case a couple, whose " 1 'average about) 35 ' moment may be found as follows. Let dS be an indefinitely small Stecl— ; 26 to 82]) 5 \ part of the surface at a distance x from the ncutral axis through C, | eee Pinics (Siemens OF |) average|> ... about | and let p be the intensity of stress on dS. The moment of the Bessemer) ...+ereeererees U! apout 30 j $ of fe stress on d& is ds. But v= e/a = ac] (see fig. oF). The Axle and rail stect (do.)...../30 to 45}... CPand. D=PyX[X = Py Med 218 —p,l fac Crucible tool steel .e..sescseessees 40 to 65 whole moment of the stress on AB is /xpdS =(p,/a\/2*dS =p, l/r Steel castings…....cssssceceseee about 28 ea 00 | | or pal/a, where I is the moment of inertia of the surface AB about Chrome SteCl .seseererserrreeseres 80 13,000 | | 5200 the neutral axis through C. r ee eee) 55. A stress such as that shown in fig. 26 or fig, 28 may be steel (mild)..... regarded as a uniformly distributed i; no (hard).....| 48 to 68 | stress of intensity p, (which is the Steel wire, ordinary, about…) 70 J intensity at the centre of gravity a… 124 13,000 |... of the surface C) and a stress of @ | Pianoforte steel wire…....06 150 — | 18,000] the kind

shown in fig, 27, The | COPPET, CASE... sserseeereveereeseeserees a eee resultant is y)S, where S is the | ite, hardcdrawnece| 28″ | | i | sido | aio [| whole area of the surface, and | eee acssouessecesseoees 8 to 18 5 5500 | 1500 it acts at a distance CD from C | e Asal seeeseeseeercesonsenaeenaens i we on 6400 | 2200 such that the moment pS. tats | PEPER SUR Ss csisctecesys eo euse uses = * a Pz Po)1/2 = (Py t+Po)1/%q. Hence | GUM MEAL... ces. sssercccrsesserseeenes 11 to 23)... v0 ny 1700 “ a pr(l ifm S . CD/I), / and p= Phosphor bronze…....s00. wu.| 15 to 26 6000 |” 2400 po(l-x,S. 6 I). » » Wir vos] 88 to ea co ve we ee 56. Simple bendingoccurs when a Simple eee es | | beam is in equilibrium under equal . bending, NM ccc cccscascscsessnssevsss, TWO snc 5500 and opposite couples in the plane of the beam. Thus if a beam | eee 2 ss ss (fig. 29), supported at its ends, be loaded at two points so that eyes ss isschisieaitsoeaseaesee>. 0°9 3 . 1000 W.l=W.l. the por- | | Timber— V4] 2f9s Pp ss. ccisseccosteeesse 3to7 4 1 800 tion of the beam lying BPG ose. cescsssiesescesseees. 1} to 34] 23 9 600 between W, and W, is | a aa cox, 2} Kae “ _ ~ subjected to a simple er sis) P| Bo bending stress. On , “oo 4to6| 4 oc iis any section AB the idee We eceeserecancccsesseoveccsunes soces 4to7 ‘ 950 only stress consists of ; ig MANOPANY wcrc eveeeseeees 4to7 4 650 pull and push, and has Fig. 29, :~ for its resultant a couple whose moment M=W,h,= Wels. This is called the bending moment at the section. If the stress be within the elastic limits it will be distributed as in fig. 4 30, with the neutral axis at the centre of gravity of the section. The greatest intensities of push i 53. Space admits of no more than a short and elementary and of pull, at the top and bottom edge respect- Jb, e) account of some of the more simple straining actions that occur in ively, are (by § 54) P= My/ I and Po =My,/I, Hn machines and engineering structures. and the intensity at any point at a distance y i- The stress which acts on any plane surface AB (fig. 25), such as | above or below C is p=My/I. : ; an imaginary cross-section of a strained 57. Let the bending moment now be increased ; Bending piece, may be represented by a figure b non-elastic strain will begin as soon as either Dy beyond formed by setting up ordinates Aa, Bd, OF Do exceeds the corresponding limit of elasticity, elastic &c., from points on the surface, the % and the distribution of stress will be ehanged in limits, length of these being made proportional consequence of the fact that the outer layers of iB to the intensity of stress at each point, the beam are taking set while the inner layers Fig. 30. This gives an ideal solid, which may be are still following Hooke’s law. As a

simple in- called the stress figure, whose height stance we may consider the case of a material strictly elastic up to shows the distribution of stress over the a certain stress, and then so plastic that a relatively very large surface which forms its base. A line 4 B amount of strain is produced without further change of stress, a drawn from g, the centre of gravity of case not very far from being realized by soft wrought-iron and mild _ the stress figure, parallel to the ordinates Fig. 25. steel. The diagram of stress will now take the form sketched in f Aa, &c., determines the point C, which is called the centre of stress, | fig. 81. If the elastic limit is (say) less for compression than for and is the point through which the resultant of the distributed stress | tension, the diagram will be as in fig. 32, with the neutral axis acts. In the case of a uniformly distributed stress, ab is a plane | shifted towards the tension side. When the beam is relieved from

worked at a blue heat not only run a much more serious risk of fracture in the process than when worked either cold or red-hot, but become deteriorated so that brittleness may afterwards show itself when the metal is cold.

52. The following table gives a few representative data regarding

| the strength of the more important materials uscd in engineering

(the figures are gathered from the writings of Barlow, Hodgkinson, Kirkaldy, Thurston, Rankine, Unwin, Clark, and others) :—

. ” Elasticity. Ultimate Strength. Tons. per sq. in.

Tons per Square Inieh,

surface parallel to AB, and C is the centre of gravity of the surface

AB._When a bar is subjected to simple pull applied axially—that

’ Stromeyer, “The Injurious Effect of a Blue Heat on Steel and Iron,” Min. Inst. C.E., vol. Ixxxiv., 1886,

603

is to say, so that the-resultant stress passes through the centre of gravity of every cross-section, —the stress may be taken as (sensibly) uniformly distributed over any section not near a place where the form of the cross-section changes, provided the bar is initially in a state of ease and the stress is within the limits of elasticity.

54. Uniformly varying stress is illustrated by fig. 26.

It occurs Uni-

(in each ease for stresses within the elastic limit) in a bent beam, formly

in a tie subjected to non-axial pull, and in a long strut or column where buckling makes the stress become non-axial, In uniformly varying

external load it will be left in a state of internal stress, repre-

sented, for the case of fig. 31, by the dotted lines in that figure. 58. In consequence of the action which has been illustrated (in

a somewhat crude fashion) by figs. 31 and 32, the moment required

varying stress,

Modulus of rup- ture.

Strain produced by bend- ing.

Ordinary bending of beams.

604

to break the beam (M,) cannot be calculated from the ultimate tensile or compressive strength of the material by using the for- mula M,;=/,I/y,, or M;=f.l/y.. When experiments are made on the ultimato strength of bars to resist bending, it is not unusual to apply a formula of this form to calculate an imaginary stress /, which receives the name of tho modulus of trans-

verse rupture. Let the section be such that y, = y Then the modulus of transverse rupture is defined as /=My,y,/I. This mode of stating the results of experiment on transverse strength is unsatisfactory, inasmuch as the modulus of rup- ture thus determined will vary with different

Ai

8B

8B Fig. 31, forms of section. Thus a plastic material for which /, and f; aro

equal, if tested in the form of an I beam in which the flanges form practically the whole area of section, will have a modulus of rupturo

Fig. 32.

sensibly equal to f, orf On the other hand, if the material be tested in the form of a rectangular bar, the modulus of rupture may approach a value one and a half times as great. For in the latter case the distribution of stress may approach an ultimate con- dition in which half the section is in uniform tension f, and tho other half in uniform compression of the same intensity. The mo- ment of stress is then 4 /,bh?, b being the breadth and fA the depth of the section ; but by definition of the modulus of rupture f, M= %/oh?. In tables of the modulus of transverse rupture the values aro generally to be understood as referring to bars of rectangular section. Values of this modulus for somo of the principal materials of engineering are given in the article BripcEs, vol. iv. p. 292.

59. The strain produced by bending stress in a bar or beam is, as regards any imaginary filament taken along the length of the piece, sensibly the same as if that filament were | directly pulled or compressed by itself. The resultin deformation of the piece consists, in the first place au chiefly, of curvature in the direction of the length, due to the longitudinal extension and compression of the filaments, and, in the second place, of transverso flex- ure, due to the lateral compression and extension which go along with their longitudinal extension and com- pression (see Exasrroiry, § 57). Let J,, fig. 88, bea short portion of the length of a beam strained by a bend- ing moment M (within the limits of elasticity). The bean, which we assume to

be originally straight, bends in the dircction of its length to a curve of radius R, such that R/2=y,/8/, 82 being the change of Z by exten- sion or compression, at a distance y, from the neutral axis, But 5/—dp,/E by § 10, and p,=My,/I. Hence R=EI/M. The transverse flexure is not, in general, of practical importance. The centre of curvature for itis on the opposite side from the centre for longitudinal flexure, and the radius is Ro, where ¢ is the ratio of longitudinal extension to lateral contraction under simple pull. Fig. 83.

60. Bending combined with shearing is the mode of stress to which beams are ordinarily subject, the loads, or externally applied forces, being applied at right angles to the direction of the length. Let AB, fig. 34, be any cross-section of a beam in equilibrium. The portion V of the beam, which lies on one side of AB, is in equi- librium under the joint action of the external forces F,, Fy, F, &c., and the forces which the other por- tion U exerts on V in consequence of the state of stress at AB. The forces F,, F., F;, &c. may be referred to AB by introducing couples whose moments are Fya, Fev, Fxg, &c. Hence the stress at AB must equilibrate, first, a couple whose moment is 2a, and, second, a forco whose value is SF, which tends to shear V from U. In these summations regard must of course be had to the sign of each force; in tho diagram tho sign of F, is opposite to the sign of F, and F,. Thus the stress at AB may be regarded as that due toa bending moment M equal to the sum of the moments about the section of the externally applied forces on one side of the section (2F a), and a shearing force equal to the sum of the forces about one side of the section (ZF). It is a matter of convenience only whether the forces on V or on U be taken in reckoning the bending moment and the shearing force. The bending moment causes a uniformly vary- ing normal stress on AB of the kind already discussed in § 56; tho shearing force causes a shearing stress in the plane of the section, the distribution of which will be investigated later. This shearing stress in the plane of the section is (by § 6) accompanied by an

equal intensity of shearing stress in horizontal the length of the beam.

61. The stress due to the bending moment, consisting of longi. tudinal push in filaments above the neutral axis and longitudinal pull in filaments below

the neutral axis, is the thing chiefly to be considered in practical problems relating to the strength of beams, The general formula »,= My,/I becomes, for a beam of rectangular section of breadth 6 and depth h, p,=6M/bh? =6M/SA, 8 being the area of section. For a beam of circular section it becomes P,=32M/rh?=8M/Sh. Tho material of a beam is disposed to the greatest advantage as regards resistance to bending when the form is that of a pair of flanges or booms at top and bottom, held apart by a thin but stiff web or by cross-bracing, as in I beams and braced trusses. In such cases sensibly the whole bending momentis taken by the flanges; the intensity of stress over the section of each flange is very nearly uniform, and the areas of section of the ten- sion and compression flanges (S, and S, respectively) should be proportioned to the value of the ultimate strengths %; and f,, so that S,f¢=S8,fc. Thus for cast-iron beams Hodgkinson has recommended that the tension flange should have six times the sectional area of the compression flange. The intensity of longitudinal stress on the two flanges of an I beam is approximately M/S,/ and M/S,A, h being the depth from centre to centre of the flanges.

62. In the examination of loaded beams it is convenient to re- Diam present graphically the bending moment and the shearing force at of by various sections by setting up ordinates to represent the values of ing m these quantities. Curves of bending moment and shearing force for a number of important practical cases of beams supported at the ends will bo found in the article BripeEs, with expressions for fone, the maximum bending moment and maximum shearing force under various distributions of load. The subject may be briefly illustrated

planes paralle} to

Fig. 87,

,

here by taking the caso of a cantilever or projecting bracket—(1) loaded at the end only (fig. 85); (2) loaded at the end and at another point (fig. 86); (3) loaded over the whole length witha uniform load per foot run, Curves of bending moment are given in full lines and curves of shearing force in dotted lines in the diagrams.

The area enclosed by the curve of shearing force, up to any ordinate, such as ab (fig. 37), is equal to the bending moment at the same section, represented by the ordinate ac. For let a be increased to «+z, the bending moment changes to SF(x+6z), or 5M=dx3F, Henco the shearing force at any section is equal to the rate of change of the bending moment there per unit of the length, and the bending moment is the integral of the shearing force with respect to the length. In the case of a continuous dis- tribution of load, it should be observed that, when x is increased to w+ dx, the moment changes by an additional amount which depends on (5x)? and may therefore be neglected.

63. To examine the distribution of shearing stress over any Distribi. —

vertical section of a beam, » & tion of we may consider two gw Wrrt a 7 shearing closely adjacent sections ay “stress.

AB and DE (fig. 38), on which tho bending mo- ments are M and M+8M respectively. The result- ant horizontal force due to the bending stresses on a piece ADHG enclosed be- tween tho adjacent sec- tions, and bounded by the horizontal plane GH at a distance y) from the neutral axis, is shown by the shaded figure. This must be equilibrated by : the horizontal shearing

stress on GH, which is the lie , only other horizontal force acting on the piece. At any height y the intensity of resultant horizontal stress due to the difference of the bending moments is y3M/I, aud the whole horizontal force

on GH is os “Wedy, z being the breadth. If q be the intensily

ee ee ee

&

: I Yo ‘ ° dth ig of horizontal shearing stress on the section GH, whose brea Zo, we have sM ny . qede = > – yody . Yo

But 8M/8x is the whele shearing force Q on the section of the beam. Hence Q . al/yo ~ and this is also the intensity of vertical shearing stress at the dis- tance 7/) from the neutral axis. This expression may couveniently be written

g=QAy/zol, where A is the area of the surface AG and y the distance of its centre of gravity from the neutral axis. The intensity gis a maximum at the neutral axis and ‘diminishes to zero at the top and bottom of the beam. In a beam of rectangular section the value of the shearing stress at the neutral axis is g max. =8Q/bh. In other words, the maximum intensity of shearing stress on any section is § of the mean intensity. Similarly, in a beam of circular section the maximum is § of the mean. This result is of seme importance in application to the pins of pin-joints, which may be treated as very short beams liable to give way by shearing, In the case of an J beam with wide flanges and a thin web, the above expression shows that in any vertical section q is nearly con- stant in the web, and insignificantly small in the flanges. Practi- cally all the shearing stress is borue by the web, and its intensity is very nearly equal to Q divided by the arca of section of the web. 64. The erating analysis of the stresses in a beam, which resolves them into longitudinal pull and push, due to bending mement, along with shear in longitudinal and transverse planes, is generally sufficient in the treatment of practical cases. If, how- ever, it is desired to find the direction and greatest intensity of stress at any point in a beam, the planes of principal stress passing

Myedy ;

uniform section subjected to a uniform bending moment) bend into a circular arc. In other cases the form of the bent beam, and the resulting slope and deflexion, may be determined by integrating the curvature throughout the span, or by a graphic process (see Brinces, § 25), which consists in drawing a curve to represent the beam with its curvature greatly exaggerated, after the radius of curvatnre has been determined for a sufficient number of sections. In all practical cases the curvature is so small that the arc and chord are of sensibly the same length. Calling 7 tho angle of slope, and w the dip or deflexion from the chord, the equation to the curve into which an originally straight beam bends may be written du_.,@u_di_ KEI | da”? de? de M * Integrating this for a beam of uniform section, of span L, supported at its ends and loaded with a weight W at the centre, we

have, for the greatest slope and greatest deflexion, respectively, 7, = WL?/16EI, w= WL3/48EI. If the load W is uniformly distributed over L, a= WL?/24EI and uw, =5WL?/384EI, For other cases, see BRIDGES, § 24,

The additional slope which shearing stress produces in any originally horizontal layer is g/C, where q is, as before, the intensity of shearing stress and Cis the modulus of rigidity. In a round or rectangular bar the additional deflexion due to shearing is scarcely appreciable. In an I beam, with a web only thick enough to resist shear, it may be a sonicwhat considerable proportion of the whole.

67. Torsion occurs in a bar to which equal and opposite couples Torsion are applied, the axis of the bar being the axis of the couples, and of solid gives rise to shearing stress in planes perpendicular to the axis, and Let AB (fig. 40) be a uniform circular shaft held fast at the end A, hollow and twisted by a shafts.

through the point must be found by an application of the general method given in the article ELastioiry, chapter oe =

iii. In the present case the problemi is excep- A 2 tionally simple, from the fact that the stresses

en two planes at right angles are known, and the stress on one of these planes is wholly tan- gential. Let AC (fig. 39) be an indefinitely g small portion of the horizontal section of a beam, en which there is only shearing stress, and let AB be an indefinitely small portion of the vertical section at the same place, on which there is shearing and normal stress. Let q be the intensity of the shearing stress, which is the same on AB and AC, and let p be the in- tensity of normal stress on AB: it is required te find a third plane BC, such that the stress i en it is wholly normal, and to find 7, the in- Pig. 30. tensity of that stress. Let bo the angle (to be determined) which BC makes with AB. Then the equilibrium of the triangular wedge | ABC requires that 7rBCcos0=p. AB+q. AC, and rBCsing=q. AB; (r-p)cos=qsiné@, and rsin@=qcos 6.

g=r(r-p),

tan 20=2q/p ,

rah g+ hp.

The positive valuc of 7 is the greater principal stress, and is of the same sign asp. The negative value is the lesser principal stress, | which occurs on a plane at right angles to the former. ‘The equa- tien for @ gives two values corresponding to the two planes of principal stress, The greatest intensity of shearing stress occurs en the pair of planes inclined at 45° to the planes of principal tress, and its value is\V g?+ 4p? (by § 5).

65. The above determination of 7, the greatest intensity of stress due te the cembined effect of simple bending and shearing, is of some practical importance in the case of the web of an J beam. We have seen that tho web takes practically the whole shearing ferce, distributed over it with a nearly uniform intensity g. If | there were no normal stress on a vertical section of the web, the | shearing stress g would give rise to two equal principal stresses, of | pull and push, each equal to g, in directions inclined at 45° to the _ section. But the web has further to suffer normal stress due to _ bending, the intensity of which at points near the flanges approxi- mates to the intensity on the flanges themselves. Hence in these) regions the greater principal stress is inereased, often bya consider- able amount, which may easily be calculated from the foregoing | fermula. What makes this specially important is the fact that _ one of the principal stresses is a stress of eompression, which tends te make the web yield by buckling, and must be guarded against | by a suitable stiffening of the web.

__ The equatien for @ allows the lines of principal stress in a beam to _ be drawn when the form of the beam and the distribution of loads _ are given. An example has been shown in the article Bripazs

_ G18, fig. 12), vol. iv. p. 290.

66. The deflexion of beams is due partly to the distortion caused by shearing, but chiefly to the simple bending which occurs at each vertical section, As regards the second, which in most cases is the only important cause of deflexion, we have seen (§ 59) that the radius of curvature R at any section, due to a bending moment M, is EI/M, which may also be written

Ey,/p,. Thus beams of | uniform strength and depth (and, as a particular casc, beams of

ee

———

— na

couple applied in the plane BB, As- suming the strain to be within the limits of elasticity, a radius CD turns round to CD’, and a line AD drawn at any dis- tance r from the axis, and originally straight, changes into the helix AD’. Lct be the augle which this helix makes with lincs parallel to the axis, or in other words the angle of shear at the distance r from the axis, and let ¢ be the angle of twist DCD’. Taking two sections at a distance dx from one another, we have the arc dx=rdi. Hence qg, the intensity of shearing stress in a plane of cross-section, varies as r,

since g=CO=Cr – . The resultant moment of the whole shearing

stress on each plane of cross-section is equal to the twisting

moment M. Thus SimPedr

Calling r, the outside radius (where the shearing stress is greatcst) and q, its intensity there, we have g=71q,/7,, and hence, for a solid shaft, g;=2M/rr,3. For a hollow shaft with a central hole of radius 7, the same reasoning applies: the limits of integration are now 7, and 7,, and = Mis,

a(1*— 79*)

The lines of principal stress are obviously helices inclined at 45° to the axis.

If the shaft has any other form of section than a solid or sym- metrical hollow circle, an originally straight radial line becomes warped when the shaft is twisted, and the shearing stress is no longer proportional to the distance from the axis. The twisting of shafts of square, triangular, and other sections has been investigated by M. de St Venant (see ELastioiry, § 66-71,

where a comparison of torsional rigidities is given). In a square shaft (side=h) the stress is greatest at the middle of each side, and its intensity there is g, = M/0°281h8,

For round sections the angle of twist por unit of length is joo 0 2M in solid and ——”;-—z in hollow shafts.

Cr, «Cr,* aCO(7r,4 — 794)

.,68. In what has been said above it is assumed that the stress is within the limit of elasticity. When the twisting couple is increased so that this limit is passed, plastic yielding begins in the outermost layer, and a larger proportion of the whole stress falls to be borne by layers nearer the centre. The case is similar to that of a beam bent beyond the elastic limit, described in § 57. If we suppose the process of twisting to be continued, and that after passing the limit of elasticity the material is capable of much distortion without further increase of shearing stress, the distribu- tion of stress on any cross section will finally have an approximately

‘, Qar*q’dr

r =2nq(r}3—7,2). In the case of a solid shaft this gives for Ma

%

uniform value q’, and the moment of torsion will be

1 Rankine, Applted Mechanics, § 324,

Torsion and

cranks,

Strength of struts.

606

value greater than it has when the stress in the outermost layer only reaches the intensity q/, in the ratio of 4 to 3.1 It is obvious from

this consideration that the ultimate strength of a shaft to resist torsion is no more deducible from a knowledge of the ultimate shearing strength of the material than the ultimate strength of

a beam to resist bending is deducible from a knowledge of f; and fe. It should be noticed also that as regards ultimate strength a solid shaft has an important advantage over a hollow shaft of the same elastic strength, or a hollow shaft so proportioned that the greatest working intensity of stress is the same as in the solid shaft.

69. Twisting combined with Longitudinal Stress. —When a rod is twisted and pulled axially, or when a short block is twisted and com- pressed axially, the greatest intensity of stress (the greater principal stress) is to be found by compounding the longitudinal and shearing stresses as in § 64, In a circular rod of radius 7,, a total longitudi- nal force P in the direction of the axis gives a longitudinal normal stress whose intensity p,=P/r?. A twisting couple M applied to the same rod gives a shearing stress whose greatest intensity M=2M/rr,3. The two together give rise to a pair of principal

stresses of intensities r= P/2mr?+/(2M/wr 5)? + (P/2ar,*), their

inclinations to theaxis being defined by the equation tan 26 = 2M/7,P, and the term under the square root is the shearing stress.

70. Z'wisting combined with Bending.—This important practical case is realized in a crank-shaft (fig. 41). Leta force P be applied at the crank-pin A at right angles to the plane of the crank.

At any section of the shaft C ,_ (between the crank and the bearing) there is a twisting mo- ment M,=P. AB, and a bend- ing moment M,=P.BC. There

is also a direct shcaring force P, but this docs not require to be taken into account in calculating . the stress at points at the top or bottom of the circumference (where the intensity is greatest), since (by § 63) the direct shearing stress is dis tributed so that its intensity is zero at these points. The stress there is consequently made up of longitudinal normal stress (due to bending), p,=4M.,/mr,3, and shearing stress (due to torsion), m= 2M,/rr3.

Combining these, as in § 64, we find for the prin- cipal stresses r= 2(M,4/M,? M,*)/w7,3, or r=2P(BC+AC)/ar,3. The greatest shearing stress is 2P.AC/mr3, and the axes of principal stress are inclined so that tan 20=M,/M,=AB/BC. The axis of greater principal stress bisects the angle ACB.

71. Long Columns and Struts—Compression and Bending.—A long strut or pillar, compressed by forces P applicd at the ends in the direction of the axis, becomes unstable as regards flexure when P exceeds a certain value. Under no circumstances can this value of P be excecded in loading a strut. But it may happen that the intensity of stress produced by smaller loads exceeds the safe com- pressive strength of the material, in which case a lower limit of load must be chosen. If the applied load is not strictly axial, if the strut is not initially straight, if it is subject to any deflexion by transverse forces, or if the modulus of elasticity is not uniform over each cross-section, —then loads smaller than the limit which causes instability will produce a certain deflexion which increases with increase of load, and will give rise to a uniformly varying stress of the kind illustrated in figs. 26 and 28. We shall first consider the ideal case in which the forces at the ends are strictly axial, the strut perfectly straight and free from transverse loads and perfectly symmetrical as to elasticity. Two conditions have to be distinguished—that in which the ends are left free to bend, and that in which the ends are held fixed. In what follows, the ends are supposed free to bend. ‘The value of the load which causes instability will be found by considering what force P applied to each end would suffice to hold an originally straight strut in a bent state, supposing it to have received a small amount of elastic curvature in any way. Using w as before to denote the deflexion at any part of the length, the bending moment is Pu, and (taking the origin at the middle of the chord) the equation to the elastic curve is

Fig. 41.

du —-Pu

dat ET * from which, for a strut of uniform section, U=U, cos #r/P/ET, uy being the deflexion at the centre, Now w=0 when x=4L (the half length), and therefore 4L,/P/EI=4m or an integral multiple of 4m. The smallest value (4) corresponds to the least force P. Thus the force required to

maintain the strut in its curved state is P=7°EI/L?, and is independent of uw. This means that with this particular value of P (which for brevity we shall write P,) the strut will be in neutral equilibrium when bent; with a value of P less than P, it will be stable: with a greater value it will be unstable. Henco a load exceeding P, will certainly cause rupture. The value

1See ELAsticiry, $$ 10-20.

greatest intensity of

- EL/La,

EI/L? applies to struts with round ends, or ends free to turn. If the ends are fixed the effective length for bending is reduced by one half, so that P, then is 4m°EI/L?, When one end is fixed and the other is free P, has an intermediate value, probably about 9m? EI/4L?,

72. The above theory, which is Euler's, assigns P, asa limit to} the strength of a strut on account of flexura instability; but a stress less than P, may cause direct crushing. Let S$ be the area of section, and f, the strength of the material to resist crushing. | Thus a strut which conforms to the ideal conditions specified above will fail by simple crushing if 7,8 is less than P,, but by | bending if 8 is greater than P,. Hence with a given material and form of section the ideal strut will fail by direct crushing if the length is less than a certain multiple of the least breadth (easil calculated from the expression for P,), and in that case its strengi | will be independent of the length ; when the length is greater than this the strut will yield by bending, and its strength diminishes rapidly as the length is increased.

But the conditions which the above theory assumes are never | realized in practice, The load is never strictly axial, nor the strut absolutely straight to begin with, nor the elasticity uniform. | The result is that the strength is in all cascs less than either 4

or P,. The effect of deviations from axiality, from strai htness, and from uniformity of elasticity may be treated by intro ucing a term ee an

imaginary initial deflexion, and in this way |. Euler’s theory may be so modified as to agree well with experimental | results on the fracture of struts,? and may be reconciled with the | observed fact that the deflexion of a strut begins gradually and passes through stable values before the stage of instability is reached. In consequence of this stable deflexion the stress of | compression on the inside edge becomes greater than P/S, the stress | on the outside edge becomes less than P/S, and may even change | into tension, and the strut may yield by one or the other of these | stresses becoming greater than f, or /; respectively. As regards | the influence of length and moment of inertia of section on the – deflexion of struts, analogy to the case of beams suggests that the | greatest deflexion consistent with stability will vary as L2/b, 6 being the least breadth, and the greatest and lcast stress, at opposite — edges of the middle section, will consequently be Nl P aL?

na=g(1455), where a is a coefficient depending on the material and the form | of the section. This gives, for the breaking load, P=Sf,/(1 + aL?/b2) or — Sf,/(1 – aL2/b?), the smaller of the two being taken.

This formula, which is generally known as Gordon’s, can be made to agree fairly with the results of experiments on struts of ordinary proportions, when the values of fas well as @ are treated as empirical constants to be determined by trial with struts of the same class | as those to which the formula is to be applied. Gordon’s formula may also be arrived at in another way. For very short struts we have seen that the breaking load is /.8, and for very long struts itis If we write P=/,S/(1+/,SL*/r2EI), we have a formula which gives correct values in these two extreme cascs, and inter- mediate values for struts of medium length. By writing this P—=/S/(1+eSL? /I), and treating f and ¢ as empirical constants, we have Gordon’s formula in a slightly modified shape. Gordon’s formula is largely used; it is, however, essentially empirical, and it is only by adjustment of both constants that it can be brought into agreement with experimental results.? For values of the constants, see Bripezs. In the case of fixed ends, ¢ is to be divided by 4. i “3. Bursting Strength of Circular Cylinders and Spheres. —Space Singl remains for the consideration of only one other mode of stress, of oftell great importance from its occurrence in boilers, pipes, hydraulic and steam cylinders, and guns. The material of a hollow cylinder, subjected to pressure from within, is thrown into a stress of circumferential pull. When the

thickness ¢ is small compared with the radius R, we may treat this stress as uniformly distributed over the thickness. Let p be the intensity of fluid pressure within a hollow circular cylinder, and let Jf be the intensity of circumferential stress. Consider the forces on a small rectangular plate (fig. 42), with its sides parallel and perpen- dicular to the direction of the axis, of length 7 and width Rd, 36 being the small angle it ; subtends at the axis. Whatever forces act on this plate in the direction of the axis are equal and opposite. The remaining forces, which are in equilibrium, are P, the total pressure from within, an a force T at each side due to the circumferential stress. P=plR9

2 See papers by Profs. Ayrton and Perry, The Engineer, Dec. 10 and 24, 1886, and by T. C. Fidler, Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., vol. xxxvi. p. 261.

3 For experiments on the breaking strength of struts, see papers by Hodgkin- son, Phil, Trans., 1840; Berkeley, Min. Proc. Inst. C.E., vol. XxX.; Chri Trans. Amer. Soc, Civ, Eng., 1884.

Fig. 42.

Pnath thn © ‘Thick Isheg cylinder.

Yad T=/lt, But by the triangle of forces (fig. 43) P=T3¢. Hence

= ph/t. f Pi ends of the cylinder may or may not be held together by

itudinal stress in the cylinder sides : ny are, then, whatever be the form of : the ends, a transverse section, the area eG of whieh is 27Rt, has to bear a total force Tr

R, Hence, if /” be the intensity of Fig. 43, longitudinal stress, /” =pR/2t=1

74, A thin hollow sphere under internal pressure has equal eireumiferential pull in all directions. To find its value consider the plate of fig. 42. There are now four equal forces T, on each of the four sides, to equilibrate the radial force P. Hence P=2T60 and f= pR/2¢.

75. When the thickness is not small compared with the radius, the radial pressure is transmitted from layer to layer with reduced intensity, and the circumferential pull diminishes towards the out- side. In the case of a thick cylinder with free ends! we have to deal at any point with two principal stresses, radial and circum- ferential, which may be denoted by p and p’ respectively. _Sup- posing (as we may properly do in dealing with a cylinder which is not very short) that a transverse section originally plane remains plane, the longitudinal strain is uniform. Since there is no lougi- tudinal stress this strain is due entirely to the lateral action of the stresses p and p’, and its amount is (p + Pick. Hence atall points p+p’=constant.? Further, by considering the equilibrium of any

thin layer, as we have already considered that of a thin cylinder, we have £ (pn) =p’,

These two equations give by inte ration, p=C+C/7?2, and genre give by integ

however thick the cylinder is. In the construction of guns various devices have been used to With cast guns a chilled core has been employed to make the inner layers solidify aud cool first, sa that they are afterwards compressed by the later coutrac- tion of the outer layers. In guus built up of wrought-iron or stecl hoops the hoops are bored small by a regulated amount and are shrunk on over the barrel or over the inner hoops. In Mr Loug- ridge’s system, now under trial, the gun is made by winding steel wire or ribbon, with suitable initial tension, on a central barrel. 76. The circumferential stress at any point of a thick hollow sphere exposed to internal fluid pressure is found, by a process like that of the last paragraph, to be ~ pyr,3(1 + 113/275) /(r,3 — 7,3), which gives, for the greatest tension, the value

— Pol Ty? + 2r.8)/2(7,8 — 7,3) , (J. A. E.)

STRICKLAND, Acnzs (1806-1874), a popular his- torical writer, was born in 1806, the third daughter of Thomas Strickland, of Roydon Hall, Suffolk. Her first literary efforts were historical romances in verse in the style of Walter Scott,— Worcester Pield (published without date), Demetrius and other Poems (1833). From this she passed to prose histories, written in a simple style for the young. A picturesque sketch of the Pilgrims of Walsingham appeared in 1835, two volumes of Zales and Stories from History in the following year. Then with the assistance of her sister she projected a more ambitious work, The Lives of the Queens of England, from Mathilda of Flanders to Queen Anne. The first volume appeared in 1840, the twelfth and last in 1849. – Miss Strickland was a warm partisan on the side of royalty and the church, but she made industrious study of "official records and other public documents," gave copious extracts from them, and drew interesting pictures of manners and customs. While engaged on this work she found time to edit (in 1843) the Letters of Mar , Queen of Scots, whose innocence she championed with enthusiasm. In 1850 she followed up her Queens of England with the Lives of the Queens of Scotland, completing the series in eight volumes in 1859. Unresting in her industry, she turned next to the Batchelor Kings of England, about whom she published a volume in P61. The Lives of the Seven Bishops followed in 1866— after a longer interval, part of which was employed in producing an abridged version of her Queens of England. Her last work was the Lives of the Last Four Stuart Princesses, published in 1872. Tn 1871 she obtained a civil list pension of £100 in recognition of her merits. She died at Roydon Hall on the 8th of J uly 1874.

A Life by her sister, Jane Margaret Strickland, appeared in 1887, STRIEGAU, an industrial town of Prussia, in the pro- vince of Silesia, is situated on a small tributary of the Weistritz, 30 miles to the south-west of Breslau, In 880 it contained 11,470 inhabitants, 6928 of whom Were Protestants and 4379 Roman Catholics. Their chief Occupations are tanning and the manufacture of albums, portfolios, and other articles in leather. Granite is

: dinal Stress, provided that the longitudinal stress is uniformly distributed ver each transverse section,

rie a ofp +(p+p’Viok,

quarried in the neighbourhood, and a trade is carried on in grain. It was near Striegau that Frederick the Great gained the important victory usually named after the village of Hohenfriedberg (June 4, 1745),

STROMBOLI. See Lrpart Isnanps.

STRONTIUM, a metallic chemical element intermedi- ate in its character between barium and calcium, with which it forms a natural “ triad,” Though widely diffused as a frequent companion of calcium (including oceanic), it occurs nowhere in abundance. Its most important mineral forms are the sulphate, SrSO,, known as Celestine (from the sky-blue colour of certain varieties), and the carbonate, SrCO,, called Strontianite because it was discovered first at Strontian, in Argyllshire, Scotland. Crawford and (independently of him) Cruickshanks in 1790 were the first to recognize the latter mineral as a thing of its own kind and different from witherite (BaCO,). Hope, in 1793, proved it to be the carbonate of a new earth, which discovery was confirmed by Klaproth.

Regarding metallic strontium, see CHEMISTRY, vol. y. pp. 525-6, For the making of strontium preparations strontianite, of course, is the handier raw material, being readily convertible into (for instance) nitrate by treatment with dilute nitric acid. From the nitrate the oxide, SrO, is obtained by prolonged calcination at ultimately a bright red heat, as a greyish-white absolutely infns- ible and non-volatile mass, which acts violently on water with formation of the hydrate, S1(OH),, which latter readily takes up 8H,0 of water to form crystals soluble in fifty parts of cold and far less of boiling water. “An impure oxide is obtainable directly from stroutianite by strong ignition with charcoal; and from such crude oxide pure crystals of the hydrate are easily produced by obvious operations.

In the working up of cclestine the first step is to reduce it to sulphide, SrS, by means of charcoal at a red heat. The sulphide when boiled with water is decomposed thus :—

2SrS + 2H,O =Sr0H,0 + SrSH,S. d Hydrate. Sulph-bydrate, Both products dissolve in the hot water; from the solution the § of the SrH,§, is easily

eliminated, by treatment with oxide of copper or oxide of zinc, as insoluble metallic sulphide; the filtrate on cooling gives erystals of pure hydrate. From it any strontia salt of course is easily made by means of the respective acid ; in many cases the salt wished for can be obtained similarly from the sulphide.

Nitrate of strontia from hot solutions erystallizes in anhydrous octahedra, SrN,O,, soluble in about % part of boiling and in 5 parts of cold water. From colder solutions hydrated crystals, SrN,O, + 4H.0, separate out. The anhydrous salt is used largely by pyrotechnists for the making of ‘‘red fire.”

The hydroxide some years ago part in the sugar industry as a known to be present largely in uncrystallizable molasses (see SuGar), but the process so far has failed to take root in industry.

Analysis.—To detect strontium in a salt-solution, we first eliminate the heavy metals by the successive application of sulphuretted hydrogen (and free acid) and of sulphide of ammonium in the presence of ammonia and sal-ammoniae. From the filtrate earbonate of amnionia (in the heat) precipitates only the barium, strontium, and ealeium as carbonates, whieh aro filtered off and washed with hot water. The analysis of the precipitate is diffieult ; but any strontia in it is easily detected by means of the speetroseope (seo SPECTROSCOPY).

STROPHANTHUS, a genus of plants of the natural order Apocynex, deriving its name from the long twisted thread-like segments of the corolla, which in one species attain a length of 12 or 14 inches, The genus at present comprises about 18 species, confined to tropical Africa and Asia, only one species, indigenous to the former continent, being known outside the tropics. Several of the African species furnish the natives of the countries in which they grow with the principal ingredient in their arrow poisons. The inée or onaye poison of the Gaboon, the kombé poison of equatorial North Africa, the arquah poison of the banks of the Niger, and the wanika poison of Zanzi- bar are all derived from members of this genus, The exact species used in each case cannot be said to be

1304,

in 1871 was 7082, and in 1881 it was 7848. STRUENSEE, Jowann Friepricu, Count (1737 1772), Danish statesman, was of German extraction, and was born August 5, 1737, at Halle, where his father Adam Struensee, of some eminence as a hymn writer, was pastor,

office of physician to the town of Altona through the influence of his father, who had removed thither. On

quarrelled with his father, and for some time he led an unsettled life, until in 1768 he was appointed personal physician to the young king, Christian VII. of Denmark, whom he accompanied on a tour through England, France, Holland, and Germany. The influence he exercised over the almost imbecile king awakened at first the jealousy of the queen, Caroline Matilda, a daughter of George IL, but, having had occasion to attend her for a severe

and flour-mills. Stroud at the time of the Norman survey was part of Bisley parish, from which it was separated in The local board was established in 1857. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 999 acres)

He graduated M.D. at Halle in 1756, and obtained the

account, however, of a change in his religious views he

accurately known. S. hispidus, D.C., is the one most frequently employed.

Two of the arrow poisons have been ehemieally and physio- The kombé poison was subjeeted to some preliminary experiments in 1862 by Prof. Sharpey, but was

logically examined.

more fully examined a few years subsequently by Pref 1. R.

Fraser. From the investigations of the latter! it appears that the kombé arrow poison, when given in fatal doses, paralyses the aetion of tho heart. In minute doses, however, it possesses a tonic aetion on that organ. Sinee the practieal value of

strophanthus asa medieinal agent has been pointed out by Prof.

Fraser, it has been used with considerable success in some forms of heart-disease. The chemical examination showed that its activity

is due to a glueoside, which has been named strophanthin. The wanika arrow poison has been examined physio ogieally by Dr Sydney Ringer and chemically by Mr A. W. Gerrard. its active principle, a glucoside, was found to resemble strophanthin in its action. Chemieally also, as obtained by Mr Gerrard, it scems to be identieal with strophanthin.? It is soluble in alcohol and water, but insoluble in ether and chloroform; it evolves ammonia when heated with soda-lime, but gives only a slight brown coloration when treated with strong sulphuric aeid.

Both S. hispidus and S. Kombe have hairy seeds with a slender thread-like appendage, terminating in a feathery tuft of long silky hairs, the seeds of the former being coated with short ap- pressed brown hairs, and those of the latter with white hairs ; but in the species used at Delagoa Bay and ealled “umtsuli” the thread-like appendage of the seed is abseut. Aeeording to infor- mation furnished by Messrs T. Christy & Company of London, and obtained from a correspondent on the Zanzibar coast, the natives pound the seeds into an oily mass, which assumes a red colour, portions of this mass being smeared on the arrow immedi- ately behind the barb.

See Jcones Plantarum, No. 4, 1870; Pelikan, Arch. Gen. de Afédicine, July 1865, p. 115; Van Hasselt, Arch. Neert. des Se., [2], vii., 1872, p.161; Arch. de Physiol., No, 5, 1872, p. 526; Rapport sur UInaye, Paris, 1877, 8vo.

STROUD, a market-town of Gloucestershire, is situated on the Swindon and Gloucester branch of the Great Western Railway, on a branch of the Midland Railway, and on the Thames and Severn Junction Canal, 10 miles south of Gloucester and 30 north-east of Bristol. It is picturesquely situated on an eminence environed by higher hills, but is built in a somewhat straggling and irregular fashion, Among the principal buildings are the town-hall, built in the reign of Elizabeth, the Lansdown hall (1879), the Badbrook hall (1869), with reading-room and large room for concerts, the subscription rooms (1834), and the hospital, erected in 1875 at a cost of £8754, to replace the dispensary erected in 1823. The town is the principal

seat of the west of England cloth manufacture, and possesses very extensive mills. There are also silk mills, scarlet-dye works, breweries, logwood-crushing mills,

1 See Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin., 1869-1870, p. 99; reprinted in

Jour. Anat, and Physiol., vol. vii. pp. 140~155, * Pharm, Jowr., [8], xi. pp. 884, 835,

There is little doubt, however, that

in the service of Prussia.

malady, he wou her complete confidence also, and became equally the favourite of both. When therefore in 1770 he was appointed master of requests, he virtually took the government of the kingdom into his own hands, and on the 20th September the council of state was superseded, Though acting as an absolutist, his sympathies were democratic, and he used his position to promote the general benefit of the people and to curb the influence of the nobility. The extent of his reforms, and the sudden- ness with which they were introduced, had all the practical effect of a revolution. They included the enfranchisement of the peasants, complete religious toleration, the abolition of commercial restrictions, the reorganization of the army, and the introduction of examinations for public offices, His reforms were received with consternation, and a con- spiracy was entered into to effect his overthrow. The queen dowager persuaded Christian VII. that Struensee was carrying on an intrigue with the queen, and had entered into a plot to assassinate him, in order that he might rule as regent. He and his friend Count Brandt were consequently arrested on 20th February 1772. The attempt to prove that he had been unfaithful in his duty as minister to the king failed, but he did not deny the liaison with the queen, and he and Count Brandt were both beheaded and quartered on the 28th April (sce DENMARK, Vol. vii. p. 87).

See Leben und Begebenheiten der Grafen Struensee und Brandl, 1772; Memoirs of an Unfortunate Queen, London, 1776; Hast, Struensee og hans Ministerium, Copenhagen, 1824; J enssen-Tusch, Die Verschwirung gegen die Kinigin Karoline Mathilde und die Grafen Struensee und Brandt, nach

bisher ungedriickten Original. acten, Leipsie, 1864; Wraxall, Life and Times of Queen Caroline, 1864; K. Wittich, Strwensce, Leipsie, 1879.

STRUVE, Frieprich Guore Winnetm (1793-1864), astronomer, was born at' Altona on April 15, 1793. In 1808 he entered the university of Dorpat, where he first studied philology, but soon turned his attention t0 astronomy. In 1813 he was appointed observer in the new university observatory and a few years later professor of astronomy. He remained in Dorpat, occupied with researches on double stars and in geodetic work, till 1839, when he removed to Pulkova, near St Petersburg, as director of the new Central Observatory. Here he con tinued his activity until he was obliged to retire (in 1861) owing to failing health. He died at St Petersburg on

November 23, 1864.

5 Carl Gustav Struensee von Carlsbach, elder brother of Johann Friedrich, born at Halle 18th August 1735, attained high eminence He was ennobled in 1789, became ee of finance and president of the excise department in 1791, and died a

Berlin 17th Oetober 1804.

which he carricd on for many years.

and more extensive ones of Struve.

Novus Stcllarum Duplicium).

tions, 1876). burg, 1852, fol.).

in which he had been engaged during the greater part of his life.

He had commenced them with a survey of Livonia (1816-19), which was followed by the measurement of an arc of meridian of more provinces of Russia (Beschreibung der

than 34° in the Baltic Breitengradmessung in den Ostseeprovinzen Russlands, 2 vols. 4to, Dorpat, 1831).

de 25° 20′ entre le Danube et la Mer Glaeiale, 2 vols, and 1 vol. plates, St Petersburg, 1857-60, 4to).

STRY, or Strys, a town of Galicia, Austria, is pleasantly situated on a tributary of the Dniester, about 40 miles to

the south of Lemberg. In 1880 it contained 12,625

inhabitants, chiefly engaged in tanning and the manu- In 1886, however, the town was almost wholly destroyed by fire, and its population was

facture of matches.

‘greatly reduced by the wholesale migration and deaths from privation consequent upon this calamity. STRYCHNINE. See Poisons, vol. Nox Vomica, vol. xvii. p 687. STRYPEH, Joun (1643-1737), historian and biographer,

Stepney, Church, Spitalfields. 1 merchant and silk throwster. The son was born Ist ‘November 1643. He was educated at St Paul’s School, and on 5th July 1662 entered Jesus College, Cambridge. Thence he proceeded to Catherine Hall, where he gradu- ted B.A. in 1665 and M.A. in 1669. On the 14th July of the latter year he was preferred to the curacy of l) heydon-Buis, Essex, and a few months afterwards was vhosen curate and lecturer of Low Leyton in the same ounty. On account of the smallness of the salary, the patron allowed the people to choose their own minister, }he vacancy in the vicarage remaining unfilled during the jife of Strype. He was never instituted or inducted, but n 1674 he was licensed by the bishop of London to preach and expound the word of God, and to perform the ‘Jull office of priest and curate during the vacancy of the ricarage. In his later years he obtained from Archbishop ‘fenison the sinecure of Tarring, Sussex, and he dis- vharged the duties of lecturer at Hackney till 1724. ‘Vhen he became infirm he took up his residence with Mr arris, an apothecary at Hackney, who had married his aughter, and died there 11th December 17 37, at the /avanced age of ninety-four.

_ At an early period of his life Strype obtained access to the papers \€ Sir Michael Hicks, secretary to Lord Burghley, from which he ‘rade extensive

trauscripts; he also carried on an extensive cor- spondence with Archbishop Wake and Bishops Burnet, Atter- Jory, and Nicholson. The materials thus obtained formed the “sis of his historical and biographical works, which relate chiefly », the period of the Reformation. The greater portion of his | iginal materials have been preserved, and are included in the {J

ak aS Ty

Struve’s name is best known by his obscrvations of double stars, These bodics had first been regularly measured by W. Herschel, who discovered that many of them formed systems of two stars revolving round their common centre of gravity. After him J. Herschel (and for some time South) had observed them, but their labours were eclipsed by the systematic With the 94-inch refractor at Dorpat he discovered a great number of double stars, and published in 1827 a list of all the known objects of this kind (Catalogus His micrometric measurements of | 2714 double stars were made from 1824 to 1837, and are contained

in his principal work Stellarwm Duplicium ct Multiplicium Mensure:

Mierometrice (St Petersburg, 1837, fol.; a convenient suminary of

the results is given in vol. i. of the Dunecht Observatory Publica- The places of the objects were at the same time) determined with the Dorpat meridian circle (Stellarwn Fizarum

Lmprimis Duplicium et Multiplicium Positiones Mediz, St Peters- At Pulkova he determined anew the constant of aberration, but was chiefly occupied in working out the results of former ycars’ work and in the completion of the geodetic operations

This work was afterwards extended by Struve and General Tenner into a measurement of a meridional arc from the north coast of Norway to Ismail on the Danube (Are du Méridien

xix. p. 279, and

was the son of John Strype or Van Stryp, a native of Brabant, who to escape religious persecution went to England, and settled near London, in a locality after- wards known as Strype's Yard, formerly in the parish of but subsequently annexed to that of Christ Here he carried on the business of

Lansdowne manuscripts in the British Museum. His works can scarcely be entitled original compositions, his labour having con- sisted chiefly in the arrangement of his materials, but on this very account they are of considerable value as convenicnt books of reference, easier of access and almost as trustworthy as the original documents. Besides a number of single sermons published at various periods, hc was the author of an edition of Lightfoot's Works, vol. ii., 1684; Memorials of Archbishop Cranmer, 1694; Life of Sir Thomas Smith, 1698 ; Life and Actions of John Aylmer, Bishop of London, 1701; Life of Sir John Cheke, with his Treatise on Superstition, 1705; Annals of the cformation in England, 4 vols., vol. i. 1709 (reprinted 1725), vol. ii. 1725, vol. iii. 1728, VOlPivielyel; Oded, 1725, 4 vols.; 3d ed. 1736-88, 4 vols.; Life and Actions of Edmund Grindal, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1710, of Matthew Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1711, and of John Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1818; An Accurate Edition of Stow's Survey of London, 1720, 2 vols. fol., the standard edition of Stow and of great value, although its interference with the original text is a method of editing which can scarcely be reckoned fair to the original author; and Evclestastical Memorvals, 1721, 3 vols.; 1738, 8 vols.; new ed. 1816. His Historical and Biographical Works were published in 10 vols., with a general index, 1820-40.

STUART, Stewart, or Stevart, the surname of a family who became heirs to the Scottish and ultimately to the English crown. Their descent is traced to a Norman baron Alan, whose eldest son William became progenitor of the earls of Arundel, and whose two younger sons Walter and Simon came to Scotland, Walter being appointed high steward of David I., who conferred on him various lands in Renfrewshire, including Paisley, where he founded the abbey in 1160. Walter, his grand- son, third steward, was appointed by Alexander IL justiciary of Scotland, and, dying in 1246, left four sons and three daughters. The third son Walter obtained by marriage the earldom of

Menteith, which ultimately came by marriage to Robert, duke of Albany, third son of Robert II. Alexander, fourth steward, the eldest son of Walter, third steward, inherited by his marriage with Jean, granddaughter of Somerled, the islands of Bute and Arran, and on 2d October 1263 defeated Haco at Largs. He had two sons, James and John. The latter, who commanded the men of Bute at the battle of Falkirk in 1298, had seven sons:— (1) Sir Alexander, whose grandson became in 1389 earl of Angus, the title afterwards passing in the female line to the Douglases, and in 1761 to the duke of Hamilton ; (2) Sir Alan of Dreghorn, ancestor of the earls and dukes of Lennox, from whom Lord Darnley, husband of Queen Mary, and also Arabella Stuart, were descended (3) Sir Walter, who obtained the barony of Garlies, Wigtownshire, from his uncle John Randolph, earl of Moray, and was the ancestor of the earls of Galloway, younger branches of the family being the Stewarts of Tonderghie, Wigtownshire, and also those of Physgill and Glenturk in the same county; (4) Sir James, who fell at Dupplin in 1332, ancestor of the lords of Lorn, on whose descendants were conferred at different periods the earldoms of Athole, Buchan, and Traquair, and who were also the progenitors of the Stewarts of Appin, Argyllshire, and of Grandtully, Perthshire; (5) Sir John, killed at Halidon Hill in 1333; (6) Sir Hugh, who fought under Edward Bruce in Ireland; and (7) Sir Robert of Dal- dowie, ancestor of the Stewarts of Allanton and of Coltness. James Stewart, the eldest son of Alexander, fourth steward, succeeded his father in 1283, and, after distin- guishing himself in the wars of Wallace and of Bruce, died in 1309. His son Walter, sixth steward, who had joint command with Douglas of the left wing at the battle of Bannockburn, married Marjory, daughter of Robert the Bruce, and during the latter's absence in Ireland was entrusted with the government of the kingdom. He died

in 1326, leaving an only son, who as Robert II. ascended

the throne of Scotland in 1370 (see vol. xxi. p- 490).

Sir Alexander Stewart, earl of Buchan, fourth son of

Robert II., who earned by his ferocity the title of the ‘‘ Wolf of Badenoch,” inherited by his wife the earldom of Ross, but died without legitimate issue, although from his illegitimate offspring were descended the Stewarts of Belladrum, of Athole, of Garth, of Urrard, and of St Fort. On the death of the “Wolf of Badenoch” the earldom of Buchan passed to his brother Robert, duke of Albany, also earl of Fife and earl of Menteith, but these earldoms were forfeited on the execution of his son Murdoch in 1425, the earldom of Buchan again, however, coming to the house of Stewart in the person of James, second son of Sir James Stewart, the black knight of Lorn, by Johanna, widow of King James I. From Murdoch, duke of Albany, were descended the Stewarts of Ardvoirlich and other families of the name in Perthshire, and also the Stuarts of Inch- breck and Laithers, Aberdeenshire. From a natural son of Robert II. were descended the Steuarts of Dalguise, Perthshire, and from a natural son of Robert III. the Shaw Stewarts of Blackhall and Greenock. The direct male line of the royal family terminated with the death of James V. in 1542, whose daughter Mary was the first to adopt the spelling “Stuart.” Mary was succeeded in her lifetime in 1567 by her only son James VI., who through his father Lord Darnley was also head of the second branch, there being no surviving male issue of the family from progenitors later than Robert II. In James V. sen of James [V. by Margaret, daughter of Henry VIL, the claims of the English junior branch became merged in the Scottish line, and on the death of Queen Elizabeth of England, last surviving offshoot of Henry VIIL, James VI. of Scotland, lineally the nearest heir, was proclaimed king of England, in accordance with a declaration of Elizabeth that no minor person should ascend the throne, but her cousin the king of Scots. The accession of J ames was, however, contrary to the will of Henry VIII., which favoured the Suffolk branch, whose succession would probably have marvellously altered the complexion of both Scottish and English history. As it was, the only result of that will was a tragedy initiated by Elizabeth, but con- summated by James, so as to clothe his memory with deep disgrace. In the Scottish line the nearest heir after James VL, both to the Scottish and English crowns, was Arabella Stuart, only child of Charles, earl of Lennox, younger brother of Lord Darnley,—Lady Margaret Douglas, the mother of Darnley and his brother, having been the daughter of Archibald, sixth earl of Angus by Margaret, queen dowager of James IV. James VI. (I. of England) was thus nearest heir of the junior English branch by a double descent, Arabella

Stuart being next heir by a single descent. On account of the descent from Henry VIL., the jealousy of Elizabeth had already caused her to imprison Arabella's mother (Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Cavendish) on learning that she had presumed to marry Lennox. The daughter's marriage she was determined by every possible means to prevent. She objected when King James proposed to marry her to Lord Esme Stuart, whom he had created duke of Lennox, but when the appalling news reached her that Arabella had actually found a lover in William Seymour, grandson of Catherine Grey, heiress of the Suffolk branch, she was so deeply alarmed and indignant that she immediately ordered her imprisonment. This happened immediately before Elizabeth's death, after which she obtained her release, Soon after the accession of James a conspiracy, of which she was altogether ignorant, was entered into to advance her to the throne, but this caused no alteration in her treatment by J anies, who allowed her a maintenance of £800 a year. In February 1610 it was discovered that she was engaged to Seymour, and, although she then promised never to marry him without the king's consent, the marriage took place

~

secretly in July following. In consequence of this her husband was sent to the Tower, and she was placed in private confinement. Though separated, both succeeded in escaping simultaneously on 3d June 1611; but, less fortunate than her husband, who got safe to the Con- tinent, she was captured at the Straits of Dover, and shut up in the Tower. Her hopeless captivity deprived her of her reason before her sorrows were ended by death, 27th September 1615.

By the usurpation of Cromwell the Stuarts were excluded from the throne from the defeat of Charles I. at Naseby in 1645 until the restoration of his son Charles II. in 1661. Carlyle refers to the opinion of genealogists that Cromwell "was indubitably either the ninth or the tenth or some other fractional part of half a cousin of Charles Stuart," but this has been completely exploded by Walter Rye, in the Genealogist ("The Steward Gene- alogy and Cromwell's Royal Descent," new ser., vol. ii. pp. 34-42), On the death of Charles II. without issue in 1685, his brother James, duke of York, ascended the throne as James IIL., but he so alienated the sympathies

of the nation by his unconstitutional efforts to further the Catholic religion that an invitation was sent to the prince of Orange to come “to the rescue of the laws and religion of England.” Next to the son of James If., still aa infant under his father’s control, Mary, princess of Orange, eldest daughter of James II., had the strongest claim to the crown ; but neither were the claims of the prince, even apart from his marriage, very remote, since he was the son of Mary, eldest daughter of Charles L The marriage had strengthened the claims of both, and they were pro- claimed joint sovereigns of England on 12th February 1689, Scotland following the example of England on the 11th April. They had no issue, and the Act of Settlement passed in 1701, excluding Catholics from the throne, secured the succession to Anne, second daughter of James II., and on her death without issue to the Protestant House of Hanover, descended from the princess Elizabeth, daughter of James I., wife of Frederick, count palatine of the Rhine. On the death of Anne in 1714, George, elector of Hanover, eldest son of Sophia, electress of Hanover (only surviving child of the princess Elizabeth), and Ernest, youngest son of George, duke of Brunswick, consequently became sovereign of Great Britain and Ireland, and, notwithstanding somewhat formidable at- tempts in behalf of the elder Stuart line in 1715 and 1745, the Hanoverian succession has remained uninter- rupted, and has ultimately won universal assent. The female line of James II. ended with the death of his daughter, Queen Anne. James, called James ITI. by the Jacobites and the Old Pretender by the Hanoverians, had two sons,—Charles Edward, the Young Pretender, who died without legitimate issue in 1780, and Henry, titular duke of York, commonly called Cardinal York, at whose death in 1807 the male line of James IT. came to an end. He was also the last lineal male representative of any of the crowned heads of the race, so far as either England or Scotland was concerned, and excepting of course the Hanoverian line. In the female Stuart line there are, however, still nearer heirs to the throne than those of the Hanoverian line, viz., the descendants of Henrietta, duchess of Orleans, daughter of Charles I., represented now only in Maria Theresa, married to Prince Louis Leopold of Bavaria, and their nine children. The male representation of the family, being extinct in the royal lines, is claimed by the earls of Galloway and also by the Stewarts of Castlemilk, but the claims of both are more than doubtful.

See Sir George Mackenzie’s Defence of the Royal Line of Scotland,

1685, and Antiquity of the Royal Line of Scotland, 1686 ; Craw- furd’s Genealogical History of the Royal and Ilustrious Fumily of

STU AR T

the Stuarts, 1710; Duncan Stewart's Genealogical Account of the Surname of Stewart, 1739; Andrew Stuart's Genealogical History of the Stuarts, 1798; Stothert's House of Stuart, privately printed, 1855; An Abstract of the Evidence to prove that Sir William Stewart of Jedworth, the Paternal Ancestor of the Present Earl of Galloway, was the Second Son of Sir Alexander Stewart of Darnley, 1801 ; Townend's Descendants of the Stuarts, 1858; Bailey, The Succession to the English Crown, 1879. (UY, 3pm)

STUART, Giipert (1755-1828), a distinguishtd Amer- ican portrait-painter, was born in Narragansett, Rhode Island, U.S., December 3, 1755. His father, a native of Perth, Scotland, and the son of a Presbyterian minister, had set up a snuff-mill in Narragansett, in company with another Scotsman, Dr Thomas Moffatt, and was known as "the snuff-grinder." The father removed early to New- port, where his son had the advantage of good instruc- tion. He began to draw early, but none of his sketches have been preserved. His first known pictures are of two Spanish dogs, and two portraits, the latter painted when he was thirteen years old, and now in the Redwood Library, Newport. In 1770-71 he received some instruc- tion from a Scottish artist named Cosmo Alexander, who took him to Scotland with him ; but, this patron dying soon after his arrival, Stuart, after struggling for a while at the university of Glasgow, had to work his way home in a collier. In the spring of 1775 he sailed again for England, and became the pupil and assistant of Benjamin West, with whom he painted until 1785, when he set upa studio of his own. One of his best pictures of this period is a full-length portrait of W. Grant of Congalton skating in St James's Park, now at Moor Court, Stroud, in the possession of Lord Charles Pelham Clinton. Two fine half-lengths by Stuart are in the National Gallery—his preceptor Benjamin West and the engraver Woolett. Stuart married in London and remained there, with the exception of a short visit to Dublin in 1788, until 1792, when he returned to America. Early in 1795 Stuart painted his first head of Washington. This portrait exhibits the right side of the face, and, although the least familiar, is undoubtedly the truest of the three portraits of Washington from his hand. The second was a full-length for the marquis of

Lansdowne, and the third a vignette head now belonging to the Atheneum in Boston, U.S. These last two show the left side of the face, and, although they are the readily recognized "' Stuart's Washington," are unsatisfactory as portraits and inferior as works of art. There are sixty-one replicas of these three pictures, and they have been engraved more than two hundred times. In the catalogue of Stuart's works are recorded seven hundred and fifty-four portraits. Stuart remained in Philadelphia, where he painted many of the prominent men of the country, until 1803, when he removed to Washington; two years later he went to Boston, where he died July 27, 1828.

Stuart's pictures have been little injured by time, which is doubt- less owing to his use of pure colours and to his manner of employ- ing them. His practice was to lay all the tints in their places separately and distinctly alongside of each other before any blend- ing was used, and then they were united by means of a large soft brush and without corrupting their freshness. It is this method that gives the firmness and solidity to his flesh work. A marked feature of Stuart's work is the total absence of all lines, his work being painted in with the brush from the beginning. It is this process that gives to his modelling its strength and rotundity. Stuart was pre-eminent as a colourist, and his place, judged by the highest canons in art, is unquestionably among the few recognized masters of portraiture.

STUART, Joan M'Dovatt (1818-1866), a South-Aus- tralian explorer, was born in England in 1818 and arrived in the colony about 1839. He accompanied Captain Sturt's 1844-45 expedition as draughtsman, and between 1858 and 1862 he made six expeditions into the interior, the last of which brought him on July 24 to the shores of the Indian

| rent free for seven years.

Ocean at Port Darwin, the first to have crossed the island continent from south to north. It was this transcon- tinental expedition which led to the territorial rights, and, in defiance of geographical position, the name of South Australia being extended over so much of central and north Australia. Stuart was rewarded with £3000 and a grant of 1000 square miles of

grazing country in the interior His name is perpetuated by Central Mount Stuart. He died in England June 5, 1866.

STUHLWEISSENBURG (Hung. Székes-Fehérvdr; Lat. Alba Regia), the capital of the county of Fehér, and in former times also of Hungary, is situated in 47° 11'N. lat. and 18° 25' E. long., in a fertile plain. It is the see of one of the oldest bishoprics in the country, and has a number of religious charities, convents, and nunneries, a seminary, a gymnasium, and a real school. It was the coronation and burial place of the Hungarian kings from the 10th to the 16th century, but has sunk into comparative insigni- ficance. A few yearsago some very remarkable excava- tions were made here. The town is now chiefly agri- cultural ; its fairs, especially for horses, are famous. The population (1885) numbers 27,000.

STURGEON. Sturgeons (Acipenser) are a small group of fishes, of which some twenty different species are known, from European, Asiatic, and North American rivers. The distinguishing characters of this group, as well as its position in the system, have been sufficiently indicated in the article IcuruyoLoey (vol. xii. p. 687). They pass a great part of the year in the sea, but periodically ascend large rivers, some in spring to deposit their spawn, others later in the season for some purpose unknown ; only a few of the species are exclusively confined to fresh water. None occur in the tropics or in the southern hemisphere.

Sturgeons are found in the greatest abundance in the rivers of southern Russia, more than ten thousand fish being sometimes caught at a single fishing-station in the fortnight during which the up-stream migration lasts. They occur in less abundance in the fresh waters of North America, where their capture is not confined to the rivers, the majority being caught in shallow portions of the shores of the great lakes. In Russia the fisheries are of immense value; yet but little is known of the sturgeon's habits, life, and early stages of development or growth. Early in summer the fish migrate into the rivers or towards the shores of freshwater lakes in large shoals for breeding purposes. The ova are very small, and so numerous that one female has been calculated to produce about three millions in one season. The ova of some species have been observed to hatch within a very few days after exclusion. Probably the growth of the young is very rapid, but we

have no knowledge as to the length of time for which the fry remain in fresh water before their first migration to the sea. After they have attained maturity their growth appears to be much slower, although continuing for many years. Frederick the Great attempted to introduce the sterlet into Prussia, and placed a number of this fish in the Gorland Lake in Pomerania about 1780; some of these were found to be still alive in 1866, and therefore had reached an age of nearly ninety years. Prof. Von Baer also states, as the result of direct observations made in Russia, that the hausen (Acipenser huso) attains to an age of from 200 to 300 years. Sturgeons ranging from 8 to 11 feet in length are by no means scarce, and some species grow to a much larger size.

Sturgeons are ground-feeders. With their projecting wedge-shaped snout they stir up the soft bottom, and by means of their sensitive barbels detect shells, crustaceans, and small fishes, on which they feed. Destitute of teeth, they are unable to seize larger prey.

In countries like England, where few sturgeons are

caught, the fish is consumed fresh, the flesh being firmer than that of ordinary fishes, well-flavoured, though some- what oily. The sturgeon is included as a royal fish in an Act of King Edward IL., which assigns to the sovereign all wrecks and whales, although it probably but rarely graces the royal table of the present period, or even that of the lord mayor of London, who can claim all sturgeons caught in the Thames above London Bridge. Where sturgeons are regularly caught in large quantities, as on the rivers of southern Russia and on the great lakes of North America, their flesh is dried, smoked, or salted. The ovaries, which are of large size,

“Sy,

are prepared for caviare ; for this purpose they are beaten

with switches, and then pressed through sieves, leaving the membranous and fibrous tissues in the sieve, whilst the

eggs are collected ina tub. The quantity of salt added to |

them before they are finally packed varies with the season, _ Searcely any being used at the beginning of winter. Fin- ally, one of the best sorts of isinglass is manufactured from the air-bladder. After it has been carefully removed from the body, it is washed in hot water, and cut open in its whole length, to separate the inner membrane, which has a soft consistency, and contains 70 per cent. of glutin.

The twenty species of sturgeons (Acipenser) are nearly equally divided between the Old and New Worlds. The more important are the following : —

(1) The Common Sturgeon of Europe (Acipenser sturto) occurs on all the coasts of Europe, but is absent in the Black Sea. Almost all the British specimens of sturgeon belong to this species; it erosses the Atlantic and is not rareon the eoasts of North Ameriea, It reaches a large size (a length of 12 feet), but is always caught singly or in pairs, so that it cannot be regarded as a fish of com- mercial importance. The form of its snout varies with age (as in the other species), being much more blunt and abbreviated in old than in young examples. There are 11-13 bony shields along the back and 29-31 along the side of the body.

(2) Acipenser giildenstddtid is one of the most valuable species of the rivers of Russia, where it is known under the name “ Ossétr” ; it is said to inhabit the Siberian rivers also, and to range east- wards as far as Lake Baikal. It attains to the same large size as the common sturgeon, and is so abundant in the rivers of the Black and Caspian Seas that more than one-fourth of the caviare and isinglass manufactured in Russia is derived from this species, __(8) Acipenser stellatus, the “ Seuruga” of the Russians, occurs likewise in great abundance in the rivers of the Black Sea and of the Sea of Azoff. Ithasa remarkably long and pointed snout, like the sterlet, but simple barbels without fringes. Though growing only to about half the size of the preceding species, it is of no less value, its flesh being more highly esteemed, and its caviare and isinglass fetching a higher price. In 1850 it was reported that more than a million of this sturgeon are caught annually.

(4) The sturgeon of the great lakes of North America, Acipenser rubicundus, with which, in the opinion of American ichthyologists, the sea-going sturgeon of the rivers of eastern North Amcriea, Acipenser maculosus, is identical, has of late years been made the object of a large and profitable industry at various places on Lakes Michigan and Erie; the flesh is smoked after being cut into strips and after a slight pickling in brine; the thin portions and offal are

year, averaging fifty pounds each. The sturgeons of the lakes are unable to migrate to the sea, whilst those below the Falls of N jiagara are great wanderers; and it is quite possible that a specimen of this species said to have been obtained from the Firth of Tay was really captured on the coast of Scotland.

(5) Acipenser huso, the ‘“‘Hausen” of Germany, is recognized by the absence of osseous scutes on the snout and by its flattened, tape-like barbels. It is one of the largest species, reaching the enormous length of 24 feet and a weight of 2000 pounds. It inhabits the Caspian and Black Seas and the Sea of Azoff, whence in former years large shoals of the fish entered the large rivers of Russia and the Danube. But its numbers have been much thinned, and specimens of 1200 pounds in weight have now becoine

scarce. Its flesh, caviare, and air-bladder are of less value than. those of the smaller kinds.

(6) The Sterlet (Acipenser ruthenus) is one of the smaller species, which likewise inhabits both the Black and Caspian Seas, and ascends rivers to a greater distance from the sea than any of the other sturgeons; thus, for instance, it is not uncominon in the Danube at Vienna, but specimens have been caught as high up as Ratisbon and Ulm. Itis more abundant in the rivers of Russia, where it is held in high esteem on account of its excellent flesh, contributing also to the best kinds of caviare and isinglass. As

“early as last century attempts were My made to introduce this valuable fish

4Y into Prussia and Sweden, but without success. The sterlet is distinguished from the other European species by its long and narrow snout and fringed barbels. It rarely exceeds a length of three feet.

Sturgeons with the snout prolonged in an extraordinary manner, so as to form a long spade-like or conical process (Spatularia, Polyodon, Psephwrus), occur in the Mississippi and the great rivers of China and Central Asia. None of them have been made objects of trade, but special interest is attached to them froma geographical as well as paleontological point of view, the two genera last named being represented as far back as the Lias by an allied fossil genus, Chondrosteys, and all affording a striking proof of the close affinity of the North-American and North-Asiatie faunas of the recent period.

STURM, Jacques CHaries FRANCOIS (1803-1855), the discoverer of the algebraic theorem which bears his name, was born in Geneva in 1803. Originally tutor to the son of Madame de Stael, he subsequently resolved, in conjunction with his school-fellow Colladon, to try his fortune in the French metropolis. Sturm soon made the acquaintance of the foremost mathematicians in the capital, and obtained employment on the Bulletin Universel. On the discovery of his important. theorem regarding the determimation of the number of real roots of & numerical equation which are included between given limits, on 23d May 1829, he rapidly rose to fortune and public honours. He was chosen a member of the French Academy in 1836, became “repetiteur” in 1838, and in 1840 professor in the Polytechnic School, and finally succeeded Poisson in the chair of mechanics in the Faculty of Science at Paris. He presented numerous memoirs to the Academy, of which his admirers have said, with some pardonable exaggeration, that an impartial posterity will place them by the side of the finest memoirs of Lagrange. Sturm died at Paris on the 18th December 1855.

STURT, Cartes (d. 1869), a distinguished South- Australian explorer, was born in England, and at an early age entered the army, in which he reached the rank of captain. Having landed in Australia with his regiment (the 39th), he became interested in the geographical pro- blems which at that time were exciting general attention. A first expedition (1828) led to the discovery of

the Darling river; and a second, from which the explorer returned almost blind, made known the existence of Lake Alexandrina. For some time Captain Sturt was surveyor- general of South Australia, and he afterwards filled the post of colonial secretary. The first session of the South-Australian legislature (1851) voted him a pension of £600. From his third journey (1844-5), in which terrible hardships had to be endured, he returned quite blind, and he never altogether recovered his sight. He died at Cheltenham, England, June 16, 1869.

STUTTGART, the capital of Wiirtemberg, lies in the smal] valley of the Nesenbach, just above its confluence with the Neckar, near the centre of the kingdom and

The Sterlet,

about 115 miles west-by-north of Munich. It is charm- ingly situated among vine-clad and wooded hills, and stands at a height of nearly 900 feet above the sea. The town is intersected from p—-— ar

Was

south-west to north-east} {4 \//MAGSOR by the long and handsome }& #88 SIS K6nigs-Strasse, dividing it Be

into an upper and lower half. In all its main feat- ures it is essentially a modern town, and few of its principal buildings are = older than the present cen- FY tury. Many ofits modern ° edifices are, however, of considerable architectural importance, and the recent revival of the Renaissance style is perhaps nowhere better illustrated than at Stuttgart. The lower or south-eastern half contains both the small group of k streets belonging to old E& Stuttgart and also the most important part of the new town. A large proportion of the most prominent buildings are clustered round the spacious Schloss-Platz, on or near which are the following edifices :—the new palace, an imposing structure of the 18th century, finished in 1806; the old palace, a building of the 16th century, with a picturesque arcaded court ; the

Konigsbau, a huge modern building, with a fine col- onnade, containing ball and concert rooms, shops, «ec. ;

- Scale of One English Mile Ya % %, i

Scale of Yards

Oe a ee] wo 8 400 300 300 6400 6500

@

J Ds ; ° YY y AY q : Y Ui, SY, D> ty p Gy

| pp Y ty GY Y Y, 7 I fy ky ti,

Plan of Stuttgart.

1, Palace. 5. Town-house. 8. Hospital Church.

2, Old Palace. 6. Theatre, 9, Orphanage. 3. Prinzessen Palais, 7. Crown – Prince’s 10. Museum of Art. 4. Collegiate Church, Palace.

the so-called Akademie, formerly (1775-94) the seat of the Carls-Schule, where Schiller received part of his edu- cation, and now occupied by the king’s private library and by guard-rooms; the new courts of justice; the palaces of the crown prince and of Prince William ; the Stiftskirche, or collegiate church, a fine specimen of 15th- century Gothic; the extensive royal stables ; the new post- office ; the theatre ; and the central railway station, one of the handsomest structures of the kind in Germany. In the centre of the Schloss-Platz is the lofty jubilee column

capital.

613

erected in memory of King William I. ; in the court-yard of the old palace is a bronze equestrian statue of Count Eberhard with the Beard; and adjacent is a fine statue, designed by Thorwaldsen, of Schiller, who was a native of Wiirtemberg. Among the other principal buildings are the polytechnic and

architectural schools, the Late Gothic Leonhardskirche and Spitalkirche, the fine modern Gothic church of St John, the new Roman Catholic church, the neat little English church, the synagogue, and several handsome villas and mansions, chiefly in the resuscitated Renaissance style.

The art collections of Stuttgart are numerous and valuable. The museum of art comprises a picture gallery, an almost unique collection of casts of Thorwaldsen's works, and a cabinet of engravings. The royal library contains about 350,000 printed volumes, including what is said to be the largest collection of Bibles in the world, and also 4000 MSS., many of great rarity. To these may be added the industrial museum, the cabinet of coins, the museum of natural history, the fine collection of majolica in the new palace, and the museum of antiquities. The city also contains numerous excellent educational establish- ments, though the state university is not here but at Tiibingen, and its conservatorium of music has long been renowned. Stuttgart is the centre of the publishing trade of South Germany, and has a busy industry in everything connected with the production of books. In various other industrial departments it also takes a high place, its manufactures including machinery, textile fabrics, pianos and other musical instruments, artists' colours, chemicals, sugar, and chocolate. Its trade is considerable. The population of Stuttgart in 1885 was 125,510, showing an increase of 7 per cent. since 1880. Four-fifths of these are Protestants. The town proper contains about 110,000 in- habitants, while the above total is made up by adding the populations of the suburban villages of Berg, Gablenberg, and Heslach. Stuttgart is the headquarters of the 13th corps of the German army, and contains a comparatively large garrison, for which accommodation is provided in three extensive barracks within the town and on the outskirts.

To the north-east of the new palace lies the beautiful palace park, embellished with statuary and artificial sheets of water, and extending nearly all the way to Cannstatt, a distance of over two miles. Cannstatt, a town with (1880) 16,205 inhabitants, is not officially incorporated with Stutt- gart, but may be looked on as practically forming part of it. Its beautiful situation on the Neckar, its tepid saline and chalybeate springs, and its educational advantages attract numerous visitors. In the environs of

Stuttgart and Cannstatt lie Rosenstein, the Solitude, Hohenheim, the Wilhelma, and other royal chateaus.

Stuttgart seems to have originated in a stud (‘‘Stuten Garten ”) of the early counts of Wiirtemberg, and the first mention of it occurs in a document of 1229. Its importance is of comparatively modern growth, and in early Wiirtemberg history we find it over- shadowed by Cannstatt, the central situation of which, on the Neckar, seemed to mark it out as the natural capital of the country. After the destruction of the castle of Wiirtemberg Count Eberhard, however, transferred his residence to Stuttgart (1320), and in 1482 it became the recognized capital of all the Wiirtemberg territories. Even as capital its growth was slow, and it enjoys little prominence in history. At the beginning of the present century it did not contain 20,000 inhabitants, and its real advance begins with the reign of King William I. (1816-1864), who exerted himself in every way to improve and beautify his In 1849 Stuttgart was the place of meeting of the so-called ‘*Rump Parliament” (Rumpfparlament). Among its eminent natives are Hegel (b. 1770), the philosopher, and Hauff (b. 1802), the poet and story-teller.

STYRAX. See Srorax.

STYRIA (Germ. Steiermark or Steyermark), a duchy and crownland in the Cis-Leithan part of the Austrian empire, is bounded on the north by Upper and Lower

Austria, on the E. by Hungary, on the S. by Croatia and Carniola, and on the W. by Carinthia and Salzburg. Its area is 8630 square miles. Almost the entire district is mountainous, being occupied by various chains and rami- fications of the eastern Alps; and, though Northern (or Upper) and Southern (or Lower) Styria are distinguished, the latter is low only in a relative sense. The North Limestone Alps touch Styria to the north of the Enns, beginning with the huge Dachstein (9830 feet), which rises on the north-west border of the duchy. To the south of the Enns the central chain of the Alps traverses Styria from south-west to north-east in two huge ranges, separated by the valleys of the Mur and the Miirz, and con- veniently grouped under the name of Styrian Alps. The more northerly of these two branches, forming a

prolonga- tion of the Tauern ridge, is the loftier, and culminates in the Hochgolling (9392 feet), the highest summit in Styria. The lower branch to the south is broken by the valley of the Mur, which turns abruptly to the right at its con- fluence with the Miirz, and still farther to the north-east is crossed by the Semmering Pass. To the south of the Drave the duchy is traversed by the Karawanken Mountains (highest peak, the Stou, 7346 feet), forming a continuation of the Carnie Alps. The mountains decrease in height from west to east, and the south-east part of Styria may be described as hilly rather than mountainous, There is nowhere level ground enough to form a plain in the proper acceptation of the term, but some of the valleys contain a good deal of fertile land. The rivers of Styria all drain into the Danube; the Save and the Traun are the most important of those not already mentioned. There are numerous small mountain lakes. The climate, of course, varies with the configuration of the surface, and there is a mean annual difference of about 7° Fahr. between the temperature of the north-west and the south-cast.

In spite of the irregular nature of the surface, but little of the soil can be called unproductive. About 21:40 per cent. is under tillage, 12°75 in meadow, and 16°75 in pasture, while nearly a half of the total area is covered with fine forests. The chief crops are oats, maize, rye, wheat, buckwheat, potatoes, and flax. Wine is produced in the valleys of Lower Styria, where large quantities of chestnuts are also grown. In the mountaius dairy-farming is successfully carried on in the Alpine fashion, and good horses are rearcd in the valley of the Enns. Sheep are comparatively few, but there are large numbers of goats and swine, while poultry-rearing and bee-keeping are very general in the Slavonic districts to the south. Some fairly successful attempts have also been made to breed silkworms, Trout and other fish are abundant in the rivers and mountain lakes and chamois are hunted among the higher Alps,

The great wealth of Styria, however, lies underground. Its ex- tensive and important iron mines yield nearly one-third of the iron ore raised in the Austrian empire, and its other mineral resources include brown coal, pit-coal, copper, zinc, lead, graphite, a little gold and silver, nickel, alum, cobalt, salt, dyer’s earth, potter’s clay, marble, and good mill and building stones. The best known of

its numcrous mineral springs are the thermal springs of Tiiffer, the alkaline springs of Rohitsch, and the brine springs of Aussee.

out of the country in large quantities,

above-named manufactures, and in brown coal, cattle, wine, and fruit. rivers (Drave, Save, Mur), the traffic of the duchy is facilitated by 600 miles of railway.

The population of Styria in 1880 was 1,213,597, equivalent to 140 per square mile, a proportion which, while not high in itself, 1s considerably above the rate in the other mountainous regions of

. Nearly the whole of these profess the Roman Catholic faith, the Protestants numbering only 8000 and the Jews about (Two-thirds of the inhabitants are Germans ; the remainder, chiefly found in the south parts of the duchy, in the valleys of the Drave and Save, are Slavs (Slovenes), About 65 per cent. are supported by agricultural pursuits, including forestry. The educa- tion of the crownland centres in the university of Gratz, which is

attended by about 1200 students. The capital and seat, of the ad- ministration is Gratz (100,000 inhabitants), which is also the head- quarters of the third corps of the Austrian army ; the only other town of any size is Marburg (17,600). The provincial estates con- sist of 63 members, including the two Roman Catholic bishops, the rector of the university, 12 representatives of the large landowners, 23 of the peasants, 19 of the towns, and 6 of the chambers of com- merce. Styria sends 23 members to the imperial parliament.

In the Roman period Styria, which even thus early was famed for its iron and steel, was inhabited by the Celtic Taurisci, and divided geographically between Noricum and Pannonia. Subse- quently it was successively occupied or traversed by Visigoths, Huns, Ostrogoths, Langobardi, Franks, and Avars. Towards the end of the 6th century the last-named began to give way to the Slavs (Wends), who ultimately madc themselves masters of the entire district. Styria was included in the con quests of Charlemagne, and

was henceforth comprised in the German marks erected against the Avar and the Slav. At first the identity of Styria is lost in the great duchy of Carinthia, corresponding more or less closcly

to the Upper Carinthian mark. This duchy, however, afterwards

fell to pieces, and a distinct mark of Styria was recognized, taking its name trom the margrave Ottocar of Steier (1056). A century or so later it was created a duchy. In 1192 the duchy of Styria came by inheritance to the honse of Austria, and from that time it shared the fortunes of Upper and Lower Austria, passing like them to the Hapsburgs in 1282. The Protestant Reformation met an early and general welcome in Styria, but the dukes took the most stringent ineasures to stamp it out, offering their subjects recantation or expatriation as the only alternatives. At least 30,000 Protestants preferred exile, and it was not till about 100 years ago that religious liberty was recognized. The modern history of Styria has been similar to that of the other Austrian crownlands, and calls for no special remark,

STYX, a river which the Greeks fabled to flow in the world of the dead. Homer speaks of it as a river of Hades by which the gods swore their most solemn oaths, and he couples it with the Cocytus and the Pyriphlege- thon, the river of wailing and the river of burning fire. Hesiod says that Styx was a daughter of Ocean, and that, when Zeus summoned the gods to Olympus to help him to fight the Titans, Styx was the first to come and her children with her; hence as a reward Zeus ordained that the most solemn oath of the gods should be by her and that her children (Emulation, Victory, Power, and Force) should always live with him. In another passage he says that Styx (whom, somewhat contradictorily, he describes as abhorred by the immortal gods) dwells far off from the gods in a beautiful house overarched with rocks and supported by tall silver pillars, which may be meant as a description of a stalactitic cave. Again Hesiod tells us that if any god, after pouring a libation of the water of Styx, forswore him- self, he had to lie in a trance for a year without speaking or breathing, and that for nine years afterwards he was ex- cluded from the society of the gods. In historical times the Styx was identified with a lofty waterfall near Nonacris in Arcadia. Pausanias describes the cliff over which the water falls as the highest he had ever seen, and indeed the fall is the highest in Greece. The

scenery is wild and deso- late. The water descends in two slender cascades, which, after winding among the rocks, unite and fall into the river Akrata (the ancient Crathis). The ancients regarded the water as poisonous, and thought that it possessed the power of breaking or dissolving vessels of every material, with the exception of the hoof of a horse or ass, or (according to others) of horn. The Arcadians used to swear by it on im- portant occasions. The people in the neighbourhood still hold that the water is unwholesome, and that no vessel will hold it. They call it the Black Water or the Terrible Water.

Considering the prominence given by the ancients to an oath by the water of Styx, and comparing the effect supposed to follow from breaking that oath with the destructive power supposed to be possessed by the water, we are tempted to conjecture that drinking the water was originally a necessary part of the oath,—that in faet in the stories of the Styx we have traditions of an ancient poison ordeal such as is commonly employed amongst barbarous peoples as a means of eliciting the truth (see ORDEAL).

See Leake, Travels in the Morea, iii. p. 156 sq; M. G. Clark, Peloponnesus, p. 802 sq.; Curtius, Peloponnesos, i. p. 195 sq.; Wordsworth, Greece, p. 384,

SUA—SUA

SUAKIN, or Suwakim, more correctly SawAxrn, the chief port of the Soudan on the Red Sea and the starting- place of caravans for Kassala and Berber, occupies a small island, placed in a deep bay in 19° 5’N. lat. The custom- house and Egyptian Government offices present a good frontage to the sea, and the principal houses are stately white structures, three stories high, not unlike those of Jiddah, With these, however, are intermingled shapeless huts, each with its courtyard walled in with mats. There are also the usual Greek drinking-shops, with their dirty loungers in coats and fez-caps, and a short street of coffee- houses and shops. The mosques are not remarkable. Passing through the bazaar and turning to the right past the tomb of Sheikh ‘Ali, one comes to an open space at the head of the recent causeway which unites the island to the mainland town of Al-Kaff (Al-Keif). The main street of Al-Kaff is (or was before the recent war) the busy centre of life and movement, while the side streets are oceupied by smithis,

forging lance-heads and knives ; leather workers, who drive a brisk trade in the amulets—passages of the Koran sewn up in leather cases—which the natives wear on their arms or round their necks ; and hairdressers, greasing and powdering with the dust of a red wood the bushy locks of the Hadendoa dandies. Beyond the town is a suburb of straw huts with their simple furniture of a bedstead, a few dishes, and a rubbing stone for the millet which with milk forms the chief food of the natives. Here too are the booths of the silversmiths, who make bracelets, anklets, ear and nose rings, for the women. The Hadendoa, a tall stalwart race, picturesquely draped in huge wrappers, to which the women add a petticoat, are most numerous on the mainland. The population of the island is mixed, with a large infusion of Arab blood. ‘The export trade of Suakin before the revolt of the Soudan yielded a customs revenue of £60,000 a year, the chief articles besides the ivory, which was a Government monopoly, being gum, cotton, sesame, senna, and hides. The total yearly trade was estimated at a million sterling.

The environs of Suakin, though not so absolutely desert as the opposite Arabian coast, are less wooded than some points (e.9., Sheikh Barghtit) whieh lie as conveniently for the inland trade. The island is without water and the harbour indifferent ; yet the settlement is ancient. Here as at Massowah traders were presum- ably attracted by the advantages of an island site which protected them from the nomads. The country inland from all this coast belonged in the Middle Ages to the Boja (Bejah), a rnde pastoral raee who appear to be identical with the Blemmyes of classical writers and of whom Hadendoa, Bisharin, and Ababdah are the modern representatives. ‘The trading places seem to have been always in the hands of foreigners since Ptolemais Theron was established by Ptolemy Philadelphus for intercourse with the ele- phant hunters. After Islam many Arabs settled on the coast and mixed with the heathen Boja, whose rule of kinship and succession in the female line helped to give the children of mixed marriages a leading position (Makriai, Khitat, i. 194 sq., translated in Burek- hardt’s Travels in Nubia, App. iii.). Thus in 13380 Ibn Batita found a son of the emir of Mecca reigning in Suakin over the Boja, who were his mother’s kin. Makrizi says that the chief inhabitants were nominal Moslems and were called Hadarib. The emir of the Hadarib was still sovereign of the mainland at the time of Burck- hardt’s visit (1814), though the island had an aga appointed by the Turkish pasha of Jiddah. The place was settled by the

Turks under Seliin the Great, but Turkish (or Egyptian) control over the mainland was not effective till the Egyptian conquest of the Soudan. Till the suppression of the slave trade, Suakin was an important slave port; of late years slaves have been secretly run across the Red Sea from less frequented points on the eoast. But legitimate commierce was rapidly growing before the revolt of the Soudan, and the port was visited by English, Egyptian, and Italian steamers.

SUARDI, Bartotommeo, usually known as BRAMAN- TINO from his master Bramante, was a distinguished painter and architect of the Milanese school. He was specially famed for his knowledge of perspective, and Lomazzo (Tratt. d. Pitt., iii. 1) praises him highly for the deceptive realism of his painting. The dates of his birth and death are unknown, but he was probably quite young when,

about 1495, he visited Rome in company with his master Bramante ; there he is said to have been employed as a painter by the pope, and he evidently spent much time in studying the remains of classical buildings in Rome, A number of measured drawings by his hand are still pre- served in the Brera library at Milan. Vasari mentions that he had seen a book of drawings by Bramantino of the early Lombardic churches of Northern Italy, such as S. Ambrogio at Milan and S. Pictro in Ciel d’Oro at Pavia,— a remarkable thing at a time when these noble structures were usually despised as being barbarous in style. The greater part of Bramantino’s frescos are now lost, partly because he was specially employed to paint the external facades of houses and public buildings, such as the mint at Milan. One, however, still exists over the doorway of 8. Sepolcro, a highly foreshortened figure of Christ, with the Madonna and Saints. He also painted some angels

Which still exist in the church of S. Eustorgio, also in

Milan. In 1513 he received eighty gold crowns for a Piet’ and Saints painted in the sacristy for the Cistercian monks of Chiaravalle, near Milan. In 1525 he was ap- pointed architect and painter to Francesco II. of Milan, and he was employed as military engineer to reconstruct the walls of the city, which was then threatened by the army of Charles V. The church of §.

Satiro in Milan is usually attributed to Bramantino, but it appears to have been mainly designed by Bramante. Bramantino died between 1530 and 1536. He left an able pupil called Agostino di Milano, who worked chiefly as an architect. SUAREZ, Francisco (1548-1617), Spanish theologian and philosopher, was born at Granada on the 5th of January 1548. After completing his studies at the university of Salamanca, he entered the Society of Jesus in 1564. The accounts of his early years represent him as backward in his development, and it was not without difficulty that he obtained admission to the order. Under the direction of Father Rodriguez, however, he threw off his mental slough and discovered powers of mind of the highest order. He is said to have habitually devoted seventeen hours a day to study, and wonders are reported of his prodigious memory. He was soon appointed to teach philosophy at Segovia, and he afterwards taught theology at Valladolid, at Alcala, at Salamanca, and at Rome successively. After taking his doctorate at Evora, he was named by Philip IL. principal professor of theology in the university of Coimbra. Suarez may be considered almost the last eminent representative of scholasticism, and his works in twenty-three folio volumes treat, after the scholastic method and with scholastic comprehensive- ness, all the main subjects of medizeval philosophy and theology. In philosophical doctrine he adhered to a moderate Thomism. On the question of universals he endeavoured to steer a middle course between the panthe- istically inclined realism of Duns Scotus and the extreme nominalism of William of Occam. The only veritable and real unity in the world of existences is the individual ; to assert that the universal exists separately ex parte rei would be to reduce individuals to mere accidents of one indivisible form. Suarez maintains that, though the humanity of Socrates does not differ from that of Plato, yet they do not constitute realiter one and the same humanity ; there are as many “formal unities” (in this case, humanities) as there are individuals, and these individuals do not constitute a factual, but only an essen- tial or ideal unity (“‘ita ut plura individua, quae dicuntur esse ejusdem nature, non sint unum quid vera entitate que sit in rebus, sed solum fundamentaliter vel per intel- lectum”). The formal unity, however, is not an arbitrary creation of the mind, but exists “‘in natura rei ante omnem operationem intellectus.” In theology, Suarez attached

616 5S U Bee

himself to the doctrine of Molina, the celebrated Jesuit professor of Evora. Molina tried to reconcile the doctrine of predestination with the freedom of the human will by saying that the predestination is consequent upon God's foreknowledge of the free determination of man's will, which is therefore in no way affected by the fact of such predestination. God gives to all men grace sufficient for their salvation, but some co-operate freely with this grace, while others resist it. Suarez endeavoured to reconcile this view with the more orthodox doctrines of the efficacy of grace and special election, maintaining that, though all share in an absolutely sufficient grace, there is granted to the elect a grace which is so adapted to their peculiar dis- positions and circumstances that they infallibly, though at the same time quite freely, yield themselves to its influ- ence, This mediatizing system was known by the name of ''congruism." Suarez is probably more important, however, as a philosophical jurist than as a theologian or metaphysician. In his extensive work 7ractatus de Legibus ac Deo Legislatore (reprinted, London, 1679) he is to some extent the precursor of Grotius and Pufendorf. Though his method is throughout scholastic, he covers the same ground, and Grotius speaks of him in terms of high respect. The fundamental position of the work is that all legislative as well as all paternal power is derived from God, and that the authority of every law resolves itself into His. Suarez conclusively refutes the patriarchal theory of government and the divine right of kings 'founded upon it,~—doctrines popular at that time in Eng- land and to some extent on the Continent, Adam, he remarks, possessed only a domestic or patriarchal, not a political authority. Power by its very nature belongs to no one man but to a multitude of men ; and the reason is obvious, since all men are born equal. It has been pointed out that this accords well with the J esuit policy of depreciating the royal while exalting the papal preroga- tive. But Suarez is much more moderate on this point than a writer like Mariana, approximating to the modern view of the rights of ruler and ruled, [n 1613, at the instigation of Pope Paul V., Suarez wrote a treatise dedi- cated to the Christian princes of Europe, entitled Defensio Catholice Fidei contra Anglicanx Sectx Errores. This was directed against the oath of allegiance which James I. exacted from his subjects. James caused it to be burned by the common hangman, and forbade its perusal under the severest penalties, complaining bitterly at the same tune to Philip IIT. that he should harbour in his dominions a declared enemy of the throne and majesty of kings. In France extracts from

the treatise were condemned to the flames by the parlement of Paris on similar grounds, Suarez died after a few days' illness on 25th September 1617 at Lisbon, whither he had gone to be present at an ecclesiastical conference,

The collected works of Suarez have been printed at Mainz and Lyons (1630) and at Venice (1740), also more recently at Besancon (1856-62) and in the colleetion of the Abbé Migne. His life has been written by Desehamps (Vita Fr, Suaresti, Perpignan, 1671). The chief modern authorities are K. Werner's Franz Suarez u. die Scholastik der letzten Jahrhunderte (Ratisbon, 1861) and the third volume of Stéckl's Geschichte der Philosophie des Mittelalters,

SUBIACO, a town of Italy, in the province of Rome, 25 miles east of Tivoli and 42 from the capital, is pictur- esquely situated on the right bank of the Teverone. It has iron-works and paper-mills, and in 1881 the population of the town was 6503 (commune, 7017), having decreased from 7452 in 1868,

Subiaeo, the Subdlaquewm of the Romans, was so called from its position under the artificial lakes constructed in connexion with one of the villas of the emperor Nero. In all probability there was no town in aneient times, and the modern town of Subiaco appears to have grown up subsequent to the establishment of the Bene- dictine monasteries in this neighbourhood. Of these the most

remarkable are Santa Scolastica,! which was built by the abbot Honoratus, and by the 11th century ranked as a regular princi- pality; and Sacro Speco, which has gathered its curious cluster of buildings round the cave in which St Benedict himself found an asylum (see vol. iii. p. 557). The points of most interest in the town, which still bears on the whole a elearly medieval impress, arc associated with Pope Pius VI. It was Pius who restored and ex- tended the great castle, erected in 1068 by Abbot John V., and long used as a summer residence by the popes; and it was he who built the costly ehurch of Sant' Andrea. His visit to the town in 1789 is commemorated by a triumphal arch. The first book printed in Italy was the Subiaco Lactantius of 1465.

SUBLEYRAS, Prerre (1699-1749), French painter, who passed nearly his whole life at Rome, was born at Uzés (Gard) in 1699. He left France for Italy in 1728, having carried off the great prize. He there painted for the canons of Asti Christ's Visit to the House of Simon the Pharisee (Louvre, engraved by Subleyras himself), a large work, which made his reputation and procured his admission into the Academy of St Luke. Cardinal Valenti Gonzaga next obtained for him the order for Saint Basil and the Emperor Valens (small study in Louvre), which was executed in mosaic for St Peter's. Benedict XIV. and all the princes of Rome sat to him, and the pope him- self commanded two great paintings—the Marriage of St Catherine and the Ecstasy of St Camilla—which he placed in his private apartments. For various religious corpora- tions at Milan, Perugia, and other places, and for various great persons many important altar-pieces were also exe- cuted ; but Subleyras shows greater individuality in his curious genre pictures, which he produced in considerable number (Louvre). It is in his illustrations of La Fontaine and Boccaccio that his true relation to the modern era comes out ; and his drawings from nature are often admir- able for their grave sobriety of treatment (see one of a man draped in a heavy cloak in the British Museum). Exhausted by overwork, Subleyras tried a change to Naples, but returned to Rome at the end of a few months to die (28th May 1749). His wife, the celebrated minja- ture painter, Maria Felice Tibaldi, was sister to the wife of Trémolliére,

SUCCESSION DUTY is a sum paid to the state by a person benefited by the succession to certain kinds of pro- perty. Legacies were first taxed in 1780. It was not until 1853 that a tax was levied upon succession to real property, or succession under any instrument other than a will by which property is enjoyed in succession to a deceased person. The duty is paid on succession to both real and personal property, in fact, in almost all cases which do not fall within the Legacy Duty Acts. The Succession Duty Act, 1853 (16 and 17 Vict. c. 51), defines succession as "every past or future disposition of property by reason whereof any person has or shall become benefi- cially entitled to any property, or the income thereof, upon the death of any person dying after the time appointed for the commencement of this Act, either immediately or after any interval, either certainly or contingently, and either originally or by way of substitutive limitation, and every devolution by law of any beneficial interest in pro- perty, or the

income thereof, upon the death of any person dying after the time appointed for the commencement of this Act to any other person in possession or expectancy." There are certain exemptions, the most important being successions of a husband or wife, successions where the whole value is under £100, individual successions under the value of £20, and legacies and shares of personal – estate chargeable under the Legacy Duty Acts. The duties levied vary from 1 to 10 per cent., according to the degree of consanguinity between the predecessor and the Successor. Leasehold property and personalty directed to be converted into real estate are liable to succession and

1 For the Santa Scolastica library, see LIBRARIES, vol. xiv. p. 530.

not to legacy duty. Special provision is made for the collection of the duty in the case of joint tenants, in the case where the successor is also the predecessor, and in other dispositions of a special nature. The duty is a first charge on property ; but, if the property be parted with be- fore the succession duty be paid, the liability of the suc- cessor appears to be transferred to the alienee. A bona fide purchaser is protected by a receipt for duty, notwithstand- ing any suppression or mis-statement in the account on the footing of which the duty was assessed, or any insuffi- ciency of such assessment. It is usual in requisitions on title before conveyance to demand for the protection of the purchaser the production of receipts for succession duty. Recent legislation has made some amendments in the law. By 43 Vict. c. 14, s. 11, succession duty may be commuted in certain cases by the Commissioners of Inland Revenue. 44 Vict. c. 12, s. 36, relieves from payment of succession duty on personal estate not exceeding £300 by payment of a sum of thirty shillings on the affidavit or in- ventory. Section 41 exempts from payment of the 1 per cent. duty in respect of property for which stamp duty has been paid on the affidavit or inventory. Up to 1885 certain property vested in bodies corporate and unincor- porate escaped liability to succession duty. 48 and 49 Vict. c. 51, s, 11, now imposes on such bodies (with con- siderable exceptions) a duty at the rate of 5 per cent. on the annual value, income, or profits of the succession. All the Acts which have been cited extend to the United Kingdom.

In the United States succession duty is regulated by tit. xxxv. ch. 10 of the Revised Statutes. The duty varies from 1 to 6 per cent., according to the degree of consanguinity.

SUCHET, Louis Gasriez, Duc p'ALBurera (1770- 1826), marshal of France, one of the most brilliant of Napoleon's generals, was the son of a silk manufacturer at Lyons, where he was born on 2d March 1770. He origin- ally intended to follow his father's business ; but the Revolu- tion of 1789 altered the bent of his ambition, and, having in 1792 served as volunteer in the cavalry of the national guard at Lyons, he manifested military abilities which secured hig rapid promotion. As chef de bataillon he was present at the siege of Toulon in 1793, where he took General O'Hara prisoner. During the Italian campaign of 1796 he dis- tinguished himself in most of the important contests and was severely wounded at Cerea on 11th October. In October 1797 he was appointed to the command of a demi- brigade, and in the following year hig services in Switzer- land were recognized by his promotion to the rank of general of brigade. He then went to Egypt, but soon afterwards was recalled, and in August made chief of the staff to Brune, to whom he rendered invaluable assistance in restoring the efficiency and discipline of the army in Italy. In July 1799 he was made general of division to Joubert in Italy, and, after being continued in the same office by his successors, was in 1800 named by Masséna his second in command. Soon afterwards he had an opportunity of manifesting those qualities which entitle him to rank among the most daring and clever tacticians of his time; his dexterous resistance to the superior forces of the Austrians with the left of Masséna, when the right and centre were shut up in Genoa, not only prevented the invasion of France from this direc- tion but powerfully contributed to the success of Napoleon's strategy of crossing the Alps, which culminated in the battle of Marengo on 14th June. He took a prominent part in all the subsequent events of the Italian campaign till the peace of Lunéville, 9th February 1801. In the campaigns of 1805 and 1806 he greatly increased his re- putation, more especially at Austerlitz, Saalfeld, Jena, Pultusk, and Ostrolenka. He obtained the title of count on 19th March 1808, and, after taking part in the siege

of Saragossa, was named generalissimo of the army of Aragon and governor of the province, which, by wise ad- ministration no less than by his brilliant valour, he in two years brought into complete submission. the army of Blake at Maria on 14th June 1809, and on 22d April 1810 inflicted a severe defeat on O'Donnell. being made marshal of France, 8th J uly 1811, he in 1812 achieved the conquest of Valencia, for which he was re- warded with the title of Duc d'Albufera. By Louis XVIIL he was on 4th June made a peer of France, but, having assisted Napoleon during the "hundred days," deprived of his peerage on 24th J uly 1815. He died near Marseilles on 3d January 1826. Suchet was the author of Mémoires sur ses Campagnes en Espagne, 2 vols., 1829-34.

He annihilated

After

he was

See C.-H. Barault-Roullon, Le Maréchal Suchet, Paris, 1854;

T. Choumara, Considérations militaires sur les mémotres du Maréchal Suchet, Paris, 1840.

SU-CHOW. There are in China three cities of this

name which deserve mention. (1) Su-chow, formerly one of the largest cities in the world, and still in 1880 credited

with a population of 500,000, in the province of Kiang-su, on the great Imperial Canal, 55 miles west-north-west of Shanghai. The site is practically a cluster of islands to the east of Lake Tai-hu, and streams and canals give com- munication with most parts of the province. The walls are about 10 miles in circumference and there are four large suburbs. Su-chow is a great commercial and manufactur- ing centre, the silk manufacture being represented by a greater variety of goods than are produced anywhere else in the empire; and the publication of cheap editions of the Chinese classics is carried to great perfection. 'There is a Chinese proverb to the effect that to be perfectly happy a man ought to be born in Su-chow, live in

Canton, and die in Lian-chow. The great nine-storied pagoda of the northern temple is one of the finest in the country. In 1860 Su-chow was captured by the Taipings, and, when in 1865 it was recovered by the valour and enterprise of General Gordon, the city, which had formerly been famous for its large and handsome buildings, was almost reduced to a heap of ruins. Of the original splendour of the place some idea may be gathered from the beautiful native plan on a slab of marble preserved since 1247 in the temple of Confucius and reproduced in Yule's Marco Polo, vol. i. Su-chow was founded in 484 by Ho-lu-Wang, whose grave is covered by the artificial "Hill of the Tiger" in the vicinity of the town. 'The literary and poetic designation of Su-chow is Ku-su, from the great tower of Ku-su-tai, built by Ho-lu-Wang. (2) Su-chow, formerly Tsiu-tsuan- tsiun, a free city in the province of Kan-suh, in 39° 48' 3" N. lat. (according to Sosnofskii), just within the extreme north-west angle of the Great Wall, near the gate of jade. It is the great centre of the rhubarb trade, and used to be the residence, alternately with Lian-chow-fu, of the governor of the province. Completely destroyed in the Dungan insurrection (1865-72), it was recovered by the Chinese in 1873 and has been rebuilt. (3) Su-chow, a commercial town situated in the province of Sze-chuen at the junction of the Min river with the Yang-tse-kiang, in 28° 46' 50" N. lat.

SUCKER. See Lump-sucker.

SUCKLING, Sir Joun (1609-1642), one of the most admired poets and men of fashion at the court of Charles L., and an active spirit in politics as well as in fashionable gaieties, belonged to a Norfolk family. His father was a high official under James I. and a comptroller of the household under Charles I.; finance seems to have been his strong point, and he managed his own affairs so well as to accumulate a considerable fortune, of which the poet was left master at the age of eighteen. His earliest bio- graphers fixed his birth in 1613, and founded on this a

reputation for extraordinary precocity in school learning. Mr Alfred Suckling, who edited his works in 1836, cor- rected this error, ascertaining

that he was born at Whitton in Middlesex and baptized on 10th February 1609. He was sent to Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1623, at what was then the usual age, and thereafter travelled on the Continent, as was also the custom for youths of his birth. Returning to London, he did not long remain inactive at court, but sought experience as a soldier, volunteering into the force raised by the marquis of Hamilton for the support of Gustavus Adolphus in the Palatinate. He reached Germany in July 1631 and was back at Whitehall in May 1632; but during this time he saw a good deal of hard service, being present at the battle of Leipsic and the sieges of Crossen, Guben, Glogau, and Magdeburg. Reappearing at court, he at once became a prominent figure. 'He had the peculiar happiness of making everything that he did become him." He was ready of wit, handsome of person, wealthy and generous, a leader in all pastimes, the best bowler and the best card-player at court. His happy skill in verse was only

one of the distinctions of a man who excelled in every-

thing ; but, as it happened, both the king and the queen had literary tastes, and he aimed at distinction in poetry with the ardent thoroughness which seems to have been part of his character. He became eminent at court just at the time when masques, after being the rage for a few years, had reached the height of their splendour and were beginning to pall; and it occurred to him to apply to the ordinary drama the improved scenery which the taste for masques had developed. We can trace in his plays both the taste for spectacular effect and the admiration for the wit of Shakespeare which he shared with his royal master. Aglaura was the first of them, and is said to have been the first play produced with elaborate stage scenery. It was produced first at Christmas in 1637 with a tragic ending, then reproduced at the following Easter with ingenious changes in the fifth act which made it end happily. With all its clever play on words and images, and its natural felicity of diction, it is not an interesting drama to read; the characters have no body or vitality. But it is full of incident, as if the dramatist were revelling in the newly discovered power of shifting the scenes, and making the most of his advantage in having the co-opera- tion of Inigo Jones. His comedy the Goblins is much happier, and there the frequent changes of scene are used with great skill to maintain the liveliness of the action. Suckling produced another tragedy in 1639, Brennorald ; it has more body

than its predecessor, but shows no mas. tery of passion or tragic character. He began still another tragedy, the Sad One, but was abruptly stopped in his literary career by the beginning of a tragedy in real life, the quarrel between Charles and his subjects. Suckling took a prominent part for a time on the Royalist. side. When war was levied on the Scottish Covenanters in 1639 Suckling raised a troop of a hundred horse at his own expense and accompanied them on the bloodless expedi- tion to the Border. He was elected member for Bramber to the Long Parliament which met in November 1640 bit in May of the following year he got into trouble in con- nexion with a plot for the escape of Strafford from the Tower and a project for calling in French aid, was charged with high treason, and fled beyond sea. The circumstances of his short life in exile are obscure, He continued to attract attention, and many pamphlets about him were

circulated, one in particular describing how he eloped with a lady to Spain and fell into the clutches of the Inquisition. The tradition is that he committed suicide in Paris some time before the end of 1642. Suckling's

reputation as a poet rests not upon his plays but upon

his minor pieces, They have wit and fancy and at times exquisite felicity of diction. The happiest as a whole is the Ballad upon a Wedding. « Prithee, why so pale, fond lover?" is an occasional song in Aglaura.

A collection of Suckling's poems was first published in 1646 with the title Fragmenta Aurea. The so-called Selections published by Mr Alfred Suckling in 1836 is really a full edition of his poems, letters, and_plays, which was re-edited, with slight additions, by Mr W. C. Hazlitt in 1874.

SUCRE, the capital of Bolivia, formerly known as Chuquisaca, but renamed in honour of General Sucre, the first president of the republic. Lying in 19° 2'45" §. lat. and 65° 17' W. long., at a height of 9183 feet above the sea, in a valley which drains southwards to the Pilecomayo (see PuaTE River), it enjoys an agreeable climate and has its markets well supplied with fruits and vegetables. The city is the seat of the archbishopric of La Plata and Char- cas, founded in 1609, and contains a magnificent

cathedral and several imposing churches and convents, Fora long time the university and colleges of Chuquisaca were among the most frequented in South America, and they are still of some note. The inhabitants, who are mainly of Indian origin, are variously stated to number 24,000 (Ondarza) and 12,000 (Almanac de Gotha).

The Spanish city of Chuquisaca was founded in 1539 on the site of a Peruvian town, whose original name survived the Spanish designation of Ciudad la Plata. It became in 1609 the seat of the supreme court of justice for the South American colonies—‘‘ Real Audiencia de la Plata y Charcas’’—Charcas being the name of a native tribe often given to the Chuquisaca district, and even to the city (Maria de las Charcas).

SUDAN. See Soupan.

SUDBURY, an ancient borough and market town of England, chiefly in Suffolk, but partly in Essex, is situated on the river Stour, forming the boundary between the two counties, and on a branch of the Great Eastern Railway, 19 miles south of Bury St Edmunds and 58 north-east of London. It is well built and well paved and contains a number of good houses. It is chiefly interesting from its three parish churches of All Saints, St Peter’s, and St Gregory’s. All Saints, dating from 1150 and consisting of chancel, nave, aisles, and tower, is chiefly Perpendicu- lar,—the chancel, however, being Decorated. It possesses a fine oaken pulpit of 1490. The church was restored in 1882. St Peter’s is Perpendicular, with a unique coved nave roof. St Gregory’s, once collegiate, in the Perpen- dicular style, was partly built by Simon Tybald, archbishop of Canterbury, who was beheaded by Wat Tyler’s mob. He established also a college for secular priests, of which a gateway still remains. The grammar-school was founded by William Wood in 1491. The principal modern build- ings are the town-hall, the corn exchange, the literary and mechanics’ institute, and St Leonard’s hospital. The town owed its early importance to the introduction of woollen inanufactures by the Flemings at the instance of Edward III, but this was afterwards replaced by silk crape, jacquard satin, &c.; the manufacture has now greatly de- clined, Cocoa-nut matting is an important manufacture, and there are also flour-mills, malt-kilns, lime-works, and brick and tile yards. A declining trade is carried on by the river, which is navigable up to the

town. The area of the municipal borough is 1459 acres, and includes, besides the parishes of All Saints, St Gregory, and St Peter, Balling- don cum Brundon in Essex and St Bartholomew. The population in 1871 was 6908, and 6584 in 1881.

Sudbury is supposed to have been in early times the chief town in Suffolk, and to have received its name in contradistinction to Norwich in Norfolk. By the Conqueror it was given to Richard de Clare, and from the earls of that name it obtained important privileges. It isa borough by prescription, but obtained its first charter from Mary in 1554. It obtained others from Cromwell and James II., and its governing charter is that of Charles IJ. From the reign of Elizabeth it sent one member to parliament until it was disfranchised in 1844,

SU D—SUE

SUDRAS. See BrauManism,vol. iv. p.203sq¢.,and Casts.

SUE, JosepH Marie (1804-1859), generally known as EuGckne Sug, French novelist, ranked by some as the chief practitioner of the melodramatic style in fiction, was born at Paris on 10th December 1804. Unlike most volumin- ous writers of light literature, Sue was a man of fortune. He was the son of a surgeon in Napoleon's army, and is said to have had the empress Josephine for godmother. But in later life he became something very different from a Bonapartist, and his residence in Savoy for the last years of his life was due to his having been banished from France after the coup @état. Until his father's death in 1828 Sue pursued the same profession and was present as a surgeon both in the campaign undertaken by France in 1823 for the re-establishment of royal power in Spain and at the battle of Navarino (1828). His naval experiences supplied much of the materials of his first novels, Kernock le Pirate, Attar-Gull, La Salamandre, La Coucaratcha, and others, which were composed at the height of the romantic movement of 1830, and displayed its Byronic enthusiasm, its fancy for outlandish subjects and names, and (in a very full measure) its extravagance. Then he took to more serious work, writing a naval history of France of no merit. His next venture was the historical or quasi- historical novel, in which style he composed Jean Cavalier (1840), besides other stories of adventure. "About this time he was strongly affected by the

socialist ideas of the day, and his attempt to display these in fiction produced (with others) his most famous and perhaps best works,— Les Mystéres de Paris (1842) and Le Juif Errant (1844-45). These were among the most popular specimens of the roman-feuilleton, then at the height of its popularity. The political and philosophical or pseudo-philosophical ‘purpose ” continuing to gain more and more ground on the novelist’s art, he followed these up with divers singular and not very edifying books, such as Les Sept Péchés Capitaux, Les Mystéeres du Peuple, and several others, all on a very large scale, though the number of volumes— ten, twelve, and sometimes even sixteen—gives rather an exaggerated idea of their length. Some of his books, especially the Wandering Jew and the Mysteries of Paris, were dramatized by himself, usually in collaboration with others. His popularity was immense, and, despite gross faults both of art and of morality (the latter somewhat exaggerated in general estimation, at least when the work of his successors is compared), he deserved that popularity in part. By an accident, which is noteworthy in the case of other pairs of novelists (notably in those of Thackeray and Dickens, and earlier of Fielding and Richardson), his period of greatest success and popularity coincided with that of another writer, and he has been even recently, and by not despicable authorities, compared with and exalted above Alexandre Dumas. This is entirely unjust, for Sue has neither Dumas’s wide range of subject, nor his genial humanity of tone, nor his interest of character, nor, above all, his faculty of conducting the story by means of lively dialogue ; he has, however, a command of terror which Dumas seldom or never attained, and which, melodramatic as he is, sometimes comes within measurable distance of the sublime, while his “‘ purpose ” gives him a certain energy not easily to be found elsewhere in novel-writing. From the purely literary point of view his style is undistinguished, not to say bad, and his construction loose and prolix. After the revolution of 1848 he sat for Paris (the Seine) in the assembly from April 1850 until his exile as above-mentioned. This exile rather stimulated than checked his literary production. The works of his last days, however (the chief of which is perhaps Le Diable Médecin), are on the whole much inferior to those of his middle period. Sue died at, Annecy (Savoy) on 3d August 1859.

ol

SUETONIUS. Caius Suetonius Tranquillus was one of the many second-rate authors and men of letters who lived in the early period of the Roman empire. He was the contemporary of Tacitus and the younger Pliny, and. his literary work seems to have been chiefly done in the reigns of Trajan and Hadrian. His father was an officer in the army and military tribune in the XIIIth legion, and he himself began life as an advocate. To us he is known as the biographer of the twelve Cyxsars, from Caius Julius down to Domitian. These lives are valu- able as covering a good deal of ground where we are without the guidance of Tacitus. As Suetonius was the emperor Hadrian's private secretary, he must have had access to many important documents. It would seem from occasional references which he makes to himself in the course of the work that he was a youngish man in the reign of Domitian, and so would have had opportuni- ties of conversing with men who had lived in the days of Tiberius, Caligula, Claudius, Nero, and had been present at the scenes of civil war and anarchy which followed the reign of the last-named. The most interesting fact about Suetonius is that he was a friend and correspondent of the younger Pliny, and the fact certainly tells in his favour. Several of Pliny's letters are addressed to him, and they all imply esteem and intimate friendship. Sometimes we find Pliny putting in a good word for him, as, for instance, on one occasion doing his best to help him in buying a small property at a fair price, not very far from Rome, with a house of moderate size and land enough to amuse but not to engross a man of scholarly tastes (i. 24). In another letter (v. 10) he playfully rallies him on his dilatoriness in publishing his works. Pliny does not men- tion the subject of these works. Again he recommends him to the favourable notice of the emperor Trajan, "'as a most upright, honourable, and learned man, whom persons often remember in their wills because of his merits," and he begs that he may be made legally capable of inheriting these bequests, for which under a special enactment Suetonius was, as a childless married man, disqualified. Trajan granted Pliny's request (x. 94,95). Hadrian's bio- grapher, Spartianus, tells us that Suetonius had his private secretaryship taken from him because he and some others of the imperial officials were not sufficiently observant of court etiquette towards the emperor's wife during his absence in Britain.

The Lives of the Cxsars has always been a popular work, at least with scholars, and has been frequently edited, as well as translated into most

modern languages, the latest English translation being that of Thomson in 1796. The lives of the first six Caesars are much fuller than those of the last six ; this shows that he was an industrious compiler rather than an original historian. He gives us no picture of the society of the time, no hints as to the general character and tendencies of the period. It is the emperor, the emperor only, who is always before us, and yet after all the por- trait is but a sorry performance, drawn without any real historical judgment or insight. It is the personal anecdotes he tells us, several of which are very amusing, that give his lives their chief interest; but he panders rather too much to a taste for scandal and gossip. A good many of his scandalous stories about the emperors may be and probably are fictions, but at any rate they reflect the gossip of the time. Still we owe him thanks for having thrown some light on an important period, parts of which are very obscure.

Suetonius is said to have been a voluminous writer, and among his works Suidas mentions treatises on the Roman Year, Cicero's Republic, The Kings, The Pedigree of Illustrious Romans, and Rome, tts Institutions and Customs, with several others,—works, it would seem, of learned research. Under his name have come down to us Lives of Terence, Juvenal, Horace, Persius, Lucan, and his friend the younger Pliny; but the genuineness of these is highly ques- tionable, and that of the last is hardly worth considering. Thcre is also a work entitled De illustribus grammaticis,—a ‘‘ grammaticus ” being what we should call ‘‘a professor of language and literature.”

SUEUR, Evstacue Lz (1617-1655), one of the founders of the French academy of painting, was born 19th Novem-

ber 1617 at Paris, where he passed his whole life, and where he died on 30th April 1655. His early death and retired habits have combined to give an air of romance to his simple history, which has been decorated with as many fables as that of Claude. We are told that, per- secuted by Lebrun, who was jealous of his ability, he became the intimate friend and correspondent of Poussin, and it is added that, broken-hearted at the death of his wife, Le Sueur retired to the monastery of the Chartreux and died in the arms of the prior. All this, however, is pure fiction. The facts of Le

Sueur’s life are these. He was the son of Cathelin Le Sueur, a turner and sculptor in wood, who placed his son with Vouet, in whose studio he rapidly distinguished himself. Admitted at an early age into the guild of master-painters, he left them to take. part in establishing the academy of painting and sculpture, and was one of the first twelve professors of that body. Some paintings, illustrative of the Hypnerotomachia Polyphili, which were reproduced in tapestry, brought him into notice, and his reputation was further enhanced by a series of decorations (Louvre) in the mansion of Lambert de Thor- igny, which he left uncompleted, for their execution was frequently interrupted by other commissions, Amongst these were several pictures for the apartments of the king and queen in the Louvre, which are now missing, although they were entered in Bailly’s inventory (1710); but several works produced for minor patrons have come down to us. In the gallery of the Louvre are the Angel and Hagar, from the mansion of De Tonnay Charente ; Tobias and Tobit, from the Fieubet collection ; several pictures executed for the church of Saint Gervais; the Martyrdom of St Lawrence, from SaintGermain de l’Auxerrois; two very fine works from the destroyed abbey of Marmoutiers ; St Paul preaching at Ephesus,—one of Le Sueur’s most complete and thorough performances, painted for the goldsmiths’ corporation in

1649 ; and his famous series of the Life of St Bruno, exe-

cuted in the cloister of the Chartreux. These last have more personal character than anything else which Le Sueur produced, and much of their original beauty survives in spite of injuries and restorations and removal from the wall to canvas. The Louvre also possesses many fine drawings (reproduced by Braun), of which Le Sueur left an incredible quantity, chiefly executed in black and white chalk. His pupils, who aided him much in his work, were his wife’s brother, Th. Goussé, and three brothers of his own, as well as Claude Lefebvre and Patel the landscape painter. Most of his works have been engraved, chiefly by Picart, B. Audran, Seb, Leclerc, Drevet, Chauveau, Poilly, and Desplaces. Le Sueur’s work lent itself readily to the engraver’s art, for he was a charming draughtsman; he had a truly delicate perception of varied shades of grave and elevated sentiment, and possessed the power to render them. His graceful facility in composition was always restrained by a very fine taste, but his works often fail to please

completely, because, producing so much, he had too frequent recourse to conventional types, and partly because he rarely saw colour except with the cold and clayey quality proper to the school of Vouet ; yet his St Paul at Ephesus and one or two other works show that he was not naturally deficient in this sense, and whenever we get direct reference to nature—as in the monks of the St Bruno series—we recognize his admirable power to read and render physiognomy of varied and serious type.

See Guillet de St Georges, Mém. inéd.; C. Blane, Histotre des Peintres; Vitet, Catalogue des Tableauz du Lowvre; D'Argenville, Vies des Peintres,

SUEZ (Suwets), the port of Egypt on the Red Sea and southern terminus of the Suez Canal (see below), situated at the head of the Gulf of Suez in 29° 58' 37" N. lat. and 32° 31/18″ & long. (see vol. iv. pl. XXXVI).

across the head of the gulf

SUE—SUE

The new harbours and quays are about 2 miles south of the town, with which they are connected by an em- bankment and railway, crossing a shallow which is dry at low water ; is on the north of the town near the English hospital and the storehouses of the Peninsular and Oriental Com- pany. The site is naturally an absolute desert, and till

the terminal lock of the freshwater canal

the water of the Nile was introduced by the freshwater canal in 1863 the water-supply of Suez was brought from the 'wells of Moses" on the Arabian coast, or else carried on camels, an hour's

journey, from the fortified brackish well of Bir Suweis.

Thus, in spite of its favourable position for commerce, Suez before the canal was but a small place. While the canal was in progress the population rose from 5000 to 15,000, but has since declined, The canal, in fact, carries traffic past Suez rather than to it ; and with its mean bazaar and mosques and mongrel population the town makes an unfavourable impression on the

visitor, save for the imposing view over the gulf, with the Sinai Mountains on its eastern and Mount ‘Ataka on its western shore,

A canal from the Nile to the Red Sea, the indispensable con- dition for the existence of a prosperous trading station at Suez, appears to have existed in very early times, Classical writers say that it was first planned by Sesostris (Rameses II.), and again undertaken by Darius I., but first completed by the Ptolemies (Arist., Meteor,, i. 14; Strabo, xiv. 25), The town at its terminus was Arsinoe or Cleopatris. The work was renewed by Trajan under the name Augustus amnis, but the trade from the East with Egypt still went mainly overland from Myus Hormus or from Bereniee on the Red Sea, below the Gulf of Suez, to Coptus in Upper Egypt. Instead of Arsinoe later writers name the port of Clysma, which the Arabs corrupted into Kolzum, calling the Red Sea the Sea of Kolzum. On the Moslem conquest of Egypt the canal was restored, and is said to have remained open more than a century, till the time of Mansiir, According to Mas‘idt (Mori, iv. 98), Hartin al- Rashid projected a canal across the isthmus of Suez, but was per- suaded that it would be dangerous to lay open the coasts of Arabia to the Greek navy. Kolzum retained some trade long after the closing of the canal, but in the 13th century it lay in ruins, and the neighbouring Suez, which had taken its place, was, as Yakut tells us, little better than aruin. From Mokaddasi, p. 196, it may be inferred that the name of Suez originally denoted Bir Suweis. Throughout the Middle Ages, as in Roman times, the main route from Cairo to the Red Sea was up the Nile to Kus, and then through the desert to Aidhdb. With the Ottoman conquest Suez became more important as a naval and trading station. Ships were built there from the 16th century onwards, and in the 18th century an annual fleet of nearly twenty vessels (Niebuhr) sailed from it to Jiddah, the port of correspondence with India. When the French occupied the town in 1798, and Bonaparte was full of his canal project, Suez was much decayed, and the conflicts which followed on its occupation in 1800 by an English fleet laid a great part of the town inruins. The overland mail route from England to India by

way of Suez was opened in 1837, The regular Peninsular and Oriental –

steamer service began a few years later, and in 1857 a railway was opened from Cairo through the desert. This line is now abandoned in favour of the

railway which follows the canal from Suez to Ismailia, and then ascends the Wady Tumeilat to Zakazitk, whence branches diverge to Cairo and Alexandria.

Sunz Cana. The great engineering features have been already treated of under CANAL (vol. iv. pp. 789-792), The opening of the canal to a great extent revolutionized the main lines of inter- national traffic. More especially it has restored to the Mediter- ranean countries a share in the commerce of the world such as they have not possessed since the beginning of the modern period. In doing so it has naturally caused the decay of certain stations (such as St Helena) on the ocean highways previously in vogue. In the case of sailing vessels, however, the winds at the Red Sea entrance of the canal are so frequently contrary that much of the advantage of the shortness of route is lost, and these vessels con- sequently still take the old-fashioned détours, Traffic, too, in the canal has so greatly increased that in 1886 a vessel was considered fortunate that got through in forty-eight hours. In 1882 ship- owners having expressed dissatisfaction with the condition of the service, schemes for rival canals were started,—one for a fresh-water canal from Alexandria to Cairo and thenee to Suez by way of Tel- el-Kebir, another for a canal from Alexandria to Mansurah and Ismailia, and then parallel to the original canal to Suez, and a

third for the construction of a second Suez canal, to be finished in .

1888. These proposals all fell to the ground ; but at length, in

-

late TII.

SU F—S UF

1886, it was determined to widen the existing canal so as to accom- modate the increased traffic, and the works are now in progress. Originally constructed by French capital, the Suez Canal has passed more and more into the financial ownership as well as under the political protection of England. In 1875 the British Government purchased 176,602 shares from the khedive of Egypt at the price of £3,976,582, or, including commission

and expeuses, £4,076,622, and exchequer bonds were issued to the value of £4,000,000. By opening up a passage by which the faunal forms of the Red Sea and of the Mediterranean may respectively advance uorth and south into regions from which they have hitherto been excluded, the canal has produced some curious results, which have been lately investigated by Dr Conrad Keller of Zurich (‘‘ Fauna im Suez-Kanal u. Diffusion de Mediter. u. Eryth. Thierwelt,” in Newe Denkschriften d. alig. schweizer Ges. f. Naturwiss., Zurich, 1883). Deep-sea forms are, of course, prevented passing by the shallowness of the canal; and the sandy nature of the soil, the large lakes, the currents, the disturbing influence exerted by the continual movement of vessels, and the excessive saltness of the water all tend to limit and retard the progress of even those forms most adapted to make their way through such a channel. The salinity of the water is much greater than that of the Mediterranean or the Red Sea. This is due mainly to two causes, —the rapid evaporation to which the water in the canal is subjected and the gradual melting of the deposits of salt (the result of previous evaporation in distant ages) in some of the depressions through which the canal is carried. In the Bitter Lakes, for example, it was found in 1872 that on an average each cubic métre of water contained 156°42 1b of salt, or about three times as much as ordinary sea water.

oe following figures are in continuation of the table in vol. iv. p. 792.

No. of Gries No. of Gross

Year.) Vessels Receipts. |/Year.| Vessels Receipts. entering. Tonnage. ‘ entering. Tonnage. . 1875| 1494 | 2,940,708 | £1,204,387 || 1881] 2727 | 5,794,401 | £2,050,974 1876| 1457 | 3,072,107| 1,229,157 |}1882| 3198 | 7,122,125) 2,421,835 1877| 1663 | 3,418,949| 1,339,617 ||1883| 3307 | 8,051,307] 2,633,912 1878| 15938 | 3,291,535] 1,272,435 || 1884] 3284 | 8,319,967) 2,495,124 1879| 1477 | 3,236,942] 1,214,444 || 1885| 3624 | 8,985,411| 2,488,297 1880] 2026 | 4,344,519 1,629,577 || 1886} 3100 | 8,183,313 2,309,218

In 1883 10 francs 50 cents were charged per ton (net tonnage), and pilotage dues amounted to 70 cents per ton on an average ; on 1st July 1884 pilotage dues were abolished ; and in 1885 the transit dues were reduced to 9 francs 50 cents per ton.

SUFFOLK, the most easterly county in England, is bounded E. by the North Sea, N. by Norfolk, W. by Cam- bridge, and 8. by Essex, the boundaries being chiefly the sea and rivers; it has somewhat the shape of a half moon. Its greatest length north to south from Yarmouth to Land- guard Point is about 50 miles, and its average length about 30; its greatest breadth from east to west is about 55 miles. The total area of the county is 944,060 acres, or 1475 square miles.

The principal geological formations are the Chalk and the Tertiaries, but they are frequently overlaid by drift. The surface is for the most part flat or slightly undulat- ing. In the extreme north-west round Mildenhall it joins the fen country. The fen land is bordered by a low range of chalk hills extending from Haverhill by Newmarket and Bury St Edmunds to Thetford. The Chalk extends eastwards, but towards the south passes under the London clay and crag, which adjoins the mouths of the principal rivers and extends from Sudbury by Ipswich to Aldeburgh. The easterly slopes of the Chalk are also overlaid by beds of clay, as well as by post-Glacial gravels, in which flint

implements and other indications of the presence of pre- historic man have been found. The most interesting deposits are, however, those of the crag of the late Miocene and Pliocene periods, resting on the London clay, or, where it overlaps, on the Chalk. At the base of the crag resting on the London clay is the famous Suffolk bone bed. The coast-line has a length of about 52 miles, and is comparatively regular, with only slight convexities towards the sea, the bays being generally shallow and the headlands rounded and only slightly prominent. The estuaries of the Deben, Orwell, and Stour are, however, of some length. The shore is generally low and marshy, with occasional clay and sand cliffs. The rivers flowing northwards are the Lark in the north-west corner, which passes in a north-westerly direction to the Great Ouse in Norfolk ; the Little Ouse or Brandon, also a tributary of the Great Ouse, flowing by Thetford and Brandon and forming part of the northern boundary of the county ; and the Waveney, which rises in Norfolk and forms the boundary between that county and Suffolk, from Palgrave till it falls into the mouth of the Yare at Yarmouth. The Waveney is

navigable from Bungay, and by means of Lake Lothing also communicates with Lowestoft. The rivers flowing in a south-easterly direction to the North Sea are the Blyth ; the Alde or Ore, which has a course for a long distance parallel to the seashore, and has its port at Orford ; the Deben, from Debenham, flowing past Wood- bridge, up to which it is navigable ; the Orwell or Gipping, which is navigable to Stowmarket, whence it flows past Needham Market and Ipswich; and the Stour, which forms nearly the whole southern boundary of the county, receiving the Brett, which flows past Lavenham and Had- leigh ; it is navigable from Sudbury and has an important port at Harwich. The county has no valuable minerals. Cement is dug for Roman cement; and lime and whiting are obtained in various districts.

Agriculture.—Suffolk is one of the most fertile counties in Eng- land. In the 18th century it was famed for its dairy products. The high prices of corn during the wars of the French Revolution led to the extensive breaking up of its pastures, and it is now one of the principal corn-growing counties in England. There is con- siderable variety of soils, and consequently in modes of farming, in different parts of the county. Along the sea-coast a sandy loam or thin sandy soil prevails, covered in some places with heath, on which large quantities of sheep are fed, and interspersed with tracts, more or less marshy, on which cattle are grazed. The best land adjoins the rivers, and consists of a rich sandy loam, with patches of lighter and easier soil. In the south-west and the centre is much fine corn land, having mostly a clay subsoil, but not so tenacious as the clay in Essex. In climate Suffolk is one of the driest of the English counties, the rainfall being only half that of the counties in the west. Towards the north-west the soil is generally poor, consisting partly of sand on chalk and partly of peat and open heath.

According to the agricultural returns for 1886, 780,448 acres or nearly five-sixths of the total area were under cultivation, 363,641 being under corn crops, 120,256 under green crops, 94,893 clover and rotation grasses, 174,970 permanent pasture, 19 flax, 57 hops, and 26,612 fallow. Wheat and barley are the most important of the corn crops, having an area of 118,873 and 151,630 respect- ively. Of green crops only 2452 were under potatoes, while 55,434 were under turnips and swedes, 36,211 under mangold, 852 under carrots, 4100 under cabbage, and 21,207 under vetches,—figures

which indicate that much attention is paid to the winter feeding of cattle. Horses in 1886 numbered 42,617, of which 32,262 were uscd solely for purposes of agriculture. The breed known as Suffolk punches is one of the most valued for agricultural purposes in Eng- land (see AGRICULTURE, Vol. i. p. 385). Cattle numbered 70,695, of which 23,652 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf, and 17,322 other cattle two years old and above. ‘The breed native to the county is a polled variety, on the improvement of which great pains have been bestowed in recent years. The old Suffolk cows, famous for their great milking qualities, were of various colours, yellow predominating. The improved are all red. Much milk is now sent to London, Yarmouth, &c. Many cattle, mostly imported from. Ireland, are grazed in the winter. The sheep are nearly all of the black-faced improved Suffolk breed, a cross between the old Norfolk horned sheep and Southdowns. Sheep numbered 433,986, of which 230,954 were one year old and above. Suffolk is famous

for pigs. The breed most common is small and very compact, and black in colour. Pigs numbered 121,866 in 1886, , : a

The following table gives classifications of holdings in 1875 and 1885:—

period mention may be made of those at Fornham St Geneveve and those between Aldeburgh and Snape. Many of the medieval castles were built on ancient mounds. The district submitted to

the Iceni joined the Trinobantes under Boadicea, the resistance 50 acres | From 50 to From 100 to From 300 to|/From 500 to} Above made was ultimately fruitless, A Roman road from London crossed

and under.} 100 acres. | 300 acres. | 500 acres. 1000 acres. | 1000 acres.

No.| Area.| No.| Area. | No.} Area. | No.| Area. No.| Area. | No.| Area. 1875 |5667/66,251/1436 101,644/2043‘336,383] 387 137,894] 169 110,169} 12 14,744 1885 {5607 64,899/1278 94,994 1872/330,133 409 154,590) 174 115,089} 17 22,314

Thus in 1875 there were in all 9714 holdings with 767,085 acres, and in 1885 9857 with 782,019 acres, According to the latest landowners Return (1878) Suffolk was divided among 19,276 pro- prietors, holding 920,268 acres, at a valued rental of £1,784,827, or an average all over of about £1, 18s, 93d. per acre. Of the owners 12,511 or nearly three-fourths possessed less than one acre each. The following possessed over 10,000 acres each :—Lord Rendlesham, 19,869 ; George Tomline, 18,473; marquis of Bristol, 16,954 ; the maharajah Dhuleep H. H. Singh, 14,615 ; Lord Hunt- ingfield, 11,713; earl of Stradbroke, 11,697; Sir Richard Wallace, 11,223 ; Lord Henniker, 10,910,

Communication.—The river navigation affords means of com- munication with different ports, and supplies facilities for a con- siderable amount of traffic. The county is intersected in all directions by branches of the Great Eastern Railway, which touch at almost every town of importance.

Manufactures and Trade.—The county is essentially agricultural, and the most important manufactures relate to this branch of in- dustry. They include that of agricultural implements, especially at Ipswich, Bury St Edmunds, and Stowmarket, and that of artj- ficial manures at Ipswich and Stowmarket, for which coprolites are dug. Malting is extensively carried on throughout the county. There is a gun-cotton manufactory at Stowmarket, and gun flints are still made at Brandon, At diffcrent towns a variety of small miscellaneous manufactures are carried on, including silk, cotton, linen, woollen, and horsehair and cocoa-nut matting. The principal ports are Yarmouth (situated chiefly in Norfolk), Lowestoft, South- wold, Aldeburgh, Woodbridge, and Ipswich. Yarmouth is one of the most important fishing stations on the east coast of England ; within the county Lowestoft is the chief fishing town. Herrings and mackerel are the fish most abundant on the coasts,

Administration and Population. —Su ffolk comprises 21 hundreds; the boroughs of Beccles (pop. 5721), which has several large malt- ings; Bury St Edmunds (16,111), the chief town in West Suffolk; Eye (2296), an ancient market town ; Ipswich (50,546), the largest town and principal port of the county ; Aldeburgh (2106), the birth- place of Crabbe ; Southwold (2107), a fishing town and bathing resort ; the largest part (5855) of

Sudbury (6584), a market and manufacturing town ; and smail portions of the boroughs of Thet- ford and Great Yarmouth, which are situated chiefly in Norfolk. The other principal towns are Hadleigh (3237), with a considerable trade in corn and malt ; Haverhill (3685) (partly in Essex), of great antiquity, and possessing important silk manufactures ; Lowestoft (16,755), a port and fishing station; Stowmarket (4052); and Woodbridge (4544), with some coasting trade. Suffolk is divided into geldable portions, in which the sovereign has the chief rights, and liberties. The liberties are those of St Etheldreda, St Ed- mund, and the dukedom of Norfolk. The court of quarter ses- sions is at Ipswich for the eastern division and by adjournment at Bury St Edmunds for the western. There are nineteen petty and sessional divisions. The hundreds of Hartismere and Stow and the borough of Eye are for petty sessional purposes included in

terminations of the place names are Anglian. The remains of old castles are comparatively unimportant, the principal being the entrenchments and part of the walls of Bungay, the ancient strong- hold of the Bigods ; the picturesque ruins of Mettingham, built by

by a deep moat, with the turret walls and the drawbridge still existing ; the splendid ruin of Framlingham, with high and massive walls, originally founded in the 6th century, but restored in the 12th; the outlines of the extensive fortress of Clare Castle, anciently

folk to the cause of the Parliament. James duke of York twice defeated the Dutch off the coast, —viz., Van Tromp off Lowestoft on 3d June 1665 and De Ruyter in Southwold Bay on 28th May 1672. Of monastic remains the most important are those of the

into a college of secular canons in the reign of Henry VL, and still retaining much of its ancient architecture, and now used as a

of Butley; and the remains of the Grey Friars monastery at Dun-

: peculiarity of the church architecture is the use of flint for purposes of ornamentation, often of a very elaborate kind, especi- ally on the porches and parapets of the towers. Another charac- teristic is the round towers, which are confined to East Anglia, but are considerably more numerous in

Norfolk than in Suffolk, the principal being those of Little Saxham and Herringfleet, both good examples of Norman. It is questionable whether there are any

well represented, but by far the greater proportion of the churches are Perpendicular, special features being the open roofs and wood- work and the fine fonts,

See Blome's Description of Suffolk, 1673; Kirby's Description, 1748, 2d ed. 1829 ; Suckling's History of Suffolk, 1846-48 ; Hervey's Visitation of Suffolk in 1561, ed., with additions, by Dr J. J. Howard, 1866; and Browne's History of Congre- gationalisn and Memorial of Churches in Suffolk, 1877. (T. F, Ii.)

SUFISM. See MoHAMMEDANISM, vol. xvi. p. 594; Mys- TICISM, vol. xvii. p. 130; and SUNNITES, p. 659 sg. infra. Sudbury have commissions of the peace and separate courts of SUGAR. F ormerly chemists called everything a "sugar"

quarter sessions; and Eye and Southwold have commissions of i j 1 the peace. For parliamentary purposes the county was until 1885 which had a pine ta: ane Se et lis oe

divided into East and West Suffolk, but it now constitutes five known as "sugar of lead" in Seo and familiar chem- divisions, each returning one member, viz., North or Lowestoft | ical parlance; but the term in its scientific sense soon division, North-east or Eye, North-west or Stowmarket, South or | came to be restricted to the sweet principles in vegetable

Sudbury, and South-east or Woodbridge. Bury St Edmunds re- i iwi — —

: * ae mal juices. nly one of these—cane sugar—was turns one member and Ipswich two; Eye, which formerly returned ae on — <4 = at ait 1619, when Fabrisio Bar- one member, was merged in the North-east division of the county ie z

in 1885, The county contains 517 civil parishes with parts of 7 | toletti isolated the sugar of milk and proved its individu- others. It is mostly in the diocese of Norwich. From 214,404 in | ality. In regard to all other “sugars” besides these two

3 the knowledge of chemists was in the highest degree 108 ee ils an ale ABE of hon | gtemetge of chemise was in the ghes dag to an acre was 0-38 and of acres to a person 2°65, 18th century, when Marggraf made the important discovery ae Hi A thie Vie district which now includes Nor- that the sugars of the juices of beet, carrots, and certain

t Anglia, hat portion, of Cambridge, and afterwards formed | other fleshy roots are identical with one another and with West, practically the character of a peninsula. It was inhabited | the sugar of the cane. Lowitz subsequently showed that by the Iceni, who had their capital at Icklingham, in the north- west | the granular part of honey 18 something different from of Suffolk. Of the numerous barrows and tumuli belonging to this | cane sugar ; this was confirmed by Proust, who found also

»UGAR

that Lowitz’s honey sugar is identical with a crystallizable sugar present largely in the juice of the grape. Proust’s investigations extended to other sweet vegetable juices also. All those investigated by him owed their sweetness to Species. one or more of only three species,—(1) cane sugar, (2) grape sugar, (3) (amorphous) fruit sugar. Proust’s results obtain substantially to this day ; a number of new sugars strictly similar to these three have been discovered since, but none are at all widely diffused throughout the organic kingdom. Quanti: The quantitative elementary composition of cane sugar tative was determined early in the 19th century by Gay-Lussac .. ae and Thénard, who may be said to have virtually estab- mu” lished. our preseut formula, C,,H,,0,,. Under Fermenta- TION (vol. ix. p. 93) it has been explained how Gay-Lussac (in 1811) came to mis-correct his numbers so as to bring them into accordance with what we now express by CgH,,05=3C.H,,Oy.. Dumas and Boullay, some years later, found that cane sugar is what Gay-Lussac and Thé- nard’s analysis makes it out to be, while the “corrected ” numbers happen to be correct for grape sugar. Dumas and Boullay’s research completed the foundations of our present science of

the subject. ‘‘Sugar” is now a collect- ive term for two chemical genera named saccharoses (all Ci2H220,,) and glucoses (all C,H,,0,). All sugars are colourless non-volatile solids, soluble in water and also (though less largely) in aqueous alcohol; from either solvent they can in general be obtained in the form of crystals. The aqueous solution exhibits a sweet taste, which, however, is only very feebly developed in certain species. Action All sugars and their solutions have the power of turning the a polar- plane of polarization of light. In a given solution of a given kind zation of of sugar the angle a through which the plane is turned is governed ight. by the equation a= +[a]lp, where J stands for the length of solu- tion traversed (the customary unit of length being the centimetre) and p for the number of grams of dry sugar present in a volume of solution equal to that of (say) 100 grams (3°52 oz.) of water, where, however, ‘‘ gram” must be taken as merely a convenient word for “unit of weight”; -t[a], z.¢., the special value of a for 7=1 and p=1, is called the specific rotatory power of the sugar operated upon. The sign = indicates that the plane of polarization is turned either to the right or to the left according to the nature of the species. For a given species and a given temperature [a] has a constant value. Supposing its value to have been determined by standard experiments and / to be known (or to be kept constant throughout and taken as unit of length), the determination of a for a given solution suffices for the calculation of p. This method is largely used industrially for the assaying of cane sugar.

Sugars, though neutral to litmus and inert towards such substances as carbonates on the one hand and aqueous acids (qua acids) on the other, combine with strong bases, such as caustic potash, baryta, and lime, into saccharates, and, when brought into contact with the strongest nitric acid (or a mixture of the same with oil of vitriol) or (at the proper temperature) with acetic anhydride, unite with these into nitrates and acetates respectively, with elimination of water. These nitrates, &c., are related to the respective sugar exactly as (to take an analogous case) nitrate of methyl, CH,(NO,), is to methyl-alcohol, CH;(OH); only in the case of a sugar a plural of NO,’s is capable of entering into every one molecule and turning out so many HO’s ; hence sugars are said to be polyvalent alcohols, Of the several points of difference between saccharoses and glucoses the most important is that, while the latter remain unchanged when boiled with highly dilute sulphuric or hydrochloric (or certain other kinds of) acid, the former take up water

and every molecule breaks up into two molecules of glucose, which in general are of different kinds. Cane sugar, for instance, yields dextrose and levu- lose (so called from the direction in which they turn the plane of polarized light), thus—

Crp 901; + H,0 = CgH),0¢ + CoH 1.0,

Cane Sugar Dextrose Levulose. Cane sugar turns the plane of polarized light to the right; the mixed glucose produced is levo-rotatory; hence the process is spoken of technically as involving the inversion of cane sugar, and the mixed product is called invert sugar. The term “inversion,” however, has come somchow to be used for all decompositions which fall under the above equation ; occasionally it is used even in a wider sense, to include any decomposition of a carbo-hydrate (e.g., starch) into two less complex carbo-hydrates.

623

All sugars are liable to fermentative changes ; a special Ferment- character of the three principal vegetable sugars is that, ative when brought into contact as solutions with yeast (living ©2@™8°- cells of saccharomyces), under suitable conditions, they suffer vinous fermentation, 7.¢., break up substantially into carbonic acid and alcohol. Dextrose and levulose break up directly, —C,H,,0O,=2C,H,O+2C0,. Cane sugar first, under the influence of a soluble ferment in the yeast, gets inverted, and the invert sugar then ferments, the dex- trose disappearing at a greater rate than the levulose.

It is remarkable that no sugar has ever been produced Artificial artificially even in the sense of being built up from other produe- native organic substances of less chemical complexity.

It is easy to produce dextrose from starch, or levulose from inulin, or both from cane sugar, by inversion ; but none of these processes is reversible by known methods. Yet the problem of producing cane sugar artificially may in a sense be said to have found a virtual solution at the hands of a German-American chemist, Fahlberg.! Fahlberg, by subjecting toluene, C,H,CH; (one of the components of coal-tar naphtha), to a series of operations has produced

from it a body, C,H, sO NH, which he called saccharine,

because he found it to be about 230 times as sweet as cane sugar. This saccharine is a white crystallized solid, only slightly soluble in cold water, but sufficiently so to admit of its incorporation with jellies, puddings, bever- ages, &c. A mixture of one part of it with 1000 parts of ordinary grape sugar (as produced industrially from starch) is as sweet as the best cane sugar. The substance, though an antiseptic, is said to be perfectly innocuous.

Glucoses.

Of these a pretty large number are now known, but only levu- Glucoses. lose and dextrose nced be noticed here. Both are largely present in all kinds of sweet fruit juices and in honey. In most of these materials they are accompanied by a small proportion of cane sugar, which forcibly suggests that the glucose in fruit juices is really inverted cane sugar. But, in opposition to this surmise, the proportion of cane sugar in oranges increases during the process of ripening, and the sourest of all fruits—the lemon—contains four parts of cane for every ten of invert sugar; besides, the juices of grapes and sweet cherries contain no cane sugar whatever. Accord- ing to Stammer, the young leaves of the sugar cane contain abun- dance of invert sugar, which gradually disappears and gives way to cane sugar as the leaves develop and ultimately dry up. In the living body of man dextrose is constantly being produced from the glycogen of the liver, to be taken up by the blood and oxi- dized into carbonic acid and water. In certain diseases, however (sec NUTRITION, vol. xvii. p. 681), the sugar survives and passes into the urine; as much as one pound avoirdupois may be dis- charged by a diabetic patient in twenty-four hours. A numerous class of vegetable substances, known as glucosides, contain glucose of some kind in the sense that, when decomposed by boiling dilute sulphuric acid or by the action of certain ferments, they split up into glucose and some product—not a sugar—which is characteristic of the respective specics. For examples, see Frr- MENTATION, vol. ix. p. 96.

Dextrose is being produccd industrially from starch by inversion Dextrose. (see below), and sold as grape sugar. Such grape sugar, however, is very impure. For the preparation of pure dextrose rich diabctic urine, honey, and

cane sugar are convenient materials. The method recommended by Soxhlet is to dissolve 160 grams (5°64 oz.) of powdered cane sugar in a mixture of 500 c.c. of alcohol of 85 per cent. by weight and 20 c.c. of fuming hydrochloric acid at 45° C. and to allow the solution tostand. After about a week dextrose begins to crystallize out, and, if the mixture is being frequently agitated, the deposit of crystals increases gradually. A small crop of crystals thus obtained suffices for inducing crystallization in a large supply of fresh liquor. Dextrose crystallizes from its highly concentrated aqueous solution—somewhat tardily—in minute soft crystals, united into warts or cauliflower-like masses, which contain 1H,O of crystal water beside CsH,.0, The crystals lose their water at 100°C. From absolute alcohol it crystallizes as CgH,,.0<. It dissolves in 1:2 parts of cold and far less of boiling water. 100 parts of alcohol of 0°837 specific gravity dissolve 1:94 parts at 17°°5 C. and 21°7 parts on boiling. In a given volume of aqueous solu-

1 See Amer. Chem. Jour., i. p. 170, ii. p. 181, and i. p. 425; short notices in Jour. Soc. Chem. Ind., iv. p. 608, and February 1886.

ion 5 parts of dextrose produce the same degree of sweetness as 3 og cane sugar. Deane fuses at 146° C. and at 170 passes into glucosan, CgH,,O;, an almost tasteless solid, which when boiled with dilute sulphuric acid is reconverted into dextrose. Ifa solu- tion of dextrose in absolute alcohol is saturated with hydrochloric acid gas at 0° C., di-glucose, Cj,H.0,;, is produced, which, however, is only isomcric with cane sugar (Gautier). ;

Levu- Levulose.—The liquid part of crystalline honey consists chiefly

lose, of levulose ; but its purification is difficult. From Invert sugar it can be extracted, according to Dubrunfaut, by cautious addition of slaked lime at a low temperature. The levulose separates out as a difficultly soluble lime compound, which is Separated from the mother-liquor containing the dextrose by pressure and by judicious washing with cold water. The levnlosate of lime is de- composed by the exact equivalent of oxalic acid solution; then the oxalate of lime is filtered off, and the filtrate evaporated on a water- bath. The levulose ultimately remains as a thick syrup, which

formerly was supposed not to be susceptible of crystallization ; but Jungfleisch and Lefranc have succeeded lately in obtaining crystals from it by means of alcohol. Levulose is very largely soluble in water, and fully as sweet as cane sugar. It fuses at 95° C.; at 170 it passes into levulosan, CgH,,05, analogous to glucosan.

Reac- The following reactions, though studied chiefly with dextrose,

tions. apply also to levulose, and, substantially at least, to glucoses gener- ally. Ifa solution of glucose is mixed with excess of caustic potash or soda, a solution of alkaline glucosate is formed, which, howevcr, has little stability. If the solution is heated, the glucosate is decomposed with formation of dark-coloured (soluble) alkali salts of acid products, which, whateycr they may be, are not reconvertible into glucose. Cane sugar, in these circumstances, remains sub- stantially unchanged, and can be regenerated by elimination of the alkali. Ifa solution of glucose is mixed with (not too much) sul- phate of copper, and an excess of caustic potash or soda be then added, no precipitate of cupric hydrate is formed, but an intensely blue solution, which, on standing in the cold gradually, and on heating promptly, deposits a red precipitate of cuprous oxide, Cu,0, the glucose being oxidized at the expense of the dissolved CuO into soluble alkali salts of little known acids. B means of this (Trommer's) test the least trace of glucose in a solution can be dis- covered. Cane sugar, in the circumstances, yields cuprous oxide only on long-continued boiling. Fehling has brought this test into the following more convenient form, which, besides, admits of quantitative application : 34°65 grams (1-22 oz.) of sulphate of copper, CuSO, +5H;0, and 173 grams (6 oz.) of Rochelle salt (double tartrate of potash and soda) are dissolved in a solution of 70 grams (2°46 02.) of solid caustic soda, and the intensely blue solution produced is diluted to1000c.c. Every c.c. of Fehling solution oxidizes about 5

an aggregate of minute crystals, If fused sugar is kept at a few degrees above its fusing-point for some time, it passes into an alloy,

innocent colouring agent for sauces, liqueurs, &. A pure solution of cane sugar is said to remain unchanged on boiling (it being understood, of course, that local overheating be carefully avoided); but continued contact with even so feeble an acid as carbonic induces at least partial inversion.

The statement of the unchangeability of sugar solution on boiling seems hardly credible, because a syrup boiling at all considerably above 100° GC, contains plenty of mole- cules at temperatures above 160° C., which are bound to suffer irreversible conversion into dextrose and levulosan (or levulose), and even, if hot enough, caramelization. In ordinary practice, at any rate, sugar solutions on boiling do behave as indicated by this theory. Cane sugar, as already stated, unites with alkalis, alkaline earths, and other of the more strongly basic metallic oxides into saccharates. A soluble saccharate of lime, which is readily decomposible by carbonic acid and even by filtration through bone charcoal, plays a great part in the manufacture of sugar. The fol- lowing strontium salt must be named, because it at least promised Some years ago to occupy a similar position industrially. Accord- % to Scheibler, if strontia hydrate, SrOH,0 + 8H,0, is added to a boiling 15 per cent. solution of cane sugar, then as soon as 2SrO is added for every Cy,H5.0,, the salt C)5H5.0,, + 28r0 separates out as a sandy powder, and after addition of 2:5 times SrO al- most all the sugar is precipitated. The precipitate is easily washed and decomposed by water and carbonic acid, with formation of insoluble carbonate of strontia (from which the hydrate can be reproduced) and a solution of cane sugar. The ultimate molasses produced in sugar making or refining, though they refuse to deposit crystals under any conditions, contain some 30 to 40 per cent. of real cane sugar ; Scheibler’s process applies to them,—to put the industrial bearings of the discovery in the proper light,—and it has led to quite a serics of patents for the production of strontia ; but, as far as we know, it has failed to take root in the sugar industry.

Milk Sugar occurs in the milk of mammals, and it is doubtful Milk whether it occurs anywhere else, although Bouchardat once proved sugar, its presence in a sample marked as sugar obtained from Sapota Achras (the sapodilla of the West Indies), It is made industrially in Switzerland as a bye-product in the making of cheese. It passes into the whey, from which it is extracted by evaporation to a small volume, decolorization with animal charcoal, and crystallization. From the commercial product the pure substance can be obtained by repeated recrystallization from water, and ultimately by pre- cipitation from the aqueous solution by alcohol. Milk sugar as it crystallizes from water under the ordinary conditions forms

hydrated crystals of the composition C,sH.0,,+H,O; under certain conditions anhydrous crystals separate out. The hydrated

the glucose, The cuprous oxide precipitate is allowed to settle, is then collected on a filter, and weighed directly or indirectly. From its weight the weight of the glucose is calculated,—a standard experi- ment with a known weight of the respective kind of pure glucose furnishing the factor. —A less exact but more expeditious method

Saccharoses.

Cane Of these only cane sugar, milk sugar, and maltose can be noticed

Sugar. here. The highest qualities of commercial cane sugar are chemi- cally pure. Pure cane sugar crystallizes from its supersaturated syrup in colourless, transparent monoclinic prisms (exemplified in colourless candy sugar). The crystals are barely, if at all, hygro- scopic ; they are rather hard, and when broken up in the dark give off a peculiar kind of bluish light. Sp. gr. 1598 at 4°C. The aqueous solution, saturated at ¢° C., contains p per cent. of dry ee ee 40° 50°

p=65‘0 65°6 67°0 69°8 75°8 82°7,

From 50° upwards the solubility increases at such a rate that a given quantum of water dissolves any quantity of sugar if the mix- ture is constantly kept boiling. Accordingly a sugar syrup when boiled down deposits nothing, but passes gradually into the condi- tion of fused sugar when the boiling – point merges into the fusing. point of sugar, which lies at 160-161° C. Even a cold-saturated solution of sugar has the consistence ofa syrup. Absolute alcohol hardly dissolves Sugar at all ; aqueous alcohol dissolves it the more largely the greater its proportion of water. Fused sugar freezes into a transparent glass, which is colourless if pure, but in practice gener- ally exhibits a yellowish hue, and, if really anhydrous, remains

syrupy. Milk sugar is hardly soluble in alcohol. The ordinary crystals, as the formula shows, have the composition of a glucose ; indeed milk sugar solution behaves to caustic alkalis and to Fehling solution as if it were a glucose. But the hydrated crystals lose their water at 130°, with formation

of a residue reconvertible into the original substance by the mere action of water ; besides, milk sugar is susceptible of inversion into dextrose and a specific galactose. The optical behaviour of a milk sugar solution varies

vinous fermentation ; but certain Spaltpilze induce a fermentation involving the formation of alcohol and of lactic acid. This process is utilized by the Kirghiz in the production of their native drink, ‘‘koumiss,” made from mare’s milk (see MrLx, vol. xvi. p- 305). Milk sugar is used in medicine as a diluent for dry medicines. Homeeopathists use it by preference. A solution of milk sugar in certain proportions of water and cow’s milk is used occasionally as a substitute for mother’s milk. Maltose does not occur in nature; it is largely produced along Maltose,

with dextrin when starch paste is acted upon by dilute sulphuric

listory.

» UG a ik

acid or the ferment called “diastase,” which is supposed to be the active agent in malt. For its preparation 2 kilograms (4°40 Ib) of potato starch are made into a paste with 9 litres (15°84 pints) of water over a water-bath ; after allowing it to cool down to 60° or 65° C., an infusion of from 120 to 140 grams (4:23 to 5 oz.) of malt made at 40° C. is added. The mixture is kept at from 60° to 65° for an hour; it is then boiled and filtered, The filtrate is evaporated to a syrup, which is exhausted twice with alcohol of 85 per cent. by weight and then once with absolute alcohol. The dextrin (mostly) remains ; the maltose passes into solution. The alcoholic extracts are evaporated to a syrupy con- sistence and allowed to stand. The absolute alcohol extract soon yields a crop of impure crystals of maltose, which are used to induce crystallization in the other two syrups. In regard to the somewhat tedious methods of purification we refer to the handbooks of chemistry. Maltose crystallizes (from alcohol on spontaneous evaporation) in fine needles of the composition C,,H,.0,,+H,0. The H,O goes offat 100° C. Maltose is less soluble in alcohol than dextrose, to which it is otherwise very similar. To caustic alkalis and Fehling solution it behaves exactly as dextrose does. Like it, it suffers vinous fermentation under the influence of yeast. When boiled with dilute sulphuric acid it breaks up into (so to say)

dex- trose and dextrose. Maltose plays an important part in the brewing of alcoholic malt liquors. (W. D.) History.

The original habitat of the sugar-cane is not known, but it seems to have been first cultivated in the country extending from Cochin China to Bengal (De Candolle). Sugar reached the West from India, and at a comparatively late date. Strabo (xv. i. 20) has an inaccurate notice from Nearchus of the Indian honey-bearing reed, and various classical writers of the first century of our era notice the sweet sap of the Indian reed, or even the granulated salt-like product which was imported from India, or from Arabia and Opone (these being entrepéts of Indian trade),! under the name of sac- charum or odxxape (from Sanskr., sarkara, ‘‘ gravel,” “sugar’’), and used in medicine. The art of boiling sugar was known in Gangetic India, from which it was carried to China in the first half of the 7th century ; but sugar-refining cannot have then been known, for the Chinese learned the use of ashes for this purpose only in the Mongol period, from Egyptian visitors.2_ The cultiva- tion of the cane in the West spread from Khiuzistan in Persia. At eae in this region ‘‘ sugar was prepared with art” about the time of the Arab conquest,? and manufacture on a large scale was carried on at Shuster, Suis, and Askar-Mokram throughout the Middle Ages.4 It has been plausibly conjectured that the art of sugar-refining, which the farther East learned from the Arabs, was developed by the famous physicians of this region, in whose phar- macopceia sugar had an important place. Under the Arabs the growth and manufacture of the cane spread far and wide, from India to Sis in Morocco (Edrisi, ed. Dozy, p. 62), and were also introduced into Sicily and Andalusia.

In the age of discovery the Spaniards became in their turn the great disseminators of the sugar cultivation: the cane was planted by them in Madeira in 1420; it was carried to San Domingo in 1494 ; and it spread over the occupied portions of the West Indies and South America early in the 16th century. Within the first twenty years of the 16th century the sugar trade of San Domingo expanded with great rapidity, and it was from the dues levied on the imports brought thence to Spain that Charles V. obtained funds for his palace-building at Madrid and Toledo. In the Middle Ages Venice was the great Huropean centre of the sugar trade, and towards the end of the 15th century a Venetian citizen received a reward of 100,000

crowns for the invention of the art of making loaf-sugar. One of the earliest references to sugar in Great Britain is that of 100,000 tb of sugar being shipped to London in 1319 by Tomasso Loredano, merchant of Venice, to be exchanged for wool. In the same year there appears in the accounts of the chamberlain of Scotland a payment at the rate of 1s. 94d. per pound for sugar. Throughout Europe it continued to be a costly luxury and article of medicine only, till the increasing use of tea and coffee in the 18th century brought it into the list of principal food staples. The increase in the consumption is exemplified by the fact that, while

1 Lucan, iii. 237; Seneca, Epist., 84; Pliny, H.N., xii. 8 (who supposes that sugar was produced in Arabia as well as in India); Peripl. Mar. Eryth., § 14; Dioscorides, ii. 104. The view, often repeated, that the saccharum of the ancients is the hydrate of silica, sometimes found in bamboos and known in Arabian medicine as tabdshir, is refuted by Yule, Anglo-Indian Glossary, p. 654 ; see also Not. et Extr. des MSS. de la Bibl. Nat., xxv. 267 sq.

2 Marco Polo, ed. Yule, ii. 208, 212. In the Middle Ages the best sugar came from Egypt (Kazwini, i, 262), and in India coarse sugar is still called Chinese and fine sugar Cairene or Egyptian.

® So the Armenian Geography ascribed to Moses oF CHORENE (q.v. for the date of the work); St Martin, Afém. sur l Arménie, ii. 372.

4 Istakhri, p. 91; Yakut, ii. 497. Tha‘dlibi, a writer of the llth century, says that Askar-Mokram had no equal for the quality and quantity of its sugar, ‘notwithstanding the great production of ‘Irak, Jorjan, and India.” It used to pay 50,000 pounds of sugar to the sultan in annual tribute (Lataif, p. 107). The names of sugar in modern Huropean languages are derived through the Arabic from the Persian shakar.

in 1700 the amount used in Great Britain was 10,000 tons, in 1800 it had risen to 150,000 tons, and in 1885 the total quantity used was almost 1,100,000 tons. » le In 1747 Andreas Sigismund Margeraf, director of the physical classes in the Academy of Sciences, Berlin, discovered the existence of common sugar in beetroot and in numerous other fleshy roots

which grow in temperate regions. But no practical use was made of the discovery during his lifetime. The first to establish a beet-sugar factory was his pupil and successor, Franz Carl Achard, at Cunern (near Breslau) in Silesia in 1801. The processes used were at first very imperfect, but the extraordinary increase in the price of sugar on the Continent caused by the Napoleonic policy gave an impetus to the industry, and beetroot factories were established at many centres both in Germany and in France. In Germany the enterprise came to an end almost entirely with the downfall of Napoleon I.; but in France, where at first more scientific and economical methods of working were introduced, the manufacturers were able to keep the industry alive. It was not, however, till after 1830 that it secured a firm footing ; but from 1840 onwards it advanced with giant strides. Now it is an industry of national importance, especially in Germany, control- ling in the meantime the market against the cane-sugar trade. While cane sugar was practically without a rival, the cultivation was in general highly profitable, but it was conducted under tropical skies, largely by slave labour and entirely removed from scientific supervision. The staple produced at the plantations was raw sugar, which was sent to Europe to be refined. It was not till the pressure of the competition with beet sugar began to make itself felt that planters realized the necessity for improving their methods of working. It has now been found possible to apply many of the processes and appliances devised in connexion with the production of beet sugar to the extraction of its older rival.

Manufacture.

CANE SUGAR MANUFACTURE. —The sugar-cane (Saccharum officin- Manu- arum) is a species of grass, the stalks or canes of which reach a facture.

height of from 8 to 15 feet, and attain a diameter of 14 to 2 inches. The stalks are divided into prominent joints or internodes, the long sheathing alternate leaves springing from each joint. As the canes approach maturity they throw up a long smooth hollow joint termed the arrow, whence springs the flower head, consisting of beautiful feather-like loose panicles. The points are filled with a loose spongy fibrous mass, saturated with a juice which is at first watery but afterwards becomes sweet and glutinous. As the

joints ripen, the leaves wither and fall away and the stem becomes externally smooth, shining, and hard, containing much silica. The varieties of sugar-cane in cultivation are very numerous, and are distinguished from each other by external colour, length of internodes (84 to 10 inches), height to which they grow, richness in juice, and many other characters. The four principal classes cultivated in the West Indies are the Creole or country cane, the Tahiti cane, the Batavian cane, and the Chinese cane. An average sample of Tahiti cane at maturity contains—water, 71°04 per cent.; sugar, 18°00 ; ligneous tissue and pectin, 9°56 ; albumen, colouring matter, aud insoluble salts, 1°20; silica, 0°20. The sugar-cane requires a rich, well-drained, but moist soil. It is propagated by slips taken from the upper part of the canes, which are planted at intervals about 5 feet apart or in close-set rows 6 feet apart. In the West Indies the planting takes place between June and October, and in the case of the Creole variety the canes are ready for cutting down by the beginning of January in the second following year. When mature the canes are cut down close to the ground, the remaining leaves and upper shoot removed, and the stalks immediately taken to the mill for crushing. The stocks left are liberally manured with crushed. remains and ashes of former crops, combined with nitrogenous manures, and are covered over; they then send up a crop of new stems, termed rattoons. The system of rattooning can be continued for several years, but the canes so treated go on declining in size and in yield of sugar. The yield of canes, of course, varies within wide limits; but 20 tons per acre may be regarded as a good average crop. : Cane-Crushing.—The juice is extracted by pressing the canes in a sugar-mill between three, or sometimes five, heavy close-set rollers of iron, placed horizontally in a powerful framework or cheeks. In a three-roller mill they consist of a cane, top, and megass roller respectively. The top roller is set above and between the other two, and under its periphery isa fixed metal plate called the trash turner, which guides the cane coming from between the cane and top rollers into the bite between top and megass rollers. Generally the cane roller is screwed up to within half an inch of the top roller, while the free space between top and megass rollers is considerably less. The mill is set in motion by steam power, and the canes are fed by hand on a travelling band or carrier into the rollers. If a thick feed is placed at one side and little at the other, one portion passes through imperfectly crushed, while the other severely strains the mill

and may either stop the machinery or cause a breakdown by some portion giving way. The yield of

Purifica- tion of cane juice.

Boiling down,

Sugar beet,

juice obtained with an ordinary mill varies from 60 to 65 per cent. One of the most useful devices for improving the machinery is the substitution of an hydraulic attachment, which can be applied to the headstocks of any of the rollers, in place of the rigid and im- movable screws and wedges of the ordinary mill. This secures a uniform pressure with the most irregular feed and much greater pressure than is possible with rigid rollers, resulting in a greatly increased yield of juice (67 to 70 per cent.) and a megass or refuse proportionately drier and therefore more available for fuel for steam-raising. The juice from the mill is led into a trough, whence it is carried by pipes to the clarifiers. But even the most perfect system of mechanical pressure leaves a large percentage of sugar in the refuse cane, and to remedy this the diffusion method (see below), which has been attended with remarkable success in the beet in. dustry, has been also applied to the extraction of cane juice. At Aska (Madras) in India it has been found possible by that process to obtain as much as 87% of the 90 per cent. of juice present in canes, Considerable difficulty was at first found’ in slicing the silicious stalks for diffusion ; but this process seems to promise a much more exhaustive extraction of the juice than can be secured by mechanical means. The juice is a turbid frothy liquid of a yellowish green colour, with a specific gravity of from 1-070 to about 1°100. The variety of cane cultivated, its age, and especially the nature of the season in which it has grown as regards rain, all have an important influence on the yield of sugar. ‘The expressed juice contains from 15 to 18 per cent. of solids, showing on a good average—sugar, 14°55 per cent.; glucose, 1°65; non-saccharine solids, ‘917 ; ash, ‘283. The juice got from sugar-cane is much richer in

sugar and less contaminated with non-saccharine solids than that yielded by beet; and its pleasant taste and aromatic odour contrast markedly with the acrid taste and unpleasant smell of beet juice.

Purification of the Juice.—In the hot climates where sugar-canes grow a process of fermentation is almost immediately set up in the impure juices from the canes, causing the formation of invert sugar and later products of fermentation, and thereby a serious loss of sugar. It is therefore essential that with the least possible delay the mannfacturing processes should be proceeded with. The juice is first filtered through a set of sieves to remove the mechanical impurities it carries from the mill. Then it is run into the clarifiers, a series of iron vessels capable of holding six or eight hundred gallons of juice, and in these it is heated up to about 130° Fahr., and milk of lime is added in quantity sufficient to neutralize the acid constituents it contains. The heat is then raised to just under the boiling-point, when gradually a thick scum rises and forms on the surface, and when the defecation thereby effected is complete the clear liquid below is drawn off, Various other sub- stances besides lime are employed for the defecation of juice, one of which, the bisulphite of lime in the so-called Icery process, has attained considerable favour. The bisulphite is added in excess ; the acids of the juice decompose a certain proportion of it, liberat- ing sulphurous acid, which by its influence promotes the coagula- tion of the albuminous principles aud at the same time promotes the bleaching of the liquid. In another process the green juice is first treated with sulphurous acid, which (with the natural acid constituents) is subsequently neutralized by lime. Recently also phosphoric acid has come into favour as a defecating agent.

Boiling Down.—From the clarifier the juice passes on to the battery, a range of three to five pans or “coppers,” heated by direct fire, in which it is concentrated down to the crystallizing point. The juice, gradually increasing in density, is passed from the one into the other till it teaches the last of the series, the striking teach, in which it is concentrated to the granulating point. The skimmings from these pans are collected Tum. From the striking teach the concentrated juice is removed to shallow coolers, in which the crystals form. A few days later it is transferred to hogsheads in the curing-house, and the molasses crystallized raw sugar into tanks. The sugar so

obtained is the muscovado of the sugar-refiners, and both Clayed sugar consists of raw sugar from which a portion of the anette

pan, Fryer’s concreter, and similar devices for the efficient

: ae evapora- tion of juice 2

by exposing it to the action of heat in thin films over

BEET Sucar Manvuracturr.—The sugar beet is a cultivated lety of Beta maritima (natural order Chenopodiacez), other varieties of which, nnder the name of mangold or mangel wurzel, are grown as feeding-roots for cattle. The plants are cultivated like turnips, and the roots attain their maturity in about five months

on inland sugar is there calculated on the roots.

juice is expressed. After having

SUGAR

after sowing,

being gathered during September and October. The efforts of growers have been largely directed to the development of

roots yielding juice rich in sugar; and especially in Germany these

efforts have been stimulated by the circumstance that excise duty The duty is based on the assumption that from 124 parts of beet 1 part of grain sugar is obtained ; but in actual practice 1 part of raw sugar is now yielded by 9°27 parts of root. Moreover, when the sugar is exported a drawback is paid for that on which no duty was actually levied, and hence indirectly comes the so-called bounty on German sugar. In 1836 for 1 part of sugar 18 parts of beet were used, in 1850 18°8 parts, in 1860 127 parts, and now (1887) about 9:25 parts only are required. In France till recently the inland duty was calculated on the raw sugar; hence the French grower devoted himself to the production of roots of a large size yielding great weight per acre, and had no motive to aim at rich juice and econo- mical production. Many

processes, therefore, have come into use in German factories which are not available under the French methods of working. But since 1884 the French manufacturers have had the power to elect whether duty shall be levied on the roots they use or on the raw sugar they make, and a large propor- tion have already chosen the former. The nature of the seasons exercises much influence on the composition of sugar beet, especially on its richness in sugar, which may range from 10 to 20 per cent. The following represents the limits of average composition :— Water ++, § 84°5 to 79°0 Sugar and other soluble bodies } solids OUTS to 17-0 Cellulose and other solids 40 4-0 The non-saccharine solids in the juice are very complex, embrac- ing albumen, amido-acids, and other nitrogenous bodies, beetroot gum, soluble pectose compounds, fat, colouring matter, with the phosphates, Ape oxalates, and citrates of potash, soda, lime, and iron, and silica. The relation and relative proportion of these to the sugar present are of the utmost importance.

Two distinct ways of obtaining the juice from bect are now Extr: principally employed,—pressure and diffusion. The mechanical tion | methods of pressure are principally used in France ; the process of juice. diffusion is all but universal in Germany. Formerly a modified diffusion process—maceration—was in use ; but it has now been generally abandoned, as has also a meaus of separating the juice by centrifugal action. For the mechanical processes the roots have first to be reduced to a condition of fine ulp. For this purpose Meth the roots, thoroughly trimmed and waste, are fed into a pala, of pre machine, in which a large drum or cylinder, armed with close-set sure. rows of saw-toothed blades, is revolved with great rapidity, so that the fleshy roots on coming against them are rasped down to a fine uniform pulp. The operation is assisted by pouring small quanti- ties of water or of watery juice on the revolving drum, which thins the pulp somewhat, and aids the free flow of the juice in the sub- sequent operation. The expression of the juice is effected either by the hydraulic press or by continuous roller presses. From the hydraulic press the juice flows freely at first ; but in order to obtain the largest possible yield it is necessary to moisten the first press- cake and submit it to a second ressure, whereby a thin watery

Bion pressed twice, the cake that is left should amount to not more than 17 per cent, of the original roots ; hence, allowing 4 per cent. for ligneous tissue, &., only about 13 per cent. of watcr, sugar, and soluble salts, &c., remain in the refuse. For the system of continuous pressure presses analogous to the mills employed for cane-crushing are used. Many modifications of the roller press have been introduced, and, although the best express from 3 to 5 per cent. less juice than the hydraulic press, they have several advantages under the system formerly common in France, which bound the maker to return press-cake containing a certain proportion of sugar for use as a feeding-stuff on the farm. In certain forms of press the lower rollers are per- forated to allow the escape of the expressed juice; in some the rollers are covered with india-rubber, so that they give an elastic Squeeze on an extended surface ; and in others the pulp is carried in an endless cloth through a series of rollers, being all the while subjected to gradually increasing pressure, _

The diffusion process for obtaining beet juice depends on the Diffusi action of dialysis, in which two liquids of different degrees of con- process centration separated by a membrane tend to transfuse through the membrane till equilibrium of solution is attained. In the beet the cell-walls are membranes enclosing a solution of sugar. Supposing these cells to be brought into contact with pure water, then by theory, if the cells contain 12 per cent. of juice, transfusion will go on till an equal weight of water contains 6 per cent. of sugar, while by the passage of water into the cell the juice there is reduced to the same density, Taking the 6 per cent. watery solution and with it treating fresh roots containing again 12 per cent., a 9 per cent. solution will be attained, which on being brought a third time in contact with fresh roots would be raised to a density of 105, Thus theoretically seven-eighths of the whole sugar would be obtained at the third operation, and it is on this theory that the diffusion process is based. In working the process a range of

Purifica- Ifthe juice obtained by any process were a pure solution of sugar | grainy mass of crystals floating in a fluid syrup. After being Separa- jon of the manufacturing operations would be few and simple. But beet | allowed to cool, the mass is fed into the drum or basket of a cen- tion of eet juice is at best a very mixed solution, containing much gum, acid | trifugal machine,

which by its rapid rotation separates the fiuid crystals uice. bodies, nitrogenous matter, and various salts. These adhere to the | molasses from the crystals, driving the liquid portion through the from

saccharine solution with the utmost obstinacy ; they attack the | meshed wall of the basket. For further cleaning of the crystals molasses.

sugar itself and change crystalline into invert sugar, communicat- from adherent syrup a small quantity of either water or pure syrup

ing to it a dirty brown colour and a disagreeable acrid taste and | is added to the drum, and is likewise forced through the sugar

smell. To separate as far as possible the non-saccharine con- | crystals by centrifugal action. Steam also is employed for cleaning

stituents and to remove the colour from the juice are troublesome | the crystals whilst in the centrifugal machine. ‘The syrup from

tasks. The preliminary purification embraces two sets of opera- | the first supply of sugar is returned to the vacuum pan, again

tions, —first the treatment of the juice with lime and carbonic acid, | boiled, and treated as above for a second supply of less pure sugar;

secondly, filtration through animal charcoal. Under the old | similarly a third supply is yielded by the drainings of the second.

method of working the juice is first boiled in a ene pan with | The molasses from the third supply is a highly impure mixture of

milk of lime to the extent of from 4 to 1 per cent. of lime to the ; crystallizable and invert sugar, potash, and other salts, smelling

weight of juice operated on. The boiling serves to coagulate | and tasting powerfully of its beet origin. Many methods have

the albuminoids, while the lime forms with certain of the other | been tried to recover the large amount of sugar contained in this

impurities an insoluble precipitate, and in part combines with the | molasses. That most extensively employed is the osmose process

sugar to form a soluble saceharate of lime. The insoluble lime | originated by Dubrunfaut, in which, by the application of a dialyser,

combination and the coagulum rise as a scum over the surface of | it is found that the salts pass through the membrane more rapidly

the juice, and the latter, now comparatively clear, is drawn off by | than does sugar. The elution process of Scheibler, which depends

a siphon pipe, to be treated in another vessel with carbonic acid. j| on the formation of a saccharate of lime, and the more recent

The acid breaks up the saccharate of lime and forms insoluble | strontia process of the same chemist, in which a strontiate of lime

earbonate of lime, whieh in precipitating carries down further | is formed, are also much employed. Another means of utilizing

impurities with it. After settlement the clear juice is drawn off | the molasses consists in fermenting and distilling from it an im-

and the precipitated slime pressed in a filter press, whereby it | pure spirit for industrial purposes. J ; ;

gives up tre juice it contains. As now commonly eonducted these Sugar-Refining.— Sugar -refiners deal indifferently with raw cane Refining.

operations—treating with lime and carbonic acid—are combined, | and beetroot sugars which come into the market, and by precisely

according to the method devised by Jelinek. The juice to be | the same series of operations. The sugar is first melted in charges

purified is heated and treated with as much as 5 per cent. of lime, | of 5 or 6 tons in blow-ups,—cast-iron tanks fitted with mechanical

while carbonic acid is simultaneously injected into the mass. The | stirrers and steam-pipes for heating the water. The solution called

juice meantime is raised to a temperature just under boiling-point. | Jiqguor is brought to a certain degree of gravity, from 25 to 33

The addition of such a large amount of lime effects the precipitation | Baumé, and formerly it was the practice to treat it, especially when

of a great proportion of the non-saccharine constituents of the juice. | low qualities of sugar were operated on, with blood albumen. The

The whole mass of turbid liquid formed by this treatment is forced | hot liquor is next passed through twilled cotton bags encased in a

into a filter press, and there the lime compounds and impurities are | meshing of hemp, through which the solution is mechanically

separated with great rapidity from the saccharine juice. Numerous | strained. From 50 to 200 of these filters are suspended in close

other methods of purification have been proposed, and to some | chambers, in which they are kept hot, from the bottom of a per-

extent have met with favourable reception ; but of these we can | forated iron tank, each perforation having under it a bag. These

only mention that of Dubrunfaut and De Massy, in which baryta | bags have from time to time to be taken off for cleaning out and

is substituted for lime, thereby producing an insoluble barium | washing. From the bag filter the liquor is passed for decolorizing

saccharate, and the analogous process of Scheibler, in which strontia | through beds of animal charcoal enclosed in cisterns to a depth

is employed in the same sense, producing likewise insoluble strontia | of from 30 to 50 fect, the sugar being received into tanks for con-

saccharate. The juice, which still contains much saline and other | centration in the vacuum pan. — In that apparatus it is boiled to

non-saccharine matter, is next filtered through animal charcoal ; grain," and the treatment is varied according to the et the

this largely removes colouring matter and carries away a further | finished sugar to be made. To make loaves small crystals only

proportion of the salts. Charcoal filtering is an expensive process; | are formed in the pan, and the granular eclipse He see.

being, moreover, a feature of the subsequent refining, many | jacketed open pans and raised to a temperature s about. ie

attempts have been made to dispense with it, and the success of | Fahr., which liquefies the grains. The hot 80 Wa is then cast

the Jelinek method in producing a comparatively pure and colour- | into conical moulds, the form of the loaf, in aes t ie a as u

less juice has given rise to hopes that it may at this stage be yet | cools crystallizes into a solid mass, still surrounded and mixed wit

dispensed with. a syrup containing coloured and other impurities. After ieee rystal- The next operation consists in concentrating the comparatively | settling and crystallization, a plug aD the bottom of t me zation. pure but thin and watery juice,—a work formerly done in open | is opened and the syrup allowed to drain away. ‘To whiten the

> UGA R

ten or twelve diffusers are employed, eight being in operation while the others are being emptied, cleaned, and refilled. These diffusers consist of large close upright cylinders capable of holding each two or three tons of sliced roots. They are provided with manholes above, perforated false bottoins, and pipes communicating with each other, so that the fluid contents of any one can be forced by pressure into any other. In working, pure water from an elevated tank is run into No. 1 cylinder, which contains the slices almost exhausted of their soluble contents ; it percolates the mass, and by pressure passes into No. 2, where it acts on slices some- what richer in juice. So it goes through the series, acquiring density in its progress and meeting in each successive eylinder slices increasingly rich in juice. Before entering the last cylinder the watery juice is heated, and under the combined influence of heat and pressure the juice within the eylinder becomes riehly eharged with sugar. No. 1 cylinder when exhausted is discon- nected ; No. 2 then becomes No. 1, and a newly charged cylinder is joined on at the other

extremity ; and so the operation goes on continuously. The juice ultimately obtained is diluted with about 50 per cent. of water; but it is of a comparatively pure saccharine quality, with less gummy, nitrogenous, and fibrous impurities than accompany the juice yielded by mechanical means.

pans by direct firing, but now carried out in closed vessels, in which the vacuum pan principle of boiling is brought into play. The apparatus consists of a series of three closed vessels, hence called a ‘triple effect,” although in some cases a two-vessel apparatus or double effect is employed. These pans are provided internally with a series of closed pipes for steam-heating, the steam from the boiler of the first passing by a pipe into the worm of the second, and similarly the steam from the second into the worm of the third when a third pan is employed. The steam which rises in the third pan is drawn off by a condenser and vacuum pump, and, as the vaeuum so created acts through the whole series, the juice 1s evaporated and concentrated at a comparatively low temperature

by the agency of the steam supplied to the first pan. The juice increases in gravity as it is drawn from the one pan to the other, till by the time it 1s run off from the third eylinder it has attained a concentration representing a gravity of about 25 Baumé. ‘This concentrated juiee is while in a heated condition filtered through fresh charcoal, from which it comes ready for boiling down to orystallization. To bring the dense juice to the crystallizing point it is necessary to conduct the evaporation at the lowest possible temperature. High temperature increases the uncrystallizable at the expense of the crystallizable portion, and burns some proportion into caramel, which darkens the liquid and the resulting sugar erystals. Boiling down at low temperature is effected by the use of the vacuum pan, a closed globular vessel in which by the aid of a condenser and air-pump a vacuum is maintained over the boiling Juice and the boiling-point is lowered in proportion to the decrease of air pressure. In vacuum pan boiling the thiek juice may simply be eoneentrated to that degree of density from which, on cooling, the crystals will form, or the crystals may be allowed to separate from the mother-liquor in the pan while the boiling proceeds; these crystals, forming nuelei, increase in size from the concentra- tion of fresh charges of

juice added from time to time. By this method the boiled-down juice as it leaves the pan consists of a

loaves they are treated with successive doses of saturated syrup, ending with a syrup of pure colourless sugar. These doses aro poured on the upper side of the cone, and, percolating down through the porous mass, carry with them the impure green syrup which still may adhere to the crystals. The liquor which obstinately remains in the interstices is driven out by suction or centrifugal action ; the loaf is rounded off, papered, and placed in a stove for drying. The syrup which drains from the loaves is sold as golden syrup. When refined crystals are to be made the contents of the vacuum pan are passed into the centrifugal machine; the syrup is then driven off by rotation, and the erystals purified either by adding pure syrup to the revolving basket or by blowing steam through it.

There are numerous modified and subsidiary processes connected with refining, as well as with all branches of the sugar industry, regarding which it is not possible here to enter into detail. The industry is essentially progressive and subject to many changes. Sorghum Sorcuum Sucar.—The stem of the Guinea corn or sorghum

United Kingdom is the only open market for sugar, which is con- sequently sold there at an unprecedentedly low price. The follow- ing table shows the relative proportions of the beet and the cane sugar trade and the principal sources of the supply for 1880-85 :—

sugar, (Sorghum piel cag) ee pie pee ne eee 1880-81. | 1881-82. | 1889-83, | 1883-84, | 1894-85, of sugar, and the possibility of cu Ivating it as a ri i Met eine and betes has attracted much attention in America. ome Be ie vo , ae ; i The sorghum is hardier than the sugar-cane ; it comes to maturity Austria-Hungary. 498,082 411,015 473.002 | 4 46,000 “558,000 in a season ; and it retains its maximum sugar content a consider- Buattechenc ct. eee 333 614 | 398,269 | 493,194 | 474,000 308,000 able time, giving opportunity for leisurely harvesting. The sugar Busia and Poland.) 250,000 | 308,779 284,991 | 308,000 | 387,000 is obtained by the same method as cane sugar. The cultivation of Hollaea sce 68,626 73,136 82,720 | 107,000 88,000

sorghum sugar has roe found ae ee a va a countries …..... 30,000 |__30,000 |__35,000 |__ 40,000 50,000 the total yield from that source in id not excee ‘ ‘ | s ___ 88000 | 50,000. Maple Mata S6ei sap of the ioe or ee joa a a cae a 1,774,545 *1860,974 | 2,147,081 | 2,361,000 2,546,000 sitgar. harinum, a large tree growing in the United States and Cana a, ; . ° eae a Tosa sarily of ees enn also occasionally finds its way See rs ees pg pee oe yO into commerce. The sap is collected in spring, just before the | | tTriniaad eee 43,600 53,400 54°000 59°800 es foliage develops, and is procured by making a notch or boring a Barbados…..... 45,000 53,000 52,000 56,000 60,700 hole in the stem of the tree about 3 feet from the ground, A tree ae eae ge ao te rea 18,000 may yield 3 gallons of juice a day and continue flowing for six Martinique …..... | 48°00 | a7’s0p 46,800} 49400 | 8’g00 weeks; but on an aoe on about 4 p “ uae are oo Guadeloupe …..... ae 157000 1522000 152:300 41,200 from each tree, 4 to 6 gallons o sap giving of sugar. € sap emerara …..... ‘ 5 ‘ ‘ 96,000 is purified and coneeStiaied in a simple manner, the whole work a. ae ne iietee lee 130409 138000 being carried on by farmers, who themselves use much of the pro- ava …...., 210,500 | 973000 283°600 | 811°400 Ee ied duct for domestic and culinary purposes. ig el ee of poe India Bie ue que 60,000 951000 e United States ranges from 30,000,000 to 0,000,000 ib, prin- TazZIS …..0… ao , ’ ‘ f i ieee obtained in OnE, New York, Ohio, and Beaaay Caaniter oe Tloilo be ol ecg eae oe ces In Canada also a considerable quantity of maple sugar is collected | | Peru… 7717”: :.{ 40,000 | 40,000 31,000 25,000 35,000 for domestic use. Bey tie sac cancers 32,000 29,000 21,000 30,000 40,000 Palm PaLM Ee tee ae on Eye the pie fie ae Total….| 1,979,900 | 2,044,000 | 2,056,000 | 2,210,400 “2,260,100. sugar. jaggery or khaur is obtained from the sap o Several palms, the Se Se ee eee wad date (Phenix sylvestris), the Palmyra Pee jlabelliformis), Beet and Cane..| 3,754,445 | 8,904,974 | 4,203,031 4,571,400 | 4,806,100 the cocoa-nut (Cocos nucifera), the gomuti (Arenga neha ania) | Thien nates values of beet and of a low quality of raw cane su ar and others. The principal source is Phentz sylvestris, which is for 1879-86 are shown in the followin g table :— § cultivated in a portion of the Ganges valley to the north of Cal- : cutta. The trees are ready to yicld sap when five years old; at Average Pricaieabh Year eight years they are mature, and continue to give an annual supply : till they reach thirty years. The collection of the sap (toddy) 1879. | 1880. | 1881. | 1889, begins about the end of October and continues, during the cool season, till the middle of*

*February. The sap is drawn off from Unclayed Manila (taal)| * 4-|s. ds. d}s dls. a. the upper growing portion of the stem, and a together an average on spot tree will run in a season 350 tb of toddy, from which about 35 tb of raw sugar—jaggery—is made by simple and rude processes. Jaggery production is entirely in native hands, and the greater ; part of the amount made is consumed locally; it only occasionally Average Prico of the Fourteen Years 1872 to 1885. | Price, August 1886, reaches the European market. Unelayed Manila (taal) ..... 14s.113d. percwt.| 8s. 8d. per ewt. Starch Starcy Sucar.—This, known in commerce as glucose or grape | | German beet; basis 88 per cent. f.o.b. 21s. 6id. | ie. " Sugar.* — sugar, an abundant constituent of sweet fruits, &c. (see p. 628 above), (J. PA.) is artificially elaborated on an extensive scale from starch. The SUGAR-BIRD, the Enelish name commonly given in industry is most largely developed in Germany, where potato starch di T lai 8 h : b & is the raw material, and in the United States, Indian corn starch | the West India Islands to the various mem ers of the being there cmployed. The starch is acted on by a weak solution | genus Certhiola (generally regarded as belonging to the of sulphuric acid, whereby soluble starch is formed, which ulti- Family Corebide 1) from their habit of frequenting the mately results in a mixture of glucose and dextrose in varying curing-houses where sugar is kept apparently attracted proportions, constituting the starch sugar of commerce. The highs by te ? fi Th IMle bird operations embrace the boiling of the starch with water containing | thither by t © Swarms or ilies, ese iTtule birds on ac- the requisite proportion of acid, the neutralization of the acid with count of their pretty plumage and their familiarity are lime, and the formation of a precipitate of sulphate of lime, which | ugually favourites, They often come into dwelling-houses, is separated by filtration in a filter press. The filtered liquid is, where they preserve great coolness, h opping gravely from when necessary, deprived of colour by passing it through a bed of : ee s p A full lon animal charcoal, and then it is concentrated to a density of from | One piece or Iurniture to another and carefully exploring 40 to 45 Baumé in a vacuum pan. If the resulting syrup contains | the surrounding objects with intent to find a spider or little dextrin it will on cooling slowly solidify into a granular con- | insect, In their figure and motions they remind a northern cretionary mass ; but if much dextrin is present it remains in the naturalist of a Nuthatch, while their coloration— black condition of a syrup. Starch sugar is very largely used by brewers 7 if

d hi : lls. to li Tit i and distillers, and by liqueur makers, confectioners, and others | Yetlow, Olive, grey, and white—reca § to him a Jitmouse. for making fruit and other syrups. Burnt to caramel, it is algo They generally keep in pairs and build a domed but un- employed to colour beverages and food substances. As an adul- tidy nest, laying therein three eggs, white blotched. with terant it is largely employed in the honey trade and for mixing rusty-red. Apart from all this the genus presents some with the more valuable cane sugar. In 1885 there were about ¢ ee Mr Sel Cot. B. Bn Wh fifty factories in Germany engaged in starch sugar making, in points of great interest. s clater (fas 0 a which 10,000 tons of hard sugar, 20,000 tons of syrup, and 1250 | Xl. pp. 36-47) recognizes 18 “species,” therein following tons of “colour” were made. Mr Ridgway (Proc. U.S. Nat. Ifuseum, 1885, pp. 25-30), Compaen: of which 8 are continental with a Joint range extending Com. At the present time, judging by the amount sent to the market, | from southern Mexico to Peru, Bolivia, and south-eastern merce,

cane aud beet sugars since vast quantities India, China, and other Eastern countrie

account, there cannot be a doubt that th

cane far exceeds that of beet sugar.

than forty years,

not have been so

of protection established in the produ

are produced in about equal amount ; but, of cane sugar are grown and consumed in s of which we get no e annual production of

Still, as a growth of not more 2 the dimensions to w attained are certainly remarkable.

hich the beet sugar trade has

But these dimensions would

ad it not been for the system cing countries and of bounties

xporting their produce, The

Brazil, while the remaining 15 are peculiar to certain of

1 Known in French as Gutt-guits, a name used for them also by some English writers, The Guitguit of Hernandez (Rer. Medic. N. Hisp. Thesaurus, p. 56), a name said by him to be of native origin, can hardly be determined, though thought by Montbeillard (ist. Nat. Oiseaux, v. p. 529) to be what is now known as Cereba cerulea, but that of later writers is C, eyanea, ‘he name is probably onomato- poetic, and very likely analogous to the ‘“Quit ” applied in Jamaica to several small birds.

the Antilles, and several of them to one island only. Thus C. cabott is limited, so far as is known, to Cozumel (off Yucatan),! C. tricolor to Old Providence, C. flaveola (the type of the genus) to Jamaica, and so on, while islands that are in sight of one another are often inhabited by different “species.” Further research is required; but even now the genus furnishes an excellent example of the effects of iso- lation in breaking up an original form, while there is com- paratively little differentiation among the individuals which inhabit a large and continuous area. The non-appearance of this genus in Cuba is very remarkable. (A. WN.)

SUGDEN, Epwarp BurtensHaw. See St Leonarps, Lorp.

SUHL, a manufacturing town in an isolated portion of Prussian Saxony, is picturesquely situated on the Lauter, on the southern slope of the Thuringian Forest, 64 miles to the north-east of Meiningen and 29 miles to the south- west of Erfurt. The armourers of Suhl are mentioned as early as the 9th century, but they enjoyed their highest vogue from 1550 to 1634. The knights of south Germany especially prized the swords and armour of this town, and many of the weapons used in the medieval campaigns against the Turks and in the Seven Years’ War are said to have been manufactured

at Suhl. Its old popular name of the “armoury of Germany” is more appropriate, how- ever, to its past than to its present position, for, already seriously crippled by the ravages of the Thirty Years’ War and by frequent conflagrations, it has suffered considerably in more modern times from the competition of other towns, especially since the introduction of the needle-gun. It still contains, however, large factories for firearms (military and sporting) and side arms, besides iron-works, machine- works, potteries, and tanneries. The once considerable manufacture of fustian has declined. A brine spring (Soolquelle) at the foot of the neighbouring Domberg is said to have given name to the town. The population in 1880 was 9937 and 10,605 in 1885. Suhl, made a town in 1527, belonged to the early principality of Henne- berg, and formed part of the possessions of the kingdom of Saxony assigned to Prussia by the congress of Vienna.

SUICIDE. The phenomenon of suicide has at all times attracted a large amount of attention from moralists and social investigators. Though of very small dimensions, even in the countries where it is most prevalent, its exist- ence is rightly looked upon as a sign of the presence of maladies in the body politic which, whether remediable or not, deserve careful examination. To those who look at human affairs from a theological standpoint, suicide neces- sarily assumes a graver aspect, being regarded, not as a minute and rather obscure disease of the social organism, but as an appalling sign of the tendency of man to resist the will of God. Compare Frno pz Sz. As a great number of persons are, either directly or indirectly, under the influence of the theological bias, and as the act of suicide is in itself of a striking character to the imagina- tion, the importance of the phenomenon from a sociological point of view has been to some extent exaggerated, especi- ally in those countries of the Continent where suicides are most numerous. Moreover, the matter has during the last twenty years become of direct interest to the Govern- ments of those countries where the whole able-bodied male population are more or less under the control of a military organization ; for, rightly or wrongly, a portion of the recent considerable increase in the suicide rate of Prussia, Saxony, Austria, and France is attributed to dislike of

military service. It may be observed in passing that the SSS) eee eee ee

1 In the article Brrps (iii. p. 749) attention was drawn to what was then believed to be a fact—namely, that the form found in this island was identical with that which inhabits the Bahamas; but now the two forms are regarded as distinct.

suicide rate among soldiers is high in all countries, Great Britain not excepted, as was shown by Mr W. H. Millar in the Journal of the Statistical Society, vol. xxxvii., 1874, and more recently by Dr Ogle in the same Journal, vol. xlix. (March), 1886. As enlistment is voluntary in the United Kingdom, the alleged dislike to conscription can- not be the sole cause of the high rate prevailing in some of the Continental states. Before referring to the more general characteristics of suicide, it will be well to furnish some idea of its magnitude in relation to the category of social phenomena to which it belongs, namely, death. The following tables are constructed for this purpose. The first (I.) gives the absolute number of cases of suicide as officially stated in a number of countries for a series of

I, Statement of the Number of Cases of Swieide in the Principal Coun- tries of Europe during the undermentioned Periods and Years.

at ie | TS al et BI oT eae as

Periods.| 3 | 2 | 3 |eu3| @ | 2| 8 8 1S pe aS

b/s |e |P8s| Ble] 2/3 [24] 5 % 5

Pa =

n|Aa/A IA ale lae |s 45

1836-40 | 214] 113| 272} 967 | 1471 | 183] 2574 .. | .. | 264] 528

1841-45 | 212|138| 806] .. | 1642 |1235] 2951/1890| :: | 247) 340] 595

1846-50 | 229] 150| 341) .. | 1696 [1263] 3446] .. | 185] 218] 373|177

1851-55 | 253 | 154| 402] 1025 | 2075 | 166] 3639] 150| 196] 275| 496| 666 1856-60 | 211| 145] 446] 1310 | 2152 | 213] 4002|170| 144] 339] 509|1799] -. 1861-65 | 301 | 141 |1431] 1343 | 2247 | 221/14700] 189 |1175|1384| 601 | 1051 | 1718 1866 |309|121| 443] 1329 | 2485 | 215] 5119|189| 244] 410] 704|1265| 588 1867 | 371|131| 469] 1316 | 3625 | 365] 5011) 198] 270) 471| 752|1407| 753 1868 |366|130| 498] 1508 | 8658 | 376| 5547| 212| 283| 441| s00|1566| 784 1869 |356|131) 462] 1588 | 3544 | 257| 5114| 221| 251| 430| 710|1375| 633 1870 |369|148| 486] 1554 | 8270 | 838] 4157|195| 247| 459] 657|1510| 788 1866-70 | 354 | 133| 472] 1459 | 3816 | 310| 4989] 203| 259] 449] 725 739 1871 |821|128) 505] 1495 | 8135 | 367| 4490| 244| 238) 419] 6538/2040] 836 1872 |309|132) 464] 1514 | 8457 | 356| 5275|219| 258| 405] 687|2194| 890 1873 |337|126) 439] 1518 | 8345 | 877| 5525|216| 804] 447| 723|2463| 975 1874 |394| 99] 439] 1592 | 3490 | 874] 5617| 244| 289) 450) 723 | 2617 | 1015 1875 |376|144| 394] 1601 | 8432 | 336] 5472|226| 334| 459| 745 | 2741] 922 1871-75 | 347|126| 448] 1544 | 3368 | 362] 5256|231| 294] 436) 706) 2411] 923 1876 |409|142| 507| 1770 | 4448 | 439] 5804| 269] 343] 522) 981 | 3376 | 1024 1877 | 430/130] 530| 1699 | 4563 | 470| 5878| 291| 824] 650) 1114 | 8598 | 1139 1878 |411|132| 544] 1764 | 4992 | 490] 6434] 817 | 425] 674| 1126 | 3486 | 1158 1879 | 438/141] 505| 2035 | 4881 | 553] 6496| 309| 380] 750| 1121 | 3469 | 1295 1880 | 384|124| 496] 1979 | 5034 | 591] 6638|338] 871] 682| 1171 | 3649 | 1261 1876-80 | 414 | 134| 516] 1849 | 4784 | 509] 6250] 305] 369] 656| 1103 | 3516 | 1161 1881 | 384/123] 495] 1955 | 5159 | 550| 6741] 306] 348] 695] 1248 | 3504] 1313 iss2 | 482/136] 505] 1965 | 5312 | 595] 7213/2838] .. | 724| 1128 | 3530] 1389 1883 | 470| 134] 513] 1962 | 5337 | 599] 7267| 341 .. | 1205 | 3595 | 1456 1884 |431| .. | .. | 2043 | 5013 a . [8783] ..

1881-84 | 442 1981 | 5205 | .. 3603

II. Statement of the Estimated Population of the undermentioned Countries in the Years 1868, 1876, and 1882; the Number of Deaths from Suicide and other Causes in the same Years in the same Countries ; and the Proportions borne by the Deaths to the

Population in each ease.” A.—1868.

Number of Estimated yt nw Population Inhabitants Countries. in the Le ee Middle of ; the Year. Total. DASE ee ee ee | __ Ce ae ee eee 20,026,554 |

1986 | 569,566 | 571,552 28,401 ae 17453,9393| 212 | 39,677 | 39,889 | 146 27,984 BA ALION close owtelsie 4,750,0004 158,559 | 159,0005 33,377 Bolginm…..s1..0.. 4,961,644 107,180 | 107,556 21,625 WenmMarls .cesgaccens 1,748,000 33,318 | 33,816 19,015 POORGS occas cess ie 38,829,617 916,491 | 922,088 23,955 DAW cco lscstececne 25,434,376 776,440 | 777,224 | 31 180,569 Genii… cows 247,069,379 655,070 | 658,728 | 152 |27,248 RALONN S Weancnecie 2,453,555 71,918 | 72,718 29,315 Ryfedeii.c occ. ccs0es 4,173,080 87,441 | 87,807 20,912 United Kingdom— England and Wales| 21,948,718 | 1508 | 479,114 | 480,622 | 69 (21,781/21,800 Triad severe dwvera-ss 5,465,914 87 86,098 86,185 | 16 |15,784)15,800 Beotland . oc. is ae 8,275,350 128 | 69,293 69,416 | 387 /21,163)21,200 158,090,121 |16,886 |4,050,165 4,066, 551 104 |25,636|25,740

rr ee rrr nnn nn a PURE URDU ARI

1 Uncertain data. 2 Still-births are excluded.

8 Adding natural increase of 1868 to population of 1867 (Kolb).

4 Estimate, deducting natural increase of 1869-1870 from figure in census of 1871. 5 159,186 including still-births.

630

years. Table II. (A, B, C) refers to three separate years and shows the number of cases of suicide relatively to all the deaths and to the population for certain countries, The totals for the countries in question are also given. Table I. is obtained from Morselli (Table I.) with the addi- tion of figures that have been published since his work appeared.’ Table III. gives the figures relating to three States of the American Union which have published statis- tics on the subject.

a

II. B.—1876. Number of Estimated Deaths Deathe per Population De eee Countries. k 2 ae ‘ Inhabitants. Liddle o cs) a8 Of aa aS) AS the Wear | S| ee | come ie ee Total.| ot a} Ss aAlPS PAUCIVES Goreme ecw 21,319,544 |

2438 631,925 | 634,363 | 114 29,686]29,800 Page terccess) hin 1,507,179 269 | 40,054 | 40,328 | 178 |26,582/96,760 BaVAri oceans 5,022,390 | 522 | 158,674 | 154,196 | 104 |30,596130,700 Belpiume..00). 000. 5,836,185 | 439 | 116,348 | 116,787 | 2 /21,818]21.900 Denmark ……..... 1,893,100 | 506 | 36,859 | 37,365 | 267 |19,433)19,700 INEIAED Go onvoonson 36,905,788 | 5804 | 828,270 | 834,074 | 157 |22,443109 600 Italy ,200888o0000000 27,625,825 | 1024 795,396 | 796,420 | 37 28,763/28,800 Prugeiam … 70a. 25,921,687 | 3917 | 656,469 | 660,386 | 151 |25,349125,500 Saxony) ..... 26.1. 2,800,0003, 981 | 77,140 | 78,121 | 350 |27,550/97,900 Siveden …....060<< 4,429,713 409 | 85,925 | 86,334 | 92 19,508)19,600 United Kingdom— England and Wales 24,370,267 | 1770 | 508,545 510,315 | 78 |20,827|20,900 Ireland' ..)..0.4. 5,277,544 | 111 | 92,218 | 99.394 | 20117,279117,300 Scotland,..... 3,552,183 | 131 | 73,998 | 74,129 | 37 |20,863/20,900 165,961,405 18,321/4,096, 816 4,115,137; 110 |24,690/24,800 II. C.—1882. Number of Estimated Deaths Deaths per i 1,000,000 Population Inhabitant Countries, in the DEE ILATIUS Middle of 3 AEs 5 oO the Year. es 2 2 Total. a | oS JAWSINOEY 5 aan Ban Gou on 22,316,567 | 3530 683,421 | 686,951 | 158 30,642 oo loners svs80'782 | a4 |1er'eoe | 1earaae (2 eapaee Belgium …2.0001.1.] 5/656,197 | 505 113,708 | 114298 203095 Denmark ……..... 2,008,100 | 513 | 38,295 | 38/738 19,045 BAT CEG oe sti cncer 37,769,000 | 7213 831,326 | 838,539 22,009 MCN Sicedivive svc esse 28,596,512 | 1389 785,937 | 787,326 27,451 PRUSSIBN feelin Ne 27,796,189 | 5812 | 694,979 | 700,291 25,009 NAXKODY) ae qese. ces ce 3,040,000 | 1128 | 85,106 86,234 27,999 co. vedgig."| 979125 | 482) 78,924 | 79,406 17,295 England and Wales 96,413,861 | 1965 514,689 | 516,654 19,526 Urelend) .. cs. . cee 5,097,853 | 105 | 88,395 | 88,500 17,379 Scotland……..... 3,785,400 | 167 | 72,822 72,989 19,256 174,043,732 23,406 4,178,609 4, 202,015/ 134 |21,986 | |

III. Statement of the Number of Deaths by Suicide in the under- mentioned States of the American Union in the Years named, with their Proportion to the Population.

Massachusetts. Rhode Island, Connecticut. ais! 1,006,600 1,000,000 1,000,000 tl 2 i d > Total. | Inhabit. | Total | 7200000) Total, Inhabit- ants.4 ants.4 ants.4 1870 91 62 Pate 124

1871 122 82 19 84 1872 117 76 18 77 1878 117 74 8 33

1874 115 71 18 (Oo 1875 159 96 26 101 ne on 1876 119 ie 18 69 49 83

1877 163 98 22 83 52 84 1878 126 76 21 78 55 83

1879 16] 94 13 48 58 95 1880 ioe 75 10 36 48 77

1881 165 88 23 82 69 109 1882 162 88 31 109 65 101

1883 167 89 25 On

1884 184 96 85

1 The figures for Austria up to 1871, although collected by the official registrar, are far from trustworthy. Since 1873 more reliable data have been obtained by the Sanitary service. The registrar's figures for 1871 and 1872 have been corrected by Dr N ecumann-Spallart ; those for the succeeding years are the figures of the sanitary service. A comparison of the returns from the two official sources shows that the figures of the latter authority are (except in two cases) 30 per cent. greater than the corresponding figures furnished by the former. , 2 Ist December 1875. 3 2,760,586 in 1875.

4 Population caleulated from average annual increase since 1880,

SU LGD &

The first feature which appears prominently in connexion with these tables is, as already observed, the small absolute amount of suicide officially reported. There is, however, a general consensus of opinion among those who have made a special study of this branch of vital statistics, to the effect that the number of suicides which actually occur is rather greater than is shown by the official returns. This opinion is based on the known natural repugnance on the part of those concerned to make a declaration that any person found dead committed suicide if his death can be accounted for in any other way. Continental statisticians think that this tendency to " give the benefit of the doubt " in cases of apparent suicide in the manner least likely to give pain to the relatives and friends of the deceased is more strongly

operative in England than in other countries, —an opinion which may be fairly considered doubtful when we bear in mind the remarkable difference between the two sets of official figures for Austria. It is not, however, maintained that the number of suicides is much understated, even in England, at any rate of late years. It may be observed that the information on the subject in any country cannot be much relied upon for years previous to 1850, at the earliest, and previous to 1860 for the United Kingdom. Perhaps an exception may be made in favour of the figures for Norway and Sweden. Differences in the mode of de- termining cases of supposed suicide in different countries make it necessary to be very careful in preparing "international" statistics of suicide. The remarks made by Dr Ogle in the paper already referred to are worth careful attention. He says: "I have been tempted to compare the English figures with those of foreign countries. I have, however, rigidly abstained from doing so. Those who have read the laborious treatise of Morselli on suicide, and have noted how heterogeneous in form and how unequal in numerical efficiency were the materials from different coun- tries with which he was forced to be content, will, I think, agree with me that it is at present more essential that statisticians should look to the accuracy and sufficiency of the returns of their own several countries than that they should indulge in premature comparison." The tables given above are not conceived in a spirit contrary to these judicious observations, but are merely intended to supply indications of the general nature of the phenomenon as met with in different countries. Those who wish to inquire more fully into the matter will find all the available information in the works of Morselli and Legoyt.

It is quite admissible, subject to the above reservations, to point out briefly, and if possible to explain, the leading features brought into relief by the tables. It will be seen that from 1868 to 1876 suicide increased in all countries for which returns were available in both years, not merely in number, but relatively (except Denmark, Prussia, and Scotland) to the population, and the figures for the years subsequent to 1876 do not show any linprovement in this respect. It will also be observed that the figures for the United Kingdom and Italy are low, those for Austria, Bavaria, Belgium, and Sweden moderate, those for Prussia, Baden, and France high, and those for Saxony and Den- mark very high. Attempts have been made to account for these differences by considerations derived from (1) race, (2) climate,

(3) density of population, and other circum- stances ; but it cannot be said that any satisfactory result has been obtained from these investigations, owing no doubt to the fact that the phenomenon is too minute to furnish numbers large enough for the proper application of the statistical method. Investigations into certain other points have been more successful, such as the relative pro- portions of the two sexes as regards number of suicides, the relation of the number of suicides to the age scale (see PoPpuLATION) of the population, and also the distribution

of the cases of suicide over the months of the year. Most valuable inquiries have also been made into the distribu- tion of suicides with regard to occupation, with results which appear to show that suicide is more prevalent among the educated than among the illiterate classes. For the suicidal tendency in insanity, see vol. xiii. pp. 105-6.

Scx.—It will have been observed that, apart from fluctuations in particular years, the various countries maintain fairly constant re- lations to one another as regards number of suicides. The series of numbers in Table I. is fairly regular, in each country usually in- creasing as the population increases, but in several cases faster. The proportion of female to male suicides is also fairly constant, so far as experience has hitherto gone. Broadly speaking, female suicides are never less than 15 per cent. and never more than 30 of the average annual number of suicides in any country. In England the proportion is high, having during the period 1863-76 averaged 26 per cent. In France the rate is nearly as high, though it appears to have been decreasing of late. In Prussia and most German states the rate is under 20 per cent. For further details reference may be made to Morselli, and for England and Wales to Dr Ogle’s paper already inentioned.

Age.—The influence of age on suicide shows considerable regu- larity in each country from year to year, and a certain degree of similarity in its effects is perceptible in all countries. Morselli gives a number of tables and diagrams, a study of which indicates a variety of interesting features. The observations already made as to the minuteness of the whole phenomenon in relation to the social organism must be particularly borne in mind in drawing conclusions from investigations which involve the breaking up of

numbers already small into parts. Itis true that, by adding to- gether the corresponding figures for a scries of years, fairly large numbers may be obtained, even for those parts of the age scale which, in any single year, yield only one or two cases of suicide, or even occasionallynone. But this mode of obtaining an enlarged image of the age scale of suicide must be cmployed with caution, since there may have been changes in the tendency to suicide, in the age scale, and in the occupations of the people during the period. Dr Ogle has prepared a table (IV.) which gives as correct a repre- sentation of the effect of age on suicide in England and Wales as it is possible to furnish. The age scale of suicide in question is also fairly representative of the corresponding age scales of other countries, though in each country slight variations from the typical scale are apparent at different parts of it.

IV. Average Annual Suicides in England and Wales at successive Age Periods per million Lives, 1858-83 (Ogle).

Rates per Million.

Rates per Million.

ee = Persons. | Males. | Females. Persons. | Males. | Females.

10 4 4 3 55 251 396 119

15 28 26 30 65 248 894 T1313}

20 47 62 34 75 183 806 85 25 69 99 42 85 116 226 46

85 116 175 62 ———

45 184 271 103 All ages} 72 104 4]

It will be seen that, taking both sexes together, the suicide rate rises steadily and rapidly after the tenth year has been passed, attaining its maximum in the period fifty-five to sixty-five years, after which it remains almost stationary for another ten years, When it sinks rapidly. Although no figures are given for any period previous to the tenth year, Dr Ogle mentions that

there were actually four cases of suicide of children between the ages of five and ten during the twenty-six years observed. Child suicide is apparently of more frequent occurrence on the Continent than in the British Isles. It is important to notice that the age scale of suicide for women is materially different from that for men. If represented by a diagram its curve makes a smaller angle with the base line than the corresponding curve of male suicide. As might be expected from the fact that females become fully developed, both in mind and body, at an earlier period of life than males, the suicide rate for women is relatively very high during the years fifteen to twenty, being in England and several other countries actually higher than that for men. Comparison between different countries in this respect is difficult, but the figures given by Morselli (Table xxvi. in his work) show that during the period in question the number of female suicides increases with great rapidity in all countries. Regarding the suicide of young persons of both sexes, Dr Ogle observes that it is higher than is generally supposed. ‘‘Few,” he says, ‘‘ would imagine that one out of every 119 young men who reach the age of 20 dies ultimately by his own hand; yet such is the case.” According to Dr Ogle’s figures, 1 out of every — who reach the age of 15 ultimately dies by her own

and.

Influence of Occupation.—The difficulty of investigating the mode in which the suicide rate is affected by differences of occupation is

considerable. Dr Ogle has with great labour worked out the figures for males for the six years 1878-83 in England and Wales. He obtained about 9000 cases of the suicide of persons with known occupations ; these he compared with the statement of occupations obtained from the census of 1881, taking account of the very con- siderable variety in the average age of the persons in each occupa- tion. This precaution was necessary in an attempt to ascertain whether the persons engaged in any particular occupation were more liable to suicide than those in other occupations, for the effect due to the occupation would in some cases be entirely obliterated by the effect due to age. The general result of his labours! was that the rate for soldiers is enormously in excess of that for any other occupation. It is

followed at a considerable distance by inn- keepers and other persons having constant access to alcohol,—a fact which certainly suggests that an excessive use of spirits is one of the principal causes of suicide. But another reason for the high rate among soldiers is certainly the fact that they have a ready and effective means of destruction constantly at hand. In like manner the high rate of suicide among medical men, chemists, and druggists may be attributed in part to their familiarity with poisons. Hardly any other general inferences can be drawn without entering on matters of conjecture, except that, excluding the case of clergy- men, the rate of those occupations which involve no serious bodily labour is higher than that observed in persons who work chiefly with their hands. It is impossible to make any satisfactory com- parison in this respect between England and Wales and other coun- tries, as the divisions of occupations in different countries are not on the same plan. It would be very advantageous if some approach to a common list of occupations could be adopted by all states ; but there is little prospect of that being realized for some time to come. It is, however, satisfactorily established that in all countries the uate rate is higher for the educated than for the uneducated classes. .

Season. —May and June are in most countries the months in which most suicides occur; but in some countries, such as Bavaria and Saxony, the maximum isin July. The difference between the warm and cold portions of the year is more marked in female suicides than in male suicides, especially in Italy. This is probably due to the fact that women show a tendency to adopt drowning as a mode of killing themselves, and that there is more shrinking from a plunge into water in cold than in warm weather. The fact that the maximum number of suicides occurs in the hot season, during which, according to Morselli and other Continental statis- ticians, insanity is more frequent than in the cool portions of the year, has been alleged as a reason for the high suicide rate in May, June, and July.

Modes of Suicide.—The favourite mode of suicide in England is among men hanging and among women drowning,—about one- third of the suicides of each sex being effected in these modes respectively (Morselli, Table xlv.). In Italy, however, the most common mode is by gunshot among men, and after that by drown- ing, hanging being less usual. A very large number of Italian women drown themselves, the proportion being in some

years over 50 per cent. of the total. In Prussia considerably over one-half the male suicides hang themselves, and women also make use of the rope more than in England. The use of poison is more common among English women than among those of Italy and Prussia.. Dr Ogle observes that women take less care than men to select painless poisons, nearly 50 per cent. of female suicides by poison in England during the years 1863-82 being effected by means of strychnia, vermin killer, carbolic acid, and oxalic acid, while 60 per cent. of the men employed prussic acid, laudanum, and other comparatively painless poisons. Dr Ogle, Morselli, and other writers have investigated the connexion between the choice of means and the age of suicide. Dr Ogle has also compiled a valuable table relating to method of male suicide in relation to occupation.

The whole subject has been treated exhaustively by Morselli in his Ji lSuicidio, Saggto di Statistica Morale Comparata, Milan, 1879 (Eng. trans., Suicide: Essay on Comparative Moral Statistics, London, 1881). Reference may also be made to A. Legoyt's Le Suicide Ancien et Moderne, Paris, 1881. This volume contains much interesting historical matter, but is inferior as a statistical work to that of Morselli. It contains, however, a useful bibliography of works on suicide.

Oficial Information.—Accurate information regarding suicide has for many years been given for all the countries of which mention has been made above in the publications of their respective Governments. For other countries the available statistics are meagre, accurate figures having in many cases only recently been obtained from Finland, Switzerland, Holland, Hungary, Croatia, Spain, and three or four of the States of the American Union. There are no figures for the whole United States, and none of value for any other countries. Such statistics as are in existence for these countries will be found in Confronti Internationali per gli Anni 1865-83 (Rome, 1884), published by the Italian General Statistical Department. (W. HO.)

SUIDAS, the author of a Greek lexicon. His personal life is totally unknown and even his date is uncertain. He must have lived before Eustathius (12th century), who quotes him repeatedly. Under the heading "Adam" the author of the lexicon gives a brief chronology of the

1 See Stat. Jour., March 1886, p. 112.

world, ending with the death of the emperor John Zimisces, Under “Constantinople” are mentioned the emperors Basil and Constantine, who succeeded John Zimisces in 975. It would thus appear that Suidas lived in the latter part of the 10th century. The passages in which Michael Psellus (who lived at the end of the 11th century) are referred to are thought by Kiister to be later interpola- tions; one of them is wanting in the Paris MSS. The lexicon of Suidas is arranged alphabetically, with some slight deviations from the strict alphabetical order. I¢ partakes of the nature of a dictionary and encyclopedia, containing not only definitions of words but also short articles on historical, biographical, geographical, and anti-quarian subjects. It includes numerous quotations from ancient writers ; the scholiast on Aristophanes in particu- lar is much used. Although the work is uncritical and the value of the articles very unequal, it contains a great deal of important information on ancient history and life. It deals with Scriptural as well as pagan subjects, from which we infer that the writer was a Christian. Prefixed to the work is a notice stating “the present book is by Suidas, but its arrangement is the work of twelve learned men,” and then follow their names,

The first edition of Suidas was that by Demetrius Chalcondylas (Milan, 1499), the next by Aldus (Venice, 1514). The chief later editions are those by L. Kiister (Cambridge, 1705), by T. Gaisford (Oxford, 1834), and by G. Bernhardy (Halle, 1834-1853). There is a cheap and convenient edition by Im. Bekker (Berlin, 1854).

SULLA (138-78 3.c.). The life of Lucius Corneljus Sulla makes one of the most important chapters in Roman history. Both as a general and as a politician he stands in the foremost rank of the remarkable figures of all time. It was by his ability and his force of character that Sulla, who had neither great wealth nor noble ancestry 1 to back him up, pushed himself to the front in early manhood, distinguishing himself in the J ugurthine War in 107 and 106, and being able with a good show of reason to claim the credit of having terminated that troublesome war by capturing Jugurtha himself. In these African campaigns Sulla showed that he knew how to win the

hearts and confidence of his soldiers, and through his whole subsequent career the secret of his brilliant successes seems to have been the enthusiastic devotion of his troops, whom he continued to hold well in hand, while he let them indulge themselves in plundering and in all manner of licence. “ Rome’s soldiers from Sulla’s time,” says Sallust (Cat., 11), “began to drink, to make love, to have a taste for works of art, to rob temples, and to confound things sacred and profane.” From the year 104 to 101 he served again under Marius in the war with the Cimbri and Teutones and fought in the last great battle near Verona, which annihilated the barbarian host. -Marius, it is said, was jealous of him, and any friendly feeling there may have hitherto been between the two now finally ceased. Sulla on his return to Rome lived quietly for some years and took no part in politics. What with his genuine love of letters and his love of gay company he was never at a loss for amusement, and he must always have been a particular favourite with fashionable Society at Rome. In 93 he was elected pretor after a lavish squandering of money, and he delighted the populace with an exhibition of a hundred lions from Africa, from the realm of King Bocchus. Next year (92) he went to the East with special authority from the senate to put pressure on the famous Mithradates of Pontus, and make him give back Cappadocia to its petty prince Ariobarzanes, one of Rome’s dependants in Asia, whom he had driven out. Sulla with a small army Soon won a victory over the general of Mithradates, and Rome’s client-king was restored. An embassy from

u ile belonged to quite a minor branch of the Cornelian gens,

the Parthians now came to solicit the honour of alliance with Rome, and Sulla was the first Roman who held diplomatic intercourse with that remote people. In the year 91, which brought with it the imminent prospect of revolution and of sweeping political change, with the enfranchisement of the Italian peoples, Sulla returned to Rome, and it was generally felt that he was the man to head the conservative and aristocratic party. Who was to have the command in the Mithradatic War and be en- trusted with the settlement of the East was the question of the day, and the choice lay plainly between Marius and Sulla. The rivalry between the two men and their

partisans was as bitter as it could possibly be. Marius was old, but he had by no means lost his prestige with the popular party.

Meanwhile Mithradates and the East were forgotten in the crisis of the Social or Italic War, which broke out in 91 and threatened Rome's very existence. The services of both Marius and Sulla were needed, and were given; but Sulla was the more successful, or, at any rate, the more fortunate. Of the Italian peoples Rome's old foes the Sam- nites were the most formidable ; these Sulla thoroughly vanquished, and took their chief town, Bovianum. But his victories were, after all, followed by the concession of the franchise to the Italian towns and communities generally, though an arrangement which made them vote in separate tribes greatly diminished their political power and became a further source of irritation. It was clear that Rome was on the eve of yet further troubles and revolutionary changes. Her armies, now recruited from the very scum of the population, had not the loyal and honourable spirit of former days, and cared only for licence and plunder. On every side it seemed that public life was demoralized and politics degraded. In 88 Sulla was consul; the revolt of Italy was at an end 3 and again the question came to the front—who was to go to the East and encounter the warlike king of Pontus, against whom war had been declared. The tribune Publius Sulpicius Rufus moved that Marius should have the command ; there was fearful rioting and bloodshed at Rome at the prompting of the popular leaders, Sulla narrowly escaping to his legions in Campania, whence he marched on Rome, being the first Roman who entered the city at the head of a Roman army. Marius now had to fly; and he and his party were crushed for the time.

Sulla, leaving things quiet at Rome, quitted Italy in 87 for the East, taking Greece on his way, and for the next four years he was winning victory after victory against the armies of Mithradates and accumulating boundless plunder. Athens, the headquarters of the Mithradatic cause, was taken and sacked in 86, and Sulla possessed himself of a library which contained Aristotle's works, In the same year at Chewroneia, the scene of Philip of Macedon's memor- able victory more than two and a half centuries before, and in the year following, at the neighbouring Orchomenus, he scattered like chaff, with hardly any loss to himself, imimense hosts of the enemy. Crossing the Hellespont in 84 into Asia, he was joined by the troops of

Fimbria, who soon deserted their general, a man sent out by the Marian party, now again in the ascendant at Rome. The same year peace was concluded with Mithradates on condition that he should resign all his recent conquests, give up all claim to meddle with Rome's Asiatic dependencies, and pay a considerable indemnity. In fact the king was to be put back to the position he held before the war 3 but, as he raised cavils and Sulla's soldiers wanted better terms and more spoil, he had in the end to content him- self with being on the same footing as the other princes of Asia,—simply a vassal of Rome.

Sulla returned to Italy in 83, landing at Brundusium,

having previously informed the senate in an official de- spatch of the result of his canipaigns in Greece and Asia, and announced his presence on Italian ground. He com- plained, too, of the ill-treatment to which his friends and partisans had been subjected during his absence. The revolutionary party, specially represented by Cinna, Carbo, and the younger Marius, had massacred them wholesale, confiscated his property, and declared him a public enemy. They felt they must resist him to the death, and with numerous bodies of troops scattered throughout Italy, and the support of the newly enfranchised Italians, to whom it was understood that Sulla was bitterly hostile, they counted confidently on success, but on Sulla's advance at the head of his 40,000 veterans many of them lost heart and deserted their leaders, while for the most part the Italians themselves, whom he confirmed in the possession of their new privileges, were won over to his side. Only the Samnites, who were as yet without the Roman fran- chise, remained his enemies, and it seemed as if the old war between Rome and Samnium had to be fought once again. Several Roman nobles, among them Cneius Pom- peius (Pompey the Great), Metellus Pius, Marcus Crassus, Marcus Lucullus, joined Sulla, and in the following year (82) he won a decisive victory over the younger Marius near Preeneste (Palestrina), and then marched straight upon Rome, where again, just before his defeat of Marius, there had been a great massacre of his adherents, in which the famous and learned jurist Mucius Scevola perished. Rome was at the same time in extreme peril from the advance of a Samnite army, and was barely saved by

Sulla, who, after a bloody and very hard-fought battle, routed the enemy before the walls of Rome. With the death of the younger Marius, who killed himself after the surrender of Preeneste to one of Sulla's officers, the civil war was at an end and Sulla was master of Rome and of the Roman world. Then came, with the object of breaking the neck of the Marian or popular party, the memorable "'proscription," when for the first time in Roman history a list of men declared to be outlaws. and public enemies was exhibited in the forum, and a reign of terror— a succession of wholesale murders and confiscations through- out Rome and Italy—made the name of Sulla for ever infamous. The title of "dictator" was revived after a long period and conferred upon him ; Sulla was in fact emperor of Rome, with absolute power over the life and fortunes of every Roman citizen. There were of course among them some really honest well-meaning men who looked up to him as the "saviour of society." After celebrating a splendid triumph for the Mithradatic War, and assum- ing the surname of "Felix" ("Epaphroditus," " Venus's favourite," he styled himself in addressing Greeks), he carried in 80 and 79 his great political reforms (see Rome, vol. xx. pp. 761-762). Of these the main object was to invest the senate, the thinned ranks of which he had recruited with a number of his own creatures, with full control over the state, over every magistrate and every province, and the mainstay of his political system was to be the military colonies which he had established with grants of land throughout every part of Italy, to the injury and ruin of the old Italian freeholders and farmers, who from this time dwindled away, leaving whole districts waste and desolate. Sulla's work had none of the elements of permanence ; it was a mere stop-gap purchased at the cost of infinite misery and demoralization.

In 79 Sulla resigned his dictatorship and retired to Puteoli, where he died in the following year, probably from the bursting of a blood-vessel, though there is a story that he fell a victim to a particularly loathsome disease similar to that which cut off one of the Herods (Acts xii. 23). The half lion, half fox, as his enemies

called him, the "Don Juan of politics," to quote Momm- sen's happy phrase, the man who carried out a policy of "blood and iron" with a grim humour,

amused himself in his last days with actors and actresses, with dabbling in poetry, and completing the Memoirs of his strange and eventful life.

_For Sulla and his times, there is his Life by Plutarch, who had his Memoirs for one of his authorities, and there are very numerous references to him in Cicero's writings. The best and fullest modern account of him is that of Mommsen (vol. iii., bk. iv. ch. 8, 9). (W. J. B.)

SULLY, Maximiniran pu Biruunr, DuKe or (1560- 1641), French statesman, was born at the chateau of Rosny near Mantes on 13th December 1560. He derived his early appellation and the title of baron from the place of his birth, and was known as Rosny during the greater part of his life. Some one of his numerous enemies pretended that he did not really belong to the illustrious family represented four centuries earlier by the trouvére and warrior Quenes de Béthune, but that his race was derived from Scottish Bethunes of no mark. There is, however, no reason for giv- ing any credit to this story. Sully was a second son; his elder brother died when but just of age, and even before this his father (if his own account may be trusted) treated Maxi- milian (so he himself spelt his name, and not Maximilien) as an eldest son. He was only eleven years old when his father, who was a Protestant, was presented to Henry of Navarre, and from that time he was more or less inseparably attached to the future king of France. He had a narrow escape on St Bartholomew's Day, but he did escape, and when little more than sixteen began to take an active part in the Civil Wars. He distinguished himself not a little, especially in the character of engineer. In 1583 he married Anne de Courtenay, who, however, died in 1589, and in the intervals of war he lived the life of a country gentle- man at Rosny. At the battle of Ivry, 1590, he had the good luck, though seriously wounded, to capture Mayenne's standard. As soon as Henry's power was established, Sully, who, though by no means always a complaisant or obliging servant, had been uniformly faithful, received his reward in the shape of numerous places, estates, and dignities. In 1601 he was made grand-master of the ordnance and in 1606 duke of Sully. He was also practi- cally the king's minister of finance during the greater part of his reign. After the assassination of his master he makes no further figure in history, though he survived for many years, saw the rise of a far greater minister than himself,

and did not die till (less than a year before Riche- lieu himself died) the 22d of December 1641, at Villebon near Chartres.

He had married a second time, and anecdote is not compliment- ary to his second wife, while his daughter, who married the great duke of Rohan, also had a not unblemished reputation. Sully, however, who, though deprived of (and indeed resigning) all con- trol of public affairs after Henry's death, retained great wealth, lived in what was almost a caricature of the stately fashions of the time, and busied himself in the composition of memoirs which are among the most curious in form, and not the least interesting in contents, of the kind. He instructed his secretaries to draw the book up in the form of an elaborate address to himself: "you then did this" ; '' you said as follows"; "as you have been good enough to inform us, the affair went on this wise"; and so forth. And he not only had the book executed in this extraordinary fashion but had it read out to him. Its title is as odd as other things about it and runs thus: Mémoires des Sages et Royales Giconomies d'Estat, domestiques, politiques, et militaires de Henry le Grand, UExemplaire des Roys, le Prince des Vertus, des Armes, et des Loix, et le Pare en cffet de ses Peuples Francois. Et des servitudes utiles, obéissances convenables, et administrations loyales de Maximilian de Béthune, l'un des plus confidans, familiers, et utiles soldats et servi- teurs du grand Mars des Frangots. Dedieés a la France, d tous les bons soldats, et tous peuples Frangois. Two folio volumes were splendidly printed, nominally at Amsterdam, but really under Sully's own eye at his chateau, in 1634; the other two did not appear till twenty years after his death. As his wealth, his im-

perious and grumbling temper, the favour which he had enjoyed

and his subsequent loss of it, joined to attract odium, his character

and his book were rather roughly handled in his lifetime. Mar-

bault, secretary to Du Plessis-Mornay, Sully's chief rival, wrote a

very caustic criticism of the AZemoirs, from which, though it re- mained in MS. till the 19th century, Tallemant des Réaux, the

insatiable scandal-monger, compiled a not unamusing but distinctly

calumnious article on Sully. Most of the stories it contains may be unhesitatingly disbelieved. At the same time Sully was by no means the ideally wise and good minister that he has not unfre- quently been represented as being. He was as faithful asa dog, and as surly. He grasped wealth and place to an extent not quite compatible with the idea of pure devotion to his king or his country, and his jealousy of all other ministers and all other favourites was extravagant and unceasing. Still there is no doubt that he was an excellent man of business, that, if not exactly what would be now called an incorruptible minister, he made no gains not sanctioned by the customs of the time, that he was inexorable in interfering with peculation and malversation on the part of others, that he

opposed the ruinous personal expenditure which was the bane of

almost all European monarchies in his day, and that he did much both as a man of war and as a man of peace to make France strong, united, and happy. His literary power, moreover, was far from small. diverting for a time, grows not a little wearisome, they have phrases and passages of great vivacity, which it is reasonable to attribute to Sully himself rather than to his spokesmen, and they show much

grasp of administrative business. The arrangement of the Memoirs so shocked the 18th century that in 1745

the abbé de I’Yicluse re-edited or rather rewrote them in the ordinary form of

narrative. This text has of course no interest ; the proper version with the commentary of Marbault may be found in the collection of Michaud and Poujoulat (vols. xvi. and xvii.).

SULMONA, or Sotmona, a city of Italy, in the province of Aquila (Abruzzo Ulteriore), now reached by a branch line from the railway between Pescara

and Aquila, lies, at a height of 1575 feet above the sea, at the junction of the Vella with the Gizio (a tributary of the Pescara), which supplies water-power to its paper-mills, fulling-mills, copper- works, &c. Besides its cathedral (S. Panfilo), rebuilt by Bishop Walther of Ocre (Frederick II.'s grand chancellor) in 1119, and several times remodelled in the 15th and 16th centuries, Sulmona, has in Santa Maria della Tomba a good example of pure Gothic, and in Corpus Domini a striking instance of the vagaries of Gothic in its decay. The com- munal buildings are half Gothic, half Renaissance. A Statue of Ovid, the most celebrated native of the city (which also gave birth to Innocent VIT.), stands in front of the cancellaria. In the vicinity of the town is Monte Morrone, where Celestine V. lived as a hermit and founded & monastery of "Celestines," which remained till 187 0, when it was transformed into a penitentiary. The popu- lation of Sulmona was 12,594 in 1861 and 14,171 in 1881 (commune, 17,601).

Sulmo, a city of the Peligni, is first mentioned during the Second Punic War (211 B.c.). It became a Roman colony probably in the reign of Augustus, and as a municipium it continued to flourish throughout the empire. Charles V. erected it into a principality, which he bestowed on Charles Lannoy of ' Pavia" celebrity. It

ultimately passed to the Corno and Borghese families. The bishopric is known as that of Valva and Sulmona.

SULPHUR.) The sulphur minerals, which are very numerous and varied, arrange themselves under three heads,—(1) metallic sulphates, of which hydrated sulphate of lime, CaSO,. 2H,O, gypsum, is the most abundant ; (2) metallic sulphides, a numerous family, including the majority of metallic ores, of which, however, only iron pyrites serves as a source for sulphur ; (3) elementary sulphur. In the organic world we meet with sulphur everywhere, this element forming an essential (though quantitatively subordinate) component of the albumenoids, a class of compounds contained in all vegetable and animal structures. Of organic materials rich in sulphur we may name animal hair (containing about 4 per cent.) and the essential oils of the onion, garlic, and mustard.

1 This chemical element has already been treated in its scientific aspects under CHEMISTRY (vol. v. p. 498 sq.).

of practical applications,

Although the fantastic form of his Memoirs, after being

é The present article is Intended to supplement what js there given, in the direction chiefly

SU L—SUL

Elementary Sulphur.

This occurs as a mineral chiefly in the Upper Miocene deposits and in the Flétz, associated in general with gypsum, massive limestone, and marl. Commercially im- portant deposits are found in Sicily (provinces of Caltanis- setta, Girgenti, Catania), Italy (Latera and Scrofano, pro- vince of Rome), Spain (Teruel and Arcos), France (dept. Vaucluse), Transylvania, Poland (Swoszowice near Cracow), and Germany (Liineburg, in Hanover). The exhalations of volcanoes include, as a rule, sulphurous acid, SO,, and sulphuretted hydrogen, HS, which two gases, if moist, readily decompose each other into water and sulphur,—a circumstance which accounts for the constant occurrence of sulphur in all volcanic districts. Mt Purace in Colombia wears a cap of sulphur (derived from its own crater) which accumulates at the rate of about 2 feet per annum,— its superficial area amounting to 1435 square yards, The solfatara at Bahara Saphinque on the Red Sea is said to yield 600 tons of sulphur annually. The molten sulphur discharged from the crater of the Alaghez in the Armenian highlands forms solid excrescences, which the natives dis- lodge from their inaccessible positions by means of rifle- shots. A sulphur deposit near the Borax Lake in California is estimated to contain 20,000 tons.

Sicily, where in 1884 the annual production had almost reached 400,000 tons. The mode of mining there adopted is by a network of horizontal galleries (tunnels) driven through the deposit; the solid squares thus marked off are hewn out, a central pillar being left to support the roof. The total excavation is generally 100 feet high and from 25 to 50 wide ; not unfrequently the whole collapses, Down to a comparatively recent date all the work used to be done by hand, boys of eight to ten years of age being employed to carry the ore to the shaft and thence to the surface ; only where

a mine has reached a depth of 325 feet or more is water-power, if available, resorted to, Since 1868, however, the ore at Grotta Calda at least has been raised by properly constructed shafts with the help of steam-power, and this system is spreading.

The Sicilian ores are customarily classified as follows :— Per 100 parts of ore Per 100 parts of ore

Sulphur present, Sulphur recovered. Riehest ores …, 380-40 – Rich ores…..... 25-80 15-20 Ordinary …..... 20-25 10-15

The poor yield of actual sulphur is explained by the rather primi- tive method used for its extraction. A semicircular or semi- elliptical pit (calcarone) about 33 fect in diameter and 8 decp is dug into the slope of a hill, and the sides are coated with a wall of stone. The sole consists of two halves slanting against each other, the line of intersection forming a descending gutter which runs to the outlet. This outlet having been closed by small stones and sulphate of lime cement, the pit is filled with sulphur ore, which is heaped up considerably beyond the edge of the pit and covered with a layer of burnt-out ore. In building up the heap a number of narrow vertical passages are left to afford a draught for the fire. The ore is kindled from above and the fire so regulated (by making or unmaking air-holes in the covering) that, by the heat produced by the combustion of the least sufficient quantity of sulphur, the rest is liquefied. The molten sulphur accumulates on the sole, whence it is from time to time run out into a square

| stone receptacle, from which it is ladled into damp poplar-wood

moulds and so brought into the shape of truncated cones weighing 110 to 130 fb each. These cakes are sent out into commerce. A calcarone with a capacity of 28,256 cubic feet burns for about two months, and yields about 200 tons of sulphur. The immense volumes of sulphurous acid evolved give rise to many complaints ; all the minor pits suspend work during the summer to avoid de- struction of the crops. A calcarone that is to be used all the year round must be at least 220 yards from any inhabited place and 110 from any field under cultivation.

The yield of sulphur, as seen from the table given above, is miser- ably small, but the searcity of fuel in Sicily almost prohibits the introduction of any more rational method. As sulphur fuses at 114° C., high-pressure steam at once suggests itself as a suitable medium of heating. In the sulphur-works of Latera, in the pro- vince of Rome, the following apparatus (constructed by Gritti) is

Most of the sulphur Sici or brimstone of commerce comes from the rich fields of sulpl

Axtrac- ion.

ilk of phur.

p UTE P Ew

being used with success. A vertical truncated perforated cone of thick sheet-iron serves for the reception of the ore. This cone is enclosed in a similar cone of iron, which terminates in a detachable deep iron basin below, and is Tae with a tightly fitting lid. All the joints in this outer shell are steam-tight. The inner cone having been charged and the lid secured, steam of sufficient pressure to ensure a temperature of from 125° to 135° C. is blown into the apparatus, which soon causes the sulphur to melt and collect in the basin below. After from 30 to 50 minutes, reckoning from the time when the above temperature is reached, the operation is completed. The steam is then turned off and the sulphur made to run from the basin into a receptacle beside the apparatus, to be cast into sticks or cakes. The iron basin is then detached, and by turning aside an iron damper which held the ore in its place the exhausted ore is made to drop into a pit. Hach charge of ore amounts to about from 254 to 264 cwts., containing about 385 Ib of sulphur. Of this some 360 Ib are recovered as saleable sulphur, at the ex- pense of about 286 Ib of oak-wood as fucl.

R. E. Bollmann in 1867 proposed to extract the sulphur by means of bisulphide of carbon. The process, after having been tried at Bagnoli near Naples and given up as hopeless, was intro- duced in 1873 in Swoszowice near Cracow under the guidance of Winkler and has proved a success. The apparatus is constructed so that the bisulphide used in the process of

extraction is recovered by distillation ; the loss of bisulphide amounts only to one-half per cent., sometimes to less, and the sulphur produced is very pure. But by far the greater part of the purer qualities of commercial sulphur is produced from Sicilian calcarone sulphur by distillation, which removes the 8 per cent. or so of earthy impurities contained in it. The following apparatus (invented originally by Michel of Marseilles and improved subsequently by others) enables the manu- facturer to produce either of two forms of ‘‘ refined” sulphur which commerce demands. It consists of a stone-built chamber of about 2825 cubic feet capacity, which communicates directly with two slightly slanting tubular retorts of iron, each of which holds about 660 tb of sulphur. The retorts are charged with molten sulphur from an upper reservoir, which is kept at the requisite temperature by means of the lost heat of the retort fires. The chamber has a safety valve at the top of its vault, which is so balanced that the least surplus pressure from within sends it up. The first puff of sulphur vapour which enters the chamber takes fire and converts the air of the chamber into a mixture of nitrogen and sulphurous acid. The next following instalments of vapour, getting diffused throughout a large mass of relatively cold gas, condense into a kind of ‘‘snow,” known in commerce and valued as ‘‘flowers of sulphur” (flores sulphuris). By conducting the distillation slowly, so that the temperature within the chamber remains at a suflicicntly low degree, it is possible to obtain the whole of the product in the form of ‘‘flowers.” If compact (‘‘roll’”’) sulphur is wanted the distilla- tion is made to go on at the quickest admissible rate. The tempera- ture of the interior of the chamber soon rises to nore than the fusing-point of sulphur (114°C.), and the distillate accumulates at the bottom as a liquid, which is tapped off from time to time to be east into the customary form of rods of about 14 inches diameter.

In some places sulphur is extracted from iron pyrites by one of two methods. The pyrites is subjected to dry distillation from out of iron or fire-clay tubular retorts at a bright red heat. One- third of the sulphur is volatilized—3FeS, = Fe,S,-+S,—and obtained as a distillate. The second method is analogous to the calcarone method of liquation: the ore is placed in a lime-kiln-like furnace over a mass of kindled fuel to start a partial combustion of the mineral, and the process is so regulated that, by the heat generated, the unburut part is decomposed with elimination of sulphur, which collects in the molten state on an inverted roof-shaped sole below the

furnace and is thence conducted into a cistern. Such pyrites sulphur is usually contaminated with arsenic, and consequently is of less value than Sicilian sulphur, which is characteristically free from this impurity.

The substance known as ‘‘milk of sulphur” (lac sulphuris) is very finely divided sulphur produced by the following, or some analogous, chemical process, One part of quicklime is slaked by means of 6 parts of water, and the paste produced diluted with 24 parts of water; 2°3 parts of flowers of sulphur are added ; and the whole is boiled for about an hour or longer, when the sulphur

dissolves, — 38CaO + 12S = 2CaS, + CaS,0,.

The mixed solution of pentasulphide and thiosulphate of calcium thus produced is clarified, diluted more largely in a tub, and then mixed with enough of pure dilute hydrochloric acid to produce a feebly alkaline mixture; this shows that only the bulk of the pentasulphide is decomposed, —CaS, + 2HCl=CaCl, + H.S + (48 of precipitated sulphur). The addition of more acid would produce an additional supply of sulphur (by the action of the H,S,0; on the dissolved H,S); but this thiosulphate sulphur is yellow and compact, while the CaS, part has the desired qualities, forming an extremely fine, almost white, powder. The precipitate is washed, collected, and dried at a very moderate heat. It is used as a

medicine. If sulphuric acid is used instead of hydrochloric acid the preparation is apt to be contaminated with hydrated sulphate of lime. In the United Kingdom, indeed, precipitated sulphate of lime used to be added intentionally to produce what the public had got accustomed to ; but this practice has been rightly stopped by the authorities.

During the year 1875 the production of sulphur in Europe is

stated to have beeu as follows :-— Tons. Italy CON ECO SMM LaIEE DNC ono 4 AAGOTEAA UGH eCIKDAdaAnGodo Ab 360,000 PS IQANILN eter ese wcalatatsid oa GRRE ose 4,000

oe 3,7.

: . : 50

German empire (including 5000 tons of regenerated! sulphur) 14,500

450

HE Ota es aanueeite 382,700

By far the greater part of all the sulphur produced in Sicily and elsewhere is used for the manufacture of sulphuric acid. Subjoined is an enumeration of some other applications. (1) The manufacture of gunpowder (see vol. xi. p. 820). (2) The taking of casts. (8) The making of cements: (a) a mixture of molten sulphur and ferric oxide is used to cement the isolating bells to telegraph posts ; (0) a mixture of iron filings (100), flowers of sulphur (3 to 20), and sal-ammoniac (3 to 5) made into paste with water is used to cement iron bars (fences, &c.) into stone sockets ; (c) a mixture of molten sulphur with powdered quartz or glass has been recommended as an acid-proof material for sulphuric acid chambers ; (d) a mixture produced by the incorporation of powdered quartz and colouring matters, such as vermilion, &c., with molten sulphur is employed for ornamental articles. (4) The vulcanization of india-rubber (see vol. xii. p. 840 sg.). (5) Dusting vine-plants with flowers of sul- phur is said to keep off the fungus Ocdiwm Tuckeri, which has caused such devastation in the vineyards in France and elsewhere.

Sulphur Compounds.

Sulphuretted hydrogen, H,S (see CHEMISTRY, vol. v. p. 499 sq.), is used largely as such, or as sulphide of ammonium, (NH,),S =2NH,+H,S, for the detection, discrimination, and separation of metals. To give an example: the least quantity of lead dissolved in water as (say) nitrate can be detected by the addition of sulphur- etted hydrogen, which brings down the lead as a black precipitate of sulphide of lead,—Pb(NOg),-+H,S=PbS+2HNO,. The presence of a moderate quantity of mineral acid in the original solution does not interfere with the test. What we said of solution of salts of lead holds substantially of those of the following groups of metals. The formule and

the colours of the sulphides are given in brackets. A. Lead (black, PbS), silver (black, AgS), mercury as mercurous or mercuric salt (black, HgS+Hg or HgS respectively), copper (greenish black, CuS), bismuth (brown, Bi,S,), cadmium (yellow, CdS). B. Arsenic (yellow, As,S,), antimony (orange-red, Sb,S,), tin as stannic salt (yellow, SnS,). The sulphides A are insoluble ; the sulphides B are soluble in sulphide of ammonium solution, and the latter, from this solution, can be reprecipitated by acidification with dilute sulphuric or hydrochloric acid. The brown SnS pre- cipitated from stannous salts is insoluble in the (colourless) solution of (NH,),S, but soluble in the ycllow solution of the polysulphide (NH,).S,, as SnS,.. C. The following metals are not precipitated from their salt solutions if these are acidified sufficiently by added mineral acid; but they are precipitated from their neutral or alkaline solutions by sulphide of ammonium :—iron (black, FeS), nickel (black, NiS), cobalt (black, CoS), manganese (flesh-coloured, MnS), zine (white, ZnS). Aluminium and chromium, given as salts of their oxides, R.O,, are precipitated by sulphide of ammonium as hydrated oxides (Al,0O,.2H,O, colourless; Cr,0;.%H,O0, green or violet). The reagent acts on these as ammonia, NH;, the H,S being liberated, and behaves in a similar way to acid solutions of certain salts, ¢.g., the phosphates, of the following group D, these salts, ¢.g., CagP,0g, being precipitated as such. The ordinary salts of group D (barium, strontium, calcium, magnesium), and the salts of the alkali metals E (potassium, sodium, &c.) generally, give no precipitate with either sulphuretted hydrogen or sulphide of am- monium. It is easy to translate what we have stated into a method for the separation of groups A, B, C (D and E), from one another.

Of the three chlorides treated of in CHEMISTRY (vol. v. p. 501) only the lowest, S,Cl,, is of industrial importance. It is prepared by passing perfectly dry chlorine gas over heated sulphur contained in a retort, the retort being connected with a condenser constructed so that the uncondensed vapours are led away into the chimney. The two elements unite readily, and chloride of sulphur, 8,Cl,, distils over, contaminated, however, by more or less of surplus chlorine present as higher chlorides. To remove (or decompose) these the crude product is subjected to fractional distillation ; the thermometer rises rapidly and soon becomes constant (at about 136° under 758 mm. pressure). What afterwards distils over, at the constant boiling-point, is collected as pure S,Cl,,—a yellowish red liquid of 1°68 sp. gr. at

16°77 C. and 1°7055 at 0° (Kopp), which emits fumes of hydrochloric acid in moist air. Its smell is charac-

1 See Soprum, ‘‘ Le Blanc process for making soda-ash,” p. 243 above.

Produc- tion and

uses,

Sulphur-

etted hydro- gen.

Chlor-

ides.

teristic and unpleasant. Chloride of sulphur is decomposed by water, alcohol, ether (see CHEMISTRY) ; and benzol and bisulphide of carbon mix with it in all proportions without decomposition. A mixture of 100 parts of bisulphide of carbon and some 2°5 of chloride of sulphur is used for the vulcanization of (chiefly sheet) india-rubber. The mixture is readily imbibed by the rubber, which when allowed to dry (at from 22° to 25°C.) gives up the bisulphide of carbon and the chlorine of the reagent, the latter as HCl, but retains its sulphur in a state of chemical combination. Sulphur-
The gas SO, (see CHEMISTRY, vol. v. p. 501), produced extempore ous acid. by the combustion of sulphur, is used for the bleaching of silk, wool, straw, and wicker work, also for the disinfection of rooms and of wine-casks (to prevent acetous fermentation). A solution of the gas in water is manufactured industrially, for use chiefly in the manufacture of sugar. It is added to the beetroot or cane juice to prevent its fermentation while awaiting concentration, A solution of ‘‘bisulphite of lime” (produced by saturating milk of lime with sulphurous acid gas) is much used as an antiseptic generally. Liquefied sulphur dioxide has found an application as a frigorific for the manufacture of ice. The apparatus used is so constructed that the volatilized sulphur dioxide is all caught and recondensed.

Sulphurons acid when required as such or for the making of sulphites is always produced, even industrially, from oil of vitriol, by reduction with either sulphur or charcoal. In the heat the reactions are 280,+S=880, and 280; + C=CO, +280, respectively, and either can be (and is) executed practically in cast- iron vessels. The presence of carbonic acid in the gas produced by the charcoal process does not interfere with the preparation of sulphites. Thiosul- The soda salt Na,S,0,+5H,O, known commercially as hypo- phates. sulphite of soda, is used industrially for chiefly two purposes, namely, (1) as a solvent for chloride of silver in photography (se PxHotTocRraruy),—AgCl + Na,S,0,= NaCl + AgNaS,0;,—and (2) as an ‘“‘antichlor” in paper-making, to destroy the remnants of chlo- rine in bleached paper pulp. To understand its action we need only know that chlorine and water in such cases act like oxygen,— Cl,+ H,O=2HC1+0; every 4xO thus produced converts one 8,0, of Na,OS,0, into 280, of sulphuric acid. For the preparation of this salt a great many methods have been invented. The simplest to explain is the treatment of a solution of normal sulphite of sodium with sulphur,—SO,Na, +8 = S.0,Nay. Instead of ad ing free sulphur, Liebig prepares a solution of polysulphide of sodium (by dissolving sulphur in caustic-soda ley) and adds it to the sulphite, The surplus sulphur combines with the sulphite ; besides, the poly- sulphide contains thiosulphate from the first. Another method is to pass sulphurous acid through a solution of sulphide of sodium. Here, by first intention, if we may say so, sulphite of sodium and H,S are produced ; but the H,S and the excess of SO, give water and sulphur, and two-thirds of this sulphur unite with the sulphite first formed into thiosulphate. The crude sulphide of calcium, which is produced so largely in the Le Blanc process (see Sopium, supra, p. 243), when exposed to the air gets oxidized, with forma- tion of calcium thiosulphate, which can be extracted by means of water and converted into sodium salt by double decomposition with carbonate or sulphate of soda. Pure thiosulphate of soda forms large transparent monoclinic prisms, which lose no water on exposure to ordinary air in the cold. At about 48°C. they fuse into a liquid, which may remain liquid on cooling, but solidifies sud- denly when a fragment of the solid salt is dropped in. 100 parts of water dissolve at 16° 25° 35° 45° C, 65 75 89 109 parts of the salt (Mulder). The solution is not subject to oxidation in the air.

have so far been unqualified failures industrially. In regard to the Char chamber process we may add a few notes to what has been said proc under CHEMISTRY (vol. y. p. 508 sg.). As stated in that article, of pr nitrous acid, N03, when brought into contact with sufficiently duct: strong vitriol unites with it, giving rise to bodies similar to chamber ae N,0,+H,0 +280,= 280,98 or, what comes practically to the same,

N,0;+80,(out of the vitriol) =80,8 02. In the presence of sufficient water this union does not take place, because the water causes the product to break up as shown by the equation if read from right to left. These facts explain why a stronger acid than one containing some 60 per cent. or so of real H,SO, cannot be produced directly in the chamber. This incon- venience has led, in the hands of Gay -Lussac, to an important improvement on the original process. He inserts between the chamber outlet and the chimney a tower made of acid-proof stone and filled with pieces of coke, over which concentrated oil of vitriol is made to trickle down while the chamber gases ascend through the tower on their way to the chimney. The vitriol absorbs all or most of the NO., which would otherwise be lost, But the practical reliberation of the N,O, was beset with very great difficulties, which have been fully overcome only by a more recent invention of Glover's. He places between the kiln and the entrance side of the chamber a tower similar in construction to Gay-Lussac's, which the kiln gases have to traverse before they get into the latter, Through the tower he runs at the same time a stream of nitrated (Gay-Lussac) acid and one of ordinary chamber acid. The latter acts on the nitrated acid as water ; at least it virtually sets free the combined nitrous acid, so that it is reduced by the sulphurous acid coming from the kiln to nitric oxide, which travels into the chamber with the rest of the gases to do duty there in the well-known manner, As the kiln gases are very hot, a considcrable quantity of the watcr which goes through a Glover tower (as chamber acid) is volatilized and thus made to supply part of the steam necessary for the process. The Glover tower, besides fulfilling its primary object, serves to concen- trate part of the chamber acid and to supply part of the neces- sary steam without expense for fuel. The expenditure of nitrate of soda, which before the introduction of the two towers used to amount to from 8 to 13 parts per 100 of sulphur burned, has been reduced to from 3°5 to 65. The actual loss of nitrous acid of course is the less, cxteris paribus, the larger the chamber, and (for a given chamber) the greater the care with

which the process is conducted. But even under the most skilful management more nitrous acid is lost than can be accounted for by the unavoidable imperfections in the apparatus and in the mode of working them. From the in- vestigations of Weber and of Frémy it appears that, in the presence of relatively much water more especially, part of the nitrous acid suffers reduction, not to nitric, but to nitrous oxide, NO, which, being unsusceptible of direct oxidation, is lost for the process.

For a great many purposes (¢.g., the manufacture of “ superphos- Produc: phate” from bones or mineral phosphate of lime) the 60 to 64 per tion of cent. acid which comes out of the chamber can be used as it is ; strong but it is not strong enough for all purposes. In the production of acid. stronger (from chamber) acid the first step always is to run the acid into long, very shallow lead pans and to simply boil it down in these, either by the application of heat from below, in which case the bottoms of the pans must be protected by making them rest on plates of iron, or by enclosing the pans in a vault and causing the hot gases of a furnace fire to strike along the surface of the acid.

The result in either case is that, while more and more water goes away as steam, the residual acid of course gets stronger and stronger.

Sul- The anhydride SO, is used largely in the manufacture of tar | But with the strength the boiling-point rises, and, as necessary phuric colours. Oil of vitriol is decomposed by dropping it on a mass of consequences, the extent to which the acid attacks the lead (with acid. platinum scrap kept at a bright red heat within a fireclay retort, | formation of sulphate and sulphurous acid) and the danger of melt-

—S0,H,=H,0 +S0, +40, ; and, after removing the water—the bulk by partial condensation and the rest by means of vitriol—the sulphur dioxide and the oxygen are made to recombine by passing them over platinized asbestos at a dull red heat. The fumes of SO, formed are condensed in a dry receiver by application of cold from without (Winkler’s process).

The fact that finely divided platinum, ‘in virtue of its power of condensing oxygen, induces the union of SO, and 40, into SO, has been known for a long time ; but all attempts to utilize the reaction

ing down the pans by local overheating become greater and greater. When the acid has come up to about from 78 to 80 per cent. (corresponding to a specific gravity of 1-7 after cooling), it is not safe to push the concentration any further, quite apart from the fact that an acid of 80 per cent. when boiled down emits a very appreciable proportion of acid along with the volatilized water. An acid of 1-7 indeed is amply strong enough for a variety of applications, such as, for instance, the conversion of salt into sul- phate. If a stronger acid is wanted the concentration must be continued in glass or platinum retorts,

The vitriol maker's glass retort, as a rule, consists of two detach- Vitriol able parts, namely, a pear-shaped body about 34 feet high and maker's nearly 2 feet in diameter, and a glass alembic whose wider end fits glass the mouth of the pear, while its narrower outlet end points down- retort. wards and terminates within a slightly slanting lead-pipe, which conveys the distillate to a leaden tank. The retort rests on a layer of sand contained in a closely fitting iron basin, and the lateral space between the two is filled completely with sand. The iron basin is suspended within a furnace in such a way that only it, and not any part of the retort, is touched directly by the flame.

As a rule, some twelve retorts stand side by side, each in its own

presence of the unavoidably large mass of nitrogen, and soon loses its efficacy altogether owing to the accumulation on it of particles of incombustible matter from the kiln gases. Oxide of chromium,

sandbath, and are heated by the same fire. As the temperature of the boiling liquid and of the vapour rises at the end to beyond

300° C., a sudden draught of cold air might cause rupture of a

retort ; the apparatus is therefore placed in a special room accessible only through double doors, and the inner door is not permitted to be opened before the outer has been shut. The acid, as it is boil- ing down, gets stronger and stronger, because, although the vapour is very strongly acid

from the first, its percentage p’ of real H,SO, at any given stage is less than the value p, which obtains in the boiling liquid as it is at the time. p’ at a given barometric pres- sure is a fixed function of p only, and increases as p increases ; the difference p~p’ accordingly gets less and less. It becomes nil, not when the acid has become pure H,SO,, but when it has come up to the composition 12S0,+13H,O (Marignac). This particular hydrate only boils without change of composition; even pure H,SO, when distilled, by giving up more than 180, for 1H,O, becomes reduced to that hydrate 1280,+138HO, which then boils without further change of composition. A stronger acid than “ Marignac,” as we may call it, cannot be produced by the concentration of weaker acid, and even its production (from 1°7 acid) involves a very con- siderable loss of acid as distillate. Hence practically the process is stopped when the acid in the retorts has come up to some 96 per cent. of H,SO,, which is ascertained by the specific gravity of the last runnings being at a certain value. As soon as this point is reached the retorts are allowed to cool till the contents can be withdrawn with safety by means of lead siphons into glass carboys. This, however, means a considerable loss of time and fuel ; besides, the process of distilling from out of glass vessels is not free from danger, and for these reasons it is preferred in many establishments to con- centrate the pan acid in large platinum stills, although these are extremely expensive. The great advantage of the platinum still is that it admits of continuous working ; while pan acid (containing say 1 tb of water per VV ib of full strength—96 per cent. or so —acid) runs in, and a far weaker acid (containing for the same period of time 1 th of water and n tb of full strength acid) is distilling over, the balance V— 1 ib of finished acid is being withdrawn by means ofa platinum siphon. The outer limb of the siphon in its middle portion divides into a system of four narrower tubes and is cooled down by means of a cold-water jacket surrounding it, so that the acid can be run directly into carboys.

atinum The platinuin retort in its latest form has a large undulating

etort.

sulphate f alumi- ium,

sulphate if

opper.

bottom made of strong metal, on which a rapidly converging low body joins, made of thinner mctal because it is not so directly ex- posed to the flame. Along with this still a flat platinum pan is used with an undulating bottom similar to that of the still for the preliminary concentration of the acid. As platinum is not liable to fuse or be attacked by any strength of boiling acid, a aaa 4 ea pan does as much work as a far larger one made of lead.

Sulphates.

Several of these are treated of under the heads of the respective bases. Thus, for the sulphates of ammonia, see NITROGEN, vol. xvii. p. 515 sg.; for Porasstum and Soprvm, see these articles ; for calcium, see Lime (vol. xiv. p. 648) and Gypsum (vol. xi. p. 351) ; for barium, see BARYTES (vol. iii. p. 406) ; for magnesium, see Epsom Sars (vol. viii. p. 496) and Maenusrum (vol. xv. p. 217); and for iron, see COPPERAS (vol. vi. p. 352).

Sulphate of aluminium, Al,(SO,);+18H,O, the active ingredient of ALUM (vol. i. p. 648), is now being produced industrially in a state of perfect freedom from iron, and is more and morc taking the place of alum. Paper-makers, at least, no longer use anything else for the production of alumina soap, which in machine-made paper serves as the principal ingredient of the size. The crude salt is easily produced by treatment of relatively pure bauxite (native hydrated alumina) or china clay with chamber acid at a suitable temperature. The resulting mass is dissolved in water, the undis-solved matter (silica, &c.) allowed to settle, the clear liquor drawn off, and from it an apology for what is wanted is obtained by evapo- ration to a small volume and allowing to crystallize. But the salt thus obtained is always contaminated with a variety of foreign sulphates, including sulphate of iron, and this last-named impurity, for the majority of applications, cannot be suffered to remain. One of the best methods for its removal, if not the best, is that dis- covered by Semper and Fahlberg: the solution, which must contain all its iron as ferric salt and contain somewhat less than the normal proportion of sulphuric acid, is digested with hydrated binoxide of lead. In the course of about a week all the iron is completely precipitated.

The better qualities of sulphate of alumina nowadays have at most only a few thousandths per cent. ofiron. :

Sulphate of copper (blue vitriol) is made technically in chiefly two ways. One method is to heat metallic copper to redness in air until it is almost completely oxidized, and to dissolve the oxide by means of dilute sulphuric acid. The Cu,O present behaves like a mixture of metal and CuO. Another process starts from the sub- sulphide Cu,S (produced metallurgically as " mat," or erhaps ex- pressly from its elements), and converts this into su plate and

oxide by careful roasting. The product is dissolved in dilute sul- phuric acid. Large quantities of blue vitriol are produced incident- ally in the "parting" of auriferous silver (see Goxp, vol. x. p. 749) by means of oil of vitriol. Sulphate of copper crystallizes from its aqueous solution in large transparent blue crystals of the triclinic system ; their composition is CuSO,5H,O. 'The crystals are stable in the air. At 100°C. they lose 4H,O, the last H,O requiring a temperature of 200° C. for its expulsion. The anhydrous salt is dirty white ; it readily reunites with water, and consequently is available as a dehydrating agent, for instance, for the preparation of absolute alcohol from spirit of wine. 100 parts of water dissolve at 0° 10° 20° 50° 100°C.

31°6 37°0 42:3 65°8 2033 parts of crystallized salt (Poggiale). The salt is insoluble in alcohol. Blue vitriol is used largely in electrotyping and for many other purposes.

Subjoined are two general tests for sulphur. compounds when brought in contact at a red heat with a mixture of nitre and carbonate of soda (or some other equivalent alkaline oxidizing mixture) are changed so that the sulphur assumes the form of alkaline sulphate, which can be extracted by means of water. From the (filtered) solution the SO, is precipitated by addition of chloride of barium as BaSO,,—a white powdery precipi- tate characteristically insoluble in water and in dilute acids. (2) Any non-volatile sulphur compound, when heated on charcoal in a reducing flame with carbonate of soda, yields sulphide of sodium ("hepar''), which, when

moistened with water on a silver coin, produces a black stain of metallic sulphide. (Compare SELENIUM, vol. xxi. pp. 631-632.) (W. D.)

SULPICIUS SEVERUS. See Srverus.

SULTANPUR, or SuurTanpoor, a district of British India, in the Rdi Bareli (Roy Bareilly) division of Oudh, under the jurisdiction of the lieutenant-governor of the North-Western Provinces, lying between 26° 39’ and 27° 58’ N. lat. and 81° 36’ and 82° 44’ E. long. With an area of 1707 square miles, it is bounded on the N. by Faizdbad, on the E. by Jaunpur, on the 8. by Partabgarh, and on the W. by Rai Bareli. The surface of the district is generally level, being broken only by ravines in the neighbourhood of the rivers by which its drainage is effected. The central portion of the district is highly cultivated, while in the south are widespread arid plains and swampy jhils and marshes. The principal river is the Gumti, which passes through the centre of Sult4npur and affords a valuable highway for commerce. Minor streams are the Kandu, Pili, Tengha, and Nandhia, the last two being of some im- portance, as their channels are deep, though narrow, and form the outlet for the superfluous water of the extensive series of jhils. There are no forests in the district, the only tree-covered tracts being stunted dak jungles used for fuel. Wild animals are very few, chiefly wolves, nylghau, and wild hog. There are some good roads in the district, chief of which is the imperial high road from Faizabad to Allahabad, which intersects it from north to south. The Oudh and Rohilkhand Railway traverses the district for a few miles in the extreme east. The climate is considered mild, temperate, and healthy; the average annual rainfall

is about 46 inches.

The population, according to the census of 1881, was 957,912 (males 475,125, females 482,787), of whom 856,329 were Hindus and 101,524 Mohammedans. The only town with a population exceeding 5000 is Sultdnpur, the administrative headquarters of the district, which is situated on the right bank of the Gumti, and in 1881 contained 9374 inhabitants. Of the total area 571,795 acres were returned as cultivated in 1884-85 and 368,911 as cultivable ; the total area under crops in the same year was 672,058 acres, wheat and rice being the principal products. The trade of the district deals principally with grain, cotton, molasses, and native cloth, and

its manufactures — which, however, are unimportant — comprise coarse cotton cloth, brass vessels and other metal work, sugar, and indigo. The only incident worthy of note in the history of the district since the British annexation of Oudh is the revolt of the native troops stationed at Sult4npur during the mutiny. The troops rose in rebellion on 9th June 1857, and, after firing on and murdering two of their officers, sacked the station. Upon the restoration of order Sultanpur cantonment was strengthened by a detachment of British troops; but in 1861 it was entirely aban- doned as a military station.

SULU ISLANDS. See Pomiprines, vol. xviii. p. 752. SUMACH. See Luatuer, vol. xiv. p. 382.

(1) All sulphur Analysis.

Plate IX,

- of Holland, of which country the island is in large measure

clay schists, combined with hornblende talc and other schists, and traversed by veins of quartz. Granite also plays a considerable part, though it does not come so much to the surface. Carboniferous rocks (marls, sandstones, limestones, &c.) are in some places well developed. Between the Carboniferous period and the Tertiary there is a great blank all through the island. Augite-andesite of late Eocene origin has greatly modified the surface of the country, and constitutes, deter alia, the main part of the Barisan range.? The Tertiary formation is strongly developed in four different divisions. They are usually considered to be Eocene ; but. this determination rests on badly preserved fossils. The oldest or breccia division consists of débris of carboniferous limestone, syenites, and granites, sometimes in the form of breccia proper, some- times in that of sandstones or marl clays. The fish remains found in the marls have led some paleontologists to assign a greater antiquity than that of Eocene to these strata, while others, again, consider them to be Miocene. Above this division (apparently absent in south Sumatra) comes the second of sandstones, clay rocks, coal-beds, and coal. The coal appears to be the

result of a vegetation which grew in situ. Above the coal is sandstone, sometimes 1000 feet thick. The third division consists of marly sandstones of evidently marine origin; it is well developed in west Sumatra, but is absent from the south of the island. The fourth division is a limestone, rich in remains of corals, molluses, echinids, and ‘especially in Orbetoides ; it is well developed both in the west and in the south. Miocene deposits are more abundant in the south than in the west. At Lubu Lintang in the Benkulen residency the Ebuma fossils are characteristic.4

Minerals.—Sumatra possesses various kinds of mineral wealth. Gold occurs in the central regions ; gold mines have long been worked in Menangkabau and the interior of Padang, and gold-washing is carried on in several of the streams. Tin, which forms the staple of the neigh- bouring island of Bangka or BANoA (9.v.), is found more especially in Siak and the “division” of the L., Kotas. Copper mines are worked in the Padang Highlands (most largely in the district of Lake Sinkarah) and at Muki in Achin. Iron is not unfrequent, and magnetic iron is ob- tained at the “Iron Mountain” near Fort van der Capellen (Tanah Datar). Coal seams exist in the Malabuh valley (Achin),® in the Sinamu valley, and on both sides of the Ombilin (Umbilin) river; the Ombilin field was brought Into notice more especially by Mr D. D. Veth of the 1877- 79 expedition. Lignite of good quality is found in several localities. Oil wells are worked at Langkat and other places ; and arsenic, saltpetre, alum, naphtha, and sulphur may be collected in the volcanic districts.

Administrative Divisions.—The process by which the Dutch have advanced to their present position in Sumatra has been a very gradual one, and even yet, though their supremacy is effective all round the coast, much of the interior remains practically unpossessed. The following are the more important political subdivisions of the country.

A. The Dutch government of the West Coast (area 46,212 square miles), extending along the shore of the Indian Ocean from Trumon, 2° 53’N. lat., to the Mandjuta, 2° 25’S. lat., comprises the residencies Padang, Tapanuli, and the Padang Highlands (Padangsche Bovenlanden),

SUMATRA, in Malay called Pulu Partcha or Indalas, is one vf the largest and most important islands of the East Indian Archipelago. It stretches from

north-west to south-east for a distance of 1047 miles,—Tandjong Batu, the northmost point, being situated in 5° 40’ N. lat. and the southmost in 5° 59’S. lat. The greatest breadth is about 230 miles. In area it is estimated that Sumatra, with its 170,744 square miles,! is thirteen times the size

a dependency. The northern half runs obliquely parallel to the Malay Peninsula, from which it is separated by the Strait of Malacca, and the southern end is separated by the narrow Sunda Strait from Java. Unlike Java, Sumatra has a series of considerable islands (Nias Islands, Mentawei Islands, &c.) arranged like outworks in front of the coast that faces the open Indian Ocean. The general physical features of the island are simple and striking : a range of lofty mountains extends throughout its whole length, their western slopes descending rapidly towards the ocean and their eastern looking out over a vast alluvial tract of unusual uniformity. This mountain range is known as Bukit Barisan or Chain Mountain, It varies in average height from 1500 to 6000 fect, and consists of three or four ridges separated by plateau-like valleys. Among its more remarkable summits are Ya Mura or Gold Mountain, near the north end (6879 feet); Seret Berapi or Merapi (5857 feet), in 0° 44’ N. lat, ; Pasaman or Mount Ophir (10,866); Merapi (9563) ; Indrapura, in 1° 36’S. lat. (11,800), which has the reputation of being the culminating point of the whole island ; Dempo (10,000); and Abong Abong (10,000). The summit of Indrapura was reached by the Central Sumatran Expedition of 1877-79. Towards the north end of the island the spurs of the main chain sometimes extend towards the neigh- bourhood of the east coast. Owing to this configuration of the island, the water-courses of the western side are comparatively short: only very few of them are large enough to be navigable. Those of the eastern slope, on the other hand—such as the Tamiang, the Simpang, the Asahan, the Kubu, the Siak, the Indragiri, the Jambi, the Kampas, the Palembang—are longer, and can not un- frequently carry vessels of considerable burden. In their lower courses they form enormous inosculating deltas. The mountainous regions contain numerous lakes, many of them evidently the craters of extinct volcanoes. When, as sometimes happens, two or three of these craters have merged into one, the lake attains a great size. Amongst the larger lakes may be mentioned the Tao Silalahi, with its offshoots Tao Muara and Tao Balige ; Manindji, to the west of Fort de Kock; Sinkarah, south-east of Fort de

Kock; Korintji, inland from Indrapura ; Ranau, inland from Tampah; and the lake of the X. Kotas, in the Padang Highlands.

Volcanoes.— Sumatra, still possesses several centres of volcanic eruption, and in 1883 its southern extremity shared with Java in the disasters of the Krakatoa outbreak. Indrapura sends up from time to time heavy columns of smoke. Merapi,? the most active of the volcanoes in the island, was in full eruption in the years 1807, 1822, 1834, 1845, 1863-64, and 1872. Mt Talang in the Padang High- lands, also has three craters, one of which is filled with molten sulphur. J unghuhn registered sixteen Sumatran volcanoes, and others have since been discovered.

_ Geology.—A large part of the Sumatran highlands con- sists of very old (probably Silurian or Devonian) slates and

3 For the geology see R. D. M. Verbeek, Die Tertidrformation von Sumatra und thren Thierresten ; ‘‘Topographische en Geologische Beschrijving van Zuid-Sumatra” in Jaarboek van het Mijnwesen in Ned. Indiz, 1881, pl. i.; and short papers in Geol. Mag., 1877, 1878, &c. See also the 2d part of Midden-Sumatra, by D. D. Veth, 1882.

4 Full details and a geological bibliography will be found in H. van Cappelle, Het Karakter van de Nederlandsch-Indische Tertiatre Fauna, Sneek, 1885.

5 See Indische Gids, 1880, paper and map.

1 The triangulation of Sumatra was commenced in June 1883 by the measurement of a base line 4857 metres (nearly 31 miles) long in the neighbourhood of Padang.

_ ? Foran account of changes in the principal crater see Verbeek’s paper In Natuurk. Tidschr. van Ned. Indié, 1885.

Ss UMATR #

The governor of the whole government has his residence at Padang. The residency of Padang is bounded south by Benkulen and north by Tapanuli.

It contains a large number of separate districts, mostly corresponding to natural divisions formed by mountain-spurs or river valleys. Among the rest are Indrapura, Tapan, Lunang, and Silaut, which form the regency of Indrapura, and are the remains of the ancient kingdom of that name. Administratively Padang is divided into Ayer Bangis and Rau, Priaman, Padang, Painan. The headquarters of Ayer Bangis and Rau is Talu, to the north of Mt Ophir. Ayer Bangis it- self is on the coast, and has a good roadstead on one of the islands that protect its bay. At Rau is the Dutch fort of Amerongen, and to the north-west the old fort of Balong or Sevenhoven. Padang is a town of some 2000 houses and 15,000 inhabitants, with a Chinese settlement and a European quarter. It is the chief market in Sumatra for gold. Indrapura lies about 8 miles up the river of its own name, and is now only an unimportant village of bamboo huts. The residency of Tapanuli is divided into Siboga (which includes the Nias Islands), Natal, Mandeling and Angkola, Padang Lawas. The town of Siboga has con- siderable commercial importance, the bay on which it stands being one of the finest in all Sumatra. Tapanuli, the ancient capital, and Sinkil, a commercial town, also deserve to be mentioned. In Natal (properly Natar) the leading places are Jambur, Sinkuang, and Natar. Padang Sidem- puan, the chief town of Mandeling and Angkola, lies to the south of Mt Lubu Raya. Fort Elout was formerly the military centre in Great Mandeling. The residency of the Padang Highlands lies east of Padang proper. The whole surface is mountainous, and the natural districts are very numerous. Agam, Batipuand the X. Kotas,! the L. Kotas, Tanah Datar, and the XIII. and IX. Kotas form the five administrative divisions. Bukit Tinggi, or, as it is usually called, Fort de Kock, is the capital of the residency ; other places of note are Bondjol, Padang Pandjang Payakombo, Fort van der Capellen, Pagar Rujung (the residence of the last prince of Menangkabau), Priyangan (the remains of another capital of Menangkabau), Sinkarah, and Solok. To the government of the West Coast belong the following islands :—Banyak Islands, a small limestone group, well wooded and sparsely peopled ; Nias Islands, with an area of 2523 square miles; Batu Islands (Pulu Pingi, Pulu Baai, Tanah Masa, Tanah Balla, &c.; area 630 square miles) ; Mentawei and Pageh or Nassau Islands (area 4200 square miles); Engano (area 360 square miles), annexed by Hol- land in 1863 and seldom visited. The Nias Islands are a very interesting group (see Dr Schreiber in Petermann’s Mittheil., 1881). There are no volcanoes, but earthquakes are very frequent. In the

north the villages are mainly perched on steep hills reached by ladders; in the south they are larger and occupy low-lying sites.

B, The residency of Benkulen or Bencoolen (i.e, Bang Kulon, “west coast”) lies along the west coast from the Mandjuta to the south end of Sumatra. It is divided into eight districts :—Mokko-Mokko; Lais or Sungei Lama ; the district (ommelanden) of Benkulen; the capital Ben- kulen ; Seluma; Mana and Pasumah Ulu Mana; Kauer ; and lastly Kru. Among the noteworthy places are Mokko- Mokko, with the old English fort Anna; Bantal; Lais (Laye), the former seat of the English resident ; and Ben- kulen, the capital, with 12,000 inhabitants, Fort Marl- borough, and a Chinese kampong (see BENCOOLEN).

C. The residency of the Lampong districts, separated from Palembang by the Masudji river, is partly mountain- ous (Lampong Peak 6800 feet), partly so flat as to be under

- “Kota” means settlement or township, and a great many of the

districts are named from the number of kotas they contain ; thus in Agam we have the VII. Kotas, the VIII. Kotas, &c.

water in the rainy season. It is divided into the districts of Telok Betong, Tulang Bawang, Seputih, Sekampong, Katimbang, and Semangka. The more important places are Telok Betong, chief town of the residency, Menggala (with a good trade), Gunung Sugi, Sukadana, Tandjong Karang, Beniawang.

_D. The residency of Palembang consists of the former kingdom of this name, various districts more or less de- pendent on that monarchy, and (since 1839) the kingdom of J ambi. With the exclusion of this last it is divided into the administrative districts of Palembang; Tebing Tinggi; Lematang Ulu, Lematang Tlir, and the Pasumah country ; Komering Ulu, Ogan Ulu, Inim, and the Ranau districts ; Musi Ilir; Ogan Ihr, Komering Ili, and Blidah; and Iliran and Banyu Asin. In the kingdom of Jambi the government is left in the hands of the native chief. The town of Palem- bang

is a large place of 50,000 inhabitants (2500 Chinese), with extensive barracks, hospitals, &., a mosque (1740), considered the finest in the Dutch Indies, and a traditional tomb of Alexander the Great. A good description of the town and its river approaches is given by Mr Forbes.

E. The kingdom of Indragiri (along with Kwanten and the districts of Reteh and Mandah) is administratively subject to the residency of Riouw.

F, The residency of the East Coast was formed in 1873 of the territory of Siak and its dependencies and the state of Kampar. It consists of five divisions,—the island Bengkalis, Siak proper, Labuan Batu, Asahan, Deli. The island has an area of 529 square miles and a population of 5000. Deli is the most important part of the residency, —having been since 1870 the seat of the Amsterdam Deli Company, engaged in growing tobacco, coffee, dc.

G. In 1878 the Achin (Atjeh) kingdom was turned into a Dutch government, but the greater part of the territory is still but little known. Compare Acui, vol. i. p. 95 sg.

Flora.—Though Sumatra is separated from Java by so narrow a strait, the botanist at once finds that he has broken new ground when he crosses to the northern island, and the farther he advances inward the more striking becomes the originality of the flora. The alang fields, which play a great part in Java, have cven a wider range in Sumatra, descending to within 700 or 800 feet of sea-level; where- ever a space in the forest is clearea this aggressive grass begins to take possession of the soil, and if once it be fully rooted the wood- land has great difficulty in re-establishing itself. Among the orders more strongly represented in Sumatra than in Java are the Dip- terocarpacer, Chrysobalanacex, sclerocarp Myrtacexe, Melastomaceex, Begonias, Nepenthes, Oxalidaccw, Myristicacer, Ternstrimiacee, Connaracce, Amyridacce, Cyrtandracer, Epacridacee, and Hrio- caulacesw. Many of the Sumatran forms which do not occur in Java are found in the Malay Peninsula. In the north the pine tree (Pinus Merkusit) has advanced almost to the equator, and in the south are a variety of species characteristic of the Australian region. The, distribution of species does not depend on elevation to the same extent as in Java, where the horizontal zones are clearly marked ; and there appears to be a tendency of all forms to grow at lower altitudes than in that island. A remarkable feature of the Sumatran

flora is the great variety of trees that vie with each other in stature and beauty, and as a timber-producing country the island ranks high even among the richly wooded lands of the archipelago.2 The process of reckless deforestation is, however, beginning to tell on certain districts,—the natives often destroying a whole tree for a plank or rafter. The principal cultivated plants, apart from sugar cane and coffee, are rice (in great variety of kinds), the cocoa-nut palm, the areng palm, the areca and the sago palms, maize (jagung), yams, and sweet potatoes; and among the fruit trees are the Indian tamarind, the blimbing, pomegranate, jambosa, guava, papaw, orange, and lemon. Even before the arrival of Europeans Sumatra was known for its pepper plantations ; and these still form the most conspicuous feature of the south of the island. For the foreign market coffee is the most important of all the crops,—the Padang districts being the chief seat of its cultiva- tion. The average value of the coffee brought to market in Padang in the three years 1880-82 was £521,000. Benzoin was formerly obtained almost exclusively from Sumatra from the Styrax Benzoin.®

«The Central Sumatra Expedition alone collected specimens of about 400 kinds of timber.

3 See Miquel, flora Ind. Batave; Supp.1,“ Prodr. Flore Sumatrane,”

1860.

Fauna.—Snellemann confirms the statement of Wallace that no trace has been found of the orang-outan (Simia satyrus). The siamang (Hylobates syndactylus), an ape peculiar to the island, fills the woods with the cry “wwa uwa,” The ungko (Hylobates agilis) is not socommon. A fairly familiar form is the simpei (Semno- pithecus melalophus). No apes are found on the plateau of Alahan Pandjang and the slopes of the mountains above 1500 metres. The tjigah (Cercocebus cynomolgus) is the only ape found in central Sumatra ina tame state. The pig-tail ape (Macacus nemestrinus)— as Rafiles described it in his “ Descriptive Catalogue of a Zoological Collection made in Sumatra,” Zrans. Linn. Soc., 1820, vol. xiii. p. 243—is employed by the natives of Benkulen to ascend the cocoa-nut trees for the purpose of gathering the nuts. The Galeo- pithecus volans

(‘‘kubin,” “‘flying cat,” or “flying lemur”) is fairly common. Bats of from twenty to twenty-five species have been registered ; in central Sumatra they dwell in thousands in the limestone caves. The Pteropus edulis (‘‘kalong,” “ flying fox ”) is to be met with almost everywhere, especially in the durian trees. The tiger frequently makes his presence felt, but is seldom seen, and less frequently hunted; he prefers to prowl in what the Malays call tiger weather, that is, dark, starless, misty nights. The “clouded tiger” or rimau bulu (Felis macrocelis) is also known, as well as the Malay bear and wild dog. Paradoxurus musanga (‘‘coffee-rat” of the Europeans) is only too abundant ; Aretictis binturong appears to be rare. The Sumatran hare (Lepus netschert), discovered in 1880, adds a second species to the Lepus nigricollis, the only hare previously known in the East Indian Archipelago. The Manis javanicus is the only representative of the Edentaia. The Pachydermata are strongly characteristic of the Sumatran fauna: not only are the rhinoceros (Rh. sumatranus), the Sus vittatus, and the Tapirus indicus common, but the elephant (alto- gether absent from Java) is represented by a peculiar species. The Sumatran rhinoceros differs from the Javanese in having two horns, like the African variety. Its range does not extend more than 8500 feet above sea-level, and that of the elephant not above 4900 feet. The wild Bos sundaicus does not appear to exist in the island. The Antilope swmatrensis (kambing-utan) has been driven to the loneliest parts of the uplands. Cervus equinus is widely distributed, Cervus muntjac less so.}

Inhabitants.—The bulk of the Sumatran population is Malayan ; but to what extent the Malay has absorbed pre-Malayan blood is still open to investigation. ‘Ihe Kubus, a race or tribe still found in an emphatically savage state in the interior, have been by some regarded as the remains of an aboriginal stock ; but Mr J. G. Garson, reporting on Kubu skulls and skeletons submitted to him by Mr Forbes, comes to the conclusion that they are decidedly Malay, though the frizzle in the hair might indicate a certain mixture of Negrito blood (Journ. Anthrop. Inst., 1884). They speak the Malay dialect of the district to which they belong.

One of the most interesting of all the savage or semi-savage peoples is the Battaks or Batahs. About these a great deal has been written since Junghuhn published his Die Battaldnder in 1847. It is not known whether they were settled in Sumatra before the Hindu period. Their language contains words of Sans- krit origin and others most readily referred to Javanese, Malay, Menangkabau, Macassar, Sundanese, Niasese, and Tagal influence, At the present time they occupy the country to the south-east of Achin, in the centre of which lies the great Toba Lake; but it is evident that they formerly possessed, or at least were present in, various other districts both north and south. The process of ab- sorption into the Achin and Malay population which is now rapidly going on seems to have been long at work. In many points the Battaks are quite different from the Malay type. The average stature of the men is about 5 feet 4 inches, of the women 4 feet 8 mches. In general build they are rather thickset, with broad shoulders and fairly muscular limbs. The colour of the skin ranges from dark brown to a yellowish tint, the darkness apparently quite independent of climatic influences or distinction of race. The skull is rather oval than round. In marked contrast to the Malay type are the large black long-shaped eyes, beneath heavy black or dark brown eyebrows. The cheek bones are somewhat prominent, but less so than among the Malays. J. B. Neumann? reckons the inhabitants of the whole river basin of which he treats at 50,000. The Battak language, especially the Toba dialect, has been studied by Van der Tuuk (Bataksch Wi oordenboek), On the borders of Palembang and Benkulen live the Redjangers, a peculiar tribe who still employ a distinctive written character, which they cut with a kris on bamboo or lontar. The same character is employed by the Pasumahs, who bear traces of

Javanese elements or influence. Full details as to the various forms are given by Van Hasselt, Volksbe- eae —_— 4

1 For the birds see Forbes's Naturalist's Wanderings. On this, as on other branches of natural history, elaborate treatises appear in Midden-Sumatra.

Het Pane en Bila Stroomgebied," in Tijdsch. Ned. Aardrijksk. Gen., 1886.

3 Mr. C. A. van Ophuijsen has published (in Bijd. tot Land-, Taal-, en Volken-

Kunde, 1886) an interesting collection of Battak poetry. He describes a curi-

ous leaf language used by Battak lovers, in which the name of some leaf or plant is substituted for the word with which it has greatest phonetic similarity.

schr, en Taal van Mid.-Sumatra (1877-79 expedition), The original stock of the Achinese appears, according to K. H. F. van Langen (Tijdschr. voor Ind. Taal-, Land-, en Vi olken – Kunde,sBatavia, XXvili.), to have consisted of the Mantirs, who seem to have been driven inland by the Battaks and the Cheties (Tjeties) or Hindus. The Achinese language is at present spoken in four main dialects, of which the purest or most cultured is that of the XXV. and XXVI. Mukims. It shows, besides the Mantir element, Malay, Battak, Hindu, and Arabic influence. The inhabitants of the Nias Islands have a special tongue, which has been studied by Herr Sundermann.

The physical conditions of large tracts render it certain that as a whole the island cannot be thickly peopled. In 1881 the Govern. ment Almanac gave the population of the Dutch possessions as 2,142,873 (2894 Europeans, 2,098,984 natives, 11,289 Chinese, 1929 " Arabs," and 27,777 Orientals of other stock). To this consider- able additions must be made, as the kingdom of Achin (356,000 at least), as well as Indragiri and Kwanten (about 30,000). Perhaps a fair estimate for the whole is somewhat under 8,500,000. The Nias Islands would add 230,000 to the total. The most populous region is the government of the West Coast.

History.—As far as is known, Sumatran civilization and culture are of Hindu origin; and it is not improbable that the island was the first of all the archipelago to receive the Indian immi- grants who played so important a part in the history of the region. Certain inscriptions discovered in the Padang Highlands seem to certify the existence in the 7th century of a powerful Hindu king- dom in Tanah Datar, not far from the site of the later capital of Menangkabau. In these inscriptions Sumatra is called the “ first Java,” The traces of Hindn influence still to be found in the island are extremely numerous, though far from being so import- ant as those of Java. There are ruins of Hindu temples at Butar in Deli, near Pertibi, on the Panbi river at J ambi, in the interior of Palembang above Lahat, and in numerous other localities. One of the principal Hindu ruins is at Muara Takus on the Kampar river.4 The buildings (including a stupa 40 feet high) may possibly date from the 11th century. At Pagar Rujung are sree. stones with inscriptions in Sanskrit and Menangkabau Malay. Sanskrit words occur in the various languages spoken in the island; and the Ficus religiosa, the sacred tree of the Hindu, is also the sacred tree of the Battaks. At a later period the Hindu influence in Sumatra was strengthened by an influx of Hindus from Java, who settled in Palembang, Jambi, and Indragiri, but their attachment to Sivaism prevented them from coalescing with their Buddhist brethren in the north. In the 13th century Mohammedanism be- gan to make itself felt, and in course of time took a firm hold upon some of the most important states. In Menangkabau, for instance, the Arabic alphabet digniated the Kawi (ancient Javanese) character previously employed. Native chronicles derive the Menangkabau princes from Alexander the Great; and the Achinese dynasty boasts its origin from a missionary of Islam. The town of Samudera was at that period the seat of an important principality in the north of the island, whose current name is probably a corruption of this word.® Mr Wenniker in 1881 found a village called Samudra near Pasei (Passir), which possibly indicates the site.

Subjoined are a few leading events in the recent history of Sumatra. The island, or rather the portions possessed by the Dutch, were British from 1811 to 1816. 1821. Second expedition against Palembang ; Palembang captured 23d June. 1822. Men- angkabau recognized Dutch authority. 1825. Benkulen taken over from the English in May. 1837. Cultivation of coffee extended in West Coast region by Governor A. v. Michiels. 1840. Extension

of the West Coast government to Sinkil. 1851. Revolt suppressed in Palembang; expedition to the Lampong districts. 1853. Cholera rages in the island; Raja Tiang Alam, ringleader of the revolt in Palembang, surrenders. 1858. Expedition against Jambi; sultan dethroned and treaty made with his successor. 1860. Redjang added to Palembang residency. 1868, Expedition against Nias. 1865. Expedition against Asahan and Serdang (East Coast). 1872. Agreement with the British Government in regard to Sumatra. 1873. War in Achin commenced. 1874. Capture of the kraton of Achin. 1876, Capture of the VI., IV., and IX. Mukims (Achin); expedition against Kota Jutan (East Coast); emancipation of slaves on West Coast. 1878. Benkulen made a residency ; civil adminis- tration of Achin and dependencies entrusted to a governor.

The literature dealing with Sumatra is very extensive. Of the older worke the best known is Marsden's History of Sumatra, 1811. A full list of other authorities will be found in Veth's Aardrijkskundig Woordenboek van Nederl. Indié, 1869.. Among recent works by far the most important is Midden-Su- matra; Reizen en Onderzoekingen der Sumatra Eapeditie, 1877-1879 (1882), edited by Prof. P. J. Veth. See also Brau de Saint-Pol Lias, lle de Sumatra, 1884; Bastian, Indonesien; Buijs, Twee Jaren op Sumatra's Westkust; M. Fauque, "Rapport sur un Voyage 4 Sumatra," in Archives des Missions Scient., 3d ser.

vol. xii. ; Kielstra, Beschrijving van der Atjeh Oorlog, 1885-86, and 'Sumatras West-Kust van 1819-1825," in Bijd. tot Land-, &c., -Kunde, 1887. (H. A. W.)

ee er eee

4 See descriptions of it in Tijdschr. van Ind. Taal-, Land-, en Volken-Kunde. 1860 and 1879, and Verhandel. Batav. Gen. van Kunst en Wetensch., 1881.

5 All the facts relating to this derivation are given in Yule and Burnell, Glossary of Anglo-Indian Words, s.v. "Sumatra."

SUMBAL, or Sumpvt, also called Musx Root, a drug recently introduced into European medical practice. It consists of the root of Ferula Sumbul, Hook., a tall Um- belliferous plant found in the north of Bokhara, its range apparently extending beyond the Amur. It was first brought to Russia in 1835 as a substitute for musk Bei was subsequently recommended as a remedy for cholera, and in 1867 was introduced into the British pharmacopeeia. The root as found in commerce consists of transverse sec- tions an inch or more in thickness and from 1 to 3 or more inches in diameter. It has a dark thin papery bark, a spongy texture, and the cut surface is marbled with white and blackish or pale brown ; it has a musky odour and a bitter aromatic taste. Sumbal is used in medicine as an antispasmodic and stimulating tonic, especially in nervous diseases. It owes its medicinal properties to a balsamic resin and an essential oil, Of the former it contains about 9 per cent. and of the latter one-third per cent. The resin is soluble in ether and has a musky smell, which is not fully developed until after contact with water ; by dry dis- tillation it yields umbelliferone, C)H,O., a crystalline sub- stance soluble in water, ether, and chloroform, and produc- ing in an alkaline solution a brilliant blue fluorescence, which is destroyed by the addition of an acid in excess.

Under the name of East Indian sumbal, the root of Dorema ammoniacum, Don., has occasionally been offered in English com- merce, It is of a browner hue, has the taste of ammoniacum, and gives a much darker tincture than the genuine drug; it is thus casily detected. The name “sumbal” (a word of Arabic origin, signifying a spike or ear) is applied to several fragrant roots in the East, the principal being Nardostachys Jatamansi, D.C. (see SPIKE- NARD). West African sumbal is the root of a species of Cyperus.

SUMBAWA (properly Sampawa or Samawa), an island of the East Indian Archipelago, one of the Sunda group, lies between 8° 6’ and 9° 3’§. lat. and 116° 47’ and 119° 12’ E. long., to the east of Lombok, from which it is sepa- rated by the narrow Allas strait. Its area is estimated at 5186 square miles. The population was computed to number about 150,000 in 1887, The deep Bay of Salee or Sumbawa on the north divides the island into two penin- sulas, and the isthmus is further reduced by the narrower Bay of Tjempi (Chempi) entering from the south. The eastern peninsula is deeply

indented by the Bay of Bima. The whole surface of Sumbawa is mountainous: G. Ny- enges, in the western peninsula, is 5560 feet high, and G. Tambora, in the eastern, which is said to have lost a third of its elevation in the eruption of 1815, is still 8697 feet high. There are no navigable streams. The climate and productions are not unlike those of Java, though the rains are heavier, the drought more severe, and the fertility less. Sulphur, arsenic, asphalt, and petroleum are the mineral products. Mohammedanism prevails throughout the island, except among certain mountain tribes.

Sumbawa is divided into four independent states, —Sumbawa proper, Dompo, Sangar, and Bima. Two other states on the northern cxtremity of the island were so devastated by the Tambora eruption of 1815 that their territory, after lying for long uninhabited, was in 1866 divided between Dompo and Sangar. Sumbawa proper occupics the westcrn peninsula, The residence of the sultan is Sumbawa, 2 milcs from the coast of the great bay, in 8° 32’S, lat. and 117° 20’ 33” E. long. It is surrounded with palisade and ditches. The inhabitants of this state employ sometimes the Malay and sometimes the Macassar character in writing. A considerable trade is carried on in the export of horses, buffaloes, goats, dinding (dried ficsh), skins, birds’ nests, wax, rice, katjang, sappanwood, &c. Sumbawa entered into treaty relations with the Dutch East India Company in 1674. Dompo is the western half of the eastern penin- sula. The capital of the state, Dompo, lies in the heart of the country, on a stream that falls into Tjempi Bay. Bada, the sultan’s residence, is farther west. Sangar occupies the north-western promontory of the island, and Bima the extreme east. Bima or Bodjo, the chief town of the latter state, lies on the east side of the Bay of Bima; it has a stone-walled palace and a mosque, as well as a Dutch fort. The population of Bima is curiously divided into twelve guilds or castes (dari). In the town isa Government Christian school dating from 1874.

641

SUMMARY JURISDICTION. By a court of summary

jurisdiction is meant a court in which cases are heard and determined by a justice or justices of the peace, without the intervention of a jury. Such a court has duties to perform of two different kinds. It either hears and de- termines a case in a judicial capacity, or it acts rather in a ministerial

capacity where a prima facie case has been established, as by issuing a warrant of distress for non- payment of poor rate, or by committing an accused person for the decision of a higher court, generally assizes or quarter sessions, It is to the court acting in the former capacity that the term “court of summary jurisdiction ” more strictly applies. ver since the first institution of Justices of the peace (see JUSTICE or THE Prace), the tendency of English legislation has been to enlarge their jurisdiction and to enable offences of a less heinous nature to be tried in their courts without a jury. This inroad upon the functions of the jury can only be made by legislation. ‘‘The common law is a stranger to it, unless in the case of contempts,” says Blackstone. At common law all offences must be proceeded against by indictment, and an indictment can only be tried before a jury. Even where an offence is created by statute and is unknown to the common law the procedure must be by indictment, unless the statute creating the offence or some other statute specially makes it summary. The history of the gradual growth of summary jurisdiction will be found in Stephen, Listory of the Criminal Law, vol. i. chap. iv. The summary jurisdiction exercised by justices is the only one of much practical importance. It is unnecessary to do more than mention in passing the two other kinds named by Blackstone, that of the commissioners of taxes for revenuc offences and that of the superior courts for ConrEMPT oF Courr (¢.v.). A very remarkable case of the latter is the power given to a judge by 12 Geo. I. c, 29, s. 4, to summarily sentence to seven years’ penal servitude a solicitor practising after conviction for perjury, forgery, or barratry.

The principal Acts now dealing with summary jurisdiction are the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 18481 (11 and 12 Vict. c. 43), one of what are called Jervis’s Acts, and the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (42 and 43 Vict. c. 49). The former consolidated the law up to that time of a large number of Acts, but only to a certain extent, for a considerable number of previous enactments dealing in a greater or less degree with this subject are still law, the earliest being 5 Hen. IV. c. 10. It also amended the law in several important particulars. The amendment was in the direction of greater simplicity of procedure, and related to both criminal and only quasi-criminal matters. The procedure under the Act is shortly this. In all cases where an information is laid or complaint made the justices are, on proof of a prima facie case, to issue a SUMMONS (q.v.). An information is laid in

criminal matters in which the decision of the justices, if adverse to the defendant, would be a conviction. A complaint is made where the decision of the justices in such an event would be an order for the payment of money or otherwise in what may be called only quasi-criminal matters, e.g., claims under the Employers and Workmen Act. If the summons is disobeyed, a warrant may (in criminal charges only) issue in the first instance at the discretion of a justice. The warraut is good only within the local jurisdiction of the justice issuing it; and, if it is required to be executed in another jurisdiction, 1t must be backed, z.e., endorsed, by a justice of that jurisdiction (unless in case of a fresh pursuit, when it is good for 7 miles beyond the bounds of the jurisdiction in which it was issued). Complaints need not be in writing ; informations usually are, though the Act does not make writing necessary. Where a warrant issues in the first instance, the information must be upon oath. In all cases not otherwise provided for, the information must be laid or com- plaint made within six calendar months from the time at which the matter of the information or complaint arose. The hearing is in open court, and parties may appear by counsel or solicitor. If both parties appear, the justices must hear and determine the case. If the defendant does not appear, the justices may hear and

1 This name of the Act of 1848 is an example of a title of an Act conferred retrospectively (see StaTUTE), The name was given to it by the Act of 1879. In the same way the name of the Scotch Summary Procedure Act, 1864, was changed to that of the Summary Jurisdic- tion Act, 1864, by the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1881.

po —— 81

determine in his absence, or may issue a warrant and adjourn the hearing until his apprehension. If the complainant does not appear, the justices may dismiss the complaint or adjourn the hearing. The punishment inflicted may be fine or imprisonment, or both. Imprisonment as a rule cannot exceed six mouths, The regular mode of proceeding where a conviction adjudges a pecuniary penalty, or an order requires payment of a sum of money, is by issue of a warrant of distress to be levied on the goods of the defendant, The court usually consists of two or more justices, but the lord mayor or an

alderman of the City of London, a metropolitan police magistrate, and a stipendiary magistrate have each the authority of two justices. The Act further makes provision for curing defects in form in the proceedings for the payment of costs, for removing difficulties as to the boundaries of jurisdiction, and for various other inatters. The schedule gives forms of proceedings, whicli are as far as possible to be followed. The Act of 1879 amended the Act of 1848 in several important particulars, chiefly in the direction of greater leniency and enlarged jurisdiction and power of appeal. A greater discretion in the infliction of punishment is conferred on the court. A scale of imprisonment in respect of non-payment ot a fine or default of distress is fixed at periods varying according the amount of the fine unpaid, but in no case exceeding t}roe months (except in certain revenue offences, where the limit ‘s six months), and without hard labour, unless hard labour is specially authorized by the Act on which the conviction is founded. Time may be given for payment of money, or it may be ordered to be paid by instalments, or security may be taken. Summary trial of children under twelve is allowed at the discretion of the court in case of any indictable offence other than homicide, unless objection is made by the parent or guardian. SURETY, RECOGNIZANCE), and the issue and execution of warrants of commitment and distress, The issue of such a warrant may be postponed if the court thinks fit. The wearing apparel and bedding of a person and his family, and the tools and implements of his trade to the value of £5, are exempt from distress. Imprisonment may in certain cases be ordered instead of distress. The right of appeal is much extended. An appeal now lies from every conviction or order adjudgin imprison- ment without the option of a fine where the accused aid not plead guilty. The appeal by the Act of 1884 must be in accordance with the procedure of the Act of 1879, or of any subsequent Act giving a right of appeal in the particular case. The appeal is to QUARTER SEssIons (¢.v.). A summons or warrant is not avoided by the death or cesser of office of the justice issuing it. Under the powers of the Act rules and forms were framed which came into effect on Ist January 1880. The Summary Jurisdiction (Process) Act, 1881 (44 and 45 Vict. c. 24, applying to Great Britain, but not to Ireland), gave additional facilities for serving and executing the process of an English court of summary jurisdiction in Scotland or of a Scotch court in England, on endorsement in the country where it is executed. The

Vict. c. 48), repealed by the Acts of 1848

those Acts as to which doubts had._ arisen. other enactments dealing less directly with the powers of courts of

Property, Acts conferring summary jurisdiction are the Army, Bastardy, Customs, Post Office, and Vagrant Acts. Customs decision

besides appeal, a writ of certiorari, mandamus, or habeas corpus, or

: The English summons and warrant are repre- sented in Scotland by the warrant of citation and the warrant of apprehension, Where no punishment is fixed for a statutory offence, the court cannot sentence to more than a fine of £5 or sixty days imprisonment, in addition to ordering caution to keep the

peace. The Act of 1881 adopts many of the provisions of the English Act of 1879. In addition, it confers the discretion as to punishment to a sheriff trying by jury in cases where the prosecu- tion might have been by complaint under the Acts. Appeals from courts of summary jurisdiction are now mainly regulated by 38 and 39 Vict. c. 62, and proceed on case stated by the inferior judge,

Ireland.—The principal Acts dealing with the subject are the Summary Jurisdiction and Petty Sessions Acts, 1851 (14 and 15 Vict. cc. 92, 98). These Acts are more extensive in their purview than the English Acts, as they form in a great degree a code of substantive law as well as of procedure. The exceptional political circumstances of Ireland have led to the appointment of resident magistrates under 6 and 7 Will. LY. c. 18, and to the conferring at different times on courts of summary jurisdiction of an authority, generally temporary, greater than that which they can exercise in Great Britain. Recent instances are the Peace Preservation Act, 1881, and the Prevention of Crime Act, 1882. The provisions of the English Act of 1879 as to children were extended to Ireland by 47 and 48 Vict. ¢. 19.

United States.—By Art. III. s. 2 of the constitution the trial uf all crimes, except in cases of impeachment, is to be by jury. By Art. V. of the amendments no person can be held to answer for a capital or otherwise infamous crime unless on a presentment or indictment of a grand jury. Considerable changes have been made by State legislation in the direction of enlarging the powers of courts of summary jurisdiction. J. Wt.)

SUMMONS (swmmonitio) is a legal form demanding the attendance of a pergon in parliament (see Prrrage, vol. xviii. p. 462) or before a court of justice. The term as it applies to courts of justice is used both in civil and in criminal procedure, but is not applied universally to all cases of demanding attendance. Thus in the Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division the summons is usually, following the civil law, called a “citation,” while a summons

_to a witness (at least in the superior courts) bears the name

of ‘‘subpeena,” taken from the initial words of the penal clause in its Latin form. Whatever be the name, the principle of law is invariable, that a court before proceeding to adjudicate should bring before itself by some formal legal process all persons interested in the decision or able to influence the decision by giving evidence as material witnesses, The oral summons, like the oral pleading, seems to have been earlier in time than the written form. In Roman law the oral in jus vocatio existed centuries before the written dibellus conventionis, The antiquity and im- portance of the summons as a legal form in England is shown by the presence of the “‘sompnour,” or summoner of the ecclesiastical court, as one of the characters in the Canterbury Tales, and by the comparative frequency of “Sumner” as a surname, In civil procedure a summons may be issued either in the High Court or in an inferior court, such as a county court. In the High Court all actions are commenced by writ of summons, In the High Court the summons (in this case not in the form of a writ) is also a convenient mode of determining interlocutory matters by a judge or some other officer of the court— such as a master in the Queen’s Bench Division or a chief clerk in the Chancery Division—without the necessity of bringing the case into court.

The tendency of recent legislation is towards the increased use of the summons as a mode of presenting a case for decision. For instance, under the Vendor and Purchaser Act, 1874, and the Con- veyancing Act, 1881, many important questions, even of title to real property, may be raised on summons. It thus approaches very nearly to PLEADING (g.v.); in fact, the definition of pleading in the Judicature Act, 1873, s, 100, includessummons. The Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, introduced two new forms of summons,— (1) the general summons for directions, by which several matters nay be included in a single summons which before the rules must have been the subject of separate applications ; (2) the originating summons in the Chancery Division, by which proceedings may be commenced without writ for certain kinds of relief specified in the rules (see Ord. lv. r. 3). The originating summons to a great extent supersedes the action for administration of a trust or of the estate of a deceased person.! An ordinary summons must be serycd

1 A similar practice existed before 1883 under the powers given by 15 and 16 Vict. c. 86, but was very limited in its operation, as it

applied simply to the personal estate of a deceased person,

two, an originating summons seven, clear days before its return. A decision on a summons is generally subject to appeal. In the Chancery Division it is customary to adjourn into court the con- sideration of a summons of more than ordinary importance. The appendix to the Rules of 1883 contains forms of every kind of summons in the High Court. In the county courts an action is commenced by plaint and summons. Two kinds of summons are in use,—the ordinary and the default summons. The latter is an optional remedy of the plaintiff in actions for debts or liqui- dated demands exceeding £5, and in all actions for the price or hire of goods sold or let to the defendant to be used in the way of his calling. It may also issue by leave of the judge or registrar in other cases, with the single exception that no leave can be given in claims under £5 where the claim is not for the price or hire of goods sold or let as above, if the affidavit of debt discloses that the defendant is a servant or person engaged in manual labour. The advantage of a default summons is that judgment is entered for the plaintiff without

hearing unless the defendant gives notice of defence within a limited time. A default summons must as a rule be served personally on the defendant ; an ordinary summons necd not be served personally, but may in most cases be delivered to a person at the defendant's house or place of business. A summons is also issued to a witness in the county court. Forms of summons are given in the County Court Rules, 1886. These include certain special forms used in Admiralty and interpleader actions and in proceedings under the Charitable Trusts Acts, the Friendly Societics Act, 1875, and the Married Women's Property Act, 1882. In criminal law a summons is the mode of securing the attendance of the defendant before a court of summary jurisdiction, whether it be sought to obtain a conviction or an order against him. Forms of summons to a defendant, a witness, or a surety will be found in the schedule to the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1848, and in the rules issued in accordance with the Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879 (see the article SUMMARY JURISDICTION, supra). Forgery of a summons or use of any document falsely purporting to be a summons or professing to act under such a document is punishable as felony ner the County Courts Act, 1846, and the Forgery Act of 1861.

Scotland.—Summons is a term confined in strictness to the commencement of an action in the Court of Session. Formerly it was the mode of commencing an action in the sheriff court, but such an action is now commenced by PETITION (g.v.). In some Acts of Parliament, however—e.g., the Citation Amendment Acts—the term 'summons " is certainly used to denote part of the process of an in- ferior court. The summons is a writ in the sovereign's name, signed by a writcr to the signet, citing the defender to appear and answer the claim. The will of the summons calls upon the defender to pee on the proper induciz.

SUMNER, Cuarzss (1811-1874), American statesman, was born at Boston, Mass., on 6th January 1811. He graduated at Harvard in 1830, and studied law with Judge Story. His natural powers of mind were great, his habits of study intense, and his success immediate and con- spicuous. Everything seems to have been expected of nim, and he disappointed nobody. In 1834 he had been admitted to the bar, was editor of the American Jurist, and was reporting the decisions of Judge Story. For the next three years he was a lecturer in the Harvard law school. He then spent three years in Europe,

always, however, studying with an intensity that never relaxed. Returning, he began the practice of law, but gradually drifted into politics during the anti-slavery struggle. In 1851 the few “free-soilers” in the Massachusetts legis- lature offered to vote for Democrats for other officers in return for Democratic votes for Sumner as United States senator. Sumner was thus sent to the Senate, to which he was regularly re-elected for the rest of his life. He at once became a man of mark, though not of popularity, in

the Senate. His fine personal presence, his somewhat florid rhetoric, his wealth of citation from learned and foreign tongues, his wide foreign acquaintance, high cul- ture, and social standing, seem to have staggered his Southern colleagues. They could not look down upon him, and they hardly knew what else todo. A long series of speeches brought about an assault upon him, 22d May 1856, by Preston 8. Brooks, a representative from South Carolina, in retaliation for Sumner’s criticism of Brooks’s uncle, a senator from his State. Brooks found Sumner writing in the Senate chamber, and beat him so cruelly that he narrowly escaped death. He was absent from his place until 1859, and never fully recovered from the effects of the assault. When his party took control of the Senate in 1861 Sumner became one of its foremost members. Like Stevens (see STEVENS), he propounded a theory of the relations of the seceding States to the Union which never was endorsed, but had its influence on the outcome of reconstruction. In the American Union States are auto- nomous, but Territories are theoretically under the abso- lute government of Congress, though in practice Congress gives them as much self-government as is possible or prudent. A Territory becomes a State by admission through an Act of Congress. Sumner held that the national boundaries of the Union were so fixed that no State could escape from them by secession, that a State’s secession was merely an abandonment of its Statehood, so that it fell back into the condition of a Territory and came under the absolute government of Congress. This “State- suicide” theory was in due time condemned by the Supreme Court, which held that a State could not lose its State- hood; but Congress had really acted upon it already in several points of reconstruction. Sumner’s peculiar field was in the Senate committee on foreign relations, of which he was chairman from 1861 until 1871. It was

during this period, in 1869, that he urged the “indirect” items of the Alabama claims, sacrificing without hesitation the English popularity which had always been dear to him. Within a year or two he felt compelled to oppose the new administration of President Grant in several particulars. In the expectation of gratifying the president, the Repub- lican senators removed Sumner from his chairmanship ; and, like Seward, he passed his later years in general op- position to the party which he had helped to organize. In December 1872 he introduced a resolution that the names of victories over fellow-citizens should be removed from the regimental flags of the army. For this his State legislature censured him, but the censure was rescinded just before his death. He had been from the beginning of the Civil War the advocate of emancipation and of the grant of full status to the Negroes; and for the last few years of his life his energies were devoted to forwarding his Civil Rights Bill, intended to give the freedmen the same legal rights as the whites. He died at Washington on llth March 1874.

Sumner’s speeches were collected in 1850 under the title of Ora- tions and Speeches, to which was added, in 1856, Recent Speeches and Addresses. Wis Works, in twelve volumes, were issued in 1875. See also Lester’s Life of Sumner, 1874; Harsha’s Life of Sumner ; and Pierce’s Memorial and Letters of Sumner.

SUMPTUARY LAWS are those intended to limit or regulate the private expenditure of the citizens of a com- munity. They may be dictated by political, or economic, or moral considerations. They have existed both in ancient and in modern states. In Greece, it was amongst the Dorian races, whose temper was austere and rigid, that they most prevailed. All the inhabitants of Laconia were forbidden to attend drinking entertainments, nor could a Lacedzemonian possess a house or furniture which was the work of more elaborate implements than the axe and saw. Amongst the Spartans proper, simple and frugal habits of

life were secured rather by the institution of the pheiditia (public meals) than by special enactments. The possession of gold or silver was interdicted to the citizens of Sparta, and the use of iron money alone was permitted by the Lycurgean legislation. ‘‘ Even in the cities which had early departed

from the Doric customs," says K. O. Miiller, "there were frequent and strict prohibitions against ex-

pensiveness of female attire, prostitutes alone being wisely

In the Locrian code of Zaleucus citizens were

excepted." 1 The Solonian sump-

forbidden to drink undiluted wine.

tuary enactments were directed principally against the extravagance of female apparel and dowries of excessive amount ; costly banquets also were forbidden, and expen- The Pythagoreans in Magna Grecia not only protested against the luxury of their time

sive funeral solemnities.

but encouraged legislation with a view to restraining it. At Rome the system of sumptuary edicts and enactments

was largely developed, whilst the objects of such legisla- tion were concurrently sought to be attained through the The code of the Twelve

exercise of the censorial power. Tables contained provisions limiting the expenditure on funerals. The most important sumptuary laws of the Roman commonwealth were those which follow. (1) The Oppian law, 215 B.c., provided that no woman should possess more than half an ounce of gold, or wear a dress

of different colours, or ride in a carriage in the city or

within a mile of it except on occasions of public religious ceremonies. This law, which had been partly dictated by the financial necessities of the conflict with Hannibal, was repealed twenty years later, against the advice of Cato.

Livy (xxxiv. 1-8) gives an interesting account of the com- motion excited by the proposal of the repeal, and of the

exertions of the Roman women against the law, which almost amounted to a female émeute. (2) The Orchian

law, 187 B.c., limited the number of guests at entertain-

ments. An attempt being made to repeal this law, Cato

offered strong opposition and delivered a speech on the

subject, of which some fragments have been preserved. (3) The Fannian law, 161 B.c., limited the sums to be

spent on entertainments; it provided amongst other things that no fowl should be served but a single hen, and (4) The Didian law, 143 3.c., ex-

that not fattened. tended to the whole of Italy the provisions of the Fannian law, and made the guests as well as the givers of entertain- ments at which the law was violated liable to the penalties. After a considerable interval, Sulla anew directed legisla- tion against the luxury of the table and also limited the cost of funerals and of sepulchral monuments. We are told that he violated his own law as to funerals when bury- ing his wife Metella, and also his law on entertainments when seeking to forget his grief for her loss in extravagant drinking and feasting (Plut., Swll., 35). Julius Cesar, in the capacity of prafectus morvbus, after the African war re-enacted some of the sumptuary laws which had fallen into neglect ; Cicero implies (Ep. ad Att., xiii. 7) that in Czsar's absence his legislation of this kind was not at- tended to. Suetonius tells us that Cesar had officers stationed in the market-places to seize such provisions as were forbidden by law, and sent lictors and soldiers to feasts to remove all illegal eatables (Jul., 43). Augustus fixed anew the expense to be incurred in entertainments on ordinary and festal days. Tiberius also sought to check inordinate expense on banquets, and a decree of the senate was passed in his reign forbidding the use of gold vases except in sacred rites, and prohibiting the wearing of silk garments by men. But it appears from Tacitus (Ann., il, 5, where a speech is put into his mouth very much in the spirit of Horace's « Quid leges sine moribus Vane proficiunt ?"), that he looked more to the improvement of manners than to direct legislative action for the restriction

of luxury. Suetonius mentions some regulations made by Nero, and we hear of further legislation of this kind by Hadrian and later emperors. In the time of Tertullian the sumptuary laws appear to have been things of the past (Apol,.@ vi.)

In modern times the first important sumptuary legisla- tion was—in Italy that of Frederick II. ; in Aragon that of James I., in 1234; in France that of Philip IV.; in Eng- land that of Edward II. and Edward III. In 1294 Philip IV. made provisions as to the dress and the table expendi- ture of the several orders of men in his kingdom, the most remarkable of which may be seen in Guizot's Civilisation en France, leg. 15. Charles V. of France forbade the use of long-pointed shoes, a fashion against which popes and councils had protested in vain. Under later kings the use of gold and silver embroidery, silk stuffs, and fine linen wares was restricted,—at first moral and afterwards economic motives being put forward, the latter especially from the rise of the mercantile theory. In England we hear much from the writers of the 14th century of the extravagance of dress at that period. They remark both on the great splendour and expensiveness of the apparel of the higher orders and on the fantastic and deforming fashions adopted by persons of all ranks. The parliament held at West- minster in 1363 made laws (37 Edw. III. c. 8-1 4) to restrain this undue expenditure and to regulate the dress of the several classes of the people. These statutes were repealed in the following year, but similer ones were passed again in the same reign. They seem, however, to have had little effect, for in the reign of Richard II. the same excesses prevailed, apparently in a still greater degree. Another Statute was passed in the year 1463 (3 Edw. IV. c. 5) for the regulation of the dress of persons of all ranks, In this it was stated that "the commons of the realm, as well men as women, wear excessive and inordinate apparel to the great displeasure of God, the enriching of strange realms, and the destruction of this realm." An Act of 1444 had previously regulated the clothing, when it formed a part of the wages, of servants employed in husbandry; a bailiff or overseer was to have an allowance of 5s. a year for his clothing, a hind or principal servant 4s,, and an ordinary servant 3s, 4d., —sums equivalent respectively to 50s., 40s., and 33s. 4d. of our money (Henry). Already in the reign of Edward II. a proclamation had been issued

against the "'outrageous and excessive multitude of meats and dishes which the great men of the kingdom had used, and still used, in their castles," as well as "persons of inferior rank imitating their example, beyond what their stations required and their circumstances could afford a and the rule was laid down that the great men should have but two courses of flesh meat served up to their tables, and on fish days two courses of fish, each course consist- ing of but two kinds. In 1363, at the same time when costumes were regulated, it was enacted that the servants of gentlemen, merchants, and artificers should have only one meal of flesh or fish in the day, and that their other food should consist of milk, butter, and cheese. Similar Acts to those above mentioned were passed in Scotland also. In 1433 (temp. James I.), by an Act of a parliament which sat at Perth, the manner of living of all orders in Scotland was prescribed, and in particular the use of pies and baked meats, which had been only lately introduced into the country, was forbidden to all under the rank of baron. In 1457 (temp. James II.) an Act was passed against "sumptuous cleithing." A Scottish sumptuary law of 1621 was the last of the kind in Great Britain.

Ferguson and others have pointed out that ' 'luxury " is a term of relative import and that all luxuries do not deserve to be dis- couraged. Roscher has called attention to the fact that the nature of the prevalent luxury changes with the stage of social develop-

ment. He endeavours to show that there are three periods in the history of luxury,—one in which it is coarse and profuse ; a second in which it aims mainly at comfort and elegance ; and a third, proper to periods of decadence, in which it is perverted to vicious and unnatural ends. The second of these began, in modern times, with the emergence of the Western nations from the medieval period, and in the ancient communities at epochs of similar transi- tion. Roscher holds that the sumptuary legislation which regularly appears at the opening of this stage was then useful as promoting the reformation of habits. He remarks that the contemporary formation of strong Governments, disposed from the consciousness of their strength to interfere with the lives of their subjects, tended to encourage such

legislation, as did also the jealousy felt by the hitherto dominant ranks of the rising wealth of the citizen classes, who are apt to imitate the conduct of their superiors. It is certainly desirable that habits of wasteful expenditure and frequent and wanton changes of fashion should be discouraged. But such action belongs more properly to the spiritual than to the temporal power. In ancient, especially Roman, life, when there was a confusion of the two powers in the state system, sumptuary legislation was more natural than in the modern world, in which those powers have been in general really, though imperfectly, separated. How far regulation of this kind could, and might usefully, be carried out by a spiritual power under purely moral sanctions, and whether and to what extent social offices, private as well as public, should be discriminated by costume, are questions which need not be dis- cussed at present. Political economists are practically unanimous in their reprobation of the policy of legislative compulsion in these matters. In a well-known passage Adam Smith protests against the ‘‘impertinence and presumption of kings and ministers in pretending to watch over the economy of private people and to restrain their expense, being themselves always and without any exception the greatest spendthrifts in the society.” Yet he does not seem to have been averse to all attempts to influence through taxation the expenditure of the humbler classes. The modern taxes on carriages, coats of arms, hair-powder, playing-cards, &c., ought perhaps not to be regarded as resting on the principle of sumptuary laws, but only as means of proportioning taxation to the capacity of bearing the burden.

The loci classici on Roman sumptuary laws are Gellius, Noctes Attica, ii. 24, and Macrobius, Saturn., iii. 17. On the similar English legislation Henry’s History of Great Britain may usefully be consulted. One of the best extant treatments of the whole subject is that by Roscher, in his essay Ueber den

Luaus, republished in his Ansichten der Volkswirthschaft aus dem geschtchtlichen Standpunkte (3d ed., 1878). (J. K. I.)

SUMY, a district town of Little Russia, in the govern- ment of Kharkoff, situated 125 miles to the north-west of the chief town of the government, was founded in 1652 by Little Russian Cossacks. It is poorly built, chiefly of wood, but is an important centre for the trade of Great Russia with Little

Russia,—cattle and corn being sent to the north in exchange for various kinds of manufactured and grocery wares. It has a classical pro-gymnasium and atechnical school. Its inhabitants, who numbered 16,030 in 1884, are engaged in commerce, in various kinds of petty trades, and in agriculture.

SUN. In the article Astronomy (vol. ii. p. 768 sq.) the sun has been considered as a member of the solar system, and references are given to various discoveries which have been made from time to time relating to its physical and chemical constitution. In the present article we propose to consider the sun as a star, and to state as briefly as may be the views at present held regarding its structure, and subsequently to refer to the most recent observations dealing with the physics and chemistry of the various phenomena which are open to our study.

The sun as ordinarily visible to us, bounded by the photosphere, is only a small part of the real sun: from observations made during eclipses it is now known that outside the photosphere are—first, an envelope, namely the chromosphere, which is mainly composed of hydrogen, and outside this another envelope, called the corona, while there is evidence that outside these, and especially along the plane of the sun's equator, there is a considerable ex- tension of matter which may or may not be of the same nature as that of which the corona is composed.

These various parts of the solar economy have been examined by the spectroscope, and from this examination two widely divergent views have arisen.

645

According to the first view, the true atmosphere of the Extent sun 1s limited by the chromosphere, and the constituents of sun's of that atmosphere consist essentially of the vapours of the #™°- chemical elements recognized on the earth. It will be seen **P2**

that on this view the corona and the equatorial extension observed occasionally are merely solar appendages. In the other view the atmosphere of the sun is extended to the confines of the corona, the temperature naturally increasing as we descend ; and it is held that towards the

photosphere the temperature is so high that the chemical elements are dissociated into finer forms of matter, so that descending vapours get more simple, ascending vapours get more complex, and it is only in the cooler regions of the atmosphere that vapours resembling those of our ter- restrial elements can exist, while near the confines of the corona these vapours give place to solid particles and masses. Broadly stated, these divergent views have arisen from the application of two distinct methods of inquiry. In one method, light coming from every portion of the sun, and reflected, let us say, by a cloud into the spectroscope, gives us a spectrum full of absorption lines, and these lines are practically constant from year to year. In the other method, each minute portion of the solar economy has been examined bit by bit, and thus we have the spectrum of the spots, the spectrum of the promi- nences, the spectrum of the chromosphere, the spectrum of the corona, All these spectra vary enormously, not only among themselves, but from year to year; and, when we consider merely the spots and prominences, we may say that they vary from spot to spot and from prominence to prominence.

It will be obvious that the true mean density of the sun cannot be the same on the two hypotheses to which we have referred. If the atmosphere is practically limited by the photosphere, it has been found that the density of the sun is 1-444, water being taken as unity. If we include the corona in the sun’s atmosphere, and assume that its height is half a million of miles above the photo- sphere, then the volume of the sun is ten times that bounded by the photosphere, and the density is reduced to a tenth of the value given above.

We next proceed to discuss the chemical results obtained by the first method of inquiry to which reference has been made. For these results we are of course dependent upon comparisons of the lines given by various incandescent vapours with the Fraunhofer lines seen in the ordinary spectrum of the sun. If by such means complete evidence is afforded of the existence of one of our chemical elements in the sun, it is obvious that no information is given as to its precise locality ; further, if the high temperatures used in our laboratories to produce a spectrum should break up the molecules of the vapours as known to the chemist into finer ones, and if the temperature of the sun were to do the same, there would still be a

considerable similarity between the solar and the terrestrial spectrum of any one substance.

The first (A) of the following tables gives the substances present in the sun’s atmosphere according to (1) Kirchhoff, and (2) Angstrém and Thalén.

TABLE A.

Kirchhoff.

Sodium, Iron, Calcium, Magnesium, Nickel, Barium, Copper, Zinc.

Sodium, Iron, Calcium, Magnesium, Nickel, Chromium, Cobalt, Hydrogen, Manganese, Titanium.

Angstrom and Thalén.

A subsequent method of inquiry, which was capable of tracing merely a small quantity, gave the additional sub- stances shown in Table B.

Mean density.

Chemica constitu- tion of atmo- sphere.

SUN

(18) At and slightly after the minimum the lines are chiefly known lines of the various metals. (14) At and slightly after the maximum the lines are chiefly of

TABLE B. Elements whose Longest Lines coincide with Fraunhofer Lines.

Certainly | Aluminium, Strontium, Lead, Cadmium, Cerium, unknown origin. coincident. Uranium, Potassium, Vanadium, Palladium, _ (15) On the hypothesis under discussion the change indicates an Molybdenum. increased temperature in the spots at the sun-spot maximum, The general result is that in passing from minimum to Cha: Probabl Indium, Lithium,

Rubidium, Cesium, Bismuth c ‘ in s1 renal Tin, liver, Glaciumm Lathaedat eo aee maximum the lines most affected change from those of the ins

ordinary chemical elements to lines whose significance are spa

or Erbium. : : spec not known. The accompanying diagram represents graphic-

Spectra of spots.

When we come’to bring the chemical evidence together

which has been acquired by the examination of separate baat Se a eee, hale parts of the solar economy, we find, as has been already Fe.

hinted, that the apparent similarity in chemical structure

suggested by the foregoing tables entirely breaks down.

Not only is the chemical nature of each separate solar Ka phenomenon different from that of any other, but the 500 Substances

facts of observation are in all cases entirely new and

strange, so that very little light is obtained towards the

understanding of them from ordinary laboratory work. We will consider the chemistry of the chief solar features

in order. Chemistry of the Constituent Parts.

The spectrum of the spots differs from that of the ordinary surface of the sun chiefly by the widening of certain of the Fraunhofer lines in the spot spectrum,— some being excessively widened. The lines which are most widened change from spot to spot and from year to year. The most extensive sun-spot observations of this nature have been carried on in Kensington, and the conclusions derived from 700 observations on spots be- tween 1879 and 1885 are as follows :—

(1) The spot spectra are very unlike the ordinary spectrum of the sun: some Fraunhofer lines are omitted ; new lines appear; and the intensities of the old lines are changed.

(2) Only very few lines, comparatively speaking, of each chemical element, even of those which have many among the Fraunhofer lines, were seen to be most widened. It was asif ona piano only a few notes were played over and over again, always producing a different tune.

(8) An immense variation from spot to spot was observed be- tween the most widened lines seen in the first hundred observa-

p oS fs)

See ee Se oe ae ae os et Ss ss

= Le) o eS .: ° oO ——————S—S———————————— ——

ween a

| all

Titanu Nicke

tions. Change of quality or density will not account for this Most widened lines, F —b region, in sun-spot spectra, variation. To investigate this point the individual observations

of lines seen in the spectrum of iron were plotted out on strips of paper, and an attempt made to arrange them in order, but without success, for, even when the observations were divided into six groups, about half of them were left outstanding.

(4) If we consider the lines of any one substance, there is as much inversion between them as between the lines of any two metals. By the term “inversion” is meant that of any three lines, A, B, C, we may get A and B without C, A and C without B, B and C without A.

(5) Very few lines are strongly affected at the same time in the same spot, although a great many lines of the same substance may be affected, besides the twelve recorded as most widened on cach day.

(6) Many of the lines seen in the spots are visible at low temper- atures (some in the oxy-hydrogen flame), and none are brightened or intensified when we pass from the temperature of the electric arc to that of the electric spark.

(7) Certain lines of a substance have indicated rest, while other adjacent lines seen in the spectrum of the same substance in the same field of view have shown change of wave-length.

(8) A large number of the lines seen in spots are common to two or more substances with the dispersion employed.

(9) The lines of iron, cobalt, chromium, manganese, titanium, calcium, and nickel seen in the spectra of spots are usually coinci- dent with lines in the spectra of other metals with the dispersion employed, whilst the lines of tungsten, copper, and zinc seen in Spots are not coincident with lines in other spectra.

(10) The lines of iron, manganese, zinc, and titanium most fre- quently seen in spots are different from those most frequently seen in flames, whilst in cobalt, chromium, and calcium the lines seen in spots are the same as those seen in flames.

(11) Towards the end of the first series of investigations there appeared among the most widened lines a few which are not re- presented, so far as is known, among the lines seen in the spectra of terrestrial elements. This change took place when there was a marked increase in the solar activity.

(12) The most widened lines in sun

L spots change with the sun- spot period.

ally the disappearance of the lines of iron, nickel, and titanium and the simultaneous appearance of unknown lines in the spot spectra in passing

from minimum to maximum. In the region of the spectrum for which the curves are drawn six lines were recorded in each observa- tion, and therefore 600 in each series of 100 observations. In the curves the vertical ordinates represent not merely the number of individual lines recorded but the number of occurrences of lines of each substance. The dotted curve shows the variation in the frequency of the iron lines; at the minimum in 1879 practically all the 600 lines observed were iron lines; towards the end of 1881 they had dwindled down to 30; and during the three following years they fell to 10. The dot and dash curve shows a similar variation in the nickel lines, and the double line curve that of the titanium lines during the same periods. The continuous curve shows the gradual increase in the number of occurrences of unknown lines in passing from the minimum in 1879 to the maximum in 1884,

The chromosphere when quite quiescent merely gives Chromo: us a spectrum of hydrogen together with a line in the sphere

yellow, which, from its proximity to D, and D,, is called D;. The chromosphere is disturbed in two ways,—first, by prominences, of which more hereafter, and second, by the formation gradually and peacefully of domes, which are of no great height but sometimes extend over large areas and last for weeks. These last-named phenomena have been termed “wellings up,” the idea being that they were produced by the gradual uprise of vapours from below ; but it is clear that the same phenomena might be

mi- ces,

s U WN

produced by the very slow descent of matter from above. The spectrum of these higher portions of the chromo- sphere, whether produced from below or above, is more complicated than the ordinary one. The following table (C) ae the principal lines which have been recorded up to 1887 :—

1869. Hydrogen D, All lines.

1474 (53815°9) Unknown. Bieeo* Magnesium, 3 out of 7 (Thalén). B38 Nickel, oa. noe D, D Sodium, oa 8 eae } Barium, 2 ,, 26 Sree } Tron, PA ng

aK) (Angstrém).

5275

5233°6 5179°9 Unknown. 4921°3 5014‘8 bright

After 1869. £4471 ee Unknown. B—a 5019 Titanium, 1 out of 201 (Thalén). 7 } Caletum, 2 , 74

The first new line in this table is called in spectroscopic language 1474, because when this work was begun the only maps available were those made by Professor Kirch- hoff, and this particular line fell at 1474 on his scale. Since then these artificial scales have been discarded in favour of the natural one, which is given by the wave- lengths of light of different colours. In this the reference number of the same line is 5315-9, which represents the wave-length in ten-millionths of a millimétre of that particular quality of light. After this we observe three lines of magnesium, only 3 out of 7; next a line of nickel, one only, however, out of 34; then two lines of sodium, although we might naturally expect to get all the 8 lines ; then two lines of barium out of 26; andsoon. Almost all the other lines have origins which are absolutely un- known : that is to say, we never get them in our terrestrial laboratories, and never, therefore, are able to match the bright lines in the chromosphere of the sun with any chemical substance. In 1871 the sun was more active, and this activity resulted in the addition of new lines, all, however, absolutely unknown to us, except one, which represents a line in the spectrum of titanium ; but in that case we get one line out of 201 in exactly the same way as we get two only of iron out of 460. It is most important to note that practically none of the lines shown in table C are among those which are widened in spots.

The prominences are of two kinds—those which are relatively quiet and give almost exclusively the lines of hydrogen and those in which the motions are as a rule very violent. The spectrum of the latter class generally includes a large number of metallic lines; hence they are generally called metallic prominences. The first stage of metallic prominence is usually the appearance of three lines of the following wave-lengths—4943, 5031, 5315°9. As the prominence increases in magnitude and violence other lines are added, until at times the spectrum seems full of lines. The rate of uprush

of these prominences sometimes reaches 250 miles per second, or nearly a million

substance the number of lines seen usually in the promi- nences is very small.

_ The general conclusions which have been derived from a discussion of the prominence observations made by Profs. Tacchini and Rice, in connexion with the sun-spot observa- tions already mentioned, are as follows,

(1) The chromospheric and prominence spectrum of any one substance, except in the case of hydrogen, is unlike the ordinary spectrum of the substance. For instance, we get two lines of iron out of 460.

(2) There are inversions of lines in the same elements in the prominences, as there are inversions in the spots: in certain pro- Minences we see certain lines of a substance without others ; in certain other prominences we see the other lines without the first.

(3) Very few lines are strongly affected at once, as a rule, and a bia small proportion altogether,—smaller than in the case of spots.

(4) The prominences are less subject to sudden changes than spots, so far as lines of the same element are concerned.

(5) There is a change in the lines affected according to the sun’s spot period.

(6) The lines of a substance seen in the prominences are those which in our laboratories become considerably brightened when we change the are spectrum for the spark spectrum.

(7) None of the iron lines ordinarily visible in prominences are seen at the temperature of the oxy-hydrogen flame. Some of the oxy-hydrogen flame lines are seen in the spots, but none have ever been seen iu the prominences.

(8) A relatively large number of the lines ordinarily seen are of unknown origin.

(9) Many of the lines seen are not ordinarily seen amongst the Fraunhofer lines. Some are bright lines.

(10) As in the spots the H and K lines of calcium in the ultra- violet are always bright in the spot spectrum, the other lines of calcium and the other substances being darkened and widened, so it would appear that the lines H and K of calcium are always bright in the prominences in which the other lines are generally unaffected,

(11) Many of the lines are common to two or more elements with the dispersion which has bcen employed.

The spectrum of the inner corona indicates that it is Corona.

chiefly composed of hydrogen. All the hydrogen lines are seen in it, and up to acertain height the H and K lines of calcium, proving the presence either of calcium or of something that exists in calcium which we cannot get at in our temperature.

In the outer corona most of the hydrogen lines dis- appear ; but one, the green line F, remains for a consider- able height side by side with the 1474 line, indicating, as far as we can see where everything is so doubtful, that the constituents of the outer corona consist most probably of hydrogen in a cool form and the unknown stuff which gives the 1474 line. We also know that the outer corona contains particles which reflect the ordinary sunlight to us, because in 1871 Dr Janssen, and in 1878 Professor Barker and others, saw the dark Fraunhofer lines in the spectrum of the corona. We must imagine, therefore, that some part of that spectrum depends for its existence on solid particles which not only give a spectrum like that of the lime-light but have the faculty of reflecting to us the light of the underlying photosphere. It was also put beyond all question in the eclipse of 1882 in Egypt that this corona has another spectrum of its own. ‘There are bright bands in the spectrum, showing that with these additions it is not a truly continuous spectrum like that of the lime-light, and that its origin is therefore in all probability very complex.

Association and Distribution of Phenomena.

Observations of prominences, spots, and other pheno- Connex- mena which require continuous investigation have been ee, carefully made from day to day for several years, and!

miles an hour,— figures which convey an idea of the enormous energies involved. The lines seen in these pro- nena.

minences, although many are present in the spectra of the metallic elements, appear with greatly changed intensities : the lines seen brightest in the prominences are frequently dim lines in the terrestrial spectrum. Again it may be remarked that these are not the lines which are most widened in spots. In the case of the spectrum of any one

one conclusion arrived at is that when and where the (disturbed) spots are at the maximum the facule and metallic prominences are also at the maximum. When the maximum changes from north to south latitude in the spots it also changes from north to south in the metallic

Associa- tion of localized pheno- mena.

prominences and the facule. These observations, there- fore, establish not only an important connexion between spots, metallic prominences, and facule but also the fact of the wonderful localization of these phenomena upon the sun. The spots are never seen higher in latitude than

40° north or south, and they are invariably seen in smaller

quantity at the equator. Similarly, the facule and metal- lic prominences do not go much beyond 40° north or south, and their minima are also at the equator. But this does not hold good for prominences of the quiet sort and the veiled spots,—that is, spots without umbree or very highly developed penumbre. They extend from one pole of the sun to the other ; hence there must exist a great difference between metallic and quiet prominences and between dis- turbed and veiled spots.

Although the more important of these solar phenomena are limited to certain zones of the sun's surface, and al- though they vary very violently, they have a cycle or regular succession of changes, during which the particular zone of the sun on which they appear alters. When there is the smallest number of spots on the sun—that is to say, when there is a sun-spot mimimum—the spots that appear are seen in a high latitude, and the latitude decreases gradually until we arrive at the next minimum. Thus

there are two perfectly distinct spotted areas, one corre-

Period of solar quietude.

sponding to the end of the old period, the other to the beginning of the new period. At the maximum period of sun spots the latitude of the spot zone is about 15°. Activity in the solar atmosphere, therefore, appears to begin in a high latitude—say about 30° or 35°—and very soon reaches the maximum in about latitude 15°; then it gradually dies away until spots, metallic prominences, and facule—all of reduced intensity—cling pretty near to the solar equator, and at the same time we get a new wave of activity, beginning again in a high latitude. This asso- ciation of what may be called localized phenomena is quite in harmony with a similar association of phenomena which are more or less generally distributed over the whole sur- face of the sun.

Pores, which are in reality nothing but small sun spots, may occur in any part of the sun, and are always accom- panied by a slight waviness in the chromosphere. Veiled spots—spots which never attain full development—are also universally distributed over the sun's surface and are accompanied by small prominences (see below).

The main periodicity on the sun is that of about eleven years which elapses between two successive maxima or minima. When the sun is quietest, there are very few of the ordinary tree-like prominences visible, and there is an especial dearth of them near the poles and the equator. There are facule, but they do not present their usual bright appearance, and are confined to the regions between latitudes 20° N. and 20°S. On examining the chemical nature of the materials in the chromosphere at such a period by means of a spectroscope, we see only the four lines of hydrogen and the line D,, whose

chemical signifi- cance we do not know. Practically speaking, there are no spots visible and the disk appears to be perfectly pure, except the darkening towards the limb produced by absorption in the sun's atmosphere. As there are no spots, or only very small ones in high latitudes, it follows that there are no metallic prominences. The spectroscope searching right round the limb of the sun gathers no indications of violent action—no region giving many lines —nothing but the simple spectrum of hydrogen. Obser- vations and photographs of the corona taken at solar eclipses occurring at minimum spot periods indicate that at two different sun-spot minima the appearances pre- sented by the corona are very much alike. A drawing made during the eclipse of 1867, before the application of

photography to solar investigations, exhibits a similar appearance to an absolutely trustworthy photograph ob-

tained at the eclipse of 1878. At the minimum period the chief feature is a very great extension of the corona in the direction of the solar equator, and a wonderfully exquisite outcurving right and left at both poles. It is probable that the equatorial extension pictured in the above-mentioned photograph is, after all, only a part of a much more extended phenomenon, one going to almost incredible distances from the sun itself. At the eclipse of 1878 precaution was taken to shield the eye of the observer from the intense light of the inner corona, which is sometimes so bright as to be mistaken for the sun's limb, by erecting a screen which covered the moon anda. space 12' high around it. The observer, Professor New- comb, saw on both sides of the dark moon a tremendous extension of the sun's equator, far greater than that re- corded in the photographs taken at the same time. But the extended portions may have been so delicately illu- minated that they could not impress their image on the photographic plate during the time it was exposed, or that the light itself is poor in chemically active rays. The extension, as observed by the shielded eye, amounted to six or seven times the diameter of the dark moon. In a more favourable situation the same extension, but to a less extent, was observed without the aid of a screen. At a sun-spot minimum, therefore, there exists a great equa- torial extension of the corona east and west.

The time between the minimum and the maximum sun- Transi-

spot periods is three or four years, and chat from maxi- tion te

mum to minimum seven or eight years, so that the sun vail increases in activity much more rapidly than it afterwards period. decreases in passing to the next minimum. Starting, then, about half way between minimum and maximum, we find an increased activity in every direction. The quiet prominences, consisting of hydrogen, are more numerous, and the facule are brighter. If at this time we examine the spectrum of the chromosphere, we find hydrogen and D, are not the only constituents: we get other short lines, the chief being the three lines of mag- nesium 6, b,,6,. The spots are more numerous and are in a lower latitude, having moved from near 35° to about 25°. Metallic prominences now constantly accompany the spots; and the number of bright lines visible in their spectra gradually increases from month to month. These changes are accompanied by changes in the corona, which affect not only its form but also its spectrum. At the minimum spot period the corona gives an almost continu- ous spectrum, differing only in the presence of a few dark lines, and occasionally a few not very obvious bright lines, whence we conclude that at the minimum the corona is not entirely gaseous. In passing from the minimum to the maximum the spectrum is no longer continuous: bright lines begin to appear, emanating from the incandescent gaseous portions of the corona, and at the same time there is an increase in brilliancy. At this period there is no longer any remarkable equatorial extension, although here and there streamers of strange outlines occur. A drawing of the eclipse of 1858, a period between minimum and maximum, shows in middle latitudes, both north and south, four remarkable luminous cones standing with their bases on the chromosphere. The amount of light and structure in the corona has increased to such an extent that the beautiful double curves seen at the poles at the minimuni are now hidden in a strong radiance.

During the maximum period all the solar forces are Maxi- doing their utmost, and we see in prominences and spots, — and indeed in every outcome of action that we can refer ?™ to, indications of the most gigantic energies being at work, The ordinary prominences, instead of clinging to

SUN

the equator, now occur most frequently at the poles. The facule are brighter and are more widely distributed, and the chromosphere is richer in lines. The spots at this period occupy broad zones with mean latitudes of about 18° N. and 18° S. There are no spots near the poles and

We will now review the several phenomena in turn, beginning with the most widely distributed. Besides the general darkening near the edge of the sun's disk, Effects of

the surface is seen to be strangely mottled near the poles, near down- the equator, and in fact universally. Moreover, small black specks, rush.

none near the equator; but large spots, indicating a state of violent agitation, surrounded by gigantic faculez, follow each other in these zones. Each of these indicators of solar activity is accompanied by a prominence. At this time also we note the greatest velocities of down-rush in the vapours which form the spots and of up-rush in those which form the prominences. These changes are accom- panied by corresponding changes in the corona; and, fortunately, we have photographic records for two periods of maximum,—1871 and 1882. In these the streamers, instead of being limited to the equator or to mid-latitudes, exist in all latitudes, so that they practically extend to every part of the sun. Their directions, which may be called lines of force, are very varied, some being straight and some curved ; but it is difficult to unravel the appear- ances, because what we see are only projections of the actual things, and this is especially the case when the sun's pole is tipped towards or away from the earth to the greatest extent. In the eclipse of 1882 the corona in- dicated a more equal distribution of action than that of 1871, but the general result was the same.

After the maximum period there is a gradual falling off of all the various energies, the mean latitudes of the spots decreasing until they reach 8° N. and 8° S.; then another series of spots breaks out about 35° N. and 35° S. lat., and the cycle begins anew.

General Theory. It has been very generally accepted for some time that

- gun-spots are depressions in the photosphere, produced by

downfalls of cool material. The following sketch shows how, if we accept this view and also the hypothesis that the chemical elements are dissociated in the lower parts of the solar atmosphere, many of the more important solar phenomena may be explained and correlated.

We know that small meteorites in our own cold atmo- sphere are heated to incandescence by friction, that is, by the conversion of their kinetic energy into heat, and it is therefore not difficult to imagine that enormous masses, falling with great velocities through the sun's highly heated atmosphere, would be competent to give rise to such dis- turbances as those with which we are familiar on the sun's surface. This cool material is produced by the condensa- tion, in the upper cool regions of the sun's atmosphere, of the hot ascending vapours produced at the lower levels, and this is probably the main source of supply of spot- producing material. The faculee and other disturbances of the general surface do not precede but follow the formation of a spot, so that a spot may be considered as the initial disturbance of the photosphere in the region where it is observed. Large spots almost invariably appear first as little dots, frequently in groups, and then suddenly grow large. The little dots, according to the view of spot forma- tion now under discussion, are formed by small masses which precede the main fall. The heat produced by friction with the atmosphere and the arrested motion causes up- rushes of heated vapours, which eventually cool and con- dense, and afterwards fall to the photosphere and produce fresh disturbances. Down-rushes of cool material must take place all over the sun's surface, and, although the most violent results of such falls are restricted to certain regions, minor disturbances are distributed over the whole surface. These generally distributed phenomena are well known to be merely different degrees of the same kind of energies that operate in producing the more restricted ones.

calied granulations or pores, are everywhere visible, and spectro- Scopic examination shows that every one of these is a true spot. The fine mottlings frequently indicate the existence of powerful currents in that they take definite directions, sometimes in straight lines, sometimes in lines suggesting cyclonic swirls. In addition to the pores spots of a smudgy kind,

called veiled spots, are some- times seen, and it is probable that in such cases the force of the down-rush is insufficient to depress the photosphere to an extent competent to give rise to the ordinary dark spots. Some spots appear as large pores, that is, they consist of nothing but umbra ; others appear as well-developed veiled spots, consisting almost en- tirely of penumbra. The obvious large spots consisting of umbra and penumbra follow next in order of intensity, and, as has been previously pointed out, their appearance is confined to definite spot zones. Minute observation, therefore, shows that the whole of the sun's surface is traversed by down-rushes of varying intensities, from almost infinitesimal dimensions to the most powcrful that we can conceive. Some of the ordinary spots do not appear to be in any violent state of agitation: the penumbra and umbra are well de- fined, and the ridge of facule round such a spot does not indicate any disturbance by either lateral or convexion currents. Other spots, however, indicate very violent commotion, the penumbra and umbra being tremendously contorted and mixed up. In this kind of spot the disturbance often affects enormous areas of the sun's surface ; one spot in 1851 was 140,000 miles across, and the commotions were so great that they could be detected by eye ob- servation with the telescope. It appears as if the material carried in the first instance below the level of the photosphere produces a disturbance in the interior regions, which exhibits itself at the surface by an increase in the quantity and brilliancy of the sur- rounding facule. As a spot dies away it is replaced by facule, and these remain long after the spot has closed up. It often happens that new spots break out in the places occupied by pre- vious spots. The spot-producing material in its descent is dis- sociated either before or when it reaches the photosphere, and the rapidity and energy of the dissociation depend upon the velocity with which it travels. Gravitation is of course the main factor operating in the production of adown-rush. The velocity produced by gravitation in matter falling from great heights above the photosphere must be very great, and in consequence the kinetic energy of the moving mass must also be great. The motion is impeded by friction with the gases in the sun's atmosphere, and some or perhaps all the kinetic energy becomes heat. The heat thus developed must produce sudden expansions, and the initial down-rush is surrounded by up-rushes along the lines of least resistance. The effects of such down-rushes vary in degree accord- ing to the quantity of matter falling and the height from which it falls.

Equally too there are observed different degrees of the effects of Effects of All over the sun’s surface are seen domes of facule, up-rush.

up-rushes. don either separate or in groups, and there is indication that they are hotter than the rest of the surface, for the bright lines of hydrogen are seen to surmount them. It is probably owing to this that the chromosphere exhibits a billowy outline when under con- ditions of little disturbance. The next condition of increased action exhibits itself in the growing complexity of the chemical nature and of the form of the chromosphere. Occasionally the whole level of the chromosphere over a large region seems to be quietly raised, and observation proves this to be due to the intrusion of other vapours. There is either a gradual evaporation from the photosphere or a gradual vaporization or expansion of slowly fall- ing material over large regions, raising the level of the sea of hydro- gen. The chromosphere then appears to contain different layers, and the lower we descend towards the photosphere the less we know about the substances that exist there. The next degree of disturb- ance is seen in what are called the quiet prominences, which very frequently occur in regions where the beginning of a disturbance has been previously indicated by the appearance of domes and metallic strata. As arule the quiet prominences are not very high—not higher than 40,000 miles—and many of them resemble trees. They are almost entirely composed of hydrogen, or at least of a substance which gives some of the lines observed in the spectrum of hydrogen. Such a prominence grows upwards from the photosphere, being first of a small height, then getting higher and often broader, and finally a kind of condensation cloud may form at the top. The upward velocity of the gases forming these prominences is seldom very great. When a prominence disappears it does not follow that the substances of which it was composed have also disappeared, and there is evidence to show that the apparent disappearance is duc to a reduction of temperature. Thc most intense degree of action of an up-rush is exhibited by the metallic prominences, which

contain other substances in addition to hydrogen. They are seen mounting upwards to enormous heights with almost incredible velocities, and their ascent is accompanied by Violent lateral motions. Such prominences have been seen with an upward velocity of 250 miles a second, and of a height as great as 400,000 iniles, mixed up-rushes and down-rushes, and it may turn out eventually that this is the case in all the metallic prominences.

There is also evidence that some prominences consist of

» U

crease of temperature and possibly of the height of the solar atmo- sphere, due to the increased falls, will eventually become such that the descending materials are dissociated before they reach the photosphere. The production of spots must therefore gradually diminish until they finally disappear and end the spot cycle. At the minimum period, therefore, pores and veiled spots, due to less powerful energies, are at a maximum.

Records of eclipses, occurring when the sun was quietest, show Eclipse

ee A ccording to the gravitation -dissociation theory of the | that the condensing and condensed materials brought to the equator observa. i relations formation of spots, we ought to find that the effects, in Ac pene yee sa ite ae eee a fone = tons, Bane oe q produced by down-rushes of associated | Phere of the sun and are there collected, possibly in the form of a mena, Various degrees, p A Pee Ois s more or less regular ring the section of which widens towards the * matter are related to the effects, in like degrees, produced | sun, the widest part being within the boundary of the sun’s atmo- by the corresponding up-rushes of dissociated materials. pS a “i ae we : ring pas ae stable conditions, : ee ere will be no fall of material, an erefore no prominences or Comparing, then, the facts already stated, we have : spots. But suppose a disturbance caused, as oe by collisions, Effects of Down-rush. Effects of Up-rush. which most likely occur where the particles brought by the polar currents meet the surface of the ring. These particles then fall 1. Pores. 1, Domes. from where the ring first meets the atmosphere on to the photo- 2. Veiled spots. 4 ee EN) sphere, and form the first spots. Eclipse records show that this 3. Qniet spots. 3. Quiet prominences, action takes place about 30° lat. According to this view, there

4. Disturbed spots. 4. Metallic prominences. are usually no spots above 80° lat., because there is no ring, and because the atmosphere is too low to give the height of fall neces- It is a fact that the pores and domes are very closely associated sary to produce spots. There are no spots at the equator for the over all parts of the sun, and that the domes are most prominent | reason that the condensed matter has to pass for perhaps millions in places previously occupied by spots. All large spots are seen | of miles through strata of increasing temperature, and do not there- to be accompanied by metallic prominences, when observed at the | fore reach the photosphere before being dissociated. Accordingly, edge of the sun. There is also a strict relationship between the | we ought to find that at and after the maximum the corona is intensity of action going on in a spot and the associated prominence, | brighter and more truly a gaseous body on account of the increased so much so that a very violent change in a spot on the disk some- temperature. This is in strict accordance with eclipse observations times causes the bright prominence lines to become visible in its extending over twenty years. According to this view of the solar spectrum. The ordinary metallic prominences, as already stated, economy, the sun ought to give out more heat at a maximum than may consist of both ascending and descending material ; this will | ata minimum period, when the number of falls is greatest ; on this be best understood by likening the whole phenomenon to a splash. point see the article Murzorouoey (vol. xvi. p- 167 sq.). Physics We have previously scen that spots and metallic prominences are ‘ ofa very intimately connected as regards their occurrence in zones, and The Sun’s Place among the Stars. sun-spot this intimacy is easy to explain by supposing things to happen in The relative nearness of the sun makes it convenient as cycle. the way here set forth. The height of the solar atmosphere is

greater over the equator than at the poles; particles condensed on the outside at the poles have therefore a relatively small velocity when they fall into the photosphere, and are able to produce only pores or veiled spots. Over the equator the particles attain a higher velocity in their fall, but they also have to pass through a much greater thickness of atmosphere and undergo so much dissociation that on reaching the photosphere they are incom- petent to produce spots. In mid-latitudes, therefore, the falls of condensed particles should be most effective in producing spots. In this way

the absence of spots at the poles and equator is ex- plained,—one of the best-known facts of solar physics. The falls

a type of those stars which on account of their great dis- tance are less accessible to minute observation. If the sun were at a greater distance, its spectrum would become much fainter and would not show so much detail, but its general character would not be altered: its dark lines would not become bright ones. In the atmospheres of the various members of the solar system, including the earth, there is a very considerable absorption of blue light. We know also that this condition applies to the sun.

The light we receive under present conditions we cal] Star ab-

of the condensed particles, or meteoric matter, into the sun increase S = & 4 white ; but, if its own atmosphere and ours were removed Sorption

the temperature of the atmosphere over the spots and prominences which they produce, so that other falls in the same region are not

of light,

effective in producing spots on account of the increased dissociation which they must undergo before reaching the photosphere. If the material condensed in those regions is to produce a spot, it must be removed to some place where it can reach the photosphere with- out being dissociated. Hence from the first appearance of spots after a stn-spot minimum there is a continual change of latitude. From minimum to minimum there is a regular decrease in the latitude of spots; hence it is clear that there must be currents from the poles towards the equator in the upper atmosphere of the sun, causing the removal of condensed materials to lower and relatively cooler latitudes. Assuming the existence of such currents, we ought to find that successive spots have a tendency to form along the same meridians, for the polar currents would carry the con- densed materials to lower latitudes in a nearly meridional direction. Examination of sun-spot records for 1878-79 shows that there is a marked tendency for spots to follow each other in meridians. The existence of such currents is further supported by the outcurving of tlie corona at the solar poles as observed in several eclipses. If these currents exist, there must also be compensating currents towards the

poles in the lower parts of the sun’s atmosphere, carrying incandescent vapours along with them. Small prominences often ive indication of motion towards the poles which such currents examination of sun-spot records also shows the proper motion of the spots is polewards. existence of these currents has not been definitely proved, there is strong evidence that there exists some circulation of this nature in the solar atmosphere. When once the falls have commenced, if this hypothesis is true, they should rapidly increase in intensity, for, as it is the falls which Increase the temperature of the lower atmosphere by the conversion

or became so changed as to no longer absorb blue light, the sun would appear blue. If, on the other hand, the blue absorption were enormously increased, so that it extended into the green, the sun would appear red, be- cause every other kind of light would be absorbed. If two kinds of absorption—one in the red, the other in the blue —-were going on together, as they sometimes do in our laboratories, the sun would then appear green. Although these changes are not of actual occurrence in the sun, we find each of these conditions represented among the stars. In the coloured stars, which may be red, green, or blue, we are simply dealing with this kind of absorption pheno- mena. This difference in the conditions of absorption in the stars, however, is by no means the most important one: the difference of temperature as indicated by the spectrum is of primary importance. As in our Jabora- tories the spectrum of a substance is changed by a varia- tion of temperature, and always in a regular way, so the nature of a star’s spectrum furnishes a clue to its probable state as regards heat. For example, we may submit carbon vapour to a low temperature, and we shall then obtain what is called a spectrum of flutings; on increasing the temperature, the flutings are replaced wholly or partially by lines, according to the amount of increase. From hundreds of observations of this kind, both on carbon and other substances, it may be safely inferred that a fluted spectruni indicates a lower temperature than a line spectrum. There are doubtless substances in the sun’s atmosphere which, although represented by lines in its

Solar ra- diation and spectra.

| Stellar | spectra.

SU N—

spectrum, can be submitted to low conditions of tempera- ture so as to give fluted spectra. There can be little doubt, therefore, that a cooling of the sun would be followed by a change in its spectrum, which would cease to be one of lines and become one of flutings. While the sun was acquiring its present intensely heated state, it must at some period of its history have been in a condition of temperature in which its spectrum would consist of flut- ings, and similarly it must give a fluted spectrum at some future period when it has further cooled.

The ordinary Fraunhofer spectrum gives the sum total of the line absorptions of all the various layers in the sun's atmosphere, but by exanlining individual layers just off the edge of the disk we can single out the absorption lines produced by the lower layers. Thus the absorption produced by the hottest layer, the chromosphere— hottest because nearest the photosphere—is indicated by its usually simple radiation spectrum when examined in this way. If the sun were made hotter, therefore, the gases which give the simple chromosphere spectrum would have a larger share in the absorp- tion, and the niain features of the Fraunhofer spectrum would be the few dark lines corresponding to these bright ones. This being so, a star which gives practically the same absorption spectrum as the chromosphere of the sun must be hotter than the average temperature of the sun's atmosphere,—as hot as the hottest part of it. The bright central part of the sun is not very much less than the whole volume, butit isso much hotter that it gives out thousands of times more light than the atmosphere. The cool vapours in the atmosphere give the dark Fraunhofer lines by their absorption, and even if they are hot enough to give bright lines when seen on the sun's edge they can only reduce the intensity of the dark lines. Here the diffcrence of area between the disk representing the cen- tral mass and that representing the sun's atmosphere is very small, and, the light from the central mass being so much more intense, we do not ordinarily see the evidences of radiation, but, in place of it, the absorption of the atmosphere. If, however, we suppose the central mass to be very small compared with its atmosphere, the total radiation of the atmosphere may be sufficiently powerful to overcome the intensity of the light from the smaller central part, so that the spectrum of such a star would contain bright lines from the exterior mixed up with the dark lines from the interior. The spectrum of a star, therefore, docs not always depend upon its total diameter, but upon the

relative diameters of the central mass and the outer atmosphere. It is a question of sectional areas.

Observations of the spectra of a large number of stars show that, although there is a great difference between individual spectra, they still admit of arrangement in family groups. While some stars give line absorption spectra, others give fluted spectra, and

supposed to be due to new combinations of the original substances, rendered possible by a reduction of temperature ; that is, new lines are formed at the expense of the old ones. The hydrogen lines are very prominent in class II., though not so intense as in class I. The stars of these two classes may be grouped together and called hydrogen stars. Stars belonging to class III. exhibit unmistakable evidence of carbon vapour. Sodium and ironare also often present. All the stars in this class, of which fifty-five are known, agree in having a reddish tint. They are usually faint, and seldom exceed the fourth magnitude. There is evidence of the existence of carbon vapour In the sun's atmosphere, depending upon one solitary fluting, and hence stars of this class probably represent what the sun would become if it were cooled. Class III. therefore represents a lower temperature than classes II. and I. Class IV., containing 475 known members, includes the stars giving fluted spectra with the darkest edges of the flutings towards the violet. The origin of the substances of which they are mainly composed is not at present known. All the principal bands are absolutely unchanging in position, although there is considerable variation in the inten- sities. The bands in the spectrum appear to result from the rhythmical vibrations of the same substance, probably a complex one. Besides this unknown substance, there are also metallic lines in many of the stars, the complete spectrum consisting of the banded spectrum superposed upon the line spectrum. 'The metallic lines are generally seen in the spectra of sodium, iron, magnesium, or calcium ; the hydrogen lines are very inconspicuous.

These considerations suggest the question of stellar evolution. Stellar Comets and nebule are now supposed to consist of clouds of stones evolu- or small meteorites, and the difference between their spectra may tion.

be due to a difference of temperature, that of the nebule being highest. Comets ordinarily give the spectrum of carbon, and, if we imagine such cometary matter to surround a central bright nucleus, we have the spectrum of a star of the third class. On the nebular hypothesis, starting with ordinary cometary materials, the small masses resulting from the first condensations gravitate towards each other, and their energy becomes heat by the retardation of their motion on coming in contact. As soon as the condensed mass is hot enough, it gives a fluted spectrum, like stars of the third class. As the energy of condensation increases, the temperature is raised and the spectrum passes from that of a third class star to that of a second class star, and then to that of a first class star. On the subsequent cooling of what is then a star the successive stages will be again passed through in inverse order. According to this view, we ought to find fewer hydrogen stars than carbon stars, because every star is a carbon star at two periods of its existence, but a hydrogen star only once. On this point, however, nothing definite can be stated, as the stars of classes I. and II. have, in con- sequence of their greater brightness, received more attention than carbon stars.

rh maecice buht nes, et anced In 1866 a star of the tenth magnitude in the constellation New and a el pee pen ea eeyreggsbeeony ciently arrange Corona suddenly flashed up into a star of nearly the first magni- variable

if tude ; its spectrum as a tenth magnitude star differed from its stars.

Example. Stars whose spectra consist of a few ee thick absorption lines. i a Lyre. Stars whose spectra consist of a large} Sun, Capella Class Il. ..... { doen of fine absorption lines. ; &e. a? ars with fluted spectra, the maxima * Class I1I…..... { oe the He athe 3 towards the red. t 152 Schj. © ars with fluted spectra, the maxima ence Class IV. ..... being towards the blue. 8 a Orionis. Stars whose spectra contain bright lines, Classi …... ie of hydrogen, (6) of unknown sub- } B Lyre. stances.

This classification probably represents the stars in order of tem- perature, class I. being the hottest.

Although different stars may contain lines of identical wave- lengths, the thickness of these lines is very liable to variation in passing from one star to another. The thickest lines in the solar spectrum are H and K in the ultra-

violet, both of equal thickness ; on passing to some of the stars, however, we find H broad with K thin, and in others H without K. This is similar to what occurs in our laboratories when we study the spectrum of calcium, the substance which gives the lines H and K: at the temperature of the electric arc the blue line of calcium is very intense, while H and K are scarcely visible; but on passing to a higher temperature, that of the induction spark, H and K appear. In those stars which give H without K, namely, those in class I., it is probable that there isa very high temperature competent to separate H and K, just as H and K were conjointly separated from the blue line. A further indication of high temperature in the stars belonging to class I. is that the few lines which do occur in their spectra are almost the exact counterparts of those which occur in the hottest layer of the sun, hydrogen lines being especially prominent. The passage from class I. to class II. is by no means sudden: there are stars with every gradation of broad and fine lines. It will readily be understood that the stars of class II. are probably not so hot as those belonging to class I., and the change in the spectrum is

spectrum as a first or second,—the latter containing bright lines of hydrogen. In about a month it again became a tenth magni- tude star and appeared as if nothing had happened toit. There can be little doubt that here there was a sudden increase of tem- perature, as evidenced by the spectrum becoming like that of the chromosphere of the sun. ‘Ten years afterwards a new star appeared in Cygnus; it had never been seen before, but appeared suddenly as a third or fourth magnitude star. In about a year it gradually dwindled down to the tenth magnitude, and its spectrum became that ofa nebula. This mass was ata stellar distance, but it cannot be considered to have been a large mass of incandescent material, for in that case it would have taken millions of years, instead of only one, to cool down to the tenth magnitude. A possible explanation of most of the new and variable stars is to be found in the meteorite theory: the innumerable components of one group of meteorites colliding with those of another group would be competent to give out light sufficient to make the whole appear asa star. Each meteorite gives only a little light, but the total must be very considerable. The new star in Corona, and similarly all new stars, may have becn the result of a collision of two groups of meteorites. They die out quickly because the com- ponents are small and far apart. The sudden

increase in the bril- liancy of the star in Cygnus would be produced by a collision of a meteor swarm with the star already existing. (Jon Neate)

SUN-BIRD, a name more or less in use for many years,! and now generally accepted as that of a group of

1 Certainly since 1826 (cf Stephens, Gen. Zoology, xiv. pt. 1, p. 229). Swainson (Nat. Hist. and Classif. Birds, i. p. 145) says they are ‘‘so called by the natives of Asia in allusion to their splendid and shining plumage,” but gives no hint as to the nation or language wherein the name originated. By the French they have been much longer known as ‘‘Souimangas,” from the Madagascar name of one of the species given in 1658 by Flacourt as Soumangha.

over 100 species of small birds, but when or by whom it was first applied is uncertain. Most of them are remark- able for their gaudy plumage, and, though those known to the older naturalists were for a long while referred to the genus Certhia (TREE-CREEPER, 9.2.) or some other group, they are now fully recognized as forming a valid Family Wee- tarinudx, from the name Nectarinia invented in 1811 by Iliger. They inhabit the Ethiopian, Indian, and ~~Aus~~ tralian Regions,! and, with some notable exceptions, the species mostly have but a limited range. They are con- sidered to have their nearest allies in the Meliphagide (of. Honry-rater, vol. xii. p. 139) and the members of the genus Zosterops; but their relations to the last require further investigation. Some of them are called “‘ Humming-birds” by Anglo-Indians and colonists, but with that group, which, as before indicated (Hum- MING-BIRD, vol. xii. p. 357), belongs to the Picariz, the Sun-birds, being true Passeres, have nothing to do. Though part of the plumage in many Sun-birds gleams with metallic lustre, they owe much of their beauty to feathers which are not lustrous, though yet almost as vivid,? and the most wonderful combination of the brightest colours—scarlet, purple, blue, green, and yellow—is often seen in one and the same bird. One group, however, is dull in hue, and but for the presence in some of its mem- bers of yellow or flame-coloured precostal tufts, which are very characteristic of the Family, might at first sight be thought not to belong here. Graceful in form and active in motion, Sun-birds flit from flower to flower, feeding

chiefly on small insects which are attracted by the nectar ; but this is always done while perched, and never on the wing as is the habit of Humming-birds. The extensible tongue, though practically serving the same end in both groups, is essentially different in its quasi-tubular structure, and there is also considerable difference between this organ in the Vectariniidz and the Meliphagide? The nests of the Sun-birds, domed with a penthouse porch, and pensile from the end of a bough or leaf, are very neatly built. The eggs are generally three in number, of a dull white covered with confluent specks of greenish grey.

The Wectariniide form the subject of a sumptuous Monograph by Capt. Shelley (4to, London, 1876-1880), in the coloured plates of which full justice is done to the varied beauties which these gloriously arrayed little beings display, while, almost every available source of information having been consulted and the results embodied, the text leaves little to be desired, and of course supersedes all that had before been published about them. This author divides the Family into three subfamilies :—Neodrepanine, consisting of a single genus and species peculiar to Mada- gascar; Nectariniing, containing 9 genera, one of which, Cinnyris, has more than half the number of species in the whole group; and Arachnotherine (sometimes known as “ Spider-hunters ”), with 2 genera including 11 species— all large in size and plain in hue. To these he also adds the genus Promerops,4 composed of 2 species of South- African birds, of very different appearance, and the affinity of which to the rest can as yet hardly be taken as proved, According to Mr Layard, the habits of the Cape Promerops, its mode of nidification, and the character of its eggs are very unlike those of the ordinary Wectariniidz. Tn the

- OF Gadow, Proc, XxViii, > Of. Gadow, Proc. Zool Societ i c. : Y, 1883, pp. 62-69, pl. xvi. hk According to Brisson (Ornithologie, il, p. 460), this name was the invention of Réaumur. It seems to have become Anglicized.

SU N— British Museum Catalogue of Birds (vol. ix. pp. 1-126, and 291) Dr Gadow has more recently treated of this Family,

reducing the number of both genera and species, though adding a new genus discovered since the publication of

pyga helias of ornithology, cised systematists and one ‘whose proper place can scarcely yet be said to have been determined to every- body’s satisfaction.

&c., de Surinam, ii. p. 192), but was vague and meagre. however, it was satisfactorily figured and

SUN

Capt. Shelley’s work. (A. N.) SUN-BITTERN, otherwise the CaurAtx,® the Eury- a bird that has long exer-

According to Pallas, who in 1781 gave (N. nérdl. Beytriige, ii. pp. 48-54, pl. 3) a good description and fair figure of it, calling it the “Surinamische Sonnenreyger,” Ardea helias, the first author to

notice this form was Fermin, whose account of it, under the name

of ‘‘Sonnenvogel,” was published at Amsterdam in 1759 (Deser., In 1772, described in Rozier’s Observations sur la Physique, &c. (v. pt. 1, p- 212, pl. 1), as the Petit

Paon des roseaux—by which name it was known in Cayenne.® A

Fj S —Seal Ni Ss os.

3 _

FL

Fig. 1.—Sun-Bittern (Zurypyga helias).

(Fi. (H. N., Oiseaux, viii. pp. 169, 170, pl. xiv.), who, calling it “Le Caurale ou petit Paon des

few years later D’Aubenton figured it in his well-known series Znl., 782), and then in 1781 came Buffon

roses,” announced it as hitherto undescribed, and placed it among the Rails. In the same year appeared the above-cited paper by Pallas, who, notwithstanding his remote abode, was better informed as to its history than his great contemporary, whose ignorance, real or affected, of his fellow-countryman’s priority in the field is inexplicable ; and it must have been by inadvertence that, writing “roses” for ‘‘roseaux,” Buffon turned the colonial name from one that had a good meaning into nonsense. In 1783 Boddaert, equally ignorant of what Pallas had done, called it Scolopax solaris,’ and in referring it to that genus he was followed by Latham (Synopsis, ill. p. 156), by whom it was introduced to English readers as the “Caurale Snipe.” Thus within a dozen years this bird was referred to three perfectly distinct genera, and in those days genera meant much more than they do now. Not until 1811 was it recognized as forming a genus of its own. This was done by Illiger, whose appellation Zurypyga has been generally accepted.

The Sun- Bittern is about as big as a small Curlew, but with much shorter legs and a rather slender, slightly decurved bill, blunt at the tip. The wings are moderate, broad, and rounded, the tail rather long and broad. The head is black with a white stripe over and another under each eye, the chin and throat being also white. The rest of the plumage is not to be described in a limited space otherwise than generally, being variegated with black, brown, chest- nut, bay, buff, grey, and white—so mottled, speckled, and belted ee

> A name, says Buffon, intended to mean Réle a queue, that is, a tailed Rail.

§ This figure and description were repeated in the later issue of this work in 1777 (i. pp. 679-681, pl. 1).

7 Possibly he saw in the bird’s variegated plumage a resemblance to the Painted Snipes, Rhynchexa. His specific name shows that he must

have known how the Dutch in Surinam called it,

SUN—SUN

either in wave-like or zigzag forms as somewhat to resemble certain moths. The bay colour forms two conspicuous patches on each wing, and also an

antepenultimate bar on the tail, behind which is asubterminal band of black. The irides are red; the bill is greenish olive ; and the legs are pale yellow. As in the case of most South- American birds, very little is recorded of its habits in freedom, except that it frequents the muddy and wooded banks of rivers, feeding on small fishes and insects. In captivity it soon becomes tame, and has several times made its nest and reared its young (which, when hatched, are clothed with mottled down ; Proc. Zool. Society, 1866, p. 76, pl. ix. fig. 1) in the Zoological Gardens (London), where examples are generally to be seen and their plaint- ive piping heard. It ordinarily walks with slow and precise steps, keeping its body in a horizontal position, but at times, when ex- cited, it will go through a series of fantastic performances, spreading its broad wings and tail so as to display their beautiful markings. This species inhabits Guiana and the interior of Brazil; but in Colombia and Central America occurs a larger and somewhat differently coloured form which is known as Z. major.

For a long while it seemed as if Hurypyga had no near ally, but, on the colonization of New Caledonia by the French, an extremely curious bird was found inhabiting most parts of that island, to which it is peculiar. This the natives called the Kagu, and it is

O° pa EG I, Fic. 2.—Kagu (Rhinochetus jubatus).

the Rhinochetus jubatus of ornithology. Its original describers, MM. Jules Verreaux and Des Murs, regarded it first asa Heron and then asa Crane (Rev. ct Mag. de Zoologie, 1860, pp. 439-441, pl. 21; 1862, pp. 142-144); but, on Mr George Bennett sending two live examples to the Zoological Gardens, Mr Bartlett quickly de- tected in them an affinity to Hurypyga (Proc. Zool. Society, 1862, pp. 218, 219, pl. xxx.), and in due time anatomical investigation showed him to be right. The Kagu, however, would not strike the ordinary observer as having much outward resemblance to the Sun-Bittern, of which it has neither the figure nor posture. It is rather a long-legged bird, about as large as an ordinary Fowl, walk- ing quickly and then standing almost motionless, with bright red bill and legs, large cyes, a full pendent crest, and is generally of a light slate-colour, paler beneath, and obscurely barred on its longer wing-coverts and tail with a darker shade. It is only when it spreads its wings that these are

seen to be marked and spotted with white, rust-colour, and black, somewhat after the pattern of those of the Sun-Bittern. Like that bird too, the Kagu will, in moments of excitement, give up its ordinary placid behaviour and execute a variety of violent gesticulations, some of them even of a more extraordinary kind, for it will dance round, holding the tip of its tail or of one of its wings in a way that no other bird is known todo. Its habits in its own country were described at some length in 1863 by M. Jouan (Mém. Soc. Sc. Nat. Cherbourg, ix. pp. 97 and 235),and in 1870 by M. Marie (Actes Soc. Linn. Bordeaux, Xxvil. pp. 323-326), the last of whom predicts the speedy extinction of this interesting form, a fate foreboded also by the statement of Messrs Layard (Ibis, 1882, pp. 534, 535) that it has nearly disappeared from the neighbourhood of the more settled and inhabited parts. The internal and external structure of both these re- markable forms has been treated in much detail by Prof. Parker in the Zoological Proceedings (1864, pp. 70-72) and Transactions (vi. pp. 501-521, pls. 91, 92; x. pp. 307-310, pl. 54, figs. 7-9), as also by Dr Murie in the latter work

(vii. pp. 465-492, pls, 56, 57), and the result of their

researches shows that they, though separable as distinct Families, Zurypygide and Rhinochetidz, belong to Prof. Huxley's Geranomorphex, of which they must be deemed the relics of very ancient and generalized types. Their inter-relations to the Rallide (Ratu, vol. xx. p. 222), Psophiide (TRUMPETER, g.v.), and other groups there is not space here to consider, any more than there is to specu- late on the bearings of their geographical position. It is only to be remarked that the eggs of both Zurypyga and Rhinochetus have a very strong Ralline appearance— stronger even than the figures published (Proc. Zool. Society, 1868, pl. xii.) would indicate. (ALN, SUNDA ISLANDS, the collective name of the whole series of islands in the East Indian Archipelago which extend from the peninsula of Malacca to New Guinea. They are divided into the Great Sunda Islands— z.c., Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Banca, and Billiton, with their adjacencies—and the Little Sunda Islands, of which the more important are Bali, Lombok, Sumbawa, Flores, Sandalwood Island, Adanara, Solor, Savu, Pantar, &e. Sunpa Srrair is the channel separating Sumatra from Java, and

uniting the Indian Ocean with the Java Sea. It is 15 miles broad between the southmost point of Sumatra and the town of Anjer in Java. Right in the middle is the low-lying well-wooded island of Dwars in den Weg, otherwise Middle Island or Sungian. In 1883 Sunda Strait was the scene of the most terrific results of the eruption of Krakatoa, a volcano on the west side of the strait. The greater part of the island of Krakatoa was destroyed and two new islands, Steers Island and Calmeyer Island, were thrown up.
SUNDARBANS. See Ganass, vol. x. p. 68. SUNDAY, or Tue Lorp's Day (7) Tot HAlov tpépa, dies Solis; 7 kvpiaxt ypépoa., dies dominica, dies dominicus'). According to all the four evangelists, the resurrection of our Lord took place on the first day of the week after His crucifixion (7) pia [trav] caBBdtrwv: Matt. xxviii. 1, Mark xvi. 2, Luke xxiv. 1, John xx. 1; zpéty caBBdrov: Mark xvi. 9), and the Fourth Gospel describes a second appear- ance to His disciples as having occurred eight days after- wards (John xx. 26). Apart from this central fact of the Christian faith, the Pentecostal outpouring of the Spirit, seven weeks later, described in Acts 1i., cannot have failed to give an additional sacredness to the day in the eyes of the earliest converts.2, Whether the primitive church in Jerusalem had any special mode of observing it in its daily meetings held in the temple (Acts ii. 46) we cannot tell ; but as there is no doubt that in these gatherings the re- currence of the Sabbath was marked by appropriate Jewish observances, so it is not improbable that the worship on the first day of the week had also some distinguishing feature. Afterwards, at all events, when Christianity had been car- ried to other places where from the nature of the case daily meetings for worship were impossible, the first day of the week was everywhere set apart for this purpose. Thus Acts xx. 7 shows that the disciples in Troas met weekly on the first day of the week for exhortation and the break- ing of bread; 1 Cor. xvi. 2 implies at least some observ- ance of the day; and the solemn commemorative character it had very early acquired is strikingly indicated by an incidental expression of the writer of the Apocalypse (1. 10), who for the first time gives it that name ("the Lord's day") by which it is almost invariably referred to by all writers of the century immediately succeeding apostolic

1 The Teutonic and Scandinavian nations adopt the former designa- tion (Sunday, Sonntag, Séndag, &c.), the Latin nations the latter (Dimanche, Domenica, Domingo, &c.).

2 From an expression in the Epistle of Barnabas (c. 15), it would almost seem as if the ascension also was believed by some to have taken place on a Sunday.

‘in respect of a feast day or a new moon or a Sabbath” (Col. ii. 16 ; cf. Rom. xiv. 5, Gal. iv. 10, 11), they usually explained the “Sabbath day” of the commandment as meaning the new era that had been introduced by the advent of Christ, and interpreted the rest enjoined as mean- ing cessation from sin. But, when a series of imperial decrees had enjoined with increasing stringency an ab- stinence from labour on Sunday, it was inevitable that the Christian conscience should be roused on the subject of the Sabbath rest also, and in many minds the tendency would be such as finds expression in the Apostolic Constitutions (viii. 33): “Let the slaves work five days; but on the Sabbath day and the Lord’s day let them have leisure to go to church for instruction in piety.” There is evidence of the same tendency in the opposite canon (29) of the council of Laodicea (363), which forbids Christians from Judaizing and resting on the Sabbath day, and actu- ally enjoins them to work on that day, preferring the Lord’s day and so far as possible resting as Christians. About this time accordingly we find traces of a disposi- tion in Christian thinkers to try to distinguish between a temporary and a permanent element in the Sabbath day precept ; thus Chrysostom (10th homily on Genesis) dis- cerns the fundamental principle of that precept to be that we should dedicate one whole day in the circle of the week and set it apart for exercise in spiritual things. The view that the Christian Lord’s day or Sunday is but the Chris- tian Sabbath deliberately transferred from the seventh to the first day of the week does not indeed find categorical expression till a much later period, Alcuin being apparently the first to allege of the Jewish Sabbath that “ejus ob- servationem mos Christianus ad diem dominicam compe- tentius transtulit” (compare Drcaxoaus, vol. vii, p le But the subjoined sketch will incidentally show how soon and to how large an extent this idea has influenced the course of civil legislation on the subject.

times.!_ Among the indications of the nature and univer- sality of its observance during this period may be men- tioned the precept in the

(recently discovered) Teaching of the Apostles (c. 14): ‘And on the Lord’s day of the Lord (kara Kupiakyv Kupiov) come together and break bread and give thanks after confessing your transgressions, that your sacrifice may be pure.” Ignatius (Ad Magn., c. 9) speaks of those whom he addresses as “no longer Sab- batizing, but living in the observance of the Lord’s day (kara kupiaxiy (Gvres), on which also our life sprang up again.” Eusebius (H/.Z., iv. 23) has preserved a letter of Dionysius of Corinth (175 a.p.) to Soter, bishop of Rome, in which he says: “To-day we have passed the Lord’s holy day, in which we have read your epistle” . and the same historian (Zf.Z., iv. 26) mentions that Melito of Sardis (170 a.p.) had written a treatise on the Lord’s day. Pliny’s letter to Trajan in which he speaks of the meetings of the Christians “on a stated day ” need only be alluded to. The first writer who mentions the name of Sunday as applicable to the Lord’s day is Justin Martyr ; this designation of the first day of the week, which is of heathen origin (see SaBparTu, vol. xxi. p. 126), had come into general use in the Roman world shortly before Justin wrote. The passage is too well known to need quotation (Apol. i., 67) in which he describes how “on the day called Sunday” town and country Christians alike gathered to- gether in one place for instruction and prayer and charitable offerings and the distribution of bread and wine ; they thus meet together on that day, he says, because it is the first day in which God made the world, and because Jesus Christ on the same day rose from the dead.

As long as the Jewish Christian element continued to have any prominence or influence in the church, a tendency more or less strong to observe Sabbath as well as Sunday would of course persist. Eusebius (H.Z., iii. 27) men- tions that the Ebionites continued to keep both days, and there is abundant evidence from Tertullian onwards that so far as public worship and abstention from fasting are concerned the practice was widely spread among the Gentile churches. Thus we learn from Socrates (H.Z., vi. c. 8) that in his time public worship was held in the churches of Constantinople on both days ; the Apostolic Canons (can. 66 [65]) sternly prohibit fasting on Sunday or Saturday (ex- cept Holy Saturday); and the injunction of the Apostolic Constitutions (v. 20; cp. ii. 59, vii. 23) is to “hold your solemn assemblies and. rejoice every Sabbath day (except- ing one), and every Lord’s day.” In the primitive church the social conditions were such as hardly to admit of the question being raised, in Gentile circles at any rate, as

to the manner in which either the Lord’s day or the Sabbath ought further to be kept after the duty of congregational worship (usually early in the morning or late in the even- ing) had been discharged ; but the whole matter was placed on an entirely new footing when the civil power, by the constitution of Constantine mentioned below, began to legislate as to the Sunday rest. The fourth command- ment, holding as it doesa conspicuous place in the decalogue, the precepts of which could not for the most part be re- garded as of merely transitory obligation, had never of Course escaped the attention of the fathers of the church ; but, remembering the liberty given in the Pauline writings

Law relating to Sunday.

The earliest recognition of the observance of Sunday as a legal duty is a constitution of Constantine in 321 A.D., enacting that all courts of justice, inhabitants of towns, and workshops were to be at rest on Sunday (venerabili die Solis), with an exception in favour of those engaged in agricultural labour. This was the first of a long series of imperial constitutions, most of which are incor- porated in the Code of Justinian, bk. iii. tit. 12 (De Feriis). The constitutions comprised in this title of the code begin with that of Constantine, and further provide that emancipation and manumis- sion were the only legal proceedings permissible on the Lord’s day (die dominieo), though contracts and compromises might be made between the parties where no intervention of the court was necessary. Pleasure was forbidden as well as business. No spectacle was to be exhibited in a theatre or circus. If the emperor’s birthday fell on a Sunday, its celebration was to be postponed. The seven days before and after Easter were to be kept as Sundays. In Cod. i. 4, 9, appears the humane regulation that prisoners were to be brought up for examination and interrogation on Sunday. On the other hand, Cod. iii. 12, 10, distinctly directs the torture of robbers and pirates, even on Easter Sunday, the divine pardon (says the law) being hoped for where the safety of society was thus assured. After the time of Justinian the observance of Sunday appears to have become stricter. In the West Charlemagne forbade labour of any kind. A century later in the Eastern empire No. liv. of the Leonine constitutions abolished the exemption of agricultural labour con- tained in the constitution of Constantine. It is worthy of notice that this exemption was specially

preserved in England by a con- stitution of Archbishop Meopham. The canon law followed the lines of Roman law. The decrees of ecclesiastical councils on the subject have been very numerous. Much of the law is contained in the Decretals of Gregory, bk. ii. tit. 9 (De Feriis), c. 1 of which (translated) runs thus: ‘‘ We decree that all Sundays be observed from vespers to vespers (a vespera ad vesperam), and that all unlaw-

Pe lu In the Epistle of Barnabas already referred to (c. 15) it is called

the eighth day”: “We keep the eighth day with joyfulness, the day also in which Jesus rose again from the dead.” Comp. Justin Martyr, nal. c. Tryph., c. 138.

2 The longer recension runs: * But let every one of you keep the Sabbath after a spiritual manner. . , . And after the observance of the Sabbath let every friend of Christ keep the Lord’s day as a festival, the resurrection day, the queen and chief of all the days.” The writer finds a reference to the Lord’s day in the titles to Pss. vi. and xii. ; which are ‘‘set to the eighth.”

3 See Ignat., Ad Magn., ut supra, and Ep. of Barnabas (c. 15): “Your present Sabbaths are not acceptable unto me, but that is which I have made when, giving rest to all things, I shall make a beginning of the eighth day.” So practically Tertullian (Resp. ad Jud.,c. 4) and Clement of Alexandria, According to Augustine also (De Sp. et Lit., 14), the observance of the Sabbath is to be taken in a spiritual sense.

PUN DA YW

ful work be abstained from, so that in them trading or legal pro- ceedings be not carried on, or any one condemned to death or punishment, or any oaths be administered, except for peace or other necessary reason.” Works of necessity (especially in the case of perishable materials or where time was important, as in fishing) were allowed, on condition that a due proportion of the gain made by work so done was given to the church and the poor. The con- sent of parties was insufficient to give jurisdiction to a court of law to proceed on Sunday, though it was sufficient in the case of a day sanctified by the ecclesiastical authority for a temporary purpose, e.g., a thanksgiving for vintage or harvest.

In England legislation on the subject began early and continues down to the most modern times. As early as the 7th century the laws of Ina, king of the West Saxons, provided that, if a “theowman’’ worked on Sunday by his lord’s command, he was to be free and the lord to be fined 80s.; if a freeman worked without his lord’s command, the penalty was forfeiture of freedom or a fine of 60s.,and twice as much in the case ofa priest. The laws of Athel- stan forbade marketing, of Athelred folkmoots and hunting, on the Sunday. In almost all the pre-Conquest compilations there are admonitions to keep the day holy. The first allusion to Sunday in statute law proper is the Act of 28 Edw. III. c. 14 (now repealed), forbidding the sale of wool at the staple on Sunday. The mass of legislation from that date downwards may be divided, if not with strict accuracy, at least for purposes of convenience, into five classes, —ecclesiastical, constitutional, judicial, social, and commercial. The following sketch of the legislation can scarcely presume to be exhaustive, but it will probably be found not to omit any statute of importance. It should be noticed that the terms ‘‘ Sunday” and ‘‘Lord’s day” are used in statutes. The term ‘‘Sabbath”’ occurs only in ordinances of the Long Parliament. ‘‘Sabbath- breaking ” is sometimes used as a popular expression for a violation of the Acts for Sunday observance, but it is objected to by Black- stone as being legally incorrect. Good Friday and Christmas Day are as a rule in the same legal positionasSunday. In English law Sunday is reckoned from midnight to midnight, not as in canon law a vespera ad vesperam. The Acts mentioned below are still law unless repeal of any of them is specially mentioned.

Ecclesiastical.—Before the Reformation there appears to be little or no statutory recognition of Sunday, except as a day on which trade was interdicted or national sports directed to be held. ‘Thus the repealed Acts 12 Ric. Il. c. 6 and 11 Hen. IV. c. 4 enjoined the practice of archery on Sunday. The church itself by provincial constitutions and other means declared the sanctity of the day, and was strong enough to visit with its own censures those who failed to observe Sunday. With the Reformation, however, it became necessary to enforce the observance of Sunday by the state in face of the question mooted at the time as to the divine or merely human institution of the day as a holy day. Sunday observance was directed by injunctions of both Edward VI. and Elizabeth, as well as by Acts of Parliament in their reigns. 5 and 6 Edw. VI. c. 1(the second Act of

Uniformity) enacted that all inhabitants of the realm were to endeavour themselves to resort to their parish church or chapel accustomed, or upon reasonable let thereof to some usual place where common prayer is used every Sunday, upon pain of punishment by the censures of the church. This is still law except as to Dissenters (see 9 and 10 Vict. c. 59). The same principle was re-enacted in the Act of Uniformity of Elizabeth (1 Eliz. c. 2), with the addition of a temporal punishment, viz., a fine of twelve pene for each offence. This section of the Act is, however, no onger law, and it appears that the only penalty now incurred by non-attendance at church is the shadowy one of ecclesiastical censure. 5 and 6 Edw. VI. c. 3 directed the keeping of all Sundays as holy days, with an exception in favour of husbandmen, labourers, fishermen, and other persons in harvest or other time of necessity. At the end of the reign of Elizabeth canon 18 of the canons of 1603 (which are certainly binding upon the clergy, and probably upon the laity as far as they are not contrary to the law, statutes, and customs of the realm, or the royal prerogative) provided that ‘‘all manner of persons within the Church of England shall celebrate and keep the Lord’s day, commonly called Sunday, according to God’s holy will and pleasure and the orders of the Church of England prescribed in that behalf, that is, in hearing the word of God read and taught, in private and public prayers, in acknowledging their offences to God and amendment of the same, in reconciling themselves charitably to their neighbours where displeasure hath been, in oftentimes receiving the communion of the body and blood of Christ, in visiting the poor and sick, using all godly and sober conversation.” ‘The Long Parliament, as might be expected, occupied itself with the Sunday question. An ordinance of 1644, c. 51, directed the Lord’s day to be celebrated as holy, as being the Christian Sabbath. Ordinances of 1650, c. 9, and 1656, c. 15, contained various minute descriptions of crimes against the sanctity of the Lord’s day, including travelling and ‘‘ vainly and profanely walking.” The Act of Uniformity of Charles II. (18 and 14 Car. II. c. 4) enforced the reading on every Lord’s day of the morning and evening prayer according to the form in the Book of Common Prayer,—a duty which had been pre-

viously enjoined by canon 14. By the first of the Church Building Acts (58 Geo. III. c. 45, s. 65) the bishop may direct a third service, morning or evening, where necessary, in any church built under the Act. By 1 and 2 Vict. c. 106, s. 80, he may order the performance of two full services, each if he so direct to include a sermon. The Burial Laws Amendment Act, 1880, forbids any burial under the Act taking place on Sunday.

Constitutional.—Parliament has occasionally sat on Sunday in cases of great emergency, as on the demise of the crown. In one or two cases in recent years divisions in the House of Commons have taken place early on Sunday morning. The Ballot Act, 1872, enacts that in reckoning time for election proceedings Sundays are to be excluded. A similar provision is contained in the Municipal Corporations Act, 1882, as to proceedings under that Act.

Judicial.—As a general rule Sunday for the purpose of judicial proceedings is a dies non. Legal process cannot be served or exe- cuted on Sunday, except in cases of treason, felony, or breach of the peace (29 Car. II. c. 7, s. 6). Proceedings which do not need the intervention of the court are good, ¢.g., service of a citation or notice to quit or claim to vote. By 11 and 12 Vict. c. 42,5. 4, a Justice may issue a warrant of apprehension or a search warrant on Sunday. The Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, provide that the offices of the Supreme Court shall be closed on Sundays, that Sunday is not to be reckoned in the computation of any limited time less than six days allowed for doing any act or taking any proceeding, and that, where the time for doing any act or taking any proceeding expires on Sunday, such act or proceeding is good if done or taken on the next day. By the County Court Rules, 1886, the only county court process which can be executed on Sunday is a warrant of arrest in an Admiralty action.

Social.—Under this head may be grouped the enactments having for their object the regulation of Sunday travelling and amusements. The earliest example of non-ecclesiastical interference with recrea- tion appears to be the Book of Sports issued by James I. in 1618. Royal authority was given to all but recusants to exercise themselves after evening service in dancing, archery, leaping, vaulting, May- games, Whitsun-ales, morris-dances, and setting up of Maypoles; but bear and bull baiting, interludes, and bowling

by the meaner sort were prohibited. In 1625 the first Act of the reign of Charles I. (1 Car. I. c. 1), following the lines of the Book of Sports, inhibited meetings, assemblies, or concourse of people out of their own parishes on the Lord's day for any sports and pastimes whatsoever, and any bear-baiting, bull-baiting, interludes, commou plays, or other unlawful exercises and pastimes used by any person or persons within their own parishes, under a penalty of 3s. 4d. for every offence. 'The Act, it will be noticed, impliedly allows sports other than the excepted ones as long as only parishioners take part in them. Au Act which has had more important consequences in recent years is 21 Geo. III. c. 49 (drawn by Dr Porteus, bishop of London). It enacts that any place opened or used for public entertainment and amusement or for public debate upon any part of the Lord's day called Sunday, to which persons are admitted by payment of money or by tickets sold for money, is to be deemed a disorderly house. The keeper is to forfeit £200 for every day on which it is opened or used as aforesaid on the Lord's day, the manager or master of the ceremonies £100, and every doorkeeper or servant £50. The advertising or publishing any advertisement of such an entertainment is made subject toa penalty of £50. It has been held that a meeting the object of which was not pecuniary gain (though there was a charge for admission), but an honest intention to introduce religious worship, though not according to any established or usual form, was not within the Act. On this principle forms of worship most directly opposed_to the prevailing feeling of the country, such as Mormonism or Mohammedanism, are protected. In 1875 actions were brought in the Courts of Quecn's Bench and Exchequer against the Brighton Aquarium Company, and penalties recovered under the Act. The penalties were remitted by the crown; but, as doubts were felt as to the power of the crown to remit in such a case, 38 and 39 Vict. c. 80 was passed to remove such doubts and to enable the sovereign to remit in whole or in part penalties recovered for offences agaiust the Act of Geo. III. The rules made by justices and the bye-laws made by local authorities for the government of theatres and places of public entertainment usually provide for closing on Sunday. The Sundaygopening of museums and art galleries is governed by local regulations; there is no general law on the subject, though attempts have been made in that direction. The House of Lords recently passed a resolution in favour of the principle. A public billiard table must not be used on Sunday (8 and 9 Vict. c. 109). The Game Act (land 2 Will. IV. c.

32, s. 3) makes it punishable with a fiue of £5 to kill game or use a dog or net for sporting purposes on Sunday. Provisions for the regulation of street traffic on Sundays during divine service in the metropolis and provincial towns may be made by the local authorities under the powers of the Metropolis Management Acts, the Town Police Clauses Act, and the Public Health Act. Hackney carriages may ply for hire in London (1 and 2 Will. IV. c. 22). Where a railway company

656

runs trains on Sunday one cheap train each way is to be provided (7 and 8 Vict. c. 85, s. 10). Most of the railway companies' own Acts also provide for the running of Sunday traius. ; Commercial.—At common law a contract made on Sunday is not void, nor is Sunday trading or labour unlawful. At an early period, however, the legislature began to impose restrictions, at first by making Sunday trade impossible by closing the places of ordinary business, later by declaring certain kinds of trade and labour illegal, still later by attempting to prohibit all trade and labour. 28 Edw. III. c. 14 (referred to above) closed the wool market on Sunday. 27 Hen. VI. c. 5 (the earliest Sunday Act still in force) prohibited fairs and markets on Sunday (necessary victual only excepted),

unless on the four Sundays in harvest,—an exemption since repealed

by 13 and 14 Vict. c, 23. 4 Edw. IV. c. 7 (now repealed) restrained the shoemakers of London from carrying on their business on Sun-

day.

subsequent legislation they have become perpetual.

Sunday."

3 Car. I. c. 1 inflicted a penalty of 20s. on any carrier or drover travelling on the Lord's day, and a penalty of 6s. 8d. on any butcher killing or selling on that day. Both this and the previous Act of 1625 were originally passed only for a limited period, but by Next in order is the most comprehensive Act on the subject, 29 Car. IL. c. 7, "An Act for the better observance of the Lord's

day, commonly called After an exhortation to the observation of the Lord's day by exercises in the duties of piety and true religion, publicly and privately, the Act provides as follows :—No tradesman, artificer, workman, labourer, or other person whatsoever shall do or exercise any worldly labour, business, or work of their ordinary callings upon

SUN Day

Act of Charles IL, there are various Acts dealing with special trades ; of these the Licensing Acts and the Factory and Workshop Act are the most important. By the Licensing Act, 1874, premises licensed for the sale of intoxicating liquors by retail are to be open on Sunday only at certain hours, varying according as the premises are situate in the metropolitan district, a town or populous place, or elsewhere. An exception is made in favour of a person lodging in the house or a bona fide traveller, who may be served with re- freshment during prohibited hours, unless in a house with a six. day licence. Attempts have often been made, but hitherto with- out success, to induce the legislature to adopt the principle of com- plete Sunday closing in England as a whole, or in particular counties.1_ In the session of 1886 a Bill for Sunday closing in Durham was passed by the Commons, but rejected by the Lords, The advocates of Sunday closing in Ireland and Wales have been more successful. The Sale of Liquors on Sunday (Ireland) Act, 1878, prohibits the opening of licensed premises on Sunday, except in Dublin, Cork, Limerick, Waterford, and Belfast. In these towns such premises may be opened from 2 P.M. to 7 P.M. Exemptions are also made in favour of lodgers and travellers, of packet- boats and railway stations, The Sunday Closing (Wales) Act, 1881, contains no exceptions of towns, like the Irish Act, and the only exemption is the sale of intoxicating liquors at railway stations. The Factory and Workshop Act, 1878, forbids the employment of a child, young person, or woman on Sunday in a factory or workshop. But a young person or woman of the Jewish religion may be employed on Sunday by a Jewish manufacturer, provided that the factory or workshop be not open for traffic on Sunday. There are a few other

the Lord's day or any part thereof (works of necessity and charity only excepted) ; and every person being of the age of fourteen years or upwards offending in the premises shall for every such offence forfeit the sum of 5s.

; and no person or persons whatsoever shall publicly cry, show forth, or expose to sale any wares, merchandises, fruit, herbs, goods, or chattels whatsoever upon the Lord's day or any part thereof upon pain that every person so offending shall forfeit the same goods so cried, or showed forth, or exposed to sale (s. 1). No drover, horse-courser, waggoner, butcher, higgler, their or any of their servants, shall travel or come into his or their lodging upon the Lord's day or any part thereof, upon pain that each and every such offender shall forfeit 20s. for every such offence ; and no person or persons shall use, employ, or travel upon the Lord's day with any boat, wherry, lighter, or barge, except it be upon extraordinary occasion to be allowed by some justice of the peace, &c., upon pain that every person so offending shall forfeit and lose the sum of 5s, for every such offence. In default of distress or non-payment of forfeiture or penalty the offender may be set publicly in the stocks for two hours (s. 2). Nothing in the Act is to extend to the prohibiting of dressing of meat in families, or dressing or selling of meat in inns, cooks' shops, or victualling houses for such as cannot be otherwise provided, nor to the crying or selling of milk before nine in the morning or after four in the afternoon (s. 3). Prosecutions must be within ten days after the offence (s. 4). The hundred is not responsible for robbery of persons travelling upon the Lord's day (s. 5). Service of process on the Lord's day is void; see above (s. 6). This Act has frequently received judicial construction. The use of the word ''ordinary" in section 1 has led to the establishment by a series of decisions of the principle that work done out of the course of the ordinary calling of the person doing it is not within the Act. Thus the sale of a horse on Sunday by a horse-dealer would not be enforcible by him and he would be liable to the penalty, but these results would not follow in the case of a sale by

legislative provisions of less importance which may be noticed. Fishing for salmon on Sunday by any means other than a rod and line is an offence under the Salmon Fishery Act, 1861. By the same Act a free passage for the salmon through all cribs, &c., used for fishery is to be left during the whole of Sunday. Carrying on the business of a pawnbroker on Sunday is an offence within the Pawnbrokers Act, 1872. Distilling and rectifying spirits on Sunday is forbidden by the Spirits Act, 1880. The effect of Sunday upon bills of exchange is declared by the Bills of Exchange Act, 1882. A bill is not invalid by reason only of its bearing date on a Sunday (s. 13). Where the

last day of grace falls on a Sunday, the bill is payable on the preceding business day (s. 14). Sunday is a ‘‘non- business day” for the purposes of the Act (s. 92). This review of Sunday legislation pretty clearly shows that its tendency at present: is opposed to extending facilities to trade on Sunday, but that as to recreation the tendency is rather in the other direction.? Scotland.—The two earliest Acts dealing with Sunday are some-what out of harmony with the general legislation on the subject. 1457, c. 6, ordered the practice of archery on Sunday ; 1526, c. 3, allowed markets for the sale of flesh to be held on Sunday at Edin- burgh. Then came a long series of Acts forbidding the profanation of the day, especially by salmon-fishing, holding fairs and markets, and working in mills and salt-pans. 1579, c. 70, and 1661, c. 18, prohibited all work and trading on the Sabbath. The later legis- lation introduced an exception in favour of duties of necessity and mercy, in accordance with ch. 21 of the Confession of Faith, In more modern times the exigencies of travelling have led to a still further extension of the exception. The Sabbath Observance Acts were frequently confirmed, the last time in 1696. These Acts were held by the High Court of Justiciary in 1870 to be still subsisting, as far as they declare the keeping open shop on Sunday to be an offence by the law of Scotland (Bute’s Case, 1 Couper’s Reports, 495). The forms of certificate in the schedule to the Public Houses

a person not a horse-dealer. Certain acts were held to fall within

the cxception as to works of necessity and charity, eg., baking

provisions for customers, running stage-coaches, hiring farm- labourers. The legislature also intervened to obviate some of the inconveniences caused by the Act. By 10 and 11 Will. IIL c. 24 mackerel was allowed to be sold before and after service. By 11 and 12 Will. III. c. 21 forty watcrmen were allowed to ply on the Thames on Sunday. By 9 Anne c. 23 licensed coachmen or chair- men might be hired on Sunday. By 34 Geo. III. bakers were allowed to bake and sell bread at certain hours, These Acts are all repealed. Still law are 2 Geo. IIL. c. 15 s. 7, allowing fish carriages to travel on Sunday in London and Westminster ; 7 and 8 Geo. IV. ¢. 75, repealing section 2 of the Act of Charles II. as far as regards Thames boatmen ; and 6 and 7 Will. IV. c. 37, permitting bakers out of London to carry on their trade

up to 1.30 p.m. The penalty of the stocks denounced by sect. 2 is practically obsolete (see Stocks). The prosecution of offences under the Act of Charles II. 1S now subject to 34 and 35 Vict. c. 87 (an Act which was passed for a year, but has since been annually continued by the Expiring Laws Continuance Act of cach session), by which no prosecution or proceeding for penalties under that Act can be instituted except with the consent in writing of the chief officer of a police district or the consent of two justices or a stipendiary magistrate. This is surely a more reasonable means of providing against any hardship

caused by the Act than the ex post facto power of remission of

penalties incurred under 21 Geo. III.‘c. 49. Besides the general

Acts Amendment Act, 1862 (superseding those in the Forbes Mac- kenzie Act of 1853), provide for the closing on Sunday of public- houses and of premises licensed for the sale of excisable liquors, and of inns and hotels, except for the accommodation of lodgers and travellers. Scots law is stricter than English in the matter of Sunday fishing. By 55 Gco. III. c. 94 the setting or hauling of a herring-net on Sunday renders the net liable to forfeiture. By the Salmon Fisheries (Scotland) Act, 1862, fishing for salmon on Sunday, even with a rod and line, is an offence. As to contracts and legal process, the law is in general accordance with that of England. Contracts are not void, apart from statute, simply be- cause they are made on Sunday. Diligence cannot be executed, but a warrant of imprisonment or medttatio fugex is exercisable. It should be noticed that, contrary to the English custom, the term “Sabbath” was generally used in the legislation of the Scottish parliament.

United States—Some of the early colonial ordinances enforced the obligation of attendance at church, as in England. In most States there is legislation on the subject of Sunday, following, as a general rule, the lines of the English Act of Charles II. In

1 The Act 1 James I. c. 9 (now repealed) appears, however, to have pro- vided for closing ale-houses in most cases, except on usual working days.

2 See, in addition to the authorities cited, Lyndewode, Provincial Constitutions bk. ii. chap. iii; Ayliffe, Parergon, p. 470; Gibson, Codex, tit. x. chap. i.; Heylin, History of the Sabbath, part ii.; the article ‘Lord’s Day” (by Bishop Barry) in the Dictionary of Christian Antiquities ; and Hessey, Sunday, (Bampton Lectures, 1860); also Robert Cox’s works on the Sabbath.

Massachusetts travelling, except from necessity or charity, is punish- able with a fine of ten dollars. Provision is sometimes made, as in the Massachusetts laws, for the benefit of persons observing Saturday as the Sabbath, on condition that they disturb no other person. The number of Sunday trains is often limited by State legislation. In some of the New England States Sunday is from sunset to sunset. In most States, however, it is reckoned, as in England, from midnight to midnight. By the constitution of the United States, art. I. s. 7, Sundays are to be excluded from the ten days allowed the president to return a Bill. A similar provision is often contained in State constitutions as to the return of a Bill by the governor. The United States legislation on the subject of Sunday is not important. It directs that naval and military studies are not to be pursued, and that the day is not to be reckoned in bankruptcy proceedings. ~ : (J. Wt.)
SUNDERLAND, amunicipaland parliamentary borough, market town, and large seaport of Durham, England, is situated at the mouth of the river Wear and on the North- Eastern Railway, 12 miles south-east of Newcastle-on-Tyne and 77 north-north-west of York. The municipal borough includes, besides the township of Sunderland proper on the south bank of the river, the adjoining township of Bishopwearmouth, which embraces about three-fifths of the total inhabitants, and the township of Monkwearmouth, on the north bank of the river. Sunderland proper consists chiefly of the High Street and other streets near the docks. It is connected with Monkwearmouth by a cast-iron bridge, designed by Rowland Burdon, and consisting of one arch with a span of 236 feet and a height above low water of 100 feet. It was opened in 1796 and widened in 1858.

The only ecclesiastical building of antiquarian interest is

enix

~ Scale of Yards

o. 20 400 600 800

Plan of Sunderland.

St Peter’s church, Monkwearmouth, which still retains the tower with other portions of the ancient Saxon building attached to the monastery founded by Benedict Biscop in 674. The modern public buildings embrace the custom- house (1837), the Sunderland and North Durham Liberal club in the Ionic style (1839), the corporation offices, the workmen’s hall, the new general market, the Victoria hall (1871), the assembly hall, and two theatres. The chari- table and benevolent institutions are numerous, including Gibson’s almshouses (1725) for twelve poor persons, Bowe almshouses (1725), Trinity Church almshouses (1719, re- built in 1876) for eight aged poor, the marine almshouses (1820), the eye infirmary (1836), the sailors’ home (1856), the orphan asylum (1853), the infirmary and dispensary (erected in 1868 and extended in 1882), and the blind institute, for which a new building has recently been erected. For the literary society and subscription library, originally founded in 1793, a new building was erected in 1877. The people’s park at Bishopwearmouth, 17 acres in extent, contains a bronze statue of Sir Henry Havelock, who was born at Ford Hall in the neighbourhood. The park was lately increased by an addition of 10 acres, called

the Extension Park, in which there is a statue of Alder- man Candlish, and a free library, museum, art gallery, and winter garden. Roker, on the north side of Sunderland, 1s a favourite bathing-place. The population of the municipal borough (area, 3306 acres) in 1871 was 98,242, and in 1881 it was 116,542 (males 57,131, females 59,411). The population of the parliamentary borough

(area, 5130 acres) in the same years was 104,409 and 124,841 respectively.

_ Much of the prosperity of Sunderland is due to the coal and limestone in the neighbourhood of the river Wear, of which it is the port. Its export of coal began in the reign of Henry VII., the trade being principally with London and the western coasts of England, although large quantities were also shipped to Holland, France, and other parts of the Continent. The coal trade is still of great importance, and the Monkwearmouth colliery is one of the decpest coal-pits in the world,—381 fathoms. Sunderland vies with the Clyde for its iron shipbuilding. The number of iron ships built in 1885 was 31 with a tonnage of 30,520 for home and 2 with a tonnage of 1255 for foreigners ; of steel ships, 9 with a tonnage of 8099 for home and 3 with a tonnage of 3635 for foreigners. Along both banks of the Wear numerous extensive works of various kinds are situated, including anchor and chain cable works, glass and bottle works, roperies, forges, iron-works, chemical works, paper-mills, breweries, and lime-kilns. The modern prosperity of the town has been largely promoted by the enterprise of George Hudson, the ‘‘ railway king.” The conservation of the port is vested in the Wear commissioners, to whose care the South Dock was transferred by the Wear Navigation and Sunderland Dock Act of 1859. Under their auspices great extensions and im- provements have been made, and there are now three large deep- water docks, embracing a total area of 43 acres, viz., Hudson dock north (18), Hudson dock south (14), and Hendon dock (11). Monk- wearmouth dock, 6 acres in extent and the property of the railway company, is chiefly used for the export of coal. New piers over half a mile in length are now (1887) being erected. The average annual value of the imports of foreign and colonial merchandise for the five years ending 1886 was a little over £700,000, and of the exports of produce of the United Kingdom a little over £600,000. The coasting trade, in regard to which specific details are wanting, is, however, more important. The total number of British and foreign vessels, sailing and steam, that entered the port of Sunder- land with cargocs or in ballast from foreign countries, British possessions, and coastwise in 1876 was 9708 of 2,329,576 tons and in 1885 9451 of 2,764,174 tons. The numbers that cleared in the same years were respectively 9430 of 2,357,430 tons and 9419 of 2,824,218 tons.

The early history of the borough is associated with Monkwear- mouth, which existed long before the town on the other side of the river, and had its origin in a convent which was founded by St Bega in the 7th century and

converted into a monastery for Benedictines by Biscop in 674. Bede was born at Wearmouth in 673, and in his seventh year was placed under the charge of Biscop. The monastery was reconstituted as a cell of Durham in 1084. About the close of the 12th century the inhabitants of Sunderland received from Bishop Pudsey a charter of free customs and privi- leges similar to those of Newcastle-on-Tyne. In 1634 the town was incorporated under the title of ‘‘mayor, aldermen, and com- monalty,” with the privilege of holding a market and annual fairs. In the preamble of the charter it is stated to have been a borough from time immemorial under the name of New Monkwearmouth, and to have been in the enjoyment of various liberties and free customs conferred by the bishops of Durham. Under a special Act in 1851 the town council was constituted the urban sanitary authority. Extensive drainage works have been carried out, as well as important street improvements. Sunderland has returned two members to the House of Commons since 1832. A large number of Scotch families settled in the town in 1640 and gave a considerable impulse to its trade. During the Civil War the in- habitants embraced the cause of the Parliament, while the neigh- bouring Newcastle held out for the king for two years. The Scottish army under Leslie, earl of Leven, entered Sundcrland on 4th March 1644, and the king’s forces followed them ; but no en- gagement took place beyond desultory firing.

SUNDERLAND, Rozpert Spencer, SEconD EARL oF (1640-1702), was the eldest son of Henry, the first earl, and Lady Dorothy Sidney, eldest daughter of Robert, second earl of Leicester. He was born in 1640 and suc- ceeded his father (who was killed at Newbury) in the title on 20th September 1643. During the years 1671-73 he acted as ambassador at Madrid, Paris, and Cologne con- secutively, and in 1678 went to Paris as ambassador

extraordinary. It was during this period of his life that he atquired that suppleness of feeling and love of finesse which may be traced throughout his subsequent career. From February 1679 to January 1681, a period when the country was rent in twain by real or fancied dangers to the Protestant

faith, he held the post of secretary of state for the northern department ; but his conduct in office was not marked by discretion. He voted for the exclusion of the duke of York from the succession to the throne, and the ill-feeling which this action created in the mind of Charles IT. was augmented by the overtures which Sunder- land made to the prince of Orange, whilst differences of opinion on the subject of the Exclusion Bill brought about a fierce quarrel between Sunderland and Halifax, the head of the “trimmers.” Early in 1683, having been reconciled to the duke of York and having secured a warm friend in the duchess of Portsmouth, Sunderland regained his place as secretary for the northern department. When James IT. succeeded to the throne, Sunderland became secretary for the southern department, from March 1685 to 27th October 1688, for most of which period he held the addi- tional post of president of the council, and was a member of the high commission for ecclesiastical causes. He after- wards claimed that he had used his influence to mitigate the proceedings of this obnoxious body, but he went suffi- ciently far with his royal master to sign the warrant for the committal of the bishops and to appear as a witness against them. Though Lord Sunderland was in sympathy, if not in actual communion, with Roman Catholicism, he hesitated to commit himself entirely to the acts of the fierce devotees who surrounded James II., and through their opposition he was dismissed in disgrace and sought security in Holland. He had been too much engaged in the acts of James II. to find a place among the advisers of William and Mary.

The visit which William paid to Althorp in Northampton- shire, the country seat of Sunderland, in 1695 was the prelude of a reconciliation between the king and _ his ambitious subject and of Sunderland’s recall into public affairs. From April to December 1697 he discharged the duties of lord chamberlain of the household and for the greater part of that time he was also lord justice of England ; but he finally retired from active life in the close of 1697 through disgust at the check which William received in the retention of a standing army. The rest of his life was passed in strict seclusion at Althorp, and there he died on 28th September 1702.

Lord Sunderland possessed a keen intellect and was consumed by intense restlessness; but his character was wanting in steadfastness, and he yielded too easily to opposition. His adroitness in intrigue and his fascinating

manners were exceptional even in an age when such qualities formed part of every statesman’s education ; but the charac- teristics which ensured him success in the House of Lords and in the royal closet led to failure in his attempts to understand the feelings of the mass of his countrymen. Consistency of conduct was not among the objects which he aimed at, nor did he shrink from thwarting in secret a policy which he supported in public. A large share of the discredit attaching to the measures of James II. must be assigned to the earl of Sunderland.

SUNDERLAND, CuHaruzs SPENCER, THIRD EARL OF (1675-1722), was the second son of the second earl, but on the death of his elder brother at Paris, on 5th Septem- ber 1688, he became the heir to the peerage. He was born in 1675, and when twenty years old was sent to the House of Commons by the two constituencies of Hedon in Yorkshire and Tiverton in Devonshire. He chose the latter, and represented it until his succession to the earldom of Sunderland in 1702. Throughout this period of his life

his career was undistinguished ; his first start in the world of politics occurred in 1705, when he was sent to Vienna as envoy extraordinary, a mission which he discharged with signal ability. republican feeling and had rendered himself personally obnoxious to Anne, he was foisted by the all-powerful influ- ence of his father-in-law, the duke of Marlborough, into’ the ministry as secretary of state for the southern depart- ment,

Although Sunderland was tinged with

This office he held from 3d December 1706 to 14th June 1710, when he fell, as he rose, through his

connexion with the duke and duchess of Marlborough. The queen offered him a pension of £3000 a year, but he proudly refused the temptation, saying that, if he could not serve, he would not plunder, his country. After the accession of George I. he was lord lieutenant of Ireland (1714-15), lord keeper of the privy seal (1715-17), and secretary of state for the northern department (April 1717 to March 1718). At the latter date he was raised to the post of prime minister, holding with the office of first lord of the

treasury the position of lord president of the council. Sir Robert Walpole had been shelved, and he revenged himself on the new administration by resisting and defeat- ing the Bill which was designed to limit the numbers of the House of Lords,—a victory over Sunderland which led to a partial reconciliation between him and Townshend and Walpole, his rivals. affairs during the South Sea mania, and the bursting of the financial bubble led to his political ruin. Walpole's influence he was acquitted of personal corrup- tion, but he was forced to resign his place as first lord of the treasury on Ist April 1721. which characterized the father had descended to the son: he was ever plotting, and within a few months after Wal-

Lord Sunderland was at the head of

Through The passion for intrigue

pole had saved him from disgrace, if not from a worse fate, he was engaged in scheming against the friend who had saved him. But his plots were interrupted by his death, which occurred on 19th April 1722. Lord Sunderland's manners were repelling and his disposition was harsh, but he stands high among his compeers for disinterestedness. The love of books ranked among the ruling passions of his life, and he spent his leisure hours and his wealth in form- ing the great collection at Althorp.

SUN-FISH. This name is chieflyand properly applied to a marine fish (Orthagoriscus) which by its large size, grot- esque appearance, and numerous peculiarities of organiza- tion has attracted the attention equally of fishermen as of naturalists. Only two species are known,—the rough or short sun-fish (O. mola), which is found in all seas of the temperate and tropical zones; and the much smaller and scarcer smooth or oblong sun-fish (0. truncatus), of which only a small number of specimens have been obtained from the Atlantic and Indian Oceans. That this genus belongs to the order Plectognathi and is allied more especi- ally to the globe-fishes (Diodon and TYetrodon) has been indicated in the article IonrnHyonoey (vol. ix. pp. 663, 694), where also the principal anatomical peculiarities have been noticed, and where illustrations of the young have been given (see figs. 64, 65).

Sun-fishes have the appearance of tailless fish. This is due to the extreme shortening of the tail, which is sup- ported by only a few short vertebre and reduced to a broad fringe of the trunk. Directly in front of it rise dorsal and anal fins, high and broad, similar to each other in size and triangular in form. The head is completely merged in the trunk, the boundary between them being indicated only by a very small and narrow gill-opening and a comparatively small pectoral fin. ‘This fin can be of but little use in locomotion, and the horizontal and ver- tical movements of the fish, as well as the maintenance of its body in a vertical position, are evidently executed by

the powerful dorsal and anal fins. The small mouth, situ- ated in front of the head, is armed with an undivided dental plate above and below, similar to but weaker than the teeth of the globe-fish (Diodon).

Sun-fishes are truly pelagic, propagating their species in the open sea, and only occasionally approach the coast. During the stormy season they live probably at some depth, but in calm bright weather they rise and rest or play on the surface with their dorsal fin high above the water. This habit has given rise to the popular name “sun-fish,” a term also sometimes applied to the basking- shark (vol. xxi. p. 777), which in like manner enjoys the warmth of a sunny day. In some years the rough sun-fish is by no means scarce on the south coast of England and on ‘the Irish coasts, where it appears

principally in the summer months. The usual size is from 3 to 4 feet in length, but this species attains to 7 feet and more. One of the . largest specimens (see the accom-

panying figure) was caught near Portland (Dorsetshire) in 1846, and is now in the British Museum; its length is 7 feet 6 inches. The sun-fish has no economic value, and is rarely, if ever, eaten.

‘Sun-fish (Orthagoriscus mola).

Whilst the rough sun-fish has a granulated, rough, shagreen-like skin, the second species (O. truncatus) has the surface of the body smooth and polished, with its small dermal scutes arranged in a tesselated fashion. It is

oblong in shape, the body being much longer than it is deep. The sides are finely ornamented with transverse silvery, black-edged stripes running downwards to the lower part of the abdomen. It has not been found to exceed 2 feet in length, but is very scarce, only a few specimens having been captured on the coasts of Europe, at the Cape of Good Hope, and off Mauritius.

SUNFLOWER. In the modern vernacular this name is most commonly applied to various species of Helcanthus, especially to H. annuus; but, as this is a tropical American herb, and the word “sunflower” or something correspond- ing to it existed in English literature prior to its intro- duction, or at any rate prior to its general diffusion in gardens, it is obvious that some other flower than the Helz- anthus must have been intended. The marigold (Calendula officinalis) is considered by Dr Prior to have been the plant intended by Ovid (Met., iv. 269-70)—

“*, . . Illa suum, quamvis radice tenetur, 2 Vertitur ad solem ; mutataque servat amorem —

and likewise the solsxce of the Anglo-Saxon, a word equi- valent to solseguium (sun-following). But this movement with the sun is more imaginary than real, the better expla- nation being afforded by the resemblance to “the radiant beams of the sun,” as Gerard expresses it. The central disk of tubular hermaphrodite flowers, encompassed by

the spreading neuter florets of the ray, has, indeed, a marked resemblance to the sun as conventionally depicted. The florets are provided with two or three dry, sharply pointed scales, which serve as pappus, and the whole mass of florets is encircled by a close involucre of leafy bracts. There are numerous varieties of the common sunflower in cultivation, the so-called double form being one in which the ordinarily tubular florets in the centre become spreading and “ligulate” like those at the circum- ference. The seeds, or more strictly speaking the fruits, contain much oil, for which the plant is cultivated in southern Russia. The oil is used in the manufacture of

soap. The seeds are also valued for their agreeable flavour, and are much used as food for poultry, &c. The so-called “Jerusalem artichoke” (Helianthus tuberosus) belongs to the same genus. It is believed to be a native of Canada, or perhaps a modified form of H. doronicoides, The tubers are rich in inulin and sugar, and the plant deserves more attention at the hands of cultivators than it has yet received. The word “Jerusalem” is evidently a corruption, while “artichoke” applies to the flavour of the tuber, which is not unlike that of the artichoke.

SUNNITES anp SHIITES. Thereligion of Mohammed Geo- is at present professed by 150 to 200 million souls, spread graphical over great parts of Asia (including the Indian Archi- a pelago), Africa, and southern Europe,i —over Asia Minor, ~* Armenia, Syria, Palestine, Arabia, Mesopotamia, the Caucasus, Persia, all upper Asia (including Siberia), the steppes of southern Russia, Afghanistan, Beluchistan, Tibet, China, Japan, India, Egypt, the Soudan as far as the equatorial lakes, the whole north coast of Africa and thence deep into the interior, European Turkey, Bulgaria, Bosnia, and Herzegovina. In most of these regions Mos- lems live side by side with men of other confessions, even where Islam is the ruling creed; it is found unmixed.in Central Asia and some parts of Arabia.

Mohammedans fall into the two great divisions of Sunnites and Shiites (Shia), separated by such bitter hatred as belongs to two hostile religions, or such as some Catholic populations feel towards a Protestant.2 The Sunnites, who accept the orthodox tradition (Sunna) as well as the Koran as a source of theologico-juristic doctrines, predominate in Arabia, the Turkish empire, the north of Africa, Turkestan, Afghanistan, and the Mohammedan parts of India and the east of Asia; the Shiites, whose origin has been explained in MoHAMMEDANISM (vol. xvi. pp. 564, 568, 592), have their main seat in Persia, where their confession is the state religion, but are also scattered over the whole sphere of Islam, especially in India and the regions bordering on Persia, except among the nomad Tatars, who are all nominally Sunnite. Even in Turkey there are many native Shi‘ites, generally men of the upper classes, and often men in high office. The Shiites are less numerous and less important than the Sunnites, but on the whole may amount to 20 millions.

SUNNITES.

Orthodox Islam preserves unchanged the form of Sunnites. doctrine established in the 10th century by Abt ’l-Hasan al-Ash‘ari (see vol. xvi. p. 593, and also pp. 553 sq., 592,

584). The attacks of rationalism, aided by Greek philo- sophy, were repelled and vanquished by the weapons of scholastic dialectic borrowed from the enemy; on most points of dispute discussion was forbidden altogether,

1 Exact statistics are unattainable because we lack details as to the great advances which Islam has recently made and is still making in Central Africa.

2 Generally speaking the Sunnites are the more bitter party. The relation is least strained in India, where the Sunnites approach the Shf’ites in reverence for ‘Ali, Hasan, and Hosain, and share the feasts of these saints.

Ulema.

660

and faith in what is written in Koran and tradition was enjoined without question as to how these things were true (bild kaifa). Freer allegorical views, however, were admitted on some specially perplexing points, such as the doctrine of the eternity of the Koran, the crude anthropo- morphisms of the sacred text, &c.; and, since Mo‘tazilite views had never taken deep root among the masses, while the caliphs required the help of the clergy, and from the time of Motawakkil (847 a.p.) became ever more closely bound to orthodox: views, the freethinking tendency was thoroughly put down, and to the present day no rational- izing movement has failed to be crushed in the bud. Philosophy still means no more than scholastic dialectic, and is the humble servant of orthodoxy, no man venturing on devious paths except in secret. In the years 1872-78 the Afghan Jamal al-Din, a professor in the Azhar mosque at Cairo, attempted to read Avicenna with his scholars, and to exercise them in things that went beyond theology, bringing, for example, a globe into the mosque to explain the form of the earth. But the other professors rose in arms, forbade him to enter the mosque, and in 1879

pro- cured his exile on the pretext that he entertained demo- cratic and revolutionary ideas. Thus the later movements of thought in Islam never touch on the great questions that exercised Mohammedanism in its first centuries, ¢.9., the being and attributes of God, the freedom of the will, sin, heaven and hell, &c. Religious earnestness, ceasing to touch the higher problems of speculative thought, has expressed itself in later times exclusively in protest against the extravagances of the dervishes, of the worship of saints, and so forth, and has thus given rise to movements ana- logous to Puritanism.

That even in early times the masses were never shaken in their attachment to the traditional faith, with all its crude and grotesque conceptions, is due to the zeal of the ulema, or clergy, for the protection of Islam from every alien influence. Mohammedanism has no priesthood stand- ing between God and the congregation, but Koran and Sunna are full of minute rules for the details of private and civil life, the knowledge of which is necessarily in the hands of a class of professed theologians. These are the ‘ulema (“knowers,” singular ‘dlim), theology being briefly named “the knowledge” (‘“idm). Their influence is still enormous and hardly has a parallel in the history of re- ligions. For it is not supported by temporal agencies like the spiritual authority of the Christian priesthood in the Middle Ages, but is a pure power of knowledge over the ignorant masses, who do nothing without consulting their spiritual advisers. When the vigorous Spanish sultan Mansur b. Abi ‘Amir proposed to confiscate a religious foundation and the assembled ulema refused to approve the act, and were threatened by his vizier, one of them replied, “All the evil you say of us applies to yourself ; you seek unjust gains and support your injustice by threats; you take bribes and practise ungodliness in the world. But we are guides on the path of righteousness, lights in the darkness, and bulwarks of Islam 3 we decide what is Just or unjust and declare the right ; through us the pre- cepts of religion are maintained. We know that the sultan will soon think better of the matter ; but, if he persists, every act of his government will be null, for every treaty of peace and war, every act of sale and purchase, is valid only through our testimony.” With this answer they left the assembly, and the sultan’s apology overtook them before they had passed the palace gate! The same consciousness of independent authority and strength still survives

among the ulema. Thus the sheikhu ‘L-Islam ‘Abbds{ (who was deposed by the professors of the Azhar in 1882) had in

ie ona oe Gesch. d. herrschenden Ideen d. Islams, Leipsic,

SUNNITES

[SUNNITEs,

the first period of his presidency a sharp conflict with

‘Abbas Pasha, viceroy of Egypt, who asked of him an unjust

legal opinion in matters of inheritance. When bribes and threats failed, the sheikh was thrown into chains and treated with great severity, but it was the pasha who finally yielded,

and “Abbasi was recalled to honours and rich rewards,

The way in which the ulema are recruited and formed into a hierarchy with a vigorous esprit de corps throws an instructive light on the whole subject before us. The brilliant days are past when the universities of Damascus, Baghdad, Nishapuir, Cairo, Kairow4n (Kairwan), Seville, Cordova, were thronged by thousands of students of theo- logy, when a professor had often hundreds or even, like Bokhari, thousands of hearers, and when vast estates in the hands of the clergy fed both masters and scholars, Of the great universities but one survives—the Azhar mosque at Cairo—where thousands of students still gather to follow a course of study which gives an accurate picture of the Mohammedan ideal of theological education.2

The students of theology generally begin their course in Theo. early youth, but not seldom in riper years. Almost all cei

come from the lowest orders, a few from the middle classes,

and none from the highest ranks of society,—a fact which in itself excludes all elements of freer and more refined

education. These sons of poor peasants, artisans, or trades- men are already disposed to narrow fanaticism, and gener- ally take up study as a means of livelihood rather than

from genuine religious interest. The scholar appears before

the president's secretary with his poor belongings tied up in a red handkerchief, and after a brief interrogatory is entered on the list of one of the four orthodox rites, — Shafi'ite, Hanafite, Malikite, and Hanbalite. If he is lucky

he gets a sleeping-place within the mosque, a chest to hold

his things, and a daily ration of bread. The less fortunate make shift to live outside as best they can, but are all day in the mosque, and are seldom deserted by Moslem charity. Having kissed the hands of the sheikh and teachers of his school, the pupil awaits the beginning of the lectures. For books a few compendiums suffice him, Professors and students gather every morning for the daily prayer ; then the professors take their seats at the foot of the pillars of the great court and the students crouch on mats at their feet. The beginner takes first a course in the grammar of classical Arabic, for he has hitherto learned. only to read, write, and count. The rules of grammar are read out in the memorial verses of the Ajriimiya, and the teacher adds an exposition, generally read from a printed commentary. The student's chief task is to know the rules by heart ; this accomplished, he is dismissed at the end of the year with a certificate ({jdza), entered in his text-book, which permits him to teach it to others. The second year is devoted to dogmatic (kalém and tawhid), taught in the same mechanical way. The dogmas of Islam are not copious, and the attributes of God are the chief subject taken up. They are demonstrated by scholastic dialectic, and at the end of his second year the student, receiving his certificate, deems himself a pillar of the faith. The study of law (jikh), which rests on Koran and tradition, is more difficult and complex, and begins, but is often not com- pleted, in the third year. The student had learned the Koran by heart at school and has often repeated it since, but only now is the sense of its words explained to him. Of the traditions of the Prophet he has learned something incidentally in other lectures; he is now regularly intro- duced to their vast and artificial system. From these two sources are derived all religious and

civil laws, for Islam is a political as well as a religious institution. The five main points of religious law, “the pillars of Islam,” have been

2 Of the 126 madrasa or colleges which once belonged to the uni- versity of Damascus but five remained in 1880,

enumerated in vol. xvi. p. 553 sq.; the civil law, on the development of which Roman law had some influence, is treated under heads similar to those of Western juris- prudence. It is here that the differences between the four schools (vol. xvi. p. 594 sg.) come most into notice: the Hanafite praxis is the least rigorous, then the Shafi‘ite ; the Hanbalites, whose system is the strictest, have practi- cally disappeared in the Malikites. The Hanafite rite is official in the Turkish empire, and is followed in all Govern- ment offices whenever a decision still depends on the sacred law, as well as by all Mohammedans of Turkish race. In Egypt and North Africa Shafi‘ites are more numerous than Malikites, while the opposite is the case in Arabia. In

the local schools are of the poorest kind, except in India (thanks to the British Government) and perhaps in Con- stantinople.* Bokhard was once a chief seat of learning, but is now so sunk in narrow fanaticism that its eighty madrasas with their 5000 students only turn out a bigoted and foolish clergy (Vambéry).? But for this very reason Bokhara is famed as a luminary of pure theology and spreads its influence over Turkestan, Siberia, China, Kash- mir, Afghanistan, and even over India. Minor schools attached to mosques are found in other places, but teach still less than the great schools already mentioned.

Except in India, where it is controlled by the Govern- Caliph-

ment, the organization of the priestly and judicial persons ate and trained in the schools is a compromise between what theo- *™poral logical principles dictate and what the state demands. -°.””

1878 the Azhar had 7691 students,—3723 ShAfi‘ites with 106 sheikhs, 2855 Malikites with 75 sheikhs, 1090

Hanafites with 49 sheikhs, 23 Hanbalites with 1 sheikh. reignty.

In this as in the previous studies a compendium is learned by heart, and explanations are given from commentaries and noted down by the students word for word. The professors are expressly forbidden to add anything of their own. Therecognized books of jurisprudence, sonie of which run to over twenty folio volumes, are vastly learned, and occasionally show sound sense, but excel mainly in useless hair-splitting and feats of scholastic gymnastics, for which the Arabian race has a natural gift.

Besides the three main disciplines the student takes up according to his tastes other subjects, such as rhetoric (ma‘dni wabaydn), logic (mantik), prosody (‘aréd), and the doctrine of the correct pronunciation of the Koran (kir@a watajwid). After three or four years, fortified with the certificates of his various professors, he seeks a place in a law-court or as a teacher, preacher, cadi, or mufti of a village or minor town, or else one of the innumerable posts of confidence for which the complicated ceremonial of Mohammedanism demands a theologian, and which are generally paid out of pious foundations. A place is not hard to find, for the powerful corporation of the ulema seeks to put its own members into all posts, and, though the remuneration is at first small, the young ‘Alim gradually accumulates the revenues of several offices. Gifts, too, fall in, and with his native avarice and economy he rises in wealth, position, and reputation for piety. The common- alty revere him and kiss his hand; the rich show him at least outward respect; and even the Government treats him as a person to whom consideration is due for his influence with the masses.

This sketch of his education is enough to explain the narrow-mindedness of the ‘Alim, He deems all non-theo- logical science to be vain or hurtful, has no notion of progress, and regards true science—z.c., theology—as having reached finality, so that a new supercommentary or a new students’ manual is the only thing that is perhaps still worth writing. How the mental faculties are blunted by scholasticism and mere memory work must be seen to be believed; such an education is enough to spoil the best head. All originality is crushed out and a blind and ludicrous dependence on written tradition—

even in things profane— takes its place. Acuteness degenerates into hair-splitting and clever plays on words after the manner of the rabbins. The Azhar students not seldom enter Government offices and even hold important administrative posts, but they never lose the stamp of their education—the narrow un- teachable spirit, incapable of progress, always lost in ex- ternal details, and never able to grasp principles and get behind forms to the substance of a matter. (WwW. S.-B.)

Yet it is but a small fraction of the ulema of the Mos- lem world that enjoy even such an education as the Azhar

1 In 1878 seventeen lecture-rooms of the Azhar had 3707 students, of whom only 64 came from Constantinople and the northern parts of

Neither Koran nor Sunna distinguishes between temporal and spiritual powers, and no such distinction was known as long as the caliphs acted in all things as successors of the prophets and heads of the community of the faithful. But, as the power of the ‘Abbasids declined (see vol. xvi. p. 585 sq.) and external authority fell in the provinces into the hands of the governors and in the capital into those of the amir al-omard, the distinction became more and more palpable, especially when the Buyids (Buwaihids), who were disposed to Shi’ite views, proclaimed themselves sultans, z.e., possessors of all real authority. The theo- logians tried to uphold the orthodox theory by declaring the sultanate to be subordinate to the imamate or sove- reignty of the caliphs, and dependent on the latter especi- ally in all religious matters; but their artificial theories have never modified facts. The various dynasties of sul- tans (Buyids, Ghaznevids, Seljuks, and finally the Mongols) never paid heed to the caliphs and at length abolished them; but the fall of the theocracy only increased the influence of the clergy, the expounders and practical administrators of that legislation of Koran and Sunna which had become part of the life of the Mohammedan world. The Mame- lukes in Egypt tried to make their own government appear more legitimate by nominally recognizing a continuation of the spiritual dignity of the caliphate in a surviving branch of the “Abbasid line which they protected, and in 923 a.n. (1517) the Ottoman Selim, who destroyed the Mameluke power, constrained the ‘Abbasid Mutawakkil III, who lived in Cairo, to make over to him his nominal caliphate. The Ottoman sultans still

bear the title of "'successors of the Prophet," and still find it useful in foreign relations, since there is or may be some advantage in the right of the caliph to nominate the chief cadi (kédé) of Egypt and in the fact that the spiritual head of Khiva calls himself only the nakib (vicegerent) of the sultan.t In India too the sultan owes something perhaps to his spiritual title. But among his own subjects he is compelled to defer to the ulema and has no considerable influence on the composi- tion of that body. He nominates the sheckhu 'l-Isldém (senior, 2.¢., president of Islam) or mufti of Constantinople (grand mufti), who is his representative in the imdmate and issues judgments in points of faith and law from which there is no appeal; but the nomination must fall on one of the mollahs,® who form the upper stratum of the hierarchy the Ottoman empire, 8 from North Arabia, 1 from the government of Baghdad, 12 from Kurdistan, and 7 from India with its thirty million Sunnites.

2 In Kazan also the standard of learning seems to have been raised by Russian and Western scholars.

3 The madrasa is here a college, generally attached to a mosque, with lands whose revenues provide the means of instruction and in part also food and residence for scholars and teachers.

4 Til] the Russians gained preponderating influence the khan of Khiva also acknowledged the sultan as his suzerain.

5 Mollah is the Perso-Turkish pronunciation of the Arabic maulé, literally '' patron," a term applied to heads of orders and other reli- gious dignitaries of various grades.

Judicial offices.

Modern changes.

of ulema. And, though the various places of religious dignity are conferred by the sultan, no one can hold office who has not been examined and certified by older ulema, so that the corporation is self-propagating, and

palace intrigues, though not without influence, can never break through its iron bonds. The deposition of “Abd al-Aziz is an example of the tremendous power that can be wielded by the ulema at the head of their thousands of pupils! when they choose to stir up the masses; nor would Mahmud II. in 1826 have ventured to enter on his struggle with the Janissaries unless he had had the hierarchy with him.

The student who has passed his examinations at Con- stantinople or Cairo may take up the purely religious office of zmdm (president in worship) or khatéb (preacher) at a mosque. These offices, however, are purely ministerial, are not necessarily limited to students, and give no place in the hierarchy and no particular consideration or social status. On the other hand, he may become a judge or cadi. Every place of any importance has at least one cadi, who is nominated by the Government,? but has no further dependence on it, and is answerable only to a member of the third class of the ulema, viz., the mufti or pronouncer of fetwas. A fetwa is a decision according to Koran and Sunna, but without reasons, on an abstract case of law which is brought before the mufti by appeal from the cadi’s judgment or by reference from the cadi himself. For ex- ample, a dispute between master and slave may be found by the cadi to turn on the general question, ‘“‘Has Zaid, the inaster of “Amr,? the absolute right to dispose of his slave’s earnings?” When this is put to the mufti, the answer will be simply ‘‘ Yes,” and from this decision there is no appeal, so that the mufti is supreme judge in his own district. The grand mufti of Constantinople is, as we have seen, nominated by the sultan, but his hold on the people makes him quite an independent power in the state; in Cairo he is not even nominated by the Government, but each school of law chooses its own sheikh, who is also mufti, and the Hanafite is head mufti because his school is official in the Turkish empire.

All this gives the judges great private and political in- fluence. But the former is tainted by venality, the plague- spot of the East, which, aggravated by the scantiness of Judicial salaries or in some cases by the judge having no salary at all, is almost universal among the administrators of justice. Their political influence, again, which arises from the fusion of private and political law in Koran and Sunna, is highly inconvenient to the state, and often be- comes intolerable now that relations with Western states are

multiplied. And even in such distant parts as Central Asia the law founded on the conditions of the Prophet's lifetime proves so unsuited to modern life that cases are often referred to civil authorities rather than to canonical jurists. Thus a customary law ('orf) has there sprung up side by side with the official sacred law (sharé'a), much to the displeasure of the mollahs. In Turkey, and lately above all in Egypt, it has been found necessary greatly to limit the sphere and influence of the canonical jurists and intro- duce institutions nearer to Western legal usage. We do not here speak of the paper constitutions (khatt-c-sherif) and the like, created to dupe Western diplomatists and amuse their authors, but of such things as consular and commercial courts, criminal codes, and so forth. The pre- sent sultan seems also to aim at diminishing the power of the ulema by such measures as frequent changes of the

? Called in Constantinople softa, Persian sékhta, with zeal or love to God.

? In Egypt before the time of Sa'{d Pasha (1854-638) the local judges were appointed by the chief cadi of Cairo, who is sent from Constanti-

mops. Since then they have been nominated by the Egyptian Govern- ment,

3 Zaid and 'Amr are the Caius and Sempronius of Arabian law.

"burned up," scil.,

SUNNIEERS

(SUNNITES.

sheikhu 'Lislam, though this policy is perhaps less likely to confirm his power than to rob it of its last supports. The official hierarchy, strong as it is, divides its power with the dervishes. A religion which subdues to itself a race with strongly marked individuality is always influ- enced in cultus and dogma by the previous views and tendencies of that race, to which it must in some measure accommodate itself. Mohammed himself made a concession to heathen traditions when he recognized the Kaaba and the black stone ; and the worship of saints, which is now spread throughout Islam and supported by obviously forged traditions, is an example of the

same thing. So too are the religious orders now found everywhere except in . some parts of Arabia. Mystical tendencies in Moham- medanism arose mainly on Persian soil (see vol. xvi. p. 594), and Von Kremer has shown that these Eastern tendencies

fell in with a disposition to asceticism and flight from the

world which had arisen among the Arabs before Islam under Christian influence.t

while the Arabs imitated the Christian anchorites; thus the two movements had an inner kinship and an outer form so nearly identical that they naturally coalesced, and that even the earliest organizations of orders of dervishes, whether in the East or the West, appeared to Moham- medan judgment to be of one type. Thus, though the name of Sifé (see vol. xvi. p. 594) is first applied to Abt Hashim, who died in Syria in 150 a.w. (767), we find it transferred without question to the mystical brother- hood which appears in Khordsdn under Abu Sa‘id about 200 a.m. (815/6). Yet these two schools of Suffs were never quite similar; on Sunnite soil Stifism could not openly impugn orthodox views, while in Persia it was saturated with Shiite heresy and the pantheism of the extreme devotees of ‘Alf (see vol. xvi. p. 593). Thus there have always been two kinds of Stfis, and, though the course of history and the wandering habits which various orders borrowed from Buddhism have tended to bring them closer to one another, we still find that of the thirty-six chief orders three claim an origin from the caliph Abt- bekr, whom the Sunnites honour, and the rest from ‘All, the idol of the Shi‘ites.> Mystic absorption in the being of God, with an increasing tendency to Pantheism and ascetic practices, are the main scope of all Sufism, which is not necessarily confined to members of orders ; indeed the secret practice of contemplation of the love of God and contempt of the world is sometimes viewed as specially meritorious. And so ultimately the word sift has come to denote all who have this religious direction, while those who follow the special rules of an order are known as dervishes (“‘ beggars,” in Arabic fukard, sing. fakir—names originally designating only the mendicant orders). In Persia at the present day a Sufi is much the same asa freethinker. Several of the chief dervish orders arose in the evil times before and after the invasion of the Mongols: thus “Abd al-Kadir al-Jilani

(d. 561 aw.; 1165/66) founded the Kadiriya order, Ahmad al-Rifa'{ (d. 578 A.H. ; 1182/3) the Rifé'iya, Jalalu 'l-din Rumi (see Ruf) the Mawlawifya, Abu 'l-Hasan al-Shdédhilf (d. 656 a.n.; 1258) the Shadhilfya, Ahmad al-Badawi (d. 675 az. ; 1276) the Ahmadiya or Badawiya, an order still very widely spread in Egypt. While civil distress drove men to flee from the world, the stupid fanaticism of Turkish rule has helped on the belief in miracles so often associated with mysticism and all those deceits that go with the spread of enthusiastic notions. Of later orders we may name the

4 Op. cit., p. 52 sq.

5 These claims to early origin are mere fables, like the claim of the Oweist order to spring from Oweis, one of the oldest traditionalists, and so forth.

Intercourse with India had Sufis ang given Persian mysticism the form of Buddhistic nionkery,

Nakshbendiya, now the most important in the khanates of Turkestan, whose founder died 719 a.n. (1319), the Sa'diya (736 a.H.; 1335), the Bektashtya (758 a.u.; 1357), the Khalwatiya (800 a.u.; 1397).2

The modern dervishes have sunk as low as the modern ulema. The idea of absorbed contemplation of the divine being, freed from all earthly conceptions, and of mortifica- tion of the flesh in order to become one with God is grossly caricatured in the insane howlings hu hu ("he, he") and self-torture with red-hot knives, &c., practised by the "howling" Rifd'iya and in the dizzy whirling of the "dancing" Mawlawiya. Very pestilent too is their tradi- tional reputation for holiness with the common people, while ecstatic piety easily passes into deceit where it is still generally believed that a saint (walt) can work miracles. The wandering dervishes especially, who move constantly from place to place, are noted for all sorts of juggling im- postures, by the aid of which, like the Yogis of India, they live at the cost of the people? But they are no longer trusted or held in muchesteem even by the populace, whereas the conventual orders are usually regarded as pious and inspired men. Sheikh Ahmad, the founder of the Badawtya, is the

national saint of Egypt, and his tomb at Tanta is a great place of pilgrimage. The ulema dislike these rivals, but can do little against their influence.

The bright side in the modern world of Islam is found among the lower classes. The ruling classes of Turkey are utterly corrupt, and for centuries their one art of administration has been to suck the provinces dry. Taxes are exorbitant and bad laws check the production of wealth, while what remains of the useful institutions and public works of old time daily decays. To this is added the recklessness born of a more or less clear consciousness that things cannot last as they are. The effendi of Constanti- nople has lost faith in his religion and the future of his race; as for a sense of honour, as we understand it, that does not exist in the East. In Egypt things have not been quite so bad since Mohammed ‘Alf destroyed the Mamelukes and founded a state with some pretensions to order and solidity ; selfish as he was, he saw that to main- tain the revenue it was necessary to stimulate production, and to this end, amid many mistakes, he took not a few useful steps. His successors were less wise and skilful, yet prosperity increased, and for the first time for centuries national feeling began to assert itself. But this movement fell into the hands of the ignorant and fanatical ‘Ordbti Pasha (1882) and led to the English occupation and the entire disorganization of the country, so that Cairo is now little better than Constantinople.

Yet with all this the poorer classes have not lost their vigour, and among them Islam has still a deep-rooted strength. The common Turk of Roumelia or Asia Minor is still a solid sober honest fellow and a brave soldier, always ready to make every sacrifice for his religion. In Egypt the morality of the people has suffered from the great foreign immigration, which has introduced many evil ele- ments as well as some good ; yet even here the great mass of both townsmen and peasants are loyal to the old faith and to the traditional sobriety and parsimony which the nature of the country itself prescribes. These qualities taken with the undoubted intelligence of the Arabian population give hope of a revival of prosperity on the Nile under more favourable political conditions. The people have a persuasion of the superiority of their religion, which,

1 The best account of the dervishes is still that in D’Ohsson, Tableau Général de Emp. Ottoman, vol. ii., Paris, 1790. A

2 These mendicants belong in part to orders like the Bektashiya and Rif’iya, whose other members live in convents (Khangah, Takiya) ; in part they are Kalanderiya (Calanders), 7.c., bound by the rule of Kalander, a disciple of Bektash, which enjoins constant wandering.

while it often makes necessary reforms difficult, prevents them from losing national individuality and self-reliance, and the belief in predestination gives a certain dignity and Self-possession under calamities, without excluding foresight and activity in daily duty. But whether all this is enough to secure the political revival of the Sunnite commonwealths is doubtful in face of the preponderating influence on all the coasts of the Levant of Western civiliza- tion, which as yet is almost entirely a disintegrating force and seems certain to prevent a redintegration of Islam in Turkey, and probably also in Egypt. The khanates, again, are sunk in incredible moral corruption cloaked by blind fanaticism, while most of the Bedouin tribes of Arabia have known little about Koran and religion for the last eight centuries.® Islam has certainly still a great future in Central Africa, but this can hardly lead to veritable reformation of its system. Still there are many evidences that the faith is not yet dead even in its old realms. We lay no stress on the existence of various sects opposed to the current Sunnite orthodoxy, such as the puritanical Wahhabites of Arabia and India, or the Druszs (¢.v.), Nosairfya, Isma‘iliya, and Metwalfya of Syria, who are tinged with Shiite views and belong only politically to the Sunnite section of Islam. But in India there are still living seeds of further development within Islam proper. Under English control the ulema are unable to maintain the same spiritual tyranny over men’s minds as elsewhere, and we find more mutual toleration between Sunna and Shi’a, an easy accommodation to local tradition,* and even an ability to leave the grooves of Al-Ash‘ar{’s scholasticism and approach the ideas of the old rationalistic Mo‘tazilites. Movements in this direction have come to light quite recently ; but their further growth need not here be specu- lated on.® SHfiTEs.

The extreme Shi’ite view that ‘Al{ is to be regarded as an incarnation of the Godhead (see vol. xvi. pp. 568, 592) maintained its predominance only in

times when and places where the opposition to the sovereignty of the Omayyads and ‘Abbasids was intense, or where pantheistic influences from India were at work. From the first there existed also a milder form of Shiite faith, which soon was at open war with the fanatical Ismé‘iliya and their disciples, the Fatimites and Assassins (vol. xvi. p. 593 sq.).®

It was through the moderate Shfites that the caliph Shi’ite

Ma’mun thought to reconcile his dynasty with the house of ‘Alf (vol. xvi. p. 584), and it was this party that became dominant in Persia in the 10th Christian century under the Buyids. When they conquered Baghdad the Buyids abstained from interfering with the Sunnite orthodoxy of the populations of the capital and Arabian ‘Irdk, but the Shiite faith was openly professed in their courts at Rai, Shird4z, and Kirmén. But in the next century the power of the Shiite dynasty crumbled and fell before the Ghaz-nevids and Seljiks, who as Turks were Sunnites, and repressed the opposing views. In the 13th century the Mohammedan East was overrun by the Mongols, who at first were indifferent to all religion, and gave the Persian Shfites perfect liberty; later on the great-grandson of Jenghis Khan, Mohammed Khodahbende Oeljitu (1303-16),

3 Sefer Nameh, ed. Schefer, Paris, 1881, pp. 30 sq., 233.

4 See Garcin de Tassy, ‘Sur les particularites de la rel. mus. dans l’Inde,” reprinted in L’Jslamisme, 3d ed., Paris, 1874, pp. 290 sq. 296 sg. The Wahhabites protest against this laxity.

5 See Syed Ameer ‘Ali, Personal Law of Mohammedans, London, 1880, preface.

6 When the Fatimite lords of Egypt tried to enter into relations with the moderate Shi’ite Buyids in Baghdad they were met with polite reserve, and subsequently public protests against them emanated from the ‘Alide circles of that city (Wiistenfeld, Geschichte der [ati- miden-Chalifen, Gottingen, 1881, pp. 197, 237).

The Ithna- ‘Ashartya.

Shi’ite tenets.

himself became a Shi‘ite ; nor was the progress of the sect checked by the fall of the dynasty and the conquests of Timtr (1387), who veiled his religious indifference by proclaiming himself an admirer of ‘Ali. Thus the mass of

the Persian population remained Shf‘ites, and the Timurides accommodated themselves to the religious feelings of their subjects. Timur’s son, Shah Rokh, even built and furnished forth the tomb of the imam Riz4 in Meshhed (Meshed). The troublous times that followed and the intervention in Persian affairs of the Sunnite Ak-Koyunlu (see vol. xviii. p. 632 sq.) must have been unfavourable toShf‘ite principles ; but they gained a final victory through the Safawi dynasty, whose founder, Shéh Isma‘{l (1499-1523), gave the Shitite doctrine, in the form in which it is held by the Ithn4-‘Ashartya, the position it still has as the state religion of Persia.

The Ithna-‘Ashartya, or “Twelvers,” a sect of the moder- ate Shiites, have their name from the respect they pay to ‘Alf and his eleven immediate heirs through Fatima, daughter of the Prophet. Like all Shi‘ites, they hold that ‘Alf was designated as his successor by Mohammed,! and unjustly thrust aside by the three actual caliphs, Abtbekr, ‘Omar, and‘Othmén. Still more do they hate the Omayyad enemies of “Ali and his house (see vol. xvi. p. 563). They and the “Abbasids were usurpers, the true caliphs de jure being the im4ms—(1) ‘Ali; (2) Hasan ; (3) Hosain, then his heirs in the direct line —(4) ‘AH IL; (5) Mohammed al-Bakir ; (6) Ja‘far al-Sadik; (7) Musd4 al-Kazim ; (8) ‘Alt TIT. al-Rid& (in modern pronunciation Riza); (9) Mohammed II. al-Jawéd; (10) ‘Al IV. al-Askart ; (11) Hasan II. al-Khamt; (12) Mohammed ITI. al-Mahdi, who lived in the second half of the 3d century of the Flight (9th century A.p.), and to whom his Shi‘ite partisans looked to free them from the ‘Abbasid yoke. These hopes failed and he himself disappeared, whence the belief grew that he was concealed in a cave at Samarra and would return at the end of days. Meantime the sovereignty belongs to the other descendants of ‘Ali, the Sayyids (lords). In fact the Safawis claimed descent from the’seventh imdém, and neither the Afghan Nadir Shah, who overthrew their power, nor the Kajars, who now

reign, are regarded as legitimate. The false position which the royal house stands in with the clergy is an important element in the weakness of the crumbling state of Persia.

All other points in which Shi’ites differ from Sunnites depend on their legitimistic opinions, or are accommoda- tions of the rites of Islam to the Persian nationality, or else are petty matters affecting ceremonial, The rejection of the whole Sunnite traditions goes with the repudiation of the caliphs under whose protection these were handed down.? An allegorical and mystical interpretation recon- ciles the words of the Koran with the inordinate respect paid to ‘Ali; the Sunnite doctrine of the uncreated Koran is denied. To the Mohammedan confession “There is no god but God and Mohammed is His ambassador” they add “and ‘Ali is the vicegerent of God” (wali, properly “‘confidant”). There are some modifications in detail as to the four main religious duties of Islam,—the pre- scriptions of ritual purity, in particular, being absurdly exaggerated and made the main duty of the faithful. The prayers are almost exactly the same, but to take part in public worship is not obligatory, as there is at present no legitimate im&4m whose authority can direct the prayer

== tS EEE

1 To make this credible divers passages of the Koran have been changed from the received readings, and ultimately a special stira was me out of Koran phrases. See N Gldeke, Gesch. des Qorans, p. 220 sq.

25 Bt the comparison of Shi’ites with Protestants is futile. Shi‘ites have their own tradition (hadis) referred to “Ali, which is grossly dis- torted,—indeed a tissue of lies.

SP UNNGQTES

jurisprudence, and finally some arithmetic

[suf‘rres

of the congregation. Pilgrimage to Mecca, to which the Sunnite indwellers of ‘Ir&k and Arabia oppose difficulties, though since the reign of ‘Abd al-

Mejid it is officially thrown open to all, may be performed by a hired substi- tute,’ or its place can be taken by a visit to the tombs of Shiite saints, eg., that of ‘Alf at N ejef, of Hosain at Ker- bela, of Riz& at Meshhed, or of the “unstained Fatima” at Kum (Fétima-i-ma’astim, daughter of Musa, the 7th imam). The Shi‘ites are much the most zealous of Moslems in the worship of saints (real or supposed descendants of ‘Alf) and in pilgrimages to their graves, and they have a characteristic eagerness to be buried in those holy places. The Persians have an hereditary love for pomps and festivi- ties, and so the Shiites have devised many religious feasts. Of these the great sacrificial feast (id+-Kurbdén ; Turkish Kurbén Bairdém) is also Sunnite ; the first ten days of the month Moharram are dedicated to the mourning for the death of Hosain at Kerbela (vol. xvi. p. 568), which is cele- brated by passion-plays (ta‘ztya; see vol. xviii. p. 660), while the universal joy of the Nauroz, or the New Year of the Old Persian calendar, receives a Mohammedan sanc- tion by the tradition that on this day the Prophet conferred the caliphate on ‘Ali.4

While they naturally reject the four Sunnite schools of Eeclesi- jurisprudence, the Shiites also derive all law from the eo

Koran, and their trained clergy (mollahs) are the only class that can give legitimate legal responses. The training of the mollah resembles that of the Sunnite ‘4lim. The course

at the madrasa embraces grammar, with some rhetoric and

prosody, logic, dogmatic, Koran exegesis, tradition, and and algebra. The best madrasa is at Kerbel4.5 But the best students of Kerbel4 are no match even for the Sunnite disciples of Bokhard.® The scholar discharged from his studies becomes first a simple mollah, 2.¢., local judge and notary.’ A small

place has one such judge, larger towns a college of judges under a head called the sheikhu’l-Islém. The place of the Judicial Sunnite muftis is filled by certain of the imdmjuma, 7.¢., ficers. presidents of the chief mosques in the leading towns, who

in respect of this function bear the title of ¢mém mujtehid. This is a dignity conferred by the tacit consent of people and clergy, and is held at one time only by a very few dis- tinguished men. At the beginning of the 19th century there were but five mujtehids in Persia; now (1887) they seem to be more numerous. In Persia the cadi (kdzt) is an inferior judge who acts for the sheikhu'l-IslAm in special cases, and a mufti is a solicitor acting under the judge to prepare cases for court.

Under the Safawis, when the clergy had great influence, they had at their head the sadru 'ssodir, who administered all pious foundations and was the highest judicial authority. But so great a power was found dangerous ; 'Abbas the Great (1586-1628) abstained from filling up a vacancy which occurred in it, and, though Shah Sefi (1628-1641) restored the office, he placed it in commission. Nadir Shéh abolished it in his attempt to get rid of the Shi'ite hierarchy (1736), and since then it has not been restored. Yet the im4m-jum'a of Ispdhan, the old Safawi capital, is tacitly regarded as representative of the invisible imam of the house of 'Al, who is the true head of the church. Various vain attempts have been made in the 15th century to subordinate the authority of the clergy to the Government, These attempts had the sympathy of the better classes,

3 This the Sunnites also allow under certain conditions,

4 Without this sanction the Nauroz was celebrated even at court under the "Abbasids. It is the only feast still celebrated by the poor

as well as the rich. > On Turkish soil ; but the Shi'ite foundations there are tolerated, 8 Polak, Persien, Leipsic, 1865, i. 290. 7 No contract, especially no contract of marriage, is valid unless made before a mollah. An ordinary inferior judge is called darigha.

for the venality and moral corruption of the mollahs and their disposition to the most vulgar fraud are proverbial. But, on the other hand, the clerical power and the right of asylum at Meshhed, Kum, and some other sanctuaries are the only protection of the masses against the arbitrary tyranny of the court and the officials. There is nowa sort of truce between

the Government and the clergy, though the former is always suspicious of the latter. Only the venality of the spiritual courts has led, as in Turkestan, to a limitation of their jurisdiction, and judicial decisions are given also by civil magistrates according to ‘orf or custom- ary law and, although their decisions are often arbitrary, they are commonly resorted to in cases affecting property, in which the spiritual judge would think it his duty to “eat up” the sum in dispute. The main prop of the mollahs against the Government are the scum of the population, the léfis or foul rowdies. In 1862, according to Vam- béry, the im4m-jum‘a of Isp4h4n had at his orders a thousand of these scoundrels.

The rivals of the clergy in popular influence are the dervishes, whose show of holiness cloaks an immorality and propensity to crime far exceeding what is found among their brethren in Egypt and Turkey. So it has been for centuries, ac appears in Olearius’s account of the Calanders of his time (1637). Supported by popular superstition, the Persian dervishes are much more pretentious than those of the West. At the great feasts especially they quarter themselves impudently in wealthy houses and deafen the indwellers with their unceasing cry of Ydé hakk (“O Truth!” the mystical equivalent of ““O God!”). The wise and modest dervish who in Sa‘di’s poems tells the greatest sultan the truth as to the hollowness of his royal state has degenerated into the half-mad and insolent hanger-on who thrusts himself into audience-chambers and claims the seat of honour beside the grandees. The mul- titude of these motley vagabonds, some harmless, others dangerous, is explained by the love for idleness, buffoonery, and story-telling, which is even more marked in Persia than in other parts of the East.

Religions The great practical difference between the Sunnite and – Shi’ite communities is that among the former it is only ei *Y with the upper classes, who are few in number, and with ‘ects, the worse sort of dervishes that obedience to the precepts of religion is a mere formal profession. Most of the ulema and the middle and lower classes are sincere Moslems. In Persia it is the other way ; the praise of religion is always on men’s lips, but the inner conviction is that it is all a mockery. The clergy laugh inwardly at their own func- tions; the educated classes either believe nothing at all or hold secretly to a Sufi pantheism. Sa‘di and Hafiz are much more to them than the Koran; and, while the Sunnite takes his sortes beblice from the

Koran, the Shfite uses a copy of the songs of Hafiz. With the common people it is not the proper precepts of Islam, but the Shiite tenets directed against Sunnites and Jews, that find hearty ad- herence. ‘The death-feast of Hasan and Hosain excites them far more than the great sacrificial feast; and “Alf, the national saint, is much more popular than Mohammed. Islam, as it was forced on Persia by “Omar, was the faith of foreign conquerors and oppressors ; and the people have revenged themselves by travestying it and veiling their old convictions under its outward forms. And so Islam has never had any considerable influence on conduct save that it has confirmed the natural turn of the Persians for lying and hypocrisy. As it was long necessary to profess ortho- doxy for fear of the Arabs, it came to be an established Shi‘ite doctrine that it is lawful to deny one’s faith in case of danger. This “caution” (taktya) or “concealment” (ketmdn) has become a second nature with the Persians. And with this it goes that no one shrinks from secret sins,

though outwardly professing the utmost devotion. The preparation of wine and spirits, for example, is confined to Jews and Armenian Christians, but private drunkenness is most common. Very conscientious or pious people, however—e.g., the dervishes—use rather opium or hashish and confound the narcotic intoxication with mystic ecstasy. Another mischievous thing is the permission of temporary marriages,—marriages for a few hours on a money pay- ment. This legitimized harlotry (mot‘a) is forbidden by the Sunna, but the Shi’ites allow it, and the mollahs adjust the contract and share the women’s profits.

With all this, modern observers are agreed that the middle and lower classes of Persia are not hopeless, and that their natural intelligence, though combined with lack of perseverance, would make it much easier for them than for the Turks to take a new start if they were freed from the wretched civil and ecclesiastical administration. There Shi’ite is still mental life and vigour among them, as appears— sects. though in an unfavourable aspect— among the sects, which, allowance being made for ‘‘ takfya,” play no inconsiderable part. The Akhbaris (traditionalists), who adopt a semi-

philosophical way of explaining away the plainest doctrines (such as the resurrection of the flesh) on the authority of false traditions of ‘Alf, are not so much a sect as a school of theology within the same pale as the orthodox Shi‘a or mujtehidis.: A real dissenting sect, however, is the Sheikhis, of whose doctrines we have but imperfect and discrepant accounts.2 Representatives of the old extreme Shiites, who held ‘Ali for a divine incarnation, are found all over Persia in the ‘Alf-Ilahi or ‘Alf-Allahi sect (‘‘ “Ali deifiers”).3

Finally, in the year 1848 there broke out a violent Babi reaction against the wretched condition of state and church move- at a moment when a new succession to the throne had (as is ™°™* wont) involved great part of the land in anarchy (comp. vol. xviii. p. 651). As early as 1837 a young enthusiast, ‘Alf (son of) Mohammed, imbued with pantheistic and communistic ideas,* had begun a peaceable but zealous propaganda. Consistently enough with ultra-Shf‘ite principles, he deemed himself inspired by the spirit of God, and claimed to be the Mahdi, the twelfth imd4m, issued from his obscurity to lead the world to salvation. He took the title of Bab al- din (“portal of the faith”), and his followers are known as Bdbis. Baéb was a man of profound sincerity and averse to violent measures; he avoided all open polemic against the Government, which in turn at first tolerated him in its jealousy of the clergy. In 1844 the too great zeal of his follower Mollah Hosain occasioned Bab’s im- prisonment ; but Hosain and his emissaries continued the propaganda and made many converts in all provinces. When the troubles of 1848 broke out Hosain raised open rebellion in Mazenderdn. ‘Terrible conflicts ensued, made only more bitter by the execution of Bab (18th July 1849). Apparently suppressed, the movement proved that it was not extinct in an attempt to assassinate the shah in 1852. A new proscription followed; but there is no doubt that Babism still lives in secrecy, and the universal sympathy

1 The orthodox are so called because they allow the authority of the mujtehid (supra, p. 664). See Gobineau, Les Religions, &c., duns LV Asie Centrale, Paris, 1866, p. 28 sq.

2 Gobineau (op. cit., p. 30) reckons them as orthodox; but see Polak, Persien, Leipsic, 1865, i. 348; comp. also Von Kremer, Gresch. d.

herrschenden Ideen des Islams, p. 206 sq. (after Kazem Beg).

3 See Polak, op. cit., p. 849; Malcolm, Hist. of Persia, ii, 382 ; Rehatsek, in Journ. R.S.A. (Bombay branch), 1880, p. 424. Langlés, in Chardin, Voyages, 1811, x. 241, says that at the beginning of the 19th century their chief seats were north of Kandahar and Kabul (Cabul), and at Kashan.

4 The fusion of these two tendencies is in Persia as old as Mazdak (vol. xviii, p. 611). Communistic risings constantly took place in various parts of Persia under the caliphs, and that of Babek endangered the empire for twenty years (till §37 a.D.). The communists were afterwards absorbed in the Ishmaelites (see vol. xvi. p. 593 sq.), whose power was extinguished by the Mongols (1256). _

felt for the martyr Bab among generously minded Persians

may still give it a future.}

Less dangerous than these bold communists are the Ishmaelites, direct descendants of the old Isma‘ilfya, whose nihilist doctrines are now diluted into a harmless doctrine of incarnation. They are pretty numerous in India, at Bombay,

Surat, and Burhampur, but hardly are found in Persia.2 Despite their mutual feuds, Sunnites and Shfites are at one in their hatred and contempt for the professors of other religions. Holding that faith and unbelief are matter of predestination, Islam is not given to forcible proselytizing, and on certain conditions Christians and Jews (and later on Zoroastrians also) have always been tolerated in the Mohammedan empire, except that ‘Omar, mainly on political grounds, expelled all non-Moslems from Arabia. But none the less

the adherents of other faiths are hated and despised as children of

hell and enemies of true religion. To reconcile the present decay of Islam and prosperity of the unbeliever with their feelings and convictions, Sunnites and Shi'ites alike take refuge in the doctrine of a restoration of Islam before the end of the world through the 'divinely guided" Mahdi. In view of the interest in the subject excited by recent events, some addition may here be made to the brief statement in the article Manpr.3 Originally, as has been shown in that article, the idea of a god-sent deliverer from the ile- gitimate caliphs was attached by the Shi'ites to actual pretenders of the house of 'Ali ; the Mongols, the figure of the Mahdi was projected into the far future, and ultimately his arrival was madc a sign of the end of the world. Among the Sunnites, on the other hand, who could not accept the Shi'ite pretenders, some of those who felt that the Omayyad sovereignty was not truly spiritual and worthy of Islam borrowed the Christian hope of the second coming of Christ, whom Islam acknowledges as a prophet and precursor of Mohammed, and whose return at the end of the world seemed to accord with some vague passages of the Koran; others looked, like the Shiites, for a deliverer from earthly tyranny, but did not tie themselves to the belief that he must spring from the house of 'Ali. When the theo- logians of 'Abbasid times began to systematize the religious tradi- tions they found some that spoke of a return of Jesus and others referring to a Mahdi. These they combined together, so that Sunnites now believe that, when unrighteousness is at its height upon earth and the victory of the enemies of Islam seems sure, the Mahdi will appear to destroy the unbelievers and establish God's kingdom on earth. Then the Antichrist (dajjdl) will work new mischief, but be destroyed by J esus, who appears as precursor of the last judgment. Sunnite theologians have not all been at one in expecting a Mahdi as well as Jesus, but this is the view gencrally current in recent times ; and Sunnites and Shi'ites are agreed that the Mahdi will destroy the external foes of Islam, 7.¢., all non- Mohammedan powers. Theologians have tried by artificial inter- pretation of Koran and Sunna to fix when and how the Mahdi is to appear, and have concluded that he must be looked for at the close of a century. Of this widespread belief Mohammed Ahmed, the Sudanese Mahdi, availed himself in coming forward in the year 1300 of the Flight (1882-83). Theological Opinion is so un- settled as to all the details of the Mahdi's work that, according to trustworthy information, his death has not scriously impaired the impression produced by his victories. In Mecca, for example, in 1885 it was

commonly held to be conceivable that the Sudanese fighting in his name might destroy England and the Western powers ; and it is possible that the belief in this latest Mahdi has still an important part to play in the Eastern question. (A. MU.) SUNSTROKE (Heatstroke . Thermic Fever), a term applied to the effects produced upon the central nervous system, and through it upon other organs of the body, by exposure to the sun or to over-heated air. Although most frequently observed in tropical regions, this disease occurs also in temperate climates during hot weather. A moist condition of the atmosphere, which interferes with cooling of the overheated body, greatly increases the liability to suffer from this ailment. Sunstroke has been chiefly observed and investigated as occurring among soldiers in India, where formerly, both In active service and in the routine of ordinary duty, cases of this disease constituted a considerable item of sickness

1 See on Bab and Babism, Mirza Kazem Beg, in Journ. Asiatique, ser. 6, vols. vii. viii. ; Gobineau, op. cit., where there is a translation of Bab's new Koran; Von Kremer, op. cit., p. 202 Sq.

? See Garcin de Tassy, L'Islamisme, 3d ed. (1874), p. 298, and Rehatsek, ut sup.

3 Compare especially Snouck Hurgronje, ‘‘ Der Mahdi,” in Revue Coloniale Internationale, 1885, an article based on wide reading and personal observations at Jeddah and Mecca.

SU N—

and mortality. military authorities to the personal health and comfort of

but later on, and especially since the days of

Insolation; Coup de Soleil;

8 U®s

The increased attention now paid by

the soldier, particularly as regards barrack accommodation

and dress, together with the care taken in adjusting the

time and mode of movement of troops, has done much to lessen the mortality from this cause. It would appear that, while any one exposed to the influence of strong solar

heat may suffer from the symptoms of sunstroke, there are

certain conditions which greatly predispose to it in the case of individuals. Causes calculated to depress the health, such as previous disease, particularly affections of the nervous system,—anxiety, worry, or overwork, irregu- larities in food, and in a marked degree intemperance— have a powerful predisposing influence, while personal un- cleanliness, which prevents among other things the healthy action of the skin, the wearing of tight garments, which impede the functions alike of heart and lungs, and living in overcrowded and insanitary dwellings have an equally hurtful tendency. .

While attacks of sunstroke are frequently precipitated by exposure, especially during fatigue, to the direct rays of the sun, in a large number of instances they come ~~on under other circumstances. Cases are of not unfrequent occurrence among soldiers in hot climates when there is overcrowding or bad ventilation in their barracks, and sometimes several will be attacked in the course of a single night. The same remark applies to similar conditions existing on shipboard. Further, persons whose occupa~~ tion exposes them to excessive heat, such as stokers, laundry workers, &c., are apt to suffer, particularly in hot seasons. In the tropics Europeans, especially those who have recently arrived, are more readily affected than natives. But natives are not exempt.

The symptoms of heatstroke, which obviously depend upon the disorganization of the normal heat-regulating mechanism, as well as of the functions of circulation and respiration (see PATHoLoey, vol. xviii, p. 394), vary in their intensity and likewise to some extent in their form. Three chief types of the disease are usually described.

(1) Heat Syncope.—tIn this form the symptoms are those of exhaustion, with a tendency towards fainting or its actual occurrence. A fully developed attack of this descrip- tion is usually preceded by sickness, giddiness, some amount of mental excitement followed by drowsiness, and then the passage into the syncopal condition, in which there are pallor and coldness of the skin, a weak, quick, and inter- mittent pulse, and gasping or sighing respiration. The pupils are often contracted. Death may quickly occur; but if timely treatment is available recovery may take place.

(2) Heat Apopleay or Asphyxia.—In this variety the attack, whether preceded or not by the premonitory symp- toms already mentioned, is usually sudden, and occurs in the form of an apoplectic seizure, with great vascular engorgement, as seen in the flushed face, congested eyes, quick full pulse, and stertorous breathing. There is usually insensibility, and convulsions are not unfrequent. Death is often very sudden. This form, however, is also amenable to treatment.

(3) Ardent Thermic Fever.—This variety is characterized chiefly by the excessive development of fever (hyper- pyrexia), the temperature of the body rising at such times to 108° to 110° Fahr. or more. Accompanying this are the other symptoms of high febrile disturbance, such as great thirst, quick full pulse, pains throughout the body, head- ache, nausea, and vomiting, together with respiratory em- barrassment. After the attack has lasted for a variable period, often one or two days, death may ensue from collapse or from the case assuming the apoplectic form already described. But here too treatment may be suc- cessful if it is promptly applied.

Besides these, other varieties depending on the pro- minence of certain symptoms are occasionally met with. The chief changes in the body after death from heatstroke are those of anzmia of the brain and congestion of the lungs, together with softness of the heart and of the muscular tissues generally. The blood is dark and fluid and the blood corpuscles are somewhat altered in shape. Attacks of sunstroke are apt to leave traces of their effects upon the constitution, especially upon the nervous system. A liability to severe headache, which in many cases would seem to depend upon a condition of chronic meningitis, epileptic fits, mental irritability, and

alterations in the disposition are among the more important. It is often observed that heat in any form is ever afterwards ill borne, while there also appears to be an abnormal suscep- tibility to the action of stimulants. The mortality from sunstroke is estimated at from 40 to 50 per cent.

Treatment.—In respect of this discase means should be adopted to prevent attacks in the case of those who must necessarily be exposed to the sun. These consist in the wearing of loose clothing, with the exception of the headdress, which ought to be worn close to the head, in due attention to the function of the skin, and in the avoidance of alcoholic and other excesses. Cold water may be drunk in small quantities at frequent intervals. Sleeping in the open air in very hot seasons is recommended. ‘The treatment of a patient suffering from an attack necessarily depends upon the form it has assumed. In all cases he should if possible be at once removed into a shaded or cool place. Where the symptoms are mostly those of syncope and there is a tendency to death from heart failure, rest in the recumbent position, the use of diffusible stimulants, such as ammonia or cther, &c., together with friction or warmth applied to the extremities, are the means to be adopted. Where, on the other hand, the symptoms are those of apoplexy or of hyperpyrexia, by far the most successful results are obtained by the use of cold (the cold affusion, rubbing the surface with ice, enemata of ice-cold water). The effect is a marked lowering of the temperature, while at the same time a stimulus is given to the respiratory function. Mustard or turpentine applied to the nape of the neck or chest is a useful adjuvant. Should the temperature be lowered in this way but unconsciousness still persist, removal of the hair and blistering the scalp are recommended. The sub- sequent treatment will depend upon the nature of the resulting symptoms, but change to a cool climate is often followed by marked benefit. (J. O. A.)

SUPERIOR, Lake. See Lake and St Lawrence.

SURABAYA. See Java, vol, xiii. p. 605 sg. The population in 1880 was 122,234.

SURAKARTA, or Soto. See Java, vol. xiii. pp. 601, 606 sg. Its population was 124,041 in 1880.

SURAT, a district of British India, in the Guzerat division of Bombay presidency, lying between 20° 15’ and 21° 28’ N. lat. and 72° 38′ and 73° 30’ E. long. It has an area of 1662 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by Broach district and the native state of Baroda; on the E. by the states of Rajpipla, the Gaikwdr Bansda, and Dhar- ampur; on the 8. by Thana district and the Portuguese territory of Daman ; and on the W. by the Arabian Sea. Jt has a coast-line of 80 miles, consisting of a barren stretch of sand drift and salt marsh; behind that is a rich highly cultivated plain, nearly 60 miles in breadth at the em- bouchure of the Tapti, but narrowing to only 15 miles in the southern part; and on the north-east are the wild hills and jungle of the Dangs. The only important rivers are the Tapti and the Kim, the former of which is ordinarily navigable for native craft of from 18 to 36 tons. The district contains a large number of tanks for irrigation ; and a canal is projected from the Tapti with head works at Kamldpur, 35 miles from Surat. The fauna of the dis- trict consists of a few tigers, stragglers from the jungles of Bansda and Dharampur, besides leopards, bears, wild boars, wolves, hyzenas, spotted deer, and antelopes. The climate of Surat varies with the distance from the sea. Near the coast, under the influence of the sea-breeze, an equable temperature prevails, but 8 to 11 miles inland the breeze ceases to blow. The coast also possesses a much

lighter rainfall than the interior, the annual average ranging from 30 inches in Olpad to 72 in Chikhli, while at Surat city the average is 46 inches. The Bombay, Baroda, and Central India Railway runs through the district from north to south. A magnificent iron-girder bridge crosses the Tapti at Surat city.

The census of 1881 returned the population of Surat at 614,198 (306,015 males, 308,183 females), of whom Hindus numbered 415,031, Mohammedans 55,547, Parsis 12,593, and aboriginals 118,664. There are only two towns in the district with a population exceed- ing 5000,—namely, Surat (g.v.) and Bulsar (13,229). The culti- vated area in 1884-85 was returned at 726,583 acres, and the area available for cultivation at 81,663. The total area of crops in 1884- 85 was 550,233 acres, including 66,096 twice cropped. Rice occu- pied 103,972 acres, wheat 38,617, and jodr

108,644; cotton is also largely cultivated, and its culture is greatly increasing. Grain, cotton, timber, oil, sugar and molasses, and piece goods are the chief articles of export. Almost the whole female population is engaged in spinning cotton thread, and the weaving of cotton cloth in hand looms is carried on in the chief towns; silk is also manu- factured in considerable quantities, as well as brocades and em- broidery. In 1884-85 the revenue of the district amounted to £378,061, of which the land-tax contributed £268,644. Surat was one of the earliest parts of India brought into close relations with European countries, and its history merges almost entirely into that of its capital, long the greatest maritime city of the peninsula. By an arrangement made in 1799 the English were placed in posses- sion of Surat city and the town of Rander; subsequent cessions under the treaties of Bassein (1802) and Poona (1817), together with the lapse of the Mandvi state in 1839, brought the district into its present shape. Since the introduction of British rule the district has remained comparatively tranquil ; and even during the period of the mutiny peace was not disturbed, owing in a great mea- sure to the steadfast loyalty of its leading Mohammedan families.

SURAT, capital and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated in 21° 9’ 30” N. lat. and 72° 54’ 15” EK. long., on the southern bank of the Tapti, distant from the sea 14 miles by water and 10 by land. Its origin appears to be comparatively modern, tradition assigning the foundation of the town to the beginning of the 16th century. As early as 1514 it was described by the Portuguese traveller Barbosa as a “very important seaport.” During the reigns of Akbar, Jahangir, and Shéh Jahan it rose to be the chief commercial city of India. From 1573 to 1612 the Portuguese were undis- puted masters of the Surat seas and part of the seaboard. But shortly after 1612 the city of Surat became the seat of a presidency under the English East India Company, and the Dutch also had made it their principal factory in India. During the 18th century it probably ranked as the most populous city of India, its population being at one time estimated as high as 800,000; but with the transfer of its trade to Bombay the numbers rapidly fell off, until in 1847 its inhabitants numbered only 80,000. Thenceforward the city began to retrieve its position, and in 1881 its population numbered 107,154 (54,524 males and 52,630 females).

SURBITON, a suburb of Kingston in Surrey, England, is finely situated on the river Thames, 12 miles south-west of London by the London and South-Western Railway. It consists chiefly of villa residences embosomed in woods and gardens. Along the river an esplanade has been con- structed, forming a pleasant promenade. Surbiton is the headquarters of the Kingston Rowing Club and the Thames Sailing Club. The recreation ground, in connexion with which there is a reading-room and library, is much fre- quented for athletic meetings and bicycle races. In the town there is a cottage hospital. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 1000 acres) in 1871 was 7642, and in 1881 it was 9406.

SURETY, in law, is the party liable under a contract of GUARANTEE (9.v.). In criminal practice sureties bound by REcoGNIZANCE (q.v.) are a means of obtaining compliance with the order of a court of justice, whether to keep the peace or otherwise.

SURFACE, CONGRUENCE, COMPLEX. In the article CurvE the subject was treated from an historical point of view for the purpose of showing how the leading ideas of the theory were successively arrived at. These leading ideas apply to surfaces, but the ideas peculiar to surfaces are scarcely of the like fundamental nature, being rather developments of the former set in their application to a more advanced portion of geometry; there is conse- quently less occasion for the historical mode of treatment. Curves in space were briefly considered in the same article, and they will not be discussed here; but it is proper to refer to them in connexion with the other notions of solid geometry. In plane geometry the elementary figures are the point and the line; and we then have the curve, which may be regarded as a singly infinite system of points, and also as a singly infinite system of lines. In solid geo- metry the elementary figures are the point, the line, and the plane; we have, moreover, first, that which under one aspect is the curve and under another aspect the develop- able (or torse), and which may be regarded asa singly in- finite system of points, of lines, or of planes; and secondly, the surface, which may be regarded as a doubly infinite system of points or of planes, and also as a special triply infinite system of lines. (The tangent lines of a surface are a special complex.) As distinct particular cases

of the first figure we have the plane curve and the cone, and as a particular case of the second figure the ruled surface, regulus, or singly infinite system of lines 5 we have, be- sides, the congruence or doubly infinite system of lines and the complex or triply infinite system of lines. And thus crowds of theories arise which have hardly any ana- logues in plane geometry; the relation of a curve to the various surfaces which can be drawn through it, and that of a surface to the various curves which can be drawn upon it, are different in kind from those which in plane geometry most nearly correspond to them,—the relation of a system of points to the different curves through them and that of a curve to the systems of points upon it. In particular, there is nothing in plane geometry to correspond to the theory of the curves of curvature of a surface. Again, to the single theorem of plane geometry, that a line is the shortest distance between two points, there correspond in solid geometry two extensive and difficult theories, —that of the geodesic lines on a surface and that of the minimal surface, or surface of minimum area, for a given boundary. And it would be easy to say more in illustration of the great extent and complexity of the subject.

Surfaces in General; Torses, dc.

1. A surface may be regarded as the locus of a doubly in- finite system of points, —that is, the locus of the system of points determined by a single equation UV = (*a, y, z, 1)”, =0, between the Cartesian coordinates (to fix the ideas, say rectangular coordinates) x, y, 2; or, if we please, by a single homogeneous relation U = (*Sx, y, 2, w)”, =0, between the quadriplanar coordinates 2, Y,2,w. The degree n of the equation is the order of the surface 3 and this defini- tion of the order agrees with the geometrical one, that the order of the surface is equal to the number of the inter- sections of the surface by an arbitrary line. Starting from the foregoing point definition of the surface, we might develop the notions of the tangent line and the tangent plane; but it will be more convenient to consider the sur- face ab initio from the more general point of view in its relation to the point, the line, and the plane.

2. Mention has been made of the plane curve and the cone; it 1s proper to recall that the order of a plane curve 1s equal to the number of its

intersections by an arbitrary line (in the plane of the curve), and that its class is equal to the number of tangents to the curve which pass through

an arbitrary point (in the plane of the curve). The cone is a figure correlative to the plane curve: corresponding: to the plane of the curve we have the vertex of the cone, to its tangents the generating lines of the cone, and to its. points the tangent planes of the cone. But from a differ- ent point of view we may consider the generating lines of the cone as corresponding to the points of the curve and its tangent planes as corresponding to the tangents of the curve. From this point of view we define the order of the cone as equal to the number of its intersections (generating lines) by an arbitrary plane through the vertex, and its. class as equal to the number of the tangent planes which pass through an arbitrary line through the vertex. And in the same way that a plane curve has singularities (singular points and singular tangents) so a cone has singularities. (singular generating lines and singular tangent planes).

3. Consider now a surface in connexion with an arbi- trary line. The line meets the surface in a certain number of points, and, as already mentioned, the order of the sur- face is equal to the number of these intersections. We have through the line a certain number of tangent planes of the surface, and the class of the surface is equal to the number of these tangent planes.

But, further, through the line imagine a plane; this. meets the surface in a curve the order of which is equal (as is at once seen) to the order of the surface. Again, on the line imagine a point; this is the vertex of a cone cir- cumscribing the surface, and the class of this cone is equal (as is at once seen) to the class of the surface. The tangent. lines of the surface which lie in the plane are nothing else than the tangents of the plane section, and thus form a. singly infinite series of lines; similarly, the tangent lines of the surface which pass through the point are nothing else than the generating lines of the circumscribed cone, and thus form a singly infinite series of lines. But, if we: consider those tangent lines of the surface which are at once in the plane and through the point, we see that they are finite in number; and we define the rank of a surface as equal to the number of tangent lines which lie in a given plane and pass through a given point in

that plane. It at once follows that the class of the plane section and the order of the circumscribed cone are each equal to the rank of the surface, and are thus equal to each other. It may be noticed that for a general surface (**{wx, y, z, wy", 0} Ge order without point singularities the rank is a, = n(n — 1), and the class is n', = n(n —1)?; this implies (what is in fact. the case) that the circumscribed cone has line singularities, for otherwise its class, that is the class of the surface, would be a(a — 1), which is not = n(n —1)**.

4. In the last preceding number the notions of the tangent line and the tangent plane have been assumed as known, but they require to be further explained in refer- ence to the original point definition of the surface. Speak- ing generally, we may say that the points of the surface consecutive to a given point on it lie in a plane which is the tangent plane at the given point, and conversely the given point is the point of contact of this tangent plane, and that any line through the point of contact and in the tangent plane is a tangent line touching the surface at the. point of contact. Hence we see at once that the tangent line is any line meeting the surface in two consecutive points, or—what is the same thing—a line meeting the surface in the point of contact counting as two intersec- tions and in »—2 other points. But, from the foregoing notion of the tangent plane as a plane containing the point of contact and the consecutive points of the surface, the passage to the true definition of the tangent plane is not equally obvious. A plane in general meets the surface. of the order » in a curve of that order without double points ; but the plane may be such that the curve has a

double point, and when this is so the plane is a tangent plane having the double point for its point of contact. The double point is either an acnode (isolated point), then the surface at the point in question is convex towards (that is, concave away from) the tangent plane; or else it is a crunode, and the surface at the point in question is then concavo-convex, that is, it has its two curvatures in opposite senses (see infra, No. 16). Observe that in either case any line whatever in the plane and through the point meets the surface in the points in which it meets the plane curve, namely, in the point of

contact, which gua double point counts as two intersections, and in 2 — 2 other points ; that is, we have the preceding definition of the tangent line.

5. The complete enumeration and discussion of the singularities of a surface is a question of extreme difficulty which has not yet been solved! A plane curve has point singularities and line singularities ; corresponding to these we have for the surface isolated point singularities and isolated plane singularities, but there are besides con- tinuous singularities applying to curves on or torses circum- scribed to the surface, and it is among these that we have the non-special singularities which play the most important part in the theory. Thus the plane curve represented by the general equation **({x, y, 2)"=0, of any given order , has the non-special line singularities of inflexions and double tangents ; corresponding to this the surface represented by the general equation (**{z, y, 2, w)" =0, of any given order , has, not the isolated plane sin- gularities, but the continuous singularities of the spinode curve or torse and the node-couple curve or torse. A plane may meet the surface in a curve having (1) a cusp (spinode) or (2) a pair of double points; in each case there is a singly infinite system of such singular tangent planes, and the locus of the points of contact is the curve, the envelope of the tangent planes the torse. The reciprocal singularities to these are the nodal curve and the cuspidal curve: the surface may intersect or touch itself along a curve in such wise that, cutting the surface by an arbitrary plane, the curve of intersection has at each intersection of the plane with the curve on the surface (1) a double point (node) or (2) acusp. Observe that these are singularities not occurring in the surface represented by the general equation (*%x, y, 2, w)"=0 of any order; observe further that in the case of both or either of these singularities the definition of the tangent plane must be modified. A tangent plane is a plane such that there is in the plane section a double point in addition to the nodes or cusps at the intersections with the singular lines on the surface.

6. As regards isolated singularities, it will be sufficient to mention the point singularity of the conical point (or enicnode) and the corresponding plane singularity of the conic of contact (or cnictrope). In the former case we have a point such that the consecutive points, instead of lying in a tangent plane, lie on a quadric cone, having the point for its vertex; in the latter case we have a plane touching the surface along a conic; that is, the complete

intersection of the surface by the plane is made up of the conic taken twice and of a residual curve of the order n — 4.

7. We may, in the general theory of surfaces, consider either a surface and its reciprocal surface, the recipro- cal surface being taken to be the surface enveloped by the polar planes (in regard to a given quadric surface) of the points of the original surface; or—what is better—we

1 Ina plane curve the only singularities which need to be considered are those that present themselves in Pliicker's equations, for every higher singularity whatever is equivalent to a certain number of nodes, cusps, inflexions, and double tangents. As regards a surface, no such reduction of the higher singularities has as yet been made.

may consider a given surface in reference to the reciprocal relations of its order, rank, class, and singularities. In either case we have a series of unaccented letters and a corresponding series of accented letters, and the relations between them are such that we may in any equation inter- change the accented and the unaccented letters; in some cases an unaccented letter may be equal to the correspond- ing accented letter. Thus, let , 2' be as before the order and the class of the surface, but, instead of immediately defining the rank, let a be used to denote the class of the plane section and a' the order of the circumscribed cone ; also let S, S' be numbers referring to the singularities. The form of the relations is a=a(=rank of surface) ; aw=n(n—-1)—S; n'=n(n-1-S; a=n'(n'-1)-S'; n=n'(n'—1)?— 8'. In these last equations §, S' are merely written down to denote proper corresponding com- binations of the several numbers referring to the singular- ities collectively denoted by S, S' respectively. The theory, as already mentioned, is a complex and difficult one, and it is not the intention to further develop it here.

8. A developable or torse corresponds to a curve in space in the same manner as a cone corresponds to a plane curve: although capable of representation by an equation U= (*ix, y, 2, w,)", =0, and so of coming under the foregoing point definition of a surface, it is an entirely distinct geo- metrical conception. We may indeed, gwa surface, regard it as a

surface characterized by the property that each of its tangent planes touches it, not at a single point, but along a line; this is equivalent to saying that it is the envelope, not of a doubly infinite series of planes, as is a proper surface, but of a singly infinite system of planes. But itis perhaps easier to regard it as the locus of a singly infinite system of lines, each line meeting the consecutive line, or, what is the same thing, the lines being tangent lines of a curvein space. The tangent plane is then the plane through two consecutive lines, or, what is the same thing, an oscu- lating plane of the curve, whence also the tangent plane intersects the surface in the generating line counting twice, and in a residual curve of the order »— 2. The curve is said to be the edge of regression of the developable, and it is a cuspidal curve thereof ; that is to say, any plane section of the developable has at each point of intersection with the edge of regression a cusp. A sheet of paper bent in any manner without crumpling gives a developable; but we cannot with a single sheet of paper properly exhibit the form in the neighbourhood of the edge of regression : we need two sheets connected along a plane curve, which, when the paper is bent, becomes the edge of regression and appears as a cuspidal curve on the surface.

It may be mentioned that the condition which must be satisfied in order that the equation U=0 shall represent a developable is H(U)=0; that is, the Hessian or functional determinant formed with the second differential coefficients of U must vanish in virtue of the equation U=0, or—what is the same thing—H(U) must contain U as a factor. If in Cartesian coordinates the equation is taken in the form 2—f(x, y)=0, then the condition is rt—s? =0 identically, where 7, s, ¢ denote as usual the second differential co- efficients of z in regard to x, y respectively.

9, A ruled surface or regulus is the locus of a singly infinite system of lines, where the consecutive lines do not intersect ; this is a true surface, for there is a doubly infinite series of tangent planes,—in fact any plane through any one of the lines is a tangent plane of the surface, touching it at a point on the line, and in such wise that, as the tangent plane turns about the line, the point of con- tact moves along the line. The complete intersection of the surface by the tangent plane is made up of the line counting once and of a residual curve of the order x —1. A quadric surface is a regulus in a twofold manner, for

there are on the surface two systems of lines each of which is aregulus. A cubic surface may be a regulus (see No. 11 infra).

Surfaces of the Orders 2, 8, and 4.

10. A surface of the second order or a quadric surface is a surface such that every line meets it in two points, or— what comes to the same thing—such that every plane section thereof is a conic or quadric curve. Such surfaces have been studied from every point of view. The only singular forms are when there is (1) a conical point (cnic- node), when the surface is a cone of the second order or quadricone ; (2) a conic of contact (cnictrope), when the surface is this conic; from a different point of view it is a surface aplatie or flattened surface. Excluding these de- generate forms, the surface is of the order, rank, and class each =2, and it has no singularities. Distinguishing the forms according to reality, we have the ellipsoid, the hyperboloid of two sheets, the hyperboloid of one sheet, the elliptic paraboloid, and the hyperbolic paraboloid (see GEOMETRY, ANALYTICAL). A particular case of the ellip- soid is the sphere ; in abstract geometry this is a quadric surface passing through a given quadric curve, the circle at infinity. The tangent plane of a quadric surface meets it in a quadric curve having a node, that is, in a pair of lines ; hence there are on the surface two singly infinite sets of lines. Two lines of the same set do not meet, but each line of the one set meets each line of the other set ; the surface is thus a regulus in a twofold manner. The lines are real for the hyperboloid of one sheet and for the hyperbolic paraboloid; for the other forms of surface they are imaginary.

11. We have next the surface of the third order or cubic surface, which has also been very completely studied. Such a surface may have isolated point singularities (cnic- nodes or points of higher singularity), or it may have a nodal line; we have thus 21+2,=23 cases, In the general case of a surface without any singularities, the order, rank, and class are=3, 6, 12 respectively. The surface has upon it 27 lines, lying by threes in 45 planes, which are triple tangent planes, Observe that the tangent plane is a plane meeting the surface in a curve having a node. For a surface of any given order there will be a certain number of planes each meeting the surface in a curve with 3 nodes, that is, triple tangent planes ; and, in the particular case

where n = 3, the cubic curve with 3 nodes is of course a set of 3 lines ; it is found that the number of triple tangent planes is, as just mentioned, = 45, This would give 135 lines, but through each line we have 5 such planes, and the number of lines is thus = 27. ‘The theory of the 27 lines is an extensive and interesting one ; in particular, it may be noticed that we can, in thirty-six ways, select a system of 6×6 lines, or “double sixer,” such that no 2 lines of the same set intersect each other, but that each line of the one set intersects each line of the other set.

A cubic surface having a nodal line is a ruled surface or regulus ; in fact any plane through the nodal line meets the surface in this line counting twice and in a residual line, and there is thus on the surface a singly infinite set of lines. There are two forms ; but the distinction between them need not be referred to here.

12. As regards quartic surfaces, only particular forms have been much studied. A quartic surface can have at most 16 conical points (cnicnodes) ; an instance of such a surface is Fresnel’s wave surface, which has 4 real cnienodes in one of the principal planes, 4 × 2 imaginary ones in the other two principal planes, and 4 imaginary ones at Infinity,—in all 16 cnicnodes ; the same surface has also 4

real + 12 imaginary planes each touching the surface along a circle (cnictropes),—in all 16 cnictropes. It was easy |

SURT AGE

by a mere homographic transformation to pass to the more general surface called the tetrahedroid; but this was itself only a particular form of the general surface with 16 cnicnodes and 16 cnictropes first. studied by Kummer. Quartic surfaces with a smaller number of cnicnodes have also been considered.

Another very important form is the quartic surface having a nodal conic; the nodal conic may be the circle at infinity, and we have then the so-called anallagmatic surface, otherwise the cyclide (which includes the particu- lar form called Dupin's cyclide). These correspond to the bicircular quartic curve of plane geometry. Other forms of quartic surface might be referred to.

Congruences and Complexes.

13. A congruence is a doubly infinite system of lines, A line depends on four parameters and can therefore be determined so as to satisfy four conditions; if only two conditions are imposed on the line we have a doubly infinite system of lines or a congruence. Jor instance, the lines meeting each of two given lines form a congruence, It is hardly necessary to remark that, imposing on the line one more condition, we have a ruled surface or regulus ; thus we can in an infinity of ways separate the congruence into a singly infinite system of reguli or of torses (see infra, No. 16).

Considering in connexion with the congruence two arbitrary lines, there will be in the congruence a deter- minate number of lines which meet each of these two lines; and the number of lines thus meeting the two lines is said to be the order-class of the congruence. If the two arbitrary lines are taken to intersect each other, the con- gruence lines which meet each of the two lines separate themselves into two sets,—those which lie in the plane of the two lines and those which pass through their intersec- tion, There will be in the former set a determinate number of congruence lines which is the order of the congruence, and in the latter set a determinate number of congruence lines which is the class of the congruence, In other words, the order of the congruence is equal to the number of congruence lines lying in an arbitrary plane, and its class to the number of congruence lines passing through an arbitrary point.

The following systems of lines form each of them a congruence :—(A) lines meeting each of two given curves ; (B) lines meeting a given curve twice; (C) lines meeting a given curve and touching a given surface ; (D) lines touch- ing each of two given surfaces ; (E) lines touching a given surface twice, or, say, the bitangents of a given surface.

The last case is the most general one; and conversely for a given congruence there will be in general a surface having the congruence lines for bitangents. This surface is said to be the focal surface of the congruence ; the general surface with 16 cnicnodes first presented itself in this manner as the focal surface of a congruence. But the focal surface may degenerate into the forms belonging to the other cases A, B, C, D.

14, A complex is a triply infinite system of lines, —for instance, the tangent lines of a surface. Considering an arbitrary point in connexion with the complex, the com- plex lines which pass through the point form a cone ; considering a plane in connexion with it, the complex lines which lie in the plane envelope a curve. It is easy to see that the class of the curve is equal to the order of the cone; in fact each of these numbers is equal to the number of complex lines which lie in an arbitrary plane and pass through an arbitrary point of that plane ; and we then say order of complex=order of curve ; rank of complex =class of curve=order of cone ; class of complex=class of cone. It is to be observed that, while

SURF #6 E

for a congruence there is in general a surface having the congruence lines for bitangents, for a complex there is not in general any surface having the complex lines for tangents ; the tangent lines of a surface are thus only a special form of complex. The theory of complexes first presented itself in the researches of Malus on systems of rays of light in connexion with double refraction.

15. The analytical theory as well of congruences ag of complexes is most easily carried out by means of the six coordinates of a line; viz., there are coordinates (a, 8, ¢, J, 9, ») connected by the equation af + bg + ch =0, and there- fore such that the ratios a :6:¢:f:g:h constitute a system of four arbitrary parameters. We have thus a congruence of the order 2 represented

by a single homogeneous equa- tion of that order (*fa, 6, c, f, 9, 2)”=0 between the six coordinates ; two such relations determine a congruence. But we have inregard to congruences the same difficulty as that which presents itself in regard to curves in space : it is not every congruence which can be represented com- pletely and precisely by two such equations.

The linear equation (*fa, 0, ¢,f,g,k)=0 represents a congruence of the first order or linear congruence; such congruences are interesting both in geometry and in con- nexion with the theory of forces acting on a rigid body.

Curves of Curvature ; Asymptotic Lines.

16. The normals of a surface form a congruence. In any congruence the lines consecutive to a given congruence lire do not in general meet this line; but there is a deter- minate number of consecutive lines which do meet it; or, attending for the moment to only one of these, say the congruence line is met by a consecutive congruence line. In particular, each normal is met by a consecutive normal; this again is met by a consecutive normal, and soon. That is, we have a singly infinite system of normals each meeting the consecutive normal, and so forming a torse; starting from different normals successively, we obtain a singly infinite system of such torses. But each normal is in fact met by two consecutive normals, and, using in the construction first the one and then the other of these, we obtain two singly infinite systems of torses each intersecting the given surface at right angles. In other words, if in place of the normal we consider the point on the surface, we obtain on the surface two singly infinite systems of curves such that for any curve of either system the normals at consecutive points intersect each other ; moreover, for each normal the torses of the two systems intersect each other at right angles ; and therefore for each point of the surface the curves of the two systems intersect each other at right angles. The two systems of curves are said to be the curves of curvature of the surface.

The normal is met by the two consecutive normals in two points which are the centres of curvature for the point on the surface ; these lie either on the same side of the point or on opposite sides, and the surface has at the point

in question like curvatures or opposite curvatures in the two cases respectively (see supra, No. 4).

17. In immediate connexion with the curves of curvature we have the so-called asymptotic curves (Haupt-tangenten- linien). ‘The tangent plane at a point of the surface cuts the surface in a curve having at that point a node. Thus we have at the point of the surface two directions of passage to a consecutive point, or, say, two elements of arc ; and, passing along one of these to the consecutive point, and thence to a consecutive point, and so on, we obtain on the surface a curve. Starting successively from different points of the surface we thus obtain a singly infinite system of curves; or, using first one and then the other of the two directions, we obtain two singly infinite systems of curves, which are the curves above referred to. The two

curves at any point are equally inclined to the two curves of curvature at that point, or—what is the same thing— the supplementary angles formed by the two asymptotic lines are bisected by the two curves of curvature. In the case of a quadric surface the asymptotic curves are the two systems of lines on the surface. .

Geodesic Lines.

18. A geodesic line (or curve) is a shortest curve on a surface ; more accurately, the element of arc between two consecutive points of a geodesic line is a shortest are on the surface. We are thus led to the fundamental property that at each point of the curve the osculating plane of the curve passes through the normal of the surface $ an, other words, any two consecutive arcs PP’, PP’ arevan plano with the normal at P’. Starting from a given point P on the surface, we have a singly infinite system of geodesics proceeding along the surface in the direction of the several tangent lines at the point P ; and, if the direction PP’ is given, the property gives a construction by successive elements of arc for the required geodesic line.

Considering the geodesic lines which proceed from a given point P of the surface, any particular geodesic line is or is not again intersected by the consecutive generating line; if it is thus intersected, the generating line is a

shortest line on the surface up to, but not beyond, the point at which it is first intersected by the consecutive generating line; if it is not intersected, it continues a shortest line for the whole course.

In the analytical theory both of geodesic lines and of the curves of curvature, and in other parts of the theory of surfaces, it is very convenient to consider the rectangular coordinates x, y, 2 of a point of the surface as given functions of two independent parameters p,q; the form of these functions of course determines the surface, since by the elimination of p, gfrom the three equations we obtain the equation in the coordinates x, y,z. We have for the geodesic lines a differential equation of the second order between p and g; the general solution contains two arbi- trary constants, and is thus capable of representing the geodesic line which can be drawn from a given point in a given direction on the surface. In the case of a quadric surface the solution involves hyperelliptic integrals of the first kind, depending on the square root of a sextic function.

Curvilinear Coordinates.

19. The expressions of the coordinates x, y, z in terms of p, g may contain a parameter 7, and, if this is regarded as a given constant, these expressions will as before refer to a point on a given surface. But, if p, g, 7 are regarded as three independent parameters, x, y,2 will be the co- ordinates of a point in space, determined by means of the three parameters p, g,7; these parameters are said to be the curvilinear coordinates, or (in a generalized sense of the term) simply the coordinates of the point. We arrive otherwise at the notion by taking p, g,r each as a given function of x, y,2; say we have p=/,(2,y,2), g=o(x,4,2), r= f,(x,y,2), Which equations of course lead to expressions for p, g,7 each as a function of x,y,z. The first equation determines a singly infinite set of surfaces: for any given value of » we have a surface; and similarly the second and third equations determine each a singly infinite set of surfaces. If, to fix the ideas, f,, f,, f4 are taken to denote each a rational and integral function of x, y,z, then two surfaces of the same set will not intersect each other, and through a given point of space there will pass one surface of each set; that is, the point will be determined as a point of intersection of three surfaces belonging to the three sets respectively; moreover, the whole of space will be divided by the three sets

of surfaces into a triply infinite system of elements, each of them being a parallelepiped.

Orthotomic Surfaces; Parallel Surfaces.

90. The three sets of surfaces may be such that the three surfaces through any point of space whatever inter- sect each other at right angles; and they are in this case said to be orthotomic. The term curvilinear coordinates was almost appropriated by Lamé, to whom this theory is chiefly due, to the case in question: assuming that the equations p=/,(,y,2), g=fo(%2), T= S(2Y;2) refer to a system of orthotomic surfaces, we have in the restricted sense 7, g, 7 as the curvilinear coordinates of the point.

An interesting special case is that of confocal quadric surfaces. The general equation of a surface confocal with

ears Oe ae li i 7 ee Le the ellipsoi mrptantis Pane Ret ae 3 and, if in this equation we consider «,¥,z as given, we have for @ a cubic equation with three real roots p, q, 7, and thus we have through the point three real surfaces, one an ellipsoid, one a hyperboloid of one sheet, and one a hyperboloid of two sheets.

21. The theory is connected with that of curves of cur- vature by Dupin's theorem. Thus in any system of ortho- tomic surfaces each surface of any one of the three sets is intersected by the surfaces of the other two sets in its curves of curvature.

22. No one of the three sets of surfaces is altogether arbitrary: in the equation p=/,(«,y,2), p is not an arbi- trary function of «#,y,2, but it must satisfy a certain partial differential equation of the third order. Assuming that p has this value, we have q=/,(z,y,2) and r=/,(z,y, 2) determinate functions of x,y,z such that the three sets of surfaces form an orthotomic system.

23. Starting from a given surface, it has been seen (No. 16) that the normals along the curves of curvature form two systems of torses intersecting each

other, and also the given surface, at right angles. But there are, intersecting the two systems of torses at right angles, not only the given surface, but a singly infinite system of surfaces. If at each point of the given surface we measure off along the normal one and the same distance at pleasure, then the locus of the points thus obtained is a surface cutting all the normals of the given surface at right angles, or, in other words, having the same normals as the given surface; and it is therefore a parallel surface to the given surface. Hence the singly infinite system of parallel surfaces and the two singly infinite systems of torses form together a set of orthotomic surfaces. –

The Minimal Surface.

24, This is the surface of minimum area—more ac- curately, a surface such that, for any indefinitely small closed curve which can be drawn on it round any point, the area of the surface is less than it is for any other surface whatever through the closed curve. It at once follows that the surface at every point is concavo-con-

vex ; for, if at any point this was not the case, we could, by cutting the surface by a plane, describe round the point an indefinitely small closed plane curve, and the plane area within the closed curve would then be less than the area of the element of surface within the same curve. The condition leads to a partial differential equa- tion of the second order for the determination of the minimal surface: considering z as a function of a, Ys and writing as usual p, q, 7, s, ¢ for the first and second differential coefficients of zin regard to a, y respectively, the equation (as first shown by Lagrange) is (1 9*)r ~ 2pgs(1+p*)t=0, or, as this may also be written, d

vi 2 : dy Via ag Jitpr@ =). “Phe general integral contains of course arbitrary functions, and, if we imagine these so determined that the surface may pass through a given closed curve, and if, moreover, there is but one minimal surface passing through that curve, we have the solution of the problem of finding the surface of minimum area within the same curve. The surface continued be- yond the closed curve is a minimal surface, but it is not of necessity or in general a surface of minimum area for an arbitrary bounding

curve not wholly included within the given closed curve. It is hardly necessary to remark that the plane is a minimal surface, and that, if the given closed curve is a plane curve, the plane is the proper solution; that is, the plane area within the given closed curve is less than the area for any other surface through the same curve. The given closed curve is not of necessity a single curve: it may be, for instance, a skew polygon of four or more sides.

The partial differential equation was dealt with in a very remarkable manner by Riemann. From the second

qda — pdy VIi+p+¢ =a complete differential, or, putting this=d we introduce into the solution a variable 6 which combines with z in the forms z+i¢ (¢= V—TI as usual). The boundary conditions have to be satisfied by the determination of the conjugate variables », 7’ as functions of z+7¢, 2—7i¢ or, say, of 4, Z’ respectively, and by writing S, S’ to denote «+7y, a —vy respectively. Riemann obtains finally two ordinary differential equations of the first order in S, §’, n, 7’, Z, Z, and the results are completely worked out in some very interesting special cases.

The memoirs on various parts of the general subject are very numerous; references to many of them will be found in Salmon’s Treatise on the Analytic Geometry of Three Dimensions, 4th ed., Dublin, 1882 (the most comprehensive work on solid geometry) ; for the minimal surface (which is not considered there) see Memoirs Xvili. and xxvi. in Riemann’s Gesammelte mathematische Wi erke, Leipsic, 1876; the former—‘‘Ueber die Fliche vom kleinsten Inhalt bei gegebener Begrenzung,” as published in Gétt. Abhandl., vol. xiii. (1866-67)—contains an introduction by Hattendorff giving the history of the question. (A. CA.)

SURGEONS, CoLiece or. See Socretizs.

form given above it appears that we have

SURGERY

Part J.—History.

pe in all countries is as old as human needs, A

certain skill in the stanching of blood, the extraction of arrows, the binding up of wounds, the supporting of broken limbs by splints, and the like, together with an in- stinctive reliance on the healing power of the tissues, has been common to men everywhere. In both branches of the Aryan stock surgical practice (as well as medical) reached a high degree of perfection at a very early period. Itisa matter of controversy whether the Greeks got their medicine (or any of it) from the Hindus (through the medium of the Egyptian priesthood), or whether the Hindus owed

that high degree of medical and surgical knowledge and skill which is reflected in Charaka and Suéruta (commenta- tors of uncertain date on the Yajur-Veda; see SANSKRIT, vol. xxi. p. 294) to their contact with Western civilization after the campaigns of Alexander. The evidence in favour of the former view is ably stated by Wise in the Intro- duction to his History of Medicine among the Asiatics (London, 1868). The correspondence between the Suéruta and the Hippocratic Collection is closest in the sections relating to the ethics of medical practice ; the description, also, of lithotomy in the former agrees almost exactly with the account of the Alexandrian practice as given by Celsus. But there are certainly some dexterous operations described

[aistory. |

in Suéruta (such as the rhinoplastic) which were of native invention ; the elaborate and lofty ethical code appears to be of pure Brahmanical origin; and the very copious materia medica (which included arsenic, mercury, zinc, and many other substances of permanent value) does not contain a single article of foreign source. There is evi- dence also (in Arrian, Strabo, and other writers) that the East enjoyed a proverbial reputation for medical and sur- gical wisdom at the time of Alexander’s invasion. We may give the first place, then, to the Eastern branch of the Aryan race in a sketch of the rise of surgery, leaving as insoluble the question of the date of the Sanskrit com- pendiums or compilations which pass under the names of two representative persons, Charaka and Susruta (the dates assigned to these ranging as widely as 500 years on each side of the Christian era).

The Suésruta speaks throughout of a single class of practitioners who undertook both surgical and medical eases. Nor were there any fixed degrees or orders of

what noticeably in the ancient surgery of the Hindus 3 and the reason of their backwardness in that matter was doubt- less their want of familiarity with the course of the arteries and with the arterial circulation. Besides the operation already mentioned, the abdomen was opened by a short Incision below the umbilicus slightly to the left of the middle line, for the purpose of removing intestinal con- cretions or other obstruction (laparotomy). Only a small segment of the bowel was exposed at one time; the con- cretion when found was removed, the intestine stitched together again, anointed with ghee and honey, and returned into the cavity. Lithotomy was practised, without the staff. There was a plastic operation for the restoration of the nose, the skin being taken from the cheek adjoining, and the vascularity kept up by a bridge of tissue. The ophthalmic surgery included extraction of cataract. Ob- stetric operations were various, including cesarean section and crushing the foetus.

The medication and constitutional treatment in surgical Medical cases were in keeping with the general care and elaborate- treat- ness of their practice, and with the copiousness of their ™°

skill within the profession; even lithotomy, which at Alexandria was assigned to specialists, was to be under-

taken by any one, the leave of the rajah having been first obtained. The only distinction recognized between medicine and surgery was in the inferior order of barbers, nail-trimmers, ear-borers, tooth-drawers, and phlebotomists, who were outside the Brahmanical caste.

Susruta describes more than one hundred surgical instru- ments, made of steel. They should have good handles and firm joints, be well polished, and sharp enough to divide a hair ; they should be perfectly clean, and kept in

flannel in a wooden box. They included various shapes of scalpels, bistouries, lancets, scarifiers, saws, bone-nippers, scissors, trocars, and needles. There were also blunt hooks, loops, probes (including a caustic-holder), directors, sounds, scoops, and forceps (for polypi, &c.), as well as catheters, syringes, a rectal speculum, and bougies. There were fourteen varieties of bandage. The favourite form of splint was made of thin slips of bamboo bound together with string and cut to the length required. Wise says that he has frequently used ‘this admirable splint,” particularly for fractures of the thigh, humerus, radius, and ulna, and it has been subsequently adopted in the English army under the name of the “ patent rattan-cane splint.”

Fractures were diagnosed, among other signs, by cre- pitus. Dislocations were elaborately classified, and the differential diagnosis given; the treatment was by trac- tion and countertraction, cireumduction, and other dexter- ous manipulation. Wounds were divided into incised, punctured, lacerated, contused, &c. Cuts of the head and face were sewed. Skill in extracting foreign bodies was carried to a great height, the magnet being used for iron particles under certain specified circumstances. Inflam- mations were treated by the usual antiphlogistic regimen and appliances ; venesection was practised at several other points besides the bend of the elbow; leeches were more often resorted to than the lancet; cupping also was in general use. Poulticing, fomenting, and the like were done as at present. Amputation was done now and then, notwithstanding the want of a good control over the hemorrhage ; boiling oil was applied to the stump, with pressure by means of a cup-formed bandage, pitch being sometimes added. Tumours and enlarged lymphatic glands were cut out, and an arsenical salve applied to the raw surfaces to prevent recurrence. Abdominal dropsy and hydrocele were treated by tapping with a trocar; and varieties of hernia were understood, omental hernia being removed by operation on the scrotum. Aneurisms were known, but not treated; the use of the ligature on the continuity of an artery, as well as on the cut end of it ina flap, is the one thing that a modern surgeon will miss some-

materia medica. Ointments and other external applications had usually a basis of ghee (or clarified butter), and con- tained, among other things, such metals as arsenic, zinc, copper, mercury, and sulphate of iron. For every

emer- gency and every known form of disease there were ela- borate and minute directions in the gAstras, which were taught by the physician-priests to the young aspirants.

Book learning was considered of no use without experience Training and manual skill in operations; the different surgical of prac-

operations were shown to the student upon wax spread on a board, on gourds, cucumbers, and other soft fruits; tap- ping and puncturing were practised on a leathern bag filled with water or soft mud; scarifications and bleeding on the fresh hides of animals from which the hair had been removed ; puncturing and lancing upon the hollow stalks of water-lilies or the vessels of dead animals; bandaging was practised on flexible models of the human body; sutures on leather and cloth; the plastic operations on dead animals ; and the application of caustics and cauteries on living animals. A knowledge of anatomy was held to be necessary, but it does not appear that it was systematically acquired by dissection. Superstitions and theurgic ideas were diligently kept up so as to impress the vulgar. The whole body of teaching, itself the slow growth of much close observation and profound thinking during the vigor- ous period of Aryan progress, was given out in later times as a revelation from heaven, and as resting upon an absolute authority. Pathological principles were not wanting, but they were derived from a purely arbitrary or conventional physiology (wind, bile, and phlegm) ; and the whole elaborate fabric of rules and directions, great though its utility must have been for many generations, was without the quickening power of reason and freedom, and became inevitably stiff and decrepit.

The Chinese appear to have been far behind the Hindus Chinese,

in their knowledge of medicine and surgery, notwith- standing that China profited at the same time as Tibet by the missionary propagation of Buddhism. Surgery in particular had hardly developed among them beyond the merest rudiments, owing to their religious respect for dead bodies and their unwillingness to draw blood or otherwise interfere with the living structure. Their anatomy and physiology have been from the earliest times unusually fanciful, and their surgical practice has con- sisted almost entirely of external applications. Tumours and boils were treated by scarifications or incisions. The distinctive Chinese surgical invention is acupuncture, or the

insertion of fine needles, of hardened silver or gold, for an inch or more (with a twisting motion) into the XXII. — 85

674

seats of pain or inflammation. Wise says that “the needle is allowed to remain in that part several minutes, or in some cases of neuralgia for days, with great advantage”; rheumatism and chronic gout were among the localized pains so treated. There are 367 points specified where needles may be inserted without injuring great vessels and vital organs. ;

Cupping-vessels made of cow-horn have been found in ancient Egyptian tombs. On monuments and the walls of temples are figures of patients bandaged, or under- going operation at the hands of surgeons. In museum collections of Egyptian antiquities there are lancets, forceps, knives, probes, scissors, &c. Ebers interprets a passage in the papyrus discovered by him as relating to the operation of cataract. Surgical instruments for the ear are figured, and artificial teeth have been found in mummies. Mummies have also been found with well-set fractures. Herodotus describes Egypt, notwithstanding its fine climate, as being full of medical practitioners, who were all “specialists.” The ophthalmic surgeons were celebrated, and practised at the court of Cyrus.

As in the case of the Sanskrit medical writings, the earliest Greek compendiums on surgery bear witness to a long organic growth of knowledge and skill through many generations. In the Homeric picture of society the surgery is that of the battlefield, and it is of the most meagre kind. Achilles is concerned about the restora- tion to health of Machaon for the reason that his skill in cutting out darts and applying salves to wounds was not the least valuable service that a hero could render to the Greek host. Machaon probably represents an amateur, whose taste had led him, as it did Melampus, to converse with centaurs and to glean some of their traditional wisdom. Between that primitive state of civilization and the date of the first Greek treatises there had been a long interval of gradual progress. The surgery of the Hippo- Hippo- cratic Collection (age of Pericles) bears every evidence of cratic finish and elaboration. The two treatises on fractures and mse” on dislocations respectively are hardly surpassed in some

ways by the writings of the present mechanical age. Of the four dislocations of the shoulder the displacement downwards into the axilla is given as the only one at all common. The two most usual dislocations of the femur were backwards on to the dorsum ilii and forwards on to the obturator region. Fractures of the spinous processes of the vertebree are described, and caution advised against trusting those who would magnify that injury into fracture of the spine itself. Tubercles (piuara) are given as one of the causes of spinal curvature, an anticipation of Pott's diagnosis. In all matters of treatment there was the same fertility of resource as in the Hindu practice ; the most noteworthy point is that shortening was by many regarded as inevitable after simple fracture of the femur. Fractures and dislocations were the most complete chapters of the Hippocratic surgery ; the whole doctrine and practical art of them had arisen (like sculpture) with no help from dissection, and obviously owed its ex- cellence to the opportunities of the palestra. The next most elaborate chapter is that on wounds and injuries of the head, which refers them to a minute subdivision, and includes the depressed fracture and the contrecoup. 'Tre- phining was the measure most commonly resorted to, even where there was no compression. Numerous forms of wounds and injuries of other parts are specified. Ruptures, piles, rectal polypi, fistula in ano, and prolapsus ani were among the other conditions treated. The amputation or excision of tumours does not appear to have been under- taken so freely asin Hindu surgical practice; nor was litho- tomy performed except by a specially expert person now and then. The diagnosis of empyema was known, and the

Egyptian.

Greek,

SURGERY

[HISTORY,

treatment of it was by an incision in the intercostal space and evacuation of the pus. Among their instruments were forceps, probes, directors, syringes, rectal speculum, catheter, and various kinds of cautery.

Between the Hippocratic era and the founding of the Alex. | school of Alexandria (about 300 B.c.), there is nothing of 2ncrin surgical progress to dwell upon. The Alexandrian epoch Period, stands out prominently by reason of the enthusiastic | cultivation of human anatomy—there are allegations also of vivisection—at the hands of Herophilus and Erasistratus. The sum and substance of this movement appears to have been precision of diagnosis (not unattended with pedantic minuteness), boldness of operative procedure, subdivision of practice into a number of specialities, but hardly a single addition to the stock of physiological or pathological ideas, or even to the traditional wisdom of the Hippocratic time. “The surgeons of the Alexandrian school were all distinguished by the nicety and complexity of their dressings and bandagings, of which they invented a great variety.” Herophilus boldly used the knife even on internal organs such as the liver and spleen, which latter he regarded “as of little consequence in the animal economy.” He treated retention of urine by a particular kind of catheter, which long bore his name. Lithotomy was much practised by a few specialists, and one of them (Ammonius) is said to have used an instrument for breaking the stone in the bladder into several pieces when it was too large to remove whole. A sinister story of the time is that concerning Antiochus, son of Alexander, king of Syria, who was done to death by the lithotomists when he was ten years old, under the pretence that he had stone in the bladder, the instigator of the crime being his guardian and supplanter Diodotus.

The treatise of Celsus De re medica (reign of Augustus) reflects the state of surgery in the ancient world for a period of several centuries: it is the best record of the Alexandrian practice itself, and it may be taken to stand for the Roman practice of the period following. Great jealousy of Greek medicine and surgery was expressed by many of the Romans of the republic, notably by Cato the Elder (234- Cato 149 B.c.), who himself practised on his estate according to Major, the native traditions. His medical observations are given in De re rustica. In reducing dislocations he made use of the following incantation: ‘“ Huat hanat ista pista sista damiato damnaustra.” The first Greek surgeon who established himself in Rome is said to have been Archagathus, whose fondness for the knife and cautery at length led to his expulsion by the populace. It was in the person of Asclepiades, the contemporary and friend of Cicero, that the Hellenic

medical practice acquired a permanent footing in Rome. This eloquent and plausible Greek confined his practice mostly to medicine, but he is credited with practising the operation of tracheotomy. He is one of those whom Tertullian quotes as abandoning themselves to vivisections for the gratification of their curiosity : “Asclepiades capras suas querat sine corde balantes et muscas suas abigat sine capite volantes” (De anima, 15). The next figure in the surgical history is Celsus, who Celsus. devotes the 7th and 8th books of his De re medica exclu- sively to surgery. There is not much in these beyond the precepts of the Brahmanical sAstras and the maxims and rules of Greek surgery. Plastic operations for the restora- tion of the nose, lips, and ears are described at some length, as well as the treatment of hernia by taxis and operation ; in the latter it was recommended to apply the actual cautery to the canal after the hernia had been returned. The celebrated description of lithotomy is that of the operation as practised long before in India and at Alex- andria. The treatment of sinuses in various regions is

dwelt upon, and in the case of sinuses of the thoracic wall

resection of the rib is mentioned. Trephining has the same prominent place assigned to it as in the Greek surgery. The resources of contemporary surgery may be estimated by the fact that subcutaneous urethrotomy was practised when the urethra was blocked by a calculus. Amputation of an extremity is described in detail for the first time in surgical literature. Mention is made of a variety of ophthalmic operations, which were done by specialists after the Alexandrian fashion.

Galen’s practice of surgery was mostly in the early part of his career (born 131 a.p.), and there is little of special surgical interest in his writings, great as their importance is for anatomy, physiology, and the general doctrines of disease. Among the operations credited to him are resec- tion of a portion of the sternum for caries and ligature of the temporal artery. It may be assumed that surgical practice was in a flourishing condition all through the period of the empire from the accounts preserved by Oribasius of the great surgeons Antyllus, Leonides, Rufus, and Heliodorus. Antyllus (300) is claimed by Haser as one of the greatest of the world’s surgeons; he had an operation for

aneurism (tying the artery above and below the sac, and evacuating its contents), for cataract, for the cure of stammering; and he treated contractures by something like tenotomy. Rufusand Heliodorus are said to have practised torsion for the arrest of hemorrhage ; but in later periods both that and the ligature appear to have given way to the actual cautery. Hiaser speaks of the operation for scrotal hernia attributed to Heliodorus as “a brilliant example of the surgical skill during the empire.” The same surgeon treated stricture of the urethra by internal section. Both Leonides and Antyllus removed glandular swellings of the neck (strum); the latter ligatured vessels before cutting them, and gives directions for avoiding the carotid artery and jugular vein. The well-known operation of Antyllus for aneurism has been mentioned before. Flap- amputations were practised by Leonides and Heliodorus. But perhaps the most striking illustration of the advanced surgery of the period is the freedom with which bones were resected, including the long bones, the lower jaw, and the upper jaw.

Whatever progress or decadence surgery may have ex- perienced during the next three centuries is summed up in the authoritative treatise of Paulus of Aigina (650). Of his seven books the sixth is entirely devoted to operative surgery, and the fourth is largely occupied with surgical diseases. The importance of Paulus for surgical history during several centuries on each side of his own period will appear from the following remarks of Francis Adams in his translation and commentary (vol. ii. p. 247).

‘* This book (bk. vi.) contains the most complete system of opera- tive surgery which has come down to us from ancient times. .. . Haly Abbas in the 9th book of his Practica copies almost everything from Paulus. Albucasis [Abulcasis] gives more original matter on surgery than any other Arabian author, and yet, as will be seen from our commentary, he is indebted for whole chapters to Paulus. In the Continens of Rhases, that precious repository of ancient opinions on medical subjects, if there be any surgical information not to be found in our author it is mostly derived from Antyllus and Archigenes. As to the other authorities, although we will occasionally have to explain their opinions upon particular subjects, no one has treated of surgery in a systematical manner ; for even Avicenna, who treats so fully of everything else connected with medicine, is defective in his accounts of surgical operations ; and the descriptions which he does give

of them are almost all borrowed from our author. The accounts of fractures and dislocations given by Hippocrates and his commentator Galen may be pronounced almost complete ; but the information which they supply upon most other surgical subjects is scanty.”

It is obviously impossible in a brief space to convey any notion of the comprehensiveness of the surgery of Paulus ; his sixth book, with the peculiarly valuable commentary of Adams, brings the whole surgery of the ancient world to a

focus ; and it should be referred to at first hand. Paulus himself is credited with the principle of local depletion as against general, with the lateral operation for stone instead of the mesial and with understanding the merits of a free external incision and a limited internal, with the diagnosis of aneurism by anastomosis, with an operation for aneurism like that of Antyllus, with amputation of the cancerous

breast by crucial incision, and with the treatment of fractured patella.

The Arabians have hardly any greater merit in medicine Arabian.

than that of preserving intact the bequest of the ancient world. To surgery in particular their services are small, —first, because their religion proscribed the practice of anatomy, and secondly, because it was a characteristic of their race to accept with equanimity the sufferings that fell to them, and to decline the means of alleviation. The great names of the Arabian school, Avicenna and Averroes, are altogether unimportant for surgery. Their one distinctively surgical writer was Abulcasim (d. 1122), who is chiefly celebrated for his free use of the actual cautery and of caustics. He showed a good deal of char- acter in declining to operate on goitre, in resorting to tracheotomy but sparingly, in refusing to meddle with cancer, and in evacuating large abscesses by degrees.

For the five hundred years following the work of Paulus Medi- of Aigina there is nothing to record but the names of a few ®v4l.

practitioners at the court and of imitators or compilers. Meanwhile in western Europe (apart from the Saracen civilization) a medical school had gradually grown up at Salerno, which in the 10th century had already become famous. From it issued the Regimen Salernitanum, a work used by the laity for several centuries, and the Com- pendium Salernitanum, which circulated among the profes- sion. The serious decline of the school dates from the founding of a university at Naples in 1224. In its best period princes and nobles resorted to it for treatment from all parts of Europe. The hétel dieu of Lyons had been founded in 560, and that of Paris a century later. The school of Montpellier was founded in 1025, and became the rallying point of Arabian and Jewish learning. A good deal of the medical and surgical practice was in the hands of the religious orders, particularly of the Benedic- tines. The practice of surgery by the clergy was at length forbidden by the council of Tours (1163). The surgical writings of the time were mere reproductions of the classi- cal or Arabian authors: “unus non dicit nisi quod alter.” One of the first to go back to independent observation and reflexion was William of Saliceto, who belonged to the school of Bologna; his work (1275) advocates the use of the knife in many cases where the actual cautery was used by ancient prescription. A greater name in the his- tory of medieval surgery is that of his pupil Lanfranchi of Milan, who migrated (owing to political troubles) first to Lyons and then to Paris. He distinguished between arterial and venous hemorrhage, and is said to have used the ligature for the former. Contemporary with him in France was Henri de Mondeville of the school of Mont- pellier, whose teaching is best known through that of his more famous pupil Guy de Chauliac; the Chirurgze of the latter bears the date of 1363, and marks the advance in precision which the revival of anatomy by Mondino had made possible. Eighteen years before Lanfranchi came to Paris a college of surgeons was founded there (1279) by Pitard, who had accompanied St Louis to Palestine as his surgeon. The college was under the protection of St Cosmas and St Damianus, two practitioners of medicine who suffered martyrdom in the reign of Diocletian, and it became known as the Collége de St Céme. From the time that Lanfranchi joined it it attracted many pupils. It maintained its independent existence for-several centuries,

Para- celsus.

Paré,

Six- teenth century.

alongside the medical faculty of the university; the corpora- tion of surgeons in other capitals, such as those of London and Edinburgh, were modelled upon it.

The 14th and 15th centuries are almost entirely without interest for surgical history. The dead level of tradition is broken first by two men of originality and genius, Paracelsus and Paré, and by the revival of anatomy at the hands of Vesalius and Fallopius, professors at Padua. Apart from the mystical form in which much of his teaching was cast, Paracelsus has great merits as a reformer of surgical practice. “The high value of his surgical writings,” says Haser, “has been recognized at all times, even by his opponents.” It is not, however, as an innovator in opera- tive surgery but rather as a direct observer of natural processes that Paracelsus is distinguished. His description of “hospital gangrene,” for example, is perfectly true to nature; his numerous observations on syphilis are also sound and sensible ; and he was the first to point out the connexion between cretinism of the offspring and goitre of the parents. He gives most prominence to the healing of wounds. His special surgical treatises are Die kleine Chirurgie (1528) and Die grosse Wund-Areei (1536-37),— the latter being the best known of his works. Somewhat later in date, and of much greater concrete importance for surgery than Paracelsus, is Ambroise Paré (1517- 1590). He began life as apprentice to a barber-surgeon in Paris and as a pupil at the hétel dieu. His earliest opportunities were in military surgery during the campaign of Francis I. in Piedmont. Instead of treating gunshot wounds with hot oil, according to the practice of the day, he had the temerity to trust to a simple bandage; and from that beginning he proceeded to many other de- velopments of rational surgery. In 1545 he published at Paris La méthode de traicter les playes faictes par hacque- butes et aultres bastons & feu. The same year he began to attend the lectures of Sylvius, the Paris teacher of anatomy, to whom he became prosector ; and his next book was an

Anatomy (1550). His most memorable service was to get the use of the ligature for large arteries generally adopted, a method of controlling the hemorrhage which made am- putation on a large scale possible for the first time in history. Like Paracelsus, he writes simply and to the point in the language of the people, while he is free from the encumbrance of mystical theories, which detract not a little from the merits of his fellow-reformer in Germany. It is only in his book on monsters, written towards the end of his career, that he shows himself to have been by no means free from superstition. Paré was adored by the army and greatly esteemed by successive French kings ; but his innovations were opposed, as usual, by the faculty, and he had to justify the use of the ligature as well as he could by quotations from Galen and other ancients,

Surgery in the 16th century recovered much of the dexterity and resource that had distinguished it in the best periods of antiquity, while it underwent the develop- ments opened up to it by new forms of wounds inflicted by new weapons of warfare. The use of the staff and other instruments of the “apparatus major” was the chief Mmprovement in lithotomy. A “radical cure” of hernia by sutures superseded the old application of the actual cautery. The earlier modes of treating stricture of the urethra were tried ; plastic operations were once more done with something like the skill of Brahmanical and classical times ; and ophthalmic surgery was to some extent rescued from the hands of ignorant pretenders. It is noteworthy that even in the legitimate profession dexterous special operations were kept secret ; thus the use of the ‘“‘apparatus major” in lithotomy was handed down as a secret in the family of Laurence Colot, a contemporary of Paré’s,

The 17th century was distinguished rather for the rapid

SURGERY

[HISTORY,

progress of anatomy and physiology, for the Baconian and Seven. Cartesian philosophies, and the keen interest taken in com. ‘teenth plete systems of medicine, than for a high standard of “™™ surgical practice. The teaching of Paré that gunshot wounds were merely contused and not poisoned, and that simple treatment was the best for them, was enforced anew

by Magati (1579-1647), Wiseman, and others. Trephining was freely resorted to, even for inveterate migraine; Philip William, prince of Orange, is said to have been trephined seventeen times. Flap-amputations, which had been prac- tised in the best period of Roman surgery by Leonides and Heliodorus, were reintroduced by Lowdham, an Oxford surgeon, in 1679, and probably used by Wiseman, who was

the first to practise the primary major amputations. Fabriz von Hilden (1560-1634) introduced a form of tourniquet, made by placing a piece of wood under the bandage en- circling the limb; out of that there grew the block- tourniquet of Morel, first used at the siege of Besancon in 1674; and this, again, was superseded by Jean Louis Petit's screw-tourniquet in 1718. Strangulated hernia, which was

for long avoided as a noli me tangere, became a subject of operation, Lithotomy by the lateral method came to great perfection in the hands of Jacques Beaulieu. To this century also belong the first indications (not to mention the Alexandrian practice of Ammonius) of crushing the stone in the bladder. The theory and practice of trans- fusion of blood occupied much attention, especially among the busy spirits of the Royal Society, such as Boyle, Lower, and others. The seat of cataract in the substance

of the lens was first made out by two French surgeons, Quarré and Lasnier. Perhaps the most important figure in

the surgical history of the century is Richard Wiseman, the Wise- father of English surgery. Wiseman took the Royalist side ™2- in the wars of the Commonwealth, and was surgeon to James J. and Charles I., and accompanied Charles IT. in

his exile in France and the Low Countries, After serving

for a time in the Spanish fleet, he joined the Royalist cause

in England and was taken prisoner at the battle of Worce- ster. At the Restoration he became serjeant-surgeon to Charles IT., and held the same office under James II. His Seven Chirurgical Treatises were first published in 1676, and went through several editions ; they relate to tumours, ulcers,

diseases of the anus, king’s evil (scrofula), wounds, fractures, luxations, and lues venerea. Wiseman was the first to advocate primary amputation (or operation before the onset of fever) in cases of gunshot wounds and other injuries of the limbs. He introduced also the practice of treating aneurisins by compression, gave an accurate account

of fungus articulorum, and improved the operative pro- cedure for hernia.

The 18th century marks the establishment of surgery Eight- on a broader basis than the skill of individual surgeons of centh the court and army, and on a more scientific basis than °2!™ the rule of thumb of the multitude of barber-surgeons and other inferior orders of practitioners. In Paris the Ool- Iége de St Come gave way to the Academy of Surgery in 1731, with Petit as director, to which was added at a later date the Ecole Pratique de Chirurgie, with Chopart and Desault among its first ‘—professors. The Academy of Surgery set up a very high standard from the first, and exer- cised great exclusiveness in its publications and its hono- rary membership. In London and Edinburgh the develop- ment of surgery proceeded on less academical lines, and with greater scope for individual effort. Private dissecting rooms and anatomical theatres were started, of which per- haps the most notable was Dr William Hunter’s school in Great Windmill Street, London, inasmuch as it was the first perch of his more famous brother John Hunter. In Edinburgh, Alexander Monro, first of the name, became professor of anatomy to the company of surgeons in 1719,

transferring his title and services to the university the year after ; as he was the first systematic teacher of medicine or surgery in Edinburgh, he is regarded as the founder of the famous medical school of that city. In both London and Edinburgh a company of barbers and surgeons had been in existence for many years before; but it was not until the association of these companies with the study of anatomy, comparative anatomy, physiology, and pathology that the surgical profession began to take rank with the older order of physicians. Hence the significance of the eulogy of a living surgeon on John Hunter : “ more than any other man he helped to make us gentlemen ” ({unterian Oration, 1877). The state of surgery in Germany may be inferred from the fact that the teaching of it at the new university of

Gottingen was for long in the hands of Haller, whose office was “professor of theoretical medicine.” In the Prussian army it fell to the regimental surgeon to shave the officers. At Berlin a medico-chirurgical college was founded by surgeon-general Holtzendorff in 1714, to which was joined in 1726 a school of clinical surgery at the Charité. Mili- tary surgery was the original purpose of the school, which still exists, side by side with the surgical cliniques of the faculty, as the Friedrich Wilhelm’s Institute. In Vienna, in like manner, a school for the training of army surgeons was founded in 1785,—Joseph’s Academy or the Joseph- inum. The first systematic teaching of surgery in the United States was by Dr Shippen at Philadelphia, where the medical college towards the end of the century was largely officered by pupils of the Edinburgh school. With- out attempting to enumerate the great names in surgery during the 18th century, it will be possible to introduce the more prominent of them in a brief sketch of the addi- tions to the ideas and resources of surgery in that period. A great part of the advance was in surgical pathology, including Petit’s observations on the formation of thrombi in severed vessels, Hunter’s account of the reparative pro- cess, Benjamin Bell’s classification of ulcers, the observa- tions of Duhamel and others on the formation of callus and on bone-repair in general, Pott’s distinction between spinal curvature from caries or abscess of the vertebree and kyphosis from other causes, observations by various surgeons on chronic disease of the hip, knee, and other joints, and Cheselden’s description of neuroma. Among the great improvements in surgical procedure we have Cheselden’s operation of lithotomy (six deaths in eighty cases), Hawkins’s cutting gorget for the same (1753), Hunter’s operation (1785) for popliteal aneurism by tying the femoral artery in the canal of the triceps where its walls were sound (“excited the greatest wonder,” Assalini), Petit’s, Desault’s, and Pott’s treatment of fractures, Gim- bernat’s (Barcelona) operation for strangulated femoral hernia, Pott’s bistoury for fistula, White’s (Manchester) and Park’s (Liverpool) excision of joints, Petit’s invention of the screw-tourniquet, the same surgeon’s operation for lacrymal fistula, Chopart’s partial amputation of the foot, Desault’s bandage for fractured clavicle, Bromfield’s artery-hook, and Cheselden’s operation of iridectomy. Other surgeons of great versatility and general merit were Sharp of London, Gooch of Norwich, Hey of Leeds, David and Le Cat of Rouen, Sabatier, La Faye, Ledran, Louis, Morand, and Percy of Paris, Bertrandi of Turin, Troja of Naples, Palleta of Milan,

Schmucker of the Prus- sian army, August Richter of Gittingen, Siebold of Wiirz- burg, Olof Acrel of Stockholm, and Callisen of Copen- hagen.

Two things have given surgical knowledge and skill in the 19th century a character of scientific or positive ’ cufnulativeness and a wide diffusion through all ranks of the profession. The one is the founding of museums of anatomy and surgical pathology by the Hunters, Dupuy-

tren, Cloquet, Blumenbach, Barclay, and a great number of more modern anatomists and surgeons ; the other is the method of clinical teaching, exemplified in its highest form of constant reference to principles by Lawrence and Syme. In surgical procedure the discovery of the an- zesthetic properties of ether, chloroform, methylene, &c., has been of incalculable service; while the conservative principle in operations upon diseased or injured parts and what may be called the hygienic idea (or, more narrowly, the antiseptic principle) in surgical dressings have been equally beneficial. The following are among the more important additions to the resources of the surgical art :— the thin thread ligature for arteries, introduced by Jones of Jersey (1805); the revival of torsion of arteries by Amussat (1829) ; the practice of drainage by Chassaignac (1859); aspiration by Pelletan and recent improvers; the plaster-of-Paris bandage or other immovable applica- tion for simple fractures, club-foot, é&c. (an old Eastern practice recommended in Europe about 1814 by the English consul at Bassorah); the re-breaking of badly set fractures ; galvano-caustics and écraseurs ; the general introduction of resection of joints (Fergusson, Syme, and others); tenotomy by Delpech and Stromeyer (1831); operation for squint by Dieffenbach (1842); successful ligature of the external iliac for aneurism of the femoral by Abernethy (1806) ; ligature of the subclavian in the third portion by Astley Cooper (1806), and in its first por- tion by Colles ; crushing of stone in the bladder by Gruit- huisen of Munich (1819) and Civiale of Paris (1826) ; cure of ovarian dropsy by removing the cyst (since greatly perfected); discovery of the ophthalmoscope, and many improvements in ophthalmic surgery by Von Griafe and others ; application of the laryngoscope in operations on the larynx by Czermak (1860) and

others ; together with additions to the resources of aural surgery and dentistry. The great names in the surgery of the first half of the century besides those mentioned are:—Scarpa of Italy (1747-1832); Boyer (1757-1833), Larrey (1766-1842),— to whom Napoleon left a legacy of a hundred thousand francs, with the eulogy: ‘‘C’est Vhomme le plus vertueux que jaie connu,”—Roux (1780-1854), Lisfrane (1790- 1847), Velpeau (1795-1868), Malgaigne (1806-1865), Nélaton (1807-1873),—all of the French school; of the British school, John Bell, Charles Bell, Allan Burns, Liston, Wardrop, Astley Cooper, Cline, Travers, Brodie, Stanley, and Guthrie; in the United States, Mott, Gross, and others; in Germany, Kern and Schuh of Vienna, Von Walther and Textor of Wiirzburg, Chelius, Hesselbach, and the two Langenbecks. In surgical pathology the discoveries and doctrines of the 19th century are greater in scientific value than those of any antecedent period; and it would be unprofitable to attempt any enumeration of them, or of their authors, in a brief space.

The authorities mostly used have been— Wise, History of Medicine among the Asiatics, 2 vols., London, 1868 ; Paulus Agineta, trans- lated with commentary on the knowledge of the Greeks, Romans, and Arabians, in medicine and surgery, by Francis Adams, 3 vols., London, 1844-47 ; Haser, Gesch. d. Medicin, 3d ed., vols. i. and ii., 1875-81. (C C.)

Parr III.—PRAcTICE oF SURGERY.

A great change has taken place in the practice of surgery since the publication (1860) of the article SuRcERy in vol. xx. of the 8th edition of the present work. This change is due in great part to the fact that the germ theory of disease has been accepted by the majority of surgical teachers and practitioners. Scientific men have demon- strated that the causation of many diseased conditions is closely connected with the presence in the diseased organ, tissue, or individual of livmg organisms, which have to a certain extent been classified, and are supposed to be forms

systems, with windows on both sides and cross ventilation in the wards, were adopted in order to give the patients as much fresh air as was attainable. Hospital buildings were spread over as large an area as possible ;

the blocks were restricted in height, and if practicable were never higher than two stories. The term “hospitalism ” was coined by Sir J. Y. Simpson, who collected statistics com- paring hospital and private practice, by which he en- deavoured to show that private patients were not so liable to those constitutional sequele.

678 [PRACTICE, of plant life. In one sense it is perhaps unfortunate that the article on surgery has to be written at the present time, because, while there are few who now hold that these or- ganisms are inert, there are some who do not grant that they are the cause of disease ; and there are many differ- ences of opinion as to the best methods of applying this scientific knowledge to practical use. In other words, although much of the surgical practice of the present day is founded on a scientific basis, the practical details are still matter of dispute.

Improve- It is impossible in the present sketch to go with any This was very much the condition of affairs when Lister Listers 1 ments in fulness into the details of the experimental research by | in 1860, from a study of the experimental researches of 8e™m a which the truth of the germ theory was proved; but some | Pasteur into the causes of putrefaction, stated that the “— i ment, allusion must be made to the salient points which have a | evils observed in open wounds were due to the admission trea.

into them of organisms which exist in the air, in water, on ment of — instruments, on sponges, and on the hands of the surgeon, Wounds, | These organisms, finding a suitable nidus for their growth and development in the discharges and surrounding tissues,

bearing on the work of the surgeon. It has long been known that subcutaneous injuries follow, as a rule, a very different course from open wounds; and the past history

of surgery gives evidence that surgeons not only were aware of this great difference but endeavoured, by the use of various dressings, empirically to prevent the evils which were matters of common observation during the healing of open wounds. Various means were also. adopted to pre- vent the entrance of air, e.g., in the opening of abscesses by the “valvular method ” of Abernethy, and by the sub- cutaneous division of tendons in the common

deformity termed “club-foot.” Balsams, turpentine, and various forms of spirit were the basis of many varieties of dress- ing. These different dressings were frequently cumber- some, difficult of application, and did not attain the object

aimed at, while at the same time they retained the dis-

charges, and gave rise to other evils which prevented rapid and painless healing. In the beginning of the 19th cen- tury these complicated dressings began to lose favour, and practical surgeons went to the opposite extreme and applied a simple dressing, the main object of which was to allow a free escape of discharge. Others applied no dressing at all, laying the stump of a limb after amputa- tion on a piece of dry lint, avoiding thereby any unneces- sary movement of the parts. Others left the wound open for some hours after an operation, preventing in this way any accumulation, and brought its edges and surfaces to- gether after all oozing of blood had ceased and after the effusion, the result of injury to the tissues by the instru- ments used in the operation, had to a great extent sub- sided. As a result of these various improvements many wounds healed in a thoroughly satisfactory manner. But in other cases inflammation often occurred, accompanied by pain and suppuration or the formation of pus, and various feverish conditions, due to and in some way con- nected with the unhealthy state of the wound, were ob- served. These constitutional sequele frequently proved fatal and the general impression of surgeons was either that the constitution of the patient rendered him liable to these conditions, or that some poison had entered into the wound, and, passing from it into the veins or lymphatic vessels that had been cut across, reached the general circu- lation, contaminating the blood and poisoning the patient. The close clinical association between suppuration (or the formation of pus) in wounds and many of those fatal cases encouraged the belief that the pus cells from the wound entered the circulation (whence the word “ pyzemia eu was also frequently observed that a septic condition of the wound was associated with the constitutional fever, and it was supposed that the septic matter passed into the blood (whence the term “ septicemia”). It was further observed that the crowding together of patients with open wounds mereased the liability to these constitutional disasters, and every endeavour was made

by surgeons to separate their patients and to improve the ventilation of the larger hospitals. In building hospitals the pavilion and other

germinate in them and alter their chemical constitution, forming various poisonous compounds, which, if absorbed

into the blood, give rise to pyemia and septicemia. Having accepted the germ theory of putrefaction, he ap- plied himself to discover the best way of preventing these organisms from reaching the wound from the moment that it was made until it was healed. He had to deal with a plant and he desired to interfere with its growth. This was possible in one of two ways,—either (1) by directly destroying or paralysing the plant itself before it entered the wound or after it had entered, or (2) by an interference with the soil in which it grew, for example, by facilitating the removal of the discharges and preventing their accumu- lation in the wound cavity, and by doing everything to prevent depression of the wounded tissues, because healthy tissues are the best of all germicides. Several substances were then known possessing properties antagonistic to sepsis or putrefaction, and hence called “ antiseptic.” Act- ing on a suggestion of Lemaire’s, Lister chose for his ex- periments carbolic acid, which he used at first in a crude and impure form. He had many practical difficulties to contend with,—the impurity of the substance, its irritating properties, the difficulty of finding the exact strength in which to use it: on the one hand, he feared to use it too strong, lest it should irritate the tissues to which it was applied and thus prevent healing; on the other hand, he feared to use it too weak, lest its true antiseptic qualities should be insufficient for the main object in view. It is unnecessary to dwell on the details of his tentative ex- periments. As dressings for wounds he used various chemical substances, which, being mixed with carbolic acid in certain proportions, were intended to give off a quantity of carbolic acid in the form of vapour, so that the wound might be constantly surrounded by an antiseptic vapour which would destroy any organisms approaching it and at the same time not interfere with its healing. At first, although he prevented pyzemia in a marked degree, he, to a certain extent, irritated his wounds and prevented rapid healing. He began his experiments in Glasgow and con- tinued them after his removal to the chair of clinical surgery in Edinburgh. After many disappointments, he gradually

perfected his method of performing operations and dressing wounds, which will be best understood by an illustration.

A patient is suffering, let us say, from a diseased con- Ampu- 4 dition of the foot necessitating amputation at the ankle a

joint. The part to be operated on is enveloped in a towel

which has been soaked with a 5 per cent. solution of car- bolic acid. The towel is applied two hours before the operation, with the object of destroying the (putrefactive) organisms present in the skin. The patient is placed on the operating table, and brought under the influence of

joint.

PRACTICE. |

chloroform ; the limb is elevated to empty it of blood, and a tourniquet is applied round the limb below the knee. The instruments to be used during the operation have been previously purified by lying for half an hour in a flat porce- lain dish containing carbolic acid (1 to 20). The sponges are lying in a similar carbolic lotion. Towels soaked in the same solution are laid over the table and blankets near the part operated upon. The hands of the operator, as well as those of his assistants, are thoroughly purified by washing them in the same lotion, free use being made of a nail brush for this purpose. The operation is performed under a cloud of carbolized watery vapour (1 in 30) from a steam-spray producer. ‘The visible bleeding points are first ligatured ; the tourniquet is removed ; and then any vessels that have escaped notice are ligatured. The wound is stitched, a drainage-tube made of red rubber being intro- duced at one corner to prevent accumulation of discharge ; a strip of protective (oiled silk coated with carbolized dextrin) is washed in carbolic lotion and applied over the wound. A double ply of carbolic gauze! is soaked in the lotion and placed over the protective, overlapping it freely. A dressing consisting of eight layers of dry gauze is placed over all, covering the stump and passing up the leg for about 6 inches. Over that a piece of thin Mackintosh cloth is placed, and the whole arrangement is fixed with a gauze bandage. The Mackintosh cloth prevents the car- bolic acid from escaping and at the same time causes the

discharge from the wound to spread through the gauze. The wound itself is protected by the protective from the vapour given off by the carbolic gauze, whilst the sur- rounding parts, being constantly exposed to its activity, are protected from the intrusion of septic contamination ; and these conditions are maintained until sound healing las taken place. Whenever the discharge reaches the edge of the Mackintosh the case requires to be dressed, and a new supply of gauze applied round the stump. The gauze that is used should be freshly made and kept in a tin box to prevent evaporation of the volatile carbolic acid. This precaution is most needful in warm weather. When- aver the wound is exposed the stump is enveloped in a vapour (1 in 30) of carbolic acid by means of the steam- spray producer. At first a syringe was used to keep the surface constantly wet with lotion, then a hand-spray, such as Richardson's ether-spray producer. More recently a steam-spray producer has been introduced into practice. These dressings are repeated at intervals until the wound is healed, the drainage-tube being gradually shortened and ultimately removed altogether.

In the case of an accidental wound to which the surgeon is called a short time after its occurrence, carbolic lotion (1 to 20) must be injected into the cavity of the wound to destroy any organisms which may have fallen into it. The dressings already described are then applied. In operating on a case in which putrefaction has occurred, every endeavour must be made to destroy the causes of putrefaction which are already present. The substance most frequently used for this purpose is chloride of zinc solution, 40 grains to 1 oz. of water. This powerful anti- septic was extensively used some years ago by Mr De Morgan, Middlesex Hospital, London. When the wound

1 The gauze dressing consists of thin gauze which has been soaked in a mixture of carbolic acid (1 part), resin (5 parts), and paraffin (7 parts). The object of the paraffin is to prevent the gauze sticking to the skin. The resin retains the carbolic acid and prevents evaporation at the ordinary temperature; at the temperature of the body, however, a certain quantity of the carbolic acid is constantly being given off, and in this way the part operated on is enveloped in a vapour of carbolic acid. This antiseptic vapour persists as long as there is any carbolic acid in the gauze. A gauze dressing is not reliable for more than a week ; by that time the carbolic acid in the gauze is dissipated and the dressing requires to be renewed.

has been thus purified from its septic condition, the after- treatment must follow strictly the plan already recom- mended for a recent wound to avoid secondary contamina- tion at subsequent dressings.

The object Lister had in view from the beginning of his Progress experiments was to place the open wound in a condition since

as regards the entrance of organisms as closely analogous as possible to a truly subcutaneous wound, such as a con- tusion or a simple fracture, in which the unbroken skin acts as a protection to the wounded tissues beneath. The introduction of this practice by Lister effected a complete change in operative surgery. Although the principle on which he founded it was at first denied by many, it is now very generally acknowledged to be correct. In Germany more especially his views were speedily accepted. In France and England their adoption was slower. In Scot- land, perhaps in consequence of the fact that many saw him at work and worked under him, acquiring perhaps some little part of his persevering enthusiasm, he soon had many believers. Since about 1875 surgeons have been trying to improve and simplify the method; chemists have been at pains to supply carbolic acid in a pure form and to discover new antiseptics, the great object being to get a non-irritating substance which shall at the same time be a powerful germicide. Jodoform, eucalyptus, salicylic acid, boracic acid, corrosive sublimate, have been and are being used, and the question as to their relative superiority is not yet settled. Carbolic acid has the disadvantage of irri- tating the tissues. This is partly counterbalanced by its anesthetic properties. Absorption of the carbolic acid has occasionally taken place, giving rise to symptoms of poison- ing. But this danger has been greatly lessened by the introduction of pure acid. Of the antiseptics named carbolic acid, eucalyptus, and iodoform are volatile ; the rest are non-volatile. At first Lister for some years irrigated a wound with carbolic lotion during the operation, and at the dressings when it was exposed. The introduction of the spray displaced the irrigation method. At the present time the irrigation method is again gaining favour. All these different procedures, however, as regards both the antiseptic used and the best method of its application in

oily and watery solutions and in dressings, are entirely subsidiary to the great principle involved—namely, that putrefaction in a wound is an evil which can be prevented, and that, if it is prevented, local irritation, in so far as it is due to putrefaction, is obviated and septicemia and pyzmia do not occur. Alongside of this great improve- ment the immense advantage of free drainage is now uni- versally acknowledged. Surgeons now understand the dangers which lie on every side, and this knowledge causes them to take greater care in the purification and in securing the greater cleanliness of wounds, and some hold that much of the good result follows from these precautions apart from the principle of the system.

Putrefaction has been clearly shown by Pasteur, Tyndall, and others to be due to the activity of certain lowly forms of organized matter. Scientific men have therefore had their attention more particularly directed to these lower forms of plant life. A careful study has been made of their life history, and several diseased conditions are now known to be due to the deposit and growth of organisins of a specific form in the blood and in the tissues. This is not the place to discuss points still sub judice; but there can be no doubt, e¢.g., that the Bacillus anthracis is the cause of splenic fever and of its local manifestation, malignant pustule, and that erysipelas is due to the presence of a micrococcus. There are many other diseases spoken of as zymotic or fermentative, upon which observers are now at work, and hardly a month passes without the publication of new observations (compare ScHIzoMycETEs). It can

certainly be said that the relation between those organisms

and various specific diseases is the question which at pre-

sent most occupies the attention both of pathologists and of practitioners of medicine and surgery. It is now known that there are many varieties of organisins (in Crookshank’s Bacteriology sixty are described), some of

which are hurtful to the human economy, though others are apparently harmless. Those of the former class give rise to an alteration in the tissue in which they grow ; and during their growth they alter its composition and cause it to break up into various compounds, some of which, when absorbed into the blood-stream, poison the individual. Some, on the other hand, are either in themselves innocuous or are killed when they enter the blood, which is a fluid tissue and acts as a germicide ; hence the tissues in a healthy condition are spoken of as " germicidal." rently grow only on dead tissue, or in tissue the vitality} of which has been lowered.

Ferment- The alteration in the tissue is strictly analogous to a

ations. fermentation—such, for example, as the change which takes place in a solution of grape sugar in which the yeast plant has been planted. The solution breaks up into alcohol and carbonic acid ; along with this change there is an increase in the quantity of the yeast. The most common fermenta- tion is the alteration termed " putrefactive" or "septic." The cause of this change is in all probability a special organism named Bacterium termo. It lives on any dead matter containing nitrogen when exposed to heat and moisture ; dryness and cold are antagonistic to its growth. Its results are so evident and of such common observation that the term "antiseptic" was used long before the primary cause of the condition was understood. Antiseptics origin- ally were substances which interfered with sepsis. The term has now, however, a wider meaning, and includes any substance opposed to fermentation. " Antifermentative " or "antitheric" would be a better term. An antitheric substance is one which interferes with fermentation by destroying or paralysing the organism which is the primary cause of the condition. The word "antiseptic," on the other hand, should be reserved to denote any substance which is opposed to putrefaction or sepsis, —one form of fermentation. Many of the most dangerous fermentations have nothing in common with putrefaction: the products which result are odourless; the appearances which arise bear no similarity to the changes which occur when putre- factive fermentation is present. Plant the Bacterium lactis in milk, and souring, or the lactic acid fermentation, takes place ; plant the Bacterium termo in milk, and putrefactive fermentation occurs. The fermentations of smallpox, vaccinia, syphilis, scarlet fever, typhoid, relapsing fever, typhus, erysipelas, and cholera may be taken as

examples of fermentations of the non-putrefactive class, Apparently in them the organism enters the blood-stream, there de- velops and forms its products, which, acting directly or in- directly on the heat-centre, give rise to a specific fever. This fever continues until the soil is worn out, and the organism, finding no longer a nidus for its development, dies out, and recovery takes place. Death of course results if the individual has not sufficient strength to withstand the attack. There isa general law regarding all living things which holds true of these lowly organisms as of the highest : remove its food and the organism dies, or at any rate ceases to develop. It may, however, lie quiescent, again appearing when a new nidus is provided for it. These considerations explain the reason why, after one attack, the individual is protected for a longer or shorter period. They also explain why many diseases are becoming through course of time less virulent than they once were: the soil

? John Hunter defines ‘ vitality ” as the power which resists putre- faction,

SURGERY

Some appa-

~—those which are the result (1) of injury and (2) of disease.

[PRACTICE,

is becoming exhausted in relation to the special require- ments of the organism, and the organism is therefore incapable of flourishing as it formerly did. Plant the organism in a virgin soil—take, for example, as was un- wittingly done, the organism of measles to Fiji—and a disease which in Great Britain is comparatively harmless becomes a most deadly scourge, An attempt has been made to divide organisms into two Infeetiys|, great divisions—the infective and the non-infective. The and non, first class can grow in living tissue ; the second cannot. = % ; The first form their products in living matter ; the second jams can only grow in dead or lowly vitalized matter. The in- fective organism can migrate from the original point of en- trance by the vascular and lymphatic streams to distant parts of the body, and may there form secondary foci of infection. As regards the non-infective the manufactory of the poison is principally restricted to the near

neighbour- hood of the original point of entrance, generally a wound. It cannot migrate into the living tissues around if they remain healthy. Both kinds of organism form ptomaines (77dpa, a carcase), the products of the fermentation which result from the breaking up of the tissue or discharge in which the organisms grow. They may enter the blood-stream and poison the patient. Their entry into the blood must be differentiated from the entry of the organism itself into the stream. Clinically, the two conditions, although often met with in one individual, are in many cases distinctly separable. This physiological division of organisms into infective and non-infective is at present only tentative, and much work must be done before a strictly physiologi- cal classification can be attempted 3 at present the main line of inquiry must be principally morphological. Even in this direction a difficulty meets the observer, because organisms change their shape according to the media in which they are cultivated. In the present article only a general view of the present aspects of surgical practice can be given. Special stress will be laid upon the principles which guide the surgeon in his daily work. For full particulars with reference to any special points the reader is referred to Holmes's System of Surgery, Erichsen's Science and Art of Surgery, and Grogs's System of Surgery. Surgical affections may be divided into two great classes,

I, InsvRIEs,

Before proceeding to the consideration of the different injuries Shock, it will be necessary to say a few words about the general condition 7 termed shock or collapse, which supervenes after a severe injury. Care must be taken not to confound this state with faintness or | syncope from loss of blood. Undoubtedly in many cases both con- iB ditions are present. Syncope from loss of blood is considered below. Syncope from mental emotion differs from shock in degree only. In shock the patient is pale, and bathed in cold clammy perspiration ; his sensibility is blunted; his pulse is small and feeble ; he is unable to make any active exertion, but lies in bed indifferent to external circumstances, and can only be roused with difficulty ; he frequently complains of a feeling of cold; and he may have a distinct shivering or rigor. These symptoms may continue for some hours ; the first evidence of improvement is that he shifts his position in bed and complains of the pain of the injury which has caused the condition. The pulse becomes

stronger, and he then passes from the state of shock into the condition of reaction. If the improvement continues recovery will take place, but if it is only transient the patient will sink back again into a drowsy condition, which, if it persists, will end in death. In severe cases there may be no reaction ; the patient then gradually becomes weaker and weaker, his pulse feebler and feebler, till death ensues. Shock is due to an impression conveyed to the central nervous system by an afferent nerve of common or special sensation. This impression produces a change in the medulla oblongata, by which the nerve-centres are so affected that a partial paralysis or paresis of the voluntary and involuntary muscular fibres in the body takes place. In consequence of the change in the voluntary muscles the patient is unable to lift his arm or move his leg; the respiratory functions are performed wearily, and the

muscle of the heart contracts feebly ; the muscular fibres in the walls of the blood-vessels lose their tonicity and the blood-vessels dilate ; the blood collects in the large venous trunks, more cespeci-

The procedure for the treatment of an open wound is—(1) arrest Wound of hemorrhage 3 (2) removal of any foreign bodies in the wound ; treat- (3) careful apposition of its edges and surfaces, —the edges being best ment.

ally of the abdomen ; the vessels of the skin are emptied of blood, giving rise to the marked pallor. Two of the great causes that keep up the normal circulation of the blood through the body are in partial abeyance: the heart has not sufficient energy to contract, and there is not a sufficient quantity of blood passing into it from the blood-vessels. The heart beats feebly (1) because its nervous cnergy is lowered, and (2) because it has not a sufficient quantity of blood to act upon. An understanding of these facts gives the general indications for treatment,—(1) external stimulation over the heart by mustard poultices or turpentine stupes ; (2) elevation of the limbs, to cause the blood to gravitate towards the heart ; (3) manual pressure on the

abdominal cavity from below upwards, to encourage the flow of blood from the dilated abdominal veins into the heart. These different measures may be supplemented' by the administration of stimulants by the mouth, or, if the patient cannot swallow, by subcutaneous injection of a diffusible stimulant,

. such as ether or ammonia. In syncope or faintness from mental emotion the weakened heart cannot drive a sufficient quantity of blood to the brain ; the patient feels dizzy and faint and falls down insensible. The condition is a transitory one, and the recumbent posture, assisted if need be by elevation of the limbs, causes the blood to gravitate to the heart, which is thereby stimulated to contraction ; a sufficient quantity of blood is then driven onwards to the brain, and the insensibility passes off. If the patient is in the sitting posture when he feels faint, the head should be depressed between the knees, which will cause the blood to rush to the brain, and the faintness will pass off.

With few exceptions the soft parts are freely supplied with blood- vessels, and as a preliminary to a consideration of the different forms of injuries it will be well to say a few words about hemorrhage or bleeding. Ifa blood-vessel is torn or cut across, the blood within it escapes, either externally on to the clothes or floor, or, in the case of a subcutaneous injury, into the tissues, giving rise to eechymosis. Cessation of the bleeding may take place in conse- quence of an arrest of the hemorrhage either by nature's effort or by the adoption of artificial means by the surgeon. The loss of blood may be so great that the heart's propelling power is weakened, and in this way the natural arrest is assisted. But there is always a danger that with the arrest of the hemorrhage the heart's action may recover its power and the bleeding recommence. In arresting hemorrhage temporarily the chief thing is to press directly on the bleeding part. The pressure to be effectual need not be severe, but must be accurately applied. Ifthe bleeding point cannot be reached, the pressure should be applied to the main artery between the bleeding point and the heart. In small blood-vessels pressure will be sufficient to arrest hemorrhage permanently. In large vessels it is usual to pass a ligature round the vessel and tie it with a reef knot. Apply the ligature also, if possible, at the bleeding point, tying both ends of the cut vessel. If this cannot be done, the main artery of the limb must be exposed by dissection at the most accessible point between the wound and the heart,

and there liga- tured. Hemorrhage has been classified in three varieties—(1) primary, occurring at the time of the injury ; (2) reactionary, or within twelve hours of the accident, during the stage of reaction ; (3) secondary, occurring at a later period, and caused by unhealthy processes attacking the wound and giving rise to ulceration of the coats of the blood-vessels. In treating these different varieties the principles already laid down hold good. In cases of severe hemor- rhage the patient suffers from syncope owing to loss of blood. Syncope from loss of blood is to be treated on the same principles as those already laid down for shock. But in addition it may be necessary in cases of severe hemorrhage, in which much blood has been lost, to introduce into the circulation fluid which will give the heart something to act upon. Blood drawn directly from the arm of a healthy person, and introduced through an opening in the vein of the arm, has frequently been made use of. The tendency of the blood to coagulate when brought in contact with foreign matter has led to the adoption of ingenious instruments to avoid this danger. Some surgeons have used defibrinated blood, and others milk. The opinion is at present gaining ground that a nutrient fluid is unnecessary, and that all that is required is to introduce an aseptic neutral fluid at the temperature of the body which has no tendency to cause coagulation of the blood with which it mixes. A saline solution, composed of *75 per cent. of common salt in dis- tilled water, fulfils all thesc requirements; 4 to 6 oz. are generally sufficient. Recent experiments have becn made by which blood drawn from the arm of the giver is mixed with a solution of phos- phate of soda. This admixture prevents the blood from coagulat- ing, and it can be introduced into the blood-stream with safety.

In a recent contusion careful pressure should be applied, with cotton wadding fixed in position with a bandage. The aim is to prevent ecchymosis and to hasten the absorption of the effused blood after it has escaped into the tissues. Accurate pressure fulfils these cnds more perfectly than the commoner application of cold.

brought in contact by the use of horse-hair stitches, the surfaces by carefully applied pressure ; (4) free drainage of the wound to prevent accumulation either of blood or of serous effusion, which may be done—(a) by leaving the dependent corner open, or (b) by introducing a drainage-tube, a skein of

catgut, or a skein of horse- hair; (5) avoidance of putrefaction by the use of antiseptic pre- cautions ; (6) perfect rest of the part by appropriate means during the cure. These methods of treatment require to be modified for wounds in special situations and for those in which there is much contusion and laceration. In punctured wounds free drainage is of primary importance. wound at the time of its following dangers have to be combated—(1) an intense inflamma- tion in the wound itself and surrounding parts; (2) inflammation of the lymphatic vessels leading from it ; (3) inflammation of the lymphatic glands ; (4) blood-poisoning of the general circulation. One of the commonest poisons is that connected with wound putre- faction ; of others some are the result of diseased action in the lower animals, ¢.g., hydrophobia, whilst some are special diseases in man. These diseased conditions are at the present time being carefully studied, and the observations all tend to one conclusion, that they are due to specific organisms which have found entrance into the diseased animal or man, and, finding there a suitable nidus for their growth and development, have set up a specific disease. If the surgeon is accidentally wounded in operating on the living subject, or the pathologist in making a post-mortem examination, the poison may pass into the wound and give rise to one or more of the symptoms already indicated. There can be no doubt that these special poisons,! which are spoken of as pathogenic or infect- ive, are 1n some way associated with low forms of plant life, and that in this they resemble the poison of putrefaction. If the operator is in good health the poison will generally have little effect ; if he is in bad health the effect may be very severe. We do not yet know in what cases bad results are to be expected. The great point in every doubtful case is to purify the wound thoroughly with some powerful antiseptic, so as to destroy the poison at the point of inoculation. If the poison escapes the germicidal action of the antiseptic used and enters the system, the patient should be stimu- lated, as the poison exercises a depressing action. For hydrophobia no cure is at present known. Experiments are, however, now (1887) being made by Pasteur which will throw some light on this dreadful disease.

Burns are dangerous accidents in young children and in old people Burns.

when the arcas affected are large, and when they are situated over the cavities of the body. The patient may die of shock soon after the accident, of

deep-seated inflammations coming on duringthe stage of reaction, or of hectic, which in all probability is a form of chronic pymia associated with profuse discharge from the woundcd surface. To prevent death fron any of these causes stimulating treatment is necessary. It has long been known that it is important to keep the air from the wounded surface, and antiseptic dressings must be used to prevent the access of organisms to it. When the skin is destroyed to any great extent contraction is apt to take place, followed by deformity. Care must be taken during the process of cure to prevent this, by keeping the limb in an extended position during the treatment of burns on the flexor surface. To hasten cicatrization after a burn in which the skin has been destroyed grafts of epidermic tissue may be planted on the granulating surtace according to the method of Reverdin. These grafts, each the size of a pin's head, become fixed and from them cicatrization spreads over the surface. After cicatrization the tendency to contraction is not nearly so great. Epidermis grafting must not be confounded with skin grafting, in which the grafts are of the whole thickness of the skin.

A bone may be broken at the part where it is struck, or it may Fracture,

break in consequence of a strain applied to it. In the former case the fracture is generally transverse and in the latter more or less oblique in direction. The fully developed bone is broken fairly across ; the soft bones of young people may simply be bent—" green stick" or "willow" fracture. Fractures are either simple or com- pound. A simple fracture is analogous to the contusion or sub- cutancous laceration in the soft parts; a compound fracture is analogous to the open wound in the soft parts. 'The wound of the soft parts in the compound fracture may be caused either by the same force which has caused the fracture, as in the case of a cart whcel going over a limb, first wounding the soft parts and then fracturing the bone, or by the sharp point of the fractured bone coming through the skin. In either case there is a communication between the external air and the injured bone. As some years elapse before the epiphyseal extremities of the bone become united by osseous deposit to the shaft, external violence may cause a

1 For their classification, as yet very imperfect, consult Ziegler's Pathological Anatomy (trans. by Macalister, London, 1883-84).

When a special poison has entered the Poisoned infliction or at some subsequent date the wounds.

separation of the epiphysis from the shaft. This variety of frac- ture is termed a diastasis. When a bone is broken there is gener- ally distortion and preternatural mobility, inability to use the limb, and pain on pressure over the fractured part. In 1 fractures there is also crepitus,—the feeling elicited when two osseous. surfaces are rubbed together. When a bone is bent, or when a diastasis has occurred, tliere is no crepitus. It is also absent in impacted fractures, in which the broken extremities are driven into one another. In order to get firm osseous union in a case of fracture the great points to attend to are accurate ap- position of the fragments and -complete rest of the broken bone. Accurate apposition is termed “setting the fracture”; this is best done by the extension of the limb and coaptation of the broken surfaces. Complete rest is attained by the use of appropriate splints. Asa rule it is of great importance to command the joint above and below the seat of fracture. In cases of fracture near a joint, in which very commonly a splintering of the bone into the joint has taken place, more cspecially in those cases in which numerous tendons in their tendinous sheaths have been stretched, if the surgeon forgets that there may be effusion into the joint and the tendinous sheaths, and that this effusion may form fibrous tissuc leading to stiffness of the joint and stiffening of the tendons, the result, more especially in old people, will be a permanently stiff joint or permanently stiffened tendons. Care must be taken in

such instances by gentle passive movement during the process of

cure to keep the joint and tendons free from the fibrous formation. To take a common example,—in fracture of the radius close to the wrist joint, it is necessary to apply appropriate splints to keep the bone at rest, and to arrange them so that the patient can move his fingers and thumb to prevent stiffness, and the splints must be taken off occasionally in order to move the wrist joint gently. If, however, the splints extend to the points of the fingers and are kept on for some weeks without removal, the consequence is a

In the inajority of

injury. The tonicity of the muscular structures around a joint often prevents a dislocation, the patient being prepared for the violence to which his joint is subjected. The osseous strength of a joint will depend very much on the position of the limb at the time of the accident.

When a joint is sprained or contused there is effusion into it and into the structures around it. In such cases accuratcly applied pressure will prevent effusion, and along with gentle passive exer- cise and rubbing will prevent subsequent stiffness. When a joint is dislocated it is of importance to restore the bones to their normal position as soon as possible after the accident. Within the last few years, in several dislocations, the treatment by extension of the limb and forcible pressure of the bones back into their normal position has been given up, and a method of treatment at one time in use in the French schools has been revived by Dr Bigclow of Boston, Mass., who has pointed out that with less force and there- fore less injury a dislocated joint may be reduced by manipulation. The great principle at the root of this treatment is to manipulate the limb so as to cause the dislocated bone to pass back into its normal position by the same path by which it lcft it. In com- pound dislocations the same precautions must be attended to as in compound fractures,

II. Process oF REPAIR.

After an injury certain changes take place, which, if kept within bounds, terminate in repair, in other words, in a restoration of the injured part to a condition as nearly as possible normal. When the injury is severe the restoration may fall far short of the normal. The recovery may take place with very little pain or discomfort even in severe injuries. Frequently, however, as the result either of improper treatment on the part of the surgeon or of feebleness on the part of the person injured, local uneasiness and a general feverish condition arise, which interfere with the healing. When

these evil results follow, a local death of tissue in a greater or less degree is observed. Three forms of local death have been described Forms of —(1) suppuration or the formation of pus; (2) ulceration, or the local

formation of an ulcer; (3) mortification, or the formation of a death.

normal radius and a useless hand. Instances occasionally occur in which non-union results, either from want of formative power on the part of the individual or in consequence of improper treat- ment by the surgeon. For the treatment of this condition the

reader is referred to one of the systematic works mentioned above. For fractures of the cranium see below, p. 688.

slough. These three processes run imperceptibly into one another. They are not distinctly separable from one another, and they very

Treat- There is no form of injury in which the truth of the principles | frequently occur together. It isto be noted that the process of ment of first advocated by Lister has been more prominently brought | repair and the local death which interferes with a painless repair com- forward than in compound fractures. When such an accident | differ only in degree. Asa general rule, in the truly subcutaneous pound occurs from direct violence the soft parts are generally much | wound of tissue, be it the soft parts or bone, the changes that take fractures. crushed and the bone is frequently comminuted. When a bone is place ending in its repair are simple and uncomplicated ; it is in broken from indirect violence the fracture is frequently oblique | the open wounds of the soft parts and in compound fractures of and the sharp point of the bone projects through the skin. In | bone that complications arise. : | such a case the injury is, as a rule, not so severe. Formerly com- In order to understand this process, it will be best to take a Repair pound fractures were the dread of the surgeon: septic inflammation simple injury, such asa clean cut. As the result of the passage of of an occurring in the wound reached the open medullary cavity of the | even the sharpest knife through the tissues a microscopic laceration incised _ bone, and the open blood-vessels of the bone gave easy access to | along the line of the incision must occur. The skin, subcutaneous wound. the causes and products of the inflammation into the general blood- | fat, fascia,

and muscle are divided. These parts being vascular, Stream, giving rise to pyemia. It is not asserted, however, that bleeding takes place from the cut vessels. Let us suppose that the this accident always occurred. In a case of compound fracture the bleeding has ceased, and that the surfaces and edges of the wound wound should be at once covered with a towel thoroughly soaked | are not brought into contact. The retractile power of the tissues, in a five per cent. solution of pure carbolic acid. And, if some time | when they are divided, necessarily produces a trench-shaped gap. elapses before the arrival of a surgeon, more of the solution must | If the sides of this gap are watched a weeping of a straw-coloured be poured upon the towel, which should be kept thoroughly soaked. | fluid will be observed, which, when examined under the microscope, After the fracture is set it will probably be necessary to inject the | is seen to have corpuscles floating in it. The fluid is the liquor solution into the interstices of the wound, over which an efficient sanguinis of the blood, and the corpuscles are the blood corpuscles. antiseptic dressing must be applied. When the injury is so severe | In the blood as it circulates throughout the vessels in the body, that it is impossible to prescrve the limb, amputation is the only | the yellow or red blood corpuscles are greatly in excess of the resource. It is often a difficult thing to say when the surgeon | white. In this fluid the white blood corpuscles are very numerous. should amputate. The question will frequently be settled by a | Careful observation, with the aid of a sufficiently powerful micro-consideration of the general circumstances and surroundings of the | scope, will show the formation of fine fibrils of 2 solid substance, patient, and no definite rules can be laid down. Speaking in general | which gradually extend over the field; this fibrillation takes its terms, an artificial substitute may take the place of the lower limb, | start from the white blood corpuscles. The effusion has coagulated. but no artificial substitute can ever efficiently take the place of the | A soft solid—fibrin—is formed, which gradually contracts, and upper limb ; and therefore surgeons will run some risk in attempt- | a clear fluid escapes; this is the blood serum. ‘To return to the ing to save an upper limb which they will not do in treating an | wound, —in consequence of the injury the smaller blood – vessels injury of a lower limb. dilate, their walls are thinned, and a stasis or stoppage of the flow of Joint There are three principal types of joint injury—(1)sprain or strain, | blood within these vessels takes place. The stasis is caused by the injury. in

which the ligamentous and tendinous structures around the joint | injury to the vessel walls, rendering the blood corpuscles more ad-

are stretched and even lacerated ; (2) contusion, in which the cartilaginous surfaces of the opposing bones in the joint are driven forcibly together ; (3) dislocation, in which the articular surfaces are separated from one another ; in this last injury the ligamentous capsule of the joint must be torn to allow the accident to occur. Joint strength may be classificd anatomically under three heads— (1) ligamentous, due to the ligaments binding the bones together ; (2) osseous, due to the shape of the bones forming the joint ; (3) muscular, due to the muscles surrounding the joint. Ligamentous strength predisposes to sprains, osseous to contusions, and muscular to dislocations. A joint is frequently saved from injury in conse- quence of the relative weakness of a bone near it. The ankle joint 1s saved by the weakness of the fibula, the wrist joint by the weak- ness of the radius, the sterno-clavicular joint by the weakness of the clavicle; the fracture of the bone preserves the joint from

hesive. The circulation is going on in the vessels beyond the arca of stasis. The blood inastate of stasis acts as an obstruction, and con- sequently there is an increased pressure on the inner surface of the thin walls. Asa result the fluid part of the blood or liquor sanguinis and the corpuscular elements of the blood escape into the tissues and on to the surface of the wound. On this surface and in the tissue next the surface a clotting takes place, and fibrin is formed. The surface of the wound becomes glazed, and as the fibrin contracts the blood serum oozes out upon the wound surface and escapes. The glazed surface then becomes vascular ; new blood-vessels are formed in it; and through these a circulation is set up continuous with the circulation in the blood-vessels around. If the surfaces of the gap are now brought into gentle contact, the blood-vessels on the two surfaces will unite. At first the uniting tissue is very succu- lent and vascular, and further changes must occur before the uniting

medium is consolidated. This is effected by the formation of fibrous tissue in the deeper parts of the uniting medium and by the forma- tion of epithelial tissue in the more superficial parts where the skin is divided.

Along with these changes the uniting medium becomes less vascular, and a linear scar is the result.

This is the case of an incised wound in which the surfaces are not brought at once into coutact. If, however, this is done, the same changes take place, and in a small wound no untoward results need follow. But in a wound of some size there is danger in bring- ing the edgcs of the wound into contact. In consequence of the difference in the retractile power of the different tissues that are divided, it may be impossible to bring the deeper parts into accurate contact. The patient will complain of local pain, accompanied by a throbbing sensation, showing that an accumulation of serum has taken place. Ifa stitch is removed, the serum will escape and the local uneasiness disappear. If, however, no relief is given, the re- tained serum, pressing upon the surrounding tissues and acting as a foreign body, will cause effusion of more serum. The white blood corpuscles will pass from the vessels in large numbers, will dic, and practically a cemetery of white blood corpuscles will be formed ; if a stitch is then removed a creamy fluid escapes. This fiuid is termed “pus.” Once the tension is relieved, the local uneasiness disappears; but the wound cannot then heal by primary union. The walls of the cavity must again become glazed ; vascularization must take place; and, as the walls of the cavity gradually come together by contraction, fibrous tissue is formed. This is wnion by second intention.

The collection of white blood corpuscles floating in the effusion and eventually forming pus is termed an abscess. Pus may also form amongst the tissues after a blow or other injury. As the result of a blow a certain area of tissue becomes congested, and effusion takes place into the tissues outside the vessels ; the effusion coagulates and a hard brawny mass is formed. This mass softens towards the centre; and if nothing is done the softened area gradually increascs in size, the skin becomes thinned over it, the thinned skin loses its vitality, and a small slough is formed. When the slough gives way, the pus escapes. Such shortly is the history of an acute abscess under the skin, and the explanation generally given is that a local necrosis or death of tissue takes place at that part of the inflammatory swelling farthest from the normal circu- lation. When the dying process is very acute death of the tissue occurs 7% masse, as in the core of a boil or in the slough in a carbuncle. Sometimes, however, no such evident mass of

dead tissue is to be observed, and all that escapes when the skin gives way is the creamy pus. In the latter case the tissue has broken down in a molecular form ; in the former case it has broken down en masse. After the cscape of the core or slough along with a

can be little doubt that the growth of an ulcer, as well as the disintegrating process which precedes its formation, is closely associated with the multiplication of low forms of plant life in the decaying tissue. By destroying these organisms with some powerful antiseptic the destructive process may be checked. Since these organisms live on decaying matter, they are termed “sapro- phytic.” The healthy tissues are antagonistic to their growth, and any treatment which renders the tissues around the gap healthy will interfere with their further development. The entrance of those organisms into a wound made by the surgeon, if they find in it a suitable soil for their development, is undoubtedly also a fertile cause of suppuration in wounds. But it must be distinctly remem- bered that any means which are adopted to keep the injured tissues in a healthy condition interferes with the growth of these sapro- phytes as directly as if the surgeon used some antiseptic substance which destroyed them. What relation obtains between a local necrotic process, such as the formation of a boil with its central slough, situated necessarily in the first instance under the skin, or the equally necrotic process, the formation of pus in a subcutaneous abscess, and these low forms of plant life? There can be no doubt that by the injection into the tissues of a powerful irritant these necrotic changes can be induced without the intervention of organisms. Professor Ogston and Mr Watson Cheyne have also shown that micrococci are present in the great majority of acute subcutaneous necrotic inflammations, as they are commonly met with in the human body. Here the question at present rests. The opinion of the present writer is that in all probability they are the cause of the necrotic process. It is not asserted that they are the cause of the primary inflammation, which need not go on to necrosis ; but the probability is that they find in the inflamed area a nidus for their growth and development. It is not known how they cause it, whether by direct action

upon the tissues or by uritating products formed during their growth. The organisms described by Ogston and Cheyne have a life history and require conditions for their existence and development different from those demanded by the saprophytic organisms already described. To reach the subcutaneous area of inflammation they must pass by the blood-stream, and must be able to exist in the living blood. They are probably associated with the infective class of organisms. In some suppurations at the present moment, such as acute suppurative periostitis, the formation of pus under the periosteum connected with bone, a suppuration within the medullary cavity of a bone called osteomyelitis, and in acute ulcerative endocarditis, the organ- isms met with are undoubtedly infective. We do not know exactly how they enter the blood-stream, but we know that they can live in it, and that the occurrence of these diseased conditions is un- doubtedly a local effect closely connected with blood-poisoning.

A portion of the body may die in consequence either of an intense Mortifi- inflammation or of a cutting off of the blood-supply. Besides these cation or two distinct varieties there is a great intermediate group of cases in gangrene.

certain amount of pus, a cavity is left, the walls of which become lined with lymph. The lymph becomes vascular, and receives the name of granulation tissue. The cavity heals by second intention.

Pus may accumulate in a normal cavity, such as a joint or bursa. It may also be met with in the cranial, thoracic, and abdominal cavities. In all these situations, if the diagnosis is clear, the principle of treatment is free evacuation of the pus, and in joints and in the peritoneal and pleural sacs washing out the cavity at the time of opening, free drainage, and careful antiseptic treatment during the subsidence of the inflammatory process. The tension is relieved by letting out the pus. If the after-drainage of the cavity is thorough the formation of pus ceases, and the serous discharge from the inner side of the abscess wall gradually subsides ; and as the cavity contracts the discharge becomes less and less, until at last the drainage-tube can be removed and the external wound allowed to heal. The large collections of pus which form in connexion with disease of the vertebre in the cervical, dorsal, and lumbar regions are also now treated by free

evacuation of the pus, with careful antiseptic measures. In all cases care should be taken to make the opening as dependent as possible in order that the drain- age may be thoroughly efficient. If tension occurs after opening by the blocking of the tube, or by its imperfect position, or by its being too short, there will be a renewed formation of pus. When a considerable portion of tissue dies in consequence of an injury, the death taking place by gradual breaking down or dis- integration, the process is termed wlceration, and the result is an ulcer. As long as the original cause which formed the ulcer is at work, the gap in the tissues becomes larger and larger. Suppose that the ulcerative process is going on and the ulcer is spreading. The ulcer is then painful and the parts around are inflamed. Remove the cause by appropriate treatment and the necrotic process ceases, the shreds of tissue are cast off, the ulcer gradually cleans, the inflammation subsides, the pain disappears : the ulcer becomes a healing ulcer, The surface of the gap becomes glazed, and those changes take place in it which have already been described as occurring in an open wound, The gap gradually contracts 1m size. Round the edges cicatrization occurs, leaving a scar or cicatrix. Within the last few years the process of cicatrization has been hastened by planting on the granulation tissue small grafts of epidermic tissue in the manner already described (p. 681). There

which both causes may be at work. A comparatively slight injury affecting a portion of the body imperfectly supplied with blood may give rise to an inflammatory condition which in a healthy part would be easily checked, but which in consequence of imperfect nutrition may end in mortification. Whilst the pressure of a tight boot in an old person with atheromatous vessels can give rise to mortification, the same pressure in a healthy person would give rise only to an evanescent redness. Frost-bite is a localized death of a portion of the body which has been exposed to prolonged cold. It may attack the fingers or toes. The death may occur directly without any intermediate reactionary inflammation, or it may follow an excessive reaction. The rule of treatment in all cases of gangrene in which there is a tendency to death is to keep the part warm by layers of wadding, but to avoid all methods which hurry the returning circulation; because any such increase would be followed by excessive reaction, which in its turn in a part already weakened would be followed by secondary death, When the part is dead, envelop it in antiseptic wadding to prevent putrefaction ; wait until

the line of demarcation between the living tissues and the dead part is evident, and then, if the case permits, amputate at a higher level. In spreading gangrene in which sepsis is present, and in which no line of demarcation forms, the best chance for the patient—at best a poor one—is to amputate high up in sound tissnes. In these cases the blood is generally poisoned, and if the patient recovers from the primary shock of the operation a return of the decaying process may attack the stump, and carry him off.

III. DisEAsEs. 1. Diseases of Blood-vessels.

An aneurism, in so far as we have to deal with it at present, may Aneur- be defined as a sac communicating with the lumen of an artcry. ism.

The sac-wall may be formed of one or more of the arterial coats which have become dilated. The tissues around, being condensed and being more or less adherent to the sac-wall, strengthen and sup- portit. The dilatation of the arterial coats is generally due to a local weakness, the result of disease. The diseased condition is almost always a chronic form of inflammation, to which the name atheroma

Treat- ment of true aneur- ism.

is given. In some instances the local weakness may be due to an injury bruising or lacerating the vessel and injuring its internal coat, When an artery is wounded and when the wound in the skin and superficial structures heals, the blood may escape into the tissues. In this case it displaces the tissues and by its pressure causes them to condense and form the sac-wall. The coats of the vessels, more especially when they are diseased, may be torn from a severe strain, and the blood will then escape into the condensed tissues forming the sac-wall. When one or more of the vessel coats form the sac there results what is called a true aneurism ; in those in- stances in which the sac-wall is formed by the condensed tissues around we have a primary false aneurism ; when a true aneurism bursts and the blood escapes into the tissues around it, as sometimes occurs in deep-seated aneurisms, giving rise to secondary localized accumulation, the term secondary false

anewrism is used. In both varieties of false aneurism the swelling is more diffuse and the pulsation as a rule is less marked than in the true aneurism.

The blood in an aneurism is at first in a fluid state, and at each beat of the heart a certain amount passes into the sac, causing its ex- pansion. In all aneurisms there is a tendency to coagulation of the blood, and a blood-clot is deposited in a laminar form on the inner surface of the aneurismal sac. In some instances this laminar coagulation by constant additions gradually fills the aneurismal cavity. The pulsation in the sac then ceases ; contraction of the sac and its contents gradually takes placc; the aneurism is cured. On the other hand, if the blood within the sac remains fluid, the aneurism will gradually increase in size; the tissues over the aneurism and the sac-wall will become thinned, and at last give way ; and death occurs from hemorrhage.

In the treatment of true aneurism the great principle is to encour- age coagulation in the aneurismal sac. This can be done by lessening the force of the circulation generally or locally. The general force of the circulation can be lessened by low diet, rest in bed, avoid- ance of all causes of vascular excitement, and by the administration of large doses of iodide of potassium. The force of the circulation can be decreased locally and temporarily by the application of a ligature to the artery between the ancurism and the heart or by the application of pressure upon the main vessel at a convenient point between the aneurism and the heart. The general treatment is available in all cases. The local treatment by operation or by compression is only available in those instances in which the aneurism is so situated that the blood-vessel can be compressed or ligatured, as in aneurisms of the head and neck or of the extre- mities. In certain aneurisms in the lower part of the neck and upper part of the thorax, in which a ligature cannot be applied between the aneurism and the heart, the blood-flow through the aneurismal sac has been diminished by the application of a ligature to one or more of the main vessels on the distal side of the aneur- ism. The blood-supply to the parts beyond the aneurisin being thus cut off, the immediate effect is increased pressure on the aneur- ismal sac ; but, since the parts accommodate themselves to altered circumstances, as the collateral blood-vessels increase in size, be- coming the main vessels of supply to the parts beyond, the original channel becomes of secondary

importance, the result being a diminu- tion in the size of the main vessel and diminished blood in the sac, encouraging coagulation and contraction of the aneurismal sac. Practically the same effect has sometimes been obtained in a per- manent way, as in cases of rapidly increasing aneurism of the sub- clavian artery in the root of the neck by amputation of the upper extremity at the shoulder joint. And within the last few years, in popliteal aneurism, the same thing has been done temporarily by the application of an elastic bandage to the limb from the foot upwards to the popliteal space, emptying the blood-vessels below ee and in this way cutting off the blood-supply tempo- rarily. the thigh, care being taken not to make firm pressure with the bandage as it passes over the aneurism behind the knee joint, so that the sac may not be emptied of blood. If the sac were emptied, the object in view would be defeated, because there would be no blood in the sac to coagulate. The continuation of the bandage in the thigh above the anenrism is practically a compressing agent applicd to the artery on the proximal side of the aneurism. ‘The rationale of this treatment of popliteal aneurism, due to Dr Walter Reid of the British navy, may, if this explanation is correct, be said to owe its success to the fact that in it we combine the two great principles which check the blood-pressure locally, z.¢., a cutting off of the blood-supply beyond the aneurismal sac and compression on the main vessel on the proximal side. It is to be noted that all these different means of checking the blood-pressure within the anenrismal sac are temporary in their action. The temporary arrest by compression, the equally temporary arrest by the application of a ligature, in the latter case the collateral anastomosing circulation taking the place of that of the main trunk which has been ligatured, start the process of coagulation within the sac, and, the process being once started, complete consolidation gradually takes place. Although these methods of treatment are principally of value in true aneurism, they are also to a certain extent useful in secondary

false aneurism. have to deal with a wounded vessel in which the blood, instead of

practically a (chronic) bleeding point ; the principle of treatment is to open the sac, turn out the clots, and below the bleeding point.

the blood in the vein is liable to coagulation, forming a clot or of veins

jections into the rectum will relieve the condition.

The application of the elastic bandage is continued up-

[PRACTICE, In primary false aneurisms, on the other hand, we

being poured out externally, is poured into the tissues, and is

and ligature the artery above The veins are liable to inflammation (phlebitis). When this occurs Diseases

thrombus, which, if displaced from its original position, either makes its way as an embolus towards the heart and is there arrested, or passes through the cavities of the heart into the lungs, there sticking and giving rise to lung symptoms. If the thrombus is formed in the hemorrhoidal plexus, it passes as an embolus by the portal system into the liver. If it is formed in the left side of the heart, it may pass into the large vessels at the root of the neck and reach the brain, giving rise to symptoms of brain disease, The thrombus niay be formed apart from inflammation of the vein wall in consequence of diseased states of the blood, as in gout and rheumatism, or it may form in consequence of stagnation of the blood-current due to slowing of the circulation in various wasting diseases, When a thrombus forms, absolute rest in the recumbent posture is to be strictly enjoined; the great danger is embolism or the displacement of the clot from its original position. Hot fomentations in the early stages and belladonna ointment when the condition becomes sub-acute are the best local applications. The desire is to promote absorption of the clot. The veins in the lower extremity and in the hemorrhoidal and spermatic plexus are liable to dilatation. The condition is termed variz. The veins dilate with tortuosity ; the valves become incompetent ; and the condition is apt to spread. In the lower extremity the primary cause may be an injury or some obstruction at a higher point. General laxity of the tissues predisposes to the condition 3 occupa- tions which necessitate much standing and alternation of leat and cold also act as predisposing causes. The treatment consists in giving the dilated vessel support by means of an elastic bandage or stocking. When the condition is local and gives discomfort, the vessel may be ligatured at various points so

as to cause its oblitera- tion. This operation should not be undertaken rashly, and should only be performed if the case is an aggravated one, since it is by no means devoid of risk. In the hemorrhoidal plexus the disease is termed internal hemorrhoids or piles ; many operations are per- formed for this condition, but in the great majority of cases the careful use of purgatives and the administration of cold water in- The dilated veins often ulcerate and give rise to bleeding piles; here an opera- tion is often called for, because the persistent loss of even small quantities of blood is apt to result in chronic anemia. The en- largement of the spermatic plexus is termed varicocele, and almost always occurs on the left side. The use of a suspensory bandage and cold bathing should first be tried ; if the disease persists, it is often associated with mental depression, and an operation—ligature at several points of the dilated vessel—should be performed. The disease may be associated with atrophy of the testicle on the same side, and this liability aggravates the mental condition and en- courages the surgeon to operate. Inflammation of the lymphatic vessels in the lower limbs is often associated with inflammation of the veins in the female after delivery, giving rise to the various forms of white leg. Acute inflammation of the lymphatic vessels and glands is also associated with poisoned wounds, and has al- ready been alluded to in connexion with injuries. The use of hot fomentations and careful elastic pressure with rest are prescribed

for treatment. : 2. Diseases of Bone.

Attention has already been directed to one form of injury to a Bone bone, viz., fracture. A word may now be said about inflammation diseases of a bone and its results. As a typical instance we will take a long bone, consisting of a shaft and two extremities. The walls of the shaft consist of dense bone, the extremities of cancellated tissue. The shaft of the bone is hollow, and filled with medullary tissue. In the fully developed bone the extremities alone are tipped with cartilage ; in the extremities of the bones of a growing person there are also layers, termed the epiphyseal cartilages. The bone is surrounded by a fibrous membrane termed the periosteum. This membrane is richly supplied with blood-vessels, which ramify through it and pass, along with lymphatic vessels and nerves, from it-into the Haversian canals in the dense bone forming the shaft, The deeper layers of the periosteum consist of osteoblastic cells, which also line the Haversian

canals. In the undeveloped condition these cell elements take an active part in the growth of the bone as regards its breadth, the epiphyseal cartilages taking an active part in its growth as regards its length. The medullary tissue in the cavity of the bone is supplied by the nutrient artery ; the cancellated tissue forming the extremities receives its blood-supply partly from the nutrient artery and partly from vessels passing in- directly from the periosteum. When a bone is injured—as happens, for example, in a severe bruise—the blood-vesscls in the periosteum and in the Haversian canals become congested, effusion of liquor

sanguinis and migration of the white blood corpuscles take place, and a severe gnawing pain is felt at the seat of the bruise. The pain is severe because the effusion cannot escape. It collects under the periosteum and in the Haversian canals. The cell elements in these situations are irritated, and cell proliferation takes place. The periosteum becomes thickened, and if the tension continues suppuration may occur between the periosteum and the bone. The periosteum is raised from the bone ; the blood-vessels passing into the Haversian canals are obliterated or torn across; and the outer layers of the hard dense bone, their sources of nutriment being cut off, die. The extent of the necrosed tissue will depend upon the extent of the suppurating area; if the suppurating area includes the nutrient artery within its range, nutriment being then cut off from the medullary tissue from which in part the deeper layers of the shaft of tle bone are supplied with blood, death of the whole thickness of the shaft of the bone may occur. As already stated, the most acute forms of suppurative periostitis and suppurative osteomyelitis are infective diseases, the suppuration in them being due to the presence of a micrococcus. If after au injury the primary inflammation is relieved by fomentations, leeching, or incisions, suppuration may be prevented; or even if, after suppuration has occurred, free incisions are made to allow the pus to escape, the periosteum may assume its normal position, and the area of necrosis be limited or necrosis be prevented altogether. After a portion of the shaft of the bone dies, the necrosed area is gradually absorbed ; but, if the area is of considerable size, and more particularly if sepsis occurs, the dead part is gradually scparated from the living, and after a time it becomes loose, and as a rule has to be removed by

operation. If the inflammation, acute in the first in- stance, becomes sub-acute, or if it is sub-acute from the first, then, instead of suppuration, the effusion under the periosteum coagu- lates, whereupon lymph is formed, the proliferating osteoblastic cells in the lymph take up their normal function, and new bone is made. This mass of new bone is termed a node. In the Haversian canals the osteoblasts there forming bone will render the bone tissue more dense and ivory-like in consistence, to which the term sclerosis is applied. In some cases the osteoblastic cells in the Haversian canals, instead of forming bone, feed upon the original bony tissue which constitutes the walls of the canals. The Haversian canals becoming enlarged, the result is a lessening of the amount of inorganic matter in the arca affected, and a cancellation of the hard bone takes place. This condition is called rarefying ostitis. The rarefaction of the densc bone may persist, or the process may stop, the osteoblasts again forming bone and the rarefied area be- coming sclerosed. In the cancellated tissue in the extremities of the long bones, and in that which forms the mass of the short bones, such as the vertebr, the tarsa] and the carpal bones, the inorganic matter compared with the hard bone is relatively in smaller amount than the organic matter filling the cancelle. Here as a result of injury the thin lamelle of bone may be cut off from their blood-supply, and death take place. If the process is acute, an area of cancellated tissue will die, and be separated from the surrounding living tissue as in the hard bone. In consequence, however, of the quantity of organic matter, death may take place in a molecular form, more nearly allied to the process of ulceration in the soft parts. This condition is known as cartes. If the inflammatory process in cancellated tissue is sub-acute, instead of a molecular death, sclerosis of the cancellated tissue occurs. When the cancellated tissue is the seat of inflammation, in con- sequence of its close connexion and intimate anatomical relations with the articular cartilages, they in their turn become implicated, and we have then to deal with disease of the joint. In all cases in which incisions are made to relieve tension under the periosteum, or in which portions of bone are removed to relieve tension in the shaft or in the medullary cavity of a bone, or in which incisions are made to check the progress of inflammatory action in the can- cellated tissue, strict antiseptic precautions must be taken to pre- vent sepsis occurring in the wound.

3. Discases of Joints. A joint is a complicated organ, and its integrity depends upon a

| joint. healthy condition of the bones which form it, of the articular carti-

lages which cover the ends of the bones, and of the synovial mem- brane which supplies the synovial fluid that lubricates the joint. These different structures are closely associated anatomically and physiologically, and disease beginning in any one of them will assuredly, unless checked, gradually extend to the others. The cartilage covering the ends of the bones receives its blood-supply mainly from the bone, and is also to a certain extent supplied at its edges by the synovial membrane. The cartilage being in itself non-vascular, disease does not commence in it; the majority of joint diseases commence either in the synovial membrane or in the bone ; as a general rule they begin with some slight injury of the joint. These injuries consist of strains or twists (of the joint) on the one hand and jarring or contusion on the other. In the latter case the elastic cartilage lessens the force of the contusion.

When a joint is strained, the ligaments binding the bones to-

gether are stretched and the synovial membrane becomes inflamed. Sprain.

Consequently effusion takes place into the joint, which becomes swollen and painful on pressure. Any movement of it is painful

and all the muscles around it are rigid. Ina healthy person appro- priate treatment—rest, hot fomentations, and gentle elastic pres- sure—will cause the fluid within the joint to be gradually absorbed, after which the joint can be restored to its normal condition. When the inflammation becomes sub-acute the pain disappears, and unless the joint is kept quiet by appropriate splints the condition is very apt to become chronic; that is, the joint becomes swollen and the movements are restricted. This condition is most persistent, and prolonged rest, along with counter-irritation by blistering or

by the application of tincture of iodine, is necessary before the effusion subsides. The joint may remain weak for the rest of the patient's life. Fibrous adhesions may form and prevent free move- ment. A joint in such a condition is always liable on the slightest injury to have a return of the effusion in an acute or sub-acutc form. These are the chief consequences of a strain in a healthy person. In a weakly person the primary strain may entail a very different result. The synovial membrane may undergo gelatinous or pulpy degeneration, and, although it is improbable that this condition is associated with the tubercular diathesis in all cases, there can be no doubt that in very many the degeneration of the synovial membrane is tubercular in character. The tubercle bacil- lus has been found in the thickened membrane. A joint in this condition swells; the enlargement, although it may be due in part to effusion into the cavity of the joint, is mainly caused by the thicken- ing of the synovial membrane, which has a peculiar doughy semi- elastic feeling. The movements of the joint are restricted, though little pain is complained of. If it is an upper limb the patient will not use it, if a lower limb he will walk with a distinct limp. The disease is a chronic one, and the joint may remain in this con- dition for months. Rest, elastic pressure, and blistering may check the progress of the disease, but as a rule, sooner or later, and very often as the result of some slight injury, a change takes place. On the one hand, the effusion within the joint, instead of being serous, becomes sero-purulent and even purulent, owing to the formation of pus within it. If the joint is an important one, inflammatory fever is set up ; the joint becomes intensely painful on the slightest movement, and unless incisions are made to allow the pus to escape it passes gradually into a state of complete dis- organization. The cartilage softens and breaks down, so that gradually the cancellated bone underneath is exposed. A similar change takes place in the opposing cartilage. It is destroyed in its turn and the ligaments binding the bones together are softened and lose their elasticity, so that the joint can be moved in abnormal directions. A grating sensation can be felt when the cancellated bony surfaces are rubbed together. Along with these changes within the joint, foci of inflammation form in the soft tissues around it. These inflammatory areas suppurate; the abscesses burst into the joint; the skin over thein gives way; and com- munication is established betwcen the external air and the cavity of the joint. Through this channel the causes of putrefaction reach the cavity, and complete disorganization of the part

accom- panied by sepsis occurs. Should the joint be an important one, a condition termed hectic is set up. If the discharge is allowed to continue, a gradual wasting takes place, which sooner or later ends in the death of the individual, unless the surgeon either re- lieves the tension by free incisions, or excises the joint, or anputates the limb. After disorganization has occurred, if the inflammatory process ceases, anchylosis of the joint may result. But, if the joint is freely drained and kept at rest, the inflammation will subside, and the granulation tissue on the two opposing surfaces will unite and a fibrous formation take place. The process may stop there, or the fibrous tissue may be gradually transformed into bone. Osseous union has taken place between the bones forming the joint. In many cases this is what the surgeon aims at, and it is of great importance to keep it constantly in view and to place the joint in such a position that, if anchylosis does occur, the limb may be as useful as possible. This result is only attained after prolonged treatment, and, if the patient's strength is unequal to it, it will be necessary to excise the affected joint or to amputate the limb. Suppuration sometimes occurs within a joint without any previous pulpy degeneration of the synovial membraue, either as the result of a wound or from septic inflammation sccondary to pyemia, or in consequence of a very acute simple synovitis resulting from excessive tension within the joint. When the synovial membrane is affected with pulpy degeneration the vitality of the cartilage at its edges, where it joins the synovial membrane, may be interfered with: the thickened synovial membrane, by encroaching on the articular cartilage, gradually by pressure alters the nutrition of the cartilage so that it disintegrates and breaks down, and when it is destroyed disorganization of the joint ensues, as already described. Should the disease assume this form, if care is taken, and if the joint is kept quiet, suppuration within it need not necessarily take place. The inflammation may assume a sub-acute type and fibrous anchy- losis occur.

Con- tusion.

Anehy- losis.

Rela- tions of venereal diseases.

When a. joint hasbeen severely contused, separation of the cartilage from the bone occurs ; effusion then takes place between the carti- lage and the bone; the cartilage is cut off from its nutrient supply ; and, unless the joint is kept at complete rest, unless the effusion is absorbed, the cartilage will sooner or later become necrosed. The necrosed cartilage will give way; the bone beneath will be exposed ; and, if the irritation is kept up, effusion, at first serous but soon becoming purulent in consequence of the tension within the joint, will take place. Changes follow in the opposing carti- lage, which has been itself bruised by the primary jar, and perhaps even separated from the bone beneath. It will in its turn necrose, and the bone will be exposed, suppuration taking place within the joint. The synovial membrane will become diseased, the liga- ments softened, and the evil sequence of events already described will ensue. A joint affected in this way is easily recognized from one in which the synovial membrane is primarily affected by the absence of swelling and by the intense pain. In the early stages complete rest should be obtained by affixing a weight to the affected limb. This, by setting up between the opposed and in- jured cartilaginous surfaces a condition of negative pressure, will tend to check the disease. But if this plan of treatment does not soon cause a subsidence of the pain, actual cautery must at once be resorted to. Contusion in which the cancellated bone is injured at some distance from the cartilage is most commonly met with in young people, in whom the extremities of the bones are not fully developed. In them the epiphyseal cartilages are richly supplied with blood for the performance of their physiological function, the formation of bone, and a comparatively slight in- jury may cause inflammation to be set up in the bone immediately in contact with the epiphyseal cartilage. As in the synovial mem- brane when it is affected with pulpy degeneration, this disease may be occasionally non-tubercular in character ; but in the majority of cases, more especially when the primary injury is very slight, the disease assumes the tubercular type and tubercle is deposited. In such cases the symptoms are often very insidious ; the young patient complains of some slight uneasiness, or the first thing to be noticed is a limp in walking when a lower limb is affected. In the case of an upper limb the patient will avoid moving the affected joint. As there is no external swelling, the disease may be overlooked in its early stages ; but, if it is suspected, and if the affeeted limb is kept at rest, the inflammation will subside and recovery ensue. On the other hand, if the patient is allowed to

use the limb, even in an imperfect way, the tubercular area may extend and the articular cartilage become affected. The articular cartilage does not in that case receive its proper nourishment: it disintegrates, breaks down, and the disease attacks the joint. Into this last tubercular matter escapes and suppuration occurs, result- ing sooner or later in disorganization of the joint.

In recent years a uscful limb has often been saved by excision of the affected joint. In the early stages the disease may subside under appropriate local treatment, such as counter-irritation, rest, pressure, assisted by constitutional treatment, such as tonics, fresh air, and careful dieting. By these means an operation may be avoided, and in applying such treatment it must be remembered that, while the disease itself may subside, the joint as an organ may be irretrievably damaged : it may become anchylosed. If anchylosis oceurs in a flexed position of the hip or knee joints, the limb will be useless for progression ; and an operation will be necessary in order to straighten it. In the ankle joint, if anchylosis occurs with the foot in an extended position, the patient will not be able to put his heel to the gronnd, and an operation will be necessary to bring the foot at right angles to the leg. Do not interfere with an anchylosed joint in the lower limb if it is in good position. If the shoulder joint becomes anchylosed after disease, the sterno- clavicular and acromio-clavicular joints take up to a great extent the function of the anchylosed shonlder. In the elbow, in what- ever position the joint becomes anchiylosed, the arm loses much of its usefulness and excision of the joint is performed in order to get a movable elbow. In the wrist it may be necessary to operate for anchylosis ; but as a rule, if the fingers are mobile, the anchylosed wrist does not interfere to any great extent with the usefulness of the hand.

4. Venereal Diseases.

Three distinct affections are ineluded under this term—gonorrheea, chancroid, and syphilis. At one time these were regarded as dif- ferent forms of the same disease; and, though gonorrhea is now generally held to be quite distinct from the other two, there are not wanting eminent authorities, including Mr Jonathan Hutchin- son, who are inclined to look upon chancroid and syphilis as essen- tially one and the same disease. The present writer believes that gonorrhea, chancroid, and syphilis are three

distinct diseases, due to separate causes, which have nothing in common except their habitat. The cause in each case is a specific virus, probably a micro-organism. In the case of gonorrhea the virus attacks mucous membranes, especially that of the urethra ; in chancroid mucous membranes and the skin are affected ; in syphilis the

whole system comes under the influence of the poison. Gonorrhea

and chaucroid correspond to the process of septic intoxication, The organisms on implantation set up a local disturbance, and the products of this fermentative process pass into the system and give rise to constitutional effects ; but the organisms themselves do not pass into the system generally. In syphilis, on the other hand, there isa true infective process: the organisms pass into the general circulation and live and multiply wherever they find a suitable nidus. The joint affection commonly called “ gonorrheal rheu-matism,” which sometimes follows gonorrhcea, is in all probability an infective condition. If this is true, then in these rare cases gonorrheea is infective. The chancroid poison may pass into the lymphatics and canse inflammation of the lymphatic glands in the groin, giving rise to chancroidal bubo. These clinical facts are undoubtedly opposed to any generalization such as that laid down above, and itis right to note them; but the general comparison between gonorrhea and chancroid as non-infective and syphilis as distinctly infective in its character holds good in the great major- ity of cases. A further study of these quasi-infective varieties of gonorrheea and chancroid must undoubtedly throw light upon the physiological classification of pathogenic organisms. These three affections are generally acquired as the result of impure sexual intercourse ; but there are other methods of contagion, as, for example, when the accoucheur is poisoned whilst delivering a syphi- litic woman, the surgeon when operating on a syphilitic patient. .An individual may be attacked by any one or any two of the three, or by all of them at once, as the result of one and the same connexion ; but they do not show themselves at the same time ; in other words, they have different stages of incubation. In gonorrheea the disease appears very rapidly, so also in chancroid, the first symptoms com-

mencing as a rule three or four days after inoculation. It is very different, however, with syphilis. Here the period of incubation is one rather of weeks, the average length being twenty-eight days, though it may vary from one week to eight. The length of the period of incubation, therefore, is the great primary diagnostic in the case of syphilis. “i

Syphilis is an infective fever, and its life history may be best Syphilis, considered by comparing it with vaccinia. A child is vaccinated on the arm with vaccine lymph. For the first two or three days nothing is observed ; but on the fourth day redness appears, and by the eighth day a characteristic vaccine vesicle is formed, which bursts and frees a discharge, which dries and formsa scab. If on the eighth day the clear lymph in the vesicle is introduced at another point in the child’s skin, no characteristic local effect follows. The system is protected by the previous inoculation ; this protection will last for some years, and in certain cases for the rest of the patient’s life. We have here, then, exposure to a poison, its introduction locally, a period of incubation, a charac- teristic local appearance at the seat of inoculation, a change in the constitution of the individual, and protection from another attack for a variable period. So with syphilis. The syphilitic poison is introduced at the seat of an accidental abrasion either on the genital organs or on any part of the surface of the body. The poison lies quiescent for a variable period. The average period is four weeks. A characteristic cartilaginous hardness appears at the seat of inoculation. If this is irritated in any way, an ulceration takes place ; but ulceration is an accident, not an essential. From the primary seat the system generally is infected. The virns is multiplied locally and, passing along the lymphatic vessels, attacks the nearest chain of lymphatic glands. If the original sore is in the genital organs, the glands in the groin are first attacked ; if in the hand, the gland above the inner condyle of the humerus; if on the lip, the gland in front of the angle of the jaw. The affected glands are indurated and painless; they may become inflamed, just as the primary lesion may ulcerate; but the inflammation is an acci- dent, not an essential. From the primary glands the mischief will affect the whole glandular system. The body generally is so altered that various skin eruptions, often symmetrical, break out. Any irritation of the mucous membrane is followed by superficial ulcer- ations, and in the later stages of the disease skin eruptions, pustular and tubercular in type, appear, and in weakly people in severe

cases, or in cases that have not been properly treated by the surgeon, syphilitic deposits termed gummata are formed. These, if irritated, break down and give rise to deep-seated ulcerations. Gummata may attack the different organs in the body ; the muscles, liver, and brain are the favourite sites. Their presence interferes with the functions of the organs, and, if the organ affected is one functionally important in the economy, may canse death. The individual is as a general rule protected against a second attack, although there have been rare cases recorded in which individuals have been attacked a second time.

Syphilis is treated by many surgeons by giving careful attention Treat- to the general health, to diet and regimen and tonics, by placing ment of the patient in the most favourable hygienic circumstances, in the syphilis. belief that it runs a natural course and has a tendency to natural

cure. Special ae are treated as they arise. Other surgeons oses of mercury, in the form of grey powder,

administer small iodide of mercury, or corrosive sublimate. If the physiological

DISEASES.] oURGEH R Y effects of mercury are observed—tenderness of the gums and a metallic taste in the mouth—this treatment is desisted from and iodide of potassium is administered, mercury being given again when its physiological symptoms have disappeared. Oleate of mer- cury or mercurial ointment, or mercury with lanoline, is applied to the primary lesion and rubbed in over the enlarged glands. This is

the hypertrophied gland is only altered in size ; it retains its general

shape and functional activity. Occasionally the hypertrophic area

is localized, and to a great extent separable from the original gland

by @ more or less distinct capsule. In the mammary gland, for Various

example, a local hypertrophy may occur, the microscopic characters forms of Between this condition tumour,

continued for six months or a year. In the later stages of the com- plaint iodide of potassium is the main remedy used. There are therefore two distinct methods of treating syphilis,—the non-mer- curial and the mercurial. Both methods have been extensively tried by the present writer, and he believes that the mercurial is infinitely preferable to the non-mercurial method. Recent investigations point to the valuc of corrosive sublimate as a germicide, and in all probability the good results which follow saturation of the system with mercury are to be explained in this way. It is said by the non-mercurialists that the administration of mercury masks the symptoms. There can be no doubt that the symptoms often appear after the mercury is stopped, but in a modified form, and there is no evidence that the mercurial treatment prolongs the disease. Syphilis has a tendency to natural cure, like all the continued fevers, and along with the administration of mercury careful hygienic treat- ment must receive particular attention, and often in weakly un- healthy people a long sea voyage is of great value. Any means which causes a free action of the skin, as, for instance, by periodic visits to thermal baths, is of. great assistance in eliminating the »oison.

: Syphilis as commonly met with nowadays is not of so severe a type as it formerly was. One reason often given for this is that mercury was formerly always pushed until its full physiological effects were observed, and that the lowering of the patient’s con- stitution by this severe treatment aggravated the primary com- plaint. There may be some truth in this explanation; but the principal reason in all probability is that the syphilitic organism does not now find so suitable a nidus or soil for its growth and development as it once did. Syphilis in the United Kingdom at the present moment is in the stage of an epidemic in its decline. This may be looked on as a startling statement ; but it is true of syphilis as of all infective diseases. A time must come when the soil is practically worn out, when it becomes so poor that the organ- ism grows only in a stunted form, producing a mild disease, till in time it ceases to grow altogether. It is not asserted that it will necessarily die out, because after lying fallow for a time the soil may recover its power and the disease be revived in a more virulent form, analogous to the

luxuriant crop which follows after a period of fallow. Syphilis can be conveyed by the discharge from any syphilitic lesion occurring within two years after the commence- ment of the complaint. It cannot be conveyed by the normal secretions of the syphilitic person except in the case of the semen, which, impregnating the ovum in the female, causes the feetus to be syphilitic. Syphilization of the foetus is followed by syphiliza- tion of the mother. Thc blood of a syphilitic person is infectious for two years after the commencement of the attack. Pure vaccine lymph cannot convey syphilis ; if, however, it is mixed with blood it may convey it. No person who has had syphilis should marry until he has been entirely free from the complaint for two, or better still for three, years. Ifa person marries before this time pregnancy greatly increases the risk to the mother. If there is any suspicion of syphilis the mother should take mercury during the period of pregnancy. It is interesting to note how time has a modifying influence in a case of repeated pregnancies occurring in a syphilitic woman. At first there may be miscarriage in the early stage of pregnancy ; after a time abortions in the later stage; there may then be a still-born child; then one born alive but syphilitic ; then a child born apparently healthy but soon becoming syphilitic; and ultimately a healthy child is born and remains healthy, showing no evidence of syphilitic disease. The disease has worn itself out. The relation of apparently healthy pcople born of syphilitic parcnts to syphilis acquired during the course of their life may explain those remarkable cases of escape from syphilitic infection which constantly come under the observation of the surgeon.

5. Tumours. As the result of a local irritation an acute inflammatory swelling . May appear. If the irritant is of a severe type the result may be local death. An abscess may form ; and, after the pus has escaped or has been evacuated, and after the original cause of the irritation has subsided, the swelling may disappear and the parts be restored to a condition nearly allied to the normal. If the irritant, however, is slight and its action prolonged, a chronic inflammatory swelling of the part may result. Although in many cases with appropriate treatment the induration disappears, in other cases it persists during the life of the individual. The indurated mass in its microscopic characters closely resembles the original anatomical characteristics of the part affected. When, for example, an organ

like a gland is the seat of a chronic irritation a general incrcase in its size takes place. A hypertrophy or overgrowth has occurred, but as a rule

1 Compare PATHOLOGY, VOl. xviii. p. 367 sq.

of which resemble imperfect gland tissue. and an adenoid or glandular tumour of the mamma no distinct line of demarcation can be drawn, and the probability is that the ade- nomatous tumour of the mammna is caused by local irritation. It may be the immediate outcome of a misdirected or excessive functional activity. The great practical difference, however, between it and true hypertrophy is this, that it can only be removed by opera- tion. The adenomatous tumour closely resembles in some of its microscopic characters one of the varieties of epithelioma, of which an increase in the columnar epithelium lining the acini in the gland is the main characteristic. This tumour is not a simple tumour like the true adenoma ; it does not grow slowly ; it is not encap- sulated ; the cellular elements in it not only invade the surrounding tissues but tend to pass into the lymphatic vessels and reach the lymphatic glands in the arm-pit, where they grow and form second- ary tumours similar in microscopic characters to the original growth. From these secondary foci a further invasion may take place, and the cell elements may reach the blood-stream and be caught in the capillaries, forming there new growths, till the patient dies from the general implication of the whole system. This form of tumour has been termed a malignant adenoma. While it has originally the microscopic characters of a simple adenoma, if we look to its life history we have in it an excellent example of a inalignant tumour. Microscopically it is a stepping-stone between the simple and the malignant type of tumour ; clinically it is characteristically malig- nant. The mammary gland is composed of glandular tissue and fibrous tissue. A hyperplasia of the fibrous tissue may occur in consequence of an excessive irritation of the glandular tissue, or apparently a primary increase in the fibrous tissue may occur locally, giving rise to a simple fibrous tumour of the mamma, of which fully developed fibrous tissue is the microscopic characteristic. This overgrowth may become encapsulated and give rise to no symptoms except those referable to its gradual increase in size, and after the gland in which it lies has fulfilled its life history it may stop growing, degenerate, and decay. In the uterus, e¢.g., those fibrous tumours which occur after the time of child-

bearing is past, after the uterus has fulfilled its destiny, cease to give any further trouble and are only inconvenient in consequence of their size. Fibrous tissue in the early stages of its development is largely composed of cell elements, and there are tumours, ¢.g., in conncxion with the mamma, which have their prototype in the undeveloped or cellular stage of fibrous tissue. These tumours also are essentially malignant. They grow rapidly, and are richly supplied with thin-walled blood- vessels ; the elements of the tumour pass directly into the blood- stream, and reach the capillaries, where they are arrested and where secondary growths like the original growth in their anatomical characteristics are formed, causing the death of the patient.

In what has just been said it will be seen that therc is no distinct line of demarcation between the inflammatory swelling and the hypertrophy, between the hypertrophy and the tumour proper, between the simple and the malignant tumour. The local irrita- tion can be traced in the case of the inflammatory swelling and the hypertrophy, and it is highly probable that both the simple and the malignant tumour are also due to local irritation. It must, however, be acknowledged that it cannot always be traced. If the malignant tumour is not due to local irritation, but to a general dyscrasia or peculiarity of the patient, the surgeon has slight grounds for recommending its removal. If, however, he believes that all tumours are evidences of local irritation, he is fully justified in recommending thcir early and complete removal—in the case of the malignant tumours before they have time to spread by the lymphatic or blood-stream to distant parts, in the case of simple tumours before they have assumed characteristics of malignancy, as these tumours sometimes do. The mammary gland has been taken as an example of an organ in which tumours frequently occur. The reason for this frequency, if we believe in local irritation as a cause of tumour- growth, is not far to seck: from the time of puberty to the time when it terminates its functional activity this gland is in a constant state of vascular unrest and functional change. Both forms of tu- mour are met with in all the organs and tissues of the body. Simple tumours are generally composed of fully developed tissue, similar to the tissue in which they lie, the simple fatty tumour occurring in connexion with fatty tissue, the simple fibrous tumour in con- nexion with fibrous tissue, the osseous tumour in connexion with bone. The malignant tumour, on the other hand, is generally formed of undeveloped tissue which has not yet fulfilled its destiny, which is not only

misplaced in situation but in time. The carti- laginous tumour has its prototype in cartilage, for that which covers the ends of the long bones and enters into the formation of a joint is a fully developed tissue. The true prototype of the cartilaginous tumour is not, however, fully developed cartilage, but one or other of those forms of cartilage which. as regards their developmental

Range of

surgical opera- tions.

Conser- vative surgery.

position, are intermediate between fibrous tissue and bone, and there- fore the cartilaginous tumour has frequently a life history more closely allied to the malignant than to the simple type of tumour

formation. . ;

No attempt can here be made to classify the different forms of tumour. The surgeon at the bedside meets with tumours as living parasitic formations. He studies their life history; he observes their birth, their growth, their peculiarities, and their tendencies ; he naturally attempts to classify them from a study of their physio- logical or clinical aspects. The pathologist, on the other hand, examines the tumour after it is removed ; he studies it as it appears to the naked eye and under the microscope; and he attempts to classify tumours from an anatomical standpoint. Within recent years the pathologist’s classification, associated with a recognition of the developmental division of the human embryo into different layers, has become the favourite ; but it is hoped that, as science advances, the increase of clinical knowledge, assisted by microscopic and embryological research, will make a physiological classification a reality.

IV. OPERATIVE SURGERY.

Within recent years the main advance in surgery has been from the scientific side, due to increased precision in physiological knowledge and a careful study of the relation of organisms to various diseased conditions. And with this progress operative skill, in many directions previously unthought of, has kept pace. Cranial operative surgery has advanced as the motor areas on the surface of the brain have been localized with greater precision. The ex- perimental physiologist has done his part; the clinical observer is now doing his. Cranial surgery necessitates special notice. In the thoracic cavity also diseased con- ditions are now relieved by surgical operations. The greatest advance of all, however, is in connexion with the abdominal cavity. Under this head the work of the last thirty years requires special notice. The peritoneum was at one time considered a closed book to the operator; now all is changed, and abdominal surgery has become one of the most important branches of operative work. Joints in a state of inflammation are also now freely opened and tension is relieved. With the relief of tension the in- flammatory process subsides and the joint recovers. The excision of diseased joints has also become part of the everyday work of the surgeon. Cancerous affections—using the term in a clinical sense—of the tongue, rectum, and larynx are now treated by excision of these organs. But it is still a question in what cases the operation prolongs life, and what cases are specially suited for operation. While greater latitude has been given to surgical interfer- ence with the different cavities of the body, operations upon the limbs have been restricted in consequence of the ac- ceptance of Lister’s views with regard to wound treatment. Many limbs upon which formerly amputation was per- formed, as, for example, in the case of compound fractures, are now saved. ‘The term “conservative surgery,” which formerly had reference to the excision of a diseased joint instead of amputation of the affected limb, has now a wider meaning, and covers not only the different excisions which have taken the place of amputation but also those cases in which a limb is saved by careful antiseptic man- agement after severe injury. At one time, perhaps, in the early stages of antiseptic wound treatment the brilliancy of the results obtained by these means, and the immunity which resulted from the prevention of blood-poisoning, en- couraged surgeons to save a limb which, when the wound was healed, was not really useful. An upper limb saved, however inefficient, is better than any artificial substitute, and every

endeavour in the direction of conservation should be made. Conservation in the case of a lower limb, on the other hand, may be carried too far, Unless the saved linib can support the weight of the body, it is far better to per- form amputation, because a satisfactory artificial substitute can be found to take the place of the lower extremity. In performing amputation on a lower limb every endeavour

should be made to obtain a stump which will bear, in part at any rate, the weight of the patient's body. Since the Modern introduction of anzsthetics rapidity in performing an Surgical amputation is not essential. Flaps can be carefully made an time can be taken to shape them; and they can be so. arranged that the resulting cicatrix will not be opposite

the sawn extremity of the bone. flaps the surgeon is justified in sacrificing to some extent the length of the limb, if by so doing he can leave a mobile and painless stump on which an artificial limb cans be comfortably fitted. But this does not hold good to the same extent for an upper limb. The pressure on the éx tremity is not so great, and the longer the stump the more easily can an artificial substitute be fitted on. As a result also of Lister's teaching operative procedure for the cure of various deformities, such as knock-knee, rickets, and club-foot, in which the bones affected are freely attacked, has done much to relieve unsightly deformity and increase the usefulness of the individual. In all operations absorb- able catgut ligatures for the cut vessels have since about 1861 taken the place of silk, which had to come away by ul- ceration,—a destructive process antagonistic to rapid heal- ing. Greater care is taken to save blood byemptying the part to be operated on before beginning the operation. Greater care is also taken to tie all bleeding points, so as to prevent reactionary hemorrhage and the escape of blood between the surfaces of the wound, whereby healing is retarded. Free drainage by india-rubber and glass tubing, by absorb- able tubes made of decalcified bone, by skeins of catgut acting by capillarity—all the outcome of an understanding of the local irritation and constitutional fever caused by tension—have done more than anything else to enable the surgeon to attain his triple object,—painlessness, rapidity, and safety in the

healing of a wound. Lastly, the clear understanding of the term “antiseptic” in its fullest mean- ing, the knowledge of the power which the unirritated and healthy tissues have as germicidal agents, and the introduction of various antiseptic or rather antitheric sub- stances, some of which destroy, some of which paralyse, those lowly organisms whose power for evil in an un- healthy tissue or an injured part is so great, contribute towards the same great end. By these means operations are to a great extent relieved of their dangers, and by anzsthesia, which prevents pain and suffering, they are robbed of their terrors. (ae ca)

1. Cranial.

The necessity for setting apart a distinct section of this article to deal separately with the region of the head does not depend upon any specialization in the principles of treatment peculiar to that region. The general laws of surgical procedure hold good here as elsewhere throughout the body; but they have to be exemplified in relation to a region so separated from others in its architectural and functional peculiarities as to call for special record and delinea- tion. The surgeon has to deal with a most intricate series of con- siderations—anatomical, physiological, and psychic—in devising suitable treatment for abnormal conditions in this region ; the inter- relation of cranial tissues and organs, their capital importance in the physical economy, and the position of some of them as the sub- strata of mental activities render any surgical interference a matter of great delicacy and grave anxiety. So much is this the casc that it has been left for the most daring and the most modern surgeons to prove that this is a region to which ordinary surgical rules may properly apply ; and hence what must be here recorded is largely matter of quite recent history and to a large extent at ; variance with the doctrine of former epochs. The function of the Function cranium as a protective agent for the brain and the organs of of the special sense is strikingly shown by its architectural design. The cranium. proper discharge of this function is of paramount importance from the economic value of the cranial contents ; and the demands upon it are the more exacting from the extreme delicacy of physical structure and the unstable physiological equilibrium present in the brain. Clothed externally by the densely resisting textures of the scalp, further protected by a layer of heat-deflecting hair, the cranium itself consists of a firmly welded bony

casket of ovoid form, maintained in its balanced position upon the upright spinal

In order to obtain such |

CRANIAL. |

column by a series of ligamentous and muscular bands. There is thus protection against the sun's rays and a general mobility that provides for the avoidance of impending blows. But the cranium has chiefly to reccive and annul transmitted physical vibrations, the result either of blows upon the head or of those jars and oscillations, incidental to bodily movements, which would interfere greatly with the functions of the brain did they actually reach it. -The function of the cranium in this respect has been fully described by Hilton, who shows that special bony ridges

. are present in the skull which arrest vibrations and divert them

into channels where their action is no longer deleterious, Three series of such buttresses descend from the vault to the base of the skull, where they converge in the region of the sella turcica ata point termed by Felizet "'the centre of resistance," and where the terminations of the ridges come into immediate contact with the cartilage of the foramen lacerum medium or the lake of cerebro- spinal fluid which surrounds the anterior and posterior clinoid pro- cesses. The transmitted vibrations are thus annulled by transfer- ence to a liquid or a soft solid medium, and lose all further power. In addition to the special mechanism which mitigates the effect of considerable shocks and renders slight ones ordinarily imperceptible, there is a general elasticity of the skull which enables it to with-

> Un¢G wR Y

689

immediate risks to life are from shock and compression, the latter due to depressed bony fragments or effused blood. The treatment of shock has already been alluded to (p. 680 above); that of com-

pression consists in the early relief of pressure by trephining, with Question elevation of the depressed fragments and removal of the blood-clots, of tre- if the symptoms are advancing. These symptoms are increasing phining.

stupor, stertorous respiration (Cheyne-Stokes breathing), relaxation of sphincters,—the condition passing on to complete coma. In cases where pressure symptoms are not urgent (especially in young patients with elastic skulls) and in cases where no such symptoms are present, expectant treatment should be employed, —complete rest, local cooling applications, constantly applied, the exclusion of all stimuli to the special sense-organs or to the attention, and a careful watch for further symptoms. Should symptoms of compres- sion appear and advance, or should slight symptoms already present become aggravated, immediate operative interference for the relief of pressure as above indicated must be resorted to, and in operat- ing in this region it must be remembered that strict antiseptic pre- cautions are essential, for in no region of the body—not excluding even the peritoneal cavity—are the effects of septic infection more disastrous and at the same time so hopeless of remedy.

Having thus alluded to the

;] > physiology and surgery of the cranial Topo- envelope, it remains to consider the corresponding aspects of the graphical cranial contents. The older theory of Flourens and Hertwig, that areas of all parts of the brain are equally concerned in producin g its aggregate brain.

stand great violence without material injury and so enhances its protective power. This elasticity is not uniformly present, but is much more developed in the bell-like vault than in the region of

fects of ‘lence.

the base. The osseous texture also is much more brittle in the latter locality. When, therefore, such severe shocks are communi- cated to the skull as overcome its elasticity and its power of resist- ance, the fracture which ensues is found as a rule to involve the base much more seriously than the vault.

These physical qualities are of great importance as giving an index of the relative resisting powers of different parts of the skull, and as affording data that may assist in determining the position of a fracture from a study of the forces which caused it. Of such forces those that are closely circumscribed in their area of appli- cation produce strictly local effects, whilst diffuse blows produce their most marked effects at a distance from their point of applica- tion. The former fact needs no illustration ; the latter has been made the subject of numerous researches in relation to the usual course of cranial fractures. From the rcsults of these investigations three different etiological laws have been educed—(1) Saucerotte's law of contrecoup ; (2) Aran's law of radiation ; and, in special re- lation to fractures of the base of the skull, (3) Von Wahl's law of parallel cleavage. In its special sphere each of these laws probably holds true; but the sphere of each is a limited one and is dependent upon the local peculiarities of the skull already described. The theory of contrecoup is that a foree produces its maximum effect at the opposite pole of the skull to the point of its application. That this law can have no general bearing is shown by the numerous cases in which the fracture bears no such relation to the force which causes it. In relation to a limited area of the vault, however, it appears

activities, has been displaced by the more recent theory of the localization of function. This theory is supported by the results of recent physiological and pathological investigations, the former carried on for the most part by Hitzig, Fritsch, and Ferrier, the latter by Broca and Meynert. The practical outcome of these re- searches—viz., an adaptation to the human brain of results obtained in that of the higher mammals, controlled by pathological observa- tions on the human brain itself—is that the surface of the brain can be mapped out into a series of topographical areas, each of which occupies a definite relationship to some well-defined function— motor, sensory, or psychic—of the human economy. Of the areas connected with psychic activity little is at present known; they are generally believed to occupy the frontal lobes of the brain.

and around the horizontal limb of the fissure of Sylvius are arranged those concerned in general and special sensation. The results of these researches confirm the views of Hughlings-Jackson, who has conclusively demonstrated the cortical origin of those epileptiform seizures in which the

motor phenomena are limited to particular groups of muscles. At the same time these results open a new field of anatomical and surgical inquiry, with the object of defining what relation the cerebral convolutions bear to external cranial land- marks, and of showing that circumscribed cortical disease or injury is capable of detection and relief.

: : In Localiza- the parietal region grouped around the fissure of Rolando are the tion of cortical areas connected with motor functions in the extremities, function.

For practical purposes in the Relation present state of our knowledge of cerebral physiology, the first of con-

to hold true ; for isolated fractures of the base resulting from blows upon the vault are on record, but as these are the only fractures which this theory would explain, and as they are very rare, its range of action is very greatly curtailed. Aran's law of radiation is that,

part of the question limits itself to an cxact delineation of the volutions position of the fissures of Rolando and Sylvius in relation to well- to sur- known cranial landmarks. In regard to the position of the former face of several researches have been made, and its upper extremity has head.

starting from the point where the blow is reccived, a fissure traverses the walls of the skull in the direction of the base and spreads itself in that fossa of the base of the skull which corresponds to the part

of the vault that is struck. Thus a diffuse blow on the frontal

bone causes injury to the anterior fossa of the base, and blows upon the parietals or occipital bone cause similar injury to the middle or posterior fossa respectively. This law holds true of the great

been localized at a point 2 inches behind the coronal suture in the mesial line by Broca, Turner, and Féré. For the purpose of its exact determination in the living subject, where the line of the coronal suture cannot always be detected, measurements have been made and formule for its localization devised by Giacomini, Lucas- Championniére, Hare, and Reid (see the

literature cited below). The commencement of the fissure of Sylvius is situated 14 inches

behind the external angular process of the frontal bone.

As an outcome of these additions to our knowledge of accurate Trephin- facts, a new branch of surgical procedure is now firmly established ing for and already sufficiently supported by successful results, viz., trephin- cortical

majority of fractures of the skull and will assist in localizing the course ofa fracture when the part of the skull first struck can be recognized. But numerous cases of fractured base are on record in which no fissure can be traced leading from the point first struck ;

. and from a study of these Von Wahl has concluded that fractures

of the base, whether connected with fissured vault or isolated, are always parallel to the direction of the force which caused them. Thus blows upon the frontal and occipital regions cause longi- tudinal fissures of the base, in the temporal region oblique fissures, and in the mastoid region transverse fissures. An index of the probable direction of a fracture is thus obtained by observing the exact point of incidence of the blow which caused it, whether other evidences of localized injury to the cranial contents be forthcoming or not.

The diagnosis of the presence of a fracturc is often a matter of great difficulty, especially where the soft parts are still intact, and

. by their contused and swollen condition mask the true nature of

the case. Apart from obvious external signs of injury, the following symptoms should lead to the suspicion of a fracture :—bleeding from the mouth, nose, or ears ; local ecchymoses or lacerations, as that of the membrana tympani; circumscribed hemorrhages, as under the scalp or visceral conjunctiva ; interference with the func- tions of the brain or special sense-organs, as aphasia, motor spasms or paralyses, blindness,

deafness, an altered condition of the respira- tion or the pupils, slight unconsciousness or profound stupor. The

ing for the relief of cortical disease. occurred in the hands of Hughes Bennett and Godlee, Fraser and Chiene, and Victor Horsley. The last-named presented to the British Medical Association meeting in 1886 three patients rclieved by tkis operation from cortical lesions. As a result of wide ex- perience in operating upon apes and upon human beings, Mr Horsley accentuates the importance of employing the following precautions in operative interference :—(1) thorough cleansing and disinfection of the scalp; (2) the use of chloroform as an anesthetic, morphia having been previously given to reduce cerebral congestion and to obviate excessive hemorrhage during the operation ; (3) strict antiseptic precautions ; (4) a semilunar incision through the soft parts; (5) the use of large trephines; (6) Macewen's method of replacing the bone in small fragments carefully purified. The occurrence of hernia cerebri signifies a failure in the antiseptic pre- cautions, and a primary union of the integuments is a matter of the most extreme importance. In removing the tumour or scar- tissue the knife is preferable to the thermo-cautery.! (A. W. H.)

1 Literature of Cranial Surgery.—Perceval Pott, Injuries of the Head; Sir Astley Cooper, Lect. on Surgery (Tyrell), vol. i.; Sir B. Brodie, Med. Chir. Trans., vol.

Soa, 307

Encouraging cases have disease,

Peri- toneal wound treat- ment.

690

2. Thoracic.

rulent collections in the pericardium and pleural sacs may be roe as ordinary abscesses f incision. In the case of the pleural cavity the pus may be evacuated through an opeuing made in the axillary line at the seventh costal interspace ; but it is quite possible to empty it thoroughly at the fifth.

A drainage-tube is inserted, protected by a broad flange, that it may not slip into the cavity, and strict asepsis should be secured. Should sepsis occur, the wound should be washed out, and a counter-opening made if neeessary. As the lung, however, frequently will not expand, and a large cavity is therefore left to heal by granulation, with little chance of it ever getting filled up, surgeons have excised portions of the ribs in order to bring about a collapse of the chest wall and thus ensure obliteration of the cavity. The second, third, fourth, fifth, and sixth ribs have been partially removed, together with a portion of the clavicle. It is better in young people to remove the periosteum also. Some surgeons cut away the thiekened pleura as well. The possibility of opening into the pleural sacs and peri- cardium for the removal of tumours has been demonstrated by Konig and Kiister, who have reported cases where growths in connexion with the sternum and ribs were successfully removed. Special care was taken that as little air as possible should gain access to the pleural eavities. Attcmpts have also been made to tap and wash out vomicz in the lung, but as yet operative interference in such instances is not fully established.

3. Abdominal.

Modern surgery has made its greatest advance and has achieved its most signal triumphs in connexion with operations performed in those cavities of the body which are lined by a synovial or serous membrane. The older surgeons did not dare to systematically attack the joints and the cranial, thoracic, and abdominal cavities ; but the surgeon of to-day performs the most daring operations here with confidence, and is rewarded with a success which at first sight appears almost marvellous. The timid extraperitoneal manipula- tions of former days made use of in the treatment of hernia and kidney disease and in the formation of artificial anus, have now given way to systematic intraperitoneal modes of treatment, where- by we aim at the radical cure of hernia and bring discase affecting any of the abdominal viscera directly under our control. We have to eonsider the conditions under which wound treatment of the peritoneum is placed, and in what respect this portion of the human framework reacts upon injuries as compared with the general be- haviour. It is generally acknowledged that rest in the surgical sense, the factor necessary for healthy wound closure, is obtained by a condition of asepsis and fixation. Moreover, it is generally

granted that tension as a condition of unrest is dangerous not so much in itself as in the character of the material that gives rise to tension ; hence the extravasated serum and blood ina case of simple fraeture give rise to comparatively little disturbance. The presence of ascites need not lead to fever. But oncc let sepsis gain entrance and the fermenting exudate is resented by the organism ; violent attempts to throw it off are made; and forms of blood-poisoning more or less severe and variable ensue. In a severe injury of the extremities, say a compound fracture, the effused serum and blood- clot are not readily removed by the damaged lymphatic system, and, when that does act, sepsis having already occurred, the ab- sorption of the putrid fluid docs much harm. Fortunatcly the open character of the wound may allow the fetid discharge to escape. In any case, the surgeon ensures a good result when he makes use of splints, drainage, and antiseptics. He brings about local fixation, removes the excessive exudation, and so relieves the lymphatics and prevents sepsis. In the case of a penetrating abdo- minal wound, where the healthy peritoneum is injured, we have some- what different conditions, mainly varying in degree. It must cver be borne in mind that here we open into a huge lymph-sac. The peritoneum consists of a sheet of vascular and lymphatic network, covered with epithelium and provided with stomata. It is casily injured, and then rapid effusion ensucs. Like most vascular struc- tures, however, it heals quickly with favourable surroundings, and, the source of irritation having been removed, it speedily returns to the normal. In comparison with the large absorbing surface the injured portion is but small, and the effusion thrown out at the seat of injury may readily enough be absorbed by the remainder of

xiv. ; Hilton, Lectures on the Cranium ; Felizet, Recherches anat. et exper. sur les Sract. du crane, 1873; Aran, Arch. Gén. de Meéd., 4th ser., vol. vi. p.180; Saucerotte, Mélanges de Chirurgie, part i. p. 233, Paris, 1801; Von Wahl, “ Fracturen der Schadelbasis,” in Volkmann’s Series, No. 228; Flourens, Les propriétés et les fone- tions du Systeme Nerveusx, Paris, 1824: Hitzig and Fritsch, in Reichertand Du Bois Reymond’s Archiv, 1870; Hitzig, “ Ueber den heutigen Stand der Frage von der Localisation,” in Volkmann’s Series, No. 112 ; Ferrier, Functions of the Brain, 1876, and West Riding Reports, vol. iii., 1873 ; Hughlings-Jackson, Lond. Hosp. Rep., 1864, and Clin. and Phys. Researches, 1873; Broca, Sur la topographie

crdnio- cerebrale, 1876; Turner, “ Relations of Convolutions to Skull and Scalp,” in Jour. Anat. and Phys., 1878 ; Giacomini, Topograsia della Scissura di Rolando, 1878; Lucas-Championniére, La trépanation guidée par les localisations céré- brales, 1878; Hare, Jour. Anat. and Phys., January 1884; Reid, Lancet, vol. ii., 1884, p. 539; Hughes Bennett and Godlee, Brit. Med. Journ., May 1885 ; Victor Horsley, Brit. Med. Journ., vol. ii., 1886, p. 670.

the healthy sac. So Jong as the rate of absorption equals that of effusion tension cannot exist. If, however, the nature of the fluid be of importance, it is evident that nowhere in the body is this more marked than in the case of the peritoneum, and here above all other parts niust we preserve strict asepsis. This may be gained in vari- ous ways. (1) By drainage, in which case the surgeon carefully draws off from the pouch of Douglas any excess of fluid thrown out as the result of injury, until such time as the peritoneum itself has recovered its full absorbing power and the excessive secretion has ceased. (2) Where by careful sponging the operator so far relieves the peritoneum and then, closing the wound to prevent entrance of further sepsis, leaves the rest to nature. For, if we do permit a moderate scptic inoculation, it is evident that the rapid change of fluid may prove inimical to the development of septic ferments and the contact of healthy tissue will finally render impossible the existence of organisms, The presence, however, of any accumula- tion of putrid cffusion is at once resented by the peritoneum and an attempt by local peritonitis may shut off the collection, or even previous to any local reaction septic absorption may prove fatal, or again severe general peritonitis may kill the patient. (8) From the above we at once see how applicable the antiseptic system must be to the abdomen, and the most signal success has crowned atten- tion to matters of detail in this respect. By means of antiseptics we can securely close the abdomen, resting assured that the peri- toneum is perfectly capable of earrying off effusions due to our interference. Where we dread that oozing may complicate matters, the drainage-tube can in addition be employed, but the necessity for its use becomes less marked as the operator acquires

experience. Abdominal surgery requires from beginning to end the utmost care, and it is well that specialists reached a high standard of success before the adoption of the antiseptic system, since various points have been formulated, all of which, however, are of minor import- ance compared with the one great end in view,—that of asepsis from first to last. The utmost care should be taken to ascertain the general bodily condition of the patient, to see that the kidneys are healthy, and to select an anesthetic suitable to the requirements of the case. The temperature of the room, the clothing during operation, rapid dexterous manipulation, and preventives against hemorrhage require the utmost attention. The patient should be prepared by having had low diet and gentle purgatives for a few days prior to surgical interference, so that rest of the intestinal tract may readily be assured. As a material for ligature fine silk Chinese twist, of various sizes, may be employed. It must be care- fully disinfected by boiling, and is readily preserved pure in a five per cent. solution of carbolic acid. The ends should always be cut short. It possesses certain advantages over catgut.

In reviewing the field of abdominal surgery we must study shortly the methods and results gained by ovariotomy, removal of the uterine appendages (ovaries, Battey; tubcs, Tait), hysterectomy, myotomy, removal of fibroid tumours of the uterus, intraperi- toneal operations on the kidney, liver, spleen, intestinal tract, including stomach, pylorus, duodenum, small and large intestine. Finally, attention should be given to the extraperitoneal operations for sarcoma and disease of the kidney and intestine, i

From 1701, the date when Houston of Carluke, Lanarkshire, Ovario- carried out his successful partial extirpation, progress was arrested tomy. for some time, although the Hunters (1780) indicated the practica- bility of the operation. In 1809 Ephraim M ‘Dowell of Kentucky, inspired by the lectures of John Bell, his teacher in Edinburgh, per- formed ovariotomy, and continuing to operate with success estab- lished the possibility of surgieal interference, and was followed in the United States by many others. The cases brought forward by Lizars of Edinburgh were not sufficiently encouraging ; the operation met with great opposition ; and it was not until Clay, Spencer Wells, Baker Brown, and Keith began work that the pro- cedure was placed on a firm basis and regarded as justifiable. Im- proved methods were introduced, and surgeons vied with one another in obtaining

good results, until by the introduction of the antiseptic system of treating wounds this operation, formerly regarded as one of the most grave and anxious in the domain of surgery, has come to be attended with a lower mortality than any other of a major character. We may now briefly outline the mode employed in operating. The room should be well heated, be free from draughts, have a good light, and above alla pure atmosphere. The patient is secured to a firm table and well protected with blankets. An- zsthesia having been obtained, the state of the bladder being known, and the urine drawn off if thought necessary, the surgeon purifies the integument with carbolic acid five per cent. solution, attending specially to the region of the umbilicus and pubes, which latter should be shaved. A large perforated waterproof sheet may be spread over and secured to the body, through which the more pro- minent part of the tumid abdomen protruding presents a localized field for manipulation ; this also protects adjoining parts and ob- viates unnecessary exposure. An incision 2 or 3 inches in length in the linea alba and midway between the umbilicus and the sym.- physis pubis carries the surgeon down to the interval between the recti; bleeding points arc seized with pressure forceps ; and by a

further use of the knife the subperitoneal fat is exposed, the peri- toneum divided, and its free edges seized with forceps. The operator next introduces his finger and with the scissors enlarges the wound downwards or upwards on the left side of the umbilicus if neces- sary. The entire hand is then introduced between the parietal peritoneum and the tumour and swept around so as to ascertain the condition of affairs, and even to separate gently slight adhesions. A few sponges are next packed round the exposed tumour surface, which serve to kecp the intestincs and omentum out of the way and to retain any tumour content which may escape during tapping. With a large trocar, aided perhaps by an exhausting jar, the con- tents are drawn off, and, as the tumour collapses, its folds may be caught by forceps and the whole sac gradually pulled outside the abdomen. The pedicle is clamped by strong forceps; the tumour is cut off; the stump of the pedicle is carefully ligatured, the clamping forecps removed, the peritoneum carefully sponged out, more especially the pouch of Douglas, the ligature cut short, and the pedicle dropped into the cavity of the abdomen. At this stage the

forceps and sponges are counted, a definite number being always employed, and, their tale being perfect, the surgeon pro- ceeds to close the wound. For this purpose his needle traverses the entire thickness of the parietes from peritoneum to skin; the stitches should be about one-third of an inch apart, and closer apposition is gained by secondary sutures, which go through the integument alone. A dressing is now applied, and for the next few days the patient gets little else than occasional spoonfuls of hot water and milk, unless brandy be necessary, until she passes wind, after which time the usual diet is gradually resumed. It is necessary that the most precise precautions be taken against septic infection. The sponges are steeped in a five per cent. solution of earbolic acid, then dipped in boiling water, and squeezed dry immediately before use. Should the contents of the cyst be too viscid to run through the trocar, the contents of the sac must be pulled out with the hand. Adhesions to various organs must be dealt with by careful separation and ligature. Rents in the peri- toneum should be stitched up with fine catgut, and some operators also stitch over the stump of the pedicle, or bury it in a bared portion of the adjacent broad ligament, so that it may not contract adhesions. While the great majority of surgeons are at one as regards the use of antiseptic precautions, they do not agree as to the use of the spray. Many dispense with it altogether. Some employ it in the room prior to the operation. A few surgeons also, without availing themselves of the antiseptic system, appear to obtain as good, if not better, results than their fellows. It may also be noted that the antiseptic in use by different operators varies, and that, while the pedicle is usually ligatured, Keith attaches great importance to the clamp and cautery introduced by Baker Brown. The drainage-tube is not now so frequently employed as formerly. The statistical results show an increasing success in the case of every surgeon. Spencer Wells tells us that in his first five years one patient in three died, in his second and third five years one in four, in his fourth five ycars one in five, in 1876-77 one in ten, since the introduction of antiseptics (complete Listerism), 1878-84, 10°9 per cent,—the last series showing a marked absence of septic fatality. Keith in 1884 reported a mortality of 9°11 ; for- merly, when using the spray, he once had a successful consecutive series of 80. Koeberle up to 1878 had performed 300 operations, of which 231 had a favourable result. Of 300 patients operated on by Schroeder up to 1882 258 recovered ; in the last hundred cases there were only 7 deaths. Other figures are—Knowsly Thornton, 493 cases, 40 deaths ; Tait, 405

cases, 38 deaths, and in 1885 (in- cluding parovarian cysts) 139 cases, no deaths ; Olshausen (1885), 293 cases, 27 deaths (in the last hundred only 4 deaths).

Removal of the uterine appendages, the ovaries and Fallopian pfuterine tubes, is performed for thrce distinct conditions—(1) for disease, when the tubes are the seat of inflammatory changes and dis- tended, or when the ovaries are the seat of cystic and cirrhotic changes ; (2) for fibroid tumours, in which case by operating we hasten the menopause and briug about involution ; (3) in cases where dysmenorrhea is wearing out and rendering useless the life of the patient, and where less severe treatment is ineffectual. Oophorectomy, by which we mean removal of the ovaries only, was introduced by Battey of Georgia in 1872. It is now replaced by the more extensive procedure of Lawson Tait, sapingo-oophor- ectomy. The operation is sometimes followed by loss of sexual feeling and has been said to unsex the patient, hence strong objec- tions have been urged against it. The patient and friends should clearly understand the object and results likely to be gained. Ac- cording to Angus Macdonald, ‘‘as soon as we are certain that the ovaries or tubes are distinctly diseased and are not likely to yield to our ordinary methods of treatment . . . we are bound to at least inform our patient of the possibility of relieving her by opera- tion. The operation presents greater difficulties and is associated with a higher mortality than ovariotomy.” The greatest care must be taken in making the initial incision for fear of wounding the bowel. The organs are not uncommonly deeply placed and have contracted adhesions. Every trace of ovarian tissue should be

removed along with the tubes and the ligatures must be carried close up to the uterus. The stitches should be placed closer, since a ene Ma hernia is greater.

In cases of fibroid tumour—myoma—the surgeon must be largel = guided by the condition of the patient and the new growth as A a whether removal of the uterine appendages is sufficient. If it is not and the patient is in such

danger that the next period threatens life, he had better proceed to hysterectomy or entire removal of the uterus and appendages. When we consider the circumstances under which this operation is performed, the weakly anemic state of the patient, the size of the tumour, and the rapidity with which procedure should be conducted, we must regard hysterectomy as one of the gravest in the domain of surgery. There is, moreover, a special danger which does not obtain in ovariotomy,—the risk of septic poisoning. Since we cut into the canal of the uterus, it is obvious that we open into a septic cavity, and it is impossible merely to ligature and drop the pedicle, since by doing so we should court failure. The surgeon, having made a way into the peritoneum,

‘seizes and ligatures adhesions, projects the: tumour through the

wound, clamps the pedicle (cervix uteri), removes the tumour and uterus, and closes the wound, leaving the clamped pedicle protrud- ing. It is advisable to scoop out the septic central canal of the pedicle and carefully to pare away surplus tissue, and as dressing to have a plentiful supply of some potent non-irritating antiseptic in contact with the stump. If we take care that the septic focus is removed without coming in contact with its surroundings, if we keep the stump aseptic and dry, there will be little fear of septic fluid trickling down the side of the pedicle and causing septus, peritonitis, or blood-poisoning. Attempts have been made, by care- ful disinfection of the stump, paring its centre, careful ligature, and stitching its raw surfaces together, to treat the pedicle by dropping it into the abdomen as in ovariotomy, but as yet with no marked success. The results of hysterectomy in the hands of Keith (33 cases, 8 deaths, in 1885) stand unrivalled. Similar principles guide the performance of cesarean section and Porro’s operation.

Affections of the liver and gall-bladder have also been treated Removal

by laparotomy. In the latter case an incision is made over the of gall-swelling, and the gall-bladder, having been exposed, may be removed bladder ; or explored, gall-stones cleared out, the walls stitched to the sides of the abdominal wound, and a drainage-tube inserted as occasion requires. The spleen has also been attacked. In removal of the spleen ; entire organ spccial care must be taken that none of the larger veins give way during

manipulation. Most careful ligation and sub- division of the pedicle is requisite. In recent years the surgery of the kidney has made gigantic strides. There are three modes of kidney ; reaching the organ, each of proportionate value according to the nature of the case. (1) From the lumbar region. In this way we may open abscesses, remove calculi, and even extirpate if the kidney be not enlarged. Increased room may be obtained by re- moving the twelfth rib. By this method we gain sufficient and dependent drainage and we need not open the peritoneum. (2) As in ordinary laparotomy, making an incision in the middle line. This admits of our examining both organs and to a large extent determining the condition of each. We get free access and cau more readily treat the pedicle of vessels and the ureter. We open into the peritoneal cavity and again divide the peritoneum ; but our incisions are readily closed and we no longer dread interfering with this huge lymph-sac. For tumours of the kidney this method is clearly indicated. (3) Langenbuch has proposed making an incision along the outer border of the rectus, which is said to present advantages in certain cases.

Since the advance of ovariotomy the possibility of removal of portions portions of the intestinal tract with a subsequent suture of the of intes- divided ends has been repeatedly demonstrated, and thus resections tinal for disease of the pylorus and bowel have been successfully performed. tract. In cases of gunshot wound, laparotomy, arrest of hemorrhage, careful cleansing of the peritoneum, and suture of the wounded gut is now the established practice. Bull of New York reports a recovery in a case where seven wounds in the gut were sutured. All laparo- tomies are founded on the type of ovariotomy ; success depends on the fact that two opposed serous surfaces rapidly unite, and this fact must ever be borne in mind when we tear or injure the bowel and its coverings, or unite them. Sepsis is the main disaster likely to attend our intcrference, but with the means at our disposal, washing out the peritoneum if necessary, we should be able to obviate this.

In regard to operations on the abdominal organs in which we do not interfere with the peritoneum it is sufficient to note that from the lumbar region we can reach the colon, where it is uncovered by serous membrane, the kidney, and retroperitoneal tumours.’ (F, M. C.)

4, Deformities.

(1) For club-foot, see vol. vi. p. 42. (2) During the last few years, in consequence of the safety with es SS

1 The literature of abdominal surgery is very extensive. The most complete lists will be found in Olshausen's "Die Krankheiten der Ovarien," in Die deutsche Chirurgie, 1886, and in Hart and Barbour's Manual of Gynecology.

a diminished growth. This effect may be obtained by applying a weight to the limb; and by mechanical means founded on this general law cases of knock-knee that are getting worse can be im- proved. At first there is an arrest in the abnormality, which is soon followed by improvement. The different methods that have been recommended for division of the bones are only necessary in those cases in which they have become permanently distorted.

(3) Lateral curvature of the spine is a deformity which occurs Spina] during the developing period of life before the bodies of the verte- curva. bre are fully ossified. In young people who are growing rapidly, ture. and whose muscular system is weak, any bad habit, as, for example, that of standing and throwing the weight of the body constantly

Knoek- which boues may be divided, other deformities, such as knock-knee knee, &e. or genu valgum and bow-leg or genu varum, have been remedied by operation. Drs Macewen of Glasgow, Ogston of Aberdeen, Sehede of Hamburg, and the sea writer have been working at this subject and have devised, more especially in knock-knee, various methods of remedying the deformity. Operations are only justifiable when the deformity has become chronic. During the advancing stage, when the deformity is getting worse, when the bones are still cartilaginous and plastic, the evil can be remedied by mechanical means, This statement may be best illustrated by a short consideration of the developnient of the lower limbs and

the changes which normally take place. At birth all children are more or less bandy-legged. The child lies on its nurse’s knee with the soles of the feet facing one another ; the tibis and femora are curved outwards; and, if the limbs are extended, although the ankles are in contact, there is a distinct space between the knee joints. During the first year of life a gradual change takes place. The knee joints approach one another ; the femora slope downwards and inwards towards the knee joints; the tibie become straight ; and the sole of the foot faces almost directly downwards. While these changes are occurring, the bones, which at first consist prinei- pally of cartilage, are gradually becoming ossified, and in a normal ehild by the time it begins to walk the lower limbs are prepared, both by their general direction and by the rigidity of the bones which form them, to support the weight of the body. If, how- ever, the child attempts either as the result of imitation or from encouragement to walk before the normal bandy condition has passed off, the result will necessarily be either an arrest in the development of the limbs or an increase of the bandy condition. If the child is weakly, either rachitic or suffering from any ailment which prevents the due ossification of the bones, or is improperly fed, the bandy condition may remain persistent. As a rule, how- ever, in children that are precocious as regards walking, if proper carc is taken the bandy condition will disappear without any spccial treatment. Ina healthy child who does not attempt to walk until the limbs are prepared to support the weight of the body, no further abnormal change takes place. But in a weakly child in whom the development already described has occurred, in whom the limbs as regards their general direction are prepared for the support of the body, but in whom the bones forming the limbs are not sufficiently ossified, as in the rachitic child, the shafts of the femora above the knee and the shafts of the tibise below the knee bend forwards; at the same time a change takes place at the knee joint,—the condition called knock-knee. In the normal limbs, the tibie being vertical and parallel, and the distance between the upper extremities of the femora being greater than that between their lower extremities, the femora necessarily slope inwards towards the middle line, and there is therefore in every properly developed person an angle at the knee joint. If at this stage the bones are sufficiently rigid to bear the weight of the patient, no further change takes place; but, if the limbs give way and are not sufficiently strong, the normal angle at the kuee joint increases and the internal lateral ligament of the knee joint becomes stretched,—the result

being knock- knee, The condition may be arrested in its earliest stage by an improve- ment in the general health of the child; but, if no such improve- ment takes place, and if the child is allowed to walk, then definite changes occur in the bones which form the knee joint. These changes are the direct outcome of a general law, namely, that diminished pressure results in increased growth, increased pressure in diminished growth. The best example of the former principle is the rapid growth that takes place in a child that is confined to bed during a prolonged illness. The distorted, stunted, shortened, and fashionable foot of the Chinese lady is an example of the latter. In the knee joint there is diminished pressure between the internal condyle of the femur and the inner condyle surface of the tibia ; there is increased pressure between the external condyle of the femur and the outer condyle surface of the tibia. The result is an increased growth of the internal and a diminished growth of the external condyles ; the knock-kneed condition is intensified, and will go on as long as the primary cause is at work, getting worse and worse, and will only cease when the bones become fully de- veloped. As long as the disease is getting worse, the application of a rigid splint to the outer side of the limb fixed at the foot and at the upper part of the thigh, and the arrangement of an elastic bandage so as to draw the limb towards the splint, the person being kept in the horizontal posture, will cause a diminution in the pres- sure on the external condyles followed by their increased growth, and by an increased pressure on the internal condyles followed by

on one leg, gives rise to a drooping of the pelvis on one side ; or, if, when writing at a desk, they are allowed to sit in a twisted position, a lateral curvature of the spine takes place. By constant indulgence in these bad habits the cartilaginous spinal column gets set in an abnormal direction. In the concavity of the curve there is increased pressure and necessarily diminished growth, in the con- vexity of the curve diminished pressure with increased growth, The patient’s friends will probably notice first the right scapula being pushed backwards by the underlying ribs, which from their close attachment to the dorsal vertebre participate in a rotatory movement occurring in the vertebre themselves, and, unless means are taken to alter the abnormal distribution of pressure, the con- dition will become worse and worse, until complete ossification checks the progress of the deformity. The commonest curvature is one in which there is a dorsal convexity

towards the right, with the right shoulder higher than the left. Compensatory curves in the opposite direction form in the lumbar and cervical regions. Along with the lateral curvation a rotation of the bodics of the vertebree towards the convexity of the curve takes placc; their spinous processes necessarily turn towards the concavity of the curve. Since the line of the spinous processes of the vertebrx can be easily traced through the skin, their deviation may mislead the superficial observer as to the true direction in which curvature has taken place. As the lateral curvation occurs the articular facets along the line of the concavity are pressed together, the line of these facets being posterior to the bodics of the vertebre and their intervening elastic intervertebral disks. The result of this is that the vertebral column as a whole cannot fly away towards the convexity. The anterior parts of the bodies, being farthest away from the fixed point, are least restrained from movement, and they pass away toa greater extent than the posterior parts. The result is a rotation of each vertebra in the direction indicated. To counteract this deformity in the earliest stages, the patient (generally a girl) should be en- couraged to walk about with a book on her head, to retain which in position she must necessarily keep perfectly ercct. Muscular exercises, to strengthen the muscles of the back, ought to be en- joined and superintended by the surgeon. During the intervals of rest she should lie upon her back on a firm board, and should care- fully avoid taking any exercise which gives rise to weariness of the muscles ; for, whenever the muscles become wearied, she will at- tempt to take up a position which throws the strain off them on to her ligamentous and bony structures. One of the best exercises is to lay the patient on her face, fix her feet, and encourage her to raise herself by using the muscles of the back. When the deformity becomes more marked the use of the trapeze should be prescribed. Hanging with her arms upon the trapeze, the weight of the lower limbs and pelvis will tend to straighten the spine as a whole, neces- sarily diminishing the increased pressure upon the cartilaginous bodies of the vertebrae towards the concavity, and increasing the pressure between the sides of the bodies towards the convexity. The tendency to rotation must be counteracted in another way. The pelvis being fixed, elastic bands attached to fixed points, one in front of the patient towards her left side, another behind her to- wards her right side, are to be grasped by her right and left hands respectively, the right arm passing in front of her body, the left arm behind it. When the patient stretehes both hands simul- taneously there will

be an untwisting of the spine in a direction opposite to the abnormal rotation. In this description, the com- mon curvature—namely, of the dorsal region towards the right — has been taken as a typical example to illustrate the treatment. When the dorsal curve is in the opposite direction, the untwisting of the curve must necessarily be in the opposite direction also. During the intervals of active treatment the patient must wear a rigid support, which in itself has no direct curative action, but will materally assist the treatment by preventing the good result obtained by the muscular excrcises from being nullified. (J. ©.)

SURINAM. See Gurana, Durcn, vol. xi. p. Zoe

SURRENDER is a mode of alienation of real estate. It is defined by Lord Coke to be “the yielding up of an estate for life or years to him that hath an immediate estate in reversion or remainder” (Coke upon Littleton,

337b). It is precisely the converse of release, which is a

conveyance by the reversioner or remainderman to the tenant of the particular estate. A surrender is the usual means of effecting the alienation of copyholds. The sur- render is made to the lord, who grants admittance to the

purchaser, an entry of the surrender and admittance being made upon the court rolls. Formerly a devise of copy- holds could only have been made by surrender to the use of the testator’s will, followed by admittance of the devisee. The Wills Act of 1837 now allows the devise of copyholds without surrender, though admittance of the devisee is still necessary. A surrender must since 8 and 9 Vict. c. 106 be by deed, except in the case of copyholds and of surrender by operation of law. Surrender of the latter kind generally takes place by merger, that is, the com- bination of the greater and less estate by descent or other means without the act of the party. It has been dealt with by recent legislation (see REMAINDER). In Scotch law surrender in the case of a lease is represented by renunciation. The nearest approach to surrender of a copyhold is resignation 7 remanentiam (to the lord) or resignation iz favorem (to a purchaser). These modes of

conveyance are now practically superseded by the simpler forms introduced by the Conveyancing Act, 1874.

SURREY, a metropolitan county of England, is bounded north by the Thames, which separates it from Berks and Middlesex, east by Kent, south by Sussex, and west by Hampshire. Owing to the fact that it includes a portion of London, it ranks fourth among the counties of England in point of population, but in point of size it is only the thirtieth, the total area being 485,129 acres, or 758 square miles.

The geological structure of Surrey is reflected in its varied and picturesque scenery, the charms of which are enhanced by the large proportion of ground still remaining uncultivated. The extent of common land is also very great, a circumstance which, from its proximity to London, must be considered as specially fortunate. The northern portion of the county, in the London basin, belongs to the Eocene formation: the lower ground is occupied chiefly by the London clay of the Lower Eocene group, stretching (with interruptions) from London to Farnham ; this is fringed on its southern edge by the plastic clays or Wool- wich beds of the same group, which also appear in isolated patches at Headley near Leatherhead; and the Thanet sands of the same group crop out under the London clay between Beddington, Banstead, and Leatherhead. The north-western portion of the county, covered chiefly by heath and Scotch fir, belongs to the Middle Eocene group, or Bagshot sands: the Fox Hills and the bleak Chobham Ridges are formed of the upper series of the group, which rests upon the middle beds occupying the greater part of Bagshot Heath and Bisley and Pirbright Commons, while eastwards the commons of Chobham, Woking, and Esher belong to the lower division of the group. To the south of the Eocene formations the smooth rounded outlines of the chalk hills extend through the centre of the county from Farnham to Westerham (Kent). From Farnham to Guild- ford they form a narrow ridge called the Hog’s Back, about half a mile in breadth with a high northern dip, the greatest clevation reached in this section being 505 feet. ast of Guildford the northern dip decreases, and the outcrop widens, throwing out picturesque summits, frequently partly wooded, and commanding widely variegated views, the highest elevation being Botley Hill near Titsey, 866 feet. The Upper Greensand or grey chalk mazl, locally known as firestone, crops out

underneath the Chalk along the southern escarpment of the Downs, and the Gault, a dark blue marl, rests beneath the Upper Greensand in the bottom of the long narrow valley which separates the chalk Downs from the well-marked Lower Greensand hills. Leith Hill of this formation reaches a height of 967 feet, and from its isolated position commands one of the finest views in the south of England, the next highest summits being Hindhead Hill (894 feet) and Holmbury Hill (857

feet). The southern part of the county belongs to the Wealden formation of freshwater origin: the lower strata or Hastings beds occupy a small portion at the south- eastern corner, but the greater part consists of a blue or brown shaly clay, amid which are deposited river shells, plants of tropical origin, and reptilian remains.

The whole of the county north of the Downs is in the basin of the Thames. Besides a number of smaller streams, its chief affluents from Surrey are the Wey at Weybridge, the Mole at East Moulsey, and the Wandle at Wandsworth. The Eden, a tributary of the Medway, takes its rise in the south-east corner of Surrey.

According to the agricultural returns for 1886, of the total area of the county 299,034 acres were under cultivation, 77,553 being under corn crops, 44,998 under grecn crops, 26,741 rotation grasses, 138,117 permanent pasturc, 2547 hops, and 9078 fallow. There are considerable varieties of soil, ranging from plastic clay to calcareous earth and bare rocky heath. The plastic clay is well adapted for wheat, the most largely grown of the corn crops, occupying 29,694 acres in 1886, while barley, oats, and pease, which grow well on the loamy soils in different parts of the county, occupied respectively 15,439, 24,705, and 4587 acres, beans occupying 1872 and rye 1256. Of green crops there were 64382 acres under potatoes, 15,975 under turnips and swedes, 9995 man- golds, 860 carrots, 2660 cabbage, kohl-rabi, and rape, and 9076 vetches and other green crops. A considerable proportion of the area uuder green crops is occupied by the market gardens on the alluvial soil along the banks of the Thames, especially in the vicinity of London. The total area of nursery grounds in 1886 was 1466, and of market gardens 2953 acres. In early times the market

gar- deners were Flemings, who introduced the culture of asparagus at Battersea and of carrots at Chertsey, for which this district is still famous. The avea under orchards in 1886 was 2144 acres. Rhodo- dendrons and azaleas are largely grown in the north-western district ofthe county. In the ncighbourhood of Mitcham various medicinal plants are extensively cultivated for the London herb-sellers and druggists, such as lavender, mint, camomile, anise, rosemary, liquorice, hyssop, &c. The calcareous soil in the neighbourhood of Farnham is well adapted for hops, but this crop in Surrcy is of minor importance. There is a considerable area under wood (42,974 acres in 1881). Oak, chestnut, walnut, ash, and elm are extensively planted ; alder and willow plantations are common ; and the Scotch fir propagates naturally from seed on the commons in the north-west of the county. The extent of pasture land is not great, with the exception of the Downs, which are chiefly occupied as sheep-runs. Dairy-farming is a more important industry than cattle-feeding, large quantities of milk being sent to London. The number of horses in 1886 was 9930, of which 3273 were unbroken horses and mares kept solely for breeding; of cattle 49,986, of which 24,869 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf and 8699 other cattle two years old and above; of sheep 87,658 ; and of pigs 25,172.

‘According to the latest (1873) landowners Return for England, Surrey was divided among 17,298 proprietors possessing 398,746 acres at an annual value of £2,285,814, in addition to which there were 40,037 acres of common lands. Of the proprietors 12,712, or nearly two-thirds, possessed less than one acre each, the total which they owned being 2861 acres. ‘The average annual rental per acre of the land all over was about £5, 14s. 9d. The following proprietors held over 5000 acres eagh :—earl of Lovelace, 9958; crown, 7496; earl of Onslow, 6563 ; Sir W. R. Clayton, 6505; G. W. G. Leveson- Gower, 6368. ;

Manufactures.—The more important manufactures are chiefly confined to London and its immediate neighbourhood (see Lonpoyn, vol. .xiv. p. 832). There are paper-mills at Wandsworth, and along the valley of the Wandle there are snuff, drug, and copper mills. Calico bleaching and printing are carried on to a small extent in the same valley, and there are also a few silk mills and tanneries. Ropes, snuff, and drugs are likewise manufactured

along the banks of the Mole. Woollen goods and hosiery are made at Godalming, and gunpowder is largely manufactured at Chilworth. —

Communication._In addition to the navigation by barges, steamers ply on the Thames as far as Hampton. The Basingstoke Canal from Basingstoke to the Wey at Weybridge crosses the north- west corner of the county, and the Surrey and Sussex Canal passes southwards from the Wey near Guildford to the Arun. Surrey is more completely supplied by railways than any other county in England, the London, Chatham, and Dover, the South-Eastern, the London, Brighton, and South Coast, and the London and South-Western Railways intersecting it by their main lines as wellas by various branches.

Administration and Population.—Surrey contains 14 hundreds ; the borough of Southwark (pop. 221,946), which has no municipal government, but for certain purposes is connected with the city of

London ; and the municipal boroughs of Godalming (2505), Guild- ford (10,858), Kingston-upon-Thames (20,648), and Reigate (18,662).

A considerable portion (22,472 acres, with a population in 1881 of

980, 522) is within the metropolitan district of London, in addition to which there are the following urban sanitary districts—Alder- shot (20,155), Croydon (78,953), Dorking (6328), East Moulsey (3289), Epsom (6916), Farnham (4488), Ham Common (1349), Hampton Wick (2164), New Malden (2538), Richmond (19,066), Surbiton (9406), Teddington (6599), and Wimbledon (15,950). The county has one court of quarter sessions, and is divided into twelve petty and special sessional divisions. The central criminal court has jurisdiction over certain parishes in this county. The borough of Guildford has a separate court of quarter sessions and commission of the peace ; the boroughs of Reigate and Kingston-upon-Thames have commissions of the peace; the borough of Southwark is in- cluded in the petty sessional division of Newington ; and the borough of Godalming, in which the mayor and ex-mayor are magis-

trates, forms part of the petty sessional division of Guildford, the

county justices having concurrent jurisdiction. The county con- tains 152 civil parishes, with parts of two others. It is shared among the dioceses of Canterbury, Rochester, and Winchester. Until 1885 the county for parliamentary purposes was divided into East, Mid, and West Surrey ; it is now rearranged in six divisions, viz., Kingston, Mid (Epsom), North-East (Wimbledon), North- West (Chertsey), South-East (Reigate), and South-West (Guildford). The portion of Surrey formerly included in the borough of Green-

wich was in 1885 included in the borough of Deptford (Kent) ; the borough of Guildford was disfranchised ; one member was given to Croydon; and instead of the two metropolitan boroughs of Lambeth and Southwark the following fifteen constituencies (each

returning one member) were created :— Battersea and Clapham,

constituting two divisions; Camberwell, embracing the divisions of Lambeth, embracing the divisions of Brixton, Kennington, Lambeth North, and Norwood 2

North Camberwell, Dulwich, and Peckham ;

Southwark, containing the divisions of Bermondsey, Rotherhithe, and Southwark West; Wandsworth; and divisions of Walworth and West Newington.

Since the beginning of the 19th century the population has in- creased nearly 600 per cent. From 268,233 in 1801 it had increased by 1821 to 399,417, by 1851 to 683,082, by 1871 to 1,091,635, and by 1881 to 1,436,899, of whom 683,228 were males and 753,671 The number of persons to an acre is 2°96 and of acres to

females. a person 0°34. Within the last decade the increase has been 35°1

per cent.,—much greater than the inercase in the general town

population of England and Wales, which was 19°63 per cent., the increase in the whole population being only 14°34. thirds (980,522) of the population belong to the metropolitan district of London, but the suburbs of London extend practically throughout the greater part of the county, its increase in popu- lation being chicfly due to the building of residences for those who have business or professional interests in London.

History and Antiquities. Notwithstanding its proximity to London, Surrey has been associated with few great events in English history. Roman remains have been discovered at Albury, Kingston, Titsey, Woodcote, and a few other places, but none are of much importance. On several of the hills there are remains of camps of either Roman or British origin. The Roman Stance Street from London to Chichester in Sussex passed by Kingston, Chessington, Leatherhead, Dorking (where its remains are specially well marked), Leith Hill, and Ockley. During the Saxon period Surrey was included in the dominions of the South Saxons and afterwards of Wessex. Its name Surrey or “south kingdom” has apparently reference to its position sonth of London or south of the Thaines. Kingston in Surrey was in 838 the seat of a witana- gemot convened by Egbert; and after the capture of Winchester by the Danes it was from 901 to 978 the place where the Anglo-Saxon kings were crowned. Surrey was an earldom of Godwine ; and after the conquest was bestowed on William de Warren, who had married Gundrada, supposed to have been a danghter of the Conqueror. From the time that the great charter was on 15th June 1215 signed by King John at Runnymede near Egham the historical annals of the county are a blank, until the period of the Civil War, when a skirmish took place, 7th June 1648, at Kingston.

_ The only ecclesiastical ruins worthy of special mention are the picturesque walls of Newark Priory, founded for Augustinians in the time of Richard Coeur de Lion ; and the Early English erypt and part of the refectory of Waverley Abbey, the earliest house of the Cistercians in England, founded in 1138 by William Gifford, bishop of Winehester. The Annales Waverlienses, published by Gale in his Seriptores and afterwards in the Record series of Chronicles, are supposed to have suggested to Sir Walter Scott the name of his first novel. The ehnrch architecture is of a very varied kind, and has no peculiarly special features. Among the more

interesting churches are Albury, the tower of which is of Saxon or very early Norman date ; Beddington, a fine example of the Perpendicular, and containing monuments of the Carew family ; Chaldon, remarkable for its fresco wall-paintings of the 12th century,

Newington, with the

Nearly two-

Mary, but died before he was out of his teens.

» UR eee

discovered during restoration in 1870 ; Compton, which, though mentioned in Domesday, possesses little of its original arehitecture, but is worthy of notice for its two-storied chancel, and its carved wooden balustrade surmounting the pointed Transition Norman arch which separates the nave from the chancel ; St. Mary's, Guild- ford, containing examples of Norman, Early English, Decorated, and Perpendicular, but is of interest chiefly for the grotesque carv- ing on the corbels of the aisles and the coloured medallions on the roof of the north chapel ; Leigh, Perpendicular, possessing some very fine brasses of the 15th century ; Lingfield, Perpendicular, containing ancient tombs and brasses of the Cobhams; Ockham, chiefly Decorated, with a lofty embattled tower, containing the mau- soleum of Lord Chancellor King (d. 1734), with full-length statue of the chancellor by Rysbroeck ; Reigate, chiefly Perpendicular, but with Transition Norman pillars in the nave ; Stoke d'Abernon, Early English, with the earliest extant English brass, that of Sir John d'Abernon, 1277; and Woking, Decorated, with Early English chancel. Of old castles the only examples are Farnham, occupied as a palace by the bishops of Winchester, originally built by Henry of Blois, and restored by Henry III.; and Guildford, with a strong quadrangular Norman keep. Ancient domestic architect- ure is, however, well represented, the examples including Bedding- ton Hall, now a female orphan asylum ; the ancient mansion of the Carews, rebuilt in the reign of Queen Aune, but still retaining the hall of the Elizabethan building ; Crowhurst Place, built in the time of Henry VII., the ancient seat of the Gaynesfords, and fre- quently visited by Henry VIII.; portions of Croydon Palace, an ancient seat of the archbishops of

Canterbury ; the gate tower of Esher Place, built by William of Waynflete, bishop of Winchester, and repaired by Cardinal Wolsey ; Archbishop Abbot's hospital, Guildford, in the Tudor style; the fine old Elizabethan house of Losely near Guildford ; Cowley House, Chertsey, originally of the time of James I., inhabited by the poet Cowley from the Restora- tion till his death ; Smallfield Place, now a farmhouse, at one time the seat of Sir Edward Bysshe, garter king-at-arms ; and Sutton Place, dating from the time of Henry VIIL, possessing curious mouldings and ornaments in terra-cotta. Among the cminent persons specially connected with Surrey may be mentioned George Abbot, archbishop of Canterbury, the son of a cloth. worker in Guildford ; Arthur Onslow, born at Merrow in 1691, who became member for Guildford and speaker of the Honse of Commons 3; Sir William Temple, who had his residence at Moor Park, where he died in 1699; Sir Nicolas Carew, beheaded for conspiracy in 1539, and other members of the family, who had their ancestral seat at Beddington ; John Evelyn, the diarist, who was born at Wotton in 1620; Malthus, the political economist, who was born at the Rooke, near the same place, in 1766; William Cobbett, who was born near Farnham in 1762; Horne Tooke, who was born at Westminster, wrote his well-known book at Purley, and died at Wimbledon in 1812; the historian Gibbon, who was born at Putney in 1737, whieh was also the birthplace of Cromwell, the minister of Henry VIII.

See Topley's Geology of the Weald and Whitaker's Geology of London Basin, forming part of the Memoirs of Geological Survey of United Kingdom; Surrey Archzological Collections; Aubrey, Natural Hi istory and Antiquities of Surrey, 5 vols., 1718-19 ; Manning and Bray, Hist. and Antiq. of Surrey, 1809-14; Bray- ley, Topograph. Hist. of Surrey, 5 Vols., 1841-46 ; Lysons, Environs of London, 5 vols., 1800-11 ; Baxter, Domesday Book of Surrey, 1876. (T. F. H.)

SURREY, Henry Howarp, Ear oF (15162-1547), one of the leaders in the poetic movement under Henry VIII. that heralded the great outburst of the Elizabethan period. Of his personal life outside his poetry only the barest out- line is known, and till comparatively of late even that outline was not free from confusion. Three different men— the grandfather of the poet, his father, and the poet him- self—bore the title within a period of ten or eleven years ; and at one time the poet was confounded with his grand- father, and

supposed to have been present at the battle of Flodden (1513). He was not born till at least two years after that event. It was his grandfather who distinguished himself at Flodden under the title of the earl of Surrey, and was created duke of Norfolk as a reward for his services, surrendering the title of Surrey to his son, the poet's father, for his lifetime. Although the poet has always been most familiarly known as the earl of Surrey, he really held the title only by courtesy, succeeding to it on that footing in 1524, when his father became duke of Norfolk. In one of his poems he speaks of having passed "his childish years" at Windsor "with a king's son." This was Henry VIII.'s natural son, Henry Fitzroy, duke of Richmond, who was affianced to Surrey's sister, It is

sometimes said that the two were educated together at Windsor; but the sweet companionship to which the poem refers, when the two youths "hoved" in the large green courts "with eyes cast up into the maiden's tower," belongs to the last year of Fitzroy's short life. Whether or not Surrey was educated from literal childhood with a king's son, he was certainly educated with the care for literary culture which about that time became common in the households of English noblemen; and, as the fashion was, he was sent, after passing through Cambridge, to complete his education in Italy. The tradition that he made the tour of Europe as a knight-errant, upholding against all comers the superiority of his mistress Geraldine, has no extrinsic evidence in its favour. If Geraldine was, as is commonly supposed, Elizabeth Fitzgerald, a daughter of the earl of Kildare, she was but a child of seven or eight years when Surrey set out on his travels. The legend about his knight-errantry is probably only a sign of the extent to which his chivalrous personality and poetry fascinated the imagination of his own and the next generation. The eminence of the Howards at Henry's court was evidenced in many ways: in the festivities at the king's marriage with Anne of Cleves, Surrey was the leader of one of the sides at the tournament, and two years later his cousin, Catherine Howard, became the king's fifth wife. Surrey took an active part in the insignificant wars of Henry's later years, accompanied the expedition, led by his father, which ravaged the south of Scotland in 1542, and held a command in the French expedition of 1544. When the king's death was

known to be near, the duke of Norfolk was suspected of aiming at the throne, and Surrey's own haughty and ostentatious manners countenanced the sus- picion. A month before the king's death both were arrested and lodged in the Tower, and on 13th January 1547 Surrey was brought to trial for high treason. The main charge against him was that he had "falsely, mali- ciously, and treacherously set up and borne the arms of Edward the Confessor." His plea that the arms belonged to his ancestors was probably not accepted as an extenua-

tion of the offence. A common jury found him guilty, and he was executed on Tower Hill on 19th January.

_ His poems, which had been one of the occupations of his crowded life, first appeared in print in Tottel's Miscellany in 1557. On the title-page of this memorable publication Surrey's name stood first, but this was probably in deference to his rank ; Wyatt was the first in point of time of Henry's " courtly makers" (see WYAtTT). Surrey, indeed, expressly acknowledges Wyatt, who was several years his senior, as his master in poetry. Seeing, however, that their poems were first published in the same volume, many years after the death of both, their names can never be disassociated, and it must always be hard to say which was the leader in the various new and beautiful forms of verse which Tottel's Miscellany introduced into English poetry. Surrey's only unquestionable distinction asa metrician lies outside the Miscellany: his trans- lation of the second and fourth books of the 4/ncid into blank verse —the first attempt at blank verse in English—was published separately by Tottel in the same year. But his sonnets (in various schemes of verse), his elegy on the death of Wyatt (in elegiac staves shut in by a final couplet), his pastoral poem (a lover's complaint put into the mouth of a shepherd), and his lyrics in livelicr measures are all extremely interesting experiments, and served as models for more than one generation of courtly singers and sonneteers. In form as well as in substance Surrey and his compeers were largely indebted to Italian predecessors ; most of his poems are in fact translations or adaptations of Italian originals. The tone of the love sentiment was new in English poetry, very different in its earnestness, passion, and fantastic extravagance from the lightness, gaiety,

and humour of the Chauccrian school. In this respect Totéel's Miscellany helped to educate the English muse for the triumphs of the tragic drama. Surrey's own con- tributions are distinguished by their copious and impetuous eloquence and sweetness.

SURROGATE is a deputy of a bishop or an ecclesiastical judge, acting in the absence of his principal, and strictly bound by the authority of the latter. At present the chief duty of a surrogate is the granting of marriage licences. Quite recently judgments of the arches court of Canterbury have been delivered by a surrogate. The office is unknown in Scotland, but is of some importance in the United States. In the State of New York the surrogate's court is a court of record, with jurisdiction over the administration of the personal estate of a deceased person and certain other matters. In New Jersey the surrogate is an official of

the orphans' court, grants unopposed probates, &c.

SURVEYING

URVEYING is the art of determining the relative positions of prominent points and other objects on

the surface of the ground and making a graphical delinea- tion of the included area. The general principles on which it is conducted are in all instances the same: cer- tain measures are made on the ground and corresponding measures are protracted on paper, on a scale which is fixed at whatever fraction of the natural scale may be most appropriate in each instance. The method of operation varies with the magnitude and importance of the survey, which may embrace a vast empire or be restricted to a small plot of land. All surveys rest primarily on linear measures for direct determinations of distance ; but these are usually largely supplemented by angular measures, to enable distances to be deduced by the principles of geome- try which cannot be conveniently measured over the surface of the ground where it is hilly or broken. The nature of a survey depends on the proportion which the linear and the angular measures bear to each other ; it may be purely linear or even purely angular, but is generally a combina- tion of both methods. Thus in India there are numerous instances of large tracts having been surveyed by the purely

linear method, in the course of the revenue surveys which were initiated by the native Governments. The operations were conducted by men who had no knowledge of geometry or of any other measuring instrument than the rod or chain, and whose principal object was the determination of fairly

accurate areas ; their methods sufficed for this purpose and were accepted and perpetuated for many years by the Euro- pean officers to whom the revenue assessments became en- trusted after the subversion of the native rule. In India, too, there are extensive tracts of country which have been surveyed by the purely angular method, either because the ground did not permit of the chain being employed with advantage, as in the Himalayan mountains and hill tracts generally, or because the chain was considered politically objectionable, as in native states where it would have been regarded with suspicion.

Surveys of any great extent of country were formerly constructed on a basis of points whose positions were fixed astronomically, and in some countries this method of opera- tion is still of necessity adopted. But points whose relative positions have been fixed by a triangulation of moderate accuracy present a more satisfactory and reliable basis ; for astronomical observations are liable, not only to the well-known intrinsic errors which are caused by uncer- tainties in the catalogued places of the moon and stars, but to external errors arising from deflexions of the plumb line under the influence of local attractions, and these of themselves materially exceed the errors which would be generated in a fairly executed triangulation of a not ex- cessive length, say not exceeding 500 miles. The French Jesuits who made a survey of China for the emperor about 1730 appear to have been the first deliberately to discard

General

outlines. over the southern peninsula.

the astronomical and adopt the trigonometrical basis. In India the change was made in 1800, when what is known as the Great Trigonometrical Survey was initiated by Major Lambton—with the support of Colonel

Wellesley, after- wards Duke of Wellington—as a means of connecting the several surveys of routes and districts which had already been made in various parts of the country, and as a basis for future topography. This necessitated the inception of the survey as an undertaking calculated to satisfy the re- quirements of geodesy as well as geography, because the latitudes and longitudes of the points of the triangulation had to be determined for future reference,—as in the case of the discarded astronomical stations, though in a different manner,—by processes of calculation combining the results of the triangulation with the elements of the earth's figure. The latter were not then known with much accuracy, for so far geodetic operations had been mainly carried on in Europe, and additional operations nearer the equator were much wanted ; the survey was conducted with a view to supply this want. Thusa high order of accuracy was aimed at from the very first. In course of time the operations were extended over the entire length and breadth of Hin- dustan and beyond, to the farthest limits of British sway ; they cover a larger area than any other national survey as yet completed, and are very elaborate and precise. Thus, as triangulation constitutes the most appropriate basis for survey operations generally, a short account will be given of (1) the methods of the Great Trigonometrical Survey of India. This will be followed by accounts of (2) traversing as a basis for survey, (3) levelling, (4) survey of interior detail, (5) representation of ground, (6) geographical recon- naissance, (7) nautical surveying, (8) mapping, (9) map printing, (10) instruments.

I. Great TRIGONOMETRICAL SuRvVEY oF INDIA.

1. General Outlines.—Primarily a network was thrown The triangles on the central meridian were measured with extra care and checked by base-lines at distances of about 2° apart in latitude in order to form a geodetic arc, with the addition of astronomi- cally determined latitudes at certain of the stations. The base-lines were measured with chains and the principal angles with a 3-foot theodolite, which, however, was badly damaged almost at the outset by an accident to the azimuthal circle. The signals were cairns of stones or poles. The chains were somewhat rude and their units of length

had not been determined originally, and could not be after- wards ascertained. The results were good of their kind and sufficient for

geographical purposes ; but the central

SURVEYING

[TRIANGULATION,

meridional arc—the “great arc”—was eventually deemed inadequate for geodetic requirements. A superior instru- mental equipment was introduced, with an improved modus operand2, under the direction of Colonel Everest in 1832. The network system of triangulation was superseded by meridional and longitudinal chains taking the form of grid- irons, and resting on base-lines at the angles of the grid- irons, as represented in fig. 1. For convenience of reduc- tion and nomenclature the triangulation west of meridian 92° E. has been divided into five sections,—the lowest a trigon, the other four quadrilaterals distinguished by cardinal points which have reference to an observatory in Central India, the adopted origin of latitudes. In the north-east quadrilateral, which was first measured, the meridional chains are about one degree apart 3 this dis- tance was latterly much increased, and eventually certain chains—as on the Malabar coast and on meridian 84° in the south-east quadrilateral—were dispensed with, because good secondary triangulation for topography had been accomplished before they could be commenced.

2. Modern Base-Lines.—All these were measured with Base. the Colby apparatus of compensation bars and microscopes, lines.

The bars, 10 feet long, were set up horizontally on tripod stands ; the microscopes, 6 inches apart, were mounted in pairs revolving round a vertical axis and were set up on tribrachs fitted to the ends of the bars. Six bars and five central and two end pairs of microscopes—the latter with their vertical axes perforated for a look-down telescope— constituted a complete apparatus, measuring 63 feet be- tween the ground pins or registers. For explanation of compensation see Eartu, Ficvrz oF Tux, vol. vii. p. 599. Compound bars are necessarily more liable to accidental changes of length than simple bars; they were therefore tested from time to time by comparison with a standard simple bar; the microscopes were also tested by comparison with a standard 6-inch scale. At the very first base-line the compensated bars were found to be liable to sensible variations of length

with the diurnal variations of temper- ature ; these were supposed to be due, not to error in effecting the compensation, but to the different thermal conductivities of the brass and the iron components. It became necessary, therefore, to determine the mean daily length of the bars very precisely, for which reason they were systematically compared with the standard before and after, and sometimes at the middle of, the base-line measurement throughout the entire day for a space of three days, and

under conditions as nearly similar as possible to those

obtaining during the measurement. Eventually ther- mometers were applied experimentally to both components of a compound bar, when it was found that the diurnal variations in length were principally due to difference of position relatively to the sun, not to difference of con- ductivity,—the component nearest the sun acquiring heat most rapidly or parting with it most slowly, notwithstand- ing that both were in the same box, which was always kept under the cover of a tent and carefully sheltered from the sun's rays. Happily the systematic comparisons of the compound bars with the standard were found to give a sufficiently exact determination of the mean daily length. An elaborate investigation of theoretical probable errors at the Cape Comorin base showed that, for any base- line measured as usual without thermometers in the com- pound bars, the p.e. may be taken as + 1°5 millionth parts of the length, excluding unascertainable constant errors, and that on introducing thermometers into these bars the p.e. was diminished to + 0°55 millionths.

In all baseline measurements the weak point is the determination of the temperature of the bars when that of the atmosphere is rapidly rising or falling ; the thermo- meters acquire and lose heat more rapidly than the bar if

their bulbs are outside, and more slowly if inside the bar. Thus there is always more or less lagging, and its effects are only eliminated when the rises and falls are of equal amount and duration; but as a rule the rise generally predominates greatly during the usual hours of work, and whenever this happens lagging may cause more error in a base-line

measured with simple bars than all other sources of error combined. In India the probable average lagging of the standard-bar thermometer was estimated as not less than 0°°3 Fahr., corresponding to an error of — 2 millionths in the length of a base-line measured with iron bars. With compound bars lagging would be much the same for both components and its influence would consequently be elimi- nated. Thus the most perfect base-line apparatus would seem to be one of compensation bars with thermometers attached to each component; then the comparisons with the standard need only be taken at the times when the temperature is constant, and there is no lagging.

3. Factor of Expansion of Standard Bar.—This was first determined in 1832 by measuring the increment in length between temperatures of 76° and 212° Fahr.; in 1870 the increment between 52° and 96° was measured ; the results indicated an increase of expansion with tem- perature. They were therefore combined on the empirical assumption that the expansion is the sum of two terms,— the first « times the temperature, the second y times the square of the temperature ; # and y were then determined from the two equations of condition given by the two sets of measurements. The resulting value of the expansion at 62° was found to be 5 per cent. less than the previously derived value at the mean temperature of 144°, thus show- ing the importance of employing a factor varying with the mean temperature of each base-line; and this was done in the final reductions.

4, Plan of Triangulation.—This was broadly a system – of internal meridional and longitudinal chains with an ex- ternal border of oblique chains following the course of the frontier and the coast lines. The design of each chain was necessarily much influenced by the physical features of the country over which it was carried. The most difii- cult tracts were plains of great extent, devoid of any com- manding points of view, in some parts covered with dense forest and jungle, malarious and deadly, and almost unin- habited, in other parts covered with towns and villages and umbrageous trees,—the adjuncts and concomitants of a teeming population. In such tracts triangulation was impossible except by constructing lofty towers as stations of observation, raising them to a sufficient height to over- top at least the earth’s curvature, and then either increas- ing the height to surmount all obstacles to mutual vision, or clearing the lines, both of which

were laborious and expensive processes. Thus in hilly and open country the chains of triangles were generally made “double” through- out, z.e., formed of polygonal and quadrilateral figures, to give greater breadth and accuracy; but in tracts of forest and close country they were carried out as series of single triangles, to give a minimum of labour and expense. Symmetry was secured by restricting the angles between the limits of 30° and 90°. The average side length was 30 miles in hill country and 11 in the plains; the longest principal side was 62°7 miles, though in the secondary triangulation to the Himalayan peaks there were sides exceeding 200 miles. Long sides were at first considered desirable, on the principle that the fewer the links the greater the accuracy of a chain of triangles; but it was eventually found that good observations on long sides could only be obtained under exceptionally favourable atmospheric conditions, which were of rare occurrence. The sides were therefore shortened, whereby the observa- tions were much improved and accelerated. In plains the

Sp OU Rev fy Tt NG

697

length was governed by the height to which towers could be conveniently raised to surmount the curvature, under the well-known condition, height in feet = 2 x square of the distance in miles; thus 24 feet of height was needed at each end of a side to overtop the curvature in 12 miles, and to this had to be added whatever was required to surmount obstacles on the ground. In Indian plains re- fraction is more frequently negative than positive during sunshine ; no reduction could therefore be made for it.

5. Selection of Sites for Stations.—This, a very simple Sites for matter in hills and open country, is often very difficult in stations.

plains and close country. In the early operations, when the great arc was being carried across the wide plains of the Gangetic valley, which are covered with villages and trees and other obstacles to distant vision, masts 35 feet high were carried about for the support of the small re- connoitring theodolites, with a sufficiency of poles and bamboos to form a scaffolding of the same height for the observer. Other masts 70 feet high, with arrangements for displaying blue lights by night at 90 feet, were erected at

the spots where station sites were wanted. But the cost of transport was great ; the rate of progress was slow; and the results were unsatisfactory. Eventually a method of touch rather than sight was adopted, feeling the ground to search for the obstacles to be avoided, rather than attempting to look over them; the “rays” were traced either by a minor triangulation, or by a traverse with theodolite and perambulator, or by a simple alignment of flags. The first method gives the direction of the new station most accurately ; the second searches the ground most closely ; the third is best suited for tracts of unin- habited forest in which there is no choice of either line or site, and the required station may be built at the inter- section of the two trial rays leading up to it. As a rule it has been found most economical and expeditious to raise the towers only to the height necessary for surmounting the curvature, and to remove the trees and other obstacles on the lines.

6. Structure of the Principal Stations.—Each has a cen- tral masonry pillar, circular and 3 to 4 feet in diameter, for the support of a large theodolite, and around it a plat- form 14 to 16 feet square for the observatory tent, observer, and signallers. The pillar is carefully isolated from the platform, and when solid carries the station mark—a dot surrounded by a circle—engraved on a stone at its surface, and on additional stones or the rock iz situ, in the normal of the upper mark ; but, if the height is considerable and there is a liability to deflexion, the pillar is constructed with a central vertical shaft to enable the theodolite to be plumbed over the ground-level mark, to which access 1s obtained through a passage in the basement. In early years this precaution against deflexion was neglected and the pillars were built solid throughout, whatever their height ; the surrounding platforms, being usually con- structed of sun-dried bricks or stones and earth, were liable to fall and press against the pillars, some of which thus became deflected during the rainy seasons that intervened between the periods during which operations were arrested or the commencement and close of the successive circuits of triangles. In some instances displacements of mark occurred of which the magnitudes were not ascertainable, but were estimated as equivalent to p.c.’s of about + 9 inches in the length and + 2-4 in the azimuth of the side between any two deflected towers; and, as these theoretical errors are identical with what may be expected at the end of a chain of 36 equilateral triangles in which all the angles have been measured with a p.e. = +05, the

old triangula- tion over solid towers had evidently suffered much more from the deflexions of the towers than from errors in the

measurements of the angles. XXII — 88

Principal stations.

Theo- dolites.

698

7. Instruments for Measuring Principal Angles.—Large

theodolites were invariably employed. Repeating circles

were highly thought of by French geodesists at the time when the operations in India were being commenced ; but they were not used in the survey, and have now been gener- ally discarded. al,

The principal theodolites are somewhat similar to the astronomer's alt-azimuth instrument, but with larger azi- imuthal and smaller vertical circles, also with a greater base to give the firmness and stability which are required in measuring horizontal angles. The azimuthal circles have mostly diameters of either 36 or 24 inches, the ver- tical circles having a diameter of 18 inches. In all the theodolites the base is a tribrach resting on three levelling foot-screws, and the circles are read by microscopes ; but in different instruments the fixed and the rotatory parts of the body vary. In some the vertical axis is fixed on the tribrach and projects upwards ; in others it revolves in the tribrach and projects downwards. In the former the azimuthal circle is fixed to the tribrach, while the telescope pillars, the microscopes, the clamps, and the tangent screws are attached to a drum revolving round the vertical axis ; in the latter the microscopes, clamps, and tangent screws are fixed to the tribrach, while the telescope pillars and the azimuthal circle are attached to a plate fixed at the head of the rotatory vertical axis. The former system—called that of jlying microscopes—permits the vertical axis to be readily opened out and cleaned, and presents the same clamp and tangent screw for employment during a round of angles; the latter—the system of fixed microscopes—necessitates the

removal and replacement of all the microscopes, clamps, and tangent screws whenever the axis is cleaned, which is very troublesome, and it presents three sets of clamps and tangent screws for successive employment during a round of angles, which is a departure from true differentiality. The vertical axis is perforated for centring over the station mark with the aid of a “look-down telescope” instead of a plummet. The azimuthal circle is invariably read by an odd number of microscopes, either three or five, at equal intervals apart. The telescope rests with its pivots in Y’s at the head of two pillars of a sufficient height to enable it to be completely turned round in altitude. The vertical circle is fixed to the transit axis of the telescope, and is read by two microscopes 180° apart, at the extremities of arms projecting from one of the pillars. The stand is a well-braced tripod, carrying an iron ring on which the theo- dolite rests and may be turned round bodily whenever de- sired, as for shifting the position of the zero of the azimuthal circle relatively to the points under observation. The ring is 3 inches broad and of the same diameter as the circle of the foot-screws of the theodolite. In some instruments the foot-screws rest directly on the ring; but the instru- ment can be raised off the ring and turned round with the aid of an apparatus in the centre of the stand. In others they rest in grooves at the angles of an iron triangle which sits on the ring and can be shifted in position by hand ; thus with the stand well levelled in the first instance the circle may be set within 1’ of any required reading. ‘The centring over the station mark is performed by pushing screws placed either in the drum of the stand or at the angles of the triangle.

For travelling the theodolites were packed in two cases, the larger containing the body of the instrument, the smaller the telescope and the vertical circle; the stand constituted a third package. Each was carried on men’s shoulders as the safest method of transport ; the weights, of the heaviest 36-inch and of the lightest 24-inch instru- ments, as packed with ropes and bamboos, were, respect- ively, as follows :—body, 649 tb 3 telescope, 130; stand, 232 ; total, 1011 tb; and 300, 135, and 185, total 620 ib.

SURV EV ONE

[TRIANGULATION,

8. Signals.—Caims of stones, poles, or other opaque Signal signals were primarily employed, the angles being measured by day only; eventually it was found that the atmosphere was often more favourable for observing by night than by day, and that distant points were raised well into view by refraction by night which might be invisible or only seen with difficulty by day. Lamps were then introduced of the simple form of a cup, 6 inches in diameter, filled with cotton seeds steeped in oil and resin, to burn under an inverted earthen jar, 30 inches in diameter, with an aper- ture in the side towards the observer. Subsequently this contrivance gave place to the Argand lamp with parabolic reflector ; the opaque day signals were discarded for helio- tropes reflecting the sun's rays to the observer. The in- troduction of luminous signals not only rendered the night as well as the day available for the observations but changed the character of the operations, enabling work to be done during the dry and healthy season of the year, when the atmosphere is generally hazy and dust-laden, instead of being restricted as formerly to the rainy and unhealthy seasons, when distant opaque objects are best seen. A higher degree of accuracy was also secured, for the lumi- nous signals were invariably displayed through diaphragms of appropriate aperture, truly centred over the station mark ; and, looking like stars, they could be observed with greater precision, whereas opaque signals are always dim in comparison and are liable to be seen excentrically when the light falls on one side.

A signalling party of three men was usually found sufii- cient to manipulate'a pair of heliotropes—one for single, two for double reflexion, according to the sun's position— and a lamp, throughout the night and day. Hieliotropers were also employed at the observing stations to flash in- structions to the signallers.

9. Measuring Horizontal Angles.—The theodolites were Measw- | invariably set up under tents for protection against sun, img hoi |

wind, and rain, and centred, levelled, and adjusted for the "i

runs of the microscopes. Then the signals were observed ° in regular rotation round the horizon, alternately from right to left and vice versa ; after the prescribed minimum number of rounds, either two or three, had been thus measured, the telescope was turned through 180°, both in altitude

and azimuth, changing the position of the face of the vertical circle relatively to the observer, and further rounds were measured; additional measures of single angles were taken if the prescribed observations were not sufficiently accordant. As the microscopes were invariably equidistant and their number was always odd, either three or five, the readings taken on the azimuthal circle during the telescope pointings to any object in the two positions of the vertical circle, “face right” and “face left,” were made on twice as many equidistant graduations as the number of microscopes. The theodolite was then shifted bodily in azimuth, by being turned on the ring on the head of the stand, which brought new graduations under the microscopes at the telescope pointings; then further rounds were measured in the new positions, face right and face left. This process was repeated as often as had been previously prescribed, the successive angular shifts of position being made by equal arcs bringing

equidistant graduations under the microscopes during

the successive telescope pointings to one and the same object. By these arrangements all periodic errors of graduation were eliminated, the numerous graduations that were read tended to cancel accidental errors of divi- sion, and the numerous rounds of measures to minimize the errors of observation arising from atmospheric and personal causes.

The following table (I.) gives details of the procedure at different times ; in the headings M stands for the number of microscopes

TRIANGULATION. |

the zero settings of the circle, N for the number of graduations brought under the microscopes, A=360°+N, the are between the graduations, R_ the prescribed number of rounds of measures, and P=Rx Z, the minimum number of telescope pointings to any station, excluding repetitions for discrepant observations :—

Period. | M Z N A R P 1830-45 5 8 ao 9° ol 3 | os 1845-55 io | 50 | 7127| 2 | 90

ee) io | SD | is] 38 | 30 1855-80 3 | 12 | 36 \10° o’| 3 | 36

Under this system of procedure the instrumental and ordinary errors are practically cancelled and any remaining error is most probably due to lateral refraction, more especially when the rays of light graze the surface of the ground. The three angles of every triangle were always measured.

10. Vertical Angles. Refraction.—The apparent alti- tude of a distant point is liable to considerable variations during the twenty-four hours, under the influence of changes in the density of the lower strata of the atmosphere. Ter- restrial refraction is very capricious, more particularly when the rays of light graze the surface of the ground, passing through a medium which is liable to extremes of rarefac- tion and condensation, under the alternate influence of the sun's heat radiated from the surface of the ground and of chilled atmospheric vapour. When the back and forward verticals at a pair of stations are equally refracted, their difference gives an exact measure of the difference of height. But the atmospheric conditions are not always identical at the same moment everywhere on long rays which graze the surface of the ground, and the ray between two recipro- cating stations is liable to be differently refracted at its extremities, each end being influenced in a greater degree by the conditions prevailing around it than by those at a distance ; thus instances are on record of a station A being invisible from another B, while B was visible from A.

When the great-are entered the plains of the Gangetic valley, simultaneous reciprocal verticals were at first adopted with the hope of eliminating refraction ; but it was soon found that they did not do so sufficiently to justify the expense of the additional instruments and observers. After- wards the back and forward verticals were observed as the stations were visited in succession, the back angles at as nearly as possible the same time of the day as the forward angles, and always during the so-called "time of minimum refraction," which ordinarily commences about an hour after apparent noon and lasts from two to three hours. The apparent zenith distance is always greatest then, but the refraction is a minimum only at stations which are well elevated above the surface of the ground; at stations on plains the refraction is liable to pass through zero and attain a considerable negative magnitude during the heat of the day, for the lower strata of the atmosphere are then less dense than the strata immediately above and the rays are refracted downwards. On plains the greatest positive

refractions are also obtained,—maximum values, both positive and negative, usually occurring, the former by night, the latter by day, when the sky is most free from clouds. The values actually met with were found to range from + 1:21 down to — 0:09 parts of the contained arc on plains ; the normal “coefficient of refraction ” for free rays between hill stations below 6000 feet was about ‘07, which diminished to ‘04 above 18,000 feet, broadly varying in- versely as the temperature and directly as the pressure, but much influenced also by local climatic conditions.

In measuring the vertical angles with the great theodo- lites, graduation errors were regarded as insignificant com- pared with errors arising from uncertain refraction ; thus no arrangement was made for effecting changes of zero in

over the azimuthal circle of the theodolite, Z for the number of

and

the circle settings. The observations were always taken in pairs, face right and left, to eliminate index errors, only a few daily, but some on as many days as possible, for the variations from day to day were found to be greater than the diurnal variations during the hours of minimum refraction.

ll, Results deduced from Observations of Horizontal Angles » Weaghts.—In the Ordnance and other surveys the bearings of the surrounding stations are deduced from the actual observations, but from the “included angles” in the Indian Survey. The observations of every angle are tabulated vertically in as many columns as the number of circle settings face left and face right, and the mean for each setting is taken. or several years the general mean Weights. of these was adopted as the final result; but subsequently a “concluded angle” was obtained by combining the single means with weights inversely proportional to g?+0?+n, —g being a value of the e.m.s.1 of graduation derived empirically from the differences between the general mean and the mean for each setting, o the e.m.s. of observa-

tion deduced from the differences between the individual

measures and their respective means, and » the number of

measures at each setting. Thus, putting w,, w,,... for the weights of the single means, w for the weight of the con- cluded angle, // for the general mean, C’ for the concluded angle, and d,, d,, . the single means, we have

.. for the differences between JZ and

aes Wy dy + Wolly + Wy + We + QU Nt AO neta ones sai eee eamtosauises acseancans (2).

C—WM vanishes when x is constant; it is inappreciable

when g is much larger than 0; it is significant only when the graduation errors are more minute than the errors of

observation; but it was always small, not exceeding 0’-14 with the system of two rounds of measures and 005 with the system of three rounds.

The weights of the concluded angles thus obtained were employed in the primary reductions of the angles of single triangles and polygons which were made to satisfy the geometrical conditions of each figure, because they were strictly relative for all angles measured with the same instrument and under similar circumstances and conditions, as was almost always the case for each single figure. But in the final reductions, when numerous chains of triangles composed of figures executed with different instruments and under different circumstances came to be adjusted simultaneously, it was necessary to modify the original weights, on such evidence of the precision of the angles as might be obtained from other and more reliable sources than the actual measures of the angles. This treatment will now be described.

12. Determination of Theoretical Absolute Errors of Theoreti- Observed Angles.—Values of theoretical error for groups calerrors of angles measured with the same instrument and under Die similar conditions may be obtained in three ways,—(i.) from the squares of the reciprocals of the

weight w deduced as above from the measures of such angle, (ii.) from the magni- tudes of the excess of the sum of the angles of each triangle above 180° + the spherical excess, and (iii.) from the magni- tudes of the corrections which it is necessary to apply to the angles of polygonal figures and networks to satisfy the several geometrical conditions (indicated in the next sec- tion). Let e, ¢, and ¢, be the values of the e.m.s. thus obtained ; then, putting for the number of angles grouped together, we have

a= Bd gaa eee of triangular os [w] n

also, putting W for the mean of the weights of the ¢ angles

1 The theoretical ‘‘ error of mean square” = 1°48 x ‘‘ probable error.”

Harmon- izing angles,

of a polygonal figure having m geometrical equations of condition, and # for the most probable value of the error

of any observed angle, we have

a : eas for a single figure,

le] fol for a group of figures,

the brackets [] in each case denoting the sum of all the quantities involved. e, usually gives the best value of the theoretical error, then ¢. As a rule the value by e, is too small; but to this there are notable exceptions, in which it was found to be much too great. The instrument with which the angles were measured in these instances gave very discrepant results at different settings of the circle ; but this was caused by large periodic errors of graduation which did not affect the “concluded angles,” because they were eliminated by the systematic changes of setting, so the results were really more precise than was apparent.

When weights were determined for the final simultaneous reduction of triangulations executed by different instru- ments, it became necessary to

find a factor p to be applied as a modulus to each group of angles measured with the same instrument and under similar conditions, to convert the as yet relative weights into absolute measures of preci- sion. p was made=e,+e, whenever data were available, if not to e,+¢,; then the absolute weight of an observed angle in any group was taken as wp? and the e.m.s. of the angle as 1+p./w. The average values of the e.m.s. thus determined for large groups of angles, measured with the 36-inch and the 24-inch theodolites, ranged from + 0’“24 to +0’°67, the smaller values being usually obtained at hill stations, where the atmospheric conditions were most favourable.

13. Harmoniang Angles of Trigonometrical Figures.— Every figure, whether a single triangle or a polygonal net- work, was made consistent by the application of corrections to the observed angles to satisfy its geometrical conditions. The three angles of every triangle having been observed, their sum had to be made=180°+the spherical excess ; in networks it was also necessary that the sum of the angles measured round the horizon at any station should be exactly = 360°, that the sum of the parts of an angle measured at different times should equal the whole, and that the ratio of any two sides should be identical, what- ever the route through which it was computed. These are called the triangular, central, toto-partial, and side condi- tions ; they present 2 geometrical equations, which contain ¢ unknown quantities, the errors of the observed angles, ¢ being always >n. When these equations are satisfied and the deduced values of errors are applied as corrections to the observed angles, the figure becomes consistent. Primarily the equations were treated by a method of suc- cessive approximations; but afterwards they were all solved simultaneously by the so-called method of minimum squares, which leads to the most probable of any system of corrections ; it is demonstrated under Eartu, Figure OF THE (vol. vii. p. 599). The following is a general out- line of the process :—

Let x be the most probable value of the error and w the recipro- cal of the weight of any observed angle X, and let a, b,...n be the coefficients of x in successive geometrical equations of condition whose absolute terms are Ca, 9+ +» €,3 then we have the following group of m equations containing ¢ unknown quantities to be satis- fied, the significant coefficients of x being 1 in the triangular, toto- partial, and central, and + cot X in the side equations :—

AX) + Aela +... + Ay, =lg Dydy + Doty +... + Dye, =e

Ma + Nala +... + My = Cp P The values of x will be the most probable when = | is a minimum,

a condition which introduces » indeterminate factors Ne ouls Re

SURVEYING

[TRIANGULATION,

whose values are obtained by the solution of the following equa- tions :— [aau]r\,rq[0d.u)r\,...[bnu]r, =e, [an.w]rg+[bn.u]r,...[nnu]r, =e, the brackets indicating summations of ¢ terms as to left of (3). Then the value of any, the pth, x is

Up = Up {dpa t bys +... + Nphn} The minimum or [= is =[eA]

In the application to a single triangle we have Ly + Wy + Xy =e,

ASO+ (th + Ug + Uy) 5 y= UWA} A—y=Wyr 3 ag=Uphr.

In the application to a simple polygon, by changing symbols and putting X and Y for the exterior 18 5 for the vel eaten with errors x, y, and z and weight reciprocals w, v, and w, a for cot_X and 6 for cot Y, ¢ for any triangular error, ¢, and e, for the central and side errors, \, and A, for the factors for the central and side equations, and W for w+v+w, the equations for obtaining the

factors become ae wiau—bry], _ we [»- 57} -[A” pan [F

. — “The +] au + 0% — or bs =0,- “or |

and the general expressions for the errors of the angles are—

a w= tet(a W— aw bv)r\y- wr, })

y= FF le~ (BW + aw—bv)r,— dave} }

2= 7p {e- (au — bv)dy+ (w+v)re} J

14. Calculation of Sides of Triangles.—The angles Sides of having been made geometrically consistent inter se in each triangle,

figure, the side-lengths are computed from the base-line onwards by Legendre's theorem, each angle being dimin- ished by one-third of the spherical excess of the triangle to which it appertains. The theorem is applicable without sensible error to triangles of a much larger size than any that are ever measured.

15. Calculation of Latitudes and Longitudes of Stations Latitaie | and Azmuths of Sides.—A station of origin being chosen and _ of which the latitude and longitude are known astronomi- 08

cally, and also the azimuth of one of the surrounding stations, the differences of latitude and longitude and the

reverse azimuths are calculated in succession, for all the of side. —

stations of the triangulation, by Puissant's formule de Géodésie, Paris, 1842, 3d ed.).

Problem.— Assuming the earth to be spheroidal, let A and B be two stations on its surface, and let the latitude and longitude of A be known, also the azimuth of Bat A, and the distance between A and B at the mean sea-level ; we have to find the latitude and longitude of B and the azimuth of A at B.

The following symbols are employed :—a the major and 6 the

(Traité

2 pe 4 minor semi-axis ; ¢ the excentricity, = 12 = € p the radius of a curvature to the meridian in latitude), = a ; » the normal {1 -e'sin?\}? '

to the meridian in latitude A, = —__* ; {1 —e%sin?n}4 latitude and longitude of A; 4+A\ and Z+AZ the required lati- tude and longitude of B; A the azimuth of Bat A; B the azimuth of A at B; Ad=B-(r+A); c the

distance between A and B. Then, all azimuths being measured from the south, we have

and Z the given

- cos A cosec 1” = 1¢é sin?4 tan \ cosec 1” 2 pw a¢ # ~4 pw 1-2 ai © sintA cos A(1+38 tan?) cosec 1” 6 pv

(9),

cos?.4 sin 2X cosec 1”

| a= | |

c sin 4

1 ce? sin 2A tan X *; v2 cos A sik

1 c?(14 3 tan?) sin 2.4 cos.4 “6 v3 cos }

1 sin? 4 tan? X

3v3 cosx _

NE | (10),

cosec 1”

cosec 1”

TRIANGULATION. |

SURVEYING 701

id, 2 Me PisG A cose 1”) any points for which both may be available: they indi- mai i: ea: cate the extent to which differences may be attributable AA” a. +73 14 2tan Ma t sina cosec 1” = errors in the adopted geodetic constants, as distinct B-(r+A)= We % +(11). | rom errors in the trigonometri i 2 e (8- tan \) a ge soniaee: gonometrical or the astronomical say 60 tan? 2) convo

1” 17. Final Reduction of Principal Triangulation. —The Redue- = J calculations described so far suffice to make the angles of tion of

Each A is the sum of four terms symbolized by 6), 45, 53, and 8, ; the calculations are so arranged as to produce these terms in the

order 5A, 6Z, and 64, each term entering as a factor in calculating the following term. The arrangement is shown below in equations in which the symbols P, Q,... Z represent the factors which depend ou the adopted geodetic constants, and vary with the latitude ; the logarithms of their numerical values are tabulated in the Awziliary Tables to Facilitate the Calculations of the Indian Survey.

—igogeped + i. ee ze aie aw also, for each portion of the triangulation— secondary as he 3 stot & pases. Gainke 2 A=480W (12), | Well as principal —as executed year by year. But on the Sd=-,4.Xtand oyb=+5..V.tand 54,4=45,L.2 completion of the several chains of triangles further reduc-

By this artifice the calculations are rendered less laborious and made susceptible of being readily performed by any persons who are acquainted with the use of logarithm tables.

16. Limits within which Geodetic Formule may be em-

odetic ployed without Sensible Error.—Each A is expressed as a rmule. series of ascending differentials in which all terms above

the third order are neglected ; for the side length c in no ease exceeded 70 miles, nor was the latitude ever higher than 36°, and for these extreme values the maximum magni- tudes of the fourth differential are only 0-002 in latitude and 0”:004 in longitude and azimuth.

Far greater error may arise from uncertainties regard- ing the elements of the earth’s figure, which was assumed to be spheroidal, with semi-axes a = 20,922,932 feet and b=20,853,375 feet. The changes in AA, AZ, and AA which would arise from errors da and db in a and 6 are indicated by the following formule :—

a dp dv dy 2de dv d.AX = — Ad. ac dy). a(S ~ aa) – 20,.— |

d d AAD = — AL. ~ by. — (Bgl + 5,1)

ahd=- dA 3,4{2-2(4_@ 1 2 tan’\ +—

r,s — (53.4 + 544)2—

How this was done will now be set forth. But first it must be noted that the triangulation might at the same time have been made consistent with any values of latitude, longitude, or azimuth which had been determined by astronomical observations at either of the trigonometrical stations. This, however, was undesirable, because such observations are liable to errors from deflexion of the plumb-line from the true normal under the influence of local attraction, and these errors are of a much greater magnitude than those that would be generated in triangu- lating between astronomical stations which are not a great distance apart. The trigonometrical elements could not be forced into accordance with the astronomical without altering the angles by amounts much larger than their probable errors, and the results would be useless for in- vestigations of the figure of the earth. The only inde- pendent facts of observation which could be legitimately combined with the angular adjustments were the base-lines,

= _ and all these were employed, while the several astronomical oe ‘000,000, 0478 {da — 2db — 3(da — db) sin? h} determinations—of latitude, differential longitude, and iy azimuth—-were held in reserve for future geodetic investi-

<= + 000,000, 0478 {da-+ (da — db) sin? d} (14).

2de ra

gations,

*000,0145 {da — db} As an illustration of the problem for treatment, suppose a com- Specific bination of three meridional and two longitudinal chains comprising illustra-

seventy-two single triangles, with a base-line at each corner, as shown tion

(ee The adopted values of the semi-axes were determined

by Colonel Everest in an investigation of the figure of the earth from such data as were available in 1826. Forty years afterwards an investigation was made by Captain (now Colonel) A. R. Clarke with additional data, which gave new values, both exceeding the former.! Accepting these as exact, the errors of the first values are da = — 3130 feet and db) = — 1746 feet, the former being 150, the latter 84 millionth parts of the semi-axis. The corresponding changes in arcs of 1° of latitude and longitude, expressed in seconds of are and in millionth parts () of arc-length, are as follows :—

In lat. 5° d. AA= — “069 or 19 wand d.AL= —“5400r150 4;

” 15° oF) =“15 29 31 290099 a9 — “554 ”? 154,, ; oe) 25° oe) = “195 33 54,, 2 ” me? ae 161,, ; cee, | 908 84, oss aT, a 2o ls,

These assumed errors in the geodetic latitudes and longi-

. tudes are of service when comparisons are made between

independent astronomical and geodetic determinations at

1 See Account of the Principal Triangulation of the Ordnance Sur- vey, 1858, and Comparisons of Standards of Length, 1866.

in the accompanying diagram (fig. 2); suppose the three angles of every triangle tohave been C B

measured and made con- AVAVAVAVAVAVAVAVANAY

sistent. Let A be the ori-

gin, with its latitude and

longitude given, and also

the length and azimuth of

the adjoining base-line.

With these data processes

of calculation are carried <

through the triangulation »,

to obtain the lengths and D LIEDLE PL EP. azimuths of the sides and : 4
the latitudes and longi- Fig. 2.

tudes of the stations, say in the following order :—from A through B to E, through F to E, through F to D, through F and E to C, and through F and D to C. Then there are two values of side, azimuth, latitude, and longitude at E,—one from the right- hand chains via B, the other from the left-hand chains via F; similarly there are two sets of values at C; and each of the base- lines at B, C, and D has a calculated as well as a measured value. Thus eleven absolute errors are presented for dispersion over the triangulation by the application of the most appropriate correction to each angle, and, as a preliminary to the determination of these corrections, equations must be constructed between each of the absolute errors and the unknown errors of the angles from which

/\/

V/ L\/\

Pe Py

702

they originated. Forthis purpose assume X to be the angle opposite the flank side of any triangle, and Y and Z the angles opposite the sides of continuation ; also let x, y, and 2 be the most probable values of the errors of the angles which will satisfy the given equations of condition. Then each equation may be expressed in the form [ax+by+cz]=Z, the brackets indicating a summation for all the triangles involved. We have first to ascertain the values of the coefficients a, b, and ¢ of the unknown

quantities. They are readily found for the side equations on the circuits and between the base-lines, for x does not enter them, but only y and z, with coefficients which are the cotangents of Y and Z, so-that these equations are simply [cot Y.y—cot Z.zJ=#. But three out of four of the circuit equations are geodetic, corresponding to the closing errors in latitude, longitude, and azimuth, and in them the co- efficients are very complicated. They are obtained as follows. The first term of each of the three expressions for AA, AZ, and B is differentiated in terms of c and A, giving

Tar S anr{ 2 -aatand sin “}

a Aba AL { os dA cot Asin i” }

dB= a4+sa{F rad ot Aaa u”}

in which de and dA represent the errors in the length and azimuth of any side ¢ which have been generated __ 7 in the course of the triangulation up to it from the base-line and the azi- muth station at the origin. The errors in the latitude aud longitude of any station which are due to the triangula- 5 tion are d\,=[d.AA], and dZ,=[d. AZ}. Let station 1 be the origin, and let 2, 3,... be the succeeding stations taken along a predetermined line of traverse, which may either run from (3) 5 vertex to vertex of the successive tri- angles, zigzagging between the flanks of the chain, as in fig. 3 (1), or be 2 carried directly along one of the flanks, as in fig. 3(2). For the general sym- 1 bols of the differential equations sub- stitute AAn, ADn, AAn, Cn, An, and Bn, for the side between stations » and : n-+1 of the traverse ; and let dc, and Fig. 3. 6A, be the errors generated between the sides c,_ and Cn; then de _ 8c, dey 8, | Sey. dt, _ “| 6c], a Cee ee oe ‘ete set @A,=6A,; dA4,=dB,+54,3.. . dAn=ABp1+5An Performing the necessary ‘substitutions and summations, we get 6c, n 80, Sn a + 4, ae +44ne

for]

aks

(1)

144]

6.4,(1+ 44 cot A]sin1”) 3.4, +... (14 AAq cot An sin 13 Ay,

6c, 1 OC OCn

ae Jar +... + Ane

— {{[Ad tan 4]8.4, +”[AAtan AJA, +... +A), tan A,5Ap} sin 1”

5c,

Cy

Aa

OCn TAZ] a + { [AL cot 4]6.4,+ [AL cot A]Jo4,+... +ALZ, cot A,5A,}sin 1” Thus we have the following expression for any geodetic error—

6c 6c a ise tone + b5A, +. —+¢n04n=F, ...(16),

where » and ¢ represent the respective summations which are the coefficients of 6c and 6A in each instance but the first, in which 1 is added to the summation in forming the coefficient of 5.4.

The angular errors x, y, and z must now be introduced, in place of dc and 6A, into the general expression, which will then take different forms, according as the route adopted for the line of traverse was the zigzag or the direct. In the former, the number of stations on the traverse is ordinarily the same as the number of triangles, and, whether or no, a common numerical notation may be adopted for both the traverse stations and the collateral triangles ; thus the angular errors of every triangle enter the general expression in the form + px+ cot Yip’y —cot Z.p’z, in which y’=y sin 1”, and the upper sign of ¢ is taken if the tri- angle lies to the left, the lower if to the right, of the line of traverse. When the direct traverse is adopted, there are only half as many traverse stations as triangles, and therefore only half the number of

6

+ ADT 2+ wtevas Splaliag ing = ‘

SURVEYING

#’sand ¢’s to determine ; but it becomes necessary to adopt different

[TRIANGULATION,

numberings for the stations and the triangles, and the form of the coefficients of the angular errors alternates in successive trian gles. Thus, if the yth triangle has no side on the line of the traverse but only an angle at the /th station, the form is

+ hy%pt+ cot Vpu’Yp— cot Zp.p’ pty If the gth triangle has a side between the [th and the (J+1)th sta- tions of the traverse, the form is

cot Xo(u’ — M4 at (P, +H, 41 00t Vo)yg- (G,4.4— Hw’, cot Zz)eqe

As each circuit has a right-hand and a left-hand branch, the errors of the angles are finally arranged so as to present equations of the general form

[ase + by + cz], —[aa+by+cz)=Z. ;

The eleven circuit and base-line equations of condition having been duly constructed, the next step is to find values of the angular errors which will satisfy these equations, and be the most probable of any system of values that will do so, and at the same time will not disturb the existing harmony of the angles in each of the seventy-two triangles. Harmony is maintained by introducing the equation of condition x+y+z=0 for every triangle. The most probable results are obtained by the method of minimum squares, which may be applied in two ways.

(i) A factor \ may be obtained for each of the eighty-three equa-

, ak i. Mae acd tions under the condition that [=+ – + =| is made a minimum, u,

v, and w being the reciprocals of the weights of the observed angles. This necessitates the simultaneous solution of eighty-three equations to obtain as many values of . The resulting values of the errors of the angles in any, the

pth, triangle, are Lp=UplapA] ; Yp=VUplopA] 3 %p=WylCpA]...0.000-(17).

(ii.) One of the unknown quantities in every triangle, as x, may be eliminated from each of the eleven circuit and base-line equa- tions by substituting its equivalent —(y+<) for it, a similar substi- tution being made in the minimum. Then the equations take the form [(~a)y+(c-a)z]=£, while the minimum becomes

Thus we have now to find only eleven values of \ by a simultaneous solution of as many equations, instead of eighty-three values from eighty-three equations ; but we arrive at more complex expressions for the angular errors as follows :—

ik ae {(tup + Wp)[(bp — Ap)A] ~ wl (Cp — ap)NT} a 2 of pay tot Mlle ~ MpIA1~ tyllbp ~)NI} |

The second method has invariably been adopted, originally be- Reduc- cause it was supposed that, the number of the factors X being re- tion duced from the total number of equations to that of the circuit and rincipal base-line equations, a great saving of labour would be effected. But triangu- subsequently it was ascertained that in this respect there is little lation. to choose between the two methods ; for, when « is not eliminated, and as many factors are introduced as there are equations, the factors for the triangular equations may be readily eliminated at the outset.) Then the really severe calculations will be restricted to the solution : of the equations containing the factors for the circuit and base-line equations, as in the second method.

In the preceding illustration it is assumed that the base-lines are errorless as compared with the triangulation. Strictly speaking, however, as base-lines are fallible quantities, presumably of differ- ent weight, their errors should be introduced as unknown quantities of which the most probable values are to be determined in a simul- taneous investigation of the errors of all the facts of observation, whether linear or angular. When they are connected together by so few triangles that their ratios may be deduced as accurately, . or nearly so, from the triangulation as from the measured lengths, this ought to be done; but, when the connecting triangles are so numerous that the

direct ratios are of much greater weight than the trigonometrical, the errors of the base-lines may be neglected. -” In the reduction of the Indian triangulation it was decided, after _ examining the relative magnitudes of the probable errors of the linear and the angular measures and ratios, to assume the base-lines to be errorless (see § 19, p. 704 below).

The chains of triangles being largely composed of polygons. or other networks, and not merely of single triangles, as has been assumed for simplicity in the illustration, the geometrical harmony to be maintained involved the introduction of a large number of “side,” ‘‘central,” and ‘‘toto-partial” equations of condition, as well as the triangular. Thus the problem for attack was the simul- taneous solution of a number of equations of condition =that of all the geometrical conditions of every figure+four times the number of circuits formed by the chains of triangles+the number of base- lines—1, the number of unknown quantities contained in the equations being that of the whole of the observed angles; the method of procedure, if rigorous, would be precisely similar to that

already indicated for ‘‘ harmonizing the angles of trigonometrical figures,” of which it is merely an expansion from single figures to great groups.

The rigorous treatment would, however, have involved the simultaneous solution of about 4000 equations between 9230 un- known quantities, which was quite impracticable. The triangula- tion was therefore divided into sections for separate reduction, of which the most important were the five between the meridians of 67° and 92° (see fig. 1, p. 696), consisting of four quadrilateral figures and a trigon, each comprising several chains of triangles and some base-lines. This arrangement had the advantage of enabling the final reductions to be taken in hand as soon as convenient after the completion of any section, instead of being postponed until all were completed. It was subject, however, to the condition that the sections containing the best chains of triangles were to be first reduced ; for, as all chains bordering contiguous sections would necessarily be ‘‘ fixed” as a part of the section first reduced, it was obviously desirable to run no risk of impairing the best chains by forcing them into adjustment with others of inferior quality. It happened that both the north-east and the south-west

quadrilaterals contained several of the older chains; their reduction was therefore made to follow that of the collateral sections containing the modern chains.

But the reduction. of each of these great sections was in itself a very formidable undertaking, necessitating some departure from a purely rigorous treatment. For the chains were largely composed of polygonal networks and not of single triangles only as assumed in the illustration, and therefore cognizance had to be taken of a number of ‘‘side” and other geometrical equations of condition, which entered irregularly and caused great entanglement. Equa- tions 17 and 18 of the illustration are of a simple form because they have a single geometrical condition to maintain, the triangular, which is not only expressed by the simple and symmetrical equation e+y+z=0, but—what is of much greater importance—recurs in a regular order of sequence that materially facilitates the general solution. Thus, though the calculations must in all cases be very numerous and laborious, rules can be formulated under which they ean be well controlled at every stage and eventually brought to a successful issue. The other geometrical conditions of networks are expressed by equations which are not merely of a more complex form but have no regular order of sequence, for the networks pre- sent a variety of forms; thus their introduction would cause much entanglement and complication, and greatly increase the labour of the calculations and the chances of failure. Wherever, therefore, any compound figure occurred, only so much of it as was required to form a chain of single triangles was employed. The figure having previously been made consistent, it was immaterial what part was employed, but the selection was usually made so as to introduce the fewest triangles. The triangulation for final simultaneous reduction was thus made to consist of chains of single triangles only ; but all the included angles were ‘‘ fixed” simultaneously. The excluded angles of compound figures were subsequently har- monized with the fixed angles, which was readily done for each figure per se.

This departure from rigorous accuracy was not of material im- portance, for the angles of the conrpound figures excluded from the simultaneous reduction had already, in the course of the several independent figural adjustments, been made to exert their full in- fluence on the included

angles. The figural adjustments had, how- ever, introduced new relations between the angles of different figures, causing their weights to increase cxteris paribus with the number of geometrical conditions satisfied in each instance. Thus, suppose w to be the average weight of the ¢ observed angles of any figure, and n the number of geometrical conditions presented for satisfaction ; then the average weight of the angles after adjustment may be

u Yp=F [(2bp — Gp —Cp)r]

IU >= 3 [(2¢p — Gp — by)d]

The most laborious part of the calculations was the construction and solution of the normal equations between the factors. On this subject a few hints are desirable, because the labour involved is liable to be materially influenced by the order of sequence adopted in the construction, The normal equations invariably take the form of (4), the coefficients on the diagonal containing summations of squares of the coefficients in the primary equations, while those above and below contain summations of products of the primary quantities, such that the coefficient of the pth in the gth equation is the same as that of the gth Xin the pth equation. In practice, as any Single angular error only enters a few of the primary equa- tions of condition, many of the coefficients vanish, both in the primary and in the normal equations ; and it is an object of great importance so to arrange the normal equations that most blanks shall occur above and fewest blanks between the significant values on each vertical line of coefficients ; in other words, the significant values above and below the diagonal should lie as closcly as possible to the diagonal, every value on which is always significant. This advantage is secured when the primary equations are arranged in groups in which each contains a number of angular errors in common and as many as possible of those entering the group on each side. Thus the arrangement must follow the natural succes- sion of the chains of triangles rather than the characteristics of the primary equations ; if, for example, all the side equations were grouped together, and all the latitude equations, and so on, great entanglement would arise in the solution of the normal equations, enormously increasing the labour and the chances of failure. The best arrangement was found to be to group the side and the

three geodetic equations of each circuit together in the order of sequence of the meridional chains of triangles, and then to introduce the side equations connecting base-lines between the groups with which they had most in common.

The following table (II.) gives the number of cquations of condi- tion and unknown quantities—the angular errors—in the five great sections of the triangulation, which were respectively included in the simultaneous general reductions and relegatcd to the subse- quent adjustments of each figure per se :—

Simultaneous. External Figural.

Equations. Equations. , ‘ aa |S a wa Section. is 3 F 2 g ye a 2 : : g Gos Olt es = oy et Be 5 a oD SASi ES | as | Ra] B {Side |\SP| FS | aa Bossi ewe | aA} ae] 8 | &

Cz”) 8 gis oe

1. N.W. Quad 23 550 | 1650 | 267 | 104 | 152 | 6 {| 761 | 110 2. S.E. Quad. 15 277 831 | 164 64 92 } 2) 476 68 3. N.E. Quad 49 ayy fl alyaiey | 1b 56 69 | 0 | 341 50 A LASO Uisters|sveieteis 303 909 | 192 79 | 101 | 2 | 547 77 5. S.W. Quad. ..| 24 172 516 83 32 52) 1 237 40

The magnitudes of the 2481 angular errors determined simultane- ously in the first two sections were very small, 2240 being under 0”-1, 205 between 0’ “1 and 0”°2, 33 between 0”°2 and 03, 2 between 0-3 and 0’°4, and 1 between 0”°4 and 0”°5. In the third section, which contained a number of old chains, executed with instruments inferior to the 2 and 8 foot theodolites, they were larger: 780 were under 0”‘1, 911 between 0”‘1 and 1:0, 27 between 1-0 and 2”°0, and 1 between 2’0 and 2’°1. Thus the corrections to the angles were generally very minute, rarely exceeding the theoretical probable errors of the angles, and therefore applicable without taking any liberties with the facts of observation.

taken as a

t—n

a hexagon, 2 for a quadrilateral, 2°5 for the network around the Sironj base-line, &c.

In framing the normal equations between the indeterminate

the factor thus being 1°5 for a triangle, 1°8 for 18. Theoretical Error of any Function of Angles of a Theoreti-

Geometrically corrected Triangulation.—The investigation = of such theoretical errors was no easy matter. When first}. 0″

: 36 ._ tions of essayed it was generally assumed by mathematicians 1M anoles,

factors \ for the final simultaneous reduction, it would have greatly added to the labour of the subsequent calculations if a separate weight had been given to each angle, as was done in the primary figural reductions ; this was obviously unnecessary, for theoretical requirements would now be amply satisfied by giving equal weights to all the angles of each independent figure. The mean weight that was finally adopted for the angles of each group was therefore taken as t OT

p being the modulus already indicated in section 12.

The second of the two processes for applying the method of miuimum squares having been adopted, the values of the errors y and z of the angles appertaining to any, the pth, triangle were finally expressed by the following equations, which are derived from (18) by substituting w for the reciprocal final mean weight as above determined :—

England that any attempt to exhibit the theoretical error by a purely algebraical process soon led to results of in- tolerable complexity, so that it was desirable to introduce numbers as soon as possible for every symbol except the absolute terms of the geometrical or primary equations of condition. But on continuing the algebraical process cer- tain relations were found to exist between the coefficients of the indeterminate factors in the normal equations of the minimum square method and the coefficients of the un- known quantities in the primary equations of condition, which

enormously simplified the process and led to a general algebraical expression of no great complexity ; it was also found that, the number of primary equations being n, the

labour of calculation by the formula was reduced to an nth of that involved by resorting at once to numbers.

Let F be any function whatever of the corrected angles (X,- 2), (X,— 2%,),... of a trigonometrical neue 3 let A= ax? a= ax,” 15 also let 2, t%,..., Symbols hitherto employed to represent the rela- tive reciprocal weights of the observed angles X,,X.,..., in future represent absolute measures of precision, the p.¢.” of the observed angles ; then the following formula expresses the p.e. of any func- tion of the corrected angles rigorously :—

62 ope 4at[fo.ul4,...[fn.u]4,} 6 yd Tlfe.uli[fo.u]Bat|fo.ul Bot… +[fr. ul Bp}

lala oP og 6 a

{[fa.u]No[fo.u] Ny +... +[fn.u] Nn} The symbols a, 6,...% have the same signification as in (8) to (6) of section 18. A, B,...Nare coefficients which must be de- termined in the process of solving the normal equations as follows :— Ag=A gen tAstot… +Anén Ao =Bi eat Brest. – + Bren

(20).

An=N lq + Nees + elete + Nnren where the coefficient represented by any two letters in one order is identical with that represented by the same letters in the reverse order; thus A,=V,. Hence to find the p.e. of any angle, as (X, —2), in a single triangle we have i 1 Fel, wel 4p= ee eer

all the other factors vanish, and

Uy Uy + Ug+ Ug To find the p.e. of the ratio R of either side to the base, — if

=sin (X,—- x)+sin (X, — 2%), then A= cot X, sin 1”, =P cot X, sin 1”, A=, and p.e2 of R

= Jie { U, cot?X, + U,cot?X,

p.e” of (X,-2%)=u, – =p.e” of X,—p.e.” of 2.

(uw, cot Xj — w,.cot X_)?

Uy + Ug + Ug =

When the function of the corrected angles is the ratio of the terminal to the initial side of an equilateral triangle or a regular quadrilateral or polygon (either of two sides being taken if the figure has an odd number of exterior sides), then, assuming all the angles to be of equal weight, we have the following values of the p.e.’s and the relative weights of the ratios :—

Figure. p.e. Weight. Figure. p.e. Weight. Triangle…... £824/u sin 1” 1-49 | Pentagon £1-21,/u sin 1” 0°68

Quadrilateral 1:00 “s 1:00 | Hexagon 1°29 AG 0°60 Trigon oe 1:05 >,» 0°90! Heptagon 1°41 ne 0°50 Tetragon … 115 ,, 0°75] Octagon ‘1°57 » Or41

In ordinary ground seven single triangles will span about as much as two hexagons and the weights of the terminal sides would be as twenty-one by the former to thirty by the latter. In a flat country two quadrilaterals would not span more than one hexagon, giving terminal side weights as five to six; but in hills a quadrilateral may span as much as any polygon and give a more exact side of con- tinuation. Thus in the Indian Survey polygons predominate in the plains and quadrilaterals in the hills.

The theoretical errors of the lengths and azimuths of the sides, and of the latitudes and longitudes of the stations, at the termini of the chains of triangles or at the circuit closings, might be calculated with the coefficients a, 6, and ce of x, y, and zin the circuit and base-line equations as the /’s, and the known p.e.’s of X, Y, and Z and the other data of the figural reductions. Such calculations are, however, much too laborious to be ordinarily under- taken. Thus the exactitude of a triangulation is very generally estimated merely on the evidence of the magni- tudes of the differences between the trigonometrical and the measured lengths of the base-lines ; for, though the

combined influence of angular precision and geometrical configuration is what really governs the precision of the results, it 1s not readily ascertainable, and is therefore generally ignored. But, when questions as to the intrinsic value of a triangulation arise, the theory of errors should

always be appealed to, and its intimations accepted rather than the evidence of base-line discrepancies, which if very small are certainly accidental, and if seemingly large may be no greater than what we should be prepared to expect. Good work has occasionally been redone unnecessarily, and inferior work upheld, because their merits were erroneously estimated. The following formule will be found useful in acquiring a fairly approximate knowledge of the magnitude of the errors which theory would lead us to expect, not only in side, but in latitude, longitude, and azimuth also, at the close of any chain of triangles. They indicate rigorously the p.e.’s at the terminal end of a chain of equilateral triangles of which all the angles have been measured and corrected and are of equal weight; the results may be made to serve for less symmetrical chains, including networks of varying weight, by the application of certain factors which can be estimated with fair pre- cision in each instance.

Let ¢ be the side length, ¢ the pe. of the angles, n the number of triangles, and R the ratio (here=1) of the terminal to the initial side, then

pe. of R=e sin URV2n p.e. of azimuth = eV} n

a = /2n3 + 302 +100

When the form of the triangles deviates much from the equi- angular, the pe. must be multiplied by a factor increasing up to 1°4 as the angles diminish from 60° to 30°, and a mean value of ¢ must be adopted. When the chain is double throughout, the p.e. must be diminished by a factor taking cognizance of the greater weight of compound figures than of single triangles. When the chain is composed of groups of angles measured with

different in- struments, a separate value of e must be employed for each group,

and the final result obtained fromV[p.c.2]. The pe. of R may be determined rigorously for any chain of single triangles, with angles of varying magnitudes and weights, by (22), with little labour of calculation.

19, Kelations between Theoretical Errors of Base-lines Theoreti and those of a Triangulation.—These relations have to be “4l@ investigated in order to ascertain whether the base-lines ina may be assumed to be errorless in the general reduction of ofa _ the triangulation ; being fallible quantities, their errors triange must be included among the unknown quantities to be in- !ation. vestigated simultaneously, if their respective p.e.’s differ sensibly, or if the p.e.’s of their ratios are not materially smaller than those of the corresponding trigonometrical ratios. By (23) the p.e. of the ratio of any two sides of an equilateral triangle is « sin 1”./2+3; but the pe. of the ratio of two base-lines of equal length and weight is » »/2, where 7 is the p.e. of either base-line ; thus weight of trigo- nometrical ratio: weight of base-line ratio: 3y?:«? sin? 1”, or as 3:1 when «= +0°3 and y= +1°5 millionth parts, which happens generally in the Indian triangulation. But the chains between base-lines were always composed of a large number of triangles, and the average weight of the base-line ratios was about eleven times greater by the direct linear measurements than by the triangulation, even when all the unascertainable constant or accidental errors —as from displacements of mark-stones—which might be latent in the latter were disregarded. Moreover, the base- lines were practically all of the same precision ; they were therefore treated as errorless, and the triangulation was made accordant with them.

If a base-line AD be divided at B and C into three equal sections connected together by equilateral triangles, and every angle has been measured with a p.e. =e, the p.e. of any trigonometrical ratio may be put =«.e sin 1”, x being a coefficient which has two values for each ratio,— the greater value when the triangulation has been carried along one flank of the line, the smaller when along both

p.e. of either coordinate=ec

1 For an investigation of these formule, see Appendix No. 3, vol. vii of Account of Operations of Great Trigonom. Survey, 1882.

–

CD | which is expressed as follows for logarithmic computation— alien = yz Mian Zoos! PS 1:83 and 1:23; for AB? 2°94 and 1°99; for RO? 9-16 and Sp 1l-n+l Pa 1:46. The val where m=2 sin? = cosec 1”, n=2 sin?PS sin? —, and : e values for the last two ratios show that, when . 2 ’ 3? the length of a base-line is determined partly by measure- | /=cot Psin dP; 1, m, and n are tabulated.

ment and partly by triangulation, the p.e. is smallest if 21. Calculation of Height and fefraction.—Let A and B Height the central section rather than an end section is measured, | (fig. 4) be any two points the nor- é B and re-

flanks, as follows :—for ratio is k= 1:41 and 1; for

AD

fraction.

muth erva- Ss.

If, with linear and angular p.e’s as in the Indian operations, a single section is measured once only, and the lengths of the other sections are derived from it by trian- gulation, the p.e. of the entire length will be greater than that of the whole line once measured ; it will be less if the

section is measured oftener than once and the mean taken. °

20. Azimuth Observations in connexion with Principal Triangulation.—These were invariably determined by

the repetitions on each zero were more numerous; the azimuthal levels were read and corrections applied to the star observations for dislevelment. As already mentioned (§ 17), the triangulation was not adjusted, in the course

mals at which meet at C, cutting the sea-level at pand ¢; take Dg = Ap, then BD is the difference of height; draw the tangents Aa and Bb at A and B, then aAB is the depression 4 of B at A and bBA that of A at B; jom AD, then BD is deter- mined from the triangle ABD.

et | |

‘measuring the horizontal angle between a referring mark | The triangulation gives the dis- 2%

and a circumpolar star, shortly before and after elonga- | tance between A and B at the sea- i

tion, and usually at both elongations in order to eliminate level, whence pqg=c; thus, putting “8

the error of the star’s place. Systematic changes of “face” Ap, the height of A above the sea-

and of the zero settings of the azimuthal circle were made | level, = #, and pC =r,

as in the measurement of the principal angles (§ 9); but | 4 D=e(1+2- a) aS ; (26) Fic. 4 * Tt 22 << u

Putting D, and Dz, for the actual depressions at A and B, S for the angle at A, usually called the “subtended angle,” and h for BD—

° . . 2 TT Ba} reecerseccesteseceesscs of the final simultaneous reduction, to the astronomically Te 7 5 ne determined azimuths, because they are liable to be vitiated and h=AD ~~ Dye (28).

by local attractions; but the azimuths observed at about fifty stations around the primary azimuthal station, which was adopted as the origin of the geodetic calculations, were

The angle at C being =D,+ Dg, S may be expressed in terms of asingle vertical angle and C when observations

referred to that station, through the triangulation, for have been taken at only one of the two points. ¢, comparison with the primary azimuth. A table was pre- | the “contained arc,” = ce” cosec 1” in seconds. Putting pared of the differences (observed at the origin — computed apy

from a distance) between the primary and the geodetic azi- muths ; the differences were assumed to be mainly due to the local deflexions of the plumb-line and only partially to error in the triangulation, and each was multiplied by the factor = tangent of latitude of origin P= tangent of latitude of comparing station’

in order that the effect of the local attraction on the azi-

muth observed at the distant station—which varies with the latitude and is=the deflexion in the prime vertical x the tangent of the latitude—might be converted to what it would have been had the station been situated in the same latitude as the origin. Each deduction was given a weight, w, inversely proportional to the number of tri- angles connecting the station with the origin, and the most probable value of the error of the observed azimuth at the origin was taken as a (24) ;

the value of x thus obtained was — 1““1.

The formule employed in the reduction of the azimuth observations were as follows. In the spherical triangle PZS, in which P is the pole, 7 the zenith, and S the star, the co-latitude P7 and the polar distance PS are known, and, as the angle at S is a right’ angle at the elongation, the hour angle and the azimuth at that time are found from the equations

cosP=tanPS cotPZ, cosZ=cosPS sinP.

The interval, 6P, between the time of any observation and that of the elongation being known, the corresponding azi- muthal angle, 8Z, between the two positions of the star at the times of observation and elongation is given rigor- ously by the following expression—tan 67

N Qsin?Z5P

~~ cot PS sinPZ sinP 41+ tan*PS coséP + sec2PS cotP sindP

j (25),

D’,, and D’, for the observed vertical angles, and ¢,, $s for the amounts by which they are affected by refraction, Da=D’au+ $a and Dp= D’y+ $6; $a and ¢ may differ in amount (see § 10), but as they cannot be separately ascer- tained they are always assumed to be equal; the hypo- thesis is sufficiently exact for practical purposes when both verticals have been measured under similar atmospheric conditions. The refractions being taken equal, the ob- served verticals are substituted for the true in (27) to find S, and the difference of height is calculated by (28); the third term within the brackets of (26) is usually omitted. The mean value of the refraction is deduced from the formula Pee a (29).

An approximate value is thus obtained from the observa- tions between the pairs of reciprocating stations in each district, and the corresponding mean “ coefficient of refrac- tion,” 6+ C, is computed for the district, and is employed when heights have to be determined from observations at a single station only. When either of the vertical angles is an elevation — Z must be substituted for D in the above expressions.!

IL TRAVERSING, AS A BASIS FOR SURVEY.—RECTANGULAR SPHERICAL CoORDINATES.

Traversing is a combination of linear and angular Travers- measures in equal proportions : the surveyor proceeds from 1s-

point to point, measuring the lines between them and at 0 i er SS

1 In topographical and levelling operations it is sometimes convenient to apply small corrections to observations of the height for curvature and refraction simultaneously. Putting d@ for the distance, r for the earth’s radius, and x for the coefficient of refraction, and expressing the distance and radius in miles and the correction to height in feet, then correction for curvature=3d?; correction for refraction= — 4×0”; cor- 2—4k L

each point the angle between the back and forward lines ; he runs his lines as much as possible over level and open ground, avoiding obstacles by working round them. The system is well suited for laying down roads, boundary- lines, and circuitous features of the ground, and is very generally resorted to for filling in the interior details of surveys based on triangulation. It has been largely em- ployed in certain districts of British India, which had to be surveyed in a manner to satisfy fiscal as well as topo- graphical requirements ; for, the village being the adminis- trative unit of the district, the boundary of every village had to be laid down, and this necessitated the survey of an enormous number of circuits. Moreover, the traverse system was better adapted for the country than a network of triangulation, as the ground was generally very flat and covered with trees, villages, and other obstacles to distant vision, and was also devoid of hills and other commanding points of view. The principal triangulation had been carried across it, but by chains executed with great diffi- culty and expense, and therefore at wide intervals apart, with the intention that the intermediate spaces should be provided with points as a basis for the general topo- graphy in some other way. A system of traverses was obviously the best that could be adopted under the cir- cumstances, as it not only gave all the village boundaries but was practically easier to execute than a network of minor triangulation.

Procedure of the Indian Survey.—The traverses are executed in minor circuits following the periphery of each village and in major circuits comprising groups of several villages ; the former are done with 4” to 6” theodolites and a single chain, the latter with 7” to 10” theodolites and a pair of chains, which are compared frequently with a standard. The main circuits are connected with every station of the principal triangulation

within reach. The meridian of the origin is determined by astronomical observations ; the angle at the origin between the meridian and the next station is measured, and then at each of the successive stations the angle between the immediately preceding and following stations ; summing these together, the “inclinations” of the lines between the stations to the meridian of the origin are successively determined. The distances between the stations, multiplied by the cosines and sines of the inclinations, give the distance of each station from the one preceding it, resolved in the directions parallel and perpendicular respectively to the meridian of the origin ; and the algebraical sums of these quantities give the corresponding rectangular coordinates of the successive stations relatively to the origin and its meridian. The area included in any circuit is expressed by the formula

area=half algebraical sum of products (a +2) (y2—4) (80), %, y, being the coordinates of the first, and x, y, those of the second station, of every line of the traverse in suc- cession round the circuit.

Of geometrical tests there are two, both applicable at the close of a circuit: the first is angular, viz., the sum of all the interior angles of the described polygon should be equal to twice as many right angles as the figure has sides, less four ; the second is linear, viz., the algebraical sum of the x coordinates and that of the y coordinates should each be=0. The astronomical test is this: at any station of the traverse the azimuth of a referring mark may be determined by astronomical observations; the in- clination of the line between the station and the referring mark to the meridian of the origin is given by the traverse ; the two should differ by the convergency of the meridians of the station and the origin. In practice the angles of the traverse are usually adjusted to satisfy their special geometrical and astronomical tests in the first instance,

SURVEYEIRG

[TRAVERSING,

and then the coordinates of the stations are calculated and adjusted by corrections applied to the longest, that the angles may be least disturbed, as no further corrections are given them.

Convergency of Meridians.—The exact value of the Conve. convergence, when the distance and azimuth of the second gency astronomical station from the first are known, is that of & me B-(x+A) of equation (11); but, as the first term is ‘ing sufficient for a traverse, we have

convergency = tan oe ‘ substituting x, the coordinate of the second station per- pendicular to the meridian of the origin, for ¢ sin A.

Adjustment of a System of Traverses to a Triangulation.— Adjust. The coordinates of the principal stations of a trigonometri- ment of cal survey are usually the spherical coordinates of latitude es and longitude ; those of a traverse survey are always rect- cull angular, plane for a small area but spherical for a large one. It is often necessary, therefore, for purposes of comparison and check at stations common to surveys of both descriptions, to convert either rectangular coordi- nates into latitudes and longitudes, or vice versa, in order that the errors of traverses may be dispersed by proportion over the coordinates of the traverse stations, if desired, or adjusted in the final mapping. The latter is generally all that is necessary, more particularly when the traverses are referred to successive trigonometrical stations as origins, as the operations are being extended, in order to prevent any large accumulation of error. Similar conversions are also frequently necessary in map projections. The method of effecting them will now be indicated.

Transformation of Latitude and Longitude Coordinates Tran into Rectangular Spherical Coordinates, and vice versa.—Let ation A and B be any two points, Aa the meridian |e coon of A, Bd the parallel of latitude of B; then Ab, Bb will be their differences in latitude and longitude; from B draw BP perpendi- cular to da; then AP, BP will be the rect- angular spherical coordinates of B relatively to A, Put BP=2,Al=y, theanc > =aamd the arc Bb, the difference of longitude, =; also let Ag, Az, and Xy be the latitudes of A, B, and the point P, py the radius of curvature of the meridian, and vy the normal termin- ating in the axis minor for the latitude A»; and let p, be the radius of curvature for the latitude 4(Ag+A,). Then, when the rectangular coordinates are given, we have, taking A as the origin, the latitude of which is known,

Ho: 5:

i tan A, cosec 1”; 2p p = :

x = cose 1” — N; w=— sec(A,+ 47) cosec 1” Po Yp

Np=Aat ¥Y eosecl’; y= cS 31). Ne ~~X And, when the latitude and longitude are given, we have! 7 (3)2 sin 2), sin 1” y=p{o—da+ sin 1” X= Wy COS (Ap + 4) sin 1” Graphic Method of Determining the Coordinates of an Un~~ Coordi visited Point observed from Several Stations.—When a hill ua peak or other prominent object has been observed from a ae . number of stations whose coordinates are already fixed, = the converging rays may be projected graphically, and from an examination of their several intersections the most probable position of the object may be obtained almost as accurately as by calculations by the method of least squares,

1 In the Indian Survey, tables are employed for these calculations which give the value of 1” of arc in feet on the meridian, and on each parallel of latitude, at intervals of 5’ apart ; also a corresponding table of arc-versines (Pb) of spheroidal arcs of parallel (Bb) 1° in length, from which the are-versines for shorter or longer arcs are obtained pro- portionally to the squares of the arcs; x is taken as the difference of longitude converted into linear measure.

which are very laborious and out of place for the deter- mination of a secondary point. The following is a de- scription of the application of this method to points on a plane surface in the calculations of the Ordnance Survey. Lets, %, .. . be stations whose rectangular coordinates, %y, Vo… perpendicular, and y,, Ya, ... parallel, to the meri- dian of the origin are given; let a,,a,,...be the bearings —here the direction-inclinations with the meridian of the origin—of any point P, as observed at the several stations; and let p be an approximate position of P, with coor- dinates %p, Yp, as determined by graphical projection on a district map or by rough calculation. Construct a diagram of the rays converging around p, by taking a point to represent p and drawing two lines through it at right angles to each other to indicate the directions of north, south, east, and west. Calculate accurately (yp — y,) tan a, and compare with (zp —,); the difference will show how far the direction of the ray from s, falls to the east

or west of p. Or calculate (wp —x,) cota, and compare with (Yp— ¥,) to find how far the direction falls to the north or south of p. Set off the distance on the corresponding axis of », and through the point thus fixed draw the direction a, with a com- N

mon protract- or, All the other rays around p may be drawn inw like manner ; they will in- tersect each other in a number of points, the centre of which may be adopted as the most prob- able position of P. The co- ordinates of P will then be readily obtained from those of p + the distances on the meridianand perpendicular. In the annexed diagram (fig. 6) P is supposed to have been observed from five sta- tions, giving as many intersecting rays, (1, 1), (2, 2),...5 there are ten points of intersection, the mean position of which gives the true position of P, the assumed position being p. The advantages claimed for the method are that, the bearings being independent, an erroneous bearing may be redrawn without disturbing those that are correct; similarly new bearings may be introduced without disturb- ing previous work, and observations from a large number of stations may be readily utilized, whereas, when calcula- tion is resorted to, observations in excess of the minimum number required are frequently rejected because of the labour of computing them.

Fig. 6.

Til. Leve.xie.

evelling. Levelling is the art of determining the relative heights of points on the surface of the ground as referred to a hypothetical surface which cuts the direction of gravity everywhere at right angles. When a line of instrumental levels is commenced at the sea-level, a series of heights is determined corresponding to what would be found by perpendicular measurements upwards from the surface of water communicating freely with the sea in underground channels; thus the line traced indicates a hypothetical prolongation of the surface of the sea inland, which is ‘everywhere conformable to the earth’s curvature.

me

1 For fuller details and an application to spherical surfaces, see Account of the Graphic Method of the Ordnance Survey, by J. O'Farrell, London, 1886.

The trigonometrical determination of the relative heights of points at known distances apart, by the measurements of their mutual vertical angles,—as already described in section I.—is a method of levelling. But the method to which the term "levelling" is always applied is that of the direct determination of the differences of height from the readings of the lines at which graduated staves, held vertically over the points, are cut by the horizontal plane which passes through the eye of the observer. Each method has its own advantages. The former is less accu- rate, but best suited for the requirements of a general geographical survey, to obtain the heights of all the more prominent objects on the surface of the ground, whether accessible or not. The latter may be conducted with extreme precision, and is specially valuable for the deter- mination of the relative levels, however minute, of easily accessible points, however numerous, which succeed each other at short intervals apart; thus it is very generally undertaken part passu with geographical surveys, to furnish lines of level for ready reference as a check on the accuracy of the trigonometrical heights. In levelling with staves the measurements are always taken from the horizontal plane which passes through the eye of the observer; but the line of levels which it is the object of the operations to trace is a curved line, everywhere conforming to the normal curvature of the earth's surface, and deviating more and more from the plane of reference as the distance from the station of observation increases. Thus, either a correction for curvature (see footnote, page 705) must be applied to every staff reading, or the instrument must be set up at equal distances from the staves; the curvature correction, being the same for each staff, will then be eliminated from the difference of the readings, which will thus give the true difference of level of the points on which the staves are set up.

Levelling is an essentially simple operation ; but, as it has to be repeated very frequently in executing a long line of levels—say seven times on an average in every mile—it must be conducted with every precaution against

errors of various kinds, instrumental and personal, some accidental and tending to cancel each other, others systematic and cumulative. Instrumental errors arise when the visual axis of the telescope is not perpendicular to the axis of rotation, and when the focusing tube does not move truly parallel to the visual axis on a change of focus. The first error is eliminated, and the second avoided, by placing the instrument at equal dis- tances from the staves ; and, as this procedure has also the advan- tage of eliminating the corrections for both curvature and refraction, it should invariably be adopted. Errors of staff readings should be guarded against by having the staves graduated on both faces, but differently figured, so that the observer may not be biassed to repeat an error of the first reading in the second. The staves of the Indian survey have one face painted white with black divisions —feet, tenths, and hundredths—from 0 to 10, the other black with white divisions from 5°55 to 15°55. Deflexion from horizontality may either be measured and allowed for by taking the readings of the ends of the bubble of the spirit-level and applying corresponding cor- rections to the staff readings, or be eliminated by setting the bubble to the same position on its scale at the reading of the second staff as at that of the first, both being equidistant from the observer.

Certain errors are liable to recur in a constant order and to accumulate to a considerable magnitude, though they may be too minute to attract notice at any single station, as when the work is carried on under a uniformly sinking or rising refraction—from morning to midday or from midday to evening—or when the instru- ment takes some time to settle down on its bearings after being set up for observation. They may be eliminated (i.) by alternating the order of observation of the staves, taking the back staff first at one station and the forward first at the next; (ii) by working in a circuit, or returning over the same line back to the origin ; (iii.) by dividing a line into sections and reversing the direction of operation in alternate sections. Cumulative error, not eliminable by working in a circuit, may be caused when there is much northing or southing in the direction of the line, for then the sun’s light will often fall endwise on the bubble of the level, illuminating the outer edge of the rim at the nearer end and the inner edge at the further end, and so biassing the observer to take scale readings of edges which are not equidistant from the centre of the bubble ; this introduces a tendency to raise the south or depress the north

ends of lines of level in the northern hemisphere. On long lines, the employment of a second observer, working independently over the same ground as the first, station by station, is very desirable. The great lines are usually carried over the main roads of the country, a number of “bench marks” being fixed for future reference. In the Ordnance Survey of Great Britain lines have been carried across from coast to coast, in such a manner that the level of any common cross- ing point may be found by several independent lines. Of these points there are 166 in England, Scotland, and Wales; the dis- crepancies met with at them were adjusted simultaneously by the method of minimum squares.

Sea-Level.—The sea-level is the natural datum plane for levelling operations, more particularly in countries border- ing on the ocean. The earliest surveys of coasts were made for the use of navigators, and, as it was considered very important that the charts should everywhere show the minimum depth of water which a vessel would meet with, low water of spring-tides was adopted as the datum. But this does not answer the requirements of a land survey, because the tidal range between extreme high and low water differs greatly at different points on coast-lines. Thus the generally adopted datum plane for land surveys is the mean-sea level, which, if not absolutely uniform all the world over, is much more nearly so than low water. Tidal observations have been taken at nearly fifty points on the coasts of Great Britain, which were connected by levelling operations ; the local levels of mean sea were found to differ by larger magnitudes than could fairly be attributed to errors in the lines of level, having a range of 12 to 15 inches above or below the mean of all at points on the open coast, and more in tidal rivers! But the general mean of the coast stations for England and Wales was practically identical with that for Scotland. The observations, how- ever, were seldom of longer duration than a fortnight, which is insufficient for an exact determination of even the short period components of the tides, and ignores the annual and semi-annual components, which occasionally attain con- siderable magnitudes. The mean-sea levels at Port Said in the Mediterranean and at Suez in the Red

Sea have been found to be identical, and a similar identity is said to exist in the levels of the Atlantic and the Pacific Oceans on the opposite coasts of the isthmus of Panama. This is in favour of a uniform level all the world over 3 but, on the other hand, lines of level carried across the continent of Europe make the mean-sea level of the Mediterranean at Marseilles and Trieste from 2 to 5 feet below that of the North Sea and the Atlantic at Amsterdam and Brest,—a result which it is not easy to explain on mechanical prin- ciples. In India various tidal stations on the east and west coasts, at which the mean-sea level has been deter- mined from several years' observations, have been connected by lines of level run along the coasts and across the conti- nent ; the differences between the results were in all cases due with greater probability to error generated in levelling over lines of great length than to actual differences of sea- level in different localities.

may be some 560 feet higher at Kurrachee than at Cape Comorin; but, on the other hand, the Indian pendulum operations have shown that there isa deficiency of density under the Himalayas and an increase under the bed of the ocean, which may wholly compensate for the excess of the mountain masses and deficiency of the ocean, and leave the surface undisturbed. If any bumps and hollows exist, they cannot be measured instrumentally ; for the instru- mental levels will be affected by the local attractions pre- cisely as is the sea-level, and will thus invariably show level surfaces even should there be considerable deviations from the geometrical figure.

IV. Survey or IntER1or Devan.

(1) General Principles.—We have seen that the skeleton General framework of a survey may be either a triangulation or a Ptu- system of traverses; very generally it is a combination of "PE!

both. The method of filling in the details is necessarily influenced to some extent by the nature of the framework, but it depends mainly on the magnitude of the scale and the requisite degree of minutiz. In all instances

the principal triangles and circuit traverses have to be broken down into smaller ones, to furnish a sufficient number of fixed points and lines for the subsequent operations. The filling in may be performed wholly by linear measurements or wholly by direction intersections, but is most frequently effected by both linear and angular measures, the former taken with chains and tapes and offset poles, the latter with small theodolites, sextants, optical squares, or other reflecting instruments, magnetized needles, prismatic compasses, and plane tables. When the scale of a survey is large, the linear and angular measures are usually recorded on the spot in a field-book and afterwards plotted in office ; when small they are sometimes drawn on the spot on a plane table and the field-book is dispensed with.

(2) The Scale.—In every country the scale is generally Scale.

expressed by the ratio of some fraction or multiple of the smallest to the largest national units of length, but some- times by the fraction which indicates the ratio of the length of a line on the paper to that of the corresponding line on the ground. The latter form is obviously preferable, being international and independent of the various units of length adopted by different nations. See table of maps and scales under Map, vol. xv. p. 522. In the Ordnance Survey of Great Britain and Ireland both forms of expression are adopted, the smaller scales being 1 inch and 6 inches to a mile for provinces and counties, the larger zAjq for parishes and 4, for towns. In the Indian Survey the standard topographical scale is 1 inch to a mile, diminishing to 4 and } inch for geographical reconnaissance, and rising by multiples of 2 to higher scales, of which the greatest, for other than city surveys, is 32 inches, for cadastral purposes. In both surveys the double unit of the foot and the Gunter’s link (= 6,th of

ee er sea-level, however, may not coincide everywhere | g foot) is employed, the former invariably in the triangu- a with the geometrical figure which most closely represents lation, the latter very generally in the traversing and filling P

the earth’s surface, but may be raised or lowered, here and there, under the influence of local and abnormal at- tractions, presenting an equipotential surface—an ellipsoid

in, because of its convenience in calculations and measure- ments of area, a square chain of 100 Gunter’s links being exactly one-tenth of an acre.

or spheroid of revolution slightly deformed by bumps and hollows—which Bruns calls a “geoid.” Archdeacon Pratt has shown that, under the combined influence of the positive attraction of the Himalayan Mountains and the negative attraction of the Indian Ocean, the sea-level

(8) Ordnance Survey Methods.—All linear measures are made Ord- with the Gunter’s chain, all angular with small theodolites only ; nance neither magnetized nor reflecting instruments nor plane tables Survey are ever employed, except in hill sketching, when bearings are methods. taken with the prismatic compass. As a rule the filling in is done by triangle-chaining only ; traverses with theodolite and chain are occasionally resorted to, but only when it is necessary to work round woods and hill tracts across which right lines cannot be carried. ;

(a) Detail Surveying by Triangles—This is based on the points Detail of the minor triangulation. The sides are first chained perfectly survey- straight, all the points where the lines of interior detail cross the ing by sides being fixed ; the alignment is effected with a small theodolite, triangles; and marks are established at the crossing points and at any other

1 In tidal estuaries and rivers the mean-water level rises above the mean-sea level as the distance from the open coast-line increases ; for . instance, in the Hooghly river, passing Calcutta, there is a rise of 10 inches in 42 miles between Sagar (Saugor) Island at the mouth of the river and Diamond Harbour, and a further rise of 20 inches in 43 miles between Diamond Harbour and Kidderpur, F

DETAIL. |

points on the sides where they may be of use in the subsequent operations. The surveyor is given a diagram of the triangulation, but no side lengths, as the accuracy of his chaining is tested by comparison with the trigonometrical values. Then straight lines are carried across the intermediate detail between the points estab- lished on the sides; they constitute the principal ‘‘ cutting up or split lines”; their crossings of detail

are marked in turn and straight lines are run between them. The process is continued until a sufficient number of lines and marks have been established on the ground to enable all houses, roads, fences, streams, railways, canals, rivers, boundaries, and other detail to be conveniently measured up to and fixed. Perpendicular offsets are limited to eighty and twenty links for the respective scales of 6 inches to a mile and sys.

(b) Detail Surveying by Traverses.—When a considerable area has to be thus treated it is divided into a number of blocks of con- venient size, bounded by roads, rivers, or parish boundaries, and a ‘traverse on the meridian of the origin” 1s carried round the peri- phery of each block. Commencing at a trigonometrical station, the theodolite is set to circle reading 0° 0’ with the telescope point- ing to the north, and at every “forward” station of the traverse the circle is set to the same reading when the telescope is pointed at the ‘‘ back” station as was obtained at the back station when the telescope was pointing to the forward one. When the circuit is completed and the theodolite again put up at the origin and set on the last back station with the appropriate circle reading, the circle reading, with the telescope again pointed to the first forward station, will be the same as at first, ifno error has been committed. This system establishes a convenient check on the accuracy of the operations and enables the angles to be readily pro- tracted on a system of lines parallel to the meridian of the origin. Asa further check the traverse is connected with all contiguous trigonometrical stations by measured angles and distances. Tra- verses are frequently carried between the points already fixed on the sides of the minor triangles; the initial side is then adopted, instead of the meridian, as the axis of coordinates for the plotting, the tclescope being pointed with circle reading 0° 0’ to either of the trigonometrical stations at the extremities of the side.

(ce) Plotting and Examination.—The plotting is done from the field-books of the surveyors by a separate agency. Its accuracy is tested by examination on the ground, when all necessary addenda are made. The examiner—who should be both surveyor, plotter, and draftsman—mounts the plot on his sketching block, and verifies the accuracy of the detail by intersections and productions and occasional direct mcasurements, and generally endeavours to cause the details under examination to prove the accuracy of each other

rather than to obtain direct proof by remeasurement. He fixes conspicuous trees and delineates the woods, footpaths, rocks, preci- pices, steep slopes, embankments, &c., and supplies the requisite information regarding minor objects—whether pit, shaft, level, spring, well, conduit, weir, quarry, refuse heap, waste, orchard, stack- yard, railway, canal, manufacturing and mineral works, viaducts, bridges, tramways, plantations, &c.—to enable a draftsman to make a perfect representation according to the scale of the map. In exaniining a coast-line he delineates the foreshore and sketches the strike and dip of the stratified rocks. In tidal rivers he ascertains and marks the highest points to which the ordinary tides flow. The examiner on the 25°344 inch scale (=z;4yy) is required to give all necessary information regarding the parcels of ground of differ- ent character—whether arable, pasture, wood, moor, moss, sandy —defining the limits of each on a separate tracing if necessary. He has also to distinguish between turnpike, parish, and occupa- tion roads, to collect all names, and to furnish notes of military, baronial, and ecclesiastical antiquities to enable them to be ap- propriately represented in the final maps. The latter are sub- jected to a double examination,—first in the office, secondly on the ground ; they are then handed over to the officer in charge of the levelling to have the levels and contour lines inserted, and finally to the hill sketchers, whose duty it is to make an artistic representa- tion of the features of the ground.

(4) Indian Survey Methods—All filling in is invariably done by plane-tabling on a basis of points previously fixed ; the methods . differ simply in the extent to which linear measures are introduced to supplement the direction rays of the plane table. When the scale of the survey is small, direct measurements of distance are rarely made and the filling is usually done wholly by direction intersections, which fix all the principal points, and by eye-sketching ; but as the scale is increased linear measures with chains and offset poles are introduced to the extent that may be desirable. A sheet of drawing paper is mounted on cloth over the face of the plane table ; the points, previously fixed by triangulation or otherwise, are projected on it —the collateral meridians and parallels, or the rectangular coordinates, when these are more convenient for employment than the spherical, having first been drawn ; the plane table is then ready for use. Operations are commenced at a fixed point by aligning with the sight rule on another fixed point, which brings the meridian line of the table on that of

the station. The magnetic needle may now be placed on the table and a position assigned to it for future reference. Rays are drawn from the station point on the table to all conspicuous objects around with the aid of the sight rule. The table is then taken to other fixed points, and the process of ray-drawing is repeated at each ; thus a number of objects, some of which may become available as stations of observation, are fixed. Additional stations may be established by setting up the table on a ray, adjusting it on the back station—that from which the ray was drawn—and then ob- taining a cross intersection with the sight rule laid on some other fixed point, also by interpolating between three fixed points situated around the observer. The magnetic needle may not be relied on for correct orientation, but is of service in enabling the table to be set so nearly true at the outset that it has to be very slightly altered afterwards. The error in the setting is indicated by the rays from the surrounding fixed points intersecting in a small triangle instead of a point, and a slight change in azimuth suffices to reduce the triangle to a point, which will indicate the position of the station exactly. Azimuthal error being less apparent on short than on long lines, interpolation is best performed by rays drawn from near points, and checked by rays drawn to distant points, as the latter show most strongly the magnitude of any error of the primary magnetic setting. In this way, and by self-verificatory traverses “fon the back ray” between fixed points, plane-table stations are established over the ground at appropriate intervals, depending on the scale of the survey ; and from these stations all surrounding objects which the scale permits of being shown are laid down on the table, sometimes by rays only, sometimes by a single ray and a measured distance. The general configuration of the ground is delineated simultaneously.

Checking and Examination. —Various methods are followed. Checking For large scale work in plains it is customary to run arbitrary lines and

across it and make an independent survey of the belt of ground to a distance of a few chains on either side for comparison with the original survey ; the

smaller scale hill topography is checked by examination from commanding points, and also by traverses run across the finished work on the table.

V. REPRESENTATION OF GROUND.

The master lines of ground are the main ridges and water-partings of the hills, the watercourses, and the hori- zontal contour lines of the coasts; the subordinate lines are those which define the undulations and minor features falling between the low-lying plains and the crests of the hills. These lines must first be laid down on a horizontal projection to fix the dimensions of cach feature of the ground, after which the slopes must be indicated with sufficient relief and character to present a true picture of the corrugations of surface. In ancient maps the hills are represented as seen against the sky in profile by a spectator standing on the ground below at some distance off. This system of “natural representation,” as it was called, was serviceable in enabling persons looking at the hills from the quarter from which they had been sketched to identity them readily, for which reason such views of distant inland hills are still commonly given on the margins of marine charts of coast-lines for the assistance of navigators. But, when all other objects except the hills are shown in a map by their horizontal projections, hills represented in perspec- tive are false to their surroundings, and misleading to all who approach them from other directions than that of the adopted point of view, for the vertical projection of the profile is practically turned over and confused with the horizontal plane. Hence in course of time hills came to be drawn as if seen from a high bird’s-eye point of view, the position of which was shifted until at last the point of sight was supposed to be vertically over them ; thus the evils of the perspective system were diminished, whilst something of natural representation was still preserved. About the end of the 18th century the perspective and the bird’s-eye systems gave way to the true method of indicating the forms of hills, viz., by their horizontal projections, like all the other details of the ground, and by adding the requisite shading to bring every feature into proper relief.

examina- tion.

Main lines of ground.

Hill-Shading.—There are two rival methods of hill-shad- Hill- ing,—one by horizontal contours, the other by vertical shading.

hachures. A contour being the line of intersection of a hill

Scale of shade.

by a horizontal plane, contour lines indicate the markings which would be made by the successive risings of a flood to different levels above the sea; vertical hachures indicate the directions which the particles of a volume of water, equally disseminated over the top of a hill, would naturally take in running down the sides and slopes. The most perfect representation of ground is obtained when the shade lines, whether horizontal or vertical, are sufficiently close and well graduated in tone and intensity to imitate good mezzotint shading in Indian ink. A good effect may be and is frequently produced by assuming light to fall on the hills obliquely from a specific direction, illumi- nating them on one side and throwing the reverse slopes into shadow. But this has the disadvantage of giving similar slopes different intensities of shade according to their position with reference to the assumed direction of the light ; on the other hand, vertical lighting, which gives the same intensity to the same slope wherever situated, fails in relief and perspicacity. A commission of citizens appointed by the republican Government of France in 1803 to formulate rules on the subject of topography, con- demned the representation of hills in demi-perspective as absurd, but approved the system of oblique side-light ; it also condemned contours, except for engineering works, and recommended vertical hachures, under the idea that the slope lines of the fall of water represent a material effect of which the eye is witness every moment, and recalls the general cause, if not of the formation, at least of the figure and characteristics, of the mountains.

Scale of Shade.—For military purposes it is very desir- able that maps should be so drawn as to enable the angles of inclination of all slopes to be readily ascertained, with a view to determining what portions of the ground are suited for the manceuvres of each of the three arms,—infan- try, cavalry, and artillery. Thus military topographers of different nationalities have

proposed a variety of scales to regulate the thickness and distance apart of the shade lines, and generally the proportion of black to white, for different angles of slope, that the map may convey to the mind as accurate a knowledge of the slopes of the ground as of the horizontal outlines. All slopes, however, are not of equal practical importance, but only those which are of most common occurrence and most liable to be gone over by men and horses and wheeled vehicles, and their inclina- tion rarely exceeds 25° ; consequently it is of most import- ance to be able to distinguish variations of slope below that angle: it is occasionally desirable to know the sharper slopes up to 45° or 50°, but greater inclinations are com- paratively of rare occurrence and unimportant. Now in a true scale of shade the intensity increases with the in- clination from 0° to 90°; thus, putting black + white =1, the proportion of black to white for any inclination ¢ by a scale of cosines will be black = 1—cos 7, white=cos7. But that scale does not sufficiently accentuate the lower in- clinations, which are the most important, and have there- fore to be dealt with more emphatically; this has led to the introduction of a variety of conventional scales, each with the special characteristics which commended themselves to its author. Major Lehmann of the German army supposed light to be admitted in parallel vertical rays and gave the horizontal plane the fullest light, because the reflected coincides with the vertical ray; at an inclination of 45° the reflected ray is perfectly horizontal, and this slope was therefore least illumined. Disregarding all greater slopes, he placed 45° at the head of his scale and represented it by absolute black ; the scale was divided into nine equal parts of 5° each, from 0° to 45°, up to which the illumination varies inversely as the angle of inclination. General van Gorkum of the Netherlands army improved on Lehmann’s system : he adopted certain groups of contours

arranged according to the slope, making the vertical distances between the contours equal in each group but greater in the higher groups, and between the contours he drew vertical hachures the lengths of which showed by reference to a scale the angles of slope. His lowest group included all angles

up to 25°, the vertical distance between the contours being so regulated with reference to the scale of the map as to permit the draftsman to represent the slopes without inconveniently long hachures. For higher angles he doubled and trebled the vertical interval of his contours and the thickness of his hachures. Thus the relative altitudes of any required points might be deduced with comparative facility by noting the thickness and counting the number of the vertical hachures between them. In this respect the system satisfies the require- ments of a military map, but the effect is unpleasing and unsuggestive of hill forms. In 1828 a second French com- mission, having Laplace for its president, was appointed to report on topographical drawing. It reversed the decision of the first commission in favour of oblique side light, as being difficult to execute and inaccurate in giving different intensities to the same angles of slope facing differently ; and, after trying various scales of shade, it determined to increase the intensity in proportion to the sines of double the angles of inclination diminished by 4, which gives a more rapid increase of shade for the gentle than the steep slopes. In subsequent instructions of the “depdt de la guerre” the proportion of black to white is fixed at one and a half times the angle of slope. In England various scales of shade have been proposed, by Colonel Scott and Captain Webber of the Royal Engineers, and by the Council of Military Education. Colonel Scott’s scale is interesting as having been derived from the average of measurements taken from the best examples of hill sketch- ing in the Ordnance and other surveys, whereas all the others were deduced from a conventional application of geometrical principles. The following table (IIL) gives the several scales :-—

Table showing the Proportion of Black to White on any Unit of Area, in Horizontal Plan.

Angle 5 O 5 Council ? Seale of Major First ; Second | Colonel} Captain! of Mili- Slo, Cosines. | Lehmann. | French. | French. | Scott. | Webber. |tary Edu- ope: cation. Be | Wal B. | W.. | B. | W. | B. |W. | B. | We | BS | AW: BS ve

45° *293 |°707 |1°000 0-000 | 600 | °400 |°675 |-325 |-708 |-292 |“803}197/ .. | .. 85° *181}°819} °780, °220)-512 |-488]°425}°575] .. | .. | °724]°276|-640| -360 25° “094 |°906 | °560| °440/°380 |°620 |-375 |°625

|-339 |-661 |°550 1-450 | 457 | 543 20° 060 |-940| °450| °550}°350 |°650 |-300 |°700 |°255 |-745 |°455 }°545 |°333 | 667 5? 034 |°966 | °340| °660)-286 |-714 1-225 |-775 |°189 |-811 |°338 |°662 |-254 | °746 10° °015| °985| *230| °770)|°209 |-791 |°150 }°850 |°126 |-874 |-250 |-750 |-160 | °840 ia 007 (“993 | °155) °845/°155 {845 |°105 |-895 |°088 |-917 |*173|°827| .. | .. a °004/-996 | °120) °880}-110|°890 |-075 |-925 |-055 |-945 |°108 |°892 |-082} -918 4° *002|-998| °077| °923]-095 |-905 |-060 |-940 |-049 |-951|-065|-935| .. | .. ge 001 |°999| “066, °934|°073 |-927 |-045|-955 |°038 |-962 |-033 |-967 |°047 | -953 “001 |“999 044, *956}°050 |°950 |-030 }-970 | 025 975 |014 “986 |°025 | 975

Of late years the system of shading by lines has been Mezzo- abandoned for the English army, and a method of repre- tint senting slopes by mezzotint shading over a few governing hi contour lines, laid down by actual survey, has been intro- duced instead. The effect aimed at is a transparent shade, dark in proportion to the steepness of the ground represented ; its object is to give body and expression to the contours and to explain and develop minor features of the ground which may lie between them. This style of shading, being distinct from all line drawing, may be applied over the most crowded details without causing confusion, such as would be produced by hachure shad- ing. The contours are indicated by continuous red lines of constant thickness, strong enough to be everywhere visible through the shading, which is effected by applying lead with a soft pencil over the parts where it is wanted, and then rubbing it in firmly with a piece of chamois

leather folded into a small pad. No pencil marking is allowed ; lightening is done with india-rubber ; the shading is finally fixed with a wash of thin gum-water.

It is to be noted that the several scales of shade above given were devised for military maps to be drawn on a scale of not less than 4 inches to the mile and possibly much greater. The harshness and mannerism to which all line-shading by rule is liable are of less importance in maps of small areas represented on large scales than on maps of large areas on small scales. In the former the sacrifice of pictorial effect is more than compensated by the additional information regarding the slopes of the ground ;

the field sketches ; and in drawin tween light and shade and sateen light from a corner of the map to give a stronger relief, and to attract the eye to the highest points and enable it to distinguish readily the higher from the lower ground. His general aim is to produce a more pictorial and less mechanical study of the ground than is supplied by the field sketches. Many exquisite maps have been thus produced and afterwards engraved ; see sheets 32, 38, 38, 53, and 64 of Scotland, 38 and 48 of England, 75 of Wales, 93, 94,191, and 192 of Ireland. These sheets, however, though admirable specimens of engraving, fall short of the original drawings in tone and relief, for in them the hill-shading is necessarily shown by line-etching, and it does not produce such effective contrasts and gradations of light and shade as the original brush work.!

he increases the contrasts be-

Delineation by Instrumental Contouring.—A very precise Instru-

knowledge of the configuration of surface may be acquired mental contour:

in the latter any attempt to introduce so much informa- tion would tend to crowd the map objectionably, and con-

fuse the vertical with the horizontal details. The smaller the scale of a map of hill country the more necessary it is to abandon mechanical conventionalism, and to aim at achieving an artistic representation which will convey an immediate and accurate impression of the general character of the ground.

In India the topography has been mainly executed on scales of or less than 1 inch=1 mile and rarely exceeding 2 inches, and, as the range of altitude varies considerably in different parts of the country, from plains and undulations little above the sea-level to mountains rising to an altitude of 29,000 feet, scales of shade were long deemed wholly unsuitable for employment. The higher mountains had necessarily to be brought into

prontinence over the lower by giving them a darker shade than was due simply to their slopes, and similarly the elevated plateaus had to be more lightened and illuminated than the low-lying plains. But in course of time, as the number of hands employed in the operations increased more rapidly than the available supply of artistic draughtsmen, the in- troduction of a scale of shade became necessary, in order that the multitude of workers might be put more nearly on a par with the few. For men who have been accustomed to associate a certain depth of shade with a certain angle of slope will work together within narrower limits of error and divergence than if left entirely to their own unaided judgment and untutored proclivities. The field sketchers should therefore learn to work on a system which gives every hachure line a definite meaning, so that their sketches may be rightly interpreted and appropriately translated and ren- dered in the final representation of the ground, when it is the duty of the draughtsman to enhance the tone of the map as much as possible while maintaining its truthfulness.

Ordnance Survey System of Delineating Grownd.—As a rule the features of the ground are sketched in the field on the 6-inch scale, and afterwards reduced and published on the 1-inch scale. The Highlands of Scotland were sketched partly on the l1-inch and partly on the 2-inch scale; in Ireland the 1-inch scale only was used; and this scale is now being adopted for hill sketching in England and Wales. In the parts where the 6-inch scale was used. the ground was first contoured instrumentally ; a plan of the con- tours and of all surveyed outlines was supplied to the sketcher, who proceeded to insert the hill features with the aid of a prismatic compass, protractor, plotting scale, and a ‘“‘hill-sketcher’s scale,” graduated to show the horizontal intervals betwcen the contours which correspond to various angles of inclination from 0° to 45°. He was required to delineate slopes up to 45° by horizontal hachures, and slopes beyond 45° by vertical hachures. The thickness and number of the strokes, the relation to light and shade, and the character of the touch were left to the skill and experience of the sketcher. The introduction of scales of shade adapted to various inclinations and altitudes was frequently mooted, with a view to securing greater uniformity ; but no such scale was adopted, for it was found that, though at first different workmen produced different results, long practice and constant comparison, together with the aid derived from the instrumental

contours, effected all desirable uniformity. Thus in good sketches it was found that the maximum breadth of stroke used in the representation of very steep mountain slopes was 2; inch, and the minimum used in low and nearly flat country, sty inch, also that the average proportions of light to shade were 1 to 3 at the maximum and 25 to 1 at the minimum inclinations. In the field sketches the light is supposed to fall vertically, and all slopes of like altitude and inclination are similarly expressed. “he 6-inch sketches are reduced to the l-inch scale for publica- tion by an artist working with Indian ink and the camel-hair brush on an impression in outline of the l-inch map. He makes a careful study of the several sketches which he has to combine together, in order to determine which features should be retained and which omitted in the reduction, and he divides the ground into zones of different altitude to guide him in giving a strength of shade proportioned to the altitude rather than to the slope as in

by carrying true contour lines over the ground and pro-. jecting them on the map of the survey. But the contours

do not give a true representation of the ground, for they

seldom represent actual lines on the surface, as do the lines on the map which indicate roads, watercourses, walls, enclosures, &c.; they give, however, a conventional representation which is sufficient per se for the engineer and the expert, and they furnish guiding lines for all shading, whether by hachures or mezzotint, which may be subsequently executed to produce an artistic delinea-

tion of the features of the ground. In instrumental con- touring we have first to decide on the vertical intervals to be maintained between the contours. They depend on the scale of the survey and the nature of the ground. In the Ordnance Survey they are made as small as from 5 to 10 feet, when special plans on large scales are being pre- pared for engineering requirements ; but for the general maps they are 50 feet up to an elevation of 100 feet above the sea-level, and 100 beyond up to 900 feet, which eleva- tion, being the practical limit of cultivation, is the highest generally marked, though in the northern counties of Eng- land and in parts of Scotland additional contours have been executed at the altitudes of 1000, 1250, 1500, 1750, 2000, 2500, 3000, &c., feet. The intervals having been deter- mined on, instrumental

levelling is commenced at either the top or the bottom of those slopes which best define the general lay of the ground, or at some previously established bench mark of which the height above the sea is known. Points are marked out on the slopes with pickets at the prescribed vertical intervals, and then the contour lines of the horizontal planes passing in succession through each of these points are traced with a levelling instrument and staff and surveyed by traverse, the two processes being performed either simultaneously or consecutively as may be most convenient.

The instruments generally used in the Ordnance Survey are a 5-inch theodolite—employed as a levelling instrument—and a con- touring staff, 8 feet long, provided with a sliding vane which may be fixed at any required height ; the staff is shifted about until the vane is brought into the horizontal plane of the theodolite, when the bottom of the staff will be on the contour line. A serviceable contouring instrument of very simple construction is the water- level, which consists of a pair of transparent phials partially filled with water ; the phials are placed upside down at the ends of a hollow bar fixed on a rotatory vertical axis, aud have their mouths connected with piping of any available material, — brass, tin, or gutta-percha. The water in both phials is in free communication, and the water surfaces indicate the horizontal plane naturally, without any mechanical contrivance. The instrument is well suited for short sights not requiring a telescope, and may be readily mani- pulated by persons ignorant of the use of instruments of a higher class. Eye-refiecting levels, clinometers, orometers, and other light instruments, which may be held in the hand and do not require a fixed support, are frequently employed for interpolating minor between major contours. In military sketching on large scales hypothenusal inclinations and lengths are sometimes measured ; the bases and perpendiculars are deduced on the spot from a table

1 With certain exceptions, principally of a military nature, the hill features are now sketched on the 1-inch scale, on photographic reduc- tions of the 6-inch contoured sheets, faintly printed in orange colour, as a guide to the sketchers.

ing.

Geo- graphical reconnais- sance.

of gradients ; and then the contour lines, and the orthogonals also if required, are laid down.

VI. GEoGRAPHICAL RECONNAISSANCE.

When a traveller passes through an unknown or little known region the opportunity afforded him of acquiring some new geographical knowledge depends largely on the configuration and aspects of the ground, the condition of the atmosphere, the attitude of the inhabitants, and the time available. If hills are numerous and prominent and free from forest, and other conditions are favourable, a large area may be covered in a short time by reconnaissance from the stations of a chain of triangles carried along the line of route, fixing points in advance, some of which be- come stations of observation whence further points are fixed ; and thus the continuity of the operations is main- tained. But the ground may be flat and devoid of pro- minent points, the view circumscribed by forests and other obstacles, the atmosphere dense and unfavourable for distant vision, the inhabitants hostile, and the time short, and the traveller may be restricted to his line of route and unable to deviate from it; he must then endeavour to maintain a continuous traverse of the route, sketching in the ground in its immediate vicinity. Whenever breaks of continuity occur he must resort to astronomical observations to effect a connexion between the dissociated sections of his survey and to obtain an independent check on the general accuracy of the operations. He has therefore to be prepared to measure base-lines, to carry on a triangulation in some regions and a traverse in others, and to make any astro- nomical observations which may be wanted, and, if possible, to complete his mapping on the ground instead of post- poning it to be done elsewhere. He should supply himself with some instruments suited for rough and rapid work and with others for better work when time and opportunity permit, and he should be careful to arrange beforehand the general character of the proposed operations and the scales and projections to be adopted for the mapping ; he should also provide himself with blank sheets of paper duly graticulated to scale, for work in detail in the vicinity of the line of route and for general geography. For measures of base-lines and distances on the ground, chains, rolls of

crinoline wire, long Assam canes, and perambulators may be employed, also omnimeters and subtense theodolites, to measure the angle subtended by a pole of known length, whence the distance may be deduced. For measures of angles and bearings, either theodolites,! or sextants, or prismatic compasses may be used, according as more or less accuracy is required. For the general survey the plane table is a most valuable instrument: it enables bearings to be at once laid down on the paper without previous measurement, and much detail to be sketched in on the spot, instead of being plotted subsequently from a field-book ; then the only independent angular measurements which need be taken are those of the principal triangles and of very distant points beyond the range of the table. Rough and rapid route surveys may be made by pacing the dis- tances, taking the magnetic bearings, and combining with the results of astronomical observation. Many thousand

? In many respects a theodolite is more suitable than a sextant : (1) it measures horizontal angles directly, whereas the sextant measures oblique angles, which have to be reduced to the horizon ; (2) it mea- sures a round of several angles with much greater facility ; (3) it measures all vertical angles with equal facility, including the small elevations and depressions of distant peaks which cannot be readily seen by reflexion from mercury for measurement with a sextant ; (4) its telescopic power is usually far higher; (5) it may be so mani- pulated as to eliminate the effects, without ascertaining the magni- tudes, of the constant instrumental errors,—excentricity, index, and collimation ; and (6) when much accuracy is required the influence of graduation errors may be greatly reduced by systematic changes of the settings of the horizontal circle.

SURVEYING

judicious introduction of latitudes

[RECONNAIssancp,

miles of itinerary through regions in Central Asia have been surveyed by Asiatic employés of the Indian Govern. ment in this way ; the northings and southings were cop- trolled by latitude observations, and the factors thus ob. tained were applied to the eastings and westings, longitudes being

impracticable. The theodolite should be employed to fix points on very distant ranges, for it will give good results, even with short bases and very acute angles, pro- vided the objects actually observed are well identified in each instance. Observations should be taken from three stations, giving two triangles with a common side, which _ will at once show up any mistake, whether of identit , Circle reading, or calculation, Whenever a break of continuity occurs in the triangulation or the traversing, astronomical observations must be resorted to. Much may be done bya and azimuths, more par- ticularly where there is considerable northing and southing, for then differences of longitude may be obtained from the azimuths and differences of latitude. A prominent peak, visible from great distances all round, may be made to serve as a connecting link between regions which cannot be con- tinuously connected, by measuring its azimuth and distance from a base-line in each region; the addition of latitudes at the azimuth stations will much strengthen the work.

Collateral Astronomical Determinations. — Determine, tions of azimuth, latitude, time, and longitude may all be required for geographical reconnaissance,—the first two more particularly, as they can be obtained readily with much accuracy ; the fourth, being much the most trouble- some to get and the least reliable when got, is only re sorted to when it cannot be dispensed with. 4

The azimuth of an object may be determined without Admih | calculation by observing the angles between the object | and a star at equal altitudes on opposite sides of the meridian ; but it is generally found by observing the angle in one position of the star and applying thereto the azimuth of the star as obtained by calculation. In the spherical triangle PZS, in which P repre- ? sents the pole, 7 the zenith, and & the star, the angle PZS is the star’s azimuth, which can be computed when any three parts of the triangle are given. P§, the polar distance of the star, is given by the tables, and PZ, the co-latitude, 3 must be previously determined ; then, for the third part, we may have either (1) PSZ, a right 2 angle, by observing a circumpolar star at its Fig. 7. maximum elongation, or (2) the hour angle P for any star, by taking the time of the observation, or (3) the zenith distance 7S, by measurement simultaneously with the hori- zontal angle. Of these three methods the first is the most accurate, but it is not always convenient; the

second re- quires, in addition, special observations for time ; the third is generally the most convenient, for it may be performed between sunset and dark, when the stars are coming into view, but when there is still sufficient light to illuminate the wires of the telescope and the referring mark, and thus enable lamps to be dispensed with.

The latitude is most readily determined by measures of Latitude. | stars' zenith distances on the meridian, duly corrected for refraction ; then, the polar distance being known, the lati- tude is at once ascertained. 'The stars should be observed in pairs of nearly equal zenith distance, north and south, for this eliminates all constant instrumental errors, as of index, excentricity, and graduation, and also errors in the adopted refractions. When a single star is employed, circum-meridian observations of zenith distance may be taken and reduced to the meridian by calculation ; tables

for the pole star are given in the Nautical Almanac, which

enable an observation, taken at any known time in the 24

hours, to be reduced to the pole.

NAUTICAL.]

The time is usually best determined by measuring the zenith distances of stars situated not far from the prime vertical; then, the latitude and polar distance being known, the hour angle P of the spherical triangle is found by calculation. Time may also be determined by observing the transits of stars over the wires of the tele- scope of a theodolite set up in the meridian.

The longitude may be determined either absolutely, by purely astronomical methods, as by observations of the moon's motion, or differentially, with the aid of telegraph lines and travelling chronometers. Absolute longitude is the geographer's great difficulty ; for much time must be devoted to the observations, and much more to their re- duction, when undertaken with the object of fixing the relative positions of the stations of a survey. The obser- vations are of various kinds,—(1) lunar distances, 7.¢., the distance between the moon and the sun or one of the

meters and boiling-point thermometers; descriptions of them, and the formule employed in reducing the observa- tlons, are given under BARoMETER (vol. iii. pp. 381-387). Here it is only necessary to add that the date and hour of every barometric observation should be recorded, and the observations referred for reduction to those taken at the same time at one or more of the nearest standard meteoro- logical observatories ; otherwise corrections should be given to the barometer readings for the hour of the day and the month of the year, in order to reduce them as nearly as may be to the local mean altitude of the mercury. The index errors of aneroid barometers, being liable to varia- tions, should be determined from time to time by observa- tions at stations of known altitude, or by comparisons with boiling-point thermometers.

VIL. Navricat Surveyina.

stars given for this purpose in the Nautical Almanac; (2) lunar zenith distances, observed at points of the moon’s path where the conditions are favourable; (3) lunar

Nautical surveying has for its object the determination Nautical of the configuration of land which is covered and concealed S**vey- from view by water, more particularly along the foreshore ™®

ll

2: la Se is ee ee

ao Piney,

ms

=

aoe SS oS eS

transits over the meridian, observed with transits of the moon-culminating stars given in the Nautical Almanac ; (4) lunar occultations of stars ; (5) eclipses of the sun and moon ; (6) eclipses of Jupiter's satellites. The first method requires the employment of a sextant or other reflecting instrument ; the second may be accomplished with either a reflecting instrument or a theodolite; the third with a theodolite ; for the last three a good astronomical telescope is wanted. The first, when carried out strictly, requires three observers,—one to measure the lunar distance, while the others are measuring the zenith distances of the moon and the star; but, as the last two are not wanted with great accuracy, the several observations may be taken in succession by one person, and the observed zenith distances afterwards adjusted to the time of the lunar distance.

The effects of errors of observation in these methods are as follows. In (1) an error in time produces the same error in the longitude, and an error of one second of arc in the distance pro- duces two seconds in time in the longitude. In (2) an error of one second in time produces at least thirty seconds of time error in the longitude, and one second of arc in the zenith distance at least two seconds of time in the longitude. In (3) to (6) an error of time pro- duces the same error in the longitude. The first method is pre- ferred by seamen and travellers, who are more expert in the use of the sextant than of the theodolite. The second method is pre- ferred by those who are more familiar with the theodolite, and who are equipped with one of good telescopic power. It gives very good results when the observations are made at the most favourable time, which occurs when the resultant of the moon's motion in right ascension and in declination lies in the direction of the observer's zenith; this time may be readily found by graphical projection on a chart of the heavens.

Differential longitude may be determined chronometri- cally, on land as at sea, by carrying about several well- rated chronometers and comparing their times with the local times deduced from observations of the sun and stars ; or electro-telegraphically, by interchanging signals between two stations connected by a telegraph wire, and ascertain- ing the local times at which the signals are transmitted from and received at each station.

Hypsometry.— Determinations of height form a very necessary part of geographical reconnaissance. Whenever triangulation is possible, vertical angles may be measured and the heights ascertained in regular succession. But in a traverse this is scarcely practicable ; breaks of continuity in the verticals are liable to be of frequent occurrence, and then recourse must be had to observations of the pressure and temperature of the atmosphere, or of the temperature of the vapour of boiling water, from either of which fairly correct heights may be deduced differentially under normal atmospheric conditions in settled weather. The instruments employed for this purpose are mercurial and aneroid baro-

of a coast-line, and wherever navigation is carried on in comparatively shallow waters and a knowledge of the depth of water is of great importance; it has likewise to lay down the positions of oceanic islands, shoals, and rocks, and generally to delineate whatever land exists immediately above or below the surface of the ocean. Its methods differ according as they are performed in or out of sight of land. When in the vicinity of land it is pre- ceded by a survey of the coast-line and a belt of the country beyond, which must be of sufficient breadth to furnish suitable points of reference for the survey opera- tions on the water, and may have to be extended inland to embrace those peaks of distant hill ranges which are prominent objects at sea for the guidance of mariners. This done, the nautical survey is carried on in boats, by taking soundings and determining the positions of the boats by observations to some of the points already fixed on land. The observations are necessarily made with sextants and magnetic compasses only. With the former the angles between conspicuous land-marks are measured, and, as the angle between any two points is half the magnitude of the angle between the same points at the centre of the circle which passes through them and through the boat, the measurement of two angles between three points enables two circles to be drawn on the chart, the intersection of which will generally indicate the position of the boat with sufficient accuracy. Occasionally, however, it happens that the positions of all three points on shore and the boat also lie actually, or very nearly, on the circumference of one and the same circle; then a bearing taken with the compass will fix the position of the boat on the circumference of the circle. Time is noted whenever soundings are taken, that due allowance may be made for the rise and fall of the tide. All the sounding

stations are not fixed by observations to points on shore, as just indicated, but only a certain proportion, and between them straight lines of sounding are run, with intervals measured either by a patent log, or by time, or by counting the strokes of the oars; whenever possible the lines of sounding are carried parallel to each other. Sounding is the most important part of a nautical surveyor's duty and that on which his character mainly depends. It is essentially the work of the sailor, for in carrying it out the accidents of wind and water—the direction and force of the wind, the rise and fall of the tide, and the velocity of currents—must be duly taken cognizance of and the work managed to suit wind and weather ; on the other hand, the work on land may be done by landsmen. Nautical surveying, out of sight of land, rests on astronomical determinations of latitude and time, chronometric longitudes, and dead reckoning by log. XXII, — 90

Gratieu- lation.

714

When triangulation is resorted to, base-lines are measured sometimes with a patent log, sometimes by sound, by noting the interval in time between the flash and the report of a gun. The great length of modern ironclads presents a base-line which is occasionally very convenient : points are taken at each end of the ship, as far apart as possible, from which two observers can see each other ; they are carefully marked, and the distances between them determined for future reference ; then angles between moderately distant objects and observers standing at these points, taken simul- taneously from each point, enable the required distances to be obtained. The magnetic variation is determined by observing the azimuth of the sun, when on or near the horizon, with a standard compass fixed amidship, care being taken beforehand to determine any deviation of the needle which may be due to the attraction of the surround- ing ironwork, by observing the bearing of a distant mark as the ship is swung round and her head laid on different points of the compass. See also NAvicATION (Practical), vol. xvii. p. 264.

VIII. Maprine.

Graticulation.—The sheets of paper on whicn the details of the survey of any large area of country are to be laid down must be furnished with a

system of conventional lines, drawn with a view to assimilate the margins of con- tiguous sheets and to form a graticulation within which the details may be accurately inserted. The graticule is sometimes rectangular, sometimes spherical, sometimes a combination of both, as when points of which the latitude and longitude coordinates are given have to be plotted within rectangular marginal lines. Spherical graticules are constructed in various ways, usually in accordance with some specific method of projection ; see GEOGRAPHY (Mathematical), vol. x. p. 197. The following convenient method is not referable to any demonstrated projection, but is generally employed on the Indian Survey. Suppose the intersection of two meridians by two parallels to form a small spherical quadrilateral, with sides of aliquot parts of a degree in latitude and in longitude; let m be the length of each of the meridional arcs, p, p' the lengths of the arcs on the upper and lower parallels, and let g be a diameter, then

g= Ni? +p. 7'; thus, m, p, and p' being given, g is calculated. With these data, which are tabulated for different arcs and scales, the corner points of a number of quadrilaterals are laid off in suc- cession on either side of an adopted meridian, and lines are drawn through the points to indicate the collateral meri- dians and the parallels of latitude. The latter are always curved, more or less sensibly ; the former are also curved, though in a much less degree, being concave to their initial meridian, and the more so the farther they are from it. When the area is small and the scale large, the meridians are practically straight lines, and the several sheets of a map, each projected on its own meridian, will fit together closely when carried on in any direction. But, when the area is large—exceeding 8 or 10 square degrees —and the scale small, the sheets will not fit together con- tinuously unless they are projected with reference to a single meridian for the whole map, to which the meridians on either side will be increasingly concave, or unless all the meridians are made straight lines, by slightly contract- ing each of the intermediate arcs of parallel to a length which is exactly proportioned to the lengths and relative distances of the upper and lower parallels of the map from it. There must be some distortion in either case: in the first, meridians which are actually straight lines are repre- sented as being curved; in the second, straight meridians are obtained, but the distances between them are exact

only on the upper and lower parallels, and are too small elsewhere, more particularly on the middle parallel, the length of which necessarily exceeds the mean length of the upper and lower parallels… But distortion is inevitable whenever a spherical surface is projected on a plane. |

When a map is constructed in rectangular sheets, some station is adopted as the origin and its meridian as the i principal axis, to which the corner points of the sheets are | to be referred ; the coordinates of these points are given such dimensions as are most suitable for the size and scale of the map, and are equivalent to the rectangular spherical coordinates of imaginary points on the curved surface of the earth, at corresponding distances from the origin and its meridian. These being given, the distances of the points from the origin in latitude and longitude may be computed, as already shown (p. 706) ; thus data become) available for projecting the graticulation of meridians and . parallels within the rectangular marginal lines of each : sheet, or for introducing the divisions of latitude and longi- ‘ tude on the marginal lines if preferred. Conversely, when the latitudes and longitudes are given, the rectangular spherical coordinates are computed and the marginal lines | projected around the graticulation. Filling in is then commenced: the principal stations are laid down by their | coordinates and the topographical details pencilled around them by copying or tracing the field sheets of the survey; . the names and the outlines are then inked in; the shad- | ing for delineating the features and general configuration of the ground is usually done last of all. The manner in which the details are inked in and rendered permanent depends on whether the map is to be reproduced by hand only—as when it is to be engraved or lithographed—or whether in its reproduction photography is to be employed and the action of light invoked, either in entire superses- sion of or in partial co-operation with the labour of the draftsman. Iu the former case the map is made as perfect a pictorial representation of the surface of the ground as possible, the hill features being represented artistically in mezzotint shading with a brush or in chalk drawing, anda variety of colours used to facilitate discrimination of differ- ences of topographical detail. In the latter no colours are used which

will not photograph well, nor flat shades of any colour, nor—as a rule—mezzotint shading, but only some substitute therefor in pen and ink. This last condition is essential for the commonly employed processes of photo-zincography and photo-lithography ; but endeavours have recently been made, with some degree of success, to re- produce mapping in middle tones by the processes of photo- collotype and photo-gravure.

Photography is much employed as an auxiliary in map- Photo- ping ; for when a map is to be published on various scales graphy the hand-drawn details of the largest scale edition may be oe 4 reduced by its means as accurately as by the familiar pantagraph, and of course very much more rapidly. Thus in the Ordnance Survey town maps on the scale of gig are reduced to the scale of +#,; for incorporation into the parish maps; the latter are reduced for insertion in the 6-inch maps, and they in turn for the l-inch map. By limiting the dimensions of each sheet for reduction to 3 feet by 2, and by a judicious use of stops to lenses, the re- ductions are made without any error in scale or any distor- tion that can be detected by the most rigid examination.

But photography reduces every part of the original alike, the printing of words and names as well as the topographt- eal details, and it reproduces all the minor and less import-

1 In Mr O'Farrell's pamphlet On the Construction and Use of the Six Sheets of Marginal Lines for Maps of every part of the World, published by the Ordnance Survey, tables are given of the lengths of meridional and longitudinal arcs, their versines and diagonals, for every ten minutes in latitude from the equator to 80° N. and 80°S.

ant as well as the more important features ; hence a reduc- tion is rarely suited for reproduction without intermediate modification, the printing being generally too small to be easily legible, and the mass of minor detail tending to con- fuse the principal sub-lines. The draftsman. is therefore called in and the procedure so arranged as to obtain the best results with the least labour. Either he may con- struct a new map by tracing from a silver print of the photograph whatever topographical details are required for it

and omitting the rest, or he may ink in such details at once with black ink on a blue print taken from a transfer of the photograph to stone or zinc, in both cases adding names and writing of appropriate sizes ; either result may be reproduced by photography, as the unblackened details of the blue print will disappéar in the process. This done, a transfer to stone or zinc may be made from the second photograph for the printing off. Prints from photographic reproductions to full scale exhibit all the blemishes of the hand drawing and somewhat exaggerate them, whereas prints from photo-reductions are freer from blemish, and often as clear and sharp as good hand lithographs. In employing a process of double photography, therefore, the first photo is usually made on a larger scale than that for publication ; the lines of the printing and topographical detail are correspondingly exaggerated by the draftsman ; and then the second photo is a reduction, which should be sharp, clear, and free from blemish.

IX. Marv PRINTING.

Various processes are employed for the reproduction of maps in large numbers for general issue ; some are purely manual, the map being redrawn by hand on copper, stone, or other substance pre- senting a suitable surface from which prints may be taken, or on paper specially prepared for transfer to such substance ; others are earried out with the aid of photography, whereby an exact copy of the original can be obtained either directly upon, or for subsequent transfer to, the surface to be printed from. The former include the processes of copper-plate engraving and lithography, which are the oldest, and still in some respects the best of all, but slow and ex- pensive ; the latter include the processes of photo-lithography, photo-zincography, photo-gravure, and photo-collotype. Engrav- ing on stone is much employed on the Continent for map work, being cheaper and quicker than engraving on copper. Electro- metallurgic processes are frequently employed in connexion with copper-plate engraving, either to protect and harden the surface of the plate with a facing of steel or to furnish duplicates to be printed from, instead of the plate itself being used ; sometimes the wear of the plate is prevented by transferring a print from it to a litho- graphie stone or a zinc plate, from which the printing is done in its stead. By the anastatic process an old print of a map may be transferred to a zine plate to be printed from.

Engraving may be performed on copper, wood, zinc, or stone ; see vol. villi. p. 435. As done on copper plate for mapping, it is a combination of ploughing with the burin and etching with an acid, the former being used for the names and topographical outlines, the latter for the features of the ground. The system adopted in the Ordnance Survey of Great Britain—where it las been largely em- ployed and carried to great perfection—is as follows. The 6-inch maps of the survey are engraved on copper plates measuring 36 by 24 inches within the marginal lines and weighing about 35 Ib; the l-inch maps are 18 by 12 for England and 24 by 18 for Scotland. The corners of the maps, the prescribed marginal subdivisions, and the trigonometrical points are first marked on the plate by a scoring machine, in which it is laid, and which is provided with a travelling catriage holding a steel pricker. The carriage is moved along a graduated scale and the pricker along another scale at right angles to the former, and all points of which the rectangular coordinates are known are laid off by vernier-read measurements from the two scales. The plate is then removed from the scoring machine, heated, aud given a thin coating of white wax, to form a surface on which the topographical details are plotted before the graving is com- menced. This surface is divided into a number of reetangles by fine lines joining marginal subdivisions, the distances between whieh are usually so regulated as to introduce sixteen of the survey sheets on the spy Scale into one sheet on the 6-inch scale. The reductions to this scale are made by photography, and the subsequent reduc- tions to the 1-inch scale either by the pantagraph or by photography. Tracings of the reductions in lamp-black, made to fit into the rect- angles, are transferred to the wax ground by rubbing with a steel burnisher, The plate is then ready to be placed in the hands of the

engravers, who complete first the outlines, then the printing and writing, and afterwards the ornament, each class of work being usually done by a different person. The figures of latitudes, longi- tudes, and altitudes, and various conventional symbols, are stamped with steel punches. Parks and sands are ruled with a dotting wheel, and buildings shaded in lines with a

ruling machine. When a plate of the 1-inch map is being engraved, all the printing is completed, and line-engraving with the exception of the contour lines, and then an electrotype duplicate of the plate is taken. The contour-lines are engraved on the duplicate, and the hills are etched on the original plate ; thus two editions of the map are obtained, one with contours but without hills, the other with hills but without contours, the topographical details and writing being the same in both. In etch- ing, the surface of the plate is thinly coated with an acid-resisting substance composed of asphalt, Burgundy pitch, and virgin wax, forming an etching ground, on which the outlines of the hill features are traeed, and then marked through with a needle which removes the ground where it passes, exposing the surface of the copper. Aquafortis is applied to bite in the finer lines and then poured off ; the parts which are bitten sufficiently are painted over with '"stop-ping varnish"; and acid is again applied. The processes of stopping out and biting in are alternately repeated until all the required tints from the lightest to the darkest are produced. In printing from a copper plate, a much more powerful press has to be used than in printing from stone or zinc, as the ink lies in the furrows that have been ploughed or bitten into the plate and not on its surface; the process of printing is also much slower. In engraving on stone or zinc, the surface is eoated with a preparation of gum and lamp-black, and on it the detail is traced with red chalk and afterwards cut in with very fine steel or diamond points so as just to lay bare the surface of the ground without penetrating to any depth, asin copper- plate engraving. A little oil having been rubbed over the surface, the gummy composition is washed away and printing-ink applied ; the printing is performed almost exactly in the same way as in ordinary lithography, except that the printing-ink is in the first in- stance spread over the stone or the zinc plate with a dabber instead of a roller.

Electrotyping is employed to conserve work engraved on copper, either by depositing a thin surface of steel over an engraved plate, which enables it to be printed from very much oftener without injury, or by produeing a duplicate to be employed in its stead in the printing. In the latter case, a double process is gone through : first, a cast or matrix is produced in relief by the deposition of copper on the surface of the original plate, and then an intaglio of the matrix—which is therefore a duplicate of the original—is formed by depositing copper on the surface of the matrix. For details of

these processes, see HLECTRO-METALLURGY, Vol. vili. p. 114. In the Ordnance Survey electrotyping was first employed to obtain duplicates on which to make the corrections and additions neces- sary to show the growth of railroads and towns since the time of the original survey. The alterations are effected more easily when obsolete details are scraped off the electrotype matrix than when they are scooped out of an intaglio ; the original plate is also preserved intact.1 Electrotyping is further serviceable in producing the two editions of the general map, one with contour lines, the other with hill-shading, already mentioned, as well as editions for geological and other details. It is also serviceable in effecting a combination of portions of several plates: matrices of the different portions are riveted together to form a single plate; then an intaglio of this plate is taken, on which any details lost at the junction of the matrices are made good by hand. The dimensions of a full-sized plate are 384 by 264 inches; the weight of a matrix is 18 Ib, and of the duplicate 38 ib.

There are two essentially distinct processes of lithography,—one in which the map is wholly drawn by hand on the stone, the other, a much quicker but coarser process, in which it is traced with greasy ink on specially prepared paper, which is then laid face downwards onthe stone. When lithographs are to be produced bya single print- ing, all hill features, as well as topographical outlines and names, are drawn with a pen or fine camel-hair brush in ink of one colour. Double printing is necessary when the hills are drawn in chalk, two stones being required, one for the chalk work, the other for the pen- and-ink work ; and in chromo-lithography a separate stone is re- quired for the work in each colour. For full details, see Lirno-GRAPHY, vol. xiv. p. 699. ;

Zincography has of late years largely taken the place of litho- graphy for printing from hand-drawn transfers, though not for hand-drawing on the surface of the zinc, as on stone and copper. Zinc plates are less costly and bulky than lithographic stones, and are much more conveniently handled: thus a plate measuring about 43 by 28} inches and 8, of an inch thick weighs 60 Ib, is easily carried by one man, and costs 16 shillings ; a lithographic stone of the same surface is 44 inches thick, weighs 450 Ib, requires four men

1 In the Freneh and Austrian surveys eorrections are made on fresh eopper deposited by electrieity over the faulty parts, whieh are scooped out.

Electro- typing.

Litho- graphy.

Zinco- graphy.

to lift it, and costs about £7. Prints from transfers to a zinc plate are as satisfactory as prints from transfers to stone, and there is no liability of the plate being fractured in the press, which not unfre- quently happens to the stone. The surface of the plate is repared by scraping it evenly all over with a razor blade in parallel lines, until all irregularities are removed ; the plate is then bent so as to present a slightly convex surface, which is ground with pumice- stone and water, and smoothed with a piece of steatite, and then given a grained surface with sand. It is flattened by being passed through a press, after which it is ready to receive the transfer. The subsequent procedure depends, as in lithography, on the circum- stance that greasy substances do not mix with water and are repelled by gummy substances. The greasy ink lines of the transfer are

readily absorbed by the surface of the plate ; then a preparation of

gum and decoction of gall nuts (to which a little phosphoric acid is added), applied to the entire surface of the plate, serves to etch the blank ground without affecting the lines of the transfer ; but it prevents the ink from spreading, and also fills up the pores of the blank parts of the plate with a gummy substance, which repels a greasy ink. Printing ink, therefore, applied as usual with a roller to the entire surface of the plate adheres to the inked lines only and can be readily washed off the blank spaces, and then a print taken will show the inked lines only. The tracing for transfer is drawn on paper thinly coated with starch to prevent the graphic writing-ink from soaking into it; the ink is a mixture of Paris black, Castile soap, white wax, tallow or sweet oil, and shellac, which being greasy is readily absorbed by the zinc. The tracing is laid face downwards on the plate and passed several

times under the pressure of the roller of the printing press. It is then wetted and peeled off, the ink remaining on the zinc. The surface of the plate is again washed with the etching liquid, which removes stains from the blank spaces and renders them more susceptible of being equably wetted with water, and also—after a few drops of turpen- tine have been added—removes the unabsorbed writing-ink and helps to fix the lines. The plate is then ready to be printed from. The printing-ink is cistron of lamp-black—with a little Prussian blue added—and linseed oil varnish of a thickness depending on the temperature and the subject. Small corrections on the plate can be made by removing the surface with a strong solution of hydrate of potash, and then preparing a new surface to be drawn on by applying dilute nitric acid and afterwards washing off the nitrate of zine.

Anastatic Anastatic printing produces facsimiles of any inked print by printing. transfer to a zine plate, the inked lines on it being absorbed in a

Photo- graphy.

greater or less degree by the plate. The print is laid face down- wards on blotting-paper, and brushed with a solution of nitric acid diluted with five times its bulk of water until thoroughly and evenly saturated ; it is then placed face downwards on a zinc plate with a well-grained surface, and passed under the roller of a power- ful copper-plate printing press. The grease of the ink, being set free by the acid, adheres to the surface of the plate; but, as the amount of ink absorbed is much less than in the case of an ordinary transfer, it is strengthened by working up with lithographic ink, oil, and gum water until the surface is sufficiently strong to bear etching with the usual preparation of gum, nut galls, and phosphoric acid. The plate is now ready to be printed from in the usual manner. If the original print is an old one, it must first have its ink softened by immersion in hot water containing half an ounce of caustic strontia for every pint of water, the time of immersion varying, with the condition of the print, from a few minutes to an hour. A print well worked up is often superior to the original. Photography having already been described in detail (see vol. Xviii. p. 821), its application to mapping and map-printing need only be noticed here. The action of light can be employed either by placing the map in contact with a sheet of sensitized paper and against a glass plate in a printing frame, when

the light will pass through the map and produce a picture of it on the paper, or by using a camera furnished with an object-glass, through which rays of light from the map are transmitted so as to produce a picture on a sensitized glass plate, which can afterwards be printed from. The best known of the processes in which the camera is not used is the “eyanotype”; the paper is sensitized with a mixture containing nearly equal proportions of solutions of ammonio-citrate of iron and the ferrid-cyanide of potassium ; the prints give white lines on a dark-blue ground, and are very inexpensive. There are other processes of printing with the salts of iron, uranium, &c., which sive an exact transcript of the original drawing with dark lines on a white ground. But they are only suitable for maps drawn in pen and ink not larger than the glass plate of the printing frame; being therefore only serviceable in special cases when few copies are wanted, they are little employed and may be regarded more as curiosities than as ordinary methods of map-printing. Photo- graphy is generally effected with the aid of a camera, and em- ployed to obtain a negative of a map on glass, from which prints may be taken either for use per se or for transfer to a flat surface of zinc, stone, or other suitable material to print from. The map is usually attached to a board suspended vertically in an adjust-

able frame, while the camera is placed on an adjustable stand set at right angles to the map frame on a tramway, along which it can be moved to any desired distance from the map. The camera is furnished with a ground-glass focusing screen, on which is encilled a rectangle whose dimensions are proportional to those of a corre- sponding rectangle on the map, in the ratio of the scale of the required photograph to that of the map. The map and the focusing screen are brought into parallelism at such a distance that the image of the rectangle on the map exactly coincides with the rect- angle on the focusing screen. A sensitized collodion plate is then substituted for the screen and a negative taken, which is afterwards “fixed” and ‘‘intensified” so as to produce the greatest trans. parence in the lines and an almost opaque density of the ground. Printing from a negative is usually performed by the action of light when only a few copies are wanted, and mechanically

when many are wanted ; the prints are taken directly from the negative in the one instance, and from a transfer of the negative to the surface of a stone or metal plate in the other. Of the processes of printing directly from the negative, silver printing, the oldest, is as yet unsurpassed for the delicacy of its results, but it is expensive and perishable; the prints are taken on paper coated with albumen containing an aitdlina chloride, such as common salt, floated on a bath of nitrate of silver, and allowed to dry in the dark. After exposure to light in a printing frame, the prints are washed, toned with a solution of gold, and then fixed in a bath of hyposul phate of soda, which dissolves all the remaining unaltered chloride of silver. At the Ordnance Survey office platinum printing is now (1887) largely used instead of silver printing for all purposes where only a few copies of a map are required. It is more expensive, but the prints are absolutely permanent and are produced more quickly than silver prints. Their rich velvety black colour and freedom from glaze render them peculiarly suitable. The paper is sensitized with a preparation of platinum and ferric oxalate. After exposure to light, the image is developed almost instantaneously by layin, the print on a hot solution of potassic oxalate ; it is then vai in successive baths of dilute acid to remove the soluble iron salts, and after that in a few changes of water. Various processes of “collo-chromate” printing are also most usefully employed in map- printing ; they depend on the reaction of the salts of chromium— particularly the alkaline bichromates—on gelatin, gum, albumen, or other colloid substances, which, in proportion to the amount of the action of light upon them, become more or less insoluble in and unabsorbent of water, and acquire the property of taking up greasy ink and not attracting plumbago or other fine dry pigment in powder. When the subject is in line the print is taken on paper that is usually coated with a mixture of gelatin and bichromate of potash, coloured with Indian ink or any other suitable pigment; after a few minutes’ exposure in the copying frame the paper is plunged into tepid water, which dissolves the unaltered gelatin in the blank parts of the print—they have been protected from the light under the dark parts of the negative—leaving a clear image in pigment on a white ground. When the subject is in half-tone, the gelatin film has to be detached from the paper that it may be developed by being washed on the unexposed side, a temporary support being employed to preserve the image from injury during the washing; the most delicate shades in the half-tones are thus perfectly preserved.

In the processes noticed above it is necessary to repeat the opera- Photo-
tion by exposure to light for every print produced; the rate of mechan-
printing will therefore be more or less dependent on the sensitiveness ical

| of the paper, the strength of the light, and the condition of the printing

atmosphere. In the processes about to be described these dis- advantages are obviated by transferring the photographic image to a surface of stone or metal, from which prints may be made mechani- cally in any numbers independently of light or weather. The photo-mechanical processes are broadly divisible into two classes,— one comprising photo-lithography, photo-zincography, and photo- typography, for the reproduction of subjects in line only; the other, photo-collotype and photo-gravure, for subjects in mezz0- tint or half-tone as well as line.

Photo-lithography and the analogous photo-zincography are the Photo-
processes which have hitherto beeu most extensively employed for i. map
printing. They are the simplest to carry out; they allow graphy the
photographs of several sections of a map which may be tooand large to be
reproduced as a whole to be combined ; and additions photo and corrections
may be readily made by hand on the stone or zinc _, plate. The prints for
transfer from the negatives are taken on paper graphy: coated with a
mixture of gelatin and potassium bichromate, as in the pigment printing
process, except that the greasy ink or colour- ing matter is not mixed with
the gelatin, but applied evenly over the surface of the prints after exposure
to the light. The inked print is immersed for a few minutes in tepid water to
soften the gelatin still remaining soluble in the parts not acted upon by light,
and is then laid on a sloping plate and washed with a soft sponge until all
the unaltered soluble gelatin and the ink overlying it are removed. The lines
on which the light has acted remain insoluble and retain the ink, forming a
clear image of the subject in a greasy

i I

. in the same way as a woodcut.

INSTRUMENTS, |

ink. When a map is photographed in several sections, as often happens, each section overlaps well all round to enable the transfers from the different negatives to be neatly joined together without showing lines of junction; if the whole is too large to be printed ona single sheet of paper, it is cut up into sections for printing separately. ‘ The object of photo-typography is to obtain by photographic agency a surface block which may -be set up with type and printed The image may be obtained ona zine plate by transfer in the same way as for photo-zincography, or it may be printed directly from a reversed negative. In the latter case the zinc plate is usually prepared with a thin coating of bitumen, a substance which has the property of becoming in- soluble under the influence of light, so that, when after exposure the plate is washed with turpentine or benzole, the image remains on the zinc, while the ground is washed away. In both cases the image is strengthened by careful inking and by the application of powdered resin, which the plate is heated sufficiently to melt. The image is then etched with nitric acid. The operations of inking, applying resin, and biting with acid are repeated several times, until the plate is bitten sufficiently deeply to give clear prints. In another process, which is perhaps preferable for fine work, a mould is obtained by electrotyping a relief in swollen gelatin, the surface of which has been metallized with plumbago or bronze owder. ‘These processes are largely used for producing small maps to illustrate books and newspapers, but not for maps of ordinary size. The three mechanical processes just noticed are only applicable to maps drawn in line, and to get good prints every line should be of the same blackness, though of different breadth. Attempts have been made to reproduce brush-shaded drawings, exhibiting con- tinuous gradations of shade, by photo-lithography and photo-zinco- graphy, but with very partial success, and only by breaking up and destroying the continuity of gradation. The following processes are specially suited for reproducing maps in half-tone. In photo-collotype, so-called from the printing surface being of

»sURVEYING

Vic

requisite linear and angular measurements on the ground, the other for plotting the data thus acquired on paper, and for measuring from the map,

when completed, lengths and areas which it may not be convenient to calculate from the numerical data. As a rule different instruments are employed for the mensuration on the ground and for the plotting on paper; but to this rule there is a notable exception in the plane table, by means of which all bearings may be drawn directly on paper with a sight rule, without previous measurement of any kind, and thus a plot of the ground may be constructed without employing any other instrument.

Field Instruments.—These are of two classes,—linear, for deter- Field mining distances directly by actual measurement along the surface instru- of the ground, and angular, for determining the bearings of, or the ments.

angles between, any objects. Some instruments are automatic, as the needle, which points to the magnetic north, the plumb-line and the spirit-level, which indicate the direction of gravity, and hypsometers of various kinds, for measuring altitudes; others are entircly controlled by the manipulator. Some require to be rigidly supported on the ground, as measuring bars and theodolites ; others are adapted for flexible supports, as reflecting and magnetic instruments, which may be employed either on land or on the oscillating deck of a ship at sea. Some, as magnetic compasses, measure angles in the horizontal plane only ; others, as theodolites, in two planes,—one horizontal, the other vertical ; others, as refiect- ing instruments, in all planes; others, as levelling instruments, measure nothing, but simply indicate a plane of reference. And there are certain instruments by which angles are measured in the ordinary way, and direct distances are determined by micrometric measures of the small angles subtended at a distance by objects of known dimensions.

Linear instruments are of two classes,—one for exact measnre- Linear ment of base-lines the lengths of which are required to be known instru- with great precision, the other for ordinary and rough measure- ments.

lo} gelatin, a plate with a perfectly smooth surface, usually of thick mei glass, either is coated with a sensitive mixture of gelatin and bichromate of potash, upon which the photographic image is pro-

=

Bea. eae ees

R

S

=

duced by the action of light through a reversed negative, or is employed to support a gelatin film on which the image has been imprinted from an ordinary negative, and which is attached to the plate with suitable cement. The gelatin when properly moistened possesses the valuable property of receiving a greatcr or less amouut of ink in different parts of the image in exact proportion to the intensity of the action of the light on each part ; thus it is capable of reproducing the most delicate gradations of shade. The process is admirable for maps of small size, which only require a single plate, but is not suited for making a combination of sections to form a map of ordinary size; nor can additions or corrections be made on the gelatin film, which is, moreover, so tender that it does not readily permit of a large number of prints of uniform quality being taken, and is easily damaged.

The several methods of obtaining an incised image on a copper

grav. plate by means of photography are broadly divisible into the two

groups of electrotyping and etching processes ; one of each will be briefly noticed. (1) A positive pigment print, forming a relief in hardened gelatin, is developed on a silvered copper plate by the ordinary operations of the autotype or pigment printing process ; it is then blackleaded and copper is deposited on it to form an

ments. Among the former may be included the Colby apparatus of compensation bars and microscopes, described in sect. I., § 2 (p. 696 above), Bessel's apparatus, those of Struve and the United States Coast Survey, and Porro's (adopted by the Spaniards and the French in Algiers), which have already been described in EARTH (FIGURE OF THE), vol. vii. pp. 598, 600, and GEODESY, vol. x. pp. 168, 164. For less exact but still essentially accurate measures the instruments most commonly employed

are the brass or steel chain of 100 links, the graduated metallic tape, and the offset pole.

For reconnaissance and rough measurement, perambulators, with wheels of known periphery and dials to indicate the number of revolutions, are largely used in India. Crinoline wire has been employed with advantage in Australia ; it is so light that a length of 1000 feet or more may be easily carried, rolled on a drum, by one man, who pays it out as wauted; he is usually followed by another, who commences rolling it up at the opposite end when an entire length has been laid out on the ground. Air lines arc sometimes measured by stretching the wire over the tops of trees in valleys obstructed with forest, also the breadths of rivers by resting the wire on logs anchored at suitable intervals to support it above water.

Angle-measuring instruments are of two classes, direct and re- Angle-flecting. Both are provided with an aligner, usually a telescope, measur- which is pivoted over the centre of the graduated circle or sector : ing in onc the aligner is pointed in succession to any two objects the instru- angle between which is being measured ; in the other it is pointed ments.

electrotype intaglio, from which prints may be taken in the usual way, three to four weeks being required for the deposition of enough copper to produce a plate of sufficient thickness. (2) A negative pigment print is developed on a highly polished copper plate, upon which a very fine grain of powdered resin has been deposited and

fixed by heat. The intaglio is obtained directly on the plate by biting in with a solution of perchloride of iron, which penetrates the gelatin film with comparative easc in those parts representing the shades and lines of a map, where there is little or no gelatin, and thus bites the copper to a considerable depth, while in the parts representing the blank spaces and ground of the map, where the gelatin is thicker, it penctrates with more and more difficulty as the thickness of the gelatin increases, and in the highest blanks should leave the copper untouched. The operation of biting takes only a few minutes, and the gravure is remarkable for its delicacy of gradation and richness of effect; there is, however, some difficulty in etching to the proper depth so that the plate may stand much Printing without the loss of the finest tint. In both cases the copper plates have to be protected by a facing

of steel before they can be printed from. The processes have not yet been used to any great extent for maps with half-tones, but they are very promising. For maps in linc the first method gives excellent results, and 1s largely employed in the Austrian and Italian surveys.

X. INSTRUMENTS.

The instruments employed in survey operations are broadly divisible into two classes, one for making the

to one object, while an image of the second is thrown on the first by double reflexion from a pair of mirrors. Reflecting instruments are largely employed in nautical surveys, as they can be held by the hand and do not require a rigid support; but they are very rarely used in land surveys. A description of them will be found under SEXTANT (vol. xxi. pp. 724-725). They give the angle in the plane in which they are held; and, whenever this plane is sensibly oblique to the horizon, the angle must be reduced by calculation to the plane of the horizon before it can be employed in the work of aland survey. The other instruments give the required horizontal angles, whatever the altitudes of the objects observed.

The circles of angle-measuring instruments are usually divided into 360 equal parts called degrees, and subdivided into spaces ranging downwards from thirty to five minutes of arc, according as the diamcter of the circle is increased. Smaller arcs are measured by interpolation between the subdivisions, with the aid of a circle reader which moves with the aligner. All instruments except those of the simplest form are supplied with one or more circle readers and spirit-levels and a telescope ; these important adjuncts, which are common to so many instruments, will therefore be first described, and afterwards the more important instruments which are employed in connexion with survey operations.

Circle readers are of two kinds,—the vernier and the microscope.

Circle Both are held over the circle at the extremity of a radial arm | the inverted image transmitted by the object-glass or a combina. readers, pivoted over its centre. The vernier moves in contact with the | tion of four lenses for inverting the image and causing all objects surface of the circle,

while the microscope views it a short distance | to be viewed naturally. The former is usually employed for ob. off; the former is usually applied to circles whose diameters do | serving celestial objects, the latter for observing terrestrial. The not exceed 12 inches, the latter to those of larger diameter. Both | field of view being more or less extensive, a central point is estab. kinds of reader are applicable to linear scales as well as to graduated | lished in the tube, usually by the intersection of a pair of fine wires circles, the microscope being usually employed when most precision | or spider lines—one vertical, the other horizontal—in the plane of is desired. the image, and the telescope is directed by bringing this point on Vernier. The vernier is so called after its inventor, a Frenchman. Its | any specific object in the field. As the interval betveen the object- principle is very simple. The space between any convenient number, | glass and the image varies with the distance of the object, a tube n, of graduations on the circle is set off on the vernier and divided } is provided to slide within the telescope tube and carry the object- into (n+1) equal parts; then some one division of the vernier will | glass at one end, while the telescope tube carries the diaphragm always coincide with a graduation of the circle. On counting the | and eye-piece at the other end, or vice versa. The image and the divisions from the index onwards it is found that the coinciding | wires are brought into the same plane by a focusing screw, which division, say the mth, of the vernier is opposite the mth gradua- | acts on the inner through the onter tube. The wires are attached tion of the circle, counting from the last one passed by the index. | to the surface of an adjustable annular diaphragm, which is held This indicates that the distance of the index from the last gradua- Ba position by ~ pairs of antagonizing screws—one pair horizontal, | Beer ee E . eee cael ge the other vertical—with shoulders working against the exterior of 1s n+l ero eee ep ee, oe the tube in which the diaphragm is combed. so as to move it to variably taken as an odd number, such that the unit of (+1) may | the right or left and up or down, in order to bring the point of be some convenient aliquot part of the circle, as a minute for a | intersection of the wires into the visual axis of the telescope. In circle divided into degree spaces. practice the first adjustment is to set the eye-piece to distinct vision Micro- The micrometer microscope presents the combination of object | of the wires; the object-glass is then set truly to focus, which is meter and eye glasses met with in ordinary microscopes, with the addition | accomplished when no apparent parallax, or movement

of the image micro- of a wire-carrying diaphragm, movable by a screw, for micrometric | relatively to the wires, is seen on shifting the position of the eye, | Scope. measurements in the plane of the focus of the object-glass. The | for this would indicate that the image is either in front of or behind tube is conical at the object end and cylindrical at the eye end ; | the plane of the wires. The line Joining the point of intersection the box of the micrometer is mounted between these two parts at | of the wires with the centre of the object-glass is called the “line right angles with the visual axis. The tube is held at the extremity | of collimation,” and the diaphragm should be so fixed that this line of the arm of an alidade, in a collar in which it may be moved closer | may always be perpendicular to the axis on which the telescope to or away from the surface of the circle, or be turned round so as | revolves. to place the micrometer tangentially to the circle. The distance The surveying compass gives the magnetic bearing of any object, Survey. | between the micrometer and the object-glass is usually about four | and is the simplest of all instruments for measuring horizontal ing com times that between the object-glass and the face of the circle, and | angles. It consists of a magnetized needle, with an agate centre, pass, ~~thus a correspondingly magnified image of the spaces between the | poised on the point of an upright pivot in the centre of the bottom ! graduations is obtained in the plane of measurement. The object~~ | ofa circular box and carryinga concentric circular card or silver ring, glass is held in a small tube which can be screwed in or out of the | the circumference of which is graduated into 360°, and is sometimes if principal tube, to enable the length of the image to be adjusted to | further subdivided. The aligner is constituted by a pair of sight | an exact integral number of revolutions of the micrometer. The | vanes attached to the box at opposite extremities of a diameter, | box of the micrometer and the wire diaphragm are rectangular, the | one vane having a narrow slit for the eye to look through, the other latter sliding to the right or left within the former. Slow motion | with a wider opening bisected by a vertical wire to be set on the | is communicated to the diaphragm by the micrometer screw, which | observed object. There is no circle readcr, the prolongation of the passes into it through a collar in one side of the box, against which | wire on to the graduations being estimated by the eye ; and there the shoulder of the screw is pressed by an internal spiral spring | is no level, for the circle poises itself horizontally on the supporting acting against the sides of the diaphragm and the box. The screw

| pivot. is furnished with a circular head divided into a number of equal The prismatic compass is similar to the surveying compass, with Prisms- parts— usually 60, each equivalent to 1” for circular arcs, and 100 | the addition of a prism in the eye vane through which the wire oftie con: | for linear scales —and is rotated opposite an index arm fixed on the | the sight vane and the divisions of the circle are viewed apparently pass. box ; complete revolutions are marked by the teeth of a stationary | togethcr; the division with which the wire coincides when the comb, which is fixed above the wire of the diaphragm aud viewed | needle isat rest indicatcs the magnetic azimuth of any object bisected _ with it through the eye-piece. by the wire. The sight vane carries a mirror turning on a hinge, Spirit- The spirit-level consists of a glass tube not quite filled with | to enable objects to be seen by reflexion which may be too high to level. alcohol, a small quantity of air being left, which rises as a bubble | be seen on the wire ; the eye vane is furnished with a pair of dark to the highest part of the tube. In small and coarse levels the | glasses to be employed when the sun is being observed. diameter of the tube is largest in the middle and decreases uni- Magnetic instruments are useful for rapid reconnaissance and formly towards the ends, which are closed by the blow-pipe; in | rough survey, and for filling in the minor details of an exact survey, long and delicate levels the tube is cylindrical, but with a longi- | but they are not to be relied on to give bearings with errors less tudinal portion of the interior surface ground to the curvature of | than ten to fifteen minutes. In plotting, however, bearings are a circle of greater or less radius according as the level is designed | preferable to angles, for, by drawing a number of meridional lines to be more or less sensitive, and it is sometimes closed by circular | parallel to each other on the paper, each bearing may be plotted from glass stoppers cemented into the ends. When the tube is held | an independent meridian without any accumulation of error, such horizontally, with the curved surface of the intcrior uppermost, the | as arises when a number of angles are plotted in succession with middle part is occupied by the air bubble. Lines are ctched on the | the protractor adjusted on short lines. outer surface at equal distances from the central point, to enable The plane table is in its usual form simply a rectangular board Plave the tube to be set with the bubble exactly in the middle, or a scale | mounted horizontally on a stand, on which it may be turned round table. graduated throughout its entire length is provided, to enable any | and set in any required position ; it is

furnished with a flat sight deviation from centricality to be measured and the corresponding | rule, which usually carries a pair of sight vanes and has a bevelled dislevelment to be calculated and allowed for subsequently in the | edge, parallel to the line of sight, to serve asa ruler, also with a reduction of the observations, The glass tube is commonly fixed | magnetic needle. Occasionally the construction is more elaborate, in a metal tube, with plaster of Paris for protection ; but, as it is | and the board is surrounded by a marginal frame with graduations then liable, under changes of temperature, to torsion and strain, | radiating from the centre as the degrees of a circle, so that it may which may sensibly alter its curvature, it is preferable to place it | be used as an instrument for measuring horizontal angles, while the in a metallic cradle and rest it 6n cork bearings, with due provision | sight rule is furnished with a telescope, which takes the place of against sliding, the whole being covered with a glass cylinder if | the vanes and is mounted on an axle to measure vertical angles. need be for further protection. The metallic cradle or tube is | The size is made as great as is consistent with the limits of porta- attached to any instrument on which the level is to be mounted | bility in each instance, so that the sheet of paper to be drawn on by adjusting screws, for setting it correctly with reference to the | may beas large as possible. The standard plane table of the Indian axis of rotation with which it is associated. The value of a division | Survey measures 30 inches by 24, and is made of planks of well- of the scale, in seconds of arc, is usually called the ‘‘run,” and is | seasoned wood 1 inch thick, with transverse edge bars below to determined by attaching the level with its scale to a (generally) | prevent warping and buckling. It is set up on a stand, usually vertical circle, and taking both the circle and the bubble end read- | a braced tripod, to which it is clamped by a powerful hand screw Ings in different positions of the circle. As the length of the | passing through the head of the stand into a brass socket fixed bubble is much affected by changes of temperature, and the curva- | centrally under the table; the screw when relaxed serves as a ture of the tube may not be identical at all points, values of the pivot, round which the table may be turned in azimuth and set m run are commonly obtained under widely differing temperatures. any required position. The table is then firmly clamped so as Tele- The telescope consists of a tube, carrying an achromatic object- | to maintain a constant position during all the subsequent laying scope. glass and an eye-piece which holds either a pair of

lenses for viewing | off of bearings. The sight rule is 30 inches long, 2 wide, and one-

b- graduated circles of equal diameter, usually 6 to 8 inches.

third of an inch thick, of ebony, with a brass sight vane at each end, and a fiducial edge parallel to the line of sight; the vanes are about 5 inches high, which gives sufficient elevation and depression for general use. ‘The magnetic needle is about 6 inches long and is held in a rectangular brass box an inch broad, placed on the table whilst it is being set and afterwards removed. Heights may be determined on the spot with the aid of a clinometer, formed of a bar carrying a spirit-level and a pair of sights, one of which has a seale of tangents graduated to radius=the interval between the sights. For the method of employing the table see § 4, p. 709 above.

The theodolite, the most important of all instruments for the purposes of a survey, is a combination of two graduated circles placed at right angles to each other, for the measurement of hori- zontal and vertical angles, a telescope, which turns on axes mounted centrically to the circles, and an alidade for each circle, which carries two or more readers of tlie arcs through which the telescope ismoved. ‘The whole is supported by a pedestal resting on foot- screws, which are also employed to level the instrument. The size varies from a minimum with circles 3 inches in diameter to a maxi- mum with a 36-inch horizontal and an 18-inch vertical circle, the weight ranging from 4 Ib to 1000 Ib; the dimensions and magni- fying powers of the telescope increase with the diameter of the horizontal circle. The telescope may be connected rigidly with the alidade and move with it while the circle remains stationary, or with the circle and move with it while the alidade remains stationary. ‘The varieties of form as well as of size are numerous : in some the telescope may be completely turned round

in altitude as well as azimuth, and pointed to any object celestial or terrestrial ; in others the range of movement in altitude is restricted to about 25° above and 25° below the horizon, and a pair of sectors are substituted for the complete vertical circle; in some the telescope and vertical circle are placed between, in others outside of, the pillars which support their common axis; in some the pedestal is a simple tribrach resting on three foot-screws, in others it takes the objectionable form of a ball carrying the vertical axis and a socket holding the ball between two parallel plates, which are antagonized and set firm by two pairs of foot-screws, turning in sockets fixed to tle lower plate, while their heads are pressed against the upper plate, to fix itand bring the instrument into level at the same time. There are numerous other specialities of form which have been introduced to meet specific requirements ; but these cannot be noticed here.

The transit theodolite is an alt-azimuth instrument with ae

he telescope is mounted between a pair of conical arms which taper

much impaired by variations in the refractive condition of the lower strata of the atmosphere, more particularly on long lines, so that when heights have to be determined with much accuracy the theo- dolite must be discarded for a levelling instrument, to be set up repeatedly with staves at short distances. When truly adjusted the theodolite measures the horizontal angle between any two objects, however much they may differ in altitude, as the pole star and any terrestrial object ; but, as adjustments are not always made with accuracy nor permanently maintained, it is desirable always to take the observations in pairs, with the face of the vertical circle alternately to the right and left of the observer, for this eliminates collimation error from the horizontal angles and index error in the setting of the spirit-level from the vertical angles.

When a horizontal angle is measured several times for greater accuracy, one of two methods of procedure is adopted. (1) The angle is measured once or oftener in the usual way, the horizontal circle remaining clamped and the

telescope and alidade moving over it; then the position of the horizontal circle is shifted! as often as may be desired, and after each shifting the angle is again measured as formerly ; thus a separate numerical result is obtained for each operation. Or (2), the first object A having been observed and the telescope set on the second object B, the horizontal circle is unclamped and turned round until the telescope is brought back on A, when it is again clamped ; then the alidade is unclamped and the telescope again moved over the horizontal circle to be set on B. The operation is repeated as often as may be desired. The vernier readings are only.taken for the first telescope pointing to A and the last to B; their difference + 360° for every complete revolution of the circle, divided by the number of repetitions, gives the angle. This method is objectionable when a round of several angles has to be measured, but it enables the value of a single angle—more par- ticularly a small one, as between objects in the same field of the telescope—to be determined accurately with much greater rapidity than the first method.

An auxiliary telescope is sometimes fixed below the plate of the horizontal circle of a theodolite, to be pointed to a referring mark while the upper telescope is being moved about, and thus to serve as a check on the general stability of the instrument and on the per- manence of the initial setting of the circle during the measurement of a round of angles. When a theodolite is set up on a lofty scaffolding which is liable to be swayed by the wind, or on a stand which cannot be readily isolated from the observer, horizontal angles may be measured accurately by employing a second observer to keep the auxiliary telescope truly pointed to a referring mark while the observing telescope is being pointed.

outwards and end in cylindrical pivots, constituting what is called the transit axis of the instrument. The pivots rest on Y’s or in semicircular collars, on the heads of a pair of pillars, which are made of sufficient height to enable the telescope to revolve betwecn

The subtense transit theodolite differs from the ordinary transit Subtense theodolite merely in having a pair of wire-carrying micrometers transit mounted in the telescope tube, in order that the small angle sub- theodo- tended by a distant object of known dimensions, or by two objects lite.

them and be pointed to stars in the zenith. These pillars stand on a circular plate, which serves as the alidade of the horizontal circle and is usually constructed to revolve round a vertical axis fixed in the centre of the plate of the horizontal circle ; this axis passes downwards into a socket in the centre of a tribrach, which forms the pedestal of the instrument and rests on three mill- headed foot-screws by which the instrument is levelled. The vertical circle is mounted centrically on one of the cones of the transit axis, near the pivot end; its alidade, usually a rectangular plate carrying a pair of verniers, is fitted centrically over that axis, in contact with the circle but nearer the shoulder of the pivot, and, while the telescope and the circle revolve together, it is held station- ary by an adjustable arm the end of which is pinched between a pair of antagonizing screws mounted on the nearest pillar. The alidade of the horizontal circle carries two or three equidistant verniers, because any error in centring an alidade over a circle is eliminated in the mean of the readings whenever two or more verniers, placcd at equal distances apart round the circle, are read. A clamp, with a tangent screw for communicating slow motion, is attached to the nearest pillar, to act on the vertical circle aud the telescope ; another is attached to the plate of the horizontal circle, to act on the alidade of that circle and so also on the telescope for azimuthal motion; and a third to the pedestal, to act on the plate of the horizontal circle. The first two are employed in measuring the vertical and azimuthal

sufficiently near each other to be seen in the same field of the tele- scope, may be measured with greater facility and precision than on the graduated circles in the usual way. The micrometers are held in a rectangular box, one on the right hand, the other on the left, with the wires brought as closely as possible into the plane of the fixed wires in the ordinary diaphragm ; the box can be turned on the telescope tube through an angle of rather more than 90°, to enable the micrometer wires to be set parallel to either the hori- zontal or the vertical wire of the diaphragm, or to be placed at any desired angle of inclination. The subtense object usually employed in survey work is a pole of known length ; if held perpendicularly to the line of sight of the telescope, its direct distance may be determined from the angle measured by the micrometers with a sufficiently small percentage of error to make this method preferable to chaining over rough ground. The instrument has been advan- tageously employed in carrying traverses of considerable

length over ground which was impracticable for direct linear measurements. The micrometers are also serviceable in astronomical observations for time and longitude, for they give additional wires on which to observe the passage of a star, at distances from the fixed wire which may be varied with the speed of the star ; and for determining the longitude they permit numerous measures of the distance bet ween the edge of the moon and a star to be taken, immediately before and after occultation.

Eckhold's omnimeter is a theodolite furnished with a microscope Eck- of considerable magnitude facing a graduated linear scale ; the tube hold's of the microscope is rigidly attached to the telescope tube, either omni- at right augles or parallel to it, so that the two always move to- meter.

angles, the third in setting the zero-diameter of the horizontal circle In any specific direction, with a view to the repetition of the mea- surements of the azimuthal angles at different parts of the circle. For levelling the instrument, two levels are fixed at right angles

to each other on the plate of the alidade of the horizontal circle ; a third is attached to the telescope, or, preferably, to the alidade of the vertical circle; a fourth is mounted on the transit axis when levelling for astronomical observations. A magnetic compass or needle is added, and also a plummet for centring the instrument over the station mark. : Theodolites are designed to measure horizontal angles with greater accuracy than vertical, because it is on the former that the most important work of a survey depends, and they are measurable With greatest accuracy ; measures of vertical angles are liable to be

gether. The scale is fixed either parallel or perpendicular to the alidade plate of the horizontal circle ; thus, when the telescope is moved through vertical ares within the range of the scale, the tangents of the arcs are measured by the microscope on the scale. The latest and best form of the instrument is shown in fig. 8, which represents a transit theodolite converted into an omnimeter by the application of a microscope AB to the telescope at right

1 This is often done arbitrarily, but systematic shifts which bring equidis-

tant graduations of the circle under the verniers during all the telescope point- ings to any one object are always preferable (see sect. I., § 9, p. 698 above).

Prismatic reflexion theodo- lites.

720

angles to it, and of a scale C to the plate of the alidade of the hori- zontal circle in a plane parallel to that of the vertical circle. The Inicroscope _is furnished with a diagonal _eye- piece, through which the obser- ver looks down on the scale. The scale is divided

into 100 equal (—7/lmm parts, and is mov- S435 able in its bed- plate through the length of

one of these di- visious by one rotation of a mi- crometer screw, with a large head, D, the cir- cumference of which is divided into 100 equal parts, each divi- sible into fifths byavernier. The microscope has a fixed wire in a diaphragm at its eye end, 4, and, when the tele- scope is set on an object and the wire is seen between a pair of divisions on the scale, the scale is moved by the micrometer screw until the nearest division is brought under the wire; the scale reading corresponding to the horizontal position of the telescope being known, the difference between it and the reading when the telescope is pointing above or below the horizontal plane is the tangent of the arc of elevation or depression, to radius=the perpendicala from the axis of rotation of the tele- Us wv

scope to the scale.

both the distance and the height of any point * over which a staff of

known length has been «4 fe) set up vertically may be readily determined with fair accuracy. Let O (fig. : 9) be the position of the Hig. 9 transit axis of the telescope, OA the direction of the telescope when horizontal, and Oa the corresponding direction of the micro- scope at right angles to the scale amn; let M be a distant point over which the staff J£N has been set up vertically, and let m and ” be the graduations under the microscope when

the tele- scope is pointing to the bottom and top of the staff; then, since JfN and Oa are known, the horizontal distance 0.4 and the height AM are determined from the proportions

A: Oa } sae: mn,

uma

AM:am

It is essential that the focusing tube of the microscope should always move parallel to the visual axis when different divisions of the scale are being brought into focus, otherwise errors materially exceeding the quantities appreciable by the micrometer may be caused. The linear results thus obtained are satisfactory when the subtense staff is set up at a moderate distance; the instrument has often been used with advantage in localities where measur- ing chains could not be conveniently employed. As an angular instrument it is identical with the ordinary transit theodolite, as will be seen from the figure, which may be referred to as illus- trating the description of that instrument; the foot-screws are represented as resting on a plate such as is usually fixed on the head of a folding tripod stand, their lower extremities, as well as the grooves in which they are placed on the plate, being concealed from view by a capping upper plate, which is clamped over their shoulders to prevent the instrument from falling off the stand.

In any theodolite with a telescope of the ordinary form the height of the pillars must necessarily be somewhat greater than half the length of the telescope if stars in the zenith are to be observed or if the telescope is to be completely rotated on its transit axis; the higher the pillars the higher the centre of gravity, the less perfect the stability of the instrument when set up for observation, and the greater its weight and cumbersomeness for transport. In Germany and Russia theodolites and transit instruments are sometimes em-

ployed in which the eye end of the telescope tube is removed—a counterpoise to the object end being substituted in its place ; and a prism is inserted at the intersection of the visual axis with the transit axis, so that the rays of light from the object-glass may be reflected through one of the tubes of the transit axis to an eye-piece in the pivot of this tube. In this case the pillars need only be high enough for the counterpoise to pass freely over the plate of the horizontal circle ; but the observer has always to place himself at gs angles to the direction of the object he is observing,

he levelling instrument consists of a telescope which carries a Levely long spirit-level parallel to itself and is mounted on a horizontal instr. plate, which is fixed rigidly either on the head of a vertical axis ment, revolving within a socket in the centre of the pedestal or on that of a hollow cone revolving round a vertical axis which projects upwards from the pedestal. There are various forms of the instru. ment ; in the Y-level the telescope rests on a pair of Y's, in which it can be both rotated and fuitaed end for end; in the dumpy level the telescope is rigidly attached to its supports, and its tube is made shorter and of greater diameter, to carry an object-glass of shorter focal length and larger aperture. A magnetic compass is attached to the instrument to enable the bearings of the levelling staves to be taken whenever desired. Levelling staves are of a variety of patterns and are graduated in various ways, best on both faces and dissimilarly, for a check on accidental errors of reading, as indicated in sect. ITI.

Reflecting levels are portable instruments which may be held by Reftectin the hand for rough and rapid survey work. They are of two forma: levels, | in one an image of the eye of the observer, in the other an image of the bubble of a spirit-level, is seen by reflexion on a level with the observed object. The first consists of a square of common looking-glass, which is set in a frame suspended from a ring on the line of prolongation of one of the diagonals in such a manner as to swing freely but not turn round on its axis of suspension; the frame is weighted by a metal plate behind, to which it is so adjusted that, when suspended, the plane of the surface of the mirror will be vertical. A small portion of the glass at one end of the horizontal diagonal is either cut away or unsilvered. When the image of the observer's eye is seen on the diagonal, all objects bisected by the diagonal, whether viewed through the opening in the mirror or by reflexion, are on the level of

the eye. The second consists of a tube open at the object end and closed at the eye end bya disk which is perforated with a sight hole ; a mirror filling up half the section is fixed in the tube, facing the eye end at an angle of 45° with the axis; and an all-round transparent spirit-level is mounted over an opening above the mirror, and its bubble is seen | by reflexion in the axis of the tube. Abney's level is of the latter Abney': | construction, but with the spirit-level attached to the alidade of a level. graduated arc fixed to one side of the (rectangular) tube; thus vertical angles as well as levels may be determined with it.

The optical square is a reflecting instrument indicating a right Optical angle, and is of great use in laying off perpendiculars for the squat. measurement of offsets from a line of survey. It consists of two glass plates, one wholly the other partially silvered, which are fixed permanently in a shallow circular box at an angle of 45°, so that any two objects seen together through a sight hole in the box— one directly through the transparent portion, the other by reflexion in the mirror of the partially silvered glass plate—subtend an angle of 90° at the point where the observer is standing. :

Plotting and Plot-measuring Instruments.—These comprise linear Plotting scales, common compasses, and angular protractors for laying off instm ; distances and angles measured on the ground, proportional com- ments | passes and pantagraphs for reproducing a finished plot on some other scale, and opisometers and planimeters for measuring plotted lines and areas.

Scales are divided, either decimally or fractionally, into equal Scale. — parts, each of which is a portion of a fixed unit of length, as a foot or an inch ; some are subdivided more or less minutely through- out their entire length between a pair of parallel lines; others are subdivided at their extremities only. Diagonal scales are formed by eleven equidistant parallel lines, the outer ones of which are divided primarily and subdivided into tenths at their extremities.

The primary divisions are joined by cross lines perpendicular to the eleveu parallel lines; the end subdivisions are joined diagon- ally, the first on the lower line with the second on the upper, and

so on, each diagonal cutting every horizontal line in a point a tenth

of a subdivision beyond the cutting point on the parallel line below, as measured from any one of the perpendicular lines; and each of these tenths is further divisible into tenths by measurin from the perpendicular at intervals of tenths between the paralle lines ; thus great precision of measurement is obtained. —_

The Marquois scale and triangle consist of a scale divided i throughout into equal parts more or less minutely and a right- an and angled triangle of which the hypothenuse is three times the shortest a. nl | side. An arrow is drawn perpendicular to the hypothenuse to | serve as a pointer to the divisions of the scale. The third side has a bevelled edge for ruling. When the triangle is placed with its hypothenuse against the scale and is moved along it, all lines drawn

ae ae ee a ee

(a

¢

along the bevelled edge are parallel to each other, their distances apet being one-third of the distances travelled by the arrow along

e scale.

Compasses usually take the form of a pair of legs movable about a joint, so that their extremities, which are of steel, finely pointed, may be set at any required distance apart ; the legs may be knee- jointed, and one is usually adapted to hold either a pencil, a ruling

n, or a steel pointer, as may be desired. A beam compass is em- ployed when long lengths are laid off; it consists of a light tubular metal bar, or a rectangular deal rod, fitted with a pair of boxes, which slide along it and

carry either pen, pencil, or pointer, and may be set and clamped at any desired distance apart.

Proportional compasses consist of two parts so exactly similar that when held in contact throughout they appear as one; each is pointed at both ends, flat and grooved through one-half its length, and tapering to a point in the other half. The two are coupled together by a pair of similar sliders, one for each groove, turning on a common axle which carries a disk at one end and a clamping screw at the other; by shifting the position of the sliders in the grooves the distances between the points at the opposite ends can be brought into any desired ee ie ge The settings for different proportions are effected by bringing a line on the slider opposite the lines of a fractional scale engraved on one side of the groove.

Protractors are of two forms circular (or semicircular) and rect- angular ; the circumferences of the former are divided into 360° or 180°; the latter are divided on three sides of their periphery by lines drawn from the centre of the fourth side to the degree points on the circumference of a semicircle of which that side is the diameter. The protractor being set with its centre on a given point and its zero line on a given line passing through the point, any angle with this line at the point can be readily laid off. Pro- tractors for plotting traverses are commonly annular, that they may be centred over the station of origin with the zero diameter on the initial meridian ; their bearings at any other station may be laid off without moving the protractor by drawing lines parallel to the same bearings at the origin. Rectangular protractors some- times have parallel lines engraved on their faces at equal distances,

‘ for setting over paper ruled with parallel lines at unequal distances,

and their backs engraved with scales of rhumbs, sines, secants, and tangents and common scales of equal parts.

The station pointer enables the position of any station at which angles between three fixed points have been measured to be plotted on paper. It consists of three arms: the centre arm carries a graduated circle fixed over an axis at one end; the other two are movable round this axis, and each carries a vernier for reading the circle. Hach arm has a straight edge

bevelled as aruler, aud the lines on the prolongations of these edges meet in the centre of the axis, where there is a small opening through which a point may be pricked on the paper. The arms having been set to the observed angles, the instrument is moved about until each edge is over one of the fixed points on the paper, when its centre will be exactly over the position of the station if none of the angles are very acute. The instrument is much used in nautical surveying, for laying down the — of a vessel at sea by angles measured to fixed objects on shore.

The triangular compass is serviceable in reproducing plans to full scale ; it is formed by jointing a third leg to the centre pin of the joint of an ordinary pair of compasses, so as to be movable in any direction.

The pantagraph is employed in reproducing a map on a different — generally a smaller—scale. It consists of two long arms, 4B and AC, jointed together at A, B and two short arms, FD and FE, joimted together at F and with the long arms at D and EF; FD 1s made exactly equal to AH and FE to AD, so that ADFE is a true parallelogram whatever the angle at 4. The instrument is supported parallel to the paper ong lvory castors, on which it moves Fic 10 freely. A tube is usually fixed — se vertically at c, near the extremity of the long arm AC, and similar tubes are mounted on plates which slide along the short arms BD and FD; they are intended to hold either the axle pin ona weighted fulcrum round which the instrument turns, or a steel pointer, or a pencil, interchangeably. When the centres of the tubes are exactly in a straight line, as on the dotted line Ofc, the small triangle b/D will always be similar to the large triangle dc4; and then, if the fulcrum is placed under b, the pencil at f, and the pointer at c, when the instrument is moved round the fulcrum aS a pivot, the pencil and the pointer will move parallel to each other through distances which will be respectively in the propor- tion of bf to bc; thus the pencil at f draws a reduced copy of the Map under the pointer at c; if the pencil and the pointer were Interchanged an enlarged copy would be drawn; if the fulcrum and pencil were interchanged, and the sliders set for f to bisect bc,

A

the map would be copied exactly. Lines are engraved on the arms BD and FD, to indicate the positions to which the sliders must be set for the ratios 4,

3,..., which are commonly required.

The square pantagraph of Adrian Gavard consists of two graduated Gavard's arms which are pivoted on a plain bar and connected by a graduated square bar sliding between them throughout their entire length, to be set panta- at any required distance from the plain bar; a sliding plate carrying graph.

a vertical tube, to hold either the axle of the fulcrum, the pencil, or the pointer, is mounted on one of the arms and ona prolongation of the plain bar beyond the other arm, and also on the graduated con- necting bar; and an additional arm is provided by means of which reductions below or enlargements above the scales given on the instrument can be readily effected.

_ The eidograph is designed to supersede the pantagraph, which Hido- is somewhat unsteady, having several supports and joints. It is graph. composed of three graduated bars, one of which is held over a ful- crum and carries the others, which are lighter, one at each extremity. The three bars are movable from end to end in box-sockets, each having an index and a vernier in contact with the graduated scale. The box-socket of the principal bar turns round the vertical axle of the fulcrum ; that of each side bar is attached to a vertical axle, which also carries a grooved wheel of large diameter and turns in a collar at either end of the principal bar. The two wheels are of exactly the same diameter and are connected by a steel band fitting tightly into the grooves, so that they always turn together through identical arcs ; thus the side bars over which they are respectively mounted, when once set parallel, turn with them and always remain parallel. A pointer is held at the end of one of the side bars and a pencil at the diagonally opposite end of the other. The bars may be readily set by their graduated scales to positions in which the distances of the pencil and the pointer from the fulcrum will always be in the ratio of the given and the required map scales.

The opisometer is intended to measure the lengths of roads, rivers, Opiso-

and other lines on a map. It consists simply of a milled wheel meter. mounted in a forked handle on a steel screw with a very fine thread. The

wheel, being turned up to one end of the screw, is put down on the map with the handle held vertically over the point at which the measurement is to commence, and is run over the road or line until the point is reached at which the measurement is to stop; it is then lifted off the paper, placed on the scale of the map, and run backwards to the initial end of the screw, over a length of the scale which corresponds to the length run over on the map.

The polar planimeter was invented by Professor Amsler of Polar Schaffhausen for the measurement of areas on maps and plans. It plani- consists essentially of two arms jointed together and a roller, car- meter. ried at right angles to one of the arms and moving in touch with the paper, which by its revolutions records the area of a figure whose perimeter is traced by a point on that arm, while the instrument is turned bodily on a ; point on the other arm , as a fixed centre. There are two forms of the & instrument: in one the position of the roller is fixed and the arms are jointed on a common pinion; in the other the roller and a pinion, to : ; which the holding arm is attached, are both carried by a slider, which is movable along the tracing arm and can be set at any required distance from the tracing point. The first form gives areas in a single unit of measure only, the second in various units. The annexed figure represents the first form, showing the joint 4, the tracing point P, the fixed point O, and the roller with its graduated dial and vernier, for indicating the lengths of line rolled over while the tracer 2 moves round the peri- meter of the area under measurement.

The following ex- planation of the theory of the instrument is due to Professor Green- hill. Let OA, AP be the two arms jointed at A, with the fixed point at Oand the tracer at P, and suppose the wheel to be fixed at # on the prolongation of the arm PA. Let OA=a, AP=b, AR=c, and the radius of the roller=r; Se ts ns and let the direction of Tie ’ Fig. 12,

a positive rotation of the roller, as marked by the graduations, be that of rotation on a right-handed screw on the axle of R which would give motion in the direction 42. Drop the perpendicular

OF from O on AR, and first suppose the joint 4 to be clamped. Then, if is in 4R produced, a rotation of the instrument about O with angular velocity w will give to Rthe component velocities OL.w in the direction ZR and J&.w in the direction perpendicular to IR, and will therefore compel the roller to turn with the angular

velocity a w; but, if Jis on the other side of R, the angular velocity

of the roller will be 2 a, Therefore, keeping 4 clamped, the

roller will turn through an angle = 6 or ~* 4, according as J is

or is not on the same side of R as A, when the instrument is rotated through an angle @ about 0; but, when J coincides with R, the roller will not turn, and then P describes a circle, called the % a circle," represented by the middle dotted circular line, of radius

(OR? + RP*)=/{a? ~ 2 + (b+¢)} =a/(a? +0 + 2be). Next unclamp the joint 4 and clamp the arm QA ; then the roller

will turn through an angle — <¢, while 4P turns through an angle ¢.

Now suppose P to travel round the finite circuit PP,P,P, by a combination of the preceding motions in the following order. (1) Clamp the joint, and move P to P, and 4 to A, on ares of circles

of centre O; then the roller will turn through an angle – 6,

6 being=AOA,=POP,. (2) Unclamp the joint and clamp the arm, and move the pointer from P, to P, on the arc of a circle of

centre 4); then the roller will turn through an angle= -< 4%, '

being=P,4,P, (8) Unclamp the arm and clamp the joint, and move the pointer from P, backwards to P3 and A, to A, on arcs of circles of centre O, through an angle 6; then the roller will turn

through an angle — 6, if OF, is the perpendicular from 0 on P,A.

SUSA, the Biblical SausHan, capital of Susiana or Elam and from the time of Darius I. the chief residence of the Achzemenian kings, was a very ancient city, which had been the centre of the old monarchy of Elam and undergone many vicissitudes before it fell into the hands of the Persians (see Exam). The site of the town, which has been fixed by the explorations of Loftus and Church- ill, lies in the plain, but within sight of the mountains, between the courses of the Kerkha (Choaspes) and the Dizful, one of the affluents of the Pasitigris. The Shapur, a small tributary of the Dizful, washes the eastern base of the ruin-mounds of Sts or Shish. Thus the whole district was fruitful and well watered, fit to support a great city ; the surrounding rivers with their canals gave protection and a waterway to the Persian Gulf; while the position of the town between the Semitic and Iranian lands of the empire was convenient for administrative purposes. It is not therefore ‘surprising that Susa became a vast and populous capital; Greek writers assign to it a circuit of 15 or 20 miles,—a statement which is fairly well borne out by the remains. These include three main mounds, of which one is identified with the strong citadel! and a second shows the relics of the great palace built by Darius I. and completed by Artaxerxes Mnemon. Susa was still a place of importance under the Sasanians, and after having been razed to the ground in consequence of a revolt seems to have been rebuilt by Shapur IT. under the name of Erdnshahr-Shapur (Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser aus Labari, p. 58). The fortifications were destroyed at the time of the Moslem conquest (Mokaddasi, p. 307) ; but the site, which is now deserted, was inhabited in the Middle Ages, and a seat of sugar-manufacture.

In Daniel viii. 2 the river of Shushan is called Ulai, a name which is identical with Avrai of the Bundehesh and Euleus of classical writers. What is told of the Euleus makes it impossible

to identify it with the inconsiderable Shapir; but authorities differ as to whether it is another name for the Choaspes or rather denotes

1 The Greeks called the citadel the Mepvéviov (Strabo, xv. 8, 2), and supposed it to have been founded by the Ethiopian Memnon. It was strong enough to withstand Molon in his war with Antiochus the Great (Polyb., v. 48).

(4) Unclamp the joint and clamp the arm, and move the pointer from P, to P on the arc of a circle of centre 4, and consequently

through an angle ¢; the roller will turn through an angle ce r

which cancels the angle due to motion (2). Thus in completing the finite circuit PP,P,P, the roller will have turned through an

angle (RI- RL) 2=(4r~ Az) 2.

But the area PP,P,P;=area PP,Q,Q, = sector OPP, —sector 09Q,=4(OP? — OP,2)9, =4{04?+ AP?24AT. AP-(OA2 AP? +2AI,. AP) 6, =(AI- AJ) 08, =br times the angle turned through by the roller. The area PP,P,P; is therefore b times the travel of the circum- ference of the roller.

Any irregular area, supposed to be built up of infinitesimal ele- ments found in the same manner as PP,P,Ps, will be accurately measured by the roller when the point P completes a circuit of the perimeter, the arm AP being free to turn on the joint at 4 and the arm OA on a fixed point O. If, however, O is inside the area, the area of the zero circle must be added to the area deduced from the readings of the roller. When the roller is fixed permanently, this area is constant, and is usually engraved on the arm in units of the adopted length 6; when the roller is held on a slider which also carries the pinion of the arm OA, the length 6 may be so adjusted that the areas described will be expressed in any desired unit of measure.

Literature and Authorities consulted.—Accounts of the Operations of the Great Trigonometrical Survey of India; Manual of Survey for India; Col. A. R. Clarke, Geodesy; Methods and Processes of the Ordnance Survey; Col. Water- house, On the Application of Photography to Maps and Plans; and Professional Papers of the Royal Engineers. (J. T. W.)

the Dizful or the Pasitigris. Susa in the days of its greatness must have stretched nearly from river to river. There is a sane- tuary of the tomb of Daniel on the banks of the Shapur, and Arabic geographers relate that this

tomb was a frequented shrine before the Moslem conquest and that the Arabs turned the stream over the grave.

SUSA, a city of Italy, in the province of Turin, 33} miles west of Turin by the railway which passes by the Mont Cenis tunnel into France, is situated on the Dora Riparia (tributary of the Po) at 1625 feet above the sea, and is so protected from the northern winds by the Rocciamelone that it enjoys a milder winter climate than Turin itself. The city walls, 20 to 30 feet broad at the base, were about 50 feet in height, but in 1789 their ruinous condition caused them to be reduced by about half their elevation. Numerous remains of Roman buildings and works of art still show the importance of the ancient town; and the triumphal arch erected by Cottius in honour of Augustus still stands on the old Roman road between Italy and Gaul,—a noble structure, 45 feet high, 39 broad, and 23 deep. The inscription, now illegible, mentioned fourteen ‘‘civitates” subject to Cottius. Among the modern buildings of Susa the first place belongs to the church of San Giusto, founded in 1029 by Olderico Manfredi II. and the countess Berta, and in 1772 raised to be the cathedral. The population of the city was 3254 in 1871 and 3305 in 1881 (commune, 4418).

Segusio (also Secusio, Siosium, Seutinm, Seucia, &c.) was at a very early period the chief town of this Alpine region, and the Cottian Alps themselves preserve the name of the Segusian chief Cottius, who with the title of prefectus became a tributary and ally of Rome in the reign of Augustus, and left his state strong enough to maintain its independence till the reign of Nero. As a Roman municipium and military post Segusio continued to flourish. After the time of Charlemagne a marquisate of Susa was established ; and the town became in the 11th century the capital of the famous countess Adelaide, who was mistress of the whole of Piedmont. On his retreat from Legnano, Barbarossa set fire to Susa; but the town became more than ever important when Emanuel Philibert fortified it at great expense in the 16th century.

SUSA (Stsa), a city of Tunis, on the coast of the gulf of Hamdma, 33 miles south of Hamdma. It occupies the side of a hill sloping seawards, and is still, as far as the

town proper is concerned, surrounded with heavy white-

fe

feared

SUS—SUS

washed Oriental-looking walls. The Kasr al-Ribdt, a square building flanked by seven bastions, was probably either a Roman or Byzantine fortress, and a Byzantine chapel is now transformed into the Kahwat al-Kubba or Café of the Dome. Since the French annexation the citadel, built on the highest point within the town, has been entirely restored and serves as the headquarters of the general commanding a division; and a camp of tile- roofed brick buildings has been erected in the neighbour- hood. The space within the walls is proving too limited for the growth of the population, and houses already extend along the shore to north and south for about a mile. Susa is the ancient seaport of Kairwan (45 miles inland), with which it is connected by a horse-tramway, and it has a rapidly increasing commerce. In 1864 the port was visited by about 195 vessels, in 1885 by 701, of which 532 were Italian. The exports in 1885 were valued at £1,371,510 (oil, to Genoa and Leghorn, £232,530 ;

grain, largely to Sicily, £397,760 ; sansa or olive refuse, to

France, £13,715; esparto, a comparatively recent article for this port, £17,935), and the imports (including build- ing-stone from Sicily and Malta, brick, lime, marble, and timber) amounted to £660,135. The population, which numbered 8000 in 1872 (2000 Jews, 1000 Christians), had increased to upwards of 10,000 in 1886.

Susa is the ancient HADRUMETUM (q.v.). In 1537 it was besieged by the marquis of Terra Nova, in the service of Charles V., and in 1539 was captured for the emperor by Andrea Doria. But as soon as the imperial forces were withdrawn it became again the seat of Turkish piracy. The town was attacked by the French and the

_. Knights of St John in 1770, and by the Venetians in 1764.

SUSANNA (“Lily”), the heroine of one of the apocryphal additions to the Greek text of the book of Daniel, the others being the Song of the Three Children and the story of Bel and the Dragon. In the English version the story of the virtuous Susanna—the false accusation brought against her by the elders and her deliverance by the judg- ment of Daniel—is put as a separate book. Jerome, in his Preface to Daniel, points out that it had been observed both by Jews and Christians that this story was certainly written by a Greek, and not translated from Hebrew, since Daniel makes a series of Greek puns on the names of trees.

SUSSEX, a maritime county in the south of England, lying between 50° 43’ and 51° 9’ N. lat. and 0° 49’ E. and 0° 58’ W. long. It is 76 miles from Lady Holt Park to Kent Ditch, and 28 miles from Tunbridge Wells to Beachy Head, and adjoins Kent on the N.E., Surrey on the N., Hampshire on the W., and the English Channel on the S. Its total area is 933,269 acres or 1458 square miles.

The range of chalk hills known as the South Downs divides the county into two districts—that of the coast and that of the Wealden—which are of unequal extent and possess very different characteristics. In the west- ern part of the county the South Downs are about 10 miles distant from the sea; they continue eastwards for about 45 miles, and terminate in the bold headland of Beachy Head. Their average height is about 500 feet, though some of the summits reach 700 (Ditchling Beacon, 813 feet ; Chanctonbury Ring, 783; Firle Beacon, 700; and the Devil’s Dyke, 697). The Forest Ridge extends through the northern part of the county from Petworth to Crowborough, reaching the coast in Fairlight Down. The principal summits are Crowborough Beacon (796 feet), Brightling Hill (647), and Fairlight Down (528). The county has suffered greatly from incursions of the sea. The site of the ancient cathedral of Selsey is now a mile out at sea. Between 1292 and 1340 upwards of 5500 acres were submerged. In the early part of the 14th cen- tury Pagham harbour was formed by a sudden irruption of the sea, devastating 2700 acres. Recently all this land has been reclaimed and again brought under cultivation.

There is considerable reason for believing that the whole coast-line of the county has been slightly raised in the last 800 years (possibly by earthquake shock), as the large estuaries at the river mouths no longer exist, and the archipelago round Pevensey (eye signifies “island ”) has only a slight elevation above the neighbouring marsh land.

The rivers are small and unimportant. The principal Rivers.

are the Rother, the Cuckmere, the Ouse, the Adur, the Arun, and the Lavant. The Rother rises in the Forest Ridge, in the parish of Rotherfield, and enters the sea near Rye, its course having been diverted by a great storm on 12th October 1250, before which date its exit was 12 miles to the east, beyond Dungeness. The Cuckmere also rises in the Forest Ridge, near Heathfield, and empties itself into the sea a little to the east of Seaford. The Ouse rises in St Leonards Forest, to the north-west of Lindfield, and, passing through Isfield and Lewes, enters the sea at New- haven, now the principal port in the county. The former outlet was at Seaford, but in the reign of Elizabeth the sea broke through the beach bank at some warehouses just below Bishopstone and formed what is now called the old harbour, which was in use until the Newhaven one was made a safer exit. The Adur has three sources, all in the neighbourhood of St Leonards Forest, and flows southwards, entering the sea at Southwick. The mouth of the river formerly shifted from year to year, ranging both east and west over a distance of 2 miles. The Arun rises in St Leonards Forest, in the parish of Slinfold, flows through Amberley and Arundel, and enters the sea at Littlehampton. The Lavant has its source in Charlton Forest and encircles Chichester on all sides except the north, entering the sea through creeks in the extreme south-west corner of the county.

The portion of the county to the north of the South Forests.

Downs is called the Weald ; it formerly formed part of the forest of Andredsweald (‘‘the wood or forest without habit- ations”), which was 120 miles in length and about 30 in breadth. The total area of forests in 1885 was 113,043 acres, being the greatest of any county in England. About 1660 the total was estimated at over 200,000 acres. The chief remains of the ancient forests are Tilgate, Ashdown, and St Leonards, but the names in many parts indicate their former wooded character, as Hurstpierpoint (hurst

meaning ‘‘wood”), Midhurst, Fernhurst, Billingshurst, Ashurst, and several others. The forests were interspersed with lagoons, and the rainfall being very great caused marshes and the large river estuaries; the rainfall, however, abated in consequence of the cutting down of the Wealden forests for fuel in the extensive ironworks that formerly existed in that district. The wood was exported in the reign of Edward VI.

The greater portion of the county is occupied by the Geology.

Chalk formation, of which the South Downs are almost entirely composed. Firestone is found in the west, and Steyning is built upon it. At the base of the Downs the Greensand crops up, but is of small extent. The Wealden formations occupy nearly all the inland district of the county, and in these was found the ironstone from which iron was extracted. Sussex was at one time the centre of the English iron manufacture ; before 1653 there were 42 iron-forges or mills (reduced to 18 before 1667) and 27 furnaces (reduced to 11 before 1664), which employed 50,000 men? and furnished the main supply of ordnance for the national defence. The last forge at Ashburnham was not extinguished until 1809. Between 1872 and 1876 boring was carried on at Netherfield, near Battle, with the object of discovering what beds were below the Wealden, and if possible of reaching the Paleozoic rocks, which at

1 Suss. Arch. Coll., xxxii. pp. 22-25.

Flora and fauna.

Climate.

Kentish Town, Harwich, Ostend, and Calais had been found at a depth of about 1000 feet below the sea-level. Some slight hope was entertained of the occurrence of Coal- measures, as in the Boulonnais the Carboniferous limestone, where last seen, dips south. The boring was continued to a depth of 1905 feet, the Oxford Clay being reached. The chief result was the discovery of the unusual thickness of the Kimmeridge Clay, which began at 275 feet from the surface and continued to a depth of about 1469 feet. The

most practical result was the finding of thick beds of gyp- sum (at about 160 feet), which were before unknown in the Weald and are now worked at Netherfield. From Beachy Head to Selsey Bill there lies, south of the Downs, a low and level tract belonging to the Tertiary period, of which there is no such record at any other place in England. The towns of Hove, Worthing, Littlehampton, Bognor, &c., are built on gravel, sand, and loam of the Post-Pliocene or Pleistocene series, and these superficial beds overlie the Eocene series in patches and contain a large fossil fauna. Remains of the mammoth occur in the mud deposit (or Lutraria clay) of this district, and the Chichester museum contains the greater portion of a fine skeleton of the Hlephas antiquus obtained off Selsey Bill. Of the British Quater- nary fossils forty-five are peculiar to Selsey, and twenty others probably find here their earliest place in British geological history. The Bracklesham beds occur at the bay of that name, and their main divisions extend from Wittering on the west to the Barn Rocks, east of Selsey Bill, a distance of 7 miles. They are full of fossil shells,

particularly nummulitic.!

An analysis of the flora of the county was placed before the British Association in 1872 by Mr W. B. Hemsley (&cport, 1872 p. 128), who stated the total number of indigenous plants to be 1000, to which 59 introduced species must be added. The most interest- ing features of the flora are the number of species to the county area, the species peculiar to certain formations, viz., the Chalk (56), maritime species (76), and the rare species, especially of the Atlantic and Scottish types. Amongst the rarer marsh plants are Isnardia palustris, Scirpus triqueter, S. carinatus, Pyrola media, Habeneria albida, Festuca sylvatica of the “Scottish” type of Watson ; this last is not found in adjoining countics. A prominent feature of the Wealden flora is the extent of heath land and the large size the heath attains. The fauna includes 29 species of Mammalia. The birds are very numerous, no less than 291 species having been recorded. There are about 76 species of general migratory visitors. Of the 216 species of marine fishes found round the British coasts 106 have been observed off Sussex, and there are also 19 freshwater fish.?

The county presents two distinct climates, that of the coast district being mild, equable, and dry, whilst that of the Wealden district is continental, extreme, and rainy. The coast rainfall is about 25 to 26 inches annually and that of the Weald about 33 inches ; this is due partly to the South Downs, which rise up in the path of the rain-clouds, and partly to the large extent of forest. In the wet years of 1852 and 1872 the rainfall at several Wealden stations exceeded 50 inches. At Crowborough Beacon the average yearly rainfall from 1871 to 1884 was 38°16 inches; at Brighton during the same period it was only 28°87. Temperature in the Weald at Uckfield has ranged from 98° Fahr. on 14th July to—4° on 20th January 1838. The mean daily range of temperature in the Weald is about half as much again as on the coast. The in- fluence of the sea in modifying the temperature of the coast district is specially noticeable in the autumn months, when the temperature is higher than in the Weald and other parts of England northwards, and fashion has (perhaps unconsciously) selected the period from September to November for the Brighton season. Sea-bathing, first introduced about the middle of the 18th century, together with the fresh pure air, has turned the stream of health-seekers from Bath and Tunbridge Wells and other watering-places into Sussex. The poor but populous fishing-town of Brighthelmston developed into the fashionable town of Brighton ; the new town of Worthing sprang up in Broadwater parish ; and the fishing village of East- bourne rose in importance. The Cinque Port town of Hastings afterwards developed its fashionable suburb St Leonards, and Sea- ford was also resorted to; in the western part of the county the hamlet of Bognor became a fashionable place. The opening of the

1 Address to Geological Section of British Association, 1882.

2 Good lists of fauna and flora of certain parts of the eastern divi- sion of the county have been published by the Hastings Literary and Philosophical Society and the Eastbourne Natural History Society.

railway from London to Brighton in 1840, soon followed by coast lines from east to west, occasioned a great inercase in the coast towns, and now almost the entire coast (except in its steep parts) presents a line of fashionable ‘‘health resorts” unequalled in an

English county; these indeed form the special distinguishing feature of Sussex amongst other counties.

Sussex is divided into the six rapes® of Hastings, Pevensey, Admin. | Lewes, Bramber, Arundel, and Chichester. The only rapes which ea oa exist for practical purposes are that of Hastings, which hasa separate – | coroner, and the last three, in which the liability to repair bridges falls as of common right upon the rape instead of the county division, The Act 19 Hen. VII. cap. 24 directed that for convenience the county court should be held at Lewes as well as at Chichester and this apparently gave rise to the division of Sussex into east and west parts, and separate quarter scssions are now held for these two divisions. The boroughs of Hastings, Rye, Brighton, and the city of Chichester have separate commissions of the peace and courts of quarter sessions. There are eighteen petty and special sessional divisions. At the time of the Domesday survey the county con. tained 65 hundreds, but the modern total is 68. Ofthe 7 municipal boroughs which the county contains Arundel, Chichester, Hastings, and Rye existed long before the passing of the Municipal Corpora- tions Act, 1835 ; Brighton was incorporated in 1854, Lewes in 1881, and Eastbourne in 1883. Winchelsea, Seaford, Pevensey, and Mid- hurst were unreformed corporations existing under old charters, the first being governed by a mayor and the last three by bailiffs, but all their privileges have lately been abolished. ‘‘ Sussex,” as Mr Freeman observes,‘ ‘‘is no shire, no department, but a component element of England, older than England.” The diocese of Chi- chester is nearly coextensive with the county and the old kingdom of Sussex. In the year 681 the county was converted to Christianity by St Wilfrid (afterwards archbishop of York), who founded the see of Selsey, but in 1075 the see was transferred from Selsey to Chichester. The diocese consists of two archdeaconries, Lewes and Chichester, and five deaneries. There are 322 civil parishes, with parts of seven others. |

Prior to the Reform Bill of 1832 Sussex returned twenty-eight Parla. members to the House of Commons, two for the county and two mentary eacli for the boroughs of Arundel, Bramber, Chichester, East Grin- repre stead, Hastings, Horsham, Lewes, Midhurst, New Shoreham (with sentation the rape of Bramber), Rye, Seaford, Steyning, and Winchelsea, —_ The borough of New Shoreham was in 1771 added to the rape of Bramber. In

1832 Bramber, East Grinstead, Seaford, Steyning, and Winchelsea were entirely disfranchised, the first-named being classed with the worst of the ‘‘rotten” boroughs ; Arundel, Hors- ham, Midhurst, and Rye were each deprived of one member; the county was divided into two parts (Hast and West), each returning two members ; and a new borough, Brighton, was created,,to which two members were allotted. Chichester and Lewes were each de- prived of one member in 1867, and Arundel was disfranchised in 1868. The Redistribution of Seats Act, 1885, disfranchised Chi- chester, Horsham, Midhurst, New Shoreham (with. the rape of Bramber), and Rye, and deprived Hastings of one member. It also divided the county into six (instead of two) divisions, viz., Lewes, Southern or Eastbourne, Eastern or Rye, South-western or Chiches- ter, Northern or East Grinstead, North-western or Horsham, each returning one member. Brighton still retains two members.

According to the latest owners of land fetwrn (1873), there were Land: 11 proprietors with more than 10,000 acres each ; 8 of 5000 to 10,000 ; OwneT 1015 of 100 and less than 5000 ; of 10 and less than 100 acres, 1677; of 1 and less than 10, 2347; and of less than an acre, 14,675,— i making a grand total of 19,733 landowners, having a gross esti- , mated rental of £2,418,522 ; there were in addition 23,788 acres of common or waste lands. The eleven principal landowners were— q Lord Leconfield, 30,221 acres; the duke of Norfolk, 19,217; the Par duke of Richmond, 17,117; the earl of Chichester, 16,232; the ’ marquis of Abergavenny, 15,364; Rev. John Goring, 14,139; the earl of Ashburnham, 14,051; the earl of Egmont, 14,021; Viscount Gage, 18,739; the Earl De la Warr, 11,185; and the duke of Devon- shire, 11,062. At the time of the Domesday survey there were 15 tenants in capite, 584 under-tenants, and 2497 bordarit (or cottagers), also 765 cotarii (or cottars). The custom of borough-English, by which land descends to the youngest son, prevailed to an extra- ordinary degree in Sussex, and no less than 140 manors have been catalogued in which it was found.’ Gavelkind tenure existed in | Rye, in the large manor of Brede, and in Coustard manor (in Brede | | parish). ° ° . ° * A icul- | :

The coast district has becn under cultivation from the time ofAgnA® | the Romans and is very fertile, being specially suitable for market ture. |

gardens and for growing fruit trees. ‘The fig gardens of West Tarring are celebrated. Marshall,® describing the Weald in 1788, a ee a ee

a

3 Probably derived from the Icelandic hreppr, signifying land divided by a rope. It is first mentioned in the Domesday survey.

4 English Towns and Districts, p. 125.

5 Suss. Arch. Coll., vi. 164.

§ Rural Economy of the Southern Counties, &c.

Sa

A ee

SUSSEX

says: ‘‘The townships of the Weald are in general very large, owing, as it would seem, to the fewness of sites fit for habitation. .. . Alarge portion of the vale lands remain in a state of common- age, particularly on the outskirts and towards the extremities of the district. . . . There is scarcely an acre of natural herbage or old

ass-land”; of the coast district he observes that there is strong circumstantial evidence that the lands were not only brought to their present form but cultivated before the laying out of town- ships. He also mentions that in the Isle of Selsey he observed some common field land, as well as about Chichester. The South Downs afford excellent pasture for sheep, Sussex being famed for a special breed of blackfaced sheep. The total number in 1886 was 518,665, —seventh in order amongst English counties. The total area of land and water in Sussex is 933,269 acres (1881), of which in 1886 there were 682,072 under crops, bare fallow, and grass, made up of 74,518 acres of wheat, 18,067 of barley, 66,509 of oats, 399 of rye, 6307 of beans, and 9493 of pease,—the total of corn erops being 175,298 acres. The green crops were 73,315 acres in extent, including 3405 of potatoes, 28,686 of

turnips and swedes, 12,152 of mangolds, 326 of carrots, 11,847 of cabbage, kohl-rabi, and rape, and 16,899 of vetches and other green crops. Clover, sain- foin, and grasses under rotation occupied 63,724 acres (47,851 for hay). Permanent pasture or grass amounted to 340,352 acres (117,956 for hay), included chiefly in the South Downs and used for sheep pasture, and the extensive pastures of Pevensey Marsh, used for fattening stock. The total area cultivated with hops was 10,391 acres, Sussex ranking next to Kent. In 1833 the total of hops was only 7701 acres. The number of horses in 1886 was 24,964, of which 20,473 were used solely for agricultural purposes. Cattle in the same year numbered 115,633, of which 40,693 were cows and heifers in niilk or in calf. The total of pigs was 41,064. Poultry in 1885 included 317,712 fowls, the fattening of which for the London markct forms an important industry in the north- eastern part of the county, the centre being at Heathfield.

The earliest statement as to the population of Sussex is made by Bede, who describes the county as containing in the year 681 land of 7000 families; allowing ten to a family (not an unreasonable estimate at that date), the total population would be 70,000. At the time of the Domesday survey (about 400 years later) the total number of tenants in capite, under-tenants, bordarii, cotarii, servi, villani, &c. (in fact all able-bodied males), was 10,410.41 Assuming each of these to represent a family of ten, the total population was then 104,100. In 1693 the county is stated? to have contained 21,537 houses. If seven were allowed to a house at that date, the total population would be 150,759. It is curious, therefore, to observe that in 1801 the population was only 159,311. The decline of the Sussex iron-works probably accounts for the small increase of population during several centuries, although after the massacre of St Bartholomew upwards of 1500 Huguenots landed at Rye, and in 1685 (after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes) many more refugees were added to the county. In 1881 the total population was 490,505, of whom 232,331 were male and 258,174 female. The principal towns were Brighton (population, 107,546; 128,440 in parliamentary borough), Hastings (42,258 ; 47,738 in parliament- ary borough), Chichester (8114), Lewes (10,815), and Rye (4667).

Bede records that St Wilfrid, when he visited the county in 681, taught the people the art of net-fishing. At the timc of the Domes- day survey the

fisheries were extensive, and no less than 285 saline (or salt-works) existed. The customs of the Brighton fishermen were reduced to writing in 1579. The census of 1851 returned 915 fishermen, but a parliamentary return in 1869 stated the number of men and boys to be 2236, and they manned 780 boats. The census of 1881 returned 1471 fishermen. The approximate value of the fish landed at Brighton yearly is about £20,000.

There are now no important industries ; the chief is the brick, tile, and pottery, the main centre of which is St John's Common. The census of 1881 returned 1485 brickmakers in the county. The London, Brighton, and South Coast Railway Company have exten- sive works at Brighton. There is a daily service of passenger steamers from Newhaven to Dieppe in France, and large quantities of fruit, vegetables, butter, and eggs are conveyed from France to London.

The earliest settlers in the county were the Celtic tribes whose memorials are found in the hill-forts of Mount Caburn, Hollingbury, White Hawk, Ditchling Beacon, Devil's Dyke, Chanctonbury Hill, Cissbury, &c., the latter being a great factory for flint implements. They gave the names to the rivers. Little is, however, known respecting them beyond the fact that they had a distinct coinage some two centuries before the Roman invasion,—a coarse imitation of the Greek stater of Philip II. of Macedon. These coins have been found in various parts of Sussex. At the time of Cxsar's landing (55 B.c.) the Belgic tribe of the Regni inhabited the county and had their capital at Regnum (Chichester). Sir G. B. Airy fixed on

Pevensey as the place of Czxsar's landings in 55 and 54 B.c.; this eee eS

1 Sir H. Ellis, General Introduction to Domesday Book. | a. 2 Account by John Houghton, F.R.S., of Acres and Houses in each County (King's

Pamphlets, Brit. Mus.).

is, however, much disputed, and opinion generally puts the landing near Deal. A few years after this Sussex appears to have formed part of the kingdom of Commius, a British chieftain, and upon his death seems to have

been allotted to his son Tincommius. These two are the only British rulers of the county whose coins have been found. Upon the conquest of Britain under Claudius the Romans found a ready tool in a king named Cogidubnus, who is mentioned by Tacitus, and who was created imperial legate, and may probably be identified with the king of that name mentioned in the cele- brated inscription on the temple of Neptune and Minerva found at Chichester. Sussex was reduced to submission prior to the reign of Vespasian, and Major-General Pitt-Rivers suggests that the hill-fort of Mount Caburn may have been one of the twenty oppida Suetonius states to have been reduced by that emperor. Roman settlements became numerous in the county and villas sprang up, the remains of which are still occasionally found, the chief being that at Bignor, near Stane Street, the Roman road connecting Chichester with London and still partly traceable. A fortress was erected at Anderida (Pevensey), and there was another town named Mutu- antonis, which is thought to be Lewes; but, having regard to the Antons in West Sussex, it may have been situated farther west than Lewes, perhaps at Littlehampton. Sussex was the first county invaded by the Saxons, who in 477 landed under Hlle at Keynor near Chichester. After fourteen years of struggle they reached the point where the South Downs abut on the sea at Beachy Head, and in 491, as the Saxon Chronicle grimly records, ‘‘ Aille and Cissa beset Andredes-ceaster (Anderida), and slew all that were therein, nor was there a Briton left there any more.” This resulted in the formation of a distinct kingdom of South Saxons, whence its name of Sussex. The subjugation of the county was very complete, for it is still one of the most thoroughly Saxon counties in England, and its inhabitants, speech, place-names, customs, &c., are almost entirely Saxon. The next important event in the history of the county was the landing of William of Normandy (28th September 1066), followed by the battle of Senlac* or Hastings (14th October 1066). The Conqueror erected on the battlefield a state abbey dedi- cated to St Martin, but it was not completed until after his death. The next chief event was the battle of Lewes between Henry ITI. and the barons under Simon de Montfort in 1264, which “ wiped out the stain—if stain it were—of Senlac.” The only other import- ant events have been the rebellion of Jack Cade in 1450, which received very substantial support in East Sussex, and the naval engagement fought off Beachy Head in 1690, in which the English and Dutch fleets combined were defeated by the

French. Charles II. in his flight after the battle of Worcester escaped in 1651 from Brighton in a fishing-boat.

The foremost place amongst the illustrious natives of Sussex must be assigned to Shelley the poet. Of statesmen we have Richard Cobden and John Selden, and of eminent ecclesiastics Archbishops Frewen, John Peckham, and William Juxon, also Arch- deacon Hare. Its poets include Thomas Otway, Thomas Sackville (afterwards earl of Dorset), and John Fletcher. Of antiquaries we find Sir William Burrell, John Elliot, Rev. Thomas W. Horsfield, Mark Antony Lower, Dr Mantell (geologist), and Dr Richard Russell (founder of modern Brighton).

Dialect.—A large number of Saxon words are still retained and pronounced in the old style ; thus gate becomes ge-at. The letter a is very broad in all words, as if followed by w, and in fact con- verts words of one syllable into words of two, as faiis (face), tadist (taste), &c. Again, a before double d becomes ar, as arder and larder for adder and ladder ; ot is like a long 7, as spile (spoil), intment (ointment) ; an ¢ is substituted for a in such words as rag, flag, &e. The French refugees in the 16th and 17th centuries in- troduced many words which are still in use. Thus a Sussex woman when unprepared to receive visitors says she is in dishabille (désha- billé, undress); if her child is unwell, it looks pekid (piqué), if fretful is a little peter-gricvous (petit-grief) ; she cooks with a broach (broche, a spit), and talks of coasts (coste, Old French) or ribs of meat, &c. There is an excellent Dictionary of the Sussex Dialect by the Rev. W. D. Parish.

Bibliography.— Amongst standard historical works dealing with Sussex his- tory are E. A. Freeman’s History of the Norman Conquest and Life of William Rufus ; J. R. Green’s Making of England; W. H. Blaauw’s The Barons’ War; and Kemble’s Saxons in England. The general history of the county is dealt with in Horsfield’s History of Sussex; Dallaway and Cartwright’s History of the Western Division of the County of Sussex; M. A. Lower’s Compendious History of Sussea; Dudley C. Elwes and Charles J. Robinson’s History of the Castles, Mansions, and Manors of Western Sussex; P. de Putron’s Nooks and Corners of Old Sussex; W. R. W. Stephens’s Diocesan Histories (The South Saxon Diocese: Selsey—Chichester); Sussex Archxological Society’s Collections, 34 vols., and

index to the first 25 vols.; Domesday Book in relation to the County of Sussex (1886). See also C. Fleet, Glimpses of our Sussex Ancestors, two series ; Swainson, Chichester Cathedral ; Col. Lane-Fox (now Pitt-Rivers), ‘‘ Examination into the Character and Probable Origin of the Hill Forts of Sussex,” in Archwologia, xli. 27, and ‘* Further Remarks,” &c., ib., p. 53; G. Slade Butler, Topographica Sussex- iana; M.A. Lower, The Churches of Sussex (illustrated by R. Nibbs) and The Worthies of Sussex; J. C. Egerton, Sussex Folk and Sussex Ways; Proceedings of the Brighton and Sussex Natural History Society; W.E. Baxter, The Domesday

Book for the County of Sussex, being that portion of a Return of Owners of Land in 1873 which refers to Sussex, Lewes, 1876; J.D. Perry, Historical and Descriptive

3 The hill of Senlac is now occupied by the abbey and town of Battle.

Account of the Coast of Sussex; Frederick Dixon, The Geology of Sussex; M. A. Lower, Chronicles of Pevensey; William Topley, Memoirs of the Geological Survey of England and Wales: Geology of the Weald, parts of the Counties of Kent, Surrey, Sussex, and Hants; J. G. Bishop, Brighton Pavilion and its Royal Associations ; Merrifield, A Sketch of the Natural History of Brighton and its Vicinity, 1864; H. D. Gordon, The History of Harting ; Basil Champneys, A Quiet Corner of Eng- land : Studies of Landscape and Architecture in Winchelsea, Rye, and the Romney

Marsh, 1874; M. A. Tierney, History and Antiquities of the Castle and Town of

Arundel ; Holloway, History of Rye; Horsfield, History and Antiquities of Lewes; W. D. Cooper, History of Winchelsea; M. A. Lower, Chronicles of Battle Abbey ; Howard, Hastings Past and Present, &c. (F. E. 8.)
SUTHERLAND, a northern maritime county of Scot- land, is bounded E. by Caithness, 8.E. by Moray Firth, S. and S.W. by Ross and a part of Cromarty, and N. and W. by the Atlantic and the North Sea. The area is 1,297,846 acres, or nearly 2028 square miles. The northern and western shores are broken and irregular, in some cases deeply indented, and in the

north-west, at Cape Wrath, near Durness, at Whiten Head, and farther south at the island of Handa there are ranges of wildly precipitous cliffs. Numerous islands stud the larger inlets on this coast; the only ones inhabited in 1881 were Oldney with four persons and Roan (in Kyle of Tongue) with forty-three ; Handa, which had eight inhabitants in 1871, had none in 1881. On the north coast the principal sea lochs are the Kyle of Tongue, Loch Erriboll, and the Kyle of Durness, and on the west coast Loch Inchard, Loch Laxford, the various branches of Eddrachillis Bay, and Loch Inver. The eastern shore is low and comparatively regular, the only inlets being Loch Fleet and Dornoch Firth. With the excep- tion of the narrow plain along the east coast, various stretches of low ground on the west coast, and the low grounds adjoining the rivers and inland lochs, the surface consists chiefly of a succession of irregular elevations of from 500 to over 3000 feet in height. Much of the western district adjoining the coast from Cape Wrath southwards is occupied by Archzan gneiss, forming a series of bare rounded knolls. Resting unconformably on the gneiss are deposits of grits and sandstones, generally regarded as of Cambrian age, rising into wild cliffs between Cape Wrath and the Kyle of Durness. These are succeeded unconformably by Silurian strata, specially developed in the neighbourhood of Durness and Erriboll; in the former region they form a basin occupied chiefly by the limestone series, containing a remarkable collection of fossils, and at Erriboll, from which the strata at Durness are separated by a great dis- location, they present a remarkable series of horizontal dis- placements. Towards the east the gneiss is intermixed with granite and syenite, which cap the summits of a few of the mountains. Outliers of Old Red Sandstone also occur in this eastern mountainous region, sometimes in masses of coarse conglomerate. The highest mountain summit in Sutherland is Benmore Assynt (3273 feet), the culminating peak of a fine range of Silurian quartzites and limestone rocks lying to the south-east of Loch Assynt, while to the south-west are the picturesque conical summit of Canisp (2779 feet) and the curious Suilven (2399 feet) with its forked top. The next highest and most picturesque series of mountain groups occurs in the north-eastern region, south of the Kyle of Tongue,—Ben Hope, a rounded mass with imposing precipices rising near Loch Hope to a height of 3040 feet, while to the eastward is the picturesque Ben Loyal or Laoghal (2504 feet), formed of granite, and south from it, near Loch Naver, the great bulk of Ben Klibreck (3154 feet). Numerous other summits

attain a height of over 2000 feet, but the greater proportion of the mountain- ous region consists of elevated moorlands, bleak and un- interesting, except when the heather assumes its purple tints in autumn. In the lower region along the shores of Moray Firth the Old Red Sandstone occurs resting uncon- formably on the crystalline series of rocks, and is in turn succeeded by an interesting series of Jurassic strata, which, faulted against the older formations, are exposed along the coast from Golspie to Helmsdale. In this series, at Brora,

some seams of coal have been worked, but the presence of iron pyrites greatly lessens its value.

building stone.

Year.) under.

Limestone is wrought in various districts, and there are a number of quarries for Small quantities of gold have been found in some places.

Sutherland has a much greater proportion of its area occupied by water than any other large county in Scotland, the parish of Assynt being completely honeycombed with lochs and tarns. Loch Assynt, the largest of these, 10 miles in length, and narrow and irregular in outline, is entitled to rank, from its picturesque creeks and the grandeur of the adjoining mountain scenery, as the most beautiful loch in Sutherland. Loch Shin, extending 17 miles throughout nearly the whole of Lairg parish, from south-east to north-west, is towards the centre overhung by mountain masses, but otherwise is without interest to any but the angler. It is succeeded northwards by a series of lochs,—Griam, Merkland, More, Stack, Garbadmore, Garbadbeg—extending through the centre of the parish of Eddrachillis. Lochs Merkland and Griam occur, like Loch Shin, in the course of the river Shin, a tributary of the Oykel, which last forms the southern boundary of the county with Ross and falls into Dornoch Firth; Lochs More and Stack are in the valley of the Laxford, running north-westward to Loch Laxford. The Dionard or Grudie flows northwards to the Kyle of Durness, and the Hope, after expanding into Loch Hope, about 10 miles in length, falls into Loch

Erriboll. The Borgie, which in its course forms Loch Loyal and falls into Torrisdale Bay; the Naver, which flows from the loch of that name through a fertile strath to the sea at Betty- hill of Farr; the Strathy; and the Halladale are the prin- cipal other rivers flowing northwards. Those entering Moray Firth are the Oykel; the Helmsdale, which reaches the sea at the town of that name; the Brora, which receives various tributaries before it expands into Loch Brora, 3 miles from its entrance into the sea at Brora; and the Fleet, flowing into Loch Fleet.

Agriculiure.—According to the agricultural returns of 1886 only 3110 acres out of 1,347,033 were in cultivation, less than a fortieth part of the whole area. The best land is that adjoining Moray Firth, where agriculture is in a very advanced condition. Along the river valleys there are, however, many fertile patches. At the beginning of the 19th century the crofters occupied almost every cultivable spot throughout the county ; between 1811 and 1820 they were ejected from their holdings to the number of 15,000, and, according to the statement of Hugh Miller, "*compressed into a wretched selvage of poverty and suffering that fringes the county on its eastern and western shores." The homes they left were, he says, "'improved into a desert"; but in the opinion of those who made the alteration these mountainous parts were as '"'much calculated for the maintenance of stock as they were unfit for the habitation of man." The crofters in Sutherland are now (1887) chiefly confined to the western seaboard, the number of crofts, all on the estates of the duke of Sutherland, amounting, according to the Report of the Crofters Commission, to 1238, and representing a population of 6190. The general agricultural condition of the county has been much improved by successive dukes of Sutherland, aided by the liberality of the Government in the advancement of money for the construction of roads and bridges ; and within recent years large reclamations have been made, in order to obtain 4 wider area for the growth of fodder and turnips. The following

table gives the number and acreage of various classes of holdings in 1875, 1880, and 1885 :—

50 acres and l50 to 100/100 to 800/300t0 500} 500 to | Above acres. acres, acres. | 1000 ac, | 1000 ac.

Total.

1875 |2505) 11,994 | 29 |2069) 42 |6939| 9 3576! 4 /2212) .. 1880 |2498) 12,539 | 34 |2541} 40 |6661| 15 |5730| 5 /2689] .. | .. ’ 1885 |2512) 13,232 | 44 |3259] 41 |7899] 14 |5224) 5 /2899] 2 |8050/2618} 40,063

In 1885 of the class of holdings not exceeding 50 acres in extent 68 were between 20 and 50 acres each, 661 between 5 and 20, 1764 between 2 and 5, and 19 between } and 1 acre.

Out of the 33,110 acres under tillage in 1886 there were 10,343 under corn crops, 5052 under green crops, 8861 rotation grasses,

Se

SE NE ee SS ep ee es

eee

Sa =

Ss UT—SU W

$602 permanent pasture, and 252 fallow. The principal corn crop is oats, which occupied 8392 acres, barley occupying 1845, rye 63, pease 24, and wheat only 19. Potatoes occupied 2014 acres and turnips and swedes 2981. Cattle, chiefly West Highland, short- horn, and crossbred, numbered in 1886 12,806, of which 5576 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf; horses, which include a large number of ponies, although Clydesdales are used on the large farnis, numbered 2665, of which 2015 were used solely for purposes of agriculture ; sheep, the rearing of which is the staple business of the county, the principal breed being Cheviots, nunibered 211,825, of which 158,961 were two years old and above; and pigs, 1037. According to the Report of the Crofters Commission, there were four deer forests within the county, all belonging to the duke of Sutherland, viz., Ben

Armin and Coir-na-fearn, 35,840 acres; Dunrobin, 12,180; Glencanisp, 34,490; and Reay, 64,600; in all 157,110 acres, or more than one-ninth of the total area. There is acomparatively small area under woods, —only 12,260 acres in 1881.

According to the latest (1873) owners and heritages Return the land was divided among 433 proprietors possessing 1,297,253 acres at an annual value of £71,494, or 1s. 1d. an acre all over. There were 348 proprietors who possessed each less than one acre, the total amount which they owned being only 59 acres. The bulk of the land is possessed by the duke of Sutherland, who owned 1,176,454 acres, the other proprietors possessing above 10,000 acres each being Sir Charles W. A. Ross, 55,000; E. C. Sutherland-Walker, 20,000; Sir James Matheson, 18,490 ; and the executors of Gordon M‘Leod, 11,000. The total valued rental of the county in 1674 was only £27,193 Scots or £2266 sterling, while in 1885-86 it was £103,979.

Communication.—The county is well supplied with roads con- sidering its mountainous character and its sparse population. Helmsdale affords the means of export for a considerable amount of farm produce. The Highland Railway enters the county at Inver- shin and after passing northwards to Lairg turns eastwards to the coast, which it skirts to Helmsdale, whence it turns north-westwards along the banks of the Helmsdale, bending afterwards eastwards at Forsinard into Caithness.

Industries. —Various textile manufactures at one time established in the county have been discontinued, the only important manu- facture now remaining being that of whisky at Clyne and Brora. Herring fishing prosecuted from Helmsdale is an important in- dustry, and the cod, ling, and other deep-sea fishings engage a large number of boats and men. ‘There. are valuable salmon fisheries in several of the rivers.

Administration and Population.—The county contains 13 entire parishes and part of the parish of Reay, the remainder being in Caithness. The county returns one member to parliament, and one isreturned for the Wick group of burghs. Dornoch, the only royal burgh, had but 497 inhabitants in 1881, while Golspie had 1548 and Helmsdale 794. The population has not varied greatly in numbers since the beginning of the 19th century. In 1801 the

numbers were 23,117, and in 1881 they were 23,370, a gradual decrease having taken place since 1851, when the numbers reached 25,793. In 1881 there were 11,219 males and 12,151 females. Sutherland is the most sparsely peopled county in Scotland, there being only 12 persons to the square mile, while the average for Scotland is 125. Sutherland forms a joint sheriffdom with Ross and Cromarty, and a sheriff-substitute resides at Dornoch. Small debt circuit courts are held at Helmsdale, Tongue, Melvich, and Scourie, and justice of peace courts at Dornoch, Golspie, Brora, and Helmsdale. .

History and Antiquities.—The ancient Celtic inhabitants were almost entirely expelled by the Scandinavian settlers who occupied the county after its conquest by the Norse jarl Thorfinn in 1034. The remains of Pictish towers are numerous, as are also stone circles. Of other antiquities mention may be made of the vitrified fort on Dun Creich and of the extensive remains of Dun Dornadilla in Durness parish. After the conquest of the district by the Scot- tish kings, Sutherland was conferred on Hugh Freskin (a descendant of Freskin of Moravia or Moray), whose son William in 1228 was created ear] of Sutherland by Alexander II. The nineteenth earl of Sutherland was created duke in 1833. The seat of the ancient episcopal sce of Sutherland and Caithness was at Dornoch, where a cathedral was erected by Gilbert of Moravia (1222-1245), of which the ancient tower, attached to the modern parish church, still remains.

See Sir Robert Gordon’s History of the Earldom of Sutherland, 1813; Hugh

Miller’s Sutherland as it is, 1843; and C. W. G. St John’s Tour in Sutherland- shire, 1849. JM 105 1BE))

SUTTEE, the name given by English writers to the rite of burning a widow on the funeral pyre of her husband a$ practised among certain Hindu castes, and especially among the Rajputs. The word saté (as it should rather be written) properly denotes the wife who so sacrifices herself, not the rite itself, and means “a good woman,” “a faithful

| wife.” The sacrifice was not actually forced on a wife, but

it was strongly recommended by public opinion as a means to her own happiness and that of her husband in the future state, and the alternative was a life of degraded and miser- able widowhood. The practice was current in India when the Macedonians first touched that country (Diod. Sic., xix. 33), and it lasted into the 19th century, having been toler- ated even by English rulers till 1829. (See Inp1a, vol. xii. p. 806.) The subject is illustrated by copious quota- tions from ancient and modern authorities in Yule's Anglo-Indian Glossary, p. 666 sg., and by comparison of similar rites among other nations in Tylor's Primitive Culture, ch. xi. It has its root in the primitive view of the future life, which regards the dead as having similar needs to the living. The wife is sent into the world of shades with her husband, just as arms, clothing, or treasure are buried in his tomb, or slaves are slain to attend their master in the underworld. The Indian custom is not, therefore, properly a part of Brahmanism ; but it was adopted by the ministers of that religion, who strained their sacred texts to find support for it.

SUTTON COLDFIELD, an ancient market town and municipal borough of Warwickshire, England, is situated on the London and North-Western Railway, 8 miles south of Lichfield and 7 north-east of Birmingham. The town has been greatly increased of late years by the erection of villas for persons having their business offices in Birming- ham, Walsall, and other towns. The church of the Holy Trinity—Early English and Late Perpendicular, restored in 1874 and enlarged in 1879—contains a fine Norman font and the tomb of Bishop Vesey. He obtained from Henry VIII. the grant of the park and manorial rights for the benefit of the town, the annual value (now about £2000) being expended in charities and education. On the pictur- esque park near the town, 2400 acres in extent, the in- habitants have the right of grazing horses and cattle at a small fee. A town-hall was erected in 1859; in it there is a good library. The corporation formerly consisted of a warden and 24 members; but in 1885 Sutton obtained a municipal charter, by which it is divided into six wards, with an alderman and three councillors for each ward. The population of the township in 1871 was 5936, and in 1881 it was 7737. .

Sutton was at one time a royal manor and an apanage of the earls of Warwick. It owes much of its prosperity to the gifts of John Vesey (Voysey), bishop of Exeter in the 16th century, who was a native of the place. In its

charter of incorporation, 20th Henry VIII., it is called the royal town of Sutton Coldfield.

SUTTON-IN-ASHFIELD, a town of Nottinghamshire, England, is situated on an eminence on the Nottingham and Worksop and the Erewash Valley Railways, 3 miles west-south-west of Mansfield. The church of St Mary Magdalene of the 12th century was restored in 1868. In the churchyard is a yew tree reputed to be 700 years old. There are a number of collieries and limeworks in the vicinity. Cotton hosiery and thread are the principal manufactures. The dukeof Portland is lord of the manor. The population of the urban sanitary district (area, 4855 acres) in 1871 was 7574, and in 1881 it was 8523.

SUWAEKI, a government of Russian Poland, occupies the north-east corner of the kingdom, extending to the north between East Prussia and the Russian governments of Kovno, Vilna, and Grodno. Its area is 4846 square miles. It covers the east of the low swelling, studded with lakes, which skirts the south coast of the Baltic (see PoLaND), its highest parts reaching 800 to 1000 feet above the sea. Its northern slopes descend to the valley of the lower Niemen, while in the south it falls away gently to the marshy tract of the Bebrz. The rivers flow there in deep gorges and valleys, diversifying the surface. Suwatki is watered by the Niemen, which forms its eastern and its northern boundary and is largely used as a channel of communication ; it has many affluents from both slopes

of the swelling. The Augustowo Canal connects the navi- gable Hancza, tributary of the Niemen, with a tributary of the Bebrz, which belongs to the basin of the Vistula, and an active traffic is carried on on this canal. The population was 606,573 in 1883, the increase being 3400 during the year. It hasa most varied composition, embracing Lithu- anians (the prevailing element), who number about four- tenths of the whole (Zhmuds, 31°5 per cent. ; Lithuanians proper, 10°3), Poles (28°4, of whom 5°3 are Mazurs), Jews (17°2), Germans (6°8, but they are rapidly increasing), and White Russians (4°6). In religion the Catholics are pre- dominant (449,476 in 1883); the Jews come next (98,743); there are also 38,610 Protestants, 13,275 Orthodox Greeks, and 6246 Raskolniks.

Tertiary and Chalk deposits are widely spread in Suwatki, and the entire surface is covered with Post-Tertiary deposits. The bottom moraine of the great ice-sheet of North Germany, containing scratched boulders and furrowed by depressions having a direction north-north-east to south-south-west,! covers immense tracts of the ridge of the lake-districts and its slopes, while limited spaces are covered with well-washed glacial sands and gravel. On the northern slopes of the coast-ridge, the boulder-clay being covered with lacustrine deposits, there are at many places layers of fertile soil; and in the southern parts of the province the boulder-clay is very stony, and sometimes covered with gravel. Still, nearly nine-tenths of the surface are considered suitable for cultivation. Agriculture is the chief occupation, and potatoes are extensively grown for export to Prussia, where they are used for the manufac- ture of spirits, which are smuggled into the province. The manu- factures are unimportant (600 workinen; annual produce valued at £124,000, one-half being due to distilleries), All manufactured wares are imported, mostly from Prussia; and all trade is in the hands of Jews. The educational institutions include two gymnasia for boys, one for girls, one seminary for teachers (at Weiwery), one Catholic seminary, and 196 lower grade schools, having altogether an aggregate of 13,198 scholars in 1884. Suwatki is divided into seven districts, the chief towns of which with their populations in 1882 were—SuWALKI (see below), Augustowo (11,100), Kalwarya (10,600), Mariampol (5610), Seiny (4035), Wilkowiszki (6700), and Wtadistawow (9300). Wierzbolowo (3550), an important custom-house, situated on the railway from St Petersburg to Berlin, also has municipal institutions.

SUWAEKI, capital of the above government, is situated at the source of the Hancza, tributary of the Niemen, 75 miles north-west of Grodno. In the 15th century it was but a small village, lost amidst forests, and peopled by Lithuanians. In the end of the 18th century it became the capital of the Augustowo government, but never had any importance, except as the seat of the local authorities. Since 1834 it has been the capital of the government of Suwatki. Its population was 18,640 in 1882.

SUWAROFF, or Suvororr, ALEXANDER VASILIEVICH (1729-1800), Russian general, was born at Moscow on 24th November 1729, the descendant of a Swede named Suvor who emigrated to Russia in 1622.

Suwaroff entered the army at an early age and first distinguished himself at the battle of Kunersdorf in 1759, where he acted as aide-de-camp to General Fermor. Throughout the Seven Years' War he was conspicuous for his bravery and military skill. He next took part in the battles between the Russians and Poles at the period of the first dismemberment of Poland. Being afterwards transferred to the banks of the Danube (1773), he there in the cam- paigns against the Turks laid the foundation of his repu- tation as a military commander. In 1775 he put an end to the formidable revolt of Pugatcheff, who was brought in chains to Moscow and there decapitated. In 1789 Suwaroff defeated the Turks at Fokshani (Moldavia), and again in the same year on the Rimnik. In 1790 he took by assault the town of Ismail, on which occasion he sent his well-known couplet to the empress. On the termina- tion of this war Suwaroff was summoned to another cam- paign against the Poles. After the defeat of Kosciusko by Fersen at Macieowice in Siedlce (1794) he marched on

1 Hedroits, in Proc. Russ. Geol. Committee, iii., 1884.

w

Warsaw, and captured its suburb Praga, where 15,000 Poles were massacred. Upon this the city capitulated, and the Russian general was made field-marshal. He re. mained in Poland till 1795 and was received in triumph on his return to St Petersburg. In November 1796 the empress Catherine, his firm friend and admirer, died. On the accession of Paul, who always laboured to undo his mother's work, Suwaroff fell into disgrace and was banished to his country-seat at Kontchanskoe in the government of Novgorod. There he remained some time in retirement. He unsparingly criticized the new military tactics and dress introduced by the emperor, and some of his caustic verses reached the ears of Paul. His conduct was therefore watched and his correspondence with his wife, who had remained at Moscow—for his marriage relations had not been happy—was tampered with. On Sundays he tolled the bell for church and sang among the rustics in the village choir. On week days he worked among them ina smock frock. But in February 1799 he was summoned by the emperor to assist in the campaign with the Austrians against the French. Suwaroff took command of the com- bined forces at Verona. He attacked Moreau, the French

general, at Cassano, the ford of the Adda, and completely defeated him, taking about 3000 prisoners; he then made a triumphal entry into Milan. He next defeated Mac- donald on the Trebbia in a sanguinary engagement which lasted three days, from the 17th to the 19th of June (1799). Soon afterwards Joubert was defeated and slain at Novi (15th August). But the importance of these sue- cesses was neutralized by the constant squabbles between Suwaroff and the Austrian commanders. The Russian general now received orders to join Korsakoff in Switzer- land and to assist him in driving the French from that country. Heaccordingly crossed the Alps, suffering severe losses, but on his arrival learned that Korsakoff had been previously defeated by Masséna. It only remained for him to effect a retreat with the shattered remains of his army. He finally reached his winter quarters, between the rivers Iller and Lech, and thence directed his home- ward march to Russia. The emperor Paul, who soon after this time entirely changed his policy and made an alliance with Bonaparte, recalled Suwaroff in disgrace, and on his return refused to see him. The veteran retired to his country-seat, where he died on the 18th of May 1800. Lord Whitworth, the English ambassador, was the only person of distinction present at the funeral of this remark- able man. He lies buried in the church of the Annuncia- tion in the Alexandro-Nevskii monastery, the simple in- scription on his grave being, according to his own direction, “ Here lies Suwaroff.”

Among the Russians the memory of Suwaroff is cherished as that ofa great and successful general, but he hardly enjoys such a reputa- tion among foreigners, who generally look upon his victories as due rather to the huge masses of men under his control than to military genius. His tactics seem to have been somewhat Oriental. He formed no general plans for his campaigns, but trusted to celerity of movement and blows rapidly struck. He was terribly reckless of human life, neither sparing his own soldiers nor showing mercy to the conquered. And yet we find him the subject of exaggerated eulogy among English writers in the early part of the 19th century. He was a man of great simplicity of manners, and while on a*cam- paign lived as a common soldier, sleeping on straw and contenting himself with the humblest fare. But he had himself passed through all the gradations of military service, and had been for many years a private soldier; moreover, his education had been of the rudest kind. He affected the habits

of a humourist, and his gibes pro- cured him many enemies. He had all the natural contempt of a man of ability and action for ignorant favourites and ornamental carpet-knights. Droll stories, in keeping with the well-known eccentricity of his character, are told of his manner of life in camp-

SVEABORG, an important fortress of Finland, built by Count Ehrensvird in 1749 on seven small islands off the harbour of Hetstncrors (g.v.). It is the seat of a great naval harbour and arsenal.

SU W—S V E

SWA—SWA

SWABIA, Suara, or Suevia (Germ. Schwaben), is the name of an ancient duchy in the south-west part of Germany, afterwards transferred to one of the ten great circles into which the empire was divided in the reign of Maximilian J. (1493-1519). At present the official use of the name is confined to a province of Bavaria (capital, Augsburg), comprising a mere fragment of the former Swabia, but in common use it is still applied to the districts included in the old duchy. The duchy of Swabia was bounded on the N. by the Rhenish Palatinate, on the E. by the Lech (separating it from the duchy of Bavaria), on the S. by Switzerland, the Lake of Constance, and Vorarl- berg, and on the W. by the Rhine. It corresponds roughly to the modern Wiirtemberg, Baden, and Hohenzollern, with part of Bavaria. The circle of Swabia coincided more nearly than most with the duchy from which it was named, but was rather more extensive. It was bounded by Switzerland, France (after the cession of Alsace), and the circles of the Upper and Lower Rhine, Franconia, Bavaria, and Austria. Its area was about 13,500 square miles. The Swabian circle contained more independent states of the empire than any other, including the countship (after- wards duchy) of Wiirtemberg, the margraviate of Baden, the principalities of Hohenzollern and Liechtenstein, a whole series of smaller secular and ecclesiastical principalities, and upwards of thirty free imperial towns (Augsburg, Ulm, &c.).

Swabia is intersected from west to east by the Danube, and.

is one of the most mountainous (Black Forest, Swabian Jura) and picturesque parts of the German empire. It is also very fertile. The Swabians are a strong, big-framed, and good-humoured race, and, though in several popular legends the "'Schwab" plays the part of a 'wise man of Gotham," he is probably no denser than his neighbours. The use of the name of Swabia in connexion with the south-west part of Germany, previously called Alemannia (see ALEMANNI), begins with the 5th century of our era, when the Suevi poured into the country and amalgamated with the Alemanni. It was not, however, till the 8th century, when the dukedom of Alemannia was abolished and Rhetia and Alsace separated from it, that Swabia became the recognized name of the district, henceforth administered by nuncii camere, as representatives of the Frankish emperors. One of these nuncii, who usurped the ancient title of duke of Alemannia, was executed in 917, but two years later Henry I, yielded to the popular will in allowing Count Burkhard I. to style himself duke of Swabia. The dukedom thus founded, which lasted for more than three centuries, repeatedly changed hands, and was generally conferred by the emperors and kings of the Saxon aud Franconian lines on members of their own families. In 1079 it passed into the hands of Frederick I. of Hohenstaufen, the progenitor of a line of German monarchs, and under his successors Swabia had the reputation of being the most civilized and prosperous part of Germany. As, however, the Hohenstaufen line gradually lost strength in its hopeless struggle with the papacy, the Swabian nobles increased in powcr at the expense of the dukes, and several of them became '"'immediate." No duke of Swabia was appointed after the death of Conradin, the last of the Hohenstaufen, in 1268, and his place was henceforth filled in some degree by the count of Wiirtemberg as primus inter pares. For the next 250 years or so the history of Swabia consists of an endless series of feuds between the different members of the duchy, mingled with more or less abortive attempts of the German emperors and others to restore peace. The lesser nobles fought with the greater nobles, the towns banded themselves together against both, and alliances and counter-alliances were formed and dissolved with bewildering rapidity. The ''Schleglerkrieg" is the name given to a bloody contest between the counts of Wiirtemberg and the lesser noblesse in 1367. The most important of the various leagues formed by the towns was the ''Schwibischer Stidtebund" of 1376, the point of which was directed against Wiirtemberg. In 1488 the

Swabian estates,—nobles, prelates, and towns,—weary of constant dissension, joined in the Great Swabian Confederation, the object of which was to maintain peace throughout the country. This league possessed a carcfully drawn up constitu- tion and exercised executive and judicial functions throughout the whole of Swabia, maintaining a standing army to give force to its decrees. Though not successful in completely abolishing war Within Swabia, the confederation was by no means a failure. It Was, for instance, the general of the confederation that put an end to the calamitous Peasants' War of 1525. The Reformation found

ready acceptance in Swabia. Wiirtemberg, Ulm, and some of the other estates even joined in the Schmalkald League; but for this they afterwards had to pay large fines to the emperor, while the towns lost their democratic constitution, and with it most of their political importance. The outstanding feature of Swabian history for some time afterwards may be said to be the struggle for supre- macy between the Protestant Wiirtemberg and the Roman Catholic Austria. In 1512, when all Germany was divided into ten circles, one of them was named the Schwibischer Kreis, or Swabian Circle (see above). The circle received its complete organization in 1563, and retained it practically unchanged till the dissolution of the empire in 1806. Swabia suffered severely in the Thirty Years' War, and it was also one of the scenes of the struggles con- sequent on the French Revolution. But its modern history must be sought for under such headings as WiiRTEMBERG and BADEN.

SWAHILI (Wa-Swahili, 2.¢., "Coast People," from the Arabic sdhil, coast), a term now commonly applied to the inhabitants of Zanzibar and of the opposite mainland between the parallels of 2° and 9° S., who are subjects of the sultan of Zanzibar, and whose mother-tongue is the Ki-Swahili language. According to present local usage no person would be called a Swahili unless he verified these two conditions. The Swahili are essentially a mixed people, in whom the Bantu and Arab elements are mingled in the proportion of about three to one; and the same is true of their speech, which of all the Bantu dialects has been most affected by Arab and other influ- ences. The interest attaching to the Swahili people, who have figured so

largely in the history of African enterprise during the last half century, is thus of a social rather than of a strictly scientific character. The energy and intelligence derived from a large infusion of Semitic blood has enabled them to take a leading part in the develop- ment of trade and the industries, as shown in the wide diffusion of their language, which, like the Hindustani in India and the Guarani in South America, has become the principal medium of intercommunication throughout most of the continent south of the equator. During his journey from the Indian Ocean to the Atlantic Commander Cameron found that a knowledge of this language enabled him everywhere to dispense with the aid of an interpreter, as it was understood by one or more persons in all the tribes along the route. Owing to this circumstance the intelligent and enterprising natives of Zanzibar have been found indispensable assistants in every expedition pene- trating from the eastern seaboard to the interior since they began to be employed by Speke and Burton as porters and escorts. Missionary enterprise has been at work amongst the Swahili, who are all Mohammedans, but with poor results. The language, however, has been carefully studied, and is now better known than perhaps any other member of the Bantu family. There are several varieties, of which the chief are—the archaic Ki-Ngozi in the north about the river Tana, mostly free from foreign elements ; the Ki-Mvita of the Mombasa district, reduced to writing by Krapf; and the Maneno Unguya of Zanzi- bar, which is most affected by Arabic, Persian, Indian, and other foreign influences, but which, nevertheless, is now the literary standard; of it complete grammatical treatises have been published, and into it portions of the Bible have been translated by Bishop Steere.

SWALLOW (A.-S. Swalewe, Icel. Svala, Dutch Zwaluw, Germ. Schwalbe), the bird which of all others is recognized as the harbinger of summer in the northern hemisphere ; for, though some slight differences, varying according to the meridian, are constantly presented by the birds which have their home in Europe, in northern Asia, and in North America respectively, it is difficult to allow to them a specific value ; and consequently a zoologist of wide views,

1 The language was first reduced to writing by the Arabs, who still use the Arabic character. But the European missionaries have wisely replaced this

by the Roman system, which is far more suited for the transliteration of most African, and especially of the Bantu, tongues.

XAIT. — 92

730

while not overlooking this local variation, will regard the Swallow of all these tracts as forming a single species, the LFirundo rustica of Linneus.1 Returning, usually already paired, to its summer-haunts, after its winter-sojourn in southern lands, and generally reaching England about the first week in April, it at once repairs to its old quarters, nearly always around the abodes of men; and, about a month later, the site of the nest is chosen, resort being had in most cases to the very spot that has formerly served the same purpose—the old structure, if still remaining, being restored and refurnished. So trustful is the bird that it commonly establishes itself in any of men's works that will supply the necessary accommodation, and a shed, a barn, or any building with an open roof, a chimney? that affords a support for the nest, or even the room of an inhabited house—if chance should give free access thereto, —to say nothing of extraordinary positions, may be the place of its choice. Wheresoever placed, the nest is formed of small lumps of moist earth, which, carried to the spot in the bird's bill, are duly arranged and modelled, with the aid of short straws or slender sticks, into the required shape. Thisis generally that of a half-saucer, but it varies according to the exigencies of the site. The materials dry quickly into a hard crust, which is lined with soft feathers, and therein are laid from four to six white eggs, blotched and speckled with grey and orange-brown deepening into black. Two broods are usually reared in the season, and the young on leaving the nest soon make their way to some leafless bough, whence they try their powers of flight, at first accompanying their parents in short excursions on the wing, receiving from them the food themselves are as yet unable to capture, until able to shift for themselves. They collect in flocks, often of many hundreds, and finally leave the country about the end of August or early in September, to be followed, after a few weeks, by their progenitors. The Swallows of Europe doubtless pass into Africa far beyond the equator,? and those of Northern Asia, though many stop in India or Burmah, even further to the southward, occasionally reaching Australia,

while those of North America extend their winter-wanderings to southern Brazil; but, whithersoever they then resort, they during that season moult their feathers, and this fact affords one of the strongest arguments against the popular belief (which, curious to say, is still partly if not fully entertained by many who should know better) of their becoming torpid in winter, for a state of torpidity would suspend all animal action.4 The chestnut forehead and

throat, the shining steel-blue upper plumage, and the dusky-_

white—in some cases reddening so as almost to vie with the frontal and gular patches—of the lower parts are well known to every person of observation, as is the markedly forked tail, which is become proverbial of this bird.

1 Dr Stejneger (one of the chief leaders in the recent American movement, the results though not the intention of which would be the subversion of much of the nomenclature of birds hitherto thought in Europe to have been established on tolerably firm principles) would apply to the Swallow the generic term of Chelidon, generally accepted for the MARTIN (vol. xv. p. 581), and to the latter Hirundo. Herein he is technically incorrect, for one of the first principles of zoological nomenclature has always been that a generic term, to be valid, must be defined. In the absence of definition such a term: may be, by courtesy, occasionally accepted ; but this courtesy has never been, nor except in America is likely to be, extended to the misapplication here in question,

- Hence the common English name of ‘‘Chimney-Swallow.” In North America it is usually the ‘‘ Barn-Swallow.”

3 It must be noted that the Swallow has been observed in England in every month of the year; but its presence from the begiuning of December to the middle of March is an extremely rare occurrence.

4 See John Hunter’s Essays and Observations in Natural Mistory, edited by Sir R. Owen in 1861 (ii. p. 280). An excellent biblio- graphy of the Swallow-torpidity controversy, up to 1878, is given by Prof. Coues (Birds

of the Colorado Valley, pp. 378-390), who seems still to hanker after the ancient faith in ‘‘ hibernation.”

SWA—SWA

Taking the word Swallow in a more extended sense, it is used for all the members of the Family Hirundinidz,® excepting a few to which the name Martin (vol. xv. p. 581) has been applied, and this Family includes from 80 to 100 species, which have been placed in many different genera. The true Swallow has very many affines, some of which range almost as widely as itself docs, while others seeni to have curiously restricted limits, and much the same may be said of several of its more distant relatives, But altogether the Family forms one of the most circumscribed and therefore one of the most natural groups of Oscines, having no near allies; for, though in outward appearance and in some habits the Swallows bear a considerable resemblance to Swirrs (g.v.), the latter belong to a very different Order, and are not Passerine birds at all, as their structure, both internal and external, proves. It has been sometimes stated that the Hirundinidew have their nearest relations in the FiycaTcuers (vol. ix. p. 351); but the assertion is very questionable, and the supposition that they are allied to the Ampelidx (of. Waxwine), though possibly better founded, has not as yet been confirmed by auy anatomical investi- gation. An affinity to the Indian and Australian Avtamus (the species of which genus are often known as Wood-Swallows, or Swallow-Shrikes) has also been suggested; and it may turn out that this genus, with its neighbours, may be the direct and lesg modified descendants of a generalized type, whence the Hirundinide have diverged; but at present it would seem as if the suggestion originated only in the similarity of certain habits, such as swift flight and the capacity of uninterruptedly taking and swallowing insect-food on the wing,

Swallows are nearly cosmopolitan birds, inhabiting every considerable country except New Zealand, wherein only a stray example, presumably from Australia, occasion- ally occurs. (A. N.)

SWAMMERDAM, Joun (1637-1680), may be ranked almost with Leeuwenhoek as one of the most eminent Dutch naturalists of the 17th century. Born at Amster- dam in 1637, the son of an apothecary and naturalist, he was destined for the church ; but he insisted on passing over to

the profession of medicine, meanwhile passion- ately devoting himself to the study of insects. Having necessarily to interest himself in human anatomy, he devoted much attention to the preservation and better demonstration of the various structures, and he devised the method of studying the circulatory system by means of injections, so doing the greatest service to practical anatomy. The fame of his collection soon became Euro- pean ; thus the grand-duke of Tuscany offered him 12,000 florins for his collection, on condition of his coming to Florence to continue it. His General History of Insects and other kindred works lie at the foundation of modern entomology, and include many important discoveries. Thus he cleared up the subject of the metamorphosis of insects, and in this and other ways laid the beginnings of their natural classification, while his researches on the anatomy of mayflies and bees were also of fundamental importance. His devotion to science led to his neglect of practice ; his father greatly resented this, and stopped all supplies ; and thus Swaimmerdam experienced a period of considerable privation, which had the most unfortunate consequences to his health, both bodily and mental. In 1675 he published his History of the Ephemera, and in the same year his father died, leaving him an adequate fortune, but the niischief was irreparable. He became a hypochondriac and mystic, joined the followers of Antoinette Bourignon, and died at Amsterdam in 1680.

SWAN (A.-S. Swan and Swon, Icel. Svanr, Dutch Zwaan, Germ. Schwan), a large swimming-bird, well known from being kept in a half-domesticated condition through- out many parts of Europe, whence it has been carried to

5 An enormous amount of labour has been bestowed upon the Hirundinide by Mr Sharpe (Cat. B. Br. Musewm, x. pp. 85-210), only commensurate, perhaps, with that required for an understanding of the results at which he has arrived. Nothing can better shew the difficulty of unravelling the many puzzles which the Family offers than this; and it is to be hoped that in his finely-ilustrated Monograph which is now in course of publication he will succecd in clearing up some of them.

---

a a Se

pet to

=

S W

other countries. In England it was far more abundant formerly than at present, the young, or Cygnets,! being highly esteemed for the table, and it was under especial enactments for its preservation, and regarded as a “ Bird Royal” that no subject could possess without licence from the crown, the granting of which licence was accompanied by the condition that every bird in a “game” (to use the old legal term) of Swans should bear a distinguishing mark of ownership (cygninota) on the bill. Originally this privilege was conferred on the larger freeholders only, but it was gradually extended, so that in the reign of Eliz- abeth upwards of 900 distinct Swan-marks, being those of private persons or corporations, were recognized by the royal Swanherd, whose jurisdiction extended over the whole kingdom. It is impossible here to enter into further details on this subject, interesting as it is from various points of view.? It is enough to remark that all the legal protection afforded to the Swan points out that it was not indigenous to the British Islands, and indeed it is stated (though ou uncertain authority) to have been introduced to England in the reign of Richard Coeur de Lion ; but it is now so perfectly naturalized that birds having the full power of flight remain in the country. ‘There is no evidence to shew that its numbers are ever increased by immigration from abroad, though it is known to breed as a wild bird not further from our shores than the extreme south of Sweden and possibly in Denmark, whence it may be traced, but with considerable vacuities, in a south- easterly direction to the valley of the Danube and the western part of Central Asia. In Europe, however, no definite limits can be assigned for its natural range, since birds more or less reclaimed and at liberty consort with those that are truly wild, and either induce them to settle in localities beyond its boundary, or of themselves occupy such localities, so that no difference is observable between them and their untamed brethren. From its breeding- grounds, whether they be in Turkestan, in south-eastern Europe, or Scania, the Swan migrates southward towards winter, and at that season may be found in north-western India (though rarely), in Egypt, and on the shores of the Mediterranean.

The Swan just spoken of is by some naturalists named the Mute or Tame Swan, to distinguish it from one to be presently mentioned, but it is the Swan simply of the English languago and literature. Scientifically it is usually known as Cygnus olor or C. mansuetus. It needs little description: its large size, its spotless white plumage, its red bill, surmounted by a black knob (technically the “ berry ”) larger in the male than in the female, its black legs and stately appearance on tho water are familiar, either from figures innumer- able or from direct observation, to almost every one. When left to itself its nest is a large mass of aquatic plants, often piled to the height of a couple of feet and possibly some six feet in diameter. In the midst of this is a hollow which contains the eggs, generally from five to nine in number, of a greyish-olive colour. The period

1 Here, as in so many other cases, we have what may be called the “table-name” of an animal derived from the Norman-French, while that which it bore when alive was of Teutonic origin.

- At the present time the Queen and the Companies of Dyers and Vintners still maintain their Swans on the Thames, and a yearly expedition is made in the month of August to take up the young birds —thence called “Swan-upping ” and corruptly “Swan-hopping ” —- and mark them. The largest Swannery in England, indeed the only one worthy of the name, is that belonging to Lord Ilchester, on the water called the Fleet, lying inside the Chesil Bank on the coast of Dorset, where from 700 to double that number of birds may be kept—a stock doubtless too great for the area, but very sniall when compared with tho numbers that used to be retained on various rivers in the country. The Swanpit at Norwich seems to be the only place now existing for fattening the Cygnets for the table—an expensive process, but one fully appreciated by those who have tasted the Tesults. The English Swan-laws and regulations have been concisely but admirably treated by the late Serjeant Manning (Penny Cyclopedia, xxiii. pp. 271, 272), and the subject of Swan-marks, elucidated by unpublished materials in the British Museum and other libraries, is one of which a compendious account, from an antiquarian and historical point of view, would be very desirable.

of incubation is between five and six weeks, and the young when hatched are clothed in sooty-grey down, which is succeeded by feathers of dark sooty-brown. This suit is gradually replaced by white, but the young birds are more than a twelvemonth old before they lose all trace of colouring and becomo wholly white.

It was, however, noticed by Plot (NW. H. Staffordshire, p. 228) 200 years and more ago that certain Swans on the Trent had white Cygnets ; and it was subsequently observed of such birds that both parents and progeny had legs of a paler colour, while the young had not the “blue bill” of ordinary Swans at the same age that has in some parts of the country given them a name, besides offering a few other minor differences. These being examined by Yarrell led him to announce (Proc. Zool. Society, 1838, p. 19) the birds presenting them as forming a distinct species, C. immutabtlis, to which the English name of “ Polish” Swan had already been attached by the London poulterers.3 There is no question so far as to the facts; the doubt exists as to their bearing in regard to the validity of the so-called “ species.” Though apparently wild birds, answering fairly to the description, occasionally occur in hard winters in Britain and some parts of the European Continent,4 their mother country has not yet been ascertained,—for the epithet “Polish” is but fanciful,—and most of the information respecting them is derived only from reclaimed examples, which are by no means common. Those examined by Yarrell are said to have been distinctly smaller than common Swans, but those recognized of late years are as distinctly larger. The matter requires much more investigation, and it may be remarked that occasionally Swans, so far as is known of the ordinary stock, will produce one or more Cygnets differing from the rest of the brood exactly in the characters which have been assigned to the so-called Polish Swans as specific—namely, their white plumage slightly tinged with buff, their pale legs, and flesh-coloured bill. It may be that here we have a case of far greater interest than the mere question of specific distinction,® in some degree analogous, but yet in an opposite direction, to that of the so-called Pavo nigripennis before mentioned (PEACOCK, vol. xviii. p. 448).

Thus much having been said of tho bird which is nowadays commonly called Swan, and of its allied form, we must turn to other species, and first to one that anciently must have becn the exclusive bearer in England of the name. This is the Whooper, Whistling, or Wild Swan § of modern usage, the Cygnus musicus or C. ferus of most authors, which was doubtless always a winter- visitant to this country, and, though nearly as bulky and quite as. purely white in its adult plumage, is at once recognizable from the species which has been half domesticated by its wholly different but equally graceful carriage, and its bill—which is black at the tip and lemon-yellow for a great part of its base. This entirely distinct species is a native of Iceland, eastern Lapland, and northern Russia, whence it wanders southward in autumn, and the musical tones it utters (contrasting with the silence that has caused its relative to be often called the Mute Swan) have been celebrated from the time of Homer to our own. Otherwise in a general way there is little difference between the habits of the two, and very closely allied to the Whooper is a much smaller species, with very well marked characteristics, known as Bewick's Swan, C. bewicki. This was first indicated as a variety of the last by Pallas, but its specific validity is now fully established. Apart from: size, it may be externally distinguished from the Whooper by the bill having only a small patch of yellow, which inclines to an orange rather than a lemon tint; while internally the difference of the vocal organs is well marked, and its cry, though melodious enough, is unlike. It has a more easterly home in the north than the Whooper, but in winter not unfrequently occurs in Britain. —

Both the species last mentioned have their representatives in North America, and in each case the trans-Atlantic bird is cousid- erably larger than that of the Old World. The first is the Trumpeter-Swan, C. buccinator, which has the bill wholly black, and the second the C. columbianus or americanus'—greatly resem-

i i eS ee 8 M. Gerbe, in his edition of Degland's Ornithologie Européenne (ii. p. 477), makes the amusing mistake of attributing this name to the ''fourrewrs'' (furriers) of London, and of reading it '' Cygne du péle" (polar, and not Polish, Swan) !

4 Chiefly in the north-west, but Lord Lilford has recorded (Jbis, 1860, p. 351) his having met with them in Corfu and Hpirus.

5 The most recent authorities on the Polish Swan are Stevenson, in separately-printed advance sheets (1874) of his Birds of Norfolk (vol. iii.), and Southwell (Trans. Norf. & Norw. Nat. Society, i. pp. 258-260), as well, of course, as Dresser (B. Europe, vi. pp. 429-433, pl. 419, figs. 1, 2).

6 In some districts it is called by wild-fowlers ‘‘ Elk,” which perhaps may be cognate with the Icelandic Al/t and the Old German Elbs or Elps (cf. Gesner, Ornithologia, pp. 358, 359), though by mo- dern Germans Elb-schwan seems to be used for the preceding species,

7 Examples of both these species have been recorded as occurring in Britain, and there can be little doubt that the first has made its way hither. Concerning the second more precise details are required.

bling Bewick’s Swan, but with the coloured patches on the bill of less extent and deepening almost into scarlet. South America produces two very distinct birds commonly regarded as Swans,— the Black-necked Swan and that which is called Cascaroba or Coscaroba. This last, which inhabits the southern extremity of the continent to Chili and the Argentine territory, and visits the Falkland Islands, is the smallest species known,—pure white in colour except the tip of its primaries, but having a red bill and red feet.1 The former, C. melanocorypha or nigricollis, if not dis- covered by earlier navigators, was observed by Narbrough 2d August 1670 in the Strait of Magellan, as announced in 1694 in the first edition of his Voyage (p. 52). It was subsequently found on the Falkland Islands during the French settlement there in 1764-65, as stated by Pernetty (Voyage, ed. 2, ii. pp. 26, 99), and was first technically described in 1782 by Molina (Saggio sulla Stor. Nat. del Chile, pp. 234, 344). Its range seems to be much the same as that of the Cascaroba, except that it comes further to the northward, to the coast of southern Brazil on the east, and perhaps into Bolivia on the west. It is a very handsome bird, of large size, with a bright red nasal knob, a black neck, and the rest of its plumage pure white. It has been introduced into Europe, and breeds freely in confinement.

A greater interest than attaches to the South-American birds last mentioned is that which invests the Black Swan of Australia. Considered for so many centuries to be an impossibility, the knowledge of its existence seems to have impressed (more perhaps than anything else) the popular mind with the notion of the extreme divergence—not to say the contrariety—of the organic products of that country. By a singular stroke of fortune we are able to name the precise day on which this unexpected discovery was made. The Dutch navigator Willem de Vlaming, visiting the west coast of Zuidland (Southland), sent two of his boats on the 6th of January 1697 to explore an estuary he had found. There their crews saw at first two and then more Black Swans, of whicli they caught four, taking two of them alive to Batavia; and Valentyn, who several years later recounted this voyage, gives in his work? a plate representing the ship, boats, and birds, at the mouth of what is now known from this circumstance as Swan River, the most important stream of the thriving colony of West Australia, which has adopted this very bird as its armorial symbol. Valentyn, however, was not the first to publish this interesting discovery. News of it soon reached Amsterdam, and the burgo- master of that city, Witsen by name, himself a fellow of the Royal Society, lost no time in communicating the chief facts ascertained, and among them the finding of the Black Swans, to Martin Lister, by whom they were laid before that society in October 1698, and printed in its Philosophical Transactions (xx. p. 361). Subsequent voyagers, Cook and others, found that the range of the species extended over the greater part of Australia, in many districts of which it wasabundant. It has since rapidly decreased in numbers, and will most likely soon ccase to exist as a wild bird, but its singular and ornamental appearance will probably preserve it as a modified captive in most civilized countries, and perhaps even now there are more Black Swans in a reclaimed condition in other lands than are at large in their mother-country. The species scarcely needs description: the sooty black of its gencral plumage is relieved by the snowy white of its flight-feathers and its coral-like bill banded with ivory.

The Cygnine admittedly form a well-defined group of the Family Anatidz, and there is now no doubt as to its limits, except in the case of the Cascaroba above mentioned. This bird would seem to be, as is so often found in members of the South-American fauna, a more generalized form, presenting several characteristics of the Anatine, while the rest, even its

Black-necked compatriot and the almost wholly Black Swan of Australia, have a higher morphological rank. Excluding from consideration the little-known C. davidi, of the five or six? species of the

1 Dr Stejneger (Proc. U. S. Nat. Museum, 1882, pp. 177-179) has been at much pains to shew that this is no Swan at all, but merely a large Anatine form. Further research may prove that his views are well founded, and that this, with another very imperfectly known species, C. davidi, described by Swinhoe (Proc. Zool. Society, 1870, p. 480) from a single specimen in the Museum of Peking, should be removed from the Sub-Family Cygnine. Of C. coscoroba Mr Gibson remarks (Jbis, 1880, pp. 36, 37) that its "'note is a loud trumpet-call," and that it swims with ''the neck curved and the wings raised after the true Swan model."

2 Commonly quoted as Oud en Nieuw Oost Indien (Amsterdam, 1726). The incidents of the voyage are related in Deel iii. Hoofdst. iv. (which has for its title Description of Banda) pp. 68-71.

3 The C. wunwini doubtfully described by Mr Hume (Jbis, 1871, pp. 412, 413) from India, though recognized by Dr Stejneger (ué supra), seems to be only the immature of the Mute Swan,

Northern hemisphere four present the curious character, somewhat analogous to that found in certain CRANEs (vol. vi. p. 546), of the penetration of the sternum by the trachea nearly to the posterior end of the keel, whence it returns forward and upward again to revert and enter the lungs ; but in the two larger of these species, when adult, the loop of the trachea between the walls of the keel takes a vertical direction, while in the two smaller the bend jg horizontal, thus affording an easy mode of recognizing the respective species of each.4 Fossil remains of more than one species of Swan have been found. The most remark- able is C. falconert, which was nearly a third larger than the Mute Swan, and was described from a Maltese cave by Prof. Parker in the Zoological Transactions (vi. pp. 119- 124, pl. 30). (A. N.) SWANSEA, a municipal and parliamentary borough and large seaport of Glamorganshire, South Wales, is finely situated in an angle between lofty hills, on the river Tawe,

— | 3 . oy A

,),

. \ id ¥ SES \ZAAG PENTRE a a i [Ns a1 4 = ae Z aq ff =—> ~ SS ae BA 5

= we

JEWS Comerany| \ Ls GISBETHILL é S umn woRmmouse TT al Ne ye a =F

PoPPrT KIL)

— ¢ 3 MT PLEASART, A. 4 quanaye,

Kes a\

, –

uy WY

\ i Aw

Wass

TALE OF HALF A MILE (otto the AU a te SE

j

Plan of Swansea.

near its mouth in the beautiful Swansea Bay, a recess of the Bristol Channel, and on the Great Western, London and North-Western, Midland, and Rhondda and Swansea Bay railway lines, 45 miles west-north-west of Cardiff. Being for the most part of comparatively modern growth, the streets are laid out with great regularity. Swan- sea retains few traces of antiquity, and some of its more picturesque features have been destroyed to make room for the construction of docks. Of the old castle,

4 The correct scientific nomenclature of the Swans is a matter that offers many difficulties, but they are of a kind far too technical to have any interest for the general reader. Dr Stejneger, in his learned “Outlines of a Monograph” of the group (ut supra), has employed much research on the subject, with the result (which can only be deemed unhappy) of upsetting nearly all other views hitherto existing, and propounding some which few ornithologists outside of his adopted country are likely to accept, since the principles on which he has gone are not those commonly received, nor (it may perhaps be added) are based on common sense. In the text, as above written, care has been taken to use names which will cause little if any misunderstand: ing, and this probably is all that can be said in the present state 0 confusion.

originally founded in 1099 by Henry Beauchamp, earl of Warwick, to secure possession of his lands in the province of Gower, the principal remains are the keep, built by Bishop Gower of St David’s after the castle had been for some time in ruins, a range of arched dungeons lit by loop-holes, and the hall, now fitted up for use as a volunteer drill hall. There are fragments of a wall with a Gothic window of the hospital of St David, founded by Bishop Gower in 1331. The church of St Mary’s, founded by the same bishop, was rebuilt in 1739, with the exception of the tower and chancel. The modern public buildings include the guildhall, in the Italian style with Corinthian pillars and pilasters, erected in 1846, and comprehending the municipal offices, the crown and nisi prius courts, the council chamber, and the library of the Swansea and Neath Incorporated Law Society ; the royal institution of South Wales, established 1835, a building in the Ionic style, and embracing a library, a lecture hall, and a museum of geology, mineralogy, natural history, and antiquities ; the free public library, schools of art, and art gallery, a fine new building with about 30,000 volumes (including the library of the Rev. Rowland Williams, one of the authors of Essays and Reviews) and a large number of beautiful engravings ; the grammar school, founded by Hugh Gore, bishop of Waterford, in 1682; the market (1830); the cattle market (1864) ; the Albert hall for concerts (1864), with a smaller hall erected in 1881; the agricultural hall ; the working men’s club (1875); the Prince of Wales hall | (1882); and

two theatres. The benevolent institutions include the general hospital, founded in 1817, and rebuilt with the addition of two wings in 1878; the Cambrian institution for the deaf and dumb, founded in 1847, and several times extended; the Swansea and South Wales institute for the blind (1865); the nursing institution (1853); the provident dispensary (1876) ; the eye hospital (1878); the industrial home (1859) ; and the sailors' home (1864). Swansea is specially well supplied with parks and recreation grounds. They include Brynmill grounds be- tween Parkwern and Singleton (1872), 9 acres in extent, and containing a beautiful reservoir and ornamental lawns ; Cwmdonkin park, on the uplands, 13 acres, and command- ing fine views ; the new recreation ground, formed in 1883, Il acres, situated between Brynmill and the Oystermouth road ; Park Llewelyn, to the north of Swansea, 40 acres ; and the St Helen's Field, near the beach, about 20 acres, now being laid out. The population of the municipal borough (area 4363 acres) in 1871 was 51,702, and in 1881 it was 65,597. The population of the parliamentary borough in 1881 was 73,971. Its area then was 4777 acres, but in 1885, when Swansea received independent representation, the area was diminished, the population of this smaller area being 50,043 in 1881.

Swansea owes its prosperity to its situation in the neighbourhood of extensive collieries and to its possession of great natural advant- ages asa harbour. With some exaggeration it has been called the "metallurgical centre of the world," but the title miust at least be allowed in reference to copper, which is imported to be smelted from all parts of the world. The smelting of copper, which has been carricd on in the district from the time of Elizabeth, is the distinctive and most important industry of the town, the others including tinplate manufacture, lead smelting, spelter and zinc mannfacture, the extraction and manufacture of silver, nickel, and cobalt, iron smelting, Siemens steel manufacture, the manufacture of chemicals, of agricultural manure, and of patent fuel, and the construction of railway carriages and waggons. In Swansea Bay there are valuable oyster fisheries. The earliest harbour works on a large scale were those of the South Dock Company, begun in 1847 and opened in 1859. This dock, which has an area of about 13 acres, with a half-tide basin of 4 acres and a lock 300 feet long by 60 feet wide, is used principally for the export of coal. The north dock, completed in 1882, has an area of about 104 acres, in addition to several other smaller docks. Au important addition Was made by the complction of

the Prince of Wales Dock in October 1881, with an area of 23 acres ; and as yet this additional accommo-

|

7393

dation is more than sufficient for the trade of the port. In 1876 the number of sailing and stcam vessels that entered with cargoes and in ballast from foreign countries, British possessions, and coastwise was 7799, of 1,068,062 tons ; the number that cleared being 7549, of 1,041,078 tons. In 1885 the entrances were 7447, of 1,461,248 tons, the clearances 7051, of 1,366,117 tons. The total average value of the imports of foreign and colonial produce during the five years ending 1885 was about £2,400,000, but has been decreasing ; and the total average value of the exports of the produce of the United Kingdom was about £1,500,000, but has been steadily in- creasing, and has reached over £2,000,000. There is a large trade with France, Portugal, Spain, and the Mediterranean ports. There is also considerable trade with South Africa, and the trade is greater with South than with North America. The exports consist chiefly of the various manufactures of the town, espeeially tin plates, the direct trade in which between Swansea and American ports has within the last two ycars attained great importance ; and the im- ports include chiefly metallic ores, timber, and various kind of pro- visions. Shipbuilding and ship-repairing are carried on, but the industry is of minor importance.

Swansea owes its origin to the erection of the castle in 1099 by Henry Beauchamp, earl 6f Warwick, who introduced into it a gar- rison of English and Flemish colonists. The fortress was frequently assaulted in the 12th and 13th centuries, and in 1260 was burned down by Llewelyn ab Grwfydd, last prince of North Wales. During the insurrection of Owen Glendower against Henry IV. it was again destroyed. Swansca was created a borough by a charter of King John, which is said to be preserved among the records of the Tower of London. The earliest charter in possession of the corporation is that granted by Henry III. in 1234, conferring upon it freedom from toll pontage and othercnstoms. Its privileges were confirmed by Edward II. and Edward III. The town was during the Civil War alternately in the hands of both parties, but in 1647 the castle was dismantled by the Parliamentarians,

after which Oliver Cromwell was made lord of Swansea, of the signiory of Gower, and of the manor of Kelvey. The corporation now consists of a mayor, 6 aldermen, and 18 councillors, and the borough has a commission of the peace. From the reign of Henry VIII. it contri- buted along with other boroughs to return a member to parliament. In 1658 it received a charter from Cromwell permitting it to return a member for itself, but after the Restoration it resumed its character as contributory. In 1832 it became the head of a new district of boroughs, and in 1885 it received separate representation, while a portion of its area was also included in a district of boroughs to which it gives the name. In the reign of Edward IV. the castle came by marriage to the Somerset family, and it is held by the duke of Beaufort, whose title of Baron Herbert of Gower dates from 1506.

SWARTZ, Otor (1760-1818), a celebrated Swedish botanist, was born in 1760, He commenced his botanical studies in Upsala, under Linneus and Thunberg, and began early to make excursions. He made a voyage to America in 1783, visited England in 1788, returned to Sweden in 1789, and was made professor of natural history in Stockholm. He was the author of many systematic works, and largely extended our knowledge of both flowering plants and cryptogams. He died in 1818.

See Sachs, Geschichte d. Botanik.

SWATOW (also, less frequently, Swartow and SHAN- Tow), a port of China, in the province of Kwang-tung, opened to foreign trade in 1869. It is situated at the mouth of the main branch of the river Han, which 30 miles inland flows past the great city of Chow-chu or Tai-chu (Tie-chu), and the surrounding country is more populous and full of towns and villages than any other part of the province. English merchants settled on Double Island in the river as early as 1856 ; but the city, which is built on ground but recently recovered from the sea, was formerly a mere fishing village. The trade of the port has rapidly increased. In 1869 718 vessels of all nations entered or cleared (of 310,500 tons burden), in 1884 1387 vessels (1,282,936 tons)—the total value of the trade being respectively £4,800,000 and £5,519,772. The surrounding country is a great sugar-cane district produc- ing annually about 2,000,000 piculs (= 1334 tb) of sugar, and there is an extensive refinery in the town employing upwards of 600 workmen

and possessing a reservoir for 7,000,000 gallons of water. Next in value comes the manu- facture of bean-cake, which is also imported in large quanti-

ties from New-chwang, Chefoo, Shanghai, Amoy, and Hong- Kong (total import in 1874, 1,408,384 piculs; in 1884, 2,539,710). Among the leading exports are tea (since about 1872); grass-cloth, manufactured at Swatow from so-called Taiwan hemp (the fibre of the Baehmeriu nivea from Formosa) ; pine-apple cloth, manufactured in the villages

about Kieh-Yang (a town 22 miles distant); oranges, for

which the district is famous ; cheap fans ; and pewter, iron, and tin wares. Swatow is also a great emigration port. In 1870 about 22,000 Chinese embarked there for Singa- pore, Bangkok, and Saigon ; and the number of emigrants has since increased so that British vessels alone carry 50,000 to 53,000 per annum. Of the whole foreign trade of the port upwards of 83 per cent. is in British bottoms, the trade with Hong-Kong being of especial importance. The population of Swatow is upwards of 30,000. In 1874 the foreign residents numbered 147 (63 British), in- cluding Double Island.

About 1865 the whole Swatow district was still divided into a number of ‘‘independent townships, eaeh ruled by its own head- men,” and the population was deseribed in the offieial gazetteer as ‘generally rebellious and wicked in the highest degree.” Mr Forrest, British eonsular agent, relates that in that year he was witness to the preparations for a fight between the people living on the opposite sides of the estuary, which was only prevented by an English war-vessel. The Taipings swept over the eountry, and by their ravages and plundering did mueh to tame the independence of the elans. The punishment inflicted in 1869 by Commander Jones on the inhabitants of Otingpui (Ou-ting-pei), about 8 miles from Swatow, for the attack they had made on the boats of H. M.S. ‘‘ Coekehafer,” showed the Chinese authorities that sueh piratieal villages were not so strong as had been supposed. General Fang (a native of Chow-chu-fu) was sent to reduce the district to order, and he earried out his instruetions with remorseless rigour.

SWEAT. See Nurririoy, vol. xvii. p. 685.

SWEATING-SICKNESS. A remarkable form of dis- ease, not known in England before, attracted attention at the very beginning of the reign of Henry VII. It was known indeed a few days after the landing of Henry at Milford Haven on August 7, 1485, as there is clear evidence of its being spoken of before the battle of Bos- worth on August 22. Soon after the arrival of Henry in London on August 28 it broke out in the capital, and caused great mortality. Two lord mayors successively and six aldermen, beside numerous other persons, died in ‘one week, At the end of October, however, the epidemic in London suddenly ceased. In Oxford it had already begun at the end of August, and lasted with great mortality for six weeks. In the course of the autumn it attacked various places, and by the end of December had spread over all England. Then the epidemic disappeared as suddenly as it came. This alarming malady soon became known as the sweating-sickness. It was regarded as being quite distinct from the plague, the pestilential fever, or other epidemics previously known, not only by the special symptom which gave it its name, but also by its extremely rapid and fatal course and by other characters to be noted presently.

From 1485 nothing more was heard of it till 1507, when the second outbreak occurred, which was much less fatal than the first (it is said because the treatment was better understood) and attracted less notice. In 1517 was a third and much more severe epidemic. It began in London in July, and lasted till the middle of December. Many distinguished persons died, including Lord Clinton, Lord Grey of Wilton, Andrea Ammonio, the king’s secre- tary, and others, with an immense number of the common people. In Oxford and Cambridge it was also very fatal, as well as in other towns, where in some cases half the population are said to have perished. There is evidence of the disease having spread to Calais and Antwerp, but with these exceptions it was confined to England.

In 1528 the disease recurred for the fourth time, and

with great severity. It first showed itself in London at the end of May, and speedily spread over the whole of Eng- land, though not into Scotland or

Ireland. In London the mortality was very great; the court was broken up, and Henry VIII. left London, frequently changing his residence. When the epidemic ceased cannot be accurately stated, nor have we any precise estimate of the mortality, The most remarkable fact about this epidemic is that for the first and last time it spread over the Continent. On the 25th July 1528 (English style) or 1529 (Roman style), when it was beginning to decline in London, it suddenly appeared at Hamburg. The story went that the infection was brought by a ship returning from England, the sailors of which were suffering from the disease. However this may have been, the disease spread rapidly, so that in a few weeks more than a thousand persons died. In less than a week it had spread to Liibeck, and thus was the terrible sweating-sickness started on a destructive course, during which it caused fearful mortality throughout eastern Europe. France, Italy, and the southern countries were spared. It spread much in the same way as cholera, pass- ing, in one direction, from north to south, arriving at Switzerland in December, in another northwards to Den- mark, Sweden, and Norway, also eastwards to Lithuania, Poland, and Russia, and westwards to Flanders and Holland, unless indeed the epidemic, which declared itself simultaneously at Antwerp and Amsterdam on the morning of September 27, came from England direct. In each place which it affected it prevailed for a short time only, —generally not more than a fortnight. . By the end of the year it had entirely disappeared, except in eastern Switzer- land, where it lingered into the next year ; and the terrible “English sweat” has never appeared again, at least in the same form, on the Continent.

England was, bowever, destined to suffer from one more outbreak of the disease, which occurred in 155], and with regard to this we have the great advantage of an account by an eye-witness, John Kaye or Caius, the eminent physician. It first appeared at Shrewsbury on April 13, and, after spreading to other towns in Wales and in the midland counties, broke out in London, causing in one week the death of seven hundred and sixty-one persons. At the end of July it ceased in London, but it went through the east of England to the north, until the end of August, when it began to diminish. At the end of September it ceased altogether, without affecting Scotland or Ireland. Nor did it apparently widely affect the Con- tinent, though Caius mentions its occurrence at Calais, and Brasavolus (De Morbo Gallico) speaks of tho English sweating-sickness as raging in Flanders in the year

15d], in which he wrote, causing the death of several thousand persons, and lasting at least till September.

Symptoms.—The symptoms as described by Caius and others were as follows. The disease began very suddenly with a sense of apprehension, followed by cold shivers (sometimes very violent), giddiness, headache, and severe pains in the neck, shoulders, and limbs, with great prostration,—in short, the usual symptoms of an acute febrile attack. In some cases the stomach was affected, and there was vomiting, but according to Caius this happened only m those who were full of food. The breathing was deep and frequent, the voiee like a moan. After the cold stage, which might last from half an hour to three hours, followed the stage of heat and sweating. The characteristic sweat broke out suddenly, and, as it seemed to those unaccustomed to the disease, without any obvious cause. In some cases it was much more copious than in' others, these differences depending, aceording to Caius, mainly on age, clothing, food, and other external circumstances, and also on the season, sweating being more profuse in hot weather, With the sweat, or after that was poured out, came a sense of heat, and with this headache and delirium, rapid pulse, and intense thirst. Palpitation and pain in the heart were frequent symptoms. Seinen Se Pea tp hae dear! Were eee

1 Guggenbiihl, Der englische Schweiss in der Schweiz, Lichten- steig, 1888.

i

ewWwEHATING-SICKNESS

eruption of any kind on the skin was generally observed; Caius makes ne allusion to such a symptom. In the later stages there was either general prostration and collapse, or an irresistible tendency to sleep, which was thought to be fatal if the patient were permitted to give way to it. The malady was remarkably rapid in its course, being sometimes fatal even in two or three hours, aud some patients died in less than that time. More commonly it was protracted to a period of twelve to twenty-four hours, beyond which it rarcly lasted. Those who survived for twenty-four hours werc considered safe.

The disease, unlike the plague, was not especially fatal to the peer, but rather, as Caius affirms, attacked the richer sort and these who were free livers according to the custom of England in those days. “They which had this sweat sore with peril or death were cither men of wealth, ease, or welfare, or of the peorer sort, such as were idle persons, good ale drinkers, and taverne haunters.”

Relapses were not uncommon; but the statements sometimes made abeut the disease attacking the same person several times seem to rest on a misunderstanding of the original authorities. What is meant is that they had several, even twelve, successive attacks of sweating. The disease was not thonght to be transmitted by contagion from one persen to another. Nevertheless, in its spread, it appears, like cholera, to have followed the main lines of human travel. and_traffic,—passing with Richmond’s army to Bos- werth, thence to London, and soon. It would be difficult other- wise to explain why Calais should have been affected and not the adjacent parts of France. Even the very circumstantial story of the disease having been brought to Hamburg by a ship from England seems by no means incredible, though it is doubted by some.

Causes. —Some attributed the disease to the English climate, its moisture and its fogs, a view which was thought to be supported by the occurrence of unusual rainfall and atmosphcric moisture in the ycars of the sweating-sickness. But it is plain that the English climate was much the same before and after, and can hardly be regarded even as a predisposing cause, certainly not as an explana- tien, Nor is there much evidence that the epidemic years were distinguished for their humidity.

In 1485, 1507, and 1517 the seasons were in no way remarkable. The year 1528 (1529 in Continental reckoning) was, however, cer- tainly notable fer excessive moisture. In England cight weeks continuous rain began in April, and the harvest was spoiled. In

Germany the copious rainfall, and the cold fogs which endured

through the summer, gave the impression that the air of England had been carried over to the Continent. In 1551 the outbreak of the sickness in Shrewsbury is described as having been preceded by dense and stinking

fogs, which arosc from the valley of the Severn and spread over other parts of England. The summer was everywhere very hot, and in England moistas well. In Amsterdam a similar fog announced the outbreak of the sickness in 1528. But we cannot attribute much importance to these circumstances, since im other epidemics they were wanting, and similar conditions have eften occurred without any pestilence resulting.

It was again attributed by some to the intemperate habits of the English people, and to the frightful want of cleanliness in their houses and surroundings which is noticed by Erasmus in a well- knewn passage, and about which Caius is equally explicit. But causes such as these cannot, any more than climate, account for the incidence in time of an epidemic, even if they do something tewards explaining its geographical range. Nor is there much evidence that the English were worse in these respects than most European nations, though the native country of Erasmus may have set_an early example of cleanliness.

Caius and some of the chroniclers make out that this special liability of Englishmen to the sweating-sickness followed them even into foreign parts, so that in Calais, Brabant, and Spain it affected the English only and not the natives. This is puzzling and improbable, except so far that the English abroad may have belenged to the same classes who mainly suffered at home. “But a careful examination of those statements shows that they referred either to Englishmen who had left England while the disease was taging there and carried the infection with them, or to merchants and others who were in direct communication with home. This disease, like others introduced into a foreign country, did not always take root there. But it did se sometimes, as, according to contem- perary evidence, was the casc in Flanders in 1551. The statement also made that foreigners in England were not affectcd likewise Tequires qualification, since we know sevcral instances of forcigners in London who dicd of it. On the whole, no great importance can be attached to this supposed special liability of the English physical censtitution.

Frem all this we must conclude that elimate, season, and manner of life were not adequate, either separately or collcctively, to pro- duce the disease, though each may have acted. semetimes as a pre- dispesing cause. The

sweating-sickness was in fact, to use modern language, a specific infective disease, in the same sensc as plague, typhus, scarlatina, or ague. The origin of such diseascs is not

explained by causes such as those above enumerated. We can only suppose that they come into being by laws similar to those which have determined the evolution of species of animals and plants. But when once their specific distinctness is established they ‘‘ breed truc” and always present the same characters.-

Probable Identity with Miliary Fever.—The important questien, however, arises—Did this specific disease exist before or has it existed after the sixty-six years of its recognized history? or is it identical with any other known disease called by another name? It is very unlikely that any epidemic of so striking a disease should have existed before without having been noticed, and there is certainly no record since of any outbreak precisely similar. The only disease of modern times which bears any resemblance to the sweating-sickness is that known as miliary fever (‘‘ Schweiss- friesel,” ‘‘suette miliaire,” or “the Picardy sweat”), a malady which has been repeatedly observed in France, Italy, and Southern Germany, but not in the United Kingdom. It is characterized by intense sweating, and occurs in limited epidemics, not lasting in cach place morc than a week or two (at least in an intense form). On the other hand, the attack lasts longer than the sweating-sickness did, is always accompanied by an eruption of vesicles, and is not usually fatal. It is therefore evidently not the same as the English diseasc, though allied to it. The first clearly described epidemic was in 1718 (though probably it existed beforc), and the last in 1861. Between these dates some one hundred and seventy-five epidemics have becn countcd in France alone. A single epidemic of a disease which had a striking resemblance to the sweating- sickness was observed in 1802 at Rottingen, a village in the district of Wiirzburg, Germany. Its access was sudden; it affected chiefly robust persons; it was accompanied by profuse perspiration, rheumatic pains, &e., without any constant eruption. If death resulted it was usually in twenty-four hours. The epidemic lasted some ten days, and then entirely vanished. It may be

considered as an extremely severe form of miliary fever. Finally, Hirsch has drawn attentien to certain cases of a choleraic affection, observed first by Dr Murray in India (1839-40), which has been described as a sweating-sickness. It has, however, more resemblance to miliary fever than to the English sweat. A similar form of disease has been described by some French physicians as ‘‘choléra cutané ou sudoral.” On a review of the whole evidence, it would appcar that the only disease which the sweating-sickness much resembled was the miliary fever, of which it may conceivably have been, like the Rottingen epidemic, a highly malignant form.

Where did it Originate?—Whether it really originated in England is a question difficult toanswer. Its appearance certainly coincided with the arrival of a foreign army, consisting, as we know, largely of foreign mercenaries, men of foul habits and irregular lives (whom the French king was thought to have done his country a service hy getting rid of), and crowded into small vessels. Among such men any infective disease which arose would, by want of cleanliness and overcrowding, be likely to be fostered into great intensity. It is in accordance with the history of many epidemics to suppose that an ordinary and not very fatal disease might under such circumstances assume a malignant form.! Now, supposing that the French soldiers brought with them their native ‘“‘ Picardy sweat,” a malady local and not severe in its French home, might not this have become developed into the formidable English swcat- ing-sickness? If so, its great destructiveness in England would also be in great measure explained by its affecting a new popula- tion. For we find that any exported epidemic disease is generally more fatal in a country which receives it for the first time, among a population which offers a virgin soil to the disease, than it was in the country where it was endemic, and where men were inured to the infection. The notable excmption of northern France from the true sweating-sickness would then have depended upon the population there being already inured to a milder form of the same disease. As to southern France and other countries of the south, they were evidently not adapted by climate to receive the infection. If this be true, we need hardly expect to see the sweating-sickness again. The sweat of Picardy may continue from time to time to produce its comparatively slight epidemics; but the conditions which launched the English sweat on its rapid career of destruc- tion are unlikely to occur a second time. The example of the Rottingen epidemic,

which on a small scale was scarcely less re- markable, may show, however, that such an event is not quite impossible.

Authorities.—For history see Bacon's Life of Henry VIT., and the chronicles of Grafton, Holinshed, Bakcr, Fabyan, &ce. The only English medical account is that of John Caius, who wrote in English A Boke or Counseill Against the Disease commonly called the Sweate, or Sweating Sicknesse (London, 1552), and in Latin De Ephemera Britannica (Louvain, 1556; reprinted London, 1721). The English tract is reprinted in Babington's translation of Hecker's Epidemics of the Middle Ages, Syd. Soc., 1844. This also contains Hecker's valuable treatise on the English sweat, published in German, 1834, and also printed in his Volkskrank- heiten des Mittelalters, cdited by Hirsch, Berlin, 1865. Griiner's Scriptores de Sudore Anglico, Jena, 1847, contains nearly all the original documents, including

the two treatises of Caius. See also Hirsch, Handbook of Geographical and ITistorical Pathology, trans]. by Creighton, New Syd. Soc., 1885. GME. P:)

1 This Is the case even with the Oriental plague itself. See PLAGun.

For map

see vol. XVii, Plate XX.

Moun- tain and river systems.

SWEDEN

Part [.—GEroGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

WEDEN comprises the eastern and southern divisions of the Scandinavian peninsula, Its northern ex- tremity, Kuokimodka, is situated in 69° 3' 21" and the southern in 55° 20' 18" N. lat. The western extremity (on the Cattegat) lies in 11° 6' 29" and the eastern (on the frontier of Finland) in 24° 10' E. long. 'The greatest length of the country from north to south is

986 miles and its greatest breadth 286 miles, and the area is 170,713 square miles. The length of the coast-line is 1603 miles, the length of the boundary line towards Norway 1019 miles, and that of the boundary line towards Finland 305 miles.

Sweden is divided into three chief parts,—the south- ern being called Gotaland, the middle part Svealand or Sweden proper, and the northern Norrland. The north and north-west parts of Norrland are called Lapland.

The frontier towards Norway, from 69° to 63° N. lat., is formed by a continuous mountain range called Kolen (the keel). The snow peaks of Sulitelma (6178 feet), east of Saltenfjord, on the frontier between Sweden and Norway, were long supposed to mark the highest elevation of this mountain chain, but the geodetical survey now in progress in western Lapland has already shown that there are at least two peaks whose height exceeds that of Sulitelma, viz., Kefnekaise (7008 feet) and Sarjektjikko (6988 feet).

In this mountain range (K6len), rise a great number of rivers and streams, which flow in a south-easterly direction to the Gulf of Bothnia. The immense quantity of fresh water that is thus carried into the gulf makes its water scarcely more salt than that of a lake (0°25 to 0°40 per cent. of salt). Between the upper courses of the rivers the watersheds consist of mountain ridges, which gradually diminish in height. The intermediate valleys are for the most part filled with the water of the rivers, and thus form a number of lakes at a considerable elevation above the sea-level. Issuing from these lakes, the rivers form great cataracts, and afterwards flow through the level plain that forms the coast-region of the Gulf of Bothnia fora distance of many miles from the shore.

The boundary between Sweden and Finland is formed by (1) Muonio Elf, and afterwards by (2) Tornea EI, into which it flows ; Tornea Elf rises in Torne& Trask, at an elevation of 1132 feet above the sea. Then come, in order along the coast, the following rivers:—(3) Kalix Elf, which in its upper course forms the lakes of Paitas Jaur and Kalas Jarvi;! (4) Stora Lulea& Elf (242 miles), which forms Stora Luleé Jaur (1214 feet) and receives on the right (5) Lilla Lule& Elf, which forms the lakes of Saggat Trask and Skalka Jaur (984 feet) ; (6) Pite& Elf, with the lake of Tjaggelvas

; (7) Skelleftea Elf, forming a number of great lakes, such as Hornafvan (1391 feet), Uddjaur (13875 feet), Storafvan (1371 feet); (8) Umea Elf (261 miles), with a great number of lakes, of which the largest is Stor-Uman, receives on the left a tributary of almost equal size, viz., (9) Vindel Elf; (10) Angerman Elf (211 miles), which receives the water of a whole system of streams and lakes, the largest of the latter being Stréms Vattudal, in the south of Lapland ; (11) Indals Elf, which receives the Ammera, with its tributaries and the numerous emissary lakes, as Hotagen (1017 feet), Kallsjon and Storsjon ("Storsa Lake " on the map) (958 feet, area 173 sq. miles). Close to the railway from Trondhjem to Ostersund, between

: The word for "lake," which is s/é or trask in Swedish, is jaur in Lapponian, and jarvi in Finnish, '* River" is e]f in Swedish.

Kallsjon and Storsjén, rises the peak of Areskutan (4652 feet), which is ascended every year by a great number of tourists, and in the vicinity many sanatoria are situated, Farther south flow three large rivers :—(12) Ljungan (193 miles), with Holmsjén (656 feet); (13) Ijusnan (249 miles); and (14) Dal Elf (286 miles), which passes through Sadrnasjén (1450 feet) and Siljan (541 feet, 110 sq. miles), and receives on the right (15) West Dal Elf. The last. named four rivers rise in a mountainous region with many high summits, which are the eastern outposts of the high range of Dovrefjeld, which traverses Norway from west to – east, between the parallels of 67° and 63° N. lat. Among these summits, situated on the frontier or in Sweden, are to be observed the Syltoppar (5865 feet), Son Fjell (4190 feet), Helags Fjell (5900 feet), and Stidjan (3860 feet) on the north shore of Sarnasjén.

In Norway, not far from the sources of Dal EIf, lies the lake of Famundsjé, which gives rise to (16) Klar Elf which flows southwards to Lake Vener, the largest lake in Sweden (144 feet, area 2150 square miles). The outlet of Vener is (17) Géta Elf, which falls into the Cattegat, near Gothenburg. The watershed between Dal Elf and Klar Elf is a wooded range of hills without high peaks, sloping to the south-east. The south-eastern part of Svealand comprises the water systems of the large lakes of Hjelmar (75 feet, area 185 square miles) and Malar (area 449 square miles). Lake Malar discharges into the Baltic at Stockholm by two outlets—(18) Norrstrém and Séder-str6m. They are, however, almost to be regarded as channels or sounds,

rather than as streams, the difference of level between Lake Malar and the Baltic being so small that occasionally, when the water is low in Malar and high in the Baltic, the current sets from the latter into the former. Lake Malar may thus be considered a fjord of the Baltic. Still its waters are kept fresh by the great number of small streams that discharge into it, the most important of these being (19) Fyris Elf, which passes Upsala.

The boundary between Svealand and Gétaland con- sists of wooded heights. Between Lake Vetter and the northern shore of Braviken Bay stretches the forest of Kolmorden, and between the northern extremity of Lake Vetter and Lake Vener lies that of Tiveden. Lake Vetter (290 feet, area 733 square miles) discharges itself into Braviken by (20) Motala Strém, the falls of which are utilized for the mills in the town of Norrképing, near the mouth of the river.

The central part of Gétaland consists of an extensive tableland or plateau, of which the highest part, at an elevation of 1237 feet, lies somewhat to the south of Vetter. On the north this plateau. descends rather ab- ruptly towards the fertile plains of Ostergétland (drained by Motala Strém) and Skaraborg lan, between Vetter and Vener. Near the south-eastern shore of Vetter, a little to the north of Jénképing, lies Mount Omberg (863 feet), and near the southern shore of Vener, close by Lidképing, lies Kinnekulle (915 feet), both hills re markable for their beauty. The great plateau descends less abruptly towards east, south, and west. A great number of lesser streams flow down its slopes. The prin- cipal are—(21) Emman, which falls into Calmar Sound; (22) Lyckeby&n, (23) Mérrums&n, and (24) Helgaan, which flow in a southerly direction ; and (25) Lagan, (26) Nissan, (27) Atran, and (28) Viskan, which fall into the Cattegat. On this great plateau and its slopes lie also many lakes. In the northern part, east of Vetter, lies Sommen (479 feet), and farther north Boren, Roxen, and Glan. Between

SW E

Vetter and Vener lies Unden (384 feet). On the summit of the plateau lies Ekelsjo (11832 feet), and on its southern slope Helgasjé (535 feet), Bolmen (466 feet), Méckeln (446 feet), and Asnen.

The southmost part of Sweden, Skane, consists for the | most part of a low fertile country. Only in the northern part, Christianstad lan, occur two low stretches of hills, | called Linderédsisen and Séderasen.

‘ Waterfalls—The largest waterfalls are—(1) Njuom- melsaska (Harspranget), in Stora Lule Elf, with a breadth of 60-70 feet, consisting of two cataracts of 103 feet at the upper end and a fall of 150 feet more in the course of 14 miles,—the largest waterfall in Europe ; (2) Adna- -Muorki-Kortje (“the great fall of the lake”), on the same | river as the former, higher up, between the two lakes | Jantajaur and Kaskajaur, has a fall of 130 feet, of which 100 feet are one perpendicular cataract ; (3) Tannforsen, 12 miles west of Areskutan in J emtland, between Tannsjin | and Noren, has a breadth of 160 and a perpendicular fall) of 84 feet ; (4) Trollhattan, in Géta Elf, consists of three successive falls having a total height of 100 feet. | It will be seen that, with the exception of the north- | west part along the Norwegian frontier, Sweden is not a mountainous country. On the other hand, fertile plains are not frequent. The most extensive are the north-west shore of the Gulf of Bothnia, where, however, the severe climate precludes any successful agriculture, the water districts of Lake Malar and Lake Hjelmar, the rich agri- } cultural district of Ostergétland between Vetter and the Baltic, Vestergétland, or the whole country between the two great lakes as far as Gothenburg, and, as has been just mentioned, the southmost part, or Skane, which comprises Christianstad and Malméhus lin. The greatest part of the country consists of low hills of granite or gneiss, clothed _with forests of pine and fir. The valleys are generally in great part filled with water, and the shores of their lakes or wide rivers are covered with forests of deciduous trees, chiefly birch, or consist of arable soil. With the exception of Finland there is no country so full of lakes as Sweden. Nearly one-twelfth of the whole surface of the country, or about 13,900 square miles, is covered with water.

Coast.—The coast of Sweden is not broken by so many or so deep fjords as that of Norway. The most considerable indentation is the above-mentioned Br&viken Bay. On the other hand, the Swedish coast is, perhaps in a. still greater degree than the Norwegian, fringed by innumer- able little islets. Except on the coast round Skane, in the south, the mainland does not come

into direct contact with the sea, girdled as it is by a belt of islands, holms, and skerries, more or less thickly set, which forms the

PHYSICAL FEATURES. |

ol |so-called “skirgird” fence of skerries or outer coast. SKar= 4

| Between this wall of islets and the mainland, therefore, extends a connected series of sounds of the greatest importance for coastal navigation, since they admit of ithe employment of vessels of less size and strength. ‘This skirgird forms, besides, a most valuable natural defence ; for, while some sounds are deep, navigation in the vicinity of the coasts is, as a rule, practically impos- sible without the help of pilots. _ The broadest part of this skdrgird is that off Stockholm,)which stretches many miles out into the Baltic. It con- ‘sists of a few large and well-peopled islands, surrounded | by many hundreds of islets, for the most part uninhabited. |The outer islands are bare grey rocks of gneiss, but the

“inner ones are mostly covered with fir and birch trees.

The entrance to Stockholm through this archipelago is of ‘its kind one of the most curious and picturesque in the World. The largest of these islands are Ljuster6, Vermdo, Tngaré, Vinds, Runmar6, Orné, and Uté (with rich iron Mines), As mentioned above, Lake Malar is to be con-

DEN

sidered as a fjord of the Baltic. The skargard also extends into Malar, which is filled with islands. The most remarkable is Bjérk6, where the old town of Birka was situated. The archzological researches on this spot have been of the greatest importance for our knowledge of life in Sweden in the times of the vikings. The part of the skargird next in breadth is that off Carlskrona, where the islands of Sturké, Tjurké, Aspé, and Hasslé are situated.

The Cattegat skirgard, which extends from the fjord of Svinesund at the southern extremity of the Norwegian frontier as far as Halmstad, has a different aspect from that of the Baltic. In the Cattegat all the islands, as well as the rocks of the mainland, are almost bare of vegetation. Trees are

quite absent in most places, and generally the grey rocks are not even covered with grass or moss. They look as if they were polished by the sea. Between these bare rocks there is, however, in many places even on the larger islands arable soil of great fertility. In the northern part of the skirgard near Strémstad lie the larger islands of Sandé, Od6, Tjerns, Résé, &c. Farther seawards lie the Koster Islands and the Vader Islands with their lighthouses. A little more to the south, in the vicinity of Lysekil, are three narrow fjords—A byfjord, Gullmarfjord, and Koljefjord. Off the first-named lies Malmé,! remarkable for its quarry, wliere the fine granite of which the island consists is wrought. Next come, in succession, Korné, Skaftd, Flaté, Herman, and Lyré, the last two situated off the two largest islands on this coast, Oroust and Tjérn. All the islands now enumerated are surrounded by innumerable islets and rocks. South of Tjérn there are no considerable islands except Marstrand (with a small town and much-frequented sea-bathing quarters), Kod, and Klofveré, all situated immediately to the south of Tjérn. On the coast of Hal- land we find only Siré, off the fjord of Kungsbacka, and the Vaderé of Halland, off Torekow, between Laholm Bay and Skelder Bay, the only islands on the whole coast that are covered with a rich vegetation of trees. On the extreme point of the cape, between the latter fjord and the Sound, lies the isolated Mount Kullen with its light- house. In the Sound off Landskrona lies the islet of Hven, where Tycho Brahe had his observatory, Uranien- borg, in the end of the 16th century (1576-1597).

.. In the Baltic lie the two great islands of Gotland and Large

TOT

Oland, of which the former is itself a county and a islands.

bishopric. These islands are quite different from the Swedish mainland. They are formed of Silurian limestone. On the western coast of Gotland the limestone rocks descend precipitously into the sea, and the island forms a comparatively smooth plateau, which slopes gradually to the east. The limestone soil is very fertile, and trees and plants thrive on it that do not otherwise grow in the climate of Sweden, such as walnuts, ivy, &c. The case is the same in Oland. This island somewhat resembles a house-top. A sterile limestone plain (Alvaren) stretches the whole length of the island

from north to south, and from this the country slopes both towards Calmar Sound on the west and téwards the Baltic on the east. The slopes, especially the western, are very fertile.

Sea-Led. —The seas that surround Sweden are remark- Depths

ably shallow. Round the south part of Norway runs Of sur-

a depression in the sea-bed, called the Norwegian Channel ‘°™=4ing

(see NorweEcIANn SrA). It stretches along the west and ~~” south coasts of Norway southward and eastward almost to Christiania Fjord and the Cattegat. The deepest part of this channel, upwards of 400 fathoms, extends through the Skagerack between Arendal in Norway and the Scaw. In the Cattegat the depth diminishes abruptly, and

1 Not to be confounded with the town of Malmé in Skane.

Climate.

Tempe- rature.

738

between Gothenburg and the Scaw the greatest depth is between 33 and 55 fathoms. The greatest part of the southern half of the Cattegat has a depth of less than 30 fathoms. The depth of the Sound generally is even less than 12 fathoms, The whole southern part of the Baltic between Sweden and Germany is very shallow. West of Bornholm the depth nowhere reaches 30 fathoms. ast of Bornholm the sea is somewhat deeper, and a small area of a depth of 50 to 60 fathoms is found a little east of that island. The whole of that part of the Baltic which lies between Sweden and Russia is. divided into two separate basins by a submarine bank. From the southern extremity of Gotland (Hoburg) there extends a nearly uninterrupted bank to the south-west as far as the Prus- sian coast. The depth on this bank nowhere reaches 30 fathoms. The shallowest parts are Hoburg Bank south of Gotland, Mittel

Bank south-east of Oland, and Stolpe Bank off the Prussian coast. Between Faro off the north coast of Gotland and the Gottska Sandé there extends a similar bank, which continues with a somewhat greater depth of about 30 fathoms as far north as Stockholm. The deepest part of the Baltic between these banks is situated in the north part between Landsort and the Gottska Sandé, the maximum depth being about 160 fathoms. Alands Haf, the channel between the Swedish coast and the Aland Islands, is tolerably deep (100 to 160 fathoms).

~The Gulf of Bothnia is divided into two basins by the channel of Qvarken; the southern is the deeper (about 50 fathoms), and the depth increases towards the north- west, where, over a small area off the island of Ulf6 near the Swedish coast, it reaches 160 fathoms. The channel of Qvarken is very shallow (8 to 16 fathoms). The basin on the north side is also shallow. Only over a small area off Bjuré Cape does the depth exceed 160 fathoms.

Climate.—Sweden is situated between two countries of very dif- ferent climatological conditions. On the west there is the maritime climate of the Norwegian coast, and on the east the continental climate of Russia. It may be said that Sweden alternates between the two. Cold winters alternate with mild ones, and warm and dry summers with cool and rainy ones. But different parts of Sweden have also in this respect a greatly differing climate, of which we readily see the reason if we only recollect the character and the general features of the configuration of the country. Lapland and the western part of the country along the Norwegian frontier have a pronounced continental climate, and so has the high plateau to the south of Lake Vetter. On the other hand, the climate is more maritime the more we approach the coasts of the Baltic, and on the coast of the Cattegat and in Skane the maritime climate distinctly predominates.

The following table gives the mean annual temperatures (Fahr.)

at twenty-eight meteorological stations in Sweden, together with the means for January and July:—

Station. Annual. | Jan. | July. Station. Annual. | Jan. | July o 2 e es o ° e

MEG. secaeeessten 44°9 S153.) GIT || Orebro…5,...<.| ALG 25°8 | 62°6 Carlshamn….| 44°4 81°1 | 61:7 || Stockholm….. 41-4 26°1 | 61:4 Calmar'.....2.. 44°2 30°2 | 62-1 || Carlstad 41°6 24-9 | 62-9 Halmstad…....) 44°8 30°5 | 62°7 || Vesteras. 410 24:7 | 62°6 Vexid 42°3 2775 | G12 40°4 24°5 | 61°5 Visby 43°4 30°7 | 60°3 38°7 20°8 | 61°2 Gothenburg…| 44°4 29°8 | 62:1 }) 40:0 24°5 | 61:0 Vestervik …...,} 42°8 28°1 | 61:4 371 20°0 | 58-9 Jénkbping ….| 42°7 28°6 | 61:0 35°0 15°3 | 56-4 Venersborg….| 42'3 27°5 | 611 34°4 15°8 | 58°8 PKS, 2.000002 41°5 26°0 | 60:3 31°7 9:5 | 57-7 Linkoping…...| 48°4 27°8 | 63°9 33°8 11:2 | 60°6 Nyk6ping …... 43°5 26°6 | 61:4 || Haparanda….; 31°9 10°1 | 594 Askersund …,| 41°0 25°1 | 61:2 || Jockmock….. 29°1 31 | 58:0

From these figures it appears that, as mentioned above, the climate is most continental in the northern and interior parts of the country, especially at the two stations of Lapland, Stenselo and Jockmock, while it is more maritime on the coasts. For this reason the isotherms for January on the Scandinavian peninsula are linguiform. The warm sea off Norway causes the peculiarity that the western parts of Lapland, although situated at the greatest elevation above the sea, have not so cold winters as the interior parts round the great lakes. Still farther to the east the temper- ature increases again towards the coast of the Gulf of Bothnia.

SWEDEN

[PHYSICAL FEATURES,

Thus, for example, the isotherm of 10° F. enters Lapland from the north-east atabout 68° N. lat., runs towards the south-west over the great lakes as far as about 644°, south of Lake Stor-Uman, makes there an abrupt bend towards the cast, and runs in a north-easter] direction to Haparanda at the northern extremity of the Gulf of Bothnia. The isotherm of 23°F. runs from the grcat lake of Mjésen in Norway, north of Christiania, to the southern shore of Lake Siljan, or almost straight east, curves there to the north-east, and reaches the shore of the Gulf of Bothnia alittle north of the mouth of Ljusnan. Finally, the isotherm of ,30° runs from Gothenbur, towards the south-east to the lake of Asnen, curves towards the north-east, and passes Calmar and the northern parts of the islands Oland and Gotland. On the summit. of tho plateau south of Vetter the mean temperature is of course

lower than both north and south of the plateau. In July the temperature is almost constant all over the country. With the exception of the interior of Lapland the mean temperature varies generally between 59° and 62°. The warmest point is Linköping on the plain of Ostergétland, between Lake Vetter and the Baltic. The most temperate and most agree- able climate of the whole country is that of the Cattegat coast round Halmstad.

A good indication of the climate, especially that of the winter, is Equi- the time during which the freshwater lakes remain frozen. We glacial haveseen thatnearly lines. one-twelfth of the whole surface off Sweden is covered with water, and in Finland the number of the lakes is still greater. In both countries the times of freezing and breaking up of a great many lakes have been observed for many years, From these data we} can calculate the length of the ice periods. If these} » periods are entered }.\\“ on a diagram, we] can draw out the lines of equal ice periods, or the equi- glacial lines. The accompanying map shows these lines }, for Sweden and Fin- land. From it we see that the glacial period in the south- ern part of the country is 90 days, while in the north- ern part of Lapland it has a duration of no less than 230 of the 365 days of the year. The western lakes of Lapland, though the higher : in situation, have a : ‘ ecehek Bhorkes Map of Equal Ice wits ice period than the eastern. The ice period is considerably length- ened on the great plateau south of Lake Vetter. ais |

We have said above that in certain years the climate of Sweden Vari “t is more maritime, in others more continental. Thus, for instance, tions 0! the annual mean temperature of Upsala has varied during the temper — last 30 years between 43°°2 (1859) and 35°°0 (1867). The meant ture temperature of particular months varies of course in a still higher

degree, especially during the winter; thus the mean temperature of January 1873 was 34°°3, but of January 1875 only 12°°2.

The difference between the means of the warmest month and the coldest is the so-called yearly range of temperature. In Sweden July is generally the warmest and February the coldest month. The difference between the January and July temperatures, how- ever, as given in the foregoing table, will show the yearly ee approximately. It will be seen that this increases

towards he north. For the same latitude, it is greater in the interior of the country than on the coasts. F

As is easily understood, the periodic daily range of temperatur is least during the darkest part of the year, during aye pea January, especially in the north part of the country roum The polar line, and still farther north, where it is almost nil. The mean range for the whole country is in December only 2.

‘ Sweden.

_ 8306, and in September 1461.

CLIMATE AND GEOLOGY. |

maximum occurs in June or July at all stations except those of western Sweden, where it occurs as early as May. The mean of June is 13°.

The uon-periodic daily range of temperature, or the difference between the monthly means of daily maximum and minimum of temperature, is as usual considerably greater than the periodic. The difference is almost constant for all stations, especially during the warmer part of the year. We have, for the whole country—

Non-periodic. Periodic. Difference. 3°°0 7°°0 Ta 2) 4°°8 13°°0 671 os 5°°4

The mean direction of the winds shows little variation during different seasons. During the summer it is west or west-south- west in the south of Sweden, changes to south-west in the middle part of the country, and due south along the coast of the Gulf of Bothnia. In winter north-north-east winds become comparatively frequent in the north part of the country. This is explained by the difference in barometric pressure in summer and in winter. In July the mean height of the barometer indicates a gradual fall along the coast of the Baltic, from 29-828 inches in Calmar to 29°675 in Haparanda. In January, on the other hand, there is a gradual fall from 29°853 in Calmar to 29°718 in Herndésand, but thereafter a gradual rise to 29°834 in Haparanda. Unfortunately the isobarometric lines for Sweden have not yet been calculated with duc precision.

The rainfall is greatest on the coast of the Cattegat. The annual amount is greatest at Gothenburg, where it is 32°56 inches. At Halmstad it is 28°26, and at Venersborg, where Gota Elf issues from Lake Vener, it is 80°33. These are the rainiest stations of Generally speaking, the amount of rain diminishes afterwards as well towards north and north-west as towards south- east. The least rain falls on the one hand in northern Lapland, where the annual amount is only 15°52 inches, and on the other hand in the south-eastern corner of Sweden, where (at Calmar) we have the lowest known rainfall for the whole country (12°75 inches). Between these two tracts there runs a belt of greater pre- cipitation from Gothenburg towards the north-east to Upsala, where the annual amount is 23°28. Even along this belt the amount of

_ Tainfall diminishes towards the north-cast, but at every point the amount is greater than to the north-west and south-east of it.

The greatest amount of rain falls in July and August and the least in February and March. Thus, for instance, there fall in Upsala during August 2°86 inches and during March 0°99 inches. As the temperature varies, so does the rainfall for different years.

tr- The number of thunderstorms is small in Sweden compared m with the countries of the south. Their number diminishes as |

does the precipitation from south-west towards north and east. From 1871 to 1880 the mean annual number of thunderstorms at each station was 9°5 in Gotaland, 8°4 in Svealand, and only 6°3 in Norrland. In the south their number diminishes rapidly from west to east, from 11 on the coast of the Cattegat to 8°3 on the coast of the Baltic, and only 6°6 on the isle of Gotland. The thunderstorms have a distinctly marked annual and daily period. They occur almost always during the warmest time of the year and of the day. During the above-mentioned ten years the least number occurred during the month of February, only 3, whereas there occurred in May 1194, in June 3724, in July 4419, in August As regards the daily period, the least number, 147, occurred between 1 and 2 A.M., and the greatest, 1704, between 3and 4p.m. In Gotaland and Svealand most of the thunderstorms come with a south-westerly wind, in Norrland with a southerly ; for the whole country, the least number come with a northerly wind.

If the number of thunderstorms is small in Sweden, the same is ina still higher degree to be said of their intensity. Hail, which on the Continent causes such immense damage to the growing crops, is rare in Sweden, and often quite harmless. In the south of Germany about 2 per cent. of the crops are annually destroyed by hail. At Magdeburg the damage is 0°9 per cent., at Berlin 0°6 to 0°7 per cent., but in Swoden only 0°06 per cent. (H. H. H.)

Geology.—The fundamental rocks of Sweden belong to the Azoic or Pre-Cambrian formation, and consist of crystalline rocks. Three great divisions of this formation may be distinguished, —the grey gneiss, the red iron gneiss, and the granulite.

The grey gneiss rules in the northern and western parts of the country, from West Norrland down to the province of Calmar. The rock has a prevalent grey colour, and contains as characteristic Minerals garnet and in some parts graphite. ’ ;

The red iron gneiss prevails in western Sweden in the provinces of Vermland, Skaraborg, Elfsborg, and down to the province of

Christianstad. The formation is very uniform in its character, the gneiss having a red colour and containing small granules of magnetite, but, neverthcless, not a single iron-mine belongs to this region. The red gneiss contains in many places beds or masses of hyperite.

The granulite, also called eurite and hilleflinta, is the most important of the Pre-Cambrian formation, as it contains all the metalliferous deposits of Sweden. It prevails in the middle part of the country, in the provinces of Vermland, Kopparberg, Vestmanland, and Upsala. It occurs also in some parts of the pro- vinces of Ostergotland, Calmar, and Kronoberg. The main rock in this region consists of hilleflinta, a kind of very compact and fine-grained mixture of feldspar, quartz, and mica, often graduating to mica schists, quartzite, and gneiss. With these rocks are often associated limestones, dolomites, and marbles containing serpentine (Kolmarden). The

metalliferous deposits have generally the form of beds or layers between the strata of granulite aud limestones. They are often highly contorted and dislocated.

The iron-mines occur imbedded in more or less fine-grained gneiss or granulite (Gellivaara, Grangesberg, Norberg, Striberg), or separated from the granulite by masses of augitic and amphibolous minerals (grénskarn), as in Persberg and Nordmark. Sometimes they are surrounded by hilleflinta and limestone, as at Dannemora, Laugban, Pajsberg, and then carry manganiferous minerals. Argentiferous galena occurs at Sala in limestone, surrounded by granulite, and at Guldsmedshytta (province of Orebro) in dark hilleflinta. Copper pyrites occurs at Falun in mica-schists, surrounded by halleflinta. Zine blende occurs in large masses at Ammeberg, near the northern end of Lake Vetter. The cobalt ore consists of cobalt-glance (Tunaberg in the province of Sodcrmanland) and of linneite (at Gladhammar, near Vestervik). The nickel ore of Sweden is magnetic pyrites, containing only a very small percentage of nickel. The magnetic pyrites occurs generally imbedded in diorite and greenstoues. In the evidently most recent division of the granulite occurs clay-slate (at Grythytta in the province of Orebro).

Large masses of granite are found in many parts of Sweden, and form extensive massiffs as in the provinces of Kronoberg, Orebro, Goteborg, Stockholm, &c. Sometimes the granite gradu- ates into gneiss ; sometimes (as north of Stockholm) it encloses large angular pieces of gneiss. In many parts of Sweden occur greenstones, as hyperite, gabbro (anorthite-gabbro at Radmanso in the province of Stockholm), and diorite, the last often forming beds between the strata of the gnciss.

The Cambrian formation occurs generally associated with the Lower Silurian, and consists of many divisions. The oldest is a sandstone, in which are found traces of worms, impressions of Medusz, and shells of Lingula. The upper divisions consist of bituminous limestones, clay-slates, alum-slate, and contain numer- ous species of trilobites of the genera Paradoxides, Conocoryphe, Agnostus, Sphxrophthalmus, Peltura, &c. In Oland and north of Siljan are found beds with Odolus.

The Lower Silurian consists of the following divisions :—(1) beds with Ceratopyge ; (2) schists with Graptolites ; (3) large beds of red and grey limestone (200 feet in thickness) containing Megalaspis and Orthoceratites. This limestone is largely used as building material ; (4) slates with Trinucleus ; (5) slates with Brachiopods ; (6) slates with Graptolites. The Cambrian and Lower Silurian strata occur scattered in several places from Vesterbotten down to Jemtland (around Storsjén), and in the provinces of Skaraborg, Elfsborg, Orebro, Ostergotland, and Christianstad. The whole of the island of Oland consists of these strata. The strata are in most places very little disturbed, and form horizontal or slightly inclined layers. They are, south of Lake Vener, capped by thick beds of eruptive diabase (called ¢rapp). North of Lake Siljan (province of Kopparberg) occur Lower Silurian but not Cambrian strata, which have been very much dislocated. The Upper Silurian has in Sweden almost the same character as the Wenlock and Ludlow formation of England. The island of Gotland consists entirely of this formation, which occurs also in some parts of the province of Christianstad. In the western part of the province of Kopparberg are extensive deposits of sandstone, separated by beds of diabase, and seemingly of the same age,—the Middle Silurian,—but no fossils have been found in them. In the vicinity of this sandstone region are large beds and massiffs of porphyries. There are still two sets of stratified, not fossiliferous, deposits, viz., in the province of Elfsborg (formation of Dalsland) and around Lake Vetter (formation of Visingsd). The Dalsland formation, which attains the thickness of 6000 to 7000 feet, consists of conglomerates, chlorite schists, quartzites, and mica schists. The Visingsé formation, 800 to 1000 feet in thickness, consists of sand- stones, clay-slatc, &c. In the western and northern alpine part of Sweden, near the boundaries of Norway, the Silurian strata are covered by crystalline rocks, mica schists, quartzites, &c., of an enormous, thickness. These rocks form the mass of the high mountain of Areskutan, &c.

The Triassic formation (Rhetic division) occurs in the northern

part of the province of Malméhus. This formation consists partly of sandstones with impressious of plants (cycads, ferns, &c.), and partly of

clay-beds with coal.

The Cretaceous formation occurs in the provinces of Malmoéhus and Christianstad. Also some spots of this formation are found in the province of Blekinge. The Cretaceous beds of Sweden belong to the most recent division of the Cretaceous formation (chalk and dan- ien). In many parts it has all the characteristics of a coast-deposit.

The most recent deposits of Sweden date from the Glacial and Post-Glacial periods. At the beginning of the Glacial period the height of Scandinavia above the level of the sea was greater than at present, Sweden being then connected with Denmark and Germany and also across the middle of the Baltic with Russia. On tlie west the North Sea and Cattegat were also dry land. On the elevated parts of this large continent glaciers were formed, which, proceeding downwards to the lower levels, gave origin to large streams and rivers, the abundant deposits of which formed the diluvial sand and the diluvial clay. In most parts of Sweden these deposits were swept away when the ice advanced, but in SkAne they often form still, as in northern Germany, very thick beds. At its maxi- mum the inland ice not only covered Scandinavia but also passed over the present boundaries of Russia and Germany. When the climate became less severe the ice slowly receded, leaving its mor- aines, called in Sweden krosstenslera and krosstensgrus. Swedish geologists distinguish between bottengrus (bottom-gravel, bottom moraine) and ordinary krossgrus (terminal and side moraine). The former geuerally consists of a hard and compact mass of rounded, scratched, and sometimes polished stones firmly imbedded in a powder of crushed rock. The latter is less compact and con- tains angular boulders, often of a considerable size, but no powder. Of later origin than the krosstensgrus is the rudlstensgrus (gravel of rolled stones), which often forms narrow ranges of hills, many miles in length, called dsar, running generally, independent of the relief of the country, in a north-and-south direction or towards the south-east. They are of the same uature as the kames and eskers in Ireland and Scotland, and consist of rolled pebbles and sand. It is very probable that these asar were formed on the bottoms of rivers which cut their way in the inland ice. During the disap- pearance of the great inland icc large masses of mud and sand were carried by the rivers and deposited in the sea. These deposits, known as glacial sand and glacial

clay, cover most parts of Sweden south of the provinces of Kopparberg and Vermland, the more ele- vated portions of the provinces of Elfsborg and Kronoberg excepted. In the glacial clay shells of Yoldia arctica have been met with in many places (¢.g., near Stockholm). At this epoch the North Sea and the Baltic were connected along the line of Vener, Vetter, Hjelmar, and Malar. On the other side the White Sea was con- nected by Lakes Onega and Ladoga with the Gulf of Finland and the Baltic. In the depths of the Baltic and of Lakes Vener and Vetter there actually exist animals which belong to the arctic fauna and are remnants of the ancient ice-sea. The glacial clay consists generally of their darker and lighter coloured layers, which give it a striped appearance, for which reason it has often been called hvarfuig lera (striped clay). The glacial clay of the Silurian regions is generally rich in lime and is thus a marl of great fertility. The deposits of glacial sand and clay are found in the southern part of Sweden at a height ranging from 70 to 150 feet above the level of the sea, but in the interior of the country at a height of 400 feet above the sea.

On the eoasts of the ancient ice-sea, in which the glacial clay was deposited, there were heaped up masses of shells which belong to species still extant around Spitzbergen and Greenland. Most renowned among these shell-deposits are the Kapellbackarne near Uddevalla. With the melting of the great ice-sheet the climate became milder, and the southern part of Sweden was covered with shrubs and plants now found only in the northern and alpine parts of the country (Salix polaris, Dryas octopetala, Betula nana, &c.). The sea fauna also gradually changed, the arctic species migrating northward and being succeeded by the species existing on the coasts of Sweden. The Post-Glacial period now began. Sands (mosand) and clays (ékerlera and fucuslera) continued to be deposited on the lower parts of the country. They are generally of insignificant thickness. In the shallow lakes and enclosed bays of the sea there began to be formed and still is in course of formation a deposit known by the name gyttja, characterized by the diatomaceous shells it contains. Sometimes the gyttja consists mainly of diatoms, and is then called bergmjél. The gyttja of the lakes is generally covered over by peat of a later date. In many of the lakes of Sweden there is still in progress the formation of an iron-ore, called sjémalm, ferric hydroxide, deposited in forms resembling peas, coins, &c., and used for the manufacture of iron.! @: ECS) ne Se UL

1 The geology of Sweden has been worked out principally by Hisinger, Forselles, Erdmann, Térnebohm, and others. A systematic geological survey of Sweden was set on foot by the Government in 1858. The geology of the fossiliferous strata of Sweden has been elaborated chiefly by Nilsson, Angelin, Linnarsson, Lind-

strém, Nathorst, and others, and that of the Glacial and Post-Glacial periods by Sefstrém, Von Post, Torell, and others.

SWEDEN

Flora.—Of the whole area of Sweden about 132,000 square miles Flor,

[PHYSICAL FEATURKS,

are covered with wild vegetation. This may be broadly divided into five different sorts, viz., the forest, bush, marsh, heath, and prairie vegetations, of which the first-mentioned covers by far the largest area, or upwards of 40 per cent. of the whole surface of Sweden. In the northern part of the country the fir (Pinus sylvestris) and the pine (Pinus Abies) are the predominating trees; south of Dal Elf the oak (Quereus peduneulata), and in the southern and south-western provinces the beech (Fagus sylvatica) are, together with the fir and pine, the forest-forming trees, Besides these, there are two species of birch (Betula verrucosa and B. odorata), which form considerable forests. The bush vegetation derives its character from various species of Salix, Rubus, and Liosa, from Prunus spinosa and several other species. The marsh vegetation is composed of some low bushes, of Cyperaces, Graminez, and a small number of dicotyledonous and large-flowered monocotyledonous plants. The heath vegetation consists princi- pally of social Hricacex, especially heather (Calluna vulgaris), and the prairie vegetation of a considerable variety of plants.

The Swedish phanerogamic flora is angiospermous, with about thrice as many dicotyledonous as monocotyledonous plants. The gymnosperms are only about 0°25 per cent. of the species of the flora. Its largest families are (in the order of number of species) —Composite, Graminew, Cyperacex, Cructferex, Paptlionacesr, Ttosaceze, Personate#, Ranuneulaeew, Umbellifere, Alsinaces, Labiate, and Orchidex, the first-named being

represented by 160, the last-named by 38 species. The number of families repre- sented amounts to 99. The largest genus of the flora is Carez, with 88 species. More than 250 genera are represented by only one species each. The whole number of phanerogamic species now known in Sweden is 1475. Of thesc oulya very small number can be supposed to have originated in the country; the greatest number have immigrated from the south or east after the Glacial period, or have been introduced in one way or another by man. Among the immigrated species about 400 are more or less generally spread over the polar countries of the present period, or are to be found in southern countries as alpine plants. The great mass of these Glacial plants, the earliest inhabitants of the country, are confined to the northern part of Sweden ; a smaller number are also to be found, or are only to be found, in the south and in particular localities; a larger number—about 70 species—are abundantly distributed over the whole country.

The Glacial plants were followed and superseded partly by sub- arctic or subglacial species. Of these the Swedish flora has about 300, of which 50 are abundantly spread over the country, and 80 are pretty generally and abundantly distributed. The principal mass of the remaining species of the flora have immigrated in the same period as the oak, and have spread over the country south of Dal Elf, or also to the provinces immediately to the north of this river ; some are outlying steppe-plants ; some have entered with the beech, the last immigrated forest-tree of Sweden; and a small number of species, now limited to the west of the country, have possibly entered during a period before that of the beech, when the climate was warmer and moister than at present. (F. K.)

Fauna.—After the close of the Glacial period a twofold immigra- Fauna

tion of animals occurred,—from the south-west through Denmark, and from the north-east through Finland. Of the existing fauna, many species are widely spread. Especially in the north we find boreal circumpolar forms (wild reindeer, glutton, arctic fox, ptarimigan, several birds of prey, Grallz, and aquatie birds). Others, such as the bear, the wolf, the fox, the magpie, &c., are to be found only in the Old World, but are represented in America by forms resembling them so much as to be regarded by many as only local varieties. Many of the commonest species, ¢.g., the squirrel, the

woodpeckers, the crow, most of the singing-birds, &c., though wanting in the New World, are distributed over Europe and parts of northern Asia. ;

Besides thesc we find also specially eastern, southern, and western forms, which have immigrated from widely separated regions, Thus, the northern hare, Lepus timidus, properly an inhabitant of Russia and Siberia, but also to be found in the mountainous tracts of central Europe, is common in most parts of Sweden, while the European hare, Lepus ewropxus, which is spread over central and western Europe, and is also to be found in Denmark, is wanting. Most of the field-mice, and many birds which have an exclusively eastern range, have immigrated from Siberia. Among mamuinals, which nearly all belong to Europe, may be mentioned the roe-deer and the red-deer, the dormouse and the hedgehog; the last-named is common iu central and southern Sweden. The elk is considered to have immigrated from the south.

Not very long ago the bear, lynx, and wolf were common in all the forests of northern and central Sweden, but their number has rapidly decreased during the last fifty years. The bear is now confined to the wildest mountain and forest regions of Norrland aud Kopparberg lin. The wolf was formerly common throughout the country, and between 500 and 600 were killed annually fifty

years ago. Now the number is only 30 to 40, and it is to be found almost exclusively in the mountain regions of Norrland. The lynx is also being exterminated; it is still found in the greater part of northern and central Sweden, at least as far south as Lake Vener. Ou the other hand, foxes have of late increased, at least in certain parts of the country, and are common everywhcre. The glutton also is by no means rare in the mountain regions of Lapland. The destruction of cattle caused by beasts of prey, espceially in the north, is not inconsiderable, the loss being estimated at about 2500 reindcer and from 9000 to 10,000 sheep and goats annually.

Not without influence on the number of the smaller beasts of prey are the singular migrations of the mountain LemMine (q.v.), which has its home on the higher mountains above the tree- limit, whenee in certain years it migrates in countless numbers to the lower forest regions and lowlands, doing great damage to the vegetation wherever it goes. After the last migration in 1883 the number of the foxes was found to have increased in the regions through which the lemmings had passed.

Of eatable game the clk holds the first place. It has increased in numbers and range of late years, and is pretty common in the forest tracts of central Sweden. The roe-deer, which has its proper hoine in the southmost parts of Sweden, has also increased of late, and has been seen as far north as Orebro lin and Vestmanland. Hares occur in great abundance. Seals are found round the coast; they are hunted chiefly in the Baltic and the Gulf of Bothnia. Besides the larger beasts of prey, martens, weasels, otters, and squirrels are hunted for the sake of their skins, but not to any great extent. The beaver is now probably extinct. Some of the mammals (the bat, hedgehog, dormouse, badger, bear) hibernate ; most of the other animals are in winter covered with a thicker coat of hair, and some change their colour to white or grey.

The wood-grouse is the most valued winged game. Its favourite haunt is the great lone forests. Although it has been obliged to retreat before advancing cultivation, it is still pretty common in suitable places. More numerous and almost as much liked is the black grouse, which has somewhat the same distribution as the wood-grousc, but is less particular in the choice of its abode. In the forests of central and especially of northern Sweden the hazel-grouse is numerous in many places, and on the mountains above the tree-limit the ptarmigan is common everywhere. In the birch and willow regions we find the willow-ptarmigan, which above the snow-line is superseded by the common ptarmigan. In winter a great deal of game is exported from Norrland to the southern provinces. The partridge, probably introduced about 1500, with difficulty endures the rude climate of Sweden, and great numbers often perish in winter for want of food. Still it is distributed all over southern and central Sweden as far north as Jemtland, and of late its numbers have increased. The number of woodcock and snipe is, like that of Grallw in general, decreasing. Numerous sea-fowl are found on all the coasts. Some are killed and eaten, but as a rule they are not much relished.

Their eggs are collected for food by the inhabitants of the seaboard. The eider-duck is common on both coasts. Among the birds of prey the hawk is the most destructive and the most hunted. The gyrfalcon and the golden eagle are found in Norrland and Lapland, and the sea-eagle throughout the country, especially on the coasts. Some kinds of falcons and owls are very common, the latter especially in north- ern Sweden. In the interior the most characteristic birds are swallows, sparrows, the birds of the crow family, and the singing- birds, among which the lark, the chaffinch, the thrushes, and the many specics of Sylvia are most noticeable. The northern nightin-gale is rare in southern Sweden. The cuckoo is heard everywhere, especially in the forest regions. The mute swan is found in great numbers in a few places in southern and central Sweden. The whooper swan frequents the marshes and lakes of Lapland. The white stork is found in Skane and Halland, and herons are found in great numbers here and there in Skane and Blekinge. Cranes are distributed all over the country. Characteristic of the wild forest traets of Lapland is the Siberian jay. Upwards of 250 speeies of birds may be eonsidered as belonging to the Swedish fauna, most of them birds of passage, scarcely 40 remaining over winter in their Suinmer resorts. In spring and autumn Sweden is visited by great ts of the birds of passage of the extreme north, especially geeso and snipe.

The reptiles and amphibians are few (3 snakes, 3 lizards, 11 batrachiaus).

The Swedish rivers and lakes are generally well stocked with fish. The objects of capture are chiefly salmon, eel, pike, different Species of perch, burbot, and several species of the Salmonidez and Cyprinide. The annual income from the fisheries in the lakes and rivers amounts to upwards of £135,800, of which the salmon fisheries alone yield £42,000. Of still greater importanee, of course, are the sea-fisheries. In the end of last century the herring fishery in the “skargard” of the west coast was the most important in Europe, and it is estimated that in one year 1500 millions of herrings were taken. Somewhat later, however, the great shoals disappeared for a long time. In 1877 a new era began in the his-

tory of the west-coast fisheries, the take that year being 1,230,000 cubic feet. Since then the herring has returned every year in greater or smaller numbers. ‘here are also captured on the same coast flat-fishes and cod-fish, mackerel, and sprats. The annual produce of the sea-fishery of the south and west coasts is valued at about £111,000. A smaller variety of the herring is found in great abundanee on the east coast. In the Sound it is still 11 inehes in length, in the Baltic only 6 or 8 inches. This variety is called ‘‘stromming,” and is the objeet of an important fishery, annually bringing in more than £175,000. About 140 kinds of fishes are constantly found in Sweden or along its coasts. Of these nearly 100 belong exelusively to the sea, and upwards of 10 are to be found both in salt and fresh water. The remainder arc properly freshwater fishes, but many are found in the brackish water of the Baltic coasts. Here we find perch, pike, &c., by the side of purely saltwater fishes, as the “‘stromming,” the flat-fish, &e.

The species of Scandinavian insects number at least 15,000. Notorious among these are the Lapland gnats. The “skirgard” of the west coast has a rich fauna of lower marine animals, partly forms of boreal and arctie descent, partly immigrants from the south, The Royal Academy of Science has here a zoological station, Kristineberg, for the purpose of scientifically examining the marine fauna.

Compared with the fauna of the west coast, that of the Baltic is extremely poor. It consists partly of European boreal forms, whieh have immigrated from the west, partly of freshwater forms, which have been able to live in the brackish water. But other types also occur, whieh, though sparingly represented, are of the greatest interest to the naturalist,—namely, certain dwarfed forms,—two or three species of fishes, some erustaeeans and other lower marine animals, belonging to a purely arctic fauna, which have immigrated when the Baltic during a part of the Glacial period eommunieated with the White Sea. They are wanting on the south and west coasts of Sweden, but are found in the Arctic Ocean. Some of them, the four-horned cottus and some erustaccans, are found in Lake Vetter and some other lakes of central Sweden, whither they had come when these lakes formed part of the arctie sea; they have since been shut in and have survived both the climate and the altered composition of the water. The arctic “vikare” seal (Phoca feetida), which is common in the north part of

the Baltic but is not found on the west coast, and which is also found in Lake Ladoga, Lake Onega, and some lakes of Finland, is also eonsidered as a survival of the fauna of the Glacial period. On the west eoast lobster and oyster fisheries are carried on, the former being very productive. The common mussel is abundant, but in Sweden is only used as bait for fish. The crayfish iscommon in many places in central and southern Sweden. Pearls are sometimes found in the freshwater mussel Margaritana margaritifera, whieh is met with all over the conntry. (A. WI.)

Extent and Population. —Sweden takes rank among the larger Area and It contains 170,712°60 English square miles, popula- of which area 3,517°29 square miles are occupied by the large lakes tion.

countries of Europe.

Vener, Vetter, Malar, and Hjelmar, leaving 167,195°31 square miles, distributed among the counties as shown in the following table, which gives the areas and the estimated population in 1885 of the different administrative divisions (the capital Stockholm and the twenty-four “lan” or counties) into which the kingdom is divided :—

Lin. Square Miles. Population. Sime) Ida) ben (UN) b canpnongssdanensceaoose 12°65 215,688 Stockholms Gyumalll)svaseasee ces 3,008 °45 148,841 (US Hilblna nanson pbeenecnnoposenaonboasocaddace BUS 116,406 Sodemnanland@s.se-cesosccer eee 2,630°64 150,032 OPrcnsot land 5. cc.00- a saeseeate ass 4,272°88 267,842 UGIT AO) OV se semqonnecacseenonsovooducascace 4,440°51 197,392 IKON OCR nesnene sonacnesoGooseneneasooase 3,841°51 166,881 (aMMMATAS Sneeacacnens, cecteaeee sessions cere 4,439 06 240,507 (Goblandl ess acco-s:ccascosnessascesasece ey 52,570 Pies. ks acviees teed eaten 1,164:09 140,071 hristiamstad!) so. .tc-ce or eee eee een 2,506 °97 226,787 iralniolhSeesssc.cnce Soecawosennceaeases 1,847 °02 358,178 Jeepers Aetna tions cakercomenmees 1,899°45 136,978 Goteborg (Gothenburg)..... 1,952°51 281,001 IDIUES DORE oo dpocssacadeene cabsbouuodoasconos 4,948°15 282,335 Slcamalbonowesccmeacassteseascessctee Peete 3,283 °13 253,467 RVferamllaniel emer tarrcassennese cece cosesere seers 7,345°73 259,958 OES 2), Ree ee er eeen 3,502°88 182,513 Vestmanland

(Vesterds) ..... 2,623 °14 182,056 Uv) DBE ETUE 5 sonaneuaamnonoodanonbcesconese 11,420°8 194,291 Coll re 7,418°70 191,223 Westenmornland®.cccrsc.case.sccsnscsees 9,519-92 184,884 AOWAUIAM CE pecan essence oc) wieleatsle steeet 19,603°5 93,091 MWesienbottaneesasnccwcssesirscs cons ssenan 21,942°4 113,541 INOTRDOULEME tenses gases cceccac eo eee 40,315°5 96,241

Vital statistics.

Race,

Agricul- ture.

Mines.

Forests.

Manu- factures.

Com- merce,

742

The population has long been steadily increasing. In 1750 it amounted to 1,763,368, in 1800 to 2,347,308, and in 1850 to 3,482,541. The census of December 31, 1880, returned the num- ber as 4,565,668 (2,215,243 males, 2,350,425 females), and at the end of 1885 the population was estimated at 4,682,769 (2,273,861 males, 2,408,908 females).

It will be seen that Sweden is sparsely peopled (the average for the whole country being only 28 inhabitants to the square mile), and that the population is very unevenly distributed,—Malmohus lin, which lies farthest south, counting 198 persons to the square mile, whereas Norrbotten, farthest to the north, and by far the largest county, has only 2°4.

The urban population as late as 1884 amounted to only 777,857 (the rural amounting to 3,866,591). The towns are in general small. Except Stockholm (215,688 inhabitants in 1885), only five towns—Gothenburg

(91,033), Malmé (44,532), Norrképing (28,503), Gefle (20,758), and Upsala (20,202)—had in 1885 more than 20,000 inhabitants.

The average number of marriages per 1000 inhabitants was for each of the years 1751-60 9°09; this proportion has gradually diminished since, having been 7°60 in 1851-60 and 6°81 in 1871- 80. The yearly average of living children born from 1871-80 was 133,730, and the yearly average of deaths 80,140. The yearly average of deaths to 100 inhabitants for 1751-1815 was 2-71; this number has since been almost constantly decreasing, the average for 1851-60 being 2°17, and for 1871-80 1:82. Immigra- tion and emigration till comparatively recent times had little in- fluence on the numbers of population, but the latter years of tho decennial period 1860-70 caused a change in this respect. The number of emigrants, which as late as 1867 amounted to little more than 9000, increased during 1868 to 27,000 and during 1869 to 39,000. During the years that followed there was a consider- able decrease, but towards 1880 the number of emigrants again rapidly increased, and in 1882 this amounted to upwards of 50,000. The figure for 1884 was 23,560. Immigration, on the contrary, continucs to be insignificant. The annual average of immigrants for 1875-84 was 3333.

The inhabitants of Sweden belong almost exclusively to the Scandinavian race. The principal exceptions are the Finns (in 1880 about 17,000), who chiefly inhabit the north-eastern part of the county of Norrbotten, the Lapps (in 1880 about 6400), spread over an area of about 44,000 square miles in Lapland and Jeintland, and the Jews (in 1880 about 3000).

Agriculture.—Agriculture is the principal industry in Sweden. The number of persons gaining their livelihood by this occupation aud those immediately depending on it was 2,342,000 in 1880, and the value of the harvest in 1884 was estimated at about £25,500,000 sterling, of which the grain-harvest made £14,800, 000. From 1840 to 1880 the export of grain (including meal, &.) ex- ceeded the import; but this has not been the case since 1881, while, on the other hand, the export of dairy produce has mean- while increased.

Mines.—Sweden is rich in minerals, especially iron-ores, and the Swedish iron is celebrated for its good quality. In 1884 526 iron-mines were worked, the joint produce of which amounted to 922,310 tons. The manufacture of

cast-iron amounted to 416,958 tons, that of bar-iron to 267,534 tons, of steel to 66,329 tons, and of hardware to 43,226 tons. The copper during the same year amounted to 650 tons, and the silver to rather more than 4000 ib. Pit-coal has been found only in Malmohus lan, and even there in small quantity compared to the consumption of the country. The produce of the coal-mines was in 1884 not more than 7,277,000 cubic fcet, whereas the import of coal amounted to 52,650,000 cubic feet.

Forcsts.—A great part of Sweden is, as was above mentioned, covered with forests. Most of these are the property of private persons or joint-stock companies, but the Government also possesses large forests, the value of which was in 1884 estimated at about £2,400,000. The forest produce ranks among the principal articles of export from Sweden.

Manufactures.—It was not till 1854 that Sweden completely broke with the pre-existing protectionist system and adopted the principles of free trade. Since 1860 there has been no prohibition, and iniport duty is in general low. The value of the manufactures, which as late as 1850 was estimated at only £2,000,000, was for 1883 computed at more than £10,600,000.

Commerce.—The united value of the exports and imports of Sweden was estimated for 1850 at little more than £4,000, 000, whereas in 1884 it was something over £31,000,000 (imports about £18,000,000, exports about £13,000,000). The principal articles of export were—timber and wooden wares, £5,747,000; metals and hardware goods, £2, 667,000; grain (including meal, &.), £1,307,000 ; aniinal food, £1,081,000; live animals, £652,000; paper and stationery, £584,000. The principal articles of import during the same year were—cotton and woollen manufactured goods, £3,012,000 ; colonial products (coffee, sugar, &c.), £2,309,000 ; grain and meal, £2,258,000; minerals (principally coal), £1,479,000;

[sTaristros,

metals and hardware goods, £1,308,000; cotton, wool, &c,

£1,125,000 ; animal food, £1,036,000 ; ships, carriages, machines, instruments, &c., £807,000; hair, hides, bones, horns, and other animal substances, £784,000 ; tallow, oils, tar, gums, and similar substances, £782,000. The aggregate burden of vessels entering from and clearing to foreign ports was 858,827 tons in 1850, 5,388, 085 tons in 1884. The estimated value of the exports to the United Kingdom during 1884 was £6,229,000, to Denmark £1,848, 000, to France £1,073,000, to Germany £1,008,000, and to Norway £604,000; while the imports from Great Britain and Ireland reached £4,952,000, from Germany £4,947,000, from Denmark £2,932,000, from Russia and Finland £1,881,000, and from Norway £1, 225,000.

failways, Posts, and Telegraphs.—The length of the railways in Railways,

Sweden is very great in proportion to the population. In 1884 the total length was 4194 miles, of which 1487 miles belonged to the Government and 2657 to 76 private companies. system is remarkably well organized. offices was 1965, through which 46,533,627 inland letters, Post- cards, post-office orders, newspaper and book packets, &c,, were for- warded, and 5,507,770 to and 6,511,248 from foreign countries,

The telegraph system is also in a very flourishing condition. The Téle- total length of the telegraph wircs in 1884 was 12,969 miles, and graphs,

the number of messages forwarded was 1,178,959.

Fdweation.—With regard to education Sweden occupies a very Educa- Primary education is compulsory for all the tion.

prominent place. children of the country, and this principle is so strictly applied that in 1884 out of 733,329 children of school-age only 15,148 were not under tuition. To supply this primary instruction there are 9925 national schools of different kinds, with 5216 male teachers and 6832 female teachers (1884). For higher educational purposes there are’96 public schools (1885), of three grades, with 14,617 pupils, and two universities (Upsala with 1821 and Lund with 897 students). In Stockholm there is, besides, a medieal faeulty, the Royal Caroline Medico-Chirurgical Institution. A free university is in course of formation, for which large sums

have been given by private persons. There are a jarge number of Government schools for the military and naval services, for the technical scienees, for metallurgy, agriculture, nautical science, and for the blind and the deaf and dumb. All instruction at the national schools, the public schools, and the universities is free.

eligion.—Christianity was introduced into Sweden about the Religion,

ninth century, and was generally professed by the twelfth. The country adopted the doctrines of the Reformation during the reign of Gustavus Vasa. The national church, established by the resolu- tion passed at Upsala in 1598 (Upsala méte), is Lutheran. The country is divided into 12 bishopries (s¢ift). The bishop of Upsala is archbishop of Sweden. In 1880 the number of dissenters was 21,234, of whom 14,627 were Baptists, 2993 Jews, 1591 Methodists, and 810 Roman Catholics.

Army and Navy.—The land defences consist partly of a stand- Amy.

ing army, partly of a militia. The former is for the most part founded on the so-called ‘‘indelningsverk,” an institution dating from the time of Sweden’s greatness, which makes the soldier a settled farmer. This force comprises about 40,000 men. The militia comprises (since 1885) all males between twenty-one and thirty-two years of age. The time of drill for the militia is only forty-two days, extending over two years.

The navy, with a permanent personnel (also for the most part Navy.

founded on the “indelningsverk”) of rather more than 7000 men, consists principally of coasting vessels, both ironclad and wnarmoured.

Constitution.—Sweden is a limited monarchy. _ Its con- stitution, like that of England, rests on an_ historical development of several centuries. From the earliest times the people governed themselves through elected trustees, made laws and levied taxes, while the king was little more than their leader in war. By and by the power of the king was extended, and alongside of it there arose a class of great men, who certainly lessened the legal rights of the lower orders, but who never succeeded in completely subduing them. Through Engelbrecht the burghers and yeomen regained their influence on

the development of the state, and their deputies were summoned to the riksdag (1435). Gustavus Vasa and his son Charles IX. stripped the nobility of the high authority they had exercised during the latter part of the medieval period, and which had been dangerous both to the power of the king and to the people, and so saved the work of Engelbrecht. The right of the lower classes to be members of the riksdag was confirmed by the first " Riksdagsordning " ("law for regulating the riksdag or parliament") of Sweden (1617),

The postal Post. In 1884 the number of post Office,

——_—_— _ a

eat

Poe Se Ss ie eee

ee Se a ic

eS

'- cannot be said to have gained despotic power.

CONSTITUTION. |

which for the first time legally regulated the system of four houses formerly adopted. In the 16th century the nobility, having been endowed with extensive domains by the crown, again won an ascendency that was very dangerous to the lower classes, but it was crushed when Charles XI., by the diminution of their property (1680), for ever put an end to the supremacy of the nobility and the council in the state. By this act the power of the king was greatly strengthened, so much so as to endanger even the most essential rights of the riksdag,—those of giving laws and levying taxes. But after the death of Charles XII. the despotic system was abolished, and all power was lodged in the hands of the riksdag by the constitutions of 1719 and 1720. During the following period, which is called "the time of liberty," it was the riksdag that had the function of appointing and dismissing the councillors of state, and by this means was able to dominate the administration so

completely as to make the power of the king of little more significance than an empty word. Different political parties defeated each other, and sold their services to foreign states without any regard to the interests of their own country. This state of affairs, which might eventually have proved exceedingly disastrous, was altered by a revolution effected by Gustavus III. (1772), which restored to the king his former power. In the new constitution, however, neither the authority of the king nor that of the people was clearly limited, and this soon led to collisions by which the king succeeded in considerably increasing his ascendency (1789), though he Gustavus IV., however, abused his great authority, so that he was dethroned by a revolution. New constitutional laws were now made, in which, guided by the experience of former times, an effort was made clearly to define the respective powers of the king and the representatives of the people, to prevent encroachment from either side. The effort was crowned with success, and the new constitution of June 6, 1809, is still in great measure in force. The old division, however, into four houses has been abolished, and the influence of the representatives of the people has been in- creased by the new Riksdagsordning of 1866. The other constitutional laws are the "Successionsordning" ("law of succession") of 1810 and the " Tryckfrihetsordning " ("law regulating the liberty of the press") of 1812.

The executive power is vested in the king alone. The legislative power he shares with the riksdag, both par- ties having the rights of initiative and veto. The king has, besides, a legislative power, not precisely defined, in certain economic matters. The right of levying taxes belongs to the riksdag alone; but the king may in cer- tain cases (as, for example, through his right of lowering the custom duties) exercise a certain influence. He can declare war and make peace, and has the supreme com- mand of the army.

The king is irresponsible, but all his resolutions must be taken in the presence of responsible councillors ("'statsrad"). These, who form the council of state, are ten in number, of whom seven are also the heads of departments of the administration (justice, foreign affairs, army, navy, internal affairs, finance, and ecclesiastical affairs, including both church and schools). For the advice they give the coun- cillors of state are responsible to the riksdag, which re- vises the record of their proceedings through an annually appointed board, which has power also to indict the coun- cillors

before a special tribunal, the “riksratt,” formed for the occasion, of which certain high functionaries have to be members. One of the councillors of state is, as prime minister, the head of the administration.

The riksdag meets every year on January 15, and consists of two houses. The members of the first house,

| They receive no payment.

one for every 30,000 inhabitants (143 in 1887), are elected by the “landsting” in the counties, or by the municipal councils of the larger towns, for a period of nine years. Any Swede is eligible who is at least thirty-five years of age, who possesses, and for three years before the election has possessed, real pro- perty to the value of 80,000 crowns, or who, during the same period, has paid taxes on an annual income of 4000 crowns. ‘The members of the second house (one or two for every district of judicature in the country, according as the population exceeds or falls short of 40,000, and one for every 10,000 inhabitants in the towns) receive a salary of 1200 crowns, and are elected for a period of three years by electors, or directly, according to the resolution of the electoral district. Ifa member retires during that period, his successor is elected for the remainder of the three years, and thus the house is wholly renewed at regular intervals, which is not the case with the first house. The franchise is possessed by every one who owns landed property to the value of 1000 crowns, or who has farmed for at least five years lands worth 6000 crowns, or pays taxes on an annual income of 800 crowns. All electors are eligible. The number of electors is about 6°5 per cent. of the population. The towns elect their representatives separately. Both houses have in theory equal power. Before bills are discussed they are prepared by boards, whose members are elected by half of each house. When the houses differ on budget questions, the matter is settled by a common vote of both houses, which arrangement gives the second house a certain advantage from the greater number of its members, By revisers elected annually the riksdag controls the finances of the kingdom, and by an official (‘justitieombudsman”) elected in the same way

the administration of justice is controlled ; he can indict any functionary of the state who has abused his power. The bank of the kingdom is superintended by trustees elected by the riksdag, and in the same way the public debt is administered through an office (“‘ Riksgiildskontoret”), the leader of which is appointed by the riksdag. Administration, Law, and Justice. —The administration consists partly of a centralized civil service, arranged under different departments, partly of local authorities. Each of the twenty-four counties has a governor (“landshofding”) who presides over the local offices (the ‘“‘ landskansli,” the “Jandskontor”), and is assisted by subordinate local officers (‘“ kronofogdar,” “ haradsskrifvare,” “ lansmiin ”). There is, moreover, in each county a representation (the “landsting”), elected by the people, that deliberates on the affairs of the county and has a right to levy taxes. Each county is divided into parishes, which, like the towns, have a very strong communal self-government. The law of Sweden dates from 1736, but it has of course under- gone a great many alterations and additions, the most important being the new penal law of 1864. Justice is administered by tribunals of three instances :—(1) the ‘“‘haradsratter” in the country, consisting of a judge and seven to twelve assessors elected by the people, who, if they are unanimously of an opinion different from that of the judge, can outvote him, and the “ radhusratter ” boards of magistrates) in the towns ; (2) three “ hofratter” ter courts) in Stockholm, Jénképing, and Christian- stad ; and (3) the royal supreme court, which passes sen- tence in the name of the king, and two members of which are present in the council of state when law questions are to be settled; this tribunal has, moreover, to give its opinion upon all proposed changes of the law.

of 1815, according to which each country is free and inde- pendent, though both are governed by the same king. The connexions of both countries with foreign states are regulated by the Swedish minister for foreign affairs, but when the king has to settle matters concerning foreign states which also are of importance to Norway a Norwegian councillor of state has to be present. Both countries have the same ambassadors and consuls abroad, and share the expenses of their support, Sweden bearing the larger part of this outlay.

In war the two countries are bound to assist each other. Thus the union is what is called a “unio realis.” (J. F. N.)

Part IJ.—HisTory.

From the earliest times of which we have any authentic information there were in Sweden two more or less dis- tinct peoples,—the Gota or Goths in the south, and the Svea or Swedes in the north. They spoke similar lan- guages, were of the same Teutonic stock, and had like customs, institutions, and religious beliefs ; but these facts did not prevent them from regarding one another with jealousy and dislike. The most powerful king among these peoples was the king at Upsala. There were other chiefs or kings, called in later times smaa-kongar, but they recognized the superiority of the Upsala king, whose peculiar position was due to the fact that there was at Upsala a great temple of Wodan, which was held in equal reverence by the Swedes and the Goths. Upsala was in the territory of the Swedes, and we can account for the feeling of the Goths with regard to it only by supposing that they were an offshoot from the Swedes, and that the worship of Wodan was in some special way associated with Upsala before the separation took place. Of the two peoples, the Goths seem to have been most active and open to new ideas. They spread along the southern coasts of Sweden and among the islands of the Baltic, and there can be little doubt that the Goths in Germany and Russia, who played so great a part in the disruption of the Roman empire, sprang from the Swedish Goths.

Slavery was not unknown in ancient Sweden, but it did not form an important element in social life. The vast majority of the people were free. They were divided into two classes, jarls and bondar, corresponding to the Anglo- Saxon eorls and ceorls. The bondar were the landed freemen, while the jarls were of noble blood. In some remote age the land may have been held in common by village communities, but in historic times there has always been in Sweden private property in land as well as in movables,—the jarls having wider lands than the bondar, and some bondar being better off than other members of their class. The kings were treated with much respect, for they belonged to families which were believed to be descended from the gods; but their power was far from being absolute. When a king died, his authority did not necessarily pass to one of his sons; the freemen

chose as his successor the member of the royal family who seemed to them best fitted for the duties of the office. The king's power was limited not only by the fact that he was elected but by the rights of the freemen in all matters concerning life and land. At regular times moots were held for legal, legislative, and political purposes; and without the sanction of the Great Thing, as the tribal assembly was called, no law was valid and no judgment good,

Besides the Great Thing, of which all freemen were members, there were local things, each attended by the freemen of the district to which it belonged. The chief function of these local assemblies was to settle disputes between freemen, their decisions being given in accord-

DEN

ance with rules based on ancient customs. Very often their judgments could not be enforced; and here, as in other Teutonic lands, the impotence of the local popular courts was one of the causes which led to the growth of the king's authority. He was bound to go round his

[wIsTory,

land in regular progress, doing and enforcing justice

among his subjects; and in course of time men felt more and more strongly that the best way of obtaining redress for serious grievances was to appeal directly to him.

As far back as we can go in Swedish history we find that the principal aim of the Upsala kings was to get rid of the smaa-kongar, and to put royal officers in their place. These officers ruled in the king's name in association with the local things, but their tendency, especially

in times of great civil commotion, was to make themselves:

as independent as possible. The king himself was always attended by some of the leading magnates, who formed a sort of council of state, and with their aid he prepared the plans which were afterwards submitted to the

Great Thing. Although the Great Thing never ceased to be in theory an assembly of the nation, it gradually lost its primitive character, the political rights of the common freemen being usurped by the nobles, who sought also to hamper the exercise of the royal authority.

According to the Ynglinga Saga, in which bits of old Swedish legends are preserved, the first Upsala kings were Ynglingar, sprung from Yngve Frey, the grandson of Wodan. We are told that the last representative of this dynasty was Ingjald Illrede, that he slew six of the smaa-kongar, and that he afterwards killed himself when he heard that the son of one of the murdered chiefs was advancing against him. It is said that the Ynglingar were succeeded by the Skioldungar, who claimed to be descended from Skiold, Wodan's son ; and the traditional account is that this line began with Ivar Widfadme, and that he not only became king at Upsala but conquered Denmark, a part of Saxony, and the fifth part of Eng- land. Another of the Skioldungar, Eric Edmundsson, is said to have been an even greater king than the founder of the dynasty. During this legendary period, kings in Sweden were often at war with kings in Norway and Denmark, and Swedish adventurers undertook many war- like enterprises against the Finns and the Wends. While Danes and Norwegians were founding states in the British Islands and France, the Swedes were accomplishing like results on the eastern sliores of the Baltic.

At this early period Sweden did not take in all the territory which now belongs to it. Scania, one of the most fruitful and prosperous districts of modern Sweden, had been from time immemorial an independent and comparatively powerful Gothic state. In the 9th century it was annexed to Denmark by King Guthrun; and, although in later times it was often a subject of bitter dispute between Denmark and Sweden, its connexion with the former country was not finally severed until the 17th century. Lund, the principal town in Scania, was for many generations the see of the primate of the Damish church.

The scattered notices of Adam of Bremen, Saxo, and certain saints' lives, with a few allusions elsewhere, are our direct written sources for this early period. They may be eked out by study of the laws and of local nomenclature. Later the rich runic remains of Sweden give us some fuller

help. After the end of the 10th century the evidence gradually becomes clearer and more trustworthy. There was then at Upsala a powerful king called Eric the Victory-Blest. He defeated a band of vikings m a great battle at Fyrisval, and, according to Adam of Bremen, had for some time complete control over

Denmark. He was succeeded in 993 by his son Olaf Olaf.

993-1306. | SW E

(993-1024), who was called the Lap-King because he was a child when his reign began. Olaf was baptized about the year 1000, and was the first Christian king of the Swedes. In the 9th century St Ansgar had laboured for some time as a missionary in Sweden, but without much success. | Even Olaf, who was supported in his efforts by Siegfred, the devoted English missionary from whom he had received instruction in Christian doctrine, found that it was | impossible to convert the majority of his subjects. He _ was allowed to build churches in West Gothland, but in | the rest of his dominions the people clung obstinately to paganism. During his reign there was war between | Sweden and Norway, and Olaf seems to have been in favour of carrying on the struggle with vigour. His people, however, desired peace, and it is related that at the Great Thing at Upsala they threatened to take his life if he did not give Olaf, the Norwegian king, his _ daughter in marriage. He consented to do as they ‘ wished, but broke his promise; and he would probably | have been set aside had it not been for the mutual jealousy of the Swedes and the Goths.

The Lap-King was succeeded, one after the other, by his sons Anund and Edmund the Elder ; and under their rule the church lost much of the ground which it had gained through the efforts of Olaf. After Edmund the Elder’s death the Goths resolved that Stenkil, the Christian jarl of West Gothland, should be made king. This decision was resisted by the Swedes, but the result of the civil war which broke out was that Stenkil was able to maintain his claim. He reigned from 1056 to 1066, and effectually protected the church without attempting to do violence to the convictions of the pagan population. His reign was followed by a period of much confusion, during which _ the Goths and the Swedes treated each other as enemies,— the latter upholding paganism, the former contending for Christianity. Under

Inge the Elder, who reigned from 1080 to 1112, the temple at Upsala was burned, and from this time there could be no doubt as to the ultimate triumph of the church, which was served with heroic courage by many zealous foreign missionaries. So much progress was made that Swerker Karlsson, who reigned from about 1135 to 1155, begged the pope to give the Swedish people bishops and a primate. Nicholas Break- spear, the English cardinal who was afterwards raised to the papacy as Adrian IV., was sent to make the necessary arrangements. He found that the Swedes and the Goths could not agree as to a place for the see of a primate ; but at a synod which met at Linköping in 1152 it was decided that the Swedish clergy should accept the law of celibacy, and that Sweden should pay a yearly tax to the pope. For a long time many pagan ideas and customs survived, but Sweden was now, at least nominally, a Christian country. When Swerker was murdered in 1155 the Goths wished valj- to make his son king, but the Swedes chose Eric Edwards- son, and he reigned until 1160. Eric was so good a king that after his death he was canonized by the popular Voice, as was then the way in the North. Upsala was made by him a primate's see, and he began the series of efforts which led to the annexation of Finland to Sweden. | Finnish pirates had often desolated the Swedish coasts,

and it had become absolutely necessary that their country ' should be subdued. Eric not only overcame the Finns, | but did what he could to compel them to accept Chris- tianity.

For about a century after Eric's death the Goths and the Swedes were almost constantly at war with one another, each people choosing its own king. The Goths preferred the descendants of Swerker, while the Swedes were loyal to the descendants of Eric, who were known as

p EN 745

the yeomen-kings, because Eric had originally belonged to the class of bondar or yeomen. The Danish kings often aided one or other of the contending parties, and as a rule they seem to have done far more harm than good by their interference. To some extent the church main- tained among the people a sense of national unity, but it was not powerful enough to give much protection to the poorer members of the community against the

despotism of local magnates. In the end, when the church itself became rich, the higher clergy were quite as tyrannical as the secular nobles.

John Swerkerson, the last king of the Swerker dynasty, died in 1222; Eric the Halt, the last of the yeomen-kings, in 1250. In the latter year the crown was given to

Waldemar, whose mother was a sister of King Eric the Walde- Halt. Waldemar belonged to the Folkungar family, which ™4-

had acquired great estates and risen to a position of high importance in the state. Under this dynasty the Goths and the Swedes gradually ceased to be jealous of one another, and became a thoroughly united people. From this time civil troubles in Sweden sprang, not from the antagonism of rival peoples, but chiefly from the increas- ing power of the great landowners, who strove incessantly to limit the rights of the free peasantry, and were often strong enough to defy the crown.

At the time of the death of Eric the Halt, Birger Brosa, Waldemar's father, was in Finland, where he conquered Tavastland and strengthened the hold of the Swedish crown over those tribes which had been already subdued. On his return to Sweden he was indignant to find that he had not himself been elected to the throne. He accepted what had been done, however, and devoted his energies to the promotion of his son's interests. Until his death Birger was the real ruler of Sweden, and the nation had never been governed by a man of stronger will or more upright character. If he did not actually found Stock- holm, it was he who made it the strongest fortress in the country,—a service for which the Swedish people had good reason to be grateful to him, for it enabled them to put an end to the depredations of Finnish pirates. After the death of Birger great evils were brought upon the country by the folly and incompetence of Waldemar, who was at last driven from tle throne and imprisoned by his brother

Magnus, who succeeded him. Magnus (1279-1290) was Magnus.

a lover of pomp and splendour, and formed a more brilliant court than the Swedes had ever seen. He granted immunity from taxation to those landowners who should give the crown ross-djenst or horse-service, that is,

serve the king in war at the head of a body of horse- men. His intention in adopting this plan was to secure for the crown a powerful body of loyal and attached supporters, but, as the measure added to the wealth, dignity, and influence of the nobles, its ultimate effect was to weaken the royal authority. Although he increased the importance of the aristocracy, Magnus was not unmindful of the interests of the common freemen. He is known as Ladu-laas or Barn-Lock, because he issued a law requir- ing persons of noble birth to pay for the straw and corn with which, when travelling, they might be supplied by peasants. Magnus was also a munificent benefactor of the clergy. He endowed a large number of churches and built five monasteries.

Magnus was succeeded by his son Birger (1290-1319). Birger.

Birger was only nine years old when his father died, and for a long time the power of the crown was wielded by his guardian, Torkel Knutsson, a wise and vigorous statesman. Knutsson drew up a code of laws which was accepted by the Great Thing in 1295; and in Finland he not only put down rebellion but annexed Savolax and Carelia. In 1306, misled by his brothers Eric and Waldemar, Birger XXII. — 94

Magnus.

Albert.

Mar- garet.

caused this faithful and able counsellor to be beheaded, and the result was civil war, in which the weak king found it hard to make way against his restless and ambitious brothers. At last he got them into his power by treachery, and threw them into a dungeon of the castle of Nyképing, where they died of starvation. Soon afterwards Birger himself died, despised and hated by his subjects. He was succeeded by his nephew Magnus, his brother Eric’s son, a child of about three years of age. Magnus’s guardian, Mats Ketilmundsson, was a man of strong and noble char- acter, and as long as his supremacy lasted the Swedish people were more prosperous than they

had ever been before. Taking advantage of the troubled condition of Denmark, he joined Scania and the neighbouring districts of Halland and Blekinge to the Swedish kingdom ; and had his prudent system of government been maintained these provinces might have been kept, for the inhabitants seem to have preferred Swedish to Danish rule. But, when he died in 1336, the king fell under the influence of un- worthy favourites. Scania, Halland, and Blekinge were restored to Denmark, and Sweden was soon in a state of the greatest confusion. In 1363 a number of nobles who had given Magnus much trouble, and whom he had expelled from the country, went to his sister's son Albert, count of Mecklenburg, and offered him the crown. The offer was accepted, and afterwards Albert was formally elected by the Great Thing. Magnus resisted, but was defeated and made prisoner in a battle at Enkoping in 1365. In 1371 he was released, and the rest of his days he spent in Norway, where he was not unpopular. From his mother he had inherited the Norwegian crown, but before the misfortunes of his later years it had been transferred to his son Haco.

The nobles and the hierarchy of Sweden were now so powerful that only a king of the highest political genius could have hoped to control them. Albert of Mecklenburg proved to be utterly unfit for the task he had undertaken. He tried to protect himself by giving many of the great offices of state to Germans, but he was warned that he would be dethroned if he continued to show so much favour to foreigners. In 1371 he accepted as his chief counsellor a great Swedish noble called Bo Jonsson, to whom about a third of the kingdom is said to have belonged. Bo Jonsson gave much more heed to his own interests than to those of his country, and did hardly anything to mitigate the hardships inflicted on the common people at this tinie by the turbulence of the well- off classes. After Bo Jonsson's death Albert attempted to regain some of the authority which he had been forced to delegate to his powerful minister ; but the nobles refused to obey him, and invited Margaret of Denmark and Norway to take his place.

Margaret, one of the most remarkable figures in Scandinavian history, was the daughter of Waldemar IV. of Denmark, and at an early age she had become the wife of Haco of Norway, son of the Swedish king whom Albert had supplanted. The offspring of this marriage was an only son, Olaf, who succeeded his grandfather in Denmark in 1375 and his father in Norway in

1380. Both countries were ruled firmly and wisely by Margaret in her son's name; and after his death in 1387 the Danes and the Norwegians begged her to retain supreme power. To this request she assented; and, when the Swedish nobles asked her to undertake the government of Sweden also, she at once expressed her willingness to attack Albert, who had irritated her by claiming the Danish crown. An army was soon despatched to Sweden, and in 1389 Albert was defeated and taken prisoner at Falképing. Stockholm, which was held by German mercenaries, refused to admit the conqueror, and for several years it was besieged

without success by Danish troops. At last the difficulty had to be settled by negotiation. In 1395 it was arranged that Albert should be set at liberty on condition that within three years he should pay a ransom of 60,000 marks. If at the end of that period the money was not paid, he was either to give up Stockholm or to return to captivity. The result was that in 1398 Stockholm was | surrendered by the Hanseatic League, which had become security for the fulfilment of Albert's engagement.

Meanwhile Margaret had persuaded the Danes, the Norwegians, and the Swedes to accept her grandnephew Eric of Pomerania as her successor, and in 1397 he was crowned at Calmar. Margaret was eager that the union of the Scandinavian countries under a single sovereign : should be made permanent, and delegates from the ' councils of state of the three kingdoms met at Calmar to discuss her proposals. On the 20th of July 1397 these delegates concluded what was called the uniou of Calmar. Sweden, Norway, and Denmark, while retaining their local laws and customs, were in all future time to be ruled by one king. When a king died he was to be succeeded by his eldest son; but if he were childless his Successor was to be freely elected. In foreign affairs Scandinavia was always to act as a united country, Margaret had excellent intentions in devising this bold schenie, but the time was not ripe for so vast a change, It was inevitable that when popular movenients were no longer held in check by her strong will, formidable difficulties shouid spring from the jealousies of the three nationalities.

Even after Hric's coronation Margaret remained the real Erie XII, sovereign, and she was powerful enough to make the union something more

than a mere name. But even during her lifetime the Swedish people showed that they resented the idea of being taxed for objects in which they were only indirectly interested, and when she died (in 1412) it soon became evident that Eric would be unable to retain their allegiance. In 1386 Margaret had formally recognized the claim of Gerhard VI., count of Holstein, to be feudal lord of the duchy of Schleswig. Gerhard died in 1404, leaving three young sons. Margaret and Eric then tried to recover the rights of the Danish crown in the duchy ; and in 1413, soon after Margaret's death, Eric caused Schleswig to be declared a forfeited fief. The result was a war which lasted about twenty years. The Swedes had to bear heavy burdens to enable Eric to carry on the conflict, and he made no attempt to allay their discontent.

He seldom visited their country, and his officers often treated them with reckless cruelty. In the province of Dalecarlia the royal bailiff acted so tyrannically that i 1434 the people rebelled. They were led by a brave and patriotic miner, Engelbrecht Engelbrechtsson, and under his influence the movement spread rapidly among the peasantry of other districts. The Swedish council of state, alarmed by the enthusiasm he had excited, agreed in 1436 to declare the king deposed. The nobles were more afraid of the peasants than of Eric, and soon placed him on the throne again; but he never fully recovered his authority. He was obliged to make Charles Knutsson his viceroy in Sweden; and Knutsson was as anxious 8 Engelbrechtsson that Swedish independence should be restored, The two patriotic leaders became jealous of one another, and Engelbrechtsson was murdered by a member of Knutsson's party. But the popular agitation lost none of its original force, and in 1439 Eric was dethroned by all his kingdoms. He fled to the island of Gotland, where he lived for some years by piracy; and afterwards he was compelled to seek for refuge in Pomerania.

Christopher of Bavaria, Eric's nephew, was elected to ics

the Danish throue, and he was soon acknowledged also in "P

- Dantzic. j became king of Sweden, but he was unable to assert

many foreign scholars.

Norway and Sweden. He was a man of good intentions, but was not strong enough to overcome the prejudice created against him by the fact of his being a foreigner. When he died in 1448 the Danes chose Christian, count of Oldenburg, as his successor, and the Norwegians by and by followed their example. Had the decision in

| Sweden rested only with the nobles and the clergy,

Christian would at once have received the Swedish crown,

| for under the nominal rule of a foreign king these classes

were able to tyrannize as they pleased over their poorer neighbours. But the Swedish people generally so strongly

‘ disliked the union, and stood so urgently in need of the _ protection of a native sovereign, that Charles Knutsson ; was made king. He mounted the throne as Charles VIII.

The aristocracy, both spiritual and temporal, detested him ; and in 1457 he found in Archbishop Jéns Bengtsson so formidable an enemy that he had to make his escape to Christian I. of Denmark and Norway then

supremacy over the country as a whole, and in 1464 Charles VIII. again secured the throne. In the following year Charles was displaced a second time, but soon after- wards he was recalled, and he retained the crown until his death in 1470.

Charles was succeeded, not as king but as regent, by

’@ his nephew Sten Sture, under whose firm rule Sweden ~ became prosperous and contented. Sten Sture was a far-

seeing statesman, and sided resolutely with the peasants against the nobles. He took great pains also to promote the intellectual culture of the people. The university of Upsala was founded by him, and he introduced into Sweden the art of printing, and invited to the country He was not able

wholly to destroy the union, for in 1496 he was defeated by King Hans of Denmark and Norway, who afterwards received the Swedish crown. Nevertheless Sten Sture remained the real master of Sweden, and after the defeat of the Danes by the Ditmarshers in 1500 his power was almost absolute. He died in 1503, when his authority passed to his nephew Svante Nilsson Sture, whom King Hans and the Swedish clergy and nobles in vain attempted to put down. Svante Nilsson Sture was succeeded by his son, Sten Sture the younger, in 1512, and for some time this brave and patriotic regent vigorously held his own both against his enemies at home and against Christian IL, king of Denmark and Norway. In 1520, however, he was mortally wounded in a battle with the Danes at

tit Bosesund, after which Christian II. became king of

Sweden. This sovereign had some enlightened ideas, but he was a man of ferocious passions, and he had no sooner restored the union than he made the maintenance of it impossible by an act of almost unparalleled cruelty. Under the pretence of upholding the honour of the church he ordered at Stockholm the execution of ninety persons accused of having taken part in the deposition of his friend and supporter Archbishop Gustavus Trolle, who had been the late regent’s bitterest enemy. Most of the condemned men were nobles, and Christian hoped that by killing them he would secure the allegiance of the peasantry. The whole Swedish nation, however, was

{shocked by so horrible a massacre, and resolved to shake off for ever the hated Danish yoke.

The movement for national independence was headed by

)Gustavus Ericsson, known afterwards as Gustavus Vasa.

his young noble had been one of a group of Swedish hostages whom Christian II. had sent to Denmark, treat- ing them as if they had been prisoners of war. In 1519 he escaped from prison, and after a short stay in Ltibeck

‘found his way to Dalecarlia, where he went about in

disguise among the peasantry, urging them to combine

against the common enemy. At first they were afraid to act with him, but their hesitation vanished when they heard of the blood-bath in Stockholm, —a crime by which Gustavus himself was more than ever embittered against the Danes, for his father was one of Christian IL.'s victims. A force raised by Archbishop Trolle having been defeated, Gustavus led his troops beyond the limits of Dalecarlia and took Vesteris and Upsala, and laid siege to Stockholm and Calmar. 'These fortresses were bravely defended, but in 1523, with the help of a fleet sent to him by Liibeck, he succeeded in capturing them.

In 1521 he had been declared regent, and in 1523, before Gustavus the conquest of Stockholm and Calmar, he summoned at Vasa.

Strengnés a diet which elected him to the throne. Soon afterwards he made himself master of Finland, and he annexed Scania, Halland, and Blekinge. The union had now been brought to an end, and from this time Sweden was always ruled by her own kings. Denmark and Norway, however, remained subject to one crown until the beginning of the 19th century ;

Gustavus Vasa was by far the greatest sovereign who had up to this time ruled the Swedish people. Before he was made king the doctrines of Luther had been pro- claimed in Sweden by the brothers Olaus and Laurentius Petri; and Gustavus, who listened attentively to their teaching, became one of the most enthusiastic adherents of the Reformation. He acted cautiously, however, and resolutely opposed violent agitators. The majority of the Swedes cordially accepted the new doctrines, and at a diet held at Westerés in 1527 Gustavus received authority to reorganize the church. This he did thoroughly, making it clear from the beginning that Protestant pastors would never be permitted to wield the power which the Roman priesthood had so often abused. The greater part of the vast estates which had belonged to the Roman clergy he confiscated and applied to the uses of the state. In his secular policy he was as bold and successful as in his dealings with the church. For centuries the independence and arrogance of the great nobles had been the curse of the Swedish people. Gustavus missed no opportunity

of limiting their influence. He compelled them to bear their fair share of the public burdens, and secured for himself faithful allies by obtaining for burghers and the peasantry, who had lost almost all their political influence, a recognized place in the diet, which was now summoned more frequently and regularly than it had been for several generations. Gustavus did everything he could to encour- age industry. For six years he fought with Liibeck in order to ‘break the supremacy of the Hanseatic League, and he concluded treaties of commerce with England and the Netherlands. So many changes were effected in Sweden in his time that several conspiracies were formed against him, but lie had little difficulty in overcoming his enemies, for he had the confidence and affection of the great mass of his subjects. In 1544 it was decided by the diet that the Swedish throne should cease to be elective, and that it should be hereditary in the family of Gustavus.

When Gustavus died in 1560, his eldest son Eric he- Eric XIV.

came king. Eric was foolish enough to go to war with Frederick II. of Denmark for no better reason than that the latter, like Eric himself, claimed the right to put three crowns in his coat-of-arms. This war, which lasted seven years, caused much suffering to both nations. The Danes were generally beaten at sea, but under the leader- ship of the stout soldier Daniel Rantzau they gained important victories on land. Intellectually Eric was one of the most cultivated of Swedish kings, but in action he was so headstrong and wayward that most people believed him to be insane. He wasted the treasure amassed by

John ITE.

Sigis- mund.

Charles aX,

748 Sw E

his father, and under the influence of passion and suspicion caused the death of many powerful and loyal subjects. In 1568 his brothers John and Charles rebelled against him. His favourite, Géran Persson, who was accused of

having constantly misled him, was seized and executed, and Eric himself was obliged to surrender. He was deprived of the crown and kept in close confinement until 1577, when he was murdered.

John mounted the throne as John ITI. (1568-1592). In 1570 the war between Sweden and Denmark was brought to an end by the peace of Stettin. Sweden obtained some advantages by this treaty, but she had to resign to Denmark her claims to the island of Gotland, and to Scania, Halland, and Blekinge. Through the influence of his first wife Catherine, sister of King Sigis- mund II. of Poland, John had become a Catholic ; and as king he laboured to restore as far as possible the old religious forms. His efforts were bitterly resented by the Protestants, while at Rome he was condemned for not acting with sufficient decision in the interest of his church. He was succeeded by his son Sigismund, who had been elected king of Poland in 1587. In the interval between John's death and Sigismund's arrival in Sweden supreme power was exercised by Duke Charles, Sigismund's uncle. Charles, the ablest of all the sons of Gustavus Vasa, resolved to take advantage of the opportunity to place the ecclesiastical system of the country on a satisfactory basis. Accordingly a great assembly was summoned at Upsala in 1593, and by this assembly it was decreed that the Augsburg confession of faith should be accepted as the authoritative statement of the theological doctrines of the Swedish church. The decision was of vast importance, and the Swedes have ever since looked back upon it as one that marked an era in their national history.

Before his coronation in 1594 Sigismund undertook to protect the rights of his Protestant subjects; but, being an ardent Catholic, he soon began to work for the triumph of his own creed. On his return to Poland the discontent he had excited in Sweden found free expression, and he was obliged to place the administration of affairs in the hands of his uncle, Duke Charles. In the time of King John a dispute about frontiers had led to war between Sweden and Russia, and this war was still going on when Charles undertook his new duties. In 1595 he concluded peace, securing for Sweden the provinces of Esthonia and Narva, but yielding to Russia some districts on the borders of Finland. These districts were held by Klas Fleming, an enthusiastic adherent of King Sigismund, and he declined to give them up, nor were they surrendered until the death of this general in 1597.

Meanwhile Charles had found that some members of the council of state were bent on thwarting all his schemes, and from them he appealed to the diet. The diet heartily supported him, and appointed him governor-general of Sweden; where- upon he set to work in earnest to put down Catholic intriguers, and to promote the interests of the peasantry in opposition to those of the great nobles. In 1598 Sigis- mund advanced against him with a Polish army, and was defeated at Staingebro, near Linkoping. The war went on for some time, but Sigismund himself returned to Poland. In 1600 the diet demanded that he should reside in Sweden or send his son to be educated as a Pro- testant. No answer being returned to these demands, Sigismund was dethroned, and his heirs were deprived of the right of succession. Duke Charles was then made king, and reigned as Charles IX. Sigismund continued to regard himself as the lawful sovereign, and as the same pretension was made by his descendants, a very bitter feeling sprang up between Sweden and Poland,—a feeling which led to many wars during the next sixty years.

DEN (History,

Charles IX. (1600-1611) carried on with splendid vigour the work which had been begun by. his father Gustavus Vasa. Under his rule Sweden became a thoroughly Protestant country, and for the first time associated herself to some extent with the general Pio. testant movement in other lands. Charles watched with especial interest the action of religious parties in Germany, and carefully maintained good relations with the leading German Protestant princes. At home one of his principal

-aims was to force the aristocracy to be subservient to the

crown, and he succeeded as no Swedish king had done before him. For burghers and the peasantry he secured in the diet a more important and more clearly defined | place than had formerly belonged to them, and he devised many sagacious measures for the material welfare of his people. He devoted much attention to the development of mining industries, and by the founding of convenient seaports he gave a great impetus to trade. In foreign relations he was not less masterful than in his manage- ment of domestic affairs. In 1609 he sent an army into Russia to oppose the false Demetrius, whose pretensions to the Russian throne were supported by Poland. The

Swedish generals, after having achieved some success, were obliged to retreat in consequence of a mutiny among their troops ; but Charles despatched a fresh force, which did its work so well that the Russians came to terms, and even promised to accept his younger son, Charles Philip, as czar. In the last year of his life Charles was engaged in a war with Christian IV. of Denmark, who invaded Sweden because Charles claimed to be king of the Norwegian Laplanders and sought to exclude the Danes from the extensive trade with Riga. Calmar, notwithstanding the strenuous exertions of Charles, was captured by the Danes, and from this circumstance the struggle came to be known as the Calmar War. | Charles IX. was succeeded by his son Gustavus Gusta Adolphus (1611-1632), the most illustrious of the kings 4‘ of Sweden. He was only seventeen years of age when he became king, but he had already given evidence of high intellectual and moral qualities. One of lis first public acts was to appoint as chancellor the youngest of his counsellors, Axel Oxenstjerna, a great statesman whose name is intimately associated with all the most prominent events of his reign. By mingled gentleness and firmness Gustavus won almost immediately the goodwill of his subjects, and before he was many years on the throne he became the object of their most enthusiastic devotion. He showed unfailing respect for the rights of the diet, improved its organization, and summoned it regularly one a year. Industry and trade flourished under his wise rule, and he did much to develop the educational system of Sweden by giving splendid endowments to the university of Upsala and by founding the university of Dorpat and many schools and colleges. He introduced into the army a rigid system of discipline, yet he was adored by his soldiers, who had perfect faith in his military genius and were touched by his care for their welfare and by the cheerfulness with which, when necessary, he shared their hardships. ; The war with Denmark which had been begun in his father’s time he was obliged to continue, but he did s0 very unwillingly, and as soon as possible (in 1613) he signed a treaty of peace, by which, in return for the pay- ment of a million thalers, Sweden received back all the territory that had been conquered by the Danes. Having no further cause of anxiety in this direction, he prosecuted with renewed vigour the war with the Russians, who ha not kept their promise to recognize Prince Charles Philip as czar. The Swedish general, Count de la Gardie, ha gained many advantages in the struggle, and when

a he ee

[oc ae

ee

=

a es a re ee i ee

tJ

PF a oe

wn et

Fe er rat

i

1568-1660. | SW B

Gustavus himself took part in it the Swedes were so successful that in 1617 the czar Michael was glad to conclude the peace of Stolbova, giving up Kexholm, Carelia, and Ingermanland, and confirming Sweden in the possession of Esthonia and Livonia. The next task of Gustavus was to subdue Sigismund of Poland, who had formally renewed his claim to the crown of Sweden after Charles IX.'s death, and had proved himself one of the most troublesome of the young Swedish king's enemies. In 1621 Gustavus took the field against him, and achieved a series of brilliant successes, which were interrupted only when, in 1629, Austria sent to the aid of Poland a force of 10,000 men under Arnheim.

Meanwhile the Thirty Years' War, begun in 1618, had been raging in Germany. Christian IV. of Denmark, who had intervened on behalf of the Protestants, had been forced to lay down his arms; and it seemed in the highest degree probable that the Catholic reaction, headed by the fanatical emperor Ferdinand II., was about to be com- pletely

triumphant. Gustavus, like his father and grand- father, was an enthusiastic Protestant, and he had watched with grief and dismay the misfortunes of those who were struggling for the right of free judgment in religion. At last he resolved to give them the support they so urgently needed, and, in order that he might without unnecessary delay act upon his decision, he arranged with Poland in 1629 that there should be an armistice for six years. He then began to make preparations for his great enterprise, and in 1630 he embarked for Germany with an army of 15,000 men. In undertaking this splendid task he was not influenced only by religious motives. He wished to punish the Austrians for having helped the Poles; he hoped to find an opportunity of adding to Swedish territory ; and there are reasons for supposing that he dreamed of snatching the imperial crown from the Haps- burg dynasty and placing it on his own head. But all the evidence we possess goes to show that these objects were subordinate. His principal aim was to save Protestantism in Germany from extinction.

He had many unexpected difficulties to contend with, for he was distrusted by most of the German Protestant princes. Very soon, however, his tact and courage enabled him to overcome every obstacle, and at Breitenfeld he gained a decisive victory over the imperial general Tilly. After this great success the confidence of the German Protestants revived, and Gustavus was everywhere received as their deliverer. Tilly tried to prevent him from crossing the Lech, but was again defeated; and the Swedish king took possession of Munich, having already held court at Frankfort. For some time the destinies of the empire appeared to be at his disposal, but all the hopes excited by his heroic career were suddenly cut short by his death in the battle of Liitzen in 1632.

Gustavus was succeeded by his daughter Christina, whom, before his departure for Germany, he had presented to the diet as heiress to the crown. During her minority Sweden was governed by five nobles whom the diet appointed to be her guardians, the foremost place being given to Axel Oxenstjerna. They continued the foreign policy of Gustavus, maintaining in Germany a powerful army, which, although no longer uniformly successful, gained many victories over the imperial forces. —

Christina, carefully educated in accordance with instructions left by her father, became one of the most cultivated women of the 17th century ; and at an early age she astonished her guardians by the vigour of her understanding. In 1644, on her eighteenth birthday, she assumed supreme power, and for some time she fulfilled all the expectations which had been formed as to her reign. In 1645 she brought to an end a war with Denmark which had been begun two

years before. The Danes had been repeatedly defeated, and by the treaty of Brémsebro they resigned to Sweden Jemtland and Harjeaadalen along with the islands of Gotland and Oesel, and gave up Halland for a period of twenty-five years. Contrary to the advice of Oxenstjerna, Christina pressed for the conclusion of peace in Germany, and, when her object was attained, the Swedes had no reason to be dissatisfied with the result. By the peace of Westphalia, concluded in 1648, Sweden obtained the duchies of Bremen, Verden, and Western Pomerania, a part of Eastern Pomerania, and Wismar. Moreover, Sweden was recognized as a state of the empire.

The Swedish people were anxious that Christina should marry, but she declined to sacrifice her independence. In 1649, however, she persuaded the diet to accept as her successor the best of her suitors, her cousin Charles Gustavus of Pfalz-Zweibriicken, the son of the only sister of Gustavus Adolphus. In the following year she was crowned with great pomp. About tlis time her character seemed to undergo a remarkable change. She became wayward and restless, neglected her tried counsellors, and followed the advice of self-seeking favourites. So much discontent was aroused by her extravagance and fickleness that she at last announced her determination to abdicate, and she abandoned her purpose only in deference to Oxenstjerna's entreaties. She now devoted herself to her duties with renewed ardour, and made her court famous by inviting to it Descartes, Grotius, Salmasius, and other scholars and

philosophers. But she had soon to encounter fresh difficulties. During the Thirty Years' War the influence of the nobles had been greatly increased, partly in consequence of their position in the army, partly through the wealth they acquired in Germany. They made as usual so bad a use of their power that an agitation which seemed likely to have most serious conse- quences sprang up against them among the peasants, the burghers, and the clergy. Unable to bring order out of the prevailing confusion, and longing for repose, Christina finally resolved to resign the crown; and in 1654 she formally laid the royal insignia before the diet in order

that they might be transferred to Charles Gustavus, who Charles

forthwith became king as Charles X. Christina imme- X. diately left the country, and did not return to it for many years. She ultimately made some attempts to recover the crown, as well as to be elected queen of Poland, but her efforts were not successful. She joined the Roman Church, and there was much talk at all the courts in Europe about the eccentricities of her character and about her passionate love of art and learning.

Charles X. (1654-1660) devoted his energies chiefly to war, in which he was brilliantly successful. He began his military career by attacking Poland, whose king claimed to be the true heir to the Swedish crown. Ina great battle at Warsaw Charles destroyed the Polish army, and Poland would probably soon have been absolutely at his mercy but for the intervention of Russia, which sought to weaken him by invading Esthonia and Livonia. While the war with Poland and Russia was in progress, Charles became involved in a strnggle with Denmark, and he conducted it so vigorously and skilfully that the Danes, by the peace of Roeskilde, signed in 1658, gave up Scania, Halland, Blekinge, and various other territories. War with Denmark was several times renewed, and at the time of his death Charles was engaged in making extensive preparations for a fresh onslaught.

He was succeeded by his son Charles XI, a child of Charles During the minority of Charles XI. XI.

four years of age. the government was carried on by his mother Hedwig Eleonore and by the chancellor De la Gardie and four other ministers. In 1660 they concluded with Poland the

peace of Oliva, whereby Sweden received the whole of Livonia as far as the Diina. Soon afterwards peace was also concluded with Denmark and Russia, the former receiving back Drontheim and Bornholm, which had been taken by Charles X. Sweden, however, kept Scania, Halland, and Blekinge, which were now finally severed from the Danish monarchy. In 1672 Charles XI. him- self assumed the direction of affairs. For some time hé seemed to take little interest in public business, and in 1674 he was rash enough to send an army into Germany to aid Louis XIV. in his war with the United Provinces and their allies, The Swedes were defeated at Fehrbellin by the elector of Brandenburg, who at once followed up his victory by taking possession of Pomerania. Christian V. of Denmark, thinking he had now a good opportunity of recovering Scania, joined the enemies of France and Sweden, and at sea the Danes gained several great victories over the Swedes. disasters, began to show the real vigour of his character. He placed himself at the head of his army, and in several battles so decisively defeated the Danes that they were driven from Scania, the greater part of which they had occupied.

sustained no other losses. At this time the finances of Sweden were in utter

confusion, and the revenue was not nearly large enough to

cover the necessary expenditure. So many of the crown

lands had from time to time been given away to nobles

that the administration could not be carried on without a system of crushing taxation.

that these lands should be taken back. Charles XI.

became convinced that there was no other way out of his

difficulties, and in 1680, with the sanction of the diet, he

ordered that the fourth part of all the crown lands which

had been given away during the previous thirty years

should be restored. This, however, was only the begin-

ning of the so-called process of reduction, which was soon extended and carried out with ruthless severity. By this measure some of the foremost families in Sweden were

ruined, and the crown was made almost independent of

the diet, for it recovered no fewer than ten counties, seventy baronies, and many smaller estates. Charles became virtually an absolute sovereign, and on the whole he made an excellent use of his power. For more than a century Sweden had been almost constantly engaged in war. She now enjoyed a period of repose, and profited greatly by the king's vigorous administration. He built fortresses, reorganized the army and navy, and carried on many important public works in the interests of commerce. He also founded the university of Lund, and made larger provision for popular education, frequently impressing upon the clergy the duty of attending to the intellectual needs of their parishioners. His comparatively early death was lamented by the great majority of the people, who were grateful for the steady determination with which he applied himself to the duties of his office.

Charles XI. was succeeded by his son Charles XII. (1697-1718), the most brilliant although not the greatest figure in Swedish history. He was a youth of fifteen when his father died, and he was so enthusiastically devoted to sport and all kinds of physical exercise that he seemed to be utterly destitute of "political ambition. Accordingly Augustus II. of Poland and Saxony, Peter I. of Russia, and Frederick

IV. of Denmark, thinking the time had come for the recovery of the possessions taken from their predecessors by Sweden, formed an alliance against him, and they appear to have had no doubt that he would be easily overcome. Charles XII., however, was

SW E

Charles XI., aroused by these

When peace was made in 1679, Sweden had to give up to Brandenburg a part of Pomerania, but she

The common people, unable to bear the burdens imposed upon them, had often insisted

sister Hedvig Sophia.

D EN

in reality a man of extraordinary vigour and daring, and he soon convinced his enemies that they would find in him a formidable opponent. In 1700 he began what is known as the Northern War by suddenly advancing against Copenhagen, which he was about to besiege when Frederick, alarmed by the overwhelming numbers of the enemy, accepted Charles's terms, and signed the peace of Travendahl. Charles at once crossed the Baltic to attack Augustus II. and Peter I., the former of whom was besieging Riga, while the latter threatened Narva. At Narva the Swedish king gained a splendid victory, and afterwards he defeated the Saxons, driving them away from Riga. If he had now concluded peace, he might have been for many years by far the greatest potentate in northern Europe. But he was resolved to humiliate Augustus IT., and this he did most effectually. Defeated at Klissoff, Augustus was held to have forfeited the throne of Poland, and at Charles's suggestion Stanislaus Leczinski was elected king. Charles followed Augustus into Saxony, and in 1706 forced him to conclude the treaty of Altranstiidt. Meanwhile Peter I. had been taking possession of Swedish territory on the Baltic, and on a portion of it had begun to build St Petersburg, instead of attacking him directly, Charles resolved

to thwart him by seizing Moscow, and this decision proved fatal to his great designs. Worn out by a long and dreary march, during which many soldiers died of hunger and disease, his dispirited army was defeated at Poltava (1709); and Charles, ignorant of the real condition of the enemy's forces, fled across the Russian frontier into Turkey. He remained five years in the Turkish dominions, trying to induce the sultan to become his ally. But, although war did break out between Russia and Turkey, the Turks had little confidence in Charles, for it was supposed that he wished to become king of Poland, and the sultan suspected that if this scheme were effected he might become a dangerous enemy of the Ottoman empire. Convinced at last that nothing was to be gained from Turkey, Charles made his escape, and in fourteen days rode from Adrian- ople to Stralsund. In his absence the war had been continued by Peter I., who had soon been joined again by Augustus II. and Frederick IV.; and ultimately the alliance was strengthened by the accession of the king of Prussia and the elector of Hanover, each of whom was eager to possess those Swedish territories which were in the neighbourhood of his own dominions. In Stralsund, which was besieged by an army of Danes, Saxons, Prussians, and Russians, Charles displayed astonishing valour and military skill, but about a year after his arrival the town was obliged to surrender. He then went to Lund, adopted vigorous measures for the defence of the Swedish coasts, and attacked Norway. By the advice of his friend Baron Gértz he entered into negotiations with Peter I., who was not unwilling to come to terms. Had Charles lived, it is possible that the tide of misfortune might have turned, but he was shot dead while engaged in besieging Frederikshall. His intention was to conquer Norway after having made peace with Russia, and from Norway to cross to Great Britain, where he hoped to punish the elector of Hanover by placing the Pretender on the English throne.

All the conditions of political life in Sweden were now changed. The Swedish people were surrounded by a crowd of enemies whom they could not hope to overcome, and in the confusion caused by the Northern War the nobles had recovered their anciént power. As Charles XII. had no children, it was doubtful whether the crown should

pass to his younger sister Ulrica Eleonore or to Charles Frederick of Holstein-Gottorp, the son of his elder The nobles decided in favour of

[H’STory,

ee EO

ye. ing to place all real power in their hands.

‘ many sacrifices. | Verden to Hanover ; in 1720 Stettin and Western Pomer- ania as far as the Peene were resigned to Prussia; and in

) and a part of Viborg lan.

1660-1790.]

Ulrica Eleonore, who secured their support by undertak- In 1720 her authority was transferred to her husband, Prince Frederick

gdevk of Hesse, who reigned as Frederick I. until his death in

1751. He reigned, however, only in name, for the diet, which now practically meant the nobles, usurped every important prerogative of the crown. There were two parties, known as the Hats and the Caps, who assailed one another with much vehemence; but on one point they were agreed, and that was that the Swedish people should in future be ruled, not by a king, or bya king

acting in conjunction with the diet, but by the aristocracy.

Meanwhile Sweden had been shorn of most of the foreign territory for which in past times she had made so In 1719 she had given up Bremen and

1721 Russia obtained Livonia, Esthonia, Ingermanland, In 1741, against the wish of King Frederick, the Hats plunged into a war with Russia ;

_ and the consequence was that in 1743 Sweden had to

conclude the degrading peace of Abo, by which she lost Eastern Finland. She had even to beg Russia to aid her against Denmark, and she was obliged to recognize Adol- phus Frederick of Holstein-Gottorp, a relative of the ezarina Elizabeth, as heir to the throne.

From the reign of Charles IX. until that of Charles XII. Sweden had been one of the greatest powers in Europe. She had conducted many wars successfully ; she had secured a vast territory beyond her proper limits; in the crisis of the struggle between Catholicism and Pro- testantism she had lent powerful support to those who were fighting for spiritual freedom. In the management

_ of international relations during this period no great

| decision was arrived at by any European state without

reference to her wishes, and there seemed to be solid

reasons for the belief that her power would be enduring.

Yet she suddenly sank from her high position to that of a

third-rate state, which exercised little or no influence on

the affairs of the rest of the world. This striking change was immediately due to the calamities brought upon his country by Charles XII., but sooner or later it would have come even if he had never lived. The circumstances of Europe were in his time very different from those with which Gustavus Adolphus had to. deal. Russia had emerged as a united and growing state; Prussia had begun to display some of the qualities which were ulti- mately to make her supreme in Germany; and Hanover had been made important by the accession of the house of Brunswick to the throne of Great Britain. Sweden could not have permanently maintained her conquests against

_ these new political forces. Charles XII., by his bold but

headstrong policy, only hastened a process which was in

_ any case inevitable.

} Under Adolphus Frederick (1751-1771) Sweden took part in the Seven Years' War, siding with the enemies of Frederick the Great. But she was now so feeble, and her

Statesmen were so incompetent, that her intervention led to no serious results. The Hats, who were responsible for the humiliation brought upon Sweden by this exhibi-

| tion of her weakness, had to make way for the Caps; but

neither party had the power or the will to arouse the

'nation from the lethargy into which it had fallen. Gus- tavus III., Adolphus Frederick's son (1771-1792), was a man of a very different temper from his indolent father. He had great energy of character, a thorough comprehen-

sion of some of the conditions of political progress, and a frank and persuasive manner. In early youth he seems

| to have convinced himself that it would be impossible for

Sweden to become a prosperous country unless the royal

authority were restored, and when at the age of twenty- five he succeeded his father he secretly resolved to make the crown supreme.

He carried out his plans with remarkable ability and caution. Under the pretence that he wished to introduce a new system of military manceuvres, he collected around him about two hundred officers, most of whom were young men, and they were gradually induced to pledge themselves to support him. Agents were despatched to win over the regiments in the provinces, and Gustavus was careful to make a good

impression on the burgher class and on the peasantry. When all was ready, the commandant of Christianstad, on the 12th of August 1772, .as previously arranged, formally renounced his allegiance to the diet, and one of the king's brothers went to the town with the regiments in the neighbourhood and pretended to besiege it. Suspicions were aroused at Stockholm, and at a meeting of the council of state Gustavus was bitterly reproached by some of the members. He then boldly proclaimed his purpose. The members of the council of state were arrested, and the king received the homage of the leading authorities in the military, naval, and civil services. The diet was forthwith summoned, and at its first sitting Gustavus spoke of the lamentable condition of the kingdom, and of the need for more efficient methods of government. He had no wish, he said, to establish an absolute monarchy, but it was necessary that the supremacy of the aristocracy should be destroyed, and that the country should re-establish the system which existed in the time of Gustavus Adolphus, when the crown and the diet had each its separate func- tions and worked cordially together. A new constitution, which had been drawn up, placing executive power wholly in the king's hands, was afterwards read, and at once accepted.

Delivered from the trammels which had hampered his immediate predecessors, Gustavus worked hard for the welfare of his subjects. Agriculture, industry, and trade revived ; the army and navy were improved; and the educated classes began to show greater interest in art, literature, and science. Unfortunately the king took the court of France as the model for his own court, and the country resented the incessant demands for money which were rendered necessary by his personal extravagance. In 1788 he declared war with Russia, hoping to recover Livonia and the part of Finland which Russia had con- quered ; and the discontent he had aroused found expres- sion in the army, the leaders of which declined to fight, protesting that the war ought not to have been begun without the sanction of the diet. At the same time Den- mark was persuaded by the czarina Catherine to attack Sweden. Gustavus seemed to be on the verge of ruin, but he was saved by his own courage and sagacity. Hastening back from Finland, he was able to rescue Gothenburg from the Danes with a force raised in Dale- carlia,

and soon afterwards, through the intervention of England and Prussia, Denmark was induced to withdraw from the struggle. The majority of the diet, seeing the dangers to which the nation was exposed, rallied around the king, and, notwithstanding the opposition of the nobles, recognized the right of the crown to declare war. Impressed by the firm and rapid action of Gustavus, the army returned to its allegiance, and the conflict with Russia was begun in earnest. In 1789 the Swedes were very unsuccessful, but in the following year they gained several victories both at sea and on land. Gustavus saw, however, that it would be impossible for him to wrest from Russia any of her territories, and in 1790 peace was concluded on the understanding that both states should occupy the position they held before the war.

Gustavus

IV.

Charles QUOT,

752

Gustavus was greatly excited by the French Revolution, and sought to form an alliance with Russia, Prussia, and Austria for the restoration of Louis XVI. But the diet refused to support his wild schemes. Several nobles, desiring to avenge the supposed wrongs of their order, entered into a conspiracy against him, and in 1792 he was mortally wounded by an assassin who acted as their agent.

Gustavus IV. (1792-1809) was not quite fourteen years old when his father was murdered, and during his minority the government was carried on by his uncle the duke of Sédermanland. Gustavus began to exercise royal authority in 1796. His reign was remarkable chiefly for the obstinacy with which he clung to his own ideas, no matter how far they might conflict with the obvious interests of his country. He had a bitter detestation of Bonaparte, and in 1803 went to Carlsruhe in the hope that he might induce the emperor and some of the German princes to act with him in support of the Bourbons. His enmity led to an open rupture with France, and even after the peace of Tilsit, when

Russia and Prussia offered to mediate between hin and the French emperor, he refused to come to terms. The consequence was that he lost Stralsund and the island of Riigen. He displayed so much friendship for England that Russia and Denmark, acting under the influence of France, declared war against him; and the whole of Finland was soon held by Russian troops. Gustavus attacked Norway, but his army was driven back by the Danes and Norwegians. He still declined to make peace, and he even alienated England when she attempted to influence him by moderate counsels. The Swedish people were so enraged by the consequences of his policy that in 1809 he was dethroned, and the claims of his descendants to the crown were also repudi- ated. He was succeeded by the duke of Sédermanland, who reigned as Charles XIIT.

Charles XIII. (1809-1818) concluded peace with Russia, Denmark, and France, ceding to Russia by the treaty of Frederikshamm (1809) the whole of Finland. The loss of this territory, which had been so long associ- ated with the Swedish monarchy, was bitterly deplored by the Swedes, but it was universally admitted that under the circumstances the sacrifice was unavoidable. Charles assented to important changes in the constitution, which were intended to bring to an end the struggle between the crown and the aristocracy and to provide some security for the maintenance of popular rights. The king was still to be at the head of the executive, but it was arranged that legislative functions and control over taxation should belong to the diet, which was to consist of four orders— nobles, clergymen, burghers, and peasants.

As Charles XIII. was childless, the diet elected as his successor Prince Christian Augustus of Holstein-Sonder- burg-Augustenburg. In 1810, soon after his arrival in Stockholm, this prince suddenly died ; and Sweden aston- ished Europe by asking Marshal Bernadotte to become lieir to the throne. Bernadotte, who took the name of Charles John, was a man of great vigour and resource, and soon made himself the real ruler of Sweden. Napoleon treated Sweden as almost a conquered country, and com- pelled her to declare war with England. Bernadotte, associating himself heartily with his adopted land, resolved to secure its independence, and entered into an alliance with Russia. In 1813 he started with an army of 20,000 Swedes to co-operate with the powers

which were striving finally to crush the French emperor. The proceedings of the Swedish crown prince were watched with some suspicion by the allies, as he was evidently unwilling to strike a decisive blow at France; but after the battle of Leipsic he displayed much activity. He blockaded Hamburg, and by the peace of Kiel, concluded in January 1814, he

forced Denmark to give up Norway. He then entered France, but soon returned, and devoted his energies to the conquest of Norway, which was very unwilling to be united with Sweden. Between the months of July and November 1814 the country was completely subdued, and Charles XIIT. was proclaimed king. The union of Sweden and Norway, which has ever since been maintained, was recognized by the congress of Vienna; and it was placed on a sound basis by the frank adoption of the principle that, while the two countries should be subject to the same crown and act together in matters of common interest, each should have complete control over its internal affairs. The new relation of their country to Norway gave much satisfaction to the Swedes, whom it consoled in some measure for the loss of Finland. It also made it easy for them to transfer to Prussia in 1815 what remained of their Pomeranian territories.

In 1818 Bernadotte mounted the throne as Charles Charl XIV., and he reigned until he died in 1844. Great XIV.

material improvements were effected during his reign, He caused new roads and canals to be constructed; he encouraged the cultivation of districts which had formerly been barren; and he founded good industrial and naval schools. He was not, however, much liked by his subjects. He never mastered the Swedish language, and he was so jealous of any interference with his authority that he sternly punished the expression of opinions which he dis- liked. To the majority of educated Swedes the constitu- tion seemed to be ill-adapted to the wants of the nation, and there was a general demand for a political

system which should make the Government more directly respon- sible to the people. In 1840 a scheme of reform was submitted to the diet by a committee which had been appointed for the purpose, but the negotiations and dis- cussions to which it gave rise led to no definite result.

Charles XIV. was succeeded by his son Oscar I. (1844- Oscar.

1859). Oscar had always expressed sympathy with liberal opinions, and it was anticipated that the constitutional question would be settled during his reign without much difficulty. These expectations were disappointed. The diet met soon after his accession, and was asked to accept the scheme which had been drawn up in 1840. The measure received the cordial approval of the burghers and peasants, but was rejected by the nobles and the clergy. In 1846 a committee was appointed to prepare a new set of proposals, and late in the following year the discussion of its plans began. While the debates on the subject were proceeding some excitement was produced by the revolutionary movement of 1848, and a new ministry, pledged to the cause of reform, came into office. The scheme devised by this ministry was accepted by the committee to which it was referred, but the provisions of the existing constitution rendered it necessary that the final settlement should depend upon the vote of the next diet. When the diet met in 1850 it was found that the

difficulties in the way were for the time insuperable. –

The proposals of the Government were approved by 4 majority of the burghers, but they were opposed by the nobles, the clergy, and the peasantry. The solution of the problem had, therefore, to be indefinitely postponed. Although the constitution was not reformed, much was done in other ways during the reign of Oscar I. to pro- mote the national welfare. The criminal law was brought into accordance with modern ideas, and the law of inhertt- ance was made the same for both sexes and for all classes of the community. Increased freedom was secured or industry and trade; the methods of administration were improved ; and the state took great pains to provide the country with

an efficient railway system. The result of the wise legislation of this period was that a new spirit of

the conflict. ‘ Russian acts of aggression on his northern frontiers, the _ king of Sweden and Norway concluded a treaty with _ England and France, pledging himself not to cede terri- | tory to Russia, and receiving from the Western powers a

national representatives.

) brother Oscar II., who still reigns (1887).

‘ in other collections.

| by Riihs in the 19th.

SW E

enterprise was displayed by the commercial classes, and that in material prosperity the people made sure and rapid progress.

In 1848, when the difficulty about Schleswig-Holstein led to war between Denmark and Germany, the Swedes sympathized cordially with the Danes, of whom they had for a long time ceased to be in the slightest degree jealous. Swedish troops were landed in Fiinen, and through the influence of the Swedish Government an armistice was concluded at Malmo. The excitement in favour of Den- mark soon died out, and when the war was resumed in 1849 Sweden resolutely declined to take part in it. The outbreak of the Crimean War greatly alarmed the Swedes, who feared that they might in some way be dragged into In 1855, having some reason to complain of

LITERATURE. |

promise of help in the event of his being attacked. . The

demands based on this treaty were readily granted by

Russia in the peace of Paris in 1856. Charles XV. (1859-1872) mounted the throne after

’. his father’s death. Nearly two years before his accession

_he had been made regent in consequence of Oscar I.’s ill- health. Charles was a man of considerable intellectual ability and of decidedly popular sympathies, and during his reign the Swedish people became enthusiastically loyal to his dynasty. In 1860 two estates of the realm—the peasants and the burghers—presented petitions, begging him to submit to the diet a scheme for the reform of the constitution. This request he willingly granted. The main provisions of the plan offered in his name were that the diet should consist of two chambers,—the first chamber

» to be elected for a term of nine years by the provincial

assemblies and by the municipal corporations of towns not represented in those assemblies, the second chamber to be elected for a term of three years by all natives of Sweden possessing a specified property qualification. The execu-

» tive power was to belong to the king, who was to act

under the advice of a council of state responsible to the This plan, which was received with general satisfaction, was finally adopted by the diet in 1866, and is still in force.

Early in the reign of Charles XV. there were serious disputes between Sweden and Norway, and the union of the two countries could scarcely have been maintained but for the tact and good sense of the king. He also exercised a steadying influence in 1863, when his people expressed passionate sympathy with the Poles in their insurrection against Russia, and with the Danes in their war with Prussia and Austria.

Charles XV. died in 1872, and was succeeded by his Under him Sweden has maintained good relations with all foreign

_ powers, and political disputes in the diet have never been

serious enough to interrupt the material progress of the nation.

_ Many documents relating to Swedish history have been published in Scriptores Rerum Suecicarum Medii divi, edited by Fant, Geijer, and Schroder, in Scriptores Suecict Medii Avi, edited by Rietz, and Among the older histories of Sweden may be named those by Dalin and Lagerbring in the 18th century and More important works on the subject are

those by Geijer, Carlson, Fryxell, and Strinnholm. (J. SI.)

Part III. —LITERATURE. Swedish literature, as distinguished from compositions

in the common norrexna tunga of old Scandinavia, cannot ’ be said to exist earlier than the 13th century. Nor until

the period of the Reformation was its development in

any degree rapid or copious. The oldest form in which Swedish! exists as a written language is the series of manuscripts known as Landskapslagarne, or “The Com- mon Laws.” These are supposed to be the relics of a still earlier age, and it is hardly believed that we even possess the first that was put down in writing. The most important and the most ancient of these codes is the “Elder West Géta Law,” reduced to its present form by

| the law-man Eskil about 1230. Another of great interest

is Magnus Eriksson’s “‘ General Common Law,” which was written in 1347. These ancient codes have been collected and edited by Prof. Schlyter. The chief ornament of medizval Swedish literature is Um Styrilse Kununga ok Héfdinga (“On the Conduct of Kings and Princes”), first printed, by command of Gustavus IL. Adolphus, in

1634. The writer is not known; it has been conjecturally dated 1325. It isa handbook of moral and political teaching, expressed in terse and vigorous language. St Bridget, or Birgitta (13027-1373), an historical figure of extraordinary interest, has left her name attached to several important religious works, in particular to a collection of Uppen-

_ barelser (“‘ Revelations”), in which her visions and ecstatic

meditations are recorded, and a version, the first into Swedish, of the five books of Moses. This latter was undertaken, at her desire, by her father-confessor Mattias (d. 1350), a priest at Ianképing. The translation of the Bible was continued a century later by a monk named Johaunes Budde (d. 1484),

In verse the earliest Swedish productions were probably the folk-songs. The age of these, however, has been commonly exaggerated. It is doubtful whether any still exist which are as old, in their present form, as the 13th century. The bulk are now attributed to the 15th, and many are doubtless much later still. The last, such as “Axel och Valborg,” ‘ Liten Karin,” “Kampen Grim- borg,” and “Habor och Signild,” deal with the adven- tures of romantic medieval romance. Almost the only positive clue we hold to the date of these poems is the fact that one of the most characteristic of them, ‘ Engel- brekt,” was written by Tomas, bishop of Strengniés, who died in 1443. Tomas, who left other poetical pieces, is usually called the first Swedish poet. There are three rhyming chronicles in medieval Swedish, all anonymous. The earliest, Hrikskrinikan, is attributed to 1320; Karls- kronkan is at least 120 years later; and the third, Sturekrénikorna, was probably written about 1500. All three have been edited by G, E. Klemming. The col- lection of rhymed romances which bears the name of Queen Euphemia’s Songs must have been written before the death of that lady in 1312. They are believed to date from 1303. They are versions of three medizval stories taken from French and German sources, and they deal respectively with King Arthur and the Table Round, with Duke Frederick of Normandy, and with Flores and Blancheflor. They possess very slight poetic merit in their Swedish form. A little later the romance of King Alexander was translated by, or at the command of,

Bo Jonsson Grip; this is more meritorious. A brilliant and pathetic relic of the close of the medival period exists in the Love Letters addressed in 1498 by Ingrid Persdotter, a nun of Vadstena, to the young knight Axel Nilsson. The first book printed in the Swedish language appeared in 1495.

The 16th century added but little to Swedish literature, and that little is mostly connected with the newly founded university of Upsala. The Renaissance scarcely made itself felt in Scandinavia, and even the Reformation failed to waken the genius of the country. Psalms and didactic

1 For the Swedish language, see SCANDINAVIAN LANGUAGES, Vol. xxi.

spiritual poems were the main products of Swedish letters in the 16th century. Two writers, the brothers Petri, take an easy prominence in so barren a period. Olaus Petri (1497-1552) and Laurentius Petri (1499-1573) were Carmelite monks who proceeded in 1516 to Witten- berg to study theology under Luther, and who came back to Sweden as the apostles of the new faith. Olaus, who is one of the noblest figures in Swedish annals, was of the executive rather than the meditative class.) He found time, however, to write a Chronicle, which is the earliest prose history of Sweden, a mystery-play, Tobie Comedia, which is the first Swedish drama, and three psalm-books, the best known being published in 1530 under the title of Vagre Gudhelige Vijsor (“ Certain Divine Songs”). lLaurentius Petri, who was archbishop of all Sweden, edited or superintended the translation of the Bible published at Upsala in 1540. He also wrote many psalms. lLaurentius Andree, who died in 1552, had previously prepared a translation of the New Testament, which appeared in 1526. He was a polemical writer of prominence on the side of the Reformers. Finally, Petrus Niger (Peder Svart), bishop of Vesteras (d. 1562), wrote a chronicle of the life of Gustavus I. up to 1533, in excel- lent prose. The same writer left unpublished a history of

the bishops of Westeras his predecessors. The latter half of the 16th century is a blank in Swedish literature. With the accession of Charles IX. and the consequent development of Swedish greatness, literature began to assert itself in more vigorous forms. The long life of the royal librarian, Johannes Bureus (1568-1652), formed a link between the age of the Petri and that of Stjernhjelm. Bureus studied all the sciences then known to mankind, and confounded them all in a sort of Rabbinical cultus of his own invention, a universal philosophy in a multi- tude of unreadable volumes, But he was a patient anti- quarian, and advanced the knowledge of ancient Scandi- navian mythology and language very considerably. He awakened curiosity and roused a public sympathy with letters ; nor was it without significance that two of the greatest Swedes of the century, Gustavus Adolphus and the poet Stjernhjelm, were his pupils. The reign of Charles IX. saw the rise of secular drama in Sweden. The first comedy was the Zisbe of Magnus Olai Astero- pherus (d. 1647), a coarse but witty piece on the story of Pyramus and Thisbe, acted by the schoolboys of the college of Arboga in 1610. This play is the Ralph Roister Doister of Swedish literature. A greater dramatist was Johannes Messenius (1579-1636), who, having been discovered plotting against the Government during the absence of Gustavus in Russia, was condemned to im- prisonment for life—that is, for twenty years. Before this disaster he had been professor in Upsala, where his first historical comedy Disa was performed in 1611 and the tragedy of Stgnil/in 1612. The design of Messenius was to write the history of his country in fifty plays; he completed and produced six. These dramas are not particularly well arranged, but they form a little body of theatrical literature of singular interest and value. Mes- senius was a genuine poet; the lyrics he introduces have something of the charm of the old ballads. He wrote abundantly in prison; his magnum opus was a history of Sweden in Latin, but he has also left, in Swedish, two important rhyme-chronicles, Messenius was imitated by a little crowd of playwrights. Nikolaus Catonius (d. 1655) wrote a fine tragedy on the Trojan War, Troijen- borgh, in which he excelled Messenius as a dramatist. Andreas Prytz, who died in 1655 as bishop of Linköping, produced several religious chronicle plays from Swedish history. Jacobus Rondeletius (d. 1662) wrote a curious "Christian tragi- comedy" of Judas Redivivus. 'These

DEN

plays were all acted by schoolboys and university youths, and when they went out of fashion among these classes the drama in Sweden almost entirely ceased to exist, Two historians of the reign of Charles IX., Erik Géransson Tegel (d. 1636) and Agidius Girs (d. 1639), deserve

mention.

[LITERATURE,

The reign of Gustavus Adolphus was adorned by one Stjern. great writer, the most considerable in all the early history hjelm

of Sweden. The title of "'the Father of Swedish Poetry" has been universally awarded to Géran Lilja, better known by his adopted name of Georg Stjernhjelm (1598-1672), This extraordinary man was born at Wika in Dalecarlia on the 7th of August 1598. He took his degree at Greifswald, and spent some years in travelling over every quarter of Europe. On his return he attracted the notice of Gustavus Adolphus, who gave him a responsible post at Dorpat in 1630, and raised him next year to the nobility. After the king's death Christina attached him, as a kind of poet-laureate, to her court in Stockholm, His property lay in Livonia, and when the Russians plundered that province in 1656 the poet was reduced to extreme poverty for two or three years. He died at Brunkeborg in Stockholm on the 22d of April 1672, Stjernhjelm was a man of almost universal attainment, but it is mainly in verse that he has left his stamp upon the literature of his country. He found the language rough and halting, and he moulded it into perfect smoothness and elasticity. His master Bureeus had written a few Swedish hexameters by way of experiment. Stjern- hjelm took the form and made it national. His greatest poem, L/ercules, is a didactic allegory in hexameters, written in very musical verse, and with an almost Oriental splendour of phrase and imagery. In its faults as well as its beauties the style of Stjernhjelm reminds us of that of his great Dutch contemporary Vondel. He was certainly influenced by a writer a few months older than himself, the German poet Martin Opitz. The Hercules, which deals with the familiar story of the dispute for the hero between Duty and Pleasure, was first printed, at Upsala, in 1658, but was finished some years earlier. Bréllops- Besvirs Ihugkommelse, a sort of serio-comic epithalamium in the same measure, is another very brilliant work of Stjernhjelm. His masques, Zhen fagne Cupido ('Cupid Caught") (1649), Preds-aft (" The Birth of Peace") (1649), and Parnassus Triumphans (1651), were written for the entertainment of the queen, and have a charming lyrical lightness. He can scarcely, however, be said to have been successful in his attempt, in the first two of these, to introduce unrhymed song-measures. Stjernhjelm was an

active philologist, and left a great number of works on language, of which only a few have ever been printed. He wrote letter A of the earliest Swedish dictionary, published in 1643, and a work on mathematics entitled Archimedes Reformatus. No brighter intellectual figure arose in Sweden till the beginning of the 19th century.

The claim of Stjernhjelm to be the first Swedish Sie may be contested by a younger man, but a slightly earlier”

writer, Gustaf Rosenhane (1619-1684), who was @ reformer on quite other lines. If Stjernhjelm studied Opitz, Rosenhane took the French poets of the Renais- sance for his models, and in 1650 wrote a cycle of one hundred sonnets, the earliest in the language; these were published under the title Venerid in 1680. Rosenhane printed in 1658 a “Complaint of the Swedish Lam guage” in thirteen hundred rattling rhyming lines, and in 1682 a collection of eighty songs. He was 4 metrist of the artistic order, skilful, learned, and unim- passioned. His zeal for the improvement of the litera ture of his country was beyond question. Most of the young poets followed Stjernhjelm rather than Rose

| various occasions by Lucidor the Unfortunate.

+ edition of only 100 copies. _ forgotten, and the name of Wexionius had dropped out of

_ and reprinted its contents in 1863. ‘ considered only the followers of Stjernhjelm; we have _ now to speak of an important writer who followed in the

Swe

hane. As personal friends and pupils of the former, the brothers Columbus deserve special attention. Each wrote copiously in verse, but Johan (1640-1684) almost entirely in Latin, while Samuel (1642-1678), especially in his Odx Suethice, showed himself an apt and fervid imitator of the Swedish hexameters of Stjernhjelm. Of a rhyming family of Hjarne, it is enough to mention one member, Urban Hjarne

(1641-1724), who introduced the new form of classical tragedy from France, in a species of

LITERATURE. |

transition from the masques of Stjernhjelm to the later regular rhymed dramas. _ Lars Johansson (1642-1674), who called himself " Luci-

His best play was a Rosimunda.

dor the Unfortunate," has been the subject of a whole tissue of romance, most of which is fabulous. It is true, however, that he was stabbed, like Marlowe, in a mid- night brawl at a tavern. His poems were posthumously collected as Flowers of Helicon, Plucked and Distributed on Stripped of the myth which had attracted so much attention to his name, Lucidor proves to be an occasional rhymster of a very low order. Haquin Spegel (1645-1714), the famous archbishop of Upsala, wrote a long didactic epic in alex- andrines, G'od's Labour and Rest, with an introductory ode to the Deity in rhymed hexameters.° He was also a good writer of hymns. Another ecclesiastic, the bishop of Skara, Jesper Svedberg (1653-1735), wrote sacred verses, but is better remembered as the father of Sweden- borg. Peter Lagerléf (d. 1699) cultivated a pastoral vein in his Llisandra and Lucillis ; he was professor of poetry, that is to say, of the art of writing Latin verses, at Upsala. Olof Wexionius (1656-1690 ?) published his Sinne-Afvel, a collection of graceful miscellaneous pieces, in 1684, in an Its existence was presently

the history of literature, when Hanselli recovered a copy We have hitherto

footsteps of Rosenhane. Gunno Eurelius, afterwards en-

mi nobled with the name of Dahlstjerna (1661-1709), early

showed an interest in the poetry of Italy. In 1690 he translated Guarini's Pastor Fido, and iu or just after 1697

_ published, in a folio volume without a date, his Kunga- _ Skald, the first original poem in ottava rima produced in

Swedish. This is a bombastic and vainglorious epic in

_ honour of Charles XI., whom Eurelius adored ; it is not, however, without great merits, richness of language, flow-

ing metre, and the breadth of a genuine poetic enthusiasm.

He published a little collection of lamentable sonnets when his great master died. Eurelius struck the lyre _ several times in honour of Charles XII, but these poems | have all perished. He was a true patriot, and grief at _ the defeat of Poltava is said to have cost him his life.

Johan Runius (1679-1713), called the “Prince of Poets,”

| published a collection entitled Dudaim, in which there is

nothing to praise, and with him the generation of the 17th century closes. Talent had been shown by certain individuals, but no healthy school of Swedish poetry had

| been founded, and the latest imitators of Stjernhjelm had | lost every vestige of taste and independence.

In prose the 17th century produced but little of import-

ance in Sweden. Gustavus Adolphus (1594-1632) was

| the most polished writer of its earlier half, and his ‘ speeches take an important place in the development of _ the language. bet. was Olof Rudbeck (1630-1702), the famous author of | Atland er Manhem.

The most original mind of the next age

He spent nearly all his life in Upsala, building anatomical laboratories, conducting

| musical concerts, laying out botanical gardens, arranging

medical lecture rooms—in a word, expending ceaseless

energy on the practical improvement of the university. He was a genius in all the known branches of learning ; at twenty-three his physiological discoveries had made him famous throughout Europe. His Adland (or Atlan- tka) appeared in four folio volumes, in Latin and Swedish, in 1679-98 ; it was an attempt to summon all the authority of the past, all the sages of Greece and the bards of Iceland, to prove the inherent and indisputable greatness of the Swedish nation, in which the fabulous Atlantis had been at last discovered. It was the literary expression of the majesty of Charles XI., and of his autocratical dreams for the destiny of Sweden. From another point of view it is a monstrous hoard or cairn of rough-hewn antiquarian learning, now often praised, sometimes quoted from, and never read. Olof Verelius (1618— 1682) had led the way for Rudbeck, by his translations of Icelandic sagas, a work which was carried on with greater intelligence by Johan Peringskjéld (1654-1720), the editor of the Heimskringla. The French philosopher Descartes, who died at Christina's court at Stockholm in 1650, found his chief, though posthumous, disciple in Anders Rydelius (1671-1738), bishop of Lund, who was the master of Dalin, and thus connects us with the next epoch. Charles XIL, under whose special patronage Rydelius wrote, was himself a metaphysician and physio- logist of merit.

A much more brilliant period followed the death of Charles XIJ. The influence of France and England took the place of that of Germany and Italy. The taste of Louis XIV., tempered by the study of Addison and Pope, gave its tone to the academical court of Queen Ulrica Eleonore, and Sweden became completely a slave to the periwigs of literature, to the unities and graces of classical France. Nevertheless this was a period of great intel- lectual stimulus and activity, and Swedish literature took a solid shape for the first time. This Augustan period in Sweden closed somewhat abruptly about 1765. Two writers in verse connect it with the school of the preced- ing century. Jacob Frese (1691-1729), whose poems were published in 1726, was an elegiacal writer of

much grace, who foreshadowed the idyllic manner of Creutz, Samuel von Triewald (1688-1743) played a very imper- fect Dryden to Dalin's Pope. He was the first Swedish satirist, and introduced Boileau to his countrymen. His Satire upon our Stupid Poets may still be read with entertainment. (1708-1763) takes a higher place than any writer since Stjernhjelm. He was inspired by the study of his great English contemporaries. His Swedish Argus (1733-34) was modelled on Addison's Spectator, his Thoughts about Critics (1736) on Pope's Essay on Criticism, his Tale of a Horse on Swift's Tale of a Tub. Dalin's style, whether in prose or verse, was of a finished elegance. His great epic, Swedish Freedom (1742), was written in alexandrines of far greater smoothness and vigour than had previously been attempted. When in 1737 the new Royal Swedish theatre was opened, Dalin led the way to a new school of dramatists with his Brynhilda, a regular tragedy in the style of Crébillon pére. In his comedy of The Envious Man, he introduced the manner of Moliére, or more pro- perly that of Holberg. His songs, his satires, his occa- sional pieces, without displaying any real originality, show Dalin's tact and skill as a workman with the pen. He stole from England and France, but with the plagiarism of a man of genius; and his multifarious labours raised Sweden to a level with the other literary countries of Europe. They formed a basis upon which more national and more scrupulous writers could build their various structures. A foreign critic, especially an English one, will never be able to give Dalin so much credit as the

Both in verse and prose Olof von Dalin Dalin.

Fru Norden- flycht.

Creutz.

Gyllen- borg.

Swedes do; but he was certainly an unsurpassable master | genius in the whole century ; but he wrote almost entirely

of pastiche.

The only poet of importance who contested the laurels of Dalin was a woman. Hedvig Charlotta Nordenflyclit (1718-1763) was the centre of a society which ventured to rival that which Queen Ulrica Eleonore created and Dalin adorned. Both groups were classical in taste, both worshipped the new lights in England and France. Fru Nordentlycht wrote with facility and grace ; her collection of lyrics, Zhe Sorrowing Turtledove (1743), in spite of its affectation, enjoyed and merited a great success ;_ it was the expression of a deep and genuine sorrow—the death of her husband after a very brief and happy married life. It was in 1744 that she settled in Stockholm and opened her famous literary salon. She was called "The Swedish Sappho," and scandal has been needlessly busy in giving point to the allusion. It was to Fru Nordenflycht's credit that she discovered and encouraged the talent of two very distinguished poets younger than herself, Creutz and Gyllenborg. Gustaf Filip Creutz (1729-1785) was a Finlander who achieved an extraordinary success with his idyllic poems, and in particular with the beautiful pastoral of Atzs och Camilla, long the most popular of all Swedish poems. In 1763, the year of the death of Dalin and of Fru Nordenflycht, Creutz ceased to write, having been appointed minister to Spain; he gave up poetry for poli- tics. Gustaf Frederik Gyllenborg (1731-1808) was a less accomplished poet, less delicate and touching, more rhetorical and artificial. His epic Taget éfver Bilt ("The Expedition across the Belt") (1785) is an imitation, in twelve books, of Voltaire's Henriade, and deals with the prowess of Charles X. It is impossible to read it. He wrote fables, allegories, and satires. He outlived his chief contemporaries so long that the new generation addressed him as "Father Gyllenborg." Anders Odel (1718-1773) wrote in 1739 the famous 'Song of Malcolm Sinclair," the Stnclairsvisa. The writers of verse in this period were exceedingly numerous, but it cannot be need- ful, in a sketch of this kind, to preserve the minor names.

In prose, as was to be expected, the first half of the 18th century was rich in Sweden as elsewhere. The first Swedish novelist was Jakob Henrik Mork (1714-1763). His romances have some likeness to those of Richardson ; they are moral, long-winded, and slow in evolution, but written in an exquisite style, and with much knowledge of human nature. Adalrik och Géthilda, which went on appearing from 1742 to 1745, is the best known; it was followed, between 1749 and 1758, by Thecla. Jakob Wallenberg (1746-1778) described a voyage he took to the East Indies and China under the very odd title of Min Son pa Galejan (" My Son at the Galleys"), a work full of humour and originality. We have already indicated that Dalin's activity in prose was scarcely less abundant or less meritorious than that in verse. He wrote an important history of Sweden down to Charles IX. His contemporary Johan Ihre (1707-1780), a professor at Upsala, edited the Codex Argenteus of Ulfilas, and produced the first com- plete Swedish dictionary. In doing this he was assisted by the labours of two other grammarians, Sven Hof (d. 1786) and Abraham Sahlstedt (d. 1776). Karl Gustaf Tessin (1695-1770) wrote on politics and on esthetics. Anders Johan von Hépken (1712-1789), the friend of Ulrica Eleonore, was a master of rhetorical compliment in addresses and funeral orations. In spite of all the encouragement of the court, drama did not flourish in Sweden. Among the tragedians of the age we may men- tion Dalin, Gyllenborg, and Erik Wrangel (d. 1765). In comedy Reinhold Gustaf Modée (d. 1752) wrote three good plays in rivalry of Holberg. In science Linnzeus, or Karl von Linné (1707-1778), was the name of greatest

in Latin. The two great Swedish chemists, Torbern Olof Bergman (1735-1784) and Karl Vilhelm Scheele (1749— 1786), flourished at this time. In pathology a great name was left by Nils Rosén von Rosenstein (1706-17 73), in navigation by Admiral Fredrik Henrik af Chapman (d. 1808), in philology by Karl Aurivillius (d. 1786). But these and other distinguished savants whose names might be enumerated scarcely belong to the history of Swedish literature. The same may be said about that marvellous and many-sided genius, Emanuel Swedenborg (1688-1772), who, though the son of a Swedish poet, preferred to prophesy to the world in Latin (see SwEDENBORG),

What is called the Gustavian period is supposed to commence with the reign of Gustavus III. in 1771 and to close with the abdication of Gustavus IV. in 1809, This period of less than forty years was particularly rich in literary talent, and the taste of the people in literary matters widened to a remarkable extent. Journalism began to develop; the Swedish Academy was founded; the drama first learned to flourish in Stockholm; and literature began to take a characteristically national shape. This fruitful period naturally divides itself into two divisions, equivalent to the reigns of the two kings, The royal personages of Sweden have commonly been pro- tectors of literature; they have strangely often been able men of letters themselves. Gustavus III. (1746-1792), the founder of the Swedish Academy and of the Swedish theatre, was himself a playwright of no mean ability. One of his prose dramas, Siri Brahe och Johan Gyllen- stjerna, held the stage for many years. In 1773 the king opened the national theatre in Stockholm, and on that occasion an opera of Thetis och Pelée was performed, written by himself. In 1786 Gustavus created the Swedish Academy, on the lines of the French Academy, but with eighteen members instead of forty. The first list of immortals, which included the survivors of a previous age and such young celebrities as Kellgren and Leopold, embraced all that was most brilliant in the best society of Stockholm ; the king himself presided, and won the first prize for an oration. The principal writers of the reign of Gustavus IIT. bear the name of the Academical school. But we must first consider a writer of genius who had nothing academical in his composition.

Karl Mikael Bellman (1740-1795), the most original Bellman.

and one of the most able of all Swedish writers, was an improvisatore of the first order (see Bettman). The riot of his dithyrambic hymns sounded a strange note of nature amid the conventional music of the Gustavians. Of the academical poets Johan Gabriel Oxenstjerna (1750-1818), the nephew of Gyllenborg, was a descriptive idyllist of grace. He translated Paradise Lost. A writer

of far more power and versatility was Johan Henrik Kellgren.

Kellgren (1751-1795), the leader of taste in his time (see KELLGREN). He was the first writer of the end of the

century in Sweden, and the second undoubtedly was Karl Leopolt.

Gustaf af Leopold (1756-1829), “the blind seer Tiresias- Leopold,” who lived on to represent the old school in the midst of romantic times. Leopold was not equal to Kellgren in general poetical ability, but he is great in didactic and satiric writing. He wrote a satire, the Enebomiad, against a certain luckless Per Enebom, and a classic tragedy of Virginia. He is little read now. Gudmund Géran Adlerbeth (1751-1818) was a translator, and the author of a successful tragic opera, Cora och Alonzo (1782). Anna Maria Lenngren (1754-1817) was a very popular sentimental writer of graceful verse, chiefly between 1792 and 1798. She was less French and more national than most of her contemporaries; she 18 @ Swedish Mrs Hemans.

a ee -e

ii

SWE

Two writers of the academic period, besides Bellman, and a generation later than he, kept apart, and served to lead up to the romantic revival. Bengt Lidner (1759- 1793), a melancholy and professedly elegiacal writer, had analogies with such German sentimentalists as Novalis. | He led a strange wandering life, and died, still young, in j extreme poverty. His poems appeared in 1788. Tomas | Thorild (1759-1808) was a much stronger nature, and led the revolt against prevailing taste with far more vigour. But he is an irregular and inartistic versifier, and it is mainly as a prose writer, and especially as a very original and courageous critic, that he is now mainly remembered. He settled in Germany, and died as a pro- fessor in Greifswald. Karl August Ehrensvaérd (1745- 1800) may be mentioned here as a critic whose aims somewhat resembled those of Thorild. The creation of the Academy led to a great production of esthetic and philosophical writing. Among critics of taste may be mentioned Nils von Rosenstein

(1752-1824) ; the rhetor- ical bishop of Linköping, Magnus Lehnberg (1758-1808) ; and Count Georg Adlersparre (1760-1809). Kellgren and Leopold were both of them important prose writers.

The excellent lyrical poet Frans Mikael Franzén (1772- 1847) (see Franzen), and a belated academician Johan David Valerius (1776-1852), fill up the space between _ the Gustavian period and the domination of romantic mé ideas from Germany. It was Lorenzo Hammarskéld

LITERATURE. |

Md: (1785-1827) who in 1803 introduced the views of Tieck

/and Schelling by founding the society in Upsala called " Vitterhetens Vanner" (see HAMMARSKOLD). This passed away, but was succeeded in 1807 by the famous " Aurora – forbundet," founded by two youths of genius, Per Daniel – Amadeus Atterbom (1790-1855) and Vilhelm Frederik Palmblad (1788-1852). These young men had at first _ to endure bitter opposition and ridicule from the academic writers then in power, but they supported this with Polyfem and Fosforos (1810-1813). They were named _ "Fosforisterna " (Phosphorists) from the latter. The principal members of the school were the three writers | last named (see ATTERBoM) and Karl Frederik Dahlgren _ (1791-1844), a humorist who owed much to the example of Bellman. Fru Julia Nyberg (1785-1854), under the title of Euphrosyne, was their tenth Muse, and wrote agreeable lyrics. Among the Phosphorists Atterbom was the man of most genius. On the side of the Academy they were vigorously attacked by Per Adam Wallmark (1777-1858). One of them, Atterbom, eventually forced the doors of the Academy itself.

_ In 1811 certain young men in Stockholm founded a society for the elevation of society by means of the study ie of Scandinavian antiquity. This was the Gothic Society, iwhich began to issue the magazine called Jduna as its organ. Of its patriotic editors the most prominent was

jes Erik Gustaf Geijer (1783-1847), but he was presently

joined by a young man slightly older than himself, Esaias)Tegnér (1782-1846), afterwards bishop of Vexid, the "greatest of Swedish writers (see GEIJER and TEGNER). . Even more enthusiastic than either in pushing to its last extreme the worship of ancient myths and manners was | Per Henrik Ling (1776-1839), now better remembered as the father of gymnastic science than asa poet. The | Gothic Society eventually included certain younger men | than these—Arvid August Afzelius (1785-1871), the first editor of the Swedish folk-songs; Gustaf Vilhelm } Gumeelins (1789-1877), who has been somewhat pre- 'tentiously styled "The Swedish Walter Scott," author of the historical novel of Zord Bonde; Baron Bernhard von | Beskow (1796-1868), lyrist and dramatist; and Karl _ August Nicander (1799-1839), a poet who approached

DEN T97

the Phosphorists in manner. The two great lights of the Gothic school are Geijer, mainly in prose, and Tegnér, in

his splendid and copious verse. Johan Olof Wallin Wallin. (1779-1839) may be mentioned in the same category, although he is really distinct from all the schools. He

was archbishop of Upsala, and in 1819 he published the national hymn-book of Sweden, now officially used in all churches ; of the hymns in this collection, one hundred

and twenty-six are written by Wallin himself.

From 1810 to 1840 was the blossoming-time in Swedish poetry, and there were several writers of distin- guished merit who could not be included in either of the groups enumerated above. Second only to Tegnér in genius, the brief life and mysterious death of Erik Johan Stag- Stagnelius (1793-1823) have given a romantic interest to nelius. all that is connected with his name. His first publica- tion was the epic of Vladimir the Great (1817); to this succeeded the romantic poem Blanda. His singular dramas, The Bacchantes (1822), Sigurd Ring, which was posthumous, and Zhe Martyrs (1821), are esteemed by

many critics to be his most original productions. His mystical lyrics, entitled Liljor 1 Saron ("Lilies in Sharon"), and his sonnets, which are the best in Swedish, may be recommended as among the most delicate products of the Scandinavian mind. Stagnelius has been compared, and not improperly, to Shelley. Erik Sjéberg, who called Sjoberg. himself " Vitalis" (1794-1828), was another gifted writer whose career was short and wretched. A volume of his poems appeared in 1820; they are few in number and all brief. His work divides itself into two classes—the one profoundly melancholy, the other witty or boisterous. Two humorous poets of the same period who deserve mention are Johan Anders Wadman (1777-1837), an improvisatore of the same class as Bellman, and Kristian Erik Fahlcrantz (1790-1866), bishop of Vesteras, whose humorous polemical poem of Noah's Ark (1825) is a masterpiece.

Among the poets who have been mentioned above, the majority distinguished themselves also in prose. But the period was not one in which Swedish prose shone with any special lustre. The first prosaist of the time was,

without question, the novelist Karl Jonas Ludvig Alm- Almqvist.

qvist (1793-1866), around whose extraordinary personal character and career a mythical romance has already collected (see ALMQvist). He was encyclopedic in his range, although his stories preserve most charm ; on what- ever subject he wrote his style was always exquisite. Frederik Cederborgh (1784-1835) revived the comic novel in his Uno von Trasenberg and Ottar Tralling. The historical novels of Gumelius have already been alluded to. Swedish history supplied themes for the romances of Count Per Georg Sparre (1790-1871) and of Gustaf Henrik Mellin (1803-1876). But all these writers sink Fredrika before the sustained popularity of the Finnish poetess Bremer. Fredrika Bremer (1801-1865), whose stories have reached farther into the distant provinces of the world of letters than the writings of any other Swede except Tegnér (see Bremer). She was preceded by Sofia Zelow, afterwards Baroness von Knorring (1797-1848), who wrote a long series of aristocratic novels.

At the beginning of the romantic period a high position was taken as an independent thinker by Benjamin Hoijer (1767-1812), who owed much at the outset to Kant and Fichte. Geijer also distinguished himself in philosophical writing, but the most original of Swedish philosophers has been Kristofer Jakob Boström (1797-1866), a peri- patetic talker, who wrote little, but whose system has been reduced to literature by K. Claéson (1827-1859), Professor Axel Nybleus (b. 1821), and other disciples. A polemical writer of great talent was Magnus Jakob

Runeberg.

Crusenstolpe (1795-1865), of whose work it has been said that "it is not history and it is not fiction, but something brilliant between the one and the other." As an historian of Swedish literature Per Wieselgren (1800-1877) has com- posed a valuable work, and he has made other valuable contributions to history and bibliography. In history we meet again with the great name of Geijer, with that of Jonas Hallenberg (1748-1834), and with that of Anders Magnus Strinnholm (1786-1862), whose labours in the field of Swedish history were extremely valuable. Geijer and Strinnholm prepared the way for the most popular and perhaps the greatest of all Swedish historians, Anders Fryxell (1795-1881), whose famous Berdttelser ur Svenska fMistorien appeared in parts during a space of nearly sixty years, an extraordinary example of persistent and uninter- rupted work. As a legal historian the first place is easily maintained by Karl Johan Schlyter (b. 1795). Hans Jirta (1774-1847) was a statesman who wrote with vigour on economical subjects. In science it is only possible to mention the celebrated names of Jons Jakob Berzelius (1779-1848) the chemist, Elias Fries (1794— 1878) the botanist, Karl Adolf Agardh (1785-1859) the physiologist, and Sven Nilsson (1787-1883) the paleontologist.

In the generation which has just passed away, the first poet of Sweden, without a rival, was Johan Ludvig Runeberg (1804-1877), who divides with Tegnér the highest honour in Swedish literature (see RUNEBERG). The other leading verse-writers were Karl Vilhelm Bottiger (1807-1878), the son-in-law and biographer of Tegnér ; Johan

Borjesson (1790-1866), the last of the Phosphorists, author of various romantic dramas; Vilhelm August von Braun (1813-1860), a humorous lyrist; “Talis Qualis,” whose real name was Karl Vilhelm August Strandberg (1818-1877) ; and August Teodor Blanche (1811-1868), the pepular dramatist. But Runeberg is the only great

SWEDENBORG, or SvEDBERG, EMANUEL (1688-1772), was born at Stockholm January 29, 1688. Jesper Svedberg, subsequently professor of theology at Upsala and bishop of Skara, was a pious, learned, and a brave man, who did not escape the charge of heterodoxy, and believed himself to be in constant intercourse with angels. Emanuel shared as a child his father’s piety, and his parents thought that “angels spoke through him.” His education embraced the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages, and, above all, mathematics with the natural sciences, but seems to have been curiously defective in theology. Endowed with unusual intellectual powers and an iron constitution, he acquired vast stores of learning in all those branches. Having completed his university course at Upsala, in 1710 he commenced the customary European tour, visiting England, Holland, France, and Germany, studying especially natural philosophy, though alternating it with the composition of Latin verses, little of the poet as there was in his nature. In 1715 he returned to Upsala, and devoted himself to natural science and various engineering works. From 1716 to 1718 he published a scientific periodical, called Daedalus Hyper- boreus, a record of mechanical and mathematical inven- tions and discoveries. In 1716 he was introduced to Charles XII., who appointed him assessor in the Swedish college of mines. Two years later he distinguished him- self at the king’s siege of Frederikshall by the invention of machines for the transport of boats and galleys over- land from Stromstadt to Iddefjord, a distance of 14 English miles. The same year he published various matheniatical and mechanical works. At the death of

His father, Dr –

poetic name of this period. In prose there was not even a Runeberg. Novel-writing was sustained at no ver high level by Karl Anton

Wetterbergh (b. 1804), who called himself "Onkel Adam," by Emilie Carlén (b. 1807), whose autobiography has lately appeared, by Oskar Patrick Sturzen-Becker, "Orvar Odd," (1811-1869), by August Blanche, and by Marie Sofia Schwartz (b. 1819), Lars Johan Hierta (1801-1872) was the leading journalist, Johan Henrik Thomander, bishop of Lund (1798-1865), the greatest orator, Matthias Alexander Castrén (1813- 1852) a prominent man of science, and Karl Gustaf af Forsell (1783-1848) the principal statistician of this not very brilliant period. Elias Lénnrot (1802-1884) is distinguished as the Finnish professor who discovered and edited the Xalevala. It is impossible to give an exhaustive list of names in so short a sketch as this.

Swedish literature is not in a very lively condition at the present time. The most popular living poet is the Finn, Zakris Topelius (b. 1818). Of a higher artistic merit are the finished lyrics of Count Karl Snoilsky (b. 1841). King Oscar II. (b. 1829) is a genuine poet of the second order, as his father Charles XV. was of the third. Karl David af Wirsén (b. 1842) is an active writer on the conservative side. The best living author of Sweden is undoubtedly Viktor Rydberg (b. 1829), who has written masterly novels and historical works. The latest infiu- ences from Denmark and France are beginning to be represented by Strindberg the novelist, and by Fru A. Ch. Edgren, the most successful Swedish dramatist of the moment. The revival of literature which has been so marked in the other two Scandinavian countries has not yet spread into Sweden.

Authorities.—P. Hanselli, Samlade Vitterhetsarbeten fran Stjern-hjelm till Dalin; B. E. Malmstrom, Grunddragen af Svenska Vitterhetens Historia; P. Wieselgren, Sveriges Skina Literatur; Warburg, Svensk Litteraturhistoria 1 Sammandrag. (E. W. G.)

Charles XII. Queen Ulrica elevated him and his family to the rank of nobility, by which his name was changed from Svedberg to Swedenborg. The next years were devoted to the duties and studies connected with his office, which involved the visitation of the Swedish, Saxon, Bohemian, and Austrian mines. In 1724 he was offered the chair of mathematics in the university of Upsala, which he declined.

Gradually his inquiring and philosophical mind led him to wider studies than those of his profession. As early as 1721 he was seeking to lay the foundation of a scientific explanation of the universe, when he published his Prodromus Principiorum Rerum Naturalium and had already written his Principa in its first form. Thirteen years later, in 1734, appeared 1 three volumes Opera Philosophica et Mineralia, the first volume of which (his Principia) contained his view of the first principles of the universe, a curious mechanical and geometrical theory of the origin of things. The same year followed Prodromus Philosophiz ratiocinantis de Infinito e Causa Finali Creationis, which treats of the relation of the finite to the infinite and of the soul to the body, seek- ing to establish a nexus in each case as a means of over- coming the difficulty of their relation. From this time he applied himself to the problem of discovering the nature of soul and spirit by means of anatomical studies. He travelled in Germany, France, and Italy in quest of the most eminent teachers and the best books dealing with the human frame, and published, as the results of his inquires among other works, his Gconomia Regnt Animals (Lon- don, 1740-41) and Regnum Animale (‘The Hague, 1744-49, London, 1745). But a profound change was coming Over

him, which was to make of the scientific inquirer the super- naturalist prophet. Neither by geometrical, nor physical, nor metaphysical .principles had he succeeded in reaching and grasping the infinite and the spiritual, or in elucidat- ing their relation to man and man’s organism, though he | had caught glimpses of facts and methods which he

/ Late in life he wrote to Oetinger that ““‘he was introduced | by the Lord first into the natural sciences, and thus pre- | pared, and, indeed, from the year 1710 to 1744, when heaven was opened to him.” This latter great event is described by him as ““‘the opening of his spiritual sight,” “the manifestation of the Lord to him in person,” “his introduction into the spiritual world.” Before his illu- mination he had been instructed by dreams, and enjoyed extraordinary visions, and heard mysterious conversations. According to his own account, the Lord filled him with His spirit to teach the doctrines of the New

Church by the word from Himself ; He commissioned him to do this work, opened the sight of his spirit, and so let him into the spiritual world, permitting him to see the heavens and the hells, and to converse with angels and spirits for years ; but he never received anything relating to the doctrines of the church from any angel but from the Lord alone while he _was reading the word (7'rue Christian Religion, No. 779). He elsewhere speaks of his office as principally an opening of the spiritual sense of the word. His friend Robsahm reports, from Swedenborg's own account to him, the cir- cumstances of the first extraordinary revelation of the Lord, when He appeared to him and said, "I am God the Lord, the Creator and Redeemer of the world. I have chosen thee to unfold the spiritual sense of the Holy Scripture. _ Iwill Myself dictate to thee what thou shalt write." From that time he gave up all worldly learning, and laboured solely to expound spiritual things. But it was some time before he became quite at home in the spiritual world. Inthe year 1747 he resigned his post of assessor of the college of mines that he might devote himself to his higher vocation, requesting only to be allowed to receive as a pen- sion the half of his salary. He took up afresh his study of Hebrew, and began his voluminous works on the interpreta- tion of the Scriptures. The principal of these is the Arcana Celestia in eight quarto volumes, which he printed in Lon- don between 1749 and 1756, professing to have derived the whole of it by direct illumination from the Almighty Himself, and not from any spirit or angel. His later work De Coelo et de Inferno (London, 1758) consists of extracts and portions of the Arcana. His MS. work Apocalypsis Explicata, expounding the doctrines of the New Church, was prepared in 1757-59. In 1763 appeared his Sapientia Angelica de Divino Amore et de Divina Sapientia, containing _ the most philosophical brief account of the principles of the | New Church. The long list of his subsequent writings will be found in the works mentioned below. His life from 1747 | Was spent alternately in Sweden, Holland, and London, in | the composition of his works and their publication, till his death, which took place in London, March 29, 1772. He was a man who won the respect, confidence, and love of all who came into contact with him. Though people might disbelieve in his visions, they feared to ridicule them in his presence. His _ manner of life was simple in the extreme ; his diet consisted chiefly of bread and

milk and large quantities of coffee. He paid no | attention to the distinction of day and night, and sometimes lay for days together in a trance, while his servants were often dis- turbed at night by hearing what he called his conflicts with evil) spirits. But his intercourse with spirits was often perfectly calm, in broad daylight, and with all his faculties awake. Three extra- ordinary instances are produced by his friends and followers in _ proof of his seership and admission into the unscen world. But | there exists no account at first hand of the exact facts, and Sweden- _borg's own reference to one of these instances admits of another

| explanation than the supernatural one. The philosopher Kant was Struck by them in 1768, but in 1765, after further inquiries, con-

SW tb i NB OR G

| thought only required confirmation and development. |

759

cluded that two of them had 'uo other foundation than common report (gemeine Sage)." See Kehrbach's edition of Kant's Trawme eines Geistersehers (Leipsic, 1880).

_ Swedenborg's theosophic system is most briefly and comprehen- sively presented in his Divine Love and Divine Wisdom. 'The point of view from which God must be regarded is that of His being the Divine Man. His esse is infinite love ; His manifestation, form, or body is infinite wisdom. Divine love is the self-subsisting life of the universe. From God emanates a divine sphere, which appears in the spiritual world as a sun, and from this spiritual sun again proceeds the sun of the uatural world. The spiritual sun is the source of love and intelligence, or life, and the natural sun the source of nature, or the receptacles of life; the first is alive, the second dead. The two worlds of nature and spirit are perfectly distinct, but they are intimately related by analogous substances, laws, and forces. Each has its atmospheres, waters, and earths, but in the one they are natural and in the other spiritual. In God there ave three infinite and uncreated ' degrees" of

being, and in man aud all things corresponding three degrees, finite and created. They are love, wisdom, use; or end, cause, and effect. The final ends of all things are in the Divine Mind, the causes of all things in the spiritual world, and their effects in the natural world. By a love of each degree man comes into conjunction with them and the worlds of nature, spirit, and God. 'he end of creation is that man may have this conjunction and become the image of his Creator and creation. In man are two receptacles for God,—the will for divine love and the understanding for divine wisdom, —that love and wisdom flowing into both so that they become human. Before the fall this influx was free and unhindered, and the conjunction of man with God and the creation complete, but from that time the connexion was interrupted and God had to interpose by successive dispensations. At last the power and influence of the spirits of darkness, with whom man associates himself by his sin, became so great that the existence of the human race was threatened, and Jehovah was necessitated to descend into nature to restore the connexion between Himself and man. He could not come in His unveiled Divinity, for the "hells" would have then perished, whom he did not seek to destroy but only to subjugate. Another purpose of Jehovah's incarnation was the manifestation of His divine love more fully than ever before. Swedenborg wholly rejects the orthodox doctrine of atonement; and the unity of God, as opposed to his idea of the trinity of the church, is an essential feature of his teaching. Another distinc- tive feature is that Jehovah did not go back to heaven without leaving behind Him a visible representative of Himself in the word of the Scripture. This word is an eternal incarnation, with its threefold sense—natural, spiritual, celestial. And Swedenborg is the divinely commissioned expounder of this threefold sense of the word, and so the founder of the New Church, the paraclcte of the last dispensation. That he might perceive and understand the spiritual and the celestial senses of the word he enjoyed immediate revelation from the Lord, was admitted into the angelic world, and had committed to him the key of " correspondences" with which to unlock the divine treasures of wisdom. Swedenborg claimed also to have learnt by his admission into the spiritual world the true states of men in the next life, the scenery and occupations of heaven and hell, the true doctrine of Providence, the origin of evil, the sanctity and perpetuity of marriage, and to have been

a witness of the "last judgment," or the second coming of the Lord, which took place in the year 1757. It was then that the New Church, or the New Jerusalem, was inaugurated, and Swedenborg claimed to be the divinely appointed prophet and teacher of its doctrines, and maintained that his revelations excel all that preceded them.

Swedenborgianism.—Swedenborgianism, as professed by Swedenborg's followers, is based on the belief of Swedenborg's claims to have witnessed the last judgment, or the second advent of the Lord, with the inauguration of the New Church through the new system of doctrine promulgated by him and derived from the Scriptures, into the true sense of which he was the first to be introduced. The doctrines of the New Church are those of the internal sense of the word as revealed to Swedenborg, who received them into his understanding and published them through the press and not as a preacher. They are briefly—(1) that the Lord Jesus Christ is the only God, that in Him there is the Trinity of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, the Father being His infinite divine nature or soul, the Son His glorified human nature or divine body, and the Holy Spirit the life proceeding from His divine humanity for the salvation of man ; (2) that the Father in His eternal humanity descended as the Lord Jesus Christ to the earth, assuming fallen human nature, that in it he might conquer hell and deliver mankind from its influence ; (8) that the Sacred Scriptures are the true word of God, accommodated to the understanding of angels and men, and constituting the perpetual medium between heaven and the church, the law of correspondence having been revealed by the Lord to Swedenborg as the key for their interpretation ; (4) that man is not saved by faith alone but by a life according to the word, the summary of whieh is the decalogue ; (5) that heaven is made up of those who

keep God's commandments and love Him and His kingdom, and hell of those who love themselves and the world; (6) that the spiritual world—heaven and hell—holds the same relation to the natural world and its inhabitants as the soul to the body, being in and around the natural world and its life, and that after the death of the body the spirit

continues to live in the spiritual world it had previously though unconsciously inhabited. Swedenborgians now constitute a widely spread and considerable society, with a regularly constituted ecclesiastical organization and a zealous missionary activity. Soon after Swedenborg's death students of his works in England and Sweden began to translate them from the Latin and to spread his views. First in time and activity amongst these early Swedenborgians was the Rev. John Clowes, rector of St John's, Manchester, who translated the whole of several treatises. The first public meeting of Swedenborgians, from which dates the foundation of the society, was held in London December 5, 1783, and was attended by five persons. The separation of the society from the "old church" as a religious body, with its distinct creed, worship, and ecclesiastical organization, took place May 7, 1787, and its first place of worship was in Great Eastcheap, London. The first general conference of the New Church was held April 17, 1789, in this chapel, when a series of resolutions concern- ing the creed, the sacraments, and ecclesiastical order of the society were adopted. At the same time churches began to be formed in various towns in England and in America. Towards the end of the century Swedenborg's doctrines obtained a considerable degree of acceptance on the Continent, scparate socicties having arisen here and there. Meantime the Manchester Printing Society, under Mr Clowes, printed and distributed Swedenborg's works in large numbers. In 1810 a London Printing Society was formed, which has been very active in the same way to the present time. In 1817 a convention of the American New Church was held in Philadelphia, which gave proof of the growth of the body in the United States. The same year the tenth general conference of the English section of the church was attended by twenty-seven delegates and ministers of various socicties, and in 1821 there were upwards of fifty-two of these in Great Britain. At the general conference in 1885 it was reported that there were sixty-five societies or churches in Great Britain connected with the con- ference, having 5700 registered members, the net increase of the year being 119. The names of thirty-two ordained ministers appear in the report; the investments of the society amount to £60,453; and there arc a dozen educational and missionary institu- tions in connexion with it. Some of the New Church day schools are amongst the largest aud most efficient in the kingdom.

From the same report it appears that the New Church has societies or institutions in most British colonies as well as in the principal countries of Europe. The report of the General Convention of the New Jerusalem in the United States, 1885, gives the names of 116 societies in America, with nearly the same number of ordinary ministers. In Italy, Sweden, and Prussia there is a Swedenborg mission sustained by help from England and America. In South Germany there exist congregations of the New Church, and the librarian of the university of Tiibingen, Dr Immanuel Tafel, was exceedingly active until his death (1863) in the publication and translation of Swedenborg's works, and in the vindication of the doctrines ofthe New Church. In Austria, Norway, and Switzerland also there are congregations. But, in addition to full converts to Swedenborgianism, a considerable number of prominent theologians and other thinkers have been attracted by Swedenborg's works and parts of his system. While the extravagant anthropomorphism, the mechanical materialism, the theological narrowness, the wild allegorizing, the entire absence of historical knowledge, and the astounding prophetic claims of the man and his system,—in a word, the Gnosticism of Swedenborg and his followers, —must be offensive to philosophical minds, they can discover in his writings and the drift of his thought fine ethical views, profound glances of insight into the depths of the universe, —God, nature, man, and his destiny. The names of Octinger, Herder, Goerres, Coleridge, Emerson, J. D. Morell may be given as proof of this. Such thinkers were attracted by one or more of the dominant and pervading principles or tenden- cies of his extraordinary mind. For he felt, if he did not adequately expound, the harmony of the universe, the fundamental unity of being and thought, of knowledge and will, of the divine and the human ; and his wild system of allegory, with his equally wild communications with the unseen world, failed to conceal a deep moral and intellectual revolt against the most irrational forms of traditional orthodoxy, while his deep spiritual nature spurned the shallow intellectualism of the rationalists of the 18th century.

Literature.—A rich collection of materials for a life of Swedenborg is Docu- ments concerning the Life and Character of Swedenborg, Collected, Translated, and Annotated, by Dr. R. L. Tafel, in 3 vols.,

Swedenborg Society, 1875-77. Of English lives the principal are— Emanuel Swedenborg, a Biography, by J. J.G. Wilkinson, London, 1849; Swedenborg, a Biography and an Exposition, by E. Paxton Hood, London, 1854; Swedenborg, his Life and Writings, by William White, 1856, rewritten in 1867 and in 1868; Emanuel Swedenborg, the Spiritual Columbus, a Sketch, by U. 8. E,, 2d ed., London, 1877. A useful handbook of Swedenborg's theology, consisting of extracts in English from his numerous works, is the Compendium of the Theological Writings of Emanuel Swedenborg, by

the Rey. Samuel Warren, London, 1885. Brief summaries of hig system and writings are given in all the above biographies and in Edmund Swift's Manual of the Doctrines of the New Church, London, 1885. Important critiques from independent points of view are " Emanuel Swedenborg," in the Prospective Review, May 1850; "The Mystic,' in Emerson's Representative Men, 1850+ Kant's 7dume eines Geistersehers, 1766 (the best cdition by Kehrbach, Leipsic, 1880) ; Herder's "' Emanuel Swedenborg," in his Adrastea (Werke zur Phil. und Gesch., vol. xii. pp. 110-125) ; Gocrres's Emanuel Swedenborg, seine Visionen und sein Verhdltniss zur Kirche, 1827; Dorner's Gesch. d. Prot. Theol., Munich, 1867 pp. 662-67. For the history of Swedenborgianism, see Rise and Progress of the New Jerusalem Church in England, America, and other Parts, by Robert Hindmarsh edited by E. Madeley, London, 1861, The chief apologetic work is Noble's Appeal, 10th ed. 1881, London. See also National Review, April 1858, (J. FS) —

SWEET POTATO. See Poraro.

SWIFT, a bird so called from the extreme speed of its flight, which apparently exceeds that of any other British species, the Hirundo apus of Linnwus and Cypselus apus or murarius of modern ornithologists, who have at last learned that it has only an outward resemblance but no near affinity to the SwaLLow (ante, p. 729) or its allies, Well known as a summer-visitor throughout the greater part of Europe, it is one of the latest to return from Africa, and its stay in the country of its birth is

of the shortest, for it generally disappears from England very early in August, though occasionally to be seen for even two months later.

The Swift commonly chooses its nesting-place in holes under the eaves of buildings, but a crevice in the face of a quarry, or even a hollow tree, will serve it with the accommodation it requires. This indeed is not much, since every natural function, except sleep, oviposition, and incubation, is performed on the wing, and the easy evolutions of this bird in the air, where it remains for hours together, are the admiration of all who witness them. Though considerably larger than a Swallow, it can be recognized at a distance less by its size than by its peculiar shape. The head scarcely projects from the anterior outline of the pointed wings, which form an almost continuous curve, at right angles to which extend the body and tail, resembling the handle of the crescentic cutting-knife used in several trades, while the wings represent the blade. The mode of flight of the two birds is also unlike, that of the Swift being much more steady, and, rapid as it is, ordinarily free from jerks. The whole plumage, except a greyish-white patch under the chin, is a sooty black, but glossy above. Though its actual breeding-places are by no means numerous, its extraordinary speed and discursive habits make the Swift widely distributed; and throughout England scarcely a summer's day passes without its being seen in most places.

Among other peculiarities the Swifts, as long ago described (probably from John Hunter's notes) by Home (Phil. Trans., 1817, pp. 332 et segg., pl. xvi.), are remarkable for the development of their salivary glands, the secretions of which serve in most species to glue together the materials of which the nests are composed, and in the species of the genus Collocalia form almost the whole substance of the structure. These are the "edible" nests 80 eagerly sought by Chinese epicures as an ingredient for soup, and their composition, though announced many ycars since by Home (ut supra), whose statement was confirmed by Bernstein (Act. Soe, Sc. Indo-Néerlandice, iii. Art. 5, and Journ. fiir Ornithologie, 1859, pp. 111-119), has of late been needlessly doubted in favour of the popular belief that they were made of some kind of sea-weed, Alga, or other vegetable matter collected by the birds.? It may be

hoped that the examination and analysis made by Mr J. R. Green (Jour nal of Physiology, vi. pp. 40-45) have settled that question for all time. These remarkable nests consist essentially of mucus, secreted by the salivary glands above mentioned, which dries and looks like isinglass. Their marketable value depends on their colour and purity, for they are often intermixed with feathers and other foreign substances. The Swifts that construct these "edible" nests form a genus Collocalia, of which the number of species is uncertain; but they inhabit chiefly the islands of the Indian Ocean from Be north of Madagascar eastward, as well as many of the tropica. Ne ee ee

1 This species, A. caudacuta, has been generally, but Mr Hume says (Stray Feathers, ix. p. 230) wrongly, identified with the Hirundo oe of Pallas. So many authors have recently ascribed the foundation : the genus Chetura to Stephens in the year 1825 that it may not be amiss to state that its origin dates only from 1826, the same year ad which Boie established the commensurate genus Acanthyllis.

2 Hence one species has been called Collocalia fuctphaga.

islands of the Pacific so far as the Marquesas,—one species occur- ring in the hill-country of India. They brecd in caves, to which they resort in great numbers, and occupy them jointly and yet alternately with Bats —the mammals being the lodgers by day and the birds by night.?

The genus Cypselus, as noted by Willughby, with its American ally Panyptia, exhibits a form of pedal struc- ture not otherwise observed among birds. Not only is the hind-toe constantly directed forwards, but the other three toes depart from the rule which ordinarily governs the number of phalanges in the Bird's foot,—a rule which applies to even so ancient a form as Archexopteryx (see Birps, vol. iii. p. 728),—and in the two Cypseline genera just named the series of digital phalanges is 2, 3, 3, 8, instead of 2, 3, 4, 5, which generally obtains in the Class Aves. Other Swifts, however, do not depart from the normal arrangement, and the exception, remarkable as it is, must not be taken as of more value than is needed for the recognition of two sections or subgenera admitted by Mr Sclater in his monographical essay on the Family (Proc. Zool. Society, 1865, pp. 593-617). There seem to be about half a

dozen good genera of Cypselidx, and from fifty to sixty species. Their geographical distribution is much the same as that of the Hirundinidex (cf. SwaLLow, ‘ ut supra) ; but it should be always and most clearly borne in mind that, though so like Swallows in many respects, the Swifts have scarcely any part of their structure which ‘ isnot formed on a different plan ; and, instead of any near affinity existing between the two groups, it can scarcely be doubted by any unprejudiced investigator that the Cypselide not only differ far more from the Hirundinide ‘ than the latter do from any other Family of Passeres, but that they belong to what in the present state of ornitho- logy must be deemed a distinct Order of Birds—that which in the present series of articles has been called ‘Picariz. That the relations of the Cypselidex to the | Trochilide (cf. Hommine-Birp, vol, xii. pp. 357 sq.) are close, as has been asserted by L’Herminie and Nitzsch, Dr Burmeister and Prof. Huxley, is denied by Dr Shufeldt (Proc. Zool. Society, 1885, pp. 886-914), but the views of ‘the last have since been controverted by Mr F. Lucas (Auk, 1886, pp. 444-451). (A. N.)

SWIFT, Jonatuan (1667-1745), dean of St Patrick’s, the greatest satirist of his own or perhaps of any age, was born in Hoey’s Court, Dublin, November 30, 1667. Like Pope’s, his family was of Yorkshire origin ; in the time of Charles I. the representative of one branch had obtained “a peerage, which expired with him. The first of his own immediate ancestors known to us was a clergyman, rector of St Andrew’s, Canterbury, from 1569 to 1592, whose son succeeded him in that living, and whose grandson was the Rev. Thomas Swift, vicar of Goodrich in Herefordshire, ‘renowned for his eccentricity, his mechanical ingenuity, and, above all, his stubborn devotion to Charles I. and the ‘persecutions he underwent in consequence. Plundered _ thirty-six times, and ultimately ejected from his living, he Bdied in 1658, leaving his thirteen children a small and | greatly impoverished landed estate and the questionable

ii

advantage of a substantial claim on the gratitude of the ‘restored sovereign. More fortunate than most ruined / cavaliers, his eldest son

Godwin soon obtained the attorney- generalship of the palatinate of Tipperary. This piece of /good fortune naturally attracted other members of the family across the channel,—among them Jonathan, one of He youngest of nine brothers, but already husband of | Abigail Ericke of Leicester, a lady of ancient descent and "Means more limited than his own. A student of law, but

') | MrH. Pryer has given one of the latest accounts of some of these ') caves in North Borneo (Proc. Zool. Society, 1885, pp. 582-588), which may be read to advantage.

se wWitr tT

never called to the bar, Jonathan appears to have subsisted for some years on windfalls and casual employments. At length (1665) he became steward of the King's Inns (an- swering to the Inns of Court in England), an office of small emolument. Two years afterwards he died suddenly, leaving an infant daughter and a widow pregnant with the future dean of St Patrick's. So embarrassed had his circum- stances been that, although considerable debts were owing to the estate, Mrs Swift was for the moment unable to pay the expense of his interment. Thus Swift's first experience of life was that of a dependant on the charity of his uncles, more particularly of Godwin ; and the inevitable bitterness of the situation was aggravated by the grudging manner in which the Tipperary official seemed to dole out his parsimonious help. In fact, the apparently prosperous relative was the victim of unfortunate speculations, and chose rather to be reproached with avarice than with im- prudence. A virulent resentment became ingrained into the youth's whole nature, and, though ultimately acquainted with the real state of the case, he never mentioned his uncle with kindness or respect. Other relatives did more to merit his regard. Yet he took no pride in his Irish connexions or nativity, and a singular adventure in his infancy seems to have afforded him a pretext for insinuat- ing that he was really born in England. When he was but two years old his nurse, a native of Whitehaven, was recalled to that town by an illness in her family. So attached had she become to her charge as

to clandes- tinely carry him away with her. Mrs Swift was induced to consent to his remaining with her for a time, and the child spent three years in Cumberland. By his return his education had made considerable progress, and in the next year he was sent to the grammar school at Kilkenny. There can be no question as to the author of Gulliver having been a remarkable child, but unfortunately only one anecdote of his school-days has been preserved. It is the story, graphically narrated by himself, of his having once invested the whole of his pocket-money in the purchase of an old horse condemned to the knacker's yard, his momentary triumph over his school-fellows, and his mortification on discovering the uselessness of his acqui- sition,—an anecdote highly characteristic of his daring pride and ambition, and from which, instead of the moral he professed to discover, he might have derived an augury of the majestic failure of his life.

In April 1682 Swift matriculated at Trinity College, Dublin, where he failed to distinguish himself. " By the ill-treatment of his nearest relations," he says, mean- ing especially his uncle Godwin, "he was so discouraged and sunk in his spirits that he too much neglected his academic studies, for some part of which he had no great relish by nature ; so that when the time came for taking his degree as bachelor of arts he was stopped of his degree for dulness and insufficiency, and at last hardly admitted in a manner little to his credit, which is called in that college speciali gratia, February 15, 1685." The college roll, nevertheless, shows that the only subject in which Swift absolutely failed was natural philosophy, including mathematics, in which the future author of the Voyage to Laputa was hardly likely to excel, nor is it surprising that a student of fitful and unruly temperament should have performed his obligatory theme negligenter. His examination in Greek and Latin was satisfactory, and the extent of desultory information evinced by his writings seems to prove that he had always been an industrious reader. His mortification made him reckless, and he repeatedly underwent academic censure during the next three years, though it is not certain whether some of the records supposed to apply to him do not in fact relate

to his cousin Thomas. XXIT. — 96

Swift and Temple.

762

In 1688 Swift quitted the university, and, after a brief residence with his mother at Leicester, entered the family of Sir William Temple at Moor Park, near Farnham, as he declares for the advantage of Temple's conversation, but at least partly as an amanuensis. A distant relationship between his mother and Lady Temple appears to have

recommended him to this post, which he found trying to

Early writings and settle- ment in Treland.

his pride and independence. Temple was, as Swift ad- mitted, "a man of sense and virtue," but his temper was exclusive, his manners formal, and he had retired from public affairs from self-regard and over-fastidiousness. If he solaced his voluntary ostracism by a comparison with the elegant retirement and lettered ease of Cicero, it did not therefore occur to him to compare his obscure Irish secretary with the Roman orator's amanuensis Tiro, who had, at least, invented shorthand. We, who know that in the patron's place the dependant would have governed the nation, need not be surprised at finding, full twenty years afterwards, the iron of servitude still rankling in the latter's haughty soul. He withdrew from Temple's service on a pretext of ill health from May 1690 to August 1691, but returned, and undoubtedly made himself useful to his employer, who on one occasion rendered him the medium of a confidential communication to King William, who had consulted Temple on the bill for triennial parliaments, then sanctioned by both branches of the legislature. Swift did his best to enforce Temple's arguments in favour of the measure, and was in after life wont to refer to the failure of his rhetoric as the most useful lesson his vanity had ever received. Struck, it would seem, rather by the physical than the mental endowments of the robust young Irishman, William offered him a troop of horse, a proposal which appears to have been subsequently commuted into a promise of church preferment. Swift had already (July 1692) proceeded to the degree of M.A. at Oxford, and the execution of his design to embrace the

ecclesiastical pro- fession was hastened by a quarrel with Temple, occasioned by the latter's reluctance to contract any definite engage- ment to provide for him. Throwing up his employment, he passed (May 1694) over into Ireland, but found his views impeded by the refusal of all the bishops to ordain him without some certificate of the regularity of his deport- ment while in Temple's family. Five months passed ere he could bring himself to solicit this favour from his old patron, which he ultimately did in a letter submissive in appearance, but charged to the full with smothered rage and intense humiliation. Forgiveness was easy to one in Temple's place and of Temple's disposition, and he not only despatched the requisite testimonials, but added a recommendation which obtained for Swift the living of Kilroot, in the diocese of Down and Connor (January 1695). His residence here was not fated to be of long duration. Temple, who knew his value and had not parted with him willingly, soon let him understand that a return was open to him, and Swift, whose resentment was cooled by time, and soothed by the acknowledgment of his value to his patron, readily complied (May 1696). He continued to reside with Sir William till the latter's death in J anuary 1699. No further disagreement troubled their intimacy, and Temple bequeathed Swift the charge of editing his writings, a laborious but not an unprofitable commission. Macaulay has justly indicated the familiarity with public affairs acquired by Swift at Moor Park as one main cause of his subsequent distinction as a politician, and here too he laid the foundation of his literary renown. He is reported to have read regularly for eight hours every day ; and we have his own authority for his having, as early as 1691, "written and burned, and written again, more on all manner of subjects than perhaps any man in England." The only relics of these early days, however, belong to a

species of composition in which he was little qualified to excel, He has, indeed, a name among the poets of Eng. land, but the merit of his verse is usually in the ratio of its approach to the sermo pedestris. Mistaking the nature of his powers, he must needs begin with Pindarics, and the result may be imagined. Yet his own simple account of his feelings while endeavouring composition proves that the mood was right though the

channel was wrong, and that there was error as well as truth in his kinsman Dryden's severe and unforgiven remark, "Cousin Swift, you will never be a poet." Swift's first prose composi- tion betrayed his resentment. In the Battle of the Books (1697), a satirical contribution to the controversy on the comparative merits of the ancients and the moderns raised by Perrault, but with especial reference to the question of the genuineness of the letters of Phalaris, on which his patron Temple had taken the wrong side, Swift for the first and last time committed a plagiarism, and sought to conceal it by an untruth. It is undoubtedly adapted, though certainly improved from, De Callitres's Histoire Poétique de la Guerre nouvellement déclareé entre les An- cuens et les Modernes. Here also his sarcasm for the first and last time recoiled upon himself. The satire against Dryden and Bentley wants, indeed, nothing but truth to be excellent; but the pictures of the former in his monstrous helmet and the latter in his patchwork mail yield in ludicrousness to the idea of the author of the Pindarie Odes presuming to ridicule the author of Absalom and Achito- phel, and the inglorious student of Trinity College, Dublin, challenging the first philologist of the age on a question of classical scholarship. It is, however, to his credit that his learning was greater than that of the other writers on his side and his pretensions less. Swift's next literary labour was his edition of Temple's posthumous works, already mentioned. They appeared with a dedication to King William, which was to have made the editor a prebendary. A petition to this effect miscarried, as he always believed, through the negligence or ill-will of the nobleman who undertook to present it. Be this as it may, he had become too important to be overlooked, and soon obtained the post of secretary and chaplain to Earl Berkeley, one of the lords justices of Ireland. The better half of this appointment, however, escaped him on his arrival in that country, his secretaryship being transferred to a Mr Bushe, who, when Lord Berkeley had at length an opportunity of recompensing Swift's disappointment by the gift of the deanery of Derry, successfully exerted his influence in favour of another clergyman, who is asserted to have gained his interest by the judicious outlay of a thousand pounds. With bitter indignation Swift threw up his chaplaincy, but was ultimately reconciled to his patron by the presentation to the rectory of Agher, in Meath, with the united vicarages of Laracor and Rathbeggan. For the

first time in his life he might now call himself his own master, and had an opportunity of exhibiting, free from suspicion of external constraint, that stern regard to duty which was not the least prominent feature of his character. In an age of general laxity—in a priest of an alien church, whose most energetic servants commonly succumbed to the mortifying conviction of their uselessness and the detesta- tion they excited among the people for whom they laboured, the parishioners of Laracor found a clergyman whom they might have heard three times a week. The energy, however, which probably gained the respect, certainly failed to influence the convictions, of his Catholic flock. We have his own authority for reckoning his average congregation at "half a score"; and on one occasion his clerk Roger was his only auditor. In fact, his exertions! the pulpit were more meritorious than his achievements ; he entirely lacked the fire, the self-oblivion, the expansive

——— eee

' it with an air of sense.

po wait 163

geniality of the orator. He himself characterized his discourses as " pamphlets," and, if meant to imply their arid and argumentative character, the criticism is just. The author of the Tale of a Tub, which he had had by | him since 1696 or 1698, must have felt conscious of powers capable of far more effective exercise ; and his resolution to exchange divinity for politics must appear fully justified on a comparison of these inconclusive essays with another performance of the same period. The Discourse on the Dissensions in Athens and Rome (September 1700), written in the Whig interest, "without humour and without satire," and intended as a dissuasive from the pending im- peachment of Somers and three other noblemen, received the honour, extraordinary for the maiden publication of a young politician, of being generally attributed to Somers himself or to Burnet, the latter of whom found a public disavowal necessary. Three years and a half later | appeared a more remarkable work. Clearness, cogency, masculine simplicity of diction, are conspicuous in the pamphlet, but true creative power told the Tale of a Tub. "Good God! what a genius I had when I

wrote that book !” was his own exclamation in his latter years. It is, indeed, if not the most amusing of Swift’s satirical works, the most strikingly original, and the one in which the compass of his powers is most fully displayed. In his kindred productions he relies mainly upon a single element of the humorous,—logical sequence and unrufiled gravity bridling in an otherwise frantic absurdity, and investing In the Zale of a Tub he lashes out in all directions. The humour, if less cogent and cumulative, is richer and more varied; the invention too, is more daringly original and more completely out of the ; reach of ordinary faculties. The supernatural coats and the quintessential loaf may be paralleled but cannot be surpassed ; and the book is throughout a mine of sugges- tiveness, as, for example, in the anticipation of Carlyle’s clothes philosophy within the compass of a few lines. At the same time it wants unity and coherence, it attains no conclusion, and the author abuses his digressive method + of composition and his convenient fiction of hiatuses in the original manuscript. The charges it occasioned of profanity and irreverence were natural, but groundless. There is nothing in the book inconsistent with Swift’s professed and real character as a sturdy Church of Eng- land parson, who accepted the doctrines of his church as an essential constituent of the social order around him, battled for them with the fidelity of a soldier defending his colours, and held it no part of his duty to understand, interpret, or assimilate them.

I Before the publication of the Tale of a Tub, Swift had _, taken a step destined to exercise a most important influence ou his life, by inviting two ladies to Laracor. Esther Johnson, a dependant of Sir William Temple’s (born in | March 1681), whose acquaintance he had made in the » latter’s family, and whom he has immortalized as “Stella,” } came over with her chaperon, Mrs Dingley, and was soon permanently domiciled in his neighbourhood. The melan- _ choly tale of Swift’s attachment will be more conveniently narrated in another place, and is only alluded to here for | the sake of chronology. Meanwhile the sphere of his | intimacies was rapidly widening. He had been in England for three years together, 1701 to 1704, and counted Pope, Steele, and Addison among his friends. The success of _ his pamphlet gained him ready access to all Whig circles ;

1 The name “ Stella” is simply a translation of Esther. Swift may have learned that Esther means “star” from the Hlementa Linguz Persice of John Greaves or from some Persian scholar; but he is more likely to have seen the etymology in the form given from Jewish

sources in Buxtorf’s Lexicon, where the interpretation takes the more

suggestive form ‘Stella Veneris.”

but already his confidence in that party was shaken, and he was beginning to meditate that change of sides which has drawn down upon him so much but such unjustifiable obloquy. The true state of the case may easily be collected from his next publications—Zhe Sentiments of a Church of Lingland Man, and On the Reasonableness of a Test (1708). The vital differences among the friends of the Hanover succession were not political, but ecclesiastical. From this point of view, Swift’s sympathies were entirely with the Tories. Asa minister of the church he felt his duty and his interest equally concerned in the support of her cause ; nor could he fail to discover the inevitable tendency of Whig doctrines, whatever caresses individual Whigs might bestow on individual clergymen, to abase the Establish- ment as a corporation. He sincerely believed that the ultimate purpose of freethinkers was to escape from moral restraints, and he had an unreasoning antipathy to Scotch Presbyterians and English Dissenters. One of his pamphlets, written about this time, contains his recipe for the promotion of religion, and is of itself a sufficient testimony to the extreme materialism of his views. Censorships and penalties are among the means he recommends. His pen was exerted to better purpose in the most consummate example of his irony, the Argu- ment against Abolishing Christianity. About this time, too (November 1707), he produced his best poem, Baucis and Philemon, which, as he frankly tells us, owes very much to the corrections of Addison.

From February 1708 to April 1709 Swift was in Swift London, urging upon the Godolphin administration the joins the

claims of the Irish clergy to the first-fruits and tenths (Queen Anne’s bounty”), already granted to their

brethren in England. His having been selected for such terial a commission shows that he was not yet regarded as a Writer.

deserter from the Whigs, although the ill-success of his representations probably helped to make him one. By November 1710 he was again domiciled in London, and writing his Journal to Stella, that unique exemplar of a giant's playfulness, "' which was written for one person's private pleasure and has had indestructible attractiveness for every one since." In the first pages of this marvel- lously minute record of a busy life we find him depicting the decline of Whig credit and complaining of the cold reception accorded him by Godolphin, whose penetration had doubtless detected the precariousness of his allegiance. Within a few weeks he had become the lampooner of the fallen treasurer, the bosom friend of Oxford and Boling- broke, and the writer of the Hxaminer, a journal estab- lished as the exponent of Tory views (November 1710). He was now a power in the state, the intimate friend and recognized equal of the first writers of the day, the asso- ciate of ministers on a footing of perfect cordiality and faniliarity. "We were determined to have you," said Bolingbroke to him afterwards; " you were the only one we were afraid of." He gained his point respecting the Trish endowments; and, by his own account, his credit procured the fortune of more than forty deserving or un- deserving clients. The envious but graphic description of his demeanour conveyed to us by Bishop Kennet attests the real dignity of his position no less than the airs he thought fit to assume in consequence. The cheerful, almost jovial, tone of his letters to Stella evinces his full contentment, nor was he one to be moved to gratitude for small mercies. He had it, in fact, fully in his own power to determine his relations with the ministry, and he would be satisfied with nothing short of familiar and ostentatious equality. His advent marks a new era in English political life, the age of public opinion, created indeed by the circumstances of the time, but powerfully fostered and accelerated by him. By a strange but not unfrequent

irony of fate the most imperious and despotic spirit of his day laboured to enthrone a power which, had he himself been in authority, he would have utterly detested and despised. For a brief time he seemed to resume the whole power of the English press in his own pen and to guide public opinion as he would. His services to his party as writer of the Hxaminer, which he quitted in July 1711, were even surpassed by those which he rendered as the

author of telling pamphlets, among which The Conduct of

the Allies and Remarks on the Barrier Treaty (November and December 1711) hold the first rank. In truth, how- ever, he was lifted by the wave he seemed to command. Surfeited with glory, the nation wanted a convenient ex- cuse for relinquishing a burdensome war, which the great military genius of the age was suspected of prolonging to fill his pockets. The Whigs had been long in office. The High Church party had derived great strength from the Sacheverell trial. Swift did not bring about the revolution with which, notwithstanding, he associated his name. There seems no reason to suppose that he was consulted respecting the great Tory strokes of the crea- tion of the twelve new peers and the dismissal of Marl- borough (December 1711), but they would hardly have been ventured upon if Zhe Conduct of the Allies and the Examiners had not prepared the way. A scarcely less important service was rendered to the ministry by his Letter to the October Club, artfully composed to soothe the impatience of Harley's extreme followers. He had every claim to the highest preferment that ministers could give him, but his own pride and prejudice in high places stood in his way.

Swift Generous men like Oxford and Bolingbroke cannot have made — _ been unwilling to reward so serviceable a friend, especially oe, when their own interest lay in keeping him in England.

Patrick's; Notwithstanding, therefore, some dubious expressions in fallof Swift's letters, natural to the deferred hope, we need not the Tory doubt their having actually used their best efforts to obtain ministry. for him the vacant see of Hereford. Swift, however, had formidable antagonists in the archbishop of York, whom he had scandalized, and

the duchess of Somerset, whom he had satirized. Anne was particularly amenable to the influence of priestly and female favourites, and it must be considered a proof of the strong interest made for Swift that she was eventually persuaded to appoint him to the deanery of St Patrick's, Dublin, vacant by the removal of Bishop Sterne to Dromore. It is to his honour that he never speaks of the queen with resentment or bitterness. In June 1713 he set out to take possession of his dignity, and encountered a very cold reception from the Dublin public. The dissensions between the chiefs of his party speedily recalled him to England. He found affairs in a desperate condition. The queen's demise was evidently at hand, and the same instinctive good sense which had ranged the uation on the side of the Tories, when Tories alone could terminate a fatiguing war, rendered it Whig when Tories manifestly could not be trusted to maintain the Protestant succession. In any event the occupants of office could merely have had the choice of risking their heads in an attempt to exclude the elector of Hanover, or of waiting patiently till he should come and eject them from their posts; yet they might have remained formidable could they have remained united. To the indignation with which he regarded Oxford's refusal to advance him in the peerage the active St John added an old disgust at the treasurer's pedantic and dilatory formalism, as well as his evident propensity, while leaving his colleague the fatigues, to engross for himself the chief credit of the administra- tion. Their schemes of policy diverged as widely as their characters: Bolingbroke's brain teemed with the wildest plans, which Oxford might have more effectually dis-

Were

countenanced had he been prepared with anything in their place. Swift's endeavours after an accommodation were as fruitless as unremitting. His mortification was little likely to temper the habitual virulence of his pen, which rarely produced anything more acrimonious than the attacks he at this period directed against Burnet and his former friend Steele. One of his pamphlets against the latter (The Public Spirit of the Whigs) was near involving him in a prosecution, some invectives against the Scots having proved so exasperating to the peers of that nation that they repaired in a body to the queen to

demand the punishment of the author, of whose identity there could be no doubt, although, like all Swift's writings, except the Proposal for the Extension of Religion, the pamphlet had been published anonymously. The immediate withdrawal of the offensive passage, and a sham prosecution instituted against the printer, extricated Swift from his danger,

Meanwhile the crisis had arrived, and the discord of Oxford and Bolingbroke had become patent to all the nation. Foreseeing, as is probable, the inrpending fall of the former, Swift retired to Upper Letcombe, in Berkshire, and there spent some weeks in the strictest seclusion, This leisure was occupied in the composition of his remarkable pamphlet, Free Thoughts on the State of Public Affairs, which indicates his complete conversion to the bold policy of Bolingbroke. The utter exclusion of Whigs as well as Dissenters from office, the remodelling of the army, the imposition of the most rigid restraints on the heir to the throne,—such were the measures which, by recommending, Swift tacitly admitted to be necessary to the triumph of his party. If he were serious, it can only be said that the desperation of his circumstances had momentarily troubled the lucidity of his understanding; if the pamphlet were merely intended as a feeler after public opinion, it is surprising that he did not perceive how irretrievably he was ruining his friends in the eyes of all moderate men. Bolingbroke's daring spirit, however, recoiled from no f extreme, and, fortunately for Swift, he added so much of his own to the latter's MS. that the author was obliged to recall a production which might not improbably have cost him his liberty and his deanery. This incident but just anticipated the revolution which, after Bolingbroke had enjoyed a three days' triumph over Oxford, drove him | into exile and prostrated his party, but enabled Swift to ' perform the noblest action of his life. Almost the first acts of Bolingbroke's ephemeral premiership were to order him a thousand pounds from the exchequer and despatch him the most flattering invitations. The same post brought a letter from Oxford, soliciting Swift's company in his retirement ; and, to the latter's immortal honour, he hesitated not an instant in preferring the solace of his friend to the offers of St John. When, a few days afterwards, Oxford was in prison and in danger of his life, Swift begged to

share his captivity ; and it was only on the offer being declined that he finally directed his steps towards Ireland, where he was very ill received. The draft on the exchequer was intercepted by the queen's death.

These four busy years of Swift's London life had not aa been entirely engrossed by politics. :

O_o

—

First as the associate shipsand of Steele, with whom he quarrelled, and of Addison, whose prised. esteem for him survived all differences, afterwards as the Janeows intimate comrade of Pope and Arbuthnot, the friend of witué Congreve and Atterbury, Parnell and Gay, he entered deeply into the literary life of the period. He was trea- surer and a leading member of the Brothers, a society

of wits and statesmen which recalls the days of Horace

and Mecenas. He promoted the subscription for Popes Homer, contributed some numbers to the Tatler, Spectator,

and Intelligencer, and joined with Pope and Arbuthnot m

establishing the Scriblerus Club, writing Martinus Scrib- lerus, his share in which can have been but small, as well as John Bull, where the chapter recommending the educa- tion of all blue-eyed children in depravity for the public good must surely be his. His fugitive productions during this period are very numerous, and mostly distinguished not only by pungent wit but by overflowing animal spirits. | The most celebrated are the cruel but irresistibly ludicrous satires on the astrologer Partridge, a man in fact respect- able for his sincere belief in his art, and no mean writer. | Many of his best poems belong to this period. A more laboured work, his Memorial to Harley, proposing the

chiefly remarkable as a proof of the deference paid to French taste by the most original English writer of his day. His History of the Last Four Years of Queen Anne is ‘ not on a level with his other political writings. To sum | up the incidents of this eventful period of his life, it was | during it that he lost his mother, always loved and dutifully | honoured, by death ; his sister had been estranged from him some years before by an imprudent marriage, which, though making her a liberal allowance, he never forgave. i The change from London to Dublin can seldom be an sh agreeable one. To Swift it meant for the time the fall from unique authority to absolute insignificance. All share in the administration of even Irish affairs was de- nied him ; every politician shunned him; and his society hardly included a single author or wit. Ata later period he talked of “dying of rage, like a poisoned rat in a hole”; for some time, however, he was buoyed up by feeble hopes of a restoration to England. So late as 1726 _ he was in England making overtures to Walpole, but he had no claim on ministerial goodwill, and as an opponent _he had by that time done his worst. By an especial cruelty of fate, what should have been the comfort became the bane of his existence. We have already mentioned his invitation of Esther Johnson and Mrs Dingley to Ireland. Both before and after his elevation to the deanery of St Patrick’s these ladies continued to reside near him, and superintended his household during his absence in London. He had frustrated a match proposed for Stella, and, with “his evident delight in the society of the dark-haired, bright- eyed, witty beauty, a model, if we may take his word, of all that woman should be, it seemed unaccountable that he did not secure it to himself by the expedient of matrimony. A constitutional infirmity has been suggested as the reason, _and the conjecture derives support from several peculiarities in his writings. But, whatever the cause, his conduct proved none the less the fatal embitterment of his life and ‘Stella’s and yet another’s. He had always been unlucky | in his relations with the fair sex. In 1694 he had idealized }as “Varina” a Miss Waring, who then discouraged his ‘attentions, but two years later made him advances in her turn. Swift’s mind had also changed, and he could find | no better way out of the difficulty than an insulting letter affecting to accept her proposal on terms which he knew ‘taust put it out of the question. Varina was avenged by) Vanessa, who pursued Swift to far other purpose. Esther Vanhomrigh, the orphan daughter of

a commissioner of _ Irish trade, had become known to Swift at the height of | his political influence. He lodged close to her mother, and Was a frequent guest at her table. Vanessa insensibly became his pupil, and he insensibly became the object of her impassioned affection. Her letters reveal a spirit full /of ardour and enthusiasm, and warped by that perverse bent which leads so many women to prefer a tyrant to & companion. Swift, on the other hand, was devoid of) passion. Of friendship, even of tender regard, he was fully capable, but not of love. 'The spiritual realm, _ whether in divine or eartlily things, was a region closed to

Swift

regulation of the English language by an academy, is"

765:

him, where he never set foot. Asa friend he must have greatly preferred Stella to Vanessa ; and from this point of view his loyalty to the original object of his choice, we may be sure, never faltered. But Vanessa assailed him on a very weak side. The strongest of all his instincts was the thirst for imperious domination. Vanessa hugged the fetters to which Stella merely submitted. Flattered to excess by her surrender, yet conscious of his binding obligations and his real preference, he could neither discard the one beauty nor desert the other. It is humiliating to human strength and consoling to human weakness to find the Titan behaving like the least resolute of mortals, seek- ing refuge in temporizing, in evasion, in fortuitous circum- stance. He no doubt trusted that his removal to Dublin would bring relief, but here again his evil star interposed. Vanessa's mother died (1714), and she followed hin, Unable to marry Stella without destroying Vanessa, or to openly welcome Vanessa without destroying Stella, he was thus involved in the most miserable embarrassment ; still, for a time he continued to temporize. At length, unable to bear any more Stella's mute reproach and his own consciousness of wrong, he gave a reluctant consent to a private marriage, which, as at least the weight of testimony seems to prove, though there is no documentary evidence, was accordingly performed. This was in 1716. At the same time he insisted on their

union being kept a strict secret, justifying a demand really dictated by tenderness for Vanessa, and perhaps by the unavowable reason to which allusion has been made, on the most futile and frivolous pretexts. Never more than a nominal wife, the unfortunate Stella commonly passed for his mistress till the day of her death, bearing her doom with uncom- plaining resignation, and consoled in some degree by unquestionable proofs of the permanence of his love, if his feeling for her deserves the name. Meanwhile his efforts were directed to soothe Miss Vanhomrigh, to whom he addressed Cadenus [Decanus| and Vanessa, the history of their attachment and the best example of his serious poetry, and for whom he sought to provide honourably in marriage, without either succeeding in his immediate aim or in thereby opening her eyes to the hopelessness of her passion. In 1717, probably at his instance, she retired from Dublin to Marley Abbey, her seat at Celbridge. For three years she and Swift remained apart, but in 1720, on what occasion is uncertain, he began to pay her regular visits. Sir Walter Scott found the Abbey garden still full of laurels, several of which she was accustomed to plant whenever she expected Swift, and the table at which they had been used to sit wasstill shown. Dut the catastrophe of her tragedy was at hand. Worn out with his evasions, she at last (1723) took the desperate step of writing to Stella, or according to another account to Swift himself, demanding to know the nature of the connexion with him, and this terminated the melancholy history as with a clap of thunder. Stella replied by the avowal of her marriage, sent her rival's letter to Swift, and retired to a friend's house. Swift rode down to Marley Abbey with a terrible countenance, petrified Vanessa by his frown, and departed without a word, flinging down a _ packet which only contained her own letter to Stella. Vanessa died within a few weeks. She left the poem and corre- spondence for publication. The former appeared imme- diately, the latter was suppressed until it was published by Sir Walter Scott.

Five years afterwards Stella followed Vanessa to 'the grave. The grief which the gradual decay of her health evidently occasioned Swift is sufficient proof of the sin- cerity of his attachment, as he understood it. It is a just remark of Thackeray's that he everywhere half-consciously recognizes her as his better angel, and dwells on her wit

and her tenderness with a fondness he never exhibits for any other topic. Yet he could never overcome his repug- nance to acknowledge their union till she lay on her death- bed, when he was heard by Mrs Whiteway (his cousin, a lady of fortune and talent, who, though not residing with him, superintended his household during his latter years) to say, “ Well my dear, if you wish it, it shall be owned.” She answered, “It is too late.” On January 28, 1728, she died, and her wretched lover sat down the same night to record her virtues in language of unsurpassed simplicity, but to us who know the story more significant for what it conceals than for what it tells. A lock of her hair is preserved, with the inscription in Swift’s handwriting, most affecting in its apparent cynicism, “Only a woman’s hair!” ‘Only a woman’s hair,” comments Thackeray ; “only love, only fidelity, purity, innocence, beauty, only the tenderest heart in the world stricken and wounded, and passed away out of reach of pangs of hope deferred, love insulted, and pitiless desertion; only’ that lock of hair left, and memory, and remorse, for the guilty, lonely wretch, shuddering over the grave of his victim.” The more unanswerable this tremendous indictment appears upon the evidence the greater the probability that the evidence is incomplete. Tout comprendre c’est tout par- donner. The hypothesis to which we have referred must for ever remain an hypothesis, but better than any other it not only excuses but explains.

‘Between the death of Vanessa and the death of Stella, as though withheld by an evil fate until he could no longer enjoy them, came the greatest political and the greatest literary triumph of Swift’s life. He had fled to Ireland a broken man, to all appearance politically extinct; a few years were to raise him once more to the summit of popu- larity, though power was for ever denied him. With his fierce hatred of what he recognized as injustice, it was impossible that he should not feel exasperated at the gross misgovernment of Ireland for the supposed benefit of England, the systematic exclusion of Irishmen from places of honour and profit, the spoliation of the country by absentee landlords,

the deliberate discouragement of Irish trade and manufactures. An Irish patriot in the strict sense of the term he was not; he looked upon the indi- genous population as conquered savages; but his pride and sense of equity alike revolted against the stay-at- home Englishmen's contemptuous treatment of their own garrison, and he delighted in finding a point in which the triumphant faction was still vulnerable. His Proposal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufactures, published anony- mously in 1720, urging the Irish to disuse English goods, became the subject of a prosecution, which at length had to be dropped. A greater opportunity was at hand. One of the chief wants of Ireland in that day, and for many a day afterwards, was that of small currency adapted to the daily transactions of life. Questions of coinage occupy a large part of the correspondence of the primate, Arch- bishop Boulter, whose anxiety to deal rightly with the matter is evidently very real and conscientious. There is no reason to think that the English ministry wished otherwise ; but secret influences were at work, and a patent for supplying Ireland with a coinage of copper halfpence was accorded to William Wood on such terms that the profit accruing from the difference between the intrinsic and the nominal value of the coins, about 40 per cent., was mainly divided between him and the duchess of Kendal, the king's mistress, by whose influence he had obtained the privilege. Swift now had his opportunity, and the famous letters signed M. B. Drapier (1724) soon set Ireland in a flame. Every effort was used to dis- cover, or rather to obtain legal evidence against, the author, whom, Walpole was assured, it would then have

ow IF

taken ten thousand men to apprehend. None could be procured ; the public passion swept everything before jt: the patent was cancelled; Wood was compensated by a pension ; Swift was raised to a height of popularity which he retained for the rest of his life; and the only real sufferers were the Irish people, who lost a convenience go badly needed that they might well have afforded to con- nive at Wood's illicit profits. Perhaps, however, it was worth while to teach the English ministry that not every- thing could be done in Ireland. Swift's pamphlets, written in a style more level with the popular intelligence than even his own

ordinary manner, are models alike to the controversialist who aids a good cause and to him who jg burdened with a bad one. The former may profit by the study of his marvellous lucidity and vehemence, the latter by his sublime audacity in exaggeration and the sophistry with which he involves the innocent halfpence in the obloquy of the nefarious patentee.

The noise of the Drapier's letters had hardly died AWAY Oulline's when Swift acquired a more durable glory by the publica- Travels,

tion of Gulliver's Travels in 1726. The work had been at least partly written by 1722, and the keenness of the satire on courts and statesmen suggests that it was planned while Swift's disappointments as a public man were still rankling and recent. It is Swift's peculiar good fortune that his book can dispense with the interpretation of which it is nevertheless susceptible, and may be equally enjoyed whether its inner meaning is apprehended or not. It is so true, so entirely based upon the facts of human nature, that the question what particular class of persons sup- plied the author with his examples of folly or misdoing, however interesting to the commentator, may be neglected by the reader. It is also fortunate for him that in three parts out of the four he should have entirely missed "the chief end I propose to myself, to vex the world rather than divert it." The world, which perhaps ought to have been vexed, chose rather to be diverted ; and the great satirist literally strains his powers ut puerts placeat. Few books have added so much to the innocent mirth of man- kind as the first two parts of Gulliver; the misanthropy is quite overpowered by the fun. The third part, equally masterly in composition, is less felicitous in invention; and in the fourth Swift has indeed carried out his design of vexing the world at his own cost. Human nature indignantly rejects her portrait in the Yahoo asa gross libel, and the protest is fully warranted. An intelligence from a superior sphere, bound on a voyage to the earth, might actually have obtained a fair idea of average humanity bya preliminary call at Lilliput or Brobdingnag, but not from a visit to the Yahoos. While Gulliver 1s infinitely the most famous and popular of Swift's works, it exhibits no greater powers of mind than many others. The secret of success, here as elsewhere, is the writers marvellous imperturbability in

paradox, his teeming imag- ination, and his rigid logic. Grant his premises, and all the rest follows; his world may be turned topsy-turvy, but the relative situation of its contents is unchanged. The pains he took to be correct are evinced by the care with which, as Prof. De Morgan has shown, he caleu- lated the proportions of Lilliput and Brobdingnag 10 ordinary humanity on the basis of 1 to 12 and 12 tof respectively, and his copying the description of the storm word for word from Sturmy's Compleat Mariner. By such accuracy and consistency he has given the wildest fiction imaginable an air of veracity rivalling Defoe.

Swift's grave humour and power of enforcing momentous

Modest Proposal for Preventing the Children of Poor People 4 in Ireland from Being a Burden to their Parents, by fatten- ing and eating them (1729), a parallel to the Argument

Swift's : : : * hig latter truth by ludicrous exaggeration were next displayed in his .

EE SPEED »

ion (written in 1731, published in 1738), a surprising ssemblage of the vulgarities and trivialities current in

verses, not seldom indecent and commonly trivial, with the exception of his remarkable lines on his own death and the

coins should be struck as well as circulated in Ireland. His exertions in repressing robbery and mendicancy were "strenuous and successful. His popularity remained as reat as ever, and, when he was menaced by the bully Bettesworth, Dublin rose as one man to defend him. He zoverned his cathedral with great strictness and conscien- jlousness, and for years after Stella's death continued to old a miniature court at the deanery. But his failings »f mind were exacerbated by his bodily infirmities; he srew.more and more whimsical and capricious, morbidly suspicious and morbidly parsimonious; old friends were ystranged or removed by death, and. new friends did not ome forward in their place. For many years, neverthe- Jess, he maintained a correspondence with

Pope and Boling- broke, and with Arbuthnot and Gay until their deaths, vith such warmth as to prove that an ill opinion of man- ‘kind had not made him a misanthrope, and that human iffection and sympathy were still very necessary to him. The letters become scarcer and scarcer with the decay of ais faculties; at last, in 1740, comes one to his best Jublin friend, Mrs Whiteway, of heart-rending pathos :—

| “I have been very miserable all night, and to-day extremely eaf and fullof pain. Iam so stupid and confounded that I cannot xpress the mortification I am under both of body and mind. All) can say is that I am not in torture; but I daily and hourly xpect it. Pray let me know how your health is and your family: | hardly understand one word I write. Iam sure my days will be ery few; few and miserable they must be. I am, for those few Jays, yours entirely,—Jonathan Swift.

) “If I do not blunder, it is Saturday, July 26, 1740.

“Tf I live till Monday I shall hope to see you, perhaps for the ast time.”

) In March 1742 it was necessary to appoint guardians ‘f Swift’s person and estate. In September of the same fear his physical malady reached a crisis, from which he merged a helpless wreck, with faculties paralysed rather jaan destroyed. “He never talked nonsense or said a ‘olish thing.” The particulars of his case have been vestigated by Dr Bucknill and Sir William Wilde, who lave proved that he suffered from nothing that could be alled mental derangement until the “labyrinthine vert- 0” from which he had suffered all his life, and which le erroneously attributed to a surfeit of fruit, produced jaralysis, “a symptom of which was the not uncommon me of aphasia, or the automatic utterance of words Mgoverned by intention. As a consequence of that jaralysis, but not before, the brain, already weakened by

emile decay, at length gave way, and Swift sank into he dementia which preceded his death” (Craik, Life of

ea

Swift). The scene closed on October 19, 1745. With what he himself described as a satiric touch, his fortune was bequeathed to found a hospital for idiots and lunatics. He was interred in his cathedral, in the same coffin as Stella, with the epitaph, written by himself, “Hic depositum est corpus Jonathan Swift, S.T.P., hujus ecclesie cathedralis decani; ubi seva indignatio ulterius cor lacerare nequit. Abi viator, et imitare, si poteris, strenuum pro virili libertatis vindicem.”

The stress which Swift thus laid upon his character as Personal

an assertor of liberty has hardly been ratified by posterity, which has comparatively neglected the patriot for the genius and the wit. Not unreasonably ; for if half his patriotism sprang from an instinctive hatred of oppres- sion, the other half was disappointed egotism. He utterly lacked the ideal aspiration which the patriot should possess: his hatred of villainy was far more intense than his love of virtue. The same cramping realism clings to him everywhere beyond the domain of politics,—in his religion, in his fancies, in his affections. At the same time, it is the secret of his wonderful concentration of power : he realizes everything with such intensity that he cannot fail to be impressive. Except in his unsuccessful essay in history, he never, after the mistake of his first Pindaric attempts, strays beyond his sphere, never attempts what he is not qualified to do, and never fails to do it. His writings have not one literary fault except their occa- sional looseness of grammar and their frequent indecency. Within certain limits, his imagination and invention are as active as those of the most creative poets. As a master of humour, irony, and invective he has no superior; his reasoning powers are no less remarkable within their range, but he never gets beyond the range of an advocate. Few men of so much mental force have had so little genius for speculation, and he is constantly dominated by fierce in- stincts which he mistakes for reasons. As aman the lead- ing note of his character is the same,—strength without elevation. His master passion is imperious pride,—the lust of despotic dominion. He would have his superiority acknowledged,

and cared little for the rest. Place and profit were comparatively indifferent to him ; he declares that he never received a farthing for any of his works except Gulliver's Travels, and that only by Pope's manage- ment ; and he had so little regard for literary fame that he put his name to only one of his writings. Contemptuous of the opinion of his fellows, he hid his virtues, paraded his faults, affected some failings from which he was really exempt, and, since his munificent charity could not be con- cealed from the recipients, laboured to spoil it by gratuitous surliness. Judged by some passages of his life he would appear a heartless egotist, and yet he was capable of the sincerest friendship and could never dispense with human sympathy. Thus an object of pity as well as awe, he is the most tragic figure in our literature,—the only man of his age who could be conceived as affording a groundwork for one of the creations of Shakespeare. "To think of him," says Thackeray, "is like thinking of the ruin of a great empire." Nothing finer or truer could be said.

Swift's correspondence is the best authority for his life. Of his contemporaries, we are mainly indebted to his panegyrist Delany and his detractor Lord Orrery. Hawkesworth compiled the parti- culars of his life, and published what was the standard edition of his works till the appearance of Sir Walter Scott's in 1814. This edition is not likely to be superseded, but might with great ad- vantage be reissued with amendments and additions. The biogra- phy prefixed is based on Hawkesworth, but is far more copiously and elegantly written. At the same time the author's views are frequently conventional, his judgments superficial, and his good nature has made him too indulgent to his hero. The late John Forster subjected all available records of Swift's life to the most diligent scrutiny, and in 1875 published the first volume, coming down to 1711, of a biography intended to have been completed

in three volumes. Invaluable in many respects, it exhibited the process as well as the result of biography, and hence threatened to be too long. Mr H. Craik, succeeding to the post vacated by Forster's death,

judiciously reduced the scale, and produced in one volume (1882) a work which will long rank as the standard one on the subject. Remarkable monographs on Swift have been produced by Leslie Stephen in the "Men of Letters" series, Dr Johnson in the Lives of the Poets, Thackeray in the English Humourists. Mr Stephen is anxiously impartial; Johnson's acute- ness is perverted by his antipathy; Thackeray, as is natural in a novelist, has dwelt disproportionately on the romantic side of Swift's history, and his pity for Stella and Vanessa forms too large an element in his general judgment. But he has, better than any one else, apprehended the fearfully tragic element in Swift's character and fortunes. Swift's early life has been carefully investigated by Dr Barrett of Trinity College, and the final epoch of his life by Monck Mason and Sir William Wilde. His greatness is exaggerated and his failings are extenuated in two brilliant articles in the Quarterly Review, vols. cli. and clvi. Minor points in his life and writings have received much elucidation from numerous inquirers, especially the late Mr Charles Dilke and Colonel F. Grant. Mr Stanley Lane Poole has edited selections from his works and cor- respondenee, with excellent notes and prefaces, and has prepared a valuable bibliography. (R. G.)

SWIMMING anp DIVING. In the case of man the power of swimming is acquired, not natural. As com- pared with the lower animals, to most of which it comes perfectly easily, he is at a disadvantage in its acquisition, owing not to his greater relative weight so much as to the position of his centre of gravity, along with the fact that in the case of quadrupeds the motions which serve to sup- port and propel them in the water are very similar to those of locomotion on land. No race of mankind, however, can be mentioned to which the art is unknown, and in many barbarous countries it is more widely diffused and carried to greater perfection than amongst the civilized nations of the world.

For learning to swim, a quiet sandy beach is the best place, as sea water is more buoyant than fresh. All arti- ficial aids, such as corks, air belts, cork jackets, inflated bladders, and the like, may be avoided ; they raise some parts of the body too high above and so sink others too far below the natural plane of flotation, whereas the first fundamental rule is that the mouth only should be above water, and the legs close to the

surface. Belts, &c., are also apt to become misplaced and so cause trouble and annoyance as well as danger. It is best for beginners to take some instruction from a practical teacher, though many have become adepts by merely watching good per- formers. Confidence in the floating power of the body is the first thing to be acquired. The easiest way of floating is to lie on the back (which should be slightly hollowed), the arnis being stretched out beyond the head but not lifted

out of the water; this attitude not only facilitates respira- |

tion but counterbalances the weight of the lower limbs. The knees may be bent outward, the toes also pointing side- ways, the hips rigid, so assisting to keep the legs up as close as possible to the top of the water. By easy breathing one

lungs kept charged, the body will assert its buoyancy.

To further enable him to realize that water is capable of supporting the human body, the learner may adopt the following plan. Walk down the steps of a bath, or along a shelving beach on a calm day, into about 3 feet of water ; turn and face the shallow place, and, having taken a breath, stoop down and try to pick an egg or some similar object (a handful of sand will suffice) from the bottom. Repeat this several times leisurely, going farther out at each venture, till the water reaches up to but not higher than the middle of the chest. It will soon be found that the object is not so easy of recovery, and the beginner learns that but little exertion is required to keep the body afloat. When this experience has been gained the novice should commence with the Breast Stroke, which is nowadays some-

times unjustly set aside as the “old stroke.” It is neat natural, and graceful enough, though necessarily the slowest. from the great resistance of the chest to the water and the fact that part of the arm stroke is negatived by its own movement. Like walking in pedestrianism, however, it forms the groundwork of every other branch of the art, and cannot safely be overlooked. The stroke is com. menced by placing the hands with the backs upward, and the wrists bent so that the fingers will point to the front, the insides of the wrist-joints

between arm and thumbs touching the breast not lower than 4 inches under water. Begin the stroke by pushing the arms gently forward to their full extent, keeping the palms flat and the fingers closed. Now turn the palms of both hands outward, and make a strong stroke to the right and left by each arm through an angle of 90°; in this part of the stroke the two arms describe a semicircle, of which the head may be termed the centre. It must be most distinctly borne in mind that all depression of the hands will tend to raise the body perpendicularly, whereas the only true position in swimining is the horizontal, which propels it forward. To complete the arm movement, bend the elbows back- ward and inward, until they come close to (but not neces sarily touching) the sides of the body. Carry the hands in a straight line edgeways to the position from which they started in front of the chest. Simultaneously with the stretching of the hands from the front of the body the feet are struck out to the utmost width in a way cleft for them by the toes. As the arms are being brought round in the semicircular motion the lower limbs are stiffened and brought firmly together by grasping the water, so to speak, with the whole of the leg, more especially between the knees, ankles, and soles and toes of the feet. Whilst thus imparting forward motion to the swimmer, they finish in a straight line behind the body. Then, when the arms are bent, and the hands are being brought to the front of the body, the knees are turned outward, heels kept together, toes also turned out, and the feet are carried up to the body and in this position are once more ready for repeating the movements as de- scribed. Beginners must be careful not to make the arm movements quicker than those of the legs, and it must be distinctly remembered that the latter are the great pro- pellers. Unison of the movements as mentioned, and regularity in each part of the stroke, are indispensable to perfection. All hurry and excitement must be carefully avoided, and every complete stroke and kick gone about with mechanical precision and neatness. The only part requiring strong muscular exertion being the closing of the legs after they have been spread wide apart,—the one strong propelling element,—every effort is to be made to ensure correctness and power in its performance. The arm movements should be easy and graceful, all jerkiness

or suddenness of motion being carefully avoided. will soon be convinced that, properly balanced and with |

Breathing should be unrestrained and natural, without gasping, sputtering, or short or sudden heavings. A safe rule is to have a full breath at every stroke, its division being regulated as follows. Blow slowly outward when the first part of the arm movement is being performed, 4.@ stretched out in front ; inspire as the hands are going out- ward and round. Then, as the lungs are fully charged, no effort is necessary to suspend respiration while the hands are carried in to the front of the body again. This regu- larity of breathing is essential to pleasure, comfort, and gracefulness of action. The nostrils and air-passages should always be thoroughly cleared, the mouth cleansed, and the throat gargled before entering the water.

Swimming on the Back is a pleasant and useful branch of the art; the chief requisite for its acquirement 1s COM fidence. The tyro should begin practice in water reaching

Swim

up to about the upper part of the chest, turn his back shoreward, take a long breath, and lie gently backward in the water, keeping the hands on the waist with the elbows extended outward, the chest being expanded, and the breath held. As one lies well back the feet will be lifted off the ground ; they should then be spread outward as far apart as possible, in the same position as when they are opened up in breast swimming. The body and legs are thus lying extended at full length like the letter Y, the legs forming the branches or fork. Now comes the pro- pelling part of the movement. As in the front stroke, the muscles are set, and the legs are by one strong motion brought firmly and closely together. While this is being done the toes, by a slight movement of the ankle, are turned upward, and so, as the movement is finished, the great toes, inner ankles, and inside of the whole leg meet. This motion, strongly but not jerkily executed, sends the body forward, and, when the impetus obtained is nearly— not quite—expended, the legs are bent, so that the feet are drawn close up to the trunk, with the knees outward and heels together. The stroke is renewed by spreading apart, closing

again, and soon. The breath is exhaled when spreading and closing the legs, and inhaled as the feet are drawn up to the body. If greater speed is wanted, the hands can be used as sculls by carrying them . outward from the body, but at the same time level with it, | facing downward. When the arms are sufficiently ‘ extended to be in a line across from hand to hand, the ” wrists are turned to allow of the palms of the hands fac- ing toward the feet, thumbs upward. Elbows, wrists, and hands are now firmly braced, and a strong pull towards the legs is made. This is the progressive motion, and should _ be performed just as the legs are being closed. _ Another style is to bend the elbows downward, so as to Jie of the hands being carried upward along the sides of

the body, thumbs inward, and palms facing the bottom of the water. When the hands have been carried up to the armpits they are spread apart to the full extent of the arms, and the propelling part is performed as in the other ‘method by pulling strongly toward the legs.

_ _Astill more powerful stroke, and one used at competi- tions, is accomplished by carrying the hands up to the ‘armpits, as described in last method; then, turning the wrist so as to allow of the palms of the hands facing up- ward, point the fingers in the direction of progress, stretch both arms as far as possible in a line with the body and beyond the head, and turn the wrists half round, until the lands are back to back, thumbs upward. The propelling action is now performed by sweeping both hands outward and round until they touch the legs and the arms are once more straight along the sides of the body. There is a double kick in this style, and the action is as follows. When the hands are being carried up to the shoulder one kick is delivered ; then as the arms are being carried beyond the head the nether limbs are drawn up in position for another kick, which is delivered as the arms are sweeping down on the stroke. This is no mere ornamental stroke, out combines in its practice grace with power, and enables the swimmer to move through the water at great speed. Another racing back stroke is performed by lifting aands and arms out of the water at the finish of the pull downward, carrying them in the air, stretching them at ‘ull length forward beyond the head, and then dipping shem into the water,

executing the positive part of the stroke as in the last-described method. In this stroke 3 is only a single kick to each pull of the arms, the

egs being drawn up as the arms are swung up in the ir and closed as the arms are pulled through the water. Ml hile this movement is much practised by some experts, ‘tis neither so graceful nor so speedy as the other, and

****

M TOW G 769

there is much splashing, while steering is, in the case of a close race, likely to become rather erratic. Both are at the present time the fastest known methods of swimming on the back, and, with moderately good turning and push- ing in a swimming bath, 100 yards should be covered in about 74 seconds, probably less.

Of treading as a branch of swimming something should be known by every one. It is the only department of the art that is at all natural; and, if treading were resorted to in cases of accidental immersion, tliree-fourths of the resulting deaths would be prevented. The essential condition, of course, is that the hands be kept under water. When one falls into water the legs sink and the body assumes a perpendicular position, the water splashes over the face, and, once the eyes become filled or the mouth covered, the inclination of any one unable to swim is to throw the hands up and make an effort as if to creep along on the surface. These efforts only increase the danger of the position. On becoming submerged one should keep per- fectly inactive for a brief time; the head will soon rise above the surface, and at this moment one ought to beat downward with both hands alternately, never allowing them to splash or disturb the surface, the head being leaned back so as to keep only the face and nostrils clear. The back of the head and ears may be covered, but this does not matter. The motions of the hands, exactly similar to those of a dog’s forepaws when swimming and walking, are to be continued, the feet at the same time striking down—not hurriedly, nor with sudden jerky movement, but easily and gracefully, the ankles moving as if working treadles, so that the soles of

the feet act as sustaining and, it may be, propelling surfaces. The movements of hands and feet may be altered by beating downward with both hands at once, or both feet at once, but in cases of accident the former action is to be recommended. Swimmers, when treading at competitions or for display, either fold their arms across their chest or hold hands and arms above the surface. In artistic swimming trials, as much as possible of the body should be shown above the surface, and bob- bing up and down ought to be avoided. Treading is of much importance even to a good swimmer, as it allows him to divest himself of upper clothing, and enables him to lay hold of anything, such as a rope or line that does not quite reach the surface; it is also the most comfortable position in which one can partake of refreshment in case of a long swim, and is useful for purposes of conversation.

The Side Stroke may be said to hold in swimming a position somewhat similar to that of running in pedes- trianism ; as it becomes better known, the advantages of this style of aquatic progression are becoming more and more appreciated. The practice of it, however, ought not to be begun until complete proficiency has been attained in the primary stroke. Its main recommendations are apparent almost ata glance. A good average side move- ment will carry the swimmer a stroke in two seconds, each stroke covering a distance of fully six feet. The method is said by some to have been introduced by George Pewters about the year 1850. The body is turned on either side, but preferably with the right side downward, as thereby the legs act more freely and naturally and the heart has no weight on it to impede its action. The head is more immersed and thereby reduced in weight, being supported by the water and not by any muscular exertion of the neck or shoulder, and the lower extremities are less immersed than in the breast stroke. If one is lying on the right side, the right arm is thrown boldly out in front, with the palm of the hand downward and on a level with the lower side of the head. When pushed out to the utmost it is kept rigid, brought downward through the water in one strong

novement, without any bending of either wrist or elbow, XXII. — 97

and this, the positive action, is finished when the hand has reached the legs, and comes between these limbs at full stretch. It is then carried up along the body to the chin, and the stroke renewed. The left hand is formed into a scoop, turned outward by the wrist at right angles to the forearm. The left arm, with the elbow bent, is then directed outward, and makes a straight pulling (not circular nor swinging) stroke to the left hip. When one arm is performing the negative the other is at the positive part of the stroke. The action of the legs should be long and vigorous, and they should never cross each other, but should work in unison with the arms and shoulders. The left knee is brought up in front of the body, with the foot in front of and at right angles to the body. Put the foot in a line with the front of the leg, and bring it round to meet the other in a line with the body. Meanwhile stretch the right or lower leg as far away as possible from the body toward the back and then bring it down to meet the other by a powerful plain stroke. The legs are then returned upward to the body, the heels touching, the knees apart, the toes of the left foot forward and of the right foot downward. To learn this graceful and useful side stroke some persons need long and steady practice ; others acquire it comparatively quickly. The swimmer steers with his left or right hand and arm as the direction de- mands. The head and neck must be held in one position, not raised nor turned at any part of the stroke. SBear- ings should be taken from what can be seen in the line of vision away from and in front of the body, and only very seldom indeed should the head be turned to look in ad- vance. Breath is inhaled as the under hand is pulling downward, and exhalation should take place while the mouth is immersed, which is when the uppermost hand is performing the stroke along the body.

The coincident movement of arms and legs may be thus described. As the legs are bent up to the body the upper or left hand has been stretched in front and the right or lower arm has just finished the pull. As the top arm pulls downward the legs are opened wide and almost in the same motion swung round and closed. It will be apparent that the legs are returned upward with knees bent as the downward pull is being performed with the lower arm. No effort is to be made to sink the head, neither is it to be held up in any way. The turn of the body by the power of the strokes will be quite enough to allow of the lips being

sufficiently clear of the water for the purpose of inspiration. There should be no sudden pull at any part whatever of this complete stroke.

The Overhand Stroke, when properly practised and acquired, is the most useful and easy of all styles of swimming. Beginners, however, should beware of acquir- ing it before they are thorough adepts with the side stroke, otherwise they lose all power of speed and good appear- ance. Harry Gurr is sometimes said to have been the inventor of this stroke in 1863, but Harry Gardener, in August of the year previous, when he won the 500 yards championship in Mancliester, used the overhand or over- arm stroke. The only movements of the side stroke which differ from those of the overhand are tliose of the left or upper arm and hand. By carrying this arm in the air a lengthened reach is obtained above the surface. As in the side stroke, the head lies as far as possible into the water, the body, legs, and feet in a straight line level with and close to the surface. The left arm is carried forward and stretched as far as possible out of the water in a line with the face and in advance of the head. The arm and hand re-enter the water, and are pulled through it with the strongest propelling stroke. The limb out of water should be carried through the air quietly, gracefully, and evenly till dipped for the stroke, not swung uselessly

round from the shoulder in a half circle. The left arm and hand being in the air, the head lies deeper in the water than in the side stroke, and it is reduced in weight, The legs work simultaneously with the left arm ; that is, they are drawn up as this arm reaches in front, and are at their nearest wide stretch by the time it is in position for the pull; they are then pulled strongly together as the upper arm is performing its strong movement. At no time when the upper arm is being carried forward above the water should the hand be higher than a very few (say about three) inches above the surface. The elbow alone is elevated, and is the highest part of the arm. In fact, the hand is so close to the surface that, on being lifted upward after the delivery of the stroke, the wrist has to be bent; otherwise the fingers would actually touch the water. Once, however, the hand comes opposite the eyes it is straightened in a line with the fore-arm and in this position carried to the dipping point.

Breathing is regu- lated in precisely the same way as when swimming by

means of the side stroke.

Touching and Turning.—The methods of ‘touch and turn” were brought into vogue by the now numerous swimming races in baths. Whether the baths be long or short, from 10 to 15 feet in the push-off is gained at each end of every length by all com- petitors. Assuming that the swimmer is using the side or over- hand stroke and going on the right sidc, the method to be adopted is as follows. When within 3 feet of the end wall of the bath the left or upper hand quits its propelling movement, and reaches in front of the head till it touches the wall just above water-mark, The palm of the hand is then placed horizontally on the wall, the fingers to the right, which is the direction to which one is turning ; the little finger is uppermost and thumb undermost. The knees are bent, and the body, now close to the wall, is turned to the right on its own axis by the left hand, after which the feet press against the wall under the hand. As in diving and plunging, the body, arms, and hands are in a straight line, and the head between the biceps, all under water. The thighs are doubled up under the loins, the calves of the legs touching the back of the thighs, and the soles of the feet pressing hard against the wall. A strong push-off is made by the feet and legs, and the swimmer resumes his ordinary stroke and course for a new length.

Ocean Swimming.—Persons having from any cause to swim in the heavy rolling breakcrs of mid ocean should use the side stroke when available. No attempt should be made to breast or mount the waves. By taking their direction a side-stroke swimmer 1s

carried an unexpectedly long distance. The large dangerous rollers —

come almost in regular succession after an interval of small waves. The swimmer soon notices them, fills his lungs, swims into them, ducking the head, and quickly emerges when the wave has passed. Then a fresh supply of breath is inhaled.

Plunging.—In this the performer enters the water in somewhat the same manner as when diving (see below), but ata flat angle, and from the moment of doing so makes no active muscular movement whatever of any part of the body under water. Plunging came into vogue as the most graceful and practical method of starting I swimming races. From 8 to 5 fcet above the water-level makes the best springing point, whethcr from bank, board, or rock. The knees should be kept together and slightly bent, with the weight on the balls of the feet and the lungs fully charged. The spring forward at the signal to start is given with all muscular power available. A swing of the arms from behind is taken, and, as the feet quit their support, the arms are swung forward so as to rise Up to and straight beyond the head. The body is shot into mid-air as far as possible, and, before touching the water, the head falls between the arms till the chin just touches the chest and the ear grazes the inside of the biceps. The body now glides gracefully and almost noiselessly into the water, with the chest slightly- hollowed, the shoulders contracted, and the arms rigidly braced out straight. The hands are now laid flat and the thumbs locked, while the hips and ankles are kept in one rigid straight linc, with the soles of the feet turncd upward and level with the surface, the toes pointing straight behind. The forward motion from the spring co as long as the body will float and the air in the lungs can be held, when the feet, followed by the arms, begin to sink, and the plunger ends his performance by mercly raising his head. Adepts in this branch have saved" themselves from a sinking vessel by 4 long plunge from the ship's side, and so by one effort have got clear out of the vortex that is caused by her settling down and sinking.

Diving.—The rule in diving, as distinguished from plunging, 1s most explicit. In diving alone are the limbs allowed to ma " muscular movements under water. When properly performed} is a most graceful feat to the eye, and a good swimmer 18, 85 # Tune

o "Ei eed * eee

known by the way in which he enters the water. The height of the end of the board from the surface of the water may be from 3 to 20 feet. If

the water is taken properly a clean dive or header is made, but some swimmers are careless and will flop into the water with the body contracted like a ball, instead of straightened out like anarrow. ‘The descent of good divers into the water varies from 3 to 4 feet, of clumsy performers from 7 to 8 feet. The dive may be a standing or running one. The feet and legs are kept together, with the chest inflated, the arms slightly swung to and fro twice or so, and the body and legs bent towards the water. The lungs are charged, and the dive is made immediately before the arms and hands are raised forward into the air above the bent head. The feet are used with all the power possible in springing off. When in mid air the diver straightens himself out from finger tips to toes. The shoot downwards is made by declining the arms so as to enclose the head, the chest is momentarily contracted, and the water is gracefully and noiselessly entered fingers first. The instant the body is covered, throw up the head and arms so as to reach the surface. The eyes instinctively close as they enter the water ; if it were otherwise, the force with which the surface is struck might cause injury, especially in the case of high diving. _ As soon as the water is entered the eyes should be opened, as | swimming under water with them closed may be attended with danger. The best method for novices is to begin from a board 8 feet high ; and, as confidence and a good style are acquired, the height may be raised 1 or 14 feet at a time. Running headers are accomplished by running 10 or 12 paces before springing off, and the diver endeavours to clear as long a distance as possible before entering the water. Muscles and weight have nothing whatever to do with perfection in diving. Slim youths and heavy middle- aged men and women have alike excelled in this branch of aquatics. The important requisites are courage and strength of nerve, com- bined with experimental knowledge of the behaviour of the body while in air and water. Do not enter the water feet first. This ig only done by those who have not the courage to dive in the proper ; Manner, and it sometimes causes harm to the respiratory organs, while one may lose balance and so come on to the water quite flat and be seriously injured in the stomach, ribs, or spine.

Object Diving.—Some divers move over the bottom in straight lines, and others search on no planatall. The best way is to strike to the right

or left on the circumference of the circle surrounding » the objects and work spirally inwards to the centre of the circle.

If the face be kept close to the bottom and the eyes brought well into use success will reward one's efforts, and no object ought to be missed. For object diving the drawers should have a pocket casily accessible to one hand, in order to receive the objects raised. These are collected by swimming on the breast as quickly as pos- sible. All movements under water ought to be gone about with the utmost alacrity, but at the same time without undue haste or flurry, otherwise the heart's action will be increased, the breath will suffer, and the stay under water will be shortened.

Plate Swimming.—This is a most interesting and enjoyable branch of the art. From a very early period we find references to mechanical appliances as aids to progression and support in the water, these helps generally taking the form of large flat surfaces made of wood, tin, leather, waterproof fabrics, or other similar materials. Sometimes they were flat, in other instances slightly coucave. Some were made banded like the covers of a book, or hinged, others opened and closed with umbrella-like action, while quite a large number were made web-like, to resemble a duck's foot; nearly all were more or less collapsible. From what can be gleaned of the style of these articles it is evident that the inventors cannot have been familiar with the principles of swimming, or aquatic

propulsive action, and so, while a number of the contrivances were undoubtedly the outcome of much thought and ingenuity, they /could not be regarded as in any way improving on the ordinary or primitive swimming movements; and, while greater surface than } is offered by hands and feet was always given, with the evident / intention of reducing "slip," much resistance took place at the neutral or negative part of the stroke. The one good effect in most of these inventions was thus more than nullified by this "drag," ' which, besides being objectionable in itself, had the additional dis- / advantage of bringing into requisition muscles of legs and arms) the development of which was antagonistic to perfection of swim- /™ming. In 1876 Mr R. H.

Wallace-Dunlop, C.B., announced that | he had invented swimming plates which afforded increased speed | without causing undue straining of the muscles; and these claims have been justified by subsequent experience. The arrangements for a lateral movement of the heels in the footboards or plates, f i

with freedom of the ankles, showed at once that Mr Dunlop had fully studied the details of the art of swimming, with the effect of greatly reducing "slip" in the positive and altogether doing away with "drag" in the negative parts of the leg stroke. Slow swimmers, by the use of the new appliances, move quickly and easily through the water, whilst moderately fast swimmers have their speed increased to an almost wonderful extent. To swim 100 yards in 70 seconds without artificial aid is regarded as a good per-

,

he

5

****

SWIMMING

a

formance: there are not halfa dozen living swimmers who can reduce this time by so much as five seconds. Yet about ten years ago a London swimmer, uot by any means the fastest, with the assist- ance of the plates covered the distance of 100 yards in 60 seconds. It will thus be apparent that the invention marks an important advance in the art of swimming. These plates are made of wood —mahogany or American bass,—and are in shape somewhat like an artist's palette, with this difference, that the bay or indenta- tion of the edge runs in to where the thumb-hole would be. The straps are made of leather, and all buckles and metal should be of bronzed or lacquered brass ; the woodwork ought to be kept well polished or varnished. The hand plates are at the

thickest part g of an inch thick, but those for the feet must be much stronger, as the whole weight of the body is upon them while one is standing at or walking to the water'sedge. In learning to use them, let the swimmer begin by lying flat on the water, straightening the arms out about 24 inches apart. Spread the feet and legs well outward ; then so place the feet that the plates shall be vertical, and thus offer the soles as resisting surfaces to the water; close the legs in such a way that the flat parts will meet when the legs come together. The return of the feet to the body is the same as in natural or unaided swimming, #.¢., by bringing them heels first so that the plates are carried up edge ways. Next, turn the ankles so as to allow of the soles facing outward, this being in plate swimming the point from which the positive or propelling part of the stroke actually starts. Now press outward and round until the plates meet as before, and repeat. Practise slowly and steadily until sure that in the recovery there is no drag, and that when spreading apart and closing the resisting surfaces are squared so as to reduce slip to its minimum. The hands are moved as in ordinary swimming, with this difference, that they are all the time lying flat; on their return to the body after the propelling move- ment no motion of wrist is to be made, great care being taken to keep the hand plates perfectly parallel with the surface of the water, as the slightest deviation from this rule, at any one part of the arm stroke, will sink or raise the head and chest, and so alter the natural and correct plane of the whole body. As the plates are lighter than the water the feet will tend to come close to the surface, if not indeed sometimes above it, causing splashing unless care be taken to avoid this. Floating in any position is easy and comfortable with plates on, and diving, sculling, and back swimming are all facilitated. The length of stroke in plate-swimming is nearly double that of ordinary water movements. The recommendations of the invention, especially in sea and long- distance swims, may be summed up in four words—safety, power, endurance, speed.

Long Immersions.—It is on record that on October 6, 1835, Samuel Brock, a Yarmouth fisherman, after being capsized, remained in the water for 74 hours before he was picked up. As a long- distance swimmer in ocean and tidal waters no one has ever approached

Matthew Webb (1848-83), of the British mercantile marine service. His first great feat was plunging (April 23, 1873) off the Cunard 8.8. " Russia" into a heavy sea in the unsuccessful endeavour to save a young sailor who had fallen overboard, when he passed 37 minutes in the sea before the lifeboat relieved him. He received the silver medal from the Royal Humane Society of London, the Stanhope gold medal, and a £100 purse subscribed by the passengers of the "Russia." In June 1874 he swam from Dover to the north-east Varne buoy (94 sea miles). . On July 3, 1875, he went from Blackwall Pier to Gravesend Town Pier on an ebb tide (184 miles) in 4 h. 52 m. 44 s., and on July 19, 1875, from Dover to Ramsgate (15 sea miles) in 87 h. An unsuccessful attempt to swim from Dover to Calais (174 sea miles) in the narrowest part of Dover Straits took place on August 12, 1875. He afterwards successfully accomplished the feat on August 24-25, 1875, after 21 h. 44 m. 55 s. immersion, the distance swum having been as nearly as possible 394 statute miles. A foolhardy attempt to swim the whirlpool rapids of Niagara cost Webb his life on July 24, 1883. On September 15, 1875, F. Cavil swam on the ebb of a strong spring tide from Putney to Blackwall (13 miles 3 furlongs) in 3 hr. 50 m. Miss Agnes Beckwith, of London, on the 17th July 1878, swam 20 miles in the Thames, without any assistance whatever, in 6 hours 25 minutes. Horace Davenport, of London, for years amateur champion of Great Britain, on 2d September 1884, swam from Southsea, Portsmouth, to Ryde, Isle of Wight, and back again in 5h. 25 m. a

Remarkable and Best Swimming Records.—The great majority of these have been achieved in England, but accurate statistics cannot be said to be plentiful. The following are some of the authenti-

cally recorded results.

Best Records in Open and Still Water :—100 yards, 1 m. 53 s.; 220 yards, 2 m. 544s.; 300 yards, 4m. 578 ; 500 yards, 7 m, 58s.; half-mile, 14m. 17} s.; 1000 yards, 15 m, 51} s.; 1 mile, 28 m. 193 s.; 3 miles, 1 h. 53 m. 30s. F

Bath Swimming.—Of the innumerable enclosed swimming baths in Great Britain not many are exactly similar in measurement as regards

length and breadth. The shorter the bath the faster becomes the time test of speed by the aid of each turn, The Lambeth bath, where the greatest number of champion- ship and other celebrated bath races in the kingdom have been decided, is 40 yardslong. The following are the best Lambeth records:—40 yards, 233s; 80

ie

yards, 52} s.; 100 yards, 1 m. 73 s.; 120 yards, 1 m. 28! s.; 160 yards, 2 m. 2 s.; 200 yards, 2 m. 413 s.; 220 yards, 2 m. 59} s.; 400 yards, 5 m. 443 s.; } mile, 6m. 214 s.; 500 yards, 7 m. 194 s.; 600 yards, 8 m. 46} s.; 800 yards, 11 m. 464 s.; ¢ mile (21 turns), 13 m. 3 s.; 1000 yards, 14 m. 56} s.; 1200 yards, 18 m. 55 s.;_# mile, 20 m. 3 s.; 1400 yards, 21 m. 173 s.; 1 mile (43 turns), 27 m. 3}:s. The records of other baths include :— 500 yards, 6 m. 55 s. (Oldham Baths); 100 yards, 1 m. 43 s. (Blackburn Baths); 1 mile, 26 m. 21 s. (Westminster Aquarium) (80 turns).

Longest Time under Water, in Glass Tank.—4 m. 29} s.

Longest Dives.—109 yards 2 feet 6 inches, and 113 yards 1 foot.

Longest Plunges.—\Krom a springboard 5 feet above the level surface of the water, 73 feet 1 inch; from a fixed board, 3 feet 6 inches above the water level, 76 feet 3 inches.

For baths and bathing, see BATHS, vol. iii. p. 434. For drowning and rescuing life, see DRownine, vol. vii. p. 475. There are two societies with headquarters in London which consist of delegates from nearly all the swimming clubs in the metropolis. These have framed rules and regulations for the conduct of clubs, races, and other performances included under "swimming." The Professional Swimming Association was successfully floated by Mr Robert Watson on July 6, 1881. The Amateur Swimming Association was reinaugurated in 1886 by the amalgamation of the Swimming Association of Great Britain and the Amateur Swimming Union. There are annual competitions for the amateur champion- ships at 500 yards, } mile, 1 mile in still water, and 5} milesinthe Thames. There are also the Associated Swimming Clubs

of Glasgow and the Associated Clubs of Dundee, each similar in its objects and composition to the Amateur Swimming Association.

The literature of the subject of swimming is considerable, and the following works may be mentioned. Thevenot, The Art of Swinming, transl. from the French, London, 1789; Swimming, two letters by Benjamin Franklin, Bungay, 1791; Walker's Manly Sports, art. "Swimming," London, 1836; G. H. Cliss, Gymnastics and Swimming, London, 1840; W. H. Leveral, Swimming and Swimmers, London, 1861; S. W. Higgenson, "' Swimming," in The American and Continental Monthly, May 1870; " Piscator,' How to Swim, London, 1si2e Charles Steedman, Manual of Swimming, London, 1873; Leahy, Swimming in the Eton Style, Nottingham, 1875; J. Bell Pettigrew, Animal Locomotion, London, 1874; W. Wilson, Swimming, Diving, and How to Save Life, Glasgow, 1876; Torkington, Swimming Drill, London, 1876; R. H. W. Dunlop, Plate Swimming, London, 1877; Menstery, New Manual of Swimming, New York, 1878; W. Wilson, The Swimming Instructor, 1883; J. H. Walsh, art. " Swiin- ming," British Rural Sports, London, 1886, (H. F. W.—W. WL.)

SWINDON. The towns of Old and New Swindon, in Wiltshire, England, are situated on several railway lines, about 77 miles west of London and 30 east-north-east of Bath. The old town is built on an eminence commanding fine views of the surrounding country. It received a charter for a fair from Charles I, and has weekly markets for corn and cattle. The church was erected in 1851, from the designs of Sir Gilbert Scott. There is a town- hall and a corn exchange. Swindon New Town, to the north from Old Swindon, has grown up since the construc- tion of the Great Western Railway, which has its principal works there. There isa market-house for meat, fish, and vegetables. Connected with the Great Western Railway mechanics' institution there is a library of about 14,000 volumes. The combined areas of Old and New Swindon, which form separate urban sanitary districts, amount to 2524 acres, with a population in 1881 of 22,374. Old Swindon (area 1214 acres) had a population in 1871 of 4092 and in 1881 of 4696, and New Swindon (area 1310 acres) a population in 1881 of 17,678.

SWINE. The oldest known even-toed or Artiodactyle Ungulates (see Mammatta, vol. xv. p. 429) were neither Oxen, Antelopes, Deer, Camels, nor Pigs, but presented a generalized type, which by modification in various direc- tions has given rise to all these very diverse forms. They were mostly of small size, and had invariably the full number of teeth of the typical mammalian heterodont dentition, viz., 44, of which the incisors were 2 on each side, the canines }, the premolars 4, and the true molars 3. The molars were short and square, crowned with blunt, rounded cusps, and the canines were not remarkably developed. All the feet terminated in four toes, the two middle ones (the third and fourth of the complete typical mammalian extremity) of nearly equal size, the outer ones (second and fifth) smaller, and also equal. The five-toed ancestor of these forms has not yet been discovered. They had no special weapons, as horns or antlers, on their foreheads. Such was the condition of all the hitherto dis- covered animals of this division at the commencement of the Tertiary period. Very early a change took place in the characters of the molar teeth in certain members of the group: the rounded tubercles became sharp ridges curved in a crescentic form, and better adapted for a purely herbivorous diet, especially for cutting and bruising the comparatively dry and hard blades of grass which grow

in open plains. The animals thus separated from the rest —the Selenodont (crescent-toothed) Artiodactyles—haye undergone various further modifications of teeth, teet, and other parts, and constitute the diverse forms of ruminat. ing animals mentioned above. Those whose molar teeth retained more of the primitive tuberculated (bunodont) form, were the ancestors of the present family of Swine, some of which, looking upon their organization as a whole, have undergone less change since the Focene period than almost any other mammals.

Remains of very generalized swine-like animals have been abundantly found in Eocene and early Miocene formations both in America and Europe. In the former continent they never (as far as present evidence indicates) underwent any great diversity of modification, but gradu-

ally dwindled away and almost died out, being only repre- sented in the actual fauna by the two closely-allied species of peccary, among the smallest and most insignificant mem- bers of the group, which have existed almost unchanged since the Miocene age at least, if the evidence of teeth alone can be trusted. In the Old World, on the other hand, the swine have played a more important part in recent times, having become widely distributed, and throw- ing off some curiously specialized forms. At the present time, though not very numerous in species, they range through the greater part of the Old World except within or near the Arctic Circle, although, in common with all the other members of the great Ungulate order, they were completely absent from the whole of the Australian region until introduced by man in very recent times.

The existing swine-like animals may be divided natu. rally into three families:—I. Hippopotamide ; II. Suide, or true Pigs ; III. Dicotylidex, or Peccaries.

I, Famity HIpporpotaMIps#.

Muzzle very broad and rounded. Feet short and broad, with four subequal toes, with short rounded hoofs, all reach- ing the ground in walking. Incisors not rooted but con- tinuously growing; those of the upper jaw curved and directed downwards ,; those of the lower straight and pro- cumbent. Canines very large, curved, continuously growing; upper ones directed downwards. Premolars +; molars %. Stomach complex. No cecum.

This appears to be an exclusively Old-World form,—no animals belonging to it, either recent or fossil, having been found in America. The family has been divided into three genera, according to the number of the incisor teeth. (1) Hexaprotodon, incisors 3, a type which comes nearest to the generalized or ancestral form of the group, is now extinct, being only known from the early Pliocene formations of the Sub-Himalayan range. (2) Hippopotamus proper, incisors , contains the one well-known species 1. amphibius, now confined to the rivers and lakes of Africa, but formerly (in the Pliocene period) abundantly distrib- uted, under various minor modifications, in Europe, as far

north as England. Remains of an allied form have been found in the island of Madagascar, where it is now extinct. (3) Choeropsis, incisors reduced to 7, contains one very small and still little known species, from rivers of Liberia, West Africa, C. liberiensis. See H1ippopoTAMUs.

II. Famity Suiw2z.

An elongatea mobile snout, with an expanded, truncated, nearly naked, flat, oval terminal surface in which the nostrils are placed. Feet narrow ,; four completely developed toes m each. LHoofs of the two middle toes with theur contiguous surfaces flattened. The outer (second and fifth) digits not reaching to the ground in the ordinary walking postin Teeth variable in number, owing to the suppression m some forms of an upper incisor and one or more premolars.

Incisors rooted. Upper canines curving more or less outwards or upwards. Stomach simple, except for a more or less de- veloped pouch near the cardiac orifice. A cecum. Colon spirally coiled. Confined to the Old World. Sus.—Dentition: 73, c+, p+, m2; total 44, Upper incisors diminishing rapidly in size from the first to the third. Lower incisors long, narrow, closely approximated, and almost horizontal in posi- tion, their apices inclining towards the middle line; the second slightly larger than the first, the third much smaller.

Fia. 1.—Dentition of Boar (Sus scrofa).

Canines strongly developed and with persistent roots and | partial enamel covering, those of the upper jaw not having

the usual downward direction, but curving strongly out- _ wards,upwards, and finally inwards, while those of the lower _ Jaw are directed upwards and outwards with a gentle back- _ ward curve, their hinder edges working and wearing against

‘) the front edges of the upper canines! They appear ex- of the upper lip

1)

ternally to the mouth as tusks, the form _ being modified to allow of their protrusion, but are much less developed in the females than in the males. The teeth of the molar series gradually increase in size and complexity from first to last, and are arranged in con- tiguous series, except that the first lower premolar is separated by an interval from the second. First and Second upper premolars with compressed crowns and two roots. The third and fourth have an inner lobe developed on the crown, and an additional pair of roots. The first and second true molars have quadrate crowns, with four principal obtuse conical cusps, around which numerous accessory cusps are clustered. The crown of the third molar is nearly as long (antero-posteriorly) as those of the first and second together, having, in addition to the four _ principal lobes, / of numerous clustered conical cusps, and supported by several additional roots. The lower molar teeth resemble | generally those of the upper jaw, but are narrower. Milk dentition: 73, c4, m2; total 28,— the first permanent premolar having no predecessor in this series. The third incisor, in both upper and lower jaw, is large, developed before the others, and has much the size, form, and direction of the canine. Vertebre: C 7, D 13-14, L 6, S 4, C 20-24. The hairy covering of the body varies ‘ much under different conditions of climate, but when best | developed, as in the European wild boar, consists of long stiff bristles, mostly abundant on the back and sides, and

of a close softer curling under-coat. ee

‘ If from any accidental circumstances these teeth are not con- | stantly worn down by friction, they grow into a complete circle, the ‘ Point penetrating the bone of the jaw close to the root of the tooth.) The natives of the Fiji Islands avail themselves of this circumstance to | produce one of their most valued ornaments—a circular boar’s tusk :

the upper canines being extracted, the lower ones are allowed to grow) to the desired form.

a large posterior talon or heel, composed |

SWINE

This genus occurs at present under three principal modifications or subgenera.

A. Sus proper comprises a number of animals found in a wild state throughout the greater part of Europe (except where exterminated by human agency), the north of Africa, southern continental Asia, and the great islands of the Malayan archipelago, Formosa, and J apan. The following among others have been admitted by zoologists as distinct species :—Sus scrofa, the wild boar of Europe, Asia Minor, and North Africa, once common throughout the British Isles ; S. sennaarensis, North-East Africa; S. cristatus, Hin- dustan; S. vittatus, Java, Borneo, Amboyna, Batchian; S. barbatus, Borneo; S. papuensis, New Guinea; 8. timorensis, Timor and Rotti; S. andamanensis, Andaman Islands > &, celebensis, Celebes; S. tatvanus, Formosa ; S. leucomystax, Japan; S. verrucosus, Java, Borneo, Ceram. This list will give some idea of the geographical distribution of wild pigs, but it must be borne in mind that through the whole of this region, and in fact now throughout the greater part of the habitable world, pigs are kept by man in a domesticated state, and it is still an open question whether some of the wild pigs of the islands named above may not be local races derived originally from imported domestic specimens. In New Zealand a wild or rather "feral" race is already established, the origin of which is of course quite recent, as it is well ascertained that no animal of the kind ever lived upon the island until after its settlement by Europeans. Whether the various breeds of domestic pigs have been derived from one or several sources is still unknown. As in so many similar cases there is no historic evidence upon the subject, and the researches of naturalists, as Nathusius, Rutimeyer, Rolleston, and others, who have endeavoured to settle the question on anatomical evidence, have not led to satisfactory con- clusions. It is, however, tolerably certain that all the species or forms of wild pigs enumerated above and all the domestic races are closely allied, and it is probable (though of this there has been no opportunity of proof)

—— —= —— Fig. 2.—Wild Boar and Young.

will breed freely together. It is a curious circumstance that the young of all the wild kinds of pigs (as far as is known at present) present a uniform coloration, being dark brown with longitudinal stripes of a paler colour, a character which completely disappears after the first few months. On the other hand, this peculiar marking is rarely seen in domestic pigs in any part of the world, although it has been occasionally observed. It is stated by Darwin that the pigs which have run wild in Jamaica

and the semiferal pigs of New Granada have resumed this aboriginal character, and produce longitudinally striped young; these must of course be the descendants of do- mestic animals introduced from Europe since the Spanish conquest, as before that time there were no true pigs in the New World. Another character by which the Euro- pean domestic pig differs from any of the wild species is the concave outline of the frontal region of the skull, a form still retained by the feral pigs in New Zealand.!

B. The diminutive pig of Nepal, the Terai, and Bhutan, Sus salvanius, has been separated from the rest by Hodgson under the generic name of Porcula, but all the alleged distinctive characters prove on more careful investigation to have little real value. Owing to its retired habits, and power of concealment under bushes and long grass in the depths of the great Saul Forest, which is its principal home, very little has been known of this curious little animal, scarcely larger than a hare. The recent acquisition of living specimens in the London Zoological Gardens has, however, afforded opportunities for careful anatomical observation.?

C. Two well-marked species of African swine have been with more reason separated under the name of Potamocherus. The dentition differs from that of true Sus, inasmuch as the anterior premolars have a tendency to disappear; sometimes in adult specimens the first upper premolar is retained, but it is usually absent, as well as the first and often the second lower premolars. The molar teeth are also less complex ; the last especially has a much less developed heel. There are

also characteristic cranial differences. The two species are very distinct in outward appearance and coloration. One is P. africanus, the South African River-Hog, or Bosch-Vark, of a grey colour, and the other P. poreus or penicillatus, the West African Red River-Hog, remarkable for its vivid colouring and long pencilled ears. It should be noted that the young of both these species, as well as of the pigmy S. salvanius, present the striped character of true Sus, a strong indication of close affinities, whereas in all the following forms this is absent.

Babirussa.—Dentition: «2, c+, p 2, m3; total 34. The total number of teeth is therefore considerably reduced, the outer upper incisor and the two anterior premolars of both jaws being absent. The molars, especially the last, are smaller and simpler than in Sus, but the great peculiarity of this genus is the extraordinary development of the canines of the male. These teeth are ever-growing, long, slender, and curved, and entirely without enamel covering. Those of the upper jaw are directed upwards from their base, so that they never enter the mouth, but pierce the skin of the face, resembling horns rather than teeth, and curve backwards, downwards, and finally often forwards again, almost or quite touching the skin of the forehead. There is but one species, B. alfurus, found only in the islands of Celebes and Buru. Its external surface is almost entirely devoid of hair. With regard to the curiously modified dentition, Wallace (Malay Archipelago, i. p. 435) makes the following observations. "It is difficult to understand what can be the use of these horn-like teeth. Some of the old writers supposed that they served as hooks by which the creature could rest its head on a branch.

1 The breeding of pigs has of late years been practised with more care and skill than formerly, especially in the United States, where the "hog product " ranks with wheat and cotton as one of the leading agricultural exports. Several volumes have been published of the pedigrees of two breeds—the Berkshire and the Poland-China. The official estimate of the number of swine in the United States in 1886 is 46,000,000, and about the same number is assigned unofficially to Europe, where Servia takes the lead in proportion to population and Norway stands lowest. :

® See Garson, Proc. Zool. Soc. Lond., 1883, p, 413.

SWINE

But the way in which they usually diverge just over and in front of the eye has suggested the more probable idea, that they serve to guard these organs from thorns and spines while hunting for fallen fruits among the tangled thickets of rattans and other spiny plants. Even this, however, is not satisfactory, for the female, who must seek her food in the same way, does not possess them,

Fic. 3.—Head of Babirussa,

I should be inclined to believe rather that these tusks were once useful, and were then worn down as fast as they grew, but that changed conditions of life have rendered them unnecessary, and they now develop into a monstrous form, just as the incisors of the beaver and rabbit will go on growing if the opposite teeth do not wear them away. In old animals they reach an enormous size, and are generally broken off as if by fighting.”

Phacocherus.—The Wart-Hogs, so called from the large —

cutaneous lobes projecting from each side of the face, have the teeth still more remarkably modified than in Babirussa. The milk dentition, and even the early con- dition of the permanent dentition, is formed on the same general type as that of Sus, except that certain of the typical teeth are absent, the formula being 74, ci, p8, m3, total 34; but as age advances all the teeth have a tendency to disappear, except the canines and the posterior molars, but these, which in some cases are the only teeth left in the jaws, attain an extraordinary development. The upper canines especially are of great size, and curve outwards, forwards, and upwards. Their enamel covering is confined to the apex, and soon wears away. The lower canines are much more slender, but follow the same curve ; except on the posterior surface, their crowns are covered with enamel. Unlike those of the babirussa, the canines of the wart-hog are large in both sexes. The third molar tooth of both jaws is of great size, and pre- sents a structure at first sight unlike that of any other

mammal, being composed of numerous (22-25) parallel cylinders or columns, each with pulp cavity, dentine, and enamel covering, and packed together with cement. Care- ful examination will, however, show that a similar modi- fication to that which has transformed the comparatively simple molar tooth of the mastodon into the extremely complex grinder of the Indian elephant has served to change the tooth of the common pig into that of Phaco- cheerus. The tubercles which cluster over the surface of the crown of the common pig are elongated and drawn out into the columns of the wart-hog, as the low trans verse ridges of the mastodon's tooth become the leaf-like plates of the elephant's.

Two species of this genus are distinguished :—P. africanus, Ailian's Wart-Hog, widely distributed over the continent ; and P. ethiogicus, Pallas's Wart-Hog, confined to south-eastern Africa. In the latter species the dentition

Ss WI—-SWI

reaches its most complete reduction, as in adult specimens the upper incisors are absent and the lower ones worn down to the roots.

IIT. Famiry Dicotyiipz.

Snout as in Suide. Dentition: i 2,c4, p 8,m8; total

38. Incisors rooted ; upper canines directed downwards, with sharp cutting hinder edges. Toes, four on the fore feet and three on the hind feet (the fifth wanting). Stomach complex. A cecum. Conjined to the New World.

There is one genus, Dicotyles, with two species, D. tagagu, the Collared Peccary, and D. labiatus, the White- Lipped Peccary. See Peccary. (Ww. H. F.)

SWINEMUNDE, a Baltic port and bathing-place on the island of Usedom in Pomerania, Prussia, is situated at the mouth of the Swine, 35 miles to the north-west of Stettin. Its broad unpaved streets and one-

story houses built in the Dutch style give it an almost rustic appearance, although its industries, beyond some fishing, are entirely connected with its shipping. The entrance to the harbour, one of the best on the Prussian Baltic coast, is protected by two long breakwaters, and is strongly fortified. Swinemiinde lighthouse, 216 feet high, the loftiest in Germany, rises beside the new docks on the island of Wollin, on the other side of the narrow Swine. Ships drawing not more than 16 feet can proceed to Stettin, but those of heavier burden discharge or lighten at Swinemtinde, which thus stands in the relation of a fore-port to the larger city, with which it is connected by railway. Exclusive of merely passing ships, 615 vessels with a burden of 189,491 tons entered and 607 vessels

with a burden of 179,336 tons cleared the port in 1880. In 1882 it possessed a fleet of 39 vessels with a burden of 5218 tons. The population in 1880 was 8478.

The Swine, the central and shortest passage between the Stettiner

| Haff and the Baltic Sea, was formerly flanked by the fishing villages of West and East Swine. Towards the beginning of last century it was made navigable for large ships, and Swinemiinde, which was founded on the site of West Swine in 1748, was fortified and raised to the dignity of a town by Frederick the Great in 1765. _ In 1775 it had 1000 inhabitants, in 1816 3191. – SWINTON, a town in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated at the junction of the Dearne and Dove navigation with the river Don navigation, and of the South Yorkshire and Midland railway lines, 9 miles north-east of Sheffield and 8 south-west of Doncaster. In the church of St Margaret (rebuilt in 1817) two beautiful Norman arches of the old church are preserved. There are collieries, quarries, and brickfields in the neighbourhood. A large number of persons are employed in the South Yorkshire Railway establishment for the repairing of engines and waggons. There are also flint and glass-bottle | works, iron-works (for stoves, grates, fenders, and kitchen ‘ ranges), and earthenware manufactures. The town was formerly renowned for its Rockingham ware, but the manufacture has been discontinued for some years. A free warren was granted to

Swinton by Henry IT. King John, on his march from York to Boston, slept at Swinton old hall. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1700 acres) in 1871 was 5150, and in 1881 it was 7612.

SWINTON, a large village of Lancashire, is situated on | Several railway lines, 5 miles north-west of Manchester and 6 south-east of Bolton. The Swinton industrial schools, | Opened in February 1846, are a fine range of buildings of _ brick with stone facings, surrounded with grounds extend- ing to 20 acres. The church of St Peter, a fine building _ of stone with a lofty western tower, was erected from the designs of Sir Gilbert Scott in 1869. The manufacture of cotton and coal mining are the chief industries. _ Anciently a large part of Swinton was possessed by the Knights Hospitallers of St John of Jerusalem. Swinton

T75

and Pendlebury form an urban sanitary district (area 2166 acres) under the government of a local board of twelve members ; its population, estimated at 14,052 for LS71, amounted in 1881 to 18,107.

SWITHUN, Sz, bishop of Winchester from 852 to 862. The name of St Swithun, patron saint of Winchester cathedral from the 10th to the 16th century, is scarcely to be found in any contemporary document. His death is entered in the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle under the year 861 ; and his signature is appended to several charters in Kemble's Codex Diplomaticus. Of these charters three belong to 833, 838, and some year between 860 and 862. In the first the saint signs as "Swithunus presbyter regis Egberti," in the second as " Swithunus diaconus," and in the third as "Swithunus episcopus." Hence if the second charter be genuine the first must be spurious, and is so marked in Kemble.

More than a hundred years later, when Dunstan and Ethelwold of Wiuchester were inaugurating their church reform and sup- planting the secular canons of the degenerate English founda- tions by monks, St Swithun was adopted as patron of the restored church at Winchester, formerly dedicated to St Peter and St Paul. His body was taken up from its almost forgotten grave outside the old monastery and transplanted to Ethelwold's new basilica on 15th July 971. Numerous

miracles preceded and followed this transla- tion. “We have seen,” saysone contemporary writer, “the precincts of the monastery so thronged with crowds of ailing folk that a traveller could scarcely make his way to the shrine ; and yet, after some days, so numerous were the cures that even within the church itself there were scarcely five sick people to be seen.” Another writer, likewise a contemporary, claims to the saint’s credit two hundred cures in the short space of ten days.

The revival of St Swithun’s fame gave rise to a mass of legendary literature, from which it can only be deduced that towards the end of the 10th century very little was known concerning his career. The so-called Vit# Swithuni of Lantfred and Wulstan, written about this time, hardly contain the very smallest kernel of bio- graphical fact; and all that has in later years passed for authentic detail of St Swithun’s life is extracted from a biography, ascribed with much probability to Gotzelin, a monk who came over to Eng- land with Hermann, bishop of Salisbury from 1058 to 1078. From this writer, who has perhaps preserved some fragments of genuine tradition, we learn that St Swithun was born in the reign of Egbert, and was ordained priest by Helmstan, bishop of Winchester (838-c. 852). His fame reached the king’s ears, who appointed him tutor of his son Adulphus (Ethelwulf) and numbered him amongst his chief friends. Under Ethelwulf he was appointed bishop of Winchester, to which see he was consecrated by Archbishop Ceolnoth. In his new office he was remarkable for his piety and his zeal in building new churches or restoring old ones. At hisrequest Ethelwulf gave the tenth of his royal lands to the church. His humility was such that he made his diocesan journeys on foot ; and when he gave a banquet he invited the poor and not the rich. He built near the eastern gate of his cathedral city a bridge whose stone arches were so strongly constructed that in Gotzelin’s time they seemed a work “non leviter ruiturus.” He died 2d July 862, and gave orders that he was not to be buried within the church but outside in “a vile and unworthy place.”

William of Malmesbury adds that, as Bishop Alhstan of Sherborne was Ethelwulf’s minister for temporal, so St Swithun was for spiritual matters. The same chronicler uses a remarkable phrase in recording

the bishop's prayer that his burial might be "ubi et pedibus preetereuntium et stillicidiis ex alto rorantibus esset obnoxius." This expression has been taken as indicating that the well-known weather myth coutained in the doggrel lines—

St Swithin's day if thou dost rain

For forty days it will remain;

St Swithin's day if thou be fair

For forty days 'twill rain na mair— had already, in the 12th century, crystallized round the name of St Swithun ; but it is doubtful if the passage lends itself by any straining to this interpretation. Mr Raine has suggested that the legend is derived from the tremeudons downpour of rain that occurred, according to the Durham chroniclers, on St Swithun's day, 13815 (Hist. Dunelm., pp. xiii. 96-7). Another theory, more plausible, but historically worthless, traces it to a heavy shower by which, on the day of his translation, the saint marked his displeasure towards those who were removing his remains. This story, however, cannot be traced farther back than some two or three centurics at the outside, and is at variance with the 10th- century writers, who are all agreed that the translation took place in accordance with the saint's desire as expressed by vision. More probable is Mr Earle's suggestion that in the legend as now current

General configu- ration.

Area,

T716

we have the survival of some pagan or possibly prehistoric day of augury, which has sheltered itself and preserved its vitality under the protection of an ccclesiastical saint. This view is supported by the fact adduced in Notes and Queries (1st ser., xii. p. 187) that in France St Médard (June 8) and St Gervase and St Protais (June 19) are accredited with an influence on the weather almost identical with that

attributed to St Swithun in England. Mr Parker pro- fesses to detect a shower of rain as the symbol of St Swithun in the clog almanacs (of Queen Elizabcth's time), but Mr Earle doubts the resemblance. Of other stories connected with St Swithun the two most famous are those of the Winchester egg- woman and Queen Emma's ordeal. The former is be found in Gotzelin's life (c. 1100), the latter in Rudborne's Historia Major

SWwi—s wi

(15th century),—a work which is also responsible for the not improbable legend that this prelate accompanied Alfred on his visit to Rome in 856.

The so-called lives of St Swithun written by Wulstan, Lantfred, and perhaps others towards the end of the 10th century may be found in Bollandus's Actq Sanctorum (July), i, 821-827 ; Mabillon's Acta SS. O. B., vi. 70, &c., vii. 628, &c.; and Earle's Life and Times of St Swithun, 59, &c. See also William of Malmesbury, Gest. Reg., i. 150, and De Gest. Pont., 160, 167, 179; Florence of Worcester, i, 168; Rudborne ap. Wharton's Anglia Sacra, i. 287; Hardy's Cat, of MSS., i. 513-17; Brand's Popular Antiquities; Chambers's Book of Days, Ethelwulf's Tithe Charters, nearly all of which refer to St Swithun in the body of the text, may be studied in Haddon and Stubbs's Councils, iii. 636-45; a com- parison of the charter on page 642 with Gotzelin's life (ap. Earle, 69) and William of Malmesbury (Gest. Reg., 150; De Gest. Pont., 160) seems to show that these charters, even if forgeries, date back at least to the 11th century, as well as the story of his being Ethelwulf's " altor et ductor."

SWITZERLAND

Part I.—GEoGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

8 the Swiss Confederation consists of a number of small districts, differing from each other in many points, but gathered round a common centre, originally for common defence against a common foe, it is not surprising that its political boundaries do not coincide with

those of nature. So we find that Ticino is south of the main chain of the Alps, a large part of the Grisons is east of the Rhine and of the ranges separating it from Tyrol, while Schaffhausen is north of the Rhine, and Porrentruy is in the French plain far down the western slope of the Jura. Putting aside these exceptional cases (all of them outside the original limits of the Confederation), the physical geography of Switzerland may be thus roughly summed up :—

(1) To the south there is the main chain of the Alps, which is joined at Mont Dolent (12,566 feet) by the lower ranges running east from the east end of the Lake of Geneva, and which continues to be the boundary up to the Stelvio Pass.

(2) To the north of this main chain of the Alps there is another great range, only slightly inferior in height and extent, which starts from the hills known as the Mont Jorat above Lausanne, rises in the great peaks of the Bernese Oberland and in the Tédi, trends to the north near Chur, and, after rising once more to form the Santis, dies away on the south shore of the Lake of Constance.

(3) The main chain of the Alps and this great north outlicr are parallel to each other fron1 Mont Dolent to near Chur; joined for a short space near the Pizzo Rotondo (west of the St Gotthard), they again part near the Oberalp Pass (east of the St Gotthard). Between these two great ranges flow two of the mightiest European rivers, the Rhine towards the east and the Rhone towards the west, their head waters being separated only by the tangled mountain mass betwecn the Pizzo Rotondo and the Oberalp Pass.

(4) To the north of the great north outlier of the main chain of the Alps there aro what may be called the plains of Switzerland, really the huge undulating valley of the Aar (and its affluents), to which must be added the Thur valley between the Aar basin and the Lake of Constance.

Thus, omitting the special cases named above, we may roughly describe Switzerland as consisting of two great trenches traversed by two great rivers, and enclosed by two huge mountain masses, together with the enormous valley of the Aar and the smaller one of the Thur, both these

shut in by the great north outlier of the main chain of the Alps, the Rhine, and the Jura,—two deeply cut trenches, and two wide and undulating valleys.

The main chain of the Alps rises in Swiss territory to the height of 15,217 feet in Monte Rosa, and its north outlier to 14,026 feet in the Finsteraarhorn. The mean level of the Aar valley has been estimated at 1378 feet, its lowest point being the low-water mark of the Rhine at Basel (914 feet); the lowest level within the Confedera- tion, however, is on the Lago Maggiore (646 feet).

According to the most recent calculations, the total area of the Confederation is 15,964°2 square miles, of which 71:7 per cent., or 11,443°3 square miles, are classed as "productive," 3032 square miles being covered by forests, and 132°3 square miles by vines. Of the other 28°3 per cent., or 4520°9 square miles (classed as " unproductive "),

709-9 are occupied by glaciers, 520°3 by lakes, 90 by beds of rivers and streams, and 62°4 by towns, villages, and buildings. Of the whole area the three great cantons of the Grisons, Bern, and Valais take up 7439-9 square miles, or nearly one-half, while, if to them be added Vand, Ticino, and St Gall, the extent is raised to 10,552 square miles, or about two-thirds of the entire Confederation.

The total area of Switzerland (15,964°2 square miles) is Rivers

distributed over four great river basins (draining to three different seas) in the following proportions :—Rhine 11,166; Rhone, 2717 ; Po, 1358; and Inn, 721.

The Rhine basin is by far the largest in Switzerland, and drains of course to the North Sea. The Rhine itself is formed of two branches,—Vorder Rhine (valley of Dissentis) aud Hinter Rhine (from the Splugen and St Bernardino),—which unite at Reichenau, near Chur. The joint stream receives several mountain torrents, expands into the Lake of Constance, and then turns west, receiv- ing the Thur, and opposite Waldshut the great stream of the Aar, finally leaving Swiss territory at Basel, where it turns north. Its main affluent is the Aar, the basin of

which covers no less than 6794 square miles. This stream rises in the glaciers of the Ber- nese Oberland, expands into the Lakes of Brienz and of Thun, receives from the left the Kander, the Saane, and the Zihl, and from the right the Emme, as well as (near Brugg, that great meeting-place of the waters) the Reuss flowing through the Lake of Lucerne and the united stream of the Linth and the Limmat flowing through the Lakes of Wallenstadt and Zurich. It is interesting historically to note the fact that the thirteen cantons which till 1798 formed the Confederation are all comprised in the Rhine basin, the ten oldest (i.¢., all before 1500) being within that of the Aar, and that it was only after 1798 that certain Romansch-, Freneh-, and Italian-speaking "allies " and subject lands—with their respective river basins—were tacked on. The Rhone rises in the glacier of the same name and flows west, receiving the mountain torrents of the Visp, the Lonza, and the Dranse, besides others, expands into the Lake of Geneva, and a little way from Geneva quits Swiss terrl- tory on its way to the Mediterranean. The main stream flowing from Switzerland to the Po basin is the Ticino (from the St Gotthard), which widens into the Lago Maggiore; another stream expands into the Lake of Lugano; and others run into the Lake of Como,—all finally joining the Po in the Lombard plains, thus draining to the Adriatic. The Ramm, flowing through the Munster- thal, joins the Adige and so drains into the Adriatic. The Znm basi is composed of the upper part of the river (above Martinsbruck) and drains into the Danube and so into the Black Sea. _

Most of the great Swiss rivers, being in their origin mere moun- tain torrents, tend to overflow their banks, and hence much 1s required and has been done to prevent this by embanking them, and regaining arable land from them. So the Rhine (between Ragatz and the Lake of Constance), the Rhone, the Aar, the Reuss; and in particular we may mention the great work on the Linth (1807 to 1822) carried out by J. Konrad Escher, who earned by his success the surname of " Von der Linth," and on the Zihl near the Lakes of Neuchatel and Bienne, while the diversion of a Kander from its junction with the Aar at Uetendorf to a channe by which it flows into the Lake of Thun was effected as early 2s 1714}

There are very many lakes in Switzerland. The (Geneva and Constance) balance each other at the south-west an north-east corners of the Confederation. The following list Sai details regarding the fiftecn over 4 square miles in extent. It wi : be noticed that of these twelve are in the Rhine basin (eleven 0

ally a series of e of all the im-

1 The hydrographic bureau of Switzerland publishes annu graphic tables representing the seasonal changes in the volum portant rivers,

two largest Lakes.

ewWwIiIPTZES: AW Pp

them being in that of the Aar), two in the Po basin, one in the Rhone basin, and noue at all] in the Inn basin. It has been esti. mated that in the Rhine basin there are no fewer than nineteen large and thirty-seven smal] lakes. Of the smaller Swiss lakes we may mention the Dauben See, and the Oeschinen See, as well as the Marjelen See close to the Gross Aletsch glacier, There are of course an infinite number of Alpine tarns.

ea in | Mean HWeight| . Name of Lake. River Basin. suene of Surface or Miles, |_ above Sea Feet, Level in Feet. Geneva™..... Rhone. 223 1230°3 984°3 Constance*..! Rhine. 208°1 | 13805°8 905-5 Neuchatel …| Aar, Rhine. OPE on) lee 7a 472°4 Maggiore* ...| Ticino, Po. S257 646°3 1230°3 Jmecerne …... Reuss, Aar, Rhine. | 438°7| 1433-7 2 858 UTC. 0. ss Limmat, Aar, Rhine.) 33-8! 1341-9 469°1 Lugano”..... Po. 19-4; 889°] 902-2 sR… .. Aar, Rhine. WSs) USS yes) 711°9 Bienne ., Aar, Rhine. 162} 1423-9 2559 ZUg…....| Reuss, Aar, Rhine. | 14:8] 1368-1 1321-4 IBIENZ..... Aar, Rhine. 11°5| 1851 856°4 Ghat… ..... Aar, Rhine. NOESY) 1427-2 Spal i allenstadt. { ae Hucmat, \) s-9| 1304-4 | «. 500 Sempach….. | Aar, Rhine. yf! W654 |?..... Hallwyl…... Aar, Rhine. 4 1483 ?1522°8

The lakes marked * are only partly in Swiss territory. tet «=. There area great number of waterfalls in Switzerland, the loftiest % being

that of the Staubbach (1001 feet), in the valley of Lauter- brunnen, or "Olear Springs" (Bernese Oberland). In the Ober- land, too, we find the Handeek (200-220 feet), near the source of the Aar, while the Reichenbach descends in seven falls and the Giessbach in thirteen. The falls of the Rhine at Schaffhausen contain an enormous mass of water, though they are only 82 feet in height. In southern Switzerland the Pissevache fall (200 feet), in the Rhone valley, is the best known. . DrA. Heim! reckons up 471 glaeiers in Switzerland and 462 in Austria, his figures for France and Italy being untrustworthy and incomplete; but Switzerland has 188 glaciers of the first rank (i.¢., over 43 miles long) as against 71 in Austria, though Austria _ has 891 of the seeond rank (i. ¢., between 43 and 3 miles long) as against 333 in Switzerland. The distribution of the Swiss glaciers deserves notice, for in eleven eantons (that is, half of those in the Confederation) there are no glaciers at all, while in five others (Unterwalden, Vaud, St Gall, Sehwyz, and Appenzell) they only cover about 13 square miles out of 709-9 square miles of ice and snow in the Confederation, according to the official survey. Valais heads the list with 375-1 square miles, then come the Grisons (138°6), Bern (111°3), Uri (44°3), Glarus (13°9), and Ticino (18'1). The longest glacier in the Alps is the Gross Aletsch in the Bernese Oberland, 15 miles long; it has a basin of 49°8 square miles and a maximum breadth of 1968 yards. In point of length the Unteraar glacier comes next (10°4 miles), followed by the Gorner and Viescher glaciers (each 9-4 miles), The lowest point to which a Swiss glacier is known to have descended is 3225 feet, attained by the Lower Grindelwald glacier in 1818. Dr Heim has ascertained that the maximum annual snowfall in the Alps takes place in the lower snow regions, a eonclusion which the present writer ean confirm from personal experience gained on the ascent of several of the highest Oberland peaks in J anuary 1874 and 1879. Dr Heim states that in the central Alps of Switzerland the limit of | perpetual snow varies from 9259 to 9023 feet, See GLACIER. In Switzerland, where the height above sea-level varies from 646 _ feet (Lago Maggiore) to 15,217 feet (Monte Rosa), we naturally find | very many elimates, from the regions of olives, vines, oaks and beeches, pines and firs, to those of high mountain pastures, thododendrons, and of eternal snow (see ALPS). AS regards the duration of the seasons, there is a eorresponding variety. It

has been reckoned that, while in Italian Switzerland winter lasts only three months, at Glarus it lasts four, in the Engadine six, ou the St Gotthard eight, on the Great St Bernard nine, and on the St Théodule always. A painstaking writer has calculated that, if Switzerland were flattened out into a plain, and reduced to the) level of the sea, it would be eomprised between the isotherms | 51°°8 and 55°°4 F. As a matter of fact the mean temperature | varies no less than 344°, for at Bellinzona it is 544° F., at Geneva | 497°, at Basel 493°, at Chur 483°, at Interlaken 48°, while on the Great St Bernard it sinks to 30°, and on the St Théodule to 20°. The Alps form the boundary between the region where the rain- fall is greatest in summer and that where it is greatest in autumn, the winter and spring rainfall varying but slightly. These are | the percentages of the annual rainfall in Switzerland at different scasons :—

1 Tn his epoch-making work, [Jandbuch der Gletscherkunde, Stuttgart, 1885.

TCE

thine Basin: winter, 18; spring, 25; summer, 38; autumn, 24. Rhone Basin: „ 21; „ 6; 39 26; ” 27. Ticino Basin: „ 12; 4, 26; ee Ais a6 35.

It has been shown by careful observations that the rain (or show) fall is greatest as we approach the Alps, whether from the north or south, the flanks of the great ranges and the valleys opening out towards the plains receiving mueh more rain than the high Alpine valleys enclosed on all sides by lofty ridges. Thus the annual rainfall is 85 inches at Basel but 64% at Beatenberg (above Inter- laken) and 69 at Schwyz, rising to 88 on the Grimsel and 102 on the St Bernardino, and falling again at Lugano to 63. Dr Heim ealculates that the percentage of snow in the total annual rainfall in Switzerland varies from 63 on the Great St Bernard to 6 at Geneva, the mean fall of 34 being at Platta in the Grisons. Thunderstorms generally vary in frequency with the amount of rainfall, being most common near the great ranges, and often very local. The floods eaused by excessive rainfall are sometimes very destructive, as in 1839, 1852, and 1868, while the same cause leads to

landslips, of which the most remarkable have been those on the Rossberg above Goldau (1806), at Evionnaz (1835), and at Elm (1881).

As regards the larger eyclones or storms of Europe, a south wind in the Alps indicates that the barometrical minimum is in the English Channel, a west wind that it is in the North Sea, a north wind that it isin the Eastern Alps, and an east wind that the depression is in the Mediterranean, about Corsica. When the baro- metrical minimum shifts from the Atlantie over Scandinavia to Russia, a south-west wind in the Alps is followed by west and then north winds. The "fohn" is the most remarkable of the local winds in Switzerland,—a strong south-west or south wind, very hot and very dry. It was formerly supposed to eome from the Sahara, but is now held to be a south-west or south wind which, saturated with moisture, crosses the Alps, precipitating a copious rainfall in its eourse; commencing its descent in the northern valleys with a high temperature for these great heights, it neces-

| sarily increases in temperature and dryness as it passes into the

high pressure of lower levels. Dr Hann coneludes from observa- tion that, assuming the air to cool at the rate of 1° O. in every 100 metres of ascent, and the ridge erossed by the féhn to be 2000 metres in height, the heat lost on the ascent is only 0°5 C., so that when the fohn reaches the north side it will have a heat, not of 10°, but of 20°. The fohn occurs most frequently in spring. Other local winds in the Alps are those whieh blow up a valley in the morning and down it in the evening, due to the heating of the air in the valleys by the sun during the day and its cooling by terrestrial radiation at night. The eloud streamers from great Alpine peaks are due to the condensing of the moisture in a layer of air, and, as the moisture is carried away by the wind, so the streamer is dissolved.

For all these reasons Switzerland has many varieties of climate; and, while, owing to the distribution of the rainfall, the Ticino and Aar valleys are very fertile, the two great trenches between the main chain and its north outlier, though warm, are less pro- ductive, as the water comes from the rivers and not from the skies.

Asphalt is the only raw mineral produet the export of which Mineral exeeeds the import; and it is obtained only in the canton of products,

Neuchatel, where the output of the Val de Travers deposit in 1883 reached 28,000 tons. Though iron ores are known (aecording to Weber and Brosi's map) to exist in 13 localities, gold in 3, silver in 22, copper in 29, lead in 27, nickel and cobalt in 2, tin in 1, sulphur in 3, Switzerland is practically dependent for all its metals on foreign supply. While 35,161 tons of iron were obtained in 1870 (mostly from mines in the Jura), only 19,045 were obtained in 1881. True coal is wholly absent; lignites, however, occur both in the Tertiary and the Quaternary formations, the most important workings being those of Kipfnaeh, Utznach, Mérschwyl, Diirnten, Lutry, Conversion, and Oron. In 1870 the output was 33,364 tons, in 1881 only 6184. Anthracite occurs in Valais. Peat is eommon in many parts. Salt (42,000 tons) is proeured from wells in Aargau, Basel, and Vaud. The first salt-deposit was discovered in 1886 at Rothenhaus (Basel canton), that of Rheinfelden in 1844, of Ryburg in 1845, and of Kaiseraugst in 1865. The wells at Bex have been worked since 1554.2

Game is not abundant in any part of Switzerland; and rigorous Game,

game laws and other devices have been adopted in order to increase the number of wild animals. In 1875 a law was passed in aceord- ance with which a eommission marked out certain reservations or 'districts franes pour la chasse au gibier de montagne"; and in 1881 their limits were revised for another term of five years, in- eluding an area of 5268 square kilometres in 1885. There were then within this area 8487 chamois and about 106 roebuck. The chamois were most abundant in the Grisons, Bern, Glarus, and Freiburg. In the Alpine regions the marmot and Alpine hare are still common, and their numbers have incrcased under the pro- tective system. Grouse, partridge, wild duek, and snipe are the

2 See Stockalper, Rapport sur le groupe 16 Produtis Bruts Exp. Nat. 8. & Zurich, 1883, and Hermann Streng, " Rohprodukte u. deren Fundorte in der Schweiz," in Zeitsch. f. schweiz. Statistik, 1884.

XXIT. — 98

Fisheries.

Census returns.

Density of popu- lation.

778 SP WIiT2 SE

chief game birds. A close time protects birds not considered game, and the federal council in 1885 appointed a commission to

RLAND

one-third of the expense of the construction of fish-ladders, Tp

4

1882 a Swiss fisheries society was founded. Conventions in regard draw up a catalogue of all birds found in Switzerland, and to | to the fisheries have been signed with Italy, France, and Germany, establish stations for collecting facts of ornithological interest. Great importance attaches to the domestic animals of Switzer. (See

Attention has recently been directed to the diminution of the | land. In 1876 there were 284,478 owners of live-stock, in 1886 oi supply of freshwater fish, due in part to over-fishing and in part | 289,610. The following are the numbers for those two years: to pollution of the streams. It is estimated that the fish-bcaring | horses, 100,935 and 98,333; cattle, 1,035,930, 1,211,713; sheep waters in the whole country cover an aggregate area of 1581 square 367,549, 341,632; goats, 396,055, 415,916; pigs, 334,515, 394 451. kilometres (1348 belonging to lakes and 233 to rivers and streams), | mules, 3145, 2741 ; asses, 2113, 2042; and beelives, 177,895, the cantons with the greatest areas being Vaud (448 square kilo- | 207,180. See Z. J. schw. Statistik, 1886. ; metres), Bern (161), Thurgau (139), and Neuchatel (98). Close The following table gives a variety of details regarding the Table of seasons,

and in certain places close years, have been established, twenty-two Swiss cantons, arranged in the order of their extent, a. and numerous fish-hatcheries are also in operation (57 in 1885), the | In the first column the languages principally spoken in the different A species treated being mainly salmon, lake trout, river trout, gray- | cantons are indicated by letters, as described in the appended foot. ling (ombre), red trout or Réthel, the Swiss Coregonus, American | note, and the percentages of population speaking them in 1880 are Coregonus (C. albus), Salmo fontinalis, and the ‘“‘mader.” No fewer given. In every case the official language is that of the Inajority, | than 5,709,482 fish were introduced into the lakes and rivers in | with the exccption of Freiburg, where it is German. The same 1885. By a law of 1884 the federal council is allowed to defray | column also shows the various executive and legislative authorities, ee eae

ate Date of Area in Population. Density, Deputies Canton. * ies. Toco Lee —- Gane road Cantonal Capital. ae sion. | Constitution. Bees 1850, 1880, Mile. Rath Capitals.

Grisons (Graubiinden) ..G 46, R 40, 114..K; L/ 1803 | 1880 2754°0 | 89,840 | 94,991 35 5 Chin… 8,889

Berm (Berne)... .....06+. By IY US asconones 9 Int USES | SG 2659°5 | 457,921 | 532,164} 205 | 97 Bern «| 44,087

Valais (Wallis)..... 67, 222.4… D; L| 1815 | 1875 2026°8| 81,527|160,216| 500; 5 (| Sion…....0m 4,871

Vaud (Waadt)..... 1 GO) (CG Oscasacecanr B; M| 1803 | 1861 (’72) | 1244-3 | 199,453 | 288,730] 194] 12 Lausanne…... 30,179

Ticino (Tessin)..... 99°0. .C; Nj) 1803 | 1830 (83) | 1088-0 | 117,397 | 130,777 | 122 Hl Bellinzona…..| 2,486

St Gall (Sankt Gallen)..G99°1….ccccccccs. A; L| 1803 | 1861 (’75)| 779-5 | 169,508 | 210,491] 281} 10 | St Gall…....| 21,438

AMIN CH eae mer cites: acts cs CeO SE Serer .A;O]} 1351 | 1869 665°9 | 250,184 317,576] 500] 16 ZUTICh 2 eee 75,956

Freiburg (Fribourg)..... PCS) Grell .. cca. sc D; L| 1481 | 1857 644°4| 99,805 | 115,400] 181 6 Freiburg. 2am 11,546

Lucerne (Luzern)..... (GF OSS SNnee aera A; 1332 | 1875 (82); 579-4 | 182,789 | 184,806 | 234 7 Lucerne.,...../ 17,850

Aargau (Argovie).....: (B) ORG) Ssenaeeearcar A; Ij 1803 | 1852 (’77)} 542-0 | 199,720 | 198,645! 3641! 10 ASH... eee 5,944

Wire. otearite ovenee ek Ge 715 UO caneue A, E; P| 1291 | 1850-51 | 415°4} 14,500, 23,694 57 1 Altort |p eee 2,90)

Thurgau (Thurgovie)....G 99°5 …….00.. A; L} 1803 | 1869 381°4 | 88,819, 99,552] 295 5 Frauenfeld 5,811

ISIGIDIAaoane cone eucncdoun Bee CO Oe a aaceneeeante AVAO)| 2918 AS 76—740 3850°7 | 44,159} 51,285; 151 3 Sehwyz…..... 6,543

Neuchatel (Neuenburg) .F 75, G 24…..... B; M; 1815 | 1858 (’80)| 311°8| 70,679 | 103,732] 348 5 Neucliatel….. 15,612

Soleure (Solothurn) ..... GAO Sakae sea ase A; QO] 1481 | 1875 305°9 | 69,613 | 80,424] 272 4 Soletre. 5 7,668

ObwaldhaGiG9:3).o..=—. AR 1867 ‘ 1 Samen ….0e 4,039

Unterwalden {xiiwald 1G 99-0 0 Ase | ise7 2904 | 2h) A) ee 1 | Stanza 2910

Glinas oe ee © 908. ecceieescs H; P| 1352 | 1842:(780)| 266°8| 30,197) 349913 | 194] 9 | Glarus… 5,530

Basel (Basle, | Urban …G 96°3 …..... ANS Ib; | § 1875 13°8 2 3 Basel… 61,399

Wale)... Rural ….G 995.00. As Q 1501 1863 162°7 77,385 | 124,372 | 769 } 3 | Liestal….. .. 4679

Omter- 2… Ga99nG. Bees. A; Pi 1876 93°4 3 Appenzell….. 4,302

Appenzell Inner …....6.99°9 ….....E; P 1513)) 1879 68°5 54,869) 64,709) 661) 5 | aiitem 0mm 11,082

Schaffhausen ….... (C409 ARE eens A; L| 1501 | 1876 113°6 | 35,278} 38,348] 335 2 Schaffhausen.) 11,795

Geneva (Genf, Ginevra).F 85, G11….....B; Mj 1815 | 1847 ?79)| 107°8| 63,932/ 101,595 | 1013 5 Geneva…..... 68, 320

Vs eee Cee ee A; O| 1852 | 1873 (81); 923] 17,456} 22,994] 259! 1 | Zug… 4,924 * Languages.—G, German; F, French; I, Italian; R, Romansch. Executive Authority.—A, Regierungsrath; B, Conseil d'état; C, Consiglio di stato; D,

Staatsrath; E, Standeskoinmission; H, Rath u. Standeskommission; K, Kleiner Rath u. Standeskommission. conseil; N, Gran consiglio; O, Kantonsrath; P, Landsgemeinde; Q, Landrath. For details regarding the Stande Rath, of 44 members, and the National Rath, of see p. 795; and for information regarding the referendum in the cantons, see p. 796.

145 (made up as shown in column 8 above),

The first federal census of which the results were published was neither quite synchronous (April 1836 to February 1838) nor quite systematic. That of 1850 took account only of the population with right of residence (population domiciliée), and not of the population actually present at the date of the ceusus. In 1860 the census was declared decennial. The following are the numbers returned :— March, 18-28, 1850, 2,892,740 ; December, 10, 1860, 2,507,170; December 1, 1870, 2,669,147; December 1, 1880, 2,846,102.

As regards density of population, Switzerland, with 198°5 persons to the square mile, stands considerably above Scotland (125) and a long way below England and Wales (446). The Alpine region is the sparsest generally, though certain districts, like Appenzell Ausser-Rhoden, are very densely peopled; the Jura region has a much higher ratio; and the densest region of all is the Swiss plateau. If we draw an irregular line from the east end of the Lake of Geneva by Thun, Lucerne, and the south of the Lake of Zurich to Rheineck, we shall have nearly all the more densely populated portions of the country to the north, the only notable exception being what might be called the Swiss peninsula of Lugano. A large proportion of the country to the south has only from 1 to 19 inhabitants to the square kilometre. The districts where the density rises above 250 to the square kilometre are that to the south-east and south-west of Geneva, the vicinity of Lausanne, the districts of Chaux de Fonds, Neuchatel, Biel, Bern, Soleure, Basel, a large tract along both sides of the Lake of Zurich, and the district between St Gall and Rheineck. The districts in which an increase of population had taken place between 1870 and 1880 are curiously distributed. An increase of 30 per cent. or over occurs only in the environs of Basel and in two large areas of which the chief centres are Altdorf and Airolo. Decrease was prevalent throughout a large part of the better populated regions of the north, while a certain increase had taken place throughout much of the south-western area.

Legislative Authority.—L, Grosser Rath; M, Grand

In 1880 there were 960°8 males to every 1000 females, a nt smaller preponderance of females than in England and Wales, statistics For every 1000 above the age of 50 there are 176 unmarried females to 154 unmarried males. The disproportion of the sexes in the country at large is mainly due to emigration ; but in certain cantons it is partly due to exeess of women in the immigrants from neighbouring countries. In Uri, Schwyz, and Valais only is there an excess of males. In every 1000 of the population there were, in 1860, 296 under 15 years of age, 620 between 15. and 60 years, and 84 upwards of 60; the corresponding figures in 18/0 being 315, 595, and 90; and for 1880, 319, 593, and 88.

The pro- : portion of married persons to the total number of the adults (474

per cent.) is less than in most other countries, though this pro portion has been gradually raised both before and sinee 1880 by certain legislative changes, including the new marriage law im 1874. At the same time the average fertility of the marriages has decreased. arly marriages on the part of the males are slightly more frequent than in England. Divorce and separation are fre- quent. Thus in 1876-80 they formed nearly 5 per cent. of the marriages, while in Belgium and the Netherlands they do not reach 1 per cent. As regards the inarriage relations of the different creeds, the five years 1877-81 showed that (excluding the eanton

of Geneva, where the creed is not registered) there were only

0°7 separations per 1000 existing marriages where both husbanil

aud wife were Catholics, 2°8 where both were Protestants, 32 where the husband was a Catholic and the wife a Protestant,

and 4°5 where the husband was a Protestant and the wile 4 Catholic.

The percentage of illegitimate births during the years 1871-// was 5°7, 5°2, 5°1, 4°8, 4°4, 50, and 4°9 respectively, a rate almost identical with that of England and Wales. Infant mortality has been decreasing. While 20°32 per cent. of the quick-born children of 1876 died in their first year, only 17°3 died in 1885.

The following table shows the annual number of births, &c. :—-

Marriages.| Per 1000. Births. | Per 1000.) Deaths. | Per 1000,

1871-75 | 21,732 85, 832 31°6 | 64,479 Paes | 1876-80 91,197 82°5 64,671 23°1 1881-84 85,612 29‘6 61,082 21°1 1885 83,579 | 28°6 | 61,548 | 21-0

At the census of 1880 there were in Switzerland 211,035 foreigners (112,311 males and 98,724 females), or one foreigner to every 13 or 14

of the population. The origin of this alien element was very various :— from Alsace-Lorraine, 2607 males, 2732 females é Germany, 43,923, 45,991 ; Austria-Hungary, 8389, 4929; Italy, 27,821, 13,709 ; Spain and Portugal, 175, 93; France, 26,264, 27,389; Holland and Belgium, 445, 493; Great Britain, 1027, 1785 ; Russia, 599, 685; Servia, Roumania, and Greece, 119, 35; Denmark, Norway, and Sweden, 194, 188; America, 5638, 548.

Between 1868 and 1877 the average number of emigrants from

Hon. | Switzerland was 3516 per annum ; between 1878 and 1882 it was 6 7196. In 1883, 1884, and 1885 the figures were respectively i 13,502 (12,758 of them native-born Swiss), 9608, and 7583. By

far the greater proportion of the emigrants found their way to America, and mainly to the United States, though some of the South American republics (as Chili) attract a considerable number. Iu the five years 1876-80 3172 persons on an average left for North America annually, 99 for Central America, 594 for South America, and 107 for Australia, while Asia and Africa together did not count more than 167.

The population is to a very great extent rural. Only three cities (Zurich, Geneva, and Basel) have a population exceeding 50,000, and at the census of 1880 only 59 other towns had each more than 4000 inhabitants. Of these Bern (see table above), Lausanue, Chaux de Fonds (22,456), St Gall, Lucerne, Neuchatel, Winterthur (13,595), Schaffhausen, Biel (11,628), Freiburg, Herisau (11,082), ; and Locle (10,464) exceeded 10,000. mA religious census was taken in 1850, 1860, 1870, and 1880; in the first case only three categories were recognized —Catholic, Protestant, and Jew; in 1860 and 1870 four—Catholic, Protestant, Christians of other denominations, and non-Christian. After much discussion the federal council, which had proposed to drop the religious census in 1880, was prevailed upon by thearguments of ten cantous to adopt a similar classification in 1880. The figures in 1870 were—1,566,347 Protestants, 1,084,369 Catholics, 11,435 members of other sects, and 6996 Jews; in 1880 the Protestants ‘numbered 1,667,109, the Catholics 1,160,782, the Jews 7378, and

miscellaneous 10,838. The Jews are most strougly represented in the cantons of Bern (1316 in 1880), Basel (1053), Aargau (1284), Zurich (806), Neuchatel (689), and Geneva (662).

_ It has been estimated that, of the whole area of Switzerland, 1,642,471 acres are under arable cultivation and 1,917,632 acres in forest, while 2,866,113 acres are altogether unproductive. Agricul- tural statistics have never been systematically registered by the federal authoritics, and only a few of the cantons have devoted seri- ous attention to the matter. Herr C. Miihlemann (Z. f. schweiz.) Stot., 1886) gives the following estimate of the area cropped and

the annual value (in thousands of francs) of the produce :—

Acres. | Value. Value.

153,308 | 36,054 || Other fodder plants 15,532 2,666

S -| 193,993 | 43,846 || Pease and beans… 9,574 1,060

y 86,089 | 18,805 || Rape…....cccceceee 1,966 486

c 33,610 5,057 || Hemp and flax….. 12,463 6,101

PRES tee ccce coe tssesscese 122,645 | 20,468 || Chicory….....1 6 18 BOtALOeS….....045 264,938 | 79,859 || Tobacco….....000008 1,730 704

)} 8cet and turnips.. 43,850 | 13,254 || Vegetables…..... 41,545 4,842 Carrots 16,056 3,148 |; Meadows, good…..| 529,122 | 153,512 | Mixed fodder 333,612 | 86,677 5 medium} 609,865 | 82,928 Glover…..... -| 217,897 | 66,048 – poor…...| 578,940 | 28,115 Lucerne «| 27,744 7,449 || Pasturesand“alps”/ 1,962,693 | 189,001 Esparcet 89,324 | 19,340 || Vineyards…..... 79,020 | 62,359

| The value of the fruit produce is given as 127,418,391 francs (apples, 71,316,992; pears, 38,656,150). }, The name “allmend” is given to land still held in common, * whether arable, meadow, pasture, or forest. The

main part of the allmends” now existing consists of pasture and forest land. The pasture lands, “alps,” or high mountain pastures comprise “‘voralpen,” used in the spring, “nittelalpen,” or cow-pastures, }and “‘hochalpen” (sometimes 9000 feet above the sea), for sheep i and goats. ‘They are most numerous in Neuchatel, Bern, and The capital value of the whole is estimated at 200,000,000 vfrancs or more. Of the 3032 miles of forest land 127°3 belong to the state, 2007-1 to “communes ” or private associations, and 897 ‘o private persons. The federal Government has done much to “reafforest tracts, both by itself and by stimulating cantonal effort, and generally to promote the science of forestry. The silk industry of Switzerland was already established at

Zurich and Basel in the latter half of the 13th century; but after In- a period of prosperity it died out. It was again introduced by dustries. the Protestants expelled from Locarno in 1555. Crape, velvet, and taffetas were the favourite products of the first stage; ribbon- Weaving came later with another band of Locarno refugees and the French Huguenots. In 1872 116 firms were engaged in the silk trade, in 1881134. Between those dates the employees had increased from 39,940 to 49,816 (65,000 in 1883), and the wages from 15,382,186 to 19,815,453 francs. In 1881 2,153,100 kilos of raw silk and 1,067,700 of silk-waste were imported ; and the export of silk goods, ribbons, and ferret silk was 1,152,300, 1,965,400, and 819,000 kilos respectively. Cotton begun to be manufactured in Switzerland in the 15th century, aud power-loom weaving was introduced in 1830. The industry has owed a good deal to the abundant water-power of the country. In 1881 there were about 28,000 cotton looms; and cotton-spinning employed about 60,000 spindles. The workers numbered 88,046 in 1883. Bleach- ing and cloth-dressing have attained a great development in the neighbourhood of St. Gall, both in the cantons of St Gall and Appenzell. Printworks are especially numerous in Glarus. Aargau is the chief seat of the woollen manufacture, having 4 millions of the total production valued at 114

million francs. Linen, the first of the Swiss textile fabrics to find its way to a foreign iarkct, is no longer manufactured on a large scale. Embroidered goods are the great specialty of the export trade of eastern Switzerland, — the cantons of St Gall, Appenzell, Thurgau, and part of Zurich. In flat-stitch machine embroidery 15,256 workers were employed in 1872, and 27,801 in 1880 (48 and 47 per 1000 inhabitants). In the different departments of hand embroidery 33,359 persous were employed in 1881. The St Gall market is also supplied by a large number of workers in Vorarlberg. The value of the embroidered goods exported from the consular district of St Gall for America alone increased from 19 to nearly 30 million francs between 1879 and 1882. Straw-plaiting is an important industry in Aargau (centre at Wohlen), Ticino, and Freiburg. In 1867-68, when the trade was at its best, the total export was worth 104 million francs, Watch and clock making is a specially Swiss industry, giving employment to 44,000 workers in 1883. In Geneva alone 296 establishments were at work in 1882 in some department or other of the manufacture. The valley of Joux (Vaud and Saint Croix), Chaux de Fonds, Locle, Les Brenets, Les Ponts, Fleuvier (Neu- chatel), Bienne, Porrentrny, Saint Imicr (Bern), Granges (Soleure), Waldenberg (Basel), and Schaffhausen are all important seats of the craft. The condensed-milk industry of Switzerland is also well known. The exports in 1875 amounted to 4,261,800 kilos, and in 1883 to 12,086,900. A similar article is Nestlé's infants' food from Vevey. Swiss cheese (Emmenthal and Gruyére) has a widespread reputation ; the export increased from 5,093,100 kilos in 1851 to 25,959,400 in 1883. The production of beer in Switzerland was 6,160,000: gallons in 1867 and 20,240,000 in 1882; in the latter year 289,564 gallons were exported. The dis- tilleries (1006) produce about 990,000 gallons of pure alcohol annually. Allusion can only be made here to the great chemical] industries of the country, its potteries, paper-mills, engineering works, gun-factories, &c. a

Wood-carving was one of the most ancient, as it is now one of the best known, of the minor arts of Switzerland. The great seat of the modern industry is the Bernese Oberland, where the peasants during the long evenings of winter for centuries devoted themselves to producing artistic articles in wood. It was regularly organized. by Christian

Fischer in Brienz (1825), and is now mainly in the hands of a company, founded in 1881, which associates capitalists and workmen in the profits. In 1870 1189 men and 56 women were employed throughout Switzerland in this department ; in 1880 the numbers were 1202 and 105.4

Owing to the original abundance of timber it was almost the only Wooden material employed in the building of houses. There are practically houses. three styles: the so-called block-house, in which the logs are laid one upon the other; the post-built house, in which upright posts and a strong framework are filled in with planks ; and the " riegel- haus," in which a framework of wood is filled in with brick or stones. In the cantous of Zurich, Thurgau, and Schaffhausen the riegelhaus (the usual form in southern Germany) has—chiefly owing to the increased cost of timber—displaced the two other styles, which alone were in use there till the beginning of the 17th century." :

In Gsell-Fels's Bader u. klimatische Kurorte der Schweiz (1880), Health 505 health stations are mentioned. In Aargan we have the hot stations, springs of Baden and Schinznach (sulphur), the salt baths of Rheinfelden and Mumpf, the mineral waters of Wildegg and Birmensdorf. In Appenzell there are a number of places between

1 See Rahn, Gesch. der bildenden Kiinste in der Schweiz; Salvisberg, Die Holzschnitzeret des Berner Oberlandes; and Davinet, Bericht tiber Holzschnitzeret,

1884,

2 See Gladbach, Die Holz-Architectur der Schweiz 1885; Graffenried and Sttirler, Architecture Suisse ; Hochstitter, Schweizer Architektur ; Varin, L'Arch. pittoresque en Suisse; and Gladbach, Der Schweizer Holzstyl,

Com- meree.

Eduea- tion.

2000 and 3000 feet above the sea famous as whey-cure stations (Heiden, Gais, Appenzell, &c.), and various chalybeate springs (Weissbad, Gonteni, Heinrichsbad). Basel eontains salt baths at Schweizerhalle, Bienenberg, and Schauenburg. Bern is particularly rich in baths and sanatoriums (Lenk, Weissenburg, Heustrich, Gurnigel, Engistein, Blumenstein). Schwarzseebad is the chief mineral spring in Freiburg ; Pfaffers-Ragatz in St Gall is world- famous. The Stachelberger Schwefelbad in Glarus is much fre- quented. The Grisons have almost a superfluity of mineral waters, some of which (St Moritz, Fideris) are exported in large quantities. Weissenstein in Soleure is one of the oldest sanatoriums in Switzer- land. Lavey and Bex in Vaud are respectively famous for their sulphur and salt baths. In Valais, Saxon and Leukerbad are famous. 'The importance of altitude in the attractiveness of a health resort is shown in a table by Guyer, 280 of the hotels for foreign visitors being upwards of 3900 feet above the sea. Dr F. Stopel (Industrie u. Handelspolitik der Schweiz, 1876) reckoned the total receipts from foreign visitors at 120,000,000 francs.

The position taken by Switzerland in the trade and commerce of the world is remarkable when the various natural obstacles are considered —such as absence of raw material for her industries, eostly and difficult means of transport, and restrictive customs established by neighbouring eountries. The following table shows the value in thousands of francs of the imports and exports for 1885 (the first year for which we have official returns) :—

Imports.| Exports. |Imports. /Exports. Germany…seceeeee 249,262 | 157,620 |! Russia… 21,318 | 9,481 France…. ~~.| 179,195 | 189,670 || United Stutes…....., 17,842 | 77,723 | Npalliyenn~~00.: " 96,3872! 13,076 |

England is the great market for silver watches; Germany for gold watches and musical boxes; France for weaving machinery ; Russia for mills; Italy for miscellaneous machinery; France for asphalt; France for butter; France, Italy, Germany, and the United States for cheese; Germany for silk; Germany for cattle; Franee for sheep and goats. Cotton manufactures find their way to France, Italy, Austria, Britain,

Germany, Spain, India, &c.; leather to the United States and the Argentine Republic. The customs increascd from 3,953,192 francs in 1850 to 21,342,403 in

1884.

By article 27 of the federal constitution of 1874, primary instruc- tion, while left in the charge of the several cantons, is required to be sufficient, obligatory, gratuitous, unsectarian, and under public control of the state. The primary school age is up to twelve years, as far as this general law is concerned, but in some cantons this is raised to fourteen, fifteen, or sixteen years of age. The first school year also varies from five to seven in different cantons. Great variety indeed exists in the whole school organization of the scveral eantons ; while the chief authority as regards the primary sehools is in some cases vested in an educational department or educational council, or both, in others it is entrusted to an educational director with or without a council. Considering the difficulties caused in many regions by a sparse population and a rugged eountry, primary instruction is well carried out. Funds are provided by the state, the commune, and often by the private individual. Even in remote districts the school buildings are generally good. Bern has been especially active in building newschools. In 1882 218,191 boys and 215,889 girls attended the primary schools. Of these 311,271 had German as their mother tongue, 97,113 French, 19,864 Italian, and 5832 Romansch. 'The total number of male teachers was 5840, and of female teachers 2525; the average pay in money per male teacher was 1303 francs, for female teachers 822 francs. The primary school property was valued at 137,534,597 franes (86,647,507 in 1871). The expense was 14,781,610 francs (8,708,174 in 1871). The communes contributed 8,349,697 francs and the state 2,825,722. The expense per scholar was 34°1. For the school children who are too poor to obtain proper food and elothing both public and private assistanee is freely rendered. Besides the ordinary public primary schools, there are a considerable number of secondary schools (attended in 1882 by 11,155 boys and 8976 girls), preparatory (or intermediate) schools (9556, 2133), infant schools (10,864, 11,242), schools for adults (12,758, 1110), and private schools (6057, 4834). In 1882 there were in all

272,039 males and 244,896 females in receipt of edueation, Among the preparatory schools are the “colleges”’ or “ gymnasiums” and the industrial schools, one of which exists in almost all the cantonal capitals as well as at Winterthur, Burgdorf, Porrentruy, Einsiedeln, Murten, and Brieg. In Grisons and Neuch4tel normal schools for the education ‘of teachers are attached to the cantonal schools. Separate establishments for this purpose exist in the cantons of Zurich, Bern, Lucerne, Schwyz, Freiburg, Soleure, St Gall, Aargau, Thurgau, Tessin, Vaud, and Valais. Among the more specialized institutions of the preparatory or middle class are the Technitium

at Winterthur, the veterinary colleges at Zurich and Bern, the agvieultural schools at Oberstrass and Riitli, and the schoo] of dentistry at Geneva. In the four universities of Basel, Bern, Zurich, and Geneva, each with faculties of law, theology, medicine and arts (philosophy), the average number of matriculated students per session of six months was, between 1876 (the first year of the Geneva university) and 1881, in theology 118, in law 188, in medieine 469, and in arts 288,—a total of 1058, to which must be added 334 non-matrieulated. Basel has a preponderance in theology, Bern in law, Zurieh in arts. The great federal polytechnicum at Zuriely (opened in 1855) comprises schools of architecture, eivil and industria] engineering, industrial chemistry, forestry, and agriculture.

The public libraries of Switzerland are briefly described in yol, xiv. p. 528, as they existed in 1868 (cf. p. 548); for the learned societies, see SOCIETIES.

The total revenue of the Confederation, which was only 22,049,353 Finance francs in 1869, had increased to 44,308,000 on an average in 1879- | 1883, and reached 48,392,000 in 1885 ; the expenditure, which was 21,744,459 at the first date, had correspondingly increased to 43,312,510 in 1879-18838, and 46,278,685 in 1885.

In Switzerland there is no standing army, but every male citizen Amy between twenty-four and forty-four years of age is bound to military |

service and drill. The federal forces consist of the Auszug, Elite, or regular army (men from twenty to thirty-two years old), and the | landwehr (men thirty-two to forty-four years). The whole army : was reorganized in 1874, when extensive functions were assigned to the military physician in eonnexion with the reeruiting and calling out of the soldiers. In the ten years 1875-84 there was one new recruit for 111 of the population (foreigners excepted); 49 per cent. of the total were declared fit for service, 19 per cent. 1e- : manded, and 32 per cent. declared unfit. In the long run, about | 61°1 percent. of the young men of the country passed the standard,

In 1886 the regulars numbered 117,179 and the landwehr 84,046.2

Railway construction, which began in 1844, proceeded in earnest Railways, after the new legislation of 1852, and by the close of 1862 718 miles had been construeted ; by 1872 the ordinary lines reached a total of 1459 miles, with 5 miles of special lines; for 1882 the corre- sponding figures were 2667 and 81. The annual railway profits increased from 105,599,970 francs in 1870-74 to 179,151,112 in 1880-84. Tramways began to be laid down in 1862, and rope railways in 1877. The railways are mostly in the northern plateau and connect with the systems of Northern Europe. The only Swiss line which crosses to the south of the Alps is the St Gotthard (see Raitways). The proposed Simplon. railway has already been carried up the Rhone valley as far as Brieg. The mountainous eharacter of the country and the speeial exigencies of its traflie , have suecessfully stimulated to some striking efforts of railway engineering. Thus the Rigi railway rises from the Lake of Lueerne to a height of 5739 feet, with a maximum gradient of 250 per thousand ; that of the Rorschach-Heiden line is 50 per thousand. _ | Switzerland is famous for its well-made and well-kept carriage- Roads roads. Some of those that traverse the mountain-passes have been constructed at great expense. One of the most remarkable is the mule-path down an almost perpendicular rock from the Gemmi Pass to Leukerbad, made in 1737-40.

Bern has been the seat of the international Postal Union since Post 1874 (see Post-OFFicz, vol. xix. p. 584). The federalization of office the

national post-office dates from 1848,—the different cantons having previously conducted their postal business according to very different methods. It is to be noted that this department charges itself with the conveyance of passengers as well as mails,—these numbering 831,839 in 1880 and 754,365 in 1885. For other details see the table given in vol. xix. p. 585. ,

The length of telegraph lines increased from 1920 kilometres in Tele- 1852 to 6874 in 1884 (wires from 1920 to 16,618 kilometres), and graphs the number of despatches from 2876 in 1852 to 1,127,311 in 1884, the total reeeipts for the latter year being 2,555,687 francs. —

In Switzerland there are thirty-three legalized banks of issue ; Banks. their average circulation of notes in 1885 was to the value of 123,431,000 francs. There are 325 savings banks proper (deposits 246,359,735 francs in 1882) and 162 other institutions which receive deposits (267,298,548 francs in 1882). Most of these are in the liands of companies or private merchants. :

Besides the older but valuable works of Faber (1756), Fasi (1765-68), Fiissli (1770-72), Normann (1795-98), Durand (1795-96), Meister (1796), sec Hzst. geogr. Statistische Gemdlde der Schweiz (a scries of monographs, published by Huber and Co. of St. Gall and Bern); Mottinger, Staatshaushalt der schweiz. Eidgen-, 1847; Franscini, Stat. della Svizzera, Lugano, 1827 and 1847-49; Wirth, Allge meine Beschretbung der Schweiz; Legoyt and Vogt, La Suisse; Prof. Bglis most convenient Zaschenbuch (1878, &c.) and Schweizerkunde ; Berlepsch, Sc kunde, 1875; and Furrer's comprehensive Volkswirthshaft-Lexicon. A statistica bureau was founded in 1860, a statistical society in 1864. Dr Kummer gives 4 history of Swiss statistics in Zeitschrift fiir schwetz. Stat. 1885, and lis succcssor,

Herr Milliet, to whom we are indebted for much of the above informati: is engaged on a statistical handbook. (W. A. B. C.—H. A. W:

|

Libraries,

—— ——

1 See especially C. Grob, Statistik tiber der Unterrichtswesen in der se 7 parts, 1883, and Dr H. Wettstein, Bericht iéber Gruppe 30, Unterrichisie (Zurich Exhibition), 1884,

2 Details may be found in the Almanach de Gotha, 1887.

3]

in mind.

) by little wins its independence of the empire, practically

| former masters, and that the Romansch-speaking Leagues of Rheetia (Graubiinden) pass from the status of an ally to

is universally acknowledged. History alone can supply us

Forest districts) there gradually gather other German dis-

HISTORY. |

Part II.—Hisrory.

The Swiss Confederation is made up of twenty-two small states, differing from each other in nearly every point,— religious, political, social, industrial, physical, and linguis- tic; yet it forms a nation the patriotism of whose members

with the key to this puzzle; but Swiss history, while thus essential if we would thoroughly grasp the nature of the Confederation, is very intricate and very local. A firm hold on a few guiding principles is therefore most desirable, and of these there are three which we must always bear (1) The first to be mentioned is the connexion of Swiss history with that of the empire. Swiss history is

| largely the history of the drawing together of bits of each _of the imperial kingdoms (Germany, Italy, and Burgundy)

for common defence against a common foe—the Hapsburgs; and, when this family have secured to themselves the per- manent possession of the empire, the Swiss League little

in 1499, formally in 1648. Originally a member of the empire, the Confederation becomes first an ally, then merely afriend. (2) The second is the German origin and nature of the Confederation. Rounda German nucleus (the three

tricts; the Confederation is exclusively German ; and it is not till 1803 and 1815 that its French- and Italian-speak- ing ‘“‘subjects” are raised to political equality with their

that of a ember of the Confederation. Even now, though

_ by the constitution three languages (German, French, and ~ Italian) are recognized as official, the overwhelming majo-

) 1848 and 1874.

ty three Forest districts, the Confederation is enlarged ‘with the original three members, but not necessarily with looking after common interests, in maintaining any real

‘union; the diet was merely an assembly of ambassadors with powers very strictly limited by their instructions, and

shaking off dependence on the Hapsburgs—up to 1394

‘up to 1499 (1648); IV. the period of religious divisions

(“homines vallis Uranie ”), the free community of the valley

rity of the population of the Confederation is German-speak-

ing (2,030,792 out of 2,846,102 in 1880), and the capital was fixed at Bern by a law of 1848, having previously shifted between various German-speaking towns, while in

jolden days the diet always met in some German-speaking

place. (3) Swiss history is a study in federalism. Based on the defensive alliances of 1291 and 1315 made between

by the admission of other districts and towns, all leagued

each other. Hence great difficulties are encountered in

there was no central executive authority. The Confeder- ation is a Staatenbund, or permanent alliance of several small states. After the break-up of the old system in

11798 we see the idea of a Bundesstaat, or an organized

state with a central legislative, executive, and judiciary,

work its way to the front, an idea which is gradually real- jized in the constitutions of 1848 and 1874. ‘constitutional history of the Confederation is summed up

The whole

in this transition to a federal state, which, while a single

state in its relations with all foreign powers, in home ‘ matters carefully maintains the more or less absolute inde- pendence of its several members.

Swiss history falls naturally into five great divisions : I. the origins of the Confederation—up to 12911; II. the

(1474) ; III. the shaking off dependence on the empire—

and French influence—up to 1814; V. the construction of an independent state as embodied in the constitutions of

I. On August 1, 1291, the men of the valley of Uri

1 For the legendary origin, see TELL.

evi rezikb A ND

of Schwyz (“ universitas vallis de Switz”), and the associa- Early tion of the men of the lower valley or Nidwald (“ communi- history

781

tas hominum intramontanorum vallis inferioris”) formed an Everlasting League for the purpose of self-defence against all who should attack or trouble them, a league which is expressly stated to be a confirmation of a former one (“antiquam confederationis formam juramento.vallatam presentibus innovando”). This League was the foundation of the Swiss Confederation.

What were these districts? and why at this particular moment was it necessary for them to form a defensive league? The legal and political conditions of all differed. (2) In 853 Louis the German granted (énter alia) all his lands (and the rights annexed to them) situated in the “pagellus Uroniz” to the convent of Sts Felix and Regula in Zurich (the present Fraumiinster), of which his daughter Hildegard was the first abbess, and gave to this district the privilege of exemption from all jurisdiction save that of the king (Retchsfretheit). The abbey thus became . possessed of the greater part of the valley of the Reuss be- tween the present Devil’s Bridge and the Lake of Lucerne, for the upper valley of Urseren belonged at that time to the abbey of Dissentis in the Rhine valley, and did not become permanently allied with Uri till 1410. The privileged position of the abbey tenants gradually led the other men of the valley to “commend” themselves to the abbey, whether they were tenants of other lords, or free men as in the Schichenthal. The meeting of all the inhabitants of the valley, for purposes connected with the customary cultivation of the soil according to fixed rules and methods, served to prepare them for the enjoyment of full political liberty in later days. The important post of “protector” (advocatus or vogt) of the abbey was given to one family after another by the emperor as a sign of trust ; but, when, on the extinction of the house of Zaringen in 1218, the office was granted to the Hapsburgs, the

protests of the abbey tenants, who feared the rapidly rising power of that family, and perhaps also the desire of the emperor to obtain command of the St Gotthard pass (of which the first authentic mention occurs about 1236, when of course it could only be traversed on foot), led to the recall of the grant in 1231, the valley being thus restored to its original privileged position, and depending immediately on the emperor. (b) In Schwyz we must dis- tinguish between the districts west and east of Steinen. In the former the land was in the hands of many nobles, amongst whom were the Hapsburgs; in the latter there was, at the foot of the Mythen, a free community of men governing themselves, and cultivating their land in common; both, however, were politically subject to the emperor's delegates, the counts of the Ziirichgau, who after 1173 were the ever-advancing Hapsburgs. But in 1240 the free community of Schwyz obtained from the emperor Frederick II. a charter which removed them from the jurisdiction of the counts, placing them in immediate dependence on the emperor, like the abbey men of Uri. In a few years, however, the Hapsburgs contrived to dispense with this charter in practice. (¢) In Unter- walden things were very different. The upper valley (Obwald or Sarnen, so called because of its position with regard to the Kernwald) formed part of the Aargau, the lower (Nidwald or Stanz) part of the Ziirichgau, while in both the soil was owned by many ecclesiastical and lay lords, among them being the Hapsburgs and the Alsatian abbey of Murbach. Hence in this district there were no privileged tenants, no free community, no centre of unity, and this explains why Obwald and Nidwald won their way upward so much more slowly than their neighbours in Uriand Schwyz. Thus the early history and legal position of these three districts was very far from being the same.

In Uri the Hapsburgs, save for a brief space, had abso-| in Schwyz in 1281, in Nidwald uot till this very docu-

lutely no rights ; while in Schwyz, Obwald, and Nidwald | ment of 1291 ; yet, despite the great differences in their

they were also, as counts of the Ziirichgau and of the | political status, they all joined in concluding this League,

Aargau, the representatives of the emperor. and confirmed it by their separate seals, thereby laying The The Hapsburgs had been steadily rising for many years | claim on behalf of their union to an independent exist. League from the position of an unimportant family in the Aargau | ence. Besides promises of aid and assistance in the case CF T201. souilianiol a powerful clan of large landed proprietors in | of attack, they agree to punish great criminals by their

Swabia and Alsace, and had attained a certain political | own authority, but advise that, in minor cages and in all

importance as counts of the Ziirichgau and Aargau. In one | civil cases, each man should recognize the "judex" to

or both qualities the cadet or Lauffenburg line, to which | whom he owes suit, engaging that the confederates will,

the family estates in the Forest districts round the Lake of | in case of need, enforce the decisions of the "judex." At

Lucerne had fallen on the division of the inheritance in | the same time they unanimously refuse to recognize any

1232, seem to have exercised their legal rights in a harsh | " judex" who has bought his charge or is a stranger to

manner. In 1240 the free men of Schwyz obtained pro- | the valleys. All disputes between the parties to the

tection from the emperor ; in 1244 the Hapsburgs built the treaty are, as far as possible, to be settled by a reference to

castle of New Hapsburg on a promontory jutting out into | arbiters, a principle which remained in force for over six :

the lake not far from Lucerne, with the object of enforcing | hundred years. “Judex” is a genera) term for any local

their real or pretended rights. It is therefore not a matter | official, especially the chief of the community, whether

for surprise that, when, after the excommunication and de- | named by the lord or by the community ; and, as earlier in

position of Frederick II. by Innocent IV. at the council of | the same year Rudolph had promised the men of Schwyz

Lyons in 1245, the head of the cadet line of Hapsburg | not to force upon them a “judex” belonging to the class

sided with the pope, the men of the Forest districts should | of serfs, we may conjecture from this very decided protest

rally round the emperor. Schwyz joined Sarnen, Nidwald | that the chief source of disagreement was in the matter

helped Lucerne ; the castle of New Hapsburg was reduced | of the jurisdictions of the lord and the free community,

to its present ruined state; and in 1248 the men of | and that some recent event in Schwyz led it to insist on

Schwyz, Sarnen, and Lucerne were threatened by the | the insertion of this provision. It is stipulated also that

pope with excommunication if they persisted in uphold- every man shall be bound to obey his own lord “ conyeni-

ing the emperor and defying their hereditary lords the | enter,” or so far ag is fitting and right.

counts of Hapsburg. The rapid decline of Frederick’s II. In the struggle for the empire, which extended over Morgaten

cause soon enabled the Hapsburgs to regain their author- | the years following the conclusion of the League of 1291, we and the

ity in these districts. Yet these obscure risings have a | find that the Confederates support without exception the a

double historical interest, for they are the foundation in anti-Hapsburg candidate. On October 16, 1291, Uri and *”

fact (so far as they have any) of the legendary stories Schwyz ally themselves with Zurich, and join the general

of Hapsburg oppression told of and by a later age, and rising in Swabia against Albert, the new head of the house

these fleeting alliances are doubtless what is represented | of Hapsburg. It soon failed, but hopes revived when in

by the “antiqua confederatio” of 1291, Schwyz already | 1292 Adolf of Nassau was chosen emperor. In 1297 he

taking the lead, while Uri, secure in its privileged posi- | confirmed to the free men of Schwyz their charter of 1240,

tion, contented itself with giving a moral support to its and, strangely enough, confirmed the same charter to Uni,

neighbours. After this temporary check the power of | instead of their own of 1231. It is in his reign that we

the Hapsburgs continued to increase rapidly. In 1273 | have the first recorded meeting of the “landsgemeinde” (or

the head of the cadet line sold all his lands and rights in assembly) of Schwyz (1294), that of Uri being heard of as

the Forest districts to the head of the elder or Alsatian early as 1275. But in 1298 Albert of Hapsburg himself

line, Rudolph, who a few months later was elected to the | was elected to the empire. His rule was strict and severe,

imperial throne, in virtue of which he acquired for his though not oppressive. He did not indeed confirm the

family in 1282 the duchy of Austria, which now for the | charters of Uri or of Schwyz, but he did not attack the

first time became connected with the Hapsburgs. Rudolph | ancient rights of the former, and in the latter he exercised

recognized the privileges of Uri but not those of Schwyz; | his rights as a landowner and did not abuse his political

and, as he now united in his own person the characters of rights as emperor or as count. In Unterwalden we find

emperor, count of the Ziirichgau and of the Aargau, and | that in 1304 the two valleys were joined together under a

landowner in the Forest districts (a name occurring first | common administrator, a great step forwards to permanent

in 1289), such a union of offices might be expected to result | union. The stories of Albert's tyrannical actions in the

in a confusion of rights. On April 16, 1291, Rudolph | Forest districts are not heard of till two centuries later,

bought from the abbey of Murbach in Alsace (of which he | though no doubt the union of offices in his person was @

was "'advocate") all its rights over the town of Lucerne | permanent source of alarm to the Confederation. It was

and the abbey estates in Unterwalden. It thus seemed | in his time too that the "terrier " (or list of manors and

probable that the other Forest districts would be shut off estates, with enumeration of all quit rents, dues, &c., pay-

from their natural means of communication with the outer | able by the tenants to their lords) of all the Hapsburg

world by way of the lake. Rudolph's death, on July 15 possessions in Upper Germany was begun, and it was on

of the same year, cleared the way, and a fortnight later | the point of being extended to Schwyz and Unterwalden

(August 1) the Everlasting League was made between | when Albert was murdered (1308) and the election of

the men of Uri, Schwyz, and Nidwald (the words "et } Henry of Luxemburg roused the free men to resist the

vallis superioris," 7z.e., Obwald, were inserted later on the | officials charged with the survey. Despite his promise to

original seal of Nidwald) for the purpose of self-defence | restore to the Hapsburgs all rights enjoyed by them under

against a common foe. We do not know the names of the | his three predecessors (or maintain them in possession),

delegates of each valley who concluded the treaty, nor the Henry confirmed, on June 3, 1309, to Uri and Schwy2

place where it was made, nor have we any account of the | their charters of 1297, and, for some unknown reason,

deliberations of which it was the result. The common seal confirmed to Unterwalden all the liberties granted by his

—that great outward sign of the right of a corporate body | predecessor, though as a matter of fact none had been

to act in its own name without needing to ask the permis- | granted. This charter, and the nomination of one

sion of auy external authority—appears first in Uriin 1243, | imperial bailiff to administer the three districts, had the

1232-1352.]

effect of placing them all (despite historical differences) in an identical political position, and that the most

A few days later the Confederates made a fresh treaty of alliance with Zurich; and in 1310 the emperor placed certain other inhabitants of Schwyz on the same privileged footing as the free community. The apsburgs were put off with promises ; and, though their request (1311) for an inquiry into their precise rights in Alsace and in the Forest districts was granted, no steps were taken to carry out this investigation. Thus in Henry's time the struggle was between the empire and the Hapsburgs as to the recognition of the rights of the latter, not between the Hapsburgs and those dependent on them as landlords or counts.

On Henry's death in 1313 the electors hesitated long setween Frederick the Handsome of Hapsburg and Louis f Bavaria. The men of Schwyz seized this opportunity 'or making a wanton attack on the great abbey of insiedeln, with which they had a long-standing quarrel is to rights of pasture. The abbot caused them to e excommunicated, and Frederick (the choice of the minority of the electors), who was the hereditary "advo- vate" of the abbey, placed them under the ban of the mpire. Louis, to whom they appealed, removed the)oan; on which Frederick issued a decree by which he estored to his family all their rights and possessions in he three valleys and Urseren, and charged his brother _4zeopold with the execution of this order. The Con- 'ederates hastily concluded alliances with Glarus, Urseren, \rt, and Interlaken to protect themselves from attack on }very side. Leopold collected a brilliant army at the Austrian town of Zug in order to attack Schwyz, while » body of troops was to take Unterwalden in the rear oy way of the Briinig pass. On November 15, 1315, 'ueopold, with from 15,000 to 20,000 men, moved forward |jlong the shore of the Lake of Egeri, intending to assail jhe village of Schwyz by climbing the steep hillside above he sonthern end of the lake, through the narrow pass of orgarten between the mountain and the lake. At the jammit of the pass waited the valiant band of the Con- 'pderates, from 1300 to 1500 strong. The march up the "Hgged and slippery slope threw the Austrian army into jisarray, which became a rout and mad flight when huge joulders and trunks of trees were hurled from above by "heir foes, who charged down on them, and drove them pito the lake. No fewer than 1500 Austrians fell ; their Wrilliant cavalry had completely failed before the onset of ye lightly armed Swiss footmen. Leopold fled in hot aste to Winterthur, and the attack by the Briinig was riven back by the men of Unterwalden. On December | 1315, representatives of the victorious highlanders met " Brunnen, on the Lake of Lucerne, not far from Schwyz, nd renewed the Everlasting League of 1291. In their in lines the two documents are very similar, the later king chiefly an expansion of the earlier. That of 1315 } in German (in contrast to the 1291 League, which is 1 Latin), and has one or two striking clauses largely hdebted to a decree issued by Zurich on July 24, 1291. sone of the three districts or their dependents is to cognize a new lord without the consent and counsel of he rest (this is probably meant to provide for an inter-

Pgnum in or disputed election to the empire, possibly for Ne chance of the election of a Hapsburg); strict obedience 4 all lawful matters is to be rendered to the rightful lord fh each case, unless he attacks or wrongs any of the Con- Rderates, in which case they are to be free from all Hligations; no negotiations, so long as the "Lander" ave no lord, are to be entered on with outside powers, ave by common agreement of all. Louis solemnly recog-

nized and confirmed the new League in 1316, and in 1318 a truce was concluded between the Confederates and the Hapsburgs, who treat with them on equal terms. The lands and rights annexed belonging to the Hapsburgs in the Forest districts are fully recognized as they existed in

the days of Henry of Luxemburg, and freedom of com- merce is granted. But there is not one word about the political rights of the Hapsburgs as counts of the Ziirich- gau and Aargau. This distinction gives the key to the whole history of the relations between the Confederates and Hapsburgs; the rights of the latter as landowners are fully allowed, and till 1801 they possessed estates within the Confederation ; it is their political rights which are always contested by the Swiss, who desire to rule themselves, free from the meddling of any external power.

As early as 1320 we find the name "Swiss" (derived The from Schwyz, which had always been the leader in the Leg"

struggle) applied to the Confederation as a whole, though it was not till after Sempach (1386) that it came into popu- lar use, and it did not form the official name of the Con- federation till 1803. This is in itself a proof of the great renown which the League won by its victory at Morgarten. Another is that as years go by we find other members admitted to the privileges of the original alliance of the three Forest districts. First to join the League (1 332) was the neighbouring town of

Lucerne, which had grown up round the monastery of St Leodegar (whence the place took its name), perhaps a colony, certainly a cell of the great house of Murbach in Alsace, under the rule of which the town remained till its sale in 1291 to the Hapsburgs. This act of Lucerne was opposed by the house of Austria, but, despite the decision of certain chosen arbitrators in favour of the Hapsburg claims, the town clung to the League with which it was connected by its natural position, and thus brought a new element into the pastoral associa- tion of the Forest districts, which now surrounded the entire Lake of Lucerne. Next, in 1351, came the ancient city of Zurich, which in 1218, on the extinction of the house of Zaringen, had become a free imperial city in which the abbess of the Fraumiinster (the lady of Uri) had great influence, though from 1240 the citizens elected the council which she had previously named. In 1336 there had been a great civic revolution, headed by Rudolph Brun, which had raised the members of the craft guilds to a position in the municipal government of equal power with that of the patricians, who, however, did not cease intrigu- ing to regain their lost privileges, so that Brun, after long hesitation, decided to throw in the lot of the city with the League rather than with Austria. In this way the League now advanced from the hilly country to the plains, though the terms of the treaty with Zurich did not bind it so closely to the Confederates as in the other cases (the right of making alliances apart from the League being reserved, though the League was to rank before these), and hence rendered it possible for Zurich now and again to incline towards Austria in a fashion which did great hurt to its allies. In 1352 the League was enlarged by the admission of Glarus and Zug. Glarus belonged to the monastery of Sackingen on the Rhine (founded by the Irish monk Fridolin), of which the Hapsburgs were ‘ advocates,” claiming therefore many rights over the valley, which refused to admit them, and joyfully received the Con- federates who came to its aid; but it was placed on a lower footing than the other members of the League, being bound to obey their orders. Three weeks later the town and district of Zug, attacked by the League and abandoned by their Hapsburg masters, joined the Confederation, forming a transition link between the civic and rural members of the League. The immediate occasion of the union of these two districts was the war begun by the

Austrian duke against Zurich, which was ended by the Brandenburg peace of 1352, by which Glarus and Zug were to be restored to the Hapsburgs, who also regained their rights over Lucerne; Zug was won for good by a bold stroke of the men of Schwyz in 1864, but it was not till the day of Nafels (1388) that Glarus recovered its lost freedom. These temporary losses and the treaty made by Brun of Zurich with Austria in 1356 were, how- ever, far outweighed by the entrance into the League in 1353 of the famous town of Bern, which, founded in 1191 by Berthold V. of Ziringen, and endowed with great privileges, had become a free imperial city in 1218 on the extinction of the Zaringen dynasty. Founded for the purpose of bridling the turbulent feudal nobles around, many of whom had become citizens, Bern beat them back at Dornbiihl (1298), and made a treaty with the Forest districts as early as 1323. In 1339, at the bloody fight of Laupen, she had broken the power of the nobles for ever, and in 1352 had been forced by a treaty with Austria to take part in the war against Zurich, but soon after the conclusion of peace entered the League as the ally of the three Forest districts, being thus only indirectly joined to Lucerne and Zurich. The special importance of the accession of Bern was that the League now began to spread to the west, and was thus brought into con- nexion for the first time with the French-speaking land of Savoy. The League thus numbered eight members, the fruits of Morgarten, and no further members were admitted till 1481, after the Burgundian war. But, in order to thoroughly understand the nature of the League, it must be remembered that, while each of the five new members was allied with the original nucleus,—the three Forest districts,—these five were not directly allied to one another : Lucerne was allied with Zurich and Zug ; Zurich with Lucerne, Zug, and Glarus ; Glarus with Zurich ; Zug with Lucerne and Zurich; Bern with no one except the three original members. The circumstances under which each entered the League can alone explain the very intri- cate relations at this time of its eight members.

After a short interval of peace the quarrels with Austria broke out afresh ; all the members of the League, save the three Forest districts and Glarus, joined the great union of the South German cities; but their attention was soon called to events nearer home. Lucerne fretted much under the Austrian rule, received many Austrian subjects among her citizens, and refused to pay custom duties to the Austrian bailiff at Rothenburg, on the ground that she had the right of free traffic. An attack on the custom-house at Rothenburg, and the gift of the privileges of burghership to the discontented inhabitants of the little town of Sempach a short way off, so irritated Leopold III. (who then held all the possessions of his house out- side Austria) that, unmindful of the defeat of his uncle at Morgarten in 1315, he collected a great army, with the intention of crushing his rebellious town. Lucerne mean- while had summoned the other members of the League to her aid, and, though Leopold's feint of attacking Zurich caused the troops of the League to march at first in that direction, they discovered their mistake in time to turn back and check his advance on Lucerne. From 1500 to 1600 men of Uri, Schwyz, Unterwalden, and Lucerne opposed the 6000 which made up the Austrian army. The decisive fight took place on July 9, 1386, near Sempach, on a bit of sloping meadow-land, cut up by streams and hedges, which forced the Austrian kniglits to dismount. The great heat of the day, which rendered it impossible to fight in armour, and the furious attacks of the Con- federates, finally broke the Austrian line after more than one repulse and turned the day (see WINKELRIED). Leopold, with a large number of his followers, was slain,

and the Hapsburg power within the borders of the Con. federation finally broken. Glarus at once rose in arms against Austria, but it was not till the expiration of the truce made after Sempach that Leopold's brother, Albert of Austria, brought an army against Glarus, and was signally defeated at Nafels (not far from Glarus) on April 9, 1388, by a

handful of Glarus and Schwyz men, the troops of the other Confederates arriving too late. |

In 1389 a peace for seven years was made, the Comfed- Freedom erates being secured in all their conquests; an attempt from the made in 1393 by Austria by means of Schéno, the Pilltial chief magistrate of Zurich and leader of the patrician …

: 5 ; To p- party, to stir upa fresh attack failed owing to a rising burgs, of the burghers, who sympathized with the Confederates, and on July 16, 1394, the peace was prolonged for twenty years (and again in 1412 for fifty years), various stipula- tions being made by which the hundred years' struggle of the League to throw off all political dependence on the Hapsburgs was finally crowned with success. Glarus was freed on payment of 200 pounds annually (in 1389-1395 it bought up all the rights of Siackingen); Zug too was released from Austrian rule. Schwyz was given the town of Einsiedeln (the "advocatia" of the great abbey following in 1397); Lucerne got the Entlibuch, Sempach, and Rothenburg, the last-named being mortgaged only; Bern and Solothurn were confirmed in their conquests. Above all, the Confederation as a whole was relieved from the overlordship of the Hapsburgs, to whom, however, all their rights and dues as landed proprietors were expressly reserved,—Bern, Zurich, and Solothurn guaranteeing the maintenance of these rights and dues, with power in case | of need to call on the other Confederates to support them by arms. Thus the distinction always made by the Con- federates between the Hapsburgs as rulers and as land- owners was once more upheld ; and, though that powerful family entertained hopes of recovering its former rights, so that technically the treaties of 1389, 1394, and 1412 were but truces, it finally and for ever renounced all its feudal rights and privileges within the Confederation by ; the " Everlasting Compact" of 1474.

It is probable that Bern did not take any active share in the Senipach war because she was bound by the treaty of peace made with the Austrians in 1368 ; and Solothurn, allied with Bern, was doubtless a party to the treaty of 1394 (though not yet in the League), because of its

suf- ferings in 1382 at the hands of the Kyburg line of the Hapsburgs, whose possessions (Thun, Burgdorf, &e.) in 1384 fell into the hands of the two allies.

We may mention here the foray (known as the English or Gugler war) made in 1374-75 by Enguerrand de Coucy (husband of Isabella, daughter of Edward II. of England) and his freebooters (many of them Englishmen and Welshmen), called " Gugler" from their pointed steel caps, with the object of obtaining possession of certain towns in the Aargau (including Sempach), which he claimed as the dowry of his mother Catherine, daughter of the Leopold who was defeated at Morgarten. He was put to rout in the Entlibuch by the men of Bern, Fret burg, Schwyz, and Unterwalden in December 1375. This victory, which gave rise to the first great Swiss war song, was commemorated with great rejoicings as lately as 1875. –

II. The great victory at Sempach not merely vastly a Ee increased the fame of the Everlasting League but also mall, St enabled it to extend both its influence and its territory. Gall, and The 15th century is the period when both the League and Valais its several members took the aggressive, and the expan sion of their power and lands cannot be better seen than by comparing the state of things at the beginning and at the end of this century. The pastoral highlands – Appenzell (Abbatis Cella) and the town of St Gall he

1352-1428. |

long been trying to throw off the rights exercised over them by the great abbey of St Gall, founded in the 7th century by the Irish monk of that name. The Appen- zellers in particular had offered a stubborn resistance, and the abbot's troops had been beaten back by them in 1403 on the heights of Végelinseck, and again in 1405 in the great fight on the pass of the Stoss! (which led up into the highlands), in which the abbot was backed by the duke of Austria. Schwyz had given them some help, and in 1411 Appenzell was placed under the protection of the League (save Bern), with which in the next year the city of St Gall made a similar treaty to last ten years. So too in 1416-17 several of the "tithings" of the Upper Wallis or Valais (z.c., the upper stretch of the

Rhone valley), which in 1388 had beaten the bishop and the nobles in a great fight at Visp, became closely associated with Lucerne, Uri, and Unterwalden. It required aid in its final struggle against the great louse of Raron, the count- bishop of Sitten (or Sion), and the house of Savoy, which held Lower Wallis,—the Forest districts, on the other hand, wishing to secure themselves against Raron and Savoy in their attempt to permanently conquer the Val @Ossola on the south side of the Simplon pass. Bern, however, supported its burgher, the lord of Raron; but, by a peace made in 1420, the powers of the bishop and the lord of Raron were greatly diminished; the latter house soon after sold all its lands and rights, and migrated to the district of Toggenburg. Such were the first links which bound these lands with the League ; but they did not become full members for a long time—Appenzell in 1513, St Gall in 1803, Wallis in 1815. Space will not allow us to enumerate all the small con- _ quests made in the first half of the 15th century by every member of the League ; suflice it to say that each increased _ and rounded off its territory, but did not give the conquered lands any political rights, governing them as "subject lands," often very harshly. The same phenomenon of jlands which had won their own freedom playing the part of tyrant over other lands which joined them more or less |by their voluntary action is seen on a larger scale in the case of the conquest of the Aargau, and in the first attempts to secure a footing south of the Alps.

In 1412 the treaty of 1394 between the League and the | Hapsburgs had been renewed for fifty years; but when in 1415 Duke Frederick of Austria helped Pope John XXII. 'to escape from Constance, where the great council was then sitting, and the emperor Sigismund placed the duke under the ban of the empire, summoning all members of the empire to arm against him, the League hesitated, because of their treaty of 1412, till the emperor declared 'that all the rights and lands of Austria in the League were [forfeited, and that their compact did not release them from their obligations to the empire. In the name, therefore, 'of the emperor, and by his special command, the different members of the League overran the extensive Hapsburg Possessions in the Aargau. 'The chief share fell to Bern, 'but certain districts (known as the Freie Aemter) were joined together and governed as bailiwicks

held in common |by all the members of the League (save Uri, busied in tlie ‘south, and Bern, who had already secured the lion’s share of the spoil for herself). This is the first case in which the League as a whole took up the position of rulers over districts which, though guaranteed in the enjoyment of ‘their old rights, were nevertheless politically unfree. yn encouragement and a reward, Sigismund had granted

allie —

” The tales of the heroic defence of Uli Rottach of Appenzell, and o£ the appearance of a company of Appenzell women disguised as varriors which turned the battle, are told in connexion with this fight, sut do not appear till the 17th and 18th centuries, being thus quite |

| ii

o

t

Sa bo a Beh DD

785

in advance to the League the right of criminal jurisdiction (“haute justice ” or “ Blutbann ”’), which points to the fact that they were soon to become independent of the empire, as they were of Austria. But all through the 15th century it must be carefully borne in mind that the members of the League were constantly recognized as and acknowledged themselves to be members of the empire.

As the natural policy of Bern was to scek to enlarge its borders at the expense of Austria, and later of Savoy,

Anhistorical, so far as our genuine evidence goes.

so we find that Uri, shut off by physical causes from extension in other directions, as steadily turned its eyes towards the south. In 1410 the valley of Urseren was finally joined to Uri; though communications

were diffi- cult, and carried on only by means of the “stiebende Briicke,” a wooden bridge suspended by chains over the Reuss, along the side of a great rocky buttress (pierced in

1707 by the tunnel known as the Urnerloch), yet this

enlargement of the territory of Uri gave it complete com- mand over the St Gotthard pass, long commercially import- ant, and now to serve for purposes of war and conquest. Already in 1403 Uri and Obwald had taken advantage of a quarrel with the duke of Milan as to custom dues at the market of Varese to occupy the long narrow valley on the south of the pass called the Val Leventina; in 1410 the men of the same two lands, exasperated by the insults of the local lords, called on the other members of the League, and all jointly (except Bern) occupied the Val d’Ossola, on the south side of the Simplon pass. But in 1414 they lost this to Savoy, and, with the object of getting it back, obtained in 1416-17 the alliance of the men of Upper Wallis, then fighting for freedom, and thus regained the valley, despite the exertions of the great Milanese general Carmagnola. In 1419 Uri and Obwald bought from its lord the town and district of Bellinzona. This rapid advance, however, did not approve itself to the duke of Milan, and Carmagnola reoccupied both valleys ; the Con- federates were not at one with regard to these southern conquests ; a small body pressed on in front of the rest, but was cut to pieces at Arbedo near Bellinzona in 1422. A bold attempt in 1425 by a Schwyzer, Peter Rissi by name, to recover the Val d’Ossola caused the Confederates to send a force to rescue these adventurers ; but the duke of Milan intrigued with the divided Confederates, and finally in 1426, by a payment of a large sum of money and the grant of certain commercial privileges, the Val Leventina, the Val d’Ossola, and Bellinzona were restored to him. Thus the first attempt of Uri to acquire a footing south of the Alps had failed, but the wish to recover its lost conquests still continued, and a later attempt was more successful, leading to the inclusion in the Confederation of what has been called “Italian Switzerland.”

First Italian

con-

quests.

The original contrasts between the social condition of The first the different members of the League became more marked “vil war.

when the period of conquest began, and led to quarrels and ill-feeling in the matter of the Aargau and the Italian conquests which a few years later ripened into a civil war, brought about by the dispute as to the succession to the lands of Frederick, count of Toggenburg, the last male representative of his house. Count Frederick’s prede- cessors had greatly extended their domains, so that they took in not only the Toggenburg or upper valley of the Thur, but Uznach, Sargans, the Rhine valley between Feldkirch and Sargans, the Prittigau, and the Davos valley. He himself, the last great feudal lord on the left bank of the Rhine, had managed to secure his vast posses- sions by making treaties with several members of the League, particularly Zurich (1402) and Schwyz (1417),— from 1428 inclining more and more to Schwyz (then ruled by Ital Reding), being disgusted with the arrogant

| behaviour of Stiissi, the burgomaster of Zurich. His

death (April 30, 1436) was the signal for the breaking out of strife. The Prittigau and Davos valley formed the League of the Ten Jurisdictions in Rhetia (see below), while Frederick’s widow sided with Zurich against Schwyz for different portions of the great inheritance which had been promised them. After being twice defeated, Zurich was forced in 1440 to buy peace by certain cessions (the Upper March) to Schwyz, the general feeling of the Con- federates being opposed to Zurich, several of them going so far as to send men and arms to Schwyz. Zurich, how- ever, was bitterly disappointed at these defeats, and had recourse to that policy which she had adopted in 1356 and 1393—an alliance with Austria (concluded in 1442), which now held the imperial throne in the person of Frederick III. Though technically within her rights ac- cording to the terms on which she had joined the League in

1351, this act of Zurich caused the greatest irritation in the Confederation, and civil war at once broke out, especially when the Hapsburg emperor had been solemnly received and acknowledged in Zurich. In 1443 the Zurich troops were completely defeated at St Jakob on the Sihl, close under the walls of the city, Stiissi himself being slain. Next year the city itself was long besieged. Frederick, unable to get help elsewhere, procured from Charles VII. of France the despatch of a body of Armagnac free lances (the Ecorcheurs), who came, 30,000 strong, under the dauphin Louis, plundering and harrying the land, till, at the very gates of the free imperial city of Basel (which had made a twenty years' alliance with Bern), by the leper house of St Jakob on the Birs (August 26, 1444), the desperate resistance of a small body of Confederates (1200 to 1500) till cut to pieces, checked the advance of the freebooters, who sustained such tremendous losses that, though the victors, they hastily made peace, and returned whence they had come. Several small en- gagements ensued, Zurich long declining to make peace because the Confederates required, as the result of a solemn arbitration, the abandonment of the Austrian alliance. At length it was concluded in 1450, the Confederates restoring almost all the lands they had won from Zurich. Thus ended the third attempt of Austria to conquer the League by means of Zurich, which used its position as an imperial free city greatly to the harm of the League, and was the . cause of the first civil war which distracted the League. These fresh proofs of the valour of the Confederates, and of the growing importance of the League, did not fail to produce important results. In 1452 the " Confederates of the Old League of Upper Germany" (as they styled themselves) made their first treaty of alliance with France, a connexion which was destined to exercise so much influ- ence on their history. Round the League there began to gather a new class of allies (known as " Zugewandte Orte," or associated districts), more closely joined to it, or to certain members of it, than by a mere treaty of friendship, yet not being admitted to the rank of a full member of the League. Of these associates three, the

abbot (1451) and town of St Gall (1454), and the town |

of Bienne (Biel), through its alliance (1352) with Bern, were given seats and votes in the diet, being called “soci”; while others, known as “ confcederati,” were not so closely bound to the League, such as Wallis (1416-17), Schaff- hausen (1454), Miihlhausen (1466), Rothweil (1463).! Ap- penzell, too, in 1452, rose from the rank of a “‘ protected district” into the class of associates, outside which were certain places “ protected” by several members of the League, such as Gersau (1359), the abbeys of Engelberg (c. 1421) and Einsiedeln (1397-1434), and the town of

1 To the class of ‘ confcederati” belonged in later times Neuchatel

(1495-98), the Leagues of Rhetia (1497-98), Geneva (1519-86), and the bishop of Basel (1579).

Rapperschwyl (1458). The relation of the “associates” to the League may be compared with the ancient practice of “commendation”: they were bound to obey orders in the matter of declaring war, making alliances, &e.

In 1489 Sigismund succeeded his father Frederick in the Hapsburg lands in Alsace, the Thurgau, and Tyrol, and, being much irritated by the constant encroachments of the Confederates, in particular by the loss of Rapper. schwyl (1458), declared war against them, but fared very badly. In 1460 the Confederates overran the Thurgau, and occupied Sargans. Winterthur was only saved by an heroic defence. Hence in 1461 Sigismund had to give up his claims on those lands and renew the peace for fifteen years, while in 1467 he sold Winterthur to Zurich. Thus the whole line of the Rhine was lost to the Haps- burgs, who retained (till 1802) in the territories of the Confederates the Frickthal only. The Thurgovian baili-

wicks were governed in common as “subject” lands by all the Confederates except Bern. The touchiness of the now rapidly

advancing League was shown by the eager- ness with which in 1468 its members took up arms against certain small feudal nobles who were carrying on a harassing guerilla warfare with their allies Schaffhausen and Mihlhausen. They laid siege to Waldshut, and to buy them off Sigismund in August 1468 engaged to pay 10,000 gulden as damages by June 24, 1469; in default of payment the Confederates were to keep for ever the Black Forest, Waldshut, and certain other Black Forest towns on the Rhine. A short time before (1467) the League had made treaties of friendship with Philip the Good, duke of Burgundy, and with the duke of Milan. All was now prepared for the intricate series of intrigues which led up to the Burgundian War,—a great epoch in the history of the League, as it created a common national feel- ing, enormously raised its military reputation, and brought about the close connexion with certain parts of Savoy which finally (1803-15) were admitted into the League.

had promised to pay. In this strait he turned to Charles the Bold (properly the Rash), duke of Burgundy, who was then beginning his wonderful career, and aiming at restoring the kingdom of Burgundy. For this purpose Charles wished to marry his daughter and _ heiress to Maximilian, son of the emperor, and first cousin of Sigis- mund, in order that the emperor might be induced to give him the Burgundian crown. Hence he was ready to meet Sigisniund's advances. On May 9, 1469, Charles promised to give Sigismund 50,000 florins, receiving as security for repayment Alsace, the Breisgau, the Sundgau, the Black Forest, and the four Forest towns on the Rhine (Rheinfelden, Sackingen, Lauffenburg, and Waldshut); im addition, Charles took Sigismund under his protection, specially against the Swiss, and agreed to give him aid im a war if he was attacked by them. It was not unnatural for Sigismund to think of attacking the League, but Charles's engagement to him is quite inconsistent with the friendly agreement made between Burgundy and the League as late as 1467. The emperor then on his side annulled Sigismund's treaty of 1468 with the Swiss, and placed them under the ban of the empire. Charles com- mitted the mortgaged lands to Peter von Hagenbach, who proceeded to try to establish his master's power there by such harsh and severe measures as to cause all the people to murmur, then rise against him.

The Swiss in these circumstances began to look towards Louis XI. of France, who had confirmed the treaty of friendship made with them by his father in 1452. Sigis- mund had applied to him early in 1469 to help hum 10 his many troubles, and to give him aid against the Swiss | but Louis had point-blank refused. Anxious to secure

——_

Sigismund did not know where to obtain the sum he i gundian ar.

| Steps.

_ Bern to Charles. 'suspicious of this movement to the west, by which Bern alone could profit, though the League as a whole might 'lose ; then, too, Uri had in 1440 finally won the Val Lev-

1436-1476.]

their neutrality in case of his war with Charles, he made

| a treaty with them on August 13, 147 0, to this effect. All

the evidence goes to show that Sigismund was not a tool in the hands of Louis, and that Louis, at least at that time, had no definite intention of involving Charles and the Swiss in a war, but wished only to secure his own flank.

Sigismund in the next few years tried hard to get from Charles the promised aid against the Swiss (the money was paid punctually enough by Charles on his behalf), who put him off with various excuses. Charles on his side, in 1471-72, tried to make an alliance with the Swiss, his efforts being supported by a party in Bern headed by Adrian von Bubenberg. Probably Charles wished to use both Sigismund and the Swiss to further his own interests, but his shifty policy had the effect of alienating both from him. Sigismund, disgusted with Charles, now inclined towards Louis, whose ally he for- mally became in the summer of 1473,—a change which was the real cause of the emperor's flight from Treves in November 1473, when he had come there

expressly to crown Charles. The Confederates on their side were greatly moved by the oppression of their friends and allies in Alsace by Hagenbach, and tried in vain (January 1474) to obtain some redress from his master. Charles's too astute policy had thus lost him both Sigismund and the Swiss. They now looked upon Louis, who, thoroughly

_ aware of Charles's ambition, and fearing that his disap- ' pointment at Treves would soon lead to open war, aimed at a master stroke—no less than the reconciliation of

Sigismund and the Swiss. This on the face of it seemed

impracticable, but common need and Louis's dexterous _ management brought it to pass, so that on March 30, _ 1474, the Everlasting Compact was signed at Constance, _ by which Sigismund finally renounced all Austrian claims on the lands of the Confederates, and guaranteed them in | quiet enjoyment of them ; they, on the other hand, agreed to support him if Charles did not give up the mortgaged ' lands when the money was paid down.

The next day the Swiss joined the league of the Alsatian and Rhine

i cities, as also did Sigismund. Charles was called on to receive the money contributed by the Alsatian cities, and

to restore his lands to Sigismund. He, however, took no Within a week the oppressive bailiff Hagenbach was captured, and a month later (May 9, 1474) he was put to death, Bern alone of the Confederates being represented. On October 9 the emperor, acting of course at the instance of Sigismund, ordered them to declare war against Charles, which took place on October 25, Bern acting in the name of the Confederates, and

) alleging that they made war solely by order of the emperor) and not as principals. his alliance with the Confederates, promising money and jpensions, the latter to be increased if he did not send ' men. directs Swiss policy, though all the Confederates are not) quite agreed. She

was specially exposed to attack from Charles and Charles's ally (since 1468) Savoy, and her' | best chance of extending her territory lay towards the west and south. A forward policy was thus distinctly _the best for Bern, and this was the line supported by the | French party under Nicholas von Diesbach, Von Bubenberg

Next day Louis formally ratified

Throughout these negotiations and later, Bern

Opposing it, though not with any idea of handing over The Forest districts, however, were very

entina, and she and her neighbours favoured a southerly policy—a policy which was crowned with success after

_ the gallant victory won at Giornico in 1478 by a handful

So £7 eh LeAN D

187

of men from Zurich, Lucerne, Uri, and Schwyz over 12,000 Milanese troops, though the main body of the Confederates was already on its way home. Thus Uri gained for the first time a permanent footing south of the Alps, not long before Bern had won its first conquests from Savoy.

The war in the west was begun by Bern and her allies (Freiburg, Solothurn, &c.) by marauding expeditions across the Jura, in which Héricourt (November 1474) and Bla- mont (August 1475) were taken, both towns being held of Charles by the "sires" de Neuchatel, a cadet line of the counts of Monthéliard. It is said that in the former expedition the white cross was borne (for the first time) as the ensign of the Confederates, but not in the other. Meanwhile Yolande, the duchess of Savoy, had, through fear of her brother Louis XI. and hatred of Bern, finally joined Charles and Milan (January 1475), the immediate result of which was the capture, by the Bernese and friends (on the way

back from a foray on Pontarlier in the Free County of Burgundy or Franche Comté) of several places in Vaud, notably Granson and Kchallens, both held of Savoy by a member of the house of Challon, princes of Orange (April 1475), as well as Orbe and Jougne, held by the same, but under Burgundy. In the summer Bern seized on the Savoyard district of Aigle. Soon after (October-November 1475) the same energetic policy won for her the Savoyard towns of Morat, Avenches, Estavayer, and Yverdun; while (September) the Upper Wallis, which had conquered all Lower or Savoyard Wallis, entered into alliance with Bern for the purpose of opposing Savoy by preventing the arrival of Milanese troops. Alarmed at their success, the emperor and Louis deserted (June-September) the Confederates, who thus, by the influence of Louis and Bernese ambition, saw themselves led on and then abandoned to the wrath of Charles, and very likely to lose their new conquests. They had entered on the war as "' helpers" of the emperors, and now became principals in the war against Charles, who raised the siege of Neuss, made an alliance with Edward IV. of England, received the surrender of Lorraine, and hastened across the Jura (February 1476) to the aid of his ally Yolande. On February 21 Charles laid siege to Granson, and after a week's siege the garrison of Bernese and Freiburgers had to surrender, and, by way of retalia- tion for the massacre of the garrison of Estavayer in 1475, of the 412 men two only were spared in order to act as executioners of their comrades. This hideous news met a large body of the Confederates gathered together in great haste to relieve the garrison, and going to their rendezvous at Neuchatel, where both the count and town had become allies of Bern in 1406. An advance body of Bernese, Freiburgers, and Schwyzers, in order to avoid the castle of Vauxmarcus (seized by Charles), by the Lake of Neuchatel, on the direct road from Neuchatel to Gran- son, climbed over a wooded spur to the north, and attacked (March 2) the Burgundian outposts. Charles drew back his force in order to bring down the Swiss to the more level ground where his cavalry could act, but his rear misinterpreted the order, and when the main Swiss force appeared over the spur the Burgundian army was seized with a panic and fled in disorder. The Swiss had gained a glorious victory, and regained their conquest of Granson, besides capturing very rich spoil in Charles's camp, parts of which are

preserved to the present day in various Swiss armouries. Such was the famous battle of Granson. Charles at once retired to Lausanne, and set about reorganizing his army. He resolved to advance on Bern by way of Morat (or Murten), which was occupied by a Bernese garrison under Von Bubenberg, and laid siege to it on June 9. The Confederates had now put away all jealousy of Bern, and collected a large army. The decisive battle took place on the afternoon of June

Internal disputes in the

League.

788

22, after the arrival of the Zurich contingent under Hans Waldmann. English archers were in Charles's army, while with the Swiss was René, the dispossessed duke of Lorraine. After facing each other many hours in the driving rain, a body of Swiss, by outflanking Charles's van, stormed his palisaded camp, and the Burgundians were soon hopelessly beaten, the losses on both sides (a contrast to Granson) being exceedingly heavy. Vaud was reoccupied by the Swiss, Savoy having overrun it on Charles's advance ; but Louis now stepped in and procured the restoration of Vaud to Savoy, save Granson, Morat, Orbe, ahd Echallens, which were to be held by the Bernese jointly with the Freiburgers, Aigle by Bern alone,—Savoy at the same time renouncing all its claims over Freiburg. Thus French-speaking districts first became permanently connected with the Confederation, hitherto purely German, and the war had been one for the maintenance of recent conquests, rather than a purely defensive one against an encroaching neighbour desirous of crushing Swiss freedom. Charles tried in vain to raise a third army ; René recovered Lorraine, and on J anuary 5, 1477, under the walls of Nancy, Charles's wide-reaching plans were ended by his defeat and death, many Swiss being with René's troops. The wish of the Bernese to overrun Franche Comté was opposed by the older members of the Confederation, and finally, in 1479, Louis, by very large payments, secured the abandonment of all claims on that province, which was annexed to the French crown. These glorious victories really laid the foundation of Swiss nationality ; but soon after

them the long-standing jealousy between the civic and rural elements in the Con- federation nearly broke it up. This had always hindered common action save in case of certain pressing questions. In 1370, by the “ Parsons’ ordinance ” (Pfaffenbrief), agreed on by all the Confederates except Bern and Glarus, all residents, whether clerics or laymen, in the Confederation who were bound by oath to the duke of Austria were to swear faith to the Confederation, and this oath was to rank before any other; no appeal was to lie to any court spiritual or lay (except in matrimonial and purely spiritual questions) outside the limits of the Confederation, and many regulations were laid down as to the suppression of private wars and keeping of the peace on the high roads. Further, in 1393, the “ Sempach ordinance” was accepted by all the Confederates and Solothurn; this was an attempt to enforce police re- gulations and to lay down “articles of war” for the organization and discipline of the army of the Confede- rates, minute regulations being made against plundering, ——women, monasteries, and churches being in particular protected and secured. But save these two documents common action was limited to the meeting of two envoys from each member of the Confederation and one from each of the “socii” in the diet, the powers of which were greatly limited by the instructions brought by each envoy, thus entailing frequent reference to his Government, and included foreign relations, war and peace, and common arrangements as to police, pestilence, customs duties, coin- age, &c. The decisions of the majority did not bind the minority save in the case of the affairs of the bailiwicks ruled in common. Thus everything depended on common agreement and goodwill. But disputes as to the division of the lands conquered in the Burgundian war, and the proposal to admit into the League the towns of Freiburg and Solothurn, which had rendered such good help in the war, caused the two parties to form separate unions, for by the latter proposal the number of towns would have been made the same as that of the “ Lander,” which these did not at all approve. Suspended a moment by the campaign in the Val Leventina, these quarrels broke out

SBWIPTAnRL AWD

[pIsToRy,

after the victory of Giornico ; and at the diet of Stanz (December 1481), when it seemed probable that the fail. ure of all attempts to come to an understanding would result in the disruption of the League, the mediation of Nicholas von der Fliie (or Bruder Klaus), a holy hermit of Sachseln in Obwald, though he did not appear at the diet in person, succeeded in bringing both sides to reason, and the third great ordinance of the League—the "compact of Stanz "—was agreed on. By this the promise of mutual] aid and assistance was renewed, especially when one mem- ber attacked another, and stress was laid on the duty of the several Governments to maintain the peace, and not to help the subjects of any other member in case of a rising. The treasure and movables captured in the war

| Were to be equally divided amongst the combatants, the

territories and towns amongst the members of the League, As a practical proof of the reconciliation, on the same day the towns of Freiburg and Solothurn were received as full members of the Confederation, united with all the other members, though on less favourable terms than usual, for they were forbidden to make alliances, save with the con- sent of all or of the greater part of the other members, Both towns had long been allied with Bern, whose influence was greatly increased by their admission. Frei- burg, founded in 1178 by Berthold IV. of Zaringen, had on the extinction of that great dynasty (1218) be- come a free imperial city, but had bowed successively to Kyburg (1249), Austria, the sons of Rudolph (1277), and Savoy (1452); when Savoy gave up its claims in 1477 Freiburg once more became a free imperial city. She had become allied with Bern as early as 1243. The ancient Roman city of Solothurn (or Soleure) had been associated with Bern from 1351, but had in vain sought admission into the League in 1411. Both the new mem- bers had done much for Bern in the Burgundian war, and it was for their good service that she now procured them this splendid reward, in hopes perhaps of aid on other important and critical occasions.

The compact of Stanz strengthened the bonds which joined the members of the Confederation ; and the same centralizing tendency is

well seen in the attempt (1483- 89) of Hans Waldmann, the burgomaster of Zurich, to assert the rule of his city over the neighbouring country districts, to place all power in the hands of the guilds (whereas by Brun's constitution the patricians had an equal share), to suppress all minor jurisdictions, and to raise a uniform tax. But this idea of concentrating all powers in the hands of the Government aroused great resistance, and led to his overthrow and execution. Peter Kistler succeeded (1470) better at Bern in a reform on the same lines, but not of such a sweeping character.

The early history of each member of the Confederation, Practica

and of the Confederation itself, shows that they always .,

empire.

professed to belong to the empire, trying to become im- mediately dependent on the emperor in order to prevent the oppression of middle lords, and to enjoy practical liberty. The empire itself had now become very much of a shadow; cities and princes were gradually asserting their own independence, sometimes breaking away from it altogether. Now, by the time of the Burgundian war the Confederation stood in a position analogous to that of a powerful free imperial city. As long as the emperor's

' nominal rights were not enforced, all went well; but, when

Maximilian, in his attempt to reorganize the empire, erected in 1495 at Worms an imperial chamber which had Juris- diction in all disputes between members of the empire, the Confederates were very unwilling to obey it, partly because they could maintain peace at home by their own authority, and partly because it interfered with their practical independence. Again, their refusal to join the

fies

1476-1521. |

“Swabian League,” formed in 1488 by the lords and

cities of South Germany to keep the public peace, gave further offence, as well as their fresh alliances with France. Hence a struggle was inevitable, and the occa- sion by reason of which it broke out was the seizure by the Tyrolese authorities in 1499 of the Miinsterthal, which belonged to the “ Gotteshausbund,” one of the three leagues which had gradually arisen in Rhetia. These were the “ Gotteshausbund” in 1367 (taking in all the dependents of the cathedral church at Chur living in the Oberhalbstein and Engadine), the “Oberer or Grauer Bund” in 1395 and 1424 (taking in the abbey of Dissentis and many counts and lords in the Vorder Rhein valley, though its name is not derived, as often stated, from the “grey coats” of the first members, but from “ grawen ” or “grafen,” as so many counts formed part of it), and the “League of the Ten Jurisdictions” (Zehngerichtenbund), which arose in the Prattigau and Davos valley (1436) on the death of Count Frederick of Toggenburg, but which, owing to certain Austrian claims in it, was not quite so free as its neighbours. The first and third of these became allied in 1450, but the formal union of the three dates only from 1524, as documentary proof is want- ing of the alleged meeting at Vazerol in 1471, though practically before 1524 they had very much in common. In 1497 the Oberer Bund, in 1498 the Gotteshausbund, made a treaty of alliance with the Everlasting League or Swiss Confederation, the Ten Jurisdictions being un- able to do more than show sympathy, owing to Austrian influence, which was not bought up till 1649-52. Hence this attack on the Miinsterthal was an attack on an “associate” member of the Swiss Confederation, Maxi- milian being supported by the Swabian League ; but its real historical importance is the influence it had on the relations of the Swiss to the empire. The struggle lasted

several months, the chief fight being that “an der Calven ” or “auf der Malserheide” (May 22, 1499), in which Benedict Fontana, a leader of the Gotteshausbund men, performed many heroic deeds before his death. But, both sides being exhausted, peace was made at Basel on September 22, 1499. By this the matters in dispute were referred to arbitration, and the emperor annulled all the decisions of the imperial chamber against the Con- federation; but nothing was laid down as to

its future relations with the empire. No further real attempt, how- ever, was made to enforce the rights of the emperor, and the Confederation became a state allied with the empire, enjoying practical independence, though not formally freed till 1648. Thus, 208 years after the origin of the Con- federation, it had got rid of all Austrian claims (1394 and 1474), as well as all practical subjection to the emperor. But its further advance towards the position of an inde- pendent state was long checked by religious divisions within, and by the enormous influence of the French king on its foreign relations.

With the object of strengthening the northern border of the Confederation, two more full members were admitted in 1501—Basel and Schaffhausen—on the same terms as Freiburg and Solothurn. The city of Basel had originally been ruled by its bishop, but in the 14th century it became a free imperial city; before 1501 it had made no permanent alliance with the Confederation, though in con- tinual relations with it. Schaffhausen had grown up round the Benedictine monastery of All Saints, and became in the 13th century a free imperial city, but was pledged to Austria from 1330 to 1415, in which last year the emperor Sigismund declared all Duke Frederick's rights

forfeited in consequence of his abetting the flight of Pope

John XXII. It had become an "associate" of the Con- federation in 1454.

Swill tT Znk LA ND

189

A few years later, in 1513, Appenzell, which in 141] The and in 1452 an League

had become a "protected" district, "associate" member of the Confederation, was admitted

as the thirteenth full member; and this remained the members.

number till the fall of the old Confederation in 1798. Round the three original members had gathered first five others, united with the three, but not necessarily with each other; and then gradually there grew up an outer circle, consisting of five more, allied with all the eight old members, but tied down by certain stringent conditions. Constance, which seemed called by nature to enter the League, kept aloof, owing to a quarrel as to the criminal

jurisdiction in the Thurgau, which had been pledged to it

before the district was conquered by the Confederates. Neuchatel in 1495-98 became permanently allied with several members of the Confederation.

In the first years of the 16th century the influence of Conquests the Confederates south of the Alps was largely extended. ™ Italy.

The system of giving pensions, in order to secure the right of enlisting men within the Confederation, and of capitula- tions, by which the different members supplied troops, was originated by Louis XI. in 1474, and later followed by many other princes. Though a tribute to Swiss valour and courage, this practice had very evil results, of which the first fruits were seen in the Milanese (1500-1516). Both Charles VIII. (1484) and Louis XII. (1499 for ten years) renewed Louis XI.'s treaty. The French attempts to gain Milan were largely carried on by the help of Swiss mercenaries, some of whom were on the opposite side; and, as brotherly feeling was still too strong to make it possible for them to fight against one another, Ludovico Sforza's Swiss troops shamefully betrayed him to the French at Novara (1500). In 1500, too, the three Forest districts occupied Bellinzona at the request of its inhabitants, and in 1503 Louis XII. was forced to cede it to them. He, however, often held back the pay of his Swiss troops, and treated them as mere hirelings, so that when the ten years' treaty came to an end Matthew Schinner, bishop of Sitten (or Sion), induced them to join (1510) the pope, J ulius II., then engaged in forming the Holy League to expel the French from Italy. But when, after the battle of Ravenna, Louis XII. became all-powerful in Lombardy, 20,000 Swiss poured down into the Milanese and occupied it, Schmid, the burgomaster of

Zurich, naming Maximilian (Ludovico's son) duke of Milan, in return for which he ceded to the Confederates Locarno, Val Maggia, Mendrisio, and Lugano (1512), while the Rhetian leagues received Chiavenna, Bormio, and the Valtelline. (The former districts, with Bellinzona and the Val Leventina, were in 1803 made into the canton of Ticino, the latter were held by Rheetia till 1797.) In 1513 the Swiss completely defeated the French at Novara, and in 1514 Pace was sent by Henry VIII. of England to give pensions and get soldiers. Francis I. at once on his accession (1515) began to prepare to win back the Milanese, and, successfully evading the Swiss awaiting his descent from the Alps, beat them in a pitched battle at Marignano near Milan (September 13, 1515), which broke the Swiss power in North Italy, so that in 1516 a peace was made with France,—Wallis, the Rhzetian leagues, and St Gall being included on the side of the Confederates. Provisions were made for the neutrality of either party in case the other became involved in war, and large pensions were promised. This treaty was extended by another in 1521 (to which Zurich, then under Zwingli's influence, would not agree, holding aloof from the French alliance till 1614), by which the French king might, with the consent of the Confederation, enlist any number of men between 6000 and 16,000, paying them fit wages, and the pensions were raised to 3000 francs annually to each member of the Confederation. These two treaties were

the starting point and foundation of later French inter- ference with Swiss affairs, which became more and more oppressive, and was not finally thrown off till 1814.

IV. In 1499 the Swiss had practically renounced their allegiance to the emperor, the temporal chief of the world according to medieval theory; and in the 16th century a great number of them did the same by the world's spiritual chief, the pope. The scene of the revolt was Zurich, and the leader Ulrich Zwingli. But we cannot understand Zwingli's career unless we remember that he was almost more a political reformer than a religious one. In his former character his policy was

threefold. He bitterly opposed the French alliance and the pension and mercenary system, for he had seen its evils with his own eyes when serving as chaplain with the troops in the Milanese in 1512 and 1515. Hence in 1521 his influence kept Zurich back from joining in the treaty with Francis I. Then, too, at the time of the Peasant Revolt (1525), he did what he could to lighten the harsh rule of the city over the neighbouring rural districts, and succeeded in getting serfage abolished. Again he had it greatly at heart to secure for Zurich and Bern the chief power in the Confederation, because of their importance and size ; he wished to give them extra votes in the diet, and would have given them two-thirds of the "common bailiwicks " when these were divided. In his character as a religious reformer we must remember that he was a humanist, and deeply read in classical literature, which accounts for his turning the canonries of the Grossmiin- ster into professorships, reviving the old school of the Carolinum, and relying on the arm of the state to carry out religious changes. His theology sprang from a single ruling principle—the absolute and unlimited sovereignty of God. Hence his profound respect for the letter of the Bible led him to "legalism " and extreme Sabbatarianism. Hence his view of the incarnation bordered on Unitarianism, and sacraments were mere signs of that which is already given ; hence too sprang his denial of man's free will and his belief in absolute election and reprobation. Nay, God, being the absolute Author of all things, is the Author of evil, though He is not immoral, for He is above law, and what is morally wrong for man is not so for God. Zwingli began to preach the new views as early as 1516, long before and quite independently of Luther ; but it was only when at the end of 1518 he was called to Zurich as parish priest that he began to make any noise, and in fact it was even later (1522), when his admirers allowed themselves to eat fish in Lent, that disturbances arose, and the diet forbade all preaching which would disturb the public peace. But, after succeeding at two public disputations, his views rapidly gained ground at Zurich, which long, however, stood quite alone, the other Con- federates issuing an appeal to await the decision of the asked-for general council, and proposing to carry out by the arm of the state certain small reforms, while clinging to the old doctrines. Zwingli had to put down the extreme wing of the Reformers—the Anabaptists—by

force. Quarrels too arose as to allowing the new views in the "common bailiwicks." The disputation at Baden (1526) was in favour of the maintainers of the old faith ; but that at Bern (1528) resulted in securing for the new views the support of that great town, and so matters began to take another aspect. In 1528 Bern joined the union formed in 1527 in favour of religious freedom by Zurich and Constance (Christliches Burgrecht), and her example was followed by Schaffhausen, St Gall, Basel, and Mihlhausen. This attempt to virtually break up the League was met in February 1529 by the offensive and defensive alliance made with King Ferdinand of Hungary (brother of the emperor) by the three Forest districts,

with Lucerne and Zug, followed (April 1529) by the "Christliche Vereinigung," or union between these fiye members of the League. Zurich was greatly moved by this, and, as Zwingli held that for the honour of God war was as necessary as iconoclasm, war seemed imminent ; but Bern held back ; and the first peace of Kappel was concluded (June 1529), by which the Hungarian alliance was annulled and the principle of "religious parity" (or freedom) was admitted in the case of each member of the League and in the "common bailiwicks." This was at once a | victory and a check for Zwingli. He tried to make an alliance with the Protestants in Germany, but failed at the meeting at Marburg (October 1529) to come to an agreement with Luther on the subject of the eucharist, and the division between the Swiss and the German Reformations was stereotyped. Zwingli now developed his views as to the greater weight which Zurich and Bern ought to have in the League. Quarrels too went on in the "common bailiwicks," for the members of the League who clung to the old faith had a majority of votes in matters relating to these districts. Zurich tried to cut off supplies : of food from reaching the Catholic members (contrary to the wishes of Zwingli), and, on the death of the abbot of St Gall, disregarding the rights of Lucerne, Schwyz, and Glarus, who shared with her the office of protectors of the abbey, suppressed the monastery, giving the rule of the land and the people to her own officers. Bern in vain tried to moderate this aggressive policy, and the Catholic members of the League indignantly advanced towards Zurich. Near Kappel, on October 11, 1531, the Zurich vanguard under Gdéldli

was (perhaps owing to his treachery) surprised, and despite reinforcements the men of Zurich were beaten, among the slain being Zwingli himself. Another defeat completed the discomfiture of Zurich, and by the second peace of Kappel (November

1531) the principle of "parity" was recognized, not

---

merely in the case of each member of the League and the "common bailiwicks," but also in that of each parish or "commune." Thus everywhere the rights of a minority |

were protected from the encroachments of the majority. The " Christliches Burgrecht" was abolished, and Zurich condemned to pay heavy damages. Bullinger succeeded Zwingli, but this treaty meant that neither side could now try to convert the other wholesale. The League was permanently split into two religious camps : the Catholics, who met at Lucerne, numbered, besides the five already mentioned, Freiburg, Solothurn, Appenzell (Inner Rhoden), and St Gall (with Wallis), thus commanding seventeen votes (out of twenty-nine) in the diet ; the Evangelicals were Zurich, Bern, Basel, Schaffhausen, Appenzell (Ausser Rhoden) (with Graubiinden), who met at Aarau; while Thurgau and Glarus were divided.

Bern had her eyes always fixed upon the Savoyard on lands to the south-west, in which she had got a footing my Pan. 1475, and now made zeal for religious reforms the excuse for resuming her advance policy. In 1526 William Farel, a preacher from Dauphiné, had been sent to reform Aigle, Morat, and Neuchatel. In 1532 he came to Geneva, an ancient city of which the rule had long been disputed by the prince-bishop, the burgesses, and the house of Savoy, the latter holding the neighbouring districts. She had become in 1519 the ally of Freiburg, in 1526 that of Bern also; and in 1530, by their influence, a peace was made between the contending parties. (In 1531 Bonivard, the prior of St Victor, for joining a rising in favour of political liberty, was imprisoned in the castle of Chillon, remaining there till 1536.) The religious changes introduced by Farel greatly displeased Freiburg,

which abandoned the alliance (1534), and in 1535 the a mation was firmly planted in the city. The duke ©

1499-1648.]

Savoy, however, took up arms against Bern (1536), who overran Gex, Vaud, and the independent bishopric of Lausanne, as well as the Chablais to the south of the lake. Geneva was only saved by the unwillingness of the citizens. and carried matters with a high hand. Shortly after this John Calvin, a refugee from Picardy, was, when passing through Geneva, detained by Farel to aid him, and, after an exile from 1538-1541, owing to opposition of the papal party, and of the burghers, who objected to Bernese rule, he set up his wonderful theocratic government in the city, pushing Zwingli's principles to their ultimate conclusions (see Servervs) (1553), and in 1555 expelling many who upheld municipal liberty, replacing them by French, English, Italians, and Spaniards as new burghers, whose names are still frequent in Geneva (e.g., Candolle, Mallet, Diodati). His theological views led to disputes with the Zurich Reformers, which were partly settled by the Consensus Tigurinus of 1549, and more completely by the Ifelvetic Confession of 1566, which formed the basis of union between the two parties.

By the time of Calvin's death (1564) the old faith had begun to take the offensive; the reforms made by the council of Trent urged on the Catholics to make an attempt to recover lost ground. Emmanuel Philibert, duke of Savoy, the hero of St Quentin (1557), and one of the greatest generals of the day, with the support of the Catholic members of the League, demanded the restoration of the districts seized by Bern in 1536, and on October 30, 1564, the treaty of Lausanne confirmed the decision of the other Confederates sitting as arbitrators (according to the old constitutional custom). By this treaty Gex, the Genevois, and the Chablais were to be given back, while Vevey, Chillon, Lausanne, Yverdun were to be kept by Bern, who engaged to maintain the old rights and liberties of Vaud, which in 1565 were further placed under the special protection of France. Thus Bern lost the lands south of the lake, in which St Francis of Sales, the exiled prince-bishop of Geneva,

at once proceeded to carry out the restoration of the old faith. In 1555 Bern and Freiburg, as creditors of the debt-laden count, divided the county of Gruyéres, thus getting fresh French-speaking subjects. In 1558 Geneva renewed her alliance with Bern, and in 1584 she made one with Zurich.

The decrees of the council of Trent had been accepted fully by the Catholic members of the League, so far as ™ relates to dogma, but not as regards discipline or the

‘ relations of church and state, the sovereign rights and jurisdiction of each state being always carefully reserved. The Counter Reformation, however, or reaction in favour of the old faith, was making rapid progress in the Con- federation, mainly through the indefatigable exertions of Charles Borromeo, from 1560 to 1584 archbishop of Milan (in which diocese the Italian bailiwicks were included), and nephew of Pius IV., supported at Lucerne by Ludwig Pfyffer, who, having been (1562-1570) the chief of the Swiss mercenaries in the French wars of religion, did so much till his death (1594) to further the religious reac- tion at home that he was popularly known as the “ Swiss king.” In 1574 the Jesuits, the great order of the reaction, were established at Lucerne; in 1579 a papal nuncio came to Lucerne; Charles Borromeo founded the “Collegium Helveticum” at Milan for the education of forty-two young Swiss, and the Catholic members of the League made an alliance with the bishop of Basel; in 1581 the Capuchins were introduced to influence the more ignorant classes. Most important of all was the Golden or Borromean League, concluded (October 5, 1586) between the seven Catholic members of the Confederation (Uri, Schwyz, Unterwalden, Lucerne, Zug, Freiburg, and Solo-

Bern thus ruled north and south of the lake, |

thurn) for the maintenance of the true faith in their territories, each engaging to punish backsliding members and to help each other if

attacked by external enemies, notwithstanding any other leagues, old or new. This league marks the final breaking up of the Confederation into two great parties, which greatly hindered its pro- gress, The Catholic members had a majority in the diet, and were therefore able to refuse admittance to Geneva, Strasburg, and Miihlhausen. Another result of these religious differences was the breaking up of Appenzell into two bits (1597), each sending one representative to the diet—“ Inner Rhoden” remaining Catholic, “ Ausser Rhoden” adopting the new views. We may compare with this the action of Zurich in 1555, when she received the Protestant exiles from Locarno and the Italian baili- wicks into her burghership, and Italian names are found there to this day (¢.g., Orelli, Muralt). The duke of Savoy made several vain attempts to get hold of Geneva, the last (in 1602) being known as the ‘ Escalade,”

In the Thirty Years’ War the Confederation remained neutral, being bound both to Austria (1474) and to France (1516), and neither religious party wishing to give the other an excuse for calling in foreign armies, But the troubles in Rheetia threatened entanglements. Austria wished to secure the Miinsterthal (belonging to the League of the Ten Jurisdictions), and Spain wanted the command of the passes leading from the Valtelline (conquered by the leagues of Rhetia in 1512), the object being to connect the Hapsburg lands of Tyrol and Milan. In the Valtelline the rule of the Three Leagues was very harsh, and Spanish intrigues easily brought about the massacre of 1620, by which the valley was won, the Catholic members of the Confederation stopping the troops of Zurich and Bern. In 1622 the Austrians conquered the Prattigau, over which they still had certain feudal rights. French troops regained the Valtelline in 1624, but it was lost once more in 1629 to the imperial troops, and it was not till 1635 that the French, under Rohan, finally succeeded in holding it. The French, however, wished to keep it per- manently ; hence new troubles arose, and in 1637 the natives, under George Jenatsch, with Spanish aid drove them out, the Spaniards themselves being forced to resign it in 1639. It was only in 1649-52 that the Austrian rights in the Prittigau were finally bought up by the League of the Ten Jurisdictions, which thus gained its freedom,

In consequence of Ferdinand IL's edict of restitution (1629), by which the status quo of 1552 was re-established —the high-water mark of the Counter Reformation—the abbot of St Gall tried to make some religious changes in his territories, but the protest of Zurich led to the Baden compromise of 1632, by which, in the case of disputes on religious matters arising in the 'common bailiwicks," the decision was to be, not by a majority, but by means of friendly discussion—a logical application of the doctrine of religious parity—or by arbitration.

But by far the most important event in Swiss history in this age is the formal freeing of the Confederation from the empire. Basel had been admitted a member of the League in 1501, two years after the Confederation had been practically freed from the jurisdiction of the impe- rial chamber, though the city was included in the new division of the empire into "circles" (1521), which did not take in the older members of the Confederation. Basel, however, refused to admit this jurisdiction; the question was taken up by France and Sweden at the congress of Miinster, and formed the subject of a special clause in the treaties of Westphalia, by which the city of Basel and the other " Helvetiorum cantones" were declared to be " in the possession of almost entire liberty and exemption from the empire, and nullatenus subject

Formal

freedom from the empire.

French influ- ence, religious

divisions,

and rise of an aristo- cracy.

is 4

to the imperial tribunals." This was intended to mean exemption from all obligations to the empire (with which the Confederation was connected hereafter simply as a friend), and to be a definitive

settlement of the question. Thus by the events of 1499 and 1648 the Confederation had become an independent European state, which, by the treaty of 1516, stood as regards France in a relation of neutrality.

In 1668, in consequence of Louis XIV.'s temporary occupation of the Franche Comté, an old scheme for set- tling the number of men to be sent by each member of the Confederation to the joint army, and the appointment of a council of war in war time, that is, an attempt to create a common military organization, was accepted by the diet, which was to send two deputies to the council, armed with full political powers. This agreement, known as the Defensionale, is the only instance of joint and unanimous action in this miserable period of Swiss history, when re- ligious divisions crippled the energy of the Confederation.

Throughout the 17th and 18th centuries the Confedera- tion was practically a dependency of France. In 1614 Zurich for the first time joined in the treaty, which was renewed in 1663 with special provisions as regards the Protestant Swiss mercenaries in the king's pay and a promise of French neutrality in case of civil war in the League. The Swiss had to stand by while Louis XIV. won Alsace (1648), Franche Comté (1678), and Strasburg (1681). But, as Louis inclined more and more to an anti- Protestant policy, the Protestant members of the League favoured the Dutch military service ; and it was through their influence that in 1707 the "states " of the principality of Neuchatel, on the extinction of the Longueville line of these princes, decided in favour of the king of Prussia (representing the overlords—the house of Challon-Orange) as against the various French pretenders claiming from the Longueville dynasty by descent or by will. In 1715 the Catholic members of the League, in hopes of retrieving their defeat of 1712 (see below), agreed, while renewing the treaty and capitulations, to put France in the position of the guarantor of the League, with rights of interfering, in case of attack from within or from without, whether by counsel or arms. This last clause was simply the surrender of Swiss independence, and was strongly objected to by the Protestant members of the Confederation, so that in 1777 it was dropped, when all the Confederates made a fresh defensive alliance, wherein their sovereignty

and independence were expressly set forth. Thus France had succeeded to the position of the empire with regard to the Confederation, save that her claims were practically asserted and voluntarily admitted.

Between 1648 and 1798 the Confederation was dis- tracted by religious divisions, and feelings ran very high. A scheme to set up a central administration fell through in 1655, through jealousy of Bern and Zurich, the pro- posers. In 1656 a question as to certain religious refu- gees, who were driven from Schwyz and took refuge at Aurich, brought about the first Villmergen war, in which the Catholics were successful, and procured a clause in the treaty asserting very strongly the absolute sovereignty in religious as well as in political matters of each member of the League within its own territories. Later, the attempt of the abbct of St Gall to enforce his rights in the Toggenburg swelled into the second Villmergen war (1712), which turned out very ill for the defeated Catholics. Zurich and Bern were henceforth to hold in severalty Baden, Rapperschwyl, and part of the "common bailiwicks" of the Aargau, both towns being given a share in the government of the rest, and Bern in that of Thurgau and Rheinthal, from which as well as from that part of Aargau she had been carefully excluded in 1415 and 1460.

The only thing that prospered was the principle of « reli- gious parity," which was established by every treaty.

The diet had few powers; the Catholics had the majority there; the sovereign rights of each member of the League and the limited mandate of the envoys effectually checked all progress. Zurich, as the leader of the League, managed matters when the diet was not sitting, but could not en- force her orders. a collection of separate atoms, and it is really marvellous that it did not break up through its own weakness,

In these same two centuries, the chief feature in domestic Swiss politics is the growth of an aristocracy; the power of voting and the power of

ruling are placed in the hands of a small class. This is chiefly seen in Bern, Lucerne, Freiburg, and Solothurn, where there were not the primitive democracies of the Forest districts nor the government by guilds as at Zurich, Basel, and Schaff. hausen. It was effected by refusing to admit any new burghers, a practice which dates from the middle of the 16th century, and is connected (like the similar move ment in the smaller local units of the " communes" in the rural districts) with the question of poor relief after the suppression of the monasteries. Outsiders (Hintersissen or Niedgelassene) had no political rights, however long they might have resided, while the privileges of burgher- ship were strictly hereditary. Further, within the burghers, a small class succeeded in securing the monopoly of all public offices, which was kept up by the practice of co-opting, and was known as the " patriciate." So in Bern, out of 360 burgher families, 80 (in 1776 18 only) formed the ruling oligarchy ; and, though to foreigners the government seemed admirably managed, yet the last thing that could be said of it was that it was democratic. In 1749 Henzi made a fruitless attempt to overthrow this oligarchy, like Fatio at Geneva in 1707. The harsh character of Bernese rule (and the same holds good with reference to Uri and the Val Leventina) was shown in the great strictness with which Vaud was kept in hand: it was ruled as a conquered land by a benevolent despot, and we can feel no surprise that Davel in 1723 tried to free his native land, or that it was in Vaud that the principles of the French Revolution were most eagerly welcomed. Another result of this aristocratic tendency was the way in which the cities despised the neighbouring country districts, and managed gradually to deprive them of their equal political rights and to levy heavy taxes upon them. These and other grievances (the fall in the price of food after the close of the Thirty Years' War, the lowering of the value of the coin, &c.), combined with the presence of many soldiers discharged after the great war, led to the great Peasant Revolt (1653) in the territories of Bern, Solothurn, Lucerne, and Basel, interesting histori- cally as being the first popular rising since the cld days of the 13th and 14th centuries, and because reminiscences of legends connected with those times led to the appearance of the "three Tells," who greatly stirred up the people The rising was put down at the cost of much bloodshed, but the demands of the peasants were not granted. Yet during this period of

political powerlessness a Swiss literature first arises: Gessner and Tschudi in the 16th century are succeeded by Scheuchzer, Haller, Javater, Bodmer, De Saussure, Rousseau, J. von Miiller; the taste for Swiss travel is stimulated by the publication of Ebel's guide-book, based on the old Delicie; industry throve greatly. The residence of such brilliant foreign writers as Voltaire and Gibbon within or close to the territories of the Confederation helped on this remarkable intellectual revival. Political aspirations were not, however, wholly

crushed, and found their centre in the Helvetie Society, —

founded in 1762 by Balthasar and others.

The Confederation was little more than _

yt ti

|

Whic,

1648-1803.]

| The Confederation and France had been closely con- uected for so long that the outbreak of the French Revolution could not fail to affect the Swiss,

~~/new ideas were spread in the western part of the Con~~

ederation, and risings directed or stirred up. In 1790 sower Wallis rose against the oppressive rule of the upper listricts ; in 1792 Porrentruy defied the prince-bishop of 3asel, despite the imperial troops he summoned, declared he "Rauracian " republic, and three months later became he French department of the Mont Terrible ; Geneva was nly saved (1792) from France by a force sent from 'urich and Bern ; and the massacre of the Swiss guard at he Tuileries on August 10, 1792, aroused intense indigna- ion. The rulers, however, unable to enter into the new

_[Meas, contented themselves with suppressing them by

oree, ¢.g., Zurich in the case of Stadfa (1795). St Gall ypanaged to free itself from its abbot (1795-97), but he Leagues of Rheetia so oppressed their subjects in the altelline that in 1797 Bonaparte (after conquering the filanese from the Austrians) joined them to the Cisalpine epublic. The diet was distracted by party struggles, and te fall of the old Confederation was not far distant. The amours of the vast treasures stored up at Bern, and the ~~esire of securing a bulwark against Austrian attack, "pecially turned the attention of the Directory towards ie Confederation ; and this was utilized by the heads of ae reform party in the Confederation,—Ochs, the burgo~~ naster of Basel, and La Harpe, who had left his home in aud through disgust at Bernese oppression, both now "fishing for aid from outside in order to free their land yom the rule of the oligarchy. Hence, when La Harpe, the head of twenty-two exiles from Vaud and Freiburg, uled (November 20, 1797) on the Directory to protect the liberties of Vaud, which France by the treaty of 1565 jas bound to guarantee, his appeal found a ready answer. 1798 French troops occupied Miihlhausen and Bienne Biel), as well as those parts of the lands of the prince- 'shop of Basel (St Imier and the Miinsterthal) as regards hich he had been since 1579 the ally of the Catholic embers of the Confederation. Another army entered Yaud (February 1798), when the "Lemanic republic" 'jas proclaimed, and the diet broke up in dismay without king any steps to avert the coming storm. Brune and 'is army occupied Freiburg and Solothurn, and, after ree fighting at Neueneck, entered (March 5) Bern, "Pserted by her allies, and distracted by quarrels within. ith Bern, the stronghold of the aristocratic party, fell the jd Confederation. The Revolution triumphed throughout he Confederation. Brune, on March 19, put forth a won-riul scheme by which the Confederation with its "'asso- jates" and "subjects" was to be split into three republics {the Tellgau (z.c. the Forest districts), the Rhodanic .e., Vaud, Wallis, the Bernese Oberland, and the Italian ailiwicks), and the Helvetic (i.e, the north and east prtions); but the Directory disapproved of this (March 23) nd on March 29 the Helvetic republic, one and indivis- dle, was proclaimed. This was accepted by ten out of he thirteen members of the old Confederation, as well as te constitution drafted by Ochs. By the new

scheme te territories of the Everlasting League were split up into Iventy-three (later nineteen, Rhetia only coming in in 499) administrative districts, called “cantons,” a name iw officially used in Switzerland for the first time, though ? may be found employed by foreigners in the French Featy of 1452, in Comines and Machiavelli, and in the eaties of Westphalia (1648). A central Government was %t up, with its seat at Lucerne, comprising a senate and Hgreat council, together forming the legislature, with an

c

owt 2k kia ND

793

executive of five directors chosen by the legislature, and having four ministers as subordinates or “chief secretaries,” A supreme court of justice was set up; a status of Swiss citizenship was recognized ; and absolute freedom to settle In any canton was given, the political “communes” being now composed of all residents, and not merely of the burghers. For the first time an attempt was made to organize the Confederation as a single state, but the change was too sweeping to last, for it largely ignored the local patriotism which had done so much to create the Con- federation, though more recently it had made it politically powerless. The three Forest districts rose in rebellion against the invaders and the new constitutions which destroyed their ancient prerogatives; but the valiant | resistance of the Schwyzers, under Alois Reding, on the heights of Morgarten (April and May), and that of the Unterwaldners (September), were put down by French armies. The proceedings of the French, however, soon turned into disgust and hatred the joyful feelings with which they had been hailed as liberators. Geneva was annexed to France (1798) ; Gersau, after an independent existence of over 400 years, was made a mere district of Schwyz; immense fines were levied and the treasury at Bern pillaged; the land was treated as if it had been conquered. The new republic was compelled to make a very close offensive and defensive alliance with France, and its directors were practically nominated from Paris. In 1799 Zurich, the Forest cantons, and Rhetia became the scene of the

struggles of the Austrians (welcomed with joy) against the French and Russians. The manner too in which the reforms were carried out alienated many, and, soon after the Directory gave way to the Consulate in Paris (18 Brumaire or November 10, 1799), the Helvetic directory (January 1800) was replaced by an executive committee.

The scheme of the Helvetic republic had gone too far The in the direction of centralization ; but it was not easy to Act of

find the happy mean, and violent discussions went on between the "unitary" (headed by Ochs and La, Harpe) and "federalist" parties. Many drafts were put forward, and one actually submitted to but rejected by a popular vote (May 20, 1802). In July 1802 the French troops were withdrawn from Switzerland by Bonaparte, osten- sibly to comply with the treaty of Amiens, really to show the Swiss that their best hopes lay in appealing to him. The Helvetic Government was gradually driven back by armed force, and the federalists seemed getting the best of it, when (October 4) Bonaparte offered himself as mediator, and summoned many of the chief Swiss statesmen to Paris to discuss matters with him (the "'Consulta"—December 1802). He had long taken a very special interest in Swiss matters, and in 1802 had given to the Helvetic republic the Frickthal (ceded to France in 1801 by Austria), the last Austrian possession within the borders of the Confederation. On the other hand, he had made (November 1802) Wallis into an inde- pendent republic. In the discussions he pointed out that Swiss needs required a federal constitution and a neutral position guaranteed by France. Finally (February 19: 1803) he laid before the Consulta the Act of Mediation which he had elaborated, and which they had perforce to' accept—a document which formed a new departure in Swiss history, and the influence of which is visible in the present constitution. Throughout, "Switzerland" is used for the first time as the official name of the Confederation. The thirteen members of the old Confederation before 1798 are set up again, and to them are added six new cantons,—two (St Gall and Graubiinden or Grisons) having been formerly "associates," and the four others being made up of the XXII. — roo

The pact of 1815,

subject lands conquered at different times,—Aargau (1415), Thurgau (1460), Ticino or Tessin (1440, 1500, 1512), and Vaud (1536). In the diet, six cantons which had a population of more than 100,000 (viz., Bern, Zurich, Vaud, St Gall, Graubtinden, and Aargau) were given two votes, the others having but one apiece, and the deputies were to vote freely within limits, though not against their instructions. Meetings of the diet were to be held alternately at Freiburg, Bern, Solothurn, Basel, Zurich, and Lucerne,—the Government of each of these cantons becoming, by virtue of the presence of the diet, the executive of the Confederation, its chief magistrate being named the "landamman of Switzerland." The "lands- gemeinden," or popular assemblies, were restored in the democratic cantons, the cantonal governments in other cases being in the hands of a "great council" (legisla- tive) and the "small council" (executive),—a property qualification being required both for voters and candidates. No canton was to form any political alliances abroad or at home. The "communes" were given larger political rights, the burghers who owned and used the common lands becoming more and more private associations. There was no Swiss burghership, as in 1798, but perfect liberty of settlement in any canton. There were to be no privileged classes or subject lands. A very close alliance with France (on the basis of that of 1516) was concluded. The whole constitution and organization were far better suited for the Swiss than the more symmetrical system of the Helvetic republic; but, as it was guaranteed by Bonaparte, and his influence was predominant, the whole fabric was closely bound up with him, and fell with him. Excellent in itself, the constitution set forth in the Act of Mediation failed by reason of its setting.

For ten years Switzerland enjoyed peace and prosperity under the new constitution. Pestalozzi and Fellenberg worked out their educational theories; K. Escher of Zurich embanked the Linth, and was thence called "von der Linth"; the central Government prepared many schemes for the common welfare. On the other hand, the mediator

(who became emperor in 1804) lavishly expended his Swiss troops, the number of which could only be kept up by a regular blood tax, while the "Berlin decrees" raised the price of many articles. In 1806 the principality of Neuchatel was given to Marshal Berthier; Tessin was occupied by French troops from 1810 to 1813, and in 1810 Wallis was made into the department of the Sim- plon, so as to secure that pass. At home, the liberty of moving from one canton to another (though given by the constitution) was, by the diet in 1805, restricted by requiring ten years' residence, and then not granting political rights in the canton or a right of profiting by the communal property. As soon as Napoleon's power began to wane (1812-13), the position of Switzerland became endangered. Despite the personal wishes of the czar (a pupil of La Harpe's), the Austrians, supported by the reactionary party in Switzerland, and without any real resistance on the part of the diet, as well as the Russian troops, crossed the frontier on December 21, 1813, and a few days later the diet was induced to declare the abolition of the 1803 constitution, guaranteed, like Swiss neutrality, by Napoleon. Bern headed the party which wished to restore the old state of things, but Zurich and the majority stood out for the nineteen cantons. The powers exercised great pressure to bring about a meeting of deputies from all the nineteen cantons at Zurich (April 6, 1814, "the long diet"), but party strife was so bitter that many questions had to be referred to the congress sitting at Vienna. The congress decided (March 20, 1815) that Wallis, Neuchatel, and Geneva should be raised from the rank of "associates" to that of full members of the

confederation (thus making up the familiar twenty-two) and as compensation gave Bern the town of Bienne (Biel) and all (save a small bit which went to Basel) of the territories of the prince-bishop of Basel ("the Bernese Jura"); but the Valtelline was granted to Austria, and Miiblhausen was not freed from France.

The diet accepted this decision, and on August 7, 1815, the new constitution was sworn to by all the cantons save Nidwald, the consent

of which was only obtained by armed force, a delay for which she paid by seeing Engel- berg and the valley above (acquired by Nidwald in 1798) given to Obwald. By the new constitution the sove- reign rights of each canton were fully recognized, and 4 return made to the lines of the old constitution, though there were to be no subject lands, and_ political rights were not to be the exclusive privilege of any class of citizens. Each canton had one vote in the diet, where an absolute majority was to decide all matters save foreign affairs, when a majority of three-fourths was required. The management of current business, &c., shifted every two years between the Governments of Zurich, Bern, and Lucerne (the three '"Vororte"). The monasteries were guaranteed in their rights and privileges; and no canton was to make any alliance contrary to the rights of the Confederation or of any other canton. Provision was made for a federal army. Finally the congress, on November 20, 1815, placed Switzerland and parts of North Savoy (Chablais, Faucigny, and part of the Gene- vois) under the guarantee of the great powers, who engaged to maintain their neutrality, thus freeing Swit- zerland from her 300 years' subservience to France, and compensating in some degree for the reactionary nature of the new Swiss constitution when compared with that of 1803.

V. The cities at once secured for themselves in the Attempts cantonal great councils an overwhelming representation # tom.

over the neighbouring country districts, and the agreement of 1805 as to migration from one canton to another was renewed by twelve cantons. For some time there was little talk of reforms, but in 1819 the Helvetic Society definitely became a political society, and the foundation in 1824 of the Marksmen's Association enabled men from all cantons to meet together. A few cantons (notably Tessin) were beginning to make reforms, when the influence of the July revolution (1830) in Paris and the sweeping changes In Zurich led the diet to declare (December 27) that it would not interfere with any reforms of cantonal con- stitutions provided they were in agreement with the pact of 1815. Hence for the next few years great activity im this direction was displayed, and most of the cantons reformed themselves, save the most conservative (¢9., Uri, Glarus) and the advanced who needed no

changes (e.g., Geneva, Graubiinden). Provision was always made for revising these constitutions at fixed intervals, for the changes were not felt to be final, and seven cantons— Zurich, Bern, Lucerne, Solothurn, St Gall, Aargau, and Thurgau—joined together to guarantee their new free constitutions (Siebener Concordat of March 17, 1832). Soon after, the question of revising the federal pact was brought forward by a large majority of cantons in the diet (July 17), whereon, by the league of Sarnen (November 14), the three Forest cantons, with Neuchatel, the city of Basel, and Wallis, agreed to maintain the pact of 1815 and to protest against the separation of Basel in two halves (for in the reform struggle Schwyz and Basel had been split up, though the split was permanent only in the latter case). A draft constitution providing for a feder

administration distinct from the cantons could not secure a majority in its favour ; a reaction against reform set a and the diet was forced to sanction (1833) the division ©

Basel into the "city" and "country" divisions (each with half a vote in the diet), though fortunately in Schwyz the quarrel was healed. Religious quarrels further stirred up strife in connexion with Aargau, which was a canton where religious parity prevailed, later in others. In Zurich the extreme pretensions of the radicals and freethinkers (illustrated by offering a chair of theology in the university to Strauss because of his recent Lzfe of Jesus) brought about a great reaction in 1839, when Zurich was the " Vorort." 'In Aargau the parties were very evenly balanced, and, when in 1840, on occasion of the revision of the constitution, the radicals had a popular majority, the aggrieved clerics stirred up a revolt (1840), which was put down, but which gave their opponents (headed by A. Keller) the excuse for carrying a vote in the great council to suppress the eight monasteries in the canton. This was flatly opposed to the pact of 1815, which the diet by a small majority decided must be upheld, though after many discussions it determined (August 31, 1843) to accept the compromise by which four only were to

be suppressed, and declared that the matter was now settled. On this the seven Catholic cantons—Uri, Schwyz,

| Unterwalden, Lucerne, Zug, Freiburg, and Wallis—formed

“(September 7, 1843) a “Sonderbund” or separate league, ‘which (February 1844) issued a manifesto demanding ‘the reopening of the question and the restoration of ail ‘the monasteries. Like the radicals in former years the Catholics went too far and too fast, for in October 1844 the clerical party in Lucerne (in the majority since 1841, and favouring the reaction in Wallis) officially ‘invited in the Jesuits and gave them high posts, an act ‘which created all the more sensation because Lucerne was

ithe “ Vorort.” Twice (December 1844 and March 1845) ‘parties of Free Lances tried to capture the city. In December 1845 the Sonderbund turned itself into an ‘armed confederation, ready to appeal to war in defence ‘of the rights of each canton. The radicals carried Zurich ‘in 1845 and Bern in 1846, but a majority could not be ‘secured in the diet till Geneva (October 1846) and St Gall May 1847) were won by the same party. On July 20, 1847, the diet, by a small majority, declared that the ‘Sonderbund was contrary to the federal pact, which on August 16 it was resolved to revise, while on September 3 “it was decided to invite each canton to expel the Jesuits. Most of the great powers favoured the Sonderbund, but “England took the contrary view. On October 29 the Heputies of the unyielding cantons left the diet, which ordered on November 4 that its decree should be enforced by arms. ‘The war was short (November 11-29), mainly wing to the ability of Dufour, and the loss of life trifling. /One after another the rebellious cantons were forced to erences, and, as the Paris revolution of February 1848 pecupied all the attention of the great powers (who by the constitution of 1815 should have been consulted in the revision of the pact), the Swiss were enabled to settle their own affairs quietly. Schwyz and Zug abolished their “‘landsgemeinden,” and the seven were condemned to pay the costs of the war (ultimately defrayed by subscription), ‘which had been waged rather on religious than on strict oarticularist or states-rights grounds. The diet meanwhile lebated the

draft constitution drawn up by Kern of Thur- yau and Druey of Vaud, which in the summer of 1848 as accepted by fifteen and a half cantons, the minority onsisting of the three Forest cantons, Wallis, Zug, Tessin, md Appenzell (Inner Rhoden), and it was proclaimed on September 12. | The new constitution inclined rather to the Act of

ediation than to the system which prevailed before 1798. A status of "Swiss citizenship" was set up, closely joined © cantonal citizenship: a man settling in a canton not

being his birthplace got cantonal citizenship after two years, but was excluded from all local rights in the "commune" where he might reside. A federal or central Government was Set up, to which the cantons gave up a certain part of their sovereign rights, retaining the rest. The federal legislature (or assembly) was made up of two houses—the council of states (Stiinde Rath), composed of two deputies from each canton, whether small or great! (44 in all), and

| the national council (National Rath), made up of deputies

(now 145 in number) elected for three years, in the propor- tion of one for every 20,000 souls or fraction over 10,000, the electors being all Swiss citizens. The federal council or executive (Bundesrath) consisted of seven members elected by the federal assembly ; they are jointly respon- sible for all business, though for sake of convenience there are various departments, and their chairman is called the president of the Confederation. The federal judiciary (Bundesgericht) is made up of eleven members elected by the federal assembly for three years ; its jurisdiction is chiefly confined to civil cases, in which the Confederation is a party (if a canton, the federal council may refer the case to the federal tribunal), but takes in also great political crimes,—all constitutional questions, however, being reserved for the federal assembly. A federal university and a polytechnic school were to be founded ; the latter only has as yet been set up, and is fixed at Zurich.

All military capitulations were forbidden in the future. Every canton must treat Swiss citizens who belong to one of the Christian confessions like their own citizens, for the right of free settlement is given to all such, though they acquired no rights in the "commune." All Christians were guaranteed the exercise of their reli- gion, but the Jesuits and similar religious orders were not to be received in any canton. German, French, and Italian were recognized as national languages.

The constitution as a whole marked a great step forwards; though very many rights were still reserved to the cantons, yet there was a fully organized central government. Almost the first act of the federal assembly was to exercise the power given them of determining the home of the federal authorities, and on November 28, 1848, Bern was chosen, though Zurich still ranks as the first canton in the Confederation.

By this early settlement of disputes Switzerland was protected from the general revolutionary movement of 1848, and in later years her political history has been uneventful, though she has felt the weight of the great European crisis in industrial and social matters.

The position of Neuchatel, as a member of the Con- Events q, Since

A 1848.

federation (as regards its government only) and as

principality ruled by the king of Prussia, whose rights ha been expressly recognized by the congress of Vienna, was uncertain. She had not sent troops in 1847, and, though in 1848 there was a revolution there, the prince did not recognize the changes. Finally, a royalist conspiracy in September 1856 to undo the work of 1848 caused great excitement and anger in Switzerland, and it was only by the mediation of Napoleon III. and the other powers that the prince renounced (1857) all his rights, save his title, which his successor (the German emperor) has also dropped. Since that time Neuchatel has been an ordinary member of the Confederation. In 1859-60 the cession of Savoy (part of it neutralized in 1815) to France aroused considerable indignation, and

in 1862 the long-standing question of frontiers in the Vallée de Dappes was finally arranged

1 The method of election and length of term of office were left to the cantonal Governments; at present (1887), in eleven cantons (or half cantons) the people, in fourtcen the "great council," elect; twelve elect for one year and twelve for three, Wallis holding to the mean of two years.

Revised consti- tution

of 1874.

with France. In 1871 many French refugees, especially Bourbaki's army, were most hospitably received and sheltered. The growth of the Old Catholics after the Vatican council (1870) caused many disturbances in western Switzerland, especially in the Bernese Jura. The attack was led by Bishop Lachat of Basel, whose see was suppressed by several cantons in 1873. The Old Catholics have been recognized by nine cantons and the see of Basel set up again, though Bern does not recognize it. The appointment by the pope of the abbé Mermillod as "apostolic vicar" of Geneva, which was separated from the diocese of Freiburg, led to Monseigneur Mermillod's banishment from Switzerland (1872), but in 1883 he was raised to the vacant see of Freiburg and allowed by the federal authorities to return, though Geneva still refuses to recognize him. Perhaps the latest event of importance to Switzerland was the opening of the St Gotthard tunnel, which was begun in 1871 and ended in 1880; by it the Forest cantons seem likely to regain the importance which was theirs in the early days of the Confederation.

From 1848 onwards the cantons continually revised their constitutions, always in a democratic sense, though after the Sonderbund War Schwyz and Zug abolished their "landsgemeinde." The chief point was the introduction of the referendum, by which laws made by the cantonal legislature may (facultative referendum) or must (obligatory

referendum) be submitted to the people for their approval, and this has obtained such general acceptance tliat Frei- burg alone does not possess the referendum in either of its two forms, Tessin having accepted it in its optional form in 1883. It was therefore only natural that attempts should be made to revise the federal constitution of 1848 in a democratic and centralizing sense, for it had been pro- vided that the federal assembly, on its own initiative or on the written request of 50,000 Swiss electors, could submit the question of revision to a popular vote. In 1866 the restriction of certain rights (mentioned above) to Christians only was swept away; but the attempt at final revision in 1872 was defeated by a small majority, owing to the efforts of the anti-centralizing party. Finally, however, another draft was better liked, and on April 19, 1874, the new constitution was accepted by the people—144 cantons against 74 (those of 1848 without Tessin, but with Frei-burg and Lucerne) and 340,199 votes as against 198,013. This constitution is that now in force, and is simply an improved edition of that of 1848. The federal tribunal (now of nine members only) was fixed (by federal law) at Lausanne, and its jurisdiction enlarged, especially in con- stitutional disputes between cantons and the federal autho- rities, though jurisdiction in administrative matters (e.., educational, religious, election, commercial) is given to the federal council, a division of functions which is very anomalous, and does not work well. A system of free elementary education was set up, and many regulations made on ecclesiastical matters. A man settling in another canton was, after a residence of three months only, given all cantonal and communal rights, save a share in the common property (an arrangement which as far as possible kept up the old principle that the "commune" is the true unit out of which cantons and the Confederation are built), and the membership of the "commune" carries with it cantonal and federal rights. The referendum was intro-duced in its "facultative" form; 7.e, all federal laws must be submitted to popular vote on the demand of 30,000 Swiss electors or of eight cantons. If the revision of the federal constitution is demanded by one of the two houses of the federal assembly or by 50,000 Swiss citizens, the question of revision must be submitted to a popular vote, as also the draft of the revised constitution,—these provisions, contained already in the constitution of 1848,

PWIPZHERL AWD

=

LHISTORY,

forming a species of “obligatory referendum.” Tt was sup. posed that this plan would lead to radical aud sweeping changes ; but as a matter of fact there have been (187 4-86) about one hundred and seven federal laws and resolutions passed by the assembly, of which nineteen were by the referendum submnitted to popular vote, thirteen being re- jected, while six only were accepted,—the rest becoming law as no referendum was demanded. ‘There has been a very stcady opposition to all schemes aiming at increased centralization. By the constitutions of 1848 and 1874 Switzerland has ceased to be a mere union of independent states joined by a treaty, and has become a single state with a well-organized central Government, to which have been given certain of the rights of the independent cantons, but increased centralization would destroy the whole character of the Confederation, in which the can- tons are not administrative divisions but living political communities. Swiss history teaches us, all the way through, that Swiss liberty has been won by a close union of many small states, and we cannot doubt that it will be best preserved by the same means, and not by obliterating all local peculiarities, nowhere so striking and nowhere so historically important as in Switzerland.

Chronological Table of Chief Events. 1291. First League of the Three | 1513. The Thirteen complete.

Lands. 1516. Alliance with France. 1315. Morgarten. 1531. Kappel. 1353. The Eight Orte complete. | 1586. Golden League. 1386. Sempach. 1648. Formal Freedom from the 1388. Nifels. Empire. :

1394. Hapsburgs give up rights.| 1798. The Helvetic Republie.

1444. St Jakob an der Birs, 1803. Act of Mediation—19

1474. Everlasting Compact. Cantons.

1476. Granson and Morat. 1815. Federal Pact—22 Cantons.

1481. Compact of Stanz. 1847. Sonderbund War.

1499. Practical Freedom from | 1848. Federal Constitution. the Empire. 1874. Revised Constitution.

General Authorities—For the early history, the works of luber, Rillict, and Von Wyss (see TELL) may be consulted; for general politieal history those of Daguet, Dandliker (large and small versions), Henne am Rhyn, Oeehsili, Strickler, Vulliemin ; and, for constitutional history, those of Blumer, Bluntsehli, Dubs, Meyer, and Orelli. Of those named, the works of Rilliet, Dandliker (the small version), Strickler, Dubs, and Orelli are best suited for foreign readers. Books on local history and on special periods abound, and many very valuable essays are hidden in the publieations of the numerous cantonal historical societies. Of modern English works relating to Switzerland the most notc- worthy are G. Grote, Seven Letters concerning the Politics of Switzerland [the Sonderbund War of 1847] (originally published 1847, reprinted 1876), and E. A. Freeman, ‘ Review of Kirk’s ‘Charles the Bold,’” in Historical Essays, first series, 1872, pp. 335-870, and Historical Geography of Europe, 1881. The great iistorisch-Geographischer Atlas der Schweiz, by Vogelin, Meyer von Knonau, and Von Wyss (Zurich, 1870), is almost indispensable to any serious student of Swiss history. Gerster’s small maps are appended to Oechsli’s history, and also pub- lished separately. (W. A. B.C.)

Part ITJ.—LIvrErRature.

It can hardly be said of Switzerland that she possesses a truly national literature. She has a literature in French and a literature in German, but these literatures are not the expression of a common intellectual life, for the German and French cantons have always been to some extent dominated by different ideas and sympathies. Political union has been only in part associated with the deeper union which relates to purely ideal interests. Even the difference between the French and the German literatures of Switzerland does not give a complete con- ception of the diversity of thought and sentiment which exists in the

country. Switzerland has also produced Italian writers and writers who use the Romansch dialect of the Grisons. The Romansch and Italian branches of her literature are not, however, sufficiently important to deserve more than passing notice.

During the struggles against the Hapsburgs the mem- bers of the Confederation were too seriously occupied 1 defending their political rights and in adding to oo territory to be very eager for the satisfaction of intellectua needs. They produced some vigorous war songs; but 1m other respects they were content with such literature 4

a

———

of political independence.

might happen to reach them from neighbouring countries, At the time of the Reformation there was much intel- lectual activity in Switzerland, but it related chiefly to the controversy of the Protestants with the Church of Rome ; and Zwingli, Bullinger, and the other Reformers of the German cantons were not, like Luther, wise enough to write important treatises in the language of the people. They wrote chiefly in Latin, reserving the use of German fcr sermons and hymns. One good writer of this period

, whose interest was not confined to theology was Francois) Bonnivard, who, although a native of Savoy, had, as prior of the monastery of St Victor, been associated with

Geneva before the Reformation. He was one of the most resolute of those who opposed the ambition of Charles IIL, duke of Savoy; and it is he whose sufferings in the service of his adopted country have been immortalized by Byron in “ The Prisoner of Chillon.” After his release from imprisonment he became a Protestant, and wrote in French several important books, the chief of which is his Chron- aques de

Genéve. This work is written in a bright and animated style, and is especially valuable for its account of events with which the author himself was connected. Another vigorous writer of the 16th century was Aigidius Tschudi, who remained loyal to the Roman Church. He devoted himself with enthusiasm to the study of history. The only result' of his labours given to the world in his

lifetime was Die uralt wahrhaftig alpisch Rhitia, but several other works have since been published, the most

important being his Chronicon Helveticum and his Haupt- _ schlussel zu verschiedenen Alterthiimern.

After the Reformation a respect for learning was main- tained by the university of Basel, the Carolinum of Zurich, and various other educational institutions in the leading

"| towns of the Confederation ; but for a long time Switzer- _ land took little part in the literary movement of Europe.

Theology was still generally thought to be the only subject worthy of study by serious minds, and theologians

') continued to write their books in Latin (as, for example, | C. Gessner of Zurich).

In this respect their example was followed by men of science. In the few instances in which scholars belonging to German cantons wished to appeal to

') readers who were not specialists, they wrote in French, for) Switzerland was so intimately associated in politics with

France that the French language was spoken by the edu- jcated classes in all parts of the country. French litera- | ture was the only modern literature of which they had any

real knowledge.

Early in the 18th century there were many signs of an

Jintellectual awakening both in the German and in the

French districts. The literary activity manifested in the German cantons was indirectly connected with the fact that they had been gradually acquiring a stronger sense They had been alienated fron France by the arrogance of the French Government, and had been forced to consider whether it might not be possible for Switzerland to defend her own interests with- out foreign patronage. Here and there scholars began to jinterest themselves in Swiss history, and to take pride 'in the achievements of the forefathers of the republic ; and, in proportion as patriotic sentiment increased, ' thoughtful men became less inclined to take all their ideas 'from the country to which alone they had hitherto looked for intellectual guidance. They studied with greater earnestness the literatures of Greece and Rome, and some 'of them turned to English literature, with which they had jnot up to this time had the slightest acquaintance. These influences gave a powerful impetus to the best aspirations of the German population of Switzerland, and it was not in literature only that important results were achieved. Members of the family of Bernoulli at the university of

Basel had already been doing great work in mathematics; and now the fame of Switzerland as a country favourable to the development of science was extended by many investigators, the best known of whom were Euler, Haller, Scheuchzer, and Muralt.

The writer who first gave expression to the most characteristic literary conceptions of his time in Switzer- land was J. J. Bodmer, a native of Zurich. He was a good classical scholar, and in youth had made himself familiar with some of the masterpieces of English, French, and Italian literature. In 1721, in association with his friend Breitinger, a learned Protestant clergyman in Zurich, he began to issue the Discurse der Maler, written in imitation of the style of the English essayists. In this

periodical the two friends criticized freely the works of some popular German versifiers, and they wrote with so much force and confidence that they soon exercised con- siderable influence not only in Switzerland but in Germany. When the value of their work was beginning to be recognized, a high place was taken among German men of letters by Gottsched, a professor at Leipsic. He was an ardent admirer of the classic drama of France, and gathered around him a number of enthusiastic disciples, known as the Saxon school. For some time he was on friendly terms with the Swiss critics, with whom he agreed in condemning the wild extravagance of Lohenstein and his imitators. But when Bodmer and Breitinger went on to praise English literature, and to call attention especially to the splendid qualities of Milton, Gottsched denounced their opinions as utterly false and misleading. The result was that a bitter controversy broke out between the Saxon and Swiss schools, Bodmer and Breitinger presenting an elaborate statement of critical doctrine, the former in Vom Wunderbaren in der Poesie (1740), the latter in Kritische Dichtkunst (1740). The controversy was followed with great interest by many readers, and, although it was by and by almost forgotten, it helped to prepare the way for the outburst of German literature begun by Klopstock, Wieland, and Lessing. The theories of all the combatants were to some extent crude and even grotesque, but Bodmer and Breitinger did excellent service by the vigour with which they protested against the notion that poetry is merely the work of the understanding acting in subjection to rigid rules, and by their enthusiastic appre- ciation of great English writers. Bodmer also opened fresh sources of inspiration by editing a part of the W2belungen- lied and some poems of the Minnesinger,—undertakings in which he anticipated the labours of the Romantic school. He wrote an epic, the Woachide, and several dramas, but his work as a poet is feeble and unimportant in compari- son with his achievements as an editor and critic.

Bodmer

and reit- inger.

A. von Haller, who made his fame chiefly as a man of Haller.

science (see vol. xi. p. 396), ranked in literature also among the foremost men of his day. His poems are too directly didactic to give much pleasure to modern readers, but in some of them—especially Dze Alpen—there are passages of striking force and beauty. Haller knew the Alps not merely from books but by having visited them, and to him belongs the credit of having revealed that they appeal powerfully to the imagination, and of having asso- ciated them with great thoughts and aspirations. He wrote several prose romances, but outside of Switzerland these works, which had many readers at the time of their publication, are now practically forgotten.

A Swiss writer of the 18th century who, as a poet, became more famous even than Haller was Solomon Gessner. At Berlin and Hamburg he came under the influence of Ramler and Hagedorn, and after his return to his native town Zurich, where he lived as an artist, he published 'a series of idyllic poems which excited universal

Gessner.

Salis- Seewis.

Usteri.

Zimmer- mann.

Sulzer.

Hirzel.

Lavater.

Pesta- lozzi.

admiration. The most popular of his writings was his prose idyl, Der Tod Abel's (1758). This work was trans- lated into many languages, and was received with not less favour in Germany, France, and England than in Switzer- land. There is not much serious thought in Gessner's

works, and his sentiment sometimes degenerates into senti- mentalism, but a permanent place is secured for him in literature by his simple, lucid style and by the delicate grace of his sketches of idealscenery. These qualities were warmly appreciated by Lessing and afterwards by Goethe.

Of the German Swiss poets who were born after Gessner had become famous the best were J. G. Salis-Seewis and J. M. Usteri. Salis-Seewis was acquainted with Goethe, Schiller, Herder, and Wieland, but he was not so much influenced by them as by a greatly inferior poet, Matthison, whose ideas and methods closely resembled his own. There is little variety of sentiment in the poems of Salis- Seewis, but their uniformity of tone is prevented from being tiresome by his perfect sincerity and by the vividness of his diction. Usteri wrote at least one song—" Freut euch des Lebens "—which became popular among Germans of all classes, but his most important writings were some clever stories in the German dialect of Zurich.

Philosophy, in the strict sense of the term, was not profoundly studied in the German cantons in the 18th century, but philosophical problems, especially those relat- ing to ethics, were discussed in a popular style by a good many more or less able writers. Of these writers one of the most renowned was J. G. Zimmermann. His chief writings are Ueber die Einsamkeit (1755) and Vom Nation- alstolze (1758). These works present a strange combina- tion of cynicism and sentimentalism, but they profoundly impressed Zimmermann's contemporaries, and were trans- lated into most European languages. J. G. Sulzer spent the greater part of his life in Berlin, where he was held in much esteem at the time when Lessing was beginning to make a name as a critic and dramatist. His principal work is his Allgemeine Theorie der schinen Kiinste, in which he tried to present a complete exposition of the laws of art, starting with the philosophical principles of Wolf, and combining them with critical doctrines derived from English and French writers. His style is somewhat cold and formal, and to later generations his governing thoughts have seemed meagre and unfruitful. H. K. Hirzel wrote Das Bild eines wahren Patrioten (1767) and various other works, in which he displayed a considerable power of expounding and

illustrating great moral principles. He is remembered chiefly, however, by a charming descrip- tion which he wrote of a day spent by Klopstock and him- self with some friends on the Lake of Zurich,—a day celebrated by Klopstock in one of the finest of his early odes. J. K. Lavater made some reputation as a poet, but he owed his fame chiefly to his Physiognomische Fragmente (1775-78), in which he sought to develop the idea that the face presents a perfect indication of character, and that physiognomy may therefore be treated as a science. His notions are arbitrary and rather mystical, but he expressed them with so much vigour and enthusiasm that he found many admirers and disciples. J. H. Pestalozzi was a less pretentious but infinitely more useful writer than Lavater. Early in life, mainly through the influence of Rousseau, he became impressed by the necessity of a radical change in the methods of popular education ; and with splendid self- sacrifice he devoted his energies to the task of realizing his ideas and of inspiring others with a sense of their import- ance. His writings—of which Lienhard und Gertrud is the best—are not distinguished by any remarkable literary qualities, but his theories made his name famous all over the civilized world, and children in every good school may still be said to profit indirectly by his labours.

SWITZERLAND

(LITERATURE,

In the 18th century the German cantons produced many writers on historical subjects. tinguished of them was I. Iselin, who, in his Geschichte der Menschheit (1768), offered suggestions akin to those which were afterwards set forth with wider knowledge and deeper insight by Herder. J. H. Tschudi and J. J. Tschudi, The

descendants of Aigidius Tschudi, also did much good work Tschutis,

as historians. Greater than any of these—the foremost

historical writer of Switzerland—-was J. von Miiller, whose Miiller,

writings marked an era in German literature. His master- piece is his Geschichte der schweizerischen Eidgenossenschaft (1780). Miiller had not an adequate appreciation of the laws of evidence in historical inquiry, but he was inde- fatigable in research, and no German historian of his time had so great a power of bringing out the significance of facts by his method of grouping them. His style, although sometimes obscure and rhetorical, was often made warm and glowing by his eager love of freedom and justice. The literary movement of the French districts in the 18th century had little direct relation with that of the German cantons. It sprang chiefly from the influence of French refugees, who flocked in great numbers to western Switzerland after the revocation of the edict of Nantes, The most energetic of the French writers of Switzerland in

the first half of the 18th century was Bonrguet, the son of Bourguet,

a refugee. He travelled in Italy and Holland, and on his return to Geneva founded the Bibliothéque Italique, which appeared from 1729 to 1734. In carrying on this periodical, which extended to eighteen volumes, Bourguet was aided by a good many Swiss writers—among others by Abraham Ruchat and Loys de Bochat of Lausanne. Bourguet's colleagues also contributed articles to French periodicals of a similar kind in Holland, three of which— the Bibliothéque Universelle et Historique, the Bibliotheque Choisie, and the Brbliothéque Ancienne et Moderne—were conducted by Jean le Clerc, a native of Geneva. In 1732 Gourguet started at Neuchatel the Mercure Suisse, which went on until 1784 and did much to stimulate the interest of its readers in science, literature, history, and archeology. The indefatigable editor and his colleagues did not con- fine themselves to journalistic work. One of his books— Trauté des Pétrifactions—was an important contribution to geology ; and Loys de Bochat wrote a careful book entitled Mémoires Critiques sur [Histoire Ancienne de la Suasse. Ruchat was the author of [/istotre de la Reformation de la Suesse and of Délices de la Suisse. de Crousaz, a friend of Bourguet, display no remark- able qualities, but two of them, his Hxamen of Pope's Fissay on Man and his Commentaire on the same poem, have some interest for English readers. An English translation of the Hxamen by Mrs

Elizabeth Carter was published in 1739, and led to the intervention of War- burton, who considered it necessary to prove that the Lssay was not in any way hostile to religion.

During the second half of the 18th century all Europe Rouse

was reading the works of a Swiss writer, by far the most illustrious man of letters whom Switzerland has produced —J. J. Rousseau. He moved civilized mankind by many a doctrine which no one now holds to be true, but he owed his astonishing influence not so much to his fallacies as to his passionate zeal for the rights of the poor, to his enthusiasm for the free development of individual character, and to the power with which he reflected in his writings the beauty and the splendour of the external world. Of his own happiness he made shipwreck ; but, if we judge his work simply by the practical results which sprang from it, he was perhaps the greatest literary force of modern times. His family was of French origin, but 1t had been so long settled at Geneva that it had become thoroughly Swiss, and to this fact were due some of the

One of the most dis. Iselin,

The writings of J. P, Crousaz.

_most striking characteristics of his genius. Free and republican Switzerland was the only Continental country whose institutions were favourable to the growth of the ideas with which Rousseau shook to its centre the political and social system of the 18th century.

Of the other French writers of Switzerland in this age | the most eminent was perhaps H. B. de Saussure, who, in his Voyages dans les Alpes (1776-79), presented in a lucid

d and attractive style the results of much careful observa- ‘i tion. He was one of the founders of geology, and made im- i portant contributions to several other sciences. Another than distinguished scientific writer of this time was Charles

Bonnet, the author of several valuable works on natural history and psychology. His general conception of the order of the world he developed systematically in his Contemplation de la Nature (1764). Much good work

‘le De was also done by the brothers De Luc, one of whom, Jean- des.) André de Luc, gave in Lettres sur Quelques Parties de la ij Suisse (1787) a very vivid picture of the physical, social, and political peculiarities of a portion of Switzerland.

5 Some clever books were written by Madame de

Charriére, a native of Utrecht, who settled with her hus- band in the principality of Neuchatel in 1771. Much interest was excited by her lively Lettres Lcrites de _ Lausanne and by her Lettres. Neuchdteloises, and both in Switzerland and in France there were many admirers of her Mart Sentimental and of the corresponding work Lettres de Mistress Henley. Samuel Constant, the father _ of Benjamin Constant, wrote Camille and some other ‘romances in the form of letters; and Contes Morauz, in | the style of Marmontel, were written by J. Senebier, who did better work as an investigator in physics and physio- logy. .

In the second half of the 18th century there were in) French Switzerland many ardent students of history. ~ One of the ablest of them was P. H. Mallet, who took as his special subject the antiquities of northern Europe, but ‘|wrote also works on the general history of Denmark, ; Brunswick, and Hesse. Déranger was the author of a im- || Lestoire de Genéve; and Lamberty, who had served as secretary of several legations in Holland and Germany, brought together in his J/ émozres many interesting details about events of which he had personal knowledge. A + good history of Switzerland to the 17th century was written \by De Watteville, and Philibert dealt with the same

Allemagne, in which he brought the story down to 1468. }G. E. von Haller wrote several excellent historical works, jthe most important of which was his Bibliothek der | Schweizergeschichte. From the latter part of the 18th century onwards French Switzerland has produced

many influential writers, but they have been so intimately connected with France that ‘their works properly belong to French literature. Necker, who played so great a part in France before the Revolu- \tion, was one of the greatest writers of his age on politics jand finance ; and his daughter Madame de Stael, whom, although she was born in Paris, Switzerland may also claim, stands in the front rank of women who have devoted them- selves to literature. Her most brilliant work, Corinne, was \perhaps of less real importance than De [Allemagne, from ‘which Frenchmen obtained for the first time authentic 1 |/information as to the intellectual development of Germany. oné| Benjamin Constant wrote a work on the source, forms, and “. | history of religion ; he was also the author of Adolphe, a “romance, and adapted Schiller’s Wallenstein for the French ” ‘stage. But his principal work is the collection of his Discours Pronencés & la Chambre des Députés, in which he eloquently defends, from many points of view, the prin- ondiciples of constitutional government. De Sismondi dis-

played astonishing energy as a writer on history, literature, and political economy, and it is still necessary for students

| of the subjects on which he wrote to consult his works,

His Icstoire des Francais, although planned on too vast a scale, is a wonderful monument of industry, learning, and literary skill, and not less valuable in their own way are

his [Histoire dela Renaissance de la Liberté en Italie and

his De la Littérature du Midi de Europe. A. Vinet, an Vinet. eminent Protestant theologian, produced a great impression

by his Descours sur Quelques Sujets Religieux and various other theological works, which are full of vigorous thought expressed in a clear, direct, and manly style. Among Swiss novelists R. Tépffer, author of L’Z/ erttage, Traversée, Tépfter. and many other works, takes a distinguished place. His early writings attracted the attention of

Goethe, who read them with pleasure ; and Sainte-Beuve, in praising Tépffer's methods, gave utterance to the general opinion of educated Frenchmen. The three brothers André, Antoine Elisée, and The Joel Cherbuliez, and their sisters Adrienne and Madame Cher- Tourte-Cherbuliez, were all well-known writers ; and Victor bie. Cherbuliez, the son of André, is one of the brightest and

most fertile novelists of the present day in France. He commands respect also as a writer on politics.

In the later literature of the German cantons there are not so many famous names as in the later literature of the French cantons. Of a group of writers who connected the influences of the 18th century with those of the 19th, J. Atertini. B. Albertini was the most original; but he appealed to a comparatively small class. He was a bishop in the church of the Moravian Brethren, and his poems give powerful expression to the deeply religious sentiment of his sect.

A romance by J. C. Appenzeller—Gertrud von Wart Appen- (1813)—was so popular that it was translated into French, eller. Dutch, and English ; but it has not maintained the high

place which was for some time attributed to it. J. R. Wyss. Wyss edited the Alpenrosen from 1811 for about twenty years, and for this periodical he wrote many poems, taking

his subjects chiefly from Swiss history and legends. He completed and published a story begun by his father, Der Schweizerische Robinson, translations of which have been widely circulated in France, Spain, England, and America.

He also wrote '"Rufst du, mein Vaterland," the great national song of Switzerland. A.E. Frohlich was a good Fréllich. writer of fables, and J. A. Henne made a considerable Henne. reputation, not only as a poet but as the writer of a work entitled Manethos, die Origines unserer Geschichte und Chronologie, in which he sought to prove the European origin of the Aryan race. T. Meyer-Merian, author of the Meyer- well-known song, "Ich ging so ganz alleine," was also a Merian. vigorous

dramatist. Dramatic and lyrical poems of some power were written by T. Bornhauser, but they were too Bom- plainly intended to serve a political party to have per- hauser. manent significance. A more poetical writer was B. Reber. Reber, whose Bilder aus den Burgunder-Kriegen present

a series of glowing pictures from one of the most splendid periods of Swiss history.

All these writers were surpassed by Albert Bitzius, Bitzius. known as Jeremias Gotthelf from the title of his first book. He was the vicar of Liitzelfliith, and for many years found ample scope for his energies in quiet works of benevolence. Der Bauersptegel, oder Lebensgeschichte des Jeremias Gotthelf, published in 1836, when he was nearly forty years of age, at once made his name famous, and it was followed by Uli der Knecht, Uli der Péchter, Leiden und Freuden eines Schulmeisters, and other powerful tales.

The charm of his writings springs from the fact that they are an accurate representation of the thoughts, feelings, and habits of the people among whom he laboured. Bitzius was a man of an ardent and impulsive temper, but a close observer, capable of penetrating far below the

Keller.

800

surface of life, and endowed with a remarkable faculty of reproducing his impressions in striking imaginative pictures. His style is often rough and careless, but his artistic defects are never serious enough to interrupt the free development of his fresh and vivid conceptions. Another German writer of Switzerland whose name is well known beyond the limits of his own country is Gottfried Keller. He established his reputation by his

Agriculture, 779.

Albert of Hapsburg, 782, Albertini, 799, Allmends, 779.

Alps, 776, 779. Appenzell, 784. Appenzeller, 799.

Area, 776, 778. Aristocracy, 792.

Army, 780.

Associated districts, 786. Authorities, executive and legislative, 778.

Banks, 780.

Basel, 789.

Béranger, 799.

Bern, 784.

Bitzius, 799,

Bodmer, 797.

Bonaparte, 793.

Bonnet, 799.

Bonnivard, 797.

Bornhauser, 799.

Borromeo, 791.

Bourguet, 798.

Breitinger, 797.

Brun, 783.

Brune, 793.

Burgundian War, 786,

Calvin, 791.

Cantons, 778, 793, 795.

Cattle, 778.

Census returns, 778.

Chamois, 777.

Charles (the Bold) of Burgundy, 786,

Charriere, 799.

Cherbuliez, 799.

Churches, 779.

Cities, 778, 779, 794.

Civil war, first, 785.

Climate, 777.

Clock-making, 779.

Commerce, 780,

Communes, 793, 796.

Confederation, 781.

Constant, B., 799.

Constitution of 1848, 795; of 1874, 796.

Cotton manufacture, 779.

Counter Reformation,791.

Crops, 779.

Crousaz, 798.

De Lug, 799.

Density of population,

778.

Education, 760.

Einsiedeln abbey, 783.

Emigration, 779.

English War, 784.

Everlasting League, 781,

789,

Exports, 780.

Federal council, 795.

Felix and Regula abbey,

781.

Finance, 780.

Fisheries, 778.

Fohn, 777.

Foreign residents, 779.

Forest districts, 782.

Forests, 779.

Francis I. of France, 789.

Frederick of Toggenburg,

785.

Freiburg, 788.

SWO-—-SWO

romance Der Griine Heinrich (1854), and afterwards he published Die Leute von Seldwyla, a series of tales of village life, and Sieben Legenden. He is also the author of some volumes of poems.

See E. H. Gaullieur, Htudes sur U Histoire Littéraire de la Suisse Francaise (1856); J. C. Morikofer, Die schweizerische Literatur des achizehnien Jahrhunderts (1861); and R. Weber, Die poetisehe

INDEX.

French Revolution, 793.

Fréhlich, 799.

Gathe, 777.

Geography, 776.

Gessner, 797.

Glaciers, 777,

Glarus, 783.

Golden League, 791.

Gotteshausbund, 759.

Gotthelf, 799.

Government, 795.

Granson, battle of, 787,

Gugler War, 784,

Haller, 797, 799.

llapsburgs, 781.

Health resorts, 779.

Helvetic Republic, 793.

Henne, 799.

llirzel, 798.

History, 781.

Houses, 779,

Imports, 780.

Independence, 788, 791.

Industrics, 779,

Inn basin, 776.

Tron, 777.

Iselin, 798.

ltalian acquisitions, 785,

789.

Kappel, peace of, 790,

Keller, 800.

Lakes, 776.

Lamberty, 799.

Landamman, 794.

Landsgemeinde, 782, 794.

Languages, 778, 781.

Laupen, battle of, 784.

Lavater, 798.

Nationalliteratur der deutschen Schweiz (1866-67). (J. SL) League, Everlasting, 751, | Peasant Revolt, 792. Statistics, 778. 789. Pestalozzi, 798. Storms, 777. League of 1315, 782. Po basin, 776. Stoss, battle of the, 785, Lemanic Republic, 793. Population, 778. Sulzer, 798,

Leopold of Hapsburg, 783.

Leopold I11., 784.

Leventina, Val, 785.

Libraries, 780.

Literature, 796.

Live stock, 778.

Louis XI. of France, 786.

Lucerne, 783,

Mallet, 799.

Manufactures, 779.

Marriages, 778, 779.

Mediation, act of, 793.

Mermillod, 796.

Metals, 777.

Meyer-Merian, 799.

Milan contest, 789.

Milk industry, 779.

Minerals, 777.

Mineral springs, 779.

Morat, battle of, 787.

Morgarten, battles of, 733,

793.

Mountains, 776,

Miiller, 798.

Murten, battle of, 787.

Nafels, battle of, 784.

Napoleon I., 793.

Neuchatel, 794, 795.

Novara, 789.

Ochs, 793.

Pact of 1815, 794.

Parsons' ordinance, 788.

Pasture lands, 779.

Patriciate, 792.

SWORD. Origins and Early Forms.—The sword 1s a hand-weapon of metal, distinct from all missile weapons on the one hand, and on the other hand from staffi-weapons, —the pike, bill, halberd, and the like, —in which the metal head or blade occupies only a fraction of the effective length. The handle of a sword provides a grip for the hand that wields it, or sometimes for two hands; it may add protection, and in most patterns does so to a greater or less extent. But it is altogether subordinate to the blade. For want of a metal-headed lance or axe, which indeed were of later invention, a sharpened pole or a thin- edged paddle will serve the turn. A sword-handle without a blade is naught ; and no true sword-blade can be made save of metal capable of taking an edge. There are so- called swords of wood and even stone to be found in collections of savage weapons. But these are really flattened clubs; and the present writer agrees with Gen. Pitt-Rivers in not believing that such modifications of the club have had any appreciable influence on the form or use of true swords. On this last point, however, the opinions of competent archzeologists are so much divided that it must be regarded as fairly open. We will only remark that the occurrence in objects of human handiwork of a form, or even a series of forms, intermediate between two types is not conclusive evidence that those forms are historical links between the different types, or that there is any historical connexion at all. In the absence of dates fixed by external

Post-office, 780. Railways, 780. Rainfall, 777. Reber, 799, Referendum, 796. Reformation, 790. Religion, 779. Revenue, 780, Rhine, 776. Rhone, 776. Rivers, 776, Roads, 780. Roebuck, 777, Rousseau, J. J., 798.

Rudolph of llapsburg,

782.

St Gall, 784.

St Gotthard tunnel, 796, St Jakob on the Birs, 786. Salis-Seewis, 798.

Salt, 777.

Saussure, 799. Schaffhausen, 789, Schools, 780.

Schwyz, 781-783. Sempach, battle of, 784. Sexes, proportion of, 778. Sigismund, 786,

Silk industry, 779. Sismondi, 799, Solothurn, 788, Sonderbund, 795.

Spas, 779.

Stanz, compact of, 788.

Surface, 776. Telegraphs, 780.

Tell, 781.

Tells, the three, 792, Temperature, 777, Ten Jurisdictions, 786. Thirty Years' War, 791. Three Lands, the, 781. Three Tells, the, 792. Toépffer, 799.

Towns, 778, 779. Tschudis, 797, 798, Universities, 780. Unterwalden, 781, 782. Uri, 781, 782, 785. Usteri, 798.

Val Leventina, 785. Valtelline, 791, 794. Vaud, 793, Villmergen War, 792. Vinet, 799.

Visitors, foreign, 780. Vital statistics, 778. Wallis, 784, 793. Watch-making, 779. j Waterfalls, 777, Winds, 777.

Wood -carving, 779. Wooden houses, 779. Wyss, 799. Zimmermann, 798. Zug, 783,

Zurich, 783. Zwingli, 790.

— ee

nt

evidence this kind of comparison will seldom take us be-

yond plausible conjecture. A traveller who had never seen velocipedes might naturally suppose, on a first inspection, that the tricycle was a modification of the old four-wheeled velocipede, and the bicycle a still later invention; he would perhaps regard the two-wheeled " Otto" as the historical link between tricycles and bicycles. But we know that n fact the order of development has been quite different.

It is more difficult as a matter of verbal definition to distinguish the sword from smaller hand-weapons. Thus an ordinary sword is four or five times as long as an ordinary dagger: but there are long daggers and short swords ; neither will the form of blade or handle afford any certain test. The real difference lies in the intended use of the weapon ; we associate the sword with open combat, the dagger with a secret attack or the sudden defence opposed to it. One might say that a weapon too large to be concealed about the person cannot be called a dagger. Again, there are large knives, such as those used by the Afridis and Afghans, which can be distinguished from swords only by the greater breadth of the blade as com pared with its length. – Again, there are special types of arms, of which the yataghan is a good example, which their usual forms do not look much like swords, but m others that occur must be classed as varieties of the sword, unless we keep them separate by a more or less artificial theory, referring the type as a whole to a different origin.

Of the actual origin of swords we have no direct evidence. Neither does the English word nor, so far as

SworRD

we are aware, any of the equivalent words in other languages, Aryan or otherwise, throw any light on -the matter. We only know that swords are found from the earliest times of which we have any record among all people who have acquired any skill in metal-work. There are two very ancient types, which we may call the straight- edged and the leaf-shaped. Assyrian monuments represent a straight and narrow sword, apparently better fitted for thrusting than cutting. Bronze swords of this form have actually been found in Etruscan tombs, and by Dr Schlie- mann at Mycenz, side by side with leaf-shaped specimens. We have also from Mycenze some very curious and elab- orately wrought blades, so broad and short that they must be called ornamental daggers rather than swords. The leaf-shaped blade is common everywhere among the remains of men in the " Bronze Period" of civilization, and

+2

Pee

SSS ans

BS

oor SSS SSE

PSS

2 =|] as

44

Fic, 1.—1-5, Greek swords of the classical type (Gerhard's Griechische Vasen- bilder), 6-15, Roman swords from Lindenschmit, Zracht und Bewaffnung des rémischen Heeres wihrend der Kaiserzett, Brunswick, 1882. 6, So-called "sword of Tiberius" from Mainz (Brit. Mus.); 7,

Bonn (private collection), length 765 mm.; 8, legionary (monument at Wiesbaden); 9, cavalry (monu- ment at Mainz); 10, cavalry (monument at Worms); 12, 13, sword handles

(Kiel and Mainz); 11, 14, 15, from Trajan's column, this was the shape used by the Greeks in historical times, and is the shape familiar to us in Greek works of art. It is impossible, however, to say whether the Homeric heroes wore the leaf-shaped sword, as we see it, for example, on the Mausoleum sculptures, or a narrow straight-edged blade of the Assyrian-Mycenean pattern. In any case, the sword holds a quite inferior position with Greek warriors of all times. We have not the means of pronouncing which pattern is the older. To a modern eye the Assyrian or Mycenzean sword looks fitter for thrusting than cutting. The leaf-shaped sword, so far as we know from works of art, was used with a downright cutting blow, regardless of the consequent exposure of the swordsman's body; this, however, matters little when defence is left to a shield or armour, or both. The use of the sword as a weapon of combined offence and defence—swordsmanship as we now

understand it—is quite modern. If the sword was de- veloped from a spearhead or dagger, one would expect it to have been a thrusting weapon before it was a cutting one. But when we come to historical times we find that the effective use of the point isa mark of advanced skill and superior civilization. The Romans paid special atten- tion to it, and Tacitus tells us how Agricola's legionaries made short work of the clumsy and pointless arms of the Britons when battle was fairly joined.1 The tradition was preserved at least as late as the time of Vegetius, who, as a technical writer, gives details of the Roman soldier's sword exercise. Asiatics to this day treat the sword merely as a cutting weapon, and most Asiatic swords are incapable of being handled in any other way.

Historical T'ypes.—The normal types of swords which we meet with in historical times, and from which all forms now in use among civilized nations are derived, may be broadly classified as straight-edged or curved. In the straight-edged type, in itself a very ancient one, either

thrusting or cutting qualities may predominate, and the blade may be double-edged or single-edged. The double- edged form was prevalent in Europe down to the 17th century. The single-edged blade, or backsword as it was called in England, is well exemplified in the Scottish weapons commonly but improperly known as claymores, and is now exclusively employed for military weapons. But these, with few exceptions, have been more or less influenced by the curved Oriental sabre. Among early double-edged swords the Roman pattern stands out as a workmanlike and formidable weapon for close fight ; the point was used by preference. In the Middle Ages the Roman tradition disappeared, and a new start was made from the clumsy barbarian arm which the Romans had despised. Gradually the broad and all but pointless blade was lightened and tapered, and the thrust, although its real power was unknown, was more or less practised. St Louis anticipated Napoleon in calling on his men ta use the point ; and the heroes of dismounted combats in the Morte Darthur are described as " foining " at one another. In the first half of the 16th century a well-proportioned and well-mounted cut-and-thrust sword was in general use, and great artistic ingenuity was expended, for those who could afford it, on the mounting and adornment. The growth and variations of the different parts of the hilt, curiously resembling those of a living species, would alone be matter enough for an archeological study. One peculiar form, that of the Scottish basket-hilt, derived from the Venetian pattern known as schiavone, has persisted to our own day without material change.

Quite different from the European models is the crescent- shaped Asiatic sabre, commonly called scimitar. We are not acquainted with any distinct evidence as to the origin of this in time or place. The fame of the Damascus manufacture of sword-blades is of great antiquity, as is also that of Khordsdn, still the centre of the best Eastern work of this kind. Whoever first made these blades had conceived a very definite idea,—that of gain- ing a maximum of cutting power regardless of loss in other qualities,—and executed it in a manner not to be improved upon. The action of the curved edge in deliver- ing a blow is to present an oblique and therefore highly acute-angled section of the blade to the object struck, so that in effect the cut is given with a finer edge than

could safely be put on the blade in its direct transverse section. In a well-made sabre the setting of the blade with regard to the handle ("leading forward ") is likewise ordered with a view to this result. And the cutting power of a weapon so shaped and mounted is undoubtedly very great. But

1 Agric., 36: "Britannorum gladii sine mucrone complexum ar- morum et in aperto pugnam non tolerabant."

the use of the point is abandoned, and the capacities of defensive use (to which Orientals pay little or no atten- tion) much diminished. These drawbacks have caused the scimitar type, after being in fashion for European light cavalry during the period of Napoleon's wars and somewhat longer, to be discarded in our own time. But, as long as Easterns adhere to their rigid grasp of a small handle and sweeping cut delivered from the shoulder, the Persian scimitar or Indian talwdr will remain the natural weapon of the Eastern horseman. Indian and Persian swords are often richly adorned; but their appropriate beauty is in the texture of the steel itself, the "damascen- ing" or "watering" which distinguishes a superior from a a "

ay RS

Fic, 2.—Oriental swords (reproduced by permission from Egerton's Jilustrated Handbook of Indian Arms, published by the India Office, 1880). 1, 2, Decorated Persian arms; 3, gauntlet sword ; 4, common type of talwdr (North-West Pro-

vinces); 5, yataghan type; 6, Persian talwdr; 8, kukri (Nepal); 7, 9, 10,

Mahratta, showing transition to gauntlet sword.

common specimen. This process, long obscure to Euro- peans, has in recent times been explained (see below). There are special Asiatic

varieties of curved blades of which the origin is more or less uncertain. Among these the most remarkable is perhaps the yataghan, a weapon pretty much coextensive with the Mohammedan world, though it is reported to be not common in Persia. It has been imported from Africa, through a French imitation, as the model of the sword-bayonets which have been common for about a generation in European armies; probably the French authorities caught at it to satisfy the sentiment, which lingered in Continental armies long after it had dis- appeared in England, that even the infantry soldier after the invention of the bayonet must have some kind of

sword. A compact and formidable hand-weapon has thus been turned into a clumsy and top-heavy pike. If we try to make a bayonet that will cut cabbages, we may or may not get a useful chopper, but we shall certainly get a very bad bayonet. The double curve of the yataghan is gy}. stantially identical with that of the Goorkha knife (kukri), though the latter is so much broader as to be more like a woodman's than a soldier's instrument. It is doubt. ful, however, whether there is any historical connexion, Similar needs are often capable of giving rise to similar inventions without imitation or communication. There are yet other varieties, belonging to widely spread families of weapons, which have acquired a strong individuality, Such are the swords of Japan, which are the highly per. fected working out of a general Indo-Chinese type; they are powerful weapons and often beautifully made, but a European swordsman would find them ill-balanced and clumsy, and the Japanese style of sword-play certainly has nothing to teach us.

Other sorts of weapons, again, are so peculiar in form or historical derivation, or both, as to refuse to be referred to any of the normal divisions. The long straight gauntlet- hilted sword (pafé) found both among the Mahratias in the south of India, and among the Sikhs and Rajputs in the north, is an elongated form of the broad-bladed dagger

with a cross-bar handle (katdr), as is shown by a transi:

tional form, much resembling in shape and size of blade the medizval English anlace, and furnished with a guard for the back of the hand. This last-mentioned pattern seems, however, to be limited to a

comparatively small region. When once the combination of a long blade with the gauntlet hilt was arrived at, any straight blade might be so mounted ; and many appear on examination to be of European workmanship—German, Spanish, or Italian. There are various other Oriental arms, notably in the Malay group, as to which it is not easy to say whether they are properly swords or not. The Malay " parang latok" is a kind of elongated chopper sharpened by being bevelled off to an edge on one side, and thus capable of cutting only in one direction. The anlace incidentally mentioned above seems to be merely an overgrown dagger ; the name occurs only in English and Welsh; in which language first, or whence the name or thing came, is unknown (see Philol. Soc. Dict., s.v.).

Modern European Developments.—In the course of the 16th century the straight two-edged sword of all work was lengthened, narrowed, and more finely pointed, till it became the Italian and Spanish rapier, a weapon still fur nished with cutting edges, but used chiefly for thrusting. We cannot say how far this transition was influenced by the estoc, a medieval thrusting weapon carried by horsemen rather as an auxiliary lance than as a sword. The Roman preference of the point was rediscovered under new conditions, and fencing became an art. Its progress was from pedantic complication to lucidity and simpherty, and the fashion of the weapon was simplified also. Early in the 18th century, the use of the edge having been finally abandoned in rapier-play, the two-edged blade was supplanted by the bayonet-shaped French duelling sword, on which no improvement has since been made except giving it a still simpler guard. The name of rapier 18 often but wrongly given to this by English writers. About the same time, or a little earlier, the primacy of the art passed from Italy to France, and there it still remains. It would take us too far to consider the history of fencing here; Mr Egerton Castle's work will be found 4 eo worthy guide, and almost indispensable for those who wis really to understand the passages relating to sword-play 1 our Elizabethan literature, of which the fencing scene 1 Hamlet is the most famous and obvious example.

Meanwhile a stouter and broader pattern, with sundry minor varieties, continued in use for military purposes, and gradually the single-edged form or broadsword prevailed. The well-known name of Ferara, peculiarly associated with Scottish blades, appears to have originally belonged toa Venetian maker, or family of makers, towards the end of the 16th century. The Spanish blades made at Toledo had by that time acquired a renown which still continues. Somewhat later Oriental example, imported probably by way of Hungary, induced the curvature found in most recent military sabres, which, however, is now kept within

“ia. 3.—Typical European swords, 16th-18th centuries. Reproduced by per- mission from Mr Egerton Castle’s Schools and Masters of Fence. 1, Early 16th cent.; 2, German, c. 1550; 3, Italian rapier, third quarter 16th cent.; | 4, Spanish rapier, late 16th cent.; 5, Italian, same period; 6, English, same | period ; 7, English musketeer’s sword, early 17th cent.; 8, Spanish broad- sword, early 17th cent.; 9, Venetian, c. 1550; 10, Italian, late 16th cent.; 11,) English, time of Commonwealth ; 12, French rapier, c. 1650; 13, German flam- | berg, early 17th cent.; 14, 15, small-swords, 1700-1750.

juch bounds as not to interfere with the effective use of the point. An eccentric specialized variety—we may call a “sport”—of the sabre is the narrow and flexible ‘schliger ” with which German students fight their duels Hor the most part not arising out of any quarrel, but set rials of skill), under highly conventional rules almost identical with those of the old English “ backswording” wactised within living memory, in which, however, the words were represented by sticks. These “schlager” fuels cause much effusion of blood, but not often serious

There are plenty of modern books on sabre-play, but comparatively little attention has been given to its scien- tific treatment. It is said that the Italian school is better than the French, and the modern German

and Austrian the best of all. Some of the English cavalry regiments have good traditions, enriched of late years by the application of a knowledge of fencing derived from eminent French masters.

The Manufacture of Swords.—Mechanical invention has not been able to supersede or equal hand-work in the production of good sword-blades. The swordsmith's craft is still, no less than it was in the Middle Ages, essentially a handicraft, and it requires a high order of skill. His rough material is a bar of cast and hammered steel tapering from the centre to the ends; when this is cut in two, each half is made into a sword. The "tang" which fits into the handle is not part of the blade, but a piece of wrought iron welded on to its base. From this first stage to the finishing of the point it is all hammer-and-anvil work. Special tools ~~are used to form grooves in the blade according to the regulation or other pattern desired, but the shape and weight of the blade are fixed wholly by the skilled hand and eye of the smith. Measuring tools are at hand, but are little used. Great care is necessary to avoid overheating the metal, which would produce a brittle crystal~~ line grain, and to keep the surface free from oxide, which would be injurious if hammered in. In tempering the blade the workman judges of the proper heat by the colour. Water is preferred to oil by the best makers, notwithstanding that tempering in oil is much easier. With oil there is not the same risk of the blade coming out distorted and having to be forged straight again (a risk, how- ever, which the expert swordsmith can generally avoid); but the steel is only surface-hardened, and the blade therefore remains liable to bend. Machinery comes into play only for grinding and polishing, and to some extent in the manufacture of hilts and appurtenances. The finished blade is proved by being caused to strike a violent blow on a solid block with the two sides flat, with the edge, and lastly with the back; after this the blade is bent flatwise in both directions by hand, and finally the point is driven through a steel plate about an eighth of an inch thick. In spite of all the care that can be used both in choice of material and in workmanship, about 40 per cent. of the blades thus tried fail to stand the proof, and are rejected. The process we have briefly described is that of making a really good sword; of course plenty of cheaper and commoner weapons are in the market, but they are hardly fit to trust a man's life to. It is an

interesting fact that the peculiar skill of the swordsmith is in England so far hereditary that it can be traced back in the same families for several genera- tions.

The best Eastern blades are justly celebrated, but they are not better than the best European ones; in fact, European swords are often met with in Asiatic hands, remounted in Eastern fashion. The "damascening" or " watering" of choice Persian and Indian arms is not a secret of workmanship, but is due to the peculiar manner of making the Indian steel itself, in which a crystallizing process is set up; when metal of this texture is forged out, the result is a more or less regular wavy pattern running through it. No difference is made by this in the practical qualities of the blade.

The following list of works is intended to guide the reader, if desired, to fuller acquaintance with the literature and authorities of the subject, and will, it is hoped, be found useful for that purpose, but it does not profess to be in itself sufficient even as a selection. 2

Archxology and General History.—R. F. Burton, The Book of the Sword (only one vol. published), London, 1884; Colonel Lane Fox (now Major-Gen. Pitt- Rivers), Catalogue of Anthropological Collection, South Kensington Museum, London, 1874; 'Primitive Warfare," in Journal of the Royal United Service Institution, 1867, 1868, 1869. For special regions and periods, see Hon. Wilbraham Egerton, Jllustrated Handbook of Indian Arms, published by the India Office, London, 1880; Lindenschmit, 7racht und Bewaffnung des rdémischen Heeres wahrend der Kaiserzeit, Brunswick, 1882; Drummond and Anderson, Anctent Scottish Weapons, Edinburgh and London, 1881. The more general treatises and handbooks on arms and armour, such as Grose, Meyrick, Hewitt, Lacombe, Demmin, may be consulted with advantage, but are not always to be trusted in details, 'The Forms and History of the Sword," in Proceedings of the Royal Institution, 1883, by the present writer, gives further references and citations on various points. ;

Swordsmanship.—Egerton Castle, Schools and Masters of Fence from the Middle Ages to the Eighteenth Century, London, 1885 (including a

critical bibliography) ; Vigeant, Bibliographie de ’ Escrime Ancienne et Moderne, Paris, 1882; Gomard (assumed name of Possellier), Théorie de [Escrime, Paris, 1845 (historical intro- duction); Grisier, Les Armes et le Duel, Paris, 1847 (preface by A. Dumas); Chapman, Foil Practice, London, 1861; Notes and Observations on the Art of Fencing, 1864; J. M. Waite, Lessons in Sabre, &c., London, [1881]. The French official Manuel d’Escrime (approved 1877) gives a very clear and concise summary of the modern school. Cordelois’s Legons d’Armes (Paris, 1872, 2d ed.) and Camille Prévost’s Théorie Pratique de [Escrime (Paris, 1886) are the latest and best treatises on the small-sword. There is forthcoming in England, in the ¢‘ Badminton Series,” a work on Fencing by W. H. Pollock and F. Craufurd Grove, to which is added Bibliotheca Artis Dimicatoriz, a Complete and General Biblio- graphy of the Art of Fence, by Egerton Castle.

Technology.—Wilkinson, Engines of War, London, 1841; Latham, “ The Shape of Sword-Blades,” Journal of the Royal U.S. Institution, 1862; Marey, Mémoire sur les Armes Blanches, Strasburg, 1841, transl. by Lieut.-Col. Maxwell, London,

1860. (F. PO.)

SWORD-FISH. Sword-fishes are a small family of | tate to attack whales and other large cetaceans, and, by .

spiny-rayed fishes (Xiphiidx), the principal characteristic of which consists in the prolongation of the upper jaw into a long pointed sword-like weapon. The “sword” is formed by the coalescence of the intermaxillary and maxillary bones, which possess an extremely hard texture ; it has the shape of a much elongate cone, more or less flattened throughout its whole length; the end is sharply pointed. It is smooth above and on the upper part of the sides, and rough below owing to the presence of innumer- able rudimentary teeth, which have no function.

The general form of the body is well proportioned, somewhat elongate, and such as is always found in fishes with great power of Ye swimming, as, for in- stance, in the mackerel and tunny, and the tail

: : : Sword-Fish terminates in a powerful bi- (Histiophorus pul-

lobed caudal fin. A long fin chellyis). occupies nearly the whole length of the back, whilst the anal fin is generally interrupted in the middle, and conse- quently appears to be double. The skin is very firm, partly naked, partly with small lanceolate scales deeply imbedded in the skin. The teeth of the lower jaw are, like those of the upper, merely rudimentary structures, which render the surface of the bone rough without possessing any special function.

Sword-fishes have been divided into three generic groups :—

a. Histiophorus, with a high dorsal fin which can be spread out like a sail, and with ventral fins which are reduced to a pair of long styliform appendages.

b. Tetraptwrus, with a dorsal fin of which the anterior rays only are elongate, the remainder of the fin being low or partly obsolete, and with styliform ventral fins as in the preceding genus.

e. Xiphias, with the dorsal fin shaped as in Letrapturus, but without ventral fins.

Sword-fishes are truly pelagic fishes, which either singly or in pairs or in smaller or larger companies roam over the oceans of the tropical and subtropical zones of both hemi- spheres. Some species wander regularly or stray far into the temperate seas. Some of the tropical forms are the largest of Acanthopterygian fishes, and not exceeded in size by any other Teleostean ; such species attain to a length of from 12 to 15 feet, and swords have been preserved more than 3 feet long and with a diameter of at least 3 inches at the base. The Histiophori, which inhabit chiefly the Indo-Pacific Ocean, but occur also in the Atlantic, seem to possess in their high dorsal fin an additional aid for loco- motion. During the rapid movements of the fish this fin is folded downwards on

the back, as it would impede the velocity of progress by the resistance it offers to the water 4 but, when the fish is swimming in a leisurely way, it is frequently seen with the fin erected and projecting out of the water, and when quietly floating on the surface it can sail by the aid of the fin before the wind, like a boat.

The food of the sword-fishes is the same as that of tunnies, and consists of smaller fish, and probably also in great measure of pelagic cuttle-fishes. It has been ascer- tained by actual observation that sword-fishes procure their food by dashing into a school of fishes, piercing and kill-ing a number of them with their swords ; and this kind of weapon would seem to be also particularly serviceable in killing large cuttle-fish, like the saw of saw-fishes, which is used for the same purpose. But the swords of the large species of Histiophorus and Tetrapturus are, besides, most formidable weapons of aggression. These fishes never hesi-

repeatedly stabbing them, generally retire from the combat, victorious. That they combine in these attacks with the. thresher-shark is an often-repeated story which has its. foundation in the imagination of the observer, and which is fully disproved by the fact that the dentition of the thresher-shark is much too weak to make an impression on the skin of any cetacean. The cause which excites sword- fishes to such attacks is unknown ; but they follow the in. stinct so blindly that they not rarely assail boats and ships. in a similar manner, evidently mistaking them for ceta- ceans. They easily pierce the light canoes of the natives of the Pacific islands and the heavier boats of the pro- fessional sword-fish fishermen, often dangerously wounding the persons sitting in them. Attacks by sword-fishes on ocean-going ships are so common as to be included among sea-risks: they are known to have driven their weapon through copper-sheathing, oak-plank, and timber to depth of nearly 10 inches, part of the sword projecting

Into the inside of the ship; and the force required to pro-

duce such an effect has been described by Prof. Owen in a court of law as equal to “the accumulated force of fifteen double-handed hammers,” and the velocity as “ equal to that of a swivel-shot,” and ‘as dangerous in its effects as a heavy artillery projectile.” Among the specimens of planking pierced by sword-fishes which are preserved in the British Museum there is one less than a foot square which encloses the broken ends of three swords, as if the fishes had had the object of concentrating their attack on the same vulnerable point of their supposed enemy. The part of the sword which penetrates a ship’s side is almost always broken off and remains in the wood, as the fish is unable to execute sufficiently powerful backward move- ments to free itself by extracting the sword.

In the Mediterranean and on the Atlantic coasts of the United States the capture of sword-fishes forms a regular — branch of the fishing-industry. The object of the fishery in the Mediterranean is the common European sword-fish (Xiphias gladius), the average weight of which is about one cwt., and which is abundant off the Sicilian coasts and on the opposite coast of Calabria. Two methods are em- ployed,—that by harpoons, chiefly used for larger fish, and that by peculiarly constructed nets called palamitare. This fishery is very productive: a company of fishermen fre quently capture from twenty to fifty fish in a single day, and the average annual catch in Sicily and Calabria is reported to be 140,000 kilogrammes (138 tons). The products of the fishery are consumed principally in a fresh state, but a portion is preserved in salt or oil. The flesh of the sword-fish is much preferred to that of the tunny, and always commands a high price. This species is occa- sionally captured on the British coast. ;

On the coast of the United States a different species, Histiophorus gladius, occurs ; it is a larger fish than the Mediterranean sword-fish, attaining to a length of from 7 to 12 feet, and an average weight of 300 or 400 b. It is captured only by the use of the harpoon. From forty to fifty vessels, schooners of some 50 tons, are annually engaged in this fishery, with an aggregate catch amounting annually to about 3400

sword-fishes, of a value of $45,000. The flesh of this species is inferior in flavour to that of the Mediterranean species, and is principally consumed after having been preserved in salt or brine.

Useful and detailed information on the sword-fish fishery can – obtained from A. T. Tozzetti, "La Pesca nei Mari d'Italia € & Pesca all' Estero esercitata da Italiani," in Catalogo —ee Internazionale di Pesca in Berlino, 1880; also from La ia " Pesce-Spada nello Stretto di Messina (Messina, 1880), and G. Brown Goode, "Materials for a History of the Sword-fish, ¢ Report of the Commissioner of Fish and Fisherves, ee é.) ' Washington, 1883. (A. GG.

Ss Y B—S Y D

SYBARIS, a city of Magna Grecia, on the Gulf of Tarentum, between the rivers Crathis (Crati) and Sybaris (Coscile), which now meet 3 miles from the sea, but anciently had independent mouths, was the oldest Greek colony in this region. It was an Achzan colony founded by Isus of Helice (720 3.c.), but had among its settlers many Treezenians, who were ultimately expelled. Placed in a very fertile, though now most unhealthy, region, and fol- lowing a liberal policy in the admission of citizens from all quarters, the city became great and opulent, with a vast subject territory and divers daughter colonies even on the Tyrrhenian Sea (Posidonia, Laus, Scidrus). For magnifi- cence and luxury the Sybarites were proverbial throughout Greece, and in the 6th century probably no Hellenic city could compare with its wealth and splendour. At length contests between the democrats and oligarchs, in which many of the latter were expelled and took refuge at Crotona, led to a war with that city, and the Crotoniats with very inferior forces were completely victorious. They razed Sybaris to the ground and turned the waters of Crathis to flow over its ruins (510 zB.c.). Explorations undertaken by the Italian Government in 1879 have failed to lead to a precise knowledge of the site.

See Academy, vol. xvii. p. 73 (24th January 1880); Lenormant, La Grande-Grece (1881), i. 825 sg.; and THURII. .

SYCAMORE. See Fic, vol. ix. p. 154, and Martz, vol, xv. p. 524.

SYDENHAM, a suburb of London, in the county of Kent, is finely situated chiefly on elevated ground about 7 miles south of Charing Cross, London, There is rail- way communication by the London, Brighton, and South Coast, the Mid Kent branch of the South-Eastern, and the London, Chatham, and Dover lines. Formerly Sydenham was a small hamlet of Lewisham, which rose into favour from its sylvan beauty, its pleasant situation, and its medicinal waters. These springs were discovered in 1640 on Sydenham common. The quality of the water re- sembled that of Epsom, and was regarded as efficacious in scorbutic and paralytic affections. After the construc- tion of a railway the suburb grew into high repute as a residence, especially for the wealthier commercial and pro- fessional classes. The construction of the Crystal Palace (see Lonpon, vol. xiv. p. 836) in 1854 greatly aided the prosperity of Sydenham, although the building is not within its boundaries. There is a public lecture hall and literary institute at Sydenham Hill, and a school of art, science, and literature in connexion with the Crystal Palace. The charitable institutions include a home and infirmary for sick children and the South London dispen- sary for women. The population of the township (area, 1623 acres) was 19,065 in 1871, and 26,076 in 1881.

SYDENHAM, Tuomas (1624-1689), "the English Hippocrates," was born at Winford Eagle in Dorset in 1624, where his father was a gentleman of property and good pedigree. At the age of eighteen he was entered at Magdalen Hall, Oxford ; after two years his college studies appear to have been interrupted, and he served for a time as an officer in the army of the Parliament. He completed his Oxford course in 1648, graduating as bachelor of medi- cine, and about the same time he was elected a fellow of All Souls College. It was not until nearly thirty years later (1676) that he graduated as M.D., not at Oxford, but at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge, where his eldest son was then an undergraduate. His interest in medicine seems to have been aroused at an early age. Nothing is known of Sydenham's life between 1648 and 1663; but it is probable that he spent part of the time at Oxford. It is said also (on the authority of one Desault, in a work published at Bordeaux in 1733) that he studied at Mont- pellier, although it is not so stated by himself in his

dedicatory letter to Dr Mapletoft, among the other auto- biographical facts there given. In 1663 he passed the examinations of the College of Physicians for their licence to practise in Westminster and 6 miles round; but it is probable that he had been settled in London for some time before that. This minimum qualification to practise was the single bond between Sydenham and the College of Physicians throughout the whole of his career. He seems to have been distrusted by the heads of the faculty because he was an innovator and something of a plain-dealer. In his letter to Mapletoft he refers to a class of detractors "qui vitio statim vertunt si quis novi aliquid, ab illis non prius dictum vel etiam inauditum, in medium proferat"; and in a letter to Robert Boyle, written the year before his death (and the only authentic specimen of his English composition that remains), he says, "I have the happiness of curing my patients, at least of having it said concerning me that few miscarry under me; but [I] cannot brag of my correspondency with some other of my faculty. . . . Though yet, in taking fire at my attempts to reduce practice to a greater easiness, plainness, and in the meantime letting the mountebank at Charing Cross pass unrailed at, they contradict themselves, and would make the world believe I may prove more considerable than they would have me." Sydenham attracted to him in warm friendship some of the most discriminating men of his time, such as John Locke and Robert Boyle. His first book, Methodus Curandi Febres, was published in 1666 ; a second edition, with an additional chapter on the plague, in 1668; and a third edition, much enlarged and bearing the better-known title of Obdservationes Medicx, in 1676. His next publication was in 1680 in the form of two Epistolx Responsoriz, the one, "On Epidemics," addressed to Brady, regius professor of physic at Cambridge, and the other, "On the Lues Venerea," to Paman, public orator at Cambridge and Gresham professor in London. In 1682 he issued another Dissertatio Hpistolaris, on the treatment: of confluent smallpox and on hysteria, addressed to Dr Cole of Worcester. The Tractatus de Podagra et Hydrope came out in 1683, and the Schedula Momitoria de Nove Febris Ingressu in 1686. His last completed work, Pro- cessus Integri, is an outline sketch of pathology and prac- tice ; twenty copies of it were printed in 1692, and,

being a compendium, it has been more often republished both at home and abroad than any other of his writings separately. A fragment on pulmonary consumption was found among his papers. His collected writings occupy about 600 pages 8vo in the original Latin.

Hardly anything is known of Sydenham's personal history in London. He died in an acute paroxysm of gout in December 1689. He was buried in the church of St James's, Piccadilly, where a mural slab was put up by the College of Physicians in 1810.

Although Sydenham was a highly successful practitioner and saw more than one new edition of his various tractates called for, besides foreign reprints, in his lifetime, his fame as the father of English medicine, or the English Hippocrates, was decidedly posthumous. For a long time he was held in vague esteem for the success of his cooling (or rather expectant) treatment of smallpox, for his laudanum (the first form of a tincture of opium), and for his. advocacy of the use of Peruvian bark in quartan agues. There were, however, those among his contemporaries who understood something of Sydenham's importance in larger matters than details of treatment and pharmacy, chief among them being the talented Morton. But the attitude of the academical medicine of the day is doubtless shown forth in Lister's use of the term "sectaries" for Sydenham and his admirers, at a time (1694) when the leader had been dead five years. If there were any doubt that the opposition to him was quite other than political, it would be set at rest by the testimony of Dr Andrew Brown,! who went from Scotland to inquire into Sydenham's practice, and has incidentally revealed

1 See Dr John Brown's Horw Subsecive, art. '*Dr Andrew Brown and Sydenham."

what was commonly thought of it at the time, in his Vindicatory Schedule concerning the New Cure of Fevers. In the series of Harveian orations at the College of Physicians, Sydenham is first mentioned in the oration of Arbuthnot (1727), who styles him "emulus Hippocratis." Boerhaave, the Leyden professor, was wont to speak of him in his class

(which had always some pupils from England and Scotland) as " Anglie lumen, artis Phebum, veram Hippocratici viri speciem."" Haller also marked one of the epochs in his scheme of medical progress with the name of Syden- ham. He is indeed famous because he inaugurated a new method and a better ethics of practice, the worth and diffusive influence of which did not become obvious (except to those who were on the same line with himself, such as Morton) until a good many years after- wards. It remains to consider briefly what his innovations were. First and foremost he did the best he could for his patients, and made as little as possible of the mysteries and traditional dogmas of the craft. All the stories told of him are characteristic. Called to a gentleman who had been subjected to the lowering treatment, and finding him in a pitiful state of hysterical upset, he " conceived that this was occasioned partly by his long illness, partly by the previous evacuations, and partly by emptiness. I therefore ordered him a roast chicken and a pint of canary." A gentleman of fortune who was a victim to hypochondria was at length told by Sydenham that he could do no more for him, but that there was living at Inverness a certain Dr Robertson who had great skill in cases like his; the patient journeyed to Inverness full of hope, and, finding no doctor of the name there, came back to London full of rage, but cured withal of his complaint. Of a piece with this is his famous advice to Blackmore. When Blackmore first engaged in the study of physic he inquired of Dr Sydenham what authors he should read, and was directed by that physician to Don Quixote, "which," said he, "is a very good book; I read it still." There were cases, he tells us, in his practice where "I have consulted my patient's safety and my own reputation most effectu- ally by doing nothing at all." It was in the treatment of small- pox that his startling innovations in that direction made most stir. It would be a mistake, however, to suppose that Sydenham wrote no long prescriptions, after the fashion of the time, or was entirely free from theoretical bias. Doctrines of disease he had, as every practitioner must have ; but he was too much alive to the multi- plicity of new facts and to the infinite variety of individual con- stitutions to aim at symmetry in his theoretical views or at con- sistency between his practice and his doctrines; and his treatment was what he found to answer best, whether it were secundum artem or not. His fundamental idea was to take diseases as they pre- sented themselves in

nature and to draw up a complete picture ("krankheitsbild" of the Germans) of the objective characters of each, Most forms of ill-health, he insisted, had a definite type, comparable to the types of animal and vegetable species. The con- formity of type in the symptoms and course of a malady was duc to the uniformity of the cause. The causes that he dwelt upon were the "'evident and conjunct causes," or, in other words, the morbid phenomena; the remote causes he thought it vain to seek after. Acute diseases, such as fevers and inflammations, he regarded as a wholesome conservative effort or reaction of the organism to meet the blow of some injurious influence operating from without ; in this he followed the Hippocratic teaching closely as well as the Hippocratic practice of watching and aiding the natural crises. Chronic diseases, on the other hand, were a depraved state of the humours, mostly due to errors of diet and general manner of life, for which we ourselves were directly accountable. Hence his famous dictum: "acwtos dico, qui ut plurimum Deum habent authorem, sicut chronici ipsos nos." Sydenham's nosological method is essentially the modern one,.except that it wanted the morbid anatomy part, which was first introduced into the "natural history of disease" by Morgagni nearly a century later. In both departments of nosology, the acute and the chronic, Sydenham contributed largely to the natural history by his own accurate ob- servation and philosophical comparison of case with case and type with type. The Observationes Medic# and the first Epistola Respon- soria contain evidence of a close study of the various fevers, fluxes, and other acute maladies of London over a series of years, their differences from year to year and from season to season, together with references to the prevailing weather,—the whole body of ob- servations being used to illustrate the doctrine of the " epidemic constitution " of the year or season, which he considered to depend often npon inscrutable telluric causes. The type of the acute disease varied, he found, according to the year and season, and the right treatment could not be adopted until the type was known. There had been nothing quite like this in medical literature since the Hippocratic treatise, Iepi dépwv, bddrwv, rérwv ; and there are probably some germs of truth in it still undeveloped, although the modern science of epidemiology has introduced a whole new set of considerations. Among other things Sydenham is credited with the first diagnosis of scarlatina and with the

modern definition of chorea (in Sched. Monit.). After smallpox, the diseases to which he refers most are hysteria and gout, his description of the latter

(from the symptoms in his own person) being one of the classical pieces of medical writing. While Sydenham's "natural history" method has doubtless been the chief ground of his great post- humous fame, there can be no question that another reason for the admiration of posterity was that which is indicated by R. @ Latham, when he says, "I believe that the moral element of a liberal and candid spirit went hand in hand with the intellectual qualifications of observation, analysis, and comparison."

The most critical biography is that by Dr R. G. Latham prefixed to his translation of Sydenham's Works (2 vols., London, 1848, Syd. Soc.). Dr John Brown's " Locke and Sydenham," in Hore Subsecive, Edinburgh, 1858, is more of the nature of eulogy. Many collected editions of his works have been pub- lished, as well as three English translations. Dr W. A. Grcenhill's Latin text (London, 1844, Syd. Soc.) is a model of editing and indexing. There have heen foreign monographs on Sydenham by Goeden (Berlin, 1827), Rovers (Dort, 1838), F. Jahn (Hisenach, 1840), and Hvasser (Upsala, 1846). 'The most; inter. esting summary of doctrine and practice by the author himself is the introduc. tion to the 3d ed. of Observationes Medic (1676). (C. C

SYDNEY, the capital of New South Wales, and the oldest city in Australia, is situated on the east coast of that island-continent in 33° 51' 41" §. lat. and 151° 19' 23"°25 (10h. 4m, 49°55s.) E. long. It lies on the southern shore of the magnificent harbour of Port Jackson, which in 1770 was named, though not discovered, by Captain Cook. He anchored and landed in Botany Bay, about 6 miles to the south, and on afterwards coasting to the north noted what looked like an inlet, to which he gave the name of Port Jackson, after Sir George Jackson, one of the secretaries to the admiralty. It may seem strange that so careful an observer as Cook should have passed close to one of the finest harbours in the world without recog- nizing its capacity; but the cliffs

which guard the entrance are 300 feet in height, and no view of the landlocked basin can be seen from the masthead. Middle Head, which is posted right opposite the entrance, closes it in, and it is necessary to enter, turn to the south, and then to the west before the best part of the harbour discloses itself. This topographical peculiarity gives to the port its great shelter. When in 1788 Captain Phillip arrived at Botany Bay with the first convict fleet, he found its shallow waters and flat shores unsuited for the purposes of a settlement. Strangely enough he was also deterred by the want of water; yet it is on that very shore that the pumping-engine is situated by which Sydney has been supplied for many years. Going northwards, he turned in to examine Port Jackson mlet. Thither the fleet was instantly removed ; and Sydney was founded, and Australian colonization started, on 26th January 1788. Captain Phillip's choice of a site was de- termined by the existence of fresh water in a small stream running into Sydney Cove.

Fic. 1.—Harbour and environs of Sydney.

The port is flanked on both sides by a number of pro- montories—its characteristic feature—so that in addition to a broad central channel with deep water there 1s both on the north and the south side a series of sheltered bays with good anchorage. The entrance is a mile wide, with a minimum depth of 15 fathoms. Some little distance inside is a rock awash, known as the Sow and Figs, between which and the nearest headlands on either side is an inner bar, with 20 feet of water at low tide ; through this bar on the southern side a ship channel has been dredged giving 27 feet of water at neap tide. On the southern side there occur in succession Watson's Bay, Rose

Sh FO Ss PS Se

AON ES Nes ee

NA |

(<< ii

pe -Y 'D

Bay, Double Bay, Rushcutter's Bay, Woolloomooloo Bay, Farm Cove, Sydney Cove, Darling Harbour, Johnstone's Bay, Blackwattle Bay, Iron Cove, Five Dock Bay, Hen and Chickens Bay, besides smaller inlets. On the north- ern side, beginning again at the Heads, there are North Harbour, Middle Harbour (with many subsidiary inlets), Chowder Bay, Sirius Cove, Mossman's Bay, Shell Cove, Neutral Bay, Careening Cove, Lavender Bay, Berry's Bay, Balls Head Bay, Lane Cove, Tarban Creek, and other small bays. All these promontories and coves give a, length of water frontage which is estimated at not less than 110 miles. Besides these, Botany Bay, though shal-

low and exposed and destitute of promontories, has a coast- Into it debouches George's river,

line of about 18 miles.

NEY 807

which is navigable to. Liverpool, a distance of 14 miles from the mouth, and in which are several capacious bays.

The metropolitan area of Sydney really consists of a peninsula about 13 miles in length, lying between Parra- matta and George's rivers. The sea frontage of this area, from the South Head of Port Jackson to the North Head of Botany Bay, is 12 miles in length, and consists alter- nately of bold cliffs and beautiful beaches. Two of the latter—Bondi and Coogee—are connected with the city by tramways, and are favourite places of holiday resort. Sydney occupies, therefore, a position enjoying singular natural advantages.

The city proper, as subsequently determined, takes in the water frontage from the head of Rushcutter's Bay on

Scale of Yards 200° °~«@00~—~=« GO

For: CJ Denison

jthe east to the head of Blackwattle Bay on the west, giving a shore-line of 8 miles, of which 18 are the frontage jof the Domain and Botanic Gardens. The remainder is joccupied for commercial purposes, and is held partly by jthe Government and partly by private owners. There jare three large public wharfs—one, known as Circular |Quay, embracing the greater part of Sydney Cove, seven- eighths of a mile in length, the second at the head of Darling Harbour, a quarter of a mile in extent, and the third at the head of Woolloomooloo Bay. The rest is occupied by private wharfs, the principal of which are on the east shore of Darling Harbour. A project is on foot for the resumption of the whole by the Government, and ithe making of a uniform quay, with a railway and a new jstreet. The area of the city is 2670 acres, of which no part is more than a mile and a quarter distant from the water, whilst the average distance is three-quarters of a mile. The surface contour is undulating, the maximum

Fic. 2.—Map of Sydney

elevation being 230 feet and the average 120. The soil is sandstone, covered more or less with shaly clay. Of the city area about 800 acres are devoted to public use. The largest reserve is Moore Park, lying to the south-east of the city, nearly 500 acres in extent—originally a waste of sandhills. On it are the rifle range, the Agricultural Society's showground, and the principal cricket ground. The Inner and Outer Domains on the shore of the harbour contain about 130 acres. The former contains Government House, with its private garden and paddocks; the Outer Domain is a public park. The beautiful botanic gardens occupy the shore-line of Farm Cove, commanding the man-of-war anchorage. Hyde Park, the original race-course of the city, is about 49 acres in extent. At the north entrance isa statue of Prince Albert, and on its most elevated part is one of Captain Cook. Prince Alfred Park, on the southern boundary of the city, originally called Cleveland Paddocks, occupies nearly

18 acres, and in it is the original exhibition building, now much used for concerts and festive gatherings. Belmore Park occupies 10 acres,

and Cook and Phillip Parks each about the same area. The Fort Phillip reserve is a sort of acropolis, two of its rocky sides being escarped. Here, at an elevation of 146 feet, stands the astronomical ob- servatory. Grose Farm, on the south-west of the city, was the site of one of the earliest attempts at Government farming. It is an undulating and elevated piece of land, and is divided amongst the university and the affiliated colleges of St Paul, St John, and St Andrew, the Prince Alfred Hospital, and Victoria Park.

The city started from the banks of the Tank stream at the head of Sydney Cove, and the chief business part is still in the limited area lying between Darling Harbour and the Domain and Hyde Park. The streets are irregular in width, some of them narrow and close together, while those leadiug down to Darling Harbour have a steep incline. Sydney has consequently more the look of an Old- World city than any other in Australia, and in its lack of spacious promenades and open squares and places, and in its poor oppor- tunity for displaying its public buildings, it contrasts unfavour- ably with the more symmetrically planned sister cities of Australia. On the other hand, it has a charm which is all its own, as the glimpses of the harbour and the shipping obtainable from so many points give a delightful variety to the street vistas. The principal business street is George Street, 2 miles long, flanked with hand- some commercial buildings. In this street are the post-office, the town-hall, the cathedral, and the main railway station. Only second in importance is Pitt Street, which runs nearly parallel with it as far as the railway station.

The public and private buildings of Old Sydney are of a primi- tive order of architecture, but they are rapidly disappearing as the city 1s being rebuilt. With the exception of Government House, the university and affiliated colleges, and the registrar-general's office, all the non-ecclesiastical public buildings are in a classical style. Of the modern public buildings the museum, the post-office, the offices for the colonial secrctary, the minister for public works, and the minister for lands, and the custom-house are the finest. The town-hall is a fine building, but a little too florid; the great hall, when finished, will be the largest in Australia. The Anglican cathedral in George Street is small. A Roman

Catholic cathedral, on the east side of Hyde Park, replaces an earlier one that was burnt down, and will, when completed, be the finest ecclesiastical edifice in the city. The mint (an adaptation of an old hospital) is an imperial establishment, the cost of which is defrayed by the colonists. The annual value of the coinage from local gold is about £500,000, and this coinage has imperial currency. All the large public buildings are constructed of Sydncy sandstone, which is abundant in quantity, though variable in quality. The best comes from the quarries in Pyrmont.

The length of streets, lanes, and public ways is about 100 miles. These are mostly macadamized, but wood paving has lately come much into favour. The saleyards for cattle and sheep (area 40 acres) are 7 miles off, at Homebush. The gross city revenue from all sources is about £376,000. For municipal purposes the city is divided into eight wards, each returning three aldermen, and for parliamentary purposes into three electorates—east, west, and south—each returning four members. In 1881 the city popula- tion was 105,000. It was in 1886 officially estimated at 125,000. The population of the suburbs was officially estimated in 1884 at 150,000, making a total metropolitan population of 275,000. Com- munication with the suburbs! is maintained to a large extent by steam tramways, entirely in the hands of the Government. The whole district between Sydney and Parramatta is practically sub- urban for 2 miles on each side of the railway. The fashionable suburbs lie to the east of Sydney, the business extension of the city being more to the westward. The southern side is largely devoted to manufacturing operations, and population is rapidly extending in the direction of Botany Bay. The north shore of the harbour is outside the city limits, aud the communication is by steam ferries. The north shore has deep water close in shore, but little level ground, the land rising rapidly to an elevation of 300 feet. Up this ascent the Government has constructed a cable tramway, and from the railway between Newcastle and Sydney, which crosses the Parra- matta river 2 miles below the head of the navigation, there is to be a branch line of railway to the north shore, opposite the city.

Water was at first obtained from the so-called Tank stream ;

1 Paddington forms practically an eastern suburb of Sydney, with which there is constant omnibus communication. Victoria barracks are situated within its boundaries. Paddington is inhabited chiefly by the better classes, and possesses a number of public and private schools. A municipal constitution was granted it in April 1860. The population of the borough in 1881 was 9608.

SYDREY

afterwards recourse was had toa lagoon on the southern Slope of the dividing ridge between Port Jackson and Botany Bay, from which an artificial tunnel, known as Busby's Bore, brought the water into the city at the level of Hyde Park. Whena further supply was wanted the same watercourse was utilized, the works being constructed at the point where it flowed into Botany Bay. A scheme is now (1886) in course of execution to bring water from the Upper Nepean, at a point 63 miles from Sydney. 'Two streams running in deep sandstone gorges are connected by a tunnel, and their united waters are brought in an open conduit. From the nature of the ground no large reservoir is possible near its source – but about 15 miles from Sydney, at Prospect, near Parramatta, a dam thrown across a valley makes a storage reservoir that will hold a year's supply. From that point the water is taken by open canal and piping to the existing reservoir in Crown Street, the limited area at a higher level being supplied by puinping. The delivery into the city will be over 150,000,000 gallons daily, and the cost of the whole works will exceed £1,500,000.

The old system of sewerage having several outfalls along the city front proved so objectionable that a new system has been de. signed, and is in course of execution, whereby the harbour will be preserved from all pollution. A great drain is carried from the city to the ocean at a projecting headland north of Bondi Bay known as Ben Buckler, where the sewage will go at once into deep water with a southerly current. The mouth of the sewer, though exposed to the beat of the ocean im very heavy weather, is 6 feet above high-water mark, and from that point it rises with a uniform inclination of 1 in 109, and in a nearly straight line, for a distance of 4 miles 25 chains. This main sewer, which

throughout is one continuous monolith in concrete, passes in tunnels under the rocky ridges, and on concrete arches across the intervening flats. It diminishes in size from 84 by 7} feet to 5 feet 1 inch by 4 feet 1 inch, and at the upper end it bifurcates to accommodate two separate districts. It is of an oblate, oviform section, as nearly circular as is consistent with a minimum velocity of 2} feeta second. It drains an area of 4282 acres, and is calculated to discharge all the sewage when this area is populated as thickly as London, to. gether with half an inch of rain per day. The bulk of the storm water is to pass off by surface drains. The sewage of the zone of land along the foreshore is to be lifted into the main sewer. From the southern slope of Sydney another large sewer runs southwards, and, crossing the mouth of Cook's River by a siphon, discharges its contents upon a sandy peninsula well suited for the purpose of a sewage farm.

The jurisdiction of the port of Sydney is in the hands of a marine board, of which three members are elected by the shipping interest, and three others and the president are nominated by the Govern- ment. They have the control of the pilot service, which is en- tirely a Government department. A new lighthouse has recently been erected on the South Head cliff, fitted with a powerful electric light, which is visible 27 miles off. The quarantine ground on North Head is isolated from the adjacent watering-place of Manly Beach by a fence and a broad belt of unoccupied land. Ships in quarantine anchor in a sheltered position off the beach, where a hospital ship is also stationed.

Port Jackson being the chief naval depot of Australasia and the headquarters of the admiral's station, the fortifications of the har- bour have engaged the attention of successive Governments. The inner line of defence constructed by Sir William Denison has been superseded by more elaborate works. On the north side of the harbour Middle Head, George's Head, and Bradlcy's Head have powerful guns which cross fire with those on the South Head, com- pletely commanding the entrance to the channel. There is alsoa very effective torpedo service. Garden Island, off the mouth of Woolloomooloo Bay, has been handed over to the imperial Govern- ment as a naval depét ; the man-of-war anchorage is close under its lee, and the colonial Government has

constructed all necessary wharfs and store-houscs. There is a Government dock at Cockatoo Island capable of accommodating the largest vessels, with a machine- shop close by. Adjoining this a new dock is being hewn out of the sandstone 600 feet in length and 108 feet wide; the depth of water over the sill at spring tide is to be 32 feet, and at neap tide 29 feet 6 inches, and the width at the entrance 84 feet. Mort's Dock and Engineering Company have a large dock at Waterview Bay capable of taking in all the ordinary mail steamers, Thereis also a patent slip, which can take up vessels of 1000 tons, anda second is in course of construction for vessels of 1500 tons. The graving- dock is 410 feet long. Besides this, there are other smaller patent slips, and a floating dock for the accommodation of smaller craft.

Sydney is in the centre of a great coal-basin, the eastern part of which is supposed to be under the sea; whether a workable seam exists under the city itself, and, if so, at what depth, is at present undetermined, borings of 2000 feet having as yet failed to strike the coal. The seams crop out at Lake Macquarie, north of Sydney, and dip to the south; they also rise to the surface at the south of Sydney, where they dip to the north. Twenty-four miles south of Sydney the seam has been found at a depth of 850 feet, and at

about the same distance to the north at a depth of 600 feet. Coal is also brought into the city by railway from the Blue Mountains and from the Mittagong district, but it is inferior in quality to that mined on the coast.

The abundance and cheapness of coal, as well as the natural and commercial advantages of Sydney, have been favourable to certain lines of manufacturing industry, notwithstanding the high price of labour. In addition to the industries connected with shipping, those connected with the pastoral industry have also been devel- oped, such as tanning, glue-making, meat-preserving, &c. The large railway works have, under the patronage of the Government, led to the manufacture of locomotives, and nearly all the rolling stock is made in the colonies. Ommnibuses, cabs, carriages, buggies, drays, and carts are made in

every variety and of excellent quality, as is also harness. Bootmaking is an extensive business ; there are also manufactories of tobacco, sugar, kcrosene, spirits, beer, tweed, paper, furniture, glass, pottery, and stoves, as well as a great variety of minor industries.

Public schools abound, with merely nominal fees. There is a high school for boys and girls. The grammar-school, with an attendance of 400 boys, receives from Government £1500 a year, with the free use of the buildings. To the handsome university buildings a medical school is now being added. The great hall is the finest Gothic building in Australasia. The university is a teaching as well as examining institution, degrecs being given in the four faculties of arts, medicine, law, and science. 'The univer- sity, which is governed by a senate elected by the graduates, has a Government endowment of £12,000 a year, and has been enriched by several donations and bequests (amounting to £250,000, of which about £180,000 by Mr Challis). 'To it are attached three denomi- national affiliated colleges, one belonging to the Anglican Church, one to the Roman Catholic, and one to the Presbyterian ; to cach the Government contributed the land, £10,000 towards the build- ing fund, and an annual stipend of £500 a year for the principal. Technical education is conducted nnder the auspices of a board supported entirely at the cost of the Government. The pupils already number more than a thousand, and the attendance at the elasses is steadily increasing. 'There is a good school of arts, with 400 members, and a good circulating library. The public free library is supported by the Government, and to it is attached a lending branch. The Royal Society has a roll of 500 members, meets periodically for the reading and discussion of scientific papers, publishes its transactions, and has a small library. The Linnean Society is also well supported, and a Geographical Society has lately been started. The museum, in College Street, is managed by trustces and supported wholly at the cost of the Government. There is a small museum attached to the university, to which Mr Macleay has bequeathed his collection, which is especially rich in natural history. ;

Sydney has many charitable institutions. It has three hospitals, the newest and largest, which is close to the university, having been built

after the best European models. There are three large lunatic asylums in the suburbs ; the latest is on the pavilion prin- eiple. The benevolent asylum, which is mainly supported by the Government, gives a large amount of outdoor assistance, takes in all waifs and strays, and acts as a lying-in hospital. Old men are provided for in an institution at Liverpool. At Randwick is an asylum for destitute children, which receives a large amount of Government support ; and there are two orphan asylums at Parra- matta; but the state children are now being boarded out, under the auspices of a Government board. There are two soup-kitchens and refuges, supported by private contributions, and also a charity organization society. There isa home visiting and relief society, intended principally for those who have known better. days, and a prisoners' aid society, besides numerous friendly societies. All the churches are well represented, and to each is attached one or more charitable agencies.

The climate of Sydney is mild and moderately equable. It resembles closely the climate of Toulon. The mean temperature is 62°°6 Fahr. and the extreme range of the shade thermometer is from 106° to 36° Fahr. The sea-breeze which prevails during the summer comes from the north-east, and, while it tempers the heat, makes the air moist and induces languor. In winter the prevail- ing wind is from the west, and the air is dry and bracing. The annual rainfall is 50 inches. The hot north-west wind of summer sometimes sends the humidity down below 30°, and once it has been as low as 16°. In the cool westerly winds of winter it seldom falls to 55°, and never below 45°. Thc average humidity for the year is 74°, The mean tide is 8 feet 3 inches. (A. GA.)

SYENE (Aswin). See Eeyrr, vol. vii. p. 783.

SYENITE. See Granite, vol. xi. p. 49.

SYLBURG, Frrepricn (1536-1596), an eminent Greek scholar, and one of the greatest figures in the annals of German philology, was the son of a farmer, and was born at Wetter near Marburg in 1536. Wetter had then an ex-

cellent school, taught by J. Foenilius and Justus Vulteius, and Sylburg also got help in his studies from the preacher J. Pincier, whose daughter he subsequently married. His studies were continued at Marburg and Jena, and then at Geneva (1559) and at Paris. Here his teacher was Henry Estienne (Stephens), to whose great Greek Thesaurus Sylburg afterwards made important contributions. Re- turning to Germany, he was for a time a schoolmaster at Neuhaus near Worms, and then head of a new gymnasium at Lich, where he edited a useful edition of Nicolas Cleynart's Greek Grammar (Frankfort, 1580), which was thrice reprinted during his lifetime. But the period of his important literary labours began when (having pre- viously, in 1581, declined a call to the Greek chair at Marburg) he resigned his post at Lich and moved to Frankfort to act as corrector and editor of Greek texts for the enterprising publisher J. Wechel. To his Frankfort period belong the editions of Pausanias (1583), Herodotus (1584), Dionysius of Halicarnassus (2 vols., 1586—one of his best pieces of work), Aristotle (5 vols., 1587—dedi- cated to the landgraves of Hesse, from one of whom, Louis IV., he received a pension), the Greek and Latin sources for the history of the Roman emperors (3 vols., 1589-90), and the Ilept ovvrdé£ews of Apollonius. In 1591 he was attracted to Heidelberg by the treasures of the library, not yet scattered by the Thirty Years' War. Here he became librarian to the elector palatine, and was un- tiring in collecting further MS. treasures. At the same time the series of editions, which Wechel had begun to find too costly, was continued by the Heidelberg publisher Hieronymus Commelinus. At Heidelberg were printed Clement of Alexandria (1592), Justin Martyr (1593), the Etymologicum Magnum (1594), the Scriptores de Le Rustica (1595), the Greek gnomic poets (1596), Xenophon (1596), Nonnus (1596), and other works. All Sylburg's editions show great critical power and indefatigable industry. Indeed he wore himself out with work, and died on 16th February 1596, "nimiis vigiliis ac typographicis laboribus consumptus," as his tombstone in the churchyard of St Peter's in Heidelberg has it. There is a careful notice of his life by K. W. Justi in Strieder's Hessische Gelehrten-Geschichte, xviii. 481 sq.

SYLHET, a British district of India, in the province of Assam, lying between 25° 12’ and 23° 59’ N. lat. and 91° and 92° 38’ E. long., with an area of 5381 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by the Khasi and Jaintia Hills district, on the E. by Cachar, on the 8. by the state of Hill Tipperah and the district of Tipperah, and on the W. by the district of Maimansinh. Sylhet consists of the lower valley of the Surma or Barak river, and for the most part isa uniform level, broken only by scattered clusters of sandy hillocks called tilds, and intersected by a network of rivers and drainage channels. In the south eight low ranges of hills, spurs of the Tipperah Mountains, run out into the plain, the highest range being about 1500 feet above sea-level. There is also a small detached group in the centre of the district called the Ita Hills. Entering the district from Cachar, the Surma bifurcates into two branches: the main branch flows beneath the hills border- ing the north-east part, while the minor branch, the Kusidra, flows in a south-westerly direction across the district ; they again unite on the south-western boundary and fall into the Meghna under the name of Dhaleswari. Both branches are navigable by large boats and support a busy traffic. The wild animals of the district comprise elephants, tigers, buffaloes, bison, and several varieties of deer. The climate of Sylhet is extremely damp and the rainfall is heavy, reaching an annual average of over 150 inches; the rainy season generally lasts from April to October.

In 1881 the population was returned at 1,969,009, of whom 999,785 were males and 969,224 females. Hindus numbered 949,353, Mohammedans 1,015,531, and hill tribes 3708. The only places with a population exceeding 5000 are Sylhet town (14,407) and Kashba Baniachang,:a large village (24,061). Sylhet town, the administrative headquarters of the district, is situated on the right or north bank of the Surma, and besides the usual public offices contains a handsome church and the mosque of Shah Jalal (a fakir whose miraculous powers contributed greatly to the Mussulman conquest of the country), which attracts pilgrims from great dis- tances. Out of the total area 3080

square niles were returned as under cultivation in 1882-83 and 654 as cultivable. The staple crop is rice, which yields three harvests during the year. There are immense forest tracts in the south-eastern parts of Sylhet. The chief industries are the weaving by Manipuri women of cotton cloths called Manipuri khesh, also handkerchiefs and mosquito curtains tastefully embroidered with silk. The manufacture of mats, ivory and shell carving, and other ornamental work are also pursued with much skill and elegance.

Sylhet with the rest of Bengal passed into the hands of the British in 1765. Previous to 1874 Sylhet formed an integral part of Bengal, being included in the Dacca division ; but in September of that year it was annexed, together with the adjoining district of Cachar, to the chief-commissionership of Assam.

SYLT (probably from the Old Frisian Silendi, z.¢., "sea- land") is the largest German island in the North Sea, being 40 square miles in area and nearly 23 miles long. Tt is, however, very narrow, generally about half a mile in width, except in the middle, where it sends out a peninsula 7 miles across. It belongs to the province of Schleswig-Holstein, and lies from 7 to 12 miles from the Schleswig coast. Its long and slender outline is highly suggestive of its former position as part of a continuous line of coast, now in great part swept away. The invasion of the sea has made considerable progress even within a comparatively recent period, and several hamlets were swallowed up in the 13th and 14th centuries. The process of gradual waste is still going on, though it is now obviated to some extent by the exertions of the Prussian Government, and counterbalanced by deposits of mud on the landward side. The central peninsula contains some "marshland" and moorland pasture, on which a few thousand sheep are grazed, but the rest of the island consists merely of dunes or sand-hills, which at places attain a height of from 100 to 150 feet. The inhabitants, about 3000 in number, are of Frisian origin, though a few in the extreme north of the island speak Danish. Their occupations are fishing, oyster-dredging, seamanship, and wild-duck catching ; the women make large quantities of woollen jackets. The chief places are Keitum (850 inhabitants), Westerland, which is annually visited by about 1500 sea-bathers, and

Morsum. Some very interesting pagan tombs have been found on the island.

SYLVESTER. See SILvEsTER.

SYMBOL. See Creeps.

SYME, James (1799-1870), surgeon, was born at Edin- burgh on 7th November 1799. His father was a writer to the signet and a landowner in Fife and Kinross, who lost most of his fortune in attempting to develop the mineral resources of his property. James was sent to the High School at the age of nine, and remained there until he was fifteen, when he entered the university. For two years he frequented the arts classes (including botany), and in 1817 began the medical curriculum, devoting him- self with particular keenness to chemistry. His chemical experiments led him to the discovery that 'a valuable substance is obtainable from coal tar which has the property of dissolving india-rubber," and could be used for waterproofing silk and other textile fabrics,—an idea which was patented a few months afterwards by Macintosh of Glasgow. In the session of 1818-19 Syme became assistant and demonstrator in the dissecting room of Liston, who had started as an extra-mural teacher of anatomy in competition with his old master Barclay; in those

years he held also resident appointments in the infirmary and the fever hospital, and spent some time in Paris prea ing dissection and operative surgery. In 1823 Liston handed over to him the whole charge of his anatomy classes, retaining his interest in the school asa pecuniary venture ; the arrangement did not work smoothly, and 9 feud with Liston arose, which did not terminate unti] twenty years later, when the latter was settled in London, Syme's next venture was the Brown Square school of medicine, which he started in 1824-25 in conjunction with Dr Macintosh, Dr Fletcher, and others; the partner. ship was again inharmonious, and soon came to an end, Announcing his intention to practise surgery only, Syme started a surgical hospital of his own, Minto House hos. pital, which he carried on from May 1829 to

September 1833, with great success as a surgical charity and school of clinical instruction. It was here that he first put into practice his method of clinical teaching, which consisted in having the patients to be operated or prelected upon brought from the ward into a lecture-room or theatre where the students were seated conveniently for seeing and taking notes. His private practice had become very considerable, his position having been assured ever since his amputation at the hip joint in 1823, the first of the kind in Scotland. In 1833 he succeeded Russel as professor of clinical surgery in the university. Syme's accession to the clinical chair was marked by two import- ant changes in the conditions of it: the first was that the professor should have the care of surgical patients in the infirmary in right of his professorship, and the second, that attendance on his course should be obligatory on all candidates for the medical degree. When Liston removed to London in 1835 Syme became the leading consulting surgeon in Scotland. On Liston's death in 1847 Syme was offered his vacant chair of clinical surgery at University College, London, and accepted it. He began prac- tice in London in February 1848; but early in May the same year difficulties with two of his colleagues at Gower Street and a desire to "escape from animosity and conten- tion" led him to throw up his appointment. He returned to Edinburgh in July, and was re-instated in his old chair, which the crown authority had meanwhile found a difficulty in appointing to. The judgment of his friends was that "che was always right in the matter, but often wrong i the manner, of his quarrels." In 1849 he broached the subject of medical reform in a letter to the lord advocate; in 1854 and 1857 he addressed open letters on the same subject to Lord Palmerston; and in 1858 a Medical Act was passed which largely followed the lines laid down by himself. As a member of the General Medical Council called into existence by the Act, he made considerable stir in 1868 by an uncompromising statement of doctrines on medical education, which were thought by many to be reactionary ; they were, however, merely an attempt 10 recommend the methods that had been characteristic of Edinburgh teaching since Cullen's time,— namely, a col stant reference of facts to principles, the subordination (but not the sacrifice) of technical details to generalities, and the preference of large professorial classes and the "magnetism of numbers" to the tutorial system, which he identified with "cramming."

In April 1869 he hada paralytic seizure, and at once resigned his chair ; he never recovered his powers, and died on 26th June 1870.

Syme's surgical writings are numerous, although the terseness of his style and directness of his method save them fron Bi bulky. In 1831 he published A 7'reatise on the Excision of Disease Joints (the celebrated ankle-joint amputation is known by his na His Principles of Surgery (often reprinted) came out a few mont F later ; Diseases of the Rectum in 1838 ; Stricture of the Urethra an Fistula in Perineo in 1849; and Excision of the Scapula i 1864, In 1848 he collected into a volume, under the title of Contributions

to the Pathology and Practice of Surgery, thirty-one original memoirs

ublished in periodicals from time to time ; and in 1861 he issued another volume of Observations in Clinical Surgery. Syme's charac- ter is not inaptly summed up in the dedication to him by his old pupil, Dr John Brown, of the series of essays Locke and Sydenham : "Verax, capax, perspicax, sagax, efficax, tenax."

See Memorials of the Life of James Syme, by R. Paterson, M.D., with portraits, Edinburgh, 1874.

SYMEON or Duruam was the author of two works of great importance in English history, especially in that of northern England, viz., the Historia Dunelmensis Ecclesve and the Historia Regum. Very little is known of his life. There is no record of the date of his birth or death. He was at Jarrow about 1080, before the monastic community moved thence to Durham (1083). He probably did not become a professed monk till some time after that event. In 1104 he was present at the opening of the coffin and the examination of the remains of St Cuthbert. Between 1104 and 1108 he composed his History of the Church of Durham, bringing it down to the death of William of St Oarilef (1096). Many years later he compiled his Hestoria Regum, which is a chronicle of Northumbrian affairs from the date at which Bede stops (731). He was also probably the author of a letter De

Archiepiscopis Hboraci, but not of the treatise De Miraculis et T'ranslationibus sometimes attributed to him. Selden, in his introduction to Twysden's Decem Scriptores, attributes the Historia Dunelmensis Ke- clesiz to Turgot, prior of that church; but Mr Arnold, in the preface to his edition of Symeon's works, successfully disproves Selden's assertions. This work is original and of great value; the Historia Regum, on the other hand, is a compilation from various sources, brought down by Symeon to 1121 or 1129. Both works were continued by other hands.

See Twysden, Decem Seriptores, and prefaces to Symeon's works, by Mr Hodgson Hinde (Surtees Society edition, 1868) and by Mr T. Arnold (Rolls Series edition, 1882-85).

SYMEON, surnamed Mztarurastes, Byzantine hagio- grapher, according to Leo Allatius (De Symeonum Scriptis, Paris, 1664), lived during the first half of the 10th century under Leo the Philosopher and his successor at Constanti- nople, where he successively held the positions of secretary, grand logothete, and master of the palace. This view, subse- quently adopted by Cave, Fabricius, and others, was after- wards disputed, but not convincingly, by Oudin (Comm. de Scriptt. Eccles. Antiq., vol. ii., 1722), who identified Meta- phrastes with another Symeon who also held the offices of logothete and master of the palace under John Comnenus, and published a still extant Hpitome Canonum in 1160. Symeon's Metaphrases, as his legends are called (whence his name Metaphrastes), occur in MS. in many European libraries ; many of them are also to be found in the Acta Sanctorum and similar collections ; but others remain un- printed. Allatius and Cave recognize only 122 of the hundreds of lives assigned to him as genuine. The titles of other writings of Symeon, with references to further authorities, will be found in the article "' Metaphrastes," by Gass, in Herzog-Plitt's Hncykl., vol. ix.

SYMMACHUS, pope from 498 to 514, had Anastasius II. for his predecessor and was himself followed by Hormisdas. He was a native of Sardinia, apparently a convert from paganism, and was in deacon's orders at the time of his election. The choice was not unanimous,

another candidate, Laurentius, having the support of a strong Byzantine party; and both competitors were con- secrated by their friends, the one in the Lateran church and the other in that of St Mary, on 22d November 498. A decision was not long afterwards obtained in favour of Symmachus from Theodoric, to whom the dispute had been referred ; but peace was not established until 505 or 506, when the Gothic king ordered the Laurentian party to surrender the churches of which they had taken posses-

sion. An important incident in the protracted controversy was the decision of the " palmary synod" (see vol. xix. p. 492). The remainder of the pontificate of Symmachus was uneventful; history speaks of various churches in Rome as having been built or beautified by him.

SYMMACHUS, Quintus AvRELIvs, consul in 391, and one of the most brilliant representatives in public life and in literature of the old pagan party at Rome, was educated in Gaul, and, having discharged the functions of preetor and queestor, rose to higher offices, and in 373 was proconsul of Africa. His public dignities, which included that of pontiff, his great wealth and high character, added to his reputation for eloquence, marked him out as the champion of the pagan senate against the measures which the Christian emperors directed against the old state re- ligion of Rome. In 382 he was banished from Rome by Gratian for his protest against the removal of the statue and altar of Victory from the senate-house, and in 384, when he was prefect of the city, he addressed to Valentinian a letter praying for the restoration of these symbols. This is the most interesting of his literary remains, and called forth two replies from St Ambrose, as well as a poetical refutation from Prudentius. After this Symmachus was involved in the rebellion of Maximus, but obtained his pardon from Theodosius, and appears to have continued in public life up to his death.

Ofthe writings of Symmachus we possess (1) ten books of Epistles, published after his death by his sou. The model followed by the writer is Pliny the Younger, and from a reference in the Saturnalia of Macrobius (bk. v., i. § 7), in which Symmachus is introduced as one of

the interlocutors, it appears that his contemporaries deemed him second to none of the ancients in the “rich and florid” style. The first edition of the Zpistles by Bart. Cynischus (s. . ef a., but pub- lished under Pope Julius II.) is very incomplete, and the collection was only gradually completed by subsequent editors. (2) Frag- ments of nine Complimentary Orations from a palimpsest, of which part is at Milan and part in the Vatican, were discovered by Mai, who published the Milan fragments in 1815, the Roman ones in his Scriptorum Veterum Nova Colicctio, vol. i. (1825), and the whole in 1846. The work was not well done, and many corrections are given in a new collation by O. Seeck (Commentationes in Honorem Th. Mommseni, Berlin, 1877, p. 595 sg.), which has been followed by an edition of the works of Symmachus in the Monumenta Ger- manize Historica, Berlin, 1883.

SYMPHONY. See Musto, vol. xvii. p. 95.

SYNAGOGUE (cvvaywyy), literally “assemblage,” is the term employed to denote either a congregation of Jews, i.e., a local circle accustomed to meet together for worship and religious instruction, or the building in which the con- gregation met. In the first sense the word is a translation of nDID, keneseth, in the second of NDIIN N’A, béth hakkeneseth. The germ of the synagogue, that is, of religious assemblages dissociated from the ancient ritual of the altar, may be found in the circle of the prophets and their disciples (see especially Isa. viii. 16 sq.) ; but the synagogue as an insti- tution characteristic of Judaism arose after the work of Ezra, and is closely connected with the development of that legal Judaism to which his reformation gave definite shape. From the time of Ezra downwards it was the busi- ness of every Jew to know the law; the school (béth ham- midrash) trained scholars, but the synagogue, where the law was read every Sabbath (Acts xv. 21), was the means of popular instruction. Such synagogues existed in all parts of Judea in the time of Psalm lxxiv. 8 (probably a psalm of the Persian period); in Acts xv. 21 it appears that they had existed for many generations “in every city.” This held good not only for Palestine but for the Disper- sion ; in post-Talmudic times the rule was that a synagogue must be built wherever there were ten Jews. And, though the name “synagogue” varies with mpocevyy (“place of

prayer”), it appears that everywhere the assemblage was primarily one for instruction in the law: the synagogue, as Philo puts it, wasa S.dacxadeiov. A formed institution

of this sort required some organization: the general order of the service was directed by one or more “rulers of the synagogue” (dpxiruvdywyot, Luke xiii. 14; Acts xiii. 15), who called on fit persons to read, pray, and preach ; alms were collected by two or more “collectors” (gabbdé sedakd) ; and a “minister” (hazzdn, brnpérns, Luke iv. 20) had charge of the sacred books (preserved in an “ark”) and of other ministerial functions, including the teaching of children to read, The discipline of the congregation was enforced by excommunication (héem) or temporary exclusion (niddity), and also by the minor punishment of scourging (Matt. x.17), inflicted by the hazedn. The disciplinary power was in the lands of a senate of elders (rpeaBdrepor, yepovoia), the chief members of which were dpyovres. The principal service of the synagogue was held on Sabbath morning, and included, according to the Mishnah, the recitation of the shema‘ (Deut. vi. 4-9, xi. 13-21; Numb. xv. 37-41), prayer, lessons from the law and prophets with Aramaic transla- tion, a sermon (derdshah) based on the lesson (Acts xiii. 15), and finally a blessing pronounced by the priest or invoked by a layman. On Sabbath afternoon and on Monday and Thursday there was a service without a lesson from the prophets; there were also services for all feast- days. Synagogues were built by preference beside water for the convenience of the ceremonial ablutions (comp. Acts xvi. 13); and remains of very ancient buildings of this class exist in several parts of Galilee ; they generally lie north and south, and seem to have had three doors to the south, and sometimes to have been divided by columns into a nave and two aisles.

Jewish tradition has a great deal to say about a body called “the great synagogue,” which is supposed to have been the supreme religious authority from the cessation of prophecy to the time of the high priest Simeon the Just, and is even said (by modern writers since Elias Levita) to have fixed the Old Testament canon (cp. vol. v. p. 3 sg.). But Kuenen

in his essay ‘Over de Mannen der Groote Synagoge” (Verslagen of the Amsterdam Academy, 1876) has shown that these traditions are fiction, and that the name keneseth haggdéla originally denoted, not a standing authority, but the great convoca- tion of Neh. viii.-x.

Compare in general Schtirer, Geschiehte des jiidischen Volkes, § 27, where the older literature is catalogued. For the usages of the synagogue in more recent timcs, see Buxtorf, Synagoge Judaica, Basel, 1641.

SYNEDRIUM (cvvédpiov), a Greek word which means “assembly” and is especially used of judicial or representa- tive assemblies, is the name by which (or by its Hebrew transcription, }/11N3D, sanhedrin, sanhedrim) that Jewish body is known which in its origin was the municipal coun- cil of Jerusalem, but acquired extended functions and no small authority and influence over the Jews at large (see vol. xiii. p. 424 sg.). In the Mishnah it is called “the san- hedrin,” “the great sanhedrin,” “the sanhedrin of seventy- one [members],” and “the great court of justice” (béth din haggadél). The oldest testimony to the existence and constitution of the synedrium of Jerusalem is probably to be found in 2 Chron. xix. 8; for the priests, Levites, and hereditary heads of houses there spoken of as sitting at Jerusalem as a court of appeal from the local judicatories does not correspond with anything mentioned in the old history, and it is the practice of the Chronicler to refer the institutions of his own time to an origin in ancient Israel. And just such an aristocratic council is what seems to be meant by the gerusia or senate of “elders” repeatedly mentioned in the history of the Jews, both under the Greeks from the time of Antiochus the Great (Jos., Ant., xii. 3, 3) and under the Hasmonean high priests and princes, The high priest as the head of the state was

doubtless also the head of the senate, which, according to Eastern usage, exercised both judicial and administrative oy political functions (comp. 1 Mac. xii. 6, xiv. 20). The exact measure of its authority must

have varied from time to time, at first with the measure of autonomy left to the nation by its foreign lords and afterwards with the more or less autocratic power claimed by the native sovereigns.

As has been shown in vol. xiii. p. 424 sq., the original aristocratic constitution of the senate began to be modified under the later Hasmoneans by the inevitable introduction of representatives of the rising party of the Pharisees, and this new element gained strength under Herod the Great, the bitter enemy of the priestly aristocracy.! Finally under the Roman procurators the synedrium was left under the presidency of the chief priest as the highest native tribunal, though without the power of life and death (John xviii, 31). The aristocratic element now again preponderated, as appears from Josephus and from the New Testament, in which "chief priests" and "rulers" are synonymous expressions. But with these there sat also "scribes" or trained legal doctors of the Pharisees and other notables, who are simply called "elders" (Mark xv. 1). The Jewish tradition which regards the synedrium as entirely composed of rabbins sitting under the presidency and vice-presidency of a pair of chief doctors, the nds and ab béth din,? is quite false as regards the true synedrium. It was after the fall of the state that a merely rabbinical béh din sat at Jabneh and afterwards at Tiberias, and gave legal re sponses to those who chose to admit a judicature not recognized by the civil power. Gradually this illegal court usurped such authority that it even ventured to pronounce capital sentences,—acting, however, with so much secrecy as to allow the Roman authorities to close their eyes to its proceedings (Origen, Hp. ad Afr. § 14). That this was possible will appear less surprising if we remember that in like manner the synedrium of Jerusalem was able to extend an authority not sanctioned by Roman law over Jews beyond Judea, e.g., in Damascus (Acts ix. 2; xxii. 5).

The council-chamber (SovAj) where the synedrium usually sat was between the Xystus and the temple, probably on the temple- hill, but hardly, as the Mishnah states, within the inner court. The meeting in the palace of the high priest which condemned our Lord was exceptional. The proceedings also on this occasion were highly

irregular, if measured by the rules of procedure which, according to Jewish tradition, were laid down to secure order and a fair trial for the accused.

Of the older literature of the subject it is enough to cite Selden, De Synedriis. The most important critical discussion is that of Kuenen in the Verslagen, &.,

of the Amsterdam Academy, 1866, p. 131 sg. A good summary is given by Schiirer, Geschichte des jruidischen Volkes, 2d ed., § 28, iii.

SYNESIUS, bishop of Ptolemais in the Libyan Penta- polis from 410 to ¢. 414, was born of wealthy parents, who claimed descent from Spartan kings, at Cyrene about 375. While still a youth (393) he went with his brother Euoptius to Alexandria, where he became an enthusiastic Neoplatonist and disciple of Hypatia (q.v.). Returning to his native place some time before 397, he was in that year chosen to head an embassy from the cities of the Pentapolis to the imperial court to ask for remission of taxation and other relief. His stay in Constantinople, which lasted three years, was wearisome and otherwise disagreeable ; the leisure it forced upon him he devoted in part to literary composition (see his De Providentia). The oration he delivered when at last admitted to the presence of Arcadius is also extant (De Regno). Returning abruptly to Cyrene in 400, he spent the next ten years partly that city, when unavoidable business called him there, but chiefly on an estate in the interior of the province, where ee eee

1 The name synedrium first appears under Hyrcanus II. (Jos., Am xiv. 9, 4). re

2 The former word properly means the sovereign and the latter a president of the tribunal. The false traditional application 1s posi', Mishnic.

he was able to enjoy the literary leisure that was most congenial to him, varying his studies with gardening and hunting and the quiet pleasures

of domestic life. His marriage took place at Alexandria in 403 ; in the previous year he had visited Athens. In 409 or 410 Synesius, whose Christianity had until then been by no means very pronounced, was popularly chosen to be bishop of Ptole- mais, and, after long hesitation on personal and doctrinal grounds, he ultimately accepted the office thus thrust upon him, being consecrated by Theophilus at Alexandria. One personal difficulty at least was obviated by his being allowed to retain his wife, to whom he was niuch attached; but as regarded orthodoxy he expressly stipulated for personal freedom to dissent on the questions of the soul's creation, a literal resurrection, and the final destruction of the world, while at the same time he agreed to make some concession to popular views in his public teaching (ra peév otkot pirooopay, ta & eEw ptAowvOGv), His tenure of the bishopric, which was comparatively brief, was troubled not only by domestic bereavements but also by barbaric invasions of the country, and by conflicts with the prefect Andronicus, whom he excommunicated for interfering with the church's right of asylum. The date of his death is un- known, but he died probably not later than 414.

His extant works are—(1) a speech before Arcadius, De Regno ; (2) Dio, sive de swo ipsius Institute, in which he signifies his purpose | to devote himself to true philosophy ; (3) Encomium Calvitii, a

literary jew d'esprit, suggested by Dio Chrysostom's Praise of Hair ; (4) De Providentia, in two books ; (5) De Insomniis ; (6) 157 Enpis- tole ; (7) 12 Hymni; and several homilies and occasional speeches. The editio princeps is that of Turnebus (Paris, 1553); it was followed by that of Morell, with Latin translation by Petavius (1612, greatly enlarged and improved 1633; reprinted by Migne, 1859). The £pistole, which for the modern reader greatly exceed his other works in interest, have been edited by Demetriades (Vienna, 1792) and by Glukus (Venice, 1812), the Calvitit En- comiwm by Krabinger (Stuttgart, 1834), the De Providentia by Krabinger (Sulzbach, 1835), the De Regno by Krabinger (Munich,

| 1825), and the Hymns by Flach (Tiibingen, 1875). See Clausen, De Synesio Philosopho (Copenhagen, 1831); Volkmann, Synesius

von Cyrene (Berlin, 1869); and Miss Alice Gardner's monograph in "The Fathers for English Readers " (London, 1886).

SYNOD. See Councit and PRESBYTERIANISM. | SYPHILIS. See Paruonoey, vol. xviii. pp. 404, 405, and SURGERY, p. 686 above.

SYRA, or Syros, a Greek island in the middle of the Cyclades, which in the 19th century has become the com- mercial centre of the Archipelago, and is also the residence | of the nomarch of the Cyclades and the seat of the central | law courts. In ancient times this island was remarkably fertile, as is to be gathered not only from the Homeric description (Od. xv. 403), which might be of doubtful | application, but also from the remains of olive presses and '| peculiarities in the local nomenclature. The destruction of its forests has led to the loss of all its alluvial soil, and now it is for the most part a brown and barren rock,) covered at best with scanty aromatic scrub, pastured by | sheep and goats. The length of the island is about 10 | miles, the breadth 5, and the area is estimated at 424 square miles. The population is now estimated to number about | 33,700, of whom about 20,500 are in the chief town. | Commerce is the main occupation of the islanders, though they also build ships, have extensive tanneries, large steam ' flour-mills, a steam weaving and rope factory, and a hand- kerchief factory, and grow vegetables for export. Hermopolis, as the chief town is called, is built round the harbour | on the east side of the island. It is governed by an active munici- pality, whose revenue and expenditure have rapidly increased. Among the public buildings are a spacious town-hall in the central square, a club-house, an opera-house, and a Greek theatre. Old Syra, on a conical hill behind the port town, is an interesting place, with its old Roman Catholic church of St George's still crowning the summit, This was built by the Capuchins, who in the Middle } Ages chose Syra as the headquarters of a mission in the East. Louis XTII., hearing of the dangers to which the Syra priests were exposed, took the island under his especial protection, and since that

time the Roman Catholic bishops of Syra have been elected by the ope. About the beginning of the 19th century the inhabitants of Syra

numbered only about 1000; whenever a Turkish vessel ap- peared they made off to the interior and hid themselves. On the outbreak of the war of Greek independence refugees from Chios, after being scattered throughout Tenos, Spezia, Hydra, &c., and rejected by the people of Ceos, took up their residence at Syra under the protection of the French flag. Altogether about 40,000 had sought this asylum before the freedom of Greece was achieved. The chief city was called Hermopolis after the name of the ship which brought the earlier settlers. Most of the immigrants elected to stay, and, though they were long kept in alarm by pirates, they have continued steadily to prosper. In 1875 1568 sailing ships and 698 steamers (with a total of 740,731 tons) entered and 1588 sailing ships and 700 steamers (with a total of 756,807 tons) cleared this port; in 1883 3379 sailing and 1126 steam vessels (with a total of 1,056,201 tons) entered and 3276 sailing and 1120 steam vessels (with a total of 960,229 tons) cleared. Most of the sailing vessels were Greek and Turkish, and most of the steamers were Austrian, French, and Turkish.

SYRACUSE (2vpéxooat, Dupdxoveat, Zvpjxoveat; Lat. Topo- Syracusz ; It. Siracusa), the chief Greek city of ancient graphy.

Sicily and one of the earliest Greek settlements in the island (see Sicity, p. 15 above). The foundation legend takes several shapes (Thuc., vi. 3 ; Strabo, vi. 4, p. 269) ; but there is no reason to doubt that Syracuse was founded by Archias of Corinth as part of a joint enterprise together with Corcyra, and the received date 735 B.c. may pass as approximate.! The first settlement was on a small island, parted from the coast by a very narrow channel (for map, see pl. IT7.). It points southward, in front of a deep bay, which, with the opposite headland (Plemmyrium), it helps to shelter from the sea. This formed the Great Harbour; the Lesser Harbour of Laccius lay to the north of the island, between it and a peninsula of the mainland, with the open sea to the east and north. The peninsula consists of part of a hill which almost everywhere leaves some space between itself and the sea. To the west of the Great Harbour a marshy plain lies on each side of the river Anapus. On the south side of the river is a smaller hill. The coast of the island and of the peninsula is rocky. That of the harbour is for the most part flat,

except part of the west and south sides and the headland opposite the island. From the island the city spread over the whole peninsula, while a detached suburb (Polichne) arose on the outlying hill beyond Anapus. The marshy ground between the two was not fit for building. All these additions have been gradually forsaken, and the modern town is confined to the island.

The island was called Ortygia, a name connected with Island of the Delian legend of Artemis (see Holm, Gesch. Sic., i. Ortygia.

886), but often simply the Island (Liv., xxv. 24, 30). Though the lowest part of the city, its position and strength made it the citadel, and it is therefore often spoken of by Diodorus and Plutarch as if it had been a real acropolis. It is famous for the fountain of Arethusa, connected in Greek legend with the river Alpheus in Peloponnesus.?2 The sweet water perished when an earth- quake brought in the sea in 1170.3 At the time of the first settlement the island was held by Sicels ; some have thought that a Phcenician element lingered on under both Sicels and Greeks. It is certain (Herod., vii. 166) that Syracuse and Carthage stood in relations to one another which were not usual between Greek and barbarian cities. Tt has also been thought from some legendary hints that Polichne was the original Syracuse, and that the plural form (Svpdxoveat) arose from the union of Ortygia and Polichne. But the plural form is common enough in

other cases. The chief evidence for the belief is that the pe 1 See Plut., Amat. Narr., 2. é 2 See Pind., Wem., i. 1, and the scientific discussions in Strabo, vi. 2, p. 270; also Pausanias, v. 7, 2-4. 3 Hugo Falc., ed. Murat., vii. 362 ; il Buono, 117.

Lumia, Sicilia sotto Guglielmo

Earliest histori- eal period.

Gelon.

great temple of Olympian Zeus stood in Polichne and that (Plut., Wic., 14) the register of Syracusan citizens was kept there.

Till the beginning of the 5th century z.c. our notices of Syracusan history are quite fragmentary. Almost the only question is whether, as some stray notices (Athen., i. 56; see Miiller's Dorians, i. 161, Eng. tr.) might suggest, the primitive kingship was retained or renewed at Syracuse, as it certainly was in some other Greek colonies. A king Pollis is spoken of ; but nothing is known of his actions. It is far more certain that Syracuse went through the usual revolutions of a Greek city. The descendants of the original settlers kept the land in their own hands, and they gradually brought the Sicel inhabitants to a state not unlike villainage. Presently other settlers, perhaps not always Greek, gathered round the original Syracusan people; they formed a distinct body, 890s or plebs, personally free, but with an inferior political franchise or none at all. The old citizens thus gradually grew into an exclusive or aristocratic body, called yépopoe or land- owners. We hear incidentally of disputes, seditions, and changes, among others the banishment of a whole gens (Thuc., v. 5; Arist., Pol., v. 3, 5, 4, 1); but we have no dates or details till we have entered the 5th century B.c. In its external development Syracuse differed somewhat from other Sicilian cities. Although it lagged in early times behind both Gela and Acragas (Agrigentum), it very soon began to aim at a combination of land and sea power. Between 663 and 598 it founded the settlements of Acree, Casmenz, and Camarina, of which the first was unusually far inland. The three together secured for Syracuse a continuous dominion to the south-east coast. They were not strictly colonies but outposts; Camarina indeed was destroyed after a revolt against the ruling city (Thwe;~-v. 1). That the inland Sicel town of Henna was ever a Syracusan settlement there is no reason to believe. Of this early time some architectural monuments still remain, as the two temples in Ortygia, one of which is now the metropolitan church, and the small remains of the Olym- pieum or temple of Zeus in Polichne,—all of course in the ancient Doric style.

The second period of Syracusan history, which roughly begins with the 5th century, is far better ascertained. It is a period of change in every

way. The aristocratic com- monwealth becomes in turn a tyranny and a democracy ; and Syracuse becomes the greatest Greek city in Sicily, the mistress of other cities, the head of a great dominion,— for a moment, of the greatest dominion in Hellas. Strange to say, all this growth begins in subjection to the ruler of another city. Hippocrates, tyrant of Gela, held the chief power in eastern Sicily at the beginning of the 5th century B.C. (498-491), He threatened Syracuse as well as other cities, and it was delivered only by the joint intervention of Corinth and Corcyra, and by the cession of the vacant territory of Camarina. In 485 the Syracusan 8jpos or plebs joined with the Sicel serf population to drive out the gamorot, the ruling oligarchs. These last craved help of Gelon, the successor of Hippocrates, who took possession of Syracuse without opposition, and made it the seat of his power. Syracuse now grew by the depopulation of other cities conquered by Gelon. He gave citizenship both to mercenaries (Diod., xi. 73) and to settlers from old Greece (Paus., v. 27, 16,17; Pind., Olymp., vi.), so that Syracuse became a city of mingled race, in which the new citizens had the advantage. The town spread to the mainland : the new town of Achradina, with separate fortifications, arose on the eastern part of the adjoining peninsula (Diod., x1. 73), while Ortygia became the inner city, the stronghold of the ruler. Indeed in the form of unwalled suburbs the city seems to have spread even beyond Achradina (Diod.,

xi. 61, 68, 72). Gelon’s general rule was mild, and he won fame as the champion of Hellas by his great victory over the Carthaginians at Himera. He is said to have been greeted as king; but he does not seem to have taken the title in any formal way.

Gelon’s brother and successor Hiero (478-467) kept UP Gelon’s

the power of the city; he won himself a name by hig succes. encouragement of poets and philosophers; and his Pythian ®°. and Olympian victories made him the special subject of the songs of Pindar. He appeared also as a Hellenic champion in the defence of Cume, and he attempted to found a Syracusan colony on the island of fEnaria, now Ischia. But his internal government, unlike that of Gelon, was

suspicious, greedy, and cruel. After some family dis- putes the power passed to his brother Thrasybulus, who was driven out next year by a general rising (see Sictzy, p. 16). In this revolution Thrasybulus and his mercen. aries held the fortified quarters of Ortygia and Achradina; the revolted people held the unwalled suburbs, already, it is plain, thickly inhabited. Thrasybulus yielded to the common action of Siceliots and Sicels. Syracuse again became a free commonwealth, and, as the effect of the tyranny had been to break down old distinctions, it was now a democratic commonwealth. Renewed freedom was celebrated by a colossal statue of Zeus Eleutherius and by a yearly feast in his honour. But when the mercenaries and other new settlers were shut out from office! new struggles arose. The mercenaries again held Ortygia and Achradina. The people now walled in the suburb of Tyche to the west of Achradina (Diod., xi. 73). The mercenaries were at last got rid of in 461. Although we hear of attempts to seize the tyranny and of an institution called petalism, like the Athenian ostracism, designed to guard against such dangers, popular government was not seriously threatened for more than fifty years. The part of Syracuse in general Sicilian affairs has been traced in the article SICILY (g.v.); but one striking scene is wholly local, when the defeated Ducetius took refuge in the hostile city (451), and the common voice of the people bade "spare the suppliant." We have but one solitary notice of the great military and naval strength of Syracuse in 439 (Diod., xii. 30). Yet all that we read of Syracusan military and naval action during the former part of the Athenian siege shows how Syracuse had lagged behind the cities of old Greece, constantly practised as they were in warfare both by land and sea.

The Athenian siege(415-413) is of the deepest importance Athenian for the topography of Syracuse, and it throws some light on 58 the internal politics. Hermocrates, the best of counsellors for external affairs, is suspected, and seemingly with reason, of disloyalty to the democratic constitution. Yet he is, like Nicias and Phocion, the official man, head of a board of fifteen generals, which he persuades the people to cut down to three. Athenagoras, the demagogue or opposition speaker, has the best possible exposition of democratic principles put into his mouth by Thucydides (vi. 36-40). Through the whole siege? there was a

treasonable party within the city, which—for what motive we are not told— kept up a correspondence with the besiegers.

The speech of Athenagoras is that of a very clever demagogue ; it sums up very forcibly all that can be said against oligarchy, at it may have been perfectly sincere. But his views were overrul , and preparation was made in earnest for the city's defence. MW hen the Athenian fleet under Nicias and Lamachus was at Rhegium m Italy, the question for the commanders was whether they should seek to strengthen themselves by fresh alliances on the spot e strike the blow at once. Lamachus was for immediate action, ant

there can hardly be a doubt that Syracuse must have fallen be a sudden attack by so formidable an armament in the summer ©

1 Diod., xi. 72; ef. Arist., Pol., v. 3, 10, and Grote's note, v. a 2 The chief authorities for the siege are Thucydides (bks, vi. and vil.), Diodorus (bk. xiii.), and Plutarch, Life of Nicias.

| confidence.

| disorder.

415. The Syracusans were neither at unity among themselves nor by any means adequately prepared for effectual defence. Through- out the whole struggle it is perfectly clear that they owed their final deliverance to the most extraordinary good fortune. Athens | had the prize within her grasp, and she lost it wholly through the persistent dilatoriness and blundering of her general, the despond- ing, vacillating Nicias. It was at his advice that the summer and autumn of 415 were frittered away and the siege not begun till the spring of 414. By that time the Syracusans were both in better spirits and better prepared : their troops were better organized, and they had built a wall from the Great Harbour to Panagia so as to screen them from attack on the side of Epipole on the north- west. The effect of this was to bar the enemy's approach and push back his blockading lines, which had to be carried over an incon- veniently large extent of ground. The Syracusans had been at first thoroughly cowed ; but they were cowed no longer, and they even

plucked up courage to sally out and fight the enemy on the high ground of Epipole. They were beaten and driven back ; but at the suggestion of Hermocrates they carricd a counter-work up the slope of Epipole, which, if completed, would cut in two the Athenian lines and frustrate the blockade. At this point Nicias showed considerable military skill. The Syracusans' work was destroyed by a prompt and well-executed attack ; and a second counter-work carried across marshy ground some distance to the south of Epipole and near to the Great Harbour was also demolished after a sharp action, in which Lamachus fell. However, the blockade on the land side was now almost complete, and the Athenian fleet had at the same time entered the Great Harbour. The citizens began to think of surrender, and Nicias was so confident that he neglected to push his advantages. He left a gap in his lines at the point where Epipole slopes down to the sea, and he omitted to

| occupy an important position on its north-western ridge, known as Euryalus, a pass which commanded on this side the approach to

_ the city from the interior. The second act of the drama may be said to open with the irre-

' trievable blunder of Nicias in letting the Spartan Gylippus first) land in Sicily, and then march at the head of a small army, partly || levied on the spot, across the island, and enter Syracuse by way

of Epipole, through the Euryalus pass. Gylippus was felt to be

|) the representative of Sparta, and of the Peloponnesian Greeks

generally, and his arrival inspired the Syracusans with the fullest Just before his arrival a few ships from Corinth had made their way into the harbour with the news that a great fleet was already on its way to the relief of the city. The tables were | now completely turned, and we hear of nothing but defeat and disaster for the besiegers till their final overthrow. The military | skill of Gylippus enabled the Syracusan militia to mect the Athenian | troops on equal terms, to wrest from them their fortified position on Plemmyrium, and to reduce them to such a plight that, as Nicias said in his despatch to Athens towards the

close of 414, they were themselves besieged rather than besieging. In the spring of the following year Syracuse once again gave herself up

for lost, when seventy-three warships from Athcns, under Demo-

sthenes, entered the harbour with a large force of heavy infantry jand light troops. Demosthenes decided at once to make a grand jattack on Epipole, with a view to recovering the Athenian block- jading lines and driving the Syracusans back within the city walls. The assault was made by night, by the uncertain light of the moon,

Jand this circumstance turned what was very nearly a successful

surprise into a ruinous defeat. The affair seems to have been well } planned up to a certain point, and well executed ; but the Athenian | van, flushed with a first success, their ranks broken and disordered | by a pursuit of the enemy over rough ground, were repulsed with great loss by a body of heavy armed Beeotians, and driven back in The confusion spread to the troops behind them, and the action ended in a wild flight through the narrow roads and | passes of Epipole. The army was now thoroughly out of heart, }and Demosthenes was for at once breaking up the camp, embarking the troops, and sailing back to Athens. But Nicias could not | bring himself to face the Athenian people at home, nor could he i be prevailed on to retire promptly to some position on the coast, such as Catana or Thapsus, where the army would be at least able to maintain itself fora time. He dallied till the end of August, /many weeks after the defeat, and on the 27th of that month was jan eclipse of the moon, on the strength of which he insisted on a delay of almost another month. His fleet too lingered uselessly in |the harbour, till, after a frantic effort to break out and a desperate conflict, it was utterly defeated and half destroyed. The broken and demoralized army, its ranks thinned by fever and sickness, at last began its hopeless retreat in the face of the numerous Syra- cusan cavalry, and, after a few days of dreadful suffering, was forced to lay down its arms. The Syracusans sullied the glory of their triumph by huddling their prisoners into their stone-quarries,—a living death, dragged out, for some of them at least, to the space

of seventy days. Her great deliverance and victory naturally stirred up

i

| |

the energies of Syracuse at home and abroad. Syracusan ships under Hermocrates now play a not unimportant part in the warfare between Sparta and Athens on the coast of Asia. Under the influence of Diocles the consti- tution became a still more confirmed democracy, some at least of the magistracies being filled by lot, as at Athens (Diod., xiii. 31, 35; Arist., Pol., v. 3-6). Diocles appears also as the author of a code of laws of great strictness, which was held in such esteem that later lawgivers were deemed only its expounders. There seems no reason to suppose, with Holm, an earlier lawgiver Diocles distinct from the demagogue; but the story of his death by his own hand to punish a breach of his own law is, we may suspect, a repetition of the story of Charondas (Diod., xiii. 33 ; cf. xii. 19). Under these influences Hermocrates was banished in 409; he submitted to the sentence, notwith- standing the wishes of hisarmy. He went back to Sicily, warred with Carthage on his own account, and brought back the bones of the unburied Syracusans from Himera, but was still so dreaded that the people banished Diocles without restoring him. In 407 he was slain in an attempt to enter the city, and with him was wounded one who was presently to outstrip both rivals.

This was Dionysius, son of another Hermocrates, and an adherent of the aristocratic party, but soon afterwards a demagogue, though supported by some men of rank, among them the historian Philistus (Diod., xiii. 91, 92). By accusing the generals engaged at Gela in the war against Carthage, by obtaining the restoration of exiles, by a variety of tricks played at Gela itself, he secured his own election, first as one of the generals, then as sole general (or with a nominal colleague) with special powers. He next, by another trick, procured from a military

assembly at Leon- tini a vote of a bodyguard; he hired mercenaries and in 406-5 came back to Syracuse as tyrant of the city (Diod., xiii. 91-96). Dionysius kept his power till his death thirty- eight years later (367). But it was wellnigh overthrown before he had fully grasped it. His defeat before Gela (see Srcity, p. 18) was of course turned against him. His enemies in the army, chiefly the horsemen, reached Syracuse before him, plundered his house—he had not yet a fortress —and horribly maltreated his wife; but they took no politi- cal or military steps against himself. He came and took his vengeance, slaying and driving out his enemies, who established themselves at AZtna (Diod., xiii. 113). This revolution and the peace with the Carthaginians confirmed Dionysius in the possession of Syracuse, but of no great territory beyond, as Leontini was again a separate city. It left Syracuse the one great Hellenic city of Sicily, which, however enslaved at home, was at least inde- pendent of the barbarian. Dionysius was able, like Gelon, though with less success and less honour, to take up the part of the champion of Hellas.

Diocles and Hermo- crates.

Diony- sius the der.

During the long tyranny of Dionysius the city grew greatly in Quarters

size, population, and grandeur. gathered all Sicily into it. } munities, in both Sicily and southern Italy, were sacrificed to Syracuse ; there the greatness and glory of the Greek world in the West were concentrated. The mass of the population of Gela and Camarina in the disastrous year 405 had, at the prompting of Dionysius, taken refuge at Syracuse. Gela had in the previous year received the fugitive inhabitants of Acragas (Agrigentum), which had been sacked by the Carthaginians. Syracuse thus absorbed three of the chief Greek cities of Sicily. It received large accessions from some of the Greek cities of southern Italy, from Hipponium on its west and Caulonia on its east coast, both of which Dionysius captured in 389 Bc. There had also been an influx of free citizens from Rhegium. At the time of the Athenian siege Syracuse consisted of two quarters—the Island and the “outer city ” of Thucydides, generally known as Achradina, and bounded by the sea on

the north and east, with the adjoining suburb of Apollo Temenites farther inland at the foot of the southern slopes of Epipole. With the vast increase in its population, it now grew

Plato says (Zpist., vii.) that he of the In fact the free Greek cities and com- city.

Diony- sius the Younger.

Dion,

into a city of four quarters. The suburb Temenites was expanded into Neapolis (New Town), spreading over the adjoining slopes. A district stretching down to the sea, to the north-west of Achra- dina, was taken in, and subsequently enlarged into a separate fortified town. Tyche (T¥xy) was the name given to this quarter, according to Cicero ({n Verr., iv. 52, 53) from an old temple of Fortune somewhere within its limits,—a fact which seems to indi- cate that the spot must have been inhabited in very early times. But of this Thucydides says nothing, and his silence on a point which would have naturally entered into his description of the Athenian blockading operations is somewhat perplexing. This quarter was in Cicero's time the most populous part of the entire city ; it was practically secured by the new city walls, which were drawn inland in a triangular form so as to enclose the hill of Epipole, the apex of the triangle being the fortress of Euryalus, the remains of which are said to be the most perfect existing specimen of ancient fortification. Syracuse was now secure on the land side. 'The Island (Ortygia) had been provided with its own defences, converted in fact into a separate stronghold, with a fort to serve specially as a magazine of corn, and with a citadel or acropolis which stood apart, and might be held as a last refuge. Dionysius, to make himself perfectly safe, drove out a number of the old inhabitants and turned the place into barracks for his soldiers, he himself living in the citadel. For any unpopularity he may have thus incurred he seems to have made up by his great works for the defence of the city ; these were executed under the direction of the most skilful engineers, and are said to have found

employment for 60,000 men. The new lines covered an extent of 3% miles, and were constructed of huge well-cut blocks of stone from the neighbouring quarries. Each quarter of the city had its own distinct defences, and Syracuse was now the most splendid and the best fortified of all Greek cities. Its naval power, too, was vastly increased; the docks were enlarged; and 200 new warships were built. Besides the triremes, or vessels with three banks of oars, we hear of quadriremes and quinqueremes with four and five banks of oars,—larger and taller and more massive ships than had yet been used in Greek sea warfare. The fleet of Dionysius was the most powerful in the Mediterranean. It was doubtless fear and hatred of Carthage, from which city the Greeks of Sicily had suffered so much, that urged the Syracusans to acquiesce in the enormous expenditure which they must havc incurred under the rule of Dionysius. Much too was done for the beauty of the city as well as for its strength and defence. Several new temples were built, and gymnasia erected outside the walls near the banks of the Anapus (Diod., xv. 18).

"'Fastened by chains of adamant" was the boastful

phrase in which Dionysius described his empire; but under his son, the younger Dionysius, an easy, good- natured, unpractical man, a sort of cleverish dilettante, a reaction set in amongst the restless citizens of Syracuse, which, with its vast and mixed population, must have been full of elements of turbulence and faction. But the burdensome expenditure of the late reign would be enough to account for a good deal of discontent. A remarkable man now comes to the front,—Dion, the friend and disciple of Plato, and for a time the trusted political adviser of Dionysius, whom he endeavoured to impress with a conviction of the infinite superiority of free and popular government to any form of tyranny or despotism. Dion's idea seems to have been to make Dionysius some- thing like a constitutional sovereign, and with this view he brought him into contact with Plato. All went well for a time; but Dionysius had those about him who were opposed to any kind of liberal reform, and the result was the banishment of Dion from Syracuse as a dangerous innovator. Ten years afterwards, in 357, the exile entered Achradina a victor, welcomed by the citizens as a

deliverer both of themselves and of the Greeks of Sicily generally. As yet, however, this was the only part of the city gained. A siege and blockade, with confused fighting and alternate victory and defeat, and all the horrors of fire and slaughter, followed, till Dion made himself master of the mainland city. Ortygia, however, was still held by Dionysius; but, provisions failing, it also was soon surrendered. Dion's rule lasted only three years, for he perished in 354 by the hand of a Syracusan assassin. It was, in fact, after all his professions, little better than a military despotism. The tyrant's stronghold in the Island was left standing,

SYRACUSE

and Dion actually opposed a proposal for its destruction The man who won immense popularity by the proposal was murdered, and Dion seems to have been an accomplice in the crime.

Of what took place in Syracuse during the next ten years we know but little. The younger Dionysius came back and from his island fortress again oppressed the citizens ; the plight of the city, torn by faction and conflicts and plundered by foreign troops, was so utterly wretched that all Greek life seemed on the verge of extinction (Plato, Epist., viii.). Sicily, too, was again menaced by Carthage. Syracuse, in its extremity, asked help from the mother-city, Corinth ; and now appears on the scene one of the noblest figures in Greek history,

TIMOLEON (q.v.). To him Syracuse owed her deliverance Timo- from the younger Dionysius and from the rule of despots, leon.

and to him both Syracuse and the Sicilian Greeks owed a decisive triumph over Carthage and the safe possession of Sicily west of the river Halycus, the largest portion of the island. From 343 to 337 he was supreme at Syracuse, with the hearty goodwill of the citizens. The younger Dionysius had been allowed to retire to Corinth; his island fortress was destroyed and replaced by a court of justice. Syracuse rose again out of her desolation—grass, it is said, grew in her streets—and, with an influx of a multitude of new colonists from Greece and from towns of Sicily and Italy, once more became a prosperous city,

Timoleon, having accomplished his work, accepted the position of a private citizen, though, practically, to the end of his life he was the ruler of the Syracusan people, After his death (337) a splendid monument, with porticoes and gymnasia surrounding it, known as the Timoleonteum, was raised at the public cost to his honour.

In the interval of twenty years between the death of Agatho.

Timoleon and the rise of Agathocles to power another "le. revolution at Syracuse transferred the government to an oligarchy of 600 leading citizens. All we know is the bare fact. It was shortly after this revolution, in 317, that Agathocles with a body of mercenaries from Campania and a host of exiles from the Greek cities, backed up by the Carthaginian Hamilcar, who was in friendly relations with the Syracusan oligarchy, became tyrant or despot of the city, assuming subsequently, on the strength of his successes against Carthage, the title of king. Syracuse passed through another reign of terror; the new despot proclaimed himself the champion of popu- lar government, and had the senate and the heads of the oligarchical party massacred wholesale. This man of blood seems to have had popular manners, and to have known how to flatter and cajole, for a unanimous vote of the people gave him absolute control over the fortunes of Syracuse. His wars in Sicily and Africa left him time to do something for the relief of the poorer citizens at the expense of the rich, as well as to erect new fortifications and public buildings; and under his strong government Syracuse seems to have been at least quiet and orderly. After his death in 289 comes another miserable and obscure period of revolution and despotism, in which Greek life was dying out; and but for the brief intervention of Pyrrhus in 278 Syracuse, and indeed all Sicily, would have fallen a prey to the Carthaginians.

A better time began under Hiero II., who had fought Hiero II.

under Pyrrhus and who rose from the rank of general of the Syracusan army to be tyrant—king, as he came to be soon styled—about 270. During his reign of over filty years, ending probably in 216, Syracuse enjoyed tran- quillity, and seems to have grown greatly in wealth and population. Hiero's rule was kindly and enlightened, combining good

order with a fair share of liberty and self- government. His financial legislation was careful and con-

Hy

‘ge

SYRACUSE

siderate ; his laws! as to the customs and the corn tithes were accepted and maintained under the Roman govern- ment, and one of the many bad acts of the notorious Verres, according to Cicero, was to set them aside (Cic., J Verr., ii. 13; iii. 8). It was a time too for great public works,— works for defence at the entrance of the Lesser Harbour between the Island and Achradina, and temples and gym- nasia. Hiero through his long reign was the staunch friend and ally of Rome in her struggles with Carthage ; but his paternal despotism, under which Greek life and civilization at Syracuse had greatly flourished, was un- fortunately succeeded by the rule of a man who wholly reversed his policy.

Hieronymus, the grandson of Hiero, thought fit to ally himself with Carthage; he did not live, however, to see the mischief he had done, for he fell in a conspiracy which he had wantonly provoked by his arrogance and cruelty. There was a fierce popular outbreak and more bloodshed : the conspirators were put to death and Hiero’s family was murdered; whilst the Carthaginian faction, under the pretence of delivering the city from its tyrants, got the upper hand and drew the citizens into open defiance of Rome. Marcellus was then in command of the Roman army in Sicily, and he threatened the Syracusans with attack unless they would get rid of Epicydes and Hippo- erates, the heads of the anti-Roman faction. Epicydes did his best to stir up the citizens of Leontini against Rome and the Roman party at Syracuse. Marcellus there- fore struck his first blow at Leontini, which was quickly stormed ; and the tale of the horrors of the sack was at once carried to Syracuse and roused the anger of its population, who could not but sympathize with their near neigh- bours, Greeks like themselves. The general feeling was now against any negotiations with

the Roman general, and, put- ting themselves under Epicydes and Hippocrates, they closed their gates on him. Marcellus, after an unsucessful – attempt to negotiate, began the siege in regular form (214 B.c.) by both land and sea, establishing a camp on Polichne, where stood the old temple of Olympian Zeus; but he made his chief assault on the northern side and on the defences of Tyche, particularly at the Hexapylum, the entrance facing Megara and Leontini. His assault sea- wards was made mainly on Achradina, but the city was defended by a numerous soldiery and by what seem to have been still more formidable, the ingenious contrivances of Archimedes, whose engines dealt havoc among the Roman ships, and frustrated the attack on the fortifications on the northern slopes of Epipole (Liv., xxiv. 34). Marcellus had recourse to a blockade, but Carthaginian vessels from time to time contrived to throw in supplies. At length treachery began to work within. Information was given him in the spring of 212 (two years from the commence- ment of the siege) that the Syracusans were celebrating a great festival to Artemis; making use of this opportunity, he forced the Hexapylum entrance by night and established himself in Tyche and on the heights of Epipole. The strong fortress of Euryalus held out for a time, but, being now isolated, it soon had to surrender. The "outer" and the "inner city" of Thucydides still held out, whilst a Carthaginian fleet was moored off Achradina and Cartha- ginian troops were encamped on the spot. But a pesti- lence broke out in the autumn of 212, which swept them clean away, and thinned the Roman ranks. The ships sailed away to Carthage; on their way back to Syracuse with supplies they could not get beyond Cape Pachynus owing to adverse winds, and they were confronted by a Roman fleet. All hope for the city being now at an end, the Syracusans threw themselves on the mercy of Mar-

1 The laws of Hiero are often mentioned with approval in Cicero's Speeches against Verres.

cellus ; but Achradina and the Island still held out for a brief space under the Syracusan mercenaries, till one of their officers, a Spaniard,

betrayed the latter position to the enemy, and at the same time Achradina was carried and taken. Marcellus gave the city up to plunder (Liv., xxv. 31), and the art treasures? in which it was so rich—many of the choicest of them no doubt—were conveyed to Rome. From this time art seems to have become quite fashionable in certain Roman circles. Archimedes perished in the confusion of the sack, while he was calmly pursuing his studies (Liv., xxv. 31).

Syracuse was now simply one of the provincial cities of Under Rome's empire, and its history is henceforward merged in Rome.

that of Sicily. It retained much of its Greek character and many of its finest public buildings, even after the havoc wrought by Marcellus. Its importance and historic associations naturally marked it out as the residence of the Roman przetor or governor of Sicily. Cicero often speaks of it as a particularly splendid and beautiful city, as still in his own day the seat of art and culture® (Z'usc., v. 66; De Deor, Nat., iii. 81; De Rep., i. 21), and in his speeches against Verres (iv. 52, 53) he gives an elaborate description of its four quarters (Achradina, Neapolis, Tyche, the Island), or rather the four cities which com- posed it. It seems to have suffered in the civil wars at the hands of Sextus "Pompeius, the son of the triumvir, who fora short time was master of Sicily; to repair the mischief, new settlers were sent by Augustus in 21 B.c., and established in the Island and in the immediately ad- joining part of Achradina (Strabo, vi. 270, ed. Kramer). It is in these districts that the remains of Roman works— of amphitheatres and other public buildings—are mainly to be traced. We hear nothing of any importance about Syracuse during the period of theempire. It had its own senate and its own magistrates.t Caius Caligula restored its decayed walls and some of its famous temples (Sue- tonius, Caius, 21). Tacitus, in a passing mention of it (Ann., xiii. 49), says that permission was granted to the Syracusans under Nero to exceed the prescribed number of gladiators in their shows. Hence the city by that time must have been provided with an amphitheatre. In the 4th century it is named by the poet Ausonius in his Ordo Nobilium Urbium, chiefly, perhaps, on the strength of its historic memories.

Modern Syracuse is confined to the island of Ortygia, and is only Modern The island is irregularly oval town.

about 24 miles in circumference. in shape, and extends from north to south on the east side of the fine natural harbour, the Porto Grande (Magnus Portus). On the north it is connected with the mainland by a dyke or narrow isthmus, and between the southern extremity and the opposite peninsula of Massolivieri, the ancient Plemmyrium, there is a stretch of 1800 yards, forming the entrance to the harbour. The approach to the town from the mainland is defended by a dilapi- dated citadel of the time of Charles V., and the southern extremity is occupied by a castle named after George Maniaces, the last Byzantine general by whom it was held in the 11th century before it fell into the hands of the Saracens. The town is further de- fended by walls with bastions. The streets are in general narrow, and their chief feature consists in their numerous convents with wooden-latticed windows. Onc tolerably wide and handsome street crosses the island from east to west. Besides the fortifications, the principal objects of interest are the cathedral of Santa Maria delle Colonne (the ancient temple of Minerva), adjoining which is the archiepiscopal residence; the archzological museum, the finest works preserved in which are a statue of Venus in Parian marble and a colossal head of Zeus ; and the fountain of Arethusa, which still bubbles up as clear and abundant as ever on the west side of the island. Its waters, however, are no longer drinkable, an earth- quake in 1170 having allowed the sea water to become mingled with them. From the neighbourhood of this fountain a favourite promenade extends northwards along the shore of the Porto Grande. Syracuse has becn a place of little importance since the year 878,

when it was destroyed by the Saracens under Ibrahim ibn Ahmed.

2 Statues and pictures are particularized by Livy, xxv. 40.

3 The poets Theocritus and Moschus were Syracusans.

4 Local self-government, in fact, like most of the Greek cities.

Since that date the mainland portion of the city has never been rebuilt. Syracuse is the seat of an archbishop, and since 1865 has been the capital of a province, which takes its name from the town. The inhabitants manufacture drugs and other chemical articles, earthenware, &c., and carry on a considerable trade, principally in wine. In 1885 785 vessels of 21,818 tons entered the port and 778 vessels of 21,480 tons cleared. At Syracuse Admiral de Ruyter died in 1676 after his defeat by the French at Agosta. The popu-

lation in 1881 was 21,157. See Hare, Cities of Southern Italy and Sicily (London, 1883).

SYRACUSE, a.city of the United States, the county seat of Onondaga county, New York, 148 miles west of Albany, midway between that city and Buffalo. Syracuse is situated near the southern end of Onondaga Lake (5 miles long by 1 broad), whose waters flow northwards through Seneca and Oswego rivers into Lake Ontario at Oswego. The Erie Canal, flowing east and west, joins the Oswego Canal within the city. Syracuse contains several handsome public buildings,—the county court- house, the United States Government building, the city- hall, the State asylum for idiots, the Onondaga peni- tentiary, the county orphan asylum, the asylum of St Vincent de Paul, the high school (containing the central library of 15,000 volumes), a State armoury, &c. Syra- cuse is the seat of a (Methodist) university, founded in 1870 and consisting of a college of the liberal arts, a college of the fine arts, and a college of physicians and surgeons. The salt industry, to which Syracuse owed much of its early prosperity, is still the staple; the springs situated near the southern end of Lake Onondaga, which appears to be the remains of a once very extensive basin, have been under State control since 1797. Previous to the opening of the Michigan springs they were the largest in the United States, and they still yield on an average from 7,000,000 to 8,000,000 bushels of salt per annum. Rolling-mills, furnaces, steel-works, glass-works, breweries, and manufactories of barrels, agricultural machinery, and clothing are among the secondary industrial establishments. At the completion of the Erie Canal in 1825

Syracuse had only 300 inhabitants; by 1855 they were 25,107, and in 1860, 1870, and 1880 respectively they numbered 28,119, 43,051, and 51,792; in 1886 the number had risen to 81,000, including some adjacent villages recently annexed.

By some investigators it is believed that Lake Onondaga was De Soto's " silver-bottomed" lake. The great tribal fortress of the Onondagas on the east side of the lake near the spot now occupied by Liverpool was attacked without success by Champlain in 1615. The first house on the site of Syracuse was built in 1805. The

village, to which the name of Syracuse had been given in 1824, was incorporated in 1825, and the city in 1847.

SYR-DARIA (Gr. and Lat. Jawxartes; Arab. Shash or Sthun), a river flowing into the Sea of Aral, and having a length of 1500 miles and a drainage area of about 320,000 square miles. Incertitude as to its source prevailed until the recent occupation of Turkestan by the Russians. It has now been traced to the Naryn, which has its sources in the heart of the Tian-Shan complex, some 30 miles south of Lake Issik-kul, in the elevated valleys or syrts (12,000 feet) on the southern slope of the Terskei Ala-tau. Here under the name of Jaak-tash the river takes its rise amid mountain scenery of the wildest description, partly from the marshy mountain plateaus by which the ' Warm Lake" is also fed, and partly from the immense glaciers of the dark and barren Ak-shiriyak Mountains (Petroff and Sir-tash glaciers). After its union with another mountain stream, the Barskaun, it is called the Taragai, and flows west-south-west at from 11,000 to 10,000 feet above the sea, in'a barren longitudinal valley between the Terskei Ala-tau and the foothills of the lofty Kokshat-tau. On entering a wild narrow gorge driven from west to east through the south-west continuation of the Terskei Mountains (Samatyn-tau) it receives the name of Naryn. Through this gorge it descends by a series of rapids from

the heights of the mountain massif to a deep valley of the alpine region, its level at its issue from the gorge being reduced by fully 4000 feet :

Fort Narynsk, 20 miles below the junction of the Great and the Little Naryn, is only

70*Long. E.of Greenw 75 : . BALES»

%,

“J sARaL SEA 158 feet Ai

Beet aan, 2 Rh ee

; ;

fiiungrad~- 7″ Desert of © agp

ae Kizil -kum Sn AMU DARLA ~ GE:

6800 feet above the sea. Here the river enters a broad valley—formerly the bottom of an alpine lake—and flows past the ruins of Fort Kurtka, for 90 miles westward, as a stream some 50 yards wide and from 3 to II feet deep. Its waters are utilized for irrigating Kirghiz com. fields, which contrast strangely with the barren aspect of the lofty treeless mountains. The Atpasha—a large mountain stream—joins the Naryn at the head of this valley and the Atabuga at its lower end, both from the left. Before reaching the lowlands, the Naryn crosses three ridges separating the valley of Kurtka from that of Ferghana, by a series of wild gorges and broad valleys (170 miles), representing the bottoms of old lakes; the Togus-torgau, 2000 feet lower than Kurtka, and the Ketmen-tube are both covered with Kirghiz corn-fields. Taking a wide sweep towards the north, the river enters Ferghana—also the bottom of an immense lake—where, after joining the Kara-Daria (Black river) near Namangan, it receives the name of Syr-Daria.2 The Kara-Daria isa mighty stream rising in the north-eastern spurs of the Atai Mountains. As it deflects the Naryn towards the west again, the natives consider it the chief branch of the Syr-Daria, but its volume is much smaller. At the con- fluence the Syr is 1440 feet above sea-level.

The waters of the Syr-Daria and its tributaries are im this part of its course largely absorbed by numberless canals for irrigation. It is to the Syr that Ferghana is indebted for its high, if somewhat exaggerated, repute in Central Asia as a rich garden and granary; cities like Khokand, Marghilan, and Namangan, and more than 800,000 inhabitants of the former khanate of Khokand, live by its waters. Notwithstanding this drain upon it, the Syr could be easily navigated, were it not for the Bigovat rapids at Irdjar, at the lower end of the valley, where the river finds its way to the Aral-Caspian deserts by piercing a depression of the Mogol-tau.

On issuing from this gorge the Syr enters the Aral de- pression, and flows for 850 miles in a north-westerly and northerly direction before reaching the Sea of Aral. On this section it is navigated by steamers. Between the Ird- jar rapids and Baitdyr-turgai (where it bends north) the Syt flows along the base of the mountain ridges which girdle the Tchotkat Mountains (see below) on the north-west, and receives from the longitudinal valleys of these alpine tracts a series of tributaries (the Angren, the Tchirtchik, the Keles), which in their lower courses fertilize the wide plains of loess extending from the right bank of the Syr. These plains and their rich supply of water have been the

I Reduced from Mushketof's "Geological Map of the Turkestan

Basin," in his Turkestan (Russian), 1886, vol. i. ; 2 Syr and daria both signify "river," in two different dialects.

cause of an oasis of Moslem civilization developing between the barren sands of the Aral depression and the mountain tracts of the Tian-Shan. The Angren rises beneath the highest parts of the Tchotkat range, and its valley is the granary of the region. The Tchirtchik has its origin in the Borotday Mountains at the junction of the Tchotkat and the Pskem rivers, and at the point where it issues from the mountains it sends off the famous canal Zakh- aryk; it flows past Tashkend along a valley 20 miles wide, and joins the Syr a few miles below its confluence with the Angren. The Keles comes from the Jity-su Mountains and also brings a

large volume of water for irrigation. But owing to wars and continual insecurity cities formerly important have now been abandoned ; and near T'chinaz, at the mouth of the Tchirtchik, are the ruins of a large town formerly fortified with high walls, and of aryks with manifold ramifications.

Some 50 miles below Tchinaz (770 feet above sea-level) the Syr bends northwards, but resumes its north-westerly course 150 miles farther down, following with remarkable persistency the borders of the loess which fringes the moun- tains. Its low banks, covered with rushes and rendered uninhabitable in summer by clouds of mosquitoes, are in- undated for 20 miles on both sides when the snows begin to melt. These inundations prevent the moving sands of the Kizil-kum desert from approaching the Syr; below Perovsk, however, the steppe gains the upper hand. Down to Perovsk the river rolls its muddy yellow waters, at the rate. of 3 to 5 miles an hour, in a channel 300 to 600 yards wide and 3 to 5 fathoms deep; at Perovsk its vertical section is 8220 square feet, and 312,500 cubic feet of water are discharged per second. The Arys and the Bugufi are the only tributaries worthy of notice on this part of its course; the other streams which descend from the Kara-tau fail to reach the river. The Kungrad Kirghiz rear numerous herds of cattle and sheep in the valley of the Arys, while lower down, as far as Julek, the Igintchis carry on agriculture. All: this applies, of course, only to the right bank; on the left the moistness is absorbed by the hot winds which cross the Kizil-kum sands towards the river. The dryness of the atmosphere makes its influence markedly felt on the Syr when it enters, below Julek, a region where the Kara-kum sands extend on its right. Ten miles below Perovsk the river traverses a marshy depression —the bottom of a lake not yet fully dried up—where it divides into two branches,—the Jaman- daria and the Kara-uzyak. The latter spreads out in marshes and ponds, from which it again issues to join the former at Karmaktchi, after a course of 80 miles. The main branch also, owing to its shallowness and sinu- osity, is very difficult to navigate, and this is increased by the rapidity of the current and the want of fuel. Between Kazalinsk and the Sea of Aral (158 feet) the navigation becomes somewhat easier, except for the last 10 miles, where the river divides into three shallow branches before entering the "Blue Sea." All three

have at their mouths sandy bars with only 3 feet of water, which are often forded by the Kirghiz.

Two former right-hand tributaries of the Syr—the Tchu and the Sary-su—which now disappear in the sands some 60 miles before reaching it, must be mentioned. The Tchu, which is 600 miles in length, rises in the Tian-Shan to the south-west of Lake Issik-kul, and is made up of many streams, of which the Kyz-art, the Juvan-aryk, and the Koshkar are the more important. On their union these form the Koshkar, which flows towards Lake Issik-kul, but a few miles before reaching that lake turns suddenly to the north-west, enters under the name of Tchu the narrow gorge of Buam, and, piercing the snow-clad Kunghei Ala-tau, emerges on its northern slope, having descended from 5500 feet to less than 2000 in a course of not more than 50 miles. In this part of its course it receives from the right the Kebin, whose high valley equals in size that of the upper Rhone. It then flows north-west-

wards through the valley of Pishpek, and, avoiding the Muyun-kum sands, describes a wide curve to the north before finally taking a western direction. Numberless streams flow towards it from the snow-clad Alexandrovsk Mountains, but they are for the most part lost in the sands before reaching it. The Tatas, 170 miles long, formerly an affluent of the Tchu, which rises in the highest parts of that range, pierces the Tcha-archa Mountains, and, flowing past Aulie-ata on the south border of the Muyun-kum, enters the salt lake Kara-kul 60 miles from the Tchu. The Tchu reaches the Saumal-kul group of lakes, 60 miles from the Syr, in the form of marshes with undefined channels. Another elongated group of lakes—the Uzun-kul—near the above and 50 miles from Perovsk, receives the Sary-su, which has a length of nearly 570 miles, and flows rapidly in a narrow channel along the west borders of the northern Famine Steppe (Bekpak-dala).

The delta of the Syr at present begins at Perovsk, whence it sends a branch to the south-west, the Yany-daria (Jany-daria or New river), which formerly reached the south-eastern corner of the Sea of Aral, very near the mouth of the Amu-daria. The Kirghiz affirm that a canal

dug for irrigation by the Karakalpaks gave origin to this river. It had, however, but a temporary existence. A dam erected by the Khokandese at Ak-metchet (Perovsk) caused its disappearance, and the Russians found but a dry bed in 1820. When the dam was removed the Yany-daria again reappeared, but it failed to reach the Sea of Aral; in 18538 it lost itself in Lake Kutchka-denghiz, after a course of 250 miles ; all traces of its bed were then lost in the sand. The Kirghiz legend can only be accepted, however, with very great caution ; the present writer is inclined to think that the canal of the Karakalpaks was merely intended to redirect the waters of the Syr into a channel which existed of old, but had been dried up.! Certain it is that five centuries ago, in the time of Timur, the Yany-daria brought the waters of the Syr to the Dau-kara Lakes, close by the present mouth of the Amu. 'The series of old beds in the Kizil-kum, which are still seen above Perovsk, shows that the Syr had a constant tendency to seek a channel to the south-west and that its present delta is but a vestige of what it was in past times. At a still more remote period this delta probably comprised all the space between the Kara-tau and the Nura-tau ; and in the series of elongated lakes at the base of the Nura-tau—the Tuz-kane and Bogdan-ata Lakes—we see an old branch of the delta of the Syr which probably joined the Zerafshan before reaching the Amu. The causes of this immense change are to be sought for simply in the rapid desiccation of the whole northern and central parts of Asia, due to the fact that we are now living in the later phase of the Lacustrine period, which has followed the Glacial period. The extremely rapid desiccation of the Sea of Aral is proved even by surveys a few decades old, and this process is but a trifle in com- parison with the changes which have taken place during the last five centuries: the extension of the Caspian Sea as far as the Sarakamysh lakes during the Post-Pliocene period and the extension of the Sea of Aral at least 100 miles to the east ofits present banks are both proved by the presence of Post-Pliocene marine deposits. (P. A. K.)-

SYR-DARIA, or Syr-DaRIINsK, a province of Russian Turkestan, in Asia, comprising wide tracts of land on both sides of the Syr-Daria river, from its entrance into the Sea of Aral up to Khojend, where it issues from the mountain region of the Tian-Shan. It is bounded on the

N. by the Russian provinces of Turgai and Akmolinsk, on the E. by Semiryetchensk and Ferghana (ex-khanate of Khokand), on the §. by the district of Zerafshan, Bokhara, and the Russian province of Amu-daria, and on the W. by the Sea of Aral. Its area (166,000 square miles), its population (more than one million inhabitants), and its cities (Tash-kend, Khojend, Jizak, &c.) make it the most important province of Russian Turkestan; and from its position between the mountain region of Central Asia and the great lake of the west Asian depression it is a region of deep interest for the geographer and geologist.

The south-eastern border of the province runs along the lofty Tchotkat Mountains. This chain, which separates the river Tchotkat from the Naryn, and runs for more than 200 miles from south-west to north-east, joining Alexan- drovsk Mountains on the east, raises its snow-clad peaks to an altitude of 14,000 feet. It diminishes in height towards the south, not exceeding 7000 feet in the barren Mogol-tau Mountains, but seems to be continued to the

south-west by the Baisun-tau. A series of shorter chains—

1 For the old beds of the Syr and the Amu, see Kaulbars's '* Lower Parts of the Amu," in Mem. Russ. Geogr. Soc., Phys. Geogr., ix. (1881).

the Tatas Ala-tau, the Bishelik, the Badam Mountains, the Kazyk-urt, and the Atym-tau—fringe the above on the north-west, and occupy the south-east corner of Syr-Dari- insk. The snowclad summits of the Tatas Ala-tau range from 14,000 to 15,000 feet, and immense glaciers occur about Manas Mountain. So far as our maps show, the range seems to run from west-south-west to east-north-east. The other chains just mentioned have a decidedly south-westerly direction, and are much lower, the outlying ranges having rather the character of broad plateaus, above 2000 feet in height, where the Kirghiz find excellent pasture grounds. Some of them, such as the Kazyk-urt, rise as isolated mountains from the steppe, and have therefore been called Ararats. The Kara-tau is quite separate from the preceding and runs at right angles to them—that is, from north-west to south-east. It belongs

therefore to another series of upheavals which prevails in western Asia and to which Richthofen has given the name of the “ Kara-tau series.” Its length is about 270 miles, and its average height about 5000 feet, rising at some points to 6000 and 7000 feet. It separates the Syr-Daria from the Tchu, and its gentle south-western slope contains the sources of a multitude of streams, which water the oasis around the town of Turke- stan. Another range, having the same direction, from north-west to south-east, touches the southern border of Syr-Daria, namely, the Nura-tau (or Nuratyn-tau), also called Turkestan Mountains, which lifts its icy peaks (15,000 to 16,000 feet in height) abruptly from the steppe. It separates Syr-Daria from Zerafshan, and the passes by which it is crossed reach an altitude of from 10,000 to 13,000 feet. Finally, a few islands of metamorphic or granitic rock, called Ararats by the natives, stand isolated in the steppes.

The mountainous tracts occupy, however, only a small part of Syr-Daria ; the rest of its wide surface is steppe. Three different areas must be distinguished,—the Kizil-kum, the Muyun-kum or Ak-kum, and the Kara-kum (“‘‘ black sands,” so called more from their desert character than from their colour). The Kizil-kum (red sands) is the most interesting. These sands occupy the wide stretch between the Amu and the Syr, and have a gradual ascent from 160 feet at the Sea of Aral to 1500 and 2000 feet in the south- cast. They are covered with numerous folds or elongated dunes (barkhans), partly shifting partly stationary, 30 to 60 feet high, and mostly parallel to each other, amidst which are immense spaces covered with clay, and saline clays appear here and there on the surface. The Kizil-kum varies much in its characteristics. Close by the Sea of Aral it is covered with shifting sands, the result of the disintegration of cretaceous sandstones ; and every storm raises clouds of hot sand which render communication excecdingly difficult. But even there a rich verdure covers the undulations in spring. Farther east the sands lose their shifting character, and the barkhans are covered with a kind of Carex, which serves as excellent food for sheep. The Holoxylon Anemodendron grows extensively on the elevated ridges and yields fuel and charcoal, which last is exported to Bokhara. In the west the surface is covered with remains of Aral-Caspian deposits. As the Tian-Shan is approached the steppe takes another character: a

thick covering of loess girdles the foothills and forms the fertile soil to which Turkestan is indebted for its rich fields and gardens.

The Kara-kum sands, situated to the north-east of the Sea of Aral, are manifestly a former bottom of the lake. They are covered with débris of Cardiwm edule, Mytilus, Dreissena polymorpha, Neritina litturata, Adaena vitrea, Hydrobia stagnalis, with remains of marine Algx (Zostera), and with fragments of Seirpus and Phragmites. The Kizil-kum is characterized by the presence of Lithoglyphus caspius, H. stagnalis, Anodonta podervsa, and the sponge Metehnikowia tubereulata. The evil reputation of the Kara-kum has been exaggerated to some extent ; the harsh things said of it apply only to the neighbourhood of the Sea of Aral. In the east the steppe has some vegetation and is readily visited by the Kirghiz. The barkhans do not shift, being covered with Cal- ligonum, Tamarix, Holoxylon Anemodendron, and some rushes ; shifting dunes 40 to 50 feet high occur, especially towards the Sea of Aral. The Muyun-kum or Ak-kum Steppe, between the Kara-tau Mountains and the Tchu, is quite uninhabited, except in the loess region at the northern base of the mountains.

Granites, granilites, syenites, porphyries, and various meta-

? Comp. J. Mushketoff's Turkestan, vol. i.

morphic slates constitute the bulk of the western Tian-Shan Mountains. They appear also in the Kara-tau and Nura-tau, and some- times in the form of isolated islands in the steppe. Silver and lead ores, as well as malachite and copper ore, are found in them, especially in the Mogol-tau, and turquoises about Khojend. The crystalline rocks, much metamorphosed, especially in the west, are overlain b

thick Devonian and Carboniferous deposits. Jurassic rocks (Rhetic) cover sinall areas on the slopes of the mountains. These last are all of fresh-water origin; hence it would seem that throughout the Jurassic and Triassic periods Turkestan was a continent intersected only by

lagoons of the Jurassic sea. The Jurassic deposits are most important on account of their coal-beds, which occur in the basing of the Badam and Sairam and in Ferghana. Chalk and Tertiary marine deposits are superimposed upon the above to the thickness of 2000 to 5000 feet, and are widely spread, although they have suffered greatly from denudation. The former belong to the Upper (Ferghana deposits, much resembling Senonian) and Middle Chalk, and contain phosphorite, gypsum, and naphtha (in the Amu-Daria basin). The Tertiary deposits, which contain gypsum and lignite, are represented by nummulitic sands around the Sea of Aral, and by Oligocene and Miocene (Sarmatic) deposits. In the Tian-Shan the red Tertiary conglomerates (Pliocene ?) attain a great develop- ment. Throughout the Chalk and earlier Tertiary periods the lowlands of Syr-Daria were under the sea. The character of the region during the Post-Pliocene period remains unsettled. To what extent the mountains of the western Tian-Shan were under ice during the Glacial period remains a subject of controversy among geologists ; many deposits, however, have been described, even in the outer parts of mountain tracts, which have a decidedly Glacial character.

The chief river of the province is the Syr-DARia (see above), with its tributaries. The frontier touches the eastern shore of the Sea of Aral, and numerous small lakes, mostly salt, are scattered over the sandy plains. A few lakes of alpine character occur in the valleys of the hilly tracts.

The climate of Syr-Daria varies greatly in its different parts. It is most severe in the high trecless syrts of the mountain region; and in the lowlands it is very hot and dry. As a whole, the western parts of the Tian-Shan receive but little precipitation, and are therefore very poor in forests. In the lowlands the heat of the dry summer is almost insupportable, the thermometer rising to 111° Fahr. in the shade; the winter is severe in the lower parts of the province, where the Syr remains frozen for three months. The average yearly temperature at Tashkend and Kazalinsk respectively is 54° and 44° (January, 28° and 8°; July, 80° and 76°).

The flora and fauna belong to two distinct regions,—to Turke- stan and to the Aral-Caspian depression (see TURKESTAN). The ter- races of loess mentioned above are alone available for culture, and accordingly less than 1 per cent. (0°8) of the total area of the pro- vince is under crops, the remainder being either quite barren (67 per cent. of the surface) or pasture land (42 per cent.). Although cultivation is possible only in a few oases, it is there carried to great perfection owing to a highly developed system of irrigation,— two crops being gathered every year. Wheat and barley come first, then pease, millet, and lentils, which are grown in the autumn. Rye and oats are grown only about Kazalinsk. Cotton is cultivated in the districts of Khojend, Kurama, and Turkestan. Gardening 1s greatly developed. Sericulture is also an important source © income, nearly 85 tons of silk being produced every year. Cattle- breeding is largely pursued, not only by the nomads but also by the settled population, and in 1881 it was estimated that Syr-Daria had 242,000 camels, 396,000 horses, 294,000 horned cattle, and 3,200,000 sheep. Fishing is pursued to some extent on the lower Syr. Timber and firewood are exceedingly dear ; timber is floate down from the mountains, but in small quantities; trees raised 10 gardens, dung, and some coal (the last in very limited quantity) are used for fuel. . ‘ f

The population of the province amounted to 1,109,500 in 1881, 2 whom 146,300 lived in towns, 326,600 were settled, and 621,60 were nomadic. It is comparatively dense in certain parts, ree 15 to 81 inhabitants per square mile in Kurama and Khojend, an still more in the valley of the Tchirtchik. Its ethnographical ge position is very mixed. The Russians barely number 8500, if the military be left out of account ; they live principally in towns an ‘ about Kazalinsk. Kirghiz (709,400 with the Kara-Kirghiz) 7 – Sarts (211,000) are the main elements of the population ; 50, is Tadjiks, 26,000 Uzbegs, 4500 Tatars, about 77,000 a (settled Kirghiz mixed with other elements), and a few be Persians, and Hindus must be added. The chief ocompal the Sarts, Uzbegs, Tadjiks, and Kuramints are agriculture @

SY R—S YR

gardening, while the Kirghiz chiefly lead a nomadic pastoral life. Manufactures are represented by a few distilleries; but a great variety of petty industries are practised in the towns and villages, Trade is carried on very largely.

Syr-Daria is divided into eight districts, the chief towns of which, with their populations in 1881, were—TassHKEND (q.v. (100,000), Aulie-ata (4450), Jizak (8700), Kazalinsk (2950), Khojend (28,000), Perovsk (8400), Tchemkent (8050), and Tchinaz (300). Turkestan or Agret (6700) and Ura-tube (11,000) also deserve mention. (EPARSRGs)

SYRIA. Etymologically, "Syria" is merely an abbre- viation of " Assyria," a name which covered the subject- lands of the Assyrian empire, the subject-peoples being also called "Syrians." Afterwards, in the Graeco-Roman period, the shorter word came to be restricted to the territory west of the Euphrates,—the designation "Syrians," how- ever, being given to the great mass of the Semitic popu- lations dwelling between the Tigris and the Mediterranean, who are more accurately called Aramzans (Gen. x. 22; comp. Semitic Lanovaces, vol, xxi. p. 645 sg.). The present article deals with Syria only in its geographical significance. For a map, see vol. xvi. pl. VIII.

Syria is the designation of the country which extends for about 380 miles (between 36° 5' and 31° N. lat.) along the eastern shore of the Mediterranean ; its eastern limit properly speaking is formed by the middle portion of the course of the Euphrates, but in point of fact it insensibly merges into the steppe country which naturally belongs more or less to Arabia. It is only the oases lying nearest the western border of the steppe (e.g., Aleppo, Palmyra) that can be reckoned as belonging to Syria.1 From time immemorial the land between Egypt and the Euphrates has been the battlefield for the empires of western Asia

jon the one hand and those of Egypt and Africa on the

other. It has also been the territory which the trading caravans of these empires have had to traverse; and by its position on the Mediterranean it has been the medium for transmitting the civilizing influences of the East to the West and again of the West to the East. Hence it is easy to

understand how the peoples of Syria should only in exceptional cases have played an independent part either in politics or in art and science; none the less on that account is their place in history one of the highest interest and importance.

The surface configuration of the country is a uniform one; the mountains for the most part stretch from north to south in parallel ridges, connecting the Cilician Taurus with the Red Sea range. The continuity is broken for short intervals at one or two points. Immediately con- nected with the Cilician Taurus in the north, and forming part of it, is the Alma Dagh (ancient Amanus). At its highest it does not rise much above 6000 feet, but it has an abrupt descent towards the sea, and terminates at its southern extremity in a bold headland, the Ras el-Khanzir. Here the Orontes reaches the sea through a depression in the chain, and the same outlet forms an important pass into the interior of the country. Frequently in ancient times it was only the territory to the south of the lower Orontes valley that was reckoned as constituting Syria. Farther south is the isolated Jebel Akra‘, about 6000 feet high (the Mons Casius of the ancients), which was held sacred by the Pheenicians; still farther to the south are the low Ansairi Hills, which derive their name from the people inhabiting them. Beyond those the Nahr el-Kebir (Eleu-

1 In the cuneiform inscriptions Syria is called Mat Hatti, “the land of the Cheta,” a designation transferred from the north Syrian people of that name (see below) to the region as a whole; Afldt Aharri, the “hinder” or “ western” land, denotes more properly the southern portion, but is also used for the whole. By the Arabs it is called Esh-Shém (more properly Esh-Sha’m), “the land on the left hand, as distinguished from Yemen, “the land on the right”; but the de- signation originally implied a wider region than the Syria defined above, including as it did a portion of Arabia.

therus) falls into the sea, and here north Syria may be held to terminate. To the south of this begins the Lebanon district (see LeBanon, vol. xiv. p. 393); an imaginary line drawn eastwards from a

point a little to the south of Tyre will represent the southern boundary of what may be designated as middle Syria. Occasionally Syria is spoken of in a narrow sense, as distinguished from Palestine; but there is no scientific ground for such a practice, for the mountains of PALESTINE (q.v.), the southern third of Syria, can be described as a southward continuation of the mountain masses already referred to, and cis-Jordanic as well as trans-Jordanic Palestine is simply a portion of Syria. Indeed the district as far as Sinai can be spoken of as a fourth division of the same country. A glance at a geological map reveals this very clearly. Cretaceous limestone constitutes the bulk of the hills and plateaus of Syria, and extends towards Sinai, where the zone of primitive rocks is reached. In the south of Palestine, nummulitic limestone and Nubian sandstone make their appearance from Sinai and northern Arabia. In addition to these, alluvial soils are principally met with. In middle Syria especially, eastwards from the upper course of the Jordan, great basaltic masses occur ; in the Hauran (comp. BasHan, vol. iii, p. 410) there are basalt peaks nearly 6000 feet in height. The basalt mountains are often much broken up so as to be quite inaccessible (Harra); but the basalt when decomposed forms the best of arable soils. It is only in isolated cases that the igneous formation ex- tends into western Syria. The tableland to the east of the principal mountain chains consists partly of good clay soil; the steppe (bddiyet esh-sham, also called hamdd), which has an average elevation of about 1800 feet, ex- tends towards the Euphrates with a gradual slope.

the mountains. The chief river of Syria in the narrower sense is the Orontes (Arabic E/-‘Asi), which rises in the Beka‘, the mountain valley between Libanus and Antilibanus, and follows a northerly course. At Antioch, where it is augmented by the stream whieh flows from the great lake of Ak Deniz, it turns westwards, falling into the sea near the ancient Seleucia, Not far from the source of the Orontes is that of the Litani (formerly Lita), which runs south- wards through the Beka‘, and afterwards westwards through a deep gorge of its own excavation, having its mouth a little to the north of Tyre; in its lower course it bears the name of El-Kasimiye. The principal river of south Syria is the Jorpan (q.v.). Like it, most of the other streams of Syria rising on the

eastern side of the water- shed terminate in inland lakes. Of these may be named the El-A‘waj and the Barada (Pharpar and Abana) of Damascus, which lose themselves in the lakes and marshes to the east of the city. In like manner the river of Aleppo falls into the lake El-Math. The ‘Afrina (Ufrenus of the ancients) falls into the Ak Deniz lake, and so into the Orontes; the Sadjtr is a tributary of the Kuphrates. Other lakes are the great salt lake to the south-east of Aleppo and the remarkable lake near Homs, in the neighbourhood of which the ruins of the old Hittite city of Kadesh have recently been discovered. The coastal streams have been enumerated under LEBANON and

PALESTINE (q.¥.).

Two distinct floral regions meet in Syria (comp. LEBANON). That Vegeta- of the coast is Mediterranean, and is charaeterized by a number of tion.

evergreen shrubs, with small leathery leaves, and of quickly flower- ing spring plants. On the coast of Pheenicia (comp. vol. xviii. p- 801) and southwards towards Egypt more southern forms of the same vegetation occur, as, for example, Ficus Sycomorus, and especially date-palms. This region is separated from the easterly one, that of the steppe flora, by the ridge of Lebanon and the mountains of Palestine. It is distinguished by the variety of its speeies, by the dry and thorny eharaeter of its shrubs, and by its marked poverty in trees. The Jordan valley has on account of its low level a sub-tropical character. As regards cultivated species, Syria is the home of the olive tree, which, like the vine, is found in all parts; but the white mulberry for silk is limited to a small district. Syria is throughout far from unfertile ; the district of the Hauran is one magnificent corn-field, while the orehard land about Damascus is renowned far and wide. In former times, how- ever, cultivation was carried on with much greater zeal, and the arrangements for irrigation—a necessity everywhere, especially on the side bordering on the steppe—were much more considerable and more carefully seen to. The numerous ruins on the lands at

The direction of the principal valleys is determined by that of Rivers.

Climate.

Ancient Syrians,

Rela- tions with ancient

Egypt.

822 oY RLS

present under cultivation and still more on those to the east of them indicate that the limits of agriculture were once more exten- sive and the population much denser than at present. During the Roman period frontier fortresses on the edge of the steppe served to check the rapacity and barbarizing influence of the Bedouin hordes. ;

Syria presents great diversities of climate. The mountains, though sometimes not absolutely very high, arrest the west winds blowing from the Mediterranean, so that the atmospheric precipita- tion is much greater on the western than on the eastern slopes. Hence the springs on the eastern versant are fewer, and cultivation is therefore confined to isolated areas resembling oases. The rainfall drains off with great rapidity, the beds of the streams soon drying up again. Within historic times the climate, and with it the productivity of the country, cannot have greatly changed ; at most the precipitation may have been greater, the area under wood having been more extensive. Except for J erusalem, we have hardly any accurate meteorological observations ; there the mean annual temperature is about 63° Fahr.; in Beyrout it is about 68°. The rainfall in Jerusalem is 36-22 inches, in Beyrout 21°66. The heat at Damascus and Aleppo is great, the cooling winds being kept off by the mountains. Frost and snow are occasionally experienced among the mountains and on the inland plateaus, but never along the coast. Even the steppe exhibits great contrasts of temperature ; there the rainfall is slight and the air exceed- ingly exhilarating and healthy. The sky is continuously cloudless from the beginning of May till about the end of October ; during the summer months the nights as a rule are dewy, except in the desert. Rain is brought by the west wind ; the north-west wind, which blows often, moderates the heat. On the other

hand, an ozoneless east wind (sirocco) is occasionally experienced—especially during the second half of May and before the beginning of the rainy season—which parches up everything and has a prejudicial influence on both animal and vegetable life. On the whole the climate of Syria—if the Jordan valley and the moister districts are excepted —is not unhealthy, though intermittent fevers are not uncommon in some places.

Of the political relations of Syria in ancient times we know but little. Each town with its surrounding district seems to have con- stituted a small separate state; the conduct of affairs naturally devolved upon the noble families. At a very early period—as early probably as the 15th century z.c.—Syria became the meeting- place of Egyptian and Babylonian elements, resulting in a type of western Asiatic culture peculiar to itself, which through the com- merce of the Pheenicians was carried to the western lands of the Mediterranean basin. Industry especially attained a high state of development ; rich garments were embroidered and glass and the like were manufactured. The extant inventories of spoil carried off by the ancient conquerors include a variety of utensils and stuffs. The influence exercised at all times on Syrian art by the powerful neighbouring states is abundantly confirmed by all the recent finds. The Syrians were more original in what related to religion : every place, every tribe, had its "lord" (Ba'al) and its "lady" (Ba'alat) ; the latter is generally called 'Ashtar or 'Ashtaret. Besides the local Baal there were "the god of heaven" (El) and other deities ; human sacrifices as a means of propitiating the divine wrath were not uncommon. But in the Syrian mythology forcign influences frequently betray themselves. Over against its want of originality must be set the fact, not merely that Syrian culture spread ex- tensively towards the west, but that the Syrians (as is shown by recently discovered inscriptions) long before the Christian era exercised over the northern Arabs a perceptible influence, which afterwards, about the beginning of the 1st century, became much stronger through the kingdom of the Nabateans, The art of writing was derived by the Arabs from the Syrians.

Something about the ancient political and geographical relations of Syria can be gleaned from Egyptian sources, especially in con- nexion with the campaigns of Thothmes III. in western Asia. The Egyptians designated their Eastern neighbours collectively as ‘Amu. Syria up to and beyond the Euphrates is called more pre- cisely Sahi (or Zahi), and is regarded as consisting of the following parts :—(1) Rutenn, practically the same as Palestine (occasionally Palestine with Ccelesyria is called Upper Rutenu, as distinguished from Lower Rutenu extending to the Euphrates) ; (2) the land of the Cheta (sometimes reckoned as belenging to Rutenu), with Kadesh on the Orontes as its capital ; (3) Naharina, the land on both sides of the Euphrates (extending, strictly speaking, beyond the Syrian limits); (4) Kaftu, the coast land of the Pheenicians (Fenchu), along with Cyprus. The Canaanites in general are called Charu. From these lands the Egyptian kings often derived rich booty, so that in those days Syria must have been civilized and prosperous. Moreover, we possess enumerations of towns in the geographical lists of the temple of Karnak and in a hieratic papyrus dating about 200 years after Thothmes III. Some of these names can be readily identified, such as Aleppo, Kadesh, Sidon, and the like, as well as many in Palestine. These materials, however, do not enable us to form even a moderately clear conception of the

condition of the country at that time. It is certain that most of

the cities are of very great antiquity. It appears that the Cheta Cheta very probably were a non-Semitic people and that their power for ; a time extended far beyond the Syrian limits. Their inscriptions have not yet been deciphered with certainty. Within Syria their kingdom extended westwards from the middle course of the En. phrates to the neighbourhood of Hamath ; their capital appears to have been Carchemish. The most prevalent opinion identifies Carchemish with Jerabis on the Euphrates, an identification which

is favoured by the recent discovery of important “ Hittite” monn. ments at the place. Before then the so-called “ Hamath stones” were the most important inscriptions of the Cheta we possessed,

but numerous others, as well as various other remains, are now at

our command, and show that the influence of the powerful Cheta kingdom extended far into Asia Minor (compare HittitEs). The kingdom disappeared at an early date, but some of the minor Cheta states continued to subsist down to the 12th century B.C,

Next to the Cheta the Arameans were the people who held the Arame. most important towns of Syria, gradually advancing until at last ans, they occupied the whole country. Of the Aramean stocks named in Gen. x. 23, xxii. 21 sg., very little is known, but it is certain that Arameans at an early period had their abode close on the northern border of Palestine (in Maachah). A great part was played in the history of Isracl by the state of Aram Dammesek, t.é., the territory of the ancient city of Damascus (see vol. vi. p, 790) ; it was brought into subjection for a short time under David. The main object of the century-long dispute between the two king- doms was the possession of the land to the east of the Jordan (Hauran, and especially Gilead). Another Aramean state often mentioned in the Bible is that of Aram Zobah. That Zobah was situated within Syria is certain, though how far to the west or north of Damascus is not known ; in any case it was not far from Hamath. MHamath in the valley of the Orontes, at the mouth of the Beka‘ valley, was from an early period one of the most important places in Syria; according to the Bible, its original inhabitants were Canaanites. The district belonging to it, including amongst other — places Riblah (of importance on account of its situation), was not very extensive. In 733 B.c. Tiglath-Pileser Il. compassed the overthrow of the kingdom of Damascus ; he also took Arpad (Tell Arfad), an important place three hours to the north of Aleppo. Hamath was taken by Sargon in 720. Henceforward the petty states of Syria were at all times subject to one or other of the great world-empires, even if in some cases a certain degree of in- dependence was prescrved.

The foundation of numerous Greek cities shortly after Alexander’s Greek ; time was of great importance for Syria; ANTIOCH (g.v.), founded period, about 300 B.c. by Seleucus, became the capital of the Syrian kingdom of the Seleucide. Among other influential Greek towns were Apamea on the Orontes and Laodicea. The Seleucide had severe

struggles with the Ptolemies for the possession of the south- k ern part of Syria (comp. IsRaEL, vol. xiii. p. 420). §

After having been reckoned for a short time (from 83 to 69 B.¢.) Under among the dominions of Tigranes, king of Armenia, the country Roman was conquered for the Romans by Pompey (64-63 B.c.). It is sway. impossible here to follow in detail the numerous changes in the distribution of the territory and the gradual disappearance of particular dynasties which maintained a footing for some time longer in Chalcis, Abila, Emesa, and Palestine ; but it is of special interest to note that the kingdom of the Arab Nabateans (comp. vol. xvii. p. 160) was able to subsist for a considerable period towards the north as far as Damascus. In the year 40 B.c. Syria had to endure a sudden but brief invasion by the Parthians The country soon became one of the most important provinces of the Roman empire; its proconsulship was from the first regarded as the most desirable, and this eminence became still more marked afterwards. Antioch, adorned with many sumptuous buildings, as the chief town of the provinces of Asia, became in point of size the third city of the empire; its port was Seleucia, surnamed Pieria. The high degree of civilization then prevailing in the country is proved by its architectural remains dating from the carly Christian centuries; the investigations of De Vogué have shown that from the Ist to the 7th century there prevailed in north Syria and the Hauran a special style of architecture, —partly no doubt following Greco-Roman models, but also showing a great deal of originality in details. ‘ wi

The administrative divisions of Syria during the Roman period es varied greatly at different times; subjoined is an enumeration of divis them as they existed at the beginning of the 5th century. (1) Syria Euphratensis, which had for its capital Hierapolis (Syr. Mabég; Arab. Mambidj; Gr. BayBixn). The kingdom of Com- magene, beyond the limits of Syria, belonged to Syria Euphra- tensis ; its capital was Samosata, at the point where the Euphrates leaves the mountains, and it had other important towns on_ that river, such as Europus (the modern Barbalissus), (2) Syria L, or Ceelesyria, haying Antioch as its capital. The name Ccelesyria (4 Kowkh Zupla) originally, no doubt,

was applied to the valley between Libanus and Antilibanus, but was afterwards extended

‘ t

hb phen

to the district stretching eastwards from the latter range. . (3) Syria II., or Syria Salutaris, with Apamea (Arab. Famtya, the modern Kal‘at el-Mudik) on the Orontes as capital. (4) Phenice Maritima; capital, Tyre. (5) Pheenice ad Libanum; capital, Emesa (Hims). To this division Damascus and Palmyra belonged ; occa- sionally they were reckoned to Coelesyria, the middle strip of coast being designated Syrophenicia. (6, 7, 8) Palestina I., II., and III. For these, which from the time of Vespasian had governors of their own, see vol. xvill. p. 177. (9) Arabia (capital, Bostra), which embraced all the region from the Hauran to the Arnon, and skirted the Jordan valley, stretching southwards to Petra. Through the kingdom of the Nabateans Roman influence pene- trated from Syria far into northern Arabia.

In 616 Syria was subjugated for a bricf period by the Persian Chosroes II. ; from 622 till 628 it was again Byzantine ; 636 and the immediately following years saw its conquest by the Moham- medans (see MOHAMMEDANISM, Vol. xviii. p. 562). Mo‘Awija, the first Ommayad caliph, chose Damascus for his residence ; but in 750 the capital of the empire was removed by the ‘Abbasids to Baghdad. Under the early caliphs the Arabs divided Syria into the following military districts (gonds). (1) Filistin (Palestine), consisting of Juda, Samaria, and a portion of the territory east of Jordan; its capital was Ramleh, Jerusalem ranking next. (2) Urdun (Jordan), of which the capital was Tabariye (Tiberias) ; roughly speaking, it consisted of the rest of Palestine as far as Tyre. (3) Damascus, a district which included Baalbec, Tripoli, and Beyrout, and also the Hauran. (4) Hims, including Hamath.

(5) Kinnasrin, corresponding to northern Syria; the capital at

first was Kinnasrin to the south of Haleb (Aleppo), by which it was afterwards superseded. (6) The sixth district was the military frontier (‘awdsim) bordering upon the Byzantine dominions in Asia Minor. The struggles of the Mohammedan dynasties for the possession of Syria cannot be gone into here ; suffice it to say that throughout their course the country still enjoyed a considerable

, degree of prosperity.

_ In the crusading period the kingdom of Jerusalem, whose rulers were never able to establish a foothold to the east of the Jordan, extended northwards to Beyrout; next it was the countship of | Tripoli on the coast; and beyond that in north Syria was the | principality of Antioch. Syria suffered severely from the Mongol Invasions (1260), and it never recovered its former prosperity. In 1516 the Ottomans took it from the Egyptian Mamelnkes. Under

\ the Turks its administrative divisions again varied at different

times ; out of the five pashalics of Aleppo, Tripoli, Damascus,

| Sidon (later ‘Akka), and Jerusalem two vilayets were subsequently

formed, having their capitals at Aleppo and Damascus. Quite recently south Palestine has been made a separate vilayet from | that of Damascus.

Rude stone monuments (circles and dolmeus) and other prehistoric remains show that Syria must have been inhabited from a very early period. Within historic times a great number of different nation- alities have fought and settled within its borders, the majority

) belonging to the Semitic stock. This last circumstance has ren-

dered possible a considerable degree of fidelity in the tradition of the oldest local names. After the Arameans had absorbed what remained of

the earlier population, they themselves were very powerfully influenced by Greco-Roman civilization, but as a people

| they still retained their Aramean speech. At present an Aramaic } dialect largely mixed with Arabic is spoken in three villages on

the eastern slope of Antilibanus (in Ma‘lila, Bakh‘a, and Jub‘adin), but this small survival is on the point of disappearing. Through- out the whole country elsewhere the language spoken is Arabic, | but with Aramaic elements, especially in the language of the pea- sants. Ethnographically the Aramaic element of the population admits of being distinguished from the Arabic type ; it is specially | strong in the mountain districts. The majority of the Christians J dwelling in Syria may be regarded as representatives of the } Aramean race. No traces of the earlier races, such as the Canaanites }or Phoenicians, can any longer be distinguished ; and every trace jof the presence of Greeks, Romans, and Franks has completely disappeared. ome | In the Arab immigration, two principal types are to be distin- | guished,—the pure Arab type of the nomad tribes (Bedouins) and | the type of the sedentary town Arabs and peasants, which shows an jintermixture of foreign and older elements. The two confront cach jother in sharp contrasts. Bedouin tribes are scattered throughout the whole country ; despising agriculture and the settled life, they are found with their camels, sheep, and goats on the borders of the territories appropriated by the peasants. Being more or less inde- pendent of the Government, especially in the district bordering on the steppe, they are able to exact black mail from their sedentary jbrethren. T’axed thus on both hands, the life of the peasant is economically far from an easy one ; hencc it should be the duty of Government to restrain the influence of the nomads and to force them as far as possible to form fixed settlements. In this respect the policy of the Turks during the 19th century to ensure the safety of the peasants and of travellers has been on the whole

back from Europe.

successful. In the districts bordering on the coast there are no large nomadic tribes, and on the higher plateaus of the cultivated land the power of the Bedouins is much reduced ; but south of Palestine and everywhere on the edge of the steppe they continue "Tauch as before. The most. powerful tribe of the Syrian desert is that of the 'Aneze, falling into numerous subdivisions, of which the Ruwala, Wuld 'Ali, Hesene, and Bischer may be mentioned. The tribe, estimated to number 300,000 in all, extends far into Arabia and reaches the Euphrates. The other Bedouin tribes of Syria have for the most part tolerably definite and circumscribed territories. East of the Jordan the best known are the 'Adwin on the Balka and the Bani Sakhr in Moab. The Bedouins to the south of the Dead Sea are called Ahl el-Kibli ("the people of the south") in contradistinction to those of the north (Ahl esh-Shema]). Finally, there occur sporadically in central and northern Syria nomadic Turkish tribes. Gipsy hordes are also met with in ¢con- siderable numbers.

_The religious as well as the ethnographical types are strongly divergent. The bulk of the population are Mohammedan ; the Bedouins have not much religion of any kind, but they profess Islam. Besides orthodox Moslems there are also Shi'ite sects, such as that of the Metawile (especially in northern Palestine), as well as a number of religious communities whose doctrine, combining philosophical and Christian with Mohammedan elements, is the outcome of the process of fermentation that characterized the first centuries of Islam. To this last class belong the Ishmaelites, Nosairians, and especially the Drusss (q.v.). In many cases it is obvious that the political antipathy of natives against the Arabs has found expression in the formation of such sects. The Nosairians, for instance, and no doubt the Druses also, were originally survivals of the Syrian population. The Jews are found exclusively in the larger centres of population ; in every case they have immigrated The Christians are an important element, con- stituting probably as much as a fifth of the whole population ; the majority of them belong to the Orthodox Greek Church, which has two patriarchs in Syria, at Antioch and Jerusalem. Catholics— United Greeks, United Syrians, and Maronites—are numerous. The mission of the American Presbyterian Church, which has had its centre in Beyrout for the last

sixty years, has done much for Syria, especially in the spread of popular education; numerous publications issue from its press, and its medical school has been extremely beneficial. The Catholic mission has done very good work in what relates to schools, institutes, and the diffusion of literature. The Christians constitute the educated portion of the Syrian people ; but the spirit of rivalry is producing stimulative effects on the Mohammedans, who have greatly fallen away from that zcal for knowledge which characterized the earlier centuries of their faith.

Accurate statistics of any kind for Syria cannot be had; even the area of the land under cultivation is unknown. The returns of population are, according to the Turkish official documents, only approximations. The total population may safely be put at less than 2,000,000 ; an official estimate in 1872-73 gave 1,365,680, of whom 976,322 were Mohammedans. Probably, however, this Was an under-estimate. Reclus (Nowv. Géogr. Univ., Paris, 1884) gives the area of Syria as 183,000 square kilométres (70,638 square miles) and the population as 1,450,000.

From the Egyptian and Assyrio-Babylonian monuments we learn that in ancient times one of the principal exports of Syria was timber; this has now entirely ceased. But it continues to export wheat, and with good roads the amount could be very largely in- ereased. Other articles of export are silk cocoons, wool, hides, sponges, and fruits (almonds, raisins, and the like); the amounts of cotton, tobacco, and wine sent out of the country are small. The only good harbours are those of Beyrout and Alexandretta (Scan- deroon). The caravan trade with the Kast has almost entirely ceased, and the great trade routes from Damascus northwards to Aleppo and eastwards through the wilderness arc quite abandoned. The traffic with Arabia has ceased to be important, being limited to the time of the going and returning of the great pilgrim caravan to Mecca, which continues to have its mustering-place at Damascus. The native industries in silk, cotton, and wool have been almost entirely destroyed by the import trade from Europe. The land is poor in minerals, including coal; water-power also is deficient, so that the introduction of European industries is attended with difficulties

even apart from the insecurity of affairs, which forbids such experiments as the improvement of agriculture by means of European capital. As regards the cultivation of the soil Syria remains stable; but the soil is becoming relatively poorer, the

value of the imports constantly gaining upon that of the exports. Literature.—Ritter, Erdkunde von Asien, vol. xvii., parts 1 and 2, Berlin, 1854-55 ; Burekhardt, Travels in Syria and the Holy Land, London, 1822; Lortet, La Syrie @aujourdhut, Paris, 1884; Baedeker, Palestine and Syria; Murray's Syria and Palestine; Porter, Five Years in Damascus, 2 vols., London, 1855 ; Burton and Drake, Unexplored Syria, 2 vols., London, 1872; A. v. Kremer, Mittelsyrien u. Damascus, Vienna, 1853. For the art history of Syria De Vogué's Syrie Centrale: architecture civile et religieuse du ler au 7me siécle (Paris, 1865- 77) may be consulted, and on its trade Zwiedineck v. Siidenhorst, Syrien u. seine Bedeutung fiir den Welthandel, Vienna, 1873. (A. SO.)

Reli- gions.

Area and

popu-~ lation.

Com- merce and in- dustry.

Péshitta.

824

SYRIAC LITERATURE

HE literature of Syria, as known to us at the present day, is, with the exception of translations from the Greek and some other languages, a Christian literature. The writings of the Syrian heathens, such as the so-called Sabians (see SABrans) of Harran, which were extant, at least in part, even in the 13th century,! seem to have now wholly disappeared. The beginnings of this literature are lost in the darkness of the earliest ages of Christianity. It was at its best from the 4th to the

8th century, and then gradually died away, though it kept up a flickering exist- ence till the 14th century or even later. We must own — and it is well to make the confession at the outset— that the literature of Syria is, on the whole, not an attract- ive one. As Renan said long ago,? the characteristic of the Syrians is a certain mediocrity. They shone neither in war, nor in the arts, nor in science. They altogether lacked the poetic fire of the older—we purposely emphasize the word— the older Hebrews and of the Arabs. But they were apt enough as pupils of the Greeks ; they assimilated and reproduced, adding little or nothing of their own. There was no Al-Farabi, no Ibn Sina, no Ibn Rushd, in the cloisters of Edessa, Ken-neshré, or Nisibis. Yet to the Syrians belongs the merit of having passed on the lore of ancient Greece to the Arabs, and therefore, as a matter of history, their literature must always possess a certain amount of interest in the eyes of the modern student. The Syrian Church never produced men who rose to the level of a Eusebius, a Gregory Nazianzen, a Basil, and a Chrysostom ; but we may still be thankful to the plodding diligence which has preserved for us in fairly good trans- lations many valuable works of Greek fathers which would otherwise have been lost. And even Syria's humble chroni- clers, such as John of Ephesus, Dionysius of Tell-Mahré, and Bar-Hebreeus, deserve their meed of praise, seeing that, without their guidance, we should have known far less than we now know about the history of two important branches of the Eastern Church, besides losing much in- teresting information as to the political events of the periods with which their annals are occupied.

As Syriac litcrature commences with the Bible, we first briefly enumerate the different versions of Holy Scripture.

The most important of these is the so-called Péshitta (mappakta peshitta), "the simple" or "plain version," the Syriac vulgate. This name is in use as early as the 9th or 10th century.3 As to the Old Testament, neither the exact time nor place of its transla- tion is known; indeed, from certain differences of style and manner in its several parts, we may rather suppose it to be the work of different hands, extending over a considerable period of time. It would seem, however, as a whole, to have been a product of the 2d century, and not

improbably a monument of the learning and zeal of the Christians of Edessa. Possibly Jewish converts, or even Jews, took a part in it, for some books (such as the Pentateuch and Job) are very literally rendered, whereas the coincidences with the LXX. (which are particularly numerous in the prophetical books) show the hand of Christian translators or revisers. That Jews should have had at any rate a consultative share in this work need not surprise us, when we remember that Syrian fathers, such as Aphraates, in the middle of the 4th century, and Jacob of Edessa, in the latter half of the 7th, had frequent recourse, like Jerome, to the scholars of the synagogue. 'To what extent subsequent revision may have been carried it is not easy to say; but it seems tolerably certain that alterations were made from time to time with a view to harmonizing the Syriac text with that of the LXX. Such an opportunity may, for instance, have been afforded on a consider- able scale by the adoption of Lucian's text of the LXX. at Antioch in the beginning of the 4th century (see SEPTUAGINT, Vol. xxi. p- 669). On all these points, however, we know nothing for

1 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Syr., ed. Bruns and Kirsch, p. 176 ; Chwol-sohn, Ssabier und Ssabismus, i. 177.

2 De Philosophia Peripatetica apud Syros, 1852, p. 3.

3 See the passage of Moses bar Képha, who died in 903, cited by the

Abbé Martin in his Introduction a la Critique Textuelle du Nouveau Testament, p. 101, note.

certain, and may well repeat the words of Theodore of Mopsuestia in his commentary on Zephaniah i. 64: Aputvevra de Tara els pey Tiv Zipwy wap' brov 6% wore' obde yap &yvwaorar péxp. Tis THMEpov bars Tore ovros éorly.

The canonical books of the Old Testament according to the Canonical Péshitta are substantially those of the Hebrew Bible. In the books of Massoretic MSS. (see below), whether Nestorian or J acobite, the Old Tes. books of Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah are passed over, and in tament the Nestorian the book of Esther also. But, on the other hand,it

must be noticed that all these books are cited by Aphraates, and that they all appear in the Codex Ambrosianus. Of the Chronicles there is a MS. of the 6th century in the British Museum, Add, 17104. Esther appears in a volume of equal age (Add. 14652) as one of the constituent parts of the " Book of Women," the others being Ruth, Susanna, Judith, and the history of Thecla, the dis. ciple of St Paul, which last is excluded from Biblical MSS. The oldest dated MS. of any portion of the Old Testament at present known to us is Add. 14425 in the British Museum (Gen., Exod., Num., Deut.), transcribed at Amid by a deacon named John in 464, The deutero-canonical books or apocrypha, translated by differ- Apo- ent hands from the Greek,® are nearly the same as in the LXX.6 erypha, The Codex Ambrosianus,' for example, contains Wisdom, the Epistle of Jeremiah, and two Epistles of Baruch ; the Song of the Three Children, Bel and the Dragon, and Susanna ; Judith, Siracides or Ecclesiasticus ; the Apocalypse of Baruch; the fourth book of Esdras ; and five books of the Maccabees, the fourth being the history of Samona and her sons, and the fifth Josephi de Bello Judaico lib. vi.8 To these must be added from other MSS. the first or third book of Esdras, the book of Tobit, and the prayer of Manasses,

Of the first book of the Maccabees two recensions are extant, as far as chap. xiv. 24. The book of Tobit presents the text of the LXX. as far as chap. vii. 11.9

The canonical books of the New Testament are the four Gospels, Canot- the Acts of the Apostles (to which are annexed the three catholic ical epistles, viz., James, 1 Peter, and 1 Johu), and the fourteen epistles books of of St Paul. The shorter apostolic epistles, viz., 2 and 3 John, 2 NewTes- Peter, and Jude, and the Apocalypse of St John, were rejected by tament. the early Syrian Church.!°

As to the Péshitta version of the Gospels (P), a variety of critical Tatian's questions arise when we consider it in connexion with two other Dia works, the Dia-tessarén of Tatian (T) and the Curetonian Gospels tessarin (Sc).11 Tatian, the friend of Justin Martyr, afterwards counted a and the heretic, composed out of the four Gospels a work which received Cureton- the title of Td dia reccdpw edaryyédov, in

Syriac more briefly ian Dia -tessarén, or Evangelion da-Méhallétz, “the Gospel of the Gospels. Mixed.” It is a subject of controversy whether Tatian wrote this work in Greek or in Syriac, and whether he compiled it from the Greek Gospels or from a previous Syriac version. According to Zahn™ and Baethgen,™ the author’s language was Syriac, his sources Greek. They hold that this was the only Gospel in use in the Syrian Church for nearly a century, but that about the year 250, under the influence of Western MSS. of the Greek

4 Mai, Patrum Nova Bibliotheca, vol. vii. 252.

5 Some scholars, such as P. de Lagarde and Bickell, think that Ecclesiasticus was translated from the lost Hebrew text.

8 See Ceriani, Monumenta Sacra et Profana, vol. i. fasce. 1, 2; vol. v. fascc. 1, 2; P. de Lagarde, Libri Vet. Test. Apocryphi Syriace.

7 Splendidly reproduced at Milan by the process of photo-lithography under the direction of the Rev. Dr A. M. Ceriani, 5 parts, 1876 foll.

8 See Das 6te Buch d. Bellum Judaicum iibersetat u. kritisch bearbeitel, by Dr H. Kottek, Berlin, 1886; only capp. 1 and 2.

° See the Syriac note on p. xii. of De Lagarde’s edition, 4

10 The principal editions of the Péshitta are contained in the Paris polyglott of Le Jay and the London polyglott of Walton, to which latter is attached the immortal Lexicon Heptaglotton of Edmund Castell. The Old Testament (without the apocrypha) was edited by 8. Lee in 1823 for the Bible Society, and is frequently bound up with the New Testament of 1826. The first edition of the New Testament was that of J. A. Widmanstad, with the help of Moses of Mardin (Vienna, 1556). Those of Tremellius (1569), Trost (1621), Gutbir (1664), and Leusden and Schaaf (1708, 1717) are well known. To the last named belongs Schaaf’s admirable Lexicon Syriacum Concordantiale. The American missionaries at Urimiyah have published both the Old and New Testaments in ancient and modern Syriac, the former in 1852, the latter in 1846. ‘ .

11 Remains of a very Antient Recension of the Four Gospels in Syriat, hitherto unknown in Europe, discovered, edited, and translated by W. Cureton, D.D., F.RS., 1858.

2 Forschungen zur Geschichte des neutestamentlichen Kanons, &¢., 1 Theil: Tatian's Diatessaron, pp. 98, 99. :

13 Tvangelienfragmente. Der griechische Text des Cureton schen Syrers wiederhergestellt, 1885,

[BIBLE VERSIONS. |

text (see Westcott and Hort, The New Testament in the Original Greek, Introd., §§ 118, 214), a version of "the Separate Gospels," Evangelion da-Mépharréshé, was introduced! The translator, ac- cording to Baethgen,? made use of T as far as he could; and of this text Sc is, in the opinion of these scholars, the solitary sur- vival in our days. The evidence for this view does not, however, appear to be conclusive. It seems that a Syriac version of the four Gospels, as well as of the other parts of the New Testament, must have existed in the 2d century, perhaps even before the version of the Old Testament. From this Tatian may have com- piled his Dia-tessarén, or he may have written that work in Greek and others may have done it into Syriac. Be that as it may, T certainly gained great popularity in the carly Syrian Church, and almost superseded the Separate Gospels. Aphraates quoted

Addai or Addeus (in its present shape a work of the latter half of the 4th century) transfers it to the apostolic times®; Rabbala, bishop of Edessa (411-435), promulgated an order that 'the priests and deacons should take care that in every church there should be a copy of the Separate Gospels (Evangelion da-Mépharréshé), and that it should be read''®; and Theodoret, bishop of Cyrrhus (423-457), swept up more than two hundred copies of it in the churches of his diocese, and introduced the four Gospels in their place: 7a ray rerrdpwr ebayyedicTay avTeoiyayor evayyéda."? The result of these and similar well meant efforts is that not a single copy of T has come down to our times.8 Both Aphraates and Ephraim, however, madc use of the Separate Gospels. The former seems to have employed a text which

Baethgen calls a slightly reviscd form of Sc (op. ctt., p. 95); we would rather speak of it as a revised form of the old Syriac Gospels of the 2d century. The latter made use of a more thorough Edessene revision, closely approaching in form to, if not identical with, P (Baethgen, p. 95; Zahn, p. 63). Our oldest MSS. of P are, however, more than a hundred years later than Ephraim's time. We eannot, therefore, expect very important textual results from the collation of even such MSS. as Add. 14470, 14453, 14459, ff. 1-66, and 17117, in _ the British Museum, all of which may be safely ascribed to the _ latter part of the 5th or the beginning of the 6th century. Early

in the 5th century Rabbala, bishop of Edessa, the friend and | correspondent of Cyril of Alexandria, occupied himself with " trans- _ lating the New Testament out of the Greek into the Syriac, because of its variations, exactly as it was."® This probably means, as _has been suggested by Nestle, that Rabbila undertook a revision _ of the Syriac text according to a Greek MS. or MSS. in his posses-

sion, that is to say, still further assimilated P of that day to a _ Greek (possibly, from his eonnexion with Cyril, Alexandrian) text.

We do not as yet know, however, whether this revision was merely | 4 private effort, or what influence, if any, it exercised on the history » of P; more likely it was a first step in the direction of the Philoxen-

jan version (see below). The result of these successive revisions | as regards Sc has been that it survives in but one mutilated codex,

and that written at comparatively so late a date as 450-470,1°—a) phenomenon which has its parallel in the case of the Itala codex c | of the Gospels, copied in the llth century. The greater part of this volume is in the British Museum (Add. 14451)"; but there are _ three leaves of it in the royal library at Berlin, forming the fly- | leaves of the MS, marked Orient. Quart. 528.12 Crowfoot's attempt

- **I Zahn, op. cit., pp. 104-106. 2 Op. cit., pp. 59, 60, 72 sq. 3 Wright's edition, p. owes 1.10, "as it is written at the head of the Gospel**

| of our Lifegiver, In the beginning was the Word.”

| 4 Nowextant only in the old Armenian version, translated by the Mechitarist » Aucher, and revised by G. Mésinger under the title of Evangelit Concordantis | | Lxpositio facta a S. Ephraemo, Venice, 1876.

| 5 Phillips’s edition, p. QX, 1. 17.

8S. Ephraemi Syri Rabulz epi Edessenit Balwi aliorumque opera selecta, ed. i J.J. Overbeek, Oxford, 1865, p. 220, 3. | 7 Alperixiis kaxouvOlas ércrouh, i. 20. | 8 Martin’s article “Le Acad recodpwy de Tatien” (from Revue des Ques- i tions Historiques, April 1883) contains much curious literary information, par-

ticularly regarding similar compilations of later date. See also Ciasca’s article | De Tatiani Diatessaron Arabica Versione,” in Cardinal Pitra’s Analecta Sacra Spicilegio Solesmenst parata, iv. 465. This Arabic Diatessaron begins with Mark)i. 1, John i. 1-5, Luke i. 5-80, Matthew i. 1-25a, Luke ii. 1-39. Ciasca’s copy is how (1887) in the hands of De Lagarde, who has published a few pages of it in Nachrichten von der konigl. Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften, 1886, No. 4, pp. 150-158. According to De Lagarde, the text is that of the ordinary Péshitta. | 9% Overbeek, op. cit., p. 172, 18-20. . | 10 The whole of the Abbé Martin’s elaborate argumentation (Introd. & la | Critique Teatuelle du N. T., pp. 163-236) is of no avail against this paleeographic ‘fact. No one who is conversant with Syriac MSS. can for a moment doubt that our codex of Sc was written within a few years of the time indicated above. The handwritings of Jacob of Edessa’s time (the latter half of the 7th century) are altogether different. Possessors of the abbé’s work should cancel pp. 234-236. The “‘Postscriptum,” as the author himself has explained, is only an elaborate joke. There is no MS. Add. 70125 in the British Museum, no catalogue of the Greek MSS. in twenty-five volumes, and of course no such photograph exists as he has described. As for the ‘special telegram from “ Réverend Crowfoot” through the “agence Fri-Frou-Fro and Co.,” dated 25th December 1882, it is enough to say that Mr Crowfoot died on 18th oh 1875. – :

See Wright, Catalogue, p. 73, No. exix.

‘) 12 See Rodiger in the Manutshertante of the Berlin Academy for July 1872, pP- 557; Wright, Fragments of the Curetonian Gospels (privately printed).

{

peak ree LITERATURE

it®; Ephraim wrote a commentary upon it*; the Doctrine of

825

to retranslate Sc into Greek is a failure (Fragmenta Evangeliea, 1870-72); Baethgen’s work (Evangelienfragmente, &c.) will per- haps be found more satisfactory.

The scholars of the Monophysite branch of the Syrian Church Mono- were, however, by no means satisfied even with the revised text physite of P, and demanded a yet more aceurate reproduction of the Greek versions. text in use among them. Accordingly Aksénaya or Philoxenus, bishop of Mabbigh (485-519), undertook to satisfy this want, and Philo- with the assistance of his chorepiscopus, Polycarp, produced a literal xenus. translation of the whole Bible in the year 508.13 This seems at first to have met with considerable approval; Moses of Aggél, for example, who flourished from 550 to 570,” refers to the version of the New Testament and of the Psalms evidently as the standard work of the day. But it was in its turn superseded by two later revisions, and MSS. of it are now very rare. Portions of Isaiah survive in the British Museum, Add. 17106, ff. 74-87,16 and the text of the Gospels in the codex A. 2,18 of the Biblioteca An- geliea at Rome, of the 11th or 12th century,!” and perhaps also in the Beiriit (Beyrout) MS. deseribed by the Rev. Isaac H. Hall.8 At the beginning of the 7th century the work of retranslation and Tevision was again taken in hand by the Monophysites, the scene of their labours being the different convents in’ the neighbour- hood of Alexandria. ‘There, in the years 616-617,!% Paul, bishop Paul of of Tella dhé-Mauzélath or Constantina, undertook a version of the Tella. hexaplar text of the LXX. at the request of the patriarch Atha- nasius I.?° Of parts of this many MSS. are extant in

the British Museum and the Bibliothéque Nationale at Paris, and the Biblio-

‘ teca Ambrosiana at Milan possesses the second volume of a codex of

the entire work, which has been reproduced by photo-lithography under the direction of Ceriani.2 ‘This version not only exhibits the asterisks and obeli of Origen’s text of the LXX. , but the marginal notes contain many readings of the other Greek trans- lators, which have been largely utilized by Field in his noble work Origenis Hexaplorum que supersunt (2 vols., Oxford, 1875). At the same time and place the New Testament of Philoxenus was Thomas thoroughly revised by Thomas of Harkel or Heraclea,” bishop of of Har- Mabbogh,” who, being driven from his diocese, betook himself to kel. Alexandria and worked there in the convent of St Antony at the Enaton (or Nine-mile-village). This version comprises not only all the books contained in the Péshitta but also the four shorter epistles.” The lapse of another century brings us to the last attempt at a revision of the Old Testament in the Monophysite Church. Jacob, bishop of Edessa, undertook, when living iu retire- Jacob of ment in the convent of Tell- Adda or Teleda,”* in 704-705, to revise Edessa. the text of the Péshitta with the help of the Greek vorsions at his disposal,”” thus producing a curious eclectic or patehwork text. Of this work there are but five volumes extant in Europe, four of which came from the Nitrian Desert and form parts of a set whieh was written in the years 719-720. It would seem, therefore, never to have attained popularity.”8**

One other version remains to be noticed, namely, that used by

13 Assemani, Bibliotheca Orientalis, ii. 23. 14 B.0., ii. 82.

15 Idid., ii. 83; Guidi, Rendiconti della R. Accademia det Lincei, May and June 1886, p. 404.

16 Edited by Cerianiin Monumenta Sacra et Profana, vol. v. fase. 1, pp. 1-40.

17 See Bernstein, Das heilige Evangelium des Johannes, Leipsic, 1853, krit. Anmerkungen, pp. 3, 29; Martin, Introd. a la Crit. Text. du N.T., pp. 160-161.

18 Syriac Manuscripts, Gospels of a pre-Harklensian Version, Acts and Epistles of the Peshitto Version, written (probably) between 700 and 900 A.D., January 1884.

19 See Ceriani, Monumenta, vol. i. fasc. 1: Prolegomena in Edit. Vers. Syr. ex Textu LXX., p. iii. ; Martin, Introd., p. 139, note. 20 B.O., ii. 833-334.

21 Monumenta, vol. vii.: Codex Syro-hexaplaris Ambrosianus, 1874. The first volume of this codex was in the possession of Andreas Masius, but has dis- appeared since his death in 1573. Ht contained part of Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, (four books of) Kings, Chronicles, Ezra (and Nehemiah), Judith, and Tobit (complete?). See Middeldorpf, Codex Syriaco-hexaplaris, Berlin, 1835, who enumerates in his preface the labours of previous editors. Since his time the books of Judges and Ruth have been published by T. Skat Rérdam (Libri Judicum et Ruth secundwm Vers. Syriaco-hexaplarem, Copenhagen, 1859- 61), and Exodus, Numbers, Joshua, | and 2 Kings, by P. de Lagarde (Vet. Test. ab Origene recensiti Fragmenta apud Syros servata quingue, Gottingen, 1880, printed with Hebrew letters). Ceriani has commenced a critical edition in the Monu- menta, vol. i. fase. 1; vol. ii. fasec. 1-4; vol. v. fasec. 1, 2. ; ;

22 See B.0., ii. 90, 334; Bernstein, De Hharklensi N. T. Translatione Syriaca Commentatio, p. 4. fie

23 Or Manbij; according to others, of Germanicia or Mar‘ash. He must not be confounded with an older Thoimas of Germanicia, a Monophysite of the earlier part of the 6th century ; see B.O., ii. 92,326; Kleyn, Jacobus Baradaeiis, p. 43, note 1. 24 See Wright, Catal., p. 34, note.

25 It has been edited by White at Oxford-——the Gospels in 1778, the Acts and Apostolic epistles in 1799, the Pauline epistles in 1803 (the

cpistle to the Hebrews is defective, ending in the middle of chap. xi. 27). The text of the shorter epistles, 2 Peter, 2 and 3 John, and Jude, has been recently reprodueed by phototype from a manuscript dated 1471 — Williams Manuscript. The Syrian Antilegomena Epistles .. . edited by Isaac H. Hall, 1886. Consult also Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy, vol. xxvii. No. viii., ‘On a Syrian MS. belonging to the Colleetion of Archbishop Ussher,” by the Rev. J. Gwynn, D.D. There is a fine MS. of this version, dated 1170, in the university library, Cambridge, Add. MS. 1700. Its peculiar feature is that it has the two epistles of Clement inserted between the catholic epistles and those of St Paul.

26 Probably the modern Tell‘adi or Tell‘ade; see Socin, Paldst. u. Syrien, p. 480; Sachau, Reise in Syrien u. Mesopotamien, p. 459.

27 Wright, Catal., p. 38, col. 1.

28 See Ceriani, Le Edizioni ei Manoscritti delle Versiont Siriache del Vecchio Test., 1869, p. 27, and Monumenta, vol. ii. fase. 1, pp. xi., xii., vol. v. fase. 1, pp. 1-40; Martin, Introd., pp. 230-232, 296 sq.

XXIT. — 104

Malkite version.

Mar- abha I,

Massor-

826

the Christian population of the Malkite (Greek) Church in Pales- tine, written in an Aramaic dialect more akin to the language of the Jewish Targims than to that of the Péshitta.1_ A lectionary containing large portions of the Gospels in this dialect was de- scribed by Assemani in the catalogue of the Vatican library,? studied by Adler,? and edited by Count Fr. Miniscalchi Erizzo under the title of Hvangeliarium Hierosolymitanum (2 vols., Verona, 1861-64). It was written in a

convent at a place called Abid,‘ not very far from Jerusalem, in the year 1030, and the scribe claims to have copied sundry other service-books for the use of his church (see Assemani, op. cit., p. 102). Fragments of other evangeliaria have been published by Land, from MSS. at London and St Petersburg, in his Anccd. Syr., iv. pp. 114-162, 213-222; of the Acts of the Apostles, p. 168; and of the Old Testament (translated from the Greek), pp. 103-110, 165-167, 222-223. According to the same authority (p. 231), the calendar in the Vatican MS, must have been drawn up about the middle of the 9th century. Few, if any, of the extant fragments appear to be of older date. Noldeke places the origin of the version in the 4th or 5th century, certainly not later than 600 (Joc. cit., jth Bey)

All the above revisions of the text of the Syriac Bible according to the Greek are, as we have seen, the work of Monophysites, with the single exception of the last, which proceeded from the Malkites. The Nestorian community obstinately adhered to the old Péshitta, and the solitary attempt made to introduce a revised text among them seems to have been an utter failure. Mar-abha I.,¢a convert from Zoroastrianism, who was catholicus from 536 to 552, went to Edessa, studied Greek there under a teacher named Thomas,’ and with his help translated the whole of the Old Testament into Syriac, and perhaps also the New. ‘This statement rests on the authority of the author of the Kitab al-Majdal (Mari ibn Sulaiman,® about the middle of the 12th century, supplemented and abridged by ‘Amr ibn Matta of Tirhan, who lived towards the middle of the 14th century), of ‘Abhd-isho’, bishop of Nisibis (died 1318), and of Bar-Hebreus (died 1286); and there appears to be no reason to doubt their word.!°

Before quitting the subject of the versions of Holy Scripture we

etic MSS. must devote a few words to the Massoretic MSS. of the Nestorians

«

and Jacobites.14 In the year 1721 Assemani made mention in the Bibliotheca Orientatis (ii. 283), on the authority of Bar-Hebreus in the

Ausar Razé, of a “ versio Karkaphensis, hoc est Montana, qua videlicet incole montium utuntur.” About the meaning of these words scholars disputed, and some searched for MSS. of the alleged versiou, but in vain. At last, N. Wiseman (afterwards cardinal), guided by the light of another passage in the Bibliotheca Orientalis (ii. 499, 500, No. xxii.), recognized in Cod. Vat. cliii. a copy of what he believed to be the Karkaphensian version.!2 Later re- searches, more especially those of the Abbé Martin, have corrected these errors. The MSS. of the Karkaphensian tradition, of which there are ten in our European libraries, are now known to contain a philological and grammatical tradition of the pronunciation and punctuation of Holy Writ and sometimes of other writings. Syria was rich in schools and colleges; most of its towns possessed in- stitutions where instruction was given, more especially to students of theology, in the reading and exposition of the Greek and Syriac Scriptures and their commentators. Such were the great “ Persian school” of Edessa, which was destroyed, on account of its Nestorian tendencics, in 489; the school of Nisibis; of Mahézé near Seleucia ; of the monastery of Dér-K6ni or Dair-Kunna ; of the monastery of Ken-neshré or the Eagles’ Nest, on the left bank of the Euphrates, opposite Jerabis ; of the Daira ‘Ellaita, or monastery of St Gabriel and St Abraham, at Mosul; and many others.) Every such school or college had its teachers of reading and elocution, mahgéyané and makréyané (or makerydnz), who taught their pupils to pronounce, add the vowel-points, and interpunctuate correctly,16

1 See Noldeke, in 2.D.M.G., xxii. (1868), p. 448 sq.

2 MSS. Codd. Bibl. Apost. Vatic. Catalogus, ii. No. xix. p. 70 sq.

3 N. Test. Verss. Syriace Simplex, Philoxeniana, et Hierosolymitana, Copen- lagen, 1789; see also Martin, Introd., p. 237 sq.

4 See Noldeke, loc. cit., pp. 521, 527; Land, Anecd. Syr., iv. pp. 227-229.

5 The remaining literature in this dialect (all of it published by Land) con- sists of a few hymns (pp. 111-113), lives of saints (pp. 169, 170), and theological fragments (pp. 171-210). One fragment (p. 177) contains the title of a homily of John Chrysostom. 6 Properly Mar(i)-abha.

7 B.0., iii. 1, 86; compare ii. 411. 8 See p. 852, note 10.

9 See Hoffinann, Ausziige aus syrischen Akten persischer Martyrer, pp. 6, 7.

10 See B.O., ii. 411-419, iii. 1, 75; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ed. Abbeloos and Lamy, ii. 89; Martin, Introd., pp. 292-294.

11 See Martin, Tradition Karkaphienne ou la Massore chez les Syriens, Paris, 1870 (from Journ. Asiat.), and Introd., pp. 276-291.

12 In the Vatican Catalogue (vol. iii. 287, No. clii.) he translates the words akh mashléemanttha karképhaita by "juxta traditionem verticalen (!): hoc est, Montanorum in Pheenice et Mesopotamia degentium."

13 See his Hore Syriace, Rome, 1828, p. 78: II. Symbole Philologice ad Hist. Versionum Syriac. vet. federis. Particula prima; de versionibus generatim, deinde de Peschito, p. 147; III. Particula secunda ; recensionem Karkaphensem nunc primum describens, We necd not here indicate Wiseman's mistakes, but it is a pity to see them all reproduced even in the third edition of Scrivener's Plain Introduction, 1883.

14 See Hoffmann, Opuscula Nestoriana, 1880, p. v. sq.

15 See, for example, B.O., iii. 1, 341, col. 2 at the foot, and iii. 2, emxxiv. sq.

16 Hoffmann, Opuse. Nestor., p. vii. ; Martin, Introd., p. 289.

SYRIAC LITERS TU Be

[BIBLE VERSIONS,

before they were passed on to the higher classes of the eskolayé badhoké or malléphané, that is, the professors of exegesis and doctors of theology." The more difficult words and phrases of Scripture were gradually collected and written down so as to form " collect- anea,"

lukkaté dha-shémahé, or "fasciculi," kurrasé dha-shémahé, and the union of these composed a kethabha dha-kérayatha, or "book of readings," in which it was shown by means of vowel-points and other signs how each word was to be pronounced and accentuated,18 One such volume in the British Museum (Add. 12138, dated 899) represents the work of a Nestorian student in the convent of Mar Gabriel at Harrin!®; but the other MSS. extant in the different libraries of Europe?® are of Jacobite origin and have a common source, the scholastic tradition of the convent of Kark phétha, or "the Skull," at the village of Maghdal or Mijdal near Résh-'aing or Ras-'ain.1 Such are, for example, Cod. Vat., No. clii., now cliii., described by Assemani (Catal., iii. 287) and Wiseman (Hore Syr., p. 151); Cod. Paris, Ancien fonds 142, described by Zoten- berg (Catal., p. 30, No. 64) and Martin (Z'radition Karkaphienne, p- 36); Cod. Brit. Mus. Add. 7183, described by Rosen (Catal., p. 64, No. xlii.), and 12178, described by Wright (Catal., p. 108), From these and similar MSS., as well as from the words of Bar- Hebreus,"* it appears that the Karképhayé were the monks of the convent of Karkaphétha ; that they were Westerns or Occidentals, therefore Jacobites ; and that one of their chief authorities, if not the actual originator of the compilation, was Jacob bishop of Edessa. Accordingly, the marginal notes indicate various readings from Syriac MSS., from the LXX., and from the Harklensian version, as well as from different fathers and teachers.™ 'To the collection of words and phrases from the Péshitta version is added in several of these MSS. a similar, though shorter, collection from the Hark- lensian version and from the principal works of the Greek fathers which were read in translations in the schools,"4 followed by tracts on different points of orthography, grammar and punctuation. We have spoken above (p. 824) of the deutero-canonical books of Apo- the Old Testament. Other apocrypha may now be noticed morecryphal briefly ; ¢.g., Ps. cli. (in the hexaplar version of Paul of Tella) ; the works, Parva Genesis, or Liber Jubilzorum, a fragment of which has been edited by Ceriani (Ifonumenta, vol. ii. fase. 1, p- ix.); the Testament of Adam"; the History of Joseph and Asyath (Asenath), translated by Moses of Aggél*"; the History of Sanhérib, his Vizir Ahikar or Hikar, and his Disciple Nadhan.% Many similar books exist in Arabic, some of them probably translated from lost Syriac originals,

The names of Daniel and Ezra "the scribe" are prefixed to late apocalyptic works,2® and even to almanacs containing prognostica- tions of the weather, &c.3 The list of apocrypha of the New Testa- ment is also tolerably extensive. We may mention the Prot- evangelium Jacobi ; the Gospel of Thomas the Israelite, or of the Infancy of our Lord ; the Letters of Abgar and our Lord ; the Letters of Herod and Pilate ; prayers ascribed to St John the Baptist; the Transitus, Assumptio, or Kolunois Beatz Virginis, extant in four or five redactions !; Acts of the Apostles, such as St John, St Philip, St Matthew and St Andrew, St Paul and Thecla, and St Thomas®; the Doctrine of St Peter*; and the Apocalypse of St Paul.3 Others

17 Hoffmann, op. cif., pp. xx., xxi. What the whole curriculum of such a student should be, according to the mind of Bar-Hebrzus in the 13th century, inay be seen from the B.0., iii. 2, 937-938 (Nomocanon, translated by J. A. Assemani, in Mai, Seriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., x. cap. vii. § 9, pp. 54-56).

18 Hoffmann, op. cit., pp. vi., vii.

19 See Wright, Catal., p. 101. 20 Martin, Introd., p. 291. i

21 Hoffmann, in Z.D.M.G., xxxii. (1878), p. 745; and in Stade's Zeitschrift fir d. Alttest. Wissenschaft, 1881, p. 159. 22 Martin, op. cif., pp. 122, 129.

23 See Wiseman, op. cit., p. 178; Martin, op. cit., pp. 76, 77, 183; Rosen,

Catal., pp. 65, 66; Wright, Catal., p. 109. Among these occur q r and log. The investigations of Hoffmann (in Stade's Zeitschrift, 1881, p. 159) and Duval

(Journ. Asiat., 1884, p. 560) have made it certain that af designates not the

Péshitta, nor Jacob of Edessa, but one Tabhana (perhaps surnamed "the Beardless"), an eminent teacher at Résh-'aind. His colleague

Sabha was probably the fainous scribe Sabha, who wrote Brit. Mus. Add. 14428, 14430 (724), and 12135, ff. 1-43 (726).

24 Namely, (Pseudo-)Dionysius Areopagita, Gregory Nazianzen (2 vols.), the works of Basil, the epistles of Gregory and Basil, John Philoponus (the Atatrynris), and Severus of Antioch (Homiliz Cathedrales and certain synodical letters relating to the council of Antioch). A fuller list is given by Assemani, B.0., iii. 2, emxxxvii. 'sq.

25 See Phillips, A Letter of Mar Jacob, Bishop of Edessa, on Syriac Orthography, &c., 1869 (Appendix iii. pp. 85-96, issued separately in 1870); Martin, Jacobi epi Edessent Epistola ad Georgium epum Sarugensem de Orthographia Syriaca, &c., 1869.

26 Wright, Catal., p. 1242; see Renan, in the Journ. Asiat., November and Deceniber 1853, p. 427, and Wright, Contributions to the Apocryphal Literature of the New Testament, 1865, p. 61.

27 Wright, Catal., p. 1047; Land, Anecd. Syr., iii. 15-46. ; '

28 Wright, Catal., p. 1207, col. 1; Hoffmann, Ausziige aus syrischen a persischer Madrtyrer, 1880, p. 182; see for the Syriac text Brit. Mus. Orient. 2313, anda MS. in the collection of the S.P.C.K. (now presented by the Society to the university of Cainbridge). 29 Wright, Catal., pp. 9, 1065. _ dhe.

30 Wright, Catal., p. 352, col. 2; Brit. Mus. Orient. 2084, f. 1, Kéthabha dhe- Shtdha@eé dhe-zabhné dhé-Dhanv él nébhiya. 1

31 Most of these are published in Wright's'Contributions ; see also the es of Sacred Literature, 1865, vol. vi. 417, vol. vii. 129; and B. H. Cowper, Apocryphal Gospels, &c., 1867.

32 See Wright, Apocryphal Acts of the Apostles, 2 vols., 1871.

33 Cureton, Ancient Syriac Documents, pp. 35-41. i . .

34 Translated by Zingerle in Heidenheim's Vicrtcljahrsschrift, iv. p. 189 5%

of these apocrypha are extant in Arabic, but the Syriac originals have not yet been recovered. To these may be added such works as the Didascalia Apostolorum, edited (anonymously) by P. de Lagarde in 1854; extracts from the Constitutiones Apostolorum, ascribed to Clement, in the same editor's Religuizx Juris Eccles. Antig., pp. 2-32, 44-60 ; and the Doctrina Apostolorum, in Cureton's Ancient Syriac Documents, pp. 24-35, and in Reliquie Juris Eceles. Antiq. (under the title of Doctrina Addzi), pp. 32-44.

Into a description of the service-books of the Syrian Church in its different sects—Nestorians, Jacobites, Maronites, and Malkites —we cannot here enter.1 The bare enumeration of the various psalters, lectionaries, missals, &c., would far exceed our present limits. The oldest Syriac psalter in our European collections is not earlier than 600 (Brit. Mus. Add. 17110), and the series of lection- aries commences with the 9th century. Of anaphorz or liturgies it would be easy to specify some sixty.2_ The oldest of all is a fragment of the anaphora of Diodorus of Tarsus (in the British Museum, Add. 14699, ff 20, 21), of the 6th century, which has been edited and translated by Bickell.®

Besides the versions of Holy Writ and other works enumerated above, the literature of Syria comprises a vast amount of matter, interesting not merely to the Orientalist but also to the classical scholar, the theologian, and the historian. Some portions of this literature we must now endeavour to pass under review.

The long series of Syrian writers is headed by the name of Bar- Daisan or Bardesaines, "the last of the Gnostics."4 He was born at Edessa on 11th July 154,5 and seems to have been the son of heathen parents of rank. Of the manner of his conversion to Christianity, and how he came to deviate from orthodoxy, we are uninformed. Part of his life he spent at the court of Edessa; then he betook himself as a missionary to the rude mountaineers of Armenia, and finally settled down in the

fortress of Anium, where he prob- ably remained till his death in 222.6 He wrote, we are told, a History of Armenia, which Moses of Chorene used in a Greek trans- lation; Hypomnemata Indica, compiled from the oral information whicli he obtained from an Indian embassy passing through Edessa on its way to the Roman court; and polemical treatises against the polytheism of the heathens and the dualism of Marcion. He and his son Harmonius were poets, and their hymns were greatly admired and imitated. Even Ephraim could not help admitting their merits, whilst he reviled them." Of these works, however, only a few fragments have been preserved by later writers.® The famous dialogue Ilepi eiyapyévns or De Fato, which the voice of antiquity has unanimously ascribed to Bardesanes, was in reality composed by his disciple Philip, and doubtless presents us with an accurate account of his master's teaching. The Syriac title is Keéthabha dhé-Namosé dh' Athrawathé (The Book of the Laws of the Countries).°

Of Simeon bar Sabba'é ("the Dyers' Son "), bishop of Seleucia and Ctesiphon, and Millés, bishop of Susa, we know little beyond the fact of their martyrdom in the great persecution of the Chris- tians by Shabhor or Sapor II., which began in 339-340.2 Simeon is said by 'Abhd-ish6'" to have written "epistles,"?? which seem to be no longer extant. To him are also ascribed sundry hymns,¥ and a work entitled Kéthabha dh' Abhahatha (The Book of the Fathers), which, according to Sachau, treats of the heavenly and earthly hierarchy.44 The writings of Millés are stated by 'Abhd-

and by Perkins, Journal of the American Oriental Society, viii. p. 182 sg.; re- printed in the Journal of Sacred Literature, January 1865, p. 372 sq.

1 The reader is referred to the following works: J. A. Assemani, Codex Liturg. Feclesiee Universe, 13 vols., Rome, 1749-66 ; Renaudot, Liturgiarum Orient. Col- lectio, 2 vols., Paris, 1716; Etheridge, The Syrian Churches, their Early History, Liturgies, and Literature, London, 1846; Badger, The Nestorians and their Rituals, 2 vols., London, 1852; Howard, The Christians of St Thomas and their Liturgies, Oxford, 1864; Denzinger, Ritus Orientalium, Coptorum,

Syrorum, et Armenorum in administrandis sacramentis, 2 vols., Wiirzburg, 1863-64; J. Morinus, Comment. de Sacris Eccles. Ordinationibus, &c., Paris, 1655, Antwerp, 1695; Bickell, Conspectus Rei Syrorum Literaria, chaps. Vii.-x.

2 See a complete list in Bickell's Conspectus, pp. 65-68; comp. also Neale and Littledale's Liturgies of SS. Mark, James, &c., 2d ed., 1869, p. 146, and Appendix i.

3 See his Conspectus, pp. 63, 71-72. The Syriac text is given in Z7.D.M.G., xxvii. (1873), pp. 608-613.

4 See Merx, Bardesanes von Edessa, 1863; Hilgenfeld, Bardesanes, der letzte Gnostiker, 1864; Hahn, Bardesanes Gnosticus Syrorum primus Hymnologus, 1819.

5 So the Chronicon Edessenum, in Assemani, B.O., i. 389, and Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 47; but Elias of Nisibis, as cited by Abbeloos in his notes on Bar-Hebreus, loc. cit., places his birth in 134.

6 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 47.

7 E.g., Opera Syr., ii. 439 D, 553 F, last line.

8 Compare the hymn in the Syriac Acts of St Thomas (Wright, Apocryphal Acts, p. 274); Lipsius, Die Apocryphen-Apostelgeschichten und -Apostellegenden, i. 292 sq.

9 It was first edited by Cureton, with an English translation, in his Spici- legium Syriacum; see also T. & T. Clark's Ante-Nicene Christian Library, vol. xxii. p. 85 sg., and Merx, op. cit., p. 25 sq.

10 See S. E. Assemani, Acta Sanctorum Martyrum, i. 10 sq., 66 sq.

ll Or 'Ebédh-yéshi', bishop of Nisibis, whose bibliographical Catalogue has been edited by Abraham Ecchellensis, Rome, 1653, and by J. 8. Assemani in his B.O., iii. 1. There isan English translation of it by Badger, The Nestorians, ii. 361-379. ib FER wok, Ie BIE

13 Assemani, Acta Sanctorum Martyrum, i.5; Rosen, Catalogue, p. 14, col. 2, ans; Overbeck, S. Ephraemi, &c., Opera Selecta, p. 424.

isho‘ (Joc. cit.) to have been ‘epistles and discourses (mémré) on various subjects”; but of these time has also robbed us.

The name of Jacob (or St James) of Nisibis” is far more widely known. As bishop of that city he was present at the council of Nicwa. He lived to witness the outbreak of war between the Romans and the Persians, and is said to have delivered the city by his prayers from the latter power. He died in the same year (838).1® To him has been ascribed, on the authority of Gennadius of Marseilles!” and of the ancient Armenian version, a collection of homilies, the Syriac text of which has only been recovered and published within the last few years. George, bishop of the Arab tribes, writing to a friend in the year 714, is aware that the author was a certain “Persian sage,” hakkima Pharsayd, and discusses his date and position in the church, but does not think of identi- fying him with Jacob of Nisibis. Later writers are better informed, Bar-Hebreus knows the name of Pharhadh as the author 2 g ‘Abhd-isho‘ gives the older form of Aphrahat or ’Agpadrys”; and he is also cited by name by Elias of Nisibis (11th century) in his Chronicle.” The real author of the twenty-two alphabetical Homi- lics and the separate homily “On the Cluster ” is now, therefore, known to have been Aphraates, a Persian Christian, who took the name of Jacob, and was subsequently famous as “ the Persian sage,” He was probably bishop of the convent of Mar Matthew near Mosul, and composed his works, as he himself tells us, in the years 337, 344, and 345, during the great persecution under Sapor II.%

A junior contemporary of Aphraates was Ephraim,? commonly called Ephraem Syrus, “the prophet of the Syrians,” the most celebrated father of the Syrian Church and certainly one of its most voluminous and widely read writers. He was born of heathen parents at Nisibis, but became the pupil of the bishop Jacob, and finished his education at

Edessa. The incidents of his career are too well known to need recapitulation here. His death took place in June 373.% His works have been largely translated into Greek," Armenian, Coptic, Arabic, and Ethiopic.8 They consist of commentaries on the Scriptures, expository sermons, and a vast mass of metrical homilies and hymns on every variety of theologi- cal subject." Many of these last are composed in his favourite seven-syllable metre, in stanzas of different length; but he frequently used other metres and mixed strophic arrangements. Of Ephraim's commentaries on the Old Testament but little has reached us in the original Syriac.3!_ Most of what has been pub- lished in Zphraemi Opera Syr., vols. i. and ii., is derived from a large Catena Patrum, compiled by one Severus, a monk of Edessa, in 861.3? Of his commentary on the Dia-tessarén, preserved only in an early Armenian translation, we have spoken above (p. 825). In the same language there is extant a translation of his commentary on the Pauline epistles.#3 Vol. ii. of the Roman edition contains some exegetical discourses (pp. 316-395), the number of which has been largely increased by Overbeck (S. Ephraemi Syri, &c., Opera Selecta, pp. 74-104). In the same work will be found two of the discourses against early heresies addressed to Hypatius and Domnus (pp. 21-73; comp. Wright, Catal., p. 766, col. 2), two tracts on the love of the Most High (pp. 103-112), and the epistle to the

19 Kal Zuplns rédov elda cal dorea mdvra, NioiBw, Hidparny diaBds ; Lightfoot, S. Ignatius, i. 480.

16 This date is given by the Chronic. Edess. (B.0., i. 395), by Dionysius of Tell- Mahré (ibid., p. 17), by the so-called Liber Chaliphurum (in Land, Anecd. Syr., i. 4), by Elias of Nisibis (see Abbeloos's note in Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eecles., ii. 31), and inferentially by Ephraim (Bickell, S. Ephraemi Syri Carmina Nisibena, p. 20). 17 In his De Viris Illustribus, written before 496.

18 Published by N. Antonelli (Rome, 1756) with a Latin translation, and re- printed in Gallandius, Bibl. Vet. Patrum, vol. v. The mistake has passed (no doubt through the Arabic) to the Ethiopic translation of

the fifth homily; see Zotenberg, Catal. des MSS. Ethiopiens de la Bibl. Nat., p. 248, col. 2, No. 17.

19 See De Lagarde, Anal. Syr., p. 108; The Homilies of Aphraates, ed. Wright, p.19; Ryssel, Hin Brief Georgs, Bischofs der Araber, 1883.

20 Chron. Eccles., ii.34. 21 B.O., iii. 1,85. 22 See Wright, Aphraates, p. 38.

23 Wright, Aphraates, pp. 440 and 507 ; comp. Sasse, Prolegomena in Aphr. Sap. Pers. Sermones Homileticos, 1878 ; J. Forget, De Vita et Scriptis Aphr., Sap. Persx, 1882; Bickell in Thalhofer, Bibliothek der Kirchenvdter, 102 and 103, where eight of the homilies are translated. 24 More correctly Aphrém.

25 See the Acta S. Ephraemi in the Roman ed. of his works by Peter Mobarak (Petrus Benedictus) and the Assemanis, pp. xxiii.-lxiii.; and comp. Bickell, Conspectus, p. 26, note 11. y : ;

**26 See the various authorities cited by Assemani, B.0., i. 54, note; Bickell, Carmina Nisibena, p. 9, note; Gabriel Cardahi, Liber Thesauri de Arte Poetica Syrorum, 1875, pp. 9-13. ; **

27 Even Photius speaks with respect of the rhetorical talent of Ephraim, so far as he could judge of it from these imperfect translations (ed, Bekker, p. 160). 28 See B.O., i. 149 sq. 29 Tbid., i. 63-149 ; iii. 1, 61. :

30 Compare, for instance, Bickell, Carm. Nisib., Introd., p. 31. The Syrian line consists of a certain fixed number of syllables, four, five, six, seven, eight, twelve, &c. In the older writers there is no intentional rime, which first appears, we believe, among the Westerns, in Antonius Rhetor (9th century). Real metres, like those of the Greeks and Arabs, coupled in the latter case with rime, were wholly unknown to the Syrians. Hebrew poetry barely rises, as regards outward form, beyond the level of Arabic rimed prose ; the Syrians, whilst destitute of rime, at least imposed upon themselves the restraint of a limited but fixed number of syllables.

31 Genesis and Exodus in Cod. Vat. cx., and five leaves of Genesis in Cod. Vat. exx. (see Assemani, Catal., iii. p. 125).

32 Cod. Vat. ciii., Brit. Mus. Add. 12144. Severus used for Genesis a com- mentary different from that in Cod. Vat. cx.; see Bickell, Conspectus, p.19; comp. Pohlmann, S. Ephraemi Syrt Commentariorum in s. scripturam textus in

14 Kurzes Verzeichniss der Sachau'schen Sammlung syrischer Handschriften, | codd. vatt. manuscriptus et in edit. Rom. impressus, 2 parts, 1862-64.

4

Berlin, 1885, p. x. and No. 108, 3.

33 See Bickell, Conspecius, p. 20.

Jacob of Nisibis.

Aphra-

ates.

Ephraim

Syrus.

828 SYRIAC LITGea aT He [408 cEnr.-

monks who dwelt in the mountains (pp. 113-131). Of metrical | (divine) chastisement, and on the invasion of the Huns,"! ip writings the same book contains (pp. 339-354) the hymns against | which he says: "The North is distressed and full of wars: and Julian the Apostate (pp. 1-20), and the conclusion of the hymns | if Thou be neglectful, O Lord, they will again lay me waste, If on Paradise (wanting in the Roman ed., vol. iii. 598).1 Other | the Huns, O Lord, conquer me, why do I seck refuge with the metrical homilies were published by Zingerle*; but far more im- martyrs? If their swords lay me waste, why do I lay hold on Thy

portant, as having a real historical interest, are the Carmina great Cross? If Thou givest up my cities unto them, where ig the Nisibena, or ‘Hymns relating to the City of Nisibis,” edited by | glory of Thy holy Church? A year is not yet at an end since they Bickell in 1866. Thcse poems, which deal in great part with the | came forth and laid us waste and took my children captive ; and history of Nisibis and its bishops and of adjacent cities (such as | lo, a second time they threaten our land that they will humble it” Anzit or Hanzit, Edessa, and Harran), were composed, according to | Now the invasion of the Huns took place in 395,18 and this poem Bickell (Introd., p. 6 sg.), bctween the years 350 and 370 or there- | must have been written in the following year (396). The few re- abouts.? A large quantity of hitherto unpublished matter is also maining writings of Cyrillona, composed in various metres, haye contained in Lamy, S. Ephraemi Syri Hymni et Sermones, vol. i. » | been edited by Bickell in the 7.D.If G., xxvii. p. 566 sq. and 1882, and vol. ii., 1886,—e.g., fifteen hymns on the Epiphany, a | translated by him in Thalhofer’s Bibliothek, 41, pp. 9-63, Bickel] discourse on our Lord, several metrical homilies (in particular for | is inclined to identify this Cyrilléna with another writer of the Passion week, the Resurrection, and New or Low Sunday), hymns | same period, ‘Abhsamya, a priest of Edessa, Ephraim’s sister’s ‘Ahh. on the Passover or unleavened bread (De Azymis) and on the Cruci- | son and a pupil of Zenobius ; but his reasons do not seem to us fixion, acts of Ephraim from the Paris MS. Ancien fonds 144, | sufficient. The Chron. Edess. (B.0., i. 401) states that ‘Abhsamyi commentaries on portions of the Old Testament, other metrical composed his hymns and discourses on the invasion of the Huns homilies, and hymns on the nativity, the Blessed Virgin Mary, | in 404; and Dionysius of Tell-Mahré (B.0., i. 169) speaks of him Lent, &. The so-called Testament of Ephraim‘ has been printed | in the year 397. Bar-Hebreus is less precise as to the date: after in the Opera Greca, ii. pp. 395-410 (with various readings at p. mentioning the death of Chrysostom (in 407), he adds that 433), and again by Overbeck (op. cit., pp. 187-156).5 about this time Theodore of Mopsuestia died (429) and ‘Abhsamya Ephraim’s Notwithstanding his vast fecundity and great popularity as a | flourished, who ‘composed many discourses in the (heptasyllabic) pupils. theological writer, Ephraim seems not to have had any pupils | metre of Mar Ephraim” on

the invasion of the Huns.! That worthy to take his place. In the Testament we find nientioned ‘Abhsamya may have taken the name of Cyrillona at his ordination with high commendation the names of Abhi, Abraham, Simeon, | is of course possible, but it seems strange that none of these three Mara of Aggél, and Zenobius of Gézirta,® to whom we may add | writers should have mentioned it, if such were the case. On Bar- Isaac’ and Jacob.? Two, on the other hand, are named with de- | Hebreus’s statement regarding the metre which he used in his cided reprobation as heretics, namely, Paulonas (IlavAwvas) or | discourses we do not insist ; he might easily make a mistake in Paulinus (IIavAivos) and Arwadh or Arwat.® Of these, Abha is | such a matter. cited by later writers and compilers as the author of a commentary During the latter part of the 4th century, too, there lived in Abbot on the Gospels, a discourse on Job, and an exposition of Ps. xlii. | the island of Cyprus the abbot Gregory, who appears to have been Gregory, 9.1° Paulonas or Paulinus is probably the same who is mentioned | sent thither from some monastery in Palestine as the spiritual by ‘Abhd-isho‘” as having written “madhrdshé or metrical homi- | head of the Syriac-speaking monks in the island.“ He cherished lies, discourses against inquirers, disputations against Marcion, friendly relations with Epiphanius, afterwards bishop of Salamis and a treatise concerning believers and the creed.” Zenobius, | or Constantia (367-403), and a monk named Theodore. ‘To these who was deacon of the church of Edessa, according to the same | are addressed several of his discourses and letters; others are authority,” composed treatises against Marcion and Pamphylius (2), general exhortations to the monks under his charge,” The dis- besides sundry epistles. He was also the teacher of Isaac of | courses seem to be only portions of a work on the monastic life, Antioch, of whom we shall speak shortly. which has not come down to us in a complete form, the “ book” Balaiand Better known than any of these disciples of Ephraim are two | mentioned by ‘Abhd-isha‘ in B. 0. , lii, 1,191. In the letters he Cyril- writers who belong to the close of this century and the beginning | addresses Epiphanius as an older man speaking with authority lona. of the next, Balai and Cyrillona. The date of Balaior Baleus, | to a younger; it is to be presumed, therefore, that they were chorepiscopus (as it seems) of the diocese of Aleppo, is fixed by his | written before Epiphanius

became bishop. being mentioned by Bar-Hebreus ™ after Ephraim, but before the With the 5th century commences the native historical literature Lives of time of the council of Ephesus (431). Acacius, bishop of Aleppo, | of Syria. Previous to this time there existed martyrologies and saints whom he celebrates in one of his poems, must therefore, as Bickell | lives of saints, martyrs, and other holy men, drawn up, in part at and says,“4be the same Acacius who had a share in converting Rabbala | least, to meet the requirements of the services of the church. Such martyrs. to Christianity,!° and died at an extreme old age (it is said 110 are, for example, the ancient martyrology in a manuscript of 411%; years) in 432. His favourite metre was the pentasyllabic, which | the Doctrine of Addai, in its present shape a product of the latter is known by his name, as the heptasyllabic by that of Ephraim, | half of the 4th century ; the Hypomnemata of Sharbél; and the and the twelve-syllable line by that of Jacob of Séragh. Some of Martyrdoms of Bar-samyd, Bishop of Edessa, and the Deacon Habbith, his poems have been edited by Overbeck in the often cited collection | which all belong to about the same period.* This sort of legendary S. Lphraemi Syri, &e., Opera Selecta, pp. 251-336, namely, a poem | writing was carried on to a much later date.*? The History of on the dedication of the newly built church in the town of Ken- | Béth Sélokh and its Martyrs, for instance, can hardly have been neshrin (Kinnesrin), five poems in praise of Acacius, the late composed before the 6th century, if so early”®; and the Acts of bishop of Aleppo, the first and eighth homilies on the history of | Afari must be still later.29 No larger collection of such documents Joseph, specimens of prayers, and a fragment on the death of had, however, been attempted before the time of Maratha, bishop Maratha Aaron.’® Cyrillona composed a poem “on the locusts, and on | of Maiperkat,®° a man of much weight and authority, who be ay = ; 5 ic | twice sent by the emperor Theodosius II. on embassies to the perkat. 1 : fact of in; acrosti : A 5 showtice Lice RS gra ae ihe eee eee i ae Persian monarch Yazdegerd I., and presided at the councils of

samya,

tism of Constantine (pp. 355-361) is certainly spurious (Bickell, Zoe. cit.). Seleucia or Ctesiphon, under the catholics Isaac and Yabh-alaha 2

5. P. Ephraemt Syrt Sermones duo, Brixen, 1869 (see B.O., i. 149, col. 1, No. 31); Monumenta Syriaca ex Romanis Codd. collecta, i. 4 (B.0., loc. cit., No. 30). 17 See Wright, Catal., p. 671, col. 1, No. Gh

Zingerle has rendered many of Ephraim's works into German, e.g., Die heilige 18 See Chron. Edess. in B.O., i. 400, No. xl.; Dionysius of Tell-Mahré, ibid., Muse der Syrer: Gestinge des h. Kirchenvaters Ephraem, 1833 ; Gesainge gegen die | note 1; and an anonymous continuer of Eusebius in Land's Anecd. Syr., i. 8, Gribler iber die Geheimmnisse Gottes,.1834; Festkrinze aus Libanons Garten, 1846; | 1.2. Joshua Stylites (ed. Wright, p. 10, 1. 1) specifies A. Gr. 707, which begam Des h. Kirchenvaters Ephraem ausgewdhlte Schriften, aus d. Griechischen und | with October 395. Syrischen uebersetzt, 6 vols., 2d ed., 1845-47 ; Die Reden des h. Ephraem gegen die 19 See also Wright, Catal., pp. 670-671 3 Overbeck, S. Ephraemi, &c., Opera Ketzer, 1850; Reden des h. Ephraem des Syrers tiber Selbstverldugnung und einsame | Selecta, pp. 379-381 : Bickell, Conspectus, p. 84; Cardahi, Liber Thes., pp. 27-29, Lebensweise, mit einem Briefe desselben an Einsiedler, 1871. Translations into | who places his death in 400. English have been attempted, though with less success, by Morris (Select Works 20 See his Conspectus, p. 21; Thalhofer, Bibl., 41, pp. 18, 16 (in the note). of S. Ephraem the Syrian, 1847)and Burgess (Select Metrical Hymns and Homilies 21 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eceles., i. 133. of Ephraem Syrus, 1853; The Repentance of Nineveh, &c., 1853). 22 See B.O., i. 170-171. 23 Ibid., i. 172. 3 Comp. Bickell, Conspectus, p. 28, note 21. 4 See B.O., i. 141, No. 8. 24 Brit. Mus. Add. 12150, f. 252, edited by Wright in the Journal of Sacred 5 That it has been interpolated by a later hand is shown by the long and | Literature, 1865-66, viii. 45, 423: see the Acta Sanctorum, October, vol. xil. purposeless digression on Moses and Pharaoh (Op. Gr., ii. 405) and the story | 183-185. It can hardly be later than the middle of the 4th century. of Lamprotate at the end (ibid., p. 409), as also by the stanzas regarding the 25 Edited in part by Cureton, in his Ancient Syriac Documents, from MSS. of vine which Ephraim saw growing out of his mouth when he was an infant | the 5th and 6th centuries in the British Museum ; and in full by Phillips from (ibid., p. 408). 6 B.O., i. 88, 144. 7 Ibid., i. 165. a MS. of the 6th century at St Petersburg, 1876. See also Lettre d' Abgar ou 8 See Wright, Catal., p.

992, col. 2, No. 36. Histoire de la 2 abel des Edesséens, translated from te eee ee : a = o Lee Ss Venice, 1868 ; Lipsius, Die Edessenische Abgar-Sage, 1880; Matthes, Die Eesse- ° Also written of Ql | = Arntf and fies of= Uri. See Overbeck's text, nische "Agar Rage, 1883: Mosinger, Acta SS. dag en Edessenorum Sarbelii, &¢., p. 147, and the variants, p. xxx. The name seems to have been hopelessly | No. 1, 1874. corrupted by the scribes. 10 See Wright, Catal., pp. 831, col. 1, and 1002, col. 1. 26 See Cureton, Ane. Syr. Doc., and Lipsius, Die Edess. Abgar-Sage, p. 41 3%

LL B.O., iii. 1, 170. 12 Ibid., i. 168 ; iii. 1, 43. 27 See Hoffmann, Ausziige aus syr. Akten pers. Martyrer. :

18 In a passage cited by Assemani, B.0., i. 166. Cardahi (Liber Thes., pp. 28 See Mosinger, Monumenta Syr., ii. 683, and Hoffmann, op. cit., p.45. 4 25-27) places Balai's death in 460, but gives, as usual, no authority. This seems 29 See Abbeloos, Acta S. Maris, 1885, p. 47, where, as N dldeke has pointe too late. out, the writer confounds Ardashér, the first king of the Sasdnian dynasty,

14 Conspectus, p. 21; Thalhofer, Bibliothek der Kirchenvéter, 41, p. 68. with the last king of that line, Yazdegerd IIJ., who was overthrown by the

1 Overbeck, S. Ephraemi Syri, &c., Opera Selecta, p. 162, 1. 20. Arabs in the battle of Nihawand, a.H. 21 (642 a.D.). 'cated a 16 See also Wenig, Schola Syriaca, Chrestomathia, pp. 160-162; Bickell, Con- 30 Called by the Greeks Martyropolis, in Syriac Médhinath Sahdé, and by spectus, p. 46, note 5; Thalhofer, Bibliothek, 41, p. 67, and 44. the Arabs Maiyafarikin.

ai RR ae

resto About this time evil days came upon the Christian church in

&. schoo] by the order of the

| Mopsuestia. Hence Ibas in his letter to Mari speaks of him as

) Alexander of Hiera polis in 432, complains bitterly of his persecution |of the orthodox (7.e., the Nestorians). He died in August 435.2

5TH CENT.] ow it &C LhiTEeRartt & eB 829

respectively.' He is said, too, to have been a skilful physician.? To him 'Abhd-ishd' assigns the following works,3—'* A 'book of martyrdoms, anthems and hymns on the martyrs, and a translation of the canons of the council of Nicea, with a history of that council." The last named of these he undertook at the request of Isaac, catholicus of Seleucia, who died in 416.4 The canons which pass under his name are those of the council of Scleucia in 410.5 But his great work was the Book of Martyrs, containing accounts of those who suffered for the Christian faith under Sapor II., Yaz- degerd I., and Bahram V., to which he prefixed two discourses on the glory of the martyrs and on their torments. One of these narratives claims to have been recorded by an eye-witness, Isaiah, the son of Hadhbo (or Hadhabha), of Arzan CApfavyrv}), one of the Persian king's horsemen.® Portions of this work survive in the British Museum in MSS. of the 5th and 6th centuries, as well as in some of later date both there and in the Vatican. They have been edited by S. E. Assemani in the first volume of the Acta Sanctorum Martyrum, 1748.7 The commentary on the Gospels mentioned by Assemani is really by Maratha, the maphridn of Taghrith (Tekrit), who is also the author of the anaphora or liturgy.? Of him we shall have occasion to speak afterwards (see p. 838 infra). It is possible too that some of the above-mentioned Acts may belong not to the work of Maritha but to that of Aha, the successor of Isaac in the see of Seleucia, who likewise wrote a history of the Persian martyrs and a life of his teacher 'Abhda, the head of the school in the monastery of Dor-Koni or Dair-Kunna (where the apostle Mari was buried).9

Hibha (Grecized Ibas),*8 who in his you the translators of Theodore's works in the Persian school.24 This, with his letter to Mari the Persian 25 and other utterances, led to

of Ephesus (449),26 and Nonnus was substituted in hisroom. He was restored, however, at the end of tw don, and sat till October 457, when he was succeeded by Nonnus,"7 who in his turn was followed by Cyrus

in 471. Besides the writ- ings above-mentioned, ‘Abhd-isho’ attributes to-Ibas *8 “a comment- ary on Proverbs, sermons and metrical] homilies (madhrashé), and a disputation with a heretic ” ; but none of these appear to have come down to us.

_ During this stormy period the name of Acacius 1s mentioned as the author of certain epistles, his life, which is referred by Socrates (bk. vii is thus briefly recorded in ‘the Martyrologium Romanum Gregorit XIII. (Malines, 1859), 9th April: “Amide in Mesopotamia sancti

Acatii episcopi, qui pro redimendis captivis etiam ecclesix vasa

conflavit ac vendidit.” The said captives were Persian subjects,

.- 21) to the year 422,

, for his letters were thought worthy of a commentary by Mari, bishop of Béth

About the same time roge one of the stars of § Isaac, commonly called the Great, of Antioch.33

of Amid, but went as a young man to Edessa, where he enjoyed the teaching of Zenobius, the disciple of Ephraim.*! Thence he removed to Antioch, where he lived as pricst and abbot of one of the many convents in its immediate neighbourhood. In his younger days he would seem to have travelled farther than most of his countrymen, as it is stated that he visited Rome and other cities.25 With this agrees what is recorded by Dionysius of Tell-Mahré*6 as to his having composed poems on the secular games celebrated at Rome in 404, and on the capture of the city by Alaric in 410, which shows that he took a more than ordinary interest in the Western capital. Isaac died in or about 460, soon after the destruction of Antioch by the earthquake of 459, on which he wrote a poem. ” Isaac’s works are nearly as voluminous and varied as those of Ephraim, with which indeed thcy are often confounded in MSS. and in the Roman edition.38 They were gathered into one corpus by the Jacobite patriarch John bar Shishan or Susanna, who began in his old age to transcribe and annotate them, but

was hindered from completing his task by death (1073).39 Assemani has given a list of considerably more than a hundred metrical homilies from MSS. in the Vatican.? Of these part of one on the Crucifixion was edited by Overbeck,# and another on the love of learning by Zingerle.” But it has been left to Bickell to collect and translate all the extant writings of this Syrian father and to commence the pub- lication of them. Out of nearly 200 metrical homilies his first volume contains in 307 pages only fifteen, and his second brings

23 B.0., 1.199. 24 Ibéd., iii. 1, 85; Wright, Catal., pp. 107, col. 2, 644, col. 1.

25 See Labbe, Concil., ix. 51; Mansi, vii. 241.

26 The so-called Ayorpixh clvodos or latrocinium Ephesinum. Of the first session of this council a portion is extant in Syriac in Brit. Mus. Add. 12156, ff. 51b-61a (written before 562), containing the acta in the cases of Flavian of Antioch and Eusebius of Doryleum. Add. 14530 (dated 535) contains the second session, comprising the acta in the cases of Thas, his nephew Daniel of Harran, Trenezus of Tyre, Aquilinus of Byblus, Sophronius of Tella or Constantina, Theodoret of Cyrrhus, and Domnus of Antioch. These documents have been translated into German by Hoffmann, Verhandlungen der Kirchenversammlung zu Ephesus am xxii. August CDXLIx., &c., 1873 ; into French by Martin, Actes du Brigandage d’ Ephése, 1874 ; and into English (with the assistance of a German scholar) by the Rev. S. G. F. Perry, The Second Synod of Ephesus, 1881. See also Martin, Le Pseudo-Synode connu dans l Histoire sous le nom de Brigandage d’ Ephése, &c., 1875; and Perry, An Ancient Syriac Document purporting to be the record in tts chief features of the Second Synod of Ephesus, &e. » part i., 1867. Mr Perry printed a complete edition of the Syriac text at the Clarendon Press, Oxford, but no one seems to know what has become of the copies. The copies of the English translation were purchased at the sale of Mr Perry’s library by Mr Quaritch. 27 B.O., i. 257.

28 Ibid., iii. 1, 86. These are of course utterly ignored by Assemani in vol, i.

29 Ibid., iii. 1, 51. 30 Ibid., i. 195-196.

31 Beth Hardashér or Béth Hartashér, in Persian Weh-Ardashér or Beh-Ard- ashér, Arabicized Bahurasir, close by Seleucia, on the right bank of the Tigris. See Hoffmann, Verhandlungen der i a fe Ephesus, &c., p. 98, note 160. « B.0., tii. 1, 172.

33 Ibid., i. 207-234; Bickell, in Thalhofer's Bibliothek, No. 44, and Conspectus, pee,

B 34 That he is identical with Isaac, the disciple of Ephraim (as some have sup- posed), seems wholly unlikely. He may possibly have seen Ephraim in the flesh, but this is very doubtful, considering the date of his own death. Even Jacob of Edessa appears to have got into some confusion on this subject (see Wright, Catal., p. 603, col. 2). 35 Land, Anecd. Syr., iii. 84,

36 B.0., i. 208-209 ; see Dionysti Telmahharensis Chronici liber I., ed. Tullberg, 1850, p. 52, and Husebtt Canonum Epitome ex Dionysii Telm. Chronico petita, by C. Siegfried and H. Gelzer, 1884, p. 29. The difficulty was first cleared up by Scaliger, who in his Thesaurus Temporum, Animadv. No. MDLXIV., proposed

Syria. Paul of Samosata, Diodore of Tarsus, and Theodore of Mopsuestia had paved the way for Nestorius. The doctrines of these writers were warmly espoused by many of the Syrian theo- logians; and the warfare raged for many years in and around Edessa, till it ended in the total destruction of the great Persian emperor Zeno (488-489).!° Rabbiala, a native of Ken-neshrin (Kinnesrin), whose father was a heathen | priest but his mother a Christian, was converted to Christianity _ by Eusebius, bishop of Ken-neshrin, and Acacius, bishop of Aleppo. | He voluntarily gave up all his property, forsook his wife, and

became a monk in the convent of Abraham near his native city. On the death of Diogenes, bishop of Edessa, he was appointed his successor (411-412). His admiring biographer depicts him as a | model bishop, and he certainly appears to have been active and |_ energetic in

teaching and preaching and attending to the needs of | the poor. In the theological disputes of the day he seems at first | to have sided, if not with Nestorius, at least with those who were averse to cxtreme measures, such as John, patriarch of Antioch, and his partisans; but afterwards he joined the opposite party, and became a warm champion of the doctrines of Cyril, which he Supported at the council of Edessa (431). From this time onward) he was a staunch opponent of Nestorianism, and even resorted to such an extreme measure as burning the writings of Theodore of

‘the tyrant of Edessa,” and Andrew of Samosata, writing to

| Of the writings of Rabbala but little has come down to us. There is a sermon extant in manuscript, enjoining the bestowing of alms jon behalf of the souls of the dead and prohibiting all feasting on jthe occasion of their commemoration. Another sermon, preached jat Constantinople, is directed against the errors of Nestorius. 4 There are also extant canons and orders addressed to the monks and clergy of his diocese,!5 and a number of hymns, of which Over- beck has printed some specimens.!6 He also rendered into Syriac

ion of forty-six of his letters, written in Greek ‘to priests and mperors and nobles and monks ®;” but of these only a few remain, ‘¥-g., to Andrew of Samosata, condemning his treatise against the twelve anathemas of Cyril; to Cyril, regarding Theodore of Mop- suestia 2; and to Gemellinus of Perrhé, about certain monks and bther persons who misused the sacred elements as ordinary food.”2

1 See B.O., i. 174 sq.: Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles, i. 121, ii. 45, 49. 2 B.0., iii. 1, 73, and note 4. 3 Ibid., lee. cit. 4 Tbid., i. 195. 5 See Lamy, Conciliwm Seleucia: et Ctesiphonti habitum anno 410 3 comp. S. E. Assemani, Codd. MSS. Orient. Bibl. Palat. Medic., p. 94. CRB OP T15:) 7 See also B.O., i. 181-194. There is a German translation by Zingerle, Echte ficten der h. Mdrtyrer des Morgenlandes, 2 vols., 1836. 8 B.O., i. 179. ! 9 Ibid., ii. 401, iii. 1, 369 ; also Abbcloos, Acta S. Maris, pp. 72 sq., 88.

10 B.0., i. 353, 406. 1 See his biography in Overbeck, S. Ephraemi, &c., Opera Selecta, p. 159 sq., pecially pp. 170-181; translated by Bickell, in Thalhofer's Bibliothek, Nos. (02-104. 12 B.O., 1. 403. 13 Codd. MSS. Orient. Bibl. Palat. Medic., p. 107.

1+ See Overbeck, S. Ephraem, &., Opera Selecta, pp. 239-244: translated b onkhaptov. 37 B.O., i. 211. 38 See Bickell, Conspectus, p. 23, note. hickell, 15 TE pp. 210-221. ue 16 Thide ae 245-248, 362-378. y 39 B.O., i, 214-215, ii. 355 ; Bar-Hebraeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 447.

V7 See Wright, Catal., p. 719. 40 B.O., i. 214-234. 41 -S. Ephraemi Syri, &e., Opera Selecta, pp. 379-381. 18 Comp. the letter of Cyril to Rabbila, Overbeck, op. cit., pp. 228-229. 42 Monumenta Syriaca, i. 13-20; see also some extracts in Zingerle's Chrestom.

4 19 See Overbeck, op. cit., p. 200. 20 Ibid., p. 222. 21 Idid., p. 223, a fragment.

Syr., pp. 299 sq., 387 sq. Zingerle has translated large portions of the homilies *2 Ibid., pp. 230-238. The shorter fragment should follow the longer one.

on the Crucifixion into German in the Tiibinger Theolog. Quartalschrift, 187 Oh ls Further, Cardahi, Liber Thes., pp. 21-25.

Rabbiila was succeeded in the see of Edessa (485) by Ihibha or Ibas.

, bishop of Amid, Acacius 9 +The great event of of Amid.

yriac literature, Isaac of He was a native Antioch.

Dadha.

Simeon the Stylite.

Dadh- ish'.

Bar-

sauma of in defending and propagating their peculiar tenets.

Nisibis.

Narsai.

830

us in 858 pages only as far as No. 37.1 Some of these poems have a certain historical value, such as the second homily on fasting, probably written soon after 420,? the two homilies on the destruction of the town of Béth Hir by the Arabs (c. 457),8 and the two against persons who resort to soothsayers.4 Others possess some interest as bearing on the theological views of the author, who combats the errors of Nestorius and Eutyches.° One of the longest and most wearisome is a stupendous poem of 2137 verses on a parrot which proclaimed dys 6 Geds in the streets of Antioch.6 Another on repentance runs to the length of 1929 verses. In prose Isaac seems to have written very little ; at least Bickell" mentions only " various questions and answers, an ascetic narrative and ascetic rules."

Concerning Isaac's contemporary Dadha we know but little.§ He was a monk from the ncighbourhood of Amid, who was sent by the people of that city to Constantinople on account of the ravages of war and famine, to obtain remission of the taxes or some similar relief, and was well received by the emperor. He is said to have written about three hundred tracts on various topics connected with the Scriptures and on the saints, besides poems (madhrashé).

Here, too, we may record the name of Simeon the Stylite, who died in 459 or soon after.2_ The Monophysites contend that he held their theological views, and accordingly we find in a MS. of the 8th century a letter of his to the emperor Leo regarding Theodoret of Cyrrhus, who had come to him and tried to pervert him to the opinions of the Dyophysites,! and in another MS., of about the same age, three letters to the emperor Leo, to the abhot Jacob of Kaphra Réhimi, and to John I., patriarch of Antioch, all tending to prove that he rejected the council of Chalcedon." A third MS., of the 6th century, contains certain

“precepts and admonitions” addressed by him to the brethren.!* There is extant in very old MSS. a Life of Simeon, full of absurd stories, which has been edited by 8. E. Assemani in the deta Sanctorum Martyrum, vol. ii. 268 sq. At the end of it (p. 394) there is a letter by one Cosmas,” priest of the village of Panir, written in the name of his congregation to the Stylite, promising implicit obedience to all his precepts and orders, and requesting his prayers on their behalf; but there is nothing whatever to show that this Cosmas was the author of the Life or had any share in writing it.

About this time we find Dadh-ishd‘, the catholicus of Seleucia (421-456),16 composing his commentaries on the books of Daniel, Kings, and Bar-Sira or Ecclesiasticus.” But the chief seat of Nes- torian scholarship and literary activity was still the Persian school of Edessa, whcre Bar-sauma and other teachers were actively engaged Bar-sauma, if we inay believe the scurrilous Monophysite Simeon of Béth Arsham,}8 was originally the slave of one Mara of Béth Kardi,® and bore at Edessa the nickname of Sahé beth kénatya.2? He was at Edessa in 449, when his expulsion was called for by the rabble.4 In what year it actually took place we do not know, but we afterwards find him busy in the East under the catholicus Babhoyah or Babueus (from about 457 to 4838)? and his successor Acacius (from about 484 to 496), during which period he was bishop of Nisibis.2 Of his personal character and work this is not the place to attempt to form a judgment ; but the reader should beware of placing implicit trust in the statements of bitter and unscrupulous theological oppo- nents like Simeon of Béth Arsham, Bar-Hebreus, and Assemani. Bar-sauma does not appear to have written much, as ‘Abhd-ishd‘*4 mentions only parenetic and funeral sermons, hymns of the class called turgémé,*> metrical homilics (madhrashé), letters, and an anaphora or liturgy.

A fellow-worker with him both at Edessa and Nisibis was Narsai (or Narsé), of Ma‘allé‘tha or Ma‘althaya,?* whom Simeon of Béth Arsham calls “the Leper,’®” whereas his co-sectarians style him “the Harp of the Holy Spirit.” He was especially famous as a writer of hymns and other metrical compositions, his favourite metre being that of six

syllables.*8 He fled from Edessa to escape the wrath of the bishop Cyrus (471-498), probably in the year 489, and died

1 S. Isaaci Antiocheni, Doctoris Syrorum, Opera Omnia, ed. G. Bickell, part i., 1873; part ii., 1877. We hope soon to receive the remaining parts at his hands.

2 B.O., i. 227; Bickell,i. 280. 3 B.0., i. 225; Bickell, i. 207,227. 4 Bickell, ii. 205 sg. 5 See Bickell's translations in Thalhofer's Bibliothek, 44. 6 Bickell,i. 85. 7 Opera, i. p. viii. 8 See Land, Anecd. Syr., iii. 84. 9 See Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Ficeles., i. 142, 181, and note 2; B.O., i. 252,405. 10 Wright, Catal., p. 951, No. xxix. 11 Ibid., p. 986, No. 33, 12 Ibid., p. 1153, col. 1. 18 E.g., Cod. Vat. elx., tran- scribed 473; Brit. Mus. Add. 14484, of the 6th century. 14 B.0., i. 237.

15 Assemani is also mistaken in supposing that the Life was composed _at the request of Simeon, the son of Apollonius, and Bar-Hatar (?), the son of Udhan (Uranius?). These are merely the persons who paid for the writing of this portion of Cod. Vat. clx. 16 See Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 57, note 1.

17 B.O., iii. 1, 214. 18 Tbid., i. 351.

19 On the left bank of the Tigris, over against Jazirat Ibn 'Omar.

20 "The Swimmer, or Bather, among the Reeds," meaning " the wild boar." See Hoffmann, Verhandl. d. Kirchenversam. zu Ephesus, &c., p. 91, note 114.

21 Hoffmann, op. cit., p. 14; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eceles., ti. 55, note 1.

22 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 57, note 1.

28 See B.O., iii. 1, 66, note 7, compared with i. 351, note 4, and ii. 407, note 2.

24 Ibid., iii. 1, 66. b 25 Sec Badger, The Nestorians, ii. 19.

26 Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 208 ; Badger, The Nestorians, i. 174.

27 Perhaps in a spiritual sense only, though Assemani thinks otherwise ; see B.O., i. 352 and note 5, 354; iff. 1, 63. 28 B.O., iii. 1, 65, note 6.

[5cH cent.

at Nisibis early in the next century.% Narsai's w merated by 'Abhd-ishd', consist of commentarie four books of the Pentateuch, J oshua, Judges, and Ecclesiastes Isaiah and the twelve minor prophets, J eremiah, Ezekiel, and Daniel, twelve volumes of metrical discourses (860 in number) 31 9 liturgy, expositions of the order of celebrating the Eucharist 'and of baptism, parenetic and funeral sermons, hymns of several sorts," and a book entitled On the Corruption of Morals.

Mari the Persian has been already mentioned as the correspondent M of Ibas. Besides the commentary on the epistles of Acacius above, p. 829), he wrote a commentary on the book of Daniel and a controversial treatise against the magi* of Nisibis. Acacius, catholi- cus of Seleucia (c. 484-496), composed discourses on fasting and on of Seley the faith, as also against the Monophysites, and translated into Per. oa sian for the king Kawadh a treatise on the faith by Elisha, bishop of Nisibis, the successor of Bar-sauma.®5 Assemani tries hard to cleanse Acacius from the stain of Nestorianism, but, as Abbeloos remarks, '"'vereor ne Athiopem dealbare voluerit ; nam omnia tun Jacobitarum tum Nestorianorum monumenta, que ipse recitat contrarium testantur." Mikha or Micah, another member of the Mikha band of exiled Edessenes,?" became bishop of Lashém.28 He wrote a commentary on the books of Kings, a discourse on his predecessor Sabhr-ish6', another on a person whose name is written Kntropos,® and a tract entitled The Five Reasons of the Mautzbne. © 'To these

orks, as enu- s8 on the first

writers may be added two others, —Yazidadh,*! who is also said to Yazidadh.

have belonged to the Edessene school and to have compiled ‘a book of collectanea (Zukkatz),” # and Ara, who wrote a treatise against the magi or Persian priesthood, and another against the

followers of Bardesines with the contemptuous title of Habhshosh-yatha or “ the Beetles.” 48 .

The Persian school at Edessa was, as we have already hinted, Trans- the chief seat of the study of Greek during the early days of the lations Syrian literature. Of the most ancient translators we know no- from thing; but the oldest MSS. are Edessene, viz., the famous MS. in the Greek. British Museum, Add. 12150, dated towards the end of 411, and the equally well known codex at St Petersburg, written in 462. The former contains the Recognitiones of Clement, the discourses of Titus of Bostra against the Manichees, the Theophania of Eusebius, and his history of the confessors in Palestine ; the latter, the Ecclesiasti- cal History of Eusebius. Now, as the text presented by these MSS, has evidently passed through the hands of several successive scribes, it secms to follow that these books were translated into Syriac in the lifetime of the authors themselves, or very soon after, for Euse- bius died in 840 and Titus in 871. Very likely the one or the other may have had a friend at the chief seat of Syriac learning who was willing to perform for him the same kind office that Rabbula under- took for Cyril.#* A little later on our information becomes fuller and more exact. Ma‘na,*a Persian by race,“ from the town of Beth Mani Hardashér, was resident at Edessa in the earlicr part of the 5th century, and is mentioned by Simeon of Beth Arshaim among the distinguished Nestorian scholars whom he holds up to ridicule.”

His nickname was Shathé ketma, “the Drinker of Ashes.” Ma’na devoted himself to the task of translating into Syriac the comment- aries of Theodore of Mopsuestia during the lifetime of that great theologian, who did not die till 429. He must, however, have with- drawn from Edessa at a comparatively early period, as he was bishop of Persis prior to 420, in which year (the last of his reign) Yazde- gerd I. made him catholicus of Seleucia, in succession to Yabh-alaha.” He had, it appears, translated a number of books from Syriac into

29 See Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 773 B.0., ii. 407. 30 B.O., iii. 1, 65, 66.

31 Some of these are probably contained in the Berlin MSS. Sachau 174-176 (mémré dha-médhabbéraniithd, on the life of our Lord) and 219 (two poems on Joseph, and two others).

32 Two of them are often found in the Nestorian Psalter. See, for example, Brit. Mus. Add. 7156 (Rosen, Catal., p. 12, col. 2, No. 3a, c) and Add. 17219 (Wright, Catal., p. 134, col. 2, No. 3 a, c). ;

33 Méeghtishé, from magu, mag, the Persian priesthood, the head of whom in each district was the magupat, mogpet, or mobedh. See Noldeke, Geschichte der Perser und Araber zur Zeit der Sasaniden, p. 450. 34 B.O., iii. 1, 171. ee Ibid., iii. 1, 389. Elisha is called by some authorities Hosea ; ibid., ii. 407, iii. 1, 429. 36 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 74, note 2.

37 B.O., i. 352-3538. His enemies gave him the nickname of Dagon. *

38 Now Lasim,a short distance south-west of Daktk or Ta'iik, in Béth Garmal; see Hoffinann, Ausziige, p. 274.

39 Vocalized Kentropos or Kantropos; B.0., iii. 1,170, 1. 2.

40 Meaning probably the division of the Psalter into three kathismata (Bickell, Conspectus, p. 92); see B.O., iii. 1, 71, note 2.

41 For Yazed-dadh or Izad-dadh, like Yazed-panah, Yazed-bozedh; see Hofl- mann, Ausztige, p. 88, No. 796. 42 B.0., iii. 1, 226. '

43 Of Ara we seem to know absolutely nothing; his very florwit is uncertain, and he may have belonged to the previous century; B.0., iil. 1, 230. .

44 See above, p. 829, and compare Merx, " De Eusebianz Historie Eccles. Ver: sionibus, Syriaca et Armeniaca," in Atti del IV. Congresso Internazionale degli Orientalisti, Florence, 1880, i. 199 sq., especially

pp. 201-202. It may here be mentioned that the literature of Armenia is largely indebted in its earliest days to that of Syria, not only for the translation of Eusebius's Eccles. History, but for such works as the Doctrine of Addai and the Homilies of Aphraates, wrongly ascribed to Jacob of Nisibis. .

45 So the name is written by Mari bar Shélémdn, whom Assemani follows, B.O., iii. 1, 376, pronouncing it, however, Ma'né or Maanes. Elias of Nisibis also gives Ma'nd (Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 58, note 2); but Bar-Hebreus himself (loc. cit.) has Maghna, which Abbeloos Latinizes Magnes.

46 His Persian name is unknown to us. 47 B.O., i. 352.

48 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 55, 63. 49 B.0., ii, 401.

ari the (see Persian,

Acaciug

aa

cl i

—

6TH CENT.] king.! successor, Péréz.3

John of Béth Garmai, afterwards bishop of Béth Sari (or Sérai 2)

and Abraham the Mede, disciples of Narsai; Mikha, afterwards bishop of Lashém in Béth Garmai; Paul bar Kakai (or Kaki), after-

wards bishop of Ladhan in al-Ahwaz ; ‘Abhshota (?) of Nineveh, and others,—who are expressly said to have “taken away with them”

(appek ‘amméhon) from Edessa, and disseminated throughout the

East, the writings of Theodore and Nestorius.5> Ibas himself was one of these translators in his younger days (see above, p. 829). About the same time with Ma‘na’s translations began the Aristo- telian studies of the Syrian Nestorians. To understand and trans-

late the writings of their favourite Greek theologians, Paul of

Samosata, Diodore of Tarsus, Theodore of Mopsuestia, and Nestorius himself, not to mention Theodoret § of Cyrrhus, required a consider- able knowledge of the Aristotelian logic. Probus (IIpéBos, in Syriac Prébhos, Prébha, or Prébhz), who trans- lated and commented on the Iept épunvelas,” and probably treated in a similar manner other parts of the Organon.® It is not easy to fix his date precisely. ‘Abhd-ishd‘® makes him contemporary with Ibas and another translator named Kimi. If the Berlin MS. Sachau 226 can be trusted, he was archdeacon and archiater at Antioch. Hoffmann 1° has assigned reasons for

supposing him not to be anterior to the Athenian expositor Syrianus (483-450 2).

Whilst the Nestorians were thus making rapid progress all over the East, another heresy was spreading in the West. Eutyches had found followers in Syria, among others Bar-sauma the archi- mandritc, a man famous for his piety and asceticism," who repre- sented the abbots of Syria at the second council of Ephesus," and was afterwards condemned by the council of Chalcedon.13 He died in 458.14 His life was written by his disciple Samuel, in much the same style as that of Simeon Stylites, and is extant in several MSS. in the British Museum.! ™ His memory has always been held in the greatest reverence by the Jacobites. The Armenians, accord- ing to Assemani,'* keep his commemoration on the 1st of February, the Syrians and Copts on the 8d. The decisions of the council of Chalcedon produced an immediate and irreparable breach in the Eastern Church ; and the struggle of the rival factions was carried on with desperate fury alike at Constantinople, Antioch, and Alex- andria. In Syria the persecution of the Monophysites was violent during the years 518-521, under the emperor Justin, and again in 535 and the following years, under Justinian, when they seemed in a fair way of being completely crushed by brute force.

The first name to be mentioned here, as belonging to both the 5th and 6th centuries, is that of Jacob of Sérigh, one of the most celebrated writers of the Syrian Church," 'the flute of the Holy Spirit and the harp of the believing church." There are no less than three biographies of him extant in Syriac,—the first, by his namesake Jacob of Edessa 18; the second, anonymous; the third, a lengthy metrieal panegyrie, said to have been written for his commemoration * by a disciple of his named George.*! This, how- ever, seems, from the whole tone of the composition, to be unlikely, and Bickcll is probably right in supposing the author to be George,

a ee

1 Ibid., iii. 1, 876. 2 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 68. 3 B.O., ii, 402 ; ii. 1, 877, 4 Ibid., i. 851-854. 5 B.O., i. 850; iii. 1, 226, note 8.

6 lis Eranistes (of which the fourth book is a demonstratio per syllogismos of the incarnation) appears as the name of an author in ‘Abhd-isho’s Catalogue (B.0., iii. 1, 41), under the form of Eranistatheos, or something similar.

7 See Hoffmann, De Hermeneuticis apud Syros Aristoteleis, 1869. MSS.,—Berlin, Alt. Best. 86, 9, 10; Brit. Mus. Add. 14660. The translation may possibly be even anterior to Probus.

8 Berlin, Sachau 226, 1, is described as * Isagoge des Porphyrius,von Probus, Presbyter, Archidiacon, und Archiater in Antiochien” ; and in the same M&.,

| No. 8, is “‘Erkliérung der Analytica von Probus,” with an “ Einleitung in d.

Erkl. d. Anal. von Probus,” No. 7. 9 B.O., iii. 1, 85.

10 Op. cit., pp. 144-145. The name of Fabri or Phubrius, which appears as a variation of Probus in Hottinger (B.0.), in Assemani (B.0., iii. 1, 85, note 5), in Renan (De Philosophia Peripatetica apud Syros, p. 14), and in other books on this :ubject, has nothing to do with that of Probus, but is an error for Kuwairi, Abii Ishak lbrahim, a Syro-Arabian Aristotelian who lived about the beginning of

| the 10th century. See the Fihrist, p. 262; Ibn Abi Osaibi‘ah, i. 234; Wiisten-

feld, Gesch. d. Arab. Aerate, p. 24, No. 62, “ Futheri oder Fubri.” ll All “‘hypocrisy” in the eyes of Assemani, B.O., ii. 2; “scelestissimus

pseudo-monachus,” p. 9.

| sammlung zu Ephesus, &c., p. 4, 1. 89.

12 Bar-Hebraus, Chron. Eccles., i. 161-165; Hoffmann, Verhandl. d. Kirchenver- 13 Bar-Hebreeus, loc. cit.,179. 14 Ibid., 181.

15 B.0., ii. 296, also p. exlviii. No. 8; Wright, Catal., p. 1123.

16 B.0., ii. 9; comp. Wright, Catal., p. 175, col. 2, No. 8, and p. 811, No. ecclxxxvii.

17 B.O., i. 288 sq.; Matagne, in Acta Sanctorum, October, vol. xii. 824, 927 ; Abbeloos, De Vita et Scriptis S. Jacobi Batnarum Sarugi in Mesopotamia epi, 1867; Bickell, Conspectus, p.25; Bickell in Thalhofer, Bibl. d. Kirchenvater, 58 ;

_ Martin, "Lettres de Jacques de Saroug aux Moines du Couvent de Mar Bassus,

et & Paul d'Edesse," in Z..D.M.G., xxx. (1876), p. 217. 18 B.O., i. 286, 299; Martin, in Z.D.M. G., XXX. p. 217, note 8. 19 Abbeloos, op. cit., p. 811. 20 See Wright, Catal., p. 811, No. ccclxxxix. The Armenians hold it on 25th

September, the Jacobites on 29th June, 29th J uly, and 29th October.

#1 Abbeloos, op. cit., p. 24; B.O., i. 286, 340.

SY RrAC LItTttRAT RE

Persian (Pahlavi), and thus probably ingratiated himself with the However, he soon fell under the royal displeasure, was degraded from his office, and ordered to retire to Persis, where he resumed his former duties," and so incurred the anger of Yazdegerd's Ma'na's work, the exact extent of which is not known to us, was carried on and completed by other members of the Persian school,—such as Acacius the catholicus and Yazidadh :

Hence the labours of

831

bishop of Sériigh, a contemporary of Jacob of Edessa.22 Jacob was born at Kurtam, "a village on the river Euphrates," probably in the district of Sérigh, in 451. His father was a priest, and, as his parents had been childless for many years, his birth was regarded as a reward

for their alms, prayers, and vows. Whether he was educated at Edessa or not, he soon acquired a great reputation for learning and eloquence. He appears to have led a life of quiet work and study, and to have devoted himself in particular to liter- ary composition. He became periodeutes of Haura in Sérigh, whence we find him writing to the Christians of Najran, and to the city of Edessa when threatened by the Persians.“ As perio- deutes he is mentioned in eulogistic terms by Joshua the Stylite 4 (503). In 519, when sixty-eight years old, he was made bishop of Batnan, the chief town of Sériigh, where he died on 29th Novem- ber 521. Jacob’s prose writings are not numerous. A liturgy is ascribed to him, and an order of baptism, the former of which has been translated by Renaudot,® the latter edited by J. A. Assemani.?” Further, he composed six festal homilies, one of which has been published by Zingerle,”* who has also translated the whole of them into German ™ ; a discourse showing that we should not neglect or despise our sins®°; another for the night of Wednesday in the third week of Lent#! ; and some short funeral sermons.2 To him we also owe a life of Mar Hannina (died in 500), addressed to one Philotheus.> Of his letters a considerable number have been pre- served, particularly in two MSS. in the British Museum, Add. 14587 and 17163, ff. 1-48.34 Of these Martin has edited and translated the three epistles to the monks of the convent of Mar Bassus at Harim,®> with a reply by the monks, and another letter to Paul, bishop of Edessa, from all of which it is evident that Jacob always was a Monophysite, and continued such to his death.2° The letter to Stephen bar Sadh-ailé is given, with an English ver- sion, by Frothingham*®’; and that to the Himyarite Christians of Najran has been edited and translated by Schroter in the Z.D.ILG., xxxi. (1877), p. 360 sg. It belongs to the year 519 or 520.38 Ac- cording to Bar-Hebreus,® he also wrote “a commentary on the six centuries of Evagrius, at the request of Mar George, bishop of the (Arab) tribes, who was his disciple.” As George, bishop of the Arab tribes, was a contemporary of Jacob of Edessa, this state- ment seems to rest on some misapprehension; at all events no such work now exists. The paucity of Jacob’s prose writings is more than compensated by a flood of metrical compositions, mostly in dodecasyllabic verse, or the four-syllable line thrice repeated. “ He had,” says Bar-Hebreus,* “seventy amanuenses to copy out his metrical homilies, which were

7604! in number, besides com- mentaries and letters and odes (madhrashé) and hymns (sughyatha).” Of these homilies more than the half have perished, but nearly 300 are still preserved in European collections.“ Very few of them have as yet been published, though many of them are by no means devoid of interest.“ Indeed Jacob is on the whole far more readable than Ephraim or Isaac of Antioch.

Very different from the gentle and studious bishop of Séragh Philo- was his contemporary and neighbour, the energetie and fiery Philo- xenus cf xenus of Mabbogh. Aksénaya or Philoxénus was a native of Tahal, Mab- somewhere in Béth Garmai, and studied at Edessa in the time of bogh. Ibas.** He was ordained bishop of Hierapolis or Mabbogh (Manbij) by Peter the Fuller, patriarch of Antioch, in 485, and devoted his

22 See Bickell in Thalhofer, Bidl., 58, p. 198. 23 Wright, Catal., p. 520, Nos. 15, 16. 24 Chronicle, ed. Wright, ch. liv. Joshua wrote in 507. 25 B.O., 1. 300-305. 26 Liturgg. Orientt. Collectio, li. 8356. 27 Cod. Liturg. Eccl. Univers., ii. 809, iii. 184. 28 Mon. Syr.,i.91. 29 Sechs Homilien des h. Jacob von Sarug, 1867. 30 Wright, Catal., p. 826, No. 16; comp. the Index, p. 1293, col. 1. 31 Ibid., p. 844, No. 32. 32 Tbid., p. 864, col. 2. 38 Jbid., p. 1118, No. 14; p. 1126, No. 16. 34 Ibid., Nos. delxxii., delxxiii., and comp. the Index, p. 1298, col.1. 35 Ibid., p. 602, col. 2.

36 See Martin, Z.D.M.G., xxx. (1876), pp. 217-219. F Peek

37 See his Stephen bar Sudaili the Syrian Mystic and the Book of Hierotheos, Leyden, 1886, p. 10 sq. ae Ye ; .

38 See Guidi, La Lettera di Simeone Vescovo di Béth- Arsdm sopra + Martiri Omeriti, 1881, p. 11. 39 Chron. Eccles., i. 191. 40 Loe. cit.

41 Jacob of Edessa says 763, of which that on the chariot of Ezekiel was the first, and that on Mary and Golgotha the last, which he left unfinished; see B.O., i. 299; Abbeloos, De Vita, &c., p. 312.

42 Comp. B.O., i. 305-389 ; Abbeloos, op. cit., pp. 106-113. ‘

43 Zingerle has given extracts in the Z.D.M.G., xii., xiii, xiv., xv., and xx., and in his Chrest. Syr., pp. 860-886. The homily on Simeon Stylites has been published by Assemani in the Acta S. Martyrum, ii, 280 sq.; that on virginity, fornication, &c., by Overbeck, S. Ephraemi Syri, &c., Opera Selecta, p. 885 sq. ; that on Alexander the Great (perhaps spurious) by Knés, Chrest. Syr., 1807, p. 66 sq. (there is a German translation by A. Weber, Des Mér Yakiib Gedicht tiber den glaubigen Kénig Alexsandris, 1852); on Habbibh and on Gurya and Shamina, Edessene martyrs, with a stghithaé on Edessa, by Cureton, Ancient Syriac Documents, pp. 86-98; on Sharbél by Mésinger, Mon. Syr., ii. 52, and on the chariot of Ezekiel, with an Arabic translation, ibid., p. 76; two on the Blessed Virgin Mary by Abbeloos, De Vita, &c., pp. 203-301; on Jacob at Bethel, on our Lord and Jacob, the church and Rachel, Leah and the synagogue, on the two birds (Lev. xiv. 4), on the two goats (Lev. xvi. 7), and on Moses' vail, (Exod. xxxiv. 38) by Zingerle, Mon. Syr., i. 21-90; on Tamar by J. Zingerle, 1871; on the palace which St Thomas built for the king of India in Heaven (perhaps spurious) by Sehrdoter, in 27.D.M.G., xxv. 821, xxviii. 584; on the fall of the idols by Martin, in 2.D.M.G., xxix. 107; on the baptism of Constantine (perhaps spurious) by Frothingham, in the Atti della Accademia dei Lincei for 1881-82 (Rome, 1882). Bickell has translated into German (in Thalhofer, Bibl., 58) the first homily on the Blessed Virgin Mary, that on Jacob at Bethel, on Moses' vail, and on Gurya and Shamiina. Some of Jacob's homilies are extant in Arabic, and even in Ethiopic. His prayer asa child see in Overbeck, op. cit., p. 382. 44 B.0., i. 853.

life to the advocacy of Monophysite doctrine. Twice he visited Constantinople in the service of his party, and suffered much (as was to be expected) at the hands of its enemies, for thus he writes in later years to the monks of the convent of Séniin near Edessa : "What I endured from Flavian and Macedonius, who were arch- bishops of Antioch and of the capital, and previously from Cal- endion, is known and spoken of everywhere. I keep silence both as to what was plotted against nie in the time of the Persian war among the nobles by the care of the aforesaid Flavian the heretic, and also as to what befell me in

Edessa, and in the district of the Apameans, and in that of the Antiochians, when I was in the con- vent of the blessed Mar Bassus, and again in Antioch itself; and when I went up on _two occasions to the capital, like things were done to me by the Nestorian heretics.”! He succeeded at last in getting rid of his cnemy Flavian in 512, and in the same year he presided at a synod in which his friend Severus was ordained patri- arch of Antioch.? His triumph, however, was but short-lived, for Justin, the successor of Anastasius, sentenced to banishment in 519 fifty-four bishops who refused to accept the decrees of the council of Chalcedon, among whom were Severus, Philoxenus, Peter of Apamea, John of Tella, Julian of Halicarnassus, and Mara of

SYRIAC LITFEGEARTt Hs

aad

[6TH CENT,

and illustrated with a commentary chiefly derived from that of Theodosius, 2!

At the same time with Jacob of Sériigh and Philoxenus the same neighbourhood, lived one of the earliest and best of the the Syrian historians, the Stylite monk Yéshii’ or Joshua. know nothing but that he originally belonged to the great convent of Zuknin near Amid, that at the beginning of the 6th century he was residing at Edessa, and that he dedicated his Chronicle of the Persian War ™ to an abbot named Sergius. His approving mention of Jacob* and Philoxenus™ shows that he was a Monophysite. Joshua’s Chroniele would have been entirely lost to us, had it not been for the thoughtfulness of a later writer, Dionysius of Tell. – Mahré (d. 845), who incorporated it with his account of the reign of Anastasius in the smaller redaction of his own History. Tt was first made known to us by Assemani (Bibl. Orient., i. 260-283), who gave a copious analysis with some extracts; and it is now generally acknowledged to be one of the best, if not actually the best, account of the great war between the Persian and Byzantine empires during the reigns of Kawadh and Anastasius (502-506),2 To the indefatigable Abbé Martin belongs the credit of publishing

and in Joshua

Of him we Stylite,

the editio princeps of the Syriac text.26 The work was written in the year 507, immediately after the conclusion of the war, .as is shown by the whole tone of the last chapter ; and it is much to be regretted that the author did not carry out his intention ofcon- tinuing it, or, if he did, that the continuation has perished,

The interest which Jacob of Sériigh took in every branch of Simeon literature was the means of bringing into notice a _hymn-writer of Kakaya, humble rank, the deacon Simeon Kukaya, a potter by trade, as his name denotes. This man lived in the village of Géshir," not far from the convent of Mar Bassus, and while he worked at his wheel composed hymns, which he wrote down on a tablet ora scroll, as might be convenient. Jacob heard of him from the monks, paid him a visit, admired his hymns, and took away some of them with him, at the same time urging the author to continue his labours.® A specimen of these Kukdyathé has been preserved in the shape of nine hymns on the nativity of our Lord, Brit. Mus. Add. 14520,

a MS. of the 8th or 9th century.

About the same time flourished Simeon, bishop of Béth Arsham,* Simeon commonly called Dardshé Pharsdya or 'the Persian Disputant," of Beth This keen Monophysite *! was one of the few representatives of his Arshim. creed in the Persian territory, and exhibited a wonderful activity, mental and bodily, on behalf of his co-religionists, traversing the

Amid. Philoxenus was exiled to Philippopolis in Thrace,? and afterwards to Gangra in Paphlagonia, where he was murdered about the year 523. The Jacobite Church commemorates him on 10th December, 18th February, and 1st April. Philoxenus, however, was something more than a man of action and of strife :, he was a scholar and an elegant writer. Even Assemani, who never misses an opportunity of reviling him,* is obliged to own (B.0., ii. 20) "'seripsit

Syriace, si quis alius, elegantissime, atque adeo inter optimos hujusce liugue scriptores a Jacobo Edesseno collocari meruit." Unfortunately scarcely any of his numerous works have as yet been printed. To him the Syriac Church owed its first revised translation of the Scriptures (see above, p. 825); and he also drew up an anaphora® and an order of baptism." Portions of his commentaries on the Gospels are contained in two MSS. in the British Muscum.® Besides sundry sermons, he composed thirteen hontilies on the Christian life and character, of which there are sevcral ancient copies in the British Museum. Of his controversial works the two most important arc a treatise On the Trinity and the Inearnation in three discourses,? and another, in ten discourses, showing "that one (Person) of the Trinity became incarnate and suffered"; but there are many smaller tracts against

the Nestorians and Dyophysites.! His letters are numerous and may be of some value for the ecclesiastical history of his time. Assemani enumerates and gives extracts from several of them,!2 but none of them have as yet been printed in full, with the exccption of that to Abi Nafir of Hérta (al-Hirah),!3 to the monks of Tell- 'Adda,!4 and to the priests Abraham and Orestes of Edessa regard- ing Stephen bar Sadh-ailé.%

Babylonian and Persian districts in all directions, and disputing with Manichecs, Daisanites, Eutychians, and Nestorians.22 After one of these disputations, at which the Nestorian catholicus Babhai (498-503) was present,*3 Simeon was made bishop, a dignity which he had declined on several previous occasions, He visited Herta (al-Hirah) more than once, and died during his third residence at Constantinople, whither he had come to see the empress Theodora.%

Stephen Contemporary with Jacob of Sériigh and Philoxenus of Mabbogh | Assemani states, on the authority of Dionysius of Tell-Mahre, that bar was the pantheist Stephen bar Sidh-ailé,16 with whom both of | he was bishop of Béth Arsham from 510 to 515, but the Syriac Stdh- these writers corresponded," and regarding whom the latter wrote | passage which he quotes merely gives the floruit of 510. If, how-ailé,' the above-mentioned letter to the priests Abraham and Orestes. | ever, the statements of John of Ephesus, who knew him personally,

This man was the author of the work entitled The Book of Hiero- theus, which he published under the name of Hierotheus, the teacher of St Dionysius of Athens,‘8 and exercised a strong infiuence on the whole pseudo-Dionysian literature.!9 Theodosius, patriarch of Antioch (887-896), wrote a commentary on the Hierotheus,? Bar-Hebreus too made copious extracts from it, which he arranged

1 [bid., ii. 15; comp. the mention of him at Edessa by Joshua the Stylite in 498, Chronicle, ed. Wright, chap. xxx. 2 Ibid., pp. 17, 18.

3 IIe was living there when he wrote to the monks of Séniin in 522; B.O., ii. 20.

4 “Scelestissimus hereticus” (B.0., ii. 11); “ flagitiosissimus homo ” (p. 12) ; “ecclesiam Dei tanquam ferus aper devastaverit” (p. 18).

5 B.0., ti. 23 sq.; Wright, Catal., Index, p. 1315.

6 Renaudot, ii. 310; B.0., ii. 24. 7 B.O., ii. 24,

8 Add. 17126, dated 511, and Add. 14534, probably of equal age,

§ The Vatican MS. (Assemani, Catal., iii. p. 217, No. Cxxxvii.) is dated 564; see B.O., ii. 25 sq.

10 B.0., ii. 27 sq. The Vatican MS. is dated 581; that in the British Muscum Add. 12164 is at least as old.

i See B.O., ii. 45, Nos. 15-17, and Wright, Catal., p. 1315.

12 B.O., ii. 30-46. Others may be found in Wright, Catal., p. 1315.

13 See Martin, Grammatica Chrestomathia et Glossarium Lingue Syriace, p.71.

14 Ign. Guidi, La Lettera di Filosseno ai Monaci di Tell ‘Addé (Teleda), Reale Accadeinia dei Lincei, anno cclxxxii., 1884-85, Rome, 1886. In the Ethiopic literature there is extant a book entitled Filékséyis, i.¢., Philoxenus, from the name of its author, “ Philoxenus the Syrian,

bishop of Manbag” (see, for ex- ample, Wright, Catal., p.177). It is a series of questions and answers on the Paradise of Palladius, like the Syriac work described in Wright, Catal., p. 1078.

15 See B.O., ii. 30; Frothincham, Stephen bar Sudaili, p. 28 sq.

16 So in a MS. of the 7th century (Brit. Mus. Add. 17163; see Wright, Catal.,

524), The MSS. of Bar-Hebreeus (Chron. Eccles., i. 221), have Cemars O, or a da710703. Asseinani writes ca chs (Sudaili).

****Hunt the deer” can of course be only anickname of the father. See Frothingham, op. cit., p. 56 sq. 17 B.O., i. 303, ii. 32 ; comp. Bar-Hebrzeus,**

Les Chron. Eccles., i. 221. 18 B.0., ii. 120, 290, 302; Frothingham, op. cit., p. 63 sq. The existence of

any good Greek text seems to be very doubtful, see Frothingham, p. 70.

HMB AOS, ii: 0,13 Frothingham, op. cit., pp. 2 and 81.

20 See MS. Brit. Mus. Add. 7189 (apparently the very copy used by Bar- Hebreeus); Rosen, Catal., p. 74 sq.; Frothingham, op. cit., p. 84.

be correct, he was probably made bishop before 503, the date of Babhai’s deccase. His death must have taken place before 548, in which year Theodora departed this life. Besides an anaphora,® we possess only two letters of Simeon, which are both of consider- able interest. The one is entitled On Bar-sauma and the Seet of the Nestorians*” ; it deals with the origin and spread of Nestorianism in the East, but from the bitterest and narrowest sectarian point of view.*° The other, which is much more valuable, is addressed to Simeon, abbot of Gabbila,®® and treats of the persecution of the Christians at Najran by Dha Nuwias, king of al-Yaman, in the year 523.49 It is dated 524, in which year the writer was himself at Hérta (al-Hirah),**

21 Brit. Mus. Or. 1017 (Wright, Catal., pp. 893-895) ; Bibl. Nation., Anc. fonds 138 (Zotenberg, Catal., pp. 175-176) ; Frothingham, op. cit., p. 87.

22 Hd. Wright, p. ix. 23 Ibid., chap. liv. 24 Ibid., chap. XXX.

25 See, for example, the use that has been made of it in De Saint-Martin's notes to Lebeau's Hist. du Bas-empire, vol. vii. Fr

26 Chronique de Josué le Stylite, 1876, in vol. vi. of the Abhandlungen fir d. Kunde d. Morgenlandes. Another edition was published by Wright, The Chronicle

of Joshua the Stylite, 1882. 7 sa he OF faadbany

28 Sce the narrative by Jacob of Edessa in Wright, Catal., p. 602; and comp. B.0., i. 121, ii. 322; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 191.

29 Wright, Catal., p. 363. a

30 A village near Seleucia and Ctesiphon ; Bar-Hebraus, Chron. Eceles., ii, 85.

31 Assemani has tried to whitewash him, but with little success; B.0., i. 342 sq. If he had had before him the account of Simeon by John of Ephesus (Land, Anecd. Syr., ii. 76-88), he would probably have abandoned the attempt In dis- gust. See Guidi, La Lettera di Simeone Vescovo di Béth-Arsdm sopra 1 Martirt Omeriti, 1881, pp. 4-7. J 409

32 See Bar-Hebrzeus, Chron. Eceles., ii. 85, i. 189; comp. B.0., i. 341, i. 409, iii. 1, 403. 33 Land, Anecd. Syr., ii. 82, 1. 12. 34 Ibid., li. 87, last line.

35 B.O., iii. 1, 427. 36 Ibid., i. 345. 7 Ibid. ae

38 First printed in B.O.,i. 346 sq., from the Vatican MS. cxxxv. (Catal., iii. 21).

39 Al-Jabbil. Or is it Jabbul, on the east bank of the Tigris, between au Nu‘maniyah and Wasit? of

40 First printed in B.0., i. 364 sq., according to the text offered by Jonny Ephesus in his History. There is, however, a longer and better text in a Me.

6TH CENT. | (Kofpaos),! bishop of Tella or Constantina. his widowed mother, who put him twenty. He would not, however, be hindered from expelled by Justin in 521.

of the cruel persecutor Ephraim, patriarch of Antioch (529-544), His life was written by his disciple Elias (of Dara ?).2

elsewhere. have been published by Lamy.4 His creed or confession of faith, addressed to the convents in and around Tella, is found in Brit.

in Cod. Vat. clix. (Catal., iii. Smith, Catal., p. 463, No. 20). Another of the unfortunate Monophysite bishops whom Justin

of the name. He was banished, with his syncelli and with Isidore, bishop of Ken-neshrin (Kinnesrin), in the first instance to Petra, but was afterwards allowed to go to Alexandria,® where he died in about eight years.6 According to Assemani (Bibl. Orient,, ii. 52; comp. p. 169), Mara wrote a commentary on the Gospels. It would seem, however, from a passage of Zacharias Rhetor,’ that Mara

merely prefixed a short prologue in Greek to a copy of the Gospels

which he had procured at Alexandria,® and that this MS. contained

(as might be expected) the pericope on the woman taken in adultery (John viii, 2-11). That the Syriac translations of the prologue

and pericope were made by himself is nowhere stated.

E Yet another sufferer at the hands of Justin was John bar Aphtonya i. (Aphthonia, his mother’s name).9 He was abbot of the convent of St Thomas at Seleucia (apparently in Pieria, on the Orontes),

which was famous as a school for the study of Greek literature.

Being expelled thence, he removed with his whole brotherhood to

_ Ken-neshré (the Eagles' Nest) on the Euphrates, opposite Europus | (Jerabis), where he founded a new convent and school that more

than rivalled the parent establishment, for here Thomas of Hera-

_ clea, Jacob of Edessa, and others received their training in Greek

| letters.° His Life, written by a disciple, is extant in Brit. Mus.

i Add. 12174." According to Dionysius of Tell-Mahré, as quoted

| by Assemani (Joc. cit.), he died in 588. He wrote a commentary

} on the Song of Songs, some extracts from which are preserved in

| a Catena Patrwm in the British Museum (Add. 12168, f. 138a), a

| considerable number of hymns,!? and a biography of Severus of

| Antioch,' which must have been his last work, as he survived

Severus only about nine months.

| _ We now come to the man who was the real founder of the

| Jacobite Church in Asia, and from whom the Jacobites took their

name, Jacob bar Theophilus, surnamed " Burdé'ana"!4, because | his dress consisted of a barda'tha or coarse horse-cloth, which he never changed till it became quite ragged.!® What Assemani | could learn regarding him he has put together in the Bibi. Orient.,

) 11. 62-6916; since then our sources of information have been largely

| lucreased, especially by the publication of the Ecclesiastical History

) of John of Ephesus by Cureton and of the same writer's Lives in

Land's Anecd. Syr., i117 On a careful study of these is based Kleyn's excellent book Jacobus Baradziis, de Stichter der Syrische

Monophysictische Kerk, 1882. Jacob was the son of Theophilus

bar Ma'na, a priest of Tella or Constantina, and the child of his

old age. After receiving a good education, he was entered at the

f monastery of Pésilta (or the Quarry),!8 close by the village of Gum-'metha in Mount Izala (or Izla),!9 not far from Tella. About 527-

j of the Museo Borgiano and in Brit. Mus. Add. 14650, from which it has been _tcedited (with an excellent introduction, translation, and notes) by Guidi, La

Lettera di Simeone, &c., Reale Accademia dei Lincei, 1881. To this work the

_ Teader is referred for all the documents bearing on the subject,

'|_1 The name of the father is also given as Curcus and Cyriacus.

Barsus (B.0., ii. 54) is a misreading.

_ 2 There are two copies in the British Museum, edited by Kleyn, Het Leven van Johannes van Tella door Elias, 1882; see also the Life by John of Asia in Land, Anecd. Syr., ii, 169. 3 B.0., ii. 54.

| 4 Dissert. de Syrorum Fide et Disciplina in Ie Eucharistica, 1859, pp. 62-97.

5 See Land, Anecd. Syr., ii. 105. 6 Ibid., p. 108. 7 Ibid., iii. 250 sq.

) _ 8 Compare what is said of his fine library and of its ultimate deposition at

Amid, ibid., p. 245. 9 B.O., ii. 54.

| 10 See Bar-Hebraeus, Chron. Eccles. , i. 267, 289, and comp. pp. 258, 295, 321 ;

|| Hoffmann, Ausztige, p. 162, note 1260. ll Wright, Catal., p. 1124, No. 5.

42 See for example, Brit. Mus. Add. 17134 (Wright, Catal., p. 330).

13 Cited in Brit. Mus. Add. 14731 (Wright, Catal., p. 855). .

14 Usually corrupted into Baradseus ; the form Burdé‘aya seems to be incor- rect ; see Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 97. –

15 See Land, Anecd. Syr., ii. 375. 16 Comp. also ii. 326, 331.

W The life at p. 249 is of course by John of Asia; that at p. 364 can hardly be called his in its present form, though he may have collected most of the “Inaterials ; see Kleyn, op. cit., pp. 34, 105 sq. ‘ | 18 Land, op. cit., p. 365, ll. 6, 7. 19 Tbid., p. 372, 1. 2,

a

es — a

pt ye le a2 x oO

a Ro aa a

ee oh

Ho

Assemani’s

Pe ee ee ae ee Sn ee. ee

Sehr i ae LITheAtT Uw RE

To the same age and sect as Simeon belonged John bar Cursus He was a uative of Callinicus (ar-Rakkah), of good family, and was carefully educated by into the army at the age of quitting the service after a few years and becoming a monk. Subsequently, in 519, he was raised to the dignity of bishop of Tella, whence he was In 538 he visited Constantinople, and on his return to the East was seized by his enemies in the mountains of Sinjar, and dragged to Nisibis, Ras‘ain, and Antioch, where he died in 538, at the age of fifty-five, Having been for a year and six days a close prisoner in the convent of the Comes Manassé by order

The Jacobite Church commemorates him on the 6th of February. Canons by John of Tella are extant in several MSS, in the British Museum and The questions put to him by Sergius with his replies

Mus. Add. 14549 (Catal., p. 431), and an exposition of the Trisagion 314) and Bodl. Marsh. 101 (Payne

expelled from their sees (in 519) was Mara of Amid, the third bishop

833

523 he and another monk of Tella, named Sergius, were sent to Constantinople in defence of their faith, and, being favourably recelved by the empress Theodora, they remained there fifteen years. Meantime the persecutions of the Monophysites, more especially that of 586-537 by Ephraim of Antioch, seemed to have crushed their party, despite all the efforts of the devoted John of Tella and John of Hephestus.2° This state of matters excited the religious zeal of al-Harith ibn J abalah, the Arab king of Ghassan, who came to Constantinople in 542-548, and urged Theodora to send two or three bishops to Syria. Accordingly two were conse- crated by Theodosius, the exiled patriarch of Alexandria, namely, Theodore as bishop of Bostra, with jurisdiction over the provinces of Palestine and Arabia, and Jacob as bishop of Edessa, with juris- diction over all Syria and Asia. From this time forward Jacob’s life was one of ceaseless toil and hardship. He visited in person and on foot almost every part of his vast diocese, consecrating deacons and priests, strengthening the weak, and bringing back those who had erred

from the true faith, But to restore the Monophysite Church bishops were necessary, and the consecration of a bishop required the presence of at least three others. Select- ing a priest named Conon from Cilicia and another named Eugenius from Isauria, he travelled with them to Constantinople and thence to Alexandria with letters of recommendation from the patriarch Theodosius. At Alexandria Conon was ordained bishop of Tarsus. in Cilicia and Eugenius bishop of Seleucia in Isauria, whilst Antoninus and Antonius were consecrated for dioceses in Syria.

On his return to Syria other bishops were appointed to sees there and in Asia, among the latter the historian John of Ephesus ; and so the work progressed, till at last Jacob's efforts were crowned by the enthroning of his old friend Sergius as patriarch of Antioch

(in 544). Sergius died in 547, and the see remained vacant for three years, after which, by the advice of Theodosius, Jacob and his bishops chose Paul, an abbot of Alexandria, to be their patriarch.

Of the subsequent internal strifes among the Monophysites thein- selves we cannot here speak. The aged Jacob set out once more

in the year 578 to visit Damian, patriarch of Alexandria, but died on the Egyptian frontier in the convent of Mar Romanus or of Casion. Here his remains rested in peace till 622, when they were stolen by the emissaries of Zaccheus, bishop of Tella, and buried

with much pomp in the monastery of Pésilta.2!_ His commemora-

tion takes place on 28th November, 21st March, and 31st July.

Jacob's life was too active and busy to admit of his writing much.

We may mention an anaphora," sundry letters,23 a creed or confes-

sion of faith, preserved in Arabic and a secondary Ethiopic trans-

lation,*4 and a homily for the feast of the annunciation, also extant

only in an Arabic translation.”

Conspicuous among the scholars of this age for his knowledge of Sergius Greek, and more especially of the Aristotelian philosophy, was of ; Sergius, priest and archiater of Ras‘ain. He was, however, if Ras’ain. Zacharias Rhetor may be trusted, a man of loose morals and ava- ricious.”° He journeyed in 535 from Ras‘ain to Antioch to lodge a complaint before the patriarch Ephraim against his bishop Asylus.”” Just at this time the exiled Severus of Antioch and Theodosius of Alexandria, as well as the Stylite monk Zé‘dra, were living with Anthimus of Constantinople under the protection of the empress Theodora. This alarmed Ephraim, who seems to have found a willing tool in Sergius. At any rate he sent him to Rome with letters to Agapetus, who travelled with him to Constantinople in the spring of 536, and procured the deposition and banishment of the Monophysites. Sergius died at Constantinople almost imme- diately afterwards, and Agapetus followed him in a few days, wherein John of Ephesus and Zacharias Rhetor clearly see the judgment of Heaven. As a man of letters Sergius was to the Monophysites what Probus was to the Nestorians: he was the first” to make them acquainted with the works of Aristotle by means of translations and commentaries, ‘Abhd-ish6‘, it is true, gives Sergius a place in his catalogue of Nestorian writers,” and states that he composed “expositions of logic” or “ dialectics” ; but he merely does so in the same way and on the same grounds that he registers the name of Jacob of Edessa as the author of “annals and a chronicle.”®! The books were too valuable for him to insist on the heresy of the writers. In the case of Sergius there was an additional reason. The man was well known in the East,®* many of his works being dedicated to his friend and**

21 scoethe emi: of this “‘translation” by Cyriacus, bishop of Mardé (Maridin), in Brit. Mus. Add. 12174 (Wright, Catal., p. 1131).

22 Translated by Renaudot, ii. 333. 23 Translated fom the Greek originals in Brit. Mus. Add. 14602 ; ‘atal., p. 701; Kleyn, op. cit., pp. 164-194. a : ; 24 ga the Arabic jee in Nigga op. cit., p. 121 sg.; the Ethiopic version has been edited by Cornill in 2.D.M.G., xxx. 417 sq. 25

Bodl. Hunt. 199 (Payne Smith, Catal., p. 448, No. 5). . 26 Land, Anecd. Syr., iii. 289, 11.13-15 ; comp. Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 207. 27 Bar-Hebreus (Chron. Eceles., i. 205) has Ascolius (see also B.O., ii. 323), but Asylus is correct; see Anecd. Syr., iii. 289, 1. 6, and Kleyn, Johannes van Tella, p. 59, L. penult. 28 Land, Anecd. Syr., ii. 19; iii. 290. 29 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Syr., 62 (trans., p. 59); see also the Hist. Dynast., 150 (trans., p. 94) and 264 (trans., p. 172). S00 BO: 1, 87. 31 Ibid., 229. 32 He may even be identical with the Sergius mentioned by Agathias as XXIT. — 105

see Wright,

834

pupil Theodore, afterwards Nestorian bishop of Mari or Merv (see p. 837 infra).1 What remains of Sergius's labours is mostly contained ina single MS. of the 7th century (Brit. Mus. Add. 14658).2 Of translations from the Greek we find in this volume the Isagoge of Porphyry, followed by the so-called Tabula Porphyrii,? the Categories of Aristotle,* the Ilept xécuou mpds 'AXéEavdpor,° and a treatise on the soul,—not the well-known Ilept yuyjjs, but a wholly different tractate in five short sections. It also contains

SYRIAC LITELEAIeT eS

[67H cENT.

the Manichees ; and of the Philalethes.° Probably by him are the older translation of the Homilix Cathedrales® and that of the eorre-spondence of Sergius Grammaticus and Severus regarding the doc-trine of the two natures in Christ,? possibly, too, the translation of the treatise against John Grammaticus of Cesarea™ and of some other works which are known to us only by a few scattered cita- tions.** Hence he is called by the Jacobites Méphashshtkana dha- khéthabhé, "the Translator of Books."

Sergius's own treatise on logic, addressed to Theodore, which is unfortunately imperfect; a tract on negation and affirmation ; a

treatise, likewise addressed to Theodore, On the Causes of the Universe, according to the views of Aristotle, showing how it is a circle ;

This seems the proper place to make mention of a most important Civil though anonymous work, the translation of the so-called Cig] Laws o Laws of the Emperors Constantine, Theodosius, and Leo, which lies the Em. at the root of all subsequent Christian Oriental legislation in ecelesi. perors,

a tract On Genus, Species, and Individuality; and a third tract addressed to Theodore, On the Action and Influence of the Moon, explanatory and illustrative of Galen's Ilep xpicluwy juepadv, bk. iil. ,® with a short appendix "On the Motion of the Sun." Here too we find part (sections 11, 12) of his version of the Ars Gram- matica of Dionysius Thrax, a larger portion (sections 11-20) Weng contained in Brit. Mus. Add. 14620 (Wright, Catal., p. 802). There is a scholion of Sergius on the term cxfya in Brit. Mus. Add. 14660 (see Wright, Catal., p. 1162). In his capacity of physician, Sergius translated part of the works of Galen. Brit. Mus. Add. 14661 contains books vi.~~viii. of the treatise De Simplicium Medicamentorum Temperamentis ac Facultatibus (Wright, Catal., p~~ 1187),® addressed to Theodore; and in Brit. Mus. Add. 17156 there are three leaves, two of which contain fragments of the Ars Medica, and one of the treatise De Alimentorum Facultatibus (Wright, Catal., p. 1188).9 As one of the clergy, he wasted his time in making a translation of the works which passed under the name of Dionysius the Areopagite.!° Brit. Mus. Add. 12151! con- tains this version with the introduction and notes of Phocas bar Sergius of Edessa,! a writer of the 8th century, as appears from his citing Athanasius II. and Jacob of Edessa. In Brit. Mus. Add. 2237013 we find Sergius's own introduction and the commentary of a later writer, Theodore bar Zaridi.4

astical, judicial, and private matters.2° The Syriac version, made from a Greek original, exists in two manuscripts," the older of which undeniably belongs to the earlier part of the 6th century. The work itself appears, according to the researches of Bruns (op. cit., pp. 318-319), to date from the time of the emperor Basiliseus (Brit, Mus. Add.

475-477), who was a favourer of the Monophysites; the Syriac translation is ascribed to a Monophysite monk of Mabbogh or Hierapolis (dbid., p. 155). The Paris MS. probably represents a Nestorian revision of the 9th or 10th century at (Baghdad) Bagh. dadh (zbid., p. 166). The oldest MS. of the secondary Arabic version is dated 1352 (ibid., p. 164), but it has been traced back to the time of the Nestorian lawyer Abu ’1-Faraj ‘Abdallah ibn at- Taiyib (who died 1043), whether made by him or not (

as a Nestorian is Ahi-dh’emmeh, metropolitan of Taghrith (‘Tekrit). dh’emmth,

He appears, on the contrary, to have becn the head of the Mono-

Paul of If Sergius was the Probus of the Monophysites, their Ma‘na was | physites in the Persian territory. According to Bar-Hebreus,” he Callini- Paul, bishop of Callinicus (ar-Rakkah), who, being expelled from | was appointed by Christopher, catholicus of the Armenians, to be cus. his see in 519, betook himself to Edessa and there devoted himself | bishop of Béth ‘Arbayé,® but was promoted by Jacob Burdé‘ana in

to the task of translating the works of Severus into Syriac. We know for certain!® that he edited versions of the correspondence of Severus and Julian of Halicarnassus on the corruptibility or incorruptibility of the body of Christ, with a discourse of Scverus against Julian!’; of the treatise against the Additions or Appendices of Julian, !8 and against the last apology of Julian 9; of that against

residing at the Persian court, where he translated into Greek a history of the kings of Persia ; see B.O., iii. 1,87, note 3; Renan, De Philesophia Peripatetica apud Syros, 1852, pp. 24-25. 1 B.0., iii. 1, 147 ; Renan, op. cit., p. 29.

2 Wright, Catal., p. 1154 sq.; comp. Renan, op. cit., p. 25 sq.; Journ. Asiat., 1852, 4th series, vol. xix. p. 319 sq.

3 There is a fragment of the Isagoge also in Brit. Mus. Add. 1618 (Wright, Catal., p. 738). ; ;

4 In the Vatican MS. elviii. (Catal., iii, 306, No. vi.) this translation is wrongly ascribed to Jacob of Edessa, who could hardly have been more than a boy at the tine when the MS. in the British Museum was transcribed. Besides, the ver- sion is not in his style. The Paris MS. Ancien fonds 161 naturally repeats this mistake (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 202). In Catal. Bibl. Palat. Medic., cod. cxeVi., it is likewise erroneously attributed to Honain ibn Ishak (comp. Renan, De Philos. Peripat. ap. Syros, p. 84, note 3). The Berlin MS. Alt. Best. 36 contains as No. 7 a treatise of Sergius on the Categories addressed to Philotheus.

5 Edited by Lagarde, Anal. Syr., p. 134 sq.; see V. Ryssel, Ueber den text- kritischen Werth d. Syr. Uebersetzungen griechischer Klassiker, part i. 1880, part ii. 1881. In parti. p. 4 Professor Ryssel speaks of this version as ‘ein Meister- werk der Uebersetzungskunst”; and in part ii. p.10 he says: “Die Ueber- setzung der Schrift wept xdcjov schliesst sich aufs engste an den Text des griechischen Originales an. Dass wir deshalb diese Uebersetzung als eine im besten Sinne wortgetreue bezeichnen kénnen, ziegt schon eine Vergleichung mit der lateinischen Bearbeitung des Apulejus von Madaura.” This opinion serves to rectify the judgement of Ibn Abi Osaibi‘ah (i. 204) that Sergius was only a mediocre translator, and that his work needed revision by the later Honain ibn Ishak. 6 See Sachau, Inedita Syr., pp. 101-126.

? This identification is due to Merx; see Dionysii Thracis Ars Grammatica, ed. Uhlig, p. xliv. sg. Merx has treated of an old, but independent, Armenian version in the same book, p. lvii. sq.

8 See Merx’s article in Z.D.M.G., xxxix. (1885), p. 237 sq.

9 See Sachau, Ined. Syr., pp. 88-94.

10 See Frothingham, Stephen bar Sudaili, p.3. 11 See Wright, Catal., p. 493.

12 B.0., i. 468. Assemani erroneously places him before Jacob of Edessa.

13 See Wright, Catal., p. 500.

14 There are also old MSS. of Sergius's version in the Vatican ; Catal., iii. Nos. evil. (p. 56), ecliv. (p. 542). Bar-Hebreeus states (Hist. Dynast., p. 158; transl., p. 99) that Sergius translated into Syriac the Syntagme of the Alexandrian priest and physician Aaron, and added to it two books ; but Steinschneider (Al-Farabi, p. 166, note 2) says that this is a mistake, and that the real author of the two additional books was the Arabic translator Masarjawaihi or Masarjis. The translator of the Geoponica, Al-Faldhah ar-Ramiyah (Leyden, cod. 414 Warn. ; Catal., iii. 211) and joint translator of the Meyddn ovvrakis of Ptolemy (Leyden, cod. 680 Warn.; Catal., iii. 80), by name Serjis or Serjiin (Sergius or Sergona) ibn ar-Riimi, seems to be a quite different person of later date.

1 B.O., ii. 46. He is to be distinguished from his namesake and contemporary, Paul, bishop of Edessa, who was banished to Euchaita in 522 (B.0., i. 409-411), restored to his see in 526 (ibid., p. 413), and died in the following year ; whereas Paul of Callinicus was working at Edessa in 528 (see p. 838 infra).

a foe part to a note at the end of Cod. Vat. cxl. (Catal., iii. 223; comp.

-O., loc. cit.).

< eae in 528; Cod. Vat. exl.; Brit. Mus. Add. 17200 (Wright, Catal.,

18 Cod. Vat. cxl.; Brit. Mus. Add. 12158 (Wright, Catal., p. 556), dated 588. 19 Brit. Mus. Add. 12158, CHEER, Coa);

559 to the see of Taghrith, where he ordained many priests and founded two monasteries. Among his numerous converts from heathenism was a youthful member of the royal family of Persia, whom he baptized by the name of George. This excited the anger of Khosrau I. Andsharwan, who ordered the bishop to be beheaded (2d August 575). Asa writer

Ahi-dh'emméh seems to have been more of a philosopher than a theologian.*! He wrote against the Persian priesthood and against the Greek philosophers, a book of definitions, a treatise on logic, on freewill in two discourses, on the soul and on man as the microcosm, and a treatise on the com- position of man as consisting of soul and body.2? He is also men- tioned by later authors as a writer on grammar.®

Somewhat before this time a monk of Edessa, whose name is un- Anony- known to us, tried his hand at the composition of a tripartite his- mous torical romance,#4—a history of Constantine and his three sons; an historical

account of Eusebius, bishop of Rome, and his sufferings at the hands romances.

of Julian the Apostate; and a history of Jovian or, as the Orientals usually call him, Jovinian, under Julian and during his own reign. The whole purports to be written by one Aploris or Aplolaris (Apol- linarius ?), an official at the court of Jovian, at the request of 'Abhdél, abbot of Sndriin (?) Mahéza, with a view to the conversion of the heathens. All three parts contain but a very small quantity of historical facts or dates, and deal in the grossest exaggerations and inventions. Yet the Syriac style is pure, and we gain from the book a good idea of the way in which the author's countrymen thought and spoke and acted. This romance has been published by Hoffmanu,® and Noldeke has given a full account of it, with an abridged translation, in Z.D.M.G., xxviii. p. 263 sg. He places the time of composition between 502 and 532. It is curious to find that this romance must have been known in an Arabic translation to the

20 There is a long extract from this work in Cod. Vat. exl. (Catal., ill, wee 4

21 Brit. Mus. Add. 14599, dated 569,; Cod. Vat. cxlii., dated 576; exliii., date 563; celvi.

22 Brit. Mus. Add. 17154. 23 Brit. Mus. Add. 17210-11, 12157. Fic

24 Compare, for example, Wright, Catal., p. 1323. The translation of Octoéchus is the work, not of Paul of Callinicus, but of an abbot Paul, who exe- cuted it in the island of Cyprus (see p. 838 infra). i

25 The passage quoted by Assemani (B.0., i. 409, note 2) seems, however, confound him with his namesake of Edessa. on

26 B.0., iii. 1, 267, note 6, 278, 338-339, 351 col. 2; comp. Bruns and Sachav, Syrisch-Rémisches Rechtsbuch, 1880, pp. 175-180. ; Zoten-

27 Brit. Mus. Add. 14528 (Wright, Catal., p. 177), and Paris, Suppl. 38 G ae 4 berg, Catal., p. 75, col. 1, No. 46). The text of the former was first pub ae 4 by Land (Anecd. Syr., i. 30-64), with a Latin translation. Both have ee e ou and translated, along with the Arabic and Armenian versions, with transia and a learned apparatus, by Bruns and Sachau, op. cit.

28 Wright, Catal., p. 1184. “

29 Chron. Eccles., ii. 99; comp. B.O., ii. 414, iil. 1, 192, note Es sii, 1,192

30 Ba-‘arbaya, the district between Nisibis and the Tigris. 31 B.O., in. 502).

32 Of this last part is extant in Brit. Mus. Add. 14620 (Wright, Catal. , p- i

33 See B.O., iii. 1, 256, note 2.

34 Contained in Brit. Mus. Add. 14641, ff. 1-131, a MS. of the 6th century.

35 Julianos der Abtriinnige, 1880.

6TH CENT. |

historian at-Tabari, who treats it as a genuine historical document.! From him it has passed to the Kamit of Ibn al-Athir, i, 283 sq., and the Akhbar al-Bashar of Abu ’1-Fida (Hist. Anteislamica, ed. Fleischer, p.

84). Ibn Wadih al-Ya‘kibi seems in his Annals? to have drawn from the same source, though independently of at- Tabari, and so also al-Mas‘iidi, Murij adh-Dhahab, ii. 323. Bar- Hebreus has also made some use of it in his Chronicon, ed. Bruns and Kirsch, pp. 68-69. No doubt, too, it is the work attributed by ‘Abhd-isho‘ to the grave ecclesiastical historian Socrates, who, as he says,’ wrote “a history of the emperors Constantine and Jovinian.”

Another, but much inferior, romance, of which Julian is the hero, is contained in Brit. Mus. Add. 7192, a manuscript of the 7th cen- tury. It has been edited by Hoffmann, op. cit., pp. 242-259, and translated by Noldeke, 7.D.1£.G., xxviii. 660-674. We shall not be far wrong in assigning it likewise to the 6th century, though it is probably rather later than that just noticed.

Of real historical value, on the contrary, is the anonymous nE@-Chronicon Edessenum, fortunately preserved to us in the Vatican | MS. clxiii.,4 and edited by Asscmani in B.O., i. 388-417. There is an English translation of it in the Journ. of Sacred Lit., 1864, vol. v. (new ser.), p. 28 sg. It begins with A.Gr. 180, but the entries are very sparse till we reach A.Gr. 513 (202 a.D.). The last of them refers to the year 540, about which time the little book must have been compiled. The author made use of the archives of Edessa and other documents now lost to us, as well as of the Chronicle of Joshua the Stylite (see above, p. 832). In religious matters he is not a violent partisan, nor given to the use of harsh words, a thing / to be noted in the age in which he lived. q¢ Another writer of first-rate importance as a historian is John, ij bishop of Asia or Ephesus, “the teacher of the heathen,” “the ‘hes. overseer of the heathen,” and “the idol-breaker,” as he loves to style himself.° He was a native of Amid, and must have been born early in the 6th century, according to Land about 505. He was ordained deacon in the convent of St John in 529, when he | must have been at least twenty years of age.’ In 534 the terrible | pestilence of the reign of Justinian broke out, and_at that time

John was in Palestine,’ having, doubtless, fled from Amid to avoid | the persecution of the Monophysites by Abraham bar Kili (?) of Tella,

bishop of Amid (from about 520 to 546), and Ephraim bar Appian of Amid, patriarch of Antioch (529-544), "a much worse persecutor than Paul or Enphrasius."® In 535 we find him at Constantinople, where in the following year, according to Bar- Hebreeus,!° he became bishop of the Monophysites in succession to the deposed Anthimus. Be this as it may, he was certainly re- | ceived with great favour by Justinian, whose friendship and con- fidence he enjoyed for thirty years, and "had the administration of the entire revenues of all the congregations of the believers (i.e., the Monophysites) in Constantinople and everywhere else.") Wishing to root out heathenism in Asia Minor, obviously for | political as well as religious reasons, the emperor appointed John } to be his missionary bishop.' In this task he had great success, | to which his faithful friend and fellow-labourer for thirty-five years, } Deuterius, largely contributed. He interested himself, too, in the missionary efforts of Julian, Theodore, and Longinus among the Nubians and Alodei.4 In 546 the emperor employed him in search- ing out and putting down the secret practice of idolatry in Constan- tinople and its neighbourhood. After the death of his patron the fortunes of John soon underwent a change. Bk. i. of the third part of his History commences with the perseeution under Justin in 571, in which he suffered imprisonment.!® His friend Deuterius, whom he had made bishop of Caria, was also persecuted, and died at Constantinople." From this time forward John's story is that of his party, and the evidently confused and disordered state of his History is fully explained and excused by his own words in bk. ii. | 50, where he tells us!8 "that most of these histories were written at the very time when the persecution was going on, and under the | difficulties caused by its pressure; and it was even necessary that

friends should remove the leaves on which these chapters were in- | scribed, and every other particle of writing, and conceal them in | various places, where they sometimes remained for two or three

Se

5 Sn

a

TES oc antl

1 At-Tabari, Annales, i. 840 sq.; see Néldeke, in Z.D.M.G., xxviii. 291-292, and | Geschichte der Perser und Araber zur Zeit der Sasaniden, p. 59 sq.

2 Hd. Houtsma, i. 182-183. 3 BO. ii. 1, 41. 4 See Catal., iii. 329.

5 See Kecles. Hist., ed. Cureton, bk. ii. ch. 4 and bk. iii. ch. 36; Land, Anecd. Syr., li. 256, 1. 25. 6 B.O., ii. 88; Bar-Hebrieus, Chron. Eccles., i. 195.

7 B.O., ii., Dissert. de Monophysitis, p. exxv.; Land, Anecd. Syr., 174, ll. 8, 9.

8 B.O., ii. 85-86, E.H., ed. Cureton, bk. i. ch. xli.; comp. B.O., ii. 51.

10 Chron. Eccles., i. 195. ll £.H., ed. Cureton, bk. v. ch. 1.

12 Ibid., bk. ii. ch. 44; bk. iii. ch. 86, 87; comp. B.O., ii. 85.

13 #.H., ed. Cureton, bk. ii. ch. 44.

14 Ibid., bk. iv. ch. 6-8, 49-53 ; comp. Bar-Hebrzeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 229. How just his views were as a missionary may be seen from bk. iv. ch. 50, where he says "that it was not right that to an erring and heathen people, who asked to be converted to Christianity and to learn the fear of God, there should be sent by letter, before everything that was necessary for their edification, con- : ae and offence and the revilings of Christians against Christians."

EOe, ies. :

16 F.H., ed. Cureton, bk. i. ch. 17; bk. ii. ch. 4-7. Of unjust legal proceed- ings he complains in bk. ii. ch. 41, where he loses his mpoao7Tetov, &c.

7 #.H., ed. Cureton, bk. ii. ch. 44. 18 Payne Smith's translation, p. 163.

years. When therefore matters occurred which the writer wished to record, it was possible that he might have partly spoken of them before, but he had no papers or notes by which to read and know whether they had been described or not. If therefore he did not remember that he had recorded them, at some subsequent time he probably again proceeded to their detail ; and therefore occasionally the same subject is recorded in more chapters than one; nor after- wards did he ever find a fitting time for plainly and clearly arrang- ing them in an orderly narrative." Some of the chapters are actu- ally dated at various times from A.Gr. 886 (575 A.D.) to 896 (585). The time and place of his death are unknown, but he cannot have lived long after 585, being then about eighty years of age. His greatest literary work is his Ecclesiastical History in three parts, the first two of which, as he himself tells us,2 embraced, in six books each, the period from Julius Cesar to the seventh year of Justin II., whilst the third, also in six books, carried on the tale to the end of the author's life. The first part is entirely lost. Of the second we have copious excerpts in the Chronicle of Dionysius of Tell-Mahré*! and in two MSS. in the British Museum." The third has fortunately come down to us, though with considerable lacune, in Brit. Mus. Add. 14640 (of the 7th century).22 This book is worthy of all praise for the fulness and accuracy of its information and the evident striving of the author after impartiality. The Syriac style, however, is very awkward and involved, and abounds in Greek words and phrases. Of scarccly less value for the history of his own time is another work entitled Biographics of Eastern Saints, men and women, contained in Brit. Mus. Add. 14647, ff. 1-135.%4 These lives were gathered into one corpus about 569, as appears from the account of the combination of the monasteries of Amid during the persecution of 521, which was put on paper in 567,"° and from the history of the convent of St John, extending from its foundation in 389 to 568.26 To these lives Land has added three more, which are ascribed in MSS. to John, but do not seem to have been included in this collection. ""

The name of Zacharias Rhetor or Scholasticus, bishop of Mityléné Zachar- in Lesbos, must next be mentioned, for, though a Greek author, ias his work has entered into the Syriac literature as part of a compila- Rhetor.. tion by a Syrian monk. The Leclesiastical History of Zacharias seems to have terminated about the year 518, whereas his Syriac translator was writing as late as 569,% and even later. The MS. in the British Museum, Add. 17202,°° cannot be younger than the beginning of the 7th century, and is clearly the compilation of a Monophysite, who used Zacharias as his chief authority in books lli.-vi.; whereas books i., ii., and vii.~~xii. were gathered from differ~~ ent sources, such as Moses of Aggeél (about 550-570), Simeon of Béth Arsham (sce above, p. 832), Mara of Amid (see above, p. 833), the correspondence of Julian of Halicarnassus and Severus of Antioch (see above, p. 834), the history of John of Ephesus,?! &c. In a Syriac MS. in the Vatican (No. cxlv.)*? we find a series of extracts from this Syriac work.(f. 78 sg.) as a continuation of copious ex- cerpts from the Greek histories of Socrates and Theodoret. The last of these, on the public buildings, statues, and other decorations of the city of Rome, has been carefully re-edited and annotated by Guidi.**

We turn from the historians to the ascetic writers of this century, who seem to have been more prized by their countrymen, though far less valuable to us. And first we mention the author who is commonly called John Sabha * or "the Aged," placing him here on John the authority of Assemani (B.0., i. 483), for 'Abhd-isho' claims him Sabha. as a Nestorian (B.0., ili. 1, 103). His florwit is given as about

19 See Land, Joannes Bischof von Ephesos, der erste Syrische Kirchenhistortker, 1856. A very useful book.

20 E.H., ed. Cureton, bk. i. ch. 3. 21 B.0., ii. 100; comp. pp. 85-90.

22 Add. 14647 (dated 688), ff. 136-139; Add. 14650 (dated 875), ff. 189-206. Edited by Land, Anecd. Syr., ii. 289-829 and 385-391. See also a small frag- inent, ibid., 363, from Add. 12154, f. 201b.

23 Edited by Cureton, 1853. There is an English translation by R. Payne Smith, 1860, and a German one by Schonfelder, 1862.

24 Edited by Land, Anecd. Syr., ii. 1-288.

25 Anecd. Syr., ii. 212, 1.17; see also p. 191, last two lines.

26 Tbid., ii. 288, ll. 2, 3.

27 Ibid., ii. 343-862. That of Jacob Burdé‘ana (ibid., p. 364) is not his, at least in its present shape (see above, p.833). There is a slightly different redaction of it in the Bibl. Nation. at Paris, Anc. fonds 144 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 187).

28 See Land, Joannes Bischof von Ephesos, p. 35 sg.,and Anecd. Syr., ili., Preface.

29 Land, Anecd. Syr., iii. pp. xi., xii., and p. 5, 1. 21 sq.

30 See Wright, Catal., p. 1046 sq. ‘

31 Not a few chapters in books vii.-x. seem to be derived, in part at any rate, from the sccond part of the Ecclesiastical History.

32 Catal., iii. 253; B.O., ii. 54 sq.; Mai, Scriptorum Veterum Nova Collectio, x. pp. xi.-xiv., 332-388. The MS., which Assemani calls ‘* pervetustus, Syriacis literis stronghylis exaratus” (p. 253), is not likely to be earlier than the middle of the 8th century, as it contains a work of the patriarch Elias, who sat from 708 to 728.

33 Il Testo Siriaco della Descrizione di Roma, &c., from the Bullettino della Commiissione Archeologica di Roma, fase. iv. anno 1884 (Rome, 1885). It is also extant in a shorter form in Brit. Mus. Add. 12154, f. 158a (see Wright, Catal., p. 984; Guidi, p. 235 sq.).

34 There is some uncertainty about his name.

{Dados on eisaQa, John of Dilaita, which, he says (p. 433), is a convent at Nineveh, on the opposite bank of the Tigris from Mosul. In vol.

iii. 1, 103 he prints CTS on elasQe, which he renders Joannes

In B.0., i. 484, Assemani gives

Isaac of Nineveh

836

550. His writings consist of short sermons or tracts, exclusively intended for the training and study of monks and ccenobites, and a number of letters. ‘Abhd-ishd‘ (Joc. cit.) says: “ he composed two volumes, besides mournful epistles, on the monastic life.” They were collected * by his brother, who has prefixed a brief apology, at the end of which the reader may find a eurious example of affected humility (B.0., i. 435)’ Two short specimens of the style of “the spiritual old man,” ash-Shaikh ar-rihani, are printed in Zingerle’s Monumenta Syr., 1. 102-104.

A little junior to John Sabha was the even more widely known Isaac of Nineveh, to whom the Nestorians also lay claim.4 His date is fixed, as Assemani points out, by the facts of his citing Jacob of Sériigh and corresponding with Simeon Stylites the younger or Thaumastorites, who died in 593. According to the Arabic biography, printed in B.O., i. 444, he was a monk of the convent of Mar Matthew at Mosul, and afterwards became bishop of that city, but soon resigned his office and retired to the desert of Skete in Egypt, where he composed his ascetic works. According to ‘Abhd-isho’ (B.0., iii. 1, 104), Isaac “wrote seven volumes on the guidance of the Spirit, and on the Divine mysteries and judgements and dispensation.” Many of his discourses and epistles have been catalogued by Assemani, B.O., i. 446-460. The MS. Vat. cxxiv. contains the first half of his writings (Catai., iii. 148), and similarly MSS. Brit. Mus. Add. 14632 and 14633.5 The Arabic translation is divided into four books ; the Ethiopic is naturally derived from the Arabic. A Greek version was made from the original Syriac by two monks of St Saba, near Jernsalem, named Patricius and Abraamius, on which see Assemani, B.O., i. 445, and Bickell, Con-spectus, p. 26. The only printed specimens of his discourses are two in Zingerle’s Monumenta Syr., 1. 97-101.

Abraham Another author of this class, but of less mark, is Abraham of

of Neph-

tar.

Moses of

Aggél.

Peter of Callini- cus.

Nephtar,® who flourished towards the end of the 6th century and in the early part of the 7th.? Him too the Nestorians claim as theirs.? ‘Abhd-isho‘ speaks of “various works” of his,? but onr libraries seem to contain only eight short discourses, the titles of which are given by Assemani, B.0O., i. 464.19 They have been trans- lated into Arabic, and there was also a Persian version of them by Job the monk (B.0., iii. 1, 481).

We record here the name of Moses of Aggél as being one of those who, after Rabbulad, undertook the translation of the writings of Cyril of Alexandria into Syriac. He made a version of the Gla- phyra, at the request of a monk named Paphnutius, from whose letter”! we learn that the treatise On Worship in Sptrit and in Truth had been already translated,!? whilst from the reply of Moses, as quoted in B.O., ii. 82-83, it is obvious that he was writing after the death of Philoxenus and the chorepiscopus Polycarp. Hence we may place him soon after the middle of the century, say from 550 to 570. Much later he cannot be, because his translation of the History of Moses and Asyath (see above, p. 826) has been ad- mitted into the Syriac compilation that passes under the name of Zacharias Rhetor (see above, p. 835).18

Peter of Callinicus (ar-Rakkah), Jacobite patriarch of Antioch, 578-591,!4 deserves mention on account of his huge controversial treatise against Damian, patriarch of Alexandria, manuscripts of parts of which, of the 7th and 8th centuries, are extant in the Vatican and the British Museum. Other writings of his arc an anaphora,’® a short treatise against the Tritheists,.” sundry letters,18 and a metrical homily on the Crucifixion of our Lord.49 In the

Daliathensis, i.e., from ad-Daliyah, al sJ], probably meaning Daliyat Malik ibn Tauk, on the right bank of the Euphrates below ar-Rakkah and Rahbat Malik ibn Tauk. In the Vatican Catalogue he calls him Daliathensis, writing,

however, in Syriac |Dadas 3. But how can obas3s mean "of ad-

Daliyah " (leas)? Following the analogy of waldo» wa pnd,

eT10 59009 —LasQe, and the like, it ought rather to mean "John of the Vine-Branches," or "John with the Varicose Veins," or (as in Arabic) 'John of the Buckets."

1 See Wright, Catal., p. 863, 7. version of it from a Vatican MS.

2 Fora list of them in Syriac and Arabic, see B.0. i. 435-444, and comp. Wright, Catal., pp. 582, 584, 860, 870 (No. 16). There is also an Ethiopié version,, Aragawt Manfastwi, made from the Arabic; see Zotenberg, Catal. des MSS. Ethiopiens de la Bibl. Nation., No. 115, p. 184. 3 B.O., i. 444,

4 Ibid., iti. 1, 104. 5 Wright, Catal., pp. 569, 576.

6 Also written Nethpar and N ephrath ; see Assemaui, Catal. Vat., iii. 138. But,

as we can find no trace of any such town as N' ephtar, the name of La Aaa nay have some other origin. 7 B.O., iii. 1, 191, note 1.

8 Compare Wright, Catal., p. 187, No. 154, 9 B.O., iii. 1, 191.

pe seem to be ten in Cod. Vat. ceccxix.; see Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v. 65.

31 Cod. Vat. evii. (Catal., iii. 58); Guidi, Rendiconti della R. Accademia dei Lineei, May and June, 1886, p. 399 sq.

12 Brit. Mus. Add. 12166, ff. 155-258, bears date 553 (Wright, Catal., p. 491).

13 Of the Vatican MS. of the Glaphyra only five leaves remain (Catal., iii. 54), and the MS. in the British Museum, Add. 14555, is very imperfect (Wright, Catal., p. 483). As Guidi has shown, these two MSS. are merely the disjecta membra of one codex. 14 B.0., ii. 69, 332; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 250.

US 15h 10, EE comp. Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eceles., i. 257. 16 B.O., ii. 77.

7 Brit. Mus. Add. 12155, f. 231b (Wright, Catal., p. 951).

38 Wright, Catal., p. 1314. 19 Brit. Mus. Add. 14591 (Wright, Catal., p. 671).

In the B.O., i. 484, Assemani gives an Arabic

SYRIAC LITLTRAtTUEe

–

[6TH cent,

dispute between him and Damian was involved his syncellus and

successor Julian, who defended Peter against an attack made upon

ee 4 Sergius the Armenian, bishop of Edessa, and his brother ohn.

Of the numerous Nestorian writers of tunately know but little more than can be learned from the cata. logue of ‘Abhd-isho‘. Their works have either been lost, or else very few of them have as yet reached our European libraries,

The successor of Narsai (above, p- 880) in the school of was his sister’s son Abraham,?! who must have fled from with his uncle.” His principal writings are commentaries on Joshua Judges, Kings, Ecclesiasticus, Isaiah, the twelve minor prophets, Daniel, and the Song of Songs.?8 :

To him succeeded as teacher John, also a disciple of Narsai,2

the 6th century we unfor.

miah, Ezekiel, and Proverbs ; also controversial treatises against the Magi or Persian priesthood, the Jews, and (Christian) heretics – a book of questions on the Old and New Testaments ; and various hymns. If the discourses on the plague at Nisibis ® and the death of Khosrau J. Anésharwan be really by him, he was alive as late as 579, in the spring of which year that monarch died.26

John was followed by Joseph Hiiziya,2'another disciple of Narsai,% J oseph him Bar-Hebrzus observes ® Hizaya,

and the first Syriac grammarian. Of that "he changed the Edessene (or Western) mode of reading into the Eastern mode which the Nestorians employ ; otherwise during the whole time of Narsai they used to read like us Westerns," He was the inventor of some of the Syriac signs of interpunction,?9 and wrote a treatise on grammar * and another on words that are spelled with the same letters but have different meanings.

Of Mar-abha%3 the Elder, catholicus from 536 to 552, we have Mar- already spoken above as a translator of the Scriptures (p. 826). He abhal.

was a convert from the Zoroastrian religion, and seems to have been a man of great talent and versatility, as he mastered both the Greek and Syriac languages. Receiving baptism at Herta (al-Hirah) from a teacher named Joseph, he went for the purposes of study to Nisibis, and afterwards to Edessa, where he and his teacher Thomas *4 trans- lated into Syriac the liturgy of Nestorius. They visited Constanti- nople together, and, escaping thence at some risk of their lives, be- took themselves to Nisibis, where Mar-abha became eminent as a teacher. On being chosen catholicus he opened a college at Seleucia and lectured there. Unluckily, he got into controversy, it is said, with the Persian monarch Khosrau I. Andsharwan (531-579), who banished him to Adharbaigan (Azerbijan) and destroyed the Nes- torian church beside his palace at Seleucia. Mar-abha, however, had the temerity to return to Seleucia, was thrown by the king into prison, and died there.3¢ His

dead body was carried by one of his disciples to Hérta, where it was buried and a monastery erected over the grave. He wrote" commentaries on Genesis, the Psalms, and Proverbs, and the epistles of St Paul to the Romans, Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, and Hebrews 3 various homilies ; synodical epistles ®; and ecclesiastical canons. In these last he opposed the practice of marriage at least among the higher orders of the clergy, the bishops and catholics. What is meant by his "canones in totum Davidem" may be seen from such MSS. of the

20 B.O., ii. 8338 ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eceles., i. 259.

21 B.0., iii. 1,71. Assemani would seem to have confounded him with a later Abraliam of Béth Rabban ; see his note, B.O., iii. 1, 681.

22 There seems to beno reason for ideritifying him with Abraham 'the Mede," whom Simeon of Béth Arsham nicknaines " the Heater of Baths" (B.0., i. 352).

23 The hymn appended to Nestorian copies of the Psalter probably pertains to this Abraham and not to the later Abraham of Béth Rabban (see, for ex- ample, Brit. Mus. Add. 7156, f. 157b); comp. Bickell, Conspectus, p. 37, and Hoffmann, Opuse. Nestor., xi., note 2.

24 B.O., iii. 1,72. Here again Assemani seems to have mixed up this John with a later John of Béth Rabban and with John Sabha of Bath Garmai ; see his additional notes in B.O., iii. 1, 631, 708.

25 During the time of the catholics Joseph and Ezekiel, from 552 to 578; see B.O., ii. 418, 433, note 2.

26 The hymn in the Nestorian MSS. of the Psalter (mentioned in note 23 above) is probably by this John and not by the later Jolin of Béth Rabban; comp. Hoffmann's note referred to above. 'The monastery of Rabban Zekha- isho' (or Isho'-zékha) in Dasen was not founded till about 590, and Zékha-isho himself did ue die till the thirteenth year of Khosrau IH. Parwéz, 603; see B.O., iii. 1, 472. ;

7 Ie., of al-Ahwaz or Khiizistan. He must not be confounded with Josepll Hazzaya, of whom we shall speak hereafter (see p. 838 infra). .

28 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eceles., ii. 78, says that Joseph Hiizaya was the im- mediate successor of Narsai; but the Nestorian writer cited by Asseinani (B.0., iii. 1, 64) is likely to be better informed. The passage quoted ibid., p. 82, points in the same direction ; comp. also B. 0., iii. 2, emxxvii.

29 Loc. cit.; comp. B.O., ii. 407. ’

30 See Wright, Catal., p.107, col. 2. Assemani (B.0., iii. 1, 64, col. 2) has mis-

translated the words EA3 dsm 2) ols?! caasstles 92, Comp. Hoflinann,

Opusc. Nestor., viii., xi. 31 Berlin, Royal Library, Sachau 226, 4.

32 Bar-Hebreus, Euvres grammaticales, ed. Martin, ii. 77.

33 Properly Mar(i)-abha, but we shall write Mar-abha. >

34 Probably the same who is mentioned among his disciples in B.O,, fi. 412, and some of whose writings are enumerated by ‘Abhd-Isho’ in B.O., iii. 1, 86-7.

35 So‘Abhd-ish6′ in B.0., iif.1,36; butin Brit. Mus. Add. 7181 the same remark is made as to the liturgy of Theodore of Mopsuestia (see Rosen, Catal., p. 59).

36 B.O., ii. 411-412, iii. 1, 75, notes J, 2; Bar-Hebrzus, Chron., Eccles., ti. 89-95.

37 B.O., iii. 1, 75. 38 Ibid., iii. 1, 76, note 4.

= Ibid., iii. 1, 81, and note I ; comp. Cod. Vat. ecevi. in Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v. 21.

Nisibis Abraham Edessa of Nisibis,

: He Joh wrote commentaries on Exodus, Leviticus, and Numbers, Job, Jere- Ae,

a Se oe

ee ll

OTH CENT. |

Psalter as Brit. Mus. Add. 71561

was secretly removed to his native place Kashkar. treatise on the monastic life, which was translated into Persian b his disciple Job the monk.®

mani has confounded him. under Abraham the nephew of Narsai.

His death did not take place till towards the end of the century.®

Mar-abha in place of David, whom he had deposed, about 540. He seems to have been much addicted to the study of the Aristo-

Sergius of Ras‘ain are dedicated to him.9 _ there is mentioned “a solution of the ten questions of Sergius.” He _ also composed a commentary on the Psalms and a metrical history of Mar Eugenius and his companions,” who came from Klysma and introduced asceticism into Mesopotamia about the beginning of the 4th century. What may have been the contents of the “liber varii argumenti” which he wrote at the request of Mar-abha himself it is hard to guess, in the default of any copy of it.

| Theodore’s brother Gabriel, bishop of Hormizdshér,!? is stated by ‘Abhd-ish6‘¥ to have written two controversial books against the ts. Manichees and the Chaldeans (astrologers), as also about 300 chap- ters on various passages of Scripture which needed elucidation and _ explanation.

| The successor of Mar-abha in the see of Seleucia was J oseph, in @ 552. He studied medicine in the West and practised in Nisibis, where he

lived in one of the convents. Having been introduced | by a Persian noble to the notice of Khosrau I., he cured that monarch | of an illness, and ingratiated himself with him so much that he _ favoured his appointment to the office of catholicus. Of his strange pranks and cruelties as archbishop some account, doubtless highly | coloured, may be read in B.O., iii. 1, 482-483, and Bar-Hebreeus,

Chron. Eccles., ii. 95-97. He was deposed after he had sat for three | years, but he lived twelve years longer, during which time no suc- | cessor was appointed. He promulgated twenty-three canons," and, according to Elias, bishop of Damascus (898)," after his deposition drew up a list of his predecessors in the dignity of catholicus,

| wherein he would seem to have paid special attention to those who | had shared the same fate with himself. At least Bar-Hebreus!6 (per- haps not a quite trustworthy witness in this case) gives currency to the charge of his having forged the consolatory epistles of Jacob | of Nisibis and Mar Ephraim to Papa of Seleucia on his deposition.

A little later in the century, under the sway of his successor | Ezekiel (a disciple of Mar-abha and the son-in-law of his predecessor

Paul), 567-580,!" there flourished Paul the Persian,!8 of Dérshar or | Dershahr,'® a courtier 'of Khosrau I. Andsharwin.2° He is said by Bar-Hebreeus *! to have been distinguished alike in ecclesiastical and philosophical lore, and to have aspired to the post of metropolitan

1 Rosen, Catal., p. 12.

2 Verzeichniss d. orient. Handschriften d. k. Hof: u. Staats-Bivi., &ce., p. 111.

| 3 Sec Bickell, Conspectus, p. 37, and comp. Brit. Mus. Add. 17219, f. 165b (beg., | Glory to Thee, Lord; how good Thou art !).

| + A village near Arbél or Irbil, in Hédhaiyabh.

5 B.0., iii. 1, 155, col. 1, 431 ; ili. 2, dccelxxiii.

§ Comp. B.0., iii. 1, 154, note 4, with Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 172.

7 B.O., iti. 1, 93. 8 See Hoftinann, loc. cit.

} 9 See Brit. Mus. Add. 14658 (Wright, Catal., p. 1154); Renan, De Philosophia | Peripat. ap. Syros, p. 29. 10 B.0., iii. 1, 147.

ll See B.0., iii. 1, 147, note 4, and 633; iii. 2, decelxii.; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eecles., i. 85, with note 5; Hoffinann, Ausziige, p. 167. If the poem mentioned j by Asscmani (B.0., iii. 1, 147, note 4) really speaks of Abraham of Kashkar and) Still more of Babhai of Nisibis, it must be of later date, and Hoffmann is inclined to poe it to George Warda, a writer of the 13th century (sec Ausziige, p. 171, {note 1327).

}_ 12 A corruption of Hormizd-Ardashér, still further shortened by the Arabs

jinto Hormushir. It is identical with Sik al-Ahwiz, or simply al-Ahwa4z, on

{the river Karin. See Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p. 19, with note 5.

} 13 B.O., iii. 1, 147,

| 14 Ibid., iii.i.435. Elias bar Shinaya cites his “synod”; see Bar-Hebrus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 96, note 1.

| 15 In his Nomocanon, quoted by Assemani, B.O., iii. 1, 434.

16 Chron. Eccles., ii, 31.

17 See B.0., iii. 1, 435-489 ; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 97, 108.

18 B.O., iii. 1, 489; Renan, De Philos. Peripat. ap. Syros, pp. 16-22.

19 $4 y2), a place not known to the present writer.

20 See Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p. 160, note 3.

21 Chron. Eccles., ii. 97.

PYRIAC DITER STUUR GE

and Munich, cod. Syr. 4 (Orient.

He wrote a Ay

He must, it would seem, be distinguished from another Abraham of Kashkar, who lived about the same time, and with whom Asse- This Abraham was a student at Nisibis Thence he went to Hérta (al-Hirah), where he converted some of the heathen inhabitants, visited Egypt and Mount Sinai, and finally settled down as a hermit in a cave on Mount Izla, near Nisibis, where a great number of followers soon gathered about him and a large monastery was built. He introduced stricter rules than heretofore among the ccenobites.?

Theodore, bishop of Mari or Merv, was appointed to this see by

telian dialectics, since several of the translations and treatises of Among his own works ”

837

bishop of Persis, but, being disappointed, to have gone over to the

147).? Hymns of his are also extant.3 Zoroastrian religion. This may or ma : iti \ bra ; Under Mar-abha flourished Abraham of Kashkar (al-Wasit), dis- | tain that Paul sta more A ap eee ee Te oe Pan fam ie tinguished for his acquaintance with philosophy and for his ascetic speaks*?; “Scientia enim agit de rebus proximis et manifestis et ‘Kashir. virtues. He introduced certain reforms into the Persian monas- qu sciri possunt, fides autem de omnibus materiis que remote | teries, After living for some time in a cave at Hazzah,* he betook sunt, neque conspiciuntur neque certa ratione cognoscuntur. Hee himself to J erusalem and thence to Egypt. Returning to his old quidem cum dubio est, illa autem sine dubio. Omne dubium dis- | haunt, he led the life of a hermit for thirty years, travelling into | sensionem parit, dubii absentia

autem unanimitatem. Scientia | the far north as a missionary. He died at Hazzah, but his body | igitur potior est fide, et illam pre hae eligendum est." Bar-

Hebreus speaks of Paul's "admirable introduction to the dialectics (of Aristotle),"> by which he no doubt means the treatise on logic cxtant in a single MS. in the Brit. Mus. It has been edited, with a Latin translation and notes, by Land. _ About this same time Assemani" is said to have had the charge of t tricts of the Persian empire as far a specified "discourses on the fai

he Christians in the remoter dis- sIndia. Among his writings are hed "dis th and against the Manichees and Marcionites," as well as a book of "Greek questions," probably philosophical, bearing the strange title of Aleph Migin.2" All these have perished, but his name will go down to remote posterity as the translator into Syriac of the collection of Indian tales com- monly called Kalilah and Dimnah.*8 Of this work a single copy has come down to our time, preserved in an Oriental library. A transcript of it was first procured by Bickell," who, in conjunction with Benfey, edited the book (Leipsic, 187 6) ; and since then three additional copies of the same original have been got by Sachau.%? That Bodh made his Syriac translation from an Indian (Sanskrit) original, as "Abhd-ishO' asserts, is wholly unlikely ; he no doubt had before him a Pahlavi or Persian version. 1

_Just at this period the Nestorian Church ran a great risk of disruption from an internal schism. Hannana of Hédhaiyabh, the successor of Joseph Hizaya in the school of Nisibis, who had, it is said, a following of 800 pupils,3? had dared to assail the doc. trines and exegesis of Theodore of Mopsuestia and to follow in some points those of Chrysostom.?? He commenced his work at Nisibis, under the metropolitan Aha-dh'abhii(hi),®4 by publishing a revised edition of the statutes of the school.®* During the time of the catholicus Ezekiel (567-580) he brought forward his theological views, which were condemned at a synod held under the next catholicus, Isho'-yabh of Arzdn (581-595),87 and at another synod presided over by his successor, Sabhr-ishd' (596-604).38 On the death of this latter a**

struggle took place between the rival factions, the orthodox Nestorians putting forward as their candidate Gregory of Tell-Besmé,° bishop of Nisibis, whilst the others supported Gregory of Kashkar, a teacher in the school of Mahozé or Sélik (Seleucia).“° The influence of the Persian court decided the matter in favour of the latter, who was a persona grata in the eyes of the queen Shirin and her physician Gabriel of Shiggar (Sinjar),41 a keen Monophysite, who naturally availed himself of this oppor- tunity to harm the rival sect of Christians. Gregory was not, however, a partisan of Hannana, but an orthodox Nestorian, as appears from the account given of the synod over which he pre- sided, by which the Nicene creed was confirmed, the comment- aries of Theodore of Mopsuestia approved, and the memory and writings of Bar-sauma vindicated against his assailants. He died at the end of three years (607), and the archiepiscopal see remained vacant till after the murder of Khosrau II. Parwéz in 628, during which time of persecution Babhai the archimandrite distinguished himself as the leader and guide of the Nestorian Church. In the overthrow of Khosrau the oppressed Nestorians bore a part, more especially Shamta and Kurta, the sons of the noble Yazdin, who had been the director of the land-tax of the whole kingdom and had amassed an enormous fortune, which the king confiscated. To return to Hannana, his works, as enumerated by ‘Abhd-isho’,4 are—commentaries on Genesis, Job, Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, the Song of Songs, the twelve minor prophets, the Gospel of St Mark, and the epistles of St Paul; expositions of the (Nicene) creed and the liturgy; on the occasions of the celebration of Palm

22 Tn the Preface to his Logic, as translated by Land (see note 25 below).

23 Chron. Eccles., ii. 97. 24 Add. 14660, f. 55b; see Wright, Catal., p. 1161.

25 Anecd. Syr., iv., Syr. text, pp. 1-32; transl., pp. 1-30; notes, pp. 99-113.

26 B.0., iii. 1, 219. Ka

27 Assemani, loc. cit., note 1, proposes to read Aleph Mellin, ‘the Thousand Words”; but Aleph Migin is more likely to be a corruption of some Greek word.

28 The Syriac title keeps the older forms Kalilagh and Damnagh.

29 Géttingen, university library, MS. Orient. 18d.

30 Berlin, Royal Library, Sachau 139, 149, 150.

31 See Keith-Falconer, Kalzlah and Dimnah, Introd., xlii. sq.

32 B.0., iii. 1, 81, note 2, 487. 33 Ibid., iii. 1, 84, note 3.

34 Who was probably, therefore, the immediate predecessor of Gregory (596).

35 B.0., iii. 1, 83, at tlle end of the first note. 36 Ibid., ii. 413 ; ili. 1, 435.

37 Ibid., ii. 415, iii. 1,108 ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 105, note 3.

38 B.O., ii. 4155 iii. 1, 82, 441.

33 Not aromatarius, as Assemani translates Besinayd.

40 B.O., ii. 416; ili. 1, 449. We need not believe the statements of Bar-Hebrzus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 107.

41 See B.O., ii. 404-406, 416, 472; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 109 ; Noldeke Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p. 358, in the note ; Hoffmann, Ausziige, pp. 118-121

42 B.0., iii. 1, 452. 43 See B.O., iii. 1, 471.

44 See Hoffmann, Ausziige, pp. 115-121; Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber p. 383. To Yazdin is ascribed a hymn which appears in Nestorian Psalters, e.g., Wright, Catal., p.135; Zotenberg, Catal., p. 9. 4 B.O., iii. 1, 83-84.

places the periodeutes Bodh, who Bodh,

Hannana of Hé- dhaiyabh.

838

Sunday, Golden Friday,! rogations,? and the invention of the cross ; a discourse on Palm Sunday ; and various other writings in which he attacked the teaching of Theodore of Mopsuestia, and which the church therefore placed on its index cxpurgatorius.3

Josephof The doctrines of Hannana found a warm champion in Joseph of

Hazzii.

Isho'- yabh I. of Arzon.

Méshiha- zékha,

Dadh- isho.

Bare 'idta.

Hazza (Arbél or Irbil),4 with whom Babhai the archimandrite entered into controversy.> He is said to have composed some 1900 tracts, of which 'Abhd-isho' mentions about a dozen as " profitable," whence we may conjecture that the rest were more or less deeply tinged with heresy. The chief of them are—on theory (or specula- tion) and practice ; the book of the treasurer, containing the solu- tion of abstruse questions ; on misfortunes and chastisements ; on the reasons of the principal feasts of the church; the book of the histories of the Paradise of the Orientals, containing many notices of ecclesiastical history ; an exposition of the vision of Ezekiel and of the vision of St Gregory; of the book of the merchant®; of (pseudo-)Dionysius (the Areopagite) ; and of the capita scientiz or heads of knowledge (of Evagrius) ; besides epistles on the exalted character of the monastic life. Joseph appears to have been made a bishop in his latter days, and to have taken the name

of ‘Abhd- ishd‘; at least a MS. in the India Office (No. 9) contains a traet on Zech. iv, 10 (f. 241b), and three series of questions addressed by a pupil to his teacher, by “ Mar ‘Abhd-ishd‘, who is Joseph Hazzaiya” (f. 298a).”

_ The successor of Ezekiel as catholicus of the Nestorians was Ish6é‘-yabh of Arzon, 581-595.8 He was a native of Beth ‘Arbayé, educated at Nisibis under Abraham (see above, p. 836), and subse- quently made bishop of Arzon (’‘Apfavyyij). He managed to in- gratiate himself with the Persian monarch Hormizd IV. (579-590), by whose influence he was raised to the archiepiscopate ; and he continued to stand in favour with his son and successor Khosrau I], Parwéz, as well as with the Greek cmperor Maurice. Doubtless both found the Christian archbishop a convenient ambassador and agent in public and private affairs, for Maurice had given his daughter Maria in marriage to Khosrau.9 He was also a friend of the Arab king of Herta (al-Hirah), Abi Kabis Nu‘man ibn al- Mundhir, who had becn converted to Christianity, with his sons, by Simeon, bishop of Hérta, Sabhr-isho’, bishop of Lashom, and the monk Isho’-zékha. Ona pastoral visit to this part of his diocese, the catholicus was taken ill, and died in the convent of Hind (the daughter of Nu‘man) at al-Hirah. Among his works are men- tioned” a treatise against Eunomius, one against a heretical (Mono- physite) bishop who had entered into argument with him, twenty- two questions regarding the sacraments of the church,!2 an apology, and synodical canons and epistles.

Méshiha-zékha, also called Ishd‘-zékha or Zékha-ishd’, was a monk of Mount Izla.44 When many of his brotherhood were ex- peed from their convent by Babhai the archimandrite,!* he betook himself to the district of Dasen,1° and founded there a monastery, which was henceforth known as Béth Rabban Zékha-isho’ or, for shortness’ sake, Béth Rabban simply.!7_ He was the author of an ecclesiastical history, which ‘Abdh-ish6′ praises as being “exact.”

Dadh-ishs‘ was the successor of Abraham of Kashkar as abbot of the great convent on Mount Izla,)8 apparently during the life- time of the latter, who lived toa great age (see above p- 837).19 He composed a

treatise on the monastic life and another entitled On Silence in Body and in Spirit, a discourse on the consecra- tion of the cell, besides funeral sermons and epistles. He also translated or edited a commentary on The Paradise of the Western Monks (probably meaning the Paradise of Palladius and J erome), and annotated the works of Isaiah of Scete.2

Hereabout too is the date of the monk Bar-‘idta,2! the founder of the convent which bears his name,” a contemporary of Babhai of Izli and Jacob of Béth ‘Abhé.2? He was tlre author of a monastic history, which is often quoted by Thomas of Margi,* and seems to — ee eee ees

1 The first Friday after Pentecost or Whitsunday, with reference to Acts iii. 6.

2 See B.O., ii. 413. 3 Ibid., iii. 1, 84, note 3.

4 Ibdid., iii. 1, 100; Hoffmann, Ausziige, p.117. Assemani confounds Joseph Hazzaya with the older Joseph Huzaya, and translates Hazzaya by “videns” instead of “ Hazzeus.”

5 £.g., his letters to Joseph of Hazza, B.O., iii. 1, 97, and the tract De Unione, ib., 95.

é According to Assemani, B.0., iii. 1, 102, note 4, of Isdiah of Seete, who, according to Palladius, was originally a merchant.

? See Hoffmann, Avusztige, p. 117, note 1057.

8 B.O., ii. 415, iii.1, 108 ; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 105, note3; Néldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p. 347, note 1.

9 Sec Noldeke, op. cit., p. 283, note 2, and comp. p. 287, note 2.

10 Bar-Hebreus (Chron. Eccles., ii. 105) tries to make out that Nu’man was a Monophysite, and that Isho’-yabh was trying to pervert him at the time of his death. But in such matters he is hardly a trustworthy witness.

1 B.O., iii. 1, 108.

12 See a specimen in Assemani's Catal. of the Vutican Library, iii. 280, No. cl., v.

13 Probably a defence of his doctrines addressed to the emperor Maurice; see B.0., iii. 1, 109, in the note.

14 B.O., iii. 1, 216, note 1, See above, p. 836, note 26.

15 Ibid., iii. 1, 88-89. 16 Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 202 sq.

W B.O., iii. 1, 216 note 1, 255 in the note: Hoffmann, Ausztige, p. 206.

18 B.O., iii. 1, 98, note 1. 19 Hoffmann, Azusziige, p. 173.

20 B.0., iii. 1, 99. 21 Ibid., ii. 415, col. 2. Pronounce Bar-'itta.

22 B.0., iii. 2, decelxxix.; Hoffmann, Ausztige, p. 181.

3 Comp. Wright, Catal., p. 187, No. 152. 23 B.O., iii. 1, 453, 458, 471.

SYRIAC LITHRARDYe Re

[7TH CENT,

have been a work of considerable value. He must be distinguished from a later Bar-'idta, of the convent of Sélibha, near the village of Héghla on the Tigris,25 with whom Assemani has confounded him.26

In the Bibl. Orient., iii. 1, 230, 'Abhd-isho' mentions an historian whose name is given by Assemani as Simeon Karkhaya, with the additional information that he was bishop of Karkha and flourished under the patriarch Timothy I. about 800. His name seems however, to have been wrongly read, and he appears to have lived at a much earlier date. At least Elias bar Shinaya speaks in his Chronicle" of one Simeon Barkaya 8 as the author of a chronicle (in at least two books), who wrote in the reign of the Persian kine Khosrau IJ. Parwéz, A. Gr. 902=591 a.p. 7

The name of Sabhr-ishd' the catholicus carries us over into the Sabhr. 7th century. He wasa native of Pérdz-abadh in Bath Garmai, ish!

became bishop of Lashom, and was raised to the archiepiscopate in 596 by the favour of Khosrau II. Parwéz. On the murder of his father-in-law Maurice (November 602), Khosrau resolved upon war, and took the field in 604, when he besieged and captured the fortress of Dara, the first great success in a fearful struggle of twenty-five years. Bar-Hebreus states that Sabhr-isho' accom. panied him and died during the siege 8°; but other authorities say, doubtless more correctly, that he died at Nisibis.2! He is said to have been the author of an ecclesiastical history, of whieh a frag- ment, relating to the emperor Maurice, was supposed to be extant in Cod. Vat. clxxxiii.; but Guidi has shown that this is incorrect, and that the said fragment is merely an extract from a legendary life of Sabhr-ish' by some later hand (7.D.I2.G., xl., pp- 559-561).

About the same time with Sabhr-isho', if Assemani be right,®? we Simeon may place Simeon of Béth Garmai, who translated into Syriac the of Béth This version seems unfortunately to be Garmai,

Chronicle of Eusebius. entirely lost.

With the 7th century begins the slow decay of the native litera- Period of ture of the Syrians, to which the frightful sufferings of the people Greco- during the great war with the Persians in its first quarter largely Persian

During all those years we meet with scarcely a War,

contributed.*4 name of any note in letters, more especially in western Syria. Paul of Tella and Thomas of Harkel were, it is true, labouring at the revised versions of the Old and New Testaments in Alexandria,® but even there they were scared by the Persian hosts, who took possession of the city in 615 or 616, shortly after the capture of Jerusalem by another army in 614.36 A third diligent worker under

the same adverse circuinstances was the abbot Paul, who fied from Abbot his convent in Syria to escape the Persian invasion, and took refuge Paul,

in the island of Cyprus. Here he occupied himself with rendering into Syriac the works of Gregory Nazianzen.3" Of this version, which was completed in two volumes in 624, there are several old MSS. in the British Museum.%8 This Paul was also the translator of the Octoéchus of Severus, of which there is a MS. in the British Museum, Add. 17134, dated 675.29 To this collection he him- self contributed a hymn on the holy chrism and a translation of the " Gloria in excelsis."

The name of Mariitha is the first that deserves mention here, Maratha more, however, on account of his ecclesiastical weight and position of Tagh- He was a native of Shurzak (2), a village rith.

than his literary merit. in the diocese of Béth Nuhadhré,*! was ordained priest in the con- vent of Nardus, lived for twenty years in the convent of Zakkai or Zaccheus at Callinicus (ar-Rakkah), and went thence to Edessa for purposes of study. On returning to the East, he resided in the convent of Mar Matthew at Mosul, where he occupied himself with remodelling its rules and orders. He sided with the Monophysite party at the Persian court, and, after the death of the physician Gabriel," found it advisable to retire to 'Akéla (al-Kifah).® He was elevated to the dignity of metropolitan bishop of Taghrith in 640, after the establishment of peace between the Greeks and

25 See Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 181, note 1414. 26 B.O., iii. 1, 458. 27 See Rosen, Catal., p. 88, col. 1, 2.

°8 The difference in writing between Jao fo and Laces is not great. The pronunciation of the word Leses is not quite certain.

29 B.O., ii, 415, iii. 1, 441 sq.; Baethgen, Fragmente syr. u. arab. Historiker, pp. 36, 119. 30 Chron. Eccles., ii. 107.

31 Chron. Eccles., loc. cit., note 2; B.O., iii. 1, 441, col. 1.

32 Assemani, Catal., iii. 387. 33 B.0., iii. 1, 168, 633.

84 See the remarks of Néldeke in Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p. 299, note 4.

35 See above, p. 825. Thomas of Harkel also compiled a liturgy (B.0., ii. 92, col. 1), and is said to have translated from Greek into Syriac five other liturgies (idid., col. 2), viz., those of Gregory Nazianzen, Basil, Gregory Nyssen, Diony- sius the Areopagite, and John Chrysostom, 3

36 See Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, pp. 291-292; Chronique de Michel le Grand, p. 222; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Syr., p. 99.

37 See BO), ily ls ieee

38 See the fine series of MSS. deseribed in Wright's Catal., pp. 423-435. One of these is dated 790, another 845. Two other MSS. (ibid., pp. 436-438) seem to contain part of the older version of the Nestorians (B.0., iii. 1, 24, note 1).

39 Wright, Catal., p. 330 sg. The translator is wrongly described in the codex as "bishop of Edessa" (see above, p. 834, note 15). His convent was probably that of Ken-neshré, of which both John bar Aphtonya (see_above, p. 833) and John Psaltés or Calligraphus were abbots. Compare B.0., ii. 54.

40 B.O., ii, 416, 418.

41 See Hoffmann, Ausztige, pp. 208-216, but especially p. 215.

42 See above, p. 837.

43 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eceles., ii. 111; B.O., ii. 416.

So a SS SE GS © ES ce a

a a See

Yonq

7TH CENT. |

organizer of the Jacobite Church in the East, which

(Herat). Maratha died in 649.

to the clder Maritha of Maiperkat.?

of the water on the eve of the Epiphany, and sedris.4

Aristotle, his commentary on the Ilept épunvelas, and his letters to the priest Aitilaha of Mosul on certain terms in the Iept épunveias, and to the periodeutes Yaunan or Jonas on some points in the logic of Aristotle1® Of his astronomical and geographieal studies there are a few examples in Brit. Mus. Add. 14538, ff. 153-155, such as whether the heaven surrounds the earth in the form of a wheel or sphere, on the habitable and uninhabitable portions of the earth, on the measurement of the heaven and the earth and the space between them, and on the motions of the sun and moon.!? In the Royal Library at Berlin there is a short treatise of his on the astrolabe. 3 More or less theological in their nature are his letter to the priest and periodeutes Basil of Cyprus, on the 14th of Nisan, A. Gr. 976 (665 A.p.),14a treatise on the weeks of Daniel, and letters to Sergius, abbot of Shigear (Sinjar), on two discourses of Gregory Nazianzen.16 He is also said to have drawn up a liturgy.l"

John I., Jacobite patriarch of Antioch, was called from the con- vent of Eusébhona at Tell-'Adda to the archiepiscopal throne in 631, and died in December 648.18 Bar-Hebraus tells us that he

- translated the Gospels into Arabic at the command of the Arab

emir 'Amr ibn Sa'd. He is better known as the author of numer- ous sedras and other prayers, whence he is commonly called Yohan- nan dé-sedhrau(hi), or "John of the Sedris." He also drew up a liturgy. 19

During the second quarter of this century, from 633 to 636, the Muhammadan conquest of Syria took place. The petty Arab king-

7 ut doms of the Lakhmites (al-Hirah), the Tha‘labites and Kindites, f Sym.

and the Ghassinites, as well as the wandering tribes of Mesopotamia, were absorbed ; and the Persians were beaten back into their own country, quickly to be overrun in its turn. The year 638 witnessed the last-effort of the Greek empire to wrest Syria from the invaders ; the Muslim yoke was no longer to be shaken off. The effects of this conquest soon begin to make themselves manifest in the litera- ture of the country. The more the Arabic language comes into use, the more the Syriac wanes and wastes away; the more Muham- madan litcrature flourishes, the more purely Christian literature pines and dwindles ; so that from this time on it becomes necessary to compile grammars and dictionaries of the old Syriac tongue, and to note and record the correct reading and pronunciation of words in the Scriptures and other books, in order that the understand- ing of them may not be lost.

Among the small band of Monophysite scholars who made them- selves conspicuous during the latter half of the 7th century the most famous name is that of Jacob of Edessa.2° He was a native of “En-débha (the Wolf’s well), a village in the district of Gumyah (al-Jimah), in the province of Antioch. The date of his birth is not mentioned, but it may have been about 640 or a little earlier.2! He studied under Severus Sébdkht at the famous convent of Ken- neshreé, where he learned Greek and the accurate reading of the

1 The circumstances are given in detail by Bar-Hebreus (Chron. Eceles., ii. 119 sq.) and Assemani (B.0., ii. 419).

2 Sce Brit. Mus. Add. 14645, f. 198a (Wright, Catal., p. 1118).

3 See above, p. 829. From the commentary are taken the passages quoted in the Catena of Severus. See Assemani, Catal., iii. 11 (on Eixod., xv. 25), 24, and Wright, Catal., p. 910.

4 See Brit. Mus. Add. 14727, f. 140a; 17267, f. 17b; 17254, f. 164a ; 17128, f£.91b.

5 According to Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles.,i. 275; B.O., ii. 8834. Dionysius of Tell-Mahré gives 644.

6 On the Persian name Sébdkht see Noldeke, Gesch. des Artachsir 1 Papakén, in Beitrdge 2. Kunde d. indogerm. Sprachen, iv. 49, note 4; Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p. 396, note 1. 7 See Wright, Catal., p. 598, col. 1.

8 See B.O., ii. 885; Bar-Hebraus, Chron. Jogo. 16 Oise

9 Compare Renan, De Philos. Peripat. ap. Syros, pp. 29, 30.

10 See Brit. Mus. Add. 14660 and 17156 (Wright, Catal., pp. 1160-63), and the Catal. of the Royal Library of Berlin, Sachau 226, 6, 9.

ll Wright, Catal., p. 1008. 12 See Sachau, Ined. Syr., pp. 127-1384.

18 Alter Bestand 87, 2 (Kurzes Verzeichniss, p. 32). 14 Same MS., 3.

15 Wright, Catal., p. 988, col.2. 16 Ibid., p. 432, col.2. 17 B.O., ii. 468.

18 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., 1.275; B.O., ii. 335. But Dionysius of Tell-

Mahré says 650; B.0., i. 425. 19 Berlin, Sachau 185, 6. vn | 20 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 289; B.O., i. 468, ii. 335. Assemani tries) hard in vol. i. to prove that he was not 2 Monophysite (p. 470 sq.), but in vol. | ii. 337 he gives up the attempt in despair. Compare Lamy, Dissert. de Syrorum) Fide, &ec., p. 206 sq.

***1 The dates given in B.0., i. 469, seem to be utterly wrong.**

Persians,' and was the first real maphriin (maphréyaina) and so rapidly in- creased in numbers and influence that he was ealled upon to ordain bishops for such remote regions as Segestan (Sistan) and Harew His life was written by his suc- cessor Denha.* Maratha eompiled a liturgy and wrote a comment- ary on the Gospels, both of which are

sometimes wrongly assigned t.° He was also the author of short discourses on New (or Low) Sunday, and on the conseeration as well as of some hymns

Contemporary with M&riitha, under the patriarch Athanasius

. Gammala (died in 6315) and his successor John, flourished Severus Sebokht ® of Nisibis,' bishop of the convent of Ken-neshré, at this time one of the chief seats of Greek learning in western Syria. He devoted himself, as might be expected, to philosophical and mathe- matical as well as theological studies.® Of the first we have speci- mens in his treatise on the syllogisms in the Analytica Priora of

Th RAT Ww RE 839

Scriptures. Thence he went to Alexandria, but we are not told how long he remained there. After his return to Syria he was appointed bishop of Edessa in 679-680 22; but Bar-Hebreus says that he was ordained by the patriarch Athanasius II., 684-687, which seems more probable, as they werc intimate friends, If he was appointed in 684, the three or four years for which he held this office would terminate in 687-688, in which latter year Julian Romaya (or "' the Soldier") 23 was eleeted patriarch. Apparently Jacob was very strict in the enforcement of eanonieal rules, and thereby offended a portion of his elergy. He would seem to have appealed to the patriarch and his fellow- bishops, who were in favour of temporizing ; whcreupon Jacob burnt a copy of the rules before the gate of Julian's convent, at the same time crying aloud, "I burn with fire as superfluous and useless the canons which ye trample under foot and heed not." He then betook himself to the convent at Kaisiim, a town near Samosita, and Habbibh was appointed to Edessa in his stead. After a while the monks of Eusébhona invited Jacob to their convent, and there he taught for eleven years the Psalms and the reading of the Scriptures in Greek, the study of which language had fallen into desuetude. Owing to disputes with some of the brethren "who hated the Greeks," he left this house and went to the great convent at Tell- 'Adda, where he worked for nine years more at his revised version of the Old Testament.?4 On the death of Habbibh Jacob was re- called to Edessa, where he resided for four inonths, at the end of which time he returned

to Tell-‘Adda to fetch his library and. pupils, but died there on 5th June 708.25 In the literature of his country Jacob holds much the same place as Jerome among thie Latin fathers. He was, for his time, a man of great culture and wide reading, being familiar with Greek and with older Syriac writers. Of Hebrew he probably understood very little, but he was always ready, like Aphraates, to avail himself of the aid of Jewish scholars, whose opinion he often cites. He appears before us as at once theologian, historian, philosopher, and grammarian, as a translator of various Greek works, and as the indefatigable correspondent of many students who sought his advice and assist- ance from far and near. Asa theologian, Jacob wrote commentaries on the Old and New Testaments, which are cited by later authors, such as Dionysius bar Salibi2‘ and Bar-Hebreus, as well as in the large Catena of the monk Severus”, further, scholia on the whole Scriptures, of which specimens may be found in S. Ephraemi Opera. Syr.8 and in Phillips’s Scholéa on some Passages of the Old Testament (1864). His discourses on the six days of ereation are extant at Leyden and Lyons.° This was his latest work, bcing unfinished at the time of his death ; it was completed by his friend George, bishop of the Arab tribes. Like many other doctors of the Syrian Church, Jacob drew up an anaphora or liturgy,! and revised the liturgy of St James, the brother of our Lord.? He also composed orders of bap- tism,*° of the consecration of the water on the eve of the Epiphany,4 and of the solemnization of matrimony,® with which we may con- neet his translation of the order of baptism of Severus* and the tract upon the forbidden degrees of affinity.” The Book of Treasures ® contained expositions of the Eucharistic service, of the consecration of the water, and of the rite of baptism, probably identical with or similar to those which are found separately in MSS.®9 He likewise arranged the horologium or canonical hours of the ferial days,* and drew up a calendar of feasts and saints’ days for the whole year.* Of his numerous eanons,” those addressed to the priest Addai have been edited by Lamy, Dissert. de Syrorum Fide, iten JOn OS She and De Lagarde, Peliquie Juris Eccles. Antiquissime, p. 117 sq.”

22 According to the calculation of Dionysius of Tell-Mahre, 677; see B.O., i. 426.

23 So called because he had in his younger days served along with his father in the imperial army. _ _ 24 See above, p- 825. :

25 According to Dionysius of Tell-Mahré, B.O., i. 426, a.p. 710; but Elias bar Shinaya confirms the earlier date. See Baethgen, Fragmente syr. u. arab. His- toriker. – 40, 121. Ne

26 Sod Bibl. Med. Laurent. et Palat. Codd. Orientt. Catal., p. 85, No. xlviii. :

27 B.O., i. 487-488 ; Cod. Vat. cili. (Catal., iii. 7); Brit. Mus. Add. 12144 (Wright, Catal., p. 908). The former MS. contains a brief exposition of the Pentateuch, Job, Joshua, and Judges by Jacob, loc. cit., pp. 9-11. 28 B.O., i. 489-498.

29 See Brit. Mus. Add. 14488 and 17198, ff. 55a, 61a; eompare Cod. Vat. v.

tal., ii. pp. 12, 18). ;

& Tocien Cod. é (1) Gol. (see Catal. Codd. Orientt., v. 69, aud Land, Anecd. Syr., i. 2-4); Lyons, No. 2 (see Neubauer in Archives des Missions scientifiques et littéraires, 8 ser., vol. i. p. 568, Paris, 1873). The Paris MS. is merely a partial copy of the Leyden one (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 197). Itis cited in Brit. Mus. Add. 14781, f. 98b (Wright, Catal., p. 854, col. 2, at the foot), and in the Bod- leian Catal., p. 462, No. 5. Another Paris MS. (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 213) con- tains the punctuation and explanation of difficult words and phrases in this work. 31 B.0.,i1.476. Itis extant in many MSS.

32 Jbid.; Brit. Mus. Add. 14691, f. 2b, and elsewhere. Whether he was the translator of the anaphora of Ignatius, we are unable to affirm or deny.

33 B.O., i. 477. 34 Ibid., 486, col. 1.

35 E.g., Zotenberg, Catal., pp. 66, 67. 36 H.g., Rosen, Catal., p. 61, eol. 2.

37 Cod. Vat. xxxvii. (Catal., ii. 244). 38 B.O., 1.487.

39 E.g., the Eucharist, Berlin, Sachau 218, 4 (addressed to the Stylite George of Sérugh); Brit. Mus. Add. 14496, f. 1a (Wright, Catal., p. 224). The similar exposition edited by Assemani (B.0., i. 479) is addressed to the priest Thomas ; comp. Brit. Mus. Add. 17215, f. 22b._ The consecration of the water, Cod. Vat. ecev., in Mai, Scripit. Vett. Nova Coll., v. The order of baptism, Brit. Mus. 14496, f. 23a (a mere fragment). 40 Brit. Mus. Add. 14704 ; Paris, Anc. fonds 78.

41 See Catal. Vat., ii. 250-272 ; and comp. Berlin, Sachau 39, 4. 42 B.0., i. 477.

43 See also Kayser, Die Canones Jacob's von Edessa dibersetzt und erléutert, zum Theil auch zuerst im Grundtext verdffentlicht, 1886.

Under this hcad we may mention the Scholion de Diaconissis carumque Munere (Catal. Vat., ii. 8319) and the Scholion de Fori- bus Ecclesie dum Ordinationes aut alia Sacra celebrantur oecluden- dis (Cod. Vat. ccciv., in Mai, Seriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.). Jacob also composed homilies, of which a few survive in manuscript: for example—(1) that Christians are not to offer a lamb after the Jewish fashion, nor oxen and sheep, on behalf of the deceased, nor to use pure wine and unleavened bread in celebrating the Eucharist ; (2) against the use of unleavened bread; (3) against the Armenians as Dyophysites, and because they offend against these doctrines +; (4) against certain impious men and transgressors of the law of God, who trample under foot the canons of the church? To these may be added his metrical discourses on the Trinity and the incarnation of the word* and on the faith against the Nes- torians.¢ Whether the treatise De Causa omnium Causarum® really belongs to him can hardly be decided till it has been published. The remarks in the Bodleian Catalogue, p. 585, note, point to a writer of much later date. The loss of Jacob's Chronicle is greatly to be regretted ; only a few leaves, all more or less mutilated, remain to us in Brit. Mus. Add. 14685.6 The author's design was to continue the Chronicle of Eusebius on the same plan, from the twentieth year of the

reign of Constantine down to his own time. The introduction was divided into four sections, the first of which treated of the canon of Eusebius and the error of three years in his calculation ; the second of the dynasties contemporary with the Roman empire, but omitted by Eusebius ; the third explained what dynasties were coordinated by Jacob with the Roman empire ; and the fourth contained separate chronologies of each of these dynasties. Then followed the chronological canon, beginning with Olympiad celxxvi. The last monarchs mentioned in the mutilated MS. are Heraclius I. of Constantinople, Ardashér ITI. of Persia, and the caliph Aba Bakr. This work, which was finished by the anthor in 692," has been extensively used by subsequent Syrian historians, both Jacobite and Nestorian, such as Bar-Hebreus,® Elias bar Shinaya,® &c., and it is therefore admitted by 'Abhd-ishS' into his list of books (B.0., iii. 1, 229). As a translator of Greek works Jacob deserves notice, not so much on account of any Aristotelian labours of his,!° as because of his version of the Homiliz Cathedrales of Severus, a work of capital importance, which he finished in 701.0 He also revised and corrected, with the help of Greek MSS., the abbot Paul's version of the Octoéchus of Severus (sce above, p. 838).?2 'The statement of Bar-Hcbreus that Jacob translated the works of Gregory Nazianzen seems to be erroneous. He merely retouched, we believe, the version of the abbot Paul (see above, p. 838), to which he probably added notes, illustrative extracts from the writings of Severus, and Athanasius's redaction of the Zwaywyh Kal é&tynots toropisv appended to the homily In Sancta Lumina.4 He made the Syriac version of the history of the Rechabites as narrated by Zosimus, which he is said to have translated from Hebrew into Greek and thence into Syriac.8 Of philosophical writings of his we may specify the Enchiridion, a tract on philosophical terms.16 The metrical composition on the same subject contained in two Vatican MSS. may perhaps also be by him." As a grammarian Jacob occupies an important placc in Syriac literature. Nestorian scholars, such as Narsai and his pupils, more especially Joseph Hizaya (sce above, p. 836), had no doubt elaborated a system of accentuation and interpunction, which vies in minuteness with that of the Jews, and had probably begun to store up the results of their studies in Massoretic MSS. of the Bible, like those of which we have alrcady spoken (above, p. 826). But Jacob was the first to givea decided

impulse to these pursuits among the Western Syrians, and to induce the monks of Eusébhind and Tell-‘Adda to compile Massoretic MSS. like those of their brethren in the East, and to pay attention to minute accuracy in the matter of the diacritical points and the signs of interpunction. Hence we usually find appended to such MSS. of the Jacobite schools the epistle of Jacob to George,

1 See Bibl. Med. Laurent. et Palat. Codd. MSS. Orientt. Catal., pp. 107-108.

2 Wright, Catal., pp. 984, col. 2; 996, col. 2.

3 Catal. Vat., ii. 516. 4 Ibid., iii. 353.

5 See B.0., i. 461-468. Besides the MS. described by Assemani, there are two in the Bodleian Library, Hunt. 123 (Payne Smith, Catal., 585) and Bodl. Or. 732, and a third at Berlin, Sachau 180, with an excerpt in Sachau 203.

6 See Wright, Catal., p. 1062. :

7 See Elias bar Shinaya in Rosen, Catal., p. 88, col. 1. 8 B.0., ii. 313-314.

9 See, for example, the notes in Abbeloos, Bar-Hebrei Chron. Eccles., ii. 55, 103, 107,123; Bacthgen, Fragmente syr. u. arab. Historiker, extracted from Elias bar Shinaya, p. 3; and the anonymous epitomizer in Land, Anecd. Syr., i. 2-22, transl. pp. 103-121 (Brit. Mus. Add. 14643 ; Wright, Catal., p. 1040).

10 Even the translation of the Categories in Cod. Vat. elviii. (Catal., iii. 306 ; comp. Renan, De Philos. Peripat. ap. Syros, p. 34) is not by him, but by Sergius of Ras‘ain (see above, p. 834).

e ~ ae ee i: a ; Cod. Vat. cxli.; Brit. Mus. Add. 12159, dated 868 (Wright, abat., Pp. 534 sq.).

12 B.O., i. 487 ; Cod. Vat. xciv., written between 1010 and 1033; Brit. Mus. Add. 17134, dated 675 (Wright, Catal., p. 330 sq.).

13 B.0., ii. 307, col. 25 iie ll 2as cole.

14 See Wright, Catal., pp. 423-497. 15 Ibid., p. 1128. 16 Ibid., p. 984.

17 Cod. Vat. xxxvi. and xey. (Catal., ii. 243 and 516). In the latter there are three other poems ascribed to him, the first theological, the second with the title De Philosophis et Bonis Artibus, and the third entitled On the Mind. In

ie PRs. these poems are said to be by Jacob of Sértigh, which seems altogether unlikely.

bishop of Sériigh, on Syrian orthography,?8 and a tract by him on the pointing of verbal and nominal forms and on the signs of interpunction and accentuation, besides a tract of apparently earlier date on the same signs, with a list of their names, b Thomas the deacon.!9 Further, Jacob's acquaintance with the Greek language and Greek MSS. suggested to hima striking simpli. fication of the systcm of vowel-points which was now probably beginning to be introduced among the Easterns.2° He saw that all the vowel-sounds of the Syriac language, as spoken by the Edessenes, could be represented by meaus of the Greek vowel Ictters, a style of pointing which would be far clearer to the reader thana series of minute dots. Accordingly he, or his school, put 4 for &, 0 for ¢ (a), € for e, H for 7, oy for w; and this system has been adhcred to by the Western Syrians or Jacobites since his time.2 J, acob wished, however, to go a step farther, and sought to introduce a reform for which his countrymen were not prepared. The constant perusal of Greek MSS. had accustomed him to see the vowels placed on an equality with the consonants as an integral part of the alphabet ; and, considering how much this contributed to clearness of sense and facility of reading, he desired to see the like done in Syriac. For this purpose he himself designed a set of vowel-signs, to be written on a line with and

between the consonants ; and for the purpose of making this invention known to his countrymen he wrote a Syriac Grammar,® in which he used them largely in the paradigms. The innovation, however, found no favour, and the work was supposed to be utterly lost, until a few fragments (partly palimpsest) were simultancously discovered by the present writer and Dr Neubauer.*4 Finally, amid all his labours as priest and bishop, teacher and author, Jacob found time to correspond with a large number of persons in all parts of Syria ; and these epistles are often among his most interesting writings." One of his principal correspondents was John the Stylite of the convent of Litarba (Alrap8a plur., but also Alrapyov, Avrapyov ; al-Atharib, near Aleppo); others were Eustathius of Dara, Kyrisona of Dara, the priest Abraham, the deacon George, and the sculptor Thomas. To the priest Addai he wrote on the orders of baptism and the consecration of the water,2" to the deacon Bar- hadh- bé-shabba against the council of Chalcedon,® to the priest Paul of Antioch on the Syriac alphabet, in reply to a letter about the defects of the said alphabet as compared with the Greek,29 and to George, bishop of Scrigh, on Syriac orthography (see above).

After Jacob we may name his friend Athanasius of Balad, who Athana- also studied under Severus Sébokht at Ken-neshré, and devoted sius Il. himself to the translation of Greek works, philosophical and theo- of Balad. logical, in the convent of Mar Malchus in Tar 'A bhdin or at Nisibis, where he for a time officiated as priest. "He was advanced to the patriarchate in 684 and sat till 687 or 688.29 In the year 645 he translated the Jsagdgé of Porphyry, with an introduction, which seems to be chiefly derived from the preface of the Greek comment: ator Ammonius*!; and he also edited a version of an anonymous

18 See B.0., i. 477 (No. 6) and p. 478 (No. 8). ;

19 See, for exainple, Catal. Vat., iii. 290; Brit. Mus., Rosen, pp. 69, 70 (Wright, p- 110); Paris, Zotenberg, Catal., p. 30. The letter and tracts have heen pub- lished by Phillips, A Letter by Mar Jacob, Bishop of Edessa, on Syriae Orthography, &ce. (1869; the third Appendix, pp. 85-96, 1870), and Martin, Jacobi epi Edessent Epistola ad Georgium epum Sarugensem de Orthographia Syriaca (1869). On the possible

identity of Thomas the deacon with Thomas of Harkel, see Phillips, third Appendix, p. 90. .

20 In the year 899 we find the fully developed Nestorian system of vowel-points in use (Brit. Mus. Add. 12138, see the facsimile in Wright's Catal., pl. xiii.). We may therefore fairly place its beginnings as early as Jacob's time. !

21 The credit of inventing this vowel-system is usually given to Theophilus of Edessa, who died in 785-786 (B.0., i. 64, 521), though Wiseman brought for- ward to our mind convincing arguments in his Hore Syriac#, pp. 181-188, in favour of the claims of Jacob. We have now, however, a MS. of Jacob's own time in which these Greek vowels are distinctly appended to Syriac words. See Brit. Mus. Add. 17134, f. 83b, in Wright's Catal., p. 337, col. 2, and pl. vi. In this plate, the handwriting of which cannot well be placed later than about

700, we find in 1, 1 the vowel YS (ypsilon) in the word [Aso,2, and in 1. 23 the vowel & in " "

in lines 6, 17, 18, 21, 22, and31. Noone can doubt, we think, that these vowels were added a pr. manu, especially if le compares their forms, particularly the a, with those of the Greek letters on the margin of pl. v. :

22 See Bar-Hebreeus in his Kéthabha dhé-Semhé, as quoted by Martin, Jacques ad' Edesse et les Voyelles Syriennes (Journ. Asiat., 1869, vol. xiii. pp. 458-459), or pp- 194-195 of Martin's edition. Jacob had already before him flie example of the Mandaites, from hase alphabet his figure of &> for ¢ appears to be borrowed.

23 B.O., i. 475, 477.

24 See Brit. Mus. Add, 17217, ff. 37,88 ; 14665, f. 28; in Wright's Catal., ae 78. These were reprinted, with the Oxford fragments (Bod1, 159), by Wrig.

in Fragments of the Las o13 LiNsco 3 50 Z or Syriac Grammar of Jacob of Edessa (1871). ; oF a are bes > see Brit. Mus. Add. 12172, ff. 65a, 73a; 17168, f. 154a. 26 See all these in Brit. Mus. Add. 12172, ff. 65-135 (Wright, Caial., pp. 592-604). Three of these letters have been published, two by Wright in the Journal of Sacred Literature, new series, x. (1861), p. 480 sg., and one by Schroéter in Z.D.M.G., xxiv. (1870), pp. 261-300. 27 B.O., i. 486, oe 11 Pari Mus. Add. 14715, f. 170a; see also Add. 12144, ff. 47a, 52b. 28 Brit. Mus. Add. 14631, f. 14b. 29

B.O., i. 477, No. i 1 30 B.O., ii. 335 ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 287, 293. Dionysius of Tel?- Mahré places his death as late as 704. nilos 31 Cod. Vat. clviii.; Paris, Anc. fouds 161. According to Renan, De P. ‘lah Peripat. ap. Syros, p. 30, note 4, the MSS. elxxxiii. and exevi. of the Bibl. Palat. Medic. contain this translation and not that of Honain.

“=” oo

STH CENT.] eY RIietAOC LITE RATU RE Isagégé, which is found in Brit. Mus. Add. 14660.! At the request of Matthew, bishop of Aleppo, and Daniel, bishop of Edessa, he undertook in 669 a translation of select epistles of Severus of Antioch, and of these the sixth book survives in two MSS.2 He also busied himself with Gregory Nazianzen, as is evidenced by a scholion introductory to the homilies? and the version of the

84]

There is an abridgement of it in Brit. Mus. Add. 17125, f. 81 sq. The commentary on Ecclesiastes is known to us only from the extracts preserved in Severus’s Catena.”

Regarding George, bishop of Martyropolis,24 we can add little or George of nothing to the scanty information collected by Assemani.2> This Martyro- scholar has, however, made a mistake in placing him so early as polis.

oo ON oe OB

i

Zwaywyh kal eEyynows toropidv.4 The only other writings of his with which we are acquainted are an encyclical letter, prohibiting Christians from partaking of the sacrifices of their Muhammadan rulers,® and a couple of sedras.®

He lias, however, misread the name. In the MS., as Professor Guidi informs us, it stands LD OL papad csi Ole, not ql.

The former part of the name seems to be Iavoudpios ; the latter is apparently (as Guidi suggests) a corruption of Kayédiédaros. Whether the poems in Brit. Mus. Add. 18821 and 145478 belong to the trans- lation of Januarius Candidatus or not, we cannotat present determine.

‘Akélayé or Arabs of ‘Akola (al-Kifah), the Ti‘ayé (?), the Tanakh, the Tha‘labites, the Taghlibites, and in general the nomad Arabs of Mesopotamia. Of his works the most important is his translation of the Organon of Aristotle, of which there is a volume in the British Museum, Add.14659,comprising, in its imperfect condition, the Cate- gories, Tlept épunvetas, and the first book of the Analytics, divided into two parts, with introductions and commentaries.” Of this ver- sion a specimen has been edited by Hoffmann, De Hermeneuticis, &c., p. 22 sqg., besides small fragments at pp. 30, 38, 45, and 53. He also compiled a large collection of scholia on the homilies of Gregory Nazianzen, which exhibits a wide range of reading,!! and completed

the Hexaémeron of Jacob of Edessa (see above, p. 839). His other

writings are—a commentary, or more likely scholia, on the Scriptures, cited in the Catena of Severus and by Bar-Hebreus in his Awsar Razé®; a short commentary on the sacraments of the church, treat- ing of baptism, the holy Eucharist, and the consecration of the chrism 14; a homily in twelve-syllable metre on the holy chrism in two shapes!®; another homily on solitary monks, in heptasyllabic metre !6; and a treatise on the Calendar in twelve-syllable metre,” cited by Elias bar Shinaya.18 Like Jacob of Edessa, he carried on an extensive literary correspondence, of which some specimens have luckily been preserved in Brit. Mus. Add. 12154, ff. 222-291, dated from 714 to 718. Several of them are addressed to John the Stylite of Litarba, one of whose letters to Daniel, an Arab priest of the

“circa annum Christi 580.” About a century later would probably be nearer the mark. Two of his pupils were Constantine, bishop of Harran, who may have flourished during the latter part of the 7th century, and his successor Leo, who lived at the very end of it

anu Contemporary with him, and probably an alumnus of the same | and the beginning of the 8th. Constantine wrote several contro- ih Ca- school, was the translator of the poems of Gregory Nazianzen, in the | versial works against the Monophysites, viz.,—an exposition of the lidat#. year 655, whom Assemani calls Senorinus Chididatus of Amid.' | creeds of the councils of Niewa and Chalcedon, a treatise against

Severus (of Antioch), an "anagnésticon" concerning an alleged mutilation of the Trisagion,?" and a reply to a treatise of Simeon (II., Monophysite bishop of Harran).2° "Leo's only literary effort appears to have been a letter to the Jacobite patriarch Elias, whom we have next to notice.

Elias belonged originally to the Dyophysite party in the Syrian Patri- Church, but was converted to the Monophysite sect by the study arch

Neorg Another scholar of note at this time is George, bishop of the Arab | of the writings of Severus. He was a monk of the convent of Gubba Elias, lig of tribes, the pupil and friend of Athanasius II. and Jacob.9 He was | Barraya, and for eighteen years bishop of Apamea (or Famiyah) ne A¥O ordained, it would scem, in 687 or 688, two months after the death | before he was raised to the patriarchate of Antioch (in 709). He tibed of Athanasius, and is said to have died in the first year of Athanasius | died in 724.29 The only work of his known to us is an Apology | LIL, who was consecrated in April 724. His diocese comprised the | addressed to Leo, bishop of Harran, in answer to a letter from him

asking the reasons for Elias's change of creed.39 It was probably written during the time of his episcopate. In it, besides George of Martyropolis and Constantine of Harran, he cites John of Damascus, among whose Greek works is a tract against the Jacobites, addressed to the bishop Elias in defence of Peter, archbishop of Damascus.

_ Lazarus of Béth Kandasa is known to us only through his dis- Lazarus ciple George of Béth Neéké as the compiler of a commentary on the of Béth New Testament, of which there are two volumes in the British Kandasa.

Museum, the one (Add. 14682) containing the Gospels of St John and St Mark, the other (Add. 14683) the third and fourth parts of the Pauline epistles from Galatians to Hebrews.3!_ The commentary on the epistles is merely an abridgement of Chrysostom ; in that on the Gospels use is also made of Jacob of Sériigh, and occasionally of Theodore of Mopsuestia,® Cyril of Alexandria, and Ephraim. He also quotes a passage of nine lines from the Sibylline oracles (ed. Friedlieb, viii. 287-296). At the end of part third of the Pauline epistles there is in Add. 14683 a chronological section, terminating with the accession of the ‘Abbasi caliph al-Mahdi in 775, which probably fixes the date of the author.*8 Much later he cannot have lived, as Add. 14683 is a MS. of the 10th century, having been presentcd to the convent of St Mary Deipara in Skete by the patriarch Abraham (or Ephraim), who sat from 977 to 981. In Brit. Mus. Add. 18295 there is a scholion by Lazarus explaua- tory of a passage in (pseudo-)Dionysius Areopagita.*4

About this time too may have lived the chronicler Daniel bar Daniel Moses the Jacobite, who is cited as an authority by Elias bar bar Shinaya in the years 122, 127, and 131 of the Hijrah, 7.¢., from Moses, 740 to 749 A.p.°°

Theophilus bar Thomas of Edessa is stated by Bar-Hebreus *’ Theo- to have been by religious profession a Maronite. He was addicted philus to the study of astrology, and an anecdote is related by Bar- of Hebreeus of his correspondence with Hasanah, the concubine of Edessa,**

tribe of the Ti‘iyé, is appended, f. 291. The most important of them is one written to the priest and recluse Yéshii‘ of Innib (near ‘Aziz, north of Aleppo), part of which relates to Aphraates aud his works (sce above, p. 827).

Contemporary with these scholars was Daniel of Salah (a village north-east of Midyid in Tir-Abdin),?° who wrote commentaries on the Psalms and Ecclesiastes.2! The former was in three volumes, and was composed at the request of John, abbot of the convent of

= =) =

=

Se B te o> mh

fT i ° SEES SEE a

— -g

) Syros, pp. 32-33.

Kusebius at Kaphra dhé-Bhartha (Kafr al- Barah, near Apamea).””

1 See Wright, Catal., p. 1161, and comp. Renan, op. cit., p. 31.

2 Brit. Mus, Add. 12181 and 14600 (Wright, Catal., pp. 558-569).

3 Wright, Catal., p.441. 4 Ibid., p.425. 5 Zotenberg, Catal., p. 28, col. 2.

6 Wright, Catal., p. 218, col. 1; Zotenberg, Catal., p. 47, col. 1, No. 23, d.

7 Cod. Vat. xevi. (Catal., ii. 521); see B.O., ii. exlix., 502, col. 2; iii. 1, 23, note.

8 Wright, Catal., pp. 775, 483, col. 1.

9 B.O., i. 494; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 298, 303; Hoffmann, De Her- meneuticis apud Syros Aristoteleis, pp. 148-151; Renan, De Philos. Peripat. ap. 10 See Wright, Catal., p. 1163.

1] Brit. Mus. Add.14725, ff.100-215. It was evidently written after the death of

} Athanasius II., as shown by the remark on f. 132a (Wright, Catal., p. 443, col. 1).

The commentary contained in Brit. Mus. Add. 17197, ff. 1-25 (Wright, Catal., p. 441) is perhaps that of Elias, bishop of Shiggar (Sinjar), who flourished about 750, and is expressly stated (B.0., ii. 339) to have compiled a commentary on

| the first volume of Gregory Nazianzen (as translated by Paul). He followed the

older exposition of Benjamin, bishop of Edessa. This Benjamin was the writer ofa letter on the Eucharistic service and baptism (Wright, Catal., p. 1004, col. 2).

12 See Land, Anecd. Syr., i. p. 4.

13 B.0., i. 494-495; comp. Wright, Catal., p. 909, col. 2.

14 Wright, Catal., p. 985.

15 B.0., i. 832; Catal. Vat., iii. 102, No. 188 ; Wright, Catal., p. 848, No. 78.

16 Bodleian Catal., p. 425, No. 88. W7 B.0,1. 495; Catal. Vat., ili. 532.

18 Rosen, Catal., p. 88, Nos. 82, 33 ; comp. also the "Table of the New Moons," in Catal. Vat., ii. 402.

19 It has been printed by De Lagarde, Anal. Syr., pp. 108-134, and partly re- printed by Wright, The Homilies of Aphraates, pp. 19-37. Ryssel has translated and annotated it in Ein Brief Georgs, Bischofs der Araber, an d. Presbyter Jesus, 1883. 20 See Hoffmann in Z.D.M.G., xxxli. 741. :

21 According to a note in Payne Smith's Catal., p. 62, he was bishop of Tella dhé-Mauzélath ; but at the time when he wrote his commentary on the Psalms he was certainly only a priest and abbot of a convent (see Wright, Catal., p. 605, col. 2). ;

22 MSS. part i., Pss. i.-l., Brit. Mus. Add. 17187; part ii., Pss. li.-¢c., Add. 14679, 14668 (only three leaves) (see Wright, Catal., pp. 605-606) ;

Cod. Vat. cly., Pss. i.-lxviii. (Catal. Vat., iii. 297); part iii, Pss. ci.-cl., in Arabic, Berlin, Sachau 55. It is frequently cited by Bar-Hebreus in the Ausar Razé in Seve- rus's Catena, and also by Antonius Rhetor (Wright, Catal., p. 831, col. 1).

the caliph al-Mahdi, which fixes the date of his death in 785. He was the author of a history, which Bar-Hebreus cites3° and com- mends. He also translated into Syriac "the two books of the poet Homer on the conquest of the city of Ilion."®® This evi- dently means a version of the entire Jliad and Odyssey, incredible as it may appear. De Lagarde was, we believe, the first to discover citations. of this work by Jacob, or Severus, bar Shakko, bishop of

23 Catal. Vat., iii. 17; Wright, Catal., p. 909. _ ec –

24 T.e., Maiperkat or Maiyafarikin, Assemani calls him bishop of Taghrith or Tekrit.

25 B.0.,1. 465; ii. 96. The epistles to Christopher against Probus and John Grammaticus of Alexandria, and to the monks of the convent of Mar Matthew, are also cited in Brit. Mus. Add. 17197 (Wright, Catal., p. 607). ;

26 Assemani places Constantine as early as 630 and Leo about 640 (B.0., i. 466-467). But in the Catal. Vat. they are more correctly described as "'uterque §. Johannis Damasceni equalis" (vol. iii. 255).

27 These three are mentioned by Assemani,. B.0., i. 466.

28 Wright, Catal., p. 607, col. 2. '

29 B.0., ii. 95, 337 ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 297; Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 46,123. Dionysius of Tell-Mahre wrongly places his death some years later, in 729.

30 Two MSS. of this work survive, but both imperfect, the one at Rome, Cod. Vat. exlv. (Catal., iii. 258), the other in the British Museum, Add. 17197 (Wright, Catal., p. 606). 31 See Wright, Catal., pp. 608-612.

32 Sachau, Theodori Mops. Fragmenta Syr., pp. 101 and 62. :

33 The words of George of Béth Néké, bukhana dhé-dhogma (Wright, Catal., p. 611, col. 2), probably refer to the liturgical disputes which arose among the Jacobites about this time (B. O. ii. 341) and attained considerable importance a little later (p. 343). See Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 331.

34 See Wright, Catal., p. 1184.

35 See Baethgen, Fragmente, p. 2; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 152, note 2.

36 B.O., i. 521; Cardahi, Liber Thesauri, p. 39.

37 Hist. Dynast., p. 228 (transl., p. 147). 38 Op. cit., p. 98 (transl., p. 63).

39 Op. cit., p, 228 (transl., p. 148). Also at p. 40 (transl., p. 26) Bar-Hebraus says that "the poet Homer bewailed her (fall) in two books, which Theophilus the astrologer of Edessa translated from Greek into Syriac."

XXII. — 106

George of Bé'el- than.

Cyriacus.

Babhai thearchi- mand- rite.

842

Mar Matthew, who died in 1241.1 Cardahi (Liber Thesauri, p. 40) quotes the rendering of Iliad ii. 204, but without saying where he found it. Theophilus is often spoken of as the first to use the Greek vowels in pointing Syriac words, but we have seen above (p. 840, note 21) instances of their occurrence in MSS. older than his time. Perhaps, however, he may have finally settled some details of the system and assisted in bringing it into more general use.?

George of Bé‘elthan, a village near Hims, was educated at the convent of Ken-nceshré, and became the syncellus of Theodore, bishop of Samosata, who prophesied great things of him. On the death of Athanasius III. a synod was held at Mabbdgh, at the close of 758, when a large majority of those present raised George, who was only a deacon, to the see of Antioch.? At the instigation of the anti-patriarch David, the caliph al-Mansir scourged him and threw him into prison, where he remained for nine years, till he was set free by his son and successor al-Mahdi. He was taken ill during one of his diocesan journeys at Kalaudiyah (Claudia), in the far north of Mesopotamia, and died in the convent of Bar-sauma near Meliténe (Malatyah), in 790.4 During his long imprison- ment George is said to have composed many discourses and metrical homilies. He was also the author of a commentary on the Gospel of St Matthew, the unique but imperfect MS. of which has been described by Assemani in Catal. Vat., tii. 298.

Cyriacus, a man of Taghritan family ° and a monk of the convent of Bizona, otherwise called the convent of the Pillar, near Calli- nicus, was ordained patriarch of the Jacobites in 793, and died at Mosul in 817. The record of his troubled life may be read in Bar- Hebreus’s Chron. Eccles., i. 329 sq.; B.O., ii. 116, 341-344. In the year 798 he endcayoured to effect a union with the Julianists, whose patriarch was Gabriel, and a creed was drawn up and signed by them and suudry other bishops, which has bcen preserved in Brit. Mus. Add. 17145, f. 27b.6 Besides an anaphora’ and canons,® he wrote a homily on the parable of the vineyard? and a synodical epistle on the Trinity and the incarnation addressed to Mark, patriarch of Alexandria, which is extant only in Arabic.!°

The number of Nestorian writers during the 7th and 8th cen- turies is relatively much larger than that of Jacobite, and the loss of many of their writings is much to be regretted, especially those bearing on ecclesiastical and political history. Want of spaco compels us, however, to omit many names which we would other- wise gladly have noticed.

Our list begins with the name of Babhai the archimandrite,” called Babhai the Elder, to distinguish him from the later Babhai bar

Nésibhnayé. He was a native of the village of Béth ‘Ainatha or Ba-‘ainatha in Béth Zabhdai, and succeeded Mar Dadh-isho’ (see above, p. 838) as abbot of the great convent on Mount Izla. On the death of the catholicus Gregory of Kashkar in 607 (see above, p. 837) a time of persecution followed, during which the Nestorian Church was ruled by Babhai with a firm and skilful hand. The bishops of Nisibis, Hédhaiyabh, and Karkha dhé-Béth Sélékh (or Béth Garmai) entrusted him with the duties of inspector of con- vents, with the express object of rooting out all who held the doc- trines of the Mésalléyané,’ as well as the followers of Hannana of Hédhaiyabh and Joseph of Hazza.18 So well did he acquit himself in this post 4 that, after the murder of Khosrau II. in 628, when his successor Kawadh II. Shérdé permitted a synod to be held, he would have been unanimously elected to the dignity of catholicus, had he only given his consent, in default of which the choice fell upon Ishd’-yabh of Gédhala (628-644). As a writer Babhai would seem to have been very prolific, for no less than eighty-three or eighty-four works are set down to his account.» The principal of these, as enumerated by ‘Abhd-ish6‘, are—a commentary on the whole text of Scripture ; on the commemorations of the Blessed Virgin Mary and St Jolin, and other commemorations and feasts throughout the year; on the reasons of the celebration of Palm Sunday and of the festival of the holy cross1®; a discourse on the union (of the two natures in our Lord, against the Monophysites) ”” ; exposition of the Centwrics of Evagrius}8 ; exposition of the discourses of Mark the monk (on the spiritual law); rules for novices ; canons for monks ; (controversial) letters to Joseph Hazzaya ; history of Diodore of Tarsus and his followers; on Matthew the wanderer, Abraham of Nisibis, and Gabriel Katraya.2° -To these must be added an account of the life and martyrdom of his contemporary

1 E.g., Iliad, i. 225, 226; vi. 325; xvi. 745; Odyssey, xviii. 26; see The Academy for October 1, 1871, p. 467. 2 Compare B.O., i. 64.

3 The minority appointed as anti-patriarch John of Callinicus (ar-Rakkah), who held office for four years (B.0., ii. 340, col. 2) and was succeeded by David, bishop of Dara (ibid.).

4 B.0., ii. 340; Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 57, 128; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eecles., i. 319 sq., ti. 175. 5 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 343.

6 See Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eceles., i. 335. 7 Wright, Catal., pp. 206, 210.

8 Wright, Catal., p. 222, col. 2; Zotenberg, Catal., p. 28, No. 54.

9 Brit. Mus. Add. 14727, f. 110a (Wright, Catal., p. 887). 10 B.0., ii. 117.

U See B.O., iii. 1, 88 sq., 472; Hoffmann, Ausziige, pp. 121, 161, 173.

12 See B.O., iii. 1, 101; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 573.

13 See above, pp. 837, 838. 14 See B.O., iii. 1, 88, 89, 473.

15 B.0., iii. 1, 94, and note 1. 16 See next paragraph.

17 See Catal. Vat., iii. 372. 18 Ibid., iii. 367 sq.

39 Brit. Mus. Add. 17270 (Wright, Catal., p. 482).

20 That is, of Katar, on the coast of al-Bahrein.

SYRDAC LitEeharuee

[7rH, 8TH CENT,

George, a convert from Zoroastrianism, whose heathen name was Mihramgushnasp," and a few hymns, contained in Nestorian psalters.??

The successor of Babhai was, as we have just mentioned, Ish6*. Ishgt

yabh II. of Gédhala,*® who was elected in 628 and sat till 644,24 He studied at Nisibis, and was bishop of Balad at the time of his elevation to the patriarchate. daughter of Khosrau II., on an embassy to Heraclius, the em peror of Constantinople, whom he met at Aleppo, and to whom, we are told he restored the holy cross, which had been

carried off by the Persians when they captured Jerusalem in 614.2% Foreseeing the downfall of the enfeebled Persian monarchy, Ishé'~~yabh prudently made conditions on behalf of his flock with the Muhammadan ruler it is said through the intervention of a Christian chief at N ajran and of Yéshi' (or Ish6'), bishop of that place.2° The deed or ordi~~ nance containing the terms of agreement was renewed and confirmed by 'Omar ibn al-Khattab."" According to 'Abhd-ish6', the principal writings of Ishd'-yabh were a commentary on the Psalms and sundry epistles, histories, and homilies. A hymn of his occurs in the Nestorian psalter Brit. Mus. Add. 14675.%

Sahdona of Halaman, a village in Béth Nuhadhré," was educated Sahdoni at Nisibis, and became a monk under Mar Jacob, the founder of of Hala- the famous convent of Béth 'Abhé.3° Here he composed a treatise min,

in two volumes on the monastic life, besides a history of his master, and a funeral sermon on him.*! He became bishop of Mahozé dh'Aréwan in Beth Garmai,*and was one of the Nestorian clergy who accompanied Ish6'-yabh of Gédhala on his embassy to Heraclius, Whilst halting at Apamea, Isho'~~yabh, John the Nestorian bishop of Damascus, and Sahdona tried their hand at converting the monks of a neighbouring (Jacobite) convent, the result of which was that Sahdona himself was converted, and afterwards wrote several heterodox works. This incident caused much scandal in the East, as may be seen from the numerous letters which Ishé'~~ yabh of Hédhaiyabh, another member of the embassy, found it necessary to write upon the subject.*4

This Isho'-yabh was the son of a wealthy Persian Christian named Isho'- Bas-tuhmag, of Kuphlina in Hédhaiyabh or Adiabéné, who used yabhIIl. He was educated at the of Hé- school of Nisibis, became bishop of Mosul, and afterwards metro- dhaiyabh.

often to visit the convent of Béth 'Abhe.35

politan of Hazza (Arbél or Irbil) and Mosul. The chief event of his rule at Mosul seems to have been that he hindered the Jacobites from building a church in that city,°6 notwithstanding that they were

supported by all the weight and influence of the Taghritans.” Bar-Hebreus declares that he bribed right and left to effect this. He was one of those who accompanied Ishd‘-yabh of Gédhala on his embassy to Heraclius,®® and stole a very costly and beautiful casket, containing relics of the Apostles, from a church at Antioch, the which he conveyed (apparently quite openly and shamelessly) to the convent of Béth ‘Abhé.# On the death of Mar-emméh! (who sat 644-647) # he was elevated to the dignity of catholicus,‘? which he held till 657-658.4 In his desire to do something for the promotion of learning he wished to found a school in the convent of Beth ‘Abhé, where he had built a magnificent church, but the abbot Kam-isho‘ and the rest of the lazy brotherhood would have none of this, and preferred to quit the convent and withdraw to the neigh- bouring village of Herpa in Saphsapha.* Hereupon the catholicus gave up this part of lis plan and built his college in his father’s village of Kuphlana (or Kulpana).46 Soon afterwards he found himself involved in another and more serious dispute with Simeon,

21 Brit. Mus. Add. 7200, f.14; Hoffmann, Avsziige, pp. 91 sq., 173.

22 E.g., Brit. Mus. Add. 7156, 17219; see Bickell, Conspectus, pp. 37, 38.

23 Judal, near Mosul.

24 B.0., ii, 416-418, iii. 1, 105, 475; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., iii. 113 and note 1, 127 and note 3; Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 13, 19, 108, 111.

25 This, however, scems to have been given back by Ardashér ITI. in 628-629, as the festival to celebrate its restoration took place at Jerusalem in 629; see Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 113; B.O., iii. 1, 96 note 3, 105-106; Néldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, pp. 391-392.

26 B.0., ii. 418, iii. 1, 108, col.1; Bar-Hebrzeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 115. Bar- Hebreus names Muhammad himself, but it was more likely Abii Bakr (632-639).

27 See B.O., iii. 1, 108, col. 1. 28 Wright, Catal., p. 130, col. 2.

29 Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 215. 30 Ibid., p. 226. 31 B.0., iii. 1, 453, 462

32 See B.O., iii. 1, 116, col. 1, at the foot. Assemani pronounces the name Arytin, but Aréwan is more likely to be correct. See Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 277.

33 We cannot see that Assemani has any ground for asserting that Sahdona was converted "ab erroribus Nestorianis ad Catholicam veritatem" (B.0., iii. 1, 107, col. 1; comp. col. 2, ll. 10-12, and p. 120, col. 2, Il. 11-13). : ,

34 B.0., iii. 1, 116-128. Bar-Hebreus (Chron. Eccles., ii. 113) spitefully im- proves the occasion by making out that the eatholicus Isho'-yabh of Gédhala himself was the pervert. =

35 B.0., iii. 1,472; Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 226. 36 B.0., iii, 1, 114-116.

37 Taghrith was always strongly Jacobite, and the Nestorians had no churell there till 767 (see B.O., iii. 1, 111, note 4; Hoffmann, Avusztige, pp. 190-191 ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii, 155-157).

38 Chron. Eccles., ii. 127. 39 B.0., iii. 1, 106, col. 1. '

40 There is no reason to doubt the circumstantial recital of a Nestorian ae p B.O., iii. 1,106, col. 2, 475. Strange to say, Assemani does not improve this occasion ! 41 Properly Mar(i)-emméh (see B.O., ii. 389, col. 2, No. 29

42 According to others, 647-650; B.O., ii. 420, iii. 1, 113, 615.

43 In 647 or 648. 4

44 Or, according to the other reckoning, till 660, B.0., locc. citt. He pei the maphrian Denha, who died in 660 (Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 129, 131).

45 See Hoffmann, Ausziige, pp. 223, 227. 46 B.0., iii, 1, 124-125.

He was sent in 630 by Boran, the dhala,

a

ith

bee = EE oF

Sy Te

ee ees — eS — ee oe

oe ty

= *

=

Pat OE ee i c_ J

en et a=

oe EE wo 8 ee oe oe

B.O., iii. 1, 136.

7TH CENT. |

lengthy correspondence, regarding which see B.O., iii. 1, 127-136.

His works, as enumerated by ‘Abhd-isho‘’, are—Huppakh Hushshabhé or “‘Refutation of (Heretical) Opinions,”? written for John, metro-politan of Béth Lapat,* and other controversial tracts, consolatory and other discourses, various hymns,® and an exhortation to cer- He arranged the Hudhra$ or service-book for the Sundays of the whole year, for Lent, and for the fast of Nineveh,” and drew up offices of baptism,® absolution,? and consecration. 1® He also wrote a history of the monk Ishd‘-sabhran, a convert from

tain novices.

the religion of Zoroaster and a Christian martyr.” A large collec- tion of his lettcrs is extant in Cod. Vat. clvil. (Catal., iii. 299), a judicious selection from which would be worth printing.” ‘Anan-isho’!8 of Hédhaiyabh and his brother Isho‘-yabh were fellow-students at Nisibis with Ishé‘-yabh JII., and afterwards entered the great convent on Mount Izla. | Ishd’-yabh subsequently became bishop of Kardaliyabhadh*; but ‘Andn-isho’ was seized with a fit of wandcring, and visited Jerusalem, whence he went on to the desert of Skete in Egypt, and made himself thoroughly acquainted with the lives and habits of its monks, regarding whom he had read so much in the Paradise of Palladius. On his return he soon forsook the great convent, because of dissensions that had arisen in it, and betook himself with his brother to the convent of Béth ‘Abhé, where he devoted himself to study, and so distinguished himself that he was employed by Isho‘-yabh ITI. to assist in arrang- ing the Hudhra (see above). nan-Ishd‘ wrote a volume of philo- sophical divisions and definitions, with a copious commentary, dedicated to his brother, and compiled a work on the correct reading and pronunciation of difficult words in the writings of the fathers,® thus following in the footsteps of Joseph Hiizaya (see above, p. 836), and anticipating Jacob of Edessa and the monks of the convent of Karkaphétha (see above, p. 826). He was also the author of a treatise entitled Liber Canonum de Arquilitteris, 4.e., on the different pronunciation and signification of words that are spelt with the same letters. This has been published, with the

additions of Honain ibn Ishak of al-Hirah (died in 873) and another

compiler, by Hoffmann, Opuscula Nestoriana, pp. 2-497 His greatest work, howcver, was a new recension or redaction, in two volumes, of the Paradise of Palladius and Jerome, with additions collected by himself from other sources and from his own experience.¥8 This he compiled at the request of the patriarch Gcorge, and it became the standard work on the’subject in the Nestorian convents.19 John of Béth Garmai (Garmékaya), called John the Elder, was a disciple of Jacob of Béth ‘Abhé, and his successor as abbot of that convent. After a

few months, however, he secretly fled from Béth ‘Abhé and betook himself to a hill near Dakika” in Béth Garmai, where the monastery of Ezekiel?! was soon afterwards built, in which he ended his days.” His works, according to ‘Abhd- isho‘,?? are—a collection of heads of knowledge or maxims, rules for novices, a brief chronicle, histories of Abraham, abbot of the great convent on Mount Izla, of the monk Bar-‘idta,*4 and of Mar Khodhahwai, the founder of the convent of Béth Halé (near al- Hadithah, by Mosul), with a discourse and hymns on the last

named.

Sabhr-isho‘ Rustam was a native of a village called Hérem, in Hédhaiyabh, and entered the great convent on Mount 1zl4 under the abbot Narsai, the successor of Babhai. Here, at the request

| of the monks, he wrote a tract on the occasion of the celebration | of Golden Friday, and also a large volume of disputations against | heresies and other theological questions.

He migrated thence,

1 Or Reshalir (Yakut); see Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p.19, note 4.

2 Or Arabs of Katar, on the Persian Gulf, and the adjacent districts. See 3 B.0., iii. 1, 187, note 1. 4 B.0., iii. 1, 188, col.1; Néldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p.41, note 2;

} UWoffmann, Ausztige, p. 41, note 351.

5 The composition on the martyr George quoted by Cardahi (Liber Thes., pp. 124-125) is probably of much laterdate. At least we should not expect such arti-

} ficial riming in the 7th century.

6 B.O., iii. 1, 189, 144, col. 2. 7 See Badger, The Nestorians, ii. p. 22.

8 Brit. Mus. Add. 7181 (Rosen, Catal., p. 59). . ,

9 E.g.,of apostates and heretics, Catal. Vat., ii. 307,367; of public penitents, ibid., 291, Brit. Mus. Add. 7181 (Rosen, Catal., p. 59). ie

10 ff.g., the consecration of an altar with the chrism, Catal. Vat., ii. 302, 368 ; see also tbid., 294, where canons of his are given, and Cod. Vat. cexci., in Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.

ll Catal. Vat., iii. 328; B.O., iii. 1, 285, note 2, and p. 633.

12 B.O., iii. 1, 140-143.

13 Properly 'Ana-n(1)-isho'; see B.O., iii. 1,144-146 ; Hoffmann, Opuse. Nestor.,

iv.

1# The older name of Shenna dhé-Bhéth Remm4n, in Arabic Sinn Ba-rimma, or simply as-Sinn ; sce Hoffmann, Ausziige, pp. 189, 253. ae

15 B.O., iii. 1, 144, col. 2, near the foot. 16 Ibid., iii. 1, 144.

17 From a MS. in the India Office library, London. There is another copy in the collection of the 8.P.C.K., now at Cambridge.

18 See B.0., ii. 493; iii. 1, 49, 145 col. 2, 151 col. 1, middle.

19 The Illustrations of the Book of the Paradise in Brit. Mus. Add. 17263, 17264 (Wright, Catal., pp. 1078-80) and Orient. 2311 seems to be a different work. The author of it is said to have been a Katraya, "a native of Katar," which 'Anan-ishO' was not. 20 Hoffmann, Auszige, p. 273.

21 So called from its founder; see Hoffmann, op. cit., p. 274, note 2154.

22 B.0O., iii, 1, 203-204, 474. But he must have lived till after 661, for Mar Kho- dhahwai was still alive in that year (B.0., iii. 1,151, near the top).

23 B.O., iii. 1, 204. 24 Tbid., iii. 1, 467, col. 2, ch. 4. 25 Ibid., ili. 1, 454-455.

the metropolitan of Rév-Ardashér? in Persis and of the Katrayé,? who refused obedience to him as his diocesan; and this léd to a

perhaps along with Narsai, to Béth ‘Abhé, where, however, he resided only for a short time, being invited by the monks of Beth Kuka* to become their prior. Here he composed cight discourses on the dispensation of our Lord, the conversion of the various countries by the Apostles, and on continence and the monastic life. Further, at the request of Mar Kardagh, the syncellus of Isho’- yabh IIl., he wrote lives of Isho‘-Zékha (of the convent of Gassa), of Isho’-yabh ITI., of Abraham abbot of Beth ‘Abhé, who came thither from the convent of Zékha-isha’,”” of Kam-isho’ abbot of Béth ‘Abhé,*8 of Abraham of Nethpar, of rabban Tydbh (or Job) the Persian, and of the elder Sabhr-isho‘, the founder of the convent of Beth Kaka, to which may be added the lives of the brothers Joseph and Abraham.2® __

George, the pupil and successor of Ishé‘-yabh III., was a native of George of Kaphra in Béth Géwaya, a district of Béth Garmai.3! His parents Kaphra. were wealthy, and owned two farms in the neighbourhood of the convent of Beth ‘Abhé. ‘Being sent to take charge of these, he got acquainted with the monks and ultimately joined their body. When Isho‘-yabh was promoted to the patriarchate, he appointed George to be metropolitan of Hédhaiyabh in his stead 32; and, on the death of his friend, George succeeded to the patriarchate in 661, and sat till 680. As an author he is not of much account, having written merely a few homilies, with hymns and prayers for certain occasions, and published nineteen canons. His too in all probability is the “cpistola dogmatica ” contained in Cod. Vat. cceclvii., p. 360.34

Elias, bishop of Mari or Merv, was one of those who were present Elias of at the death of Ishd‘-yabh III. and elected George as his

successor.®> Merv. He compiled a Catena patrum (Malléphanutha ahé-Kadhmayé) on the four Gospels, and wrote commentaries on Genesis, Psalms, Pro- verbs, Ecclesiastes, the Song of Songs, Ecclesiasticus, Isaiah, the twelve minor Prophets, and the epistles of St Paul. His letters would probably be of some interest to us, and the loss of his ecclesi- astical history, to which ‘Abhd-isho‘ applies the epithet of “trast- worthy,” is to be regretted.%6 _ Of Daniel bar Maryam we can only say that he flourished under Daniel Isho‘-yabh III. of Hédhaiyabh, about 650.37 He wrote an ecclesi- bar astical history in four volumes, and an explanation of the calendar. Maryam. The history is cited by George of Arbél in the 10th century for the date of the destruction of Jerusalem.38

Gabriel, surnamed Taurétha, was a native of the province of Gabriel Siarzir or Shahraziir.99 He studied at Nisibis, and then entered Taurttha. the great convent on Mount Izla, where he took part in a contro- versy with the Monophysite monks of the convent of Kartamin (near Mardin) and against Sahdona. He afterwards migrated to Béth ‘Abhé, where he wrote a life of Mar Narsai the abbot, an account of the martyrs of Tir Béra’in or Tir Bérén (Adhurparwa, Mihrnarsai, and their sister Mahdokht, in the ninth year of Sapor II.), a homily for the washing of the feet, &c.49 He became abbot of Beth “Abhé under the catholicus Hénan-ishd’ I. (686-701).%

Heénan-isho* I., called the Elder or the Lame (héghira), was ap- Hénan- pointed catholicus in 686,“ in succession to John bar Marta,* the fol- isho’ I. lower of George. He was opposed by Isho‘-yabh of al- Basrah, whom he threw into prison, but afterwards released on his making his sub- mission. A more serious rival was John of Dasen, bishop of Nisibis, surnamed the Leper, who curried favour with the caliph ‘Abd al-

Malik ibn Marwan and procnred the deposition of Hénan-ishd’, whose place he occupied for nearly two years.44 Bar-Hebreus adds ® that John put him for some days into prison, and then sent him off to a convent among the mountains in charge of two of his dis- ciples, who threw the luckless catholicus down a precipice and left him there for

dead. Luckily he was found by some shepherds, who took good care of him, though he seems to have been lame ever after. On his recovery he withdrew to the convent of Yaunan (or Jonah) 4® near Mosul, where he stayed till the death of his rival. He continued to rule the Nestorian Church till 701,47 and was buried

26 On the Great Zab, in Hédhaiyabh ; see Hoffmann, Ausztige, p. 215, note 1715

27 B.0., iii. 1, 468, col. 1, at the top.

28 Who died in 652; see Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 21, 112.

29 B.O., ii. 418, col. 2. 30 Ibid., iii. 1, 228, eol. 1, near the foot.

31 B.0., ii. 421, iii. 1, 149; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 131, 138 ; Hoffmann, Ausztige, p. 277.

32 He must be distinguished from two other Georges, Persians by race, also disciples of Isho‘-yabh, viz., George, bishop of Pérath dé-Maishan or al-Basrah, and George, bishop of Nisibis, the latter of whom is the author of a well-known hymn (see B.0., iii. 1, 456; Bickell, Conspectus, p. 38), often found in Nestorian psalters, e.g., Rosen, Catal., p.14, w; Wright, Catal., p. 131, col. 1; Munich Catal., Cod. Syr. 4, p. 112.

33 B.0., iii. 1, 153, 34 Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.

36 Tbid., iii. 1, 148. 37 Ibid., ii. 420 ; iii. 1, 231.

39 See Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 438, notes 364, 365, p. 254 sq.

40 B.O., iii. 1, 456-458 ; Hoffinann, Ausztige, pp. 9-16, from Brit. Mus. Add. 12174 (Wright, Catal., p. 1133).

41 Bar-sauma was abbot at the beginning of Hénan-ish6”s patriarchate; see BO. iil. 1, 45%, cole 1.

42 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 185; Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 32, 117; B.O., ii. 423,

43 He sat 680-682 ; B.O., ii. 422, ili.1, 615; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 133.

44 Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 34, 35, 118, 119.

45 Chron. Eccles., ii. 185 sq.; B.O., ii. 423.

46 B.O., ii. 424, note 3. Bar-Hebreus calls it ‘the convent of John.”

47 According to Elias bar Shindya in Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 38,120. Others say 699.

35 B.0., ii. 420. 38 Ibid., iii. 1, 521.

Alaha- zékha.

Mikha.

David of Beth Rabban.

Babhai bar Nesibh- naye.

Bar- Sahdé.

Abra- ham bar Dashan- dadh.

Mar- abha II.

844

in the convent of Jonah. Besides composing homilies, sermons, and epistles, he was the author of a life of Sergius Déwadha? of Daraukarah or Daukarah, near Kashkar, who was a contemporary of his. He also wrote a treatise On the Twofold Use of the School or university, as a place of moral and religious training as well as of instruction in letters, and a commentary on the Analytics of Aristotle.?

Presumably to this century belong two ecelesiastical historians who are known to us only from the Chronicle of Elias bar Shinaya. Alaha-zékha

is quoted by him in regard to events that took place in 594-596 and 606.4 Perhaps he is identical with that Alaha- zékha to whom we find Ishé‘-yabh III. writing a letter whilst he was yet bishop, consequently in the earlier part of the century.® Mikha or Micah is cited by Elias as an authority for the years 594- 596 and 605.6

Passing over into the 8th century, we may mention David of Béth Rabban, that is, of the convent of Zékha-isho’, afterwards of Béth ‘Abhé, who was the author of a monastic history, called The Little Paradise, whieh is frequently cited by Thomas of Marga. Its first chapter contained anecdotes relative to George Neshraya, Nathanicl, and other monks of Béth ‘Abhé, who lived under Hénan-isho’ I., towards the end of the 7th century.’ David attained episcopal dignity, though we do not know the name of his see. He wrote also a geographical treatise Upon the Linvits of Climates or Countries, and the Variations of the Days and Nights.®

Babhai bar Nésibhnayé (so called because his parents were of Nisibis) flourished under the catholicus Sélibha-zékha (713-729), the successor of Hénan-isho’.2 He was a native of Gébhilta or Jabilta in Tirhan,’ and is described by Thomas of Marga as being a tall, powerful man, with a magnificent voice, gentle and modest, and learned withal. He devoted himself to the reformation of the musical services of the Nestorian Church, which had fallen into sad confusion, and founded many schools, more particularly in the dioceses of Hédhaiyabh and Marga, with the spccial object of pro- moting the study of church music. The most important of these were at Képhar-‘Uzzél” in Hédhaiyabh and Bashish in the district of Saphsapha in Marga.!* At the former he took up his residence, but used to visit and inspect the others once a year. In his latter years he returned to Gébhilta and died there. He wrote discourses and homilies of different kinds, numerous hymns for various occa- sions, histories (of holy men), and letters.}3

Bar-Sahdé of Karkha dhé-Bhéth Sélokh flourished, according to Assemani, under the catholicus Pethién (731-740).14 ‘Abhd-ishd‘ states that he wrote an ecclesiastical history } and a treatise against the Zoroastrian religion.

When Babhai the Nisibene was residing at Képhar-‘Uzzél (sce above), a woman from the village of Béth Saiyadhé brought to him her crippled son, whom she called “only half a man,” and begged him to bless him. “This is no half man,” was the gentle monk’s reply ; “this shall be a father of fathers and a chief of teachers ; his name and his teaching shall be famous throughout the whole East.”16 This was Abraham bar Dashandadh “the Lame,” whose works are enumerated by ‘Abhd-ish6‘ as follows 17”—a book of exhort- ation, discourses on repentance,’® letters, the book of the king’s way, a disputation with the Jews, and a commentary on the dis- courses of Mark the monk.” He was teacher at the school of Bashiish in Saphsapha, where the future catholicus Timothy I. received his early education, as well as his successor Ishd’ bar Non and Abia Nuh al-Anbari.?°

Mar-abha, the son of Bérikh-sebhyanéh, was a native of Kashkar,?! and became bishop of that town. From this see he was promoted

1 His Arab biographer and co-religionist adds that his grave was opened 650 years afterwards, and his body found undecayed and looking as if he slept.

2 Not Didha. The word means “‘liable to fits,” “epileptic,” “ crazy.”

3 B.O., iii. 1, 154.

4 See Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 106 note 3, 107 note 3.

5 B.O., iii. 1, 141, No. 35.

6 See Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 106 note 3, 107 note 2.

? B.O., iii. 1, 217 col. 2, 218 col. 1; see also pp. 49 note 1, 184 col. 1, 1. 1.

8 B.O., iii. 1, 255. The poems referred to by Assemani in note 1 are no doubt of much later date. The first of them is edited by Cardahiin his Liber Thesauri, pp. 41-46. Cardahi places David’s death “‘in the year 800.” Twenty-two very artificial poems “on the love of wisdom,”

ascribed to him, are printed in the Directoriwm Spirituale of John of Mosul, edited by the bishop Elias John Millos, 1868, pp. 172-214.

® According to Elias bar Shinaya, in Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 42, 47, 122, 124. Assemani (B.0., ii. 480) gives 714-728.

10 Hoffmann, Ausztige, p. 188.

ll Ibid., p. 236 sq. 12 Tbhid., p. 223.

43 See B.O., iii.1,177-181. Of his hymns a few are still extant; see Bickell, Con- spectus, p. 38; Brit. Mus, Add. 7156 (Rosen, Catal., p. 14, v, xX, y, Z), Add. 14675 (Wright, Catal., p. 131, col. 1), 17219 (ibid., p. 136, col. 1); Paris, Suppl. 56 (Zoten- berg, Catal., p. 9, col. 1, t); Munich, Cod. Syr. 4 (Orient. 147).

i4 B.0., ii. 430; Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 49, 125.

15 Cited by Elias bar Shinaya ; see Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 65, note 1.

16 B.O., iii. 1, 179. 7 bid., iii. 1, 194.

18 According to another reading on desire or cupidity.

19 See Brit. Mus. Add. 17270 (Wright, Catal., p. 482).

20 Assemani (B.0., iii. 1, 196, note 4) says that Timothy I. wasa pupil of Abra- ham bar Liphah, but Isho' bar Non and Aba Nuh are expressly stated to have been pupils of Abraham "the Lame," ibid., p. 165, note 4, and p. 212, note 2; see also p. 486, col. 1.

21 Others say of Daukarah, in the neighbourhood of Kashkar, B.0., ii. 431.

SY RIAG LIPRRA TD ea

[StH cENt,-

in 741 to the dignity of catholicus.2 At first he had some diffi- eulties with the emir Yisuf ibn ‘Omar ath-Thakafi, but these were settled by a visit to al-Kifah, which gave him an opportunity of going also to al-Hirah, where he was received with great honour by the aged bishop John Azrak. He shortened his name to Abha

the better to distinguish himself from his predecessor Mar-abha 1. (see above, p. 836). In the sixth year of his patriarchate he got into a dispute with his clergy about the management of the school at Seleueia, and withdrew to Kashkar, but returned to Seleucia before his death, whieh took place in 751, at the age, it is said, of 110 years. According to Bar-Hebreus, “he was learned in ecclesi- astical works and in dialectics, and composed a commentary on Theologus (z.e., Gregory Nazianzen),”3 and all his time he was occu: pied in reading books.” ‘Abhd-ishd’ mentions him in two places

as Abhi of Kashkar™ in B.O., iii. 1, 154, and as Abha bar Barikh. sebhyanéh at p. 157. In the former place he ascribes to him expositions, letters, and a commentary on the whole Dialectics of Aristotle,” and in the latter, The Book of the Generals, or Military Governors, and other works.**

Simeon bar Tabbakhé (the Butcher) of Kashkar held the im- Simeon portant post of chief officer of the treasury under the caliph al- barTab-Mansur,” about the same time that his co-religionist George bar bakhé, Bokht-isho’ of Gundé-Shabhér or Béth Lapat,® in Khizistan, was court physician.*® The only work of his mentioned by ‘Abhd-isho’ is an ecclesiastical history, which from his position at Baghdadh doubtless contained much valuable information.

Sarén or Sirin,* bishop of Nisibis and afterwards of Halah or Siren,

Holwan in Beth Madhayé,) was raised to the patriarchate in 754, by the orders of Aban, the Muhammadan emir of al-Madain (Seleucia). The bishops appealed to the ealiph ‘Abdallah as- Saffah,? and not in vain. The election was cancelled, and Jacob, bishop of Gundé-Shabhér, was chosen in his place (who sat till 77 3). Their continued squabbles, however, so irritated al-Mansir that he gave orders to throw them both

into prison. Sirén made his escape in time, but Jacob was caught and spent the next nine years under strict ward, during which time "the second Judas," 'Ish ibn Shahlatha or Shahlafa,*? deacon and physician, trampled the rights of the bishops under foot. On his release, he sent Siren as bishop to al-Basrah, at the request of some of the Christian citizens, but others would not receive him, and their quarrels once more attracted the caliph's attention. Sirén, warned by 'Isa, again made his escape, but was captured by the emir of al-Madain and died in prison.*4 The epithet of Aléphashshtkand, given to him by 'Abhd-isho',® implies that he was either a commentator on Serip- ture or a translator of Greek works into Syriac. He composed a treatise against herctics, but the remainder of 'Abhd-isho's text is not clear in Assemani's edition. %4

Cyprian, bishop of Nisibis, was appointed to that see in 741.57 Cyprian The great event of his life was the building of the first Nestorian of Nis: church in the Jacobite city of Taghrith, just outside of the walls, bis. on the banks of the Tigris, The idea originated with Sélibha- zékha, bishop of Tirhan, but would never have been realized, had 4 not Cyprian allowed the Jacobites to resume possession of the church of Mar Domitius at Nisibis. The building of the church i at Taghrith was commenced in 767.°8 Cyprian also erected a magni- P ficent church at Nistbis, on which he expended the sum of 56,000 dinars, in 758-759.%9 After this time it so happened that the patri- archs of the three Christian sects, Theodoret the Malkite, George p the Jacobite, and Jacob the Nestorian, were all in prison at once at Baghdadh. 'Isa the physician, thinking to improve the occa- sion to his own advantage, wrote to Cyprian that the caliph al-

Mansir coveted some of the golden and silver vessels of the church of Nisibis, hinting at the same time in pretty plain language that a handsome present to himself might be of some avail at this junc- ture. Cyprian had the courage to go straight to Baghdadh with the letter and show it to the caliph, who disgraced 'Isa and contfis- cated his property, releasing the three patriarchs at the same time." Cyprian died in 767. According to 'Abhd-isho', he wrote a com-

22 Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 50, 125; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 153; B.O., ii. 431, iii, 1, 157. %3 See B.O., iii. 1, 157, col. 2.

24 Whom Assemani takes for Abraham of Kashkar (see above, p. 837); for what reason we cannot see.

25 See B.O., iii. 1, 157, col. 2.

26 Perhaps a chronicle of the Muhammadan governors of al-'Irak.

27 B.O., iti. 1, 206, col. 1, 11. 4, 5.

28 Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser u. Araber, p. 41, note 2.

29 B.0., iii. 1, 205, col. 2, note 4; Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 59, 60, 129; Bar- Hebreus, Hist. Dynast., 221; Wiistenfeld, Gesch. d. arab. Aerzte, No. 26.

30 On the name see Noldeke, Gesch. d. Perser wu. Araber, p. 488, note 4.

31 See Hoffmann, Avsziige, p. 120.

32 He died in June of this same year.

33 See Bar-Hebraus, Hist. Dynast., p. 221; Wiistenfeld, Gesch. d. arab. Aerate, No. 26.

34 B.0., ii. 431; iii. 1, 168, 205-206.

35 Ibid., iii. 1, 168, 36 Tbid., iii. 1, 169. x

37 Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 50, 125; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 154, notel.

38 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 155-157.

39 Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 57, 128.

40 Bar-Hebreeus, Hist. Dynast., p. 224.

41 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii, 161-163 ; B.O., iii, 1, 111-112.

42 Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 60, 129.

ee

ES

Heat ty

9TH CENT. |

mentary on the theological discourses of Gregory Nazianzen and various forms of ordination,}

y Timothy I. was a native of Hazzi in Hédhaiyabh, and had been a pupil of Abrahain bar Dashandadh (see above, p. 844) at the school of Bashish in Saphsapha. He became bishop of Béth Baghésh,? and stood well with the Muhammadan governor of Mosul, Abia Misa ibn Mus‘ab, and his Christian secretary Abii Nah al-Anbari? On the death of Hénan-isho’ II. in 779,* several persons presented themselves as candidates for the dignity of catholicus. Timothy got rid of Ishd‘-yabh, abbot of Béth ‘Abhé, by pointing out to him that he was an old man, unfit to withstand his youuger rivals, and by promising, if he himself were successful, to make him metropolitan of Hédhaiyabh, which he afterwards did. Meantime Thomas of Kashkar and other bishops held a synod at the convent of Mar Pethidn in Baghdadh, and elected the monk George, who had the support of ‘Isa the court physician ; but this formidable

cea rac LITERATURE

845

1,195, the text of ‘Abhd-isha‘, as edited by Assemani, speaks of a

writer named Ishd'~~dénah, bishop of Kasra. Other MSS., however, Tsho'~~ read Basra (al-Basrah), which is confirmed by Elias bar Shinaya d&nah,

in Baethgen's Fragmente, p. 2. The variation Dénah-isho' in Bar-Hebreus (Chron. Eccles., i. 384) is of no consequence, and even there the MSS. differ. Besides the usual homilies of sorts and some metrical discourses, he wrote an introduction to logic, a work entitled The Book of Chastity, in which he collected lives and anecdotes of holy men aud founders of monasteries, and an ecclesi- astical history in three volumes.!® This valuable work is known to us only by a few citations in Bar-Hebreus and Elias bar Shinaya. Those in Bar Shinaya"" range from 624 to 714, but the extract in Bar-Hebreus!® brings us down to 793.

Reverting now to the Jacobite Church, we shall find that the number of its literary men in the 9th century is not large, though some of them are of real importance as theologians and historians.

Dionysius Tell-Mahraya was, as his surname implies, a native of Diony- Tell-Mahré, a village situated between ar-Rakkah and Hisn Mas- sius of lamah, near the river Balikh.!®9 He was a student in the convent Tell-

opponent died suddenly. Having by a mean trick obtained the support of the archdeacon Béroé and the heads of the various colleges, Timothy managed at last to get himself appointed catholi-

a. oc

at A a ——

wa EP i et

poy y ee

a

rule than heretofore.”

| Wright, Catal., p. 425, Nos. 22-25.

} col. 1).

cus, about cight months after the death of his predecessor. He still, however, encountered strong opposition. Ephraim metro- politan of Gundé-Shabhér, Solomon bishop of al-Hadithah, Joseph metropolitan of Mari or Merv, Sergius bishop of Ma‘alléthaya, and others held a synod at the convent of Béth Halé, in which they made Rustam, bishop of Hénditha,° metropolitan of Hédhai- yabh in place of Isho‘-yabh,® and exconimunicated Timothy, who retorted with the same weapon and deposed Joseph of Mery. Joseph brought the matter before the caliph al-Mahdi, but, failing to gain any redress, in an evil hour for himself became a Muham- madan.’ Once more Ephraim summoned his bishops to Baghdadh and excommunicated Timothy for the second time, with no other result than a counter-excommunication and some disgraceful riot-

ing, which led to the interference of ‘Isi and the restoration of

peace. Timothy was duly installed in May 780.9 He made the bishops of Persia subject to the see of Seleucia, and appointed over them one Simeon as metropolitan with orders to enforce a stricter In his days Christianity spread among the Turks, and the khakan himself is said to have become a convert. Timothy’s disgraceful response to the caliph ar-Rashid in the matter of the divorce of Zubaidah may be seen in B.O., iii. 1,161. He is said to have died in 204 A.H. =819-820 A.D., or 205 = 820-821 ; but, if he really was catholicus for forty-three years, his death cannot have taken place till 823.% ‘Abhd-isho‘’ informs us that Timothy wrote synodical epistles, a volume on questions of ccclesiastical law, another on questions of various sorts, a third containing disputations with a heretic, viz., the Jacobite patriarch George, about 200 letters in two volumes, a disputation with the caliph al-Mahdi or his successor al- Hadi (on matters of religion), and an astronomical work on the stars.* Bar-Hebreeus adds hymns for the

dominical feasts of the whole year and a commentary on Theologus (Gregory Nazianzen).14

In this century too we may place the two following historical writers, whose names and works are unfortunately known to us only through the mention made of them by a later annalist. (1) An anonymous author, the abbot of the great convent (of Abra- ham on Mount Izla), cited by Elias bar Shinaya in his Chronicle under the years 740-741. (2) An ecclesiastical historian called Pethion, identified by Baethgen (Fragmente, p. 2, No. 6) with the catholicus of that name. This is, however, impossible, because the catholicus died in 740, whereas the Zeclesiastical History of Pethion is cited by Elias bar Shinaya under the years 765 and 768.

We conclude our enumeration of the Nestorian writers of this cen- tury with the name of another historian. In the Bibl. Orient., ili.

1 B.0., iii. 1, 111-113. By the “ theology ” of Gregory Nazianzen are probably meant the discourses bearing the title Theologica Prima, &c.; see, for example, 2 Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 227 sq.

3 Also a pupil of Abraham bar Dashandadh (B.0., iii. 1, 212 note 2, 159, He is mentioned in commendatory terms by Timothy in his encyclical letters of 790 and 805 (B.0O., iii. 1, 82 col. 1, 164 col. 1; ‘Abhd-ish6’, Collectio Canonum Synodicorum, ix. 6, in Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., x. pp. 167 col. 1, 829 col. 1). He was the author of a refutation of the Kor’an, a disputation

against heretics, and other useful works (B.0., iii. 1, 212), among which may be

mentioned a life of the missionary John of Dailam (B.0., iii. 1, 183, col. 2).

4 Or, according to others, 777.

5 Hoffmann, Ausztige, p. 216 sq. OG IROL. bb dl AU

7 We need not believe all the evil that Bar-IHebreus tells us of this unhappy man, Chron. Eccles., ii. 171 sq.

8 See the whole miserable story told in full in B.0., ii. 483, iii. 1, 158-160 ; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eecles., ii. 165-169.

9 Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 64, 131.

10 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 169; B.0., ii. 433.

ll B.O., iii. 1,160. Compare Chwolson's interesting memoir "'Syrische Grab- inschriften aus Semirjetschie" (west of the Chinese province of Kuldja, more eorrectly Kulja), in Mém. de I' Acad. Imp. des Sc. de St, Pétersb., Tth ser., vol. xxxiv., No. 4. The oldest of these tombstones is dated A. Gr. 1169=858 a.D., and marked "'the grave of Mengki-tenesh the believer" (p. 7); but most of them belong to the 13th and 14th centuries. z

12 See B.O., ii. 434; iii. 1, 160. 13 B.0., iii. 1, 162-163. ' :

14 Chron, Eccles., ii. 179. He is probably the author of the hymn in Brit. Mus, Add. 7156 (Rosen, Catal., p. 18, col. 1, 1) and Paris, Suppl. 56 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 9, col. 1, i). if

15 See Baethgen, Fragmente, p. 2, No.3; Bar-Hebrzus, Chron. Eccles. , ii. 152 note 2, 154 note 1 (Abbeloos writes " the abbots of the great convent").

of Ken-neshré," aud on its destruction by fire 1 and the consequent Mahré.

dispersion of the monks, he went to the convent of Mar Jacob at Kaisiim, in the district of Samosata.22 He devoted himself entirely to historical studics,* which he seems to have carried on in peace and quiet till 818. The patriarch Cyriacus (see above, p. 842) had got entangled in a controversy with the monks of Cyrrhus and Gubba Barraya about the words lakma sh?maiyana ("the heavenly bread"), &c., in the Eucharistic service, which ended in the mal- contents setting

up as anti-patriarch Abraham, a monk of the convent of Kartamin. After the death of Cyriacus in 817, a synod was held in June 818 at Callinicus (ar-Rakkah), in which, after con- siderable discussion, Theodore, bishop of Kaistim, proposed the election of Dionysius, which was approved by most of those present, including Basil I., maphrian of Taghrith.24 The poor monk was accordingly fetched to Callinicus, received deacon's orders on Friday in the convent of Estiina or the Pillar, priest's orders on Saturday in the convent of Mar Zakkai or Zaccheus, and was raised to the patriarchate in the cathedral on Sunday the first of Abh, 818, the officiating bishop being Theodosius of Callinicus. Abraham and his partisans, seeing their hopes disappointed, main- tained their hostile attitude, which led afterwards to the usual scandalous scenes before the Muslim authorities. Immediately after his installation, Dionysius commenced a visitation of his vast diocese, going first northwards to Cyrrhus, thence to Antioch, Kirkésion (Kirkisiya), the district of the Khabhir, Nisibis, Dara and Képhar-ttitha, and so back to Callinicus, where he enjoyed the protection of 'Abdalla ibn Tahir against his rival Abraham. He did not on this occasion visit Mosul and Taghrith, because the maphrian Basil thought the times unfavourable." In 825 'Abd- allah ibn Tahir was sent to Egypt to put down the rebellion of 'Obaidallah ibn as-Sari, where he remained as governor till 827.2" His brother Muhammad ibn Tahir was by no means so well disposed towards the Christians, and destroyed all that they had been allowed to build in Edessa.8 Wherefore the patriarch went down into Egypt to beg the emir 'Abdallah to write to his brother and bid him moderate his zeal against the church, which he accordingly did.2® On his return from Egypt the patriarch had troubles with Philoxenus, bishop of Nisibis, who espoused the cause of the anti- patriarch Abraham® ; and he then went to Baghdadh in 829 to confer with the caliph al-Ma'min as to an edict that he had issued on the occasion of dissensions between the Palestinian and Babylonian Jews regarding the appointment of an exiliarch.! During his stay in the capital disputes took place among the Christians, which ended in a reference to the caliph and in the deposition of the bishop Lazarus bar Saibhétha.*? From Baghdadh Dionysius pro- ceeded to Taghrith and Mosul, and nominated Daniel as maphrian in place of the deceased Basil. In 830 al-Ma'mtin made an attack on the Greek territory, and

the patriarch tried to see him on his return at Kaisim, but the caliph had hurried on to Damascus, whither Dionysius followed him and accompanied him to Egypt on a mission to the Bashmuric Copts, who were then in rebellion. Any efforts of his and of the Egyptian patriarch were, however, of no avail, and the unfortunate rebels suffered the last horrors of war

16 B.0., iii. 1, 195. 17 Baethgen, Fragmenie, p. 2.

18 Chron. Eccles., i. 333; B.O., iii. 1, 195, note 4 (where 695 is a mistake for 798). See also Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 42 note 2, 114 note 1, 122 note 1, 127 note 8, 138 notes 1, 2, 140 note 1.

19 See Hoffmann in Z.D.M.G., xxxii. (1878), p. 742, note 2.

20 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 347-349.

21 B.0., ii. 345, col. 1, where the rebuilding of it by Dionysius is mentioned ; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 355, at the top.

22 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 347-349. A previous residence at the con- vent of Zuknin near Ainid (B.0., ii. 98, col. 2) is uncertain, as the words daira dhilan probably mean no more than " the convent of us Jacobites."

23 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 347, last line. 24 Tbid., i. 847.

25 Ibid., i. 355-357; B.O., ii. 345. Abraham died in 837, and was succeeded by his brother Simeon as anti-patriarch.

26 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 353.

27 Wiistenfeld, Die Statthalter von Aegypten, lte Abth., p. 32 sq.; De Sacy Relation de VEgypte par Abd-allatif, pp. 501-508 and 552-557.

28 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 359. 29 Ibid., i. 369.

30 [bid., i. 363. 31 Tbid., i. 365. 82 Tbid., i. 365-371.

at the hands of al-Ma’miin and his general Afshin.! On this discourses,!8 and of various encomia, thanksgivings, consolato journey Dionysius saw and examined the obelisks of Heliopolis, | epistles,!9 and prayers,” in many of which he makes use not merely

the pyramids, and the Nilometer.? In 835 he revisited Taghrith to | of metre but also of rime.2!

settle some disputes between the Taghritans and the monks of Mar Lazarus bar Sabhétha, called as bishop Philoxenus and Basjl.2 Lazary Matthew at Mosul, and to ordain Thomas as maphrian in place of | ruled the see of Baghdadh in the earlier part of the 9th century, bar ‘ the deceased Daniel. In the same year he went once more to | As mentioned above, he was deposed by Dionysius in 829. He Sabneins Baghdadh to salute al-Ma’min’s successor al-Mu’tasim, and met | compiled an anaphora or liturgy,” and wrote an exposition of the ‘ there the son of the king of Nubia, who had come on the same | office of baptism. The latter may be only part of a larger work errand.* The latter years of Dionysius were embittered by the | ou the offices of the church, from which Bar-Hebreus may have oppressions and afflictions which the Christians had to endure at | derived the information regarding the musical services quoted by

the hands of the Muhammadans. He died on 22d August 845, and | Assemani, B. Oke wh AGE.

was buried in the convent of Ken-neshré.> He left behind him Contemporary with these was John, bishop of Dara, to whom John of one great work, his Annals, covering the whole period of the world’s | Dionysius dedicated the larger recension of his history (see above), Dari history from the creation down to his own time. Of this there | He compiled a liturgy,® and was the author of the following were two recensions, a longer and a shorter. The longer redaction | works—a commentary on the two books of Pseudo- Dionysius

was dedicated to John, bishop of Dari, and came down at all Areopagita De Hierarchia Celesti et Ecclesiastica,® four books on events to the year 837, or perhaps a little later.6 Assemani has | the priesthood," four books on the resurrection of the dead," and published an extract from it, which he was fortunate enough to | a treatise on the soul.29

find in Cod. Vat. cxliv., f. 89, in the B.O., ii. 72-77.7 It would Nonnus was an archdeacon of the Jacobite Church at Nisibis Nonnus seem to have been written, after the manner of John of Asia, in a during the first half of this century, the Nestorian bishop Cyprian of Nisibis, series of chapters dealing with particular topics. The shorter re- | having allowed the Monophysites to resume possession of the church daction is extant in a single imperfect MS., Cod. Vat. clxii.,8 and | of St Domitius in 767 (see above, p. 844). He is mentioned by Bar-

[97H CENT,

is dedicated to George, ehorepiscopus of Amid, Euthalius the abbot (of Zuknin ?), Lazarus the periodeutes, the monk Anastasius, and the rest of the brotherhood. It is arranged by successive years, and ended with the year of the Greeks 1087=776 a.p.2 The author has adopted a division into four parts. Part first extends from the creation to the reign of Constantine. Here the chief authority is the Chronicorum Canonum Liber of Eusebius, supplemented by some extracts from other Greek sources, such as Eusebius's Ecclesiastical History and the Chronographia of Julius Africanus.

Hebreus as bringing charges against the bishop Philoxenus, who had sided with the anti-patriarch Abraham, and was therefore deposed by a synod held at Ras'ain in 827 or 828.29 We know also that he was in prison at Nisibis when he wrote his work against Thomas bishop of Marga and metropolitan of Béth Garmai, who flourished under the Nestorian catholics Abraham (887-850) and Theodosius (852-858). Besides this controversial treatise in four discourses, Nonnus was the writer of sundry letters of a similar eharacter.31

With these Dionysius has incorporated matter derived from sundry Romanus the physician, a monk of the convent of Kartamin, Roma- other works, ¢.g., the Chronicle of Edessa (see above, p. 835), the | was elected patriarch at Amid in 887, and took the name of Theo- nus the Méarrath Gazz or 'Cave of Treasures," !° Pseudo-Callisthenes's | dosius.*? He died in 896. He was the author of a medical syn- physi- Life of Alexander the Great, the story of the seven sleepers," and | tagma (kunndsha) of some repute.3 He wrote a commentary on cian or Josephus's Jewish War (see above, p. 823).!2 The second part of Pseudo ~~Hierotheus, On the Hidden Mysteries of the House of God, Theo~~ Dionysius's Chronicle reaches from Constantine to Theodosius II., | and dedicated it to Lazarus, bishop of Cyrrhus.? The work is dosius,

Theo-

dosius of Edessa, also a student of Greek at Ken-neshré.

and here he principally followed the Ecclesiastical History of Socrates (compare Cod. Vat. cxlv.). The third part extends from Theodosius II. to Justin II. Here Dionysius acknowledges himself chiefly in- debted to lis countryman John of Asia (see above, p. 835), but has also incorporated the short Chronicle of Joshua the Stylite (see above, p. 832) and the epistle of Simeon of Béth Arsham on the Himyarite Christians (see above, p. 832). The fourth part, coming down to 158 A.H.=774-775 A.D., is his own compilation, partly from such written documents as he could find, partly from the oral statements of aged men, and partly from his own observation. Assemani has given an account of the whole work, with an abridgement or excerpt of the fourth part, in the Bibl. Orient., ii. 98-116 ; but the labours of Dionysius of Tell-Mahré will never be appreciated as they deserve till the appearance of the edition which is now being prepared by Guidi.

Under Dionysius flourished his brother Theodosius, bishop of Bar-Hebreeus

Edessa. makes mention of him as accompanying Dionysius to Egypt in

Antonius

825-826 to complain to ‘Abdallah ibn Tahir of the wrongs of the Christians.% At an earlier period (802-803), when only a priest, he translated the homily of Gregory Nazianzen ou the miracles of the prophet Elijah, and Bar-Hebreus says that he also rendered into Syriac the poems of the same author.”

A friend of his was Antonius, a monk of Taghrith, surnamed “ the

the Rhe- Rhetorician.”!6 He was the author of a treatise on rhetoric in torician, seven chapters,” of a work on the good providence of God in four

eee 1 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 873; Weil, Gesch. d. Khalifen, ii. 246;

Wiistenfeld, Die Statthalter von Aegypten, 1te Abth., pp. 40-48.

2 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 377-381. 3 Ibid., 381.

4 Tbid., 381. 5 Ibid., 385. 6 Tbid., 383-385. 7 See Catal. Vat., iii. 253.

8 See Catal. Vat., iii. 828. Assemani’s account of this MS. is not so clear as could have been wished. In the Catal. Vat., iii. 329, he says that it is “unus ex iis codicibus, quos Moses Nisibenus ccenobiarcha e Mesopotamia in Scetense 8. Mariz Syrorum monasterium intulit” (viz., in 932); but there is now no note whatever in the MS. to show that this was the ease.

9 B.0., ii.99. At present the MS. ends in the year 775, a few leaves being wanting at the end.

10 Translated into German by Bezold, Die Schatzhdhle (1883). The Syriac text is not yet published.

ll Guidi, Testi Orientali ineditt sopra i Sette Dormienti di Efeso (Reale Accad. dei Lincei), 1885 ; see in particular p. 34, note 3.

12 The Syriac text of this first part was edited by Tullberg, Dionysti Telma- harensis Chronici liber primus, 1850 (compare Land, Joannes

Bischof von Ephesos, pp. 39-41). The Husebian extracts have been translated and compared with the Greek original (so far as possible), the Latin version of Jerome, and the Armenian version, by Siegfried and Gelzer, Eusebii Canonwm Epitome ex Dionysti Telmaharensis Chronico petita (1884). On this work see Gutschmid, Untersuchungen tiber d. syrische Epitome der Eusebischen Canoncs (1886). The editors have not always correctly rendered the text of their " blatero Sytius"; see a flagrant example on p. 79, last paragraph.

13 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 3613 B.O., ii. 345.

M4 Cod. Vat. xevi., Catal. Vat., ii. 521; B.O., ii. ip. exlix No. 17.

15 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 363; B.O., ii. 345. To this version perhaps belong the poems contained in Brit. Mus. Add. 14547 (Wright, Catal., p. 488) and 18821 (ibid., p. 775). 16 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 363; B.O., ii. el. and 345.

17 Brit. Mus. Add. 17208 (Wright, Catal., p. 614).

divided into five books, the first and second of which he finished at Amid, before going down to the Fast, and the third at Samosita, He also compiled a collection of 112 Pythagorean maxims and proverbs, with brief explanations in Syriac and Arabic, addressed to one George.*® A synodical epistle of his is extant in Arabic, written to the Egyptian patriarch Michael III.,?" and a Lenten homily in Arabic.38

Moses bar Képha was the son of Simeon Képha (or Peter) and Moses his wife Maryam. The father was from the village of Mashhad bar al-Kohail, on the Tigris opposite al-Hadithah,®9 the mother a Kepha.

native of Balad, in which town their son was born somewhere about 818. He was taught from his early youth by Rabban Cyriacus, abbot of the convent of Mar Sergius on the Tira Sahya, or Dry Mountain, near Balad, and there assumed the monastic garb. He was elected bishop of Beth Remm4n (Barimma),° Beth Kiyonaya,# and Mosul, about 863, and took the name of Severus. He was also for ten years periodentes or visitor of the diocese of Taghrith. He died A. Gr, 1214=903 a.p.,# "aged

about ninety years, of which he had been bishop for forty," and was buried in the convent of Mar Sergius. His works are numerous. He wrote commentaries on the whole Old and New Testaments, which are often cited by Bar-Hebreus in the Ausar Razé. Of these that on the book of

18 Brit. Mus. Add, 14726 (Wright, Catal., p. 617),

19 Brit. Mus. Add. 17208. 20 Brit. Mus. Add. 14726.

21 See a specimen in Rédiger's Chrestom. Syr., 2d ed., pp. 110-111.

22 See Wright, Catal., p. 496, col. 2. 23 See. Renaudot, ii. 399.

%4 Cod. Vat. exlvii., Catal., iii. 276. 25 B.0., ii. 123.

26 B.O., ii, 120-121 ; Cod. Vat. e. (Catal., ii. 539), eeclxiii. (Mai, Scriptt.Vett. Nova Coll., v.); Bodl, Or. 264 (Payne Smith, Catal., pp. 487-492). There is an extract in Cod. Vat. ecccxi. p. 1 (Mai, op. cit.),

27 B.0., ii, 121; Cod. Vat. c. (Catal., ii. 542), ecclxiii. (Mai, op. cit.); Bodl. Or. 264 (P. Smith, pp. 492-496). Extracts from bks. ii. and iv. in Zingerle, Monwm. Syr., i. 105-110; from bk. iv. in Overbeck, S. Ephraemi, &c., Opp. Sel., pp» 409- 413 ; see Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 394, note 1, No. 13.

28 B.O., ii. 119; Cod. Vat. c. (Catal., ii. 581), ecclxii. (Mai, op. cit.).

29 B.0., ii. 219, note 1. From it there are extracts in Cod. Vat. exlvii. (Catal., iii. 276). 30 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 363; B.O., ii. 346, col. 1.

31 These writings are all contained in Brit. Mus. Add. 14594 (Wright, Catal., pp. 618-620). 32 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 891; ii. 213. ; '

33 Ibid., i. 391. Assemani suggests that it may be the work contained in Cod. Vat. excii. (Catal., iii. 409). Compare Frothingham, Stephen bar Sudaili the Syrian Mystic and the Book of Hierotheos, 1886, p. 84 sq.

34 A forgery of Stephen bar Stidh-ailé ; see above, p. 832. .

35 Brit. Mus. Add. 7189 (Rosen, Catal., p. 74). This is the very copy which was procured with some difficulty for the use of Gregory Bar-Hebreus (Wright, Catal., p. 1205). :

36 Paris, Ancien fonds 118, 157 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 147 col. 1, 166 col. 1); Bod]. Marsh. 201, f. 58 (Payne Smith, Catal., p..507); B.O., ii. 125. It is admir- ably edited by Zotenberg in the Journ. Asiat., 1876, pp. 426-476.

37 B.O., ii. 124. 38 Brit. Mus. Add. 7206, f. 73 (Rosen, Catal., p. 103).

39 See Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 190. 40 Tbid., p. 190. :

41 B.O., ii. 218, note 1, col. 2; Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 30, note 243. In Wright's Catal., p.620, col. 2, the name is written Béth Kiyona ; in B.0., ii.127, Bee 42 In Wright's Catal., p. 621, col. 1, he is called bishop of Béth Remman an Béth 'Arbaye (Ba-'arbaya). + d 43 As correctly given in B.O., ii. 218; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 217 @0

by MS. C. also in i. 395). 44 B.O., ii. 180, note 3; 218, col. 2.

Orn CENT. |

SeF,etraACc DPITEHEBRATURE

Genesis survives, though imperfect, in Brit. Mus. 17274,) and there are extracts from them in Paris, Ancien fonds 35 (Zotenberg, Catal., 9.156), and Bodl. Marsh.101 (P. Smith, Catal., p. 462). The Gospels and Pauline epistles (imperfect) are contained in Brit, Mus. Add. 17274 (Wright, Catal., p. 620), the latter only in Bodl Or. 703 (P. Smith, Catal., p. 410) and Bodl. Marsh. 86 (ibid., p. 418). His treatise on the Hexaémeron in five books? is preserved to us in the Paris MS. Anc. fonds 120 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 197), and there are extracts from it in two other MSS. (7bid., pp. 157, 159). The work De Paradiso, in three parts, dedicated to his friend Ignatius of

grammar. WHonain also wrote a treatise On Synonyms, whether they be “voces equilitterz ” (as rghiz and raggiz) or not (as ‘aketha and karyutha). Extracts from this work have been preserved to us by a later compiler, who made use also of the canons of ‘Anan- isho’ of Hédhaiyabh™ (see above, p. 848). In Cod. Vat. cexvii (Catal., iii. 504) there are excerpts from a medical treatise of Honain, but no title is given. Honain, his son Ishak, and his nephew Hobaish ibn al-Hasan al-A‘sam (‘ Stiff-wrist ”) were among the earliest and ablest of those Christians, chiefly Nestorians, who, during the 9th and 10th centuries, making Baghdadh their head-

Se ee

ee

—

4 haozo (P)3isk le tk dy ; ion of | Quarters, supplied Muhammadan scholars with nearly everything

‘ ¢ (: } is oe bchtinas ’ age Sie eps wiser | that they knew of Greek science, whether medicine, mathematics,

a me aa me ney on the soul® survives in Cod. or philosophy. As a rule, they translated the Greek first into at. cxlvii. (Catal., iii. 273-274) ; it consists of 40 chapters, with a = ar he raw :

| supplementary chapter to show that the dead are profited by wee. Syriac and afterwards into Arabic; but their Syriac versions have

unfortunately, as it would appear, perished, without exception.” An elder contemporary of Honain was Gabriel bar Bokht-isho’, Gabriel in Arabic Jabra’il ibn Bakhtishi‘ (or rather Bokhtishi’),a member bar

ings made on their behalf. That on predestination and freewill, in four discourses, is extant in Brit. Mus, Add. 14731 (Wright, Catal.,

1 as

a

a —— Se.

a

ee

853). The Disputations against Heresies, spoken of by Moses's biographer in B.O., ii. 218, col. 2, is probably identical with the work On Sects mentioned by Assemani at p- 131, No. 7. The Festal Homities for the whole year® is extant in several MSS., ¢.9., Brit. Mus. Add. 21210 (Wright, Catal., p. 877) and 17188 (cbdid., p- 621), Paris, Anc. fonds 35 and 123 (Zotenberg, Catal., pp. 156, 159).7_ Besides these we have four funeral sermons,® an ad- monitory discourse to the children of the holy orthodox church,?® and a discourse showing why the Messiah is called by various epithets and names.!° Moses also wrote expositions of the sacra- nients of the church, such as on the holy chrism, in 50 chapters, Cod. Vat. cxlvii. (Catal., iii. 274) and Paris, Anc. fonds 128 (Zoten- berg, Catal., p. 159),4 with which is connected the discourse on the consecration of the chrism in Brit. Mus. Add. 21210 (Wright, Catal., p. 879); on baptism, addressed to his friend Ignatius, in 24 chapters, Cod. Vat. cxlvii. (Catal., iii. 276), in connexion with which we may take the discourse on the mysteries of baptism in Brit. Mus.

(p. 844). He was in practice at Baghdadh in 791, and attended on Ja'far ibn Yahya al-Barmaki, became court physician to ar- Rashid, and maintained this position, with various vicissitudes, till his death in 828.78 'Abhd-ishd' says that he was the author of a Syriac lexicon,"" which is our reason for giving him a place here, but no such work is mentioned by the other authorities to whom we have referred. 28

Of Isho' Mariizdya, in Arabic 'Isa al-Marwazi, from the city of Isho* Mari or Merv, little is known to us beyond the fact that he com- Mari- piled a Syriac lexicon, which was one of the two principal authori- zaya.

ties made use of by Bar ‘Ali. That he should be identical with the physician al-Marwazi, who lived about 567,2° seems wholly un- likely. We might rather venture to identify him with Abi Yahya al-Marwazi, who was an eminent Syrian physician at Baghdadh,

of a family of renowned physicians, beginning with George bar Bokht-Bokht-isho’ of Gundé-Shabhor, whom we have mentioned above sho”.

wrote in Syriac upon logic and other subjects, and was one of the teachers of Matta ibn Yaunan or Yiinus (who died in 940)! In any case, ‘Isa al-Marwazi secms to have flourished during the latter part of the 9th century, and therefore to have been a contemporary of Bar ‘Ali. _

Ish6’, or ‘Isa, bar ‘Ali is stated in Cod. Vat. ccxvii. (Catal., iii. Bar ‘Ali, 504, No. xv.) to have been a pupil of Honain. His father ‘Ali and his uncle ‘Isa, the sons of Da’iid or David, were appointed by the catholicus Sabhr-ishé‘ II. (882-836) to the charge of the college founded by him in the convent of Mar Pethion at Baghdadh.* Bar ‘Ali’s lexicon is dedicated to a deacon named Abraham, who made certain additions to it after the death of the author. *4

Isho‘ bar Non was a native of the village of Béth-Gabbaré near Ishd’ bar Mosul. He was a pupil of Abraham bar Dashandadh (see above, p- Non.

Add. 21210 (Wright, Joc. cit.) and on baptism in Cod. Vat. xevi. (Catal., ii. 522) 1; exposition of the liturgy, Brit. Mus. Add. 21210 (Wright, Catal., p. 879) and Berlin, Sachau 62 (2); further, exposi- tions of the mysteries in the various ordinations, Cod. Vat. li. (Catal., ii.820)}3; on the ordination of bishops, priests, and deacons, Brit. Mus. Add. 21210 (Wright, Catal., p. 879}; on the tonsure of monks, Cod. Vat. li. (Catal., ii. 322).° He also compiled two anaphore,’® one of which has been translated by Renaudot, ii. 391. Lastly, Moses bar Képha was the author of a commentary on the dialectics of Aristotle, mentioned by Bar-Hebreus in Chron. Ficcles., ii. 215, and of a commentary on the works of Gregory Nazianzen, and an ecclesiastical history, mentioned by his bio- grapher in B.0., ii. 218, col.2. The loss of this last book is to be

mh

Se ene

(ee | ae oo

regretted.

The contemporary Nestorian writers of mark are hardly more numerous,

In this century the foundations of Syriac lexicography were laid by the famous physician Abii Zaid Honain ibn Ishak al-‘Ibadi of Hérta (al-Hirah).” He applied himself to medicine at Baghdadh, under Yahya, or Yuhanna, ibn Masawaihi (Mastiyah or Mesue) ; but an ill-feeling soon sprang up between teacher and pupil, and Honain took his departure for the Grecian territory, where he spent a couple of years in acquainting himself with the Greek language and its scientific literature. He afterwards became physician to the caliph al-Mutawakkil. His downfall and excommunication

fear of God (which he wrote as a deacon of the church), a Syriac grammar, and a compendious Syriac lexicon. The lexicon has no doubt been in great part absorbed into the later works of Bar ‘Ali and Bar Bahlil.” The grammar seems to have been entitled Ke- thabha dht-Nukzé, or the ‘* Book of (Diacritical) Points.” It is cited by Bar-Hebreus in the Ausar Raz2™ and by Elias of Tirhan in his a a rece ini ee ee Ny oS OLD hae Pe Als

1 Wright, Catal., p. 620. 2 B.O., ii. 128, No. 1. 3 Ibid., ii. 218, col. 2.

4 Ibid., ii. 128, No. 2, 5 Ibid., ii. 131, No. 6. 6 Ibid., ii. 131, No. 9.

7 See also Cod. Vat. clix. (Catal., iii. 316-317); on the Ascension, Cod. Vat. exlvii. (Catal., iii. 276). 8 Brit. Mus. Add. 17188 (Wright, Catal., p. 622).

9 Brit. Mus. Add. 21210 (Wright, Catal., p. 879).

10 Brit. Mus. Add. 17188 (Wright, Catal., p. 622).

ll The Paris MS. Ancien fonds 35 contains another redaction in 36 chapters (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 157).

12 See also Cod. Vat. eccexi., in Mai, Seriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.

18 See also Cod. Vat. ecciv., in Mai, op. cit. 14 B.0., ii. 131, No. 8.

15 Compare Cod. Vat. eccv., in Mai, op. cit. 16 B.0., ii. 130, No. 4.

V7 Al-‘{badi was the nisbah of an Arab Christian of al-Hirah. See Ibn Khal- likan, ed. Wiistenfeld, No. 87. Latin writers generally call him Joannitius.

18 See the Fihrist, pp. ¢ 91° and 140; Ibn Abi Usaibi‘ah, ed. Miiller, i. 184; Ibn Khallikan, ed. Wiistenfeld, No. 208; al-Mas‘adi, Murij adh-Dhahab, ix. 173 5q.; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Syr., p.170(transl., p. 173; B.O., ii. 270, note 3); Chron. Hceles., ii. 197-199 (B.0., ii. 488); Hist. Dynast., p. 263 sq. (transl., p. 171 sg.); Wenrich, De Auctt. Gr. Versionibus, Index, B. Xxxi.; Wiistenfeld, Gesch. d. arab. Aerzte, No. 69. S B.O., iii. 1, 165.

20 See Gesenius, De Bar Alio et Bar Bahlulo Commentatio, 1834, Pete

***1 See Hoffmann, Z.D.M.G., xxxii., 1878, p. 741.**

844) at the same time with Abii Nuh al-Anbari (see above, p. 845, note 3)and Timothy, his predecessor in the dignity of catholicus (see above, p. 845). He retired first to the convent of Mar Abraham on Mount Izla, where he devoted himself to study and to refuting the views and writings of his schoolfellow and subsequent diocesan Timothy, whom he spitefully called Zalém-otheos (“‘the wronger of God”) instead of Timotheos. In consequence of a dispute with the monks he left Mount Izla and went for some months to Bagh- dadh, where he stayed at the house of George Masawaihi (Mastiyah or Mesue) and taught his son Yahya.2° He then returned to Mosul, where he took up his residence in

the convent of Mar Elias, and lived there for thirty years, till the death of Timothy.*° Through

| were meanly brought about by a fellow-Christian of the same pro- | the influence of Gabriel bar Bokht-isho' (see above) and his son- (fession, Isra'il_ ibn at-Taiftri, and Honain died soon after, 260 in-law Michael bar Masawaihi (Mastiyah or Mesue), the physician | A.H, =873 A.p.'8 Honain composed most of his original works in | of the caliph al-Ma'miin, he was appointed catholicus A.Gr. 1135 1 Arabic, and likewise many of his translations from the Greek. 22 Edit. Baethgen, p. 32; see Hoffmann, Opuse. Nestor., p. xvii.

1 'Abhd-ish6′ mentions but three books of his,?® viz., a book on the 23 Hoffinann, Opusc. Nest., pp. 2-49; see B.O., ii. 308, col. 2, and Cod. Berlin,

Sachau 72, No. 14. There is also a MS. in the collection of the 8.P.C.K.

24 Cod. Vat. excii. (Catal., iii. 409), Syntagma Medicum Syr. et Arab., is not likely to be his, but requires closer examination.

25 This is a large subject, into which we cannot here enter, the more so as it pertains rather to a history of Arabic than of Syriac literature. We would refer the reader to Wiistenfeld, Geschichte d. arab. Aerzte u. Naturforscher, 1840 ; Flugel, Dissert. de Arabicis Scriptorum Gracorum Interpretibus, 1841 ; Wenrich, De Auctorum Grecorum Versionibus et Commentariis, 1842; Renan, De Philoso- phia Peripatetica apud Syros, 1852, sect. viii. p. 51; Al-Farabi (Alpharabius) des Arab. Philosophen Leben u. Schriften, by M. Steinschneider, 1869; A. Miiller, Die Griechischen Philosophen in der arabischen Ueberlieferung, 1873. Of Muham- madan authorities two of the most important are the Fihrist of Abu '1-Faraj Muhammad ibn Ishak al-Warrak al-Baghdadhi, commonly called Ibn Abi Ya'kiib an-Nadim (died early in the 11th century), and the 'Uyun al-Anba fi Tabakat al-Atibbaé of Muwaffak ad-Din Abii 'l-Abbas Ahmad ibn al-Kasim as-Sa'di al-Khazraji, generally known by the name of Ibn Abi Usaibi'ah (died in 1269). The former work has been edited by Fliigel, J. Rodiger, and A. Miiller, 1871-72, the latter by A. Miiller, 1884.

26 See Ibn Abi Usaibi‘ah, ed. Miiller, i.127; Wiistenfeld, Gesch. d. arab. Aerzte, No. 28; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Syr., pp. 139-140, 170 (B.0., ii. 271, note, col. 1), and Hist. Dynast., 235, 264. 27 B.O., iii. 1, 258,

28 Compare Gesenius, De BA et BB, p. 7.

29 See Gesenius, op. cit., p. 8; B.O., iii. 1, 258,

30 B.O., iii. 1, 437, 438, note 2.

31 See the Fihrist, p. 263; Ibn Abi Usaibi‘ah, ed. Miiller, i. 234-235,

82 B.O., iii. 1, 257; Gesenius, op. cit., cap. ii. 33 Gesenius, op. cit., p. 14.

34 Ibid., p. 21; see Hoffmann, Syrisch-arabische Glossen, 1874, and Payne Smith, Thes. Syr., passim. 35 See B.O., iii. 1, 501 sq.

36 So Assemani, B.0., ii. 435. Bar-Hebreus (Chron. Eccles., ii. 181) says that he resided for thirty-eight years in the convent of Sa‘id near Mosul.

Denha,

Thomas of Marga.

Tsho’- dadh of Merv.

Kendi.

848

= 823-824 a.p.1_ He sat for only four years, and was buried, like his predecessor, in the convent of Kélil-ishd‘ at Baghdadh. Of his ill-feeling towards Timothy I. we have already made mention ; how he kept it up after Timothy’s death, and what troubles he got into in consequence, may be read in the pages of Assemani (B.0., iii. 1, 165). Bar-Hebreus has preserved some account of a disputa- tion between him and a Monophysite priest named Papa.2 ‘A bhd- isho* gives the following list of his works *—a treatise on theology, questions on the whole text of

Scripture, in two volumes, a collec- tion of ecclesiastical canons and decisions,‘ consolatory discourses, epistles, a treatise on the division of the services, turgamé or “interpretations,” ° and a tract on the efficacy of hymns and anthems. Of the questions on Scripture there is a copy in the col- lection of the S.P.C.K., and of the consolatory discourses a mutilated MS. in the British Museum, Add. 17217 (Wright, Catal., p. 613).§ The replies to the questions of Macarius the monk seem to belong to the treatise on the division of the services (purrash teshméshatha), if one may judge by the first and only one quoted.”

A disciple of Ishd‘ bar Non was Denha, or, as he is otherwise called in some MSS. of ‘Abhd-ishd”s Catalogue, Thibha (or rather Hibhi, Ibas). Assemani places him under the catholicus Pcthidn (dicd in 740), but we prefer to follow the authority of John bar Zo’bi in his Grammar.® Denha was the author of sermons and tracts on points of ecclesiastical law, and of commentaries on the Psalms, on the works of Gregory Nazianzen (as contained in two vols. in the translation of the abbot Paul), and on the dialectics of Aristotle.

In 217 A.H.=832 A.p., the same year in which Sabhr-isho’ II. succeeded to the patriarchate,’ a young man named Thomas, the son of one Jacob of Béth Sherwanayé, in the district of Salakh,” entered the convent of Béth ‘Abhé, which seems at this time to have fallen off sadly in respect of the learning of its inmates.2 A few ycars afterwards (222 a.u.=837 a.D.) we find him acting as secretary to the patriarch Abraham (also a monk of Béth ‘Abhé, who sat from 837 to 850).18 By him he was promoted to be bishop of Marga, and afterwards metropolitan of Béth Garmai, in which capacity he was present at the ordination of his own brother Theo- dosius (bishop of al-Anbar, afterwards mctropolitan of Gundé- Shabhor) as catholicus in 852.14 Thomas of Marga (as he is com- monly called), having been very fond from his youth of the legends and histories of holy men, more especially of those connected with his own convent of Béth ‘Abhé, undertook to commit them to writing at the urgent request of the monk ‘Abhd-ishs‘, to whom he dedicates the Monastic History. Assemani has given a. toler- ably full analysis of this work, with a few extracts, in the BuO, iii. 1, 464-501, throughout which volume it is one of his chief authorities, The

publication of it ina complete form is much to be desired. The MSS. available in Europe are—Cod. Vat. clxv. (Catal., iii. 331), of which Codd. Vatt. ecclxxxi.-ii. are a copy (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Ooll., v.); Paris, No. 286 in Zotenberg's Catal., p. 216 (also copied from Vat. clxv.); Brit. Mus. Orient. 2316 (ff. 182, 17th century, imperfect) ; Berlin, Sachau 179 (copied in 1882). Thomas also wrote a poem in twelve-syllable metre on the life and deeds of Maran-'amméh, metropolitan of Hédhaiyabh, which he introduced into his History, bk. iii. ch. 10 ; see B.O., iii. 1, 485.

Isho'-dadh of Mari or Merv, bishop of Hédhatta or al-Hadithah, was a competitor with Theodosius for the patriarchate in 852.1 According to 'Abhd-ish6', his principal work was a commentary on the New Testament, of which there are MSS. in Berlin, Sachau 311, and in the collection of the S.P.C.K. It extended, however, to the Old Testament as well, for in Cod. Vat. eccclvii. we find the portions relating to Genesis and Exodus.16

In the B.0., iii. 1, 218, 'Abhd-ishd' names a certain Kendi as the author of a lengthy disputation on the faith.17 Assemani places this "Candius" or "Ebn Canda" under the catholicus John IV., apparently on the authority of 'Amr ibn Matta. We sus- pect, however, that the person meant is 'Abd al-Masith (Ya'kib) ibn Ishak al-Kindi, the author of a well known apology for the Christian religion, which has been published by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge.!8 The work dates from the time of the caliph

1 Bar-Hebreeus (loc. cit.) says 205 A.H.=820-821 a.p. 3 see above, p. 845.

2 Chron. Eccles., ii. 183-187.

3 B.0., iii. 1, 165-166. 'Amr ibn Matta says that he wrote a commentary on Theologus, i.e., Gregory Nazianzen, B.O., iii. 1, 262, note 1.

4 Compare B.0., iii. 1, 279. 5 See Badger, The Nestorians, ii. 19.

_ § The pious Monophysites of St Mary Deipara cut up this volume for bind- ing, &c., as they did some other Nestorian books of value in their library.

_../ Cod. Vat. Ixxxviii. 5 (Catal., ii. 483); cl. 9(Catal., iii. 281); clxxxvii. 5 (Catal., ill. 405). Assemani supposes that the next article inclxxxvii. does not belong to Theodore of Mopsuestia, but is taken from Isho' bar Non's questions on Scripture.

8 B.O., iti. 1, 175. 9 Wright, Catal., p. 1176, col. 1.

10 B.O., ii. 435; iii. 1, 505 sq.

1 Ibdid., iii. 1,479; Hoffmann, Ausztige, pp. 244-245.

12 B.O., lil. 1,488 ; comp. the ordinance of Sabhr-ishd', pp. 505-506.

18 B.0., iii. 1, 204 col. 1, 488 col. 2, 490 col. 2.

14 Ibid., iii. 1, 210, 510 col. 2. 15 Ibid., iii. 1, 210-212.

16 Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v. The name of the author is there given as Tesciuaad, doubtless a misprint for dad. We are therefore surprised to find Martin writing " Ichou-had évéque d'Hadeth," Introd. & la Critique Textuelle du Nouveau Test., p. 99. 17 The correct reading is dhé-hdimanitha.

18 The Apology of El-Kindi, 1885. An English translation appeared in 1882, The Apology of Al-Kindy, &e., by Sir W. Muir.

SYRIAC LIGQDR2AIV Be

ad

[9TH cENT.-

al-Ma'miin (813-833), and therefore synchronizes with the disputa- tions of Theodore Abi Korrah, bishop of Harran.! Being written in

Arabic, it hardly belongs to this place, but is mentioned to avoid misapprehension.

Theodore bar Khoni is stated to have been promoted by his uncle Theo. John IV. to the bishopric of Lashdm in 893.29 He was the author dore bar of scholia (on the Scriptures), an ecclesiastical history, and some Khon; minor works. s

To about this period probably belongs another historian, the loss Ahrén, of whose work we have to regret. This is a writer named Ahron or Aaron, who is mentioned by Elias bar Shiniya under 273 a.u.= 886-887 A.D.72

In the 10th century the tale of Jacobite authors dwindles away Jacobite to almost nothing. Most of the dignitaries of the church composed authors their synodical epistles and other official writings in Arabic, and of 10th the same may be said of the men of science, such as Abii ‘Ali ‘Isa century, ibn Ishak ibn Zur‘ah (943-1008) and Abi Zakariya Yahya ibn ‘Adi, who died in 974 at the age of eighty-one. About the middle of the century we may venture to place the deacon Simeon, Simeon, whose Chronicle is cited by Elias bar Shinaya under 6 A.H.=627- the dea. 628 A.D. and 310=922-923.% The 11th century is somewhat more con, prolific.

A Persian Christian named Gisd,* leaving his native city of

Ushnikh or Ushnii in Adharbaigan, settled, after several removals, in the district of Gubds or Giibas,”4 one of the seven dioceses of the province of Meliténe (Malatiah), and built there a humble church, in which he deposited sundry relics of St Sergius and St Bacchus, and cells for himself and his three companions. This happened in 958.2° As the place grew in importance, other monks gradually resorted to it, and among them “ Mar(i) Yohannan dé- John of Maron,” or John (the son) of Mardn,?6 a man of learning in both Maron, sacred and profane literature, who had studied under Mar Mékim at Edessa. Gisa, the founder of the convent, died at the end of twelve years, and was succeeded as abbot by his disciple Elias, who beautified the church. Meantime its fame increased as a seat of learning undcr the direction of

John of Mirdn, and many scribes found employment there. The patriarch John VII., da-strighta, '*He of the Mat" (his only article of furniture)," was one of its visitors. Elias, on his retirement, nominated John of Marén as his successor, who, aided by the munificence of Emmanucl, a monk of Harran and a disciple of the maphridn Cyriacus,"8 rebuilt the church on a larger and finer scale, whilst a constant supply of fresh water was provided at the cost of a Taghritan merchant named Maratha. This was in 1001. About this time Elias bar Gaghai, a monk of Taghrith, founded a monastery near Meliténe, but died before it was finished. His work was taken up by one Eutychus or Kulaib, who persuaded John of Maron to join him. Here again his teaching attracted numbers of pupils. At last, after the lapse of twelve years, when there were 120 priests in the convent, he suddenly withdrew by night from the scene of his labours and retired to the monastery of Mar Aaron near Edessa, where he died at the end of four years, about 1017. His commentary on the book of Wisdom is cited by Bar-Hebreus in the Ausar Razé.™

Mark bar Kiki was archdeacon of the Taghritan church at Mosul, Mark bar and was raised to the dignity of maplirian by the name of lgnatius Kiki. in 991,°° After holding this office for twenty-five years, he became a Muhammadan in 1016,! but recanted before his death, which took place at an advanced age* in great poverty. Hecomposed a poem on his own fall, misery, and subsequent repentance, of which Bar-Hebreeus has preserved a few lines. *?

According to Assemani, B.0., ii. 317 and cl., Bar-Hebreus men- Joseph tions in his Chronicle that a monk named Joseph wrote three dis- of Mel courses on the cruel murder of Peter the deacon by the Turks at tine. Meliténe in 1058. The anecdote may be found in the edition of Bruns and Kirsch, p. 252 (transl., p. 258), but the discourses would seem rather to have dealt with the retribution that overtook the re- tiring Turks at the hands of the Armenians and the wintry weather. =

Yéshi' bar Shiishan (or Susanna), syncellus of Theodore or John i, IX., was chosen patriarch by the eastern bishops, under the name bar of John X., in opposition to Hayé or Athanasius VI., on whom the shal.

choice of their western brethren had fallen in 1058.4 He soon abdicated, however, retired to a convent, and devoted himself to study.

19 See Zotenberg, Catal., No. 204, 1 and 8, and No. 205.

20 B.O., ii. 440; ili. 1, 198. 21 See Baethgen, Fragmente, p. 3.

22 Ibid., p. 2; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 126, note 1.

23 Others write Gaiyasa.

24 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 401 sq.; B.O., ii. 288, 350. h

25 B.0., ii. 260. Gibds was on the right bank of the Euphrates, between the plain of Meliténe and Claudia. . 2

26 Abbeloos, in a note on Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles.,i. 404, raises the question what connexion there may be between this historical personage and the some- what shadowy ‘“ Joannes Maro,” to whom Assemani has devoted a large space B.O., i. 496-520. 27 B.O., ii. 132, 351. 28 Ibid., ii. 442.

29 B.O., ii. 283 ; see also p. cl.

30 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Kccles., ii. 257 ; B.O., ii. 443.

31 See Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 105, 153; B.O., iii. 289, note 1.

32 According to Cardahi, Liber Thesauri, p. 140, in 1030 or 1040.

33 Chron. Eccles., ii. 289 ; B.O., ii. 448, and also p. cl.

34 Bar-Hebreus, Chrou. Eccles., i. 437 sq.; B.O., ii. 141 (where there are errors, see Add., p. 475), 354.

ail

Ty

gt Og ees Ss ‘—s

ot

Ht

alg Arabic Abu ’l-Hasan ‘Isa ibn al-Bahlal, the fullest and most valu-

l]lTH cENT.]

si hiliAc€ La

On the death of Athanasius he was reelected patriarch in 1064, and sat till 1073.1 He carried on a controversy with the patriarch of Alexandria, Christodilus, regarding the mixing of salt and oil with the Eucharistic bread according to the Syrian practice.2 He com- piled an anaphora, issued a collection of twenty-four canons,? and wrote many epistles,* chiefly controversial. Such are the letters in Arabic to Christodilus on the oil and salt® and the letter to the catholicus of the Armenians.6 The tract on the oil and salt is ex- tant in Paris, Anc. fonds 54 (Zotenberg, Catai., p. 71), and there is an extract from it in Suppl. 32 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 54). Bar- Shiishan also wrote four poems on the sack of Meliténe by the Turks in 1058,’ and collected and arranged the works of Ephraim and Isaac of Antioch, which he had begun to write out with his own hand when he was interrupted by death.®

r _Sa‘id bar Sabini lived during the latter part of the 11th century.

He was versed in Greek as well as Syriac, and well known as a literary man, ® especially as a writer of hymns.!° The patriarch Athanasius VII. Abu ‘l-Faraj bar Khamniaré (1091-1129) raised him to the office of bishop of Meliténe (Malatiah) in October 1094. His consecration took place at Kankérath, near Amid, by the name of John, and he set out for Malatiah, which he entered on the very day that the gates were closed to keep out the Turks, who laid siege to it under Kilij Arslan (Da’id ibn Sulaiman), sultan of Iconium. He was murdered during the course of the siege, in July 1095, by the Greek commandant Gabriel.)

The Nestorian writers of these two centuries are both more numer- ous and more important than the Jacobite.

We may place at the head of our list the name of Hénan-isho' bar | Sardshwai, who must have lived quite early in the 10th century, as he is cited by Elias of Anbar, who wrote about 922.2 He was bishop of Herta (al-Hirah), and published questions on the text of Scrip- _ ture and a vocabulary with glosses or explanations, !° which is con- stantly cited by his successor in this department of scholarship, Bar Bahlal.'# :

With Bar Sardéshwai we naturally connect Ishd' bar Bahlil, in

able of Syriac lexicographers. His date is fixed by that of the elec- || tion of the catholicus 'Abhd-isha'L., in which he bore a part, in 963.!° | 'Abhd-isho' in his Catalogue, B.O., iii. 1, 261, mentions an author i@ Abhziidh, a teacher in some school or college (eskalaya), who com- } posed a treatise containing demonstrations on various topics, alpha-) betically arranged and dedicated to his friend Kurta.1° In note 5 Assemani makes the very circumstantial statement, but without | Siving his authority, that Abhzidh was head of the college founded | at Baghdadh about 832 by Sabhr-isho' II. ,!" under Sergius (860-872). | But, if this writer be identical, as seems probable, with the Baziidh who was the author of a Book of Definitions described at some length by Hoffmann, De Hermeneuticis apud Syros Aristoteleis, pp. 151-153, we must place him nearly a century later, because he cites the "scholia" of Theodore bar Khouni, who was appointed bishop jof Lashom in 893.18 The whole matter is, however, very obscure, jand Hoffmann has subsequently (Opuse. Nestor., p. xxii.) sought to jidentify Baziidh, who was also called Michael (ibid., p. Xxi.), with the Michael who is mentioned as a commentator on the Scriptures by 'Abhd-isha', B.O., iii. 1, 147, and whom Assemani supposed to be the same as Michael bishop of al-Ahwaz (died in 852 or 854).19 All then that appears to be certain is that the Persian Baziidh also bore the Christian name of Michael, and that, besides the alphabetically arranged demonstrations and the Book of Definitions, he composed 2 tract on man as the microcosm. *?

Elias, bishop of Pérdz-Shabhor or al-Anbar, flourished about 922, as appears from his disputes with the catholicus Abraham (905-937),2! and his account of the miserable bishop Theodore of Béth Garmai, \who, after his deposition by John bar Héghiré (900-905) and subsequent absolution by Abralam, became a Muhammadan.22 He was

1 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 445; B.O., it. 148 (where there are again many errors, see Add., p. 475), 355. 2 B.O., ii. 144, 356. 3 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles, i. 446; B. Omainspo: 4 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 4473 B.O., ii. 355. 5 B.0., ii. 508, col. 2. § Ibid., ii. 211, 383; Berlin, Sachau 60, 1.

Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Syr., p. 252 (transl., p. 258); B.O., ii. 317.

Bar-Hebrasus, Chron. Eccles., i. 447 5 B.O., ii. 855.

Bar-Hebrzus, Chron. Eccles., i. 463: B.O., ii. 211-212.

}| 10 See one of these, an acrostic canon, used in the service of the assumption jf the monastic garb, in Cod. Vat. li. (Catal., ii. 321, No. 31), Brit. Mus. 17232

Wright, Catal., p. 372, No. 22), Paris, Suppl. 38 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 74, No. 84), Bodl. Hunt. 444 (P. Smith, Catal., p. 248, No. 9).

U Bar-Iebreeus, Chron. Syr., pp. 278-279 (transl., pp. 284-285).

12 B.0., iii. 1, 260, col. 2, at foot.

13 Hashhatha are XpHoes and \é£ers 5 see Hoffmann, Opuse. Nestor., p. xiii.

14 B.O., iii. 1,261; see Payne Smith, Thes. Syr., passim.

15 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., iii. 251; B.O., ii. 442, iii. 1, 200 col.2 ; Gesenius, De BA et BB, p. 26; see Payne Smith, Thes. Syr., passim. An edition of his Lexicon, by M. R, Duval, is now (1887) being printcd in Paris at the expense pf the French Government.

16 B.0., iii. 1, 261. W7 Tbid., ii. 435. 18 See above, p. 848.

19 B.0., iii. 1, 210, note 2, col. 2. Michael's Book of Questions is quoted by Solomon of al-Basrah in The Bee, ed. Budge, p. 135.

20 Hoffmann, op. cit., p. xxi.

"1 B.0., iii. 1, 258, note 3; Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 84, 141.

22 B.O., iii. 1, 234, col. 1, at foot.

uf

8 9

Mp 2 FU rh 849

the author of a collection of metrical discourses in three volumes, "? an apology, epistles, and homilies.

_ George, metropolitan of Mosul and Arbél, was promoted to this George dignity by the catholicus Emmanuel about 945, and died after 987. of Mosul He contested the patriarchate three times but in vain, Viz..—in 961, and when Isra'él was elected,™ in 963, when 'Abdh-ishd' I. was the Arbél. successful candidate," and in 987, when the choice of the synod fell on Mari bar Tobi." His chief work was an exposition of the ecclesiastical offices for the whole year, in seven sections, of which Assemani has given a full analysis in B.O., iii. 1, 518-540. Some specimens of his twrgamé or hymns may be found in Codd. Vatt. xe.

a ia (Catal., ii. 487, No. 27, and 490, No. 24), and Berlin, Sachau

5

The date of Emmanuel bar Shahharé" is fixed by his presence at Emma- the consecration of "Abhd-ishd' I. in 963.89 He was teacher in the nuel bar school of Mar Gabriel in the convent called the Daira 'ElIaita at Shah- Mosul. Cardahi places his death in 980.3! Besides some minor haré. expository treatises, he wrote a huge work on the

Hexaémeron or six days of creation.*2 The Vatican MS.%8 contains twenty-eight discourses, of which the second is wanting, and a twenty-ninth is added On Baptism. It is dated 1707. The MS. in the Brit,

Mus., Orient. 1300, dated 1685, also contains twenty-eight dis- courses, of which the second is wanting. Some of them are in seven-syllable, others in twelve-syllable metre. Cardahi has pub- lished a specimen in his Liber Thesauri, pp. 68-71. Emmanuel's brother, 'Abhd-isho' bar Shahharé, is mentioned by Assemani, B.0., ii, 540, and by Cardahi. _The latter has printed part of one of his poems, on Michael of Amid, a companion of Mar Eugenius, in Liber Thesauri, pp. 186-137. It is taken from Cod. Vat. elxxxiv. (Catal, iii. 395). But there the author is called Bar Shi'arah, a3 /S03D, and is said to have been a inonk of the convent of Michael (at Mosul).

Somewhere about the end of this century we may venture to Andreas place a writer named Andrew, to whom 'Abhd-isho' has given a or place in his Catalogue, and whom Assemani has chosen to identify Andrew. with the well known Andrew, bishop of Samosata, the opponent of Cyril of Alexandria. The words of 'Abhd-isho', if we understand

them rightly, mean that this Andrew wrote turgamé (or hymns of a particular kind) and a work on puhhadm stydmé, the placing of the diacritical and vowel points and marks of interpunction.3" He was therefore an inoffensive grammarian.

Elias, the first Nestorian catholicus of the name, was a native of Elias Iss

Karkha dhé-Gheddan, was trained in Baghdadh and al-Madain, Nestor- and became bishop of Tirhan, whence he was advanced to the ian cath- primacy in 1028, and sat till 1049.°® According to 'Abhd-isho', he olicus. compiled canons and ecclesiastical decisions, and composed gram- matical tracts.® According to Mari ibn Sulaiman,! he was the author of a work on the principles of religion in twenty-two chapters, which may be identical with the second of the above, and of a form of consecration of the altar (kuddas al-madhbah). His Grammar**

was composed in his younger days, before he became bishop. It has been edited and translated from a MS. at Berlin® by Baethgen.“ A tract of his on the diacritical points and marks of interpunction is cited and used by John bar Zo’bi.*

Abi Sa‘id ‘Abhd-isho’ bar Bahriz was abbot of the convent of ‘Abhd-Elias or Sa‘id at Mosul, and a candidate for the patriarchate when isho’ bar Elias I. was elected in 1028. He was subsequently promoted to Bahriz. be metropolitan of Athdr or Mosul.“ He collected ecclesiastical canons and decisions, wrote on the law of inheritance,” aud an exposition of the offices of the church.**

Assemani has assigned the same date to Daniel (the son) of Daniel of Tabhanitha, bishop of Tahal in Béth Garmai, but without any Tahal. sufficient reason.48 If he be really identical with the Daniel to

23 B.0., iii. 1, 258-260; Cod. Vat. clxxxiii. (Catal., iii. 383); Berlin, Sachau 132; collection of the 8.P.C.K. ; Cardahi, Liber Thesauri, pp. 72-76.

24 In Cod. Vat. xci. (Catal., ii. 491, No. 35) there is a homily ascribed to Elias of Anbar, but the Syriac text has Paul. 25 B.O., ti. 442.

26 Ibid., ii. 442; iii. 1, 200, col. 2. 27 Tbid., ii. 448.

28 See also Codd. Vatt. cxlviii., exlix., and cliii., in Catal., iii. 277 sq. In Cod.

Vat. cl. (Catal., iii, 280) there are questions regarding various services, baptism, and communion at Easter.

29 See B.O., iti. 1, 540. In Arabic ash-Shahhar or, according to another read- ing, ash-Sha“ar (see end of this paragraph). 30 B.0., iii, 1, 200, col. 2.

31 Liber Thesauri, p. 71. 32 B.O., iti. 1,277. 33 No. elxxxii., Catal., iii. 380.

34 There are two MSS. in Berlin, Sachau 169-170 and 309-310 (see Sachau, Reise, pp. 364-365), and one in the collection of the S.P.C.K.

35 In the MS. Brit. Mus. it is said that this is only the fourth volume of the

Henaémeron, (SOQ Pane (Aopgico {LeSo2d {Asar2 :

36 B.0., iii. 1, 202.

37 See Hoffmann, Opusc. Nestor., pp. vii., viii.

rendered the words, librum de ratione punctandi.

38 In Arabic Karkh Juddan, in Béth Garmai; see Hoffmann, Ausziige, pp.

254, 275. 39 B.O., ili. 262-263; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 285-287.

40 B.0., iii. 1, 265. 4 Tbid., p. 263, col. 1.

42 Alter Bestand 36, 15, in Kurzes Verzeichniss, &c., p. 31.

43 Syrische Grammatik des Mar Elias von Tirhan, 1880.

44 See B.0., iii, 1, 265, note 7; Catal. Vat., iii. 411 (under No. ii.); Wright,

Catal., p. 1176, col. 2. 45 B.O., iii, 1, 268-264,

46 B.O., iti. 1, 279. 47 Ibid., p. 267, col. 2, lin. penult.

48 That he follows ‘Abhd-ishd’ bar Bahriz in the Catalogue of tAbhd-ishdt is

And so Abraham Ecchellensis

no evidence whatever as to his date; and the work mentioned in Je Obaane ils 174, notes 3 and 4, is not by Bar Bahriz, but by George of

Mosul and Arbel (see Cod. Vat. cliii.).

XXII. — 107

Elias bar Shinaya.

850 SPYRIAC LIPTRSary Se [107TH cent.

whom George, metropolitan of Mosul and Arbél, dedicated his ex- position of the offices of the church, he must have lived about the middle of the previous century. He wrote funeral sermons, metri- cal homilies, answers to Scriptural questions and enigmas, and other stuff of the same sort. More important probably were his "Book of Flowers," Kéthabha dhé-Habbabhé, which may have been a poetical florilegium ; his Solution of the Questions in the Fifth Volume of Isaac of Nineveh's Works ; and his commentary on the Heads of Knowledge or maxims (of Evagrius).1

Conspicuous among the writers of this century is Elias bar Shinaya, who was born in 975,? adopted the monastic life in the convent of Michael at Mosul under the abbot John the Lame,? and was ordained priest by Nathaniel, -bishop of Shenna (as-Sinn), who afterwards became catholicus under the name of John V. (1001-12).4 Elias was subsequently in the convent of Simeon on the Tigris opposite Shenna, and was made bishop of Béth Nuhadhré in 1002.5 At the end of 1008 he was advanced to the dignity of metropolitan of Nisibis. With the next patrjarch, John VI. bar Nazl (1012-20), previously bishop of Hérta, he was on good terms; but he set his face against Isho'-yabh bar Ezekiel (1020-25).8 Under Elias I. (1028-49) all seems to have been quiet again. That our author survived this patriarch is clear from his own words in B. O., iii. 1, 268, col. 2, Il. 19, 20.9 His greatest work is the Annals or Chroniele, of which unfortunately only one imperfect copy exists. Baethgen has published extracts from it under the title of Frag- mente syr. u. arab, Historiker, 1884, which have enabled scholars to recognize its real importance."! The exact date of the Annals, and probably of the writing of the unique copy, is fixed by the statement of the author, f. 15b, that John, bishop of Hérta, was ordained catholicus on Wednesday, 19th of the latter Teshrin, A. Gr. 1824 (19th November

1012 a.p.), and that he still ruled the Nestorian Church "down to this year in which this work was composed, namely, A. Gr. 1330" (1018-19).2 After the Annals we may mention Elias's Syriac grammar, one of the best of the Nestorian writings on the subject,' and his Arabic-Syriac vocabu- lary, Kitab at-Tarjuman fi ta'lim lughat as-Surydn or 'the Inter- preter, to teach the Syriac Language." It has been edited by De Lagarde in his Pretermissorum Libri Duo, 1879, and was the store-house from which Thomas a Novaria derived his Thesaurus Arabico-Syro-Latinus, 1686. Elias was also a composer of hymns, some of which occur in the Nestorian service-books,4 and of metrical homilies, apparently of an artificial character.15 He edited four volumes of decisions in ecclesiastical law, which are often citcd by 'Abhd-isho' of Nisibis in his Collectio Canonwm Synodicorum' , indeed the third section, "On the Division of Inheritances," is en- tirely borrowed from the work of Elias." Of his epistles that to the bishops and people of Baghdadh on the illegal ordination of Isho'-yabh bar Ezekiel is preserved in Cod. Vat. cxxix. (Catal., iii. 191).1% Six of his Arabic dissertations have been described by Assemani in the B.O., iii. 1, 270-272. The most important of them appears to be No. 5, a disputation, in seven sessions or chapters, with the vizir Abu 'l-Kasim al-Husain ibn 'Ali al-Maghribi, pre- ceded by a letter to the secretary Abu '1-'Ala Sa'id ibn Sahl. These meetings took place in 1026, and the work was committed to writing in 1027, after the death of the vizir at Maiyifarikin in October, and published with the approbation of the celebrated commentator, philosopher, and lawyer Abu '1-Faraj 'Abdallah ibn at-Taiyib,!9 who was secretary to the patriarch Elias I. The anonymous work de- scribed in full by Assemani (B.0., iii. 1, 303-306) under the title of Kitabu *l-Burhan 'ala sahthi (or rather fi tashthi) 'l-tman, 'The Demonstration of the Truth of the Faith," is also by him."

Here we may pause in our enumeration to cast an eye upon some

1 B.O., iii. 1, 174. 2 Rosen, Catal., p. 89, col. 2.

3 B.0., iii. 1, 266 note 3, 271 col. 1.

- **Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 101, 151 ; 104, 153; compare Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 261, 281; B.O., ii. 444.**

5 Baethgen, Fragmente, pp. 101, 152. 6 Ibid., pp. 108, 152.

7 Ibid., pp. 104, 153; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 283 ; B.O., ti. 446.

SEB Ovals lane

® Consequently the statement in B.0., ii. 447, is inaccurate. Cardahi (Liber Thesauri, p. 84) names 1056.

10 Brit. Mus. Add. 7197 (Rosen, Catal., pp. 86-90; Wright, Catal., p. 1206).

jl Baethgen has overlooked Wright's Catal., p. 1206, and the plate in the Oriental Series of the Palwographical Society, No. lxxvi. The Syriac text was evidently written by an amanuensis, whereas the older Arabic text was prob- ably written by Elias himself.

12 There are some extracts from the Annals in Berlin, Sachau 108, 2.

13 There are MSS. in the Brit. Mus. Add. 25876, Or. 2314 (frag.); Vat. Cod. exciv. (Catal., iii. 410), Codd. eccex. eccel. (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.); Palat. Medic. ceclxi. (Catal., p. 419); Berlin, Sachau 5, 2, also 216, 1, and 306, 1; and in the collection of the S.P.C.K. Part of the work (sections 1-4) has been edited by Dr. R. Gottheil, Leipsic, 1886.

__ 4 E.g., Cod. Vat. xc. (Catal., ii. 487), Nos. 13, 15,17, 18; Cod. Vat. xci. (Catal., il. 491), Nos. 12, 14, 16, 17; Berlin, Sachau 64, 10.

15 See Cod. Vat, clxxxiv. (Catal., iii. 390), a poem on the love of learning, in which the letter Alaph does not oceur. If is printed by Cardahi in the Liber Thesauri, pp. 83-84. 16 Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., x.

17 B.O., iii. 1, 267-269 ; Mai, op. cit., v. pp. 54, 220. 18 B.O., iii. 1, 272-273.

19 He died in 1043; see B.O., iii. 1, 544; Wiistenfeld, Gesch. d. arab. Aercte, No. 132; Ibn Abi Osaibi‘ah, ed. Miller, i. 239; Bar-Hebreeus, Hist. Dynast., p. 355 (transl., p. 233); Chron. Syr., p. 239 (iransl., p. 244); Chron. Eccles., ii. 283.

***0 See the German translation by L. Horst, Des Metropoliten Elias von Nisibis Buch vom Beweis der Wahrheit d. Glaubens, Colmar, 1886.**

anonymous translations, which we are inclined to ascribe to t

and a centuries, ng which are interesting as showing be ee ay. opular literature of the Syrians was, compared with i

iiesloaan and men of seeeE. : ‘ hi Ca

We have already spoken of the older translation of Kalilagh w8. ray, Damnagh, made by the periodeutes Bodh in the 6th century of our e : era (see above, p. 837). About the middle of thie 8th century there a appeared an independent Arabic translation from the Pahlavi b sai ‘Abdallah ibn al-Mukaffa’, which, under the name of Kalilah wa-Dimnah, has been the parent of secondary versions in the Syriac Persian, Greek, Hebrew, and Spanish languages.21 The Syriac version was discovered by the present writer in a unique MS. in the library of Trinity College, Dublin, and published by him in 1884. It is evidently the work of a Christian priest, living ata time when the condition of the Syrian Church was one of great degradation, and the power of the caliphate on the wane, so that the state of society was that of complete disorder and licentious. ness,” a description which would very well apply to the 10th or 11th century. Indeed we could not place it much later, because part of the unique MS. goes back to the 13th century, and even its text is very corrupt, showing that it had passed through the hands of several generations of scribes. “The chief value of this later Syriac version is that it sheds light on the original text of the Arabic K. w. D. The Arabic text which the Syriac translator had before him must have been a better one than De Sacy’s, because numbers of Guidi’s

extracts,% which are not found at all in De Sacy's text, appear in their proper places in the later Syriac,"

To about the same period, judging by the similarity of style and Sindban, language, we would assign the Syriac version of the book of Sindi- badh. This work was translated, probably in the latter half of the 8th century, from Pahlavi into Arabic by Misa, a Muham- madan Persian. It is, as Néldeke has shown,2* the smaller of the two recensions known to the Arabs, the larger, entitled Aslam (2) and Sindibadh, being the work of al-Asbagh ibn 'Abd al-'Aziz as- Sijistani. The smaller Sindibadh was in its turn done into Syriac, and thence into Greek by Michael Andreopiilus for Gabriel, prince of Meliténe (1086-1100), as discovered by Comparetti,?' under the name of Zuvrizas (Sindipas), just as Kalilah wa-Dimnah was trans- lated by Symeon (the son of) Seth for the emperor Alexius Com- nenus, who ascended the throne in 1081. The Syriac version, which bears the title of the Story of Sindban and the Philosophers who were with him, has been edited by Baethgen, with a German translation and notes, from the unique MS. in the Royal Library at Berlin.*8

A third product of the same age we believe to be the Syriac trans- Life of lation of Pseudo-Callisthenes's Life of Alexander the Great, made Alexan- from an Arabic version of a Greek original. Of this, however, we der the shall le better able to judge when the Syriac text lies before us in Great. print.

Lastly we would place somewhere between the 9th and 11th cen- Asop''s turies the Syriac translation of Esop's (Aisop's) Fables, which has Fables. been edited under a somewhat Jewish garb by Landsberger,®" who imagined himself to have found the Syriac original of the fables of Syntipas (Sindipas), whereas Geiger 3! clearly showed that we have here to do with a Syriac rendering of one of the forms of the fables of Esop. In fact, as Geiger pointed out, DIDID" is only a clerical error for DISIDNI. In Syriac MSS. of this collection the title is written MADAMA, 'of Josephus." In some close relation to these stands the story of Josephus and king Nebuchadnezzar in the Berlin MS. Alt. Bestand 57, ff. 16-57, with which are inter- woven a number of

Esopic fables. They have been edited (with ae exception of two) by Rédiger in his Chrestom. Syr., 2d ed., pp.

97-100.

Resuming our enumeration of Syrian writers, we find that in the 12th century the number of them, whether Jacobite or Nestorian, is small, but two of the former sect are men of real mark. oat

Abu Ghalib bar Sibini, the younger brother of Sa‘id bar Sabiini Abi (see above, p. 849), was almost as unfortunate as his brother. He Ghalib was raised to the episcopate of Edessa after his brother’s death by bar__ Athanasius VII., but speedily deposed on account of a quarrel, Sabuni although many of the Edessenes, among them the governor Bald-

tions,

21 See Keith-Falconer, Kalilah and Dimuah or the Fables of Bidpat, 1835, Introduction. : }

22 Wright, The Book of Kalilah and Dimnah, translated from Arabic into Syriac.

23 See Wright’s Preface, p. xi. sq.

24 See Guidi, Studit sul Testo Arabo del Libro di Kalila e Dimna, 1873.

25 Keith-Falconer, op. cit., p. 1x. 26 Z.D.M.G., xxxiii. (1879), pp. 521-522.

°7 Ricerche intorno al Libro di Sindibdd, 1869, p. 28 sq. ; The Folk-lore Society, Vol, ixe ly peor sa: ‘shed

28 Alt. Bestand 57, ff. 60-87. A small specimen had already been publishe by Rodiger, Chrestom. Syr., 2d ed., pp. 100-101. ich

29 An edition of it is in preparation by Mr E. A. W. Budge, of the a Museum, from five MSS. Sce Rédiger, Chrestom. Syr., 2d cd., pp. 112-

120, an Perkins in the Journal of the American Oriental Society, iv. p. 359 sq.

30 DIDIDT NOM, Die Fabeln des Sophos, Syrisches Original der Griechischen Fabeln des Syntipas, 1859. Compare his earlier dissertation, Fabule aliquo Arameex, 1846. 31 Z.D.M.G., xiv. (1860), p. 586 sq. | BS

32 B.0., iii. 1, 7, with note 2. So, for example, MS. Trin. Coll. Dublin, B. % 32 (Wright, Kalilah and Dimnah, pp. ix., x.).

12TH CENT.]

win, brother of Godfrey of Bouillon, took his part. He died of a fall from his horse, shortly after the death of the patriarch in 1129.1 Though a good scholar and linguist, he does not appear to have written anything that has come down to our times. Assemani, it is true, ascribes to him three poems in twelve-syllable metre on the capture of Edessa by Zengi ibn Ak-sunkur ; but, as this took place in 1144,? the writer must have been his successor, Basil bar Shumna

(1143-69).

John,* bishop of Harran and Mardé or Mardin, had charge of the Jacobite churches in the East, his diocese including Tell-Besmé, Képhar-titha, Dara, Nisibis, Ras‘ain, and the Khabhora or Khabir. He was originally a monk of Edessa, was appointed bishop by Athanasius VII. in 1125, and was killed by a fall from his horse in 1165, at the age of seventy-eight.> He devotgd himself chiefly to the restoration of the decayed churches and’ monasteries of his diocese, as may be seen from the autobiographical fragment in B.O., ii. 217 sq. From the same document, pp. 224-225, it appears that he was fond of MSS., which he collected, repaired, and bound, and that he wrote with his own hand four small copies of the Gospels in gold and silver. He enjoyed a well earned reputation as a land- surveyor and practical engineer. Bar-Hebreeus notes his great liberality in redeeming the captive Edessenes who had been carried off by Zengi’s troops.’ The fall of Edessa (1144), however, was an event that got him into a great deal of trouble. He was

ill-advised enough to write a treatise on the Providence of God, in which he maintained that chastisements of that kind were not sent upon men by God, and that, if the troops of the Franks (Crusaders) had been there, Edessa would not have been taken by Zengi. Such rank heresy of course brought down upon him the whole bench of bishops. He was attacked by the priest Salibha of Karigarah (?),° by John bishop of Kaisiim,® John bar Andreas bishop of Mabbogh," and Dionysius bar Salibi.! He was also the compiler of ananaphora." – The star of this century among the Jacobites is undeniably Jacob

bar Salibi of Meliténe (Malatiah). He was created bishop of Mar'ash, under the name of Dionysius, by Athanasius VIII. _(Yéshi' bar Ketrah, 1138-66), in 1145, and the diocese of Mabbogh

was also placed under his charge.!¥ Michael I. (1166-99) transferred him to Amid, where he died in 1171.14 The list of his works, as quoted by Assemani from a Syriac MS., is very considerable, and he has dealt with them at great length.® We may mention the following. (1) Commentary on the Old Testament, of which only one complete MS. exists in Europe." The order of the books is— the Pentateuch, Job, Joshua, Judges, Samuel and Kings, Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, the Song of Songs, Isaiah, Jeremiah and Lamentations, Ezekiel, Daniel, the twelve minor Prophets, and Ecclesiasticus. Each book has a material or literal and a spiritual or mystical commentary. Several of the books have two com- melutaries, one on the Péshitta, the other on the Hexaplar text ; Jeremiah has actually three, one on the Hexaplar, and two, 2 shorter and a longer, on the Péshitta. (2) Commentary on the New Testament, from which Assemani has given many extracts. The order of the books is—the four Gospels, the Revelation of St John, the Acts of the Apostles, the seven apostolic epistles, and the fourteen epistles of St Paul.1® (3) A compendium of theology, of which we do not seem to have any MS. in Europe ; see B.0O., ii. 163, col. 1, ll. 13-15, and p. 170. (4) A copious treatise against heresies, dealing with the Muhammadans, the Jews, the Nestorians, the Dyophysites or supporters of the council of Chalcedon, and the Armenians." (5) A treatise on the Providence of God, against

1 Sce B.O., ii. 212, 358-359 ; Bar-Ifebraeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 467-479.

2 B.O., ii. eli. (comp. p. 317).

3 See Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Syr., p. 328 (transl., p. 335); Chron. Eccles., i.

497, 547.

4 His baptismal name was probably Jacob; see B.O., ii. 230, col. 1, at the foot.

5 B.O., ii. 216, 226; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 531.

6 B.O., ii. 226; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 525-527.

7 Chron. Eccles., i. 501. 8 Died in 1164, B.0., ii. 362.

9 B.O., ti. 364; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eecles., i. 501, 554, 559. Died in 1171.

10 Afterwards of Tur-"Abhdin ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles.,i.515. He com- posed both in Armenian and Syriac, B.0., ii. 360 coll. 1, 2, 362 col.1; Bar- Hebrzus, Chron. Eccles., i487. Died in 1156 ; B.0., ii. 362; Bar-Hebraeus, Chron. Eceles., i. 517; see Brit. Mus. Orient. 1017 (Wright, Catal., pp. 897-898). _

11 B.O., ii. 207 ; Bar-Hebrzeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 503. 12 B.0., ii. 230.

13 B.0., ii. 362; Bar-Hebraeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 513-515.

14 B.O., ii. 363, 365 ; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Hccles., i. 559.

15 B.0., ii. 210; comp. Catal. Bibl. Laur. e Palat. Medic., p. 79.

16 B.0., ii. 157-208. :

17 At Paris, Suppl. 92, in Zotenberg's Catal., No. 66. There are fragments in Ane. fonds 8 (Zotenberg, Catal., No. 9); see also Cod. Vat.

xcvi. 29, 42, 43 (Psalms), 80 (on the Prophets). 18 B.O., ii. 157-170.

19 The Gospels are in Brit. Mus. Add. 7184; Cod.Vat. clv. 19-24, clvi., eclxxv.- ix.; Paris, Anc. fonds 33, 34 (Zotenberg, Catal., Nos. 67-68); Bodl. Or. 703, 2. St Matthew, Bodl. Hunt. 247. Revelation, &c., Brit. Mus. Add. 7185; Bodl. Or. 560. Dudley Loftus was the first to make use of these commentaries in his two works, The Exposition of Dionysius Syrus, written above 900 years since, on the Evangelist St Mark, translated by D.L. (Dublin, 1672), and A Clear and Learned Explication of the History of our Blessed Saviour J.C.,... by Dionysius Syrus, ... translated by D. L. (Dublin, 1695); see Payne Smith, Catal., p. 411, notes dandf. Loftus's manuscript translations are in the Bodleian Library, Fell 6 and 7.

20 B.O., ii. 170, 211. The section against the Muhammadans is contained in Cod. Vat. xevi. 19, and that against the Nestorians in Paris, Anc. fonds 125 (Zotenberg, Catal., No. 209, 2). There is an extract from the latter in Bodl.

John, bishop of Mardiu,! apparently no longer extant. (6) Exposi- tions of the Eucharistic service," of the Nicene creed," of the con- secration of the chrism,"4 of the services of consecration," and of the Jacobite confession of faith. (7) Canons on confession and absolution.*" (8) Two anaphore or liturgies.*8 (9) Various prayers, procmia, and sedras.® (10) Homilies, ¢.g.,encomium on the patriarch Michael the Elder, on the Passion of our Lord,®! and on withhold- ing the sacrament from those who abstain from communicating for a period of more than forty days.92 (11) A commentary on the six Centurtes of Evagrius.*? (12) Two poems on the fall of Edessa (1144),34 three on the fall of Mar'ash (1156),®> and two on another incident (1159).36 Among the works mentioned in the list in B.O., ii. 210- 211, we cannot find any traces of the Commentarius in Scripta Doctorwm, the Compendium Historiarum Patrum et Sanctorum et Martyrum, and the Compendium Canonum Apostolicorum, nor of the commentaries on the books of

Dialectics, ibid., col. 1. Of the epistles two are extant in Arabic, Berlin, Sachau 61,1, 2. From a treatise On the Structure of Man there are two short extracts in Bodl. Marsh. 361, f. 39. Dionysius appears also to have revised the Jacobite order of baptism,*" and to have drawn up a volume of services for the days of the week.*8

Michael the Elder,®? the son of Elias, a priest of Meliténe, of the Michael

family of Kindasi,* was abbot of the convent of Bar-sauma, near I. Meliténe, which we find him supplying with water, with the help of John, bishop of Mardin, in 1163.42 He was elected patriarch in 1166, and held office till 1199.48 He revised the Jacobite pontifical and ritual, arranging its contents under forty-six heads, as exhibited in Cod. Vat. li.,4* drew up an anaphora,® wrote a tract setting forth the Jacobite confession of faith,* a treatise against a Coptic schis- matic, Mark the son of Konbar, on the question of confession, and a poem on a case of persecution in 1159. He also revised in 1185 the life of Abhhai, bishop of Nicwa, having found most copies of it in a very disordered state.® His most important work was a Chronicle, from the creation to 1196 A.p., which was trans- lated, with other works of his, into Armenian, and apparently exists in that language alonc.5° Some extracts from it were published by Dulaurier in the Journal Asiatique for 1848, p. 281 sq., and 1849, p. 315 sg., and the whole has been edited in a French trans- lation by V. Langlois, Chronique de Michel le Grand, 1868. Accord- ing to him the translator of the first part of the work was the: vartabed David, and it was finished by the priest Isaac, who com- pleted his task in 1248, continuing it down to his own day. A third person engaged in translating the works of Michael into Armenian was the vartabed Vartan.! Appended to the Chronicle is an extract from a treatise of his "On the Sacerdotal Order and its Origin," or 'On the Origin of Sacerdotal Institutions," with a con- tinuation by Isaac and Vartan, which is followed in the MSS. by the Jacobite "confession of faith." *% Michael appears also. to

Or. 467 (P. Smith, Catal., p. 561). From itis extracted the list of the Jacobite' patriarchs in B.0., ii. 323, note 1. 21 B.0., ii. 207; see above.

22 B.O., ii. 176-208 ; Cod. Vat. cii., eeclxi. ; Brit. Mus. Or. 2307 (partly Arabic) ; Paris, Anc. fonds 35, 69, 125. 23 Cod. Vat. clix. 4; Bodl. Marsh. 101.

24 Cod. Vat. clix.30(in Arabic). 25 B.0.,ii.171; comp. Cod. Vat. clv.10,clix.31.

26 Bodl. Marsh. 101, f.31. 27 B.O., ii. 171. 28 Ibid., ii. 175. 29 Ibid., ii. 175.

30 Ibid., ii. 170. Read, with slightalterations, on theinstallation of a bishop or patriarch. Cod. Vat. li. 26, ccciv. ; Paris, Suppl. 23.

31 Cod. Palat. Medic. xl. (Catal., p. 78).

32 Cod. Palat. Medic. lxii. (Catal., p. 107). 83 Berlin, Alt. Bestand 387, 1.

34 B.0., ii. 317; Bar-Ilebreus, Chron. Syr., 328 (transl., p. 335).

35 B.0., ii. 317; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Syr., 346-347.

36 B.O., ii. 451-452 ; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eceles., ii. 351.

37 Brit. Mus. Arund. Or. 11 (Rosen, Caial., p. 62, col. 2).

38 Cod. Vat. eccexxv., in Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.

39 So called to distinguish him from his nephew Micliael the Younger, Yéshi‘ Sephéthana or “Big-lips,’ who became patriarch at Meliténe (1199-1215), in opposition to Athanasius IX., Salibha Kéraha (the Bald), at Mardin (1199-1207), and John XIV., Yéshii‘ the scribe (1208-20).

40 Bar-Hebrzeus, Chron. Eccles., 1. 537. om

41 Assemani expressly says “at Shenna” (read 1 14 3), B.0., ii. 154, but the list

of patriarchs at p. 323 does not give the word lass, though he repeats it in the translation (No. 100). In the Dissert. de Monophysitis, p. xcviii., he makes Michael belong to the convent near Meliténe, and merely mentions another convent of Bar-sauma at "Sena " (see also the Index, p. 532). Langlois, in the preface tothe Chronique de Michel le Grand, p. 3, thinks ofa convent near Mardin, such as that restored by John, bishop of Mardin (B.0., ii. 222, 1. 19). We believe, however, that the convent near Melitene is meant, as John of Mardin had acquired a certain reputation in what Abbeloos calls the "ars gromatica" (Bar-Hebrzus, Chron. Eccles., i. 526, note 1), wherefore it is said that Michael sent for him (shaddar bathréh), and that John "returned to his diocese because the winter was at hand, meaning to come back in April" (p. 527).

42 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 525.

43 B.O., ii. 368-369 ; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 535-605.

44 Assemani's Catal., ii. 314 sq.; B.O., ii. 155.

45 Cod. Vat. xxv. 8; Paris, Anc. fonds 68 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 49); Leyden, Cod. 1572 (Catal., v.73). 46 Bar-Hebrzeus, Chron. Eccles.,i.549; Langlois, p. 331.

47 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 573-575; B.O., ii. 155, No. iii.

48 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 351.

49 See Brit. Mus. Add. 12174, No. 8 (Wright, Catal., p. 1124); Cod. Vat. xxxvii. 12 (Catal., ii. 247); B.O., ii. 505, col. 2. But the account of the death of the empcror Constantius, and the lives of Jacob of Sérigh and of Mar Aha, appear to be wrongly ascribed to him in Catal. Vat., ii. 248-249.

50 The present writer has been recently informed that a copy of the original Syriac exists in the library of the convent of az-Za'farin near Mardin.

51 Langlois, Préface, p. 10, and note 2. 52 Langlois, p. 363 sq.

53 Langlois, Préface, p. 8, at the top; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 606, note

6.

7

[12TH cunt.

852 S¥Y¥RIACSAITERA TTR

have written an ecclesiastical history, which is entirely lost to us. At least Bar-Hebreeus! speaks of his recording certain matters in his " Ekklésiastiké,"' which do not appear in the Chronicle.

Theo- A thorn in the side of Michael was his disciple Theodore bar

dore bar Wahbén. He first appears on the stage in 1170,? when the emperor

Wahbon. Manuel sent Theorianus to the Armenian catholicus and the Jacobite patriarch with letters. Michael declined an interview, but sent John of Kaistim to see Theoriants at Kal'at ar-Riim, and on his coming a second time to the same place selected Theodore bar

He is the same as Joseph bar Malkén, bishop of Mardin whose metrical tract on the points, entitled Méesidhta dhé- Nukzé, or "the Net of the Points," is found in MSS., along with the grammatical writings of Elias bar Shinaya and John bar Zo'bi,16 This tract ms peu have been composed before 1190. imeon Shankélabhadhi or Shankélawi, of Shankélabhadh or – Sj kélawah," near Irbil, must have been a contemporary of Bar Malka oa and perhaps somewhat senior to him. He was the teacher of John iwi

Elias ITE.

Isho’- Ishd’-yabh bar Malkon was ordained bishop of Nisibis in 1190 | nessed a faint revival of Syriac literature before its extinction.

yabh by the catholicus Yabh-alaha II. (1190-1222), was present at the David bar Paul is cited by Bar-Hebreus in the Ausar Razé,® and David bar consecration of his successor Sabhr-ishd’ IV. (1222-25), and died may therefore be supposed to have lived early in the 13th century. bar Paul. Malkon. under Sabhr-ishd‘ V. (1226-56), his follower at Nisibis being Makki- | He was evidently a man of considerable culture, and a versifier,

Wahbon as his representative.? Ten years afterwards, in 1180, when Michael was at Antioch, Ibn Wahbon was made anti-patriarch at Amid by certain malcontent bishops, under the name of John.4 Michael, however, at once took energetic measures,® got hold of the anti-patriarch, formally deposed him, and shut him up in the convent of Bar-sauma, whence he was afterwards allowed to make his escape by some of the monks. He fled to Damascus, where he tried in vain to bring his case before Salah ad-din, and thence to Jerusalem, after the fall of which city in 1187 he joined Gregorius Degha, the Armenian catholicus, at Kal‘at ar-Rim and went with him to Cilicia, where the king, Leo, made him patriarch of the Jacobites in his territories. He died in 1193. According to Bar- Hebreus, Theodore bar Wahbdn was a good scholar, and could speak and write three foreign languages, Greek, Armenian, and Avabic.@ He compiled an anaphora,’ wrote an exposition of the Eucharistic service, and a statement of his case against Michael in Arabic.®

Of Nestorian writers there are scarcely any worth naming in this century, for the historian and controversialist Maré bar Shélémon, otherwise Mari ibn Sulaiman, wrote in Arabic!©; and Elias III.,! Abi Halim ibn al-Hadithi, of Maiperkat, metropolitan of Nisibis and catholicus from 1175 to 1190, chiefly used the same language in his homilies and letters. He is best remembered for having compiled and arranged the prayers in one of the service books, which is still called by his name, “the Abi Halim.” 28

kha, who was afterwards catholicus (1257-65).14 He wrote on questions of grammar, besides homilies, letters, and hymns, in which, however, he chiefly, if not exclusively,employed the Arabic language.!>

1 Chron. Eccles., i. 589.

2 Ibid., i. 549, 551, where 1172 is an error, as remarked by Abbeloos in note 1. John of Kaisim, who was present on the oceasion, died in 1171 (p. 559).

3 The disputations held on these occasions were of course utterly fruitless. See Leunclavius, Legatio Imp. Cxesaris Manuelis Comneni Aug. ad Armenios, sive Theoriant cum Catholico disputatio, &c., 1578, and in Galanus, Concilia- tionts Ecclesie Armenz cum Romana… parsi., 1690, p. 242 sq.3 Disp. Theoriani secunda, in Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., vi. pp. xxiii, and 314 sq., and in Migne, Patrol. Gr., cxxxiii.114 sq.; also Bar-Hebrxus, Chron. Eccles., i. 549-557 ; Langlois, Chronique, pp. 329-381; comp. Abbeloos's notes on Bar-Hebreus, pp. 550-552, and B.0., ii. 864-365. 4 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 575 sq.; B.O., ii. 218.

5 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 579 ; B.O., ii. 214. 6 Chron. Eccles, , i. 581.

? See Renaudot, ii. 409; B.O., ii. 216; Payne Smith, Catal., p. 241, note c.

8 B.O., ii, 216. 9 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles,, i. 581, at the foot.

10 He flourished in the first half of this century (B.0., iii. 1, 554-555, 582). His work is extant in the Vatican Library in 2 vols., eviii. and cix. (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., iv. 219-223), with the title Kitab al-Majdal or "the Tower," wrongly ascribed to 'Amr ibn Matta of Tirhan. The first voluine, transcribed in 1401, is theological aud dogmatical ; it comprises the first four sections. The second volume is theological and historical. The series of patriarchs ended with cal 'Abhd-ish6* bar Mukl of Mosul (1188-47), but is continued down to Yabh-alaha bar Kayoma of Mosul (1190), '"'qui nunc sedem tenet," i.e, in 1214, when

this volume was written. His epitomizer ‘Amr ibn Matta of Tirhan lived in the first half of the 14th century (B.0., iii. 1, 580, 586). To him is ascribed Cod. Vat. cx., which ‘“‘autographus esse videtur” (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., iv. 224-227). It consists of five parts, of which the first is wanting in this MS., which has therefore no title. The series of catholics in pt. v., fundam. 2, is continued down to Yabh-alaha (1281-1317). In pt. v., fundam. 3, sect. 6, we find the confession of faith of Michael, bishop of Amid and Maiyafarikin (B.0., iii. 1, 557), translated into Arabic by the priest Saliba ibn Yohanna, whom G. E. Khayyath, archbishop of ‘Am€dia, asserts to be the real author of the whole work (see his Syri Orientales sew Chaldei Nestoriani et Romanorum Pontificum Primatus, 1870, and comp. Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 6). Cod. Vat. delxxxvii. (Mai, op. cit., v. 594) contains part of the same work as Cod. Vat. ex. (though the Catalogue calls it the Majdal, and ascribes it to Mari), viz., pt. v., fundam. 1 and 2 (“‘usque ad Ebediesum Barsaume successorem, qui @biit die 25 novem- bris an. Christi 1147. Continuat eandem historiam Amrus Matthei filius, a Jesuiabo baladensi, Ebediesu successore, usque ad Iaballahum III. Timothci secundi successorem, qui obiit die 31 ianuarii an. Christi 1222” !). Cod. Vat. dclxxxviii. is also said to contain “Historia Patriarcharum Chaldseorum sive Nestorianorum,” from Addai and Mari down to Yabh-alaha bar Kayoma, by ‘Amribn Matta. “ Hee autem historia longe fusior est atque emendatior illa, quam Mares f. Salomonis conscripsit, de qua in precedente codice”! And to add to the perplexity, Sachau describes his Cod. 12 (Arab.) as “Theil einer

of of grossen Kirchengeschichte der Nestorianer. gyal peal Biicher der Geheim-

nisse. Alte Papierhandschrift (14 Jh.). Es ist das Jose!! WT von ‘Amr

b. Matta aus Tirhan.” Possibly the MS. in the collection of the S.P.C.K. may give some light.

ll B.O., ii. 450, iii. 1, 287 ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ti. 367-369.

12 B.O., iii. 1, 290.

13 Badger, The Nestorians, ii. 23: “The Aboo Haleem contains a collection of collects appointed to be read at the conclusion of the Nocturns of all the Sundays throughout the ycar, of the festivals, and the three days of the Baootha a’ Ninwéyé, before the commencement of the Matins.” See B. O., iii. 1, 291-295,

14 B.O., iii. 1, 295, note 1. 15 Ibid., iii. 1, 295-306.

bar Zo‘bi, for whom he wrote a Chronikon or chronological treatise in the form of questions and answers, explanatory of the various eras, the calendar, &. There is a MS. in the British Museum Add. 25875,18 and several at Berlin.” He was also the author of a moral poem in eniginatical language, of which ‘Abhd-isho’ thought it worth his while to write an explanation for his disciple Abraham.”° To him is likewise ascribed “the questions of Simon Képha concerning the Eucharist and Baptism,” which he appears to have introduced to the notice of his pupil John bar Z6’bi.2

John bar Zo’bi flourished about the end of the 12th and the be- John

nning of the 1 He was a monk of Béth Kika (or bar Kuké) in Hédhaiyabh, and numbered among his pupils Jacob bar Zo’bi.

ginning of the 13th century.

Shakko, or Severus, bishop of Mar Matthew (see below). He wrote metrical homilies, partly in seven-syllable, partly in twelve-syllable verse, on the chief points of the Nestorian faith. One of these is mentioned by Assemani, B.O., iii. 1, 309, note 1% ; another, on the four problems of philosophy, is in Berlin, Sachau 72,15. Bar Zo’bi is, however, better known as a grammarian.™ The larger of his two grammars is based_on the works of previous writers, such as Severus Sebokht and Denha, commentators on Aristotle, and the grammarians Elias I., the catholicus, and Elias bar Shinaya, bishop of Nisibis.” The smaller grammar is an epitome in verse, accom- panied by a metrical tract on the four chief marks of interpunction.*? He secmsalsoto have continued the treatise of Honain De Synonymis,8 so that he may

perhaps be Hoffmann's "analecta anonymus, " *9 As the lamp flares up before it expires, so the 13th century wit-

We have from his pen a poem on the letters of the Syriac alphabet,*! a note on the mutable letters,®? and a brief enumeration of the categories of Aristotle,*5 a moral poem in twelve-syllable verse, another on repentance in an Arabic translation,® and specimens of a third in Cardahi's Liber Thesauri, p. 138. Theological are a dialogue between a Malkite and a Jacobite on the hymn Trisagion * and a tract in Arabic on matters in dispute between the Jacobites and Malkites. 3"

Jacob bar Shakk6 (Shakkaké ?),38 or 'Isa, bar Mark, of Bartellai or Jacob Bartulla, near Mosul, was a monk of the famous convent of Maror Sev- Matthew, of which he afterwards became bishop by the name of erus bar Severus.°? He was trained in grammar by John bar Zo'bi (see above) Shakko.

in the convent of Béth Kaka (or Kiké) in Hédhaiyabh,* and in dialectics and philosophy by Kamal ad-Din Masa ibn Yinns at Mosul." He composed one of his works, the Book of Treasures,

16 H.g., Cod. Vat. exciv. (copied from a MS, written in 1246), and Brit. Mus Add. 25876, f. 276b (mote the colophon, f. 290b, Wright, Catal., p. 1178); see B.0., iii. 1, 308, col. 1, No. viii., and the Abbé Martin, De la Meétrique chez les

Syriens, 1879, p. 70 (at p. 68, 1. 14, read farDogar ; " the bishop of Nisibis"),

17 See Hoffinann, Ausziige, p. 231, and note 1847.

18 Wright, Catal., p. 1067. 19 Sachau 108, 1, 121, and 153, 1,3. f

20 Cod. Vat. clxxxvii. (Catal., iii, 404); MS. Ind. Off. No. 9, "Tracts in Syriac, f. 204. It has been published by Cardahi, Liber Theswuri, p. 89. Cardahi calls the author as-Sankalabari, blindly copying Assemani's Sancalabarensis, and places his death in 780 (see B.0., iii. 1, 295, note 5,

p. 226, note 7; and Catal. Vat., iii. 405). 21 B.O., iii. 1, 562. 22 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 409.

23 Brit. Mus. Or. 2305 ; and apparently Berlin, Sachau 8.

24 It has been translated by Badger, The Nestorians, ii. 151-153.

25 B.O., iii. 1, 3807. :

26 Part of this work, namely, the portion that deals with the marks of inter- punction, has been edited and translated by Martin, Traité sur l Accentuation chez les Syriens Orientaua, 1877. on

27 MSS. of these grammars,—Cod. Vat. exciv., ecccl.; Brit. Mus. Add. 25876 ; Or. 2314; Berlin, Alt. Best. 36,16, and Sachau 216, 2, and 306, 2. a

28. Berlin, Sachau 72, 14. 29 Opusc. Nestor., p. iv. 30 B.0., ii. 248.

31 Cod. Vat. cexvii. (Catal., iii. 505); Paris, Anc. fonds 118 (Zotenberg, Catal., p- 166), 157 (ibid., p. 147).

32 Paris, Anc. fonds 164 (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 213). a

33 Berlin, Alt. Best. 36, 13. 34 Cod. Vat. xevi. (Catal., ii. 522).

35 Cod. Vat. lviii. (Catal., ii. 351). ; A

36 Cod. Vat. exlvi. (Catal., iii. 268), ecviii. (Catal., iii. 498); Paris, Anc. fonds 134 A (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 154), with an Arabic translation.

87 Bodl. Hunt. 199 (P. Smith, Catal., p. 449), Poc. 79 (ib., p. 459).

38 Written C234 and OD.

39 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 409(a contemporary). In Cod. Vat. ececxl. (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.) he bears the name of Jacob bar Talia, a nee tion of Bartellaya. In MS. Berlin, Alt. Best. 38, 1 (if the Catal. be yee Be is called “ metropolitan of the convent of St Matthew

near Arbela," co ea Mar Matthew at Mosul with Béth Kaka, where he was trained, i a8) others have identified him with Jacob, bishop of Maiperkat (Médhinath Sande). With Taghrith he never had anything ° do.

40 Hoffmann, Ausziige, p. 215, note 1715. re

41 Born 1156, died Tope ; Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 411 ; i Gesch. d. arab. Aerzte, No. 229; Ibn Khallikan, ed. Wiistenfeld, No. 757; Ibn Osaibi'ah, ed. Miiller, i. 306.

in 1231 and died in 1241,1 on his way to visit the aged patriarch Ignatius II. (maphrian 1215-22, patriarch 1222-53). He possessed a great many books, which were all conveyed to the démosion? of the ruler of Mosul. His works are as follows. (1) The Book of Treasures, a theological treatise in four parts, viz., part i., of the three-one God; part ii., of the incarnation of the Son of God; part iii., of the Divine Providence; part iv., of the creation of the universe, the angels, the different kinds of life, the soul of man, the resurrection, and the last judgement.? (2) The Dialogues, in two books. Book i., dial. 1, on grammar, followed by a discourse on the same in twelve-syllable metre ; dial. 2, on rhetoric ; dial. 3, on the art of poetry or metres ; dial. 4, on the eloquence and copiousness of the Syriac language. Book ii., dial. 1, on logic and the syl- logism ; dial. 2, on philosophy, its kinds, divisions, and subdivisions, in five sections, viz., (a) on the definitions of philosophy, its divi- sions, &c.; (6) on the philosophic life and conduct ; (¢) on physics or physiology ; (@) on the four disciplines,—arithmetic, music, geo- metry, and mathematics; (ec) on metaphysics and theology.4 Of his letters two are extant, in verse, addressed to Fakhr ad-Daulah Mark bar Thomas and his brother Taj ad-Daulah Aba Tahir Sa'id.® He also wrote a confession of faith regarding the Trinity and the incarnation, which he himself cites in the Book of Treasures, part il., chap. 14, and an exposition of the services and prayers of the church, which is referred to in the same work, part. ii., chap. 31 (on the addition of the words "wlio was crucified for us" to the Trisagion).€ Under the name of Jacob of Maiperkat we have an adinonition

addressed to persons seeking ordination as priests, which is found in many scrvice books.'

Aaron bar Ma'dani (or Ma'dani?) had been recently appointed bishop of Mardin, under the name of John, when he was promoted

M1. by the patriarch Ignatius II. to the dignity of maphrian in 1232.8

His bodily presence seems to have been somewhat insignificant, and he was no orator, for which reasons he was unpopular.? In 1237 he went to Baghdadh, where in the following year he composed his panegyric on the holy Mar Aaron, and ingratiated himself with the three brothers Shams ad-Daulah, Fakhr ad-Daulah, and Taj ad- Daulah, the sons of the archiater Thomas, who were in high favour at the court of al-Mustansir billah. He learned to speak and write Arabic thoroughly.!® In 1244 he was recalled to Mosul and received with every mark of respect.1! On the death of Ignatius in 1252, Dionysius (Aaron 'Angir) was created patriarch," but a rival faction setup John bar Ma'dani!* ; and so the two ruled in a divided church till Dionysius was murdered in the convent of Bar-sauma near Meliténe in 1261," after which time his rival sat alone till 1263. John bar Ma'dani compiled an anaphora! and wrote a great many poems, of which Bodl. Hunt. 1 contains no less than 60.17 Some of the more important of these are the poem on the soul, entitled "the Bird" (Parah#tha), on the high origin of the soul and its degradation by sin,!® on the excellent path of the perfect," and on the capture of Edessa and other places by the Seljak sultan 'Ala'u'd-din Kaikobadh in 1235.7! Of his homilies Cod. Vat. xcvii. contains eighteen for various feasts in Arabic." These writers are, however, all cast into the shade by the impos- .ing figure of Bar-Hebreus, as we are accustomed to call him, one of the most lcarned and versatile men that Syria ever produced. Abu '1-Faraj Gregory *+ was the child of a physician at Meliténe (Malatiah) named Aaron, a convert from Judaism or of Jewish descent, whence his son got the name of Bar 'Ebhraya or Ibn al-

1 Assemani (B.0., ii. 455) is mistaken ; see also pp. 237 and 477. ;

2 According to Abbeloos, Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 412, ‘in erarium publicum principis Mossulz assumptifuerunt.”’ We suspect that the Christian bishop’s library went to light the fires of the public bath.

3 Cod. Vat. clix. (Catal., iii. 307); Brit. Mus. Add. 7193 (Rosen, Catal., p. 84) ; and in the collection of the S.P.C.K. An extract in Cod. Vat. ceccxi. (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.); see B.O., ii. 287-240.

4 Brit. Mus. Add. 21454 (Wright, Catal., p. 1165); Godttingen, Cod. Orient. 18c ; Bodl. Marsh. 528 (apparently imperfect, P. Smith, Catal., p. 642). Ex- cerpts in Berlin, Alt. Best. 38,1. Book i., dial. 8, has been edited by Martin, “De la Métrique chez les Syriens,” in Abhandlungen fiir d. Kunde d. Morgen- landes, Bd. vii., No. 2, 1879.

5 Brit. Mus. Add. 7193 (Rosen, Cafal., p. 84); see Bar-Hebreus, Chron. ae ii. 407, where the third brother Shams ad-Daulah is also mentioned.

B.O., ti. 240.

7 E.g., Cod. Vat. li. 9 (Catal., i. 818); ecciv. (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., v.); Paris, Suppl. 22, 23, 38, 94 (the last in Arabic), see Zotenberg, Catal., pp. 68, 72, 76; comp. B.0., ii. 241. 8 B.O., ii. 454. 9 Bar-Hebraus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 407.

10 Tbid., ii. 411. ll Ibid., ii. 418. 12 Ibid., i. 697, 701; B.O., ii. 376.

13 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 707; B.O., ii. 877. ;

14 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 787. 15 [bid., i. 748.

16 See Renaudot, ii. 512.

I” See Payne Smith, Catal., pp. 379-382, and MS. Berlin, Sachau 207, 3.

18 Bodl. Hunt. 1; Poc. 298 (P. Smith, Catal., p. 641); Cod. Vat. ceiv. (Catal., iii. 489); Berlin, Sachau 61, 8. 19 Bodl. Hunt. 1; Cod. Vat. celv.

20 Bodl. Hunt. 1; Poe. 298; Vat. cciv. Edited in part by Cardahi in the Liber Thesauri, pp. 66-68.

21 Hunt. 1. Palat. Medic. lxii. contains two poems on the love of God and the love of wisdom (Catal., p. 108). A

22 Catal., ii. 528. There is one, also in Arabic, on repentance and death in Cod. Vat. ccxx. (Catal., iii. 508). ¥ .

23 B.O., ii. 244 sq. See Gibbon's eulogy of him, Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire, ed. Smith, 1855, vol. vi. p. 55. : et. p

24 His baptismal name was John, as appears from the inscription on his tombstone ; Badger, The Nestorians, i. 97. Gregory he probably adopted when he becaine a bishop.

'Tbri, "the son of the Hebrew." He was born in 1226, and de- voted' himself from his boyhood to the acquisition of Greek and Arabic. A little later he applied himself also to theology and philosophy, besides practising medicine under his father and other distinguished physicians. His lot was cast, however, in evil days. In 1248 many of the inhabitants of Malatiah fled to Aleppo before the advancing hordes of Hulagii and his Tatars, and his father would have been among the fugitives, had it not been for a lucky accident.*° In the following year his father had actually to attend as physician upon one of the l'atar generals, whom he accompanied to Khartabirt, and on his return retired almost immediately from Malatiah to the safer city of Antioch." Here Bar-Hebreus com- pleted his studies and commenced his monastic life.28 Thence he went to Tripolis, where he and Salibha bar Jacob Wagih, of Edessa, were studying medicine and rhetoric with a Nestorian teacher named Jacob, when they were summoned before the patriarch Ignatius II., on 14th September 1246, and ordained bishops, the former of Giibds (Guibas) near Malatiah, the latter of 'Akko.29 Bar- Hebreeus was then just twenty years of age. In the following year

he was transferred to Lakabhin, another diocese adjacent to Mala- tiah,° by the patriarch Ignatius.! After the death of Ignatius, Bar-Hebreus took the part of Dionysius (Aaron ‘Angir) against John bar Ma‘dani, and was transferred by him in 1253 to Aleppo,” but quickly deposed by his old friend Salibha (who sided with John bar Ma‘dani)**; nor did he recover tiis see till 1258.34 The next patriarch, Ignatius 1II. (Yéshi’), abbot of Gévikith near Mopsu- estia,®° advanced him to the dignity of maphrian in 1264.26 Hence- forth his life was an active and busy one, and it seems almost marvellous that he should have studicd and written so much, while in no way neglectful of the vast diocese committed to his charge. The story is told by himself in simple language in his Ecclesiastical History,” with a continuation by his surviving brother Bar-sauma Safi, giving a nearly complete list of his works.°8 He died at Mardghah in Adhurbaigin on 30th July 1286, and the greatest respect was shown to his memory by Greeks, Armenians, and Nestorians alike, the shops being closed and no business trans- acted.® His body was conveyed to the convent of Mar Matthew at Mosul, where his grave was seen by Badger in October 1843.41 Bar-Hebreus cultivated nearly every branch of science that was in vogue in his time, his object being on the one hand to reinvigo- rate and keep alive the Syriac language and literature, and on the other to make available to his co-religionists the learning of the Muhammadans in a suitable form. Hence his treatment of the Aristotelian philosophy, following in the footsteps of Ibn Sina (Avicenna) and other Arabian writers. The Kéthabha dht-Bhé- bhatha, or “ Book of the Pupils of the Eyes,” is a compendium of the art of logic or dialectics, comprising an introduction on the utility of logic and seven chapters in which the author deals suc- cessively with the Jsagégé of Porphyry, the Categories, De Inter- pretatione, Analytiea Priora, Topica, Analytica Posteriora, and De Sophistieis Elenchis.® In connexion with it we take the Kzthabha dha-Stwadh Sophia or “ Book of the Speech of Wisdom,” a com- pendium of dialectics, physics, and metaphysics or theology.‘ The large encyclopedia entitled Héwath Hekhmétha, “ Butyrum Sapientiz,” or less correctly Hekhmath Hekhmatha, “Sapientia Sapientiarum,” comprises the whole Aristotelian discipline. The first volume contains the Logie, viz., the Isagdgé, Categories, De Interpret., Anal. Pri. and Poster., Dialectica, De Sophist. Elenehis,

Rhetorie, and Art of Poetry. The second comprises the Physies, viz., De Auseult. Physiea, De Cxlo ec Mundo, De Meteoris, De Genera- tione et Corruptione, De Fossilibus, De Plantis, De Animalibus, and De Anima. The third, in its first section, treats of the Metaphysies, viz., of the origin and writers of philosophy, and of theology ; in its second section, of ethics, economics, and politics. An abridge-

25 B.0., ii. 263. a

26 Ibid., ii. 244; Bar-Hebreeus, Hist. Dynast., p. 481 (transl., p. 815); Chron. Syr., p. 503 (transl., p. 521).

27 B.0., ii. 245; Bar-Hebreeus, Hist. Dynast., pp. 486-487 (transl., pp. 318-319); Chron. Syr., 504-505 (transl., p. 522).

28 See the poem No. 29 in Cod. Vat. clxxiv. (Catal., iii. 356).

29 Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 667 ; B.O., li. 245, 374. From ‘Akko Salibha was transferred to Aleppo, under the name of Basil (B.0., ii. 375), and promoted in December 1252 by the patriarch John bar Ma‘dani to be maphrian, under the name of Ignatius (B.0., ii. 377, 455). He died in 1258.

30 B.O., ii. 260. 31 Tbid., ii. 246; Bar-llebreus, Chron. Eccles., i. 685.

32 B.0., ii. 246; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 721. 33 Tbid., i. 721.

34 Ibid., i. 727. 35 He sat from 1264 to 1282.

36 B.O., ii. 246; Bar-Hebreeus, Chron. Eccles., i. 749, ii. 433.

37 Ibid., ii. 431-467; B.O., ii. 248-263.

38 Bar-Hebreus, Chron. Eccles., ii. 467-485; B.O., ii. 264-274. Two brothers died before him, Michael and Muwaffak. See the poems Nos. 166 and 170 in Cod. Vat. elxxiv. (Catal., iii. 358).

39 B.0., ii. 266; Chron. Eccles., ii. 473. 40 B.O., ii. 460.

41 The Nestorians, i.97. For ‘£1536” read 1537, and for “ August” July.

42 Compare Renan, De Philos. Peripat. apud Syros (1852), p. 65 sq.

43 Brit. Mus. Or. 1017; Paris, Anc. fonds 138; Berlin, Alt. Best. 38,2, 39; Sachau 140, 2, and 198,8; Cambridge, collection of the 8.P.C.K.

44 Brit. Mus. Or. 1017; Paris, Anc. fonds 138 (Syr. and Arab.); Berlin, Alt. Best. 38,4; Sachau 91 (Syr. and Arab.), also 140, 1, and 198, 9; Cambridge, coll. of the 8.P.C.K.

45 Palat. Medic. clxxxvi.-vii., clxxvi.-ix. (=clxxxvi.; see Renan, De Philos. Peripat. apud Syros, p. 66); Bodl. Hunt. 1 (imperf.); compare also Palat, Medic. clxxxiii.-iv. and xii. (p. 109).

ment of this large work is the Tég¢rath Tégératha or “ Mercatura Mercaturarun,” which goes over the same ground in briefer terms.! To this class too belongs a poem “On the Soul, according to the views of the Peripatetics,” which is described as “ mémra shinaya,” 2.€., according to Assemani, riming in the letter sk.2 Bar-Hebreeus also translated into Syriac Ibn Sina’s Kitab al-isharat wa ’t-tan- bihat,? under the title of Kéthabha dhé-Remzé wa-Méiranwatha,4 and another work of the same class, entitled Zubdat al-Asrar or “the Cream of Secrets,” by his elder contemporary, Athir ad-din Mufaddal ibn ‘Omar al-Abhari (died in 1262).° Nor did he neglect the study of mathematics and astronomy. In 1268 we find him lecturing on Euclid in the new convent at Maraghah, and again in 1272, at the same place, on the Megisté (“H meyddn ovvraékis) of Ptolemy. He drew up a zi, z.¢., a set of astronomical tables or astronomical almanac, for the use of tiros?; but his principal work in this branch of science is the Sullaka Haundnaya or ‘ Ascent of the Mind,” a complete treatise on astronomy and cosmography, which he composed in 1279.8 His medical writings are more numerous, for Bar-Hebreus was famous asa physician 2 and had been in attendance as such on the Tatar “king of kings” in 1263, He made, for example, a translation and an abridgement of Dios- corides’s treatise Ilept tys larpixfs (De Medicamentis Simplicibus), under the title

of Kéthabha dhé-Dhioskoridhis,4 and wrote a com- mentary on the Aphorisms of Hippocrates in Arabic,!? and on the Questiones Medice of Honain ibn Ishak in Syriac.12 He also pub- lished the Quastiones in an abridged Syriac translation.4 Further, he is said to have written commentaries in Arabic on Galen's treatises De Elementis (Hep! rév cab' Inmoxpdrny crorxelwv) and De Tempera- mentis (Ilepi xpacéwv).! ° He made an abridged version in Arabic of al-Ghafiki's 1° " Book of Simples" (al-adwiyah al-mufradah)," and left an unfinished Syriac translation of the Canon (al-Kanun fi 't- Tibb) of Ibn Sina.1® A large medical treatise of his own composi- tion in Syriac is mentioned, but no special title is given. Asa grammarian Bar-Hebreus deserved well of his country, and his writings. on this subject are now well known and appreciated by Orientalists. By making use of the work of previous grammarians, especially Jacob of Edessa, he has succeeded in giving a very full sketch of the language according to the Oriental system, with many valuable observations as to dialectic differences, &. The larecr grammar bears the title of Kethabha dhé-Semhé, "the Book of Lights" or "Rays."?° It has been published, according to the Paris MS. Ancien fonds 166, by the Abbé Martin.2! The smaller metrical grammar, Kéthabha dhé-Ghrammatiki," was edited so long ago as 1843 by Professor Bertheau of Gottingen, according to the MS. Orient. 18 in the library of that university, but without the fifth section De Vocibus Aiquivocis. Martin has republished it in his Guvres Grammaticales d' Abou 'l Farad), vol. ii., including the fifth section, according to the Paris MS. Ancien fonds 167.2 A third, still smaller grammar, Keéthabha dha-Bhélésusitha or "the Book of the Spark," was left unfinished by the author. As a theologian, Bar-Hebreus's most useful work undeniably is the 4usar Razé or "Storehouse of Secrets," the Horrewm Mysteriorum as it is commonly

called.* This is a critical and doctrinal commentary on the text of

the Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments, based on the Péshitta, but taking note of the various readings of the Hebrew text, the LXX. and other Greek versions, the later Syriac translations, and even the Armenian and Coptic, besides noting differences of reading be- tween

the Nestoriansand Jacobites. The doctrinal portion is drawn from the Greek fathers and previous Syrian theologians, of course

of the Monophysite school. The Afénarath Kudhshé, or " Lamp of**

1 Palat. Medic. ec.; Berlin, Sachau 211: Cambridge, coll. of the S.P.C.K.

2 B.O., ii. 268, in the note, col. 2, No. 28.

3 Theoremata et Exercitationes, a course of logic, physics, and inetaphysics ; see Wistenfeld, Geschichte d. arab. Aerzte, p. 73, No. 61; B.O., ii. 270, note 2.

4 Cod. Vat. exci.; Palat. Medic. clxxxy. (Arab. and Syr.); Paris, Ane. fonds 163. 5 See Hist. Dynast., p. 485 (trausl., p. 318).

6 B.0., ii. 253; Chron. Eccles., ii. 443.

? B.O., ii. 307 ; but the calendar there indicated is of later date.

8 Bodl. Hunt. 540; Paris, Anc. fonds 162. On the date see Payne Smith, Catal., p. 584. 9 Wiistenfeld, Gesch. d. arab. Aerzte, No. 240.

10 Chron. Eecles.,i.747. 11 B.O., ii. 268, in the note, col. 1, No. 13, and p. 270.

12 Tbid., ii. 268, col. 1, No. 15, and p. 270.

13 Apparently unfinished, for Bar-saumais careful to add "as faras Thiriakt," B.0., it. 272, No. 28; see also p. 268, in the note, col. 2, No. 25.

14 B.0., ii. 270, No. 16.

15 Wenrich, De Auctorwm Gree. Verss. et Commentt. Syriacis, &., 1842, pp. 242- 243, 270; Wiistenfeld, Gesch. d. arab. Aerzte, No. 240.

16 Wiistenfeld, op. cit., No. 176; Ibn Abi Usaibi'ah, ed. Miiller, ii. 52.

17 B.0., ii. 270, No. 143 268, note, col. 1, No. 14.

18 Ibid., ii. 272, No. 24; 268, note, col. 2, No. 22.

19 Ibid., ii. 272, No. 26. 20 Ibid., ii. 307.

2 Guvres Grammaticales d' Abow 'l Faradj, dit Bar Hebreus, vol. i., 1872. The chapter on the signs of interpunction, &c., was edited by Dr Phillips in 1869, in A Letter by Mar Jacob, Bishop of Edessa, on Syriac Orthography. MSS. of this work are—Cod. Vat. cecexvi., eccexxii.; Bodl. Hunt. 1, Pocock 298; Paris, Ane. fonds 166; Brit. Mus. Add. 7201; Palat. Medic. exxii.; Géttingen, Or. 18b; Berlin, Alt. Best. 43, Sachau 307, 308; Cainbridge, coll. of the §.P.C.K.

22 B.O., ii. 308.

23 Of this work there are many MSS. in Europe, differing from one another in the quantity of the scholia and the retention or omission of section 5.

24 B.O., ii. 272, No. 27. 25 Tbid., ii. 277.

26 Portions of this work have been edited at various times, but a complete edition is still unachieved. Larsow made a very sinall beginning in 1858. See the list in Nestle's Brevis Lingua Syr. Grammatica, 1881, pp. 31-32. MSS. of

[13TH cEnr,-

the Sanctuary," isa treatise on the "bases" or first principles on which the church is established.2" It deals in twelve " bases" with the following subjects :—(1) of knowledge in general, (2) of the nature of the universe, (3) of theology, (4) of the incarnation, (5) of the knowledge of.celestial substances, 7. e., the angels, (6) of the earthly priesthood, (7) of the evil spirits, (8) of the rational soul

(9) of free will and liberty, fate and destiny, (10) of the resurrec- tion, (11) of the end of the world and the last judgement, (12) of paradise. The Kéthabha dhé-Zalgé, or "Book of Rays," is a com. pendium of theology, going over nearly the same_ground as the previous work, in

ten sections.% The Kethabha ah' lthikon, or Liber Tav 7OKey, was composed at Maraghah in 1279. It has been fully analysed by Assemani in the B.O., ii. 303 sq. Part i. treats of the exercises of the body and mind, such as prayer, manual work, study, vigils, fasting, &c.; part ii., of the regimen of the body ; part it, of the purifying of the soul from evil passions ; part iv., of the adorning of the soul with virtues.29 The Kethabha dh3- Yi aund, or

" Book of the Dove," is a similar work specially intended for the use

of ascetics living in solitude as hermits. It is also divided into four parts, viz., (1) of the training of the body, ¢.g., in alienation from the world, repentance, poverty, humility, patience, fraternal love,

&c. ; (2) of the training of the soul, ¢.g., in quiet, religious exercises, prayer, watching, fasting, &c. ; (3) of the spiritual rest of the per-

fect; and (4) an autobiographical sketch of his own spiritual life,3 Bar-Hebreus also spent part of his time in excerpting, arrang- ing, and commenting upon the Book of Hierotheus concerning the hidden Mysteries of the House of God.*1 In the commentary he chiefly follows that of Theodosius, patriarch of Antioch (see above, p._846).°? He compiled an anaphora,% published a confession of faith or creed,*4 and approved the order of baptism of Severus, as translated by Jacob of Edessa.5 More valuable than these is his Kethabha dhé-Huddayé, "the Book of Directions" or "N on1ocanon," which is for the Jacobite Church what the Kunnasha adhé- Kanone of 'Abhd-ish6″ is for the Nestorian, both in ecclesiastical and secular matters.° To us Europeans the historical writings of Bar-Hebreus surpass in interest and value everything else that he has written. He planned and executed a Universal History in three parts.®? Part i. contains the political History of the World from the creation down to his own times.*® Part ii. is the history of the church from Aaron downwards, the treatment being exceedingly brief till we reach the post-apostolic period, when it becomes a history of the patriarchs of the church of Antioch, and finally, after the age of Severus, of the patriarchs of the Monophysite branch of that church down to the year 1285. The meagre continuation by a later hand reaches to 1495. Part iii. offers us the history of the

Eastern division of the Syrian Church from St Thomas the apostle onwards. From the time of Maratha (629) it becomes the history of the Mono- physite maphrians of Taghrith, though a record is always carefully kept of the catholic patriarchs of the Nestorians. It closes with the year 1286, but there is a continuation by Bar-Hebrzus's brother Bar-sauma to 1288, and thence by another writer to 1496.29 In the last years of his life, at the request of some Muslim friends in Mara-

this work—Cod. Vat. clxx., eelxxxii.; Palat. Medic. xxvi.; Bodl. Hunt. 1; Brit. Mus. Add. 7186, 21580, 23596; Berlin, Alt. Best. 11, Sachau 134; Gottingen, Orient. 18a ; Cambridge, coll. of the S.P.C.K.

27 B.0., ii. 284. MSS.—Cod. Vat. elxviii.; Paris, Anc. fonds 121 ; Cambridge, coll. of the 8S.P.C.K. This work has been translated into Arabic—Paris, Anc. fonds 128; Brit. Mus. 18296 ; Bodl. Hunt. 48; Berlin, Sachau 81; Cambridge, coll. of the 8.P.C.K. Mr R. J. H. Gottheil has recently lithographed, 'for private circulation only," a small portion of this work, viz., basis ii., ch. iii. sect. 3, paragr. b, on plants (26 pp. of text, 8 pp. of reface); the title is A list of Plants and their Properties from the Mendrath Kudh¥é of Gregorius bar 'Eberdyd edited by Richard J. H. Gotthetl, B.A.

°8 B.O., ii. 297. MSS.—Cod. Vat. elxix.; Bodl. Or. 467, Hunt. 521; Paris, Anc. fonds 129, Suppl. 59; Brit. Mus. Or. 1017; Berlin, Sachau 85; Cambridge, coll. of the 8.P.C.K.

29 MSS. —Cod. Vat. elxxi.; Bodl. Marsh. 681, Hunt. 490; Brit. Mus. Add. 7194, 7195 ; Paris, Auc. fonds 122, Suppl. 75. There are two Arabic translations of this work ; see Zotenberg, Catal., p. 201, No. 247. :

30 Bodl. Hunt. 1; Cambridge, coll. of the S.P.C.K. There is an Arabic translation, Paris, Anc. fonds 126, 145 (ff. 292-299).

31 Probably a production of Stephen bar Siidh-ailé ; see Brit. Mus, Add. 7189, where we have the commentary of Theodosius, patriarch of Antioch, and com- pare Frothingham, Stephen bar Sudaili, p. 87 sq. See also above, p. 432,

32 Brit. Mus. Or. 1017. Other MSS.—Paris, Anc. fonds 138; Berlin, Sachau 206. The work seems to have been translated into Arabic (see Zotenberg, Catal., p. 176). 33 B.0., ii. 275. 34 Ibid., ii. 276; Cod. Vat. clxxill.

35 See Cod. Vat. lii.; Paris, Anc. fonds 97; Medic. Palat. xliv.

36 B.0., ii. 299. Rendered into Latin by J. A. Assemani in Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll.,x. MSS.—Cod. Vat. exxxii., ecelvi.-vii., ecclviii.-ix.; Bodl. Hunt. 1; Paris, Anc. fonds 140; Berlin, Alt. Best. 40; Palat. Medic. lxi. It has been translated into Arabic. 37 B.0., ii. 311.

38 This has been edited under the title of Bar-Hebreei Chronicon Syriacum by Bruns and Kirsch, with a Latin translation, in two volumes, 1789. Both text and translation are equally bad, and the work deserves a new edition.

39 Parts ii. and iii., which supplied Assemani with the greatest part of the materials for the second volume of his Bibl. Orientalis, have been edited by Abbeloos and Lamy in three volumes, viz., part ii. in two volumes, 1872-74, and part iii. in one volume, 1877, accompanied by a Latin translation and notes. It might be advantageously reprinted, if revised by a competent hand. MSS. of the entire history are—Cod. Vat. elxvi., ceelxxxiii.-viii.; Bodl. Hunt. 1; Palat. Medic. exviii. Part i. is contained in Cod. Vat. clxvii. and Bodl. Hunt. 52; partsii. and iii. in Brit. Mus. Add. 7198 and Cambridge Dd. 3, 8, 1, as also in the coll. of the S.P.C.K. Whether the Berliri MS., Sachau 210, contains the entire work or only a part of it we do not know; it is simply described as “Chronik des Bar Hebreus.” There are excerpts in Cod. Vat. elxxiii.

ghah, he undertook to make a recension in Arabic of the political history, which he all but finished within the space of one month before his last illness came on,!_ This edition is enriched with many references to Muhammadan writers and literature which are wanting in the Syriac. It is entitled al-Mukhtasar fi ’d-Duwal, or “Com- pendious History of the Dynasties.”2 Asa poet Bar-Hebreus is admired by his

countrymen, and even Renan has thought the poem on the theme Bona Lex sed Melior Philosophia to be worthy of publi- cation.* Some of the poems were badly edited and translated by Von Lengerke in 1886-38 according to the Paris MS. Ancien fonds 130 ; others have been published by the Maronite priest Augustinus

Scebabi (phish at Rome, 1877. The Carmen de Divina Sapi-

entia was brought out so long ago as 1638 by Gabriel Sionita, and has been republished at Rome in 1880 by Yohanna Notayn

Jou O73 Ge 2 Darauni (/ 3 3¢ > all wi Loy).4 In his youth Bar-Hebreus wrote

a book on the interpretation of dreams, pushshak helmé®; and in his later years he made a collection of entertaining and humorous stories in Syriac, entitled Kethabha dhé-Thunnayé Méghahhekhané, with an

we O- Arabic counterpart under the title of Daft al-Hamm (wall @);

“the Driving away of Care.”® The contents of the TunndyZ are, however, inore varied than the title seems to promise, as may be seen from Assemani’s enumeration of the chapters, B.O., ii. 306.7 Contemporary with Bar-Hebraus, though somewhat younger, we may place Daniel bar Khattab, to whom Assemani has devoted two . articles in the B.0., ii., at pp. 244 and 468. Among the poems of Bar-Hebreus we find verses addressed to this Daniel by the Nestorian Khamis bar Kardahé with his reply and another by Bar-Hebreus.® He composed abridgements in Arabic of several of Bar-Hebreus’s works, ¢.g., the Nomocanon,® Ethies, Ausar Razé, Ménarath Kudh- shé, Kéthabha dhé-Bhabhatha, and the larger grammar.!° An inde- pendent work of his, also in Arabic, treats of The Bases, or First Principles, of the Faith and Consolation of the Hearts of Believers.Y. With Daniel bar Khattab we may close our list of Jacobite writers in the literature of Syria. The Nestorians kept the lamp burning for a little, though not much longer, as we shall presently see. Shélémon, or Solomon, of Khilat or Akhlat, on the shores of Lake Van, was present as metropolitan of Pérath d&-Maishin or al-Basrali at the consecration of the catholicus Sabhr-isho’

in 1222.12 Besides some prayers and short discourses (mémroné), he wrote a treatise on the figure of the heavens and the earth,!3 and compiled a volume of analecta, partly theological, partly historical, which he entitled Kethabha dhé-Dhebboritha or "the Bee." It is dedicated to his friend Narsai, bishop of Khéni-Shabhér or Béth Wazik, called by the Arabs al-Bawéazig or al-Bawazij, on the lesser Zab. Of this work an analysis has been given by Assemani in the B.0., ili. 1, 309-824, and there is a German translation of it by Schén- felder, 1866. It has been recently edited by Mr E. A. W. Budge, of the British Museum, with an English translation, Oxford, 1886. This was an age of song with the Nestorians, in which lived some of their favourite writers of hymns. (1) One of the most conspicu- ous of these is George Warda (the Rose) of Arbél or Irbil, whose poems have entered so largely into the use of the Nestorian Church that one of their service books is to this day called the Warda.'6 His date may be gathered from certain of his hymns, which speak of the calamities of the years 1535-88=1224-27 a.p.17 (2) About the same time flourished Mas'id of the family Béth Kashsha (in Arabic Ibn al-Kass), who was physician (hakim) to the caliph al- Musta'sim (1242-58), and outlived his patron.18 One of his poems

1 B.O., ii. 264.

2 Hdited by Pocock, with a Latin translation, in 1663. MSS.—Cod. Vat. elxvii.; Brit. Mus. Add. 6944, 6952, 1, 23304-5; Bod]. Pocock 54,162; Palat. Medic. exvii.

3 De Philos. Peripat. ap. Syros, p. 67.

4 B.0., ti. 308. MSS.—Cod. Vat. clxxiv.; Bod]. Hunt. 1, Marsh. 201; Paris, Anc. fonds 118, 130, 157; Palat. Medic. lxii. (Catal., p. 110); sce also Cod. Vat. eccexxli.; Bodl. Poc. 298; Berlin, Alt. Best. 41, 2, 3, and Sachau 61, 4-6.

5 B.0., ii. 271, No. 20. 6 Ibid., ii. 268, note, col. 2, No. 31; p. 272, note 1.

7 See a few short specimens in Kirsch and Bernstein's Chrest. Syr., pp. 1-4, and in an article by L. Morales in the Z.D.M.G., xl. p. 410 sq. MSS.

—Cod. Vat. elxxiii.; Ind. Off. No. 9, ‘Tracts in Syriac,” ff. 351-413. The Daf* al-Hamm is contained in Paris, Auc. fonds 160. The catalogue of Bar- Hebreeus’s works in B.0., ii. 268, note, adds one Arabic book to this long list (col. 1, No. 19, at the foot) of which we know nothing but the title there given in Syriac, Kethabha dhé-Henyin Yuthrané, ‘On the Pleasure of Gain.”

8 Payne Smith, Catal., p. 377; Catal. Vat., iii. 358.

9 B.O., ii. 463 5 Cod. Vat. Arab. dcxxxvi. (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., iv. 573).

10 B.O., ii. 464,

ll Ibid., ii. 244; Cod. Vat. Arab. lxxiv. (Mai, op. cit., iv. 153).

12 B.0., ii. 453, No. 75; Bar-Hebrzeus, Chron. Eccles., ii, 371.

13 B.0., iii. 1, 310. 14 See Hoffmann, Ausztige, pp. 189 and 296. =

15 MSS.—Cod. Vat. clxxvi., clxxvi.; Brit. Mus. Add. 25875; RAS. Add. 76; Munich, Cod. Syr. 7 (with an Arabic translation). Bod]. Pocock 79 and Paris, Anc. fonds 113, contain only an Arabic translation, different from that in the Munich MS. , ae

16 Badger, The Nestorians, ii.25. A few specimens are given by Cardahi in the Liber Thesauri, p. 51. Badger has translated one, op. cit., pp: 51-57.

W? Catal. Vat., iii. 391, at the top. Important MSS. of Warda’s hymns are Cod. Vat. elxxxiv.; Berlin, Alt. Best. 24, Sachau 188; Cambridge, coll. of the S.P.C.K,.

18 B.O., iii. 1,561; Bar-Hebrieus, Hist. Dynast., pp. 522-523 (transl., pp. 341-342).

for the feast of the Epiphany occurs in Cod. Vat. clxxxiv. (Catal. iii. p. 389).19 (8) Khamis bar Kardahé of Arbél was a younger

contemporary of Bar-Hebrzus, as appears from his correspondence Khamis.

with Daniel bar Khattab (see above). He too has bequeathed his

name to one of the Nestorian service books, which is still called Gabriel the Khamis.®° (4) Gabriel Kamsa (the Locust) was a monk of Béth-Kamsa.

Kuka. He became metropolitan of Mosul, and was present at the consecration of Yabh-alaha III. in 1281." There is a long poem of his in Cod. Vat. clxxx. (Catal., iii. 376), treating of the creation, the incarnation, the life of our Saviour, the preachin g of the apostles, and the praises of the fathers of the church, and concluding with

an encomium on Sabhr-isho', the founder of Beth-Kaka. (5) John John of of Mosul was a monk of the convent of St Michael near that city.2? Mosul.

His work entitled Kethabha dht-Shappir Dubbaré was published at Rome in 1868 by E. J. Millos, archbishop of "'Akra, as a school- book, under the title of Directorium Spirituale. 'It is, of course, impossible to say to what extent the original has been tampered with in such an edition, but there is a MS. in the Brit. Mus. Or. 2450.28 The composition of the work is placed by Millos in 1245, and the death of the author by Cardahi (Lib. Thes., p. 120) in 1270.

'Abhd-isho' bar Bérikha holds nearly the same position in regard 'Abhd- to the Nestorian Church that Bar-Hebreus does in relation to the ish3′ bar Jacobite, though far inferior in talent and learning to "the Son of Bérikhia.

the Hebrew." He flourished under Yabh-alaha III., being firstly bishop of Shiggar (Sinjar) and Béth-'Arbayé about 1285,24 and after- wards, before 1291, metropolitan of Nisibis and Armenia. He died in 1318.°6

He has left us a list of his own publications at the end of the Catalogus Librorum, in the B.O., iii. 1, 325 sq. Several of these seem to be lost,—at least they do not appcar in the cata- logues of our collections,—such as the commentary on the Old and New Testaments," the Kéthabha Katholikos on the marvellous dis- pensation or life of our Lord on earth,* the Kethabha Skolastikos against all the heresies,?® the book of the mysteries of the Greek philosophers,®° the twelve discourses comprising all the sciences,3! and the ecclesiastical decisions and canons,? as also an Arabic work with the title Shah-marwarid or "the King-pearl."33 The Mar- ganitha or " Pearl" is a theological work in five sections, treating of God, the creation, the Christian dispensation, the sacraments of the church, and the things that prefigure the world to come. There is a careful analysis of its contents in B.0., iii. 1, 352-360. It has been edited, with a Latin translation, in Mai, Seriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., x., and done into English by Badger, The Nestorians, ii, 380 sg. The date of composition is 1298.34 'Abhd-ishd' himsclf translated this work into Arabic in 1312, as we learn from 'Amr ibn Matta in the Majdal, where large portions of it are quoted.35 The Collection of Synodical Canons or Nomocanon is also fully analysed by Assemani, £.0., iii. 1, 882-851. It has been edited, with a Latin translation, in Mai, Seriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., x.*8 As a poet 'Abhd-isho' does not shine according to our ideas, although his countrymen admire his verses greatly. Not only is he obscure in vocabulary and style, but he has adopted and even exaggerated all the worst faults of Arabic writers of rimed prose and scribblers of verse." His principal cffort in poetry is the Paradise of Eden, a collection of fifty poems on theological subjects, which has been analysed by Assemani, B.O., ili. 1, 325-332. This volume was pub- lished by the author in 1291, and in 1316 he found that it was necessary to add an explanatory commentary.? Another collection of twenty-two poems, which may be regarded as parts of one com- position, treating of the love of wisdom and knowledge, is found in Cod. Vat. clxxiv. (Catal., iii. 359) and Bodl. Marsh. 201 (P. Smith, Catal., p. 510); and a third, including the above and a selection from the Paradise, is contained in Bodl. Marsh., 361.*% Of his minor works, enumerated in the B.0O., iii. 1, 861, the con- solatory discourses, the letters, and the commentary on the epistle of Aristotle to Alexander concerning the great art (alchemy) seem

19 See Cardahi, Liber Thesauri, pp. 125-128.

20 Badger, The Nestorians, ii. 24; see one of his poems translated, pp. 38-49. Cardahi gives some specimens in Liber Thesauri, pp. 59-62. Important MSS. of his poems are—Cod. Vat. elxxxy.-vi.-viii. ; Brit. Mus. Add. 18716, f. 44a, and Orient. 2304; Berlin, Sachau 178; see also Cod. Vat. Ixxxix. and Brit. Mus. Or.

24 B.0., i. 539. 25 Tbid., i. 538; ifi. 1, 327, col. 2. 26 Tbid., i. 539; iii. 1, 3 notes 2, 3,325 note 1. 27 Ibid., fii. 1, 395. 28 Id., ibid. 29 Id., p. 360. 30 Id., ibid. 31 Id., ibid. 32 Id., ibid.

Cambridge, coll. of the 8.P.C.K.

35 BO. iii. 1, 360, note 4; see Cod. Vat. Ixv., eccvii., and Cod. Vat. Arab. ex. (Mai, Scriptt. Vett. Nova Coll., iv.); compare B.O., iii. 1, 589.

36 MSS.—Cod. Vat. exxviii., cxxix., ceclv.

37 See Payne Smith's minute descriptions in his Catal., p. 523 sq.

38 MSS.—Cod. Vat. eexlv., ecelxxix.; Paris, Anc. fonds 166; Berlin, Alt. Best. 41,1, Sachau 1, 21, 80 ; Brit. Mus.Oricut. 2302-3 ; Cambridge, coll. of the S.P.C.K.

39 B.0., iii., 1, 327, col. 2. :

40 Payne Smith, Catal., p. 523; see also p. 531, Nos. 30, 31. In Paris, Ane. fonds 104, there is a poem explanatory of the ecclesiastical calendar (Zotenberg, Catal., p. 128).

to be lost. The tuwrgdmé arc collected in a MS. at Berlin, Alter ~~Bestand 41, 4. His commentary on an enigmatical poem of Simeon Shankélawi we have already mentioned (see above, p. 852). To us his most useful work decidedly is the Catalogue of Books, which forms the basis of vol. iii. part 1 of Assemani's Bibi. Orient. There is an older edition of it by Abraham Ecchellensis, Rome, 1653. It has been translated into English~~

~~by Badger.! The Catalogue con~~ sists of four parts, viz., (1) the Scripturcs of the Old Testament, with sundry apocrypha, B.0., iii. 1,5; (2) the Scriptures of the New Testament, p. 8; (8) the Greek fathcrs who were translated into Syriac, p. 18; (4) the Syriac fathers, chiefly, of course, of the Nestorian Church, pp. 65-362. It is to be regretted that 'Abhd- ish6' contented himself merely with enumerating the titles of

1 The Nestorians, ii. 361. Badger ascribes the work to the year 1298, probably on the authority of his MS.

SYZRAN, a district town of Russia, in the government of Simbirsk, lies 90 miles to the south of Simbirsk, a few miles from the Volga. It originated in a fort, erected in 1683, to protect the district from Tatars and Circassians. Most of its inhabitants (24,500 in 1882) are engaged in gardening and tillage. In the large villages of the sur- rounding district, one of the richest in Simbirsk, various petty trades are carried on. Syzrafi has long been in repute for its tanneries and manufactures of leather (£20,000 annually). Several flour-mills and other manu- factures have recently sprung up. The town is connected by rail with Penza and Morshansk in the west, and with Orenburg in the east, and much grain is exported; timber is brought from the upper Volga, and manufactured wares from Nijni-Novgorod. In 1882 the goods shipped from Syzraii and Batraki (a port on the Volga) were valued at £153,540. In the same year the grain and other wares sent by rail exceeded one million cwts. Syzrafi is a badly built town, most of the houses being of wood.

SZABADKA (German, Maria-Theresiopel), a royal free town of Hungary, in the county of Bacs, on Lake Palics, in 46° 8' N. lat. and 19° 42' E. long. It is the centre of an immense agricultural district and has little claim to special distinction. There are a chamber of advocates, an upper gymnasium, a state training institute for governesses, and an industrial and commercial school. The population (61,367 in 1880) was about 63,500 in 1885, mostly Hun- garians, but partly Bunyevaczs (a branch of Servians).

SZARVAS, a town of Hungary, on the Kérdés, in the county of Békés, is a place noted for the wealth of its peasantry and the excellence of its

breed of horses. The population was 22,504 in 1880, and about 24,000 in 1885, chiefly Slovaks, but all speaking Hungarian.

SZATMAR-NEMETI, a royal free town of Hungary, in the county of Szatmér, is situated on the river Szamos and the Hungarian North-Eastern Railway, in 47° 49’ N. lat. and 22° 51’ E. long. It is the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop and has a seminary, a male and female normal school, and several Government offices. The town has a considerable trade in wine and wood. The population num- bered 19,708 in 1880, and about 22,000 in 1885. They are mostly Magyars, and by religion Romanists, Pro- testants, and Greeks in almost equal proportions.

SZEGEDIN, a royal free city of Hungary, second only to Budapest, is situated on both banks of the Theiss at the influx of the Maros, in 46° 16’ N. lat. and 20° 10’ E. long., in the county of Csongrad. It is a great centre of the commerce and agriculture of the Alféld, has a Roman

END OF VOLUME

S YZ—SZO0O

books, and never thought it worth his while to give the date of the writers, nor even to arrange his notices in any kind of chrono- logical order.? : After ‘Abhd-isho‘ there are hardly any names among the Nes- torians worthy of a place in the literary history of the Syrian nation. We may make an exception in favour of the catholicns

Timothy I1., who was elected in sueccssion to Yabh-alaha III. in Tim

1318, having previously been metropolitan of Mosul and Ipbil If. under the name of Joseph. He wrote a work on the sacraments of the church, of which Assemani has given an analysis in BO, iii. 1, 572-580.4 His death took place in 1328. (W. W*.)

2 MSS.—Cod. Vat. clxxvi.; RAS, Add. 76 (imperfect); Rome, Bibl. Vitt. Eman. A. 1194, MSS. Sessor. 162; Cambridge, coll. of theS, P.C.K, SF 15 (Oh, tate JL. BYR A Waterers

Catholic gymnasium, a state real school, and a library with about 80,000 volumes. There are a Franciscan, a Piarist, and a Minorite convent, and a large hospital, as well as various Government offices, a superior law court, and a chamber of advocates. The inner town consists of fine broad streets and large squares adorned with many palatial edifices, but the suburbs, inhabited by the peas- antry, are little superior to ordinary Hungarian villages. The river is spanned by a railway bridge of stone anda fine suspension bridge. Szegedin possesses factories of soap, soda, matches, candles, leather, and spirits, steam and saw mills, and salt and tobacco magazines, It is the chief seat of the manufacture of paprika (a kind of pepsicum) and of a pastry tarhonya, both largely exported to all parts of the world. During the summer the ship- ping trade is very brisk, especially in corn and timber. Szegedin is an important station on the Alféld-Fiume and the Austrian-Hungarian State Railways, and is a terminus of the Arad-Csandd Railway. The inhabitants in 1880 numbered 73,675, and in 1885 76,600 (estimated), en- tirely Magyars.

Since the 15th century Szegedin has bcen one of the most promi- nent cities in Hungary. From 1526 till 1686 it was in possession of the Turks, who fortified it. It is also notorious for its many witchcraft trials. In 1848 it sent strong detachments to the national Hungarian army. In July 1849 the seat of the Govern- ment was transferred hither for a short time. In March 1879 the town was almost completely destroyed by an inundation. In the reconstruction the site of the old fortress was laid out as a public gardcn.

SZENTES, a market town of Hungary, in the county of Csongrad, on the left bank of the Theiss, 30 miles north of Szegedin. It has a county-hall (1885) and a promenade. The inhabitants are chiefly employed in agriculture, in breeding geese, and in fishing. The population (28,712 in 1880) numbered about 30,000 in 1885, all Magyars.

SZIGET (Mérmaros-Sziget), chief town of the county of Marmaros in the north-east of Hungary, is the centre of a salt-mining district, with mining and forestry head departments. The town lies in a valley which abounds in picturesque scenery and is rich in mineral springs. It has a

county-hall, Protestant and Catholic gymnasia, a convent, a nunnery, and a training-school for teachers. The popu- lation (10,852 in 1880) was about 11,200 in 1885.

SZOLNOK, the capital of the county of Jdsz-Nagy- Kun-Szolnok, Hungary, is situated on the Theiss and the Zagyva, and is the junction of four railways. It carries on a brisk trade in tobacco, salt, and especially in wood. In 1880 the population (Magyars), chiefly Roman Catho- lics, numbered 18,247, and in 1885 about 19,000.

TWENTY-SECOND.

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.

A ee cage

VOL. XXII.

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITA.

|

i

9

AN Med) VA LAS

Dr ga’

ANON

“a. aa S

= 800

bwich .

Wk AK. Ichnston,

‘ yfltA ICA. NINTH EDITION

“uSsuqo ty V YM

NOlI03

HININ “VOINNVLISES VI0¥dO19AINI

[Pimueese) jo ywey spnzsu0T

ny

DIUDED Z DYeIVU) FS 3) BL

8)

owsay’ 7h

Wiss skys Vit]

Al ‘Id INK ‘1A 2S ‘Koay Jo doy soy

OL o s

SOEW Ystsugq

=

CRmnacrag

‘spp HT, von 2eary

=

r\ DSTYIAA ff VISALHO

Miss

gol

vf

Dy

a dL 8 Usysag

HAL Td

A’TTIOIS

WUXX “TOA

LIX” TOXA.

NOILIGQS HININ “VOINNVLING VIGHdOTIAING

0%

gS

At // — FY

**Seas NOLEROTIA)T wy **

AT ¢ UkgeT G |

SUDISTAT] Arejpmomerpre gy

S LP = |

\ \ \ X

WW ALE Td

Tl oA.Le” id

“mos EHV 3‘

NOULIGS HININ “VIINNVIING VId¥dd19AIN4 &8zZ wod

SEL Wiruvsesag Joyseg Suoy QET . OFT Wrmuverg JO CET 3seg “SuoT

Se

POPOL opeb

| pirepiaqunip10 Nn“) | : mt. 1 Sol STO | ool n , pe | | |

ST PASI dey [Terug

WoRDeG WAIyTNOG VIIVGRLS IY TLNOS VWIIVULLS AV WALIOS

N fF

|

pysig werperpsnp Pot)

oer alas 3epl Gp ncog | odd,

SOT

gqausiiy Ped as.

See

(wamgpum: Doune

rie Agi?

—

® a H HO ed, vbunadg | NOL AT ery 3

mes oeopung

cow ng T° Te apa ef

e Spampruosy | § oon Ls

eure 1g

UA PSV T ?

ow et, 4 7 Po, Ce a rob yeryek |

2. gry soauT be fs | Heaionye | UE {sud rf Rosiittin ting | Pep a * ; SOPs or 008s 0b Sms ss eohincnns. ‘6 ie ; ays \s ra que sae tove tA

Bee \ SE | STee 2s n 7 vawnnbry | }

A

ay AE

Ky wurntvyjo

ae

_¥. & ce

igumy 6 cau enamuny

pyr)

PLT IY

Fahim’?

SpeprPrnine &

¢ PY TONE 5 Kaw ? , png a we \susosoy Pe : F i . 2S ° fe a Voungrogere

“

~.

0 SoyeLogy

ne PUD ERD >

7] OF s7PVWOTo dats a aatess LISTEN

iF gi” 1 ‘ s oi my Li… f{FIuvrinagray po Si. ae Tou e aysrq wo nstrrT af

pone | ~_ Ulueg ZO;

BOR aN ¢

ap Muvae

981

ALALV Td

LIXX TOA

VITIVdALSOV HLOOS

fe) ak JY A hd ES

S, — 60) fase ek, ee OS a = i ae FIXX TOA

IbEZ ag

NOUWNIG2 HININ WOINNVLIYE WID¥dOIIAING apnzTswo’y

BOWEO YY BM ; Lo Wuryse MA : ; a) woure, 4 ‘ UBUI}SE

-

sproaprey > sumoy Lyun0 9 ©

= = == 5 s os OF os lores OL | > s I SET PMMFBIG Jo eTRIG : I 4 t <= -} ag nae ary qin.

ysno.10 qstre mg Lo} a

rw) : PTA YS Ly TOPUTMATT

Gen

eran apg PYoren,

UST

ST[TAstmoyy g “* UN > SS Essspurg—

~ YSno020 qsonke eTMeS\peripy

a8prt Suo0’T gSesxoeg\; : \ 3 \ = ‘ UOF WO FE

yuoyy

“y. aT Apaoiaieay

TLO.LO Bat5/

© surddy AT x TOG. motu

ger 3 2

ToySuryse

1c] Topo auLT tO

**10h S ut 1×5″ T LL **

s ueyTy a)

2 wWyJaq] SS STLAS [atime

a or

S.nqs oye: a5 staph Ge: , 2» a | “a PP On

= 3

n

Trewqyae yy

2 [Agro s.2z0p)

Q

Wom “Treisey) 2

woy.ragunrT

ng Mitr

| Ahr ne ena

T?°H 30

ache wegee

ee

Tis 0.10 qs ope

aqqeAB O

of oyytal | moa Ss 2M.

YWvsthusety

VOL XX.

43

42

41

39

Hind

| is. sie?

| a :

| | : z r i a sef— | : :

STRAL

| { —— ee

9 aa ee Ee fet es 5 Longitude West # of Greenwich 3

Page 293 | ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANE) Ny

PLATE V1,

¥; ‘ Sastuigo

ts Enghsh Statute Miles 69:16~1 degree 2 5 0 qc 20 0 80 BO 100

RAILWAYS mae — Canals —. — Sites of Baitles x 1809 — Heights ire English teety Submarine Telegraph lines thus S.Tor Sub. Tel.

W.& AK. Johnston,

Ay AMAUNBA NINTH EDITION

NOUWLIG9 HININ “VOINNVLIGS Wid¥d01 ols r ye eM re bd ae

8 OL — = = = a eet oreuel SAIMMLNIDwWAX Pw AIX

amy ut

ta 0

Tt ap aa Se Me ASC S.Sa71 DUG qoip ayy jO STULL] Ar ve

J SoMLOP LIZ YSU, MYT,

——) SE0T 12 yroep SKY “Uo

SNOISS3SSOd A AYP “POBLE JUD fii NVITVLI | : ey yr 1 es se eS Nak eT saat — : 4 vto NI \ d S (speAseury) oq} JO [TRF oy) Toyze | ral oF a re sf os 0,

1 ¥ T V | \wngetiianbe : Co, AYMNLNAD HLN3SAI19 FHL NI PUIIpses f | . Y . – 6 uaaury *: 7 |

NIVdS$S ee

| | AMNLNIO HLNSALYIHL FHL prea {— ———j

pa te Ne Ea VINVdSIH YO

NIvds ‘camel | Lh Se Vas Roof | INATONV

9 easnbiep L822,

‘A ALVITI . NIVdS Tex TOA

TA, PE TL NIVdIS GIRS TOA.

“NOILIGS. HININ “VOINNVLINS VICHAOTIAIN|

Bscislet 8 Ldn uoT

ari

@bPMqPOOM 40 UsESDT YMOS G Aang Ens 10 YBN > AAT dO UtASDT-p4OK Z garpurumons dorusersoy- YM | BMSIMOT 40 UETPON T suotstar(, Arey wourerae g

0€ 02

THA ALP’Id ; IXX “1OA

THA @&.L’ td

VOL XXII

SUMATRA PLATE IX

PROV. ELLESLEY

Lakor ae bering . Bs x 3 Z ae Se : y. oy we Bangsit,Aroal? Sia iad) Cos Attn oma «eek Rare

a)

Mego or Triest I.

Ry y® —

sae

3

tivase

100 Long. East of Greenwich 102

Page 638

WA K Johnston ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION

a

NOILICG HININ “VOINNVLIINS VIGHdOTIAING

Fu

iP, \ ybnowoquéng ss a \,

Uumhindsg +

nite’

= i S yh tee, # pata, Bey ~ Wh meuyotig,

ees

Ae cee =

> LUG ee . co ; Na B20 SPUEM. (snodowapr op yo JOLBSI DP unpTM fae adoceg) | p Scie m1) a, S| va * RYT XN DRS UCPe]QUnyy 10 UteISDT-YLION embmyy 10 usesvy-ymos E aeeseers wee f a a —— < NDR tre 4 ~ SY Lo

iy hat a —— sae {UP sS 9 110 A

Pe. — > a 2 é, 1 nae”

- Hi WAN ~HOIMTOOM AP

uorsbury ¢ | popping 40 usasay-apnos 2

wosdy Jo pig, % Kastan) JO Ute 1say-Ypiony J, 08 iY “ur aS 7 aa ty Ae aa vu suorstarg Crequomerpre,g

Og

IIXX “TOA

MX X “TOA

_

+S ta – aa aaa = al a a — ry a – = – Si PY a a — _—.) Oe

NOILIGS HININ “VOINNVLIYS

VIC Vd OTIAING

L

OF i}

ady 40 ULASDT Q| poasuiig yoy Lo Useyioy ¢ cies semeaT OPI h ULIYS ALOFT LO ULA}SAY -YQLON T

qsuregeydn > (d

ae)

IX DLP Id

IX ALP’ld

xXASSOS

IIXX “TOA

ITWX_X “TOA

oer , bs 7 i

7a

,

Mane an te;

ee ee Vreeetn base

ceils eee Lineeagy

Vol 23 (T-UPS)

Britannica 9th

“ii

ENCYCLOPAHDIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

THE

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

A

DICTIONARY

OF

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XXIII

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXVIII

[All Rights reserved. }

The following Article in this volume is copyrighted in the United States of America, viz.—

UNITED STATES Part I., History AND ConsTITUTION. Copyright, 1888, by ALEXANDER JOHNSTON. Part II., PHysicaL GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS. Copyright, 1888, by JosiAH D. WHITNEY. Part III., PovriricaL GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS. Copyright, 1888, by Francis A. WALKER.

ENCYCLOPAIDIA BRITANNICA.

1:

T’ is the twentieth symbol in our alphabet. It has varied

but little in form since the earliest days when it ap- peared in Greece and Italy, though some of the Italic alphabets exhibit variants: e.g.,in Umbrian and Etruscan inscriptions we find the horizontal stroke sometimes on one side only, and slanting ; sometimes the form is nearly that of our ordinary small ¢ without the ornamental turn at the bottom. In value it has been in all languages a surd or voiceless dental, corresponding to d, which is voiced. But the term “dental” includes some varieties of position, of which the most definite are—(1) where the point of the tongue touches the teeth (true “dental”), asin French ; (2 where the tongue touches the gum behind the teeth, and not the teeth at all, as in English ; (3) where the point of the tongue is slightly bent back against the palate, produc- ing the sound much heard in south India (often called “cerebral”). T’ when followed by ¢ or y is liable to pass into the s-sound; this happened in the local dialects of Italy before the Christian era ; at Rome the transition was later. This changed sound passed on into the Romance lan- guages, eg. in French “nation,” pronounced “nasion,” whence in England it was sounded first as “nasiun” and now as “‘nashun.” Similarly in English ¢ followed by u undergoes a change of sound; this is due, however, to the old sound of %, viz., long French w, or Old English y. This long yy developed into the 7 sound heard in “ use,” “cure,” &e.; then the new 7 affected the preceding ¢, and the result is ¢sh, as in “nature” (natshure) ; similarly din “verdure ” is sounded as dzk (verdzhure).

English employs the digraph th to denote two sounds, differing as voiceless and voiced sounds—the initial sounds of “thin” and “then” respectively. It would be a great convenience if dh could be used for the voiced sound, so that “then” should be written “dhen.” But it would be even better if the single symbols could be employed to denote these single sounds, as was to some extent the case in the earlier days of our language: in Anglo-Saxon we have the two symbols aud p. The first is only ad crossed ; the second was a rune and wascalled “thorn.” These, however, were not consistently employed one for the voiceless and one for the voiced sound ; also ¢h is

actually found in the oldest texts, and later on it occurs together with 8 and p. It is probable that the voiceless sound was originally the

only one in Teutonic. It was eventually differentiated into two sounds; but, as is usually the case, writing remained more archaic than speech. In modern English and Ice- landic, and probably in the parent Teutonic also, initial th is voiceless, except in English in a small number of pronouns and particles in common use, as “thou,” “ this,” “that,” “then,” “than,” “though,” “thus”; and it is regu- larly voiceless when final. The nature of the two sounds is this : the tongue is pressed against the back of the teeth (sometimes, especially when used by foreigners, against the bottom of the upper teeth) and either the breath for th or the voice for dh is forced through the interstices of the teeth. This pair of sounds is found in modern Greek, where th ap- pears as 9 and dh as 6. In Spanish and in Danish under certain circumstances the sound denoted by d is dh.

TABARI and Earty Aras Hisrortans. Arabian historians differ from all others in the unique form of their compositions. Each event is related in the words of eye-witnesses or contemporaries transmitted to the final narrator through a chain of intermediate reporters (rdwis), each of whom passed on the original report to his successor. Often the same account is given in two or more slightly divergent forms, which have come down through different chains of reporters. Often, too, one event or one important detail is told in several ways on the basis of several con- temporary statements transmitted to the final narrator through distinct lines of tradition. The writer therefore exercises no independent criticism except as regards the choice of authorities ; for he rejects accounts of which the first author or one of the intermediate links seems to him unworthy of credit, and sometimes he states which of several accounts seems to him the best. Modern judgment does not always confirm this choice; some authorities much esteemed by Moslems are by European scholars deemed untrustworthy, and vice versa. Fortunately the various historians did not always give preference to the same account of a transaction, and so one supplies what another omits.

A second type of Arabian historiography is that in which an author combines the different traditions about one occurrence into one continuous

narrative, but prefixes a statement as to the lines of authorities used and states which of them he mainly follows. In this case the writer

recurs to the first method, already described, only when the different traditions are greatly at variance with one another. In yet a third type of history the old method is entirely forsaken and we have a continuous narrative only occasionally imterrupted by citation of the authority for some particular point. But the principle still is that what has been well said once need not be told again in other words. The writer therefore keeps as close as he can to the letter of his sources, so that quite a late writer often reproduces the very words of the first narrator.

From very early times the Arabs had great delight in verses and tales, and the development of their language was certainly much influenced by this fact. In ancient times story-tellers and singers found their subjects in the doughty deeds of the tribe on its forays, in the merits of horse or camel, in hunting adveatures and love complaints, and some- times in contests with foreign powers and in the impression produced by the wealth and might of the sovereigns of Persia and Constantinople. The appearance of the Prophet with the great changes that ensued, the conquests that made the Arabs—till then a despised race—lords of half the civilized world, supplied a vast store of new matter for relations which men were never weary of hearing and recounting. They wished to know everything about the apostle of God, whose influence on his own time was so enormous, who had accomplished all that seemed impossible and had inspired the Arabs with a courage and confidence that made them stronger than the legions of Byzantium and Ctesiphon. Every one who had known or seen him was questioned and was eager to answer. Moreover, the word of God in the Koran left many practical points undecided, and therefore it was of the highest importance to know exactly how the Prophet had spoken and acted in various circumstances. Where could this be better learned than at Medina, where he had lived so long and where the majority of lis companions continued to live? So at Medina a school was gradually formed, where the chief part of the traditions about Mohammed and his first successors took a form more

or less fixed. Soon divers fathers of Islam began to assist memory by making notes, and their disciples sought to take written jottings of what they had heard from them, which they could carry with them when they returned to their homes. Thus by the close of the Ist century many dictata were already in circu- lation. For example, Hasan of Basra (d. 110 a.u.; 728 A.D.) had a great mass of such notes, and he was accused of some- times passing off as oral tradition things he had really drawn from books ; for oral tradition was still the one recognized authority, and it is related of more than one old scholar, and even of Hasan of Basra himself, that he directed his books to be burned at his death. The books were mere helps, and what they knew these scholars had handed on by word of mouth. Long after this date, when all scholars drew mainly from books, the old forms were still kept up. Tabari, for example, when he cites a book expresses himself as if he had heard what he quotes from the master with whom he read the passage or from whose copy he tran- scribed it. He even expresses himself in this wise: ‘Omar b. Shabba has related to me in his book on the history of Basra.”

Mistorians before Tabari.

Naturally, then, no independent book of the Ist century from the Flight has come down tous. But in the 2d cen- tury real books began to be composed. The materials were supplied in the first place by oral tradition, in the second by the dictata of older scholars, and finally by various kinds of documents, such as treaties, letters, collec- tions of poetry, and genealogical lists. Genealogical studies had become necessary through “Omar’s system of assigning state pensions to certain classes of persons according to

their kinship with the Prophet, or their deserts during his lifetime. This subject received much attention even in the Ist century, but books about it were first written in the 2d, the most famous being those of Ibn al-Kalbi (d. 146 4.4.), of his son Hisham? (d. 204), and of Al-Sharki ibn al-Kotami. Genealogy, which often called for elucidations, led on to history. Belddhort’s excellent Ansdb al-Ashraf (Genealogies of the Nobles) is a history of the Arabs on a genealogical plan.

The oldest extant history is the biography of the Prophet by Ibn Ishak (d. 150). This work is generally trustworthy. Mohammed’s life before he

appeared as a prophet and the story of his ancestors are indeed mixed -with many fables illustrated by spurious verses. But in Ibn Ishak's day these fables were generally accepted as history—for many of them had been first related by contemporaries of Mohammed— and no one certainly thought it blameworthy to put pious verses in the mouth of the Prophet's forefathers, though, according to the /hrist (p. 92), Ibn Ishak was duved by others with regard to the poems he quotes.

The Life of the Prophet by Ibn 'Okba (d. 141), based on the statements of two very trustworthy men, "Orwa ibn az-Zobair (d. 94) and Az-Zohri (d.124), seems to be quite lost, Sprenger having vainly made every effort to find a copy. It was still much read in Syria in the 14th century. But we fortunately possess the Book of the Campaigns of the Prophet by Al-Wakidi (d. 207) and the important Book of Classes of his disciple Ibn Sa'd.2 Wakidi had much more copious materials than Ibn Ishak, but gives way much more to a popular and sometimes romancing style of treatment. Nevertheless he sometimes helps us to re- cognize in Ibn Ishak's narrative modifications of the genuine tradition made for a purpose, and the additional details he supplies set various events before us in a clearer light. Apart from this his chief merits lie im his studies on the subject of the traditional authorities, the results of which are given by Ibn Sa'd, and in his chronology, which is often excellent. A special study of the traditions about the conquest of Syria made by De Goeje in 1864 led to the conclusion that Wakidi's chronology is sound as regards the main events, and that later historians have gone astray by forsaking his guidance. This result has been confirmed by certain contemporary notices found by Néldeke in 1874 in a Syriac MS. of the British Museum. And that Ibn Ishak agrees with Wakidi in certain main dates is import- ant evidence for the trustworthiness of the former also. For the chronology before the year 10 of the Flight Wakidi did his best, but here, the material being defective, many of his conclusions are precarious. Yet, though we have good ground for doubts, we are seldom able to construct a better chronology. Wakidi had already a great library at his disposal. He is said to have had 600 chests of books, chiefly dectata written by or for himself, but in part real books by Abt Mikhnaf (d. 130), Ibn Ishak (whom he uses but does not name), 'Awana (d. 147), and other authors. Abu Mikhnaf left a great number of monographs on the chief events from the death of the Prophet to the caliphate of Walid II. These

were much used by later writers, and we have many extracts from them, but none of the works themselves, except a sort of romance based on his account of the death of Hosain, of which Wiistenfeld has given a

1 Of Hisham b. al-Kalbi's book there are copies in the British Museum and in the Escorial.

2 Ibn Ishak's original work seems to be still extant in the Kopriilii library at Constantinople; the edition of it by Ibn Hisham has been edited by Wiistenfeld (Gottingen, 1858-60) and translated into German by Weil (Stuttgart, 1864).

8 'Wakidi has been edited from an imperfect MS. by Kremer (Cal- cutta, 1856). A condensed translation by Wellhausen appeared in 1882. The great book of Ibn Sa'd is unpublished, but there are some useful papers on it by Loth.

translation. With regard to the history of 'Irak in par- ticular he was deemed to have the best lights, and for this subject he is Tabart's chief source, just as Madain{, a younger contemporary of Wakidt, is followed by preference in all that relates to Khorasan. Madaint's History of the Caliphs is the best if not the oldest published before Tabart ; but this book has quite disappeared and is known only by the excerpts given by later writers, particularly Beladhori and Tabari. From these we judge that he had great narrative power with much clear and exact learning, and must be placed high as a critical historian. His plan was

to record the various traditions about an event, choosing

them with critical skill; sometimes, however, he fused the several traditions into a continuous narrative. A just estimate of the relative value of the historians can only be reached by careful comparison in detail. This has been essayed by Briinnow in his study on the Kharijites (Ley- den, 1884), in which the narrative of Mobarrad in the Kamil is compared with the excerpts of Madaint given by Beladhorf and those of Abt Mikhnaf given by

Tabart. The conclusion reached is that Abi Mikhnaf and Madéini are both well informed and impartial.

Among the contemporaries of Wakidi and Madaint were Ibn Khidash (d. 223), the historian of the family Mohallab, whose work was one of Mobarrad's sources for the History of the Khdriites ; Haitham ibn 'Adi (d. 207), whose works, though now lost, are often cited; and Saif ibn 'Omar at-Tamim{, whose book on the revolt of the tribes under Abu- bekr and on the Mohammedan conquests was much used by Tabari. Saif, however, seems to have been little es- teemed ; Beladhor{ very seldom cites him, and nothing can be found in Arabic literature about his life and those of his authorities. He is barely mentioned in the J%hrist, the writer plainly having nothing to tell of him, and blundering in the one thing he does say by representing his disciple Sho'aib as his master. Hajji Khalifa knows nothing but his name. His narratives are detailed and

often tinged with romance, and he is certainly much in-

ferior to Wakid{ in accuracy. Besides these are to be mentioned Abu 'Obaida (d. 209), who was celebrated as a philologist and wrote several historical monographs that

are often cited, and Azraki, whose excellent History of

Mecca was published after his death by his grandson (d. 244). With these writers we pass into the 3d century of Islam. But we have still an important point to notice in the 2d century; for in it learned Persians began to take part in the creation of Arabic historical literature. Ibn Mokaffa' translated the great Book of Persian Kings, and others followed his example. Tabari and his contem- poraries, senior and junior, such as Ibn Kotaiba, Ya'kubi, Dinawarf, preserve to us a good part of the information about Persian history made known through such transla- tions.1 But even more important than the knowledge conveyed by these works was their influence on literary style and composition. Half a century later began versions from the Greek either direct or through the Syriac. The pieces translated were mostly philosophical; but the Arabs also learned something, however superficially, of ancient history.

The 3d century was far more productive than the 2d. Abu “Obaida was presently succeeded by Ibn al-A‘rAbi (d. 231), who in like manner was chiefly famous as a philologist, and who wrote about ancient poems and battles. Much that he wrote is quoted in Tabrizi’s commentary on the //amdsa, which is still richer in extracts from the historical elucidations of early poems given by Ar-Riyashf (d. 257). Of special fame as a genealogist was Ibn Habib

1 For details see the introduction to Néldeke’s excellent translation

of Tabari’s History of the Persians and Arabs in the Sasanian Period, Leyden, 1879.

(d. 245), of whom we have a booklet on Arabian tribal names published by Wiistenfeld (1850). Azraki again was followed by Fakihi, who wrote a History of Mecca in 272,2 and “Omar b. Shabba (d. 262), who composed an excellent history of Basra, known to us only by excerpts. Of the works of Zobair b. Bakkar (d. 256), one of Tabart’s teachers, a learned historian and genealogist much consulted by later writers, there is a fragment in the Képriilii library at Con- stantinople, and another in Géttingen, part of which has been made known by Wiistenfeld (Die Familie Al-Zobair, Gottingen, 1878). Ya’kubi or Ibn Waédih wrote a short general history of much value, published by Houtsma (Ley- den, 1883). About India he knows more than his prede- cessors and more than his successors down to Bérunt. Ibn Khordadbeh’s historical works are lost. Ibn ‘Abdalhakam (d. 257) wrote of the conquest of Egypt and the West. Extracts from this book are given by De Slane in his Histoire des Berbéres, and others by Karle and Jones, from which we gather that it was a medley of true tradition and romance, and must be reckoned, with the book of his slightly senior contemporary, the Spaniard Ibn Habtb, to the class of historical romances (see below, p. 5). A high place must be assigned to the historian Ibn Kotaiba (d. 276), who, as Rosen has well shown, wrote a series of books with a view to raising the scholarship of the large class of hétibs or official scribes. To this series belong his very useful Handbook of History (ed. Wistenfeld, Géttingen, 1850) and his ‘Oydin al-Akhbdr, though the latter book according to the arrangement falls rather under the class of Mitterzx humaniores. Much more eminent is Belddhort (d. 279), whose book on the Arab conquest (ed.

De Goeje, Leyden, 1865-66) merits the special praise given to it by Mas‘udi, Of his great Ansdb al-Ashrdf a large part exists at Paris in the valuable collection of M. Schefer and another part was published by Ahlwardt in 1884. A contemporary, Ibn abi Tahir Taifur (d. 280), wrote on the ‘Abbasid caliphs and was drawn on by Tabarf. The sixth part of his work is in the British Museum. Of the universal history of Dinawari (d. 282), entitled The Long Narratives, an edition by Girgas is now (1887) in the press.

Tabari.

All these histories are more or less thrown into the shade by the great work of Tabari, whose fame has never faded from his own day to ours, and who well deserves to have this article on early Arabic histories placed under his name. Abt Ja‘far Mohammed b. Jarir at-Tabari (so his full name runs) is described as a tall lean figure, with large eyes, brown complexion, and hair which remained black till his death. His learning was astounding and few could speak so well. Born 224 a.H. (838-9 a.p.) at Amol in Tabaristan, he came to Baghdad as a young man and heard there the most famous teachers of the age. He travelled through Syria and Egypt (where he was in 263), and finally settled down in Baghdad, where he remained till his death in 310 (922 a.p.), always active and surrounded by pupils. He is said to have written forty pages daily for forty years. This no doubt is an exaggeration, but certainly he must have been a man of most persistent industry. His two chief works are a great Commentary on the Koran and his Annals. There is an anecdote to the effect that each originally filled 30,000 leaves, but that his pupils found them too extensive to be written to his dictation, and that he then resolved to condense them to a tenth of their original size, exclaiming, “God help us! Ambition is extinct.” One cannot say how far tliis story is true, but it is probable enough that his materials, at least for the Annals, were many times greater than the book itself.

? Published in excerpt by Wiistenfeld along with Azraki, Leipsic,

1857-59.

Where the same topic comes up in the Annals and in the Commentary we often find different traditions quoted, or the same tradition derived through different channels, and this shows the copious variety of his sources. Various parts of the Annals give the impression of being condensed. The Commentary was published before the Annals, and is better composed. It is the head corner-stone of Koran exegesis, as the Annals are of historiography. It came into general use mainly through the abridgment of Baghawi in the beginning of the 6th century of the Flight, being itself too large to be much read. The great book exists complete in the viceregal library at Cairo, and ought to be pub- lished at once.}

The Annals are a general history from the creation to 302 A.H., and are in the course of publicationat Leyden. They will fill some 7000 to 7500 pages, one and a half printed pages corresponding roughly to one leaf of Tabari's original MS. Tabarf added a supplement about his authorities, an abridgment of which is to follow the Leyden edition. It contains biographical notices of traditionalists, contempo- raries of Mohammed, and their successors to the second half of the 2d century.2_ Other works by Tabar{ will be spoken of in detail in the preface to the Leyden edition.

The success of the Annals and Commentary was due above all to the author's personality. The respect paid to him by his contemporaries appears in various anecdotes preserved in lus biography. His pupils had an unbounded admiration for his extraordinary knowledge, and what he said seemed to them the best that could be said. In truth, both his great works were the best of their kind, especially the Commentary, which, in the judgment of ail impartial critics, has not been equalled, before or since, in complete- ness, learning, and independent judgment. A contempo- rary says that "it would be worth a journey to China to procure the book." So general was this view that the opinion of 'Tabarf was quoted as a legal authority.

The inferiority of the Annals as a literary composition may be due partly to the author's years, partly to the in- equality of his sources, sometimes superabundant, some- times defective, partly perhaps to the somewhat hasty condensation of his original draft. Nevertheless the value of the book is very great: the author's selection of tradi- tions is usually happy, and the episodes of most import- ance are treated with most fulness of detail, so that

it deserves the high reputation it has enjoyed from the first. This reputation rose steadily; there were twenty copies (one of them written by Tabari's own hand) in the library of the Fatimite caliph 'Aziz (latter half of the 4th cen- tury), whereas, when Saladin became lord of Egypt, the princely library contained 1200 copies (Makrizi, i. 408 sq.). Only princes and rich men could own a_ book which in the time of 'Az{z cost one hundred dinars. We know that it had a place in most great libraries in other countries, for we find that it was used in all lands. Thus the fact that no complete copy can now be found any- where, and that the Leyden edition rests on odd volumes lying in various places, gives a striking image of what the East has suffered from barbarism.

The Annals soon came to be dealt with in various ways. They were published in shorter form with the omission of the names of authorities and of most of the poems cited ; some passages quoted by later writers are not found even in the Leyden edition. On the other hand, some interpola- tions took place, one in the author's lifetime and perhaps by his own hand. Then many supplements were written, e.g., by Ferghan{ (not extant) and by Hamadhant (partly preserved in Paris). 'Arib of Cordova made an abridg-

- See the excellent article by Loth in Z.D.IL@., xxxv. 588 sq.
- The MS. containing this abridgment is deseribed by Loth in 4.0,.M.G., xxxii, 581 sg. It is now in the British Museum.

ment, adding the history of the West and continuing the story to about 365.3 Ibn Mashkawaih wrote a history from the creation to 369 a.H., with the purpose of draw- ing the lessons of the story, following Tabart closely, as far as his book is known, and seldom recurring to other sources before the reign of Moktadir ; what follows is his own composition, and shows him to be a writer of talent.+ In 352 an abridgment of the Annals was translated into Persian by Bal'am{, who, however, interwove many fables.® Ibn al-Athir (d. 630) abridged the whole work, usually with judgment, but sometimes too hastily. Though he sometimes glided lightly over difficulties, his work is of service in fixing the text of Tabarf. He also furnished a continuation to the year 620. Later writers took Tabari as their main authority, but fortunately sometimes con- sulted other sources, and so add to our knowledge,— especially Ibn al-Jauzi (d. 597), who adds many

important details. These later historians had valuable help from the biographies of famous men and special histories of countries and cities, dynasties and princes, on which much labour was spent from the 4th century onwards.

Historians after Tabart.

The ehief historians after Tabarf may be briefly mentioned in chronologieal order. Razi (d. 825) wrote a History of Spain; Euty- ehius (d, 828) wrote Annals (published by Poeock, Oxford, 1656), whieh are very important beeause he gives the Christian tradition ; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbihi (d. 328) has very valuable historical passages in his famous miscellany called Al-‘Ikd al-Farid (8 vols., Cairo, 1298 A.H.); Sult (d. 835) wrote on the ‘Abbasid caliphs, their viziers and eourt poets; Mas‘tdt (see Mas‘tpy) composed various historieal and geographical works (d. 345). Of Tabari’s pet leet Hamza Is- pahani we have the Annals (published by Gottwaldt, St. Petersburg, 1844); Abu ‘l-Fara} al: Ispahani (d. 856) in his Book of Songs (Kitab al- Aghdnt, 20 vols., Cairo, 1285) gave the lives of poets whose songs were sung ; Ibn al-Kutiya (d. 367) wrote a History of Spain; Ibn Zulak (d. 887) a History of Egypt; ‘Otbi wrote the History of Mah- mud of Ghaznu (d. 421), at whose court he lived (printed on the margin of the Egyptian edition of Ibn al-Athir); Tha‘labi (d. 427) wrote a well-known History of the Old Prophets; Abi No‘aim al- Ispahant (d. 480) wrote a History of Ispahan, chicfly of the scholars of that eity; Tha‘alibi (d. 429 or 480) wrote, inter alia, a well- known History of the Pocts of his Time, now (1887) in course of publication at Damaseus. Bertini (d. 440) takes a high place aniong historians by his Chronology of Ancient Nations (ed. Sachau, Leipsie, 1878; Eng. trans., London, 1879) and his contributions to the history of India and Khwarizm; Koda’t (d. 454) wrote a De- scription of Egypt aud also various historical pieees, of which some are extant; Ibn Sa‘id of Cordova (d. 462) wrote a View of the History of the Varions Nations. Baghdad and its learned men found an exeellent historian in Al-Khatib al-Baghdadi (d. 468), and Spain in Ibn Haydn (d. 469), and half a century later in Ibn Khakan (d. 529) and Ibn Bassam (d. 542). Sam ‘ani (d. 562) wrote an exeellent book on genealogies; Ibn ‘Asdkir (d. 571) a History of Damaseus and her Scholars, which is of great value, and exists in whole or in part in several libraries. The Biographical Dictionary of the Spaniard

Ibu Pasenal (d. 578) and that of Dabbi, a some- what Junior contemporary, are edited in Codera's Bibliotheca Arab. Hisp, (1883-1885); Saladin found his historian in the famous 'Imad addin (d. 597). Ibn al-Jauzi, who died in the same year, has been already mentioned. Abdalwithid's Zistory of the Almo- hades, written in 621, was published by Dozy (2d ed., 1881). The geographer Yakut (d. 626) wrote also some historieal works, now lost, Abdallatif (d. 629) is known by his writings about Egypt (trans. De Saey, 1810); Ibn al-Athir (d. 680) wrote, in addition to the Chronicle already mentioned, a Biographical Diettonary of Con- temporartes of the Prophet. Kifti (d. 646) is espeeially known by his History of Arabic Philologists. Sibt ibn al-Jauzt (d. 654), grand- sou of the Ibn al-Jauzi already mentioned, wrote a great Chronicle, of which mueh the larger part still exists, Codera has edited (Madrid, 1886) Ibn al-'Abbar's (d. 658) Biographical Lemicon, al-

ready known by Dozy's exeerpts from it. Ibn al-'Adim (d. 660) is

? Of this work the Gotha library has a portion containing 290-820 A.H., of whieh the part about the West has been printed by Dozy in the Bayan, and the rest is to be published at Leyden.

4 A fragment (198-251 a.H.) is printed in De Goeje, Fragm. Hist. Ar., vol. ii., Leyden, 1871. Schefer possesses an exeellent MS. of the years 249-315 ; Oxford has another fragment, 345-360 a.H.; the seeond part is in the Eseorial.

® The first part was rendered into French by Dubeux in 1836. We have now an excellent Freneh translation by Zotenberg, 1874.

famed for his History of Aleppo, and Abi Shama (d. 665) wrote a well-known History of Saladin and Nureddin, taking a great deal from 'Imad addin, A. Miiller has recently published (1885) Ibn abi Osaibia's (d. 668) History of Physicians. The History of Ibn al-'Amid (d. 675), better known as ELMACIN (q.v.), was printed by Erpenius in 1625. Ibn Sa'id al-Maghribi (d. 673 or 685) is famous for his histories, but still more for his geographical writings. 'The noted theologian Nawawi (q.v.; d. 676) wrote a

Biographical Dictionary of the Worthies of the First Ages of Islam. Pre-cminent as a biographer is Ibn Khallikan (d. 681), whose much-used work was partly edited by De Slane and completely by Wiistenfeld (1835- 40), and translated into English by the former scholar (4 vols.,

1843-71),

Abu Panay, better known as Bar-Hebreus (d. 685), wrote besides his Syriac Chronicle an Arabic History of Dynasties (ed. Pocock, Oxford, 1663). Ibn‘Adhart’s History of Africa and Spain has been published by Dozy (2 vols., Leyden, 1848-51), and the Kartds of Ibn abi Zar’ by Tornberg (1848). Arab writers is Abulfeda (d. 732), whose Annales Muslemicx were published with a Latin version by Reiske (Copenhagen, 5 vols. 4to,

1789-94),

published by Fleischer (1831). Not less famous is the great

Encyclopxdia of his contemporary Nowairi (d. 732), but only some Ibn Sayyid an-Nas (d. 784) wrote a

extracts arc as yet in print. full biography of the Prophet ; Mizzi (d. 742) an extensive work on the men from whom traditions have been derived. We still possess, nearly complete, the great Chronicle of Dhahabt (d. 748), a very learned biographer and historian. the geographical and historical Masdlik al-Absdr of Ibn Fadlalléh (d. 749) is much to be desired. It is known at present by extracts given by Quatremére and Amari. Ibn al-Wardt (d. 749 or 750),

best known by his Cosmography, wrote a Chronicle which has been

Safadi (d. 764) got a great name as a bio-

printed in Egypt. grapher,

Shdfi’ite School. Of Ibn Kathir’s History the greatest part is ex-

tant. For the history of Spain and the Maghrib the writings of

Tbn al-Khatib (d. 776) are of acknowledged value. Another history, of which we possess the greater part, is the large work of Ibn al- Forat (d. 807).

Slane (1868). of the History of the Berbers, and there is a poor Egyptian edition of the whole work. grapher Firtizabddi (d. 817) only a Life of the Prophet remains.

Maxnizi (d. 845) is spoken of in a separate article; Ibn Hajar

(d, 852) is best_ known by his Biographical Dictionary of Contem- poraries of the Prophet, now in course of publication in the Biblio- theea Indica. Timur (Leeuwarden, 1767). ‘Aint (d. 855) wrote a General History, stillextant. Abu ’l-Mahdsin (d. 874) wrote at length on the history of Egypt; the first two parts have been published by Juynboll. Fliigel Jurists. Ibn Shihna (d. 890) wrote a History of Aleppo. Of Sa- khawi we possess a bibliographical work on the historians. The polymath Soyiti (d. 911) contributed a History of the Caliphs and many biographical pieces. Samhidt’s History of Medina is known through the excerpts of Wiistenfeld (1861). Ibn Iyds (d. 930) wrote a History of Egypt, and Diyarbekri (d. 966) a Life of Mo- hammed. To these names must be added MAKKARI (q.v.) and Hajji Khalifa, the famous Turkish bibliographer (d. 1068), who, besides his Bibliographical Lexicon and his well-known geography, the Jihdn-nwma, wrote histories, mostly in Turkish. He made use of European sources, and with him Arabic historiography may be said to cease, though he had some unimportant successors.

A word must be said of the historical romances, the beginnings of which go back to the first centuries of Islam. The interest in all that concerned Mohammed and in the allusions of the Koran to old prophets and races led many professional narrators to choose these subjects in place of the doughty deeds of the Bedouins. The increasing veneration paid to the Prophet and love for the marvellous soon gave rise to fables about his childhood, his visit to heaven, &c., which have found their way even into sober his- tories, just as many Jewish legends told by the converted Jew Ka”b al-Ahbar and by Wahb ibn Monabbih, and many fables about the old princes of Yemen told by ‘Abid, are taken as genuine history (see, however, Mas‘tidi, iv. 88 sq.). A fresh field for romantic legend was found in the history of the

victories of Islam, the exploits of the first heroes of the faith, the fortunes of ‘Ali and his house. Even under the first Omayyads there were in the mosques of most great cities preachers who edified the people by stories about Islam and its victories, and there is ample evidence that these men did not stick to actual fact. Sho’ba said of them ‘they get from us a handbreadth of tradition and make it an ell.” Then, too, history was often expressly forged for party ends,

One of the best known of

The History of the Time before Mohammed has been

A complete edition of

Yati’l (d. 768) wrote a Chronicle of Islam and Lives of Saints. Sobki (d. 771) published Lives of the Theologians of the

Far superior to all these, however, is the famous Ibn Khaldtin (d. 808), who proves himself a great thinker in the Prolegomena to his Universal History. Of the Prolegomena there are an edition by Quatremére (1858) and a French version by De The latter scholar also published text and version

Of the historical works of the famous lexico-

Ibn ‘Arabshah (d. 854) is known by his History of

as published Ibn Kotlubogha’s Biographies of the Hanafite

The ‘people swallowed all this, and so a romantic tradition sprang up side by side with the historical, and had a literature of its own,

the beginnings of which must be placed as early as the second century of the Flight. The oldest samples still extant are the

fables about the conquest of Spain ascribed to Ibn Habib (d. 288),

and those about the conquest of Egypt and the’ West by Ibn

‘Abdalhakam (d. 257). In these truth and falsehood are mingled,

as Dozy has shown in his Recherehes. But most of the extant literature of this kind is, in its present form, much more recent; e.g., the Story of the Death of Hosain by the Pseudo-Abi Mikhnaf (translated by Wiistenfeld) ; the Conquest of Syria by Abu Isma‘i] al-Bagri (edited by Nassau Lees, Calcutta, 1854, and discussed by De Goeje, 1864) ; the Psendo- Wakidi (sce Hamaker, De Expug- natione Memphidis ct Alexandriz, Leyden, 1885) ; the Pseudo-Ibn Kotaiba (see Dozy, Recherches) ; the book ascribed to A‘sam Kiufi,

&e. Further inquiry into the origin of these works is called for, but some of them were plainly directed to stir up fresh zeal against the Christians. In the 6th century some of these books had gained so much authority that they were used as sources, and thus mally un- truths crept into accepted history. (M. J. DEG.)

TABERNACLE, the portable sanctuary of Israel in the wilderness wanderings. Critical analysis of the PENTA- TEUCH (.v.) teaches us to draw a sharp line between the old notices of the tabernacle contained in the pre-Deutero- nomic history book (JE) and the account given by the post-exilic priestly narrator. The latter throws back into the time of Moses the whole scheme of worship and ritual of which the second temple was the centre, and, as this scheme necessarily implies the existence of an elaborate sanctuary on the pattern of the temple, he describes a tabernacle of extraordinary splendour pitched in the middle of the camp, with an outer and inner chamber and a court- yard, and all the apparatus of sacrificial and atoning ritual, just as in the temple, only constructed of boards, posts, and curtains so that it could be taken down and moved from place to place. The whole description is ideal, as appears not only from the details but from the fact that the old history knows nothing of such a structure. The Chronicler indeed, who had before him the Pentateuch in its present shape, assumes that after the Israclites entered Canaan the tabernacle continued to be the one legitimate place of sacrifice until it was superseded by Solomon’s temple, and represents it ag standing at Gibeon in the days of David and his son (1 Chron. xxi. 29 sg.; 2 Chron. i, 3). But the book of Kings knows Gibeon only as “the greatest high place” (1 Kings iii. 4).1

Again, the tabernacle of the Priestly Code is pre-emi- nently the sanctuary of the ark, bearing the name mishkan haedith, “the tabernacle of the testimony,” ¢.¢., the habit- ation in which lay “the ark of the testimony ” or chest containing the stones on which the decalogue was inscribed. But between Joshua’s days and the building of the temple the ark migrated from one tent or habitation to another (2 Sam. vii. 6; 1 Chron. xvii. 5), and at Shiloh it was housed not ina tent but ina temple (1 Sam. iii. 3, 15), And, while in the Priestly Code the tabernacle is the only legitimate sanctuary and its priests are the only legitimate priests, the whole history shows that no such restriction was even thought of till after the time of the prophet Isaiah.

With all this it agrees that the oldest parts of the Penta- teuch speak indeed of a tabernacle, but one of a quite different kind. The tabernacle of the Elohist (for of the two narratives—Elohistic and Jahvistic—which are com- bined in the so-called Jehovistic history only the former seems to mention it) isa tent which Moses pitched outside the camp (Exod. xxxiii. 7 sq.), and where Jehovah was wont to reveal Himself to him in the pillar of cloud, which descended for the purpose and stood at the door (Num. xi. 25; xii.5; xiv. 10); it is therefore called dhel mo‘éd, “the

1 Two passages in the old history, which comprises the books of Judges, Samuel, and Kings, speak of the tabernacle (dhel ma‘éd); but external and internal evidence show them to be interpolated (1 Sam. il, 22; 1 Kings viii. 4).

tent of tryst.” No description of it is given, nor is its origin spoken of, but something of the old narrative has obviously been lost before Exod. xxxiii. 7, and here what is lacking was probably explained. It appears, however, that it was very different from the tabernacle described by the priestly narrator. It was not in the centre of the camp but stood some distance outside it,! and it was not the seat of an elaborate organization of priests and guarded by a host of Levites, but had a single minister and custo- dian, viz., Joshua, who was not a Levite at all but Moses’ attendant (Exod. xxxiii. 11).

The existence of such a simple tent sanctuary presents none of the difficulties that beset the priestly narrative. Portable shrines were familiar to Semitic antiquity, and tents as sanctuaries were known to the Israelites in much later times at the high places and in connexion with irre- gular worships (Ezek. xvi. 16, “thou didst take of thy garments and madest for thyself sewn high places,” 2.e., shrines of curtains sewn together; 2 Kings xxiii. 7, where for “hangings for the grove” read “tents for the Ashera”; comp. Hos. ix. 6 and Syriac prakk, Assyrian parakku, a small chapel or shrine, from ‘the same root as Hebrew paroketh, the vail of the Holy of Holies). Such idolatrous tabernacles were probably relics of the usages of the nomadic Semites, and it is only natural that Israel in its wanderings should have had the like. And it is note- worthy that the portable chapels of the heathen Semites were mainly used for divination (comp. Journ. of Philol., Xili. 283 sq.), just as the Mosaic tabernacle is described by the Elohist not as a place of sacrifice (such as the tabernacle of the Priestly Code is) but as a place. of oracle.

The heathen shrines of this sort contained portable idols or baetylia (see Selden, De Dits Syrits, i. 6); but what the Mosaic tabernacle contained is not expressly told. The ordinary and seemingly the easiest assumption is that the ark stood in it, and Deut. x. 1 sg., which must be drawn from the lost part of the older narrative already alluded to, certainly places the construction of the ark, to contain the tables of stone, just before the time when the taber- nacle is first mentioned by the Elohist. But neither in Deuteronomy nor before it are the ark and the tabernacle ever mentioned together, and of the two old narrators it is not clear that the Jahvist ever mentions the tabernacle or the Elohist the ark. The relation between the two calls for further investigation, especially as the ark retains its importance after the occupation of Canaan, while the “tent of tryst” is not mentioned after the time of Moses, who, according to the Elohist (Exod. xii.), enjoyed at it a privilege of direct access to the Deity not accorded to later prophets.

TABERNACLES, Feast or. The original character of this Hebrew feast, celebrated at the close of the agri- cultural year as a thanksgiving for the produce of the seasons, but especially for the vintage and olive harvest, has been explained in PenrargvcH, vol. xviii. p. 511. As such it is described in the old law of Exod. xxiii. 16, under the name of “the feast of ingathering,

at the end of the year” (which, in the old Hebrew calendar, ran from autumn to autumn), “when thou hast gathered in thy labours out of the field” (comp. Exod. xxxiv. 22). The same feast is spoken of in Deut. xvi. 13 as “the feast of booths” (E.V. “tabernacles,” whence the current name of the feast), when “thou hast gathered in thy corn and wine” from the corn-floor and the wine-press. No ex- planation is here given of the name “feast of booths”; but after the exile it was understood that during this feast the people assembled at Jerusalem were to live in

1 In old Israel the sanctuary, after the people had settled down in cities, usually stood outside the town, and this was the case even with the temple at Jerusalem when it was first built.

booths constructed of branches of trees (Lev. xxiii. 39 sq.; Neh. viii. 14 sg.). The passage in Nehemiah, describing the celebration of the feast in 444 B.c., serves as a com- mentary on the post-exilic law in Leviticus, and from it we learn that the use of booths on that occasion had no foundation in traditional usage, but was based directly on the law, which then for the first time became generally known.? According to the law in question, the booths were to be a memorial of the wilderness wandering (Lev. xxi. 43), but of this there is no hint in Deuteronomy ; and, while it is quite in the style of the later law to attach a new historical reference to an old name like ‘feast of booths,” it is certain from Exodus that the feast had originally agricultural and not historical significance. As such it is exactly parallel to the vintage feasts of other ancient nations, e.g., to the Athenian Oschophoria. And, in particular, it is noteworthy that in Judges ix. 27 we find a vintage feast at Shechem among the Canaanites, from whom the Israelites first learned the ways of agri- cultural life, and from whom so much of the popular religion was copied. To acts of worship nominally ad- dressed to Jehovah, but really to the Canaanite Baalim, Hosea expressly reckons rites celebrated “on all corn- floors” (ix. 1), expressing thanks for divine gifts of corn, wine, and oil (ii. 8 sz.), and in their context these allusions leave no doubt that the prophet refers, in part at least, to autumn feasts, in which Jehovah worship was mingled with Canaanite elements (comp. Wellhausen, Prol. zur Gesch, Isr., cap. 3, ii; Eng, trans., p. 92 sq.). These feasts were local in character, but in northern Israel there was a great autumn feast at the royal sanctuary at Bethel (1 Kings xii. 33), as even in

the days of Solomon there was such a feast at Jerusalem (1 Kings viii. 2). In the nature of things the local feasts were the older, and it was the fame of great shrines that gradually tended to draw worshippers from a distance to temples like those of Jerusalem and Bethel. Finally, the Deuteronomic law of the one sanctuary and the course of events which made that law the practical rule of the remnant of Israel put an end to all local religious feasts, but at the same time obscured the old significance of the festal cycle, and made room for the historical interpretation of the celebrations, now concentrated at the temple, which prevailed among the later Jews (comp. Passover and PsnTEcost). In their later form all the yearly feasts have exact times and rules. In Deuteronomy the autunin feast is not yet tied toa day—it could hardly be so while it was still essentially a harvest thanksgiving—but in the priestly legislation it is fixed to commence on the fifteenth day of the seventh month (Ley. xxiii. 34). In Deuteronomy the feast lasts seven days; Lev. xxiii. 36 adds an eighth, and this day ultimately became the most important (John vii. 37).

If we accept the conclusion that the autumn festival was origin- ally a vintage feast celebrated in local sanctuaries, the name ‘“feast of booths” admits of a natural explanation. The Canaan- ite feast at Shechem and the Hebrew feast at Shiloh (Judges xxi. 21) were partly celebrated abroad in the vineyards, and Hosea also knows such feasts on the open corn-floors. That it was usual to go forth and live in booths during the vintage may be concluded from Isa.i.8; the same practice still prevails at Hebron (Robinson, Bibl. Res., ii. 81). If it was these booths erected among the vine- yards that originally gave their name to the feast, we can under- stand how the book of Nehemiah recognizes the crection of booths within the city of Jerusalem as an innovation. No doubt at all feasts where there was a great concourse of visitors many would be compelled to live in tents ; this secms to have been the case even in old Israel (Hos. xii. 9). But that is quite a different thing from the latcr observance, in which booths or bowers had to be made and used even by those who had houses of their own.

- The expression that the Israelites had not done so since the days of Joshua means that there was no recollection of their having ever done so; for of course it is assumed that Joshua carried out every direction of the law.

tbles.

TABLES i

TABLES, Maruematican. In any table the results tabulated are termed the “tabular results” or “respond- ents,” and the corresponding numbers by which the table is entered are termed the “arguments.” A table is said to be of single or double entry according as there are one or two arguments. For example, a table of logarithms is a table of single entry, the numbers being the arguments and the logarithms the tabular results ; an ordinary multiplication table is a table of double entry, giving xy as tabular result for x and y as arguments. The intrinsic value of a table

jelue of may be estimated by the actual amount of time saved by

consulting it ; for example, a table of square roots to ten decimals is more valuable than a table of squares, as the extraction of the root would occupy more time than the multiplication of the number by itself. The value of a table does not depend upon the difficulty of calculating it; for, once made, it is made for ever, and as far as the user is concerned the amount of labour devoted to its original construction is immaterial. In some tables the labour re- quired in the construction is the same as if all the tabular results had been calculated separately; but in the majority of instances a table can be formed by expeditious methods which are inapplicable to the calculation of an individual result. This is the case with tables of a continuous quan- tity, which may frequently be constructed by differences. The most striking instance perhaps is afforded by a factor table or a table of primes; for, if it is required to deter- mine whether a given number is prime or not, the only available method (in the absence of tables) is to divide it by every prime less than its square root or until one is found that divides it without remainder. But to forma table of prime numbers the process is theoretically simple and rapid, for we have only to range all the numbers in a line and strike out every second beginning from two, every third beginning from three, and so on, those that remain being primes. Even when the tabular results are con- structed separately, the method of differences or other methods connecting together different tabular results may afford valuable verifications. By having recourse to tables not only does the computer save time and labour but he also obtains the certainty of accuracy; in fact, even

when the tabular results are so easy to calculate that no time or mental effort would be saved by the use of a table, the certainty of accuracy might make it advantageous to employ it.

The invention of logarithms in 1614, followed immedi- ately by the calculation of logarithmic tables, revolutionized all the methods of calculation ; and the original work per- formed by Briggs and Vlacq in calculating logarithms 260 years ago has in effect formed a portion of every arith- metical operation that has since been carried out by means of logarithms. And not only has an incredible amount of labour been saved! but a vast number of calculations and researches have been rendered practicable which otherwise would have been quite beyond human reach. The mathematical process that underlies the tabular method of obtaining a result may be indirect and complicated ; for example, the logarithmic method would be quite unsuitable for the multiplication of two numbers if the logarithms had to be calculated specially for the purpose and were not already tabulated for use. The arrangement of a table on the page and all typographical details—such as the shape of the figures, their spacing, the thickness and placing of the rules, the colour and quality of the paper,

v¢.—are of the highest importance, as the computer has

1 Referring to factor tables, Lambert wrote (Supplementa Tabularum, 1798, p. xv.): “ Universalis finis talium tabularum est ut semel pro Semper computetur quod sepius de novo computandum foret, et ut

pro omni casu computetur quod in futurum pro quovis casu compu- tatum desiderabitur.” This applies to all tables.

- 1,020,000.

to spend hours with his eyes fixed upon the book ; and the efforts of eye and brain required in finding the right numbers amidst a mass of figures on a page and in taking them out accurately, when the computer is tired as well as when he is fresh, are far more trying than the mechanical action of simple reading. Moreover, the trouble required by the computer to learn the use of a table need scarcely be considered; the important matter is the time and labour saved by it after he has learned its use. Tables are, aS a rule,

intended for professional and not amateur use ; and it is of little moment whether the user who is unfamiliar with a table has to spend ten seconds or a minute in obtaining an isolated result, provided it can be used rapidly and without risk of error by a skilled computer.

In the following descriptions of tables an attempt is made to give an account of all those that a computer of the present day is likely to use in carrying out arithmet- ical calculations. Tables of merely bibliographical or historical interest are not regarded as coming within the scope of this article, although for special reasons such tables are briefly noticed in some cases. ‘Tables relating to ordinary arithmetical operations are first described, and afterwards an account is given of the most useful and least technical of the more strictly mathematical tables, such as factorials, gamma functions, integrals, Bessel’s functions, &e, It is difficult to classify the tables de- scribed in a perfectly satisfactory manner without prolixity, as many collections contain valuable sets belonging to a variety of classes. Nearly all modern tables are stereo- typed, and in giving their titles the accompanying date is either that of the original stereotyping or of the turage in question. In tables that have passed through many editions the date given is that of the edition described. A much fuller account of general tables published previously to 1872, by the present writer, is contained in the British Association Report for 1873, pp. 1-175; and to this the reader is referred.

Lables of Divisors (Factor Tables) and Tables of Primes.—The Divisors existing factor tables extend to 9,000,000. In 1811 Chernac pub- and lished at Deventer his Cribrum Arithmeticum, which gives all the primes. prime divisors of every number not divisible by 2, 3, or 5 up to In 1814-17 Burckhardt published at Paris his Tables des Diviseurs, giving the least divisor of every number not divisible by 2, 8, or 5 up to 8,036,000. The second million was issued in 1814, the third in 1816, and the first in 1817. The corresponding tables for the seventh (in 1862), eighth (1868), and ninth (1865) mil- lions were calculated by Dase and issued at Hamburg. Dase died suddenly during the progress of the work, and it was completed by Rosenberg. Dase’s calculation was performed at the instigation of Gauss, and he began at 6,000,000 because the Berlin Academy Was in possession of a manuscript presented by Crelle extending Burckhardt’s tables from 3,000,000 to 6,000,000. This manuscript, not having been published by

1877, was found on examination to be so inaccurate that the publication was not desirable, and accordingly the three intervening millions were calculated and published by James Glaisher, the Factor Table for the Fourth Million appearing at London in 1879, and those for the fifth and sixth millions in 1880 and 1883 respectively (all three mil- lions stereotyped). The tenth million, though calculated by Dase and Rosenberg, has not been published. It is in the possession of the Berlin Academy, having been presented in 1878. The nine quarto volumes (Z'adles des Diviseurs, Paris, 1814-17; Factor Tables, London, 1879-83 ; Factoren-Tafeln, Hamburg, 1862-65) thus form one uniform table, giving the least divisor of every number not divisible by 2, 8, or 5, from unity to nine millions. The arrange- ment of the results on the page, which is due to Burckhardt, is admirable for its clearness and condensation, the least factors for 9000 numbers being given on each page. The tabular portion of each million occupies 112 pages. The first three millions were issued separately, and also bound in one volume, but the other six millions are all separate. Burckhardt began with the second million instead of the first, as Chernac's factor table for the first million was already in existence. Burckhardt's first million does not supersede Chernac's, as the latter gives all the prime divisors of numbers not divisible by 2, 3, or 5 up to 1,020,000. It occupics 1020 pages, and Burckhardt found it very accurate; he detected only thirty-eight errors, of which nine were due to the author, the remaining twenty-nine having been caused by the slipping of type

in the printing. The errata thus discovered are given in the first million. Burckhardt gives but a very brief account of the method by which he constructed his table ; and the introduction to Dase's millions merely consists of Ganss's letter suggesting their eon- struction. The Introduction to the Fourth Million (pp. 52) con- tains a full aceount of the method of construction and a history of factor tables, with a bibliography of writings on the subject. The Introduction (pp. 103) to the Sixth ALillion contains an enumeration of primes and a great number of tables relating to the distribution of primes in the whole nine millions, portions of which had

been published in the Cambridge Philosophical Proceedings and elsewhere. The factor tables which have been described greatly exeeed in both extent and accuracy any others of the same kind, the largest of which only reaches 408,000. This is the limit of Felkel's Tafel aller einfachen Faeteren (Vienna, 1776), a remark- able and extremely rare book," nearly all the copies having been de- stroyed. Vega (Zabulx, 1797) gave a table showing all the divisors of numbers not divisible by 2, 3, or 5 up to 102,000, followed by a list of primes from 102,000 to 400,313. In the earlier editions of this work there are several errors in the list, but these are no doubt corrected in Hiilsse's edition (1840). These are the largest and most convenient tables after those of Chernac. Salomon (1827) gives a factor table to 102,011, Kohler (Handbueh, 1848) all divisors up to 21,524, and Houél (Tables de Logarithmes, 1871) least divisors up to 10,841. Barlow (Tables, 1814) gives the complete resolution of every number up to 10,000 into its factors; for example, corre- sponding to 4932 we have given 2?.37.137. This table is unique so far as we know. The work also contains a list of primes up to

Tews Lie

{ MATHEMATICAL.

(Vannes, 1832), which extends to 40,000. In Merpaut's work the quarter-square is termed the "arithmone." Ludolf, who published in 1690 a table of squares to 100,000 (see next paragraph), explains in his introduction how his table may be used to effect multiplications by means of the above formula; but the earliest book on quarter- squares is Voisin, Tables des Aultiplications, ow logarithmes des nombres entiers depuis 1 jusqu'a 20,000 (Paris, 1817). By a log- arithm Voison means a quarter-square, 7@.e., he calls a a root and ja? its logarithm. On the subject of quarter-squares, &c., see the paper (already referred to) in Phil. Mag., November 1878,

Squares, Cubes, &c.—The most convenient table for general use, Squares, as well as the most extensive, is Barlow's Tables (Useful Knowledge cubes, &e.

Society, London, from the stereotyped plates of 1840), which gives squares, cubes, square roots, cube roots, and reciprocals to 10,000. The largest table of squares and cubes is Kulik, Zafeln der Quadrat- und Kubik-Zahlen (Leipsic, 1848), which gives botli as far as 100,000. ‘Two early tables also give squares as far as 100,000, viz., Maginus, Zabula Tetragonica (Venice, 1592), and Ludolf, Tetragonometria Tabularia (Amsterdain, 1690). Hutton, Tables of Products and Powers of Numbers (London, 1781), gives squares up to 25,400, cubes to 10,000, and the first ten powers of the first hundred numbers. Barlow, Alathematieal Tables (original edition, London, 1814), gives the first ten powers of the first hundred numbers. The first nine or ten powers are given in Vega, Tabulx (1797), and in Hiilsse’s edition of the same (1840), in Kohler, Handbuch (1848), and in other collections. Faa de Bruno, Caleul des Erreurs (Paris, 1869), and Miiller, Vierstellige Logarithmen (1844), give squares for use in connexion with the method of least squares. Small tables

100,103, Both these tables are omitted in the stereotyped reprint | occur frequently in books intended for engineers and practical men. of 1840. In Kees’s Cyclopxdia (1819), article ‘‘ Prime Numbers,” | Draeh (Messenger of Math., vol. vii., 1878, p. 87) has given to 33 there is a list of primes to 217,219 arranged in decades. ‘The | places the cube roots (and the cube roots of the squares) of primes Fourth Mitlion (1879) contains a list of primes up to 30,341. Qn | up to 127. Small tables of powers of 2, 3, 5, 7 occur in various the first page of the Second Million Burckhardt gives the first nine | collections. In Vega’s Tabulew (1797, and the subsequent editions,

multiples of the primes to 1423; and a smaller table of the same kind, extending only to 313, occurs in Lambert’s Supplementa. Multiplication Tables—A multiplication table is usually of double entry, the two arguments being the two factors; when so arranged it is frequently called a Pythagorean table. The largest

including Hiilsse’s) the powers of 2, 3, 5 as far as the 45th, 36th, and 27th respectively are given ; they also occur in Kohler’s Hand- buch (1848). The first 25 powers of 2,3, 5, 7 are given in Salomon, Logarithmische Tafeln

(1827). Shanks, Rectification of the Cirele (1853), gives powers of 2 up, to 2721,

Triangular Numbers.—E. de Joncourt, De Natura et Preelaro Tri- Usu Simplicissime Speciei Numerorum Trigonalium (The Hague, angular 1762), contains a table of triangular numbers up to 20,000: viz., numbers. 4n(1 +1) is given for all numbers from ~=1 to 20,000. The table occupies 224 a

Reeiprocals.—Barlow's Tables give reciprocals up to 10,000 to 9 or Reci-

10 places ; and they have been carried to ten times this extent by procals.

and most useful work is Crelle's Rechentafeln (stereotyped, Bremiker's edition, 1864), which gives in one volume all the products up to 1000 × 1000, so arranged that all the multiples of any one number appear on the same page. 'The original edition was published in 1820 and consisted of two thick octavo volumes. The second (stereotyped) edition is a convenient folio volume of 450 pages. Only one other multiplication table of the same extent has appeared,

viz., Herwart von Hohenburg's Zabulx Arithmetice Mpocbapat- pécews Universales? (Munich, 1610), on which see Napier, vol. xvii. p- 183. The invention of logarithms four years later afforded another ineans of performing multiplications, and Von Hohenburg's work never became generally known. 'The three following tables are for the multiplication of a number bya single digit. (1) Crelle, Erleichterungs-Tafel fiir jeden, der zu reehnen hat (Berlin, 1836), a work extending to 1000 pages, gives the product of a number of seven figures by a single digit, by means of a double operation

Oakes, Zable of the Reeiprocals of Numbers from 1 to 100,000 (London, 1865). This gives seven figures of the reciprocal, and is arranged like a table of seven-figure logarithms, differences being added at the side of the page. The reciproeal of a number of five figures is therefore taken out at once, and two more figures may be interpolated for as in logarithms. Picarte, Za Division réduite a une Addition (Paris, 1861), gives to ten significant figures the reciprocals of the numbers from 10,000 to 100,000,

and also the first nine multiples of these reciprocals. Small tables of reciprocals

are not common.

Tables for the Expression of Vulgar Fractions as Decimals.—Tables Vulgar of this kind have been given by Wucherer, Goodwyn, and Gauss. fractions Wucherer, Beytrige zum allgemeinern Gebrauch der Deeimalbriiche as

of entry. Hach page is divided into two tables: for example, | to multiply 93882477 by 7 we turn to page 825, and enter the right- hand table at“line 77, column 7, where we find 77339 ; we then enter the left-hand table on the same page at line 93, column 7,

Quarter- squares,

and find 656, so that the product required is 65677339. (2) Bretsehneider, Produktentafel (Hamburg aud Gotha, 1841), is some- what similar to Crelle’s table, but sinaller, the number of figures in the multiplicand being five instead of seven. (3) In Laundy, 4 Table of Products (London, 1865), the produet of any five-figure number by a single digit is given by a double arrangement. The extent of the table is the same as that of Bretschneider’s, as also is the principle, but the arrangement is different, Laundy’s table occupying only 10 pages and Bretschneider’s 99 pages. Among earlier works may be notieed Gruson, Grosses Kinmatleins von Eins bis Hunderttausend (Berlin, 1799),—a table of products up to 9×10,000. The author’s intention was to extend it to 100,000, but we believe only the first part was published. In this book there is no condensation or double arrangement; the pages are very large, each containing 125 lines. Quarter-Squares.—Multiplication may be performed by means of a table of single entry in the manner indicated by the formula— ab=}(a+b)?-4(a —b), Thus with a table of quarter-squares we can multiply together any two numbers by subtracting the quarter-square of their difference from the quarter-square of theirsum. The largest table of quarter- squares is Laundy, Zable of Quarter-Squares of all Numbers up to 100,000 (London, 1856). Smaller works are Centnerschwer, MVeu- erfundene Multiplieations- und Quadrat-Tafeln (Berlin, 1825), which extends to 20,000, and Merpaut, Tables Arithmonomiques 1 For information about it, see a paper on “ Factor

Tables," in Cumb. Phil. Proe., vol. iii. (1878) pp. 99-138, or the Introduction to the Fourth Million.

2 See a paper "On Multiplication by a Table of Single Entry," in Phil. Mag., November 1878, for a notice of this book.

(Carlsruhe, 1796), gives the decimal fractions (to 5 places) for all decimals,

vulgar fractions whose numerator and denominator are each less than 50 and prime to one another, arranged according to denomi- nators. The most extensive and elaborate tables that have been published are contained in Henry Goodwyn's First Centenary of Tables of all Decimal Quotients (London, 1816), 4A Tabular Series of Decimal Quotients (1823), and A Table of the Cireles arising from the Division of a Unit or any other Whole Number by all the Integers from Z to 1024 (1823). The Tabular Series (1823), running to 153 pages, gives to 8 places the decimal corresponding to every vulgar fraction less than 7°°, whose numerator and denominator do not surpass 1000. The arguments are not arranged according to their numerators or denominators, but according to their magnitude, so that the tabular results exhibit a steady increase from '001 (=z59) to 09989909 (=,9°;). The author intended the table to include all fractions whose numerator and denominator were each less than 1000, but no more was ever published. The Zable of Cireles (1823) gives all the periods of the circulating decimals that can arise from the division of any integer by another integer less than 1024. Thus for 13 we find 076928 and '153846, which are the only periods in which the fraction 3 can circulate. The table occupies 107

pages, some of the periods being of eourse very long (¢.g., for 1021 the period contains 1020 figures). The First Centenary (1816) gives the complete periods of the reciprocals of the numbers from 1 to 100. Goodwyn's tables are very scarce, but as they are nearly unique of their kind they deserve special notice. A second edition of the First Centenary was issued in 1818 with the addition of some of the Tabular Series, the numerator not exceeding 50 and the denomi-

MATHEMATICAL. |

nator not exceeding 100. A posthumous table of Gauss's, entitled '*Tafel zur Verwandlung gemeiner Briiche mit Nennern aus dem ersten Tausend in Decimalbriiche," occurs in vol. il, pp. 412-434 of his Gesummelte Werke (Gottingen, 1863), and resembles Goodwyn's Table of Circles. On this subject see a paper ''On Circulating Decimals, with special reference to Henry Goodwyn's Table of Circles and Tabular Series of Decimal Quotients," in Camb. Phil. Proc., vol. iii. (1878), pp. 185-206, where is also given a table of the periods of fractions corresponding to denominators prime to 10 from 1 to 1024 obtained by counting from Goodwyn's table. Sec also the section on '' Circulating Decimals," p. 13 below.

complete canon giving all the six ratios of the sides of a right-angled triangle is due to Rheticus (1551), who also introduced the semi- quadrantal arrangement. Rheticus's canon was calculated for every ten minutes to 7 places, and Vieta extended it to every minute (1579). In 1554 Reinhold published a table of tangents to every minute, The first complete canon published in England was by Blunedvile (1594), although a table of sines had appcared four years earlier. Regiomontanus called his table of tangents (or rather cotangents) tabula fecunda on account of its great usc; and till the introduction of the word "tangent" by Finck (Geometriv Rotundi Libri XIV., Basel, 1583) a table of tangents was called a tabula fecunda or canon facundus. Besides '' tangent," Finck also introduced the word ''secant," the table of secants having pre- viously been called tabula benefica by Maurolycus (1558) and tabula Sacundissima by Vieta.

By far the greatest computer of pure trigonometrical tables is George Joachim Rheticus, whose work has never been superseded. IIis celebrated ten-decimal canon, the Opus Palatinum, was pub- lished by Valentine Otho at Neustadt in 1596, and in 1613 his fiftcen-decimal table of sines by Pitiscus at Frankfort under the title Thesawrus Mathematicus. The Opus Palatinwm contains a complete ten-decimal trigonometrical canon for every ten seconds of the quadrant, semiquadrantally arranged, with differences for all the tabular results throughout. Sines, cosines, and sccants are given on the left-hand pages in columns headed respectively ''Perpendiculum," "Basis," "Hypotenusa," and on the right-hand appear tangents, cosecants, and cotangents in columns headed respectively '' Perpendiculum," '' Hypotenusa," '' Basis." At his death Rheticus left the canon nearly

complete, and the trigonometry was finished and the whole edited by Valentine Otho; it was named in honour of the elector palatine Frederick IV., who bore the ex- pense of publication. The Thesaurus of 1613 gives natural sincs

labours undertaken by Rheticus; his tables not only remain to this day the ultimate authorities but formed the data whereby Vlacq calculated his logarithmic canon. Pitiscus says that for twelve years Rheticus constantly had computers at work.

A history of trigonometrical tables by Hutton was prefixed to all the early editions of his Tables of Logarithms, and forms Tract xix. of his Mathematical Tracts, vol. i. pp. 278-306, 1812. A good deal of bibliographical information about the Opus Palatinwm and earlier trigonometrical tables is given in De Morgan's articlo '*Tables" in the English Cyclopedia. The invention of logarithms the year after the publication of Rheticus's volume by Pitiscus

xagesi- Sexagesimal and Scaccntenary Tables.—Originally all caleulations | changed all the methods of calculation ; and it is worthy of noto pl ap land were sexagesimal ; and the relics of the system still exist in the | that Napier's original table of 1614 was a logarithmic canon of sines ice cen- division of the degree into 60 minutes and the minute into 60 | and not a table of the logarithms of numbers. The logarithniic gary. ary. seconds. To facilitate interpolation, therefore, in trigonometrical | canon at once superseded the natural canon ; and since Pitiscus's and other tables the following large sexagesimal tables werc con- | time no really extensive table of pure trigonometrical functions has structed. John Bernoulli, 4 Seaxcentenary Table (London, 1779), | appeared. In recent years the employment of the arithmometer gives at once the fourth term of any proportion of which the first | of Thomas de Colmar has revived the use of tables of natural term is 600" and each of the other two is less than 600'; the | trigonometrical functions, it being found convenient for some table is of double entry, and may be more fully described as giving | purposes to employ an arithmometer and a natural canon instcad ay of a logarithmic canon. Junge's Tafel der wirklichen Linge der the value of <75 correct to

tenths of a second, x and y each con- | ginas und Cosinus (Leipsic, 1864) was published with this object. taining a number of seconds less than 600. Michael Taylor, A Scxa- | It gives natural sines and cosines for every ten seconds of the gesimal Table (London, 1780), exhibits at sight the fourth term of | quadrant ‘to 6 places. F. M. Clouth, 7 ables pour le Calcul des any proportion where the first term is 60 minutes, the second any | Coordonnées Goniométriques (Mainz, n.d.), gives natural sines and number of minutes less than 60, and the third any number of | ©osines(to 6 places) and their first nine multiples (to 4 places) for minutes and seconds under 60 minutes ; there is also another table | every centesimal minute of the quadrant. Tables of natural func- in which the third term is any absolute number under 1000. Not | tions occur in many collections, the natural and logarithmic values much use seems to have been made of these tables, both of which | being sometimes givcn on opposite pages, sometimes side by sido were published by the Commissioners of Longitude. Small tables | on the same page. : ; ' . for the conversion of sexagesimals into centesimals and vice versa The following works contain tables of trigonometrical functions ; are given in a few collections, such as Hiilsse’s edition of Vega. other than sines, cosines, and tangents. Pasquich, Tabule Log- igon) figono- Trigonometrical Tables (Natwral).—Peter Apian published in1533 | arithmico- Trigonometrice (Leipsic, 1817), contains a table of sin? , jetric} @btrical. a table of sines with the radius divided decimally. The first | cos*x, tan?x, cot?x from a=1° to 45° at intervals of 1’ to 5 places.

Andrew, Astronomical and Nautical Tables (London, 1805), con- tains a table of ‘‘squares of natural semichords,” 7.¢., of sin? 4 from x=0° to 120° at intervals of 10” to 7 places. This table has recently been greatly extended by Major-General Hannyngton in his Haversincs, Natural and Logarithinic, used in computing Lunar Distances for the Nautical Almanac (London, 1876). The namo “haversine,” now frequently used in works upon navigation, is an abbreviation of “half versed sine”; viz., the haversine of z is equal to 4(1-cos), that is, to sin’4a, The table gives logarithmic haversines for every 15” from 0° to 180°, and natural haversines for every 10” from 0° to 180°, to 7 places, except near the beginning, where the logarithms are given to only 5 or 6 places. The work itself occupies 327 folio pages, and was suggested by Andrew’s, a copy of which by chance fell into Hannyngton’s hands. Han- ee recomputed the whole of it by a partly

mechanical method, a combination of two arithmometers being employed. A table of haversines is useful for the solution of spherical triangles when two sides and the included angle are given, and in many other problems in spherical trigonometry. Andrew's original table seems to have attracted very little notice. Hannyngton's was printed, on the recommendation of the superintendent of the Nautical Almanac office, at the public cost. Before the cal- culation of Hannyngton's table Farley's Natural Versed Sines (London, 1856) was used in the Nautical Almanac office in com- puting lunar distances. This fine table contains natural versed sines from 0° to 125° at intervals of 10" to 7 places, with proportional parts, and log versed sines- from 0° to 185° at intervals of 15" to 7 places. The arguments are also given in time. The manuscript was used in the office for twenty-five years before it was printed. Traverse tables, which occur in most collections of navigation tables, contain multiples of sines and cosines.

Common or Briggian Logarithms of Numbers and Trigono- Common

for every ten seconds throughout the quadrant, to 15 places, semi-quadrantally arranged, with first, second, and third differences, Natural sines are also given for every second from 0° to 1° and from

metrical Rattos.—For an account of the invention and history of or Brig- logarithms, see LoGARITHMS (vol. xiv. p. 773) and Narimr. 'The gian log- following are the fundamental works which contain the results of arithms.

89° to 90°, to 15 places, with first and second differences. The rescue of the manuscript of this work by Pitiscus forms a striking episode in the history of mathematical tables. The alterations and cinendations in the earlier part of the corrected edition of the Opus Palatinum were made by Pitiscus, who had his suspicions that Rheticus had himself calculated a ten-second table of sines to 15 decimal places; but it could not be found. Eventually the lost canon was discovered amongst the papers of Rheticus, which had passed from Otho to James Christmann on the death of the former. Amongst these Pitiscus found (1) the ten-second table of sines to 15 placcs, with first, second, and third differences (printed in the Thesaurus); (2) sines for every second of the first and last degrees of the quadrant, also to 15 places, with first and second differences ; (3) the commencement of a canon of tangents

and secants, to the saine number of decimal places, for every ten seconds, with first and second differences ; (4) a complete minute canon of sines, tangents, and secants, also to 15 decimal places. These tables taken in

connexion with the Opus Palatinwm givo an idea of the enormous | Thesawrus Logarithmorum Completus.

the original calculations of logarithms of numbers and trigono- metrical ratios :—Briggs, Arithmetica Logarithmica (London, 1624), logarithms of numbers from 1 to 20,000 and from 90,000 to 100,000 to 14 places, with interscript differences ; Vlacq, Arithmctica Log- arithmica (Gouda, 1628, also an English edition, London, 1631, the tables being the same), ten-figure logarithms of numbers from 1 to 100,000, with differences, also log sines, tangents, and secants for every minute of the quadrant to 10 places, with interscript differences ; Vlacq, Trigonometria Artificialis (Gouda, 1633), log sines and tangents to every ten seconds of the quadrant to 10 places, with differences, and ten-figure logarithms of numbers up to 20,000, with differences; Briggs, Trigonometria Britannica (London, 1633), natural sines to 15 places, tangents and secants to 10 places, log sines to 14 places, and tangents to 10 places, at intervals of a hundredth of a degree from 0° to 45°, with interscript differences for all the functions. In 1794 Vega re-printed at Leipsic Vlacq’s two works in a single folio volume, The arrangement of the

XXIII. — 2

10 TA fas

table of logarithms of numbers is more eompendious than in Vlaeq, being similar to that of an ordinary seven-figure table, but it is not so convenient, as inistakes in taking out the differenees are more lable to oceur. The trigonometrical canon gives log sines, cosines, tangents, and eotangents, from 0° to 2° at intervals of one seeond, to 10 places, without differences, and for the rest of the quadrant at intervals of ten seeonds. The trigonometrical eanon is not wholly reprinted from the Trigonometria LOGARITHMS, p. 776 ; eomp. also Monthly Notices of Roy. Ast. Soe. for May 1872, June 1872, Mareh 1873, and 1874, suppl. number). Vega seems not to have bestowed on the trigonometrieal canon anything like the eare

that he devoted to the logarithms of numbers, as Gauss} estimates the total of last-figure errors at from 31,983 to 47,746, most of them only amounting to a unit, but some to as mueh as 38or 4, As these errors in the Trigonometria Artificialis still remain uncorreeted, it eannot be said that a reliable ten-plaee logarithmie trigonometrical eanon exists. The ealeulator who has oeeasion to perform work requiring ten-figure logarithms of numbers should use Vlaeq's Arithmetica Logarithmica of 1628, after earefully correeting the errors pointed out by Vega and Lefort. After Vlaeq, Vega's Thesaurus is the next best table ; and Pineto's Tables de Logarithmes Vulgaires & Dix Décimales, con struites @apres un nouveau mode (St Petersburg, 1871), though a traet of only 80 pages, may be usefully employed when Vlacq and Vega are unprocurable. Pineto's work consists of three tables: the first, or auxiliary table, eontains a series of factors by which the numbers whose logarithms are required are to be multiplied to bring them within the range of table 2 ; it also gives the loga- rithms of the reeiproeals of these faetors to 12 places. 'lable 1 merely gives logarithms to 1000 to 10 plaees. Table 2 gives logarithms from 1,000,000 to 1,011,000, with proportional parts to hundredths. The mode of using these tables is as follows. If the logarithm eannot be taken out direetly from table 2, a factor Mis found from the auxiliary table by which the number must be multiplied to bring it within the rauge of table 2. Then the logarithm ean be taken out, and, to neutralize the effeet of the multiplieation, so far as the

result is eoneerned, log (= must be added ; this quantity is there-

fore given in an adjoining eolumn to Mf in the auxiliary table. A similar procedure gives the number answering to any logarithm, another faetor (approximately the reciprocal of MZ) being given, so that in both eases multiplication is used. The laborious part of the work is the multiplication by Af; but this is somewhat com- pensated for by the ease with which, by means of the proportional parts, the logarithm is taken out. The factors are 300 in number, and are chosen so as to minimize the labour, only 25 of the 300 consisting of three figures all different and not involving 0 or 1. The prineiple of multiplying by a factor whieh is subsequently caneelled by subtraeting its logarithm is used also in a traet, eon- taining only ten pages, published by MM. Namur and Mansion at Brussels in 1877 under the title Tables de Logarithmes a 12 décimales jusqu'a 434 milliards. Here a table is

given of logarithms of numbers near to 434,294, and other numbers are brought within the range of the table by multiplication by one or two factors. The logarithms of the numbers uear to 434,294 are seleeted for tabulation because their differences commence with the figures 100 ...and the presence of the zeros in the difference renders the inter- polation easy.

If seven-figure logarithms do not give sufficiently accurate results, it is usual to have reeourse to ten-figure tables ; with one exception, there exist no tables giving 8 or 9 figures. The exception is John Newton's Trigonometria Britannica (London, 1658), whieh gives logarithms of numbers to 100,000 to 8 places, and also log sines and tangents for every eentesimal minute (7.c., the nine-thousandth part of a right angle), and also log sines and tangents for the first three degrees of the quadrant to 5 places, the interval being the one-thonsandth part of a degree. This table is also unique in that it gives the logarithms of the differences instead of the actual differenees. The arrangement of the page now universal in seven- figure tables—with the fifth figures running horizontally along the top line of the page—is due to John Newton.

As a rule seven-figure logarithms of numbers are not published separately, most tables of logarithms eontaining both the logarithms of numbers and a trigonometrieal eanon. Babbage's and Sang's logarithms are exceptional and give logarithms of numbers only. Babbage, Table of the Logarithms of the Natural Numbers from 1 to 108,000 (London, stereotyped in 1827; there are several tirages

1 See his ''Kinige Bemerkungen zu Vega's Thesaurus Logarithmorum," in Astronomische Nachrichten for 1851 (reprinted in his Werke, vol. iii. pp. 257-264); also Monthly Notices Roy. Ast. Soc. for May 1873.

of later dates), is the best for ordinary use. Great pains were taken to get the maximuin of elearness. The ehange of figure in the middle of the bloek of numbers is marked by a change of type in the fourth figure, whieh (with the sole exeeption of the asterisk) is the best method that has been used. Copies of the book were printed on paper of different eolours—yellow, brown, green, &e.—as it was eonsidered that blaek on a white ground was a

fatiguing eombination for the eye. The tables were also issued with title-pages and introductions in other languages. The book is not very easy to proeure now. In 1871 Mr Sang published A New Table of Seven-place Logarithms of all Numbers from 20000 to 200000 (London). In an ordinary table extending from 10,000 to 100,000 the differenees near the beginning are so numerous that the proportional parts are either very erowded or some of them omitted; by making the table extend from 20,000 to 200,000 instead of from 10,000 to 100,000 the differences are halved in magnitude, while there are only one-fourth as many in a page. There is also greater aeeuracy. A further peculiarity of this table is that multiples of the differences, instead of proportional parts, are given at the side of the page. Typographieally the table is exeeptional, as there are no rules, the numbers being separated from the logarithms by reversed eommas. This work was to a great extent the result of an original ealeulation ; see Ldinburgh Transactions, vol. xxvi. (1871). Mr Sang proposed to publish a ninc-figure table from 1 to 1,000,000, but the requisite support was not obtained. Various papers of Mr Sang's relating to his logarithmie caleulations will be found in the Zdinburgh Proceedings subsequent to 1872. In this connexion referenee should be made to Abraham Sharp's table of logarithms of numbers from 1 to 100 and of primes from 100 to 1100 to 61 places, also of numbers from 999,990 to 1,000,010 to 63 places. These first appcared in Geometry Improv'd . . . by A. 8. Philomath (London, 1717). They have been republished in Sherwin's, Callet's, and the earlier editions of Hutton's tables. Parkhurst, Astronomical Tables (New York, 1871), gives logarithms of numbers from 1 to 109 to 102 places.? In many seven-figure tables of logarithms of numbers the values of Sand Tare given at the top of the page, with V, the variation of each, for the purpose of dedueing log sines and tangents. Sand 7'

denote log — and log fle respeetively, the arguments being

the number of seconds denoted by ccrtain numbers (sometimes only the first, sometimes every tenth) in the number eolumn on each page. 'Thus, in Callet's tables, on the page on whieh the first ber is 67200, S = log 6/20″ ta 6720 while th number is »S = log arag— 6799 2 While the V's are the variations of each for 10'. To find, for example, log 1°52′12″7, or log sin 6782"7, we have S=4°6854980 and log 6732°7 = 3°8281893, whenee, by

addition, we obtain 8°5136878 ; but V for 10” is — 2°29, whenee the variation for 127 is — 8, and the log sine required is 8°5136870. Tables of S and 7 are fre- quently ealled, after their inventor, ‘‘Delambre’s tables.” Some seven-figure tables extend to 100,000, and others to 108,000, the last 8000 logarithms, to 8 plaees, being given to ensure greater accuracy, as near the beginning of the numbers the differences are large and the interpolations more laborious and less exact than in the rest of the table. The eight-figure logarithms, however, at the end of a seven-figure table are liable to oeeasion error; for the eomputer who is aeeustomed to three leading figures, common to the bloek of figures, may fail to notice that in this part of the table there are four, and so a figure (the fourth) is sometimes omitted in taking out the logarithm. In the ordinary method of arranging a seven-figure table the change in the fourth figure, when it oceurs in the course of the line, is a souree of frequent error unless it is very elearly indicated. In the earlier tables the ehange was not marked at all, and the computer had to decide for himself, each time he took out a logarithm, whether the third figure had to be inereased. In some tables the line is broken where the change oceurs; but the dislocation of the figures and the eorresponding irregularity in the lines are very awkward. Babbage printed the fourth figure in small type after a change. The best method seems to be that of prefixing an asterisk to the fourth figure of each logarithm after the change, as is done in Sehrén’s and many other modern tables, This is beautifully elear and the asterisk at onee eatehes the eye. Shortrede and Sang replaee 0 after a ehange by a nokta (resembling a diamond ina pack of eards). This is very elear in the ease of the 0’s, but leaves unmarked the eases in which the fourth figure is 1 or 2. Babbage printed a subseript point under the last figure of each logarithm that had been inereased. Schrén used a bar subseript, which, — ee 2 Legendre (Traité des Fonctions Elliptiques, vol. ii., 1826) gives a table of natural sines to 15 places, and of log sines to 14 places, for every 15” of the quadrant, and also a table of logarithms of uneven numbers from 1163 to 1501, and of primes from 1501 to 10,000 to 19 plaees. The latter, which was extraeted from the Tables du Cadastre, is a continuation of a table in Gardiner’s Tables of Logarithms (London, 1742; reprinted at Avignon, 1770), whieh gives

logarithins of all nuinbers to 1000, and of uneven numbers from 1000 to 1143. Legendre’s tables also appeared in his Ezercices de Caleul Intégral,

vol. iii. (1816).

and 7 = log

MATHEMATICAL, |

being more obtrusive, is not so satisfactory. In some tables the increase of the last figure is only marked’ when the figure is in- creased to a 5, and then a Roman five (v) is used in place of the Arabic figure. Hereditary errors in logarithmic tables are con- sidered in two papers “On the Progress to Accuracy of Logarithmic Tables” and ‘On Logarithmic Tables,” in Monthly Notices of Loy. Ast. Soc. for 1873. See also the Monthly Notices for 1874, p. 248 ; and a paper by Gernerth, Ztsch. f. d. dsterr. Gymn., Heft vi. p. 407. Passing now to the logarithmic trigonometrical canon, the first great advance after the publication of the Trigonometria A rtifietalis in 1633 was made by Michael Taylor, Tables of Logarithms (London, 1792), which gives log sines and tangents to every second of the quadrant to 7 places. This table contains about 450 pages with an average number of 7750 figures to the page, so that there are altogether nearly three millions and a half of figures. The change in the leading figures, when it oceurs in a column, is not marked at all; and the table must be used with very great caution. In fact it is advisable to go through the whole of it, and fill in with ink the first 0 after the change, as well as make some mark that will catch the eye at the head of every column containing a change. The table was calculated by interpolation from the Trigonometria Artificialis to 10 places and then reduced to 7, so that the last figure should always be correct. Partly on account of the absence of a mark to denote the change of figure in the eolumn and partly on account of the size of the table and a somewhat inconvenient arrangement, the work seems never to have come into very general use. Computers have always preferred Bagay’s Nouvelles Tables Astronomiques et Hydrographiques (Paris, 1829), which also contains a complete logarithmic canon to every second. The change in the column is very clearly marked by a large black nucleus, surrounded by a circle, printed instead of zero. Bagay’s work has now become very rare. ‘The only other canon to every second that has been eed is contained in Shortrede’s Logarithmie Tables (Edin- urgh). This work was originally issued in 1844

in one volume, but being dissatistied with it Shortrede issued a new cdition in

1849 in two volumes. The first volume contains logarithms of

numbers, antilogarithms, &c., and the second the trigonometrical canon to every second, The volumes are sold separately, and may be regarded as independent works; they are not even described on their title-pages as vol. i. and vol. ii. The trigonometrical canon is very complete in every respect, the arguments being given in time as well as in are, full proportional parts being added, &c. The change of figure in the eolumn is denoted by a nokta, printed instead of 0 where the change oceurs.

Of tables in which the quadrant is divided centesimally, the principal are Hobert and Ideler, Nowvelles Tables Trigonometriques (Berlin, 1799), and Borda and Delambre, Tables Trigonométriques Déeimates (Paris, 1801). The former give, among other tables, natural and log sines, cosines, tangents, and cotangents, to 7 places, the arguments proceeding to 8° at intervals of 10” and thence to 50° at intervals of 1’ (centesimal), and also natural sines and tangents for the first hundred ten-thousandths of a right angle to 10 places. The latter gives log sines, cosines, tangents, cotangents, secants, and coseeants from 0° to 3° at intervals of 10” (with full proportional parts for every second), and thence to 50° at intervals of 1 (centesi- mal) to7 places, There is also a table of log sines, cosines, tangents, and cotangents from 0’ to 10’ at intervals of 10” and from 0° to 50° at intervals of 10’ (centesimal) to 11 places. Hobert and Ideler give a natural as well as a logarithmic canon; but Borda and Delambre give only the latter. Borda and Delambre give seven- figure logarithms of numbers to 10,000, the line being broken when a change of figure takes place in it.

In Briggs’s Trigonometria Britannica of 1633 the degree is divided centesimally, and but for the appearance in the same year of Vlacq’s Trigonometria Artificialis, in which the degree is divided sexagesimally, this reform might have been effected. It is clear that the most suitable time for effecting such a change was when the natural canon was replaced by the logarithmic canon, and Briggs took advantage of this opportunity. He left the degree unaltered, but divided it centesimally instead of sexagesimally, thus ensuring the advantages of decimal division (a saving of work in

interpolations, multiplications, &c.) with the minimum of change. The French mathematicians at the end of the 18th century divided the right angle centesimally, completely changing the whole system, with no appreciable advantages over Briggs's system. In fact the centesimal degree is as arbitrary a unit as the nonagesimal, and it is only the non-centesimial subdivision of the degree that gives rise to inconvenience. Briggs's example was followed by Roe, Oughtred, and other 17th-century writers ; but the centesimal divi- sion of the degree seems to have entirely passed out of use, till it was recently revived by Bremiker in his Logarithmisch ~~trigono~~ metrische Tafeln mit finf Decimalstellen (Berlin, 1872). This little book of 158 pages gives a five-figure canon to every hundredth of a degree with proportional parts, besides logarithms of numbers, addition and subtraction logarithms, &c.

Collections of Tables.—For a computer who requires in one volume logarithms of numbers and a ten-second logarithmic canon,

TrA2eELES

i

perhaps the two best books are Schrén, Seven- Figure Logarithms Collec- (London, 1865, stereotyped, an English edition of the German work tions,

published at Brunswick), and Bruhns, 4 New Manual of Logarithms to Seven Places of Deeimals (Leipsic, 1870). Both give logarithnis of numbers and a complete ten-sccond canon to 7 places ; Bruhns also gives log sines, cosines, tangents, and cotangents to every second up to 6° with proportional parts. Schrén contains an inter- polation table, of 75 pages, giving the first 100 multiples of all numbers from 40 to 420. The logarithms of numbers extend to 108,000 in Schron and to 100,000 in Bruhns, Almost equally convenient is Bremiker's edition of Vega's Logarithmic Tables (Berlin, stereotyped ; the English edition was translated from the fortieth edition of Dr Bremiker's by W. L. F. Fischer). This book gives a canon to every ten seconds, and for the first five degrees to every second, with logarithms of numbers to 100,000. All theso works give the proportional parts for all the differences in the logarithms of numbers. In Babbage's, Callet's, and many other tables only every other table of proportional parts is given near the

beginning for want of space. Schron, Bruhns, and most modern tables published in Germany have title- pages and introductions in different languages. Dupuis, Tables de Logarithmes a& sept Décimales (stereotyped, third tirage, 1868, Paris), is also very convenient, containing a ten-seeond canon, besides logarithms of numbers to 100,000, hyperbolie logarithms of numbers to 1000, to 7 places, &c. In this work negative characteristics are printed throughout in the tables of circular functions, the minus sign being placed above the figure ; these are preferable to the ordinary char- acteristics that are increased by 10. This is the only work we know in which negative characteristies are used. The edges of the pages containing the circular functions are red, the rest being grey. Dupuis also edited Callet's logarithms in 1862, with which this work must not be confounded. Salomon, Logarithmische Tafeln (Vienna, 1827), contains a ten-second canon (the intervals being one second for the first two degrees), logarithms of numbers to 108,000, squares, cubes, square roots, and cuhe roots to 1000, a factor table to 02 Oil ten-place Briggian and hyperbolic logarithms of numbers to 1000 and of primes to 10,333, and many other useful tables. The work, which is scarce, is a well-printed small quarto volume.

Of collections of general tables the most useful and accessible are Hutton, Callet, Vega, and Kéhler. Hutton's well-known Mathe- matical Tables (London) was first issued in 1785, but considerable additions were made in the fifth edition (1811). The tables contain seven-figure logarithms to 108,000, and to 1200 to 20 places, some antilogarithms to 20 places, hyperbolic logarithms from 1 to 10 at intervals of '01 and to 1200 at intervals of unity to 7 places, logistic logarithms, log sines and tangents to every second of the first two degrees, and natural and log sines, tangents, secants, and versed sines for every minute of the quadrant to 7 places. The natural functions occupy the left-hand pages and the logarithmic the right-hand. The first six editions, published in Hutton's lifetime (d. 1823), contain Abraham Sharp's 61-figure logarithms of numbers. Olinthus Gregory, who brought out the 1830 and suceeeding editions, omitted these tables and Hutton's introduction, which contains a history of logarithms, the methods of constructing them, &e. Callet's Tables Portatives de Logarithmes (stereotyped, Paris) seems to have been first issued in 1783, and has since passed. through a great many editions. In that of 1853 the contents are seven-figure logarithms to 108,000, Briggian and hyperbolic loga- rithms to

48 places of numbers to 100 and of primes to 1097, log sines and tangents for minutes (centesimal) throughout the quad- rant to 7 places, natural and log sines to 15 places for every ten minutes (centesimal) of the quadrant, log sines and tangents for every second of the first five degrees (sexagesimal) and for every ten seconds of the quadrant (sexagesimal) to 7 places, besides logistic logarithms, the first hundred multiples of the modulus to 24 places and the first ten to 70 places, and other tables. This is onc of the most complete and practically useful collections of logarithms that have been published, and it is peculiar in giving a centesimally divided canon. The size of the page in the editions published in the 19th century is larger than that of the carlier editions, the type having been reset. Vega's Tabule Logarithmo-trigonometrice was first published in 1797 in two volumes. The first contains seven- figure logarithms to 101,000, log sines, &c., for every tenth of a second to 1', for every second to 1° 30', for every 10" to 6° 3', and thence at intervals of a minute, also natural sines and tangents to every minnte, all to 7 places. The second volume gives simple divisors of all numbers up to 102,000, a list of primes from 102,000 to 400,318, hyperbolic logarithms of numbers to 1000 and of primes to 10,000, to 8 places, e* and log,,e* to x=10 at intervals of ~~01 to 7 figures and 7 places respectively, the first nine powers of the numbers from 1 to 100, squares and cubes to 1000, logistic loga~~ rithms, binomial theorem coefficients, &c. Vega also published Manuale Logarithmico-trigonometricum (Leipsic, 1800), the tables in which are identical with a portion of those contained in the first volume of the Zabulz. The Tabule went through many editions, a stereotyped issue being brought out by J. A. Hiilsse (Sammlung mathematischer Tafeln, Leipsic) in one volume in 1840. The

contents are nearly the same as those of the original work, the ehief difference being that a large table of Gaussian logarithmis is added. Vega differs from Hutton and Callet in giving so many useful non- logarithmic tables, and his collection is in many respects eomple- mentary to theirs. Sehulze, Neue wad erweiterte Sammlung log- arithmischer, trigonometrischer, und anderer Tafeln (Berlin, 1778, 2 vols.), is a valuable collection, and contains seven-figure loga- rithms to 101,000, log sines and

tangents to 2° at intervals of a second, and natural sines, tangents, and secants to 7 places, log sines and tangents and Napierian log sines and tangents to 8 places, all for every ten seconds to 4° and thenee for every minute to 45°, besides squares, cubes, square roots, and cube roots to 1000, ‘binomial theorem coefficients, powers of ¢, and other small tables. Wolfram’s hyperbolic logarithms of numbers below 10,000 to 48 places first appeared in this work. Lambert, Supplementa Tabu- larum Logarithmicarum et Trigonometricarum (Lisbon, 1798), con-

are Gaussian logarithms, least divisors of numbers to 10,841, anti-logarithins, &c. The work contains 118 pages of tables. The same author’s Reeweil de Formutes et de Tables Numériques (Paris, 1868) contains 19 tables, occupying 62 pages, most of them giving results to 4 places ; they relate to very varied subjects, —antilogarithms,

; C c ieee See ec Gaussian logarithms, logarithms of eee elliptic integrals, squares

for use in the method of least squares, &c. Bremiker, Tafel vier- stelliger Logarithmen (Berlin, 1874), gives four-figure logarithins of numbers to 2009, log sines, cosines, tangents, and eotangents to 8° for every hundredth of a degree, and thence to 45° for every tenth of a degree, to 4 places. There are also Gaussian logarithms, squares from 0°000 to 13,500, antilogarithms, &c. The book eontains 60 pages. Willich, Popular Tables (London, 1853), is a useful book for an amateur; it gives Briggian and hyperbolic logarithms to 1200 to 7 places, squares, &c., to 348, &c.

tains a number of useful and curious non-logarithmic tables ; it bears a general resemblanee to the second volume of Vega, but contains numerous other small tables of a more strictly mathe-

Hyperbolie or Napierian Logarithms.—The logarithms invented Napierian by Napier and explained by him in the Descriptio (1614) were not loga- the same as those now called natural or hyperbolic (viz., to base rithms.

matical character. A very useful collection of non-logarithmic tables is printed in Barlow's New Mathematical Tables (London, 1814). It gives squares, cubes, square roots, and cube roots (to 7 places), reciprocals to 9 or 10 places, and resolutions into their prime faetors of all numbers from 1 to 10,000, the first ten powers of numbers to 100, fourth and fifth powers of numbers from 100 to 1000, prime numbers from 1 to 100,103, eight-plaee hyperbolic logarithms to 10,000, tables for the solution of the irreducible case in eubie equations, &c. In the stereotyped reprint of 1840 only the squares, cubes, square roots, cube roots, and reeiproeals are retained. The first volume of Shortrede's tables, in addition to the trigonometrical canon to every second, contains antilogarithms and Gaussian logarithms. Hassler, Tabule Logarithnuicw et Trigono- metrics (New York, 1830, stereotyped), gives seven-figure logarithms to 100,000, log sines and tangents for every seeond to 1°, and log sines, cosines, tangents, and cotangents from 1° to 3° at intervals of 10" and thence to 45° at intervals of 30'. Every effort has been made to reduce the size of the tables without loss of distinetness, the page being only about 8 by 5 inehes. Copies of the work were wulllehed with the introduction and title-page in different lan- guages. Stanley, Tables of Logarithms (New Haven, U.S., 1860), gives seven-figure logarithms to 100,000, and log sines, eosines, tangents, cotangents, secants, and cosecants at intervals of ten seconds to 15° and thence at intervals of a minute to 45° to 7 places, besides natural sines and cosines, antilogarithms, and other tables. This collection owed its origin to the fact that Hassler's tables were found to be inconvenient owing to the smallness of the type. Luvini, Tables of Logarithms (London, 1866, stereotyped, printed at Turin), gives seven-figure logarithms to 20,040, Briggian and hyperbolic logarithms of primes to 1200 to 20 places, log sines and tangents for each second to 9', at intervals of 10' to 2°, of 80" to 9°, of 1' to 45° to 7 eens. besides square and cube roots up to 625. The book, which is intended for schools, engineers, &c., has a peeuliar arrange- ment of the logarithms and proportional parts on the pages. Chambers's Mathematical Tables (Edinburgh), containing loga- rithms of numbers to 100,000, and a canon to every minute of log sines, tangents, and secants and of natural sines to 7 places, besides proportional logarithms and other small tables, is cheap and suitable

e), and very frequently also Napierian, logarithms. Napierian logarithms, strietly so ealled, have entirely passed out of use and are of purely historic

interest ; it is therefore sufficient to refer to LocariTHMs and Naprer, where a full aecount is given. Apart from the inventor's own publieations, the only Napierian tables of importanee are contained in Ursinus's Trigonometria (Cologue, 1624-25) and Schulze's Sammlung (Berlin, 1778), the former being the largest that has been constructed. Logarithms to the base e¢, where e denotes 2°71828, were first published by Speidell, Mew Logarithmes (1619).

The most copious table of hyperbolic logarithms is Dase, Tafel Hyper- der natirlichen Logarithmen (Vienna, 1850), which extends from 1 bolic to 1000 at intervals of unity and from 1000 to 10,500 at intervals loga- of -1 to 7 places, with differences and ES ea parts, arranged rithms,

as in an ordinary seven-figure table. By adding log 10 to the results the range is from 10,000 to 105,000 at intervals of unity. The table formed part of the Annals of the Vienna Observatory for 1851, but separate copies were printed. The most elaborate table of hyperbolic logarithms is due to Wolfram, who ealeulated to 48 places the logarithms of all numbers up to 2200, and of all primes (also of a great many eomposite numbers) between this limit and 10,009. Wolfram's results first appeared in Schulze's Samm- lung (1778). Six logarithms which Wolfrain had been prevented from computing by a serious illness were supplied in the Berliner Jahrbuch, 1788, p. 191. The complete table was reproduced in Vega's Thesaurus (1794), when several errors were corrected. Tables of hyperbolic logarithms are contained in the following colleetions:—Callet, all numbers to 100 and primes to 1097 to 48 places ; Borda and Delambre (1801), all numbers up to 1200 to 11 places ; Salomon (1827), all numbers to 1000 and primes to 10,333 to 10 places; Vega, Tabulx (ineluding Hiilsse's edition, 1840), and Kohler (1848), all numbers to 1000 and primes to 10,000 to 8 places ; Barlow (1814), all numbers to 10,000 ; Hutton and Willieh (1853), all numbers to 1200 to 7 places; Dupuis (1868), all numbers to 1000 to 7 places. Hutton also gives hyperbolie logarithms from 1 to 10 at intervals of '01 to 7 places. Rees's Cyclopedia (1819), art. ''Hyperbolic Logarithms," eontains a table of hyperbolic loga- rithms of all numbers up to 10,000 to 8 places.

Tables to convert Briggian into Hyperbolic Logarithms, and vice Conver- versa.—Such tables merely consist of the first hundred (sometimes sion of only the first ten) multiples of the modulus ~~43429 44819… and Briggian its reciprocal 2‘30258 50929 … to 5, 6, 8,10, or more places. They and are generally to be found in collections of logarithmic tables, but hyper~~ rarely execed a page in extent, and are very casy to construct. bolic Sehron and Bruhns both give the first hundred multiples of the loga- modulus and its reciprocal to 10 places, and Bremiker (in his edition rithms.

for schools, though not to be compared as regards matter or typo- graphy to the best tables deseribed above. Of six-figure tables

remiker’s Logarithmorum VI. Decimalium Nova Tabula Bero- linensis (Berlin, 1852) is probably one of the best. It gives logarithms of numbers to 100,000, with proportional parts, and log sines and tangents for every second to 5°, and beyond this point for every ten seconds, with proportional parts. Hantsehl, Logarithmisch -trigonometrisches Handbuch (Vienna, 1827), gives

five-figure logarithms to 10,000, log sines and tangents for every ten seconds to 6 places, natural sines, tangents, seeants, and versed sines for every minute to 7 places, logarithms of primes to 15,391, hyperbolic logarithms of numbers to 11,278 to 8 places, least divisors of numbers to 18,277, binomial thcorem coefficients, &e. Farley’s Six-Figure Logarithms (London, stereotyped, 1840) gives six-figure logarithms to 10,000 and log sines and tangents for every minutc to 6 plaees. Of five-figure tables the most convenient is Tables of Logarithms (Useful Knowledge Society, London, from the stercotyped plates of 1839), which were prepared by De Morgan, though they have no name on the title-page. They contain five-figure logarithms to 10,000, log sines and tangents to every minute to 5 plaees, besides a few smaller tables. Lalande’s Yables de Logarithmes is a five-figure table with nearly the same eontents as De Morgan’s, first published in 1805. It has since passed through many editions, and, after being extended from 5 to 7 places, passed through several more. Galbraith and Haughton, Manual of Mathe- matical Tables (London, 1860), give five-figure logarithms to 10,000 and log sines and tangents for every minute, also a small table of Gaussian logarithms. Houél, Tables de Logarithines &

Cing Déei- males (Paris, 1871), is a very convenient collection of five-figure tables ; besides logarithms of numbers and cireular funetions, there

of Vega and in his six-figure tables) and Dupuis to 7 places. Degen, Tabularwm Enneas (Copenhagen, 1824), gives the first hundred multiples of the modulus to 30 places.

Antilogarithms.—In the ordinary tables of logarithms the Anti- natural numbers are integers, while the logarithms are ineommen- loga- surable. In an antilogarithmic canon the logarithms are exaet rithms.

quantities, such as ‘00001, -00002, &c., and the corresponding numbers are ineommensurable. The largest and earliest work of this kind is Dodson’s Antilogarithmie Canon (London, 1742), whieh gives numbers to 11 places corresponding to logarithms from 0 to 1 at intervals of ‘00001, arranged like a seven-figure logarithmic table, with interseript differenees and proportional parts at the bottom of the page. This work was the only antilogarithmic canon for more than a century, till in 1844 Shortrede published the first edition of his tables; in 1849 he published the second edition, and in the same year Filipowski’s tables appeared. Both these works eontain seven-figure antilogarithms: Shortrede gives numbers to logaritlims from 0 to 1 at intervals of ‘00001, with differences and multiples at the top of the page, and Filipowski, 4 Table of Anti- logarithms (Loudon, 1849), contains a table of the same cxtent, the proportional parts being given to hundredths.

Addition and Subtraction, or Gaussian, Logarithms,—The object

loga- rithms.

Gaussian of such tables is to give log (w£8) by only

PA ib tw S

one entry when log a are given (see LOGARITHMS, vol. xiy. Pp: 777). Let C=log (1+2).

Leaving out the specimen table in Leonelli’s Théorie des Logarithmes Additionnels et (Bordeaux, 1803), the principal tables are in Zach’s Monatliche Correspondenz (1812),

tA

and log 4 4=log x,

to 5 at intervals of ‘1; the table is not conveniently arranged, Peter Gray, Tables and Formule (London,

1870)

to 6 places, with proportional parts to hundredths, and log (1-2)

Lafeln der Additions. und Subtractions – Logarithmen (Leipsic,

1849), ;

00001, all to 7 places, with proportional parts, reprinted from Hiilsse’s: edition of Vega (1849); the 1840 edition

seven-figure logarithmie table. was reprinted in Pasquich, Tabule (Leipsic,

de la Landc’s Tafeln (Leipsie, 1832), ate Handbuch and Galbraith and Haughton, Manual (London, Lables de Logarithmes (1871), also gives a smal] of Gaussian logarithms, the addition and subtraction logarithms being separated as in Zech. Modified Gaussian given by J. H. T. Miiller, Vierstellige Logartthmen (Gotha, 1844),

viz.,a four-place table of B and ~ log 1-2 froin 4=0 to ‘03

thence to ‘23 at intervals of 001, to 2 at intervals of ‘01, and to 4 at intervals of Logarithmic Tables (vol. i, 1849), viz., a five-place table of B (1+) from 4=5 to 8 at intervals of +1, ‘3 at intervals of ‘001, to 8 at intervals Filipowski’s Antilogarithms (1849) contains Gaussian logarithms arranged ina new way, The (@+1) as tabular result for log 2 as intervals of ‘001 to 5 places. Weiden- bach, Tafel wm den Logarithmen (Copenhagen, 1829), gives

from *382 to

3°6 at intervals of ‘01, Logistic and Proportional Logarithms.—In most collections of tables of logarithms

and seconds; and Callet and Hutton to x= 5280”, log 10,800 — log x) form part of nearly al} collections of tables relating to navigation, Bagay, i but such are not often’to tables. The same remark applies to tables rithms for every minute to 24 , which give to 4 of log 1440-log a, The object of a proportional or logistic table, or a table of log a —log x, is to facilitate the tions in which the third term is a Interpolation Tables. —AN tables of regarded as interpolation tables, theile (Berlin, 1848), gives numbers from 70 to 699, polation table gi from 40 to 410, ficients, which are required when second and higher orders of differ- ences are used, are described below. Woolhouse, On Lnterpolation, Summation, Numerical Tables (London, 1865), contains nine pages of interpolation tables. The book con- sists of papers extracted from vols. xi, and xii. of the Assurance

Dual Logarithms. —This term is used by Mr Oliver Byrne in his Dual Arithmetic, Y oung Dual Arithmetician, Tables of Dual Logarithms, &c. (London, 1863-67). A dual number of the ascend- ing branch is a continued product of powers of 11, 1-01, 1001, &c.,

13

taken in order, the powers only being expressed denotes (11)%(1-01)(1-001 ¥(1-0001)8 the numbers following the \ being called dual digits. A dual number which has all but the last digit zeros is called a dual logarithm ; logarithms in which logarithms. A dual number of the descending branch is a con- tinucd product of powers of ‘9, ‘99, &e.: for instance, (°9)3(~~99)? ig The Tables, which occupy 112 pages, give dual numbers and logarithms, both of the ascending and descend~~ ing branches, and the corresponding natural numbers. The author claimed that his tables were smperior to those of common logarithms, Constants. —In nearly all tables of logarithms there is a page de- Con- logarithms, stants,

such as 7, 3, Tw, f/m, A specially good collection is printed in

Templeton’s Millwrights and Engineer’s Pocket Companion (cor- rected by §, Maynard, London, 1871), which gives 58 constants involving 7 and ‘their logarithms, generally to 80 places, and 13 others that may be properly called mathematical. “A good list of constants involving z is given in Salomon (1827). Paucker in Grumert’s Arehiv (vol. i. p. 9) has a nuniber of con- stants involving x given toa great many places, and Gauss’s memoir

on the leiniscate function (IVerke, vol. ili.) has ae? é &e., calculated to about 50 places, out to 707 places (Shanks, Proc. Roy. Soc, , Vol. xxi. p. 319) and to 263 places (Adains, Proe, Roy. Soe., vol. xxvii.

places (see Adams, Proc, Loy. Soc.,

Lables for the Solution of the Irreducible Case in Cubic Equations.— trreduci- Lambert, Supplementa (1798), at intervals of ‘001 to 7 places, and Barlow (1814) gives a? —x from equations, %=1 to 1-1549 at intervals of ‘0001 to 8 places.

Binomial Theorem Coefficients. —The values of Binoniial 2e(% — 1) x2 —- 1)(e2-2) we—1)... (%—5) theorem es ene ae coef

from #=°01 tow=1at intervals of ‘01 to 7 places, are serviceable for cients. use in interpolation by second and higher orders of differences, The table quoted above occurs in Schulze (1778), Barlow (1814), Vega (1797 and Succeeding editions), Hantsch] (1827), and Kohler (1848), Rouse, Doctrine of Chanees (London, no date), gives on a folding sheet (@+6)” for »=1, Pe 5 PAD) Lambert, Supplementa (1798), has the coefficients of the first 16 terms in (1+)? and (1-2), their accnrate values being given as decimals, Vega (1797) Oo 1

has a page of tables giving ae . and similar

2.4° 2.4.6’ °° 9, 37°° quantities to 10 places, with their logarithms to 7 places, and a page of this kind occurs in other collections, Kohler (1848) gives the values of 40 such quantities, a(a +1)

Figurate Nuwmbers.—Lambert, Supplementa, gives Uy Tg ae Figurate x(-+1)...(+11) , numbers, See sae, from 2=1 to 380.

Trigonometrical Quadratic Surds,—The surd values of the sines Trigono-

of every third degree of the quadrant are given in some tables of metrical

logarithms; ¢, g-, in Hutton's (ike, ad) 1855), we find quadratic

Ee ant + V8) 4/48 + A$ 9/154 84/5) — 89d}; and oun

the numerical values of the surds 4/(5 + 4/5), J/ (22), &e., are given

to 10 places. extended to 20 places by Peter

Gray, (1877), p. 105. Circulating Decimals.— Goodwyn's tables have (;

Several others have been published giving the num- ing deci-

primes up to 2,548 and for 22 primes exceeding that limit. Desmarest, Théorte all primes up to 10,000. Reuschle, Mathematische Abhandlung, enthaltend neue zahlentheoretisehe Tabclien (1856), contains a simi. lar table to 15,000. This Shanks extended to 60,000; the portion from 1 to 80,000 is printed in the Proe, Loy. Soe., vol. xxii. p. 200, and the remainder is preserved in the archives of the society (Zd., Xxili, p. 260 and xxiy. p. 892). The number of digits in the

decimal period of Z is the same as the exponent to which 10 be-

longs for modulus p, so that, whenever the period has p—1 digits, 10 is a primitive root of p, Tables of primes having a given number, 2, of digits in their periods, 7.¢., tables of the resolutions of 10" — 1 into factors and, as far as known, into prime factors, have been given by Loof (in Grunert's Archiv, vol. xvi. p. 54; reprinted in Nouv. Annales, vol. xiy. p. 115) and_by Shanks (Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxii. p. 881). The former extends to »=60 and the latter to 2=100, but there are gaps in both. Reuschle's tract also contains resolutions of 10"~ 1. For further references on circulating deci- mals, see Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc. , Vol. iii. p. 185 (1878), ; Pythagorean Triangles, — Right-angled triangles in which the

Pytha- gorean triangles.

Pythagorean triangles, as, for example, the triangles 3, 4, 5 and 5, 12, 18. Schulze, Sammlung (1778), contains a table of such triangles subject to the condition tan bw>gs (w being one of the acute angles). About 100 triangles are given, but some occur twice. Large tables of right-angled rational triangles were given by Bretschneider, in Grunert's Archiv, vol. i. p. 96 (1841), and by Sang, Edinburgh Transactions, vol. xxiii. p. 727 (1864). In these the triangles are arranged according to hypothenuses and extend to 1201, 1200, 49, and 1105, 1078, 264 respectively. Whitworth, in a paper read before the Lit. and Phil. Society of Liverpool in 1875, carried his list as far as 2465, 2337, 784. See also Rath, 'Die rationalen Dreiecke," in Grunert's Archiv, vol. lvi. p. 188 (1874). Sang's paper also contains a table of triangles having an angle equal to 120° and their sides integers.

Powers of +.—Paucker, in Grunert's Archiv, vol. i. p. 10, gives a-1and 1? to 140 places, and 72, oh, x, 3 to about 50 places ; and in Maynard's list of constants (see " Constants," above) 7 is given to 31 places. The first twelve powers of 7 and r~! to 22 or more places were printed by Glaisher, Proc. Lond, Math. Soc., vol. viii. p. 140, and the first hundred multiples of and 3} to 12 places by Kulik, Tafel der Quadrat-und Kubik-Zahlen (Leipsic, 1848).

The Serics 1? +2-" + 8-" + &e.—Let Sn, Sn Fn denote respectively the sums of the series 1-"+2-"3-" &c., 1-213 "— BOa¢ "43"45-"4 &e, Legendre (Traité des Fonctions Elliptiques, vol. ii. p. 432) has computed S, to 16 places from n=1 to 35, and Glaisher (Proc. Lond. Math. Soc., vol. iv. p. 48) has deduced s, and o» for the same arguments and to the same number of places. The latter has also given Sp, Sn, On for n=2, 4, 6,... 12 to 22 or more places (Proc. Lond. Math. Soc., vol. viii. p. 140), and the values of Sa, Where D,»=2-"+3-"5-" &e. (prime numbers only in- volved), forn=2, 4, 6,... 86 to 15 places (Compte Rendu de ' Assoc. Francaise for 1878, p. 172).

Tables of e* and e~*, or Hyperbolic Antilogarithms.—The largest tables are the following. Gudermann, Theorie der potenzial- oder cyklisch-hyperbolischen Functionen (Berlin, 1833), which consists of papers reprinted from vols. viii, and ix. of Crelle's Jowrnal, and gives logy) sinh x, logy, cosh «, and log,, tanh x from «=2 to 5 at intervals of 001 to 9 places

and from x=5 to 12 at intervals of ‘01 to 10 places. Since sinh = (ct — e-#) and cosh x=4$(ce*+e~*), the values of et and e-* are deducible at once by addition and sub- traction. Newman, in Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. xiii, pp. 145-241, gives values of e~* from #=0 to 15349 at intervals of 001 to 12 places, from #=15°350 to 17°298 at intervals of °002, and froin 7=17°300 to 27°635 at intervals of °005, to 14 places. Glaisher, in Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. xiii. pp. 248-272, gives four tables of ¢*, e-%, logy) €%, logy e~*, their ranges vie from «=‘001 to ‘1 at in- tervals of 001, from ‘01 to 2 at intervals of ‘01, from ‘1 to 10 at intervals of **1, from 1 to 500 at intervals of unity. Vega, Tabulz (1797 and later edd.), has logy, ¢** to 7 places and e* to 7 figures from z=-01 to 10 at intervals of 01. Kéhler’s Handbuch contains a small table of ¢. In Schulze’s Sammlung (1778) e* is given for z=1, 2, 3,...24 to 28 or 29 figures and for «=25, 30, and 60 to 32 or 33 figures ; this table is printed in Glaisher’s paper (Joc. cit.). In Salomon’s Tafeln (1827) the valucs of ¢”, e”, CO. A toreren, where n has the values 1, 2,...9, are given to 12 places. Bret- schneider, in Grunert’s Archiv, tii. p. 38, worked out ¢ and e~* and also sin « and cos x for =1, 2,...10 to 20 places.

Factorials.—The values of logy, (n!), where 2! denotes 1.2.8…%, from n=1 to 1200 to 18 places, are given by Degen, Tabularum Enneas (Copenhagen, 1824), and reprinted, to 6 places, at the end of De Morgan’s article “ Probabilitics” in the Encyclopedia Metro- politana. Shortrede, Tables (1849, vol. i.), gives log (n!) to »=1000 to 5 places, and for the arguments ending in 0 to 8 places. Degen also gives the complements of the logarithms. The first 20 figures

are computed

Powers of 7.

Series

1-“+

Qo”) &c.

Hyper- bolic antilog- arithms.

Facto- rials.

of the values of 7x! and the values of logiy ae

by Glaisher as far as n=71 in the Phil. Trans. for 1870 (p. 370), and the values of = to 28 significant figures as far as n=50 in

Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. xiii. p. 246.

Bernoul- Bernoullian Numbers.—The first fifteen Bernoullian numbers

lian num- were given by Euler, Jnst. Calc. Diff., partii. ch. v. Sixteen more

bers. were calculated by Rothe, and the first thirty-one were published by Ohm in Crelle's Journal, vol. xx. p. 11. Prof. J. C. Adaims has calculated the next thirty-one, and a table of the first sixty- two was published by him in the Brit. Assoc. Report for 1877 and in Crellc's Journal, vol. lxxxv. p. 269. The first nine figures of the values of the first 250 Bernoullian numbers, and their Briggian logarithms to 10 places, have been printed by Glaisher, Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. xii. p. 384.

Tables of Tables of log tan (4r+4¢).—Gudermann, Theorie der potenzial-

log tan oder cyklisch-hyperbolischen Functionen (Berlin, 1833), gives (in 100

(47 +46). pages) log tan(im +4) for every centesimal minute of the quadrant to 7 places. Another table contains the values of this function, also at intervals of a minute, from 88° to 100° (centesimal) to 11

sides and hypothenuse are all rational integers are frequently termed »

T,TyARBL ES

places. Legendre, J'ratté des Fonctions Elliptiques (vol. 11. p. 256), gives the same function for every half degree (sexagesimal) of the quadrant to 12 places.

The Gamma Function. —Legendre’s great table appeared in vol. Gamnia

i of his Exercices de Calcul Intégral (1816), p. 85, and in vol. ii. function. of his Lraité des Fonctions Elliptiques (1826), p. 489. Logi In) is given from x=1 to 2 at intervals of ‘001 to 12 places, with differ- ences to the third order. This table is reprinted in full in Sehlo- milch, Analytische Studien (1848), p. 183; an abridgment in which the arguments differ by °01 occurs in De Morgan, Diff. and Int. Caic., p. 587. The last figures of the values omitted are also sup- plied, so that the full table can be reproduced. A seven-place abridgment (without differences) is published in Bertrand, Caleul Intégral (1870), p. 285, and a six-figure abridgment in Williamson, Integral Calculus (1884), p. 169. In vol. i. of his Zzerciccs (1811), Legendre had previously published a seven-place table of logy) I(«), without differences.

Tables connected with Elliptic Functions.—Legendre calculated Elliptic elaborate tables of the clliptic integrals in vol. ii. of Zraité dcs functions: Fonctions Elliptiques (1826). Denoting the modular angle by 4, the amplitude by ¢, and the incomplete integral of the second kind by Fy (¢) the tables are—(1) logy) # and log, K from =0° to 90° at intervals of 01 to 12 or 14 places, with differences to the third order ; (2) H,(¢) and F(¢), the modular angle being 45° from ¢=0° to 90° at intervals of 0°°5 to 12 places, with differences to the fifth order ; (3) E, (45°) and F' (45°) from =0° to 90° at intervals of 1°, with differences to the sixth order, also # and K for the same argu-

ments, all to 12 places; (4) (4) and F(¢) for every degree of both the amplitude and the argument to 9 or 10 places. The first

three tables had been published previously in vol. iii. of the Luxer- cices de Caleul Intégral (1816). Tables involving q.—Verhulst, Traité des Fonetions Elliptiques Tables

(Brussels, 1841), contains a table of log, logyo (= for argument ae

at intervals of 01 to 12 or 14 places. Jacobi, in Crelle’s Journal, vol. xxvi. p. 98, gives logy 4 from 6=0° to 90° at intervals of 0°71 to 5 places. Meissel, Sammlung mathematischer Tafeln, i. (Iser- lohn, 1860), consists of a table

of logy) ¢ at intervals of 1′ from 9=0° to 90° to 8 places. Glaisher, in Month. Not. Roy. Ast. Soc., vol. XXXVii. p. 372 (1877), gives logy) ¢ to 10 places and g to 9 places for every degree. In Bertrand, Calewl Intégral (1870), a table of logy ¢ from @=0° to 90° at intervals of 5’ to 5 places is accompanied by

tables of logy “i = and ttenloen” and by abridgments of

Legendre’s tables of the elliptic integrals, Schlomilch, Vorleswngen der héheren Analysis (Brunswick, 1879), p. 448, gives a small table of logy) g for every degree to 5 places.

Legendrian Coefficients. —The values of P”(x) for n=1, 2, 38,...7 Legen-

from z—0 to 1 at intervals of ‘01 are given by Glaisher, in Brit. drian co- Assoc. Icp. for 1879, pp. 54-57. The functions tabulated are P(x) =2, efficients. P*(a)=4(8a? ~~1), P(x) = (5x? — 80), P*(a) =} (8524 —~~ 302? 3), P(a) = 4 (68a —70x> 15x), P%x) = 71; (281×8 — 31524 +1052? — 5), P1(c¢) =qg(42927 — 69325 + 315a2-—35x). The functions occur in connexion with the theory of interpolation, the attraction of spheroids, and other physical theories.

Besscl’s. Functions.—Bessel’s original table appeared at the end Bessel’s of his memoir ‘‘Untersuchung des planetarischen Theils der func- Storungen, welche aus der Bewegung der Sonne entstehen’’ (in tions. ‘Abh. d. Berl. Akad., 1824; reprinted in vol. i. of his Abhand- lungen,p. 84). It gives Jz) and J;(x) from x=0 to 3°2 at intervals of ‘01. More extensive tables were calculated by Hansen in “ Erinit- telung der absoluten Storungen in Ellipsen von beliebiger Excen- tricitat und Neigung”’ (in Schriften der Sternwarte Sceberg, part 1.,

Gotha, 1843). They include an extension of Bessel’s original table to x=20, besides smaller tables of J,,(x) for certain values of 1 as far as n=28, all to 7 places. Hansen’s table was reproduced by Schlomilch, in Zeitschr. fiir Math., vol. ii. p. 158, and by Lommel, Studien tiber die Bessel’schen Functionen (Leipsic, 1868), p. WAT Hansen’s notation is slightly different from Bessel’s; the change amounts to halving each argument. Schlomilch gives the table in Hansen’s form ; Lommel expresses it in Bessel’s.

Sine, Cosine, Exponential, and Logarithm Integrals. —The func- Sine, &c.,

% gin 2 cos # z gn integrals. ade, —— dx, — dx, x ee wee

ae 0 i mo which are denoted by the functional signs Siz, Ciz, Hix,

0 198

tions so named are the integrals

lizrespectively. Soldner, Théorie et Tables dune Nouvelle Fonction Transcendantc (Munich, 1809), gave the values of liz from ~=0 to 1 at intervals of ‘1 to 7 places, and thence at various intervals to 1220 to 5 or morc places. This table is reprinted in De Morgan’s Diff. and Int. Cale., p. 662. Bretschneider, in Grunert’s Archiv, vol, iii. p. 83, calculated Ei (+2), Sia, Ciz for v=1, 2… .l0itonae places, and subsequently (in Schlomilch’s Zeitschrift, vol. vi.) worked out the valucs of the same functions from «=0 to 1 at intervals of ‘01 and from 1 to 7°5 at intervals of ‘1 to 10 places. Two tracts by L. Stenberg, Zabule Logarithms Integralis (Malm6, part i. 1861

TA B—T AB

and part ii. 1867), give the values of li 10* from w= —15 to 3°5 at intervals of 01 to 18 places. Glaisher, in Phil. Zrans., 1870, p. 367, gives Ki(+2), Siz, Cia from x=0 tol at intervals of ‘01 to 18 places, from #=1 to 5 at intervals of *1 and thence to 15 at intervals of unity, and for 2=20 to 11 places, besides seven-place tables of Siz and Ciz and tables of their maximum and minimum valucs, See also Bellavitis, ‘“Tavole Numeriche Logaritmo-Integrale” (a paper in Memoirs of the Venetian Institute, 1874). Bessel calculated the valucs of li 1000, li 10,000, 11 100,000, 1i 200,000, ... li 600,000, and li 1,000,000 (see Abhandlungen, vol. ii. p. 339). In Glaisher, factor Table for the Sixth Million (1883), § iii., the values of li x are given from #=0 to 9,000,000 at intervals of 50,000 to the hearest integer.

Values of fi “e~ Pdax and &® [“o-dx,—These functions are em- 0 0 cee ployed in researches connected with refractions, theory of errors, * L x= oe Cee ie) conduction of heat, &c. Let Wh QO alie, evox Oe c~ “da be denoted

by Erfa and Erfe x respectively, standing for “error function” and “error function complement,” so that Erfz+Erfe a=44/a (Phil. Mag., Dec. 1871; it has since been found convenient to transpose as above the definitions of Erf and Erfe). The tables of the

functions, and of the functions multiplied by ¢*”, are as follows. Kramp, Analyse des Réfractions (Strasburg, 1798), has Erfe x from = to 8 at intervals of ‘01 to 8 or more placcs, also log.) (Erfe 2)

and log,,(e”””“Erfe a) for the same values to 7 places. Bessel, Punda-

menta Astronomiz (Konigsberg, 1818), has log,.(e”“Erfe x) from x=0 to 1 at intervals of ‘01 to 7 places, likewise for argunient log,, x, the arguments increasing from 0 to 1 at intervals of ‘01. Legendre, Lraité des Fonetions Kiliptiques (1826), vol. ii. p. 520, contains

T(4,e~”), that is, 2 Erfe x from w=0 to ‘5 at intervals of ‘01 to 10 places. Encke, Berliner Ast. Jahrbuch for 1834, priuts = Erf x from x= 0 to 2 at intervals of ‘01 to 7 places and i Erf (px) from

*=0 to 3°4 at intervals of ‘01 and thence to 5 at intervals of *1 to 5 places, p being 4769360. Glaisher, in Phil. Mag., December 1871, has calculated Erfe x from x=8 to 4°5 at intervals of ‘01 to ii, Mey or 14 places. Encke’s tables and two of Kramp’s were reprinted in the Encyclopedia Metropolitana, art. “ Probabilities,”

Lables of Integrals, not Nwmerical.— Meyer Hirsch, Integral- tafeln (1810 ; Eng. trans., 1823), and Minding, Jntegraliafeln (Berlin, 1849), give values of indefinite integrals and formule of reduction : both are uscful and valuable works. De Haan, Nouvelles Tables a Intégrales Définics (Leyden, 1867), is a quarto volume of 727 pages containing evaluations of definite integrals, arranged in 485 tables, The first edition appeared in vol. iv. of the Transactions of the Anisterdam Academy of Sciences. This, though not so full and accurate as the second edition, gives references to the original memoirs in which the different intcgrals are considered.

Lables relating to the Theory of Nwmbers.—These are of so tech- nical a character and so numerous that a full account cannot be attempted here. The

reader is referred to Cayley's paper in the Grit. Assoc. Rep. for 1875, where a full description with references is given. Three tables may, however, be briefly noticed on account of their importance and because they form separate volumes: (1) Degen, Canon Pellianus (Copenhagen, 1817), relates to the inde- terminate equation y*-axz?=1 for valucs of a from 1 to 1000. It in fact gives the expression for ,/a as a continued fraction ; (2) Jacobi, Canon Arithmeticus (Berlin, 1839), is a quarto work contain- ing 240 pages of tables, where we find for each prime up to 1000 the numbcrs corresponding to given indices and the indices corre- sponding to given numbers, a certain primitive root (10 is taken whenever it is a primitive root) of the prime being selected as base ; (3) Reuschle, Tafeln complexer Primzahlen, welehc aus Wurzeln der Hinheit gebildet sind (Berlin, 1875), includes an enormous mass of results relating to the higher complex theories. A table of x(n), where x(7) denotes the sum of the complex numbers which have 7 for their norm for primes up to n= 13,000 (cf. Quart. Journ., vol. xx. p. 152), has been published since the date of Cayley's report. Some tables that belong to the theory of numbers have been described above under "Factor Tables" (p. 7).

Bibliography.—Full_ bibliographical and historical information relating to tables is collected in Brit. Assoc. Rep. for 1873, p. 6. The principal works are: —Heilbronner, Historia Matheseos (Leipsic, 1742), the arithmetical portion being at the end; Scheibel, Kinleitung zur mathematischen Biioherkenntniss (Breslau, 1771-84); Kistner, Geschichte der Mathemattl; (Gottingen, 1796-1800), vol. dies Murhard, Bibliotheca Mathematica (Leipsic, 1797-1804), vol. ii.; Rogg, Bibliotheca Mathematica (Tiibingen, 1830), and continuation from 1830 to 1854 by Sohnke (Leipsie and London, 1854); Lalande, Bibliographie Astronomique (Paris, 1803), a separate index on p. 960. A great deal of accurate information upon early tables is given by Delambre, Histoire de I' Astronomie Moderne (Paris, 1821), vol. i.; and Nos. xix. and xx. of Hutton's Mathematical Tracts (1812). For a complete list of logarithmic tables of all kinds from 1614 to 1862, see De Haan, *TYets over Logarithmentafels," in Verslagen en Mcdedeelingen der Koning. Akad. van Wetenschappen (Amsterdam, 1862), pt. xiv.

j De Morgan’s article « Tables,” Which appeared first in the Penny Cyclopedia,

and afterwards with additions

| in the English Cyclopedia, gives not only a good deal of bibliographical informa- | tion but also an account of tables relating to life assurance and annuities,

astronomical tables, commercial tables, &c. (J. W. L. G.)

15

TABOO (also written Tasu and Tarv) is the name given to a system of religious prohibitions which attained its fullest development in Polynesia (from Hawaii to New Zealand ; see vol. xix. p. 426), but of which under different names traces may be discovered in most parts of the world.

The word “taboo” is common to the different dialects Meaning.

of Polynesia, and is perhaps derived from ta, “to mark,” and pu, an adverb of intensity. The compound word “taboo” (tapu) would thus originally mean “marked thoroughly.” Its ordinary sense is “sacred.” It does not, however, imply any moral quality, but only ‘‘a connexion with the gods or a separation from ordinary purposes and exclusive appropriation to persons or things considered sacred ; sometimes it means devoted as by a vow.” Chiefs who trace their lineage to the gods are called arti tabu, “chiefs sacred,” and a temple is called a wahi tabu, ‘place sacred.” The converse of taboo is noa (in Tonga gnofooa), which means “general” or “common.” Thus the rule which forbade women to eat with men, as well as, except on special occasions, to eat any fruits or animals offered in sacrifice to the gods, was called ai tabu, “ eating sacred” ; while the present relaxation of the rule is called ai nod, eating generally, or having food in common. Although it was employed for civil as well as religious purposes, the taboo was essentially a religious observance. In Hawaii it could be imposed only by priests; but elsewhere in Polynesia kings and chiefs, and even to a ccrtain extent ordinary individuals, exercised the same power. The strictness with which the taboo was observed depended largely on the influence of the person

who imposed it: if he was a great chief it would not be broken ; but a powerful man often set at nought the taboo of an inferior,

A taboo might be general or particular, permanent or General

temporary. A general taboo applied, e.g., to a whole class and par- of animals ; a particular taboo was confined to one or more Lael individuals of the class. Idols, temples, the persons and , names of kings and of members of the royal family, the persons of chiefs and priests, and the property (canoes, houses, clothes, &c.) of all these classes of persons were always taboo or sacred. By a somewhat arbitrary exten- sion of this principle a chief could render taboo to (tem in favour of) himself anything which took his fancy by merely calling it by the name of a part of his person. Thus, if he said “That axe is my backbone,” or “is my head,” the axe was his ; if he roared out “That canoe! my skull shall be the baler to bale it out,” the canoe was his likewise. The names of chiefs and still more of kings were taboo, and could not be uttered. If the name of a king of Tahiti was @ common word or even resentbled a common word, that word dropped out of use and a new name was sub- stituted for it. Thus in course of time most of the common words in the language underwent considerable modifications or were entirely changed.

Certain foods were permanently taboo to (i.e., in favour Dura- of or for the use of) gods and men, but were forbidden to tion. women. ‘Thus in Hawaii the flesh of hogs, fowls, turtle, and several kinds of fish, cocoa-nuts, and nearly everything offered in sacrifice were reserved for gods and men, and could not, except in special cases, be consumed by women.

In the Marquesas Islands human flesh was tabooed from women. Sometimes certain fruits, animals, and fish were taboo for months together from both men and women. In the Marquesas houses were tabooed against water : nothin g was washed in them; no drop of water might be spilled in them. If an island or a district was tabooed, no canoe or person might approach it while the taboo lasted; if a path was tabooed, no one might walk on it. Seasons generally kept taboo were the approach of a great religious ceremony, the time of preparation for war, and the sickness of chiefs. The time during which they lasted varied from

Penalty for vio- lation.

Things

16 rex BO

years to months or days. In Hawaii there was a tradition of one that lasted thirty years, during which men might not trim their beards, &c. A common period was forty days. A taboo was either common or strict. During a common taboo the men were only required to abstain from their ordinary occupations and to attend morning and evening prayers. But during a strict taboo every fire and light on the island or in the district was extinguished ; no canoe was launched ; no person bathed; no one, except those who had to attend at the temple, was allowed to be seen out of doors; no dog might bark, no pig grunt, no cock crow. Hence at these seasons they tied up the mouths of dogs and pigs, and put fowls under a calabash or bandaged their eyes. ‘The taboo was imposed either by proclamation or by fixing certain marks (a pole with a bunch of bamboo leaves, a white cloth, &c.) on the places or things tabooed.

The penalty for the violation of a taboo was either religious or eivil. The religious penalty inflicted by the offended atuas or spirits generally took the form of a disease: the offender swelled up and died, the notion being that the atwa or his emissary (often an infant spirit) had entered into him and devoured his vitals. Cases are on record in which persons who had unwittingly broken a taboo aetually died of terror ou discovering their fatal error. Chiefs and priests, however, could in the case of involuntary trans- gressions perform certain mystical ceremonies which prevented this penalty from taking effeet. The civil penalty for breaking a taboo varied in severity. In Hawaii there were police officers appointed by the king to see that the taboo was observed, and every breach of it was punished with death, unless the offender had powerful friends in the persons of priests or chiefs. Elsewhere the punishment was milder ; in Fiji (which, however, is Melanesian) death was rarely inflicted, but the delinquent was robbed and his gardens despoiled. In New Zealand this judicial robbery was reduced toa system. No sooner was it known that a man had broken a taboo than all his friends and acquaintances swarmed down on him and carried off whatever they could lay hands on. Under this system (known as muru)

property eirculated with great rapidity. If, eg., a ehild fell into the fire, the father was robbed of nearly all- he possessed.

Besides the permanent and the artificially created taboos there

naturally were others whieh arose spontaneously as a result of circumstances.

taboo,

Thus all persons dangerously ill were taboo and were removed from their houses to sheds in the bush; if they remained in the house and died there the house was tabooed and deserted. Mothers after childbirth were taboo, and so were their new-born children. Women before marriage were now, and could have as many lovers as they chose; but after marriage they were strictly tabooed to their husbands and from every one else. One of the strictest taboos was incurred by all persons who handled the body or bones of a dead person or assisted at his funeral. In Tonga a common person who touched a dead chief was tabooed for ten lunar months ; a chief who touched a dead chief was tabooed for from three to five months aecording to the rank of the deceased. Burial grounds were taboo ; and in New Zealand a eanoe whieh had earried a corpse was never afterwards used, but was drawn on shore and painted red. Red was the taboo colour in New Zealand ; in Hawaii, Tahiti, Tonga, and Samoa it was white. In the Marquesas a man who had slain an enemy was taboo for ten days: he might have no inter- course with his wife and might not meddle with fire ; he had to get some one clse to cook for him. A woman engaged in the prepara- tion of cocoa-nut oil was taboo for five days or more, during which she might have no intercourse with men. A tabooed person might not eat his food with his hands, but was fed by another person ; if he could get no one to feed him, he had to go down on his knees and pick up his food with his mouth, holding his hands behind him. A chief who was permanently taboo never ate in his own house but always in the open air, being fed by one of his wives, or taking his food with the help of a fern stalk so as not to touch his head with his hands ; food left by him was kept for him in a sacred place; any other person eating of it was supposed to die immediately. A man of any standing could not earry provisions on his back ; if he did so they became taboo and were useless to any one but himself. For the taboo was

communicated as it were by infection to whatever a tabooed person or thing touched. This rule applied in its fullest force to the king and queen of Tahiti. The ground they trod on became sacred ; if they entered a house, it became taboo to them and had to be abandoned to them by its owner. Hence special houses were

1 The origin of this eustom may perhaps be discerned in a eustom of the Dieri tribe, South Australia. Among them, if a ehild meets with an aceident, all its relations immediately get their heads broken with stieks or boomerangs till the blood flows down their faces, this surgieal operation being supposed to ease the child's pain (Native Tribes of S. Australia, p. 280).

set apart for them on their travels, and, except in their hereditary districts, they were always carried on men's shoulders to prevent them touching the ground. Elsewhere, as in New Zealand, this rule was not carried out so strietly. But even in New Zealand the spots on which great chiefs rested during a journey became taboo and were surrounded with a fence of basket-work. The head and hair, especially of a chief, were particularly taboo or sacred; to touch a man's head was a gross insult. Ifa chief touched his own head with his fingers he had immediately to apply them to his nose and snuff up the sanctity which they had abstracted from his head. The cutting of a chief's hair was a solemn ceremony ; the severed locks were collected and buried in a sacred place or hung up on a tree. If a drop of a chief's blood fell upon anything, that thing became taboo to him, 7.¢., was his property. If he breathed on a fire, it became saered and could not be used for cooking. In his house no fire could under any cireumstances be used for cooking ; no woman could enter his house before a certain service had been gone through. Whatever a new-born child touched became taboo to (z.¢., in favour of) the child. The law which separated tabooed persons and things from contact with food was especially strict. Hence a tabooed or sacred person ought not to leave his comb or blanket or anything which had touched his head or back (for the back was also particularly taboo) in a place where food had been cooked ; and in drinking he was careful not to touch the vessel with his hands or lips (otherwise the vessel beeame taboo and could not be used by any one else), but to have the liquid shot down his throat from a distance by a second person.

There were various ceremonies by which a taboo could be removed. Remoy In Tonga a person who had become taboo by touehing a chief or of tabo anything belonging to him could not feed himself till he had got rid of the taboo by touching the soles of a superior chief's feet with his hands and then rinsing his hands in water, or (if water was scarce) rubbing them with the juice of the plantain or banana. But, if a man found that he had already (unknowingly) eaten with tabooed hands, he sat down before a chief, took up the foot of the latter, and pressed it against his stomach to counteract the effect of the food inside. In New Zealand a taboo could be taken off by a child or grandchild. The tabooed person touched the child and took drink or food from its hands ; the man was then free, but the child was tabooed for the rest of the day. A Maori chief who be- came taboo by touching the sacred head of his child was disinfected, so to speak, as follows. On the following day (the ceremony could not be performed sooner) he rubbed his hands over with potato or fern root which had been cooked over a saered fire; this food was then carried to the head of the family in the female line, who ate it, whereupon the hands became noa. The taboo was removed from a new-born child in a somewhat similar manner. The father took the child in his arms and touched its head, back, &c., with some fern root which had been roasted over a sacred fire; next morning a similar ceremony was performed on the child by its eldest relative in the female line; the child was then noa, «e., free from taboo. Another inode of removing the taboo was to pass a consecrated piece of wood over the right shoulder, round the loins, and back again over the left shoulder, after which the stick was broken in two and either buried, or burned, or cast into the sea.

Besides the taboos already described there were others which Private any one could impose. In New Zealand, if a man wished to pre- taboos serve his house, crop, garden, or anything clse, he made it taboo; similarly he could appropriate a forest tree or a piece of drift timber, &c., by tying a mark to it or giving it a chop with his axe. In Samoa for a similar purpose a inan would set up a representation of, ¢.g., a sea pike or a shark, believing that any one who meddled with property thus protected would be killed by a sea pike or shark the next time he bathed. Somewhat similar to this was what may be called the village taboo. In the autumn the kwmera (sweet potato) fields belonging to the village were taboo till the crop was gathered, so that no stranger could approach them; and all persons engaged in getting in the

erop were taboo, and eould therefore for the time engage in no other oeeupation. Similar taboos were laid on woods during the hunting season and on rivers during the fishing season.

On looking over the various taboos mentioned above a: we are tempted to divide them into two general classes, — fieatiat taboos of privilege and taboos of disability. Thus the taboo of chiefs, priests, and temples might be described as a privilege, while the taboo imposed on the sick and on persons who had come in contact with the dead might be regarded as a disability ; and we might say acccordingly that the former rendered persons and things sacred or holy, while the latter rendered them unclean or accursed. But that no such distinction ought to be drawn is clear from the fact that the rules to be observed in the one case and in the other were identical. On the other hand, it is true that the opposition of sacred and accursed, clean and

Lo- gidilevo-

i ie BO O

unclean, which plays so important a part in the later history of religion, did in fact arise by differentiation from the single root idea of taboo, which includes and reconciles them both and by reference to which alone their history and mutual relation are intelligible.

The original character of the taboo must be looked for not in its civil but in its religious element. It was not the creation of a legislator but the gradual outgrowth of animistic beliefs, to which the ambition and avarice of chiefs and priests afterwards gave an artificial extension. But in serving the cause of avarice and am bition it subserved the progress of civilization, by fostering conceptions of the rights of property and the sanctity of the marriage tie,— conceptions which in time grew strong enough to stand by themselves and to fling away the crutch of superstition which in earlier days had been their sole support. For we shall scarcely err in believing that even in advanced societies the moral sentiments, in so far as they are merely sentiments and are not based on an induction from experience, derive much of their force from an original system of taboo. Thus on the taboo were grafted the golden fruits of law and morality, while the parent stem

dwindled slowly into the sour crabs and empty husks of popular superstition on which the swine of modern society are still content to feed.

It remains to indicate briefly some facts which point to a wide diffusion under various names of customs similar to the taboo, As might have been expected, the taboo is

‘found, though in a less marked form, among the Micro-

nesians, Malays, and Dyaks, all of whom are ethnologically connected with the Polynesians. In Micronesia both the name and the institution occur: the inhabitants of certain islands are forbidden to eat certain animals and the fruits of certain trees; temples and great chiefs are tabooed from the people ; any one who fishes must previously for twenty-four hours abstain from women;} in conversing with women men are not allowed to use certain words, &c. Again, the Malays have the custom, though apparently not the name. In Timor and the neighbouring islands the word for taboo is pamali (or pomali); and during the long festival which celebrates a successful head-hunt the man who has secured the most heads is pamali; he must not sleep with his wife nor eat from his own hand, but is fed by women. Pamali is a Javanese word, and had originally in Java and Sumatra the same meaning that it now bears in Timor. In Celebes a mother after child- birth was pamali. Amongst the Dyaks of Borneo the pamali (called by the Land Dyaks porikh) is regularly practised at the planting of rice, harvest home, when the cry of the gazelle is heard behind, in times of sickness, after a death, &c. At the harvest home it is observed by the whole tribe, no one being allowed to enter or leave the village. The house where a death has taken place is pamali for twelve days, during which no one may enter it and nothing may be taken out of it. A tabooed Dyak may not bathe, meddle with fire, follow his ordinary occu- pation, or leave his house. Certain families are forbidden to eat the flesh of particular animals, as cattle, goats, and snakes. The taboo is often indicated by a bundle of spears ora rattan. The Motu of New Guinea also have the taboo: a man is tabooed after handling a corpse. He then keeps apart from his wife; his food is cooked for him by his sister; and he may not touch it with his hands. After three days he bathes and is free.2 But the Motu appear to be Malayo-Polynesians, not Melanesians proper.

‘the Fraser Lake tribes in North America.‘

7

ished in Fiji. It is observed in New Caledonia in cases of death, to preserve a crop, &e. According to the Rev. R. H. Codrington, there is this distinction between the Mel- anesian and the Polynesian taboo, that for the former there is no supernatural sanction : the man who breaks a taboo simply pays compensation to the person on whose tabooed property he has transgressed. But Mr R. Parkinson states that in New Britain (now New Pomerania) a person who violates a taboo-mark set on a plantation, tree, &c., is supposed to be “attacked by sickness and misfortune.” To go through the similar customs observed by savages all over the world would be endless; we may, however, note that a regular system of taboo is said to exist among some of the wild tribes of the Naga Hills in India, and that the rules not to touch food with the hands or the head with the hands are observed by tabooed women among one of In fact some of the most characteristic features of taboo—the prohibi- tion to eat certain foods and the disabilities entailed by childbirth and by contact with the dead, together with a variety of ceremonies for removing these disabilities— have been found more or less amongst all primitive races. It is more interesting to mark the traces of such customs among civilized peoples, e.g., Jews, Greeks, and Romans.

Amongst the Jews—(1) the vow of the Nazarite (Num. Amongst vi, 1-21) presents the closest resemblance to the Polynesian the Jews.

taboo. The meaning of the word Nazarite is “one separated or consecrated,” and this, as we saw (p. 15), is precisely the meaning of taboo, It is the head of the Nazarite that is especially consecrated (v. 7, “his separation unto God is upon his head”; v. 9, “defile the head of his separation” ; v. 11, “shall hallow his head”), and so it. was in the taboo. The Nazarite might not partake of certain meats and drinks, nor shave his head, nor touch a dead body,—all rules of taboo, If a person died suddenly beside him, this was said to ‘defile the head of his separation,” and the same effect, expressed in the same language, would apply to a tabooed Polynesian in similar circumstances. Again, the mode of terminating the vow of the Nazarite corresponds with the mode of breaking a taboo. He shaved his head at the door of the sanctuary and the priest placed food in his hands, either of

which acts would have been a flagrant violation of a Polynesian taboo. (2) Some of the rules for the observance of the Sabbath are identical with rules of strict taboo ; such are the prohibitions to do any work, to kindle a fire in the house, to cook food, and to go out of doors (Exod. xxxv. 2, 3; xvi. 23, 29). The Essenes strictly observed the rules to cook no food and light no fire on the Sabbath (Josephus, Bell. Jud, ii. 8,9). (8) Any one who touched a dead body was “unclean” for seven days; what he touched became unclean, and could communicate its uncleanness to any other person who touched it. At the end of seven days the unclean person washed his clothes, bathed himself, and was clean (Num, xix. 11, 14, 19, 22), In Polynesia, as we have seen, any one who touched a dead body was taboo; what he touched became taboo, and could communicate the infection to any one who touched it; and one of the ceremonies for getting rid of the taboo was washing. (4) A Jewish mother after childbirth was unclean (Lev. xii.); a Polynesian mother was taboo. (5) A great many animals were unclean, and could infect with their uncleanness whatever they touched; earthen vessels touched by certain of them were broken. Certain animals were taboo in Polynesia, and utensils which had contracted

a taint of taboo were in some cases broken.

Amongst the Greeks a survival, or at least a reminiscence, Amongst of a system of taboo is perhaps to be found in certain the applications of the epithets “sacred” and “divine ” in Gteeks.

However, in Melanesia also we find the taboo. It flour-

1 For other examples of taboos (especially injunctions to continence) among various peoples in connexion with fishing, hunting, and trading, see Turner, Samoa, p. 849; Aymonier, Notes sur les Laos, pe 2 se, 25, 26, 118, 141; W. Powell, Wanderings in a Wild Country, p. 207; Report of International Expedition to Point Barrow, Alaska, p. 39, Washington, 1885. * Journ. Anthrop. Inst., viii. p. 370.

a a ee, a 3 Journ, Anthrop. Inst., xi. p. 71; Dalton, Descriptive Ethnology of Bengal, p. 48. 4 Journ. ee vil. p. 206, Pe 6 == &

Homer, Thus a king or a chief is sacred (iepi ts TyAe- padxoro, Od., ii, 409, xviii. 405, ke. ; iepov pevos ’AXAKuvdo10, Od., vii. 167, vill. 2, &c.) or divine (dios “Odvaceds, dc. ; ’Odveajos Getoro, Il. ii. 335, &e. ; Oetwv Bacrdjov, Od., iv. 691); his chariot is sacred (J/., xvii. 464), and his house is divine (Od., iv. 43). An army is sacred (Od., xxiv. 81), and so are sentinels on duty (//., x. 56; xxiv. 681). This resembles the war-taboo of the Polynesians; on a warlike expedition all Maori warriors are taboo, and the permanent petsonal taboo of the chiefs is increased twofold: they are ‘“‘tabooed an inch thick.” The Jews also seem to have had a war-taboo, for when out on the war-path they ab- stained from women (1 Sam. xxi. 4, 5), —a rule strictly observed by Maori warriors on a dangerous expedition. The Dards, who with the kindred Siah Posh K4firs on the southern slopes of the Hindu Kush—tribes which probably of all Aryan peoples retain a social state most nearly ap- proximating to that of the primitive Aryans—abstain from sexual intercourse during the whole of the fighting season, from May to September ; and “victory to the chastest” is said to be a maxim of all the fighting tribes from the Hindu Kush to Albania! The same rule of continence in war is observed by some Indian tribes of North America.? In Homer a fish is sacred (J/., xvi. 407), and Plato points out that during a campaign the Homeric warriors never ate fish (/tep., 404 B). Even in time of peace the men of Homer’s day only ate fish when reduced to the verge of starvation (Od., iv. 363 sq.; xii. 329 sg.). The Siah Posh Kafirs refuse to eat fish, although their rivers abound in it.* The Hindus of Vedic times appear not to have eaten fish It is probable, therefore, that among the early Aryans, as among primitive peoples in various parts of the world, the eating of fish was tabooed. Again, the threshing-floor, the winnowing-fan, and meal are all sacred (//., v. 499; H. Merc., 21, 63; J/., xi. 631). Similarly in New Zealand a taboo was commonly laid on places where farming operations were going on; and among the Basutos, before the corn on the threshing-floor can be touched, a religious ceremony has to be performed, and all “defiled” persons are carefully kept from seeing it.® Although the Homeric folk ate swine, the epithet “divine ” commonly applied to a swineherd in Homer may point to a time wheh pigs were sacred or tabooed. In Crete pigs were certainly sacred and not eaten (Atheneus, 376a), and apparently at Pessinus also (Pausanias, vii. 17, 10). Amongst the Jews andSyrians, of course, pigs were tabooed ; and it was a moot question with the Greeks whether the Jews abhorred or worshipped pigs (Plut., Qucest. Conv., iv. 5).

The pigs kept in the great temple at Hierapolis were neither sacrificed nor eaten ; some people thought that they were sacred, others that they were unclean, évayéas (Lucian, De Dea Syria, 54). Here we have an exact taboo, the ideas of sacredness and uncleanness being indistinguish- able. Similarly by the Ojibways the dog is regarded as “unclean and yet as in some respects holy.”® The diver- gence of the two conceptions is illustrated by the history of the cow among different branches of the Aryan race: the Hindus regard this animal as sacred; the Shin caste among the Dards hold it in abhorrence.? The general word for taboo in Greek is dyos, which occurs in the sense both of “sacredness” and of “ pollution”; and the same is true of the adjective dyss and of the rare adjective

1 Reclus, Nouv. Géog. Univ., viii. p. 126.

2 Schoolcraft, Indian Tribes, iv. p. 63; Adair, Hist. of American Indians, p. 163. Cp. Morse, Report on Indian Affairs, p. 180 sq., and Bancroft, Native Races of the Paetfie States, i. p. 189.

3 Elphinstone, Kingdom of Caubul, ii. 379, ed. 1839 ; Journ. Ethnol. Soe., i. p. 192. 4 Zimmer, Altindisehes Leben, p. 271.

® Casalis, The Basutos, p. 251 sq.

§ Kohl, Aiteht-Gami, p. 88, Eng. trans.

7 F. Drew, The Jummoo and Kashmir Territories, p. 428; Biddulph, Tribes of the ITindoo Koosh, p. 51.

dvayns, “tabooed” (Bekker’s Anecdota Graca, 212, 32; Harpocration, s.v. avayets). Usually, however, the Greeks discriminated the two senses, dyvés being devoted to the sense of “sacred” and evayys to that of “unclean” or “accursed.” ‘*To taboo” is ayifew ; ‘to observe a taboo” is dyvevew ; and the state or season of taboo is dyveia or éyioreia, The rules of the Greek dyveta correspond closely to those of the Polynesian taboo, consisting in “ purifications, washings, and sprinklings, and in abstain- ing from mourning for the dead, child-bed, and all pollu- tions, and in refraining from certain foods,” &c.§

Amongst the Romans, who preserved more traces of Amongst primitive barbarism than the Greeks, the flamen dialis the

was hedged in by a perfect network of taboos. He was not allowed to ride or even touch a horse, nor to look at an army under arms, nor to wear a ring which was not broken, nor to have a knot on any part of his garments ; no fire, except a sacred fire, could be taken out of his house; he might not touch or even name a goat, a dog, raw meat, beans, and ivy ; he might not walk under a vine; the feet of his bed had to be daubed with mud ; his hair could be cut only by a freeman, and his hair and nails when cut had to be buried under a lucky tree ; he might not touch a corpse, &. His wife, the flaminica, was also subject to taboos: at certain festivals she might not comb her hair ; if she heard thunder, she was taboo (feriata) till she had offered an expiatory sacrifice. The similarity of some of these rules to the Polynesian taboo is obvious. The Roman feriz were periods of taboo ; no work might be done during them except works of necessity: e.g., an ox might be pulled out of a pit or a tottering roof supported. Any person who mentioned Salus, Semonia, Seia, Segetia, or Tutilina was tabooed (ferias observabat).? The Latin sacer is exactly “taboo”; for it means either “sacred” or “ accursed.” Literature.—On the Polynesian taboo, see Cook, Voyages, vol. v. p. 427 sq., vol. vii. p. 146 sq. (ed. 1809); G. F. Angas, Savage Seenes in Australia and New Zealand, passim ; W. Yate, New Zealand, p. 84 sq. ; Ellis, Polynesian Researehes, 2d ed., vol. iv. p. 385 sq.; Langsdorff, Reise wm die Welt, i. p. 114 sqg.; Mariner, Tonga Islands, i. p. 141 note, ii. pp. 82, 220sg.; Turner, Nineteen Years in Polynesia, p. 294 sq. ; Id., Samoa, p. 185 sq.; Klemm, Cultwr- gesehiehte, iv. p. 872 sq. ; Waitz-Gerland, Anthropologie der Natwr- Volker, vi. pp. 343-363 ; Shortland, Z’raditions and Superstitions of the New Zealanders, p. 101 sq.; Id., Maori Religion and Mythology, p. 25 sq.; Old New Zealand, by a Pakeha Maori, chapters vii.-xii. ; Polack, Manners and Customs of the New Zealanders, i. p. 275 sq. ; Diefenbach, Travels in New Zealand, ii. p. 100 sqg.; R. Taylor, Mew Zealand, p. 163 sg. On the taboo in Micronesia, see Waitz-Gerland, op. eit., Vv. pt. ii. p. 147 sq. ; among the Dyaks and Malays, see Id., vi. p. 354 sq.; Low, Sarawak, pp. 260-262 ; Bock, Head-Hunters of Borneo, pp. 214-280 ; Spencer St John, Life in the Forests of the

-Far East, i. p. 184 sg.; A. R. Wallace, The Malay Archipelago, p.

196 ; in Melanesia, Williams, Fiji and the Fijians, i. p. 284 sq. (ed. 1860); J. E. Erskine, The Western Pacifie, p. 254; Vinccendon- Dumoulin and Desgraz, Jles Marquwises, p. 259 sq.; Journ. Anthrop. TMBty, Xs pp. 279, 290; Ch. Lemire, Nouvelle Calédonie, Paris, 1884, p. 117; R. Parkinson, Im Bismarek-Archipel, Leipsic, 1887, p. 144, (J. G. FR.) TABRIZ, TAvRIS, or TAVRIZ, a town of Persia, capital of the province of Adarbaijén (Azerbijan, ancient Atropatene), is situated in 38° 4’ N. lat. and 46° 18’ E. long., more than 4000 feet above the sea, at the eastern end of a wide valley, through which runs a river whose waters irrigate the gardens that encircle the town. In 1812 the walls had a circumference of 34 miles. Overlooking the valley on the north-east and east are bold bare rocks, while to the south rises the more regular peak of Sahand. The town possesses few buildings of note, and of the extensive ruins but few merit attention. Mounsey in 1866 mentioned the blue mosque ; the ark or citadel, containing the palace of the heir-apparent,—a large frowning building near the centre of the town; the Great Maidan, an open square;

8 Diogenes Laertius, viii. 1, 88; cp. Plut., Quest. Oonv., v. 10. 9 Macrobius, Sat., i. 16, 8.

TA C—

and the bazaars. The mosque, which he ascribes to Shah Abbas, is that of the Turcoman Jahan Shah (1410-1468). Abbas Mirza converted the citadel intoan arsenal. Among the ruins of old Tauris the sepulchre of the Mogul sultan, Ghazan Khan, is no longer to be distinguished, except as part of a huge tumulus. It is situated about 2 miles south-west from the modern town, but far within the original boundaries. The “spacious arches of stone and other vestiges of departed majesty” with which Porter found it surrounded in 1818 were possibly remains of the college (madrasa) and monastery (2éwiya) where Ibn Batuta found shelter during his visit to the locality. In spite of the cholera visitation of 1822 and other occasional ravages of sickness, and the severe cold of winter, the climate of Tabriz is proverbially healthy. Its orchards and fruit gardens have a high reputation, and its running streams make amends for ill-paved and narrow streets and sorely defective municipal arrangements. General Schindler estimated the population in 1886 at about 170,000,—a number agreeing with the latest

local census. The same authority states that the city contains 8 tombs of imdmzddehs, 318 mosques, 100 public baths, 166 cara- vanserais, 3922 shops, 28 guard-houses, and 5 Christian (Armenian) churches ; but this account must comprise in some of its items more buildings than are actually in use. There are said to be nearly 3000 Armenians in the place. Tabriz is a city of extensive commerce, a great emporium for the trade of Persia on the west, and the special mart between Turkey, Russia, and Persia. It possesses an international telegraph station, and the line passes hence to Tiflis and Europe on one side and to Teheran on the other. Subsidiary lines have been constructed to near Astara on the Caspian (186 miles long) and to Saujbulak on the Kurdish frontier (125 miles long). Eastwick in 1860 estimated the value of the exports to Turkey at about £600,000 and to Russia at about £400,000, exclusive of smuggling. The chief imports were British, and some Swiss—coloured eotton goods, grey calicoes, and broadcloth,—with miscellaneous goods from Germany. In 1881 there was a marked improvement in the trade of Tabriz, mainly in increased imports from Constantinople. In 1885 the imports amounted to £721,730 and the exports to £306,687. The principal items of the former were cottons (from England), woollen cloth (from Austria and Germany), sugar (from France), and tea (from Holland); of the latter dried fruits (to Russia) and silk (to France, Austria, and Switzerland), There are lead mines near Tabriz, and cobalt and copper are obtainable from the Sahand. There is perhaps no city in Persia on which so much has been recorded by native and foreign writers as Tabriz. Among the former Ibn Batuta, the Arab, and Hamd Ullah, the Persian, are notable. Of the latter may be mentioned Chardin, Porter, Ouseley, Tancoigne, Morier, Du Pre, Malcolm, Lady Sheil, Eastwick, Moun- sey, Schindler, and Madame Dieulafoy (in Towr dw Monde, 1888). The naine Tabriz has been a subject of much comment and con- jecture, but there is no doubt that it is taken from the ancient name of Tauris. The history of Tabriz is a long and painful record of sieges and conflicts, of earthquakes and destruction by natural causes. Of late years it has recovered to some extent its former high position, and is in many respects a worthy rival to the capital. TACITUS. The famous Roman historian Tacitus, who ranks beyond dispute in the highest place among men of letters of all ages, lived in the latter half of the first and in the early part of the 2d century of our era, through the reigns of the emperors Nero, Galba, Otho, Vitellius, Vespasian, Titus, Domitian, Nerva, Trajan. All we know of his personal

history is from allusions to himself in his own works, and from eleven letters addressed to him by his very intimate friend the younger Pliny. The exact year of his birth is a matter of inference, but it may be approximately fixed near the close of the reign of Claudius, from 52 to 54 a.p. Pliny indeed speaks of Tacitus and himself as being “much of an age”! (prope- modum xquales), though himself born in 61 or 62, but he must have been some years junior to his friend, who began, he tells us,? his official life with a questorship under Vespasian in 78 or 79, at which time he must have

1 Pliny, Epp., vi. 20. 2THistm 1. 1.

been twenty-five years of age at least. Of his family and birthplace we know nothing certain ; we can infer nothing from his name Cornelius, which was then very widely extended ; but the fact of his early promotion seems to point to respectable antecedents, and it may be that his father was one Cornelius Tacitus, who had been a pro- curator in one of the divisions of Gaul, to whom allusion is made by the elder Pliny in his Natural History (vii. 76). But it is all matter of pure conjecture, as it also is whether his “przenomen” was Publius or Caius. He has come down to us simply as Cornelius Tacitus. The most interesting facts about him to us are that he was an eminent pleader at the Roman bar, that he was an eye- witness of the “reign of terror” during the last three years of Domitian, and that he was the son-in-law of the great and good Julius Agricola, the humane and enlightened governor of Britain. This honourable connexion, which testifies to his high moral character, may very possibly have accelerated his promotion, which he says * was begun by Vespasian, augmented by Titus, and still further ad- vanced by Domitian, under whom we find him presiding as praetor at the celebration of the secular games in 88, and a member of one of the old priestly colleges, to which good family was an almost indispensable passport. Next year, it seems, he left Rome, and was absent till 93 on some provincial business, and it is possible that in these four years he may have made the acquaintance of Germany and its peoples. His father-in-law died the year of his return to Rome. In the concluding passage of his Lzfe of Agricola he tells us plainly that he witnessed the judicial murders of many of Rome’s best citizens from 93 to 96, and that

being himself a senator he felt almost a guilty complicity in them. ‘Our hands,” he says, “dragged Helvidius to prison ; we were steeped in Senecio’s innocent blood.” # With the emperor Nerva’s accession his life be- came bright and prosperous, and so it continued through the reign of Nerva’s successor, Trajan, he himself, in the opening passage of his Agricola, describing this as. a “singularly blessed time” (beatissimum seculum) ; but the hideous reign of terror had stamped itself ineffaceably on his soul, and when he sat down to write his History he could see little but the darkest side of imperialism. To his friend the younger Pliny we are indebted for all we know (and this is but trifling) about his later hfe. He was advanced to the consulship in 97, in succession to a highly distinguished man, Virginius Rufus, on whom he delivered in the senate a funeral eulogy. ‘“‘The good fortune of Virginius,” says Pliny,® “was crowned by having the most eloquent of panegyrists.” In 99 he was associated with Pliny in the prosecution of a great political offender, Marius Priscus, under whom the provincials of Africa had suffered grievous wrongs. The prosecution was successful, and we have Pliny’s testimony ® that Tacitus spoke with his characteristic dignity. Both received a special vote of thanks from the senate for their conduct of the case. Of his remaining years we know nothing, and we may presume that he devoted them exclusively to literary work. It would seem that he lived to the close of Trajan’s reign, as he seems’ to hint at that emperor’s ex- tension of the empire by his successful Eastern campaigns from 115 to 117. Whether he outlived Trajan is matter of conjecture. It is worth noticing that the emperor Tacitus in the 3d century claimed descent from him, and directed that ten copies of his works should be made every year and deposited in the public libraries. He also had a tomb built to his memory, which was destroyed by order of Pope Pius V. in the latter part of the 16th cen- tury. Tacitus, as we gather from one of Pliny’s letters,®

3 Hist., i, 1. 4 Agricola, 45.

5 Hpp., ii. 1. 6 Hpp., ii. 11. 7 Ann, ii. 61; iv. 4

8 Epp., ix. 28.

had a great reputation during his lifetime. On one occasion a Roman knight, who sat by his side in the circus at the celebration of some games, asked him, “Are you from Italy or from the provinces?” His answer was, “You know me from your reading.” To which the knight replied, ‘‘ Are you then Tacitus or Pliny?”

Pliny, as we see clearly from several passages in his letters, had the highest opinion of his friend’s ability and worth. He consults him about a school which he thinks of establishing at Comum (Como), his birthplace, and asks him to look out for suitable teachers and professors. And he pays! him the high compliment, “I know that your fistories will be immortal, and this makes me the more anxious that my name should appear in them.”

The following is a list of Tacitus’s remaining works, arranged in their probable chronological order, which may be approximately inferred from internal evidence :—(1) the Dialogue on Orators, about 76 or 77; (2) the Life of Agricola, 97 or 98; (3) the Germany, 98, published probably in 99; (4) the Histories (Historiz), completed probably by 115 or 116, the last years of Trajan’s reign (he must have been at work on them for many years) ; (5) the Annals, his latest work probably, written in part perhaps along with the Histories, and completed subse- quently to Trajan’s reign, which he may very well have outlived.

The Dialogue on Orators discusses, in the form of a conversation which Tacitus professes to have heard (as a young man) between some eminent men at the Roman bar, the causes of the decay of eloquence under the empire. There are some interesting remarks in it on the change for the worse that had taken place in the edueation of Roman lads,

The Life of Agricola, short as it is, has always been considered an admirable specimen of biography. The great man with all his grace and dignity is brought vividly before us, and the sketch we have of the history of our island under the Romans gives a special interest to this little work.

The Germany, the full title of which is ‘‘Concerning the geography, the manners and customs, and the tribes of Germany,” describes with many suggestive hints the general character of the German peoples, and dwells particularly on their fierce and inde- pendent spirit, which the author

evidently felt to be a standing menace to the empire. The geography is its weak point; this was no doubt gathered from vague hearsay.

The Histories, as originally composed in twelve books, brought the history of the empire from Galba in 69 down to the close of Domitian's reign in 97. The first four books, and a small fragment of the fifth, giving us a very minute account of the eventful year of revolution, 69, and the brief reigns of Galba, Otho, and Vitellius, are all that remain to us. In the fragment of the fifth book we have a curious and interesting account of the Jewish nation, of their character, customs, and religion, from a cultivated Roman's point of view, which we see at once was a strongly prejudiced one.

The Annals—a title for whieh there is no aneient authority, and which there is no reason for supposing Tacitus gave distinctively to the work—record the history of the emperors of the Julian line from Tiberius to Nero, comprising thus a period from 14 A.D. to 68. Of these, nine books have come down to us entire; of books v., xi., and xvi. we have but fragments, and the whole of the reign of Caius (Caligula), the first six years of Claudius, and the last three years of Nero are wanting. Out of a period of fifty-four years we thus have the history of forty years.

An attempt has been made recently to prove that the Annals are a forgery by Poggio Bracciolini, an Italian scholar of the 15th ecntury, but their genuineness is confirmed by their agreement 2 in various minute details with coins and inscriptions discovered since that period. Another important fact has been brought to light. Ruodolphus, a monk of a monastery at Fulda in Hesse- Cassel, writing in the 9th century, says that Cornelius Tacitus speaks of the river known to moderns as the Weser as the Visurgis. In the Annals as they have come down to us we find the Visurgis mentioned five times in the first two books, whence we may con- clude that a manuscript of them was in existence in the 9th century. Add to this the testimony of Jerome that Tacitus wrote in thirty books the lives of the Cesars, and the evidence of style, and there cannot be much doubt that in the Annals we have a genuine work of Tacitus.

1 Epp., vii. 33. 2 See Introduction to vol. i. of Furneaux's edition of the Annals of Tacitus, Clarendon Press Series, 1884.

TY AVC 1 FY Ws

Much of the history of the period described by him, especially of the earlier Caesars, must have been obscure and locked up with the emperor's private papers and memoranda. As we should ex- pect, there was a vast amouut of floating gossip, which an historian would have to sift and utilize as best he might. Tacitus, as a man of good social position, no doubt had access to the best information, and must have talked matters over with the most eminent men of the day. There were several writers and chron- iclers, whom he occasionally cites but not very often; there were memoirs of distinguished pcrsons,—those, for example of the younger Agrippina, of Thrasea, and Helvidius. There were several collections of letters, like those of the younger Pliny; a number, too, of funeral orations; and the ''acta senatus" and the ''acta populi" or "acta diurna," the first a record of proceedings in the senate, the latter a kind of gazette or journal. Thus there were the materials for history in considerable abundance, and Tacitus was certainly a man who knew how to turn them to good account. He has given us a striking, and on the whole doubtless a true, picture of the empire in the 1st century. He wrote, it may be admitted, with a political bias and a decided turn for satire, but he assuredly wrote with a high aim, and we may accept his own account of it: ''I regard? it as history's highest function to rescue inerit from oblivion, and to hold up as a terror to base words and actions the reprobation of posterity." Amid great evils he recognized the existence of truly noble virtues even in his own degenerate age. Still for the most part he writes as a man who felt deeply that the world was altogether 'out of joint"; the empire was in itself in his view a huge blunder, and answerable more or less directly for all the diseases of society, for all the demoralization and corruption of the great world of Rome, though as to the provinces he admits that they were better off in many ways under the emperors than they had been in the last days of the republic. But his political sympathies were certainly with the old aristocratic and senatorian régime, with the Rome of the Scipios and the Fabii; for him the greatness of his country lay in the past, and, though he felt her to be still great, her glory was, he thought, deeidedly on the wane. He was, in fact, a political idealist, and could hardly help speaking disparagingly of his own day. In his Germany he dwells on the contrast between barbarian freedom and simplieity on the one hand and the servility and degeneracy of Roman life on the other. Yet he had a strong

and sincere patriotism, which invariably made him minimize a Roman defeat and the number of Roman slain. There seems to have been a strange tinge, too, of superstition about him, and he could not divest himself of some belief * in astrology and revelations of the future through omens and portents, though he held these were often misunderstood and misinterpreted by charlatans and im- postors. On the whole he appears to have inclined to the philo- sophical theory of ‘‘necessitarianism,” that every man’s future is fixed from his birth; but we must not fasten on him any particular theory of the world or of the universe. Sometimes he speaks as a be- liever in a divine overruling Providence, and we may say confidently that with the Epicurean doetrine he had no sort of sympathy.

His style, whatever judgment may be passed on it, is certainly that of a man of genius, and cannot fail to make a deep impression on the studious reader. Tacitean brevity has become proverbial, and with this are closely allied an occasional obscurity and a rhetor- ical affectation which his warmest admirers must admit. He has been compared to Carlyle, and there are certainly resemblances between the two both in style and tone of thought. Both affect singularity of expression ; both incline to an nnhopeful and cynical view of the world. Tacitus was probably never a popular author ; to be understood and appreciated he must be read again and again, or the point of some of his acutest remarks will be quite missed. He has been several times translated, but it has always been felt that he presents very great, if not insuperable, difficulties to the translator.

Murphy’s translation (a paraphrase we should call it) is perhaps one of the best known ; it was published early in the present century. On this was based the so-called Oxford translation, published by Bohn in a revised cdition. The latest translation is that by Messrs Church and Brodribb. There is on the whole a good French translation by Louandre. The editions of Tacitus are very num. erous. Among more recent editions, the best and most useful are Orelli’s (1859); Ritter’s (1864); Nipperdey’s (1879); Furncaux’s (Annals, i.-vi.), vol. i., Clarendon Press, 1884 e (W. J. B.)

TACITUS, M. Crauprius, Roman emperor from Sep- tember 25, 275, to April 276, was a native of Interamna (Terni) in Umbria, and was born about the year 200. In the course of his long life he discharged the duties of

various civil offices, including that of consul in 273, with universal respect. Six months after the assassination of Aurelian he was chosen by the senate to succeed him, and the choice was cordially ratified by the army. During his

brief reign he set on foot some domestic reforms, and

3 Ann., ili. 65. EFM iijios Wily Pall, DP

sought to revive the authority of the senate, but, after a victory over the Alani near the Palus Meotis, he succumbed to the hardships and fatigues of his new duties at Tyana in Cappadocia. Tacitus, besides being a man of immense wealth (which he bequeathed to the state), had considerable literary culture, and was proud to claim descent from the historian, whose works he caused to be transcribed at the public expense and placed in the public libraries.

TACTICS. See War.

TADMOR. See PALMyRa.

TAFILELT, a large oasis in Morocco (see vol. xvi. p. 832). The principal place is Abuam.

TAGANROG, a seaport of southern Russia, on the northern shore of the Sea of Azoff, in the government of Ekaterinoslaff, and nearly 200 miles south-east of its chief town. It is built, principally of wood, on a low cape, and, with its extensive store-houses, exchange, and wholesale shops, has the aspect of an important commercial city. It is well provided with educational institutions for children, and has a library anda theatre. The imperial palace, where Alexander I. died in 1825, and the Greek monastery (under the patriarch of Jerusalem) are worthy of notice. The advantageous situation of Taganrog was well known as early as the 13th century, when Pisan merchants founded there a colony, Portus Pisanus, which, however, was des- tined soon to disappear during the great migrations of the Mongols and Turks. An attempt to obtain possession of the promontory was made by

Peter I., but it was not definitely annexed by the Russians until seventy years afterwards (1769). Its commercial importance dates from the second half of the present century ; in 1870 its popu- lation had risen to 38,000, and after it had been brought into railway connexion with Kharkoff and Voronezh, and thus with the fertile provinces of south and south-east Russia, the increase was still more rapid, the number reaching 63,025 in 1882,—Greeks, Jews, Armenians, and West-Europeans being important elements. Notwith- standing the disadvantages of its open roadstead, the foreign trade of Taganrog rapidly expanded, the annual value of the exports having recently reached £2,500,000. The chief article of export being corn, the trade of the city, depending on the crops in south Russia, is subject to great fluctuations. Linseed and other oil-bearing grains are also important articles of commerce, as well as tallow and butter. The imports, which consist chiefly of fruits (dried and fresh), wine, oil, and coffee, are much smaller than the exports; and of the 989 ships (499,500 tons) that entered the port in 1885 no fewer than 775 (446,500 tons) were in ballast. The coasting trade, chiefly with Rostoff, was represented in the same year by 1321 vessels (224,000 tons) entering and 1343 vessels clearing.

The roadstead of Taganrog is very shallow, and exposed to winds which cause great variations in the height of the water ; it is, more- over, rapidly silting up. At the quay the depth of water is only 8 to 9 feet, and large ships have to lie 5 to 18 miles from the town.

Taganrog, with the surrounding territory of 137,000 acres, having a population of nearly 30,000, living in a dozen villages, constitutes a separate township, and, though reckoned to the Rostoff district of Ekaterinoslaff, has a separate governor and administration.

TAGLIACOZZI, Gasparo (1546-1599), a surgeon of wide repute, was born at Bologna in 1546, and studied at that university under Cardan, taking his degree in philo- sophy and medicine at the age of twenty-four. He was appointed professor of surgery and afterwards of anatomy, and achieved notoriety at least, and the fame of a wonder- worker. He died at Bologna on November 7, 1599.

His principal work is entitled De Curtorum Chirurgia per Insitionem Libri Duo (Venice, 1597, fol.); it was reprinted in the following year under the

title of Chirurgia Nova de Narium, Aurium, Labiorumque Defectu per Insitionem Cutis ex Humero, arte hactenus omnibus ignota, sarciendo (Frankfort, 1598, 8vo).

21

The latter title sufficiently indicates the art which he professed of repairing nose, ears, and lips by a species of ingrafting of skin from the arm, that member being kept in apposition with the part to be repaired until such time as the semi-detached graft had formed its new vascular conuexions. His Latinized name of Taliacotius is well known to the readers of Butler (Hudibras, i. 1), whose hum- orous representation of-the nature of the Taliacotian art is, how- ever, in some important particulars inaccurate.

TAGLIONI, Marie (1809-1884), a ballet dancer, was the daughter of Filippo Taglioni, an Italian master of the ballet, and was born at Stockholm 23d April 1809. She was trained by her father, who in his discipline is said to have been pitilessly severe. It was to his care and her own special talent for dancing that she owed her success, for she possessed no remarkable personal attractions. Her first appearance was at Vienna, 10th June 1822, in a ballet of which her father was the author, La Léception dune jeune nymphe c la cour de Terpsichore. Her success was immediate, and was repeated in the chief towns of Germany. On 23d July 1827 she made her debut at the Opera House, Paris, in the Ballet de Stcilien, and aroused a furore of enthusiasm. Her style was entirely new, and may be termed ideal as opposed to the realistic and volup- tuous ballet previously in vogue. Among her more remark- able performances were the dancing of the Tyrolienne in Guillaume Tell and of the pas de fascination in Meyerbeer’s Robert le Diable. At this period the ballet was a much more important feature in opera than it is now, and in fact with her retirement in 1845 the era of grand ballets may be said to have closed. In 1832 she married Comte Gilbert de Voisins, by whom she had two children. Losing her savings in speculation, she afterwards supported her- self in London as a teacher of deportment, especially in connexion with the ceremony of presentation at court. During the last two years of her life she stayed with her son at Marseilles, where she died in April 1884. Taglioni is frequently mentioned in the novels of Balzac; and Thackeray, in Zhe Newcomes, says that the

young men of that epoch “ will never see anything so graceful as Taglioni in La Sylphide.”

TAGUS (Span. Z’ajo, Portug. Z’ejo), the longest river of the Iberian Peninsula. Its length is 566 miles, of which 192 are on or within the frontier of Portugal, and the area of its basin, according to Strelbitsky, is 31,864 square miles. The basin is comparatively narrow, and the Tagus, like the other rivers of the Iberian tableland, generally flows in a rather confined valley, often at the bottom of a rocky gorge at a considerable depth below the general level of the adjacent country. The source of the river is at the height of 5225 feet above sea-level, on the western slope of the Muela de San Juan, in the south-west of the province of Teruel. Thence it flows at first north- westwards, but, after receiving the Rio Gallo on the right, it flows west, and then south-west or west-south-west, which is its general direction for the rest of its course. The rocky gorges which occur in its course (the principal being where the river is overhung on the right bank by the ancient city of Toledo, and again at the Puente del Arzobispo, near the frontier of Estremadura) all belong to the Spanish section of the river, and in this section the stream is frequently encumbered by sandy shallows or broken by rocky rapids, and is not navigable except for short distances. The Portuguese section has a quieter current, and Villavelha, the highest point to which boats can ascend, lies within the Portuguese frontier. Regular river-navigation begins only at Abrantes, a few miles below which the Tagus is greatly widened by receiving on its right bank the impetuous Zezere from the Serra da Estrelha. Passing Santarem, the highest point to which the tide ascends, and the limit of navigation for large sailing vessels and steamers, the river divides below Salvaterra into two

See vol, Sais. Plate re

22

arms, called the Tejo Novo (the only one practicable for ships) and the Mar de Pedro, and these arms enclose a deltaic formation, a low tract of marshy alluvium known as the Lezirias, traversed by several natural canals or minor branches of the river. Both these arms enter the upper end of the fine Bay of Lisbon (114 miles long by about 7 broad), and the Tagus leaves this bay in the form of a channel 45 miles long by 2 wide (see vol. xiv. p. 692),

communicating with the ocean, but having unfortunately a bar at its mouth. On the north side of this channel stands the city of Lisbon. Only slight traces are still to be found of the gold for which the sands of the Tagus were anciently celebrated.

The narrower part of the Tagus basin lying to the south, the tributaries on the left bank are almost all mere brooks, most of which dry up in summer. The principal exception is the Rio Zatas or Sorraya, which, rising in the Serra d'Ossa, flows westwards across the plateau of Alemtejo, and joins the Mar de Pedro. The principal tributaries on the right bank, besides the Zezere, are the Jarama, descending from the tableland of New Castile a little below Aranjuez, the Alberche and the Tietar, which collect their head waters from opposite sides of the Sierra de Gredos, and the Alagon, from the rough and broken country between the Sierras de Gredos and Gata.

TAHITI ARCHIPELAGO. The eastern Polynesian island-group generally known as the Society Islands (Isles de la Société, or Tuiti) lies between 16° and 18° S. lat. and 148° and 155° W. long., and stretches for nearly 200 miles in a north-west and south-east direction; the total area does not exceed 650 square miles, of which 600 fall to Tahiti alone. To the east and north-east a channel of only 140 miles in breadth, but over 2000 fathoms in depth, separates this group from the great chain of the Low Islands, beyond which the ocean extends unbroken to America. 'To the west as far as F'iji— the main islands of which group lie between the same degrees of latitude as those of Tahiti— there are 1500 miles of open water. About 300 miles south- west lies Cook's Archipelago, and at the same distance south are the Austral Islands. To the north, excepting a few coral banks, there is open sea to Hawaii, a distance of 2600 miles.

Tahiti occupies a central position in the Pacific. Sydney lies about 3400 miles to the west and San Francisco about as far to the north-north-east. Honolulu, Noumea, and Auckland are each somewhere about 2400 miles away ; Panama is at a distance of 4600 miles.

The archipelago consists of eleven islands, which are divided into two clusters—the Leeward and the Wind- ward Islands—by a clear channel of 60 miles in breadth. The Leeward Islands, to which alone the name of Society Islands was given by Cook, are Tubai or Motuw-iti, a small

uninhabited lagoon island, the most northern of the whole archipelago ; Maupiti or Mau-rua—‘“ Double Mountain,” the most western; Bora-bora (Bola-Bola of the older navigators), or Faéarui; Tahaa; Raiatea or Ulietea (Boen- shea’s Princessa), the largest island of this cluster, and Huahine, which approach each other very closely, and are encircled by one reef. To the Windward Islands, the Georgian Islands of the early missionaries, belong Maiaiti or Tapamanu (Wallis’s Sir Charles Saunders Island and Boenshea’s Pelada); Morea or Eimeo (Wallis’s Duke of York Island and Boenshea’s San Domingo); Tahiti—Cook’s Otaheiti (probably Quiros’s Sagittaria; Wallis’s King

George’s Island, Bougainville’s Nouvelle Cythére, and Boenshea’s Isla d’Amat), the most southern and by far.

the largest of all the islands; Tetuara or Tetiaroa—“ The Distant Sea” (? Quiros’s Fugitiva; Bougainville’s Umaitia

and Boenshea’s ‘Tres Hermanos); and Matia or Maitea |

(? Quiros’s La Dezana, Wallis’s Osnaburg Island, Bougain-

T A H—

YT 2

ville’s Boudoir and Pic de la Boudeuse, and Boenshea’s San Cristoval), which is by a degree the most eastern of the archipelago. Bellinghausen, Scilly, and Lord Howe (Mopia) are three insignificant clusters of coral islets to the north- west and west, and, like Tubai aud Tetuara, are atolls. The length of the Tetuara reef ring is about six miles ; it bears ten palm-covered islets, of which several are in habited, and has one narrow boat-passage leading into the lagoon. With the exception just named, the islands, which agree very closely in geological structure, are mountainous, and present perhaps the most wonderful example of volcanic rocks to be found on the globe. They are formed of trachyte, dolerite, and basalt. There are raised coral beds high up the mountains, and lava occurs in a variety of forms, even in solid flows; but all active volcanic agency has so long ceased that the craters have been almost entirely obliterated by denudation. Hot springs

are unknown, and earthquakes are slight and rare. Nevertheless, under some of these flows remains of plants and insects of species now living in the islands have been found,—a proof that the formation as well as the denudation of the country is, geologically speaking, recent. In profile the islands are rugged. A high mountain, usually with very steep peaks, forms the centre, if not the whole island ; on all sides steep ridges descend to the sea, or, as is oftener the case, to a considerable belt of flat land. These mountains, excepting some stony crags and cliffs, are clothed with dense forest, the soil being exceptionally fertile. All voyagers agree that for varied beauty of form and colour the Society Islands are unsurpassed in the Pacific. Innumerable rills, fed by the fleeting clouds which circle round the high lands, gather in lovely streams, and, after heavy rains, torrents precipitate themselves in grand cascades from the mountain cliffs—a feature so striking as to have attracted the attention of all voyagers, from Wallis downwards. Round most of the islands there is a luxuriant coral growth ; but, as the reefs lie at no great distance, and follow the line of the coast, the inter- island channels are safer than those of the neighbouring Tuamotus, which exhibit the atoll formation in perhaps its fullest development, and in consequence have been justly called the “Low” or ‘ Dangerous Archipelago.” Maitea, which rises from the sea as an exceedingly abrupt cone, and Tapamanu appear to be the only islands which have not their fringing and more or less completely encircling barrier-reefs.1 The coasts are fairly indented, and, protected by these reefs, which often support a chain of green islets, afford many good harbours and _ safe anchorages. In this respect the Society Islands have the advantage of most of the Polynesian groups.

The island of Tahiti, in shape not unlike the figure 8, has a total length of 35 miles, a coast-line of 120, and a super- ficial area of 600 square miles. It is divided into two distinct portions by a short isthmus (Isthmus de Taravao) less than a mile in width, and nowhere more than 50 feet above sea-level. The southern, the peninsula of Tairabu, or Tahiti-iti (Little Tahiti), alone as large as Raiatea (after Tahiti the most important island of the group), measures 12 miles in length by 6 miles in breadth ; while the northern, the circular main island of Porionuu, or Tahiti-uni (Great Tahiti), has a length of 23 miles and a width of 20. The whole island is mountainous. A little to the north-west of the centre of Great Tahiti the Society Islands attain their

greatest altitude. There the double- peaked Orohena rises to 7340 feet, and Aorai, its rival, is only a few hundred feet lower. Little Tahiti cannot boast of such mountains, but its tower-like peaks are very striking. The flat land of the Tahitian coast, extending to a width of several miles—with its chain of villages, its

1 Darwin, Structure of Coral Reefs, London, 1842.

fertile gardens, and its belt of palms, sometimes intersected by stream-fed valleys which open on the sea-shore—forms a most pleasing foreground to the grand amphitheatre-like mountain ranges. A good road surrounds the entire island, which is divided into eighteen districts, each under a chief and a municipal council of which he is president. A railroad is in contemplation. By the last census the population of the entire island was 9194, one-eighth being French and foreigners. The majority of the natives pro- fess the Protestant religion.

The extreme north of the island is formed by Point Venus, to the east of which lies the Bay of Matavai, and some miles still farther cast Papeete, the European town and the seat of govern- ment. The beautiful harbour, of fair size and depth, is entered by two passages in the reef, Papeete to the north, 7 fathoms in depth, and Taunoa to the east, the wider and more convenient, though shallower. The town, in 1881, had a population of 3224, half of whom were French or French half-castes, but at least a dozen different nations were represented by the 800 whites. The little city is decidedly French in character. ‘‘Papecte is the emporium of trade for the products of the South Sca Islands east of 160° E. long. Small schooners of from 20 to 50 tons burden bring the yroduce of the various groups to Tahiti, whence they are shipped direct for Europe, either by Cape Horn or the Cape of Good Hope, according to the season of the year. These schooners, of which about twenty fly the Tahitian flag, take back portions of the cargoes of vessels arriving from Europe for sale or barter amongst the islands. The chief exports are cocoa-nuts, mother-of-pearl, cotton, and some sugar, mainly to England and Germany, very little to France; and oranges, trepang (for China), and edible fungus to California.”* Many whalers formerly visited Papeete harbour, but for some years there has been a steady

diminution in their number. In 1845 forty-eight called there, in 1860 five, and none in 1874. Commerce has also in other respects decreased. Three sugar-mills with distilleries attached, two cotton manu- factories, and a manufactory of cocoa-nut fibre were at work in 1886, Oranges and vanilla are profitably grown. The timber of the country is hardly used, great quantities of Californian pine being imported. Oxen and hogs are reared. The artificial culture of the pearl oyster is beginning to be discussed, but the pearls of the Society Islands are not to be compared in number or quality to those of the Tuamotus. A good deal of trading in fruit, fibre, shell, &c., is carried on with the natives, but still mainly by barter. The competition of the Chinese immigrants, of whom in 1886 there were already 400 on Tahiti and Eimeo, is beginning to be keenly felt. Theimportation of “labour,” chiefly for the plantations, from other Polynesian islands was placed under Government control in 1862. The Tahitians themselves prefer handicrafts to agricultural work, and many are employed as artisans by European masters, who find them as handy and industrious as their own countrymen, but for domestic service they show no aptitude. Papeete is in direct sailing communication with San Francisco, and with Sydney by a Government steamer which calls every five months; also with France by Bordeaux steamers which touch on their way to Noumea.

Climate.—The seasons are not well defined. Damp is excessive ; there is little variation in the weather, which, though hot, is never- theless not depressing, and the climate for the tropics must be considered remarkably healthy. The rainfall is largest between December and April, but there is so much at other times of the year also that these months hardly deserve the name of the rainy season. During this period north-west winds are frequent, con- tinuing at times for weeks, and there are thunderstorms and hurricanes, though they are not nearly so destructive as in some of the neighbouring islands. During the eight drier and cooler months south-east winds (corresponding with the trades) prevail, but there are southerly winds which bring rain, and even westerly breezes are not unfrequent. The mean temperature for the year is 77° F.; maximum 84°, minimum 69°. The average rainfall from December to March (4 months) is 29 inches; from April to November (8 months), 19 inches. The above observations apply to the coast only.

Fauna.—Neither the zoology nor the botany of the archipelago has been thoroughly investigated. Mammalians, as in other Poly- nesian islands, are restricted to a few species of bats (mostly of the genus Pteropus), rats, and mice, none of them peculiar. Of domestic animals, the pig and the dog—the former a small breed which quickly disappeared before the stronger European strains— were plentiful even in Wallis's days. The ornithology is very poor as compared with that of the Western Pacific; and, in marked

1 The best chart of Tahiti is that published by the French Government in 1876, and corrected down to 1881. Morea is given on the same sheet.

2 Wallace, Australasia, London, 1884.

3 For fuller statistics, see Notices Colontales, Paris, 1886, vol. ii.

os fF 23

contrast to the isolated Hawaiian archipelago, the Society Islands possess no peculiar genera and but few peculiar species. They claim, however, a thrush, several small parrots of great beauty, doves, pigeons, rails, and a sandpiper. Of this sandpiper, 7'ringa leucoptera, which, with many of the birds here mentioned, was dis- covered as far back as Cook's stay in the islands, only one specimen (now in the Leyden museum) is known to exist; and of the rest, their range being often limited to one portion of a small island, several species are (through the increase in the number of cats, &c.) threatened with extermination. A jungle-fowl (var. of Gallus bankiva) is found in the mountains, but as domesticated fowls were abundant, even when Tahiti was first discovered by Europeans, these wild birds are doubtless the offspring of tame birds, probably imported with the pigs and dogs by Malay vessels. There are no peculiar reptiles, and batrachians are entirely wanting. The lagoons swarm with fish of many species. Insects are poor in species, though some of them are indigenous. Crustaceans and molluscs, on the other hand, are well represented ; worms, echino- derms, and corals comparatively poorly. A noteworthy feature of Tahitian conchology is the number of peculiar species belonging to the genus Partula, almost every valley being the habitat of a dis- tinct form.+

Flora.—This, though luxuriant, is not very rich. Like the zoology, it is much poorer than that of the more western groups of the Pacific. Metrosideros, Melastoma, and Acacia are the only links which this typically Polynesian region has retained to join it to Australia. Four genera are peculiar, of which three are claimed by the Com- posite and Lobeliacex, orders characteristic of Hawaii. It is rich in trees, shrubs, and hardwood plants, poor in the smaller under- growth. Orchids, including some beautiful species, and ferns are abundant ; but, here as in Polynesia generally, Rubiacew is the order best represented. Remarkable are the banana thickets, which, chiefly on Tahiti, grow at an altitude of from 3000 to 5000 feet. Along the shore—in some places almost to the extinction of all native growth—many exotics have established themselves; and a great variety of fruit-bearing and other useful trees have been successfully introduced into most of the islands.®

Inhabitants. —The Tahitians are a typical Polynesian race, closely connected physically with the Marquesans and Rarotongans, but widely divided from them in many of their customs. The dialects, also, of the three groups are different, the Tahitian being perhaps the softest in all Oceania. The women rank with the most beauti- ful of the Pacific, though the accounts given of them by early voyagers are much exaggerated; and for general symmetry of form the people are unsurpassed by any race in the world. Even now in its decadence, after generations of drunkenness and European disease and vice, grafted on inborn indolence and licentiousness, many tall and robust people (6 feet and even upwards in height) are to be found. The women, asa rule, are small in proportion to the men. Men and women of good birth can generally be dis- tinguished by their height and fairness, and often, even in early age, by their enormous corpulence. The skin varies from a very light olive to a full dark brown. The wavy or curly hair and the expressive eyes.are black, or nearly so; the mouth is large, but well-shaped and set with beautiful teeth ; the nose broad (formerly flattened in infancy by artificial means); and the chin well developed. Solong as the native costume was retained, the tiputa, an oblong piece of bark cloth with a hole in its centre for the head, and the parw, a plain piece of cloth round the loins, were worn alike by men and women of the higher classes. Men of all ranks wore, with or without these, the maro, or T bandage. The women concealed their breasts except in the company of their superiors, when etiquette demanded that inferiors of both sexes should uncover the upper

part of the body. The chiefs wore short feather cloaks, not unlike those of the Hawaiians, and beautiful semicircular breastplates, dexterously interwoven with the black plumage of the frigate bird, with crimson feathers, and with sharks' tecth ; also most elaborate special dresses as a sign of mourning. The priests had strange cylindrical hats, made of wicker-work and over a yard in height. Circumcision, and in both sexes tattooing, were generally practised, and much significance was attached to some of the marks. The houses (vare) were long, low, and open at the sides. Household utensils were few—plain round wooden dishes, sometimes on legs, cocoa-nut shells, baskets, &. Low stools and head-rests were used. Pottery being unknown, all food was baked in the '' native oven" or roasted over the fire. Their chief musical instruments were the nose-flute (vivo)—often used as the accompani- ment of song—and the drum (pyahu). Of the latter, those kept in the marai were huge elaborately carved hollow cylinders of wood, the upper end of which was covered with sharks' skin. Conch- shells (6%) were also used. Tahitian stone adzes, which are greatly inferior in finish to those of the Hervey Islands, are, like the adzes of eastern Polynesia in general, distinguished from those of western Polynesia by their triangular section and adaptation to a socket.

4 Finsch and Hartlaub, Fauna Central-Polynesiens, Halle, 1867. 5 De Castillo, IiZustrationes Flore Insularum Maris Pacifict, Paris, 1886.

24 2 i ee 7 Slings were perhaps the favourite weapons of the Tahitians; they | ous; but with these traits are blended deceit, irritability, and had also plain spears expanding into a wide blade, and clubs. The cruelty, which formerly reaehed an unexampled degree of savage bow and arrow seem only to have been used in certain ceremonial brutality. Their notions of morality were never, aceording to our games (tea). Their canoes (vaa), from 20 to 70 feet in length, were | ideas, very precise; and their customs, such as the tayo, or exehange double or single, and provided with sai] and outriggcrs. They | of name with the rights which it carried over the wife of the giver were not well finished, but the high curved sterns, rising sometimes | of the name and all her female relations, seemed to the earlier to a height of 20 feet, of those destined to carry the images of | European obscrver strangely revolting. It would appear, however, their gods, were earved with strange figures and hung with feathers,! | that with the introduction of the viees of civilization

such limita- Cannibalism is unknown in the Society Islands, though some cere- | tions as their primitive morality recognized have disappeared and monies whieh were performed in connexion with human sacrifices | all self-respect has been lost. Especially characteristic were the may possibly be survivals of this practicc. The staple food of the | elaborate costume-dances (hetvas) performed by women. Besides islanders consisted of the bread-fruit, the taro-root, the yam, the | dancing, the singing of songs (pehe), and the recitation of historical sweet potato, and in some districts the wild plantain (fei); but | and mythieal ballads (wbus), the natives had also a variety of sports they also ate much fish (the turtle was considered saered food), as | and games, During the periodical seasons of rejoicing wrestling well as pigs and dogs, though of the latter, as pets, the women were | (maona), boxing (moto), and spear-throwing (vero patia) matches, so fond as to suckle the puppies sometimes even to the exclusion of | with foot and canoe-races, were held; also sham fights and naval their own children. Popot was a favourite dish made of bananas | reviews. They had several games in which a ball was used,—onc, and cocoa-nut. Kava (ava), which was prepared in the usual Poly- | apaz, not unlike our bandy, while another, twiraa (played chiefly nesian manner, was drunk, but in moderate quantities and only by | by women), was a kind of football; but surf-swimming (Saahee) the chicfs, was perhaps the most favourite sport with both sexes. Kites were Tahitians were good fishermen and bold seamen. They steered | known. Cock-fighting (faatitoraamoa) was much practised. by the stars, of which they distinguished many constellations. Discovery and Exploration. —Therc is little doubt that the main The land was carefully tended and the fields well irrigated. Three | island and some other members of the group were visited by the great classes were recognized :—(1) the hwiari, of divine origin, | Spaniard Pedro Fernandez de Quiros in February 1607. They were which included only the suzerain (artrai), who bore a semi-sacred | rediscovered in June 1767 by Wallis in the “ Dolphin,” who took as well as a political character, and the reigning ehiefs of distriets; | nominal possession of Tahiti for George III. and named it after him. (2) the bue-raatira, proprietors and cultivators of inherited land, | In the following year Bougainville visited Tahiti, claimed it as who also built canves, made arms, &c.; to these two classes also French, and ealled it La Nouvelle Cythére. With Tetuara (called belonged the priests (tahora), who were medicine-men as well ; | by him Umaitia) and Eimeo it makes up the Archipel de Bourbon

of (3) the manahune, fishers, artisans, &c., and slaves (¢it7). As wars | his most inaceurate chart. Almost all we know of the early state and infantieide depopulated the island this class gradually acquired | of the islands is, however, due to Captain Cook's visits in 1769, land and with it certain privileges. Rank is hereditary and de- | 1778, 1774,and1777. The name of Soeiety Islands was given to the termined by primogeniture, not necessarily in the male line. The | Leeward group on his first voyage in honour of the Royal Society. firstborn of an arirai reeeived at birth the title of otw; the father, | In 1774 Tahiti was also visited by two Spanish vessels, which left who was the first to pay homage to his own child, then abdieated, | two priests, who remained for ten months on the island. The and henceforth took up the position of regent. It is easy to see | Spaniards named it Isla d'Amat. The islands were again visited that, while this custom tended to keep honours within a family, | in 1788 by the "Lady Penrhyn." Bligh in the ''Bounty" spent it may have encouraged the practice of infanticide, which was | five months on the island in the same year, and it was revisited by common in all grades of society when Tahiti was first visited by | that ship after the famous mutiny. At this time the leading chief Europeans. The age at whieh the otu's authority became real | was Pomare, whose family had been pre-eminent in the island for varied according to his own abilities and the will of his subjects. | more thana century. Aided by sixteen of the " Bounty " mutineers, Though arbitrary, the power of the arirai was limited by the | and armed with guns procured from Bligh and a Swedish vessel, power of his vassals, the district chiefs (raatiras), who ruled | Pomare greatly strengthened his power and brought to a successful absolutely over their respective districts, and who might be of as | elose a long struggle with Eimeo. In 1791 the "Pandora" earried good blood as the arirai himself. The arirai had a councillor, | off fourteen of the " Bounty " mutineers, and from this time forward but was alone responsible for any act. The bi-insular form of | visits were frequent. Tahiti promoted the independence of the chiefs, and war was rarely Missions.—The attempt of the Spaniards in 1774 was followed declared or an army or fleet despatched without the raatiras being | by the settlement of twenty-five persons bronght in 1797 by the first summoned tocouncil. Withont their favour nothing could be | missionary ship ' Duff." Though befriended by Pomare I. (who accomplished, for their power over their own people was absolute. | lived till 1805), they had many difficulties, especially from the The form of government was thus strictly

feudal in character, but | constant wars, and at length they fled with Pomare I. to Eimeo it gradually centralized into a monarchy, which, in the person of | and ultimately to New South Wales, returning in 1812 when Pomare IJ., the English missionaries greatly helped to regulate | Pomare renonnced heathenism, In 1815 he regained his power in and strengthen. The arirai sent his commands by a messenger | Tahiti. For a time the missionaries made good progress, —a print- (vea) whose credentials were a tuft of eocoa-nut film. This tuft ing press was established (1817), and coffee, cotton, and sugar were was returned intact as a sign of assent or torn in token of refusal, | planted (1819); but soon there came a serious relapse into heathen After the chief the wife ranked first, and then his brother. The practices and immorality. Pomare II. died of drink in 1824. arirai was carried on the shoulders of his subjects, and chiefs were | His successor Pomare II{. died in 1827, and was succeeded by his not allowed to feed themselves. Women always ate apart. Their | half-sister Aimata, the unfortunate ‘Queen Pomare.” In 1828 a places of worship (marat)—national, local, or private—were square | new fanatical sect, the ‘‘ Mamaia,” arose, which gave much trouble tree-surrounded enclosures. They each had a single entrance, and | to the missions and whose influence is still felt. The leader pro- contained several small courts, within whieh were houses for the | claimed that he was Jesus Christ, and promised to his followers a images and attendant priests. A pyramidal stone structure, on | scnsual paradise, which were the aetual altars, stood at the further end of the square. French Annexation.—In 1836 the Freuch Catholic missionaries The marais were also used as plaees of sepulture of chiefs, whose | in Mangareva attempted to open a mission in Tahiti. Queen embalmed bodies, after being exposed for a time, were buried in a Pomare, advised by the English missionary and consul Pritchard, crouehing position. Their skulls, however, were kept inthe houses | refused her consent, and removed by force two priests who had of their nearest relations. Inthe great marai at Atahura the stone | landed surreptitiously and to whom mauy of the opposition party structure was 270 feet long, 94 fect wide, and 50 feet high, and its | in the state had rallied. In 1838 a Freneh frigate appeared, under summit was reached by a flight of steps, built of hewn coral and | the command of M. Du Petit-Thouars, and extorted from Pomare basalt. Sacrificial offerings, including human sacrifices, formed a | the right of settlement for Frenchmen of every profession. Other prominent part of Tahitian worship. An eye of the victim

was | aets of interference followed, and at length, in 1842, Admiral du offered to the arirai, and placed within his mouth by the officiating | Petit-Thouars procured the signature of a document placing the priest. Every household possessed its own guardian spirits (dz), | islands under French protection, the authority of the queen and but there were several superior divinities, of which, at the begin- | chiefs being expressly reserved. In 1843 Petit-Thouars reappeared, ning of this century, Oro was the niost venerated. The images, | and, alleging that the treaty of 1842 had not been duly carried out, which are less remarkable than those of Hawaii, were rough repre- | deposed the queen and took possession of the islands, His high- sentations of the human form carved in wood. Some were covered | handed action was not countenanced by the Freneh Government, from head to foot with small human figures cut in relief; others but, while it professed not to sanetion the annexation, it did not were mere sticks clothed with feathers. The areot, a lieentious | retrace the steps taken. Two years were spent in reducing the association of strolling players, men and women, whieh numbered | party in the islands opposed to French rule ; an attempt to conquer among its ranks the highest ehiefs, and practised infanticide, was | the western islands failed ; and at length, by agreement with Eng- a special feature of Tahitian soeiety. land, France promised to return to the plan of a protectorate and The Tahitians arc light-hearted, frivolous, courtcous, and gener- | leave the western islands to their rightful owners. The London missionaries were replaced by French Protestants, but neither they nor the priests have been very successful, possibly because French is a compulsory subject in the Government schools. In 1880

1 The museum of the London Missionary Socicty and the British Museum con- tain important collections of Tahitian images, dresses, weapons, &c.

Tahiti, including Fimeo, was proclaimed a French colony. It is the residence of the governor-general of the French dependencies

in the Pacific. ‘

Literature.—The following list includes the books which secm most to de- serye mention: Hawkesworth’s Voyages, especially Wallis’s Voyage,

H.M.S. “Dolphin,” in vol. i., London, 1773 ; Cook’s Three Voyages, with Forster s account of the sccond voyage ; Freycinet, Voyage de la Coquille, and Lesson’s account of the same voyage, Paris, 1839; Bennett, Whaling Voyage. London, 1840. For manners and customs of the natives, see Cook, Duff, Ellis. For modern statistics, sec Desgraz, La Tahiti, Paris, 1845; Notices Colontales, Paris, 1886, vol. ii. For the early history of the islands, see Ellis, Polynesian Researches, London, 1829 ; Vineendon-Dumoulin and Desgraz, [les Taiti, Paris, 1544. For mission history, sce Voyage of the Dugf, London, 1799,; Ellis ; Williams, Afisstonary Enterprise in the South Sea Islands, London, 1839, For the French occupation, see Moerenhout, Voyage aux Ties du Grand Océan, Paris, 1887 ; Vineendon-Dumoulin and Desgraz; Pritchard, Polynesian Reminiscences, London, 1866. (A. Vv. H.)

TAIWAN. See Formosa.

TAJAK, Tasik, or TAUSIK, a term originally occurring in the Pahlavi writings, and explained to mean, first, the Arabs in general, then their descendants born in Persia and else- where out of Arabia, and, lastly, the Persians in general and their descendants born in Turkestan and elsewhere out of Persia. Tajak has thus come to be the collective name of all communities of Iranian stock and Persian speech, wherever found in Central Asia. These are co-extensive with the former eastward and northward limits of the Persian empire; but, since the ascendency of the Tarki races, they have become the subject element in Turkestan, Afghanistan, Bokhara, Khiva, Kashgaria, while still politi- cally dominant in Badakhshan, Wakhdn, Darwaz, Kost, and Karatéghin. In most of these places the Tajaks, with the kindred Galchas, seem to form the bulk of the popula- tion, the distinction being that Tajak is applied rather to the settled and more civilized lowlanders of modern Persian speech, Galcha to the ruder highlanders of Ferghana, Kohistén, Wakhan, &c., who speak either archaic forms of Persian or dialects intermediate between the Iranian and Sanskritic (Indian) branches of the Aryan linguistic family. The Tajaks are thus a settled Iranian people, agriculturists in the country, traders and artisans in the towns, and are essentially ‘“Parsivan,” that is, men of Persian speech, —this term, however, being more specially applied to those of Afghanistan, But, although mainly of Iranian stock, with light complexion and regular features, the Tajaks claim Arab descent, regarding the district

about Baghdad as their primeval home, and considering themselves the descendants of the Arabs who overran Central Asia in the first century of the Flight. At the same time, “it is evident that the inhabitants of the greater part of this region (Central Asia) must from an early period have come in contact with the successive waves of Turkish (Tfirki) and even Mongol population which broke over them; accordingly we find that, although the type is essentially Iranian, it has under- gone a certain: modification, . . . face, though obviously Persian, is more oblong than that of the Turk, more or less heavy cheeks, thick nose, large mouth, wide forehead, .. . middle height, powerful frame, and broad shoulders, . . dark hair, but among the Galchas a few fair people are found” (Capt. J. M. Trotter, Bokhdra, p. 169). The term Tajak must also be distinguished from Sate, the latter simply meaning “trader” or “shopkeeper,” and being applied indiscriminately to the settled as opposed to the nomad element, and especially to the urban populations, of whatever race, in Central Asia.1 The Tajaks are known as Tats on the west side of the Caspian (Baku, Lenkoran, &c.).

TAKA. See Nusta,

TALAVERA pr LA Retna, a town of Spain, in the

1 “Quand un Usbeg est devenu complétement sédentaire .. . il devient Surte ; le mot Sarte n’est done pas une appellation ethnique” (Charles de Ujfalvy in Bul. Soc. Géogr., June 1878). But the Tajaks, being always settled, were the first to be known as Sartes; whence the still prevalent erroneous impression that the word had a racial mean- ing, implying an Iranian as opposed to a Tiirki element. Neverthe- less there is a certain local etiquette observed in the use of the two words Tajak and Sarte, embodied in the popular saying: ‘* When a

stranger presents himself and eats your bread, call him a Tajak; when he is gone you may call him a Sarte.”

province of Toledo, is situated on the right bank of the Tagus, and on the railway from Madrid to Caceres, some 40 miles below Toledo and 64 miles south-east from Madrid. It was formerly surrounded by a triple

circumivallation, portions of which still remain. It has no buildings of special interest, and its commerce and manufactures are inconsiderable. The population within the municipal limits in 1877 was 10,029.

Talavera is the birthplace (1536) of Mariana the historian. Well- ington overcame a superior French force here on July 27-28, 1809.

TALBOT, Famity or. Apart from its achievements, this is one of the few families in the English aristocracy which traces alike its descent and its surname from the Norman conquerors of England ; and it may really be said that there has hardly been a time during the last eight hundred years in which the Talbots have not been of con- siderable account in public life. Yet in some periods they appear rather as a potential influence, while at certain marked epochs they stand out among the most prominent actors in English history. The name of Richard Talbot

‘occurs in Domesday Book as the holder of nine hides of

land in Bedfordshire under Walter Giffard, earl of Buck- ingham. There is no evidence that he came over to Eng- land with the Conqueror himself; and, as he did not hold of the king in capitte, it is clear that he was not a leader. His son Geoffrey Talbot took part with the empress Maud against King Stephen. But apparently it was another son Hugh who continued the line ; of whom it is recorded that he held the castle of Plessi against Henry I. for Hugh de Gournay, and afterwards became a monk at Beaubec in Normandy. His son Richard obtained from Henry IT. the lordship of Linton in Herefordshire, and from Richard I. the custody of Ludlow castle; and his descendants for some generations appear to have been wardens of various castles on the borders of Wales. Under Edward II. a Gilbert Talbot was head of the house, and invaded Scot- land in the king’s company, but afterwards took part with Thomas of Lancaster against the king. He, however, was pardoned, and obtained from Edward III. a confirmation of the grant of the manor of Linton and other lands to himself and his heirs.

His son Richard, who had married a daughter of John Comyn of Badenoch, laid claim to certain lands in Scot- land in her right, and, when restrained from entering that country by land (Edward IIL. having then made an alliance with King David), he joined in a successful expedition which

invaded it by sea in the interests of Edward Baliol. Three years later he was taken prisoner in Scotland, and redeemed for 2000 marks, after which the king made him governor of Berwick. He took part also in Edward's wars against France, as did likewise his son Gilbert, who succeeded him. At this time the family possessed lands in the counties of Oxford, Gloucester, Hereford, and Kent, and a little later in Berkshire, Wilts, Salop, and Essex. Another Gilbert Talbot, grandson of the last, claimed to carry the great spurs at the coronation of Henry V., and had a commission to receive the submission of Owen Glendower and his adherents. He also distinguished himself in the invasion of Normandy. He was twice married, his second wife being a Portuguese lady, but he left no male issue, and was succeeded by his brother John, the special hero of the family.

Hitherto the head of the house had borne the name of Lord Talbot ; but this John, after obtaining by marriage the title of Lord Furnivall, was for his distinguished actions created earl of Shrewsbury. He made his name so terrible in France that for several generations afterwards French mothers used to threaten refractory children that the Talbots would come if they were not quiet (Brown's Venetian Calendar, ii. 75). He rescued Maine from the

French and took Pontoise; but his own capture by the Maid of Orleans was what probably discouraged the English most of all in their disasters beyond sea. He was exchanged for an eminent French prisoner and a heavy ransom besides. He served also several times as lieutenant of Ireland, and in 1446 was created earl of Wexford and of Waterford, in addition to the title of Shrewsbury, which had been conferred upon him in 1442. He died in 1453, in an unsuccessful expedition for the recovery of Guienne, which had lately submitted to the French. His son J ohn, Viscount Lisle, was slain along with him in the same fatal battle.

But, besides his martial exploits which live in history, this John claims some attention for his family alliances. His first wife Maud, a

granddaughter of Thomas, Lord Furnivall, brought him the castle of Sheffield as part of her inheritance, and he was accordingly summoned to

parliament in the days of Henry IV. as John Talbot of |

Hallamshire, otherwise Lord F urnivall, more than thirty years before he was made earl of Shrewsbury. The property remained in the hands of his descendants, and became a favourite residence of the family during the whole of the Tudor era; and, but for the death in 1616 of Gilbert, seventh earl of Shrewsbury, without male issue, it has been remarked by Hunter that Sheftield might have remained much longer a centre of feudal magnificence rather than of commerce and manufactures. The second wife of John, earl of Shrewsbury, was Margaret, the eldest of three daughters of Richard Beauchamp, earl of War- wick, by Ais second wife, a daughter of Thomas, Lord Berkeley. By her he obtained a third part of the Berkeley property ; and, though she did not become the mother of a line of earls, her eldest son, Jolin Talbot, was created Viscount Lisle, and it was he who fell along with his father at the disastrous battle of Chatillon in Gascony. His son Thomas, who inherited the title of Viscount Lisle, was also slain at the early age of twenty-two in a feudal contest with Lord Berkeley, arising out of a dispute as to the possession of Berkeley castle, at Nibley Green, near Wotton-under-Edge, March 20, 1470 ; and the title was afterwards conferred on Edward Grey, the husband of one of his two sisters.

John, the second earl of Shrewsbury, was the first earl's son by his first wife. He had been knighted at Leicester in 1426 along with the infant king Henry VI., had served in the wars of France, and been made chancellor of Ireland during his father's lifetime, when he was only Lord Talbot. Afterwards he was made lord high treasurer of England, and in 1459 was rewarded for his services to the house of Lancaster with a grant of 100 marks a year out of the lordship of Wakefield, forfeited by Richard, duke of York. But next year he and his brother Christopher were slain at the battle of Northampton, fighting in the cause of Henry VI. His son John succeeded him, and then his grandson George, who fought for Henry VII. at Stoke, and whom King Henry VIII sent as his lieutenant against the rebels in that most formidable insurrection, the Pilgrimage of Grace. But perhaps the thing which most refounds to his credit is the humanity with which (as

related by Cavendish) he received the fallen Cardinal Wolsey into his house at Sheffield when he was on his way up to London as a state prisoner, and endeavoured to remove those gloomy anticipations of his fate which in fact brought on his last illness.

Francis, the fifth earl, took a leading part in the invasions of Scotland under Henry VIII. and Edward VI, and was one of the two peers who alone opposed the bill for abolishing the pope's jurisdiction under Elizabeth, His son George, who succeeded, was the earl to whom the custody of Mary Stuart was committed, his delicate and

| onerous task being rendered all the more difficult for him

by the intrigues of his bold, ambitious second wife, Bess of Hardwick, the builder of Chatsworth, who had married three husbands before her union with him. Two sons of this last earl succeeded one another, and the title then devolved, for want of male issue, on the lineal descendants of Sir Gilbert Talbot of Grafton in Worcestershire, third son of John, the second earl. This Sir Gilbert had fought for Henry VII. at Bosworth, where he wag severely wounded, was knighted on the field, and was throughout one of the first Tudor's most trusted councillors, He fought also at Stoke against the insurgents with Lambert Simnel, was made a knight banneret, governor of Calais, and lord chamberlain.

The ninth earl, George, descended from this Gilbert, is not distinguished by any prominent actions. He died unmarried, and his brother, who followed next, was succeeded by his grandson Francis, chiefly memorable for his unhappy fate. His second wife, a daughter of the earl of Cardigan, was seduced by the duke of Buckingham, whom the outraged husband challenged to a duel. The countess, it is said, was present at the scene, and held Buckingham's horse in the disguise of a page, saw her husband killed, and then clasped her lover in her arms, receiving blood-stains upon her dress from the enibrace. Charles, the twelfth earl, son of this unfortunate nobleman, was raised by William III. to the dignity of a duke for his important diplomatic services. His position in those slippery times was altogether exceptional. Abandoning the religion of his ancestors he became

a Protestant, was one of the seven who signed the invitation to William of Orange to come over, and was continually consulted by him on state affairs after he became king. Yet, being apparently of a very sensitive disposition, he seems to have at times repented what he had done, and even corresponded with James at St Germain ; yet again, in times of danger, he was as ready as ever to stake his life and fortunes jn the service of his country to preserve the new settlement. It was apparently his extreme sensitiveness that caused him to be spoken of as “the king of hearts.” In 1694 he was created marquis of Alton and duke of Shrewsbury, but as he left no son these titles died along with him, and the earldom of Shrewsbury devolved on his cousin Gilbert, a Roman Catholic priest.

From this time the direct line of Sir Gilbert Talbot of Grafton began to fail. A nephew three times succeeded to an uncle, and then the title devolved upon a cousin, who died unmarried in 1856. On the death of this cousin the descent of the title was for a short time in dispute, and the lands were claimed for the infant son of the duke of Norfolk under the will of the last carl ; but the courts decided that, under a private Act obtained by the duke of Shrewsbury in the sixth year of George I., the title and estates must go together, and the true successor to the earldom was found in Earl Talbot, the head of another line of the descendants of Sir Gilbert Talbot of Grafton, sprung from a second marriage of Sir Gilbert’s son, Sir John Talbot of Albrighton. The head of this family in the beginning of the last century was a divine of some mark, who died bishop of Durham in 1730. His son Charles, who filled the office of lord chancellor, was created Baron Talbot of Hensol in Glamorganshire in 1733; and his son again was advanced to the dignity of Earl Talbot in 1761, to which was added that of Baron Dynevor in 1780. Then succeeded a nephew, who was also created Viscount Ingestre, and assumed by royal licence the surname of Chetwynd before Talbot, from his mother.

The Earl Talbot who successfully claimed the Shrews- bury title (as the eighteenth earl) was the present earl’s

TA L—

grandfather, and all the titles just mentioned have been united in his line ever since. (J. GA.

TALBOT, Witt1am Henry Fox (1800-1877), a dis- coverer in photography, was the only child of William Davenport Talbot, of Laycock Abbey, Wilts, and of Lady Elizabeth Fox Strangways, daughter of the second earl of Ilchester. He was born in February 1800, and educated at Harrow and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he gained the Porson prize in 1820, and graduated as twelfth wrangler in 1821. From 1822 to 1872 he frequently communicated papers to the Royal Society, many of them on mathematical subjects. At an early period he had begun his optical researches, which were to have such important results in connexion with photography. To the Edinburgh Journal of Science in 1826 he contributed a paper on "Some Experiments on Coloured Flame ee to the Quarterly Journal of Science in 1827 a paper on 'Monochromatic Light"; and to the Philosophical Maga- zine a number of papers on chemical subjects, including one on "Chemical Changes of Colour." Before Daguerre exhibited in 1839 pictures taken by the sun, Talbot had obtained similar success, and as soon as Daguerre's dis- coveries were whispered communicated the results of his experiments to the Royal Society (see PHoTocrapny, vol. xviii, p. 824). In 1841 he made known his discovery of the calotype process, but after the discovery of the collodion process by Scott Archer, with whom he had a lawsuit in reference to his patent rights, he relinquished this field of inquiry. For his discoveries, the narrative of which is detailed in his Pencil of Nature (1844), he received in 1842 the medal of the Royal Society. While engaged in his scientific researches he devoted a consider- able portion of his time to archeology, and this field of inquiry latterly occupied his chief attention. Besides reading papers on these subjects before the Royal Society of Literature and the Society of Biblical Archeology, he published Hermes, or Classical and Antiquarian Researches (1838-39), and Illustrations of the Antiquity of the Book of Genesis (1839). With Sir Henry Rawlinson and Dr Hincks he shares the honour of having been one of the first decipherers of the cuneiform inscriptions of Nineveh, He was also the author of English Etymologies (1846). He died at Laycock Abbey, 17th September 1877.

TALC. See Grotocy, vol. x. p. 228, and MINERALOGY, vol. xvi. p. 414.

TALCA, a town of Chili, capital of the province of Talca, is situated on the Claro, a tributary of the Maule, nearly due south of Santiago, with which it is connected by rail. The town has a lyceum and some woollen manu-

factures (especially of “‘ ponchos”). In 1875 the population numbered 17,496, and in 1885 about 19,000.

TALENT. See Numismatics, vol. xvii. p. 631.

TALES are, in the usual acceptance of the word, ficti- tious narratives, long or short, ancient or modern. In this article ‘‘tale” is used in a stricter sense, as equivalent to the German “Volks-mirchen” or the French ‘conte populaire.” Thus understood, popular tales mean the stories handed down by oral tradition from an unknown antiquity, among savage and civilized peoples. So understood, popular tales are a subject in mythology, and indeed in the general study of the development of man, of which the full interest and importance is scarcely yet recognized. Popular tales won their way into literature, it is true, at a very distant period. The Homeric epics, especially the Odyssey, contain adventures which are manifestly parts of the general human stock of popular narrative. Other examples are found in the Aegveda, and in the myths which were handled by the Greek dramatists. Collections of popular tales, more or less subjected to conscious literary treatment, are found in Sanskrit, as in the work of

| and Finnish, Esthonian, and Magyar stories.

®t ey. 1

Somadeva, whose Kathé Sarit Sdgara, or ‘‘Ocean of the Streams of Story,” has been translated by Mr Tawney (Calcutta, 1880). The THousanp anpD ONE Nicuts (¢.2.) are full of popular tales, and popular tales are the staple of the medieval Gesta Romanorum, and of the collections of Straparola and other Italian conteurs. In all these and similar gatherings the story, long circulated from mouth to mouth among the people, is handled with conscious art, and little but the general outline of plot and character of incident can be regarded as original. In the Histoires ou Contes du Temps Passé of Perrault (Elzevir, Amsterdam, 1697; the Parisian edition is of the same date) we have one of the earliest gatherings of tales which were taken down in their nursery shape as they were told by nurses to children. This at least seems probable, though M. Alfred Maury thinks Perrault drew from literary sources. Perrault attributed the composition to his son, P. Darmau- cour, at that time a child, and this pretext enabled him to give his stories in a

simple and almost popular guise. In the dedication signed by the boy, Perrault offers remarks which really do throw a certain light on the origin and characteristics of "'marchen." He says, "Ils renferment tous une morale trés sensée et donnent une image de ce qui se passe dans les moindres familles, ot la louable impatience d'instruire les enfans fait imaginer des histoires dépourvies de raison pour s'accomoder & ces mémes enfants, qui n'en ont pas encore." It seems that popular tales in many cases probably owe their origin to the desire of enforcing a moral or practical lesson. It appears that their irrational and "infantile" character—'" dépourvies de raison" —is derived from their origin, if not actually among children, at least among childlike peoples, who have not arrived at "raison," that is, at the scientific and modern conception of the world and of the nature of man.

The success of Perrault's popular tales brought the genre into literary fashion, and the Comtesse d'Aulnoy in- vented, or in some cases adapted, ''contes," which still retain a great popularity. But the precise and scientific collec- tion of tales from the lips of the people is not much earlier than our century. The chief impulse to the study was given by the brothers Grimm. The first edition of their Kinder- und Haus-Mérchen was published in 1812. The English reader will find a very considerable bibliography of popular tales, as known to the Grimms, in Mrs Alfred Hunt's translation, Grimm's Household Tales, with Notes (London, 1884). 'How unique was our collection when it first appeared," they exclaim, and now merely to enumerate the books of such traditions would occupy much space. In addition to the mirchen of Indo-European peoples, the Grimms became acquainted with some Malay stories, some narratives of Bechuanas, Negroes, American Indians, Thus the Grimmy' knowledge of non-European marchen was extremely slight. It enabled them, however, to observe the increase of refinement 'in proportion as gentler and more humane manners develop themselves," the monstrosities of Finnish and Red-Indian fancy gradually fading in the narratives of Germans and Italians. The Grimms notice that the evolution of popular narrative resembles the evolution of the art of sculpture, from the South-Sea idol to the frieze of the Parthenon, "from the strongly marked, thin, even ugly, but highly expressive forms of its earliest stages to those which possess external beauty of mould." Since the Grimms' time our knowledge of the popular tales of non- European races has been greatly enriched. We possess

numbers of North-American, Brazilian, Zulu, Swahili, Eskimo, Samoan, Maori, Kaffir, Malagasy, Bushman, and even Australian marclien, and can study them in compar- ison with the stories of Hesse, of the West Highlands of Scotland, of Scandinavia.

27

28

While the popular romances of races of all colours must be examined together, another element in this subject is not less important. It had probably been often observed before, but the fact was brought out most vividly by Von Hahn (@riechische und albanesische Mérchen, Leipsic, 1864), that the popular tales of European races turn on the same incidents, and display the same succession of situations, the same characters, and the same plots, as are familiar in the ancient epic literature of Greece, India, Germany, and Scandinavia. The epics are either fully-developed mirchen evolved by the literary genius of poets and saga-men, or the mirchen are degenerate and broken-down memories of the epics and sagas, or perhaps there may be examples of both processes. The second view,—namely, that the popular tales are, so to speak, the scattered grains of gold of which the epic is the original “pocket” or “placer,”-—the belief that the mirchen are the detritus of the saga,—was for a long time prevalent. But a variety of arguments enforce the opposite conclusion, namely, that the mirchen are essentially earlier in char- acter than the epic, which is the final form to which they have been wrought by the genius of Homer or of some other remote yet cultivated poet. If this view be accepted, the evolution of mirchen and of certain myths has passed through the following stages :—

(1) The popular tale, as current among the unculti- vated peoples, such as Iroquois, Zulus, Bushmen, Samoans, Eskimo, and Samoyedes. ‘his tale will reflect the mental condition of rude peoples, and will be full of monstrous and miraculous events, with an absence of reason proper, as Perrault says, “a ceux qui n’en ont pas encore.” At the same time the tale will very probably enforce some moral or practical lesson, and may even appear to have been invented with this very purpose, for man is everywhere impressed with the importance of conduct.

(2) The same tale—or rather a series of incidents and a plot essentially the same—as it is discovered surviving in the oral traditions of the illiterate peasantry of European races. Among them the monstrous element, the ferocity of manners observed in the first stage, will be somewhat modified, but will be found most notable among the Slavonic tribes. Nowhere, even in German and Scottish miirchen, is it extinct, cannibalism and cruel torture being favourite incidents,

(3) The same plot and incidents as they exist in the heroic epics and poetry of the cultivated races, such as the Homeric books, the Greek tragedies, the Cyclic poets, the Kalewala of the Finns, certain hymns of the Rigveda, certain legends of the Brahmanas, the story of the Volsungs,—in these a local and almost historical character is given by the introduction of names of known places, and the adventures are attributed to national heroes,—Odys- seus, idipus, Sigurd, Wainamoinen, J ason, Pururavas, and others, The whole tone and manners are nobler and more refined in proportion as the literary workmanship is more elaborate.

This theory of the origin of popular tales in the fancy of peoples in the savage condition (see MytTHoLoey), of their survival as miarchen among the peasantry of Indo- European and other civilized races, and of their transfigu- ration ito epics, could only be worked out after the discovery that savage and civilized popular tales are full of close resemblances. These resemblances, when only known to exist among Indo-European peoples, were explained as part of a common Aryan inheritance, and as the result of a malady of language. This system, when applied to myths in general, has already been examined (see Myrxo- Locy). According to another view, marchen everywhere resemble each other because they all arose in India, and have thence been borrowed and transmitted. For this

TAUuEsS

| the early fancy.

theory consult Benfey’s Panchatantra and M. Cosquin’s Contes de Lorraine (Paris, 1886). In opposition to the Aryan theory, and the theory of borrowing from India, the system which is here advocated regards popular tales as kaleidoscopic arrangements of comparatively few situa- tions and

incidents, which again are naturally devised by Among these incidents may be men- tioned, first, kinship and intermarriage between man and the lower animals and even inorganic phenomena. Thus

| 4 girl is wooed by a frog, pumpkin, goat, or bear, or

elephant, in Zulu, Scotch, Walachian, Eskimo, Ojibway, and German marchen. This incident is based on the lack of a sense of difference between man and the things in the world which is prevalent among savages (see MyTHoLoey). Other incidents familiar in our nursery tales (such as ‘‘Cinderella” and “Puss in Boots”) turn on the early belief in metamorphosis, in magic, in friendly or protecting animals (totems or beast manitous). Others depend on the early prevalence of cannibalism (compare Grimn, 47, “The Juniper Tree”), This recurs in the mad song of Gretchen in Faust, concerning which a distinguished student writes, “This ghost of a ballad or rhyme is my earliest remembrance, as crooned by an old East-Lothian nurse.” (Compare Chambers’s Popular Rhymes of Scot- land, 1870, p. 49.) The same legend occurs among the Bechuanas, and is published by Casalis. Yet another incident springs from the taboo on certain actions between husband and wife, producing the story of Cupid and Psyche (see Lang’s Custom and Myth, 1884, p. 64). Once more, the custom which makes the youngest child the heir is illus- trated in the marchen of the success, despite the jealousy of the elders, of Cinderella, of the Zulu prince (Callaway’s Tales from the Amazulu, pp. 64, 65), and in countless other marchen. In other cases, as in the world-wide marchen corresponding to the Jason epic, we seem in presence of an early romantic invention,—how diffused it is difficult to imagine. Moral lessons, again, are inculcated by the numerous tales which turn on the duty of kind- ness, or on the impossibility of evading fate as announced in prophecy. In opposition to the philological explanation of the story of Cidipus as a nature-myth, this theory of a collection of incidents illustrative of moral lessons is admirably set forth in Prof. Cauparetti’s Edipo e la Mitologia Comparata (Pisa, 1867).

On a general view, then, the stuff of popular tales is a certain number of incidents and a certain set of combina- tions of these incidents. Their strange and irrational character is due to their remote origin in the fancy of men in the savage condition; and their wide distribution is caused, partly

perhaps by oral transmission from people to people, but more by the tendency of the early imagination to run everywhere in the same grooves. The narratives, in the ages of heroic poetry, are elevated into epic song, and in the Middle Ages they were even embodied in legends of the saints. This view is maintained at greater length, and with numerous illustrations, in the introduction to Mrs Hunt's translation of Grimm's Kinder- und Haus-Marchen, and in Custom and Myth, already referred to.

A complete bibliography of the literature of popular tales would fill many pages. The reader who is curious about savage popular tales may turn to Theal's Kafir Folk Lore (2d ed., London, 1886); Callaway's Nursery Tales of the Amazulu (London, 1868) ; Schooleraft's Algie Researches; Gill's M yths and Tales of the South Pacifie; Petitot's Traditions Indiennes (1886) ; Shortland's Maori Keligion and Mythology (London, 1882); The South African Folk Lore Reeord; the Folk Lore Reeord (London, 1879-85, Malagasy stories); Rink's Tales and Traditions of the Eskimo; Bleek's Hottentot Tales and Fables (London, 1864); Castrén's Samoyedisehe Mérehen ; and Leland's Algonquin Legends (London, 1884). For European tales, the bibliography in the translation of Grimm already referred to may be used, and the Maisonneuve collection, Les Littératures populaires may be recommended. The names of

TA L—

Liebrecht, Kohler, Dasent, Ralston, Nigra, Pitré, Cosquin, Afanasief, Gaidoz, Sébillot, may serve as clues through the enchanted forest of the nursery tales of Europe. (221L,)

TALFOURD, Sim Tuomas Noon (1795-1854), was at once eminent as a lawyer, as a writer, and as a member of a brilliant and polished society. He had the faculty of winning friendships ; so sympathetic indeed was his nature that he unconsciously biassed many of the most acute among his acquaintances towards an estimate of his genius as an author—more cspecially as a dramatist—hardly cominensurate with what more impartial criticism has decided to be his just meed of praise. But, though even his most excellent work in literature has now ceased to be generally cared for, his poetry must always be inter- esting to the literary student.

The son of a brewer in good circumstances, Talfourd was born on January 26, 1795, at Doxey, near Stafford (some accounts mention Reading). education, first at an institution near Hendon, and later at the Reading grammar-school under Dr Valpy. Here, it is said, he acquired his taste for dramatic poetry, pre- sumably under the guidance of Dr Valpy. At the age of eighteen the lad was sent to London to study law under Mr Chitty, the special pleader. Early in 1821 he joined the Oxford circuit, having been called to the bar at the Middle Temple in February of that year. When, fourteen years later, lie was created a serjeant-at-law, and when again he in 1849 succeeded Mr Justice Coltman as judge of the Court of Common Pleas, he attained these distinctions more perhaps for the zeal and laborious care which he invariably displayed in his conduct of the cases confided to him than on account of any brilliance of forensic talent or of any marked intellectual subtlety. A parliamentary life had always had an attraction for him, and at the general election in 1835 he was returned for Reading. This seat he retained for close upon six years, and he was again returned in 1847. In the House of Commons he ‘was no mere ornamental member. Those efforts of his which have most interest for us of later date were made on behalf of the rights of authors, for whose benefit he introduced the International Copyright Bill; his speech on this subject was considered the most telling made in the House during that session. The bill met with strong opposition, but Talfourd had the satisfaction of seeing it ultimately pass into law in 1842, albeit in a greatly modified form.

At the period of his elevation to the bench he was created a knight, and thenceforward his life was, in the intervals of his professional labours, devoted to scholarly and literary pursuits. From his school days he had enter- tained dreams of attaining eminence as a writer ; and to the last he remained a diligent student of literature, ancient and modern. During his early years in London Talfourd found himself forced to depend—in great measure, at least —upon his literary exertions. He was at this period on the staff of the London Magazine, and was an occasional contributor to the Hdinburgh and Quarterly reviews, the New Monthly Magazine, and other periodicals ; while, on joining the western circuit, he acted as law reporter to The Times. His legal writings on matters germane to lit- erature are excellent expositions, animated by a lucid and sufficiently telling, if not highly polished, style. Among the best of these are his article “On the

Principle of Advocacy in the Practice of the Bar” (in the Law Magazine, January 1846); his Proposed New Law of Copyright of the LTighest Importance to Authors (1838) ; Three Speeches de- liwered in the House of Commons in Favour of an Extension of Copyright (1840); and his famous Speech for the De- fendant in the Prosecution, the Queen v. Moxon, for the Publication of Shelley’s Poetical Works (1841).

But Talfourd cannot be said to have gained any position

He received his early |

a teal 2)

among men of letters until the production of his tragedy Zon, which was privately printed in 1835, and produced in the following year at Covent Garden theatre. The tragedy was also well received in America, and it met with the honour of reproduction at Sadler’s Wells in December 1861. This dramatic poem, its author’s masterpiece, turns upon the voluntary sacrifice of Ion, king of Argos, in re- sponse to the Delphic oracle, which had declared that only with the extinction of the reigning family could the pre- vailing pestilence incurred by the deeds of that family be removed. Asa poem Jon has many high qualities. The blank verse, if lacking the highest excellence, is smooth and musical, and the lines are frequently informed with the spirit of genuine poetry ; the character of the high-souled son of the Argive king is finely developed, and the reader is affected throughout by that same sense of the relentless working and potency of destiny which so markedly distin- guishes the writings of the Greek dramatists.

Two years later, at the Haymarket theatre, The Athenian Captive was acted with moderate success. In 1839 Glen- coe, or the Fate of the Macdonalds, was privately printed, and in 1840 it was produced at the Haymarket ; but this home drama is indubitably much inferior to his two classic plays. The Castilian (1853) did not excite a tenth part of the interest called forth by Jon. Before this he had pro- duced various prose writings other than those already re- ferred to,—among them his ‘History of Greek Litera- ture,” in the Encyclopedia Metropolitana.

Besides the honour of knighthood and his various legal distinctions, Talfourd held the honorary degree of D.C.L. from the university of Oxford. He died in court during the performance of his judicial duties, at Stafford, on March 13, 1854.

In addition to the writings above-mentioned, Talfourd was the author of The Letters of Charles Lamb, with a Sketch of his Life (1837); Recollections of a First Visit to the Alps (1841); Vacation Rambles and Thoughts, comprising recollections of three Conti- nental tours in the vacations of 1841, 1842, and 1848 (2 vols., 1844); and Final Memorials of Charles Lamb (1849-50).

TALISMAN. See AMULET.

TALLAGE, or Tatiiace (from the French taller, 2.e., a part cut out of the whole), appears to have signified at first a tax in general, but became afterwards confined in England to a special form of tax, the assessment upon cities, boroughs, and royal demesnes—in effect, a land tax. Like ScuracE (q.v.), tallage was superseded by the subsidy sys- tem in the 14th century. The last occasion on which it was levied appears to be the year 1332. The famous statute of 25 Edw. I. (in some editions of the statutes 34 Edw. I.) De Tallagio non Concedendo, though it is printed among the statutes of the realm, and was cited as a statute in the preamble to the Petition of Right in 1627, and by the judges in John Hampden's case in 1637, is probably an imperfect and unauthoritative abstract of the Conjfirmatzo Cartarum. The first section enacts that no tallage or aid shall be imposed or levied by the king and his heirs with- out the will and assent of the archbishops, bishops, and other prelates, the earls, barons, knights, burgesses, and other freemen in the kingdom. Tallagiwm facere was the technical term for rendering accounts in the exchequer, the

accounts being originally kept by means of ¢alles or notched sticks. The tellers (a corruption of talliers) of the exchequer were at one time important financial officers. The system of keeping the national accounts by tallies was abolished by 23 Geo. III. c. 82, the office of teller by 57 Geo. ITT. c. 84.

TALLEYRAND DE PERIGORD, Cuartes Maurice (1754-1838), created by Napoleon a prince of the empire under the title of the Prince de Bénévent, was born at

Paris on 2d February 1754. His father, who was of a _ younger branch of the princely family of Chalais, was an

officer in the army of Louis XV., and his mother, also of noble family, was a member of the royal household at Ver- sailles. An accident in infancy rendered Talleyrand lame for life, and changed his whole career. His upbringing was, in accordance with the fashionable heartlessness of the day, entirely left to strangers; and while a boy he was, in con- sequence of his lameness, formally deprived by a conseil de Famille of his rights of primogeniture,—his younger brother, the Comte d'Archambaud, taking his place; and he was destined for the church. He keenly felt the blow, but was powerless to avert it; and he used his enforced profession only as a stepping-stone to his ambition, always despising it, and coolly and defiantly forsaking it when he found it an embarrassment.

When he was removed from the country he was sent to the Collége d'Harcourt, where he speedily distinguished himself; and in 1770, when sixteen years of age, he became an inmate of the Séminaire de St Sulpice, his education being completed by a course in the Sorbonne. Much as Talleyrand despised the church as a career, he never ceased highly to appreciate theology as a training, and he publicly testified to its value to the statesman and specially to the diplomatist. While achieving distinction as a student, he carefully cultivated such society as might promote his advancement; and it was in the circle of Madame du Barry that his cynicism and wit, reported by her to the king, gained him the position of abbé. To his arts of manner were added, not only his advantages of birth and scholarship, but a penetrating judgment of men and affairs, a subtle audacity, and a boundlessly selfish ambition. As early as 1780 we find this abbé malgré lui to have reached the important position of " agent-general " of the French clergy. His ability and his flagrant immorality alike rendered him a marked man, and the latter did not prevent his appointment, in accordance with his father's dying request to the king, as bishop of Autun in January 1789. The

clergy of his own diocese immediately elected him a member of the states-general ; and he delivered before his constituents one of the most remarkable speeches which the crisis produced, containing a sagacious and statesmanlike programme of the reforms which the condition of France demanded, He thus entered the assembly as one of its leaders.

The states-general had hardly met ere Talleyrand's influ- ence was called into play. He successfully urged the clergy to yield to the demand of the commons that the three estates should meet together; and the nobles could thereafter only follow the example thus set. On the question of the extent of the assem bly's authority he again sided with the popular leaders, As a financier of great foresight and power he soon became justly celebrated ; and his position in the assembly may be estimated by his appointment as one of a committee of eight to frame the project of a constitution. All his previous successes were, however, eclipsed by the daring with which he attacked the rights and privileges of his own order. He had seconded the proposals that the clergy should give up their tithes and plate for the benefit of the nation, and on 10th October 1789 he himself proposed a scheme whereby the landed property of the church should be confiscated by the state. On 2d November, after violent debates, his project was carried, and the old clergy thereafter ranked him as anenemy. But his general popularity so much increased that he was charged by the national assembly to prepare a written memoir in defence of its labours; and the mani- festo, read on February 10, 1790, was received with great approval throughout the country. On the 16th he was elected president of the assembly for the usual brief term.

On various subjects he was now looked up to as an! avow. All,

authority,—on education, on electoral and ecclesiastical

Y &@ AN D

reform, on banking, and on general finance, a diplomatist had not yet begun.

On July 14, 1790, Talleyrand, at the head of 300 clergy, assisted at the féte in the Champ de Mars in commemora- tion of the fall of the Bastille, and

publicly blessed the great standard of France. By this tinie, however, the dispute as to the civil constitution of the clergy had broken out, the decision of the assembly being resisted by the king, backed by the pope. When in November the king yielded, Talleyrand boldly took the required oath, only two bishops following his example. New bishops were elected by the assembly, and these he, in open defiance of the church, consecrated. In the end of April 1791 he was suspended from his functions and excommunicated by the pope. Without a moment's hesitation Talleyrand aband- oned his profession, which he never afterwards resumed, He had been false to its vows, and had scandalized it by his shameless life. It was only in the preceding February that he had, in declining nomination for the archbishopric of Paris, felt, indiscreetly enough and contrary to his usual practice, the necessity of writing to the Moniteur a hypo- critical confession of his gambling propensities, stating his gains at 30,000 francs. Although in 1801 the excom- munication was recalled, it was nearly half a century after his first act of defiance ere he became personally reconciled to the church, and then only when he was at the point of death.

On purely political lines, however, Talleyrand's career became more and more celebrated. In the beginning of the same month of April 1791, his friend Mirabeau having just died, he was appointed to succeed him as a director of the department of Paris, a position which still further increased his influence in the circles of the metropolis. On the flight of the king in June, Talleyrand leaned at first and cautiously towards the duke of Orleans, but finally declared for a constitutional monarchy with Louis XVI. still on the throne. Ere the constitutional assembly brought its existence to a close on 14th September, he unfolded before it his Imagnificent scheme of national education, which, in the words of Sir Henry Bulwer, "having at one extremity the communal school and at the other the Institute, exists with but slight alterations at this very day." The assembly had voted that none of its members should be members of the new legislative body, so that Talleyrand was free ; besides, events were hurrying on with strange and critical rapidity ; and Talleyrand left France for England, reaching London in the end of January 1792. With this visit his diplomatic career may be said to have begun,

He was not formally accredited, but had in his pocket an introduction to Lord Grenville by Delessart the foreign minister ; the king himself was aware of his mission, the ostensible object of which was to conciliate England. Talleyrand for his part shared the ulterior views of Narbonne, the minister of war, that it would be for the advantage of his country to divert its energies, which were morbidly directed to its internal troubles, into another channel, and to precipitate an Austrian war. Although received well in London society, he found the want of official credentials a fatal obstacle to his diplomatic nego- tiations, and he returned to Paris, whence he was almost immediately again despatched to the English court under much more favourable conditions, He was nominally only attendant with De Chauvelin, the minister plenipotentiary, but he was really the head of the embassy, and he carried with him a letter of Louis XVI. to George III. At this time, indeed, TaHeyrand's relations with Louis were very close,—far closer than he afterwards cared or dared to however, was of no avail. The startling course of the Revolution made the English look askance

His career as

fete yy RAN D

upon his mission, and he returned baffled to Paris, where he arrived shortly before the coup @état of the 10th of August. But this place, where his wariest manceuvres were outdone by the rapidity of the popular movements, and where at any turn of affairs he might lose his head, was not to his liking; and by the middle of September he is for the third time in London. It is characteristic of the man—of the dexterity as well as audacity of his intrigue—that he who had but shortly before carried with him a letter of favour from Louis XVI. was, now that royalty was abolished, the bearer of a specific passport— "going to London by our orders"—under the hand of Dantou. Equally characteristic is the express falsehood with which he opens his negotiations: he writes at once to Lord Grenville, "I have at this time absolutely no kind of mission in England"—he was selling his library and seeking repose. His courtesies were not returned ; and, although he succeeded in making friends in certain high quarters, he was, in the end of January 17 94, under the provisions of the Alien Act, ordered to leave

England. Fortified with an introduction by Lord Lansdowne to Washington, he sailed for the United States.

A decree of the convention had issued against Talley- rand during his stay in England. He was an émigré. But as the excesses of the period drew to a close the proscription was recalled on the appeal of Chénier, who founded on Talleyrand's relations with Danton and his mission to England in the service of the Revolution! On July 25, 1795, he arrived at Hamburg, whence he passed to Berlin, and, after a short stay there, to Paris. He was received with enthusiasm in the circles of fashion and intrigue. He would have been eagerly welcomed by any of the political parties as a strength; but the Directory was in power, and he supported it. Within the Directory he supported Barras, as against his compeers. He was thus a moderate constitutionalist and in the way of advancement.

During his absence from France he had been elected a member of the Institute. He was now elected its secre- tary. In this capacity he read before it two memoirs—one on the "commercial relations of the United States with England," and the other ''on the advantages of withdraw- ing from new colonies in present circumstances." These memoirs exhibit Talleyrand at the very maturity of his powers, and are sufficient to establish his position as one of the most far-seeing and thoughtful statesmen that France ever possessed. The first paper shows how, in spite of the War of Independence, the force of language, race, and interest must in his view bind England and the States together as natural allies; and it contains that remarkable passage (which once read is never forgotten) in which the civilization of America is described as exhibited in space as well as in time,—as the traveller moves west- ward from State to State he appears to go backward from age to age. The papers, which were read in April and July of 1797, made his claim to state recognition irre- sistible, and towards the end of the latter month he was appointed to the post of foreign niinister.

He had been carefully scanning the political situation, and he accurately foresaw that the Directory, which represented no one set of opinions, but only a vain com- pound of all, could not stand against unity of policy backed by force, and in the meantime could be manipu- lated. Thus with a brutal swiftness its personnel becomes changed. Barras with his sluggish

moderation remains ; but, behind and through him, it is the dexterous purpose of Talleyrand that is at work. This is the first character- istic of his administration. Its second is the ability which he displays in his communications with the diplomatic service, in view of the rupture with England. Its third is

ol

the shamelessly corrupt manner in which he approaches the American ambassadors on the subject of the seizure of certain ships, on the conclusion of a commercial treaty between England and the States, putting himself in his public and powerful position at their service,—if the bribe were suitably large. And its fourth is that he is hardly in the chair of office until he has shrewdly selected Bonaparte as the object of his assiduous flatteries, writing to him in semi-confidence, and laying the basis of their future intimacy. But his first term of office was short: the American ambassadors spurned his offer and let his conduct be publicly known, with the result that for this and other reasons he resigned his post. Public opinion was outraged. His official corruption, however, was not ended, for Talleyrand turned everything into gold; in his later diplomacy also he could always be bought ; and this public immorality was but too faithfully reflected in his private life, in which gambling was his passion and a source of his vast wealth.

Out of office, but still pulling the strings of the Directory, he awaited the arrival of Napoleon in Paris, and it was his hand which was most powerful in shaping the events of the 18th and 19th Brumaire—9th and 10th November 1799. He reconciled Sieyés to Bonaparte ; a majority of the Directory—Sieyés, Ducos, and at last at his persuasion even Barras—resigned ; the Directory collapsed, and the consulate was established (see NApotEon and Sixyvus). Napoleon was the first and Talleyrand the second man in France. |

He was now an absolutist, the whole drift of his influence being in the direction of consolidating, under whatever title, the power of Bonaparte. For many years henceforward Talleyrand’s career is part of the general history of France. He is soon again foreign minister ; and he is acknowledged to have been the ablest diplomatist of an age when diplomacy was a greater power than it has ever been before or since. To him

falls a full share of responsibility for the kidnapping and murder of the Duc d'Enghien in March 1804 (see Savary). He had assisted at the councils when the atrocity was planned, and he wrote to the grand-duke justifying the seizure of the prince while on Baden territory. His hand in the matter was of course concealed. But, when one advised him to tender his resignation, he demurely remarked, "If, as you say, Bonaparte has been guilty of a crime, that is no reason why I should be guilty ofa folly." In other and more agreeable directions he had prostrated himself before Napoleon's purposes, approving among other things of the policy of the Concordat (15th July 1801), and securing thereby the recall of his excommunication. To the pope's grateful brief, which gave him liberty "'to administer all civil affairs," he coolly gave a wide interpretation, and he shortly thereafter married. He of course supported and defended first the consulship for life and then the crown- ing of the emperor. .

By and by, however, a change comes over his political attitude, and it is not long ere Napoleon detects it. This change we date, with Sainte-Beuve, from the end of January 1809. Before the peace of Tilsit, July 8, 1807, from Jena onwards, he had personally accompanied the great conqueror ; after it they stood apart, for the states- man saw in those brilliant but ceaseless conquests the prelude to the ruin of his master and his country. He was now prince of Benevento, and he withdrew from the ministry, receiving at his own desire the title of vice-grand- elector of the empire. Yet he had not disapproved of the Spanish war; the young princes had even been entrusted to his surveillance at his country house at Valengay. But anything might have happened to the emperor in Spain, and Talleyrand had evidently been calculating the chances

of the future. So at the date stated the explosion occurs, Napoleon pouring upon Talleyrand all the fury of his invective, reproaching him with the affair of the Duc d'Enghien, and clamouring to know where his enormous wealth had come from,—how much he had gained at play or on the stock exchange, and what was the sum of his bribes by foreign powers. Over and over again such scenes are repeated, the burden of the fierce reproaches being always the same; but Talleyrand stands impassive as a statue, remarking once, but not till he is out of the room, and is limping away, 'What a pity that such a great man has been so badly brought up !" or sending in, at another time, a resignation, which of course is not ac- cepted. The reproaches of the emperor were only too well founded, his minister having reaped a vast harvest from the smaller powers at the formation of the Rhenish Con- federation ; it is indeed recorded that Talleyrand oncc put a figure upon his gains in this department of corruption— the figure being no less than sixty million francs.

It is undoubtedly to his credit, however, that he steadily resisted a warlike policy, and that he was particularly opposed to the Russian invasion. He was occasionally employed in diplomatic negotiations, and was even again offered the post of foreign minister if he would give up that of vice-grand-elector. This offer, which would have placed him at the mercy of Napoleon, he declined, and the breach between the two widened. Before the events of 1814 his hotel had become the centre of anti-Napoleonic intrigue ; as the crisis approached he communicated with the allies; when it was at hand he favoured a regency, and appeared anxious that Marie Louise should remain in Paris ; and when this was abandoned he carefully arranged a feigned departure himself, but that his carriage should be turned back at the city gates; he did return ; and the emperor Alexander was his guest at the Hotel Talleyrand ! ! The revolution was his work; and his nominee Louis XVHT ascended the throne. For a third time, and again under a new master, he was appointed foreign minister. It would be difficult to overestimate the splendid services which he now rendered to France. In Paris, on 23d April, the treaty was concluded under which the soldiers of the allies were to leave French soil ; and Talleyrand success- fully urged that the territory of France should be the enlarged territory of 1792, and also that the great art treasures of which so many European cities had been despoiled should remain in

Paris. A final treaty of peace between Europe and France was concluded on 30th May, and in September the congress of Vienna assembled. It was the scene of Talleyrand's greatest triumphs. He succeeded single-handed in breaking up the confederation of the allies, and in reintroducing the voice of France into the deliberations of the European powers. Further, on January 3, 1815, a secret treaty was concluded between Austria, France, and England.

When Napoleon escaped from Elba and advanced towards Paris, Louis XVIII. retired to Ghent. Although the congress of Vienna was thus broken up, Talleyrand made no haste to follow him thither. He was puzzled, and remained so during the Hundred Days. He despised Louis, and an early approach to Bonaparte was out of the question. He therefore coolly betook himself to Carlsbad, remarking, when an explanation was asked for, that the first duty of a diplomatist after a congress was to attend to his liver! Waterloo of course decided him. He ap- peared at Ghent, and was but coldly received. The foreign powers, however, intervened, conscious after Vienna of Talleyrand's value ; and, among others, Wellington insisted that the great diplomatist must be taken into the councils

of Louis,—with the result that he became prime minister.

at the second restoration. But his position was one of

TA L—

TrArh

extreme difficulty. The king disliked him; there were scenes bordering on violence in the royal presence; the Russian emperor intimated his hostility to him ; he shared the odium of having a man like Fouché for a colleague ; Chateaubriand and his party hated and beset him. For- tunately an excuse of a broad and national kind soon pre- sented itself. He objected to the conditions which the

_allies were imposing upon France, refused to sign the

treaty, and on 24th September resigned office.

He retired into private life, in which he remained for fifteen years. He only spoke in the House of Peers three times during this period,—twice (1821 and 1822) in favour of the liberty of the press, and once (1823) to protest against the Spanish war. But in 1830, when Charles X.'s reign was evidently imperilled, he again is at the centre of intrigue ; and it is actually at his private but urgent suggestion that Louis Philippe heads the revolution,

| taking, to begin with, the title of lieutenant-general of the | kingdom. Declining the post of foreign minister, he

proceeded to London as ambassador, conducting himself and serving his country with his usual consummate skill. He returned crowned with success after the formation of the Quadruple Alliance. In November 1834 he resigned, and quitted public life for ever.

He emerged from his retirement on March 3, 1838, to pronounce before the Institute the éloge of Reinhard, and in so doing to treat of diplomacy in general, and to suggest an indirect but adroit apology for his own career. He was received with unbounded enthusiasm by the élite of French literature and society—Cousin even exclaiming that the éloge was worthy of Voltaire. His last illness, which had by this time shown itself, soon prostrated him. He was visited on his death-bed by crowds of celebrities, including the king. He died on May 17, 1838, at the great age of eighty-four. He is buried at Valengay.

According to his desire, his memoirs under his own hand will not appear till 1890.

There is a considerable body of anonymous and untrustworthy literature both in French and English on the subject of this sketch.

For the earlier part of Talleyrand's career, see the general literature of the Revolution; for the Napoleonic, the general histories, includ-

| ing especially the Memoirs of the Duc de Rovigo ; for the third and

last, also the general histories, and especially the Correspondence between Talleyrand and Lowis XVIII., edited by Pullain (1880;

transl. into English, 1881), and the Memoirs of Guizot. Refer- ences abound to the private life of Talleyrand, and on it see also the Histoire Politique et Vie Intime, by G. Touchard-Lafosse (1848),

and the Souvenirs Intimes sur M. de Talleyrand, by Amedée Pichot (1870). The student must be on his guard in perusing most of this last-mentioned literature. For many years the His- toire Politique et Privée, by G. Michaud (1853), stood practically uncorrected, although evidently a studied and bitter attack. The view taken by Louis Blanc in his Dix Ans (translated into English in 1845) is also quite distorted, and if one wishes to see a complete misreading of Talleyrand's career it can be found in Blanc's tenth chapter of his fifth book. Sir Henry Lytton Bulwer rendered great service by his life of Talleyrand, published in his Historieal Char-

acters; and the worth and accuracy of Bulwer's biography, which was speedily translated into French, has been amply acknowledged by Sainte-Beuve in his valuable treatise (lectures) on Talleyrand, published in 1870. Reference should also be made to Mignet, Bastide, and the Mémoires Politiques of Lamartine.

Caution will have to be exercised in reading Talleyrand's auto- biography, which will not appear till 1890. The testimony of con- temporaries will not be available to check it, and Talleyrand is proved to have presided at the destruction of much documentary evidence implicating himself, ¢.g., at the moment when the Russian emperor was living at his house. (DSa)

TALLIEN, Jean Lampert (1769-1820), the chief leader of the party that overthrew Robespierre, was the son of the maitre dhétel of the Marquis de Bercy, and was born in Paris in 1769. The marquis, perceiving the boy's ability, had him well educated, and got him a place as a lawyer's clerk. Being much excited by the first events of the Revolution, he gave up his desk to enter a

printer's office, and by 1791 he was overseer of the printing

Hepartment of the Monitewr. While thus employed he honceived the idea of the journal-affche, and from January o May 1791 he placarded a large printed sheet on all the walls of Paris twice a week under the title of the Am

les Citoyens. This enterprise of his, of which the expenses vere defrayed by the Jacobin Club, made him well known ito the revolutionary leaders; and he made himself still more conspicuous in organizing the great “Féte de la Liberté” on April 15, 1792, in honour of the released soldiers of Chateau-Vieux, with Collot d’Herbois. On \July 8, 1792, he was the spokesman of a deputation of the section of the Place Royale which demanded from the legislative assembly the reinstatement of Pétion and Manuel, and he was one of the most active popular leaders in the attack upon the Tuileries on 10th August, on which jday he was appointed secretary or clerk to the revolution- ary commune of Paris. In this capacity he exhibited an almost feverish activity ; he perpetually appeared at the bar of the assembly on behalf of the commune; he announced the massacres of September in the prisons in terms of praise and apology ; and he sent off the famous circular of 3d September to the provinces, recommending them to do likewise. At the close of the month he resigned his post on being elected, in spite of his youth, a deputy to the Convention by the department of Seine- et-Oise, and he commenced his legislative career by defend- ing the conduct of the commune during the massacres. He took his seat upon the Mountain, and showed himself one of the most vigorous Jacobins, particularly in his defence .of Marat; he voted for the execution of the king, and was ‘elected a member of the Committee of General Security on ‘January 21,1793. After a short mission in the western provinces he returned to Paris, and took an active part in the coups @état of 3lst May and 2d June, which resulted in the overthrow of the Girondins. For the next few ‘months he remained comparatively quiet, but on Septem- ber 23, 1793, he was sent with Ysabeau on his famous mission to Bordeaux. This was the very month in which the Terror was organized under the superintendence of the Committees of Public Safety and General Security, and Bordeaux was one of the cities selected to feel its full weight. Tallien showed himself one of the most vigorous jof the proconsuls sent over France to establish the Terror jin the provinces ; though with but few adherents, he soon awed the great city into quiet, and kept the guillotine constantly employed. It was at this moment that the romance of Tallien’s life commenced. Among his prisoners was Theresa, Comtesse de Fontenay, the daughter of the great Spanish banker Cabarrus, the most beautiful and fascinating woman of her time, and Tallien not only spared her life but fell deeply in love with her. She quickly abated the fierceness of his revolutionary ardour, and from the lives she

saved by her entreaties she received the name of “Our Lady of Pity.” This mildness, however, displeased the members of the committees; Tallien was recalled to Paris ; and Madame de Fontenay was impmsoned |there. Danton and his friends had but just fallen, and the members of the committees were half afraid to strike jagain at the moderates, so Tallien was spared for the time, and was even elected president of the Convention on March 24, 1794. But the Terror could not be maintained at the jsame pitch: Robespierre began to see that he must strike at many of his own colleagues in the committees if he was ‘to carry out his theories, and Tallien was one of the men ‘ ondemned with them. They determined to strike first, sand on the great day of Thermidor it was Tallien who, jurged on by the danger in which his beloved lay, opened ithe attack upon Robespierre. The movement was suc- essful; Robespierre and his friends were guillotined ; and the young Tallien, as the leading Thermidorian, was

elected to the Committee of Public Safety. Now came the great months of his career: he showed himself a vigorous Thermidorian ; he was instrumental in suppress- ing the Revolutionary Tribunal and the Jacobin Club ; he attacked Carrier and Lebon, the proconsuls of Nantes and Arras; and he fought bravely against the insurgents of Prairial. In all these months he was supported by his Theresa, whom he married on December 26, 1794, and who became the leader of the social life of Paris. His last political achievement was in July 1795, when he was present with Hoche at the destruction of the army of the émigrés at Quiberon, and ordered the executions which followed. After the close of the Convention Tallien’s political import- ance came to an end, for, though he sat in the Council of Five Hundred, the moderates attacked him as terrorist, and the extreme party as a renegade. Madame Tallien also got tired of him, and became the mistress of the rich banker Ouvrard. Bonaparte, however, who is said to have been introduced by him to Barras, took him to Egypt in his great expedition of June 1798, and after the capture of Cairo he edited the official journal there, the Décade Egyptienne. But Menou sent him away from Egypt, and on his passage he was captured by an English cruiser and taken

to London, where he had a good reception among the Whigs and was well received by Fox. On returning to France in 1802 he got a divorce from his unfaithful spouse (who eventually married the Prince de Chimay), and was left for some time without employment. At last, through Fouché and Talleyrand, he got the appointment of consul at Alicante, and remained there until he lost the sight of one eye from yellow fever. On returning to Paris he lived on his half-pay until 1815, when he received the especial favour of not being exiled like the other regicides. His latter days were spent in the direst poverty; he had to sell his books to get bread. He died at Paris on Nov- ember 16, 1820.

TALLIS (Tattys, Tatys, or Ta.isrus), THomas (c. 1515-1585), justly styled "the father of English cathe- dral music," was born, as nearly as can be ascertained, about the year 1515. The history of his youth is involved in some obscurity ; there seems, however, but little doubt that, after singing as a chorister at old Saint Paul's under Thomas Mulliner, he obtained a place among the children of the chapel royal. His next appointment was that of organist at Waltham abbey, where, on the dissolution of the monastery in 1540, he received, in compensation for the loss of his preferment, 20s. for wages and 20s. for reward. An interesting relic of this period of his career is preserved in the library of the British Museum, in the form of a volume of MS. treatises on music, once belong- ing to the abbey, on the-last page of which appears his autograph, "Thomas Tallys," with the final letter pro- longed into an elaborate flourish—the only specimen of his handwriting now known to exist.

Not long after his dismissal from Waltham, Tallis was appointed a gentleman of the chapel royal; and thence- forward he laboured so zealously for the advancement of his art that his genius has left an indelible impression upon the English school, which owes more to him than to any other composer of the 16th century, and in the history of which his name plays a very important part indeed.

One of the earliest compositions by Tallis to which an approximate date can be assigned is the well-known Service in the Dorian Mode, consisting of the Venite, Te Deum, Benedictus, Kyrie, Nicene Creed, Sanctus, Gloria in Excelsis, Magnificat, and Nunc Dimittis, for four voices, together with the

Preces, Responses, Paternoster, and Litany, for five, all published for the first time, in the Rev. John Barnard's first Book of Selected Church Music, in 1641, and reprinted, with the exception of the Vemte

and Paternoster, in Boyce's Cathedral Music in 1760.1 That this work was composed for the purpose of supply- ing a pressing need, after the publication of the second prayer-book of King Edward VI. in 1552 there can be no reasonable doubt; and its perfect adaptation to its intended purpose is sufficiently proved by the fact that, for more than three hundred years, its claim to occupy the first and highest place among compositions of its class has been undisputed. Written in the style. known among Italian composers as lo stile famigliare, i.e., in simple counterpoint of the first species, nota contra notam, with no attempt at ingenious points of imitation, or learned complications of any kind—it adapts itself with equal dignity and clearness to the expression of the verbal text it is intended to illustrate, bringing out the sense of the words so plainly that the listener cannot fail to interpret them aright, while its pure rich harmonies tend far more surely to the excitement of devotional feeling than the marvellous combinations by means of which too many of Tallis's contemporaries sought to astonish their hearers, while forgetting all the loftier attributes of their art. In this noble quality of self-restraint the Zitany and Responses bear a close analogy to the Zmproperia and other similar works of Palestrina, wherein, addressing himself to the heart rather than to the ear, the princeps musicx produces the most thrilling effects by means which, to the super- ficial critic, appear almost puerile in their simplicity, while those who are able to look beneath the surface discern in them depths of learning such as none but a very highly cultivated musician can appreciate. Of this profound learning Tallis possessed an inexhaustible store ; and the rich resources it opened to his genius not only placed his compositions on a level with those produced by the best of his Italian and Flemish contemporaries, but enabled him to raise the English school itself to a height which it had never previously attained, and which, nevertheless, it continued to maintain undiminished until the death of its last representative, Orlando Gibbons, in 1625. Though this

school is generally said to have been founded by Dr Tye, there can be no doubt that Tallis was its greatest master, and that it was indebted to him alone for the infusion of new life and vigour which prevented it from degenerating, as some of the earlier Flemish schools had done, into a mere vehicle for the display of fruitless erudition, ‘Tallis’s ingenuity far surpassed that of his most erudite contemporaries ; but he never paraded it at the expense either of intrinsic beauty or truthfulness of expression. Like every other great musician of the period, he produced occasionally works confessedly intended for no more exalted purpose than the exhibition of his stupendous skill, one of the most remarkable character- istics of which was the apparent ease with which it disposed of difficulties that, to composers of ordinary ability, would have proved insurmountable. In his canon, Miserere nostri, the intricacy of the contrapuntal devices seems little short of miraculous; yet, so smooth and flowing is the effect produced by their dizzy involutions, that no one unacquainted with the secret of their con- struction would suspect the presence of any unusual element in the composition. In his motet, Spem in alium non habui, written for forty voices disposed in eight five-part choirs, each singer is intrusted with a part, agreeable and interesting in itself, yet never for a moment interfering with any one of the thirty-nine equally interest- ing parts with which it is associated. These towrs de force, however, though approachable only by the greatest contrapuntists living in an age in which counterpoint

1 Boyce’s unaccountable omission of the very beautiful Venite is a

inisfortune which cannot be too deeply deplored, since it has led to its consignment to almost hopeless oblivion.

was cultivated with a success that has never since been equalled, serve to illustrate one phase only of Tallis’s many-sided genius, which shines with equal brightness in the eight psalm-tunes (one in each of the first eight modes) and unpretending little Venz Creator, printed in 1567 at the end of Archbishop Parker’s /irst Quinquagene of Metrical Psalms, and many other compositions of like simplicity.

In 1575 Tallis and his pupil William Byrd—as great a contrapuntist as himself, though by no means his equal in depth of expression—obtained from Queen Elizabeth royal letters patent granting them the exclusive right of printing music and ruling music-paper for twenty-one years ; and, in virtue of this privilege, they issued, in the same year, a joint work, entitled Cantiones que ab argu- mento Sacre vocantur, guingue et sex partium, containing sixteen motets by Tallis and eighteen by Byrd, all of the highest degree of excellence. Some of these motets, adapted to English words, are now sung as anthems in the Anglican cathedral service. But no such translations appear to have been made during Tallis's lifetime; and there is strong reason for believing that, though both he and Byrd outwardly conformed to the new religion, and composed music expressly for its use, they remained Catholics at heart to the end of their days.

Tallis's contributions to the Cantiones Sacre were the last of his compositions published during his lifetime. He did not, indeed, live to witness the expiration of the patent, though Byrd survived it and published two more books of Cantiones on his own account in 1589 and 1591, besides numerous other works. 'Tallis died November 23, 1585, and was buried in the parish church at Greenwich, where a quaint rhymed epitaph, preserved by Strype, and reprinted by Burney and Hawkins, recorded the fact that he served in the chapel royal during the reigns of Henry VIII, Edward VI., Mary, and Elizabeth. This was de- stroyed with the old church about 1710; and it was not until about twenty years ago that a copy was placed in the present building. Portraits, professedly authentic, of Tallis and Byrd were engraved by Vandergucht in 1730, for Nicolas Haym's projected History of Music, but never published. One copy only is known to exist.

Not very many works besides those already mentioned were printed during Tallis's lifetime; but a great number are still pre- served in MS. Unhappily, it is to be feared that many more were

destroyed, in the 17th century, during the spoliation of the cathedral libraries by the Puritans. (W. S. R.)

TALLOW is the solid oil or fat of ruminant animals, but commercially it is almost exclusively obtained from oxen and sheep. The fat is distributed throughout the entire animal structure; but it accumulates in large quantities

as “suet” in the body cavity, and it is from such suet that tallow is principally melted or rendered. The various methods by which tallow and other animal fats are separated and purified have been dealt with under OILs (see vol. xvii. p. 743). In commerce ox tallow and sheep tallow are generally distinguished from each other, although much nondescript animal fat is also found in the market. Ox tallow occurs at ordinary temperatures as a solid hard fat having a yellowish white colour ; when fresh and new it has scarcely any taste or smell; but it soon acquires a distinct odour and readily becomes rancid. The fat is insoluble in cold alcohol, but it dissolves in boiling spirit of 0°822 sp. gr. in chloroform, ether, and the essential oils. The hardness of tallow and its melting- point are to some extent affected by the food, age, state of health, &c., of the animal yielding it, the firmest ox tallow being obtained in certain provinces of Russia, where _ for a great part of the year the oxen are fed on hay. New tallow melts at from 42°-5 to 43° ©., old tallow at 43°5,

TA L—

and the melted fat remains liquid till its temperature falls to 33° or 34°C. Tallow consists of a mixture of two- thirds of the solid fats palmitin and stearin, with one-third of the liquid fat olein. A fluid oil known as tallow oil is obtained from solid tallow by the separation by pressure of the greater part of the olein. To facilitate the separation of the olein, tallow is first melted and just before resolidi- fying it is mixed with about 10 per cent. of benzene or petroleum spirit. The mixture is then allowed to solidify in flat cakes or slabs, which are placed in press bags and piled between iron plates in a hydraulic press. On the application of pressure the olein mixed with the solvent hydrocarbon flows freely out, leaving a hard dense cake of stearin and palmitin in the bags. The volatile solvents are subsequently driven off by blowing steam through the oil, which remains a turbid fatty fluid from the proportion of solid fats it carries over with it from the hydraulic press. ‘Tallow oil is a useful lubricant and a valuable material for fine soap making, but it is not now abundantly prepared. Mutton tallow differs in several respects from that obtained from oxen. It is whiter in colour and harder, and contains only about 30 per cent. of olein. Newly rendered it has little taste or smell, but on exposure it quickly acquires characteristic qualities and becomes rancid. Sweet mutton tallow melts at 46° and

solidifies at 36° C.; when old it does not melt under 49°, and be- comes solid on reaching 44° or 45°C. It is sparingly soluble in cold ether and in boiling spirit of 0°822 sp. gr. In early times tallow was a most important candle-making substance, and candles made from this material are still consumed in no inconsidcrable quantity, but the greater proportion of the supply is now absorbed by the soap trade; the artificial butter trade which has sprung up since 1872 also takes up large quantitics of sweet tallow. ‘Tallow is further used extcnsivcly as a lubricant and in leather dressing, &c. It is of course a product of all cattle and shecp-rearing countrics, and it forms an important article of export from the United States, the Argentine Republic, and the Australian colonies. Till within the last quarter of a century Russia supplied nearly all the tallow imported into the United Kingdom; but now the imports from that source are on the most

meagre scale, although Russian P. Y. C. (pale yellow candle) con- tinues to represent the finest commercial brand.

TALLOWS, Vucrrastz. See O1ts, vol. xvii. p. 746.

TALMA, Josepu Francois (1763-1826), French tragedian, was born at Paris 15th January 1763. After attending the Mazarin college, he accompanied his father, who was a dentist, to London, where he studied in the hospitals. While in London he took part in some amateur theatricals, and, his talents at once attracting notice, a pro- fessional engagement was offered him. To this, however, his father would not consent, and shortly afterwards he was sent to Paris, where for some years he was assistant to a dentist. His predilection for the drama could not be restrained, and on 21st November 1787 he made his début at the Comédie Francaise in Afahomet. His efforts from the first won appreciation, but for a considerable time he was restricted to secondary parts. It was in jeune premier parts that he first came prominently into notice, and he attained only gradually to his unrivalled position as the exponent of strong and concentrated passion. In 1791 he and other dissentients founded the Théatre Francais de la rue de Richelieu,—a name changed in 1792 to Théatre de la République, where he won his most striking successes. Talma was among the earliest advocates of realism in scenery and costume, being greatly aided in his reforms by his friend the painter David. He possessed in perfection the physical gifts fitting him to

excel in the highest tragic parts, an admirably proportioned figure, a striking counten- ance, and a voice of great beauty and power, which, after he had conquered a certain thickness of utterance, enabled hin to acquire a matchless elocution. At first somewhat stilted and monotonous in his manner, he gradually

emancipated himself from all artificial trammels, and became by perfection of art a model of simplicity. Talma enjoyed the intimacy of Napoleon, with whom he had an acquaintance before Napoleon attained greatness; and he was a friend of Chénier, Danton, Camille Desmoulins, and otlier revolutionists. He made his last appearance 11th June 1826. and died at Paris 19th October of that year.

Talina was the author of Mémoires de Le Kain, précédés de Réflexions sur cet Actewr ct sur ? Art Théétral, contributed to the Colkection des Mémoircs sur l Art Dramatique. It was published separately at Paris in 1856, under the title Aéflexions de Talma sur Le Kain ctU Art Théétral. See Mémoires de J. F. Talma, écrits par lui-méme, et reccwillis ct mis cn ordre sur lcs paptiers de sa famille, by Alex. Dumas (1856).

TALMUD signifies—(1) ‘‘study of and instruction in anything (whether by any one else or by oneself)” ;! (2) “learning acquired”;? (3) “style, system”:® as such it is synonymous with Mishnah in its fifth signification, vol. xvi. p. 503; (4) “theory,” in contradistinction to “ prac- tice,”*—- synonymous with MMzdrash in its fourth significa- tion, vol. xvi. p. 285 ; (5) such interpretation of the Mosaic law as is apparent on the surface thereof and does not necessitate any further disquisition ;° (6) Boroztho, or the non-canonical Mishnah ;® (7) Gemara, 2.¢., the oldest com- mentary on the canonical Mishnah ;” (8) the texts of Mish- nah and Gemara combined, —the meaning which is the one most commonly attached to the term Talmud. Although the word Talmud is not to be found in the Bible, there can be little doubt that it is a classical Hebrew term, as may be seen by the analogy of Tahdnin, “supplication,” Tan- ham, “consolation,” &c.

Recensions of the Talmud.—The Talmud exists in two recensions,—the Palestinian, commonly, but by mistake, called Talmud Yerushalmi (see

below), and the Babylonian, correctly called Talmud Babli. The Talmud Yerushalmi embodies the discussions on the MisHNAH (q.v.) of hundreds of doctors, living in Palestine, chiefly in Galilee from the end of the 2d till about the middle of the 5th century, whilst the Babylonian Talmud embodies chiefly the discussions on the same J/ishnah of hundreds of doctors living in various places in Babylonia, such as Neharde‘a,§

1 Compare Mishnah, Peah, i. 1, DOD 29 MN TWdMi (“ana the studying of the Law balances them all”) ; Adoth, iv. 18, VT °%N

TWD ON (“be circumspect as regards instruction’),

2 See Perek Rabbi Meir, 6, STNDONI 125 09219 Nd} (“whose heart is not arrogant on account of his learning”); ¢f. T. B., Pesahim, leaf 49a ; dp nanw19 moon (“his learning becomes forgotten by him”).

3 See T. B., Synhedrin, leaf 24a, baa Sw nqwbn (the mode of study prevalent in Babylonia”); comp. T. B., Pesahim, 34, 533 IWMI RNNYOY PAN ION RIWMT SPIN °3NT Dw ONwWED (“foolish Babylonians, who, because ye dwellin a land of darkness, say sayings that are obscure”), and T. B., Baba Mesi‘a, leaf 85a; Rabbi Zera fasted a hundred fasts on going up to Palestine, so that he

might forget the style of Babylonico-Talmudic study caxdsaa NDA or

mxdaa xtindn), that it should not trouble him any further. Rashi takes the quotation from Baba Mesi‘a to signify the concrete Babylonian Talmud, which, however, is impossible.

4 See T. B., Kiddushin, leaf 40b: “Is theory cab) greater or

practice (MWY) greater? . . . They all answered, Theory (71105) is greater because it leads to practice.” Z’almud, as will have been seen, is here given. as synonymous with Limmud.

> See T. B., Baba Kamma, leaf 1040, NINONP synbn wT say this is a plain [Mosaic] teaching”).

6 See T. B., Baba Bathra, leaf 1300, catchword wind 7, and Varixe Leetiones in loco. :

? See T. B., Baba Mesva, leaf 336, and compare Rashi in loco.

8 The rector of this academy was Shemuel, court physician of Shapur J., and astronomer. Whilst his friend and fellow-pupil Rap (q.v.; they both attended the lectures of the principal editor of the Mish- nah) excelled in the other parts of the Jewish law, Shemuel was pre- eminent in the civil law. On account of this he is repeatedly called in the Talmud both “Shapur’’ (like his master) and “ Aryokh” (lion, king, teacher), To him is due the legal principle that “the law of

Kaphri,t Mahuza,? Shekhansib,? but notably at the two great academies of Sura and Pumbaditha, from about 190 to nearly the end of the 6th century. The doctors of both recensions, although they primarily discuss the correctness of the text and meaning of the Al¢shnah, and what should be the right legal decision according to it, do not confine themselves to this. They introduce, as occasion serves, not merely the whole of the oral tradition handed down to their time, and the necessary references to, and interpreta- tions of, the various laws to be found in the Pentateuch and the other sacred writings, but exhibit also, though only in a fragmentary manner, an almost complete cycle of the profane sciences as current orally and known to them by books composed by Jews and Gentiles. The doctors of both these recensions were and are called Amoraim (ON WN), c.c., mere “discussers, speakers,”! because, unlike the Mishnic doctors, who were and are called Z’annaim (DS3/), z.¢., “learners, teachers,” they abstained from mak- ing new laws unless absolutely compelled by circumstances to do so.6 These Amoraim stand, on the whole, in the same relation to their Mishnic predecessors as counsel giving a legal opinion, or judges deciding legal cases, stand to the legislature which frames the laws. In these points the doctors of both recensions agree. There are, however, also points of considerable difference between the two Tal- muds. These are not merely geographical, and so neces- sarily linguistic,® but also material. Whilst the discussions in the Palestinian Talmud are simple, brief, and to the point, those in the Babylonian Talmud are subtle, long- winded, and, although

always logical, sometimes even far- fetched.” But there is another difference. The Palestinian Talmud, besides containing legal and religious discussions, is a storehouse of history, geography, and archzxology,

the civil government is the law,” ¢.e., that except in religious matters the Jew must submit to the laws of his country (‘T. B., Baba Bathra, 545), Shemuel and Rab (like Rabbi Yohanan and Resh Lakish, Abayye and Raba, and others), though intimate friends, nevertheless differ on nearly all imaginable points, so that when the Talmud wishes to give firmness to a certain decision or opinion, it uses the phrase : “Rab and Shemuel, &c., both agree.”

? The rector of this school was Rab Hisda, the father-in-law of Rasa (q.v.).

? The rector of this school was RaBa (q.v.).

> The rector of this school was Rab Mahman b, Yishak (T. B., Gittin, 318, Rashi, catchword NIN), husband of the learned and accomplished Yaltha, the daughter of the resh galutha (T. B., Hullin, leaf 1093), &c.

4 Amora may also mean an interpreter. The great teachers of the first five centuries had generally a man (or several men) at their side, who to the learning requisite to translate the master’s teaching given in Hebrew, and dilate on it in Aramaic, added a Stentor’s voice, and could by fascinating speech command the attention of the audience. The first Babylonian Amora, i.e. explainer of the Mishnah, who had an Amora, v.e., a popular teacher, was Rabbi Shila. The first who is known to have acted as Amora, z. €., popular teacher, to an Amora, @.é., an explainer of the Mishnah, was the famous RaB (g.v.). See T. Y., Berakhoth, iv. 1, 2, &c.; T.B., Berakhoth, leaf 276; and T. B., Yoma, leaf 20b (against Rapoport, ‘Hrekh Millin, s.v. ‘‘ Amora”’).

> This certainly was not unfrequently the case, but even then they did so only in the spirit of the Tannaim.

§ The Palestinian Amoraim, teaching people who understood Greek, had not to explain the Greek terms which frequently occur in the Mish- nah and other works kindred to it. The Babylonian Amoraim, how- ever, who in

common with their hearers were ignorant of Greek, had a somewhat irregular though certainly effective way (received by them traditionally) of explaining the Greek terms in the Mishnah, &c., by Aramaic etymology. We will give two instances only of this practice : —(1) ‘P*MIDN, which is evidently the Greek broOjKn, is explained

T. B., Baba Mesi‘a, leaf 66), 11D xdw pyr ay x7 xd, “thou shalt get no payment except from this,” —evidently = “NP NaN AX — “upon this thou shalt stand,” t.e., “if 1 do not pay, this shall serve as my security’; compare Rashi on Baba Kamma, 110, catchword PTD ; (2) 9PM is evidently the Greek S:a0huen, and is ex- plained as being a compound of (Dp) ops NOM NT, “this shall stand when I am no more,” we, “this is my last will and testa- ment.” From T. B., Baba Bathra, leaf 1356 (evidently a Babylonian Boroitho), we see that in T. B., Baba Mesi’a, leaf 19a, three words aan bp ye], 53) have fallen out. 7 Compare p. 35, footnote 3.

MU D

whilst the Babylonian Talmud, taking into consideration that it is treble® the size of its fellow Talmud, coutains legs of these. On the other hand, it bestows more care upon the legal and religious points, and, being the later and the more studied of the two, it is also the more trustworthy.

System of the Talmud.—Most people imagine not only that the Talmuds area pathless wilderness, without so much as grammatical rules in their respective languages, but that the laws laid down in them rest on mere tradition. In reality their languages have strictly grammatical rules (see below under Azds, &c.), and their laws rest on a strictly logical system. The laws in both Talmuds are discussed and argued on philosophical rules, for which it is claimed that they have existed from time immemorial, and can be traced to the Pentateuch itself. These are—(1) the Seven Rules (ni yaw), put forth by Hillel (Z’osephto Synhedrin, vii., last §; Sephro, towards the end of the Introduction ; Aboth de-Rabbi Nathan, xxxvii.) but a great deal older than his time ; (2) the Thirteen Rules (nya mwy why), put forth by R. Yishma‘el (Introduction to Siphro), which can, how- ever, be traced im nce to the foregoing “Seven Rules”; both these are for the Halakhah; and (3) there are also the Thirty-two Rules (ny19 onwi pw>w), put forth by R. Eliezer b. R. Yose Haggalili (vol i. of most editions of the Babylonian

Talmud), which are for the Agadah. In addition, most of the points to which these rules apply are secured by early tradition. Itis quite true that by idiosyn- crasy digressions are very frequent both in Talmud and Midrash; but in the Halakhah the digression, however long, invariably ends in coming back to the original cause of the logical combination, whilst in the Agadah the digression either comes back to the place from which it started, or else will be found, ou exantination, to have been introduced for its own sake, and have served its own pur- pose. As the doctors of Talmud and Midrash are mostly introduced in dialogues, this is the only practical, if some- what uncommon, method.

Division of the Talmud.—The external division of both Talmuds is identical with the division, subdivision, and sub-subdivision of the Mishnah, although there is not always Gemara in the one when there is Gemara in the other.? This, however, need not be further discussed here, as all on this head is minutely specified in M1sHnan (q7.v.). Concerning the internal division into Halakhah and Agadah, it ought to be said that the former is more largely represented in the Babylonian Talmud, whilst the latter is more largely and more interestingly given in the Palestinian Talmud. Whole collections of Aidrashim now in our hands have constituted (if we may judge from the known to the unknown) part of the Palestinian Talmud, and seem to have chiefly belonged to those portions of it which have been gradually lost.

Purpose.—The Talmud, unlike the Aishnah, contains not only individual decisions, but everything that is necessary for arriving at legal and religious decisions of whatever description these may be, whilst, like the Mishnah, it is not itself a handbook of decisions. This is only in accordance with the nature and spirit of an oral law which delegates the decisions to the Talmudico-speculative capacities of the teachers of every age. Even several of the comparatively few instances in which the words… ’3 xn35m (“and the

8 Bibliographers generally fall into a mistake in describing the size of the Babylonian as twelve times that of the Palestinian Talmud. They forget that two-thirds of the size of the former is simply owing to the commentaries by which it is invariably accompanied.

® The only thing that ought to be mentioned here is, that to the Palestinian Talmud the Sheba‘ Massekhtoth Ketannoth Yerushalmiyyoth (Frankfort, 1851, 8vo) must be added, whilst Gemara Shekalim aud the Massekhtoth Ketannoth, which now form an integral part of the Babylonian Talmud, are (Aboth de-Rabbi Nathan excepted) unjusti- fiably attached to it. 10 See Rashi on Gen. xlvii, 2.

decision is according to so and so”) occur in the Babylonian | us believe that these mnemonic phrases are late inventions, Talmud are alater addition. They belong to the Halakhoth | but they have as yet failed to make good their assertions. Gedoloth,! and are consequently, at the earliest, of the 8th | See T. B., Shabbath 104a, ana I. B., ‘Erubin, 546, where century, but are probably of even much later date. these Simanim are positively mentioned early in the 4th Editors.—The editorship of the Palestinian Talmud is | century ; ¢f. Rashi in loco. ; generally, after Maimonides,” ascribed to Rabbi Yohanan | Value.—The value of the Talmuds may be estimated by (b. Napha). But this, if literally taken, is a gross mistake, | the fact that they contain the Mishnah in various recen- as that teacher (0b. 279) died more than a hundred years | sions and a large portion of the contents of Midrashic col- before the latest Amora (c. 450) mentioned in that Talmud. | lections, and in addition comprise a vast amount of Sopheric A similar error is made with respect to the editor or | literature not to be found in the canonical Mishnah and editors of the Babylonian Talmud, whose names are given | Agadiec matter not to be found in the known Midrashim, as Rab Asshi (see Ras) (0d. 427) and Rabina (0d. 550), | and have thousands of notices on secular knowledge of all and who lived still much earlier than the last teachers | kinds. Here, however, the reader ought to be again re- mentioned in that Talmud (Sth century). But it ought | minded that, whilst the Babylonian Talmud, the one of to be remembered that when the ancients speak of | much larger extent, contains a great deal more Judaxo- editors of books of such a mixed character as the Jfish- | religious matter, the Palestinian Talmud—of much smaller nah, the Zohar, both Talmuds, &c., they mean the person | extent—is of much greater value for the historian, the or persons who gave the first impulse to the collection or | geographer, the numismatist, and other students. redaction of such books. In this sense,

certainly, Rabbi Vicissitudes of the Talmud.—Whilst the Babylonian Yohanan was the editor of the Palestinian and Rab Asshi | Talmud commanded the attention of a hostile world, and and Rabina were the editors of the Babylonian Talmuds. | was proscribed, mutilated,® and condemned, and finally For, whilst the first of the latter pair went more than | delivered over to the flames* by popes and kings, the once through the discussion of the whole Mishnah by the | Palestinian Talmud_ suffered still more from one single Amoraim from 190 to his time (c. 427), the latter supple- | enemy—neglect.> Thousands of copies of the former mented the collection down to his own time (550). As | recension were destroyed in the course of time, but, this regards the Babylonian Talmud, the Amoraim were | Talmud being studied in all parts of the world, the few succeeded by a new order of men called Saboraim (;235 | copies surviving became the means of an endless supply. wD), ze, “opiners,” who ventured only occasionally to | Not so as regards the Palestinian Talmud, which found revise and authenticate the sayings of their predecessors. | no students, or but few, after the closing (c. 450) of the The last of these Saboraim were Rab ‘Ina (or Giza) and | Jewish academies in Palestine ; and we have even to thank tab Simona (c. 550-590). In any case neither the one | the enemies of traditional Judaisin, the Karaites, who used Talmud nor the other was written down, slight private | it in controversy with their Rabbanite opponents, for the notes excepted (o»inb nib), before the close of the 6th | preservation of some copies of it. By degrees the neglect of century, if then. The apparently insurmountable diffi- | the book became so great that whole chapters of treatises, culty of keeping such vast masses of literature in the head | whole treatises of orders, and almost two whole orders is removed when one takes into consideration that both | themselves, disappeared, and are lost to this day.® teacher and student had means of help to their memory Aids to the Study of the Talmuds.—(a) Lexicons.—The first rank fully corresponding to the vastness of the literature. In | is oceupied by lexicons for both Talmmuds and A/idrashin, and of the first place, they had the nwmbers already occurring in these that by R. Nathan b. Yehiel of Rome, compiled in the 11th the Mishnah (e.g., five must not separate the heave-offering ae ae centuries, claims the first place. All other lexicons, from ona : 5 : ias Levita, Philip Aquinas, Johannes Buxtorf, &c., down to on account of the benediction to be recited in: connexion Levy and Jastrow, are more or less based upon this grand work

with the act; Zerumoth i. 1), &e. Secondly, they had | called ‘Arukh.7 (b) Grammars.—A slight attempt at eompiling a names. Since to the sayings of the Talmud were generally | ‘ ‘ attached the names of those who uttered them, saying and name became in the memory of the student identical. If somebody who had heard a certain saying from somebody, who in his turn had heard it from somebody else, was mentioned in the Talmud, all other sayings, however unlike these in nature, if they had only the same link of tradition, were recited on the same occasion: e.g., in the Palestinian Talmud, Afegillah iv. 1, “says Rabbi Haggai, says Rabbi Shemuel b. Rab Yishak,” &c.; T. B., Berakhoth, leaf 3b, &e., “says Rabbi Zerika, says Rabbi Ammi, says Rabbi Yehoshua* b. Levi,” &e. Thirdly, other oral tradi- tons, Which went. by the order of the Pentateuch, received in the written Pentatench vast aids to memory. Fourthly, the Jlishnah (although itself not written down), by its divisions, subdivisions, and sub-subdivisions, became, in its turn, a mighty aid to memory. Fifthly, as regards the Babylonian Talmud, there are additional means of aiding memory in existence, for every now and then one meets with a Alnemosynon (Siman), which strings together the order of subjects (eg., T. B., Berakhoth, 32a, last line). Both in MSS. and printed editions these Simanim are given in brackets. Rapoport and his followers would have

3 Raymundus Martin (Ramon Martinez), backed up by his teacher Pablo Cristiani (see RAMBAN), was one of the first five (or rather six) mutilators (called censors) of the Talmud and kindred books. See Touron, Ilistoire des Hommes Illustres de ? Ordre de Saint Dominique, i, (Paris, 1748, 4to) p. 492; Jour. Philol., xvi. 134.

4 In the midsummer of 1244 twenty-four waggons full of Talmud copics were bummed in France (see Journal of Philology, xvi. 133). A certain Donin (afterwards called Nicolaus), a converted Jew, by his accusations against the Talmud, managed that Rabbi Yehiel of Paris had to dispute with him publicly about its contents. The disputation took place in the midsummer of 1240; and R. Yehiel came out of it so victorionsly that only after four years’ further machinations the Talmud was actually burned. The disputation is printed under the name of Disputatio cum Nicolao A. 1252 (!) habita cum Versione Latina in Wagenseil’s Tela Ignea Satane (Altdorf, 1681, 4to); a less incorrect Hebrew edition came out in 1878, 8vo, at Thorn.

This event of burning the Talmud called forth three, elegies—(1) by R, Binyamin b. Abraham De' Mansi, beginning obi NiAN, and the refrain of which was MIND AOSHI, NWA MWD ON (see MS. Add. 874, Camb. Univ. Lib., leaves 307a-308a); (2) by R. Meir of Rothenburg (see Ros), the beginning of which is WMA NNW Sey (in the Ashkenazic ritual for the 9th of Ab); and (3) by R. Abraham b. Yishak (see Zunz, Zur Gesch. u. Lit., pp. 463-4). 'This Abraham b. Yishak is the father of the famous En-bonet Abram Bederesi (not Bedarshi ; sce Schiller-Szinessy, Catal., i. correction 5), the author of the Behinath 'Olam.

5 See Schiller-Szinessy in the Academy, 1878, p. 171, and extract from Excursus iii. (to the Catalogue) on the Palestinian Talmud in Occasional Notices, &c., i., Cambridge, 1878, 8vo.

6 See the before-mentioned Occasional Notices.

7 Rabbenu Nathan b. Yehiel b. Abraham was, on his father's side an 'Anav (1]¥)—and not an 'Akko (133) as Rapoport, no doubt aiter' Ibn Yahya, writes it in Bikkure Iaittim, x. 7—1.e., of the family 'Anavim (Dei Mansi, Dei Mansueti, Dei Piatelli, Dei Pietosi, Dei

1 Eg., T. B., Berakhoth, leaf 36a, See Rashi and Tosaphoth, catchword snsbn ; bid., 366, and in other places.

seein his Introduction to the commentary on the Afishnah (commonly, but by mistake, called Introduction to the Seder Zer'aim) and in his Introduction to the Mishneh Terai,

38 i & it

grammar, and this only for the Babylonian Talmud, was made by the late learned S. D. Luzzatto. It exists in Italian Padua, 1865), German by Kriiger (Breslau, 1873), English by Goldammer (New York, 1876), and Hebrew by Lerner (St Petersburg, 1880). Of more value, however, is Noldeke's Mandaitie Grammar, although it stands in connexion with the Babylonian Talmud only in an indirect way. (e) Commentaries. Commentaries on the greater por- tion of the Babylonian Talmud are extant, by the famous Rabbenu Hananeel of Kairwan, the teacher of Rirx (g.v.), by RAsuHt (q.v.),

and by the descendants and disciples of this latter commentator, who composed the Zosaphoth. All these are included in the latest Talmud edition of Vilna. It is asserted by Rasap II, (q.v.) that the whole (B.) Talmud had been commented on in Arabic. As regards the commentaries on the Palestinian Talmud, it ought to be said that the Pene Mosheh, &e., by RB. Mosheh Margaliyyoth, and the Korban Ha‘edah, &c., by R. David Frankel (the teacher of Mendelssohn), make more than one commentary on the whole, and they are embodied in the Zhitomir edition (1860-67). (d) Method- ology.—Among the many Introductions to the Babylonian Talmud that of R. Shemuel Hannagid must now be considered the first, not only in time but also in value. There was indeed an earlier, aud perhaps a still more valuable one in existence (see SAADIA), but it is now unfortunately lost. As regards the Palestinian Talmud, the only one in existence is that by the late Z. Frankel (Breslau, 1870, 8vo). The author was a most learned man, but somewhat confused in his diction. (e) Translations. —Renderings of isolated treatises of the Babylonian Talmud exist in Latin, Ugolini, Thesaurus, xix., Zebahim and Menahoth, and SSG g Synhedrin;} in French, e.g., Berakhoth, by Chiarini (Leipsic, 1831,

Umani, Dei Umili), and, on his mother’s side, of the Tappuhim, i.e.,

De Pomis, to which the celebrated author of the Lexicon Semah David

belonged. Rabbenu Nathan’s father and grandfather, like Rabbenu Nathan himself and his brother’s descendants, were, no doubt, papal court Jews (and not linendrapers, as the latest editor of the ‘Arukh, by misreading and misinterpreting the somewhat hard verses of his author, contrives to show). This lucrative position furnished them with

ample means not only for their noble charities to congregational insti- &c.), but also with the leisure

tutions (a synagogue, religious bath,

necessary for the pursuit of Talmudic studies. Rabbenu Nathan was

resh kalloh (rector of the Jewish university), and unquestionably the greatest Talmudist, even as he was the poorest Hebrew poet, in As regards

his teachers we know four, three of whom he attended, whilst he studied and digested the works of the fourth so well that, though personally unknown to His first teacher was his own father; his second teacher, from whom Rabbenu Nathan no doubt obtained his thorough knowledge of Babylonian habits, was R. Masliah of Sicily, who had been a hearer of the greatest

Italy in the 11th and 12th centuries.

one another, they may be justly called master and disciple.

"‘ gaon" of Pumbaditha; his third teacher was R. Mosheh b. Ya‘akob b.

Mosheh b, Abbun of Narbonne (or Toulouse ; better known under the name of R. Mosheh Haddarshan); and the fourth was Rabbenu Han- He owed so much to this teacher that as soon as

aneel of Kairwan. the ‘Arukh had appeared most people took it for granted that Rabbenu

Hananeel had lived at Rome, and accordingly called him ‘‘a man of see MS. Brit. Mus. Add. 27,201, leaf 73b, and

Rome—Ish Romi"; Tosaphoth, passim, (That Rabbenu Gershom, Rabbenu Mosheh *D)5), and others were his teachers, as Rapoport, Joe. cit. » asserts, is a fic- tion.) Rabbenu Nathan, in his ‘Arukh, does not merely explain the foreign (i.¢., Aramaic, Persian, Greek, Latin, and Arabic) words occur- ring in the Targums, Talmuds, and Midrashim, but the subject-matter also, and thereby proves himself a doubly useful guide. In this, al- though he had been preceded by no less a personage than the Gaon Semah b. Paltoi (fl. 870), who also coniposed such an ‘Arukh, Rabbenu Nathan was virtually the first, as the Gaon’s work had been early lost. The assertion that the fourth of the four men captured by the Spanish admiral (see below, p. 39) was R. Nathan Habbabli, that he lived in Narbonne, and that he also composed a similar "Arukh, rests on a misunderstanding, as the quotation in the Yohasin clearly shows. The passages there given under R. Nathan Habbabli are taken verbatim from the ‘Arukh of our author (compare the article WIY, &c.). That Rome has been at times called in Jewish writings "

Babel,” and that cousequently Labbabli may mean ‘the Roman,” is clear from the writings of the New Testament, We will only add here a few words concerning the bibliography of the book. Of the ‘Arukh exist so far ten editions, the first of which came out undated, but before or about 1480. The seventh edition was enriched by the physician R. Binyamin Musaphia’s Musaph, .e., Additamenta (Musaphia was a Greek and Latin scholar), and the latest edition by Dr Kohut is now in progress. As regards the MSS. of this remarkable lexicon the best copies are to be found partly in the University Library, Cambridge (Add. 376, which has all the verses of the author and additamenta by R. Shemuel Tbn Yid3, and Add. 471-72), and partly at the Conrt Library, Vienna (Cod, evi. 1 and 2). The latter were carried off by Napoleon I. to Paris in 1809, but in 1815 were returned to Vienna,

? Various writers assert that there exist many books containing Latin translations of various treatises of the Babylonian Talmud.

MUD

8vo); and in German, ¢.g., Berakhoth, by Rabe (Halle, 1777, 4to), regard being had also in both to the same treatise of the Palestinian recension, and again by Pinner (1842); Baba Mesi‘a, by Sammter (1876), both at Berlin and in folio; (Nuremberg, 1856, 8vo); Ta’‘anith, by Straschun (Halle, Megillah aud Rosh Hasshanah, by Rawicz (Frankfort-on-the-Main, 1884 and 1886). been translated into Spanish has yct to be proved. As regards the Palestinian Talmud, Ugolini’s 7hesawrus contains the treatises in Latin :— Pesahim (vol. xvii.); Shekalim, Yoma, Sukkah,

‘Abodah Zarah, by Ewald

1883) ;

The assertion that the whole of this Talmud has

following

€

Losh Hasshanah, Ta’anith, Megillah, Hagigah, Besah, Mo’ed Katan (vol. xviii.); Ma’aseroth, Ma‘aser Sheni, Hallah, ‘Orlah, Bikkwrim (vol. xx.); Synhedrin, Kethuwboth (vol. xxx.),

Makkoth (vol. xxv.); Kiddushin, Sotah, M. Schwab (of the Bibliotheque Nationale, Paris) has undertaken a French translation of the entire Palestinian Talmud, which is now in progress ; from this Berakhoth has been translated into English (London, 1886, 4to).

Editions. —The editions of the Palestinian Talmud, in what was then called its entirety, are only four:—(a) Venice, 1523, without any commentary; (b) Cracow, 1609, with a short comimentary, the text apparently from a different MS. from that used for the editio

princeps; (c) Krotoschin, 1866, with a short commentary differing

from that of Cracow: these three editions are each comprised in one volume; (d) the fourth edition came out at Zhitomir, with commentaries by different men (see Commentaries above). All these editions are in folio. Of the editions of isolated treatises, which are not a few, we will only mention those of Berakhoth (Vienna, 1874) and Peah and Demai (Breslau, 1875, both in 4to), with a new com- mentary by Z. Frankel. The editions of the Babylonian Talmud are so numerous that they would require several entire sheets for enumeration. There is in existence an approximately good treatise on them (see Varix Lectiones, vols. i, and viii.). “We will only name three of the entire editions :—(1) the editio princeps, Venice, 1520-23,?—which, though disfigured by numerous misprints, was not mutilated by the censor; (2) the edition of Basel (1578-81), which omits ‘Abodah Zarah altogether, and hasa cheering (?) notice in Latin ;% (3) the latest edition, now printing at Vilna, with old commentaries hitherto unpublished. Of isolated treatises, which may be counted by more than hundreds, we will only mention one (the Portuguese of at least Berakhoth), the existence of which was asserted in the last century (Pahad Vishak, s.v. NNINNDI 812)4), then again called in question in our own times, but positively proved by the present writer from an early work composed at the time when but few editions of the Talmud existed. It is the Zera’ Abraham (Camb. MS. Ti. 6. 50, leaf 595). Materials for the critical edition of the Babylonian Talmud from an ancient MS. formerly in the monastery of Pfersee, but now in the Royal Library of

Munich, and other MSS, and early prints of isolated treatises in various public and private libraries of Europe, Asia, and Africa, have been collected and are being published by Rabbinovicz. Of this import- ant work fifteen volumes, containing the following treatises, have already come out:—the whole Seder Zera‘im (1867); Besah, Hagigah, Moed Katan (1869); Sukkah, Ta’anith (1870); Rosh Hasshanah, Yoma (1871); ‘Hrubin (1873); Pesahiim (1874); Shabbath (1875) ; Megillah, Shekalim (1877); Synhedrin (1878); ‘Abodah Zarah, Makkoth, Shebuioth, Horayoth, ‘Eduyyoth (1879); Baba Bathra (1881) ; Baba Kamma (1882); Baba Mesi’a (1888) ; Zebahim (1884); Menahoth (1886).4 All these were printed in 8vo and at Munich, except vol. ix., which came out at Mainz.

Influence of the Talmud.—It must be admitted by every critical student of history that the Talmud has not merely been the means of keeping alive the religious idea among the Jews, but has formed their strongest bond of union, When, after the fall of the city of Jerusalem and its temple, and the expatriation of the Jews from Palestine, a goodly portion of the Mosaic law lost its application, the Talmud became the spirit which put fresh life into the letter which

Upon examination these books turn out to contain either a transla- tion only of Mishnic treatises with or without excerpta from, and with or without scholia on, Gemara, or disputations which introduce small pieces of Gemara. The utmost they contain is a chapter or two translated from Gemara itself (as, for example, “ Edzard, Aboda Saray &c., Hamburg, 1705-10, 4to, which contains Gemara of the first two Perakim).

2 The paging of this has been followed in all subsequent editions.

3 Nunc ab omnibus iis que contra religionem Christianam facie- bant recognitum, et juxta mentem Sacri concilii Tridentini expurga- tum et approbatum, ut non modo citra impietatem verum etiam cum fructu a nostris legi possit.

4 The notes in the first fourteen volumes go under the namie of DDD, “31, whilst those of the fifteeuth volume have the title of DMN? 3933, in memory of the late Abraham Merzbacher, who not merely proved the Mecenas of this publication during his lifetime,

but left a considerable sum for its continuation and completion.

had become toa great extent dead. Moreover, by the Tal- mud, the interpretation of which was chiefly in the hands of the academies of Sura and Pumbaditha, the Jews of all the world found, if not a new Jerusalem, at least a new Yabneh (Jamnia), z.c., a place where the old learning was not merely continued, but made to shine with a yet greater splendour. This fact will be the more readily acknow- ledged and appreciated when one casts a glance at the miserable religious condition of the Karaites, the so-called Scriptural Jews.

Transference of Talmudic Learning from the Kast to the West.—There naturally came a time when Talmudic learn- ing, if it was to maintain its influence upon the Jews, could not be confined to one spot. We have seen under Rasut (q.v.) that the great emperor of the West (Charle- magne) had been the means, towards the close of the 8th century, of bringing learned Talmudists not only to Pro- vence but to the north of France and the south of Ger- many.! But when nearly two hundred years later the academies of Babylonia were threatened with extinction (because of their lacking, from various causes, the means of subsistence), so that they had to send out members of their body to supplicate the support of their richer brethren in other countries, it providentially happened that the four men whom they sent were taken by a Spanish corsair admiral and sold in four different slave-markets. Rabbi Shemaryah was sold at Alexandria, and was redeemed by the Jews, and great was their astonishment when they recog- nized in him a most able Talmudist. He became the head of the Cairo community, and one of the most successful Jewish Talmud teachers Egypt ever had. Rabbi Husshiel was taken to Kairwan, in Africa. There the Jews redeemed him; and when his great learning was found out he was named the spiritual head of the Jews in that place. From the school which he founded sprang not merely his own son, the famous Rabbenu Hananeel, but also the great Rabbenu Nissim, both teachers of Ripu (q.v.). Another learned cap- tive, R. Mosheh, was brought to the slave-market of Cor- dova, the rabbi of which town, a noble and rare example of unselfishness, modesty, and love of truth, placed the ragged stranger who had only been ransomed for charity’s sake a

day or so before at the head of the community instead of himself. The name of the fourth is unknown (see RaBan IL., and Yohasin, ed. Cracow, leaf 1255). Some assert that he was R. Nathan Habbabli, and that he became the teacher of the Jews in Narbonne, but this is a mere conjecture, the truth of which has yet to be proved (see page 37, footnote'). Be this, however, as it may, four great Talmudists, who had come direct from the Babylonian academies, became the means of bringing Babylonico-Tal- mudic learning to places the Jews of which had been de- pendent on the religious and literary crumbs that fell from the richly-laden tables of Sura and Pumbaditha. Some years afterwards the former academy was closed, and a short time afterwards the same fate befell that of Pumba- ditha, the sunset of which, if not the noonlight, in the persons of Rab Sherira Gaon and his son Rab Hai Gaon was even more glorious than that of the sister academy, the last "gaon" of which was Rab Shemuel b. Hophni, father-in-law of Rabbenu Hai. Meanwhile, however, Tal- mudic learning had not merely become naturalized, but eventually indigenous in various parts of Africa, and part of Europe (Spain, Italy, Provence, the south of Germany, and the north of France). Rabbenu Gershom b. Yehudah of Metz and his disciple Rabbenu Yishak of Troyes, Rabbenu Ya'akob b. Yakar of Worms, Rabbenu Eli'ezer Haggadol and his disciple and successor Rabbenu Yishak Segan Leviyyah, Rabbenu Yishak b. Yehudah of Mainz,

1 Italy, notably Sicily, was apparently the country which obtained her teachers direct from Trak.

Rabbenu Elyakim of Spires, Rabbenu Nathan b. Yehiel of Rome, and last but not least Rashi himself, and his sons-in-law and other disciples, represented Talmudic learn- ing in such perfection as had not been found' before as regards the Babylonian Talmud, even in the land of its birth and growth. It was the disciples' disciples of these men who studied aud taught in various towns of England within a hundred years (1150) after the Conquest. When, towards the end of the 13th century and the commence- ment of the 14th, the Jews were driven out of England (1290) and France (1306), and flocked chiefly to Italy, Greece, Germany, and Poland, the last- named country appropriated the lion's share of Talmudic learning, so that

till within our own century the rabbis of the chief communities in Hungary, Moravia, Bohemia, and other Austrian states, and in Germany, Holland, England, &c., had to be fetched from Poland. Talmudic learning, since Mendelssohn and his school arose, threatened to die out not merely among the Jews in Germany, but also among those of the other countries where the Jews spoke the German tongue in some form or other. Within the last twenty-five years, however, fresh impulse has been given to these studies, not merely among Jews but also among Christians. (s. M. 8.-8.)

TAM, commonly called Raspenvu TAM, more correctly Rapsenu THam (’=00 4322). By this title are known two eminent Rabbinic scholars, both named Ya‘akos, to whom this epithet was given in allusion to Genesis xxv. 27: “And Jacob was a perfect man” (Ish Tam, 07 8). They belonged to the north of France, lived in the 12th century, and were master and pupil.

1. RapBenu Ya‘akos B. MEIR B, SHEMUEL was, on his mother’s side, a grandson of Rasui (q.v.). He was his parents’ third son, younger brother of Ribam and RasHBAM (q.v.), older brother of Rabbenu Shelomoh of Rameru,? and brother-in-law of Rabbenu Shemuel b. Simhah of Vitry the younger ® (the reputed author of the Mahzor Vitry,* now apparently lost®). Rabbenu Tham had, like his grand- father Rashi, six teachers:—(1) his own father, (2) his brother Ribam, (3) his brother Rashbam, (4) Rabbenu Ya‘akob b. Shimshon,® (5) his grandfather Rashi,’ and (6) Rabbenu Yoseph Tob- Elem the younger.’ Rabbenu Tham had at least five children.® The names of three of his sons were Yoseph,!° Yishak,!! and Shelomoh.!? Rabbenu Tham was unquestionably among Jews the foremost man of his age. For not only was he the greatest Talmudist after his maternal grandfather’s death, but he also added reading wide and varied to a stupendous memory and a marvellous

2 See MS. Add. 27,200 in the Br. Mus., leaf 158d.

3 See Rashi’s Stddur, i. leaf 10.

4 See Schiller-Szinessy, Catalogue, ii. p. 88.

5 See art. Rasut (vol. xx. p. 284, note 10). :

6 This rabbi was a disciple of R. Shemuel Hallevi (see Schiller- Szinessy, Catal., ii. p. 65, note 1) and of Rashi, and was not only a great Talmudist, as were all the disciples of the last-named eminent teacher, but also a great mathematician and astronomer, though a terribly bad poet. His commentary on Adboth is in part printed, and is to be found, more or less perfect, in various libraries in Europe, although not recognized as his. It is ascribed variously to Rashi, to Rashbam, and others. There are copies of it in Cambridge (Add. 1213; Add. 1528), Oxford (Opp. 317), the British Museum (Add, 27201), the Beth Hammidrash of the Ashkenazim in London, &c. (The master of St John's, Cambridge, is preparing an edition of it.) A work on intercalation by Rabbenu Ya'akob b. Shimshon exists in MS. at the Bodleian (Opp. 317) under the name of Sepher Haelkoshi. From him, no doubt, Rabbenu Tham imbibed his love for science. On the fact that Rabbenu Ya'akob b. Shimshon was Rabbenu Tham's teacher (against Zunz), see Schiller-Szinessy, Catal., ii. p. 66, note.

7 Rabbenu Tham, dying an old man, must have been from fourteen to sixteen years of age when Rashi died.

8 See Sepher Hayyashar, § 620 (leaf 74a, col. 2).

9 See Camb. MS. Add. 667, 1, leaf 648, col. 1.

10 See Brit. Mus. MS. Add, 27200, leaf 1580.

11 See Sepher Hayyashar, § 604.

12 See Shibbole Halleket (ed. Buber), p. 10.

4()

power of combination, such as appeared only again in the last century in the persons of R. Yehonathan Eybenschiitz (ob. 1764) and R. Yehezkel Landau (ob. 1793). . Let us add that he was a lexicographer, grammarian, and Biblical commentator of no mean order; that he was a poet in Hebrew and Aramaic! inferior only to Ibn Gebirol (AVICEBRON, 9.v.), Mosheh Ibn 'Ezra, and Yehudah Hallevi (and by far greater in this art than the commentator Abraham Ibn "Ezra); that he was held in high esteem by

prince and nobles ;? and that he was a man of great wealth, with which he generously supported, not merely his own poorer hearers, but other itinerant scholars also.?

His works are the following :—

(1) Commentary on Job, and, no doubt, on other parts of the Bible (see Camb. Univ. Lib. MS. Dd. 8. 53, leaves 14, 4a, lla, 126). All these are apparently now lost. (2) Hakhra‘oth, %.e., lexical and grammatical decisions between Menahein Ibn Seruk and Dunash b, Labrat (see Sepher Teshuboth Dunash b. Labrat, Edinburgh, 1885, 8vo). That these ‘‘decisions” are really by Rabbenu Tham is proved by the before-named MS., leaves 10a and 16a, where the book is quoted by an author of the 13th eentury. (3) Sepher Hayyashar (Vienna, 1810, folio). Although this work, in its present form, is the compilation of one of Rabbenu Tham’s disciples, R. Yishak b. Durbal by name (also called Isaac of Russia; see Schiller-Szinessy, Catalogue, i. p. 164, and ii. p- 66), not only is the foundation Rabbenu Tham’s (see Preface), but the contents also are virtually his. Compare the Cambridge MS. Add. 667. il passim. (4) The greater part of the Tosaphoth in the Babylonian Talmud are indirectly also by Rabbenu Tham; and he is virtu- ally the first Tosaphist. It is true that his father, his brother RASHBAM (g.v.), and his unele Rabbenu Yehudah b. Nathan had written Z’osaphoth before him, and that this kind of literary acti- vity lasted to within the first quarter of the 14th eentury. Still, most and the best of the Zosaphoth now in our hands rest on Rabbenu Tham and his school. (5) Mahzor, %.@., & prayer-book, &c., for the whole year, with Rabbinie ordinances, &e. See Tosaphoth on T. B., Berakhoth, leaf 37a, catehword DDIDA, and Birekhoth Maharam of R. Meir b. Barukh of Rothenburg (Riva di Trento, 1558, 8vo), leaf 4a. (6) Poems. These are partly didactic and partly liturgical. Of the former kind a specimen will be found (“On the Accents,” communicated by Halberstam) in Kobak’s Yeshurun, v. p. 125 sq. The liturgical poems, again, are of two kinds : plurals, possessive pronouns, and such like (rhymed prose), and which perfectly resemble most of the productions of the Franco- Ashkenazic school (see, for example, the facsimile in Muller’s Cata- logue, Amsterdam, 1868, 8vo); (6) such as have metre and rhyme, and resemble the productions of the Sepharadic school, e.g., the one beginning **3’Y JA (and not 13; 102a).** (7) Various ordinances,

&c., are to be found in later writers (see MS, Add. 667, in Cambridge, passim, and Teshuboth Maharam, Prague, 1608, folio, § 1023, &c.). Rabbenu Tham died in ial s see Rashi’s Siddur, ii. (formerly Luzzatto’s, then Halberstam’s, and ct the property of the master of St John’s College, Cambridge), leaf 48a,

2. RABBENU Ya‘axos of Orleans, rabbi of London (2). He is often quoted in the Zosaphoth (both on the Penta- teuch and on the Babylonian Talmud). No independent works of his, however, are extant. He was killed at London in the tumult on the coronation day of Richard Cceur-de-Lion (September 3, 1189; Schiller-Szinessy, Catal., 1, pola, (S. M. 8.-S.)

TAMAQUA, a borough of Schuylkill county, Pennsy]- vania, United States, in a broken, hilly country, upon the

- See his Vesib Pithgam (in the Ashkenazie ritual; it is intro- duetory to the prophetie lesson for the second day of Pentecost). If we have the eorrcet reading of that poem there, Rabbenu Tham must have been a Levite; and if so, the Shemuel Hallevi mentioned by R. Yaakob b. Shimshon as his teacher, in the Cambridge MS, Add. 1213, leat 276, is very possibly: Rabbenu Tham’s paternal grandfather.

2 See epher Hayyashar, § 595 (leaf 67a, col. 1), and § 610 (1st) tm fine. To this high position it is no doubt to be aseribed that his life was saved by a knight during the second crusade, in which the whole congregation of Rameru was reduced to beggary, after many of its members had been ruthlessly slain.

- For example, the poverty-stricken Abraham Ibn ‘Ezra, to whom he not only gave money but kind words also, in good verses (Kerem Hemed, vii. p. 35).

- For other metrical poems by Rabbenu Tham, see Zunz, Literaturg. der Syn. Poesie (Berlin, 1865, 8vo), p. 266,

(a) such as have no metre and rhyme only by means of

; see MS. Add. 667, leaf

Little Schuylkill river, 98 miles nearly north of Phil. adelphia. It is in the midst of the anthracite coal region, and coal mining is one of its principal interests. It is an important railroad centre, upon the Philadelphia and Reading system, being the point of intersection of three main lines and the terminus of several minor branches, The borough had a population of 5960 in 1870 and of 5730 in 1880.

TAMARIND. This name is popularly applied to the pods of a Leguminous tree, which are hard externally, but within filled with an acid juicy pulp containing sugar and various acids, such as citric and tartaric, in combination with potash. The acid pulp is used asa laxative anda refrigerant, the pods being largely imported both from the East and the West Indies. The tree is now widely distri- buted in tropical countries, but it is generally considered that its native country is in eastern tropical Africa, from Abyssinia southward to the Zambesi. Sir Ferdinand von Mueller notes that it is truly wild in tropical Australia, The name (meaning in Arabic “Indian date”) shows that it entered medizeval commerce from India, where it is used, not only for its pulp, but for its seeds, which are astringent, its leaves, which furnish a yellow or a red dye, and its timber. The tree (Tamarindus indica, L.) attains a height of 70 to 80 feet, and bears elegant pinnate foliage and purplish or orange veined flowers arranged in terminal clusters. The flower-tube bears at its summit four sepals, but only three petals and three perfect stamens, with indications of six others. The stamens, with the stalked ovary, are curved away from the petals at their base, but are directed towards them at their apices. The anthers and the stigmas are thus brought into such a position as to obstruct the passage of an insect attracted by the brilliantly- coloured petal, the inference of course being that insects are necessary for the fertilization of the flower.

TAMARISK. The genus Tamarix gives its name to a small group of shrubs or low trees constituting the tamarisk family. The species of tamarisk and of the very closely allied genus Myricaria grow in salt deserts, by the sea-shore, or in other more or less sterile localities in south temperate, subtropical, and tropical regions of the eastern hemisphere. Their long slender branches bear very num- erous small appressed leaves, in which the

evaporating surface is reduced to a minimum. The flowers are minute and numerous, in long clusters at the ends of the branches or from the trunk. Each has 4~6 free sepals, and as many petals springing with the 4-12 stamens froma fleshy disk. In Z'amarix the stamens are free, while in MM; yricaria they are united into one parcel. The free ovary is one- celled, with basal placentas, and surmounted by 3-5 styles. The fruit is capsular, and contains numerous seeds, each usually with a long tuft of hairs at one end. The great value of these shrubs or trees lies in their ability to with- stand the effects of drought and a saline soil, in consequence of which they grow where little else can flourish. It is on this account that the common tamarisk, 7. gallwa, is planted on our sea-coasts, and affords shelter where none other could be provided. The light feathery appearance of the branches, and the pretty rose-coloured flowers, render it also an elegant and attractive shrub, very different in character from most others.

Some species produce galls, valued for their tannin, while the astringent bark of others has been valued for medicinal purposes. The ashes of the plant, when grown near the sea, are said to contain soda; but#when cultivated inland or on sweet soil, they are, it is alleged, free from soda.

For tamarisk manna, see Manna, vol. xv. p. 493.

TAMBOFF, one of the largest and most fertile govern- ments of central Russia, extends from north to south between the basins of the Oka and the Don, and has

TA M—

Vladimir and Nijni-Novgorod on the N., Penza and Sara- toff on the E., the Don Cossacks and Voronezh on the S., Tula and Ryazaii on the W. It consists of an undulating plain intersected by deep ravines and broad valleys, rang- ing between 450 and 800 feet above sea-level. Chalk and Jurassic deposits, thickly covered by boulder-clay and loess, are widely spread over its surface, concealing the underlying Devonian and Carboniferous deposits. These last appear only in the deeper ravines, and seams of coal have been noticed at several places. Iron ore (in the north-west), limestone, clay, and gypsum are obtained for building and manufacturing purposes; traces of naphtha have been discovered at

Tamboff. The mineral waters of Lipetsk, similar to those of Franzensbad in their alkaline elements, and chalybeate like those of Pyrmont and Spa, are well known in Russia. Tamboff is watered by the tributaries of the Oka and the Don. The Oka itself only touches the north-west corner of the government, but its tributaries, the Moksha and the Tsna, are important channels of traffic. The Don also only touches Tamboff, and of its affluents only the Voronezh and the Khoper and its tributary the Vorona are at all navigable. As a whole, it is only in the north that Tamboff is well watered ; in its southern part, which is exposed to the influence of the dry south-eastern winds, the want of moisture is much felt, especially in the district of Borisoglyebsk, which belongs to the dry steppes of the lower Volga.

The climate is continental, and, although the average tempera- ture at Tamboff is 42° F., the winter is comparatively eold (Janu- ary, 18°; July, 68°). The rivers remain frozen for four months and a half. Forests oeeupy less than one-sixth of the total area, and oecur chiefly in the west; in the south-east wood is searee, and straw is resorted to for fuel. The soil is fertile throughout; in the north, indeed, it is clayey and sometimes sandy, but the rest of the government is covered with a sheet, 2 to 3 feet in thiekness, of the most fertile tchernozem, of sueh riehness, indeed, that in Borisoglyebsk eorn-fields whieh have not been manured for eighty years still yield good erops.

Tamboff is one of the densely peopled provinees of Russia. Its population in 1883 reaehed 2,519,660, and in several districts (Kozloff, Lebedyafi, Lipetsk) there are from 110 to 130 inhabitants per square mile. Itis Great Russian in the eentral portion, but has a notable admixture of MonpviINIANs (g.v.) and Meseheriaks in the west and north-west, as also of Tartars: the Mordvinians (who are rapidly becoming Russified) constitute 4 per eent. of the aggregate population of Tamboff; the Tartars number about 20,000, and the Meseheriaks about 4000. Noneonformity is widely spread, although the official figures diselose only 14,300 Raskolniks. Not-withstanding a high birth-rate (45 in the thousand), the annual inerease of population is but slow (0°5 per cent. annually).

The prevailing oeeupation is agriculture, and in 1883 only 168,200 persons had their residenee in towns, whieh are mostly themselves nothing but large

villagesof agriculturists living together, with a few merchants. More than two-thirds of the area is arable, and of this proportion 53 per cent. belongs to peasant communities, 36 per eent. to private individuals, and 11 per cent. to the erown. The erops of the years 1888 to 1885 yielded on the average 8,885, 000 quarters of grain (half being rye, and one-third oats). Corn is exported toa considerable extent from the south, although it is deficient in the north. Hemp and linseed are also eultivated for exportation. The eultivation of tobacco is yearly increasing: 5220 acres were under this crop in 1885, and yielded nearly 50,000 ewts. In the same year 15,950 aeres were under beetroot, and yielded 1,660,000 ewts. Cattle-breeding, though less extensively earried on than formerly, is still important (656,300 horses, 399,500 horned eattle,, and 1,326,600 sheep in 1883). Exeellent breeds of horses are met with, not only on the larger estates, but also in the hands of the wealthier peasants, those of the Bityug river being most esteemed. Manufactures are represented chiefly by distilleries, tallow-melting works, sugar-works, and a few woollen- cloth mills. The petty trades are not very extensively carried on in the villages. Commerce is very brisk, owing to the large amounts of corn exported, —Kozloff, Morshansk, Tamboff, and Borisoglyebsk being the ehief eentres for this traffie, and Lebedyafi for the trade in horses and eattle. Tamboff is rather backward edueationally : in 1883 there were only 629 sehools, attended by 34,739 boys and 5680 girls. The government is divided into twelve districts, the ehief towns of whieh, with their populations in 1884, are Tamboff (34,000 inhabitants), Borisoglyebsk (18,000), Elatma (7560), Kir- sanoff (7770), Kozloff (27,900), Lebedyai (6250), Lipetsk (15,860),

Morshansk (21,200), Shatsk (7260), Spassk (5010), Temnikoff (13,700), and Usmafi (8110 in 1880). A distinetive feature of Tam- boff is its very large villages of erown-peasants, a dozen of which have from 5000 to 7000 inhabitants each. Several of them—like Raskazovo (a great eentre of Noneonformity), Atabukhi, Sasovo, Izberdei, and Arkhangelskoye—are important eommercial centres.

The region now included in the north of the government was settled by Russians during the earliest centuries of the prineipality of Moseow, but

until the end of the 17th eentury the fertile tracts to the south remained too inseeure for settlers. In the following eentury a few immigrants began to eome in from the steppe, and landowners who had received large grants of land as gifts of the ezars began to bring their serfs from central Russia. The popula- tion has very rapidly inereased within the present eentury.

TAMBOFT, capital of the above government, 300 miles distant from Moscow, is situated on the Tsna river, and on the railway from Kozloff to Saratoff. It is almost entirely built of wood, with broad unpaved streets, lined with low houses surrounded by gardens. It has a small public library, a theatre, and the few educational institu- tions which are usual in the chief towns of Russian pro- vinces. Its manufactures are insignificant ; and its trade, in local grain and in cattle purchased in the south and sent to Moscow, is far less important than that of Morshansk or Kozloff. The population in 1884 was 34,000.

TAMERLANE. See Trvcr.

TAMILS. The word Zamil (properly Jamil) has been identified with Dravida, the Sanskrit generic appellation for the South Indian peoples and their languages; and the various stages through which the word has passed — Dramida, Dramila, Damila—have been finally discussed by Bishop Caldwell in his Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages (2d ed., 1875, p. 10 sq.), and the derivation has recently been endorsed by Col. Yule and Dr Burnell in their Glossary (p. 2516). The identification was first suggested by Dr Graul (Reise nach Ostindien, vol. iii, 1854, p. 349), and then adverted to by Dr G. U. Pope (Zamil Handbook, 1859, Introduction) and Dr Gundert (Malayalma Dictionary, 1872, s.v.). It should, however, be mentioned that the former prefers now to take the word Tamil to be a corruption of ¢enmoli, southern speech, in contradistinction to vadugu, the northern, 7.e., Telugu language. As in the case of the Kafir, Turkish, Tagala, and other typical languages, the term Tamulic or Tamulian has occasionally been employed as the designation of the whole class of Dravidian peoples and languages, of which it is only the most prominent member. The present article deals with Tamil in its restricted sense only.

The Tamils, taken as the type and representatives of the Dravidian race, do not now, owing to early intermixture with the Aryan immigrants, materially

differ in physical character from the other curly-haired indigenous population of India. They were at one time, on the ground of the general structure of their language, classed with the Mongoloid (Turanian, Scythian) and even the Australian races, but that classification is rejected by all the leading ethnologists. They form, in fact, with the other mem- bers of the group, a separate and distinct family, which is of the dolichocephalic class, and comes near the Ifdo- European or Aryan type; while there are scattered remnants of a still earlier population of India (Mundas, Kolarians), whose race characteristics, however, do not so essentially differ from those of the Dravidians as to con- stitute them a class by themselves. The Tamils proper are smaller and weaker-built than the Europeans, though more graceful in shape. Their physical appearance is described as follows :—a pointed and frequently hooked pyramidal nose, with conspicuous nares, more long than round ; a marked sinking in of the orbital line, producing a strongly defined orbital ridge; hair and eyes black; the latter, varying from small to middle-sized, have a peculiar sparkle and a look of calculation; mouth large, lips thick

marked development and breadth, and to the general contour an obtuse oval shape, somewhat bulging at the sides ; forehead well-formed, but receding, inclining to flattish, and seldom high; occiput somewhat projecting ; beard considerable, and often strong; colour of skin very dark, frequently approaching to black (Manual of the Administration of the Madras Presidency, Madras, 1885, vol. i, Introd., p. 36; see also Caldwell, Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages, 1875, pp. 558-79). The Tamils have many estimable qualities, frugality, patience, endurance, politeness,—and they are credited with astounding memories ; their worst vices are said to be lying and lasciviousness. Of all the South-Indian tribes they are the least sedentary and the most enterprising. Wherever money is to be earned, there will Tamils be found, either as merchants or in the lower capacity of domestic servants and labourers. The tea and coffee districts of Ceylon are peopled by about 800,000; Tamils serve as coolies in the Mauritius and the West Indies. In Burmah, the Straits, and Siam the so-

called Klings are all Tamils (Graul, Reise nach Ostindien, Leipsic, 1855, vol. iveppe ts),

Language.—The area over which Tamil is spoken extends from a few miles north of the city of Madras to the extreme south of the eastern side of the peninsula,

throughout the country below the Ghats, from Pulicat to

Cape Comorin, and from the Ghats to the Bay of Bengal,

including also the southern portion of Travancore on the western side of the Ghats and the northern part of According to the census of 1881, the number

Ceylon. of Tamil-speaking people throughout the province was 12,413,517, inclusive of 21,992 Yerkalas, 3843 Kurumbas,

and 287 Irulas, three tribes speaking rude dialects of the To these should be added about 160,000 in But, as of all the Dravidian languages the Tamil shows the greatest tendency to spread, its area becomes ever larger, encroaching on that Tamil is a sister of Malay-

language. the French possessions.

of the contiguous languages. alma, Telugu, Canarese, Tulu, Kudagu, Toda, Kéta, Gond, Khond (Ku), Urdon, Rajmahal, Keikadi, and Brahui, the nine last-named being uncultivated tongues ; and, as it is the oldest, richest, and most highly organized of the Dravidian languages, it may be looked upon as typical of the family to which it belongs. The one nearest akin to it is Malayélma, which originally appears to have been simply a dialect of Tamil, but differs from it now both in pronunciation and in idiom, in the retention of Old-Tamil forms obsolete in the modern language, and in having discarded all personal terminations in the verb, the person being always indicated by the pronoun (F. W. Ellis, Dissertation on the Malayélma Language, p. 2; Gundert, Malayalma Dictionary, Introd. ; Caldwell, Comparative Gr., Introd., p. 23; Burnell, Specimens of South Indian Dialects, No. 2, p. 13). Also, the proportion of Sanskrit words in Malayalma is greater, while in Tamil it is less, than in any other Dravidian

tongue. This divergence between the two languages cannot be traced farther back than about the 10th century; for, as it appears from the Cochin and Travancore inscriptions, previous to that period both languages were still substantially identical; whereas in the Rdmacharitam, the oldest poem in Malayalma, composed probably in the 13th century, at any rate long before the arrival of the Portuguese and the introduction of the modern character, we see that language already formed. The modern Tamil characters originated "in a Brahmanical adaptation of the old Grantha letters corre- sponding to the so-called Vatteluttu," or round-hand, an

;

alphabet once in vogue throughout the whole of the Pandyan kingdom, as well as in the South Malabar and Coimbatore districts, and still sparsely used for drawin

up conveyances and other legal instruments (F. W. Ellis, Dissertation, p. 3). It is also used by the Mappilas in Tellicherry. The origin of the Vatteluttu itself is still a controverted question. The late Dr Burnell, the greatest authority on the subject, has stated his reasons for tracing that character through the Pehlevi to a Semitic source (Elements of South Indian Palzography, 2a ed., 1878, pp. 47-52, and plates xvii. and xxxii.). In the 8th century the Vatteluttu existed side by side and together with the Grantha, an ancient alphabet still used through- out the Tamil country in writing Sanskrit. During the four or five centuries after the conquest of Madura by the Cholas in the 11th it was gradually superseded in the Tamil country by the modern Tamil, while in Malabar it continued in general use down to the end of the 17th century. But the earliest works of Tamil literature, such as the Tolkdppiyam and the Kuraj, were still written in it. The modern Tamil characters, which have but little changed for the last 500 years, differ from all the other modern Dravidian alphabets both in shape and in their phonetic value. Their angular form is said to be due to the widespread practice of writing with the style resting on the end of the left thumb-nail, while the other alpha- bets are written with the style resting on the left side of the thumb.

The Tamil alphabet is sufficiently well adapted for the expression of the twelve vowels of the language (a, d, 2, 4, u, a, e, é, 0, 6, ev, aw), —the

occasional sounds of 6 and , both short and long, being covered by the signs for e, 4 7, 4; but it is utterly inadequate for the proper expression of the consonants, inasmuch as the one character k has to do duty also for kh, 9, gh, and similarly each of the other surd consonants ch, {, t, p represents also the re- maining three letters of its respective class. The letter & has, besides, occasionally the sound of h, and ch that of s. Each of the five consonants &, ch, ¢, t, p has its own nasal. In addition to the four semivowels, the Tamil possesses a cerebral 7 and J, and has, in common witli the Malayalma, retained a liquid J, once peculiar to all the Dravidian languages, the sound of which is so difficult to fix graphically, and varies so much in different districts, that it has been rendered in a dozen different ways (Manwal of the Administration of the Madras Presidency, vol. ii. p. 20 sg.). Fr. Miiller is probably correct in approximating it to that of the Bohemian ?, There is, lastly, a peculiar 7, differing in function but not in pronunciation from the dental n. The three sibilants and # of Sanskrit have no place in the Tamil alphabet ; but ch often does duty as a sibilant in writing foreign words, and the four corresponding letters as well as j and ksh of the Grantha alphabet are now frequently called to aid. It is obvious that many of the Sanskrit words imported into Tamil at various periods (Caldwell, doc. cit., Introd., pp. 86 sq.) have, in consequence of the incongruity of the Sanskrit and Tamil notation of their respective phonetic systems, assumed disguises under which the original is scarcely recognizable: examples are wlagu (loka), wrwvam (rapa), arukken (arka), arputam (adbhutam), natchattiram (nakshatram), trudi (rishi), t¢rkam (dirgha), arasen (rajan). Besides the Sanskrit ingredients, which appear but sparsely in the old poetry, Tamil has borrowed from Hindustani, Arabic, and Persian a large number of revenue, political, and judicial terms, and more recently a good many English words have crept in, such as tiratti, treaty, patlar, butler, akt, act, kuléb, club, kavarnar, governor, pinnalkédu, penal code, stkku, sick, mejastirattu, magistrate. But, as compared with its literary sister languages, it has preserved its Dravidian character singularly free from foreign influence. Of Tamil words which have found a permanent home in English may be mentioned curry (kart), mulligatawny (milagu, pepper, and tanmir, cool water), cheroot (suruttw), pariah (pareiyan).

The laws of euphony (avoiding of hiatus, softening of initial consonants, contact of final with initial consonants) are far more complicated in Tamil

than in Sanskrit. But, while they were rigidly adhered to in the old poetical language (Sen-Tamil), there is a growing tendency to neglect them in the language of the present day (Kodun-Tamil). It is true the Tamil rules totally differ from the prevailing Sanskrit; still the probability is in favour of a Sanskrit influence, inasmuch as they appear to follow Sanskrit models. Thus, iru] ntkkindn becomes trunikkindn ; pon pattiram, porpattiram; vittil kandén, viittir kandén; vdlsirumet, vdtstrumet ; palan tandén, palanranddn. Nouns are divided into high-caste

Tews

and frequently turgid; lower jaw not heavy, its lateral expansion greater than in the Aryan and less than in the Turanian type, giving to the middle part of the face a

TAMILS

or personal and low-caste or impersonal,—the former comprising words for rational beings, the latter all the rest. Only in high- caste nouns a distinction between masculine and feminine is observed in the singular; both have a common plural, which is indicated by change of a final x (feminine /) into r; but the neuter plural termination kal (gal) may be superadded in every case. Certain nouns change their base termination before receiving the case affixes, the latter being the same both for singular and plural. They are for the ace. ei, instr. al, social édu (odu, udan), dat. ku, loc, 2 (idattil, in), abl. tlirundu (ininru), gen. udeiya (adu). There is, besides, a general oblique affix in, which is not only fre- uently used for the genitive, but may be inserted before any of the above affixes, to some of which the emphatic particle € may also be superadded. In the old poetry there is a still greater variety of affixes, while there is an option of dispensing with all. Adjectives, when attributive, precede the noun and are unchange- able; when predicative they follow it and receive verbal affixes. The pronouns of the Ist person are sing. ndén (ydn), inflexional base en, plural ndm (ydm), infl. nam, including, ndéngal, infl. engal, excluding the person addressed; of the 2d person ni, infl. wn (nin, nun), plural nir (ntyir, ntvir), ningal, infl. wm, wngal (num). To cach of those forms, inclusive also of the reflexive pronouns tan, tam, tdngad, a place is assigned in the scale of honorific pro- nouns. As in the demonstrative pronouns the forms beginning with Z

indicate nearness, those with a distance, and (in the old poetry) those with «what is between the two, so the same forms beginning with ¢ (or yd, as in yar, dr, who?) express the interro- gative. The verb consists of three elements—the root (generally reducible to one syllable), the tense characteristic, and the personal affix. There are three original moods, the indicative, imperative, and infinitive (the 2d singular imperative is generally identical with the root), as well as three original tenses, the present, past, and future. The personal affixes are—sing. (1) -én; (2) -dy, honorific Ar; (3) masc. -dn, fem. -dJ, honor. -dr, neuter -adu ; plural (1) -6m (-dm, -ém); (2) -irkal ; (3) mase. fem. -drkaj, ueut. -ana, These affixes serve for all verbs and for each of the three tenses, except that, in the future, -adw and -ana are replaced by -wm (kkum). It is only in the formation of the tenses that verbs differ, intransitive verbs generally indicating the present by ~~kir~~ (~~kinr~~), the past by ~~d~~, ~~nd~~, or ~~in~~, and the future by ~~v~~ (~~b~~), and transitive verbs by the corresponding infixes, ~~kkir~~ (~~kkinr~~), ~~tt~~.(~~nd~~), and ~~pp~~ ; but there are numerous exceptions and seemingly anomalous forma- tions, Other tenses and moods are expressed with the aid of special affixes or auxiliary verbs. Causal verbs are formed by various infixes (~~ppi~~, ~~vi~~, ~~ttu~~), and the passive by the auxiliary padu, to fall, or by wm, to eat, with a noun. The following four peculjarities are characteristic of Tamil :—first, the tenseless negative form of the verb, expressed by the infix a, which is elided before dissimilar vowels; second, the predicative employment of two negative particles 2l/ei and aJla, the one denying the existence or presence, the other denying the quality or essence; third, the use of two sets of participles,—one, called adjective or relative participle, which supplies the place of a relative clause, the language possessing no relative pronouns, and an ordinary adverbial participle or gerund ; and, fourth, the practice of giving adjectives a verbal form by means of personal affixes, which form may again be treated as a noun by attaching to it the declensional terminations, thus : periya, great; periydm, we are great; periydmukku, to us who are great. The old poetry abounds in verbal forms now obsolete. Adjectives, adverbs, and abstract nouns are derived from verbs by certain affixes. All post-positions were originally either nouns or verbal forms. Oratio indirecta is unknown in Tamil, as it is in all the other Indian languages, the gerund enru being used, like iti in Sanskrit, to indicate quotation. The structure of sentences is an exact counterpart of the structure of words, inasmuch as that which qualifies always precedes that which is qualified. Thus the attributive

precedes the substantive, the substantive precedes the preposition, the adverb precedes the verb, the secondary clause the orimary one, and the verb closes the sentence. The sentence, ‘Having called the woman who had killed the child, he asked why she had committed such infanticide,” runs in Tamil as follows :— Kulandeiyei kkonrupottavalei aleippittu ‘ni €6n ippadi

The child her who had killed having caused to be called, ‘‘Thou why thus ppatta sisu-v-atti seyday énru kéttan. made child-murder didst? having said he asked.

Much as the similarity of the structure of the Tamil and its sister languages to that of the Ugro-Tartar class may have proved suggestive of the assumption of a family affinity between the two classes, such an affinity, if it exist, must be held to be at least very distant, inasmuch as the assumption receives but the faintest shade of support from an intercomparison of the radical and least variable portion of the respective languages.

Lvterature.—The early existence, in southern India, of peoples, localities, animals, and products the names of which, as mentioned in the Old Testament and in Greek and Roman writers, have been identified with correspond-

ing Dravidian terms goes far to prove the high antiquity, if not of the Tamil language, at least of some form of Dravidian speech (Caldwell, Joc. cit., Introd., pp. 81- 106; Madras District Manual, i., Introd., p. 134 s9.). But practically the earliest extant records of the Tamil language do not ascend higher than the middle of the 8th century of the Christian era, the grant in possession of the Israelites at Cochin being assigned by the late Dr Burnell to about 750 a.D., a period when Malayaélma did not exist yet as a separate language. There is every probability that about the same time a number of Tamil works sprung up, which are mentioned by a writer in the 11th century as representing the old literature (Burnell, Joc. cit., p. 127, note). The earlier of these may have been Saiva books ; the more prominent of the others were decidedly Jaina. Though traces of a north Indian influence are palpable in all of them that have come down to us (see, ¢g., F. W. Ellis’s notes to the Kura/), we can at the same time perceive, as we must certainly

appreciate, the desire of the authors to oppose the influence of Brahmanical writings, and create a literature that should rival Sanskrit books and appeal to the sentiments of the people at large. But the refinement of the poetical language, as adapted to the genius of Tamil, has been carried to greater excess than in Sanskrit ; and this artificial character of the so-called High-Tamil is evident from a comparison with the old inscriptions, which are a reflex of the language of the people, and clearly show that Tamil has not undergone any essential change these 800 years (Burnell, Joc. cit., p. 142). The rules of High- Tamil appear to have been fixed at a very early date. The Tolkadppiyam, the oldest extant Tamil grammar, is assigned by Dr Burnell (On the Aindra School of Sanskrit Gram- marians, pp. 8, 55) to the 8th century (best edition by C. Y. TAmodaram Pillei, Madras, 1885). The Véirasdliyam, another grammar, is of the 11th century. Both have been superseded by the Wanndl, of the 15th century, which has exercised the skill of numerous commentators, and con- tinues to be the leading native authority (English editions in Pope's Third Tamil Grammar, and an abridgment by Lazarus, 1884). The period of the prevalence of the Jainas in the Pandya kingdom, from the 9th or 10th to the 13th century, is justly termed the Augustan age of Tamil literature. To its earlier days is assigned the Ndladiydr, an ethical poem on the three objects of exist- ence, which is supposed to have preceded the Aural of Tiruvalluvan, the finest poetical production in the whole range of Tamil composition. Tradition, in keeping with the spirit of antagonism to Brahmanical influence, says that its author was a pariah priest. It consists of 1330 stanzas on virtue, wealth, and pleasure. It has often been edited, translated, and commented upon ; see the introduc- tion to the excellent edition, just published, by the Rev. Dr Pope, in which also a comprehensive account of the pecul- iarities of High-Tamil will be found. To the Avvei, or Matron, a reputed sister of Tiruvalluvan, but probably of a later date, two shorter moral poems, called Attesdd: and Konreivéyndan, are ascribed, which are still read in all Tamil schools. Chintdmani, an epic of upwards of 3000 stanzas, which celebrates the exploits of a King Jivakan, also belongs to that early Jain period, and so does the Divakaram, the oldest dictionary of classical Tamil. The former is one of the finest poems in the language ; but no more than the first and part of the third of its thirteen books have been edited and translated. Kamban's kdmdyanam (about 1100 a.p.) is the only other Tamil epic which comes up to the Chintdmani in poetical beauty. The most bril- liant of the poetical

productions which appeared in the period of the Saiva revival (13th and 14th centuries) are two collections of hymns addressed to Siva, the one called Tiruvasakam, by Manikka-Vasakan, and a later and larger

one called Tévdram, by Sambandhan and two other devotees, Sundaran and Appan. Both these collections have been printed, the former in one, the latter in five volumes. They are rivalled both in religious fervour and in poetical merit by a contemporaneous collection of Vaishnava hymns, the Naldyira-prabandham (also printed at Madras). The third section of it, called Tirwvdymolt, or "Words of the Sacred Mouth," has lately been published in Telugu characters, with ample commentaries, in ten quartos (Madras, 1875-76). After a period of literary torpor, which lasted nearly two centuries, King Vallabha Deva, better known by his assumed name Ativirarama Pandiyan (second half of the 16th century), endeavoured to revive the love of poetry by compositions of his own, the most celebrated of which are the Neidadam, a somewhat extra- vagant imitation of Sri Harsha's Sanskrit Naishadham, and the Verrivérket, a collection of sententious maxims. Though he had numerous followers, who made this revival the most prolific in the whole history of Tamil literature, none of the compositions of every kind, mainly translations and bombastic imitations of Sanskrit models, have attained to any fame. An exceptional place, however, is occupied by certain Tamil sectarians called stttar (t.e., siddhas or sages), whose mystical poems, especially those contained in the Swavdkyam, are said to be of singular beauty. 'Two poems of high merit, composed at the end of the 17th

century, also deserve favourable notice—the Nitinert-

vlakkam, an ethical treatise by Kuméragurupara Desikan, and the Prabhulingalilei, a translation from the Qanarese of a famous text-book of the Vira-Saiva sect. See the analysis in W. Taylor's Catalogue, vol. ii p. 837-47.

The modern period, which may be said to date from the beginning of the last century, is ushered in by two great poets, one native and the other foreign. Tayumanavan, a philosopher of the pantheistic school, composed

1453 stanzas (pddal) which have a high reputa- tion for sublimity both of sentiment and style; and the Italian Jesuit Joseph Beschi (d. 1742), under the name Viram4muni, elaborated, on the model of the Chintdmani, a religious epic Témbévant, which, though marred by blemishes of taste, is classed by native critics among the best productions of their literature. It treats of the history of St Joseph, and has been printed at Pondicherry in three volumes, with a full analysis. English influence has here, as in Bengal and elsewhere in India, greatly tended to create a healthier tone in literature both as to style and sentiment. As one of the best Tamil translations of English books in respect of diction and idiom may be mentioned the Bdlavydpa- rikaj, or 'Little Merchants," published by the Vernacular Text Society, Madras. P. Percival's collection of Tamil Proverbs (3d ed., 1875) should also be mentioned. The copper-plate grants, commonly called Sdsanams, and stone inscriptions in Tamil, many of which have been copied and translated (Archxological Survey of Southern India, vol. iv.; R. Sewell, Lists of the Antiquarian Remains in the Presidency of Madras, vols. i., ii.), are the only authentic historical records. (See also Sir Walter Elliot's contribution to the Jnter- national Numismata Orientalia, vol. iii. pt. 2.) As early as the time of the Chinese traveller Hwen Tsang, books were written in southern India on talipot leaves, and Albiruni mentions this custom as quite prevalent in his time (1031). It has not died out even at the present day, though paper imported from Portugal has, during the last three centuries, occasionally becn used. Madras is now the largest depository of Tamil palm-leaf MSS., which have been described in Wilson's Catalogue of the Mackenzie Collection (Calcutta, 1828, 2 vols.), W. Taylor's Catalogue (Madras, 1857, 3 vols.), and Condaswamy Iyer's Catalogue (vol. i., Madras, 1861). The art of printing, however, which was introduced in southern India at an early date, while it has tended to the preservation of many valuable productions of the ancient literature, has also been the means of perpetuating and circulating a deal of literary rubbish and lasciviousness which would much better have remained in the comparatively safe obscurity of manuscript. Dr Burnell has a note in his Elements of South Indian Paleography (2a ed., p. 44), from which it appears that in 1578 Tamil types were cut by Father Joao de Faria, and that a hundred years later a Tamil and Portuguese dictionary was published at Ambalakkadu. At present the number of Tamil books (inclusive of newspapers) printed annually far exceeds that of the other Dravidian vernaculars put together. The earliest

Tamil version of the New Testament was commenced by the Dutch in Ceylon in 1688; Fabricius's trans- lation appeared at Tranquebar in 1715.

LA Mw —

Since then many new | Wares,

A UN

translations of the whole Bible have been printed, and some of them have passed through several editions. The German missionary B. Ziegenbalg was the first to make the study of Tamil possible in Europe by the publication of his Grammatica Damulica, which appeared at Halle in 1716. Some time later the Jesuit father Beschi devoted much time aud labour to the composition of grammars both of the vulgar and the poetical dialect. 'The former is treated in his Grammatica Latino-Tamutica, which was written in 1728, but was not printed till eleven years later (Tranquebar, 1739). It was twice reprinted, and two English translations have been published (1831, 1848). His Sen- Tamil Grammar, accessible since 1822 in an English translation by Dr Babington, was printed from his own MS. (Clavis humaniorum Litterarum sublimioris Tamulici idiomatis) at Tranquebar in 1878. This work is espe- cially valuable, as the greater portion of it consists of a learned and exhaustive treatise on Tamil prosody and rhetoric. (See, on his other works, Graul's Reise, vol. iv. p. 327.) There are also gram- mars by Anderson, Rhenius, Graul (in vol. ii. of his Bibliotheca Tamulica, Leipsic, 1855), Lazarus (Madras, 1878), Pope (4th edition in three parts, London, 1883-5), and Grammaire Francaise- Tamoule, by the Abbé Dupuis, Pondicherri, 18638. The last two are by far the best. The India Office library possesses a MS, dictionary and grammar "'par le Réy. Pére Dominique" (Pondi- cherri, 1843), and a copy of a MS. Tamil-Latin dictionary by the celebrated missionary Schwarz, in which 9000 words are explained. About the like number of words are given in the dictionary of Fabricius and Breithaupt (Madras, 1779 and 1809). Rottler's dictionary, the publication of which was commenced in 1834, is a far more ambitious work. But neither it nor Winslow's (1862) come up to the standard of Tamil scholarship; the Dictionnaire Tamoul-Francais, which appeared at Pondicherri in 2 vols. (1855- 62), is superior to both, just as the

Dictionarium Latino-Gallico- Tamulicum (ibid., 1846) excels the various English-Tamil diction. aries which have becn published at Madras.

Compare the following works of reference :—A, T. Mondiére and J. Vinson in Dictionnaire des Sciences Anthropologiques, s.v. '* Dravidiens "3/8. C. Chithys The Tamil Plutarch, Jaffna, 1859 ; J. Murdoch, Classified Catalogue of Tamil Printed Books, Madras, 1865; C. E. Gover, Folk-Songs of Southern India, Madras, 1871; Bishop Caldwell's Comparative Grammar of the Dravidian Languages, 2d ed., London, 1875; Graul's Retse nach Ostindien, vols. iv. and Vag the quarterly Lists of Books registered in the Madras presidency ; [Dr Maclean's] Manual of the Administration of the Madras Presidency, vols. i. and ii., Madras, 1885, folio; and F, Miiller, Grundriss der Sprachwissenschaft, Vienna, 1884, iii, i. 162-246. R. BD

TAMWORTH, a municipal borough and market-town of England, on the borders of Staffordshire and Warwick- shire, chiefly in the former, is situated at the junction of the Tame with the Anker, and on branches of the London and North-Western and Midland Railway lines, 7 miles south-east of Lichfield, 20 north-west of Coventry, and 110 north-west of London. The castle, situated on a height above the Anker near its junction with the Tame, is now chiefly of the Jacobean period, but is enclosed by massive ancient walls. It was long the residence of the Saxon kings, and, after being bestowed on the Marmions by William the Conqueror, remained for many years an im- portant fortress. Through the female line of the Mar- mions it has descended to the Marquis Townshend. Formerly the town was surrounded by a ditch called the King's Dyke, of which some trace still remains. The church of St Editha, originally founded in the 8th century, was rebuilt, after being burned by the Danes, by Edgar, who made it collegiate, but the present building in the Decorated style was erected after a fire in the 14th century. Since 1870 it has been undergoing restoration at a cost of £10,000. The free grammar school, refounded by Edward VI., was rebuilt in 1677, and again in 1867-68 at a cost of £3000. The other public buildings are the swimming bath and boys' institute (1885), the town-hall (1701), and the arcade, formerly used as a covered market, but recently obtained by the Salvation Army. The charities include Guy's almshouses, endowed in 1678 by Thomas Guy, founder of Guy's Hospital, London, and the cottage hospital with twenty-one beds. Waterworks have recently been erected at a

cost of over £25,000. On the “moors” burgesses have rights for cattle. Coal, fireclay, and blue and red brick clay are dug in the neighbourhood ; and there are also market gardens. The town possesses a clothing factory, paper-mills, and manufactories of smal] The population of the municipal borough (area

| , TA N—

200 acres) in 1871 was 4589, and in 1881 it was 4891,— that of the parliamentary borough (area 11,602 acres) in the same years being 11,493 and 14,101. Tamworth ceased to be a parliamentary borough in 1885.

Tamworth is situated near the old Roman Watling Street, and occupies the site of a fort which, from the beginning of the 8th eentury, was the chief royal residence in Mercia. The town, after being burnt by the Danes, was rebuilt and fortified by Ethelfleda, daughter of Alfred the Great. From the reign of Edward the Martyr to that of William Rufus it was a royal mint, and some of the coins struck at Tamworth are still in existence. The town was ineorporated in the 3d year of Elizabeth, from whom it obtained the grant of a fair and the confirmation of various privileges bestowed by Edward III. The Elizabethan charter was superscded by one conferred by Charles II., which continued to be the govern- ing eharter of the town till the passing of the Municipal Act. The town, with occasional intermissions, returned members to parlia- ment from the reign of Henry I. till 1885. Among its more dis- tinguished representatives have been Thomas Guy aud Sir Robert Peel.

TANAGER, a word adapted from the quasi-Latin Tan- agra of Linneeus, which again is an adaptation, perhaps with a classical allusion, of Tangara, used by Brisson and Buffon, and said by Marcgrave (Hist. Rer. Nat. Brasiliz, p. 214) to be the Brazilian name of certain birds found in that country. From them it has since been extended to

a great many others mostly belonging to the southern:

portion of the New World, now recognized by ornitholo- gists as forming a distinct Family of Oscznes, and usually considered to be allied to the Pringillide (cf. F1ncn, vol, ix. p. 191); but, as may be inferred from Prof.

Parker’s remarks in the Zoological Zransactions (x. pp. 252, 253, and 267), the Tanagride are a ‘‘feebler” form, and thereby bear out the opinion based on the examination of many types both of Birds and Mammals as to the lower morphological rank of the Neotropical Fauna as a whole (cf. Birps, vol. iii. p. 743). The Tanagers are a group in which Mr Sclater has for many years | interested himself, and his latest treatment of them is contained in the British Museum Catalogue (xi. pp. 49-307). Therein he admits the existence of 375 species, which he arranges in 59 genera, forming six Subfamilies, Procniatiny, Euphoniine, Tanagrine, Lamprotine, Phenicophiline, and Pitylinw. These are of very unequal extent, for, whilc the first of thein consists of but a single species, Procnias tersa,—the position of which may be for several | reasons still open to doubt,—the third includes more than 200. | Nearly all are birds of small size, the largest barely exceeding a | Song-Thrush. Most of them are remarkable for their gaudy i colouring, and this is especially the case in those forming the » genus called by Mr Sclater, as by most other authors, Calliste, a _ term inadmissible through preoccupation, to which the name of Tanagra of right scems to belong, while that which he names Lanagra should probably be known as Thraupis. The whole _ Family is almost confined to the Neotropical Region, and there | are several forms peculiar to the Antilles; but not a tenth of the species reach even southern Mexico, and not a dozen appear in the northern part of that country. Of the genus Pyranga, which has the most northern range of all, three if not four species are common summer iminigrants to some part or other of the United States, and two of them, P. rubra and P. xstiva,—there known respectively as the Scarlet Tanager and the Summer Redbird,—reach even the | Dominion of Canada, visiting as well, though accidentally, Bermuda. P. xstiva has a western representative, P. coopert, which by some authors is not recognized as a distinct species. The males of all these are clad in glowing red, P. rubra having, however, the wings and tail black. The remaining species, P. ludoviciana, the males of which are mostly yellow and black, with the head only red, does not appear eastward of the Missouri plains, and has not so northerly a range. Another species, P. hepatica, has just shewn itself within the limits of the United States. In all these the | females are plainly attired; but generally among the Tanagers, however bright may be their coloration, both sexcs are nearly alike | in plumage. Little has been recorded of the habits of the species of Central or South Ameriea, but those of the north have been as closely

observed as the rather retiring nature of the birds renders possible, and it is known that insects, espeelally in the larval _ condition, and berries afford the greater part of their food. They | have a pleasing song, and build a shallow nest, in which the eggs, _ generally 3 in number and of a greenish-blue marked with brown _ and purple, are laid.

On a whole the Tanagridx may perhaps be considered

el

fA N 45

to hold the same relation to the Fringillidx as the Icteridz do to the Sturmdz and the Mniotiltide to the Sylviide or Turdidx, in each case the purely New-World Family being the “feebler” type. . (A. WN.) TANCRED (d. 1112), son of the marquis Odo the Good and Emma the.sister of Robert Guiscard, one of the most famous heroes of the first crusade. See Crusapzs, vol. vi. p. 624 sq. . ; TANCRED, the last Norman king of Sicily, reigned 1189-1194. See Sicizy, vol. xxii. p. 26. TANGANYIKA, a lake in East Central Africa, called Msaga (“tempestuous”) by the Wakawendi and Kimana by the Warungu. The meaning of the name Tanganyika is, according to Cameron, nothing more than “the mixing place.” It is the longest freshwater lake in the world, being about 75 miles longer than Lake Michigan. Although the Arabs had long known of the existence of the lake, the first Europeans who discovered it were Speke and Burton in 1858. It has since been visited by Living- stone, Cameron, Stanley, Thomson, and Hore, who have all added to our knowledge of it. Tanganyika, which is situated some 600 miles as the crow flies from the east coast of Africa, extends from 3° 16’S. lat. to 8° 48’ S. lat., and lies between 29° 10’ E. long. and 32° 30’ E. long. Its length is 420 iniles, and its breadth varies from 10 to 50 miles. Its area is 12,650 square miles, and its altitude may be taken as 2700 feet above sea-level (Cameron, 2710; Stanley, 2770; Hore, 2750; Popelin, 2665). It has a coast-line of 900 miles in extent. Its greatest depth has not yet been determined, but Hore states that a 168-fathom rope often failed to reach the bottom. Tanganyika may be described as an enormous crevasse. It is bordered on all sides by hills and mountains, some of which rise to from 5000 to 10,000 feet above its waters. The scenery is marked by exceptional grandeur, and is well calculated to impress the traveller. Burton says :— “Tt filled us with

admiration, with wonder, and delight. Beyond the short foreground of rugged and precipitous hill-fold, down which the footpath painfully zigzags, a narrow plot of emerald reen shelves gently towards a ribbon of glistening yellow sand, ere bordered by sedgy rushes, there clear and cleanly cut by the breaking wavelets. Farther in front stretches an expanse of the lightest, softest blue, from 30 to 35 miles in breadth, and sprinkled by the east wind with crescents of snowy foam. It is bounded on the other side by tall and broken walls of purple hill, flecked and capped with pearly mist, or standing sharply pencilled against the azure sky. 'To the south lie high bluff headlands and capes; and as the eye dilates it falls on little outlying islets, speckling a sea horizon. Villages, eultivated lands, the frequent canoes of the

fishermen, give a something of life, of variety, of movement to the scenery."

Tanganyika is fed by numerous rivers and streamlets which flow from the surrounding hills, the yearly rainfall being about 27 inches, but the rainy seasons vary extremely in different years, altering the surface area of the lake accordingly. Hore found that between March 1879 and August 1880 the waters had fallen 10 feet 44 inches, as marked by a water-gauge he had erected at Ujiji, and he also saw evident signs of the receding of the waters all round the shores of the lake—belts of dead timber and bleached rock. Some 120 rivers and streams flow into the lake ; the most important river is the Malagarasi, near Ujiji. Just below the rapids its width is 500 feet, and the average depth 5 feet. For many years Tanganyika was a riddle to African explorers,—Livingstone, Baker, and others believing that it belonged to the Nile system, and that it was connected with the Albert Nyanza. That this theory is incorrect was proved when Livingstone and Stanley explored the north end of the lake in November 1871, finding no outlet. It was Cameron, in March 1874, who first solved the riddle, and found that the outlet of Tanganyika was the river Lukuga, at about the centre of the western shore of the lake, 5° 52' 45" S. lat. In 1876

this outlet was visited by Stanley, who found that there was no apparent outflow, and doubt was thrown upon Cameron's observations, which, however, have been proved to be correct by Hore, who in 1880 found a

strong current setting unequivocally out of the lake. Not only so, but he obtained good views of the river, which gradually widens soon after the rapids near the lake are passed. He followed the river to 5° 50’S. lat., and, from an altitude of 1100 feet above the river, he saw it flowing far away to the westward. ‘The question is therefore settled that Lake Tanganyika belongs to the Congo system, but it is only an occasional tributary to that miglity river, its contribution depending upon the rainfall. ‘The lake is subject to fre- quent storms, especially from the $.8.E. and 8.W., lasting sometimes for two or three days, and leaving a heavy swell, which proves a great hindrance to navigation. Hore says —“T have never witnessed such wondrous cloud-scenery aud majestic effects of thunder and lightning as on Tan- ganyika.”

The shores and water of the lake abound in animal life,—crocodiles, the hippopotamus, otters, and many kinds of fish being found in its waters. Flocks of waterfowl abound in the river mouths: gulls, divers, herons, kingfishers, eagles, fish-hawks, and black ibis are very numerous. The shores are very fertile,—rice, manioc, kaffre corn, two kinds of ground nuts, maize, uleysi, pumpkins, sweet potatoes, sugar-cane, castor-oil tree, tamarind, cotton, tomato, and cueumber growing luxuriantly. The oil palm grows at Ujiji, Urundi, and at the south end of the lake, the borassus near the Malagarasi river, the screw palm in Uguha, and the raphra in sevcral localities. The tzetse fly is found on the shores of the lake from Ujiji round the southern end as far as Ubwari on the west coast. Amongst the useful timber trees may be noticed the gigantic inbule, the mininga, lignum vite, and ebony. The people inhabit- ing the eountries on the borders of the lake form ten distinct tribes, with separate national peculiarities and customs. They live in well-organized villages, in which considerable social order is main- tained. They have also learnt, to some extent at any rate, to utilize the products of their country: they work their own iron and copper ; salt is prepared for barter ; palin oil is collected ; and in some places there are large pottery works. Their fishing industry is extensive, and dried fish is exported; boatbuilding is carried on to a small extent; cotton cloth is manufactured at several places, and at others the famous grass or palm-fibre cloth; whilst the dairy farms of Uhha export packages of butter. There are sev- eral London Missionary Society stations on Lake Tanganyika, also one belonging to the Roman Catholics; and a station of the African International

Association is situated at Karema. Ujiji, an Arab town of some importance, stands on the eastern shore of the lake.

TANGIERS, or Tancrer (Zanja), a seaport of Morocco and capital of a pashalik, on the Strait of Gibraltar, about 14 miles to the east of Cape Spartel, stands on two eminences at the north-west extremity of a spacious bay. The town has a fine appearance from the sea, rising gradually in the form of an amphitheatre, and defended by walls and a castle. The streets, which are unpaved, are very narrow and crooked, and the houses, except those occupied by foreign ambassadors or consuls and a few others, are mean. The main thoroughfare is that which leads from the Bab-al-Marsa (Gate of the Port) to the Bab-al-Sok (Gate of the Market Place); the sok presents a lively spectacle, especially on Sundays and Thursdays. The manufactures of Tangiers are of little importance, consisting chiefly of coarse woollen cloth, mats, and pottery ; tanning is also carried on, but the leather, though much esteemed in Europe, is inferior to that made in other parts of Morocco. The harbour is a mere road- stead, but it is the best Morocco possesses, and affords good anchorage and shelter to the largest vessels, except during the prevalence of strong winds from the north-west or east. ‘Tangiers has a large trade with Gibraltar. The climate is temperate and healthy, but the inhabitants often suffer much in summer from deficiency of water-supply. Tangiers, which is the residence of all the foreign ministers and consuls to the court of Morocco, has a population estimated at about 20,000, of whom some 400 are Europeans.

TA N—

Ta WN

The Roman Tingis, which stood in the immediate vieinity of the site of Tangiers, boasted of great antiquity; under Augustus it became a free city, and Claudius made it a Roman colony and capital of Tingitana. It was held successively by Vandals, Byzan- tines, and Arabs, and fell into the hands of the Portuguese towards the end of the 15th century. In 1662 it was made part of the dowry of Catherine of Braganza on her marriage with Charles II, of England; the English defended it in 1680, but, on account of its expense, dismantled it in 1684 and abandoned it to the Moors, who fortified it anew. It was bombarded by a Spanish fleet in 1790

and by the French in 1844.

TANHAUSER, or TannuAuseEr, the subject of one of the most famous of old German legends, is represented as a knight who after many wanderings comes to the Venusberg. He enters the cave where the Lady Venus holds her court, and abandons himself to a life of sensual pleasure. By and by he is overcome by remorse, and, invoking the aid of the Virgin Mary, he obtains per. mission to return for a while to the outer world. He then goes as a pilgrim to Rome, and entreats Pope Urban to secure for him the forgiveness of his sins. The pope, who happens to have a rod in his hand, says it is as im- possible for him to be pardoned as for the rod to blossom, Tanhauser therefore departs in despair, and returns to the Lady Venus. In three days the rod begins to put forth

‘green leaves, and the pope sends messengers in all direc-

tions in search of the penitent; but he is never seen again, This legend was at one time known in every part of Germany, and as late as 1830 it survived in a popular song at Entlibuch, a version of which was given by Uhland in his Alte hoch- und niederdeutsche Volkslieder. It can be traced back to the 14th century, but in its original form seems to have belonged to the period of Teutonic paganism. According to some legends, the Venus- berg is the Hoselberg or Horselberg, a hill near Eisenach associated with the Teutonic goddess of the nether world, who was known by various nates, such as Hulda, Hilda, and Hel. To this goddess the name of Venus appears to have been transferred. Among the attendants of Hulda was the faithful Eckhart, and in the preface to the Heldenbuch he is said to sit before the Venusberg, and to warn passers-by of the dangers to which they may be exposed if they linger in the neighbourhood. The legend has been reproduced by several modern German poets, and forms the subject of one of Wagner’s operas.

In the 13th century, contemporary with Pope Urban IV., there was a German knight called Tanhaduser, who was well known as a minnesinger at the court of Frederick II., duke of Austria. After Duke Frederick’s death Tanhaiuser was received at the court of Otho IL, duke of Bavaria ; but, being of a restless disposition, and having wasted his fortune, he spent much time in wandering about Germany. He also went as a crusader to the Holy Land. His poems (printed in the second part of the Minnesinger,

edited by Von der Hagen) are fresh, lively, and graceful, but lack the ideal tone which marks the writings of the earlier minnesinger. He was much esteemed by the meistersinger, and it is possible that the story of his adventurous life may have been connected with the old legend about the Venusberg.

See Kornmann, Mons Veneris (1614), and Griisse, Die Sage vom

hitter Tanhéuser, and Der Tanhdéuser und Ewige Jude; also Zander, Die Tanhiuser Sage und der Minnesinger Tanhduser.

TANJORE, a district of British India, in the Madras presidency, lying between 9° 50’ and 11° 25’ N. lat. and between 78° 55’ and 79° 55’ E. long., with an area of 3654 square miles, It forms a portion of the Southern Carnatic, and is bounded on the N. by the river Coleroon, which separates it from Trichinopoly and South Arcot districts, on the E. and S.E. by the Bay of Bengal, on the S.W. by Madura district, and on the W. by Madura and Trichinopoly and Pudukotta state. Tanjore

is known as the garden of Southern India. It is well watered by an elaborate system of dams, cuts, and canals in connexion with the rivers Cauvery and Coleroon, and the soil is exceedingly productive. The delta of the Cauvery occupies the flat northern part, which is highly cultivated with rice, dotted over with groves of cocoa-nut trees, and densely populated. Tanjore is a land of temples, many of them being of very early date. The great temple of Tanjore city is said to be the finest in India; it is of the 11th century, and remains in excellent preservation to the present day. The district has a coast-line of 140 miles, but communication with shipping is unsafe, owing to a heavy surf which breaks incessantly on the shore. The rainfall, as elsewhere on the Coromandel coast, varies considerably from year to year; the mean annual fall, as observed at ten stations for four years, was 47:14 inches. Tanjore is amply provided with means of communication. [t is traversed by two branches of the South Indian Railway.

The census of 1881 returned the population of the district at 2,130,383 (males 1,026,528, females 1,103,855), of whom 1,939,421 were Hindus, 112,058 Mohammedans, and 78,258 Christians. Tanjore is the first district in which Protestant missions began, and now it is second only to Tinnevelly

in the number of its | Christian missions. These establishments were taken over in 1826 | by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, which subse- quently founded missions in several parts of the district. The total number of native Protestants belonging to the various societies in 1881 was 8255. Romau Catholic missions in Tanjore date from the first half of the 17th century, and the number of native Roman Catholics in 1881 was 67,745. Five towns have populations ex- ceeding 10,000, viz., Tanjore (see below), Negapatam 53,855, Com- baconum 50,098, Mayavaram 23,044, and Munnargudi 19,409.

Of the total area of the district, reckoned at 2,392,117 acres, 1,468,500 were returned in 1884-85 as cultivated, and 149,228 as available for cultivation, while forests covered 21,422 acres, Rice is the staple crop, and is raised almost entirely by artificial irriga- tion; green crops are common; plantain and betel-vine gardens abound in the delta, where sugar-cane and tobacco are also culti- vated. The chief manufactures are metal wares, silk cloths, carpets, and pith-work. Imports consist chiefly of cotton piece goods, twist and yarn, metals, timber, and betel nuts. Rice is by far the most important article of export alike by sea and land. The gross revenue in 1884-85 was £549,982, the land yielding £389,755.

The modern history of Tanjore commences with its occupation by the Mahrattas in 1678 under Venkaji, the brother of Sivajf the Great. The British first came into contact with Tanjore by their expedition in 1749 with a view to the restoration of a deposed raja. In this they failed, and a subsequent expedition was bought off. | The Mahrattas practically held Tanjore until 1799. In October of _ that year it was ceded to the East India Company in absolute | Sovereignty by Raja Sharabhoji, pupil of the missionary Schwartz, _ the company engaging to pay the raj4 of Tanjore one-fifth of the net revenue of the territory which was transferred to them, with a further sum of £35,000. Raji Sharabhoji retained only the capital | and a small tract of country around. He died in 1833, and was succeeded by his son Sivaji, on whose death in 1855 without an heir the house became extinct, the rights and privileges appertain- ug to it ceased, and Tanjore became British territory.

TANJORE, capital and administrative headquarters of the above district, is situated in 10° 47’ N. lat. and 79° 10° 24” E. long. As the last capital of the ancient Hindu dynasty of the Cholas, and in all ages one of the chief | political, literary, and religious centres of the south, the city is full of interesting associations. Its monuments of Indian art and early civilization are of the first importance. | Besides its great temple, the city is famed for its artistic | manufactures, including silk carpets, jewellery, repoussé work, copper wares, &c. It contained a population in | 1881 of 54,745 (26,272 males and 28,473 females). The South Indian Railway connects Tanjore with Negapatam, | 1ts seaport on the east, and Trichinopoly on the west.
TANNAHILL, Rozerr (1774-1810), one of the most popular of the successors of Burns in song-writing, was a | Weaver in Paisley, where he was born in 1774. He was apprenticed to his father’s trade at the age of twelve, in the year of the first publication of the poems of Burns, which quickened the poetic ambition of so many Scottish | youths in humble life. The young apprentice studied and

composed poetry as he drove the shuttle to and fro, with shelf and ink-bottle rigged up on his loom-post. Apart from his poetry, he had little variety in his life. He was shy and reserved, of small and delicate physique, and took little part in the vigorous social life of the town, beyond sitting and snioking at a club of local worthies, and occa- sionally writing humorous verses for their amusement. He had apparently but one love affair, the heroine of which was the original of “ Jessie, the Flower of Dunblane.” He bade her farewell in indignant rhymes after three years’ courtship. The steady routine of his trade was broken only by occasional excursions to Glasgow and the land of Burns, and a year’s trial of work at Bolton. He began in 1805 to contribute verses to Glasgow and Paisley period- icals, and published an edition of his poems by subscription in 1807. Three years later the life of the quiet, gentle, diffident, and despondent poet was brought by his own act to a tragicend. Tannahill’s claims to remembrance rest upon half a dozen songs, full of an exquisite feeling for nature, and so happily wedded to music that their wide popularity in Scotland is likely to be enduring. ‘

Loudon’s Bonnie Woods and Braes,” “ Jessie, the Flower of Dunblane,” and “Gloomy Winter’s Noo Awa” are the best of them.

Tannahill’s centenary was celebrated with great honour at Paisley in 1874; and, in an edition by Mr David Semple, published in 1876, there is an exhaustive and minutely learned account of all that has been prescrved concerning the poet, his ancestry, and the occasions of his various poems.

TANNIN, a generic name for a class of vegetable substances which, as the name indicates, are all available for tanning, meaning the conversion of animal hide into leather. Tannin is widely diffused throughout the vegetable kingdom. An enumeration of the principal materials which form the commercial sources of the substance will be found under LEatuER, vol. xiv. p. 381, and in various special articles referred to from that heading.

Our chemical knowledge on the subject is very limited ; and, as long as we know no better, each of the various tanning materials must be viewed as containing a “tannin” of its own kind! Only a few have as yet been obtained in a state approximating chemical purity. The following characters are common to them all :—

(1) All are colourless or little-coloured non-volatile solids, sol- uble in water and in alcohol; the solution has an astringent taste.

(2) They colour blue litmus paper fecbly red, yet all unite with the alkalies into soluble salts ; the solutions of these eagerly absorb oxygen from the air, with formation of dark-coloured products.

(8) They form insoluble salts with the oxides of lead, zinc, copper, producible by addition of solution of the tannin to one of the respective acetate.

(4) They form very dark-coloured (green or blue) compounds with ferric oxide, conveniently producible by addition of the tannin to ferric or ferroso-ferric acetate. Ordinary old-fashioned black (gall-nut) ink may be quoted as an illustration.

(5) Tannin solutions precipitate gelatine as an insoluble compound, generallyassumed to be chemicallysimilartothe substance of leather.

(6) Ifa piece of raw hide be placcd in a solution of any tannin, it imbibes the latter with formation of LEATHER (q..).

(7) Aqueous tannin-solutions, if mixed with dilute sulphuric acid, are readily oxidized by solution of permanganate of potash, which, being reduced to manganous salt, loses its intense violct colour.

Upon the last two propositions Lowenthal has based a convenient method for the assaying of tannin materials. A known weight of the substance to be analysed (say sumach) is extracted with water, and the extract diluted to a known volume. An aliquot part of the extract is then mixed with a certain proportion of a standard solution of indigo-carmin and of sulphuric acid, and, after large dilution with watcr, standard permanganate is dropped in from a burette (graduated glass tube) until the colour of the indigo is completely discharged. After deducting the volume of reagent which would have been taken up by the indigo alone, the rest is put down as corresponding to the ‘‘ permanganate reducers gene- rally.” Another measured volume of the extract is then poured over a sufficient weight of dry shavings of raw hide, after having been suitably diluted, and the whole is allowed to stand until the tannin has all passed into the hide. The liquid is then filtered,

1 Coffee beans and tea leaves contain peculiar tannins.

and a measured volume, corresponding to exactly the quantity of extract used for the assay, tested with permanganate. The volume of reagent used this time is deducted from that used in the assay as a correction. From the net permanganate the weight of pure gallotannic acid which it would oxidize is calculated on the basis of standard experiments, and from this weight the ‘‘ percentage of tannin” is deduced. The method is purely empirical, and the results are of no value unless obtained according to a rigorously prescribed mode of procedure. Of individual tannins that of the gall-nuts, known as gallotannic acid, is best known. For its pre- paration

(according to Pélouze) powdered gall-nuts are placed in an apparatus for extraction ‘‘by displacement,” and in it soaked in a mixture of 9 parts of ether and 1 part of water for twenty-four hours. The liquid is then allowed to drain off, aud the residue washed with aqueous cther. The liquid on standing separates into two layers,—a lower heavy layer, which contains the tannin, and an upper inore purely ethereal layer, which contains gallic acid and other impurities. The lower layer is drawn off, washed once or twice with ether, and then evaporated to dryness at a gentle heat; the tannin remains as a porous friable mass of a slightly greyish-yellow colour. This is the taunin of the pharmaceutist.

Such tannin is not by any meansan absolutely unitary substance. Its solution, if allowed to stand in the presence of a ferment which is naturally present in gall-nut extract, or more readily if boiled with sulphuric acid, yields a large proportion of gallic acid, which is easily obtained in pure crystals. According to Strecker, glucose is formed at the same time, whence he viewed tannin asa glucoside (see Sugar). But this is now recognized as a mistake, since Hugo Schiff showed that pure tannin is only digallic acid, C,,H,,0,= 2C,H,O0; (gallic acid) minus 1H,O. Pure tannin, according to Schiff, can be obtained by dehydrating pure gallic acid by means of chloride of acetyl. The tannin of the Chinese gall-nuts scems to be identical with gallotannic acid.

Quercitannic Acid.—The tannin of oak bark is certainly different from gallotannic acid, because it yields no gallic acid when boiled with dilute vitriol. Etti (Jahresb. uber die Fortschr. der Chemie for 1880, p. 898) prepares it by extracting the powdered bark with dilute alcohol at a gentle heat, adding ordinary ether to the alcoholic extract, and shaking out the tannin with acetic ether. The acetic ether extract is distilled to recover the solvent, the residue filtered, and the filtrate evaporated to dryness to obtain the pure (?) tanuin as a reddish-white powder of the composition C,,H,,0, At 130- 140° C. it loses water and forms phlobaphen, C34H 90.7, a brown solid insoluble in water but soluble in solution of the tannin. Quercitannic acid forms quite a series of such anhydrides : CoH 39017 5 CoH ogOrg; Cz4H 6015; CyyHog014 Some, if not all, of these are contained in aqueous oak-bark extract, and they play an important part in its application for

tanning, According to Etti, quercitannic acid is a tri-methyl substitution-product of digallic acid, C,,H,,0, minus 3H plus 38CH3=C,H)60,.

Besides these two tannins, those of coffee and cachou are the only ones which have been obtained in a relatively definite form.

TANNING. See LEAruer.

TANTALUM. A rare element closely allied to Nioprum. See vol. xvii. p. 513.

TANTALUS, a hero of ancient Greek myth and legend. He wasa son of Zeus and Pluto (“Wealth”), and became the father of Pelops, Proteus, and Niobe. He dwelt in splendour on Mount Sipylus near Smyrna, and was admitted to the table of the gods themselves. But he abused the divine favour by revealing to mankind the secrets he had learned in heaven, or by killing his son Pelops and serving him up to the gods at table. Another story was that he stole nectar and ambrosia from heaven and gave them to men. According to others, Pandareus stole a golden dog which guarded the temple of Zeus in Crete, and gave it to Tantalus to take care of. But, when Pandareus demanded the dog back, Tantalus denied that he had received it. Therefore Zeus turned Pandareus into a stone, and flung down Tantalus with Mount Sipylus on the top of him. The punishment of Tantalus in the lower world was famous. He stood up to his neck in water, which fied from him when he tried to drink of it and over his head hung fruits which the wind wafted away whenever he tried to grasp them. From this myth is derived the English word “tantalize.” Another story is that a rock hung over his head ready to fall and crush him. The tomb of Tantalus on Mount Sipylus was pointed out in antiquity, and has been in modern times identified by Texier with the great cairn beneath Old Magnesia ;

but Prof. W. M. Ramsay inclines to identify it with q remarkable rock-cut tomb beside Magnesia. The story of Tantalus contains a reminiscence of a semi-Greek kingdom which had its seat at Sipylus, the oldest and holiest city of Lydia, and one of the chief birthplaces of early Greek civilization. Of this ancient city the remains are still visible on the northern slope of Mount

Sipylus, and about 4 miles east of Magnesia. They consist of sepulchral mounds, rock-cut tombs, and a small acropolis perched on an almost inaccessible crag which juts out from the nearly perpendicular limestone wall of Mount Sipylus. There was a tradition in antiquity that the city of Tantalus had been swallowed up in a lake on the mountain ; but the legend may, as Prof. W. M. Ramsay thinks, have been suggested by the vast ravine which yawns beneath the acropolis.! This acropolis is too small ever to have been the seat of a great empire; rather, like Pessinus and other great religious centres of Asia Minor, it may have been “the seat of a priestly suzerainty maintained over the hiero-doulot [sacred slaves] of the surrounding district.” Connected as the city was on the one hand with the sea, and on the other with the capital of the ancient kingdom of Phrygia by means of the “royal road,” it was a natural meeting-place for Greek and Oriental culture. A com- parison of the art of Phrygia with the early art of Mycensz and Olympia has fully confirmed the legend which con- nects the family of Tantalus with the Peloponnesus.

See PELors, PHryaia, and a paper by Prof. W. M. Ramsay in Journal of Hellenic Studies, iii. p. 33 sq.

TAOISM. See Lio-rszr,

TAORMINA (Zawromenium), now an unimportant vil- lage of about 3000 inhabitants, is magnificently situated at the edge of a precipitous cliff 900 feet high on the east coast of Sicily, about 32 miles from Messina and the same from Catania. The original city was founded by a tribe of Siculi after the destruction of the neighbouring city of Naxos in 403 3.c. by Dionysius of Syracuse. It was built on the hill of Taurus, whence came the name Tavpopévoy (Diod., xiv. 58). In 358 3.c. the city was increased by the settlement of the exiled survivors from Naxos, which was only 3 miles distant ; and hence Pliny (//. W., iii. 8) speaks of Naxos as having been the original name of Tauromenium. Owing to its commanding site, the city has frequently been the scene of important struggles. When with the rest of Sicily it passed into the possession of the Romans, it shared with two other Sicilian cities the privileges of a "'civitas foederata." During the Servile War (134-132 3B.c.) Tauromenium was occupied by a body of rebel slaves, but was finally taken by the consul Rupilius, and the whole garrison slaughtered. In 36 Be. it was one of Sextus Pompey's chief strongholds in his war with Augustus, who after his victory established a Roman colony there. Under the empire it was a flourishing city, famed for its wine (Pliny, H. W., xiv. 6) and red mullets (Juv., v. 93). In 902 a.p. it was taken from the Byzan- tine emperor by the Saracens, who called the place Moezzia. In 1078 it was captured by the Normans. A large number of ancient remains bear witness to its former importance. Fine autonomous silver coins of c. 300 B.¢. exist, with ov. a laureated head of Apollo, and rev. a tripod, with the legend TAYPOMENITAN, and a magis- trate's initials AI. The theatre is, next to that at Aspendus (Painphylia), the best preserved in existence. It is Greek in plan, but the existing structure belongs mostly to the Roman period, and is specially remarkable for the preserva- tion of its lofty scena wall, and two large chambers which form entrance-porches to the cavea. It is excavated in an

' Legends of submerged cities and castles are common in different parts of Europe. It has been suggested that they are confused recol-

lections of the ancient villages built on piles in lakes (Wood-Martin, Lake Dwellings of Ireland, p. 28).

elevated peak of rock, and commands one of the most maynificent views in the world, with Mount Etna in the distance. Remains of five piscine and a large bath, popularly called a naumachia, still exist, together with remains of the ancient city wall and that of the arx.

Sce Serradifalco, Antichita di Sicilia, Palermo, 1834-42, vol. v. ; Hittorff and Zanth, Architecture Antique de la Sicile, Paris, 1870.

TAPACULO, the name! given in Chili to a bird of singular appearance,—the Pteroptochus albicollis of ornitho- logy,—and, throughout this series of articles (Brrps, vol. iii. p. 743 ; OrniTHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 40, et alibi), applied in an extended sense to its allied forms, which are now found to constitute a small Family, Pteroptochidez,

Tapaeulo. belonging to the Tracheophonous division of Passeres, and

therefore peculiar to South America. About 20 species, which are disposed by Mr Sclater (Jbis, 1874, pp. 189- 206) in 8 genera, are believed to belong to this group.

The species of the Family first made known _ is ~~Scytalopus magellanicus, originally described in 1783 by Latham (Synopsis, iv. p. 464) as a Warbler. Even in 1836 Gould not unnaturally took it for a Wren, when establishing the genus to which it is now referred ; but some ten years after Johannes Miiller found that Scytalopus, together with the true Tapaculo, which was first deseribed by Kittlitz in 1830, possessed anatomical characters that removed them far from any position previously assigned to them, and determined their true place as above given. In the meanwhile a kindred form, Hylactes, also first described in 1830, had been shewn by Eyton to have some very exceptional osteological features, and these were found to be also common to Pteroptochus and Scytalopus, In 1860 Prof. Cabanis recognized the Pteroptochide as a distinct Family, but made it also include Menura (cf. Lyre~~ BIRD, vol. xv. p. 115), and in 1874 Mr Sclater (wt supra) thought | that Atrichia (cf. ScruB-BIRD, vol. xxi. p. 554) might belong here. | It was Garrod in 1876 and 1877 who finally divested the Family of these aliens, but, until examples of some of the othcr genera have been anatomically examined, it may not be safe to say that they all belong to the Pteroptochidex.

The true Tapaculo (P. albicollis) has a general resem- blance in plumage to the females of some of the smaller Shrikes (Lantus), and to a cursory observer its skin might

1 Of Spanish origin, it is intended as a reproof to the bird for the

shameless way in which, by ereeting its tail, it exposes its hinder parts. | It has been sometimes misspelt ‘‘Tapacolo,” as by Mr Darwin, who gave (Journal of Researches, chap. xii.) a brief but entertaining aeeount of the habits of this bird and its relative, Wylactes megapodius, called hy the Chilenos ‘‘ El Turco.”

pass for that of one; but its shortened wings and powerful feet would on closer inspection at once reveal the difference. In life, however, its appearance must be wholly unlike, for it rarely flies, hops actively on the ground or among bushes, with its tail erect or turned towards its head, and continually utters various and strange notes,—some, says Mr Darwin, are “like the cooing of doves, others like the bubbling of water,and manydefy all similes.” The “Turco,” Hylactes megapodius, is larger, with greatly developed feet and claws, but is very similar in colour and habits. Two more species of Hylactes are known, and one other of Pteroptochus, all of which are peculiar to Chili or Patagonia. The species of Scytalopus are as small as Wrens, mostly of a dark colour, and inhabit parts of Brazi] and Colombia, one of them occurring so far northward as Bogota. (A. N.)

TAPESTRY. See TEXTILEs.

TAPE-WORMS, or Crxstopa, are a group of worms forming one of the three main divisions of the Platy- helminthes, the other two being the Turbellaria (see PLANARIANS and NEMERTINES) and J’rematoda (see TREMATODA). They have been defined as follows :—“ Flat worms without mouth or alimentary canal, which typically develop by alternation of generations, by budding from a generally pear-shaped nurse, with which they remain united for a lengthened period as a ribbon-like colony or ‘ strobila.’ The individual joints of the colony, ¢.e., the sexual animals or ‘ proglottides,’ increase in size and maturity as they are removed farther from

their origin by the intercalation of new buds, but are not distinguished in any special way. The nurse, however, known by the uname of the ‘ head’ (scolex) is provided with four or two suckers, and usually with curved claw-like hooks. The dorsal and ventral surfaces of the head are perfectly identical, so that the arrangement of the hooks presents a strikingly radiate appearance. By means of this apparatus the worms fasten themselves on the intestinal membrane of their hosts, which (except in the case of the otherwise peculiar Archigetes) all belong to the Vertebrata. The nurses develop from little round six-hooked embryos in a more or less complicated fashion as so-called ‘ bladder-worms.’ The latter inhabit very diverse, but usually parenchym- atous, organs of the higher and lower animals, and are thence passively transferred to the intestine of their subsequent host” (Leuckart, 1,? p. 270).

Historical Sketch.—Certain forms of Cestodes have been known from time immemorial. The hydatid cyst is alluded to by early medical writers, and Aristotle speaks of examining the tongue of pigs to ascertain the presence of bladder-worms. By this author and Hippocrates the Cestodes and other flat worms are spoken of as éApuOes mAatetat, in opposition to the otpoyyvAu or “round worms”; the word Z’enia (Gr. rawia) does not occur in Greek authors, but is first used by the Romans (Pliny, H. N., xi. 33). In the treatises of the Middle Ages the tape-worm figured as Lumbricus latus, only one species being recognized. Felix Plater (23) separated Bothrio-cephalus from the other human tape-worms, and Andry (24) gave it the name Zénia & épine, mistaking the nodular generative organs for vertebre. The appellation Bothriocephalus latus dates from Bremser, 1819 (25). Like other Hntozoa, the tape-worms and bladder-worms were supposed to arise by spontaneous generation; it was found, however, that animal forms strikingly like the Hntozoa sometimes lived freely. Pallas (19), seeing that the eggs of intestinal worms are expelled from the animals in which they live, and may remain for some time unaltered in water, suggested the hypothesis that the Hntozoa agree with other animals in originating from eggs which can be

2 These figures refer to the bibliography, pp. 55, 56. XXL — 7

carried from one animal to another. He also supposed that they reached the liver and other internal organs by means of the blood-stream. Other authorities endeavoured to explain the presence of Extozoa by supposing that they were transmitted from parents to children. Von Siebold (26) in 1838 discovered the six-hooked embryos of Tenia, and came to the conclusion that they could only pass into the fully-formed animal by a kind of metamorphosis. The subject was fully discussed by Eschricht (27), who endea- voured to prove that this phenomenon was of common occurrence among the L£ntozoa. Shortly afterwards ap- peared Steenstrup's famous work upon the alternation of generations (28), which furnished a ready explanation of the isolated facts till then observed regarding the Cestodes. The most important advances in modern times have been due to the introduction of helminthological experiment by Kiichenmeister, by means of which the demonstration has been furnished that certain bladder-worms are the larval stages of particular tape-worms. The first of these ex- periments took place in 1851, when Kiichenmeister fed a dog with bladder-worms from the rabbit, and a cat with specimens from the mouse, and succeeded in rearing tape- worms in their intestines (29). Similar investigations on different species have been made by Van Beneden, Leuckart, and others. Of systematic treatises the most important are those of Rudolphi (35), Diesing (20), and Van Beneden (13), while Von .Linstow, in addition to numerous scat- tered papers (80, 36), has given us an invaluable list of hosts with their respective parasites (21).

Anatomy.

In considering the anatomical peculiarities of the Cestoda it will be convenient to describe one particular species and afterwards to indicate the chief differences presented by other members of the group. For this purpose Txnia saginata, Goze (T. mediocanellata, Kuchenmeister), may be selected as a type, as it has been perhaps more studied than any other, and is one of the species most eommonly found in man; for further details, see Sommer (81).

Dimensions.—An average specimen of this tape-worm (fig. 1, A) will measure in a state of moderate contraction about 500 em., and consist of nearly 1400 segments; of those which immediately follow the head more

than 250 will be found within a length of 5 cm.; they gradually widen posteriorly, until the widest, which are situated about half-way down the chain, have a breadth of 14 mm. and a length of 6 mm.; whilst the terminal segments measure 5 mm: in breadth by 19 mm. in length.

The head (fig. 1, B) is spheroidal, 1:5 mm. in diameter, and bears on its lateral surface four equidistant suckers, which serve for the attachment of the whole worm. After death these are generally retracted, but during life they can be protruded and moved in all directions. They are a special development of the musculature of the body-wall, the radial fibres being the most conspicuons. The tape-worm now being described is abnormal, inasmuch as the front of its head is not provided with a circlet of hooks; these are well seen, however, in the other common human tape-worm (Tenia solium), which bears a double ring of them, situated around a button-shaped muscular pad (rostelZwm) which forms the apex of the head (fig. 1, C). By the varying contraction of the scparate parts of this organ the hooks may be moved in diffcrent direc- tions, and when the worm is attaching itself they are first extended directly forwards, and then brought back so as to force the rostellum into the tissues of the host. Each hook has a’ broad bifid base, to which the muscles are attached, supporting a long curved point. In Tenia saginata, to the consideration of which we now return, the rostellum is quite rudimentary, and has been described by earlier authors as a fifth sucker or even as a mouth ; it is interesting to note that during its incipient stages it bears a number of minute spines homologous with the hooks of other species. The head contains furthermore the anterior portions of the nervous and excretory systems. The latter of these consists of an annular vessel placcd immediately below the rostellum, from which four canals, corresponding to the four suckers, pass backwards: two of these gradually disappear, leaving two which pursue their course down the proglottides, in connexion with which they will be again alluded to, and open at the hinder extremity of the worm by a common pore. The nervous system of the Cestodes was long sought in vain: although some early investigators described a ganglion, they were unable to give any satisfactory proof of its existence, this having been first furnished by Schneider. It seems generally to consist of a central ganglion

lying within the head, from which two cords proceed backwards; these were regarded by Sommer and Landois as part of the ali- mentary system. Niemiec (6) has recently given a detailed account

of its structure in several different species, and its relations have

been discussed by Lang (7).

The proglottides arise by a species of budding in the narrow neck which immediately succeeds the head; they are separated from each other by grooves, which are at first so shallow and

indistinct that it is impossible to say with certainty where the segmentation really begins. The proglottides which have attained sexual maturity are situated some 30-40 em. from the head, and measure 1°5 mm. in length by 5 mm. in breadth. The segments, like the head, consist of a solid mass of tissue in which the various organs are imbedded. Like the Trematodes, the Cestodes were long thought to have no body-cavity or ccelom, and hence were called *‘parenchymatous” worms. Recently, however, a series of inter-cellular spaces has been described by Fraipont (8) as leading into the terminal excretory organs, and these spaces have been inter- preted both by himself and others as the homologue of a body- cavity, although this opinion has not been allowed to pass unchallenged (sce Pintner, 9). The surface of the body is covered by a thin clear homogeneous cuticle, which, according to some authorities, is perforated by fine closely-set pores. The hooks which have been described above, as well as the small spines and bristles found in certain species, are developments of this cuticle. This external covering cannot, according to Leuckart (1, p- 289), be regarded as homologous with the cuticle of other invertebrates, inasmuch as it is not a secretion from a special layer of subjacent cells, but is ‘‘ the structureless limiting membrane of the connective tissue substance, and is comparable with the so-called basement- membrane found in the other flat-worms . . . between the niuscular layer and the dermal epithelium.” It is to be observed, however, that this view has by no means found universal acceptance (see

¥

Tuer h-worRMS

Steudener, 10), and it is a prior? improbable, since the Cestodes (and Trematodes) would thus form an exception to the general rule by which all animals are clad with an epithelium derived from the embryonic ectoderm. The subcuticular layer is described as con- sisting of long fusiform cells (probably modified connective-tissue cells) disposed perpendicularly to the cuticle. It seems possible that they are in direct connexion with the transverse muscles of the body. The matrix of the Cestode body consists of connective tissue, the cells eomposing which are seldom provided with a dis- tinct membrane, and sometimes can only be separately distingnished by their nuclei. The layer of muscles (see below) separates this wnatrix into a central and a cortical portion. Distributed in it, and especially in its cortical portion, are numerous calcareous corpuscles, which are generally spheroidal in form, varying up to 0°019 mm. in diameter and concentrically laminated; they contain a large amount (often 20 per cent.) of lime salts, diffused through an organic basis, from which' the salts can he removed with effervescence by the action of acids. These corpuscles have been variously inter- preted by the older authors as eggs, or as lymph or blood corpuscles, but the only theories which have been seriously maintained in modern times are—(1) that they are skeletal (Von Siebold); (2) that they are excretory (Claparede, Griesbach); or (3) that they form a reserve store of calcareous material to he used either in counter- acting the acid digestive juices of the host or for the production of ege-shells (Lenckart, 1, p. 288).

The muscular system consists of three sets of fibres—longitudinal, transverse, and sagittal. The first are the best developed, and run down the inner part of the cortical layer in the form of strong bands ; the second set lie immediately below them and pass across the body in the form of two flat inuscular plates, which converge towards each other as they approach the margins of the proglottis; the sagittal muscles run primitively straight from one flat surface of the body to the other, but their direetion is much modified after the growth of the genital organs, between the various parts of which they lie as isolated bundles; they are the weakest of all the sets. The muscular fibres are non-striated, and when they are fully de- veloped no nucleus ean be detected inthem. They taper towards the extremities, sometimes branching dichotomously, and, as above mentioned, a connexion has been asserted to be visible between them and the subcuticular cells.

The excretory system in the proglottides consists of two or four longitudinal canals which lie along their two narrow margins (fig. 1, D, ex.). The origin of these in the head has been already noted, and they pass continuously down the whole worm until they open into a vesicle at the posterior extremity of the terminal segment. In the hinder part of each proglottis they are connected by a trans- verse vessel (fig. 1, D, tr.), immediately above which a valve is formed by a duplicature of the wall, so that it is impossible to inject the excretory system from behind whilst fluid can be readily forced along it from before backwards. Fraipont has drawn a distinction between ascending and descendingeanals. Excretory openings have been described by various observers in the anterior portion of the worm, near the suckers (Wagener, 11; Fraipont, 8; Riehm, 12), and, although their preseuce is denied by Pintner (9), there seems sufficient evidence to show that they are more generally present than was formerly supposed. A ramifying network of smaller vessels connected with the main trunks just described is found in the more superficial parenchyma, and this in its turn gives off still finer capillaries which terminate in ciliated funnels. According to Fraipont these open into the intercellular lacune which are the representatives of the ccelom (see above), whilst Pintner maintains that the terminal funnels are completely closed, and are to be regarded as unicellular glands. ‘The subject, however, is one of extreme difficulty and demands further investigation. It is worthy of notice that each of the three systems of canals above described maintains its proper diameter throughout, and that no intermediate sizes can be found. The ‘‘plasmatic vascular system” described by Sommer and Landois, and regarded by them as part of the alimentary system, consists partly of some of these delicate canals and partly of the two cords of the nervous system. The main canals open posteriorly into a pulsatile vesicle, at the end of the last proglottis; when, however, some of these have been cast off the opening may be either by a shortened transverse vesicle, as Leuckart (1) maintains to be the case in the present species, or by separate openings, one for each canal.

The reproductive organs are serially repeated in the proglottides, each of which contains a complete set of male and female organs (fig. 1, D). The male organs may be discussed first. The testes (é.,¢.) are very numerous and scattered throughout the greater part of the proglottis; they are round vesicles (0°15 mm. in diameter) containing spermatozoa, and attached like

berries to the terminal ramifications of the vas deferens (v.d.); these gradually unite, form- ing larger and larger branches until they reach the main canal, which runs in a series of eoils transversely half way across the joint a little behind its middle, and ends in a eommon cloaca (cl.), whieh receives both the male and female organs, and is con- nected with the onter world by the porus genitalis. The outer por-

ol

tion of the vas has a thickened muscular wall. and this part of it is capable of extrusion and retraction, thus forming the male intro- mittent organ or “cirrus” (c.p.). The cuticle which lines all the distal portion of the vas deferens is here thin and delicate and armed with a scries of minute spines, which are directed backwards (Echeneibothrium), The cirrus in the present species is very short, but in other forms its length is sometimes considerable. The protrusion is effected by circular muscles placed around the end of the vas deferens, while the retraction is brought about by special longitudinal fibres, lying along the walls of the evaginable portion.

The female organs may be most conveniently studied by traeing them inwards from the cloaca. The vagina (v.) opens immediately posterior to the vas deferens, and like it is lined by a eontinuation of the external euticle. After passing about half way across the segment it bends backwards and terminates in a small cyst, the receptacnulum seminis (fig. 1, EK, 7.s.); this receives and stores up the male fertilizing elements, retaining them until the ova are ripe. From its posterior extremity there passes a thin-walled canal, wider than the vagina (7.), which serves to convey the spermatozoa to the ova, and hence is termed the “ fertilizing canal” (Befruchtungs- canal of German authors). It unites with the common oviduct, a tube formed by the union of the two oviducts (0.d.), and the two together pass backwards into a spherical glandular structure, called fron: its discoverer “ Melilis’s body” or the shell-gland (fig. 1, D and E, sh.g.). Within this apparatus it receives the dnct of the yolk-gland (y.g.), and then jasses directly forwards to open into the nterus. The ovaries (ov.) are two in number, situated one on each side of the middle line of the body; they are fan-shaped, and eonsist of a system of blind tubules situated on a branched efferent duct. The cells of the ovary (primitive eggs) have a sharp contour and a large nucleus; the yolk-gland

(y.g.) is very similar to the ovaries, behind and between which it is situated, but is distinguished by various histological details (it is called “ovary” by Moniez). The shell-gland, formerly regarded as the ovary, consists of closely compressed nucleated cells, and is provided with small thin duets opening into the narrow internal cavity of the organ. The uterus (wt.), in its early stage of development, is a long straight tube, lying almost in the longitudinal axis of the proglottis, and receiving posteriorly the oviduct after it emerges from the shell-gland (fig. 1, E, wé.). From what has been said it will appear that the ova on their way down the common oviduct are impregnated as they pass the end of the fertilizing canal, and then receive in succession, first their supply of food-yolk and their shell, during their sojourn in Mehlis’s body, after which they go forwards into the uterus, where they undergo the first stages of their development. The uterus assumes a very different shape as it becomes distended with eggs, which are far too numerous to be contained in a simple straight tube; small] protuberances arise from its walls, growing rapidly and bifurcating here and there, so as to produce the complicated branched appearance seen in fig, 1, F. As the uterus grows, the male, and later the female, genitalia degenerate and disappear, and in the proglottides which are ready to be liberated the only organ visible is the distended uterus. One of the most characteristic peculiarities in the sexual system just de- scribed is that there is no passage by which the ripe eggs can make their exit from the proglottis; these are therefore extruded only on its rupture; a very different state of things obtains in the genns Bothriocephalus (see below). Self-impregnation certainly occurs, and is probably the rule; it is obvious that the contrary case can only happen where two individuals lie side by side within the same host. Furthermore, the cirrus has been seen protruded into the vagina of the same joint, and the emission of sperm has been witnessed (Leuckart, 1; Van Beneden, 18, p. 601).

The eggs are ovoid or spherical, and consist of the germ-cell (nucleus and protoplasm) with an albuminous enveloping substance, which is again surrounded by a thin transparent skin. The shell frequently presents one or more appendages, probably the secretion of the shell-gland drawn out into threads. The structure of the ege has been best studied in Tania serrata (Van Beneden, 14), where it consists of a delicate shell containing a germ-cell, with a quantity of secondary yolk; the former divides into a ‘‘ granular”

cell, which segments no further, and an “embryonic” globe, which again divides into a number of cells, of which three are larger and constitute the ‘‘albuminogenous layer,” whilst the remainder are smaller and form the “embryonie mass,’”’ and secrete a delicate superficial cuticle, the cell-limits being indistinct. In the embry- onic mass from three to five flattened cells form a chitinogenous layer, and give origin to a superficial homogeneous coat, a shell of radially disposed chitinoid cylinders, and an internal faintly striated lining, whilst the remaining cells become the six-hooked einbryo or proscolex, a superficial layer to which the hooks belong, and a central mass of clearer cells. When the proscolex is mature the original egg-shell and the albuminogenous layer disappear, and only the chitinoid coats remain.

The proglottides are cast off by muscular action ; the fibres are not continuous between the successive segments, so that these are con- nected merely bysoft connective tissue, which readily gives way; the

o2

rupture takes place through the transverse vessel above described, and, as the hinder margin of the proglottis contracts forcibly when the next one has left it, the transverse vessel gives rise to the rounded vesicle which forms the termination of the excretory system.

Life-History and Development.

The six-hooked embryo (fig. 1, G) may be conveyed to the inter- mediate host in several ways, but the commonest is for it to be taken into the alimentary eanal along with food to which it may have adhered, or with water in which it was swimming ; the infection may take place either by means of free eggs or by whole proglot- tides. In the latter ease the soft tissnes are first digested by the gastric juice of the host, and in either case the egg-shell is dissol ved or rendered so brittle that the embryo readily escapes by the move- ments of its hooks. The proscolex, after spending a longer or shorter time free in the stomach or intestine, proceeds to perforate the wall of these organs by means of active burrowing motions. Although the embryo of a Tenia has only once been captured in its progress through the wall of the alimentary canal (Raum, 15, p. 28), there can be no doubt that this is the route by which it usually procceds, and that its next locality

is a blood-vessel, probably some small branch of the portal vein, in the blood of which it has been found by more than one observer. This would explain the frequency with which the next stage is found in the liver. There seems, however, reason to believe that many embryos penctrate the testinal wall completely and reach the body-cavity, in whieh they can wander freely. When the six-hooked embryo has reached its resting-place, which in addition to the liver may be lung, muscles, brain, connective tissue, or eye, it at once commences its further development, and in a few days becomes visible to the naked eye. Like any other foreign body, it causes a proliferation of cells, which in due time form a sheath of con- nective tissue, with a cellular lining, and smooth like a serous cavity within; this covering, however, is not found when the parasite is situated in the brain or the eye. The embryo now grows. in size, gencrally becoming somewhat elongated, and the hooks drop off. Sometimes they can be found lying detached in the connective-tissue sheath. The central cells enlarge and become elear, and in all the Tenie they liquefy, forming a quantity of fluid which fills the centre of the bladder-worm. At this stage the larve constitute the so-called ‘measles ” of beef (that of pork being due to Cysticercus cellulose, the immature stage of Tania solium) ; they are ovoid vesicles lying between the muscle fibres and varying in length from 4 to 8 mm. and being usually about 8 mm. in diameter (fig. 2, A). Ata point on one side of tlie bladder there appears a small thickening, the meniscus or rudiment of the future head ; this is soon followed by an invagination of the cuticle (fig. 2, B). When the rudimentary head thus formed is about 0°2 inm. in length (the bladder being 1°5 mm. in diameter) the forma- tiou of muscles in its walls commences. At four equidistant points near the bottom of the invagination the suckers are developed, and at the lowest part of the cavity the rostellum (and the double circlet of hooks in the armed species) is formed. Surrounding the head-rudiment on that surface which is towards the cavity of the bladder is a thin layer, kuown as the ‘‘receptacle.” This is best secn in Cysticercus ecllulose, in which there is also a very characteristic bend or kink in the pediele of invagination, which in most other bladder-worms remains straight (see fig. 2, C). The rudiments of the vascular system of the bladder have already appeared before the formation of the head, and now they extend into it as four longitudinal vessels, which become connected at the bottom of the invagination by a circular vessel. About this time, too, the cal- careous corpuscles above described make their

appearance. When the hooks and suckers are fully formed, the head undergocs a process of evagination, .so that what was previously a hollow cavity becomes a solid cylinder, and the hooks, which were below the suckers, eome to lie above them. Mature bladder-worms vary in size from Cysticercus fasciolaris, the size of a pea, to Cysteccreus tenutcollis, six inches or more in length.

The development into the adult tape-worm takes place only after the Cysticercus has been swallowed by the permanent or definitive host. The course of this metamorphosis has been followed experimentally, and it has been found that first the bladder and next the neck of the worm are dissolved by the gastric juice. The head only is left ; in the moist warmth of the intestine its suckers and rostellum exhibit very lively motions, which serve to bring about its attachment to the intestinal wall. It gradually increases in length, and the formation of segments speedily commences.

The life history of the Cestodes is generally summed up as con- sisting of three different forms:—(1) the proscolex, or six-hooked embryo, which gives rise to the bladder-worm ; (2) the scolex, which develops the chain or strobila by a process of budding ; and (8) the proglottis, or sexual animal, which produees eggs. Each of these three forms has certain claims to be regarded as a zoological “individual.” Van Beneden (18, Vers Int., p. 251) has laid great stress upon the correspondence between a Trematode and a ripe proglottis, and it has been since pointed out that a proglottis may

under favourable circumstances (that is, within the intestine) con- tinue to grow after being detached from the parent chain; it cannot _ be said, however, that the evidence upon which this rests is quite incontrovertible. Regarded from this point of view the life-history

Fig. 2.—Development of Twnia (from Leuekart). A, Cysticercus bovis in beef; nat. size. B, invaginated head of a Cysticercus before the formation of the suekers; X 25. C, invaginated head of Cysticercus cellulose, showing the bent neck and receptacle r; x 30. D, stages in the development of the

brood- cupsules in Echinococcus: a, the thickening of the parenchyma of the bladder; b, subsequent formation of a cavity in it; c, development of the sueker's ; d, a capsule with one head inverted into its eavity; e, a eapsule with two heads; x 90,

of the tape-worms furnishes an admirable instance of the alterna- tion of generations, The individuality of the proglottides, however, although maintained by authorities so eminent as Leuckart, is by no means universally accepted ; a distinction has been drawn be- tween their formation and true budding seen in other animal colonies, such as the Polyzoa; and Riehm, in a recent work (12), has pointed out that the casting-off of these sexual segments is in some respects eomparable to the detachment of the hectocotylized arm of a Cephalopod, and the formation of new joints to the de- velopment of an Oligochztous worm from a few segments; further- nore, eertain organs—for example, the nervous and excretory systems—are continuous throughout the whole chain, and an isolated proglottis is unable to maintain its existence for more than a very limited period. According to this view, alternation of generations only occurs in Cestodes in forms such as Cenwrus, where there is a proliferation of heads in the wall of the bladder.

The Cestode larve corresponding to the stage which has just been described present considerable variations both in form and struc- ture, and upon these classifications of the group have been based, and generic names have been given to the different forms; Von Lin- stow (36) has, however, pointed out the undesirableness of this, as they are all parts of the life-history of one genus, 7wnia. The most recent arrangement is that of Villot (16), whieh is as follows :—

I. The caudal bladder arises from the proscolex by simple growth and structural modification, without the formation of any new parts. A larger or smaller quantity of fluid is present, and also a connective-tissue sheath; the host is a vertebrate. Cysticercus (true bladder-worms), Piestocystis, Cenurus, Echinococcus.

II. The caudal bladder arises from the proscolex by budding, that is, by the formation of new parts; there is no connective-tissue sheath, and the host is an invertebrate. Cysticercoidei, Leuckart. (a) Caudal bladder formed by

endogenous budding; the head is surrounded, not only by the body of the worm and the caudal bladder, but also by the blastogen (proseolex). Polycercus (from the earthworm), Monocercus (from the black slug, Arion). (b) Caudal bladder formed by exogenous budding; the head is only surrounded by the body of the worm and the caudal bladder. Cercocystis (from Tenebrio), Staphylocystis, Urocystis, Cryptocystis. ;

Of these the most important are the first group, and regarding some of them a few words must be added. In the great majority of species only one tape-worm head is produced, and such bladder- worms constituted the genus Cysticereus of the older helmintho- logists. In eertain cases, however, notably in the worm which produces the “staggers” of sheep, numerous heads are formed in the wall of each bladder ; such larve formed the genus Cenurus, but apart from their polyccphalous condition there are no structural peculiarities calling for special notice. The third variety of bladder-

1 At the moment of going to press, Grassi (Zeitschr. J. Parasitenk., ii. 11) makes the important communication that ZJania murina (=T. nana) may develop without un intermediate host.

worm (Echinococcus) is characterized by the fact that the tape-worm heads are not directly developed in the wall of the bladder itself, but from “ brood capsules” which lie in numbers on the inner wall of the bladder.

Development of the Echinococcus.—The smallest bladder yet seen was reared by Leuckart in the pig, and consisted of a minute proto- plasmic mass surronnded by a structureless cuticle. This cuticle thickens by deposition of new layers as growth proceeds, and the lamination of the cuticle is one of the characteristic peculiarities of the Echinococcus, another being the absence of an excretory system. At certain points in the parenchyma lining the cyst small warts are noticed (fig. 2, D,a), which enlarge and become hollow ; then the cavity enlarges in a direction opposite to the point of origin, and at the extremity of this hollow suckers and hooks are formed as in the case of Cysticercus described above (3, c). No sooner has the devel- opment of the first of these reached a certain degree of completeness than others are formed in similar fashion. The first part of the invagination takes place, by which the future head comes to lie | within the

brood-capsule and the pedicle is no longer hollow but solid ©; the suckers and hooks are, however, still invaginated, and remain so for a considerable period. Seeing that the interior of the brood-capsule is lined with cuticle, it corresponds to the outside of the parent cyst, aud hence is probably the representative of a previous invagination. If this be so then the development of Echinococcus would be quite comparable with that of Cysticercus, the only difference being that, instead of the head being an inva- gination of the wall of the cyst itself, it is a secondary invagina- tion, the primary being the brood-capsule. This does not, however,) exhaust the peculiarities of the Zchinococcus; the form just de-) scribed, with a simple cyst and brood-capsules, is common in cattle, and hence goes by the name of Echinococcus veterinorum ; but cases are frequent, and are the most common in the human subject, in which the cyst contains daughter-vesicles, differing from those just described in being sterile—giving rise to no heads. These daughter-bladders may originate in three different ways : (1) from little granular heaps, which are seen between the different layers of the cuticle, and which are probably derived primarily from _ the parenchymal layer,—since new layers of cuticle are continually formed internally, these bladders gradually make their way out- wards, until they come to lie externally to the mother-vesicle (Echinococcus exogena, Kuhn; £. scoleciparicns, Kiichenmeister) ; | (2) from brood-capsules ; (3) from Zehinococcus-heads ; these last two modes of developinent give rise to vesicles, which are within the mother-vesicle, and produce a form which has been variously called | Echinococcus endogena, Kuhn, £. altricipariens, Kiichenmeister, and #. hydatidosus. A very remarkable form is Lchinococcus multilocularis, which consists of a number of very small vesicles embedded in a common soft stroma; it is found exclusively in man, and for long was regarded as a form of alveolar cancer. The mode of its development is unknown (for further information, see Virchow, 17). Compound bladders occur in man and the ox, | whilst other ruminants, swine, and monkeys usually harbour the simple or exogenous forms. ‘The organs most often affected are liver and lungs. The adult tape-worm (TZ. cchinococcus) is found ‘ in the intestine of the dog, jackal, and wolf, occurring in consider- _ able numbers between the villi. Its length (fig. 38, A) is at most 5 mm. and it consists of only three or four segments; the head has four suckers and a double circlet of hooks.

Pathological Effects.

The pathological effects of Cestodes fall naturally into two categories—(1) those due to the adult worm, and (2) those due to the larve or bladder worms.

(1) Those of the first group are in general slight, being confined to the abstraction of a certain amount of nutri- ment, and to a more or less acute feeling of irritation, | sometimes amounting even to colic-like pains, in the intestine. There have indeed been many authorities who _ have maintained that they were beneficial; Jérdens went so far as to describe them as the good angels and unfailing _ helpers of children, and Schimper records that the Abys- | sinians consider that they prevent constipation, and only | regard them as disadvantageous when they grow too long, | Notwithstanding all this, however, there are not a few cases on record in which anzmia and neurotic, or even | mental, diseases have been caused by the malnutrition | and irritation which they occasion.!

1 The method of treatment for the removal of these tape-worms from the human body consists in the administration, first of purgatives, and thereafter of one or other of the following anthelmintics:—tur- pentine, male fern (Lastrea Filix-mas), pomegranate, or kousso,—of

TAP E-WORMS

5d

(2) The effects of Cestode larve may again be divided into two subdivisions. (a) That due to the invasion and wandering of a large brood of six-hooked embryos has been most successfully studied in cases in which animals have been fed for experimental purposes with fragments of ripe tape-worms ; in such instances a train of symptoms has been observed to which the name “acute cestodic tuberculosis” has been given. It is characterized by loss of appetite, fatigue, ruffling of the hair, and fever ; on post-mortem examination it has been found that the lymphatic system is in a state of inflammation, while the niuscles present the appearance which has already been described. (b) The effects of formed bladder-worms may be summed up as dependent upon the pressure of the growing cyst and the consequent absorption of the sur- rounding tissues of the host, so that the importance of the results depends almost entirely upon the organ which is

affected. Bladder-worms in the brain are, of course, the most frequently fatal, especially when, as is not unfre- quently the case, they exert pressure upon the ganglia at its base. Ktichenmeister has collected a considerable number of occurrences of cystic worms in the brain ; among these sixteen were not accompanied by pathological symptoms during life; in six others these were slight; twenty-four were cases of epilepsy, six of crainp, forty-two of paralysis, and twenty-three of mental disturbances of varying intensity. Cysticerci in the brain vary greatly in size and form according to the precise situation which they occupy; in its ventricles they have been found as large as a pigeon's egg. In the meshes of the arachnoid the bladder sometimes grows into a remarkably branched structure, which has been called Cysticercus racemosus by Zenker (3). Another peculiar form from the same organ has been described by Koberlé (4); it is characterized by the great length of its head-process (2 cm.), which is coiled up into a regular spiral of sometimes three turns; it has received the name Cysticercus turbinatus, though its specific distinctness is doubtful. The occurrence of Cysticerct in the eye is of special interest, because of the opportunity it affords of observing, by means of the ophthalmoscope, the development of the worm in its natural environment. It seems generally to lie at first below the retina, and is visible as a bluish-white sharply defined body; subse- quently the retina is destroyed by the pressure, and the worm falls forward into the vitreous body; sometimes the head may be seen protruding first through the opening ; in the chambers of the eye the Cystecercus is almost always free, that is, without a capsule, and swimming in the fluid, so that its form and motions may be readily and accurately observed. A large number of cases of this affection have been recorded, principally by Von Graefe in Berlin (5), and in some the bladder has been successfully removed by operation.

The special symptoms of the Echinococcus vary, like those of other bladder-worms, with its situation and size: when it grows within cavities with more or less firm limits compression of adjoining vessels and glandular passages often results, producing cedema, varicose veins, congestion of various organs, or even dyspneea, if the parasite occur in the thorax. The liver is its most frequent seat, and next the Inng; but there is scarcely any organ of the body in which it has not been found, even the

bones being sometimes affected. Since the expanding cyst grows in the direction of least resistance, it has a tendency to pass

which the first two are the most reliable. Turpentine may be given in half-ounce doses along with eastor oil, or made up into an emulsion with yolk of egg; while the male fern is usually administered in the form of liquid extract (half a drachm to one drachm). Careful search should be made in the evacuations for the head or scolex, without the expulsion of which there is no certain evidence that the parasite has been removed from the body.

o4

towards the surface of organs, and sometimes a cure is effected spontaneously by its rupturing into the alimentary canal or into some other passage leading to the exterior. Cases in which the cyst opens into the blood-vessels are

Fig. 3,.—Various Forms of Tape-Worms. Leuckart). B, Archigetes sieboldi; fypus; xX 10 (from Van Beneden), (from Carus). ;

almost always suddenly fatal. occurs near the surface of the body, it may be evacuated by puncture and a cure effected with but little risk.

A, Tenia echinococcus; x 12 (from x_60(from Leuckart). (©, Echinobothrium D, Caryophyllzus mutabilis: x about 5

Systematic Arrangement of the Cestoda.

The following classification of the Cestodes, based mainly on that of Van Beneden, exhibits the present state of our knowledge of the group :—

Class Cestoda.

Family I. Amphilinide.—Body oval, flattened, with a sucker at the anterior extremity; testes vesicular, vas deferens opening posteriorly; ovary (germarium) single, yolk glands double, vagina opening near the vas deferens, uterus opening anteriorly; embryo ciliated in front and with ten

hooks. Examples: Amphilina, Wagener (see below), Amphiptyches, Wagener.

Family IL. Caryophyllxide.—Body unsegmented, flat, extended ; head expanded, bilobed, and without hooks ; a single set of sexual organs in the hinder portion ; development probably a simplified metamorphosis. Example: Caryophylleus mutabilis, from the intestine of Cyprinoid fishes (fig. 3, D).

Family III. Psewdophyllide.—Head provided with two sueking grooves ; proglottides not always well defined; a uterine aperture always present in addition to the openings of the vas deferens and vagina; embryo always (?) with a ciliated coat, and egg-shell with an operculum. Examples: Bothrio-cephalus (see below), Trizenophorus (= Tricuspidaria), Soleno- phorus, Schistocephalus, Ligula, Archigetes, and perhaps Duthiersia (see below).

Family 4V. Diphyllide.—Neek and two suckers armed with hooks. Example: Eehinobothrium, two species known from Selachians, one immature from a molluse (fig. 3, C).

Family V. Tetrarhynchide.—Head provided with four suckers and four protractile proboscides armed with hooks ; sexual openings marginal. Example: Letrarhynchus (see below), about forty species known, many only described from im- mature forms,

Family VI. Tetraphyllidw.—Head with four very mobile and distinet suckers, which are often armed with hooks or ehitinous rods ; body segmented, proglottides cast off when mature ; sexual openings marginal.

Subfamily i. Phyllobothrinz. —Suckers without hooks or spines. Examples: Echeneibothrium, Phyllobothrium, Anthoboth- rium, a few species of each, all from Elasmobranch fishes.

Subfamily ii. Phyllacanthine.—Suckers each with two to four hooks. Examples: Cailiobothrium, Onchobothrium, Acan- thobothrium, two or three species of each genus known from Selachians,

TAPE-WORMS

When the Echinococcus (i

Family VII. Teniad#.—Head furnished with four suckers and often with a single or double circlet of hooks >. proglottideg well-defined and cast off when mature; no uterine aperture, Example: Tenia (see below). 4

It seems advisable to add a few details regarding some of the forms alluded to in the above synopsis, :

Amphilina foliacea, described as a found in the body-cavity of the sturgeon. glands open into the sucker, and are surrounded by the museleg of that organ; the nervous system consists of two ganglia, wit} a commissure, and two lateral nerves ; those of Bothriocephalus, the female those of the Trematodes ; family is generally regarded as furnishing a connecting link be tween the Cestoda and Trematoda ; see Salensky (18) and Lang (7),

- V.0. € Chi ORs 1 Ul 4 f Ae S24. 00% 0) BY ee | JE PeGee [or eel os * F 6 ‘Ks jeoe oy 9 6 ; Fae 260 “gh . Daal. i Eran fe

09.9,0,

eet aan OGBaRR Poo: seers ‘ ovarce! Foo sear

:

SS! x

; <8

iN

Pose SSo0 f oS)

pave

4

‘6 5 H [Th T iii Rabbecese 8S: : ach. gd Pets canes ated fof Cee bat: 5 aH Sao Cisne eo OE WOOP D202 OS ps 0920877 k Mepesuiehsorasce Ue on

aye Sesser sence si, cotacuNE ov.

D

Fic. 4.—Bothriocephalide. A, A segment of Bothriocephalus latus, showing the generative organs from the ventral surface ; ez., excretory vessels; ¢, cirrus; ¢.p., cirrus pouch ; v.d., vas deferens; v.0., vaginal opening; v, vagina; sh.g., shell-gland ; od., oviduct; ov., ovary ; y.g., yolk-gland ; y.@., itsduct; wf., uterus; u.o., uterine opening; the testes are not visible from this side; x 23 (from Sommer and Landois). B,C, marginal and lateral views of the anterior part of B. cordatus, showing the cephalic grooves; x 5 (from Leuckart), D, Ciliated embryo of B. latus ; x 60 (from Leuckart).

Bothriocephalus latus (82) is the most conspicuous example of the family Psewdophyllide, and is, moreover, noteworthy as being the largest tape-worm found in man; its length often reaches 8 to 9 metres, and its extreme breadth 10 to 12 mm. The head bears two grooves, which eorrespond in position with the flat sides of the body. There are two (more correctly three) genital openings, — which are situated, not on the margin but on the flat side of the body, on that surface which is usually called the ventral. The most anterior of these is the male aperture (fig. 4, A, ¢.), and im- mediately behind it is that of the vagina (v.0.), so close that on superficial examination the two often seem to coincide. This vaginal opening, like that of the Teniadw, serves for the intromission of the penis and for the fertilization of the ova, but not for the exit of the ripe eggs; this being provided for by a special aperture at the other end of the uterus from that at which the eggs enter it. This uterine opening (w.0.) is situated at a short distance behind the other two. The result of this arrangement is that the eggs call be evacuated without any injury to the proglottis, and consequently their discharge commences before its separation from the parent worn) and may continue for a long period. The uterus (ut.) itself, owing to its disposition in folded coils, when full of eggs, presents an irregular, round, lobular appearance, which has been compared to a flower or heraldic lily. The yolk-gland (y.g.) is widely dis-_ seminated in the lateral areas of the segments, and its ducts (y.d.) form a series of branching tubules, first described by Eschrieht (27) under the name ‘yellow ducts.” The excretory organs (ez.) differ from those of the Teniade in that the canals exhibit a retieu- late arrangement. The

embryo (fig. 4, D) as it leaves the egg is covered with a ciliated mantle, which corresponds to the firm egg- shell and associated membrane of the cystic tape-worms, and per- haps also to the ciliated envelope of certain Trematode larve (see TREMATODA). This eiliated organism swims freely about in the water, but after a time the six-hooked proscolex escapes from it. The next stage in its life-history is not yet known, but it has been recently shown by Braun of Dorpat (38) that at a subsequent stage it inhabits the pike and burbot, and develops into the sexual adult when transferred to the intestine of the human subject. The geographical distribution of Bothriocephalus is limited; it has been recorded with certainty in but few places outside Europe; while within that continent the coasts of the Baltic aud Switzerland are

the principal localities; it is widely distributed in Russia, and has been recorded from Poland, Denmark, Germany, as well as from France and Britain, though it is possible that the cases occurring in these latter countries have been due to importation, The genus Ligula has the segmentation obscure or indistinguish- able. About six species are known. One is found encapsuled in a monkey, one in the’common seal, others in reptiles and teleosteans. Archigetes sieboldi (fig. 3, B) occurs in the body-cavity of an Oligochetous worm (Tubifex rivulorum); it is about 3 mm. long, and consists of an oval body (scolex), to which is attached a cylin- drical tail (proscolex), bearing at the posterior extremity three

airs of hooks; both these parts are capable of motion. ‘The scolex Has eight longitudinal excretory canals, and a terminal vesicle; the ventrally situated genital aperture is the common exit of the vas deferens, the vagina, and a uterus separate from the latter, the development is direct, and it attains sexual maturity without a change of host. Duthiersia, Perrier (34), contains two species, both from the intestines of varanian lizards. The genus is characterized by the presence of two large compressed frilled suckers, separated by a septum and perforated at their bases. The proglottides have three genital apertures resembling those of Bothriocephalus.

Fie. 5,—Tetrarhynchus. A, General view of the worm; x 4. B, head showing the suckers, proboscides, and excretory canals; x 25, C, portion of a pro-

boscis showing the two forms of hooks; highly magnified. (Ali from Pintner.)

The genus Tetrarhynchus was, a few years ago, made the subject ‘of an elaborate memoir by Pintner (9), who investigated 7. longi- collis, V. Ben. The head, in which its most striking anatomical peculiarities are situated, really includes both the head and neck of previous authors (fig. 5, A); it is some 9°94 mmm. long, but only (0°75 mm. in diameter, and bears at its anterior end two obliquely placed oval disks (fig. 5, B), each of which is perforated towards the apex by two round holes through which the four proboscides pro- jtrude. Each of these disks, moreover, shows traces of a division into two, a fact which indicates that it is formed by the fusion of two suckers corresponding to those commonly found in tape-worms. The flattening in this genus seems to be in a direction at right angles to that in which it usually takes place. The proboscides, which are the most characteristic organs of the genus, are four in number, and protrude from or can be retracted into the anterior urface of the head. Each consists of three parts:—(1) the toothed portion is the most anterior; it is shaped like a long narrow glove- finger, like which it is invaginable; on its external surface it bears rows of hooks, closely set in diagonal lines (fig. 5, C); there jare two forms of these: those which are directed outwards are large triangular hooks, with apices pointing backwards, whilst those situated on that surface of the proboscis which is turned towards the other proboscides are fine, delicate, and curved; between the hooks are fine chitinous hairs; (2) the membranous sheath is firmly attached where the general surface of the body ‘passes over into the toothed portion around the orifice of the Anvagination ; it consists of a thick homogeneous transparent skin, apparently an excretion of cells lining the cavity of the pro- oscis; (3) the muscular portion is the most posterior of all, and is composed of six layers, remarkable as containing striped muscular) fibres ; throughout all these three portions of the proboscis there extends a retractor muscle. The action of these various structures [1s not thoroughly understood, but it is probable that the proboscis is)protruded by the action of the last-named muscular sheath, whilst it 1s retracted, after the relaxation of this, partly by the retractor muscle and partly by the pressure of the surrounding medium.

The family Teniad@# is usually described as containing only the

one geuus Tenia, but, owing to the number and variety of its species, of which more than 350 have been described, it has been subdivided into gronps, regarded by different authors as genera or subgenera, The subjoined arrangement is mainly that of Leuckart. It labours under the disadvantage that its chief divisions are based upon the bladder-worm or larval stage, which is only known in the case of comparatively few species.

I. Cystici (cystic tape-worms).—Head rarely unarmed; usually provided with a rostellum and with one or more rows of hooks ; proglottides longish oval when mature ; uterus with median stem and lateral branches; the larva has a caudal bladder containing fluid.

1. Cystotenia, Leuckart.—The head arises in the wall of the embryonic bladder.

a. Tenia saginata, Goze.—Without hooks (= 7. medio- canellata, Kiichenmeister,=genus Teniarhynchus, Weinland).

b. Tenia soliwm, Rudolphi.—Head with a double circlet of hooks.

ce. Tenia acanthotrias, Weinland.—Head with a triple circlet of hooks (=genus Acanthotrias, Weinland).

2. Echinococcifer, Weinland.—The heads arise in special brood-capsules. Tenia echinococeus, V. Siebold.

II. Cystoidet (ordinary tape-worms).—The larva has no distended

caudal bladder containing fluid.

1. Hymenolepis, Weinland.—Proboscis with a single row of smallhooks. Tenia nana, V. Siebold, 7. favopunctata, Weinland.

2. Dipylidiwm, Leuckart.—Head with several rows of hooks, each with a discoidal base; a right and left set of genital organs in each joint, the uterus,

however, being single and common to the two, Tenia cucwmerina, Rudolphi (= 7. edliptica, Batsch),

Haniann (2) has recently proposed a new genus, Ptychophysa, for Tenia lineata, Goze, which is defined by the following characters :—(1) the porus genitalis is on the surface and not on the inargin of the joints ; (2) the vaginal opening is anterior to that of the cirrus ; (8) at a certain period the uterus is convoluted ; (4) there is a peculiar shell-gland. In many of these characters the species shows a resemblance to the Bothriocephalide.

Occurrence in Man.—The Cestodes which in the adult state infest man, with their corresponding larve and temporary hosts, are as follows :—

Tenia saginata. Cysticercus bovis, Ox.

TZ’. solium. C. cellulose. Pig, man. T. nana. (?) 3

7. flavopunctata. (%) (?)

T. madagascartensts. (2) (?)

T. cucumerina. C.T cucumcring. Trichodectes canis.

Bothrioccphalus latus. Pike, burbot. B. cristatus, (?) B. cordatus. Fish (?)

Other species, however, inhabit the human body in their larval condition ; a list of them, with the corresponding adult forms and permanent hosts, is subjoined :—

Cysticercus cellulose. Teznia solium. Man.

C. acanthotrias. T. acanthotrias (incog.) —_(?)

C. tenwicollis. T. marginata. Dog, wolf. Echinococcus, T. echinococcus. Dog.

Phylogeny.—There can be no doubt that the Cestodes and Tre- matodes are intimately related and have sprung from a common ancestor ; there are so many structural peculiarities in which they agree (compare

TREMATODES), and they are connected by so many intermediate forms, that their affinity can admit of no doubt. According to Leuckart, the original ancestor of both was probably allied to the Planarians, while Huxley (22, pp. 218, 676) points out that it is at all events possible that they have no connexion with free forms but have always been anenterous, and in fact are nothing but “ gigantic morulz, so to speak, which have never passed through the gastrula stage.”

Bibliography.—{1) Leuckart, Die Parasiten des Menschen, Leipsjc, 1863-76 ; 2d ed.. 1879-86; Eng. transl., Tae Parasites of Man, 8vo, Edinburgh, 1850. (2) Hamann, Zetischr, f. wiss, Zool., xlii., 1885. (8) Zenker, in Ziemssen’s Cyclop. of Prac. Med., iii, (4) Koberlé, Des Cysticerques des Tenias de I’ Homme, Paris, 1861. (5) Graefe, Archiv f. Ophthalmologie, xii., 1874. (6) Niemiec, Rec. Zool. Suisse, ii., 1885. (7) Lang, Mitth. Zool. Stat. Neapel, ii., 1881. (8) Fraipont, Archives de Biol., i., 1880, ii.,1881. (9) Pintner, Ard. Zool. Inst., iii., Vienna, 1881. (10) Steudener, Abhandl, naturf. Gesellsch., xiii., Halle, 1877. (11) Wagener, Nova Acta Cxs, Leop.~~Carol. Acad., xxiv., Suppl., 1854. (12) Riehm, Correspbl. d. naturw. Ver. f. Sachsen u, Thiiringen, 1882. (13) P. J. Van Beneden, “ Vers Cestoides,” Afém. Acad. Bruxelles. xxv., 1851, and “ Vers Intestinaux,” Conpies Rendus, Paris, Suppl., ii., 1861. (14) Ed. Van Beneden, Archives de Biol., ii., 1881. (15) Raum, Beitr, zur Entwickelungs~~ gesch. der Cysticercen, Dorpat, 1883. (16) Villot, Rev, Sci. Nat. Montpellier, Sept. 1882, 1883. (17) Virchow, Verhandl. Wurzb. phys.-med. Geselisch., vi., 1856. (18) Salensky, Zeitschr. f. wiss. Zool., xxiv., 1874. (19) Pallas, Veue nordische Betirdge, i., ii., 1781. (20) Diesing. Systema Helminthum, 8vo, Vienna, 1850, (21) Linstow, Comp. der IHelminthologie, 8vo, Hanover, 1878, (22) Huxley, Anat. Invertebdr. Anim., 8vo, London, 1877. (23) Plater, Opus Praxeos Medicx, 1601, (24) Andry, An Account of the Breeding of Worms in Human Bodies, 8vo, London, 1701 (transl.). (25) Bremser, Ueber lebende Wurmer im lebenden Menschen, 4to,

Vienna, 1819. (26) Burdach’s Physiologie, ii., Leipsic, 1838. (27) Eschricht, Nova | Acta Ces. Leop.~~Carol. Acad., xix., Suppl., 1841. (28) Steenstrup, On the Alterna~~ tion of Generations, Ray Society, 8vo, London, 1845, (29)

Kiichenmeister, | Antmal Parasites. Sydenham Society, 8vo, London, 1857; new German ed., Leipsic, 1880-81. (30) Linstow, Archiv 7. Naturgesch., 1872 sq. (31) Sommer, Zettschr. f. wiss. Zool., xxiv., 1874. (32) Sommer and Landois, op. cit., xxii., 1872. (83) Braun, Zur Entwickelungsgesch. des breiten Bandwurmes, Wiirz- burg, 1883. (84) Perrier, Arch. de Zool. Exper. ii,, 1873. (85) Rudotphi, Entozoorum Hist. Nat., 8vo, Amsterdam, 1808. (36) Linstow, Arch. f. Natur- gesch,; 1886, p. 113. For a concise account of the comparative anatomy and copious bibliography, sec Jackson, in Rolleston's Forms of Animal Life, 2d ed., Oxford, 1887. (W. E. HO.)

TAPIOCA is a farinaceous food substance prepared from cassava starch, the product of the large tuberous roots of the cassava or manioc plant, Manihot utilissima (Jatropha manthot), native of Brazil (see Cassava, vol. v. p. 182, and comp. Arrowroot, vol. ii. p. 631, fig. 6). Cassava starch, being separated from the fibrous and nitro- genous constituents of the roots, is in a moist condition spread upon iron plates, and with constant stirring exposed to such heat as causes a partial rupture of the starch granules, which agglomerate into irregular pellets, becoming hard and translucent when cooled. In this partly torrefied condition the starch forms the tapioca of commerce, a light, pleasant, and digestible food, much used in puddings and as a thickener for soups. The French prepare an artificial tapioca from potato starch, mixed with various vegetable substances, for use in soups, é&c., which is found in the market under such names as tapioca Crecy, tapioca Julienne, &c., according to the dried vegetables with which the preparations are made.

TAPIR. The general characters of the animals of the perissodactyle or odd-toed section of the hoofed mainmals are described under Mammatia, vol. xv. p. 427. This once numerous group is at present represented by only three rather isolated families, the Horses, Rhinoceroses, and Tapirs. The last of these have retained much more of the original characters of the primitive Ungulates of the Eocene period than the others, and have indeed remained practically almost unchanged since the Miocene period, while almost all other mammalian forms which existed then have either become extinct or undergone extensive modification, The tapirs constitute the single genus, Tapirus, of the family Tapiride.

The dentition is ¢ §, ¢ 4, p $, m 3; total 42. Of the upper incisors, the first and second are nearly equal, with short, broad crowns, the third is large and conical, considerably larger than the true canine, which is separated from it by an interval. Lower incisors diminishing in size from the first to the third; the canine, which is in contact with the third incisor, large and conical, working against (and behind) the canine-like third upper incisor. In both jaws there is a long interspace between the canines and the commencement of the teeth of the molar series, which are all in contact. First upper premolar with a triangular crown, narrow in front owing to the absence of the anterior inner cusp. The other upper premolars and molars all formed on the same plan and of nearly the same size, with four roots and quadrate crowns, rather wider transversely than from before backwards, each having four cusps, connected by a pair of transverse ridges, anterior and posterior. The first lower premolar compressed in front; the others composed of a simple pair of transverse crests, with a small anterior and posterior cingular ridge.

Skull clevated and compressed. Orbit and temporal fossa widely continuous, there being no true post-orbital process from the frontal bone, Anterior narial apertures very large, and extending high on the face between the orbits; nasal bones short, elevated, triangular, and pointed in front. Vertebre: C7, D18, L5, S$ 6, C about 12.° Limbs short and stout. Fore feet with four toes, having distinct hoofs: the first is absent, the third the longest, the second and fourth nearly equal, the fifth the shortest and scarcely reaching the ground in the ordinary standing position. Hind feet with the typical perissodactyle arrangement of three toes, —the middle one being the largest, the two others nearly equal. Nose and upper lip elongated into a flexible, mobile snout or short proboscis, near the end of which the nostrils are situated. Eyes rather small. Ears of moderate size, ovate, erect. Tail very short. Skin thick and but scantily covered with hair.

The existing species of tapir may be grouped into two sections, the distinctive characters of which are only

recognizable in the skeleton. (A) With a great anterior |

Tr AP—TAP

prolongation of the ossification of the nasal. septum (mesethmoid), extending in the adult far beyond the naga] bones, and supported and embraced at the base by ascend.

ing plates from the maxille (genus Elasmognathus, Gill), Two species, both from Central America, Tapirus baird; ‘ and 7. dowi. The former is found in Mexico, Honduras,

Nicaragua, Costa Rica, and Panama; the latter in ‘

American Tapir, from a living specimen in the London Zoological Gardens.

Guatemala, Nicaragua, and Costa Rica. (B) With ossifica- tion of the septum not extending farther forward than the nasal bones (Zapirus proper). Three species, 7’. indicus, the largest of the genus, from the Malay Peninsula (as far north as Tavoy and Mergui), Sumatra, and Borneo, distinguished by its peculiar coloration, the head, neck, fore and hind limbs being glossy black, and the intermediate part of the body white; 7. americanus (7’. terrestris, Linn.), the common tapir of the forests and lowlands of Brazil and Paraguay ; and 7’. roulini, the Pinchaque tapir of the high regions of the Andes. All the American species are of a nearly uniform dark brown or blackish colour when adult; but it is a curious circumstance that when young (and in this the Malay species conforms with the others) they are conspicuously marked with spots and longitudinal stripes of white or fawn colour ona darker ground.

The habits of all the kinds of tapirs appear to be very similar. They are solitary, nocturnal, shy, and inoffensive, chiefly frequenting the depths of shady forests and the neighbourhood of water, to which they frequently resort — for the purpose of bathing, and in which they often take refuge when pursued. They feed on various vegetable substances, as shoots of trees and bushes, buds, and leaves. They are hunted by the natives of the lands in which they live for the sake of their hides and flesh.

The singular fact of the existence of so closely allied animals as the Malayan and the American tapirs in such distant regions of the earth and in no intervening places is accounted for by what is known of the geological history of the race, for, if we may judge from the somewhat scanty remains

which have been preserved to our times, consisting chiefly of teeth, the tapirs must once have had a very wide distribution. the Eocene epoch, but in deposits of Miocene and Pliocene date remains undistinguishable generically and perhaps specifically from the modern tapirs (though named 7. priscus, T. arvernensis, &c.) have been found in France, Germany, and in the red crag of Suffolk. Tapirs appear,

There is no proof of their having lived in —

|

owever, to have become extinct in Europe before the Pleistocene period, as none of their bones or teeth have een found in any of the caves or alluvial deposits in which hose of elephants, rhinoceroses, and hippopotamuses occur in abundance; but in other regions their distribution at his age was far wider than at present, as they are known o have extended eastward to China (7'. sinensis, Owen) and westwards over the greater part of the southern United States of America, from South Carolina to Cali- fornia. Lund also distinguished two species or varieties from the caves of Brazil. Thus we have no difficulty in tracing the common origin in the Miocene tapirs of Europe of the now widely separated American and Asiatic species. It is, moreover, interesting to observe how very slight an amount of variation has taken place in forms isolated during such an enormous period of time. (W. H. F.) TAR is a product of the destructive distillation of organic substances. It is a highly complex material, vary- ing in its composition according to the nature of the body from which it is distilled,—different products, more- over, being obtained according to the temperature at which the process of distillation is carried on. As commercial products there are two principal classes of tar in use—(1) wood tar, the product of the special distillation of several varieties of wood, and (2) coal tar, which is primarily a \bye-product of the distillation of coal for the manufacture of illuminating gas. These tars are intimately related to the bitumen, asphalt, mineral pitch, and petroleum ob- tained in very many localities throughout the world.

Wood Tar.—Wood tar, known also as Stockholin and as Archangel tar, is principally prepared in the great pine forests of central and northern Russia,

Finland, and Sweden. The material chiefly employed is the resinous stools and roots of the Scotch fir (Pinus sylvestris) and the Siberian larch (Larix sibirica), with other less common fir-tree roots. A large amount of tar is also prepared from the roots of the swamp pine (P. australis) in North and South Carolina, Georgia, and Alabama, in the United States. In the distillation of wood a series of products, including gas, tar, pyroligneous acid and wood spirit, and ‘charcoal may be obtained, and any of these may be the primary object of the operation. When tar is the sub- stance sought, the ancient and crude method of working is lyet largely adopted in the north of Europe. The wood to be treated is closely piled up into a huge conical stack or pile on an elevated platform, the sole of which is covered ‘with clay and tiles. The sole slopes inwards from every side to the centre, where an opening communicates with a vaulted cavity under the elevated platform. The pile of wood is closely covered over with layers of turf and earth jor sand to a depth of several inches, but leaving at first

k

near the bottom numerous apertures for the admission of

air to promote ignition. The pile is ignited from below, and as the fire spreads through the heap the various apertures are closed up and a slow smouldering combus- tion goes on for some days till, by the sinking of the pile, ithe top of the stack falls in, and a bright flame springs ‘up at that point. About ten days after ignition tar first begins to flow, and it is at once collected into barrels. jAccording to the size of the pile, the distillation may continue several weeks, the tar secured amounting to about 17°5 per cent. of the wood operated on. In this “method several valuable products—the gas, the crude pyro- ‘igneous acid, and much charcoal—are lost or wasted; and

more economical process of treating the wood in closed | stills or retorts is now largely used in Russia, the gas evolved —

jserving as fuel under the retorts. The heavier tar pro- ducts of the distillation collect at the bottom of the retort, whence they are carried off by a pipe toa receiver; the volatile portion passes off at the upper part of the retort, |

and is separately condensed, the lightest portion passing through a worm condenser. From treatment in close retorts resinous roots yield from 16 to 20 per cent. of tar, with some oil of turpentine and pyroligneous acid.

Wood tar is a semi-fluid substance, of a dark ~~brown or black colour, with a strong pungent odour and a sharp taste. Owing to the presence of acetic (pyrolignéous) acid, which is a collateral product, it has an acid reaction ; it is soluble in that acid, as well as in alcohol and the fixed and essential oils, &c. 'Tar consists essentially of a mixture of homologous hydrocarbons, and by redistillation it can be fractionated into a series of bodies having fixed boiling points. Some varieties of tar have a granular appear~~ ance, from the presence of minute crystals of pyrocatechin, which dissolve and disappear on heating the substance. Pyrocatechin dissolves freely in water, and to it the tar water (liquor picts) of pharmacy probably owes its value.

Crude tar from retorts, when submitted to redistillation, gives off wood spirit (methyl-alcohol), and then acetic (pyroligneous) acid, and finally, on forcing the heat, pitch oil is driven off. The residuum left in the still hardens into a solid vitreous mass, which forms the black pitch of commerce. 'Tar and pitch are most largely used as pro- tective coatings for woodwork and other materials much exposed to water and the weather. Thus tar is of great value in connexion with shipbuilding and shipping gene- rally. A considerable quantity is used in manufacturing tarred ropes, and in the "smearing" of highland sheep to afford a protection against the weather. Pitch also is the basis of the Berlin black or Brunswick black used for coat- ing cast-iron goods and for "'' japanning " preparations.

Coal Tar.—The art of distilling coal for the production of tar was discovered and patented by the earl of Dun- donald in 1787, and till the general introduction of coal gas some amount of coal was yearly distilled in Scotland for the production of coal tar. The demand for the sub- stance was limited, it being principally used for coating iron castings and smith work, for making an inferior lamp black, and as a source of a solvent oil. With the extensive use of coal gas the necessity for tliis separate distillation ceased, and soon tar was produced in the manu- facture of gas in quantities that could not be disposed of. It was burned up for heating gas-retorts; it was

mixed with coal dust, sawdust, &c., for making patent fuel ; and it was distilled for producing a series of hydrocarbon oils, heavy tar, and pitch; but it was only after the dis- covery and introduction of ‘ tar-colours” that the sub- stance came for some time to be really valuable. Since that time its price has fluctuated greatly; and in the United Kingdom alone there are now distilled annually about 10,000,000 tons of coal for gas-making, producing 120,000,000 gallons of crude tar,—a quantity greatly in excess of the ordinary demand.

If wood be distilled slowly at low temperatures, the gases consist chiefly of carbonic oxide and carbonic acid, mixed with only very little of carburetted hydrogens, and consequently little luminous on combustion; the watery part of the tar includes relatively much of methyl-alcohol, acetone, and acetic acid; the oily part of the tar (tar proper) has a certain proximate composition characteristic of this mode of distillation. Our present knowledge in regard to this last-named point is very incomplete; of definitc species the following have been discovered :—

0 Phenol, CgH; OH (synonym carbolic acid).

2) Cresol, (CgH,.CII3)0H.

(8) Phlorol, (CgH4.OH)C2H;.

(4) Pyrocatechine, (CgH4)(OH)2, one of three isomcridcs.

(5) Guaiacol, Celis { OGHy methyl-ester of No. 4. (6) Homo-pyrocatechine, { CgHs(CH;) }(OH)2. (©) Creosol, { Cotis(CTs) } OGir methyl-ester of No. 6. Genuine creosote consists of (1), (2), (5), and (7). In addition, there are numberless bodies which still await scientific definition. If the distillation of wood is carried out at a very high tempera- ture,—if, for instance, the wood is placed in a relatively large retort

previously brought up to a bright red heat and kept at such temperature, or if the vapours produced at a relatively low tempera- ture are passed through intensely heated pipes before reaching the condenser (Pettenkofer's method for producing illuminating gas from wood),—the gas produced contains a considerable admixture of luminiferous hydrocarbons, the proportions of niethyl-aleohol, acetone, and acetic acid get less, and the tar proper assumes more of the character of coal-gas tar (see below). Similar observations we make in the case of coal. About 1862 Wigan cannel eoal used to be distilled industrially at low temperatures to produce **lioht oils." Schorlemmer examined these and found them to consist chiefly of " paraffins" (see PARAFFIN) from C;H,. upwards. A similar result is obtained with ordinary coal, although in its case the "'"benzols" are more largely represented. If we distil any kind of coal at high temperatures—i.c., in the way customary for illumin-

ating-gas making—the distillable part of the tar proper consists —

chietly of benzene, C;H,, and benzene-derivatives, z.é., benzols, C.H,+2CH,; phenols, C,H,O, and homologues, (CgH;.nCH,)OH ; amido-bodies, CsH;NH, (aniline), and homologues; condensed benzols, such as naphthalene, C,,H,=2C,H, ~ C,H,; anthracene, C,,H,)=3C,H, — C,H, ; chrysene, C,,H,.= 4C 5H, — CgHy>, &c. The paraffins then becomé an altogether subordinate feature.

A great and meritorious research of Berthclot's has thrown con- siderable light on the chemical mechanism of dry distillation. As found by him, even the most complex of the substances named are producible by the interaction upon one another of a few bodies of very simple constitution, or evenone or other of these by the mere action of a high temperature. Tio give a few examples. Marsh- gas, CH,, when passed through red-hot tubes, yields olefines, C.H,, CgH,, C,Hs, &c., with elimination of hydrogen, H,. The same CH,, if subjected to a spark-current (i.¢., local application of intense heat), yields acetylene and hydrogen, 2CH,=C,H,+3H,, and the acetylene produced passes partly into benzene, CsHg= 30H. Ethylene, C,H, when passed through a porcelain tube kept at a moderate red heat, yields benzene, C,H,, styrolene=pheny]l- ethylene, C,H;.C,H;, naphthalene, -C,,H,, and perhaps also its hydride, Cy Hj). Acetylene, gua potential benzene, and

ethylene yield styrolene and hydrogen, C;H,+C,H,=C,H;.C,H,+H,; and styrolene plus ethylene yields hydrogen and naphthalene, CoH.

Benzol at a high temperature loses hydrogen, and, so to say, doubles up into di-phenyl, C,H; and this latter, when heated with ethylene, yields anthracene, C,4Hy, and hydrogen, C,.H)) + C,H, = C,H} 2H,. Conversely, hydrogen may, so to say, turn out its equivalent of a hydrocarbon ; thus, for instance, chrysene, CigHy. 2H, yields di-phenyl, C,,Hjo, + benzene, C,H,

Pyrogenic reactions generally are reversible; thus, any of the following three equations is correct, whether we read it from the left to the right or from the right to the left :—

(1) CoHg (ethane), at a red heat becomes CoHy+Hy.

(2) Cy2H19+CeHe=CigHj2+2H2.

(8) C1 4H 0-+2H,=2CgH_e+CeH,. Hence no single pyrogenic reaction goes to the end ; if it does not, so to say, check its own progress, other secondary reactions set in and do so, the general result being that ultimately, but in general slowly, a state of dynamic equilibrium is attained in which a set of synthetic reactions on the one hand and a set of analytic reactions on the other compensate one another.

Industrial Working of Coal Tar.1—Coal tar, as it eomes from the gas-works, is used for a variety of purposes, such as—(1) for fuel, the tar being made into a spray by means of a steam-injector and the spray kindled; (2) for the preservation of building materials, porous stones, and bricks, &c.; (3) for making roofing- felt (in 1868, five-sixths of the 9000 tons of tar produced at the Berlin gas-works was thus utilized ; the case, however, is different now) ; (4) for making a low quality of lamp-black. At present, however, most of the tar produced, in centres of industry at least, is worked up by distillation. The tar as it comes from the gas- works is allowed to rest in a “ pond” until the tar-water (solution chiefly of ammonia and certain ammonia salts) has gone to the top. The tar proper is then pumped into a large wrought-iron still (of upright-cylinder form preferably) and therein subjected to distilla-tion over a naked fire. A necessary preliminary, however, is the removal of the unavoidable remnant of water, which is best effected by cautiously

heating the tar in the still so as to render it more fluid and enable the water to rise to the top and then letting the upper stratum run out by an overflow tap at the side. The dis- tillation is then started. It involves the formation of two sets of volatile products, namely—(1) combustible gases (including sulphur- etted hydrogen and bisulphide of carbon vapour), which must be led away to avoid nuisance and danger of fire, and (2) a very complex liquid or semi-liquid distillate. This latter is collected in successive fractions, generally in this manner :—(1) as ‘‘ first runniugs,’”’ what comes over at temperatures below 105° to 110° Cs; (2) as ‘‘light oils,” at temperatures between 110° and 210° Che GS as ‘‘carbolic oil,” at temperatures between 210° to 240° C.; (4) as ie

1 For wood tar, see Woop Spirit and VINEGAR,

© 2 i

‘‘ereosote oil,” at temperatures between 240° to 270° anthracene oil, at temperatures above 270°.

In the earlier part of the “first runnings” and light-oil period the condenser must be kept cold ; towards the end it must be ke t warm to prevent choking by solidified naphthalene. In practice, the operator does not go entirely by the boiling point, but to q great extent by the specific gravity of the distillate, which, ip general, increases as the boiling point rises. As soon as a dro of the last runnings floats in water (exhibits the specific gravity 1), the ‘‘light oil” is supposed to be over. That the fractionation is not always and everywhere effected in the same way needs hard} be said. If the manufacture of carbolic acid is aimed at, it is best (according to Lunge) to select the fraction 170° to 230° C, for this purpose. Naphthalene boils as high as 217°, yet a deal goes into this earbolic-acid fraction. As soon as naphthalene begins to crystallize out largely (on cooling down a sample of distillate), the earbolic acid may be presumed to be over. What follows next is put aside as creosote oil, until, after the disappearance of the naphthalene, a new solid product, namely, anthracene, begins to show itself. With any tar that contains a remunerative proportion of anthracene, the anthracene oil is the most valuable of the pro- ducts, as the raw material for the making of artificial alizarins,

Supposing the anthracene to have been extracted as completely as practicable, the residue in the still consists of ‘hard pitch,” a viscid black fluid which on cooling freezes into a fragile solid, In former times more commonly than now “soft pitch ” used to be produced by leaving more or less of the anthracene oil and even creosote oil in the still. At the end of the anthracene stage of the distillation it is as well, if not necessary, to help the very high boiling vapour out of the still by means of superheated steam, and to keep the worm at 100° C. to prevent high te. At a German establishment a vacuum is used with great advantage.

We come now to explain briefly how the several fractions are worked up.

The pitch (which we assume to be “hard pitch”) must be run off hot through a tap at the bottom of the still and led into a low. roofed and well closed-in ‘‘ house,” because it would take fire in the open air. After it has cooled down sufficiently in the “ house,” the pitch is run into pitch-holes in front of the house and allowed to freeze there. The depth of pitch in a hole is about 12 inches, The solid pitch is hacked out with pickaxes and sent into commerce. A superior apparatus for the recovery of the pitch, which precludes all danger of conflagration and many inconveniences of the ordinary system, has been devised for the Paris gas-works by Regnault.? Lunge found, from many distillations, that tar from the midland counties yields about 55 per cent. of hard pitch.

Hard pitch is used chiefly for making the following. (1) Asphalt.—The pitch is fused up—perhaps in the still which pro- duced it—with the requisite proportion of creosote and anthracene oil, previously freed from their valuable components. Such asphalt is used for street-paving, ¢.¢., filling up the spaces between the paving-stones, and, in admixture with sand and generally more or less of natural asphalt, for the making of footpaths and floorings generally. In Germany it serves for the making of pipes for con- veying acid liquids in works and chemical laboratories, &c. End- less hemp-paper is soaked in liquefied asphalt and wound spirally around au iron core, previously smeared over with soft soap, in about 100 layers. The whole is then exposed to strong pressure while still hot, and is separated from the core after being allowed to cool. Such pipes stand almost any kind of acid, but they must not be used for hot liquids. (2) Varnishes.—The pitch

is dissolved in suitable tar oils,—creosote oil for a lower and light oil for a higher quality. (8) Coke.—In former times more frequently than now pitch was made into coke by transferring it to a special flat still and distilling as long as any volatile products came off, The coke which remains is a very pure and consequently valuable fuel. (4) Lamp Black (as a last resource, if no other mode of utilization is practicable).—The pitch is subjected to partial com- bustion on hot iron plates and the smoke conveyed into chambers to deposit its carbon. The yield is about 40 per cent.

Anthracene Oil.—The oil is allowed to stand cold for a week or so until the anthracene has crystallized out as completely as possible. The mother-liquor is then eliminated, the bulk by means of a filter-press, the rest, at a higher than the ordinary temperature, by hydraulic pressure. The crude product includes far more than half its weight of impurities—phenanthrene, paraftin, naphthalene, &c. T'o remove these as far as possible, the erude anthracene is ground up and treated with petroleum spirit (boiling at 70° to 100° C.) or coal tar naphtha (120° to 190°), in which real anthracene is relatively insoluble. The insoluble part is separated by filtering arrangements and _ presses (so constructed as to avoid danger of fire), and at last sublimed, more with the view of bring- ing it into a customary convenient form than with the object of effecting further purification. Such final anthracene may contain 50 to 65 per cent. of pure substance. The only reliable method for

2 It is described in Lunge's Treatise on the Distillation of Coal Tar, London, 1882, to which this article is largely indebted.

C.; (5)

jetermining its strength is to convert a known weight into anthra- uinone, C,H). by boiling it with a glacial acetic acid solution

of chromic acid, separating out the quinone by diluting with water, olleeting and weighing the product. One part of quinone corre-

sponds to 0°8558 of anthracene. — ee, ‘ ’

Creosote Oil is either used as it is for pickling timber, softening

f pitch, &c., or else redistilled to extraet from it what there is of

nthraeene oil and carbolic acid oil, which are worked up with the

ective principal quantitics.

ws seine this oil to have been collected (as it should ‘be if intended for the making of carbolic acid) between 170° and 930°, the process of extraction is, briefly, as follows. The oil is ‘mixed with a suitable proportion of caustic-soda ley (ascertained by an assay) in an iron vessel at 40° to 50°C. Charles Lowe recom: mends ley of 1°84 sp. gr., diluted with water to five times its volume. After settling, the aqueous layer is withdrawn into a lead-lined vessel, and the soda supersaturated by sulphuric acid. Crude carbolic acid rises to the top as an oil, and is withdrawn to ‘be sold as such or purified. See CARBOLIC ACID.

Naphthalene abounds in the oil left after extraction of the carbolic acid by caustic soda and in the more volatile fractions of the creosote oil. From these it separates out (not completely), on standing, in crystals. These are collected, best in a filter-press, and then subjected to hydraulic pressure to force out the rest of the mother-liquor. The crude naphthalene thus obtained contains an impurity which causes it to beeome red on standing in the air. To remove it, the crude product is mixed with 5 to 10 per cent. of vitriol of at least 1°7 sp. gr., at a moderate heat (addition of a little ‘ binoxide of manganese is an improvement, Lunge); it is then | washed, first with water, then with dilute alkali, and lastly again with water, to be ultimately distilled or sublimed. In the latter case it is obtained in the form of thin colourless plates of great beauty. It fuses at 80°C. and boils at 217° C. Naphthalene is used largely in the making of certain tar colours, such as Manchester yellow, C,,H,(NO,),, and the beautiful scarlets and crimsons made by the ‘‘farbwerke” in Hochst, Germany; these:latter are diazo- compounds derived from 8-naphthol, C,,H;(OH). Coal gas, if ‘impregnated at a suitable temperature with naphthalene vapour immediately before issuing from the burner, gains greatly in lumin- osity. This is the prineiple of the “albo-carbon” gas lamps.

First Runnings and Light Oil.—These may be said to include all the industrially valuable ‘‘benzols” (taking ‘“‘benzol” as a generic term for

benzol or benzene itself and its higher homologues, CsH,, CrHg, CgHi9, &e.). As the distiller in most cases does not aim at an actual separation of all the individual benzols from one) another, but at the production of certain benzol mixtures demanded by the trade, the mode of working may assume a great variety of forms; yet the first aim in all cases is the same, being the elimina- tion of all the non-benzol from the given oil or oils. For this purpose the light oil is, asa rule, subjected to a preliminary fraction- | ation over a naked fire to split it up into fractions fit to be worked | for (crude) benzol (C,H, and C;H,), for carbolic acid (C,H,O), and to be incorporated with the creosote oil respectively; the carbolic acid is extracted, and the creosote-oil part put aside, and thus one | or more mixtures of ‘‘ benzols” are obtained.

The first runnings contain the bulk of the benzene, C,H,, and a little of its higher homologues, associated, however, with bisulphide of carbon, low-boiling olefines, C,He,, traces of carbolic acid, &c. To remove these impurities as far as possible, the oil is thoroughly agitated with concentrated oil of vitriol (which takes up the impurities exeept the bisulphide of carbon), and the ‘‘ dirty” acid allowed to settle out. The acid is then withdrawn as neatly as possible, and the residual oil washed, first with water, then with dilute caustic soda, and, lastly, again with pure water. The washed oil then is subjected to a preliminary fractionation by distillation over a naked flame in the “ crude benzol still.”

The several mixed benzols obtained arc subjécted finally to a further fractionation in stills worked with steam, to be divided into mixed products known by specific names in commerce. But thesc | We cannot possibly eonsider here. We will rather give an idea of

the way in which the several chemical species (benzene, toluene, | &c.) are being isolated in a state of approximate purity to meet | the demands of the tar-colour industry. To do so even for one

named component by means of ordinary stills would require an | endless number of fractional distillations. The work is very materially shortened if, as proposed by Mansfield long ago, we combine the still with an inverted eondenser (still-head, dephlegma- | tor), inserted between the still and the worm, and keep that inter- | mediate condenser at a suitable constant

temperature, so that all the less volatile part of thc vapour is recondensed and sent baek _ to the still. An excellent apparatus of this kind was constructed and worked successfully by Coupier. His apparatus consists of three parts, viz.:—(1) a still heated by means of a coil of close | Steam pipes; (2) a columnar rectifier—* colonnen-apparat”’ as the

Germans call it,—which communicates with the still, and which | 1s divided into many compartments by horizontal septa so contrived that the vapour in passing from a compartment to the next higher

one must bubble through the liquid condensed there from preceding vapour, —an overflow pipe, trapped below by condensate, hindering accumulation of the liquid in any compartment beyond a certain level; (8) a constant temperature still-head, consisting of a succes- sion of communicating ring-shaped tubes, which arc immersed in a bath of water or molten paraffin kept at a prescribed constant temperature. Only the most volatile part of the vapour survives as such in the columnar rectifier, the degree of its volatility depending, of course, other things being equal, on the rate at which we distil. This most volatile part suffers partial condensation at the prescribed temperature in the still-head ; the condensed parts are sent back to compartments of the ‘‘column” by pipes bent into the shape of a J at the point where they join the “column,” so as to prevent vapour from entering them. The uncondensed vapour goes to the worm, and is condensed as usual.

To prepare benzene, the still-head is kept at 60° to 70° C. At first a mixture of low-boiling bodies and benzene goes over, which is rejected, but soon pure benzol follows and continues until almost all this component has distilled over. The benzol obtained boils between 80° and 82° C., and consequently is practically pure. In order now to extract the toluene, C,Hg, we raise the temperature of the still-head to 100°C. A small quantity of a mixture of benzene and toluene follows, which is rejected. Aftcrit comes a continuous distillation of almost pure toluene, boiling at 110° to 112°C. Ina similar manner (relatively) pure xylene, CgHyo, boiling point 137° to 140°,

and tri-methyl-benzene, C,H,,, boiling point 148° to 150°, can be extracted successively ; but the process becomes troublesome with anything above toluene on aceount of the high temperatures involved for still and still-head. Coupier’s apparatus is now super- seded by other constructions, but they all work on the same prin- ciple,—that of the Coffey still, as used for the rectifying of spirit of wine.

Pure benzene, toluene, and xylene are used largely for the manu- facture of tar-colours. The following (and other) mixtures are pro- duced directly from the light oil or first rannings :—

(1) 90 per cent. DenZOl……...0ccs.cccreses initial boiling point 82°C, (2) 50 per cent. DenZOl……...ccssseeceeee 59 “A 88

Ra) eegMLUHMEG len aeeces te ecteeeeseesccssetccssces i 0 100

4) Carburetting naphtha,.....sscseeeree a Hy 108

5) Solvent naphtha……...ssee0 Reese = + 110

6) Burning naphtha…….....c.esserersee “ “5 138

No. 4 serves for enriching coal-gas and adding to its luminiferous power, No. 5 for varnishes, No. 6 for feeding primitive lamps used in the open air, wherc smoke is no objection. __.

The following percentage table for the tar from the Berlin gas- works (given in Chemische Industrie for 1879) gives an idea of the quantitative composition of this most complex material :—

Benzol (including toluol, &.).....ecccesscsceeerreee 0°80 UL OHETIMGMZOIS: scssccessetesesers cscs ts 0°60 Crystallized carbolic acid……... 0:20 Cresol for disinfecting purposes.. 0°30 INGIBDGHAIENE access… scscrsosercsssoces 3°70

5°60 TOs be Oller averessercareseecdstaceisrecescerecrtsnesere 24°00 Anthracene (PUre).....-cssercssererscrerseccesereres 0°20 UEC

literemerapeee c:strenenateercsastrsasecserssorerssarssccsses 55:00 VA BEIRAN GMOS S rrcecescscestoaccecssscescscsecessadceascess 15°20

(J. PA.—W. D.)

TARAI, a British district in the Kumaun division of the lieutenant-governorship of the North-West Provinces and Oudh, India, lying between 28° 51’ and 29° 30’ N. lat. and 78° 46’ and 79° 47’ E. long. It contains an area of 988 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by the Khumaun Bhabar, on the E. by Nepal and Pilibhit sub- division of Bareilly district, on the 8. by the districts of Bareilly and Moraddbdd and the native state of Rampur, and on the W. by Bijnaur. The headquarters of the dis- trict are at Naini Tal. Tarai (‘moist land”) consists of a long narrow strip of country running for about 90 miles east and west along the foot of the Himalayas, with an average breadth of about 12 miles. At its northern edge, where the waterless forest tract of the Bhabar ends, a series of springs burst from the surface, and these, in- creasing and uniting in their progress, form the numerous streams that intersect the Tarai. The Deoha is the great river of the Tarai proper, and is navigable at Puilibhit. Elephants, tigers, bears, leopards, hyenas, and other wild animals are found in the district. The climate is normally bad, but improvement is gradually following the spread of sanitary measures.

According to the census of 1881 the population was 206,993 (118,815 males and 93,678 females). Hindus numbered 131,966 and Mohammedans 74,982. The only town with a population

exceeding 10,000 is Kasipur, with 14,667 inhabitants. The whole tendency of the population is to agricultural and not to urban life.

60

The total arca under crop in 1884-85 was 254,288 acres, of which rice occupicd 92,186 acres, wheat 54,627, and other food grains 80,304 acres. There are no manufactures worthy of uote, and the chief trade is the export of grain. The gross revenue in 1884-85 amounted to £42,048, the land yielding £35,507. The Tarai came under British rule at the time (1802) when Rohilkhand was ceded to the East India Company. The Government

is said to have looked with indifference on this uninviting tract, but since 1831, when the revenue settlements were revised, this reproach has been less deserved. With an improved system of embankments and irrigation in 1851, the formation of the Tarai into a separate district In 1861, and its complete subjection to Kumaun in 1870, the moral and material history of this tract has greatly improved.

TARANTO. See Tarentum.

TARANTULA. The tarantula (Zycosa tarantula) be- longs to the mining section of the family Lycoside or Wolf Spiders. Its cephalothorax is dorsally of a brownish grey colour, whilst the abdomen is more distinctly brown, and marked with either two or three pairs of triangular black spots above the apex of the triangles pointing back- wards. One of the most striking specific characteristics of this spider is a large circular black spot which covers the anterior ventral half of the abdomen, the remainder of this surface presenting an ochreous hue. The largest species does not exceed # inch in length. The eight eyes are arranged in three transverse rows, the anterior containing four small eyes, while behind this two pairs of larger eyes are arranged in two rows, the eyes of the hindermost row having between them a wider interval than the first pair.

The tarantula is widely distributed in southern Europe, round the shores of the Mediterranean. It occurs through- out Spain and is found in southern France, and extends into Asia. In Italy it is said to be especially common in Apulia, round the town of Taranto, from which place the name of this spider is usually derived. A species has also been described from northern Africa. It is usually to be found in dry pieces of waste land exposed to the sun. It lives in an underground passage, which it digs for itself and lines with its web. These passages are round in section, and sometimes an inch in diameter, and may extend to a depth of a foot or more below the surface. The tube first descends vertically for some inches, then bends at an obtuse angle, becoming vertical again near its closed end. The tarantula takes up its position at the first bend, where it can command the entrance, on the look-out for prey. In some cases the tube is prolonged above the surface of the earth by the formation of a small funnel, built up of fragments of wood and earth, and lined like the walls of the tunnel by the web. The females show

considerable maternal care for their offspring, and some- times sit upon their egg sacs; and the species, although somewhat fierce and combative amongst themselves, are capable of being tamed.

TarantisM. The tarantula has given its name to one of those dancing manias which overspread Europe during the Middle Ages. The bite of the spider threw the sufferer into a depressed state of melancholy, accompanied by various nervous disorders. The con- dition was accompanied by 4n increased sensibility to the power of music. The excitement of the nervous system amounted in some cases almost to insanity. The symptoms of the patient seem to have varied a good deal with the character of the individual attacked: the most common were a lividity of the body, icy cold- ness, great depression, nausea, sexual excitement, and loss of sight and hearing. The only means of arousing the sufferer from the lethargy into which he sank was music. Under the influence of this he awoke as it were, and commenced moving rhythmically, then began to dance, and continued increasing the rapidity of the motion until he fell exhausted to the ground, By this means it was considered that the poison of the tarantula was distributed through the system and worked out through the skin. If the inusic ccased whilst the patient was dancing, he at once sank back into the state of lethargy from which he had been aroused, but when thoroughly cxhausted he generally awoke relieved and cured at least for a time. This dancing mania became contagious: one person caught it from another quite independently of the bite of the tarantula, and in this way whole districts became affected. One of the most veculiar characteristics was the attraction that

bright pieces of metal, or brilliant pieces of colour, exerei over the imagination of the dancers. This was particularly mark in the later history of the disease. Each sufferer apparently admi one particular hue, the sight of which seemed to cause him greatest rapture. Red was a very general favourite, though t colour threw St Vitus’s dancers into a frenzy of rage; green, yellow, and other colours also had numerous’ admirers. Other colours, on the contrary, they detested, and attempted to destroy articles of the obnoxious shade.

In marked contrast to the effect produced by hydrophobia, tarantism appeared to evoke in its victims an intense longing for the sea, into which at times they would precipitate themselves; at all times they secmed to prefer the vicinity of water, sometimes carrying globes of this fluid whilst dancing.

In its origin tarantism appears to have been contemporaneous with the St Vitus's dance of Germany. It first appeared towards

the end of the 14th century in Apulia; thence it spread gradually

throughout Italy, and reached its height during the 17th century, by which time the dancing manias of the North had already died out. It affected not only inhabitants of the country but foreigners visiting it; age appears to have had no saving influence: children

and old people alike commenced dancing at the sound of the " tarantella, but as a rule women were more susceptible than men, — From the 17th century onwards it has gradually declined, and is now practically unknown, the only relic of it being the graceful dance of southern Italy called the tarantella. The bite of the tarantula is painful but not dangerous, and the real cause of the phenomena described above must be sought in the temporary epidemic prevalence of an hysterical condition.

The Lycosa tarantula is figured in Ann. Se. Nat., 2d ser., iii. Zoologie, 1835,

TARARE, on the Turdine, a manufacturing town of France, and the second most populous in the department of Rhéne, is 25 miles north-west of Lyons. Within a circle drawn 25 or 30 miles from the town more than 60,000 workmen are employed, and the value of the textile fabrics produced exceeds £600,000 per annum, Tarlatans are made in Tarare on more than 3000 J acquard looms. The manufacture of Swiss cotton yarns and crochet embroideries was introduced at the end of last century ; in the beginning of the 19th figured stuffs, openworks, and zephyrs were first produced. The manufacture of silk plush for hats and machine-made velvets, which was set up a few years ago, now employs 2900 workmen and 500 girls, the latter being engaged in silk throwing and winding. There are, besides, four or five dyeing and printing establishments, and silk looms working for the Lyons

trade. An important commerce is carried on in corn, cattle, linen, hemp, thread, and leather. In 1886 the population was 11,848 (commune 12,980).

Till 1756, when Simonnet introduced the manufacture of muslins from Switzerland, Tarare lay unknown among the mountains, On the old castle to which the town owes its origin may be seen the arms of the family of Albon.

TARASCON, a town of France, in the department of Bouches-du-Rhéne, is situated on the left bank of the Rhone, opposite Beaucaire, with which it is connected by @ suspension and a railway bridge. It is on the Lyons and Marseilles Railway, 156 miles south of the former town. The church of St Martha, built in 1187-97 on the ruins of a' Roman temple, rebuilt in 1379-1449, has a Gothic spire, and many interesting pictures in the interior, which is of fairly pure Pointed architecture. Of the original building there remain a porch, and a side portal with capitols like those of St Trophimus at Arles. The former leads to the crypt, where are the tombs of St Martha and Louis IL, king of Provence. The castle, picturesquely situated on a rock, was begun by Count Louis II. in the 14th century and finished by King René of Anjou in the 15th. It contains a turret stair and a chapel entrance, which are charming examples of 15th- century architecture, and fine wooden ceilings. It is now used as a prison. The civil court of the arrondissement of Arles is situated at Tarascon, which also possesses a coml- mercial court, a hdétel de ville, and fine cavalry barracks. Hats, and the so-called Arles sausages, are made here. The population in 1886 was 6647 (commune 9314).

the fair of Beaucaire and the féte of La | (Me Ge: tetarin celebration of St Martha's deliverance of the town from a legendary monster of that name. King René presided in 1469, and grand exhibitions of costume and strange ceremonies take place during the two days of the festival. Tarascon ' was originally a settlement of the Massaliots, built on an island of the Rhone. The medieval eastle, where Pope Urban ll. lived in | 1096, was built on the ruins of a Roman castrum. The inhabitants of Tarascon preserved the municipal institutions granted them by 'the Romans, and of the absolute power claimed by the counts of 'Provence they only recognized the rights of sovereignty. Tarascon played a bloody part in the White Terror of 1815.

TARAXACUM is the name usually applied in medical practice to the common dandelion (Taraxacum officinale, Wiggers), The DANDELION (q.v.) is a plant of the northern hemisphere, extending to the Arctic regions, and is culti- vated in India. The preparations chiefly employed are the fluid extract, the preserved juice of the root, or succus, and the solid extract. The dried and roasted root, mixed with ground coffee, is often sold under the name of dandelion coffee for use as a beverage. The root is most bitter from March to July, but the milky juice it contains is less abundant in the summer than in the autumn. For this reason, the extract and succus are usually prepared during the months of September and October. After a frost a change takes place in the root, which loses its bitterness to a large extent. In the dried state the root will not keep well, being quickly attacked by insects. Externally it is brown and wrinkled, internally white, with a yellow centre and concentric paler rings. It is 2 inches to a foot long, and about } to 4 inch in diameter. The juice when first exuded is bitter and neutral, but on exposure to the air soon acquires an acid reaction and a brown tint, coagulat- ing and depositing a complex substance, to which the name of ‘“leontodonium” has been given, From this deposit a bitter principle, ‘“‘taraxacin,” and an acrid crystalline substance, ‘‘taraxacerin,” soluble in alcohol, have been obtained, but to which of these the medicinal properties are due ig not known. In autumn the root con- tains about 24 per cent. of inulin, but in summer barely 2 per cent. When the juice has fermented, mannite is found init. Taraxacum is chiefly employed as a stimulant | tonic in hepatic disorders. In some cases it acts as a – cholagogue and mild aperient, and in others as a diuretic. | The roots of other Composite plants are somctimes gathered _ by careless collectors for dandelion, especially that of Leontodon hispidus (L.). The root of this plant is tough when fresh, and

rarely exudes any milky juice. The flowers, moreover, have | feathery pappus, while in the dandelion it is simple.

TARBES, a town of France, chef-lieu of the depart- ment of Hautes-Pyrénées, is situated in one of the most

_ beautiful plains of France, on the left bank of the Adour, | streams from which are conducted through all parts of the town. The lines of railway

from Paris to Pierrefitte and from Toulouse to Bayonne cross here. Among the many gardens and open spaces for which Tarbes is distinguished is the Massey garden (35 acres), given to his native town by a Versailles official of that name, in which his statue faces the town museum, founded by the collector Achille Jubinal. The varied collections include Roman remains, | and specimens of the fauna and flora of the Pyrenees. _ The architecture of the cathedral is heavy and unpleasing, but the cupola of the transept (14th century), the modern

| glass in the 12th-century apse, and a rose window of the | Sth century, in the north transept, are worthy of notice. | The Carmelite church has an interesting steeple, and there _ are the ruins of a chapel and cloister, and Roman remains _ In the garden of the former episcopal palace, now occupied , by the prefecture. The municipal buildings, with the public library (22,000 volumes), the lyceum, the court of Justice, and the barracks (which are large and fine) may also be mentioned among the public buildings. The garrison and artillery establishments, the latter associated

i rr Ee

with an arsenal and large workshops, have considerable im- portance. Other industrial establishments are a foundry machine manufactory, felt and woollen factories, and wool and flax spinning mills. Paper, lace, knitted goods, car- riages, and leather are also made here, and marble from the Pyrenees is prepared for the market. There are important fairs and markets, particularly for horses, as Tarbes is a well-known centre for a special breed of light horses, its stud being the most important in the south of France. The population of the town was 24,882 in 1886.

Tarbes, a mere vicus in the time of Gregory of Tours, rose into importance after the destruction of the ancient Aquitanian town of Turba. The seat of the bishopric was transferred to it about the 9th century, when a castle was also built. Raymond I., towards the middle of the 10th century, rebuilt the town, fortified it, and made it the capital of the county of Bigorre. The

English held the town from 1360 to 1406. In 1569 Tarbes was burnt by Mont- gomery, and the inhabitants were driven out. This happencd a second time, but in August 1570 the peace of St Germain allowed the inhabitants to return to the grass-grown streets. Subsequently Tarbes was four times taken and re-taken, and a number of the inhabitants of Bigorre were forced to take refuge in Spain, but in 1594 the members of the League were finally expelled. The Eng- lish, under Wellington, gained a victory over the French near Tarbes in 1814. Théophile Gautier was born here in 1811.

TARENTUM, or Taras, now Taranto, a famous Greek city of southern Italy, situated on the north coast of the bay of the same name, at the entrance of the only secure port on the gulf. This port, now called the Mare Piccolo, is a bay 16 miles in circuit, landlocked by a low rocky peninsula. The entrance is so narrow that it is crossed by a bridge of seven arches ; it was already bridged in Strabo's time. The modern town, in the province of Lecce, which is the see of an archbishop and had in 1881 a population of 26,611, stands on the peninsula, which is now rather an island, the isthmus connecting it with the mainland having been cut through for defence by Ferdinand I. The ancient citadel occupied the same site, but the city in its best days was much larger, traces of the walls being visible about 2 miles from the gates of the modern town. 'The remains of antiquity are inconsiderable.

Tarentum was a Spartan colony founded about the close of the 8th century B.c. (Jerome gives the date 708) to relieve the parent state of a part of its population which did not possess, but claimed to enjoy, full civie rights. Legend represents these Parthent# (so they are called) as Spartans with a stain on their birth, but the accounts are neither clear nor consistent, and the facts that under- he them have not been cleared up, The Grecks were not the first scttlers on the peninsula: recent excavations have brought to light signs of a pre- Hellenic trading-place, and the name of Taras may be older than the colony. To the Greeks Taras was a mythical hero, son of Neptune, and he is sometimes confounded with the cecist of the colony, Phalanthus, Situated in a fertile district, especially famous for olives and sheep, with an admirable harbour, great fisheries, and prosperous anufactures of wool, purple, and pottery, Tarentum grew in power and wealth and extended its domain inland. Even a great defcat by the natives in 473 1.c., when more Grecks fell than in any battle known to Herodotus, did not break its

prosperity, though it led to a change of government from aris- tocracy to democracy. A feud with the Thurians for the district of the Siris was settled in 482 by the joint foundation of IJeraclea, which, however, was regarded as a Tarentine colony. In the 4th century Tarentum was the first eity of Great Greece, and its wealth and artistie culture at this time are amply attested by its rich and splendid coins; the gold pieces in particular (mainly later than 3860) are perhaps the most beautiful ever struck by Greeks (see NUMISMATICS, vol. xvii. p. 637). In the second half of the century Tarentum was in constant war with the Lucanians, and did not hold its ground without the aid of Spartan and Epirote condottiert. ‘Then followed war with Rome (281), the expedition of Pyrrhus, and at length, in 272, the surrender of the city by its Epirote garrison (sce the details in vol. xx. p. 748 sq.). Tarentum retained nominal liberty as an ally of Rome. In the Second Punic War it suffered severely, when it was taken by Hannibal (212), all but the citadel, and retaken and plundered by Fabius (209). After this it fell into great decay, but revived again after recciving a colony in 123 B.c. Jt remained a eonsiderable seaport, and its purple, second only to that of Tyre, was still valued, but in Strabo’s time it had shrunk nearly to the limits of the present town. After the fall of the Western empire it was held from time to time by

Goths, Lombards, and Saracens, but was not finally wrested from Byzantium till Robert Guiscard took it in 1063.

For special literature about Tarentum, see Busolt, Griech. Gesch., i. 206 sq. TARES, or Vercuzs. See Acricunturs, vol. i. p- 376. TARGUM (O78) in its concrete sense signifies the

paraphrastic translation of the Hebrew Scriptures, or parts thereof, into the Aramaic tongue. It has, however, three other meanings:—(1) a translation from any language into another; (2) an interpretation in any language;2 and (3) the Aramaic portions of certain books of the Bible (notably Daniel and Ezra).*

The word is not itself found in the Bible; but the participle methurgam (03902) occurs in Ezr. iv. 7. The noun Z’argum, a form similar to TauMup

(¢.v.), occurs for the first time in the Afishnah, both canonical* and non-canonical,°—the latter being apparently the older source.

Origin.—Although none of the Targums now in our hands are as old as the Sepruacint (¢.v.), the public use of Targums on Sabbaths, festivals, &c., is very ancient, and indeed their language was for several. hundreds of years the sole one understood by the majority of the Jews in Palestine and Babylonia. How the Hebrew people of Juda came so entirely to unlearn their own Hebrew tongue as to stand in need of an Aramaic translation of their Scriptures need not be dwelt on here (see vol. xi. p. 597 and vol. xxi. p. 648). But an important contrast between the Aramaic and Greek versions deserves particular notice. The use of the Septuagint by the Greek-speaking Jews of Alexandria, Asia Minor, and elsewhere caused those who adopted it to forget entirely their own Hebrew tongue. The Aramaic version (Targum), however, spring- ing from a religious necessity, was the cause of revival of the knowledge of Hebrew, which had been nigh forgotten. It is therefore easy to understand why the Jews in general have shown comparatively little attachment to the Septua- gint, whilst they ever ardently revered the Aramaic version, even after the institution of publicly reciting it had ceased. ¢ To this day pious Jews privately prepare themselves every Friday for the lessons of the coming Sabbath by reading the weekly portion twice in the sacred text and once in the Targum (O39 INN1 N7pN dw).

Former Use of the Targum in Public.—The following rules had to be observed in the reading of the Scriptures at the synagogal service :—

I. As regards the Law (Pentateuch). (1) The private person called to the Law (which chiefly contains halakhic matter) read one verse of it, which the official methurgeman or turgenian (trans- lator) immediately paraphrased ; (2) whilst the reader of the Law was not allowed to take his eye off the written scroll, the methurge- man was forbidden, not merely to read out of a written Targum, but even to look into the sacred text ;® (3) each of these had to wait till the other had quite finished the reading and translation respectively ; (4) one was not allowed to raise his voice in a louder

key than the other; (5) a certain number of passages, although allowed to be read, were not allowed to be translated; these were—

7 Hence I3WN DOIN (German translation), &c.

? When the word is used in either of these two senses the language into which the translation is made, or in which an interpretation is given, must be specified, or otherwise indicated, ég., 31° OVIN (Greek translation), DYIWN DIN (Septuagint), Dopy DIIN (Aquila translated), except when it is Aramaic, in which case the language may be named (as in Ezra iv. 7) or not (Tosephto, Shabbath, xiii. [xiv.] 2).

3 Compare Mishnah, Yadayim, iv. 5.

5 Siphere (see vol. xvi. Shophetim), Pisko 161.

° “Let not the Aramaic be lightly esteemed by thee,” says the Jerusalem Talmud, ‘seeing that the Holy One (blessed be He !) has giveu honour to it in the Pentateuch (Gen. xxxi. 47), in the Prophets (Jer. x. 11), and in the Hagiographa (Dan. ii. 4),” (Sotah, vii. 2). Instead of ‘‘ Arammi” (Aramaic) the AMidrash Rabbah on Genesis reads “ Parsi” (Persian); the reading here is “ Sursi” (Syriac).

7 See Misunau, vol. xvi. p. 503.

8 This was done to prevent its being thought that the Targum (the exponeut of the oral Law) was to be found in writing in ‘the Pentateuch (the exponent of the written Law).

4 See last note. p- 507) on Deuteronomy (Pericope

TAR—T&E

(a) such as might reflect unfavourably on a father of a tribe, or on aneminent teacher(T. B., Afegill., 254, Tosaph., catchword TW YD) « (6) such as might encourage the ignorant to think that there was some truth in idolatry; (c) such as might offend decency (Mishnaj, Megillah, iv 10; Tosephto, ibid, 35, 37 ; T. Yer, age ip 10; and T. B., ibid., leaf 256); (d) such as were fixed by the Lord Himself to be read in Hebrew only (as the sacerdotal benediction, — Num. vi. 24-26); (6) the translator was neither allowed to give a literal translation nor to add anything that had no foundation in the Divine word; he had to give the spirit of the letter,10

II. As regards the Prophets. (1) The person called to read the Prophets (which chiefly contain agadic matter 1) might read three verses, of which the translator, who might be the reader himself,22 sought to render the meaning to the best of his ability 5 (2) the translator was allowed both to read out of a Targum volume and to look also into the book containing the prophetic text; (8) if reader and translator were two different persons they

observed the third rule given above for the case of reading the Law ; (4) here also certain passages were not allowed to be translated :—(a) such as reflected on great men of the Israelite nation; (b) such as offend decency ; (5) any one sufficiently intelligent might read, and of course paraphrase, the portion from the Prophets.

III. As regards the Hagiographa. The widest range of liberty must have been granted both to reciters and translators, as very scanty mention of any particular provision concerning it is to be found in the Talmuds. The Psalms and the book of Esther are classed together in so far as they may be read and paraphrased even by ten persons (T. B., Afeg., 216). For Job and Lamentations, see below.

Duration of this Practice.—The practice of publicly reciting the Targum continued somewhat later than the last of the geonim. Within the last 400 years of that period, however, the power of this ancient institution began to fluctuate, gradually declined, and finally almost —but not entirely ’—died out. The causes of this were twofold. One was, that after the Mohammedan conquests Arabic supplanted Aramaic as the vernacular, and the Targums thus became unintelligible to the mags (see Seder Rab ‘Amram, i., Warsaw, 1863, leaf 29a), even as was already the case in the Western world. ‘A second and more important cause, however, was the spread of Karaism, whose criticism of the Rabbinic contents of the Targums provoked the Rabbanites to pay more attention

to the etymology and grammar of the Hebrew text of the

® The Babylonian Talmud (AMegiliah, 256) says that the priestly benediction was not to be recited in Aramaic on account of the phrase “the Lorp shall lift up His countenance upon thee,” which would appear as if the Lord had been a respecter of persons. In Talmudic times they had apparently, in Babylonia, lost the real reason of the Mishnic prohibition, which is that this benedictiou is doubly, yea, trebly Divine, being framed in its every word by God Himself, and can thus only be recited in those very words (FA, thus; Num. vi 23). See Mishnah, Sotah, vii. 2; T. Yerushalmi, ibid., and Megillah, iv. 11, and, finally, Bemidbar Rabbah, cap. xi. in medio.

10 See Tosephto, Megillah, iv. in fine.

11 See Miprasi, vol. xvi. p. 285.

12 Thus Jesus (Luke iv. 16-27) no doubt read the Haphtarah (pro- phetic portion) himself, and paraphrased it himself. From this custom of reading and paraphrasing by one and the same person the sermon (17) sprang. The passage in question (Isa. lxi. 1, &c.) was read on the Sabbath before the New Year (day of memorial),

18 Long after the institution of publicly reciting the Targum on the Law had generally declined, it was yet retained in Germany and Italy on certain days of the three high festivals, viz., (a) the seventh day of Passover, (0) the first day of Pentecost, and © the last day attached to the festival of Tabernacles (i.¢., WIM NMNW). The passages so recited were—(a) parts of the lesson for the day—the soug of Moses and the children of Israel, with the introduction 3 (8) the Decalogue in Exodus ; (c) the last portion of Deuteronomy. In the first case the paraphrase was from the three Targums mixed, in the second from the Targum Yonathan with deviatious, in the last from the Targum Onkelos. (These pieces are interspersed with sundry bits of poetry; see Camb. MS. Add. 374, leaves 169a-1718, 199a-208a, 4230-4276.) Towards the end of the 14th century, as regards Passover and Pentecost, the custom fell into desuetude, but down to our own days some of the congregations of Italy continue the usage of reciting the Targum Onkelos in connexion with the narration of the death of Moses. ‘This custom, however, is now rapidly dying out. As regards the recitation of the Targum on the Prophets, a small remnant of the congregations folowing the rite of Rome (i.e., the so-called Italiant) continue it to this day on the festival of Passover. For the use of the Targum on Pentecost, see Responsa, by R. Meir of Rothenburg (RosH, ¢.2. footnote 3), No, 59.

Se

ee eae

Bible. Thus the Targums, both in their periods of vigour and decay, exercised, directly and indirectly, a salutary influence. In each case the knowledge of Hebrew was ‘promoted ; and it advanced so much, that by 1000 a.p. the Jews of Irak, like those of the rest of the world then, and as in our own days, certainly knew the pure Hebrew better than the Aramaic

idiom. The same was the case in ‘other Arabic-speaking parts, as Spain, Africa, &c.,—Yemen then and still forming a solitary exception.!

Authorship and Age of the Various Targums.—The ‘Targums on the various books of the Bible are not merely by various authors, but also of various ages. They have only one thing in common,—all of them rest on oral traditions, which are hundreds of years older than the earliest form of the written Targums now in our hands. We enumerate them according to Biblical order, although that is not necessarily the chronological order in which they were either composed or committed to writing.

I. The Pentatewch.—(a) There is a complete Targum known as

Onkelos (DIPPIIN, DOPIN, DIOPI’, DI>*PIN). ‘The person and even the name of Onkelos have been for the last three hundred years a erux ertiticorum.

According to the Babylonian Talmud, Megil., 3a, “ Onkelos (son of Calonicus, Gitt., 560, or of Calonymus, ‘Ab. Zar., 11a), the pro- selyte, composed the Targum on the Pentateuch (111D§) out of the

mouth of R. Eliezer and R. Yehoshua’’,” who taught in the 1st and 9d centuries. In the Jerusalem Talmud, Jfcg., i. 9, the same thing is related on the same authorities, and almost in the same words, of the proselyte Aquila (Akylas) of Pontus, whose Greek version of the Bible was much used by Greek-speaking Jews down to the time of Justinian (Vov., cxlvi. cap. 1).2_ There are other parallels between what Zosephto and the Babylonian Talmud tell of Onkelos and what the Jerusalem Talmud and the Midrash tell of Aquila. Both throw their idolatrous inheritance into the Dead Sca (Tos., Demat, vi. 12; T. Y., Demai, vi. 10), and both have connexions with Roman emperors, Onkelos being sister’s son of Titus (@ittin, 566), and Aquila of Hadrian (Jfidr. Tunh., Mishpatin; sce, also, for Onkelos, ‘40. Z., 11a, and for Aquila’s connexion with Hadrian, T. Y., Hag.,ii.1; Shem. Rab., xxx.; Epiphanius, De Mens. et Pond., xiv. sq.). From these facts some (see N. Adler, Nethinah lagger, in the Vilna Pent., 1874, Introd.) still argue that Onkelos is but another name for Aquila, and that the Greek translator also wrote our Targum. This view was long ago refuted by R. ‘Azaryah de’ Rossi,? and is quite untenable. It is incredible that Aquila or any other

Greek could have had the mastery of Aramaic and of tradi- tional lore as well as of Hebrew which the Targum displays; and the phrase of T. Y.,‘Megil., i. 9, “an untutored person picked out for them Aramaic from the Greek,” is quite inapplicable to Onkelos, and ought to be taken as referring to the Peshito Syriac, which is admittedly dependent on the LXX. In a Jewish writing ‘‘for them ”—set absolutely—means “for the Christians.” The view now accepted by most critics is that the word Onkelos is a Babylonian corruption of Akylas, but that the name “Targum Onkelos ” originally meant no more than “Targum in the style of — i.¢., bearing to the freer Palestinian Targums a similar relation to that of Aquila’s version to the Septuagint.* Ou this view there never was a real person called Onkelos. But how Akylas (DODY; in Ber. Rab., i. middle, DIOP or PODN, ie. PON) could be corrupted into Onkelos has not been satisfactorily ex- plained ; and, besides the traditions about Onkelos which resemble what is known about Aquila, there are others, and these older than

rr RR ttt — er RR a EE

eS =

1 In Yemen the Targum is publicly recited to this day, and, strange to say, by boys of nine years of age or so in turn, See J. Saphir, Eben Sappir, i. (Lyck, 1866, 8vo) leaves 580, 61a. Saphir once told the present writer that a youth, eighteen years of age (ut supra, 61b), who carried his travelling-bag and served as his guide over the mountains, Said, 7.e., Seadyah, by name and a shoemaker by trade, could translate to him in Aramaic from memory any passage Saphir recited in Hebrew.

2 For the connexion of Aquila with R, Eliezer and R. Yehoshua’, see also Beresh. Rab., 1xx.; Bemidb. Rab., viii. end; Kohel. Rab., vii. 8.

3 Ze, ‘‘min Haadummim.” The Adummim are supposed to be one of the four noble families carricd to Rome by Titus.

4 The Jerusalem Talmud repeatedly cites Aquila’s renderings and never names Onkelos. But it does show acquaintance with renderings found in Onkelos (e.g., Megil., iv. 11; cf. Onk. on Exod. xxxii. 35). In the Midrash Rabbah, besides many eitations from Aquila, we find one of Onkelos by

name (in Bem. R., ix. in fine; Onk. on Deut. xxxii. 24) and various allusions (without name) to renderings found in him. He is also cited byname in the Palestinian Pireke de-R. Eliezer, xxxviii.

__ “

A ia

es

Yaw Gow M

63

either Gemara, which have no such resemblance, and assign to him an earlier date, associating him with R. Gamliel the elder, the teacher of St Paul (Tosephto, Shab., vii. [viii.] 18; Hag., iil. 2, 3; Kel. Bab. Bath., ii. 4; Mikv., vi. 3; Talmud B.,‘.4d. Zar., 11a; Mas. Semah., viii.init.). The Zohar (iii. leaf 73a of the small ed.) ascribes his being circuincised to Hillel (R. Gamliel’s grandfather) and Shammai. ‘These notices, it is true, do not speak of Onkelos as a targumist; and, indeed, the Targum being a representative piece of the oral law was certainly not written down, private notes (nvcgil- loth setharim) excepted, before the Mishnah, Toscphto, &c., 7.¢., till about the end of the 6th or the beginning of the 7thcentury. But in the opinion of the present writer this need not prevent us from recognizing Onkelos as a corrector and compiler of oral Targum in the Ist century. As regards the name, it may be suggested that Onkelos is a deliberate perversion of Evangelus, a Greek proper name which exactly translates the Jewish (and especially Babylon- ian-Jewish) name Mebasser. As the Christian writings are called Aven (iniquity, idolatry), and as the pre-Mishnie teacher R. Meir calls the gospel (evangelion) ongillayon (iniquity of the roll; T. B., Shab., leaf 116, Amst. ed. of 1645), or, by inversion, gilyon-aven (roll of iniquity), the name Evangelus, which suggested associations with the gospel, might be perverted into Onkclos quasi On-keles (iniquity of disgrace). And, while a Babylonian Jew coming to Palestine might find it convenient to translate his Hebrewname into Evangelus, this good Greek name was enough to suggest in after times that he was of heathen origin and so to facilitate the con- fusion with Aquila. The idiom of the Targum Onkelos, which is held to

be Palestinian with some Babylonian features, points to Babylonia as the country of its final redactor, if to Palestine as its source. It must be remembered that Hillel and other great fountains of Palestinian learning were of Babylonian origin.®

(g) Certain Targumic fragments on the Pentateuch go under the name of Targum Yerushalmi, or, rather, Palestinian Targum. These are the remains of a much larger Jerusalem Targum, once current in Palestine. But, the Palestinian rabbis not having approved of it, perhaps because it accorded in various of its interpretations and phrases with interpretations and phrases to

5 Bibliography of the Targum pridpayx.—(A) There are very fine MSS. of this Targum at Parma, Oxford, Cambridge (Dd. 11, 26, Add. 446, 1058), the British Museum, Kissingen (Rabbin Bamberger), &c. (B) A Massoreth on our Targum by an anonymous author, who must have lived in or before the 12th century, has been pub- lished—(1) by Luzzatto (Osar Nehinad, iv.); (2) by Adler (Vilna edition of the Pentateuch of 1874); and (8) by Berliner (with a German translation, &c., Leipsic, 1877, 8vo). (C) Leading editions: —(1) Bologna, 1482, editio prineeps, without vowel-points ; (2) the Complutensian polyglott; (8) the Bomberg Rabbinic Bible of 1517 ; (4) Sabbioneta, 1557, 16mo (reprinted, not without mistakes, at Berlin, 1884, imp. 8vo) ; and (5) Vilna edition of the Pentateuch of 1874, the Targum being pointed according to a Bodleian MS. (Canon. Orient, 91). (D) Translations :—(a) into Latin—(1) by Alphonsus Zamorensis (Polygl., 1517, &c.); (2) by P. Fagius (Strasburg, 1546, folio) ; (b) into English by Etheridge (Targums, London, 1862-65, 8vo), (E) Commentaries, all in Hebrew:—(1) Pathshegen, by an anonymous Provengal rabbi of the 12th century (see Mawzor), in the Vilna Pentateuch of 1874; (2) by R. Mordekhai b. Naphtali (Anisterdam, 1671-77, fol.) ; (3) Lehem Vesimlah (double commentary) by R. Bensiyyon Berkowitz (Vilna, 1846-56); (4) by Dr Nathan M. Adler (Vilna Pentateuch of 1874, ut supra). (F) Other litera- ture (also for the other Targums):—(a) in Hebrew—Jfeor ‘Enayim, by R. ‘Azaryah m. Haadummim (cheapest and best edition, Vilna, 1863; Mine Targumo, by R. Y. Berlin or Pick (Breslau, 1851, 4to) ; Oheb Ger, by S. D. Luzzatto (Vienna, 18380) ; ‘Oteh Or, by the before- named B. Berkowitz (Vilna, 1843) ; Zggereth Bikkoreth, by R. Z. H. Hayyuth (Chajes), ed. Briill, Presburg (1853, 8vo); Rapoport, ‘Hrekh Millin, (Prague, 1852, 4to) ;

Lowy, Bikkoreth Hattalmud, i. (Vienna, 1863, 8vo); (b) in Latin—Morinus, Hvercitationes, ti. viii. 6 (Paris, 1660); Winer, De Onkeloso (Leipsic, 1820, 4to); R. Anger, De Onkelo (Leipsic, 1845-46) ; (c) in German—Zunz, Gottesd. Vortrige (Berlin, 1832); Geiger, Urschrift (Breslau, 1857); Hamburger, Real-Ency- klopidie; Targum Onkelos, by Dr A. Berliner (Berlin, 1884, imp. 8vo). On this work, see Néldeke, in Zarncke's Centralbl., 1884, No. 39, and Lagarde in G@étt. Gel. Anzeig., November 1886 (No. 22) ; (d) in English: E. Deutsch, in his Literary Remains—to be used with caution. (G) Lexicons to this and other Targunis :—(1) as for the Talmuds and Midrashim, so also for the Targum, R. Nathan b. Yehiel's 'Arukh (see TaLMun, p. 37, note 7) stands first ; (2) next to it is Elias Levita's Methurgeman (Isny, 1541, fol.); (8) Buxtort's Lexicon Chaldaicum, Talmudicum, et Rabbinicum (cheap and new, though by no means best, edition, Leipsic, 1869-75); (4) Levy's Chald. Warterb. (1866-68) ; (5) Jastrow's Dictionary, i. (New York, 1886). (H) Grammars:—(1) Juda Jeitteles's Mfebo allashon (Prague, 18138, 4to); (2) Blicher's Marpe Leshon Arammi (Vienna, 1838) ; (3) Fiirst's Lehrgeb. d. Aram. Idiome (Leipsic, 1855) ; (4) Lerner's Dikduk Lashon Arammith (Warsaw, 1875) ; all in 8vo.

64

be found in the Gospels,! it gradually lost its greater portion of its original matter, what it is.

regards its age, several of the 1'. Yonathan) were in the 2d with disapprobation. down before the Mishnah and other parts of the oral Law.?

(y) The Targum Yonathan, or T. of Jonathan, on the Pentateuch This Targum was no doubt undertaken, as Dr Bacher has shown (Z. D.M. G., xxviii. p. 69), to combine the finest This attempt could not have been made without both these Targums

before the compiler of the third Targum. The Targum Yonathan on the Pentateuch is a product, at the earliest, of the 7th century, to which conclusion internal evidence also The author is, of course, not the Yonathan b. 'Uzziel, principal of the eighty disciples of Hillel (T. B., Sukkah, 28a), who, aceording to 'T. Bab., Megill., 3a, composed a Targum on the

is also Palestinian.

parts of what early 7. Onkelos and 7’. Yerushalmé contained.

lying in writing points. 4

Prophets from the traditions of Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi.®

Il. Targum Yonathan on the Prophets.—It has been known from carly quotations, as from Rasut (q. v.) and others, but notably from that, in addition to the complete cxtant Targum on the Prophets, there existed other Targuins or fragments of them. These are now kuown from the marginal additions to the Reuch. Tinian Codex of the Targum on the Prophets published by Lagarde As regards the complete Targum on the Prophets, no mistake can be greater than to believe that Rab Yoseph, a teacher of the 3d and 4th centuries, and head of the academy of Pumbaditha (see This mistake has its origin in the repeated phrase of the Babylonian Tal- mud, *}D1 37 D397 (“as Rab Yoseph targumizes”); but thena similar phrase exists with regard to Rab Shesheth, NWwY 37 DMN And in like manner the expres- sion }3937N1N73 (“as we targumize ”) is of frequent occurrence. In “fas we are in the habit of translating certain passages in Holy Writ according to a Targum As applied to Rab Yoseph and Rab Shesheth the phrase may certainly mean more and yet not imply that these teachers were in any way authors of the Targum on the Law, the Rab Yoseph and Rab Shesheth were uote in extenso the written word of the Law, which it was forbidden to recite orally, They therefore committed to memory the oral Targum, and so were, That Rab Yoscph was uot the author of the Targum on the Prophets will be clearly scen from the following Talmudic passage (B., Megillah, 3a; Mo’ed Katan, 28b):—‘‘ Were it not for the Targum of that verse [Zechar. xii. 11] I should not know the meaning of the prophet.” the Prophets ;8 and we see that Rab Yoseph must have had the Targum on the Prophets In the opinion of the present writer this Targum was composed by Yonathan ; and, not being on books of the Law, there was no reason why it should not have been there and then written

KIMHI (q.v.),

(Leipsic, 1872), and have been discussed by Bacher (wé sup.).

RABBAH), was the author of this Targum in whole or in part.

(“as Rab Shesheth § targumizes ”), this last instance the words mean

we have received.”

Prophets, or Hagiographa. both blind, and as such were not allowed to

of course, appealed to as Targumic authorities, &c.7

This verse is from the last but one of all

before hii.

eee ee 1 See T. Yer., Berakhoth, v. 8, and compare with 1t Luke vi. 36.

Compare Berliner, ut supra, pp. 85, 86.

2 Conipare last note.

3 Bibliography of the Targum Yerushalmi on the Pentateweh.—(A) There is a MS. of this Targum preserved in the Vatican library (eecexl.). (B) The first edition of thisTargum is in the so-called Christian Rabbinic Bible of 1517. It is to be found also in most polyglott and Rabbinic Bibles, ineluding the Polish editions (Warsaw, &c.). (C) Translations : —(a) Latin—(1) by Taylerus (London, 1649, 4to) ; (2) by Chevalier (in the Polyglott, London, 1653-57). (b) In English by Etheridge (Tar- gums, London, 1862-65, 8vo). (D) There are two commentaries on this Targum in Hebrew :—(1) by R. David b. Ya‘akob (Prague, 1609, 4to); (2) by R. Mordekhai b. Naphtali (Amsterdam, 1671-77, fol.).

4 See our Targum on Gen. xxi. 21, where Mohammed’s first wife (Khadidja) and their youngest daughter (Fatima) are mentioned by name,

> Bibliography.—(A) There certainly exists, somewhere in Italy, a MS. of this Targum, although the owner is at present unknown. (B) This Targum appeared for the first time in the Pentateuch edition of Venice (1590-91, 8vo). (C) Translations :—(a) Latin by Chevalier (London, 1658-57); (6) in English by Ktheridge (op. ezt.). (D) Com- mentaries:—(1) by R. David b.

Yalakob (Prague, 1609, 4to); (2) by R. Mordekhai b. Naphtali (Amst., 1671-77, fol.); (3) by an anony- mous author in the Warsaw edition.

8 In the editions before us (T. B., Sotah, 480) Yoseph stands on the margin instead of Shesheth ; but in the edition before R. ‘Azaryah m. Haadummim the reading was absolutely Shesheth ; see Meor ‘Enayim, eap. xly.

7 See Tosaphoth on B. Kam., leaf 3a, eatchword DIIND ID.

8 This is by no means an isolated phrase ; in T. B., Synhedrin, 946, a similar one occurs, referring to Isa. viii. 6.

TA RG U M

authority and the and is now in our hands It certainly never was part of the 7. Onkelos, nor was the T. Onkelos part of it, though the two are closely related. As pieces formerly found in it (now in and 3d centuries distinctly quoted 2 But like Onkelos it cannot have been written

down. Although the traditions it embodies came originally fro) Babylonia and returned to Babylonia, its language has yet a marked colouring of the Palestinian idiom than that of Onkelo; because it was not studied so much and therefore not so muc modified and interpolated. Some of the Agadoth occurring | this Targum are ascribed in the Talmud and Midrash to, k

men, but this is no conclusive argument against an early date, | can be shown that many laws and sayings supposed to be of ¢h 2d, 3d, and 4th centuries of the Christian era are actually of pre Christian times, and, indeed, ccrtain explanations, figures ; speech, &c., had been, so to say, floating in the air for centurie Certain passages in the Scptuagint contain Agadoth which » appear, seemingly for the first time, in the Talmudic literature The Prophets themselves knew Agadoth which only reappear j what are believed to be late Midrashim (comp., ¢.g., Isaiah xxi; 22 with T. B., Synh., 195; Isa. xxx. 26 with Targum on Jud v. 81, Ber, Rab., xii.; Ezek. xxii, 24, &e., with Ber. Rab., xxxiii) Ill. Targum on the Hagioyrapha.—No author’s name is attache to this Targum in whole or in part. The Psalms must have one” or two? Targums ; the book of Proverbs at least two ; book of Job at least three.!4_ There must have been two Targums o1 Canticles,!®

Ruth,!® Ecclesiastes,!? and Esthcr,!8 and probably thee on Lamentations,! the earliest of which was, ho doubt, simultane ously coming into existence with the earliest on the book of Job For Ezra-Nehemiah no Targum exists. Daniel only in part wante a Targum, and it is supposed to have had one ; °° and the book (or rather the book) of Chronicles have a by no means late one,*l although it is not by Rab Yoseph, of the 4th century.2?

- See, however, vol. xxi. p, 648. 10 Bibliography.—(A) There are MSS, of the Targum on the Prophets in the Bodleian (Opp. Add., 4to, 75 and 76, Uri 4 and Keunicott 5). (B) The earliest edition is in the Rabbinic Bible of 1517. (@ Translations :—(a) in Latin—(1) by Alphonsus Zamorensis (revised by Arias Montanus and afterwards by Clericus); (2) Jercmiah, by Ghislerus, 1623; (8) Minor Prophets, by Mereerus, 1559, Tremellius, 1567, and Figueiro, 1615; (4) Hosea, Joel, and Amos, by Quinquar- boreus, 1556; (5) Obadiah, by Bedwell, 1601, and Leusden, 1656; (6) in English—Isaiah, by Pauli (London, 1871, 8vo). (D) Besi the general literature mentioned under “ Onkelos” (in fine), we m mention Frankel, Zum Targum der Propheten (Breslan, 1872, 4to), whieh must be used with caution. ; 1 See T. B., Megillah, 21a, and also Rashi on T. B., Ta’anith, leat 18a. Zunz is greatly mistaken when he says (Gott. Vortr., p. 64) that the Targums on Psalms, Job, and Proverbs have one and the same linguistic character. The Targum on Proverbs is alinost pure Syriac,

12 See the Targun itself on Psalm Ixxvi. 11.

13 There, no doubt, existed another Targum on this book, older than that now in our hands; see Ber. Rabd,, xeiii.

MW See the extant Targum on Job xxiv. 19, and comp. note 19 infra.

5 See R. Nathan b. Yehiel’s ‘Arukh, sv. NOOD, A “ Yerushalmi Targum ” presupposes at least one other.

‘6 The Targum on the Five Megilloth has all one eharacter, and ig therefore wholly Yerushalni.

7 The Targum itself repeatedly quotes another Targum.

18 Sec Rashi on T. B., Megillah, leaf 130, eatchword D3}. We have still two Targums on Esther. It ought to be mentioned here that in the post-Talmudic Massekheth Sopherum, xiii. 6, an Aramaic translation of Esther iii. 1 is given with the introductory words; D3 4D 37 (‘Rab Yoseph targumized ”). This somewhat lengthy translation is found (the quotation from the Targum on Proverbs exeepted) almost verbatim in the Targum Sheni in Loe.

79 The book of Lamentations, and consequently a Targum thereon was no doubt used along with the book of Job and the Targunl thereon, by mourners. See Sehiller-Szinessy, Catalogue, i. p. 27.

20 See Munk, “ Notice sur Saadia ” (Cahen, La Bible: Isaie, Paris, 1838), p. 159. His ingenious remarks are seareely borne out by fact,

71 From a late name oeeurring in a book no conclusions must be drawn, as isolated words may be a mere interpolation. The internal charaeter of a work must deeide the age in which it was eonrposed,

2 Bibliography.—(A) There are MSS. of the Targum—(1) on the Psalms, in Parma (De-Rossi, 31, 32, 732) and Paris (110); (2) on Proverbs, in Parma (31, 32) and Paris (as before) ; (8) on Job, in Parma (81, 32) and Paris (as before) ; (4) on the Five Megilloth, in the Court Library of Vienna (xxix.), Parma (31, 82), the Bod- leian (Uri 1, 44), Cambridge (Add., 436); and (5) on Chronieles in the Vatican (Urb. i.), the Erfurt ministerial library, Cambridge (E 5, 9), and the Bodleian (Uri 35, 36). (B) The earliest editions of the Targum on the Hagiographa (except on Daniel, Ezra-Nehemiah, and Chronicles) are the Rabbinie Bibles, and on Chronicles those of 1680-83 by Beck and 1714 by Wilkins. (C) Translations :—(a) in Hebrew— the Targum Sheni—(1) Leshon Zahab (Const., 1782), and (2) Path- shegen hakkethab (Amst., 1770, repr. at Czernowitz, 1838),—all 8v0; (2) in Latin—(1) on the Psalms, by Aug. Justinianus, and again by Arias Montanus ; (2) on Proverbs, by Alphonsus Zamorensis; (3) om Job, by the same; (4) on Cantieles, by the same, and again by Schreckenfuchs (Basel, 1553, 8vo); (5) on Ruth, by Arias Montanus,

©

State of Teat.—The Targum text is, taken as a whole, in a very corrupt state. The causcs of this corruption are many, but chiefly ‘the following :—(1) mistakes ordinarily made by scribes through ‘carelessness, or ignorance, or both; (2) the Targums had passed ‘from century to century and from country to country without ‘having been written down ; (3) when written down they were prob- me not provided with vowel-points at once ; (4) when provided with vowel-points most of them were first provided with Babylonian (or Assyrian), which afterwards were changed into Palestinian ones ; ‘this change was a fertile source of fresh mistakes ; (5) the loss of ‘the general knowledge of the Targumic idiom contingent on the ‘decline and final fall of the institution of publicly reciting the Targum was an additional source from which mistakes arose ; (6) conjectural cmendations contributed their quota to the corruption of the text ; (7) Buxtorf’s emendations founded on the diction of the Biblical Targum (as suggested in the Mcthurgeman) arc a gross : inasmuch as they lack the criticism of history; (8)

printers’ mistakes, increasing in every new edition, have all but ruined the text. The remedies for this corruption are :—(1) good Targum MSS. in private hands and public libraries, notably in Italy, Germany, and England ; (2) Targum MSS , according to the Babylonico-Assyrian system of punctuation, chiefly preserved in South Arabia, Russia, and England; (3) some early and com- paratively good printcd editions ; (4) the Aassoreth of the Targum. Value of the Targums.—The idea so long entertained, even by the learned, that these old versions were valuable chiefly as guides to the original readings of the sacred text must be given up. All of them contain more or less, whether visible at first sight or not, certain paraphrastic elements, which give no absolute security for the exact reading of the pristine Hebrew tcxt But besides their importance as linguistic monuments they have the highest value as historical records—(1) of the exegesis which obtained at the time of their composition, and (2) of the then current manners, thoughts, and aspirations both of the Jews and of the surrounding nations, ! i? _(8. M. 8.~~S.) TARIFA, a seaport of Spain, in the province of Cadiz, at the extreme south point of the Peninsula, 59 miles south~~ east from Cadiz and (by land) 21 miles west-south-west from Gibraltar. The town is nearly quadrangular, with narrow crooked streets, and is still surrounded by its old Moorish walls. On its east side, just within these, stands | the aleazar. The rocky island in front of the town, con- nected with the mainland by a

causeway, is strongly forti- \fied, and in some sense commands the Strait of Gibraltar. It has a lighthouse, 135 feet high, which has a range of 30 miles. The population within the municipal limits was 12,234 in 1877. Anchovy and tunny fishing is carried on, and there is some coasting trade. The manufactures (leather and earthenware) are unimportant. The oranges of Tarifa are famed for their sweetness. Tarifa is the Julia Joza of Strabo, between Gades and Belon,) which, according to that writer, was colonized by Romans and the ‘removed inhabitants of Zelis in Mauretania Tingitana. The Julia Transducta or Traducta of coins and of Ptolemy appears to be the same place. Its present name (Arabic Jaztrat Tarif) is derived from Tarif, the forerunner of Tarik (see vol. xvi. p. 578). , After a long siege it was taken from the Moors in 1292 by Sancho _IV. of Castile, who entrnsted it to the keeping of Alonzo Perez

Quinquarboreus (Paris, 1556, 4to), Mercerus (Paris, 1564-65 ; revised 1657); (6) on Lamentations, by Alph. Zam., by Quinquarboreus (Paris, 1549, 4to), by Ghislerus (Leyd., 1623, fol.), and again by jlaylerus (Lond. 1651, 4to); on Ecclesiastes, by Ar. Mont., by Schreckenfuchs (Basel, 1555, 8vo), and again by Costus (Leyden, 1554, 4to); (7) on Esther, by Ar, Mont. (1572, folio); (8) Chronicles by Beck from the Erfurt MS. (imperfect, Augsb., 1680-83), and by Wilkins from the Cambridge MS. (Amst. 1715); (c) in German— (1) on the Five Megilloth, by R. Ya‘akob b. Shemuel (Breisgau, 1584, 4to); (2) on the Targum Sheni, by David Ottensosser (Sulzbach, (1820, 8vo). (D) Commentaries:—(a) in Hebrew—(1) on the Targum ot the Five Megilloth, by R. Elyakim Rothenburg (Prague, 1618) ; | (2) on Esther alone, by R. Shemuel Makshan (Prague, 1601, 4to); (3) on thesame Targum, by R. David b. Yehudah Melammed (Cracow, 1644, 4to) ; on the Targum Sheni, by R. David b. Ya’akob (Prague, ce 4to); (6) in Spanish—on Canticles, by R. Mosheh Laniado (Venice, 1619, 4to).

) ‘R, Yehudah Ibn Koreish fully understood the value of the Targums, See his interesting epistle, addressed to the Jewish com- Muuity of Fez, published at Paris (1857, 8vo), under the name of Epistola de Studii Targum Utilitate. A translation of the intro- auctory part (by Wetzstein) is given in the LZ. B. OF iimcal, 29 eS by Dr Berliner, 7. O., p. 168 sq.). Ibn Koreish belonged to the 9th century, and not, as Berliner says, to the 10th or 11th; or was he a Karaite as Graetz (v. p. 293) half believes. ;

de Guzman ; the heroic defence by the latter, commemorated in the Romancero, earncd for him the name of Guzman ‘“‘el Bueno.” It was in the defence of Tarifa that Alfonso XI. gained the battle of Salado, a short distance to the westward, in 1340. The place was successfully defended against the French by Gough,in 1812. TARN, a department of southern France, formed in 1790 of the three dioceses of Albi, Castres, and Lavaur, all belonging to the province of Languedoc, lies between 42° 23’ and 44° 12’ N. lat. and 1° 32’ and 2° 56’ E. long. It is bounded N. and E. by Aveyron, S.E. by Hérault, S. by Aude, S.W. and W. by Haute-Garonne, N.W. by Tarn-et-Garonne. The slope of the department is from east to west, and its general character is moun- tainous or hilly; its three principal ranges, the Mountains of Lacaune (peak of Montalet, 4154 feet), the Sidobre, and the Montagne Noire, belonging to the Cevennes, lie on the south-east. The stony and wind-blown slopes of the first- named are used for pasturage. The highest point of the range and of the department is the Pic de Montalet (4154 feet) ; several other summits are not much short of this. The granite-strewn plateaus of the Sidobre, from 1600 to 2000 feet high, separate the valley of the Agofit from that of the Thoré. The Montagne Noire derives its name from the forests on its northern slope, and some of its peaks are from 3000 to 3500 feet high. The limestone and sandstone foot-hills are clothed with vines and fruit trees, and are broken by deep alluvial valleys of extra-ordinary fertility. With the exception of a small portion of the Montagne Noire, which drains into the Aude, the whole department belongs to the basin of the Garonne, —indeed, if the rivulet Giron be excepted, to that of the Tarn, which flows in a westerly direction past Albi, Gaillac, Lisle, and Rabastens, receiving on the left the Agofit at St Sulpice. Northern Tarn is drained by the Aveyron and its tributary the Viaur. The eastern portion of the department has the climate of Auvergne, the severest in France, but that of the plain is Girondin. At Albi the mean temperature is 55°, and the rainfall 29°5 inches.

The population of the department in 1886 was 358,757.

Of the total area of 2217 square miles, or 1,418,969 acres, there are 887,709 acres of arable land, 118,071 of meadows, 118,934 of vineyards, 186,594 under wood, and 52,408 of moorland. By last returns there were 11,360 horses, 3280 mules, 5430 asses, 20,550 bulls and oxen, 58,900 cows and heifers, 18,240 calves, 455,500 sheep (wool-clip in 1878 1209 tons), 87,700 pigs, 5350 goats, and 17,190 bee-hives. In 1878 37 tons 14 ewt. of silk cocoons were pro- duced. Oxen and sheep are fattened; ewes' milk cheese like that of Roquefort is made; and geese and turkeys are reared. The crops in 1881 were—wheat, 3,429,112 bushels; meslin, 53,118 ; rye, 1,371,040; barley, 37,730; buckwheat, 8448; maize and millet, 1,566,873; oats, 538,422; potatoes, 2,554,860; dry vegetables, 374,715; chestnuts, 268,125; beetroot, 196,625; 782 tons of hemp; 476 of flax; 9,676,476 gallons of wine (only half the quantity of the previous year, owing to the phylloxera). Both common and anal table wines are produced.

The mineral products include marble, porphyry, granite, lime, manganese, sulphate of baryta, alum, iron, lignite, and tourmaline. In 1881 335,430 tons of coal were taken from seven pits, and other mines are about to be opened. There are iron, alkaline, thermal, and carbonate of lime springs. The chief ccutre for the manu- facture of woollen stuffs (in 1875 287 mills, 6457 workmen, and 98,615 spindles) and for wool-spinning and weaving (4893 machine and hand looms) is at Mazamerrt (q.v.), but all sorts of woollen and cotton stufls are produced in other localities. Other industrial products are woollen hosiery, cotton, silk, and linen thread, morocco, hats, earthenware, glass, soap; and there are tanneries, distilleries, flour-mills, breweries, dye-works, sawiills, printing- works, and numerous limekilns, In 1881 929 tons of steel and 1947 tons of iron of various kinds were produced. The Tarn is navigable for 43 miles; there are 208 miles of national roads, 4274 of other roads, and 120 of railway. The department forms the diocese of Albi, and belongs to the 16th corps d'armée (Montpellier), and the court of appeal is at Toulouse. The chef-lieu is Albi. There are 4 arrondissements (Albi, Castres, Gaillac, Lavaur), 35 cantons, and 318 communes.

TARN-ET-GARONNE, a department of south-western France, was formed in 1808 of districts formerly belonging

i to Guienne and Gascony (Quercy, Lomagne, Armagnac, Bi

Rouergue, Agenais), with the addition of a small piece of Languedoc. From 1790 to 1808 it was divided between the departments of Lot, Haute-Garonne, Tarn, Aveyron, Gers, and Lot-et-Garonne. Lying between 43° 47’ and 44° 25’ N. lat. and 0° 55’ and 1° 58’ E. long., it is bounded on the N. by Lot, on the E. by Aveyron, on the S. by Tarn and Haute-Garonne, and on the W. by Gers and Lot-et-Garonne. The Garonne and its tributary the Tarn unite a few miles below Moissac, and separate the elevated lands to the north, which belong to the Cevennes and the central plateau, from those to the south, which are a continuation of the plateau of Lannemezan. The principal tributary of the Tarn on the right is the Aveyron, the affluents of which run through remarkably parallel valleys from north-east to south-west. The general slope of the department is from east to west; the highest point (1634 feet) is on the border of Aveyron, the lowest (164 feet) where the Garonne leaves it. The winter temperature is 37° F., that of spring and autumn 54° F., and that of summer 72° F. Rain falls seldom, but heavily, espe- cially in spring, the annual rainfall being 28-9 inches.

Of a total area of about 1436 square miles, or 919,265 acres, arable land occupies 552,708 acres, meadows and grass 45,078, vineyards 102,849, woods 115,429, moorland and pasturage 41,819. The returns in 1883 showed 2,167,000 bushels of wheat, 35,062 of meslin, 62,975 of rye, 77,000 of barley, 2,722,500 of oats, 759,000 of maize, 1,867,250 of potatoes, 35,468 tous of beetroot, 172 tons 8 cwt. of colza sced, 399 tons of hemp, 394 tons of flax, 250,788 tons of fodder, 12 tons 15 cwt. of silk cocoons, 20,048,380 gallons of wine. The live stock in 1881 included 14,336 horses, 1680 mules, 2120 asses, 89,295 cattle of various descriptions, 116,349 sheep, 1358 goats, 32,375 pigs ; 6847 beehives gave 25 tons 13 cwt. of honey and 8 tons 2 cwt. of wax. There are 57 quarries, employ- ing 426 workmen, where phosphates of lime, lithographic stone, freestone, potters’ clay, gypsum, and schist for slating are worked, as are also iron and copper. The manufacturing industry is repre- sentcd by flour-mills, various kinds of silk-mills (1817 workmen), and manufactories of

linen, wool, and paper. Much fruit is grown, and the principal exports are fresh fruit, wine, flour, phosphates, lithographic stone. ‘There are 83 miles of waterway, including 48 of canal, 156 miles of national roads, 3515 of other roads, 127 of rail- way lines, the centre of which is Montauban. Tarn-et-Garonne is oue of the least densely peopled departments of Francc: in 1886 there were 214,046 inhabitants, and their number is decreasing. Except some 10,000 Calvinists, all are Roman Catholics. The department forms the diocese of Montauban, and belongs to the jurisdiction of the Toulouse court of appeal and to the district of the 17th corps darmée (Toulouse). It has 3 arroudissements (Montauban, Moissac, and Castel-Sarrasin), 24 cantons, and 194 communes.

TARNOPOL, a market-town in Galicia, Austria, on the Sereth. It was formerly a fortress, and rendered valuable services to Polish kings, who, in their turn, conferred upon it important privileges. The town enjoys a brisk trade in grain and wine, and has some sugar factories. Its yearly horse fairs are famous throughout the country. The popu- lation in 1885 was 27,000, about half of them Jews.

TARPAULIN is a waterproof sheeting consisting of a stout canvas cloth impregnated and coated with tar. It is employed for covering hatchways and other openings into the holds of vessels, for making covers for railway and other waggons and farm ricks, and generally for protecting bulky goods and structures from weather and damp. Many waterproof compositions other than tar are used for similar purposes, the principal ingredients being solutions of india-rubber, gutta-percha, and various resinous bodies combined with pigments. See WATERPROOFING.

TARQUINII. See Errvurta, vol. viii. p. 634.

TARQUINIUS PRISCUS, Luctus, fifth legendary king of Rome, is represented as the son of a Greek refugee who removed from Tarquinii in Etruria to Rome, by the advice of his wife, the prophetess Tanaquil. Appointed guardian to the sons of Ancus Marcius, he succeeded in supplanting them on the throne on their father’s death. It was he who first established the Circus Maximus, built the great cloacz, and founded the triple temple on the

e

TA R—

tA 5

Capitol,—the expense of these vast works being defrayed by plunder seized from the Latins and Sabines. Many of the ensigns both of war and of civil office are assigned to his reign, and he was the first to celebrate a Roman triumph, after the Etruscan fashion, in a robe of purple and gold, and borne on a chariot drawn by four horses, After a reign of thirty-eight years he was assassinated by the contrivance of the sons of Ancus Marcius, but Tanaquil had influence enough to secure the succession to Servius Tullius, his son-in-law. See vol. xx. p. 733, TARQUINIUS SUPERBUS, Lucius, son of the pre. ceding, and son-in-law of Servius Tullius, immediately succeeded the latter without any of the forms of election, and proceeded at once to repeal the recent reforms in the constitution, seeking to establish a pure despotisin in their place. Wars were waged with the Latins and Etruscans, but the lower classes were deprived of their arms, and employed in erecting monuments of regal magnificence, while the sovereign recruited his armies from his own retainers and from the forces of foreign allies. The com- pletion of the fortress temple on the Capitoline confirmed his authority over the city, and a fortunate marriage of his son to the daughter of Octavius Manilius of Tusculum secured him powerful assistance in the field. His reign was characterized by bloodshed and violence ; the outrage of his son Sextus upon Lucretia precipitated a revolt, which led to the expulsion of the entire family, after Tarquin had reigned twenty-five years. All efforts to force his way back to the throne were vain, and he died a lonely and childless old man at Cume. See vol. xx. p. 734. TARRAGONA, a maritime province in the north-east of Spain, with an area of 2451 square miles and a popu lation in 1877 of 330,105, was formerly part of the province of Catalonia. It is bounded on the S.E. by the Mediterranean, on the N.E. by Barcelona, on the N. by Lerida (the Sierra de Almenar), on the W. by Saragossa and Teruel, and on the S.W. by Castellon-de-la-Plana, The Ebro flows through the southern portion of the pro- vince, and the other chief streams are the Gaya and the Francoli. The district, although mountainous, is the rich- est in Catalonia. The hills are clothed with vineyards, which

produce excellent wines, and in the valleys are cultivated all kinds of grain, vegetables, rice, hemp, flax, and silk. Olive, orange, filbert, and almond trees reach great perfection, and the mountains yield rich pastures and timber trees of various kinds. Manufactures are well advanced, and comprise all textile fabrics, soap, leather, and spirits. There are also several potteries and coop- erages, and flour, paper, and oil mills. Silver, copper, lead, and barytes are plentiful, and quarries of marble and jasper are worked in the hills. The military government of the province is dependent on the captaincy-general of Catalonia. For administrative purposes the district is divided into eight partidos judiciales, containing 186 ayuntamientos, and returns three senators and eight . deputies to the cortes. Besides the capital, the towns in the province with more than 10,000 inhabitants are Reus (27,691), Tortosa (23,808), and Valls (13,256). TARRAGONA, the capital of the above province, 1s a flourishing seaport, the seat of an archbishopric, at the mouth of the Francoli, 63 miles by rail west-south- west of Barcelona, in 41° 10’ N. lat. and 0° 20’ E. long,, with a population of 23,046 in 1877. The picturesque but badly built older portion of the town stands on the steep slope of a hill 760 feet high, and is still surrounded by walls of Roman (in parts Cyclopean) origin. Below the walls a kroad street, the Rambla, divides the upper from the lower town, which hag been more regularly built in modern times along the low promontory which stretches out into the Mediterranean. The city is most beautifully situated, and

{ vains considerably in effect from its magnificent cathedral, one of the noblest examples of early Spanish art. It is 300 feet in length and 100 feet in breadth, and consisted priginally of a nave, aisles, transepts with an octagonal antern at the crossing, and an apsidal chancel. Several xterior chapels have been added in later times, and on he south-east stands a 14th-century steeple raised on a Romanesque tower. The east end was probably begun in 1131 on the ruins of an earlier church, but the main body ¢ the building dates from the end of the 12th century und the first half of the 13th, and is of transitional char- acter,—the exuberant richness of the sculptured capitals eing admirably kept in subordination by the Romanesque simplicity of the masses. Considerable changes were in- troduced at a later date; and the present west end of the ave cannot have been completed till late in the 14th century. On the north-east side is a cloister contemporary with the church, with which it communicates by a

very fine Boorway. The cloister contains much remarkable work, nd the tracery of the windows bears interesting marks of Moorish influence. Two other noteworthy churches in the lity are San Pablo and Santa Tecla la Vieja, both of the 12th century. The mole, begun in 1491, was chiefly constructed out of the Roman amphitheatre, of which a few ‘rows of seats can still be seen on the sea-shore. The ‘remains of a Roman aqueduct form a picturesque feature in the landscape. The Carcel de Pilatos is said to have been the palace of Augustus Czesar; it was partly destroyed by Suchet, and now serves as a prison. The museum con- tains a collection of the Roman antiquities which are con- tinually being discovered during excavations.

The trade is steadily increasing. During 1885 the vessels cleared ‘amounted to 377,250 tons (45,795 tons British, 47,181 French, ‘and 42,617 Swedish and Norwegian). The exports were valued ‘at £1,289,533 (wine £1,023,847), and the imports at £1,237,012. The exports were mostly to France, Great Britain, and the River Plate; the imports were chiefly from Germany, Russia, France, ‘and Sweden. There is communication by rail with Barcelona, ‘Valencia, and Lerida, and by steamer with other ports of Spain.

Tarraco was one of the earliest strongholds of the Romans in Spain, and became a colony (of Julius Cesar), the capital of His- pania Citcrior, and the richest town on the coast. To the Romans the Visigoths under Euric succeeded in 467, but on their expulsion ‘by the Moors in 710 the city was razed to the ground. It was long _ before the ruins were again inhabited, but by 1089, when the Moors were driven out by Raymond IV. of Barcelona, there must have {been a certain revival of prosperity, for the primacy, which had {18 removed to Vich, was in that ycar restored to Tarragona. In

/

1118 a grant of the fief was made to the Norman Robert Burdet, ‘who converted the town into a frontier fortress against the Moors. In 1705 the city was taken and burned by the English, and a cen- tury later, after being partly fortified by them, it was captured and sacked by the French in 1811 under Suchet.

| TARSHISH. See Pranicta, vol. xviii. p. 806.

TARSUS, now Tarsts, an ancient city in the fertile plain of Cilicia, lay on both sides of the Cydnus, whose cool and swift waters were the pride of the city (Dio Chrys., vol. ii. p. 2, Reiske's ed. ; Vita Apollon., i. 7), and bore traffic to and from the port of Rhegma. In the time of Xenophon (Anab., i. 2. 23) Tarsus was already great and flourishing, and was the residence of the vassal king of Cilicia. Its civilization at this time seems to have been

, mainly Semitic, as was to be expected from the geograph- ical relations of Cilicia, which have generally associated | its history with that of Syria. We have coins of Tarsus | (nn) of the Persian period, bearing Aramaic inscriptions; 'and the deities of the town, known in later times as | Heracles, Perseus, Apollo, Athena (Dio Chr., ii, 22), seem _to have been akin to those of the Phcenicians and Syrians \ (see below). The Semitic influence was doubtless very ancient ; indeed, the Assyrians invaded Cilicia in the 9th | century B.c., at which date Tarsus is perhaps mentioned 'on the monuments under the name of Tarzi (Schrader, : Keilinschr. und Gesch., 1878, p. 240; the reading is not

certain). After Tarsus was Hellenized the citizens learned to boast that they were Argives sprung from the com- panions of Triptolemus (Strabo, xiv. 5. 12; Dio Chr., ii. 20), and the town became the seat of a famous school of philosophy which was frequented almost exclusively by natives, but sent forth teachers as far as Rome itself.1 More than one of these philosophers, notably Athenodorus the teacher of Augustus, and Nestor the teacher of Marcellus, held the chief magistracy of the city. Athenodorus and his predecessors were Stoics, but Nestor was an Academic (Strabo, xiv. 5. 14),? so that the Platonic philosophy is that with which Paul would probably have come in contact if he gave heed to the Greek wisdom of his native city. Presumably, however, he formed no higher opinion of the culture of Tarsus than did his con- temporary Apollonius of Tyana, whose testimony as to the character of the citizens (Vit. Ap., i. 7) is confirmed by Dio Chrysostom. 'Tarsus had made rapid material pro- gress since Cilicia became Roman (66 B.c.). It was the capital of a rich province, and had received freedom from Antony, and from Augustus the dignity of a metropolis and important

immunities for its commerce (Dio Chr., ii. 36). The inhabitants were vain, effeminate, and luxurious, more like Pheenicians than Greeks. Their sensuous Hastern religion in these golden days of affluence had more attrac- tion for them than the grave philosophy of the Porch ; and the legend supposed to be graven on the statue of Sardana- palus, at the neighbour city of Anchiale, “let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die,” which Paul quotes in 1 Cor. xv. 32, might have been the motto of the mass of the townsmen.2 At Tarsus the emperor Tacitus died, and Julian was buried. The city was deserted and lay waste during the frontier wars of Greeks and Arabs in the first century of Islam; a Moslem general, who saw the ruins, estimated its former population at 100,000 (Beladhort, p. 169). It was rebuilt and settled as a military colony and frontier post by Harun al-Rashid in 787 a.D., and became a starting point of forays against the Christians. On such a campaign the caliph Ma’miin died, and was buried at Tarsus (833), having caught a fever, like Alexander the Great, by bathing in the cold Cilician waters. Tarsus was temporarily recovered to Christendom by Nicephorus Phocas, and again by the crusaders under Baldwin. Finally it remained in the hands of the Turks.

The Heracles of Tarsus was the Cilician god Sandan. Dio Chrysostom calls him the apynyds of the Tarsians (ii. 23), and he may be identified with the Baal of Tarsus named on the coins already spoken of. He was worshipped by the periodical erection of “a very fair pyre” (cbid.), a rite presumably analogous to that described in the De Dea Syria, ch. 49; and the remarkable ruin of Déniik-tash, a vast court with massive walls enclosing two lofty platforms of concrete, probably marks the site of his sanctuary (see Perrot and Chipiez, Hist. del’ Art, iv. 586 sq., and Langlois, Voyage dans la Cilicie, p. 265 sq.). A tradition making Sandan the founder of Tarsus is given by Ammianus (xiv. 8. 3); and, as the Greeks appear to have taken clements of the myth of Sandan (including the pyre) into their legend of Sardanapalus, this explains the current story that Sardanapalus founded Anchiale and Tarsus in one day (Arrian, ii. 5,2; Athen., xii. p. 529 sq.). On Sandan, see K. O. Miiller, in Rhein. Mus., 1829, and E. Meyer, in Z. D. M. G., 1877, p. 736 sg. Another account in Amniianus makes Perscus the founder of Tarsus, aud it appears from Dio Chir. that he was almost or quite as much honoured. The footprint of Pegasus was shown at Tarsus (Avienus, 1031 sg.; comp. Dio, ii. 24), and his tapods (wing?) was said to have fallen

there (Alex. Polyh. in Steph. Byz., s.v.). This worship reappears at Joppa. Apollo “ with the trident” had a sacred sword at Tarsus, which could be cleansed only by the water of the Cydnus (Plut., Def. Orac., 41), and is probably the same as the harpe shown on coins of Hadrian’s time; if so, he is presumably a differentiated form of Perseus.

1 To Strabo’s list must be added Zeno, the successor of Chrysippus.

2 Lucian, Macrob., 21, makes him a Stoic and teacher of Tiberius.

3 Atheneus, v. p. 215, tells of an Epicurean philosopher, Lysias, who, becoming priest of Heracles, became tyrant of the city, taxing the rich to provide largesses for the poor. The fact is probable, the date quite uncertain.

68

The worship of Athena may be connected with the statement of Athenodorus (the famous philosopher of Tarsus) that the ancient name of the city was Parthenia (Fr. Hist. Gr., iii. 487); Abydenus in Eusb., Chron., p. 85, ed. Schéne) ascribes the foundation of her temple with its brazen columns and of the city itself to Sennacherib. Thus with the Baal of Tyre there was worshipped an unmarried goddess, as in so many shrines of Syria and Asia Minor. Dio Chr., il. 2, speaks also of Titans as lords of the city. The reference is to Japetus (Japhet ?), grandfather of Cydnus (Athenodorus, wé sup.).

TARTAGLIA, Nicco1 (c. 1500-1557), a self-taught mathematician, was born at Brescia about 1500. His father, Michele Fontana, was a postal messenger between Brescia and the neighbouring towns, who, dying in 1506, left two sons and a daughter to the care of their penniless mother. Niccold’s childhood was accordingly passed under the stress of dire poverty, and was marked by a cruel misfortune. During the sack of Brescia in 1512 he was, in the cathedral where he had vainly sought a refuge, horribly mutilated by some infuriated French soldiers. His skull was laid open in three places, his palate cloven, both jawbones fractured. Yet he recovered with no further assistance than his mother’s patient care. He, however, long continued to stammer in his speech, whence the nickname, adopted by himself, of “Tartaglia.” His education remains a mystery. Save

for the barest rudi- ments of reading and writing, he tells us that he had no master ; yet we find him at Verona in 1521 an esteemed teacher of mathematics. In 1534 he transferred his residence to Venice, and was there met by Antonio del Fiore with a challenge to one of the intellectual duels then customary. Del Fiore relied on his possession of an undivulged formula by Scipione del Ferro for the solution of a particular case of cubic equations. But Tartaglia had attained in 1530 similar result, which he now, in Feb- ruary 1535, greatly extended. His consequent triumph over his adversary gave him a high reputation, and his house became the resort of the learned of all grades and nations. The mystery in which he chose to shroud his method of dealing with cubic equations promised him a highly effective weapon in future contests, as well as leisure to perfect, before publishing, the coveted rules. But in 1539 Cardan enticed him to Milan, and there, by unremitting solicitations, procured from him the rude verses in which he had enshrined his discovery (see ALGEBRA, vol. i. p. 513). The Milanese physician's breach of his oath of secrecy gave rise toa bitter and lifelong quarrel, the most conspicuous incident in which was a public disputation at Milan, August 10, 1548, at which Cardan shrank from appearing. In 1548 Tartaglia ac- cepted a situation as professor of Euclid at Brescia, but returned to Venice at the end of eighteen months. He died at Venice December 13, 1557. Acrid and emulous in disposition, he incurred abundant enmities; yet his honesty, uprightness, and the morality of his life remain unimpeached. He was keen-witted, diligent, and ingenious, and by his discoveries in the solution of equations helped to initiate the rapid progress of modern mathematics.

Tartaglia's first printed work, entitled Nova Seientia (Venice, 1537), dealt with the theory and practice of gunnery, to which his attention had been drawn in 1581 by the question of a bombardier at Verona as to the elevation giving the greatest range. He easily found it to be 45° (true only im vaewo), but failed to demonstrate the correctness of his intuition. Indeed, he never shook off the erroncous ideas of his time regarding the paths of projectiles, further than to see that no part of them could be a straight line, He nevertheless inaugurated the scientific treatment of the subject, and his propositions reappeared in most ballistical treatises down to Blondel's in 1688. The publication of the Nova Seientia was determined by the menacing attitude of Soliman II. Unless in the interests of Christendom,

Tartaglia regarded it as a crime to promote arts of destruction. Inquiries rendered lawful by necessity were, however, resumed in his Quesiti et Invenzioni Diverse, a col- lection of the author's replies to questions addressed to him by persons of the most varied conditions, published in 1546, with a dedication to Henry VIII. of England. Problems in artillery

occupy two out of nine books; thesixth treats of fortification; the ninth gives several examples of the solution of equations of the third degree. His last years were full of activity. He published — in 1551 Regola Generale per sollevare ogni affondata Nave, intitolata

la Travagliata Invenzione (an allusion to his personal troubles at Brescia), setting forth a method for raising sunken ships, and describing the diving-bell, then little known in western urope. He pursued the subject in Ragionamenti sopra la Travagliata Invenzione (May 1551), adding a table of specific gravities. Of his largest work, entitled General T'rattato dt Numeri ¢ Misure, two parts appeared at Venice in 1556, the remaining four post- humously in 1560. This is a comprehensive mathematical treatise, including arithmetic, geometry, mensuration, and algebra as far as quadratic equations. He designed to embody the results of his original investigations in a separate form; but his Algebra Nova remained unwritten. He published the first Italian translation of Euclid (1543) and the earliest version from the Greek of some of the principal works of Archimedes (1543). These included the tract De Insidentibus Aquex, of which his Latin now holds the place of the lost Greek text. An Italian version of it is appended to his Ragionamenti. Tartaglia was the first Italian writer on forti-

fication, and claimed the invention of the gunner's quadrant.

Tartaglia''s own account of his early life is contained in his Quesit?, lib. vi. p. 74, See also Bittanti's Discorso di Niccold Tartaglia, Brescia, 1871; Buoncom- pagni, Intorno ad un Testamento inedito di N. Tartaglia, Milan, 1881; Libri, Hist. des Sciences Mathématiques, t. iii. p. 149; Montucla, Hist. des Math., vol. i. p. 567 ; Marie, Hist. des Sciences, t. ii. p. 242; Hankel, Zur Gesch. d. Math., 1874, p. 860; Rossi, Elogi di Bresciani Illustrt, p. 886. Tartaglia's writings on gunnery were translated into English

by Lucar in 1588, and into French by Rieffel in 1845. Thos. Salusbury published (London, 1564) an English version of ‘his Travagliata Invenzione, and a selection from his writings appeared at Venice in 1606 with the title Opere del Famosissimo Niccolo Tartagléa, 1 vol. 8vo.

TARTAN is a worsted cloth woven with alternate stripes or bands of coloured warp and weft, so as to form a chequered pattern in which the colours alternate in “sets” of definite width and sequence. The weaving of particoloured and striped cloth cannot be claimed as peculiar to any special race or country, for indeed such checks are the simplest ornamental form into which dyed yarns can be combined in the loom. But the term tartan is specially applied to the variegated cloth used for the principal portions of the distinctive costume of the High- landers of Scotland. For this costume, and the tartan of which it is composed, great antiquity is claimed, and it is asserted that the numerous clans into which the Highland population were divided had each from time to time a special tartan by which it was distinguished. After the rebellion of 1745 various Acts of Parliament were passed for disarming the Scottish Highlanders and for prohibiting the use of the Highland dress in Scotland, under severe penalties. These Acts remained nominally in force till 1782, when they were formally repealed, and since that time clan tartan has, with varying fluctuations of fashion, been a highly popular article of dress, by no means con- fined in its use to Scotland alone; and many new and imaginary “sets” have been invented by manufacturers, with the result of introducing confusion in the heraldry of tartans, and of throwing doubt on the reality of the distinctive “sets” which at one time undoubtedly were more or less recognized as the badge of various clans. The manufacture has long been carried on at Bannockburn, in the neighbourhood of Stirling, and it still continues to be a feature of the local industries there.

Undoubtedly the term tartan was known, and the material was woven, “‘of one or two colours for the poor and more varicd for the rich,” as early as the middle of the 15th eentury. In the accounts of John, bishop of Glasgow, treasurer to King James ITI. in 1471, there occurs, with other mention of the material, the following :—‘‘ Ane elne and ane halve of blue Tartane to lyne his gowne of cloth of Gold.” It is here obvious that the term is not restricted to particoloured chequered textures.!_ In 1538 accounts were

incurred for a Highland dress for King James V. on the occasion of a hunting excursion in the Highlands, in which there are charges for ‘‘ variant cullorit velvet,” for ‘‘ane schort Heland coit,” and for ‘‘Heland tartane to be hose to the kinge’s grace.” Bishop Lesley, in his De Origine, Moribus, et Rebus Gestis Scotorum, published in 1578, says of the ancient and still-used dress of the Highlanders and islanders, ‘fall, both noble and common people, wore mantles of one sort (except that the nobles preferred those of several colours).” George Buchanan, in his Rerum Scoticarum

? Neither so is it in the French tiretaine or in the Spanish tiritafta.

TA R—TAR

Historia (1582), as translated by Monypenny (1612), says of the Highlanders, ‘‘they delight in marled clothes, specially that have any long stripes of sundry colours; they love chiefly purple and blue. Their predecessors used short mantles or plaids of divers colours sundry ways divided ; and amongst some the same custom) is observed to this day.” A hint of clan tartan distinctions is given by Martin in his Western Isles of Scotland (1703), which work also contains a minutc description of the dress of the High- landers and the manufacture of tartan. ‘‘ Every isle,” he observes, “ differs from each other in their fancy of making plaids, as to the stripes in breadth and colours. This humour is as different through the mainland of the Highlands, in so far that they who have seen those places is able at the first view of a man’s plaid to guess the

place of his residence.”

See W. and A. Smith, Tartans of the Clans of Scotland, 1850; J. Sobieski Stuart, Vestiarium Scoticum, 1842; R. R. M‘lan, Clans of the Scottish Highlands, 1845-46 ; J. Grant, Tartans of the Clans of Scotland, Edinburgh, 1885.

TARTARIC ACID, in its ordinary acceptation, refers to one acid, (C,H,O,)H,, which occurs in most acid fruit juices, in association generally with malic or citric, or both. Grape-juice owes its sourness almost entirely to acid tartrate of potash. While the juice ferments into wine, the greater part of the acid tartrate separates out, along with tartrate of lime, colouring

matter, and other impurities, as a hard crust adhering to the sides of the cask. Such impure acid tartrate of potash is known commercially as “argol.” It was known to the Greeks as zpvé, to the Romans as fx wm. The alchemists from the 11th century called it tartarus, which name has survived in familiar chemical parlance to this day. The true constitution of ¢artarus vint was discovered by Scheele in 1769. He was the first to isolate the acid from its acid potash salt by a method which is still used for its industrial extraction.

Manufacture.—Crude tartar (10 to 14 ewts.) is placed in a tank, and dissolved in sufficient water with the help of steam. The surplus acid is then neutralized by addi- tion of powdered chalk, and precipitated as lime salt :-—

2(CH 0.) KH = (C,H 09K, + (C,1,0,)H 5

normal salt, acid. (C,H,0,)H, + Ca CO,=(C,H,0,)Ca+ H,0 +C0,. The other half of the tartaric acid which remains dissolved as normal potash salt is then precipitated in the same form by addition of chloride of caleium :— (C,H,0,)K, + CaCl, = 2KCl + (C,H,0,)Ca. The tartrate of lime precipitate is collected, washed, and decomposed by an excess of sulphuric acid at 75° C.:— (C,H,0,)Ca H,80,—CaS0,(C,H,0,)Hy. The sulphate of lime is removed by decanting and filter- ing, and the acid solution evaporated in leaden pans to a sufficient degree to deposit crystals on standing in the cold. The crystals are purified by redissolving them in hot water, decolorizing the solution with animal charcoal, and causing the acid to crystallize a second time after addition of sulphuric acid, which promotes the formation of large crystals. The crystals contain a little sulphuric acid and a trace of lead ; if intended for internal use, they must be recrystallized from pure water.

Tartaric acid forms hard colourless transparent mono- clinic prisms of 1:764 spec. grav., easily soluble in cold and abundantly in hot water. It has a strong but agree- able sour taste. At 15° C. 100 parts of water dissolve 138 parts of the acid, 100 of alcohol (absolute) 20:4, and 100 of ether 0°39. It fuses at 135° ©. and passes into an amorphous modification known as meta-tartaric acid ; when heated more strongly it loses water, and passes into the forms of anhydrides. At high temperatures it is decomposed with formation of charcoal and volatile pro- ducts, which smell pretty much like

those formed from Sugar in the same circumstances. Most oxidizing agents produce formic from the aqueous acid. Boiling with oxide of silver and excess of caustic alkali produces oxalate.

Tartaric acid is used largely in calico printing as a discharge. In pharmacy and households it serves, con- Jointly with bicarbonate of soda or potash, for the extem-

poraneous preparation of effervescing drinks. The so- called German effervescing powders are a combination of weighed-out doses of tartaric acid and of bicarbonate of soda. In the so-called “seltzogénes” (glass apparatus in which carbonic acid is produced in one compartment, to be forced by its own pressure into a mass of water, wine, &c., in the other) the gas is similarly produced.

Lartrates.—The acid potash salt, (CsH,Og)HK, ‘cream of tartar,” is prepared from crude tartar (argol) by dissolving it in hot water, filtcring off what remains of tartrate of lime and other impurities, and allowing the filtrate to crystallize. The crystals are generally contaminated with a little of the lime-salt, for the removal of which the best method is to treat the powdered crystals with cold dilute hydrochloric acid and then wash them with cold water by displacement. The lime passes into the filtrate. Cream of tartar forms small colourless hard crystals which dissolve in about 200 parts of cold and in 15 parts of boiling water. In alcohol the salt is even less soluble than in water.

The normal (neutral) potash salt, (ChH,O,)K,+4H,0, is prepared by dissolving powdered cream of tartar in hot solution of carbonate of potash until a neutral or slightly alkaline solution is produced. The salt, being extremely soluble in water, does not. crystallize very readily. In former times the carbonate of potash required used to be made by igniting one half of the cream of tartar to be operated upon in a crucible. Hence the name of tartarus tartaris- atus, which is still familiar in pharmacy. The salt is used medi- cinally, and also for removing free acid from excessively sour wine by formation of relatively insoluble bitartrate (Liebig’s method).

Rochelle salt, (CsH,0,)KNa+4H,©, is prepared by not quite neutralizing hot solution of carbonate of soda with powdered cream of tartar. The (filtered) hot solution deposits on cooling magnificent crystals, readily soluble in water, though less so than the unmixed potash salt. Rochelle salt is used as a mild purgative. The so-called Seidlitz powders are effervescing powders with a con- siderable addition of Rochelle salt to the bicarbonate.

The normal tartratcs of lime, baryta, &c., are insoluble precipi- tates producible by double decompositions.

Tartar emetic, (C,H,0,)K(SbO)+4H,0, is produced by boiling 4 parts of oxide of antimony, Sb,O,, and 5 of powdered cream of tartar with 50 of water for about an hour. The filtered solution, on cooling, deposits crystals of the above composition soluble in 15 parts of cold and 2°8 of boiling hot water. ‘The crystals gene- rally exhibit the appearance of tetrahedra; yet they are rhombic prisms combined with pyramids. The process going on in the formation of the salt is easily understood if we remember that Sb,O, often acts on aqueous acids as if it were the monoxide, (SbO),0, of a radical (SbO) antimonyl. (SbO),0+H,0 is equi- valent to 2(SbO)OH, and

(C,H,0,)KH + OH(SbO) =H,0 + (C,H,0,)K(Sb0).

Tartar emetic has long had a standing in medicine. In doses of 1-3 grains it acts as a powerful emetic; very small doses (#5 to yy grain) induce perspiration. Large doses produce poisonous effects.

Analysis.—Tartaric acid is characterized chiefly by the relative insolubility of its acid potash salt. To produce it from a solution of a neutral tartrate, add acetic acid and acetate of potash, and stir vigorously; the salt gradually separates out as a crystalline precipitate. Neutral tartrate solutions, with chloride of calcium, give a precipitate of tartrate of lime, which is at first amorphous, and in this condition dissolves pretty readily in excess of reagent or tartrate, but in general re-separates in the crystalline form (the undissolved tartrate likewise becomes crystalline) on standing.

Anhydrides.—Tartaric acid, when kept at 185°, fuses and becomes meta-tartaric acid without change of weight, and on continued appli- cation of 140-150° C., ditartrylic acid, CgH,,)0,,=2C,H,O,~~—H.O; and at 180°~~

~~tartrelic acid, Cs;H,0j)=2C,H,O, — 2H,0, is produced. All these three acids form salts of their own, which, however, tend to become tartrates in the presence of water. At 180° real tartaric anhydride (like tartrelic, CsH,O;)=2C,H,O;) is produced, in addi~~ tion to tartrelic acid, as an infusible yellowish mass, insoluble in water and in ether. By continued contact with water it is con- verted finally into tartaric acid solution.

Lsomeric Modifications.—Among these racemic acid has long been known as an occasional bye-product in the manufacture of tartaric acid. It used to be believed that racemic acid is present ready formed in certain grape-juices, and thus comes to make its appear- ance occasionally; but it is well known now that the bulk of it at any rate is produced from what was originally tartaric acid, by the continued action of high temperatures and water. Racemic acid is almost identical with tartaric acid; the only purely chemical point of difference is that corresponding salts of the two acids often crystallize with different proportions of water. The two acids, however, are easily distinguished by their action on polarized light (see POLARITY, vol. xix. p. 314). A solution of tartaric acid turns the plane of polarization to the right ; racemie acid is, in this sense,

optically inactive. These long-known facts led Pasteur to the discovery of the true relations of the two acids. If the double racemate, (CyH,O0,)Na(NH,), is allowed to crystallize slowly, two kinds of crystals are’ produced, both bearing hemiedric faces, but differing from each other in the situation of these, exactly as the right hand differs from the left. Pasteur separated the two kinds of crystals, and found that one kind is identical with the ordinary (dextro-) tartrate of soda and ammonia, while the other contains a new kind of tartaric acid, which he called levo-tartaric acid because it turns the plane of polarization to the left. Equal weights of the two acids, when dissolved separately in water and mixed, unite, with perceptible evolution of heat, into optically neutral racemic acid. Racemic acid, then, is levo- and dextro-tartaric united (loosely) into one molecule. There are a number of optically inactive tartaric acids, not susceptible of decomposition in the sense in which racemic acid is. (W. D.) TARTARS (more correctly Tatars, but Tartars is the form generally current), a name

given to nearly three million inhabitants of the Russian empire, chiefly Moslem and of Turkish origin. The majority—in European Russia—are remnants of the Mongol invasion of the 13th century (see Moneots), while those who inhabit Siberia are survivals of the once much more numerous Turkish population of the Ural-Altaic region, mixed to some extent with Finnish and Samoyedic stems, as also with Mongols. The name is derived from that of the Ta-ta Mongols, who in the 5th century inhabited the north-eastern Gobi, and, after subjugation in the 9th century by the Tungus Kidafis, migrated southward, there founding the Mongolian empire under Jencuiz Kuan (q.v.). Under the leadership of his grandson (Batu) they moved west- wards, driving with them many stems of the Turkish Ural-Altaians towards the plains of Russia. The ethnographical features of the present Tartar inhabitants of European Russia, as well as their language, show that they contain no admixture (or very little) of Mongolian blood, but belong to the Turkish branch of the Ural-Altaic stock, necessitating the conclusion that only Batu, his warriors, and a limited number of his followers were Mongolians, while the great bulk of the 13th-century invaders were Turks, On the Volga they mingled with remnants of the old Bulgarian Turkish empire, and elsewhere with Finnish stems, as well as with remnants of the ancient Italian and Greek colonies in Crimea and Caucasians in Caucasus. The name of Tatars, or Tartars, given to the invaders, was afterwards extended so as to include different stems of the same Turkish branch in Siberia, and even the bulk of the then little known inhabitants of the high plateau of Asia and its north-western slopes, which was described under the general name of Tartary. This last name has almost disappeared from geographical literature, but the name Tartars, in the above limited sense, remains in full use. The present Tartar inhabitants of the Russian empire form three large groups,—those of European Russia and Poland, those of Caucasus, and those of Siberia. The discrimination of the separate stems included under the name is still far from completion. The following subdivisions, however, may be regarded as established. (1) The Kazafi Tartars, descendants of the Kiptchaks settled on the Volga in the 13th century, where they mingled with survivors of the Bulgar Turks and partly with Finnish stems. They number about halfa million in the government of Kazafi, about 100,000 in each of the governments of Ufa, Samara, and Simbirsk, and about 300,000 in Vyatka, Saratoff, Tamboff, Penza, Nijni-Novgorod, Perm, and Orenburg; some 15,000 belonging to the

same stem have migrated to Ryazafi, or have been settled as prisoners in the 16th and 17th centuries in Lithuania (Vilna, Grodno, and Podolia); and there are some 2000 in St Petersburg. In Poland they constitute 1 per cent. of the population of the district of Ptock. “The Kazai Tartars speak a pure Turkish dialect ; they are middle-sized, broad- shouldered, and strong, and mostly have black eyes, a straight nose, aud salient cheek bones. They are Mohammedans; polygamy is practised only by the wealthier classes and is a waning institution. Excellent agriculturists and gardeners, very laborious, and having a good reputation for honesty, they live on the best terms with their Russian peasant neighbours. It may be added that, according to M. Yuféroff (Etude éthn. sur les Bachkirs, 1881), those Bashkirs who live between the Kama, Ural, and Volga are not of Fiunish origin, but in virtue of their history, language, anthropological features,

TA R—

LA

and customs must be regarded as Tartars. (2) The Astrakhan Tartars (about 10,000) are, with the Mongol Kalmucks, all that now re- mains of the once so powerful Astrakhan empire. They also are agriculturists and gardeners; while some 12,000 Kundrovsk Tartars still continue the nomadic life of their ancestors. (3) The Crimean Tartars, who occupied the Crimea in the 13th century, have pre- served the name of their leader, Nogai. During the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries they constituted a rich empire, which prospered * until it fell under Turkish rule, when it had to suffer much from the wars fought between Turkey and Russia for the possession of the peninsula. The war of 1853 and the laws of 1860-63 and 1874 caused an exodus of the Crimean Tartars; they abandoned their admirably irrigated fields and gardens and moved to Turkey, so that now their number falls below 100,000. Those of the south coast, mixed with Greeks and Italians, are well known for their skill in gardening, their honesty, and their laborious habits, as well as for their fine features, presenting the Tartar type at its best, The mountain Tartars closely resemble those of Caucasus, while those of the steppes—the Nogais—are decidedly of a mixed origin from Turks and Mongolians.

The Tartars of Caucasus, who inhabit the upper Kubai, the steppes of the lower Kuma and the Kura, and the Araxes, number about 1,350,000. Of these (4) the Nogais on the Kuma show traces of an intimate mixture with Kalmucks. They are nomads, supporting themselves by cattle-breeding and fishing; few are agriculturists, (5) The Karatchais (18,500) in the upper valleys about Elburz live by agriculture. (6) The mountain Tartars (about 850,000), divided into many tribes and of an origin still undetermined, are scattered throughout the provinces of Baku, Erivan, Tiflis, Kutais, Dagh-estan, aud partly also of Batum. ‘They are certainly of a mixed origin, and present a variety of cthnological types, all the more go as all who are neither Armenians nor Russians, nor belong to any distinct Caucasian tribe, are often called Tartars. As a rule they are well built and little behind their Caucasian brethren. They are celebrated for their excellence as gardeners, agriculturists, cattlé- tenders, and artisans. Although most fervent Shiites, they are on very good terms both with their Sunnite and with their Russian neighbours. Polygamy is rare with them, and their women go to work unveiled.

The Siberian Tartars, mostly mixed with Finnish stcms, are the most difficult to classify. They occupy three distinct regions,—a strip running west to east from Tobolsk to ‘Fomsk, the Altai and its spurs, and South Yeniseisk. They originated in the agalo- merations of Turkish stems which in the region north of the Altai succeeded the Ugro-Samoyedic civilization (sec Siperia), and reached a relatively high degree of culture between the 4th and the 8th centuries, but were subdued and enslaved by the Mongols. In the meantime the following subdivisions of the Siberian Tartars may be accepted. (7) The Baraba Tartars, who take their name from one of their stems (Barama), number about 50,000 in the government of Tobolsk and about 5000 in Tomsk. After a strenuous resistance to Russian conquest, and much suffering at a later period from Kirghiz and Kalmuck raids, they now live by agri- culture, either in separate villages or along with Russians. (8) The Tcholym or Tchulym Tartars on the Tcholym and both the rivers Yus speak a Turkish language with many Mongolian and Yakut words, and are more like Mongols than Turks. In last century they paid a tribute for 2550 arbaletes, but they now are rapidly becoming fused with Russians. (9) The Abakan or Minu- sinsk Tartars occupied the steppes on the Abakau and Yus in the 17th century, after the withdrawal of the Kirghizes, and represent a

mixture with Koibals (whom Castrén considers as partly of Ostiak and partly Samoyedic origin) and Beltirs—also of Finnish origin. Their language is also mixed. They are known under the name of Sagais, who nuinbered 11,720 in 1864, and are the purer Turkish stem of the Minusinsk Tartars, Koibals, and Kyzyl or Red Tartars. Formerly Shamanists, they now are, nominally at least, adherents of the Greek Orthodox Church, and support themselves mostly by cattle-breeding. Agriculture is spreading but slowly among them; they still prefer to plunder the stores of bulbs of Liliwm Martagon, Peonia, and Erythronium Dens canis laid up by the steppe mouse (Afus socialis). The Soyotes, or Soyons, of the Sayan Mountains, who are Finns mixed with Turks, the Uryankhes of north-west Mongolia, who are of Turkish origin but follow Buddhism, and the Karagasses, also of Turkish origin but much like the Kirghizes, and reduced now to a few hundreds, are akin to the above. (10) The Tartars of the northern slopes of the Altai (nearly 20,000 in number) are of Finnish origin. They comprise some hundreds of Kumandintses, the Lebed Tartars, the Tchernevyie or Black- Forest Tartars, and the Shors (11,000), descendants of the Kuznetsk or Iron-Smith Tartars. They are chiefly hunters, passionately lov- ing their éazga, or wild forests, and have maintained their Shaman religion and tribal organization into suoks. They live partly also on cedar-nuts and honey collected in the forests. Their dress is that of their former rulers, the Kalmucks, and their language con- tains many Mongolian words. (11) The Altai Tartars, or “Altaians,” comprise—(a@) the Mountain Kalmucks (12,000), to whom this name

has been given by mistake, and who have nothing in common with the Kalmucks except their dress and mode of life, while they speak a Turkish dialect, and (0) the Teleutes, or Telenghites (5800), a remainder of a formerly numerous and warlike nation who have migrated from the mountains to the lowlands, where they now live along with Russian peasants.

Finally, there are a number of Tartars in Turkestan and Central Asia. Without including under this name the Sarts and the Kuramintses of Turkestan, still less the Kirghiz-Kazaks, it may be reckoned that there are

still nearly 30,000 survivors of the Uigurs in the valley of the 1li, about Kuldja, and in the Khami oasis.

As is evident from the above, although the name Tartars originated in an indiscriminate application of the word to the Turkish and Mongolian stems which invaded Europe six centuries ago, and its gradual extension to the Turkish stenis mixed with Mongolian or Finnish blood in Siberia, it still represents an aggre- gate of characters which warrant at least a provisional use of this genetic name, if those to whom it is given are properly subdivided. It embodies stems which, although widely distinct, still have some common ethnographical and philological features, besides being to some extent of like origin and history.

Yhe literature of the subject is very extensive, and bibliographical indexes may be found in the Geographical Dictionary of P. Semenoff, appended to the articles devoted respectively to the names given above, as also in the ycarly Indexes by M. Mezhoff. Besides the well-known works of Castrén, which are a very rich source of information on the subject, Schiefner (St Petersburg academy of science), Donner, Ahlqvist, and other explorers of the Ural-Altaians, as also those of the Russian historians Solovieff, Kostomaroff, Bestuzheff-Riumin, Schapoff, and Dlovaiskiy, the following containing valuable information may be mentioned :—the publications of the Russian Geographical Society and its branches ; the Russian Htnographicheskiy Sbornik ; the Jzvestia of the Moscow society of the amateurs of natural science; the works of the Russian ethnographical con- gresses; Kostroff's rescarches on the Siberian Tartars in the memoirs of the Siberian branch of the geogr. soc.; Radlotf's Reise durch wen Altai, Aus Sibirien; * Picturesque Russia ' (Jivopisnaya Rossiya) ; Semenoff's and Potanin's "'Supple- ments" to Ritter's Asien ; Harkavi's report to the congress at Kazafi ; Hartakhai's "Hist. of Crimean Tatars," in Vyestnik Evropy, 1866 and 1867; '' Katchinsk Tartars," in Jzvestia Ituss. Geogr. Soc., xx., 1884. (B.A. I)

TARTARUS, in the Jliad (viii. 13 sg., 481), is a dark underground prison with iron gates, as far below Hades as earth is below heaven, whither Cronus and the Titans were thrust down by Zeus (vol. xxi. p. 321), and to which the sovereign of Olympus threatens to consign other gods who may

disobey his behests. Later writers make Tartarus the place of punishment of the wicked after death : Aineas, in his visit to the abode of the shades, comes to a point where the road divides, the branch to the right leading to Elysium and that on the left to the prison-house of Tartarus, girt about by a triple wall, with the fiery Phlege- thon as a moat, and guarded by the fury Tisiphone (Z7., vi. 540 sq.). Tartarus is personified as the son of A‘ther and Ge, and father of the giants Typhoeus and Echidna.

TARTINI, Gruserre (1692-1770), violinist, composer, and inusical theorist, was born at Pirano, April 12, 1692, and in early life studied, with equal want of success, for the church, the law courts, and the profession of arms. His life as a young man was wild and irregular, and his temper extremely violent and impulsive. His unfitness for an ecclesiastical career was manifest ; and, after failing in jurisprudence, he crowned his improprieties by clan- destinely marrying the niece of Cardinal Cornaro, arch- bishop of Padua. Though the family of Tartini had been legally ennobled, the cardinal resented the marriage as a disgraceful mésalliance, and denounced it so violently that the unhappy bridegroom, thinking his life in danger, fled for safety to a monastery at Assisi, where, calmed by the soothing influence of the religious life, his character underwent a complete change. Docile and obedient, as he had before been passionate and headstrong, he studied the theory of music under Padre Boemo, the organist of the monastery, and, without any assistance whatever, taught himself to play the violin in so masterly a style that his performances in the church became the wonder of the neighbourhood. For more than two years his identity remained undiscovered, but one day the wind blew aside a curtain behind which he was playing, and one of his hearers recognized him and betrayed his retreat to the cardinal, who, hearing of his changed character, re- admitted him to favour and restored him to his wife.

Tartini next removed to Venice, where the fine violin-

playing of Veracini excited his admiration and prompted him to repair, by the aid of good instruction, the short- comings of his own self-taught method. After this he studied for some time at Ancona; and here, about 1714, he made the curious acoustical discovery on which his fame as a

theorist chiefly rests. He observed that, when two notes are sounded together on the violin with sufficient in- tensity, a third sound, distinct from both, is simultaneously produced. For the production of this “third sound,” as he called it, Tartini failed to account on strict mathematical principles. When the two primary notes form an im- pure consonance, the “third sound ” of Tartini (now known as a difference tone of the first order) is accompanied by beats due to the presence of different tones of higher orders, the existence of which, unknown of course to Tartini, has been established by Helmholtz. Tartini made his observations the basis of a theoretical system which he set forth in his 7rattato di Musica, secondo la vera scienzia dell’ Armonia (Padua, 1754) and Dei Principi dell’ Armonia Musicale (Padua, 1767). In 1721 he re- turned to Padua, where he was appointed solo violinist at the church of San Antonio. From 1723 to 1726 he acted as conductor of Count Kinsky’s private band, but after- wards returned to his old post at Padua, where he died on February 16, 1770.

Tartini’s compositions are very numerous, and faithfully illustrate his passionate and masterly style of execution, which surpassed in brilliancy and refined taste that of all his contemporaries. He frequently headed his pieces with an explanatory poetical motto, such as ‘* Ombra cara,” or ‘‘ Volgete il riso in pianto o mie pupille.” Concerning that known as Jd Trillo del Diavolo, or The Devil’s Sonata, he told a curious story to Lalande, in 1766. He drcamed that the devil had become his slave, and that he one day asked him if he could play the violin. The devil replied that he believed he could pick out a tune, and thereupon he played a sonata so exquisite that Tartini thought he had never heard any music to equal it. On awaking, he tried to note down the composition, but succeeded very imperfectly, though the resulting Devil’s Sonata is one of his best and most celebrated productions.

Besides the theoretical works we have mentioned, Tartini wrote a Trattato delle Appogiature, posthumously printed in French, and an unpublished work, Delle Ragioni e delle Proporzioni, the MS. of which has been lost.

TARUDANT. See Morocco, vol. xvi. p. 834.

TASHKEND, or TasHKEnt, one of the largest and most important cities of Central Asia, now the capital of Russian Turkestan, is situated in the valley

of the Tchir- tchik, some 50 miles above its junction with the Syr-Daria, in 41° 20’ N. lat. and 69° 18’ E.long. The city, formerly enclosed by walls which are now ruinous, is surrounded by rich gardens, and its houses are buried among the fruit and other trees which grow all along the number- less ramifications of the irrigation canals. The buildings, which are of stone and sun-dried bricks, are mostly low, on account of the earthquakes which frequently disturb the region. Like all old cities of Asia, Tashkend is sub- divided into sections (yurts), which are characterized by the special trades carried on in each. Asiatic Tashkend in 1871 had 78,130 inhabitants, mostly Sarts (75,176), with a few Uzbegs, Kirghizes, Jews, Russians, and Ger- mans. A depression in the south-east is occupied by Rus- sian Tashkend, dating from 1865, which has clean, broad streets lined with poplars, the low nice-looking houses being surrounded by gardens. In 1875 its population, exclusive of the military, was 4860, mostly Russians. It has a public library containing a rich collection of works on Central Asia, an observatory, a museum, two gymnasia, a seminary, and the buildings occupied by the administra- tion. A branch of the Russian Geographical Society has been opened at Tashkend, and its publications, as also those of the statistical committee and the Turkestan Gazette, contain most valuable information about Turkestan. Ac- cording to the most recent estimates, the population of

Tashkend, with its suburbs, is reckoned at 100,000. In consequence of the chequered history of the town (see TURKESTAN), few old buildings have been preserved, and only the madrasah Beklar Bek, with its fifty students, and the graves of Sheikh Zenedjin-baba and Zenghi-ata are worthy of mention. The former is four centuries old, and that of Zenghi-ata, a saint held in high veneration through- out Central Asia, yearly attracts thousands of pilgrinis.

A variety of petty trades are carried on in numerous small work- shops,—weaving and dyeing of cottons and the manufacture of small brass and iron wares, of harness, and especially of boots, being the chief. Most of the inhabitants are also engaged in raising corn, rice, oil-plants, cotton, wine, and lucerne, and in gardening. The trade of T’ashkend has lost its former

importance, but corn, cattle, silk, cotton, and fruits are still exported, and all kinds of manu- factured wares are imported from the countries to the south.

TASMAN, Ase, JanszEn (c. 1602-1659), a dis- tinguished Dutch navigator, born at Hoorn, North Hol- land, probably in 1602 or 1603. He is known to have made two important voyages of discovery in the Pacific and Southern Oceans; only of the second of them have we a full account. In June 1639 Tasman, along with Matthew Quast, was despatched by Van Diemen, governor- general of the Dutch East Indies, on a voyage to the Western Pacific, which was first directed to the Philippine Islands; part of the coast of Luzon was explored. Sailing east and north Tasman and Quast touched at several of the Bonin Islands, which they were probably the first to discover. Sailing still farther north, in quest of what were then known as the “islands of gold and silver,” they reached the latitude of 38° 40’ N., about 600 miles east of Japan, and continued east for other 300 miles on the parallel without discovering anything. On October 15 the navigators decided to return, and, after touching at Japan, anchored at Taiwan-fu, Formosa, November 21. After this, Tasman was engaged in operations in the Indian seas until 1642, when he set out on his first great expedition! Several Dutch navigators had already dis- covered various portions of the west coast of Australia, and the Dutch East India Company were anxious to obtain a more accurate and extended survey of that land. Sailing from Batavia on August 14, 1642, with two vessels, the ‘ Heemskirk” and “Zeehaan,” Tasman on November 24 sighted the land to which he gave the name of Van Diemen, in honour of the governor-general, but which is now named Tasmania. He doubled the land, which he evidently did not know was an island, and, run- ning up Storm Bay, anchored on December 1 in the bay to which he gave the name of Frederick Henry. There he set up a post on which he hoisted the Dutch flag. Quit- ting Van Diemen’s Land on December 5, Tasman steered eastwards with a vague idea of reaching the Solomon Islands, and on December 13 he discovered a “high mountainous country,” which he called ‘“Staatenland ” (New Zealand). Cruising along the west coast of the South Island, he anchored on the 18th in 40° 50’ S. lat., at the entrance of a “wide opening,” which he took to be a “fine bay,” but which was no doubt Cook’s Strait, He gave the name of Moordenaars (Massacre) Bay to the bay, at which he attempted to land, and where several of his men were killed by the natives. Leaving New Zealand, and pursuing an irregularly north direction,

but never coming in sight of Australia, he discovered, on January 21, 1643, two islands belonging to the Friendly group, to which he gave the names of Middelburg (Eova) and Amsterdam (Tongatabu). After discovering several other islands in the Friendly group and their neighbour- hood, Tasman steered north and west, reaching the neigh- bourhood of New Britain on March 22. On the 24th he

1 See Siebold's paper in Le Moniteur des Indes-Orientales et Occidentales, 1848-49, pt. i. p. 390.

passed Morghen Islands, and, sailing round New Ireland and along the north coast of New Guinea, he cleared the straits between New Guinea and Jilolo, arriving at Batavia on June 15, after a ten months' voyage.2 The materials for an account of Tasman's important second voyage in 1644 are extremely scanty; they consist of Tasman's own chart and some fragmentary notes by Burgomaster Witsen in his work (1705) on the migrations of the human race (translated in Dalrymple's collection). Further information as to authorities? will be found in Mr R. H. Major's Hakluyt Society volume on Early Voyages to Australia, where also will be found the "Instructions " given to Tasman for his voyage to New Guinea. He is instructed to obtain a thorough knowledge of Staten and Van Diemen's Land, and " whether New Guinea is a continent with the great Zuidland, or separated by channels and islands," and also "whether the new Van Diemen's Land is the same continent with these two great countries or with one of them." In this voyage Tasman had three vessels under his command. His discoveries were confined to the north and north-west coasts of Australia, and his chart gives the soundings for the whole of this line of coast. He discovered the Gulf of Carpentaria, and established the continuity of the north-west coast of the land designated generally "the great known south con- tinent," as far south as about the 22d degree. The fullest details as to maps of the voyage and other authorities will be found in Mr Major's Hakluyt Society volume referred to above. 'Tasman rightly ranks as one of the greatest navigators of the 17th century. He died at Batavia in October 1659.

For personal details, see paper on Tasman by Ch. M. Dozy in Bijdragen tot de Taal-, Land-, en Volkenkunde van Nederlundsch- Indié, 5th series, vol. ii. p. 808.

TASMANIA, formerly Van Dirmen's Lanp, is a com- Platel

pact island, forming a British colony, which lies to the south of Australia, in the Southern Ocean. It hasan area of 24,600 square miles (about three-fourths of the size of Ireland), and some fifty islets belong to it. Most of these lie between it and the southern shore of Victoria, in Bass's Strait. It is a land of mountain and flood, with picturesque scenery. The centre is a mass of hills, gene- rally covered with forest, with large lakes nearly 4000 feet above the sea; and this high land is continued to the west and north-west, while southward are other elevations. Ben Lomond in the east rises to a height of 5020 feet; in the north-west are Dry's Bluff (4257 feet) and Quam by (4000); while westward are Cradle (5069), Hugel (4700), French-man's Cap (4760), and Bischoff (2500). Wellington, near Hobart, is 4170 feet. Among the rivers flowing northward to Bass's Strait are the Tamar, Inglis, Cam, Emu, Blyth, Forth, Don, Mersey, Piper, and Ringarooma. The Mac- quarie, receiving the Elizabeth and Lake, falls into the South Esk, which unites with the North Esk to form the Tamar at Launceston. Westward, falling into the ocean, are the Hellyer, Arthur, and Pieman. The King and Gordon gain Macquarie Harbour; the Davey and Spring, Port Davey. The central and southern districts are drained by the Derwent from Lake St Clair,—its tributaries being the Nive, Dee, Clyde, Ouse, and Jordan. The Huon falls into D'Entrecasteaux Channel. 'The chief mountain lakes

- The best English translation of Tasman's Journal is in Bumey's Collection, vol. iii. The Dutch original was published at Amsterdam in 1860, edited by Jacob Swart, and contains the chart of the second voyage.

3 The subject is thoroughly discussed by P. H. Leupe in the Bijdragen van het kon. Inst. voor Taal-, Land-, en Volkenkunde v. d. Ind. Archipel, ser. i. pt. iv. pp. 128-140; in Bijd. voor Vader- landsche Geschiedenis en Oudheid Kunde, by KR. Fruin, new series, pt. vil. p. 254; and in the same writer's work De Reizen der Neder- | landers naar Niewwo Guinea (The Hague,

1875); also Col. A. Haga, | Nederlandsch Nieuw Guinea (The Hague, 1884),

Pap M ANT A

are the Great Lake (50 miles in circuit), Sorell, St Clair, Crescent, and Echo. The colony is divided into eighteen counties. The principal towns are Hobart, the capital, on the Derwent, with a population of 21,118 in 1881 (25,044 in 1886), and Launceston (12,752 in 1881; 19,379 in 1886), at the head of the Tamar. The rugged western half of the island has only a few small settlements, while the eastern country is increasing in population on account of the mines.

Climate.—This small colony has a far greater range of climate than can be experienced throughout the Australian continent. The eastern side is dry; the western is very wet. Tin and gold miners are partially arrested in their work during summer from want of water in the north-east. Dense forests and impracticable scrubs result in the west from deposition of a hundred or more inches of rain in the year, while other parts to the east occasionally suffer from drought. Tasmania does not escape the summer visit of an Australian hot wind. Hobart and Launceston, being near the sea, have greater equability of temperature, with rare frosts. The mean temperature of Hobart is 54°, of Waratah in the north-west 44°. Hobart averages 22 inches of rain, less than Melbourne, Sydney, and Brisbane. Inland, in the settled parts, cold is severe in winter, but only for a short period. The wooded north-west shore has no cold and no excessive heat, but plenty of showers. Up in the lake country the climate rather resembles the Highlands of Scotland. On the west and southern coasts the winds are usually strong, and often tempestuous.

Like New Zealand, Tasmania is very healthy. No miasma is retained in its forests. Rheumatism and colds may pre- vail, but little fever or dysentery occurs. Perhaps no part of the world can show relatively so many aged people. Children generally display the robustness of English village life. Asa retreat for Australians, Tasmania in the summer has strong claims. Cool and strengthening airs, magnifi- cent forest solitudes, and secluded fern-tree vales may be enjoyed along with all the comforts of modern civilization.

Geology.—The comparatively recent connexion of Tas- mania with Victoria is evidenced not less by rocks than by flora and fauna. The granitic islands of Bass's Strait are as SO many stepping-stones across, a depression having con- verted the loftier districts into islands. The want of simi- larity, however, between the tufted-haired Tasmanians and their Australian neighbours would indicate that the dis- ruption took place before the advent of the younger race on the northern side. While doubts exist as to the pres- ence of rocks older than the Silurian, a Paleozoic floor exists north, east, south, and west, though often thrown up into irregular ranges, sometimes over 5000 feet, by igneous irruptions, Convulsions have distinguished the history of the little island from one end to the other. Not only is granite in all its varieties very prevalent, but there is an immense amount of metamorphism in different directions. Then, at another period, not merely porphyries, but basalts and greenstones, were widespread in their ravages. They consumed or deranged beds of coal, and overflowed enor- mous tracts. Earthquakes were busy, and tremendous deluges denuded: great areas to depths of thousands of feet, leaving mountains of Primary rock, with peaked or plateau summits of basalt or greenstone. There are prismatic walls several hundreds of feet in height, and 4000 feet above the sea-level, as at Mount Wellington, looking down upon " ploughed fields" of greenstone blocks. Still, unlike Victoria, there are not the extinct craters to tell the tale of more modern lava flows. The lake district, up to over 4000 feet, is a tangled mass of granitic and metamorphic rocks. Quartz is so common a feature that the western storm-bound cliffs reflect a white light to passing ships; while mica, talcose, dolerite, and siliceous schists are

cominon over the island. Contorted slate and the tessel- ated pavement of Tasman's Peninsula are effects of that transmuting period. Granite is strong at eastern and northern points, at western localities, in the interior, and in the straits. Greenstone is exhibited southward in enor- mous fields, as well as in the western and lake districts, and alternates often with basalt. Silicified trees are seen standing upright in the floor of igneous rock. The Prim- ary rocks have more casts of former life than fossils in ordinary condition. The Hobart clay-slate abounds in Fenestella or lace coral, and trilobites occur in limestone. Slate is abundant on the north-west coast, the

South Hsk, and westward. New Red Sandstone near Hobart is marked by the presence of salt-beds. The Carboniferous forma- tions are not much exhibited on the western half of the island, but are prominent along the Mersey and other northern rivers. The southern fields are torn by igneous invaders. Anthracitic forms are conspicuous on Tasman's Peninsula. Inland, on the eastern side, the formations spread from near Hobart northward for scores of miles, and even to a thousand feet in thickness. The Fingal and Ben Lomond north-eastern districts are remarkably favoured with Carboniferous sandstones and crinoidal limestones, bearing excellent seams, and like strata are noticed in islands off the east coast. Carbonaceous non- coal-bearing beds by the Mersey are 500 feet thick. Tertiary rocks are not extensive, save in the breccia and coarse sandstone south of Launceston, over Norfolk plains, and along some river valleys. Alluvial gold deposits belong mainly to the Pliocene formations,—the ancient Primaries containing the auriferous quartz veins. Greenstone and basalt belong to various periods, the latter being specially apparent in the Tertiary epoch. Travertine, near Hobart and Richmond, is from freshwater action. The Pleistocene development was characterized by overwhelming denuding forces. Raised beaches are noticed along some of the larger rivers, and westerly moraines would imply a greater elevation of the country formerly. Caves and recent beds exhibit marsupial forms analogous to existing ones. Not far from Deloraine are limestone caves, with passages two miles in extent. The density and intricacy of the island scrubs have interfered with the investigation of its geology.

Minerals. —Tasmania has failed to take a very important position asa gold producer. Still, when the crushing of 1300 tons in one mine produced £11,528, adventurers may well be hopeful. From Beaconsfield mine, west of the Tamar, gold, was obtained to the value of £615,330 from July 1878 to January 1, 1887. In 1885 there were five districts under commissioners of mines. Westward, gold is found from Arthur river to Point Hibbs; north-westward, from Blyth river to Cape Grim. In the north-east are Scottsdale, Ringarooma, Mount Victoria, and Waterhouse fields; east, Fingal and St George river. Arsenic and silver are found with gold in the north-east; and iron, arsenic, copper, and lead with it at Beacons- field. For 1885 the gold export was 37,498 oz., worth £141,319. Silver occurs at Penguin, Mount Ramsey, and Waratah (Mount Bischoff), combined with lead. Copper is met

with at Mount Maurice, &c., but not in paying quantities. Bismuth at Mount Ramsey is rich, but the country is difficult to reach. Antimony, zinc, manganese, copper, plumbago, and galena are known west of the Tamar, where also asbestos in serpentine hillsis plentiful. Tin is well distributed in Tasmanian granite. Mount Bischoff, in the scrubby, rocky, damp west, has the richest lodes; other mines are in the north-cast and west. In ten years the product came to two and a half million pounds sterling. Bischoff district in 1885 gave 2871 tons of ore, much being found in huge blocks. Want of water in the north-east prevents mueh hydraulic working. An- thracite coal is pretty abundant at Port Arthur. Near Hobart are workings of poor quality. Around Ben Lomond are bituminous seams, but difficult of acccss. Fingal district has coal equal to that of Newcastle, with a seam of 14 feet, but carriage is difficult. Mersey river coal mines yielded 60,000 tons in the course of over a dozen years. Iron was worked near the Tainar, but did not pay, excess of chromium making it brittle; its steel was very malleable. All varieties of iron ores are known. Hobart freestone is largely exported to other colonies, Tasmanite or dysodile in the Mersey district is an inflammable resinous substance. During 1884 there

were raised 41,240 oz. of gold, 5461 tons of tin, and 5334 tons of coal. The total export of gold and tin during the five years 1880 to 1885 was of the value of £2,591,320,—being £642,230 more than for the ten years preceding. The export of tin averaged 79, 682 cwt.

Agriculture.—The island has not a large area fit for cultivation. A great part is very mountainous; and dense scrubs, with heavy forests, are impediments to the farmer. The west side is too wet, stormy, and sterile for settlement. Almost all the farms lie in the line between Hobart and Launceston and between Launceston and Circular Head. The climate being cooler and moister than in most parts of Australia, the productions are of an English character, hops, barley, and oats being freely raised. Cropping land for many suecessive years with wheat has lessened the produce of what was fertile country, as little manure had been used. In later times there has been a great improvement in agriculture. For some time Tasmanian growers did

well, supplying Australia and New Zealand with flour, potatoes, and fruit; but, as their customers became in their turn producers, the old markets failed in all but apples and stone fruit. Fresh and preserved fruit, with jams, together with excellent hops, continue to afford the islanders a good trade. In 1885-86 there were 417,777 acres in cultivation; in erop, 144,761; in grasses, 181,203. Wheat occupied 30,266 acres, barley 6838, oats 29,247, pease 7147, potatoes 11,073, hay 41,698, turnips 3680, and gardens and orchards 8198.

So large a part of the island is covered with thicket, rock, and marsh that it appears less pastoral than eastern Australia. total nuniber of sheep in 1886 amounted to 1,648,627, the horses to 28,610, and the eattle to 188,642. Of 16,778,000 acres only 4,403,888 have been sold or granted.

Flora.—This differs but little from Australia, with which it was formerly connected. Over a thousand species are represented. The euealypts are gums, stringy bark, box, peppermint, ironwood, &c. The celebrated blue gum (Luca- lyptus Globulus), so eagerly sought for pestilential places in southern Europe, Africa, and America, flourishes best in the southern dis- tricts of the island. For shipbuilding purposes the timber, which grows to a large size, is much prized. Acacias are abundant, and manna trees are very produetive. Sassafras (Atherosperma mos- chate) is a tall and handsome tree. Pines are numerous, The Huon pine (Daerydium cupressinwm), whose satin-like wood is so sought after, flourishes in Huon and Gordon river districts. The celery pine is a Phyllocladus, and the pencil cedar an Athrotaxis. The pepper tree is Tasmania fragrans. The Myrtacew are noble trees. The lakes cider tree is Eucalyptus resinifera, whose treacle- like sap was formerly made into a drink by bushmen. Xanthor- Toeas or grass.trees throw up a flowering spike. The charming red flowers of the Tasmanian tulip tree (Telopea) are seen from a great distance on the sides of mountains. ‘he so-called rice plant, with rice-like grains on a stalk, is the grass Richea. Of Boronia, Epac- ris, and Orchis there are numerous species. The Blandfordia, a Liliaceous plant, has a head of brilliant crimson flowers, The Casuarina, Exocarpus, Banksia, and tree fern resemble those of Australia. Tasmanian evergreen forests are very aromatie. At one time the island had an extensive timber trade with Sydney, Melbourne, and Adelaide, and it still exports £50,000 to £80,000 worth annually of planks, shingles, paling, &e.

Fawna,—Animal life in Tasmania is similar to that in Australia. The dingo or dog of the latter is wanting ; and the Tasmanian devil and tiger,or wolf, are peculiar to the island. The Marsupials inclnde the Macropus or kangaroo, Didelphys or opossum, Petaurus or flying phalanger, Perameles or bandicoot, Hypsiprymnus or kangaroo rat, Phascolomys or wombat ; while of Monotremata there are the Echidna or porcupine anteater and the duck-billed platypus. The marsupial tiger or Tasmanian wolf (Thylacinus cynocephalus), 5 feet long, is yellowish brown, with several stripes across the back, having short stiff hair and very short legs (see vol. xv. p. 380). Very few of these nocturnal carnivores are now alive to trouble flocks. The tiger cat of the eolonists, with weasel legs, white spots, and nocturnal habits, is a large species of the untameable native cats. The devil (Dasyurus or Sarcophilus ursinus) is black, with white bands on neck and haunches. The covering of this savage but cowardly little night-prowler is a sort of short hair, not fur. The tail is thick, and the bull-dog mouth is formidable. Among the birds of the island are the eagle, hawk, petrel, owl, finch, peewit, diamond bird, fire- tail, robin, emu-wren, crow, swallow, inagpie, blackcap, goatsucker, quail, ground dove, jay, parrot, lark, mountain thrush, cuckoo, wattlebird, whistling duck, honeybird, Cape Barren goose, penguin duck, waterhen, snipe, albatross, and laughing jackass. Snakes are pretty plentiful in scrubs; the lizards are harmless, Insects, though similar to Australian ones, are far less troublesome ; nlany are to be admired for their great beauty.

Fisheries.—I|n the early years of occupation the island was the resort of whalers from the United Kingdom, the United States, and France. Both sperm and black oil, with whalebone, were important articles of export till the retreat of the whales to other seas. Seal- ing was carried on successfully for many years in Bass’s Strait, until the seals were utterly destroyed. There has recently been a

The |

that of south-eastern |

TAS MP AGP il oA:

revival of whaling, the product of the island fishery for 1885 being £12,600. The bays contain some excellent fish, much esteemed in the neighbouring eolonies, particularly the trumpeter, found on the southern side of the island. Of nearly 200 sorts of fishes a third can be eonsidered good for food. The outer fisheries extend to 16 miles from shore, being from 20 to 80 fathoms deep. The species include the trumpeter (Latris, found up to 60 tb weight), the “salmon” of the old settlers (Arripis), the flathead (Platyeephalus), trevally (Neptonemus), garfish (Hemirhamphus), barracouta and kingfish (both Thyrsites). There are thirteen sorts of perch, and five of bream. The anchovy is migratory. English mackerel have been seen off the east coast; and some of the herrings are much like the English. Rock cod and bull-kelp cod are favourites. Mud oysters are nearly worked out; artificial oyster-beds are being formed. English trout (Salmo fario) are more certainly found than the true salmon (Salmo salar); the last are doubtful, though num- bers have been raised in hatcheries on the Derwent. Among fresh- water fish are a so-ealled freshwater herring (Prototroctes), various kinds of what the old settlers called trout (Galaxias), blackfish (Gadopsis), and fine perch.

Commerce.—Soon after the colony was founded there was a great trade in whale oil, as wellas in the oil and skins of seals) When this declined, merchants did well in the exportation of breadstuffs, fruits, and vegetables to the neighbouring and more reeently estab- lished colonies, not less than to New South Wales. Timber was also freely sent to places less favoured with forests or too busy with other employments, When the trade with England in oil fell off, the export in wool and then of metals succeeded. Tasmania has now an active commerce with Victoria, but has a competitor rather than a customer in New Zealand. The shipping during 1885 was 342,745 tons inward, 335,061 outward. The imports for that year came to £1,757,486; the exports to £1,318,698. Of the exports, £1,299,011 were of Tasmanian products and manu- factures, —including wool, £260,480; tin, £357,587; gold, £141,319; fruit, £105,363. The banks of the colony at the end of 1885 showed assets £3,754,226 and liabilities £8,814,631. he savings banks early in 1886 declared £455,774 to the eredit of depositors, Attempts have been recently made to draw Tasmania into closer commercial and fiscal relations with Victoria.

Manufactures.—Numerous industries are practised, though not to the extent of exportation, excepting from the working of 28 tanneries, 62 sawmills, 18 breweries, 7 manufactories of jam, and a rising wool factory.

Roads and Railways.—No colony, for its area, WaS ever so favoured with excellent roads as Tasmania has been. There are now about 5000 miles of good roads. The principal line of railway is that from Hobart to Launceston. Altogether, 260 miles of rail- way were open in 1887,

Post-Ofice.—I\n early years letters were carried by runners on foot across the island. In 1885 there were 246 post offices, and the telegraph had 1579 miles of wire. A submarine line connects Tasmania with Victoria.

Administration.—The governor is appointed by the British erown. The legislative council has eighteen members, and the assembly thirty-six. he revenue for 1885-86 was £571,396, the expenditure £585,766. The publie debt, eoutraeted for public works, aiounts to three and a third millions. The customs pro- vided £276,100. The official machinery is as extensive as for a eolony with seven or eight times the population.

Eduwcation.—At first the state made grants in aid to schools established by private persons and religious denominations, but ultimately, as in Victoria and New Zealand, education was made secular and eompulsory, religious teaching being out of school hours, or dependent on Sunday schools, which are to be found all over the island. There are 204 publie schools, maintained out of a fund of £32,793. In eight grammar and eollegiate schools a higher standard of instruction is reached. The degree of Associate of Arts is conferred on deserving scholars in the state schools ; and exhibitions (up to £200 a year for four years) enable pupils to study at the higher sehools or colonial or European universities, No state grant is now made for the support of any religious deno- mination.

Population.—The whites have entirely displaced the blacks. Outrages and cruelties led to conflicts; and now the last individual of the tribes has passed away. There are, however, some half- castes on islands in the Straits. The colonists in Tasmania are more concentrated than in other settlements. In 1818 there were 2320 men, 432 women, and only 489 children. At the eensus of 1881 the population numbered 115,705 (61,162 males, 54,548

females); in 1886 it was estimated at 133,791. The births in 1886 averaged 34°6 per thousand, the deaths 15°2,

History.—The Dutch navigator TasMAN (q.0.) sighted the island Noveinber 24, 1642, and named it Van Diemen's Land, after the Dutch governor of Java. He took possession at Frederick Henry Bay in the naine of the stadtholder of Holland, and then passed on to the discovery of New Zealand. The French Captain Marion in 1772 came to blows with the natives, Captain Cook was at

Adventure Bay, to the south, in 1777. His companion, Captain Furneaux, had entered the bay four years previously, assuring Cook that Van Diemen's Land was joined to New Holland. Admiral Bruni d'Entrecasteaux, with the naturalist La Billardiere, entered the Derwent, calling it North River, in 1792. Two years after, Captain Hayes named it Derwent. Mr Bass and Lieutenant Flinders passed through Bass's Strait, and first sailed round the island, in 1798. The high terms in which they spoke of Sullivan's cove, at the mouth of the Derwent, afterwards led to the settle- ment of Hobart there. The French discovery ships, "Géographe" and " Naturaliste," under Commodore Baudin, were off the coast in 1801-2. The island was settled from Sydney. A small party was sent to the Derwent, under Lieutenant Bowen, in 1803, and another to Port Dalrymple next year under Colonel Paterson, who was removed to Launceston in 1806. Captain Collins, who had been sent with a large number of convicts from England to form a penal colony in Port Phillip, thought proper to remove thence after three months, and establish himself at Hobart Town, February 1804. The carly days were trying, from want of supplies and of good government; and confliets arose with the natives, which led to the eclebrated Black War. In 1830 nearly all the settlers, with 4000 soldiers and armed constables, attempted to drive the aborigines into a peninsula, but caught only one lad. Mr George Robinson afterwards sueceeded in inducing the few hunted ones to surrender and be taken to Flinders Island. Deaths rapidly followed. The last nan died in 1862, the last female in 1872. Bushranging was common for years in this scrubby land. The colony was subject

to New South Wales till 1825, when independence was declared. ©

On free settlers being permitted to go to Van Diemen's Land, they endeavoured to get freedom of the press, trial by jury, and a popular form of rule. After long struggles, the liberties they sought for were gradually granted. A responsible government was the last boon received. Oppressed by the number of conviets thrown into the country, the free inhabitants petitioned again and again for the cessation of transportation, which was eventually allowed. Among the governors was Sir John Franklin, of polar celebrity. The first newspaper, Zhe Derwent Star, came out in 1810. Literature ad- vanced from that humble beginning. At first the Government entirely supported schools and churches, and for many years state aid was atforded to the Church of Englaud, Presbyterian, Wesleyan, and Roman Catholic churches, but this aid is now withdrawn. The island proving too small for a large population, numbers swarmed off to the neighbouring scttlements, and Port Vhillip, now Victoria, received its first inhabitants from Tasmania. Though not so prosperous as Victoria, the little island enjoys an amount of ease and comfort which few, if any, settlements elsewhere have been known to experience. (J. BO.)

TASSIE, James (1735-1799), gem-engraver and mod- eller, was born of humble parentage at Pollokshaws, near Glasgow, in 1735. During his earlier years he worked as a stone-mason, but, having visited Glasgow on a fair-holiday, and seen the collection of paintings brought together in that city by Robert and Andrew Foulis, the celebrated printers, he was seized with an irresistible desire to become an artist. He removed to Glasgow, attended the academy which had been established there by the brothers Foulis, and, applying himself to drawing with indomitable perseverance, seconded by great natural aptitude, he eventually became one of the most distin- guished pupils of the school. When his training was completed he visited Dublin in search of commissions, and there became acquainted with Dr Quin, who had been experimenting, as an amateur, in imitating antique engraved gems in coloured pastes. He engaged Tassie as an assistant, and together they perfected the discovery of a vitreous paste composition, styled "' enamel," a substance admirably adapted, by its hardness and beauty of texture, for the formation of gems and medallions. Dr Quin encouraged his assistant to try his fortune in London, and thither he repaired in 1766. At first he had a hard struggle to make his way, for he was modest and diffident in the extreme, and without influential introductions to amateurs and collectors. But he

worked on steadily with the greatest care and accuracy, scrupulously destroying all impressions of his gems which were in the slightest degree inferior or defective. Gradually the beauty and artistic character of his productions came to be known. He received a commission from the empress of Russia for a collection of about 15,000 examples ; all the richest

(i

cabinets in Europe were thrown open to him for purposes of study and reproduction; and his copies were frequently sold by fraudulent dealers as the original gems. He exhibited in the Royal Academy from 1769 to 1791. In 1775 he published the first catalogue of his works, a thin pamphlet detailing 2856 items. This was followed in 1791 by a large catalogue, in two volumes quarto, with illustrations etched by David Allan, and descriptive text in English and French by Rudolph Eric Raspe, F.S.A., enumerating nearly 16,000 pieces. Materials exist in MS., in the possession of a descendant of Tassie's, for a list of more than 3000 furtlier items.

In addition to his impressions from antique gems, Tassie executed many large profile medallion portraits of his contemporaries, and these form the most original and definitely artistic class of his works. They were modelled in wax from the life or from drawings done from the life, and—when this was impossible—from other authentic sources. They were then cast in white enamel paste, the whole medallion being sometimes executed in this material ; while in other cases the head only appears in cnamel, relieved against a background of ground-glass tinted of a subdued colour by paper placed behind. His first large enamel portrait was that of John Dolbon, son of Sir William Dolbon, Bart., modelled in 1793 or 1794; and the series possesses great historic interest, as well as artistic value, including as it does portraits of Adam Smith, Sir Henry Raeburn, Drs James Beattie, Blair, Black, and Cullen, and many other celebrated men of the latter half of the 18th century.

At the time of his death, in 1799, the collection of Tassie's works numbered about 20,000 pieces. (J. M. G.)

TASSIE, Wru.1am (1777-1860), gem-engraver and modeller, nephew of the above, was born in London on the 4th of December 1777. He succeeded to

the business of his uncle, to whose collection of casts and medallions he added largely. His portrait of Pitt, in particular, was very popular, and circulated widely. When the Shakespeare Gallery, formed by Alderman Boydell, was disposed of by lottery in 1805, William Tassie was the winner of the prize, and in the same year he sold the pictures by auction for a sum of over £6000. He died at Kensington on the 26th of October 1860, and bequeathed to the Board of Manufactures, Edinburgh, an extensive and valuable collection of casts and medallions by his uncle and himself, along with portraits of James Tassie and his wife by David Allan, and a series of water-colour studies by George Sanders from pictures of the Dutch and Flemish schools. (3. M. G.)

TASSO, Torquato (1544-1595), who ranks with Dante, Petrarch, and Ariosto among the first four poets of Italy, was the son of Bernardo Tasso, a nobleman of Bergamo, and his wife Porzia de' Rossi. Hc was born at Sorrento in 1544. His father had for many years been secretary in the service of the prince of Salerno, and his mother was closely connected with the most illustrious Neapolitan families. The prince of Salerno came into collision with the Spanish Government of Naples, was outlawed, and was deprived of his hereditary fiefs. In this disaster of his patron Tasso's father shared. He was proclaimed a rebel to the state, together with his son Torquato, and his patrimony was sequestered. These things happened during the boy's childhood. In 1552 he was living with his mother and his only sister Cornelia at Naples, pursuing his education under the Jesuits, who had recently opened a school there. The precocity of intellect and the religious fervour of the boy attracted general admiration. At the age of eight he was already famous. Soon after this date he joined his father, who then resided in great indigence, an exile and without occupation, in

Rome. News reached them in 1556 that Porzia Tasso had died suddenly and mysteriously at N aples. Her husband was firmly convinced that she had been poisoned by her brother with the object of getting control over her property. As it subsequently happened, Porzia's estate never descended to her son; and the daughter Cornelia married below her birth, at the instigation of her maternal relatives, Tasso's father was a poet by predilection and a

professional courtier of some distinction. In those days an Italian gentleman of modest fortunes had no congenial sphere of society or occupation outside the courts of petty ecclesi- astical and secular princes. When, therefore, an opening at the court of Urbino offered in 1557, Bernardo Tasso gladly accepted it. The young Torquato, a handsome and brilliant lad, became the companion in sports and studies of Francesco Maria della Rovere, heir to the dukedom of Urbino. The fate which condemned him for life to be a poet and a courtier like his father was sealed by this early entrance into princely palaces. At Urbino a society of cultivated men pursued the xsthetical and literary studies which were then in vogue. Bernardo Tasso read cantos of his Amadigi to the duchess and her ladies, or discussed the merits of Homer and Virgil, Trissino and Ariosto, with the duke's librarians and secretaries, Tor- quato grew up in an atmosphere of refined luxury and somewhat pedantic criticism, both of which gave a per- manent tone to his character. At Venice, whither his father went to superintend the printing of the Amadiyi, these influences continued. He found himself the pet and prodigy of a distinguished literary circle. But Bernardo had suffered in his own career so seriously from addiction to the Muses and a prince that he now determined on a lucrative profession for his son. Torquato was sent to study law at Padua. Instead of applying himself to law, the young man bestowed all his attention upon philosophy and poetry. Before the end of 1562 he had produced a narrative poem called Rinaldo, which was meant to com- bine the regularity of the Virgilian with the attractions of the romantic epic. In the attainment of this object, and in all the minor qualities of style and handling, ftinaldo showed such marked originality that its author was proclaimed the most promising poet of his time. The flattered father allowed it to be printed ; and, after a short period of study at Bologna, he consented to his son's entering the service of Cardinal Luigi d'Este. In 1565, then, Torquato for the first time set foot in that castle at Ferrara which was destined for him to be the scene of so many glories and such cruel sufferings. After the publica- tion of Rinaldo he had expressed his views upon the epic in some Discourses on the Art of Poetry, which committed him to a distinct theory and gained for him the additional celebrity of a philosophical critic. The age was nothing if not critical; but it may be esteemed a misfortune for the future author of the Gerusalemme that he should have started with pronounced opinions upon art. Essentially a poet of impulse and instinct, he was hampered in produc- tion by his own rules.

The five years between 1565 and 1570 seem to have been the happiest of Tasso's life, although his father's death in 1569 caused his affectionate nature profound pain. Young, handsome, accomplished in all the exercises of a well-bred gentleman, accustomed to the society of the great and learned, illustrious by his published works in verse and prose, he became the idol of the most. brilliant court in Italy. The princesses Lucrezia and Leonora d'Este, both unmarried, both his seniors by about ten years, took him under their protection. He was admitted: to their familiarity, and there is some reason to think that neither of them was indifferent to him personally. Of the celebrated story of his love for Leonora this is not the

place to speak. It is enough at present to observe that he owed much to the constant kindness of both sisters, In 1570 he travelled to Paris with the cardinal. Frank- ness of speech and a certain habitual want of tact caused a disagreement with his worldly patron. He left France next year, and took service under Duke Alfonso IT. of Ferrara. The most important events in Tasso's biography during the following four years are the publication of the Aminta in 1573 and the completion of the Gerusalemme LInberata in 1574. The Amuinta is a pastoral drama of very simple plot, but of exquisite lyrical charm. It ap- peared at the critical moment when modern music, under Palestrina's impulse, was becoming the main art of Italy. The honeyed melodies and sensuous melancholy of Aminta exactly suited and interpreted the spirit of its age. We may regard it as the most decisively important of Tasso's compositions, for its influence, in opera and cantata, was felt through two successive centuries. The Gerusalemme Laberata occupies a larger space in the history of Euro- pean literature, and is a more considerable work. Yet the commanding qualities of this epic poem, those which revealed Tasso's individuality, and which made it imme- diately pass into the rank of classics, beloved by the people no less than by persons of culture, are akin to the lyrical graces of Aminta. It was finished in Tasso's thirty-first year ; and when the MS. lay before him the best part of his life was over, his best work had been already accom- plished. Troubles immediately began to gather round him. Instead of having the courage to obey his own instinct, and to publish the Gerusalemme as he had con- ceived it, he yielded to the critical serupulosity which formed a secondary

feature of his character. The poem was sent in manuscript to several literary men of eminence, Tasso expressing his willingness to hear their strictures and to adopt their suggestions unless he could convert them to his own views. The result was that each of these candid friends, while expressing in general high admiration for the epic, took some exception to its plot, its title, its moral tone, its episodes, or its diction, in detail. One wished it to be more regularly classical ; another wanted more romance. One hinted that the Inquisition would not tolerate its supernatural machinery ; another demanded the excision of its most charming passages—the loves of Armida, Clorinda, and Erminia. Tasso had to defend himself against all these ineptitudes and pedantries, and to accommodate his practice to the theories he had rashly expressed. As in the Rinaldo, so also in the Jerusalem Delivered, he aimed at ennobling the Italian epic style by preserving strict unity of plot and heightening poetic diction. He chose Virgil for his model, took the first crusade for subject, infused the fervour of religion into his conception of the hero Godfrey. But his own natural bias was for romance. In spite of the péet's in- genuity and industry the stately main theme evinced less spontaneity of genius than the romantic episodes with which, as also in ftinaldo, he adorned it. Godfrey, a mixture of pious Aneas and Tridentine Catholicism, is not the real hero of the Gerusalemme. Fiery and passionate Rinaldo, Ruggiero, melancholy impulsive Tancredi, and the chivalrous Saracens with whom they clash in love and war, divide our interest and divert it from Goffredo. On Armida, beautiful witch, sent forth by the infernal senate to sow discord in the Christian camp, turns the action of the epic. She is converted to the true faith by her adora- tion for a crusading knight, and quits the scene witha phrase of the Virgin Mary on her lips. Brave Clorinda, donning armour like Marfisa, fightmg in duel with her devoted lover, and receiving baptism from his hands in her pathetic death; Erminia seeking refuge in the shep- herd's hut,—these lovely pagan women, so touching in

' cruel,—hard and unintelligent perhaps, but far from being

their sorrows, so romantic in their adventures, so tender in their emotions, rivet our attention, while we skip the battles, religious ceremonies,

conclaves, and stratagems of the campaign. The truth is that Tasso's great inven- tion as an artist was the poetry of sentiment. Sentiment, not sentimentality, gives value to what is immortal in the Gerusalemme. It was a new thing in the 16th century, something concordant with a growing feeling for woman and with the ascendant art of music. This sentiment, refined, noble, natural, steeped in melancholy, exquisitely graceful, pathetically touching, breathes throughout the episodes of the Gerusalemme, finds metrical expression in the languishing cadence of its mellifluous verse, and sustains the ideal life of those seductive heroines whose names were familiar as household words to all Europe in the 17th and 18th centuries.

Tasso's self-chosen critics were not men to admit what the public has since accepted as incontrovertible. They vaguely felt that a great and beautiful romantic poem was embedded ina dull and not very correct epic. In their uneasiness they suggested every course but the right one, which was to publish the Gerusalemme without further dispute. Tasso, already overworked by his precocious studies, by exciting court-life and exhausting literary industry, now grew almost mad with worry. His health began to fail him. He complained of headache, suffered from malarious fevers, and wished to leave Ferrara. The Gerusalemme was laid in manuscript upon a shelf. He opened negotiations with the court of Florence for an exchange of service. This irritated the duke of Ferrara. Alfonso hated nothing more than his courtiers leaving him fora rival duchy. He thought, moreover, that, if Tasso were allowed to go, the Medici would get the coveted dedication of that already famous epic. Therefore he bore with the poet's humours, and so contrived that the latter should have no excuse for quitting Ferrara. Meanwhile, through the years 1575, 1576, 1577, Tasso's health grew worse. Jealousy inspired the courtiers to calumniate and insult him. His irritable and suspicious temper, vain and sensitive to slights, rendered him only too easy a prey to their malevolence. He became the subject of delusions,—thought that his servants betrayed his confidence, fancied he had been denounced to the Inquisition, expected daily to be poisoned. In the autumn of 1576 he quarrelled with a Ferrarese gentleman, Maddalo, who had talked too freely about some love affair; in the summer of 1577 he drew his knife upon a servant in the presence of Lucrezia d'Este, duchess of Urbino. For this excess he was arrested; but the duke released him, and took him for

change of air to his country seat of Belriguardo. What happened there is not known. Some biographers have surmised that a com- promising liaison with Leonora d'Este came to light, and that Tasso agreed to feign madness in order to cover her honour. But of this there is no proof. It is only certain that from Belriguardo he returned to a Franciscan convent at Ferrara, for the express purpose of attending to his health. 'There the dread of being murdered by the duke took firm hold on his mind. He escaped at the end of July, disguised himself as a peasant, and went on foot to his sister at Sorrento.

The truth seems to be that Tasso, after the beginning of 1575, became the victim of a mental malady, which, with- out amounting to actual insanity, rendered him fantastical and insupportable, a misery to himself and a cause of anxiety to his patrons. There is no evidence whatsoever that this state of things was due to an overwhelming passion for Leonora. The duke, instead of acting like a tyrant, showed considerable forbearance. He was a rigid and not sympathetic man, as egotistical as a princeling of that age was wont to be. But to Tasso he was never

that monster of ferocity which has been painted. The subsequent history of his connexion with the poet, over which we may pass rapidly, will corroborate this view. While at Sorrento, Tasso hankered after Ferrara. The court-made man could not breathe freely outside its charmed circle. He wrote humbly requesting to be taken back. Alfonso consented, provided Tasso would agree to undergo a medical course of treatment for his melancholy. When he returned, which he did with alacrity under those conditions, he was well received by the ducal family. All might have gone well if his old maladies had not revived. Scene followed scene of irritability, moodiness, suspicion, wounded vanity, and violent outbursts. In the summer of 1578 he ran away again; travelled through Mantua, Padua, Venice, Urbino, Lombardy. In September he reached the gates of Turin on foot, and was courteously entertained by the duke of Savoy. Wherever he went, "wandering like the world's rejected guest," he met with the honour due to his illustrious name. Great folk opened their houses to him gladly, partly in compassion, partly in admiration of his genius. But he soon

wearied of their society, and wore their kindness out by his querulous peevishness. It seemed, moreover, that life was intoler- able to him outside Ferrara. Accordingly he once more opened negotiations with the duke; and in February 1579 he again set foot in the castle. Alfonso was about to contract his third marriage, this time with a princess of the house of Mantua. He had no children; and, unless he got an heir, there was a probability that his state would fall, as it did subsequently, to the Holy See. The nuptial festivals, on the eve of which Tasso arrived, were not therefore the occasion of great rejoicing to the elderly bridegroom. As a forlorn hope he had to wed a third wife ; but his heart was not engaged and his expectations were far from sanguine. ‘Tasso, preoccupied as always with his own sorrows and his own sense of dignity, made no allowance for the troubles of his master. Rooms below his rank, he thought, had been assigned him. The princesses did not want to see him. The duke was engaged. Without exercising common patience, or giving his old friends the benefit of a doubt, he broke into terms of open abuse, behaved like a lunatic, and was sent off without ceremony to the madhouse of St Anna. This happened in March 1579; and there he remained until July 1586. Duke Alfonso’s long-sufferance at last had given way. He firmly believed that Tasso was insane, and he felt that if he were so St Anna was the safest place for him. Tasso had put himself in the wrong by his intemperate conduct, but far more by that incomprehen- sible yearning after the Ferrarese court which made him return to it again and yet again. It would be pleasant to assume that an unconquerable love for Leonora led him back. Unfortunately, there is no proof of this. His relations to her sister Lucrezia were not less intimate and affectionate than to Leonora. ‘The lyrics he addressed to numerous ladies are not less respectful and less passionate than those which bear her name. Had he compromised her honour, the duke would certainly have had him murdered. Custom demanded this retaliation, and society approved of it. If therefore Tasso really cherished a secret lifelong devotion to Leonora, it remains buried in impenetrable mystery. He did certainly not behave like a loyal lover, for both when he returned to Ferrara in 1578 and in 1579 he showed no capacity for curbing his peevish humours in the hope of access to her society.

It was no doubt very irksome for a man of Tasso’s pleasure-loving, restless, and self-conscious spirit to be kept for more than seven years in

confinement. Yet we must weigh the facts of the case rather than the fancies which

have been induiged regarding them. After the first few months of his incarceration he obtained spacious apart- ments, received the visits of friends, went abroad attended by responsible persons of his acquaintance, and corre- sponded freely with whomsoever he chose to address. The letters written from St Anna to the princes and cities of Italy, to warm well-wishers, and to men of the highest reputation in the world of art and learning, form our most valuable source of information, not only on his then condition, but also on his temperament at large. It is singular that he spoke always respectfully, even affection- ately, of the duke. Some critics have attempted to make it appear that he was hypocritically kissing the hand which had chastised him, with the view of being released from prison. But no one who has impartially considered the whole tone and tenor of his epistles will adopt this opinion. What emerges clearly from them is that he laboured under a serious mental disease, and that he was conscious of it. He complains that his disorder at times amounted to frenzy, after which his memory was weakened and _ his intellectual faculties enfeebled. He saw visions and heard phantom voices. Puck-like spirits made away with his books and papers. The old dread of poison, the old terror of the Inquisition, returned with greater violence. His bodily condition grew gradually worse; and, though he does not seem to have suffered from acute attacks of illness, the intellectual and physical constitution of the man was out of gear. Meanwhile he occupied his uneasy leisure with copious compositions. The mass of his prose dialogues on philosophical and ethical themes, which is very considerable, we owe to the years of imprisonment in St Anna. Except for occasional odes or sonnets—some written at request and only rhetorically interesting, a few inspired by his keen sense of suffering and therefore poignant—he neglected poetry. But everything which fell from his pen during this period was carefully preserved by the Italians, who, while they regarded him as a lunatic, somewhat illogically scrambled for the very offscourings of his wit. Nor can it be said that society was wrong. Tasso had proved himself an impracticable human being ; but he remained aman of genius, the most interesting personality in Italy. Long ago his papers had

been sequestered. Now, in the year 1580, he heard that part of the Gerusalemme was being published without his per- mission and without his corrections. Next year the whole poem was given to the world, and in the following six months seven editions issued from the press. The prisoner of St Anna had no control over his editors; and from the masterpiece which placed him on the level of Petrarch and Ariosto he never derived one penny of pecuniary profit. A rival poet at the court of Ferrara undertook to revise and re-edit his lyrics in 1582. This was Battista Guarini ;

and Tasso, in his cell, had to allow odes and sonnets, |

poems of personal feeling, occasional pieces of compliment, to be collected and emended, without lifting a voice in the matter. A few years later, in 1585, two Florentine pedants of the Della Crusca academy declared war against the Gerusalemme. They loaded it with insults, which seem to those who read their pamphlets now mere parodies of criticism. Yet Tasso felt bound to reply ; and he did so with a moderation and urbanity which prove him to have been not only in full possession of his reasoning faculties, but a gentleman of noble manners also. Certainly the history of Tasso's incarceration at St Anna is one to make us pause and wonder. The man, like Hamlet, was distraught through ill-accommodation to his circumstances and his age; brain-sick he was undoubtedly; and this is the duke of Ferrara's justification for the treatment he endured. In the prison he bore himself pathetically, peevishly, but never ignobly. He showed a singular

indifference to the fate of his great poem, a rare magna- nimity in dealing with its detractors. His own personal distress, that terrible malaise of imperfect insanity, absorbed him. What remained over, untouched by the malady, unoppressed by his consciousness thereof, dis- played a sweet and gravely-toned humanity. The oddest thing about his life in prison is that he was always trying to place his two nephews, the sons of his sister Cornelia, in court-service. One of them he attached to the duke of Mantua, the other to the duke of Parma. After all his father's and his own lessons of life, he had not learned that the court was to be shunned like Circe by an honest man. In estimating Duke Alfonso's share of blame, this wilful idealization

of the court by Tasso must be taken into account. That man is not a tyrant's victim who moves heaven and earth to place his sister's sons with tyrants.

In 1586 Tasso left St Anna at the solicitation of Vincenzo Gonzaga, prince of Mantua. He followed his young deliverer to the city by the Mincio, basked awhile in liberty and courtly pleasures, enjoyed a splendid reception from his paternal town of Bergamo, and produced a meritorious tragedy called Zorrismondo. But only a few months had passed when he grew discontented. Vincenzo Gonzaga, succeeding to his father's dukedom of Mantua, had scanty leisure to bestow upon the poet. Tasso felt neglected. In the autumn of 1587 we find him journeying through Bologna and Loreto to Rome, and taking up his quarters there with an old friend, Scipione Gonzaga, now patriarch of Jerusalem. Next year he wandered off to Naples, where he wrote a dull poem on Monte Oliveto. In 1589 he returned to Rome, and took up his quarters again with the patriarch of Jerusalem. The servants found him insufferable, and turned him out of doors. He fell ill, and went to a hospital. The patriarch in 1590 again received him. But Tasso's restless spirit drove him forth to Florence. The Florentines said, "Actum est de eo." Rome once more, then Mantua, then Florence, then Rome, then Naples, then Rome, then Naples—such is the weary record of the years 1590-94. We have to study a verit- able Odyssey of malady, indigence, and misfortune. To Tasso everything came amiss. He had the palaces of princes, cardinals, patriarchs, nay popes, always open to him. Yet he could rest in none. To rest would have been so easy, had he possessed the temperament of Berni or of Horace. But he was out of joint with the world. No sensuous comforts, no tranquillity of living, soothed his vexed soul. Gradually, in spite of all veneration for the sacer vates, he made himself the laughing-stock and bore of Italy.

His health grew ever feebler and his genius dimmer. In 1592 he gave to the public a revised version of the Gerusalemme. It was called the Gerusalemme Conquistata. All that made the poem of his early manhood charming he rigidly erased. The versification was degraded; the heavier elements of the plot underwent a dull rhetorical development. During the same year a prosaic composition in Italian blank verse, called Le Sette Giornate, saw the light. Nobody reads it now. We only mention it as one of Tasso's dotages—a dreary amplification of the first chapter of Genesis.

It is singular that just in these years, when mental disorder, physical weakness, and decay of inspiration seemed dooming Tasso to oblivion, his old age was cheered with brighter rays of hope. Clement VIII. ascended the papal chair in 1592. He and his nephew, Cardinal Aldobrandini of St Giorgio, determined to befriend our poet. In 1594 they invited him to Rome. There he was to assume the crown of bays, as Petrarch had assumed it, on the Capitol, Lean and worn out with sickness, ready to

totter into the tomb, where rest might possibly be found, Tasso reached Rome in November. The ceremony of his coronation was deferred because Cardinal Aldobrandini had fallen ill. But the pope assigned hima pension ; and, under the pressure of pontifical remonstrance, Prince Avel- lino, who held Tasso's maternal estate, agreed to discharge a portion of his claims by payment of a yearly rent-charge. At no time since Tasso left St Anna had the heavens apparently so smiled upon him. Capitolian honours and money were now at his disposal. Yet this good fortune came too late. It seemed as though fate had decided that this man, in all his weakness of character and pathetic grace of genius, should win the stern fame of martyrdom. Both laurel wreath and wealth must be withdrawn from him. Before the crown was worn or the pensions paid he ascended to the convent of St Onofrio, on a stormy Ist day of April in 1595. Seeing a cardinal's coach toil up the steep Trasteverine Hill, those good monks came to the door to greet it. From the carriage stepped Tasso, the Odysseus of many wanderings and miseries, the singer of sweetest strains still vocal, and told the prior he was come to die with him.

In St Onofrio he died, on the 25th of April of that year 1595. He was just past fifty-one; and the last twenty years of his existence had been practically and artistically ineffectual. At the age of thirty-one the Gerusalemme, as we have it, was accomplished. The world too was already ringing with the music of Aminta. More than this Tasso had not to give to literature. But those succeeding years of derangement, exile, imprisonment, poverty, and hope deferred endear the man to us. Elegiac and querulous as he must always appear, we yet love Tasso better because he suffered

through nearly a quarter of a century of slow decline and unexplained misfortune.

Taken altogether, the best complete edition of Tasso's writings is that of Rosini (Pisa), in 33 vols. The prose works (in 2 vols., Florence, Le Monnier, 1875) and the letters (in 5 vols., same pub- lishers, 1853) have been admirably edited by Cesare Guasti. This edition of Tasso's Letters forms by far the most valuable source for his biography. No student can, however, omit to use the romantie memoir attributed to Tasso's friend Marchese Manso (printed in Rosini's edition of Tasso's works above cited), and the important Vita di Torquato Tasso by Serassi (Bergamo, 1790). To give any- thing like a complete account of more recent critical and bio- graphical Tasso literature is impossible within the limits of this article. (J. A. 8.)

TASSONI, ALEssanpro, Italian poet, was a native of Modena, where he was born in 1565, and where he died in 1635. From 1599 till 1608 ke was secretary to Cardinal Ascanio Colonna, and in this capacity saw some diplomatic service ; he was afterwards employed for some time in similar occupations by Charles Emmanuel, duke of Savoy. His best-known literary work is a burlesque epic entitled La Secchia Rapita, or "The Rape of the Bucket " (1622), the reference being to a raid of the Modenese upon the people of Bologna in 1325, when a bucket was carried off as a trophy. As in Butler's Hudibras, many of the personal and local allusions in this poem are now very obscure, and are apt to seem somewhat pointless to the general reader, but, in spite of Voltaire's contempt, it cannot be neglected by any systematic student of Italian literature (compare vol. xii. p. 512). Other characteristic works of Tassoni are his Pensieri Diversi (1612), in which he treats philosophical, literary, historical, and scientific questions with unusual freedom, and his Considerazioni sopra iu Petrarcha (1609), a piece of criticism showing great independence of traditional views.

TASTE is the sensation referred to the mouth when certain soluble substances are brought into contact with the mucous membrane of that cavity. The sense is located almost entirely in the tongue. Three distinct sensations are referable to the tongue—(1) taste, (2) touch, and (3)

temperature. The posterior part of its surface, where there is a A-shaped group of large papille, called circum- vallate papillz, supplied by the glosso-pharyngeal nerve, and the tip and margins of the tongue, covered with filiform (touch) papillae and fungiform papille, are the chief localities where taste is manifested, but it also exists in the glosso-palatine arch and the lateral part of the soft palate. ‘The middle of the tongue and the surface of the hard palate are devoid of taste. The terminal organs of taste consist of peculiar bodies named taste-bulbs or taste- goblets, discovered by Schwalbe and Lovénin 1867. They can be most easily demonstrated in the papille foliate, large oval prominences found on each side near the base of the tongue in the rabbit. Each papilla consists of a series of laminz or folds, in the sides of which the taste- bodies are readily displayed ina transverse section. Taste- bodies are also found on the lateral aspects of the circum-vallate papillee (see fig. 1), in the fungiform papillee, in the

Fic. 1.—Transverse section of a circumvallate papilla: W, the papilla; v, v, the wall in section ; R, R, the eircular slit or fossa; K, K, the taste-bulbs in posi- tion; N,N,the nerves. The figures arefrom Landois and Stirling’s Phystology.

papillze of the soft palate and uvula, the under surface of the epiglottis, the upper part of the posterior surface of the epiglottis, the inner sides of the arytenoid car- tilages, and even in the vocal cords.

The taste-bulbs are min- ute oval bodies, somewhat like an old-fashioned Flo- rence flask, about 5}, inch in length by 34, in breadth. Each consists of two sets of cells,—an outer set, nucle- ated, fusiform, bent like the staves of a barrel, and arranged side by side so as

Fig. 2.

Fie. 2.—Isolated taste-bulb: D, supporting

z or protective cells; K, under end; E free

to leave a small Opening at end, open, with the projecting apices of the taste-cells.

the apex (the mouth of the rie, 3.—d, Isolated protective cell; e, taste-

Fig. 3.

eell.

barrel), called the gustatory pore; and an inner set, five to ten in number, lying in the centre, pointed at the end next the gustatory pore, and branched at the other extremity. The branched ends are continuous with non-medullated nerve fibres from the gustatory nerve. These taste-bodies are found in immense numbers: as many as 1760 have been counted on one circumvallate papilla in the ox. They are absent in rep- tiles and birds. F. E. Schultze states that they exist in the mouth of the tadpole, whilst the tongue of the frog is covered with epithelium resembling that of the gustatory bodies. Leydig has described organs having a similar structure in the skins of freshwater fishes and the tadpole: these may possibly be widely distributed taste-organs. The proofs that these are the terminal organs of taste rest on careful observations which have shown (1) that taste is only experienced when the sapid substance is allowed to come into contact with the taste-body, and that the sense

membrane where these are deficient ; (2) that they are most abundant where the sense is most acute; and (3) that section of the glosso-pharyngeal nerve which is known to be distributed to the areas of mucous membrane where taste is present is followed by degeneration of the taste- bodies. At the same time it cannot be asserted that they are absolutely essential to taste, as we can hardly suppose that those animals which have no special taste-bodies are devoid of the sense.

Taste is no doubt closely allied to smell; hence in invertebrates organs are found that may be referred to either of the senses (see Sent). Tastes have been vari- ously classified. One of the most useful classifications is into sweet, bitter, acid, and saline tastes. To excite the sensation, substances must be soluble in the fluid of the mouth. Insoluble substances, when brought into contact with the tongue, give rise to feelings of touch or of temperature, but excite no taste. The specific mode ‘of action of sapid substances is quite unknown. The extent of surface acted on increases the massiveness of the sensation, whilst the intensity is affected by the degree of concentration of the solution of the sapid substance. If solutions of various substances are gradually diluted with water until no taste is experienced, Valentine found that the sensations of taste disappeared in the following order— syrup, sugar, common salt, alocs, quinine, sulphuric acid ; and Camerer found that the taste of quinine still con- tinued although diluted with twenty times more water than common salt. Von Vintschgau found that the time required to excite taste after the sapid substance was placed on the tongue varied. Thus saline matters are tasted most rapidly (17 second), then sweet, acid, and bitter (‘258 second). This is probably due to the activity of diffusion of the substance. No relation between the chemical constitution of the substance and the nature of the taste excited by it has yet been discovered, and there are many curious examples of substances of very different chemical constitutions having similar tastes. For example, sugar, acetate of lead, and the vapour of chloroform have all a sweetish taste. A temperature of from 50° to 90° F. is the most favourable to the sense, water above or below this temperature either masking or temporarily paralysing it. Taste is often associated with smell, giving rise to a sensation of flavour, and we are frequently in the habit of confounding the one sensation with the other. Chloroform excites taste alone, whilst garlic, asafoetida, and vanilla excite only smell. This is illustrated by the familiar experiment of blindfolding a person and touch- ing the tongue successively with slices of an apple and of an onion. In these circumstances the one cannot be dis- tinguished from the other when the nose is firmly closed. No doubt also experience aids in detecting slight differ- ences of taste by suggesting to the mind what may be expected ; it is not easy, for instance, to distinguish the tastes of red and white wine when the eyes are blind- folded. Taste may be educated to a remarkable extent ; and careful observation—

along with the practice of avoid- ing all substances having a very pronounced taste or having an irritating effect—enables tea-tasters and winc- tasters to detect slight differences of taste, more especially when combined with odour so as to produce flavour, which would be quite inappreciable to an ordinary palate. As to the action of electrical currents on taste, observers have arrived at uncertain results. So long ago as 1752 Sulzer stated that a constant current caused, more especially at the moments of opening and of closing the current, a sen- sation of acidity at the anode (+ pole) and of alkalinity at the katode (— pole). This is in all probability due to electrolysis, the decomposition products exciting the taste-

i a

is absent or much weakened in those areas of mucous | bodies.

© ey

Griinhagen found that rapidlyinterrupted currents fail to excite the sense ; Von Vintschgau, who has directed much attention to the sense of taste, says that when the tip of his tongue is traversed by a current there is only a tactile sensation. Again Hénigschmied, on the contrary, found that a current excited the metallic or acid taste at the anode placed on the tip of the tongue, whilst the alka. line taste of the katode was absent. The writer of this article has found that this is the experience of most persons examined by him.

Disease of the tongue causing unnatural dryness may

interfere with taste. Substances circulating in the blood may give rise to subjective sensations of taste. Thus santonine, morphia, and biliary products (as in jaundice) usually cause a bitter sensation, whilst the sufferer from diabetes is distressed by a persistent sweetish taste. The insane frequently have subjective tastes, which are real to the patient, and frequently cause much distress. Tn such cases, the sensation is excited by changes in the taste-centres of the brain. Increase in the sense of taste is called hypergeusia, diminution of it hypogeusia, and its ‘entire loss ageusia. Rare cases occur where there is a subjective taste not associated with insanity nor with the circulation of any known sweetish matters in the blood, possibly

caused by irritation of the gustatory nerves or by changes in the nerve centres.

As to the comparative anatomy of the tongue, see Owen's Com- parative Anatomy and Physiology of Vertebrates (London, 1868). For a full account of the physiology of taste, see Von Vintschgau's article " Geschmackssinn," in Hermann's Handbuch der Physiologie, vol. iii. part ii. (J. G. M.)

TATARS. See Tarrars.

TATE, Nanum (1652-17 15), poet-laureate, was born in 1652 in Dublin, and was educated at Trinity College there. He afterwards removed to London, and adopted literature as a profession, succeeding Shadwell as poet-laureate in 1692. He died within the precincts of the Mint, Southwark (whither he had taken refuge fron: his debtors), August 12, 1715.

His name is still remembered in connexion with the New Version of the Psalms of David, which, in conjunction with Nicholas Brapy (q.v.), he published in 1696 (see Hymns, vol. xii. p. 590). Tate was also the author of some ten dramatic pieces (see Biogr.

Dramatica, i. 703) and a great number of poems, including one entitled The Innocent Epicure, or The Art of Angling (1697).

TATIAN, one of the earliest Christian apologists, whose personality and work had an important influence on the history of the church during the period of the Antonines, He was by birth an Assyrian (according to Zahn of Sem- itic descent), but received a Greek education, and, after acquiring a very extensive knowledge of Greek literature, began to travel about the Roman empire as a wandering teacher or "sophist." But his inquiring disposition and his earnest spirit remained unsatisfied alike with the religions and the philosophies he encountered, while the – doings of men, their greed for amusement and pleasure, their vanity and treachery, disgusted him. In this tem- per, about 150 a.p., he reached Rome, where the Old Testa- ment fell into his hands, and at the same time he came into closer relations with the Christians ; their firm faith, chaste morals, fearless courage, and close fellowship deeply impressed him, and in the end the spectacle of their life and their monotheistic doctrine founded upon

prophetic revelation completely conquered him. Henceforward the whole unchristian world, with all its philosophy and culture, presented itself to him as mere darkness and the deception of demons, but the “ barbarian philosophy ” (for so he called Christianity) as the wisdom of God. He became a convert, and soon afterwards (152-153) wrote (most probably in Greece, where he stayed for some time)

his Oratio ad Grecos, which gained him great repute

ial lA N

among the Christians, and is still extant. This discourse is distinguished from the other apologies of that century by the brusqueness with which its author repudiates the culture of the Greeks; his scorn, however, does not forget to avail itself of the resources of Greek philosophy and rhetoric. His polemic often reminds the reader of the Cynics and of such scoffers as Lucian ; his view of. things, however, is very different from that of the last-named writer, for with Tatian the “barbarian philosophy, ” on behalf of which he speaks, which teaches a monotheistic cosmology and inculcates rigid asceticism and renunciation of the world, is indisputably certain. In many details, and even in the general outline of his philosophy, Tatian the Christian continued without knowing it to be a Platon- izing philosopher ; but that he had undergone a radical change is shown by lis views of history and civilization, his faith in one living God, his conviction that truth is contained nowhere else than in the Christian Scriptures, his attitude of trust towards the Logos, made man in Jesus Christ, and finally by his earnest and world-forsaking expectation of judgment to come. The Oratio, which is polemical rather than apologetic in its character, has a special importance in the history of Christian dogma, inas- much as it gives an elaborated exposition of the doctrine of the Logos; it was also read by subsequent writers, as, for example, by Julius Africanus, for its chronological data. Tatian was the first apologist to undertake, on be- half of Christianity, a work of the class which afterwards developed into the numerous “ world-histories ” written from the Christian point of view. Tatian’s diction is often rough, harsh, and abrupt, his sentences involved and inelegant. He has the art, indeed, of expressing him- self with uncommon freedom and independence, and can put things also in a very graphic way, but at the

same time he is a careless stylist, or rather, as an apostate from the Greek view of things, he has tried to accentuate his

breach with classical traditions by elaborate carelessness,

and deliberate eccentricity.

Tatian soon returned from Greece to Rome, and came into close relations with the famous apologist Justin, whom he reverenced greatly. He himself established a school, to which the afterwards celebrated ecclesiastical writer Rhodon belonged for a time. So long as Justin lived (¢.¢., till 166) Tatian's doctrines excited no feelings of offence in the Christian community, although even in his Oratio there are germs of questionable and unorthodox views. These germs, however, he continued to develop until about 172; and, as about this very time the Roman church became severely opposed to everything Gnostic and heretical, a rupture was inevitable; the date of the breach is given by Eusebius (doubtless following Julius Africanus) as having been 172. But the teaching of

Tatian had really become open to challenge. He drew a ' distinction between the supreme God and the demiurge, considering the latter to be good in his nature indeed, but quite a subordinate being ; he accepted the doctrine of a variety of sons; he utterly rejected marriage and the use of animal food; he denied the blessedness of Adam ; he began to abandon the allegorical interpretation of the Scriptures and to see genuine difficulties and contradic- tions in them ; he sought to demonstrate from the epistles of Paul the indispensableness of the most rigid asceticism ; but indeed all his "heresies" (aud he has also been charged with docetism) have their explanation in this desire of his to establish a theoretical basis for his doctrine of the Christian duty of complete world-renunciation. He joined the " Encratites," a sect which indeed had existed before this time, but which received new life from his presence. Of his numerous writings belonging to this period nothing has survived the hostility which sought their repression

Sl

save a few titles (BiBAtov zpoBAyparov, mept TOD Kara TOV cwrhpa Karapticuod, &c.) and one or two very iuteresting fragments in the works of Clement of Alexandria, Origen, and Jerome. Clement of Alexandria seems personally to have known Tatian, and even to have been his pupil for a time. Soon Tatian began also to be assailed in writing by the teachers of the church, and to be set aside as a very prodigy among heretics, and as a man who united the errors of Marcion with those of Valentine. Musanus, Rhodon, Treneus, the author of the Muratorian fragment (see below), Tertullian, Hippolytus, Clement of Alexandria, and Origen all took part in refuting him.

Towards the end of his life, or perhaps even between 152 and 172, Tatian went from Rome to Mesopotamia, and there—probably in Edessa—wrought a great deal. It is probable that he was in Rome about the year 172, but whether he died there or in his native country is not ascertained. It is very possible that in Syria, where ecclesiastical matters had not been developed so far as in – the West, the doctrines of Tatian met with toleration within the Christian communities, but neither of this can we be certain.) But this we do know, that a work of Tatian's not yet mentioned, the Diatessaron, held its ground in the Syrian churches and even in ecclesiastical use for two whole centuries.

The Diatessaron is a gospel very freely and boldly constructed by Tatian out of the four Gospels known to us. It cannot have been produced during his latter years, for all traces of dualism are absent. On the other hand, however, it exhibits ccrtain peculiar- ities of the theology of its compiler. Probably one would not be far wrong in assigning it to the first years of the reign of Marcus Aurelius. It was written by Tatian in Greek, not in Syriac as Zahn has tried to make out; this is shown—(1) by the title, it being known even among the Syrians as Diatessaron; (2) by a few Greek fragments which still survive; (8) by the Latin redaction which it received in the 6th century; (4) by its rejeetion in the Muratorian fragment—for that the word "m-tia-i," earelessly cor- rected by the transcriber, stood originally "tatiani" may be regarded ascertain." In estimating the work scholars were formerly entirely dependent on certain meagre notices in Eusebius, Theodoret, Ephraem Syrus, Epiphanius, and the later Syrians, but we have recently become possessed of large portions of it, and are now in a position to form for

ourselves an idea of its character and plan. In 1877 there was published? a Latin translation, by Aucher the Mechitarist, of Ephraem's gospel commentary, which had been pre- served in Armenian, and it then became apparent that Ephraem had taken the Diatessaron as his basis. This led to further research.® Recognizing with other scholars that other Syrian writers also, down to the middle of the 4th century, had used the Diatessaron (Theodoret tells us that 'in his diocese alone he caused more than 300 copies to be withdrawn from use), Zahn undertook the labo- rious task of restoring the work with the help of Ephraem's com- mentary and other sources.6 In details much of what Zahn has given as belonging to the text of the Diatessaron remains problem- atical,in particular he has not been sufficiently careful in his examination of the work of Aphraates,—but in all the main points his restoration has been successful. The rediscovery of such a work is in a variety of ways of the very highest importance for the early history of Christianity. (1) It is of interest for the history of the canon. It shows that in Tatian's time there was still no recognized New Testament canon, and that the texts of the Gospels were not regarded as inspired. He could not possibly have treated them with such freedom had they becn held to be otherwise. But the ecclesiastical use made of his work in Syria shows that Tatian intended it for the chureh, and, as we are informed further by Eusebius that Tatian also edited the Pauline epistles, we are entitled to conclude that, like Marcion, he wished to frame a special New Testament canon. (2) It is of importance for the Gospels as we now have them. We learn from the Diatessaron that about 160 A.D. our four Gospels had already taken a place of prominence in the church and that no others had done so; that in particular the Fourth Gospel had taken a fixed place alongside of the three

1 The author of the Acta Archelai treats him as a heretie.

2 See Zeitschr. f. d. luth. Theol., 1874 and 1875; Zettschr. 7. wiss. Theol., 1877; Zeitschr. f. Kirchengesch., iii. p. 400.

3 See Credner, Hinl., i. 437 sg.; Semiseh, Tatiant Diatessaron,

1856.

4 Kvangelit Concordantis Expositio facta a S. Ephraemo, Venice.

5 See Harnack, Ztschr. f. Kirchengesch., iv. p. 471 sq.

6 Zahn, Tatian’s Diatessaron, 1881.

synoptics, from the Diatessaron that the texts of our Gospels about the year 160 already ran essentially as we now read them, but that inten- tional changes were not wanting about the middle of the 2d century. Thus, forexample, Tatian in his Gospel according to Matthew found nothing about the ‘‘ church ” and about the building of the church upou Peter the rock. These sentences therefore are very probably of later interpolation. (4) It is of importance for the light it throws on Tatian’s Christianity. The Syriac translation of the Diatessaron still falls within the 2d century, but Zahn was mistaken in assum- ing it to presuppose a prior Syriac translation of the separate Gospels (the so-called Syrus Curetonianus); Baethgen! has shown the latter to be the later. It was only gradually that the ‘‘“evangelium der Getrennten” superseded the “evangelium der Gemischten,”? ‘

The best editions of the Oratio ad Grexcos are those of Worth (Oxford, 1700), Maranus (Paris, 1742), and Otto (Jena, 1851). See Daniel, Tatian der Apologet, 1837; Zahn, Tatian’s Diatessaron, Erlangen, 1881 (compare also his Zvang.- Comm. des Theophilus, Erlangen, 1883, p. 286 sg.); Harnack, Texte u. Unter- suchungen z. Gesch. d. altchr. Lit., i. 13 Id., Ztschr. f. Kirchengesch., iv. 471 $9.3 and Tatian’s Rede an die Griechen iibersetzt u. eingeleitet, Giessen, 1884; Hilgen- feld, Ketzergesch., Leipsic, 1884; Mller, art. ‘‘ Tatian,” in Herzog-Plitt’s Encyki., vol. xv.; and Donaldson, /ist. of Christ. Lit., iii. p. 3-62, (A. HA.)

TATIUS, Acuinies. See Romance, vol. xx. p. 635 sq.

TAULER, Joann (c. 1300-1361), was born about the year 1300 in Strasburg, where his father was a wealthy burgher. It is probable that he entered the Dominican convent in his native city about the year 1313, while Meister Eckhart was still professor of theology (1312- 1320) in the monastery school. From Strasburg he went to the Dominican college of Cologne, and

some believe that his superiors sent him a few years later to St James's College, Paris. After his theological education was finished he returned to Strasburg. In 1324 the pope placed under an interdict these parts of Germany, including Strasburg, which supported the excommunicated emperor Louis of Bavaria. It was one of the privileges of the Dominican and Franciscan orders to be allowed to perform religious services when the secular and all other regular clergy were silenced by an interdict. The Dominican order, however, had taken the side of Frederick, and in most places refused to say mass ; but in Strasburg they remained in the deserted city, kept their churches open, and admin- istered to the citizens the consolations of religion. It is supposed that this conduct of the Strasburg Dominicans was due to the influence of Tauler. In 1339 the heads of the order interfered, and commanded the monks to close their churches. The town council in return banished the Dominicans from the city. Tauler, with some of his brethren, found refuge in Basel, although that city, like Strasburg, sided with the emperor. During these years Basel was the headquarters of the "Friends of God" (Gottesfreunde, see Mysticism, vol. xvii. p- 133), and Tauler was brought into intimate relations with the members of that pious mystical fellowship. He returned to Strasburg probably in the year 1346. It is somewhat difficult to trace his later life. The Black Death came to Strasburg in 1348, and it is more than probable that, when the city was deserted by all who could leave it, Tauler remained at his post, encouraging by sermons and personal visitations his terror-stricken fellow-citizens. His corre- spondence with distinguished members of the Gottes- Jreunde, especially with Margaretha Ebner, and the fame of his preaching and other work in Strasburg, had made him known throughout a wide circle of pious people. He seems to have made preaching journeys, in the later years of his life, to Cologne and to other places in the Rhine- land. He died in the year 1361.

u vangelienfragmente: Der Griechische Text des Cureton' schen Syrers, Leipsic, 1885.

2 On the Diatessaron, its later history and various editions, see (besides Zahn, as cited above) the Codea Fuldensis, ed. Ranke, 1868 ; Schmeller, Ammonii Alex. qua et Tatiant dicitur Harmonia Evang., 1841; Sievers,

Tatian, Lat. and Ger., Paderborn, 1872; Martin, “De Tatiani Diatessaron Arabica Versione,” in Pitra’s Analecta Sacra, vol. iv. (1883), pp. 465, 487.

(3) As regards the text of the Gospels, we can conclude |

Pe Sn

It is somewhat difficult to form an estimate of the religious life and opinions of Tauler. For many years the clrief modern authority upon the subject was the late Prof. C. Schmidt of Strasburg, whose views had been introduced into England in Miss Winkworth’s book upon Tauler. According to Schinidt, Tauler’s religious life divides into two parts, before and after what may be called hig second conversion. In the first period Eckhart rules his religious life; in the second he is under the influence of the inystcrious ‘‘Friend of God in the Oberland,” whom Schmidt asserts to be Nicholas of Basel. Denifle doubts the historical character of this episode and the genuineness of the book, while Preger admits the fact of the conversion, but refuses to identify the mysterious stranger with Nicholas of Bascl.

It is still more difficult to determine the precise nature of the theological opinions of Tauler. Deuifle maintains that the only genuine remains of Tauler are the eighty well-known Sermons in- cluded in the earliest edition and four others in two manuscripts, all of which bear Tauler’s name; Preger seems inclined to admit in addition the Sermons in the account of Tauler’s conversion ; both critics exclude the famous Book of Spiritual Poverty. Schmidt, on the other hand, while admitting the authenticity of all the above-named sermons, calls the Book of Spiritual Poverty Tauler’s masterpiece.

If we take the Sermons by themselves, then Tauler’s teachers in theology were the Pseudo-Dionysius, Augustine, Gregory, Bernard, the two abbots of St Victor, Thomas Aquinas, and, above all, Theodoric of Freiburg and Meister Eckhart. His theology will represent the purest and highest type of German mysticism (see Mystictsm), and, by insisting upon personal relationship to God, freedom from the thraldon: of authority, and the worthlessness of mere good works without the renewal of the inward life, will re- present a tendency in theology which found full expression in the reformation of the 16th century. If, on the other hand, the Book of Spiritual

Poverty be included among the genuine writings of Tauler, then undoubtedly his views have more distinct connexion with that doctrine of the appropriation of the benefits of Christ's work of redemption by an imitatio Christ? finding expression in a life of evangelical poverty which is such a characteristic of the religious life of the century to which he belonged. The problem is a very difficult one, and it may be questioned whether we are yet in a position to solve it. Denifle is undoubtedly correct in his statement that we need critical texts of 14th-century mystical writers, and that very great uncertainty exists with reference to the authors of the individual mystical writings of that period. It may be added that it is very probable, when the organization and method of work among the ‘‘ Friends of God” are taken into con- sideration, that many mystical books of devotion were the work, not of one, but of several authors, and that the conditions of the problem concerning the authenticity of Tauler's writings are not unlike those which exist among the books and tracts ascribed to Wickliffe. This at all events nay be safely asserted, that Tauler's sermons are among the noblest in the German language. They are not so emotional as Suso's, nor so speculative as Eckhart's, but they are intensely practical, and touch on all sides the deeper pro- blems of the moral and spiritual life.

Tauler's Sermons were printed first at Leipsic in 1498, ana reprinted with additions from Eckhart and others at Basel (1521, 1522) and at Cologne (1548), There is a recent edition by Julius Hamberger, Frankfort, 1864. See Denifle, Das Buch von geistlicher Armuth, 1877; Carl Schmidt, Johann Tauler von Strass- burg, Hamburg, 1841; Miss Winkworth, Zauler's Life and Sermons; R. A. Vaughan, Hours with the Mystics, 3d ed., vol. i. pp. 214-807. The third volume of Preger's Gesch. der deutschen Mystik im Mittelalter, which will treat of Tauler, is in the press.

TAUNTON, a municipal borough and market-town of Somerset, England, is situated in the beautiful and fertile vale of Taunton Dene, on the river Tone, on the Taunton and Bridgwater Canal, and on several branches of the Great Western Railway, 45 miles south-south-west of Bristol, 31 north-east of Exeter, and 163 west-south-west of London. The river is crossed by a stone bridge of three arches. The town is well built, the three main streets being wide and regular, and meeting in a triangular space in the centre called the Parade, where there is a market cross. The castle, now occupied

by the museum of the Somerset Archeological and Natural History Society, is reputed to have been founded by Ine, king of the West- Saxons. The earliest portion of the present building was erected by Walter Giffard, bishop of Winchester, in the time of Henry L., but the whole building was repaired in 1496, and an embattled gateway erected by Bishop Langton. The church of St Mary Magdalene, a spacious building with double aisles both north and south of the nave, is chiefly Perpendicular, but has remains of Norman work in

the chancel arch, and of Early English in the north aisles and transepts. It possesses one of the finest of the characteristic towers of Somerset, but only a facsimile reproduction (erected 1857-62) of the old one. There are still some remains of the Augustinian priory founded by Bishop Giffard, and there are also two modern convents. Taunton is an important centre of education, the principal institutions being the grammar school (founded in 1522 by Richard Fox, bishop of Winchester), Huish's schools, the Independent college (1841), and the Wesleyan collegiate institution (1847). The other principal public buildings are the old market-house, the assembly rooms, the new market in the Ionic style, and the shire hall in the Eliza- bethan style, opened in 1858 at a cost of £28,000. The charitable institutions include the Taunton and Somerset hospital (opened in 1809 and extended in 1870 and 1873), the eye infirmary (1816), Gray's almshouses and chapel (1635), St Saviour's home for boys (1870), and the servants' training home (1882). The town possesses manufactories of silk, collars and cuffs, and gloves, iron and brass found- ries, coach-building works, and breweries. There is also a considerable agricultural trade. The population of the municipal and parliamentary borough (area 1249 acres) in 1881 was 16,614. The population of the same area in 1871 was 15,466.

Taunton has played a prominent part during the troubled periods of Eph history. Various Roman remains prove it to have been occupied by the Romans; but it first obtained historical notice when Ine, king of the West-Saxons, made it the border fortress of his kingdom. It takes the name Taunton, or Thoneton, from its situation on the Tone or Thone. The castle was razed by Ethelburg after expelling Edbricht, king of the South-Saxons.

About the time of William the Conqueror the town and castle were granted to the bishop of Winchester, and for many years the castle was the bishop's principal residence. In the reign of William it possessed a mint. In 1497 the town and castle were seized by the impostor Perkin Warbeck. Taunton was made the seat of the suffragan see of Taunton and Bridgwater in 15388, but, on the death of William Finch, the first bishop, in 1559, the Act had no further operation in reference to Taunton. Like the other towns of Somerset, Taunton was strongly Puritan in its sympathies. Situated at a point where the main roads of the county met, it was during the Civil War almost constantly in a state of siege by one or other of the rival parties. Having been garrisoned by the Parliamentary forces, it was captured by the Royalists in the summer of 1648, but on 8th July 1644 it was, after a long siege, taken by Blake, who held it with heroic pertinacity till relieved by Fairfax on the 11th May 1645, and again after it was invested by 10,000 troops under Goring till the siege was finally raised on the 3d July. Still constant to its Puritan traditions, Taunton welcomed Monmouth in 1685 with acclamation, and he was proclaimed king there on the 20th June, the maidens of the town presenting him with a standard. As a consequence, Taunton was made the chief example of the fearful vengeance of Jeffreys, who, at the assizes held in the castle, con- demned no fewer than 134 inhabitants of the town and neighbour- hood to death, and a much larger number to transportation. Taunton obtained a municipal charter from Charles I. in 1627, which was revoked in 1660. A second charter, granted by Charles II. in 1677, was permitted to lapse in 1792 owing to the corporation allowing a majority of their number to die without filling up the vacancies. From this time until it again received municipal government, 17th April 1877, it was under the care of two bailiffs appointed at the court leet of the lord of the manor. Formerly the town returned mo members to parliament, but in 1885 the number was reduced o one.

See Tonlmin's History of Taunton, edited by Savage, 1822; and several papers in the Proceedings of the Somerset Arehzologieal Society for 1872.

TAUNTON, a city of the United States, the county seat of Bristol county, Massachusetts, lies some 31 miles nearly south from Boston. The town proper, sometimes called Taunton Green, stands on the right bank of the Taunton river, at the head of navigation, about 17 miles above itsmouth.

The entire area enclosed within the cor- porate limits is 37 square miles. Taunton is traversed by the main line of the Old Colony Railway, which con- nects it with Boston and Fall River, Mass., and Pro- vidence, R.I. Owing to its situation and its connexions by rail and sea, Taunton has become a supply point for the

greater part or south-eastern Massachusetts. The popula- tion of the city was 18,629 in 1870, 21,213 in 1880, and 23,674 in 1885, showing an increase somewhat in excess of that of the State at large. Fully one-fourth of the popu- lation are of foreign birth, and the proportion is increasing. The State lunatic asylum is in Taunton. The leading industries are the manufacture of cotton goods, iron and steel products (particularly locomotives, machinery, nails and spikes), and silver-plated table ware. Taunton was incorporated as a town in 1639, and received a city charter in 1864.

TAURIDA, a government of southern Russia, includes the peninsula of Crimea (¢.v.) and a tract of mainland situated between the lower Dnieper and the coasts of the Black Sea and the Sea of Azoff, and is bounded by these two seas on the §., while it has on the N. the governments of Kherson and Ekaterinoslaff. The area is 24,540 square miles, of which 6990 square miles belong to the Crimea ; its continental part consists of a gently undulating steppe of black earth, with only a few patches of salt clay on the banks of the Sivash or Putrid Sea, and sands in the lower course of the Dnieper. It is watered by the Dnieper, which flows along the frontier for 180 miles, and by two small rivers, the Molotchnaya and Berda. Many small lakes and ponds occur in the north, especially among the Dnieper sands, as well as on the Kinburn peninsula, at the mouth of the Dnieper, where salt is made. There are no forests except the artificial plantations in the colonies of the Mennonites. The climate is continental, and resembles that of central Criniea and Kherson. The population in 1883 was 940,530 (247,780 in Crimea). The continental portion, although less mixed than that of the peninsula, consists of Russians (Great, Little, and White Russians), who constitute 83 per cent. of the population, Germans (11 per cent.), Bulgarians (5 per cent.), and Jews (1 per cent.).

Agriculture and cattle-breeding are the leading occupations. Wheat is the chief product, and by the Germans and Russian Non- conformists on the Molotchnaya agriculture is carried to a high degree of perfection. In 1882 there were within the government 356,270 horses, 485,800 cattle, and 3,985,800 sheep (2,891,700 merinos). Salt is made both on the mainland and in the Crimea, and the fisheries along the coast supply an export trade. Manu- factures are insignificant, but there is a brisk export trade in grain, salt, fish, wool, and tallow. The main centres of trade are the Kakhovka port on the Dnieper, Berdyansk on the Sea of Azoff, and the seaports of Eupatoria, Sebastopol, Sudak, and Theodosia. The government is divided into eight districts, the chief towns of which (with populations in 1881) are Simferopol (29,080), capital of the government, Eupatoria (18,420), and Theodosia (10,800) in Crimea, and Aleshki (8915), Berdyansk (18,180), Melitopol (18,310), Perekop (4280), and Yalta (3000) on the continent. Several villages, such as Bolshoy Tokmak (8000) and Andreevka (7300), have each a population of more than 5000.

TAUROMENIUM. See Taormina.

TAURUS. See Asta Mrvor, vol. ii. p. 704-5.

TAVERNIER, Jean Baptiste (1605-1689), the cele- brated traveller and pioneer of French trade with India, was born (1605) at Paris, where his father Gabriel and uncle Melchior, Protestants from Antwerp, pursued with reputation and success the profession of geographers and engravers. The conversations he heard in his father’s house inspired Jean Baptiste with an early desire to travel, and in his sixteenth year he had already visited England, the Low Countries, and Germany, and seen something of war with the imperialist Colonel Hans Brenner, whom he met at Nuremberg. Four anda half years in the household of Brenner’s uncle, the viceroy of Hungary (1624-29), and a briefer connexion in 1629 with the duke of Rethel and his father the duke of Nevers, prince of Mantua, gave him the habit of courts, which was invaluable to him in later years, and at the defence of Mantua in 1629, and in Ger- many in the following year with Colonel Walter Butler (afterwards notorious through the death of Wallenstein),

he gained some military experience. When he left Butler to view the diet of Ratisbon in 1630, he had seen Italy, Switzerland, Germany, Poland, and Hungary, as well as France, England, and the Low Countries, and spoke the principal languages of these regions. He was now eager to visit the East, and at Ratisbon he found the oppor- tunity to join two French fathers, M. de Chapes and M. de St Liebau, who had received a mission to the Levant. In their company he reached Constantinople early in 1631, and here he spent eleven months, and then proceeded by Tokat, Erzerum, and Erivan to Persia. His farthest point in this first journey was Ispahan ; he returned by Baghdad, Aleppo, Alexandretta, Malta, and Italy, and was again in Paris in 1633. Of the next five years of his life nothing is known with certainty, but it is probable that it was during this period that he became controller of the house- hold of the duke of Orleans. In September 1638 he began a second journey (1638-43) by Aleppo to Persia and thence to India as far as Agra and Golconda. His visit to the court of the Great Mogul and to the famous diamond mines was, of course, connected with the plans realized more fully in his later voyages, in which Tavernier travelled as a merchant of the highest rank, trading in costly jewels and other precious wares, and finding his chief customers among the greatest princes of the East. The second journey was followed up by four others. In his third journey (1643-49) he went as far as Java and returned by the Cape; but his relations with the Dutch proved not wholly satisfactory, and a long lawsuit on his return yielded but imperfect redress. In his last three journeys (1651-55, 1657-62, 1664-68) he did not proceed beyond India. The details of these voyages need not detain us here, and indeed are often obscure; but they completed an extraordinary knowledge of the routes of overland Eastern trade, and brought the now famous merchant into close and friendly communication with the greatest Oriental potentates. They also secured for him a large fortune and great reputation at home. He was presented to Louis XIV., “in whose service he had travelled sixty thousand leagues by land,” received letters of nobility (16th February 1669), and in the following year purchased the barony of Aubonne, near Geneva. In 1662 he had married Madeleine Goisse, daughter of a Parisian jeweller.

Thus settled in ease and affluence, Tavernier occupied himself, as it would seem at the desire of the king, in publishing the account of his journeys. He had neither the equipment nor the tastes of a scientific traveller, but in all

that referred to commerce his knowledge was vast and could not fail to be of much public service. He set to work therefore with the aid of Samuel Chappuzeau, a French Protestant littérateur, and produced a Nouwvelle Relation de VIntérieur du Sérail du Grand Seigneur (Ato, Paris, 1675), based on two visits to Constantinople in his first and sixth journeys. This was followed by Le Six Voyages de J. B. Tavernier (2 vols, 4to, Paris, 1676) and by a supplementary Recueil de Plusieurs Relations (4to, Paris, 1679), in which he was assisted by a certain La Chapelle. This last contains an account of Japan, gathered from merchants and others, and one of Tong- king, derived from the observations of his brother Daniel, who had shared his second voyage and settled at Batavia; it con- tained also a violent attack on the agents of the Dutch East India Company, at whose hands Tavernier had suffered more than one wrong. This attack was elaborately an- swered in Dutch by H. van Quellenburgh (Vindiciz Bata- vicx, Amst., 1684), but made more noise because Arnauld drew from it some material unfavourable to Protestantism for his Apologie pour les Catholiques (1681), and so brought on the traveller a ferocious onslaught in Jurieu's Esprit de

M. Arnauld (1684). Tavernier made no reply to Jurien; he was in fact engaged in weightier matters, for in 1684 he travelled to Berlin at the invitation of the Great Elector, who commissioned him to organize an Eastern trading com- pany,—a project never realized. The closing years of Ta- vernier's life are obscure ; the time was not favourable for a Protestant, and it has even been supposed that he passed some time in the Bastille. What is certain is that he left Paris for Switzerland in 1687, that in 1689 he passed through Copenhagen on his way to Persia through Mus- covy, and that in the same year he died at Moscow. It appears that he had still business relations in the East, and that the neglect of these by his nephew, to whom they were intrusted, had determined the indefatigable old man toa fresh journey.

Tavernier's travels, though often reprinted and translated, have two defects: the author uses other men's material without dis- tinguishing it from his own observations; and the narrative is much confused by his plan of often deserting the chronological order and giving instead notes from various

journeys about certain routes, The latter defect, it is true, while it embarrasses the biographer, ig hardly a blemish in view of the object of the writer, who sought mainly to furnish a guide to other merchants. A careful attempt to disentangle the thread of a life still in many parts obscure has been made by Charles Joret, Jean Baptiste Tavernier d'apres des Documents Nouveaux, 8vo, Paris, 1886, where the literature of the subject is fully given.

TAVIRA, a seaport of Portugal, in the province of Algarves, at the mouth of the Seca, 21 miles east-north-east of Faro. It is regularly built, and has an alcazar, used as an official residence, besides other public buildings. It has sardine and tunny fisheries, and carries on a consider- able coasting trade. Excellent fruit is grown in the neighbourhood. 'The population in 1878 was 11,459.

TAVISTOCK, a town of Devonshire, England, is finely situated in the valley of the Tavy, on the western border of Dartmoor, and on the South Devon Railway, 15 miles north of Plymouth, 14 south-east of Launceston, and 213 west-south-west of London. The town has been greatly improved since 1845, chiefly at the expense of the duke of Bedford, by the construction of a system of sewage and the erection of many new dwellings suitable for the work- ing classes. There are some remains (including a portion in the square, now used as a public library established in 1799) of the magnificent abbey of Sts Mary and Rumon, first founded in 961 by Orgar, earl of Devon. After de- struction by the Danes in 997 it was restored, and among its famous abbots were Lyfing, friend of Canute, and Aldred, who crowned Harold II. and William, and died archbishop of York. The abbey church was rebuilt in 1285, and the greater part of the abbey in 1457-58. The church of St Eustachius possesses a lofty tower supported on four open arches. Among the principal public buildings are the guild- hall (1848), the corn market (1838), the market buildings (1858), and the new hall for concerts and public entertain- ments. Near the town is Kelly College, opened in 1877, founded by Admiral Benedictus Marwood Kelly, with a preference for the founder's kin. Mines of copper, man- ganese, lead, silver, and tin are in the neighbourhood, and the town possesses a considerable trade in cattle and corn, as well as a brewery. The population of the township in 1881 was 6914. The parliamentary borough (area 11,450

acres), which had a population in 1871 of 7725 and in 1881 of 6879, was merged in the county in 1885.

The town owes its origin to the foundation of the abbey in 961. From Henry I. the abbots obtained the entire jurisdiction of the hundred of Tavistock, with a weekly market. A school for Saxon literature was established by the monks, which flourished till the Reformation. The Royalists were quartered at Tavistock after the defeat of the Parliamentarians on Bradock Down in 1648, and Charles I. visited it on his way to Cornwall. It returned members to parliament from the time of Edward I. till 1885, among its representatives having been John Pym, the great opposer of the policy of Charles I., and William, Lord Russell, beheaded in the

reign of Charles II. Among the famous natives of Tavistock are Sir John Glanville, judge under James I., William Brown, the author of Britannia's Pastorals, and Sir Francis Drake, of whom a colossal statue by Boehm was presented to the town by the duke of Bedford in 1883.

TAVOY, a British district in the Tenasserim division of Burmah, lying between 13° 15' and 15° 11' N. lat. and between 97° 48' and 98° 44' EB. long. It has an area of 7200 square miles, and is bounded on the N. by Amherst district, E. by the Yoma Mountains, 8. by Mergui district, and W. by the Bay of Bengal. The district is enclosed by mountains on three sides, viz., the main chain of the Yomas on the east, rising in places to 5000 feet, which, with its densely wooded spurs, forms an almost impassable barrier between British and Siamese territory ; the Nwahlabo in the centre, which takes its name from its loftiest peak (5000 feet); and a third range, under the name of Thinmaw, between the Nwahlabo and the sea- coast. The chief rivers are the Tenasserim and Tavoy, the former being formed by the junction of two streams which unite near Met-ta; for the greater part of its course it is dangerous to navigation. The Tavoy is navigable for vessels of any burden. It is interspersed with many islands, and with its numerous smaller tributaries affords easy and rapid communication over the country. The climate is on the whole pleasant. The rainfall averages about 190 inches a year.

The census of 1881 returned the population of Tavoy at 84,988 (males 41,785, females 43,203), of whom 82,187 were Buddhists, 828 were Mohammedans, and 1368 were Christians. The headquarters and capital is Tavoy town, which is situated on the left bank of the river of the same name, and contained a population of 13,372 in 1881. Of the total area, only 83,740 acres are (1885-86) culti- vated. Rice is the principal product ; the betel-nut is extensively grown for home consumption ; and the district is particularly rich in fruit trees. With its only port difficult of access, and with no means of internal communication, the trade of Tavoy district has always been small and almost entirely confined to Siam and the Straits Settlements. The principal imports are piece goods and other cotton manufactures, raw silk, tea, crockery, wines and spirits, metals, and provisions. The chief manufactures are salt and earthen pots. The gross revenue of the district in 1885-86 was £20,235, of which the land contributed £12,663. Tavoy was handed over to the British at the end of the first Burmese war in 1824. A revolt broke out in 1829, headed by Moung Da, the former governor, which was at once quelled, and since then the district has remained in undisturbed possession of the British.

TAWING. See LeaTHEr.

TAXATION. With regard to taxes in general Adam Smith lays down four maxims which have been briefly described as the maxims of equality, certainty, convenience, and economy. The treatment of the general principles of taxation by subsequent writers consists in the main of the development and criticism of these celebrated canons.

Equality of Taxation.—The subjoined passage from Adam Smith contains the germs of several distinct theories of what constitutes just or equal taxation :—

“The subjects of every state ought to contribute towards the support of its government as nearly as possible in proportion to their respective abilities, that is, in proportion to the revenue which they respectively enjoy under the protection of the state. The expense of government to the individuals of a great nation is like the expense of management to the joint tenants of a great estate, who are all obliged to contribute in proportion to their respective Interests in the estate. In the observation or neglect of this maxim consists

what is called the equality or inequality of taxation. Every tax, it must be observed once for all, which falls finally upon one only of the three sorts of revenue above-mentioned [viz., rent, wages, profits] is necessarily unequal in so far as it does not affect the other two. In the following examination of different taxes I shall seldom take much further notice of this sort of Inequality, but shall in most cases confine my observations to that Inequality which is occasioned by a particular tax falling unequally upon that particular sort of private revenue which is affected by it."

The first sentence implies (a) that every Government has

the right to exact contributions for its support from all its subjects.

a 85

derived directly from the conception of sovereignty. It was the determination to insist on this principle which led to the retention of the 3d. per tb duty on tea, that "figment of a tax, that peppercorn rent," which lost the British their American colonies. The Americans opposed to this absolute doctrine the maxim that taxation ought to be coincident with representation,—that only those who shared in the powers should have the burdens of government. If the latter opinion is strictly construed it would follow that all taxes on articles of universal consumption are unjust except in a country where all who have the natural have also the legal capacity of voting. The doctrine of sove- reignty as the basis of taxation, pushed to its logical extreme, results in the maxim that a Government should impose such taxes as are "most easily assessed and collected, and are at the same time most conducive to the public interests" (M'Culloch). Just as a general looks to the efficiency of his army as a whole, and is prepared to sacrifice any portion if necessary, so, it may be said, the state should not regard the particular interests of individuals, but should rather consider the nation as an organism, or, to adopt older phraseology, a leviathan. So far as the political existence of a state is concerned, this view seems to meet with general acquiescence even in modern times, when patriotism is often classed amongst the doubtful virtues, but no ideal of a perfect state has yet met with such acceptance in any nation as to render popular a complete neglect of private interests.

Accordingly, a second basis of taxation (6) is found in the expansion of the term ‘‘abilities” used by Adam Smith, which leads to the position that taxes ought to be levied so as to involve equality of sacrifice on the part of the contributors. This is the ideal of taxation which was advocated by Mill and Fawcett. ‘Equality of taxation as a maxim of politics,” says the former, “‘ means equality of sacrifice. It means the apportioning the contribution of each person towards the expenses of government, so that he shall feel neither more nor less inconvenience from his share of the payment than every other person experi- ences from his.” It is admitted that this standard cannot be completely realized, but it is thought to furnish a proper foundation of remission in some cases and of pro- portional increase of taxation in others. It is generally on this ground that it is proposed to leave incomes below a certain amount untaxed,—a plan which, so far as direct taxes are concerned, has been adopted in the United Kingdom. It is clear, however, that any taxes on com- modities in general use must infringe this canon, whilst the distinction between “necessaries” and “luxuries,” as Adam Smith pointed out, is difficult to draw in com- munities advancing in civilization ; and certainly a con- siderable portion of the taxes on stimulants is, as a matter of fact, derived from persons whose incomes are below what is generally considered a reasonable minimum for the standard of comfort, and such persons would prob- ably consider enforced abstinence a greater sacrifice than the payment of a direct tax. It is also principally on the ground of equality of sacrifice that the proposal for graduated or progressive taxation rests. It is argued that a person with £10,000 a year can pay 10 per cent. (for example) as easily as a person with £1000 can pay 5 per cent. It is to be observed that the principle of equality of sacrifice regards the payment of taxes as duty imposed on the subjects of a state independently of the advantages they may derive individually from the expenditure of the amount levied.

A third basis of taxation, however, is found in the principle © that taxes ought to be considered as payment for valuable services rendered by the state to individuals,

According to this view, the right of taxation is ; and this seems to be the position Adam Smith had in view

in introducing the clause “under the protection of the state,” and in comparing the individuals of a great nation to the joint tenants of a great estate. It is easy to show, as Mill does, that, if protection is taken in its narrowest signification, as a matter of fact the poor need more protection than the rich, but the argument becomes more plausible, and more consonant with the general teaching of Mill, if stress is laid on the protection and assistance afforded by the state in the process of acquisition of indi- vidual fortunes—a view of taxation sometimes called the social dividend theory (cf. Walker, Helferich). It is really on this ground that Mill proposes that the “unearned increment” from land should be taken by the state, and, as has often been pointed out, “unearned increments ” are by no means confined to land. Without much exag- geration the state may be regarded as a partner in all industrial undertakings, and is therefore entitled to a share in the proceeds. In a somewhat similar manner, poor rates, education rates, &c., have been regarded as of the nature of insurance paid by the rich against the care- lessness of the poor. The principle under consideration has been generally applied in cases in which the service rendered by the state and the benefit accruing to indi- viduals are easily discovered and estimated, especially in connexion with local taxation.

The object of taxation is in general to provide the state with an adequate revenue, but in all cases the indirect effects are important, and sometimes provision of revenue is considered of secondary importance. Accordingly it has been maintained (d) that the state ought to use its powers of taxation for the promotion of various social ends. Adam Smith remarks that “it has for some time past been the policy of Great Britain to discourage the consumption of spirituous liquors, on account of their supposed tendency to ruin the health and corrupt the morals of the common people,” and in our own times the falling off in the revenue from alcoholic drinks often furnishes a subject for apparent congratulation in “budget” speeches. German writers with socialistic tendencies (¢.7., Wagner) have emphasized this social point of taxation; and Mill, although disapproving of graduated taxation of income, advocated the imposition of extremely heavy succession duties, with the object of promoting a better distribution of national wealth and compelling individuals to rely on themselves. Many

nations again have imposed duties on imports with the view of protecting and eucouraging home industries, and most of the import duties levied in England before the great reforms of Peel were of this nature. Accordingly, both theoretically and practically, the promotion of social or moral ends may be considered as a fourth basis of taxa- tion. It is worth noticing that in early times the fines received in the courts of justice were an important source of revenue.

Whatever basis of taxation be adopted, the elementary principle of justice noticed in the conclusion of A. Smith's first canon must be considered. If it is just to tax A, it is just to tax B under precisely similar circumstances. Thus stated, the principle seems almost formal, but for practical purposes small differences in circumstances may be neglected, and it is clear that in any great nation the taxpayers may be arranged in a limited number of groups, within each of which the constituent individuals may be regarded as similarly situated. A tax on rent, or wages, or profits would be obviously unequal if those in one place or employment were taxed while those in another were left free. The practical difficulty is to discover what cases may fairly be regarded as similar, especially if equality of sacrifice be taken as the ideal.

As a matter of fact, in every civilized community a complex system of taxation is adopted, the different parts

of which rest in different degrees upon the various prin- ciples just noticed. Some taxes are justified on the grounds of their convenience to the sovereign power, and others are increased or diminished in certain cases in accordance with the principle of equality of sacrifice : some are regarded as payments for services rendered by the state, others partake of the nature of sumptuary regulations or are approved on various social or moral grounds ; and sometimes the imposition of one productive tax involves, on the ground of simple equality, the adop- tion of similar taxes which are hardly worth collecting.

The remaining canons of Adam Smith are partly, like the Cer.

first, ethical in character partly purely economic. Of the tainty, second—the canon of certainty—Adami Smith remarks :— ~~"The time of payment, the~~

~~manner of payment, the quantity to be paid, ought all to be clear and plain to the contributor and to every other person [on the ground of the otherwise arbitrary powers which are given to the tax~~ gatherer].... The certainty of what each individual ought to pay is in taxation a matter of so great importance that a very considerable degree of inequality, it appears, I believe, from the experience of all nations, is not near so great an evil as a very small degree of uncertainty." Perhaps the best example of the infringement of this canon is furnished by the taxes levied from the miserable pro- vincials by their Roman governors.

The third rule—the canon of convenience—which enjoins Con. that "every tax ought to be levied at the time or in the venience, manner to which it is most likely to be convenient for the contributor to pay it," may be justified, not merely on general grounds of good government, but also on the special economic ground of the increase in the productive- ness of taxes which satisfy the condition. It has been found possible to raise a considerable revenue by taxes on commodities, the payments of which by the consumers are made in insensible portions, when it would have been im- possible to collect the same amount by direct taxation at comparatively long intervals. Taxation is in this respect like bleeding.

The fourth rule—the canon of economy—states as its Economy, general principle that "every tax ought to be so contrived as both to take out and to keep out of the pockets of the people as little as possible over and above what it brings into the public treasury of the state." Taxes may, accord- ing to Adam Smith, break this rule by requiring a large number of officials for their collection, by restraint of trade and production, by encouraging smuggling, and by causing unnecessary vexation; "and, though vexation is not, strictly speaking, expense, it is certainly equivalent to the expense at which every man would be willing to redeem himself from it." On smuggling Adam Smith elsewhere remarks that "to pretend to have any scruple about buying smuggled goods would in most countries be regarded as one of those pedantic pieces of hypocrisy which serve only to expose the person who affects to practise them to the suspicion of being a greater knave than his neighbours." It may be observed that in practical politics it is generally taken for granted that a tax which can be evaded will be evaded,

and indirect methods of taxation are to a great extent devices by which possibilities of evasion are restricted.

To these general rules of taxation explicitly given by Other Adam Smith, the following may be added, most of which general are implied in different passages of his treatment of taxa- Ze tion, but have been expounded and emphasized by subse- * quent writers. A convenient summary is given by Hel- ferich in Schénberg's andbuch der Politéschen Ockonomie (vol. ii, p. 138). (a) A given amount of revenue is, as & tule, both from the point of view of the Government and its subjects, more conveniently raised from a small number

La xk ATP LON

of very productive taxes than from a larger number with smaller returns per unit. This was one of the principal financial reforms advocated by Adain Smith with reference to the customs duties, and has been carried out in the United Kingdom by Sir Robert Peel and lis successors. The inextricable confusion of the customs duties levied before these reforms were effected can only be realized by those who study the details of the history of taxation. A similar process of simplification has been partially applied to the direct taxes, but in many cases (especially in local taxation) the rule is more honoured in the breach than in the observance. (6) A good system of taxation ought to provide for a self-acting increase in the revenue in propor- tion as the population and the consequent demands for governmental expenditure increase. It has been found by experience that an old tax causes less inconvenience than a new tax of smaller amount, a fact which is so striking in some cases as to have given rise to the saying that an old tax is no tax. (c) Those taxes are best which yield a steady and calculable return, instead of a return fiuctuat- ing in character and difficult to estimate. (d) Those taxes are best which in case of need can be most conveniently increased in amount. It is this characteristic of the inconie tax which renders it so popular with chancellors of the excliequer, and it was partly on this ground that Mr Gladstone substituted a tax on beer for the tax on malt. (e) Regard must always be paid to the real inci- dence of taxation, and care taken that the real burden of the tax falls on those aimed at by the legislature. No part of the theory or practice of taxation has given rise to so

much controversy as the incidence of particular taxes, a subject indeed of so much difficulty and importance as to occupy the greater portion of the treatment by systematic writers.

INCIDENCE oF ‘‘axaTion.—Taxes are generally divided into direct and indirect. A direct tax is defined by Mill as one “demanded from the very persons wlio it is in- tended or desired should pay it.” Others (e.g., M‘Culloch) define it as a tax taken directly from income or capital. In the former definition non-transferable taxes on expendi- ture would be included (e.g., a tax on livery servants), but not in the latter. Mill’s definition has been generally adopted (eg., by Wagner, in the German Handbuch, vol. il. p. 152); but in any case the most important direct taxes practically are those levied on income or capital directly, and the most important indirect the customs and excise duties. In examining the incidence of taxation the order of arrangement adopted by Adam Smith seems best. He discusses separately taxes on the three great species of income,—rent, profits, and wages (appending to the articles on the first two an examination of taxes upon the capital value of land, houses, and stock), and taxes intended to fall indifferently upon every species of revenue, viz., capitation taxes and taxes upon consumable commodities.

Taxes on Rent.—What is commonly known as rent consists in general of two parts, which may be termed economic reut and profit rent. Economic rent arises from the superiority of advantage of any source in the produc- tion of a certain amount of utility over the least productive source which the conditions of demand and supply (includ- ing transmission to market) render it possible to employ. Thus, in the production of food, some lands have an advantage in fertility or situation; again, in furnishing amenities of accommodation or facilities for business, some houses have from their situation a similar advantage ; and again, different processes in the arts and manufactures are Superior to others (giving rise to patents). In all these cases where the amount of the superior sources is limited (naturally or artificially), and recourse must be made to inferior sources of supply, economic rent is paid for the

superior advantage. Any tax imposed on this species of revenue falls on the owner. If levied in the first instance from the lessee, he will payso much less rent, and any new taxes imposed during the currency of leases ought, if intended to fall on the owner, to be taken directly from him. It may be assumed that every owner of a superior source has exacted the highest price obtainable for its use, so that he cannot transfer the tax to the tenant, nor through the tenant to the consumer. If, for example, a tax is imposed on tlie econonlic rent of agricultural land, the landlord cannot exact it from the tenant (for if the tenant could afford niore rent, why under competition was he not forced to do so before?) nor from the consumer of the produce, for the price is obviously determined inde- pendently of rent. Similarly a tax on the ground rent of houses, if it be assumed that the land is useless for other purposes, must fall on the owners; although a certain portion will be transferred to the occupier if the landlord could use it otherwise and escape the tax (cf. Mill, bk. v. ch. 111. §6). Taxes on economic rent of various kinds, so heavy as to absorb the whole amount, have been advocated by some theorists on grounds noticed under Adam Smith's first canon. It issaid they would impose no burden on the state as a whole, that they would not affect production or accumulation, and even that the substitution of the state for private owners—who are simply nati conswmere Jruges—would really increase the wealth and power of the nation by compelling these unproductive consumers to work, and by lightening the pressure of taxation on industry. It is, however, obvious that the confiscation of rent would, seeing that land has for generations been in the circle of exchangeable commodities, strike at the roots of the institution of private property. Apart from this general objection, there would in the case of agricultural land be great difficulty in separating economic from profit rent, and any exceptional tax on the latter would obviously tend to check agricultural improvements.

Taxes on Profits. —Profits, as commonly used, is a term Taxes on embracing three elements which, from an economic and Profits.

financial point of view, are quite distinct in character, viz., interest (pure and simple), insurance against risk, aud earnings of management. The interest on capital in any industrial area, lent on the same security, tends to equality. If, then, a tax is imposed on interest in every form, the incidence in the first place will be on the owners of cap- ital. But two indirect

consequences will follow. (1) As Adam Smith remarks, “the proprietor of stock is properly a citizen of the world, and is not necessarily attached to any particular country. He would be apt to abandon the country in which he was exposed to a vexatious inquisition in order to be assessed to a burdensome tax, and would remove his stock to some other country, where he could either carry on his business or enjoy his fortune more at his ease.” In this case the ultimate result would be that the country in which the tax was imposed would possess less capital, and thus would yield a higher rate of interest sufficient to counterbalance the burden of the tax. (2) The tax would tend to check the accumulation of capital within the country, so far as the interest received is a cause of accumulation, with the same ultimate result as in the former case. It must, however, be observed that the rate of interest is only one of the causes affecting the accumulation of capital.

A tax on some particular form of interest (security still being supposed perfect), for example on mortgages on land, would obviously fall on the borrowers. In the same way a tax on that part of the profit rent of houses which is interest on capital tends to fall on the occupier. In gene ral, however, the security is more or less imperfect, and the insurance against risk is allowed for in the rate of

interest charged on borrowed capital. Thus a tax which | first class (a) are the most direct of all taxes, in the sense took equal percentages from all species of interest would | that they cannot be transferred to other persons by the be in part a tax on insurance against risk, and the | beneficiaries. The principal difficulties connected with the tendency must be for such a tax to fall on the borrowers | “death duties,” as they are often called, arise in connexion of capital. Suppose at any time a perfect security yields | with the canon of equality of taxation. Opinion is stil] 3 per cent. and one with greater risk 6 per cent., then 3 | divided on the proportions which ought to be paid by per cent. represents the estimated value of the insurance | personal and real estate respectively, as well as on the against risk. A tax which reduces the net yield on the advisability of the taxes being made progressive according first to 2 per cent. would reduce the net yield on the | to the value of the property, and there are still greater latter to 4 per cent. In

order, then, for the insurance } difficulties in connexion with life interests in settled pro: against risk to remain the same, the rate yielded by the perty. Mull was strongly in favour of making the death latter must rise from 6 to 74 per cent. It follows, then, | duties very heavy and also graduated. “TI conceive,” he that a tax levied on all forms of interest (no allowance says (Pol. Econ., bk. v. ch. ii. § 3), “that inheritances and being made for risk) would tend to check investment in legacies exceeding a certain amount are highly proper proportion as risk was involved, aud would thus check | subjects for taxation, and that the revenue from these industrial enterprise. This result would follow even | should be made as great as it can be made without giving although the rate of interest on perfect security, owing to | rise to evasions by donation during life, or concealment the causes mentioned above, were raised in proportion to | of property, such as it would be impossible adequately to the tax. check. The principle of graduation, that is, of levying A tax on that part of profits known as earnings of | a larger percentage on a larger sum, though its applica- management would, if imposed generally, fall in the first | tion to general taxation would be in my opinion objec- instance on the entrepreneurs or employers of capital, and | tionable, seems to me both just and expedient as applied with similar indirect consequences to those just noticed | to legacy and inheritance duties.” The principal objec- in regard to interest. Capital would tend to flow abroad, | tions urged against such taxation are, that a stimulus and accumulation would be checked, since in general the | would be given to personal extravagance and a check employers of capital are also to a large extent the owners. | placed on accumulation, and that in consequence indirect So far as profits, in this sense, are of the nature of rent (a | production would be lessened, partly by want of capital view recently advocated as regards all profits by Prof. | and partly by the check placed on production on a Walker), a tax on profits would be analogous to a tax on large scale. As regards the want of capital, apart from rent. If the differences in the net advantages of different | the check placed on saving, there would be a tend- methods of employing capital are supposed to remain | ency to send it abroad. A heavy tax on large capitals constant (according to Prof. Marshall’s view of earnings of | at home will place a premium on investments abroad, management), a proportional tax on profits must be in| in which evasion would be easy. Perhaps, with the part transferred to the consumers of the articles produced, | present rate of accumulation, the

objection may be in the same way as a tax on interest with risk was shown | made light of, as it is by Mill; but the second, if to fall on the borrower. It will be seen from this general | less obvious, is more important. All our great staple survey that the incidence and effects of a tax on profits | manufactures are necessarily conducted on a large scale, (taking the term in its common acceptation without | and in many respects also large agricultural capitals are analysis) are extremely difficult to determine, and the | most productive. In manufactures, as a rule, the larger practical difficulty is still greater than the theoretical. | the scale of operations the more extended will be the For, as M‘Culloch and others have shown, profits are | division of labour in production, and the greater the always fluctuating and difficult to estimate. So great, | facilities for ready sale in foreign markets. Of all the for example, is this difficulty felt to be as regards farmers’ | causes which contribute to our commercial prosperity, profits that in the income tax it is assumed that such perhaps the most important is the large scale on which profits bear a certain proportion to the rent paid for land | our operations are conducted. We are able to employ on a purely empirical rule, which may happen to hit the | machinery where the foreigner, working on a_ smaller mark in a majority of cases, but is much more likely to be | scale, is obliged to use manual labour. There can be unequal and unjust in its operation. little doubt that graduated taxation, even on the modi- A tax on some particular form of profits (as distinct | fied form proposed by Mill, would tend to check produe- from a general tax on profits) will, it is generally said, fall | tion on a large scale. Indirectly it might artificially foster on the consumer of the article produced, on the ground of | joint-stock companies. (6) Taxes on the transference of the tendency of profits to equality. This view will be property from the living to the living cannot, as Adam noticed below under taxes on consumable commodities. Smith points out, be very easily taken directly, as such Taxeson ‘axes on Capital.—In early English history taxes | transactions for the most part actually are or might be capital. upon capital of a very simple kind played an important | secret. This has led to the invention of stamp and regis- part. A grant, for example, of certain fractional parts of | tration duties. The penalty of invalidity attaching to movables, commencing with the famous Saladin tithe (on unstamped documents of various kinds has proved a very both rent and movables) in 1188, and gradually settling | effective deterrent to evasion. A tax on sales will vary down toa fifteenth

for the counties and a tenth for the | in its incidence according to the nature of the commodity towns, prevailed for more than three centuries. In 1334 | and the degree of competition or monopoly (cf. H. Sidg- a fifteenth and tenth was fixed at a certain sum for each | wick's Principles of Pol. Econ., bk. it. ch. x.). The most township, and after this date a grant of one or more | important case is that of taxes on the transfer of land. "fifteenths and tenths" meant simply a grant according Theoretically it seems that, just as the farmer who takes to the scale then fixed (Dowell, vol. iii. p. 75). But in | land on rent offers more or less rent according to the our own times taxes on capital are levied principally when | burdens imposed on the land by rates, é&e., so the property changes hands, and may be divided, as they are purchaser of land will consider any expenses connected by Adam Smith, according as they are levied when. pro- | with its acquisition as part of the capital value, and thus perty passes (a) from the dead to the living, (b) from the | any taxes on transfer. will really fall on the sellers, If, living to the living. however, the taxes are imposed in such a way as to fall It is obvious, as regards incidence, that taxes of the | less heavily on land when sold in larger than in small

on

quantities, it is clear that the tendency will be for the differential portion of the tax at least to fall on the purchaser of a small amount ; and practically at present this feature is characteristic of the English system. A tax on the transfer of stocks and shares is generally held to fall on the seller, as in case of repeal he would obtain so much more; but in this case the same considerations apply as in the case of interest noticed above. A curious example of legal evasion is furnished by time-bargains ; and the imposition of the tax directly on the contracts of sale, instead of as at present on the actual transfer, has been strongly urged.

Taxes on Wages.—It is clear that the treatment of taxes on wages will depend on the general view taken of the determination of the rate of wages. Adam Smith appears to lay undue stress on the price of provisions, and to think that in most cases taxes on wages must fall on the employer of labour (bk. v. ch. ii. art. iii.). There seems, however, to be no sufficient reason why

a tax on labour should be transferred to the employer, except in the case where the wages are really at a minimum below which the supply of efficient labour could not be kept up. Even in this case, as Prof. Walker shows, there would probably be a degradation of labour before the rise in wages was effected. Certainly no practical statesman at the present time would venture to propose a direct tax on wages, under the idea that it would be transferred to the em- ployer. In Germany it was found necessary to abandon the system, owing to the hardship inflicted on the poor. At any rate, in all cases in which the rate of wages is above the “necessary” minimum, a tax on wages must fall on the labourer. A differential tax on some particular species of employment would, unless it partook of the nature of a monopoly, tend to fall on the consumer of the article produced or the person who enjoys the service rendered. In every case, speaking generally, the incidence of the tax will depend on the conditions of the demand and supply of the labour in question, and no further analysis canbe given without entering into the general principles governing wages. See Wacxs.

Capitation tames are chiefly of interest historically, as illustrated in England by the poll-taxes imposed at various times. The income tax as at present levied is in reality not a single uniform tax, as might at first sight appear, but a tax on the various species of rent, interest, profits, and wages. The anomalies which arise from practically taking income as uniform have often been pointed out and acknowledged, but the authority of Mr Gladstone may be

quoted in support of the view that the practical difficulties :

in the way of a readjustment more in accordance with theo- retical principles are insuperable. The objections noted above to a graduated property tax apply, mutatis mutandis, to a graduated income tax, which appears, however, to find increasing favour on the Continent. A full discussion of the anomalies of the income tax would involve a repetition of the analysis of the taxes on the various species of income.

Taxes on Commodities.—The general principles appli- cable in this case are that, where production takes place

,. under free competition, the tax will, owing to the tendency

of profits to equality, be transferred to the consumer, but that, when the article is practically monopolized, a tax must fallon the monopolist, on the assumption that he has already fixed such a price for the article as will, consider- ing the law of demand and the expenses of production, yield him a maximum revenue, The practical difficulties connected with the assumption of equality of profits have been well exposed by Cliffe Leslie (Financial Reform – Cobden Club Essays, 2d series, 1871-72).

_The incidence of export and import duties is peculiarly difficult to ascertain even theoretically. The prevailing

opinion that an import duty necessarily falls on the consumer of the import necessarily involves as its counter- part the position that an export duty must fall on the consumer of the export. If the latter view is upheld it is curious that export duties find such little favour with practical statesmen. It is clear, however, that the real inci- dence of export and import duties will depend partly on the conditions of production in various countries, partly on the variations in demand due to changes in price, partly on the indirect influence on the general balance of trade, and partly on the possibility of using substitutes for the article taxed (cf. H. Sidgwick's Principles of Pol. Econ., bk. ii. ch. v.; Cournot, Revue Sommaire des Doctrines Economiques, sects. 5 and 6). A fuller examination is not possible in the limits assigned to this article. In con- clusion, it may be pointed out that a thorough investigation of the general principles of taxation must presuppose the principles of political philosophy, whilst a full inquiry into the incidence of particular species of taxes must pre- suppose the principles of political economy. (J. 8. Nt.)

TAXIDERMY, the art of preserving the integument, together with the scales, feathers, or fur, of animals. Little is known of the beginnings of the practice of the "stuffing" or "setting up" of animals for ornament or for scientific purposes ; and it is highly probable, from what we gather from old works of travel or natural history, that the art is not more than some three hundred years old. It was practised in England towards the end of the 17th

century, as is proved by the Sloane collection, which in 1725 formed the nucleus of the collection of natural history now lodged in the galleries at South Kensington.

It was not until the middle of last century that any treatise devoted to the principles of the then little under- stood art was published in France, Réaumur's treatise (1749) being probably the first. This was followed at intervals by others in France and Germany, until the be- ginning of the present century, when the English began to move in the matter, and several works were published, notably those by E. Donovan,! W. Swainson,? Capt. Thomas Brown,® and others. These works, however, are now in- adequate ; and since the Great Exhibition of 1851, when the Germans and French taught British taxidermists the rudiments of scientific treatment of natural objects, several works have appeared upon the subject from the pens of American and English authors, such as J. H. Batty,' R. Ward,® and Montagu Browne.®

The first principle governing the art is that, after the specimen has been procured, in as fresh and clean a state as may be, it should have the skin stripped from the body in such a manner as not to disturb the scales if a fish or a reptile, the feathers if a bird, or the fur or hair if a mammal. To do this correctly requires a small stock of tools, as well as a great amount of patience and per- severance. The appliances comprise several sharp knives (some pointed and some obtuse), a pair of scissors, a pair of pliers, a pair of nippers or "cutting-pliers," some tow, wadding, needles and thread, also a "stuffing-iron," some crooked awls, a pair of fine long flat-nosed pliers, and a camel-hair brush. The preservative compound is often the original (Bécceur's) "'arsenical soap," made by cutting up and boiling 2 tb of white soap, to which 12 oz. of salt of tartar and 4 oz. of powdered lime (or whiting) are added

1 Instructions for Collecting and Preserving Various Subjects of Natural History, London, 1794.

2 The Naturalist's Guide for Collecting and Preserving Subjects of Natural History and Botany, London, 1822.

3 Taxidermists Manual, Glasgow, 18388.

4 Practical Taxidermy and Home Decoration, New York, 1880.

5 Sportsman's Handbook of Practical Collecting and Preserving, London, 1880.

8 Practical Taxidermy, London, 1879; 2d edition, 1884.

when dissolved; to this mixture, when nearly cold, 2 ib of powdered arsenic and 5 oz. of camphor (the latter pre- viously triturated in a mortar with spirits of wine) are added. The mixture is put away in small jars or pots for use. Like all arsenical preparations, this is exceedingly dangerous in the hands of unskilled persons, often causing shortness of breath, sores, brittleness of the nails, and other symptoms ; and, as arsenic is really no protection against the attacks of insects, an efficient substitute has been in- vented by Browne, composed of 1 tb of white curd soap and 3 bb of whiting boiled together, to which is added, whilst hot, 13 02. of chloride of lime, and, when cold, 1 oz. of tincture of musk. This mixture is perfectly safe to use when cold (although when hot the fumes should not be inhaled, owing to the chlorine given off), and is spoken of as doing its work efficiently. Solutions of corrosive sublimate, often recommended, are, even if efficient, dangerous in the extreme. Powders consisting of tannin, pepper, camphor, and burnt alum are sometimes used for " making skins," but they dry them too rapidly for the purposes of "mounting." Mammals are best preserved by a mixture of 1 ib of burnt alum to } b of saltpetre ; this, when intimately mixed, should be well rubbed into the skin. Fishes and reptiles, when not cast and modelled, are best preserved in rectified spirits of wine ; but this, when eco- nomy is desired, can be replaced by " Méller's solution " (bichromate of potash 2 oz., sulphate of soda 1 0z., dis-

tilled water 3 pints) or by a nearly saturated solution of

chloride of zinc. The cleaning of feathers and furs is performed by rubbing them lightly with wadding soaked in benzoline, afterwards dusting on plaster of Paris, which is beaten out, when dry, with a bunch of feathers,

The preparation and mounting of bird Specimens, the objects most usually selected by the amateur, are performed in the follow- ing manner. The specimen to be operated upon should have its nostrils and throat closed by plugs of cotton wool or tow; both wing-bones should be broken close to the body, and the bird laid upon a table on its back; and, as birds—especially white-breasted ones—should seldom, if ever, be opened on the breast, an incision should be made in the skin under the wing on the side most damaged, from which the thigh protrudes when pushed up slightly ; this is cut through at its junction with the body, when the knife is gently used to separate the skin from this, until the wing-bone is seen on the open side. This is then cut through by scissors, and by careful manipulation the skin is further freed from the back and breast until the neck can be cut off. The other side now remains to be dealt with; from this the wing is cut by travelling downwards, the remaining leg is cut away, and very careful skinning over the stomach and upon the lower back brings the operator to the tail, which is cut off, leaving a small portion of the bone (the coccyx) in the skin. The body now falls off, and nothing remains in the skin but the neck andhead. To skin these ott properly without unduly stretching the integument, is a task trying to the patience, but it can be accomplished by gradually working the skin away from the back of the head forward, taking care to avoid cutting the eyes or the eyelids, but, by cautious management, to cut the membranous skin over those parts, so that the eyes are easily extracted from the orbits without bursting. The skin should be freed down nearly to the beak, and then the back of the head, with neck attached, should be cut off, the brains extracted, all the flesh cleared from the skull and from the bones of the wings, legs, and tail, the skin painted with the preservative, and ultimately turned into its proper position. When ‘‘skins” only are to be made for the cabinet, it is sufficient to fill the head and neck with chopped tow, the body with a false one made of tow, lightly packed or loose according to the genius of the preparer, to sew up the skin of the stomach, and to place a band of paper lightly pinned around the body over the breast and wings, and allow it to remain in a warm position, free from dust, for several days or weeks, according to the size of the specimen. It should then be labelled with name, sex, locality, and date, and put away with insect powder around it,

When, however, the specimen is to be “ mounted,” the opera- tions should be carried up to the point of returning the skin, and then a false body of tightly wrapped tow is made upon a wire pointed at its upper end. This is inserted through the incision under the wing, the pointed end going up the neck and through the skull to the outside. When the imitation body rests within the skin, pointed wires are thrust through the soles of the feet, up

TA KUDER ™M Y

the skin of the back of the legs, and are finally clenched in the body. Wires are also thrust into the butts of the wings, follow- ing the skin of the under surface, and also clenched through into the body. A stand or perch is provided, and the bird, being fixed upon this, is, after the eyes have been inserted, arranged in the most natural attitude which the skill of the taxidermist can ive it.

: Mammals are cut along the stomach from nearly the middle to the breast, and are skinned by working out the hind legs first, cutting them off under the skin at the junction of the femur with the tibia, and carefully stripping the skin off the lower back and front until the tail is reached, the flesh and bones of which are pulled out of the skin, leaving the operator free to follow on up the back and chest until the fore legs are reached, which are cut off in like manner. The neck and head are skinned out down to the inner edges of the lips and nose, great care being exercised not to cut the outer portions of the ears, the eyelids, the nose, or the lips, The flesh being cleared off, and the brain and eyes extracted, the skull should adhere to the skin by the inner edges of the lips. All the flesh should be trimmed from the bones of the legs. The head, being shaped, where the flesh was removed, by tow and clay, is returned into the skin. A long wire of sufficient strength ig tightly bound with tow, making a long, narrow body, through which wires are thrust by the skin of the soles of the feet. The leg wires and bones being wrapped with tow and clay into shape, the points of the wires are pushed through the tow body and clenched. They and the body are then bent into the desired posi- tion, and modelled up by the addition of more tow and clay, until the contours of the natural body are imitated, when the stomach is sewn up.

Reptiles, when small, have their skin removed by cutting away the attachment of the skull to the cervical vertebre, and by turn. ing the decapitated trunk out at the mouth by delicate manipula- tion. When large, they are cut along their median line, and treated in the same manner as mammals,

Fishes, after being covered on their best side with paper or muslin to protect the scales, are cut along the other side from the tail to the gills, and are skinned out by removing ‘‘cntlets,” as large as is possible without cracking the skin, which, indeed, should be kept damp during work. After being cured with a pre- servative, they are filled with sawdust or dry plaster of Paris, sewn up, turned over on a board, the fins pinned out, and the mouth adjusted, and, when perfectly dry, the plaster may be shaken out.

A new school of taxidermists, with new methods, whose aim is to combine knowledge of anatomy and modelling with taxidermic technique, are now coming to the front, and the next generation will discard all processes of “stuffing” in favour of modelling, Within the limits of an article like the present it is impossible to do more than glance at the intricate processes involved in this. In the case of mammals, after the skin has been completely removed, even to the toes, a copy is made of the body, posed as in life, and from this an accurate representation of form, including delineation of muscles, &c., is built up in light materials; the model is then covered with the skin, which is damped, and pinned in to follow every depression and prominence ; the study is then suffered to dry ; and, models having been made, in the case of large animals, of the mucous membrane of the jaws, palate, tongue, and lips, these are truthfully reproduced in a plastic material. The ordinary glass eyes are discarded, and hollow globes, specially made, are hand-painted from nature, and are fixed in the head so as to convey the exact expression which the pose of the body demands. Birds, if of any size, can be modelled in like manner, and fishes are treated by a nearly identical process, being finally coloured as in a “still life” painting,

To give a life-like representation, attention is also paid to artistic “mounting.” By this is meant the surrounding of specimens with appropriate accessories, and it is well exemplified by the new work shown in the natural history museum at South Kensington, where, for example,

birds are arranged as in a state of nature, feeding or flying to their young, sitting on their egos, swimming in miniature pools, or preening their feathers whilst perched lovingly side by side, and surrounded by exquisitely modelled

—SS = ——S eS Se

ot

ee ES

Fa es ne

foliage and flowers. This, with correct modelling of the specimens, which, except in rare instances, is not quite so striking in the new groups, indicates the future of the art, the hope of which lies in the better education of taxi- dermists as designers, artists, and modellers. (M. B.)

TAXILA. See Rawat Prnp1.

TAY, Tue, the longest river in Scotland, has its source on the northern side of Ben Lui, on the borders of Argyll- shire and Perthshire, being known in its earlier course as the Fillan, and, after forming Loch Dochart, as the Dochart, until entering Loch Tay, 25 miles from its source, at an elevation above sea-level of 553 feet. Its course through Perthshire is described in the article on that county. Its total length to the town of Perth is about 95 miles, and it drains a total area of about 2400 square miles, while its estuary extends for about other 25 miles. The navigation of the estuary is somewhat impeded by sandbanks. The only important port is Dundee, but vessels of 100 tons can pass up to Perth, the river being tidal to 2 miles above it. The salmon fisheries on the river and its estuary are among the most valuable in Scotland. A railway bridge over the Tay at Dundee, designed by Sir Thomas Bouch (see Bripaes, vol. iv. p. 340), was opened for traffic 31st May 1878, but was blown down during the crossing of a passenger train 28th December 1879. Some distance to the west a new bridge, designed by W.

H. Barlow, was commenced in 1882, and was opened for general traffic 20th June 1887.

TAYLOR, Bayarp (1825-1878), one of the most pro- lific among American authors, was born at Kennett Square in Chester county, Pennsylvania, on January 25, 1825. The son of a well-to-do farmer, he received his early in- struction in an academy at West Chester, and, later, at Unionville. At the age of seventeen he was apprenticed to a printer in West Chester.

less sights and delights, to many of which he afterwards gave expression in metrical form. From England, towards the end of 1852, he sailed for Calcutta, proceeding thence to China, where he joined the expedition of Commodore Perry to Japan. The results of these journeys (besides his poetical memorials, to which reference will be after- wards made) were A Journey to Central Africa, or Life and Landscapes from Egypt to the Negro Kingdoms of the Nile (1854); The Land of the Saracens, or Pictures of Palestine, Asia Minor, Sicily, and Spain (1854); and A Visit to India, China, and Japan in the Year 1858 (1855). On his return (1854) from these various journeyings he entered, with marked success, upon the career of a public lecturer, delivering addresses in every town of importance from Maine to Wisconsin. After two years' experience of this lucrative profession, he again started on his travels, on this occasion for northern Europe, his special object being the study of Swedish life, language, and literature. The most noteworthy result was the long narrative poem Lars, but his "Swedish Letters" to the Zrzbune were also re- published, under the title Morthern Travel (1857). In October 1857 he married Maria Hansen, the daughter of the well-known German astronomer. The ensuing winter was spent in Greece. In 1859 Taylor once more traversed the whole extent of the western American gold region, the primary cause of the journey lying in an invitation to lecture at San Francisco. About three years later he entered the diplomatic service as secretary of legation at St Petersburg, and the following year (1863) became chargé d'affaires at the Russian capital. In 1864 he returned to the United States and resumed his active literary labours, and it was at this period that Hannah Thurston, the first of his four novels, was published. This book had a moderate success, but neither in it nor in its successors did Bayard Taylor betray any special talent as a novelist : some of his characters are faithful studies from life, and he could

describe well the aspects of nature,—but a good deal more than this is necessary for the creation of noteworthy romances. In 1874 he went to Iceland, to take part in the centennial celebration which was held in that year. In June 1878 he was accredited United States minister at Berlin. Notwithstanding the resistless passion for travel which had always possessed him, Bayard Taylor was (when not actually en route) sedentary in his habits, especially in the later years of his life; and at Berlin he aggravated a constitutional liver affection by too sedulous devotion to literary studies and pursuits, in the intervals of leisure from his diplomatic duties. His death occurred on the 17th of December, only a few months after his arrival in Berlin. The main drawback to the widespread acceptance of Bayard Taylor's poetry as a whole is its perpetual diffuseness. His most ambitious productions—his Masgue of the Gods (1872), Prince Deukalion (1877), The Picture of St John (1865), Lars (1873), and The Prophet (1874)—are marred by a ceaseless effort to overstrain his power. avs is thie least likely of his longer poems to survive any length of time: it lacks the grandiose eloquence and impressive "adjuncts" of the Masque or Prince Deukalion, while in theme and treatment it is, at most, only sedately agreeable. The Poems of the Orient contains his most genuinely satisfactory poetic writings. But probably long after even the most familiar of the poems just mentioned have ceased to be popular, when even the Vicws Afoot and Eldorado no longer hold the attention of the numerous public interested in vividly narrated experiences of travel, Bayard Taylor will be remembered by his poetic and excellent translation of Faust. Taylor felt, in all truth, ''the torment and the ecstasy of verse"; but, as a critieal friend has written of him, '' his nature was so ardent, so full-blooded, that slight and common seusations intoxicated him, and he estimated their effect, and his power to transmit it to others, beyond the true value." He felt life as perhaps only the poetic temperament can experience the beauty of the world; single words thus became for him so charged with poetry that he overlooked the fact that to most people these were, simply in themselves, mero abstract terms—sunshine, sea, spring, morning, night, and so forth. Thus a stanza having absolutely nothing original or striking or even poetic in it would, because

born of him, seem to be poetry unadulterate : to his mind, each line, each word, was charged with delightful significance, therefore —so he felt-— would be so also to the sympathetic reader. He had, from the earliest period at which he began to compose, a distinct lyrical faculty : so keen indeed was his ear that he became too insistently haunted by the music of others, pre-eminently of Tennyson. But he had often a true and fine note of his own. His best short poems are ‘‘ The Metempsychosis of the Pine” and the well-known Bedouin love-song, the latter a stirring lyric that ought assuredly to endure. had himself in no inconsiderable degree what he wrote of as ‘‘ that pure poetic insight which is the vital spirit of criticism.’ The most valuable of these prose dissertations are the Studies in German Literature.

TAYLOR, Broox (1685-1731), a distinguished mathe- matician of Newton’s school, was the son of John Taylor, of Bifrons House, Kent, by Olivia, daughter of Sir Nicholas Tempest, Bart., of Durham, and was born at Edmonton in Middlesex, August 18, 1685. He entered St John’s College, Cambridge, as a fellow-commoner in 1701, and took degrees of LL.B. and LL.D. respectively in 1709 and 1714. Having studied mathematics with applause under Machin and Keill, he obtained in 1708 a remarkable solution of the problem of the “centre of oscillation,” which, however, remaining unpublished until May 1714 (Phil. Trans., vol. xxviii. p. 11), his claim to priority was unjustly disputed by John Bernoulli. Taylor’s Jfethodus Incrementorum Directa et Inversa (London, 1715) added a new branch to the higher mathematics, now designated the ‘calculus of finite differences.” Among other ingenious applications, he used it to determine the form of movement of a vibrating string, by him first successfully reduced to mechanical principles. The same work contained (p. 23) the celebrated formula known as “Taylor’s theorem.” It is of extensive use in almost every analytical inquiry ; but its full importance remained unrecognized until pointed out in 1772 (Berlin Memoirs) by Lagrange, who later termed it ‘le principal fondement du calcul différentiel.”

In his ‘essay on Linear Perspective (London, + 1715) Taylor set forth the true principles of the art with much originality, and in a more general form than any of his predecessors. The little work suffered, however, from the brevity and obscurity which affected most of his writings, and needed the

elucidation bestowed on it in the treatises of Joshua Kirby (1754) and Daniel Fournier (1761).

Taylor was elected a fellow of the Royal Society early in 1712, sat in the same year on the committee for adjudi- cating the claims of Newton and Leibnitz, and acted as secretary to the society January 13, 1714, to: October 21, 1718. During a visit to Paris in 1716 he made acquaintance with Bossuet and the Comte de Caylus, and knit a warm friendship with Bolingbroke, whom he visited at La Source in 1720. From 1715 his studies took a philosophical and religious bent. He corresponded, in that year, with the Comte de Montmort on the subject of Malebranche's tenets ; and unfinislied treatises, "On the Jewish Sacrifices" and "On the Lawfulness of Eating Blood," written on his return from Aix-la-Chapelle in 1719, were afterwards found among his papers. His marriage in 1721 with Miss Brydges of Wallington, Surrey, led to an estrangement from his father, a person of somewhat morose temper, which terminated in 1723 after the death of the lady in giving birth toa son. The ensuing two years were spent by him with his family at Bifrons, and in 1725 he married, with the paternal appro- bation, Sabetta, daughter of Mr Sawbridge of Olantigh, Kent, who, by a strange fatality, died also in childbed in 1730; in this case, however, the infant, a daughter, survived. Weighed down by repeated sorrows, Taylor's fragile health gave way; he fell into a decline, died December 29, 1731, at Somerset House, and was buried at St Ann's, Soho. By his father's death in 1729 he

In his critical essays Bayard Taylor }.

Da Ys be Oak

had inherited the Bifrons estate. Socially as well as in- tellectually gifted, he possessed a handsome person and engaging manners, and was accomplished to an uncommon degree in music and painting. As a mathematician, he was the only Englishman after Newton and Cotes capable of holding his own with the Bernoullis; but a great part of the effect of his demonstrations was lost through his failure to express his ideas fully and clearly.

A posthumous work entitled Contemplatio Philosophica was printed for private circulation in 1793 by his grandson, Sir William Young, Bart., prefaced by a life of the author, and with an appendix containing letters addressed to him by Bolingbroke, Bossuet, &e. Several short papers by him were published in Phil. Trans., vols, xxvii. to xxxil., including accounts of some interesting experiments in magnetism and capillary attraction. He issued in 1719 an improved version of his work on perspective, with the title New Principles of Linear Perspective, revised by Colson in 1749, and printed again, with portrait and life of the author, in 1811. A French translation appeared in 1753 at Lyons. Taylor gave (Mc. thodus Incrementorum, p. 108) the first satisfactory investigation of astronomical refraction.

See Watt, Bibliotheca Britannica; Hutton, Phil. and Math. Dictionary ; Fétis, Biog. des Musiciens; Th. Thomson, Hist. of the R. Society, p. 802; Grant, Hist, Phys. Astronomy, p. 877; Marie, Hist. des Sciences, vii. p. 231,

TAYLOR, Str Henry (1800-1886), poet and colonial statesman, was born October 18, 1800, at Bishop-Mid- dleham, in the county of Durham. His ancestors had been small landowners for some generations, and both his studious father, who late in life emerged for a time froma recluse existence to make an efficient secretary to the Poor Law Commission, and his original warm-hearted mother were interesting persons. His mother died while he was yet an infant, and he was chiefly educated by his father, who, finding him less quick and deeming him less intel- ligent than his two elder brothers, allowed him to go to sea as a midshipman. Eight months summed up his naval career; it had taken much less to disgust him with it. After obtaining his discharge he was appointed to a clerkship in the storekeeper’s office, and had scarcely entered upon his duties ere he was attacked by typhus fever, which carried off both his brothers, then living with him in London. In three or four years more his office was abolished while he was on duty in the West Indies. On his return he found his father happily married to a lady whose interest and sympathy proved of priceless value to him. Through her he became acquainted with her cousin Isabella Fenwick, the neighbour and intimate friend of Wordsworth, who introduced him to Wordsworth and Southey. Under these influences he lost his early admira- tion for Byron, whose school, whatever its merits, he at least was in no way

calculated to adorn, and his intel- lectual powers developed rapidly. In October 1822 an article from his pen on Moore's Jrish Melodies appeared in the Quarterly Review. A year later he departed for London to seek his fortune as a man of letters, and met with such rapid success, though not precisely in this capacity, as has but rarely attended an unknown young man. He became editor of the London Magazine, to which he had already contributed, and in January 1824 obtained, through the influence of Sir Henry Holland, an appointment in the Colonial Office, insuring him, not only an ample salary, but considerable influence in this depart- ment of public affairs; The general standard of the office was probably at that time low; at all events Taylor was immediately entrusted with the preparation of confidential state papers, and his opinion soon exercised an important influence on the decisions of the secretary of state. He visited Wordsworth and Southey, travelled on the Con- tinent with the latter, and at the same time, mainly through his friend and official colleague, the Hon. Hyde Villiers, became intimate with a very different set, the younger followers of Bentham, without, however, adopting their opinions,—" young men," he afterwards reminded

Ae Y LO,

Stuart Mill, "who every one said would be ruined by their independence, but who ended by obtaining all their hearts' desires, except one who fell by the way." The reference is to Hyde Villiers, who died prematurely, and for whose sister, afterwards Lady Theresa Lewis, Taylor was an unsuccessful suitor. He actively promoted the emancipation of the slaves in 1833, and became an in- timate ally of Sir James Stephen, then counsel to the Colonial Office, afterwards under-secretary, by whom the Act of Emancipation was principally framed. His first drama, Isaac Comnenus, was published anonymously in 1827. Though highly praised by Southey, it made little impression on the public. Philip van Artevelde, the sub- ject of which had been recommended to him by Southey, was begun in 1828, published in 1834, and, aided by a laudatory criticism. from Lockhart's pen, achieved extra- ordinary success. Edwin the Fair (1842) was less warmly received. In the interim he had married (1839) the daughter of his former chief Lord Monteagle, and, in con- junction with Stephen, had taken a leading part in the abolition of negro apprenticeship in the West Indies. T'he Statesman, a

volume of essays suggested by his official position, had been published in 1836, and about the same time he had written in the Quarterly the friendly adver- tisements of Wordsworth and Southey, subsequently pub- lished under the somewhat misleading title of Votes from Books, In 1847 he was offered the under-secretaryship of state, which he declined. Notes from Life and The Eve of the Conquest appeared in this year, and Notes from Books in 1849, An experiment in romantic comedy, Zhe Virgin Widow, afterwards entitled A Sicilian Summer, was pub- lished in 1850. ‘The pleasantest play I had written,” says the author; ‘and I never could tell why people would not be pleased with it.” His last dramatic work was St Clement’s Eve, published in 1862. In 1869 he was made K.C.M.G. He retired from the Colonial Office in 1872, though continuing to be consulted by Government. His last days were spent at Bournemouth in the enjoyment of universal respect ; and the public, to whom he had hitherto been an almost impersonal existence, became familiarized with the extreme picturesqueness of his appearance in old age, as represented in the photographs of his friend Mrs Cameron. He died on March 27, 1886.

Sir Henry Taylor is pre-eminently the statesman among English poets. When he can speak poetically in this character he is impressive, almost great; when he deals with the more prosaic aspects of policy he is dignified and weighty, without being alto- gether a poet ; when his theme is entirely unrelated to the conduct of public affairs or private life he is usually little more than an accomplished man of letters. An exception must be made for the interesting character of Elena in Philip van Artevelde, and for Artevelde’s early love experience, which reproduces and trausfigures the writer’s own. The circumstance of Philip van Artevelde being to a great extent the vehicle of his own ideas and feelings explains its great superiority to his other works. It is subjective as well as objective, and to a certain extent lyrical in feeling, though not in form. Though more elaborate than any of his other dramas, it seems to smell less of the lamp. He has thoroughly identified himself with his hero, and the only fault to be found with this noble picture of a consummate leader and statesman is the absence of the shadow required for a tragic portrait. The blame allotted to Artevelde is felt to be merely conventional, and the delineation of uniform excellence becomes monotonous. The hero of Hdwin the Fair, Dunstan, the ecclesiastical statesman, the man of two worlds, is less sympathetic to the

author and less attractive to the reader. The character is nevertheless a fine psychological study, and the play is full of historical if not of dramatic interest. Isaac Comnenus is more Elizabethan in tone than his other dramas. Comnenus is like a preliminary sketch for Van Artevelde; and the picture of the Byzantine court and people is exceedingly lively. The idea of the revival of romantic comedy in The Virgin Widow is excellent, but the play lacks the humour which might have made it a success. The length of the speeches, even when not set speeches, is a drawback to all these dramas. Taylor's lyrical work is in general laboriously artificial. It is therefore extraordinary that he should have produced two songs (‘‘ Quoth tongue of neither

Jd

maid nor wife" and "If I had the wings of a dove") which it would hardly be an exaggeration to call worthy of Shakespeare. His character as an essayist repeats his character as a dramatist. The essays published under the title of The Statesman occupy a peculiar place in literature. They have serious faults, especially the too obvious imitation of Bacon, but they nevertheless are original in their point of view, and their wisdom is the result of a different kind of observation from that which qualifies the bulk of essayists on human life. When writing as one of these Taylor is less removed from the commonplace, though many of his remarks are admirable. As a literary critic he seems unable to get beyond Wordsworth and the select circle of poets admired by the latter. His essays on Wordsworth did much to dispel the conventional prejudices of the day, but will not advance the study of the poet where his greatness is already recognized, His strictures on Byron and Shelley are narrow and nota little presumptuous. Presump- tion, indeed, the last fault to have been expected in so grave and measured a writer, is one of those of which he most freely accuses himself in the autobiography published a year before his death. It is not otherwise apparent in this highly interesting book, which, sinning a little by the egotisn1 pardonable in a poet and the garrulity natural toa veteran, is in the main a pleasing and faithful picture of an aspiring youth, an active maturity, and a happy and honoured old age. (R. G.)

TAYLOR, Isaac (1787-1865), a voluminous writer on philosophical and theological subjects, was born at Laven- ham, Suffolk, in 1787, and was trained by his father to be an artist, but early adopted literature as a profession. From 1824, the year of his marriage, he lived a busy but uneventful life at Ongar, in the parish of Stanford Rivers, Essex, where he died on June 28, 1865.

He early became a contributor to the Zeleetie Review, when it was conducted by Robert Hall and John Foster, and in 1822 he published a small volume entitled Elements of Thought. This was followed by a translation of Theophrastus with original etchings, a History of the Transmission of Ancient Books to Modern Times, Memoirs and Correspondence of Jane Taylor (his sister, who died in 1824), and a translation of Herodotus. None of these works attained very great popularity; but in 1829 he published anony- mously a work bearing upon the religious and political problems of the day, entitled The Natural History of Enthusiasm, which was eagerly read and speedily ran through eight or nine editions, The success of this publication encouraged him to produce, also anony- mously, The Natural History of Kanatieism, Spiritual Despotism, Saturday Evening, and The Physical Theory of Another Life, all of which commanded a large circulation. Among his subsequent works may be nientioned Ancient Christianity, a series of disserta- tions in reply to the “Tracts for the Times,” a volume entitled The Restoration of Belief, and a course of lectures on The Spirit of Hebrew Poetry.

TAYLOR, Jeremy (1613-1667), was a native of Cam- bridge, and was baptized on the 15th August 1613. His father, Nathaniel, though a barber, was a man of some education, respected by his townsmen, and lineally de- | scended from Dr Rowland Taylor, Cranmer’s chaplain, who suffered martyrdom under Mary. Jeremy, after passing through the grammar school, was entered at Caius College as a sizar in 1626, eighteen months after Milton had entered Christ’s, and while George Herbert was public orator and Edmund Waller and Thomas Fuller were undergraduates of the university. He was elected a fellow of his college in 1633, but the best evidence of his diligence as a student is the enormous learning of which he showed so easy a conimand in after years. Accepting the invitation of Risden, a fellow-student, to supply his place for a short time as lecturer in

St Paul's, he at once attracted attention by his remarkable eloquence as well as by his handsome face and youthful appearance. Arch- bishop Laud, ever on the outlook for men of capacity, sent for Taylor to preach before him at Lambeth, and, discern- ing that his genius was worth fostering, dismissed him from the overpressure of the metropolis to the quiet of a fellowship in All Souls, Oxford, and at the same time, by making him one of his own chaplains, showed his desire to keep him in permanent connexion with himself. At Oxford Chillingworth was then busy with his great work, the Religion of Protestants, and it is possible that by intercourse with him Taylor's mind may have been turned

towards the liberal movement of his age. After two years in Oxford, in March 1638 he was presented by Juxon, bishop of London, to the rectory of Uppingham, in Rut- landshire. In the autumn of the saine year he was appointed to preach in St Mary's on the anniversary of the Gunpowder Plot, and apparently used the occasion to clear himself of a suspicion, which, however, haunted him 'through life, of a secret leaning to the Romish com- munion. This suspicion seems to have arisen chiefly from his intimacy with Christopher Davenport, better known as Francis a Sancta Clara, a learned Franciscan friar who became chaplain to Queen Henrietta; but it may have been strengthened by his known connexion with Laud, as well as by his ascetic habits and ritualistic propensities. More serious consequences followed his attachment to the Royalist cause, when in 1642 the livings of the loyal clergy were sequestered by decree of parliament. The author of Lmscopacy Asserted against the Aerians and Acephali New and Old, ineffective as that work scems in the light of modern research, could scarcely hope to retain his parish. Along with Fuller, Chillingworth, and others, he found temporary refuge with the king at Oxford. His two little boys must have been cared for by friends, for his wife, Phoebe Langsdale, whom he had married the year after his settlement at Uppingham, had died with her third child in that disastrous year 1642.

During the next fifteen years Taylor's movements are not easily traced. Sometimes he appears with the king, from whom at his last interview he received, in token of his regard, his watch and some jewels which had orna-

mented the ebony case in which he kept his Bible. He is supposed to be the Dr Taylor who was taken prisoner with other Royalists while besieging Cardigan castle. In 1646 he is found in partnership with two other deprived clergymen, keeping a school at Newton Hall, in the parish of Llanvihangel. It was while resident here that he attracted the friendship of one of his kindest patrons, Richard Vanghan, earl of Carbery, whose hospitable mansion, Golden Grove, is immortalized in the title of Taylor's still popular manual of devotion, and whose countess had the greater distinction of being the original of the "Lady" in Milton's Comus. It was also while resident in Wales that Taylor married his second wife, Joanna Bridges, who was generally understood to be a natural daughter of Charles I., and who owned a good estate, though probably impoverished by Parliamentarian exactions, at Mandinam, in Carmarthenshire. From time to time he appears in London in the company of his friend Evelyn, at whose table he met such men as Boyle, Berkeley, and Wilkins. Thrice he was imprisoned : in 1653-4 for a well-intended but injudicious preface to his Golden Grove; again in Chepstow castle, from May to October 1655, on what charge does not appear; and a third time in the Tower in 1657-8, on account of the indiscretion of his publisher, Royston, who had adorned his "Collection of Offices" with a print representing Christ in the attitude of prayer. This unsettled life, with its interruptions, harassments, and privations, would seem rather to have stimulated than to have stinted the pro- ductiveness of his genius. In 1647 appeared his most important work, The Liberty of Prophesying, and in the following year the complete edition of his Apology for Authorized and Set Forms of Liturgy against the Pretence of the Spirit, as well as his Life of Christ, or the Great Euemplar, a book which at once won a popularity it still in large measure retains. Then followed in rapid succes- sion the Twenty-seven Sermons, 'for the summer half-year," and the Twenty-five "for the winter half-year," oly Living, Holy Dying, a controversial treatise on the Real Presence, the Golden Grove, and the Unum Necessarium, which by

Yh ice se

its Pelagianism gave great offence. During these years he was also busy with his Ductor Dubitantium (published in 1660), which he intended to be the standard manual of casuistry and ethics for the Christian people.

In 1658 settlement was at length reached through the kind offices of the earl of Carbery, who obtained for Taylor a lectureship in Lisburn. At first he declined a post in which the duty was to be shared with a Presby- terian, or, as he expressed it, “where a Presbyterian and myself shall be like Castor and Pollux, the one up and the other down,” and to which also a very meagre salary was attached. He was, however, induced to take it, and found, near his patron’s mansion on Lough Neagh, so congenial a retirement that even after he was raised to a bishopric he continued to make it his home. At the Restoration, instead of being recalled to England, as he probably expected and certainly desired, he was appointed to the see of Down and Connor, to which was shortly added the small and adjacent diocese of Dromore. He was also made a member of the Irish privy council and vice-chancellor of the university of Dublin. None of these honours were sinecures. Of the university he writes, “T found all things in a perfect disorder… . a heap of men and boys, but no body of a college, no one meinber, either fellow or scholar, having any legal title to his place, but thrust in by tyranny or chance.” Accordingly he set himself vigorously to the task of framing and enforcing regulations for the admission and conduct of members of the university, and also of establishing lectureships, His episcopal labours were still more arduous. There were, at the date of the Restoration, about seventy Presbyterian ministers in the north of Ireland, and most of these were from the west of Scotland, and were imbued with the dis- like of Episcopacy which distinguished the Covenanting party. No wonder that Taylor, writing to the duke of Ormonde shortly after his consecration, should have said, ‘I perceive myself thrown into a place of torment.” His letters perhaps somewhat exaggerate the danger in which he lived, but there is no doubt that his authority was resisted and his overtures rejected. His writings also were ransacked for matter of accusation against him, “a comunittee of Scotch spiders being appointed to see if they can gather or make poison out of them.” Here, then, was Taylor’s opportunity for exemplifying the wise toleration he had in other days inculeated. These Presbyterians had, like himself, suffered under Cromwell for their loyalty, and might have been expected to evoke his sympathy ; but the new bishop had nothing to offer them but the bare alternative—submission to episcopal ordination and juris- diction or deprivation. Consequently, in his first visita- tion, he declared thirty-six churches vacant ; and of these forcible possession was taken by his orders. At the same time many of the gentry

were won by his undoubted sincerity and devotedness as well as by his eloquence. With the Romanist element of the population he was less successful. Ignorant of the English language, and firmly attached to their ancestral forms of worship, they were yet compelled to attend a service they considered profane, conducted in a language they could not understand. As Heber says, “No part of the administration of Ireland by the English crown has been more extraordinary and more unfortunate than the system pursued for the introduction of the Reformed religion.” At the instance of the Irish bishops Taylor undertook his last great work, the Dis- suasive from Popery (in two parts, 1664 and 1667), but, as he himself seemed partly conscious, he might have more effectually gained his end by adopting the methods of Ussher and Bedell, and inducing his clergy to acquire the Irish tongue.

Nor were domestic sorrows awanting in these later years.

fo Sa

i

=o ae

fe Yt on 95

In 1661 he buried, at Lisburn, Edward, the only surviv- ing son of his second marriage. His oldest son, an officer in the army, was killed in a duel; and his: second son, Charles, intended for the church, left Trinity College and became companion and secretary to the duke of Bucking- ham, at whose house he died. The day after his son’s funeral Taylor sickened, and, after a ten days’ illness, he died at Lisburn on the 13th August 1667, in the fifty-fifth year of his life and the seventh of his episcopate.

Taylor’s fame has been maintained by the popularity of his sermons and devotional writings rather than by his influence as a theologian or his importance as an ecclesiastic. His mind was neither scientific nor speculative, and he was attracted rather to questions of casuistry than to the deeper problems of pure theology. His wide rcading and capacious memory enabled him to carry in his mind the materials of a sound historical theology, but these materials were unsifted by criticism. His immense

learning served him rather as a storehouse of illustrations, or as an armoury out of which he could choose the fittest weapon for discomfiting an opponent, than as a quarry furnishing him with material for build- ing up a completely designed and enduring edifice of systematized truth, Indeed, he had very limited faith in the human mind as an instrument of truth. ‘‘ Theology,” he says, “is rather a divine life than a divine knowledge.” His great plea for toleration is based on the impossibility of erecting theology into a demonstrable science. ‘‘It is impossible all should be of one mind. And what is impossible to be done is not necessary it should be done,” Differences of opinion there must be; but “heresy is not an error of the understanding but an error of the will.” His aim in life was practical ; his interests werc in men rather than in ideas, and his sympathics were evoked rather by the experiences of individuals than by great movements. Of a decidedly poetic tempcrament, fervid and mobile in fecling, and of a prolific fancy, he had also the sense and wit that come of varied contact with men. All his gifts were made available for influencing other men by his easy command of a style rarely matched in dignity and colour. With all the majesty and stately elaboration and musical rhythm of Milton’s finest prose, Taylor’s style is relieved and brightened by an astonishing variety of felicitous illustrations, ranging from the most homely and terse to the most dignified and elaborate. His sermons especially abound in quotations and allusions, which have the air of spontaneously suggesting themsclves, but which must sometimes have baffled his hearers. This seeming pedantry is, however, atoned for by the clear practical aim of his sermons, the noble ideal he keeps before his hearers, and the skill with which he handles spiritual experience and urges incentives to virtue. But, through all his gorgeous eloquence and genial interest in human uature, there breaks from time to time some dead and laboured irrelevancy, the growth of his training in scholastic dialectics ; for ‘‘like some other writers of the 17th century he seems almost to have two minds, —one tender, sweet, luxuriant to excess, the other hard, subtle, formal, prone to definition and logomachy.”

The first collected edition of his works was published by Bishop Heber (with a life) in 1822, reissued after careful revision by Charles Page Eden, 1852-61. (M. D.)

TAYLOR, Joun (1580-1654), commonly called “The Water Poet,” was born at Gloucester in August 1580. Of his parentage and early boyhood very little is known, and that little is mainly to be gleaned from various scattered personal allusions in the numerous short writings of this prolific wit and rhymster. After fulfilling his apprentice- ship to a waterman, he seems to have served (1596) in the fleet under the earl of Essex, and to have been present at the naval attack upon Cadiz. On his return to England he took up the trade of Thames waterman, and for a time at any rate was a collector of the dues exacted by the lieutenant of the Tower on all wines destined for London. The title of “ Water Poet,” which he owes to his occupation On the river, isa misnomer. Taylor was no poet, though he could string rhymes together with facility ; his wit, which was vigorous and vulgar, found best expression in rollicking prose. He shows a broad sense of rough fun, occasionally of humour; but for the most part his comi- calities would now meet with scanty appreciation. He had a very good opinion of himself, his writings, and his Importance ; and it was he himself who set forth that he was the ‘“king’s water poet” and the ‘“queen’s water- man.” His literary performances can most easily and most

satisfactorily be studied in the handsome quarto, contain- ing all his productions, edited by Mr C. Hindley, and pub- lished in 1872. His “ works,” sixty-three in number, first appeared in one large volume—now a rarity sought after by collectors—in 1630. He delighted in eccentric freaks, calculated in narration to astound both the sober country- folk and the somewhat sceptical Londoners. Thus, with a companion as feather-brained as himself, he once started ona voyage from London to Queensborough in a paper boat, with two stockfish tied to two canes for oars ; before the journey’s end was reached the frail boat collapsed, as might have been expected, though a qualified success finally met Taylor’s efforts. The spirit of the bargee was in him, and he delighted in rough give-and-take; a rude lampoon was one of his favourite verbal weapons. Thus Thomas Coryat, the author of Crudities, having excited the literary waterman’s ridicule, was rewarded with a ludicrous dedication in the production entitled Taylor’s Travels in Germanic; again, the “water poet” indulged in abusive satire to his heart’s content in an “effusion” which he called A Kicksey-Winsey, or a Lerry Come-T’wang—a literary castigation which he inflicted upon those subscribers to a certain “ work” of his who omitted to substantiate their

promises, This production was entitled Zhe Penniless Pilgrimage, or the Moneyless Perambulation of John Taylor, and consisted of an account of its author's pedestrian tour from London to Edinburgh; and to this work some sixteen hundred persons are said to have promised their support. Another wagering ven- ture was a journey to Prague, where he is said to have been received and entertained by the queen of Bohemia in 1620. Two years later Taylor made "a very merry, wherry ferry voyage, or Yorke for my money," and in the ensu- ing year another water-journey, which he subsequently described in prose and verse as A New Discovery by Seca with a Wherry from London to Salisbury. At the out- break of the Civil War Taylor forsook the river and retired to Oxford, where he tempted fortune by keeping a public- house. His sympathies were wholly with the Royalists, —the Roysterists, as he called them once; and, when the town surrendered, the ‘‘ water poet" returned to London and kept a public-house under the sign of The Crown, in Phoenix Alley, Long Acre. He incurred some odium from his loyal observance of the king's death in the placement above his door of the sign of The Mourning Crown, and he was forced to take the latter down. With characteristic readiness he substituted for it his own portrait, with some

‘ doggerel lines underneath. It was here that in December

1654 he died, and in the neighbouring churchyard of St Martin's-in-the-Fields his remains were laid.

At the most, Taylor can only be called an amusing and vulgarly clever pamphleteer; he wrote nothing worthy of remembrance save by the historian of the period in which he lived, by the antiquary, and by the enthusiastic student of the many straggling little by- ways of literature.

TAYLOR, Tom (1817-1880), dramatist and art critic, was born at Sunderland in 1817. After attending school there, and studying for two sessions at Glasgow university, he in 1837 entered Trinity College, Cambridge, of which he became a fellow. Subsequently he held for two years the professorship of English literature at University Col- lege, London. He was called to the bar (Middle Temple) in November 1845, and went on the northern circuit until, in 1850, he became assistant secretary of the Board of Health. On the reconstruction of the board in 1854 he was

made secretary, and on its abolition his services were transferred to the Local Government Act Office, a depart- ment of the Home Office created by the Sanitary Act of 1866. In his very early years Tom Taylor showed a pre- dilection for the drama, and was in the habit of performing dramatic pieces along with a number of children in a loft

over a brewer's stable. His first dramatic composition was a rhymed fairy tale or extravaganza, written in conjunction with Albert Smith and Charles Kenny, and performed in 1846. From this time he wrote for the stage continuously till the close of his life, his dramatic compositions or adaptations numbering in all over 100, amongst the best known of which are Still Water Runs Deep, Victims, the Contested Election, the Overland Route, the Ticket of Leave Man, Anne Boleyn, and Joan of Arc. He may perhaps be regarded as the first dramatist of his time, so far as general appreciation goes; and, if his chief concern was the con- struction of a popular acting play, his dramas possess at the same time considerable literary excellence, while the characters are clearly and consistently drawn, and the dialogue is natural, yet nervous and pointed. In his blank

verse historical dramas, such as Anne Boleyn and Joan of

Arc, he was not so successful. Taylor was also a very frequent contributor to the light magazine literature of the day. In 1872 he withdrew from public life, and, on the death of Shirley Brooks in 1873, he became editor of Punch. He occasionally appeared with success in amateur theatricals, more especially in the character of Adam in As You Like Itand of Jasper in A Sheep in Wolf's Cloth- ing. He had some talent for painting, and for many years was art critic to the Z'%mes. He died at Lavender Sweep, Wandsworth, 12th July 1880.

Apart from the drama, his chicf contributions to literature are his biographies of painters, viz., Autobiography of B. R. Haydon (1853); Autobiography and Correspondence of C. R. Leslie, R.A, (1859); and Life and Times of Sir Joshua Reynolds (1865), which had been lcft in a very incomplete state by Mr Leslie. His Historical Dramas appearcd in one

volume in 1877. He also edited, with a memorial preface, Pen Sketehes from a Vanished Hand, seleeted from Papers of the late Mortimer Collins.

TAYLOR, Zacuary (1784-1850), president of the United States, was born in Orange county, Virginia, November 24, 1784. He entered the army as lieutenant in 1808, and rose to the rank of major in the war with Great Britain which followed. At the outbreak of the Mexican War he was in command of the American forces in Louisiana and Texas, and was directed to make the advance into the disputed territory which brought on the war. Beating the Mexicans in two battles, he followed them into Mexico, and there defeated Santa Anna in the crowning battle of his campaign, Buena Vista (1847). Dissatisfied with his treatment by the administration, he resigned and returned to the United States, where the Whig party nominated him and elected him president (1848). The struggle over the question of the admission of slavery to the territory taken from Mexico occupied his term of office, and he died at Washington, July 9, 1850.

TCHAD, Tsap, or Cuan, Lake. See AFRICA, vol. i. p. 255, and SouDAN.

TCHEREMISSES, or Cuerremisses. See FINLAND, vol. ix. p. 219, and Russta, vol. xxi. pp. 79-80.

TCHERKASY (Polish Czerkasy), a district town of Russia, in the government of Kieff, and 190 miles by rail to the south-east of Kieff, on the right bank of the Dnieper. It is poorly built, mostly of wood ; the population has rapidly increased lately, and has doubled since 1846, reaching 15,740 in 1883. There are now two gymnasiums for boys and girls, and several lower schools. The inhabitants (Little Russian) are mostly employed in agriculture and gardening. There is a brisk export trade in corn, refined sugar, tobacco, salt, and timber ; raw sugar and manufactured goods are imported, principally by Jewish merchants,

Tcherkasy, formerly Tcherkassk, was an important town of the Ukraine in the 15th century, and remained so, under Polish rule, until the revolt of Hmelnitski, when it became free, When West

Ukraine was taken again by Poland, most of its inhabitants migrated to the left bank of the Dnieper. It was annexed by Russia in 1795.

LA Y —

ee ST

TCHERNIGOFF, a government of Little Russia, on the left bank of the Dnieper, bounded by Moghileff and Smolensk on the N., Orel and Kursk on the E., Poltava on the S., and Kieff and Minsk on the W., has an area of 20,233 square miles. Its surface is an undulating plain, 650 to 750 feet high in the north, and from 370 to 600 feet in the south, deeply grooved by ravines and the valleys of the rivers. In the north, “ beyond the Desna,” about one-third of the area is under wood (which is rapidly disappearing), and marshes occur along the courses of the rivers ; while to the south of the Desna the soil is dry, sometimes sandy, and assumes the characters of a steppe- land as one proceeds southward. Chalk deposits prevail in the north, and Eocene inthe south. The government is watered by the Dnieper (which forms its western boundary for 178 miles) and its tributaries the Soj and the Desna, The latter, which flows through Tchernigoff for nearly 350 miles, is navigable, and timber is brought down its tribu- taries. Corn, linseed, timber, brandy, hemp, and sugar are shipped on the Dnieper, Soj, and Desna, and salt im- ported. The climate is much colder in the woody tracts of the north than in the south; the average yearly temperature at the town of Tchernigoff is 44°-4 (January, 23°; July, 68°°5).

The population, which is rapidly increasing, reached 1,996,250 in 1883. It is chiefly Little Russian (85°6 per cent.); Great Russians (6°1 per cent.), mostly Raskolniks, and White Russians (5°6 per cent.) inhabit the northern districts. Jews have spread rapidly since last century, and now number more than 45,000. There are, besides, some 20,000 Germans as well as Grecks at Nyczhin. Agri- culture is the principal occupation; in the north, however, many of the inhabitants are engaged in the timber trade and various domestic industries. Cattle-breeding is carried on in the central districts, and there were in 1883 572,200 horses, 515,800 cattle, and 948,000 sheep. Beet is extensively cultivated, and in 1884 2 million cwts. of beet-root were delivered to the thirteen sugar- works within the government. The culture of tobacco is also in- creasing, upwards of 500,000 ewts. being produced annually. Hemp is widely cultivated in the north, and the milder climate of the south cncourages gardening. Bee-keeping is extensively carricd on by

the Raskolniks. Tar, pitch, and a large variety of wooden manufactures are largely produced in the forest districts, as also are woven fabrics, felts, and leather wares. Limestone, grind- stones, china-clay, and building stone are quarried. Manufactures have begun to develop rapidly of late ; by 1881 their yearly produc- tion reached £1,340,000 (£860,000 from sugar-works and distil- leries). Trade is active, especially since the opening of the railway between Kieff and Kursk, which runs through Tchernigoff. The government is divided into fifteen districts, the chief towns (with populations in 1885) being Tchernigoff (19,000), Borzna (18,700), Glukhoff (16,450), Gorodnya (3550), Konotop (16,420), Kozelets (4430), Krolevets (9190), Mglin (10,880), Novgorod-Syeversk (8020), Novozybkoff (11,920), Nyezhin (43,020), Oster (8550), Sosnitsa (5650), Starodub (28,890 in 1880), and Surazh (38770). A number of unimportant towns (14 posads and 49 myestechkt) possess muni- cipal institutions.

TCHERNIGOFF, capital of the above government, stands on the right bank of the Desna, nearly half a mile from the river, 476 miles from Moscow. Far removed from the great channels of trade, its sole importance is as an administrative centre. Its houses are poorly built, and the streets are unpaved. The population (19,000 in 1885, one-third being Jews) is almost stationary. The ruins of its fortress, and the old cathedrals of Preo- brazhenie and Borisoglebsk, founded in the 11th and 12th centuries, bear witness to the former importance of the town. Numerous graves scattered about, and now partly explored, speak of the battles which caused its decay.

Tchernigoff is known to have existed before the introduction of Christianity into Russia. In 907 it is mentioned in the treaty of Oleg as next to Kieff, and in the 11th century it became the capital of the principality of Syeversk and an important commercial city. The Mongolian invasion put an end to its growth. Lithuania annexed it in the 14th century, but it was soon seized by Poland, which held it until the 17th century. The great rising in 1648 rendered it independent until 1654, when the Cossacks accepted the protectorate of the czars of Moscow. In 1686 it was definitely annexed to Russia.

TCHERNOMORSK, a government of Caucasia, Russia, consisting of a narrow strip of land between the main Caucasus chain and the Black Sea, formerly inhabited by the Adyghe mountaineers of Caucasus. This strip, pro- tected by the mountains from the cold winds of the north, is in respect of climate one of the most favoured parts of the Black Sea littoral. Owing to extensive emigrations of its inhabitants to Turkey since the Russian conquest of 1864, it is very thinly peopled, the population numbering

| but 25,980, mostly Russians, on an area of 2824 square

miles. The steep slopes of the Caucasus, whose summits range from 2000 to 10,000 feet, are furrowed by narrow gorges, and bear a luxuriant vegetation. The wild vine— a relic of former gardens—grows freely in the forests, which are almost impassable on account of the underwood and decaying trees. The moistness of the atmosphere contri-

| butes to the spread of the Caucasian fever, which is char-

acteristic of the littoral. Notwithstanding the proximity of the mountains to the sea, a road is now being con-

| structed along the coast,—for military reasons.

Agriculture is carried on, but only in the south, —gardening and the culture of the vine and tobacco being the chief occupations besides fishing and hunting. Some manufactures are rising up at

| Novorossiysk (3330 inhabitants) and Anapa (5350), the two prin-

cipal towns, which also have some foreign trade. The region is a separate province under a military governor residing at Novo- rossiysk, where a new harbour is being constructed.

TCHISTOPOL, a district town of Russia, in the govern-

| ment of Kazaii, 90 miles to the south-east of that town, on

the left bank of the Kama. Before 1781 it was a mere

) village (Tchistoye Pole), founded by runaway serfs ; at

present it is extending rapidly and becoming an industrial town, with flour-mills, distilleries, and a few cotton-mills, The merchants carry on a brisk trade in corn brought in from the fertile tracts of Ufa, and shipped down the Kama; manufactured wares are imported. The popula-

tion in 1883 was 18,200.

TCHITA, capital of Transbaikalia, Eastern Siberia, stands 585 miles east of Irkutsk, on the Tchita river, half a mile above its junction with the Ingoda. It was founded in 1851; and military considerations led to the selection of this very small village to be the capital of Transbaikalia.

Steamers on the Amur and Shilka do not penetrate so far |as the upper Ingoda; they usually stay at Sryetensk, 320 miles distant. }from Transbaikalia to the Amur region usually start

But the military supplies sent every year

from Tchita,—the forest-covered hills on the banks of the Ingoda supplying material for the construction of the barges (from 100 to 200 in number) on which these sup- plies are carried as soon as the melting of the snows in the ‘mountains temporarily raises the water in the river to a sufficient height. Tchita is built of wood, with unpaved Streets and wide open spaces. The dryness of the Buriat steppe close by prevents snow from accumulating to any depth, even when the cold is extreme; the merchandise

accordingly which is forwarded from Irkutsk to the Nertchinsk district is brought to Tchita on carts, and is there loaded on sledges for the continuation of the journey

down the frozen rivers. The population of Tchita in

| 1883 was 12,600. The inhabitants support themselves

by agriculture, by trade in furs, cattle, hides, and tallow, which are bought from the Buriats, and in all kind of | manufactured wares imported from

Russia and Western | Siberia.

| TEA. This important food auxiliary, now in daily use /a8 a beverage by probably one-half of the population of \the world, is prepared from the leaves of one or more plants belonging to the natural order Ternstrimiacee.

The order includes the well-known ornamental genus of

‘shrubs Camellia, to which indeed the tea-plants are so closely allied that by many systematic writers they are

97

included in the same genus. The tea-plants have been cultivated in China for at least a thousand years.

As is commonly the case with plants which have been Botany.

long under cultivation, there is much doubt as to specific distinctions among the varieties of tea. Under the name of Thea sinensis, Linneeus originally described tea as a single species ; but with fuller knowledge of the Chinese plants he established two species, Thea Bohea and Thea viridis, and it was assumed that the former was the source of black teas, while Thea viridis was held to yield the green varieties. In 1843, however, Mr Robert Fortune found that, although the two varieties of the plant exist in different parts of China, black and green tea are made indifferently from the leaves of the same plant. The tea- plant is cultivated in China as an evergreen shrub, which grows to a height of from 3 to 5 feet. The stem is bushy, with numerous and very leafy branches; the leaves are alternate, large elliptical, obtusely serrated, veined, and placed on short channelled foot-stalks. The calyx is small, smooth, and divided into five obtuse sepals. The flowers are white, axillary, and slightly fragrant,—often

iT

) 3

ee

Fia. 1.—Tea-Plant (Thea sinensis),

two or three together on separate pedicels. The corolla has from five to nine petals, cohering at the base. The filaments are short, numerous, and inserted at the base of the corolla; the anthers are large and yellow, the style trifid, and the capsules three-celled and three-seeded.

The wrzdis varieties are hardier, and possess larger and brighter green leaves than belong to the Bohea variety. No strictly wild tea-plants have been discovered in China, but an indigenous tea-tree (Zhea assamica) is found in Assam, which botanists now incline to regard as the parent species of all cultivated varieties. It differs in many respects from the Chinese plants. The indigenous Assam tea-plant is a tree attaining a height of from 15 to 20 feet, growing in the midst of dense moist jungle and in shady sheltered situations. Its leaves vary considerably in size, form, and venation, being usually smooth, thick, and leathery, lanceolate, ovate lanceolate, or oblong lanceo- late. They are variously dotted with pellucid cells containing essential oil, and the number of such cells shown by the leaf is held to be an indication of the quality of tea it will yield. The leaf of the Chinese plant never exceeds 4 inches in length, while that of the Assam tree reaches

XXIII. — 13

Range of growth,

Climate and soil,

98

9 inches and upwards. The Chinese plant is hardy, and capable of thriving under many different conditions of climate and situation; while the indigenous plant is tender and difficult of cultivation, requiring for its success a close, hot, moist, and equable climate. The characteristic venation of the leaf of the Chinese tea-plant is delineated in fig. 2. In minute structure the leaf presents highly characteristic appearances. The . under side of the young leaf is densely covered with fine one- celled thick-walled hairs, about 1 mm. in length and ‘015 mm. in thickness. These hairs entirely disappear with increasing age. The structure of the epidermis of the under

side of the leaf, with its contorted cells, is represented (x 160) in fig. 3. A further char- acteristic feature of the cellular structure of the tea-leaf is the abundance, especially in grown leaves, of large, branching, thick- walled, smooth cells (idioblasts), which, although they occur in other leaves, are not found in such as are likely to be confounded with or substituted for tea. The minute structure of the leaf in section is illustrated in fig. 4. The cultivated varieties of tea, being comparatively hardy, possess pyg. 9, an adaptability to climate excelled among food plants only by the wheat. The limits of actual tea cultivation extend from 39° N, lat. in Japan, through the tropics, to Java, Australia, Natal, and Brazil in the southern hemisphere. The tea-plant will even live in the open air in the south of England, and withstand some

—Tea-Leaf—full size.

Fie, 3.—Epidermis of Tea-Leaf (under side). x 160

amount of frost, when it receives sufficient summer heat to harden its wood. But comparatively few regions are suited for practical tea-growing. 2

A rich and exuberant growth of the plants is a first essential of successful tea cultivation. This is only obtain- able in warm, moist, and comparatively equable climates, where rains are frequent aud copious. Theclimate indeed which favours tropical profusion of jungle growth—still steaming heat—is that most favourable for the cultivation of tea, and such climate, unfortunately, is most prejudicial to the health of Europeans. It was formerly supposed that comparatively temperate latitudes and steep sloping ground afforded the most favourable situations for tea- planting, and much of the disaster which attended the early stages of the tea enterprise in India is traceable to this erroneous conception. Tea thrives best in light friable

| plant.

THA

soils of good depth, through which water percolates freely, the plant being specially impatient of marshy situations and stagnant water. Undulating well-watered tracts, where the rain escapes —

freely, yet without washing away the soil, are the most © valuable for tea gar- dens. Asa matter of fact, many of the Indian plantations are established on hill-sides, after the example of known districts in China, where hill slopes and odd corners are commonly occupied with tea-plants.

According to Chinese legend, the virtues of tea (cha, Histor, pronounced in the Amoy dialect ¢é, whence the English name) were discovered by the mythical emperor Chin- nung, 2737 B.c., to whom all agricultural and medicinal knowledge is traced. It is doubtfully referred to in the book of ancient poems edited by Confucius, all of which are previous in date to 550 B.c. A tradition exists in China that a knowledge of tea travelled eastward to and in China, having been introduced 543 a.p. by Bodhidharma, an ascetic who came from India on a missionary expedition, but that legend is also mixed with mythical and super- natural details. But it is quite certain, from the historical narrative of Lo Yu, who lived in the Tang dynasty (618-906 A.D.), that tea was already used as a beverage in the 6th century, and that during the 8th century its use had become so common that a tax was levied on its consump- tion in the 14th year of Tih Tsung (793). The use of tea in China in the middle of the 9th century is known from Arab sources (Reinaud, Relation des Voyages, 1845, p. 40). From China a knowledge of tea was carried into Japan, and there the cultivation was established about the begin- ning of the 13th century. Seed was brought from China — by the priest Miyoye, and planted first in the south island, Kiushiu, whence the cultivation spread northwards till it reached the high limit of 39° N. To the south tea cultiva- tion also spread into Tong-king and Cochin China, but the product in these regions is of inferior quality. Till well into the 19th century it may be said that China and Japan were the only two tea-producing countries, and that the product reached the Western markets only through the narrowest channels and under most oppressive restrictions.

In the year 1826 the Dutch succeeded in establishing tea gardens. in Java. At an early period the East India Company of Great Britain, as the principal trade interme- diary between China and Europe, became deeply interested in the question of tea cultivation in their Eastern posses- sions. In 1788 Sir Joseph Banks, at the request of the directors, drew up a memoir on the cultivation of economic plants in Bengal, in which he gave special prominence to tea, pointing out the regions most favourable for its

cultivation. About the year 1820 Mr David Scott, one of the Company's servants, sent to Calcutta from the district of Kuch Behar and Rangpur—the very district indicated by Sir Joseph Banks as favourable for tea growing—certain leaves, with a statement that they were said to belong to the wild tea-plant. The leaves were submitted to Dr Wallich, Government botanist at Calcutta, who pronounced them to belong to a species of Camellia, and no result followed on Mr Scott's communication. These very leaves ultimately came into the herbarium of the Linnean Society of London, and have authoritatively been pronounced to belong to the indigenous Assam tea- Dr Wallich's attribution of this and other specimens

(ee ee

—

Soret be Set

YE A

subsequently sent in to the genus Camellia, although scientifically defensible, unfortunately diverted attention from the significance of the discovery. It was not till 1834 that, overcome by the insistance of Captain Francis Jenkins, who maintained and proved that, called by the name Camellia or not, the leaves belonged to a tea-plant, Dr Wallich admitted "the fact of the genuine tea-plant being a native of our territories in Upper Assam as incontrovertibly proved." In the meantime a committee had been formed by Lord William Bentinck, the governor- general, for the introduction of tea culture into India, and an official had already been sent to the tea districts of China to procure seed and skilled Chinese workmen to conduct operations in the Himalayan regions. The discovery and reports of Captain Jenkins led to the investigation of the capacities of Assam as a tea-growing country by Lord William Bentinck's committee. Evidence of the abundant existence of the indigenous tea-tree was obtained ; and the directors of the East India Company resolved to institute an experimental establishment in Assam for cultivating and manufacturing tea, leaving the industry to be developed by private enterprise should its practicability be demonstrated. In 1836 there was sent to London 1 1b of tea made from indigenous leaves ; in 1837 5 ib of Assam tea was sent; in 1838 the quantity

sent was twelve small boxes, and ninety-five boxes reached London in 1839. In January 1840 the Assam Company was formed, and thenceforward the cultivation of tea in India was carried on as a private commercial undertaking. The tea districts of India include, in the order of their priority, Assam, Dehra Dun, Kumaun, Darjiling, Cachar, Kangra, Hazaribagh, Chittagong, Tarai, and the Nilgiris (Madras).

Attempts were repeatedly made to introduce tea culture in Ceylon, under both Dutch and British authority. No permanent success was attained till about 1876, when the disastrous effects of the coffee-leaf disease induced planters to give serious attention to tea. Since that period the tea industry has developed in Ceylon with marvellous rapidity, and it has every prospect of taking the first rank among Singalese productions. Tea-planting has also been suc- cessfully established in Natal. But beyond the regions above enumerated the industry has never taken root. It has been tried in the West Indies, the Southern States of America, Brazil, Australia, and the south of Europe; but cheap labour is a sine gua non of success, ‘Tea can be picked in China and the British East Indies for two or three pence a day of wages, and it is on such exceedingly moderate outlay that the margin of profit depends.

Tea is more or less cultivated for local consumption in all pro- vinecs of China except the extreme north, but the regions from which it is exported are embraced within the provinces in the south-cast—Kwang-tung, Fuh-keen, Keang-se, Che-keang, Keang- su, aud Gan-hwuy. Black-tea manufacture belongs to the more southerly portion of these regions, the green-tca country lying to the north. The methods employed in cultivating the plants and in making tea in China differ widely in various districts, and the teas retained for native use—especially the high-class fancy teas which are never seen abroad, and would probably not bear cx- portation—undergo special manipulation. The teas exported are of three principal classes—black tea, green tea, and brick tea.

In cultivation, the young plants are not ready for picking till they are three years old, by which time they should be well established, throwing out young shoots or “flushes” with vigour and profusion. It is these tender shoots, with leaf-buds and expand- ing leaves, which alone are gathered for tea mannfacture, and the younger thie leaf-bud the better is the quality of

the tea. Accord- ing to Chinese statements there are four gatherings of leaves in the year. The first is made early in April, when the young leaf-buds are just unfolding, and these, covered below with their fine silky hairs, are taken for making pekoe or young hyson. The sccond gathering takes place about the beginning of May, another in July, and the fourth in August and September. On each succeeding occasion the product is less fragrant and valuable, and the final

gathering is said to consist of large leaves of little value. These statements do not, however, accord with Indian experience.

_ The following brief outline of the Chinese tea-making processes is given by Mr Ball (Cultivation and Manufacture of Tea) :—

‘eThe leaves of black tca arc exposed to the sun and air on circular trays and treated as hay, during which an incipient saccharine fermentation is supposed to take place in conjunction with a volatile oil. Various modifications of flavour are thus produced by the management of this fermentation; a loss of tannin takes place by the conversion of part of the tannic acid into sugar. During this change the leaves become flaccid, and slightly tinged or spotted with red or brown colouring matter, and give out a peculiar odour, approximating to, or, as some think, identical with, the odour of tea. A certain change in this odour is carefully watched by the workmen, this being an indication that the roasting must not be delayed. It is not necessary to wait till the leaves are spotted with red. They are then roasted in an iron vessel, and afterwards rolled with the hands, to express their juices. The roasting and rolling are repeated so long as any juices ean be expressed from the leaves in the act of rolling. Finally, they are dried in sieves placed over a charcoal fire in drying tubes, during which the leaves are occasionally taken from the fire, and turned until completely dried. It is in this last stage of the proccss that the leaves turn plack, though this change of colour is mainly due to the process of manipulation previously to roasting, and not to the action of heat.”

Black tea.

“The leaves of green tea are roasted also in an iron vessel, but as soon as Green gathered, without any previous manipulation, all heating or fermentation of the teg,

leaves being studiously avoided; they are then rolled as black tea, and finally dried in the same vessel in which they have been roasted, by constantly stirring and moving them about. They are also fanned to hasten evaporation, and the drying and formation of the peculiar charactcristic colour of this tea, which it gradually acquires in this process, and which resembles the bloom on some fruits,”

The colour of genuine green tea is entirely due to the rapid drying of the fresh caves, which prevents the chlorophyll from under- going any alteration. The green tea sent out of China is, almost invariably faced or

glazed with artificial colouring matter, princi- pally with a powdered mixture of gypsum and Prussian blue.

The names distinguishing commercial qualities of tea are almost Com- entirely of Chinese origin. In general they indicate a gradation mercial of qualities from the fine and delicate product of the young leaf- varieties.

bud up to the hard and woody expanded and partly-grown leaf. The following list represents the ordinary series of qualitics, begin- ning with the finest :—

Biack Tea.—Flowery pekoe, orange pekoc, pekoe, pekoe souchong, souchong, congou, bohea.

Green Tea.—Gunpowder, skin, caper.

Of these names, pekoe is derived from pak-ho (white hairs), the pekoes showing the fine downy tips of the young buds ; souchong is from siaou- chung, little plant or sort; congou (kung-fu), labour ; bohea (ww-i), the mountains in Fuh-keen, the centre of the black-tea country ; and hyson (yii- tsien), before the rains, or tu-chwn, flour- ishing spring. Many other names occur in the trade denoting teas of special qualities or districts, such as oolong (black dragon) and twankay, from the district of that name in the province of Keang- su. Scented teas also form a special class of Chinese produce. In scenting the finished tea, either black or green is intimately inter- mixed with odoriferous flowers and left in a heap till the tea is fully impregnated with the odour, when the two substances are separated by sifting, and the tea so scented is immediately packed and ex- cluded from the air.

Brick tea is the special form in which tea is prepared for use throughout the vast tracts of Central Asia. It is made principally from broken leaves, stalks, and fragments of large leaves, com- pressed into blocks of various sizes. The bricks are of various degrees of compression, some being lightly squeczed into a loose mass and sewed up in cowhide bags, while others form compact resonant cakes, in which all trace of the original leaf structure is lost, with gilt characters impressed in their surface. Brick tea is much in demand over an area greater than the whole of Europe, and by many tribes

it is stewed with milk, salt, and butter or other fat and eaten as a vegetable. The Russian factors established in Hoo-pih prepare two sizes of brick tea, which they send off in great quantities through the Kalgan Gate of the Great Wall.

Under European supervision the cultivation and especially the manufacture of tea have in India undergone remarkable improve- ments. Indeed, the traditional and empirical teaching and processes of China proved a most serious stumblingblock to the progress of the tea industry under Western auspices. The tea-plants now cultivated in India are of three principal classes—the indigenous Assam, the Chinese, and a hybrid between the two. By much crossing and intermixture the gradations from one extreme to the other are almost imperceptible. The best qualities of black teas are made from indigenous and high-class hybrid plants, but these are comparatively tender and require a close humid climate. The hardiness of the Chinese plants is their most important character, for, favourably situated, the Assam plant gives a larger yield of delicate young leaf during the season than any other.

In favourable circumstances the tea-plant ‘‘flushes” or sends forth a fresh crop of tender young shoots from twenty to twenty- five times in the course of its growing and picking season of about nine months. The average annual yield per plant is very variable, but may be stated at abont one-fifth of a Ib of finished tea; and, as each acre of a garden holds 1500 to 1600 mature plants, the yield per acre may be from 300 to 350 ib per annum. The diagram (fig. 5) from Col. Money’s valuable practical treatise on the Culti-

imperial, hyson, young hyson, hyson

ra

Brick tea.

Tea in- dustry in India.

Picking.

extensively practised. The manufacture as carried on in the North. Western Provinces resolves itself into a rapid rolling and drying of the leaf. Without permitting the leaves to wither after gathering, they are, if frec from moisture, at once by exposure to a brisk heat sweated and softened for rolling. They are then without dela

rolled as in black-tea manufacture, next spread out in the sun till they take a blackish tinge, then again rolled, and this rolling and exposure may be repeated yet a third time. When the rolling is completed the tea is placed ina highly heated pan, in which it is stirred about briskly till the whole mass becomes too hot to be worked by hand. Then it is tightly packed in a strong canvas bag, in which it is beaten by a heavy flat stick to consolidate it, and in this condition left for a night. Next day it is fired off in a pan, beginning with a high heat, which is gradually reduced during the nine hours or thereby of the operation, an incessant stirrin

and tossing being kept up the whole time, During this firing off the green colour of the tea is developed; and Indian green tea never owes any of its colour to ‘‘ facing” with foreign substances,

The qualities of a sample of tea and its commercial value can

only with accuracy be determined by actual infusion and trial by of tea, a skilled tea-taster. Certain general and external appearances which indicate the class of a tca are obvious enough ; but, although . a pekoe may be readily distinguished from a souchong, the souchong of certain planters or districts may be more valuable than other pekoes, While it is impossible to define the conditions which determine the commercial value of an ordinary black tea, Col. Money lays down the following rules: the darker the liquor the stronger the tea, and the nearer the approach of the infused leaf to a uniform salmony brown the purer the flavour. Black tea of good quality should in infusion yield a clear bright brown liquor emitting a subdued fragrance, and in taste it should be mild, bland, and sweetish, with an agreeable astringency. Green tea yields a light-coloured liquor of high fragrance, but thin, sharp, and somewhat rasping in taste as compared with black tea.

The chemical components of tea leaves are essential oil, theine, Chemis.

tannin, boheic acid, incest, quercitannic acid, gallic acid, oxalic try. acid, gum, chlorophyll, resin, wax, albuminoids, colouring matters, cellulose, and mineral ash. Of these the first three—essential oil, theine, and tannin—are of importance in the infused beverage. The essential oil, on which the flavour of tea depends, is present to the extent of from 0°6 to 1 per cent. Theine (CsH,.N,O,) is an alkaloid identical with the caffeine obtained from coffee, and it is remarkable that the same substance is yielded by the maté or Paraguayan tea and the guarana of South America, and by the kola nut of Central Africa. The theobromine of cocoa is also closely allied to theine, and the characteristic components of the extract of meat similarly show certain points of contact with these stimulant bodies. To the tannin of tea infusions is due what is known as the strength of the tea. Prof. Dittmar has recently examined a number of China and Indian teas in regard to the pro- portions of theine and tannin in their infusions and to the depend- ence of these proportions on the time of infusion. The general result was that Chinese tea yields more theine and less tannin than Indian tea, and that in both cases 10 minutes' infusion extracts practically all the theine. Longer infusion adds only to the tannin that passes into the solution, and, as excess of tannin impedes diges- tion, prolonged infusion is hurtful and ought to be avoided.

The quantitative composition of ——_

vation and Manufacture of Tea illustrates the method in which a flush or shoot is picked, and the portions which go to make special classes of tea. The lines in the diagram show the points at which the shoot may be picked, and it is important that the lowest leaf taken should be so nipped off as to leave the bud in its axil uninjured on the branch, as from it the next flush will then develop. The three leaves at the growing point (a, b, c) yield pekoe, and the whole shoot down to and including f gives pekoe souchong. In the order of their age, the individual leaves manufacture into flowery pekoe, b orange pekoe, c pekoe, pekoe souchong, ¢ souchong, and fcongou. Were the flush further developed another

XD

Fia. 5.—Mode of Picking Tea.

leaf might be taken, which would be classed as bohea, but that is not a quality recognized by Indian growers. It is not, however, the practice to pick or treat leaves separately, the whole flush being manipulated together, and the tea is only separated into qualities by sifting after the manufacturing processes have been completed. Manu- The manufacture of black tea is found to be an essentially simple facture. matter. Many of the processes employed by the Chinese are quite Black superfluous, and several of the manual operations which bulk tea. largely in the Chinese manufacture, it is found, can with advantage be supplanted by mechanical agency. The whole object of the black-tea manufacturer is to ferment, roll, aud dry the leaf, and for that purpose the leaves undergo—(1) withering, (2) rolling, (3) fermenting, and (4) firing or dholing. Between the fermenting and the firing operations it is desirable to expose the leaves to the direct sunlight for an hour or thereby. This cannot always be done, as it is impossible to keep the Lessaatrbed leaves after they have attained their proper state; nevertheless the best result is always attained in bright weather, when it is possible to expose the fermented leaves to the sun.

The fresh leaves from the garden, as they are brought in to the factory, are withered by being spread evenly over square wicker- work trays—leaf challanies—thickly or thinly as the weather is hot or cool. Thus they are left exposed to the air till they become quite soft and flaccid, folding together when pressed in the hand into a clammy mass without crackling or rebound. In cloudy or rainy weather it becomes necessary to wither by machine, acting

on the leaves with artificially dried and heated air. Withering is | tea is of conrse subject to great a cor a preliminary to rolling, in which the flaccid and velvety leaves are | variation. The analyses i ‘ kneaded, twisted, and rolled back and forward over a table till the | der given in the accompanying | Volatile oil……..... 0-79 | 0-60 whole comes into a mashy condition by the exudation of juice. | table furnish a general idea of the ee seteeeens a on While in Chinese tea-making that juice is squeezed out of the leaves, | proportion of constituents. Me iiimeciegoent 9:22 | 3-64 in India it is most carefully lapped up and absorbed in the spongy A series of investigations

into | Gum…0777777”” 8°56 7:28 mass. In hand-rolling as much as can be worked between two | a large number of teas has been seanin. davemaerteeee 17°80 12-88 hands is operated on, and passed from man to man along the table | carried out by Mr G. W. Wigner aso ine Bae na till fully worked, when it is made up into a compressed ball and | (Pharm. Jour., 3d series, vi. 261, Colouring matter..| 23°60 | 19-12 so put aside for fermenting. This process is the distinguishing | 281, 402). In tea as imported | Albumen…..... 300 | 2°80 feature of black-tea making, and on its sufficient accomplishment | he found large proportions of | Woody fibre…..... lt | a depends much of the character and quality of the tea made. The | moisture which could be expelled 98-782 | 98-302

on exposure to a temperature of |__| “| 212°F. Inarange of thirty-five samples the average moisture was equal to 7°67 per cent., the lowest—in a Chinese young hyson— being 4°84, while in several congous it exceeded 10 per cent. The ash in sixty-seven specimens of ordinary and special Ania teas he found to average 5°78 per cent., the maximum being 7-02 and the minimum 5°17 ; and of that ash 54°50 per cent. was soluble in water. The proportion of extractive substances in twenty-four teas varied from 26°15 in a congou to 44°85 in Moyune young hyson. The total average nitrogen from sixty green teas, slightly faced, was 3°76, from sixty black teas 3°26, from six Assam teas 3°64, and from exhausted leaves 3°80 per cent.

So long as the Western world remained almost exclusively ~ i ion.

progress of the fermentation must be carefully watched, and at the point when by the colour it is known to be sufficiently advanced the tea is in favourable weather sunned by exposure, thinly spread out to the sunlight for about an hour. It is immediately there- after fired, either by the fumes of burning charcoal or by a current of dried and heated air from one of the numerous machines now in use. With this single firing the process is completed, and the tea so finished is sifted by machinery into commercial qualities according to the size of the leaf.

For the entire range of manufacturing operations numerous forms of machinery and mechanical devices have been adapted and intro- duced in Indian gardens, so that, apart from picking the leaves, tea-making has become practically a factory industry.

Green The manufacture of green tea is comparatively little prosecuted tea. in India. In Europe the demand has greatly fallen away, and, though the consumption is considerable in the United States, the supply is principally drawn from Japan, where its preparation is

1 The theine is certainly understated + more recent observers obtain from 1°8 to 3 per cent., and occasionally more,

2 The mineral salts (ash) partly included in these totals amounted to 5°56 and 5°24 respectively.

ee iar

dependent on China for its tea supply, adulteration was rampant and multiform in the trade. Especially aniong green and fancy teas there was scareely such a thing as an unsophisticated sample to be obtained. The Chinese were also expert in fabricating an artificial gunpowder—appropriately known as ‘‘lie tea,”—which consisted of the sweepings of tea warehouses artfully made up with a paste of rice water. Paddy husks and many kinds of leaves faced with China clay, soapstone, catechu, and black lead also found their way abundantly into tea. On the European side, exhausted leaves were again dried, impregnated with catechu and gum, and faced up to do duty as fresh tea, and the leaves of numerous plants —sloe-thorn, hawthorn, willow, beech, plane, Zpilobium angusti- foliwm, &c.—were freely worked upas tea. Adulterated teais now, however, comparatively rare, largely owing to the watchfulness of the eustoms authorities. Moreover, as it is nearly as cheap to make tea from the leaves of the tea-plant as from those of any other herb, there is not much incentive to substitute the false for the real.

At a very early period in the European history of tea the prob- able effects of its use on the health and morals of the population attracted jealous attention, and a great deal was written, mostly in a hostile sense, on the subject. In 1678 we find Mr Henry Savile writing to his uncle, Mr Secretary Coventry, in sharp reproof of certain friends of his ‘‘ who call for tea, instead of pipes and bottles after dinner,—a base unworthy Indian practice, which

municates to the system a diffused warm glow. Further, as used by Western communities, it is a medium of taking, in the form of sugar and cream, no inconsiderable amount of real nutriment. The other effects of tea are more a matter of general impression than of ascertained scientific reality. Its virtues have nowhere been better summarized than by the earliest Chinese writer on the sub- ject, the above-mentioned Lo Yu, who says, ‘It tempers the spirits and harmonizes the mind, dispels lassitude and relieves fatigue, awakens thought and prevents drowsiness, lightens or refreshes the body, and clears the perceptive faculties.” The gentle exhilaration which accompanies the moderate use of tea is not followed by the depression which succeeds the use of alcoholic stimuli. Experience has proved that it sustains the frame under severe muscular or mental exercise without causing subsequent exhaustion and collapse. Tea is frequently found to be beneficial to sufferers from nervous headache, and it counteracts to some exteut the effects of alcohol and of opiates, Taken in excess it produces cerebral excitement, sleeplessness, and general nervous irritability. The tannin con- tained in its infusions also interferes with the flow of the saliva, diminishes the digestive activity of the stomach, and impedes the action of the bowels. In this view the large quantity of strong tea used by the poor—and especially by the sedentary poor, —while serving to blunt the keen tooth of hunger, must work incalculable havoc with the digestive and nervous systems of the consumers.

I must ever admire your most Christian family for not admitting.” And he adds, with an audible sigh, “the truth is, all nations are growing so wicked as to have some of these filthy customs!” Sonie of the writers, however, although resolute for its banishment

It is a remarkable fact that no mention of tea is made by Marco Com- Polo, and that no knowledge of the substance appears to have merce reached Europe till after the establishment of intercourse between and sta- Portugal and China in 1517. The Portuguese, however, did little tisties.

from the caddy, were willing to give it a place in the medicine chest. “Among many other novelties,” says a medical writer in 1722, ‘‘ there is one which seems to be particularly the cause of the hypochondriac

disorders, and is generally known by the name of thea, or tea. It is a drug which of late years has very much insinuated itself, as well into our dict as regales and entertain- ments, though its occupation is not less destructive to the animal economy than opium, or some other drugs which we have at present learned to avoid.”! Dr Lettsom was the first medical writer who gave the public a reasonable and scientific account of the plant; but even he let the fear of its abuse run away with his judgment, asserting that “the first rise of this pernicious custom [that of drinking spirits to excess] is often owing to the weakness and debility of the system brought on by the daily habit of drinking tea; the trembling hand seeks a temporary relief in some cordial, in order to refresh and excite again the enfeebled system, whereby such persons almost necessarily fall into a habit of intemperanee.”? Jonas Hanway (Essay on Tea, 1756) was among its most vigorous assailants. ‘‘Men,”’ he says, ‘‘seem to have lost their stature and comeliness, and women their beauty What Shakespeare ascribes to the concealment of love is in this age more frequently oecasioned by the use of tea.” To these complaints echoes were not wauting, but after a while the tea-drinkers had it all their own way. In the meantime, however, tea was not without its apologists. To say nothing of our own familiar poets and essay- ists, its praises have been sung by Herrichen and by Francius in Greck verses, by Pechlin in Latin epigrams, by Pierre Petit in a Latin poem of five hundred lines, and by a German versifier, who celebrates, in a fashion of his own, its “‘ burial and happy resurrec- tion.”? Huet, bishop of Avranches, has also paid his graceful tribute* to a stimulant to which, probably, no scholar was ever more indebted, and which he continued to enjoy at the age of ninety. Dr Johnson draws his own portrait as ‘(a hardened and shameless tea-drinker, who for twenty years diluted his meals with only the infusion of this fascinating plant ; whose kettle had scareely time to cool ; who with tea amused the evening, with tea solaced the midnight, and with tea welcomed the morning.” 5 Authorities are not yet by any means agreed as to the exact physiological influence and value of tea. The very striking fact that theine is precisely the characteristic constituent of coffee, maté, guarana, and the kola nut, all substances eagerly sought after in different quarters of the globe, serves to show that the alkaloid satisfies some craving of the human system, although what its effect is has not yet been certainly determined. The quantity of theince consumed even by the most hardened tea-drinker is exceedingly ininute, and there are not wanting authorities who assert that it

is practically inert, an assertion surely contradicted by the general instinct of the race. What is indisputable about tea drinking is that it forms an agreeable means of imbibing the proportion of water necessary in human nutrition, which, being taken hot, com-

1 An Essay on the Nature, Use, and Abuse of Tea, 14, 15. 2 Lettsom, Natural History of the Tea-Tree, 78. 3 Der Thee Begriibniss und gliéckliche Wiederauferstehung [1680 ?}. 4 In the verses beginning— “I, puer, i, Theam confestim in pocula misce ;

Urget non solitus lumina nostra sopor;

Mens stupet ; obtuse languent in corpore vires ;

Languorem solvet vivida Thea novum.””—

‘ Hnetti Commentarius de rebus ad eum pertinentibus, 304,

> Literary Magazine, vol. il, No. 13 (1757),

towards the introduction of the herb into Europe, and it was not till the Dutch established themselves at Bantam early in the 17th century that these adventurers learned from the Chinese the habit of tea drinking and brought it to Europe.

The earliest mention of tea by an Englishman is probably that contained in a letter from Mr Wickham, an agent of the East India Company, written from Firando in Japan, on the 27th June 1615, to Mr Eaton, another officer of the eompany, resident at Macao, and asking for ‘‘a pot of the best sort of chaw.” How the com- mission was cxecuted docs not appear, but in Mr Eaton’s subsc- quent accounts of expenditure occurs this item—‘‘three silver porringers to drink chaw in.”

It was not till the middle of the century that the English began to use tea, and they also received their supplies from Java till in 1686 they were driven out of the island by the Dutch. At first the price of tea in England ranged from £6 to £10 per ib. In the Mercurius Politicus, No. 485, of September 1658, the following advertisement oceurs:—‘*That excellent and by all

Physitians approved China Drink called by the Chineans Zcha, by other nations Jay, alias Tee, is sold at the Sultaness Head, a cophee-house in Sweetings Rents, by the Royal Exchange, London.” Thomas Garway, the first English tea dealer, and founder of the well-known coffee-house, ‘‘Garraway’s,” in a curious broadsheet, 41 Exact De- scription of the Growth, Quality, and Virtues of the Leaf Tea, issued in 1659 or 1660, writes, ‘in respect of its scarceness and dearness, it hath been only used as a regalia in high treatments and enter- tainments, and presents made thereof to princes and grandees.” In that year he purchased a quantity of the rare and much-prized com- modity, and offered it to the public, in thc leaf, at fixed prices vary – ing from 15s. to 50s. the Ib, according to quality, and also in the infusion, ‘‘made according to the directions of the most knowing merchants and travellers into those eastern countries.” In 1660 an Act of the first parliament of the Restoration imposed a tax on “every gallon of chocolate, sherbet, and tea, made and sold, to be paid by the maker thereof, eightpence” (12 Car. II. c. 28).

Pepys’s often-quoted mention of the fact that on the 25th September 1660, “I did send for a cup of tee, a China drink, of which I never had drunk before,” proves the novelty of tea in England at that date. In 1664 we find that the East India Company presented the king with 2 Ib and 2 oz. of ‘‘thea,” which cost 40s. per ib, and two years afterwards with another parcel con- taining 22% ib, for which the directors paid 50s. per tb. Both parcels appear to have been purchased on the Continent. Not until 1677 is the Company recorded to have taken any steps for the importa- tion of tea. The order then given to their agents was for ‘teas of the best kind to the amount of 100 dollars.” But their instruc- tions were considerably exceeded, for the quantity imported in 1678 was 4713 ib, a quantity which seems to have glutted the market for several years. The annals of the Company record that, in February 1684, the directors wrote thus to Madras :-—“In regard thea is grown to be a commodity here, and we have oceasion to make presents therein to our great friends at court, we would have you to send us yearly five or six canisters of the very best and freshest thea.” Until the Revolution no duty was laid on tea other than that levied on the infusion as sold in the coffec-houses, By 1 William and Mary c. 6, a duty of 5s. per tb and 5 per cent. on the value was imposed. For several years the quantities im- ported

were very small, and consisted exclusively of the finer sorts. The first direct purchasc in China was made at Amoy, the teas

previously obtained by the Company’s factors having been purchased in Madras and Surat, whither it was brought by Chinese junks after the expulsion of the British from Java. During the closing years of the century the amount brought over seems to have been, on the average, about 20,000 tb a year. The instructions of 1700 directed the supercargoes to send home 300 tubs of the finer green teas and 80 tubs of bohea. In 1708 orders were given for “*75,000 Ib. Singlo (green), 10,000 tb imperial, and 20,000 Ib bohea.” The average price of tea at this period was 16s. per fb. During the 100 years from 1710 to 1810 the aggregate sale of tea by the East India Company amounted to 750,219,016 ib, worth £129, 804,595, of which 116,470,675 lb was re-exported, The duties during that century (excepting a period of eleven years, 1784-95, when they were only 12} per cent.) were excessive, amounting to about 200 per cent. on the value of common teas. The results of so enormous a tax were the creation of a gigantic smuggling trade, extensive adulteration of imported teas, and much fabrication of counterfeit tea within the country. Probably the duty-paid tea did not represent more than half what was consumed under the name of tea. The following table exhibits the principal facts con- nected with the trade during the period of the Company’s monopoly, which terminated on the 22d of April 1884, when the trade was thrown open to all, the prices quoted being those of good qualities

in the Company’s warehouse or in bond :—

i

THA

Home Con- Average Price per ib. Rates of Duty. suniption. tb.

1728 | [82/6 (duty included)]..... 4/ per tb, and £13, 18/7} %..... 1,493,626 TOW) cae w Aen 1/ per tb, and £43, 18/7} %..... 3,860,976 1782 | 5/ congou; 9/10 hyson….| 1/14 per Ib, and £55, 15/10 %....,| 6,202,257 1783

ie, a) od ce eee 4,741,522 1784 | 4/10 congou; 8/3 hyson,..| £12, 10/ per cent…....ccreeseveeeee 10,150,700 1785 | 4/3 congou; 6/9 hyson…. sae 14,800,932 W786 14/6 congou: 7/1 bysom…| —=«-—>sineiaie 15,851,747 1795 | 3/9 congou; 6/4 hyson….| £20 Per CONE. ..crssieresnsvravernesaense 21,342,845 1801 | 8/5 congou; 5/6 hyson….| £50 per cent,, £20 under 2/6….| 23,730,150 1821 | 3/ congou; 5/4 hyson…..| £100 and £96 per cent…....0. | 26,754,537 1833 | 2/6} congou; 4/2 hyson…) naan 31,829,620

The progressive increase in the consumption of tea in the United Kingdom during 50 years from 1836 till 1886 is instructively shown in the accompanying diagram constructed by Messrs J. C, Sillar and Co., of London. The dotted line represents the average monthly consumption in each year; the fluctuations in price of good sound congou are traced by the black line; and the years in which reduced customs duty came into operation are indicated along the base, From 1860 onwards the amount of Indian tea entered for home eonsumption is shown in monthly average by a black column. This column brings out the remarkable fact that the Indian tea consuined in the United Kingdom in a year now exceeds the total

BERR

|_| | Be ce ae |_|

hal ta)

Cee

% ae Deus Piste creel ams

i

z om i

EAC PZT Poco

consumption of all kinds in 1860, and is more than double the whole quantity used fifty years ago.

The following table shows the growth of the British tea trade for five years ending 1885 :—

Total Imports,

Home Con- sumption,

160,225,911 165,069,339 170,828,431 175,090,875 182,443,215

Hong Kong.

India.

45,484,130 53,576,690 59,252,485 63,208, 309 63,794,025

China.

151,749,592 142,706,457 145,249,136 134,297,091 181,234,354

Ceylon.

171,676 507,081 2,005,510 2,210,983 4,242,944

10,445,758 10,820,915 10,863,695

9,411,477

209,801,622 210,663,133 222,262,431 218,877,759 212,148,820

8,353,829

The consumption of tea in the United Kingdom per head was in 1840 1:22 tb, which increased in 1850 to 1°86 Ib; in 1860 it reached 2°67 Ib, in 1870 3°81 Ib, in 1880 4:06 Tb, and now (1887) it is about 5 tb.

Next to the United Kingdom, the greatest tea-importing nation is the United States. Not- withstanding that tea has | Year ending

Tb entered for

from 1873 been duty free | 30th June. Consumption. Per Head. (duty 25 cents per fb in 1870

17°72 in 1871, and 15 in| 1870 | 40,812,189 | 1-06 1872), the habit of tea} 1871 46,972,788 1°19 drinking does not grow in| 1872 34,224,494 0°84 Ameriea as it is fonnd to 1873 106,423,570 2°55 do in the British Isles, as is 1875 64,708,079 1°47 shown by the aceompanying 1880 72,159,266 1°44 table. Of the 72,104,956 1b| 1881 81,949,796 | 1°59 of tea imported into the 1882 79,080,854 1°50 United States in the year 1883 70,771, 225 1:31 ended June 1885, 35,895,835 | 1884 65,774,234 1°18 tb was Chinese, 32,156,032 1885 69,820,172 1:22

Gane fom Jam, dol ———————— eee 3,540,148 Tb came from England. Nearly 6,000,000 Ib was re- exported, principally to Canada,

Ce ebel a] WMS eTReee TF L TUM TAA TT TA Lt | re a ba fT 7 BO ee hi

Bene N || Lt IT Tae Al ithe

Next to the English, the Dutch are the greatest consumers of tea outside of China; and the only other considerable tca-using nation is Russia. The following table gives the amount of tea imported in the year 1884 by the principal tca-drinking countries :—

TRATES aR oj liccres eee se 8 35,600,000 th = 48 Ib per head. Holland …... cece 3,900,000 ,, = “91 . Deminark,.....0%. auc 820,000 ,, = ‘04 iy New South Wales…. 8,487,981 ,, = 9°15 a Victoria. .....0.-c000 11,524,205 ,, = 11:99 _ South Australia…... 2,229,993 ,, = 7:00 55 Queensland…..... DTT 27 5 = re a, Cape of Good Hope… 1,295,042 ,, = 5:00 6

By this table the Australian colonists come out as the mosi inveterate tea-drinkers in the world. The quantity received by Holland in 1884 was 2,250,000 tb less than the imports of 1883, but the average of recent times has been 4,500,000 ib.

The quantity consumed in China has been estimated as high as 2000 millions of pounds annually, being at the rate of a little more than 5 tb per

head of the population ; and, considering the tea- drinking habits of the people, the estimate is by no means extrava- gant. In this light it may be safe to affirm that the amount of tea used yearly throughout the world reaches the gigantie total of 2500 millions of pounds.

Bibliography.—The literature of tea is very copious but much scattered. The following works may be named:—Bontekoe, Tractat van het excellenste Kruyd Thee, The Hague, 1679; Sylvestre Dufour, Traités Nouveaux et Curieux du Cafe, du Thé, et du Chocolat, 2d ed., Lyons, 1688 (translation of 1st edition by John Chamberlayne, London, 1685; translations also in Spanish and Latin); J. G. Houssaye, Monographie du Thé, Paris, 1843; Robert Fortune, Three Years Wanderings in China, London, 1847; Id., A Journey to the Tea Countries of China, London, 1852; S. Ball, Tea Cultivation in China, London, 1848; J. J.L. L. Jacobson, Handboek voor de Kultuur en Fabrikatie van Thee, 3 vols., 1843; 8. A. Schwarzkopf, Die narkotischen Genussmittel—i. Der Thee, Halle, 1881; Licut,-Col. E, Money, Cultivation and Manufacture of Tea, 34 ed., London, 1878; F. T. R. Deas, Young Tea Planter’s Companion, London, 1886. See also parliamentary papers and official publications of Indian Government ; Jour. Roy. Astatic Soc.; Jour, Agrt. and Hortt, Soc. of India; Soc. of Arts Journ., &e, (J. PA.)

T.4 2

TEAK! may justly be called the most valuable of all known timbers. For use in tropical countries it has no equal, and for certain purposes it is preferable to other woods in temperate climates also. Its price is higher than that of any other timber, except mahogany.” Great efforts have been made to find substitutes, but no timber has been brought to market in sufficient quantities combining the many valuable qualities which teak possesses.

The first good figure and description of the tree was given by Rheede.? The younger Linnzus called it 7’ectona grandis. It is a large deciduous tree, of the natural order Verbenacex, with a tall straight stem, a spreadiug crown, the branchlets four-sided, with large quadrangular pith. Tt isa native of the two Indian peninsulas, and is also

Teak (Tectona grandis).

found in the Philippine Islands, Java, and other islands of the Malay Archipelago. In India proper its northern limit is 24° 40’ on the west side of the Aravalli Hills, and in the centre near Jhansi, in 25° 30’ N. lat. In Burmah it extends to the Mogoung district, in lat. 25° 10’. In Bengal or Assam it is not indigenous, but plantations have been formed in Assam as far as the 27th parallel. In the Punjab it is grown in gardens to the 32d.

Teak requires a tropical climate, and the most important forests are found in the moister districts of India, where during the summer months heavy rains are brought by the south-west monsoon, the winter months being rainless. In the interior of the Indian peninsula, where the mean annual rainfall is less than 30 inches, no teak is found, and it thrives best with a mean annual fall of more than 50

1 The Sanskrit name of teak is saka, and it is certain that in India teak has been known and used largely for considerably more than 2000 years. In Persia teak was used nearly 2000 years ago, and the town of Siraf on the Persian Gulf was entirely built of it. Saj is the name in Arabic and Persian; and in Hindi, Mahratti, and the other modern languages derived from Sanskrit the tree is called sag, sagwan. In the

_Dravidian languages the name is ¢eka, and the Portuguese, adopting this, called it teke, teca, whence the English name.

? The rate in the London market since 1860 has fluctuated between £10 and £15 per load of 50 cubic feet.

3 Hortus Malabaricus, vol. iv. tab. 27, 1683.

inches. The mean annual temperature which suits it best lies between 75° and 81° Fahr. Near the coast the tree is absent, and the most valuable forests are on low hills up to 3000 feet. It grows on a great variety of soils, but there is one indispensable condition—perfect drainage or a dry subsoil. On level ground, with deep alluvial soil, teak does not often form regularly shaped stems, probably because the subsoil drainage is imperfect.

During the dry season the tree is leafless; in hot localities the leaves fall in January, but in moist places the treeremains green till March. At the end of the dry season, when the first monsoon rains fall, the fresh foliage comes out. The leaves, which stand opposite, are from 1 to 2 feet in length and from 6 to 12 inches in breadth. On coppice shoots the leaves are much larger, and not rarely from 2 to 3 feet long. In shape they somewhat resemble those of the tobacco plant, but their substance is hard and the surface rough. The small white flowers are very numerous, on large erect cross-branched panicles, which terminate the branches. They appear during the rains, generally in July and August, and the seed ripens in January and February. On the east side of the Indian peninsula, the teak flowers during the rains in October and November. In Java the forests are leafless in September, while during March and April, after the rains have com- menced, they are clothed with foliage and the flowers open. During the rainy season the tree is readily recognized at a considerable distance by the whitish flower panicles, which overtop the green foliage, and during the dry season the feathery seed-bearing panicles distinguish it from all other trees. The small oily seeds are enclosed in a hard bony 1-4 celled nut, which is surrounded by a thick covering, consisting of a dense felt of matted hairs. The fruit is enclosed by the enlarged membranous calyx, in appearance like an irregularly plaited or crumpled bladder. The tree seeds freely every year, but its spread by means of self- sown seed is impeded by the forest fires of the dry season, which in India generally occur in March and April, after the seeds have ripened and have partly fallen. Of the seeds which escape, numbers are washed down the hills by the first heavy rains of the monsoon. These collect in the valleys, and it is here that groups of seedlings and young trees are frequently found. A portion of the seed remains on the tree; this falls gradually after the rains have commenced, and thus escapes the fires of the hot season. The germination of the seed is slow and uncer- tain; a large amount of moisture is needed to saturate the spongy covering ; many seeds do not germinate until the second or third year, and many do not come up at all.

The bark of the stem is about half an inch thick, grey or brownish grey, the sapwood white; the heartwood of the green tree has a pleasant and strong aromatic fragrance and a beautiful golden-yellow colour, which on seasoning soon darkens into brown, mottled with darker streaks. The timber

retains its aromatic fragrance to a great age. On a transverse section the wood is marked by large pores, which are more numerous and larger in the spring wood, or the inner belt of each annual ring, while they are less numerous and smaller in the autumn wood or outer belt. In this manner the growth of each successive year is marked in the wood, and the age of a tree may be determined by counting the annual rings.

The principal value of teak timber for use in warm countries is its extraordinary durability. In India and in Burmah beams of the wood in good preservation are often found in buildings several centuries old, and instances are known of teak beams having lasted more than a thousand years.* Being one of the few Indian timbers

4 In one of the oldest buildings among the ruins of the old city of Vijayanagar, on the banks of the Tungabhadra in southern India, the superstructure is supported by planks of teakwood 14 inches thick. These planks were examined in 1881; they were in a good state of

which are really durable, teak has always been used for buildings, particularly for temples, and in India it has been the chief timber employed for shipbuilding. When iron commenced to be exten- sively used for the last-named purpose, it was supposed that the demand for teak would decrease. This, however, has not been the case, for the wood is still very largely used for the backing of iron- clads and for decks of large vessels. It is also used for furniture, for door and window frames, for the construction of railway car- riages, and for many other purposes. White ants eat the sapwood, but rarely attack the heartwood of teak. It is not, however, proof against the borings of the teredo, from whose attacks the teak piles of the wharves in the Rangoon river have to be protected by a sheathing of metal.

Once seasoned, teak timber does not split, crack, shrink, or alter its shape. In these qualities it is superior to most timbers. In contact with iron, neither the iron nor the teak suffers, and in this respect it is far superior to oak. It is not very hard, is easily worked, and takes a beautiful polish. It has great elas- ticity and strength, and is not very heavy. The average weight of perfectly seasoned wood fluctuates between 38 and 46 tb per eubic foot.t Its

weight, therefore, is a little less than that of English oak. Green teak timber, however, is heavier than water, and unless thoroughly seasoned it cannot be floated. In Burmah, therefore, where the rivers are used to float the timber to the sea- ports, a peculiar mode of seasoning teak by girdling has been practised from time immemorial. Girdling consists in making a deep circular cut through bark aud sap into the heartwood, so as completely to sever communication between bark and sapwood above and below the cut. In teak, as in oak and other trees with well-marked heartwood, the circulation of the sap only takes place in the sapwood, and the girdled tree therefore dies after a few days if the operation has been effectually performed. But if even the smallest band of sapwood is left connecting the outer layers of wood above and below the girdle, the tree is not killed, and often recovers completely. The girdled tree is allowed to stand one or two years, and longer if a very large-sized tree. Being exposed to the wind and to the action of the sun, the timber of a girdled tree seasons more rapidly and more completely than that of a tree felled green. The teak produced in the presidencies of Madras and Bombay and in the Central Provinces is as a rule felled green, and even when dry it generally is a little heavier than the timber from Burmah.? For a long time to come, the rivers of Burmah and Siam will continue to afford the most couvenient and most economical routes for the transport of timber. Indeed the forests drained by the Salwin and its feeders are not likely ever to be worked otherwise than on the present plan, under which the logs are floated singly over the rapids and are caught and rafted lower down, at the kyodan or rope station, 70 miles above Maulmain.

As already mentioned, teakwood contains an aromatic oil, which gives it a peculiarly pleasant smell and an oily surface when fresh cut. To this oil may probably with justice be ascribed its great durability. In Burmah oil is extracted from the timber on a smal] scale, for medicinal purposes, by filling an earthen pot, which is placed inverted upon another, with chips of wood, and putting fire round it, upon which the oil runs down into the lower vessel.

According to the colour and texture of the wood, several varieties of teak are distinguished in India, Burmah, and Java; in the timber trade, however, these distinctions are of no importance. Teak as well as other trees, when

standing isolated, forms side branches far down the stem, and the,wood of such trees is more knotty and wavy, and generally heavier and darker-coloured than the timber of trees which have grown close together in a dense forest. Apart from the manner in which the tree had grown up in the forest, soil, elevation, and climate have a great influence upon the grain and the mechanical qualities of teak as of other timbers. Most of the larger logs brought to market have an irregular erack or hollow in the centre, which commences at the butt and often runs up a long way. There is little doubt that this is generally due to the action of the fires, which scoreh and often destroy the bark of young trees, Such external injuries are apt to induce decay in the wood. Moreover, most teak seedlings which come up naturally are cut down to the ground by the fires of the hot season ;

preservation and showed the peculiar structure of teak timber in a very marked manner. They had been in the building for 500 years (Indian Forester, vol. vii. p. 260). Tn the wall of a palace of the Persian kings near Baghdad, which was pillaged in the 7th century, two Americans found in 1811 pieces of Indian teak which were perfectly sound (Ouseley, Travels in Various Countries of the East, vol. ii. p. 280, note 67). In the old eave temples of Salsette and elsewhere in western India pieces of teak have been found in good preservation which must have been more than 2000 years old.

1 At 44°8 tb per cubic foot a load of 50 cubic feet weighs a ton (2240 Tb), hence in the Burmah ports a ton of teak timber is taken as equivalent to a load of 50 cubic feet,

2 Tt has been erroneously stated that the tree in Burmah is tapped for its oil before felling.

some are killed, but many sprout again during the rains, and this is generally repeated year after year, until a sapling is produced strong enough to outlive the fire. Such saplings have a very large pith, which dries up, eausing a hollow in the heart. Or a piece of the old shoot killed by the fire is enclosed by the new wood, and this also is apt to give rise to a hollow.

The leaves of the teak tree contain a red dye, which in Malabar was formerly uscd to dye silk and cotton. Natives of Burmah use the leaves as plates, to wrap up parcels, and for thatching,

In its youth the tree grows with extreme rapidity. ‘Two-year- old seedlings on good soil are 5 to 10 feet high, and instances of more rapid growth are not uncommon. In the plantations which have been made since 1856 in Burmah, the teak has on good soil attained an average height of 60 feet in 15 years, with a girth, breast high, of 19 inches. This is between 16° and 18° N. lat., with a mean annual temperature of 78° F. and a rainfall of 100 inches, In the Burmah plantations it is estimated that the tree will, under favourable circumstances, attain a diameter of 24 inches (girth 72 inches) at the age of 80. Timber of that size is market- able, but the timber of the natural forests which is at present brought to market in Burmah has grown uimch more slowly, the chief reason being the annual forest fires, which harden and im- poverish the soil. In the natural forests of Burmah and India teak timber with a diameter of 24 inches is never less than 100 and often more than 200 years old. In future, the timber growu in plantations and in forests under regular management may be ex- pected to grow much faster ; and there is no ground for anticipating that rapidly grown timber will be less valuable than that of slow growth, which is at present brought to market.

Like the other trees of the dry deciduous forest, teak does not attain any extraordinary size. The trees are not generally more than 100 to 150 feet high, even under the most favourable circumstances, and stems more than 100 feet to the first branch are not often found. Exceptionally tall trees were measured in 1861 in the Gwaythay forest in Pegu, east of the Sitang river, on gneiss. The stems had 106 to 114 fect to the first branch, with a girth, at 6 feet off the ground, from 7 to 16 feet. Larger girths, up to 25 feet, are not uncommon.

The teak tree does not usually form pure forests. It is asso- ciated with bamboos and a great variety of other trees, which have little market value, and, as a rule, thrives best in such company, Hence in the plantations established in Burmah, the object has been to raise forests of teak mixed with bamboos and other trees.

Most of the teak timber produced is consumed in India, The produce of the magnificent forests of Travancore, Cochin, the Madras presideney, Coorg, Mysore, Bombay, Berar, and the Central Provinces is all so consumed. Formerly there was a considerable export from the ports of the western coast, —Malabar, Kanara, Surat, and Broach,—but the country at present requires all the teak which its forests can produce; indeed the demand is in excess of the supply, and large quantities are imported from Burmah to Calcutta, Madras, Bombay, aud other Indian ports. Small quantities are still exported from the ports of the western coast to Arabia and the coast of Africa. The chief export is from Burmah, principally from Rangoon and Maulmain. Of the other teak-producing countries, Java exports a little ; there have also been exports from Saigon; and since 1882 Bankok has sent considerable quantities to Europe. But the Burmah coast is the chief source of supply at present. Rangoon has for a very long time been an important place for shipbuilding, teak being the chicf timber used: between 1786 and 1825 111 European vessels were built at Rangoon, aggregating 35,000 tons. At the same time timber was exported, and, when the place was taken by the British in 1852, teak was the chief article of export. Maulmain became British territory at the close of the first Burmese war in 1826. At that time the place was a large fishing village, and it was mainly through the export of teak timber and the shipbuilding trade that it attained its present importance. From 1829 to 1841 upwards of 50,000 loads of teak timber were exported, and, in addition, 68 vessels were built during that period, aggregating 15,680 tons, and estimated to have required for their construction 24,000 loads of teak timber. The forests from which Maulmain first derived its supplies are situated on the Attaran river, a feeder of the Salwin. In 1836, however, timber began to come down from more distant forests, and in 1841 one-fourth only of the supply was brought from the Attaran forests.

The increase in the export of timber from the Burmah ports was slow at first, but has gone on rapidly since Rangoon became a British port. Since that time the timber brought to the Burmah ports has come from the following sources:—(1) from the forests in the British coast provinces, Pegu and Tenasserim ; (2) from the forests in the former kingdom of Burmah, floated to Rangoon down the Sitang and Irrawaddy rivers ; (3) from the forests in the Shan states formerly tributary to Burmah, from the

Karenni country, and from Siam, which is all floated to Maulmain by the Salwin viver. Since 1856 the increase of the supply derived from these three sources has been large, as will be apparent from the following

averages for the eight years 1856-57 to 1863-64 and for the two years 1883-84 and 1884-85 :—

1856-7 to | 1883-4,

1863-4. 1884-5,

Loads Loads.

From the British coast provinces, Pegu and Tenasserim..| 22,675 44,228 From Burmah by Sitang and Irrawaddy rivers…....___.- 6,890 66,663 From Shan states, Karenni, and Siam, by Salwin river….] 55,491 163,751 PROTA IMEUISU Cotrteirsacscecescreccescrerdecrrsetseeccersecesecss 85,056 274,642

JSS MIAE ENE lon conn goqnbiog nc niconned ne cunpP ARP SHoAe cio t 000cn 76,763 | 153,192

Local consumption in Rangoon and Maulmain…. 8,293 121,450

Of the quantities exported, between 38,000 and 65,000 loads ! have gone beyond India during this period, the balance having been sent to Calcutta, Bombay, and other Indian ports. The quantities here stated do not include the timber consumed in Upper Burmah, nor that brought from the forests drained by the Menam and Mekhong rivers on the east side of the Indo-Chinese Peninsula, nor the teak produced in Java and the other islands of the Malay Archipelago, and in the extensive forests of the western peninsula of India. No data are yet available for a precise estimate ; but the total amount yielded by these forests, and consumed locally or exported, appears to be not less than 500,000 loads or tonsa year. In British India a large portion of the teak-producing tracts have since 1856 been placed under conservancy managenient, and similar measures will doubtless be

extended to the forests in Upper Burmah, now annexed to the British empire, as well as to the forests of the feudatory native states. In British India, the area of state forests demarcated in order to be permanently conserved? was in 1885 (in round figures) 33,000 square miles, and the teak-producing tracts included in this area may be estimated to cover about 12,000 square miles, or 7,680,000 acres. Large additions will be made to this area, especially in Upper Burmah. Of teak plantations, 12,000 acres have been formed in Burmah, 563 acres in Coorg, 34386 at Nilambur in Malabar, and about 2000 acres in other districts. There are good grounds for estimating the future yield of plantations at the rate of 50 cubic feet (one ton) per acre annually, The natural forests will, in their present impoverished condition, not furnish more than one cubic foot per aere annually, but, as protection against fire is gradually extend- ing, the proportion of teak is everywhere being increased by cultural operations in the forests, and the effect of these measures will eventually manifest itself by a considerable increase in the yield. In their present condition, the natural forests demarcated in India up to 1887 may be expected to yield 150,000 tons a year, while the produce of the plantations will eventually add 18,000 tons more. The teak forests in Java were surveyed in 1871, and their area was found to be 2280 square niiles, while the plantations in that island in 1880 amounted to 24,710 acres. These figures will serve to show that, if the system commenced in India and Java is maintained, there is no reason to apprehend a diminution of the teak supply. (D. BR.)

TEAL (Old English TELz), a word of uncertain origin, but doubtless cognate with the Dutch Zaling (formerly Talingh and Telingh), and this apparently with the Scandi- navian Atteling-And (Briinnich, Ornithol. Borealis, p. 18) and Atling, which it seems impossible not to connect with the Scottish Attedle or Atteal, to be found in many old records, though this last word (however it be spelt) is generally used in conjunction with Teal, as if to mean a different kind of bird; and commentators have shewn a marvellous ineptitude in surmising what that bird was.

The Teal is the Anas crecea of Linneus, and the smallest of the European Anatida, as well as one of the most abundant and highly esteemed for the table. It breeds in many parts of the British Islands, making its nest in places very like those chosen by the Wild Duck, A. boscas; but there is no

doubt that by far the greater number of those that are taken in decoys, or are shot, during the autumn and winter are of foreign origin. While the female pre- sents the usual inconspicuous mottled plumage of the same sex in most species of Anatinz, the male is one of the handsomest of his kind. His deep chestnut head and throat are diversified on either side by a line of buff, which, springing from the gape, runs upward to the eye, in front of which it forms a fork, one prong passing backward above and the other below, enclosing a dark glossy-green patch, and both losing themselves in the elongated feathers of the

1 Of the teak exported to foreign countries from India in 1883-84, 27,356 tons went to Great Britain, 8594 tons to Egypt, 2056 tons to Ceylon, 1984 tons to Japan, and 1823 tons to the Cape of Good Hope. The total quantity exported was 46,471 tons.

- Not including 16,000 square miles of second class reserves in the ‘ ‘ Po . was needed in consequence of the altered conditions of

Central Provinces.

hind-head and nape. The back and sides of the body appear to be grey, an effect produced by delicate transverse pencillings of black on a dull white ground. The outer lanceolate scapulars have one-half of their webs pure white, forming a conspicuous stripe along the side of the back. The breast is of a pale salmon or peach-blossom colour, each feather in front bearing a roundish dark spot, but these spots lessen in number and size lower down, and the warm tint passes into white on the belly. The tail-coverts above and below are velvety black, but those at the side are pale orange.

The Teal inhabits almost the whole of Europe and Asia,—from Iceland to Japan,—in winter visiting Northcrn Africa and India. It occasionally occurs on the western shores of the Atlantic; but its place in North America is taken by its representative, 4. carolinensis, the male of which is easily to be recognized by the absence of the upper buif line on the side of the head and of the white scapular stripe, while he presents a whitish crescentic bar on the sides of the lower neck just in front of the wings.

Species more or less allied to these two are found in most other parts of the world, and among such species are some (for instance, the A. gibberifrons of the Australian Region and the A. eatoni of Kerguelen Island) in which the male wears almost the same inconspicuous plumage as the female. But the determination of the birds which should be technically considered ‘ Teals,” and belong to the subgenus Wettiwm (generally misspelt Vettion), as distinguished from other groups of Anating, is a task not yet successfully attempted, and much confusion has been caused by associating with them such species as the GARGANEY (vol. x. p. 80) and its allies of the group Quer- quedula. Others again have not yet been discriminated from the WicEons (g.v.), the Pintail-Ducks, Dajila, or even from the typical form of Anas (cf. Ducx, vol. vii. p. 505), into each of which subgenera the Teals, Vettium, seem to pass without any great break. In ordinary talk “Teal” seems to stand for any Duck-like bird of small size, and in that sense the word is often applied to the members of the genus JVettopus, though systematists will have it that they are properly Geese. In the same loose sense the word is often applied to the two most beautiful of the Family Anatide, belonging to the genus Mz (commonly misspelt Acx)—the Carolina Duck of North America, 4. sponsa (not to be confounded with the above- named Anas carolinensis or Nettium carolinense), and the Mandarin-Duck of China, &. galericulata. Hardly less showy than these are the two species of the subgenus Hunetta,—the Faleated Duck, £. falcata, and the Baikal Teal, 2. formosa,—both from eastern Asia, but occasionally appearing in Europe. Some British authors have referred to the latter of these well-marked species certain Ducks that from time to time occur, but they are doubtless hybrids, though the secret of their parentage may be unknown ; and in this way a so-called Bimaculated Duck, Anas bimaculata, was for many years erroneously admitted as a good species to the British list, but of late this has been properly discarded. (A. N.)

TECHNICAL EDUCATION. The special education, the object of which is to train persons in the arts and sciences that underlie the practice of some trade or pro- fession, is technical education. Schools in which this training is provided are known as technical schools. In its widest sense, technical education embraces all kinds of instruction that have direct reference to the career a person is following or preparing to follow; but it is usual and convenient to restrict the term to the special training which helps to qualify

a person to engage in some branch of productive industry. This education may consist of the explanation of the processes concerned in production, or of instruction in art or science in its relation to in- dustry, but it may also include the acquisition of the manual skill which production necessitates. The term technical, as applied to education, arose from the necessity of finding a word to indicate the special training which

production during the present century. Whilst the changed conditions of production, consequent mainly on the appli- cation of steam power to machinery, demanded a special training for those who were to be engaged in produc- tive industry, the prevalent system of education was not adapted to the requirements of these persons, and schools were wanted in which the necessary instruction could be obtained. Other circumstances resulting mainly from the application of steam power to machinery have rendered technical education necessary. Production on a large scale led to a great extension of the principle of the division of labour, in consequence of which it was found economical to keep a man constantly engaged at the same kind of work, since the more he practised it the quicker and more skilful he became. Thus employed, the workman learned little or nothing of the process of the manufacture at which he assisted, or of other departments of the work than the particular one in which he was engaged, and his only opportunity of acquiring such knowledge was out- side the workshop or factory in a technical school. The economy effected by the division of labour led to the extension of the principle to other industries than those in which machinery is largely employed. There are many trades in which manual skill is as necessary now as ever, but even in these the methods of instruction prevailing under the system of apprenticeship are now almost obsolete.

In many industries, including trades in which machinery is not as yet extensively employed, production on a large scale has increased the demand for unskilled labour, numbers of hands being required to prepare the work to be finished by a few artisans. Rapidity of execution is attained by keeping a workman at the same work, which after a time he succeeds in

mechanically perform- ing, and continues to do until some machine is invented to take his place. In most trades, as formerly practised, the master employed a few apprentices who assisted him in his work, and who learnt from him to understand the details of their craft, so that, when the term of their appren- ticeship was over, they were competent to practise as journeymen. But now the master has neither time nor opportunity to instruct young lads, and the old relation of master and apprentice is changed into that of capitalist and workman. In consequence of these altered relations between employer and employed, there is an acknowledged want of properly trained workmen in a number of trades in which skilful hand work is still needed; and in these trades a demand has arisen for technical schools, or some other substitute for apprenticeship, as a means of suit- ably training workmen and foremen. The ever-increas- ing competition in production has led to the employment, in many trades, of children to do work of a mechanical kind requiring little skill; but, whilst thus employed, these young people have little opportunity of learning those parts of their trade in which skill and special knowledge are needed ; and when they are grown up, and seek higher wages, they are dismissed to make room for other children. Numbers of young men are thus thrown upon the labour market, competent to do nothing more than children's work, and to earn children's wages, and knowing no trade to which they can apply their hands. To remedy this, by creating some substitute for the old apprenticeship, is one of the objects of a system of technical education,

A complete system of technical education should provide necessary instruction for the different classes of persons engaged in productive industry. It is usual to divide these persons into three classes :—(1) workmen or journey- men ; (2) foremen or overseers ; (3) managers or masters.

The industries in which they are employed may be grouped under four heads :—(1) those involving the use of extensive machinery, such as iron and steel manufacture,

machine making, the textile industries, and some of the

chemical trades ; (2) those which mainly require the uge

of hand tools, as cabinet-making, brick-work, plumbing, and tailoring ; (3) those depending on artistic skill, as wood

and stone carving, metal-chasing, decorative work, and

industrial designing generally ; (4) agriculture in all its

branches. These industries will be referred to as manu- factures, handicrafts, art industries, and agriculture. The foregoing classification comprises groups which necessarily, to some extent, overlap one another. Every factory con- tains a carpenter's and smith's shop, and handicraftsmen — of group (2) are required in every manufacturing concern, Whilst the industries in which hand labour is exclusively employed are becoming fewer and fewer, there are many trades which, owing to the frequent invention of labour saving appliances, are passing gradually from the class of handicrafts to that of manufactures. In these trades, of which watch and clock making and boot and shoe making may be taken as examples, there is still a demand for goods largely if not entirely produced by hand work. In such trades, owing to the absence of facilities for instruction in the ordinary shops, there is a want of skilled hand labour which there is an increasing difficulty in satisfying, and to supply this want technical schools of different kinds have been established. Then, again, there are many branches of manufacturing industry which greatly depend for their success upon the designer's art, and it is necessary that the industrial designer should possess a knowledge of the pro- cesses of the manufacture in which his designs will be utilized, as well as of the properties and capabilities of the material to which they will be applied. Indeed, it is the possession of this knowledge which mainly distinguishes the industrial designer from the ordinary artist. To determine the best training for such designers is one of the problems of technical education. There are many trades, too, in which the handicraftsman and the designer should be united. This is the case in such industries as wood-engraving, metal-chasing, and silversmith's work, In these and other trades the true artisan is the artist and handicraftsman combined.

In order to reconcile some of the different views which are held as to the objects of technical education, it is necessary to keep in mind the broad distinction, above referred to, between the conditions of production on a large scale, as in those industries in which goods are manu- factured by the use of extensive labour-saving machinery, and in those trades in which hand work is chiefly em- ployed. Much of the diversity of opinion regarding the objects of technical education is due to the difference of standpoint from which the problem is regarded. The volume of the trade and commerce of Britain depends mainly on the progress of its manufacturing industries. It is these which chiefly affect the exports and imports. The aim of manufacturers is to produce cheaper and better goods than can be produced by other manufacturers at home or abroad ; and technical education is valuable to them, in so far as it enables them to do so. But the artisan engaged in hand industries looks to technical education for the means by which he may acquire a know- ledge of the principles of his trade, which the absence of the system of apprenticeship prevents him from acquiring in the shop. Hence the artisan and the manufacturer approach the consideration of the question from different sides. To the spinner or weaver who almost exclusively employs women to tend his machinery, or to the manu- facturing chemist whose workpeople are little more than labourers employed in carrying to and fro materials, knowing little or nothing of the scientific principles under- lying the complicated processes in which they are engaged, the technical education of the workpeople may seem to

Ta OEN LC AL

be a matter of little moment. What such manufacturers require are the services of a few skilled engineers, artistic designers, or scientific chemists. From the manufacturer’s point of view, therefore, technical instruction is not so much needed for the hands he employs in his work as for the heads that direct it. But in trades in which machi- nery plays a subsidiary part, technical teaching supplies the place of that instruction which, in former times, the master gave to his apprentice, and the workman looks to it to supply him with the knowledge of the principles ‘and practice of his trade, on the acquisition of which his individual success greatly depends. In the former class of industries, technical education is needed mainly for the training of managers ; in the latter, for the training of workmen. Hence has

arisen a double cry,—for the teaching of art and of the higher branches of science, with a view to their application to manufacturing industry, and for the teaching of trades, and of the scientific facts which help to explain the processes and methods con- nected with the practice of these trades. This double cry has led to the establishment of technical universities and of trade schools.

Owing to the conditions under which manufacturing industry is now carried on, it is difficult to select com- petent foremen from the rank and file of the workmen. The ordinary hands gain a very limited and circumscribed acquaintance with the details of the manufacture in which they are engaged, and have little opportunity of acquiring that general knowledge of various departments of work, and of the structure of the machinery in use, which is essential to the foreman or overseer. It is in evening technical classes that this supplementary instruction, which it is the workman's interest to acquire and the master's to encourage, can be obtained. The history of invention shows how frequently important improvements in machinery are made by the workman or minder in charge of it, and adds weight to the arguments already adduced for giving technical instruction to persons of all grades employed in manufacturing industry. To these advantages of technical education, as affecting the work- inen themselves as well as the progress of the industry in which they are engaged, must be added the general im- provement in the character of the work produced, resulting from the superior and better-trained intelligence of those who have had the benefit of such instruction.

In order that the different classes of persons who are to be engaged in productive industry may receive a fitting preparatory training, the programme of elementary and secondary as well as of the higher education must be organized with reference to their special requirements. If the demand for technical instruction is to be fully satisfied, a great part of our existing system of education must be reconstructed, and the training provided in our several schools must be made a more fitting preparation for indus- trial work than it is at present.

Schools in which the course of instruction is not special- ized with a view to any particular industry, but is so arranged as to form a general preparation

for manufac- turing or other trade pursuits, are often spoken of as professional, technical, or trade schools ; but such schools must be distinguished from apprenticeship schools, the object of which is to teach trades. Of the former class of schools there are excellent examples in the different countries of Kurope as well as in the United States, and some few have recently been established in the United Kingdom. Of the latter class the best examples are found in France and Austria. The study of these schools, and of the means of providing fitting education for the different classes of producers, may be simplified by a state- ment of the following propositions <——

1. The ordinary education of all persons who are likely to be engaged in productive industry should be determined by the general requirements of their future work. This proposition affects the curriculum of all schools in which different classes of producers are to be trained, ie., of primary, secondary, and higher schools, and involves the consideration of the extent to which, in such schools, modern languages, science, drawing, and manual instruc- tion should take the place of literary and classical studies.

2. Special schools or classes should be established (a) for instruction in art, and in those sciences which serve to explain the processes of productive industry, including agriculture, manufactures, and engineering, as well as in the application of art and science to these departments of industry; (0) for the teaching of, and in certain cases for practice in, various handicrafts or trades.

3. The special schools should be adapted to the require- ments of the different grades of workers, and to the different kinds of work in which they are or are likely to be engaged.

A survey of the technical schools in different countries shows how these different requirements are met. Owing to the complexity of the problem, a complete or an ideal system of technical education is nowhere to be found. Schools have been established to meet local and present wants, and the greatest variety exists in the attempts that have been made to establish schools in accordance with the foregoing propositions.

1. Workmen.—Many attempts have been made to provide a substitute for apprenticeship, but hitherto with no great success. Two classes of workpeople have to be considered—(1) those engaged in manufacturing industries, and (2) those engaged in handicraft industries. The education of all classes of workpeople begins in the publie elementary schools ; and, in view of the future occupa- tion of the ehildren, it may be taken for granted that primary instruetion should be practical, and should include drawing and elementary science, with some amount of manual training for boys, and with needlework, cookery, and domestic economy for girls. In nearly every country of Europe, and in the United States, primary instruction includes drawing, in addition to reading, writing, and reekoning. In England this is not yet the case, drawing being taught in very few schools outside of the jurisdiction of the London school board. In France, Belgium, Holland, and Sweden handicraft instruction is generally included in the cur- riculum of elementary schools. Rudimentary seience is also taught in nearly all the primary schools of Europe. Modelling is taught both to boys and girls in many Continental schools; and in Sweden ‘‘slojd,” or elementary woodwork, in which simple and useful articles are constructed with the fewest possible tools, is taught with considerable success to children of both sexes.

In Germany and Switzerland there exists an excellent system of evening continuation schools, known as Fortbildungs- or Ergdnez- ungs-Schulen, in which the instruction of the children who leave school before fourteen, and of those who leave at that age, is con- tinued. In most of these schools drawing is taught with special reference to local industries. Im England an attempt is being made to attract children to evening schools by means of recreative elasses. These classes are intended to eontinue the child’s general education, and to supplement it by some amount of practical teaching between the time that he leaves the elementary school and is prepared to take advantage of evening technical instruetion. The training of most workpeople, and of nearly all those who are engaged in manufacturing industry, consists of—(1) primary teach- ing in elementary schools ; (2) practice in the factory or shop ; (3) evening technical instruction.

In all the principal towns throughout Europe evening elasses have been established for teaching drawing, painting, and design- ing, and the

elements of scienee in their application to special industries. On the Continent these classes are mainly supported by the municipalities, by the chambers of eommerce, by industrial or trade societies, by county boards, and in some cases by the fees of the pupils. They reeeive little or no support from the state. They are well attended by workpeople of all grades, who are en- eouraged by their employers to profit by these opportunities of instruction. In England evening technical instruction is more systematically organized than in any other country. It is under the direction of the committee of the council of education known as the Science and Art Department, aud of the City and Guilds of London Institute for the advancement of technical education, an institute founded and supported by the corporation and by a large

number of the livery companies of London, The department encourages instruction in pure science and in art; the institute in the application of science, and to some extent of art also, to different trades.

Both the department and the institute make grants on behalf of properly registered teachers on the results of the examination of their pupils. The directory of the department contains a detailed syllabus of the twenty-five different subjects on the teaching of which grants are paid, and in the programme of the institute are found syllabuses of instruction in the technology of fifty different trade subjects. In the evening classes organized by the depart- ment, as well as in those in connexion with the institute, the workman or foreman engaged in any manufacturing industry has the opportunity, by payment of a very small fee, of studying art in all its branches, science theoretically and practically, and the technology of any particular industry. Provided his early education enables him to take advantage of this instruction, no better system has been suggested of enabling workmen, whilst earning wages at an early aye, to acquire manual skill by continuous practice, and at the same time to gaina knowledge of the principles of science connected with their work and explanatory of the pro- cesses of the manufacture in which they are engaged,

For those engaged in handicraft trades this evening instruction is equally valuable, and in many parts of Europe there exist evening trade schools in

which the workman is able to supplement the “ sectional” practice he acquires in the shop by more general practice in other branches of his trade. In Vienna, for example, and in other parts of Austria, there are found practical evening classes for carpenters, turners, joiners, metal-workers, and others ; and similar classes, some of which are subsidized by the City and Guilds Institute, have recently been established in England. Throughout Europe schools for weaving, with practical work at the loom and pattern designing, have existed for many years.

To provide a training more like the old system of apprenticeship, schools have been established in many parts of Europe which are known as professional, trade, or apprenticeship schools (écoles pro- Jessionelles, écoles des apprentis, Fachschulen). The object is to

train workmen ; and the pupils, after completing their course of

instruction in such a school, are supposed to have learnt a trade. The school is the substitute for the shop. In such a school the pupils have the advantage of being taught their trade systemati- cally and leisurely, and production is made subsidiary to instruc- tion. Under such an artificial system of production, the pupil is

less likely to acquire excellence of workmanship and smartness of

habit than in the mercantile shop, under the strain of severe com- petition. Moreover, the cost of maintenance of these schools renders it impossible to look to them as a general substitute for apprenticeship. By sending into the labour market, however, a few highly-trained workmen, who are absorbed in various works and exert a beneficial influence on other workmen, these schools serve a useful purpose. Schools of this kind have been tried with more or less success in different countries. In Paris there is the well-known Ecole Diderot for the training of mechanics, fitters, smiths, &c.; and similar schools have been established in other parts of France. A furniture-trade school of the same category

has recently been opened in Paris, and for many years a society of Christian Brethren have directed a large school in which several

different trades have been taught. In this establishment, situated in the Rue Vaugirard, all the secular and general instruction is given gratuitously by the brothers, and in the several shops attached to the school skilled workinen are employed, who in- struct the pupil apprentices, and utilize their labour. This system combines many of the advantages of shop work and school work, but it depends financially for its success upon the religious spirit which actuates its promoters and supporters. The Artane school, near Dublin, is conducted on somewhat similar principles, but is intended for a lower class of children. In Austria, particu- larly in the rural districts, there are numerous schools for the training of carpenters, joiners, turners, cabinetmakers, workers in stone and marble, in silver and other metals, &. Schools of the same class are found in Germany, Italy, and elsewhere. It is only in certain cases, however, that apprenticeship schools can be said to satisfactorily answer the purpose for which they have been established. Where a new industry, especially in rural districts, has to be created ; where decaying industries need to be revived ; Where machinery is superseding hand work, and, owing to the demands for ordinary hands, there is a dearth of skilled workmen ; where through the effects of competition and other causes the trade is carried on under conditions in which competent workmen cannot be properly trained in the ordinary shop, —in these cases, and in various art industries, an apprenticeship school may prove to be the best means of training workmen, and of advancing particular trades. Generally, an apprenticeship school should be looked upon as a temporary expedient, as a form of relief applied at the birth or during any temporary depression of a particular industry. The proper training school for workmen is the factory or shop.

2. Horemen.—The foreman must be familiar with the various

branches of work he is to overlook, and the training which the workman receives in the factory or shop affords him but scanty opportunities of obtaining this general knowledge. The foreman needs also a generally superior education. How then are foremen to be trained ? The problem is somewhat easier than that of train. ing workmen, because the number required is fewer. The variety of schools in Europe devoted to this purpose

is very great. There are three distinct ways in which foremen are being trained.

(a) The evening technical classes in Britain and on the Continent offer to ambitious workmen an opportunity of acquiring a know. ledge of other departments of the trade than those in which they are engaged, ‘as well as of the scientific principles underlying their work. ‘These classes serve the double purpose of improving the workpeople and of affording a means of discovering those who are best fitted to occupy higher posts.

(6) Special schools have been established for the training of fore- men. ‘There are many trade schools of this kind in which selected boys are received after leaving the elementary school. The best known are those at ChAlons, Aix, Nevers, Angers, and Lille in France. These schools are intended for the training of foremen in engineering trades. They are state institutions, in which practical mechanical work in the shops is supplemented by theoretical instruction. The first of these schools was founded in 1803. The course lasts three years, and the number of students in each school must not exceed three hundred. The students spend from six to seven hours a day in the workshop, and are trained as fitters, founders, smiths, and pattern-makers. As in all such schools, saleable goods are produced, but, as production is subordinated to instruction, the school does not bind itself to deliver work at a given date, and therefore does not compete with any manufacturing establishment. The students on leaving these schools are com- aie at once to undertake the duties of foremen, managers, or

raughtsmen, At Komotau, Steyr, Klagenfurt, Ferlach, and many other places schools have been established on somewhat similar principles. In Germany there are special schools for the training of foremen in the building trade, which are chiefly frequented in the winter, and numerous schools are found in all parts of the Continent for the training of weavers. At Winterthur in Switzer. land a school has been established the main purpose of which is the training of foremen. In Italy there are numerous technical institutes, the object of which is to train young men for inter- mediate posts in industrial works. In the United States the manual training schools, the number of which is rapidly increasing, have somewhat similar objects. In London, the

Finsbury technical college of the City and Guilds of London Institute has a day de- partment, the main purpose of which is the training of youths as foremen, works managers, &c.; but in this school, as well as in those last mentioned, the character of the instruction deviates considerably from that given in French schools, and aims rather at preparing youths to learn, than at teaching them, their trade.

(c) A third method adopted for the training of foremen is by en- couraging selected children of the ordinary elementary schools to continue their education in schools of a higher grade of a technical character. It is thought that, by developing to a higher degree the intelligence and skill of those children who show aptitude for scientific and practical work, they will be able, when they enter the shop, to learn their trade more quickly and more thoroughly, and to acquire that general knowledge of their work, and to exhibit those special aptitudes, which may qualify them for the position of foreman or manager. The education given in these schools, although having direct reference to the future career of the pupil, is disciplinary in character, and consists of the subjects of primary instruction further pursued,—of drawing, modelling, science, mathematics, and manual exercises. The curriculum is varied to some extent according to local requirements, the technology of the staple industries forming in many cases part of the instruction. Such schools, under varied forms, have been established in most Continental countries, some of the best examples of them being found in Paris, Lyous, Rheims, Rouen, and in other towns of France. The want of similar schools in Britain has been frequently pointed out. One of the oldest of these schools is the Ecole Martiniére at Lyons. The school was founded in 1820 by a bequest from Major-General Martin, who had fought against the English under Tippoo Sahib. In this school, in which the education is gratuitous, as in nearly all the higher elementary schools of France, instruction is given in drawing, modelling, chemistry, mechanics, and physics, in the working of wood and iron, and in German and English in addition to the subjects of an ordinary school education. Surveying is also taught to some of the pupils, and the instruction generally is of a very practical character. The students visit fac- tories under the guidance of the masters, and ou their return they write out full descriptions of their visits. The school hours are from seven till eleven in the morning and from one till seven in the afternoon. The boys from this school rapidly obtain places in

the commercial and industrial houses of Lyons, and many of them, after a time, succeed in obtaining high positions. A very similar school, on more modern lines, has been established at Rheims, and

T HK E—

is accommodated in a building especially adapted to the purpose. In this school instruction is directed towards the staple industries of the district, namely, weaving, dyeing, and engineering. There are many other similar schools in France, the object of which is to give the children of artisans and small shopkeepers a higher practi- cal education in order to fit them to occupy the posts of foremen, overseers, and superior clerks in manufacturing and commercial firms. A large number of poor children showing talent are selected from the primary schools and receive scholarships ; and the objection sometimes urged against the establishment of higher elementary schools,—that the better classes only are able to benefit by them—is thus obviated. In Germany the real-schools in which Latin is not taught, known as Ohnelatein Realschulen, have very nearly the same objects as the higher elementary schools of France. ‘The instruction in these German schools is not yet so practical as in the schools of France. Drawing is always well taught, and the schools generally contain good chemical labora- tories, as well as collections of physical apparatus and museums. From the children of these schools the ranks of foremen are largely recruited. They receive no special trade instruction, but the general training is so arranged as to qualify them for higher posts in industrial works. The cost of this higher education seldom exceeds £3 per annum. In Bavaria it is two shillings a month.

In most of these schools, as well as in the chief intermediate com- mercial schools, the exit certificate exempts a lad from two of the three years’ compulsory military service, and this regulation, to which nothing corresponds in England, is an incentive to parents to allow their children to receive higher instruction, which operates very forcibly in largely increasing the number of well-educated youths in Germany. In these opportunities for higher education England is still very deficient, and the complaint is generally heard of the difficulties of obtaining competent foremen.

3. Masters.—The best special schools for the training of future masters, managers, engineers, manufacturers, and industrial chem- ists are in Germany, and are known as technical high schools or polytechnic schools. Schools of a similar character are found in other countries, and in England the facilities for higher technical education have within the last few years greatly improved.

In Germany the polytechnic or technische Hochschule is an

institution of university type in which the education has special reference to industrial purposes. In many respects the teaching coincides with that given in the universities. The chief distinction consists in the arrangement of courses of instruction in the several departments, in the admission of students having a non-classical preliminary training, and in the absence of certain faculties found in the university and the addition of others. It is not correct to say that the polytechnic is a professional school as distin- guished from the university ; for the faculties of law, medicine, and theology give to the university as distinctly a professional character as the faculty of engineering gives to the polytechnic. Nor can it be said that the scicntific shades at the universities are less practical than at the polytechnic. For, whilst workshops for instruction in the use of tools are found in very few of the polytechnic schools, the laboratories, for the practical study of chemistry and physics, are perhaps better fitted and under more eminent professors at some of the German universities than at the polytechnic schools. At the same time, engineers of every descrip- tion, architects, and builders, besides a great number of manufac- turing chemists, find in the polytechnic the scientific and technical training which the lawyer or physician, and in many cases the industrial chemist, seeks in the university. _ Insome of the large cities—in Berlin, Vienna, and Munich, for instance—the university and polytechnic coexist ; and in certain cases, in which a very special training is required to fit a youth for his carcer, the German student, after spending three or four years at a polytechnic school, passes on to another institution, such as a dyeing school, in which his studies are further special- ized with a view to his future work.

_ Taking the technical high school of Munich as a type of other similar institutions, we find the cost of the building and of the various collections it

contains to have amounted to nearly £200,000, and the annual cost of maintenance to be about £20,000. The institution consists of six schools :—(1) the general; (2) the civil engineering ; (3) the building; (4) the mechanical engineering ; (5) the industrial chemical ; and (6) the agricultural. A department for electrical technology is now being built. In other institutions there are architectural, pharmaccutical, and mining schools. The programme of the Munich school gives a list of about 180 different courses of instruction distributed over the scveral departments.

cal instruction is given are concentrated in the capital. There are a large number of provincial colleges where the education is some- what more practical, but where the mathematical and scientific teaching is not carried to so high a point (the Ecole Centrale at Lyons, the Ecole des Mineurs at St Etienne, and the Institut du Nord at Lille, &c.). The Ecole Centrale of Paris, in which the majority of French engineers who are not employed in the Govern- ment service are trained, is a rare instance of an institution for higher technical instruction which is self-supporting and inde- pendent of Government aid.

In Switzerland the federal polytechnic of Zurich is similar to the polytechnic schools of Germany and Austria. Italy has three superior technical institutes,—one at Milan, one at Turin, and one at Naples, in which technical education is given on the same lines as in German polytechnic schools. Holland has an excellent institution at Delft, which was opened in 1864; and in Russia the imperial technical school at Moscow is a high-class engineering school, in which the theoretical studies are supplemented, to a greater extent than in the German schools, by workshop practice.

In some of the German schools the fees charged vary according to the number of lectures and to the number of hours of practical work which the student takes per week. Thus at Munich the entrance fee for each student is 10s., and the lecture fee is 2s. 6d. for each hour’s lecture per week, including the use of materials. At Zurich the cost of a student in a chemical department, including laboratory practice, does not exceed £12 per annum,

and in other departments it does not exceed £4 per annum. At Delft the student pays about £16 per annum for a complete course.

In England there is a growing tendency to associate technical with university education. This is mainly owing to the fact that the colleges which have recently been established to give univer- sity education are poorly endowed, and have found it necessary to attract students by mecting the increasing demand for technical instruction. Most of the provincial colleges may indeed be regarded as technical schools with a literary side. In order that they may provide university education in addition to sound technical in- struction, it is necessary that they should be placed on a sound and satisfactory footing by means of state endowment. Of the more recently erected English colleges, the Owens College at Man- chester is the most important, combining the faculties of a German university with those of a polytechnic school. The Yorkshire College, Leeds, possesses a special school for the teaching of weay- ing and dyeing. Other somewhat similar institutions are found in Birmingham, Newcastle, Sheffield, Nottingham, Dundee, Cardiff, and elsewhere. The university of Edinburgh has a good school of chemistry, physics, and engineering, and the university of Glasgow has been long distinguished for the excellence of its physical laboratories. In University College and King's College, London, the metropolis possesses two institutions each of which may be likened to a university and a polytechnic combined. In the uni- versity of Cambridge there are mechanical workshops in connexion with the chair of engincering. The Royal School of Mines and the normal schools of science and art in South Kensington are the only technical institutions in England supported by state aid. The central institution in London has more in common with the German polytechnic school than any other institution in Britain. This school is designed for the technical teaching of engineers, architects, master builders, and industrial chemists. It was built at a cost of £100,000, and is maintained by an annual grant from the City and Guilds of London Institute of £10,000, in addition to the students' fees,

Such is a brief outline of the means provided for the technical education of masters in different parts of Europe. It will be seen from the foregoing statement that efforts are now being made to bring Britain more nearly on a level with other countries in the provision of those kinds of instruction

which are best adapted to the different classes of producers. But as yct only a beginning has been made, and in England technical students can be counted by hundreds, whilst those of Germany are numbered by thousands.

For further information the reader is referred to the Report of the royal commissioners on technical instruction, published in 1884, (P. M*.)

TEETH. See Mammatia, vol. xv. p. 349; DicEstive OrGANS, vol. vii. p. 232; Ivory; and Dentistry.

TEGEA, one of the chief cities of Arcadia, of which its territory occupied the south-eastern corner, being bounded on the S. by Laconia, on the E. by Cynuria and Argolis, on the N. by the territory of Mantinea, and on the W. by Menalia. Its legendary founder was Tegeates, son of Lycaon. Like many other cities of ancient Greece, Tegea was formed by the union of a population which had previously lived dispersed in villages. The people were divided into four tribes,—the Clareotis, Hippothcetis, Apolloniatis, and Athaneatis. Tegea offered a stubborn

resistance to the encroachments of Lacedzemon, and on more than one occasion defeated its ambitious neighbour. About 560 B.c., however, the Lacedsemonians found the bones of Orestes in Tegea and conveyed them to Sparta ; and henceforward Spartan valour, backed by this powerful fetich, proved too much for the merely carnal weapons of Tegea. At Platea (479 B.c.) 3000 Tegeans fought the good fight of freedom, and were the first to enter the breach which the Athenians had made in the Persian redoubt. Between the Persian and Peloponnesian Wars hostilities again broke out between Tegea and Sparta, in the course of which Tegea was twice defeated. However, in the Peloponnesian War (431-404), and afterwards in the Corinthian War (395-387), Tegea sided with Sparta. But after the battle of Leuctra (371), when the star of Sparta began to decline, Tegea concluded an alliance with the victorious Thebans, and fought on their side against Sparta at the great battle of Mantinea (362). In the Macedonian period Tegea joined the Attolian League, but Cleomenes, king of Sparta, having won it over to his side, the city was besieged and taken by Antigonus Doson, king of Macedonia, the ally of the Achzan League (222). In 218 the

city was retaken, except the acropolis, by the Lacedxmonians under Lycurgus. After the defeat of Machanidas, tyrant of Sparta, by Philopcemen in 207, Tegea passed into the hands of the Achzan League. In the time of Strabo it was the only town of any importance in Arcadia. In the 2d century it was visited by Pausanias, who has left a fairly full description of it (viii. 45-53),

Of its buildings much the most famous was the great temple of Athene Alea, which had often afforded sanctuary to fugitives from Sparta. The old temple was burued down in 394 B.c., and Pausanius speaks of the newer temple as by far the finest and largest in the Peloponnesus (that of Zeus at Olympia, however, occupied nearly double the area). The architect was Scopas; and, as the recent German excavations have proved, the temple was a Doric peripteros, with six columus at each end and fourtcen at each side. Of the columns which Pausanias mentions in addition to the Doric, the Corinthian may have stood in the pronaos and posticum, the [onic in ‘‘the interior of the temple” (for éxrds we should probably read éyrés in Pausanius, viii. 45,5). The ancient image of Athene Alea was carried off by Augustus, and placed at the entrance to his new forum at Rome. The statues of Ascu- lapius and Health, which in Pausanias’s time stood on the two sides of the image of the goddess at Tegea, were by Scopas. On the front pediment of the temple was sculptured the hunt of the Calydonian boar, on the back pediment the combat between Telephus and Achilles. Some fragments of these pedimental sculptures (comprising the head of the boar and two human heads, one helmeted) have been discovered ; and, as they are the only existing sculptures which can be referred with some certainty to the hand of Scopas himself, they are of the highest importance for the history of art. The site of the temple, at the modern village of Piali, was partially excavated under the auspices of the German archeological institute in 1879 and 1882. It appears that the foundations of the temple measured 49°90 metres (nearly 164 feet) by 21°30 (70 feet). As Tegea stood on a plain surrounded by mountains and liable to inundations, its site has been covered by an alluvial soil which has been favourable to the preservation of the ruins, and a thorough excavation might yield important results.

On the excavations, see Mittheilungen des deutschen archdologischen Institutes in Athen, 1879, p, 131 sq., 168 sq.; ibid., 1880, p. 52 sq.; dbid.,

1883, p. 274 sq. On the artistic value of the sculptures, see tbid., 1881, p. 393 sq.; Jour. Hell. Stud., 1886, p. 115 sq.

TEGNER, Esatas (1782-1846), the most celebrated of Swedish writers, was born November 13, 1782, at Kyrkerud in Wermland. His father was a pastor, and his grandparents on both sides were peasants. His father, whose name had been Esaias Lueasson, took the surname of Tegnerus—altered by his fifth son, the poet, to Tegnér —from the hamlet of Tegnaby in Smaland, where he was born. In 1799 Tegnér, hitherto educated in the country, entered the university of Lund, where he graduated in philosophy in 1802, and continued as tutor until 1810, when he was elected Greek lecturer. In 1812 he was named professor, and continued to work as a lecturer in Lund until 1824, when he was made bishop of Wexid. At

Wexioé he remained until his death, twenty-two years later, Tegnér's early poems have little merit. He was com. paratively slow in development. His first great success was a dithyrambic war-song for the army of 1808, which stirred every Swedish heart. In 1811 his patriotic poem Svea won the great prize of the Swedish Academy, and made him famous. In the same year was founded in Stockholm the Gothic League (Gétiska Jérbundet), a sort of club of young and patriotic men of letters, of whom Tegnér quickly became the chief. The club published a magazine, entitled Zduna, in which it printed a great deal of excellent poetry, and ventilated its views, particularly as regards the study of old Icelandic literature and history, Tegner, Geijer, Afzelius, and Nicander became the most famous members of the Gothic League. Of the very numerous poems written by Tegnér in the little room at Lund which is now shown to visitors as the Tegnér museum, the majority are short, and even occasional lyrics. His celebrated Song to the Sun dates from 1817. He completed three poems of a more ambitious character, on which his fame chiefly rests. Of these, two, the romance of Awel and the delicately-chiselled idyl of Matteards. barnen ("The First Communion," 1820), translated by Longfellow, take a secondary place in comparison with Tegnér's masterpiece, of world-wide fame. In 1820 he published in Zduna certain fragments of an epic or cycle of epical pieces, on which he was then working, Frithiofs- saga or the Story of Frithiof. In 1822 he published five

more cantos, and in 1825 the entire poem. Before it was completed it was famous throughout Europe ; the aged Goethe took up his pen to commend to his country- men this “alte, kraftige, gigantisch-barbarische Dichtart,” and desired Amalie von Imhoff to translate it into German. This romantic paraphrase of an ancient saga was composed in twenty-four cantos, all differing in verse form, modelled somewhat, it is only fair to say, on an earlier Danish masterpiece, the Helge of Oehlenschléiger. Frithiofssaga is the best known of all Swedish produc- tions ; it is said to have been translated nineteen times into English, eighteen times into German, and once at least into every European language. It is far from satisfy- ing the demands of nore recent antiquarian research, but it still is allowed to give the freshest existing impression, in imaginative form, of life in early Scandinavia. In later years Tegnér began, but left unfinished, two important epical poems, Gerda and Kronbruden. The period of the publication of Mrithiofssaga (1825) was the critical epoch of his career. It made him one of the most famous poets of Europe; it transferred him from his study in Lund to the bishop’s palace in Wexié ; it marked the first break- down of his health, which had hitherto been excellent ; and it witnessed a singular moral crisis in the inner history of the poet, about which much has been written, but of which little is known. Tegnér was at this time passionately in love with a certain beautiful Euphrosyne Palm, the wife of a town-councillor in Lund, and _ this unfortunate passion, while it inspired much of his finest poetry, turned the poet’s blood to gall. From this time forward the heartlessness of woman is one of Tegnér’s principal themes. It is a remarkable sign of the condi- tion of Sweden at that time that a man not in holy orders, and so little in possession of the religious temperament as Tegnér, should be offered and should accept a bishop’s crozier. He did not hesitate in accepting it: it was a great honour ; he was poor; and he was anxious to get away from Lund. No sooner, however, had he begun to study for his new duties than he began to regret the step he had taken. It was nevertheless too late to go back, and Tegnér made a respectable bishop as long as his health lasted. But he became moody and melancholy ; as early

T HK H—

as 1836 he complained of fiery heats in his brain, and in 1840, during a visit to Stockholm, he suddenly became insane. He was sent to an asylum in

Schleswig, and early in 1841 he was cured, and able to return to Wexié. It was during his convalescence in Schleswig that he wrote Kronbruden. He wrote no more of importance; in 1843 he had a stroke of apoplexy, and on the 2d of November 1846 he died in Wexié. From 1819 he had been a member of the Swedish Academy, where he was succeeded by his biographer and best imitator Béttiger. In prose Tegnér wrote letters, which have been collected, and which are considered the best of their kind in the Swedish language. As a poet he will scarcely be preferred to Bellman or to Runeberg by Swedish verse amateurs, but he still exceeds these and all other writers in popularity.

See Bottiger, Teckning af Tegnérs Lefnad; Georg Brandes, Esaias Tegnér; Thomandcr, Tankar och Liéjen. (E. W. G.)

TEHERAN, or, more properly, TEHRAN (lat. 35° 40’ N., long. 51° 25’ E.), for about a century the recognized capital of Persia, has little to distinguish it, in general out- ward appearance, from other large cities of the country, though in quite recent years Parisian streets or boulevards, and even Western architecture for single houses, in the midst of mud-brick palaces or plain mud hovels, have been incongruously introduced. Formerly a kind of polygon some 4 iniles in circumference—with its mean “shahr panah” or wall, its clumsy and uneven ditch, and its six gates, two facing north, two south, one east, and one west, —Teheran has now been extended to an outer ditch and wall, thrown out on each side beyond the ancient limit. The bazaars are good, though hardly of the first class; the caravanserais deserve honourable mention; and the tele- graph and arsenal are respectable institutions. The streets are for the most part narrow and wretchedly paved. The “ Ark,” or citadel, contains the royal and better description of public buildings, and connecting its encircling wall with the city gates are four principal thoroughfares, of which the parallel avenues from the Nasiriya and Daulat entrances are the more notable. Between these two gates, in a parallelogram extending from one to the other and in-

cluding both, is the gas-lighted Tép Maidan, or “Place _ des Canons,” in the centre of which is a large reservoir. European professors are to be found in the king’s college, where some 250 students, more or less, are taught mathematics, engineering, military tactics, music, telegraphy, painting, together

with the Arabic, English, French, and Russian languages. Among the not very remarkable mosques—to some of which madrasahs, or colleges, are attached—may be specially mentioned the Masjid-i-Shah, or king's mosque, with its handsome enamelled front, and the Masjid-i-Madar-i-Shah, or mosque of the king's mother. Water is freely supplied to the town by means of the underground canals, or kandts, from the near mountain ranges. Public baths abound, but the Europeans use those of the Armenian and not of the Mohammedan community. The British legation stands in a handsome garden of great size, in which are placed the houses of the secretaries, which resemble English villas. In the summer Season the representatives of Western powers and other Europeans move out to the slope of the mountain range north of Teheran,—the British residents to Gulhak, a village about 7 miles from the city. A prominent feature in the landscape at Gulhak and the neighbouring summer quarters, as at Teheran itself, is Demavend, the noblest and most graceful of Persian mountains.

The present population of Teheran may be taken at 160,000 at most. According to a late authority (Bassett, 1887) the European inhabitants are reckoned at about 100 only; the Jews number some 2500; and there are 150 Gabrs or Parsis, a sorry remnant of the old fire-

worshippers. In 1872 there were said to be 1000 Arme- nians, mainly traders and artisans. In 1872 there were but four legations in Teheran—those of England, France, Russia, and Turkey. Since that year representatives have been added from Holland, Austria, Germany, and the United States. The French have summer quarters at Tejrish and the Russians at Zargandah, at no great dis- tance from the English Gulhak.

Morier supposes Teheran to be the Tahors of the Theodosian Tables, and recognizes it also in the account of the journcy of the Castilian ambassadors to Timur. Porter, too, relates that in 1637 the secretary of the Holstein ambassadors mentions Teheran as "one of the towns which enjoy the privilege of maintaining no soldiers." Again, in the 17th century, it was visited by Pietro della Valle and by Sir Thomas Herbert,—the latter spelling it "Tyroan." Most writers affirm that Teheran, though not of recent origin, can barely be held of repute till Agha Muhammad made it his residence in

about 1788, taking to himself the title of shah, as first of the Kajar kings, in 1796. Yet there is evidence that in the previous century it was a royal resort, if nothing more, in Herbert's state- ment that "the Toune is most beautified by a vast garden of the kings, succinct with a great towered mud-wall larger than the circnit of the city." Du Pré (who visited itin 1808) states that it had been pillaged and nearly destroyed by the Afghans,—evidently at their invasion of Persia in 1728. Since Agha Muhammad's time Teheran has been the usual seat of the Kajar dynasty, a circumstance to be attributed to the political advantages of its geographical position.

See, besides the authorities cited, Telegraphand Travel (1874) ; Dr Wills's Land of the Lion and Sun (1883) ; and Mr Bassett's Land of the Imdins (1887).

TEHUANTEPEC, an isthmus in Mexico, comprising the western extremities of the states of Vera Cruz and Oajaca, and limited eastwards by the states of Tabasco and Chiapas, thus lying between 16° and 18° N. lat. and 94° and 95° W. long. Between the Bay of Campeche on the north or Atlantic side and that of Tehuantepec on the south or Pacific side the distance in a bee line is only 125 miles. Here also the Sierra Madre falls rapidly from over 5000 feet in Chiapas to about 730 feet in the ridge skirting the Pacific coast, and leaving the rest of this district some- what level, with a rise from the Atlantic of not more than 60 feet in the mile except at the Chivela Pass, where for 8 miles the gradients are about 116 feet per mile.

This favourable condition of the relief, combined with a relatively healthy climate subject only to dangerous insect pests in summer, has naturally attracted attention to the Tehuantepec isthmus, as offering peculiar advantages for interoceanic communication either by a navigable canal, a railway, or a ship railway. A first conces- sion was made in 1841 by the Mexican Governinent to Don José de Garay, who had the land surveyed with a view toa canal, but who, after the war with the United States, surrendered his rights to Mr P. A. Hargous of New York. The company then organized to give effect to the Garay grant caused a fresh survey for a railway to be made in 1851, under the direction of the late Gencral J. G. Barnard. But nothing came of this or of another railway project in 1857,

when a third survey was executed, under the direction of Col. W. H. Sidell. Then the ‘‘Tehuantepec Railway Company,” formed in 1870 in New York, and reorganized in 1879, obtained a concession from the Mexican Government to construct the ‘‘Tehuantepec Railway”; but, after a few miles were made, the work was suspended, and in 1882 the Government contracted with private individuals for the completion of the line, which was to be 190 miles long, and to run from the mouth of the Goatzacoalcos (Coatzacoalcos) river on the Atlantic to the port of Salina Cruz on the Pacific. The work was carried to Minatitlan, a distance of 25 miles, in 1884, and was to have been completed in 1885; but since then operations appear to have been suspended for want of means. A Tehuantepec ship railway is also projected, as it is expected that most of the trade between the Atlantic and Pacific coasts of the United States will be attracted to this route, which shortens the distance between New York and San Francisco by 1477 miles, and between New Orleans and the same place by 2334 miles, as com- pared with that by the Panama railway and future canal.

Tehuantepec, the town which gives its name to the isthmus, bay, and neighbouring lagoon, stands on the river Tehuantepec, 15 miles above its mouth on the Pacific, where it develops a shallow and somewhat exposed harbour. Of the population, estimated at 14,000, a large number are civilized and industrious Indians en- gaged in cotton-weaving and on the salt-works. Indigo is grown in the district, and there are productive pearl-fishcries in the bay. Amongst the exports are cochineal and a purple dye extracted from a shellfish abounding on the coast.

Signal- ling gener- ally.

112

TEIGNMOUTH, a seaport and market town of Eng- land, in Devonshire, consisting of the parishes of East and West Teignmouth, and situated on the English Channel, at the mouth of the Teign and on the Great Western Railway, 14 miles south of Exeter and 209 west-south- west of London. It is somewhat irregularly built, partly on a projecting peninsula and partly on the acclivities rising behind the river. The Teign is crossed by a bridge 1671 feet in length, built of wood and iron in 1824, St Michael’s church, in East Teignmouth, erected in 1829-23 in the Decorated style, was enlarged in

1875. The other buildings include St Scholastica's abbey (erected for Benedictine nuns in 1862), the East Devon and Teignmouth club-house, the mechanics' institute (1840), the temperance hall (1879), the sailors' home (1881), the baths (1883), and the public market (1883). There are two commodious

quays and a pier 600 feet in length. Fine pipe and potters' clay (from Kingsteignton) is shipped to Staffordshire. Coal and culm are imported, and there is also a trade with Newfoundland. Fishing is extensively carried on, The town, which is not incorporated, was formerly governed by portreeves. It now forms an urban sanitary district, which was extended on 29th September 1881. The popu- lation of the former area (1238 acres) in 1871 was 6751, and in 1881 it was 7120; that of the extended area (2347 acres) in 1881 was 8496.

Teignmouth is of very ancient origin. It received a grant of a market from Henry III. East Teignmouth was formerly called Teignmouth Regis, and West Teignmouth, Teignmouth Episcopi,— the manor having belonged to the see of Exeter until alienated by Bishop Vesey. Teignmouth was burned by French pirates in 1840, and was again devastated by the French on 26th June 1690.

TEINDS. See Trruzs.

TELEGRAPH

1 place iat (from rijAe and ypddw) signifies an

instrument to write at a distance. The term is specifically applied to apparatus for communicating in- telligence to a distance in unwritten signs addressed to the eye or ear, and has only recently had application to those wonderful combinations of inanimate matter which literally write at a distance the intelligence committed to them. The chief object of the present article is to ex- plain the principles and practice of the electric telegraph, and we shall allude to other telegraphic systems only to illustrate the general principles of signalling,

A word expressing an idea may, according to a pre- arranged plan of signalling, be communicated by voice, by trumpet calls, by gun fire, by gesture or dumb signs, by lamp signals, by flags, by semaphore, or by electric tele- graph. The simplest system of word-signalling hitherto practised is that of the nautical flag telegraph, in which each hoist represents a word by a combination of ‘four flags in four distinct positions (see Sianats, N AVAL). If m denote the number of flags, supposed all different, out of which the four to be sent up may be selected, the num- ber of different ideas which can be expressed by a single hoist is n(n —1)(n—2)(n— 3), since there are n varieties out of which the flag for each of the four positions may be.independently chosen. To commit to memory so great a number of combinations, which amount to 358,800 if n= 26, would be a vain effort; the operators on each side must therefore have constant recourse to a dictionary, or code, as it is called. For the sake of convenient reference each flag is called by the name of a letter of the alphabet, and all that the operator has to bear in mind is the letter by which each flag is designated. Sometimes the words to be expressed are spelled out by means of the flags as in ordinary language; but, as in most words there are more than four letters, as scarcely any two consecutive words are spelled with four or less than four letters, and as more than four flags at a time cannot be conveniently used, the system of alphabetic signalling frequently re- quires the use of two hoists for a word, and scarcely ever has the advantage of expressing two words by one hoist. It is therefore much more tedious than code signalling in the nautical telegraph.

In point of simplicity spoken words may be considered as almost on a par with the nautical telegraph, since each word is in reality spoken and heard almost as a single utterance. Next in order comes the system of spelling out words letter by letter, in which—instead of, as in the nautical telegraph, 358,800 single symbols to express the same number of ideas—26 distinct symbols are used to express by their combinations any number whatever of

distinct ideas. Next again to this may be ranked the system by which several distinct successive signals are used to express a letter, and letters thus communicated by compound signals are combined into words according to the ordinary method of language. It is to this last class that nearly all practical systems of electro-telegraphic signalling belong. But some of the

earliest and latest pro- posals for electric telegraphs are founded on the idea of making a single signal represent a single letter of the alphabet ; as instances we may name those early forms in which separate conductors were used for the different letters; a method suggested by Professor W. Thomson! in 1858 in which different strengths of current were to be employed to indicate the letters; and the various forms of printing telegraph now in use.

I. Hisrorican Skretcn or EARLy TELEGRAPHS,

Although the history of practical electric telegraphy Early does not include a period of more than half a century, the forms.

idea of using electricity for telegraphic purposes is much older. It was suggested again and again as each new dis- covery in electricity and magnetism seemed to render it more feasible. Thus the discovery of Stephen Gray and of Wheeler that the electrical influence of a charged Leyden jar may be conveyed to a distance by means of an insulated wire gave rise to various proposals, of which perhaps the earliest was that in an anonymous letter? to the Scots Magazine (vol. xv. p. 73, 1753), in which the use of as many insulated conductors as there are letters in the alpha- bet was suggested. Each wire was to be used for the trans- mission of one letter only, and the message was to be sent by charging the proper wires in succession and received by observing the movements of small pieces of paper marked with the letters of the alphabet and placed under the ends of the wires. A very interesting modification was also proposed in the same letter, viz., to attach to the end of each wire a small light ball which when charged would be attracted towards an adjacent bell and strike it. Some twenty years later Le Sage proposed a similar method, in which each conductor was to be attached to a pith ball electroscope. An important advance on this was proposed in 1797 by Lomond,’ who used only one line of wire and an alphabet of motions. Besides these we have in the same period the spark telegraph of Reiser, of Don Silva, and of Cavallo, the pith ball telegraph of Ronalds, and _ several

- See his Mathematical and Physical Papers, vol. ii. p. 105.

2 From correspondence found among Sir David Brewster's papers after his death it seems highly probable that the writer of this letter, which was signed ''C. M.", was Charles Morrison, a surgeon and 4

native of Greenock, but at that time resident in Renfrew. 3 See Arthur Young, Travels in France, p. 3.

others. Next came the discovery of Galvani and of Volta, and as a consequence a fresh set of proposals, in which voltaic electricity was to be used. The discovery by Nicholson and Carlisle of the decomposition of water and the subsequent researches of Davy on the decomposition of the solutions of salts by the voltaic current were turned to account in the water voltameter telegraph of Sémmering and the modification of it proposed by Schweigger, and in a similar method proposed by Coxe, in which a solution of salts was substituted for water. Then came the discovery by Romagnesi and by Oersted of the action of the galvanic current on a magnet. Thé application of this to tele- graphic purposes was suggested by Laplace and taken up by Ampére, and afterwards by Triboaillet and by Schilling, whose work forms the foundation of much of modern tele- | graphy. Faraday's discovery of the induced current pro- duced by passing a magnet through a helix of wire forming | part of a closed circuit was laid hold of in the telegraph of Gauss and Weber, and this application was at the request of Gauss taken up by Steinheil, who brought it to consider- | able perfection. Steinheil communicated to the Gottingen Academy of Sciences in September 1838 an account of his telegraph, which had been constructed about the middle of the preceding year. The currents were produced by a magneto-electric machine resembling that of Clarke. The receiving apparatus consisted of a multiplier, in the centre of which were pivoted one or two magnetic needles, which either indicated the message by the movement of an index or by striking two bells of different tone or recorded it by making ink dots on a ribbon of paper. Among other workers about this time we may mention Masson, Bréguet, Davy, Deval, Billon, Soudalot, and Vorsselman who pro- posed to use the physiological effects of electricity in work- ing an electric telegraph.!

Steinheil appears to have been anticipated in the matter _ of arecording telegraph by Morse of America, who in 1835 constructed a rude working model of an instrument ; this within a few years was so perfected that with some modi- fication in detail it has been largely used ever since (see below). In 1836 Cooke, to whom the idea appears to have | been suggested by Schilling's method, invented a telegraph in which an alphabet was worked out by the single and combined movement of three needles. Subsequently, in conjunction with Wheatstone, he introduced another form, in which five vertical index needles, each worked by a separ- ate multiplier, were made to point out the letters on a dial. Two needles were acted upon at the same time, and the letter at the point of intersection of the direction of the | mdexes was read. This telegraph required six wires, and was shortly afterwards displaced by the single-needle system, still to a large extent used on railway and other less im- portant circuits. The single-needle instrument is a vertical needle galvanoscope worked by a battery and reversing key, the motions to right and left of one end of the index corre- sponding to the dashes and dots of the Morse alphabet. To increase the speed of working, two single-needle instru- ments were sometimes used (double-needle telegraph). This system required two lines of wire, and, along with all multiple-wire systems, soon passed out of use. Similar _ Instruments to the single and double needle ones of Cooke | and Wheatstone were about the same time invented by the _ Rev. H. Highton and his brother Edward Highton, and '| were used for a considerable time on some of the railway lines in England. Another series of instruments, intro- duced by Cooke and Wheatstone in 1840, and generally known as '' Wheatstone's step-by-step letter-showing" or

1 The reader interested in the early history of the electric telegraph may consult Edward Highton, The Electric Telegraph, London, 1852; Moigno, Traité de Télégraphie Hlectrique, Paris, 1849; and Sabine, IMistory of the Electric Telegraph, London, 1869.

'' A BC instruments," were worked out with great ingenuity of detail by Wheatstone in Great Britain and by Bréguet and others in France. They are still largely used for pri- vate wires, but are being rapidly displaced by the

telephone.? Wheatstone also described and to some extent worked out an interesting modification of his step-by-step instrument, the object of which was to produce a letter-printing tele- graph. But it never came into use; some years later, however, an instrument embodying the same principle, although differing greatly in mechanical detail, was brought into use by Royal E. House of Vermont, U.S., and was very successfully worked on some of the American telegraph lines till 1860, after which it was gradually displaced by the Phelps combination telegraph. The House instrument is not now in use, but various modifications of it are still employed for private lines and for stock telegraphs, such as Calahan's and the universal stock telegraphs, Phelps's stock printer, Gray's automatic printer for private lines, Siemens's and Phelps's automatic type printers, dc. (see infra, pp. 120-121).

Tf. General DESCRIPTION oF ELECTRIC TELEGRAPHS FoR LAND AND SEA.

The first requisite for electro-telegraphic communica- Essential tion between two localities is an insulated conductor ex- appara-

tending from one tothe other. This, with proper apparatus for originating electric currents at one end and for dis- covering the effects produced by them at the other end, constitutes an electric telegraph. Faraday's term " elec- trode," literally a way for electricity to travel along, might be well applied to designate the insulated conductor along which the electric messenger is despatched. It is, how- ever, more commonly and familiarly called 'the wire" or "the line."

The apparatus for generating the electric action at one end is commonly called the transmitting apparatus or in- strument, or the sending apparatus or instrument, or some- times simply the transmitter or sender. The apparatus used at the other end of the line to render the effects of this action perceptible to any of the senses—eye, ear, or taste, all of which have been used in actual telegraphic signalling—is called the recewing apparatus or instrument.

In the aerial or overground system of land telegraphs Over- the main line consists generally of a "galvanized" iron ground

wire from one-sixth to a quarter of an inch in diameter, stretched through the air from pole to pole, at a sufficient height above the ground for security. The supports or in- sulators, as they are called, by which it is attached to the poles are of very different form and arrangement in different telegraphs, but consist essentially of a stem of glass, por- celain, coarse earthenware, or other non-conducting sub- stance, protected by an overhanging screen or roof. One end of the stem is firmly attached to the pole, and the other bears the wire. The best idea of a single telegraphic insulator may be got from a common umbrella, with its stem of insulating substance attached upright to the top of a pole and bearing the wire supported in a notch on the top outside. The umbrella may be either of the same substance as the stem—all glass or all glazed earthenware, for instance—or of a stronger material, such as iron, with an insulating stem fitted to it to support it below. Very good insulators may be made of continuous glass; but well-glazed porcelain is more generally used, or rather earthenware, which is cheaper, less brittle, and less hygro- scopic, and insulates well as long as the glazing is sufficient to prevent the porous substance within from absorbing moisture.

One of the best forms—vVarley's double cup insulator

2 For the different forms, see Prescott's Hlectricity and the Electric Telegraph, pp. 562-602. Sa —— 1s

heavy cores the copper is heavier. The different coatings of gutta percha and of the conductor are usually separated by a thin coating of Chatterton's compound (a mixture of gutta percha, resin, and Stockholin tar), in order to make them adhere firmly together, This practice has recently been departed from by Messrs Siemens Brothers, who have succeeded by an improved process of manufacture in getting perfect adhesion without the use of the compound. The core is served with a thick coating of wet jute, yarn, or hemp (2), forming a soft bed for the sheath, which consists of soft iron, or of homogeneous iron, wires of the best quality. The sheathing wires are usually covered with one or two servings of tarred canvas tape (¢), or of tarred hemp, laid on alternately with coatings of a mixture of asphaltum and tar. The weight of the iron sheath varies greatly according to the depth of

the water, the nature of the sea bottom, the prevalence of currents, and go on, Fig. 2 shows the intermediate type again sheathed with a heavy armour to resist wear in the shallow water near shore. In many cases a still heavier type is used for the first mile or two from shore, and several intermediate types are often introduced, tapering gradually to the thin deep- water type. Captain 8S. Trot and Mr F, A. Hamilton have proposed! to abandon the iron sheath and substitute a strong double serving of hemp, laid on in such a way as to prevent twisting when the cable is under tension. This suggestion, which is a revival with some modifications of an old idea, is, however, still in the experimental stage.

We will now describe very briefly a few of the most important processes in the manufacture and submergence of submarine cables,

In manufacturing a cable (fig. 5) the copper strand is passed Their through a vessel A containing melted Chatterton's compound, then mann.

through the cylinder C, in which a quantity of gutta percha, puri- facture, fied by repeated wash- ing in hot water, by mastica-

tion, and by filtering through wire-gauze filters, is kept warm by a steam- . jacket. As the wire is pulled

through, a coating of [, '+ ifg gutta percha, the thickness of

—is shown in fig. 1. It consists of two distinct cups (c, C), which are moulded and fired separately, and afterwards

cemented together. The double cup gives WU Y ANH) SAAS ING

great security against loss of insulation due to cracks extending through the in- sulator, and also gives a high surface in- sulation. An iron bolt (b) cemented into the centre of the inner cup is used for fixing the insulator to the pole or bracket. Under- In the underground system the main ground line generally consists of a copper wire, lines. or a thin strand of copper wires, covered with a continuous coating of gutta percha, india-rubber, or some equivalent insulat- ing substance, served with tarred tape and enclosed in earthenware, iron, or lead pipes laid below the surface of the ground. This

system is largely used for street and tunnel work, and to a considerable extent, especially in Germany, for ordinary lines, Fi. 1. — Varley's Each tube generally contains a number of peegete Me wires, which are either laid up intoa cable _ size. and covered with a serving of tarred tape or hemp before being drawn into the tube, or—as is more commonly the case in the United Kingdom—simply laid together in a parallel group and tied at intervals with binders, which are removed as the wires are drawn into the tube. On some long underground lines in Germany the insulated wires are laid up into a cable, served with jute or hemp, and sheathed with a continuous covering of iron wires, precisely similar to the submarine cables described below. The cable is laid in a deep trench and coated with bitumen. This form of cable is easily laid, and if properly manu- factured is likely to be very durable. Sub- Submarine Cables.—A submarine cable (figs, 2-4), as

marine usually manu- – x

)

present, con- sists of a core a in the centre of which is a strand of cop- per wires vary- ing in weight for different cables between 70 and 400 ib to the mile. The stranded form was sug- gested by Prof. W. Thomson at a meeting of the Philo- sophical So- ciety of Glas- gow in 1854, because _its greater flexi- bility renders it less likely to damage the

ae ee Fics, 2-4.—Sections of three types of submarine cabl

: ics, 2-4.—Sections of three types of submarine cables velope during full size. Fig. 2.—Type of shore end. Fig. 8.—Inter- the manipula- mediate type. Fig. 4.—Deep sea type.

tion of the cable. The central conductor is covered with several continuous coatings of gutta percha, the total weight of which also varies between 70 and 400 Ib to the mile. With a light core the weight of the gutta percha generally exceeds that of the copper, while in some –

——

=

——————d

omni facta. ah ED, ein

Semen eee

Fig. 5. which is regulated by the die D, is pressed out of the cylinder by applying the requisite pressure to the piston P. The newly coated wire 1s passed through a long trough T, containing cold water, until it is sufficiently cold to allow it to be safely wound on a bob- bin B. This operation completed, the wire is wound from the bobbin B’ on to another, and at the same time carefully examined for air-holes or other flaws, all of which are eliminated. The coated wire is treated in the same way as the copper strand, — the die D, or another of the same size, being placed! at the back of the cylinder anda larger one substituted at the front. A second coating is then laid on, and after it passes through a similar pro- cess of examination a third coating is applied, and so on until the requisite number is completed. The finished core changes rapidly in its electric qualities at first, and is generally kept fora stated interval of time before being subjected to the specified tests. It is then placed in a tank of water and kept at a certain fixed temperature, usually 75° Fahr. , until it assumes approximately a constant electrical state. Its conductor and dielectric resistance and its electrostatic capacity are then measured. These tests are gencrally repeated at another temperature, say 50° Fahr., for the purpose of obtaining at the same time greater certainty of the soundness of the core and the rate of variation of the conduetor and dielectric resistances with temperature. Should these tests prove satisfactory the core is served with jute yarn, coiled in water- tight tanks, and surrounded with salt water. The insulation is again tested, and if no fault is discovered the served core is passed through the sheathing machine, and the iron sheath and the outer covering are laid on. As the cable is sheathed it is stored in large water-tight tanks and kept at a nearly uniform temperature by means of water.

The cable is now transferred to a cable ship, provided with water- Submer- tight tanks similar to those used in the factory for storing it. The sion. tanks are nearly cylindrical in form and have a truncated cone

——————————— ————S ——

im

Fig. 2,

Fig. 8.

1 Journ. Soc. Telegr. Eng., vol. xii, p. 495.

ee

|

_ more readily lifted for repairs,

_ the bottom or be free from spans.

‘ portion between the surface of the water and the bottom of the sea

lies along a straight line, the component of the weight at right

‘ = to its length being supported by the frictional resistance to sin

rate o

|| where / stands for “ function.”

Surface of the sea, dc

THELEGRAPH

fixed in the centre, as shown at C, fig. 6. The cable is carefully

coiled into the tanks in horizontal flakes, each of which is begun at The different

the outside of the tank and coiled towards the centre.

coils are prevented from adhering by a coat- ing of whitewash, and the end of each nautical mile is carefully marked for future reference. After the

cable has been again subjected to the proper electrical tests and found to be in perfect condition, the hap is taken to the place where the shore end is to be landed. A sufficient length of cable to reach the shore or the cable-house is paid overboard and coiled on a raft or rafts, or on the deck of a steam-launch, in order to be connected with the shore. The end is taken into the testing room in the cable-house and the conductor connected with the testing instruments, and, should the electrical tests continue satis- factory, the ship is put on the proper course and steams slowly ahead, paying out the cable over her stern, The cable must not be over- strained in the process of submersion, and must be paid out at the proper rate to give the requisite slack. This involves the intro- duction of machinery for measuring and controlling the speed at which it leaves the ship and for measuring the pull on the cable. The essential parts of this apparatus are shown in fig. 6. The lower end¢ of the cable in the tank T is taken to the testing room, so that continuous tests for electrical condition can be made. The upper end is passed over a guiding quadrant Q to a set of wheels or fixed

uadrants 1, 2, 8,... then to the paying-out drum P, from it to the dynamometer D, and finally to the stern pulley, over which it passes into the sea. The wheels 1, 2, 3,... are so arranged that 2,4, 6,... can be raised or lowered so as to give the cable less or more bend as it passes between them, while 1, 3, 5,... are furnished with brakes. The whole system provides the mcans of giving sufficient back-pull to the cable to make it grip the drum P, round which it passes several times to prevent slipping. On the same shaft with P is fixed a brake-wheel furnished with a powerful brake B, by the proper manipulation of which the speed of paying out is regulated, the pull on the cable being at the same time observed by means of D. The shaft of P can be readily put in gear with a powerful engine for the purpose of hauling back the cable should it be found necessary to do so. The length paid out and the rate of paying out are obtained approximately from the number

_ of turns made by the drum P and its rate of turning. This is checked by the mile marks, the known position of the joints, &c.,

as they pass. The speed of the ship can be roughly estimated

from the speed of the engines; it is more accurately obtained

by one or other of the various forms of log, or it may be measured by paying out continuously a steel wire over a measuring wheel,

he average speed is obtained very accurately from solar and stellar observations for the position of the ship. The difference between the speed of the ship and the rate of paying out gives the amount ofslack. The amount of slack varies in different cascs between three

and ten per cent., but some is always allowed, so that the cable

may easily adapt itself to inequalities of the bottom and may be Bat the mere paying out of sufficient

cable will always lie closely along Whilst it is being paid out the

slack is not a guarantee that the

ing in the water. If, then, the speed of the ship be », the f paying out w, the angle of immersion 7, the depth of the water h, the weight per unit length of the cable w, the pull on the

| cable at the surface P, and A, B constants, we have—

A ‘ P=h{w- 2 f(u-o cos i}

WO CORO BSUS T). iiaccssocrarcreeasevians ig tae eatin (B), } The factors Af (u—v cos ¢) and Bf (v sin 2) give the frictional resistance to sinking, per unit length of the cable, in the direction of the length and transverse to the length respectively.! It is evident from equation (8) that the angle of immersion depends solely on the speed of the ship; henee in laying a cable on an irregular bottom it is of great ini-

portance that the speed should be sufficiently low. This may be

illustrated very simply as follows i—suppose @ a (fig. 7) to be the the bottom, and ce the straight line made by the cable; then, if a hill H, which is at any part steeper than the inclination of the cable, is passed over, the cable touches it at

some point ¢ before it touches the part immediately below ¢, and if 1 See Sir W. Thomson, Mathematical and Physical Papers, vol. ii. p. 165.

‘every possible case of practical operations.

115

the friction between the cable and the ground is sufficient the cable will either break or be left in a long span ready to break at some future time. It is important to observe that the risk is in no way obviated by the increasing slack paid out, except in so far as the amount of sliding which the strength of the cable is able to produce at the points of contact with the ground may be thereby increased, The speed of the ship must therefore be so regulated that the angle of immersion is as great as the inclination of the steepest slope passed over. Under ordinary circumstances the angle of immersion @ varies between six and nine degrees, ?

Jo stern Pulley

Qualities of depends on three qualities of the main line—(1) its conducting quality, (2) its insulation, and (8) its electrostatic capacity.

1, The conducting quality of a wire or other elongated portion of Conduet- matter is measured by the quantity of electricity which it allows to ing

a Telegraph Line.—The efficiency of the telegraph

flow through it when a stated “electromotive force,” or * difference quality. of electric potentials,” is maintained between its two ends. It may be most naturally, and is in point of fact generally, expressed in terms of resistance to transmission, regarded as a quality inverse to that of conducting power, and expressed numerically by the reci- procal of the measure of the conducting power. An independent explanation and definition of the electrical resistance of a conductor may be given as follows :—the electrical resistance of a conductor is measured by the amount of electromotive force, or difference of potentials, which must be maintained between its ends to produce a stated strength of electric current through it.

2, The true measure of the insulation of a body is the resistance Insula- to conduction offered byits supports. The reciprocal of this, or the tion. conducting power of the supports, measures the defectiveness of the _- insulation. Since no substance yet known is absolutely a non- conductor of electricity, perfect insulation is impossible. If, however, the supports on which a telegraph wire rests present, on each part and on the whole, so great a resistance to electric conduc- tion as to allow only a small portion of the electricity sent in, in the actual working, at one end to escape by lateral conduction, instead of passing through the line and producing effect at the other end, the insulation is as good as need be for the mode of working adopted. With the good insulation attained in a submarine line, round every part of which the gutta percha is free from flaws, no telegraphic operation completed within a second of time can be sensibly influenced by lateral conduction. A charge communicated to a wire thus insulated under water, at the temperature of the sea- bottom, is so well held that, after thirty minutes, not so much as half of it is found to have escaped. From this, according to the familiar ‘‘ compound interest” problem, it appears that the loss must be at the rate of less than five per cent. per two minutes.

3. In 1849 Werner Siemens proved that ‘‘when a current is sent Eleetro- through a submerged cable a quantity of electricity is retained in static

charge along the whole surface, being distributed in proportion capacity.

to the tension of each point,”—that is to say, to the difference of potentials between the conductor at any point and the earth beside it. In 1854 Faraday showed the effect of this ‘‘electrostatic charge” on signals sent through great lengths of submerged wire, bringing to light many remarkable phenomena and pointing out the “inductive” embarrassment to be expected in working long sub- marine telegraphs, In letters? to Professor Stokes in November and December of the same year, Prof. W. Thomson gave the mathe- matical theory of these phenomena, with formule and diagrams of curves, containing the elements of synthetical investigation for Some of the results of this theory are given at the end of the present article. The con- ductor of a submarine cable has a very large electrostatic capacity in comparison with that of a land telegraph wire in consequence of the Tadnetiont as of a Leyden phial, which takes place across its gutta percha

coat, between it and its moist outer surface, which may be regarded as perfectly connected with the earth,—that is to say, at the same potential asthe earth. The mathematical expres- sions for the absolute electrostatic capacity C, per unit of length, in the two cases are as follows.

Let D=diameter of the inner conductor, supposed to be that of a Submar-

circular cross section, or of a circle inappreciably less than one cir- ine line. cmnscribed about the strand which constitutes a modern submarine SS See ee ee 2 For details of cable manufacture and laying consult Douglas's Telegraph Construction, London, 1877, and Captain V. Hoskier's Laying and Repairing of Electric Telegraph Cables, London, 1878. 3 Published in Proc. Roy. Soc, for 1855.

Air line.

Stand- ards of measure- ment.

Units.

conduetor; D'=outer diameter of the insulating coat; I=specific inductive capacity of the gutta percha or other substance consti- tuting the insulating coat. Then

I w=3 log, D'/D'

In the case of a single wire of cireular section, diameter D, un- disturbed by the presence of others, and supported at a constant height # above the earth by poles so far apart as not to influence its capacity sensibly— 1

C= Tog, 4h/D"

Example 1. Ina submarine cable in which D'= 1 centimetre ;

D=0-4 centimétre ; and [=3'2— Gael _ Santas $_{2\log.D'/D}$ 2× 3979

Example 2. In a land line in which D=0°6 centimétre and

h=600 eentimetres— 1 43431

C= og, 4h/D 7-204 166″ The eapaeity, therefore, is in this case less than one-twenty-ninth of that of the submarine eable of example 1 for the same length.

= 1°75.

Telegraph Testing. Standards of Measurement.—A brief consideration of the standards

according to which the electrical qualities referred to in the last

section are measured, and the measurements to be described in this section are made, will render the statements of those qualities and quantities more definite. A complete and universally comparable system of standards for physical measurements ean be obtained by adopting arbitrarily as fundamental units those of length, mass, and time, and expressing in terms of these in a properly defined manner the units of all the other quantities. The units now adopted all over the world for electrical measurements take the eentimétre as the unit of length, the gramme as the unit of mass, and the mean solar second as the unit of time. There are two systems in use, the electrostatic and the electromagnetic. In the former the mutual forees exerted by two bodies, each eharged with static electricity, are taken as the starting-point, and in the latter the mutual forees exerted between a current of electricity and a magnet. The units according to these two systems are definitely related ; but as we deal in the present article with the electromagnetic system we give the following brief account of it only. .

The dyne or unit force is that force which, acting on a gramme of matter, free to move, imparts to it a velocity of 1 centimetre per second. Unit quantity of magnetism or unit magnetic pole is that quantity of magnetism which, when placed at a distance of 1 centi- métre from an equal and similar quantity of magnetism or a magnetic pole, repels it with unit force. Unit magnetic field is a field which, when a unit quantity of magnetism or a unit magnetic pole is placed in it, is acted on by unit foree. Unit current is a eurrent which, when made to flow round a cirele of unit radius, produces a magnetic field of 2m units’ intensity at the centre of the eircle, or acts on a

unit quantity of magnetism placed at the centre of the cirele with 27 units of force. Unit quantity of electricity is the quantity conveyed by the unit current in one second, Unit difference of potential is the difference of potential between the ends of a conductor of unit length when it is placed with its length at right angles to the direction of force in a unit magnetie field and kept moving with a velocity of 1 centimétre per second in the direction at right angles to its own length and to the direction of the magnetic force. Unit electromotive force is produced in a closed eireuit if any unit of its length is held in the manner, and moved in the direction and with the velocity, deseribed in the last section. Unit resistance is the resistance which, when acted on by unit electromotive force, transmits unit current. Unit capacity is the eapacity of a body which requires unit quantity of electricity to raise its potential by unity. The units above specified are generally referred to as the absolute C.G.S. electromagnetic units of the differ- ent quantities. In practice their magnitudes were found ineon- venient, and certain multiples and submultiples of them have been adopted as the practical units of measurement: thus the ohm is equal to 10° C.G.S. units of resistance; the volt is equal to 108 C.G.S. units of electromotive foree ; the ampere is equal to 10-1 C.G.S. units of eurrent ; the coulomb is equal to 107! C.G.S. units of quantity ; the farad is the eapacity which is charged to a volt by a coulomb, and is equal to 10-* C.G.S. units of capacity ; the microfarad is the millionth part of the farad, and is equal to 10- ©.G.S. units of capacity.

We are here chiefly concerned with the units of electromotive force, resistanee, and capacity. No universally recognized standard of electromotive foree has yet been established, but the want has been to a great extent supplied by the potential galvanometers, electrostatic voltmeters, standard cells, and other instruments devised by Sir W. Thomson and others. The work of Lord Rayleigh, Dr. Fleming, and other experimenters on the Clark and Daniell standard eells has shown conclusively that an electromotive force

can be reproduced with certainty within one-tenth per cent. of accuracy by means of either of these eells. Specimens of the standard unit of resistanee,

or ohm, made of an alloy of platinum and silver, or of platinum and iridium, have been constructed, and can be relied on, if properly taken care of, to remain very nearly accurate from year to year. Similar specimens of the standard unit of capacity or microfarad which remain very nearly constant haye been suecessfully produced. For a fuller treatment of this subject and of the methods of determining the different units, see ELEc- TRICITY, vol. viii. p. 40 sq.?

Telegraph line testing consists mostly of comparisons of the te- sistanee of the conductor and the insulator with sets of standard resistances, and of comparisons of the inductive eapaeity of the line or cable with standard condensers of known capacity. When, as is sometimes the ease, the strength of the current flowing through the line or through a particular instrument is to be determined, it is measured by an electrodynamometer, or by a current galva- nometer, properly constructed for indieating eurrents in absolute — measure. In the absence of such an instrument it may be obtained

x a resistance which can be varied,

Ga galvanometer, K asingle lever by

key, K, a reversing key, and Ba Wheat. battery. Put the zine pole of the stone’s battery to the line and adjust bridge,

the resistance x until the gal- vanometer G shows no deflexion when K, is depressed. We then ; have, assuming no electromotive ids force in the line, 2=aa,/b. Next put the copper pole to the line and repeat the test, and suppose in this case 1=ax,/b ; if these two values of 7 nearly agree the true value may be taken as 2aa%/b(x, +2). The effeet of an electromotive force in the line itself is nearly eliminated by reversing the battery.

(2) Let the battery B (fig. 9) be connected through the keys K, By direct and K and the_galvanometer G with the line 2, which has its distant deflexio,

end to the earth as before; shunt the galvanometer by a shunt s until a convenient deflexion is obtained, and then take as quickly as possible a series of readings with zine and copper alternately to the line. Next substitute for 2 a set of resistance coils and vary the resistance until the

same series of readings is obtained. The resistance introduced for the reproduction of each reading indicates the apparent resistance of the line when that reading was taken. The readings will generally differ because of the existence of a vari- able electromotive force in the line. If, however, the difference is not very great, the harmonie mean of the arithmetie mean of the

1 For the development of this important part of electrical science, see Weber, ‘‘ Messungen galvanischer Leitungswiderstande nach einem absoluten Maasse, ” in Poggendorf’s Annalen, March 1851; Thomson, ‘‘ Mechanical Theory of Electrolysis,” ‘ Application of the Principle of Mechanical Effect to the Measure- ment of Hlectromotive Force, and of Galvanic Resistances in Absolute Units,” and “Transient Electric Currents,” in Phil. Mag., 1851 and 1852; Weber, Electrodynamische Maassbestimmungen, insbesondere Zuriickfiihrung der Strom-intensitatsmessungen auf mechanischen Maass, Leipsic, 1856 ; Thomson, ‘“ On the Electric Conductivity of Commercial Copper,” ‘‘Synthetical and Analytical Attempts” on the same subject, and ‘‘ Measurement of the Electrostatic Force between the Poles of a Daniell’s Battery, and Measurement of the Electrostati¢ Force required to produce a Spark in Air,” Proc. Roy. Soc., 1857 and 1860; reprint of Reports of Brit. Assoc. Committee on Electr. Stand., &c., edited by Prof. F. Jenkin ; Thomson, Electrical Units of Measurement, a lecture delivered at Institution of Civil Engineers, 1883 ; Reports of the International Conference for the Determination of the Electrical Units, held at Paris in 1882 and 1884; A. Gray, Absolute Measurements in Electricity and Magnetism, London, 1884.

2 See A. Gray, Absolute Measurements in Electricity and Magnetism, pp. 27, 74; also T. Gray, Phil. Mag., November 1886. The following quotation from the art. TreLrarara in the 8th ed. of the Ency. Brit. shows how comparatively recent is the introduction of anything like absolute measurement in telegraph testing :—‘‘The ordinary test for insulation consists in applying a galvanic battery, with one pole to earth and the other through a galvanometer coil, to the line of telegraph of which the remote end is kept insulated. If the insula- tion of the whole line were perfcct, the galvanometer needle would stand at zero; but, when looked for with a battery of suitable power and a galvanometer of suitable sensibility,

indications of a current are always found, unless it isa very short length of very perfectly insulated line that is tested. The absolute measure of the strength of this current divided by the absolute measure of the electromotive force of the battery gives an absolute measure for the insulation of the cable. No telegraphic testing ought in future to be accepted in any de- partment of telegraphic business which has not this definite character, although itis only within the last year that convenient instruments for working inabsolute measure have been introduced at all, and the whole system of absolute measure ment is still almost unknown to practical electricians." It was put in practice systematically for the first time in 1859, in experiments by Prof. F. J enkin.

3 For this theory, see ELECTRICITY, vol. Viil. p. 44.

give nearly the truc resistance. Since the deflexions are reproduced by substituting resistances for the line, the galvano- meter zero may be off the scale to one side, and hence the total deflexion, and therefore the sensi- bility, may be made very considerable. In this case the reversing key K is re- uired for keeping the de- | exion in the same direc- tion. With a perfectly insulated battery this can be accomplished by putting the galvanometer between the battery and the key K; but the arrangement shown is safer. The most suitable galvano- meter for these tests is a dead-beat mirror galvanometer with a long enough suspension to prevent error from the viscosity of the fibre. Such an instrument is much to be preferred to the astatic form, especially when variable earth-currents are present.

(8) a highiy sensitive modification of method (2) is obtained by the use of a differential galvanometer, one coil of which is joined in – eircuit with the standard resistances and the other coil with the line. The resistances are then adjusted to balance, or to give no permanent deflexion when the battery circuit is closed. Several balances with positive and negative currents must be taken and the results combined as indicated above.

(4) When an electrometer is employed for testing insulation, as described below, it may be used for the wire resistance also either by substituting it for the galvanometer in Wheatstone's bridge method (fig. 8, G) or by that shown in fig. 10. One pole of the battery B is joined to the K R L line through the reversing key K and the resistance R, the other pole being to the earth. The electrometer Z/ is then applied to the two ends of R and to the end of J and the earth alternately and the relative deflexion noted. The deflexions should be as ncarly as possible equal; that is, R should be as nearly as possible equal to 2, The form of re- yersing key shown at K, is convenient for this test, as it allows the comparisons to be made quickly ; and, as the readings can be always taken to the same side of zero, the whole length of the scale is available for each deflexion. The key consists of two ordinary front and back stop single lever keys fixed together by an insulat- ing piece 7 at such a distance apart that the contact stops a, b and ¢, @ are at the corners of a square. Suppose one pole of the battery put to the line and the resistance R adjusted until no change of deflexion is obtained by depressing K,; then R is equal to / if there is no earth disturbance. Then put the other pole of the battery to the line ; turn the levers of K through 90° round the pivot p ; and repeat the adjustment of R for a second determination of J. Repeat these measurements several times and combine the results in the manner described in method (2). If R is not made equal to 1, the resistances are in the ratio of the corresponding deflexions.

Measurement of Insulator Resistance.—(1) In the direct deflexion _ method the connexions are the same as those shown in fig. 9, except

- that the distant end of the line is insnlated. Very great care must be taken that the galvanometer and all the connexions between it and the end of the line are so well insulated that no sensible part of the observed deflexion is due to leakage through them. In

:

resistances, when zinc and copper were respectively to the line, will

ce ;

jkion making the test, first earth the line for five minutes; then, with

od, the galvanometer short-circuited, apply the zinc pole of the battery

to the line; at the end of from thirty seconds to a minute, depend- ing on the length and capacity of the line, remove the short-circuit plug; and record the deflexion at the end of every ten or fifteen seconds during the whole time (usually from ten to twenty minutes) the test is continued, Again earth the line for an interval equal to that during which the battery was applied; then apply the copper pole of the battery and repeat the readings as before. Using the deflexions as ordinates and the corresponding times as abscissa, construct a smooth curve for both the zinc and the copper test. The galvanometer constant divided by the mean ordinate of these curves at any time gives the insulation at that time. To deter- mine the galvanometer constant, substitute a high resistance R, say one megohm, for the line, and shunt the galvanometer with a shunt 8. If the deflexion under these circumstances is d and G is the galvanomcter resistance, the constant is

c=Ra ets

.

_(2) The electrometer method is only applicable to lines of con- siderable inductive capacity, but is particularly well suited for – cable testing. The battery B (fig. 11) is connected through a re-

versing key K, to the ends of the resistance slide ab, one end of

which is put to earth. The slide generally consists either of 10 or 100 equal resistances, amounting in the aggregate to from 10,000 to 100,000 ohms. The cable can be connected by means

of the reversing key K to either pair of quadrants of the electrometer £7, the slider s being at the same time put to the other pair.

To determine the constant “= of the electrometer, con- “s nect the earth wire w with s the cable terminal and the slider with contact 1, and observe the defiexion ; this should be the same for both. directions of the current

through the slide; its value multiplied by 10, when the slide is made up of ten coils, gives the value in scale divisions of the full difference of potential between the ends of the slide. This number added to the zero reading of the electrometer is called the inferred zero. To find the insulation of the cable, remove the wire w, put in the short circuit plug py, move the slider to contact 10, and, the distant eng of the cable being insulated, apply by means of K, the zine pole of the battery to the cable and the copper pole to the earth. Allow sufficient time for the cable to charge—say one minute for a cable of 2000 knots—then remove the short-cir- cuit plug and take readings every fifteen or thirty seconds, The difference of these readings from zero gives the fall of potential of the cable due to discharge through the insulating coat. Next earth the cable at both ends for a time equal to the duration of the last test, and after reversing K put the copper pole of the battery to the cable and the zinc pole to the earth and take another series of readings. Subtract these readings from the inferred zero, and, using the differences as ordinates and the corresponding times as abscissee, draw two curves. ‘To find the insulation of the cable at any interval ¢ after the battery was applied, draw a tangent to the curve at the point corresponding to that time and produce it to cut the axis of the ordinates. Let D, be the ordinate to the point of intersection, and D the ordinate at the time ¢; then, if C be. the capacity of the cable in microfarads and I its insulation in megohms,

If the difference between the reading and the inferred zero at the times ¢ and t, be D and D,, the insulation is given by the equation __*4343(t, – 0) ~ Clog D/Dy’ when ¢,—¢ is reckoned in seconds. This latter is the formula com- monly used ; it gives the insulation at some time in the interval between the two observations ; the exact time depends on the rate of ‘‘absorption ” of the cable.

The advantages of the electrometer method of testing cables are the comparative steadiness of the needle during earth-current dis- turbances, its high sensibility for the detection of small intermittent faults, and the fact that simultaneous tests can be taken from both ends of the cable. In order to test from both ends simultaneously one or other of the following methods may be adopted. Call the ends of the cable A and B, and suppose the operator at A is to be- gin the test. The operator at B joins the copper pole to the earth and the zine pole to the line, and leaves the slider of his slide re-

sistance at the earth end of the slide. Then, at a time previously arranged, he watches until he sees the electrometer begin to indi- cate a charge in the cable, and moves the slider along the slide so as to keep the electrometer near zero, As soon as the electrometer ceases to indicate increase of charge he ceases to move the slider and begins to record the deflexions at regular intervals, the first reading being taken as zero. The other method is to lcave the slider permanently to earth and keep the electrometer so insensitive that the deflexion is always within the limits of the scale. Ob- serve the time at which the electrometer begins to be deflected, and from that time onward take readings every thirty seconds during the time of the test. The mean of the readings taken at both ends, reduced to the same sensibility, should be used for calculating the insulation. This method not only eliminates the effects of earth- current disturbance but also throws light on the nature and dis- tribution of such disturbances.

When an electrometer is not available and the line is too much Fall of disturbed for good tests to be obtained by the galvanometer method, potential the following procedure may be adopted. Join the battery and the method galvanometer in series with the cable as for the direct deflexion by gal- test. Short-circuit the galvanometer and charge the cable for one vano- minute. Insulate the cable for fifteen seconds; then break the meter. short circuit of the galvanometer; again apply the battery, and take the deflexion produced by the charge. Keep the battery on the cable for fifteen seconds, and during that time take if possible the direct deflexion reading two or three times. Again insulate for

Thom- son’s capacity test.

‘Gott’s test.

De Sauty’s test.

fifteen seconds and repeat the above readings; and continue the same cycle of operations for the whole time of the test. After earthing the cable for the proper interval repeat the above test with the other pole of the battery to the cable. To reduce the charge readings to absolute measure, find the deflexion

of the gal- vanometer needle due to the charge of a condenser of microfarads capacity by the testing battery ; let d be this deflexion. Then the deflexion that would be obtained by charging the whole cable would be Cd/n, and, if D be any one of the deflexions during the test, Dn/Cd is the fraction of the whole charge which has been lost in the fifteen seconds immediately preceding this charge ; thus ya 7348. 15 aie C22 vs C2d? — n? D

The method just described takes advantage in a somewhat imper- fect manner of both the direct deflexion and the electrometer test ; but the galvanometer shonld have such a long period that the whole of the charge can take Paes before the needle is sensibly moved from its zcro position, and that the vibration of the needle must not be damped to any great extent, —a condition which renders the instrument unsuitable for direct deflexion testing.

The points with regard to the cable which should be particularly attended to when testing for insulation are—the continuity of the insulation all through the test, that is, there should be no sign of a breakdown for ever so short a time; the rate of polarization with positive and negative current is always the same in a perfect cable, but is seldoin so when a fault exists ; the absolute insulation with both currents should also be the same if the cable is perfect, but is never so for any length of time when a fault exists. If the insula- tions show any sign of being defective great care must be taken not to apply a powerful battery to the cable, unless the object is to increase or ‘‘ break down” the fault. The resistance of a fault is generally diminished by applying the zine pole of the battery to the cable and increased by applying the copper pole; but if the fault is small it sometimes happens that both currents increase the resistance. Even a very powerful battery may in such a case fail to increase the fault.

Capacity Tests.—The arrangement of the connexions for Thom- son’s capacity test are shown in fig. 12. A well-insulated battery B is connected through a reversing key K, to the slide resistance ab, and by means of a key 6 K can be put to a standard condenser C and b to the cable, or the condenser and the cable can be con- nected together and then both -put to earth through the galvanometer G by closing

the key K,. Any point in the re- sistance ab can be put to earth by means of ee the slider s, Suppose Fig. 12, the middle point put to the earth, then C and L will be charged to equal potentials but of opposite sign. If the connexions to the slide are broken and C is joined to L, the resulting charge will be zero when the capacity C is equal to the capacity L, and when K, is closed no current will flow through G. Similarly, if as is to sb as L is to C the resulting charge is zero. Hence when, after joining C to L, no deflexion is shown on G when K, is closed—

G

A modification of this test has been suggested by Mr John Gott. The condenser C is joined in series with the cable and one end of the slide is put to earth. The galvanometer G is joined from the end of the cable to the slider s and the position of the latter, which gives no deflexion, is found by successive trials, the cable being discharged and recharged between the trials. A small con- denser in the galvanometer circuit is an advantage, as it allows several adjustments to be made without discharging the cable. The most suitable instrument, however, is an electrometer, as it allows the adjustment to be made at once.

_The eapacities of condensers may be compared by charging or discharging them through a galvanometer and comparing the deflexions, or, as in De Sauty's method, b substituting them for two sides of a Wheatstone's bridge. and nding the ratio of the resistances in the other two sides; then, with the galvanometer circuit closed, the battery circuit can be closed without producing any deflexion, The galvanometer circuit must join the condensers at the same points as the bridge resistances. 'These methods are quite unsuited for telegraph-line testing because of the resistance and the inductive retardation of the line.

Tests of a Submerged Cable.—During the submergence of a cable it is necessary to provide the means of knowing at every instant

TELEGRAPH

whether it continues in perfect electrical condition, so that should Testg of any fault develop it can be at once detected and further paying out sub. It is

also of great importance that mergeq the ship and shore should be in telegraphic communication with cable,

stopped until it is removed.

each other. The arrangements made for these purposes by different electricians vary considerably ; but the general principle will be gathered from fig. 13, which includes all that is absolutely necessary for the purpose. The Cabl

principal testing sta- = tion is always on board the ship, and from it all the testing operations both on board and on shore are regulated. Referring first to the arrangements on board, B is the testing battery, = K the testing key, and = ‘« G the testing galvano- = meter; B, is the sig- “=. nalling or ‘‘speaking” 8 ”

battery, K, the key, and G, the galvanometer ; R is a resistance box and E the earth-plate—the ship’s side in this case. The battery B is connected through the key K, the resistance R, and the galvano- meter G to the cable, as for direct deflexion testing. The shore end of the cable is at the same time connected to one set of plates of a highly insulated condenser C, and (although this may be omitted) to one pair of quadrants of an clectrometer Hl. The other pair of plates of the condenser are put to earth through the signalling key K,. It is convenient also to have a second condenser O, on shore, the capacity of which can be readily varied, so arranged that its capacity can be added to that of C, by depressing the key K, and again discharged through a galvanometcr G by releasing the key. The operations are then conducted as follows. The insulation is measured on board ship, alternately with positive and negative currents of from ten to fifteen minutes’ duration, by observing the deflexion on the galvanometer G; and the reading at the end of each minute, or oftener, is recorded in adiary. The continuity of the conductor is tested at short intervals—say every five minutes— by the observer on shore depressing the key K and thus adding the capacity of C to the cable. This gives a sudden deflexion on the galvanometer G on board, and at the same time shows that the conductor is continuous and that the observer on shore is attending to his duties. When the shore key K is released, the discharge through G is indicated by a throw deflexion, the amount of which is recorded in the diary and shows the

potential to which the shore end of the cable is kept charged. When the clectrometer ZU is used, a continuous test of the potential at the shore end is obtained, and the development of a fault in the cable is at once indicated. It is convenient for this purpose to dispense with the charge in the electrometer jar and needle and conuect the needle to the pair of quadrants which are joined to the cable. The deflexion is then proportional to the square of the potential and is always to one side of zero, so that the whole range of the scale is available for the de- flexion. The tests for wire-resistance and capacity are practically the same as those already described. They are in ordinary circum- stances of much less importance than the insulation tests. The wire-resistance test is of great value, however, for giving a close estimate of the temperature of the submerged cable, and hence for giving the means of comparing the tests of the submerged cable with those of the cable previous to submersion. In laying short lengths of cable the shore station may be dispensed with and capacity tests relied on for continuity. Commiunication between ship and shore is carried on by means of the keys K,, K,, the galvanometer G,, and the batteries B,, B,. The signalling key on board the ship adds or subtracts the electromotive force of the battery B, from the testing battery, and hence varies the potential of the cable. This is shown on shore by the partial charge or discharge of ©, passing through the galvanometer G, and is interpreted in accordance with

the single needle alphabet in the ordinary way. In a similar ~

manner the signalling key on shore varies the charge of C,, and so causes slight variations of the testing-current on board the ship, which are read on the galvanometer G, and interpreted in the same way. The testing is usually suspended during the signalling ; but if the message is long an undiatann reading is taken every few minutes according to pre-arrangement.

The galvanometers used at sca require to be constructed so that Marine the rolling of the ship does not deflect the needle, either on account galvan- of its inertia and the action of gravity, or of the relative changes in ometer.

the position of the ship’s magnetism. The best form of marine galvanometer consists of two short bobbins of fine silk-covered wire placed end to end, about an eighth of an inch apart, and having their axes in the same line, with a very light mirror, carrying ce- mented to its back one or more small

magnets suspended between the two bobbins in such a way that the centre of the mirror is in their common axis. The mirror and magnet system weighs from one-half to one grain. It is suspended as shown in fig. 14 by a

m= ete pture

ctor Ue

ed.

irtially |rthed,

ycture, |

:

|

single silk fibre f, which passes through the centre of inertia of the mirror and needle system m and is fixed at one end directly to the frame F and at the other end to a light spring s. The frame F is made thin enough to slide into the opening between the two bobbins, so that the mirror can be easily taken out for adjustment when necessary. So long as the suspending fibre passes through the centre of inertia of m it is clear that no motion of translation of F can produce rotation of the mirror. When the instrument requires to be highly sensitive, as for testing purposes, it is shielded from the action of the ship's and the earth's magnetism by enclosing it in a massive iron case. For signalling pur- poses the controlling magnet is arranged to produce at the needle a field so strong that the effect of variations of external mag- netism is inappreciable.

Testing for Faults.—Numerous methods have been proposed for the localization of faults in telegraph lines, some of a complex char- acter and adapted to the cases of faults of a kind which fortunately seldom, if ever, occur. We give here a brief outlinc of the tests for the cases of most common occurrence.

For the determination of the position of a complete rupture with the conductor insulated both the insulation and the capacity tests are theoretically applicable. The insulation of a line of uniform

Fic. 14.—Marine galvano- meter,

‘th con- type and material is inversely as its length ; hence if a piece is

broken off the insulation is increased. If I be the total insulation before rupture, J, the insulation of one section after rupture, and 7 the total length of the line, the length of the section is Ii/T,, Un- fortunately it is difficult to obtain the necessary accuracy in insula- tion testing on account of the great influence of earth-currents on the result ; but apart from this there is always some uncertainty, especially in cables, as to the insulation at the break. For cables a fairly reliable test can be obtained from the capacity even when the insulation at the fault is somewhat imperfect, if it be sufficient to hold the greater part of the charge for a few seconds, since the amount of loss in any short interval can be estimated by a separate test. ‘The capacity of a uniform cable is inversely as its length ; hence, if C be the total capacity of the perfect cable and ©, the capacity of one section, the length of that section is JC,/C. When— as is almost always the case—the cable is not quite uniform in electrical quality and in temperature, a table or a curve showing the wire resistance, the insulation, and the capacity up to any point from either end should be kept for reference.

It is not at all uncommon in cables for one side of a fracture to be partially insulated through the conductor not breaking exactly at the same point as the insulator. In this case, however, the other end will be in most cases almost perfectly earthed and the position of the fault can be very nearly determined by the wire- resistance test. When both ends are partially insulated it is very difficult to obtain a near approach to the position of the fault because of the uncertainty as to which side of the break offers the greatest resistance. A first approximation is obtained by finding the wire resistance from both ends and subtracting the total wire resistance of the cable from the sum of these. This gives the sum of the resistances at the fracture, and half of this, if it is not too great, subtracted from the resistance of either section gives an approxima- tion to the resistance of that section up to the break. If, however, the resistance at the fracture is comparable to the

total wire re- sistance of the cable, this method is useless. An approach to the solution of the difficulty can be obtained from capacity tests, the cable being discharged through different resistances at the testing end. But the procedure is very uncertain and difficult, and a full discussion of it would take more space than can be afforded here. The resistance at a fault can sometimes be greatly diminished by repeated application alternately of the positive and negative poles of a powerful battery to the cable, but this should never be resorted to if it can possibly be avoided. The direct deflexion method of taking wire resistance is most suitable for these tests. The resist- ance seems to diminish gradually after the battery is applied until it reaches a minimum value, after which it again increases. This maximum deflexion should be taken as indicating most nearly the true wire resistance up to the fracture,

When jthe fault is a partial earth without fracture, and both ends of the cable are available—as in factory testing, or when a second well-insulated cable can be used—the most satisfactory method is the loop test. In this the two sections of the cable form two sides of the Wheatstone's bridge ; one pole of the battery 18 put to the junction of the other two sides and the other pole to earth, —that is, practically to the fault. The ratio of the resist- ances in the bridge when balance is obtained gives the ratio of the tesistances of the two sections of the cable, or the ratio of the Tesistance of one section to the resistance of the other section plus the resistance of the second cable. 'The total resistance of the

'whic

1i9

cable being known, it is easy to determine the position of the fault. When the fault has a high resistance it is necessary to make a cor- rection for the want of perfect insulation in the sound part of the cable. When both ends of the cable are not available, measure the potential at the testing end and the resistance between that end and the earth, and simultaneously measure, by means of a slide re- sistance and zero galvanometer or by means of a quadrant electro- meter, the potential at the distant end. Then, if V be the potential at the testing end, v the potential at the distant end, and R the re- sistance measured, the true resistance of the fault is R(1- o/V). Another

simple, although less perfect method, may be mentioned. Measure the resistance between both ends and the earth and subtract from the sum the true wire resistance of the cable; the difference is twice the resistance of the fault. The imperfection of this method, and indeed of any which involves two observations not made simul- taneously, lies in the variable character of the resistance of a fault,

TIT. Moprern TELecRapus,

The code of signals introduced by Morse is still employed in the Morse United States and Canada, and the international code in vogue in system.

Europe differs only slightly from it. Currents in one direction only are used, and different combinations of from one to four long and short contacts form the letters, while the numerals are represented by groups of five signals, and punctuation and other special signs by groups of six and sometimes more. The instruments used for land telegraphs on this system are of two types, —“sounders,” which indicate by sound, and “recorders,” which record the signals,

(1) Recorders vary in details of construction, but all have the Morse same object, namely, to record the intervals during which the current recorders.

is applied to the line. In the earlier forms of instrument the record was made by embossing lines on a ribbon of paper by means of a sharp stile fixed to one end of a lever, which carried at the other end the armature of an electromagnet. This method of recording is still largely employed in America, and certainly has the advan- tage of simplicity. The form of instrument almost universally used in Europe makes the record in ink, and hence is sometimes called the “‘ink-writer.” This method has the advantage of dis- tinctness, and so is less trying to the eyes of the operators, The action of the instrument will be understood from the annexed sketch (fig. 15). Sup- pose s to be a strip of paper is being’pull- ad towards the left by means of two rollers 7, and 79 moved by a train of mechanism. Underneath the roller 7, a small wheel ¢ is kept turning by the same mechanism, and has its lower edge in contact with the surface of ink in the ink-well w. When a current is sent through ——————$—$—$ the magnet m, the armature a ig F1¢. 15.—Morse ink-writcr, one-fourth attracted and the lever 7 lifts the ae

ink-wheel 4 into contact with the paper, against the surface of which it rolls until the current is broken, thus making a mark the length of which depends on the speed of the mechanism and the time the current flows. As the speed of the mechanism is nearly constant, the relative lengths of the marks depend only on the duration of the current. In this way the letters of the alphabet, or any other understood signs, are indicated by groups of long and short marks, commonly called ‘‘ dashes” and * dots.”

(2) Operators who use the record- aa

learn to read the message by the click against its stop, and as this is a less reading, and leaves.the hands and eyes free to write, the sound is usu- ally preferred, Thus, when it is not necessary to keep a copy, a much simpler instrument may be employed and the message read by sound. The earliest successful form was Bright’s bell sounder, which consisted of two bells of distinct tone or pitch, one of which was sounded when the current was sent in one direction and the other when | it was reversed. This instru- ment was capable of giving very considerable speed, but it was more complicated than that now in use, which consists only of an electromagnet, with its armature lever arranged to stop

of the fatiguing method of

})

icc NT NN

Frc. 16.—Morse sounder, one-fourth full size.

y ing instrument soon Morse armature sounders.

rods M, M,, the one as much in front of the other as there is space between two successive holes in the perforated ribbon. To the other ends of A, B rods H, Hy, are loosely hinged, their ends passing loosely through holes in

the ends of the bar P, which is fixed to the divided disk D. By means of two collars K, K, and the wheel W, the disk D is made to oscillate in unison with the beam E.

The cranks C and C, are connected with the poles of the sending <_< R

Chemical tele- graphs. autographic telegraphs of Meyer, Lenoir, Sawyer, and others ; and + the autographic typo-telegraph of Bonelli. The oe of action | battery B. The operation is as follows. The paper ribbon R is of these instruments is this. Suppose two metallic cylinders, one | moved forward by its centre row of holes at the proper speed above at the sending and the other at Phe receiving station, to be kept | the upper ends of the rods M, M,; should there be no hole in the revolving synchronously, and suppose the axis of each to be | ribbon it pushes the crank A or B out of contact with the pins p, p threaded with a fine screw so that as it revolves rapidly it has a | and prevents a current passing to the line. Should, however, a slow side motion. Wrap round the cylinder at the sending station | row of holes, like group 1 above, be perforated, the rod M, will first a ribbon of tinfoil, or paper covered with a conducting coating, on | be allowed to pass through the paper and copper will be put to the which the message is written in varnish or some other insulating | line ; at the next half stroke of the beam, M will pass through, and substance. Suppose also a ribbon of paper which has been soaked | as the disk D reverses the battery zine will be put to the line. in iodide of potassium to be wrapped round the cylinder at the | Thus for a dot first a positive and then a negative current are sent receiving station. Cause a stile, as in the Bain telegraph, to press | to the line, the effect of the positive current continuing during the on each cylinder and set it in motion. It is evident that so long | time required for the paper to travel the space between two holes. as the stile at the sending end presses on the clean foil the stile | Again, suppose groups 3 and 4 to be punched. The first part will at the receiving end will continue to make a brown mark, but that | be, as before, copper to the line ; at the next half stroke of the beam when it passes over the varnish the mark will be interrupted. In | M will not pass through, as there is no hole in the paper; but this way, as the two cylinders revolve and move sideways, the series | at the third half stroke it passes through and zinc is put to the of interruptions made at the receiving end form an exact copy of | line. Thus for a dash the interval between the

positive and the the varnish marks at the sending end. These instruments are at | negative current is equal to the time the paper takes to travel over present but little used. twice the space between two successive holes. Hence for sending Auto- It has been found possible to make the Morse ink-writer so sensi- | both a dot and a dash reverse currents of short duration are sent matic _ tive that it can record signals sent over land lines of several hundred-| through the line, but the interval between the reversal is three tele- miles in length very much faster than they can be transmitted by | times as great for the dash as for the dot. In the receiving instru- graphs. hand, and this has led to the adoption of automatic methods of | ment the electromagnet is so constructed that the armature, if transmission. One was proposed by Bain as early as 1846, but it | pulled into any position by either current, remains in that position, did not come into nse. That now employed is, however, practically | whether the current continues to flow or not, until a reverse current a development of his idea. It consists in punching, by means of | is made to act on the magnet. For the dot the armature is de- “a puncher,” a series of holes in a strip of paper in such a way that, | flected by the first current, the ink-wheel being brought into con- when the strip is sent through another instrument, called the | tact with the paper and after a short interval pulled back by the ‘‘transmitter,” the holes cause the circuit to be closed at the | reverse current. In the case of the dash the ink-wheel is brought proper times and for the proper proportionate intervals for the | into contact with the paper by the first current as before and is message to be correctly printed by the receiving instrument or | pulled back by the reverse current after three times the interval. recorder. The most successful apparatus of this kind is that | The armature acts on an inking disk on the principle described devised by Wheatstone ; others have been introduced by Siemens | above, save only that the disk is supplied with ink from a groove and Halske, Garnier, Humaston, Siemens, and Little. in a second wheel, on which it rolls: the grooved wheel is kept Wheat- In Wheatstone’s automatic apparatus three levers are placed side | turning with one edge in contact with ink in an ink-well. By this stone’s by side, each acting on a set of small punches and on mechanism | method of transmission the battery is always to the line for the auto- for feeding the paper forward a step after each operation of the | same interval of time, and alternately with opposite poles, so that matic levers. The punches are arranged as shown in fig. 17, and the | the effect of electrostatic induction is reduced to a minimum. system. levers

are adjusted so Through the instrumentality of this method as many as 400 words

that the left-hand one moves @, 6, cand punches

per minute have lately been transmitted by Mr Preece between London and Newcastle, a distance of 278 miles.

a row of holes across the paper (group 1 in the figure), the middle one moves donly and punches a centre hole (2 in the figure), while the right-hand one moves a, },

The first considerable improvement on the House type-printer, Hughes's referred to above, was made by D. E. Hughes of Kentucky in 1855. type In the Hughes instrument (see fig. 19) two trains of clockwork printing mechanism, one at each end of the line, are kept moving synchron- tele- ously by powerful spring governors. Each instrument is provided graph.

The whole of

d, eand punches four holes (3 and 4 in the figure). this operation represents a dot and a dash or the letter "a." The side rows of holes only are used for transmitting the message, the centre row being required for feeding forward the paper in the transmitter. The perforation of the paper when done by hand is usually performed by means of small mallets, but at the central telegraph office in London the keys are only used for opening air-valves, the actual punching being done by pneumatic pressure. In this way several thicknesses of paper can be perforated at the same time, which is a great convenience for press work, since copies of the same message have often to be transmitted to several newspapers at the same time. The mode of using the paper ribbon for the transmission of the message is illustrated in fig. 18. An ebonite beam E is rocked up and down rapidly by a train of mechanism and moves the cranks A and B by means of two metal pins y, py. A and B are in metallic contact with each other through the springs s, s, and they carry two light vertical

with a key-board, resembling that of a small piano, the key levers of which communicate with a circular row, R, of vertical pins. A horizontal arm A

fixed to a vertical shaft in gear with the mechan- ism sweeps over these pins at the rate of from one to two turns per second. When a key is depressed, slightly raising one of the pins, the battery is put to the line for a short time at that part of the revolution by means of a sledge S carried by the horizontal arm. The current thus sent to the line may be made either to act directly on the printing instrument or to close a local circnit by means of a relay. For simplicity we will suppose direct action. The current then passes through the coils of a powerful electromagnet M, which relieves the printing mechanism. The electromagnet consists of two coils each containing a soft iron core of the same length as the coil. These cores rest on the ends of the two arms of a powerful horse-shoe permanent magnet, and thus become strongly polarized by induction. A soft iron armature is placed across the free ends of the soft iron cores and is pulled by a strong spring, the tension

of which is adjusted so as to be nearly equal to the magnetic attrac- tion. The current is sent in the proper direction to diminish the power of the magnet and allow the spring to preponderate. A very powerful action is thus obtained by means of a very small current, the actual work being done by motive-power in the instrument itself. After the letter is printed the mechanism short-circuits the

magnet and replaces the armature automatically. The printing The type-wheel W is carried round continu-

action is as follows.

‘** American combination printing telegraph,” because it embodied part of Hughes’s and part of House’s instruments. With this modified form somewhat greater speed was obtained, but it was found difficult to drive, requiring the use of steam or some such motive-power. In a subsequent modification introduced in 1875 an electromotor is applied to drive the printing mechanism. This allows a shorter train and stronger wheelwork to be used, secures more certain action, and involves less risk of derangement.

Hughes’s form was taken up by the French Government in 1860, and is still very largely in use in France.

Stock and private line telegraphs Stock constitute an important class of instru- tele- ments, of which Laws’s ‘‘gold indi- graphs.

=

TTL TL

Fia. 19.—Hughes’s type-printing instrument, one-tenth full size.

ously by the clockwork, to which it is attached through a friction sleeve which allows it to be stopped, and pushed backward or for- ward without stopping the mechanism. Another shaft carrying three cams is arranged so as to be locked into gear with the wheel- work when the armature leaves the poles of the magnet. The cams then come into action in rotation ; the first moves the adjustment lever, shown to the left of W in the figure, which pushes a wedge- shaped piece into the teeth of the yagi and adjusts it exactly to the proper position for printing ; the second cam presses the paper against the type ; the third moves forward the paper ; a fourth cam replaces the armature of the magnet and relieves the cam shaft, leaving the instrument ready to receive another letter. The whole of this operation occupies only a small fraction of a second. By means of the adjustment lever or ‘‘ corrector ” 7 every error in syn- chronism decidedly less than half the space from letter to letter is perfectly corrected each time an impression is made. Thus, during the time the receiving instrument at one station is in use, its type- wheel is kept in perfect agreement with the sending wheel at the other station ; and, if the electric action keeps time, a wrong letter cannot be printed unless the rate of the clockwork is at fault by some such amount as one or two per cent. If the two wheels are allowed to run a long time without the electric maintenance of agreement, they will be found more or less at variance, as the pieces of clockwork, however good, cannot be perfect. All that is necessary to bring them into agreement again is to strike several times the key corresponding to a prearranged adjustment signal— that corresponding to the dot type, forinstance. The receiver knows (according to the regulated system of working) that it is adjustment, not message, that is being sent; and he turns his type-wheel by hand till it prints

dots. He then signals back ‘O.K.” (‘All correct !”) and is ready to receive the message. If by any accident his type-wheel gets on a wrong letter in the course of a message, he disturbs the sender (who all the time sces the effect of his sending printed before his own eyes) by sending back a few currents on him ; he receives dots by way of acknowledgment, and resets his

cator,”’ introduced in 1866, may be taken as the forerunner. A brief description of Calahan’s stock telegraph, introduced in 1867, will give a general idea of the action of this class of instruments. The printing mechanism consists of two type- a wheels, on the edge of one of which are the letters of the alphabet and on the edge of the other the numerals from 1 to 9 and fractions by eighths up to unity. The type-wheels are placed side by side, but can be turned independently of each other. Beneath them a platen is carried on one end of a lever, whose other end is attached to the armature of an electro- magnet. Between the platen and the wheels a ribbon of paper broad enough to cover the edges of both wheels is passed. The instrument is worked by three lines of wire, one for driving each type-wheel and one for printing and feeding the paper forward. The movement of the type-wheel is accomplished by an escapement acted on by closing and opening the circuit of an electromagnet. For the convenience of the-sender the transmitting instrument is made in the form of two dials, each resembling the dial of an A B C instrument, round the edge of one of which letters are printed,and round the other thenumerals and fractions. Mechanism is provided for opening and closing the circuit, so that by turning a handle (fixed to an axis passing through the centre of the dial) until an index attached to it points to the letter which is to be printed, the type-wheel of the receiving instrument is in the proper position to print that letter, and this is accomplished by depressing a key and closing the third circuit. The printing magnet then raises the platen and presses the paper against the type. Suppose direct United States telegraph stock is to be reported and the price is 93. The operator turns the index on the letter dial to D and presses the printing key; he next turns the index to period and again presses the printing key ; he then turns in succession to U, to period, to S, to period, and prints these; then he turns the index on the figure dial to 9 and prints it, lastly to 3 and to period, and prints them, The quotation then reads on the paper ribbon D. U. S. 93.

Various modifications of this instrument have since been intro- duced. In one form, the ‘‘universal stock printer,” two lines of wire are required, and both type-wheels are driven by one wire, the printing magnet being made to change the action from one wheel to the other when the wheels are brought into a particular position. In another, ‘‘Phelps’s stock printer,” only one line of wire is required, a polarized armature being used for moving the type-wheels and an ordinary neutral armature for the printing. The rapid reversals which work the polarized armature do not last long enough to move the printing lever, but when a pause is made the printing mechanism is relieved and a letter printed. This instrument is similar in principle to the House apparatus and is capable of working at a considerable speed.?

Cowper’s writing telegraph is designed to record the message in Cowper’s written characters ; its arrangement is as follows :—Two lines of writing wire are connected, one with each of two small resistance slides, tele- which are placed in such a way that the sliders move in the same graph.

type-wheel to print correctly. This system of telegraphic printing has a great advantage over the step-by-step system in using con- tinuous instead of intermittent currents, and so avoiding the neces- sity for the rapidly acting clectrie escapement, which, however skil-

fully planned and executed, is always liable to failure when worked too rapidly. In Hughes’s instrument almost perfect accuracy and certainty have been attained ; and in actual practice it has proved to be decidedly superior to all previous type-printing telegraphs, not only in speed and accuracy, but in less liability to mechanical derangement from wear and tear and from accident. It involves many novel features: the receiving electromagnet is of peculiar construction and remarkable efficiency ; the transmitting apparatus has a contrivance to prevent unintentional repetitions of a letter through the operator holding his finger too long on a key ; the type-wheel has a lock for each station, to be opened by its own key, one of the letter keys of any of the instruments in the circuit. This instrument was for some years extensively used in the United States, until superseded by G. M. Phelps’s modification of it, known as the

plane but in directions at right angles to each other. A pen placed at the point of intersection of the lines of motion of the two sliders is connected

with them in such a way that, when it is moved, as in the act of writing, each slider takes up that component of the motion which is in the direction in which it is free to move. The sliders thus vary the resistance in the line circuits by an amount proportional to the motion of the pen, and when a battery is kept joined in the circuit the current varies in the same way. The current is passed through the coils of two electromagnets at the receiving end, each capable of giving motion to a pencil in one line, at right angles to the direction of motion of the other. When the pen at the sending end is moved as in the act of writing a message

1 For these and other type-printing instruments, see Prescott's Electricity and the Electric Telegraph.

the pencil at the receiving end moves in a corresponding manner on aeeount of the variations of the current, and in this way it writes the message on a slip of paper moving beneath its point. Methods of Working Telegraph Circuits.—(1) The arrangement on the open cireuit system for single-current working is shown in fig. 20, in whieh L, represents the line, G a simple form of galvanoseope, used simply to show ue wie that the currents are going to line when the message is being transmitted, K the transmitting key, B the battery, I the re- ceiving instrument, and E the earth- plate. The eomplete cireuit is from the plate E through the instrument I, the key K, and the galvano- scope G to the line L,, then through the eorresponding instru- ments to the earth-plate E at the other end, and baek through the earth to the plate E. The earth is always, exeept for some special reason, used as a return, beeause it offers little resist- anee and saves the expense and the risk of failure of the return wire. The earth-plate E ought to be buriéd in moist earth or in water. In towns the water and gas pipe systems form exeellent earth-plates. It will be observed that the circuit is not in this ease aetually open; the meaning of the expression "open eircuit" is 'no battery to line." Under normal eireumstances the instru- ments at both ends are ready to reeeive, both ends of the line being to earth through the receiving instruments. A signal is sent by depressing the key K, and so changing the contact from a to }, and thus putting the battery to line. On eireuits where

the traffie is small it is usual to make one wire serve several stations. The eonnexions at an intermediate or wayside station are shown at W. S is a switeh, eonsisting of three bloeks of brass fixed to an insulat- ing base. W may be made the terminal station of L, by inserting plug 3, and of L, by inserting plug 2, or the instruments may be eut out of cireuit by inserting plug 1.” In ordinary eircumstances the messages from all stations are sent through the whole line, and thus the operator at any station may transmit, if the line is free, by manipulating his key. The greatest inconvenience of this system arises from the varying strength and resistance of the batteries used at the different stations. As, however, delicate reeording instruments are seldom required on such eircuits little difficulty is experieneed. Positive (2) The connexions for positive and negative current or single- and nega- needle working on open cireuit are shown in fig. 21, in which all the tive letters have u L current, the same meanings as _ before. But N is a single needle instru- ment, and K is a reversing A The evers 1 and 2 press against oy the stops a when the line is free ; hence the line is to earth at both ends. But, if lever 1 is depressed, one pole of the battery is put to line; if 2 is depressed, the other pole is put to the line. In this way the needles of the reeeiving instrument may be made to turn to either left or right ; and, if we eall a motion to the left a dot and a motion to the right a dash, the Morse alphabet may be read from these motions. he connexions for wayside stations are illustrated at W, and will be readily understood from the descrip- tion given under single-eurrent working above.

(3) When the line eonsists in whole or in part of underground or submarine eable the capaeity eauses a very considerable diminu- tion in the speed of working. This is to some extent got over by putting the earth eon- nexion in the middle of the bat- tery and us- ing double the number of eells, as shown in fig. 22. The stop a of the key K is eonneeted

Open circuit, single- current system.

Double current.

Fig. 22,

through a switeh S with one pole of the battery B, and the stop d

in the usual way with the other pole. Suppose the arm ¢ of the switch S to be in contaet with 2; then when the key is mani-

pulated it sends alternately positive and negative currents into the line. If the positive is ealled the signalling current, the line will be charged positively each time a signal is sent ; but as soon as the signal is eompleted a negative charge is eommunieated to the line, thus hastening the diseharge and the return of the relay lever fo its insulated stop. This method of working has been already referred to in eonnexion with Wheatstone's automatie system.

The connexions for single-current working on this system are Closeq illustrated in fig. 23. It differs from the open cireuit in only requir- cireyit ing one battery (although, as L ad te system,

coc & °

in the figure, half of it is often plaeed at each end), in having the receiving instrument be- tween the line and the key, and in having the battery con-2 tinuously to the line. The o battery is kept to the line by the bar c, which short-cireuits the keys. When signals are to be sent from either station the operator turns the bar c out of contact with the stop 0, and then operates precisely as in open eir- euit sending. This system is more expensive than the open cireuit system, as the battery is always at work; but it offers some ad- vantages on eireuits where there are a number of intermediate stations, as the circuit is under a constant eleetromotive force and has the same resistanee no matter whieh station is sending or receiving. The arrangement at a wayside station is shown at W. When the circuit is long and contains a large number of stations,

the sending battery is sometimes divided among them in order to

ive greater uniformity of current along the line. When only one Pathan is used the current at the distant end may be considerably affected by the leakage to carth along the line.

In working long cireuits with ordinary instruments inconven- Relay iently high battery power is required in order to send sufficient working. current to produce the signals. In sueh eases it is usual to employ a loeal battery to produce the signals and to close the local battery circuit by means of a delicate circuit-closing apparatus ealled a relay, whieh is a very delicate electromagnetie key having its lever attached to the armature of the magnet. The arrangement ata station worked by relay is shown in fig, 24, where L is the line of

. t

wire, joined through sh —

&

the key K to one end_t of the coil of the relay magnet R, the other end of whieh is put to earth. When a current passes through R the armature A is attraeted and the loeal cireuit is elosed through the armature at 6. The local battery B, then sends a current through the instrument Iand records the signal. In the form of relay indicated in the figure the armature is held against the stop a by a spring S. In some eases—as, for example, in Siemens's polarized relay, shown in fig. 25—the armature a is put in contact through the pivot h with one pole N of a permanent magnet m, the other pole s of whieh is fixed to the yolk y of a horse-shoe eleetromag- net M. The armature is placed between the poles of the eleetromagnet, a little nearer one pole than the other, so that the magnetic attraetion holds the eon- @ taet lever against the insulated stop without the aid of a spring. This form of relay only answers to currents in one direction, but it is capable of giving great sensibility, and for some pur- poses—for instance, in some methods of quadruplex working—its directional eharaeter is an advantage.

Translation.—In a precisely similar manner a relay may be made Transla- to re-transmit automatically the message over another line, or, what tion. is the same thing, over a continuation of the same line when the whole length is too great for direct working. It is not usual in practice to employ the delieate receiving relay for re-transmitting the message, but it is made to work a coarser instrument, whieh takes the plaee of the sounder, or, it may be, the sounder itself, in the loeal cireuit. It is clear that one reeeiving relay may be

used to work a number of re-transmitting keys in the same local eircuit, and henee to distribute a message simultaneously over 4 number of braneh lines from a eentral station.

Duplex, Quadruplex, and Multiple Telegraphy.—Duplex tele- Duplex. graphy consists in the simultaneous transmission of two messages,

Fic. 25.—Siemens's polarized relay.

one in each direction, over the same wire. The solution of this problem was attempted by Gintl of Vienna in 1853 and in the following year by Frischen and by Siemens and Halske. Within a few years several methods had been proposed by different inventors, but none were at first very successful, not from any fault in the principle, but because the effect of electrostatic capacity of the line was left out of account in the early arrangements. The first to introduce a really good practical system of duplex telegraphy, in which this difficulty was sufficiently overcome for land line purposes, was J. B. Stearns of Boston (Mass.). In order that the line between two stations S, and S, may be worked on the duplex system it is essential that the receiving instrument at S, shall not be acted on by the currents sent into the line at S,, and similarly that the currents sent into the line at S, shall not act on the receiving instrument at S,, while at the same time these currents must act on the instruments at S, and S, respectively. The two methods most commonly employed arc the following. t

(1) In fig. 26 Bis the sending battery, B, a resistance equal to that of the battery, R a set of resistance coils, and C a condenser, _ Suppose the key at

station 8, to be de- (ei) pressed ; then a cur- ! rent flows into the line through cir- cuit 1, and to earth | through circuit 2. Now, if both these currents pass, as in- dicated in the fig- ure, round the elec- tromagnet of the receiving _instru- ment, but in opposite directions, and if their strengths are pro- perly adjusted, no effect will be produced on that instrument. At station S,, however, the current flows to earth, partly through cir- cuit 1 and partly through circuit 2, but in the same direction round the coils of the receiving instrument. Hence, if the current is strong enough, the receiving instrument

at S, will be set in action. Similarly the depression of the key at S, can be made to produce a signal at S, and yet have no effect on the instrument at S, The necessary and sufficient condition is that the currents in circuits 1 and 2 at the sending station shall at all times bear a certain fixed ratio to each other, depending on the coils of the receiving instrument at that station. If for simplicity we suppose the resist- ance of the line to be constant and not to be affected by the trans- mitting apparatus, and to be of zero electrostatic capacity, the fixed ratio may be obtained by adjusting R in the auxiliary circuit 2. In actual practice the line has capacity, and this is com- pensated for by supplying to R from the condenser C capacity equivalent to that of the line. C should be of such a form that the capacity in the circuit can be varied, and it must have the same inductive retardation as the line; that is to say, the capa- city must be distributed along the resistance R in a manner equi- valent to that in which the capacity of the line is distributed along its resistance. A rough approximation to this adjustment will answer the purpose for ordinary land line working, but for submarine cable work a very accurate adjustment is necessary. In order that the manipulation of the key may not affect the resist- ance of the line, the resistance between the point D and E should be as nearly as possible the same for all positions of the key. This implies that the keys shall not at any time break circuit, nor make contact on both the front and the back stops for more than an instant, for an instantaneous break of the circuit would affect the signals being received from the other station. The principle of the ‘‘continuity preserving key,” used for duplex working, will be understood from the figure. So long as the key is not depressed the line is kept to earth through the resistance B, ; when the key is pushed down it suddenly changes to the battery B, being at the transition in contact with both B and B, This produces very little disturbance, because the key is moving quickly at that part of its stroke, and the resistance of the line and receiving instru- ment is generally much higher than that of B,. This is called the “differential method.” The principle was first enunciated by Frischen ; but its present condition is the result of the labours of a large number of experimenters, among whom may be mentioned Siemens and Halske, Stark, Edlund, Gintl, Nystrom, Preece, Nedden, Farmer, Maron, Winter, Stearns, and Muirhead.

(2) The second method to which we may here refer is known as the “‘bridge method” from the similarity of the arrangement (see fig. 27) to that of the

Wheatstone bridge. Instead of sending the currents in the two branches of the divided circuit DP and DQ through the two coils of a differentially wound relay or receiving instrument, as in Frischen's method, two resistances a and 0 are inserted and the instruments are joined between P and Q. It is clear that if the difference of potential between P and Q is unaffected by closing the sending key K no change of current will take place in the instrument circuit. The relative potential of P and Q is not

affected by the manipulation of K if the resistance a is to that of b as the resistance of Lis to that of R; hence that is the arrange- ment used. The same remarks with regard to retardation and

capacity that were made when describing the differential method apply here also. Oue very great advantage in this method is that the instrument used between P and Q may be of any ordinary form.

Most important cables, such as those of the Eastern Telegraph Company and the various Atlantic cables, are worked duplex on Muirhead's plan. What may be called a mechanical method of duplexing a cable was described by Sir W. Thomson in a patent taken out by him in 1858. In this, as in the ordinary methods, a differentially wound receiving instrument was used, one coil being connected with the cable and the other with the earth; but it differed from other methods in requiring no ''artificial" or model cable. The compensation was to be obtained by working the slides of a resistance slide included in the circuit of the compensating coil, either by the sending key or by clockwork relieved by the key, so as to vary the resistance in that circuit according to any law which might be required to prevent the receiving instrument bein affected by the outgoing current. 'Four years later Varley pabantol his model cable, which was the first near approach to a successful solution of the duplex problem on the principle now adopted. It was not, however, a sufficiently perfect representation of a laid cable to serve for duplexing cables of more than a few hundred miles in length.!

By an interesting modification of the bridge method, which has been applied with excellent results by Dr Muirhead to submarine work,

condensers are substituted for a and 8, one being also placcd in the circuit between P and Q. In this case no current flows from the battery through the line or instruments, the whole action being inductive. As we have already stated, the distribution of the capacity along the resistance R must in submarine cable work be made to correspond very accurately with the distribution of the capacity along the resistance of the cable. This is accomplished by Dr Muirhead in the following manner. One side of a sheet of paraffined paper is covered with a sheet of conducting substance, say tinfoil, and over the other side narrow strips of the same sub- stance are arranged gridironwise to form a continuous circuit along the strip. The breadth and thickness of the strip and the thick- ness of the paraffined paper are adjusted so that the relative resist- ance and capacity of this arrangement are the same as those of the cable with which it is intended to be used. A large number of such sheets are prepared and placed together, one over the other, the end of the strip of the first sheet being connected with the beginning of the strip of the second, and so on to the last sheet, the whole representing the conductor of the cable. In the same way all the conducting sheets on the other side of the paper are connected together and form the earth-plate of this artificial cable, thus representing the sea. The leakage through the insulator of the cable is compensated for by connecting high resistances be- tween different points of the strip conductor and the earth coating. Faults or any other irregularity in the cable may be represented by putting resistances of the proper kind into the artificial line. This system of duplexing cables has proved remarkably successful.

Quadruplex telegraphy consists in the simultaneous transmission Quadru- The only new problem plex.

of two messages from each end of the line. introduced is the simultaneous transmission of two messages in the same direction ; this is sometimes called “diplex transmission.” The solution of this problem was attempted by Dr J. B. Stark of Vienna in 1855, and during the next ten years it was worked at by Bosscha, Kramer, Maron, Schaak, Schreder, Wartmann, and others. The first to attain success was Edison, and his method with some modifications is still used. One of the latest arrangements is shown in fig. 28, a brief description of which will indicate the general principle involved. K, and Ky are two transmitting keys the nature of which will be understood

from the illustration ; R, and R, are two differentially wound polarized relays, both of which are supposed to respond to positive currents and to be held against their back-stops by negative currents. When neither key 1s de- pressed a current, which for convenience we call—4, flows to the line ; this is sufficient to overcome the pull of the spring T in the relay R, (the receiving instruments are supposed to be at the other end of the line), and hence the levers of both relays are held against their back-stops. When K, is depressed a current — 1 is sent to the line, and, this being too weak to overcome the spring T, the lever

1 See De Sauty, Journ. Soc. Tel. Eng., vol. ii., 1873.

of R, moves into contact with the auxiliary lever 7 and closes the circuit of the sounder S;. When K, only is depressed a current +4 is sent to the line. This acts on both relays, but is powerful enough to overcome the pull of the spring T, and so to move the lever 2 and break the cir-

cuit of the siphon _re- sounder 8, be- corder and a fore it has time mirror galva- to act. Thus nometer, are K, acts on the shown; one

sounder 8, but not on the sounder 8,. When both keys are depressed a current +1 is sent into the line. This is sufficient to move the lever of R, into con- tact with 7 but not to overcome the pull of T,, and hence the circuit of sounder S, is closed ; it is also sufficient to move the lever of R, and close the circuit of S,. When therefore both keys are down the sounders §, and §, at the other end of the line are both set in action ; the first responds to K, and the second to K,. Thus all the conditions for re simultaneous transmission of two messages are provided for. It is not necessary to enter again into the ques- tion of continuity at the different positions of the keys. The figure illustrates how this diplex system may be duplexed, and hence how quadruplex working can be obtained. It is only necessary to wind the coils of the relay magnets differentially, when, by means of a precisely similar arrangement to that used for simple duplex, the instruments at the sending station are left unaffected by the out- going currents, but are

affected by the incoming currents. The method here indicated is on the differential principle; but it is scarcely necessary to say that the bridge method is equally a cable. A combination of the bridge and the differential methods has been used by Prescott and Smith, and possesses some advan- tages in certain cases. It is impossible in this article to go into the great variety of detail in arrangement and method with which it is possible to obtain good results.

The several methods that have been proposed for the transmission of a number of messages in one direction ou the same wire are reducible to two classes. In one the time which a revolving con- tact slider takes to make one revolution is divided into as many intervals as there are sets of sending and receiving instruments on the line, and by means of it the current is closed through the different sets of apparatus in succession. This implies the syn- chronous movement of the revolving sliders at the two ends of the linc. Ina sense this may be said to be simultaneous transmission : all the messages are being sent at the same time, but the progress of any one message is slower than it would be if it alone was occupy- ing the whole line in the ordinary way. The method possesses some

resistance S, three condensers C,, C2, C3, an artificial cable AC, the receiving instruments I and G, and one or more resistances R for adjusting the leakage current. The peculiar construction of AC has been already referred to. The conductor of the cable is practi-

cally insulated, as the condensers in the bridge have a very high resistance ; hence no appreciable current ever flows into or out of Cable

SSSI

the line. Two receiving 1n- struments, a

only is abso- lutely neces- = sary, Pub cbs is convenient to have the

Fig, 29. galvanometer ready, so that in case of accident to the recorder it

may be at once switched into circuit by the switch s. When one of the levers of K is depressed, the condenser C, and the cable, and the condenser C, and the artificial cable, are simultaneously charged in series; but, if the capacity of C, bears the same pro- portion to the Sa ays of the cable as the capacity of C, bears to the capacity of the artificial cable, and if the other adjustments are properly made, no charge will be communicated to C,. After a very short interval of time, the length of which depends on the inductive retardation of the cable, the condensers corresponding to C, and C, at the other end begin to be charged from the cable, and since the charge of C, passes through the receiving instrument I or G the signal is conn The charging of C, at the receiving end will take place, no matter what is the absolute potential of the condensers, consequently the incoming signals are not affected by those which are being transmitted from that end. In actual prac- tice the receiving instrument is so sensitive that the difference of potential between the two coatings of the condenser C, produced by the incoming signal is only a very small fraction of the potential of the battery B. When the key is relieved the condensers and cables at once begin to return to zero potential, and if the key is depressed and relieved several times in rapid succession the cable is divided into sections of varying potential, which travel rapidly towards the receiving end, and indicate their arrival there by pro- ducing corresponding fluctuations in the charge of the condenser Oy, All cables of any great length are worked by reverse currents, the single needle alphabet being used: that is to say, currents in one direction indicate dots and in the other direction dashes.

The following descriptions of the mirror galvanometer and the siphon recorder are, with some slight alteration, taken from a lecture delivered by Sir W. Thomson before the Institution of Engineers and Shipbuilders in Scotland.4

advantages when the line is capable of being worked at a higher speed than a single operator can attain, or when one of the stations can advantageously be used as a distributing station, for in that

(1) The instrument first used for receiving signals through a long Mirror submarine cable (the short-lived 1858 Atlantic cable) was the mirror

galvano- galvanometer,® which consisted of a small mirror with four light meter,

Con- nexions.

case one set of apparatus may be used as an automatic distributor. Multiple telegraphy on this plan was proposed by Thomson in 1858.” A very complete set of a paratus for the purpose was shown by Meyer at the Vienna exhibition of 1873.2, Delaunay’s multiple telegraph is the most recent development of the system, and has been lately adopted on some circuits in Great Britain.?

In the other class there are joined to the two ends of the line of wire a number of branch circuits, in each of which a set of trans- mitting and receiving apparatus isincluded. In the circuit, between the line and each of the sending keys, an electromagnetic vibrator is placed so as to open and close the circuit a great number of times during each signal. The vibrators in the key circuits at one end of the line have all different and, if possible, relatively incommen- surable periods. The receivers at the other end of the line consist of a corresponding set of electromagnetic vibrators, mounted on Tesonators and having exactly the same vibrational periods as those in the key circuits at the sending end. When any one of the keys 1s manipulated the currents sent into the line have such a pulsatory character that they only affect the receiver, which is capable of vibrating freely in unison with these pulsations. When a number of keys are manipulated at the same time the receivers analyse the resultant wave, each picking out its own component, thus separ- ating the different messages. The ‘harmonic telegraph” of Mr Hlisha Gray of America is a good example of this class.

Working of Submarine Cables.—The arrangement of the apparatus for working some of the most recent cables is shown in fig. 29. The cable is supposed to be worked duplex ; but, if 8, Cj, Cy, and AC are removed and the key connected directly with C3, the arrange- ment for simplex working is obtained. The apparatus consists of a sending battery B, a reversing transmitting key K, a slide of small

1 Tel. Jowrn., September 1886.

2 For a description, see Prescott's Electric Telegraph, . 862. 3 Preece, Journ. Soc. Tel. Eng., vol. xv. p. 231. aed i

magnets attached to its back (weighing-in all less than half a grain), suspended by means of a single silk fibre within the hollow of a bobbin of fine wire,—a suitable controlling magnet being placed adjacent to the apparatus. The action of the instrument is as follows. On the passage of a current of electricity through the fine wire coil the suspended magnets with the mirror attached tend to take up a position at right angles to the plane of the coil, and are deflected to one side or the other according as the current is in one direction or the other. Deflexions to one side are interpreted as dots and to the other side as dashes, and the messages are trans- mitted in accordance with the international Morse code of signals.

(2) The spark recorder in some respects foreshadowed the more Spark perfect instrument—the siphon recorder—which was introduced recorder.

some years later. Its action was as follows. To an indicator, suitably supported, a to-and-fro motion was given by the electro- magnetic actions due to the electric currents constituting the signals. The indicator was connected with a Ruhmkorff coil or other equivalent apparatus, designed to cause a continual succession of sparks to pass between the indicator and a metal plate situated beneath it and having a plane surface parallel to its line of motion. Over the surface of the plate and between it and the indicator there was passed, at a regularly uniform speed, in a direction per- pendicular to the line of motion of the indicator, a material capable of being acted on physically by the sparks, either through their chemical action, their heat, or their perforating force. The record of the signals given by this instrument was an undulating line of fine perforations or spots, and the character and succession of the undulations were used to interpret the signals desired to be sent.

(3) The latest form of receiving instrument for long submarine Siphon cables is the siphon recorder, for which Sir W. Thomson obtained recorder.

4 See his Mathematical and Physical Papers, vol. ii. p. 168. 5 For a description of the mirror galvanometer, see art. GALVANOMETER, Vol. xX. p. 50 sg.

(4) The automatic curb sender was designed by Sir W. Thomson Auto- for the purpose of diminishing the effect of inductive embarrass- matic ment in long cables. In ordinary hand-sending the end of the curb cable is put to one or the other pole of the battery and to earth sender,

his first patent in 1867. Within the three succeeding years great improvements were effected on it, and the instrument has since that date been exclusively employed in working most of the more

important submarine cables of the world,—indeed all except those on which the mirror galvanometer method is in use. In the siphon recorder (see fig. 30) the indicator consists of a light rectangular signal coil of fine wire, suspended be- tween the poles of two powerful elec- tromagnets M, M so as to be free to move about its longer axis, which is verti- eal, and so joined that the electric signal currents through the cable pass through _ it. A fine glass siphon tube is suspended ¥ with freedom to move in only onc degree, and is con- nected with the sig- nal-coil and moves with it. The short leg of the siphon tube dips into an in- sulated ink-bottle, so that the ink it contains becomes electrified, while the

long leg has its open end at a very small distance from a brass |

table, placed with its surface parallel to the plane in which the mouth of the leg moves, and over which a slip of paper may be passed at a uniform rate, as in the spark recorder. The ink is electrified by a small induction electrical machine E placed on the top of the instrument ; this causes it to fall in very minute drops from the open end of the siphon tube upon the brass table or the paper slip passing over it. When therefore the signal-coil moves in obedience to the electric signal currents passed through it, the motion communicated to the siphon is recorded on the moving slip of paper by a wavy line of ink-marks very close together. The interpretation of the signals is according to the Morse code,—the dot and dash being represented by

deflexions of the line of dots to one side or other of the centre line of the paper. A very much simpler form of siphon –

recorder has been de- frre vised and brought into use within the last few years. Instead of the electromagnets, two bundles of long bar- Si magnets of square sec- tion and made up of square bars of glass- hard steel are used. They are supported vertically on a cast- iron socket, and on the upper end of each is fitted a soft iron shoe, shaped to concentrate the lines of force and thus produce a strong Inagnetic field in the space within which the signal-coilissuspended. Instruments of this wii kind have been | Hl made to work lif f both with and = = Without electrifi- = ——— cation of the ink. 3. Without electrifi- cation the instrument (sec fig. 31) is very simple and compact, and capable of doing good work on cables 500 or 600 miles long. When constructed for electrification of the ink they are available for much greater lengths, but for cables such as the Atlantic the original form 1s still used. The strongest magnetic field hitherto obtained b permanent magnets (of glass-hard steel) is about 3000 C.G.S. Wit. the electromagnets used in the original form of siphon recorder a magnetic field of about or over 5000 C.G.S. is easily obtained. Fig. 32 shows a facsimile of part of a message received and recorded by @ siphon recorder, such as that of fig. 30, from one of the Eastern Telegraph Company's cables about 830 miles long.

iy

H f '| —

yy =

m!

Fie. 31.—Siphon recorder.

alternately, the relative time during which it is to battery and to earth depending to a great extent on the operator. By the auto-

2° A. & «#2, & © ff ¢ – * (€ 2 2 erp €c¢e FF 24

Rt e FF m@ d@it.@ te Pp Fia. 32,—Facsimile of siphon recorder message.

matic curb sender the cable is put to one or the other pole of the battery and then to the reverse pole for definite proportionate times during each signal. The cable is thus charged first positively and then negatively, or vice versa, for each signal. This method not only facilitates the discharge of the cable, and so accelerates the return of the index of the receiving instrument to zero, but provides the means of sending positive and negative currents into the cable at the proper times and for the proper intervals. The action. of the instrument is ae like that of Wheatstone's automatic transmitter, by a perforated slip of paper. The arrange- ment of the perforations and the method of using the paper sli

are, however, quite different, The paper is fed forward by a centra row of holes, which are therefore continuous. The dots and dashes of the message are represented by the side rows of holes; but the two currents required for a dot are produced wholly by one hole on one'side and those for a dash by one hole on the other side. The perforated slip is exactly similar to the message written by the siphon recorder, the side holes occupying the same relative positions as the loops to one side or other of the central line in the record. As the side holes reach a certain point in their passage through the instru: ment they allow the end of one or the other of two levers to fall; the other end of the lever lifts a light contact spring, forming one

mw, tb

-lever of a reversing key, and makes electrical connexion between

the battery and another set of Springs; which also form the levers of a reversing key. The spring is held up, by a flange on the edge of a revolving wheel passing under it, during the time required by the paper to advance through the distance between two central holes. During this interval the current is reversed at the proper time by a pair of adjustable cams fixed to the same spindle as the flanged wheel. This method of transmission has been found quite successful, though it has not becn brought into use, as hand- sending has hitherto proved sufficient for the work required.

Speed of Signalling.—The mathematical theory of the speed of Speed of telegraphic signalling was given in a paper on ‘‘ The Theory of the signal- Electric Telegraph" communicated by Sir W. Thomson! to the ling.

Royal Society in 1855. He shows that, if & be the wire resistance, e the capacity per unit length, and 7 the total length of the line, the current at the receiving end at any time ¢ after the application of the battery at the sending end is given by the equation C,=C {1 -2(e -—e4#+ 2 — 16 + &e,)}, where C is the maximum current which the battery is capable of t

maintaining through the line, and ¢ is equal to (?)@ when a is equal to kel log, ($)/r*._ The number # is quite arbitrary; it is chosen because it makes a nearly equal to the time required for the current to become sensible at one end of the line after the battery has been

i applied to the other end. The number 10’°, which is more con- venient for calculation and which does not differ greatly from 4, was subsequently adopted by Sir W. Thomson, and also by Professor Jenkin.” The equation may be written

i=€ 1 a§ (c —a%t[kel2 at 4×2t/hecl2 a Dri /kel2 ke.) t,

which shows plainly how the current is affected by the length, the resistance, and the capacity of the line.

It is evident from this equation that a finite time is required after the battery has been applied at the sending end for the current to become sensible at the receiving end, the interval being practi- cally equal to a, and also that for similar actions the intervals be- tween operations for one line must be to the corresponding intervals for another line directly as the values of a@ or of kel for the two lines. We see, therefore, that for lines of the same type, worked in the same manner, the speed of working will be inversely as the square of the length of the line, or, if the type varies, inversely as the product KQ, where K is the total resistance and Q the total capacity

1 See his Mathematical and Physical Papers, vol. ii. p. 61. 2 See Jenkin, Electricity and Magnetism, p. 331.

of the line. The interval a must not be confounded with the time required for each signal: it is a measure of the slowness of trans- mission ; but the

number of signals which can be received in a given time, on any one line, depends on the method of working and on the sensibility of the instruments employed. The ratios of the number of signals which can be sent over different lines in a stated time are the same as the ratios of the values of a for these lines. The value of a for the different Atlantic cables varies between a fifth and a quarter of a second, and, as the time required for the current to reach 90 per cent. of its maximum value is ten times , an instrument which requires as much as 90 per cent. of the full current to produce a signal and a fall to 50 per cent. between the signals could only receive about one signal every two seconds or between one and two words per minute. The instruments actually used attain to a speed of about twenty times this; but they are capable of showing distinctly a current of a ten-thousandth, or even less, of the maximum current. The value of for ordinary land lines is very small, probably not exceeding the five-thousandth part of a second for a circuit 500 miles in length. The current,

TELEMETER, or RancEFInDER. This is an instru- ment used in modern warfare to determine the distance or range to an enemy's position, in order that correct elevations may be given to guns or rifles directed against it. Telemeters have been made on three distinct princi- ples, and classified as acoustic, optical, and trigonometrical respectively.

Acoustic telemeters record the time which elapses between seeing the flash or smoke and hearing the report of a gun, rifle, or shell, the range being given in yards as 'the time in seconds x 364°6." The Boulengé telemeter is the best known of this class. It consists of a graduated glass tube filled with liquid and containing a small metal tra- veller, At the flash the instrument is brought to a vertical position, and the traveller starts from zero ; at the detona- tion it is turned to a horizontal position and the traveller stops. The objections to the acoustic telemeter are that the rate of transmission of sound in air is affected by wind and other local conditions and that the instrument cannot be used until firing has commenced.

Optical or perspective telemeters determine the distance to any point by observing the size of some object of known dimensions, as seen in a

graduated telescope. Porro's telemeter, Elliott's telescope, and Nordenfelt's macro- meter illustrate the principle. The chief defect of the system is that the objects most conveniently observed— men and horses—vary considerably in size, so that the assumption of a constant dimension may be productive of error.

Trigonometrical telemeters shorten the ordinary methods of surveying by adapting them to military purposes. They are of two kinds,—field rangefinders and rangefinders for coast batteries.

(1) Field rangefinders exist in great variety, and differ from one another both in the trigonometrical methods pur- sued and in the mechanical peculiarities exhibited. The following are the common solutions of what is technically called "the range-finding triangle,"—7.c., a triangle in which O (fig. 1) is the object the distance to which is required, AOB an acute angle, and AB the base,—O being visible both from A and B.

(i.) Where the base is a fixed length and the

angles are variable-—A fixed base is rarely

adopted except when the base forms part of

the instrument, the angles being observed by a B powerful telescopes. The range is usually read Fig. 1. in yards by the assistance of verniers, extreme perfection of mechanism being necessary. Many ingenious instru- ments of the kind have been devised, but none have as yet proved satisfactory. With a fixed base the accuracy diminishes as the range increases, (ii.) Where the base and the angles are variable.—The base angles are generally observed by instruments of the theodolite type, and the

therefore, rises almost to its full value for each signal when the time of contact is as small as the five-hundredth part of a second, or, on the Wheatstone instrument, when the speed is about 500 words per minute. There is, however, a very sensible increase in the effective resistance of the circuit, especially when iron wire is used, when signals are sent as rapidly

as 100 per second, so that higher battery power is required for fast than for slow rates of speed. The difficulty in working land lines at rates up to 300, or even more, words per minute is not to any serious extent electrical, but is in great measure due to material and magnetic inertia in the receiving instruments. Althongh land lines can be worked ata very high speed when the whole of the wire is insulated on poles, the rate is greatly diminished if a length of underground or of sub- marine cable is included in the circuit. In practice also the speed depends greatly on the position of the cable in the circuit ; for ex- ample, the actual speed from Dublin to London, according to Mr Preece, is about twice as great as that from London to Dublin. Mr Culley states that the greatest effect is produced when the cable is in the middle of the circuit. (T. GR.)

base is actually measured or found by means of a sub-base, The range is obtained by table or calculating scale. The Nolan rangefinder, which was the first telemeter used by the British artillery, was of this kind. (iii.) Where one base angle is a right angle, the other angles and base being variable.—The instrument used is generally double-reflect- ing of the sextant type,—the base being found as in (ii.). The most perfect example is the Watkin rangefinder, used

Fic. 2,—Watkin field rangefinder.

by the British horse and field ar- tillery. It (fig. 2) consists of an “Zéaedea horizon glass capable of assuming two positions, and an index glass set in a steel arm, which is worked by a movable collar on a graduated bar, and this again is moved by the turning of a graduated cylinder. O (fig. 3) being the o

object, the observer sets up a picket at A, and with the instrument at zero (the horizon glass being inclined 45° to the index glass) finds the right angle at the point C. A sub-base AB of 6 yards is then set off, and (with glasses set parallel and the sliding collar at 6) the ob- server reflects B upon A by turning the cy- linder, which is thus made to record the base AC in yards. This reading being set on the graduated bar by moving the sliding collar, the observer proceeds to A, and from there® reflects C upon O, which causes the range to be given in yards on the cylinder. In this operation the position of the sliding collar regulates the movement of the steel bar so that the number of turns of the cylinder is always a true measure of the range OC,

whatever the length of the base AC. (iv.) Where the angles are fixed and the base is a measure of the range.— The base points are determined by the use of prisms or of mirrors reflecting the particular angles adopted. The base is measured or found by a subsidiary triangle, and multi- plied by a constant to give the range. The Weldon range- finder, recently issued to the British infantry, is on this principle. It consists of three prisms, and is generally used as follows. (fig. 4) being the object and D a con- venient distant point, the observer makes with the first prism the right angle OAD. He then retires in the direc- tion DA till the second prism records the angle OBD=

TEHEL—TEL

88° 51’ 15”, when the range = 50 x AB. If it is inconvenient to measure AB, the observer can retire from B in the line OB until the third prism records the) angle OCA=74° 53’ 15”, when the range = 200 x BC. The prisms must be held in the plane of the objects and looked into at the same point. This rangefinder is very simple and portable, but is frequently inappli- cable on hilly or broken ground, and does not possess great accuracy. : A The merits of different field range- finders depend mainly upon the balance of advantages they offer with respect to accuracy, suitability to variety of ground, simplicity, portability, and durability, these conditions being of a more or less conflicting character. The fol- lowing are recognized principles:—(1) the naked eye cannot with certainty appreciate less than one minute dif- ference of angle, therefore telescopic power is necessary in proportion as the base is short compared with the range; (2) telescopes of high power cannot be steadied by hand alone; (3) the longer the base the more incon- venient are any restrictions as to its length or direction ; (4) it is a disadvantage to be compelled to traverse the line joining base points; (5) the longest base which it is convenient to measure by hand is that length of

sew OD

c Fia. 4.—Weldon range- finder,

measuring line which can be stretched tight in a high wind.

(2) Rangefinders. for Coast Batteries.—Rangefinding is less adapted to the requirements of coast defence than “position finding,”—a method which furnishes every gun with its proper training and elevation so that it can be fired without sighting the target. Rangefinders are, how- ever, sometimes employed. The most worthy of notice is the Watkin depression rangefinder used by the British artillery in coast batteries. The instrument resembles in principle the Watkin field rangefinder, the height above the sea-level being a vertical base. The range is found by observing the angle of depression to the object. This is done by a powerful cross-wire telescope, which forms part of the instrument. The fastest steamer can be continuously followed, and even the successive grazes of shot and shell can be observed. The instrument is levelled upon a tripod stand. When necessary, it finds its exact height in feet above the water-level in any state of tide by reference to a datum distance, and it records the range in yards auto- matically on a graduated cylinder. An interesting con- trivance combining telemeter and gun-sight, applicable to guns in permanent emplacements over non-tidal waters, has been tried in Italy. By means of a cam the hind-sight of the gun is always maintained in the position necessary to give the proper elevation in firing, so that it only remains to make the sights cover the target. (A. W. w.”)

TELEPHONE

ie is the art of reproducing sounds at a distance from their source. The term was first used by Philip Reis of Friedrichsdorf, in a lecture delivered before the Physical Society of Frankfort in 1861.1 But, although this lecture and Reis’s subsequent work received considerable notice, little progress was made until the sub- ject was taken up between 1874 and 1876 by Alexander Graham Bell, a native of Edinburgh, then resident in Boston, Mass. Bell, like Reis, employed electricity for the reproduction of sounds; but he attacked the problem in a totally different manner. This will be better understood if we consider shortly on what the chief characteristics of sound depend (compare Acoustics).

The sensation of sound is produced by rapid fluctuations in the pressure of the atmosphere on the tympanum of the

‘ear. If the fluctuations are irregular and non-periodic,

similar example is furnished by what has been variously Mechan- designated as the “string,” “toy,” “lovers,” and ‘ mechan- 7 tele- ical” telephone. Two disks of thin metal, or two stretched P?°*

membranes, each furnished with a mouthpiece, are con- nected together by a thin string or wire attached at each end to the centres of the membranes. A good example may be made with two cylindrical tin cups; the bottoms form the membranes and the cups the mouthpieces. When the connecting string is held taut and sounds, such as those of ordinary speech, are produced in front of one of the membranes, pulses corresponding to the fluctuations of the atmospheric pressure are transmitted along the string and communicated to the other membrane, which in its turn communicates them to the air, thus reproducing the sound. In both these examples all the three characteristics —pitch, relative intensity, and quality—of sound are reproduced.

Let us now return to the development of the application Page’s of electricity to telephony. In July 1837 Dr C. G. Page dis- of Salem, Mass., drew attention to the sound given out by °°’:

the sound is called a noise; if they are cyclic and follow a regular and sufficiently rapid periodic law, the sound is musical, In connexion with the present subject it is im-

portant to notice the three characteristics of a musical

sound, namely, pitch, loudness, and quality. The pitch of:

a musical sound depends on the number of cycles passed through by the fluctuations of the pressure per unit of time ; the loudness depends on the amount or the ampli- tude of the fluctuation in each cycle; the quality depends on the form or the nature of the fluctuation in each cycle. The necessary condition for a successful system of tele- phony is the ability to reproduce these characteristics.

I. History.

In 1831 Wheatstone by his “magic lyre” experiment showed? that, when the sounding-boards of two musical instruments are connected together by a

rod of pine wood, a tune played on one will be faithfully reproduced by the other. This only answers, however, for telephoning mu- sical sounds to short distances. Another and somewhat

eas Ueber Telephonie durch den galvanischen Strom," in Jahresber. d. physikalischen Vereins zu Frankfurt am Main, 1860-61, p. 57. See his Scientific Papers, p. 47.

an electromagnet at the instant when the electric circuit is closed or broken, and in October of the same year he dis- cussed, in a short article? entitled "Galvanic Music," the musical note produced by rapidly revolving the armature of an electromagnet in front of the poles. Experiments bearing on this subject were subsequently made by a great number of investigators. Page's discovery is of considerable im- portance in connexion with the theory of action of various forms of telephone, and was a very important feature in the early attempts by Reis to transmit music and speech. On

3 See Silliman's Journ., xxxii. p. 396 and xxxiii. p. 118.

4 Marrian, Phil. Mag., 3d ser., xxv. p. 382; Beatson, Arch. de ? Elect., v. p. 197 ; De la Rive, Treatise on Electricity, vol. i. p. 806, also Phil. Mag., 3d ser., vol. xxxv. p. 422, and Comp. Rend., xx. p. 1287, xxii. p. 482; Matteucci, Arch. de [Blect., v. 389; Guillemin, Comp. Rend., xxii. p. 264; Wertheim, Comp. Rend., xxii. pp. 336, 544, xxvi. p. 505, also Ann. de Chim. et de Phys., xxiii. p. 302, and Phil. Mag., 3d ser., xxviii. p. 544; Jannair, Comp. Rend., xxiii. p. 319; Joule, Phil. Mag., 3d ser., xxv. pp. 76, 225; Laborde, Comp. Rend., 1. p. 692; Poggendorff, Pogg. Ann., lxxxvii. p. 139, xcviii. p. 198; Du Moncel, Hap. de 0 Elect., vol. ii. p. 125, iii. p. 83; and Delesenne, Bibl. Univ., 1841, xvi. p. 406.

Bour- seul's sugges- tions.

Reis's tele- phone.

26th August 1854 there appeared in Z'Jllustration (Paris) an interesting article by Charles Bourseul on the electric transmission of speech.! The

writer recommended the use of a flexible plate at the source of sound, which would vibrate in response to the varying pressure of the air, and thus open and close an electric circuit, and of a similar plate at the receiving station, which would be acted on electromagnetically and thus give out as many pulsations as there are breaks in the current. These suggestions were to some extent an anticipation of the work of Reis ; but the conditions to be fulfilled before the sounds given out at the receiving station can be similar in pitch, quality, and relative intensity to those produced at the transmitting station are not stated, and do not seem to have been appreciated.

In Reis's lecture an apparatus was described which has given rise to much discussion as to priority in the invention of the telephone. The instrument was described in over fifty publications ?in various countries, and was well known to physicists previous to Bell's introduction of the electric telephone as a competitor with the electric telegraph. Reis caused a membrane to open and close an electric circuit at each vibration, thus transmitting as many electric pulses through the circuit as there were vibrations in the sound. 'These electric pulses were made to act on an electromagnet at the receiving station, which, in accord- ance with Page's discovery, gave out a sound of a pitch corresponding to the number of times it was magnetized or demagnetized per second. Reis's object was to re- produce at a distance not only music but also human speech; but that he did not wholly succeed is clear from the following extract from his lecture: '' Hitherto it has not been possible to reproduce human speech with sufficient distinctness. The consonants are for the most part repro- duced pretty distinctly, but not the vowels as yet in an equal degree." Considering the time at which he wrote, Reis seems to have understood very well the nature of the vibrations he had to reproduce, but he failed to compre- hend how they could be reproduced by electricity. His fundamental idea—the interruption of the current—was a, fatal mistake, which was not at the time properly under- stood. The suggestion of Bourseul and the experiments of Reis are founded on the idea that a succession of currents, corresponding in number to the successive undulations of the pressure on the membrane of the transmitting in- strument, could reproduce at the receiving station sounds of the same character as those produced at the sending station. Neither of them seemed to recognize anything as important except pitch and amplitude, and Reis thought the amplitude was to some extent obtained by the varying length of

contact in the transmitting instrument. This might possibly be to a small extent true; but, considering the small capacity of the circuits he used and the nature of his receiving instrument, it is hardly probable that dura- tion of contact sensibly influenced the result. The quality of the sounds was to some extent also reproduced ; but, judging from the results of recent telephone investigation, it is highly probable that this was due, not to the varying duration, but to the varying firmness of the contact. Since the effect of the degree of contact has, through the re-

searches of Bell, Berliner, Edison, Hughes, Elisha Gray,

and others, become generally understood, it has become easy to make instruments very similar to those of Reis ;

1 See also Didaskalia: Blatter fiir Geist, Gemiith, u. Publicitat, Frank- fort, No, 232, 28th September 1854; Du Moncel, Laposé des Appli- cations de I Electricité, Paris, vol. ii. p. 25, ed. 1854, vol. iii. p. 110, ed. 1856, and Comp. Rend., 26th November 1877.

2 The English reader may consult—Journ. Soc. Tel. Eng., March 1888 ; British Assoc. Rep., 1863 ; Civ. Eng. and Arch. Journ., vol. xxvi. p. 307; R. M. Ferguson, Zlectricity, London, 1866, p. 257; S. P, Thompson, Philip Reis, the Inventor of the Telephone, London, 1883.

and even his instruments, with slight modification, can be made to speak fairly well. The accidental transmission of words by Reis, the occasional recognition of the voice of a singer, and other instances of the transmission of quality were no doubt due to this element, the existence of or the necessity for which was never, so far as the present writer knows, hinted at by Reis.

The next worker at the telephone, and the one to whom Bell’s». the present great commercial importance of the instrument searches,

is due, was Bell. His aim was the production, by means of the undulations of pressure on a membrane caused by sound, of an electric current the

strength of which should at every instant vary directly as the pressure varied.? His first idea seems to have been to employ the vibrations of the current in an electric circuit, produced by moving the armature of an electromagnet included in the circuit nearer to or farther from the poles of the magnet. He proposed to make the armature partake of the vibrations of the atmosphere either by converting it into a suitable vibrator or by controlling its vibrations by a stretched membrane of parchment. In the early trials the armature had the form of a hinged lever of iron carrying a stud at one end, which pressed against the centre of a stretched membrane. The experiments with this form were not successful, and, with the view of making the moving parts as light as possible, he substituted for the comparatively heavy lever armature a small piece of clock spring, about the size of a sixpence, glued to the centre of the diaphragm. The magnet was mounted with its end carrying the coil op- posite, and very close to, the centre of the piece of clock spring. This answered sufficiently well to prove the feasibility of the plan, and subsequent experiments were directed to the discovery of the best form and arrange- ment of the parts. An increase in the size of the iron disk attached to the membrane augmented both the loud- ness and the distinctness of the sounds, and this finally led to the adoption of the thin iron disk now in use, which is supported round its edge, and acts as both membrane and armature. Again, the form of the opening or mouth- piece in front of the membrane exercised considerable influence on the efficiency of the instrument, and it was ultimately ascertained that a small central opening, with a thin air space extending across the face of the membrane, was best. It was also found that comparatively small magnets were sufficient, and that there was no particular virtue in the closed circuit and electromagnet, but that a small permanent magnet having one pole in contact with the end of the core of a short electromagnet, the coil of which was in circuit with the line, but which had no per- manent current flowing through it, answered the purpose quite as well. In fact the effect of keeping a permanent current flowing through the line and the coils of the electromagnet was to keep the core of the electro-magnet magnetized. This seems to have been almost simul taneously pointed out by Bell and others who were work- ing in conjunction with him and by Professor Dolbear. Many experiments were made for ascertaining the best length of wire to use in the coil of the transmitting and the receiving instrument; but this is

clearly a question dependent to a large extent on the nature of the line and the system of working adopted.

After Bell's success a large number of experimenters entered the field, and an almost endless variety of modi- fications have been described. But few possess any real merit, and almost none have any essentially new principle.

3 See A. G. Bell, "Telephone Researches," in Journ. Soc. Tel. Hng., 31st October 1877.

4 The extreme smallness of the magnets which might be successfully employed was first demonstrated by Professor Peirce of Brown Uni-

versity, Providence, R.I. 5 For a detailed description, in a collected form, of a large number

fe eEPAON EF

A telephone transmitter and a receiver on a novel plan were patented in July 1877 by Edison, shortly after the introduction of Bell's instruments. The receiver was based on the change of friction produced by the passage of an electric current through the point of contact of certain substances in relative motion. In one form a drum, mounted on an axis and covered by a band of paper soaked in a solution of caustic potash, is turned under a spring the end of which is in contact through a platinum point with the paper. The spring is attached to the centre of a diaphragm in such a way that, when the drum is turned, the friction between the point of the spring and the paper deflects the diaphragm. The current from the line is made to pass through the spring and paper to the cylinder. Now it had been previously shown by Edison that, when a current is made to pass through an arrange- ment like that just described, the friction between the paper and the spring is greatly diminished. Hence, when the undulating telephonic currents are made to pass through the apparatus, the constant variation of the friction of the spring causes the deflexions of the diaphragm to vary in unison with the variation of the electric currents, and sounds are given out corresponding in pitch, and also to some extent in quality, with the sounds produced at the transmitting station. A cylinder of chalk was used in some of Edison's later

experiments with this receiver. The transmitter is illustrated (see fig. 10) and described (p. 182) below.

Experiments very similar to these of Edison were made by Elisha Gray of Boston, Mass., and described by him in papers communicated to the American Electrical Society in 1875 and 1878. In these experiments the electric current passed through the fingers of the operator's hand, which thus took the place of the spring in Edison's ap- paratus. The diaphragm was itself used as the rubbing surface, and it was either mounted and rotated or the fingers were moved over it. When the current passed, the friction was felt .to increase, and the effect of sending a rapidly undulating current through the arrangement was to produce a sound. The application of this apparatus to the transmission of music is described by Gray.?

In another form of telephone, brought prominently forward by Professor Dolbear,? the effects are produced by electrostatic instead of electromagnetic forces, as in the Bell telephone. Sir W. Thomson observed in 18633 that when a condenser is charged or discharged a sharp click is heard, and a similar observation was made by Cromwell F. Varley, who proposed to make use of it in a telegraphic receiving instrument.* In Dolbear's instrument one plate of a condenser is a flexible diaphragm, connected with the telephone line in such a way that the varying electric potential produced by the action of the transmitting tele- phone causes an increased or diminished charge in the condenser. This alteration of charge causes a correspond- ing change in the mutual attraction of the plates of the condenser ; hence the flexible plate is made to copy the vibrations of the diaphragm of the transmitter. It is Obvious that this apparatus may be used either as a transmitter or as a receiver, but that the effects must under ordinary circumstances be in either case extremely feeble.

In the Reis instruments the transmitter and receiver are separate parts, which are not interchangeable. The Bell telephone can be used either as a transmitter or as a of these modifications, see Du Moncel, "Le Téléphone," in Bibliothéque des Merveilles, Paris, 1882.

1 See George B. Prescott, The Speaking Telephone, London, 1879, pp. 151-205,

- Scientific American, 18th June 1881.

: Llectrostatics and Magnetism, p. 236.

See Tel. Journ., 1st August 1877, p. 178 ; also Adams, Journ. Soc. Tel, Eng., 1877, p. 476.

receiver. The Edison receiver and the Dolbear condenser were only intended to be used as receiving instruments.

It was very early recognized—and, indeed, is mentioned Liquid in the first patents of Bell, and in a caveat filed by Elisha ttans- Gray in the United States patent office only some two anaes hours after Bell's application for a patent—that sounds Be E and spoken words might be transmitted to a distance by Gray. causing the vibrations of a diaphragm to vary the re- sistance in the circuit. Both Bell and Gray proposed to do this by introducing a column of liquid into the circuit, the length or the resistance of which could be varied by causing the vibrations of the diaphragm to vary the depth of immersion of a light rod fixed to it and dipping into the liquid (see figs. 8, 9 below). This idea has been per- haps the most fruitful of any modification of telephonic apparatus introduced.

On 4th April 1877 Mr Emile Berliner filed a caveat in Ber-

the United States patent office, in which he stated that, liner's on the principle of the variation with pressure of the resist- "°°" ance at the contact of two conductors, he had made an ooo instrument which could be used as a telephone transmitter, mitter. and that, in consequence of the mutual forces between the two parts of the current on the two sides of the point of contact, the instrument was capable of acting as a receiver. The caveat was illustrated by a sketch showing a diaphragm with a metal patch in the centre, against which a metal knob was lightly pressed by an adjusting screw. This seems to have been the first transmitter in which it was proposed to use the resistance at the contact of two conductors.

Almost simultaneously with Berliner, Edison conceived Edison's the idea of using a variable resistance transmitter. He micro- proposed to introduce into the circuit a cell containing Seon carbon powder, the pressure on which could be varied by ;itter. the vibrations of a diaphragm. He sometimes held the carbon powder against the diaphragm in a small shallow cell (from a quarter to half an inch in diameter and about an eighth of an inch deep), and sometimes he used what he describes as a fluff', that is, a little brush of silk fibre with plumbago rubbed into it. In another form the plum- bago powder was worked into a button cemented together with syrup and other substances. In the specification of the patent applied for on 21st July 1877 he showed a sketch of an instrument which consisted of a diaphragm, with a small platinum patch in the centre for an electrode, against which a hard point, made of plumbago powder cemented together with india-rubber and vulcanized, was pressed by a long spring, the pressure of the carbon against the platinum disk being adjusted by a straining screw near the base of the spring. Subsequently he filed an application for a patent in which various forms of springs and weights assisted in maintaining the contacts and otherwise improved the instrument,

In the early part of 1878 Professor Hughes, while en- Hughes's gaged in experiments upon a Bell telephone in an electric micro- circuit, discovered that a peculiar noise was produced when- Phone. ever two hard electrodes, such as two wires, were drawn across each other, or were made to touch each other with a variable degree of firmness. Acting upon this discovery, he constructed an instrument which he called a microphone,® and which consisted essentially (see fig. 11) of two hard carbon electrodes placed in contact, with a current passing through the point of contact and a telephone included in the same circuit. One of the electrodes was attached to a sounding board capable of being vibrated by sound- waves, and the other was held either by springs or weights

> See Journal of the Telegraph, New York, April 1877 ; Philadelphia Times, 9th July 1877 ; and Scientific American, August 1877.

6 This terml was used by Wheatstone in 1827 for an acoustic ap- paratus intended to convert very feeble into audible sounds; see his

Scientific Papers, p. 32. XXIII. — 17

Blake trans- mitter.

Modifica- tions of Edison’s trans- mitter.

Radio- phone.

in delicate contact with it. When the sounding board was spoken to or subjected to sound-waves, the mechanical re- sistance of the loose electrode, due to its weight, or the spring, or both, served to vary the pressure at the contact, and this gave to the current a form corresponding to the sound-waves, and it was therefore capable of being used as a speaking-telephone transmitter.1 The best transmitters now in use are modifications of Hughes’s apparatus. A microphonic apparatus very similar to it is described in the specification of a German patent taken out by Robert Lutdge on 12th January 1878. In this patent the action of the microphone is also described.?

The next transmitter of note, introduced by Mr Francis Blake, U.S. (see fig. 13 below), although it does not, like the first microphones, embody anything intrinsically new, is one of the most perfect and convenient forms of micro- phone. It is at present almost universally used in the United States.

It appears to be pretty well established that carbon in one form or another is the best material for one or both of the contacts of a microphone transmitter. When both the contacts are of carbon and the surfaces have consider- able area, say from a quarter to half an inch in diameter, the sounds are loud, but have a tendency to harshness. When, as in the Blake transmitter, one of the contacts is a piece of polished gas carbon and the other a sinall sphere

of platinum about the twentieth of an inch in diameter, |

the articulation is clear, but less loud. For most purposes, however, the increased clearness more than compensates for the diminished loudness. Many transmitters in actual use—as, for instance, the “Gower,” largely employed in the United Kingdom—have a nuniber of contacts. Some of

these when properly adjusted are both loud and clear in their action. Although the Blake instrument is most in vogue in America, in the United Kingdom and on the Continent multiple contact microphones have found more favour. Carbon powder instruments have been to some extent used, and in one or two cases—as, for example, the Hunnings transmitter—with considerable success. The fault in most of them is the tendency of the powder to “pack,” which causes the instrument to rapidly lose sensi- bility. In the Hunnings transmitter this difficulty is to a large extent overcome by the use of a coarse granular powder in a somewhat large cell (about an inch in diameter and from one-eighth to one-fourth of an inch deep). The front face of the cell is a piece of platinum foil, which serves both as an electrode and asa diaphragm. The cell is placed either on edge or in an inclined position when in use, the action being precisely similar to that in other transmitters. In addition to its freedom from packing, the carbon, in consequence of the inclined position of the cell, is also less liable to fall away from the electrode and break the circuit. Some packing of the powder, however, does occur, and several modifications have been proposed by Blake and others for making the sound vibrations stir the powder and keep it loose. Good results appear to have been got by placing the cell mouth downwards, the carbon powder lying on the platinum foil, and by forming the upper electrode either of wire gauze or of a perforated plate completely immersed in the powder. The sound vibrations are con- veyed to the bottom of the cell by a bent tube communi- cating with a mouthpiece. Instruments of this class are very loud-speaking, and therefore very serviceable for long or disturbed circuits, The radiophone is an instrument proposed by A. G. Bell nai Bi

1 See Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxvii. p. 362 : ii : ; : . p. 862; Proc. Phys. Soc., vol. ii. p. 255; Phil. Mag., 5th ser., vol. vi. p. 44 ; Preece, Journ. Soc. Tel. Eing., vol. vii. p. 270. 2 Although this patent is dated pri y icati i prior to Hughes’s publications, it does not follow that the descriptions were filed before eo ;

and Sumner Tainter in 1880 for utilizing radiant energy, such as light or radiant heat, for the transmission of sound. The apparatus forms a telephone

transmitter of a particu- larly interesting kind. In the earlier papers describing it and the experiments which led to its invention it is called photophone, because at that time the effects were supposed to be wholly due to light. Afterwards, in order to avoid ambiguity, Bell changed the name to radiophone and sug- gested that, to distinguish between instruments depending on the different kinds of radiation, the names photophone, thermophone, &c., should be employed. He also proposed the name spectrophone for an application of this instrument to spectrum investigation.? The apparatus is founded on the discovery, made by Mr May while carrying out experi- nents on selenium for Mr Willoughby Smith, that when selenium is exposed to light its electrical resistance is very different from what it is in the dark. This discovery led to a great many interesting experiments by other investi- gators.4 In thinking over this discovery in 1878 Bell con- ceived the idea that, if a beam of light proceeding from one station could be made to fall on a selenium plate at another station, and if its intensity could be varied by the voice of a speaker, then by connecting a telephone and a battery in circuit with the selenium plate the words spoken at the distant station would be heard in the telephone. This was found to be the case. At first, to vary the intensity of the beam, it was passed through a small opening, the width of which could be varied by the vibrations of a diaphragm against which the speech was directed. But better results were afterwards obtained when the diaphragm formed a mirror from which the beam of light was reflected. The spreading of the beam, due to the vibrations of the mirror diaphragm, served to vary its intensity (see fig. 18 below).

Edison’s phonograph (see fig. 19 below) is an instrument Edison’s whose action somewhat resembles that of a telephone trans- phono- mitter and which has been much talked of in regard to its oraete

possible applications in telephony. It was invented shortly after the introduction of the telephone for the purpose of recording sounds, and was included in some of Edison’s telephone patents as a means of working a telephone trans- mitter, and thus telephoning sounds which had been pre- viously recorded on the phonograph sheets.

II. TELEPHONIC INSTRUMENTS.

One of the best-known forms of the Reis telephone is shown in fig. 1. The transmitter consists of a box A, provided with a mouth- piece M. In the top of the box a round hole is cut and across it a membrane S_ of hog's bladder is @/m™)\In\l stretched. A thin (((7 /A iil LB ASH strip of platinum & | Ye p fixed to the box at one side of the ~ : _ hole and extend- ing to the centre of the membrane, supports at that point one foot of a light metal tripod egf One of the feet, e or f, rests in a cup containing mercury, which is in metallic connexion with the terminal }, while

3 On this subject see A. G. Bell, Phil. Mag., 5th ser., vol. xi. p. 510, and Journ. Soc. Tel. Eng., vol. ix. p. 404 ; Mercadier, Phil. Mag., 5th ser., vol. xi. p. 78 ; Tyndall, Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxxi. p. 807 ; Routgen, Phil. Mag., 5th ser., vol. xi. p. 8308 ; Preece, Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxxi. p. 506; Rayleigh, Nature, vol. xxiii. p. 274, and Proc. Roy. Soc., 1877; Bidwell, Phil. Mag., 5th ser., vol. xi. p. 802; 8. P. Thomp- son, Phil. Mag., 5th ser., vol. vi. p. 276.

4 See W. Smith, Journ. Soc. Tel. Eng., vol. v. p. 183, and vol. vi. p. 423 ; M. L. Sale, Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxi. p. 283, and Phil. Mag., 4th ser., vol, xlvii. p. 216 ; Draper and Moss, Proc. Roy. Irish Acad., vol. i. p. 529; Rosse, Phil. Mag., 4th ser., vol. xlvii. p. 161; W. G. Adams, Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxiii. p. 585 and vol. xxiv. p. 163; W. G. Adams and B. E. Day, ibid., vol. xxv. p. 113 ; Werner Siemens, Monatsber. kin. Preuss. Akad. der Wissensch. zu Berlin, 1875, p. 280, and Phil. Mag., 4th ser., vol. i. p. 416; Sabine, Phil, Mag., 5th ser., vol. v. p. 401.

7 Ay

PACU eps

~~ Fig. 1.—Reis's telephone.

the end of the strip y is similarly in connexion with the terminal a. The receiver consists of an electromagnet made up of a magnetiz- ing coil H, with a stout knitting needle for a core. When in use these two instruments are joined in circuit with a battery B, so that under ordinary circumstances a

continuous current is flowing through the line. Suppose a sound is then produced in front of the mouthpiece M, the successive variations in the pressure of the air are communicated to the inside of the box, and cause the mem- brane to vibrate in unison with the sound. Reis's theory of the action of the instrument was that at each outward impulse of the membrane the point g would be thrown out of contact with the plate underneath it and would thus break the circuit. There would con- sequently result as many breaks in the circuit as there were vibra- tions in the sound, and, in conformity with Page's discovery, the electromagnetic receiver would give out a rapid succession of beats, which would together form a continuous sound of the same pitch as that to which the transmitter was subjected.

Fig. 2 shows the first telephone made by Bell for transmitting speech. It consisted of a wooden frame F, to one side of which a tube T was fixed; over the end AUN SHD instrument was joined in circuit with a battery and another simi- lar instrument placed at a dis- tance.

The next form tried is shown in fig. 8. It is very similar except in constructive details to the first ; the hinged armature, however, is omitted, its place being Soh taken by a small iron disk A r fixed to the centre of the @4__* _

diaphragm D. The electro- magnet H is, as before, placed so as to have the centre of // the soft iron core Yj C opposite to the ¢

tre of the di = ol centre of the disk, AWA

and the theory ac- cording to which it Fic. 3.—Bell's second telephone; one-fifth full size. was expected to act is the same. The results obtained with this instrument were much more satisfactory; indeed it was with one precisely like that shown in the figure that the remarkable results of the Philadelphia exhibition in 1876 were obtained. A perspec- tive and a sectional view of the receiving instrument used along with that shown in fig. o

3 are illustrated in figs. 4 and 5. It consisted of an iron cylindrical box B, through the axis of which a rod of soft iron C was passed to form the core

of an electromagnet, having the magnetizing helix H wound on the upper half of its length. Fig. 4. Fig. 5.

Across the top of the Fias. 4, 5.—Bell’s iron box receiver (1876). box a thin disk D of Fig. 4, perspective view ; fig. 5, sectional view. soft iron was fixed, the core C being just clear of the disk when the strongest current is flowing through the helix. In the per- Spective view the disk is removed, showing the end of the core.

WN S

These instruments are interesting, not only because they may be considered the first really successful speaking telephones, but be- cause they are of the same form as those brought to Great Britain in 1876 by Sir W. Thomson, and exhibited before the British Asso- ciation at Glasgow in that year.

Fig. 6 shows one of the earliest forms brought into commercial use. On each pole of a somewhat large horse-shoe permanent magnet

Fic. 6.—Bell’s nultiple pole telephone (1877); one-fifth full size.

Ma short coil E with a soft iron core was fixed. This is one of the early forms of permanent magnet telephones, of which there were at that time several, including a hand telephone very similar to that shown in fig. 7, In another form, introduced about the end of 1877, the small magnetizing coils and soft iron cores were fixed on the side and opposite the poles of the horse-shoe magnet, and the diaphragm was placed with its plane parallel to that of the magnet. The diaphragm in these telephones was of thin sheet iron and a little over 4 inches in diameter.

The form of telephone now almost universally in use is shown in Bell’s fig. 7. It was introduced in December 1877 and consists of a com- hand pound permanent qq, magnet M, fitted into the centre of a tele- tube of vulcanite W phone. or “hard rubber” and carrying atone | endashort electro- magnet, the coil of which through its ® terminals ¢, ¢ is in- cluded in the cir- cuit when the instrument is in use. In front of the electromagnet, with its plane normal to the axis of the magnet, is fixed a thin soft iron disk about 13 inches in diameter, which has its cover cut toa convenient shape to form a

mouthpiece. This telephone acts well either as a transmitter or as a receiver; but for the former purpose it is now seldom used on account of the great advances which have been made in “microphone” transmitters.

It has been stated that Bell and Elisha Gray almost simultane- Bell’s ously suggested the use of a column of liquid to in the circuit. The form @m of instrument proposed by the former and said to have been exhibited at the Philadelphia exhibition is shown in fig. 8. It con- sists of a speaking tube or mouthpiece M, across the lower end of which a inembrane D is stretched. To the centre of the mem- brane a light rod R, made (of metal or of carbon, is _.. J fixed with its length at TEI right angles to the plane } of the membrane. Under ; the lower end of Ra small metallic vessel C is sup- ported on a threaded rod, working in a nut fixed to the sole F, sothat its height may be readily adjusted. Suppose C to be filled with Fie, 8.—Bell’s liquid transmitter. __ water or any other con- Fic. 9.—Hlisha Gray’s liquid transmitter. ducting liquid, and the rod R to be of metal. C is raised until the liquid just touches the point of the rod, when advantage is taken of the change of contact resistance with the greater or less immer- sion of R during the vibration of D. Good results were obtained with mercury as the liquid and with a rod of carbon.

The arrangement proposed by Elisha Gray is almost identical in E. Gray’s form with Bell’s. The only difference seems to be that Gray in- liquid tended the rod R (fig. 9) to reach near to the bottom of the vessel trans-

B or to the end of another rod, a prolongation of 6, projecting up mitter. from the bottom. The variation of the current was produced by the variation of the distance between the ends of the rod caused by the vibrations of the diaphragm. This plan was not tried until after the success of Bell’s experiments was known, and when it was

Fic. 7.—Bell’s hand telephone, present form,

Edison’s micro- phone trans- mitter.

Hughes’s micro- phone.

Blake trans- mitter.

tried the results did not prove encouraging. Indeed the variations of the resistance which can be produced in this way must be excess- ively small, unless the liquid has a very high specific resistance, the distance between the ends is very small, and the sides of the rods are prevented by an insulating covering from interfering with the results. Neither of these transmitters has any great merit as such, but they show that both Bell and Gray clearly recognized the principle on which successful transmission of the different forms of sound, including speech, could be accomplished.

The first successful microphone transmitter was Edison's. An early form of it (fig. 10) somewhat resembles Bell's hand tele- phone in ex- ternal form. A cell of insulating yy material has at its bottom a flat- Va headed platinum screw G; on the £ top of G is a layer of carbon powder C, on the

top of that a thin platinum disk D, and above 4 that, forming the cover of the cell, a disk of ivory B, held in

TELEPHONE

position by a centre of this rubber tubing, the diaphragm hand telephone, is held in M. The varying pressure duced near it, causes corre- pressure on the carbon similar variations in its elec- when the instrument is in- cuit through which a cur- tions in the pressure on the €

ring E. Resting on the disk is a small piece of which is lightly pressed by A, and this, as in the position by themouthpiece on A, when a sound is pro- 4A sponding variations in the powder, and this produces trical resistance. Thus, cluded in an electric cir- rent is flowing, undula- 2 diaphragm produce corre-

Y the — :

- 10.—Fai- forms of the microphone are those introduced by guts uae Prof. Hughes. One of the commonest is shown Phone trans-jn fig. 11. It consists of two rectangular pieces of ™tter. wood, B and D, fixed to- gether with their planes at right angles to each other. D forms the base, and to B two

small blocks of carbon C, C are attached. Betwcen these a light rod A of the same matcrial is supported on in C, C. To the blocks are connected for the pur- the instrumcnt in an electric terial which Hughes found @ the carbon blocks and rod metallized by heating it to redness and plunging it while hot into mercury. If this microphone is joined in circuit with a telephone and a small battery, say one or two small Daniell cells, the vibration pro- a agent duced by a fly walking on Fig. 11.—Hughes's microphone. the base D can be distinctly heard in the telephone. The same apparatus will also act as a microphone transmitter, but the sounds are apt to be harsh. A better form for this purpose is shown in fig. 12. In this a light pencil of carbon M is pivoted at hand has one end resting on two blocks of £°° carbon ¢, ¢, the lower one being ; fixed to the base. : The pressure of M | on the carbon block i is regulated by a spring s. This ar- Fia. 12.—Microphone transmitter. rangement is en- closed in a box of thin wood, against which the sound is directed. It is capable of acting well as a transmitter, and especially in a modified form used by Hughes as a microphone receiver. The lower block ¢ is then attached to the centre of a vertical diaphragm and against it the sounds are directed. –

The Blake transmitter, which is perhaps most widely used of all, isasimple modification of the Hughes instrument last described. It consists (fig. 13) of a frame F, to which is attached a diaphragm D of thin sheet iron ; in front of this is a cover M, M provided with a suitable cavity for directing the sound-waves against the dia- phragm. The microphonic arrangement consists of a spring §, about the hundredth of an inch thick and the eighth of an inch broad, fixed at one end to a lever L, and carrying at its free ex- tremity a brass block W. In one side of W a small disk C of gas carbon is inserted, resting on the hemispherical end of a small platinum pin K, about the twentieth of an inch in diameter, held in position by a thin spring A. The pressure of the carbon on the platinum point can be adjusted by the screw N, which turns the lever about the flexible joint G. The electrical connexions of the instrument. as arranged for actual use are also illustrated in the figure. The current circuit goes through S, W, C, K, A, and the

sponding undulations in Perhaps the best known

4g} small cups formed

i] two electrodes e, ¢ Mig) pose of inserting | circuit. The ma- i most suitable for was wood charcoal

TE

—— oe

il

==

REN

primary circuit of the induction coil I to the battery B, and thence to S again. This forms a local circuit at the transmitting station. The line of circuit passes through the secondary of the induction

8

cia EE

SQ WWW 0> 7 odtHMH IN

Fic. 13.— Blake’s transmitter.

coil I to the line, from that to the telephone T at the receiving station, and then either to earth or back to the induction coil by a return line of wire. ;

Lelephonie Circuits.

The lines used for telephone purposes are, generally speaking, Tele. so far as erection, mode of insulation, and so on are concerned, much phone the same as those used for ordinary telegraphs. In towns where wires, a very large number of wires radiate from one centre or exchange, as it is called, where thick wires are unsightly, and where it is often necessary to provide for long spans, a comparatively thin wire of strong material is employed. For this reason various bronzes, such as silicon, aluminium, &c., have come to be extensively used for making wires for telephone lines. They are made from about the twentieth to the thirtieth of an inch in diameter, and are

found to wear well in the somewhat mixed atmosphere of a town; and owing to their lightness and considerable tensile strength it is comparatively easy to erect them and keep them in order. The main objection to them is the high electrical resistance they oppose to the current. The lines on a town exchange system are not, how- ever, as a rule, so long as to make this objection of great import- ance. But long lines, such as those extending between towns some miles apart, should be made of pure copper wire hard drawn. It has lately been found possible to draw copper so hard as to be almost equal to bronze in strength, and yet to retain about three times the electric conductivity of that substance. Copper and bronze wires possess great advantages for telephonic purposes over the iron wires employed in telegraph lines, in that they offer a much lower effective resistance to the rapidly undulating and intermittent currents pro- duced by telephonic transmitters. The electric resistance opposed by a wire to the passage of such a current is always greater than that opposed to a steady current, and this difference is much more marked when the wire is of magnetic material like iron. This in- creased resistance rises in proportion to the rapidity of the undula- tions of the current ; consequently high notes are more resisted than low notes. Besides this variable resistance, telephony has to contend with ‘‘self-induction” (see ELECTRICITY, vol. viii. p. 76 sq.) of the current on itself, and this is by no means unimportant, especially on long circuits.1 The marked difference between iron and copper for long circuits is plainly shown by the fact that Rysselberg and others have spoken clearly to a distance of over 1000 miles through a copper wire insulated on poles, whereas Preece – could not work a similar line of iron wire between London and Manchester.

The electrostatic capacity of the line (see TeLEGRapn, p. 115 Capacity. above) is also diminished by the use of thin wires of highly con- ducting material. They should all if possible be erected on poles at a considcrable height above the earth. It is not practicable to work an ordinary underground line through more than 20 miles, and cable telephony through distances of over 100 miles may in the present state of science be put down as an impossibility.

Another element of great importance in connexion with telephone 1 See papers by Prof. Hughes, Proc. Soc. Tel. Eng., vol. xv. p. 6, and Proc. Roy.

Soc., vol. xl. p. 468, with remarks on them by Prof. H. F. Weber, Tel. Journ., vol. xviii. p. 821 and vol. xix. p. 830; by Oliver Heaviside, Phil. Mag., vol. xxii. p. 118; by Rayleigh, Phil. Mag., vol. xxi. p. 381 and vol. xxii. p. 469.

See also Prof. Chrystal on the ‘‘ Differential Telephone,” in Trans. Roy. Soc. Edind., vol. xxxi. pp. 609-636.

ny

duc- n.

_ other.

TELEPHONE

lines, which in most cases does not require to be attended to in ordinary telegraph circuits, is the induction from one line to an- other (see ELECTRICITY, Vol. viii. p. 76 sqg.). When two lines having, as in ordinary telegraphy, an earth connexion at each end run for any great distance, say a mile or more, parallel to each other on

the same supports, a conversation which is being carried on through

one of them can be overheard by means of the telephones on the This is due to the fact that, when a current is suddenly set up in one closed circuit, it induces an instantaneous current in any other closed circuit which is near to it. This induced current not only destroys the privacy of the circuit in question but also lowers its efficiency. The mischief is even greater when telegraph and telephone lines run along the same route supported on the same poles, because the strong intermittent currents sent through telegraph wires, and the irregular manner in which the intermit- tences follow each other, induce a series of such powerful secondary currents in the telephone lines that the noise heard in the tele- phone is often sufficient, when the line is a mile or two long, to drown all speech. In the case of parallel telephone lines the best, if not the only, cure is to use return wires, and arrange them so that the currents induced in the outgoing wire shall be neutralized by the corresponding current induced in the incoming wire. For mixed telegraph and telephone circuits various methods have been pro- posed ; but the most

generally approved plan is to have return wires. For circuits worked wholly on the return principle the main thing to be attended to is the symmetrical arrangement of the wires, so that the outgoing and incoming wires may be subjected to the same influence. This is nearly provided for by running them in such a way that they may be all supposed to lie on the surface of a cylinder in lines parallel to its axis, the two wires at the opposite ends of a diameter being always used for the same circuit. When more than four wires form the group complete compensation is not obtained in this way, because the current is always stronger near the transmitting end of the line than near the receiving end, on account of the very sensible effect of the capacity and the leakage of the line. It is therefore best to arrange the wires in groups of four —that is, in pairs of circuits—and run them so as to form spiral lines round an axial line equidistant from each of the four wires. Any pair of wires forming a circuit which runs parallel to other wires can be arranged so as to be very nearly free from induction by interchanging their position relatively to the other wires at short

be an ordinary telephone circuit worked through condensers. The telegraph apparatus consists of an ordinary receiver R, sending battery B, and key K, t together with a eon-

denser C, inserted be- tween the earth and the line terminal of the key, and two electromag- netic inductors E, KE’, When the key is de- retarded by the electro- denser C, which has to fact additional electro- sending end of the line. further retarded by the

pressed the current is

magnet E and the con- e be charged, giving in static capacity at the The current is still electromagnet E’;

Fig. 14, hence the condenser C, becomes charged so gradually that very little disturbance is noticeable in the telephone T. The condensers C,, C, prevent leakage from one line to the other, but have suffi- cient capacity to allow the telephone to act as if it were in a metallic circuit,

The Working of Telephone Circuits.

The method first employed for working a telephone line was extremely simple. A single line of wire, like an ordinary telegraph line, had a Bell telephone included in it at each end and the ends were put toearth. Words spoken to the telephone at one end could be heard by holding the telephone to the ear at the other. To obviate the inconvenience of placing the telephone to the mouth and the ear alternately, two telephones were commonly used at each end, joined either parallel to each other or in series. The con- trivance most generally adopted for calling attention is the call bell, rung either by a small magneto-electric machine or by a battery. The telephone was switched out of circuit when not in use and the bell put in its place, an ordinary key being used for putting the battery in circuit to make the signal. This arrangement is still employed, a hook being attached to the switch lever so that the mere hanging up of the telephone puts the bell in circuit. In some cases, when the bell is rung by a magneto machine, the coil of the machine is automatically cut out of circuit when it is not in action, but the turning of the handle moves a centrifugal arrangement by which it is thrown in.

Early methods,

At first it was usual to employ the same instrument both as trans- Working mitter and as receiver, and to join it in the direct circuit. But it with was soon found that the microphone transmitter could only be used micro- to advantage in this way when the total resistance of the circuit, phone,

distances along the line. Care must, however, be taken, when more than one group of four or when more than one pair are run, that the compensation produced by the twisted arrangement of one set, or of the interchanges of the wires in the different pairs, is not

spoiled by the twisting or interchanging of another set or pair.

elephone lines running parallel to telegraph lines should be formed into one or more groups, each being run on the twist plan so as to eliminate as completely as possible the effect of the telegraph signals ; the small residual effect of the telephone signals is of comparatively little importance in such

a case. A twisted cable of telephone wire may, when cach circuit is formed by diametrically opposite wires, be placed in the same tube with similar cables employed for telegraph purposes. The central wire of the cable may be used either asa telegraph line or as a telephone line having an earth return.

Another method is to use powerful telephone transmitters and

insensitive receivers ; that is to say, make the telephone currents so powerful that the telegraphic induced currents will be small in comparison, and use receivers so insensitive as to suit such currents. One of the main obstacles in the way of this method at present is the difficulty of getting strong telephonic currents, for even the best transmitters are not yet sufficiently powerful, and there is, besides, a decided tendency towards a loss of quality in the sound when the transmitter is made powerful. A third method is to render the telegraphic current comparatively harmless by taking away the suddenness of the intermittences. This is quite possible because the number of currents sent per second, even on fast working circuits, is not such as to produce a high musical note. If, then, the currents be made in some way to rise slowly to their full strength and fall again slowly to zero the diaphragm of the receiving instrument, instead of showing the sudden rise and sudden fall as at present, would move so slowly backwards and forwards that the ear would not be disturbed by the sound. Perhaps the simplest way to accom- plish this is to place an electromagnet in the circuit of the tele- graph line at the sending station, for the self-induction of the magnet coil prevents the current assuming its strength suddenly. But on telegraph circuits where speed is of great importance this method cannot be followed owing to the retardation of the telegraph signals and the consequent loss of speed thereby occasioned.

, An ingenious application of the method of compensation just indicated has been made by Rysselberg, who has used not only wires carried on the same poles as the telegraph but even the telegraph lines themselves for telephone purposes. The arrangement of his system is shown in fig. 14, where L and Ly represent two telegraph lines. Between these, at each end, are inserted two condensers C,, C, and a telephone T, together with transmitters, &c., so that, supposing the telegraph instruments removed, the two wires would

exclusive of the microphone, was small compared with the resistance of the microphone,—that is, on very short lines worked with low resistance telephones. The transmitter on long and high resistance lines worked better by joining indirectly in a local circuit, in the manner shown in fig. 13, the microphone, a battery, and the primary of an induction coil, and putting the line in circuit with the second- ary of the induction coil, which acted as the transmitter. The resistance of the microphone can thus be made a large fraction of the total resistance of the circuit in which it is placed ; hence, by using considerable currents, small variations in its resistance can be made to induce somewhat powerful currents in the line wire. The requisite energy is derived from the battery. If there are other resistances in the circuit it is, in some cases, better to join it as a shunt to the primary circuit of the induction coil. It may even prove advantageous to insert resistances in the circuit, increase the battery power, and join the microphone as here indicated, because in this way powerful currents can be obtained in the line without the harshness which is apt to be produced by the variations of a strong current passing through the microphone.

Translation from one line to another, or from one section to Transla another of the same line, is effected by putting the primary of an tion.

induction coil in the place of the receiving telephone, the secondary being in circuit with the second line or section. This plan is use- ful where the same message is to be sent to different pees at once (distributed), and is sometimes used for translating from a double wire to a single wire system. Probably a better plan is to work a microphone by the membrane of the receiving telephone, and re- transmit the message, taking new energy from a second battery.! When the induction coil arrangement is used for translating from a double to a single wire circuit, or vice versa, it is necessary to make the induction coil suit the circuits, so that either coil may be used as primary, according to the end from which the message is sent. Everything else being similar, the resistances of the coils should be in nearly the same ratio as the resistances of the lines in which they are placed.

In a large town it is neither practicable nor desirable to connect each subscriber directly with all the other subscribers, hence a system of ‘‘ exchanges” has been adopted. An exchange is a central station to which

wires are brought from the different subscribers, any two of whom can be put in telephonic communication with each other when the proper pairs of wires are joined together in the ex-

1 See Thomson and Houston, Tel. Journ., 15th August 1878.

+

Ex- changes.

TELEPAROA SE

change. The attendant there ascertains to whom it is that he wishes to speak, and by moving round the contact arm puts the : two subscribers' lines in contact. a

change. The arrangement is illustrated in fig. 15, where C represents an exchange from which wires radiate to the points a, be, d,..-. Suppose a wishes to speak tod; he communicates his wish to an attendant at C, who first c d

calls d, and then con- b

Sinclair's

nects 6 to 1, making the circuit continuous from a to d. The ar- rangements at the ex-* change for facilitating connexions vary con- siderably, but are simi- lar in principle to the switch boards used in telegraphy. Each of the ; wires is first brought to an indicator and then to a set of terminals arranged in an orderly.manner on a board, the number of the terminal for any one wire being the same as the number under the shutter of the indicator in that wire circuit. In many cases the terminals take the form of spring clips, which connect the line to earth, and under which a thin piece of metal, covered with insulat- ing material on one side and called a ''jack," can be readily inserted for connecting that circuit with any other. A piece of flexible wire cord, carrying a jack at each end, forms a ready and common

medium of connexion ; but in many cases the switch board is arranged with cross strips of metal so that by inserting a jack into the terminals of the two wires they can be both connected to the same strip of metal and therefore together. In large exchanges one switch board of moderate size is not sufficient, and so a number are fitted, being connected together by several conductors, in order that no interrup- tion may ensue in consequence of these being all occupied. A line on one board is connected with one on another board by joining the terminal of the first to one of the conductors connecting the two boards by a jack-cord, and then by another jack-cord connecting that conductor to the terminal of the other line. Thus different switch boards may be looked upon as separate exchanges, connected together by a number of trunk wires after the manner described below.

In a large system it is much more convenient and economical to have exchanges in the various districts, and connect these with a central exchange by a sufficient number of trunk lines. A sub- scriber in one district wishing to speak to a subscriber in another calls the exchange in his own district and is put in communication by the attendant stationed there with the central exchange. The attendant at.the central exchange puts the subscriber in communi- cation with the district he requires, and the attendant there calls the other subscriber and joins the two subscribers' lines together. In some cases neighbouring district exchanges have, besides a com- mon means of communication through the central exchange, an independent connexion. These arrangements are diagrammatically

a,

A ae

Fic. 15.—Telephone exchange.

Fra. 16.—Telephone district exchanges,

illustrated in fig. 16, where 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6 represent district ex- changes and C the central exchange ; districts 3 and 4 and 4 and 5 are supposed to have independent connexions,

An arrangement was proposed about two years ago by Mr D.

automatic Sinclair of the Glasgow telephone exchange for allowing small dis-

exchange.

trict exchanges to be worked by the attendants at the central ex- change.! The two exchanges are connected by a trunk line and from the district exchange wires are led to the different subscribers. These wires are in the normal state of matters connected with con- tact plates, over which an arm joined to the trunk wire can be made to travel. Suppose the central exchange wishes to speak to any one of the subscribers, the arm is made to travel round, by currents sent from the exchange through an electromagnetic step by step arrangement, until it comes in contact with the proper plate, after which the subscriber is called in the ordinary way. When one subscriber belonging to the district exchange wishes to speak to another in the same district, he rings the bell in the ordi- nary way, and this operation disconnects all other subscribers and puts him in connexion through the trunk line with the central ex-

1 See Proc. Phil. Soc. of Glasgow, vol. xvii. p. 39.

allows the shutter @ to fall down, exposing a plate p, on the front of which the number of the subscriber is printed. When the exchange is called, the shutter d is dropped, the attendant connects the line leading to the exchange table with the ter- niinal corresponding to the indicator, and finds who is wanted; then he calls that subscriber, makes the through connexion, and puts up the shutter. When the subscribers have finished, both call the exchange or, as it is commonly put, “‘ring off”; this drops both shutters and serves as the signal that they have finished speaking.

é N N N

: :

SS

.

N

Fig. 17.—Indicator or annunciator,

The principle of transmitting sound by the radiophone will be Radio- M represents a mirror, from which a phone.

understood from fig. 18. beam of light is reflected through the lens / to a second mirror m, and m forms a diaphragm against the back of which the sound vibrations sent through the tube ¢ are made to impinge. The beam of light, after being reflected from am, passes through the lower lens 2, and thence as a nearly parallel beam to the parabolic reflector R. photophonic receiver P, sup- posed in this case to be a spiral of selenium wire wound on the surface of a cylinder, Fra. 18,—Bell's radiophone, is placed at the focus of the reflector so that the beam of light from m is concentrated on it. In circuit with the receiver P a battery B and a telephone T are included and through the circuit a feeble electric current flows continuously. The photophonic receiver should be placed so as to receive as little light as possible from any other — source than the mirrorm. Words spoken through the tube t make the mirror m vibrate, so that the beam of light reflected from it becomes more or less spread. The lens7 is then unable to bring the beam into parallelism, and the intensity of the reflexions from R to P is varied, therefore also the current through the coil of the telephone, which in consequence gives out a sound. The amount of spreading of the beam bcing proportional to the intensity of the vibrations of m, and this again proportional to the intensity of the sounds, the sounds heard in the telephone are similar to those pro- duced at the end of ¢. Theoretically the receiver may be at any distance from the transmitter, but considerable difficulty arises if the distance is great.

One of the simplest forms of the phonograph is shown in fig, 19. Phono- It consists of a rigid spindle S screwed for about one-third of its graph.

length, and fitted to work smoothly but tightly in the frame J, f, Which is se- curely attached to a sole plate P. On the spindle a drum D is fixed, the axis of which coincides ac- curately with that of the spindle. On the surface of the drum a screw is cut of precisely the same pitch as that on the spindle.

Fic. 19.— Edison’s phonograph.

A fly-wheel W is fixed to one end of the spindle, and is provided with a handle H, by

which the spindle and drum can be conveniently turned. One of the bearings has either a screw thread cut along it, or is fitted with one or more studs which work easily, but without shake, in the screw thread. When the spindle is turned, it receives a trans- verse motion, and a point fixed relatively to the sole plate P and touching the drum traces out a spiral on its surface, exactly coin- ciding with the screw thread cut on it. A mouthpiece M, like that of a telephone transmitter, provided with a diaphragm of parch- ment or similar substance, is mounted on a lever, which is pivoted at h and provided with a set screw b.

mouthpiece. The vibrations of the diaphragm cause the needle

oint to make indentations more or less decp, according to the intensity of the sound, in the surface of the tinfoil. If the mouth- piece is then raised, the drum turned back to its original position, the

mouthpiece lowered so that the point rests on the groove which it previously made, and the drum again turned, the diaphragm, acted on by the needle point passing over the indentation, will give out the same words which were spoken to it. (T. GR.)

TELESCOPE

HE telescope is an optical instrument employed to view or discover distant objects.1 The fundamental optical principles involved in its construction have already been dealt with in the articles Ligut and Optics, and these should be first perused by the reader.

History.

The credit of the discovery of the telescope has been a fruitful subject of discussion. Thus, because Democritus announced that the milky way is composed of vast mul- titudes of stars, it has been maintained that he could only have been led to form such an opinion from actual examination of the heavens with a telescope. Other passages from the Greek and Latin authors have similarly been cited to prove that the telescope was known to the ancients. But, as has been remarked by Dr Robert Grant (Mstory of Physical Astronomy, p. 515), we are no more warranted in drawing so important a conclusion from casual remarks, however sagacious, than we should be justified in stating that Seneca was in possession of the discoveries of Newton because he predicted that comets would one day be found to revolve in periodic orbits. Molyneux, in his Dioptrica Nova, p. 256, declares his opinion that Roger Bacon (who died ec. 1294) "did per- fectly well understand all kinds of optic glasses, and knew likewise the method of combining them so as to compose some such instrument as our telescope." He cites a passage from Bacon's Opus Majus, p. 377 of Jebb's edition, 1733, translated as follows :—

"Greater things than these may be performed by refracted vision. For it is easy to understand by the canons above mentioned that the greatest objects may appear exceedingly small, and the contrary, also that the most remote objects may appear just at hand, and the converse ; for we can give such figures to transparent bodies, and dispose them in such order with respect to the eye and the objects, that the rays shall be refracted and bent towards any place we please, so that we shall see the object near at hand or at any dis- tance under any angle we please. And thus from an incredible distance we may read the smallest letters, and may number the smallest particles of dust and sand, by reason of the greatness of the angle under which we see them. . . . Thus also the sun, moon, and stars may be made to descend hither in appearance, and to be visible over the heads of our enemies, and many things

of the like sort, which persons unacquainted with such things would refuse to believe."

Molyneux also cites from Bacon's Epistola ad Parisiensem, "Of the Secrets of Art and Nature," chap. 5 :—

“Glasses or diaphanous bodies may be so formed that the most remote objects may appear just at hand, and the contrary, so that we may read the smallest letters at an incredible distance, and may number things, though never so small, and may make the stars also appear as near as we please.”

These passages certainly prove that Bacon had very nearly, if not perfectly, arrived at theoretical proof of the possibility of constructing a telescope and a microscope ; but his writings give no account of the trial of an actual telescope, nor any detailed results of the application of a telescope to an examination of the heavens. It has been pointed out by Dr Smith, in his Complete System of Optics, that Bacon imagines some effects of telescopes which cannot be performed by them, and his conclusion is that Bacon never actually looked through a telescope.

_ Giambattista della Porta, in his Magia Naturalis, printed in 1558, makes the following remarkable statement :— a

: In recent years the term “photographic telescope” has been applied to instruments employed to record the appearance of celestial objects by photography.

*“Tf you do but know how to jdin the two (viz., the concave and the convex glasses) rightly together, you will see both remote and near objects larger than they otherwise appear, and withal very distinct.”

Wolfius infers from this passage that its author was the first actual constructor of a telescope, and it appears not improbable that by happy accident Porta really did make some primitive form of telescope which excited the wonder of his friends. Here, however, his interest in the matter appears to have ceased, and he was unable either to ap- preciate the importance of his discovery or to describe the means by which the object was attained. Kepler, who exa- mined Porta’s account of his concave and convex lenses by desire of his patron the emperor Rudolph, declared that it was perfectly unintelligible. Poggendorff (Gesch. der Physik, p. 134) throws considerable doubt on the origin- ality of Porta’s statement.

Thomas Digges, in his Stratioticus, p. 359, published in 1579, states that his father, Leonard Digges, ‘‘among other curious practices had a method of

discovering by

perspective glasses set at due angles all objects pretty far distant that the sun shone upon, which lay in the country round about,”

and that this was by the help of a manuscript book of Roger Bacon of Oxford, who he conceived was the only man besides his father who knew it. There is also the following passage in the Pantometria (bk. i. chap. 21) of Leonard Digges? (originally published by his son Thomas in 1571, and again in 1591):—

‘Marvellous are the conclusions that may be performed by glasses concave and convex, of circular and parabolic forms, using’ for multiplication of beams sometime the aid of glasses transparent, which, by fraction, should unite or dissipate the images or figures presented by the reflection of other.”

He then describes the effects of magnification from a com- bination of lenses or mirrors, adding :—

‘But of these conclusions I minde not here to intreate, having

at large in a volume® by itselfe opened the miraculous effects of perspective glasses.” It is impossible to discredit the significance of these quotations, for the works in which they occur were pub- lished more than twenty years before the original date claimed for the discovery of the telescope in Holland.

That Roger Bacon had tolerably clear ideas as to the practical possibility of constructing telescopes, and that Leonard Digges had access to some unpublished MSS. of Bacon, and by their aid constructed some form of. tele- scope, seem to be obvious inferences from the preceding evidence. But it is quite certain that previous to 1600 the telescope was unknown, except possibly to individuals who failed to see its practical importance, and who confined its use to “curious practices” or to demonstrations of “natural magic.” The practical discovery of the instru- ment was certainly made in Holland about 1608, but the credit of the original invention has been claimed on behalf of three individuals, Hans Lippershey and Zacharias

Jansen, spectacle-makers in Middelburg, and James Metius of Alkmaar (brother of Adrian Metius the mathematician).

Descartes, in his treatise on Dioptrics (1637), attributes the dis- covery to Metius ‘‘about thirty years ago,” whilst Schyrelus de Rheita, a Capuchin friar, in his Oculus Enoch et Elie (Antwerp, 1645), gives the credit to Lippershey about 1609. Peter Borel, physician to the king of France, published at The Hague, in 1655, a work De Vero Telescopii Inventore. He was assisted in its pre-

paration by William Borel, Dutch envoy at the court of France, and the latter declares, as the result of patient investigation, that

2 He died about 1570. His son alludes to his untimely death in the preface to the Pantometria. 3 There is no further trace of this volume. ©

Leonard Digges,

The Dutch telescope of 1608.

Jansen.

Metius.

Lip- pershey.

Galileo.

Jansen and his father were the real inventors of the telescope in 1610, and that Lippershey only made a telescope after hints acci- dentally communicated to him of the details of Jansen’s invention. But the most trustworthy information on the subject is to be got from the researches of Van Swinden.! Briefly summarized, this evidence is as follows. In the library of the university of Leyden, amongst the MSS. of Huygens there is an original copy of a document (dated 17th October 1608) addressed to the states-general by Jacob Andrianzoon (the same individual who is called James Metius by Descartes), petitioning for the exclusive right of selling an

instrument of his invention by which distant objects appear larger and more distinct. He states that he had discovered the instrument by accident when engaged in making experiments, and had so far perfected it that distant objects were made as visible and distinct by his instrument as could be done with the one which had been lately offered to the states by a citizen and spectacle- maker of Middelburg. Among the Acts of the states-general pre- served in the Government archives at The Hague, Van Swinden found that on 2d October 1608 the assembly of the states took into consideration the petition of Hans Lippershey, spectacle-maker, a native of Wesel and an inhabitant of Middelburg, inventor of an instrument for seeing ata distance. On 4th October a committee was appointed to test the instrument, and on the 6th of the same month the assembly agreed to give Lippershey 900 florins for his instrument. Further, on the 15th December of the same year they examined an instrument invented by Lippershey at their request to see with both eyes, and gave him orders to execute two similar instruments at 900 florins each; but, as many other persons had knowledge of this new invention to see at a distance, they did not deem it expedient to grant him an exclusive privilege to sell such instruments. The dates of these documents dispose effectually of Borel's statement that Lippershey borrowed the ideas of Jansen in 1610. They also prove that, whilst Metius was in possession of a telescope, with which he may have experimented, about the time when Lippershey presented his application for patent rights, yet he makes no pretension that Lippershey borrowed the invention from him. The conclusion is that Lippershey was the first person who independently invented the telescope, and at the same time made the instrument known to the world. The common story is that Lippershey, happening one day, whilst holding a spectacle-lens in either hand, to direct them towards the steeple of a neighbouring church, was astonished, on looking through the nearer lens, to find that the weathercock appeared nearer and more distinct. He fitted the lenses in a tube, in order to adjust and preserve their relative distances, and thus constructed his first telescope. But doubt may be thrown on this traditional account owing to the further statement that the image of the weathercock so viewed was seen turned upside down. All the original Dutch telescopes were composed of a convex and a concave lens, and telescopes so cou- structed do not invert. The inverting telescope, composed of two convex lenses, was a later invention ; still it is not impossible that the original experiment was made with two convex lenses. Telescopes seem

to have been made in Holland in con- siderable numbers soon after the date of their invention, and rapidly found their way over Europe. Sirturus, in his De Telescopio (1618), states that “a Frenchman pro- ceeded to Milan in the month of May 1609 and offered a telescope for sale to Count di Fuentes”; and Lorenzi Pigorna writes,” under date 31st August 1609, that ‘‘Galileo had been appointed lecturer at Padua for life on account of a perspective like the one which was sent from Flan- ders to Cardinal Borghese.” Simon Marius, the German astronomer, appears to have made astronomical observa- tions in 1609 with a telescope which he procured from Holland, and Professor Rigaud of Oxford found from the MSS. of Harriot, the mathematician, that he had been making astronomical observations with a Dutch telescope as early as July 1609. Galileo, in his Vuncius Sidereus, states that, happening to be in Venice about the month of May 1609, he heard that a Belgian had invented a per- spective instrument by means of which distant objects appeared nearer and larger, and that he discovered its construction by considering the effects of refraction. In his Saggiatore Galileo states that he solved the problem of the construction of a telescope the first night after his return to Padua from Venice, and made his first telescope next day by fitting a convex lens in one extremity of a leaden tube and a concave lens in the other one. _A few

1 See Dr Moll of Utrecht, in Journ. Roy. Inst., vol. i., 1881. 2 Lettre d’ Uomini Illustri, p. 112, Venice, 1744.

days afterwards, having succeeded in making a better telescope than the first, he took it to Venice, where he communicated the details of his invention to the public, and presented the instrument itself to the doge Leonardo Donato, sitting in full council. The senate, in return, settled him for life in his lectureship at Padua and doubled his salary, which was previously 500 florins, and which then became treble that which any of his predecessors had enjoyed. Galileo may thus claim to have invented the telescope independently, but not till he had heard that others had done so. In fact the time was ripe; and, as often happens in similar circumstances, only a hint was necessary to complete the latent chain of thought. Galileo devoted all his time to improving and perfecting the telescope. Knowing the theory of his instrument, and possessed of much practical skill, coupled with unwearied patience, he conquered the difficulties of grinding and

polishing the lenses, and soon succeeded in producing telescopes of greatly increased power. His first telescope | magnified three diameters ; but he soon made instruments which magnified eight diameters, and finally one that magnified thirty-three diameters.? With this last in- strument he discovered in 1610 the satellites of Jupiter,

and soon afterwards the spots on the sun, the phases of Venus, and the hills and valleys on the moon. He demon- strated the rotation of the satellites of Jupiter round the planet, and gave rough predictions of their configurations, proved the rotation of the sun on its axis, established the general truth of the Copernican system as compared with

that of Ptolemy, and fairly routed the fanciful dogmas of

the philosophers. These brilliant achievements, together with the immense improvement of the instrument under

the hands of Galileo, overshadowed in a great degree the credit due to the original discoverer, and led to the uni- versal adoption of the name of the Galilean telescope for

the form of the instrument invented by Lippershey.

Kepler first explained the theory and some of the prac- Kepler. tical advantages of a telescope constructed of two convex lenses in his Catoptrics (1611). The first person who actually constructed a telescope of this form was Father Scheiner, who gives a description of it in his Rosa Ursina (1630). William Gascoigne was the first who practically Gas. appreciated the chief advantages of the form of telescope coigne. suggested by Kepler, viz., the visibility of the image of a distant object simultaneously with that of a small material object placed in the common focus of the two lenses. This led to his invention of the micrometer and his application of telescopic sights to astronomical instruments of pre- cision (see MicRoMETER, vol. xvi. p. 242). But it was not till about the middle of the 17th century that Kepler’s telescope came into general use, and then, not so much because of the advantages pointed out by Gascoigne, but because its field of view was much larger than in the Galilean telescope. The first powerful telescopes of this construction were made by Huygens, after much labour, Huy- in which

he was assisted by his brother. With one of these, 8% of 12-feet focal length, he discovered the brightest of Saturn's satellites (Titan) in 1655, and in 1659 he published his Systema Saturnium, in which was given for the first time a true explanation of Saturn's ring, founded on observations made with the same instrument. The sharpness of image in Kepler's telescope is very inferior to that of the Galilean in- strument, so that when a high magnifying power is required it becomes essential to increase the focal length. Cassini Cassiai. discovered Saturn's fifth satellite (Rhea) in 1672 with a telescope of 35 feet, and the third and fourth satellites in 1684 with telescopes made by Campani of 100 and 136 feet focal length. Huygens states that he and his brother

3 This last power could not be exceeded with advantage in this form of telescope till after the invention of the achromatic object-glass.

made object-glasses of 170 and 210 feet focal length, and he presented one of 123 feet to the Royal Society of Lon- don. Auzout and others are said to have made telescopes of from 300 to 600 feet focus, but it does not appear that they were ever able to use them in practical observations. Bradley, on 27th December 1722, actually measured the diameter of Venus with a telescope whose object-glass had a focal length of 2124 feet. In these very long tele- scopes no tube was employed, and they were consequently termed aerial telescopes. Huygens contrived some ingenious arrangements for directing such telescopes towards any object visible in the heavens,—the focal adjustment and centring of the eye-piece being preserved by a braced rod connecting the object-glass and eye-piece. Other con- trivances for the same purpose are described by La Hire (Mém. de? Acad., 1715) and by Hartsoeker (Miscel. Berol., vol. i. p. 261). Telescopes of such great length were natur- ally difficult to use, and must have taxed to the utmost the skill and patience of the observers. One cannot but pay a passing tribute of admiration to the men who, with such troublesome tools, achieved such results.

Until Newton's discovery of the different refrangibility of light of different colours, it was generally supposed that object-glasses of telescopes were subject to no other errors than those which arose from the spherical figure

of their surfaces, and the efforts of opticians were chiefly directed to the construction of lenses of other forms of curvature. James Gregory, in his Optica Promota (1663), discusses the forms of images of objects produced by lenses and mirrors, and shows that when the surfaces of the lenses or mirrors are portions of spheres the images are curves concave towards the objective, but if the curves of the surfaces are conic sections the spherical aberration is cor- rected. He was well aware of the failures of all attempts to perfect telescopes by employing lenses of various forms of curvature, and accordingly proposed the form of reflect- ing telescope which bears his name. But Gregory, accord- ing to his own confession, had no practical skill; he could find no optician capable of realizing his ideas, and after some fruitless attenipts was obliged to abandon all hope of bringing his telescope into practical use. Newton was the first to construct a reflecting telescope. When in 1666 he made his discovery of the different refrangibility of light of different colours, he soon perceived that the faults of the refracting telescope were due much more to this cause than to the spherical figure of the lenses. He over-hastily concluded from some rough experiments (Optics, bk. i. pt. ii, prop. 3) “that all refracting substances diverged the pris- matic colours in a constant proportion to their mean refrac- tion”; and he drew the natural conclusion “that refraction could not be produced without colour,” and therefore “ that

(Journal des Scavans, 1672). No further practical advance appears to have been made in the design or construction of

the instrument till the year 1723, when John Hadley (best Hadley,

known as the inventor of the sextant) presented to the Royal Society a reflecting telescope of the Newtonian con- struction, with a metallic speculum of 6-inches aperture and 62%-inches focal length, having eye-pieces magnifying up to 230 diameters. The instrument was examined by Pound and Bradley, the former of whom reported upon it in Phil. Trans., 1723, No. 378, p. 382. After remarking that Newton’s telescope “had lain neglected these fifty years,” they stated that Hadley had sufficiently shown “ that this noble invention does not consist in bare theory.” They compared its performance with that of the object-glass of 123-feet focal length

presented to the Royal Society by Huygens, and found that Hadley's reflector

‘‘will bear such a charge as to make it magnify the object as many times as the latter with its due charge, and that it represents objects as distinct, though not altogether so clear and bright. . . . Notwithstanding this difference in the brightness of the objects, we were able with this reflecting telescope to see whatever we have hitherto discovered with the Hugenian, particularly the transits of Jupiter's satellites and their shadows over his disk, the black list in Saturn's ring, and the edge of his shadow cast on his ring. We have also seen with it several times the five satellites of Saturn, in viewing of which this telescope had the advantage of the Hugenian at the time when we compared them ; for, being in summer, and the Hugenian telescope being managed without a tube, the twilight pre- vented us from seeing in this some of these small objects which at the same time we could discern with the reflecting telescope.” Bradley and. Molyneux, having been instructed by Hadley in his methods of polishing specula, succeeded in producing some telescopes of considerable power, one of which had a focal length of 8 feet; and, Molyneux having communicated these methods to Scarlet and Hearn, two London opticians, the manufacture of telescopes as a matter of business was commenced by them (Smith's Optics, bk. iii. ch. 1). But

it was reserved for James Short of Edinburgh to give James Born at Edin-
Short.

practical effect to Gregory's original idea. burgh in 1710 and originally educated for the church, Short attracted the attention of Maclaurin, professor of mathematics at the university, who permitted him about 1732 to make use of his rooms in the college buildings for experiments in the construction of telescopes. In Short's first telescopes the specula were of glass, as suggested by Gregory, but he afterwards used metallic specula only, and succeeded in giving to them true parabolic and elliptic figures. Short then adopted telescope-making as his pro- fession, which he practised first in Edinburgh and after- wards in London. All Short's telescopes were of the Gregorian form, and some of them retain even to the present day their

original high polish and sharp definition. Short died in London in 1768, having realized a consider- able fortune by the exercise of his profession.

no improvement could be expected from the refracting tele- scope” (T’reatise on Optics, p. 112). But, having ascertained by experiment that for all colours of light the angle of incidence is equal to the angle of reflexion, he turned his attention to the construction of reflecting telescopes. After

The historical sequence of events now brings us to the Achro- discovery of the achromatic telescope. The first person ™atic who succeeded in making achromatic refracting telescopes !°S°°P* seems to have been Chester Moor Hall, a gentleman of Chester Essex. He argued that the different humours of the M. Hall.

much experiment he selected an alloy of tin and copper as the most suitable material for his specula, and he devised means for grinding and polishing them. He did not attempt the formation of a parabolic figure on account of the probable mechanical difficulties, and he had besides satisfied himself that the chromatic and not the spherical aberration formed the chief faults of previous telescopes. Newton’s first telescope so far realized his expectations that he could see with its aid the satellites of Jupiter and the horns of Venus. Encouraged by this success, he made a second telescope of 64-inches focal length, with a magni- fying power of 38 diameters, which he presented to the Royal Society of London in December 1671. A third form of reflecting telescope was devised in 1672 by Cassegrain

human eye so refract rays of light as to produce an image on the retina which is free from colour, and he reason- ably argued that it might be possible to produce a like result by combining lenses composed of different refracting media! After devoting some time to the inquiry he found that by combining lenses formed of different kinds of glass the effect of the unequal refrangibility of light was corrected, and in 1733 he succeeded in constructing telescopes which exhibited objects free from colour, One of these instruments of only 20-inches focal length had an aperture of 25 inches. Hall was a man of independent

} The same argument was employed by Gregory more than fifty

years previously, but had been followed by no practical result. The lens of the human eye is not achromatic (see L1gur, vol. xiv. p. 601).

: XXIII. — 18

Euler.

Klingen- stierna.

means, and seems to have been careless of fame: at least he took no trouble to communicate his invention to the world. Ata trial in Westminster Hall about the patent rights granted to Dollond (Watkin v. Dollond),! Hall was admitted to be the first inventor of the achromatic tele- scope; but it was ruled by Lord Mansfield that ‘it was not the person who locked his invention in his scrutoire that ought to profit for such invention, but he who brought it forth for the benefit of mankind.”2 In 1747 Euler com- municated to the Berlin Academy of Sciences a memoir in which he endeavoured to prove the possibility of correct- ing both the chromatic and the spherical aberration of an object-glass. Like Gregory and Hall, he argued that, since the various humours of the human eye were so combined as to produce a perfect image, it should be possible by suitable combinations of lenses of different refracting media to construct a perfect object-glass. Adopting a hypo- thetical law of the dispersion of differently coloured rays of light, he proved analytically the possibility of constructing an achromatic object-glass composed of lenses of glass and water. But all his efforts to produce an actual object- glass of this construction were fruitless,—a failure which he attributed solely to the difficulty of procuring lenses worked precisely to the requisite curves (Mem. Acad. Berlin, 1753). Dollond admitted the accuracy of Euler’s analysis, but disputed his hypothesis on the grounds that it was purely a theoretical assumption, that the theory was opposed to the results of Newton’s experiments on the refrangibility of light, and that it was impossible to de- termine a physical law from analytical reasoning alone (Phil. Trans., 1753, p. 289). In 1754 Euler communicated to the Berlin Academy a further memoir, in which, starting from the hypothesis that light consists of vibrations excited in an elastic fluid by luminous bodies, and that the differ- ence of colour of light is due to the greater or

less fre- quency of these vibrations in a given time, he deduced his previous results. He did not doubt the accuracy of New- ton's experiments quoted by Dollond, because he asserted that the difference between the law deduced by Newton and that which he assumed would not be rendered sensible by such an experiment.? Dollond did not reply to this memoir, but soon afterwards he received an abstract of a memoir by Klingenstierna, the Swedish mathematician and astronomer, which led him to doubt the accuracy of the results deduced by Newton on the dispersion of refracted light. Klingenstierna showed from purely geometrical considerations, fully appreciated by Dollond, that the re- sults of Newton's experiments could not be brought into harmony with other universally accepted facts of refraction. _1 At a meeting of the Royal Astronomical Society held on 9th May 1886 a legal document, signed by Chester Moor Hall, was presented by Mr R. B. Prosser of the Patent Office to the society. On the same occasion Mr Ranyard made the following interesting

statement respecting Hall :—

‘‘Some years ago very little was known about Moor Hall. It was known that, about seven years after the patent for making achromatic object-glasses was granted to Dollond, his claim to the invention was disputed by other instru- ment-makers, amongst them by a Mr Champness, an instrument-maker of Cornhill, who began to infringe the patent, alleging that John Dollond was not the real inventor, and that such telescopes had been made twenty-tive years before the granting of his patent by Mr Moor Hall. John Dollond, to whom the Copley medal of the Royal Society had been given for his inven- tion, was then dead, and his son brought an action for infringing the patent against Champness. There is no report of the case, but the facts are referred to in the reports of subsequent cases. It appears that workmen who had been employed by Mr Moor Hall were examined, and proved that they had made achromatic object-glasses as early as 1733. Dollond's patent was not set aside, though the evidence with regard to the prior manufacture was accepted by Lord Mansfield, who tried the case, as having been satisfactorily proved. .. . Mr Hall was a bencher of the Inner Temple, and was alive at the time of the action. He was a man of some property, and is spoken of on his tombstone as an excellent lawyer and matt.ematician. He was not a fellow of the Royal Society, but must certainly

have known of the gift of the Copley medal to Dollond. It is very curious the conflicting evidence we have to reconcile, but I think the balance of evidence is in favour of there having been a prior in- vention of achromatic object-glasses before the date of Dollond's patent" (Astron. Register, May 1886; see also the Observatory for same date).

> Gentleman's Magazine, 1790, part ii. p. 890.

3 For a good account of this controversy, see Dr. H. Servus, Ge- schichte des Fernrohrs, p. 77 sq., Berlin, 1886 :

Like a practical man, Dollond at once put his doubts to the Dollong, test of experiment, confirmed the conclusions of Klingen- stierna, discovered ''a difference far beyond his hopes in the refractive qualities of different kinds of glass with respect

to their divergency of colours," and was thus rapidly led

to the construction of object-glasses in which first the chromatic and afterwards the spherical aberration were corrected (Phil. Trans., 1758, p. 733).

We have thus followed somewhat minutely the history of the gradual process by which Dollond arrived indepen- dently at his invention of the refracting telescope, because it has been asserted that he borrowed the idea from others. Montucla, in his Histoire des Mathématiques (pp. 448-449), gives the following footnote, communicated to him by Lalande :—

'*Ce fut Chestermonhall" (an obvious misprint for Chester Moor

Hall) ''qui, vers 1750, eut Vidée des lunettes achromatiques. I] s'adressoit 4 Ayscough,? qui faisoit travaillir Bass. Dollond ayant eu besoin de Bass pour un verre que demandoit le duc d'Yorck, Bass lui fit voir du crown-glass et du flint-glass. Hall donna une Iunette & Ayscough, qui la montra 4 plusieurs personnes; il en donna Ja construction a Bird, qui n'en tint pas compte. Dollond en profita. Dans le procés qu'il y eut entre Dollond et Watkin, au bane du roi, cela fut prouvé ; mais Dollond gagna, parce qu'il étoit le premier qui efit fait connoitre les lunettes achromatiques." It is

clearly established that Hall was the first inventor of the achromatic telescope ; but Dollond did not borrow the invention from Hall without acknowledgment in the manner suggested by Lalande. His discovery was beyond question an independent one. The whole history of his researches proves how fully he was aware of the conditions necessary for the attainment of achromatism in refracting telescopes, and he may be well excused if he so long placed implicit reliance on the accuracy of experiments made by so illustrious a philosopher as Newton. His writings suffi- ciently show that but for this confidence he would have arrived sooner at a discovery for which his mind was fully prepared. It is, besides, impossible to read Dollond's memoir (Phil. T'rans., 1758, p. 733) without being im- pressed with the fact that it is a truthful account, not only of the successive steps by which he independently arrived at his discovery, but also of the logical processes by which these steps were successively suggested to his mind,

The triple object-glass, consisting of a combination of two convex lenses of crown glass with a concave flint lens between them, was introduced in 1765 by Peter, son of John Dollond, and many excellent telescopes of this kind were made by him.

The limits of this article do not permita further detailed historical statement of the various steps by which the powers of the telescope were developed. Indeed, in its practical form the principle of the instrument has re- mained unchanged from the time of the Dollonds to the present day; and the history of its development may be summed up as consisting not in new optical discoveries but in utilizing new appliances for figuring and polishing, im- proved material for specula and lenses, more refined means of testing, and more perfect and convenient methods of mounting. About the year 1774 William Herschel, then W. Her a teacher of music in Bath, began to occupy his leisure he: hours with the construction of specula, and finally devoted himself entirely to their construction and use. In 1778 he had selected the chef d'ceuvre of some 400 specula which he made for the celebrated instrument of 7-feet focal length with which his early brilliant astronomical dis- coveries were made. In 1783 he completed his reflector of 18,5-inches aperture and 20-feet focus, and in 1789 his great reflector of 4-feet aperture

and 40-feet focal length. The fame of these instruments was rapidly spread by the brilliant discoveries which their maker’s genius and perse-

4 Ayscough was an optician in Ludgate Hill, London.

verance accomplished by their aid. The reflecting telescope became the only available tool of the astronomer when great light grasp was requisite, as the difficulty of procuring disks of glass (especially of flint glass) of suitable purity and homogeneity limited the dimensions of. the achro- matic telescope. It was in vain that the French Academy of Sciences offered prizes for perfect disks of optical flint glass. Some of the best chemists and most enterprising glass-manufacturers exerted their utmost efforts without succeeding in producing perfect disks of more than 34 inches in diameter. All the larger disks were crossed by striee, or were otherwise deficient in the necessary homo- geneity and purity.

inand, Pierre Louis Guinand, a humble watchmaker living

near Chaux de Fond in Neuchatel, Switzerland, was the first who succeeded in making marked progress in the manufacture of optical flint glass. After making pre- liminary experiments extending over seven years (1784- 90), and nothing daunted by their comparative want of success, he erected a furnace near Les Brenets, and devoted most of his slender earnings (then derived from making the bells, or rather gongs, of repeating watches) to the fulfilment of his ambition. His persistency, courage, and self-denial recall forcibly the story of Palissy. In 1805 he joined the optical establishment of Fraunhofer and Utz- schneider and remained with them about nine years. During this period extensive experiments were instituted with remarkable success. It is said that the disks for the Dorpat refractor (9°6 inches aperture, with which the observations of Wilhelm Struve were made) were manufac- tured during this period, though the complete instrument was not delivered till 1823. Fraunhofer had, however, profited so fully by the suggestions of Guinand, and had

‘ probably also so far improved on the original methods, that

he afterwards succeeded in producing still larger object- glasses. After Fraunhofer’s death in 1826 his successors Merz and Mahler carried out successfully the methods handed down to them by Guinand and Fraunhofer, and produced some large and excellent telescopes, which are hereafter mentioned. Meanwhile Guinand, having re- turned to his native country in 1814, resumed there the manufacture of disks of optical glass, discovered a method of removing striz by breaking and reuniting the portions by heat, when the glass was in a plastic state, and event- ually produced perfect disks up to 18 inches in diameter.

and to describe in detail special typical instruments, which, owing to the work accomplished by their aid or the practi- cal advances exemplified in their construction, appear most worthy of record or study.

Refracting Telescope.

In its simplest form the telescope consists of a convex object- Early lens capable of forming an image of a distant object and of an eye- forms.

lens, concave or convex, by which the image so formed is magnified. When the axis of the eye-lens coin- cides with that of the ob- ject-glass, and the focal point of the eye-lens is co- incident with the principal focus of the object-lens, parallel rays incident upon the object-glass will emerge from the eye-piece as parallel rays. These, falling in turn on the lens of the human eye, are converged by it and form an image on the retina.” Fig. 1 shows the course of the rays when the eye-lens is convex (or positive), fig. 2 when the eye- lens is eoncave (or negative) The former represents Kepler’s, the latter Lippershey’s or the Galilean telescope. The magnifying power obviously depends on the proportion of the focal length of the object-lens to that of the eye-lens, that is, magnifying power= F/e,

where F is the focal length of the object-lens and ¢ that of the eye-lens.

Fig. 2.

methods of determining the magnifying power of a telescope is to measure the diameter of the emergent pencil of rays, after the tele- scope has been adjusted to focus upon a star, and to divide the diameter of the object-glass by the diameter of the emergent pencil. If we desire to utilize all the parallel rays which fall upon an object- glass it is necessary that the full pencil of emerging rays should enter the observer's eye. Assuming with Sir William Herschel that the normal pupil of the eye distends to one-fifth of an inch in diameter when viewing faint objects, we obtain the rule that the minimum magnifying power which can be efficiently employed is five times the diameter of the object-glass Gavmacial in inches. The defects of the Galilean and Kepler telescopes are due to the ehromatic and spherical aberration of the simple lenses of which they are composed (see Oprics, vol. xvii. p. 802 sq.). The substitution of a positive or negative eye-piece for the simple convex or concave eye-lens, and of an achromatic object-glass for the simple object-lens, transforms these early forms into the modern achro- matic telescope. The Galilean telescope with a concave eye-lens instead of an eye-picce still survives as the modern opera-glass, on account of its shorter length, but the object-glass and eye-lens are achromatic combinations.

Also the diameter of the pencil of parallel rays emerging Magnify- from the eye-lens is to the diameter of the object-lens inversely as ing the magnifying power of the telescope. Hence one of the best power.

Most of these he disposed of to Lerebours and Secretan, opticians in Paris, by both of whom some fine object-glasses

The principles of an achromatic combination of prisms or lenses Achro- have been explained in Licut (vol. xiv. pp. 592, 595) and further matic developed in Optics (vol. xvii. p. 804 sqg.). As a lens may be re- object-

were made.! Guinand communicated his secrets to his sons before his death in 1823. About 1829 Bontemps entered into partnership with one of the sons, and another son carried on his father's manufacture in partnership with his mother. The latter firm was succeeded by Dauget of Soleure, whose exhibits of optical glass excited so-much attention at the London exhibition of 1851. About 1848 Bontemps joined the firm of Chance Brothers of Birming- ham, and thus carried the secret of Guinand's methods

to England. It is not a little remarkable that the only firms in the world by whom large disks of optical glass have been produced trace their success to information derived more or less directly from Guinand. MM. Feil of Paris, who are direct descendants of Guinand, and Messrs Chance Brothers of Birmingham are at the present time the only makers of optical glass in disks of larger diameter than 20 inches. INstTRUMENTS, &c.

We now proceed to give an account of the methods and principles of construction of the various kinds of telescopes,

1 See Wolf, Biographien, vol. ii. p. 301, and Clerke, History of Astronomy, pp. 146-147.

garded as built up of a series of thin slices of prisms, divided from glass.

each other by planes parallel to the axis of the lens, it will be seen that, if a prism perfectly achromatic for rays of two definite wave- lengths, and approximately achromatic for all rays, can be con- structed by combining two prisms of different kinds of glass, all that is required to produce an object-glass with similar small chromatic errors is to combine a convex lens of crown glass and a concave one of flint glass as in fig. 3, their surfaces being of such curvatures as to form aseries of imaginary prisms (such as we have supposed an object-glass to consist of) through any one of which all kinds of light falling on the 2 hig parallel to its axis will be refracted very nearly to a common focus ¥. Accordingly any pro-

2 In the case of short-sighted persons the image for very distant ob- jects (that is, for parallel rays) is formed in front of the retina ; there- fore, to enable such persons to see distinctly, the rays emerging from the eye-piece must be slightly divergent ; that is, they must enter the eye as if they proceeded from a comparatively near object. For normal eyes the natural adaptation is not to focus for quite parallel rays, but on objects at a moderate distance, and practically, therefore, most persons do adjust the focus of a telescope, for most distinct and easy vision, so that the rays emerge from the eye-piece very slightly diver- gent. Abnormally short-sighted persons require to push in the eye-lens nearer to the object-glass, and long-sighted persons to withdraw it from the adjustment employed by those of normal sight. It is usual, how- ever, in computations of the

magnifying power of telescopes, for the rays emerging from the eye-piece when adjusted for distinct vision to be parallel.

j i i iti i that the adjacent surfaces of the sup- d object-glass can be tested as regards its optical conditions by | is necessary to assume } : * esas a <9," 4.¢., calculating he point at which, after refrac- | posed infinitely numerous prisms form together some continuous tion through the two lenses, the ray so traced will cut their ‘ common axis. For the analytical solution of this problem it

curved surface, which practically is nearly spherical. But the | consider most desirable. Herschel advocates actual differences between the curves which may be required in | satisfying the terms depending on the second certain conditions for producing a perfect lens differ so slightly | power of the aberration, Kliigel that the refrac- from true spherical surfaces that it is impossible by any previously | tions of the rays should be as small as possible ; designed mechanical process to predict whether the resulting figure | or we may make it a condition that the second will be that of a sphere or some other curve very nearly that of a | and third surfaces shall have the same radius, so that the surfaces sphere. The mathematician, therefore, who discusses the subject | may be cemented together. The fourth condition is of course the is compelled to adopt spherical curves as the basis of his calcula- | desired focal length. But for all practical purposes it is sufficient tion, On this assumption we may then trace a ray rigidly through | to have placed the reader in a position to test the optical condi- any supposed object-glass as follows. Let A, B, A’, B’ be respectively | tions of any combinations that may be proposed, and to refer \ the points where the refracted ray produced would intersect the | him to the works mentioned in the subjoined note? ; for, in fact Practical optical axis after refraction at the first, second, third, and fourth the construction of object-glasses on paper is of far higher interest methods refracting surfaces respectively ; also let a be the first angle of in- | as a mathematical exercise than as a practical matter. By a slight of com- cidence, « and yw’ the refractive indexes for the crown and flint lens | departure from the spherical figure—a departure so minute that putation,

respectively for a ray of the wave-length whose course is to be traced, 7 and s the first and second radii for the crown lens, 7” and s’ the first and second radii for the flint lens, a, B, a’, B’, a’, and 0’ auxiliary angles, d the thickness of the crown lens, @’ the thickness of the flint lens, A the distance between the second and third surfaces.. Then for the intersect after refraction at the first surface

: i sina=— sina; bad . r.sina (A)=a-a; A ain (A) +73 for the intersect after refraction at the second surface

singe t2-4 sin (A);

sinB=yp.sinb;

rs , posi gs ae (B)=(A)+B-4; ee) s; for the intersect after refraction at the third surface

sin a’ = — (B-7’- aja),

: iby ve sin has sina’;

(ky (pe BA ‘=y_y/’, sina | (A’) ( )+a w;A a z sin (A’)’ for the interscct after refraction at the fourth surface sin b’= — (A’+s’-d’) sin‘4) ; sin 8 =p’ sin 0’; a , B’)=(A’ b’— A’: pas ee sin p’ (B’)=(A’)+8’— A’s B’s —s—a1 The computation is very much simplified when we consider the

angle of incidence to be very small—i.e., the point of incidence very near the optical axis, viz.,

a ; g oe p’s! ; Ep8-) ¢ > R 2-7°”™

By means of these formule we can compute B’ (the point where a ray, entering the first surface of the object-glass, will intersect the optical axis) for any angle of incidence=a, when for a ray of that wave-length the indexes of refraction are known for the glass of which the lenses are composed, if the radii of curvature of the lenses are also known. The most perfect object-glass would be one in which the value of B’ is the same for two rays of the two selected wave-lengths, through whatever portion of the

object-glass they may pass. This, however, is a condition which cannot be mathematically satisficd with spherical surfaces. It is of course possible to find values of the four unknown quantities 7, s, 7’, and s’ such that four conditions shall be satisfied. The ordinary approxi- mate method is to find such values of the radii that B’ is the same for rays of two different wave-lengths when the incident rays are near the axis, and for mean rays which enter near the margin of the lens ; _but of course this solution is indeterminate, and only becomes rigid when two radii are assumed. Thus, for any crown lens of any radii of curvature it is possible to find a flint lens to satisfy these conditions. The rigid solution becomes one of suc- cessive approximation to such four conditions as the computer may

there are no mechanical means sufficiently delicate to measure it with certainty—the optician may fail to realize true spherical surfaces, and thus on the one hand miss the fine definition which his calculation led him to expect, or on the other hand convert an object-glass which with spherical curves would have large spherical aberration into one perfectly corrected in this respect,

aving, therefore, for particular kinds of glass ascertained a good general form of object-glass, it becomes only necessary for the optician to perform an approximate calculation of the curva- tures requisite to produce correction of the chromatic aberration, and to trust to the process of final figuring for correction of the final spherical and chromatic aberration. It fortunately happens that in the rigid equations the terms which express the thick- ness and distance apart of the lenses involve only the focal distances of central rays, and have but a small influence on the ratios of the aberrations of the lenses; and, further, they affect

chiefly the focal length of the lens, and have a very small influence —

on the chromatic aberration. Thus in the preliminary computa- tion the optician may neglect the thickness of the lenses and emplo

the simple approximate formule given under Oprics, vol. xvii. p. 804—

ou. 1, a Bh «= ¥ re Pai 7 A ? Suc) P bu’ i ea where ‘ st and aay are the dispersive powers of the two kinds of

glass for the two rays which he desires to unite, f and /” the cor- responding focal lengths of the two lenses, and F the focal length of the combination. The focal lengths of the two lenses which secure the conditions of achromatism having been thus computed, the radii of curvature may be computed for either lens by the usual formula (see LiGutT, vol. xiv. p. 593) —

ee: 1)

an ld)(r 8 , In the last expression, where r and s correspond to the radii of curvature, the optician has an infinite range of choice. He will of course select such a proportion of 7 to s as experience or more elaborate calculation has shown to be favourable. In the form of object-glass recommended by Sir John Herschel, as fulfilling the most favourable conditions for correction of a spherical aberration for parallel as well as nearly parallel rays, the required curvatures for the exterior surfaces of the crown and the flint lens were found to vary very slightly for a considerable range of the ratio of the dispersive powers of the crown and the flint glass. —a # (the mean index of refraction) to be 1542 for crown glass an 1°585 for flint glass, Herschel proved that, if the radii in question are taken to be 6°72 for the crown lens and 14°20 for the flint lens (supposing the focal length of the desired combination to be 10), we have only to compute the radii of the second and third surfaces

1 Kuler, Dioptrica, St Petersburg, 1767-71; Clairaut, Mém. de l’Acad. Scien, .

1757 ; D’Alembert, Opusc., vol. iii.; Lagrange, Miscel. Taurin., iii. 2, p. 152, and Mem, Acad. Berl., 1778; Schmidt, Lehrbuch der analytischen Optik ; Santini, Teorica degli Strwmenti Ottict; Kltigel, in Gilbert’s Ann. d. Physik, xxxiv., 1810, pp. 265-275 and 276-291; Herschel, Phil. Trans, Roy. Soc., 1821, pp. 222-267; Littrow, Mem, R.A.S. (London), vol. iii. pp. 235-255; Robinson, Mechanical Philosophy, art. “Telescope,” vol. iii. pp. 403-514; Gauss, ‘‘ Ueber die achro- matischen Doppel-Objective,” in Lindenau’s Zeitschr., iv., 1817, pp. 345-351, and Gilbert’s Ann. d. Physik, lix. pp. 188-195; Gauss, in Louville’s Journal, 1856, i. pp. 9-43; Steinheil Astron. Nach., xl vili., 1851, col. 225-228, liii., 1860, col. 305-306, and 1861, col. 269-270; A. Steinheil, Ueber Berechnung optischer Con-

structionen ; Carl Steinheil, Repertoriwm, iii., 1867, pp. 430-440, and Miinchen Akad. Sitz., 1867, ii. pp. 284-297; Steinheil (Carl A. and H, A.), Géttingsche Nachrichten, 1865, pp. 131-143, 211-214.

lour

TELESCOPE

by means of the above simple formule and the measured dispersive and refractive power of the glass of the lenses. (The method of determining p, &c., is given under OpTics, vol. xvii. p. 800.) The

form generally adopted (see fig. 4) in the

best modern object-glasses is extremely

simple, viz., an equi-convex crown lens

and a flint lens whose first surface has the

same radius of curvature as the surfaccs =e % of the crown lens—this radius depending on the focal length which it is desired to give to the object-glass. Since in order to fulfil the conditions of achromatism the focal lengths of the two lenses have to be proportional to their dispersive powers (for the rays which it is desired to unite), and asin the two de- scriptions of glass in question the dispersion of flint glass for C to rays between F and G is very nearly twice that of crown glass, the posterior surface of the flint lens becomes nearly a plane. The final correction for achromatism is made, if necessary, by departing slightly from a plane in the curvature of the last surface of the flint lens, and the final correction for spherical aberration in the figuring of the surfaces. In a lecture delivered at the Royal In- — on 2d April 1886 Sir Howard Grubb, optician, of Dublin, sald :

“A truly spherical curve is the exception, not the rule. When I tell you that a sensible difference in correction for spherical aberration can be made by half an hour’s polishing, corresponding probably to a difference in the first place of decimals in radii of the curves, you will see that it is practically not necessary to enter upon any calculation for spherical aberration. We know

about what form gives an approximate correction; we adhere nearly to that, and the rest is done by figuring of the surface. To illustrate what I mean. I would be quite willing to undertake to alter the curves of the crown or flint lens of any of my objectives by a very large quantity, increasing one and decreasing the other so as to still satisfy the conditions of achromatism, but introducing theoretically a large amount of positive or negative spherical aberration, and yet to make out of the altered lens an object-glass perfectly corrected for spherical aberration. . . . I may remark that it is sometimes

ossible to make a better objective by deviating from the curves which give a rue correction for spherical aberration, and correcting that aberration by figuring, rather than by strictly adhering to the theoretical curves."

When an object-glass is designed for use as an ordinary telescope it is usual to select for the rays of different colour to be united those near C and those be- tween F and G, since rays of lower and higher re- frangibility produce a com- ° paratively faint impression , on the sense of sight. In such a telescope of any considerable aperture the image of a bright star at focus is surrounded by a halo of bluish or violet- coloured light,—a defect which is unavoidable in an , object-glass composed of a crown and flint lens on ac- count of the irrationality of their spectra (Licut, vol. xiv. p. 592), There seems to be no doubt that differ- ent eyes are differently im- pressed by rays of different wave-length. Thus two observers will often have different opinions as to the chromatic corrections of so the same object-glass: the observer whose eye is ab- normally sensitive to vio- let light will pronounce the + chromatic aberration over- $ corrected in an object-glass which another will consider perfect in this respect, and vice versa. Probably it is partly owing to this cause that the object-glasses of different makers show systematic differ- ences in their colour correction. An exceedingly sensitive method of testing this correction devised by Professor Stokes is given under Oprics, vol. xvii. p. 804. Another method, due to Professor Hark- ness and first carried out by Dr Vogel, is the following. Place behind the eye-picce a direct vision prism (¢f. Oprics, p. 801). The image of a star in the field will then be converted into a narrow spectrum, which, if there were no chromatic aberration, would when focused be represented by a faint coloured straight line, uniformly sharp and narrow. But in an ordinary object-glass only two points in the spectrum can be perfectly focused

simultaneously ; therefore all its other parts are spread out, forming a coloured band of variable breadth. If we focus on the brightest part of the spectrum, both

1 See Abney and Festing, Bakerian Lecture, Phil. Trans., 1886; also Photo- graphic News, May 1886, p. 332.

co 49 20 o

499

oy sig ia

“a

62 2

£0

a Seale ae of the ee) kp ow go 0 2 40 60 7) a a)

141

its extreme ends become spread out into a more or less trumpet- shaped form, enabling the observer to note the range of the spec- trum over which precise definition can be expected. The amount of this extension will depend in some degree on the form of the object-glass, but much more (if the achromatism is fairly well corrected) on the irrationality of the spectra of the glass of which the lenses are composed. If we then focus, for example, on the C line, we shall have the band of light contracted at C and at another point (probably between F and G), widening to a slightly trumpet-shaped form below C, and markedly so above G. This second point of greatest contraction gives the wave-length of the ray which has the same focus asC. If the telescope has a focusing scale, we can also measure directly in this way the change of focus for rays of different colours. The chromatic aberration will be best corrected for the rays of minimum focus, and this minimum focus should for an ordinary telescope correspond with the brightest part of the spectrum, viz., with rays between D and E. A com-

parison of the chromatic correction of object-glasses by different makers is given by Dr Vogel (Monatsber. der Berliner Akad., April 1880), obtained in the manner just described. The tele- scopes compared are—

Observatory to YK No. of Aper- Maker. which Instru- perture of Focal tures in Focal ment belongs. Object-Glass. Length. BA m. m. Schroder …... Potsdam 0°298 5:4 18°1 V0] 0) 0 ee aoe ee Bs 0°207 3°16 15°3 Fraunhofer …. Berlin 0°243 4°331 17°8

Fig. 5, taken from the above-quoted paper, affords most interest- ing information as to the colour-correction of these three typical object-glasses. The curves of the diagram show the variation of the focal point for rays of different wave-lengths in the case of each object-glass. It will be seen that Fraunhofer has united the rays about C with those of wave-length 525 millionths millimétres, Grubb with those about wave-length 494, and Schréder about wave- length 463. The object-glasses of Grubb and Schréder are com-

ro 120 440

Spectrum of a white Star tor differeat adjustunent of tie focus hed Violet

{|

Wines

ai Lal

ra

43a 4390

200

Fig. 5.

posed of modern glass, which is comparatively colourless, whilst Fraunhofer’s glass is decidedly green in colour. The minimum focus in Fraunhofer’s telescope is placed near D (rather at wave-length 585),

because the absorption of the blue and violet rays of the spectrum by the flint lens renders the brightest part of the spectrum less blue than in an objective composed of modern glass by Chance or Feil, which is nearly colourless. This circumstance enabled Fraunhofer to apply a very large over-correction for colour,—that is, to unite as perfectly as possible the red and central part of the spectrum, and to leave the outstanding violet rays to be in great part absorbed by the colour of the glass. The colour-corrections in the object-glasses of Grubb and Schroder are very different in character. In Grubb's object-glass the minimum focus is for rays of wave-length about 545, that of Schréder's is about wave-length 538, which appears to prove that Grubb's eye is more sensitive to

Photo- graphic object- glasses.

Triple object- glasses.

red and Schréder's to blue light. Also Grubb's object-glass unites the red rays very closely with the brightest part of the spectrum, and leaves the blue and violet rays outstanding. Schréder, on the other hand, leaves the red rays outstanding in order to unite the rays between D and F more closely. The conclusion is that to Grubb's eye the red rays would be obtrusively prominent in Schréder's telescope, and that he would pronounce the object-glass under-corrected ; whilst Schréder's eye would find the outstanding violet rays too prominent in Grubb's telescope, and pronounce it over-corrected. The absolute amount of light in the secondary spectrum in viewing the same object depends, ceteris paribus, upon the square of the aperture; therefore telescopes of large aperture have to be made of greater Lge eben focal length than those of small aperture, in order to diminish the secondary spectrum. Figs. a, B, y, 5 in the diagram give.the form of the spectrum of a star in Schroder's telescope for various adjustments of the focus ; figs. a' and y' give the corresponding forms for Fraunhofer's tele-scope. Fig. a represents the eye-piece focused for the brightest part of the spectrum ; fig. 8 when the red rays and those near Ha are simultaneously focused ; fig. y when the extréme red rays are In focus, the corresponding focus being a little below Hy ; fig. 6 when focused on Hy.

When a telescope is to be constructed for photographic purposes the aim should be to unite, as perfectly as possible, the rays near that portion of the spectrum which act most powerfully on the photographic plate to be employed. This latter point has been de- termined for the various photographic processes by Captain Abney.? The results are shown graphically in fig. 6 for the processes practi-

cally employed at present 7 in astronomical photo-

“| graphy. Visual spectrum.

AglI, acid or alkaline de- veloper.

Do., short exposure.

AgBr, acid or ferrous citro- oxalate developer.

Do., short exposure.

Orange, AgBr.

Do., short exposure.

\

Green, AgBr.

‘(ES ies re

Do., short exposure.

eR OSE 65K WE a a Ree) Ras

/-

ie

Agl ~~+ AgBr~~+ AgNO;; wet oo | . plate. 7 PUT |

Fig. 6.

To unite the rays near G or H the angle of the flint prism must be diminished ; that is, the focal length of the flint lens must be lengthened as compared with that of an object-glass of similar construction suited for eye observations; and the rays of greatest photographie action can be united more perfectly than the visible rays.

- If an object-glass is composed of three lenses of different kinds of glass it is theoretically possible to unite three instead of two points of the spectrum, besides improving the correction for spheri- cal aberration. The most important practical applications of such a system have been—(1) the triple object-glass of John Dollond ; (2) the application of a convex crown glass in front of an ordinary object-glass in order to alter its chromatic correction from that best suited for eye observations to that best suited for photographic observation. John Dollond's object-glass is generally described as a concave flint lens between two crown lenses. If the crown lenses are of similar glass, there is no gain as to the correction of the secondary spectrum ; it becomes only possible to correct the spheri- cal aberration more perfectly. Very few telescopes with triple object-glasses have been made since the days of John Dollond. But the great and detrimental obtrusiveness of the secondary spectrum in the large object-glasses of the present day can be diminished in no other way, unless very extreme focal lengths are adopted, or some new kinds of glass that can be produced in large disks are discovered, in which the irrationality of their spectra is less, and in which also there is the necessary difference in the

Agl+AgBr, ferrous oxalate developer.

AANA

1 Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxxiii. pp. 164-186.

TELESCOPE

"much shorter proportional focus than is usual or possible in double

relation between refractive index and dispersive power. The cost of a triple object-glass would of course be at least 50 per cent. greater than that of a double object-glass ; but, on the other hand, the extreme focal length necessary for large object-glasses might be considerably reduced. Thus the cost saved by a less heavy mount- ing and a smaller observatory and dome might counterbalance to some extent, if not entirely, the additional cost of the triple object- glass. Dr Schroder has constructed for the present writer an exquisite triple object-glass (three different kinds of glass) of 84-inches aperture and only 18-inches focal length. Its perform- ance with its highest eye-piece of 4-inch focus (power 72) is most admirable. It would probably be impossible to construct large telescopes approaching such short focal length, but there is no doubt that a large triple object-glass of 10 or 12 apertures focus would have an enormous advantage in colour correction, and prob- ably in spherical aberration, over a double object-glass of the same aperture and much greater focal length. One peculiarity of such a triple object-glass is that three points in the spectrum can have the same focus, and therefore the point of minimum focus may for the best chromatic adjustment not quite correspond with the focal point for the brightest part of the spectrum ; but, obviously, the rays of the whole visible spectrum may thus be brought to intersect the axis much more nearly at the same point. There will probably be a far wider adoption of the triple object-glass in the future, especially as the greater intrinsic brilliancy of the image in short-focus telescopes is a matter of high importance in the spectroscopic and photographic processes of modern astronomy. On the subject of triple object-glasses the reader is referred to an admirable paper by Professor C. 8. Hastings (Amer. Journal of Science and Arts for December 1879, p. 429), which exhibits the results to be got – from combinations of different existing kinds of glass.

The following table exhibits the excess of the focus for any ray over the true focus, the unit being zyq/ba0 of the focal length, in —I. the actual results of Dr Vogel’s observations on three existing object-glasses already quoted, but each reduced to comparison with its true or minimum focus; II. the theoretically best possible ~ results from a double object-glass consisting of Feil’s crown 1219 and Feil’s flint 1237, as computed by Hastings ; III. the theoretical results of four different triple object-glasses, capable of practical construction, of which details are given by Hastings.

Double Object-Glasses. Triple Object-Glasses.

IL. Til.

Hast- Hastings Hastings Hastings | Hastings

ings 1 2 3 4 A . ‘ 50 + 135 ae + 2 at – 8 Bi + 47 | + 64 | +106 + 66 +1 – 53 — 22 – 85 Cc} + 36 | + 41 | + 78 + 41 0 + 41 AO -++ 50 D O;|}+ 8; + 28 0 0 -+ 28 + 41 + 2 E| + 27 | + 29 0 + 13 ++ 25 – 10 – 67 – 10 F| + 64 56 | + 383 + 78 0 -14 — 60 – 4 G/ +171 | +226 | + 243 -+ 287 0 + 2 + 21 – 3

Prof. Hastings’s first condition in these computations is that the radius of curvature of none of the surfaces shall exceed one-fifteenth of the focal length. He also neglects the thickness and distance apart of the lenses, since these affect chiefly the focal length, but do not very materially affect the difference of the foci for different rays. The expression for the focal length F is then

e=’= 1(~~+=) The = v(~~+2) + (a — (+z)

where $= F vw’, uw’, w” are the indexes of refraction for the three

kinds of glass, and 7, 72, . . . 7 the radii of curvature for the six successive surfaces. Writing this in the form $= -NA+(W-B+(u”-1)0, we may call A, B, and C the curvature sums of the first, second, and third lenses respectively. The problem then is to find, for existing specimens of glass, values of A, B, and C no one of which shall exceed 30 when ¢=1, and which shall make ¢ independent of the wave-length of the light transmitted. The resulting values of A, B, and C for the first combination (marked ‘‘ Hastings 1”) are A C

5°47026 7°20827 — 835472; the curvatures are therefore very moderate and perfectly practicable. The constants for the glass of the first and second lenses have been determined by the author with great accuracy (see Amer. Jour., vol. xv. p. 273). The third glass is Fraunhofer’s flint 13 (Hastings 4 misprinted v in his table, in Amer. Jour., vol. xviii. p. 181), for which the constants are given in Schumacher’s Astron. Abhandlung fir 1823. If this glass can be reproduced in large disks, as no doubt it could be, we have the

meaus of making an object-glass very superior to any in existence and equally available for eye and photographic observation. Such an object-glass could be made of

object-glasses, not only because of the absence of secondary spectrum but also from the command afforded over the spherical aberration

Pree s CO P

by six surfaces. After satisfying the conditions of focal length, the first power of the spherical aberration, and two conditions of achromatism, we have still two available arbitrary conditions, which may be that r2=7r, and r,=7,. If these lead to convenient forms, as seems likely in the case in point, the whole may constitute a

143

dispersive power was increased, as in the phosphatic glasses, the blue end of the spectrum, as compared with the red end, was not spread out more than in ordinary glass of like dispersive power (Report Brit. Assoc., 1875, p. 26). It is to be hoped, however, that makers of optical glass will not relax their efforts till astronomers

cemented lens; thus the loss of light at the interior surfaces may be eliminated, and the final perfecting of the spherical aberration be left to the figuring of the surfaces.

shall be able to obtain refracting telescopes in which the secondary spectrum is nearly if not quite eliminated. Abbe’s new optical glass * leads one to believe that this hope will soon be realized.

The addition of a convex crown lens in front of the ordinary A third object-glass, to diminish the colour-correction and change the or photo- minimum focus from that for rays between D and E to that for graphic rays near G, was first made by Rutherford of New York. In this lens.

In some recent large double object-glasses, especially those of Alvan Clark, it has been usual to leave a space between the crown and the flint lens

sufficient to afford access, through apertures in the cell, for cleaning the inner crown and flint surfaces, without

risk of disturbing the lenses and their centring.! If in fig. 3 we imagine the lenses to be considerably separated and through both lenses trace a ray entering the crown lens parallel to and at some distance from the axis, we shall find that the effect of the separa- tion is to diminish the power of the flint lens, and therefore to

way he altered his telescope from one suited for eye observations to one in the best chromatic adjustment for photographie work. The chromatic effect is the same as increasing the convexity of the crown lens, and by proper proportioning of the two radii of curvature it becomes possible also to conserve, aud even to further

perfect, the destruction of spherical aberration. The great object- glass of 36-inches aperture, now (1887) under construction for the Lick observatory by Messrs Clarke of Boston (Mass.), is to be pro- vided with an additional crown lens for this purpose.‘

The problem of making a perfectly achromatic object-glass has Blair’s been solved by Dr Blair (din. Trans., vol. iii. p. 58) by employ- achro- ing fluid media, and he actually constructed an object-glass con- matic sisting of a plano-convex lens and a meniscus lens, both of crown fluid ob- glass with their convexities turned towards each other, the space ject- between the lenses being filled with hydrochloric acid. Unfortu- glasses,

change the character of the chromatic aberration. Thus an object- glass over-corrected for colour can be improved in this respect by increasing the distance between the lenses. It has been suggested that a telescope can be made suitable for both eye observation and photographic purposes if means are provided for increasing the distance between the lenses without risk of deranging the centring when the telescope is to be employed for photography. But the great change that would be necessary in such a case cannot be brought about consistently with preservation of the perfection of the corrections for spherical aberration.?

Any account of the achromatic object-glass would be incomplete without reference to the labours of the Rev. W. Vernon Harcourt and Prof. Stokes. Experiments in the production of optical glass were instituted by the former in 1834; and specimens, exhibited at the meeting of the British Association at Cambridge in 1862, were placed in the hands of Prof. Stokes, who determined the opti- eal constants of the numerous specimens of glass which Harcourt produced, and indicated from these results the direction in which fresh experiments should be undertaken. It was discovered that titanic acid extends the blue end of the spectrum more than corre- sponds to the dispersive power of the glass, whilst boracic acid has the opposite effect (Report Brit. Assoc., 1871, p. 88). At a

meeting of the British Association at Belfast in 1874 a telescope-

was exhibited whose object-glass was constructed from Harcourt's glass by Sir Howard. Grubb of Dublin. The following is Prof. Stokes's complete and concise account of it.

'The original intention was to construct the objective of a phosphatic glass containing a suitable percentage of titanic acid, achromatized by a glass of terborate of lead. (The percentage of titanic acid Was so chosen that there should be no irrationality of dispersion between the titanic glass and the terborate.) As the curvature of the convex lens would be rather severe if the whole convex power were thrown into a single lens, it was intended to use two lenses of this glass, one in front and one behind, with the concave terborate of lead placed between them. It was found that, provided not more than about one-third of the convex power were thrown behind, the adjacent surfaces might be made to fit, consistently with the condition of destroying the spherical as well as the chromatic aberration, This would render it possible to cement the glasses, and thereby protect the terborate, which was rather liable to tarnish. At the time of Mr Harcourt's death two disks of the titanic glass had been prepared which it was hoped would be good enough for employment, as also two disks of terborate. These were placed in Mr Grubb's hands. On polishing, one of the titanic disks was found to be too badly striated to be employed ; the other was pretty fair. As it would have required arather severe curvature of the first surface and an unusual convexity of the last to throw the whole convex power into the first lens,

using a merc shell of glass to protect the terborate, Professor Stokes thought it more prudent to throw about one-sixth of the whole convex power into the third or crown glass lens, though at the sacrifice of an absolute destruction of secondary dis- persion, which by this change from the original design might be expected to be just barely perceptible. Of the terborate disks, the less striated happened to be slightly muddy, from some accident in the preparation ; but, as this signified less than the striz, Mr Grubb deemed it better to employ this disk. The tele- Scope exhibited to the meeting was of about 24-inches aperture and 28-inches focal length, and was provided with an object-glass of the ordinary kind, by which the other could be replaced, for contrasting the performance. When the telescope was turned on to a chimney seen against the sky or other suitable

nately such combinations are practically useless, not only on account of unavoidable leakage, but also because currents are set up in fluid lenses by changes of temperature, which correspond in effect with want of homogeneity in the flint lens in an ordinary object-glass,

Eye-Pieces.

The first substitute for the single lens of the Galilean and Kepler Eye-telescopes was the compound eye-piece invented by Rheita. Behind pieces.

the convex eye-lens of the Kepler telescope he applied a second short telescope, consisting of two convex lenses, their distance being the sum of their focal lengths. The principal effect was to erect the inverted image, and thus to constitute the simplest form of the day eye-piece, or common terrestrial telescope. The next improve- ment was the Huygenian eye-piece, which consists of two convex lenses (see fig. 7),—the “field-lens,” that, next the object-glass, having its focal length to that of the “eye-lens” as 8 to 1; the distance between them is twice the focal length of the latter, the combination being so placed as to form the visible image half-way between the two. This eye-piece is achromatic in the sense in which an eye-piece is said to be so: a colourless image seen through it does not appear bordered with coloured fringes, as is the case with a single lens or Rheita’s eye-piece. This is not because, as in the achromatic object-glass, all the central coloured rays are collected in one focus, which in the case of an eye-piece is a matter of compara- tively small consequence, but because it possesses

the same magnify- ing power for rays of all colours on an object of sensible angular diameter, so as not to form overlapping coloured pictures of it on the retina. This condition it is which furnishes the “equation of achromaticity” of an eye-piece. An expression for the magnifying power of a telescope provided with a certain eye-piece is formed in general terms which involve the focal length of its lenses, their dis- tances from each other, and their refractive indexes; and, this being made to vary by the variation of the last-mentioned elements only, the variation is equated to zero. The algebraic working, which even for a two-glass eye-piece is a little complex, is given in H. Lloyd’s Treatise on Light and Vision (London, 1881), and in an elaborate paper by Littrow in the fourth volume of the 7’rans. Roy. Astron. Soc. (p. 599). From the former we extract the following proposition: An eye-glass of two lenses of the same medium is achromatic when the interval between the lenses is an arithmetical

object, and half the object-glass covered by a screen with its edge parallel to the edges of the object, in the case of the ordinary objective vivid green and purple were seen about the two edges, whereas with the Harcourt objective there was barely any perceptible colour. It was not of course to be expected that the performance of the telescope should be good, on account of the diffi-

mean between their focal length,—a condition which the Huygenian Huy- construction evidently satisfies. The rationale of this is obvious, genian independently of algebraic analysis, by inspection of the course of eye-

the rays in fig. 7, where AC, BD are the lenses, PQ the image piece.

culty of preparing glass free from strie, but it was quite sufficient to show the possibility of destroying the secondary colour.”

An experiment to determine whether the substitution of titanic acid for a portion of the silica in ordinary crown glass would have an effect similar to that which had been observed in the phosphatic Series of glasses (viz., whilst somewhat raising the dispersive power, to produce a separation of the colours at the blue as compared with the red end of the spectrum, to an extent ordinarily belonging only to glass of much higher dispersive power) was carried out by Mr Hopkinson at the glass works of Messrs Chance of

Birmingham ; but it proved unfortunately in this combination that, whilst the

1 This arrangement also helps to equalize the temperatures of the lenses with each other and with the outer air.

2 Quite recently Prof. Stokes has suggested that to adapt a telescope to either photographic or telescopic purposes at pleasure the crown lens should be reversible as well as changeable as to distance with respect to the flint.

In this way doubtless the chromatic and spherical aberration could be pre-Served for the two kinds of work.

which would be formed by the object-glass alone, yg that really formed by the action of the field-glass. The object-glass being supposed achromatic, a ray of white light, as OC, going to form the image of a point Q, will be refracted by the field-glass at C towards the corresponding point q of the new image, but not asa

3 See Nature, vol. xxxiv. p. 622, 26th October 1886.

4 For recent literature on the secondary spectrum in double and triple object- glasses, &c., see W. Schmidt, Die Brechung des Lichtes in Glasern, insbesondere d. achromat. und aplanat. Objectivlinse, Leipsic, 1874; W. Harkness, ‘‘On the Colour Correction of Achromatic Telescopes,” in Amer. Jour. of Science and Aris, September 1879, pp. 189-196; C. 8. Hastings, “‘Triple Objectives with Complete Colour Correction,” 7b., December 1879, pp. .429-435; Perty, Ueber die Grenzen der sichtbaren Schopfung nach den jetzigen Leistungen der Mikroskope und Fernrohre, Berlin, 1874; H. C. Vogel, Ueber eine einfache Methode zur Bestim- mung der Brennpunkte und der Abweichungskreise eines Fernrohr-Objectivs fiir Strahlen von verschiedener Brechbarkeit ; C. A. Young, ‘‘The Colour-Correction of Certain Achromatic Object-Glasses,” in Amer. Jour. Sci., June 1880, pp. 454- 456 ; also a review of these papers by A. Safarik, Vierteljahrschrift der astrono- mischen Gesellschaft, 1882, pp. 13-39.

single white ray ; it will be separated into coloured rays, following different courses. The red ray Cr being less refracted will fall on a point 7 of the eye-glass more remote from its centre B than

Fia. 7.—Huygenian eye-piece.

the violet ray Cv, and (the prismaticity of the lens increasing from the centre outwards) will in proportion by the second trans- mission be more bent aside than the violet, and thus a compensa- tion is effected, and the two rays finally emerge parallel, their exact parallelism being secured by the proportion of their focal lengths. The Huygenian eye-piece possesses also other important advantages. The total deflexion of the light, to produce the mag- nifying power, is equally divided between the two glasses,—the most favourable condition for diminishing that distortion which is always perceived in looking obliquely through a lens; and the field of view is greatly enlarged in proportion to the size of the eye-lens, being such as would require, to produce the same magnifying power, a single lens of the much greater semi-diameter bd, found by draw- ing Qb parallel to yB and erecting bd. The inconvenience of this eye-piece (whence it is improperly termed a negative eye-piece) is that the image, being formed between its lenses, undergoes a cer- tain amount of distortion by the field-glass, owing to which equal linear portions of it do not correspond precisely to equal angular measures of the distant object. Equal parts ofa micrometer applied at the place of the image, so as to be seen at the same time through the eye-lens, will not correspond to precisely equal angular inter-

Common vals. The common astronomical or positive eye-piece, described

or posi-

by Ramsden (Phil. Trans., 1783), consists of two plano-convex

tive eye- lenses of equal lengths, having their convexities turned towards

piece.

piece.

each other and separated by two-thirds of the focal length of either, as in fig. 8. This combination is placed behind the image PQ

Fig. 8.—Common or positive eye-picce.

formed by the object-glass, at a distance AP equal to one-fourth of the focal length of A. The first or ee therefore, forms an enlarged image pq, at a distance one-third of that focal length which places it in the focus of the eye-glass. This eye-piece is not properly achromatic, but its spherical aberration is much less than in any of the other constructions, and it has the advantage of giving a flat field of view, requiring no change of focus to see the

Fia. 9.—Erecting or terrestrial eye-piece.

Erecting centre and borders of the field with equal distinctness. The erect- or terres- ing or terrestrial eye-piece was invented by Dollond. The principle trial eye- of its construction will be understood from fig. 9. It is conveni-

ent for telescopes of ordinary use, because it presents a non-in- verted image to the eye, although at some sacrifice of light and definition.

For an account of the theory of the chromatic and spherical aberration of cye-pieces by Sir George B. Airy, see Trans. Phil. Soc. Camb., vol. ii. p. 243 and vol. iii. p. 61. The author’s con- clusions are the following. (1) To secure the greatest distinctness with an eye-piece of the Huygenian type, the field-lens should be a meniscus of focal length 3, the radii of its surfaces 11:4, and its convexity towards the object-glass ; the eye-lens should be a double convex of focal length 1, the radii of its surfaces 1:6, and its more convex side towards the field-lens. The distance of the lenses should be 2. There should be a perforated diaphragm at distance 1 from the eye-lens. Ifa bright object appears yellow or a dark one blue at the edge farthest from the centre of the field, the lenses must be brought a little nearer together. (2) For an eye- piece of Ramsden’s type the two lenses should be plano-convex, of focal length 3, placed at distance 2, their convex surfaces being

Pa eee $e A-f-=2=~ ora iB, -istiiy fon,

turned towards each other. (8) For an erecting eye-piece of four ae lenses the first and fourth (reckoned from the object-glass towards. the eye) should be crossed lenses of focal length 8, the radii of their

surfaces 1:6, with their convex surfaces towards each other. The a

second lens should be a meniscus of focal length 4, the radii of its surfaces 25:11, and its convexity towards the eye. The third lens should be plano-convex, of focal length 4, its plane side towards the eye. The distance of the centre of the second lens from that of the first=4 ; that of the third from the second=6 ; and that of the fourth from the third=5°13. Ifa bright object appears yellow or a dark one blue at the edge farthest from the centre of the field, the third and fourth lenses must be together pushed inwards towards the second lens.

In many telescopes constructed specially for star observation only 5 the object-glass is over-corrected for colour and under-corrected for ; spherical aberration ; both these errors may sometimes be nearly eliminated by a properly constructed Huygenian eye-piece (see Microscopr, vol. xvi. pp. 266-267). But, when a telescope is to be used over a considerable range of field for micrometric measure- ments, it is obvious that the spherical aberration should be corrected by the object-glass alone. It is possible, however, to improve the appearance of objects somewhat in a telescope in which the chro- matic aberration is over-corrected by employing an eye-piece somewhat under-corrected for colour, and vice versa; but the only ~ satisfactory plan is to have both object-glass and eye-piece as free as possible from both chromatic and spherical aberration. In order to secure this, or a very large field of view, many forms of eye-piece have been devised. Achromatic combinations have been substi- tuted in some cases for the field-lens, in others for the eye-lens, in| others for both simple lenses of the Ramsden eye-piece. The best of these combinations which the present writer has tested and which practically fulfil all requirements of the astronomer are due to Dr Hugo Schroder, to whom he is indebted for information as H.S8chri- to their construction. Fig. 10 represents Schréder’s high power der’s

high

Fia. 10.—Schréder’s high power eye-piece.

eye-piece, which is admirably suited for micrometer work, not only because there are only two reflecting surfaces in the triple lens of which it is composed, but also because there is a comparatively large distance between the lens and the micrometer web when the latter is in focus. This condition is essential when it is desired to get the best bright illumination of the wires in a dark field (see MicRoMETER, vol. xvi. p. 248). The triple lens is composed of a dense fluid plano-convex lens between two lenses of soft crown glass. The radii of curvature are— —*

pres, (2aOEE SEU | st erm da

peeled —_ ag Sie \ dense flint glass,

cemented (r5s=° o plane

7g—80°026 convex

The corresponding foci for zones of different distance from the axis are— axis=100°00 ; zones 12°5 from axis, 99°81; 25 from axis, 99°32; 40 from axis, 93°35; 45 from axis, 100°15; 50 from axis, 101:85. Thus the aperture of the lens may be half its focal length J without any sensible defect. Fig. 11 represents 0. Schrv- Dr O. Schroder’s aplanatic eye-piece. The glass employed isder’s — Dauget’s crown (Cd) and flint (Fd,). The refractive power of crown aplanatic is 15126 for D, that of flint 16405 ; the dispersive power of both eye- kinds of glass is 0°588. piece.

\ soft crown glass.

Fic. 11.—Schréder’s aplanatic eye-piece.

The radii of curvature for a lens of 1 inch (27:07 mm.) focal length are—

mm. mm. —20-12 5=13°30 Te=7T3=10°94 cemented Te=T7= 7°00 cemented T4=0 Tg=—2 F,=focal point of combination= —9°05 mm. from vertex of 7; F,=position of observer’s eye= — 14°49 mm. from vertex of 7g.

The thicknesses and distances apart of the surfaces are—

’sse-

in

1.

elian,

’ each other.

TELESCOPE

Ist vertex to 2d = 0°70 mm. flint glass,

3d —yy_-+,, 4th= 3°50 ,, crown glass, Zs sy sop EU H LOO 5. BIT,

5th ,, ,, 6th= 0°61 ,, flint glass, 7th ,, ,, 8th= 2°45 ,, crown glass.

The distance between the plane surfaces is 22°57 mm. This form of eye-piece has been employed by Schonfeld in his southern “ Durch-musterung,” and Dr Schroder has made one for the present writer which gives a perfect field 44° in diameter on the telescope of 18 inches focal length and 33 inches aperture already referred to.

Reflecting Telescope.

The following are the various forms of reflecting telescopes.. The Gregorian holsnctipe is represented in fig. 12. AA and BB are

Fic. 12.—Gregorian telescope.

concave mirrors having a common axis and their concavities facing The focus of A for parallel rays is at F, that of B for parallel rays at f/—between Band F. Parallel rays falling on AA converge at F, where an image is formed; the rays are then re-

flected from B and converge at P, where a second and more enlarged —

image is formed. Gregory himself showed that, if the large mirror were a segment of a paraboloid of revolution whose focus is F, and the small mirror an ellipsoid of revolution whose foci are F and P respectively, the resulting image will be plane and undistorted. The image formed at P is viewed through the eye-piece at E, which may be of the Huygenian or Ramsden type. The focal adjustment is accomplished by the screw S, which acts on a slide carrying an arm to which the mirror B is attached. The practical difficulty of constructing Gregorian telescopes of good defining quality is very considerable, because if spherical mirrors are employed their aberrations tend to increase each other, and it is extremely difficult to give a true elliptic figure to the necessarily deep concavity of the small speculum. Short appears to have systematically con- quered this difficulty, and his Gregorian telescopes attained great eclebrity. The use of the Gregorian form is, however, practically abandoned in the present day. The magnifying power of the telescope iene tl of the large and the small mirror, ¢ the focal length of the eye-piece, and x the distance between the principal foci of the two mirrors (=F/in the diagram) when the instrument is in adjustment for viewing distant objects. The images are erect.

The Cassegrain telescope differs from the Gregorian only in the

where F and f are respectively the focal lengths

_ substitution of a convex hyperbolic mirror for a concave elliptical scope, mirror as the small speculum. This form has two distinct advan-

tages: (1) if spherical mirrors are employed their aberrations have a tendency to correct each other ; (2) the instrument is shorter than the Gregorian, cxteris paribus, by twice the focal length of the small mirror. Fewer telescopes have been made of this than perhaps of any other form of reflector ; but in comparatively recent years the Cassegrain has acquired importance from the fact of its adoption for the great Melbourne telescope. The magnifying power is com- puted by the same formula as in the case of the Gregorian telescope.

The Newtonian telescope is represented in fig. 18. AA is a con- cave mirror whose axis isaa. Parallel rays falling on AA converge on the plane a mirror BB, and are thence _re- flected at y right angles 2---+¥, to the axis, forming

an image inthe focus of the eye-piece EF. The surface ut of the large mirror should be a paraboloid of revolu- : tion, that of the small mirror a true optical plane. The magnifying power is=F/e. This form is employed in.the con- struction of most modern reflecting telescopes. A glass prism of total reflexion is sometimes substituted for the plane mirror.

The Herschelian or front view reflector is represented in fig. 14. AA 18 a concave parabolic mirror, whose axis ac is inclined to the axis of the tube ab so that the image of an object in the focus of

Fia. 13.—Newtonian telescope.

&

145

the mirror may be viewed by an eye-piece at E, the angle bac being equal to the angle caE. This form was adopted by the elder A

Herschel to avoid the loss of light from reflexion in the small mirror of the Newtonian telescope. It has several disadvantages. (1) The upper part of the observer's head must necessarily obstruct some of the rays which would otherwise fall on the large mirror; but when a telescope of very large aperture is employed the loss of light thus occasioned is comparatively insignificant. Moreover, disturbance of. the air in front of the telescope is created by heat from the observer's head and body, and this is fatal to the best definition. To avoid the latter drawback Sir John Herschel (Zncy. Brit., 8th ed., art. "Telescope," vol. xxi. p, 128) suggested the employment of a small right-angled prism of total reflexion placed close to the eye- lens of the eye-piece, to permit the observer to view the image by looking in a direction at right angles to the eye-piece, and thercfore at right angles to the tube. (2) In consequence of the tilting of the mirror aberration is created, and this increases rapidly with increased tilting. The construction is thus limited to telescopes in which the proportion of aperture to focal length is not too great. In Herschel's 40-feet telescope the proportion was 1 to 10, and the construction would hardly be applicable to modern telescopes, in which the proportion often rises to 1 to 5 or 6. Yet, when exceed- ingly faint objects have to be observed, this form of telescope has great advantages. Herschel found that some objects which he dis- covered with such an instrument could not even be seen when the same telescope was used in the Newtonian form. The front view telescope, however, has hardly been at all employed except by the Herschels. But at the same time none but the Herschels have swept the whole sky for the discovery of faint nebulz ; and probably no other astronomers have worked for so many hours on end for so many nights as they did, and they emphasize the easy position of the observer in using this form of instrument.

Construction of Object-Glasses.

The first point is the selection of glass disks of suitable quality. Testing The requisites are (1) general transparency and freedom from object- mechanical defects, such as specks, air-bubbles, &c.; (2) homogeneity; glasses.

(3) freedom from internal strain. The disk being roughly polished on the sides, faults of the first class are easily detected by inspection. In order to secure the maximum of light grasp for aperture it is desirable that the glass should be as colourless as possible; if the roughly polished disk is laid upon white paper the amount of dis- coloration can be readily estimated by comparing the colour of the sheet as seen directly with that seen through the glass. Fraun- hofer's glass was far from colourless, Dollond's more coloured still ; and we have shown that, for purposes when extreme light grasp is not an object, the less transparency of such glass to the blue rays of the spectrum affords advantages for a better correction of the chromatic aberration of rays in the brighter part of the spectrum. The amount of light excluded by specks, air-bubbles, or even scratches is quite insignificant ; but these blemishes create diffrac- tion phenomena and scattered light in the field, which are very injurious to the performance of the instrument, especially when faint objects are searched for in the neighbourhood of brighter ones. It is essential for a telescope lens that the glass should be perfectly homogeneous ; that is, the refractive index must be identical for every part of the disk. This can be tested with extreme delicacy by grinding the disk into the form of a lens and testing it by Toppler's method,! described under Oprics (vol. xvii. p. 805). If the disk is intended for a concave lens and is already so thin that it becomes undesirable to make it thinner at the edges by convert- ing it, in the first place, into a convex lens, it may be tested by placing one of its surfaces in contact with and at right angles to the axis of a crown lens of known perfection, and testing the com- bination by Toéppler's method.

outer shell has hardened before the inner portion—the finally solidified mass must be in a state of tension, like that of ''Rupert's drops." Unless cooled very gradually an optical disk would fly to pieces, but a very much smaller defect in the annealing process would be fatal for refined optical purposes. Changes of temperature would produce changes of curvature, and the lens would also change its form when successive portions of the

strained outer shell were removed in the process of grinding and polishing. Fortunately

1 Pogg. Annal., cxxxi., 1867.

model, = 19

If a glass disk is not properly Anneal- annealed—that is, if it has been too quickly cooled, so that the ing.

defects in annealing are very easily detected by mieaus of the polari- scope. The polished disk is placed in light reflected from a polar- izing surface, such as a sheet of glass blackened at the back, and examined with a Nicol's prism as an analyser. If the bright rings and black cross (see LicHT, vol. xiv. p. 618) are visible the disk is unfit for use; but, since few disks are so perfectly annealed as not to show a trace of the black cross, such as show it in no marked degree may be safelyemployed. Perfect annealing has now become the most difficult portion of the art of making optical glass, and large disks (more particularly of crown glass) are rejected by the optician more frequently for defects in annealing than for any other cause.

The disks having been selected, their refractive and dispersive powers determined, and the radii of curvature computed, it remains to convert the disks into lenses with surfaces of the required curva- ture, and to complete the object-glass. The work consists of five distinct operations—(1) rough grinding by a revolving tool supplied with sand and water ; (2) fine grinding with emery ; (8) polishing with oxide of iron, rouge, or putty powder, the grinder being faced with fine cloth, satin, paper, or—best of all—pitch ; (4) centring ; (5) figuring and testing. These processes are essentially of a tech- nical character, and can only be familiar to those who practise the art. The details would be out of place here, but are well described in a lecture delivered by Sir Howard Grubb at the Royal Institu-

' tion, 6th April 1886, and printed in Nature, 27th May 1886.

Con-

Construetion of Specula. The composition of metallic specula in the present day differs

struction very little from that used by Sir Isaac Newton. Many different

of specula,

alloys have been suggested, some including silver, nickel, zinc, or arsenic ; but that which has practically been found best is an alloy of four equivalents of copper to one of tin, or the following pro- portions by weight :—copper 252, tin 117°8. Such speculum metal is exceedingly hard and brittle, takes a fine white polish, and when protected from damp has little liability to tarnish. The process of casting and annealing, in the case of the specula of the great Melbourne telescope, was admirably described by Dr Robin- son in Phil. T'rans., 1869, vol. clix. p. 185. Shaping, polishing, and figuring of specula are accomplished by methods and tools pre- cisely similar to those employed in the construction of lenses. The reflecting surface is first ground to a spherical form, the parabolic figure being given in the final process by regulating the size of the pitch squares and the stroke of the polishing machine. The pro- cess of testing is identical with that of an object-glass.

Soon after Liebig's discovery of a process for depositing a film of pure metallic silver upon glass from a salt of silver in solution, Steinheil (Gaz. Univ. d@ Augsburg, 24th March 1856), and later, in- dependently, Foucault (Comptes Rendus, vol. xliv., February 1857), proposed to employ glass for the specula of telescopes, the reflect- ing surface of the glass speculum to be covered with silver by Liebig's process. These silver-on-glass specula are now the rivals of the achromatic telescope, and it is not probable that many tele- scopes with metal specula will be made in the future. The best speculum metal and the greatest care are no guarantec of freedom from tarnish, and, if such a mirror is much exposed, as it must be in the hands of an active observer, frequent repolishing will be necessary. This involves réfiguring, which is the most delicate and eostly process of all. Every time, therefore, that a speculum is repolished, the future quality of the instrument is at stake ; its focal length will probably be altered, and thus the value of the constants of the micrometer also have to be redetermined. Partly for these reasons the reflecting telescope with metallic mirror has never been a

favourite with the professional astronomer, and has found little employment out of England. In England, in the hands of the Herschels, Rosse, Lassell, and De la Rue it has done splendid service, but in all these cases the astronomer and the instrument-maker were one. The silver-on-glass mirror has the enormous advantage that it can be resilvered with little trouble, at small expense, and without danger of changing the figure. Its chief work has been done in the hands of Draper and Common, who were the engineers, if not the actual constructors, of their own instruments. Glass is lighter, stiffer, less costly, and easier to work than speculum metal. The silvered mirrors have also some ad- vantage in light grasp over those of speculum metal, though, aper- ture for aperture, the former are inferior to the modern object-glass. Comparisons of light grasp derived from small, fresh, carefully silvered surfaces are sometimes given which lead to illusory results, and from such experiments Foucault claimed superiority for the silvered speculum over the object-glass. But the present writer has found from experience and careful comparison that a silvered mirror of 12-inches aperture mounted as a Newtonian telescope (with a silvered plane for the small mirror), when the surfaces are in fair average condition, is equal in light grasp to a first-rate refractor of 10-inches aperture, or area for area as 2:3. This ratio will become more equal for larger sizes on account of the additional

thickness of larger object-glasses and the consequent additional ab- sorption of light in transmission.

Mounting of Teleseopes.

The proper mounting of a telescope is hardly of less importance Mount, than its optical perfection. Freedom from tremor, case and deli- ing of cacy of movement, facility of directing the instrument to any tele. desired point in the heavens, are the primary qualifications, Our scopes, limits forbid an historical account of the earlier endeavours to fulfil , these ends by means of motions in altitude and azimuth, nor can we do more than refer to mountings such as those employed by the Herschels, or those designed by Lord Rosse to overcome the en- gineering difficulties of mounting his huge telescope of 6 feet aper- ture. Both are abundantly illustrated in most

popular works on astronomy, and it seems sufficient to refer the reader to the original descriptions.

We pass, therefore, directly to the equatorial telescope, the instru- Equator. ment par excellence of the modern extra-meridian astronomer, and jal, relegate to the article TRANSIT CIRCLE (q.v.) a description of those mountings in which the telescope is simply a refined substitute for the sights or pinules of the old astronomers. The equatorial in its simplest form consists of an axis parallel to the earth's axis, called the "polar axis" ; a second axis, at right angles to this, called the " declination axis" ; and a telescope fixed at right angles to the latter. In fig. 15 AA is the polar axis; the telescope is attached to the end of the ¢ A declination axis ; the latter rotates in bearings attached vy, to the polar axis, and con- cealed by the telescope itself. The telescope is counter- poised by a weight attached to the op- posite end of the declination axis. The lower pivot of the polar axis rests on a cup bearing at C, the upper pivot upon a strong metal casting MM, attached to a stone pierS. A vertical plane passing through AA is therefore in the meridian, and, when the declination axis is horizontal, the telescope moves in the plane of the meridian by rotation on the declination axis only. Thus, if a graduated circle BB is attached to the declination axis, together with the necessary microscopes or verniers V, V for reading it (see TRaNsir CIRCLE), so arranged that when the telescope is turned on the declination axis till it is parallel to AA the vernier reads 0° or 90°, and when at right angles to AA 90° or 0°, then we can employ the readings of this circle to measure the polar distance or declination of any star seen in the telescope, and these readings will also be true (apart from the effects of atmospheric refraction) if we rotate the instrument through any angle on the axis AA. Thus one important attribute of an equatorially mounted telescope i is that, if it is directed to any fixed star, it will follow the diurnal motion of that star from rising to setting by rotation of the polar axis only. If we further attach to the polar axis a graduated

f

Fia. 15.—Equatorial telescope.

circle DD, called the "hour circle," of which the microscope or

vernier R reads 0 when the declination axis is horizontal, we can obviously read off the hour angle from the meridian of any star to which the telescope may be directed at the instant of observation. If the local sidereal time of the observation is known, the right | ascension of the star becomes known by adding the observed hour angle to the sidereal time if the star is west of the meridian, or | subtracting it if east of the meridian. Since the equatorial is un-suitable for such observations when great accuracy is required (see Transit CrRcLE), the declination and hour circles of an equatorial are employed not for determination of the right ascensions and declinations of celestial objects, but for directing the telescope with ease and certainty to any object situated in a known position, and which may or may not be visible to the unaided eye, or to define approximately the position of an unknown object. Further, by causing the hour circle, and with it the polar axis, to rotate by clockwork or some other mechanical contrivance at the same angu-lar velocity as the earth on its axis, but in the opposite direction, the telescope will automatically follow a star from rising to setting,

Equatorial mountings may be divided into five types. (A) The Types of pivots or bearings of the polar axis are placed at its extremities. equator-The declination axis rests on bearings attached to opposite sides of ials.

the polar axis. The telescope is attached to one end of the declina-

tion axis, and counterpoised by a weight at the other end, as in fig.

15. (B) The polar axis is supported as in type A; the telescope

is placed between the bearings of the declination axis and 1s

mounted symmetrically with respect to the polar axis ; no counter-

poise is therefore requisite. (C) The declination axis is mounted

on the prolongation of the upper pivot of the polar axis; the tele-

scope is placed at one end of the declination axis and counter-

poised by a weight at the other end. (D) The declination axis

1 Herschel, Phil. Trans., 1795, vol. Ixxxv. p. 8347; Rosse, Phil. Trans., 1840, p. 503, and 1861, p. 681.

is mounted on a forked piece or other similar contrivance attached to a prolongation of the upper pivot of the polar axis ; the tele- scope is mounted between the pivots of the declination axis. (E) The eye-piece of the telescope is placed in the upper pivot of the polar axis; a portion or the whole of the axis of the teleseope tube coincides with the polar axis. Mountings of types A and B —that is, with a long polar axis supported at both ends—are often called the ‘‘ English mounting,” and types C and D, in which the declination axis is placed on the extension of the upper pivot of the polar axis, are called the ‘‘German mounting,” from the first employment of type C by Fraunhofer. A description of some of the best examples of each type will illustrate their relative advan- tages or peculiarities.

Fig. 15 may be taken as a practical example of the earlier equa- torials as made by Troughton in England and afterwards by Gambey for various Continental observatories. In the Phil. Trans. for 1824 (part 8, pp. 1-412)

will be found a description by Sir John Herschel and Sir James South of the equatorial telescope which they em- ployed in their measurements of double stars. The polar axis was similar in shape to that of fig. 15 and was composed of sheets of tinned iron. In Smyth's celebrated Bedford telescope the polar axis was of mahogany. Probably the best example of this type of mounting applied to a refractor is that made by the elder Cooke of York for Mr Fletcher of Tarnbank ; the polar axis is of cast iron and the mounting very satisfactory and convenient, but unfortunately no detailed description has been pub- lished. In recent years no noteworthy refractors 4 have been mounted on this plan; but type A has been chosen by Grubb for the great Mel- 4 bourne reflector, with marked ingenuity of adaptation to the peculiar requirements GF . of the case. Fig. 16 shows the whole instrument on asmall scale, andfig. 17 represents part of it on a larger scale, the upper part of the tube and polar axis being omitted. The g figures show the telescope directed % to the pole, the hour circle being ¥ set 6% from the meridian. The polar axis consists of a hollow cone © (fig. 17) of cast iron bolted to Shallots cast-iron cube H, to the lower side of which is attached a short steel axis carrying the driving sector EF and the hour circle R, and terminating in the lower pivot of the polar axis. This pivot ais terminated by a piece of chilled cast iron polished flat on its lower face, which face re- volves in contact with a piece of bell metal, flat on its wpper and partly spherical on its lower side, bearing in a correspondingly shaped annulus, formed to receive it in the cast-iron block which is attached to the pier. This arrangement enables the bell-metal cushion to take its own position when the direc- tion of the polar axis is slightly changed in pro- cess of adjustment. The pressure of the pivot on (Yo

- FSi SD -—. Fia. 16.—Melbourne reflector.

tion axis. The counterpoise U is attached to the other extremity. There is an elegant ar- rangement for diminishing the friction of the declination axis, which our limits do not per- mit us to describe, and the means for clamping and giving slow motion in declination do not require special notice. The reader is referred for a fuller description to Phil. Trans., 1869, pp. 127-161. The telescope is of the Cassegrain form, the mirror having a 4-fcet aperture and 304-feet foeal length.

The best existing examples of type B are Airy’s equatorial at Greenwich, the equatorial

fee eed

Fia. 18.—Greenwich equatorial,

its bearings, in the direction at right angles to the polar axis, is relieved by the sector A, which is forced up by the screw d acting through lamine of steel springs. The end pressure of a upon its

Mj

i:

ling

> wi

A iy

ou uu a a

ca

‘on ia ORTON TTA ATL

Fic. 17.—Section of Melbourne reflector.

div

bearings is relieved by a weight. The friction of the upper pivot is re- lieved by a sector pressed up against it by the action of two weights. In this way, although the moving part of the telescope weighs 18,170 Ib, it can be turned with a pressure of 124 ib, acting at a radius of 20 feet. The driving sector EF is 5 feet in radius ; its circular rim is accurately toothed to fit a square threaded endless screw E, which is turned by the driving clock. A toothed

wheel attached to H and acted on by a pinion connected with a hand-wheel affords an easy means of setting the instrument in hour angle, or moving the telescope quickly in right ascen- sion. The telescope is clamped by iron bands

7 to the strong cast-iron cradle, which is cast gywith and forms one extremity of the declina-

Ly

i

“the whole of a night’s work; thus the observer, in order to direct the instrument on a parti- cular object, has only to set an index connected with the polar axis to the star’s right ascension

upon the hour circle, without the trouble of computing

the hour angle at the instant of observation. This convenient arrangement was first introduced by Airy.

The whole mounting is very massive, but very incon-

venient to use when a great many different objects

have to be examined on the same night; but on ac- count of its freedom from tremor and the excellence of its driving clock it should be very suitable for pro- longed study of a single object or for long photo-

graphic exposures. Quite recently Sir Howard Grubb New

has signed a contract to make a telescope of 28-inches aperture and Green- 28-feet foeal length,? which is to be substituted for the present tele- wich scope by Merz & Son of 12§-inches aperture and 18-feet focus. Fig. telescope. 19 is engraved from a photograph of the model of the original polar

axis. The model was prepared to illustrate the manner in which the

new telescope is to be mounted, and we are indebted for the picture

at Liverpool (also designed by Airy), and the pe equatorial recently erected at the Paris observatory.

he polar axis of the Greenwich equatorial consists of six iron tubes arranged so as to form two triangular braced beams connected by very strong elliptical wheels of cast iron, which carry the upper and lower pivots of the polar axis. These tubes are shown in sec- tion at the points T, fig. 18, which represents a section through

the declination axis in the plane of the equator when the tele- scope is directed to a star at the equator (for the general arrange- ment of the mounting, see fig. 19). The driving circle is 6 feet in diameter, and turns freely on the lower pivot of the polar axis, under the action of the driving clock. The hour circle is graduated on the driving circle, and may be set to show sidereal time during

1 See the detailed account in Greenwich Observations, 1868.

2 This object-glass will have the shortest proportional focal length of any yet constructed of aperture exceeding 16 inches. The following table gives the focal length in apertures of the largest existing refractors :—

Vienna telescope (Grubb) 27-inches aperture, focal length 15°5 apertures
Washington ,, (Clark) 26 7 – 150 , Pulkowa a (Clark) 30 vs ‘a 180 ss

Paris photo- graphic tele- scope.

Type C.

to the kindness of Mr Christie, astronomer royal. The object-glass will be actually outside the dome when the telescope is pointed near the zenith or near the horizon. The dew-cap, not shown in the model, will be always outside the dome, and it is not impossible

ZA Fic. 19.—Grubb’s telescope for Greenwich.

that this arrangement may be favourable to good definition, except in ease of high wind. When the telescope is not in use the dew- eap slides backwards on four rails parallel to the axis of the tele- scope, and the whole is housed in the position shown in fig. 19, The spectroscope is used at right angles to the telescope tube, a right-angled prism of total reflexion being interposed in the con- verging cone of rays near the focus. This prism can be turned 180° and an eye-piece inserted on the opposite side from the spectro- scope for observations near the zenith or horizon, otherwise the eye end would be too near the floor or northern pier.}

A figure of the new photographic telescope erected at the Paris observatory may be seen in Nature, 138th May 1886. The object- glass is by MM. Paul and Prosper Henry, the mounting by M. Gautier. Here Airy's braced tubes are replaced by hollow metal beams of triangular shape (as for the Liverpool equatorial), The hour circle has two toothed circles cut upon it, one acted upon by a screw attached to the pier and driven by the elock, the other by a second screw attached to the polar axis, which can be turned very slowly by a handle in the observer's hand. Thus a very slow movement can be given to the telescope in right ascension, inde- pendently of the clock. Slow motion in declination can be com- municated by a screw acting on a long arm, which can be clamped at pleasure to the polar axis by a convenient handle. An obloug metallic box, fitted with pivots, whose bearings are attached to the triangular beams, forms the tube for two parallel telescopes; these are separated throughout their length by a metallie diaphragm. The chromatic aberration of the object-glass of one of these tele- scopes is corrected for photographic rays, and the image formed by it is received on a highly sensitive photographic plate. The other telescope is corrected for visual rays and its image is formed on the plane of the spider lines of a filar micrometer. The peculiar form of the tube is eminently snited for rigid preservation of the relative parallelism of the axes of the two telescopes, so that, if a certain selected star is retained in bisection by two intersecting wires in the micrometer, by means of the driving clock, aided by small corrections given by the observer in right ascension and de- clination (required on account of irregularity in the clock move- ment, error in astronomical adjustment of the polar axis, or changes in the star's apparent place produced by refraction), the image of a star will continue on the same spot of the photographic plate during the whole time of exposure.

Exquisite photographs of star elusters, double stars, the moon, and planets have been obtained by MM. Henry, and they are the most eloquent testimony to the optical perfection of the object-glass and the efficiency of the mounting. They show also that we are entering npon a new era in practical astronomy, in which photography is destined to play a leading part. The Henry photographic object-glass is of 13°4-inches aperture and only 10 apertures in focal length. The “guiding telescope” is of 9}-inches aperture and nearly 12-feet focus. The photographic object-glass, notwithstanding its small proportional focal length, covers a field of 24° in diameter with perfect precision.

Many more telescopes have been made of type © than of any

_ 1 These inconvenient conditions are imposed by the dimensions of the exist- ing dome and may lead to accidents in practice.

other, and it is now almost exclusively employed for the mounting of modern refractors. Its essential features are (1) a comparatively ~ short polar axis and (2) a eross-head attached to the extension of

the upper pivot of the polar axis, to carry the bearings

of the de- elination axis. Fig. 20 shows the Dorpat Do

refractor, the chef dwuvre of Fraunhofer, and the refractor

first equa- A)\ torial of any importance that was pro- ‘ ‘\ clockwork. AA is the polar axis, B the

vided with _~“VY hour circle SE vernier V. C’ endless screw S, circle B. D is extremities the The wooden tele- cradle FF of cast flange on one end of clination circle EE, posite end, serves to declination to the arm G. \ \ lever which presses the \ \ in the figure) against the axis in order to relieve the

graduated on the face and read by the is the driving clock, which turns an that gears in the toothed edge of the the cross head supporting at its bearings of the declination axis, scope tube rests in a strong brass, which is

screwed to a the declination axis ; the de- which is attached to its op- elamp the instrument in H is a weight acting on a wheels & (one only seen |

upper pivot of the polar | friction of that pivot |

Fic. 20.—Dorpat refractor,

on its bearing. The counterpoise W balances the tube about the polar axis. M, M are counterpoise weights which act on levers m,m, whose fulcra are universal joints at » attached to the cradle. These weights serve to counterpoise the longer end of the tube and to check its flexure. QQ is the finder, a small telescope whose axis is parallel to the great telescope; having a low magnifying | power and a large field of view, it serves to direct the large telescope to any object seen in the sky, which otherwise would be difficult to find in the comparatively limited field of the large tele- scope, The stand TTT is of oak. The instrument is described in detail by Struve (Beschreibung des auf der Sternwarte zu Dorpat bejindlichen grossen Refractors von Fraunhofer, Dorpat, 1825, fol.) The instrument was an enormous advance upon all previous tele- scopes for micrometric research. In the hands of Struve results were obtained by it which in combined quality and quantity had never before been reached in micrometric research. Its success was such that the type of Fraunhofer's telescope became stereotyped for many years not only by his successors but throughout Germany. When twelve years afterwards Struve ordered the 15-inch refractor for the new observatory at Pulkowa, the only important change made by Fraunhofer's successors was, at Struve's suggestion, the substitution of a stone pier for the wooden stand in the original instrument.

Both the Dorpat and the Pulkowa refractor are defective in rigidity, especially in right ascension. The declination circle is most inconvenient of access, and slow motion in declination can only be effected when the instrument is clamped by a long and inconvenient handle, so that practically clamping in declination was notemployed. The slow motion in right ascension is defective, being accomplished in the Dorpat refractor by changing the rate

of the clock, aud in the Pulkowa refractor by a handle which when

- used affects very injuriously the rate of the clock for the time being. Struve's skill as an observer was such that he used to complete the bisection on the fixed wire of the micrometer by a pressure of the finger on the side of the tube,—a method of proved efficiency in such hands, but plainly indicative of the want of rigidity in the instrument and of the deficiency of the slow motions (see MIcRo- METER, vol. xvi. p. 245). The driving circle is also much too small, so that a very slight mechanical freedom of the screw in the teeth involves a large angular freedom of the telescope in right ascension, whilst its position at the lower end of a too weak polar axis tends to create instability in right ascension from torsion of that axis. Strange to say, the wooden tube has till very recently retained its place in German mountings.

About 1840 a great advance was made in the right direction by the Repsolds of Hamburg in the equatorial mounting of the Oxford heliometer. The driving circle was greatly increased in diameter, and placed at the upper end of the polar axis, and both the polar axis and the declination axis were made much stronger in propor-

tion to the mass of the instrument they were destined to yp,

carry. (A figure of this instrument is given in the Oxford Observations for 1850.) About 1850 Thomas Cooke of York began his career as a maker of equa- torial telescopes, and gave a new character to the German mounting. Fig. 21 represents a typical equatorial of his design. A strong cast-iron pillar is substituted for Fraunhofer's stand. On the semi-cylindrical top of the pillar rests the cast-iron box AA, which contains at its upper and lower extremities the y bearings of the polar axis. Its mode . JM of connexion with the pillar permits .f#/77—@— the inclination of the box to be changed for adjustment of the inclination of the polar axis, The strong cross-head C, sup- pe the bearings of the eclination axis, is of cast iron, bolted to a flange on é the upper pivot of the polar axis. Fraun- hofer's cradle and ie : wooden tube are OM abolished, and in 4G & Gi

their place is a ef Ulla = | cast-iron cylindri- % te eal tube D, flanged cy at both ends and also at the point where itis bolted to a corresponding flange

on the end of the declination axis, all three flanges being cast in one piece with the central tube; the rest of the tube consists of two slightly tapered brass cylinders bolted by strong flanges to the central tube f D. The handle F clamps the arm H to f the cross-head C at a pleasure, and slow mo- tion in declination is ‘a Mlislk communicated by the ===. an! handles at E and G. * Two circles at K and M are attached to the upper part of the polar axis. To one of these motion is communicated by the tangent screw at M (turned by the clock N) acting on teeth cut at the edge of the circle. The other is a graduated hour circle read by two opposite microscopes, one of which is seen at P. The endless cord hanging down and holding a sliding ring at Q is em- ployed to give slow motion in right ascension, in some instruments by moving the frame of the driving screw in the direction of the axis of the screw, in others by moving differential wheels which accelerate or retard the velocity of rotation of the driving screw without affecting the rate of the clock. The declination circle RR is attached to the farther end of the declination axis and is Inconvenient of access. Cooke’s stand is admirable for its symmetry and simplicity of design, its just apportioning of strength, and a general rigidity with suitability of means to ends.

It is not a little curious that the obvious improvement of trans- ferring the declination circle as well as the declination clamp to the telescope end of the declination axis was so long delayed ; we can ascribe the delay only to a desire to retain the declination circle as part of the counterpoise. We believe that the first important equatorials in which the declination axis was read from the eye end were the 15-inch by Grubb and the 6-inch by Cooke, made for the observatory of Lord Crawford (then Lord Lindsay) at Dun Echt (Aberdeenshire) about 1878. The plan is now almost universally adopted. Telescopes of such dimensions can be conveniently

Lia

| |

=

Fia. 21.—Cooke’s equatorial.

directed to any object by the circles without the observer being under the necessity to climb a special ladder. But when much larger instruments are required the hour circle becomes inaccessible from the floor, and means have to be devised for read- ing both circles from the eye end. This was first accomplished by Grubb in the great refractor

the cross-head simultaneously , with the hour circle attached to the upper end of the polar axis. Light to illuminate

the vernier and circle is U/, thrown from the lamp UY

of 27-inches aperture which he constructed eS

for the Vienna observatory, represented in A WY Great section in fig. 22. The observer’s eye is S C4 Vienna applied to the small telescope E, which Me, S tele- (by means of prisms numbered 1, 2, +, bj scope, 3, 4) views the vernier attached to 4% Lh

L upon prism 4 by Gf NE the prisms 6 and V LS XK

circle and always

i righ AS f 5. Prism 1 is in Ye the axis of the YY, Wg bi declination L4b gh oy

="

=

A

ee

a wo lor wel

ened weed Yamal Le Ee ES

Fic. 22.—Grubb’s 27-inch refractor (Vienna).

reflects rays along that axis, whatever the position of the telescope may be, whilst the prisms 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6 are attached to the cross- head and therefore preserve their relative positions to each other. Through the eye-piece of the bent! telescope E’ another hour circle attached to the lower end of the polar axis can be seen; thus an assistant is able to direct the telescope by a handle at H to any desired hour angle. A slight rotatory motion of the telescope E on its axis enables the vernier of the declination circle to be read through prism 1. The leading features of this fine instrument represent those of all Grubb’s large telescopes. The mode of re- lieving the friction of the declina- iii

tion axis is similar to that em- ployed in the Melbourne tele- scope and in the account of the Vienna telescope published by Grubb. The end fric- tion of the polar axis is relieved by a ring of conical rollers shown in section beside the principal figure. From this point

Fia. 23.—Dr Engelmann’s 8-inch refractor.

we must condense further description into critical remarks on a few typical modern instruments. (1) Telescopes of Moderate Size for Micrometric Research only.—

1 In the bent telescope refracting prisms are employed at the corners to change the direction of the rays.

Repsolds’ by the Repsolds of Hamburg. The declination circle for a micrometrie eye end with almost as little trouble as the ex- small reads from the eye end, and four handles for clamp- Y -changing of an eye-piece. The illumination of the circles and the equa- ing and slow motion in right ascension and declina- micrometer is by electric ineandescent lamps. The instrument torial. tion are situated near the observer’s hands. The may be adjusted to any latitude and is probably the most practical tube is of sheet steel, light, stiff, and free from and serviceable equatorial made. The subjoined description of the tremor. The eye end carries the micrometer new slow motion in declination is taken from Proc. &. Dubl. Soc., with an illuminating apparatus similar to that 1886, p. 107. previously described under MicroMETER, ‘The slow motion arrangements usually used in equatorials are of either of vol. xvi 246 sq… figs. 16, 17, 20, and 21 two

forms, viz., (a) an endless screw working into a sector or portion of a er Eliana Oe ga oie i toothed circle of long radius, or (6) a screw applying or pushing directly The lamp near the eye end illuminates against an arm, that arm being kept in contact with the screw by a spiral or the field or the wires at pleasure, as well some oes on of serind having * onarlantle mange a ete. The Ase tee iti i i Z ossesses the disadvantage that, however carefully made, it is impossible it is as the gre prs of the bic aae waite free from ‘loss’ or ‘back lash’; and consequently the position of the meter and the eC ination eircle ; telescope is not perfectly determinate in declination, which fault is incon- a separate lamp illuminates the venient when delicate measures are required. The second (0) has practically hour eircle. An excellent fea- – — Mia c D : eeps per’ – ture (see fig. 24) is the short teat Gite ncrow, Wal i bad = distance between the eye-piece the disadvantage that, what- and the declination ever ES of motion ia – | 4 quir e spring must be axis, so that the A capable of working through observer has to fol- @y thesame range; consequently low the eye cnd the spring will be much in a comparatively stronger in action at one end alll eirclac an of the range than the other, ee ee AS unless it be made very long other good point is — indeed, in which case its ac- the flattening of the cast-iron tion – —- pine ~~Di pleasant. To remedy these nee oe : 7 ne so that defects the author [Grubb] t e flange of the declination axis has devised the following, is attached as near to the axis of which possesses the advan~~ the telescope tube as is consistent rigs bj sation of Gere Z : s “ ig, 25 with free passage of the cone of attached to telescope, or vs rays from the object-glass. For cradle, on which is planted the block (b), forming the bearing of the screw. purposes of micrometric research ho = (n) is + ie toe ch er working o a hemp * me extremity of o eae s the clamp-arm 5 short stiff spring (8) is attached to this clamp-arm kag the sete Ann me bearing, not directly against any part of other arm, but against end of a second this instrument is the most ele- screw of same pitch as the main screw, the nut of which (00) is toothed on edge, gant, satisfactory, and useful that | and works into a wheel of equal size (pp) on main screw. The point of this we know, as was shown by the |; second screw, therefore, advances as much in one direction as the frame ABCD exceedin ‘| acourate. cbserha= is carried in other, according as the milled head is turned; and consequently x Bly ac re the point of the screw does not sensibly vary in its position with respect to tions of the minor planets Vic- the clamp-arm EFG. A short stiff spring can therefore be used, and the dis- toria and Sappho for

solar paral- advantage above mentioned disappears.” lax, by Galle’s method (see This form of slow motion could be applied with advantage to the PARALLAX, Vol. xviii. p. 249), right ascension also, and probably to the separation of the segments made by Dr Engelmann in 1882. of heliometers. The substitution of small incan- (3) Of large equatorials we name first the great refractor at Large descent electric lamps for the Fig. 24.—Dr Engelmann’s 8-inch Washington of 26-inches aperture and 32h-feet focal length.! The equa- oil lamps would be an improvement. refractor. mounting appears to be unworthy of the well-known excellence of torials, Grubb’s (2) Telescopes of Moderate Size for General Purposes.—The modern | the object-glass. To illuminate the micrometer an assistant is Wash- small equatorial should for general purposes be capable of carrying spectro- | required to hold a lamp in his hand. No convenient means are ington equa- —_ scopes of considerable weight, so that the strength of the axis and | provided for illuminating the declination axis; and in order to telescope, torial. _ the rigidity of the instrument generally have to be considerably | point the telescope in declination the following elaborate process

150

Fig. 23 shows the mounting of the 8-inch refractor, of 9-feet foeal length, at the private observatory of Dr Engelmann, Leipsic. The object-glass is by Messrs Clark of Cambridge, Mass., the mounting

increased. Grubb has realized our ideas of what such an instru- ment should be in an equatorial of 6-inches aperture which he has recently made for the royal observatory at the Cape of Good Hope. The principal features are its great strength and rigidity, with special precautions to ensure preservation of the instrumental declination. The observations of Victoria and Sappho in 1882 revealed the great defieieney of most modern equatorials in this respect. That is to say, if a star near the meridian is first made to run along the measuring web of the micrometer, the clockwork then set in action, and the star brought back to the centre of the field by the slow-motion handle in right ascension, it will be found that the perfection of the biseetion is no longer preserved. Thus at most observatories the measures of difference of declination when the clockwork was employed were far inferior to those made with the telescope at rest. The reason seems to be that in most

equatorials the lower pivot is cylindrical, and enters an ordinary cylindrical bearing which cannot be a perfect fit. Also the cross- head, telescope, counterpoise, &c., generally together overbalance the polar axis about the upper bearing, so that the lower pivot presses upwards in its bearing, and its rotation, under the action of the clock or slow motion coupled with the friction of the sur- faces, gives rise to a small rolling freedom which creates the errors in question. In this telescope the lower pivot is of steel, made slightly conical, and carefully ground to fit a long conical bearing, in which it would work very tightly, or even jam, but for spring pressure brought to bear on its lower hardened flat end, which relieves the greater part of the thrust ; and the polar axis is aeeu- rately balaneed about its upper bearing by a weight at the lower end of the polar axis, so that the thrust is exactly in the axis of the cone. The upper pivot (4 inches in diameter) is also of steel, finished with the same care as that of a transit circle, so that the telescope rotates with the precision of a meridian instrument. Unusual rigidity has also been given to the declination clamping arms, and the new slow motion in declination is by far the best yet contrived ; it is a recent invention of Grubb's, and is de-

scribed below in his own words. The eye end, suitable for heavy spectroscopes, &c., is fitted to the butt end of the telescope by bayonet joints and tightening screws, so that it can be exchanged

has to be performed :—

'The instrument is brought into the meridian and set by the observer within a degree by means of coarse divisions painted on the edge of the declination circle. These divisions are rendered visible by lighting one or two of the gas burners of the dome, and viewed by the astronomer with an opera-glass. Then an assistant mounts by a ladder to a high platform and holds a gas lamp near the vernier, and the fine setting is accomplished by the observer seated in the observing chair, the declination clamp and slow-motion screw being convenient to his hand" (Washington Observations, 1874, Appendix I., p. 33). The polar and declination axes are of steel, only 7 inches in diameter at the thickest sons and the driving arc, which is far too small, is placed at the lower end of this slender axis. There must thus be considerable

liability to tremor in right ascension. However well the instrument may act in specially practised hands with an excellent Clark's micrometer (art. MIcROMETER, vol. xvi. p. 245), the instrument must be considered wanting in the rigidity and convenience which a modern equatorial should possess. In his official report on the instruments of European observatories New- comb defends the want of solidity and convenience of this instru- ment as compared with the Vienna telescope, because its smaller axes (notwithstanding Grubb's anti-friction arrangements) permit it to turn more easily and the mounting to be of far simpler deatgn But at the time of Newcomb's visit the Vienna teleseope had not been brought into work, and cannot have been in proper working order if the motion in declination was so stiff as he describes it, at least when the present writer tested the instrument in Dublin that motion was surprisingly easy.

_ The great Pulkowa refractor (fig. 26) erected in 1885 is of 30- Pulkowa inches aperture and 45-feet focal length. The object-glass is by refractor.

Clark, the mounting by the Repsolds. The tube is cylindrical, of riveted steel plate, graduated in thickness from the centre to its extremities, and bolted by very powerful flanges to a strong short cast-iron central tube, in which, as in Dr Engelmann's telescope (fig. 23), the attachment to the flange of the declination axis is placed as close as it can be to the axis of the tube without inter-

1 Described and figured in the Washington Observations, 1874, App. I.

fering with rays converging from the object-glass to any point in the field of view. A new feature in this instrument is the platform at the lower end of the polar axis, where an assistant can view the hour circle by one eye-piece and the declination circle by

another (looking up the perforated polar axis), and Ag, where he can also set the telescope to any hour angle PSV by one wheel, or to any declination by a second, with y the greatest ease. 'The observer at the eye end can also read off the hour and declination circles and communicate quick or slow motions to the telescope both in right ascension and declina- tion by

conveniently placed handles. The eye end presents an appearance too com- plicated to be figured here; it has a mi- crometer and its illumination for the position circle, a micrometer head, and a bright or dark field,! clamps in right ascension and declination and quick and slow motion in #*

aon

—; ; Si aay)

\ Ky Fia. 26.—Pulkowa refractor.

time and driven by a galvanic current from the sidereal clock, and counter weights which can be removed when a spectroscope or other heavy appliance is added. All these, although making up an ap- parently complicated apparatus, are conveniently arranged, and are all necessary for the quick and easy working of so large Yy an instrument. We have the authority of Otto Struve for stating that in practice they are all that can be desired. There is in this instrument a remarkably elegant method of relieving the friction of the polar axis. Let AA (fig. 27) be a section of the polar axis; it is then easy to adjust the weight P of the circles, &c., attached to its lower end so that the centre of gravity X of the whole moving parts of the instrument shall be in the vertical (VV) of a line passing through the apex of the hollowed flange py at q, which flange forms part of the polar axis. If now a wheel W is forced up against g with a pressure equal to

by employing a driving arc gets the telescope much closer to the polar axis with an increased radius for driving, and he makes the polar axis a very large hollow steel or cast-iron cylinder in which torsion is insensible. Both Grubb and the ,

Repsolds seem to think that for the tube of Sp the telescope all necessary rigidity can Au Cp be attained with cylindrical tubes of «4 Zid riveted steel, the thickness of the GJ 4 successive sheets of which dimin- é ish from the centre-piece out- Coa wards without making the extremities cone- shaped.

In these very large _tele-

scopes the

eis Fia. 28.—Grubb’s mounting for the Lick object-glass.

arrangements for giving access to the eye end and for following its diurnal motion have hitherto proved a source of difficulty. The travelling stages of the new Pulkowa telescope are the most man-

| ageable and practical that have yet been contrived, but even they

leave much to be desired. For energetic work the standing posi- tion is best, provided that the eye-piece is situated at the precise height above the stage which is most convenient for the observer, and that the altitude of the observed object is not greater than 60°. For altitudes above 60° a small chair with a back, the top of which is stuffed for the head to rest upon, is the best seat, provided that the observer’s eye can be kept at the height of the eye-piece. Accordingly Grubb has suggested the following plan for the observatory at Mount Hamilton, California, which is to cover the Lick telescope. The whole floor, 70 feet in dia- meter, is to be raised or lowered by water-power under control of the observer by means of electric keys, which act on a secondary piece of mechanism, that in turn works the valves and reversing gear of the water-engines. Other water-engines, similarly con- nected with keys at the observer’s hands, rotate the dome and per- form the quick motions in right ascension and declination. By this arrangement a large instrument can be worked with perfect facility and comfort. There is only one other plan, that of suspend- ing the observer’s chair to the eye end, so that his eye is near the centre of motion of the chair. This is quite practicable for a 36- inch telescope, and one observer, with the necessary guiding keys at hand, could easily work a telescope and dome of the largest dimensions as quickly and with more ease than he could one of 10 or 12 inches aperture. Probably a nervous astronomer would prefer a solid floor to work upon, as in Grubb’s proposal; in the latter case the quickest working can only be accomplished by two persons, one seated on the platform at the foot of the polar axis and doing the rough setting in right ascension and declination, the other meanwhile adjusting the height of the floor and the azimuth of the dome opening.

In very large equatorials there must be in existing methods con- Proposed siderable inconvenience from the extended width of the apparatus facilities at the eye end. Were we called upon to design a great refractor for using we should abolish all such apparatus and provide the observer large with a few conveniently placed small handles or keys for electrical tele- connexions, and we should perform all motions of the telescope scopes. whatsoever by electromotors. There is no form of energy so con- venient for the astronomer. It provides by incandescent lamps

the weight of the moving part of “m eement,

e whole weight ‘ of the pparrig = mg. a part would rest upon W in unstable equilibrium ; or if a pressure R, less than W, is employed, we have the end friction on the lower bearing removed to an extent=Rsin ¢, and the friction on the

bearings of the upper pivot removed to the extent of F cos o,— where ¢ is the latitude of the place. The wheel W is therefore Mounted on a guided rod, which is forced upwards by suitable levers and weights, and this relief of pressure is precisely propor- tional to the pressure on the respective bearings. The Repsolds find it unnecessary to relieve the friction of the Paclation axis. Fig. 28 shows the equatorial mounting which Grubb designed for the great object-glass of 36-inches aperture that Messrs Clark have completed for the Lick trustees, and which may be supposed to express Grubb’s latest ideas as to the mounting for a very large telescope. The Repsolds have a large driving circle at the upper end of the polar axis, thus avoiding torsion of the polar axis at the expense of greatly increased length of the cross-head. Grubb TC 1 There is also an elegant arrangement for printing on a ribbon of paper, by Pressure of the finger, the readings of the number of revolutions and fractions

of a revolution of the head at each observation, the ribbon being automatically moved forward for another record after each observation.

the most suitable light for his purpose, perfectly constant, giving off little heat, and unaffected by wind; and such a light can be placed where required without the aid of reflectors or any complicated apparatus, and its intensity can be regulated with ease and precision by changing the resistance of the

conductors. Moreover the electromotors can be as powerful or as delicate as we please, and can be placed in the most convenient or suitable posi- tions. The energy of a 5-horse-power steam-engine working for ten hours can be stored in accumulators of no inconvenient dimen- sions ready for use as required during a whole week or even a month, and can be brought into action in force equivalent to several horse- power to raise or lower the floor or turn the dome, or to perform slow motions requiring no greater energy than that exercised by the finger and thumb, or to illuminate a lamp of } or } candle- power. There would be no limit to the rigidity which could be given to such a telescope, as great ease of motion would not have Llane al ell i ah Pi ls Bn ocly tah

2 A woodeut showing these arrangements appeared in the Engineer, 9th July 1886.

Type D.

Lassell's mount- ing.

Com- mon's mount- ing.

to be considered, and we should abolish all complicated anti-friction apparatus for the declination axis, retaining it only for the polar axis to save wear in the teeth of the driving arc. Finally, instead of making the finder a short telescope attached to the eye end of the instrument, we should give it a focal length equal to that of the great object-glass, attaching the cell of its object-glass rigidly to the cell of the large object-glass and its eye end to the butt end of the main telescope, in order to secure the utmost rigidity in the relations of the axes of the two tele- 5

scopes. Such a finder would corre- spond in efficiency to that of the Henry photographic telescope, and would be available as a guid- ing telescope in photographic work, or for keeping a star exactly on the slit of a spectroscope.

The first important in- struments of type D were Mr Lassell's re- flectors, the largest of , which, and the last, 4 is represented in fig. & 29. The polar axis is sutlici- ently rigid, but (7x the long and / comparative-

ly slender

Fic. 29.—Lassell's reflector. forks which earry the pivots of the central cradle are elements of instability, especially when the instrument is directed to an object of considerable hour angle. There is practical confession of this instability in the cross-bracing which connects the two forks, and which must be removed if the telescope is pointed to an object between the zenith and the elevated pole.

The best ie, of type D is the reflecting telescope of 36-inehes aperture designed by Mr. A. A. Common, with which his exquisite photographs of nebule, &c., were made. The . principal preliminary conditions which he laid down as necessary were the following!:— (1) no tube properly so called, to avoid air-currents in the tube; (2) no mass of metal either below or at the side of the line joining the large and small mirrors, to avoid currents from possible difference of tempera- , ture between the mass of ~# metal and the surrounding ~@ — air; (8) an equatorial EN mounting capable of / direction to any part / i of the visible hea- vens and of con- tinued observation past the meridian without reversal ; (4) an _ efficient means of supporting the mirror without flexure; (5) driving elock ; circles to find or identify an object, and motions taken to eye end; (6) a D3 mounting which Fic. 30.—Common's reflecting telescope. will give the greatest amount of steadiness with the least amount of friction. Fig. 30 is a section of the instrument in the plane of the meridian. DD, is a cast-iron hollow eylinder, accu- rately bored out, attached to a strong base block. De is a cover bolted on the bottom of this eylinder, in the centre of which is a tapering steel pin D3, which enters a corresponding hole in the bottom of the polar axis E, and serves as the lower pivot of

1 Monthly Notices R.A.S., vol. xxxix. p. 384.

•

w “

.

∘ “

4 < 2

o

“ ‘h— hall

the polar axis. The eylindrical part of the polar axis is accu- rately turned to a diameter one-eighth of an inch less than the outer cylinder, and the otherwise severe friction on the pin Dz is relieved by filling in the space betweeh D and E with mercury, so far as sufficient nearly to float the whole moving part of the telescope. The upper elbow-shaped part of the polar axis Ee is flanged and bolted to the lower part. In the section at right angles to that exhibited in fig. 30 this elbow-shaped part is T-shaped, and the eross of the T is bored to receive the declination axis; and, as the elbow puts the polar axis considerably out of balance, the T-shaped head is carried forward of the axial line about 14 inches, so that the whole weight of the telescope above just restores the balance. Two heavy weights X, X counterpoise the eye end F with the four braced tubes T, T which support it. B is the declination circle. It is impossible to describe this fine instrument adequately within our limits ; we mention as specially worthy of study the method of supporting the mirror and the eminently ingenious and practical form of the observatory, and refer the reader to Common’s illustrated account of the instrument in Mem, R.A.S., vol. xlvi. pp. 173-182.

There is also an admirable mounting of type D designed by Lord Rosse’s Rosse for his 3-foot reflector at Birr Castle, described by him in 8-foot Phil. Trans., vol. clxxi. p. 158, The instrument is planned on mount. the broad lines of Lassell’s telescope (fig. 29), but the badly planned ing, and weak fork of the latter is replaced by a thoroughly rigid bent fork made of boiler plate a quarter of an inch thick, firmly riveted to angle iron of 2} x 2} x8 inch scantling along each angle, the whole, as we have proved by trial, being exceedingly rigid. It would be an improvement to adopt Mr

Common’s plan of putting the declination axis a little out of the line of prolongation of the polar axis, and thus dispense with the counter-weight ; and we should prefer hollow steel tubes with push and pull bracing rather than the angle iron rods and bracing which form the tube.

In the Proceedings of the Royal Dublin Society (vol. ii. p. 862) Type E. Grubb describes a ‘‘siderostatic telescope,” which forms a good elementary example of type E. In fig. 31 TT is the tube of a tele- Grubb’s

v7, scope of 4-inches aperture, which is mounted to rotate sidero-

® about its axis, the latter forming the polar axis. MM static . is a plane mirror reflecting rays from a star S to the telescope, 65% object-glass, so that its image ean be viewed from the eye-piece at E, The star is retained in the field by the clock C. Stars of different declination can be viewed by rotating the mirror on its axis G, and in different hour angles. by rotating the tube upon its axis. The instrument in European atitudes cannot command a view of the heavens between the elevated pole and the zenith unless the distance OG is made i exceedingly great; even then only a limited range beyond the zenith is possible. The instrument is pri- | marily intended for solar spectro- scopy, and thus these draw- f backs do not apply. The H resulting ad- | , & vantage is” i / ¢ that the ob- “ “server may be in complete darkness and his observa- | tions are not interrupted by change of posi- tion. $f, = | In Comptes Loewy’s Fia. 81.—Grubb’s siderostatic telescope. Rendus for the equator- year 1883, vol. ialcoudé. xevi. pp. 735-741, M. Loewy gives an account of an instrument which he calls an “ equatorial coudé,” designed (1) to attain greater stability and so to measure larger angles than is generally possible with the ordinary equatorial ; (2) to enable a single astronomer to point the telescope and make observations in any part of the sky without ehanging his position; (3) to abolish the usual expensive dome, and to substitute a covered shed on wheels (which can be run back at pleasure), leaving the telescope in the open air, the observer alone being sheltered. These conditions are fulfilled in the manner shown in fig. 32. EP is the polar axis, rotating on bearings at E and P. The object-glass is at O, the eye-piece at E. There is a plane mirror at M, which reflects rays converging from the object-glass to the eye-piece at E. A second mirror N, placed at 45° to the optical axis of the object-glass, reflects rays

from a star at the pole ; but by rotating the box which contains this mirror on the axis of its supporting tube T a star of any declination ean be observed, and by eombining this motion with rotation of the polar axis the astronomer seated at E is able to view any object whatever in the visible heavens, except those situated between 102 and 12% hour

| |

.

—

\ just-

wnt of By means of an azimuth compass, or, better, by the shadow of a

hae ial,

TELESCOPE

angle. An hour circle attached to EP and a declination circle

attached to the box containing the mirror N, both of which can be

read or set from E, complete the essentials of the instrument. Its mechanical details present no great difficulty, and

are most conveniently arranged. But we entertain _ *,gtave doubts as to the practical value of the > *, instrument, not on mechanical, but on optical ‘“. *s, grounds. _ light from two additional reflexions ; but

se at

other advantages, provided that ‘*., the mirrors could be made suffi- ciently perfect optical planes. A few years ago it was very difficult to obtain an op- tically perfect plane 6 inches in diameter, and having obtained it there remained the

in all positions it should be free from flexure. By making the mirrorsof silvered glass, one-fourth of their diameter in thickness, MM. Henry have not only succeeded in mounting them with all necessary rigidity free from flexure but have given them optically true plane sur- faces, notwithstanding their large diameters, viz., 11 and 15°7 inches. The present writer tested the equatorial coudé on double stars at the Paris observatory in 1884, and his last doubts as to the practical value of the instrument were dispelled. He has never seen more perfect optical definition in any of the many telescopes he has employed, and certainly never measured a celestial object in such favourable conditions of physical comfort. The easy position of the observer, the convenient position of the handles for quick and slow motion, and the absolute rigidity of the mounting leave little to be desired. In future instruments the object-glass will be placed outside the mirror N, so that both the silvered mirrors will be protected from exposure to the outer air, and probably will retain the brilliancy of their surfaces for a long period.

Fia. 32.—Loewy’s coudé equatorial.

Adjustment of the Equatorial.

Let us take the usual case, that of an equatorial of type C. (1) plumb line at apparent noon, lay down a meridian line on the upper surface of the stone pier, or other foundation, previously built for the instrument. (2) Employ this meridian line to set up the instrument and with it the polar axis approximately in the azimuth of the meridian, which can be tested by stretching a wire through the centres of the bearings of the polar axis, and dropping a plumb line from the extremities of the wire upon the meridian line. If this is carefully done when the azimuth adjustment is near the middle of its range all desirable accuracy in this preliminary de- sideratum will be secured. (3) Place the polar axis approximately at the altitude of the pole. This is very easily done for an instru- ment in which the polar axis is cylindrical or is encased in a box with an upper side parallel to that axis (as in Grubb’s or Cooke’s equatorials), Prepare a right-angled triangle of wood of which the acute angles represent the latitude and co-latitude of the place. Lay the hypothenuse of this triangle upon the line of the instru- ment parallel to the polar axis (or the wire of operation 2) with the angle equal to the co-latitude next to the elevated pole, and change the inclination of the

polar axis till a mason’s level placed on the side of the triangle opposite to the angle of the latitude shows the side in question to be horizontal. (4) Adjust the movable micro- meter web to coincidence with the axis of the position circle by bi- secting the image of a distant object and reading the number of revolutions or fractions of a revolution at two different readings of the position circle 180° apart. The mean of these two readings is the reading for coincidence with the axis of the position circle. Set the micrometer to this mean. (5) Adjust the polar axis more exactly to the required altitude as follows. Point the telescope to a well-known star not far from the equator and near the meridian, and turn the position circle so that the image of the star by the diurnal motion runs along the web. Read the declination circle. Now reverse the telescope to the other side of the polar axis and bisect the same star again, and again read the declination circle. The mean of the two readings is the star’s instrumental apparent declination ; the difference of the two readings is twice the index error. To eliminate this latter it is only necessary to shift the vernier of the declination circle by the screws provided for the purpose, without unclamping in declination, till the circle reads the star’s instrumental apparent declination. This being done, select another star near the meridian and compute its apparent declination (allowing for refraction). Set the telescope to this com- puted reading and clamp in declination ; then cause an assistant to

There must be a certain loss of

that could be tolerated for the sake of

further difficulty of mounting it so that

change the altitude of the polar axis (by the screw for the purpose) till the star is bisected by the micrometer wire. (6) Select any convenient known star about six hours from the meridian ; compute its apparent declination (allowing for refraction) ; and set the tele- scope to this reading in declination. Cause the assistant to turn the slow motion in azimuth till the image of the star is bisected by the micrometer web. (7) Repeat operation 5 and make final corrections if necessary. (8) Repeat operation 6 with stars both east and west of the meridian, and readjust azimuth if necessary. (9)

Turn the position circle of the micrometer 90°; place the declination axis nearly horizontal ; clamp the telescope in right ascension ; and ob- serve the time of transit of a known star across the web of the micrometer. Compute the true hour angle of the star from the known error of the micrometer and the star’s right ascension, and set the vernier so that the hour circle shall read the computed hour angle. By these meaus, with a previously prepared pro- gramme, the writer has frequently completely adjusted an equa- torial in less than an hour, so far as operations 4 to 9 were concerned.

There still remain two instrumental errors of the stand. (1) The line joining the optical centre of the lens with the axis of rotation of the position circle may not be at right angles to the declination axis. (2) The declination axis may not be at right angles to the polar axis. In modern equatorials it is usual to leave these adjustments to the maker, as to leave them to the astronomer would be incompatible with the greatest stability of the instrument. In a good instrument these errors will certainly be extremely small and have no influence on its efficiency for practical purposes. The methods for determining their amount are given in most works on practical astronomy.!

There remain two important optical adjustments which must be very carefully attended to, viz., the centring of the lenses of the object-glass relative to each other and the centring of the axis of the object-glass relative to that of the eye-piece. The former consists in placing the lenses of the object-glass so that the centres of curva- ture of their surfaces shall lie in one straight line, which line is the axis of the object-glass. This operation is so delicate and requires such special experience and skill that it should be left to the maker of the object-glass. An elegant method of testing this adjustment was given by Wollaston in Phil. Trans., 1822, p. 82. If the object- glass itself is perfectly centred, the test of the centring of its axis with that of the eye-piece is very easy : are the diffraction rings which surround the image of ; a bright star shown as in fig. 33, or is there flare, that is, are the rings extended on one side as in fig. 34? If the latter is the case, that side of the object-glass towards which the flare is directed is too far from the eye-piecc, and should be brought ; towards it by the appropriate screws or other means provided by the maker. Ina good object-glass perfectly centred, on a night of steady de- finition, a bright star in focus should appear as in fig. 33.

A useful apparatus for the adjustment of cen- «= tring is a small telescope (fig. 35) whose axis is in the centre of and at right angles to a flat piece of brass in the shape of an equilateral triangle fitted with screws at the three angles. To use this in- strument, place the points of the screws on the object-glass as in fig. 36, so that two angles of the triangle are in contact with the inner edge of the cell of the object-glass, and adjust the screw a so that the cross-wires in the common focus of the object- glass and eye-piece of the small telescope coincide with the image of the cross-wires of the micro- meter of the telescope which mark the axis of rotation of the position circle. Now, keeping the same angles of the brass triangle in con- tact with the cell, move the small centring telescope round the cir- cumference of the object-glass and note where there is the greatest de- parture from coincidence. Correct rygs, 35, 36.—Apparatus for adjust- this departure half by the screw @ ment of centring in a small telescope. of the small centring telescope and

half by the centring screws of the object-glass. The adjustment is perfect when the centring telescope can be moved round the whole periphery of the object-glass in the above manner whilst its cross-wires continue to bisect the cross-wires of the micrometer of

See 1 Chauvenet, Practical and Spherical Astronomy, vol. ii. pp. 379-390 ; Brunnow, Spherical Astronomy, p. 445 ; and Loomis, Practical Astronomy, pp. 28-32.

Fig. 33.

Fig. 34.

Driving clock.

the telescope. If after this adjustment has been perfected the dif- fraction rings are still not circular round the images of stars, the fault is in the

centring of the lenses of the object-glass with respect to each other, and the object-glass should be scent to the maker for rectification.

Driving Clock.

The means employed to cause an equatorial telescope to follow the diurnal motion of a star obviously must not resemble the intermittent motion of an ordinary clock. Numerous devices have been contrived for producing uniform mo- tion. But the limits of this article will only allow us to refer briefly to a few of those most commonly in use. Fig. 37 represents Fraun- hofer's governor. On its axis C is a pinion driven by a train of wheels, The axis carries an arm BB, at the ex- tremities of which, at- tached by springs f, /', are the weights D, D'. When these weights ac- quire a certain velocity of rotation the centri- fugal force is sufficient to cause the weights to fly out and rub against the inside of the cylinder AA, and their velocity is checked. Instead of a cylinder, the balls may rub against the inside of a hollow cone, and by raising or lowering the axis C the contact of the weights with the cone may be made to take place when the balls have slightly greater or less

Fic. 37.—Fraanhofer's governor.

velocity, and thus the rate of the clock is regulated. A much better arrangement is a modification of Watt's governor, employed by Grubb and Cooke. The governor balls g, g (fig. 38) repose on the points h, 2 of the arm KK till they reach their normal velocity, when they fly outwards and bring the point S (tipped with leather) into contact with the friction plate p. These clocks are simple in construction and act very well. Newcomb in the Washington equatorial has employed a long suspended conical pendulum ; when this pendulum in the least exceeds its normal velocity (that is, its

TELESPHORUS, bishop of Rome from about 128 till about 137, succeeded Sixtus J. and was followed by Hyginus. Eusebius in his History gives the date of the martyrdom of Telesphorus as the first year of Antoninus Pius (138) and in his Chronicle as the eighteenth year of Hadrian (135).

TELFORD, Tuomas (1757-1834), civil engineer, was the son of a shepherd in Eskdale, Dumfriesshire, and was born in the valley of the Megget, 9th August 1757. From early childhood he was employed as a herd,

occasionally attending the parish school of Westerkirk, where his quickness and diligence helped to make up for his lack of opportunity. On being apprenticed, at the age of fifteen, to a stone mason at Langholm, he found leisure not only to gain an acquaintance with Latin, French, and German, but to gratify his literary tastes by a wide variety of reading. In his early manhood he was much given to

normal departure from the vertical) it establishes an electrical con- tact which brings friction to bear, and thus reduces the power applied to the pendulum. There is occasional tendency to elliptical motion, and the clock is otherwise troublesome. In the Repsolds' _ driving clock of the 30-inch Pulkowa refractor the conical pendulum is reversed, being a hcavy weight at the top of a vertical steel rod, kept in conical rotation by a pin at its upper end, which entets a slot in a revolving arm. The rod is in fact a spring of such a form as to cause the revolutions to be nearly or perfectly isochronous whatever the angle of the cone of motion ; the clock is therefore, within limits, independent of the power applied to it or the force to be overcome.

Many forms of air-fans have been suggested; probably the best is the modification of Foucault's proposed by Hilger (see Monthly Notices R..A.S., vol. xlvi. p. 155), which is shown in fig. 39. E is the axis of rotation ; C and D are fans that are pulled towards the spindle EK by chronometer springs in the boxes A and B. The fans fly out symmetrically when the velocity exceeds 25 or 80 revolu- tions per second; the increased resistance of the air thus pro- duced checks the velocity of ro- tation. By means of the small weights W, W attached to arms on the fans Hilger states that it is possible to adjust this governor so that it shall even lose by an increase of the driving weight.

For the most refined work none of these governors can be said to be perfect; none would be even tolerable as a clock for astrono- mical time-keeping purposes. It is possible that the elaborate Greenwich driving clock may give better results, but its construc- tion is too complicated to be fre- quently repeated (see, for a de- scription of it, the Greenwich Observations for 1868). The only way in which nearly perfect uni- form motion can be realized is to control it in some way from a swinging pendulum. This is

done in Bond's spring governor! and by Grubb, the latter employing the arm of a remontoir train connected with a dead-beat escapement to bring friction to bear on a revolving plate connected with the axis of his governor (see fig. 88). The best existing driving clock is probably that at Lord Crawford's observatory at Dun Echt.2 An account of its performance is given by Dr Copeland in Viertel- jahrsschr. astron. Geselisch., 16 Jahrg., p. 305. In this clock gain of a hundredth of a second, or even less, introduces increased fric- tion on the revolving disk during the next second, or until the gain has been corrected. A still more perfect clock could probably be made on a similar plan by abolishing the clock weight and making the origin of power an electromotor, the current being cut off in a way similar to that in the Dun Echt clock if the clock of continuous motion gets in advance of the ordinary clock.

For information on clockwork of equatorials and telescope mount- ings generally, see Konkoly's Practische Anleitung zur Anstellung astron. Beobachtungen. (D. GI.)

Fic. 89.—Hilger's modification of Foucault's air-fan.

the writing of verse: a poem of some length on Eskdale appeared in 1784 in the Poetical Museum, published at Hawick ; under the signature of "Eskdale Tam" he con- tributed verses to Ruddiman's Weekly Magazine; and he addressed an epistle in rhyme to Burns, which was published in Currie's Life of the poet. But these poetical effusions were of comparatively little value. In 1780 Telford went to Edinburgh, where he was employed in the erection of houses in the "new" town, and occupied much of his spare time in learning architectural drawing. Two years later he proceeded to London, finding employ- ment in the erection of Somerset House. Having in 1784 superintended the erection of a house for the commissioner at Portsmouth dockyard, he next repaired the castle of

1 Konkoly, Practische Anleitung zur Anstellung astron. Beobacht-

ungen, Brunswick, 1888. ? Monthly Notices R.A.S., November 1873.

Sir W. Pulteney, member for Shrewsbury, who conceived such a high opinion of his talents that he got him made surveyor of public works for the county of Salop. His earliest bridge was that across the Severn at Montford, finished in 1792. In the following year he was appointed engineer of the Ellesmere Canal, which led to his being employed for the chief canals subsequently constructed in Great Britain, including the Caledonian (1804), the Glou- cester and Berkeley (1818), the Grand Trunk (1822), the Macclesfield (1824), and the Birmingham and Liverpool Junction (1825). He was consulted in 1806 by the king of Sweden, regarding the construction of the Gotha Canal between Lake Wener and the Baltic, and, his plans having been adopted, he visited the country in 1810 to superintend some of the more important excavations. In 1803 he had been appointed engineer for the construction of 920 miles of roads in the Highlands of Scotland, a great part through very difficult country. Of the numerous bridges built in this line of roads mention may be specially made of that across the Tay at Dunkeld. Subsequently he perfected the road communication between London and Scotland and the northern towns of England. An under- taking of equal magnitude and importance with that in the Highlands of Scotland was a system of roads through the more inaccessible parts of Wales, which involved the erection of the magnificent suspension bridge across the Menai Straits, begun in 1820, and the Conway bridge, be- gun in 1822. For the Austrian Government Telford built the Polish road from Warsaw to Brest. While the fame of Telford rests chiefly on his road and canal engineering, and the erection of the numerous bridges and aqueducts which this involved, he also did good work in harbour construction. In 1790 he was employed by the British Fishery Society to inspect the harbours on the north-east coast of Scotland ; and, besides constructing the important fishing harbour at Pulteneytown, Wick, he greatly improved those at the other principal fishing stations. His import- ant works of this kind were, however, his improvement of the harbours at Aberdeen and Dundee, and the construc- tion of the St Katherine’s docks at London. In 1828-30 he drained the north level of the eastern Fen district, an area of 48,000 acres. The erection of the Dean Bridge, Edinburgh, and of the Broomielaw Bridge, Glasgow, and the improvement (1833-34) of Dover harbour were the principal achievements of his later years. He died on 2d September 1834, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. Telford was never married. For twenty-one years he lived at the Salopian coffee house,

afterwards the Ship Hotel, Charing Cross. He was a fellow of the Royal Societies of London and of Edinburgh, and was annually elected president of the Institution

of Civil Engineers from its commencement. He received the

Swedish order of knighthood ‘‘ of Gustavus Vasa.” See Telford’s Memoirs, written by himself and edited by John Rickman (1888); also Smiles’s Lives of the Engineers.

TELL. The story of William Tell’s skill in shooting at and striking the apple which had been placed on the head of his little son by order of Gessler, the tyrannical Austrian bailiff of Uri, is so closely bound up with the legendary history of the origin of the Swiss Confederation that they must be considered together. Both appear first in the 15th century, probably as results of the war for the Toggenburg inheritance (1436-50); for the intense hatred of Austria, greatly increased by her support of the claims of Zurich, favoured the circulation of stories which assumed that Swiss freedom was of immemorial antiquity, while, as the war was largely a struggle between the civic and rural elements in the Confederation, the notion that the (rural) Schwyzers were of Scandinavian descent at once separated them from and raised them above the German inhabitants of the towns.

The Tell story is first found in a ballad the first nine stanzas of which (containing the story) were certainly

written before 1474. There is no mention made of the names of the bailiff or of his master, or of the hat placed ona pole. Tell is called “‘the first Confederate,” and his feat is treated as the real and only reason why the Con- federation was formed and the tyrants driven out of the land. It is probably to this ballad that Melchior Russ of Lucerne (who began his Chronicle in 1482) refers when, in his account (from Justinger) of the evil deeds of the bailiffs in the Forest districts, he excuses himself from giv- ing the story. He goes on to narrate how Tell, irritated by his treatment, stirred up his friends against the governor, who seized and bound him and was conveying him by boat to his castle on the Lake of Lucerne, when a storm

arose, and Tell, by reason of his great bodily strength, was, after being unbound, given charge of the rudder on his promise to bring the boat safely to land. He steers it towards a shelf of rock, called in Russ's time Tell's Platte, springs on shore, shoots the bailiff dead with his crossbow, and goes back to Uri, where he stirs up the great strife which ended in the battle of Morgarten. In these two accounts, which form the basis of the Uri version of the origin of the Confederation, it is Tell and Tell only who is the actor and the leader. We first hear of the cruelties of Austrian bailiffs in the Forest districts in the Bernese Chronicle of Conrad Justinger (1420). No names or details are given, and the dates are different in the two recensions of the Chronicle as "olden days before Bern was founded" (i.e, before 1191) and 1260. Several details, but only one name, are added in the De Nobilitate et Rusticitate Dialogus (cap. 33) of Felix Hemmerlin, a canon of Zurich, who wrote it after 1451 and before 1454; in this last year he was imprisoned by the Schwyzers, whom he had repeatedly insulted and attacked in his books. According to him, the men of Schwyz and of Unterwalden were the first to rise, those of Uri following suit much later. But neither Justinger nor Hemmerlin makes any allusion to Tell or his feat.

The Tell story and the "atrocities" story are first found combined ina MS. known as the White Book of Sarnen. They are contained in a short chronicle written between 1467 and 1476, probably about 1470, and based on oral tradition. Many details are given of the oppressions of the bailiffs: we hear of Gessler, of the meeting of Stou- pacher of Schwyz, Fiirst of Uri, and a man of Nidwald at the Riitlii—in fact, the usual version of the legend. To give an instance of tyranny in Uri, the author tells us the story of the refusal of 'der Thall" to do reverence to the hat placed on a pole, of his feat of skill, and of his shoot- ing the bailiff, Gessler, from behind a bush in the "hollow way" near Kiissnacht. Tell is represented as being one of those who swore at the Riitli to drive out the oppressors ; but the narrative of his doings is merely one incident in the general movement which began quite independently of him. The chronology is very confused, but the events are placed after Rudolph's election to the empire in 1273. This is the only account in which Tell is called "der Thall," which name he himself explains by saying, "If I were sharp (witzig) I should be called something else and not der Tall," 7.e., the simpleton or slow-witted man. The only other known instances of the Uri version of the legend relating to the origin of the

Confederation are the Latin hexameters of Glareanus (1515), in which Tell is compared to Brutus as “assertor patriz, vindex ultorque tyrannum,” and the Urnerspiel (composed in 1511-12), a play acted in Uri, in which Russ’s version is followed, though the bailiff, who is unnamed, but announces that he has been sent by Albert of Austria, is slain in the ‘hollow way.” Tell is the chief of the Riitli leaguers, and it is his deed which is the immediate occasion of the rising against the oppressors, which is dated in 1296. Mutius

(1540) is the latest writer who, in his description of the origin of the Confederation, does not mention Tell and his act. The two stories are now firmly bound together; the version contained in the White Book is the accepted one, though small additions in names and dates are often made.

The task of filling up gaps, smoothing away incon- sistencies, rounding off the tale, was accomplished by Giles TscHUDI (¢.v.), whose recension was adopted, with a few alterations, by Von Miiller in his History of the Confedera- tion (1780). In the final recension of Tschudi’s Chronicle (1734-36), which, however, differs in many particulars from the original draft still preserved at Zurich, we are told how Albert of Austria, with the view of depriving the Forest lands of their ancient freedom, sent bailiffs (among them Gessler) to Uri and Schwyz, who committed many tyrannical acts, so that finally on 8th November 1307, at the Riitli, Werner von Stauffacher of Schwyz, Walter Fiirst of Uri, Arnold von Melchthal in Unterwalden, each with ten companions, among whom was William Tell, re- solved on a rising to expel the oppressors, which was fixed for New Year’s day 1308. A few days later (November 18) the Tell incident takes place (described according to the White Book version), and on the appointed date the general rising. Tschudi thus finally settled the date, which had before varied from 1260 to 1334. He utterly distorts the real historical relations of the Three Lands, though he brings in many real historical names, their owners being made to perform historically impossible acts, and in- troduces many small additions and corrections into the story as he had received it In particular, while in his first draft he speaks of the bailiff as Gryssler—the usual name up to his time, except in the White Book and in Stumpft’s Chronicle of 1548—in his

final recension he calls him Gessler, knowing that this was a real name. Later writers added a few more particulars,—that Tell lived at Biirglen and fought at Morgarten (1598), that he was the son-in- law of Fiirst and had two sons (early 18th century), &c. Johannes von Miiller gave a vivid description of the oath at the Riitli by the three (Tell not being counted in), and threw Tschudi's version into a literary form, adding one or two names and adopting that of Hermann for Gessler, calling him of ' Bruneck." Schiller's play gave the tale a world-wide renown.

The story was, on the ground of want of evidence, regarded as suspicious by Guilliman in a private letter of 1607, and doubts were expressed by the brothers Iselin (1727 and 1754) and by Voltaire (1754); but it was not till 1760 that the legend was definitely attacked, on the ground of its similarity to the story of Tokko (see below), in an anonymous pamphlet by Freudenberger, a Bernese pastor. This caused great stir; it was publicly burnt by order of the Government of Uri, and many more or less forged proofs and documents were produced in favour of Tell. The researches of J. E. Kopp! first cleared up the real early history of the league, and overthrew the legends of the White Book and Tschudi. Since then many writers have worked in the same direction. Vischer (1867) has carefully traced out the successive steps 'in the growth of the legend, and Rochholz (1877) has worked out the real history of Gessler as shown in authentic documents. The general result has been to show that a mythological marks- man and an impossible bailiff bearing the name of a real family have been joined with confused and distorted re- Miniscences of the events of 1245-47, in which the names of many real persons have been inserted and many un-authenticated acts attributed to them.

The story of the skilful marksman who succeeds in striking some small object placed on the head ofa man or child is very widely

1 Documents for the History of the Federal Alliances, 1835 and 1851, and his History, part ii., 1847.

spread: we find it in Denmark (Tokko), Norway (two versions), Iceland, Holstein, on the Rhine, and in England (William of Cloudesley). How it came to be localized in Uri we do not know; possibly, through the story of the Scandinavian colonization of Schwyz, the tale was fitted to some real local hero.

The alleged proofs of the existence of a rcal William Tell in Uri in the 14th century break down hopelessly. (1) The entries in the parish registers are forged. (2) As to the Tell chapels—(a) that in the ‘‘hollow way” near Ktissnacht was not known to Melchior Russ and is first mentioned by Tschudi (1570). (b) That on Tell’s Platte is also first mentioned in Tschudi. The document which alleges that the chapcl was built by order of a “lands. gemeinde” held in 1388, at which 114 men were present who had been personally acquainted with Tell, was never heard of till 1759. The procession in boats to the place where the chapel stands may be very old, but is not connected with Tell till about 1582. (c) The chapel at Biirglen is known to have been founded in 1582. Other documents and statements in support of the Tell story have even less claim to credit. It has been pointed out above that with two exceptions the bailiff is always called Gryssler or Grissler, and it was Tschudi who popularized the name of Gessler, though Grissler occurs as late at 1765. Now Gessler is the name of a real family, the history of which from 1250 to 1518 has been worked out by Rochholz, who shows in detail that no member ever played the part attributed to the bailiff in the legend, or could have done so, and that the Gesslers could not have owned or dwelt at the castle of Kiissnacht ; nor could they have been called Von Bruneck.

In the Urnerspiel the name of the bailiff’s servant who guarded the hat on the pole is given as Heintz Vogely, and we know that Friedrich Voégeli was the name of one of the chief military officers of Peter von Hagenbach, who from 1469 to 1474 administered for Charles the Bold, duke of Burgundy, the lands (Alsace, &c.) pledged to him by Sigismund of Hapsburg. Now

Hagenbach is known to have committed many cruelties like those attributed to the bailiffs in the legend, and it has been plausibly conjectured that his case has really given rise to these stories, especially when we find that the Confederates had a hand in his capture and execution, that in a document of 1858 Hagenbachs and Gesslers appear side by side as witnesses, and that the Hagenbachs had frequent trans- actions with the Hapsburgs and their vassals.

Among the vast number of books and pamphlets on the Tell story, the two most to be recommended are W. Vischer, Die Sage von der Befreiung der Wald. stdtte, Leipsic, 1867, and E. L. Rochholz, Tell wnd Gessler, with a volume of documents 1250-1513, Heilbronn, 1877. Convenient summaries of the con- troversy will be found in any modern book on Swiss history, and more particu- larly in G. von Wyss, Ueber d. Gesch. d. drei Linder—Uri, Schwyz, u. Unterwalden —in den Jahren 1212-1315, Zurich, 1858; Alf Huber, Die Waldstdtte bis zur

festen Begriindung ihrer Eidgenossenschaft, mit einem Anhange tiber die geschicht- –

liche Stellung des Wilh. Tell, Innsbruck, 1861; Albert Rilliet, Les Origines. de la Confédération Suisse, Histoire et Légende, Geneva, 1869. W.

TELLER, Wityetm ABrauAM (1734-1804), was the son of the Leipsic clergyman, Romanus Teller, who edited the earlier volumes of the Englisches Bibelwerk (in 19 vols., 1749-70), an adaptation for German readers of the exe- getical works of Willet, Ainsworth, Patrick, Poole, Henry, and others. Teller was born at Leipsic on 9th January 1734, and studied philosophy and theology in the uni- versity there. Amongst the men whose influence mainly determined his theological position and line of work was J. A. Ernesti. His writings present rationalism in its course of development from Biblical supernaturalism to the borders of deistical naturalism. His first learned pro- duction was a Latin translation of Kennicott’s Dissertation on the State of the Printed Hebrew Text of the Old Testament (1756), which was followed the next year by an essay in which he expounded his own critical principles. In 1761 he was appointed pastor and professor of theology in the university of Helmstaédt. Here he pursued his ex- egetical, theological, and historical researches, the results of which

appeared in his Lehrbuch des christlichen Glaubens (1764). This work threw the entire theological world into commotion, as much by the novelty of its method as by the heterodoxy of its matter, and more by its omissions than by its positive teaching, though everywhere the author seeks to put theological doctrines in a decidedly

modern form. ‘In consequence of the storm of indignation —

the book provoked, Teller eagerly accepted an invitation from the Prussian cultus minister to the post of prebendary of KéIn on the Spree, with a seat in the Berlin consistory (1767). Here he found himself in the company of the rationalistic theologians of Prussia—Sack, Spalding, and

‘others—and became one of the leaders of the rationalistic party, and one of the chief contributors to Nicolai’s Allge- meine Deutsche Bibliothek. Teller was not long in making use of his freer position in Berlin. In 1772 appeared the most popular of his books, Worterbuch zum Neuen Testa- ment (6th ed., 1805). The object of this work is to recast the language and ideas of the New Testament and give them the form of 18th-century illuminism. Thus Heb. xiii, 8 signifies the permanence of Christ’s teaching, and, as the New Testament has no word for Christianity, “Christ” may mean sometimes His person and at others His doctrine or the Christian religion ; Col. i. 15 signifies the priority of Christ to all other Christians. By this lexicon Teller had put himself amongst the most advanced rationalists, and his opponents charged him with the design of overthrowing positive Christianity altogether. The edict of Wollner (1788), and Teller’s manly action as consistorialrath in de- fiance of it, led the Prussian Government to pass upon him the sentence of suspension for three months, with forfeiture of his stipend. He was not, however, to be moved by such means, and (1792) issued his work Die Religion der Vollkommeneren, an exposition of his theological position, in which he advocated at length the idea, subsequently often urged, of “the perfectibility of Christianity,”—that is, of the ultimate transformation of Christianity into a scheme of simple morality, with a complete rejection of all specifically Christian ideas and methods. This book represents the culminating point of German illuminism, and is separated by a long process of development from the author’s Lehrbuch.

Teller died on 9th December 1804. In addition to the above works he wrote Anleitung zur Religion tiberhaupt und zum Allgemeinen des Christenthums insbesondere (1792) ; and, besides his contributions to the Allgemeine Deutsche Bibliothek, he edited a popular and practically useful Magazin fiir Prediger (1792-1801).

See Gass, Geschichte der protestantischen Dogmatik, iv. pp. 206- 222; Tholuck, art. ‘‘ Teller,” in Herzog-Plitt’s Realencykl. ; Doring, Deutsche Kanzelredner des 18ten und 19ten Jahrh., p. 506 sq. ; Pusey, Causes of the Late Rationalistic Character of German Theology (1828), p. 150.

TELLEZ, Gasrre (c. 1570-1648), Spanish dramatist, better known as Trrso DE Mottna (his nom de plume), was born about the year 1570, and about 1613 entered the order of the Brothers of Charity at Toledo. In 1645 he became prior of the monastery of the order at Soria, where he died in 1648.

His dramatic works are said to have numbered nearly 300, but of these only a small proportion are now extant. A selection of the best of them was edited by Hartzenbusch in 1839-42 (Madrid, 12 vols.). See DRAMA, vol. vii. p. 421, and. SpanisH LITERATURE, vol. xxii. p. 359.

TELLICHERRI, a seaport town of India, in Malabar district of Madras, situated in 11° 44’ 53” N. lat. and 75° 31’ 38” E. long. It is a healthy and picturesque town, built upon a group of wooded hills running down to the sea, and is protected by a natural breakwater of rock, The town with its suburbs occupies about 5 square miles, and was at one time defended by a strong mud wall. The citadel or castle still stands to the north of the town. The East India Company established a factory here in 1683 for the pepper and cardamom trade. For two years (1780-82) the town withstood a siege by Hyder’s general Sard4r Khan, and in the subsequent wars with Mysore Tellicherri was the base of operations for the ascent of the Ghats from the west coast. In 1881 the population was 26,410.

TELLURIUM. See SELENIUM AND TELLURIUM.

TELPHERAGE. See Traction.

TEMESVAR, a royal free city and capital of the county of Temes, is the chief town of south-eastern Hungary. It lies on the navigable Béga Canal and the river Béga, in 45° 47’ N. lat. and 21° 14’ E. long. The inner town is

fortified and separated from the suburbs by a glacis, now partly converted into a park. Temesvar is the seat of the Roman Catholic bishop of Csandd and of a Greek bishop, as also of several Government departments of great im- portance, and of one of the fifteen army corps of the Austrian-Hungarian army. The majority of the inhabit- ants follow industrial and commercial pursuits, and carry on a brisk trade in grain, flour, spirits, fruits, flax, and hemp with the neighbouring districts and with Roumania and Servia, by means of the Arad-Temesvar and the Austrian-Hungarian State Railways, as well as by the Béga Canal and by road. The town possesses many charitable and educational establishments, and is a favourite place of residence on account of its neatness and cleanliness. It has been lighted by electricity since 1883. Among the build- ings specially worthy of notice are some fine old churches, a new theatre, and a synagogue in the Byzantine style. Temesvar played an important part in the Turkish wars and in that of 1848-49. The population was 37,500 in 1886.

TEMMINCK, Konrap Jacos (1778-1857), keeper of the Leyden museum of natural history, was especially distinguished as an ornithologist, and was the author of many magnificently illustrated systematic works. See ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 11 sq.

TEMPE. See THESSALY.

TEMPERA, or DisteMPER,! is a method of painting in which solid pigments are employed, mixed with a water medium 2 in which some kind of gum or gelatinous sub- stance is dissolved to prevent the colours from scaling off. Tempera is called in Italy “fresco a secco,” as distinguished from ‘fresco buono,” or true fresco, painted on freshly laid patches of stucco. The peculiarities of true fresco are described in vol. ix. p. 769 sg. The disadvantages of tempera painting are that it will not bear exposure to the weather ; the pigments merely lie on the surface and do not sink into the stucco, as is the case with true fresco pigments ; moreover, the medium

used, being soluble in water, will not stand the rain. Its advantages are that the painter can work at leisure, and can also transfer or sketch his whole design on the dry finished surface ; while in fresco work each portion of the design is hidden piece- meal as each new patch of stucco is applied (see RAPHAEL, vol, xx. p. 279). Another important point is that a far greater variety of pigments can be used in tempera paint- ing, as they are not subjected to the caustic action of wet lime. Lastly, tempera painting can be applied to any substance, such as dry plaster, wood, stone, terracotta, vellum, and paper.? Various media have been used for tempera work, such as the glutinous sap of the fig and other trees, various gums which are soluble in water, and size made by boiling down fish-bones, parchment, and animals' hoofs. In more recent times a mixture of egg and vinegar has been found to make a good medium, especially when it is desirable to apply the colours in considerable body or impasto. Painting in tempera is probably the oldest method of all, and was used in ancient Egypt very largely, as can be seen by an examination of the many existing examples on papyrus or wood and stone thinly coated with a skin of fine plaster (gesso). Other ancient examples have been found in Babylon and Nineveh, and for internal work it appears to have been much em- ployed by the Greeks. To some extent tempera was used by the Romans, though in most cases a combination of fresco and encaustic (hot wax) was employed for their mural decoration (see vol. xvii. p. 42).

aoe Sees ie ee

I For some account of tempera painting in classical and medieval times, see MURAL DECORATION, vol. xvii. pp. 39-47.

2 Hence it used to be called ‘‘ water-work”’; see Shakespeare, Hen. IV., part ii., act ii, se. 1.

3 Miniatures and illuminated letters in medieval MSS. were painted with very finely ground colours mixed with a tempera medium.

In medizval times, from the 6th century in the Byzantium of Justinian down to the 14th century, most painting, whether on walls or panels, was executed

in tempera, though in many cases it appears to have been the custom to put in the coloured ground in true fresco, and, when that was dry, paint on it the complete picture with a tempera medium. This was the method used in the Byzan- tine wall-paintings in the churches of Thessalonica, Mount Athos, and elsewhere. A similar practice existed in Eng- land and other northern countries,! as in the very complete series of paintings on the walls and vault of the chancel of Kempley church, Gloucestershire, dating from about 1100. Most commonly, however, in England as in France and Germany the whole painting was done in tempera, the finished surface of the plaster being first covered with a wash of old slaked lime or whitening. As a rule every inch of stone, whether carved, moulded, or plain, in the cathedrals and other churches of medizeval France, Eng- land, and other countries was covered with this thin coating of white, and then elaborately decorated with tempera painting. In those rare cases where want of money pre- vented the application of colour the stone-work of the in- terior received the coat of white, so that at any future time the colouring might be added, and also because the feeling of the Middle Ages evidently was that bare stone inside a building had an unfinished and uncomfortable look,? and was quite as unsuitable in a richly decorated and furnished cathedral as it would now be considered in a lady's drawing-room. The additional splendour gained by the use of minute patterns stamped in gesso, thinly laid over the surface of the stone, is described in MURAL DECORATION, vol. xvii. p. 47; see also fig. 17.

Tempera in Italy—For panel and canvas paintings tempera continued in use till nearly the end of the 15th century, when the Flemish method of oil painting gradu- ally took its place. In many cases with panel pictures of the latter part of the 15th century it is now difficult, if not impossible, to be sure whether they were painted in tempera or in oil, either because both methods were com- bined—the picture being begun in tempera and finished with oil glazings—or because an oil varnish has been laid over the tempera pictures, and so the pigments have ab- sorbed oil out of the varnish and have thus practically become associated with an oil medium. In some cases slight peculiarities of brush-work bear witness to one medium or the other; but these appearances are often de- ceptive, and any real certainty on the point is unattain- able. The round panel of the Madonna and St Joseph by Michelangelo may be mentioned as an example of these doubtful cases.

In the main the earlier tempera easel pictures were painted on wood,—pear, poplar, or walnut being commonly used ; but a few painters preferred in some cases to use canvas.? The National Gallery of London possesses a very beautiful example of this,—the Entombment, attributed to Van der Weyden (see ScHoors or PaintTING, vol. xxi. p. 438, fig. 29), which is most delicately and yet powerfully painted on linen without any priming. Usually both panels and canvas were prepared for tempera by being covered with a fine priming or coating of gesso (plaster). Some later painters used marble dust; others unfortu- nately used white lead, which has since blackened through the absorption of gases from the air.

1 A fine example of 14th-century tempera painting in Sweden is illustrated in vol. xvii. plate I.

- Nothing could be more opposed to the spirit of the Middle Ages than the modern rage for cutting off plaster and scraping old stone- work, under a mistaken notion of zsthetic honesty.

3 In order to ensure an even surface some painters prepared their

panels by covering them with linen or vellum, over which the gesso priming was laid.

THEM—TEM

In the case of wall paintings, both tempera and fresco 4 were used together, —the proportion of fresco work being gradually increased. In the 13th and most of the 14th century little more than the groundwork of the picture was painted in fresco, though this varied according to the custom of each painter. In the 15th century increased technical skill and rapidity of execution allowed much more complete work to be done in fresco, till at last nothing but a few finishing touches were done in tempera. For this, exceptional certainty of touch and speed of execution were required, and some weaker painters never attained to a very complete mastery over the fresco process. The brilliant series of wall paintings by Pinturicchio in the cathedral library at Siena contain a very large proportion of tempera work, in spite of which they are still in a wonder- ful state of preservation. Raphael’s rapid advance in the mastery of fresco-work is clearly shown in

his paintings in the Vatican stanze, each one of which is carried to a further stage in true fresco than the preceding. Thus the earli- est painting of the series (the Disputa) is very largely executed in tempera, while some of the later ones are nearly completed in fresco, and show the most perfect skill in that difficult process. Michelangelo was specially re- markable for his great power in fresco, and carried his Sistine paintings to a very advanced stage before touching them with tempera. Sad to say, what tempera finishing touches he did apply have mostly been scraped off during the many cleanings and repairs that these works have undergone ; and the same misfortune has happened toa large number of other important pictures. Tempera was specially used for paintings on canvas which were in- tended to be hung like tapestry, as, for example, the fine 15th-century series at Rheims and Mantegna's Triumph of Julius Cesar at Hampton Court.5 It was also much used for large cartoons, such as Raphael's tapestry designs, now in the South Kensington Museum. After the first half of the 16th century the increasing use of oil painting, assisted by the artistic decadence of the age, caused the gradual disuse of both fresco and tempera.

A third process, often used during the earlier Middle Ages, was a sort of compromise between tempera and fresco, A finished stucco surface was prepared as for ordinary tempera, but before each day's painting the plaster was soaked with water, so that the pigments, laid on to the wet plaster, to some extent sank below the surface, though without penetrating as deeply as they would on newly mixed stucco. (J. H. M.)

TEMPERANCE SOCIETIES.® The modern temper- ance movement may be said to date from the publication at Philadelphia, in 1785, of Dr Benjamin Rush's essay on "The Effects of Ardent Spirits on the Human Body and Mind," which was republished in the Gentleman's Magazine of 1786, and had a wide circulation. The distinction which he draws between distilled and fermented liquors has, however, no foundation in fact, the difference being one of degree and not of kind. In 1808 Dr Lyman Beecher and Dr B. J. Clark, both readers of Rush, took action, and the result of the work of the latter was the formation of what is believed to be the first modern temperance society. It was formed in Greenfield, Saratoga county, New York, as an anti-spirits association, and still remains a teetotal society. This example was soon followed elsewhere, the early societies all

restricting their scope to advocacy of moderation in the use of distilled liquors, and placing no inhibition upon fermented drinks. One society had a

4 “Fresco” here means “ fresco buono,” or true fresco.

5 See vol. xvii. p. 38.

6 The manner and degree in which the law has in recent years regulated the sale of intoxicants is described under Liquor Laws (vol. xiv. p. 688).

byelaw requiring any member who became intoxicated to treat all the other members. The work made further progress when the American Temperance Society was founded in 1826. Three years later Prof. John Edgar of Belfast called attention to the need for similar work in Ireland; and John Dunlop nearly at the same time organized a temperance society in Glasgow. In 1830 the first English temperance society was founded at Brad- ford. The habitual use of fermented liquors in England was a prolific source of drunkenness, and the evil was greatly increased by the passing of the Beer Act in October 1830. Hence some of the reformers began to abstain from all forms of alcohol. This new departure found its leader in Joseph Livesey of Preston, a man of singular zeal and benevolence, who with six others signed a pledge of total abstinence on lst September 1832. The reformers were soon divided over the fierce “battle of the pledges.” Some were willing to pledge themselves to abstain, but not to refrain from providing alcoholic drink for their visitors. After the formation of the distinctive total abstinence organizations, the moderation societies died of inanition. It should be mentioned here that the Society of Bible Christians, founded at Salford in 1809, adopted the rule of abstinence from flesh meat and intoxicants, and that a number of the ‘‘radical reformers” were ab- stainers from a desire to diminish the public revenue, which they regarded as devoted to wrong purposes by the Government of the day. In Ireland Father Theobald Mathew became president of the Total Abstinence Society in Cork in 1838, and the “pledge” was taken from his hands by crowds; before he died in 1856 between three and four million persons are said to have received it from him in the course of his journeys. J. S. Buckingham secured the appointment of a committee of the House of Commons, which

sat in June 1834, to inquire into drunken- ness. The adjective “teetotal” was first used in Septem- ber 1833 by Richard Turner, a reformed drunkard, to express the thoroughgoing principle of total abstinence, but whether he coined the word, or whether it was merely a stuttering pronunciation of “total,” or an old dialect word has been disputed; Prof. Skeat (Ztym. Dict., s.v. ‘“Teetotal”) believes it is an emphasized form of “total,” formed on the principle of reduplication. The early teetotallers were earnest missionaries. In consequence of their efforts societies and leagues multiplied, periodicals were established, and, notwithstanding many failures and apparent retrogressions, the temperance movement pro- gressed. One of the chief forms of thrift amongst the artisan class was that of the friendly society, the meetings of which were usually held at the public-house, large sums being spent (sometimes by rule) on liquor. In 1835 the Independent Order of Rechabites was formed at Sal- ford, and has since had a prosperous career as a working- class insurance company on temperance principles. The Sons of Temperance and the Total Abstinent Sons of the Phoenix are similar organizations. The sickness and death-rate among members of these bodies is much below that of the ordinary friendly societies. The beneficial effect of abstinence upon health and longevity is shown by the experience of the United Kingdom Temperance Provident Institution, the example of which has led several large insurance companies to add a special section for teetotallers. The statistics of these offices show that the mortality of the ordinary insured is considerably heavier than that of the abstainers. A vehement con- troversy arose at an early period as to the use of sacra- mental Wine, and the nature of the wines mentioned in Scripture was discussed in innumerable pamphlets. The result has been that in a number of cases the wine now used for sacramental purposes is understood to be unfer-

mented. The cosmopolitan character of the movement was shown by the meeting of the World’s Temperance Convention at London in 1846. The Scotch United Presbyterian Abstinence Society, originated in 1845, was one of the first of the church societies ; and there are now few, if any, religious denominations either in England or America in which such organizations are wholly wanting, The Church of England Temperance Society has two

sections, one pledged to the temperate use of intoxicants and the other to total abstinence. This method of organ- izing has found imitators. The enactment of the Maine Liquor Law in America in 1851 (see vol. xv. p. 299) led to the formation, in 1853, of the United Kingdom Alliance, which has for its object the suppression of the liquor traffic by legislation, and with a view to this suggests that a power of local veto should be placed in the hands of the rate- payers. This proposal took parliamentary form in the Permissive Bill of Sir Wilfrid Lawson, which was ulti- mately withdrawn and replaced by a “local option” re- solution, which has been thrice affirmed by the House of Commons. Temperance hotels, temperance cafés, British workmen public-houses, cocoa houses, coffee palaces, tee- total clubs, have arisen in many places as social aids of the temperance movement. ;

In 1868 the Good Templar order was introduced into England from the United States, where it had come into existence several years earlier. In England it made rapid progress, until it was seriously checked by a dispute arising out of the Negro question; but the two sections have again reunited (1887). Good Templary is the free- masonry of temperance, with ritual, passwords, grips, é&c., closely modelled on those of the old secret societies. It has had a remarkable extension in Great Britain, the United States, the British colonies, and in Scandinavia, its aggregate membership now reaching over 623,000. One of its results has been the foundation of a temperance orphanage at Sunbury-on-Thames. Side by side with the general movement there has been a special movement against the use of alcohol as medicine, and the tendency of medical teaching now favours at least restriction of its use as a therapeutic agent. The London Temperance Hospital for the non-alcoholic treatment of disease was opened in October 1873. The importance of training the young was early recognized by the leaders of temperance reformation, and the labours of Dr R. B. Grindrod of Manchester and Mrs Carlile of Dublin led to the forma- tion of bands of hope, which are now found in connexion with many places of worship, The juvenile temples of the Good Templar order also work in the same direction. The Woman’s Christian Temperance Union, founded in the United States in 1874, is one of the latest forms of tem- perance activity. A branch was organized in Great Britain in 1876; and in 1883 the World’s Women’s Temperance Union came into existence.

The temperance movement has now branched out into a multi- tude of organizations in the United Kingdom, of which the Rail- way Temperance Union, the post-office temperance societies, and associations connected with the army and navy are types. The organizations of a more general character are the United Kingdom Alliance, which is very active in the dissemination of teetotal doctrines generally, the National Temperance League, the Scottish Temperance League, the British Temperance League, the Scottish Permissive Bill-Association, the Irish Temperance League, and the Trish Association for the Prevention of Intemperance. There are also large district and county societies. Next to these come the secret orders, of which the Rechabites, Sons of Temperance, Sons of the Pheenix are large benefit societies. The Independent Order of Good Templars is non-beneficiary, and seeks in its “lodges” to provide social attractions, and at the same time to train the mem- bers in temperance work; it is probably the largest voluntary association in the world. There are societies in connexion with the various religious bodies, of which the Church of England

Temperance Society, the Catholic League of the Cross, the Baptist Total Abstinence Society, are prominent instances.

Origin.

160

The oldest organization in America is the Sons of Temperance (1842), now numbering about 80,000 members. The Independent Order of Good Templars (1851) is the largest, its membership approaching 100,000. Both these, as also the Royal Templars of Temperance (1877) and the Templars of Honour and Temperance (1845), are mutual benefit societies. The Woman’s Christian Temperance Union, the National Temperance Society and Pub- lication House (New York), and the National Prohibition Party are active in educational work. The Woman’s Christian Temper- ance Union is the outgrowth of “the Women’s Crusade” (1872), a remarkable uprising among the women of Ohio and Pennsylvania against the liquor traffic. The organization was effected in 1874, and has since spread throughout the United States, its member- ship now (1887) numbering 207,000. Its influence has been widely felt in legislatures and_in elections in which prohibitory laws have been voted upon. With the exception of the Church

Temperance Society of the Protestant Episcopal Church, which has the ‘double basis,” all the temperance societies of the United States are based on the doctrine of total abstinence ; and, with the additional exception of the Father Mathew Total Abstinence Societies of the Roman Catholic Church, they all advocate the principle of prohibition. Amendments embodying this idea have been inserted in the State constitutions (by popular vote) of Maine, Kansas, and Rhode Island. In Vermont and Iowa the legislature has enacted statutory prohibition, which is still in force. In other States local prohibition prevails to a large extent, chiefly in Georgia, Mississippi, Massachusetts, Tennessee, Kentucky, and

Arkansas.

Bibliography.—The literature of the subject is very extensive and may most conveniently be classed under the following heads. (1) History: Rel Winskill, History of the Temperance Reformation; One Hundred Years of Tem- nerance (New York, 1886); Dorchester, Liquor Problem in all Ages (New

ork); Willard, Woman and Temperance (Hartford) ; Shaw, Great Temperance Reforms (Toronto). (2) THzoLoay: Dawson Burns and F. R. Lees, Temperance Bible Commentary; J. Smith, The Church and the Temperance Reformation ; Samson, Divine Law as to Wines (Philadelphia). (3) GENERAL: A. Gustafson, The Foundation of Death; R. B. Grindrod, Our Nation’s Vice; D. Burns, Bases of the Temperance Reformation ; Grindrod, Bacchus; B. Parsons, Anti-Bacchus ; Powell, Bacchus Dethroned ; Baker, The Curse of Britain ; J. Dunlop, Philosophy of Drinking Usages (1839); The Political Prohibitionist (New York, 1887); Pit- man, Alcohol and the State (New York). (4) PotiticaL Economy: F. R. Lees, Argument for the Prohibition of the Liquor Trafic; W. Hoyle, Our National Resources; Hargreaves, Our Wasted Resources (New York). (5) Sciznce: J. Livesey, The Malt Liquor Lecture; P. Burne, Teetotaller’s Companion; W. 1B} Carpenter, Physiology of Temperance and Total Abstinence; A. A. Reade, Study and Stimulants; Miller, Alcohol, its Place and Power; Id., Nephalism; B. W. Richardson, Cantor Lectures on Alcohol; Hargreaves, Alcohol and Science (New York). (6) Fiction : novels and tales embodying teetotal principles have been written by Mrs Henry Wood, Mrs H. B. Stowe, Mrs.

C. L. Balfour, Mr John Habberton, Mr Edward Jenkins, Mrs S. C. Hall, Mrs Ellis, and many others. (7) Periopicats: the temperance periodicals issued in Great Britain now number about fifty.

TEMPLARS, Knicuts. Perhaps the most renowned of the three great military orders founded in the 12th century for the defence of the Latin kingdom of Jerusalem is that of the Knights Templars (pauperes commilatones Christi tem- plique Salomonict), though abolished long before its rivals. It differed from the Hospitallers and the Teutonic Knights in having been a military order from its very origin, inas- much as its earliest members banded themselves together for the express purpose of giving armed protection to the numerous pilgrims who, after the first crusade, flocked to Jerusalem and the other sacred sites in the Holy Land. Walter Map has preserved the legendary story of their first achievements, from which it would appear that their earliest efforts were confined to the immediate neighbourhood of Jerusalem; and the memory of their original aim may perhaps be traced from fifty to seventy years later, when they conducted Henry of Saxony from their own quarters on Mount Moriah to the banks of Jordan, or when on the fall of the Holy City (1187) they protected the vanguard of the Christians on its way from Jerusalem to Tripoli. The three orders were distinguished from each other by their garb. The Hospitallers wore black mantles with white crosses, the Templars white mantles with a red cross, the Teutonic Knights white mantles with a black cross.+

The Templars almost from their foundation had their quarters in the palace of the Latin kings, which had been the mosque of Mount Moriah. This palace was also known as Solomon’s temple, and it was from this templum Salo- monis that the Templars took their name.

About the year 1118 a Burgundian knight, Hugh de

1 William of Tyre, xii.c. 7, viii. 3, xviii. 3-6; James de Vitry, Hist. Hieros., 60-67.

before assuming the crown of Jerusalem in 1131.

Paganis, bound himself and eight comrades by a vow to the patriarch of Jerusalem to guard the public roads, to live as regular canons, and to fight for the King of Heaven in chastity, obedience, and self-denial. Baldwin II. granted them quarters on Mount Moriah and recommended their cause to St Bernard. Under his patronage the papal legate, Matthew, bishop of St Albano, presided at the council of Troyes in January 1128 for the purpose of drawing up or confirming the statutes of the new order. The seventy-two

statutes then drawn up met with the approval of Pope

Honorius II. and the patriarch of Jerusalem, and became the groundwork of du Temple." Long before St Bernard's death (1153) the new order was established in almost every kingdom of Latin Christendom. Henry I. granted them lands in Normandy. They seem to have been settled in Castile by 1129, in Rochelle by 1131, in Languedoc by 1136, at Rome by 1138, in Brittany by 1141, and_in Germany at perhaps a still earlier date. Alphonso I. of Aragon and Navarre, if we may trust the Spanish historians, be-queathed them the third of his kingdom (Mariana, x. c. 9). Raymond Berengar, count of Barcelona, and Alphonso's successor in Aragon, whose father had been admitted to the order, granted them the strong castle of Moncon (1143), and established a new chivalry in imitation of theirs. Louis VII. in the latter years of his reign gave them a piece of marsh land outside Paris, which in later times became known as the Temple, and was the headquarters of the order in Europe. Stephen of England granted them the manors of Cressing and Witham in Essex, and his wife Matilda that of Cowley, near Oxford. Eugenius III, Louis VIL., and 130 brethren were present at the Paris chapter (1147) when Bernard de Balliol granted the order 15 librates of land near Hitchin ; and the list of English benefactors under Stephen and Henry II. includes the noble names of Ferrers, Harcourt, Hastings, Lacy, Clare,

Vere, and Mowbray.

After the council of Troyes Hugh de Paganis came to England and induced a number of English knights to follow him to the Holy Land. Amongst these was Fulk, count of Anjou, who would thus seem to have been a Templar Hugh de Paganis died about the year 1136 and was succeeded by Robert de Craon, who is said to have been Anselm's nephew. Everard de

Barris, the third master, was con- spicuous in the second crusade. In the disastrous march from Laodicea to Attalia his troops alone kept up even the show of discipline ; and their success prompted Louis VIL. to regulate his whole army after the model of the Templar knights. In the French king's distress for money the Templars lent him large sums, ranging from 2000 silver marks to 30,000 solidi. When Conrad III. of Germany reached Jerusalem he was entertained at their palace (Haster 1148); and in the summer of the same year they took part in the unsuccessful siege of Damascus. The failure of this expedition was ascribed by a contemporary writer to their treachery,—a charge to which Conrad would not assent, This is the first note of the accusations which from this time were of constant recurrence.*

Henceforward for 140 years the history of the Templars is the history of the Crusapes (¢.v.). In 1149 the Templars were appointed to guard the fortress of Gaza, the last Christian stronghold on the way towards Kgypt. Four years later the new master, Bernard de Tremelal, and forty of his followers, bursting into Ascalon, were surrounded by the Saracens and cut off to a single man. William of Tyre has preserved the scandal of the day when he hints that they met a merited fate in their eager- ness to possess themselves of the city treasure. Next year

2 Hist. Pontific., ap. Pertz, xx. 535-536.

the later and more elaborate " Régle Spread

of the order,

Early grand- masters,

an

s h Nur in.

din,

Te @ PiLaARS

the rumour went abroad that they had sold a noble half- converted Egyptian prince, who had fallen into their hands, to chains and certain death for 60,000 aurei. In 1166 Amalric, the Latin king of Jerusalem, hanged twelve Templars on a charge of betraying a fortress beyond the Jordan to an emir of Nur al-Din of Damascus. The military power of Nur al-Din (1145-1173) was a standing menace to the Christian settlements in the East. Edessa had fallen to the prowess of his father (1144-45); Damas- cus was conquered by the son (1153), who four years earlier had carried his depredations almost to the walls of Antioch, and in 1157 laid siege to the Christian town of Paneas near the sources of the Jordan. In the disastrous fight that followed for the safety of the fortress of the Hospitallers, Bertrand de Blanquefort, the master of the Templars, and Odo de St Amand, one of his successors, were taken prisoners. Bertrand was released later when Manuel was preparing to march against Nur al-Din. The Templars do not seem to have opposed Amalric's early expeditions against Egypt. It was Geoffrey Fulcher, the Templar correspondent of Louis VII., who brought back (1167) to Jerusalem the glowing accounts of the splendour of the caliph's court at Cairo with which Gibbon has en- livened his great work. Nor was the order less active at the northern limits of the Latin kingdom. Two English Templars, Gilbert de Lacy and Robert Mansel, ''qui Galen- sibus preerat," starting from Antioch, surprised Nur al- Din in the neighbourhood of Tripoli and put him bare- footed to flight. But jealousy or honour led the Templars to oppose Amalric's Egyptian expedition of 1168; and the wisdom of their advice became apparent when the renewed discord on the Nile led to the conquest of Egypt by Asad al-Din Shirkuith, and thus indirectly to the accession of Saladin, in 1169. In 1170 they beat Saladin back from their frontier fortress of Gaza; and seven years later they shared in Baldwin IV.'s great victory at Ascalon. Meanwhile Saladin had possessed himself of Emesa and Damascus (1174-75), and, as he was already lord of Egypt, his power hemmed in the Latin kingdom on every side. In July 1173 Amalric was succeeded by his son Baldwin IV., a boy of twelve. Raymond III., count of Tripoli, a

"man suspected of being in league with the Saracens, was

appointed regent, although in 1176 the masters of the Templars and the Hospitallers united in offering this office to the newly arrived Philip of

Flanders. The construction of the Templar fortress at Jacob's ford on the upper Jordan led to a fresh Saracen invasion and the disastrous battle of Paneas (1179), from which the young king and the Holy Cross escaped with difficulty, while Odo de St Amand, the grand-master, was carried away captive and never returned.

During Odo's mastership the Old Man of the Mountains sent to Amalric offering to accept the Christian faith if released from the tribute he had paid to the Templars since (according to the reckoning of M. Defrémery) somewhere about 1149. The Templars murdered the envoys on their return (c. 1172). Amalric demanded that the offenders should be given up for justice. Odo refused to yield the chief culprit, though he was well known, and invoked the protection of the pope. Amalric had to vindicate his right by force of arms at Sidon, and died while prepar- ing to take stronger measures. The connexion between the Templars and the Old Man was still vital eighty years later when the two grand-masters rebuked the insolence of the Assassin envoys in the presence of Louis IX. Ododе St Amand was succeeded by Arnold de Torroge, who died at Verona on his way to implore European succour for the Holy Land. The power of Saladin was now (1184) increasing daily ; Baldwin IV. was a leper, and his realm was a prey to rival factions. There were two claimants

for the guardianship of the state,—Raymond III. of Tripoli and Guy de Lusignan, who in 1180 had married Sibylla, sister of the young king. Baldwin inclined to the former,~~against the patriarch and Arnold de Torroge. There is something Homeric in the story of the fall of the Latin kingdom as related by the historians of the next century. A French knight, Gerard de Riderfort or Bide~~ ford, coming to the East in quest of fortune, attached himself to the service of Raymond of Tripoli, looking for the hand of some wealthy widow in reward. But on his claiming the hand of the lady of Botron he was met with arefusal, Angered at this, Gerard enrolled himself among the Templars, biding his time for revenge, and was elected grand-master on the death of Arnold. Baldwin IV. died (1185), leaving the throne to his young nephew Baldwin V., the son of Sibylla, under the guardianship of Raymond, whose office was not of long duration, as the little king died in

September 1186. This was Gerard's opportunity. The Templars carried the body of their dead :overeign to Jerusalem for burial; and then, unknown to the barons of the realm, Gerard and the patriarch crowned Sibylla and her husband Guy. The coronation of Guy was the triumph of Reginald of Chatillon, once prince of Antioch, and Saladin's deadliest foe. It was at the same time the overthrow of Raymond's ambition; and both Latin and Arabic writers are agreed that the Christian count and the Mohammedan sultan now entered into an alliance. To break this friendship and so save the kingdom, the two grand-masters were sent north to make terms with Raymond. But the rash valour of the Templars provoked a hopeless contest with 7000 Saracens. The grand-master of the Hospitallers was slain ; but Gerard made his escape with three knights to Nazareth (lst May 1187). In this emergency Raymond became reconciled with Guy; and Gerard placed the temple treasures of Henry II. at his king's disposal. Once more it was the Templars' rashness that led to the disastrous battle of Hittin (4th July). Gerard and the king fell into the hands of Saladin, but were released about a year later; Raymond of Tripoli made his escape through treachery or fortune; and 230 Templars fell in or after the battle, for the fight was scarcely over before Saladin ordered all the Templars and Hospitallers to be murdered in cold blood. One after another the Christian fortresses of Palestine fell into the hands of Saladin. Jerusalem surrendered on 2d-3d Octo- ber 1187, and the treasures of the temple coffers were used to purchase the redemption of the poorer Christians, part of whom the Templar warriors guarded on their sad march from the Holy City to Tripoli. Part of their wealth was expended by Conrad of Montferrat in the

Fall of Latin

kingdom.

Fall of Jern- salem.

defence of Tyre; but, when this prince refused to admit |

Guy to his city, both the Templars and the Hospitallers from the neighbouring parts flocked to the banner of their released king and accompanied him to the siege of Acre (22d August 1189). In his company they bore their part in the two years' siege and the terrible famine of 1190-

91; and their grand-master died in the great battle of 4th October 1189, refusing to survive the slaughter of his brethren. On the fall of Acre Philip Augustus established himself in the palace of the Templars, who are, however, stated to have sympathized with Richard. This king sold them the island of Cyprus for 100,000 besants ; but, unable to pay the purchase money, they transferred the debt and the principality to Guy of Lusignan. The English king consulted them before deciding on any great military move- ment ; and in June 1192 they advocated the bold plan of an advance on Egypt rather than on Jerusalem. In the disputes for the Latin kingdom of the East the Templars seem to have supported Guy, and, like Richard, were credited with having had a hand in the murder of Conrad XXIII. — 21

Siege of Acre.

John de Brienne.

Fifth crusade.

Seventh crusade.

of Montferrat (April 1192). It was in the disguise of a Templar and in a Templar galley that Richard left the Holy Land. When Acre was recovered, the Templars, like the Hospitallers, received their own quarters in the town, which from this time became the centre of the order. On the death of Henry of Champagne (1197) they vetoed the election of Raoul de Tabarie; after the death of his successor Amalric they refused to renew the truce with Saladin’s brother, Saif al-Din, and led an expedition against the Saracens before the arrival of the new king, John de Brienne, at whose coronation in 1210 William de Chartres, the grand-master, was present. Seven years later, with the aid of Walter de Avennis and of the Teutonic Knights, they commenced the building of their fortress of Castle Pilgrim, near Acre, on a rocky promontory washed by the Mediterranean on every side except the east. This wonderful structure, whose ruins are still to be seen, was fortified with a strong wall, founded on the substructure of a yet more extensive one running from sea to sea, and was flanked by lofty towers of huge squared stones. Within was a spring of pure water, besides fishponds, salt-mines,

woods, pastures, orchards, and all things fitted to furnish an abode in which the Templars might await the day of their restoration to Jerusalem.

It was from this castle that in May 1218 the fifth crusade started for the expedition against Egypt. The Templars were the heroes of the siege of Damietta, at which William de Chartres was slain. ‘First to attack and last to retreat,” they saved the Christian army from annihilation on 29th August 1219; and when the city surrendered (5th November) the only one of its twenty-eight towers that had begun to give way had been shaken by their engines. On the other hand, it was largely owing to their objections that John de Brienne refused the sultan’s offer to restore Jerusalem and Palestine.

From the very first the Templars seem to have been opposed to Frederick II., and when he landed at Acre (7th September 1228) they refused to march under the banners of an excommunicated man, and would only ac- company his host from Acre to Joppa in a separate body. They were accused of notifying Frederick’s intended _pil- grimage to the Jordan to the sultan, and they were certainly opposed to Frederick’s ten years’ peace with Al-Kamil, the sultan of Egypt, and refused to be present at his coronation in Jerusalem. Frederick was not slow to avenge himself: he left Jerusalem abruptly, publicly insulted the grand-master, demanded the surrender of their fortresses, and even laid siege to Castle Pilgrim. He left Acre on 3d May 1229, and on landing in Apulia gave orders to seize the estates of the order and chase all its members from the land.

Long before the expiration of Frederick’s peace Europe was preparing for a fresh crusade against the now divided realm of the Ayyubids. Theobald of Navarre and his crusaders reached Palestine about August 1239. The Templars shared in the great defeat near Jaffa, an engage- ment which their temerity had done much to provoke (13th November 1239). If the king ever accepted the overtures of Sdlih of Damascus, he was supporting the policy of Hermann of Perigord, the grand-master, who towards the summer of 1244 wrote a triumphant letter to England, telling how he had engaged this sultan and Nasir of Kerak to make an alliance against the sultan of Egypt and restore the whole of Palestine from the Jordan to the sea. Theobald, however, before leaving the Holy Land (27th September 1240), signed a ten

years' truce with Salih of Egypt. The Hospitallers seem to have been won over to his view, and when Richard of Cornwall arrived (11th October) he had to decide between the two rival orders and their opposing policies. After some hesi-

tation he concluded a treaty with the sultan of Egypt, much to the annoyance of the Templars, who openly mocked his efforts. On his departure the three orders came to open discord: the Templars laid siege to the Hospitallers in Acre and drove out the Teutonic Knights "in contumeliam imperatoris." They were successful on all sides. The negotiations with Damascus and Kerak were reopened, and in 1244 Hermann of Perigord wrote to the princes of Europe that after a "silence of fifty-six years the divine mysteries would once more be celebrated in the Holy City."

It was in this moment of danger that the sultan of Khari.

Babylon called in the barbarous Kharizmians, whom the mian in. Mongol invasions had driven from their native lands, Yson. These savages, entering from the north, flowed like a tide past the newly built and impregnable Templar fortress of Safed, swept down on Jerusalem, and annihilated the Christian army near Gaza on St Luke's day (18th October) 1244. From this blow the Latin kingdom of the East never recovered ; 600 knights took part in the battle; the whole army of the Templars, 300 in number, was present, but only 18 survived, and of 200 Hospitallers only 16. The masters of both orders were slain or taken prisoners. Despite the admirable valour of the Templars, their policy had proved the ruin of the land. Jerusalem was lost to Christendom for ever; and, though the Kharizmians melted away in the course of the next three years, they left the country so weak that all the acquisitions of Theobald and Richard fell an easy prey to the sultan of Babylon.

Recognizing the fact that the true way to Jerusalem Louis lay through Egypt, Louis IX. led his host to the banks 1X.'s of the Nile, being accompanied by the Templars. Their crusade, master, William de Sonnac, attempted in vain to restrain the rash advance of the count of Artois at the battle of Manstra (8th February 1250), which only three Templars survived. St Louis, when captured a few weeks later, \ owed his speedy release to the

generosity with which the order advanced his ransom-money. Shortly after his de- | parture from Acre (April 1254) they consented to an eleven years' truce with the sultans of Egypt and Damascus.

A new enemy was now threatening Mohammedan and Christian alike. For a time the Mongol advance may ¥ have been welcomed by the Christian cities, as one after . another the Mohammedan principalities of the north fell before the new invaders. But this new danger stimulated the energies of Egypt, which under the Mameluke Bey- Suc. bars (see vol. vii. p. 755) encroached year after year on the cesses of scanty remains of the Latin kingdom. The great Frankish — lords, fearing that all was lost, made haste to sell their lands to the Templars and Hospitallers before quitting Palestine for ever. In 1260 the former purchased Sidon and Beaufort ; next year the Hospitallers purchased Arsuf.

In 1267, by a skilful adaptation of the banners of both orders, Beybars nearly surprised Antioch. The Templar fortress of Safed surrendered with its garrison of 600 knights, all of whom preferred death to apostasy (June 1266). Beaufort fell in April 1268, Antioch six weeks

later ; and, though the two orders still made occasional brilliant dashes from their Acre stronghold, such as that

to Ascalon in 1264 and that with Prince Edward of Eng- ‘ land to destroy Kaktin in 1271, they became so enfeebled as to welcome the treaty which secured them the plain of Acre and a free road to Nazareth as the result of the English crusade of 1272.

But, though weak against external foes, the Templars were strong enough for internal warfare. In 1277 they espoused the quarrel of the bishop of Tripoli, formerly a member of the order, against his nephew Bohemond, prince of Antioch and Tripoli, and commenced a war which lasted three years. In 1276 their conduct drove Hugh IIL, king

of Cyprus and Jerusalem, from Acre to Tyre. In the ensuing year, when Mary of Antioch had sold her claim to the crown to Charles of Anjou, they welcomed this prince's lieutenant to Acre and succeeded for the moment in forcing the knights of that city to do homage to the new king. Thirteen years

later (26th April 1290) Tri- poli fell, and next year Acre, after a siege of six weeks, at the close of which (16th May) William de Beaujeu, the grand-master, was slain. The few surviving Templars jonment elected a new master, and, forcing their way to the sea-

p

Pales- shore, sailed for Cyprus, which now became the head-

quarters of the order. A futile attempt against Alexandria in 1300 and an unsuccessful effort to form a new settlement at Tortosa about the same time (1300-2) are the closing acts of their long career in the western parts of Asia.

For more than a hundred years the Templars had been one of the wealthiest and most influential factors in Euro- pean politics. If we confine our attention to the East, we realize but a small part of their enormous power. Two Templars were appointed guardians of the disputed castles on the betrothal of Prince Henry of England and the French princess in 1161. Other Templars were almoners of Henry III. of England and of Philip IV. of France. One grand-master was godfather to a daughter of Louis IX. ; another, despite the prohibition of the order, is said to have been godfather to a child of Philip IV. They are reported to have reckoned a pope (Innocent III.) among their members and to have refused admission to a king and his nephew (Philip IV.). They were summoned to the great councils of the church, such as the Lateran of 1215 and the Lyons council of 1274. Frederick II.'s per- secution of their order was one of the main causes of his excommunication in 1239; and his last will enjoined the restoration of their estates. Their property was scattered over every country of Christendom, from Denmark to Spain, from Ireland to Cyprus. Before the middle of the 13th century Matthew Paris reckons their manors at 9000, Alberic of Trois-Fontaines at 7050, whereas the rival order of St John had barely half the latter number. Some fifty years earlier their income from Armenia alone was 20,000 besants. Both in Paris and in London their houses were used as strongholds for the royal treasure. In the London temple Hubert de Burgh and the Poitevin favourites of Henry III. stored their wealth; and the same building was used as a bank into which the debtors of the foreign usurers paid their dues. From the English Templars Henry III. borrowed the

purchase money of Oléron in 1235, from the French Templars Philip IV. exacted the dowry of his daughter Isabella on her marriage with Edward II. To Louis IX. they lent a great part of his ransom, and to Edward I. of England no less than 25,000 livres Tour- nois, of which they remitted four-fifths. James de Molai, the last grand-master, came to France in 1306 with 150,000 gold florins and ten horse-loads of silver. In the Spanish peninsula they occupied a peculiar position, and more than one king of Aragon is said to have been brought up under their discipline.

Such were the power and wealth of the Templars at the time when Philip IV. of France accused them of heresy and worse offences, had them arrested (13th October 1307), and forced them to confess by tortures of the most ex-cruciating kinds. Five years later (26th May 1312) the order was suppressed by decree of the council of Vienne and its goods transferred to the hospital of St John.

The order consisted of (1) knights, (2) chaplains, and (3) men-at- arms (armigert, clientes, and servientes). The knights were either bound for life or for a fixed period, and were the only members entitled to wear the white mantle. Married brethren were ad- mitted ; but no woman might enter the order. Each knight might

kcep three horses and one man-at-arms, who, like his master, might be bound for life or only for a time. Like Augustinian canons,

:

Jonstitu- ‘ion,

FES PLARS

163

they were to attend daily services ; but the soldier outwearied with his nightly duties might on certain conditions absent himself from matins with the master’s consent. Two regular meals were allowed for each day*; but to these might be added, at the master’s discre- tion, a light collation towards sunset. Meat might be eaten thrice a week ; and on other days there was to

be a choice of vegetable fare so as to suit the tenderest stomach. Brethren were to eat by couples, each keeping an eye on his fellow to see that he did not practise an unduc austerity. Wine was served at evcry mcal, and at those times silence was strictly enjoined that the words of Holy Writ might be heard with the closest attention. Special care was to be taken of aged and ailing members. Every brother owed the most absolute obedience to the master of the order, and was to go wherever his superior bade him without delay, “as if commanded by God.” All undue display in arms or harness was forbidden. Parti-coloured garments were forbidden; black or dusky- brown (burellus) was to be worn by all except the knights. All garments were to be made of wool; but from Easter to All Souls a linen shirt might be substituted for onc of wool. The hair was to be worn short, and a rough beard became one of the distinguishing marks of the order. Hunting and hawking were unlawful ; and the very allusion to the follies or secular achievements of earlier life was forbidden. A lion, however, being the type of the evil one, was legitimate prey. Strict watch was kept on the incomings and out- goings of every brother, except when he went out by night to visit the Sepulchre of our Lord. No letter, even from the nearest rela- tive, might be opened except in the master’s presence ; nor was any member to feel annoyance if he saw his relative’s gift transferred at the master’s bidding to some other brother. The brethren were to sleep in separate beds in shirts and breeches, with a light always burning in the dormitory. Those who lacked a mattress might place a piece of carpet on the floor ; but all luxury was discouraged. The order recognized two governing bodies, —the first, a meeting for ordinary business, to which only the wiser members were sumnioned ; the second, one for extraordinary affairs, such as the granting of lands or the reception of new members, on which occasions the master might summon the whole community. Even at these last assemblies the master seems to have decided on the final action (ce. 59). A term of probation was assigned to each candidate before admission ; and a special clause discouraged the reception of boys before they were of an age to bear arms, Lastly, the brethren of the Temple were exhorted to shun the kiss of every woman, whether maid or widow, mother, aunt, or sister.

The general spirit of the Templar statutes remained unaltered Adminis- to the end, though the increasing wealth of the order gave rise to tration. a number of additional rules. The grand-master was always head of the

society ; his instructions were binding on every member, and the very laws were at his discretion. But he could not declare war, alienate the society's estates, or even admit a member without the consent of his chapter. He was elected by thirteen brothers, chosen by a peculiar method of co-optation, and all, if possible, belonging to different nations: Next to him in dignity came the seneschal, on whom the duties of the absent master devolved. The marshal had charge of the steeds and accoutrements ; he also com- manded the knights and men-at-arms, the latter of whom seem in time of war to have been at the disposal of the turcopolier. The commander of the kingdom guarded the treasure-house, to which even the grand-master might not have a key; the commander of the city of Jerusalem had charge of the True Cross in time of war. There were twelve or perhaps more commanders or preceptors of the different provinces and kingdoms of Europe and Asia,—Jerusalem (kingdom and city), Acre, Tripoli, Antioch, France, England, Poitou, Aragon, Portugal, Apulia, and Hungary. No European preceptor could cross the sea without the grand-master's leave ; but all ought to be present at the election to this office. The privileges and duties of every member were strictly prescribed, from the number of horses he might ride and the amount of food he might eat to the colour of his clothes. The order seems to have owned a fleet, part of which, if not all, was under the authority of the commander of the kingdom. Besides the knights and men-at- arms, the society reckoned chaplains in its ranks ; and it was the habit of confession to these priests that seems to have stirred the wrath of the Dominicans and the Franciscans, who played a very conspicuous part in the overthrow of the order, especially in England, For grievous offences, such as desertion to the Saracens, heresy, or losing the gonfalon, a Templar might be expelled (perdre la maison); for minor offences, such as disobedience or lowering the banner in battle, he suffered a temporary degradation (perdre son abit). By a mutual agreement the Templars and Hospitallers, despite their long and deadly feud, were bound not to receive ejected members of the rival order ; and the Templar cut off in battle and defeat from all hope of rejoining his own ranks might rally to the cross of St John. As Acre was the headquarters of the order in the East, so Paris was its centre in the West (Matt. Paris, v. 478). Every member before admission must declare himself free of debt, sound of body, and affiliated to no other religious society ; he must also take a vow of obedience and chastity, at the same time re-

Suppres- ~ A scheme for the union of the three great military orders into | diocesan councils were only empowered to inquire into the conduct sion of one had received the sanction of Gregory X. and Louis IX., of | of individuals. ; ; , the order. Nicholas IV. and Boniface VIII. The recovery of the Holy Land The trial began on 11th April 1310. On 23d April Reginald de The was the dream of the last pope's highest ambition ; and when he | Pruino protested against the unfairness of the proceedings. On trial, died a prisoner in the hands of Philip IY. of France this king con- Tuesday, 12th May, fifty-four Templars were burnt by order of the tinued to advocate the plan for his own purposes. His gold or | archbishop of Sens, and a few days later four more. Next day the influence secured the election of Clement V. as pope (5th June 1305). | terror spread (19th May). Forty-six Templars withdrew their deze According to a slightly later tradition, before consenting to the | fence and the commissioners decided (30th May) to adjourn till new pope's appointment he exacted from him an oath to assist in | November. The second examination lasted from 18th December carrying out six propositions, one of which he would not disclose | 1310 to 5th June 1811. Meanwhile (c. April 1811) Clement and as yet. This sixth condition, if it ever existed, must have been Philip had come to terms. The pope condemned the Templars, the suppression of the Templars; and, whether false or true, | The council of Vienne met in October 1311. A discussion arose Villani's story emphasizes a popular and almost contemporary | as to whether the Templars should be heard in their own defence. opinion. It is known that Philip was urging Clement in this Clement, it is said, broke up the session to avoid compliance ; and direction before the latter's coronation at Lyons on 14th November | when seven Templars offered themselves as deputies for the defence 1305, and all through the two succeeding years. On 6th June | he had them cast into prison. Towards the beginning of March 1306 the pope summoned the grand-master from Cyprus to France. | Philip came to Vienne, and he was seated at the pope's right hand James de Molai obeyed the call, and, hearing of the charges against | when that pontiff delivered his sermon against the Templars (3d his order, demanded a prompt investigation. In this demand he | April 1312), whose ordcr had just been abolished, not at the general was supported by the leading Templars of the realm. Clement, | council, but in private consistory (22d March). On 2d May 1312 who disbelieved the accusations, fenced with the question. But, | he published the bull 4d

Providam, transferring the goods of the though only a very short time previously Philip had spoken of | society, cxcept for the kingdoms of Castile, Aragon, Portugal, and his special love for the order, and though it had sheltered him | Majorca, to the Knights of St John. The order was never formally from the fury of the Paris mob in 1306, he was now determined | pronounced guilty of the crimes laid to its charge; its abolition on its destruction. Its wealth would fill the royal coffers, and the | was distinctly, in the terms of Clement's bull Considerantes Dudum, rumours of the day afforded a ready engine for its overthrow. "non per modum definitive sententiz, cum eam super hoc secun- Accusa- For perhaps half a century there had been strange stories circulat- | dum inquisitiones et processus super his habitos non possemus tions, ing as to the secret rites practised by the order at its midnight | ferre de jure sed per viam provisionis et ordinationis apostolice " meetings. It was said that on his initiation each member had to | (6th May 1312). disavow his belief in God and Christ, to spit upon the crucifix, to The individual members of the order seem to have been left to submit to indecent ceremonies, and to swear never to reveal the | the judgment of provincial councils. They were divided into three secrets of the society or disobey the mandates of a grand-master, | classes,—(1) those who confessed at once ; (2) those who persisted who claimed full power of absolution. When the masswas celebrated | in denial of the charges ; (3) those who, having confessed at first, the consecrating words " Hoc est corpus" were omitted ; on Good | withdrew their confessions later on the plea that they had been Friday the holy cross was trampled under foot ; and the Christian | extracted by torture. The penalties for the three classes were _ duty of almsgiving had ceased to be observed. Even the vaunted | respectively (1) penitence, (2) perpetual imprisonment, (3) death by chastity of the order towards women had, it was said, been turned | fire. The cases of the grand-master, the visitor of France, and the into a sanction for more horrible offences. These evil practices | masters of Aquitaine and Normandy were reserved for the pope's were part of the secret statute law of an order which in its nightly | decision. Early in 1314 they were forced to make a public con- assem blies worshipped hideous four-footed figures,—a cat or a calf. | fession in Notre Dame, and had already been condemned to per- In England the very children at their play bade one another beware | petual imprisonment when the grand-master and the preceptor of of a Templar's kisses. Stranger stories yet were rife in this country | Normandy publicly

proclaimed their entire innocence. The king, and gravely reported before bishops and priests,—of children slain | without consulting the church, had them burnt "'in the little island" by their fathers because they chanced to witness the nightly orgies | of the Seine " between the Augustinians and the royal garden." of the society ; of one prior's being spirited away at every meeting The opinion that the monstrous charges brought against the Question of the general chapter; of the great preceptor's declaring that a | Templars were false and the confessions were only extracted by of their single hair of a Saracen's beard was worth more than the whole | torture is supported by the general results of the investigation (in guilt or body of a Christian man. In France they were said to roast their | almost every country outside France), as we have them collisasatt in inno- illegitimate children and smear their idols with the burning fat. Raynouard, Labbe, and Du Puy. In Castile, where the king flung cence. Suppres- For nearly two years Philip waited for Clement to fulfil his | them into prison, they were acquitted at the council of Salamanca. sion of bargain. A certain Templar from the prisons of Toulouse now | In Aragon, where they held out for a time in their fortresses against _ order in offered to put the king in possession of a secret that would be worth | the royal powcr, the council of Tarragona proclaimed in their favour France. a realm. Acting on the evidence of this informer, Philip issued | (4th November 1312). In Portugal the commissioners reported

nouncing his private property and dedicating his future life to the Holy Land. 'The order prided itself specially on the splendour of its religious services, the abundance of its alms, and its reckless valour for the Christian faith. At the time of its suppression it was calculated to number 15,000 members. Three MSS. of its ancient statutes, written in Old French, are still extant at Dijon, at Paris,and at Rome. Of these the first was transcribed about 1200, the last two from 1250 to 1300. They have been published by M. Maillard de Chambure (Paris, 1840).

orders (14th September 1307) for the arrest of all the Templars in France on the night of Friday, 18th October. He seems to have written to the neighbouring princes urging them to act in the same way. James de Molai

was seized with sixty of his brethren in Paris. On Saturday they were brought before the university of Paris to hear the enumeration of their crimes ; and on Sunday the Paris mob was gathered in the royal gardens, where preachers were inveighing against the iniquities of the order. The inquisitors began their work at once; and inhuman tortures forced the most horrible avowals from the lips of many. In Paris alone thirty-six Templars died under torture.! Of 140 Templars examined at Paris between 19th October and 24th November 1307, the experience of some of whom extended over nearly half a century, there is hardly one who did not admit the dishonouring of the crucifix at his reception. Very many confessed to other charges, even of the worst description. Clement V., although he suspended the inquisitors' powers on 27th October (Loiseleur, 159), before the end of the next month wrote to Edward II. to arrest all the English Templars, who were accord- ingly seized on 10th January 1808. About the same time they were arrested in Sicily (24th January) and in Cyprus (27th May). As Clement did not move fast enough, Philip went to Poitiers with 700 armed men, and the pope wasathis mercy. It was agreed that the prisoners, their lands, and their money should be nominally placed in the hands of Clement's commissioners. The power of 1 Michelet, Procés, i. 86; Gruelle, 35, &c.

the inquisitors was restored (5th July); and the property forfeited was to be devoted to the recovery of the Holy Land. Clement now gave orders for fresh diocesan inquiries into the guilt of the Templars. He had already heard the confessions of seventy-two at Poitiers (29th June to ist July). The grand-master and the three preceptors were re-examined at Chinon, and renewed their old confessions (20th August). Lastly, the bull Regnans in Colo sum-moned a great council at Vienne for lst October 1310, when the question of the guilt of the order might be'considered. The

that there were no grounds for accusation, At Mainz the council pronounced the order blamelcss, At Treves, at Messina, and at Bologna, in Romagna and in Cyprus, they were either acquitted or no cvidence was forthcoming against them. At the council of Ravenna the question as to whether torture should be used was answered in the negative except by two Dominicans; all

the Templars were absolved,—even those who had confessed through fear of torture being pronounced innocent (18th June 1310). Six Templars were examined at Florence, and their evidence is for its length the most remarkable of all that is still extant. Roughly speaking, they confess with the most elaborate detail to every charge,—even the most loathsome ; and the perusal of their evidence induces a constant suspicion that their answers were practically dictated to them in the process of the examination or invented by the witnesses themselves. In England, where perhaps torture was not used, out of eighty Templars examined only four confessed to the charge of denying Christ, and of these four two were apostate knights. But some English Templars would only guarantee the purity of their own country. That in England as elsewhere the charges were held to be not absolutely proved seems cvident from the form of confession to be used before absolution, in which the Templars acknowledge themselves to be defamed in the matter of certain articles that they cannot purge themselves. In England nearly all the worst evidence comes at second or third 2 See the evidence in full ap. Loiseleur, pp. 172-212.

hand or through the depositions of Franciscans and Dominicans. Yet it can hardly be doubted that the ‘‘spuitio super crucem ” did form a part of the initiation ceremony. Even the English Templars admitted that the statutes of the order were one and the same all the world over ; and there is uo setting aside the consist- ent evidence of almost every French Templar as to his guilt in this matter. Of the other charges the most revolting may have originated in the abuse and misinterpretation of a licence primarily intended for military emergencies. Such at least is the form it seems to take in the evidence of John Senand (ap. Mich., ii. p. 137). A debased mind might misinterpret this concession and translate it into coarser words, till (this part of the initiation ceremony being probably conducted in private, as, most certainly, was the spitting on the cross) there might be two formularies current in the order, of which the second was plainly immoral, whereas the first was perfectly harmless unless coupled with a sous-cntendre. _ So too with regard to the spwitio. One Templar says plainly that he took it for a joke,—pro trufa ; others regarded it as an imitation of St Peter’s denial ; a modern writer has suggested that the custom was intended asa symbol of

absolute obedience (ap. Mich., ii. 260). There is little doubt that most members looked upon the ceremony with disgust. Some salved their consciences by the excuse that they were denying Jesus and not Christ ; another when shown the crucifix denied his belief in the painted figure. Nearly all declared that they had spat near but not upon the cross, and denied Christ “non corde sed ore.” Men who could thus play with their own consciences at their initiation might well, when their lives were in peril, clothe a falsehood in the garb of truth by denying ‘‘ spuitio super crucem ” instead of confessing to ‘‘spuitio juxta crucem.”

The other charges stand upon a somewhat similar footing. The

ower of lay absolution might easily be developed out of the harm- ess words with which the master or preceptor dismissed his chapter. The cordule which Templars were accused of wearing in honour of their idol take a very different appearance as the ‘‘zones of chastity” or “belt of Nazareth” worn in accordance with St Ber- nard’s precept. With regard to the charge of idolatry the evidence is very conflicting. In France and at Florence a large proportion of the members confessed to indecent kissing (oscula inhonesta) at their initiation ; but hardly a single English Templar admitted the charge, and one French witness suggested an almost ludicrous ex- planation of the rumour. Here also a simple ceremony of respect or humiliation seems to have been expanded into one of shame- lessness ; but the evidence is too strong to admit of its being ex- plained away, at least in France.

Not a few witnesses confessed that they had been called upon to . declare Christ a false prophet, who suffered for His own sins and not for the race, and to believe only in a superior God of the heavens (Deum celi superiorem). One Florence witness admits that the idol was worshipped as God and Saviour. It was this head, ac- cording to one of the witnesses, that could make the order rich and cause the earth to bud and the trees to blossom. A Carcassonne Templar spoke of the idol (Raynouard, 241) asa friend of God, who converses with God when he wishes. On such evidence M. Loiseleur holds that the Templars were members of a secret religion, which combined the heretical teachings of the Bogomilians and the Luci- ferians. The former, ‘‘the friends of God,” believed in a Supreme Deity,

whose eldest son Satanael was the creator of our world after his revolt against his father, and whose younger son Jesus was made man to counteract the evil deeds of his brother. They did not venerate the cross, regarding it as the instrument of Christ's passion. The Luciferians, on the other hand, worshipped the eldest son, who had power over all the riches of this world. M. Loiseleur has shown some remarkable coincidences, verbal and otherwise, be- tween the creed of these two sccts and that of the Templars, who, according to him, borrowed from the former their belief in the Supreme Deity and from the latter their devotion to the God of this earth. It seems, however, doubtful whether he is justified in combining the several items of such scattered evidence into a com- ee doctrinal system. His argument might be turned against

imself ; for, if these heresies were so widely spread in medieval Europe, are they not for that reason those most likely to be ascribed to an unpopular order ?

On the whole it may perhaps be admitted that the charges of *'spuitio" and ''osculatio inhonesta"' were current, at least sporadi- cally, for fifty years before the suppression of the order. They may have become more general in the time of Thomas Beraud, the grand-master (who died 1273), according to the evidence of the pre- ceptor of Aquitainc. On the death of William de Beaujeu (1291) there were two rivals for the office of grand-master,—Hugh de Peraud, the visitor of France, and James de Molai. The latter in 1291, at a general chapter, had declared his intention of extirpating certain practices in the order of which he did not approve?; while, if we may trust the French witnesses, the most vigorous initiator according to the new method was Hugh de Peraud. This exactly fits in with the account? that the errors were introduced after

1 See Mich., ii. 6-11. 2 Mich., ii. 189,247. 3 Mich., ii. 132.

William de Beaujeu's death. In other words, it is probable that the party of Hugh de Peraud between 1290 and 1307 made a desperate effort to enforce the new ceremonies and the new doc- trines throughout France and England. The custom of ''spuitio," at all events, was very ancient, and Hugh

de Perand devoted his energies to the propagation of the ‘‘osculatio inhonesta.” This would explain the omission of all allusion to the latter ceremony when the English Templars were absolved; for they would not confess to a practice of which they were innocent. This theory likewise goes a long way towards interpreting both the confession and the denial of James de Molai and the general acquittal of the Templars in nearly all the councils outside France. (TAs A.)

TEMPLE. The temple is an institution common to Meaning,

religions of natural growth which have reached a certain stage, and in most languages bears a name expressing that it is the house or palace erected by men as a habitation for their god* (Greek, vads ; Hebrew, hékal, “palace,” or beth élohim, “house of God”; Latin, xdes sacrx). In this connexion the term ‘“‘house of God” has quite a different sense from that which we connect with it when we apply it to a Christian place of worship. A temple is not a meeting-place for worshippers; for many ancient temples were open only to priests, and as a general rule the altar, which was the true place of worship, stood not within the house but before the door. The temple is the dwelling-house of the deity to which it is consecrated, whose presence is marked by a statue or other sacred symbol; and in it his sacred treasures, the gifts and tribute of his worshippers, are kept, under the charge of his attendants or priests. Again, a temple implies a sanctu- ary; but a sanctuary or holy spot does not necessarily contain a temple. A piece of land may be reserved for the deity without a dwelling-house being erected to him upon it, and a sacred tree, stone, or altar, with the holy precinct surrounding it, may be recognized as a place where the worshipper can meet his god and present his offerings, although no temple is attached. Indeed the conception of a holy place, separated from profane use, is older than the beginnings of architecture; and natural objects of worship, such as trees and stones, which need no artificial protection or official keeper, are older than images enshrined under roofs and protected by walls and doors. All antique religion is essentially altar- worship (see Sacririce), and for ritual purposes the altar always continued to be the true centre of the sanctuary. But the altar is only a modification of the sacred stone (comp. Prizst, vol. xix. p. 726), and it has already been observed that, even in later times, the chief altar of a sanctuary stood outside the temple. In the oldest and most primitive forms of religion

the sacred stone is at once the place where gifts are offered and the material sign of the presence of the deity ; thus the temple with its image belongs to a later development, in which the significance of the sacred stone is divided between the altar outside the door and the idol, or its equivalent, within. But in many very ancient sanctuaries the place of a temple is taken by a natural or artificial grotto (e.g, the Phoenician Astarte grottoes, the grotto of Cynthus in Delos), or else the temple is built over a subterranean opening (as at Delphi); and, while this may be in part explained as connected with the cult of telluric deities, or the worship of the dead, it seems not unreasonable to think that in their origin cave temples may date back to the time when caves were commonly used as human habit- ations, that the altar in front of the temple had its proto- type in altars at the mouths of sacred caves, which were approached with holy fear and not entered by ordinary worshippers, and that thus some of the main features of the ancient temple were fixed from the first by the analogy

4 Templum properly denotes a spot inaugurated for the observation of auspices by the augurs. But at Rome most ades sacre were also templa, and so the terms came to be used as synonymous.

Solo- mon’s temple.

of more primitive sanctuaries. The influence of the cave temple seems at least to be undeniable in that widespread type of sanctuary in which, besides the court for the worshippers and an outer chamber, there was a dark and mysterious inner room, an adytum or Holy of Holies. This type is found in Egypt (see ARCHITECTURE, vol. ii. p. 388 and plate VII), among the Semites, as in the temple at Jerusalem and in ~~that of Hierapolis (De Dea Syr., § 31), and also among the Greeks and Romans. In Greece the adytum was not a universal feature, though large temples usually had an antechamber as well as the cella or proper chamber of the god. But, where an oracle was given, or mysteries were celebrated, an adytum was always found, and one of its names was péyapov, which seems to be a transcription of a Semitic word for a cave (meghara). Certain adyta in Greece were actually sub~~ terranean; and the association of oracles with caves is well known.

The architectural features and plan of temples in various parts of the world have been illustrated at length in the article ARCHITECTURE, and need. not detain us here, but some further notice of the successive temples at Jerusalem is called for by the unique interest of the subject, while a glance at the topographical problems connected with this holy site is necessary to supplement the article JERUSALEM,

1. The Temple of Solomon.—There were temples among the Hebrews before the time of Solomon, whether private, like that of Micah (Judges xvii. 5), or public, like that of Shiloh, where the ark was housed for a time (see TABER- NACLE). In this, as in other matters, the Israelites must have learned from the Canaanites, who had large temples in the time of the Judges. The “hold” (vault?) of the temple of El-Berith at Shechem was the place of refuge for a thousand men (Judges ix. 46 sq.), and at Gaza there was a vast temple with a roof supported on two middle pillars (Judges xvi. 29). Solomon’s enterprise was not therefore absolutely novel, and in point of size his temple can hardly have surpassed those just mentioned. But his subjects were much behind the Canaanites and Philistines in the constructive arts, and as Solomon had to call in the aid of Tyrian craftsmen it cannot be questioned that the design was derived from Tyrian architecture. The general plan, indeed, of the house or “ palace” (Azkal) of Jehovah, with an adytum (debir, E.V. “oracle”), an outer chamber, and an altar before the door, is, as we have seen, common to many countries, especially in temples which had an oracle, as was the case with Solomon’s temple, built to contain the ark. But all the distinctive features are Pheenician, or at least characteristic of the northern Semites, of whose art the Phcenicians were then the lead- ing exponents. For the general arrangements the temple of Hierapolis (Mabbog), described by Lucian, offers a complete parallel. Like that of Solomon, it faced the east, and had two celle and a pronaos. The interior was enriched with gold work. Before the door stood a brazen altar within a walled court. The walled court is a con- stant feature in the Phoenician and Syrian temples, known to us from their remains or from coins,! and the golden decorations, the portico, and the brazen altar appear in the ancient temple of Byblus and in other Phoenician shrines (C.I.8., Nos. 2, 143), The chief motives in the internal decoration of Solomon’s temple were the palm tree and the cherub. The former is one of the commonest Phoenician symbols, and the Phcenician

associations of the latter are clear from Ezek. xxviii. The cherub, in fact, is only a variety of the sphinx, and the way in which the palm and winged animal figures were combined in

1 See T. L. Donaldson, Architectura Numismatica (London, 1859) ; Renan, Mission de Phénicie ; Perrot and Chipiez, Hist. de ? Art, vol. iii.

T EE MP Le

Pheenician decoration is shown in a fragment of alabaster preserved in the Louvre and here figured (fig. 1) after Perrot (op. cit., iii. 131). Two cherubs with outstretched wings stood in the adytum to form a baldachin over the ark. Baldachins over the image or symbol of the deity existed in other f temples of the[.A northern Semites | =/< (Donaldson, op.cit., | – & pp. 73, 76 sq., 99), F: Winks

and in many Phe- nician works of art |, (e.g., on the stele of |: ¢f

or symbolof adeity f . isovershadowed by |= the winged disk }.- (an Assyrian sym- | =: bol of godhead) ar-© ranged as a sort of canopy (Ménant, Glyptique Oriental, ii. 231, 238).

The adytum of the temple was a cube of 20 cubits each way ; the outer chamber was of the same breadth, but 40 cubits long and 30 high.2. The portico was of the breadth of the main building and 10 cubits deep. That the two chambers were separated by a solid wall and not by a mere wooden partition may be taken as certain if, with Stade, we understand 1 Kings vi. 31 to say that the doorway of the adytum was pentagonal, z.c., that instead of a hori- zontal lintel a rude arch of two blocks was introduced to distribute the pressure of the superincumbent wall. In this case it is not likely that the exterior walls of the adytum were carried up to a height of 30 cubits, so as to allow of a continuous roof… The reduction of the dimensions to English feet is approximately determined by the Siloam inscription, which gives a round number of 1200 cubits for a measured length of 1760 feet. The Hebrew cubit, therefore, was the short cubit of antiquity, and for practi- cal purposes may be taken as equal to the Greek cubit of 18 inches, used by Josephus for the measurements of Herod’s temple. Thus the roof-beams of the temple had a span of 30 feet, a length sufficient to make it probable that

the wooden pillars spoken of in 1 Kings x. 12 (comp. 2 Kings xviii. 16) were employed to support them. The roof of the temple at Gaza rested on pillars, as we have seen, and wooden pillars seem to have been used within the temple at Golgus (Cesnola, Cyprus, p. 139), which was smaller than that of Jerusalem. A peculiar feature in Solomon's temple was that all its sides except the front were surrounded by three stories (each 5 cubits high) of small chambers, 5 cubits wide on the ground floor, 6 on the first floor, and 7 on the second, the increasing breadth being evidently got by reducing the thickness of the walls by 1 cubit at each floor? Thus, allowing for the walls, the external measurements of the house cannot have been much less than 45 cubits by 90. The aspect of the fagade can only be conjecturally determined. Several Phoenician temples, known from coins, show on their fagade a high- pitched gable (Byblus, Tripolis), and that of Tripolis has also a flat-roofed wing on each side of the gable and portico, which would answer to the ends of the side chambers mn

2 The description of the temple in 1 Kings is often obscure and the text is not always sound. Cp. Stade's essay in Z. f. ATliche Wiss., 18838, p. 129 sq.

8 In such small chambers the winding stair (1 Kings vi. 8) can

hardly have been more than a vertical post with footholds nailed to it (Prof. J. H. Middleton).

Fig. 1.

TEM

our temple. But perhaps the closest analogy to the frontispiece of Solomon's temple is the often-cited one of the temple at Paphos, of which a representation from a coin is an- nexed (fig. 2). Here the portico be- tween the side wings is flanked by /fim two slender towers, and in the end |iij of the nave above the door there im are square-topped windows. Solo- \ mon's temple had "windows of beams" (or "with horizontal lin- tels") "framed in," which, as Pro- fessor J. H. Middleton observes, is naturally explained on the analogy of the windows be- tween the beams in the wooden gables of Coptic churches. This is the obvious position of openings for light in

buildings the type of which was derived from wooden constructions, and we know that the oldest Phoenician temples were, at least in great part, of wood (Utica; Pliny, H.N., xvi. 79; comp. Jos., C. Ap., i. 17, 18, and Solomon's house of the forest of Lebanon). That Solomon's temple had towers cannot be proved, for the height of the porch is not given in Kings, and the 120 cubits of 2 Chron. iii. 4 is obviously an excessive figure, due to a mistake of the writer or of a copyist. But the fact that in Ezekiel's ideal temple the door-posts of the porch are 5 cubits broad makes the existence of slender turrets like those of Paphos on each side of the portal probable. Another feature of Solomon's temple is exactly reproduced at Paphos. On each side of the door the coin shows a fantastic pillar standing free. Solomon erected two such pillars of bronze, 18 cubits high (1 Kings vii. 15 sq.), with capitals of "lily work," 2.¢., adorned with lotus flowers, like the Phoenician capital from Cyprus figured by Perrot (op. cit., p. 116). Such twin pillars or twin stelz in stone are of constant occurrence in Phoenician sacred art, and are still familiar 'to us as the Pillars of Hercules. In Solomon's temple both the oracle and the outer cella had folding doors. In the second and third temples the inner door was replaced by a vail (pardkheth), and a vail also hung before the outer door (Mal. i.10; 1 Mac.i. 22, iv. 51; B.J., v. 5, § 4 sq.). The Chronicler (2 Chron. iii. 14) introduces a vail in the first temple. This feature also seems to be common to the temple with other Semitic shrines (comp. C.L.S., No. 86, naqp, Assyr. parakku, Syriac prakké, "shrines," and the Kaaba at Mecca).}

The temple had an inner court of its own (1 Kings vi. 36), but the outer or great court (1 Kings vii. 12) was the court of the palace as well as of the sanctuary. Details as to the position of the courts and buildings must be reserved till we speak of the site, but it may be noticed that Jer. xxxvi. 10 speaks of the 'higher court," to which the '' new gate" of the temple belonged. This new gate in the higher court can hardly be different from the "higher gate" built by Jotham (2 Kings xv. 35), or from the '"'higher gate" of Benjamin, which, in Jer. xx. 2, is not the city gate of that name, but a gate "in" (not "by" as E.V.) ''the house of the Lord." From its name this gate must have been on the north side or at the north-east angle of the temple area, so that the ground rose to the north or north-east. The upper court may be merely the upper part of the great court near the ''higher gate" leading to the palace (2 Chron. xxiii. 20), or may be the same as the "new court " of 2

Chron. xx. 5. But one cannot be sure that the Chronicler is not transferring to Jehoshaphat's time a new court of the second temple. We know, however, that the kings of Judah made from time to time considerable changes in and about the temple.

2. The Temple of Zerubbabel.—After the captivity an altar of stone took the place of the brazen altar, or rather perhaps of the altar of Ahaz (2 Kings xvi. 10 sq.). The altar was erected immediately after the return (Ezra iii.

Fig. 2.

1 Op. also the vail of Assyrian tissue given by Antiochus to the temple at Olympia (Pausan., 'v. 12, § 4), which Ganneau (Quarterly Statement, April 1878) boldly identifies with the vail of the temple that Antiochus Epiphanes carried off from Jerusalem (1 Mac., i. 22; Jos., Ant., xii, 5, § 4).

PLE 167

2); but the rebuilding of the temple was long delayed, and the work was not completed till 520 B.c. (see Haccar). Jt was much inferior to the first temple in magnificence, though not perhaps in size (Haggai ii. 3). The proposed breadth of 60 cubits and height of 60 cubits spoken of in Ezra vi. 3 would indeed imply that it was larger than the first temple, but in view of the testimony of Haggai (loc. cit.) it seems unlikely that these dimensions were realized by Zerubbabel.

The first temple resembled other temples of antiquity in being built to contain a visible symbol of the presence of the deity, namely, the ark, which stood in the inner chamber. In the second temple the adytum was empty, but the idea that the Godhead was locally present in it still found expression in the continuance of the altar service, in the table of showbread (a sort of continual Jectisternium) that stood in the outer chamber, and above all in the annual ritual of the day of atonement, when the high priest entered the Holy of Holies to sprinkle the blood of' the expiatory sacrifice on behalf of the people. Not only in this point but in all others the ritual of the second temple was dominated by the idea of priestly mediation, and the stated sacrifices of the priests on behalf of the people, which replaced the old stated oblations of the kings, became the main feature of the altar service.

The first temple was primarily the royal chapel, and the kings did as they pleased init ; the second temple was the sanctuary of the priests, whose chief now became the temporal as well as the spiritual head of the people. In the time of Ezekiel not only laymen but uncircumcised foreigners entered the sanctuary and acted as servants in the sacred offices (Ezek. xliv. 7); in the second temple the laity were anxiously kept at a distance from the holy things, and even part of the court around the altar was fenced off by a barrier, which only the priests were allowed to cross (Joseph., Ané., xiii. 13, § 5). Being no longer hemmed in by the royal buildings, as the first temple had been (Ezek. xlili. 8), its precincts could be expanded to suit the necessities of the enormous host of ministers of various ranks demanded by the growing complexity of the ritual, which, in matters of music and the like, was immensely developed as time went on (comp. Psaxms). Herod's temple, with the dependent buildings, was a little city enclosed in its own fortifications, But long before his time the temple was a sort of priestly citadel, the fortress as well as the sanctuary of the hierocracy ; and the sacred offerings which flowed to Jerusalem from Jews in all parts of the world were lavishly expended on enlarg- ing and strengthening it (Jos., B.J., v.5,§1). The name of Simon II. (c. 200 B.c.) is associated in Ecclus. 1. 1 sq. with important works of fortification on the circuit of the temple. Twice ruined in the wars with the Seleucids, these bulwarks were twice rebuilt, by Judas and Jonathan Maccabeeus (1 Mac. vi. 7; Jos., Ant., xiii. 5,§ 11). The works were further strengthened by Simon (1 Mac. xiii. 52), and at the time of Pompey's siege (63 B.c.) constituted an almost impregnable fastness, strengthened on its weakest or northern side by great towers and a deep ditch (Ant., xiv. 4,§ 2). Twenty-six years later the temple was again be- sieged by Herod, who, attacking, like Pompey, from the north, had to force three lines of defence,—the city wall and the outer and inner temple (Anzt., xiv. 16, § 2).

Of the temple as it was in the Greek or the Hasmonean period we have two descriptions by Hellenistic Jews, Pseudo-Aristeus (comp. SEPTUAGINT) and Pseudo-Hecatzus (Jos., C. Ap.,i. 22). In such a matter we may suspect even notorious literary forgers of care- lessness and exaggeration rather than of absolute untruth. Pseudo- Aristeeus describes the temple as surrounded by a triple circuit of walls more than 70 cubits high, and as further protected by the adjoining Acra, which overlooked the place of

sacrifice. Comparing the account of Herod’s siege, we may perhaps take the third circuit to be the wall of the town, which is represented as lying below the

temple on the same hill, The upper city on the western hill is ignored, which seems to show that the account was written before the Hasmonean period (comp. JERUSALEM, vol. xiii. p. 641), as has been argued on other grounds in Seprvacinr. The Acra, which is often mentioned in the history of the Maccabee wars, seems to have been on the same site as the Baris or castle of the Hasmonean priest-princes, where they put on their priestly robes before doing sacrifice (Ant.,xv. 11, § 4). That the Baris was close to the temple appears both from this circumstance and from the fact that Antigonus was charged with setting fire to the porticoes of the temple during the siege by Herod (Ant., xiv. 16, § 2),—an accusation which would have had no plausibility unless the destruction of the porticoes had been useful to isolate the castle. Pseudo-Hecatzeus gives the temple precincts a length of 500 feet and a breadth of 100 ae The explanation of these numbers will appear in the sequel.

“3, The Temple of Herod.—In the eighteenth year of his reign (20-19 B.c.) Herod the Great began to rebuild the temple and its precincts from the foundation, doubling the old area (Ant., xv. 11; Bell. Jud., i. 21). The works included the reconstruction, on the old site, of the Baris, which now received the name of Antonia, and is generally reckoned by Josephus as forming part of the temple precincts. Apart from the Antonia, the temple area formed a quadrangular plateau supported by retaining walls of great height and strength, and surrounded by porticoes. Three of the porticoes were double walks, 30 cubits broad, with monolith pillars 25 cubits high, and cedar roofs; the fourth or southern portico (the Stoa Basilica) had four rows of Corinthian pillars and three walks, respectively 30, 45, and 30 cubits in breadth. The middle walk was twice the height of the aisles, and the latter were 50 feet high. As regards the size of this enclosure, we are told by Josephus that the Stoa Basilica was a stadium or 600 feet long (Ant., xv. 11, § 5); and in Ant., xx. 9, § 7, the same length is assigned to the

eastern colonnade, which was known as Solomon's Porch (comp. John x. 23; Acts iii. 11 and v. 12), because it, and it alone, rested on an ancient substructure held to be the work of Solomon. The whole circuit of the porticoes was therefore 4 stadia,! or with the Antonia 6 stadia (B.J., v. 5, § 2). The Antonia lay on the north side (Ant., xv. 11, § 4) and communicated by stairs with the north and west porticoes at the north-west angle of the enclosure. Fergusson and others suppose that it touched the temple only at this angle, thence stretching north and west. But in this case the Antonia, which, as we shall see below, lay just north of Wilson's arch, would have been built over the hollow of the Tyropcon valley, a supposition absurd in itself and inconsistent with B.J., v. 5, § 8, which says that it stood on a cliff. Again, the tower 70 cubits high that stood at the south-east angle of the Antonia overlooked the whole temple, just as we know from Pseudo-Aristeus that the old Acra overlooked the altar. But, if the south-east angle of the Antonia had been, as Fergusson supposes, at the north-west angle of the temple porticoes, the view from the tower would have been intercepted by the lofty porch in front of the Holy Place. The Antonia, therefore, had its south face along part of the north face of the temple enclosure, and to gain a circuit of 6 stadia for temple and Antonia together we must assign to the latter the length of a stadium from north to south. This is not too much, for Josephus describes it as a little town in itself (B.J., v. 5, § 8).

The Antonia, the porticoes, and the space immediately within them (the outer court, or, as modern writers call it, the court of the Gentiles) were not holy ground. But in

1 This measurement (Ant., xv. 11, § 3) has often been taken to refer to Solomon's temple. But this view is not demanded by the words of Josephus, and is inconsistent with the other measurements he gives and with B.J., v. 5, § 1, which states that the plateau was levelled up by Solomon only on the east. This from the lie of the contour lines makes a plateau 600 feet square impossible. The Mishnah makes the "mountain of the house" a square of 500 cubits, apparently borrowing from Ezekiel.

the middle of the enclosure there was a platform raised 15 cubits above the court of the Gentiles and fenced off by a barrier, with inscriptions, one of

which still exists (Palestine E. F. Quarterly Statement, 1871, p. 132), forbid- ding aliens to pass on pain of death. The platform was approached by steps on all sides but the west (BW, v. 1, § 5, and 5, § 2), and was surrounded by a wall, rising 25 cubits above the inner level, and pierced by four gates on the north side and as many on the south. On the west there was no gate, but on the east—that is, in front of the fane—there were two, one within the other; for the eastern end of the platform was walled off to form a separate court for the women, at a somewhat lower level. One of the northern and one of the southern gates belonged to the court of the women, but it was also entered directly from the east by a very splendid gate of Corinthian brass, much more costly than the others, though they were overlaid with silver and gold. An enormous gate, 40 cubits wide and 50 high (gate Nicanor), connected the women's court with the higher part of the platform, or court of the men of Israel. The beautiful gate of Acts ili. 2 is variously identified with the first or second of these eastern portals. The walls of the platform were lined within with chambers, in front of which ran a splendid colonnade ; and the gate- ways were connected with the colonnade by small lofty halls (exedrx), which from without had a tower-like aspect. It is doubtful whether all the gates had exedrx; but, on the other hand, there was such a hall also at the west end where no gate opened. In the court of the men—z.e., in the upper and western part of the platform just described—stood the fane or temple proper raised twelve steps above the court. For the ground plan of the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies the ancient dimensions of Solomon's temple were preserved, and the external size demanded by the scale of the surroundings was gained by increasing their height, placing a lofty second story above them, making their walls and those of the surrounding chambers (corresponding to the chambers in the first temple) enor- mously thick, and placing at the front or east end a porch 100 cubits wide and 100 cubits high. The open doorway of this porch was overlaid with gold, as was also the door of the fane and the wall round it. To the ornament of the entrance belonged also a golden vine with clusters of grapes as big asa man. In front of the fane beneath the steps was the great altar of stone, 50 (or, according to the Middoth, 32) cubits square and 15 high; it was as- cended by a flight of steps from the south. The part of the court round the fane and the altar was fenced off for the use of the priests, and other Israelites were admitted only when the sacrificial ritual required the presence of the sacrificer.

Besides the descriptions in Josephus, we have for Herod's temple a mass of details and measurements in the Mishnic treatise Middoth. Josephus was himself a priest, while the Mishnah was not written till a century after the destruction of the temple, though it uses traditions that go back to Levites who had served in the temple. The two sources differ in many measurements, and the Middoth appears to be possessed of detailed traditions only for the inner temple. The state of the evidence is not such as to allow a plan of the temple to be formed with architectural precision. The above account rests almost entirely on Josephus, who, apart from certain . exaggerations in detail, gives a satisfactory general account, such as could be written from memory without notes and drawings.

Herod's gigantic and costly structures were still in building, forty-six years after their commencement, when our Lord began His ministry (John ii. 20), and the works were not completed till the procuratorship of Albinus (62- 64 a.p.). In 66 the great revolt against Rome broke out, and in August 70 Jerusalem was taken by Titus and the temple perished in a great conflagration."

2 Qn 10 Ab; but Jewish tradition celebrates 9 Ab as the day of the destruction of the temple.

opo-

TeaAPpL eb

4. Topography.—lt is not disputed that the site of the

saphy- temple lay within the great Haram platform (see JERU-

SALEM), now a Moslem holy place, and it is generally agreed also that the south-west corner of that platform is the south-west corner of Herod's outer plateau, parts of the southern and western retaining walls being confidently ascribed by experts to his age. But if Herod's temple (excluding the Antonia) was only 600 feet square it can have occupied but a small part of the Haram area, which measures about 1500 feet from north to south and 922 feet along the south wall. Moreover, the highest part of the hill, where the Dome of the Rock now stands, must have been outside and north of the

temple enclosure. But this affords no good reason to doubt the accuracy of Josephus's measurements in a matter in which his memory could hardly fail him, and where his tendency would be rather to exaggerate than to diminish. There is no evidence that the eastern wall of the Haram is as old as Herod, much less as old as Solomon ; for the supposed Phoenician letters found on stones belonging to it are not letters at all, and may be of any date.1_ Moreover, there are various evidences of later building about the east wall of the Haram ; the so-called Golden Gate is certainly a later construction, and Justinian's church rested on new substruc- tures to the south and east (Procopius, De Zd., v. 6), which implies an extension eastward of the old platform. And this is confirmed by the fact that in the neighbourhood of the south-east angle the platform does not rest on solid substructures such as Josephus speaks of, but on the vaults known as Solomon's stables. Again, though the temple of Solomon lay above the town, there is no evidence that it was on the very top of the hill; on the contrary, buildings of the dimensions given in 1 Kings might have been placed on the hill-top without the need for such great substructures as are spoken of in 1 Kings vii. 10; and we have seen in speaking of the courts of the first temple that the ground appears to have risen to the north, the upper court being on that side.?

If we accept the measurements of Josephus we have to break with medieval tradition, both Moslem and Christian, which associates the Sakhra or rock under the dome on the top of the hill with the sacred site of the Jews. So much weight has been laid on this circumstance by writers of eminence that it is necessary here to go into some particulars and show that earlier tradition goes quite the other way. It is a Talmudic legend that in the Holy of Holies the place of the lost ark was taken by a stone called the '' foundation stone.' Further this stone was identified with Jacob's stone at Bethel (comp. Rashi on Gen. xxviii. and Breithaupt's notes). Both Mohammedans and Christians transferred these legends to the Sakhra, which the former accordingly venerated as ''a gate of heaven" (Ibn 'Abd Rabbih, 'Zkd, iii. 369). Mohammedan sources enable us to trace back this identification to the Moslem Jew Wahb ibn Monabbih, who enriched Islam with so many Jewish fables and dicd a century aftcr Jernsalem was taken by the Arabs (Tabari, i. 571 sq. ; Ibn al-Fakih, p. 97 sg.). Eutychius, on the other hand, who is the first Christian writer to apply the Jewish legend to the Moslem Sakhra,

avers that the tradition was communicated to ‘Omar by the Christian patriarch Sophronius on the taking of Jerusalem, and guided the caliph in the choice of a site for his mosque. Kutychius wrote nearly three hundred years after this event ; and, though it is known from earlier authorities (Arculphus, Theophanes) that the first Moslem mosque was built on what was pointed out as the site of the temple, it is equally certain, and was known to Eutychius himself, that that mosque lay to the south of the Sakhra (Eutychius, ii. 289), which was not embraced in the precincts of the Moslem sanctuary till the reign of ‘Abd al-Malik, who built the dome, a§ an inscription with the date 691 still testifies (Ibid., p. 865). This is confirmed by the excellent Arabian historian Ibu Wadih (ii. 811). ‘Abd al-Malik’s motive was political, as both historians attest ; Mecca being in the hands of a rival, he resolved to set up

1 They are represented in the Recovery of Jerusalem (p. 143) and in the Adlas of plates of Jerusalem published by the Palestine Explora- tion Fund.

- That the temple was built on the threshing-floor of Ornan is naturally assumed by the Chronicler, who likes to minimize the number of old Hebrew sanctuaries ; but the old history knows nothing of a con- secration of the site before the ark was placed there.

another place of pilgrimage to supplant the Kaaba, and recommended it to the faithful as the point from which the Prophet made his miraculous ascent from Jerusalem to heaven (Ibn Wadih, wt Supra). There is nothing of the Jewish legend here ; that, as we have seen, was supplied by Wahb in the next generation, and on his fonnda- tion there grew up a mass of other fables for which it is enough to refer to Ibn al-Fakih, p. 98 sg. From all this it may be taken as certain that at the time of ‘Omar it was towards the south-west

~~angle of the Haram, on the site of the original mosque, that tradi~~

tion supposed the temple to have stood ; indeed Eutychius is guilty of self-contradiction when he first says that Sophronius indicated the Sakhra to ‘Omar as the site on which to build his mosque, and then adds that it was

not part of the Moslem sanctuary till a generation later. Finally, the extension of the Haram to the north so as to bring the Dome of the Rock into the centre of the sacred area was the work of ‘Abd al-Malik’s son Walid (Eutychius, ii. 373).

Thus far we have met with nothing but confirmation of Josephus’s measurements and the site they imply; but there are other topographical indications which supply confirmation more decisive. And first let us compare what is related of the outer gates of Herod’s temple with existing remains. On the north was the gate Tadi of the Mishnah, which Josephus mentions only incidentally. This, like the gate Shushan on the east, which he does not mention at all, must have been of minor importance ; the chief accesses were necessarily from the lower city to the south and the upper city to the west beyond the Tyropceon valley. The south wall, says Josephus, had gates in the middle (Ant. xv. 11, 5), The Mishnah names them the two gates of Huldah, which may mean “tunnel (weasel- hole) gates.” There is a double gate in the substructure of the south wall, 350 feet from the south-west angle, and from it a double tunnel leads up to the platform. This double gate exactly fits Josephus’s description. There is also a triple gate, 600 feet from the south-west angle, which those who suppose the wall to have been more than 600 feet long regard as the second Huldah gate. But this view does not give us two gates in the middle of the wall, especially as the old wall cannot have enclosed Solomon’s stables. In the west side the Mishnah places one gate (Kiponus), while Josephus recognizes four. But these accounts are at once reconciled if we accept Josephus’s measurements. For of his four gates the most southerly is necessarily the one which opened on a flight of steps descending and then reascending across the Tyropceon to the upper city opposite. Now at the south-west corner of the platform there are still remains of a great arch (Robinson’s arch), which must have belonged to a bridge connecting the upper city with the south portico of the temple. Thus one of the four gates is fixed. The second gate led to Herod’s palace (at the extreme north of the upper city) by means of an embankment crossing the Tyropceon (Ant., xv. 11, § 5). Comparing B. J, ii. 16, § 3, vi. 6, § 2, and v. 4, § 2, we see that the embankment also carried the city wall (the so-called first wall). Of this approach there are remains at Wilson’s arch, 600 feet north of Robinson’s arch*; thus, if Josephus’s measure- ments are correct, the two western

accesses were at the extreme ends of the western portico. Josephus's other two gates led to the suburbs outside the first wall, and therefore lay north of Wilson's arch, and were not gates of the temple enclosure proper but of the Antonia, which Josephus habitually reckons as part of the outer temple.* Of them the Mishnah would naturally take no account, and as naturally it would neglect the gate that led to the palace as being not a public entrance. But further,

3 The adjoining remains of ancient buildings unquestionably mark the site of the council hall where the Sanhedrim met, and which was close to the first wall and the temple but outside the latter (B. J., VartSe2; Wie Oh S13)

- One of the suburban gates may be Warren's gate, in the sub- structures of the Antonia wall, about 170 feet north of Wilson's arch. The other is sometimes identified with Barclay's gate between Wilson's arch and Robinson's arch. But this would not lead into the suburb.

XXIII. — 22

170

according to Josephus's account of the whole circumference of the temple with Antonia, the latter extended a stadium north of the north-west angle of the temple portico, 7.e., 600 feet north of Wilson's arch; and, if we measure off this distance ona plan of the rock contours and then draw a line at right angles to represent the north face of the Antonia, we find that this line runs across the narrowest part of the saddle from which the temple hill is assailable. The breadth of the Antonia from east to west cannot have been more than about 300 feet if, as is to be presumed, the gate Tadi was opposite the twin gates of Huldah ; but with this breadth it would entirely cover the dangerous saddle.

Every attempt to reconstruct the area and situation of the temple as it was before Herod must be more or less conjectural, and an analysis of the possibilities would take up so much space that it seems better simply to offer a plan which appears to satisfy the main conditions of the problem.

S

Sapte

FEeer

‘s9¢ 400 CuBITS

A. Temple. B, B, B. Inner court. C,C,C. Great court. D, E. Porches of the king’s house. F. Palace of Solomon. G, Great tower of prison court. H. House of the forest of Lebanon. J. Water gate. K. North court. L, L, L. New space taken in by Herod. MNPQ. Herod’s enclosure. NP. Solomon’s portico. PQ. Stoa Basilica or royal portico. P. Triple gate. Q. Robinson’s arch. R. Double gate (Huldah gates). M. Wilson’s arch.

According to this plan the area of the temple enclosure was doubled by Herod, his additions being in the parts where the work of levelling up was heaviest, and where neither the convenience of worshippers nor reasons of defence called on earlier builders to extend the plateau. It is certain that the substructures of the south-west angle, raised to a dizzy height above the Tyropceon, are Herod’s (Ant., xv. 11, § 5), and Josephus also speaks of an extension to the north (B.J., v. 5,§ 1). But, on the other hand, the Baris already adjoined the temple, a condition which is satisfied by giving the older north court K (correspond- ing to the new court of Chronicles, and perhaps also to the upper court of the first temple) a length from east to west of 300 feet and a breadth from north to south of 150. The old east face of the plateau is, as Josephus says, 600 feet long, but this length was gained after the time of Nehemiah by taking in the site of the armoury or house

TEMPLE

of the forest of Lebanon (H) and the street in front of the water gate (J). For the proof that the water gate stood at a re-entrant angle between the retaining walls of the armoury and the palace and faced east as shown in the plan reference must be made to an article in the Journal of Philology (vol. xvi.). The rocky boss between these two walls was in Nehemiah’s time surrounded by an out- work, which to the north joined the wall of Ophel,—that is, of the swelling mass of hill which lies out to the north-; east of the palace. From the lower city (south of the Haram area) a stair near the wall led up to the plateau H (Neh. iii. 19; xii. 37). The armoury was 150 feet

long and 75 broad; the plan allows the same dimensions for the open space within the water gate. The great court CO, C, C is arranged in accordance with 1 Kings vii. 12, in such a way that it is at once the court of the palace and that of the temple, enclosing the inner court B. The dimensions of the inner court are not given in 1 Kings, but as the temple was twice the size of the tabernacle the court was probably also double the court of the tabernacle. This gives a length of 300 feet and a breadth of 150, as in the plan. The part of the court in front of the temple is 150 feet square, which agrees with the dimensions given in Ezek. xl. 23,27. The great court is a square of 300 feet. This gives room on the east face for two porches D and E leading to the palace and each 75 feet long. Both porches are described in 1 Kings vii. 6, 8, and the dimensions of one are given. It is also expressly stated that the porch was before (7.e., on the east side of) the pillars that deco- rated its front, and that it led into the inner court of the palace, so that the arrangement in the plan is fully justified. In the time of Jeremiah (xxxviii. 14) there were three entries from the palace to the temple; the third was prob- ably into the north court, the palace having been extended northwards. It is evident that before the time of Herod the palace had disappeared. It was on a lower level than the temple, and when it was cleared away the great sub- structures on the line PE stood out as the boundary of Solomon's building. North of E the substructures were less considerable, the rock at the north end of this porch being but 20 feet under the present level of the plateau. In Herod's time, as can be seen at Robinson's arch, the level of the plateau was the same as at present (2420 feet), but in older times there was a fall between the upper and lower court, and K was probably 10 feet above C, C, C. In that case D was on the natural level of the ground, while (unless the great court was on two levels) E stood on a retaining wall 10 feet high at the north end of the porch and nearly twice as lofty at the south end. The plan shows the temple thrown out on very lofty substruc- tures, so as to be practically inaccessible on all sides and overhang the Tyropeon in the most striking way.! The whole group of buildings formed a complete defence to the city of David on its northern or vulnerable side. It will be observed that in Herod's temple the Huldah gates at R led directly to the altar, the position of which seems never to have been changed, and also that the plan explains the statement of Hecatzeus that the temple was 150 feet broad. His length of 500 feet from east to west is 50 feet too much unless he includes some remains of the old palace. The Baris

is shown as standing on the south-west corner of the existing platform of the Dome of the Rock.

A word may be said in conclusion on the ancient line of wall to the west of the temple, which, as has been shown from Neh. iii. in the article JERUSALEM, ran along the eastern side of the Tyropeeon. A bridge connected the temple with the upper city in the time of the later Has-moneans, and, as the palace (on the site of Herod's palace)

1 It ought, however, to be observed that the contour lines in and near B, B, B are almost purely conjectural.

TERM Pbk Ee

and the Baris were the points which it was most important to connect, it no doubt corresponded to the northern bridge already spoken of, at Wilson's arch M. But at that date it must have led, not directly to the temple, but to a lower point on the slope south of the Baris. In Nehemiah's time there was no bridge, but the gate of Ephraim probably corresponded to the east end of the bridge near the south- west angle of the Baris. In that case the wall, as is natural, ran close under the western substructures of the temple and probably served as a buttress to them in the part of its course south of the gate of Ephraim, which in Neh. xii. 38 is called ''the broad wall." The throne of the Persian governor, beside the gate of Ephraim (see JERUSA-LEM, vol. xiii. p. 640), stood so close to the Baris that we may conclude that there was already a castle on its site, held for the great king. The position assigned to the gate of Ephraim, which, according to 2 Kings xiv. 13, was 600 feet from the corner gate, where the north wall of the city joined the west wall, suits the fact that a line drawn east and west 600 feet north of Wilson's arch coincides with the line of scarped rock marked on the plan. Here, therefore, the old north wall ran, with the great fosse filled up by Pompey. This wall figures also in Herod's siege, but seems to have been destroyed by him.

Literature.—The literature of the subject is immense. The re- sults of modern surveys and diggings are given in the Palestine Exploration Fund volume on Jerusalem (London, 1884) and in the accompanying Atlas. Of other books it may suffice to name De Vogué, Le Temple de Jérusalem (fol.,

Paris, 1864); Fergusson, Topography of Jerusalem (8vo, London, 1847); Id., The Temples of the Jews (4to, London, 1878) ; Thrupp, Antient Jerusalem (8vo, Cambridge, 1855) ; Lewin, The Siege of Jerusalem by Titus (8vo0, London, 1868); and Perrot and Chipiez, Histoire de l' Art (Paris, 1887). (W. B.S.)

TEMPLE, Str Witttam (1628-1699), English states- man, diplomatist, and author, was born in London in 1628. He came of an old English family, but of the younger branch of it, which had for some time been settled in Ireland. He was the eldest son of Sir John Temple, master of the rolls in that country. His mother was Mary Hammond, sister of a well-known Tory divine. Temple received a liberal education, calculated to produce that moderation of judgment for which he was afterwards re- markable. He was first a pupil of his uncle Dr Hammond, after which he went to the grammar-school at Bishop Stort- ford, and then to the Puritan college of Emmanuel at Cambridge, where he came under the influence of Cud- worth. At the commencement of the civil troubles his father embraced the popular cause and was deprived of his office. Coming to England, he sat in the Long Parlia- ment as member for Chichester, and was one of the recal- citrant members turned out by Colonel Pride. Before this event happened his son had left Cambridge, without taking a degree, and in 1647 started to travel abroad. In the Isle of Wight, while on his way to France, he fell in with Dorothy Osborne, and won her affections. Her father, Sir Peter Osborne, was governor of Guernsey and a Royalist. Her family were naturally opposed to the match, and threw difficulties in the way, which hindered its consummation for seven years. During this period Temple travelled in France, Spain, Holland, and other countries, gaining knowledge of the world and keeping up a constant correspondence with his betrothed. At length, apparently in 1654, the difficulties were surmounted and the marriage took place. In 1655 Temple and his wife went to Ireland. The next five years were spent in the house of Sir John Temple, who had made his peace with Cromwell, and had resumed his official position. His son took no part in politics, but lived the life of a student and a country gentleman.

The accession of Charles IT. rescued Temple, like many others, from obscurity. In 1660 he sat in the convention

at

parliament at Dublin as member for Carlow, and he repre- sented the same county along with his father in the regular parliament that followed. After a short visit to England in 1661, as commissioner from the Irish parlia- ment, he finally removed thither in 1663. There he attached himself to Arlington, secretary of state, and two years later received his first employment abroad. It was in March 1665 that the disastrous war with the United Netherlands began. Charles II. was anxious to obtain allies, especially as Louis XIV. was taking up a hostile attitude. At this juncture the bishop of Miinster sent an envoy to England, offering to attack the Dutch if the English Government would supply the means. Temple was sent over to negotiate a treaty, and in this business gave evidence not only of the diplomatic skill but of the peculiar candour and frankness for which he was after- wards so distinguished. He was successful in making the treaty, but it was rendered ineffectual by the declaration of war by France, the threats of Louis, and the double- dealing of the prelate, who, after receiving a great part of the subsidy, made a separate peace with the Netherlands. Asa reward for his services Temple was created a baronet, and in October 1665 became the English representative at the viceregal court at Brussels. While the war con- tinued, Temple's duties consisted chiefly in cultivating good relations with Spain, which was a neutral in the quarrel between England and the Dutch, but was threat- ened by the claims of Louis XIV. on the Spanish Nether- lands. Louis's designs became apparent in the spring of 1667, when he marched an army into Flanders. This event was one of those which led to the peace of Breda, and to the subsequent negotiations, which are Temple's chief title to fame. The French conquests were made at the expense of Spain, but were almost equally dangerous to the United Netherlands, whose independence would have been forfeited had Louis succeeded in annexing Flanders. While the French were taking town after town, Temple made a journey into Holland and visited De Witt. The friendship established and the community of views dis- covered during this interview facilitated the subsequent negotiations. Temple had for some time pressed on his Government the necessity of stopping the French advance, and had pointed out the way to do so, but it was not till December 1667 that he received instructions to act as he had suggested. He at once set out for The Hague, and in January 1668 a treaty was made between England and the United

Netherlands, which, being joined shortly afterwards by Sweden, became known as the Triple Alli- ance. It was a defensive treaty, made against the en- croachments of France. Whether we regard the skill and celerity with which the negotiations were conducted or the results of the treaty, the transaction reflects great credit on Temple. The French king was checked in mid- eareer, and, without a blow being struck, was obliged to surrender almost all his conquests. Pepys records public opinion on the treaty by saying that it was “the only good public thing that hath been done since the king came into England.”

Unfortunately the policy thus indicated was but short- lived. In taking up a hostile attitude towards France Charles’s object had apparently been only to raise his price. Louis took the hint, increased his offers, and two years later the secret treaty of Dover reversed the policy of the Triple Alliance. Meanwhile Temple had developed the good understanding with the Dutch by contracting a com- mercial treaty with them (February 1668), and had acted as English plenipotentiary at Aix-la-Chapelle, where peace between France and Spain was made in May 1668. Shortly afterwards he was appointed ambassador at The Hague. Here he lived for two years on good terms both with De

Witt and with the young prince of Orange, afterwards William III. The treaty of Dover led to Temple’s recall ; but the plot was not yet ripe, and Temple nominally held his post for another year. He perceived, however, that his day was over and retired to his house at Sheen. In June 1671 he received his formal dismissal. The war with the Netherlands broke out next year, and was almost as discreditable to England as that of 1665. Want of success and the growing strength of the opposition in parliament forced Charles to make peace, and Temple was brought out of his retirement to carry through the change of front. After a negotiation of three days, carried on through the medium of the Spanish ambassador, the treaty of West- minster was made (February 1674). As a recognition of his services Temple was now offered the embassy to Spain. This he declined, as well as the offer of a far more import- ant post, that of secretary of state, but accepted instead a renewal of his embassy to The Hague, whither he went in July

1674. In the March following he was nominated ambassador to the congress at Nimeguen ; but, owing to the tortuousness of Charles's dealings, it was not till July 1676 that he entered that town. The negotiations dragged on for two years longer, for Charles was still receiving money from France, and English mediation was no more than a ruse. In the summer of 1677 Temple was sum- moned to England and received a second offer of the secretaryship of state, which he again declined. In the autumn of the same year he had the satisfaction of re- moving the last difficulties which hindered the marriage of William and Mary, an event which seemed to complete the work of 1668 and 1674. Louis still remaining obsti- nate in his demands, Temple was commissioned in July 1678 to make an alliance with the states, with the object of compelling France to come to terms. This treaty was instrumental in bringing about the general pacification which was concluded in January 1679.

This was Temple's last appearance in the field of diplomacy ; but his public life was not yet over. A third offer of the secretaryship was made to him ; but, unwilling as ever to mix himself up with faction and intrigue, he again declined. He did not, however, withdraw from politics; on the contrary, he was for a short time more prominent than ever. The state was passing through a grave crisis. Political passion was embittered by religious fanaticism. Parliament was agitated by the popish plot, and was pressing on the Exclusion Bill. The root of all the mischief lay in the irresponsibility of the cabinet to parliament and its complete subservience to the crown. To remedy this, Temple brought forward his plan fora reform of the privy council. This body was to consist of thirty members, half of whom were to be the chief officers of the crown, the other half being persons of importance, lords and commoners, chosen without reference to party. Special care was taken to select men of wealth, which Temple considered as the chief source of political influence. By the advice of this council the king promised to act. The parliament, it was supposed, would trust such a body, and would cease to dictate to the crown. The scheme was accepted by the king, but was a failure from the outset. Intended to combine the advantages of a parliament and a council, it created a board which was neither the one nor the other. The conduct of affairs fell at once into the hands of a junta of four, of whom Temple was at first one, and the king violated his promise by dissolving parlia- ment without asking the advice of the council. Temple

retired in disgust to his villa at Sheen, and appeared only occasionally at the council, where he soon ceased to exer- cise any influence. In 1680 he was nominated ambassador to Spain, but stayed in England in order to take his seat in parliament as member for the university of Cambridge.

He took no part in the debates on the great question of the day, and acting on the king's advice declined to sit in the parliament of 1681. Early in that year his name was struck off the list of the council, and henceforward he dis- appeared from public life. He continued to live at Sheen till 1686,when he handed over his estate there to his son, the only survivor of seven children, and retired to Moor Park in Surrey. When William III. came to the throne Temple was pressed to take office, but refused. His son became secretary at war, but committed suicide immediately after- wards. Sir William, though occasionally consulted by the king, took no further part in public affairs, but occupied himself in literature, gardening, and other pursuits. It should not be omitted that Swift lived with him as secre- tary during the last ten years (with one short interval) of his life. Temple died at Moor Park on 27th January 1699.

Temple's literary works are mostly political, and are of consider- able importance. Among them may be mentioned An Essay on the Present State and Settlement of Ireland (1668); The Empire, Sweden, &c., a survey of the different Governments of Europe and their relations to England (1671); Observations upon the United Provinces (1672); Essay upon the Original and Nature of Govern- ment (1672); Essay upon the Advancement of Trade in Ireland (1673). Some of these were published in the first part of his Al¢scel- lanea (1679). Inthe same year apparently his Poems were privately printed. In 1683 he began to write his Memoirs. The first part, extending from 1665 to 1671, he destroyed unpublished ; the second, from 1672 to 1679, was published without his authority in 1691; the third, from 1679 to 1681, was published by Swift in 1709. In 1692 he phe 2 the ~~second part of his Afiscellanea, containing among other subjects the essay Upon the Ancient and Modern Learning, which is remarkable only as having given rise to the famous controversy on the '' Letters of Phalaris." His Znéro~~ duction to the History of England, a short sketch of English history to 1087, was published in 1695. Several collections of his letters were published by Swift and others after his death.

His fame rests, however, far more on his diplomatic triumphs than on his literary work. His connexion with domestic affairs was slight and unsuccessful. He was debarred both by his virtues and his defects,—by his impartiality, his honesty, and his want of ambition,—from taking an active part in the disgraceful politics of his time. But in the foreign relations of his country he was intimately concerned for a period of fourteen years, and in all that is praiseworthy in them he had a principal hand. He cannot be called great, but he will be remembered as one of the ablest negotiators that England has produced, and as a public servant who, in an unprincipled age and in circumstances peculiarly open to corruption, preserved a blameless record.

See Life and Works of Sir William Temple, 2 vols. fol.,*1720; 2d ed., with Life by Lady Giffard, 1731; a more complete edition, including the Letters, was published in 4 vols. 8vo, 1814; Burnet, History of his own Time ; Courtenay, Memoirs of the Life, &c., of Sir William Temple, 2 vols., 1836; Macaulay, Essay on Sir William Temple. (G. W. P.)

TENANT. See LANDLORD AND TENANT.

TENASSERIM, a division of the province of British Burmah, lying between 9° 30’ and 19° 30’ N. lat. and 95° 50’ and 99° 30’ E. long. It has an area of 46,730 square miles and comprises the seven districts of Moulmein town, Amherst, Tavoy, Mergui, Shwagyin, Toungoo, and Salwin, which formed the tract south of Pegu conquered from Burmah in 1826, and were for many years generally known as the Tenasserim provinces. The southern ex- tremity of the division approaches the insular region of Malaysia, and it is fringed along its entire western coast by a number of islands, forming in the north the Moscos and in the south the Mergui Archipelago. The eastern frontier is formed by a mountain range 5000 feet high, which acts as a water-parting between the Tenasserim and the Siamese river systems.

The population of the division in 1881 was 825,741 (437,900 males and 387,841 females). By religion Hindus numbered 23,145, Mohammedans 24,786, Christians 28,315, Buddhists 698,304, and Nat worshippers 51,160. The cultived area in 1885-86 was returned at 729,251 acres. The gross

revenue in the same year was £184, 162, of which the land-tax yielded £107,631.

TENBY, a municipal and parliamentary borough and watering-place of Pembrokeshire, South Wales, is finely situated on a long and narrow promontory of limestone rock, washed on three sides by the sea, on the west side of

——

Carmarthen Bay, and on a branch of the South Wales Railway, 10 miles east of Pembroke and 274 west of London (by rail). Its chief attractions as a watering-place are its picturesque appearance, its antiquarian remains, its equable and salubrious climate, and its wide stretch of firm sands. There are considerable remains of the old fortifica- tions of the town, dating originally from the Norman Con- quest, and repaired by Elizabeth, whose initials with the date 1588 are inscribed on a stone near the fine south-west gate, which with the south-west and north-west walls is in very good preservation. The remains of the castle on a lofty rock at the extremity of the promontory include the keep, a circular bastion overhanging the cliffs, and portions of the outer wall. Within the grounds, which are laid out in walks, there is a local museum; and on the summit of the hill is the Welsh memorial to the Prince Consort, a statue of Sicilian marble (1865). Opposite the castle, about 100 yards distant and accessible on foot at low water, is St Catherine’s Island, on which is a strong fort begun in 1868, forming one of the land defences of Pem- broke dockyard, The parish church of St Mary is a large and beautiful building, showing every variety of style from the Norman of the 12th to the Tudor of the late 16th century ; it has a massive tower with a spire rising to a height of 152 feet. In the north aisle are some medieval altar tombs and in the south aisle one of the early Tudor period. The fisheries of Tenby, for which the place was noted at a very early period, are still of importance. The trade of the port is inconsiderable. Steamers, however, ply to Bristol, Cardiff, Ilfracombe, and Weston-super- Mare. Inthe neighbourhood there are extensive limestone quarries. The population of the municipal and _parlia- mentary borough (area 640 acres) in 1871 was

3810, and in 1881 it was 4750. In summer it is augmented by more than a half.

Tenby has the same derivation as Denbigh in North Wales. Anciently it was called Dynbych-y-Pyscod, the “ precipice of fishes.” The importance of the town dates from the settlement of the Flemings in the reign of Henry I. In 1150 Cadell, eldest son of Rhys ab Gryffith, was slain by the people of Tenby, in revenge for which the castle was taken and the town devastated by his two brothers Meredith and Rhys. During the Wars of the Roses the fortifications were restored and strengthened by Jaspar, earl of Pembroke. They were again greatly strengthened by Elizabeth in apprehension of the landing of the Spaniards. At the beginning of the Civil War the town and castle were garrisoned for the king, but in 1644 it surrendered to the Parliamentarians after a siege of three days. Its privileges were extended by Humphrey, duke of Gloucester, who made the mayor an independent justice, and by Henry IV., Henry VI., Elizabeth, and Charles I. It is now governed by the Municipal Act, and the corporation are the sani- tary authority. Since the 27th of Henry VIII. it has formed part of the Pembroke district of boroughs for parliamentary repre- sentation.

TENCH, the Zinca tinca of naturalists, is one of the commonest and most widely spread freshwater fishes of Europe. It is generally distributed in all suitable local- ities throughout England, but is limited to a few lakes and ponds in the south of Scotland and in Ireland. As the tench is of comparatively uncommon occurrence in unen- closed waters, its place among the indigenous fishes of Great Britain has been denied, and it has been supposed to have been introduced from the Continent. In central Europe, however, where it is undoubtedly indigenous, it thrives best in enclosed, preserved waters, with a clayey or muddy bottom and with an abundant vegetation ; it avoids clear waters with stony ground, and is altogether absent from rapid streams. The tench belongs to the family of carps (Cyprinide), and is distinguished from the other members of that family by its very small scales, which are deeply embedded in a thick skin, whose surface 1s as slippery as that of an eel. All the fins have a rounded outline ; the short dorsal fin is without a spine, but the

males possess a very thick and flattened outer ray in the ventral fins. The mouth is rather narrow and provided at each corner with a very small barbel. Tench if kept in suitable waters are extremely prolific, and as they grow within a few years to a weight of 3 or 4 ib, and are then fit for the table, they may be profitably introduced

Tench (Tinca tinca).

into ponds which are already stocked with other fishes, such as carp and pike. They live on small animals or soft vegetable substances, which they root up from the ground. The albino variety especially, which is known as the “golden tench,” can be recommended for ornamental waters, as its bright orange colours render it visible for some distance below the surface of the water. This variety, which seems to have been originally bred in Silesia, is not less well- flavoured than the normally coloured tench, and grows to the same size, viz., to 6 and even 8 b.

TENDER. See PayMEnrT.

TENERIFFE. See Canary Istanps, vol. iv. p. 798.

TENIERS, Davin (1610-1690), the younger, a Flemish painter, almost ranking in celebrity with Rubens and Van Dyck, was born in Antwerp on 15th December 1610, His father, David Teniers the elder (1582-1649), whose style he followed with a vastly superior power of concep- tion, had been a pupil of Elsheimer in Rome and of Rubens in Antwerp. Besides these influences, we can also dis- tinctly trace that of Adrian Brouwer at the outset of his career. Although the young painter’s general system often reminds us of Rubens, several of his works also betray a vivid recollection of Brouwer in type as well as general arrangement. There is no evidence, however, that either Rubens or Brouwer interfered in any way with Teniers’s education, and Smith may be correct in supposing that the admiration which Brouwer’s pictures at one time ex- cited alone tempted the younger artist to imitate them. The only trace of personal relations having existed between Teniers and Rubens is the fact that the ward of the latter, Anne Breughel, the daughter of John (Velvet) Breughel, married Teniers in 1637. Admitted as a “master” in the guild of St Luke in 1632, Teniers had even before this made the public acquainted with his works.

The Berlin museum possesses a group of ladies and gentlemen dated 1630. No special signature positively distinguishes these first productions from those of his father, and we do not think it correct to admit with some writers that he first painted religious subjects. Dr Bode, in a most remarkable study of Brouwer and his works, expresses the opinion that Teniers's earliest pictures are those found under the signa- ture ''Tenier" (with the omission of the final s). Tenier is in reality a Flemish version of a thoroughly Walloon name, '"Taisnier," which the painter's grandfather, a mercer, brought with him when he came from Ath in 1558, and Bode's supposition is greatly strengthened by the circum- stance that not only David the elder but his brother Abraham and his four sons were all inscribed as ''Tenier." in the ledgers of the Antwerp guild of St Luke. Some really first-rate works—the Prodigal Son and a group of Topers in the Munich gallery, as well as a party of gentle- men and ladies at dinner, termed the Five Senses, in the

174 ;

Brussels museum—with the above signature are remark- able instances of the perfection attained by the artist when he may be supposed to have been scarcely twenty. His touch is of the rarest delicacy, his colour at once gay and harmonious. Both Waagen and Smith express the opinion that the works painted from 1645 to 1650 speak most highly of the master's abilities. We may venture to add that a considerable number of earlier productions would have been sufficient to immortalize his name. He was little over thirty when the Antwerp guild of St George enabled him to paint the marvellous picture which ulti- mately found its way to the Hermitage Gallery in St Peters- burg,—the Jubilee Meeting of the Civic Guards, in honour of their old commander, Godfrey Sneyders. Correct to the minutest detail, yet striking in effect, the scene, under the rays of a glorious sunshine, displays an astonishing amount of acquired knowledge and natural good taste. This paint- ing, one of forty among many of the master's earlier and later productions,! leads us to mention another work of the same year (1643), now in the National Gallery, London (No. 952), an equally beautiful repetition of which, dated 1646, belongs to the duke of Bedford. A hundred and fifty figures are resting after a pilgrimage to some holy shrine or some miraculous well. The hungry travellers are waiting for the meal which is being prepared for them in several huge caldrons. Truth in physiognomy,

distribution of groups, the beautiful effect of light and shade, command our warmest admiration. A work like this, says Waagen, stamps its author as the greatest among painters of his class. That, however, a subject of the kind should have been accepted as a “feast” (see the National Gallery Catalogue) may tend to prove how little, from the first, Teniers thought of dramatizing. Frankness in expression and freedom in attitude certainly guided his preference in the choice of a model, and we may even suppose him to have occasionally exaggerated both. He seems anxious to have it known that, far from indulging in the coarse amusements of the boors he is fond of painting, he himself lives in good style, looks like a gentleman, and behaves as such. He never seems tired of showing the turrets of his chateau of Perck, and in the midst of rustic merry-makings we often see his family and himself received cap in hand by the joyous peasants. We may also observe that he has a certain number of favourite models, the constant recur- rence of which is a special feature of his works. We even meet them in a series of life-size portrait-like figures in the Doria Pamphili Gallery in Rome,? as well as in a picture belonging to Mr H.R. Hughes, and the man here repre- sented as a fishmonger is unmistakably the painter’s brother, Abraham Teniers, judging from the portrait Edelinck has left us of this artist.

Teniers was chosen by the common council of Antwerp to preside over the guild of painters in 1644. The arch- duke Leopold William, who had assumed the government of the Spanish Netherlands, being a great lover of art, employed Teniers not only as a painter but as keeper of the collection of pictures he was then forming. With the rank and title of ‘‘ayuda de camara,” Teniers took up his abode in Brussels shortly after 1647. Immense sums were spent in the acquisition of paintings for the archduke. A number of valuable works of the Italian masters, now in the Belvedere in Vienna, came from Leopold’s gallery after having belonged to Charles I. and the duke of Buckingham. De Bie (1661) states that Teniers was some time in London, collecting pictures for the duke of Fuensaldafia, then acting as Leopold’s lieutenant in the Netherlands. Paintings in

1 The Hermitage Catalogue ascribes to Abraham Teniers the portrait of a bishop. This painting is, however, by David, and represents the celebrated bishop of Ghent, Anthony Triist, with his brother Francis, a Franciscan monk, 2 Under the name of Weeninx.

Madrid, Munich, Vienna, and Brussels have enabled art critics to form an opinion of what the imperial residence was at the time of Leopold, who is represented as con- ducted by Teniers and admiring some recent acquisition. No picture in the gallery is omitted, every one being in- scribed with a number and the name of its author, so that the ensemble of these paintings might serve as an illus. trated inventory of the collection.* Still more interesting is a canvas, now in the Munich gallery, where we see Teniers at work in a room of the palace, with an old peasant as a model and several gentlemen looking on. When Leopold returned to Vienna, Teniers's task ceased ; in fact, the pictures also travelled to Austria, and a Flemish priest, himself a first-rate flower painter, Van der Baren, became keeper of the archducal gallery. Teniers never- theless remained in high favour with the new governor- general, Don Juan, a natural son of Philip IV. The prince was his pupil, and De Bie tells us he took the likeness of the painter's son. Honoured as one of the greatest painters in Europe, Teniers seems to have made himself extremely miserable through his aristocratic leanings. Shortly after the death of his wife in 1656 he married Isabella de Fren, daughter of the secretary of the council of Brabant, and strove his utmost to prove his right to armorial bearings. In a petition to the king he reminded him that the honour of knighthood had been bestowed upon Rubens and Van Dyck. The king at last declared his readiness to grant the request, but on the express condition that Teniers should give up selling his pictures. The condition was not complied with; but it may perhaps account for the master's activity in favour of the foundation in Antwerp of an academy of fine arts to which artists alone should be admitted, whereas the venerable guild of St Luke made no difference between art and handicraft : carvers, gilders, bookbinders, stood on an even footing with painters and sculptors, however great their talent.4 There were great rejoicings in Antwerp when, on 26th January 1663, Teniers came from Brussels with the royal charter of the academy, the existence of which was due entirely to his personal initiative.

Teniers died in Brussels on 25th April 16905 A picture in the Munich gallery (No. 906), dated 1680, represents him as an alchemist, oppressed with a burden of age beyond his years. From this date we hear more of his doings as a picture-dealer than as a painter, which most probably gave birth

to the legend of his having given himself out as deceased in order to get higher prices for his works. David, his eldest son, a painter of talent and reputation, died in 1685. One of this third Teniers's pictures—St Dominic Kneeling before the Blessed Virgin, dated 1666—is still to be found in the church at Perck. As well as his father, he contributed many patterns to the celebrated Brussels tapestry looms. Cornelia, the painter's daughter, married John Erasmus Quellin, a well-known artist (1634-1715).

Smith's Catalogue Raisonné gives descriptions of over 700 paint- ings accepted as original productions of Teniers. Few artists ever worked with greater ease, and some of his smaller pictures—land- scapes with figures—have been termed ''afternoons," not from their subjects, but from the time spent in producing them. The museums in Madrid, St Petersburg, Vienna, Munich, Dresden, Paris, London, and Brussels have more than 200 pictures by Teniers. In the United Kingdom 150 may be found in private hands, and many other examples are to be met with in private collections throughout Europe. Although the spirit of many of these works

3 It was not until recently that the MS. inventory of this collection was discovered among the papers of the prince of Schwartzenberg in Vienna. It was published in 1883 by Adolf Berger. In 1658 Teniers published 243 etchings after the best Italian works of Leopold William's collection, which, with the portraits of the archduke and Teniers, were brought together as a volume in 1660, under the title Hl Teatro de Pinturas. 4 The separation was only obtained in 1778.

5 The date is often wrongly given as 1694 or 1695.

is as a whole marvellous, their conscientiousness must be regarded as questionable. Especially in the later productions we often detect a lack of earnestness and of the calm and concentrated study of nature which alone prevent expression from degenerating into grimace in situations like those generally depicted by Teniers. His education, and still more his real and assumed position in society, to agreat degree account for this. Brouwer knew more of taverns ; Ostade was more thoroughly at home in cottages and humble dwell- ings; Teniers throughout triumphs in broad daylight,

and, though many of his interiors may be justly termed masterpieces, they seldom equal his open-air scenes, where he has, without constraint, given full play to the bright resources of his luminous palette. In this respect, as in many others, he almost invariably suggests compari- sons with Watteau. Equally sparkling and equally joyous, both seem to live in an almost ideal world, where toil, disease, and poverty may exist, but to be soon forgotten, and where sunshine seems everlasting. But his subjects taken from the Gospels or sacred legend are absurd. An admirable picture in the Louvre shows Peter Denying his Master, next to a table where soldiers are smoking and having a game at cards. He likes going back to subjects illustrated two centuries before by Jerome Bosch—the Temptation of St Anthony, the Rich Man in Hell, incantations, and witches—for the simple purpose of assembling the most comic apparitions. His villagers drink, play bowls, dance, and sing ; Rey seldom quarrel or fight, and, if they do, seem to be shamming. His powers certainly declined with advancing age; the works of 1654 begin to look hasty. But this much may be said of Teniers, that no other painter shows a more enviable ability to render a conception to his own and other people's satisfaction. His works have a technical freshness, a straightforwardness in means and intent, which make the study of them most delightful; as Sir Joshua Reynolds says, they are worthy of the closest attention of any painter who desires to excel in the mechanical knowledge of his art.

As an etcher Teniers compares very unfavourably with Ostade, Cornelis, Bega, and Dusart. More than 500 plates were made from his pictures; and, ifit be true that Louis XIV. judged his "baboons" (magots) unworthy of a place in the royal collections, they found admirable engravers in France—Le Bas and his scholars—and passionate admirers. The duke of Bedford's admirable specimen was sold for 18,030 livres (£1860) in 1768. The Prodigal Son, now in the Louvre, fetched 30,000 livres (£8095) in 1776. Smith's highest estimates have long since been greatly exceeded. The Archers in St Petersburg he gives as worth £2000. The Belgian Government gave £5000 in 1867 for the Village Pastoral of 1652, which is now in the Brussels museum ; and a picture of the Prodigal Son, scarcely 16 by 28 inches, fetched £5280 in 1876.

Although Van Tilborgh, who was a scholar of Teniers in Brussels, followed his style with some success, and later painters often excelled in figure-painting on a small scale, Teniers cannot be said to have formed a school. Properly speaking, he is the last representative of the great Flemish traditions of the 17th century.

See T. Smith, A Catalogue Raisonné of the Works of the most Eminent Dutch, Flemish, and French Painters; John Vermoelen, Notice historique sur David Teniers et sa famille; L. Galesloot, Quelques renseignements sur la famille de P. P. Rubens et le décés de David Teniers and Un procés de David Teniers et la corporation des peintres & Bruaelles; Alph. Wauters, Histoire des environs de Bruaelles and Les tapisseries bruxelloises; F.T. Van der Brandern, Ge- schiedenis der Antwerpsche Schilderschool; Max Rooses, Geschichte der Maler- etined Antwerpens; W. Bode, Adriaen Browwer, ein Bild seins Lebens und seines

chaffens,

TENIMBER. See Trmor Lavr.

TENISON, THomas (1636-1715), archbishop of Canter- bury, was the son of Rev. John Tenison, rector of Mundsley, Norfolk, by Mary, daughter of Thomas Dowson of Cottenham, Cambridgeshire, where he was born on 29th September 1636. He was educated at the free school, Norwich, whence he entered Corpus Christi College, Cam- bridge, asa scholar on Archbishop Parker’s foundation. He graduated B.A. in 1657, M.A. in 1660, was chosen fellow in 1662, and became B.D. in 1667. For a short time he studied medicine, but in 1659 was privately ordained. In 1667 he was presented to the living of Holywell-cum- Needingworth, Huntingdonshire, by the earl of Manchester, to whose son he had been tutor, and in 1670 to that of St Peter’s Mancroft, Norwich. In 1680 he received the degree of D.D., and was presented by Charles II. to the important cure of St Martin’s-in-the-Fields. Tenison, ac- cording to Burnet, “endowed schools, set up a public library, and kept many curates to assist him in his inde- fatigable labours.” Being a strenuous opponent of the Church of Rome, and “ Whitehall lying within that parish, he stood as in the front of the battle all King James’s reign.”

In 1678, in a Discourse of Idolatry, he had endeavoured to fasten the practices of heathenish idolatry on the Church of Rome, and in a sermon which he published in 1681 on Discretion in Giving Alms was attacked by Andrew Pulton, head of the Jesuits in the Savoy. Tenison's reputation as an enemy of Catholicism led the duke of Monmouth to send for him before his execution in 1685, when Bishops Ken and Turner refused to administer the Eucharist ; but, although Tenison spoke to him in "a softer and less per- emptory manner " than the two bishops, he was, like them, not satisfied with the sufficiency of Monmouth's penitence. Under William, Tenison was in 1689 named a member of the ecclesiastical commission appointed to prepare matters towards a reconciliation of the Dissenters, the revision of the liturgy being specially entrusted to him. A sermon which he preached on the commission was published the same year. He appears to have been better satisfied with the religious sentiments of Nell Gwynn on the approach of death than with those of the duke of Monmouth, for in 1691 he preached her funeral sermon, in which he re- presented her as truly penitent,—a charitable judgment which did not meet with universal approval. The general liberality of Tenison's religious views commended him to the favour of William, and, after being made bishop of Lincoln in 1691, he was promoted to the primacy in December 1694. He attended Mary during her last ill- ness and preached her funeral sernion in Westminster Abbey. When William in 1695 went to take command of the army in the Netherlands, Tenison was appointed one of the seven lords justices to whom his authority was delegated. Along with Burnet he attended William on his deathbed, and it was from their hands that he received the Eucharist. He crowned Queen Anne, but during her reign was not in much favour at court. He was a commissioner for the Union in 1706. A strong supporter of the Hanoverian succession, he was one of the three officers of state to whom on the death of Anne was entrusted the duty of appointing a regent till the arrival of George I., whom he crowned on 31st October 1714. Tenison died at London on 14th December of the following year. Besides the sermons and tracts above mentioned, and various others on different points of the Popish con- troversy, Tenison was the author of The Creed of Mr Hobbes examined (1670) and Baconia, or Certain Genuine Remains of Lord Bacon (1679).

The Memotrs of the Life and Times of the Most Rev. Father in God, Dr Thomas Tenison, late Archbishop of Canterbury, appeared with- out date not long after his death. See also Burnet's History of his own Time and Macaulay's History of England.

TENNANT, Wiiiram (1784-1848), author of Anster Fair, was born in 1784 at Anstruther in Fifeshire, the birthplace of two other contemporary Scottish worthies, Thomas Chalmers and John Goodsir. He was lame from childhood, like his more famous contemporaries Byron and Scott, and this probably determined his father, who was a small merchant and farmer, to educate him for a scholarly career. But the paternal means failed before he had com- pleted his curriculum at St Andrews, and he was obliged to return home and act for some eight years of his early manhood as clerk to one of his brothers, a corn-factor. The corn-factor's clerk, however, under the impulse of a genius for language and a strong delight in literature, be- sides Greek and Latin and Hebrew, mastered, during his leisure, Italian and German, and not only read, but set himself to imitate, Ariosto and Wieland. And, strange to say, this poor youth, in a remote country town, anticipated the fashion of mock-heroic verse, which was set for England by "the ingenious brothers Whistlecraft," and which gave Byron the hint for his Don Juan. Anster Fair, a fantastic poem in offava rima, amazingly fluent, brimming over with

high spirits, rich almost to excess in diction and fanciful imagery, was written by Tennant in 1811, when his brother's business had failed and he did not know where to look for employment. Its publication in 1812 brought the poet into notice, and employment was found for him as school-master of the parish of Dunino, near St Andrews. From this he was promoted (1816) to the school of Lasswade, near Edinburgh; from that (1819) to a mastership in Dollar academy ; from that (1831), by Lord Jeffrey, who had written an admiring review of Anster Mair, to the professorship of Oriental languages in St Andrews. Ten- nant never fulfilled

the promise of his first poem, which reads as if it had been dashed off in a fit of careless and happy inspiration, and never flags in its humorous glee from the first stanza to the last. Zhe Thane of Fife (1822), in which he essayed the same vein, evidently cost him more pains, shows the same high reach of humorous imagination, and is indeed, as he claimed for it, “bold in its style and rare, fantastic, and sublime.” But the subject was more remote from general interest; the mock-epic machinery, with all his wealth of grotesque description, was too far-fetched for the popular taste; and the poem fell flat. A third poem, in the Scotch dialect, Papistry Stormed (1827), though full of the most spirited descrip- tion, was also in a vein of humour that found few sympa- thizers. He wrote also two historical dramas, Cardinal Beaton (1823) and John Baliol (1825). His last published work was a series of Hebrew Dramas (1845), founded on incidents in Bible history. He died near Dollar, on 15th February 1848.

A Memoir of Tennant by M. F. Conolly was published in 1861.

TENNENT, Sir James Emerson (1794-1869), English politician and traveller, the third son of William Emerson, a merchant of Belfast, was born there on 7th April 1794. He was educated at Trinity College, Dublin, of which he became LL.D. After travelling in Greece, where he made the acquaintance of Lord Byron, whose sentiments in re- gard to the Greek cause he fully shared, he studied for the bar and was called at Lincoln’s Inn in 1831. He published a Picture of Greece (1826), Letters from the digean (1829), and a History of Modern Greece (1830). On his marriage to the daughter and heiress of William Tennent, a wealthy merchant at Belfast, he adopted by royal licence the name of his wife in addition to his own. He entered parliament in 1832 as member for Belfast. In 1841 he became secretary to the India Board, and in 1845 he was knighted and appointed colonial secretary of Ceylon, where he remained till 1850. The result of his residence there appeared in Christianity in Ceylon (1850) and Ceylon, Physical, Historical, and Topographical (2 vols., 1859). On his return he became member for Lisburn, and under Lord Derby was secretary to the Poor Law Board from February to November 1852. From then till 1867 he was permanent secretary to the Board of Trade, and on his retirement he received a baronetcy from Lord Palmer- ston. In his early years his political views had a Radical tinge, and, although he subsequently joined the Tories,

his Conservatism was of a mild type. He withdrew from the Whigs along with Lord Stanley and Sir James Graham, and afterwards adhered to Peel. He died in London on 6th August 1869.

Besides the books above mentioned, he wrote Belgium in 1840 (1841) and Wine, its Duties and Taxation (1855), and was a con-

tributor to magazines and a frequent correspondent of Notes and Queries.

TENNESSEE, one of the United States of North America, the third added (June 1796) to the original thirteen, its predecessors having been Vermont (1791) and Kentucky (1792). Tennessee is bounded on the E. by the Unaka Mountains, which divide it from North Carolina,

Alabama, and Mississippi; on the W. by the Mississippi river, dividing it from Arkansas and Missouri; and on the N. by a line which erroneous surveys have caused to vary greatly from the intended boundary,—the line of lat. 36° 30’ N.—the variations all being measured to the north of that parallel. The actual boundary commences at the north-east corner of the State 7 miles north of 36° 30’, and continues at that distance as far as the frontier of Virginia and Kentucky, where it diminishes to 5 miles; thence to about its intersection with 86° 30’ W. it increases to 11 miles; thence a deflexion southwards to a point about 2 miles from the Cumberland reduces it to 10 miles; there it suddenly shoots north again to 12 miles, which distance is increased to 124 by the time it strikes the Tennessee ; on the other side of that river it becomes very nearly coincident with the normal 36° 30’; and to that line it adheres with very slight aberrations until it strikes the Mississippi. The eastern boundary has one deviation from the stipulated line: it runs along the culminating ridge of the Unakas till within 26 miles of the Georgia frontier, when it turns due south, giving to Tennessee a triangular piece of territory which should belong to North Carolina. The area of the State was 41,750 square miles in 1880, Its extreme length is 432 miles and its width 109.

Configuration and Geology.—Commencing at the eastern Geology,

frontier, the State of Tennessee is divided into several districts, having distinct characteristics and separated by well-marked natural boundaries, whose general direction from north-east to south-west corresponds with the trend of the main valleys (see the geological sketch map in- serted on pl. IT.).

1. The mountain region of East Tennessee is a long nar- row belt of very irregular surface, comprised between the Unaka Range and a disjointed chain of lower mountains, the principal of which are called the Chilhowee Range, and the whole of which may be considered as constituting the secondary mountain system of the State. The inter- vening space is occupied by broken masses forming hills, mountains, and valleys, some parallel to the principal ranges, some crossing the space at right angles to them. This region varies in width from 28 miles to about 7. All the rocks of this region and the next to it belong to what constitute in England the Silurian and Cambrian systems, the former being found in the western and the latter in the eastern part of the district. It has been contended that some metamorphic rocks near the crest of the mountains belong to the Archaic (Huronian and Laurentian) system ; but the preponderance of geological opinion now assigns them to the same formations as the neighbouring rocks, the difference in structure being due to metamorphic action. The lowest of these, called in Tennessee the Ocoee group, is believed to be coeval with the Potsdam group of the American system,—the Lower Silurian and perhaps the Upper Cambrian of the British Isles. It consists chiefly of slates and conglomerates, with the sandstones of the Chilhowee group above. Above these last are the Knox dolomite group, with its shales and limestone more separated from the other two groups and perhaps not exactly corresponding to any other recog- nized formations. The crystalline metamorphic rocks are mainly syenitic and micaceous gneiss, with micaceous, horn- blendic, and talcose schists. Occasional small dykes of diorite, greenstone, and basalt traverse these rocks, some- times interstratified, but oftener breaking through them.

2. The rocks of the first division are tilted at very high angles ; those of the second division, the eastern valley of the Tennessee, are fractured and distorted at nearly every conceivable angle, and, in consequence, it is the edges of the uplifted strata which here form the surface. The strata

on the §. by the line of lat. 35° N., dividing it from Georgia, | have been eaten away to form valleys, or left standing as

ridges, giving the whole tract a deeply channelled character, the ridges consisting of sandstone and dolomite and the valleys of friable schists. These all trend in the prevalent direction of the Appalachian upheaval, from north-east to south-west. The rivers take the same directions, except when they break through transverse fissures in the ridges, or work round their terminations where they give way to the outcropping of other rocks ; in these cases the current runs at right angles to their prevalent direction. All these formations belong to the Silurian period, the oldest cropping out to the eastward, the later members appearing to the westward. In some spots the Subcarboniferous rocks which once covered the entire valley have escaped the erosive action which swept the rest away. The whole district is a valley of denudation which has been excavated by the Tennessee and its tributaries,—some breaking through the Unaka barrier, and others descending from Virginia along the longitudinal valleys above described.

3. Rising in a steep elevation at from 800 to 1200 feet above the average level of the eastern valley of the Ten- nessee is the plateau popularly called the Cumberland Mountain. This mass, superincumbent on the Silurian system, consists of four very distinctly marked formations, —(i.) the Devonian black shale, (ii.) the Subcarboniferous silicious beds, (iii.) the Mountain Limestone, (iv.) the Coal- measures. These can easily be distinguished one above another on the face of the eastern escarpment ; but on the western side the first two extend in a wide plain far beyond the base of the plateau, constituting the fourth district. The Mountain Limestone is shaly at the bottom, and more solid at the top, where it abounds in silicious concretions. The Coal-measures consist of thick slabs of sandstone and conglomerate with the seams of coal interstratified between them. In its southern portion the plateau is divided longi- tudinally by the narrow valley of the Sequatchie river, which cuts deep into the subjacent Silurian beds. The portion east of this valley, known as Walden’s Ridge, has its strata much disturbed and tilted, conformably with the Silurian rocks below; the western portion, on the con- trary, has all its strata nearly horizontal. This formation, averaging about 40 miles in width, is divided by a stratum of conglomerate 80 feet thick into the upper and lower Coal-measures, the former of which are much the more productive, but cover a less area, large portions of it hav- ing been carried away by denudation. These coal-seams

are believed to average an aggregate thickness of 8 feet and to cover an area of 5000 square miles.

4, 5,6. The Subcarboniferous area, the central basin, and the western valley of the Tennessee can best be con- sidered together. They consist of the Subcarboniferous silicious beds, together with the basins formed by their erosion. On the western face of the Carboniferous belt the Mountain Limestone has been carried away with the harder rocks of the Coal-measures above it, but the under- lying silicious beds have resisted all erosive forces and are spread out over an extended area on both sides of the Mississippi. In Tennessee they form a margin round the central basin and are styled by local geologists the ‘ high- land rim.” They consist of two strata, a lower one dis- tinguished by the absence of lime and iron, and an upper one which contains both these materials in abundance. Both members consist mainly of a peculiar gravel, formed of silicious concretions embedded in a stiff retentive clay. The upper stratum has in addition considerable horizontal beds of limestone; it contains abundant fossils of a large coral, Lithostrotion canadense, by which it is easily recog- nized, is very fertile, and possesses inexhaustible beds of limonite. The lower stratum is destitute of both fossils and minerals and is of but little account for agriculture. Excavated from this formation is the central valley of

te /

Tennessee (No. 5), surrounded on all sides by an escarp- ment of about 200 feet in depth, by which descent is made from the “rim” into the valley. All the members of the Silurian period, except the three lowest, are represented in this valley, which has been formed by the erosive action of the rivers within its borders: its higher strata were carried off northwards by the Cumberland and its tribu- taries, westward by the Duck, and southward by the Elk, the last two being tributaries of the Tennessee. A channel of erosion along the lower portion of the Duck river con- nects this valley with another (No. 6) much narrower—the western valley of the Tennessee—where again the Silurian beds have been reached by the removal of the Subcarbon- iferous formations above them. Again, south of the main basin, the portion drained by the Elk is nearly separated from the rest by a number of

detached hills of the Subcar- boniferous formation, marking the watershed which divides the headwaters of the Elk from those of the Duck.

7, 8, 9, 10. A little west of the Tennessee river the Palzeozoic rocks disappear under the Cretaceous formations (No. 7), and these in their turn are covered successively by the Tertiary, Quaternary, and recent formations (Nos. 8, 9, and 10). The tract of ground covered by these four formations constitutes the Mississippi slope of western Tennessee, all of whose rivers run westward and discharge into the Mississippi. The dip of the strata is very slight, and the surface inclines with a very gentle slope.

In general terms, the territory embraced in Tennessee may be described as a great mountain chain on the east, from the foot of which extends a gently inclined plane, interrupted by an elevation, the Cumberland or Carboni- ferous plateau, and a depression, the central valley.

Ztivers.—The Cumberland and the Tennessee are the principal Rivers.

channels of inland navigation, while the Mississippi, washing the whole western frontier of the State, is its outlet to the Gulf of Mexico. The headwaters and embouchure of the Cumberland are in Kentucky, but much the greater part of its navigable stream is in Tennessee. From its confluence with the Ohio, at Smithland, Kentucky, to Nashville, a distance of 200 miles, it is generally navigable for eight months in the year, and during high water it is sometimes accessible to light-draft steamboats more than 300 miles further. The Tennessee rises in Virginia, crosses east Tennes- see in a south-western direction, and enters Alabama a little above Bridgeport ; in that State it assumes successively a westerly and a northerly direction, and then re-enters Tennessee and crosses the State northwards to its confluence with the Ohio at Paducah, Ken- tucky. Its navigable waters are divided by obstructions into three portions,—(1) from the mouth to Florence, Alabama, 300 miles, where navigation is arrested by the Muscle shoals; (2) thence through Alabama, about 100 miles, when the river breaks through the Cumberland Mountain; and (8) from Chattanooga to Kingston, about 100 miles further.

Agriculiwre.—In 1880 the number of farms was 165,650, embrac- Agricul- The ture.

ing 8,496,556 acres of improved land, valued at $206,749, 837.

principal productions are Indian corn, wheat, oats, cotton, tobacco, potatoes, pea-nuts, and hay, particulars of which for different years are shown in the following table :—

| SS ee Oe

Indian corn|52,089,926 bush.|41,343,614 bush.|62, 764,429 bush.|65,723,000 bush.

Wheat ….| 5,459,268 6,188,916 ,, | 7,331,353 ,, | 9,320,000 ,, ORtS ens os 2,267,814 4,513,315 ,, | 4,722,190 ,, | 7,680,000 Cotton 296,464 bales.| 181,842 bales.| 330,621 bales.} 313,807 bales. Tobacco ../43,448,097 th. {21,465,452 tb. [29,365,052 tb. [31,392,000 Ib. Potatoes ..| 3,786,677 bush.| 2,330,020 bush.| 3,724,382 bush.) 2,390,000 bush.

186,698 tons.

217,316 tons.

148,499 tons. 116,582 tons.

In 1884 1,250,000 bushels of pea-nuts were produced, as against

800,000 in 1883. In recent years considerable attention has been given to the cultivation of fruit and vegetables.

The live stock statistics in different years are shown in the table which follows next :—

Mules and

Cattle. ieee

Pigs.

Horses. Sheep.

126,345 102,983 173,498 187,208

290, 882 247,254 266,119 288,604

764,732 643,696 783,674 801,823

773,317 2,347,321 1,828,690 2,160,495 2,122,646

XXIII. — 23

178

Minerals.—The chief minerals found in the State are coal, iron, copper, zinc, lead, and manganese. Of coal the output was 494,491 tons in 1880 and 1,100,000 tons in 1885 ; in the latter year there were also 268, 400 tons of coke. In 1880 there were produced 89,933 tons of iron ore (326,040 tons in 1885), 153,880 Ib of copper ingots, and. 792,621 cubic feet of marble and limestone. Of zinc 17,415 tons were produced in 1884. Besides the minerals already men- tioned, Tennessee yields millstone grit, hydraulic rock, barytes, fire-clay, gold, and petroleum.

Manufactures. —Since 1875 the manufacturing industries of the State have grown immensely. From 1880 to 1885 the number of establishments increased from 4326 to 4425, the capital invested from $20,092,845 to $40,768,650, and the value of the manufactured products from $37,074,886 to $75,216,211. In 1880 cotton was manufactured in the State to the value of $934,014 (in 1885 to $2,719,768), carriages and waggons $1,253,721, flour and grist- mill products $10,784,804, foundry and machine-shop products $1,191,531, iron and stcel $2,274,203, leather $2,051,087, lumber $4,015,310, and cotton-seed oil, cotton secd, and cake to the value of $1,235,000.

Population.—The population of the State, which in 1860 was 1,109,801 and in 1870 1,258,520, was in 1880 1,542,359 (males 769,277, females 773,082). Of this last total 403,151 were Negroes. In 1887 the total population was estimated to number about 1,800,000, giving a density of 43 inhabitants to the square mile, as against 36°9 in 1880. The growth of the principal cities is shown by the following table :—

Minerals.

Manu- factures.

Popula- tion.

1880. 9,693 5,377

. 1870.

1880. | 33,592 |

43,350 12,892

1870. .

8,682 4,119

Knoxville…... Jackson

40,226 25,865 6,093

Memphis …... Nashville …... Chattanooga ..

The considerable decline in the population of Memphis is ac- counted for by two epidemics of yellow fever in 1878 and 1879 (see Mempuis). Chattanooga is still increasing at a very rapid rate in consequence of the vast development of the mineral resources of east Tennessee. Knoxville is also growing from the same cause, but not so rapidly as Chattanooga.

Education.—Provision for common school education was made before the Civil War, but was limited to white children. A State bank was established for the purpose of regulating the currency, and a portion of its capital was reserved as a school fund ; its pro- fits were also to be used for school purposes. The fund on which interest is now paid is $2,512,500. A bill is now (1887) before the State legislature to increase the permanent State fund to $5,000,000. Besides this, the proceeds of a tax of 15 per cent. on property and a poll tax of $1 per annum are applied to the same purpose. Moreover, each county has the power of imposing a school tax on its people, and many

incorporate cities and towns add still further to it by special taxes within their limits. All children between six and twenty- one (cighteen until 1885) are entitled to free education in the public schools. In1875 the school population numbered 426,612, of whom there were 199,058 pupils enrolled. In 1886 the corresponding figures were 609,028 and 373,877, and in 1887 623,450 and 383,537. Besides the cominon schools numerous private schools exist. Higher education is provided for in several institutions, such as Vanderbilt university (Methodist) at Nashville, the university of the South (Episcopalian) at Sewanee or Cumberland Mountain, the south-western Presbyterian university at Clarksville, and others; the university of Tennessee at Knoxville is supported by State grants, and is not under the direction of any one denomination. Many smaller establishments entitled universities exist in various parts of the State.

Administration, &c.—The legislative and executive functions of government are carried on by a governor, a State senate, and a house of representatives, whose respective duties and prerogatives correspond almost cxactly to those of the president, senate, and representatives of the United States. Both the senators (33) and the representatives (99) are elected for two years. The president of the senate, who is elected by the senators, succeeds as governor in case of the death of the elected governor during his term of office. The governor has the power of veto on the Acts of the legislature. In case of its exercise, the Act is returned to the legislature, when, if it passes by a constitutional majority in both houses, it becomes Jaw in spite of the veto.

The judiciary administration is carried on by courts of four designations,—the county criminal courts, the circuit courts, the chancery courts, and the supreme court of the State. The county courts consist of the magistrates, who assemble at the county seat four times a year to transact county business. Thcy elect a chair- man out of their own body, who by virtue of such election becomes the financial agent of the county. In countics large enough to justify it, a county judge is elected, who exercises criminal juris-diction. There are fourteen circuit courts, cach having jurisdiction in several counties ; in these all common-law cases are adjudicated, except in those counties where thcre is a criminal judge. There

Educa- tion.

Adminis- tration.

TRuNeE Ss EE

are eleven chancery divisions, for each of which a chancellor is clected, who tries all cases in equity in his division. All these judges are elected for cight years. The judges of the supreme court, five in number, are elected by the people at large, but not more than two can be taken from any one of three divisions of the State, viz., the eastern, middle, and western. Their jurisdiction is purely appellate: they revise the decisions of the other courts, and their decisions are final, except where a question arises as to the inter- pretation of the United States constitution.

History.—At the time of its first settlement and occupatiou by History Europeans Tennessee was part of the territory granted to the colony i of North Carolina by Charles II. It was then, however, a hypo- thetical claim, the boundaries of which were chiefly determined by 36° 30’ and 85° N. lat. The castern boundary of North Carolina was the Atlantic Ocean; on the other side the western territory extended according to one thcory to the Mississippi, according to another theory to the Pacific Ocean. When the English settlers began to cross the Appalachian chain, they found the French estab- lished on the Mississippi and its tributaries,—the Ohio, the Ten- nessee, and the Cumberland. The Spanish claim of an indefinite extensiou of their possessions in Florida was also a constant menace to the advances of the earliest English colonists in the direction of South Carolina and Georgia. The most important effort of trans- montane colonization by the British prior to 1760 was the estab- lishment of Fort Loudon on the Little Tennessee river in 1756 or 1757. But in 1760 this post was captured by the Cherokees and its garrison massacred; and the same fate befell a number of colonists who had settled between Fort Chissel (on New River, Virginia) and Fort Loudon. Early in 1761 Colonel Grant com- pletely routed the Cherokces and compelled their French and Span- ish allies to withdraw to Louisiana and Georgia.

Hight years later the stream of emigration began to set westwards, mainly by two routes, of which one led through Cumberland Gap to the valley of

the Cumberland river, whilst the other followed the course of the Tennessee round the southern border of the Cumberland plateau into the western Tennessee valley.

When it was proposed to liquidate the debts incurred by both the States and the Federal Government for war expenses by the sale of public lands, an Act of Cession was passed in 1784 by the North Carolina legislature ceding their lands west of the mountains, includ- ing those of the Watauga settlers, to the Federal Government. But in the following year the North Carolina legislature repealed the Act of Cession, and the whole matter was thus indefinitely post- poned. The Watauga community now declared itself independent of North Carolina; that Statc had relinquished its sovereignty over them and the Federal Government had not accepted it. At this time the transmontane territory consisted of Washington, Sullivan, and Greene counties. It also embraced all the settlements on the Cumberland, comprising the existing counties of Davidson, Sumner, Montgomery, Robertson, and Williamson. Davidson county had been organized by the influence of James Robertson (one of the earliest arrivals from North Carolina, in 1769), who had moved to the site of the future city of Nashville. But Davidson county took no part in these proceedings. The State organized by the seceding counties in August 1784 was called the State of Franklin ; its con- stituent counties returned to their allegiance to North Carolina on 1st March 1788. A second Act of Cession was passed in 1790, by which the defunct State of Franklin became part of the territory of the United States south of the Ohio, including what now consti- tutes Kentucky and Tennessee. The northern portion became a State, under the name of Kentucky, in 1792, and the southern por- tion took rank as the State of Tennessee in 1796, being received into the Union the same year. The settlement of middle Tennessee was much retarded so long as the path of access to it from east Tennessee was through Cumberland Gap and down the Ohio. The broader route round the south of the Cumberland plateau by the Tennessee river was too unsafe for general use on account of the

powerful Indian tribes—the Creeks and the Cherokees. This obstacle was finally removed by General Jackson’s crushing defeat of the Creeks in

1814, and a large cession of their territory.

The position of Tennessee during the Civil War was the same as that of the other middle and southern States. While secession was in agitation, it refused to secede; but when actual hostilities commenced it joined the Southern confederacy. Even then, how- ever, west and middle Tennessee sympathized with the South, whilst eastern Tennessee sided with the North. Each division sent very large contingents to the army which it favoured. A large portion of the State was, during the later years of the war, in the occupation of the Northern army, and many great battles were fought on its soil, notably those of Fort Donelson, Murfreesborough (Stone River), Franklin, aud Nashville. Tennessee suffered more from the exhaustion attendant on the close of the war, and from the rigorous government which accompanied the period of recon- struction, than any other State except Virginia.

See Geology of Tennessee, Nashville, 1869; Elliott, ‘‘The Age of the Southern Appalachians,” in Amer. Jour. of Sc., April 1883; Bradley, ‘‘On the Silurian Age of the Southern Appalachians,” 7b., April 1875; Haywood, The Civil and Political History of the State of Tennessee from its earliest Settlement up to the Year 1796, Knoxville, 1823; Ramsay, Annals of Tennessee to the End of. the Eighteenth Century; Parton, Life of Andrew Jackson, New York, 1860; Kirke, The Rear Guard of the Revolution, New York, 1886; Reports of Tennessee Hist. Soc. and of Bureau of Agriculture, Mines, and. Immigration. (. F. W.)

TENNIS. This, the oldest, perhaps, of all existing ball-games, is at once the most difficult to learn, on account of the intricacy of its laws, and the most interesting when learnt, because of the great variety of its combinations and the difficulty of solving rapidly the problems which are constantly presented to the player. It derives an additional claim to attention from numberless historical associations. Of the origin of tennis it is not possible to speak with certainty; but it may be confidently assumed that it sprang from some very simple sport. It first appeared in Hurope in the Middle Ages, when we find it played in open courts, in the parks or ditches of the feudal castles of France and Italy. It was at first the pastime of kings and nobles, but afterwards became po- pular with all classes. The French seem

to have borrowed it from the Italians, and to have contributed some of its refinements ; and the English took it from the French. Though men- tioned in the Arthurian romances, the game was certainly not known in England in the time of Arthur. The name ¢ennis is supposed to be derived from the exclamation “Tenez!” employed by early French players in serving the ball. In Italy § the game is called “giuoco della palla”; in France, ‘‘jeu de paume,” which also means the tennis court ; in Germany it is called by the generic title of “Ballspiel”; in Spain, “juego al ble” or “jugar al ble.” It is clear from the French name that the ball was originally struck with the palm of the hand. This was afterwards protected by a glove, as is still the practice in the Basque country. Upon the glove strings and cross-strings were next stretched, to give a faster impulse; and the addition of a short handle made an easy transition to the racket. In the time of Henry VII. the hand still some- times met the racket, even in the royal court at Windsor.

One of the first improvements in the game consisted in the building of closed courts, first with walls, then with walls and roof. It is still played in the open air in some places in France, and “ pallone,” a rude and violent variety of the game, is yet seen in Italy. There are twenty-seven courts in England and one in Dublin.

As now played, tennis in France is virtually the same as in England, though there are a few differences of detail.

he court is rectangular (see the annexed plan). An inner wall runs round three sides, to the height of 7 feet, from

2, 2,

4,5, 6, mark chases.

179

which a sloping roof, called the penthouse, reaches to the outer wall. The surrounding passage thus enclosed (not shown in plan) is 7 feet wide. Opposite to the long penthouse is the main wall, in which there is at one point a projection called the tambour, H, which deflects the ball across the court. In the inner wall, below the penthouse, there are several openings, the

one at the end, on the service side, being called the dedans, B, the others the galleries. At the further end of the court is the grille, a square opening adjacent to the main wall. Across the court, halfway between the two ends, is stretched a net n, 3 feet high in the middle and 5 feet at the sides. The game may be played by two, or by three, or by four players, one against one, one against two, or two against two. At the commencement the players toss or “spin” a racket, to decide which shall serve first, calling “ rough ” (for the knotted side) or “smooth.” The party which wins the “spin” has the choice of the service or the “ first stroke,” the latter term meaning the return of the service. The server then begins at the “dedans” end of the court, technically called the “service side,” pitches the ball in the air, and strikes it with his racket so that it shall drop on the side penthouse or on the wall above it, and then from the penthouse upon the floor on the other side of the net (called the “hazard side”), within the “service court” bounded by the “service line” # and the “ pass line” p. If he fail to do this, a “fault” is called, or a “pass” if the ball has gone beyond the pass line. If he serves a second fault, his adversary scores a point, called a “stroke.” A pass counts for nothing, but annuls a pre- vious fault. It now becomes the duty of the adversary,

called the “striker-out,” to return the ball by striking it with his racket in such a manner that it shall pass back over the net to the service side. The server must now strike it again and return it to the hazard side; and the player

SERVICE SIDE

SCALE OF FEET. o 10 20 30 40

J, net post ; g, g, gallery post; v, v, first galleries; y, y, second galleries; x, x, last galleries ; doors ; 0, 0, half-court line; 7, 7, openings under net for ventilation and warming: I, 2, 3,

who first returns the ball into the net or ‘out of court” (i.e., to the roof, or above the play line on the walls) loses the stroke, which is scored to his antagonist. But, if a player fail or refuse to strike the ball in the air (a “volley ”) or on its first bound and before it touches the floor a second time, then, except on the hazard side beyond the service line, a “‘chase” is made

or reckoned on the floor, according to the lines on or between which the ball has dropped the second time. This chase is a stroke in abeyance. When one has been made it is called by the marker, but does not affect the score until one of the players has scored 40, when they change sides, and the player who has allowed the chase to be made must then endeavour to win it, z.e., to place the second bound of the 1 In the Manchester Club this law (8) has been wisely abolished.

ball returned by him better, z.e., nearer to the end wall, than the point at which the chase was marked. As often as his adversary returns his stroke, he must again endea- vour to do this, until he succeeds or fails. If he succeed, he scores the stroke ; if not, it is scored to his adversary. If two chases have been made at any stage of the score, even at the beginning of a game, then the players must change sides and play for the chases, as above described. A player who succeeds in sending the ball into the grille, the dedans, or the last division of the gallery—called the “winning gallery ”—on the hazard side, scores at all times a stroke. The minutize of the game and the mode of

scoring cannot be more succinctly described than in the

annexed laws.! LAws.

Single-Handed Game.

1. The balls shall be not less than 2} in. and not more than 28 in. in diameter, and shall be not less than 24 oz. and not more than 2? oz. in weight.

Note.—There is no restriction as to the shape or size of the rackets.

2. (a) The choice of sides at the beginning of the first set is

determined by a spin. (6) In subsequent sets of a series, the players shall begin each set on the side on which they finished the set before it.

3. The ball served must be struck with the racket, and may be delivered from any part of the service side.

4. The ball served must touch the service penthouse before touching any other part of the court, except the rest of the side penthouse and the service wall ; and it must drop in the service court or on one of the lincs which bound it.

5. The service is good,

(a) if the ball served touch in its descent any part of the service penthouse so as to rise again from it, or

(0) if the ball served strike the service wall and afterwards touch in its descent any part of the service penthouse, even though it do not rise again from it, or

(c) if the ball served drop in the winning gallery.

6. A fault may not be returned.

7. A pass may not be returned ; but a ball served, which has not gone across the pass line on the penthouse, may be volleyed, although if untouched it might have dropped in the pass court. If a pass touch the striker-out, or if a service before it has dropped faa him when standing with both feet in the pass court, and not having atteinpted to strike the ball, it is still counted a pass.

8. A pass annuls a previous fault.

9. If the striker-out declare himself not ready for a service, and have made no attempt to return it, that service is counted for nothing, though it be a fault. It annuls a previous fault. The striker-out, having been asked if he is ready, and having declared himself ready, may not similarly refuse a second service.

10. The server continues to serve until two chases be mnade, or one chase when the score of either player is at forty or advantage (see law 25). The

players then change sides, the server becoming striker-out and the striker-out becoming server.

11. The return is good if the ball in play be struck with the racket so that it pass the net without touching a gallery post or anything fixed or lying in an opening on the side from which it is struck, and without going out of court.

12. The return is not good,

(a) if not in accordance with the terms of law 11, or

(d) if the ball be struck more than once, or be not definitely struck, or

(c) if the ball in play, having passed the net, come back and drop on the side from which it was struck, unless it should have touched a gallery post or anything fixed or lying in an opening on that side of the court which is opposite to the striker.

13. A ball which is no longer in play may not be returned.

14. The server wins a stroke (except as provided in law 9),

(a) ifa good service enter the winniug gallery or the grille, or

(0) if the striker-out fail to return a good service (except when it makes a chase ; see laws 17-19), or

(c) if the striker-out fail to return the ball in play (except when it makes a chase ; see laws 17-19), or

(d) if he himself return the ball in play so that it enter the ae gallery or grille, or fall on or beyond the service ine, or

(¢) if he serve or return the ball in play so that it drop or

fall upon a ball or other object which is on or beyond the service line, or

ee eee 1 Reprinted from the present writer’s Annals of Tennis, 1878, by the kind consent of the publisher Mr H. Cox.

(f) if he win a chase (see law 20), or

(g) if the striker-out lose a stroke (see law 16).

15. The striker-out wins a stroke (except as provided in law 9),

(a) if the server serve two consecutive faults (except as provided in law 31 (6)), or .

(b) if the server fail to return the ball in play (except when it makes a chase ; see laws 17-19), or

(c) if he himself return the ball in play so that it enter the dedans, or

(d) if he win a chase, or

(e) if the server lose a stroke (see law 16).

16. Either player loses a stroke,

(a) if he lose a chase (see law 21),

(b) if the ball in play (except as provided iu law 7) touch him or anything which he wears or carries, except his racket in the act of returning the ball, or

(c) if he touch or strike the ball in play with his racket more than once, or do not definitely strike it.

17. When a ball in play on either side of the net, not being that on which the striker is standing,

(a) falls on any part of the floor, except on or beyond the service line, or

(6) enters any gallery, cxcept the winning gallery, or

(c) touches a gallery post,

it is marked a chase

(a) at that line on the floor on which it fell, or

(8) better or worse than that line on the floor which is nearest to the point at which it fell, or

(y) at that gallery the post of which it touched,

except as provided in laws 18 and 19.

Note (a).—A ball in play which touches the net post and drops on the side opposite to the striker is marked a chase at the line on the side on which it drops.

Note (6).—A ball in play which enters a gallery is marked a chase at that gallery which it enters, notwithstanding that it may have touched an adjacent gallery post without touching the floor in the interim.

Note ©.—The gallery lines on the floor correspond and are equivalent to the galleries of which they bear the names.

18. When a ball in play

(a) drops or falls in the net, on the side opposite to the striker, or

(0) drops on the floor, on the side opposite to the striker, and, bounding over the net, falls on that side of it from which it was struck, whether it touch the net in its bound or not,

it is marked a chase at the line on the side opposite to the striker. 19. When a ball in play drops or falls upon a ball or other object which is on the floor (except when it is on or beyond the service line ; see law 14 (¢)), it is marked a chase at the point at which that ball or other object was when the ball in play dropped or fell upon it. 20. Either player wins a chase,

(a) if he serve or return the ball so that it enter a winning opening, or

(0) if he serve or return the ball so that it fall better than the chase for which he played, or enter a gallery or touch a gallery post better than the gallery or the gallery line at ‘which the chase was for which he played, or

(c) if he serve or return the ball so that it drop or fall upon a ball or other object which is at a point on the floor better than that at which, or at the gallery corresponding to which, the chase was for which he played, or

(d) if his antagonist fail to return the ball in play, except when it falls worse than the chase in question.

21. Either player loses a chase,

(a) if he fail to return the ball in play, except when it falls worse than the chasc in question, or

(2) if he return the ball in play so that it fall worse than the chase, or enter a gallery or touch a gallery post worse than the gallery or the gallery line at which the chase was for which he played, or

(c) if he return the ball in play so that it drop or fall upona ball or other object which is at a point on the floor worse than that at which the chase was for which he played.

22. When a ball in play

(a) falls at a point on the floor neither better nor worse than that at which, or at the gallery corresponding to which, the chase was for which the striker played, or

(>) enters that gallery or the gallery corresponding to that gallery line, or touches the post of that gallery, or falls on the gallery line corresponding to that gallery, at which the chase was for which the striker played, or

(c) drops or falls upon a ball or other object which is at a point on the floor neither better nor worse than that at which, or at the gallery corresponding to which, the chase was for which the striker played,

it is marked chase-off: it is not scored as a stroke won by either player ; the chase is annulled, and the striker has not to play for it again.

|

=

TENNIS

23. As soon as two chases are marked, or one chase when the score of either player is at forty or advantage (see law 25), the layers change sides. The player who made the first chase now Bends it, while the other plays to win it; and so with the second chase, except when only one has been marked. ;

24, If by an error three chases have been marked, or two chases when the score of either player is at forty or advantage (see law 25), the last chase in each case is annulled. :

25. On either player winning his first stroke, the score is called fifteen for that player ; on either player winning his second stroke, the score is called thirty for that player; on either pee winning his third stroke, the score is called forty for that player; and the fourth stroke won by either player is scdred game for that player, except as below. ‘

If both players have won three strokes, the score is called deuce, and the next stroke won by either player is scored advantage for that player. If the same player win the following stroke, he wins the game; if he lose the following stroke, the score is again called deuce ; and so on, until either player win the two strokes immediately following the score of deuce, when the game is scored for that player.

26. The player who first wins six games wins a set, except as

below.

If both players win five games, the score is called games all, and the next game won by either player is scored advantage game for that player. Ifthe same player win the following game, he wins the set ; if he lose the following game, the score is again called games all; and so on, until either player win the two games immediately following the score of games all, when he wins the set.

Note.—Players often agree not to play advantage sets, but to decide the set

by one game after arriving at the score of games all.

27. Every chase is marked, and every stroke scored, by the marker, who is entitled to consult the dedans when he is in doubt. A player who is dissatisfied with the marker's decision is entitled to appeal to the dedans. A majority of the dedans confirms or reverses the marker's decision. An appeal must be made before a recommencement of play.

Note.—The dedans should not give a decision unasked on a question of marking a chase or stroke, but may, and should, correct inaccurate scoring of chases, strokes, games, or sets.

Three-Handed and Four-Handed Games, sometimes called Double Games.

28. The partners serve and strike-out in alternate games, unless it shall have been previously agreed to the contrary.

Note.—It is usually, but not always, agreed that the striker-out may leave to his partner such services as pass him.

The former laws apply to these as well as to single games, the advantages and disadvantages attaching to a single player under the former laws here attaching to a pair of players.

Odds.

29. (a) A bisque or a half-bisque may not be taken after the service has been delivered.

(b) The server may not take a bisque after a fault ; but the

_ striker-out may do so.

Note.—A bisque is a stroke which may be claimed by the recipient of odds at any time during a set, subject to the provisions of laws 29 and 30.

30, A player who wishes to take a bisque or a half- bisque, there being a chase or two chases isch, may take it either before or after changing sides; but he may not, after changing sides, go back to take it.

31. (a) When the odds of round services are given, the ball served by the giver of the odds must touch the grille pent- house after touching the service penthouse and before dropping in the service court or on one of the lines which bound it.

(>) Neither faults nor failure in complying with the above condition are counted against the giver of the odds; but the recipient of the odds may decline to return such services as do not touch both the penthouses ; if, however, he attempt and fail to return any such service, it is counted against him.

32. Half-court: the players having agreed into which half-court on each side of the net the giver of the odds shall play, the latter loses a stroke if the ball returned by him drop in either of the other half-courts.

But a ball returned by the giver of the odds which

(a) drops on the half-court line, or

(0) drops in his half-court and touches the dedans post

before falling, or

(c) drops in his half-court and falls in the dedans, even

though on the other side of the dedans post, or

_ (d) touches the dedans post before dropping,

1s counted for the giver of the odds.

5:9 “tei boasted against any wall by the giver of the odds whic

(e) drops in his half-court, or

181

(f) drops on the half-court line, or (g) touches the dedans post before dropping, or (z) touches any penthouse, battery, or wall before drop- ping in

his half-court, dropping on the half-court line, or touching the dedans post, ‘ is also counted for the giver of the odds.

Note.—It is, of course, evident that the giver of these odds may make a chase, or win a chase or a stroke, with a ball which drops in his half-court, or on the half-court line, but falls in the other half-court.

33. When the odds of “touch no walls” or “touch no side walls” are given, a ball returned by the giver of the odds which on fall- ing makes a nick is counted for the striker.

Directions to the Marker. It is the duty of the marker to call the faults, and the passes ; to call the strokes, when won, or when he is asked to do so ; to call the games and sets at the end of each, or when asked to do so; to mark the chases, when made ; to call the chases when there are two in the order in which they were made, or the chase when there is one with the score at forty or advantage ; and then to direct the players to change sides ; to call the chase or chases again, in order as above, when the players have changed sides, and each chase as a player has to play for it ; not to call play or not play in doubtful cases before the conclusion of the rest, unless asked to do so; to decide all doubtful and disputed strokes, subject to an appeal to the dedans ; to warn the players of any balls lying on the floor in their way, or to their danger or disadvantage, and to remove all such balls ; to collect the balls into the ball-basket ; and to keep the ball-troughs constantly replenished in the dedans and last gallery, and the latter especially in three-handed and four-handed games, (J. MA*.) TENNIS, Lawn. Lawn-tennis is a modern adaptation of the first principle of tennis, in the simplest form, to a ball-game played on grass with rackets. The balls are of india-rubber, hollow, and covered with white cloth. The rackets are lighter and broader than those used at tennis. The court for the single-handed game, one player against one, is shown in fig. 1, that for the three or four-handed game in fig. 2, The dimensions of the courts, the size

G oO C G D

x x L |

a A A a

ae

£ vl F. fen H F Fig. 1. Fia. 2.

Lawn-tennis courts. Fig. 1, for single game; fig. 2, for double game,

and weight of the balls, the mode of scoring, and other details are given in the laws of the game (see below). The only requisites for the game are the balls, rackets, net and posts, and a hard level surface of grass. It may be, and often is, played upon surfaces of wood, asphalt, cement, gravel, or other substance. The grass requires constant mowing, rolling, and in dry weather watering, to keep it

in order. In the winter months it should be sedulously weeded, sown where necessary, and swept and rolled when- ever the weather permits.

The choice of sides depends upon a toss or spin of a racket, as in tennis, The winner chooses the service or the preferable side, as he pleases. The server begins the game by striking the ball with his racket so that it passes (without touching) over the net, which is hung across the court from the posts A, A. The ball served must drop in the space which is diagonally opposite to him on the other side of the net,—a space bounded by the net, the side line, the half-court line, and the service line. His adversary, called the “striker-out,” must return the ball before it touches the ground a second time; and the server must similarly return it again ; and so on, until one or other player fails to return it over the net so that it shall drop on the ground anywhere on the side of the net furthest from him, and within or upon any of the lines which bound that space, technically called his adversary’s court, When one player thus fails, he loses a stroke, which the other is deemed to win, and it is added to the score of the latter. The score is kept as at tennis, but there are no chases.

Activity and condition have great value in lawn-tennis, though there is room for much skill in placing the ball in the corners with hard, low strokes, and in intercepting and returning the ball by the volley while in the air, before it reaches the ground. But in matches temper, endur-

ance, and quickness of movement count for very much.

Lawn-tennis, in one form or another, has been played for many centuries out-of-doors. The present variety of the game was first introduced, in a form which was soon shown .to be impracticable, about the year 1874. It was then taken up by the All England Club at Wimbledon, who in 1877 remodelled the size and shape of the court, and the laws, and altered the system of scoring to that which obtains in the parent game. Thereupon, with the consent of the M.C.C. at Lord's, who lent the authority of their name to the movement, the code of laws which now prevails, and has been occasionally amended only in a few details, was promulgated by the All England Club. The championship of the gamc, which is open to gentlemcn amateurs only, was instituted at Wimbledon by the A.E.C, in 1877, A lady's championship and a championship for pairs (gentlemen) have also been instituted, and are annually competed for on the grounds of the A.E.C. at Wimbledon. Lawn- tennis, in the short time which has elapsed since its introduction, has achieved immense popularity. Prize-meetings are held annu- ally at Bath, Cheltenham, Dublin, Edinburgh, Manchester, Liver- pool, and many other places in the United Kingdom; the game is also played with as great enthusiasm in the United States, Canada, Australia, and India. In all those countries prize-meetings are held and championships are instituted.

Laws.l

Single-Handed Game.

1. For the single-handed game the court is 27 feet in width and 78 feet in length. It is divided across the middle by a net, the ends of which are attached to the tops of two posts A and A (see fig. 1), which stand 3 feet outside the court on each side. The height of the net is 3 feet 6 inches at the posts and 8 feet at the centre. At each end of the court, parallel to the net, and at a dis- tance of 39 feet from it, are drawn the basc lines CD and EF, the extremities of which are connected by the side lines CHand DF, Half- way between the side lines, and parallel to them, is drawn the half-court line GH, dividing the space on each side of the net into two equal parts, called the right and left courts. On each side of the net, at a distance of 21 feet from it, and parallel to it, are drawn the service lines XX and YY.

2. The balls shall be not less than 24 inches nor more than 2,% inches in diameter, and not less than 13 oz. nor more than 2 oz. in weight.

3. In matches where umpires are appointed their decision shall be final; but where a referee is appointed an appeal shall lie to him from the decision of an umpire on a question of law.

4. The choice of sides and the right of serving during the first game shall be decided by toss, provided that, if the winner of the toss choose the right to serve, the other player shall have the choice of sides, and vice versa.

5. The players shall stand on opposite sides of the net. The player who first delivers the ball shall be called the server, the other the striker-out.

6. At the end of the first game the striker-out shall become server and the ees oma become striker-out ; and so on alternately in the subsequent games of the set.

7. The server shall stand with one foot beyond (i.e., further from the net than) the base line, and with the other foot upon the base line, and shall de-ee service from the right and left courts alternately, beginning from the right.

8. The bail served must drop within the service line, half-court line, and side line of the court which is diagonally opposite to that from which it was served, or upon any such line.

1 Printed by permission of the All England Lawn-Tennis Club.

TT NN TS

9. Itisa fault if the service be delivered from the wrong court, or if the server do not stand as directed in law 7, or if the ball served drop in the net or beyond the service line, or if it drop out of court or in the wrong court; it is not a fault if the server’s foot which is beyond the base line do not touch the ground at the moment at which the service is delivered.

10. A fault inay not be taken.

1l. After a fault, the server shall serve again from the same court from which he served that fault, unless it was a fault because served from the wrong court,

12. A fault may not be claimed after the next service has been delivered.

13. The service may not be volleyed, i.e., taken before it touches the ground.

14, The server shall not serve until the striker-out is ready. If the latter attempt to return the service, le shall be deemed to be ready.

15. A ball is in play from the moment at which it is delivered in serviee (unless a fault) until it has been volleyed by the striker-out in his first stroke, or has dropped in the net or out of court, or has touched either of the players or anything that he wears or carries, except his racket in the act of striking, or has beeu struck by either of the players with his racket more than onee consecutively, or has been volleyed before it has passed over the net, or has failed to pass over the net before its first bound (except as provided in law 17), or has touched the ground twice consecutively on either side of the net, though the second tinie may have been out of court.

16. It is a let if the ball served touch the net, provided the service be otherwise good, or if a service or fault be delivered when the striker-out is not ready, or if either player be prevented by an accident beyond his control from serving or returning the ball in play. In case of a let, the service or stroke counts for nothing, and the server shall serve again.

17. It isa good return although the ball touch the net, or, having passed outside either post, drop on or within any of the lines which bound the court into which it is returned.

18. The server wins a stroke if the striker-out volley the service, or fail to return the service or the ball in play (except in the case of a let), or return the service or ball in play so that it drop outside any of the lines which bound his opponent’s court, or otherwise lose a stroke, as provided by law 20.

19. The striker-out wins a stroke if the server serve two consecutive faults, or fail to return the ball in play (except in the case of a let), or return the ball in play so that it drop outside any of the lines which bound his opponent's court, or otherwise lose a stroke, as provided by law 20.

20. Hither player loses a stroke if the ball in play touch him or anything that he wears or carries, except his racket in the act of striking, or if he touch or strike the ball in play with his racket more than once consecutively, or if he touch the net or any of its supports while the ball is in play, or if he volley the ball before it has passed the net.

21, On either player winning his first stroke, the score is called 15 for that player; on either player winning his second stroke, the score is called 30 for that player; on either player winning his third stroke, the score is called 40 for that player ; and the fourth stroke won by either player is scored game for that player, except as below.

If both players have won three strokes, the score is called deuce; and the next stroke won by either player is scored advantage for that player. If the same player win the next stroke, he wins the game; if he lose the next stroke, the score is again called deuce ; and so on until either player win the two strokes immediately following the score of deuce, when the game is scored for that player. '

22. The player who first wins six games wins a set, except as below.

If both players win five games, the score is called games all; and the next game won by either player is scored advantage game for that player. If the same player win the next game, he wins the set; if he lose the next game, the score is again called games all; and so on until either player win the two games immediately following the score of games all, when he wins the set.

Note.—Players may agree not to play advantage sets, but to decide the set by one game after arriving at the score of games all.

23. The players shall change sides at the end of every set; but the umpire, on appeal from either party before the toss for choice, may direct the players to change sides at the end of every game if in his opinion either side

havea distinct advantage, owing to the sun, wind, or any other accidental cause ; but, if the appeal be inade after a match has been begun, the umpire may only direct the players to change sides at the end of every gaine of the odd and concluding set.

24. When a series of scts is played, the player who was server in the last game of one set shall be striker-out in the first game of the next.

Odds.

25. A bisque is one stroke, which may be claimed by the receiver of the odds at any time during a set, except as below. A bisque may not be taken after the service has been delivered. The server may not take a bisque after a fault; but the striker-out may do so.

26. One or more bisques may be given in augmentation or diminution of other odds.

27. Half-fifteen is one stroke given at the beginning of the second and every subsequent alternate game of a set.

28. Fifteen is one stroke given at the beginning of every gaine of a set.

29. Half-thirty is one stroke given at the beginning of the first game, two strokes at the beginning of the second game; and so on, alternately, in all the subsequent games of a set.

30. Thirty is two strokes given at the beginning of every game of a set.

31. Half-forty is two strokes given at the beginning of the first game, three strokes at the beginning of the second game; and so on, alternately, in all the subsequent games of a set.

32. Forty is three strokes given at the beginning of every game of a set.

33. Half-court: the players having agreed into which court the giver of the odds shall play, the latter loses a stroke if the ball, returned by him, drop out- side any of the lines which bound that court.

Three-Handed and Four-Handed Games.

34. The above laws shall apply to the three-handed and four-handed games, except as below. F ,

85. For the three-handed and four-handed games the court is 36 fect in width. Within the side lines, at a distance of 44 feet from them, and parallel to them, are drawn the service side lines IK and LM. The service lines are not drawn beyond the points I, L, K, and M, towards the side lines. In other respects, the court is similar to that which is described in law le

36. In the three-handed game the single player shall serve in every alternate

me. 4 eo. In the four-handed game, the pair who have the right to serve in the first game may decide which partner shall do so, and the opposing pair may decide similarly for the second game. The partner of the player who served in the first game shall serve in the third ; and the partner of the player who served in the second game shall serve in the fourth; and so on in the same order in all the subsequent games of a set.

TH N—T EP

38. The players shall take the service alternately throughout each game. No player shall receive or return a service delivered to his partner. The order of service and of striking-out once arranged shall not be altered, nor shall the strikers-out change courts to receive the service, before the end of thc set.

39. The ball served must drop within the service line, half-court line, and service side line of the court which is diagonally opposite to that from which it was served, or upon any such line.

40. Itis a fault if the ball served do not drop as provided in law 39, or if it touch the server’s partner or anything that he wears or carries.

41, Ifa player serve out of his turn, the umpire, as soon as the mistake is discovered by himself or by one of the players, shall direct the player to serve who ought to have served; but all strokes scored and any fault served before such discovery shall be reckoned. Ifa game shall have been

completed before such discovery, then the service in the next alternate game shall be delivered by the partner of the player who served out of his turn; and so on in regular rotation. (J. MA*.)

TENT. A tent is a portable habitation or place of shelter consisting in its simplest form of a covering of some textile substance stretched over a framework of cords and poles, or of wooden rods, and fastened tightly to the ground by pegs. Throughout the greater part of the interior of Asia the pastoral tribes have of necessity ever been dwellers in tents,—the scantiness of water, the consequent frequent failure of herbage, and the violent extremes of seasons compelling a wandering life. Tents have also been used in all ages by armies in campaign. In ancient Assyrian sculptures discovered by Layard at Nineveh the forms of tent and tent-furnishings are similar to those which still prevail in the East, and it appears that then as now it was a custom to pitch tents within the walls of a city. The ordinary family tent of the Arab nomads of modern times is a comparatively spacious ridged structure, averaging from 20 to 25 feet in length, but sometimes reaching as much as 40 feet. Its covering consists of a thick felt of black goat hair (cp. Cant. i. 5), or sometimes of alternate stripes of black and white disposed horizontally. The ridge or roof is supported by nine poles (awamid) disposed in sets of three, the central set being loftier than those at each end, whereby a slope outward is formed which helps to carry off rain. The average height inside at the centre is 7 feet and at the sides 5 feet, and the cloths at the side are so attached that they can easily be removed, the shel- tered end being always kept open. Internally the tent is separated by a partition into two sections, that reserved for the women containing the cooking utensils and food. The jourt or tent of the Kirghiz of Central Asia is a very capacious and substantial structure, consisting of a wooden frame for sides, radiating ribs for roof, and a wooden door. _ The sides are made up of sections of laths, which expand and contract in lozenges, on the principle of lazy tongs, and to their upper extremities ribs are lashed at regular intervals. Over this framework a heavy covering of felt is thrown, which is either weighted down with stones or, when necessary, stitched together.

Tn Western countries tents are used chiefly in military encampments, by travellers and explorers, and for tem- porary ceremonial occasions and

public gatherings. The material of which they are composed is commonly a light linen canvas or navy duck; but for tents of small size stout cotton canvas is employed, being light, strong, elastic, and sufficiently waterproof. These tents vary in size from a low-pitched covering, under which a couple of men can With difficulty creep, up to spacious marquees, in which horticultural and agricultural shows are held, and which can accommodate thousands of persons.

The marquee is distinguished from the tent by being a ridged structure, devoted to show and social uses; but the humblest tent made—the tente d'abri or shelter tent of the French army— is also ridged in form. The tente d'abri affords sleeping accom- modation for six men, and consists of a rope stretched over three low poles and fixed into the ground. Four separate squares of canvas buttoned together are thrown over the rope and pegged to the ground on each side so as to form a low ridge. 'Two other Squares are used for covering the ends, being thrown over the slanting rope ends by which the poles are pegged to the ground. Each of the six men using the tent carries one of the squares

of canvas besides his quota of the poles, rope, and pegs. The Gipsies and travelling tinkers of England have an equally unpre-

tentious tent, which consists of a framework of hazel rods bent so as to form a series of low ridges, the ends being stuck into the ground, and over this frame blankets or other coverings are thrown and pegged down. The simplest, but at the same time the least convenient, of ordinary tents is the conical, consisting of a central pole with ropes and canvas radiating from it in an unbroken slope to the ground. This form, however, covers much ground in pro- portion to the accommodation it affords, as the space round the circumference is of little value. A tent, therefore, which has sides or a fall is a much more convenient structure. The counterpart of the conical is the pyramidal tent, the four equal sides sloping to the ground ; and this form with a fall or sides makes the square tent, which is both convenient in shape and firm in structure. Small tents are also made, modified from the Arab form, with a central pole and two lower lateral poles. In the umbrella tent the roof is supported by a set of ribs which radiate from the pole, precisely

as the ribs of an umbrella spread out from the stick. In the balloon expansion tent, invented in 1877 by Captain Newburgh Stewart, R.N., the use of tent polc, pegs, and ropes is entirely avoided, the canvas being supported by light ribs of elastic wood resting on the ground, and the structure is kept taut by hauling ropes descending from the apex and secured by a holdfast driven into the ground. When from the nature of the surface such fasten- ing cannot be obtained, a heavy weight of any kind hung to the hauling rope is sufficient to moor the tent, and except in stormy weather the weight may be hung high up, thus leaving the whole interior of the tent clear. As further provision against stress of weather there are four iron holdfasts at the sides, which may be skewered into the ground by long iron pins. Captain Stewart claims that his tent possesses much greater stability and capacity than the ordinary army tent, that it is much more easily and ex- sceniaas pitched and taken down, and that it is very much ighter. In the latter important respect he calculates that by the adoption of his pattern a regiment at present carrying eighty tents of the Indian service pattern would save no less than twenty tons of transport.

TEPLITZ, or Téprirz, one of the most frequented watering-places in the north of Bohemia, is picturesquely situated about 30 miles south of Dresden, in the plain of the Biela, which separates the Erzgebirge from the Bohemian Mittelgebirge. The main interest of the little town centres in the bathing season, which reaches its height in August; and the arrangements for the con- venience and amusement of visitors are very complete. There is a large curhaus, and numerous handsome bath- houses are situated both in Teplitz and in the immediately adjoining village of Schénau. The environs are laid out in pretty and shady gardens and promenades, the finest being in the park which surrounds the chateau of Prince Clary, the superior of the town. The other chief build- ings are the Roman Catholic and Protestant churches, the Jewish synagogue with a conspicuous dome, and the theatre. The saline-alkaline springs of Teplitz, ten to twelve in number, ranging in temperature from 90° to 117° Fahr., are classed among what are called “indifferent” waters. Used until lately almost exclusively for bathing, they are prescribed for gout, rheumatism, and some scro- fulous affections, and their reputed efficacy in alleviating the effects of gun-shot wounds had gained for Teplitz the sobriquet of “the warriors’ bath.” Military baths are maintained in the town by the Governments of Austria, Prussia, and

Saxony, and there are also bath-houses for the poor. ‘Teplitz is much visited for the after-cure, after Carlsbad and similar spas. The number of patients in 1883 was 6000 and the passing visitors were almost as numerous. The presence of a bed of lignite in the neighbourhood has encouraged the industrial development of Teplitz, which carries on manufactures of cotton and woollen goods, india-rubber, chemicals, hardware, &c. In 1880 the united population of Teplitz and Schénau was

16,750.

The thermal springs are fabled to have been discovered as early as 762, but the first authentic mention of the baths occurs in tho 16th century. The town is mentioned in the 12th century, the name being derived from a Slavonic word meaning “ warm bath.” Teplitz figures in the history of Wallenstein, and is also interest- ing as the spot where the monarchs of Austria, Russia, and Prussia first signed tho triple alliance against Napoleon in 1813. Itisa

curious fact that on the day of the earthquake at Lisbon (1st November 1775) the main spring at Teplitz ceased to flow for some minutes.

TERAMO, a town of Italy, capital of the province of Teramo (formerly Abruzzo Ulteriore I.) and an episcopal see, Stands on the left bank of the Tordino where it is joined by the Vezzola, 12 miles from the coast and 876 feet above sea-level. It is connected by a branch line with Giulianova on the railway from Ancona to Brindisi. The picturesque valley of the Tordino is here dominated by the peaks of the Gran Sasso d’Italia (9522 feet), The town is traversed by one straight wide street with large houses, but for the most part it consists of narrow dirty lanes; the modern suburbs are good. The cathedral (1317-55) has been greatly modernized ; the church of San Agostino is in the later Gothic style. The antiquities include remains of a gateway, a theatre, and baths, as well as numerous in- scriptions. There are manufactures of wool and silk, and of straw hats and pottery. The population of the town in 1881 was 8634, with its suburbs 13,988 (commune,

20,309).

Teramo is the ancient Jnteramna Pretutiana, capital of the

Pretutii. In the Middle Ages it was known as Aprutium (whence Abruzzo); the intermediate form of the present name was Teramne.

TERAPHIM (0°57), a Hebrew word found only in the plural, which the Authorized Version sometimes simply transcribes (Judges xvii. 5, xviii. 14 sg.; Hosea iil. 4), but elsewhere translates by “images” (Gen. xxxi. 19 and often elsewhere), “image” (1 Sam. xix. 13), “idols” (Zech. x. 2), “idolatry” (1 Sam. xv. 23). The etymology of the word is quite obscure (see Gesenius, Zhesawrus, p. 1519 sq.), but it appears that the teraphim were a kind of idols (Gen. xxxi. 30), with something of a human figure (1 Sam. xix. 13); and, though their use was condemned by the prophets (1 Sam. xv. 23; cp. 2 Kings xxiii. 24), they were long commonly used in popular worship, both domestic (1 Sam. xix. 13, in the house of David and Michal) and public (Judges xviii.). They are associated with the ephod, which in this connexion seems to mean a plated image, and Hosea speaks of ephod and teraphim as essential elements in the religious usages of northern Israel. Like the ephod, they were specially associated with divination, and in particular with the sacred lot (Zech. x. 2; Ezek. xxi. 21 [26]). From the last passage it appears that teraphim were used by the Babylonians as well as by the Hebrews. These statements and references cover all that is known about the teraphim ; the fables of the rabbins are collected in Buxtorf, Lex. Talmud., 2660 sq.

TERBURG, Grrarp (1608-1681), subject painter, was born in 1608, at Zwolle, in the province of Overyssel, Holland. His father, also an artist, sent him to study in Rome, where he adopted a style distinguished by great finish and accuracy. He practised for a time in Paris with much success, visited England, it is said, and then returned to Holland. In 1648 he was at Miinster during the meeting of the congress which ratified the treaty of peace between the Spaniards and the Dutch, and executed his celebrated little picture, painted upon copper, of the assembled plenipotentiaries,—a work which, along with the Guitar Lesson, now represents the master in the national collection in London. At this time Terburg was invited to visit Madrid, where he received employment and the honour of knighthood from Philip IV. It is said that, in consequence of an intrigue, he was obliged to return to Holland. He seems to have resided for a time in Haarlem ; but he

finally settled in Deventer, where he became a member of the town council, as which he appears in the portrait now in the gallery of The Hague. He died at Deventer in 1681.

Terburg is excellent as a portrait painter, but still greater asa painter of genre subjects. He depicts with admirable truth the

life of the wealthy and cultured classes of his time, and his work is free from any touch of the grossness which finds so large a place in Dutch art. His figures are well drawn and expressive in attitude; his colouring is clear and rich; but his best skill lies in his unequalled rendering of texture in draperies, which is seen to advantage in such pictures as the Letter in the Dutch royal col- lection, and in the Paternal Advice (known as the Satin Gown)— engraved by Wille—which exists in various repetitions at Berlin and Amsterdam, and in the Bridgewater Gallery. Terburg's works are rare; only about eighty have been catalogued.

TERCEIRA. See Azorzs, vol. iii. p. 171.

TEREDO, a genus of Lamellibranchiate Mollusca, of the order Jsomya, sub-order Stnupallia, family Pholadacea (see Moxiusca, vol. xvi. p. 685). The animals included in this genus are commonly known as " ship-worms," and are notorious for the destruction which they cause in ships' timbers, the woodwork of harbours, and piles or other wood immersed for a long period in the sea. They inhabit long cylindrical holes, which they excavate in the wood, and usually occur in great numbers, crowded | together so that often only a very thin film remains between the adjacent burrows. Each burrow is lined with a layer of calcareous substance secreted by the mollusc; this lining is not usually complete, but stops short a little distance from the inner end of the burrow, where the boring process continues to take place. In some burrows, how- ever, the lining is complete, either because the animal has reached its full size or because some cause prevents it continuing its tunnel ; in such cases the calcareous tube has a hemispherical termination. The burrows are usually driven in the direction of the grain of the wood, but not | invariably so. When a knot or nail or the tube of a

neighbour is reached, the course of the burrow is altered so as to bend round the obstruction. One burrow is never found to break into another.

The adult Zeredo, when removed from its burrow and calcareous tube, is from a few inches to 3 feet in length, according to the species to which it belongs, and is cylindrical and worm-like in appearance. The anterior end, which lies at the bottom of the burrow, is somewhat enlarged and bears a pair of shells or valves, which are not connected by the usual ligament, but are widely separated dorsally. The valves are triangular in shape and very concave on the side which is in contact with the animal. In front their edges are widely separated, and the mantle tube, which is elsewhere closed, has here a | slight median aperture, through which the short sucker-like | foot can be protruded. The next portion of the body | behind the shell-bearing part is naked, except for the shelly lining of the burrow, which is secreted by this part. Anteriorly this portion contains part of the body proper; posteriorly it forms a tube divided internally by) a horizontal partition into two chambers. In the lower | chamber are the elongated gill plates, which have the | typical lamellibranchiate structure. In the upper chamber anteriorly is the rectum. A thick muscular ring terminates ’ this region of the body, and bears two calcareous plates shaped like spades or battledores. The expanded parts of these plates are free and project backwards ; the handle is fixed in a deep socket or pit lined by epidermis. These calcareous plates are called pallets (Fr. palmules). Behind the pallets the tubular body bifurcates, forming two siphons similar to those of other Lamellibranchs ; the siphons can be contracted or expanded within wide limits of length. The principal organs of the body—stomach, heart, genera- tive organs, and nephridia—are situated in the anterior part of the body, forming a visceral mass, which extends some distance behind the valves. The heart is above the 1n- testine and not perforated by it. The two valves are connected by an anterior adductor muscle.

From its resemblance to Pholas, Teredo is placed by conchologists in the family Pholadidx, among the IJsomya ; but it is still unde-

cided which part of the body corresponds to the posterior adductor. According to Quatrefages, it is a muscular band passing transversely between the handles of the pallets. His discussion of this point is connected with another, namely, the nature of the long tubular portion of the body behind the valves. Deshayes limits the extent of the mantle to the part covered by the shell, and considers all the rest of the animal as formed by the siphons ; the branchix and part of the other viscera in this view are contained in the siphons. Quatrefages argues that the siphons commence at the point where their retractor muscles are inserted, namely, at the muscular ring corresponding to the pallets. This reasoning is plausible ; but it is difficult to accept the view that the retractor muscles of the siphons and the posterior adductor muscle are so closely connected as Quatrefages thinks ; in other Jsomya the retractors of the siphons and the posterior adductor are distinct and separate. Deshayes believes that the single adductor between the valves results from the fusion of the two muscles usually separate. Jeffreys believes that the posterior adductor is really present between the posterior parts of the valves; but the opinion of a conchologist on a question of morphology is not of very great weight. In other Jsomya the ati (parieto-splanchnic) ganglia are attached to the ventral surface of the posterior adductor. In Yeredo these ganglia are situated at the posterior end of the body proper, some distance behind the shells, and immediately bchind the generative organ. It is here probably that the rudiment of the posterior adductor, if it exists, is to be sought; or, if it does not exist, it is here that it originally was placed. ;

It is evident that the anatomy of Teredo has not yet been in- vestigated from the point of view of modern morphology; but as far as can be judged at present the body proper extends back some distance behind the shells, to the posterior limit of the visceral mass. ‘The part between this and the pallets is a tubular prolonga- tion of the mantle chamber containing the extended gill laminz, and beyond the pallets are the separate siphons. Besides the visccral ganglia a cerebral and a pedal pair are present. The stomach is provided with a large crystalline style. The function of the pallets is to form an operculum to the calcareous tube when the siphons are withdrawn into it. In some species the external or narrowcr end of the calcareous tube is provided with transverse lamine projecting into the lumen; and in some the

external aper- ture is divided by a horizontal partition into two, one for each siphon.

The Leredo, according to Quatrefages, is dicecious, though Gwyn Jeffreys believes it to be hermaphrodite. As in the case of the oyster, the ova are retained in the branchial chamber during the early stages of their development. The segmentation of the ovum is unequal, and leads to the formation of a gastrula by epibole. By the growth of a preoral lobe provided with a ring of cilia, and by the formation of a mouth and an anus, the trochosphere stage is reached. A pair of thin shells then appear on the sides of the larva, connected by a hinge on the dorsal median line, and the foot grows out between mouth and anus. By the time the larve ‘‘swarm,” or leave the branchial cavity of the parent to live for a time as free- swimming pelagic larve, the valves of the shell have grown s0 large as to cover the whole of the body when the velum is retracted; the foot is also long, cylindrical, and flexible, and can be protruded far pond the shell. The valves of the shell at this stage are hemi- spherical in shape, so that the whole larva when its organs are retracted is contained in a globular case.

Concerning the later changes of the larva and the method by which it bores into wood nothing or little is known from direct observation. Much has been written about the boring of this and other marine animals, but even yet the matter cannot be said to be satisfactorily elucidated. Osler, in a paper in Phil. Trans., 1826, argued that the Teredo bores by means of its shells, fixing itself by the surface of the foot, which it uscs as a sucker, and then rasping the wood with the rough front edges of the shell-valves. This view was founded on the similarity of the arrangement of the shells and muscles in Teredo to those occurring in Pholas, in which the method of boring described was actually observed. W. Thompson, in a paper in the Hdinb. New Phil. Jowrn., 1835, supported the view that the excavation is due to the action of a solvent secreted from the surface of the animal. Albany Hancock, again (Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., vol. xv.), thinks that the excavating power of Teredo is due to silicious particles embedded in the anterior portion of the integument, in front of the valves. But the actual existence of either Silicious particles or acid secretion has been denied by others, Jeffreys belicves that the foot is the organ by which the animal burrows. In the larger number of Lamellibranchs the foot is doubtless a

burrowing organ, and it is difficult to see how the limpet hollows out the rock to which it is attached if not by means of the surface of its foot. At the same time it is difficult to explain how the soft muscular foot can penetrate into hard wood.

he process is of course slow, and J effreys supposes that particles are detached one by one from the moistened surface to which the foot is applied. In any case the valves are coyered by an epidermis, which could scarcely be there if they were used in burrowing.

i.D. Oo 185

Teredo grows and burrows at an extremely rapid rate : spawning takes place in the spring and suminer, and before the end of the year the animals are adult and their burrows of large size. Quatre- fages relates that at Guipuzcoa (N. Spain) a ferry-boat was sunk accidentally in the spring, and was raised four months afterwards, when its timbers were already rendered useless by 7. pedicellata. How long the animals live is not accurately known, but Quatre- fages found that they nearly all perished in the winter. This can- not be generally the case, as the size of the tubcs varies so greatly. In Holland their greatest ravages are made in July and August. Iron ships have nothing to fear from their attacks, and the copper sheathing now almost universally used protects wooden hulls. A great deal of loss is, however, caused by Zeredo in harbour works and shipping stages, and the embankments in Holland are con- tinually injured by it. The most efficient protection is afforded by large-headed nails driven in in close proximity. Soaking wood in creasote is not a certain safeguard ; Jeffreys found at Christiania in 1863 that a large number of harbour piles previously soaked in creasote had been completely destroyed by 7. navalis. Coal tar and the silicate of lime, used for coating stonework, have been sug- gested as protective coverings, but they do not seem to have been adequately tested.

Species of Zeredo occur in all scas. The animal was known to the ancients and is mentioned by Theophrastus, Pliny, and Ovid. In 1715 it is mentioned by Valisnieri, in 1720 by Deslandes. In 1733 great attention was drawn to it on account of the discovery that the wooden dykes of Holland were being rapidly destroyed by ship-worms, and that the country was in danger of inundation. Three treatises were published concerning the animal, by P.

Mas- suet, J. Rousset, and Godfrey Sellius. The work of the last-named, which was the best, described the anatomy of the creature and showed that its affinities were with bivalve molluscs. The truth of Sellius's view was not grasped by Linneus, who placed Zeredo together with Serpula in the genus Dentalium; but its proper position was re-established by Cuvier and Lamarck. Adanson, unaware of the work of Sellius, in 1757 believed himself to be the first to discover the molluscan affinities of Teredo. It will not be necessary to give here a definition of the genus taken from any systematist ; it will be sufficient to point out that the long cy- lindrical body with its two small anterior polygonal valves, the absence of a ligament and accessory valves, the muscular ring into which are inserted the calcareous pallets, and the continuous calcareous tube lining the hole bored by the animal are the diagnostic features.

Jeffreys, in his British Conehology, gives the following species as British : —Teredo norvegiea, Spengler; 7. navalis, Linn.; 7. pedi- eellata, Quatrefages; 7'. megotara, Hanley. T. norvegica occurs chiefly on the west coast of Great Britain. It was taken by Thompson at Portpatrick in Wigtownshire, and occurred in Jef- reys's time in abundance at Milford Haven. This species has been described by Gmelin and a number of British authors as 7. navalis, Linn. It is distinguished by having the base of the pallets simple, not forked, and the tube semi-concamerated at its narrower pos- terior end. The length does not usually exceed afoot. It is the T. navium of Sellius. 7. navalis has been identified from the figures of Sellius, to which Linnzus referred ; Sellius called it 7. marina. It occurs on all the western and southern coasts of Europe, from Christiania to the Black Sea, and is the species which causes so much damage to the Dutch embankments. The pallets of this species are small and forked, and the stalk is cylindrical. The tube is simple and not chambered at its narrow end. J. pedveellata was originally discovered by Quatrefages in the Bay of Los Pasages on the north coast of Spain; it has also been found in the Channel Islands, at Toulon, in Provence, and in Algeria, In I'. megotara the tube is simple and the pallets like those of 7. norvegiea ; it occurs at Shetland and Wick, and also on the western shore of the Atlantic, where its range extends from Massachusetts. to South Carolina. 7%. malleolus, Turton, and Z. bipinnata, Turton, belong to the West Indies, but are often drifted in floating timber to the coasts of Europe. Other occasional visitants to the British

shores are 7’. excavata, bipartita, spatha, fusticulus, cueullata, and Jimbriata. These were described by Gwyn Jeffreys in Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., 1860. T. jimbriata is stated to be a native of Vancouver’s Island. A kind of ship-worm, the Nauwsitora dunlopet of Perceval Wright, has been discovered in India, 70 miles from the sea, in a stream of perfectly fresh water, namely, the river Kumar, one of the branches of the Ganges. 7. corniformis, Lam., is found burrowing in the husks of cocoa-nuts and other woody fruits floating in the tropical seas ; its tubes are extremely crooked and contorted for want of space. Fossil wood and palm-fruits of Sheppey and Brabant are pierced in the same way.

Twenty-four fossil species have been recognized in the Lias and succeeding beds of Europe and the United States. The sub-genus Teredina, Lam., isa fossil of the Eocene of Great Britain and France.

Literatwre.—See, besides the works already mentioned, Godfrey Sellius,

Historia Naturalis Teredinis sew Xylophagi Marini, 1733; Adanson, Histoire Naturelle du Sénégal, Paris, 1757; Quatrefages, Annales des Sci. Nat., 1848-50 ;

SO —. 24

Forbes and Hanley, Brit. Mollusca, 1853; B. Hatschek, Entwicklung v. Teredo: Arbeiten aus dem Zool. Inst. Wien, 1880; Deshayes, Mollusques d’ Algérie ; Sir BE. Home, ‘ Anatomy of Teredo,” in Phil. Trans., vol. xcvi.; Frey and Leuckart, Beitrége zur Kenntniss wirbelloser Thiere, 1847 ; Woodward, Manual of Mollusca, London, 1851.

TEREK (Russ. Zerskaya oblast), a Russian government of Caucasia, situated to the north of the main Caucasus chain. It is bounded by Stavropol on the N., by the Caspian Sea and Daghestan on the E., by Tiflis and Kutais on the §., and by Tchernomorsk and Kuban on the W. Tt has an area of 23,548 square miles. From Mt Elburz to Kazbek the southern boundary coincides with the main

snow-covered range of the Caucasus and thus includes its ’ highest peaks ; further east it follows a sinuous line so as to embrace the secondary chains and their ramifications. Nearly one-third of the area is occupied by hilly tracts, the remainder being undulating and flat land belonging to the depression of the Terek ; one-half of this last, on the left bank of the river, is occupied by sandy deserts, salt clay steppes, and arid stretches unsuited for cultivation. Granites, syenites, diorites, and Palaeozoic schists consti- tute the nucleus of the Caucasus mountains ; Jurassic and Cretaceous formations rise to great heights in the secondary chains; and a series of Tertiary formations, covered by Quaternary deposits, cover a wide area in the prairies and steppes. A group of mineral springs occurs about Pyati-GORSK (g.v.).

The climate is continental. The mean annual temperatures are 49°6 Fahr. at Pyatigorsk (1850 feet above the sea; January 39°, July 70°) and 47°°7 at Vtadikavkaz (2230 ft.; January 23°, July 69°), but frosts a few degrees below zero are not uncommon. The mountain slopes receive an abundance of rain (37 in.), but the steppes suffer much from drought (rainfall between 10 and 20 in.). Nearly the whole of the government belongs to the drainage area of the Terek, but the north-west corner is watered by the upper tributaries of the Kuma. The Terek rises at the height of about 8000 feet in the glaciers of the Kazbek on the southern slope of the main chain of the Caucasus, which it pierces by the Darial gorge to the south of Vtadikavkaz after having received several dons or streams (Res, Guzel, Fiag, Ar). In 58 miles it descends nearly 6000 feet. A few miles above Vtadikavkaz it is 2068 feet above sea-level, at Mozdok 441 feet, and it is 29 feet below the Black Sea at Kizlyar. From Vtadikavkaz it pursues a north-easterly direction before taking its eastward course ; it seems most probable that at a recent epoch (Post-Pliocene) it joined the Kuma and perhaps the Manytch instead of flowing into the Caspian. In the lower part of its course it flows at a highcr level than that of the neighbouring plains, and is kept in its bed by dams. Inundations are frequent and cause great destruction. The delta begins at Dubovka (50 miles from the Caspian), and at this part the river frequently changes its bed. The Old Terek is no longer navigable, the chief current being directed northwards into the New ‘Terek. Several canals made by the Cossacks supply water for the irrigation of the neighbouring fields. Its chief tributaries are the Sunja on the right, and the Tcherekh, the Baksan,

and the Malka, in its upper course, on the left. The population of the government in 1884 was 615,660; of 606,500 inhabitants returned in 1888, 238,230 were Little and Great Russians, 1230 Georgians, 18,500 Armenians, 4300 Germans, 2570 Poles, 4780 Jews, 23,630 Ossets, 194,480 Tchetchens and Ingushis, 72,160 Kabardians, 9130 mountaineers of the Avarian stem, 25,860 Kumyks, 1770 Tatars, 6270 Nogais, 2470 Kalmutks, and 1620 Persians. Out of these 239,500 were reckoned as belonging to the Greek Orthodox Church, 336,460 were Mussul- mans, 17,730 Gregorian Armenians, and the remainder Protestants, Catholics, and Jews. Owing to the great fertility of the soil in the well-watered districts, agriculture is the chief occupation. In 1882 the crops, although below the average, yielded 967,000 quarters of corn, 268,000 bushels of potatoes, 6,750,000 gallons of wine, and tobacco to the value of £18,000. Cattle breeding is extensively carried on in the steppes, and there were in the same year 118,630 horses, 582,800 cattle, and 1,226,400 sheep ; murrains, however, are frequent, and cause great loss. Manufactures occupy only 3371 per- sons, and their yearly production hardly reaches £300,000 in value. Petty trades are rapidly spreading in the villages. Trade suffers from want of good roads. The railway from Russia to the Caucasus has not yet (1887) got beyond Vtadikavkaz. The military and other chief roads have an aggregate of only 1300 miles. The exports are limited to corn, wine, cattle, and some raw produce.

The government is divided into six districts, the chief towns of which, with their populations in 1883, were Vtadikavkaz (32,340), the capital, Georgievsk (4250), Groznyi (6280), Kizlyar (8780), Moz- dok (8380), and Pyatigorsk (11,120).

TERENCE. P. Terentius Afer (185 2-159 B.c.) holds a unique position among Roman writers. No writer in any literature has gained so great a reputation who has con- tented himself with so limited a function. He lays no claim to the position of an original artist painting from life or commenting on the results of his own observation. His art has no relation to his own time or to the country in which he lived. The chief source of interest in the fragmentary remains of Nevius, Ennius, Pacuvius, Accius, and Lucilius is their relation to the national and moral spirit of the age in which they were written. Plautus, though, like Terence, he takes the first

sketch of his plots, scenes, and characters from the Attic stage, is yet a true representative of his time, a genuine Italian, writing before the genius of Italy had learned the restraints of Greek art. The whole aim of Terence was to present a faithful copy of the life) manners, modes of thought and expression which had been drawn from reality a century before his time by the writers of the New Comedy of Athens. The nearest parallel to his literary position may be found in the aim which Virgil puts before himself in his Bucolics, He does not seek in that poem to draw Italian peasants from the life, but to bring back the shepherds of Theo- critus on Italian scenes. Yet the result obtained by Virgil is different. The charm of his pastorals is the Italian sentiment which pervades them. His shepherds are not the shepherds of Theocritus, nor are they in any sense true to life. The extraordinary result obtained by Terence is that, while he has left no trace in any of his comedies of one sketching from the life by which he was surrounded, there is perhaps no more truthful, natural, and delicate delineator of human nature, in its ordinary and more level moods, within the whole range of classical literature.- His permanent position in literature is due, no doubt, to the art and genius of Menander, whose crea- tions he has perpetuated, asa fine engraver may perpetuate the spirit of a great painter whose works have perished. But no mere copyist or verbal translator could have attained that result. Though without claims to creative originality, Terence must have had not only critical genius, to enable him fully to appreciate and identify himself with his originals, but artistic genius of a high and pure type. The importance of his position in Roman litera- ture consists in this, that he was the first writer who set before himself a high ideal of artistic perfection, and was the first to realize that perfection in style, form, and con- sistency of conception and execution. Living in the in- terval between Ennius and Lucilius, whose original force and genius survive only in rude and inartistic fragments, he produced six plays, which have not only reached our time in the form in which they were given to the world, but have been read in the most critical and exacting literary epochs, and still may be read without any feeling of the need of making allowance for the rudeness of a new and undeveloped art.

While his great gift to Roman literature is that he first made it artistic, that he imparted to “rude Latium” the sense of elegance, consistency, and moderation, his gift to the world is that through him it possesses a living

image of the Greek society in the 3d century B.c., presented in the purest Latin idiom. Yet Terence had no affinity by birth either with the Greek race or with the people of Latium. He was more distinctly a foreigner than any of the great classical writers of Rome. He lived at the meeting-point of three distinct civilizations,—the mature, or rather decaying, civilization of Greece, of which Athens was still the centre; that of Carthage, which was so soon to pass away and leave scarcely any vestige of itself; and the nascent civilization of Italy, in which all other modes were soon to be absorbed. Terence was by birth a Pheenician,

em epg me

TERENCE

and was thus perhaps a fitter medium of connexion between the genius of Greece and that of Italy than if he had been a pure Greek or a pure Italian ; just as in modern times the Jewish type of genius is sometimes found more detached from national peculiarities, and thus more capable of repro- ducing a cosmopolitan type of character than the genius of

men belonging to the other races of Europe.

Our knowledge of the life of Terence is derived chiefly from a fragment of the lost work of Suetonius, De Viris

Iliustribus, preserved in the commentary of Donatus. Confirmation of some of the statements contained in the Life is obtained from later writers and speakers, and also from the prologues to the different plays, which at the same time throw light on the literary and personal rela- tions of the poet. These prologues were among the original sources of Suetonius; but he quotes or refers to the works of various grammarians and antiquarians— Porcius Licinus, Volcatius Sedigitus, Santra, Nepos, Fene- stella, @. Cosconius—as his authorities. The first two lived within a generation or two of the death of Terence, and the first of them shows a distinct animus against him and his patrons. But, notwithstanding the abundance of authorities, there is uncertainty as to both the date of his birth and the place and manner of his death. The doubt as to the former arises from the discrepancy of the MSS. His last play, the Adelphi, was exhibited in 160

B.o. Shortly after its production he went to Greece, being then, according to the best MSS., in his twenty-fifth ("nondum quintum atque vicesimum egressus! annum"), according to inferior MSS., in his thirty-fifth year. This uncertainty is increased by a discrepancy between the authorities quoted by Suetonius. Cornelius Nepos is quoted for the statement that he was about the same age as Scipio (born 185 8.c.) and Leelius, while Fenestella, an antiquarian of the later Augustan period, represented him as older. As the authority of the MSS. coincides with that of the older record, the year 185 3B.c. may be taken as the most probable date of his birth. In the case of an author drawing originally from life, it might seem improbable that he should have written six comedies, so true in their apprehension and delineation of various phases of human nature, between the ages of nineteen and twenty-five. But the case of an imitative artist, reproduc- ing impressions derived from literature, is different ; and the circumstances of Terence's origin and early life may well have developed in him a precocity of talent. His acknowledged intimacy with Scipio and Lelius and the general belief that they assisted him in the composition of his plays are more in accordance with the statement that he was about their own age than that he was ten years older. Terence, accordingly, more even than Catullus, Tibullus, or Lucan, is to be ranked among those poets who are the "inheritors of unfulfilled renown." He is said to have been born at Carthage, brought to Rome as a slave, and carefully educated in the house of M. Teren- tius Lucanus, by whom he was soon emancipated.

1 Ritschl reads tngressus, which would make him a year younger.

and in one of his prologues he declares it to be his ambi- tion, while not offending the many, to please the " boni,"

Terence's earliest play was thé Andria, exhibited in 166 B.c., when the poet could have been only about the age of nineteen. A pretty, but probably apocryphal, story is told of his having read the play, before its exhibition, to Ceecilius (who, after the death of Plautus, ranked as the foremost comic poet), and of the generous admiration of it manifested by Cecilius. A similar instance of the

| recognition of rising genius by a poet whose own day was

past is found in the account given of the visit of Accius, on his journey to Asia, to the veteran Pacuvius. The next play exhibited by Terence was the Hecyra, first pro- duced in 165, but withdrawn in consequence of the bad reception which it met with, and afterwards reproduced in 160. The Heauton-timoroumenos appeared in 163, the Lunuchus and Phormio in 161, and the Adelphi in 160 at the funeral games of L. AZmilius Paulus,

After bringing out these plays Terence sailed for Greece,

either to escape from the suspicion of publishing the works

of others as his own, or from the desire to obtain a more intimate knowledge of that Greek life which had hitherto been known to him only in literature, and which it was his professed aim to reproduce in his comedies, The latter is the more probable motive, and we recognize in this the first instance of that impulse to visit the scenes familiar to them through literature which afterwards acted on many of the great writers of Rome. From this voyage to Greece Terence never returned. According to one account he was lost at sea, according to another he died at Stym- phalus in Arcadia, and according to a third at Leucadia, from grief at the loss by shipwreck of his baggage, con- taining a number of new plays which he had translated from Menander. The old grammarian quoted by Suetonius states that he was ruined in fortune through his intimacy with his noble friends. Another account speaks of him as having left behind him property consisting of gardens, to the extent of twenty acres, close to the Appian Way. It is further stated that his daughter was: so well pro- vided for that she married a Roman knight.

The tone of the prologues to Terence’s plays is for the most part apologetic, and indicates a great sensitiveness to criticism. He constantly speaks of the malevolence and de- traction of an older poet, whose name is said to have been Luscius Lavinius or Lanuvinus. The chief charge which his detractor brings against him is that of contaminatio, the combining in one play of scenes out of different Greek plays. Terence justifies his practice by that of the older poets, Neevius, Plautus, Ennius, whose careless freedom he follows in preference to the “obscura diligentia” of his detractor. He

recriminates upon his adversary as one who, by his literal adherence to his original, had turned good Greek plays into bad Latin ones. He justifies himself from the charge of plagiarizing from Plautus and Nevius. In another prologue he contrasts his own treat- ment of his subjects with the sensational extravagance of others. He meets the charge of receiving assistance in the composition of his plays by claiming, asa great honour, the favour which he enjoyed with those who were the favourites of the Roman people.

We learn from these prologues that the best Roman literature was ceasing to be popular, and had come to rely on the patronage of the great. A consequence of this change of circumstances was that comedy was no longer national in character and sentiment, but had become imi- tative and artistic. The life which Terence represents is that of a well-to-do-citizen class whose interests are com- monplace, but whose modes of thought and speech are refined, humane, and intelligent. His characters are finely delineated and discriminated rather than boldly conceived,

as they are in Plautus. Delicate irony and pointed epi- gram take the place of broad humour. Love, in the form of pathetic sentiment rather than of irregular passion, 1s the chief motive of his pieces. His great characteristics are humanity and urbanity, and to this may be attributed the attraction which he had for the two chief representa- tives of these qualities in Roman literature,—Cicero and Horace. It was through the comedies of Terence that the finer influences of the Epicurean philosophy—the friendli- ness, the tolerance, the consideration for the feelings of others, inferiors as well as equals, inculcated by that philosophy—entered into Roman life and literature. The dissolving influence of that school on the severer personal morality of the older Roman republic also entered into Roman life through the same medium. But it was a great gain to the strong but rude Roman character to learn, as it could from every line of Terence, lessons not only of courtesy and social amenity but of genuine sym-

pathy and consideration.

Terence’s pre-eminence in art was recognized by the critics of the Augustan age:

‘“‘Vincere Cecilius gravitate, Terentius arte.” The art of his comedies consists in the clearness and simplicity with which the situation is presented and developed, and in the consist- ency and moderation with which his various characters play their part. But his great attraction to both ancient and modern writers has been the purity and charm of his style, whether employed in narrative or dialogue. This charm he derived from his familiarity with the purest Latin idiom, as it was habitually used in the intimate intercourse of the best Roman families, and also with the purest Attic idiom, as it had been written and spoken a century before his own time. The fine Attic flavour is more perceptible in his Latin than in the Greek of his contemporaries. He makes no claim to the creative exuberance of Plautus, but he is entirely free from his extravagance and mannerisms. The superiority of his style over that of Lucilius, who wrote his satires a generation later, is almost immeasurable. The best judges and the greatest masters of style in the best period of Roman literature were his chief admirers in ancient times. Cicero frequently reproduces his expressions, applies passages in his plays to his own circumstances, and refers to his personages as typical representations of character.4 Julius Cesar characterizes him as “puri sermonis amator.” Horace, so depreciatory in general of the older literature, shows his apprecia- tion of Terence’by the frequent reproduction in his Sattres and in his Odes of his language and his philosophy of life. Quintilian applies to his writings the epithet “elegantissima,” and in that connexion refers to the belief that they were the work of Scipio Africanus. His works were studied and learned by heart by the great Latin writers of the Renaissance, such as Erasmus and Me- lanchthon ; and Casaubon, in his anxiety that his son should write a pure Latin style, inculcates on him the constant study of Terence. Montaigne applies to him the phrase of Horace : ‘‘Liquidus puroque simillimus amni.”

He speaks of “his fine expression, elegancy, and quaintness,” and adds, “he does so possess the soul with his graces that we forget those of his fable.”2 It is among the French, the great masters of the prose of refined conversation, that his merits have been most appreciatedin moderntimes. Sainte-Beuve, in his Nowveaux Lundis, devotes to him two papers of

delicate and admiring criticism. He quotes Fénelon and Addison, “deux esprits polis et doux, de la méme famille littéraire,” as expressing their admiration for the inimitable beauty and naturalness of one of his scenes. Fénelon is said to have preferred him even to Moliére. Sainte-Beuve calls Terence the bond of union between Roman urbanity and the Atticism of the Greeks, and adds that it was in the 17th century, when French literature was most truly Attic, that he was most appreci- ated. M. Joubert is quoted? as applying to him the words “Le miel attique est sur ses lévres ; on croirait aisément qu’il naquit sur le mont Hymette.”

The most famous edition of Terence is that of Bentley, published in 1726. More recent editions are those of Parry, in the Bibliotheca Classica, and of W.

Wagner. The text has been edited by A. Flickeisen in the Teubner series of.

classics. A number of editions of the separate plays have been published recently both in England and in Germany. Wie

TERESA, St. See THERESA, St.

TERLIZZI, a town of Italy, in the province of Bari, and 20 miles west from that town, stands in the midst of a fertile plain. It has a castle which at one time was

1 See Hp. ad Fam., i. 9, 19, and Phil., ii. 15. 2 Essays of Montaigne (trans. by Ch. Cotton), chap. lxvii. 3 By E. Negrette, in his Histoire de la Littérature Latine.

very strong and occasionally resorted to by the emperor Frederick II. and afterwards by the Aragonese sovereigns. The walls and towers of the town still remaim, but the fosse has been turned into boulevards. ‘Terlizzi has a considerable trade, chiefly in the wine and fruit of the district. The population of the town in 1881 was 20,442 (commune, 20,592).

TERM (from the Latin terminus) in English law is used in two senses, the idea common to both being that of a limited and certain period of time. E

(1) It denotes (or rather did denote) a fixed time during which the courts are open for legal proceedings. Terms in this sense affected only what used to be called the superior courts,—that is, the Queen's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer. They were originally the leisure seasons of the year which were not occupied by great feasts or fasts of the church or by agriculture. Their origin is no doubt to be traced back to the legislation of the early Christian emperors, the principle being adopted in England through the influence of ecclesiastical judges, and still surviving in the universities and Inns of Court. Terms were regulated by many Acts of parliament, the effect of which was to confine to a comparatively short period the time during which the courts could sit 7m banco,—that is, for the decision of questions of law as distinguished from the decision of questions of fact. There were four terms, Hilary, Easter, Trinity, and Michaelmas, the average duration of each being about three weeks. All legislation on the subject previous to 1873 is now merely of historical interest, for by the Judicature Act of that year the division of the year into terms was abolished so far as related to the adminis- tration of justice.

(2) It denotes the time during which an interest in an estate for life or for years is enjoyed, also the interest it- self, because such an interest must determine at a definite time. If the interest be for life, it is an estate of freehold ; if for years, only a personal interest in real estate, and so personalty, even though the length of the term—for in- stance, 1000 years—may far exceed in duration any possible life estate. A term of years is of two kinds,—the first that created by an ordinary lease reserving a rent, as of a house or a building lease ; the second that created by a settlement or a will, usually without rent reserved, for the purpose of securing payment of money, such as portions to younger children, by the owner of the land. Both kinds have been considerably affected by recent legislation. or instance, the Conveyancing Act, 1881, enables a mortgagor or mort- gagee in possession to make certain leases. Before 1845 provision was always made in conveyances for keeping on foot a term to attend the inheritance, as it was called,—that is, for assigning the remainder of a term to trustees for the protection of the owner of the property against rent-charges or other incumbrances created subsequently to the term, although the term had been satisfied,—that is, the purpose for which the term had been created had been fulfilled. By 8 and 9 Vict. c. 112 the assignment of satisfied terms was

rendered unnecessary. The Conveyancing Acts, 1881 and 1882, give power to enlarge the unexpired residue of a long term in certain cases into the fee simple.

In Scotland terms are the days at which rent or interest is pay- able. They are either legal or conventional: the legal are Whit- sunday and Martinmas ; the conventional are fixed by agreement between the parties. A recent Act (44 and 45 Vict. c. 39) makes uniform the law as to removal terms in burghs. Terms as times of court sittings were defined by 6 Anne c. 53, which fixed four terms— Martinmas, Candlemas, Whitsuntide, and Lammas—for the now obsolete Court of Exchequer. By 19 and 20 Vict. c. 56, s. 26, the winter and summer sittings of the Court of Session are to be held to correspond with the Exchequer terms.

TERMINI, or Termini ImErEsE (Therma Himerenses), a town on the north coast of Sicily, at the mouth of a river of the same name, in the province of Palermo, and

23 miles east-south-east of that town. None of its modern buildings are of any special interest ; in the Piano de San Giovanni above the town the substructure of a Roman villa has been excavated, and there are also traces of an amphitheatre. Terntni is one of the busiest provincial towns of Sicily; the surrounding district being exceed- ingly fertile and the harbour good, there is a considerable export trade in grain, fruit, tartar, and other products. The macaroni of Termini is in high repute. The tunny and sardine fisheries are extensive, and there is a school of navigation. The warm saline springs (110° Fahr.), sung by Pindar, are still largely resorted to, there being a well-appointed bath establishment, founded by Ferdi- nand I. The population of the town in 1881 was 22,370, with its suburbs 22,733 (commune, 23,148).

For the ancient history of Termini see Himmra. ‘The castle of Termini, which Robert of Naples besieged in vain in 1338, was destroyed in 1860.

TERMITES. See Ant, vol. ii. p. 99.

TERMONDE. See DENDERMONDE.

TERN (Norsk Verne, Tenne, or Tende ; Swedish Térna; Dutch Stern'), the name now applied generally to a group of sea-birds, the Sterninx of modern ornithology, but, according to Selby, properly belonging, at least in the Farne Islands, to the species known by the book-name of Sand- wich Tern, all the others being those called Sea-Swallows —a name still most commonly given to the whole group throughout Britain from their long wings, forked tail, and marine habit. In Willughby's Ornithologia (1676), however, the word Tern is used for more than one species, and, though it does not appear in the older English dic- tionaries, it may well have been from early times as general

a name as it is now.

Setting aside those which are but occasional visitors to the British Islands, six species of Terns may be regarded as indigenous, though of them one has ceased from ordinarily breeding in the United Kingdom, while a second has become so rare and regularly appears in so few places that mention of them must for prudence sake be avoided. This last is the beautiful Roseate Tern, Sterna dougalli ; the other is the Black Tern, Hydrochelidon nigra, belonging to a genus in which the toes are only half-webbed, of small size and dark leaden-grey plumage. Itis without doubt the Sterna of Turner, and in former days was abundant in many parts of the fen country," to say nothing of other districts. Though nearly all its ancient abodes have been drained, and for its pera sterilized these many years past, not a spring comes but it shows itself in small companies in the eastern counties of England, evidently seeking a breeding- place. All around the coast the diminution in the numbers of the remaining species of Terns within the last 50 years is no less de- plorable than demonstrable.

The Sandwich Tern, S. sandvicensis or S. cantiaca—named from the place of its discovery, though it has long since ceased to inhabit that neighbourhood—is the largest of the British species, equalling in size the smaller Gulls and having a dark-coloured bill tipped with yellow, and dark legs. Through persecution it has been ex- terminated in all its southern haunts, and is become much scarcer in those to which it still resorts. It was, however, never so abundant as its smaller congeners, the so-called Common and the Arctic Tern, —two species that are so nearly alike as to be beyond

discrimina- tion on the wing by an ordinary observer, and even in the hand require a somewhat close examination.? The former of these has eee mNRNON 0

‘ “Starn” was used in Norfolk in the 19th century as a name for the bird commonly known as the Black Tern, thus confirming Turner, who, in 1544, describes what seems to have been the same species as “‘nostrati lingua sterna appellata.” In at least one instance the word has been confounded with one of the old forms of the modern STARLING (vol. xxii. p. 457). To Turner’s name, repeated by Gesner and other authors, we owe the introduction by Linneus of Sterna into scientific nomenclature. ‘‘Ikstern” is another Dutch form of the word.

It was known there as Carr-Swallow, Carr-Crow (corrupted into “Scarecrow ”), and Blue Dar (qu. = Daw ?).

3 Linneus’s diagnosis of his Sterna hirundo points to his having had an ‘‘ Arctic” Tern before him; but it is certain that he did not sus- pect that specific appellation (already used by other writers for the ‘Common ” Tern) to cover a second species. Some modern authorities disregard his name as being insufficiently definite, and much is to be said for this view of the case. Undoubtedly ‘‘hirundo” has now been used so indiscriminately for one species or the other as to cause con- fusion, which is perhaps best avoided by adopting the epithets of Nau-

the more southern range, and often affects inland situations, while the latter, though by no means limited to the Arctic circle, is widely distributed over the north and mostly resorts to the sea- coast. Yet there are localities where, as on the Farne Islands, both meet and breed, without occupying stations apart. The minute diagnosis of these two species cannot be briefly given. It must suffice here to state that the most certain difference, as it is the most easily recognizable, is to be found in the tarsus, which in the Arctic Tern is a quarter of an inch shorter than in its kinsman. The remaining native species is the Lesser Tern, S. minuta, one of the smallest of the genus and readily to be distinguished by its per- manently white forehead. All the species already mentioned, except the Black Tern, have much the same

general coloration— the adults in summer plumage wearing a black cap and having the upper parts of the body and wings of a more or less pale grey, while they are mostly lighter beneath. They generally breed In association, often in the closest proximity—their nests, contain- ing 3 eggs at most, being made on the shingle or among herbage. The young are hatched clothed in variegated down, and remain in the nest for some time. At this season the parents are almost regardless of human presence and expose themselves freely.

At least half-a-dozen other species have been recorded as occurring

in British waters, and among them the Caspian Tern, 8. caspia,.

which is one of the largest of the genus and of wide distribution, though not brecding nearer to the shores of England than on Sylt and its neighbouring islands, which still afford lodging for a few pairs. Another, the Gull-billed Tern, S. anglica, has also been not unfrequently shot in England. All these species are now re- cognized, though the contrary was once maintained, as inhabitants of North America, and many go much further.

An excellent synopsis of the Sub-family Sterninz has been given by Mr Howard Saunders in the Zoological Proceedings (1876, pp. 638-672). He recognizes 5 genera, —Hydrochelidon (with 3 species), Sterna (with 38), Venia, a very aberrant form consisting of but one species, the Inca Tern, peculiar to the western coast of South America, and G'ygis, composed of 2 species of purely white birds and restricted to the southern hemisphere; his fifth genus is Anous, to which belong the various species of Noppy (vol. xvil. p. 531). Often confounded with these last are the two species called in books Sooty Terns (8. fuliginosa and S. anexstheta), but by sailors " Egg-birds" or " Wide- awakes" from their cry. These crowd at certain seasons in innumerable multitude to certain islands within the tropics, where they breed, and the wonderful assemblage at present known as "' Wide-awake fair" on the island of Ascension has been more or less fully described from very ancient times. Dampier in his voyage to New Holland in 1699 particularly described and figured the Sooty Tern (Voyages, iii. p. 142), discriminating it from the Noddy, from which it had not before been distinguished. (A. N.)

TERNATE, a small island in the East Indian Archi- pelago, off the west coast of JiLozo (q.v.), in 0° 48’ N. lat. and 127° 19’ E. long. It is nearly circular in form, with an area of about 25 square miles, and consists almost entirely of a very remarkable volcano (5600 feet) formed of three superimposed cones. Frequent and de- structive eruptions have taken place. Cocoa-nuts, sago, tobacco, cotton, sulphur, and saltpetre are the chief pro- ductions of the island. The clove, which had been ex- tirpated by the early Dutch rulers to enhance its value by restricting its cultivation to the Banda Islands, Am- boyna, &c., is beginning again to be grown, as also is the nutmeg. The inhabitants are nearly all Mohammedan Malays. The town of Ternate, with a population of about 9000, is the seat of a native sultan and of a Dutch resident ; the harbour is commanded by a fort. The residency, which includes a part of the eastern coast of Celebes (see CELEBES), the greater part of Jilolo, and numerous smaller islands, has an area of 26,900 square miles and a population estimated at about 290,000.

mann (Isis, 1819, pp. 1847, 1848), who, acting on and confirming the discovery of Nitzsch (who first detected the specific difference), called the southern species S. fluviatilis and the northern S. macrura. Temminck’s name S. arctica applied to the latter a year later has been most generally used for it, notwithstanding,

TERNI, a town of Italy, in the province of Perugia, is situated in the fertile valley of the Nera, between two branches of that river, about 5 miles below the point where it is joined by the Velino. It has a station, three- quarters of a mile off, on the railway line between Rome and Ancona, 69 miles to the north of the former city and 19 south by west from Spoleto. Terni is an episcopal see, and the seat of a sub-prefecture and a chamber of commerce. Its public buildings include the cathedral (17th century), the church of 8. Francesco (partly dating from the 13th century), a gymnasium, and a theatre. Terni manufactures leather and cloth, and has some trade in wine and silk. For the traveller its chief interest lies in its antiquities (remains of an amphitheatre of the time of Tiberius, a temple, a theatre, baths, and numerous inscrip- tions) and in the proximity of the falls of Velino (Cascate delle Marmore). Alike in volume and in beauty these take a very high place

among European waterfalls; the cataract has a total descent of about 650 feet, in three leaps of 65, 330, and 190 feet respectively. They owe their origin to M’. Curius Dentatus, who in 272 8.c. first opened an artificial channel by which the greater part of the Lacus Velinus in the valley below Reate was drained. The population of the town in 1881 was 9415, with its suburbs 10,371 (commune, 15,853).

Terni is the ancient Jnteramna (‘‘inter amnes”), originally belonging to Umbria and founded, according to a local tradition, in the year 672 8.c. It early became a flourishing municipium, and it did not permanently suffer through being portioned out among his soldiers by Sulla. Its inhabitants had frequent litigations and disputes with their neighbours at Reate in connexion with the regulation of the Velinus, the waters of which are so strongly im- pregnated with carbonate of lime that by their deposits they tend to block up their own channel. The first interference with its natural course was that of M’. Curius Dentatus already referred to. In 54 8B.c. the people of Reate appealed to Cicero to plead their cause in an arbitration which had been appointed by the Roman senate to settle disputes about the river, and in connexion with this he made a personal inspection of Lake Velinus and its outlets. In the time of Tiberius there was a project for regulating the river and its outlets from the lake, against which the citizens of Inter- amna and Reate energetically and successfully protested (Tac., Ann., i. 79). Similar questions arose as the river formed fresh deposits during the Middle Ages and during the 15th and 16th cen- turies. A brancli of the Via Flaminia passed from Narnia to Forum Flaminii, and is given instead of the direct line in the Antonine and Jerusalem itineraries. The emperor Tacitus and his brother Florianus were probably natives of Interamna, which also has been claimed as the birthplace of Tacitus the historian, but with less reason. ‘Terni was the scene of the defeat of the Neapolitans by the French on 27th November 1798.

TERPANDER, a Lesbian poet and musician, settled in Sparta about the end of the Second Messenian War (668 B.c.). According to some accounts, he was invited thither by command of the Delphian oracle to compose the differences which had arisen between different classes in the state. His innovations in music were considered to have inaugurated a new era of musical art in Greece ; but we are very imperfectly informed as to their

nature. On the strength of a fragment (No. 5 in Bergk), which may or may not be genuine,—"'rejecting the four-toned song, we will sing to thee new hymns with the seven-voiced lyre,"— Strabo says that he increased the number of strings in the lyre from four to seven; others take the fragment to mean that he developed the citharcedic nomos (sung to the accom- paniment of the cithara or lyre) by making the divisions of the ode seven instead of four. We possess six short frag- ments of poetry in the Dorian dialect bearing the name of Terpander. They are from hymns to the gods Zeus, Apollo, Apollo and the Muses, the Dioscuri, &c., and are written in a slow spondaic movement or in dactyls. They present ~ no remarkable features and are probably spurious.

Bergk, Poetx Lyrici Greci, iii. (4th ed.) pp. 7-12, Leipsic, 1882.

TERRACINA, a town of Italy, in the province of Rome, and about 60 miles to the south-east of that city, at the

south-east extremity of the Pontine marshes, where the Monti Lepini (see Iraty, vol. xiii. p. 438, and Latium) descend into the sea. The ancient town (Volscian Ancur, Roman Yarracina) stood on the white hillside ("impositum saxis late candentibus Anxur"), along the foot of which, by the seashore, ran the Via Appia. The modern town stands mainly on the level ground. The most conspicuous building is the cathedral, which is believed to occupy the site of a temple of Jupiter Anxurus; it is enriched both externally and internally with beautiful old columns and Roman mosaics. Above the town, on the summit of the cliff, are the remains of a palace of Theodoric (c. 500), afterwards a medieval castle. The ancient harbour, con- structed by Antoninus Pius and once very important, is now silted up; a new mole affords shelter to coasting vessels. Fishing is carried on, and there is some trade in the produce of the district. The population of the town in 1881 was 6294 (commune, 8572).

Anxur finally became Roman in 400 B.c., and a colony was established there in 329. Its strategic position early gave it mili- tary importance ; and its pleasant situation and its mineral waters led many Romans to build villas and seek seaside quarters there.

TERRA-COTTA.! Strictly speaking this name is Mean. applicable to all objects made of baked clay, from the ing.

rudest brick to the finest piece of pottery, but it usually has a more limited meaning, to denote fictile objects which do not come under the head of pottery, such as statuettes and busts; and in its architectural use it specially implies the finer sorts of decorative clay-work, to the exclusion of common building bricks. In ancient times, especially among the Greeks and Romans, terra- cotta was employed for an immense variety of purposes, from the commonest objects of everyday use to the most elaborate and ambitious works of art, such as colossal statues and groups. Though the natural colour and sur- face of the burnt clay are generally very pleasing in tone and texture, it seems to have been universally the custom in classical times to cover the terra-cotta completely with a thin white coating, which formed an absorbent ground for the further application of colour. For internal work, except in rare instances, these colours were mixed with a tempera medium, and applied after the clay had been fired. They were therefore not true ceramic colours; and pigments of great variety and brilliance could be employed, as they had not to undergo the severe ordeal of the kiln. For external work, such as that shown in fig. 5, only earth pigments such as ochres and lime were used, and the colours were fired.

No branch of archeology has during the last dozen Greek

years or so developed so rapidly as that of Greek terra-

cotta figures; on this most fascinating subject an aston- oa

ishingly large mass of literature has been published in Germany and France.2. The discovery of this new world of Greek art began practically in 1873, with the first ex- cavations in the tombs of Tanagra, a Bceotian town on the high road from Athens to the north, which brought to light a number of very beautiful terra-cotta statuettes.’ Subsequent excavations at Corinth, Smyrna, Cyme, Taren- tum, the Cyrenaica, and many other places also yielded a vast number of terra-cotta figures of various dates and styles. By far the greater number belong to the second half of the 4th century B.c.; but examples of an earlier

1 An Italian word meaning literally ‘‘ baked earth.”

2 See list at the end of the present article.

8 See Bull. Com. Inst. Arch., 1874, p. 120. Many thousand tombs have been opened at Tanagra, partly cut in the rock and partly built of masonry. The statuettes were either arranged round the body or packed in large vases. The costume of the female figures is the same as that described by classical writers as being peculiar to the neigh- bouring city of Thebes. The finest of the Tanagra figures are from 8 to 9 inches high.

date are not wanting, not only of figures in the round, but also of reliefs, which appear to have been largely used for the decoration of the flat surfaces of walls and friezes. The earliest of all date from a quite prehistoric period, and are mostly small idol-like figures of the rudest possible form, having an almost shapeless trunk with stick-like projections for the limbs, and the breasts and eyes roughly indicated by round dots. They are usually decorated with coarse stripes or cheques in ochre colours. Examples of these have been found at Hissarlik (Troad), in Cyprus and other islands, and in the citadel of Tiryns in 1884-85 by Dr Schliemann and Dr Dérpfeld. Later but still very archaic figures, 2 or 3 inches high, have been exhumed in many parts of the AZgean Islands; some of these are stiff seated figures of deities,—links between Oriental and Hellenic art, like the statues of the Sacred Way at Bran- chides (south of Miletus). Comparatively few specimens

interest and naturalistic pathos bring us in closer contact with the life and personalities of the past than any more ambitious style of art could possibly do. Moreover, they prove more clearly even than the great plastic works in bronze and marble how deeply a feeling for beauty and a knowledge of art must have penetrated the whole mass of the people. Their immense number shows that they must have been far from costly, within the reach of every

one, and certainly not the production of any famous sculptors. Nevertheless, sketchy as they are in treatment and often faulty in detail, they are in pose, in motive, and in general effect works of the highest beauty, full of the most inimitable grace, and evidently the production of men in whom the best qualities of the sculptor were innate by a sort of natural ae:

birthright. Several small figures from

exist of the best period of Greek art—the 5th century.! A relief in the Louvre (about 18 by 12 inches) with a pierced background, dating from the first half of the 5th century, represents two female mourners at a sepulchral stele,—one standing and the other seated ; under the foot of the latter is inscribed AAEKTP, On the other side of the stele are two youths (the Dioscuri) standing by a horse. The whole design is simple, but very graceful, and the modelling is skilfully treated in very low relief. The colouring—blue, red, white, and dark brown—is well preserved. This relief was pressed in a mould, and was intended to be attached to a wall, probably that of a tomb, as a votive offering to the dead.?

In most cases the terra-cotta figures and reliefs occur in or close by tombs, but it is only in comparatively rare instances that the subjects represented have any reference todeath. Another large class have been found in the vicinity of temples, and are probably votive offerings, such as the small statuettes of horses from the acropolis of Athens, now in the Louvre. In other cases, as at Halicarnassus, great quantities of small figures were buried under a temple, probably to purify the site, as was done in Egypt under the later dynasties, when many hundred figures of bronze Were sometimes buried under one building. Owing to the fact that the statuettes found scattered in and round tombs have frequently their heads broken off, Pottier and Reinach have suggested that they were brought as offer- ings to the dead and their heads were broken off by the mourners at the side of the tomb. Rayet believes that this practice was a sort of survival of the custom of sacrificing female and boy slaves at the tombs of the dead. In many cases, however, the figures are intact, and it is probable that many of the tombs were broken Open and rifled long ago, which would explain the muti- lated and scattered condition of the figures. The tombs of Tanagra have yielded by far the richest finds of these figures, the specimens being

very remarkable for their beauty. These exquisite statuettes do not (in most cases) represent deities or heroic personages, but the homely every-day life of the Greeks, treated with great simplicity and evident realism: they are in plastic art what in painting would be called genre,? and in their strong human

1 A good example of a terra-cotta relief of the first part of the 5th century B.c. is figured in vol. ii, p. 852,

? Some very beautiful fragments of reliefs in terra-cotta are pre- served in the museums of the Louvre, of Copenhagen, and the Kir- cheriano in Rome. These represent on a small scale parts of Phidias's Panathenaic frieze, which have all the appearance of being works of the 5th century B.c., but may possibly be forgeries or Roman copies ; see Waldstein, Art of Pheidias, Cambridge, 1885.

3 In some the most homely sort of genre is represented,—a girl milking a cow, a cook or a barber at his work, &c. Even portrait figures occur, as, for example, a wonderfully lifelike group of a man

and his wife in the collection of Mr Ionides, recently lent to the South Kensington Museum.

Myrina (Mysia) have the artist's name in- scribed on them ; but signatures of this sort are rare.*

It is impossible to describe the many subjects treated. Only a few examples can bementioned. Among single figures the most frequent are those of girls stand- ing or seated in an immense variety of pose, and with plenti- ful drapery arranged in countless methods, showing the great taste with which a Greek lady could Fic. 1.—Statuette of a girl and infant Eros dispose the folds of from Tanagra. (St Petersburg.)

her ample pallium, whether it hung in graceful loops or was wound closely round the figure or formed a hood-like veil over the head. In some the lady holds a leaf-shaped

Fic, 2.—Aphrodite and cupids.

The pendant hung round the neck of Aphrodite is gilt.

(South Kensington Museum.)

fan, or is looking in a circular mirror, or holds a ball ready for the game. Many have a strange broad hat, probably of straw, which does not fit on the head, but must have

ee ee eee * See Gaz. des B.-Arts, xxxiii., 1886, p. 278.

Tech- nical methods.

Asia Minor statu- ettes.

the labours of Heracles. These also mostly date from the 4th century B.c., and the statuettes often appear to be copies from sculpture of the school of Praxiteles or Scopas. One instance is the fine nude figure of Eros as a youth leaning against a cippus, holding a bronze arrow in his hand, in the collection of M. de Branteghem, now in Rome.2 The whole of it was gilt, which was frequently the case with the Asia Minor statuettes, but rarely so in those of Tanagra.2 A very beautiful figure of a winged Victory in the same collection (from the Castellani sale) presents the same motive as the colossal Victory of Samothrace (in the Louvre) ; it supplies the missing right hand, which in the terra-cotta contains a bunch of roses. The drapery of this figure is blue, mottled, or shot with gold. Other figures, from their heights being arranged in even gradations, seem to be copies from some large pedi- mental sculpture. Unfortunately little is yet known of the various fabriques of these Asia Minor figures, as in most cases their provenance is very doubtful. The Lecuyer collection possessed some groups with several figures forming important compositions. One of these shows two female mourners at a tomb, and a warrior clad in full armour with his horse. The most remarkable group (see fig. 4) is that of a soul led by Hermes Psycho-

A)

been fastened by a pin to the hair or veil. One very beautiful motive is that of a girl playing with an infant Eros, who flies to her for shelter, and is received with welcome half tinged with dread. Fig. 1 shows a very lovely statuette of this kind, now in the Hermitage Palace. A favourite subject is taken from a game in which one girl carries her playmate on her back,—a motive which, though difficult to treat in sculpture, is managed very gracefully in terra-cotta. Other very lovely groups are Aphrodite suckling the baby Eros, or with more than one cupid hovering round her. A very beautiful example (see fig. 2) occurs in the South Kensington Museum (from the Castellani sale). It represents a half-nude figure of Aph- rodite reclining on a couch, with two cupids behind holding up a veil, which was coloured blue to form a background to the creamy white of Aphrodite's body.

The Tanagra and other figures are all formed of thin pieces of soft clay pressed into a mould, usually formed in two halves and then stuck together; and they are made hollow so as not to warp and crack in the firing, and have a hole at the back for the escape of moisture during that process. The head is solid and was formed in a separate mould, as were also any accessories, such as fans or mirrors, and arms if they extend away from the body. Replicas of the same figure are often varied by having different heads or accessories; three or four ex- amples have been found from the same mould. After the whole was put together it was usually touched up and finished with modelling tools. The colour was applied after baking; a coating of creamy white lime or chalk all over served as the flesh tint and also as a good ground for the other colours. The hair of the females is always of arich auburn red, such as the Venetians were so fond of painting in the 16th century; blue was touched on the eyes and crimson on the lips. Drapery, if not white, was usually rose-colour or blue, often with a fringe or bands of gold on the border. Necklaces, earrings, and other ornaments were generally gilt, the gold leaf being applied over a slightly raised surface of slip, as on the Greek vases. Similar examples have been found in tombs at Thebes, at Thespize, and round Athens. Some of the Attica figures are covered, not with the usual non-ceramic colours, but with a real white ena- mel, the vitrified surface of which is very often slightly decomposed ; further coloured decoration was in some cases added over this enamel.

A number of places in the west of Asia Minor have yielded large quantities of terra-cotta figures, very similar in size and technique to those of Tanagra, but belong- ing for the most part to quite a different school of sculpture. Un- like the Tanagra figures, which are rather pictorial in style and deal with genre subjects, those from Smyrna, Cyme, Myrina, and other places in Asia Minor are thoroughly sculpturesque in design, and are fre- quently miniature reproductions of f large statues or groups (see fig. 3). Many of them stand on moulded pedestals, while the Tanagra figures have only a thin slab of clay asa se am add = _. of base. The average size of _ both (Berlin ieanae) os classes is from 6 to 10 inches high. Very elaborate groups with three or four figures often occur. Dionysiac and Bacchanal subjects are fre- quently chosen, or scenes from sacred mythology, such as

Fia. 4.—A soul about to enter Charon's bark. (Prince Liechtenstein's collection, Vienna ; formerly in the Lecuyer collection.)

pompus to the bark of Charon, who is represented as a bent aged man. Hermes, a graceful nude figure, gently urges the shrinking soul—a draped female figure—to the boat, at the brink of the rush-grown Styx. The whole scene is imagined with much tender grace and real pathos, though not highly finished in its details. One of the most important terra-cotta figures yet discovered has recently been brought to England from Smyrna. It isa very beautiful copy of the Diadumenos of Polycletus, which in the details of its modelling reproduces some characteristics of the later school of Praxiteles. The fore- arms and the legs below the knee are lost ; but in breadth

1 Fine examples of all these existed in the collection of M. Lecuyer, which is now dispersed (see Lenormant, Coll. Lecuyer de terre-cuites, Paris, 1884, which is well illustrated with photographs).

2 In a few other examples objects of bronze are placed in the hands of the figures.

3 The lovely series of little figures of dancing cupids from Tanagra, some of which are in the Louvre and others in the South Kensington Museum, were wholly gilt, but the larger statuettes of Tanagra appear to have had gold applied only for special ornaments.

4 For many reasons both finders and dealers usually wish to keep secret where valuable finds are made. In most museums the labels simply repeat the dealer’s account (for want of better information), so that the statement of the provenance must usually be accepted with caution.

a

Syrenaic statu- ‘tte

|

“aren-

‘ine yusts,

‘Ise in reek ‘chitec- ire.

THERRA-COTTA

of modelling and grandeur of style this little figure, which was only about 14 inches high when perfect, has the effect of a much larger statue, and it is a real master- piece of Greek plastic art.1 In the neighbourhood of Smyrna and Ephesus a large number of caricature figures have been exhumed, some of which are modelled with a wonderful feeling for humour.” These strange figures have attenuated limbs, large heads, flapping ears, and goggle eyes. Some play on musical instruments ; others represent actors; and one in the De Branteghem collec- tion is a caricature of a discobolus in almost the attitude of Myron’s celebrated statue.

A very different class of statuettes has recently come to light in the Cyrenaica, on the northern coast of Africa. Many of these are nude female dancers wearing an elaborate stephanos-like head-dress. They are realistic in modelling and very ungraceful in pose,—a striking con- trast to the exquisite taste of the Tanagra and most of the Asia Minor figures. Recent excavations in the tombs of Corinth have produced a large number of fine terra- cottas, ranging in date over a very long period. Another and artistically very perfect class of figures is being dug up from among the tombs of Tarentum. Some of these belong to the finest period of Greek art,

probably about 400 B.c., and others are even earlier. Many are not statuettes, but merely small busts of heroic style, and of the highest sculpturesque beauty. They are certainly not portraits, and do not appear to repre- sent deities. It.has been suggested that they are ideal- ized representations of ancestors, whose commemoration, in some places, formed an important cult; but their real meaning must for the present remain uncertain. Many thousand votive figures and reliefs in clay have been found within the temenz of the temples of the Chthonian deities at Tarentum and elsewhere. It seems to have been customary for the priests periodically to clear out of the temples the broken or too numerous offerings which were then buried within the enclosure ; whole series arranged chronologically in groups have been discovered buried in separate holes.

In addition to statuettes and reliefs, terra-cotta was used by the Greeks for various minor ornamental pur- poses. Delicately moulded necklaces and pendants for ears were stamped out in clay and then thickly covered with gold leaf; this produced a very rich effect at a small cost ; many fine examples are preserved in the Louvre. Children’s toys, such as miniature horses and chariots, and dolls with movable limbs of terra-cotta fastened with wooden pegs, occur in many tombs.

On a larger scale terra-cotta was adapted by the Greeks to important architectural ornamentation. Many fine examples have been found at Olympia and among the ruined temples of Selinus. In some cases the main cornices of the building were simply blocked out square in stone, and then covered with moulded plaques of terra- cotta, carefully formed to fit on and round the angles of the block. The large cymatium which forms the upper member of the cornice is curved upwards, so as to prevent the rain water from dripping all along the edge; and at intervals it is pierced by ornamental clay pipes, which project like a medieval gargoyle. In some examples from Selinus the cymatium is pierced with a beautiful Open pattern of lotus leaf (see fig. 5). The greatest care was taken in fitting these applied mouldings where each plaque joined the next, and especially in making them fit closely on to the stone blocks, in which rebates were cut to receive each plaque. The whole surface of

1 See Journ. of Hellenic Studies, vol. vi., 1886, p. 248.

? The British Museum possesses some fine caricatures of actors from Canino, very skilfully modelled and of a peculiar fabrique.

the terra-cotta is covered with elaborate painted orna- ments of great beauty, in ochre colours applied on a white ground, as in the case of the statuettes. These beautiful temple decorations are well illustrated by Dérpfeld and

Fia. 5.—Cornice enrichments of painted terra-cotta from Selinus. This section shows the careful way in which the terra-cotta is fitted on to the stone; the colours are red and brown ochre and cream-white.

others in Die Verwendung von Terra-cotten, Berlin, 1881. Though no complete examples of terra-cotta statuary now exist, it is certain that the Greeks produced it on a large seale and of the highest class of workmanship. Pliny (H._N., xxxv. 36) mentions that certain statues of Hercules Musagetes and the Nine Muses were “opera figlina,” executed by the painter Zeuxis. These were brought from Athens by M. Fulvius Nobilior, and placed in the temple of Hercules Musagetes, which adjoined the Porti- cus Octavie in the Campus Martius of Rome. Other and earlier examples of clay statues are mentioned by Pausanias.

Among the Etruscans the use of clay for important sculp- Etruscan,

ture was very frequent,—painted terra-cotta or bronze almost excluding marble and stone. An important ex- ample was the clay quadriga on the pediment of the temple of Capitoline Jupiter, which, according to one legend, was brought from Veii by Tarquinius Superbus. This existed till the destruction of the temple by fire in 83 B.c., and was considered one of the seven precious relics on which the safety of the Roman state depended. The great statue of Jupiter in the central cella of this triple temple was also of terra-cotta, and was said to be the work of an Etruscan sculptor from Fregenz. Vitruvius mentions “signa fictilia” as being specially Etruscan. Many other statues in the early temples of Rome were made of the same material. Among the existing specimens of Etruscan terra-cotta the chief are

large sarcophagi, with recumbent portrait effigies of the deceased on the top, the whole being of clay, decorated with painting. Fine examples exist in the Louvre and the British Museum; a good specimen from the latter collection is figured in vol. viii., plate VIII. The Museo Gregoriano in the Vatican possesses some very beautiful friezes of a later date—about the 4th century B.c.—when native Etruscan art had been replaced by that of Greece. These friezes are very rich and elaborate, with heads and scroll foliage in very salient relief. Some of them have at intervals cleverly moulded heads of satyrs, painted a brilliant crimson.

Another very elaborate application of terra-cotta is shown Magna- in the numerous large asci, covered with statuettes, which Grecian.

are found in the tombs of Canosa (Canusium), Cales, and

3 The use of this strongly glowing red is almost peculiar to Hellenic Italy ; the other colours used there were much the same as those of Greece itself. The same magnificent crimson often occurs on cenochoe, moulded into the form of satyrs' heads, which are found in the tombs

of Magna Grecia. XXIII. — 25

many parts of Magna Grecia. The statuettes are some- what similar in style and colourmg to the Tanagra figures, and date from about the same period (4th century B.c.), but are not equal to them as works of art; they are also usually crowded together in a somewhat awkward manner.! The British Museum is specially rich in these elaborate terra-cottas ; few of the colours used appear to be true ceramic pigments.

As in other branches of art, the Romans closely copied the Greeks in their wide application of terra-cotta for statues, reliefs, and architectural ornaments. A large num- ber of beautiful Graeco-Roman reliefs exist, many having designs evidently copied from earlier Greek sculpture. Berlin, the Louvre, the British Museum, and many places in Italy possess fine collections. Friezes with beautiful reliefs 12 to 18 inches deep often occur, little inferior in execution to the earlier Greek work. Many subjects of great

interest are represented: a very fine plaque in the Louvre has the scene of Orestes taking refuge at the sacred omphalos at Delphi, which is represented as a conical stone about 3 feet high, hung round with ornamental festoons made of gold.2 These terra-cottas belong to the early period of the empire; in the 2d century A.D. they became much coarser and less Greek in style, like all the sculpture of that time. A plaque in the Louvre, which represents a chariot-race in the circus, bears its maker's stamp, L.S.ER. At the end of the first and in the early part of the 2d century A.D. the use of terra-cotta for architectural adornment was carried to a high point of perfection in Rome. Many buildings of this period have + the most elaborate decora- | tion moulded in clay and fitted together with wonder- | ful neatness. Not only en- | riched cornices and friezes | were made of terra-cotta, but | even Corinthian columnswith | their elaborate acanthus capi- | tals. In all cases the whole | surface appears to have been | , covered with a thin coating Wp of "opus albarium" and then decorated with colours and even gold. The best existing «, examples in Rome are thew Amphitheatrum Castrense, | ~ many tombs on the Via La- | tina, and the barracks of the | VIIth cohort of the guards | (vigiles) in the Trastevere. | But few examples exist of | the large Roman terra-cotta | sculpture ; the best are some | seated female figures from ' tombs, small life-size, in the | Capitoline museum,—works | of great beauty and very skil- | fully fired without cracks or : warping. The British Mu-¥

XS oe

seum also contains fine speci- Fic. 6.—'Terra-cotta statue of the mens of terra-cotta sculpture Muse Urania, Ist century a.D.

on a large scale, especially a

the torso of a nude male figure (Hercules), some ter- minal figures of Bacchus, and a beautiful statue of Urania (see fig. 6).

1 A very large ascus from Canosa in the British Museum is deco- rated with no less than five statuettes of women and Victories, two large masks of Medusa, and six projecting figures of horses.

? Compare a similar representation of the omphalos on a Greek vase illustrated by Jahn, Vasenbilder, Hamburg, 1839.

| truth, combined

| masterpieces of

In the 14th and more especially in the 15th century Meq;. terra-cotta was adapted in various parts of Europe to the eval. most magnificent and elaborate architectural purposes. In Germany the mark of Brandenburg is specially rich in terra-cotta work.? The church of St Catherine in the town of Brandenburg is decorated in the most lavish way with delicate tracery and elaborate string-courses and cornices, – enriched with foliage, all modelled in clay; the town-hall is another instance of the same use of terra-cotta. At Tangermiinde, the church of St Stephen and other build- ings of the beginning of the 15th century are wonderful ex- amples of this method of decoration ; the north door of St Stephen's especially is a masterpiece of rich and effective moulding. In northern Italy this use of terra-cotta was carried to an equally high point of perfection. The Italy, western fagade of the cathedral of Monza is a work of the most wonderful richness and minute elaboration, wholly | executed in clay, in the latter part of the 14th century. The cathedral of Crema, the communal buildings of Piacenza, and S. Maria delle Grazie in Milan are striking examples of the extreme splendour of effect that can be obtained by terra-cotta work. The Certosa near Pavia has a most gorgeous specimen of the early part of the | 16th century ; the two cloisters are especially magnificent. i Pavia itself is very rich in terra-cotta decoration, especially the ducal palace and the churches of S. Francesco and §. |

Maria del Carmine. Some delicate work exists among the medieval buildings of Rome, dating from the 14th and 16th century, as, for example, the rich cornices on the south aisle of 8. Maria in Ara Cceli, c. 1300; the front of

S. Cosimato in Trastevere, built c. 1490; and a once very magnificent house, near the Via di Tordinone, which dates

from the 14th century. The most important application of terra-cotta in medizval Italy was to statuary—reliefs, busts, | and even groups of many life-sized figures—during the | 15th and 16th ae

centuries. Much 4

of the Florentine terra-cotta sculp- ture of the 15th century is among the niost beauti- ful plastic work the world has ever seen, espe- cially that by Jacopo della Quercia, Dona- tello, and the sculptors of the nextgeneration.® | For life, spirit, &

and realistic y HO HE

nih

with — sculptur- cig : tie esque breadth, F1¢ .—Portrait bust in terra-cotta: Florentine 4 onl work of the middle of the 15th century. (South

these pieces are Kensington Museum.)

invention and manipulation. The portrait busts are perfect models of iconic sculpture (see fig. 7). In some respects the use of burnt clay for sculpture has great advantages over that of marble: the soft clay is easily and rapidly moulded into form while the sculptor's thought is fresh in his mind, and thus terra-cottas often possess a spirit and vigour which can hardly be reproduced in the laboriously finished marble. These

3 See Adler, Mittelalterliche Backstein-Bauwerke, Berlin, 1862.

4 See Gruner, Terra-cotta Architecture of N. Italy, London, 1867.

5 The South Kensington Museum possesses a very fine collection of Florentine terra-cottas of the best period.

oe

f jrance.

TE R—

qualities are specially remarkable in the best works of the Della Robbia family (see Roppra). In the 16th century a more realistic style was introduced, and this was heightened by the custom of painting the figures in oil colours. Many very clever groups of this class were produced by Ambrogio Foppa (Caradosso) for 8. Satiro at Milan and by Guido Mazzoni and Begarelli (1479-1565) for churches in Modena. These terra-cotta sculptures are unpleasing in colour and far too pictorial in style; but those of Begarelli were enthusiastically admired by Michelangelo. Much fine terra-cotta work was produced in France during the 16th century, partly under Italian influence,—many sculptors from northern and central Italy having settled in France, especially under the patronage of Francis I. In the same century a similar Italian influence prevailed largely throughout Spain, and very clever works were produced there, remarkable for their vivid realism and deceptive

tall pictorial style. In England the elaborate use of terra-cotta

ocdern.

did not come into vogue till the early part of the 16th century, and then only in certain counties. Essex pos- sesses the finest examples, such as those of the manor Louse of Layer Marney, built in the reign of Henry VIII. The richly moulded windows and battlements of this house are very un-English in style, and it seems probable that all the terra-cotta decorations were made in Holland or Flanders. A richly decorated terra-cotta tomb with re-cumbent effigy exists in the church of Layer Marney ; and in the collegiate church of Wymondham in Norfolk there are very large and elaborate sedilia with lofty canopied niches, all of clay, which appear to be of the same date and fabrique as the Essex examples. Most of the terra- cotta sculpture in England, such as that by Torrigiano, of which fragments exist in Westminster Abbey, the colossal heads of the Czesars at Hampton Court, and the recumbent effigy in the Chapel of the Rolls,? were the work of Italian sculptors, mostly from Florence, who were invited to Eng- land in the reigns of Henry VII. and Henry VIII.

Of late years terra-cotta for architectural purposes has been employed for some very important buildings in London, such as the natural history museum at South Kensington, the Albert Hall, and the front of the other

museum in the Exhibition Road. The durability of well- fired clay, its dense texture, pleasant colour, and smooth surface make it specially suitable to an atmosphere laden with acids and soot as is that of London. The surface resists decomposition, and affords little hold to the minute particles of carbon. The great improvements which have been made in the manufacture of terra-cotta will probably lead to its more extensive use. The great difficulty is to retain the sharpness of impression given by the mould, and above all to avoid the uneven shrinkage and warping which is so liable to take place when it is fired in large pieces. Any want of truth in the lines of a long cornice becomes painfully apparent, and each moulded block of a door or window-jamb must fit accurately on to the next one, or else the line of moulding becomes broken and irregular. Terra- cotta is now made of many different colours, a rich red and a warm ochre or cream colour being the most pleasant to the eye. In order to avoid defects it is necessary that the clay should contain a large proportion of powdered silica, and that the whole mass should be thoroughly homo- geneous. ‘The method by which these ends are secured is much the same as that employed in the making of pottery (see vol. xix. p. 642 sg.).

The most important public collections are in the Louvre, the British Museum, the museums of Berlin and Athens, and a few fine

specimens exist in the South Kensington Museum. The splendid Sabouroff collection is now in the Hermitage Palace at St Peters-

: See Vasari, ed. Le Monnier, xii. 281. This interesting building is now threatened with destruction.

burg. Many museums in Italy—such as those at Florence, Perugia, Capua, Rome, and other places—contain many examples from Etruria and Magna Grecia. A large number of the finest of the Tanagra figures and the like are in private hands; some are illus- trated in the works mentioned in the following list ; that of Prince

Liechtenstein at Vienna is one of the finest.?

Literature.—Léon Heuzey, ‘‘Recherches sur les figurines de femmes voiléés,” in Mon. assoc. des études grecques, Paris, 1874; 1d., ‘‘Rech. sur un groupe de Praxitéle, . . . en terre cuite,” in Gaz. des B.-Aris, September 1875 ; Id., ‘* Rech. sur les terres cuitcs grecques,” in Mon. assoc. des étud. grec., 1876; Id., Les origines des terres cuttes, Paris, 1882; Id., Catalogue des figurines antiques du Louvre, Paris, 1882-83; Id., ‘*‘ Papposiléne et le dieu Bes,” in Bull. Cor. Hell., 1884, pp. 161-167 ; Froliner, Les terres cuites d’ Asie-Mimeure, Paris, 1879-81 ; Id., Cat. dela Coll. Lecuyer, Paris, 1883, and Cat. de la Coll. Barre, Paris, 1878 ; Kekulé, Griechische Thonfiguren aus Tanagra, Berlin, 1878; Id., Griechische Terracotien vom Berliner Musewm, Berlin, 1878; Id., Die antiken Terracotten von Pompeii, Stuttgart, 1880; Rayet, Monuments de l’art antique, Paris, 1884, vol. ii, pp. 74-90; Id., “Sur une plaque estampée,” in Bull. Cor. Hell., 1879, pp. 329-333; Id., Cat. de la Coll. Rayet, 1880; Id., “‘Les figurines de Tanagra (Louvre),” in Gaz. des B.- Arts, 1875; Id., ‘‘I’art gree au Trocadéro,” in Gaz. des B.-Arts, 1878 ; Furtwaengler, La Coll. Sabourof, Paris, 1882-85, splendidly illus- trated in colours; Martha, Cat. des figurines du musée d’ Athénes, 1880; Id., ‘* Figurines corinthiennes en terre cuite,” in Bull. Cor. Hell., 1879, pp. 29-42; Id., ‘Figurines de Tanagra,” ibid., 1880, pp. 71-75; Pottier, ‘Terres cuites Chypriotes,” ibid., 1879, pp. 86-94 ; Pottier and Reinach, ‘ Fouilles de Myrina,” ibid., various articles in vols. for 1882-83; Paul Girard, ‘‘ Nécropoles de la Gréce du Nord,” ibid., 1879, pp. 211-221; Max. Collignon, ‘‘Plaque estampée de Santorin,” ibid., 1881, pp. 436-438; Cesnola, Cyprus, London, 1877; Schlie- mann, Troy, Mycen#, and Tiryns; E. Curtius, Giebelgruppen aus Tanagra, Berlin, 1878; Delauney, ‘‘Terres cuites de Tanagra,” in Revue de France, May and June 1878. An account of the first discovery of the Tanagra figures is given by Otto Liiders in Bull. Inst. Cor. Arch., 1874, p.» 120; see also various articles in Gaz. Archéol., Archdol. Zeitung, and Mon. Inst. Arch. Rom. (especially vol. vi.). For the earlier known terra-cottas, see Panofka, Terracotten des k. Museums zu Berlin, 1842; Combe, Terra-cotias in the British Museum, London, 1810; and Gerhard, Monumenti figulini di Sicilia, Berlin, 1835. Other works have been already referred to. Clever but not quite satisfactory copies of the finest Tanagra and other figures are now made in Berlin and Vienna; they cost from twenty to thirty shillings each. (J. H. M.)

TERRANOVA, or TERRANUOVA, a seaport town of Sicily, on a hill at the mouth of the Terranova, in the pro- vince of Caltanisetta, and 414 miles east-south-east from Girgenti. It contains a castle and several large churches, but has little to interest the traveller. Though the har- bour is poor, there is a considerable trade in corn, wine, fruit, sulphur, and soda. Cloth is manufactured to a small extent. The population of the town in 1881 was 16,440, that of the commune 17,173. In and near Ter- ranova are the remains of the ancient GEL (q.v.). The modern town owes its origin to the emperor Frederick II.

TERRAPIN. See Torroisz.

TERRE HAUTE, a city of the United States, in Harri- son township, Vigo county (of which it is the county seat), in the western part of Indiana. It is situated in 39° 27’ N. lat. and 87° 54’ W. long., at a height of 492 feet above the sea, upon the east bank of the Wabash river, 186 miles nearly south of Chicago and 73 miles west-south-west of Indianapolis. The city stands upon level ground, about 60 feet above the ordinary surface of the river. It is regularly laid out, with wide streets, lined with shade trees ; its principal buildings are the State normal school and the Polytechnic Institute. Six great railroad lines pass through Terre Haute, connecting it directly with the cities of the Mississippi valley. This fact, together with its proximity to the coal-mines of Clay county, has greatly promoted its growth as a manufacturing centre. It had in 1880 a population of 26,042, as against 16,103 in 1870.

TERSTEEGEN, Grruarp (1697-1769), German reli- gious writer, was born at Mors in Rhenish Prussia on 25th November 1697. After being educated at the gymnasium of his native town, he pursued for some years the calling of a ribbon-maker. In 1728 he withdrew from all secular pursuits and gave himself entirely to religious work. His writings include a collection of hymns (Blumengdrtlein, 1729 ; last edition, Stuttgart, 1868), a volume of Gebete, and another of Briefe. He died at Miihlheim in Rhenish Prussia on 3d April 1769. See Hymns, vol. xii. p. 588.

TERTIARIES. See Franciscans, vol. ix. p. 700.

3 Very clever forgeries of terra-cotta are being manufactured, and in many cases real specimens have genuine heads which do not belong to them. ‘The colouring has frequently been touched up and falsified

while in the dealers’ hands. Hven the celebrated Campana collection contained many clever forgeries of terra-cotta reliefs.

196

TERTULLIAN, whose full name was Quintus SEPTIM- 1us FLoRENS TERTULLIANUS, is the earliest and after Augustine the greatest of the ancient church writers of the West. Before him the whole Christian literature in the Latin language consisted of a translation of the Bible, the Octavius of Minucius Felix—an apologetic treatise written in the Ciceronian style for the higher circles of society, and with no evident effect for the church as a whole—and a list of the books recognized as canonical (the so-called Muratorian fragment). Whether Victor the Roman bishop and Apollonius the Roman senator ever really made an appearance as Latin authors is quite un- certain. Tertullian in fact created Christian Latin litera- ture; one might almost say that that literature sprang from him full-grown, alike in form and substance, as Athene from the head of Zeus. Cyprian polished the language that Tertullian had made, sifted the thoughts he had given out, rounded them off, and turned them into current coin, but he never ceased to be aware of his depend- ence on Tertullian, whom he designated as kar’ €£0×7v his master (Jer., De Vir. Zil., 53). Augustine, again, stood on the shoulders of Tertullian and Cyprian; and these three North Africans are the fathers of the Western churches.

Tertullian’s place in universal history is deterniined. by (1) his intellectual and spiritual endowments, (2) his moral force and evangelical fervour, (3) the course of his personal development, (4) the circumstances of the time in the midst of which he worked.

(1) Tertullian was a man of great originality and genius, characterized by the deepest pathos, the liveliest fancy, and the most penetrating keenness, and was endowed with ability to appropriate and make use of all the methods of observation and speculation, and with the readiest wit. His writings in tone and character are always alike “‘rich in thought and

destitute of form, passionate and _ hair- splitting, eloquent and pithy in expression, energetic and condensed to the point of obscurity.” His style has been characterized with justice as dark and resplendent like ebony. His eloquence was of the vehement order ; but it wins hearers and readers by the strength of its passion, the energy of its truth, the pregnancy and elegance of its expression, just as much as it repels them by its heat with- out light, its sophistical argumentations, and its elaborate hair-splittings. Though he is wanting in moderation and in luminous warmth, his tones are by no means always harsh ; and as an author he ever aspired with longing after humility and love and patience, though his whole life was lived in the atmosphere of conflict. Tertullian both as a as and as a writer had much in common with the apostle

aul,

(2) In spite of all the contradictions in which he in- volved himself as a thinker and as a teacher, Tertullian was a compact ethical personality. What he was he was with his whole being. Once a Christian, he was deter- mined to be so with all his soul, and to shake himself free of all half measures and compromises with the world. It is not difficult to lay one’s finger upon very many obliquities, self-deceptions, and sophisms in Tertullian in matters of detail, for he struggled for years to reconcile things that were in themselves irreconcilable ; yet in each case the perversities and sophisms were rather the outcome of peculiarly difficult circumstances in which he stood. It is easy to convict him of having failed to control the glowing passion that wasin him. He is often outrageously unjust in the substance of what he says, and in manner harsh to cynicism, scornful to gruesomeness; but in no battle that he fought was he ever actuated by selfish interests. What he did was really done for the Gospel, as he understood it, with all the faculties of hissoul. But he understood the Gospel as being primarily an assured

Te RU & be AN

hope and a holy law, as fear of the Judge who can cast into hell and as an inflexible rule of faith and of discipline, Of the glorious liberty of the children of God he had nothing but a mere presentiment ; he looked for it only in the world beyond the grave, and under the power of the Gospel he counted as loss all the world could give. He well understood the meaning of

Christ’s saying that He came not into the world to bring peace, but a sword: in a period when a lax spirit of conformity to the world had seized the churches he maintained the “ vigor evangelicus ” not merely against the Gnostics but against opportunists and a worldly-wise clergy. Among all the fathers of the first three centuries Tertullian has given the most powerful expression to the terrible earnestness of the Gospel.

(3) The course of Tertullian’s personal development fitted him in an altogether remarkable degree to be a teacher of the church. Born at Carthage of good family —his father was a ‘“centurio consularis”—he received a first-rate education both in Latin and in Greek. He was able to speak and write Greek, and gives evidence of familiarity alike with its prose and with its poetry; and his excellent memory—though he himself complains about it—enabled him always to bring in at the right place an appropriate, often brilliant, quotation or some historical allusion. The old historians, from Herodotus to Tacitus, were familiar to him, and the accuracy of his historical knowledge is astonishing. He studied with earnest zeal the Greek philosophers; Plato in particular, and the writings of the Stoics, he had fully at command, and his treatise De Anima shows that he himself was able to in- vestigate and discuss philosophical problems. From the philosophers he had been led to the medical writers, whose treatises plainly had a place in his working library. But no portion of this rich store of miscellaneous knowledge has left its characteristic impress on his writings; this influence was reserved for his legal training. His father, whose military spirit reveals itself in the whole bearing of Tertullian, to whom Christianity was above everything a “militia,” had intended him for the law. He studied in Carthage, probably also in Rome, where, according to Eusebius, he enjoyed the reputation of being one of the most eminent jurists. This statement derives confirmation from the Digest, where references are made to two works, De Castrensi Peculio and Questionum Libri VIII, of a Roman jurist named Tertullian, who must have flourished about 180 a.p. In point of fact the quondam advocate never disappeared in the Christian presbyter. This was at once his strength and his weakness: his strength, for as a professional pleader he had learned how to deal with an ad- versary according to the rules of the art—to pull to pieces his theses, to reduce him ad absurdum, and to show the defects and contradictions of his statements,—and was specially qualified to expose the irregularities in the

pro- ceedings taken by the state against the Christians; but it was also his weakness, for it was responsible for his litigiousness, his often doubtful shifts and artifices, his sophisms and argumentationes ad hominem, his fallacies and surprises. At Rome in mature manhood Tertullian became a Christian, under what circumstances we do not know, and forthwith he bent himself with all his energy to the study of Scripture and of Christian literature. Not only was he master of the contents of the Bible: he also read carefully the works of Hermas, Justin, Tatian, Miltiades, Melito, Irenzeus, Proculus, Clement, as well as many Gnostic treatises, the writings of Marcion in particular. In apologetics his principal master was Justin, and in theology proper and in the controversy with the Gnostics, Treneus. As a thinker he was not original, and even as a theologian he has produced but few new schemes of doctrine, except his doctrine of sin. His special gift lay

PTE Uo AN

in the power to make what had been traditionally received impressive, to give to it its proper form, and to gain for it new currency. From Rome Tertullian visited Greece and perhaps also Asia Minor; at any rate we know that he had temporary relations with the churches there. He was consequently placed in a position in which he could check the doctrine and practice of the Roman Church. Thus equipped with knowledge and experience, he returned to Carthage and there laid the foundation of Latin Christian literature. At first, after his conversion, he wrote Greek, but by and by Latin almost exclusively. The elements of this Christian Latin language may be enumerated as follows :—(i.) it had its origin, not in the literary language of Rome as developed by Cicero, but in the language of the people as we find it in Plautus and Terence; (ii.) it has an African complexion; (iii.) it is strongly influenced by Greek, particularly through the Latin translation of the Septuagint and of the New Testament, besides being sprinkled with a large number of Greek words derived from the Scriptures or from the Greek liturgies; (iv.) it bears the stamp of the Gnostic style and contains also some military expressions ; (v.) it owes something to the original creative power of Tertullian. As for his theology, its leading factors were—(i.) the teachings of the apolo- gists; (ii.) the philosophy of the Stoics; (iii.) the rule of faith, interpreted in an anti-Gnostic sense, as he had received it from the Church of Rome; (iv.) the Soterio- logical theology

of Melito and Irenzeus ; (v.) the substance of the utterances of the Montanist prophets (in the closing decades of his life). This analysis does not disclose, nor indeed is it possible to discover, what was the determining element for Tertullian; in fact he was under the dominion of more than one ruling principle, and he felt himself bound by several mutually opposing authorities. It was his desire to unite the enthusiasm of primitive Christ- lanity with intelligent thought, the original demands of the Gospel with every letter of the Scriptures and with the practice of the Roman Church, the sayings of the Paraclete with the authority of the bishops, the law of the churches with the freedom of the inspired, the rigid dis- cipline of the Montanist with all the utterances of the New Testament and with the arrangements of a church seeking to set itself up within the world. At this task he toiled for years, involved in contradictions which it took all the finished skill of the jurist to conceal from him fora time. At last he felt compelled to break off from the church for which he had lived and fought; but the breach could not clear him from the contradictions in which he found himself entangled. Not only did the great chasm between the old Christianity, to which his soul clung, and the Christianity of the Scriptures as juristically and philosophically interpreted remain unbridged ; he also clung fast, in spite of his separation from the Catholic church, to his position that the church possesses the true doctrine, that the bishops per successionem are the reposi- tories of the grace of the teaching office, and so forth. The growing violence of his latest works is to be accounted for, not only by his burning indignation against the ever- advancing secularization of the Catholic church, but also by the incompatibility between the authorities which he recognized and yet was not able to reconcile. After having done battle with heathens, Jews, Marcionites, Gnostics, Monarchians, and the Catholics, he died an old man, carrying with him to the grave the last remains of primi- tive Christianity in the West, but at the same time in conflict with himself.

_ (4) What has just been said brings out very clearly how important in their bearing on Tertullian’s development were the circumstances of the age in which he laboured. His activity as a Christian falls between 190 and 220,

a period of very great moment in the history of the Catho- lic church ; for within it the struggle with Gnosticism was brought to a victorious close, the New Testament estab- lished a firm footing within the churches, the “apostolic” rules which thenceforward regulated all the affairs of the church were called into existence, and the ecclesiastical priesthood came to be developed. Within this period also falls that evangelical and legal reaction against the political and secular tendencies of the church which is known as Montanism. The same Tertullian who had fortified the Catholic church against Gnosticism was none the less anxious to protect it from becoming a political organiza- tion. Being unable to reconcile incompatibles, he broke with the church and became the most powerful representa- tive of Montanism in the West.

Although Tertullian’s extant works are both numerous and copious, our knowledge of his life is very vague. He cannot have been born much later than about 150. His activity as a jurist in Rome must fall within the period of Commodus; for there is no indication in his writings that he was in Rome in the time of Marcus Aurelius, and many passages seem to preclude the supposi- tion. The date of his conversion to Christianity is quite uncertain; there is much in favour of the years between 190 and 195. How long he remained in Rome after becoming a Christian, whether he had attained any office in the church before leaving Rome, what was the date of his visit to Greece, —on these points also we remain in ignorance. It is certain that he was settled in Carthage in the second half of 197, the date of his writing his Apologeticus and (shortly afterwards) his two books Ad Nationcs; we also know that he became a presbyter in Carthage and was married. His recognition of the Montanistic prophecy in Phrygia as a work of God took place in 202-203, at the time when a new persecution broke out. For the next five years it was his constant endeavour to secure the victory for Moutanism within the church ; but in this he became involved more and more deeply in controversy with the majority of the church in Carthage and especially with its clergy, which had the support of the clergy of Rome. As Jerome writes (De Vir, Iil., 53): ‘*Usque ad mediam etatem presbyter fuit ecclesie African, invidia postea et contumeliis clericorum Romane ecclesiz ad Montani dogma delapsus.” On his breach with the Catholic church, probably in 207-208, he became the head of a small Montanist community in Carthage. In this position he con- tinued to labour, to write, and to assail

the lax Catholics and their clergy until at least the time of Bishop Calixtus in the reign of Elagabalus. The year of his death is uncertain. Jerome (ut sip.) says: ‘‘Fertur vixisse usque ad decrepitam extatem.” That he returned at last to the bosom of the Catholic church is a mere legend, the motive of which is obvious; his adherents after his death continued to maintain themselves as a small community in Carthage. Although he had left the church, his earlier writings continued to be extensively read; and in the 4th century his works, along with those of Cyprian, were the principal reading of Western Christians, until they were superseded by those of Jerome, Ambrose, Augustine, and Gregory. Jerome has included him in his catalogue of Christian ‘‘viri illustres,” but only as a Catholic to whom reference should be made with caution.?

The works of Tertullian, on the chronology of which a great deal has been written, and which for the most part do not admit of being dated with perfect certainty, fall into three classes,—the apologetic, the polemical theological, and the ascetic. And in point of time also three periods can be readily distinguished, the years 202-203 and 207-208 constituting the divisions. Some of the things he wrote have unfortunately disappeared,—in particular the De Spectaculis, De Baptismo, and De Virginibus Velandis in Greek ; his works in Latin on the same subjects have survived.

I. Works dating from before 202-203.—To this class belong the Apologeticus (197) and the two books Ad Nationcs, De Specta- cults, De Idololatria, De Cultu Feminarum Libri If., De Testi- monto Animez (written soon after the Apologeticus), Ad Martyres (perhaps the earliest of all), De Baptismo Hereticorum (now lost), De Baptismo, De Penitentia, De Oratione (the last three written for catechumens), De Patientia, dd Uxorem Libri II., De Prescriptione Hezreticorum, and Adv, Marcionem (in its first form). The Apolo- geticus, which in the 3d century was translated into Greek, is the weightiest work in defence of Christianity of the first two centuries. Respecting its relation to the Octavius of Minucius Felix much has been written ; to the present writer it seems unquestionable that Tertullian’s work was the later. Of great moment also is the De Prescriptione Hereticorum, in which the jurist is more clearly heard than the Christian. The De Spectaculis and De Idololatria show that Tertullian was already in a certain sense a Montanist

1 Compare also the judgment of Hilary and of Vincent of Lerins, Commonit., 24.

before he formally went over to that crecd ; on the other hand, his De Penitentia proves that his earlicr views on church discipline were much more tolerant than his later. To learn something of his Christian temper we must read the De Oratione and the De Patientia. The De Baptismo is of special interest from the archeo- logical poiut of view.

Il. Works written between 202-208 and 207-208.—De Virginibus Velandis, De Corona Militis, De Fuga in Persccutione, De Exhorta- tione Castitatis, Scorpiace adv. Gnosticos (2), Adversus Hermogenem, De Censu Anime. adv. Hermogencm (lost), Adv. Valentinianos, Adv. Apellciacos (lost), De Paradiso (lost), De Fato (lost), De Anima, De Carne Christi, De Resurrectione Carnis, and De Spe Fidcliwm (lost), were all written after Tertullian had recognized the prophetic claims of the Montanists, but before he had left the church.

III. Works later than 207-208.—To this period belong the five books Adv. Mareionem, his main anti-Gnostic work (in the third form—the first of the five was written in 207-208), 4d Scapulam (a memorial to the governor, written soon after 211), Dc Pallio (possibly this ought to be classed among the carliest writings), Adv. Praxcan (his principal work against the Monarchians), and Adv. Judzxos. The latest extant works of Tertullian (all after 217) are his controversial writings against the laxity of the Catholics, full of the bitterest attacks, especially upon Calixtus, the bishop of Rome ; these are De Monogamia, De Jejunio, De Pudicitia, and De Ecstasi Libri VIF. (lost). The arguments against the geuuineness of some of the above writings do not sccm to the present writer to have weight. It is uncertain whether Tertullian was the author of the Acta Perpetuz et Felicitatis.

Literature.—A thoroughly adequate edition of the works of Tertullian and a full account of his fortunes as a writer are still desiderata ; the best edition at present is that of Oehler (8 vols., Leipsic, 1853). The editio princeps is by Beatus Rhenanus (Basel, 1521); others have appeared by Gelenius (1550), Pamelius (1579), De la Barre (1580), Rigaltius (1634), Semler (1770-71),

Oberthtir (1780), Leopold (1889 sg.),,and Migne (1844). The Vienna Academy is about to publish an edition by Reifferscheid. There are German translations by Besnard (1837) and Kellner (1882), and an English translation appears in Clark's Ante- Nicene Theological Library. Separate treatises of Tertullian have often been edited,—the Apologeticus by Havercainp (1718), Oehler (1849), and Kayser (1865) ; the Ad Nationes by Godofredus (1635) ; the De Spectaculis by Klussmann (1877) ; the De Testimonio Anime by Lindner (1862); the De Pallio by Salimasius (1856) ; other minor writings by Hurter, &c. The testimonies of the church fathers (the most important being those of Cyprian, Eusebius, Jerome, and Vincent of Lerins) are partly brought together in the editions.

The older studies on Tertullian by Le Nourry, Tillemont, Dupin, Allix, Cave, Ceillier, Mosheim, Centner, Semler, Noesselt, are to some extent reproduced in vol. iii. of Oehler's edition. Among the more inodern contributions to the subject may be mentioned those of Neander (Antignosticus: Geist des Tertul- lians, Berlin, 1825), Bohringer (Die Kirche Christi in Biographien, vol. iii., 2d ed., 1875), Mohler (Patrologie, vol. i., 1840, pp. 701-789), Kaye (Eccles. Hist. of the 2d and 3d Centuries, illustrated from the writings of Tertullian, 3d ed., 1845), Coenen (Comment. de Tertull., Utrecht, 1825), Hesselberg (Tertullian's Lehre, pt. i., Dorpat, 1848), Ebert (Gesch. d. Christl. Lit., 1874), Freppel (Tertullien, Paris, 1864), Hauck (Tertullian's Leben u. Schriften, 1877), Alzog (Patrologie, 3d ed., 1876); see also tlle manuals of ehureh history, history of dogma (¢.g., Harnack's Lehrb. d. Dogmengesch.; also Schwane's, Dorner's, and others), of Roman literature (Teuffel), of Christian philosophy (Ritter, Stéckl, Erdmann, Ueberweg). Compare also Deutinger, Geist d. Christl. Ueberlieferung, vol. i.

On the chronology and genuineness of the works attributed to Tertullian, see Mosheim, Semler, Noesselt (De Vera Altate et Doctrina Scriptorum Tertulliani, 1768; in Oeliler's ed., vol. iii.), Uhlhorn (Fundamenta Chronologiw Tertull., Gottingen, 1852), Bonwetsch (Die Schriften Tertullian's n. d. Zeit ihrer Abfass., Bonn, 1879), Kellner (" Zur Chron. Tert.'s," in Theol. Quartalschr., 1870-71), Groteineyer (Ueber Tertullian's Leben w. Schriften, Kempen, 1863-65), Harnack ('Zur Chronol. d. Schr. Tert.'s," in Ztschr. f. Kirchengesch., 1878), Noldechen ("Tert.'s

Geburtsjahr," in Ztschr. f. wiss. Theol., 1886). On Tertullian as a man, a citizen, and an author, see Ebert (as above), Engelhardt (' Tert.'s schriftstell. Character," in Zischr. f. d. hist. Theol., 1852), Ritter (in Braun and Achterfeld's Bonner Zeitschrift, Hft. 8), Hildebrand (in Jahn's Jahrb. z. Alterthumswissensch , 1843), Dieringer (Doctrina Tertulliant de Rep. et de Offic. et Jur. Civium Christian- orum, Bonn, 1850), Noldechen (''Tert. als Mensch u. als Biirger," in Hist. Zischr., 1885), Sehmidt (De Latinttate Tert., Erlangen, 1870-72), Klussmann (Curarum Tertull., pts. i., ii., Halle, 1881), Hauschild (Die Grundsdtze w. Mittel der Wortbildung bei Tert., Leipsic, 1881), and Langen (De Usu Tert. Preeposi- tionum, Miinster, 1869). On Tertullian as a jurist, see Blumenbach (De Presby- tero et Icto Tertulliano, Leipsic, 1735), Wiescnhavern (De Icto Tertulliano, Hildes- heim, 1743), Pagenstecher (De Jurispr. Tert., Harderwijk, 1768), Rudorff (Rém. Rechisgesch., i. p. 196 sq.). On Tertullian as an apologete, see Hefele ('Tert. als Apologet," in Beitr. zur Kirchengeschichte, vol. i.), Jeep (" Tert. als Apolo- get," in Jahrbb. f. deutsche Theol., 1864), Pelet (Essai sur l'apolog. de Tert., Strasburg, 1868), Condamin (De Tertulliano Vexate Religionis Patrono, Bar-le- Due, 1877), Werner (Gesch. d. apolog. u. polemisch. Lit., vols. i., ii., 1861-62). On his relations to the Greek apologists, see Harnack (Teate u. Unters. z. altchrist. Lit.~~Gesch., vol. i.); on those to Minucius Felix, Ebert (Tert.'s Verhdltniss zu M. Felix, Leipsic, 1868), and a number of other discussions by Hartel, Kiihn, &c. His relations to Clement of Alexandria have been investigated by Miinscher (in Henke's Magazin, vol. vi., 1796), Noldechen (Jahrbb. f. prot. Theol., 1886 ; Theol. Stud. wu. Krit., 1886); on his relations to Irenzeus, Hippo~~ lytus, Melito, and the Gnosties, see Harnack (Zur Quellenkritik der Gesch. d. Gnosticismus, Leipsic, 1873), Lipsius (Die Quellen der diltesten Ketzergesch., 1875), Harnack (De Apellis Gnosi Monarchica, Leipsic, 1874, and Texte u. Untersuch.., vol. i.), Hilgenfeld (Ketzergesch., 1884), and Hagemann (Die rém. Kirche, 1864). His relations to the Greek element in general are treated of by Caspari in vol. ili. of his Quellen zur Gesch. d. Taufsymbols (1875), and those to the New Testa- ment and primitive Christianity by Rénsch (Das N. T. Tert.'s, 1871), Volkmar (in Credner's Gesch. d. NTlichen Kanon, 1860), Westcott (Hist. of the Canon of the N. T., 5th ed., 1881), Charteris (Canonicity, 1880), Overbeck (Die Auffassung d. Stretts zwischen Petrus u. Paulus bei den Kirchenvdtern, Basel, 1877), Barth (Co Tert.'s Auffassung des Ap. Paulus,"

&c., in Jahrbb. f. prot. Theol., vol. viii.) and Noldechen (‘‘ Hin gefliigeltes Wort bei Tert.,” in Zéschr. f. wiss. Theol., 1885).

On Tertullian as a Montanist, see Gottwald (De Montanismo Tert., Breslau 1863) and the accounts of Montanism by Schwegler, Baur, Ritschl, Bonwetsch, De Soyres, Salmon, Harnack, and others; also Nodldechen (Die Krisis in Karthag. Schleierstreit,” in Zischr. f. kirchl. Wissensch. u. kirch. Leben, 1886).

TER—TES

On his relation to the creed and rule of faith consult Harnack (Pair. App. Opp., i., 2ded., ii, Appendix, and Leirb. d. Dogmengesch., vol. i.). His doctrine of the Eucharist has been discussed by Dieringer (in Der Katholik for 1864), Leim- bach (Beitr. 2. Abendmahislehre Tert.’s, Gotha, 1874), and in the standard works on the history of the doctrine generally. For his doctrine of the resurrection, see Oehninger (Lert. u. seine Auferstehungslehre, Augsburg, 1878); for his psycho- logy, see Der Katholik for May, August, and September 1865, Murton (Essai sur Vorigine de Vdme Wapres Tert., Strasburg, 1866), Burckhardt (Die Seelenlehre des Tert., Bautzen, 1857), Stock] (De Tert. Doctrina Psychol., Minster, 1863), and Hauschild (Tert.’s Psychologie, Frankfort-on-Main, 1880). On his doc- trine of the original state of man, see Wendt (Die Lehre von d. menschl. Voll- kommenheit, 1882) and Noéldechen (Zischr. f. wiss. Theol., 1885); and on lis doctrine of redemption, see Bordes (Exposé crit. des opin. de Tert. sur la redemp- tion, Strasburg, 1860). The treatise Adv. Praxean and his anti-Monarchian polemic are discussed by Lipsius VJahrbb. f. deutsch. Theol., 1868) and Hage- mann (as above), and in the church histories ; his conception of the sacra- ments by Leimbach (Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1871). His ethical ideas are analysed by Miinscher (Henke’s Magazin, vol. vi., 1796) and Nielsen (Tert.’s Kthik, Copenhagen, 1879); the De Pallio by Kellner (Theol. Quartalschr., 1870), the De Patientia by Noldechen (Ztschr. f. kirchl. Wissensch. u. kirch. Leben, 1885), the Adv. Judzxos by Semler, Bonwetsch (as above), and Volkinar (in Credner’s Gesch. d. NTlichen Kanon), the spurious addition to the De Prescriptione by the authorities already cited for his relations to Gnosticism and by Lipsius (Zur Quellenkritik des Epiphanios, 1865). On the poem Adv. Marce., falsely

ascribed to Tertullian, see Hiickstadt's monograph (Leipsic, 1875), also the Zischr. f. wiss. Theol., 1876; on the poem De Sodoma et de Jona, see Miller (Rhein. Mus., xxii). The passages of archeological importance in Tertullian are discussed by Leimbach in Zéschr. f. die hist. Theol., 1871, and by Noldechen in Zischr. f. kirchl. Wissensch. u. kirchl. Leben, 1885; see also Morcellus (Africa Christiana, 3 vols., Brescia, 1816), Miinter (Primordia Ecclesie Africane, Copen- hagen, 1829), and Gorres ("' Das Christenthum u. der Staat z. Zeit des Kaisers Septiniius Severus," in Jahrbb. f. prot. Theol., 1878). Some editions of indi- vidual works of Tertullian, as well as philological investigations not mentioned in the foregoing list, will be found particularized in Mayor's Bibliographical Clue to Latin Literature, 1875. (A. HA.)

TERUDANT, or Tarupant. See Morocco, vol. xvi. p. 834.

TERUEL, a province of Spain, forming part of the ancient kingdom of Aragon, is bounded on the N. by Zaragoza, on the E. by Tarragona, on the S. by Castellon de la Plana and Valencia, on the 8.W. by Cuenca, and on the W. by Guadalajara, and has an area of 2363 square miles. It is intersected from east to west by the mountain chains of Albarracin and Gudar, from which several offsets diverge on either side. The loftiest summit is the Muela de San Juan (5280 feet), which is covered with snow for a great part of the year. These sierras give rise to several large rivers, the principal being the Tagus, the Guadalaviar, the Jiloca, and the Guadalope. Notwithstanding the fertile character of the plains and an abundance of mineral wealth, the trade of the province is unimportant, and civilization in a backward state, owing to the lack of means of trans- port, the want of enterprise, and imperfect communication with the outer world. The chief products are corn, wine, oil, cheese, fruits, timber, flax, hemp, silk, wool, and saffron, together with cattle, sheep, and swine ; while in the busier centres some slight manufacture of coarse cloth, paper, leather, soap, pottery, and esparto goods is carried on. The population of the province in 1877 was 249,000.

TERUEL, the capital and most important town of the above province, is situated on the left bank of the Guada- laviar, 142 miles east of Madrid, and on the high road from Calatayud to Valencia. It is an ancient walled city, fast falling into decay, with narrow gloomy streets and crumbling medieval

houses. Some of the numerous churches are worth seeing, with their paintings by the rarely known 17th-century artist Antonio Visquert, as is also the great aqueduct of 140 arches, raised 1555-60 by Pierre Bedel, a French architect. In the cloisters of San Pedro lie the remains of the celebrated “lovers of Teruel,” Juan de Marcilla and Isabella de Segura, whose pathetic story has formed the subject of numerous dramas and poems by Perez de Montalban, Yaque de Salas, Hartzen- busch, and others. The cathedral is Churrigueresque. Teruel was raised to the dignity of a sce in 1577, the bishop being suffragan of Zaragoza. The population of the city in 1877 was 9482.

TESCHEN (Polish C7eszyn), the chief town of a duchy in Austrian Silesia, is situated on the Olsa, a tributary of the Oder, 34 miles south-east of Troppau. It combines both Polish and German peculiarities in the style of its buildings, and contains five churches, the most interesting of which are the parish church, which formerly belonged

aa

a

ee el

to a Dominican monastery, and the Gnadenkirche, one of | IV. c. 7). This general repeal has been followed by the

the Protestant churches built in terms of the treaty of |

Altranstidt in 1706. The only relic of the ancient castle is a square tower, dating from the 12th century. The manufacturing industry of the town is slight, and, since the construction of the railway aa Oderberg, Teschen has lost much of the trade formerly commanded by its position near the borders of Silesia, Hungary, Moravia, and Galicia. A flax dressing and spinning

factory, a large brewery, and several furniture factories are the chief industrial establish- ments in the town. The population in 1880 was 13,004.

It was at Teschen that Maria Theresa and Joscph IJ. signed the peace which put an end to the war of Bavarian succession in 1779. The duchy of Teschen was formerly a more or less direct apanage of the Bohemian crown. For some timc it bore the name of Saxe- Teschen (Sachsen-Teschen), owing to the fact that Prince Albert of Saxony, who married an archduchess of Austria, received it as part of his wife's dowry. Prince Albert beqneathed it in 1822 to the emperor of Austria, who bestowed it on the archduke Albert.

TESSIN. See Ticrno.

TEST ACTS. The principle that none but persons pro- fessing the established religion were eligible for public em- ployment was adopted by the legislatures of both England and Scotland soon after the Reformation. In England the Acts of Supremacy and Uniformity and the severe penalties denounced against recusants, whether Roman Catholic or Nonconformist, were affirmations of this prin- ciple. The Act of 7 Jac. I. c. 2 provided that all such as were naturalized or restored in blood should receive the sacrament of the Lord's Supper. It was not, however, until the reign of Charles IT. that actual receiving of the communion of the Church of England was made a con- dition precedent to the holding of public offices. The earliest imposition of this test was by the Corporation Act of 1661 (13 Car. IT. st. 2, c. 1), enacting that, besides taking the oath of allegiance and supremacy and sub- scribing a declaration against the Solemn League and Covenant, all members of corporations were within one year after election to receive the sacrament of the Lord's Supper according to the rites of the Church of England. This Act was followed by the Test Act of 1672 (25 Car. II. c. 2). The immediate cause of the Test Act (the full title of which is "An Act for preventing dangers which may happen from popish recusants") was the king's declaration of indulgence, dispensing with laws inflicting disabilities on Nonconformists. This Act enforced upon all persons filling any office, civil or military, the obligation of taking the oaths of supremacy and allegiance and subscribing a declaration against transubstantiation, and also of receiving the sacrament within three months after admittance to office. The Act did not extend to peers; but in 1678 30 Car. II. st. 2 enacted

that all peers and members of the House of Commons should make a declaration against transubstantiation, invocation of saints, and the sacrifice of the mass,—a special exception being made in favour of the duke of York. The provisions of the Test Act were violated by both Charles II. and James II. on the ground of the dispensing power claimed by the Stuart kings. In a well-known case of Godden ». Hales (11 State Trials, 1166), an action for penalties under the Test Act brought against an officer in the army, the judges decided in favour of the dispensing power,—a power finally abolished by the Bill of Rights. After a considerable number of amend- ments and partial repeals by the legislature of the Acts of 1661, 1672, and 1678, and of Acts of indemnity to pro- tect persons under certain circumstances from penalties Incurred under the Test Act, the necessity of receiving the sacrament as a qualification for office was abolished by 9 Geo. IV. c. 17, and all Acts requiring the taking of oaths and declarations against transubstantiation, &c., were re- pealed by the Roman Catholic Relief Act of 1829 (10 Geo.

special repeal of the Corporation Act by the Promissory Oaths Act, 1871 (34 and 35 Vict. ¢. 48), of the Test Act by the Statute Law Revision Act, 1863, and of the Act of 1678 by 29 and 30 Vict. c. 19. Religious tests re- mained in the English universities until 1871. To bea member of the Church of England was a necessary con- dition precedent for holding most university or college offices by the Act of Uniformity of 1662, and such offices were not affected by the Toleration Act of 1688 and the Roman Catholic Relief Act of 1829. In 1871 the Uni- versity Tests Act abolished subscriptions to the articles of the Church of England, all declarations and oaths respect- ing religious belief, and all compulsory attendance at public worship in the universities of Oxford, Cambridge, and Durham. There is an exception confining to persons in holy orders of the Church of England degrees in divinity and positions restricted to persons in holy orders, such as the divinity and Hebrew professorships.

Scotland.—A religious test was imposed immediately after the Reformation. By 1567, c. 9, no one was to be appointed to a public office or to be a notary who did not profess the Reformed religion. The Scotch Test Act was 1681, c. 6, rescinded by 1690, c. 7. Re- nunciation of popery was to be made by persons employed in edu- cation (1700, c. 3). A motion to

add, after the 18th article of union, an exemption of Scotsmen from the sacramental test in the United Kingdom was negatived by the Scottish parliament. A similar fate awaited a proposal that while a sacramental test was in force in England all persons in public office in Scotland should subscribe their adhesion to the Presbyterian Church government. By 1707, c. 6, all professors, principals, regents, musters, or others bearing office in any university, college, or school in Scotland were to pro- fess and subscribe to the Confession of Faith. All persons were to be frec of any oath or test contrary to or inconsistent with the Protestant religion and Presbyterian Church government. The reception of the communion was never a part of the test in Scotland as in England and Ireland. The necessity for subscription to the Confession of Faith by persons holding a university office (other than that of principal or professor of theology) was removed by 16 and 17 Vict. c.89. The Act provides that in place of subscription every person appointed to a university office is to subscribe a declar- ation according to the form in the Act, promising not to teach any opinions Sppeed to the divine authority of Scripture or to the Confession of Faith, and to do nothing to the prejudice of the Church of Scotland or its doctrines and privileges.

Ireland.—An oath of allegiance was required by the Irish Act of Supremacy (2 Eliz. c. 1). The English Act of 3 Will. and M. ¢. 2 substituted other oaths and enforced in addition from peers, mem- bers of the House of Commons, bishops, barristers, attorneys, and others a declaration against transubstantiation, invocation of the Virgin Mary and the saints, and the sacrifice of the mass. By the Irish Act of 2 Anne c. 6 every person admitted to any office, civil or military, was to take and subscribe the oaths of allegiance, supremacy, and abjuration, to subscribe the declaration against transubstantiation, &c., aud to receive the Lord’s Supper according to the usage of the Church of Ireland. English legislation on the subject of oaths and declarations was adopted in Ireland by Yelver- ton’s Act, 21 and 22 Geo. III. c. 48, § 3 (Ir.). These provisions were all repealed by the Promissory Oaths Act, 1871. The Roman Catholic Relief Act of 1793 (33 Geo. ITI. c. 21, Ir.) excepted Trinity College, Dublin, from its provisions, and tests existed in Dublin university until 1873. They were abolished as far as regarded certain scientific professorships in 1867 by 30 Vict. c. 9, and

were finally abolished for the whole university by the University of Dublin Tests Act, 1873, except as to professors of and lecturers in divinity.

United States.—By art. 6 of the constitution, “no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under the United States.” A similar provision is generally included in the State constitutions.

TESTAMENT. See Wi.

TESTIMONY. See Evipence.

TETANUS (from Gr. retve, I stretch), a disorder of the nervous system, consisting in an increased reflex excita- bility of the spinal cord and manifesting itself by painful tonic spasm of the voluntary muscles throughout the body. The disease shows itself under various conditions. It occasionally occurs, particularly in tropical countries, with- out apparent cause, and has thus been known to affect numbers of persons simultaneously (idiopathic tetanus).

It is sometimes observed in new-born children (¢rismus neonatorum) and in parturient women (puerperal tetanus). But by far the greater number of cases occur in connexion with a wound or other injury, more especially in the ex- tremities, probably implicating some of the peripheral nerves. Certain forms of injury, as punctured, lacerated, and gunshot wounds, are more liable to be followed by tetanus than others. In many cases the liability bears no proportion to the extent of the wound. Exposure to cold after injury is an important exciting cause. The symptoms of tetanus in its most usual forms generally appear during the healing process of a wound, but occasionally they arise after cicatrization is completed. Sometimes they are pre- ceded by appearances of irritation in the wound or its neighbourhood, but this is exceptional. The earliest indi- cations of the disease usually show themselves, no matter where the wound is situated, by stiffness about the muscles of the jaw, causing difficulty in opening the mouth, which soon increases to lockjaw or trismus. ‘This is accompanied by spasm in neighbouring muscles, and the drawn features and exposed teeth give to the countenance the peculiar expression known as risus

sardonicus. The rigidity ex- tends to the muscles of the neck, back, chest, abdomen, and extremities, and the body frequently assumes a bent attitude, either backward (opisthotonos), forward (empros- thotonos), or laterally (plewrosthotonos). This general muscular rigidity, which at first is not constant but occa- sionally undergoes relaxation, is accompanied by frequently recurring convulsive seizures, which are readily excited by the slightest irritation, such as from a draught of cool air, a bright light, the closing of a door, &c. In such attacks there is great suffering and the expression of the face is indicative of agony ; and the function of respiration may be seriously involved and asphyxia threaten or actually take place. The temperature of the body sometimes rises to a high degree. The attack is usually acute and after a few days either passes off or, as is more frequent, ter- minates fatally, either by asphyxia from tonic spasm of the respiratory muscles or from exhaustion consequent on the violence of the symptoms together with the absence of sleep. Throughout the whole course of the disease the mind is clear. In idiopathic tetanus the symptoms are less severe, the course more chronic, and recoveries more common than in those which depend upon a wound or injury. The puerperal form, with symptoms which differ in no way from those described, is rare and occurs either after parturition or after abortion. Tetanus in new-born children, also a rare form, usually shows itself a day or two after birth by obvious difficulty in the acts of sucking and swallowing ; by the supervention of trismus, together with tonic contraction of the muscles of the limbs and body, sometimes accompanied by convulsive seizures; and by a peculiar low whining cry, seldom absent and very charac- teristic. Various opinions have been held as to the cause of this form of tetanus, some referring it to the wound produced by severance of the umbilical cord, others to pressure upon the bones of the head in parturition, &c. It has not yet been satisfactorily explained. Although sometimes recovered from, it is usually fatal.

The symptoms of poisoning by strychnine bear a strong resemblance to those of tetanus. They are, however, more acute and develop in connexion with something which has been taken ; further, the absence of a wound and the fact that the spasm affects the muscles of the extremities first, and not those of the jaws, as in tetanus, serve to establish the diagnosis. In HypropHopta (g.v.), which in certain of its symptoms resembles tetanus, the absence of trismus, the dread of water, and the violent spasms on attempting

to drink, together with the history of the case, readily enable a distinction to be made. Various other forms of

nervous disease accompanied by tetanic symptoms, such as cerebro-spinal meningitis, hysteria in some forms, &c., may be still more clearly distinguished from true tetanus.

The pathology of tetanus is referred to in the article Patuoxoey (vol. xviii. p. 391). No constant changes are observed in the body after death from tetanus. The most common are great dilatation of the blood-vessels of the spinal cord and sometimes evidence of inflammatory action, but these are probably the effects of the symptoms rather than their cause.

For the treatment of tetanus many remedies have been employed. Where a source of irritation in or about a wound can be made out, it ought to be dealt with by the surgeon. Of medicinal agents those which diminish the reflex excitability of the spinal cord and relax the spasm are to be recommended. But it is not safe to employ all substances which produce these effects. Thus tobacco and its active principle nicotine act powerfully in this way, but they are attended with danger from their poisonous proper- ties, and the same may be said of curari, conium, calabar bean, é&c., all of which have been used in tetanus. Opium carefully administered sometimes produces a markedly beneficial effect, as does also Indian hemp. Chloroform or ether inhalation greatly mitigates the severity of the spasm. Chloral hydrate and bromide of potassium or ammonium are among the most useful agents which can be employed, and they may be given separately or, still better, in combination. As adjuvants, the warm bath, the absence of all noise and excitement, and the maintenance of the strength by appropriate nutriment should not be neglected.

TETRARCH (rerpdépyxys), the ruler of a tetrarchy (retpapxia), that is, in the original sense of the word, of one quarter of a region. The title of tetrarch is familiar from the New Testament as borne by certain princes of the petty dynasties which the Romans allowed to exercise a dependent sovereignty within the province of Syria. In this application it has lost its original precise sense, and means only the ruler of part of a divided kingdom, or of a region too narrow to support a higher title. After the death of Herod the Great (4 B.c.) his realm was shared among his three sons: the chief part, including Judea, Samaria, and Idumea, fell to Archelaus (Matt. ii. 22), with the title of ethnarch ; Philip received the north-east of the realm, and was called tetrarch ; and Galilee was given to Herod Antipas, who bore the same title (Luke iii. 1). These three sovereignties were reunited under Herod Agrippa from 41 to 44 a.p. Another tetrarchy is men- tioned in Luke iii. 1, viz, that of Lysanias in the little district of Abilene, near Damascus, in the valley of the Barada. An inscription of this Lysanias is given in C. I. Gr., 4521.

See Renan, Mém del’ Acad., xxvi. 2 (1870), p. 49 sq.

TETUAN (Tettdwin), a town of Morocco, about 23 miles south-south-west from Ceuta and 44 south-east from Tangiers, is picturesquely situated about 9 miles inland on the steep slope of a hill, behind which rise the bold Rif Mountains. It is surrounded by walls flanked with towers, and has on the summit of the hill a castle which is the residence of the governor. The streets are narrow, unpaved, and dirty, and with few exceptions the houses are poor. Some of the numerous mosques, however, are handsome. The principal manufactures are gun-barrels, coarse woollen cloths, and woollen and silk sashes. The harbour of Tetuan, at the mouth of the Martil, allows only small vessels to cross the bar, and the roadstead is much exposed to the east. There is some export trade in cattle, grain, fruit, leather, and wool, principally to Gibraltar. The population of Tetuan is estimated at about 20,000 (5000 Jews).

|

Tetuan is said to have been founded in 1492 by refugees from Granada. It was taken by storm on 4th February 1860 by the Spaniards under O’Donnell, but restored to Morocco when peace was concluded.

TEUTONES, or TrvToni, a powerful German tribe, first appearing in history along with the Crmsri (¢.v.). They are again mentioned at a later period by Pliny (Z/_W., xxxvii. 11) and others as inhabiting a district in the north- west of Germany to the north of the Elbe. The name of Teutones was never employed either by the Germans them- selves or by the Romans as a general name for the whole German nation.

TEUTONIC LANGUAGES. See Germany (vol. x. p. 514 sq.); also Enciish Lancuace, Gorus (vol. x. p. 852 sy.), SCANDINAVIAN LANGUAGES, F’RIsIANS, and HoLLAND

vol. xii. p. 84 sq.).

TEUTONIC ORDER, Tue, or TEuTonic KNIGHTS OF Sr Mary’s Hosprran at JERUSALEM (Deutscher Orden, Deutsche Ritter, Orden der Ritter des Hospitales St Marien zu Jerusalem), is one of the three great

military and re- ligious orders to which the crusades gave birth. Its name is derived from a German hospital founded at Jerusalem in 1128, which disappeared on the capture of the Holy City by the Saracens in 1187. The pity excited in the minds of some German merchants by the sufferings of the Christian soldiers at the siege of Acre in 1190 induced them to revive the work of this society under a somewhat different form ; and eight or nine years later the society, as thus resuscitated, was converted into a military order. Like the two other military orders, the Teutonic order adopted the Augustine rule of life ; and, in addition to the ordinary monastic vows, the members laid upon themselves the special obligations of tending sick and wounded pilgrims and of fighting the pagans. Frederick, duke of Swabia, took the young order under his protection, and it soon received charters from the pope and emperor, entitling it to the same privileges as the Templars and Knights of St John. Whatever was the case at first, the members of the order were ultimately required to be Germans of honourable birth. Priest brothers were intro- duced about 1220, and afterwards half-brothers, like the freres servants d'armes of the other orders, who did not require to be of noble birth, and might, to some extent, continue their ordinary secular occupations. The distin- guishing garb of the order consisted of a white mantle with a black cross.

Almost at once a rich stream of benefactions of all kinds began to flow into the coffers of the order, which gradu- ally acquired extensive territories in Palestine and also in Germany and other parts of Europe. Its first seat was at Acre, and the first grand-master was a Rhenish knight named Herman Walpot of Bassenheim. 'The order rose to great power and influence under Herman von SALza (g.v.), who held the office of grand-master from about 1210 to 1239, and enjoyed the fullest confidence of both em- peror and pope. He was also keen enough to see the hopelessness of the attempt to expel the Mohammedans from the Holy Land, and eagerly hailed the opportunity of trans- ferring the activity of the order to another sphere which was afforded by the invitation to undertake a crusade against the heathen Prussians. The successful progress of this crusade, the aggrandizement thereby accruing to the order, and its subsequent decline have already been nar- rated in the article Prussia (vol. xx. pp. 5-6). Soon after the beginning of the struggle, in 1237, the Teutonic order absorbed the order of the Brothers of the Sword, a union which brought Courland,

Semgallen, and Livonia to swell its territories. In 1291, when Acre, the last strong- hold of the Franks in Palestine, fell the order removed its headquarters to Venice; but, when its centre of gravity

became so obviously shifted to the extensive territories won from the Prussians, the seat of government was trans- ferred (1309) to MarienBure (g.v.) on the Vistula, where a splendid castle was erected for the grand-masters. The grand-mastership of Weinrich von Kniprode (1351-82) is the most prosperous period in the history of the order. Its territorial possessions far exceeded those attained by either of the rival orders, stretching from the Oder on the west to the Gulf of Finland on the east, and containing a population of two to three million souls. Its government at first was excellent, and for a time it may be said to have played the leading réle in the political history of northern Europe. Wherever the order spread, Christianity and German national life were introduced. Its revenues were very large, and its ranks were kept full by hosts of aspirants to a share in its pious and lucrative crusades.

So long as the order maintained its own high standard all went well with it. But its internal decay was syn- chronous with external events that would alone have been extremely perilous. The union of Poland and Lithuania in 1386 raised up a jealous neighbour, whose power it was wellnigh impossible in the long run to resist, while the nominal conversion of the latter to Christianity struck at the root of the order’s prosperity by depriving it of its mission. When there were no more heathens within reach to convert and despoil, the chief attraction to outsiders to join its ranks disappeared. After the conversion of Prussia into a secular duchy the Teutonic order still continued to exist as an ecclesiastical organization, possessing eleven bailiwicks in different parts of Europe, with a total area of 850 square miles and 88,000 inhabitants. The head- quarters were fixed at Mergentheim in Swabia. Its poli- tical importance was of course now a thing of the past, and the scattered position of the bailiwicks only emphasized its weakness. In 1801 the bailiwicks to the west of the Rhine were absorbed by France, and in 1809 the order was entirely suppressed by Napoleon, its lands going to the secular principalities within which they lay. In 1840 the order was

resuscitated in Austria, where it now exists as a semi-religious knighthood, presided over by a royal archduke. Of late it has been doing something towards justifying its existence and connecting itself with its past history by engaging in the ambulance service in time of war. The bailiwick of Utrecht, which survived the decree of Napoleon, also still exists, but the Dutch representatives of the order have become Protestants. The jewel of the order consists of a black and white cross, surmounted by a helmet with three feathers.

The complete organization of the Teutonic order included a grand-master (hochmeister), provincial masters (landmeister) for the greater provinces, and commanders (komtiiven) for the smaller dis- tricts and castles. The power of these officers was not, however, absolute. The grand-master co-operated with a chapter consisting of the provincial masters and five other important functionaries, while the provincial masters in turn ‘had to consult with the couneil formed by the knight commanders. The privileges enjoyed by the order in its palmy days were of the most extensive nature, and its relations to both church and state were often of a most exceptional nature.

See Voigt, Gesch. d. Deutschen Ritterordens (1857-59) ; Lohmeyer, Gesch. v. Ost- u. West-Preussen (vol. i., Gotha, 1881); and EH. Strehlke, Tabul# Ordinis Theu- tonici (Berlin, 1869).

TEWKESBURY, an ancient borough and market-town of Gloucestershire, England, is situated in a fine pastoral valley at the junction of the Severn and the Upper Avon, and on the Midland and Great Western Railways, 15 miles south of Worcester and 126 north-west of London. It has three principal streets, which are regularly built and well paved. The Severn is crossed by an iron bridge with a flattened arch of 170 feet span, erected by Telford in 1824. Of the great Benedictine abbey, one of the richest foundations in England, refounded and enlarged by Sir

Plate ITI. Bound- aries.

Robert Fitz-Hamon in the 12th century on the site of the ancient hermitage and Saxon monastery, there only remain the gate and part of the cloisters. The abbey church, consecrated in 1125, isa magnificent specimen of Early Norman. This elaborate cruciform building consists of nave and side aisles, with transepts united by a grand central tower richly ‘arcaded. The choir terminates in an apse and is surrounded by an ambulatory. One of the most remarkable features of the building is the unique western front, the central part of which is occupied by one vast arch extending from the ground to the roof. Origin- ally it was filled in with Norman windows, but these were removed in the 14th century, when the whole building underwent restoration in the Middle Decorated style, of which it is one of the finest existing examples. The nave was refilled by tracery windows, and stone groining was substituted for the carved wooden ceiling, a like transfor- mation taking place in the transepts. The old Norman columns in the choir still exist; but above them rises a grand superstructure of Decorated work. The elegant clerestory windows are of the 14th century, with stained glass of the same date. The ambulatory was rebuilt some distance farther out, and from it projected a beautiful series of chapels. The elaborate tombs include those of Sir Robert Fitz-Hamon, the De Spensers, Alan prior of Canterbury, Sir Guy de Brien, and the vault of George duke of Clarence (murdered in the Tower) and his wife Isabella. Edward, prince of Wales, slain after the battle of Tewkesbury (1471) by the Yorkists, is also buried in the church, which has undergone an extensive process of restoration under the direction of Sir Gilbert Scott. In the High Street there are several ancient timbered and gabled houses. Remains of an ancient wall have been discovered adjoining the town. The principal modern buildings are the town-hall, the philharmonic hall, and the corn exchange. There is a free grammar-school and a number of charities, including the dispensary, the rural hospital, and Queen Mary’s, Barnes’s, Richardson’s, and Russell’s almshouses. Formerly Tewkesbury had a woollen trade and an important mustard manufacture, but it is now chiefly dependent on its agricultural trade. The popula- tion of the municipal borough (area, 2619 acres) in 1871 was 5409, and in 1881 5100.

The town is supposed to derive its name from Theoc, a Saxon monk, who founded a hermitage here in the end of the 7th century, which was changed into a monastery by the duke of Mercia in 715, and rebuilt by Sir Robert Fitz-Hamon in 1102. On the death of Fitz-Hamon in 1147 the manor passed

to the De Clares, who became merged in the De Spensers, they in turn in the Beauchamps, and the Beauchamps in the Nevilles. At Tewkesbury took place, 4th May 1471, the battle between the Yorkists and Lancastrians which placed the crown on the head of Edward IV. During the Civil War the town was occupied by the Parliamentarians, who were driven out by the Royalists ; but it was surprised and captured by the former in 1644, after which it remained in their possession. Tewkesbury was first incorporated by Elizabeth in 1574, and when James I. sold the manor to the corporation in 1609 he granted it a new charter with extended privileges. This being lost during the Civil War, a new charter was granted by Charles II. Between 1692 and 1698 the town was without a corporation, but a new charter was granted by William III., which remained the govern- ing charter until the passing of the Municipal Act. Until 1867 Tewkesbury returned two members to the House of Commons ; from 1867 to 1885 it returned one; and in 1885 it became merged in the north or Tewkesbury division of Gloucestershire.

The Annales de Theokesberia (1066-1263) are published in Annales Monastici, edited by H. R. Luard, 1864.

TEXAS, the largest in area and the eleventh in popula- tion of the United States of America, is bounded by the Gulf of Mexico on the 8.E., by Louisiana and Arkansas on the E., by Arkansas and the Indian Territory on the N., the latter extending north of its northern prolonga- tion (the Panhandle), by New Mexico on the W. and N. of its western prolongation (the trans-Pecos region), and by Mexico on the 8.W. Its area in 1880 was 262,290 square

miles, or one-eleventh (nearly 9 per cent.) of the entire area of the United States. The extreme length is 740 miles, the breadth 825, and the coast line 400 miles. The boundaries, as recognized by the United States Govern- ment,! are—the Gulf of Mexico from the Rio Grande to the Sabine river, the Sabine river to 32° N. lat., thence the meridian of 94° 10’ to the Red river of Louisiana, thence following that river west to its intersection with the 100th meridian, thence north to lat. 36° 30’, thence west to 103° W. long., thence south to lat. 32°, thence west to its inter- section with the Rio

Grande, which river constitutes the south-western border of the State to the Gulf of Mexico.

The surface features are exceedingly varied, the prevailing ele- Physica] ments being steppes or treeless plains in the north-west, mountains featuyes west of the Pecos river, forests in the east, marshes adjacent to the and diyi. coast, low prairies in the south-east, and a combination of prairies sions,

and broken hills, interspersed with forest growth and thickets of tall shrubs (chaparral), in the centre. These regions are classified as follows (see map below). (1) The coast plain is the direct geo- graphical and geological continuation of the other States which border on the Gulf of Mexico. It includes all the country east of a line concentric with the coast, drawn from Texarkana in the north-east corner of the State to near Laredo on the Rio Grande. The general direction of its slope, in common with that of the rest of the State, is from north-west to south-east. Its altitude ranges up to 500 feet. The immediate coast strip is newly made marsh- land; west of this and north of the Colorado river are forests ; and to the south of it the country is mostly a plain. (2) The black prairie region suc- 10s 101 2 y

ceeds the coast plain on the west. Its west- ern border is sharply defined from the Red river to the Rio Grande, beginning at Denison, passing through or near the cities of Sherman, Dallas, Waco, Austin, and San Antonio, and then deflected west- ward to Eagle Pass. It is a gently undu- lating prairie,covered with a rich black soil, and varies in altitude “{_] from 300 to 700 feet. (3) The central region extends from the black prairie region on the east to the eastern escarpment of the great plains on the north-west and the trans-Pecos mountains on the south-west. This is the only region of Texas which is not the direct continuation of the physical features of some ad-

NS

Map showing geographical divisions.

within its bounds. In its north-eastern part are two long belts of stunted forest (the Cross Timbers), extending from the Red river to the Brazos, and separated by a prairie 50 miles in width. This is the most fertile portion of

the entire region. West of this sub-region and north of the Colorado is a broken, arid country (the Coal-measures), having a sandy, pebbly soil, covered with a scattered growth of vegetation. West of this, between the 100th meridian and the escarpment of the plains, is the gypsum country, consisting of the so-called “red beds” of the western United States, accompanied by massive deposits of gypsum and other salts. This country is much sculptured by erosion, and in places resembles the ‘“bad lands” of the upper Missouri country. There are also exten- sive intervals of prairie here. Near the centre, in the counties of San Saba, Mason, and Llano, is a rough, semi-mountainous area of older formations. The southern half of the central region is a broken country of white limestone formation, semi-tropical in climate, and covered with scraggy vegetation, its physical features graduat- ing into those of northern Mexico. The south-western part is a rolling plain, entirely destitute of streams. Throughout the region, at intervals of many milcs, low, truncated hills (duties) occur, representing the remains of limestone formations now being rapidly eroded. The region, as a whole, is poorly watered. It 1s best adapted for cattle and sheep raising, and is the chief locality of those industries in Texas. The altitude varies from 700 to 2500 feet. (4) The plains region is the portion of the State west of the 101st meridian and north of the thirty-second parallel, a naa, ae Dy Se

1 The State does not recognize the South Fork of the Red river as the northern boundary, but insists upon the North Fork ; it also claims the 100th meridian as laid down upon Mellish’s map (100 miles east of the true meridian) as the eastern border of the Panhandle.

joining political division. A great variety of conditions is embraced —

commonly known as the ‘‘Staked Plain” (Llano Estacado). It ig the direct southern continuation and termination of the great plains of the North American continent which extend along the eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains from British America to the Rio Pecos. The eastern edge is well marked by a steep escarpment, which, in consequence of destructive erosion, is constantly receding to the westward. The surface is smooth, and utterly devoid of forest growth or streams of water. But there are many small ponds or lakes, and in the southern part these are saline. The soil is

light, rich, and porous, and is covered with a good growth of rass. Until a few years ago this region was totally unpeopled, but many portions of it are now (1887) used for grazing purposes, water being seeured by means of wells or artificially constructed reservoirs. The altitude ranges from 2500 to 4000 feet. (5) The trans-Pecos or mountainous region west of the Pecos river is com- posed of numerous mountain peaks and ranges, with intervening valleys of many miles in width. It is poorly watercd, and the opulation outside the immediate Rio Grande valley is very sparse. he general level of the country is from 8000 to 5000 feet.

The rivers are separable into several sub-systems. The Rio Grande and the Arkansas, constituting the north and south limits of the Texas drainage system, with their respective tributaries, the Pecos and the Canadian, originate in a limited district of northern New Mexico and Colorado, and ultimately reach the sca at points a thousand miles apart. The Canadian and the Pecos have cut deep cafions through the Llano Estacado. The former continues eastward through Indian Territory, and the latter southward, join- ing the Rio Grande between 101° and 102° W. long. on the southern border of the State. The Rio Grande and the Pecos receive no tributaries of importance in Texas, but are constant in their flow. The next and most important group comprises the Red, the Brazos, and the Colorado, all of which originate along the eastern border of the Llano. They traverse similar regions, and have a general resemblance in character of sediment, irregularity of flow, velocity, and topography of drainage basins. Their brackish water is princi- pally derived from the sudden precipitation of rainfall along the gypsiferous escarpments of the Llano. Its volume is ordinarily small, the flow often ceasing entirely west of the black prairie region. There are periodic freshets, however, which suddenly swell the volume to cnormous proportions. These freshets, laden with the rich red loam of the plains, usually reach the lower in- habited sections of the State in periods of drought, and are termed ‘red rises.” Much of this sediment is deposited upon the flood plane of the lower valleys, and by this poe the most valuable sugar and cotton lands of the coast plain have been built up. Another important group consists of the Sabine, the Trinity, the San Marcos, the Guadalupe, and the Nueces, most of which have their origin near the western border of the black prairie region. These streams have a greater volume and are more constant in flow than any others, and are

usually without deep cafions or wide bottoms. Many of them, especially those south of Austin, have their origin from large springs situated along the foot of the escarp- ment line extending from Austin southwestward. Another sub- sidiary system of streams originates in the narrow Quaternary region along the coast, within the district of the greatest rainfall. These streams are tidal, and sometimes navigable towards their mouths, Most of them are locally known as bayous. In general, the rivers of Texas are not adapted for irrigation or navigation. Neither do they afford much available water power north of Austin.

The entire gcologic series, with a few exceptions, is represented in Texas. The earlier Paleozoic rocks, including the pre-Cambrian (Keweenawian; A in accompanying geological map), the Pots- dam (0c), and the Ordovician (0c), up to the Trenton, underlie the State, but are only exposed in two limited districts. The first of these is in the counties of Mason, Llano, Burnet, and San Saba in the central region ; the other is in the disturbed mountainous hen of the trans-Pecos region. The Cambrian was deposited horizontally upon the upturned Keweenawian, and the Ordovician appears to rest conformably upon the Cambrian (Potsdam); but there was a continental elevation of the whole region, probably commencing at the close of the Trenton epoch, which continued until the beginning of the Coal-measure epoch, for the Upper Silurian, Devonian, and sub-Carboniferous are absent, and the earlier rocks arc disturbed. These earlier Paleozoic sediments age no marked stratigraphical or paleontological differences tom the same formations throughout the continent, and thus show the widely distributed uniformity of conditions which then existed, At the commencement of the Carboniferous period, how- ever, that marked difference of faunal, lithological, and strati- graphical features began which distinguishes the synchronous deposits of the later formations of the western and eastern portions of the United States. The Texas region has been the transition ground, and hence all the geologic deposits, beginning with the Carboniferous, have two faces, dependent upon their geographical position east or west of 100° W. long., and representing the sedi- ments cither of interior continental basins or of the waters of the Atlantic during alternating periods of submergence and emergence.

The Carboniferous rocks, and most of the succeeding formations. are exposed in two widely separated portions of the State, with entirely different lithological and faunal aspects. The mutual re- lations of these series have never been traced. The first occurs in the central region between 97° and 100° W. long., north of the Colorado river, and consists of clays, sandstones, conglomerates, limestones, and coal seams of workable thickness. It is the south- western prolongation and termination of the Coal-measures of the

’ (i)

ALY LLL

u —_——e GQIGLLY ALG) 14 5 A y YY yy ” SOLS, YY y

ra)

Pence i, Signer

UR A Ro ac

y

YYy

ite]

i

QUATERNARY. MIOCENE (LOUP RIVER 2) __. CEN!

EASURES). ...K’ = © (ROCKY MOUNTAIN) . .K# “ORDOVICIAN AND CAMBRIAN. -..O0C PRE-CAMBRIAN. . . ~...--- A

Geological map of Texas.

eastern United States. These rocks, although in general similar to them, differ in some respects from those of the same formation further east, and also exhibit a few resemblances to the strictly marine Carboniferous of the

Rocky Mountain region (k?), To the other series belongs the trans-Pecos Carboniferous (x1). Although this is of the same geologic age as the eastern Coal-measures, it is a purely marine deposit of limestones and sandstones, and is barren of vegetable remains. It is exposed along the Guadalupe and other mountains of the trans-Pecos region, forming the most eastern outcrops of the non-coal-bearing Carboniferous of the west. The study of the areal distribution and relation of the strata intervening between the Carboniferous and the fully-identified Cretaceous in Texas has not been begun. The Permian, Triassic, and Jurassic, if they exist, have not been clearly diagnosed, although these names have been applied to the series of rocks west of the central Carboniferous region. The thickness of the sediments belonging to these undetermined strata is very great. They are mostly un- fossiliferous, and the presence of stratified gypsum and other salts indicates that they were laid down in an interior basin cut off from oceanic waters and were too highly concentrated for the existence of molluscan life. Certain of these deposits, known as “red beds” or “Jura-Trias”” (JT), extend beneath the Llano Estacado, across New Mexico, and into Arizona. The Cretaceous is by far the most conspicuous and extensive of the geologic formations of the State. It once covered the entire territory, but has been eroded away in many places west of the black prairie region, exposing the older formations, and is covered to the east of that region by more recent deposits. From the fact that the lowest member of the series is found resting directly upon the pre-Cambrian in Llano county, the Carboniferous in Lampasas and the counties northward, the Silurian in the trans-Pecos region, and the Jura-Trias beds in the plains region, it is evident that its beginning marked a period of conti- nental submergence, and that this submergence, from the great thickness of pelagic sediments in it, was long continued. The lowest member of the series, the oldest known of the American Cretaceous, is unknown elsewhere in the United States, and its peculiar features give individuality to the central region. This member (cN), which may be called the Texas group, is the equiva- lent of the Neocomian of Europe, and many of its fossils are common to Europe and America. It is not exposed east of the central region, except (probably) in the salines of Louisiana. There was a great elevation of this deep-sea formation at its close, as is attested by the shallow water sediments of later groups deposited unconformably upon it. The Middle (cc, cs’) and the Upper Cretaceous (cs? and cs!) are also well exposed. The black prairie region is

under- lain by the middle and upper groups of the marine Cretaceous characteristic of the other Gulf States and known as the Rotten Limestone (cs!) and Ripley (cs!) groups. The Cretaceous groups of the Rocky Mountain region extend into Texas, and are exposed in the trans-Pecos region and along the lower Rio Grande. The

Moun- tains.

Minerals.

204

Tertiary formations, so far as recognized, are purely marine, and, like the marine Upper Cretaceous of the black prairie region, are the direct geographical continuation of the formations of the other Gulf States. They occupy the coast plain, in bands approximately concentric with the shore of the Gulf of Mexico, and represent the sediments of its receding waters. The alleged occurrence of the fresh-water Miocene, the Loup river group (M), upon the Llano Kistacado has not been demonstrated. Quaternary (q) and other recent alluvial deposits occur along the coast and the upper terraces of the three older river systems as far west as the eastern border of the central region. This is attested by the character of the de- posits, accompanied by well-authenticated remains of the elephant and mastodon. These Quaternary soils are mostly the redeposited detritus of the strata of the eastern escarpment of the Llano Estacado, which is carried down by the “red rises.” The surface features of the central region are the result of sub-aerial denudation. The black prairie is protected from this destructive erosive process by the tenacious character of its soil ; and the coast plain is covered by a luxuriant forest growth, and is constantly extending eastward by the recession of the shore line. The final emergence of the State began in Middle Cretaceous time, and was connected with the same movements that brought up the Rocky Mountain system. The strata of Texas, except the Paleozoic groups, are soft, and yield readily to disintegration. A few eruptive sheets are found in the trans-Pecos region and along the lower Rio Grande, being remnants of the eastern edge of the great eruptive area of the Rocky Moun- tain region. Granitic masses occur, as extrusions from the pre- Cambrian, in the central and trans-Pecos Paleozoic deposits.

The eastern ranges of the Rocky Mountain system are deflected towards the Gulf of Mexico after passing south of 33° N. lat., and take a south-easterly course through Texas into Mcxico, the trend of their axes being generally parallel to the direction of the Rio Grande and its principal tributaries. The only true mountains in Texas are situated west of the Pecos, with the exception of a few foot-hills (lomztas) which re-enter the State from Mexico near Eagle Pass and follow the river to an undetermined point below Laredo. The principal ranges are the Guadalupe, Limpia, Chinali, Los Chisos, Organ, and Franklin Mountains. They are composed of older rocks, in most places; the later formations have been washed away, except where protected by eruptive flows. The most eastern and northern of these mountains are usually the highest. Guadalupe Peak is 9000 fect ; Limpia Peak and the crest of the Chinalis, from 3500 to 8000 feet; Eagle Mountains, 7000; and the intervening valleys from 3500 to 5000 feet. The low buttes of the central region are miscalled mountains upon most maps. There are several well-defined escarpments extending for long distances, approximately north and south The step of the first of these, from Austin to Eagle Pass, is from 200 to 500 feet high, and is the result of an elevation at the close of the early Cretaceous period. Near the 100th meridian another escarpment occurs, and along the castern and southern borders of the Staked Plain still another. The western part of the coast plain has a few low hills. The rest of the State has no notable prominences.

The mincral resources of Texas have not been mapped or studied, and hence the State ranks last in mineral products. The trans- Pecos region is rich in silver and lead ores ; but the State owns thie mineral rights of nearly all the land, and has hitherto declined to open them to development. Only one mine is worked here. Silver and gold have also been discovered and mined in Llano and Mason counties, but without successful results. Gold occurs throughout the marine limestones of the lowest (Texas) group of the Cretaceous, but not in sufficient quantity for profitable extraction. Rich but not abundant copper ores occur in the drift of the gypsum country. Iron ore is found in the Tertiary of eastern Texas, and is profitably reduced in a few charcoal furnaces by the aid of convict labour. At present these are remote from coal and suitable means of trans- portation. Magnetic iron ore occurs in the pre-Cambrian rocks of Mason county, and recent analyses show it to be equal in quality to the best Swedish ores. It is in great abundance, but

remote from means of transportation and fuel. Ores of iron (sphzro-siderite) occur in the central Carboniferous formation, but their commercial value is unknown. The non-metals occur in great abundance in different portions of the State, including salt, gypsum, magnesium sulphate, natural cements, kaolin, and other clays. The unutilized beds of massive gypsum are, with the exception of those of the Sahara and the Andes, the purest and most extensive in the world. Salt is gathered from lacustral deposits or mined at El Paso, Colorado City, and along the lower Gulf coast for local use. The coals of the central Carboniferous area have been worked to some extent, but are generally of inferior quality, having from 50 to 70 per cent. of ash. Very recent discoveries of better quality have been reported. Tertiary fibrous lignite, of light specific gravity, is found in great abundance all along the junction of the coast plain and black prairie regions. It is worked to a small extent, but has no commercial value. The most important coal area is the semi-bituminous lignite belt of the trans-Pecos and lower Rio Grande regions, which is the direct geographical continuation of

the late Cretaceous coals of New Mexico and Colorado. It is worked at Eagle Pass and Santa Toma, near Laredo. The beauti- ful marbles and other ornamental stones of the State are untouched, with the exception of the Llano county granite.

The amount and regularity of the rainfall decreases inland, mean annual varying from 52°3 inches at Galveston to 18 at E Paso in the extreme west and 23 at Mobeetie in the extreme north, The subjoined table gives the mean temperature and rainfall of certain representative localities :—

Mean Precipitation in Inches,

Station.

Altitude

Summer Autumn.

Coast Plain.

Galveston Indianola Palestine

Black Prairie Region. Denison

San Antonio

Central Region. Fort Belknap…..... Chadburne .. Griffin

oo cob h P09 0 Aa. Hdrgwserw wr: Hawaenwwg wo

Bowers s-THR WSt’

», Makavet Plains Region. Fort Elliott », Concho Trans-Pecos Region. El Paso

”

The coast plain and the black prairie regions have abundant rain- fall for agricultural purposes. It decreases, however, to the west, and varies greatly in different ycars, sometimes being ample; but in 1885-86 it did not average 10 inches. The precipitation is also very sudden, seldom lasting more than a few minutes at a time. Only 52 per cent. of the 20 inches of rainfall in the central region and west of it falls in the agricultural season, one-half being in summer and the remainder in autumn, so that it is equivalent to only 15 inches in regions where the rainfall occurs in more pro- ome seasons. This condition is, however, especially favourable or grazing. ‘There are few statistics of the plains region ; but the rainfall along its eastern escarpment is slightly greater and more regular than that of the central region. The tcmperature varies greatly throughout the State, both in extremes and means. Fort Ringgold on the lower Rio Grande is the hottest point in the United States, except Key West, Fla. Its mean temperature is 73°4° Fahr. ; that of El Paso is 63°, and of Mobeetie 54°6°. The prevalent winds are southerly and south-easterly, and blow constantly across the State, without which its summers would be unendurable. The Rio Grande valley is not subject to frosts. Snow seldom falls south of Galveston and Austin. In the Panhandle the winters are severe.

The arboreal flora of Louisiana and Arkansas extends into north- eastern Texas, conformable with the coast plain, where, immediately south of the Colorado river the great pine belt of the Atlantic and Gulf coasts terminates. The flora of the great plains region, principally consisting of nutritious grasses, enters the north-western portion of the State and extends south to the 32d parallel and east to the 101st meridian, The peculiar plants of the Rocky Moun- tain plateaus penetrate into the trans-Pccos region, while the north Mexican flora is found along the Rio Grande. The central region is a transition ground where these floras find representation generally in deteriorated and dwarfed species. In the coast plain occur the long and short leaf pine, with many species of oak and hickory. The black prairic region is destitute of trees, except scattered individuals of live oak and the mesquite bush (Prosopis glandulosa). The broad river valleys of this region, however, are well-timbered with pecan, cypress, cottonwood, and several species of oak, and have a vigorous growth of smaller shrubs. West of the black prairie region the dwarfed, stunted trees are of little value except for fuel. The river valleys have the same character of trees as further cast, but the rocky highlands are covered with scraggy bushes (chaparral) of oak, juniper, and cedar. The summits of the Guadalupe and Limpia ranges, in the trans-Pecos region, are clothed with forests of the yellow (Pinus ponderosa), flexible (P. flexilis), and nut pine (P. edulis), all of which attain great size. Many smaller trees grow on these mountains. The valleys and several of the ranges in the last-named region, however, are desti- tute of trees. The entire Rio Grande valley, from El Paso to Brownsville, grows many species of cactus and other prickly, corl- aceous shrubs. The grasses of the State are especially numerous In species, and are found most luxuriantly on the prairies of the lower

the Climate,

‘una.

pula- on.

Tie &S

coast, the central, and the plains regions. The lumber supply of the State comes entirely from the east Texas pine forests. The cedar, juniper, and

mesquite are only utilized for fuel and fencing.

The black bear (Ursus americanus), panther (felis concolor), and lynx (Felis rufa) are common to all parts of the State. The bison, wild horse, prongbuck (Anéilocapra americana), coyote (Canis latrans), grey wolf (C. lupus), eastern prairie dog (Cynomys ludovicianus), and the lesser Mammalia of the great Rocky Moun- tain plains constitute the fauna of the north-western part of the State, reaching into the western part of the central region. Their southern limit is approximately the 31st parallel. The highest ranges of the trans-Pecos region possess the unique avian and mammalian fauna of the Rocky Mountains, including the black- tailed or mule deer (Cariacus macrotis) and Roeky Mountain sheep, with a few Mexican species. The lower valleys have a mingling of the Mexican, Rocky Mountain, and great plain faunas. Along the valley of the Rio Grande, and extending northward in places, the subtropieal fauna is Mexican, including the peccary (Dicotyles torquatus), armadillo (Dasypus peba), jaguar (Felis onca), and ocelot (Felis pardalis). Among the birds are the scissor-tail (Milwulus forficatus), Mexican eagle (Polyborus cheriway), cha- parral cock (G@cococcyx viaticus), and numerous other unique forms, The fauna of the humid wooded coast plain is the south-western continuation and termination of that of the South Atlantic and Gulf States, with slight variations, and includes the Virginia deer (Cariacus lewcwrus), raccoon (Procyon lotor), opossum (Didelphys virginiana), alligator, &c. The black prairie region limits the last named fauna on the west, except in its wooded river bottoms. The central region possesses representatives of the great plains, Rocky Mountain, Mexican, and Louisiana faunas, but none of them cross it into other regions. It isa true transitional ground of most of the faunas of all temperate North Ameriea, east of the Pacific slope.

The total population in 1880 was 1,591,749 (837,840 males and 753,909 females), and in 1887 it was estimated to have risen to 2,415,000, giving 9°2 inhabitants to the square mile. Of the population in 1880 1,477,138 were natives of the United States and 114,616 foreign born. There were 393,884 Negroes, 186 Chinese, 992 Indians, and 48,000 civilized aborigines (Mexicans). Of the entire population 522,133 persons were engaged in oceupations as follows :—in agriculture (including stock-raising), 359,317 (68°8 per cent.); in law, medicine, and other professions,

97,651 (18°7 per cent.); in trade and transportation, 34,909 (6°7 per cent.); in manufacturing and mining, 30,346 (5°8 per cent.). At the same date there were 3153 prisoners, 2276 idiots, 1564 insane, 588 paupers, 1375 blind, and 771 deaf. 18°9 per cent. of the native whites, 24°7 of the foreigners, and 75°4 of the Negroes—or 29°7 per cent. of the entire population—were unable to read or write. The population of Texas has increased more rapidly than that of any State in the Union except Kansas. The following table shows the increase for the past few decades :—

Anglo- Mexican : Total Per g Biveri ae. Aborig'al oe ere ae Popula- |cent.in- | can Peece Ua Mescent (oe | Poets) | Buc. | ton! crease. 1950/ i a 212,592| .. 1860} 420,891} 182,921 403 ae ae, 604,215 | 184°2 1870) 564,700} 253,475 ais 879 62,411 25 818,579] 35°4 1880)1,197,237 | 393,484] 43,000 | 992 | 114,116] 136 /1,591,749| 94-4 1887 Be an sis c 200,000 | 300 |2,415,000} 9474

The population of the principal cities, according to the U.S. census of 1880 and trustworthy estimates in 1886, was as follows :—

1880. 1886. 1880. 1886.

Galveston …..... 22,248 | 30,000 |} Austin …..... 11,013 | 23,000 San Antonio …... 20,550 | 35,000 || Fort Worth…..... 6,663 | 25,000 DRS ofcie:e sis 0.0 10,358 | 32,000 || Waco …....0.. 7,295 | 20,000 FIGUSCOI.....00—.. 16,513 | 23,000 || Denison …..... 3,975 | 12,000

84 per cent. of the total population of the State is found east of the central region—the black prairie region (northern half) being the most densely populated, and the coast plain next. Between 1880 and 1887 there was a large flow of population into the trans-Pecos and plains regions, and during the last two years mentioned a deerease in the central region. The population consists princi- pally of white natives of the southern United States, except in the counties of Brazos, Fort Bend, Harrison, Marion, Moore, and Washington, where it is of Negro race ; in the counties of Fayette, Colorado, Guadalupe, Comal, and Gillespie, where it is German ; and along the Rio Grande, where it is Mexican.

Of the United States Texas now ranks first in the production of cotton and cattle, second in sugar, sheep, mules, and horses, eighth m rice and pigs. The eastern third of the State, containing 80 per cent. of the entire population, is agricultural ; the remainder 1s pastoral. The chief crops are cotton and Indian corn ; wheat is grown in the northern part of the black prairie and eastern part of the central regions, sugar in the lower bottom lands of the Brazos and the Colorado, rice on the coast. The chief vegetable products for 1880 were—cotton, 805,284 bales ; Indian corn, 29,065,172 bushels ;

wheat, 2,567,737 ; oats, 4,893,359 ; sweet potatoes, 1,460,079 ; Irish potatoes, 228,832 ; barley, 72,786; rye, 25,399; sugar, 4951 hogs- heads ; molasses, 810,605 gallons; hay, 59,699 tons ; tobacco, Doleree pounds; rice, 62,152 pounds; orchard products, to the value of $876,844. The total value of these products was $63,076, 311. Since 1882 the quantity of cotton produced annually has exeeeded 2,000,000 bales, of 500 pounds each. In 1880 there were 174,184 farms in the State, with an aggregate of 12,650,314 acres of im- proved land. The farms are usually of large size, and garden, orchard, aud dairy products are entirely secondary to plantation crops. The southern part of the coast plain and the rest of the State west of the black prairie region are peculiarly adapted to pastoral pursuits, which are entirely separated from agricultural, the cattle and sheep being allowed to roam at large, or enclosed in enormous pastures, where they subsist without other food or shelter than nature affords. In 1880 there were in the State— 4,084,605 cattle, 2,411,633 sheep, 1,950,371 pigs, 805,606 horses, and 132,447 mules and asses. ‘The sheep walks are more particu- larly confined to the southern half of the central region, including the lower Rio Grande valley.

The exports are cotton, wool, and hides, most of which are Com- The chief im- meree.

shipped from Galveston or sent overland by rail. ports are manufactured articles used in the State, also coal and railway material. Apart from a small retail trade along the border, there are no exports to the adjoining States, The principal seaport and commercial city is Galveston. The mileage in

railways has increased from 1048 in 1872 to 5974 in 1882, and to 7034 in 1886.

The founders of the State made liberal provision, by grants of Educa- land and revenue, for public education, but their intentions have tion.

not been carried out by subsequent legislation. Texas occupies the anomalous position of having the best school fund and the poorest school system in the United States. The public free school system proper consists of two normal schools for the preparation of teachers and numerous district schools, open for four months in the year. In most of the cities the State fund is supplemented by local taxation, and excellent schools are maintained. In 1886 there were 489,795 children within school age, and the cost of the maintenance of the whole system was $2,362,226. There are no schools for secondary cducation, except the high schools of a few cities. The State university is at Austin ; it is abundantly endowed with lands, but does not receive the full benefit of its revenues, There is also a State agricultural aud mechanical college, but technical training is made secondary.

The State government differs somewhat from those of the rest of Adminis- the Union, owing to the fact that it has had to adapt itself to the tration.

administration of the great public domain, by which most of the public institutions are supported and works of internal improvement accomplished, and because much of the attention of the Govern- ment has been necessarily diverted to the protection of its exten- sive frontier. The executive government consists of a governor, comptroller, treasurer, commissioner of the general land office, and superintendent of education, elected biennially, with an attorney- general and a sccretary of state, appointed by the governor. The Judiciary consists of two courts of final appeal, one for criminal, the other for civil business ; forty itinerant higher courts for the trial of penal offences and civil suits; courts for misdemeanours and minor civil cases in each county; and innumerable justices’ courts for first hearings. The legislature consists of 32 senators elected for four years, and 115 members of the house of representa- tives elected for two years. It is restricted by the constitution to biennial sessions of ninety days each. The State is divided into thirteen congressional and forty judicial election

districts. It is also divided into 232 counties, 75 of which have no population, or insufficient population to be organized. Each county is divided into four commissioners' preciucts and a varying number of school, election, and justiees' precincts. The State has always maintained a corps of troops, formerly for protection against Indians, but now for preserving order in the unorganized counties. It has institu- tions for the blind, deaf and dumb, and insane. The prison system is far superior to that of the other southern States, but still very imperfect. The bonded debt of the State on 1st January 1887 was $4,237,730, and its taxable wealth $600,000,000. The aggregate debt of all the counties and cities was $7,000,000. The homestead and exemption laws are unusually liberal to the debtor.

The upper Rio Grande valley was visited in 1580-83 by the History.

Spaniards, who established missions among the settled Indians near E] Paso and Santa Fé. The first white settlement was made by La Salle at Lavaca, on the coast, in 1685. The country was in- habited by Indians of various tribes, both savage and agricultural, most of whom are now extinct, except the so-called '' Mexican" population of the Rio Grande. From 1583 to 1794 many missions were established by Roman Catholic missionaries among the Indians, whe were completely alienated from their original language, reli- gion, domestic habits, and tribal relations. After the purchase of Louisiana from the French in 1803 Anglo-American adventurers began to cross into Texas from the United States. In 1821, when Mexico threw off the Spanish yoke, Texas and Coahuila constituted

Method of weav- ing.

a state of the republic. It was shortly after this that the first American colonists were permitted to enter the territory under Government patronage. Within ten years over 20,000 had settled between the Sabine and the Colorado. In 1830 the Mexican Government placed them under military rule, from which, with accompanying impositions, originated the war of Texan Independ- ence. The Anglo-Americans were assisted by volunteers from the United States, and the war was terminated by the defeat of the Mexicans under General Santa Anna at San Jacinto, 21st April 1836. From

1837 to 1845 Texas was an independent republic. It was admitted to the United States on 29th December 1845, in spite of the protests of Mexico, and a war with that country immediately ensued. The new State sold to the United States Government for $10,000,000 all the territory west and north of the present bound-. aries between the headwaters of the Rio Grande and the Arkansas. But it reserved the control and disposal of the public lands within its borders, which have proved a magnificent source of revenue, and also the right to divide into five states, should future growth and development justify it. By a small majority the State seceded from the Union in 1861. In 1868 a new constitution was adopted, and the State readmitted into the Union. In 1874 the Kiowa and Comanche Indians, who had prevented the settlement of the central

and plains regions from the earliest times, were subjugated.

See Hill, Geolog. Knowledge of Texas (1887)—Bull. 44, U. S. Geolog. Survey ; Geological Map of the United States, by C. H. Hitchcock ; Report on cotton production, Tenth U. 8. Census, by Dr. R. H. Loughridge ; forestry Reports, Tenth U. 8. Census; Mexican Boundary Survey, vol. i.; Proceedings of Boundary Commission, Austin, 1886; Trans. of Academy of Sciences, St Louis, vols. i. and ii, (Dr Shumard); Thrall, History of Texas ; Kendall, Santa Fé Expedition ; Spaight, Resources, &c., of Texas, Austin, 1882; Roemer, Kreidebildungen von Texas, 1852; Walcott, Cambrian Faunas of N. America—Bull 80, U. S. Geolog. Survey; Hill, ‘‘Topogr. and Geol. of Cross Timbers of Texas,” in Amer. Journ. Sci., April 1887; Cahe, Zoolog. Position of Texas ; Marcy, Exploration of Red River; Report of the U. 8. Mexican Boundary Survey ; Havard, Report on the flora of west and south Texas; and U. 8. explorations for a route for a Pacific Railway. @&. F.)

TEXTILES.! This word is applied to all fabrics which are woven ina loom, of whatever material they may be made, and whether the woven stuff be plain or figured. The simplest and earliest process of weaving was managed thus. The ground of the future stuff was formed by a number of parallel strings called the warp, having their upper ends attached to a horizontal beam and drawn taut by weights hung from their lower ends. In the early Greek loom each warp thread had a separate weight (see fig. 1). On the

number of the warp strings the fineness and width of the stuff depended. The strings of the weft were interlaced at right angles to those of the warp, and the combination of the two formed the woven stuff or web. The weft was so called from its being ‘‘ wafted ” in and out of the warp ; it is also often called the woof, though more correctly the woof is the same as the web or finished stuff. The threads of the weft were wound round a sort of bobbin on a pivot which was made to revolve inside a hollow boat-shaped piece of wood pointed at both ends so as to pass easily between the threads of the warp. This is called the shuttle. The thread passed out through a hole in the side of the shuttle, the inner pivot revolving as the thread was delivered between the strings of the warp. In order to make the weft interlace in the warp some of the upright strings were pulled forward out of the general plane in which the warp hung; this was done in the simplest way by a reed, which divided the threads into two sets called Jeaves and thus formed an opening called the shred, through which the shuttle could pass, as shown in fig. 1. Another way, applicable to more complicated ornamental weaving, was to have a series of threads attached to the warp at right angles, so that the weaver could pull any of the warp threads away from the rest, thus allowing the shuttle to pass in front of or behind any special warp strings. By a very simple mechanical contrivance these threads were worked by a foot treadle, thus leaving the weaver’s hands free to manage the shuttle.* In the

1 This article deals mainly with the history of the textile art ; for practical information as to modern processes, see WEAVING ; see also EMBROIDERY, Vol. viii. p. 160 sq.

2 These dividing sticks are called in French “batons 4 deux’’; in the simplest kind of weaving only one is required. The use of

treadles and “spring staves” is more applicable to the low loom, in which the warp is strained in a horizontal position.

THK X—

THX

simplest sort of weaving first one and then the other half of the warp threads were pulled forward, and so a plain regularly interlaced stuff was woven. The next stage was to make a cloth with coloured stripes, by using success- ively two shuttles containing different-coloured threads. In a chequered cloth the warp was made of two-coloured threads stretched in successive bands, and the cross stripes of the weft were woven in by the two shuttles. To form a more complicated pattern the weft must not cross the warp alternately: the design is formed by either the warp or the weft predominating on the surface in certain places. Tn all cases each thread of the weft must be driven home to its place after each stroke of the shuttle. In the . earliest times this was done by beating the weft with a

wooden sword-shaped implement ® introduced between the strings of the warp; but later a heavy comb-shaped tool was used,* the teeth of which passed between the warp and drove home at one blow a longer length of the weft. An upright loom such as has been described is shown clearly in some of the wall paintings from Thebes, dating about 1600 B.c. and in other earlier ones from Beni-Hasan. A very similar loom is represented on a Greek vase of the 5th century B.c., with a picture of Penelope and the | never-finished piece of stuff (see fig. 1). In this interesting

——

Sv

jil/// B WK)

Fia. 1.—Penelope’s loom, from a Greek vase of the 5th century B.C. The standing figure is that of Telemachus.°

painting the upper band has simple geometrical ornaments, Looms: such as occur on archaic Greek vases; the next has figures of winged men and gryphons. This sort of loom is still used in Scandinavian countries for tapestry.6 Another form has the warp threads stretched, not upright, but horizontally,—an arrangement which is more convenient for working treadles. These two forms are called in French “la haute lisse” and “la basse lisse,”—the high and the low loom. The general principle is the same in both. Fig. 2 shows a simple form of the “basse lisse,” such as was used

throughout the Middle Ages, except in Tceland and in Scandinavia.’ The clay whorls, or pierced cones, decorated with simple painting, which have been found in countless numbers on the sites of Troy, Mycene, and other prehistoric cities, were probably used to strain the thread as it was being spun on the distaff.* Other

3 Lat. spatha. 4 Lat. pecten ; modern English batten or lay.

5 See Mon. Inst. Arch. Rom., vol. ix. pl. 42.

6 See the modern Faroese loom figured by Worsaae, Afbildninger fra det k. Museum for Nordiske Oldsager, Copenhagen, 1854, p. 128.

7 A fresco by Pinturicchio—911 in the National Gallery, London— has a careful representation of the medizval low loom ; the subject is the return of Ulysses to Penelope.

8 Dr Schliemann found 22,000 in the plains of Troy alone.

ew TL ES

heavier ones were employed to stretch the strings of the warp; this method must have been very inconvenient, as the whole warp could swing to and fro. A very obvious improvement, introduced in some countries at an early date, was to have a second beam, round which the lower ends of the warp could be wound. In Scandinavian gee countries the use of weights con- | tinued till modern times. In the fate- loom of the sagas these weights are heroes’ skulls, while the shuttle is a sword, – Some simple ori, form of weaving seems to have been practised by pre- historic man at af very early stage of development. Fig. R 3 shows an ex- ample of coarse fey flaxen stuff from §

the lake-dwellings ee ste wage . i d, #1G. 2.—Medizeval low-warp loom, from a cut – ti eager “ by Jost Amman; middle of the 16th century.

=

Cacddddddiiddua

th Sass BSS ee tititiippi lid,

WO

SS

=A,

UES ASSES

Stone Age. Wool appears to have been the first sub- stance used, as no skill is required to prepare it for spin- ning. Weaving was speci- @ ally the duty of women, ®» and even in the Middle * Ages in Europe it was, in some countries, considered a specially feminine em- ployment. An early Chris- tian sarcophagus in the Lateran has a symbolical relief representing God condemning the future z world to labour,—tillage for the man and weaving for the woman :—He gives ears of corn to Adam and ™ Peto – a sheep to Eve. ae 2) ena age _ flaxen Hient The E tians were 8 un, Tom a iake- dwelling in *ption. famed be ths beauty of sinecataita

their woven stuffs, and almost incredible stories are related of the fineness of their linen, such as a pallium sent by King Amasis to the Spartans, which, Herodotus (iii. 47) says, was made of yarn containing no less than 360 threads ; the figures woven on this were partly of cotton and partly of gold thread. Herodotus also mentions a wonderful pallium sent by the same king to the shrine of Athene at Lindus. Few examples of the fine and richly ornamented sorts of Egyptian stuffs now exist, though we have immense quan- tities of the coarse linen in which mummies were wrapped. This, though coarse, is closely woven, and usually has in every inch many more threads to the warp than to the weft. A few fragments of Egyptian cloth of the XVIIIth Dynasty have been found with a border of coloured bands, the blue of which is indigo and the red extract of KERMzs

ee rrr—EE

‘ In the time of St Louis (18th century) in France some sorts of meting, such as ‘‘tapisserie Saracenois,” were done only by men.

Some existing specimens have in each inch 152 threads in the warp and 70 in the weft 3 in modern stuffs the proportion is the other way. A coarsely woven piece of Egyptian stuff in the British Museum has a border with a man swimming, supported by a float.

a

207

(q.v.). In Egypt linen was specially employed for religious purposes, such as priestly and royal vestments, because it harbours dirt less than wool or cotton, which were also worn by the Egyptians, and it was used to bandage mummies, because it was thought not to engender worms. Though priests were allowed to wear outer garments of wool, they were obliged to put them off before entering a sacred place,

The Phoenicians were celebrated for their weaving, as Pheni- for their skill in other arts. ‘Their purple linen, dyed cian. with the murex, was specially valued; Tyre and Sidon were the chief places where this was made. Babylon, Carthage, Sardis, Miletus, and Alexandria were all famous seats of textile manufacture in the time of Herodotus,

Though no specimens of Assyrian textiles remain, some Assyrian.

notion of their richness of ornament and the styles of their patterns may be gained from the minute representa- tions of rich dresses worn by kings and other important personages in the sculptured wall-reliefs from Nineveh which are now in the British Museum. The stuffs worn by Asur-banipal are most elaborate in design, being covered with delicate geometrical patterns and diapers, with bor- ders of lotus and other flowers treated with great decora- tive skill, A large marble slab from the same palace is covered with an elaborate textile pattern in low relief, and is evidently a faithful copy of an Assyrian carpet. Still more magnificent stuffs are represented as being worn by Assyrian captives on the enamelled wall-tiles from Rameses II.’s palace (14th century B.c.) at Tel al-Yahudtya (see Porrsry, vol. xix. p. 603); the woven patterns are most minutely reproduced in their different colours, and the design, special to Assyria, of the sacred tree between two guardian beasts, is clearly represented, though on the most minute scale. .

Our knowledge of Greek textiles, in the almost com- Greek. plete absence of any existing specimens,‘ is chiefly de- rived from the descriptions of various classical authors. One indication of the patterns commonly used at an early period is given by the designs on much of the archaic Greek pottery, which clearly has ornament derived from textile sources. Vol. xix. p. 607, fig. 16, shows examples of these ; simple bands, chequers, and zigzags would natu- rally be the first steps towards more elaborate patterns. Again, recent excavations at Orchomenus and Tiryns have brought to light examples of ceiling and wall decoration the motives of which are obviously derived from textile patterns. A stone ceiling at Orchomenus has in relief a carpet-like pattern, and the painted wall-stucco of the Tiryns palace has many varieties of coarse but effective textile ornament. The poems of Homer are full of descrip- tions of woven stuffs of the most magnificent materials and design, used both for dresses ® and for tapestry hang- ings. In later times the most important examples of rich woven work of which we have any record were certain peploi made to cover or shade the statues of the deities

% A very magnificent royal dress, with woven patterns of deities, kings, animals, and the sacred tree, much resembling those on the metal bowls of Assyria, is figured by Layard, Monuments of Assyria, series i., pl. ix.

4 One remarkable example of tapestry from a tomb in the Crimea is supposed by Stephani to date from the 4th century B.c.; see Comp. Rend. Com. Arch., 1878-79, p. 40, pl. v.

° I1., iii, 125, viii. 288, ix. 200, x. 156, xiv. 178, xxii. 440; Od., li, 98, x. 220, xiv. 61, and many passages in books xviii, to xx, Homer describes (Od., xix. 225-235) a cloth of purple wool with a hunting scene in gold thread, woven by Penelope for Ulysses.

6 1., xvi..224, xxiv. 230, 6453; Od., iv. 124, 298, vii. 337. Many Greek vases, especially those with black figures and incised lines, have representations of rich woven dresses,—e.g., an amphora in the Vatican with Achilles and Ajax playing at a game like draughts, c. 460 B.C. A rather later vase in the British Museum has a fine figure of Demeter clad in a pallium covered with figures of chariots and winged men and horses,

at Athens, Olympia, Delphi, and other famous shrines.} Euripides (Jon, 1141-1162) gives a glowing description of a peplos which belonged to the temple of Apollo at Delphi, on which was depicted the firmament of heaven, with Apollo Helios in his chariot, surrounded by the chief stars and constellations. At Athens a new peplos, orna- mented with the battle of the gods and the giants, was woven for the gold and ivory statue of Athene in the Parthenon every fifth year, and was solemnly carried in procession at the greater Panathenza. Similarly at Olym- pia a new peplos was woven by sixteen women, and dis- played every fifth year at the Olympian games in honour of Hera. It appears probable that these magnificent peploi were not used as garments, which would have partly concealed the splendour of Phidias's gold and ivory statues, but were suspended over them like a medizval baldacchino. Very possibly, however, most of the elaborate work on them was embroidery done by the needle, and not loom or tex- tile work.

The Romans under the late republic and the empire possessed immense stores of the most magnificent textiles of every description, such as the splendid collection of tapestry which Rome inherited along with the other art treasures of Attalus II. of Pergamum (2d cent. B.c.). A very costly cloth of gold was called by the Romans "attalica," after Attalus. The C. Cestius who died about the middle of the lst century B.c., and who is buried in the existing pyramid in Rome, left orders in his will that his body was to be wrapped in certain attalica; but, as this was forbidden by a sumptuary law, his heirs sold the gold stuff and with the proceeds had two colossal bronze statues made, which were set outside the tomb. The feet of one of these have been found with an inscribed pedestal recording the above-mentioned facts. The size of the statue shows that the attalica must have been worth a very great sum. Examples of large prices given by Romans for woven stuffs are recorded by Pliny (H.W., viii. 48): Metellus Scipio bought some hangings from Babylon for 800,000 sesterces, and other similar stuffs were bought by Nero for four millions of sesterces (about £3360). Costly tapestry from Babylon is mentioned by Plautus (Sézch., IL., ii. 54), Silius Italicus (xiv. 658), and Martial (xiv. 150). Virgil (Geor., iii, 25) mentions woven

tapestries with figures of Britons being used at theatrical shows: “Purpurea intexti tollant aulea Britanni.” Other tapestries with scenes from the story of Theseus and Ariadne are mentioned by Catullus (Argon., xlvi. 267).2. On a very remarkable example of late Roman stuff found at Sitten (Sion) in Switzerland is woven a graceful figure of a nymph seated on a sea-monster, among scroll-work of foliated ornament, purely classical in design.* A large quantity of very remark- able woven stuffs has recently been found in tombs at Ekhmin (Panopolis) in Middle Egypt. More than 300 pieces have been bought for the South Kensington Museum. They are of various dates, apparently ranging from the 4th to the 6th or 7th century a.p. The earliest are of purely classical style: some have badly designed but very de- corative figures of pagan deities, with their names in Greek —e.g. Hermes and Apollo; others have figures driving chariots drawn by two centaurs, or marine gods, or long bands of animals—bears, lions, stags, ducks, and many others. These are used to decorate linen tunics or pieces of stuff about 2 feet square. The later examples appear to be Coptic vestments of various shapes, and are decor-

1 See De Ronchaud, Le Péplos d’Athéné, Paris, 1872, and La Tapisserie, Paris, 1885. The treasuries of most Greek temples appear to have contained large stores of rich woven stuffs.

2 See also Hor., Sat., ii, 6, 102-6; Ovid, Afetam., vi.; and Lucr., iv. 1026.

3 This fragment is illustrated by Miintz, La Tapisserie, Paris, 1882, p. 53.

ated with rude figures of St George and other Oriental saints, each with a nimbus. These ornaments are done by true tapestry weaving, the weft pattern being in brilliantly coloured wools on a flaxen warp. In some cases the colours, especially the magnificent reds and blues, are as bright as if they were new. Though in all cases the figure drawing is rude, the decorative value is very great.

From the 6th to the 13th century Byzantium became Byzan. the capital of all the industrial arts, and in none is its tine

influence more obvious than in that of weaving. There the arts of ancient Greece and of old Rome met and were fused with the artistic notions of ancient Egypt, Assyria, Persia, and Asia Minor, and this combination produced a fresh and very active art spirit, which for many centuries dominated the whole civilized world. As regards weaving, this new development was strengthened by the introduc- tion of silk into Europe in the reign of Justinian, and many specimens of early silk fabrics have lasted down to the present time, partly through their being safe against moths. The silken stuffs found in the tombs of Charle- magne and other kings, though perhaps not themselves as early as the 6th century, show one class of design used in Byzantium in the time of Justinian. Some of these com- bine the figure-subjects of ancient Rome with the stronger decorative beauty of the East. Chariot races in the circus, consuls and emperors enthroned in state, gladiatorial fights with lions, and other classical subjects occur, arranged in medallions or wreaths, set in close rows, so as to fill up the ground, Again, mixed with these classical scenes are designs of purely Assyrian origin, such as the sacred tree between two guardian beasts, closely resembling the designs of 2000 s.c. The manufacture of these rich fabrics was carried on, not only in Byzantium, but also in many towns of Greece proper, such as Athens, Thebes, and Corinth, all of og ye = which were spe- cially famed for their silk textiles. 52 During the same 773% time, the 6th to WZ, the 12th century, Baghdad, Damas- cus, Ispahan, and many other towns in Persia and Syria were producing #: woven stuffs of the richest materials anddesigns ; names of reigning caliphs 4 are sometimes “* mingled with Ar- 4%} abicsentences from the Koran and other sacred books, which are intro- duced freelyamong – the intricate pat- terns with the most richly decorative effect. By this means some existing speci- mens of the 8th to the 10th century can be dated. Fig. 4 shows a 16th-century example of the finest Persian damask in silk and gold,—a masterpiece of textile design.

Fig. 4.—Persian damask in silk and gold. (South Kensington Museum.)

According to the usual story, Roger of Sicily, who in Sicilian

1147 made a successful raid on the shores of Attica and took Athens, Thebes, and Corinth, carried off as prisoners a number of Greek weavers, whom he settled at Palermo and made the founders of the royal factory for

silk weav- ing. This story is doubtful, for the Saracenic inhabitants of Sicily had apparently been producing fine silken stufls

long before the 12th century. In part, however, the story may be true; certainly an impetus was given to the weaving industry of Palermo in the 12th century, and for about two centuries Sicily became the chief seat in Europe for the production of the finest woven stuffs. A large number of examples of these beautiful fabrics still exist, showing an immense variety of designs, all of which are imagined with the highest decorative skill,—perfect master- pieces of textile art, combining freedom of invention and grace of drawing with that slight amount of mechanical stiffness which is specially suited to the requirements of the loom. One of the earliest existing specimens, which shows the existence of the fabrique before the time of Roger I., is a piece of silk stuff in which the body of St Cuthbert at Durham was wrapped when his relics were translated in 1104; this was found at the opening of his grave in 1827, and is now preserved in Durham cathedral library. The figures woven on it show an interesting com- bination of Western and Oriental art. Birds and conven- tional ornaments of purely Eastern style are mingled with designs taken from late Roman mosaics,—the whole being blended with great skill into a highly decorative pattern! The Sicilian silks of the 12th to the 14th cen- tury were mostly used for ecclesiastical vestments, altar frontals, and the like; and the fact that examples have survived in almost all countries of Europe shows how im- portant and far-reaching a trade in them must once have been carried on. The favourite designs were the sun breaking through a cloud from whence rays of light are issuing, or conventionally treated ships, fountains, islands, castles, and an immense variety of birds and beasts, such as swans, mallards, eagles, lions, cheetahs, hounds, giraffes, antelopes, and others. Some specimens have siren-like female forms, with floating hair, casting nets, leaning down from palm trees, or issuing from shells. Others, rather later in style, have winged angel-like { figures. In many eases the Assyrian | sacred tree and its guardian beasts oc eur, and very fre- quently borders \S with sham Arabic letters are intro- duced,—a survival } of the time when § real sentences were pare woven into the fab- RX ries of Persia and WQS

Egypt, probably in tended as a visible sign that the stuff} was the genuine & product of Sara-} cenie looms. All

these are perfect tease S Ste a Otic masterpieces of tex- Fie, 5.—Sicilian silk stuff of the 13th century, tile art, and have in St Mary’s church, Dantzic.

b)

never since been rivalled either in beauty of design or in skilful use of gold and colours. Fig. 5 shows a character- istic example ; another copied from a painting is given under Murat Decoration, vol. xvii. p. 46, fig. 15.

In the 14th century the chief centre of fine silk weaving was transferred from Palermo to Lucca, Florence, Milan, Venice, and other towns in northern Italy, and a different class of design, less rich in fancy, but scarcely less beautiful In effect, came into vogue. The designs of these 14th and

1 See Raine, Sainé Cuthbert, Durham, 1828, plate iv. ; in his text the author is wholly wrong as to the provenance of these stuffs.

SS

209

15th century textiles were chiefly conventional adaptations of natural foliage and flowers, arranged with great beauty of line and wealth of de- Ry San) | /Zaee ¥

lines of leaf and ten- ; dril. An extremely ; rich design, largely § employed throughout $ the 15th century, was made from the arti- choke plant,? and was } especially used for the rich “cut” velvets of Genoa, Florence, and Venice, in which the &S pattern is formed in B relief by pile raised ¥ above pile, mixed with gold (see fig. 6 and vol. xvii. p. 46, fig. 14). At this time Venice contained a large number of Ori- ental craftsmen in all the industrial arts, silk and gold; 15th century,

and very beautiful stuffs were woven there with designs of mingled Oriental and Italian style,—probably the work of Mohammedan weavers (see fig. 7).

ad 2 14 > v.

~~

L]

ZN, WIVES.

t of

Fic. 7.—Silk stuf of Oriental d Venice in the 15th century. (South Kensington Museum.)

ete.

In all these Oriental, Sicilian, and early Italian stuffs Gold gold thread is used in a very lavish and effective way. It thread.

was made very skilfully, the richest effect being produced with little metal by thickly gilding fine vellum skins with gold leaf; the vellum was then cut into very thin strips

2 This is usually called the pine-apple pattern; but it was invented long before the discovery of America had introduced the pine-apple into Europe. ;

3 Italian and Flemish pictures of the 14th to the 16th century often give most valuable representations of rich textiles; see Vacher, Fifteenth Century Italian Ornament, London, 1886, a series of coloured plates of textiles taken from Italian pictures.

XXIII. — 27

Gold cloth.

English.

210

and wound round a thread of silk or hemp so closely as to look like a solid gold wire. In and since the 15th cen- tury gold thread has been made by twisting a thin ribbon of gilt silver round a silken core. In this way much less gold is required, as the silver ribbon is gilded before being drawn out to its final thinness, and it is thus liable to tarnish, owing to the partial exposure of the silver surface. In classical times attalica and other gold stuffs were made of solid gold wire beaten out with the hammer.! Masses of this fine gold wire? have been found in the tombs of Egypt, Greece, and Etruria, the metal having lasted long after all the rest of the stuff had crumbled into dust. In 1544 the grave of the wife of Honorius was opened and 36 hb of gold thread taken out of it and melted.

Throughout the Middle Ages cloth of gold was largely employed for ecclesiastical and royal purposes. In some cases the whole of the visible surface was formed of gold thread, producing the utmost splendour of effect. Westminster Abbey still possesses a magnificent gold cope of the 15th century, in almost perfect brilliance of preservation. In the 13th and 14th centuries Cyprus and Lucca were specially famed for their gold stuffs, and the royal inventories of France and England show that the kings possessed stores of this to an immense value. The enormous sum of £11 a yard® is recorded to have been given for a “cloth of estate” in the private accounts of Henry VII. This was a cloth to hang over the royal throne, and must have been unusually wide, as other cloth of gold at the same time was bought for 38s. the yard. Various names were at different times given to textiles which were wholly or in part woven in gold, such as ciclatoun (a word of obscure origin), baudekin (from Bal- dak or Baghdad), nak, and tissue.4 Samite or examite (€€ pirot) was so called because the weft threads were only caught and looped at every sixth thread of the warp, lying loosely over the intermediate part. Medizeval samite was sometimes made of gold; if of silk it was a variety of satin, called satin of sex. Modern satin usually has its weft looped in less closely—satin of erght or ten.

Although throughout the Middle Ages the finer stuffs used in England were to a great extent the product of foreign looms, there was no lack of native textiles, many of which were of great beauty. In the use of the needle the women of England were especially skilful, and rich English embroideries were much exported, even into Italy, from the 12th to the 14th century,®

and were esteemed more highly than the productions of any other country. Two fine examples of early English silk and gold needle- work—a stole and maniple with the inscription Ae/fled Siert precepit : pro episcopo Fridestano —are preserved in the Durham library. Fridestan became bishop of Win- chester in 905. Other examples of native textiles have been found in the coffins of many ecclesiastics in England. Some interesting fragments are preserved in the chapter- house of Worcester cathedral ; the ground is of silk, and the pattern, of conventional scroll foliage, is a character- istic example of 13th-century design. Pictures in English MSS. show that the low loom was mainly used,—this being the most convenient for ordinary weaving.® England

1 The process of making wire by drawing it through conical aper- tures in a steel plate is said to have been first invented at Nuremberg in the 14th century.

- The Museo Gregoriano (Vatican) contains examples from Etruscan tombs. 3 Equal to quite £50 of modern money.

4 Hence thin paper laid between the folds of these rich stuffs to protect them was called tissue paper.

- The celebrated cope in Pienza cathedral, which once belonged to Pius H. (Piccolomini), is a magnificent example of English needle- work of the 15th century.

§ Among Chaucer’s pilgrims are included ‘‘ A webbe, a dyer, and a

tapisser,”’ the first a low-loom weaver, the last a weaver of tapestry on the high loom.

TEXTILES

was specially celebrated for its wool and woollen stnffs, and even at the present day English wool is used for the Gobelin tapestries ; in the 15th and 16th centuries it was largely imported into Flanders. In the 14th century Bath produced the finest woollen cloth, and that of Worcester was equally celebrated ; in the 15th century the produc- tion of woollen stuff was a great

source of wealth to Norwich and other towns in the eastern counties. A special sort of woollen yarn took its name from Worstead in Norfolk, where it was made ; it had a closer and harder twist than most woollen thread, and thus could be made up into cloth of special fineness, which was used for chasubles and other vestments, as is recorded in the in- ventories of York, Exeter, and other cathedrals.

Old English Names for Textiles.—A large number of uames for Old different sorts of textiles occur in old English writings, many of English them derived from the name of the place where the stuff was made names,

or exported. Buckram was a woven cloth of much richuess, highly prized, probably quite unlike what we now mean by the word. Damask or damas got its name from Damascus. Justian, from Fostat (Old Cairo), was a cheaper stuff made of linen and cotton mixed. Muslin, from Mosul, was a fine cotton stuff. Cloth of Tars (Tarsus) is often mentioned, usually meaning a purple cloth. Camoca or camak (Arab. kamkha, from Chinese kimkha, “ brocade”) was another richly decorated Oriental stuff. Cendal or sandal and syndonus were fine silk stuffs. Taffeta was made of silk or linen of very thin substance. Satin (from Low Lat. seta) was a glossy silk stuff made like samite. Velvet (from It. velluto, ‘‘shaggy’’) had a silk weft woven so as to form a raised pile, the ends of which were cut or shaved off to one even level; hence it is also called in Italy raso. Diaper, “jasper-like” (Ital. diaspro), was not only used to denote a regular geometrical pattern, but in some cases means also a special sort of linen or silk. Phrases such as “silk of brydges”’-(Bruges), “silk dornex,” from Dorneck in Flanders, and “sheets of raynes” (Rheims) often occur. A large nuinber of other similar names are to be met with in medieval writings.’

Space will not allow a description of the textile work in Other That of Italy and the East was medieval

each separate country. by far the most important throughout the Middle Ages.

Even Chinese textiles of gold and silk were imported into types,

the west of Europe, and were sometimes used for ecclesias- tical purposes. Medizeval vestments of Chinese stuff still exist, the shape and added borders of which show that they date from as early as the 14th century. These fabrics exactly resemble in design and workmanship some which are woven in China at the present day. A very interesting survival of the medieval style of weaving exists in Sweden and other Scandinavian countries. Articles of dress, counterpanes, table-covers, and the like are woven by the peasantry in a simple, highly decorative way, with

Fig. 8,—Indian hill loom, as still used, patterns which have altered little during the last three or four centuries. Though coarse in texture, many of these are of great artistic beauty; nothing bnt an occasional use

7 The most extraordinary spelling often occurs in lists of textiles in medieval documents, especially in the case of foreign names. Thus we find in the Bury Wills (printed by the Camden Society) “ fuschan in Appules,;” méaning Naples fustian; and many similar blunders.

of harsh colours shows any sign of decadence of style. Strong marks of Oriental influence are visible in these fine patterns, but the method of weaving is purcly native, —probably very like what the edicts of Louis IX. call “tapisserie nostrez.” Very beautiful fabrics are still pro- duced in India, old designs being followed, and woven in the simplest form of loom. Fig. 8 shows an example of a modern Indian loom used by the hill weavers. In such looms the richest materials, such as gold and silk, and the most elaborate patterns are woven, often by travelling weavers who can set up their whole apparatus in a very short time. CARPETS.

Carpet weaving was essentially an Oriental art, and was the natural product of a dry mudless country, where little furniture was used and the shoes were removed on entering a building. Till the 16th century carpets were almost unknown in France and England, except for royal personages and for the sanctuaries of cathedrals and im- portant churches. In the latter case they were usually laid in front of the high altar, and thus carried on to the floor the richness of colour which ornamented the walls and vault. Oriental carpets frequently occur in cathedral inventories among the other rich

treasures of foreign or native make which adorned the building. They were first employed in England for domiestic purposes by Queen Eleanor of Castile and her suite, in the latter part of the 13th century. In the palaces of Spain they were intro- duced much earlier, owing to the presence of the Moors in southern Spain. In many cases they were used for wall hangings, and the smaller ones to cover tables and other furniture, as is represented in many 15th-century Italian pictures. Though few examples of Oriental carpets exist earlier in date than the 15th century, yet the manufacture was carried on in the highest state of perfection centuries before. An example of the 14th century is preserved in a private collection at Vienna; it was originally made as a hanging for the Kaaba at Mecca! ‘These beautiful Oriental pile carpets are among the most perfect produc- tions of the weaver’s art, and till the 16th century were masterpieces of design and splendour of colour. Usually they were woven of wool or of camels’ or goats’ hair, with a separate warp and weft of flax; but many magnificent carpets were also made of silk mixed with gold thread. This extravagance of luxury produced an effect, at least as regards the use of silk, but little superior to that of fine wool or camel’s hair, as the special beauty of the silken gloss is seen on the sides, not on the ends of the silk thread. Pile carpets are woven in a very different way from ordinary textiles: short tufts of wool or silk are knotted on the warp so that the ends of the threads which form the pattern project, and these are cut down by shears to a uniform surface, thus forming a sort of textile mosaic. Each row is firmly fixed by a shoot of linen weft-thread thrown across the web, and then carefully beaten down with the batten.

Various classes of ornament occur in these magnificent Oriental carpets ; one variety has stiff geometrical patterns, the motives of which appear to be taken from mosaics or tiles. Another and still more beautiful sort, manufactured especially at Ispahan (see fig. 9), has elaborate flowing designs of flower forms, sometimes mixed with figures of cheetahs, lions, antelopes, and birds, in a few cases com- bined with human figures. Mr W. Morris, in his valuable lecture on textile fabrics (London, 1884), traces three stages of design, —first, a pure flowing style, closely resembling the early stucco mural reliefs of Cairo; secondly, a similar style blended with animal forms; and thirdly, a purely

1 See Karabacek, Die persische Nadelmalerei Susandschird and Vestr, Monatsch. f. d. Orient, 1884, p. 49, with cut.

floral style, flowing in its lines and very fantastic and ingenious in its patterns; this last he thinks belongs to

LT es | Lali My Diy fh 4 Fic. 9.—Persian pile carpet of the 15th century, woven of goats' hair and silk. (South Kensington Museum.) about the time of Shah Abbas, and lasted from about 1550 to 1650,—the culminating period of Oriental art.2 Since then there has been a distinct degradation of style, though in many cases older patterns have been worked from and very perfect work produced. At the present day the influ- ence of European taste is rapidly destroying this survival of the best class of design, and especially is introducing the most harsh and discordant colouring in place of the

glorious rich hues of the earlier Oriental weavers.

Though no existing specimens can be pointed out, it appears probable that the " tapisserie Saracenois " of Louis IX.'s edicts (1226-1270) refers to pile éarpets made by French weavers after the Oriental fashion.* The same edicts for the regulation of the textile industry mention two other classes of manufacture, "tapisserie & la haute lisse," ¢.e., what we call tapestry, and "tapisserie nostrez," "native stuff," probably resembling the coarse but effective patterned fabrics for aprons and dresses which are still woven by the peasantry near Rome, in the Abruzzi moun- tains, and elsewhere in Italy, and in Scandinavia.

TAPESTRY.

The making of tapestry (Gk. razys), like the weaving Tapestry.

of pile carpets, differs from ordinary fabric in that no visible weft is thrown completely across the loom, but the

2 A valuable help towards establishing the dates of carpet patterns is given by many medieval Italian pictures, in which Oriental carpets are often

represented with wonderful minuteness and appreciation.

8 Tapisserie in French means all sorts of patterned stuffs.

Flemish.

design is formed by short stitches knotted across the warp with a wooden needle called a broach. It is a sort of link between textile work and embroidery, from which it differs in having its stitches applied, not to a finished web, but to the stretched strings of a warp. It is made on a high loom, and the whole process, though requiring much skill, is mechanically of the simplest kind. It is very probable that many of the woven hangings used in ancient Egypt, Greece, and other countries were true tapestry ; but little is known on this point. ‘Tull after the 12th century, in northern Europe, embroidery seems to have served the place of tapestry, as, for example, in the wrongly named Bayeux tapestry (see vol. viii. p. 162); while in the south of Europe and in Oriental countries its place was supplied by the rich silken textiles and pile carpets mentioned above.

In the 14th century tapestry began to be largely made, especially in Flanders, where the craft of weaving became very important at an early time. The designs on the very few existing samples of 14th-century tapestry closely resem- ble those of contemporary wall painting. A characteristic early specimen in the Louvre has rows of medallions, each containing a scene from the life of St Martin, with two or three figures treated in a very simply decorative way. The spaces between the circles are filled up with a stiff geo- metrical ornament. To the end of the 14th century be- longs the magnificent tapestry in Angers cathedral, on which are represented scenes from the Apocalypse ; these were made at Arras, the chief seat of the tapestry manu- facture, both for quantity and quality. Hence the name arras (Italian arazzi) came to mean any sort of tapestry, wherever it was made. Another magnificent series of arras work is preserved in Rheims cathedral, with designs from the history of Clovis; these date from the middle of the 15th century. In the 14th century Flanders produced enormous quantities of woven stuffs. At that time twenty- seven streets were occupied by the weavers of Ghent; in 1382 there were 50,000 weavers in Louvain ; and at

Ypres there is said to have been a still larger number. From about 1450 to 1500 was the golden age for tapestry, especially in Bruges and Arras, where large quantities of the most magnificent historical pieces were woven from designs supplied by painters of the Van Eyck school. The Flemish tapestries of that time are perfect models of textile art, rich in colour, strong in decorative effect, graceful in drawing and composition, and arranged with consummate skill to suit the exigencies of the loom and the esthetic requirements of wall decoration. A very beautiful example of this class exists at Hampton Court, hung in the dark under the gallery in the great hall,—a striking contrast to the clever but artistically degraded tapestries of half a century later, which hang round the main walls of the hall. Other fine examples exist in the Cluny, Bern, and other museums, and especially in Madrid 2—in the royal collection and in that of the duke of Alva—and elsewhere in Spain. Though very rich and varied in effect, the tapestry of the best period usually is woven with not more than twenty different tints of wool,—half tints and grada- tions being got by hatching one colour into another. In the 16th century about sixty colours were principally em- ployed in the still fine but rapidly deteriorating tapestry

1 In tapestry the weft stitches are put in loosely and carefully pressed home, so that the warp strings are completely hidden.

- See Riafio, Tapestry of the Palace at Madrid, London, 1875 ; of all countries Spain is the richest in tapestry of the 15th and 16th centuries. The royal collection contains 2000 large pieces. Rich stores also belong to the principal cathedrals, such as Toledo, which on the feast of Corpus Christi is completely hung round with tapestry outside as well as inside. In the 17th century tapestry looms were worked in Spain under royal patronage. One of Velazquez’s finest pictures in the Madrid Gallery (Las Hilanderas) represents the visit

of some court ladies to a tapestry fabrique, in which women are work- ing the looms.

EA TULRES

of that period ; and in the laborious but artistically worth- less productions of the Gobelin factory more than 14,000 differently tinted wools are now

used.

In the 16th century the art began to decline ; very slight symptoms of decadence are visible in the beautiful tapestries with Petrarch's Zr:wmphs in the South Kensington Museum, —most gorgeous pieces of textile art, of the richest decora- tive effect. These were worked very soon after 1500 (see fig. 10). The influence of Raphael and his school succeeded

saat H

cy

Fia. 10.—Figure of Lucretia from the Triumph of Chastity, woven at Brussels about 1507. Her dress is an Italian velvet, similar in style to that shown in fig. 6. that of the 15th-century Flemish painters, and was utterly destructive of true art value in tapestry. Raphael's car- toons, fine as they are in composition, are designed without the least reference to textile requirements, and are merely large pictures, which the weavers had to copy as best they might. This new style, which reduced the art to a feeble copyism of painting, gave the death-blow to the produc- tion of really fine tapestry. Brussels became the chief place for the manufacture after the taking of Arras by Louis XJ. in 1477, and its weavers with wonderful skill imitated any sort of painting that was put before them. Cartoons were drawn by several of Raphael's pupils, such as Giulio Romano and Giovanni da Udine, and by Mabuse, Michiel Coxcie, Bernard van Orley, and other Italianized Flemish painters.

In 1539 Francis I. founded a factory for tapestry at French

Fontainebleau, and soon after other high looms were set up in Paris, examples from which still exist and show a rapid degradation of style. In 1603 a new factory was started in Paris under royal patronage, in the workshop of a family of dyers named Gobelin, after whom the new factory was named (see GoBELIN). The Gobelin looms were first worked by weavers from Flanders, who soon taught the

glish.

-“paned_ losinge-wise.”

mysteries of the craft to a number of French workmen. Cartoons were supplied by Simon Vouet and other distin- guished French painters. In the reign of Louis XIV. a great impulse was given to the factory, and from 1667 the whole establishment became the property of the crown. Louis XIV.’s minister, Colbert, did much to encourage this and other industries. Charles Le Brun the painter was made director of the works, and a number of artists prepared the cartoons under his supervision. In the 18th century Coypel, Jouvenet, Boucher, Watteau, and many other popular painters made designs, often of great size and elaboration, for the Gobelin looms, but all in the very worst possible taste ; these include large series of sacred, inythological, and historical subjects, landscapes, sea-pieces, and even portraits, —the last being perhaps the most ridicu- lous misuse of the textile art that could possibly be in- vented. Other tapestry looms were worked in the 18th century at Aubusson, Felletin, and other places in France.

High-warp looms appear to have been worked in England in the 15th century, though by far the greater part of the rich stores of tapestry in this country came from Flanders. One very beautiful example of English work of this time exists in St Mary’s Hall at Coventry; it represents the marriage of Henry VI. Part of another series with the inarriage of Henry VII. is preserved in a house in Cornwall. In the latter part of the 15th and the first half of the 16th century cnormous sums were spent by the rich in England on Flemish tapestry. Cardinal Wolsey’s private accounts and inventories, which still exist,! give an astonishing picture of tle wealth which he lavished on the adornment of his palace at Hampton Court. In 1522 he bought 132 large pieces of Brussels tapestry, woven with Scriptural subjects, and mostly made to order, so as to fit exactly the various wall spaces. He also bought large quantities of costly Oriental carpets. In the inventories are enumerated “foot carpets,” “table carpets,” and “window carpets,” “hanging peces,” “borders with arms,” and ‘ window peces,” the last being strips of tapestry woven in narrow lengths to fit the sills and jambs of windows. Among the “wall peces,” in addition to the numerous sacred subjects, are mentioned mythological scenes, romances, historical

pieces, and “hangings of verdures,” the last being decor- ative work in which trees and foliage formed the main design, with accessory figures of hunting, hawking, and the like. The catalogue of Wolsey’s linen napery is no less sumptuous and abundant; he possessed an immense quantity of finest linen for sheets and ‘“ board-cloths” (table-cloths), mostly patterned with “damaske diaper” or This example of the wealth of textile work possessed by one rich prelate will give some notion of what England and other countries possessed in the 16th century.

In the reign of James I. tapestry looms were set up at Mortlake, and the industry was carried on during the fol- lowing reign under the direction of the painter Francis Crane. Charles I. introduced skilled weavers from Ouden- arde in Belgium, and the whole existing series of cartoons by Raphael were copied on the Mortlake looms.2 Most of the Mortlake tapestry has distinct marks, such as the shield of St George with F. C. (F. Crane). Some pieces are inscribed “ Car. Re. Reg. Mortl.” (Carolus rex regnans). Though closed during the Commonwealth, the Mortlake fabrique was again worked after the Restoration until the death of Crane in 1703. In the 18th century tapestry Was woven on a small scale in Soho and at Fulham, and within recent years a new royal fabrique has been estab- lished at Windsor, where very costly and skilful weaving in the pictorial Gobelin style is carried on. The only

1 See Law, Hampton Court Palace, London, 1885. * See RarHakL, vol. xx. p. 280.

|

modern tapestry which has any of the merits of the best old productions is that made ona small scale by Mr William Morris at Merton Abbey (Surrey), where work of the high- est beauty has been produced. Unfortunately, however, the modern taste for feeble imitations of oil paintings has as yet shown little appreciation of this revival of the true textile art.

As in England, by far the greater part of the tapestry Italian.

used in Italy was a Flemish import. But in the 16th century, under the patronage of the dukes of Ferrara, tapestry looms were set up in Ferrara; these were, how- ever, worked by Flemish weavers, and closely resemble contemporary tapestry woven at Brussels. Other fabriques were established in Florence by the Medici princes, and continued to be worked till the end of the 17th century. Factories for tapestry existed also at Venice, Turin, and other northern cities, but the industry was purely an exotic, and never attained to any great importance. Since the pontificate of Clement XI., in 1702,° a papal factory for tapestry has existed in Rome, and is still carried on in the Vatican. The papal looms have produced a large number of most costly and elaborate copies of celebrated paintings, executed with wonderful skill, but utterly worthless as works of art.

The South Kensington Museum possesses the best and most Collec- The church tions.

illustrative collection of woven fabrics of various dates. of St Mary at Dantzic has a magnificent collection of early textiles, niostly used for vestinents ; these are well illustrated by Hinz, Die Schatzkammer der Maricn-Kirche zu Dantzig, 1870. Fine examples of early tapestry exist in the cathedrals of Rhcims, Bruges, Tournay, Augers, Beauvais, Aix, Sens, and in the church of St Rémy at Rheims. Other fine collections are preserved in the Louvre, the Cluny Museuin, at Chartres, Amiens, Dijon, Orleans, Auxerre, Naucy, Bern, Brussels, Munich, Berlin, Dresden, Vienna, and Nuremberg.4 In Italy the richest collections (mostly of later tae) are those of the Vatican, the Pitti, the Bargello, Palazzo del Té at Mantua, Turin (royal palace), Milan (royal palace), Como (cathedral), and the museum of Naples. The Spanish collections have been already mentioned. In England, besides the South Kensington Muscum, fine tapestries exist in the palaces of Windsor and Hampton Court. ‘Those formerly in the House of Lords were destroyed in the fire of 1834. St Mary’s Hall at Coventry contains the finest examples of the 15th century.

Literature.—By far the best work for its well-chosen coloured illustrations is that of Fischbach, Textile Fabrics, English ed., 1883 ; see alsoDupont-Auberville, Lornement des tissus, Paris, 1875-77 ; Michel, Recherches sur la fabrication des etoffes, Paris, 1852 (a very valuable work); Jubinal,

Anciennes tapisseries, Paris, 1858-59 ; De Ronchaud, Le péplos d’ Athené, Paris, 1872 ; Id., La tapisserie, Paris, 1885; Miintz, La tapisserie dans UV’antiquité, Paris, 1878; Lessing, Modeéles de tapis Orientauxz, Paris, 1879; Id., Ancient Oriental Carpets, London, 1879; Vin- cent Robinson, Oriental Carpets, London, 1882 (the illustrations are better than the text); Lady Alford, Needlework as Art, London, 1886 (deals partly with textiles). Though few works treat of the general history of textiles, a very large number exist about tapestry weaving. The chief are—Depping, Régle- ments sur les arts… au XIIIme siecle, Paris, 1837; De Montault, Tapisserie de la cath. d Angers, Paris, 1863; De Farcy on the same subject, 1875; Barraud, Tap. de la cath. de Beauvais, Beauvais, 1853; Rock, Textile Fabrics, S.K.M., London, 1870; Bock, Cat. des tissus, &c., au Musée German., Nuremberg, 1869 ; Kinkel, Rogier van der Weyden .. . et les tupisseries de Berne, Zurich, 1867; Givelet, Toiles brodées de Reims, Rheims, 1883; Louis Paris, Tap. de la ville de Reims, Rheims, 1843; Loriquet, Tap. de Notre Dame de Reims, Rheims, 1876 ; Pinchart, Tap. dans les Pays-Bas, and other works, Brussels, 1859-64 ; Dehaisnes, Tap, d’ Arras avant le XVme siécle, Paris, 1879; Proyart, Recherches sur les tap. @ Arras, Arras, 1863; Voisin, Tap. de la cath. de Tournay, Tournay, 1863; Van Drival, Tap. d’ Arras, Arras, 1864; Gorse, Tap. du chiiteau de Pau, Paris, 1881; De la Fons-Melicoq, Hautlisseurs des XIVme aw XVIme siecles, Paris, 1870 3 San- terre, Tap. de Beawvais, Clermont, 1842; Deville, Statuts, &c., relatifs a la corp. des tap. de 1258 & 1275, Paris, 1875; Darcel, Gaz. d. b.-arts, xiv. pp. 185, 278, and 414; Van de Graft, De Tapijt-Fabrieken de XVI. en XVII. Eeuw, Middelburg,

- 1869. On Italian tapestry, see De Montault, Tap. de haute lisse a Rome, Arras,

1879 ; Conti, L’arte degli arazzi in Firenze, Florence, 1875; Campori, L’arazzeria Estense, Modena, 1876; Braghirolli, Arazzi in Mantova, Mantua, 1879; Farabu- lini, arte degli arazzi, Rome, 1884; Gentili, art des tapis, Rome, 1878 ; and Mintz, Tap. Italiennes, Paris, 1880. On French and other late tapestry, sec Darcel and Guichard, Les tap. décoratives, Paris, 1881; Lacordaire, Hist. de tap- tsserie, Paris, 1855; Guillaumot, L’Origine .. . des Gobelins, Paris, 1860; Perathon, Tap. d’ Aubusson, de Felletin, et de Bellegarde, Paris, 1857; Roy-Pierrefitte, Les tap. de Felletin, Limoges,

1855; Durieux, Tap. de Cambrai, Cambrai, 1879; About and Bauer, Tap. apres les cartons de Raphuel, Paris, 1875; Houdoy, Tap. de la fabrication Lilloise, Lille, 1871; Vergnaud-Romagnesi, Tap. aw Musée d'Orléans, Orleans, 1859; De St Genois, Tap. @Oudenarde, Paris, 1864; Taleot, Fabric. des tissus, Paris, 1852; Guiffrey, Iist. de la tapisserie, Tours, 1886; Pine, Tapestry of the House of Lords, London, 1739; and De Champeaux, Tapestry, S.K.M. handbook, London, 1878; Ashenhurst, Treatise on Weaving, London, 1886. (J. H. M.)

TEZA, or TAzé. See Morocco, vol. xvi. p. 834.

3 An earlier fabrique was started in 1630 by Urban VIII., but it soon ceased to be worked. 4 The large collection in the Gobelin Museum was burnt in 1871.

THACKERAY, Witiiam Maxeprace (1811-1863), one of the greatest of English authors and novelists, son of Rich- mond Thackeray (Mrs Richmond Thackeray was born Miss

Becher), and grandson of W. R. Thackeray of Hadley, Mid- –

dlesex, was born at Calcutta on July 18, 1811. Both his father and grandfather had been Indian civil servants. His mother, who was only nineteen at the date of his birth, was left a widow in 1816, and afterwards married Major Henry Carmichael Smyth. Thackeray himself was sent home to England from India as a child, and went to Charterhouse, since his time removed to Godalming from its ancient site near Smithfield. Anthony Trollope, in his book on Thackeray in the English Men of Letters series, quotes a letter written to him about Thackeray's school-days by Mr G. S. Venables. '' He came to school young," Mr Venables wrote, "'a pretty, gentle, and rather timid boy." This accords with the fact that all through Thackeray's writings the student may find traces of the sensitiveness which often belongs to the creative mind, and which, in the boy who does not understand its meaning and its possible power is apt to assume the guise of a shy dispo- sition. To this very matter Mr Venables tersely refers in a later passage of the letter quoted by Trollope: " When I knew him better, in later

years, I thought I could recognize the sensitive nature which he had as a boy.” Another illustration is found in the statement, which will be re@ognized as exact by all readers of Thackeray, that ‘his change of retrospective feeling about his school-days was very characteristic. In his earlier books he always spoke of the Charterhouse as Slaughter House and Smith- field. As he became famous and prosperous his memory softened, and Slaughter House was changed into Grey Friars, where Colonel Newcome ended his life.” Even in the earlier references the bitterness which has often been so falsely read into Thackeray is not to be found. In “ Mr and Mrs Frank Berry” (Men’s Wives) there is a description of a Slaughter-House fight, following on an incident almost identical with that used in Vanity Fair for the fight between Dobbin and Cuff. In both cases the brutality of school life, as it then was, is very fully recognized and described, but not to the exclusion of the chivalry which goes along- side with it. In the first chapter of ‘““Mr and Mrs Frank Berry, ” Berry himself and Old Hawkins both have a touch of the heroic. In the story which forms part of Jen’s Wives the bully whom Berry gallantly challenges is beaten, and one hears no more of him. In Vanity Fair Cuff the swaggerer is beaten in a similar way, but regains his popularity by one well-timed stroke of magnanimity, and afterwards shows the truest kindness to his conqueror.

In February 1829 Thackeray went to Trinity College, Cambridge, and in that year contributed some engaging lines on Zimbuctoo, the subject for the prize poem, to a little university paper called The Snob, the title of which he afterwards utilized in the famous Snob Papers. The first stanza has become tolerably well known, but is worth quot- ing as an early instance of the direct comic force afterwards employed by the author in verse and prose burlesques :—

In Africa—a quarter of the world—

Men’s skins are black ; their hair is crisp and curied ; And somewhere there, unknown to public view,

A mighty city lies, called Timbuctoo.

One other passage at least in The Snob, in the form of a skit on a paragraph of fashionable intelligence, seems to bear traces of Thackeray’s handiwork.

At Cambridge James Spedding, Monckton Milnes (Lord Houghton), Edward Fitzgerald, W. H. Thompson (afterwards master of Trinity), and other distinguished persons were among his friends. In 1830 he left Cambridge without taking a degree, and went to Weimar and to Paris. His visit to Weimar bore fruit in the sketches of life at a small

German court which appear in /%tz-Boodle's Confessions and in Vanity Fair. In 1832 he came of age, and inherited asum which Trollope's book describes as amounting to about five hundred a year. The money was soon lost,—— some in an Indian bank, some in two newspapers which in Lovel the Widower are referred to under one name as The Museum, in connexion with which our friends Honeyman and Sherrick of Zhe Newcomes are briefly broughtin. His first regular literary employment after the loss of his patrimony was on Fraser's Magazine, in which in 1837-38 appeared Zhe History of Mr Samuel Titmarsh and the Great Hoggarty Diamond, a work filled with instances of the wit, humour, satire, pathos, which found a more ordered if not a fresher expression in his laterand longer works. For freshness, indeed, and for a fine perception which enables the author to perform among other feats that of keeping up throughout the story the curious simplicity of its supposed narrator's character, the Great Lloggarty Diamond can scarce be surpassed. The characters, from Lady Drum, Lady Fanny, Lady Janc, and Edmund Preston down to Brough, his daughter, Mrs Roundhand, Gus Hoskins, and, by no means least, Samuel Titmarsh's pious aunt with her store of ' Rosolio," are living; the book is crammed with honest fun; and, for pure pathos, the death of the child, and the meeting of the husband and wife over the empty cradle (a scene illustrated by the author himself with that suggestion of truth which no shortcoming in drawing could spoil), stands, if not alone in its own line, at least in the company of very few such scenes in English fiction. The Great Hoggarty Diamond, oddly enough, met with the fate that afterwards befell one of Lever's best stories which appeared in a periodical week by week,—it had to be cut short at the bidding of the editor. In the same year in which it appeared Thackeray married Isabella, daughter of Colonel Matthew Shawe. Of the daughters born of the marriage, one, Mrs Richmond Ritchie, has earned distinction as a novelist. Mrs Thackeray, to quote Trollope, ''

became ill and her mind failed her," and Thackeray thereupon '" became as it were a widower till the end of his days." In 1840 came out The Paris Sketch Book. Much of it had been written and published at an earlier date, and in the earlier writings there are some very curious divagations in criticism. The book contains also a striking story of card-sharping, afterwards worked up and put into Alta- mont's mouth in Pendennis, and a very powerful sketch of a gambler's death and obsequies, Three years before, in 1837, Thackeray had begun, in Fraser, the Yellowplush Papers, with their strange touches of humour, satire, tragedy (in one scene, the closing one of the history of Mr Deuceace), and their sublimation of fantastic bad spelling (M'Arony for macaroni is one of the typical touches of this) ; and this was followed by Catherine, a strong story, and too disagreeable perhaps for its purpose, founded closely on the actual career of a criminal named Catherine Hayes, and intended to counteract the then growing prac- tice of making ruffians and harlots prominent characters in fiction. There soon followed J%tz-Boodle's Confessions and Professions, including the series Men's Wives, already referred to; and, slightly before these, The Shabby Genteel Story, a work interrupted by Thackeray's domestic affliction and afterwards republished as an introduction to The Ad- ventures of Philip, which took up the course of the original story many years after the supposed date of its catastrophe. In 1843, and for some ten years onwards according to Trollope, Thackeray was writing for Punch, and the list of his contributions included among many others the cele- brated Snob Papers and the Ballads of Policeman X. In 1843 also came out the Jrish Sketch Book, and in 1844 the account of the journey Hrom Cornhill to Grand Cairo,

rewmcnk eR A Y

in which was published the excellent poem of The White | In 1844 there began in Fraser the Memoirs of |

Squall. ey Lyndon, called in the magazine The Luck of Barry Lyndon, a Romance of the Last Century. Barry Lyndon has, with a very great difference in treatment, some resemblance to Smollett's Count /athom ;—the hero, that is to say, is or becomes a most intolerable scoundrel, who is magnificently unconscious of his own iniquity. The age and pressure of the time depicted are caught with amazing verisimilitude, and in the boyish career of Barry Lyndon there are fine touches of a wild chivalry, simplicity, and

generosity, which mingle naturally with the worse qualities | that, under the influence of abominable training, afterwards |

corrupt his whole mind and career. The man is so in- fatuated with and so blind to his own roguery, he has so much dash and daring, and is on occasions so infamously treated, that it is not easy to look upon him as an entirely detestable villain until, towards the end of his course, he becomes wholly lost in brutish debauchery and cruelty. His latter career is founded on that of Andrew Robinson Stoney Bowes, who married the widow of John, ninth earl of Strathmore. There is also no doubt a touch of Casanova in Barry Lyndon's character. Besides the con- tributions to /'unch specially referred to, there should be noticed Punch's Prize Novelists, containing some brilliant parodies of Edward Lytton Bulwer, Lever, Mr D'Israeli (in Codlingsby, perhaps the most perfect of the series), and others. Among minor but admirable works of the same period are found A Legend of the Rhine (a burlesque of the great Dumas's Othon l Archer), brought out in a periodical of George Cruikshank's, Cox's Diary (on which has been founded a well-known Dutch comedy, Janus Tulp), and the Fatal Boots. This is the most fitting moment for mentioning also Lebecca and Rowena, which towers, not only over Thackeray's other burlesques, excellent as they are, but over every other burlesque of the kind ever written. Its taste, its wit, its pathos, its humour, are unmatchable; and it contains some of the best songs of a particular kind ever written—songs worthy indeed to rank with

Peacock’s best. In 1846 was published, by Messrs Bradbury and Evans, the first of twenty-four numbers of Vanity Fair, the work which first placed Thackeray in his proper position before the public as a novelist and writer of the first rank. It was completed in 1848, when Thackeray was thirty-seven years old; and in the same year Abraham Hayward paid a tribute to the author’s powers in the Edinburgh Review. It is probable that on Vanity Fair has been largely based the foolish cry, now heard less and less frequently, about Thackeray’s cynicism, a cry which he himself, with his keen knowledge of men, foresaw and provided against, amply enough as one might have thought, at the end of the eighth chapter, in a passage which is perhaps the best commentary ever written on the author’s method. He has explained how he wishes to describe men and women as they actually are, good, bad, and indifferent, and to claim a privilege—

“Occasionally to step down from the platform, and talk about them: if they are good and kindly, to love and shake them by the hand; if they are silly, to laugh at them confidentially in the teader’s sleeve; if they are wicked and heartless, to abuse them in the Strongest terms politeness admits of. Otherwise you might fancy it was I who was sneering at the practice of devotion, which Miss Sharp finds so ridiculous; that it was I who laughed good- humouredly at the railing old Silenus of a baronet—whereas the laughter comes from one who has no reverence except for prosperity, and no eye for anything beyond success. Such people there are

living and flourishing in the world—Faithless, Hopeless, Charity- less: let us have at them, dear friends, with might and main.

Some there are, and very successful too, mere quacks and fools: | and it was to combat and expose such as those, no doubt, that |

laughter was made.”

As to another accusation which was brought against the book when it first came out, that the colours were laid on

too thick, in the sense that the villains were too villainous, the good people too goody-goody, the best and completest answer to that can be found by any one who chooses to read the work with care. Osborne is, and is meant to be, a poor enough creature, but he is an eminently human being, and one whose poorness of character is developed as he allows bad influences to tell upon his vanity and folly. The good in him is fully recognized, and comes out in the beautiful passage describing his farewell to Amelia on the eve of Waterloo, in which passage may be also found a sufficient enough answer to the statement that Amelia is absolutely insipid and uninteresting. So with the com- panion picture of Rawdon Crawley's farewell to Becky : who that reads it can resist sympathy, in spite of Rawdon's vices and shady shifts for a living, with his simple bravery and devotion to his wife? As for Becky, a character that has since been imitated a host of times, there is certainly not much to be said in her defence. We know of her, to be sure, that she thought she would have found it easy to be good if she had been rich, and we know also what happened when Rawdon, released without her knowledge from a spunging-house, surprised her alone with and singing to Lord Steyne in the house in May Fair. After a gross insult from Steyne, '' Rawdon Crawley, springing out, seized him by the neckcloth, until Steyne, almost strangled, writhed and bent under his arm. ' You lie, you dog,' said Rawdon ; ' you lie, you coward and villain !' And he struck the peer twice over the face with his open hand, and flung hin bleeding to the ground. It was all done before Rebecca could interpose. She stood there trembling before him. She admired her husband, strong, brave, and victorious." This admiration is, as Thackeray himself thought it, the capital touch in a scene which is as powerful as any Thackeray ever wrote—as powerful, indeed, as any in English fiction. Its full merit, it may be noted in passing, has been curiously accented by an imita- tion of it in M. Daudet's Fromont Jeune et Risler Atné. As to the extent of the miserable Becky's guilt in the Steyne matter, on that Thackeray leaves it practically open to the reader to form what conclusion he will. There is, it should be added, a distinct touch of good in Becky's conduct to Amelia at Ostend in the last chapter of the book, and those who think that too little punishment is meted out to the brilliant adventuress in the end may remember this to her credit. Itis supreme art in the treatment of her char- acter that makes the reader understand and feel her attrac- tiveness, though he knows her extraordinarily evil qualities ; and in this no writer subsequent to Thackeray who has tried to depict one of the

genus Becky Sharp has even faintly succeeded. Among the minor characters there is not one—and this is not always the case even with Thackeray's chief figures—who is incompletely or inconsistently de- picted ; and no one who wishes to fully understand and appreciate the book can afford to miss a word of it. Vanity Fair was followed by Pendennis, Esmond, and The Newcomes, which appeared respectively in 1850, 1852, and 1854. It might be more easy to pick holes critically in Pendennis than in Vanity Fair. Pendennis himself, after his boyish passion and university escapades, has dis- agreeable touches of flabbiness and worldliness ; and the important episode of his relations with Fanny Bolton, which Thackeray could never have treated otherwise than delicately, is so lightly and tersely handled that it is a little vague even to those who read between the lines; the final announcement that those relations have been innocent can scarcely be said to be led up to, and one can hardly see why it should have been so long delayed. This

_ does not of course affect the value of the book as a picture

of middle and upper class life of the time, the time when Vauxhall still existed, and the haunt for suppers and songs

which Thackeray in this book called the Back Kitchen, and it isa picture filled with striking figures. In some of these, notably in that of Foker, Thackeray went, it is Supposed, very close to actual life for his material, and in that particular case with a most agreeable result. As for

the two umbre of the marquis of Steyne, it is difficult to | believe that they were intended as caricatures from two |

well-known persons. hand forgot its cunning. Here, as in Vanity Fair, the heroism: has been found a little insipid; and there may be good ground for finding Laura Pendennis dull, though she has a spirit of her own. In later books she becomes, what Thackeray's people very seldom are, a tiresome as well as an uninviting person. Costigan is unique, and so is Major Pendennis, a type which, allowing for differences of period and manners, will exist as long as society does, and which has been seized and depicted

by Thackeray as by no other novelist. His two encounters, from both of which he comes out victorious, one with Costigan in the first, the other with Morgan in the second volume, are admirable touches of genius, In opposition to the worldliness of the major, with which Pendennis does not escape being tainted, we have Warrington, whose nobility of nature has come unscathed through a severe trial, and who, a thorough gentleman if a rough one, is really the guardian of Pen- dennis's career. There is, it should be noted, a character- istic and acknowledged confusion in the plot of Pendennis, which will not spoil any intelligent reader's pleasure. Probably most readers of The Newcomes (1854) to whom the book is inentioned think first of the grand, chivalrous, and simple figure of Colonel Newcome, who stands out in the relief of almost ideal beauty of character against the crowd of more or less imperfect and more or less base personages who move through the novel. At the same time, to say, as has been said, that this book "is full of satire from the first to the last page" is to convey an impression which is by no means just. There is plenty of kindliness in the treatment of the young men who, like Clive Newcome himself and Lord Kew, possess no very shining virtue beyond that of being honourable gentlemen ; in the character of J. J. Ridley there is much tenderness aud pathos ; and no one can help liking the Bohemian F. B., and looking tolerantly on his failings. It may be that both the fiendish temper of Mrs Mackenzie and the suffer-

ings she inflicts on the Colonel are too closely insisted on ; |

but it must be remernbered that this heightens the singular pathos of the closing scenes of tlie Colonel's life. It has seemed convenient to take The Newcomes after Pendennis, because Pendennis and his wife reappear in this book as in the Adventures of Philip; but Esmond (1852) was written and published before The Newcomes. To some students Lsmond seems and will seem Thackeray's capital work. It has not been rivalled, and only a few times approached by Mr Besant, as a romance reproducing with unfailing interest and accuracy the figures, manners, and phrases of a past time, and it is full of beautiful touches of character. But Beatrix, upon whom so much hinges, is an unpleasing character, although one understands fully why men were captivated by her insolent beauty and brilliancy ; and there is some truth in Thackeray's own saying, that 'Esmond was a prig." Apart from this,

the story is, like the illusion of a past time in the narrative, so complete in all its details, so harmoniously worked out, that there is little room for criticism. As to Esmond's marriage with the lady whom he has served and loved as a boy, that is a matter for individual judgment. Beatrix, it has been indicated above, is wonderfully drawn; and not the least wonderful thing about her is her reappearance as the jaded, battered, worldly, not altogether unkindly, Baroness in The Virginians. It was just what Beatrix

If they were, for once Thackeray's |

must have come to, and the degradation is handled with the lightest and finest touch.

In 1851 Thackeray had written The English Humourists of the Eighteenth Century, delivered as a series of lectures at Willis's Rooms in the same year, and re-delivered in the United States in 1852 and 1853, as was afterwards the series called The Your Georges. Both sets were written for the purposes of lecturing. In 1857 Thackeray stood unsuc- cessfully as a parliamentary candidate for Oxford against Mr Cardwell, and in the same year appeared the first num- ber of Zhe Virginians, a sequel to Hsmond. This is a most unequal work,—inferior, as sequels are apt to be, to Zsmond as an historical romance, less compact and coherent, prone to divagation and desultoriness, yet charming enough in its lifelikeness, in the wit and wisdom of its reflexions, and, as has been said, in its portrait of Beatrix grown old. The last number of Zhe Virginians came out in 1859, and in the same year Thackeray undertook the editorship of the Cornhill Magazine. This was a task which, as readers of his Roundabout paper "Thorns in the Cushion" will re- member, the kindliness and sensitiveness of his disposition made irksonre to him, and he resigned the editorship in April 1862, though he continued to write for the magazine until he died. In the Cornhill appeared from his pen Lovel the Widower, previously written, with different names for some of the personages, in dramatic form; Zhe Adventures of Philip; the Roundabout Papers; and the story, unhappily never finished, called Denis Duval. Lovel the Widower, changed from the dramatic to the narrative form, remains a piece of high comedy in which the characters are indicated rather than fully worked out, with a bold and practised touch. It contains

some references to Thackeray’s early and unfortunate newspaper speculations, and it was pro- vided by the author with illustrations which as in others of his books have a value which is entirely their own in furnishing, as it were, a far completer commentary on the letterpress than could have been given by any draughts- man, however perspicacious and finished, who approached the pictorial representation of the characters from the outside. To the general statement thus indicated an exception should be made in the case of Doyle’s illustra- tions to The Newcomes and to Rebecca and Rowena. On the other hand, not even Doyle could have matched the fun and spirit of Thackeray’s own illustrations to another burlesque story, one of his best, Zhe Rose and the Ring. The Roundabout Papers, a small storehouse of some of Thackeray’s best qualities as an essayist, came out in the Cornhill Magazine simultaneously with Lovel the Widower and with The Adventures of Philip. Among them is one differing in form from the rest, called The Notch on the Axe—a Story Ala Mode. It isan almost perfect specimen of the author’s genius for burlesque story-telling ; but it contains an odd instance, which a careful reader will not fail to discover, of the odd habit of inaccuracy of which Thackeray himself was conscious. Z’he Adventures of Philip is, as has been before said, in the nature of a sequel to or a completion of A Shabby Genteel Story. As with the other direct sequel, it is a work of great in- equality. It contains scenes of humour, pathos, satire, which rank with Thackeray’s best work ; some old friends from others of the novels make brief but pleasant reappear- ances in its pages; there are fine sketches of journalistic, artistic, and diplomatic life, and the scene from the last- named in Paris isinimitable. The Little Sister is altogether delightful; the Twysden family are terribly true and vastly diverting ; the minor characters, among whom old Ridley, J. J.’s father, should be mentioned, are wonder- fully hit off ; nor did Thackeray ever write a better scene than that of the quarrel between Bunch, Baynes, and M‘Whirter in the Paris pension. Philip himself is impos-

ae

Sen eel

===

THA—THA

sible; one cannot say that the character is ill-drawn—it is not drawn at all. It is an entirely different personage in different chapters ; and it has here and there a very un- pleasant touch which must have come of rapid writing. Yet so admirable are many parts of the book that it can- not be left out of the list of Thackeray's most considerable works. Denis Duval, which reached only three numbers, promised to be a first-rate work, more or less in the Hsmond manner. The author died while it was in progress, on the day before Christmas day 1863. He was buried in Kensal Green, and a bust by Marochetti was put up to his memory in Westminster Abbey.

Little has yet been said of Thackeray's performances in poetry. They formed a small but not the least significant part of his life's work. The grace and the apparent spou- taneity of his versification are beyond question. Some of the more serious efforts, such as The Chronicle of the Drum (1841), are full of power, and instinct with true poetic feeling. Both the half-humorous half-pathetic ballads and the wholly extravagant ones must be classed with the best work in that kind ; and the translations from Béranger are as good as verse translations can be. He had the true poetic instinct, and proved it by writing poetry which equalled his prose in grace and feeling.

It is not necessary to discuss the precise place which Thackeray will in future hold, in respect to his immediate contemporaries. What seems absolutely certain is that the force and variety of his genius and art will always hold for him a place as one of the greatest of English novelists and essayists, and, it should be added, as by no means the least of English critics. (w. H. P.)

THALBERG, Sicismonp (1812-1871), a celebrated pianist and composer for his instrument, was born at Geneva in 1812 (May 5 or January 7). In 1822 he was taken to Vienna, where, under the watchful care of Count Dietrichstein, his education was completed. There is some doubt as to the masters under whom he studied; but it is certain that he received instruction from Hummel, and perhaps also from Czerny, and that he took lessons in com- position from Sechter. He made his first appearance as a pianist at Prince Metternich's in 1826, and published his first composition—a Fantasia on Airs from " Euryanthe" —in 1828, but it was not until 1830 that

he was first fairly introduced to the public, with such brilliant success that from that time forward his only rival was Liszt. In 1834 he was appointed “kammervirtuos” to the emperor of Austria. He first appeared in Paris in 1837; and in 1838 he came to England, astonishing his hearers with the novel effects produced in his Variations on God Save the Queen, while he charmed them with his delicate touch and the purity of his expression. Thenceforward his career was a succession of triumphs. In order to disprove the popular idea that he could execute no music but his own, he played Beet- hoven’s Concerto in C minor (op. 37) at the London Wednesday Concerts, held in 1846-47 at Exeter Hall, with a keen intelligence which proved his power of inter- preting the works of the great masters to be at least on a level with his wonderful technique. Besides his pianoforte compositions, which are almost innumerable, Thalberg pro- duced two operas,—Cristina, which proved a complete failure, and Florinda, which fared but little better at Her Majesty’s Theatre in 1851. He played in London for the last time in 1863, and afterwards retired to his estate near Naples. He died at Naples, April 27, 1871.

THALES or Miterus (640-546 B.C.), son of Examyus and Cleobuline, is universally recognized as the founder of Greck geometry, astronomy, and philosophy. He is said by Herodotus and others to have been of Phcenician extraction, but the more common account (see Diogenes Laertius) is that he was a native Milesian of

noble birth. Zeller thinks that his ancestors belonged to the Cadmiean tribe in Boeotia, who were intermingled with the Ionians of Asia Minor, and thus reconciles the con- flicting statements. The nationality of Thales is certainly Greek and not Pheenician. The high estimation in which he was held by his contemporaries is shown by the place he occupied as chief of the seven “wise men” of Greece ‘ and in later times amongst the ancients his fame was quite remarkable. It is well known that this name (codds) was given on account of practical ability ; and in accordance with this we find that Thales had been occupied with civil affairs, and indeed several instances of his political sagacity have been handed down. Of these the most remarkable is the advice, praised by Herodotus, which he gave to his fellow-countrymen “

before Ionia was ruined,”—“ that the Ionians should constitute one general council in Teos, as the most central of the twelve cities, and that the remaining cities should nevertheless be governed as independent states” (Herod., i. 170). It is probable, however, that in the case of Thales the appellation “ wise man,” which was given to him and to the other six in the archonship of Damasius (586 B.c.),! was conferred on him not only on account of his political sagacity, but also for his scientific eminence (Plut., Solon, c. 3). To about the same time must be referred his celebrated prediction of the eclipse of the sun, which took place on May 28, 585 B.c. This event, which was of the highest importance, has given rise to much discussion. The account of it as given by Herodotus (i. 74) contains two statements :—(1) the fact that the eclipse did actually take place during a battle between the Medes and the Lydians, that it was a total eclipse (Herodotus calls ita “night battle”), that it caused a cessation of hostilities and led to a lasting peace between the contending nations; (2) that Thales had foretold the eclipse to the Ionians, and fixed the year in which it actually did take place. Various dates—ranging from 625 B.C. to 583 B.c. —have been assigned by different chrono- logists to this eclipse; but, since the investigations of Airy,’ Hind,? and Zech,* the date determined by them (May 28, 585 B.c.) has been generally accepted. This date agrees nearly with that given by Pliny (HW. W,, ii. 12). The second part of the statement of Herodotus—the reality of the prediction by Thales—has been frequently called in question, chiefly on the ground that, in order to predict a solar eclipse with any chance of success, one should have the command of certain astronomical facts which were not known until the 3d century B.c., and then merely approximately, and only employed with that object in the following century by Hipparchus. The question, however, is not whether Thales could predict the eclipse of the sun with any chance of success—much less whether he could state beforehand at what places the eclipse would be visible,.as some have erroneously supposed, and which of course would have been quite impossible for him to do, but simply whether he foretold that there would be a solar eclipse in that year, as stated by Herodotus. Now as to this there is quite a remarkable unanimity in the testi- mony of the ancients, and the evidence is of the strongest kind, ascending to Herodotus, and, according to the account of Diogenes Laertius, even to Xenophanes, who was an Ionian, and not much later than Thales. Further,

1 Bretschneider (Die Geom. vor Euklides, p. 40), without stating his authority, gives ‘‘ between 585 and 583 B.c.” as the date of the archonship of Damasius. In this he is followed by some other recent writers, who infer thence that the name ‘‘ wise” was conferred on Thales on account of the success of his prediction. The date 586 B.C., given above, which is taken from Clinton, is adopted by Zeller.

2 **On the Eclipses of Agathocles, Thales, and Xerxes,” Phil. Trans., vol. cxliii. p. 179 sq., 1853. 3 Atheneum, p. 919, 1852.

4 Astronomische Untersuchungen der wichtigeren Finsternisse, &c.,

57, 1853. XXIII. — 28

218

we know that in the 8th century B.c. there were obser- vatories in most of the large cities in the valley of the Euphrates, and that professional astronomers regularly took observations of the heavens, copies of which were sent to the king of Assyria; and from a cuneiform inscrip- tion found in the palace of Sennacherib at Nineveh, the text of which is given by George Smith,! we learn that at that time the epochs of eclipses of both sunand moon were predicted as possible—probably by means of the cycle of 223 lunations or Chaldean Saros—and that observations were made accordingly.

The wonderful fame of Thales amongst the ancients must have been in great part due to this achievement, which seems, moreover, to have been one of the chief causes that excited amongst the Hellenes the love of science which ever afterwards characterized them. Thales seems not to have left any writings behind him, though as to this there appears to be some doubt (see Diog, Laer., i. 23). Many anecdotes, amusing rather than instructive, are related of him, which have been handed down by Diogenes Laertius and other writers. From some of them it would appear that he was engaged in trade, which is indeed expressly stated by Plutarch (Solon, c. 2). It is probable that in the pursuit of commerce he was led to visit Egypt. Of the fact that Thales visited Egypt, and there became acquainted with geometry, there is abun- dant evidence. Hieronymus of Rhodes (ap. Diog.

Laer., i. 27) says, “he never had any teacher except during the time when he went to Egypt and associated with the priests.” 2.

But the characteristic feature of the work of Thales was that to the knowledge thus acquired he added the capital creation of the geometry of lines, which was essentially abstract in its character. The only geometry known to the Egyptian priests was that of surfaces, together with a sketch of that of solids, a geometry consisting of some simple quadratures and elementary cubatures, which they had obtained empirically. Thales, on the other hand, intro- duced abstract geometry, the object of which is to establish precise relations between the different parts of a figure, so that some of them could be found by means of others in a manner strictly rigorous. This was a phenomenon quite new in the world, and due, in fact, to the abstract spirit of the Greeks.

The following discoveries in geometry are attributed to Thales :— (1) the circle is bisected by its diametcr (Procl., op. cit., p. 157) ; (2) the angles at the base of an isosceles triangle are equal (Id., p. 250) ; (8) when two straight lines cut each other the vertically opposite angles are equal (Id., p. 299); (4) the angle in a semicircle is a right angle ;° (5) the theorem Euclid i. 26 is referred to Thales by Eudemus(Procl., op. cit., p. 352). Twoapplications of geometry to the solution of practical problems are also attributed to him :— (1) the determination of the distance of a ship at sea, for which he made use of the last theorem ; (2) the determination of the height of a pyramid by means of the length of its shadow: according to Hieronymus of Rhodes (Diog. Laert., i. 27) and Pliny (V. &, Xxxvi. 12), the shadow was measured at the hour of the day when a man’s shadow is the same length as himself. Plutarch, however, states the method in a form requiring the knowledge of Euclid vi. 4, but without the restriction as to the hour of the day (Sept. Sap. Conviv., 2). Further, we learn from Diogenes Laertius (i. 25) that he perfected the things relating to the scalene triangle and the theory of lines. Proclus, too, in his summary of the history of geometry before Euclid, which he probably derived from Eudemus of Rhodes, says that Thales, having visited Egypt, first brought

the knowledge of geometry into Greece, that he discovered many

1 Assyrian Discoveries, p. 409.

2 Cf. Pamphila and the spurious letter from Thales to Pherecydes, ap. Diog. Laer. ; Proclus, Jn primum Euclidis Elementorum Librum Commentarii, ed. Friedlein, p. 65; Pliny, H. W., xxxvi. 12; lam- blichus, Jn Vit. Pythag., 12; Plutarch, Sept. Sap. Conviv., 2, De Iside, 10, and Plac., i. 3, 1. ‘

3 This is unquestionably the meaning of the statement of Pamphila (temp. Nero), ap. Diog. Laert., i. 24, that he was the first person to describe a right-angled triangle in a circle,

things himself, and communicated the beginnings of many to his successors, some of which he attempted in a more abstract manner (xaQoAinér epov) and some in a more intuitional or sensible manner (aicOnrixwrepov) (op. cit., p. 65).

From these indications it is no doubt difficult to determine what Thales brought from Egypt and what was due to his own inven- tion. This difficulty has, however, been lessened since the transla- tion and publication of the papyrus Rhind by Eisenlohr ;* and it is now generally admitted that, in the distinction made in the last passage quoted above from Proclus, reference is made to the two forms of his work,—aic@ytikéTepoy pointing to what he derived from Egypt or arrived at in an Egyptian manner, while xa0oAtndrepoy indicates the discoveries which he made in accordance with the Greek spirit. To the former belong the theorems (1), (2), and (3), and to the latter especially the theorem (4), and also, probably, his solution of the two practical problems. We infer, then, [1] that Thales must have known the theorem that the sum of the three angles of a triangle are equal to two right angles. This inference is made from (4) taken along with (2). No doubt we are informed by Proclus, on the authority of Eudemus, that the theorem Euclid i. 32 was first proved in a general way by the Pytha- goreans (see PYTHAGORAS, vol. xx. p. 140); but, on the other hand, we learn from Geminus that the ancient geometers observed the equality to two right angles in each kind of triangle—in the equilateral first, then in the isosceles, and lastly in the scalene (Apoll., Conica, ed. Halleius, p. 9), and itis plain that the geometers older than the Pythagoreans can be no other than Thales and his school. The theorem, then, seems to have been arrived at by induc- tion, and may have been suggested by the contemplation of floors or walls

covered with tiles of the form of equilateral triangles, or squares, or hexagons. [2] We see also in the theorem (4) the first trace of the important conception of geometrical loci, which we, therefore, attribute to Thales. It is worth noticing that it was in this manner that this remarkable property of the circle, with which, in fact, abstract geometry was inaugurated, presented itself to the imagination of Dante :—

“ O se del mezzo cerchio far si puote Triangol si), ch’un retto non avesse.”—Par., c. xiii. 101. [8] Thales discovered the theorem that the sides of equiangular triangles are proportional. The knowledge of this theorem is dis- tinctly stiributed to Thales by Plutarch, and it was probably made use of also in his determination of the distance of a ship at sea.

Let us now consider the importance of the work of Thales. I. In ascientific point of view : (a) we see, in the first place, that by his two theorems he founded the geometry of lines, which has ever since remained the principal part of geometry ; (2) he may, in the second place, be fairly considered to have laid the founda- tion of algebra, for his first theorem establishes an equation in the true sense of the word, while the second institutes a proportion.® II. In a philosophic point of view: we see that in these two theorems of Thales the first type of a natural law, 7.e., the ex- pression of a fixed dependence bodreen different quantities, or, in another form, the disentanglement of constancy in the midst of variety—has decisively arisen.6 III. Lastly, in a practical point of view: Thales furnished the first example of an application of theoretical geometry to practice,” and laid the foundation of an important branch of the same—the measurement of heights and distances. For the further progress of geometry see PYTHAGORAS.

As to the astronomical knowledge of Thales we have the follow- ing notices :—(1) besides the prediction of the solar eclipse, Eu- demus attributes to him the discovery that the circuit of the sun between the solstices is not always uniform ;® (2) he called the last day of the month the thirtieth (Diog. Laert., i. 24); (8) he divided the year into 365 days (Id., i. 27); (4) he determined the dia- meter of the sun to be the 720th part of the zodiac ;° (5) he appears to have pointed out the constellation of the Lesser Bear to his countrymen, and instructed them to steer by it [as nearer the pole] instead of

the Great Bear (Callimachus ap. Diog. Laert., i. 23; of Aratus, Phenomena, v. 36 sq.). Other discoveries in astronomy are attributed to Thales, but on authorities which are not trust- worthy. He did not know, for cxample, that " the earth is spher- ical," as is erroneously stated by Plutarch (Placita, iii. 10); on the contrary, he conceived it to be a flat disk, and in this supposition he was followed by most of his successors in the Ionian schools, including Anaxagoras. The doctrine of the sphericity of the earth, 8 eee ee er

4 Ein mathematisches Handbuch der alten Aegypter, Leipsic, 1877.

5 Auguste Comte, Systéme de Politique Positive, iii. pp. 297, 300.

6 P, Laffitte, Les Grands Types de [Humanité, vol. ii. p. 292.

7 Ibid., p. 294.

8 Theonis Smyrnzi Platonici Liber de Astronomia, ed. Th. H, Mar- tin, p. 324, Paris, 1849. Cf. Diog. Laert., i. 24.

® This is the received interpretation of the passage in Diogenes Laertius, i. 24 (see Wolf, Gesch. der Astron., p. 169), where oeAnvatov is probably a scribe's error for (d:axod. Cf. Apuleius, Florida, iv. 18, who attributes to Thales, then old, the discovery: " quotiens sol mag- nitudine sua circulum quem permeat metiatur."

te

Se a

for which the researches of Anaximander had prepared the way,? was in fact one of the great discoveries of Pythagoras, was taught by Parmenides, who was connected with the Pythagoreans, and remained for a long time the exclusive property of the Italian schools.? :

Whilst in virtue of his political sagacity and intellectual eminence Thales held a place in the traditional list of the wise men, on the strength of the disinterested love of knowledge which appeared in his physical speculations

he was accounted a “ philosopher” (¢:Ad- copos). His “philosophy” is usually summed up in the dogina “water is the principle, or the element, of things”; but, as the technical terms “ prineiple ” (apx4) and “element ” (oro:xetov) had not yet come into use, it may be conjectured that the phrase “ all things are water” (rdvra, #5wp éorf) more exactly represents his teaching. Writings which bore his name were extant in antiquity ; but, as Aristotle, when he speaks of Thales’s doctrine, always depends upon tradition, there can be little doubt that they were forgeries.

From Aristotle we learn (1) that Thales found in water the origin of things; (2) that he conceived the earth to float upon a sea of the elemental fluid ; (3) that he supposed all things to be full of gods; (4) that in virtue of the attraction exercised by the magnet he attributed to it a soul. Here our information ends. Aristotle’s suggestion that Thales was led to his fundamental dogma by observation of the part which moisture plays in the pro- duction and the maintenance of life, and Simplicius’s, that the impressibility and the binding power of water were perhaps also in his thoughts, are by admission purely conjectural. Simplicius’s further suggestion that Thales conceived the element to be modi- fied by thinning and thickening is plainly inconsistent with the statement of Theophrastus that the hypothesis in question was peculiar to Anaximenes. The assertion preserved by Stobeus that Thales recognized, together with the materia] clement ‘‘ water,” “mind,” which penetrates it and sets it in motion, is refuted by the precise testimony of Aristotle, who declares that the early physicists did not distinguish the moving cause from the material cause, and that before Hermotimus and Anaxagoras no one postulated a creative intelligence.

It would seem, then, that Thales sought amid the variety of things a single material cause ; that he found such a cause in one of the forms of matter most familiar to him, namely, water, and accordingly regarded earth and all that it contains as water vari- ously metamorphosed ; and that, asking himself no questions about the mauner of its transformation, he was content “to see in the forces of nature present deities ” (Zeller).

The doctrine of Thales was interpreted and developed in the course of three succeeding generations. First, Anaximander chose for what he called his

“principle” (épx4), not water, but a cor- poreal element intermediate between fire and air on the one hand and water and earth on the other. Next, Anaximenes, prefer- ring air, resolved its transformations into processes of thinning and thickening. Lastly, Heraclitus asserted the claims of fire, which he conceived to modify itself, not occasionally, but per- petually. Thus Thales recognized change, but was not careful to explain it; Anaximander attributed to change two directions ; Anaxinienes conceived the two sorts of change as rarefaction and condensation ; Heraclitus, perceiving that, if, as his predecessors had tacitly assumed, change was occasional, the interference of a moving cause was necessary, made change perpetual. Butall four agreed in tracing the variety of things to a single material cause, corporeal, endowed with qualities, and capable of self-transforma- tion. A new departure was taken by the Eleatic Parmenides (see vol. xviii. p. 315), who, expressly noting that, when Thales and his successors attributed to the supposed element changing qualities, they were untrue to the principle of monism, required that the superficial plurality of nature should be strictly distin- guished from its fundamental unity. Hence, whereas Thales and his successors had confounded the One, the element, and the Many, its modifications, the One and the Not-One or Many became with Parmenides matters for separate investigation. In this way two lines of inquiry originated. On the one hand Empedocles and Anaxagoras, abandoning the pursuit of the One, gave themselves to the scientific study of the Many; on the other Zeno, abandoning the pursuit of thc Many, gave himself to the dialectical study of the One. Both successions were doomed to failure; and the result was a scepticism from which the thought of Greece did not emerge until Plato, returning to Parmenides, declarcd the study of the Oue and the Many, jointly regarded, to be the true office of philo- sophy. Thus, meagre and futile as the doctrine of Thales was, all the Greek schools, with the solitary exception of that of Pythagoras, took their origin from it. Not in name only, but also in fact, Thales, the first of the Ionian physicists, was the founder of the philosophy of Greece.

¥ In likening the earth to a cylinder Anaximander recognized its circular figure in one direction.

See G. V. Schiaparelli, J Precursort di Copernico nell’ Antichita, p. 2, Milan, 1873.

Bibliography.—(A) GEOMETRICAL AND ASTRONOMICAL.—C, A. Bretschneider, Die Geomeirie u. die Geometer vor Euklides, Leipsic, 1870; HW. Hankel, Zur Geschichte der Mathematik, Leipsic, 1874; G.J. Allman, “ Greek Geometry from Thales to Euclid,” Hermathena, No. v., Dublin, 1877; M. Cantor, Vorlesungen tiber Geschichte der Mathematik, Leipsic, 1880; P. Tannery, ‘‘Thalés de Milet ce qu’il a emprunté & l’Egypte,” Revue Philosophique, March 1880; “ La Tradition touchant Pythagore, Cnopide, et Thalés,” Bull. des Sc. Math., May 1886; R. Wolf, Geschichte der Astronomie, Munich, 1877, (B) PutLosopnicaL.—E. Zeller, Die Philosophie d. Griechen, i. 168-183, Leipsic, 1876 (Presocratic Philosophy, i. 211-227, Lond., 1881); F. Ueberweg, Grundriss d. Gesch. d. Philosophie, §12, Berlin, 1871 (Hist. of Philosophy, Lond., 1880); T. Decker, De Thalete Milesio, Halle. 1865 ; A.B. Krische, Forschungen, pp. 34-42, Gittingen, 1840. (G. J. A.—H. JA.)

THALLIUM, one of the rarer elements of chemistry. Its discovery is one of the outcomes of Bunsen and Kirchhof’s method of spectrum analysis. When Crookes, in 1861, applied this method to the flue-dust produced in the roasting of a certain kind of pyrites he observed in its spectrum a green line foreign to all then known spectra, and concluded that his substance must contain a new element, to which he gave the name of thallium, from GadAés, a green twig. Crookes presumed that his thal- lium was something of the order of sulphur, selenium, or tellurium ; but Lamy, who anticipated him in isolating the new element, found it to be a metal. Our present knowledge of the chemistry of thallium is based chiefly upon the labours of Crookes.

The chemical character of thallium presents striking peculiarities. Dumas once called it the “ ornithorhynchus paradoxus of metals.” As an elementary substance, it is very similar in its mechanical and physical properties to lead ; like lead it forms an almost insoluble chloride and an insoluble iodide. But the hydroxide of thallium, in most of its properties, comes very close to those of the alkali metals ; it is strongly basilous, forms an insoluble chloroplatinate, and an alum strikingly similar to the

corresponding potassium compounds. Yet, unlike potas- sium or lead, it forms a feebly basic sesquioxide similar to manganic oxide, Mn,O..

Traces of thallium exist in many kinds of pyrites, as used for vitriolmaking. The only known mineral of which it forms an essential component is the “ crookesite” of Skrikerum, Smaland, Sweden, which, according to Norden- skidld, contains 33°3 of selenium, 45°8 of copper, 3°7 of silver, and 17:2 of thallium in 100 parts. Crookesite, however, is scarce. The best raw materials for the pre- paration of thallium are the flue-dusts produced indus- trially in the roasting of thalliferous pyrites and the “chamber muds” accumulating in vitriol-chambers wrought with such pyrites ; in both it is frequently associated with SELENIUM (q.v.). The flue-dust from the pyrites of Theux, near Spa (Belgium), according to Béttcher, contains 0°5 to 0°75 per cent. of thallium; that of the pyrites of Meggen, according to Carstanjen, as much as 3:5 per cent.; while that of the pyrites of Ruhrort yielded 1 per cent. of the pure chloride to Gunning.

For the extraction of the metal from chamber mud, the latter is boiled with water, which extracts the thallium as T],SO,. From the filtered solution the thallium is precipitated by addition of hydrochloric acid, as TICl, along, in general, with more or less of chloride of lead. The mixed chlorides are boiled down to dryness with oil of vitriol to convert them into sulphates, which are then separated by boiling watcr, which dissolves only the thallium salt. From the filtered solution the thallium is recovered, as such, by means of pure metallic zinc, or by electrolysis. The (approximately pure) metallic sponge obtained is washed, made compact by com- pression, fused in a porcelain crucible iu an atmosphere of hydro- gen, and cast into sticks. Methods for the final purification of the metal will easily be deduced from what follows.

The metal is bluish white; it is extremely soft but almost devoid of tenacity and elasticity. Its specific gravity is 11°86. It fuses at 290° C.; ata white heat it boils and cau be distilled in hydrogen gas. When heated in air it is readily oxidized, with forination of a reddish or violet vapour. When exposed to the air it readily draws a film of oxide; the tarnished metal when plunged into water reassumes its metallie lustre, the oxide film being quickly dissolved.

When kept in contact with water and air it is gradually converted into hydroxide, T1,OH,O or TIOH.

This hydrate, TIOH, most conveniently prepared by decomposing the solution of the sulphate with baryta water, crystallizes from its

solution in long yellow needles, TIOH or TIOH + H,0, which dissolve readily in water, forming an intensely alkaline solution, which acts asa caustic, like, for instance, potash-ley, and like it greedily absorbs carbonic acid from the atmosphere. But, unlike the alkalies, it readily loses its water at 100° C. and even at the ordinary tempera- ture, to pass into the state of anhydrous T1,0, which is black or black-violet. é

The chloride, TICI, is readily obtained from the solution of any thallous salt (¢.g., the sulphate), by addition of hydrochloric acid, as a white precipitate similar in appearance to chloride of silver, like which it turns violet in the light and fuses below redness into a (yellow) liquid which freezes into a horn-like flexible mass. The specific gravity of this ‘‘horn” thallium, as one might call it, is 7°02. One part of the precipitated chloride dissolves at 0° C. in 500 parts of water, and in 70 parts at 100° C. It is less soluble in dilute hydrochloric avid. Carbonate of soda solution dissolves it pretty freely.

The dodide, TII, is a yellow precipitate, which requires 16,000 parts of cold watcr and still more of solution of iodide of potassium for its solution.

The chloroplatinate, PtCl,Tl,, readily obtainable from thallous- salt solutions by addition of chloride of platinum (PtCl,H,), is a yellow precipitate soluble in no less than 15,600 parts of cold water.

The carbonate, T1,CO3, comes closer to the lithium compound than to any other ordinary carbonate. It forms resplendent monoclinic prisms, soluble at 18°C. in 19°1 and at 100° in 4°46 parts of water. A stable bicarbonate, TIHCOg, does exist.

The sulphate, T1,5O,, forms rhombic prisms isomorphous with K,SO,. It dissolves at 18° C. in 20°8 and at 101° in 5-2 parts of water. It unites with

vitriol into an acid salt, TIHSO,3H,0, and with sulphate of alumina into an ‘‘alum,” Al,(SO,),TI,SO, 24H,0.

Thallic salts are related to thallous pretty much as manganic are to manganous. The chloride, TICl,, is obtained as a solution by passing chlorine into a suspension of thallous chloride in water. The solution, when evaporated in vacwo, deposits colourless crystals, TICl,H,O. For the oxide, if chlorine be passed into a solution of thallous chloride in carbonate of soda a brown precipitate is produced, which, after drying, has the composition Tl,0, H,0. When heated with strong hydrochloric acid it evolves chlorine and yields TIC1; when heated with oil of vitriol it yields oxygen gas and thallous sulphate. Thallic sulphate, however, does exist,—in erystals, T1,(SO,)3+7H,O, soluble in dilute sulphuric acid, but decomposed by water, with precipitation of hydrated T1,0s.

Analysis. —All thallium compounds volatile or liable to dissocia- tion at the temperature of the flame of a Bunsen lamp impart to such flame an intense green colour, The spectrum consists of only one line, which, of course, has a definite position in the spectrum, and consequently is easily identified,—a most delicate test.

From solutions containing it as thallous salt the metal is easily precipitated as chloride, iodide, or chloroplatinate by the corre- sponding reagents (see supra). Sulphuretted hydrogen, in the presence of free mineral acid, gives no precipitate; sulphide of amnionium, from neutral solutions, precipitates T],S as a dark brown or black precipitate, insoluble in excess of reagent. Thallic salts are easily reduced to thallous by means of solution of sulphur- ous acid, and thus rendered amenable to the above reactions.

The atomic weight of thallium was determined very carefully by Crookes. He found it Tl=204°2,—O being 16. (W. D.)

THAMES, the most important river in Great Britain, has its source in several streams on the Gloucestershire border, the main one having its rise in the parish of Coates, 3 miles south-west of Cirencester. The upper part of the river, until the junction with the Thame near Dorchester, is generally called the Isis, a usage to which Camden per- haps gave currency, who derives the word Tamesis or Thames from the junction of the names of the

two rivers, the Thame and Isis. The total length of the river from Thames Head to London Bridge is 170 miles, and to Sheer- ness 228 miles. It drains an area of 6100 miles. It be- comes navigable 24 miles from its source, near Lechlade, its waters having been greatly augmented by the junction of the Colne, Leach, and Churn ; here also is the junction with the Thames and Severn Canal. The height of its source above sea-level is 370 feet, and that of the stream at Lechlade 250 feet, the average fall between Lechlade and London Bridge (146 miles) being 21 inches per mile. The course is remarkably equable throughout. Above Teddington, 19 miles from London Bridge, the tidal wave may be said to cease, and thence up to Lechlade naviga- tion is carried on by the aid of locks. A small steamer

plies as high as Oxford. While at Lechlade the daily flow of the ordinary summer level is about 100 million gallons, the flow at Teddington is about 380 million gallons. There are seven hours of ebb tide and five hours of flow tide, From the Nore to London Bridge, a distance of 40 miles, the tidal wave travels in two hours, and in other two hours it reaches Teddington. The width of the river at Ted- dington is 250 feet, and at London Bridge the width at high tide is 800 feet, the depth being 30 feet, while at low tide the width is 650 feet and the depth 12 feet. Large barges can ascend the river 150 miles above London Bridge, vessels of 200 tons as high as the bridge, and of 400 tons to the Pool, below which, at Irongate and St Katherine’s wharf, deep-sea steamer navigation commences, while vessels of any tonnage can come as high as Deptford.

The Thames leaves the Gloucestershire and Wiltshire border near Buscot, after which it separates successively Berks and Oxford, Berks and Bucks, Middlesex and Surrey, and, finally, at its estuary, Essex and Kent. Below Lechlade it has a winding course, passing near Farringdon and Bampton. After receiving the Windrush, it passes near the grounds of Blenheim, whence it receives from the left the Evenlode, and at Oxford it receives from the left the Cher- well. It then flows in a southerly direction to Abingdon, where it receives on the right the Ock from the valley of the White Horse, and has a junction with the Wilts and Berks Canal. Turning in

an easterly direction it is joined, about a mile after passing Dor- chester, by its principal aftluent the Thame. Thence, through an opening of the Chiltern Hills, it passes Bensington, and turns southwards by Wallingford and Reading, where it receives the Kennet from the right. It then bends northward to Henley, east-

‘ward to Great Marlow, and southward to Maidenhead, where it

reccives from the right the Loddon. Winding in a south-easterly direction it passes Eton, Windsor, Datchet, Staines, and Chertsey, receiving at Staines the Colne from the left. Flowing through the. grounds of Hampton Court it reaches Kingston and Teddington, where its bulk is increased by the tidal wave. From Richmond, where it receives the Mole, it begins to pass the villas and suburbs of London. At Gravesend, 27 miles below London, it has a width of half a mile, and at the Nore lighthouse, 50 miles below London Bridge, the estuary widens to nearly 10 miles. In the tidal reaches the principal affluents of the Thames are the Mole at Richmond, the Brent at Brentford, the Wandle at Wandsworth, the Lea at Blackwall, the Roding at Barking Creek, the Ingrebourne at Rain- ham, and the Medway at Sheerness. The land adjoining the river is greatly subject to floods, and from above London there were in ancient times wide stretches of marsh land covered by shallow lagoons. The embankments below London Bridge date possibly from the time of the Romans, but their origin is the subject of much dispute (see LoNDON, vol. xiv. p. 840). Between London Bridge and Chelsea the bed of the river has been altered artificially, and flooding is prevented by a marine wall (see Lonpon, vol. xiv. p. 823). The Thames occupies the bed of a much larger prehis- toric river, the gravels of which adjoin its banks at a considerable distance.

The scenery, though scarcely to be called picturesque, and ina certain sense monotonous, has a peculiar charm from the richness of its sylvan beauty and its pleasant alternation of hill and dale. The number of islands that occur in the course of the river add to its interest, and afford convenient seclusion for the erection of boat- houses and tents. The Thames vies with the Tyne as the principal river for boat-racing in England, and of course greatly surpasses the latter river as regards amateur boat-racing, the principal fixtures in which are the Oxford and Cambridge boat race and the

Henley regatta. The river affords about one half of the water supply of London, and is the principal outlet for its sewage. It is under the government of conscrvators, originally constituted in 1857, but

their duties have been extended by several subsequent Acts.

See The River Thames from Oxford to the Sea, 1859; Cassell's Royal River (richly illustrated), 1885 ; Huxley's Phystography, 1877; and Dickens's Dictionary of the Thames.

THANA, or TANNA, a district in Bombay presidency, India, with an area of 4243 square miles, lying between 18° 42' and 20° 20' N. lat. and 72° 45' and 73° 48' E. long. It extends along the coast for 105 miles, with a breadth of 50 miles, and is confined between the Sahyddri Ghats on the E. and the sea on the W., while on the N. it is bounded by the Portuguese territory of Daman and by Surat district, and on the S. by Koldba and Poona districts. The district is well watered and wooded, and, except in the north-east, is a low-lying rice tract broken by hills. The spurs of the Ghats form health resorts ; the two most

_——— +8 oe

conspicuous hills are Matheran and Tungar. Most of the hills were once fortified, but the forts built on them are now dilapidated and useless. The only rivers of any importance are the Vaitarna and the Ulhds, the former being navigable to a distance of about 20 miles from its mouth ; the latter is also navigable in parts for small craft. There are no lakes ; but the Vehdr and the Tulsi, formed artificially, supply Bombay city with water. The forests, lying chiefly in the northern half of the district, occupy 1664 square miles, or about 40 per cent. of the total area. The average annual rainfall exceeds 90 inches.

In 1881 the population of Thana was returned at 908,548 (males 468,236, females 440,312); Hindus numbered 806,805, Moham- medans 42,391, and Christians 39,545. The district has seven towns with populations exceeding 10,000, namely, Bandra (14,987), THANA (see below), Bhiwandi (13,837),

Kalyan (12,910), Bassein (10,357), Panvel(10,351), Uran (10,149). Thearea under cultivation in 1885-86 was 1,002, 448 acres, and 768,057 remained uncultivated. The total area of crops was 522,810 acres, including 5835 twice cropped. Rice is by far the most important product, and occupied 324,680 acres; it is also the chief article of export. Sugar-cane and plantains are cultivated largely, as well as mangoes and cocoa-nuts. In 1885-86 the gross revenue of the district was £245,182, the land yielding £130,409. The territory comj-rised in the district of Thana formed part of the dominions of the peshw4, and was

t

annexed by the British in 1818 on the overthrow of Baji rao. Since then the operations to put down the Koli robbers, which extended over several years, have been the only cause of serious trouble, and lately, in 1874 and 1877, there were a number of gang robberies which were suppresscd, but not without difficulty.

THANA, chief town of the above district and a station on the Great Indian Peninsula Railway, lies 20 miles north- east of Bombay city, in 19° 11’ 30” N. lat. and 73° 1’ 30” E. long., and in 1881 had a population of 14,456 (males 7856, females 6600). It is a municipal town and a port, and contains a civil hospital and post-office.

THANE, or Taecn. See EnGuanp, vol. viii. p. 274; and Nosiuity, vol. xvii. p. 529.

THAPSACUS. See Mrsoporama, vol. xvi. p. 49.

THAR AND PARKAR, or Tour anp Parker, a dis- trict in the east of Sind, Bombay presidency, India, with an area of 12,729 square miles. It lies between 24° 13’ and 26° 15’ N. lat. and between 68° 51′ and 71° 8’ E. long., and is bounded on the N. by Khaipur state, on the E. by the states of Jaisalmir, Malani, and J odhpur, on the W. by Hyderabad district, and on the S. by the Runn of Cutch. The district is divided into two portions. The western part, called the “ Pat,” is watered by the Eastern Nara and the Mithrau canals, which constitute the sole water-system of the district, and the presence of water has created a quantity of jungle and marsh ; the other

part, called the “Thar,” is a desert tract of rolling sand-hills, running north-east and south-west, composed of a fine but slightly coherent sand. To the south-east of Thar is Parkar, where there are ranges of rocky hills, rising to 350 feet above the surrounding level, and open plains of stiff clay. The Parkar portion of the district contains the ruins of several old temples ; one of these is a Jain temple, which con- tained an idol of great sanctity and repute, known under the name of Gorcha. The climate is subject to consider- able extremes in temperature, being excessively hot in the summer and very cold in winter, the cold increasing as the sand-hills are approached.

The census of 1881 returned the population at 203,344 (males 112,400, females 90,944); Hindus numbered 43,755, Moham- medans 109,924, and Christians only 14. Umarkot, the birth- place of Akbar, is the chief town, with a population of 2828. The chief products of the district are rice, joar, bajri, cotton, and oil seeds. It is estimated that only 45 per cent. of the arable area 1s under cultivation. The exports are chiefly rice, wheat, oil-seeds, cattle, goats, and sheep; the imports consist of cotton, metals, dried fruits, piece goods, sugar, and tobacco. The manufactures are chiefly blankets, camel saddles, and coarse cotton cloth. The Imperial revenue in 1885-86 amounted to £44,313, of which the land supplied £32,927.

Very little is known of the early history of the district, The

Soda Rajputs, said to be descendants of Parmar Soda, are supposed to have come into this part of Sind about 1226, when they quickly displaced the rulers of the country, though, according to other authorities, they did not conquer the country from the Sumras, the dominant race, before the beginning of the 16th century. The local dynasty:of the Sodas succumbed to the Kalhoras about 1750, since which period the district has been subject more or less to Sind. The Talpur mirs succeeded the Kalhoras, and built a number of forts to overawe the people, who were lawless and addicted to robbery. On the British conquest of Sind in 1843 the greater part of the district was made over to Cutch; and in 1856 it was wholly incorporated in the province of Sind. In 1859 a rebellion broke out, which was quickly suppressed.

THARRAWADDY, a district in the Pegu division of Burmah, with an area of 2014 square miles. It lies between 17° 30’ and 18° 40’ N. lat. and between 95° 20’ and 96° 10’ E. long., and is bounded on the N. by Prome, on the E. by the Pegu Yoma range, on the S. by Hantha- waddy, and on the W. by Henzada. The Pegu Yoma range separates Tharrawaddy from Toungti district, and forms the water-parting between the rivers Irrawaddy and Sittang; there are also many small elevations. The Irrawaddy, which traverses the district for 46 miles, is the principal navigable river. Another important river is the Hlaing, which runs through the district from north to south, receiving from the east, through numerous channels, the drainage of the Pegu Yoma Mountains, which fertilizes the plain on its eastern bank. There are twenty-three teak forests and four fuel reserves in the district, covering an area of 817 square miles. Among the wild animals generally found in the mountains are the elephant, rhinoceros, bison, and various kinds of feathered game.

In 1881 the population was returned at 278,155 (males 143,413, females 134,742), of whom 1985 were Hindus, 1110 were Mohani- medans, 270,552 were Buddhists, whilst Christians and aborigines numbered 2363 and 2135 respectively. The area under cultivation in 1885-86 comprised 323,542 acres, and that available for cultiva- tion 186,002 acres; forests occupied 364,524 acres. The chief pro- ducts of the district are rice, sesamum, tobacco, sugar-cane, cotton, and fruits. The gross revenue of Tharrawaddy in 1885-86 was £85,254, of which the land yielded £51,523. The history of the district is identical with that of Hmnzapa (¢.0.). Tharrawaddy was formed in 1878 out of that portion of Henzada lying east of the Irrawaddy. Its headquarters are at Thoon-tshay, on the stream of the same name.

THASOS, an island in the north of the Agean Sea, off the coast of Thrace, 3} miles distant from the plain of the river Nestus (now the Kara-Su). The island was colonized at an early date by Phcenicians, attracted probably by its gold mines ; they founded a temple of Hercules, which still existed in the time of Herodotus. Thasus, son of Phcenix, is said to have been the leader of the Phcenicians, and to have given his name to the island. In 720 or 708 B.C. Thasos received a Greek colony from Paros. In a war which the Parian colonists waged with the Saians, a Thracian tribe, the poet Archilochus

threw away his shield. The Greeks extended their power to the mainland, where they owned gold mines which were even more valuable than those on the island. From these sources the Thasians drew great wealth, their annual revenues amounting to 200 or even 300 talents. Herodotus, who visited Thasos, says that the best mines on the island were those which had been opened by the Pheenicians on the east side of the island, facing Samothrace. After the capture of Miletus (494 B.c.) Histizus laid siege to Thasos. The attack failed, but, warned by the danger, the Thasians employed their revenues to build war ships and strengthen their fortifications. This excited the suspicions of the Persians, and Darius compelled them to surrender their ships and pull down their walls. After the defeat of Xerxes the Thasians joined the Greek confederacy ; but afterwards (in 467, 465, or 464, according to different calculations), on account of a difference about the mines and marts on the mainland, they revolted. The Athenians defeated

them by sea, and, after a siege that lasted more than two years, took the capital, Thasos, and compelled the Thasians to destroy their walls, surrender their ships, pay an indemnity and an annual contribution, and resign their possessions on the mainland. In 411 B.c., at the time of the oligarchical revolution at Athens, Thasos again revolted from Athens and received a Lacedeemonian governor ; but in 407 the partisans of Lacedeemon were expelled, and the Athenians under Thrasybulus were admitted. After the battle of ASgospotami (405 3.c.), Thasos again fell into the hands of the Lacedzmonians ; but the Athenians must have recovered it, for it formed one of the subjects of dispute between them and Philip of Macedonia. In the embroilment between Philip III. of Macedonia and the Romans, Thasos submitted to Philip, but received its freedom at the hands of the Romans after the battle of Cynoscephale (197 8.c.), and it was still a “ free ” state in the time of Pliny. Thasos, the capital, stood on the north side of the island, and had two harbours, one of which was closed. Archilochus described Thasos as “‘an ass’s backbone crowned with wild wood,” and the description still suits the mountainous island with its forests of fir. The highest mountain, Ipsario, is 3428 feet high. Besides its gold mines, the wine, nuts, and marble of Thasos were well known in antiquity. The mines

and marble quarries are no longer worked ; and the chief exports are now fir timber for shipbuilding, olive oil, honey, and wax. The imports consist of manufactured goods, beasts of burden, and corn, for the island is too mountainous to grow enough corn for the inhabitants.

In 1858 the population, distributed in ten villages, was estimated at 10,000. The people are Greek Christians, and do not differ in appearance from the inhabitants of the other Greek islands. The villages are mostly situated at some distance from the sca; for the island suffered from pirates up to a time within living memory. In the early part of this century sentinels stood on duty night and day, and at a signal of alarm the whole population, including the Turkish aga himself, used to hide in the woods. For a description of the island and its remains of antiquity, see A. Conze, Reise auf den Inseln des thrakischen Meeres, Hanover, 1860.

THAYETMYO, a district in the Irrawaddy division of Burmah, having an area of 2397 square miles, and lying between 18° 50’ and 19° 30’ N. lat. and between 94° 30’ and 95° 50’ E. long. It is bounded on the N. by the newly acquired territory of Burmah, on the E. by Tounga district, on the S. by Prome, and on the W. by Sandoway. On the west is the Arakan Yoma range, and on the east the Pegu Yoma; and the face of the country, where it does not rise into mountains, is everywhere broken by low ranges of hills, many of which are barren and destitute of all vegetation. The greater part of the district is wooded, and the Yomas east and west are covered with forests now mostly preserved. The chief river is the Irrawaddy, which traverses Thayetmyo from north to south. The country is well drained ; the drainage finds its way to the Irra- waddy by three main streams (the Pwon, Ma-httn, and Ma-de) on the west, and by two (the Kye-nee and Bhwot- lay) on the east. Several salt and hot springs occur in many localities of the district ; petroleum is also found, and extensive lime quarries exist a few miles south of Thayetmyo. The principal wild animals are leopards, wild cats, barking deer, elephants, rhinoceroses, tigers, black bears, and wild hogs. Silver pheasants and partridges are found in large numbers, especially in the mountains.

In 1881 the number of inhabitants in the district was 169,560 (males 87,308, females 82,252); Hindus numbered 2620, Moham- medans 1861,

Christians 2849, and Buddhists 148,629. The chief town is Thayetmyo, with a population (1881) of 16,097; itis situated in 19° 18’ 43” N. lat. and 95° 15’ 40” E. long., on the right bank of the Irrawaddy. Of the total area of 1,534,080 acres, only 108,167 were under cultivation in 1885-86 ; 547,631 were avail-

able for cultivation ; and forests occupied 256,256 acres. The chief products are rice, cotton, oil seeds, and tobacco ; cutch is also very

abundant, and the manufacture of the dye-stuff is carried on exten- sively. Coal has recently been found in the district, and earth oil- wells exist, but neither coal nor oil has yet been extracted in any quantity. The revenue of the district in 1885-86 was returned at £36,702, of which the land contributed £10,482. On the annexa- tion of Pegu by the British in 1852-53, Thayetmyo was formed into a subdivision of Prome district ; and in 1870 it was erected into a separate jurisdiction and placed under a deputy-commissioner.

THEATRE (6éazpov, ‘a place for seeing,” from Oedop.a). The invention of a building specially devised for dramatic representations was due to the Athenians (see Drama). At first representations at the Dionysiac festivals were held on temporary wooden platforms; an accident, however, which occurred in 500 B.c. induced the Athenians to begin the construction of a permanent building. This first theatre was not completed till 340 B.c., and during the interval a large number of theatres, designed on the same model, had been erected in many towns of Greece and Asia Minor, though in some cases, as at Sparta, they were used for assemblies of the people and dances rather than for dramatic performances. The great Dionysiac theatre at Athens was placed in the Lenzeum, an enclosure sacred to Dionysus, and its auditorium is scooped out of the rock at the base of the Acropolis on its south-east side. A similar position on the slope of a hill was always chosen by the Greeks, and it was not till the Ist century B.o. that theatres were built by the Romans on a level site. .

Uf ALT

FPA A | 4 | | i

F fi | Ke) i

ELATESA TENTED | PAI \|

i) i il i Bie he alle | ee oh 40 50 190130 200 FEET

in the south-east of Lycia, which, though late in date, is built after the old Greek model.! The seats for the cavity excavated in the hill-side, the spectators was | called the xotAov | slope is an encirc- Fig, 2.—Section showing the Seats A, —with B, ling passage (8ud- place for spectators' feet. level behind the top row of seats ran a colonnade, form- ing a covered passage with a gallery at the top. Rows these niches a series of large bronze jars (jxeta) were set: they were intended to catch and repeat the reverberation

I—=—WN SANTANA aH NST STI

Mil | E i i NN

oT ie ae iy ep? a

Fig. 1.—Plan of the Theatre at Myra.

Fig. 1 shows the plan of the existing theatre at Myra, audience are arranged in concentric tiers, rising like steps one above the other (see fig. 2); these mainly rest on a and the whole space occupied by (Lat.cavea). About half-way up the faa, precinctio). Flights of steps divide the seats into wedge-shaped blocks (kepxiSes, cunei). At the highest of niches were formed in the back wall of this, and also sometimes in the low wall encircling the duaZwpa; In of the voices from the stage. Vitruvius (iii, 5) gives

1 See Texier and Pullan, Asia Minor, London, 1865.

THEATRE

elaborate directions for the construction of these vases, which were to be tuned in a chromatic scale ;1 he mentions their use by the Greeks, but says he knows of no Roman theatre which possessed these vases, the real utility of which is very problematical. The segmental floor space in a Greek theatre was called the épyyotpa (orchestra), and was occupied by the chorus ; in the centre of this was the Overy, a platform slightly raised on steps, in the middle of which was an altar to Dionysus. The stage (xpockijviov, proscenium) was a narrow platform, raised 3 to 5 feet above the orchestra, with which it communicated by stairs, so that the chorus could move from one place to the other; the central part of the stage, where the principal actors usually stood, was the Aoyetov (pulpitum). The stage was also connected with a chamber under it (érocKyjmov) by a flight of stairs called yapwvioe xAipaxes, by which ghosts ascended. At the back of the stage was a lofty wall, which usually reached to the level of the colounade behind the highest row of seats; this was the oxyvy (scena), in which were three doors leading into the stage from the actors' dressing-rooms behind it.? This wall was usually decorated with three orders of columns and entablatures, forming an architectural fagade, which represented a palace or temple, before which the action of the play was supposed to take place. Other movable wooden scenery was in some cases added in front of the permanent scena ; or curtains with woven or embroidered figures were hung against it to form a background to the actors (aapa- meracpa Or aidaiar, aulea or siparium). More elaborate painted scenes were also used, but, according to Aristotle (Poet., iv. 16), not before the time of Sophocles. Various kinds of machinery were used, such as the pyxavy, to suspend in the air an actor who was playing the part of a god descending from heaven;* and the Apovrefov, an apparatus to imitate thunder by stones rolled in metal jars, probably in the ghost-chamber under the stage. Women were not excluded from the Greek tragic drama, but appear to have sat by themselves in the upper rows of seats (Atheneeus, xii. 534).° At least in late times the chief priestesses of Athens occupied marble thrones in the zpoeSpéa or front row.

The remains of the Dionysiac theatre at Athens, the prototype of all later theatres, were excavated in 1862, when the proscenium, orchestra, and lower rows of seats were found in a fair state of preservation. It must have held 30,000 people: the cavea reaches from the foot of the Acropolis hill to

close under the upper circuit wall. The rock-cut cavern, which was faced with the choragic monument to Thrasyllus (320 B.c.), seems to have opened behind the highest row of seats; the face of the rock is here scarped to a curve concentric with the lines of seats. The most interesting discovery was that of a row of 67 marble thrones in the front row, each inscribed with the name of one of the chief Athenian priests or with that of a secular official. The cavea was divided into 13 cunei F

1 The well-preserved theatre at Tauromenium, in Sicily, still has these niches, which are contrived in the dwarf wall on which the columns of the upper gallery stood.

- Earthenware vases, which are sometimes found under the floors of medizval church stalls, were probably placed there through a mistaken notion that this was carrying out Vitruvius's recommendation.

- The central door, used by the chief actor, was "the royal door." Hence the Roman proverbial phrase, "deus ex machina,"

This is shown by Jacobs, Verm, Schriften, iv. p. 272, and Passow in Zimmermann's Zeitschr. J. d. Alterth., 1837, No, 29.

§ These thrones are of various dates, ranging from the reign of Augustus or even earlier to that of Hadrian; see Papers of the American School of Classical Studies at Athens, vol. i, p. 123. Similar Greek theatre seats of earlier date still exist in the choirs of some churches in Rome, where they were once used for the episcopal or celebrant's throne. These were probably brought to Rome during the imperial period for use in the Roman theatres or amphitheatres. The finest example of pure Hellenic work is in 8. Pietro in Vincoli ' it is decorated with delicate honeysuckle scroll-work in relief,

5

a low wall separated the auditorium from the orchestra. The front or "riser" of the stage is decorated with fine relicfs of deities on large marble slabs. These existing features are mostly restorations of the time of Hadrian, but

the reliefs themselves are of much earlier date. The floor of the orchestra is very late, formed of roughly laid slabs of stone, with a large central lozenge in marble, which may mark the limits of the thymele, and is apparently part of an earlier pavement.

The position of the Dionysiac theatre, with many of the chief temples of Athens in sight, and with its glorious view of Mount Hymettus, the blue waters of the Aigean Sea, and the islands of Salamis and A®gina, should not be forgotten in reading the dramas of the great tragedians, with their impassioned appeals to the glories of nature and their allusions to the protective presence of the divine patrons of Attica,

Outside Athens the largest Greek theatres were those at Megalopolis (Paus., viii. 32), Cnidus, Syracuse, Argos, and Epidaurus. By the end of the 4th century B.c. every important Hellenic city possessed its theatre, and new ones were built or old ones restored throughout the whole period of Roman domination. The most perfect existing example is that at Aspendus in Pamphylia,' a building of the 2d century of our era, in which the early Greek model has been closely followed. Aspendus is the only place where the whole scena with its three orders of columns is still standing, and every row of seats exists in almost perfect condition. In this theatre the whole interior appears to have been covered by an awning,® supported along the top of the scena by wooden poles set in rows of perforated corbels like those on the Colosseum in Rome. The earlier Greek theatres were probably unsheltered from the sun. Next to Aspendus, the theatre of Tauromenium, in Sicily (see Taormina), is the best preserved, at least as far as regards the scena and the upper gallery round the cavea. That at Myra, in Lycia (fig. 1), is also in good preservation.

The Roman Theatre.—In the main the theatres of the Romans were copied closely from those of the Greeks, but in the Greek theatre the orchestra occu- pied more than a semicircle, while the Romans made it ex- actly half a circle. The accompanying diagrams (see fig. 3) show the principle on which the plan of each was set out.® The Romans also introduced another important change, in many cases con- structing theatres on a level site, not scooped out of a hill- side as in the case of Hellenic theatres, This necessitated an elaborate arrange- ment of substruc- tures, with raking

vaults to carry the seats of the cavea, and also an additional visible facade with tiers of arches following the semicircle of the auditorium. The design universally adopted for this appears to have been tiers, usually three in number, of open arches, with intermediate

Fie. 3,—Diagram to show the Principle on which the Plans of the Greek aud Roman Theatre were set out,

” See Texier and Pullan, Asia Minor, London, 1865. 8 There was also a wooden pent-roof corbelled out over the stage. ® See Vitruvius, iii. 8 (Greek theatre) and iii, 2 to 7 (Roman).

engaged columns, each tier being of a different order, as is still to be seen in the remains of the theatre of Marcellus in Rome! The development of the use of the stone arch, and still more the use of concrete for forming vaults, enabled the Romans to erect their theatres on any site. Those in Rome were placed in the level plain of the Campus Martius.

During the Republican period the erection of permanent theatres with seats for the spectators was thought to savour of Greek luxury and to be unworthy of the stern simplicity of the Roman citizens. Thasin 154 B.c. Scipio Nasica induced the senate to demolish the first stone theatre which had been begun by C. Cassius Longinus (“tanquam inutile et nociturum publicis moribus,” Liv., Epit.. 48). Even in 55 3.c., when Pompey began the theatre of which remains still exist in Rome, he thought it wise to place a shrine to Venus Victrix at the top of the cavea, as a sort of excuse for having stone seats below it— the seats theoretically serving as steps to reach the temple. This theatre, which was completed in 52 B.c., is spoken of by Vitruvius as “the stone theatre” par excellence: it is said in the Regionary catalogues to have held 40,000 people. It was also used as an amphitheatre for the bloody shows in which the Romans took greater pleasure than in the purer intellectual enjoyment of the drama. At its inauguration 500 lions and 20 elephants were killed by gladiators. Near it two other theatres were erected, one begun by Julius Cxsar and finished by Augustus in 13 B.c.,

under the name of his nephew Marcellus,' and another built about the same date by Cornelius Balbus (Suet., Aug., 29; Pliny, H. W., xxxvi. 16). Scanty re- mains exist of this last theatre, but the ruins of the theatre of Marcellus are among the most imposing of the buildings of ancient Rome.

A long account is given by Pliny (7. W., xxxvi. 2 and 24) of a most. magnificent temporary theatre built by the eedile M. Aumilius Scaurus in 58 B.c. It is said to have held the incredible number of 80,000 people, and was a work of the most costly splendour. Still less credible is the account which Pliny gives (H. WV., xxxvi. 24) of two wooden theatres built by C. Curio in 50 3.c., which were made to revolve on pivots, so that the two together could form an amphitheatre in the afternoon, after having been used as two separate theatres in the morning.

In some cases the Romans built two theatres close together, one for the Greek and the other for the Latin drama, as is the case at Hadrian's magnificent villa near Tivoli. The two theatres at Pompeii are still well pre- served, and all Roman provincial towns of any importance seem to have possessed at least one theatre, designed with the semicircular orchestra after the Roman fashion (see fig. 3). The theatres built under the Roman rule in Hellenic cities seem, on the other hand, to have been usually constructed on the old Greek model, probably because they were designed by Greek architects. This is the case at Tauromenium, Aspendus, and Myra see (fig. 1). An important exception to this rule is the still well- preserved theatre of Herodes Atticus, at the south-west angle of the Athenian Acropolis, which has a semicircular orchestra. It was built in the reign of Hadrian by Herodes Atticus? a very wealthy Greek, who spent enormous sums in beautifying the city of Athens; he called it the Regillum, after his wife Regilla. Its cavea,

1 This design was also adopted for their amphitheatres, such as the colossea of Rome and Capua, the plan of which resembles the cavea of two theatres set together so as to enclose an oval space.

2 According to Livy (xl. 51), the theatre of Marcellus was built on the site of an earlier one erected by Aimilius Lepidus.

8 This theatre was not begun when Pausanias wrote his book Aética, and was complete when he wrote the Achaica (see Paus., vii. 20). It is illustrated in Mon. Inst., vi., plate 16.

PHATE E

which is excavated in the rock, held about 6000 people; it was connected with the great Dionysiac theatre by a long and lofty porticus or stoa, of which considerable remains still exist, probably a late restoration of the stoa built by Eumenes II. of Pergamum. In the Roman theatre the “orchestra” was occupied, not by the chorus, but by senators and other persons of rank (Vitr., i. 6).4 The Romans used scenery and stage effects of more elaboration than was the custom in Greece. Vitruvius (iii. 7) mentions three sorts of movable scenery:—(1) for the tragic drama, fagades with columns represent- ing public buildings ; (2) for comic plays, private houses with practicable windows and balconies ;> and (3) for the satyric drama, rustic scenes, with mountains, caverns, and trees.

The Modern Theatre.—During the Middle Ages miracle plays with sacred scenes were the favourite kind of drama ; no special buildings were erected for these, as they were represented either in churches or in temporary booths. In the 16th century the revival of the secular drama, which, in the reign of Elizabeth, formed so im- portant a part of the literature of England, was carried on in tents, wooden sheds, or courtyards of inns, mostly by strolling actors of a very low class. It was not till towards the close of the century that a permanent building was constructed and licensed for dramatic representations, under the management of Shakespeare and Burbage.® In

4 The pit and stalls in a modern theatre occupy an analogous position,

5 These are shown on Greco-Roman vases of the latest type, with paintings of burlesque parodies of mythological stories.

6 The first building specially erected in London for dramatic purposes was built in 1576-77 by the actor James Burbage, who was originally a carpenter by trade. Jt was constructed of timber, and stood in Holywell Lane, Shoreditch, till 1598, when it was pulled down; it was known as “The

Theatre” par excellence. Of almost equally early date was the ‘‘Curtain” theatre, also in Shoreditch ; many explanations of its name have been given, but the real one uppears to be that it was so called from the plot of ground, known as ‘©The Curten,” on which it stood. It probably continued iu use till the general closing of theatres by order of the parliament in 1642.

The “Globe”? theatre, famous for its association with Shakespeare, was built by James Burbage, who used the materials of “‘ The Theatre, ie in the year 1598, Its site was in Southwark, in a district called “The Bankside,” near the old “Bear Gardens.” It was an octagonal structure of wood, with lath and plaster between the main framework. Tt was burnt in 1613, rebuilt, and finally pulled down and its site built over in 1644. Its name was derived from its sign of Atlas sup- porting the globe. Near it were two less important theatres, “The Rose,” opened in 1592 by Henslowe, and ‘‘The Swan,” opened in 1598 and probably owncd also by Henslowe ; like the Globe, it was an octagonal wood-and-plaster building.

The ‘‘ Blackfriars” theatre, another of the Burbages’ ventures, was built in 1596 (not 1576, as stated by Collier, Hist. of Dramatic Poetry and Annals of the Stage, new ed., 1879, vol. i. p. 287), near the old Dominican friary. ‘The ‘‘ Fortune” theatre was built by Edward Alleyn, the great rival of the Burbages, in 1599-1600, at a total cost, including the site, of £1320. It stood between Whitecross Street and Golding Lane. It existed as late as 1819, when a drawing of it was given by Wilkinson (Londina illustrata, 1819). The ‘*Red Bull” theatre was probably originally the galleried court of an inn, which was adapted for dramatic purposes towards the close of Elizabeth’s reign. Other early theatres were the “Hope” or “ Paris Garden” theatre, the ‘‘ Whitefriars ” and ‘‘ Salisbury Court ” theatres, and the “ Newington” theatre. A curious panoramic view of London, engraved by Visscher in 1616, shows the Globe, the Hope, and the Swan theatres.

The plan of the first English theatres appears to have had no con- nexion with those of classical times, as was the case in Italy: it was evidently produced in an almost accidental way by the early custom of erecting a temporary platform or stage in the middle of the open court- yard of au inn, in which the galleries all round the court formed boxes for the chief spectators, while the poorer part of the audience stood in the court on all

sides of the central stage. Something similar to this arrangement, unsuitable though it now seems, was reproduced even in buildings, such as the Globe, the Fortune, and the Swan, which were specially designed for the drama. In these and other early theatres there was a central platform for the stage, surrounded by seats except on one side, where there was 4 “oreen-room ~ oF

THEATRE

the 16th and 17th centuries a favourite kind of theatrical representation was in the form of “masques,” with pro- cessions of grotesquely attired actors and temporary scenic effects of great splendour and mechanical ingenuity. In the reigns of James J. and Charles I. Ben Jonson and the architect Inigo Jones worked together in the production of these ‘“ masques,” Jonson writing the words and Inigo Jones devising the scenic effects, the latter being very costly and complicated, with gorgeous buildings, land- scapes, and clouds or mountains, which opened to display mimic deities, thrown into relief by coloured lights, These masques were a form of opera, in which Ben Jonson’s words were set to music. Ben Jonson received no more for his libretto than Inigo Jones did for his scenic devices, and was not unnaturally annoyed at the secondary place which he was made to occupy: he therefore revenged himself by writing severe satires on Inigo Jones and the system which placed the literary and mechanical parts of the opera on the same footing. In an autograph MS. which still exists this satirical line occurs—“ Painting and carpentry are the soul of masque” (see Cunningham, Life of Inigo Jones, London, 1848).

In Italy, during the 16th century, the drama occupied a more important position, and several theatres were erected, professedly on the model of the classic theatre of Vitruvius. One of these, the Teatro Olimpico at Vicenza, still exists; it was designed by Palladio, but was not completed till 1584, four years after his death. It has an architectural scena, with various orders of columns, rows of statues in niches, and the three doors of the classic theatre, but the whole is painted with strong perspective effects which are very unclassical in spirit. Scamozzi, Palladio’s pupil, who completed the Teatro Olimpico, built another pseudo-classical theatre in 1588 at Sabbionetta for the duke Vespasiano Gonzaga, but this does not now exist.

In France the miracle play developed into the secular drama rather earlier than in England. In the reign of Louis XI., about 1467, the “Brothers of the Passion ” had a theatre which was partly religious and partly satirical. In the 16th century Catherine de’ Medici is said to have spent incredible sums on the dresses and scenery for the representation of the Italian ballet ; and in the middle of the 17th century the regular opera was introduced at Paris.

At the end of the 18th century the theatres of San Carlo at Naples, La Scala at Milan, and La Fenice at Venice were the finest in Europe; all these have been rebuilt in the present century, but have been eclipsed by the theatres of Paris, St Petersburg, and other capitals, both in size and architectural splendour.

“‘tireynge-howse.” The upper galleries or boxes coinpletely sur- rounded the stage, even the space over the green-room being occupied by boxes. This being the arrangement, it is easy to see why the octagonal plan was selected in most cases, though not in all,—the Fortune theatre, for example, was square. An interesting specifica- tion and contract for the building of the Fortune theatre is printed by Halliwell-Phillipps (op. cit. infra, p. 164). In all its details the Fortune is specified to be like the Globe, except that it is to be square in plan, and with timbers of heavier scantling. The walls are to be of wood and plaster, the roof tiled, with lead gutters, the stage of oak, with a “shadow” or cover over it, and the ‘‘tireynge-howse” to have glazed windows. Two sorts of boxes are mentioned, viz., _ Sentlemen’s roomes” and “ twoo-pennie roomes.” A woodcut show- ing this arrangement of the interior is given in a collection of plays edited by Kirkman in 1672.

_Much valuable information about the early theatres of London is given by Wilkinson, Londina Illustrata (1819), in which are engrav- Ings of some of them. See also Collier, Hist. of Dramatic Poetry, 1879; Halliwell-Phillipps, Life of Shakespeare, 1883; Malone, History of the Stage, 1790, republished by Boswell in 1821; the publications of the New Shakspere Society; the Ninth Report of the Historical MSS, Commission ; and a series of articles on early

ee et T. F. Ordish, in The Antiquary, vols. xi., xii.,

In the modern theatre the auditorium has changed comparatively little, except that the stalls have gradually encroached upon and almost absorbed the pit. The arrangement of the boxes, stalls, balcony, and gallery are too well known to need description. Few people, have, however, any notion of the immense size and extreme complication of the space and machinery behind the proscenium, of which the visible stage occupies but a very small proportion. The stage-floor slopes upwards away from the audience, so that it may appear deeper than it really is by diminishing the foreshortening.! Its extent behind the most distant plane of scenery is usually quite as great as that which the audience sees, In addition to this extension of the visible stage there are three other enormous spaces filled with the machinery to work the scenery.

(1) Of these the first consists of the ‘‘wings” (Fr. cowlisses), a series of chambers or platforms on each side of the stage, arranged many stories high, and reaching to more than double the height of the proscenium.

(2) The ‘‘ dock” or under-space (Fr. dessous), extending under the whole area of the stage floor, and about equal in height to the proscenium, is divided into three or four stories by suc- cessive floors, and contains long rows of immense windlasses (Fr. gril) for raising and lowering scenery, and also an elaborate arrangement of lifts by which actors can suddenly appear or vanish through the stage floor. Avery ingenious device called the “star trap,” invented by an English mechanician (Fr. trappe Anglaise), allows an actor to vanish through the floor without any opening in it being visible. This is done by making the trap door of thin boards (something like a venetian blind) fixed on to ficxible bands of steel; the weight of the actor makes these open in the middle and let him through, while the steel springs close the opening as soon as they are released. The whole movement is so rapid that the actor seems to sink through the solid floor.? In all mechanical appliances for theatrical purposes England is far ahead of other countries, many of which have adopted English methods.

(8) The third space, and the largest of all, is that above the proscenium—the ‘‘ flies” (Fr. dessus or cintre), extending over the whole of the stage, and reaching sometimes to nearly double the height of the proscenium. This also is divided into many floors, and contains rows of great windlasses, by

which scenery can be hoisted up out of sight, without folding or bending it. All these threc parts of the building are filled with a complicated but most orderly series of ropes, lifts, and machinery of every sort, of which it is impossible here to give a detailed description.

The old method of fixing scenery was to slide it in two halves from the wings in grooves formed in the stage floor: these are no longer used, as much more realistic cffects can be gained by sup- porting scenery from the top, or by building it up with supports of its own, so that, instead of a series of painted planes set parallel to the stage front, castles, cathedrals, or even whole streets are actually built upon the stage, “ors Por and give striking effects of real perspective.

A rapidly growing tendency now exists to increase the mechanical perfection of the theatre. The extended use of iron instead of wood for the stage floor and the various machines has been a great gain in space and rapidity of work- ing. It is now considered a great object to drop the curtain as seldom as possible, and even the Grand Opera House of Paris is now left far behind in the modern competition for mechanical perfection,’ though from an architectural point of view it is the most magnificent and costly of all existing build- ings of its kind. See fig. 4.

The latest improvement to ¢ prevent delay between the pre, 4 pian of the Grand Opera House in scenes has been: introduced in Paris : 200 feet to the inch. the Madison Square theatre A, Auditory. B,Stage. C, Grand Staircase. in New York city, which has D, Great Saloon. E, Royal Entrance, F,

Green-room. two stages, one above the other. During the performance of a scene the second stage floor is

1 This device was practised by the medieval architects in most European countries, who frequently made the floor of cathedrals and other large churches to slope upwards from west to east, sometimes as much as from two to three feet.

? Other varieties of this, such as the ‘‘ vampire trap,” allow an actor to vanish through an apparently solid wall.

3 In 1883 M. Reyer’s Sigurd was refused at the Paris Opera House mainly on account of the absence of the necessary mechanical appliances,

being prepared in the under-space, with all its scenery fixed, and when the curtain falls the first stage rises into the upper regions and the second floor goes up to take its place. These floors are accurately balanced by heavy counterpoise weights, so that the whole of these enormous masses are moved with comparatively little force.

On the whole, for magnificence of effect and mechanical ingenuity the great London pantomimes are unrivalled. Their transforma- tion-scenes are marvels of the mechanist’s skill, and are often devised with very high artistic talent. Unhappily much danger and suffering have often to be undergone by the women who act the part of fairies and the like, suspended high in the air by almost invisible supports, and by the young children who have to squeeze themselves into pasteboard shells representing insects or reptiles.

In addition to the above-mentioned parts of the theatre, which are reserved for the mechanical working of the performance, much space is occupied by the ‘‘green-room” for the actors, and rows of dressing-rooms. An immense deal of storage room is also required, and some of the Parisian theatres have large magazines te this purpose in the suburbs. In many cases also the atelier for the scene painters is far removed from the theatre, and thus far better space and lighting for the work can be provided. Fig. /f__¥)]

5 shows the plan of the Drury Lane | 4 theatre, in many respects the best ! arranged in London.

The painting of theatrical scenery | has frequently been the work of artists of very high talent, such as |P=3 Raphael in Rome, Watteau, Boucher, [and Servandoni in France, and Stan- } field in England. Paintings of very &, high artistic merit and wonderfully § decorative effect are now produced § for theatrical purposes, especially in [4)3 France, Germany, and England.!

pag In England especially great histor- § ical and antiquarian knowledge are 4? T brought to the aid of this branch of f § art. The landscapes in particular]] 4 are sometimes works of great beanty, [7 ¥ and very beautiful effects of lake * scenery with trees and mountains 4_ reflected in the water are got by set- ~~

ting great sheets of plate glass over yy¢.5,—Plan of Drury Lane Theatre:

the stage floor, slightly inclined, so 100 feet to the inch.

that a real reflexion is thrown by the A, Stage. B, Saloon between the landscape painted on the scene be- Chief Staircases, C, Entrance Hall. hind. Another ingenious device, used by Wagner at Baireuth and also in England for magical scenes, was to form a thin and semi- transparent curtain of vapour, which was sent up by a perforated steam-pipe concealed in a groove in the stage.

The various methods of lighting used are an important item in the production of striking effects. The old system of a row of ‘

The old way of producing lightning was to blow lycopodium or powdered resin with bellows through a flame, and this is still used in realistic effects of conflagrations. More effective lightning is now made by flashing the electric light behind a scene painted with clouds, in which a zigzag aperture has been cut out and filled with a transparent substance. ‘Thunder is made by shaking large sheets of iron, by rolling cannon balls above the ceiling of the auditorium, and by clapping together a series of planks strung together on two ropes. Wind is imitated by a machine with a cogged cylinder, which revolves against coarse cloth tightly stretched. The sound of rain is produced by shaking parched peas in a metal cylinder.

The orchestra is now usually arranged either below or above the proscenium, so that the musicians are not visible. The prompter is placed at one side, in the wings, so as to avoid the disfigure- ment of the hood-like box which formerly used to cut the front line of the stage into two halves. This is, however, less convenient for the actors.

Till the middle of the present century little trouble or expense was laid out on dresses and accessories. Certain conventional costumes, made of cheap stuff, were used for each part, with but little regard to historieal correctness. Armour and weapons were

1 Scene paintings are usually executed in distemper, frequently in an atelier formed in the roof of the theatre ; the artist partly works with his canvas laid upon the floor, or, where space allows, the painting is hung against a wall

and the artist works from a scaffold, with tiers of boarding arranged so that he can reach to any part of the great canvas.

made of pasteboard covered with metal foil, and stage jewellery was made of small cup-like pieces of tin formed with many facets, Now, however, no trouble or expense is spared to get the costumes and varions properties archzologically correct: real jewels and the richest stuffs are often used for the dresses, as well as real furni.- ture of the most costly sort for the furnishing of the scenic rooms, As much as £20,000 is sometimes spent before the play can be presented. All this splendour and realism is very hostile to the true interests of the drama ; magnificent scenery and costly accessories are expected by the audience, rather than good acting, In some scenes, such as the ballin the first act of Romeo and Juliet, as recently represented at the Lyceum, the words and acting of the chief performers were almost lost in the general bustle and splendour of the scene. Frequently, too, the noise of setting up some elaborate scene behind almost drowns the voices of the actors in front of the drop scene.

Another serious cause of the present low state of acting in England is the fact that a popular play sometimes runs for several hundred nights without a break, thus reducing the performers to the condition of machines. The modern system of expending large sums on dresses and decoration naturally prevents that frequent change of snbject which is so desirable, and which in France is provided for by the rules of the Théatre Frangais, where acting of a very high order of merit still survives.

The present system, aided by the enormous size to which London has unhappily grown, has completely changed the character of the audience. Instead of an andience largely composed of habitués, who by their constant attendance at the theatre had gained some knowledge of what acting ought to be, and were prepared to show their disgust at clap-trap or ranting, we have now practically a fresh and ignorant audience every night, who, by their applause of what is worst and their coldness to real refinement of acting, do much to lower the dramatic standard and demoralize the actors.

For further information the reader is referred to Donnet, Thédtres de Paris, 1821; Salomons, Construction des Thedtres, Paris, 1871; Garnier, Le Nouwvet Opéra de Paris, 1876-81 ; Coutant, Principaux Thedtres Modernes, Paris, 1870; Moynet, Z'Envers du Thédtre, Paris, 1874; Pougin, Dictionnaire du Thédire, Paris, 1885, (J. H. M

Law RELATING TO THEATRES.

The regulation of the theatre by legislation can be traced back to the time of the lower empire, in which it depended almost wholly upon constitutions of Theodosius and Valentinian, incor- porated in the Theodosian Code (tit. xv. 5, 6, 7), and a century later to a large extent adopted by Justinian. In the whole of this law there is an evident attempt at a compromise between the doc- trines of Christianity and the old Roman love of public spectacles ofall kinds. It deals less with theatrical representations proper than with gladiatorial contests and chariot races.?_ The Theodosian Code provided that the sacraments were not to be administered to actors save where death was imminent, and only on condition that the calling should be renounced in case of recovery. Daughters of actors were not to be forced to go on the stage, provided that they lived an honest life. An actress was to be allowed to quit the stage in order to become a nun. There were also numerous sumptuary regulations as to the dress of actors. None of the law which has been mentioned so far was adopted by Justinian, but what follows was incorporated in Cod. xi. 40 ('* De Spectaculis et Scenicis"), which consists entirely of extracts from the Theodosian Code of a very miscellaneous nature. Provision was made for the exhibition of public games and theatrical spectacles by magis- trates, practically confining them to exhibiting in their own cities. Statues of actors were not to be placed in the

public streets, but only in the proscenium of a theatre. A governor of a province was entitled to take the money raised for public games for the purpose of repairing the city walls, provided that he gave security for afterwards celebrating the games as usual. In Cod. iii. 12, 11 (“De Feriis”) is a constitution of Leo and Anthemius forbiddin dramatic representations on Sunday. The Digest (iii. 2) classe all who acted for hire (“omnes propter pecuniam in scenaim pro- deuntes”) as infamous persons, and as such debarred them from filling public offices. A mere contract to perform, not fulfilled, did not, however, carry infamy with it. By the 51st of the Movelle actresses could retire from the stage without incurring a penalty,

even if they had given sureties or taken an oath.

In England, as in other countries of western Europe, theatrical legislation was of comparatively recent introduction. Such legisla- tion was unnecessary as long as the theatre was under the control of the church and actors under its protection (see Drama). The earliest regulations were therefore, as might be expected, made by the church rather than by the state, The ecclesiastical ordinances were directed chiefly against the desecration of churches, though they sometimes extended to forbidding attendance of the faithful as spectators at plays of a harmless kind.* Sacraments and Christian

2 The word dudi seems sometimes to include, sometimes to exclude, dramatic performances. Its meaning in a particular instance depends on the context.

3 A large number of such ordinances will be found cited in Prynne, Hist

mastiz; Bossuet, Maximes et Reflexions sur la Comédie; Mariana, De Spectacultss Smith, Dicttonary of Christian Antiquities, arts. “‘ Actors” and ‘Theatre.

TR@AT RF

burial were denied by the canon law to actors, whose gains, said St Thomas, were acquired ea turpi causa.1 The same law forbade plays to be acted by the clergy, even under the plea of custom, as in Christmas week, and

followed the Code of Justinian in enjoin- ing the clergy not to consort with actors or be present at plays (see the Decretals of Gregory, iii. 1, 12, and 15, ‘‘De Vita et Honestate Clericorum”). As lately as 1603 canon Ixxxviii. of the eanons of the Church of England enacted that churchwardens were not to suffer plays in churches, chapels, or churchyards.

The Reformation marks the period of transition from the ecclesi- astical to the non-ecclesiastical authority over the drama. Precau- tions began to be taken by the crown and the legislature against the acting of unauthorized plays, by unauthorized persons, and in unauthorized places, and the acting of plays objectionable to the Government on political or other grounds. The protection of the church being withdrawn, persons not enrolled in a fixed company or in possession of a licence from the crown or justices were lable to severe penalties as vagrants. The history of the legislation on this subject is very curious. An Act of the year 1572 (14 Eliz. e. 5) enacted that “all fencers, bearwards, common players of inter- ludes, and minstrels (not belonging to any baron of this realm, or to any other honourable person of greater degree),” wandering abroad without the licence of two justices at the least, were subject “to be grievously whipped and burned through the gristle of the right ear with a hot iron of the compass of an inch about.” This statute was superseded by 89 Eliz. e, 4, under which the punish- ment of the strolling ca is less severe, and there is no mention of justices. The jurisdiction of justices over the theatre disappears from legislation from that time until 1788. In 39 Eliz. c. 4 there is a remarkable exception in favour of persons licensed by Dutton of Dutton in Cheshire, in accordance with his claim to liberty and jurisdiction in Cheshire and Chester, established in favour of his ancestor by proceedings in guo warranto in 1499. The stricter wording ot this Act as to the licence seems to show that the licence had been abused, perhaps that in some cases privileges had been assumed without authority. In 14 Eliz. c. 5 the privileges of a player attached by service of a noble or licence from justices, in the later Act only by service of a noble, and this was to be attested under his hand and arms. The spirit of the Acts of Elizabeth frequently appears in later legislation, and the unauthorized player was a vagabond as lately as the Vagrant Act of 1744, which was law till 1824. He is not named in the Vagrant Act of 1824. The Theatre Act of 1737 narrowed the definition of a player of interludes, for

the purposes of punishment as a vagabond, to mean a person act- ing interludes, &c., in a place where he had no legal settlement.

Before the Restoration there were privileged places as well as privileged persons, ¢.g., the court, the universities, and the inns of court. With the Restoration privilege became practically con- fed to the theatres in the possession of those companies (or their representatives) established by the letters patent of Charles II. in 1662 (see DRAMA). In spite of the patents other and unprivileged theatres gradually arose. In 1735 Sir John Barnard introduced a bill “to restrain the number of playhouses for playing of interludes, and for the better regulation of common players.” On Walpole’s Wishing to add a clause giving parliamentary sanction to the juris- diction of the lord chamberlain, the mover withdrew the bill’ In 1737 Walpole introduced a bill of his own for the same purpose, there being then six theatres in London. The immediate cause of the bill is said to have been the production of a political extrava- ganza of Fielding’s, The Golden Rump. The bill passed, and the Act of 10 Geo. II. c. 28 regulated the theatre for more than a century. Its effect was to make it impossible to establish any theatre except in the city of Westminster, and in places where the king should in person reside, and during such residence only. The Act did not confine the prerogative within the city of Westminster, but as a matter of policy it was not exercised in favour of the non- privileged theatres, except those where the “legitimate drama” was not performed. The legitimate drama was thus confined to Covent Garden, Drury Lane, and the Haymarket from 1737 to 1843. In the provinces patent theatres were established at Bath by 8 Geo. III. ¢. 10, at Liverpool by 11 Geo. III. c. 16, and at Bristol by 18 Geo. III. ¢. 8, the Act of 1737 being in each case repealed pro tanto. The acting of plays at the universities was forbidden by 10 Geo. II. «. 19. Itis not a little remarkable that the universities, once possessing unusual dramatic privileges, should not only have lost those privileges, but have in addition become subject to special disabilities. The restrictions upon the drama were found very Inconvenient in the large towns, especially in those which did not ee patent theatres. In one direction the difficulty was met

y the lord chamberlain granting annual licences for performances of operas, pantomimes, and other spectacles not regarded as legiti- mate drama. In

another direction relief was given by the Act of 1788 (28 Geo. III. vc. 30), under which licences for occasional per- sis eaten easels sen

1 For this reason it appears to have been the custom in France for actors to be married under the name of musicians, See Hist. Parlémentaire de la Révolu- tion Francaise, vol. vi. p. 881. The difficulties attending the funeral of MoLiirE (@.2.) are well known,

| bill in the House of Lords was not unreasonable,

a |

formances might be granted in general or quarter sessions for a period of not more than sixty days. The rights of patent theatres were preserved by the prohibition to grant such a licence to any theatre within 8 miles of a patent theatre. During this period (1737-1843) there were several decisions of the courts which con- firmed the operation of the Act of 1787 as creating a monopoly. The exclusive rights of the patent theatres were also recognized in the Music Hall Act of 1752, and in private Acts dealing with Covent Garden and Drury Lane, and regulating the rights of parties, the application of charitable funds, &. (sce 16 Geo. III. ec. 13, 31; 50 Geo. III. e. cexiv; 52 Geo. III. c. xix; 1 Geo. IV. c. Ix.). The results of theatrical monopoly were beneficial neither to the public nor to the monopolists themselves. In 1832 a select committee of the House of Commons recommended the legal recognition of “stage-right” and the abolition of theatrical monopoly. The recommendations of the report as to stage-right were carried out immediately by Bulwer Lytton’s Act, 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 15 (see Copyricut). But it was not till 1843 that the present Theatre Act, 6 and 7 Vict. c, 68, was passed, a previous bill on the same lines having been rejected by the House of Lords. The Act of 1843 inaugurated a more liberal policy, and there is now complete “free trade” in theatres, subject to the conditions imposed by the Act. The growth of theatres since that time has been enormous. In 1885 there were forty-six licensed under the Act in London, Liverpool coming next with ten. Nor does the extension scem to have been attended with the social dangers antici- pated by some of the witnesses before the committee of 1832.

The suppression of objectionable plays was the ground of many early statutes and proclamations. While the religious drama was dying out, the theatre was used as a vehicle for enforcing religious and political views not always as orthodox as those of a miracle play. Thus the Act of 34 and 35 Hen. VIII. c. 1 madeit criminal to play in an interlude contrary to the orthodox faith declared, or to be declared, by that monarch. Profanity in theatres seems to have been a crying evil of the time. The first business of the Government of Edward VI. was to pass an Act reciting that the most holy and blessed sacrament was named in plays by such vile

, and unseemly words as Christian ears did abhor to hear rehcarsed,

and inflicting fine and imprisonment upon any person advisedly contemning, despising, or reviling the said most blessed sacrament (1 Edw. VI. c.1). A proclamation of the same king in 1549 forbade the acting of interludes in English on account of their dealing with sacred subjects. In 1556 the council called attention to certain lewd persons in the livery of Sir F. Leke representing plays and interludes reflecting upon the queen and her consort and the formalities of the mass. The same queen forbade the recurrence of such a representation as the mask given by Sir Thomas Pope in honour of the princess Elizabeth at Hatfield, for she “ misliked these follies.” By the Act of Uniformity, 1 Eliz. c. 2, it was made an offence punishable by a fine of a hundred marks to speak any- thing in the derogation, depraving, or despising of the Book of Common Prayer in any interludes or plays. In 1605 “An Act to restrain the Abuses of Players” made it an offence punishable by a fine of £10 to jestingly or profanely speak or use certain sacred names in any stage play, interlude, show, may-game, or pageant (3 Jac. I. c. 21). In consequence of the appearance of players in the characters of the king of Spain and Gondomar, an ordinance of James I. forbade the representation on the stage of any living Christian king. The star chamber in 1614 fined Sir John Yorke for representing a Catholic drama in his house. The first Act of the reign of Charles I. forbade acting on Sunday (see SunDAY). Puritan opposition to the theatre culminated in the ordinance of the Long Parliament (sec vol. vii. p. 484). After the Restora- tion there are few royal proclamations or ordinances, the necessary jurisdiction being exercised almost entirely by parliament and the lord chamberlain. One of the few post-Restoration royal procla- mations is

that of February 25, 1665, restraining any but the com- pany of the Duke of York’s theatre from entcring at the attiring house of the theatre.

Preventive censorship of the drama by an officer of statc dates from the reign of Elizabeth, and is perhaps the only example of censorship of the press still existing in the United Kingdom (see Press Laws). Such a censorship is not unknown in other countries, and it seems to have existed even in republican Rome, if one may judge from Horace’s line, —

- Que neque in ede soncnt certantia judice Tarpa.” The master of the revels appears to have been the dramatic censor from 1545 to 1624, when he was superseded by the lord chamber- lain, In some cases the supervision was put into commission. Thus with Tilney, the master of the revels in 1581, were associated by order of the privy council a divine and astatesman. In other cases it was delegated, as to Daniel the poet by warrant in 1603. The proposal to give statutory authority to the jurisdiction of the lord chamberlain led, as has been already stated, tothe withdrawal of Sir John Barnard’s bill in 1735, and to considerable debate before the bill of 1737 became law. Lord Chesterfield’s objection to the “Tf the players,”

said he, “are to be punished, letit be by the laws of their country, and not by the will of an irresponsible despot.” The discretion reposed by the Acts of 1737 and 1843 in the lord chamberlain has been, according to the report of a select committee of the House of Commons in 1866, on the whole wisely exercised. On the other hand, there have been. instances where perhaps both he and his subordinate officer, the examiner of stage plays, have been some- what nice in their objections. Thus, during the illness of George Ill., King Lear was inhibited. George Colman, when examiner, showed an extraordinary antipathy to such words as “ heaven” or “angel.” The lord chamberlain’s powers are still occasionally ex- erted in the interests of public decency, less frequently for political reasons. Before 1866 the lord chamberlain appears to have taken into consideration the wants of the neighbourhood before granting a licence, but since that year such a course has been abandoned.

The existing law of theatres is mainly statutory. It will be convenient to treat it as it regards the building, the performance, and the licensing of the building and of the performance. A theatre may be defined with sufficient accuracy for the present purpose as a building in which a stage play is performed for hire. It will be seen from the following sketch of the law that there are a considerable number of different persons, corporate and unincorporate, with jurisdiction over theatres. A consolidation of the law seems urgently required, and the placing of jurisdiction in the hands of a central authority for the United Kingdom. The committee of 1866 recommended the transfer to the lord chamber- lain of the regulation of all places of amusement, and an appeal from him to the home secretary in certain cases, as also the exten- sion of his authority to preventive censorship in all public enter- tainments; but no legislation resulted. Several bills for the amendment of the law have been recently introduced, but hitherto without success in the face of more burning political questions.

Building. —A theatre (at any rate to make it such a building as can be licensed) must be a permanent building, not a mere tent or booth, unless when Teviiee by justices at a lawful fair by § 23 of the Act of 1843. It must, if in the metropolis, conform to the regulations as to structure contained in the Metropolitan Building Acts and the Metropolis Management Acts, especially the Act of 1878 (41 and 42 Vict. c. 32). This Act makes a certificate of structural fitness from the Board of Works necessary as a condition precedent for licence in the case of all theatres of a superficial area of not less than 500 square feet licensed after the passing of tho Act, gives power to the board in certain cases to call upon pro- prictors of existing theatres to remedy structural defects, and enables it to make regulations for protection from fire. Such regulations were issued by the board on May 2, 1879. As to theatres in provincial towns, the Towns Improvement Act, 1847, and the Public Health Act, 1875, confer certain limited powers over the building on municipal corporations and urban sanitary authorities. In many towns, however, the structural qualifications of buildings used as theatres depend upon local Acts and the by- laws made under the powers of such Acts. To a morc limited extent the rules made by justices may enforce certain structural requirements.

Performance.—To constitute a building where a performance takes place a theatre, the performance must be (a) of a stage play, and (6) for hire. (a) By § 23 of the Act of 1843 the word “stage- play” includes tragedy, comedy, farce, opera, burletta, interlude, melodrama, pantomime, or other entertainment of the stage, or any part thereof. The two tests of a stage play appear to be the exeitement of emotion and the representation of action. The ques- tion whether a performance is a stage play or not seems to be one of degree, and one rather of fact than of law. A ballet d’action would usually be a stage play, but it would be otherwise with a ballet divertissement. § 14 empowers the lord chamberlain to for- bid the acting of any stage play in Great Britain whenever he may be of opinion that it is fitting for the preservation of good manners, decorum, or the public peace to do so, § 15 imposes a penalty of £50 on any one acting or presenting a play or part of a play after such inhibition, and avoids the licence of the theatre where it appears. Regulations of police respecting the performance are contained in 2 and 3 Vict. c. 47, and in many local Acts. A per- formance may also be proceeded against as a nuisance at common law, if, for instance, it be contra bonos mores or draw together a great concourse of vehicles, or if so much noise be heard in the neighbourhood as to interfere with the ordinary occupations of life. Very curious instances of proceedings at common law are recorded. In 1700 the grand jury of Middlesex presented the two playhouses and also the bear-garden on Bankside (the “Paris garden” of Henry VIII, act v. sc. 3) as riotous and disorderly nuisances. In 1819 certain players were prosecuted and convicted before the court of great sessions of Wales for acting indecent open-air interludes at Berriew in Montgomeryshire. Performances on Sunday, Good Friday, and Christmas day are illegal (see SuNDAY). Regulations as to the sale of intoxicating liquors during the performance are made by the Licensing Acts and other public general Acts, as well as by local Acts and rules made by justices. It is frequently a con-

dition of the licence granted to provincial theatres that no excise- able liquors shall be sold or consumed on the premises. The Children’s Dangerous Performances Act, 1879 (42 and 48 Vict. ¢, 34), forbids under a penalty of £10 any public exhibition or per. formance whereby the life or

limbs of a child under the age of fourtecn shall be endangered. It also makes the employer of any such child indictable for assault where an accident causing actual bodily harm has happened to the child, and enables the court on conviction of the employer to order him to pay the child compensa- tion not exceeding £20. (6) The performance must be for hire, § 16 of the Act of 1843 makes a building one in which acting for hire takes place, not only where money is taken directly or in- directly, but also where the purchase of any article is a condition of admission, and where a play is performed in a place in which exciseable liquor is sold. In a recent case of Shelley v. Bethell (Law Reports, 12 Queen's Bench Division, 11) it was held that the proprietor of a private theatre was liable to penalties under the Act, though he lent the theatre gratuitously, because tickets of adinission were sold in aid of a charity.

Licensing of Building.—By § 2 of the Act of 1843 all theatres (other than patent theatres) must be licensed. By § 7 no licence is to be granted except to the actual and responsible manager, who is to be bound by himself and two sureties for due observance of rules and for securing payment of any penalties incurred. The metro- politan theatres other than the patent theatres (as far at least as they are included in the boroughs named in the Act of 1848) are licensed by the lord chamberlain. By § 4 his fee on grant of a license is not to exceed 10s. for each month for which the theatre is licensed. The lord chamberlain appears to have no power to make suitable rules for enforcing order and decency. He can, however, by § 8, suspend a licence or close a patent theatre where any riot or misbehaviour has taken place.

Provincial theatres fall under three different licensing authorities, The lord chamberlain licenses theatres in Windsor and Brighton, and theatres situated in the places where the queen occasionally resides, but only during the time of such occasional residence (§ 8). Theatres at Oxford and Cambridge, or within 14 miles thereof, are licensed by the justices having jurisdiction therein, but before any such licence can come into force the consent of the chancellor or vice-chancellor must be given. The rules made by the justices for the management of the theatre are subject to the approval of the chancellor or vice-chancellor, who may also impose such conditions upon the licence as he thinks fit. In case, of any breach of the rules or

conditions, he may annul the licence (§ 10). All other provincial theatres are licensed by four or more justices at a special session held within twenty-one days after application for a licence shall have been made to them (§ 5). The fee is not to exceed 5s. for each month for which the theatre is licensed (§ 6). The justices, like the lord chamberlain, appear to have no discretion as to grant- ing a licence. Their act is purely ministerial and confined to ascertaining that the applicant is the actual and responsible manager, and that he and his sureties are of sufficient substance to provide the requisite bonds. § 9 gives the justices authority to make at the special session suitable rules for enforcing order and decency at the theatres licensed by them, and of rescinding or altering such rules at a subsequent special session. It also givesa secretary of state power to rescind or alter such rules, and to make other rules. In case of riot or breach of the rules, the justices may order the theatre to be closed, and it thereupon becomes an unlicensed house. Penalties are imposed by the Act for keeping or acting in an unlicensed theatre, and for producing or acting in an unlicensed play.

Licensing Performanee.—A stage play must be duly licensed before performance. § 12 of the Act of 1843 prescribes that a copy of every new play and of every addition to an old play, and of every new prologue or epilogue or addition thereto (such copy to be signed by the master or manager), shall be sent to the lord cham- berlain, and, if the lord chamberlain does not forbid it within seven days, it may be represented. § 13 empowers the lord chamberlain to fix a scale of fees for examination; the fee is now two guineas for a play of three or more acts, onc guinea for a play of less than three acts. All plays represented previously to the Act are held to be licensed. A play once licensed is licensed once for all, unless the licence be revoked under § 14. The examination is the duty of a special officer of the lord chamberlain’s department, the examiner of stage plays.

Musie Halls.—Music was at no time the object of restrictions as severe as those imposed upon the drama. The present Music Hall Act (25 Geo. IL. c. 36) was passed in 1752, probably in consequence of the publication in 1750 of Fielding’s Inquiry into the Causes of the late Increase of Robbers. It is remarkable that two works of the same writer should from opposite causes have led to both theatre and music hall legislation Mt lasting importance. The Act was originally passed for a term of three years, but was made

perpetual by 28 Geo. II. c. 19. It applies only to music halls within 20 miles of London and Westminster. Every such music hall must be licensed at the Michaelmas quarter sessions, the licence to be signified under the

hands and seals of four or more justices. The licence may be granted for music or dancing or both. Public notice of the licence is to be given by affixing over the door the inscription “ Licensed pursuant to Act of Parliament of the twenty-fifth of King George the Second.” The penalty for keeping an unlicensed music hall is £100. Music halls beyond the radius of 20 miles from London and Westmiuster are usually governed by local legislation, which in most cases follows, mutatis mutandis, the lines of the Act of 1752. The music hall, like the theatre, must generally fulfil certain struc- tural requirements. In one important respect the law is more lenient to the music hall than to the theatre. A licence is neces- sary for a single performance of a stage play, but it is only habitual music or dancing that requires a music hall licence.

Scotland.—In Scotland the theatre has always exercised a smaller amount of influence than in England, and there has been little exclusively Scotch legislation on the subject. An Act of 1555, c. 40, discountenanced certain amusements of a semi-theatrical kind by enacting tliat no one was to be chosen Robert Hude (sic), Little Jolin, abbot of Unreason, or quecn of May. A proclamation of James VI. in 1574, and an Act of 1579, c. 12, followed the lines of English legislation by making persons using unlawful plays, such as jugglery or fast and loose, punishable as vagabonds. In 1574 the General Assembly claimed to license plays, and forbade represen- tations on Sunday. As in England, the licensing power seems then to have passed from the church to the crown, for in 1599 James VI. licensed a theatre at Edinburgh. The Act 1672, c. 21, exempted comedians while upon the stage from the sumptuary provisions of the Act respecting apparel. The chamberlain of Scotland, while such an office existed, appears to have exercised a certain police jurisdiction over theatres. The Theatre Act of 1843 extends to Scotland, as did also the previous Act of 1737.

Ireland.—Theatrical legislation, as far as it went, was based upon English models. Thus ridicule of the liturgy was forbidden by 2 Eliz. c. 2 ([r.);

common players of interlndes and wandering minstrels were deemed vagabonds, 10 and 11 Car. I. c. 4 (Ir.). In 1786 an Act was passed to enable the crown to grant letters patent for one or more theatres in Dublin city and county, 26 Geo. IIJ. c. 57 (Ir.). The preamble alleges that the establishing of a well-reculated theatre at the seat of government will be productive of public advantage and tend to improve the morals of the people. Exceptions from the restrictions of the Act were made in favour of entertainments for the benefit of the Dublin lying-in hospital and exhibitions of horsemanship or puppct-shows.

United States.—Public entertainments, dramatic or otherwise, are usually under the control of the municipal authorities. In some States, such as New York and Massachusetts, there is State legislation, requiring places of public entertainment to be licensed by the proper authority. In many States it is a condition of the licence that intoxicating liquors shall not be sold in such places. Other conditions, more or less usual, are that there shall be no Sunday or dangerous performances, that acrobats shall be properly protected, and that female waiters shall not be employed. Struc- tural qualifications are in some cases made necessary. Thus in 1885 the New York legislature passed an Act containing many minute provisions for eusuring the safety of theatres against fire. A characteristic piece of legislation is the New York Act of 1873, ce. 186, enacting that no citizen is to be excluded from a theatre by reason of race, colour, or previous condition of servitude. This Act of course merely carries out the important principle affirmed in art. xiv. of the amendments to the constitution of the United States. Seo PRIVILEGE.

The most recent if not the only work on the law relating to theatres is Geary's Law of Theatres and Music Halls, 1885. (J. Wt.)

THEBES. See Eeyrt, vol. vii. p. 776 sq.

THEBES (anciently 7Ba., Thebe, or in poetry some- times y8a, in modern Greek Phiva, or, according to the corrected pronunciation, Thivx), one of the most interest- ing towns in Greece, is situated on low hilly ground of gentle slope a little north of the range of Citheron, which divides Bceotia from Attica, and on the edge of the Beeotian plain, about 44 miles from Athens, whence it is now reached by two carriage-roads. It has about

3500 inhabitants, and is the seat of a bishop. The present town occupies the site of the ancient citadel, the Cadmea ; two fragments of ancient wall are visible on the north, and another, belonging either to the citadel or the outer wall, on the south. Two streams, rising a little south of the town, and separated by an average distance of about half a mile, flow on the two sides, and are lost in the plain. These are the ancient Ismenus on the east and Dirce (Atpxn) on the west, which gave to the town its name Ourérapos. The Dirce, now Platzidtissa, has several

and

springs. From the west side of the Cadmea another copious fountain (Paraporti) falls to the Diree. In a suburb to the east is another (Fountain of St Theodore), and north-west are two more. The Cadmea itself is supplied with water brought from an unknown source to the south by works supposed of prehistoric antiquity. It now enters the town by an aqueduct of twenty arches of Frankish construction. The ‘ waters” of Thebes are celebrated both by Pindar and by the Athenian poets, and the site is still, as described by Diczarchus (3d century B.c.), ‘all springs,” xa@vdpos taca. One, from which a pasha of Negroponte (Eubcea) is said to have supplied his table, is still called ‘‘the spring of the cadi.” Some of the marble basins, seats, &c., remain, and, with the frag- ments of wall above mentioned, are the only relics of the classic time. The most curious of later buildings is the church of St Luke, south-east of the Cadmea, believed to contain the tomb of the evangelist. From the abundance of water the place is favourable to gardens, and the neigh- bouring plain is extremely fertile. But the population is scanty, and the town at present of no importance.

In prehistoric times the Cadmea, with the enlarged city of Thebes into which it developed, was a power of the first rank, as is shown by its unrivalled legends. More parti- cularly the mythical wars with Argos (see below) point to a time when the “ Hellenes” of North Greece were still contending unequally against the ‘“ Acheans” of the Peloponnesus. In the legend as given by Aischylus these names are accurately preserved. At the beginning of continuous history (6th century B.c.) Thebes had long been possessed by immigrants from Thessaly, who knew the previous inhabitants as Cadmeans (Kadsetou).

The history of the town to the end of the 4th century is part of the general history of the nation (see GREECE). It had an aristocratic constitution, and claimed a contested sovereignty over the other towns of Beeotia. Down to 371 B.C. this status was not essentially changed. The battle of Coronea (394) showed the increasing military strength of the Thebans, and in 371 the genius of Epaminondas raised them by the victory of Leuctra for a brief period to the leading position in Hellas. Philip of Macedon spent part of his youth as a hostage at Thebes, and probably learnt there important lessons in war. By him and his successor the state was destroyed. In 338 the Thebans shared with the Athenians the defeat of Cheronea, and received a Macedonian garrison; the lion-monument erected by them on the field of battle, and still existing there, though in fragments, is a more impressive memorial of their greatness than anything now visible at the town itself. In 335, after the death of Philip, they revolted, and were punished by Alexander with a fearful ven- geance. It is said that 6000 Thebans were slain at the capture and 30,000 taken prisoners. The population was dispersed, and the town entirely razed (except, according to tradition, the house of the poet Pindar); and, though it was soon restored by the Macedonian Cassander (315), it never again played a leading part in history. In 86 B.c., having sided against the Romans in the Mithradatic war, it was plundered by Sulla, and fell into such decay that Strabo describes it as little better than a village. In the 2d century the traveller Pausanias, who gives a full account of it (ix. 5 sqg.), found only the citadel inhabited. In 395 a.p., however, it had some strength, for Alaric, on his way to the capture of Athens, did not think fit to attack it. In the later times of the Eastern empire (10th to 12th century) it again became wealthy and important, being specially celebrated for the manufacture of silk and cloth. In 1143 it was plundered by the Normans of Sicily (who transferred thither the chief artisans of the silk trade), and, after the capture of Constantinople by

the crusaders (1204), became with Athens a fief of the feudal empire. In 1311 it was again plundered by the Catalan Grand Company, a body of Spanish mercenaries, and appears to have had no return of prosperity.

Of more lasting effect than the politics of Thebes have been its legends. Bceotia, or rather the Cadmeis (Thucyd., i. 12), was a land of poetry from extremely ancient times, and the stories of Thebes are in Greek literature as important as those of Troy. The legends of the five chief groups will be found under the names indicated in the following division :—(1) the foundation of the Cadmea by Cadmus; (2) the foundation by Amphion,—to this belong originally the ‘‘seven-gated ” wall, the name of éwrdavdos ©7Bn, and the legends of Zethus, Antiope, and Dirce ; (3) war of the “Seven” (under Adrastus of Argos) ; war of the Epigoni, or ‘* descendants” of the Seven ; the story of (dipus; (4) legends of Bacchus,—at Thebes as elsewhere this religion was comparatively late, but became characteristic of the town ; (5) legends of Heracles lemeeanty found with thoso of Bacchus ; Thebes was reputed the

irthplace of both). From the epic poems, of which little but titles remain, these tales descended to the Attic tragedians ; upon them are founded:the Seven against Thebes of Mschylus, the Gidipus Tyrannus, Cidipus Coloneus, and Antigone of Sophocles, the Phoenissx, Supplices, and Bacchx of Euripides, &c., with innumer- able plays not extant. Apart from direct imitation of these works, the stories themselves, through Statius, Boccaccio, and others, have exercised a great influence on modern literature. In historical times the Thebans were not conspicuous for intellectual accom- plishments, but their reputation is sufficiently sustained by Pindar, perhaps the most distinctively Hellenic of all the national

oets.

N The most famous monument of ancient Thebes was the outer wall with its seven gates, which even as late as the 6th century B.C. was probably the largest of artificial Greek fortresses. The names of the gates vary, but four are constant,—the Preetides, Electra, Neiste or Neite, and Homoloides ; Pausanias gives the others as Ogygiee, Hypsistee, Crenes. There is evidence that the gate Electre was on the south, and near it was the tomb of the Thebans who fell at the capture by Alexander. The gates shown to Pausanias as Neistee and Preetides led respectively north-west and north-east. Two of the springs have been identified with some probability,—that of St Theodore with the CEdipodea, in which (Hdipus is said to have

purged himself from the pollution of homicide, and the Paraporti with the dragon-guarded fountain of Ares (see Capmus). Dicearchus, referring to the town of Cassander, gives two measurements for the circuit, equal to about 9 miles and 5$ miles, but even the smaller is impossible for the wall, and they probably refer to the territory proper of the town, or ‘yj @nBals. Beyond this the topography is wholly uncertain. From the interest of the site in history and still more in literature, as the scene of so many dramas, the temptation to fix details has been specially strong. Conjectural plans or descriptions, differing widely, are given by Leake, Forchhammer, Ulrichs, Bursian, and others (references below). All are based on the assumption that the description of Pausanias and the allusions of the Attic trage- dians may be read together and combined, and that the result will give the plan as it existed in the 5th and 4th centuries B.c. But to this two objections must be taken. (1) The account of Pausanias, even when clear in itself, is very uncertain evidence for anything earlier than the destruction by Alexander. It is said indeed that the restored town occupied the same area, but this is consistent with great disturbance of tradition ; and we have further to allow for inaccurate transmission through 450 years of decad- euce, and finally for the quality of Pausanias’s information, given apparently by casual guides to a traveller extremely uncritical. (2) It may be doubted whether the tragedians had accurate know- ledge of Theban topography, and they had certainly no reason for introducing it in their plays. Their plots are laid in a remote past ; and it is difficult to suppose them on the one hand s0 careful as to fit their scenes to the actual Thebes, and on the other hand so careless as to presume that it had suffered no great change between the times of Cadmus or of CAdipus and their own days. Indeed they did not make this mistake. The plays which contain most references to topography are the Scven against Thebes and the Phenisse. In the Seven the name of “Thebes” docs not occur at all (the title is a misnomer, probably not given by the author); the town is called by its ancient name ‘‘The Cadmea” (Kadpeta mAs), and the whole play assumes that tho “city of Cadmus” was much smaller than the Thebes contemporary with Zischylus can have been. In the Phwenisse the circuit of the walls is said to bo so small that a person within must necessarily know all that had taken place in a general attack (v. 1356). None of the con- ectural plans would approximately satisfy this, nor can it have een true for the time of Euripides. After this, it is not surprising to find

that the attempt to use the plays as evidence is involved in unauswered difficulties, a few of which are given below.

rH EB Es

In itself, however, and as relating to the ruins of the restored town merely, the description of Pausanias is curious and interesting. The principal buildings were at that time (2d century) the temple of Apollo Ismenius, which must have stood somewhere about the present church of St Luke, the theatre, near the gate Preetides, the Heracleum, with a gymnasium and race-course, and the temples of Artemis Eucleia, of Ammon, and of Fortune (Tdxn). Besides these Pausanias was shown all the gates, all the legendary sites, the house of Pindar (north-west beyond the Dirce), statues, &c., dedicated by him, several statues of immense antiquity, others attributed to the greatest artists, and in fact much more than itis easy to believe.

1. Apollo Ismenius and Apollo Spodius.—Sophocles (G. T., 21) mentions, as one of the Theban sanctuaries, “the oracular ashes of Ismenus,” “Iounvod uavtela owddos. Pausanias, who calls the river not Ismenus but Ismenius, describes (1) a temple of Ismenius or Apollo Ismenius (ix. 10, 2), and (2) an altar of Apollo Spodius, made of ashes and used in a peculiar manner as an oracle (ix. mL). We should suppose from Sophocles that both observations related to the same sanctuary; and Sophocles clearly identified the two, But in Pausanias they are in different places and have no connexion at all. Hither therefore the topography and ritual of the one period differed from those of the other, or, which is equally probable, the poet used Theban names without regard to accuracy.

2. Lhe Fountain of Ares.—Euripides, in the Supplices (v. 650 sq.), describes an army advancing on Thebes from the south as having its right at the Ismenian hill, its left at the fountain of Ares, and “the chariots below the monument of Amphion.” Pausanias also places the Ismenian hill on the right of the southern gate. But the fountain of Ares he places on the same side, a de- scription quite inconsistent with this and otherallusions. Ulrichs, while insisting on the agreement about the hill, merely observes on this that Pausanias is unintelligible. Of a still greater difficulty he says nothing. The tomb of Amphion is placed by Alschylus north of the town, and there or in that direction was shown to Pausanias. The topographers accordingly

suppose that the ‘‘chariots” of Euripides were in the plain to the north. But there is no suggestion in the passage that any part of the advancing army was separated from the rest, and the observer expressly says that he was at the place where the chariots fought and had a partieularly good view of this part of the battle (v. 684). Now he stood on the gate Electr, 7.e., as far as possible from the tomb of Amphion, as placed by Aischylus and Pausanias. It is impossible to make a consistent account of this, and it seems plain that Euripides took up the name “tomb of Amphion” at hazard, and ignored or forgot that the real tomb could not be brought into his picture.

3. The Altar of (Athena) Onca.—This was shown to Pausanias (ix. 12, 1), who was told that it marked the place where the lying down of a cow indicated to Cadmus the site destined for his city (er é€vradOa oixjom). “It is said,” he continues, “that in the acropolis there was formerly the house of Cadmus (Ké8yov oikta).” No other indication is given as to the place of the altar, and the natural inference is that it was shown in the Cadmea, But Aischylus (Septem, 501) places it outside the walls. Accordingly it is suggested that the oracular sign only indicated the neighbour- hood of the destined site, and that the altar shown to Pausanias was near that of Apollo Spodins, which is mentioned last before it, and may have been outside the wall. But this juxtaposition proves nothing about the place of Onca, for Pausanias himself shows that mention of Onca here is suggested by a reference to “oxen” in connexion with the altar of Spodius, which brought to his mind the ‘‘cow” of the other legend.

4. Lhe Tomb of Amphion and Zethus.—Apart from the con- fusion of Euripides already noticed, there is a difficulty about the mention of thismonument in Pausanias and Aischylus. Pausanias, after’describing several buildings near the gate Preetides, conclud- ing with some in the market-place, mentions next (without further indication of place) the tomb of Amphion and Zethus, and con- tinues thus,—‘‘the way from Thebes to Chalcis (north-east) is by this gate Proetides, &c.” Aischylus places the tomb of Amphion outside the wall opposite the north gate (Septem, 527), and the Preetides elsewhere. Ulrichs concludes that Pausanias “ evi- dently” went out by the north gate to view the monument and then returned to the Pretides. Of course this is possible, but it is useless to draw exact inferences from documents which require such an hypothesis. It is equally probable

that Pausanias identified the tomb with a monument called the Ampheion, which seems (Ulrichs, p. 17) to have been somewhere near the market-place. Indeed, there is no proof that they were not identical, for the’only evidence that the tomb was outside the wall (and therefore different from the Ampheion) is that of Hschylus and Euripides, whose imaginary cities were not much larger than the Cadmean hill, and must have excluded the Ampheion itself.

On the history, see references under GreEcr; on the topography and legends, Ulvichs, Reisen und Forschungen in Griechenland, ii. 1 sq.; Leake, Travels in

Northern Greece, ii. xiv.; Bursian, Geographie von Griechenland, i, 225 sg.; and the ‘Seven against Thebes,” ed. by A. W. Verrall, “Introduction.” (A. W. V.)

TH E—

THECLA, St, virgin, is commemorated by the Latin Church on September 23. The Bremary relates that she was born of illustrious parentage at Iconium, and came under the personal teaching of the apostle Paul. In her eighteenth year, having broken her engagement with Thamyris, to whom she had been betrothed, she was accused by her relations of being a Christian, and sentenced to be burned. Armed with the sign of the cross, she threw herself upon the pyre, but, the flames having been extinguished by a sudden rain, she came to Antioch, where she was exposed to the wild beasts, then fastened to bulls that she might be torn asunder, then thrown into a pit full of serpents, but from all these perils she was delivered by the grace of Christ. Her ardent faith and her holy life were the means of converting many. Returning once more to her native place, she withdrew into a mountain solitude, and became distin- guished by many virtues and miracles, dying at the age of ninety. She was buried at Seleucia.

The substance of the foregoing narrative, with many other curious incidents, occurs in the very ancient apocryphal book entitled the wepiddo: of Paul and Thecla (Acta Pauli et Theclz). Tertullian tclls us that this work was written by a presbyter in Asia, ‘‘out of love to Paul,” but that his conduct was not ap- proved, and led to his deposition. What caused special offence was its recognition of the right of women to preach and baptize. There is no doubt that the present differs very considerably from the original form of the Acta, but even now its Gnostic origin is betrayed in several features which it still retains—for example, the rejection of marriage. For the text, sce the Acta Apost. Apocr. of Tischendorf, who in the Prolegomena gives a large body of evidence for its great antiquity. A translation is given in the Ante-Nicene Christian Library.

THEFT is, in modern legal systems, universally treated as a crime, but the conception of theft as a crime is not one belonging to the earliest stage of law. To its latest period Roman law regarded theft (furtum) as a delict prima facie pursued by a civil remedy,—the acto furti for a penalty, the vindicatio or condictio for the stolen property itself or its value. In later times, no doubt, a criminal remedy to meet the graver crimes gradually grew up by the side of the civil, and in the time of Justinian the criminal remedy, where

it existed, took precedence of the civil (Cod., iii. 8, 4). But to the last criminal proceedings could only be taken in serious cases, ¢.g., against stealers of cattle (abigez) or the clothes of bathers (balnearti). The punishment was death, banishment, or labour in the mines or on public works. In the main the Roman law of theft coincides with the English law. The definition as given in the Institutes (iv. 1, 1) is “furtum est contrectatio rei fraudulosa, vel ipsius rei, vel etiam ejususus possessionisve,” to which the Digest (xlvii. 2, 1, 3) adds “lucri faciendi gratia.” The earliest English definition, that of Bracton (1506), runs thus: “furtum est secundum leges contrec- tatio rei alienze fraudulenta cum animo furandi invito illo domino cujus res illa fuerit.” Bractou omits the “lucri faciendi gratia” of the Roman definition, because in English law the motive is immaterial,! and the “usus ejus posses- sionisve,” because the definition includes an intent to de- prive the owner of his property permanently. The “animo furandi” and ‘“‘invito domino” of Bracton’s definition are expansions for the sake of greater clearness. They seem to have been implied in Roman law. J urtum is on the whole a more comprehensive term than theft. This difference no doubt arises from the tendency to extend the bounds of a delict and to limit the bounds of a crime. Thus it was furtum (but it would not be theft at English common law) to use a deposit of pledge contrary to the wishes of the owner, to retain goods found, or to steal a human being, such as a slave or filius familias (a special

1 Thus destruction of a letter by a servant, with a view of suppress-

ing inquiries into her character, makes the servant guilty of larceny in English law.

aH 231.

form of furtum called plagium). The latter would be in English law an abduction under certain circumstances, but not a theft. On the other hand, one of two married persons could not commit furtwm as against the other, but theft may be so committed in England since recent legislation. Asa furtum was merely a delict, the obligatio ex delicto could be extinguished by agreement between the parties ; it will be seen that this cannot be done in England. In another direction English law is more con- siderate of the rights of third parties than was Roman. As will appear hereafter, the thief can give

a good title to stolen goods ; in Roman law he could not do so, except in the single case of a hereditas acquired by usucapio. The development of the law of furtum at Rome is historically interesting, for even in its latest period is found a relic of one of the most primitive theories of law adopted by courts of justice: ‘‘ They took as their guide the measure of vengeance likely to be exacted by an aggrieved person under the circumstances of the case” (Maine, Ancient Law, ch, x.). This explains the reason of the division of furtum into manifestum and nec manifestum. The mani- fest thief was one taken red-handed,—“ taken with the manner,” in the language of old English law. The Twelve Tables denounced the punishment of death against the manifest thief, for that would be the penalty demanded by the indignant owner in whose place the judge stood. The severity of this penalty was afterwards mitigated by the praetor, who substituted for it the payment of quad- ruple the value of the thing stolen. The same penalty

| was also given by the praetor in case of theft from a fire

or a wreck, or of prevention of search. No doubt the object of this large penalty was to induce injured persons to refrain from taking the law into their own hands. The Twelve Tables mulcted the non-manifest thief in double the value of the thing stolen. The actions for penalties were in addition to the action for the stolen goods them- selves or their value. The quadruple and double penalties still remain in the legislation of Justinian. The search for stolen goods, as it existed in the time of Gaius, was a survival of a period when the injured person was, as in the case of summons (i jus vocatio), his own executive officer. Such a search, by the Twelve Tables, might be conducted in the house of the supposed thief by the owner in person, naked except for a cincture, and carrying a platter in his hand, safeguards apparently against a violation of decency and against any possibility of his making a false charge by depositing some of his own property on his neighbour’s premises. This mode of search became obsolete before the time of Justinian. Robbery (bona w rapta) was violence added to furtum. By the actio w bonorum raptorum quadruple the value could be recovered if the action were brought within a year, only the value if brought after the expiration of a year. The quadruple value, it is to be noted, included the stolen thing itself, so that the penalty was in effect only a triple one. It was inclusive, and not cumulative, as in furtwm.

In England theft appears to have been very early regarded by legislators as a matter calling for special attention. The pre-Conquest compilations of laws are full of provisions on the subject. It is noticeable that the earlier ones appear to regard theft asa delict which may be compounded for by payment. Considerable distinctions of person are made, both in regard to the owner and the thief. Thus, by the laws of Ethelbert, if a freeman stole from the king he was to restore ninefold, if from a freeman or from a dwelling threefold. If a theow stole, he had only to make a twofold reparation. In the laws of Alfred ordinary theft was still only civil, but he who stole ina church was punished by the loss of his hand. The laws of Ina named as the penalty death or redemption accord-

ing to the wer-gild of the thief. By the same laws the thief might be slain if he fled or resisted. Gradually the severity of the punishment increased. By the laws of Athelstan death in a very cruel form was inflicted. Ata later date the Leges Henrict Primi placed a thief in the king's mercy, and his lands were forfeited. Putting out the eyes and other kinds of mutilation were sometimes the punishment. The principle of severity continued down to the present century, and until 1827 theft of certain kinds remained capital. Both before and after the Conquest local jurisdiction over thieves was a common franchise of lords of manors, attended with some of the advantages of modern summary jurisdiction. It might be exercised either over thieves who committed a theft or were appre- hended within the lordship (infangthef), or over those inhabitants of the lordship who were appreliended else- where (outfangthef). Hither or both franchises might be enjoyed by grant or prescription. As lately as 1 Ph. and M.c. 15 infangthef and outfangthef were confirmed to the lords marchers of Wales. An analogous franchise was theam, or the right of calling upon the holder of stolen goods to vouch to warranty, 7.e., to name from whom he received them. In the old law of theft there were to be found two interesting survivals of the primitive legal notions which were found in Roman law. Up to a com- paratively recent date a distinction analogous to that between furtum manifestum and nec manifestum was of importance in English criminal practice. The thief "taken with the manner" was by the Statute of West- minster the First not to be admitted to bail (see Letters of Junius, \xviii.). In modern procedure the

probable guilt or innocence of the accused is not so much to be considered in a question of bail as the probability of his appearance at the trial. The other matter worthy of notice is the old pursuit (secta) by hue and cry. In the pre-Conquest codes the owner was generally allowed to take the law into his own hand; as in early Roman law, and get back his goods by force if he could, no doubt with the assistance of his neighbours where possible. From this arose the later development of the hue and cry, as the recognized means of pursuing a thief. The Statutes of Westminster the First and of De officio coronatoris enacted that all men should be ready to pursue and arrest felons, and ten years later the Statute of Winchester (1285) enforced upon all the duty of keeping arms for the purpose of following the hue and cry. It also made the hundred liable for thefts with violence committed in it, an adoption no doubt in feudal law of the old pre-Conquest liability of the frith- borg. As justice became more settled, the hue and cry was regulated more and more by law, and lost much of its old natural simplicity. This led to its gradually becom- ing obsolete, though the Statutes of Westminster the First and De officio coronatoris are still nominally law as far as they relate to the hueandcry. The Statute of Winchester as to the liability of the hundred was repealed in 1827. The term theft in modern English law is sometimes used as a synonym of larceny, sometimes in a more com- prehensive sense. In the latter sense it is used by Mr Justice Stephen, who defines it as “the act of dealing from any motive whatever, unlawfully and without claim of right, with anything capable of being stolen, in any of the ways in which theft can be committed” (for which see § 296-300), “with the intention of permanently converting that thing to the use of any person other than the general or special owner thereof” (Digest of the Criminal Law, $295). In this broader sense the term applies to all cases of depriving another of his property, whether by removing or withholding it. Jt thus includes larceny, robbery, cheating, embezzlement, and breach of trust. Embezzle-

ment is a statutory crime created as a separate form of

RE For

offence in the last century (see vol. viii. p. 159). The difference between larceny and embezzlement turns mainly on the fact of the master’s being in

actual or constructive possession of the stolen property (see Possession). Fraud- ulent breach of trust was not made a specific offence until 1857 (see Trust).

Larceny (a corruption of latrociniwm), or theft proper, was felony at common law. The common law of larceny has been affected by numerous statutes, the main object of legislation being to bring within the law of larceny offences which were not larcenies at common law, either because they were thefts of things of which there could be no larceny at common law, ¢.g., beasts fera nature, title deeds, or choses in action, or because the common law regarded them merely as delicts for which the remedy was by civil action, e.g., fraudulent breaches of trust. The earlicst Act in the statutes of the realm dealing with larceny appears to be the Carta Forestz of 1225, by which fine or imprisonment was inflicted for stealing the king's deer. The next Act appears to be the Statute of West- minster the First (1275), dealing again with stealing deer. From this it secms as though the beginning of legislation on the subject was for the purpose of protecting the chases and parks of the king and the nobility. An immense mass of the old Acts will be found named in the repealing Act of 1827, 7 and 8 Geo. IV. c. 27. An Act of the saine date, 7 and 8 Geo. IV. c. 29, removed the old dis- tinction between grand and petit larceny.1 The former was theft of goods above the value of twelve pence, in the house of the owner, not from the person, or by night, and was a capital crime. It was petit larceny where the value was twelve pence or under, the punishment being imprisonment or whipping. The gradual depreciation in the value of money afforded good ground for Sir Henry Spelman's sarcasm that, while overt hag else became dearer, the life of man became continually cheaper. The distine- tion between grand and petit larceny first appears in statute law in the Statute of Westminster the First, c. 15, but it was not created for the first time by that statute. It is found in some of the pre- Conquest codes, as that of Athelstan, and it is recognized in the Leges Henricit Primt. A distinction between simple and compound larceny is still found in the books. The latter is larceny accom- panied by circumstances of aggravation, as that it is in a dwelling- house or from the person. 'The law of larceny is now contained chiefly in the Larceny Act, 1861, 24 and 25 Vict. c. 96 (which extends to England and Ireland), a comprehensive enactment including larceny, embezzlement, fraud by bailees, agents, bankers, factors, and trustees,

sacrilege, burglary, housebreaking, robbery, obtaining money by threats or by false pretences, and receiving stolen goods, and prescribing procedure, both civil and criminal. There are still, however, some earlier Acts in force dealing with special cases of larceny, such as 88 Hen. VIII. c. 12, as to stealing the goods of the king, and the Game, Post-Office, and Merchant Shipping Acts. Later Acts provide for larceny by a partner of partnership property (31 and 32 Vict. c. 116), and by a husband or wife of the property of the other (45 and 46 Vict. c. 75). Pro- ceedings against persons subject to naval or military law depend upon the Naval Discipline Act, 1866, and the Army Act, 1881. There are several Acts, both before and after 1861, directing how the property is to be laid in indictments for stealing the goods of counties, friendly societies, trades unions, &c. The principal con- ditions which must exist in order to constitute larceny are these:— (1) there must be an actual taking into the possession of the thief, though the smallest removal is sufficient; (2) there must be an intent to deprive the owner of his property for an indefinite period, and to assume the entire dominion over it, an intent often described in Bracton's words as animus furandi; (8) this intent must exist at the time of taking; (4) the thing taken must be one capable of larceny either at common law or by statute. One or two cases falling under the law of larceny are of special interest. It was held more than once that a servant taking corn for the purpose of feeding his master's horses, but without any intention of applying it for his own benefit, was guilty of larceny. To remedy this hard- ship, 26 and 27 Vict. c. 108 was passed to declare such an act not to be felony. The case of appropriation of goods which have been found has led to some difficulty. It now seems to be the law that in order to constitute a larceny of lost goods there must be a felonious intent at the time of finding, that is, an intent to deprive the owner of them, coupled with reasonable means at the same time of knowing the owner. The mere retention of tle goods when the owner has become known to the finder does not make the retention criminal. Larceny of money may be committed when the money is paid by mistake, if the prisoner took it animo furandi. In two recent cases the question was argued before a very full Court for Crown Cases Reserved, and in each case there was a striking difference of opinion. In Reg. v. Middleton, Law Rep., 2 Crown

1 This provision was most unnecessarily repeated in the Larceny Act of 1861.

an ae FP

Cases Reserved, 38, the prisoner, a depositor in a post-office savings bank, received by the mistake of the clerk a larger sum than he was entitled to. The jury found that he had the animus furandi at the time of taking the money, and that he knew it to be the money of the postmaster-general. The majority of the court held it to be larceny. In a case in 1885 (Reg. v. Ashwell, Law Rep., 16 Qucen's Bench Division, 190), where the prosecutor gave the prisoner a sovereign believing it to be a shilling, and the prisoner took it under that belief, but afterwards discovered its valuc and retained it, the court was equally divided as to whether the prisoner was guilty of larceny at common law, but held that he was not guilty of larceny as a bailee. The procedure in prosecutions for larceny has been considerably affected by recent legislation. The incon- veniences of the common-law rules of interpretation of indictments led to certain amendments of the law, now contained in the Larceny Act, for the purpose of avoiding the frequent failures of justice owing to the strictness with which indictments were construed. Three larcenies of property of the same person within six months may now be charged in one indictment. On an indictment for larceny the prisoner may be found guilty of embezzlement, and viee versa ; and if the prisoner be indicted for obtaining goods by false pretences, and the offence turn out to be larceny, he is not entitled to be acquitted of the misdemeanour. A count for receiv- ing may be joined witli the connt for stealing. In many cases it is unnecessary to allege or prove ownership of the property the sub- ject of the indictment. The Act also contains numerous provisions as to venue and the apprehension of offenders. In another direc- tion the powers of courts of SUMMARY JURISDICTION (9.v.) have been extended, in the case of charges of larceny, embezzlement, and receiving stolen goods, against children and young persons and against adults pleading guilty or waiving their right to trial by jury. The maximum punishment for larceny is fourteen years' penal servitude, but this can only be inflicted in certain exceptional cases, such as horse or cattle stealing and larceny by a servant or a person in the service of the crown or the police. The extreme vunishment for simple larceny after a previous conviction for felony is ten years' penal servitude. Whipping may be part of the sen- tence on boys under sixteen.

Lobbery is larceny accompanied by violence or threatened violence. Whether obtaining money by threats to accuse of crime was robbery at common law was open to some doubt. It is now a specific offence under the Larceny Act, punishable by penal servitude for life. Whipping may be added as part of the sentence for robbery by 26 and 27 Vict. c. 44.

Cheating is either a common-law or statutory offence. An indictment for cheating at common law is now of comparatively rare occurrence. The statutory crime of obtaining money by false pretences is the form in which the offence generally presents itself. Like embezzlement, this offence dates as a statutory crime from the last century. It now depends upon the Larceny Act. A false pretence is defined by Mr Justice Stephen as "a false representa- tion made either by words, by writing, or by conduct that some fact or facts existed" (Digest of the Criminal Law, § 330). The principal points to notice are that the false pretence must be of an existing fact (e.g., it was held not to be a false pretence to promise to pay for goods on delivery), and that property must have been actually obtained by the false pretence. 'The broad distinction between this offence and larceny is that in the former the owner intends to part with his property, in the latter he does not. By 22 aud 23 Vict. c. 17, no indictment for obtaining money by false pretences is to be presented or found by the grand jury unless the defendant has been committed for trial or the indictment is authorized in one of the ways mentioned in the Act. The maximum punishment for the common-law offence is fine or imprisonment at discretion, for the statutory five years' penal servitude.

Stolen Goods.—The owner of the goods stolen has an action against the thief for the goods or their value. How far he is entitled to pursue his civil right to the exclusion of criminal prosecution does not seem very clear upon the authorities. Onc of the latest statements of the law was that of Mr Justice Watkin Williams :—" It has been said that the true principle of the common law is that there is neither a merger of the civil right, nor is it a strict condition precedent to such right that there shall have been a prosecution of the felon, but that there is a duty imposed upon the injured person not to resort to the prosecution of his private suit to the neglect and exclusion of the vindication of the public law ; in my opinion this view is the correct one" (Midland Insur- ance Company v. Smith, Law Rep., 6

Queen’s Bench Division, 568). Dealing with stolen goods by persons other than the thief may affect the rights of such persons either criminally or civilly. Two varieties of crime arise from such dealings. (1) Recciving stolen goods knowing them to have been stolen, a misdemeanour at common law, is by the Larceny Act a felony punishable by penal servitude for fourteen years where the theft amounts to felony, a misdemeanour punishable by penal servitude for seven years where the theft is a mnisdemeanour, as in obtaining goods by false pretences. Recent possession of stolen property may, according to circumstances,

support the presumption that the prisoner is a thief or that he is a receiver. The Prevention of Crime Act, 1871, made important changes in the law of evidence in charges of receiving. It allows, under proper safeguards, evidence to be given in the course of the trial of the finding of other stolen property in the possession of the accused, and of a previous conviction for any offence involving fraud and dishonesty. (2) Compounding theft, or theftbote, that is, taking back stolen goods or receiving compensation on condition of not prosecuting, isa misdemeanour at common law. It necd not necessarily be committed by the owner of the goods. Under the Larceny Act it is a felony punishable by seven years’ penal servi- tude to corruptly take money or reward for helping to recover stolen goods without using all due diligence to bring the offender to trial. By the same Act, to advertise or print or publish any advertisement offering a reward for the return of stolen goods, and using any words purporting that no questions will be asked, &c., renders the offender liable to a penalty of £50. This penalty must, by 83 and 34 Vict. c. 65, be sued for within six months, and the assent of the attorney-general is necessary. Various Acts provide for the liabilities of pawnbrokers, publicans, miarine-store dealers, and others into whose possession stolen goods come. Search for stolen goods can only be undertaken by a police officer under the protection of a search warrant. The law as to stolen goods, as far as it affects the civil rights and liabilities of the owner and third parties, is shortly as follows. Asa gencral rule a purchaser takes goods subject to any infirmities of title. The property in money, bank-notes, and negotiable instruments passes by delivery, and a person taking any of these bona fide and for value is entitled to retain it as against a former owner

from whom it may have been stolen. In the case of other goods, a bona fide purchaser of stolen goods in markct overt (see SALE) obtains a good title (except as against the crown), provided that the thief has not been convicted. After conviction of the thief the property revests in the owner, and the court before which the thief was convicted may order restitu- tion, except in the cases specially mentioned in the Larceny Act, z.e., the bona fide discharge or transfer of a security for value with- out notice and the fraudulent dealing by a trustee, banker, &e., with goods and documents of title to goods entrusted to him. After conviction of the thief the goods must be recovered from the person in whose hands they are at the time of the conviction, for any sales and resales, if the first sale was in market overt, are good until conviction of the thief. If the goods were obtained by false pretences and not by larceny, the question then is whether the property in the goods has passed or not, and the answer to this question depends upon the nature of the false pretences employed. If the vendee obtains possession of goods with the intention by the vendor to transfer both the property and the possession, the property vests in the vendee until the vendor has done some act to dis- affirm the transaction. But if there was never any such inten- tion, —if, for instance, the vendor delivers the goods to A. B. under the belief that he is C. D.,—the property does not vest in the transferee, and the owner may recover the goods even from a bona Jide purchaser. }

Scotland.—There is a vast quantity of Acts of the Scottish parlia- ment dealing with theft. The general policy of the Acts was to make thefts what were not thefts at common law, eg., stealing fruit, dogs, hawks, or deer, and to extend the remedies, e.g., by giving the justiciar authority throughout the kingdom, by making the master in the case of theft by the servant liable to give the latter up to justice, or by allowing the use of firearms against thieves. The general result of legislation in England and Scotland has been to assimilate the law of theft in both kingdoms. As a rule, what would be theft in one would be theft in the other. There can be theft of children in Scots as in Roman law, under the name of plagiwm. The crime of stouthrief is robbery accom- panied by exceptional violence. The English receiving stolen goods and obtaining money under false pretences are represented by the reset and fraud of Scots law. Theftbote or redemptio furti appears in Icgislation as early as the assizes of King William, ec. 2. The offender was there subjected to the ordeal of water if convicted on the oath of three

witnesses, to be immediately hanged if the oath of three seniores were added. The offence was made punish- able by 1436, c. 1, 1515, c. 2, and appears still to be a crime. Blackmailing, under that name, was forbidden by 1567, c. 27. There is no consolidation Act for Scotland like the Larceny Act for England and Ireland, but various Acts are in force dealing with specific offences or with procedure. Thus 7 Anne c. 21, § 7, makes theft by landed men no longer treason, as it had previously been. 4 Geo. II. c. 32 deals with theft of lead, &c., fixed to houses, 21 Geo. II. c. 34 with the admissibility of an accomplice as witness in a charge of cattle stealing, 51 Geo. III. c. 41 with theft of linen, &c. The most important Act relating to procedure is 31 and 82 Vict. c. 95, § 12, by which a previous conviction for theft may be libelled and proved as aggravation of robbery, and a

1 For the Roman and English law, see, besides the authorities cited, Hunter,

Roman Law; Muirhead, Roman Law; 4 Stephen, Commentaries, pt. vi. chap. v.; 3 Stephen, Hist. of the Criminal Law, chap. xxviii.

previous conviction for robbery as aggravation of theft. Stolen goods are always taken subject to the inherent vitiwm reale of their acquisition, and the true owner may recover them from any one in whose possession they are. The protection given by markct overt is unknown in Scotland. Sce Macdonald, Criminal Law, p. 18. United Stotes—The law depends almost entirely upon State

THE

HE term theism has three significations. In its

legislation, and is in general accordance with that of England The only Acts of Congress bearing on the subject deal with theft in the army and navy, and with theft and receiving on the high seas or in any place under the exclusive jurisdiction of the United States. The doctrine of market overt is not acknowledged by any State. (J. Wt)

ISM

Meanings It is somewhat remarkable that the term theism by itself Theism of the widest acceptation its object is the Divine, whether | never occurs in its etymological and generic sense, never inarily roe regarded as personal or impersonal, as one being or as | means as a separate word what it means in the compounds a theism : ; : . – : : : . Valent to Tits a number of beings. In this sense theism is coexten- atheism, polytheism, pantheism, and monotheism. Ordin- mono, generic sive with religion and worship, includes all forms of | arily it is identified with monotheism, and consequently theism, sense, polytheism and of pantheism, as well as all varieties of opposed to polytheism and to pantheism, as well as to monotheism, and so may be said to denote the genus of | atheism. Whereas polytheism acknowledges a plurality which polytheism, pantheism, and monotheism are species. | of finite gods, theism as monotheism acknowledges only The conception of the Divine, in its utmost abstractness | one absolute infinite God. Whereas pantheism regards and generality, is, however, so vague that it may reason- | all finite things as merely aspects, modifications, or parts ably be doubted if the forms of theism, thus understood, | of one eternal self-existent being—all material objects and can be distributed into strictly logical and natural species, | all particular minds as necessarily derived from a single with definitions at once perfectly distinct in themselves | infinite substance,—and thus combines, in its conception and exactly accordant with phenomena. It may seem | of the Divine, monism and determinism, theism as mono- as if polytheism and monotheism must, by arithmetical | theism, while accepting monism, rejects determinism, and necessity, be exclusive of each other and exhaustive of | attributes to the Divine all that is essentially implied in theism; but this is not so. Pantheism may clearly | free personal existence and agency. Pantheism is, how- partake of the nature of both, and has been sometimes | ever, wonderfully protean, and rarely conforms to its extravagantly polytheistic, sometimes only doubtfully dis- | ideal; hence the systems called pantheistic are seldom tinguishable from fully developed monotheism. Probably | purely pantheistic, and are often more monotheistic than few, if any, polytheistic religions are purely polytheistic, | pantheistic. or, in other words, do not imply in some mode and Sometimes the term theism is employed in a still more Theism measure the unity as well as the plurality of the Divine. | special sense, namely, to

denote one of two kinds of and Christian ‘monotheism answers to a formal definition of | monotheism, the other kind being deism. Although deus “sm. monotheism only inasmuch as it holds to the unity of the | and theos are equivalent, deism has» come to be dis- Godhead, but contravenes it inasmuch as it holds that in | tinguished from theism. The former word first appeared the one Godhead there are three Divine persons, each | in the 16th century, when it was used to designate God. j antitrinitarian opinions. In the 17th century it came to Tts The complete negation of theism in its generie sense is | be applied to the view that the light of nature is the only negatives. atheism—the denial of the existence or of the knowability | light in which man can know God, no special revelation

of the Divine. It is only in modern times that the word atheism has acquired this meaning, only in recent times that it has come to be exclusively employed with this meaning. The Greeks meant by it simply disbelief in the Greek gods. The early Christians were called atheists because they refused to acknowledge the pagan deities. Protestants have been charged by Roman Catholics and Roman Catholics by Protestants with atheism. Through- out even the 18th century the word was used in an extremely loose manner, and often affixed to systems by which the existence and agency of God were unequivocally recognized. Atheism, in the sense now generally admitted to be alone appropriate, may be of three species,—namely, denial of the existence of the Divine, denial that the Divine has been shown to exist, and denial that it can be known that the Divine exists, The first species has been called dogmatic atheism, the second critical atheism ; and the third has been designated, and may conveniently be de- signated, religious agnosticism. Agnosticism per se should not be identified with atheism or with any of its forms. The term antitheism has been used by some theologians, e.g., Chalmers and Foster, as equivalent to dogmatic atheism ; but it may with much more practical advantage be employed to denote all systems of belief opposed to theism, either in the generic sense already indicated, or in the specific sense of monotheism. Understood in this latter mode, it is much more comprehensive than the term atheism. Polytheism and pantheism are alike antitheistic theories, although on different grounds ; while only those theories which deny that there is evidence for belief even in the existence of any god, any divine being, are atheistic.

having been given to the human race. Dr Samuel Clarke, in the Boyle Lectures preached in 1705, distributed deists into fourclasses. The first class "‘ pretend to believe the existence of an eternal, infinite, independent, intelli- gent being, and, to avoid the name of Epicurean atheists, teach also that this supreme being made the world ; though at the same time they agree with the Epicureans in this, that they fancy God does not at all concern Himself in the government of the world, nor has any regard to, or care of, what is done therein." The second class acknow- ledge not only that God made all things, but that He sustains and governs them, yet deny that He has any regard in His government to moral distinctions, these being merely the products of human will and law. The third class believe in the being, natural attributes, pro- vidence, and to some extent in the moral attributes and government of God, but deny the immortality of the soul and a future state of rewards and punishments. The fourth class acknowledge the being, natural and moral perfections, and providence of God, as also the immor- tality of the soul and a future state of rewards and punishments, yet profess to believe only what is discover- able by the light of nature, without believing any divine revelation (Clarke, On the Attributes, pp. 140-153, ed. 1823). This division is not an exact classification, nor does it rest on any precise definition of deism, but it, with substantial accuracy, discriminates and grades the varieties of English deism. Clarke did not contrast deism with theism, or even employ the latter word, His contem- porary, Lord Shaftesbury, on the other hand, generally used the term theism, yet only as synonymous with deism,

RHEE Ss

and with a protest against either being opposed to revela- tion (Characteristics, vol. ii. p. 209, ed. 1727). Kant, in his Kritik der reinen Vernunft, explicitly distinguished and opposed deism and theism, but in a very peculiar manner. ‘The person who believes in a transcendental theology alone is termed a deist; he who acknowledges the possibility of a natural theology also, a theist. The former admits that we can cognize by pure reason alone

holding any view regarding the nature of primeval religion as established. The data which carry us farthest in our search for the historical origin of religion are undoubtedly the names expressive of the Divine which have been pre- served in the most ancient languages. They show us how men conceived of the Divinity long before the erection of the oldest monuments or the inscription of the oldest records. Language is much older than any of the state-

the existence of a supreme being, but at the same time maintains that our conception of this being is purely

ments in language. But language by no means carries us Evidence back to primitive man, or even to the historical origin of of lan-

transcendental, and that all that we can say of it is that it possesses all reality, without being able to define it more closely. The second asserts that reason is capable of presenting us, from the analogy of nature, with a more definite conception of this being, and that its operations, as the cause of all things, are the results of intelligence and free will. The former reyvards the supreme being as the cause of the world—whether by the necessity of his nature, or as a free agent, is left undetermined ; the latter considers this being as the author of the world" (Werke, ii, 491, edited by Rosenkranz, Meiklejohn's tr., 387-8). The account here given of deism seems neither self-con- sistent nor intelligible, and applies, equally well or equally ill, to every system—atheistic, agnostic, pantheistic, ideal- istic, or materialistic—which admits the existence but not the intelligence or personality of an Urwesen, eternal being, or first cause ; and the account of theism excludes all reference to revelation, and applies to every form of what has been regarded as deism. In recent theology deism has generally come to be regarded as, in common with theism, holding in opposition to atheism that there is a God, and in opposition to pantheisni that God is distinct from the world, but as differing from theism in maintain- ing that God is separate from the world, having endowed it with self-sustaining and self-acting powers, and then abandoned it to itself. This distinction is real, and perhaps the best attainable. At the same time many called deists must be adniitted not to have taught deism thus understood ; for example, most of the " English deists" did not deny that God was present and active in the laws of

nature, but merely denied that He worked otherwise than through natural laws. If by deism be meant belief in a personal God who acts only through natural laws, and by theism belief in a personal God who acts both through natural laws and by special interven- tions, this distinction also is real, and may be useful. The chief objection to it is that deism when so contrasted with theism does not denote, or even include, what theologians have generally agreed to call by the name.

The present article will treat specially of theism in the seuse of monotheism, but not to the exclusion of the relations between theism thus understood and theism in other acceptations,

Monotheism has been very generally assumed to have

me been the primitive religion. Lord Herbert, Cudworth,

and others have elaborately defended this opinion in the past, and it still finds learned advocates. On the other hand, the vast majority of recent anthropologists hold that religion originated in some rude phase of polytheism, and that monotheism has been everywhere preceded by poly- theism. Schelling, Max Miiller, and Hartmann have main- tained that the starting-point of religion was henotheism, an imperfect kind of monotheism, in which God was thought of as one, only because others had not yet presented thein- selves to the mind,—a monotheism of which polytheism was not the contradiction, but the natural development. Pantheism has also been frequently represented to be the earliest phase of religion. All these representations, how- ever, will be found on examination to be very conjectural. The present state of our knowledge does not warrant our

the idea of deity. The Egyptian word nutar and the &%8¢ i2-

names of the Egyptian gods found in the oldest Egyptian inscriptions prove that at a date long before the Egyptians wrote history, or are known to have worshipped animals or ancestors, they conceived of Divinity as power, and their deities as great cosmic forces ; but, as that word and these names cannot be shown to have belonged to man’s primitive speech, they cannot show what was man’s primitive religious belief, and do not disprove that

the forefathers of the people who first used them may have had some lower and ruder conception of the Divine than that which they convey. There are, according to Dr Legge, no words in the Chinese language known to be older than ti, (ven, shang-ti, and these words are good historical evidence that the Chinese conceived of the Divine, thousands of years before the Christian era, as a universal ruling power, comprehending the visible heavens, and an invisible, infinite, omnipresent force, manifested in the azure of the firmament, possessed so far of intellectual and moral qualities, and working towards ethical ends. There is no evidence that when the Chinese first used these words they worshipped fetiches, but neither is there evidence to the contrary, and even if there were it would not disprove that the ancestors of the Chinese had passed through an era of fetichism. All members of the Semitic family of languages have the word £7, or some modifica- tion of it, to denote deity, and hence we may conclude that the Semites had the word in this sense before they separated and became distinct peoples, but not that the idea of God originated when the word was first thus employed. All members of the Teutonic group of languages have the word God, or some slightly modified form thereof, and all members of the Slavic group of languages have the word Jog, or some modification thereof, to express the same conception : it does not follow that either Teutons or Slavs had no idea of deity until the former so applied the word God, and the latter so applied the word Bog. Both Teutons and Slavs are Aryans, and there is an older Aryan term for deity than either God or Bog. The Sanscrit deva, the Latin deus, and the northern ti, tivar, are forms of a word which must have been used by the Aryans to express their idea of the Divine when, in a prehistoric age, they lived together in their original home ; but we are not entitled to infer that even that prehistoric: Aryan term is the oldest word for deity. It may not be older than the primitive Semitic word or the primitive Turanian word, or the nutar of the Egyptians, or the ¢’en of the Chinese, or the earliest designations for the Divine in the earliest African and American languages. And there may have been Divine names older than any of these. The science of language has been able to recon- struct in part a prehistoric Aryan language, and may similarly be able to reconstruct a prehistoric Semitic language, a prehistoric Turanian, and perhaps a prehistoric Hamitic language. Should it proceed thus far it will probably perceive that all these prehistoric languages arose out of a still earlier prehistoric language in which also were words expressing ideas of

the Divine. There may be many strata of language buried too deep for human excavation in the abysses of unrecorded time. By no pos-

sibility, therefore, can the analysis of existing languages disclose to us the oldest name for deity or the historical origin of the idea of deity. Geology shows the vast antiquity of man, and nothing proves that he may not have been awed or comforted by thoughts of the Divine

ages before the invention of the oldest Aryan or Semitic'

words. It is merest conjecture to assign the formation of the conception of deity to the dawn of historic time. Between primitive speech, primitive religion, the primitive condition of man, and the little streak of light called human history there stretches an immeasurable expanse of darkness.

The belief in primitive monotheism is generally rested on the authority of the opening chapters of Genesis. It is, however, doubtful if the appeal to them be legitimate, because doubtful if their strict historicity can be proved to those who insist on judging them merely by critical and historical criteria, or even if it can be fairly inferred from the view that they form part of a revelation. Then, although these chapters plainly teach monotheism, and represent the God whose words and acts are recorded in the Bible as no mere national God but the only true God, they do not teach, what is alone in question, that there was a primitive monotheism, ~~—a monotheism revealed and known from the beginning. They give no warrant to the common assumption that God revealed monotheism to Adam, Noah, and others before the flood, and that the traces of monotheistic beliefs and tendencies in heathen~~ dom are derivable from the tradition of this primitive and antediluvian monotheism. The one true God is repre- sented in Genesis as making himself known by particular words and in particular ways to Adam, but is nowhere said to have taught him that He only was God. Adam knew, of course, only one God, as there was only one God to know; but that he knew there was only one God we are not told, nor are any grounds given us even for con- jecturing that he knew it. We are told that God created the heavens and earth, but not that Adam was told it, and we know too little about Adam to be able to conceive how he could have understood the

statement. We are informed that he knew God—the God who manifested himself to him in particular acts, but not what general idea he formed of God—whether henotheistic, pantheistic, or monotheistic, whether definitely exclusive of poly- theism or not, or in what measure anthropomorphic. It is not otherwise as regards what is reported of Noah. In fact, primitive monotheism is read into the records in Genesis only because they are read in an inaccurate and uncritical manner. If read aright, it would be seen that, while they speak much of how God acted towards man, they speak so extremely little as to what carly man knew of God that the appeal to them on behalf of the hypo- thesis of primitive monotheism must be futile, even on the traditional view of their authorship and historicity.

It is impossible to prove historically that monotheism ie was the primitive religion, Were, then, the oldest known E cy Rae historical forms of religion monotheistic? Many maintain gions not they were, but adequate evidence has never been adduced mono- for the opinion. The oldest known religion is probably theistic. the Egyptian, and for at least three thousand years its

ee ee ee

1 Among works in which the hypothesis of primitive monotheism is supported, the following may be mentioned :—Steuco, De Perenni Philosophia, 1540; Herbert, De Religione Gentilium, 1645; Gale, Court of the Gentiles, 1669-78; Cudworth, True Intellectual System, 1678 ; Bryant, Ancient Mythology, 1774-76 ; Crenzer, Symbolik u. Mythologie, 1819-21 ; De Bonald, Législation Primitive, 1819 ; Liiken, Lraditionen des Menschengeschlechts, 1856 ; Gladstone, ZZomer and the Homeric Age, 1860; Ebrard, A pologetik, pt. ii., 1875; Zockler, Lehre vom Urstand des Menschen, 1880 ; Cook, Origins of Religion

and Language, 1884 ; Rawlinson, Harly Prevalence of Monotheistic Beliefs (No. 11 of Present Day Tracts).

Evidence of book of Genesis.

Evidence of his-

PR 1 Se

history can be traced by the aid of authentic records con- temporary with the facts to which they relate. origin, however, is not disclosed by Egyptian history, and was unknown to the Egyptians themselves. When it first appears in the light of history it has already a definite form, a character not rude and simple, but of considerable elevation and subtility, and is complex in contents, having certain great gods, but not so many as in later times, ancestor-worship, but not so developed as in later times, and animal worship, but very little of it as compared with later times. For the opinion that its lower elements were older than the higher there is not a particle of properly historical evidence,—not a trace in the inscriptions of mere propitiation of ancestors, or of belief in the absolute divinity of kings or animals; on the contrary, ancestors are always found propitiated through prayer to some of the great gods, kings worshipped as emanations and images of the sun-god, and the divine animals adored as divine symbols and incarnations. The greater gods mentioned on the oldest tombs and in the oldest writings are comparatively few, and their mere names—Osiris, Horus, Thoth, Seb, Nut, Anubis, Apheru, Ra, Isis, Neith, Apis—conclusively prove that they were not ancient kings or deceased ancestors, but chiefly powers of nature, and especially, although not exclusively, of the heavens ; yet from the earliest historical time they were regarded as not merely elemental, but as also ethical powers, working indeed visibly and physically in the aspects and agents of nature, yet in conformity to law and with intelligence and moral purpose. Wherever the powers of nature are thus worshipped as gods, the feeling that the separate powers are not all power, that the particular deities are not the whole of divinity, must be entertained and will find expression. The Egyptians had undoubtedly such a sense of the unity of the Divine from the dawn of their history, and they expressed it so strongly in various ways from a very early period that they have been pronounced mono- theists not merely by theologians attached to a traditional dogma but by most eminent Egyptologists—De Rougé, Mariette, Brugsch, and Renouf. As these scholars, how- ever, truthfully present the facts, they satisfactorily refute themselves. A religion with about a dozen great gods— distinct as regards their names, characteristics, histories, relationships, symbols, and worship—is not monotheisin in the ordinary or proper sense of the term. A religion in which the Divine is viewed as merely immanent in nature, and the deities deemed physical as well as moral, elemental as well as ethical powers, is rather pantheistic than

mono- theistic. Further, all assertions to the effect that the unity of the Divine is most emphatically expressed in the earliest historical stages of the religion are contrary to the evidence adduced even by those who make them. To quote Patah-Hotep as a proof of the monotheism of the Egyptian religion in its oldest historical phase is as

| uncritical as it would be to draw Homeric theology from

the dialogues of Plato. The Egyptian religion was a polytheism which implied monism; it was not mono- theism, which is exclusive of polytheism. Hence, not- withstanding frequent approximations to monotheism, the general result of the development of its monistic principles was pantheism, not monotheism.

description of it as “a purified and organized worship of spirits, with a predominant fetichist tendency,” has no historical warrant, but he fails completely to substantiate his own view, namely, that it was a strict and proper monotheism. The names T’ien and Ti afford no evidence that the early Chinese fathers regarded deity as truly and properly spiritual and personal. It is not in the most ancient Chinese writings that spirituality and personality

Egyptian Its religion

As to the ancient Chinese Chinese religion, Dr Legge easily shows that Prof. Tiele’s eligi

ee 1s M

are ascribed to T’ien, and such ascriptions are exceptional in Chinese writings of any date. The great development of ancestor worship in China has been largely due to the impersonal character of Tien. The arguments which . have been adduced in support of the hypothesis of a primitive Semitic monotheism are also insufficient. M. Renan’s belief in a monotheistic instinct peculiar to the Semitic race has been so often and so convincingly shown to be contradicted both by history and psychology that another refutation of it might well be regarded as a mere slaying of the slain. Divine names like El, Baal, Adon, and Melech, being the oldest terms

in the Semitic languages expressive of the Divinity, and having been retained through all the changes and perversions of Semitic reli- gion, have often been maintained to imply that primitive Semitic belief was monotheistic. But in reality Baal,

Melech, and Adon were not names originally, or indeed:

at any time, given to the one Supreme God, or exclusively to any particular god; on the contrary, they were titles applicable to many different gods. The oldest historical . form of Aryan religion—the form in which the Vedas present it—is designated by Max Miiller henotheism, in opposition to the organized anthropomorphic polytheism to which, he restricts the term polytheism, but henotheism thus understood includes polytheism in its wider and more ordinary acceptation, while it excludes monotheism pro- perly so called. The oldest known form of Aryan religion was indubitably polytheistic in the sense of being the worship of various nature-deities ; and everything approxi- mating to monotheism in India, Persia, Greece, and other Aryan-peopled lands was the product of later and more advanced thought. ‘The assertion that history everywhere or even anywhere shows religious belief to have com- menced with monotheism is not only unsupported by evidence, but contrary to evidence.!

While the oldest known religions of the world were thus not forms of monotheism, neither were they mere poly- theisms, wholly devoid of monistic and monotheistic germs and tendencies. The Chinese religion, indeed, can hardly be said to have been at any period a polytheism, the Chinese people no more regarding spirits and deceased ancestors as gods than Roman Catholics so regard angels and saints. They have throughout their whole known history explicitly and clearly acknowledged the unity of the Divine—the uniqueness of T’ien (Ti, Shang-Ti). Had they in like manner acknowledged the spirituality, per- sonality, transcendence of the Divine, their monotheism would have been indubitable. Then, even in those ancient religions, where a plurality of deities is apparent, a sense of the unity of the Divine is notwithstanding implied, and in the course of their development comes to expression in various ways. It could not be otherwise, for in these religions the divine powers (deities) are also powers of nature, and hence sprung from and participant in a mysterious common

nature, an ultimate and universal agency which is at once the source of physical and divine existences and forces. Neither nature-deities nor powers of nature are ever conceived of, or indeed can be conceived of, as entirely distinct and independent. ‘The lowest forms of polytheism, such as fetichism and animism, have no more marked characteristic than the indefiniteness of their

1 The view opposed in the above paragraph is that maintained in the following works (as well as those mentioned in the previous note), —De Rougé, Etudes sur le Rituel Funéraire, 1860; Renouf, Hibbert Lectures, 1879 ; Brugsch, Religion u. Mythologie d. alten Aegypter, 1884 ; Legge, Religion of the Chinese, 1880 ; Renan, Hist. des Langues Sémitiques, also Considérations sur le Caractere Gen. des Peuples Seimitiques, and Nouvelles Considerations ; Pesch, Der Gottesbegriff in den heidnischen Religionen des Alterthwms, 1886. Among the many replies to Renan, Max Miiller’s (“Semitic Monotheism,” in Chips, vol. i.) and Steinthal’s (in 7. V.S.IV., i.) specially merit to be mentioned.

idea of the Divine and the iniperfect individualization of their deities. In the highest forms of nature-worship, e.g., the Vedic, Egyptian, and Babylonian-Assyrian, the same trait is perceptible. This implicit monism of nature-worship may, through the action of various causes, come to explicit utterance in diverse modes, and has in fact done so, with the result that even in the oldest known poly- theisms are to be found remarkable approximations to monotheism. One form of approximation was henotheism. When worship is ardent and earnest the particular god worshipped is apt to have ascribed to him the attributes, as it were, of all the gods—an almost absolute and exclusive godhead. Max Miiller has shown how prominent a phenonienon henotheism is in the Vedas. Page Renouf has shown that it is very conspicuous also in the ancient inscriptions and hymns of Egypt. Horus, Ra, Osiris, Amun, Knum, were severally spoken of as if each were absolute God, invested not only with distinctive divine attributes but with all divine attributes. In the religious records of Babylon and Assyria mionotheistic approxima- tions of the same kind are likewise common. Now, in theniselves such monotheistic modes of expression may

truly be held to be the products of passing moods of mind, not reflexions of permanent conviction. But every mood of mind tends to perpetuate itself, and the enthusiasm of piety which utters itself in henotheistic praises and prayers may take abiding possession of the soul of a powerful ruler or even of the hearts of a whole class of society or of a whole people, and may seem to them to find the strongest possible confirmation in experience. We may illustrate from Assyrian religious history. Tiglath-Pileser showed a marked preference for the worship of Asshur, to him ‘king of all the gods,” ‘‘he who rules supreme over the gods.” Nebuchadnezzar, again, showed a great partiality for the god Merodach, and applied exclusively to him such magnificent titles as “the lord of all beings,” “the lord of the house of the gods,” “‘ the lord of lords,” ‘ the lord of the gods,” “ the king of heaven and earth.” Nabonidus, on the other hand, specially revered Sin, the moon-god, and represented him as “the great divinity,” “the king of gods upon gods,” “the chief and king of the gods of heaven and earth.”

heart of the devout may be directed exclusively to the | polytheisms which they built up in their youth have been

power of the powers, the God in the gods, God simply, the Divinity. The formation of names expressing Divinity in the abstract is an evidence of the existence of such a process, and names of the kind are to be found even among very rude peoples. But there are more obvious and con- clusive indications. In one of the most ancient of books, for example, and probably the oldest manuscript in the world, the maxims of Patah-Hotep, a wise Egyptian prince of the fifth dynasty, God simply (nutar) is often spoken of without a name or any mythological characteristic, and in a way which is in itself quite monotheistic. “If any one beareth himself proudly he will be humbled by God, who maketh his strength.” “If thou art a wise man, bring up thy son in the love of God.” ‘God loveth the obedient, and hateth the disobedient.” Sentences like these standing alone would be pronounced by every one monotheistic ; and even when standing alongside of refer- ences to “ gods” and “ powers ” they show that said gods and powers were not deemed by the Egyptian sage incon- sistent with oneness of power and

godhead or exhaustive of their fulness. In Babylonian-Assyrian religious history there are also distinct traces of the rise of the spirits of worshippers above particular deities, simply to deity. Sometimes they appear with special clearness in con- nexions which tell of awakened and afflicted conscience, of the pressure of a sense of sin and guilt forcing on the heart, as it were, a conviction of One with whom it has to deal, of its need of the forgiveness and favour, not of this god or of that, but of God. The following passage may be cited as an instance. ‘‘O my Lord, my sins are many, my trespasses are great, and the wrath of the gods has plagued me with disease, and with sickness and sorrow. I fainted, but no one stretched forth his hand! I groaned, but no one heard! O Lord, do not abandon Thy servant ; in the waters of the great stream do Thou take his hand ; the sins which he has committed do Thou turn to righteous- ness.” Many parallel passages might be drawn from Hindu, Greek, and other sources. Clearness of moral perception is decidedly favourable to monotheistic belief. The practical reason contributes as well as the speculative reason, and precisely in the measure of its healthiness and vigour, to the formation of a true idea of the Divine. It was due more to their moral earnestness and insight than to their intellectual superiority that the Persians came nearer to monotheism than any other people of heathen antiquity. Ahriman was entirely evil, and therefore only to be hated and combated; while Ahuramazd was abso- lutely divine, perfectly good, and therefore to be supremely worshipped and obeyed. This moral dualism approached more closely to true monotheism than the later speculative monism, which placed above both Ahuramazd and Ahriman Zervanakarene, boundless time, indeterminate being, an ethically indifferent destiny. Finally, reason in striving to understand and explain the world tends towards mono- theism. The mind cannot be expected to recognize the unity of God until it recognizes the unity of nature; when it sees nature to be a whole, a universe or cosmos, it cannot but form a conception of it which will be panthe- istic, if the unity of substance, law, and evolution be alone acknowledged, and monotheistic if a unity of causality, rational plan, and ethical purpose be also apprehended. In the measure in which reason advances either on the path of scientific investigation or of philosophical specu- lation, polytheisn1 must retreat and disappear ; in the measure in which it discerns unity, order, system, moral government, indications of spiritual character and design in the world, monotheism must rise and spread. Now, in the chief progressive heathen

nations reason, it can be proved, has gradually gained on imagination. Hence the

.of the Homeric gods,

undermined and broken down by them in their maturity.1

A monotheistic movement can be clearly traced in Mono. The popular religion of Greece, as it theistic appeared in the Homeric poems, was as distinctly poly- Movement

ancient Greece.

theistic and as little monotheistic as any known religion. Its gods were all finite, begotten, and thoroughly indi- vidualized beings. The need of unity was responded to only by the supremacy of Zeus, and Zeus was subject to destiny, surrounded by an aristocracy far from orderly or obedient, and participant in weakness, folly, and vice, To its eternal honour the Greek spirit, however, was not content with so inadequate a conception of the Divine, but laboured to amend, enlarge, and elevate it. The poets and dramatists of Greece purified and ennobled the popular myths, and, in particular, so idealized the character and agency of Zeus as to render them accordant with a true conception of the Godhead. The Zeus of Aschylus and of Sophocles was not only not the Zeus of Homer, but was a god belief in whom was inconsistent with belief in any The dramatists of Greece did not assail the popular conception of Divinity, but they sub- stituted for it one which implied that it was without warrant or excuse. They developed the germs of mono- theism in the Greek religion, while leaving untouched its polytheistic assumptions and affirmations. These, how- ever, were hot only persistently undermined, but often directly attacked by the philosophers, some of whom eventually reached a reasoned knowledge of the one absolute Mind. Xenophanes, Empedocles, and Anaxagoras were ainong the pre-Socratic philosophers who, on grounds of reason, rejected the polytheism and anthropomorphism of the current mythology, and advocated belief in one all- perfect divine nature. Socrates, although avoiding all attacks on the popular religion calculated to weaken the popular reverence for divine things, had real faith only in the one supreme Reason, the source and end of all things; and the best representatives of later Greek philosophy

were in this respect his followers. Plato attained by his dialectic a conception of God which will always deeply interest thoughtful men. God he deemed the highest object of knowledge and love, the source of all being, cognoscibility, truth, excellence, and beauty,—the One, the Good. The controversy as to whether his conception may be more correctly designated theistic or pantheistic will, perhaps, never be brought to a decisive conclusion, but in its general truth and grandeur it must be admitted far to transcend either the monotheism of the vulgar or any popular form of pantheism. Aristotle's character- istic cautiousness of judgment showed itself in the very meagreness of his theology. The representation which he gives of God hardly meets at all the demands of affection and of practical life, yet so far as it goes will be generally regarded as thoroughly reasonable. It is more unequivo- cally theistic than that of Plato. It sets forth God as without plurality and without parts; free from matter, contingency, change, and development; the eternal un- moved mover, whose essence is pure energy; absolute

1 The best literature relating to the subject of the preceding paragraph is indicated in the lists of books given in connexion with the relevant sections in Tiele's Outlines of the Iistory of Religion, and particularly in the French translation by M. Vernes. Hegel's Philosophy of Religion, Bunsen's God in Ilistory, Freeman Clarke's Ten Great Religions, the St Giles Lectures on the Faiths of the World, still more the series of Sacred Books of the East, and of ancient texts published under the title of Records of the Past, and the volumes of the Rev. de I' Ilist. des Religions, will be found useful to those wish- ing to make a survey of heathen thought regarding God so far as it approximated to the theistic idea. For the conceptions of the Divine entertained by non-civilized peoples, see especially Waitz's Anthro- pologie, aud Réville's Religions des Non-Civilisés, who both give extensive lists of literature.

Teen 1s M

spirit, self-thinking reason, the voyows vonoews ; the one perfect being, whose life is completely blessed, and whose likeness is the goal towards which the whole universe tends. Stoicism was originally and predominantly a materialistic or hylozoic form of pantheism ; but some of its greatest

representatives conceived of God in a decid- edly theistic manner as the supreme moral reason. The beautiful hymn of Cleanthes to Zeus is full of the purest devotional feeling, springing from a clear sense of personal relationship to the one all-ruling personal Spirit. Greek philosophy proceeded throughout its whole course in entire independence of the popular polytheism, and was a con- tinuous demonstration of its futility ; and it largely con- tributed to that reasoned natural knowledge of God which must underlie all rational belief in revelation. It discerned in some measure all the chief arguments which have since been employed as theistic proofs. It failed, however, to conceive of God as truly creative, or of the universe as in its very substance the result of divine action ; it failed also to make evident, even to cultured minds, the superiority of monotheism to pantheism and scepticism ; and it failed especially to convert the common people to faith in one sole Deity.?

Israel presents us with the first example of a mono- theistic nation. The controversies as to how Israel ac- quired this pre-eminence can only be decided by critical and historical investigations into which we cannot here enter (see IsRAEL).

The science of Old Testament theology, giving due heed to the results of critical, historical, and exegetical research – regarding the documents with which it deals, has to trace by what means and through what stages Hebrew mono- theism was developed and established ; and to the treatises on this science our readers must be referred. The mono- theistic movement in Israel was one of continuous progress through incessant conflict until a result was reached of incalculable value to humanity. That result was a faith in God singularly comprehensive, sublime, and practical,— a faith which rested, not on speculation and reasoning, but on a conviction of God having directly revealed Himself to the spirits of men, and which, while ignoring meta- physical theorizing, ascribed to God all metaphysical as well as moral perfections ; a faith which, in spite of its simplicity, so apprehended the relationship of God to nature as neither to confound them like pantheism nor to separate them like deism, but to assert both the immanence and the transcendence of the divine ; a faith in a living and per- sonal God, the almighty and sole creator, preserver, and ruler of the world ; a faith, especially, in a God holy in all His ways and righteous in all His works,

who was directing and guiding human affairs to a destination worthy of His own character ; and, therefore, an essentially ethical, elevating, and hopeful faith. The existence of utterances in the Hebrew Scriptures which show that Hebrew faith was not always thus enlightened, and sometimes conceived of God as partial and cruel, is no reason for not acknow- ledging the general justice and grandeur of its representa- tion of the Supreme.

The God of the Old Testament is also the God of the New. Christ and the apostles accepted what Moses and the prophets had taught concerning God ; they assigned to

1 See Zeller, Die Entwickelung des Monotheismus bei den Griechen (in Vortrige, vol. i.); and Cocker, Christianity and Greek Philosophy, 1875; also, Meiners, Historia Doctrine de Vero Deo, 1780.

2 See the O. 7. Theologies of Oehler, Schultz, Kayser, Piepenbring, &c.; Ewald, Lehre der Bibel von Gott; Baudissen, Stud. z. Semit. Religionsgeschichte ; Kuenen, Hibbert Lecture; Duhm, Theologie d. Propheten ; W. Robertson Smith, Prophets of Israel, &c. As to the name " Jahveh," an instructive summary and examination of views is given by Prof, Driver in his article '"' Recent Theories on the Origin and Nature of the Tetragrammaton," in Studia Biblica, Oxford, 1885.

Him no other attributes than had already been assigned to Him. Like Moses and the prophets also they made no attempt formally to prove the existence or logically to define the nature of God, but spoke of Him either as from vision or inspiration. And yet their doctrine of God has original and peculiar features. Thus, first, the fatherhood of God was taught with incomparable distinctness and fulness by Jesus Christ,—a fatherhood not merely of natural creation or national election, but of spiritual relationship of love, sympathy, mercy, and grace for individual souls. Such fatherhood, if acknowledged at all, was only very rarely and vaguely acknowledged in heathendom, and, although not wholly absent from the Old Testament, is far from clearly and prominently there, and, indeed, is present chiefly by implication in passages which refer directly only to God's connexion with the people of Israel, as an elect and covenant people ; it is conspicuous and

central, however, in the conception of God introduced by Christianity. Secondly, Divine father- hood had its correlate in Divine sonship. God is repre- sented in the New Testament as revealing His fatherhood through His Son, Jesus Christ. In Old Testament repre- sentations of Israel, the Messiah, and Wisdom, and in the Logos doctrine of Judeo-Alexandrian philosophy, some approximations to this conception of the Divine may be traced, but they fell far short of it. According to the New Testament, God is not merely infinitely exalted above the world and definitely distinguished therefrom, nor merely immanent and everywhere operative in nature, but also incarnate in Christ ; and Christ is not merely " the Son of man," essentially sharing in humanity and truly representing it before God, but also " the Son of God," essentially sharing in Divinity, and giving the fullest disclosure of it to man. The foundation of the Christian faith as laid down in the New Testament is that Christ through His unique relation as Son to the Father perfectly declared and expressed the nature and will of God in relation to human salvation. Thirdly, God is exhibited in the New Testament as the Spirit, the Holy Ghost, who dwells in the spirits of men, to work in them the will of the Father, and to conform them to the image of the Son. Only when thus exhibited can the revelation of the Divine name be regarded from the New Testament point of view as other than manifestly incomplete. Even the manifesta- tion of God in Christ, being objective and single, must be supplemented by a manifestation which is subjective and multiple, before the one God, the one Christ, can find a place in the manifoldness of souls, the multitude of sep- arate hearts and lives. The manifestation of the Spirit is such a manifestation, and completes in principle the revelation of the Christian idea of God, the revelation of His threefold nature and name. This revelation completed God can be thought of as absolute spirit, absolute love, absolute good, and was, to some extent explicitly, and throughout implicitly, so represented in the New Testa- ment. It is precisely in virtue of the threefold represen- tation of God characteristic of the New Testament that Christianity is still held by so many of the world's pro- foundest thinkers as the absolute and perfect religion, the crown and consummation of religion,—speculatively con- sidered, an absolute revelation of God, and practically considered, a perfect salvation,—within which there may be infinite evolution and progress, but beyond which there can be no true light or real growth.?

The threefold representation of God in the New Testa- Doctrine ment was an entirely religious and practical representa- of the tion, inseparably connected with the historical facts of L2G

a =

3 The New Testament representation of God is treated of in the Vew Testament Theologies of Schmid, Reuss, Oostcrzee, and Weiss ; also in Wittichen, Die Idee Gottes, 1865.

THe) sw

Christ's life and the spiritual experiences of the early | blending, however, of trinitarianism with theism the whole

Christians. It was not an ontological or even theological doctrine, and will be identified by no competent exegete with the dogma of the Divine Trinity set forth in the cecumenical creeds. The propositions constitutive of the dogma of the Trinity—the propositions in the symbols of Nice, Constantinople, and Toledo relative to the immanent distinctions and relations in the Godhead— were not drawn directly from the New Testament, and*could not be ex- pressed in New Testament terms. They were the pro- ducts of reason speculating on a revelation to faith—the New Testament representation of God as a father, a redeemer, and a sanctifier—with a view to conserve and vindicate, explain and comprehend it. They were only formed through centuries of effort, only elaborated by the aid of the conceptions and formulated in the terms of Greek and Roman metaphysics. The evolution of the doctrine of the Trinity was far the most important fact in the doctrinal history of the church during the first five centuries of its post-apostolic existence. To trace and describe it fully would be almost to exhibit the history of Christian thought during these centuries. It had neces- sarily an immense influence on the development of theism. The acceptance of the catholic doctrine of the Trinity implied the rejection of pantheism, of abstract monotheism, of all forms of monarchianism or unitarianism. It decided that theistic development was not to be on these lines or in these directions. At the same time the dogma itself was a seed for

new growths of theistic thought, and demanded a development consistent with its own nature. It is a doctrine, not as to the manifestations and revela- tions of Godhead, but as to their ground and explanation, the constitution of Godhead, a doctrine as to a trinity of essence, which accounts for the Trinity of the gospel dis- pensation. It affirms the unity of God, but requires us to conceive of His unity, not as an abstract or indeter- minate self-identity, not as “sterile, monotonous simpli- city,” but as a unity rich in distinctions and perfections,— the unity of an infinite fulness of life and love, the unity of a Godhead in which there are Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, a trinity of persons, a diversity of properties, a variety of offices, a multiplicity of operations, yet sameness of nature, equality of power and glory, oneness in purpose and affection, harmony of will and work. It finds its dogmatic expression as to what is ultimate in it in the formula—One substance in three persons, of which the first eternally generates the second, and the third eternally proceeds from the first and second. Now, manifestly, however much such a doctrine as this may have satisfied thought on a revelation as to the Godhead, it cannot have exhausted or completed it. If it answered certain ques- tions it raised others, and these more speculative and pro- found than those which had been answered. What is meant by affirming God to be “substance” or “in three persons”? What is meant by divine “generation” or “procession”? How are the substance and _ persons related % related? These and many kindred and connected ques- tions reason became bound to discuss by its adoption of the doctrine of the Trinity. This obligation could only be temporarily and partially evaded or concealed by represent- ing the doctrine as “‘a mystery ” to be accepted simply on authority or with blind faith. Data of the doctrine may have been given to faith, but the doctrine itself was the work of reason, and on no ground not plainly absurd could that work be held to have terminated in 589 a.p. As soon as an inspired record is left at all, as soon as any speculation is allowed on its contents, as soon as the pro- cess of forming doctrine is permitted to begin, all conceiv- able right to stop the movement anywhere is lost. By the

How are the persons distinguished and inter- .

character of the latter was, of necessity, profoundly changed. A trinitarian theism must be vastly different from a unitarian as regards practice. It must

be equally so as regards theory. It must be far more speculative. By its very nature it is bound to undertake speculative labours in which a simply unitarian theism will feel no call to engage.!

It was the general conviction of the early Christian Theism in writers that formal proofs of the Divine existence were Patristic In their view the idea of Ys.

neither necessary nor useful. God was native to the soul, the knowledge of God intuitive, the mind of man a mirror in which, if not rusted by sin, God could not fail to be reflected. The design argument, however, came early into use and was frequently employed. More speculative modes of reasoning were resorted to by Dionysius of Tarsus, Augustine, and Boetius.. The unity of God had to be incessantly affirmed against polytheists, Gnostics, and Manicheans. ‘The incomprehensibility of God and His cognoscibility were both maintained, although each was sometimes so emphasized as to seem to obscure the other. That the knowledge of God may be reached by the three ways of causality, negation, and eminence was implied by the pseudo-Dionysius, although only explicitly announced by Scotus. Neither any systematic treatment of the Divine attributes nor any elaborate discussion of single attributes was attempted. The hypothesis of eternal creation found a vigorous defender in Origen, but met with the same fate as the dualist hypothesis of un- created matter and the pantheistic hypothesis of emana- tion. Of all the patristic theologians Augustine was

~~undoubtedly the most philosophical apologist and ex~~

ponent of theism. He alone attempted to refute agnos- ticism, and to find a basis for the knowledge of God in a doctrine of cognition in general. On the large, difficult, and as yet far from adequately investigated subject, the influence of Platonic and Aristotelian, Stoic and Academic, Neopythagorean and Neoplatonic speculation on the for- mation of the Christian doctrina de Deo, it is, of course, impossible here to enter.?

Mohammed (570-632) founded a monotheistic religion which spread with amazing rapidity through Arabia, Syria, Persia, North Africa, and Spain, and gave, almost wherever it spread, a mighty impulse to the minds and wills of men. It was received as the gift of special inspiration and

revelation, although its creed contained little of moment on which reason would seem to be incompetent to decide. It had obvious merits, and must be admitted to have rendered real and important services to culture, religion, and humanity, but had also conspicuous faults, which have done much injury to individual, domestic, and national life. If the latest were always the best, it would be the most perfect of the three great theistic religions of the world; but it is, in fact, the least developed and most defective. Instead of evolving and extending, it marred and mutilated the theistic idea which it borrowed. In- stead of representing God as possessed of all spiritual fulness and perfections, it exhibited Him as devoid of the divinest spiritual attributes. It recognized His

| transcendent exaltation above His creatures, but not His

sympathetic presence with His creatures; apprehended vividly His almighty power, His eternity, His omnipres- ence and omniscience, but only vaguely and dimly His moral glory, His love and goodness, His righteousness

1 Baur, Ch. Lehre v. d. Dreieinigkeit, &c., 1841-48; Meier, Lehre v. a Trinitét in hist. Hntwickl., 1844.

2 Roesler, Philosophia Veteris Ecel. de Deo, 1782; and the histories of Christian doctrine by Hagenbach, Neander, Shedd, Bonifas, Sheldon, Harnack, &c.; Ganganf, Des h. Augustinus speculative Lehre von Gott, 1884.

med-

Moham-

anism.

on et |S A

and holiness. The Allah of Mohammed was essentially despotic will, and so fell far below the Jahveh of Moses, essentially righteousness, and the Heavenly Father of Christ, essentially holy love. Mohammedanism is almost as contrary to Christianity as one form of theism can be to another. It

is as unitarian as Christianity is trini- tarian. Its cardinal tenet is as distinctly anti-trinitarian as anti-polytheistic. It has often been represented as hav- ing had the providential task assigned it of preparing the way for Christianity by destroying polytheism ; in reality, it has hitherto offered a far more stubborn resistance to Christianity than any polytheistic religion has done.}

The medizval world was so complex, so full of contrasts – and contradictions, that it cannot be “summed up in a formula.” Most general statements current regarding it will be found on examination only partially true. It is often described as the age in which external religious authority ruled, and all religious thought ran in narrow, strictly prescribed paths, whereas, in fact, the medizval theologians were far freer to speculate on almost all points of religious doctrine than Protestant divines have been. Because traditionalism abounded, it is forgotten that ration- alism also abounded; because scholasticism flourished, that mysticism was prevalent ; because theism was com- mon, that pantheism, speculative and practical, was not uncommon. The Middle Age was, however, par excellence, the age of theology. Theology never before or since so interested and dominated the human intellect. Nearly every eminent medizval thinker was a theologian. The chief streams of theistic belief and speculation which tra- versed the Middle Age were three,—the Christian, Jewish, and Mohammedan. The first was much the broadest and fullest. Few points of theistic doctrine were left un- handled by the Christian divines of the Middle Age. The conclusions came to on the chief points were various and divergent. As to the manner in which God is known, for instance, some laid stress on faith or authoritative revela- tion ; others on immediate consciousness, the direct: vision of the pure in heart, the illumination of the Spirit of God in the minds and hearts of the true children of God; others on reason and proof; and some attempted media- tion and synthesis. Anselm gave logical form to an a priori argument for the Divine existence based on the idea of God asa being than whom a greater cannot be con- ceived. His most ingenious attempt to demonstrate the absurdity of supposing the perfect, the infinite, to be a mere subjective fiction prepared the way for the multitude of attempts, identical or similar in aim, which have since been made. Thomas Aquinas was the best representative of those who held that the invisible God was only to be known through His visible works. He argued from motion toa mover, from effect to cause, from the contingent to the

necessary, from lower kinds of good to a supreme good, and from order and purpose in the world to a governing intelligence. Raymond of Sebonde added to the ontological and physico-teleological arguments a moral argument. William of Occam criticized keenly and un- favourably both the a priori and a posteriori proofs, and held that the existence of God was not a known truth but merely an article of faith. There was not less diversity of view as to how far God may be known. Erigena held that even God Himself could not comprehend His own nature, and Eckhart that the nature of God is neces- sarily unknowable, as being a nature without nature, Without predicates, without opposites, pure oneness. That Ian cannot know God's real nature, cannot know Him per essentiam, cannot have a quidditiva cognitio Dei, and that

1 See MoHAMMEDANISM, and authorities there mentioned ; also Kuenen, Hibbert Lectures, lect. 1, with authors and works there indicated,

the so-called attributes of God are only descriptive of the effects of His operations as they appear to the human mind, or even are merely symbols or metaphors, was maintained by many of the scholastic doctors. Aquinas, for example, with all his confidence as a dogmatic system- builder, so denied the cognoscibility of God. That the human mind may have a true, although it cannot have a perfect knowledge of God,—an apprehensive but not a comprehensive knowledge of Him,—was, however, in the Middle Age, as it has been ever since, the position most commonly taken up. The scholastic divines discussed a multitude of foolish questions regarding God, but that was not due to extravagant faith in the power of the human mind to know or comprehend God. Prof. Sheldon very justly says, 'on the whole, the scholastic theology, notwithstanding some strong negative statements, assumes in reality a minimum of acquaintanceship with the essen- tial nature of God." The negative statements are, for the most part, those of the mystics with respect to the beatific vision. Medieval discussions as to the nature of God turned chiefly on two points,—the relation of the Divine essence to the Divine attributes and of the one Divine substance to the three Divine persons. The conclusion come to by the vast majority of scholastic theo- logians on the first point was that the attributes were not really or

objectively in God, but merely human repre- sentations reflected, as it were, on the idea of God, because the mental constitution of man is what it is, and because God wished to be thought of in certain divers manners. To hold them objectively real in God, and therefore intrin- sically distinct either from the essence of God or from one another, was considered to be incompatible both with the incomprehensibility and with the absolute simplicity of the Divine nature. Duns Scotus, in maintaining that the attributes were formalitates realiter distincte, took up an exceptional position. On the other point the conclusion as generally reached was one seemingly quite inconsistent with the foregoing, namely, that the persons were objec- tively and eternally real and distinct. The discrepancy is especially apparent in those theologians (eg., Anselm, Abelard, Hugo and Richard of St Victor, Alexander of Hales, and Aquinas) who represented the persons of the Trinity as corresponding to distinctions among the very attributes which they in another reference denied to be distinct. The medizval schoolmen, with very few and doubtful exceptions, conjoined with their theism the doctrine of the Trinity as defined by the ancient church. Roscelin of Compiegne and Gilbert de la Porrée laid themselves open to the charge of tritheism ; and obviously nominalism, by allowing nothing but a nominal existence to the essence or general nature of which the individual is a Specimen, tended towards tritheism,—towards resolv- ing the Trinity into a triad of Divine individuals or self- subsistent beings, connected only by a common specific character. While the schoolmen accepted the doctrine of the Trinity on authority, they did not conceive them- selves precluded from endeavouring to illustrate it and to make it appear as consonant to reason as possible, They sought to show its consistency with the unity of God, and its general reasonableness by various speculative con- siderations, but especially by the aid of analogies drawn from the constitution of the mind and even from particular physical phenomena. They did not suppose that they were thereby demonstrating the doctrine of the Trinity : they fully recognized that doctrine to be the indication of a mystery, “dark with excess of light,” and the truth of which could only be directly apprehended in the beatific vision conferred by the highest and most special grace ; but they proceeded on the belief that, inasmuch as it was a central truth of revelation, the whole creation, and,

Moham- medan theism,

242 pe Sed)

above all, the nature and essence of man's spirit, must bear witness to it. At least one good result followed. Those who exercised their minds on the doctrine of the Trinity were necessarily led in some measure to form another idea of God than that of either an indeterminate unity or a confused synthesis of attributes,—to think of Him, with some clearness and steadiness, in an organic and harmonious manner, as absolute being, absolute life, absolute spirit, absolute intelligence, absolute love. Such thought as this distinctly appeared in Anselm, the St Victors, Aquinas, Bonaventura, Dante, &c. The omni- presence, omnipotence, and omniscience of God, and, generally, what are called His metaphysical and intellectual attributes, were discussed with excessive elaborateness and subtlety, while His moral attributes were left in the back- ground, or considered without sufficient earnestness or insight. The problems regarding the relationship of the Divine attributes to human agency, and, in particular, as to the compatibility of Divine prescience and predestina- tion with human freedom and responsibility, were even too laboriously and minutely debated between the medizval Augustinians and their opponents. What the disputants on both sides lacked was intellectual humility. They strode along "dim and perilous ways" as if they were in plain and safe paths, or as if their own faculties were superhuman. As to the general relation of God to the universe, few, if any, of the schoolmen can be charged with deism. While assigning to God a being and life transcending the universe, they also affirmed that He was everywhere in the universe, everywhere wholly present, everywhere essentially and actively present. Pantheism was prevalent all through the Middle Ages, but only two of its representatives, perhaps—Erigena and Eckhart,— showed much speculative capacity.!

Mohammedan theism drew chiefly from faith and fana- ticism the force which carried it onwards with such rapid- ity in its early career of conquest. At the same time it powerfully stimulated reason, as soon appeared in remark- able intellectual achievements, Of course, reason could not fail to reflect on the contents of the faith by which it had been awakened. The

result was the formation of many schools of religious opinion. So far as our subject is concerned, however, all medizeval Mohammedan thinkers may be ranked as philosophers, theologians, or mystics. The philosophers derived little of their doctrine from Mohammed, Even in what they taught regarding God they followed mainly Aristotle, and in some measure the Neoplatonists. They maintained the unity of God, but conceived of it in a way unknown to Mohammed, namely, as a unity allowing of the reality of no distinctions, quali- ties, or attributes in God. Then, although they affirmed the unity of God in the strictest abstract manner, they were not monists but dualists, inasmuch as they denied creation ex nihilo, and asserted the eternity of matter. The mode in which they supposed the multiplicity of finite

1 For the history of medieval theism may be consulted the histories of philosophy by Tennemann, Ritter, Erdmann, &c.; the special histories of medizeval philosophy by Stockl and Haureau, aud of later scholasticism by K. Werner; the histories of the Trinity and of Christian doctrine already mentioned; and a multitude of monographs, e.g., those of Christlieb, Huber, and Stéckl on Erigena; of Hasse, Remusat, Bouchitté on Anselm or his ontological argument; Delitzsch's Kritische Darstellung der Gotteslehre des Thomas Aquinas; Ritschl's ''Gesch. Studien z ch. Lehre von Gott," in Jahresb. f. deutsche Theol., x., referring chiefly to Aquinas and Scotus, &c. Medizval mysticism has found in Schmidt, Lasson, Preger, Jundt, admirable historians. On Eckhart there are good works by Martensen, Lasson, and others; see also a paper by Prof. Pearson in Mind, No. xli. On medieval predestinarianism consult chapter in Mozley's Treatise on the Augustinian Doctrine of Predestination. The keenest hostile criticism of medieval theism is that of Pasquale D'Ercole, 71 Teismo Filosofico Christiano, 1884. '

te

| things to have been produced from God was by a series of emanations originating in Divine intelligence, not in Divine will. Their proofs of the Divine existence were, for the most part, founded on the principle of causality. The philosophers did not openly oppose the theism of the Koran, but they ignored it or set it aside, and represented it as only a useful popular faith, not a response to the demands of cultured reason. The " theologians,"

on the other hand, took their stand upon the Koran, sought to defend and develop into doctrine its representations of God, and to show the inconclusiveness and inconsistencies of the teaching of the philosophers regarding God. Even those of them, however, who exalted faith and revelation most—the orthodox Motakallemin or Asharites—by no means dispensed with philosophy and reason. It was chiefly on the metaphysical hypothesis of the atomic consti- tution of matter that they rested their proofs of the Divine existence. It was by subtle reasonings that they sought to establish the non-eternity of matter and the unity and immateriality of God. It was on speculative grounds that they contended God had eternally possessed all the attri- butes ascribed to Him in the Koran. Their predestina- tionism was as logically elaborated as that of the Augus- tinian scholastics. There flourished for a short period a school of liberal Mohammedan theologians, the Motazil- ites, who, while accepting the two fundamental doctrines of Islam—the unity of God and the divine mission of Mohammed, —refused to regard the Koran as an absolute religious authority, and sought to transform Mohammed- anism into a reasonable and ethical monotheism. They insisted on the rightful conformity of faith to reason, on human freedom, and on the righteousness as well as the unity of God. They endeavoured, in fact, to substitute for a God whose essence was absolute or arbitrary will a God whose essence was justice. This meant, however, not to develop or even reform, but to subvert and displace the Mohammedan idea of God, and the wonder is, not that they failed in so arduous a task, but that they had the courage to undertake it. Mohammedan mysticism (Sufism) was a reaction, chiefly of the Persian mind, against the narrowness and harshness of the monotheism of the Arabian prophet. Unlike philosophy, it was not a mere exotic, but an indigenous growth within the Mohammedan area, and hence orthodoxy has never been able to eradicate it. It has been the chief support of spiritual feeling and the chief source of poetry in Mohammedan lands. It still flourishes, has branches innumerable, and through its poets has shed seed widely even over Christendom. The mystics refuse to think of God as an arbitrary unlimited Will, separate and apart from everything; as one who reveals Himself clearly only through the words of a prophet ; as a being before whom man is mere dust and ashes, and who demands no higher service than fear, unquestioning faith, and outward obedience. In their view God is immanent in all things, expresses Himself’ through all things, and is the essence of every human soul. There

is not only no God but God, but no being, life, or spirit except the being, life, and spirit of God; and every man may be God's prophet, and more even than His prophet. For a man to know God is to see that God is immanent in himself, and that he is one with God, the universal life which breathes throughall things. Such knowledge or vision must glorify all nature, and must dilate and rejoice the heart of him who possesses it. Joy and ecstacy must characterize the worship of the Sufi. A religious scepticism based ou philosophical scepticism—disbelief in the existence of God grounded on disbelief in any truth not guaranteed by sense or mathematical demonstration— was not unknown among the Saracens, although no work in defence of it has come down to us, and perhaps none may have been written.

:

|

"heism of later judaism.

Tiel £

In Algazel philosophical scepticism was combined with religious dogmatism and mysticism. He subjected the doctrines of the philosophers to a keen and hostile criticism, and maintained that reason was incompetent to reach the knowledge of God, yet cherished an ardent and exalted faith in God, based partly on the Koran and partly on mystic contemplation and devout experience.!

Jewish and Mohammedan religious thought were inti- mately connected in the Middle Age, and ran a nearly parallel course. The Rabbanites and the Karaites of Juda- ism corresponded to the orthodox and the Motazilites of Mohammedanism. In their theism there was no new feature or peculiar significance. Jewish theosophic mysti- cism found expression in the Kabbalah. The idea of God there presented was at once excessively abstract and excessively fanciful. It must be studied, however, in the original source or in special works. The Jewish philoso- phers differed little from the Arabian philosophers in their teaching regarding the evidences of the Divine existence, the nature and consequences of the Divine unity, and the

meaning of the Divine attributes. At the same time, they, with a few exceptions, affirmed the non-eternity of matter, and did not, like the Arabian Aristotelians, represent pro- vidence as merely general. They maintained strongly the transcendence of God and the impossibility of the human mind forming any positive conception of His essential being. They held that He was known as necessarily existent, but also as in Himself necessarily unknowable. Their view of the unity of God led them to an idea of God which may not unjustly be designated agnostic, and which prevented their regarding either nature or Scripture as a revelation of what God really is. Almost alone among eminent Jew- ish writers of the Middle Age, Jehuda Halevi contended that the representation of God given in the revelation to

In Christian Europe the human mind took a fresh start Renais- It revolted against the S4nce authorities to which it had long been submissive, and P°° ¢

at the epoch of the Renaissance.

exercised private judgment with a confidence uncorrected and unmoderated by experience. It turned with ardour to the free discussion of the greatest theme of thought, and probably at no period of history has there been more individual diversity of opinion on that theme. God and His relation to the universe were treated of from a multi- tude of points of view. Scepticism, naturalism, and pan- theism appeared in various forms ; all ancient systems of thought as to the Supreme Being found advocates; all modern theories as to the nature of the Divine were in some measure anticipated. Did our limits permit it would not be uninteresting to expound the speculations concern- ing Deity of several of the writers of the Renaissance,— and especially, perhaps, of these three—Nicolaus of Cusa, Giordano Bruno, and Thomas Campanella. The theo- sophie mysticism of the period was a preparation for the Reformation.®

The fusion of theology and philosophy was the distinc- tive feature of medieval Christendom; their separation has been a marked characteristic of modern Christendom. Even when both have been occupied with religious

inquiries and thoughts of God they have kept apart ; they have often co-operated, but seldom commingled. Theology has been on the whole cleric, and comparatively conserva- tive ; philosophy has been on the whole laic, and compara- tively progressive. But for theology holding fast to what had been handed down as truth regarding God there must have been little continuity or consistency in the development of religious convictions ; but for philosophy restlessly seek- ing ever more light there would have been little growth or increase of knowledge of the Divine.

The Reformers held that there was a knowledge of God The naturally planted in the human mind, and also derivable Reforma- from observation of the constitution and government of #™

Israel was self-evidencing, independent of the support of philosophy, and unattainable in any speculative way. The

function of reason was, in his view, not to sit in judgment

on what had been delivered regarding God to the Jews, but to repel the objections which philosophy had brought against it, and to show the inadequacy of the results reached by unaided human intelligence. Maimonides undertook to establish that reason and faith, science and revelation, were at one in what they affirmed regarding God, but in order to make out his thesis he sacrificed the literal sense of Scripture whenever it did not accord with the tenets of his philosophy, and substituted for the representation of God given through Moses and the prophets one very different in character. His idea of God is highly abstract and metaphysical, —the idea of a being so unlike every other being that no name or predicate whatever when applied to Him can bear its ordinary, or indeed any intelligible meaning. Existence, eternity, unity, ‘power, wisdom, justice, and other attributes, are not in Him whiat they are in any other being or even analogous in Him to what they are in any other being.?

1 Schahrastani’s Geschichte der religidsen u. philosophischen Secten bei den Arabern, Germ. trans. by Haarbriicker, 1850-51; Wiistenfeld, Die Akademie der Araber u. thre Lehrer, 1837; Schmolders, Essai sur les Ecoles Philosophiques chez les Arabes, 1842; Munk, AMélanges de Philosophie Juive et Arabe, 1859; Stemer, Die Mutaziliten oder Freidenker in Islam,

1865; Renan, Averroés et L’ Averroisme, 1852, &c, On Eastern mysticism, see Tholuck, Sujfismus s. Theosophia Persarum Pantheistica, 1821, and Bliithensammlung aus der morgen- lindischen Mystik, 1825; Cowell, “Persian Literature,” in Ouford Essays for 1855 ; Palmer, Oriental Mysticism, 1867; Redhouse, The Mesnevi of Jelalu-d-Din, 1881 sg.; Vaughan, in Hours with the Mystics, treats of the Oriental as well as Christian mystics. For Persian mysticism in its latest forms, sce De Gobineau, Religions et Philosophie dans 1 Asie Centrale, 1866. On Algazel, see Gosche, ‘Ueber Ghazzilis Leben u. Werke,” in Abhand. (philol. u. hist.) d. k. Akad. d. Wiss, z. Berlin, 1858.

. Munk, Esquisse Historique de la Philosophie chez les Juifs, 1849; Eisler, Vorlesungen tiber die jiidischen Philosophen des Mittelalters,

the world, but that this knowledge was so marred and corrupted by ignorance and sin as to require to be con firmed and supplemented by the far clearer and fuller light of the special revelation in the Scriptures. They were deeply sensible of the evils which had arisen from the over-speculation of the scholastic divines on the nature of God, and were under the impression that it would have been well if men had been content to accept the statements of Scripture on the subject with simple and unhesitating faith. Luther wished theology to begin at once with Jesus Christ. Melanchthon said, “There is no reason why we should devote ourselves much to these most lofty subjects, the doctrine of God, of the unity of God, of the Trinity of God”; and in the early editions of his Loci Communes he entered into no discussion of these themes. Zwingli in his De Vera et Falsa Religione and even Calvin in his Lnstitutio Religionis Christiane delineated the doctrina de Deo only in outline and general features. In the confessions of the churches of the Reformation nothing which the ancient church had cecumenically determined as regards that doctrine was rejected, and nothing new was added thereto. It soon becaine apparent, however, that the mind would by no means confine its thoughts of God within the limits which the Reformers believed to be alone legitimate and safe. The idea of God is so central in religion that it must affect and be affected by every change of thought on

1870, 1876; Joél, Beitrige z. Gesch. d. Philosophie, 1876. On the Kabbalah, see Franck and Ginsburg. Kaufmann, Geschichte der Attri- butenlehre in der jiidischen Religionsphilosophie der Muittelaiters, 1877; Friedlander, Guide of the Perplexed of Maimonides, 3 vols.,

1885.

3 M. Carriere's Philosophische Weltanschauung der Reformationszett, 1887; Punjer's Religionsphilosophie, i. 51-59, 69-75, 76-80; Bobha's Conoscenza di Dio, iii. 1-90.

Anti- trinitari- anism.

244

any religious theme. The many and violent controversies | within Protestantism all reacted on the doctrine relative to Deity, causing it to be studied with intense energy, but in a manner and spirit very unfavourable, on the whole, to truth and piety. Every new dispute elicited more abstruse conclusions and more subtle definitions. In the disputa- tions of orthodox divines of the 17th and 18th centuries as to the nature, the attributes, the decrees, and the operations of God, we see scholasticism with all its peculiarities re- introduced and often exaggerated. Yet Protestant theism was in various respects an advance on that of the doctors of medieval scholasticism. The protest of the Reformers against the faults of the scholastic treatment regarding God did not lose its pertinency or value because their own followers fell into these very faults. If the subsequent history plainly showed that the doctrine could not have been so fixedly and exhaustively determined by the ancient church as the Reformers supposed, it also showed that the scholastic treatment of the doctrine had been justly condemned by them, and that speculation regarding God when not rooted in spiritual experience must necessarily be unfruitful. The scholasticism of Protestantism was in essential contradiction to the genius and aim of Protestan- tism. Then, in the Protestant doctrine of God more prominence was given than had previously been done to His manifestation in redemption, to the relation of His character towards sin, and, in particular, to the attribute of justice. The strong emphasis laid on the righteousness of God marked a distinct ethical advance. At the same time the idea of God in

the older Protestant theology was far from ethically complete. His fatherhood was strangely ignored or most defectively apprehended. Absolute sove- reignty had assigned to it the place which should have been given to holy love, and was often conceived of in an unethical manner. Further, whereas among medieval theologians it was the rule and not the exception, among Protestant divines it was the rare exception and not the rule, to affirm God to be unknowable. They asserted merely His incomprehensibility and man's limited know- ledge of His perfections. They did not in general, how- ever, abandon, at least explicitly, the premiss from which medizval theologians inferred the Divine incognoscibility, namely, that the absolute simplicity of the Divine essence ye incompatible with the existence of distinctions there- an

Difference of opinion as to the relation of reason to Scripture was in the Protestant world one of the chief causes of difference of belief as to God. Assaults on trinitarianism were contemporary with the Reformation, and they proceeded more on the conviction that the doctrine of the Trinity was unreasonable than that it was unscriptural. The founder of Socinianism, indeed, not only fully accepted the authority of Scripture, but went so far as to represent it as the source of all religious truth, even of the primary truths of natural religion ; yet, while he thus apparently and in theory attributed the knowledge of God more to Scripture and less to reason than did Luther or Calvin, really and in practice he did just the reverse, because he conceived quite otherwise of the con- nexion between Scripture and reason. While he held Scripture to be the source of religious truth, he also held reason to be so the organ of religious truth that nothing contrary to reason could be accepted on the authority of Scripture, and that only those declarations of Scripture could be deemed to be interpreted aright which were inter- preted in accordance with the axioms of reason. Luther, on the other hand, proclaimed aloud, Strangle reason like

B Gass, Gesch. d. prot. Dogm., i.; Heppe, Dogm. d. deutsch. Protes- tantismusim L6ten Johrh., i.; Frank, Gesch. d. prot. Theol., i.; Dorner, Hist. af Prot. Th.,ii.; and Muller, De Godsleer van Calvijn, 1883.

HE is Wi

a dangerous beast if it dare to question Scripture ; and Calvin, although he did not speak so harshly, demanded the unqualified submission of reason to the authority of Scripture. Antitrinitarianism has maintained its ground throughout the Protestant area, has assumed a variety of forms, and has exerted a powerful influence. It has been unable, it is often said, to do more than revive the doctrines which distracted the ancient church and were condemned by it as heresies. And this must be so far admitted. The doctrine of the Trinity comprehends only a few propositions, and every departure from it must involve a rejection of one or more of these, and must, consequently, belong to some one of a very few possible types or classes of belief. But essentially the statement is superficial and unjust. For the ways in which, and the grounds on which, both the affirmations of which the doctrine consists and the negations of these have been main- tained have not been the same. Alike the defences and the attacks have in the later era implied a deeper consciousness of the nature of the problems in dispute than those of earlier times. As of history in general, so of the history of the doctrine of God, it holds good that no present has been the mere reproduction of any past. was carried farther in English deism and its Continental developments. Deism sought to found religion on reason alone. It represents “nature” as the sole and sufficient revelation of God. There is no warrant for the view that the deists held nature to be independent of God, self- conservative and self-operative,—or, in other words, God to be withdrawn from nature, merely looking on and “seeing it go.” They believed that God acted through natural laws, and that it was doubtful if He ever acted otherwise than through these. Whatever was taught about God in Christianity and other positive religions beyond what reason could infer from nature ought, in their opinion, to be rejected as fiction and superstition, All their zeal was negative,—against ‘“ superstition.” What was positive in their own doctrine had but a feeble hold on them. God was little more to them than a logical inference from the general constitution of the world. They lacked perception of the presence of God, not only in the Bible, but in all human life and history.?

Modern philosophy, from its rise to the close of the 18th Modem

century, showed a double development, the one ideal and the other empirical, the Cartesian and the Baconian. The former was the more

essentially religious. Descartes en- deavoured to found philosophy on an indubitable refuta- tion of absolute scepticism. Such a refutation he believed himself to have effected when he had argued that thought, even in the form of doubt, necessarily implies the exist- ence of him who thinks; that the implication yields a universal criterion of certainty ; and that the presence of the idea of God in a man's mind, the consciousness of the mind's imperfection, and especially the character of the mind's concept of God as that of the most real being con- taining every perfection, demonstratively establish that God is and is what He is thought to be. God is and is true ; therefore man has not been made to err, and what- ever he clearly and distinctly sees as true must be true. In the opinion of Descartes, the idea of God is inherent in reason, is the seal of all certainty, and the corner-stone of all true philosophy. To the whole Cartesian school theology was the foundation of all science. To Spinoza,

2 Besides the works of Gass, Frank, and Dorner already mentioned, see the histories of deism by Leland, Lechler, and Sayous; of rationalism by Stiudlin, Tholuck, Hagenbach, and Hurst; Noack's Freidenker, 3 vols., 1858-55; Farrar's Crit. Hist. of Free Thought, 1863; Hunt's Rel. Thought in England, 8 vols., 1870-73; Leslie Stephen's Engl. Thought in the Eighteenth Cent., 2 vols., 1883; Cairns's Unbelief in the Eighteenth Cent., 1881; Beard's Hib, Lect., 1883; and the 2d vol. of Gillett's God in Human Thought, 1874.

The rationalistic process Deism.

- — i tiene

TrRELSs

who most fully developed some of the distinctive principles of Descartes, it was identical with all science, for to him God was the only substance, and all things else were only His attributes or modes. Besides the pantheism of Spinoza, the occasionalism of Guelinx, Malebranche's vision of things in God, Leibnitz's pre-established harmony and optimism, and Wolf's rationalism were natural, if not necessary, outgrowths from the same root,—Cartesian theism. Perhaps, of all the many services to the cause of theism with which Cartesianism must be credited the greatest was that it constantly

gave prominence to the absolute perfection of God.!_ Baconian or empirical philo- sophy was content if, by the ways of causality and design, it could rise to an apprehension of a First Cause and Su- preme Intelligence. It tended of itself to a phenomenal- ism, sensationism, associationism, unfavourable to theism. It was, however, counteracted, restrained, and modified by Cartesianism and Platonism, and it naturally allied itself with positive science. The massive defence of theism erected by the Cambridge school of philosophy against atheisin, fatalism, and the denial of moral distinctions was avowedly built on a Platonic foundation. The popularity during the 18th century of the design argument, and what was called physico-theology, was largely due to the impres-

conviction that the eternal source of things must be immanent in their constitution, changes, and laws. The rapid growth of biology and tlie spread of the doctrine of evolution have not only tended in the same direction, but given a new and nobler conception of the teleology of the universe, and, consequently, of God as the supreme in- telligence. History—which the natural theologians of the 18th century so strangely ignored, which the solitary Italian thinker Vico alone recognized with clearness and comprehensiveness of vision to be necessarily the chief scene of the self-revelation of God—began with Lessing and Herder to be generally seen in its true religious light. The comparative or historical method of study has created two disciplines or sciences, comparative theology and Biblical theology,—which are both largely occupied with tracing the development of the idea of God. The ethical spirit of the age has so told on its religious teaching that to no generation save that to which the gospel was originally given has the Divine fatherhood been so distinctly set forth as to the present. Dogmatic theology, especially in Germany, has been earnestly active ; and its chief repre- sentatives have laboured so to amend and advance the doctrine concerning God that it may satisfy the new requirements which have arisen.

sion made on the general mind by the brilliant discoveries of the founders of modern astronomy, chemistry, and other physical sciences. Bishop

Berkeley showed how an em- pirical philosophy might be logically evolved into a theistic immaterialism, Hume how it might be logically dissolved

It is now necessary briefly to indicate the present state of thought Present on the chief points and problems of theism. state of

As to the origin, then, of our actual idea of God, that, it is seen, thought. can only be the whole religious history of man which precedes it, Origin of and the whole religious nature of mau which underlies that history. idea of lt is absurd to refer exclusively to any faculty, intuition, or feeling, God.

Nine- ‘teenth sentury.

—P TE

into an agnostic nihilism.

In the 16th, 17th, and 18th centuries mysticism had many representatives, several of whom, as, e.g., Weigel, Ottingen, Swedenborg, and especially Jacob Boehme, are entitled to a considerable place in any detailed history of theism. To the eyes of Boehme God revealed Himself from without and within in the most real and intimate manner. In the powers, antagonisms, and conjunctions of creation he saw the energies, struggles, and victories of the creative Spirit itself; in the constitution and opera- tions of physical and human nature, the essential constitu- tion and necessary processes of the Divine nature. His thoughts of God were in striking contrast to those of the deists and natural theologians of the 17th and 18th cen- turies, and strikingly anticipated those of a Schelling, Hegel, and Baader in the 19th century. Could Sweden- borg’s doctrine of correspondences be verified, our means of insight into the character of God would be largely extended.

The 19th century is sufficiently far advanced to allow us to see that a new epoch even in the history of theisin began near its commencement. The revolution in philo- sophy initiated by Kant has profoundly affected theistic thought. It has introduced that type of agnosticism which is what is most original and distinctive in the antitlieism of the present age, and at the same time stimu- lated reason to undertake bolder inquiries as to the Divine than those which Kant prohibited. The enlarged and deepened views of the

universe attained through the dis- coveries of recent physical science have rendered incredible the idea of a God remote from the world, irresistible the

1 Saisset, in the first part of his Modern Pantheism has some- what elaborate studies on (1) the theism of Descartes, (2) God in the system of Malebranche, (8) the pautheism of Spinoza, and (4) the theism of Leibnitz. Huber (1854) and Elvenich (1865) have written Special treatises on the Cartesian proofs of the Divine existence. Among the most thorough studies of Spinoza are those of Camerar, Pollock, and Martineau. Herder, Voigtlinder, and others have maintained that he was a theist, not a pantheist. On the Théodicée of Leibnitz there are three excellent papers by Prof. Torrey in the Andover Rev. for October, November, and December 1885. The best

general history of philosophy is Kuno Fischer's; the best history of Cartesianism F, Bouiltier's.

any revelation or instruction, any person or event, what can be traced in growth and formation through thousands of years, and can be shown by facts and documents to have been influenced by all the chief causes which have made history what it is. The history of the idea of God is the centre of all history, both explained by and explaining it; and our nineteenth-century idca of God is the result of the entire historico-psychological process which has produced the culture and religion of the 19th century. The idea of God is what it now is because God's whole guidance of man and man's whole searcli for God, the whole economy and evolution of things and the whole constitution and development of thought and feeling, have been what they have been from the beginning of history to the present time. Anthropology, comparative psycho- logy, the science of language, comparative theology, Biblical theo- logy, the history of philosophy, and the history of Christian doctrine, have all been engaged in attempting to discover the factors and stages of the vast and complex process which has resulted in the accepted idea of God; and, by their separate and conjunct endeavours, they have succeeded in casting great light on all parts of the process.

As to the absolute historical origin of theism—as to where, when, and how the theistic conception of the Divine first obtained recog- nition among men —a definitive answer has not yet been reached. But the labour expended on

the problem has not been wasted. It has made clearer the nature of the inquiry, rendered apparent the unsatisfactoriness of previous solutions, opened up glimpses of divers ways by which men have been led to belief in the unity of God, and accumulated means and materials for future and probably more successful work.

The question as to the psychological origin of theism cannot be wholly separated from that as to its historical origin. Unless theism can be shown to be the primitive form of religion, it cannot be held to have liad an entirely peculiar and distinct psychological origin, but must be viewed as simply a phase or development of religion. It cannot be said that there is as yet agreement as to the psychological origin, or as to the psychological constitution even, of religion. ‘The hypothesis of a simple impartation of the knowledge of God and spiritual things through primitive revelation, or through instruction and tradition which go back to the first appearance of man on earth, still retains a hold on certain conser- vative minds, but has received no confirmation from modern science and discovery, and is plainly of its very nature inadequate.

God being conceived to be what man would wish himself to be; Schleiermacher has argued that a feeling of absolute dependence, of pure and complete passiveness, is our evidence for the presence of an infinite energy, an infinite being; Mansel has represented the feeling of dependence and the conviction of moral obligation as the sources of the religious consciousness; Pfleiderer represents reli- gion as a response to the sense of conflict and contradiction between man’s feelings of dependence and of freedom; Rauwenhoff traces its origin to respect (Achtung), the root also of moral conduct and of family life; others have referred it to specific ethical feelings; and many have represented it to be essentially love. The number of these attempts and the diversity of these results are cxplained by the complexity of religious feeling. In religion all the feelings which raise man above the merely animal condition are involved. Man is not religious by any one feeling or by a few feelings, but by the whole constitution of his emotional nature. His heart, with all its wealth of feelings, has been made for God. Hence all the theories referred to have easily been shown to be

one-sided, and to have exaggerated the significance and influence in religion of particular emotional elements, but hence also they all contain more or less important portions of the truth, and have all contri- buted towards a knowledge of the full truth. Man is not only, however, disposed by all his chief sentiments for religion, but all these sentiments, when normally and healthfully developed, tend towards theism. It is only in a theistic form of religion that they can find true rest and satisfaction. One God can alone be the object of the highest devotional fear, can alone be regarded as ideally perfect, or as a being on whom the worshipper is absolutely dependent, can alone be loved with the whole heart and esteemed with undivided reverence, can alone be recognized as the sole author of the moral law, the alone good. The theories which trace the origin of religion to feeling have the merit of recognizing that religion is not an affair of mere intellect; that the Divine could not even be known by men if they had not feelings and affections as well as intellectual powers; that, if God be love, for example, He can only be known by love; that, if He have moral attributes, we must have moral feelings in order to be able to recognize them. On the other hand, in so far as those theories represent religion as reducible to mere feeling or as independent of intellect, they have the fault of overlooking that all the feelings included in religion presuppose apprehensions and judgments, and are valid only in so far as they have the warrant of intelligence. It is as much an error, however, to account for religion by any one intellectual principle as by any one emotional element. Religion has no one special seat, such as ‘‘ the central point of unity behind conscious- ness,” imagined by Schleiermacher; no ‘‘ special organ,” such as ‘*conscience ” was supposed to be by Schenkel; and no one special principle of cognition, such as the law of causality has been repre- sented to be by several philosophers and theologians, All the ultimate principles of cognition are involved in religion, and all lead, if consistently followed far enough, to theism. The whole head as well as the whole heart has been made for religion, and for the perfect form of religion. Max Miiller, in his Hibbert Lectures, traces the idea of God to a special faculty of religion—‘‘ a subjective faculty for the apprehension of the infinite,” ‘‘a mental faculty, which, independent of, nay, in spite of, sense and reason, enables man to apprehend the infinite under different names and under varying disguises.” This view will not bear, perhaps, a close scrutiny. The infinite, as an implicit condition of thought, is not more involved in

religious than in other thought. We cannot think anything as finite without implying the infinite. Space cannot be thought of except as extensively, nor time except as pro- tensively, infinite. As a condition of thought, the infinite is in- volved in religious knowledge only so far as it is involved in all knowledge. On the other hand, as an explicit object of thought, it is not present in the lower forms of religion at all, which exist only because the thought of infinity is not associated in the religious consciousness with that of Dcity, except where reflexion is some- what highly developed; and, even in the highest stages of religion, it is only apprehended as one aspect of Deity. Infinity is not God, but merely an attribute of the attributes of God, and not even an exclusively Divine attribute. The hypothesis that the idea of God is gained by intuition or vision is proved to be erroneous by the fact that the idea of God, and the process by which it is reached, are capable of being analysed, and therefore not simple, and like- wise by the variety and discordance of the ideas of God which have been actually formed. The apprehension of God seems to be only possible through a ‘process which involves all that is essential in the human constitution—will, affection, intelligence, conscience, reason, —and the ideas which they supply—cause, design, goodness, infinity, &c. These are so connected that they may all be embraced in a single act and coalesce in one grand issue. During the last thirty years there has been more psychological investigation as to the origin and nature of religion than during all previous history, and the whole tendency of it has been to set aside all solutions which represent man as religious only in virtue of particular senti- ments or principles, and to make manifest that the psychology of

i

religion is that of the entire human nature ina special relationship. The best of the later investigations are much more thorough and comprehensive than any of earlier date.?

The agnosticism originated by Kant has been one of the distinc- Kantian tive and prominent phenomenain the history of religion and theism agnostj- during the 19th century. It sprang out of an earlier agnosticisin. cism, Hume and his predecessors admitted that the conditions of thought —otherwisc, the categories of experience or ideas of reason—were in appearance

necessary and objectively valid, but in reality only arbitrary and subjective, their seeming necessity and objectivity being illusory, and consequent on mere repetitions and accidental associations of sensations and feelings. Kant showed that they were not only scemingly but really necessary to thought, and irresolvable into the particular in experience. He denied, however, that we are entitled to consider them as of more than subjective applicability,—that what we necessarily think must necessarily be, or be as we think it. He affirmed all knowledge to be confined to experience, the phenomenal, the conditioned. It was quite in accordance with this view of the limits of knowledge that he should have denied that we can know God, even while he affirmed that we cannot but think of God. It was by no means in obvious harmony with it that he should have affirmed that we must, on moral grounds, retain a certain belief in God. Sir W. Hamilton and Dean Mansel followed Kant in holding that we can have no knowledge of God in Himself, as knowledge is only of the relative and phenomenal. They strove to show that the notions of the unconditioned, the infinite, the absolute, arc mere negations of thought, which destroy themselves by their mutual contradictions and by the absurdities which they involve. Yet both of these philosophers held that there is a revclation of God in Scripture and conscience, and that we are bound to believe it, not indeed as teaching us what God really is, but what He wishes us to believe concerning Him. Herbert Spencer, adopting Kant's theory of the limits of knowledge, and regarding as decisive Hamilton and Mansel's polemic against the philosophies of the Absolute, has concluded that the only truth underlying professed revelations, positive religions, and so-called theological sciences is the existence of an unknowable and unthinkable cause of all things. In the view of the Positivist the unknowable itself is a metaphysical fiction. The Kantian doctrine has had a still more extensive influence in Germany than in Britain, and German philosophers and theologians have displayed great ingenuity in thcir endeavours to combine with it some sort of recognition of God and of religion.

Fries, De Wette, and others have relegated religion to the sphere of faith, Schleiermacher and his followers to that of feeling, Ritsch] and his school to that of ethical wants, F. A. Lange to that of imagination, &c. Their common aim has been to find for piety towards God a special place which they can fence off from the rest of human nature, so as to beable to claim

for religion independence of reason, speculation, and science, a right to existence even although necessarily ignorant of the object of its faith, feeliug, moral sense, or phantasy.” ; :

The movement indicated has led to no direct conclusion which has obtained, or is likely to obtain, general assent. It has had, however, a very important indirect result. It has shown how interested in, and dependent on, a true criticism or science of cognition are thcism and theology. It has made increasingly manifest the immense significance to religion of the problem as to the powers and limits of thought which Kant stated and discussed with so much vigour and originality. Hence research into what ; the Germans call “die erkenntnisstheoretischen Grundsitze’’—the philosophical bases—of theism has been greatly stimulated and : advanced by the movement. This is an enormous gain, which I more than compensates for sundry incidental losses. Kant’s solu- tion of the problem which he placed in the foreground of philosophy } has not been found to be one in which the mind can rest. From | his agnosticism down to the very empiricism which it was his aim to refute descent is logically inevitable. The agnosticism of piety has in no form been able to discover a halting place,—a spot on

1 Among recent disquisitions as to the psychological origin of the religious consciousness and the conception of God may be specified—Pfleiderer’s in last ed. of his Religionsphilosophie; Biedermann’s in last ed. of his Dogmattk; W. Hermann’s in his Die Religion im Verhdltniss zum Welterkennen und zur Sittlich- keit, 1879; Kaftan’s in his Das Wesen der chr. Religion, 1881; Lipsius’s in his Philosophie und Religion, 1885; and Rauwenhoff’s in his ‘‘Ontstaan van den Godsdienst,” Theol. Tijdschr., May 1885.

2 Among works in which it is denicd that the real nature of God can be known arc—Kant’s Kr. d.r. V.; Fichte’s Kr. aller Offenbarung ; Schleicrmacher’s Reden, Dialekttk, and Glaubenslehre; Trendelenburg’s Log. Untersuchungen, ii. | §§ xx.-xxiv.; Hamilton’s Lect. on Met., and Discussions ; Manse?s Bampton Lect., and Philosophy of the Conditioned; H. Spencer’s First Principles: and the writings of Lange, Ritschl, and other Neo-Kantists. Among works in which the real cog- noscibility of God is affirmed are—Calderwood’s Ph, of the Infinite; C. Hodge’s Sys. Th., i.;

M‘Cosh’s Int. of the Mind, Phil. Series, &c.; H. B. Smith’s Jntr. to Ch. Th., and Futth and Philosophy; Maurice’s What is Revelation ?; Young’s Province of Reason; and Harris’s Phil. Bases of Theism. See also L. Robert, De la Certitude, &c., 1880; Ollé-Laprune, De la Certitude Morale, 1880; G. Derepas Les Théortes de I’ Inconnaissable, 1883 ; G. Matheson, in Can the Old Faith Live with the New?, 1885; R.T. Smith, Man’s Knowledge of Man and of God, 1886; ieee Die Erkennbarkett Gottes, 1876; and Bertling, Die Erkennbarkett Gottes,

3.

d _ Philo- | sophy of the Ab- solute.

THE iS ™

which to raise theism or any solid religious constrnction. In no form has it been able to prove its legitimaey, to maintain its self- consistency, or to defend itself successfully against the agnosticism of unbelief. It is, therefore, not surprising that it should have been very generally regarded as dangerous to theism in reality, even when friendly to it in intention. Yet there is mueh in the theory of cognition on which it proceeds which the theist can utilize. Indeed, no theory of cognition can afford a satisfactory basis to theism which does not largely adopt and assimilate that of Kant. He has conclusively shown that all onr knowledge is a synthesis of contingent impressions and necessary conditions; that without the latter there can be neither sense, understanding, nor reason; that they constitute intelligence, and are the light of mind; that they also pervade the whole world of experienee and illuminate it; that there is neither thing nor thought in the uni- verse which does not exhibit them in some of their aspects; that apart from them there can be no reality, no truth, no science. The agnostic corollaries appended to this theory by Kant and others, instead of being necessary consequences from it, are ineon- sistent with it. Kant and the agnostics say that we know only the eonditioned; but what they prove is that we know also the conditions of thought, and that these conditions are themselves unconditioned, otherwise they would not be necessary. They affirm that we can know only the phenomenal and relative, but what they establish is that it is as impossible to know only the relative and phenomenal as to know only the absolute and noumenal, and that in so far

as we know at all we know through ideas which are absolute and noumenal in the only intelligible, and in a very real and important, sensc. They maintain, what is very true, if not a truism, that the categories are only valid for experience, and they imply that.this is because experience limits and defines the cate- gories, whercas, according to their own theory, it is the categories which condition experienec and enter as constituents into all experience, so that to say that the categories are only valid for experience means very little, experience merely existing so far as the categories enable us to have it, and being valid so far as the categories are legitimately applied, although not farther, which leaves no more presumption against religious experience than against sensible experience. They have denied the objective validity of the categories or necessary conditions of thought. This denial is the distinctive feature of all modern agnosticism; and the theist who would vindicate the reality of his knowledge of God, the legi- timacy of his belief in God, the worth of his religious experience, inust refute the reasonings by which it has been supported; show that consciousness testifies against it, the subjectivity of any true category being unthinkable and inconceivable; and indicate how its admission must subvert not only the foundation of theology but of all other seienees, and resolve them all into castles in the air, or into such stnff as dreams are made of. In the accomplishment of this task as much guidanee and aid may be found, perhaps, in the theories of cognition of Ferrier and Rosmini as from those of any of the Germans; but Hegel and his followers, not a few of the Herbartists, Ulrici, Harms, and many other German thinkers, have contributed to show the falsity of the critical theory at this point. Amended here, it is a theory admirably fitted to be the corner-stone of a philosophical theism.

More may be attempted to be done in the region of the necessary and unconditioned. The conditions of thought, the categories of expcrience, the ideas of reason are all linked together, so that each has its own place and is part of a whole. And of what whole? The idea of God. All the metaphysical categories are included therein, for God is the Absolute Being ; all the physical categories, for He is Absoluto Force and Life; all the mental categories, for He is Absolute Spirit; all the moral categories, for He is the Absolutely Good. The idea of God is the richest, the most inclusive, the most comprehensive, of all ideas. It is the idea of ideas, for it takes up all

other ideas into itself and gives them unity, so that they constitute a system. The whole system issues into, and is rendered organic by, the idea of God, which, indeed, contains within itself all the ideas which are the conditions of human reason and the gronnds of known existence. All sciences, and even all phases and varieties of human experience, are only developments of some of the ideas included in this supreme and all-compreliensive idea, and the developments have in no instance exhausted the ideas. Hence in the idea of God must be the whole truth of the universe as well as of the mind. These sentences are an attempt to express in the briefest intelligible form what it was the aim of the so-called philosophy of the Absolute to prove to be not only true, but the truth. Tegel and Schelling, Krause and Baadcr, and their associates, all felt themselves to have the one mission in life of making manifest that God was thus the truth, the light of all knowledge, self-revcaling in all science, the sole object of all philosophy. The Absolute with which they occupied themselves so earnestly was no abstraction, no fiction, such as Hamilton and Mansel supposed it to be,—not the wholly indeter-minate, not that which is ont of all relation to everything or to anything, not the Unknowablc,—but the ground ofall relationship,

the foundation alike of existence and of thought, that which it is not only not impossible to know, but which it is impossible not to know, the knowledge of it being implied in all knowledge. Hegel expressed not only his own conviction, but the central and vital thought of the whole anti-agnostic movement whieh culminated in him when he wrote, ‘‘ The object of religion is, like that of philo- sophy, the eternal truth itself in its objective existence: it is God, and nothing but God, and the explanation of God. Philosophy is not a wisdom of the world, but a knowledge of the unworldly ; not a knowledge of outward matter, of empirical being and life, but knowledge of that which is eternal, of that which is God and which flows from His nature, as that must manifest and develop itself. Hence philosophy in explaining religion explains itself, and in explaining itself explains religion. Philosophy and religion thus coincide in that they have one and the same object.” The adherents of the philosophy of the Absolute must be admitted to have fallen, in their revulsion from agnosticism, into many extra- vagances of gnosticism ; but a theist who does not sympathize with

their main aim, and even aceepts most of the results as to which they are agreed, cannot be credited with having much philosophical insight into what a thorough and consistent theism unplies. A God who is not the Absolute as they understood the term, not the Unconditioned revealed in all that is conditioned, and the essential content of all knowledge at its highest, cannot be the God either of a profound philosophy or a fully-developed religion. The philosophy of tle Absolute was, on the whole, a great advance towards a philosophical theism.!

And yet it was largely pantheistic, and tended strongly towards pantheism. This was not surprising. Any philosophy which is in thorough earnest to show that God is the ground of all existence and the condition of all knowledge must find it difficult to retain a firm grasp of the personality and transcendence of the Divino and to set them forth with due prominence. Certainly some of the most influential representatives of the philosophy of the Absolute ignored or misrepresented them. The consequence was, however, that a band of thinkers soon appeared who were animated with the most zealous desire to do justice to these aspects of tho Absolute, and to-make evident the one-sidedness and inadequaey of every pantheistic conception of the Divine. This was the common aim of those who gathered around the younger Fichte, and whose literary organ was the Zeitschrift fiir Philosophie. Chalybius, K. Ph. Fischer, Sengler, Wceisse, Wirth, and Ulrici may be named as among the ablest aud most active. The Roman Catholic Giinther and his followers worked in mueh the same spirit. Lotze has effectively co-operated by his ingenious defence of the thesis that ‘‘ perfect personality is to be found only in God, while in all finite spirits there exists only a weak imitation of personality ; the finiteness of the finite is not a productive condi- tion of personality, but rather a limiting barricr to its perfect development.” This movement also, then, has tended to develop and contributed to enrich the theory of theism. Its special mis- sion has been to prove that theism is wider than pantheism, and can include all the truth in pantheism, while pantheism must necessarily exclude truth in theism essential to the vitality and vigour both of religion and of morality.?

The philosophy of the Absolute, judged of from a distinctly theistic point of view, was defective on another side. It regarded too exclusively the necessary and formal in thought, trusted almost entirely to its insight into

the significance of the categories and its powers of rational deduction. Hence the idca of the Divine which it attained, if vast and comprehensive, was also vague and abstraet, shadowy and unimpressive. Correction was needed on this side also, and it came through Schleiermacher and that large company of theologians, among whom Lipsius and Ritschl are at present the most prominent, who have dwelt on the importance of proceed- ing from immediate personal experience, from the direct testimony of pious feeling, from the practical needs of the moral life, &c. From these theologians may be learned that God is to be known, not through merce intellectual cognition, but through spiritual experience, and that no dicta as to the Divine not verifiable in experience, not efficacious to sustain piety and to promote virtue, to elevate and purify the heart, to invigorate the will, to ennoble

1 On the doctrine of God propounded by the philosophers of the Absolute may be consulted the histories of philosophy by Chalybaéus, Michelet, Erdmann, Ueberweg, K. Fischer, Harms, Zcller, &c., also Piinjer, ii. bks. 3 and 5; the chapters in Pfleidcrer on Schelling, Hegel, Neo-Schellingianism, and Neo- Hegelianism; Dorner's Hist. of Prot. Th., ii. 257, 395; Lichtemberger's Hist. des Idées Religieuses en Allemagne, &c., passim; Ehrenhaus's Hegel's Gottesbegrig, &c.; Franz on Schelling's Positive Philosophie; Opzoomer's Leer van God, bY Krause; K.Ph. Fischer's Characteristik der Theosophice Baaders ; &c.

2 See art. ''Theismus," by Ulrici, in Herzog's Real-Encyklopadie, xv. As representing this phase of theism the following works may be named :—C. H. Weisse's Idee der Gottheit, 1844, and Philosophische Dogmatik, 1855; Wirth's Speculative Idee Gottes, 1845; Sengler''s Idee Goties, 1845-47; J. H. Fichtc's Speculative Theologie, 1846-47 ; Hanne's dee der absoluten Persdnlichkett, 1867 ; Ulrici's Gott u. die Natur, 1875; and Lotze's Microcosmos, ii. ix. 4-5 (Eng. tr.). The school is well represented in America by Prof. Bowne. See his Studies in Theism, especially ch. 7-9. See also art. of Prof. J. S. Candlish on '' The Personality of God," in Princeton Rev., Sept. 1884, and of Gardiner on ' Lotze's Theistic Philosophy," in Presby. Rev., Oct. 1885.

Theistic

the character, to sanctify both individuals and communities, are likely to be true. Experience of the Divine can be the richest and surest experience only if it not merely implies all that is absolute and necessary in consciousness and existence, but is also confirmed and guaranteed by all that is relative and contingent therein. What are known as ‘‘ the proofs” for the Divine existence have from the time of Kant to the present been often represented as sophistical or useless. This view is, however, less prevalent than it was. During the last twenty years the proofs have been in mueh greater repute, and have had far more labour expended on them, than during the previous part of the century. Thcy have, of course, been considerably modified, in conformity with the general growth of thought and knowledge. For instance, they are no longer presented elaborately analysed into series or groups of syllogisms. It is recognized that the fetters which would assuredly arrest the progress of physical and mental science cannot be favourable to that of theology. It is recognized that the validity of the proofs must be entircly dependent on the truthfulness with which they indicate the modes in which God reveals Himself, the facts through which man apprehends the presence and attributes of God, and that, therefore, the more simply they are stated the better. Man knows God some- what as he knows the minds of his féllow-men—namely, inferen- tially, —yet through an experience at once so simple and so manifold that all attempts at a syllogistic representation of the process must necessarily do it injustice. The closeness and character of the con- nexion of the proofs have also come to be more clearly seen. They are perceived to constitute an organic whole of argument, each of which establishes its separate element, and thus contributes to the general result—confirmatory evidence that God is, and complemen- tary evidence as to what God is. The explanation of this doubtless is that the apprehension of God is itself an organic whole, a complex and harmonious process, involving all that is essential in the human mind, yet all the constituents of which are so connected that they may be embraced in a single act and coalesce into one grand issue. The cosmological argument concludes from the existence of the

mological world as temporal and contingent, conditioned and phenomenal,

argu- ment.

to the existence of God as its one eternal, unconditioned, self- existent cause. It is an argument which has been in no respect discredited by recent research and discussion, which is in substance accepted not only by theists but by panthcists, and which forms the basis even of the philosophy of Herbert Spencer. The principle on which it proceeds—the principle of causality—has only come to be more clearly seen to be ultimate, universal, and necessary. The hypothesis of an infinite series of causes and effects has not had its burden of irrationality in the least diminished. The progress of science has not tended to show that the world itself may be reason- ably regarded as eternal and self-existent ; in the view of theists it has only tended to render more probable the doctrine that all physical things must have their origin in a single non-physical cause. The necessity of determining aright the bearings of the new views reached or suggested by seience as to the ultimate constitution of matter, the conservation of energy, cosmic evolution, the age and duration of the present physical system, &c., has been the chief factor in the latest developments of the argument a contingentia mundi. The teleological argument, whieh concludes from the regularities and adjustments, preconformities and har- monies, in nature that its first cause must be an intelligence, has been both corrected and extended owing to recent advauccs of seience and especially of biological science. The theory of evolu- tion has not shaken the principle or lessened the force of the argument, while it has widened its scope and opened up vistas of grander design, but it has so changed its mode of presentation that already the Bridgewater Treatises and similar works are to some extent antiquated. Perhaps the most promising of the later applications of the argument is that which rests on the results obtained by a philosophical study of history, and which seeks to show that the goal of the evolution of life, so far as it has yet pro- ceeded, is the perfecting of human nature, and the eternal source of things a power which makes for truth and righteousness. The ethical argument—the proof from conscience and the moral order— held a very subordinate place in the estimation of writers on natural theology until Kant rested on it almost the whole weight of theism. It has ever since been prominent, and has been the argument most relied on to produce practical

conviction. Much importance is now rarely attached to those forms of the metaphysical argument which are deduetions from a particular conception, as, ¢.g., of a perfect being. Ignorance alone, however, can account for the assertion often met with that the argument is generally abandoned. It has only been transformed. It has passed from a stage in which it was presented in particular ontological forms into one in which it is set forth in a general epistemological form. As at present maintained it is to the effect that God is the idea of ideas, the ultimate in human thought, without whom all thought is confusion and self- contradiction. In this form, by what theologians and religious philosophers possessed of much speculative insight is it not held ??

ae pea ole Ee ee 1 See the present writer's 7heism, and the indications of the literature given in the notes.

THEISM

The changes adopted in the methods of theistic proof have all tended in one direction, namcly, to remove or correct extreme and exaggerated conceptions of the Divine transcendence and to produce a true appreciation of the Divine immanence,—to set aside deism and to enrich theism with what is good in pantheism. The general] movement of religious speculation within the theistic arca has been towards mediation between the extremes of pantheism and of deism, towards harmonious combination of the personal self-equality and the universal agency of the Divine. Positive science has power- fully co-operated with speculation in giving support and impulse to this movement. While the modern scientific view of the world does not result in pantheism, it affords it a partial and relative justification, and requires a theism which, while maintaining the personality of God, recognizes God to be in all things and all things to be of God, through God, and to God. It may be said that theism has always thus recognized the Divine immanence. The vague recognition of it, however, which precedes scientific insight and the conquest and absorption of pantheism is not to be identified with the realizing comprehension of it which is their result.?

As to the further treatment of the idea of God in recent or con- The idea temporary theology, the following may be mentioned as, perhaps, of God the chief distinetive features :—first, the general endeavour to in eon-

present the idea as a harmonious reflex of the Divine nature and tempo- life, instead of as a mere aggregate of attributes ; secondly, and rary consequently, the greater care shown in the classification and theology

correlation of the attributes, so as to refer them to their appropriate places in the one great organic thought; and, thirdly, the more truly cthical and spiritual representation given of the Divine character. To realize the nature and import of the first of these features it is only necessary to compare the cxpositions given of the idea of God in the works of such theologians as Nitzsch, Thomasius, Dorner, Philippi, Kahnis, and even more in those of the represen- tatives of German speculative theism, with such as are to be found in the treatises of Hill, Watson, Wardlaw, and Hodge, which, although published in the present century, express only the views of an earlier age. As to the second point, there has of late been a vast amount of thought expended in endeavouring so to classify and co-ordinate the attributes, and so to refer them to the various moments of the Divine existence and life, as that God may be able to be apprehended both in His unity and completeness, self-iden- tity and spiritual richness, as one whole harmonious and perfect personality. Of the work attempted in this direction our limits will not allow us to treat. In regard to the third feature, any one who will peruse an essay like Weber's Vom Zorne Gottes, or Ritschl's De Ira Dei, and compares the way in which the Biblical conception of the wrath of God is there presented with the mode of exhibiting it prevaleut for so many ages, is likely to be convinced that considerable progress has been made even in recent times in the study of the moral aspects of God's character. That the Divine glory must centre in moral perfection, in holy love, is a thought which is undoubtedly being realized by all theists with ever-increas- ing clearness and fulness.*

It follows from the above that theistic thought has been moving Advance in a direction which could not fail to suggest to those influenced by of trini- it that a rigidly unitarian conception of God must be inadequate, tarian and that the trinitarian conception might be the only one in which theism.

reason can rest as self-consistent. So long as the simplicity of the Divine nature was conceived of as an abstract self-identity, intelligence could not venture to attempt to pass from the unity to the trinity of the Godhead, or

hope for any glimpse of the pos- sibility of harmoniously combining them. But, this view of the simplieity of the Divine nature having been abandoned, and an idea of God attained which assigns to Hiin all the distinctions com- patible with, and demanded by, completencss and perfection of personality, the doctrine of the Trinity neccssarily entcred on a new stage of its history. The free movement of thought in this century, far from expelling it from its place in the mind of Christendom, has caused it to strike deeper root and grow with fresh vigour. Never since the Nicene age has theological speculation been so actively occupied with the constitution of the Godhead, and with the trinitarian representation thereof, as from the commencement of the present century. It is, of course, impossible here to describe any of the attempts which, during this period, have been made to show that the absolute Divine self-consciousness implies a trinitarian form of existence, and that intelligently to think the essential Trinity is to think thosc moments in the Divine existence without whieh personality and self-consciousness are unthinkable ; or that a worthy conception of Divine love demands a trinitarian mode of life; or that a world distinct from God presupposes that God as triune is in and for Himsclf a perfect and infinite world, so that

2 See the extremcly interesting papers by Peabody, Montgomery, Howison, andjHarris in the Journal of Speculative Philosophy for Oct. 1885, on the ques- tion, ‘‘Is Pantheism the Legitimate Outcome of Modern Science?” Also F. E. Abbot’s Scientific Theism, 1885; and J. Fiske’s Idea of God as affected by Modern Knowledge, 1885.

3 Bruch, Lehre von den Géttl. Eigenschaften, 1842; Moll, De Justo Attributorum Det Discrimine, 1855. Both are, however, already inadequate.

Position of uni- tarian theism.

Man’s interest in the

| idea of | God,

Growth

of the idea in

| specula-

tive thought,

Ya eis M

His attributes and activities already fully realized inthe trinitarian life can proceed outwards, not of necessity but of absolute freedom ; or that the whole universe is a manifestation of His triune nature, and all finite spiritual life a reflexion of the archetypal life, self- sustained and self-fulfilled therein. All the more thoughtful trinitarian divines of tle present endeavour to make it apparent that the doctrine of the Trinity is not one which has been merely imposed upon faith by external authority, but one which satisfies reason, gives expression to the self-evidencing substance of reve-lation, aud explains and supports religious experience. If it be thought that their success has not been great, it has to be remcem- bered that they have been labouring near the conimeneement of a movement, and so at a stage when all individual efforts can have only a very limited worth. Toone gencral conclusion they all seem to have come, namely, that the idea of God as substance is not the only idea with which we can connect, or in which we may find implied, tri-personality. The category of substance is, in some respects, one very inapplicable to God, as the philosophy of Spinoza has indirectly shown. If the theologians referred to be correct, the doctrine of the Trinity is not specially dependent upon it. In their view God canuot be thouglit of-consistently as, e.g., Absolute Life, Absolute Intclligence, or Absolute Love, unless He be thought of in a trinitarian manner.

While trinitarian theism has thus during the present century shown abundant vitality and vigour, it cannot be said to have gained any decided victory over unitarian theism. The latter has also within the same period spread more widely and shown more practical activity, more spiritual life, than inany formerage. The unitarianism represented by a Martineau is a manifest advance on that which was represented by a Priestley. Theism in its nnitarian form is the creed of very many of the most cultured and most religious minds of our time, alike in Europe and America. In this form it has also signally shown its power in contemporary India. Brahmoism is, perhaps, the most remarkable example of a unitarian theism which exhibits all the characteristics of a positive faith and a churchly organization. The

unitarian theism of the present age is distinguished by the great variety of its kinds or types. None of these, it must be added, are very definite or stable. Hence unitarian theism is often seen to approximate to, or become absorbed into, agnosticism or pantheism, cosmism or humanitari- anism. This may be due, however, less to its own character than to the character of the age. :

The mind of man has clearly not yet ceased to be intensely interested in thoughts of God. There are no grounds apparent for supposing that it will ever cease to seek after Him or to strive to enlarge its knowledge of His ways. And, if the idea of God be what has been suggested in the foregoing pages, the search for God cannot fail to meet with an ever-growing response. If the idea of God be the most comprehensive of ideas, inclusive of all the cate- gories of thought and implicative of their harmonious synthesis and perfect realization, all thought and experience must of its very nature tend to lead onwards to a fuller knowledge of God. For the knowledge of God, on this view, consists in no mere inference reached through a process of theological argumentation, but in an ever-growillg apprehension of an ever-advancing self-revelation of God; and all philosophy, science, experience, and history must necessarily work together to promote it.

All speculative thought, whether professedly metaphysical or professedly theological, is conversant with ideas included in the idea of God. It deals with what is necessary in and to thought ; and within that sphere, notwithstanding many aberrations, it has made slow but sure progress. The history of philosophical specu- lation is not only, like the whole history of man, essentially rational, but it is, in substance, the history of reason itself in its purest form,—not the record of an accidental succession of opinions, but of the progressive apprehension by reason of God’s revelation of Himself in its own constitution. ‘There is mueh in the history of speculative thought, jnst as in the outward life of man, that belongs to the accidental and irrational—errors, vagaries, paradoxes, whimsicalities, assuming in all ages the name and the guise of philosophy. But, just as the student of the constitutional history of England can trace, amidst all the complexity and contingency of outwarl and passing events, through successive times and dynasties, underneath the waywardness of individual passion and the

struggle for ascendency of classes and orders, the silent, steady development of that system of ordcred frecdom which we name the constitution of England, so, looking back on the course which human thought has travelled, we shall be at no loss to discern beneath the surface change of opinions, unaffected by the abnormal displays of individual folly and unreason, the traces of a continuous onward movement of mind.”? And this continuous onward move- ment is towards the clearer and wider apprehension of the whole system of ultimate truths which is comprehended in the idea of the Absolute Truth. The thoughts of men as to God are necessarily

1 Goblet d’Alviella, Contemporary Evolution of Religious Thought tn England, America, and India, 1885.

? Principal Caird, Progressiveness of the Sciences, pp. 27-28, Glasgow, 1875.

enlarged by increase of insight into the conditions of their own thinking. The disquisitions of merely professional theologians on the nature and attributes of God have done far less to elucidate the idea of God than the pliilosophical views of great speculative thinkers, and would have done less than they have actually accom- plished were it not for the guidance and suggestion found in these views.

The sciences co-operate with speculative philosophy and with one another in aiding thought to grow in the knowledge of God. The greatness, the power, the wisdom, the goodness, of the God of creation and providence must be increasingly apprchended in the measure that nature and its course, humanity and its history, are apprehended ; and that measure is given us in the stage of develop- ment attained by the sciences. ‘‘God’s glory in the heavens,” for example, is in some degree visible to the naked eye and uninstrueted intellect, but it becomes more perceptible and more impressive with every discovery of astronomy. Not otherwise is it as regards all the sciences. Eaeh of them has its distinctive and appropriate contribution to bring towards the completion of the revelation of God, and cannot withhold it.

But the idea of God is not one which can be rightly apprehended merely through intellect speculatively exercised or operating on the findings of science. Itrequires to be also apprehended through moral experience and the discipline of life. Neither individuals nor communities can know more of God as a moral being than their moral condition and character permit them to know. The appre- hension of God and the sense of moral distinctions and moral obli- gations condition each other and correspond to each other. History shows us that sincere and pious men may receive as a supernaturally revealed truth the declaration that God is love, and yet hold that His love is very limited, being real only to a favoured class, and that He has foreordained, for His mere good pleasure, millions of the human race to eternal misery. How was such inconsisteney possible? Largely because these men, notwithstanding their sincerity and piety, were lacking in that love to man through experience of which alone God's love can be truly apprehended. In like manner, it is not only the science of law which cannot advance more rapidly than the sense of justice, but also theology so far as it treats of the righteousness of God. Thus the knowledge of God is conditioned and influenced by the course of man's moral experience.

The same may be said of the distinctively religious experience. In it also there has been a continuous discovery and a continuous dis- closure of God. It is not long since the ethnic religions were very generally regarded as merely stages of human folly, so many monu- ments of aversion to God and of departure from the truth as to God. It was supposed that they were adequately described when they were called ''idolatrics" and ''superstitions." This view rested on a strangely unworthy conception both of human nature and of Divine providence, and is fast passing away. In its place has come the conviction that the history of religion has becn essen- tially a process of search for God on the part of man, and a proccss of self-revelation on the part of God to man, resulting in a eontinu- ous widening and deepening of human apprehension of the Divine. All, indeed, has not been progress in the history of religion either in the ethnic or Christian period ; much has been the reverse ; but all stages of religion testify that man has been seeking and finding God, and God making Himself known unto man.

But, while knowledge of God may reasonably be expected un- ceasingly to grow, in all the ways which have been indicated, from more to more, it is not to be supposed that doubt or denial of God's existence must, therefore, speedily disappear. Religious aguos- ticism cannot fail to remain long prevalent. The very wealth of contents in the idea of God inevitably exposes the idea to the assaults of agnosticism. All kinds of agnosticism merge into agnosticism as to God, from the very fact that all knowledge implies and may contribute to the knowledge of God. The more comprehensive an idea is from the more points can it be assailed, and the idea of God, being comprehensive of all ultimate ideas, may be assailed through them all, as, for example, through the idea of being, or of infinity, or of causality, or of personality, or of rectitude. 'Then, in another way, the unique fulness of the idea of God explains the prevalence of agnosticism in regard to it. The ideas are not precisely in God what they are in man or nature. God is being as man or nature is not; for He is independent and necessary being, and in that sense the one true Being. God is not limited by time and space as creatures are; for, whereas duration and extension merely are predicates of creatures, the corresponding attributes of God are eternity and immensity. God as first cause is a cause in a higher and more real sense than any seeond cause. So as to personality, intelligence, holiness, love. Just because the idea of God is thus elevated in all respects, there are many minds which fail or refuse to rise up to it, and which because of its very truth reject it as not true at all. They will not hear of that Absolute Truth which is simply the idea of God; but that they reject it is their misfortune, not any argument against the truth itself, (iis 185)

XXIII. — 22

Contribu- tious of seienee ;

of moral experi- enee ;

of re- ligious experi- enee,

Coming struggles with ag- nosticism.

THEMIS, the Greek mythological personification of custom. In Homer the word occurs both in the singular and in the plural (themistes), with the sense of “ custom,” ‘unwritten law.” But even in Homer Themis is also spoken of as a goddess who, at the command of Zeus, calls the gods to an assembly and summons or disperses the assemblies of men. But after all she is a thin abstraction, a faint shadow, by the side of the full-blooded gods of Olympus. Hesiod furnished her with a pedigree (making her the daughter of Sky and Earth), and married her to Zeus, by whom she became the mother of a brood of well- bred abstractions, —Legality, Justice, Peace, the Hours, and the Fates. Pindar, no doubt with a full sense of her abstract nature, speaks of her as the assessor of Zeus. In one passage (Prom., 209) Aischylus seems to regard her as identical with Earth, and “ Earth-Themis ” had a worship and priestess at Athens, where Athene also appears with the surname Themis. There was a tradition that the oracle at Delphi had first been in the hands of Earth, who transferred it afterwards to Themis, who in turn gave it up to Apollo. Themis had temples at Athens, Thebes, Tanagra, and Epidaurus. At Olympia she had an altar, and at Trcezen there was an altar of the Themides (plural of Themis). In modern writers Themis sometimes stands as a personification of law and justice,—an idea much more abstract and advanced than the original sense of ‘“ tradi- tional custom.”

THEMISTIUS, named ecidpadyjs, or “the well-lan- guaged,” was a rhetorician and philosopher of the latter half of the 4th century. Of Paphlagonian descent, he settled and taught at Constantinople. Thence he sas called to Rome, but, after a short stay in the West, returned to the Eastern capital, where he resided during the rest of his life. Though a pagan, he was admitted to the senate by Constantius in 355. He was prefect of Constantinople in 384 on the nomination of Theodosius. ‘Themistius’s paraphrases of Aristotle’s Posterior Analytics, Physics, and De Anima are deservedly esteemed; but weariness and disgust are the sentiments stirred by the servile orations in which he panegyrizes successive emperors, comparing first one and then another to Plato’s “true philosopher,” and, when all other compliments have been exhausted, to the “idea” itself. (See Reiske, quoted with approval by Dindorf in the preface to his edition: ‘‘ Fuit aulicus adu- lator et versipellis, vanus jactator philosophic sue, specie magis quam re culte, ineptus et ridiculus vexator et appli- cator Homeri et veteris

histori, tautologus et sophista ; in omnibus orationibus pene eadem, et ubique argutice longe petite.”) Themistius’s paraphrases of the De Celo and of book A of the Metaphysics have reached us only through Hebrew versions.

The first edition of Themistius’s works (Venice, 1534) included the paraphrases and eight of the orations. Ninetecn orations were known to Petavius, whosc editions appeared in 1613 and 1618. Harduin (Paris, 1684) gives thirty-three. Another oration was discovered by Angelo Mai, and published at Milan in 1816. The most recent editions are W. Dindorf’s of the orations (Leipsic, 1832) and L. Spengel’s of the paraphrases (Leipsic, 1866). The Latin translations of the Hebrew versions of the paraphrases of the De Calo and book A of the Metaphysics were published at Venice in 1574 and 1558 respectively. Sce Fabricius, Bibliotheca Greca, vi. 798 sq.

THEMISTOCLES was born in the latter part of the 6th century B.c., some time during the rule of the Pisistratids at Athens, the son of an Athenian father, Neocles, by a foreign woman from Thrace or Caria. A wayward, ambitious, aspiring boy, out of sympathy alike with ordinary boyish amusements and with the learning and culture of the age, he was told, it is said, by his schoolmaster “ that he would certainly be something great, whether good or bad.” The victory of Marathon in 490 stirred the young man’s soul, and he seems to have foreseen that it was but

the beginning of a yet greater conflict. He resolved from that time to make his country great, that he might be great and famous himself. As he was rising to political distine- tion, he had for his rival the Greek “ Cato,” the incorrupt- ible Aristides, a purer patriot, a better citizen, but a less sagacious and far-seeing statesman, The two men were in sharp antagonism as to what their country’s policy should be, and it ended in a vote of ostracism which sent Aristides into temporary banishment in 483. The main question between them probably was whether Athens should seek greatness by sea or by land (see vol. xi. p. 99), and the victory of the policy of Themistocles led on to the most brilliant era in Greek history, the maritime supremacy of Athens. Persia, he felt sure, was meditating a great revenge, and Athens must make herself a naval power to avert the blow. Already a small war with the Avginetan islanders, close to her own shores, had roused her

energies, and at the prompting of Themistocles she had built 200 ships and trained a number of seamen. In 480 the storm which Themistocles had clearly foreseen burst ; the great king, as he was called, was covering the land with his troops and the sea with his ships. Greece was divided and panic- stricken; Thessaly and all to the north of Bceotia had joined the enemy, and the despair of the remainder of the Greek world was echoed by the oracle of Delphi. There was, however, a word of hope in the memorable phrase of the ‘ wooden wall,”! which, it was generally felt, must point to the fleet, more, however, with a view to flight than tv resistance. Salamis, too, was named in the oracle, coupled with the epithet “divine,” which Themistocles cleverly argued portended disaster to the enemies of the Greeks rather than to the Greeks themselves. It was a great achievement when he finally prevailed on his fellow- citizens to quit their city and their homes—it seemed for ever—-and to trust themselves to their ships. There had been some sea-fights off the northern shores of Eubca; the Spartans had fallen at Thermopylx, and Xcrxes and his host were now laying waste Attica, not, however, before its inhabitants had conveyed their families to the adjacent island of Salamis, where also the Greek fleet had taken up its station, the Persian armada of 1200 vessels being in harbour at Phalerum. The Athenians from their ships saw the flames in which their city, its acropolis and its temples, were perishing, but their spirits rose with calamity, and with one heart, at the bidding of Themis- tocles, they called back all of their brethren who were in temporary banishment, Aristides among them. Nearly two- thirds of the entire fleet was theirs, but for the sake of unity among the allies, who would follow only the lead of Sparta, they acquiesced in its being under the command of a Spartan admiral. It was clear, however, that the fate of Greece now depended on the action of the Athenians and on the prudence and ability of Themistocles, by whom they were guided. The Greeks of the Peloponnese, more particularly the Corinthians, were for moving the ficet from Salamis to the isthmus, as the euemy’s land forces were already in possession of the neighbouring shores of Attica. Seeing the danger of yet further disunion, with the probable result of the breaking up and dispersion of the fleet, and having in vain protested against quitting their present station, Themistocles went straight to the Spartan admiral, Eurybiades, and induced him to call another council. There was much angry debating, till at last the Spartan felt he must yield to the threat of Themistocles that the Athenians would either fight at Salamis or

sail away as they were to Italy. But the Peloponnesian Greeks were still dissatisfied, and insisted that they ought to be at the isthmus for the defence of what yet remained

1 “The wooden wall shall alone remain unconquered to defend you and your children:” :

THE—THE

of Greece ; a third council was held, and Themistocles felt that its decision would be against him, when, by a sudden

1

happy thought, he contrived to have a secret message ~ conveyed to the commanders of the Persian fleet through |

his slave, an Ionian Greek from Asia, a man of intelligence

and education, and well acquainted with the Persian |

language. The communication came in the name of Themistocles, who professed that he wished well to the king, and that now was a good opportunity for attacking and crushing the Greeks, as they were divided among themselves and were bent on flight. The stratagem was successful, and the enemy’s great armada advanced along the coast of Attica that same night, and took up a posi- tion which effectually confined the Greek fleet within the narrow! strait between Salamis and the southern shore of Attica. The Greek captains, not knowing the state of the ease, were still wrangling through the night, when just before daybreak the banished Aristides came from AXgina with the news that the Persian fleet was close at hand and that retreat was impossible. ‘Let us still be rivals,” he said to Themistocles, ‘‘ but let our strife be which can best save our country.”

The great victory of Salamis (see vol. xi. p. 100) left Greece mistress of the sea, and was followed by the retreat of Xerxes. Themistocles, it is said, frightened the king back to Asia by another secret message, to the effect that the victorious Greeks were bent on following him up to the Hellespont

and burning his bridge of boats, but that he was doing his best to check their ardour, though in reality he had himself advised immediate pursuit of the enemy. We cannot but admire the man's sagacity and far- sightedness in thus laying the king under an obligation which he might some day turn to his own profit, though we cannot but feel that he had some of the worst as well as some of the most splendid characteristics of the Greek. After the victory Themistocles sailed with the Athenian

squadron through the Augean, and from some of the islanders | who had sided with the enemy he exacted heavy fines, out |

of which, it appears, he filled his own purse. When the Greeks met at the isthmus to decide according to custom the prizes of merit for the glorious day of Salamis, he re- ceived only the second prize, the first being awarded to the Spartan admiral, but by way of compensation he was soon afterwards heartily welcomed at Sparta, and loaded with honours so extraordinary as to imply that even the Spartans themselves recognized him as the first man in Greece. It was not long, however, before he gave them deadly offence. After the victories of Platwa and Mycale in 479 the Athen- ians went back to their desolate city and began to rebuild and fortify it. Jealous fears of the growing power of Athens were awakened, and the Spartans, as representatives of the Greeks generally, formally protested against the fortifica- tion of a Greek city outside the Peloponnese, on the ground that some future Persian invader might make it a base of operations. Themistocles saw the dangers of Spartan oppo- sition, and got the Athenians to commission him to arrange matters along with two other envoys, who, however, were purposely not allowed to arrive at Sparta at the same time as himself. He told the Spartan magistrates that before he could transact business with them he must wait for his colleagues ; meanwhile Athens was being fortified, every man, woman, and child putting a hand to the work, and as soon as Themistocles understood that it was sufficiently ad- vanced he declared openly that Athens would brook no sort of interference. The Spartans felt they had been tricked, but they could do nothing. And now Themistocles pro- ceeded to fortify Pirzeus, and to enlarge the harbour, thus providing Athens with an excellent naval dockyard, and holding out an inducement to foreigners to settle in the * Not more than a quarter of a mile wide in its narrowest part.

|

| table.

city for the purposes of trade. Twenty war ships, too, were at his suggestion to be built every year, and nothing left undone to make Athens prosperous and powerful.

A few years afterwards (in 471 probably) we find his political career terminated by a vote of ostracism, due perhaps in part to Spartan influence at Athens, and also to an offensive boastfulness and ostentation which disgusted the sensitive Athenian democracy. He was even charged with corrupt practices and with receiving bribes from Persia. From Argos, whither he had retired as an exile, he was forced to flee by a threat of the Spartans, who alleged that they had proofs of his treasonable com- plicity in the schemes of their countryman Pausanias, and to take refuge in the island of Corcyra; but here again he was pursued by Spartan and Athenian commissioners, and driven to seek the protection of Admetus, king of the Molossians, the chief people of Epirus. In the court of this half-Greek half-barbarian prince he found a hospitable reception, and he was furnished with the means of crossing the Augean to Ephesus. Shortly after his arrival in Asia, the son of Xerxes, Artaxerxes, succeeded to the throne of Persia, and to him Themistocles contrived to make himself known as a fugitive from ungrateful Greece, which he had saved, and now ready and willing to advise and assist the king in avenging his father’s defeat. He was treated, it is said, with marked respect, and was liberally pensioned with the revenues of three wealthy towns—Magnesia, Myus, and Lampsacus. It was at the first of these, which was near the coast, and whence he might be supposed to have opportunities for watching the affairs of Greece, that he passed the last year of his life, dying a natural death at the age of 65. The year of his death is not accurately ascertainable ; opinions vary between 460 and 447.

Herodotus, Thucydides, and Plutarch are our chief original sources for the life of Themistocles. The subject is fully treated in the histories of Grote and Thirlwall. (W. J. B.)

THENARD, Louis Jacquus (1777-1857), was born on the 4th of May 1777, at Louptiére, near Nogent-sur-Seine, in Champagne. His father, though a poor man, sent him to the academy of Sens, where he received a liberal edu- cation. At the age of sixteen he went to Paris to study pharmacy. He attended the lectures of Fourcroy and Vauquelin, and saw that the only way to learn chemistry was to work at it. Vauquelin, himself a poor man, ad- mitted a few students to his laboratory on payment of a fee of 20 francsa month. But this fee was prohibitory to the peasant's son ; the utmost that his father could send him just kept him alive in Paris. Thénard went to Vau- quelin and asked to be allowed to do any menial work for him, if only he would let him assist in his laboratory. One of Vauquelin's sisters had slipped into the room and heard part of the conversation ; she said to her brother, '" He is a good lad; you should keep him ; he will help you in the laboratory, and look after our pot aw few; your dandy assistants always let it boil." Thénard was engaged on these terms. Long afterwards he said that he looked upon the chemistry of the pot au few and the process of sim- mering as of very great importance: they had been the turning-point of his life. Thénard assisted Vauquelin in the laboratory and at his lectures, and, when by starving for a day or two he accumulated sous enough to pay for a seat in the gallery, used to go to the theatre to improve his pronunciation and rub off his rustic accent.

By and by Vauquelin gave him an opportunity of testing his powers as a lecturer. Having to go for some days to the country, he asked Thénard to take his place. For the first two or three lectures his attention was fixed on his work, and his eyes did not wander from the lecture On the fifth day he ventured to look round the

| room, when to his consternation he saw Fourcroy and

Vauquelin among the audience. They were so satisfied with what they had heard that they obtained for Thénard in 1797 an appointment as teacher of chemistry in a school, and in 1798 the post of repétiteur at the Hcole Polytechnique.

In 1804 Vauquelin resigned the professorship of chemistry at the Collége de France, and successfully used his influence to have Thénard appointed. In 1810 he succeeded Fourcroy both as professor of chemistry at the Ecole Polytechnique and as member of the Academy. He was also appointed professor of chemistry in the faculty of the sciences. He was made a chevalier of the Legion of Honour in 1814, commander in 1837, and grand officer in 1842. In 1825 Charles X. gave him the title of baron ; from 1827 to 1830 he represented the department of Yonne in the chamber of deputies. In 1832 Louis Philippe made him a peer of France. As vice-president of the conseil supérieure de linstruction publique, he exercised a great influence on scientific education in France. He died 21st June 1857, and was buried at La Ferte, near Chalon-sur- Saéne. In 1861 a statue was.erected to him at Sens, and in 1865 the name of his native village was changed to La Louptiére-Thénard. Thénard was tall and strongly built, his hair was thick and black, his eyes bright, and his manner active and prompt. He married, in 1810, Mlle. Humblot, granddaughter of Conté. His wife and several of his children predeceased him. He was survived by his son Paul, who had assisted him in some of his later researches.

Thénard was above all things a teacher : as he himself said, the professor, the assistants, the laboratory, every- thing, must be sacrificed to the students. The history of his discovery of the peroxide of hydrogen well illustrates the predominance of the teacher in his character. He was lecturing on the formation of salts, and had told his students that a metal must be oxidized to a certain extent in order that it may combine with an acid to form a salt ; if the metal be combined with more than the proper quantity of oxygen, the excess of oxygen will be given off when the oxide is treated with an acid, and, as an illus- tration, he mentioned the action of acids on peroxide of barium. As he spoke his conscience smote him, for the experiment had not been made. Immediately after lecture he mixed peroxide of barium and nitric acid, keeping the temperature low by means of ice. He was surprised to see the peroxide dissolve without any evolution of gas. He left the mixture standing, and next day, before lecture, noticed small bubbles of gas rising from it. Pour- ing some of the liquid into a test-tube and warming it, he saw a large amount of gas escape, which he easily recog- nized as pure oxygen. At first he thought the acid had been oxidized, but he soon saw the true explanation of the phenomena, and discovered the peroxide of hydrogen. His lecture experiments were few, well-chosen, and accur- ately performed. If any failure occurred he would roundly scold his assistant, often apologizing for his vehemence when the short fit of anger was over. His. lecture room, seated for 1000, was almost always crowded by eager and attentive students and visitors.

Like most great teachers, Thénard published a text-book, and perhaps we may say that by his Traité de Chimie Elémentaire, Théorique et Pratique (4 vols., Paris, 1813-16; 6th ed., 5 vols., 1833-86) he did even more to further the progress of the science than by his numerous and important original discoveries. His first original paper (1799) was on the compounds of arsenic and antimony with oxygen and sulphur. Careful analyses led him to conclusions as to the composition of the metallic oxides contra- dictory of some of Berthollet’s theoretical views; he also showed (1802) that Berthollet’s “zoonic acid” was impure acetic acid. Berthollet, far from resenting these corrections from a younger man, took this opportunity of introducing himself, and invited Thénard to become a membcr of the “Société d’Arcueil,” to the proceedings of which Thénard contributed

important papers. Soon after his appointinent as repétiteur at the Ecole Polytechnique

Thénard made the acquaintance of Gay-Lussac, and formed with. him a lifelong friendship. Their joint work, and its relation to

the discoveries of Davy, have been fully recorded in the article Gay-

Lussac. Of his separate investigations perhaps the most important

is that on the compound ethers, begun in 1807. He showed that

each acid gives its own ether, and that the acid and alcohol can be

recovered by decomposing the ether by means of caustic alkali.

His discovery of peroxide of hydrogen (1818) has already been

described. His researches on scbacic acid (1802) and on bile (1807)

also deserve special notice. The blue substance known as Thénard's

blue (essentially aluminate of cobalt) was prepared by him in. response to a demand by Chaptal for a cheap blue, as bright as

ultramarine, and capable of standing the tempcrature of the porce-

lain furnace.

Thénard's researches were chiefly published in the Annales de Chimie et de Physique, in the Memotres de la Société d' Arcueil, and in the Comptes Kendus and the Afemotres of the Academy of Sciences. (A. C. B.)

THEOBALD, Lewis (1688-1744), will survive as the prime butt of the original Dunciad when as a playwright, a littérateur, a translator, and even as a Shakespearean commentator, he will be entirely forgotten. The son of an attorney, Theobald was born at Sittingbourne, in Kent, in 1688, and, after

a moderate education at Isleworth, studied for the profession of law,—a profession, however, which he never practised. He was a man with literary impulses, but without genius, even of a superficial kind; as a student, asa commentator, he might have led a happy and enviable life, had not the vanity of the literary idea led him into a false position. His Persian Princess (1711) and his Klectra (1714) gained no distinction. In 1726 The Double Falsehood had a certain vogue, partly from Theobald's pretence that the greater part of the play was by Shakespeare. In 1717 hecommenceda series of papers (not to 'The Censor," as has sometimes been stated, but under that title) which appeared in Mist's Weekly Journal ; these do not seem to have been highly thought of by his contemporaries, but they were successful in gaining for Theobald not a few enemies, among whom Dennis may be named. Seven or eight years later Theobald's cen- sorious tendencies had intensified rather than moderated, and in 1726 he ventured to attack the most eminent literary man of the day in his Shakespear Restored, or a Specimen of the many Errors as well committed as unamended by Mr Pope in his edition of this Poet. Two years later the censor was himself castigated severely, and, as the dedicatee of The Dunciad, he had long an unenviable notoriety ; as readers of the famous satire will remember, he occupied the place of chief victim until replaced by Colley Cibber in 1743. In the matter of Shakespeare editing, however, he had the advantage of his powerful rival. When in 1733 Theobald published his edition of Shakespeare in seven volumes, that of Pope had to go to the wall. Lewis Theobald wrote other dramas besides those already men- tioned, and translated plays from Sophocles and Aristo- phanes, besides a rendering of Plato's Phedo and a part translation of the Odyssey ; but for none of these things is he nowremembered. The student of English history might find it worth while to glance through Theobald's Life of Raleigh (1719). He died in 1744.

For plays, &c., see the Biographia Dramatica, vol. i.

THEOCRITUS, of Syracuse, the foremost Greek pas- toral poet, lived a life of which nothing is known except from allusions in his own works. The epigram appended to his poems makes him say, "'I ama Syracusan, a man of the people, a son of Praxagoras and Philinna." He must have been born early in the 3d century, among a Dorian people, whose Dorian speech survives in his rural idyls. These "little pictures" chiefly represent the life of

shepherds, neat-herds, and fishermen in the woods and on the shores of Sicily. They are doubtless inspired by the popular poetry of his time, and have much in common with the Romaic chants of the modern Greek shepherds. The first idyl is a song on Daphnis, the ideal

lover.

THE—THE

herdsman, sung by the shepherd Thyrsis to a goatherd. | The second is the magical chant which Simetha pours forth to the magic moon, in the hope of recovering her In the third a goatherd sings to his love, Amaryllis. The fourth is an interchange of rude banter between two country fellows; and the fifth is of the same kind. The scenes are in southern Italy. The sixth is a Sicilian singing match between two ideal herdsmen,—not contemporary rustics, but poets of nobler themes. The scene of the seventh is in Cos, where the poet introduces himself at a singing match. He may have been attached to the Asclepian medical school in Cos ; his friend Nicias was a physician. Sicily and rival minstrels occupy the ninth idyl. The tenth contains probably some real popular ditties, chanted by the reapers. The eleventh, addressed to Nicias, is a piece of artificial mythological genre, “The Cyclops in Love.” The twelfth is a lyric, almost of passionate affection. The thirteenth is another idyl on a mythical topic, the adventures of Hercules and Hylas. The fourteenth and fifteenth are sketches of military and urban life, the mercenary soldier in love, and the gathering at the Adonis feast in Alexandria. Theo- critus had wandered to the court of Ptolemy, and joined the literary society of his court. The sixteenth is a patriotic piece: the poet urges Hiero to assail the Carthaginians in Sicily. The seventeenth is a conven- tional hymn to Ptolemy Philadelphus on his marriage with his sister. The eighteenth is an epithalamium ; the nineteenth a tiny picture of Eros stung by a bee; the twentieth is the complaint of a herdsman rejected by a girl of the town; the twenty-first an idyl of fisher life: two poor old fishermen recount their dreams. The twenty-second idyl is a piece of heroic myth, the adven- tures of Castor and Polydeuces; and the twenty-fourth is a tiny epic on the infancy of Hercules. The twenty-third is an amorous complaint. The twenty-fifth describes the slaughter by Hercules of the Neniean lion. The twenty- sixth justifies, in the interests of

the ritual of Dionysus, the murder of the curious Pentheus. The twenty-seventh is the ‘“ Wooing of Daphnis,” or “ Oaristys,” an amorous discourse between a girl and a swain. The twenty-eighth is a graceful piece of vers de société, sent to a lady with the gift of an ivory distaff. The twenty-ninth is amorous; and there remain an imperfect and a spurious piece, and a set of twenty-three epigrams.

Ona general view, Theocritus’s surviving poems turn out to be—(1) rural idyls, the patterns of Virgil’s eclogues, and of all later pastoral poetry ; (2) minute epics, or cabinet pictures from mythology; (3) sketches of contemporary hfe in verse ; (4) courtly compositions ; and (5) expressions of personal kindliness and attachment. The first category and the third are those on which the fame of Theocritus depends. His verse has a wonderful Doric melody ; his shepherds are natural Southern people: it is not his fault that what he wrote truly of them has become a false commonplace in the pastoral poetry of the North.

Of Theocritus’s own life we only know what has been recorded, that he lived in Syracuse, Cos, and Alexandria, and that he was acquainted with Nicias, with Aratus, the astronomical writer, and with Philinus, head of a school or sect of physicians, The rest is silence or conjecture. Suidas says that, in addition to the surviving poems, the Pretidx, the Hopes, IIymns, the Heroines, Dirges, Elegies, and Lumbics were attributed to him.

The charm of Theocritus can only be tasted in his original Dorie, but the best English version is by Mr C. S. Calverley. M. Couat’s book on the Alexandrine school of poetry may be re- commended. J. Hauler, De Theoc. Vita et Carminibus (Freiburg, 1855), Hempel, Quest. Theoc. (Kiel, 1881), and Rannow, Studia

Theocritea (Berlin, 1886), nay also be found useful. The best Eng- lish edition of the poems is that of Bishop Wordsworth. (A. L.)

THEODOLITE. See Surveyine. 7 THEODORA, the wife of the emperor JustTInran (¢.2.),

was born probably in Constantinople, though according to

some in Cyprus, in the early years of the 6th century, and died in 547. We shall first give the usually received ac- count of her life and character, and then proceed to inquire how far this account deserves to be accepted. According to Procopius, our chief, but by no means a trustworthy

authority for her life, she was the daughter of Acacius, a

bear-feeder of the amphitheatre at Constantinople to the

Green Faction, and while still a child was sent on to the

stage to earn her living in the performances called mimes.

She had no gift for either music or dancing, but made her-

self notorious by the spirit and impudence of her acting in

the rough farces, as one may call them, which delighted the crowd of the capital. Becoming a noted courtesan, she accompanied a certain Hecebolus to Pentapolis (in North

Africa), of which he had been appointed governor, and,

having quarrelled with him, betook herself first to Alex-

andria, and then back to Constantinople through the cities

of Asia Minor. In Constantinople (where, according to a

late but apparently not quite groundless story, she now

endeavoured to support herself by spinning, and may there- fore have been trying to reform her life) she attracted the notice of Justinian, then patrician, and, as the all-powerful nephew of the emperor Justin, practically ruler of the em- pire. He desired to marry her, but could not overcome the opposition of his aunt, the empress Euphemia. After her death (usually assigned to the year 523) the emperor yielded, and, as a law, dating from the

time of Constantine, forbade the marriage of women who had followed the stage with senators, this law was repealed. Thereupon Justinian married Theodora, whom he had already caused to be raised to the patriciate. They were some time after (527) admitted by Justin to a share in the sovereignty; and, on his death four months later, Justinian and Theodora became sole rulers of the Roman world. He was then about forty-four years of age, and she some twenty years younger. Procopius relates in his unpublished history (‘Avéxdora) many repulsive tales regarding Theodora’s earlier life, but his evident hatred of her, though she had been more than ten years dead when the Anecdota were written, and the extravagances which the book contains, oblige us to regard him as a very doubt- ful witness. Some confirmation of the reported opposition of the imperial family to the marriage has been found in the story regarding the couduct of Justinian’s own mother

Vigilantia, which Nicholas Alemanni, the first editor of

the Axnecdota, in his notes to that book, quotes from a

certain “ Life of Justinian” by Theophilus, to which he

frequently refers, without saying where he found it.

Since the article JUSTINIAN (q.v.) was published, the pre-

sent writer has discovered in Rome what is believed to be

the only MS. of this so-called life of Justinian ; and his examination of its contents, which he has lately published, makes him think it worthless as an authority. See article

THEOPHILUS. | Theodora speedily acquired unbounded influence over

her husband. He consulted her in everything, and allowed

her to interfere directly, as and when she pleased, in the government of the empire. She had a right to interfere, for she was not merely his consort, but empress regnant, and as such entitled equally with himself to the exercise of all prerogatives. In the most terrible crisis of Justin- ian’s reign, the great

Nika insurrection of 532, her courage and firmness in refusing to fly when the rebels were attack- ing the palace saved her husband's crown, and no doubt strengthened her command over his mind. Officials took an oath of allegiance to her as well as to the emperor (Wov.,

viil.). She even corresponded with foreign ambassadors,

and instructed Belisarius how to deal with the popes. Pro-

copius describes her as acting with harshness, seizing on trivial pretexts persons who had offended her, stripping some of their property, throwing others into dungeons, where they were cruelly tortured or kept for years without the knowledge of their friends. The city was full of her spies, who reported to her everything said against herself or the administration. She surrounded herself with cere- monious pomp, and required all who approached to abase themselves in a manner new even to that half-Oriental court. She was an incessant and tyrannical match-maker, forcing men to accept wives and women to accept husbands at her caprice. She constituted herself the protectress of faithless wives against outraged husbands, yet professed great zeal for the moral reformation of the city, enforcing severely the laws against vice, and immuring in a " house of repentance" on the Asiatic side of the Bosphorus five hundred courtesans whom she had swept out of the streets of the capital. How much of all this is true we have no means of determining, for it rests on the sole word of Procopius. But there are slight indications in other writers that she had a reputation for severity.

In the religious strife which distracted the empire Theodora took part with the Monophysites, and her coterie usually contained several leading prelates and monks of that party. As Justinian was a warm upholder of the decrees of Chalcedon, this difference of the royal pair excited much remark and indeed much suspicion. Many saw in it a design to penetrate the secrets of both ecelesiastical factions, and so to rule more securely. In other matters also the wife spoke and acted very differently from the husband ; but their differences do not seem to have disturbed either his affection or his confidence. The maxim in Constantinople was that the empress was a stronger and a safer friend than the emperor ; for, while he abandoned his

favourites to her wrath, she stood by her protégés, and never failed to punish any one whose heedless tongue had assailed her character.

Theodora bore to Justinian no son, but one daughter,— at least it would seem that her grandson, who is twice men- tioned, was the offspring of a legitimate daughter, whose name, however, is not given. According to Procopius, she had before her marriage become the mother of a son, who when grown up returned from Arabia, revealed himself to her, and forthwith disappeared for ever; but this is a story to be received with distrust. That her behaviour as a wife was irreproachable may be gathered from the fact that Procopius mentions only one scandal affecting it, the case of Areobindus. Even he does not seem to believe this case, for, while referring to it as a mere rumour, the only proof he gives is that, suspecting Areobindus of some offence, she had torture applied to this supposed paramour. Her health was delicate, and, though she took all possible care of it, frequently quitting the capital for the seclusion of her villas on the Asiatic shore, she died comparatively young. Theodora was small in stature and rather pale, but with a graceful figure, beautiful features, and a piercing glance. There remains in the apse of the famous church of St Vitale at Ravenna a contemporaneous mosaic portrait of her, to which the artist, notwithstanding the stiffness of the material, has succeeded in giving some character.

The above account is in substance that which historians of the last two centuries and a half have accepted and repeated regarding this famousempress. But it must be admitted to be open to serious doubts. Everything relating to the early career of Theodora, the faults of her girlhood, the charges of cruelty and insoleuce in her government of the empire, rest on the sole authority of the Anecdota of Proco- pius,—a book whose credit is shaken by its bitterness and extra- vagance. If we reject it, little is left against her, except of course that action in ecclesiastical affairs which excited the wrath of Baro- nius, who had denounced her before the Anecdota were published.

In favour of the picture which Procopius gives of the empress it may be argued (1) that she eertaiuly did interfere constantly and

arbitrarily in the administration of publie affairs, and showed her- self therein the kind of person who would be crue] and unserupul- ous in her choice of means, and (2) that we gather from other writers an impression that she was harsh and tyrannical, as, for instance, from the references to her in the lives of the popes in the Liber Pontificalis (which used to pass under the name of Atastasius, the papal librarian). Her threat to the person whom she com- manded to bring Vigilius toher was ‘‘ nisi hoc feceris, per Viventem in secula excoriari te faciam.” Much of what we find in these lives is legendary, but they are some evidence of Theodora’s reputa- tion. Again (8) the statute (Cod., v. 4, 23) which repeals the older law so far as relates to seentex mutlieres is now generally attributed to Justin, and agrees with the statement of Procopius that an alteration of the law was nade to legalize her marriage. There is therefore reason for holding that she was an actress, and, consider- ing what the Byzantine stage was (as appears even by the statute in question), her hfe cannot have been irreproachable.

Against the evidence of Procopius, with such confirmations as have been indicated, there is to be set the silence of other writers, contemporaries like Agathias and Evagrius, as well as such later historians as Theophanes, none of whom repeat the charges as to Theodora’s life before her marriage. To this consideration no great weight need be attached. It is difficult to establish any view of the controversy without a long and minute examination of the authorities, and in particular of the Anecdota. But the most probable conclusions seem to be—(1) that the odious details which Procopius gives, and which Gibbon did not blush to copy, deserve no more weight than would be given nowadays to the malignant scandal of disappointed courtiers under a despotic government, where scandal is all the blacker because it is propagated in secret (see Procopius); (2) that apparently she was an actress and a courtesan, and not improbably conspicuous in both those charae- ters; and (3) that it is impossible to determine how far the specific charges of cruelty and oppression brought against her by Procopins deserve credence. We are not bound to accept them, for they are uncorroborated ; yet the accounts of Justinian’s government given in the Anecdota agree in too many respects with what we know aliunde to enable us to reject them altogether; and it must be admitted that there is a certain internal consistency in the whole picture which the Anecdota present of the empress. About the beauty, the intellectual gifts,

and the imperious will of Theodora there can be no doubt, for as to these all our authorities agree. She i evidently an extraordinary person, born to shine in any station of life.

Her fortunes have employed many pens. Among the latest serious works dealing with them may be mentioned M. Antonin Débidour's L'Impératrice Theodora: Etude Critique, Paris, 1885, which endeavours to vindicate her from the aspersions of Procopius; and among more imaginative writings are Sir Henry Pottinger's interesting romance Blue and Green (Loudon, Hurst and Blackett, 1879), M. Rhangabé's tragedy Ocodwpa (Leipsic, 1884), and M. Sardou's play Theodora, produced in Paris in 1884. See also Dr I. Dahn's Prokopios von Cisarea, 1865. (J. BR.)

THEODORE or Mopsvgstia, the most eminent repre- sentative of the so-called school of Antioch, the beginnings of which date from about the middle of the 3d century (see Luctan and Pav or Samosata). He was born at Antioch about the middle of the 4th century, and was a friend of Chrysostom ; in rhetoric the celebrated Libanius was his teacher. Soon, however, he attached himself to the school of the great exegete and asce' -, Diodorus, a presbyter in Antioch, and, with only a transitory period of vacillation, he ever afterwards remained faithful to the theology and ascetic discipline of this master. Under Diodorus he became a skilful exegete, and ultimately the pupil outstripped the master in Biblical learning. About 383 Theodore became a presbyter in Antioch, and began to write against Eunomius the Arian and against the christology of Apollinaris. Soon after 392 he became bishop of Mopsuestia in Cilicia (the modern Missis near Adana). As such he was held in great respect, and took part in several synods, with a reputation for orthodoxy that was never questioned. It was greatly to his advantage that in the Eastern Church the period between the years 390 and 428 was one of comparative repose. He was on friendly terms even with Cyril of Alexandria. He died in 428 or 429, towards the beginning of the Nestorian controversy.

Theodore was a very prolifie writer, but, before all, an exegete.

He wrote commentaries on almost every book of the Old and New Testaments, of which, however, only a small proportion Is now

extant, as ata later period he lost eredit in the ehurch. We still possess in Greck his commentary on the Minor Prophets, and in Latin translations commentaries on the minor Pauline epistles, besides very many fragments, especially of that on the epistle to the Romans. Theodore's importance as an exegete lies in two ehar- acteristics :—(1) in opposition to the allegorical method he insists on getting at the literal meaning, and adheres to it when found; (2) in his interpretation of the Scriptures he takes into account the historical circumstances in which they were produced, and substi- tutes the historical-typological for the pneumatico-christological interpretation of prophecy; in other words, he interprets all Old Testament passages historically in the first instance, and sees the fulfilment of Old Testament prophecy in the history of Christ and His church only in so far as the entire Old Testament is a " shadow of things to come." Following his master Diodorus, who had already written a treatise Tis Stapopa Oewpias kal adAAnyopias, Theodore also was the author of a special dissertation against the allegorists, 7.¢., against Origen and his followers, which, however, has unfortunately perished. The comparative freedom of Theodore's view of inspiration is also noteworthy. He discriminates between historical, prophetical, and didactie writings, and in accordance with this distinction assumes varying degrees of inspiration. Finally, he entertained very bold opinions about the canon and several of the books included in it. He esteemed very lightly the Solomonie writings and the book of Job; Canticles he explained as a nuptial poem of Solomon's; the book of Job appeared to him in many places hardly worthy of its subject, and he censures the writer sharply; Chronicles, Ezra, and Nehemiah he entirely rejected; he denied the accuracy of the titles of the Psalms, and referred the so-called Messianic element almost invariably to the kings of Israel ; he even criticized the eatholic epistles and rejected the epistle of James. His commentaries contain a great deal of learned matter, and his grammatico-historical observations are still to some extent useful. But, on the other hand, his learning must not be over- estimated. It falls behind that of Origen, Eusebius, and Jerome, notwithstanding the superiority of his method. It is specially noticeable that Theodore troubled himself little about textual criticism. He simply accepts the text of the LXX. as that of

revelation, and never manifests the slightest effort to control it by the original or by the Syriac.

But in addition to his commentaries Theodore also wrote extensive dogmatico-polemieal works, which were destined to operate long after his death disastrously for his fame. As a disciple of Diodorus, Theodore accepted the Nicenc teaching on the Neciine of the Trinity, but at the same time in christology took up a position very closcly approaching that of Paul of Samosata. The violence of his opposition to his fellow countryman, Apollinaris of Laodicea, perhaps the most acute and far-seeing theologian of the century, made it necessary for Theodore to formulate his christology with precision (in fifteen books on the Incarnation—all lost except a few fragments—and in special treatises against Apollinaris). He held the Logos to have assumed a complete manhood, which had to pass through the stages of ethical development just as in the case of any other human being. In this the Logos only supported tiie man Christ Jesus, but was not essentially connected with him; the Logos dwelt in him (évoixety), but any such thing as €ywors Puch did not and could not exist, because the finite is not " capax infiniti," and because any €ywo1s would have destroyed the reality of the human nature. The same sober and thoughtful way of looking at things, and the same tendency to give prominence to the moral element, which characterize the commentaries of Theodore appear also in his dogmatic. When, accordingly, the Nestorian eontroversy broke out, his works also were dragged into the discussion. At Ephesus, indeed, the memory of Theodore does not appear to have been attacked,' but soon afterwards the assault began. Marius Mercator, Rabulas of Edessa, Cyril, and other monophysites brought the eharge of heresy against his writings, and sought to counteract their influence. But it was not until more than a eentury afterwards that his fanatical adversaries succeeded—in spite of the strong opposition of the best theologians of the West—in obtaining from Justinian the eondemnation of his works in the controversy of the Tria Capitula, as it is called; this act of the emperor was con- firmed by the fifth cecumenical eouncil, and Theodore's name was accordingly deleted from the list of orthodox writers. From that day Theodore's works ceased to be read within the Byzantine Church, and hence have becn lost. The Syrians, on the other hand, have always held in high esteem the memory of the great teacher, and

have even carried back their liturgy to his name. The Nestorians possess, or possessed, a very large number of writings by him in Syriac translations. 2

Theodore took part also in the Pelagian controversy at the time When it raged in Palestine. In the treatise, only partially pre- Served,? Tpds rods Adyovtas Piwe: Kal ob yvdun mralew Tods

1 A confession, however, drawn up by him was spoken of; see Yahn, Bibdvioth. der Symbole, 20 ed., p. 229 5q.

ts Sce the catalogue in Assemani, Bibl. Or., iii. 1, p. 3 sq.

3 Sce Photius, Biblioth., c. 177; Mercator, p. 339 sq., ed. Baluz.

Ta © 255

&v@p@movs, he sharply controverts the doctrine of original sin and Jerome its advocate. In his view the theory of Augustine is “a new heresy,” “a malady”; he regarded it as a doctrine which necessarily led to dualism and Manicheism. The attitude thus taken by Theodore is not surprising; he more nearly takes up the ground of the old church doctrine as set forth in the apologists and in the great Greek fathers of the 3d and 4th centuries. The Pelagians driven from the East were received by him in Cilicia.

A brother of Theodore, Polychronius by name, bishop of Apamea, also achieved fame as an exegete, and expounded the theology of the sehool of Antioch.*

Literature.—Migne, Patrol.,ser. Gr., xvi. The Greek fragments of Theodore’s New Testament commentaries have been collected by Fritzsche (Theod. Mops. in NV. T. Comm., Turin, 1847). The commentaries on the Pauline epistles (Pitra, Spic. Solesm., i. 49 sq.) have been recognized by Jacobi (Zischr. f. christl. Wissensch., 1854) and Hort (Journ. Class. and Sacr. Philol., iv., 1859, p. 802 sq.), and edited by Jacobi (Halle University Programm, 1855-60). They have also been edited very admirably by Swete (Theod, Mops. in Epp. B. Pault Comm., i., ii., Cambridge, 1880-82), along with the Greek fragments and the fragments of the dogmatical writings , on this edition, see Schiirer, 7’heol. Lit. Zig., 1880-82, The commentary on the

Minor Prophets will be found in Mai's Nov, Patr. Biblioth., vii. 1854 (Wegnern, Berlin, 1834; Mai, Script. Vet. Nov. Coll., vi., 1832). Sce also Sachau, T'heod, Mops. Fragm. Syriaca, Leipsic, 1869, and Bathgen, '"' Der Psalmen- commentar des Theod. v. Mops. in Syr. Bearbeitung," in Zéschr. J. ATliche Wissensch., v.53 sq. Extracts from the writings of Theodore occur in the Catene of Marius Mercator, in the Acta of the third and fifth cecumenical councils, in Facundus, Liberatus. and Theodore's chief-adversary, Leontius Byzantinus.

The principal monograph on Theodore, apart from the cxcellent prolegomena of Swete, is that of Kihn (72. v. Mops. u. Junilius Afric. als Exegeten, Freiburg, 1880). On his importance for the history of dogma, sce the great works of Baur and Dorner. Upon the Antioch school in general, compare Miinscher, Comment. de Schola Antioch., Copenhagen, 1811; Hergenréther, Die antioch. Schule, 1866; and Kihn, Die Bedeutung der anttoch. Schule, Kichstadt, 1866. Literary and biographical details will be found in Dupin, Tillemont, Cave, Fabricius, Noris, Garnier, Schréckh, Alzog; see also Fritzsche, De Theod, Mops. Vita et Scriptis, 1836; Sieffert. Theod. Mops. Vet. Test. Sobrie Interpr. Vind., Ratisbon, 1827; Klener, Symbol, Lit. ad, Theod. M. pertin., Gottingen, 1836; Specht, Theod. v, Mops. u. Theodoret, Munich, 1871; Kihn in the 7b. Quartalschr., 1879; Nestle in Theol. Stud. aus Wurtemb., ii. 210 sg. ; and Batiffol, " Sur une Traduction Latine de Th. de Mops.," in Ann. de Philos. Chrét,, 1885. (A. HA.)

THEODORE, the name of two popes. Theodore I, pope from November 642 till May 649, succeeded John IV. He was the son of a bishop, and was born in Jeru- salem.

THEODORET, bishop of Cyrus, and an important writer in the domains of exegesis, dogmatic theology, church history, and ascetic theology, was born in Antioch, Syria, about 390. At an early age he entered the cloister ; and in 423 he became bishop of Cyrus, or Cyrrhus, a small city between Antioch and the Euphrates, where, except for a short period of exile, he spent all the rest of his life. The date of his death is uncertain, but it must have been at least six or seven years later than the council of Chal- cedon (451). Although thoroughly devoted to the ideals of monasticism, he discharged

his episcopal duties with remarkable zeal and fidelity. He was diligent in the cure of souls, labouring hard and successfully for the conversion of the numerous Gnostic communities and other heretical sects which still maintained a footing within the diocese. He himself claims to have brought more than a thousand Marcionites within the pale of the church, and to have destroyed many copies of the Diatessaron of Tatian, which were still in ecclesiastical use ; and he also exerted himself to improve the diocese, which was at once large and poor, by building bridges and aqueducts, beautifying the town, and similar works.

As an exegcte Theodoret belongs to the Antiochene school, of which Diodorus of Tarsus and Theodore of Mopsuestia were the heads. He was not actnally the personal disciple of either, but he adopted their methods, though without the consistency and boldness of the first-named. . His extant commentaries (those on Canticles, on the Prophets, on the book of Psalms, and on the Pauline epistles—the last the most valuable) are among the best performances of the fathers of the church. ‘They are brief, yet not wanting in that element of practical edification on which Chrysostom lays special weight as characteristic of the Antiochenes. In addition to these complete commentaries, we have fragments of some others

(of that on Isaiah, for example), principally met with in catene. There are also special elucidations of some difficult Scripture texts.

4 See Bardenheucr, Polychronius, Freiburg, 1879.

Theodoret’s chief importance is as a dogmatic theologian, it having fallen to his lot to take part in the great monophysite- Nestorian controversy and to be the most considerable opponent of the views of Cyril and Dioscurus of Alexandria. For more than twenty years he maintaincd the struggle against the Alcxandrian dogmatic and its formule (cordkos, Evwois Kad iwéoractv, mia iméaracis, évwors vouwh, and the like), and taught that in the person of Christ we must strictly distinguish two natures (hypo-stascs), whieh are united indced iu one person (prosopon), but are not amalgamated in essence. For these years his history coincides with that of the Eastern Church from 430 to 451, and for this very reason it is

impossible to sketch it even briefly here (sce Hefele, Cone.- gesch., vol. ii.). The issue was not unfavourable to Theodoret's causc, but melancholy enough for Theodoret himself: the council of Chalcedon condemned monophysitism indeed, but he unhappily yielded to pressure so far as also to take part in pronouneing "anathema upon Nestorius, and upon all who call not the Holy Virgin Mother of God, and who divide the one Son into two." As Theodoret had previously been a constant defender of Nestorius, it was impossible for him to concur in this sentence upon his unfortu- nate friend with a clear conscience, and in point of faet he did not ehange his own dogmatic position. It is distressing, therefore, to find him in his subsequent Epitome classing Nestorius as a heretic, aud speaking of him with the utmost hostility. Some of Theo- doret's dogmatic works are no longer extant: of his five books Tlept evarOpwmhaews, for example, directed against Cyril after the council of Ephesus, we now possess fragments merely. A good deal of what passes under his name has been wrongly attributed to him. Certainly genuine are the refutation (Avatpown) of Cyril's twelve avabenariouol of Nestorius, and the 'Epaviorns, or MoAdpuopdos (written about 446), consisting of three dialogues, entitled respect- ively "Atperros, Acvyxuros, and Aradfs, in which the monophys- itism of Cyril is opposed, and its Apollinarian character insisted on. Among the apologetico-dogmatic works of Theodoret must be reckoned his ten discourses Hep) mrpovolas.

Theodoret gives a valuable exposition of his own dogmatic in the fifth book of his Afperixfjs naxouv0tas émirous, already referred to.! This, the latest of his works in the domain of church his- tory (it was written after 451), is a source of great though not of primary importance for the history of the old heresies. In spite of the investigations of Volkmar and Hilgenfeld, we are still some- what in the dark as to the authorities he used. The chief un- eertainty is as to whether he knew Justin's Syntagma, and also as to whether he had access to the Philosophumena of Hippolytus in their complete form. Besides this work Theodoret has aie left us a church history in five books, from 324 to 429, which was pub- lished shortly before the council of Chalcedon. The style is better than that of Socrates and Sozomen, as Photius has remarked, but as a coutribution to history the work is inferior in importance. It is probable that its author was acquainted with the labours of Socrates; he appears also to have used those of Philostorgius the Arian, but

not those of Sozomen. Something indeed still remains to be cleared up as to the sources he employed; apart, however, from some documents he has preserved, relating to the Arian con- troversy, he does not contribute much that is not to be met with in Socrates. He made a thorough study of the writings of Athanasius for the work. As regards chronology he is not very trustworthy ; on the other hand, his moderation towards opponents, not except- ing Cyril, deserves recognition. The ‘EAAnviKkav Oepamevtixy Tradnuatwv (De Curandis Grecorum A ffectionibus)—written before 438—is of an historical and apologetic character, very largely indebted to Clement of Alexandria and Eusebius; it aims at showing the advantages of Christianity as compared with Hellenism, and deals with the assaults of pagan adversaries. The supcriority of the Christian faith both philosophically and ethically is set forth, the chief stress being laid on monachism, with which heathen philosophy has nothing to conipare. Much prominence is also given to the cult of saints and martyrs.

On this side of his character, however, Theodoret can best be studied in the thirty ascetic biographies of his :Adcos foropia. This collection, which has been widely read, is a pendant to the Historia Lausiaca of Palladius and the monkish tales of Sozomen. For the East it has had the same importance as the similar writings of Jerome, Sulpicius, Severus, and Cassiauus for the West. It shows that the “sobriety” of the Antiochene scholars can be predicated only of their exegesis; their style of piety was as exaggerated in its devotion to the ideals of monasticism as was that of their mono- physite opponents. Indecd, one of the oldest leaders of the school, Diodorus of Tarsus, was himself among the strictest ascetics.

Nearly 200 letters of Theodoret have come down to us, partly in a separate eollection, partly in the Acta of the councils, and partly in the Latin of Marius Mercator; they are of great value not only

- Roman Catholie writers vary greatly in their estimate of Theodoret’s ehristology and of his general orthodoxy. On the latest essay on this subjeet, by Bertram (Theodoreti, Episcopi Cyrensis, Doctrina Christo- logica, Hildesheim, 1883), see Theol. Lit.-Ztung., 1883, 568 sq.

for the biography of the writer but also for the history of his

diocese and of the church in general.

The edition of Sirmond (Paris, 1642) was afterwards completed by Garnier (1684), who has also written dissertations on the autlior's works. Schulze and Nésselt published a new edition (6 vols., Halle, 1769-74) bascd on that of their predecessors; a glossary was afterwards added by Bauer. The reprint will be found in vols, Ixxx.-lxxxiv. of Migne, and considerable portions occur in Mansi.

Besides the earlier labours of Tillemont, Ceillier, Oudin, Du Pin, and Vabricius and Harless, see Schréckh, Atrchengesch., vol. xviii.; Hefele, Conc.-gesch., vol. ii.; Richter, De Theodoreto Epp. Paul, Interprete, Leipsic, 1822; Binder, Etudes sur Théodoret, Geneva, 1844; St&udlin, Gesch. u. Lit. der Kirchengesch., Hanover, 1827; Kihn, Die Bedeutung der antioch. Schule, 1866; Diestel, Das A. 7. in der christl. Kirche, Jena, 1869; Specht, Theodor v. Mopsvestia u. Theodoret v. Cyrus, Munich, 1871; Roos, De Theodoreto Clementis et Husebit Compilatore, Halle, 1883; Jecp, Quellenuntersuch. z. d. griech. Kirchenhistorikern, Leipsic, 1884; and Moller, art. "Theodorct," in Herzog-Plitt's Realencykl., vol. xv. (A. HA.)

THEODORIC, king of the Ostrogoths (c. 454-526). Referring to the article Gorus for a general statement of the position of this, the greatest ruler that the Gothic nation produced, we add here some details of a more personal kind. Theodoric was born about the year 454, and was the son of Theudemir, one of three brothers who reigned over the East Gotlis, at that time settled in Pannonia. The day of his birth coincided with the arrival of the news of a victory of his uncle Walamir over the sons of Attila. The name of Theodoric's mother was Erelieva, and she is called the concubine of Theudemir. The Byzantine historians generally call him son of Walamir, apparently because the latter was the best known member of tle royal fraternity. At the age of seven he was sent as a hostage to the court of Constan- tinople, and there spent ten years of his life, which doubt- less exercised a most important influence on his after career. Shortly after his return to his father (about 471) he secretly, with a comitatus of 10,000 men, attacked the king of the Sarmatians, and wrested from him tlie import- ant city of Singidunum (Belgrade). In 473 Theudemir, now chief king of the

Ostrogoths, invaded Meesia and Macedonia, and obtained a permanent settlement for his people near Thessalonica. Theodoric took the chief part in this expedition, the result of which was to remove the Ostrogoths from the now barbarous Pannonia, and to settle them as "'foederati" in the heart of the empire. About 474 Theudemir died, and for the fourteen following years Theodoric was chiefly engaged in a series of profitless wars, or rather plundering expeditions, partly against the emperor Zeno, but partly against a rival Gothic chieftain, another Theodoric, son of Triarius.2 In 488 he set out at the head of his people to win Italy from Odoacer. There is no doubt that he had for this enterprise the sanction of the emperor, only too anxious to be rid of so troublesome a guest. But the precise nature of the rela- tion which was to unite the two powers in the event of Theodoric's success was, perhaps purposely, left vague. Theodoric's complete practical independence, combined with a great show of deference for the empire, reminds us somewhat of the relation of the old East India Company to the Mogul dynasty at Delhi, but the Ostrogoth was sometimes actually at war with his imperial friend. The invasion and conquest of Italy occupied more tlian four years (488-493). Theodoric, who marched round the head of the Venetian Gulf, had to fight a fierce battle with the Gepide, probably in the valley of the Save. At the Sontius (Isonzo) he found his passage barred by Odoacer, over whom he gained a complete victory (28th August 489). A yet more decisive victory followed on the 30th September at Verona. Odoacer fled to Ravenna, and it seemed as if the conquest of Italy was complete. It was delayed, however, for three years by the treachery of Tufa, an officer who had deserted from the service of Odoacer, and of Frederic the Rugian, one of the com- panions of Theodoric, as well as by the intervention of the Burgundians on behalf of Odoacer. A sally was made

2 In one of the intervals of friendship with the emperor in 483 Theodorie was made master of the household troops and in 484 eousul.

from Ravenna by the besieged king, who was defeated in a bloody battle in the Pine Wood. At length (26th February 493) the long and severe blockade of Ravenna was ended by a capitulation, the terms of which Theodoric

disgracefully violated by slaying Odoacer with his own hand (15th March 493). See Opoacrr.

The thirty-three years' reign of Theodoric was a time of unexampled happiness for Italy. Unbroken peace reigned within her borders (with the exception of a trifling raid made by Byzantine corsairs on the coast of Apulia in 508). The venality of the Roman officials and the turbul- ence of the Gothic nobles were sternly repressed. Marshes were drained, harbours formed, the burden of the taxes lightened, and the state of agriculture so much improved that Italy, from a corn-importing, became a corn-exporting country. Moreover Theodoric, though adhering to the Arian creed of his forefathers, was during the greater part of his reign so conspicuously impartial in religious matters that a legend which afterwards became current represented him as actually putting to death a catholic deacon who had turned Arian in order to win his favour. At the time of the contested papal election between Symmachus and Laurentius (496-502), Theodoric's mediation was welcomed by both contending parties. Unfortunately, at the very close of his reign (524), the emperor Justin's persecution of the Arians led him into a policy of repri- sals. He forced Pope John to undertake a mission to Constantinople to plead for toleration, and on his return threw him into prison, where he died. Above all, he sullied his fame by the execution of Boetius and Sym- machus (see Borrius). It should be observed, however, that the motive for these acts of violence was probably political rather than religious,—jealousy of intrigues with the imperial court rather than zeal on behalf of the Arian confession. Theodoric's death, which is said to have been hastened by remorse for the execution of Symmachus, occurred on 30th August 526. He was buried in the mausoleum which is still one of the marvels of RavENNA (q.v.), and his grandson Athalaric, a boy of ten years, suc- ceeded him, under the regency of his mother Amalasuntha.

Genealogy of Theodorve.

THEUDEMIR = Erelieva. d. 474.

A first wife=Tazoporic=Audefleda,

ora 454-526. sister of Clovis, concubine. king of the Franks. 7 | : Ostrogotho Thcudegotho, AMALASUNTHA = Eutharic, (or Arevagni), matried d. 534 a descendant married Sigismund, of the Amals. Alaric IT., king of the king of the Burgundians. | | West Goths. Pn ATHALAKIC, Witigis=MaTasurntuaA=Germanus, | Segeric, d. 534, nephew of pate, murdered Justinian, ing of the by his West Goths, father's es, put to death by d, 581. orders, 522. Piecnee G05) Amalafrida, a full sister of Theodoric, married Thrasamund, king of the

Vandals, and was mother, by an earlicr marriage, of Theodahad (d. 536).

_ Authorities.—The authorities for the life of Theodoric are very Imperfect. Jordanes, Procopius, and the curious fragment known as Anonynius Valesii (printed at the end of Ammianus Marcellinus) are the chief direct sources of narrative, but far the most important indirect source is the Variz (state-papers) of Cassiodorus, chief inmister of Theodoric. Malchus furnishes some interesting par- ticulars as to his early life, and it is possible to extract a little information from the turgid panegyric of Ennodius. Among German scholars Dahn (Kénige der Germanen, ii., iii., and iv.), Manso (Geschichte des Ostgothisehen Reichs in Italien), and Sartorius (Versuch iiber die Regierwng der Ostgothen, &c.) have done most to illustrate Theodoric's principles of government. The English reader may consult Gibbon's Decline and Fall, chap. xxxix., and Hodgkin's Jtaly and her Invaders, vol. iii., and Letters of Cassiodorus. (T. H.)

THEODOSIA, or Karra, a seaport and district town of Russia, situated on the east coast of Crimea, 69 miles to the east-north-east of Simpheropol. Its roadstead,

which has a width of 18 miles and is never frozen, is well protected from east and west winds, and partly also from the south, but its depth is small, ranging from 11 to 14 feet and reaching 35 feet only in the middle. The want of railway communication with the interior prevents it from gaining the commercial importance it might otherwise have possessed, so that its population was only 10,800 in 1881,—a low figure when compared with the 20,000 it had in 1672 and still more with the figure returned in last

century. Many remains of its former importance exist in the city and neighbourhood, the chief being a beauti- ful mosque—formerly a Genoese cathedral—synagogues several centuries old, old towers with inscriptions, baths, and a palace of Shah-Ghirei in the suburbs. Gardening is one of the leading industries ; fishing, a few manufactures, agriculture, and trade are also carried on. The foreign trade, which in 1830-40 reached an average of £90,000 for exports and £66,500 for imports, afterwards fell off, but it has experienced a revival in the course of the last 15 years, the exports of corn, linseed, and wool having reached £167,853 in 1884. The imports are insignificant.

Theodosia, a Milesian colony, was in Strabo's day a flourishing seat of trade (especially in grain), with a harbour capable of accom- modatiug a hundred ships; but before Arrian's time (¢. 125 A.D.) it appears to have been destroyed. More than a thousand years later (1263 to 1267) the Genocse established here their colony Kafa or Kefa, which grew rapidly up notwithstanding the rivalry of the Venetians. It was fortified, and became the see of a bishop, as well as the chief centre for the Genoese colonies on the Black-Sea coasts. It remained nearly independent until 1475, when it was taken by the Turks, but it continued to prosper under their rule, under the name of Kutchuk-Stambul, or Kryon-Stambul (Stambul of Crimea). 'The Russians took it in 1771, and annexed it in 1774. From that date it began to decay, and had only 3200 inhabitants in 1829, the emigration of the Crimean Tartars and the competition of Odessa being obstacles to its further growth.

THEODOSIUS I., emperor of Rome, surnamed the Great, was the son of Theodosius, Valentinian's great general, who in 368-69 drove back the Picts and Scots from the Roman territories in Britain, and, after other successes on the Continent, was at last despatched to sup- press the revolt of Firmus in Mauretania (372). Shortly after (376), the elder Theodosius, despite his great services, was put to death by order of Valens, probably through fear lest he should be the Theodosius or Theodore whom the prophetic tripod indicated as the future emperor.

The younger Theodosius was born about the year 346. He was a native of Spain, but the exact place of his birth is uncertain (Cauca in Galicia

according to Idatius and Zosimus, Italica according to Marcellinus). Pacatus and Claudian seem to claim for him at least a relationship to Trajan, of which, however, there is no satisfactory proof. He accompanied his father into Britain (368), and a little later distinguished himself by defeating the Sarmatians who had invaded Meesia (374). On _ his father's death he retired to his native place, where he lived quietly till after the great battle of Adrianople (August 9, 378), when Gratian summoned him to share the empire. Theodosius was made Augustus at Sirmium, January 19, 379, and was assigned all the Eastern provinces, including Illyricum. It was a time of great peril for the Roman state. The Huns had just made their appearance on the western shores of the Black Sea, and, after over- throwing the great nation of the Ostrogoths, had driven the more southern Visigoths to take shelter within the empire. Valens had consented to receive them (376) on condition that they should deliver up their arms and surrender their children as hostages to be distributed throughout the cities of the East. The latter half of the compact was enforced, but not the former ; and the barbarians, left with- out any sustenance, began to plunder the open country. After their great victory at Adrianople they reached the walls

of Constantinople, whence they were driven back by the valour of a band of Saracens. Meanwhile the Ostrogoths, the Taifali, the Huns, and the Alans had all crossed the Danube to share the spoils of the empire; and it was against this motley host that Theodosius had to contend. He appears to have gained some successes even before his elevation to the empire (Theodoret, v. 5, 6), and shortly after this retired to Thessalonica to organize his forces. He breathed courage into what remained of the Roman army, and summoned the very miners to his standard. But his chief reliance was placed in certain bodies of the Goths whom he had enrolled in his service. These, under their royal leader Modares, gained at least one decisive victory, probably in the course of 379. From the unchron- ological account of a later writer, Zosimus, to whom we owe almost all the details of Theodosius's early campaigns, we may infer that in the course of this year or the next Fritigern and his Visigoths were gradually driven across the

Danube, where they seem to have met with the Ostro- goths who had shared their fate. For a time the united nations turned their energy against the Western empire, till they forced Gratian to grant them leave to settle in Pannonia and Mesia. Before setting out on their new journey they perhaps combined their forces to attack Athanaric, who had retreated with his section of the Visigoths into the wilds beyond the Danube at the time of the Hunnish invasion. Unable to withstand their onset, Athanaric offered his services to Theodosius, and was received into Constantinople with every mark of favour, 11th January 381. Fifteen days later he died, and was honoured by the emperor with a splendid funeral, while his followers faithfully discharged the duty of guarding the Danube. In the two preceding years Thessaly and Macedonia had been swept by the barbarians. On one occasion the emperor himself barely escaped from their hands in a midnight attack which they had been induced to make by the sight of his blazing watchfires ; on another the united forces of the Ostrogoths and Visigoths crossed the Danube with the design of pillaging Greece. In his efforts against the invaders Theodosius was ably seconded by his colleague Gratian, who despatched his Frankish officers Baudo and Arbogastes to drive the enemy out of Macedonia and Thessaly (380), and, while Theodosius lay sick at Thes- salonica, made such terms with them as the latter emperor was glad to accept on his recovery. A little later, presumably towards the middle of 381, Promotus, Theodosius's lieutenant, inflicted a terrible defeat on a motley host that was attempting to cross the Danube. This was perhaps the decisive battle in the war ; and we read that on October 3, 382, all the remaining Goths in the empire submitted to Theodosius. Many of them appear to have entered the Roman army as "foederati"; and indeed, from the very commencement of his reign, Theodosius seems to have pur- sued a consistent policy of enrolling the Gothic warriors. At times they accepted his gifts while meditating treachery in their hearts; and Eunapius has preserved the story of how Fravitta, the leader of the faithful party, slew with his own hands his dishonest colleague Eriulf at a banquet in the emperor's own tent. Zosimus has charged Theodosius with burdening the provinces with excessive duties for the purpose of maintaining a host of useless barbarian officers, while the common soldiers were left unpaid. These barbarian troops, according to the same writer, often treated the Roman citizens with the utmost indignity, and on more than one occasion provoked a retaliation for which the emperor

refused to see any excuse. They were not, however, all quartered in one place, but received into the legions ; while others were sent to Egypt. On the whole, it may be said that his policy of attaching the invaders to himself was the salvation of the empire; it was they

Tek Ob Ost ws

who bore the brunt of the battle of the Frigidus; and the knowledge of the emperor’s good faith towards the Teutonic auxiliaries in his service must have contributed largely to the defection of Eugenius’s army on the same occasion.

In 383 Theodosius created his eldest son Arcadius Augustus. The same year saw the revolt of Maximus in Britain and the murder of Gratian (August 25, 383). For five years Theodosius consented to accept the usur- per as his colleague; but, when Maximus, flushed with success, attempted a few years later to make himself master of Italy, which, since the sudden death of Valen- tinian I. (17th November 375), had been governed under the name of his young son Valentinian II., Theodosius advanced against the invader and overthrew him near Aquileia (28th July 388). This victory was followed by the murder of Maximus and his son Victor, after whose death Theodosius conferred upon Valentinian IT. all that part of the empire which his father had held. Theodosius is said to have been induced to take this campaign by his love for Valentinian’s sister Galla, whom he now married. Meanwhile there had been fresh dangers from the Goths. In 386 another band of the Grcethingi or Ostrogoths, attempting to cross the Danube, was cut off by Promotus. The same general, in the course of the next two years, punished the barbarians who had deserted Theodosius at the beginning of the campaign against Maximus. Such signal services as these, though coupled with the fact that he had saved the emperor’s life, did not prevent Promotus from falling a victim to the intrigues of the favourite Rufinus, who is charged by Zosimus with compassing the death of other noble men. If we may trust the evidence of the last-mentioned historian, from the end of the year 388 Theodosius resigned himself to gluttony and volup- tuous living, from which he was only roused by the news that, in the Western empire, Arbogastes the Frank had slain the young emperor Valentinian and set up the grammarian Eugenius in his stead (15th May 392).

Into the curious history of the short-lived pagan revival in the Western empire there is no need to enter here. Zosimus assures us that the tears of Galla threw the whole court into confusion ; but there can be little doubt that to a religious, if not superstitious, mind like that of Theodosius it might well have seemed that he was fighting the battles of God, as he led his army of the cross against an enemy on whose standard shone the image of Hercules (Theodoret, v. 24). His host consisted partly of Romans and partly of barbarians. Timasius was leader of the former, but under him was ranged the more renowned Stilicho ; the latter were led by Gainas the Goth and Saul the Alan. The engagement was fought near the river Frigidus, some thirty-six miles distant from Aquileia. On the first day Theodosius's barbarians, engaging with those of the hostile army, were almost destroyed, and the victory seemed to be with Eugenius. After a night of prayer, towards cock-crow the emperor was cheered by a vision of St Philip and St John, who, mounted on white steeds, promised him success. With the morning he received and accepted the offer of service on behalf of the enemy's ambush, and once more advanced to the conflict. But even so, the issue of the day was doubtful till, if we may trust the concurrent testimony of all the great contem- porary church historians, a sudden gust of wind blew back the enemy's arrows on themselves. This was the turning- point of the battle: Eugenius was slain by the soldiers; and two days later Arbogastes committed suicide (Sep- tember 5-9, 394). From the north-eastern parts of Italy Theodosius passed to Rome, where he had his son Honorius proclaimed emperor under the guardianship of Stilicho. Thence he retired to Milan, where he died of dropsy (17th

January 395), leaving the empire to be divided between his two sons Honorius and Arcadius,—Honorius becoming emperor of Rome and the West, Arcadius of Constan- tinople and the East.

Important, however, as the reign of Theodosius was from the political point of view, it is perhaps still more important from the theological. According to Sozomen, his parents were both orthodox Christians, according to the creed sanctioned by the council of Nicea. It was not, however, till his illness at Thes- salonica that the emperor received baptism at the hands of Bishop

Ascholins, whereupon, says the same historian, he issued a decree (February 380) in favour of the faith of St Peter and Pope Damasus of Rome. This was to be the true catholic faith; the adherents of other creeds were to be reckoned as heretics and punished. The great council of Constantinople, consisting of 150 orthodox and 36 Macedonian bishops, met in the following year, confirmed the Nicene faith, ordered the affairs of the various sees, and declared the bishop of Constantinople to rank next to the bishop of Rome. The emperor cannot be acquitted of the intoler- ance which marks edicts such as that depriving apostatizing Christians of the right of bequest. It was not till 389 or 390 that he issued orders for the destruction of the great idol of Serapis at Alexandria. Other edicts of an earlier or later date forbade the unorthodox to hold assemblies in the towns, enjoined the surrender of all churches to the catholic bishops, and overthrew the heathen temples “throughout the whole world.” During the reign of Theo- dosius Gregory of Nazianzus was made bishop of Constantinople— an appointment which he did not long retain. In 383 Theodosius called a new council for the discussion of the true faith. The orthodox, the Arians, the Eunomians, and the Macedonians all sent champions to maintain their special tenets before the emperor, who finally decided in favour of the orthodox party. He seems to have suffered the Novatians to hold assemblies in the city. Perhaps the most remarkable incident in the life of Theodosins from a personal point of view is the incident of his submission to the reprimands of Ambrose, who dared to rebuke him and refuse to admit him to the Lord’s Supper till he had done public penance for suffering his Gothic auxiliaries to murder the townsmen of Thessa- lonica (390). Equally praiseworthy is the generous pardon that the emperor, after much intercession, granted to the seditious people of Antioch, who, out of anger at the growing imposts, had beaten down the imperial statues of their city (887). When the Christians in the eastern part of the empire destroyed a Jewish synagogue and a church belonging to the Valentinians, Theodosius gave orders for the offenders to make reparation. Such impartial conduct drew forth a remonstrance from Ambrose, who, where the interests of his creed was concerned, could forget the common principles of justice. In a sermon preached before Theodosius he introduced the Deity Him- self holding an argument against Theodosius on the subject of his remissness, and the imperial penitent yielded to the eloquent bishop. So pliant a disposition rendered him very dear to the saint, who availed

himself of his influence to counteract the efforts of Symmachus and the Roman senate for the restoration of the pagan rites at the altar of victory. “I loved the man,” says St Ambrose, “who, putting off his kingly robes, mourned publicly in the church a sin to which the guile of others had exposed him, —an emperor who thought it no shame to do an act of public penance that even private people would have blushed to perform.” The inspired vision of the saint saw the deceased emperor received into heaven by his old colleague Gratian; while Maximus and Eugenius down in hell were already experiencing how grievous a sin it is to take up arms against lawful princes (Ambrose, De Obitw Theod.).

Theodosius was twice married—(1) to Alia Flacilla, the mother of Arcadius (877-408) and Honorius (384-423); (2) to Galla (d. 394), the daughter of Valentinian I.

The chief authorities for the age of Theodosius are Ammianus Marcellinus, Zosimus, Eunapius, and the ecclesiastical historians (Socrates, Sozomen, Theo- doret). Much information may also be gleaned from the writings of St Ambrose, St Gregory of Nazianzus, Isidore of Seville, and the orators Pacatus, Libanius, Themistius. Of modern authorities Tillemont supplies an unrivalled collection of facts drily collected from all contemporary or nearly contemporary sources; he is specially useful for his synopses of the Theodosian laws. Clinton’s Fasté are the best guide for the chronology of the period. 1t is hardly necessary to mention the brilliant account given by Gibbon, or, in later years, from the stand- point of Italian history by Mr Hodgkin. (EAT A.)

THEODOSIUS II. (401-450) succeeded his father Ar- cadius as emperor of the East in 408. During his minority the empire was ruled by the pretorian prefect Anthemius and Pulcheria, who became her brother’s guardian in 414. Under his sister’s care the young emperor was brought up rather as a virtuoso than a prince. The chief events of Theodosius’s reign are the wars with Persia in 421 and 441, the council of Ephesus (434), and the inva- sion of the Huns under Attila (441-448). In 450 Theo- dosius was thrown from his horse while hunting, and re-

ceived injuries from which he died. He married Athenais, who on being baptized took the name of Eudocia. It was during his reign that the Codex Theodosianus, or collection of the constitutions of the Roman emperors, was formed. The idea took birth as early as 425, but was only put into execution between 435 and 438; in the latter year the Code was published.

THEODOSIUS III. was the last of three emperors whose short reigns filled the interval between the death of Justinian II. and the accession of Leo the Isaurian. The emperor Anastasius had sent a fleet to frustrate the in- tended expedition of the Saracens from Alexandria against Constantinople. On reaching Rhodes the troops rose against their leader, John the Deacon, slew him, and, start- ing for Constantinople, landed at Adramyttium, where they made a collector of the taxes emperor by the title of Theodosius III. The new emperor besieged Constan- tinople for six months before he took it; Anastasius resigned, and retired to a monastery, leaving his place to be filled by Theodosius III., who likewise resigned next year (717) in favour of Leo III. The closing years of Theodosius's life were spent in a monastery.

THEODOSIUS, of Tripolis, a Greek geometer and astronomer, three of whose works were contained in the collection of lesser writings named 'O puxpds dorpovo- povpevos (Sc. Tomes), or "O puxpds dotpdvopos.! Pappus of Alexandria, at the commencement of the sixth book of his Svvaywyy, speaks of this collection, the study of which is indispensable to any one who would master the science of astronomy (rov dotpovopovpevoy térov). These writings, which were highly esteemed in the school of Alexandria, were intermediate between the Elements of Euclid and the Almagest of Ptolemy, for the understanding of which, indeed, they formed an indispensable introduction. Of the life of Theodosius nothing is known. As to the time when he lived different opinions have been held, he being placed by some in the first century before and by others in the second century after the Christian era. The latter opinion is founded on an error of Suidas (s.v.), who on the one hand identifies the author of the three works referred to above with a sceptical philosopher of the same name who lived at the time of Trajan or later, and on the other hand distinguishes him from a native of Tripolis who wrote a poem on spring. It is now generally admitted that the subject of this article is the same as Theodosius the mathematician, who is mentioned by Strabo amongst the natives of Bithynia distinguished for their

learning, and whose sons were also mathematicians, the same, too, as the inventor of a universal sun-dial (horologium ampss wav xdipa) of that name who is praised by Vitruvius: (De Architectura, ix. 9). His date, therefore, could not have been later than the lst century B.c.; he may, however, have lived in the preceding cen- tury, inasmuch as the names mentioned by Strabo in the passage referred to above are, as far as we know, arranged chronologically, and Theodosius immediately follows Hip- parchus, who made astronomical observations between 161 and 126 p.c., and precedes Asclepiades the physician, who lived at Rome at the beginning of the lst century B.c.

The statement that he was “of Tripolis” is made, not on the authority of Suidas, as has been erroneously said, but because he is so described in the title of his principal work. It is probable, therefore, that he was a native of

1 This collection contained the following books :—“ Theodosii Tri- polite Sphericorum libri iii.; Euclidis Data, Optica, Cutoptrica, ac Phenomena; Theodosii Tripolite De Habitationibus et Noctibus ac Diebus libri ii.; Autolyci Pitanei De Sphera Mota, et libri ii. De Ortu atque Occasu Stellarum Inerrantium; Aristarchi Samii De Magnitudinibus ac Distantiis Solis ac Lung ; Hypsiclis Alexandrini

’“Avagopixds sive De Ascensionibus ; Menelai Sphwricorum libri iii.” — Fabricius, Bibliotheca Grea, ed. Harles, iv. p. 16.

The word theology

in the

Bithynia, and resided at Tripolis, where he wrote his work. Tripolis is generally taken to be the city of that name on the Phcenician coast, but it may have been a town of the same name in Lydia, on the Meander.

His chief work—Z@aipixa, in three books—trcats of the properties of the sphere and its sections, with the object of establishing the geometrical principles of spherical astronomy. This work, which is classical, is

distinguished for the order and clearness of the exposition as well as for the rigour of its proofs, and has ever since formed the basis on which the subject of spherical geometry has been treated. It does not contain any trace of spherical trigono- metry, which, on the other hand, was the special subject of the work having the same title, and included in the same collection, of Menelaus of Alexandria, who lived at the end of the 1st century.

Montucla suspected that a great part of the three books of Theodosius must have been known before his time, and that he merely did with respect to this branch of geometry what Euclid had done with the elements, namely, he collected and incorporated in his work the different propositions found before his time by astronomers and geometcrs. This conjecture of Montucla has been confirmed by A. Nokk (Ueber die Sphirik des Theodosius, Karls-ruhe, 1847), by Heiberg (Litterargeschichtliche Studien iiber Euklid, pp. 48 sq., Leipsic, 1882), and by Hultsch, from whose researches, and especially owing to the publication by the last of the cditio princeps of Autolycus, it is now quite certain that as early as the middle of the 4th century B.c. there existed a Greek text-book ou Sphcrics which, in its essential contents, scarcely deviated from the three books of Theodosius. He must therefore be regarded as mercly the editor, or at most the elaborator and expounder, of a doctrine which existed some centuries before him.

The Spherics of Theodosius was translated into Arabic at the beginning of the 10th eentury, and from the Arabie into Latin in the 12th century by Plato of Tivoli (Tiburtinus), This translation was published in 1518 at Venice, but was found so faulty by J. Voegelinus that he published a new Latin version, together with additions from the Arabian commentators, Vienna, 1529, 4to; other Latin translations were published by F. Maurolycus, Messina, 1558, fol.; by C. Clavius, Rome, 1586, 4to; and by Barrow under the title, Tueodosii Spherica, Methodo Nova Illustrata et Succincte Demonstrata, London, 1675, 4to. The Greek text was first published, and with it a Latin translation, by J. Pena, Paris, 1558, 4to; it has been edited since by Joseph Hunt, Oxford, 1707, and by E. Nizze, Berlin, 1852, bnt these two editions are founded on that of Pena. There is also a German translation by Nizze, Stralsund, 1826. His two editions are aecompanied with valuable notes and an appendix containing additions from Voegelinus and others.

The two other works of Theodosius whieh have eome down to us have not as yet been published in the original. The propositions, without demonstrations, in the work mepi nuepov kat vuxt@v (On Days and Nights), in two books, were given by Dasypodius, in Greek and Latin, in his Sphericze Doctrine Propositiones, Strasburg, 1572, 8yo, A Latin version of the complete work, with aneient scholia and figures, was given by Joseph Auria, Rome, 1591, 4to. Pappus has given a pretty full commentary on the first book of this work of Theodosius. His work mept oixnoewv (On Habitations) also was published by Auria, Rome, 1588, It gives an account of how, for every inhabitant of the earth from the equator to the pole, the starry firmament presents itself in the course of a year. The proposi- tions in it were also given by Dasypodius in his work mentioned above.

THEOGNIS or Mzcara was one of the early Greek elegiac poets ; he probably flourished about the middle of the 6th century B.c. We derive our knowledge of his life from the poems that bear his name. After the fall of Theagenes, who had made himself tyrant of Megara about 625, the usual struggles between oligarchy and democracy ensued. ‘Theognis was a violent partisan of the oligarch- ical faction in his native town, and wrote elegies in which he gave expression to the emotions roused in him by the varying phases of the struggle. He appears on one occasion to have lost his property (verse 345) and been driven into exile: perhaps it was then that he visited

PoE O

HE word theology comes from a heathen source— from the Greek classics. In the Republic of Plato

classics; 20d the Metaphysics of Aristotle it occurs, and in its

etymological meaning of “discourse or doctrine con- cerning Deity and Divine things”—Adyos rept rod Geod Kal wept trav Oev. Men who wrote about the gods and their doings, or who speculated about the Divine in the origination and operations of nature—men like Homer, Hesiod, Pherecydes, and Thales,—were called Geordyou. But there could, of course, be no theclogical science based on the popular religion of Greece. Theology was

only to be found among the Greeks in the form of philosophical speculation. Through St Augustine we know that Varro,

Sicily, Eubcea, and Sparta (783 sq.). In the end—if we may trust 1123 sqg. —he returned to Megara, and lived, at least for a time, in something like prosperity. The date. of his death is unknown. ‘The verses handed down to us under the name of Theognis amount in all to 1389. Not a few of them are ascribed on the evidence of the ancients to Tyrtzeus, Mimnernus, and Solon ; modern criticism has made it probable that two of the longer elegies are from the hand of Evenus (467-496 and 667-686); other fragments are demonstrably later than Theognis. It is now generally admitted that the Zheognidea were put together long after Theognis— possibly even as late as the 4th century B.c.—by some compiler who wished to provide a good collection of moral maxims for educational pur- poses. To separate the genuine fragments of Theognis from those which were ascribed to him by the reverence of a later age is a hopeless task.

The collection is divided into two books. The first, which is addressed to a youth called Cyrnus, or Polypexdes, opens with a spirited invocation of Apollo and Artemis, along with the Muses aud the Graces (vv. 1-18); then follows a passage which has been much discussed in connexion with the early history of writing, recommending Cyruus to set a seal upon the author’s verses, to prevent forgers from passing off spurious lines under his name (see Jcvons, Hist. of Greek Lit., p. 46). With verse 27 begins a series of counsels to Cyrnus. On the whole they are remarkable neither for loftiness of tone nor for poetic elevation. Cyruus is counselled to avoid “the bad” and frequent the society of “the good” men— the terms ‘‘good” and ‘‘bad” being used to denote aristocrats and democrats, just as kaAds Kaya0ds meant an oligarch in the later days of the Peloponnesian War. Sometimes the violence of party feeling leads Theognis beyond all bounds, as when he prays that he may “‘drink the black blood” of his opponents (849; cf. 837- 339 and 861). One striking feature in these elegies is the continual refrain about the evils of poverty. ‘To avoid poverty one should even throw oneself into the vasty decp, or from the beetling rocks ” (175-176; of. 266 sg., 351 sq., and 649 sg.). Elsewhere the poet reproaches Zeus

with allowing evil men to prosper, and attlicting the good (878 sqg.); he also complains that the punishment due to wicked men often falls upon their sons (781 sg.). A pleasing feature is the high value which is placed upon friendship: one is not to part with a friend lightly, or upon some slight occasion of displeasure (828 sqg.).” At the same time no one knows better than Theognis how quickly friends fail one in adversity (299-300). Life has on the whole few charms for our poet: ‘‘the best thing for man is not to be born or look upon the rays of the swift sun; once born it is best for him to pass as soon as possible the gates of death, and lie with a great barrow of earth above him” (425-429), The prevailingly sad tone of the elegies is occasionally broken by a convivial note. “It is shameful,” says the poet, ‘‘to be drunk when others are sober, or sober when others are drunk” (626-627); ‘‘among the uproarious I am very uproarious, but among the proper I am the properest of men ” (818-814). ‘The only elegy which possesses any considerable poetic merit in the first book is that in which Theognis predicts immortality for his young friend through the fame awaiting his own poems. The second book (1231-1389) consists of a number of amatory elegies addressed to some young friend of the author’s. In vigour and harmony of versification they are on the whole superior to the first book; but most if not all of them are probably spurious.

Bergk, Poetx Lyrici Greci, ii, 117-236, Leipsie, 1882, –

LOGY

“the most learned of the Romans,” distinguished three kinds of theology,—the first mythical or fabulous, the second physical or natural, and the third civil or popular. The mythical theology he censured as containing many things contrary to the dignity and nature of immortal beings; the natural theology he described as that which is true but beyond the capacity of the vulgar; the civil theology he considered to be that which it was good for the citizens to believe—the received religion of Rome. The general attitude of the Greek and Roman mind to religion was unfavourable to the cultivation of theology. Religion being dissociated in thought from truth could not give rise to science.

Pee Ob OG Y

The words theology and theologian do not occur in

fathers; Scripture, but it was inevitable that they should be trans-

planted into Christian soil. @edAoyos is found, as a V.R. in the inscription of the Apocalypse—the Revelation of John “the Divine,” “the theologian,” —and almost certainly refers to his maintaining the Divinity of the Logos— rjv rod Adyou Oedryra,—that the Adyos is Geds. In the 3d and Ath centuries a theologian usually meant one who distin- guished himself in defending the personality and Divinity of the Logos. It was on this ground that Athanasius and Gregory Nazianzen were honoured with the distinctive appellation of “theologians.” The term theology has not yet lost its early signification of ‘doctrine concerning God,” although a much wider meaning is more common. Theology in its ordinary general acceptation includes, as one of its divisions, theology understood as the treatment of the problems which directly refer to the being, attributes, and works of God. The Jztroductio ad Theologiam, and a later form of it, the Theologia Christiana, composed by Abelard in the 12th century, first gave currency to an acceptation of the word inclusive of all religious truth or belief. Among later scholastics the common designation for a general compendium of religious doctrine was Summa Theologix. Of such Summex among the most celebrated and characteristic are those of Alexander Hales, Albertus Magnus, and Thomas Aquinas. The medieval mystics deemed the essence of theology to be the immediate intuition of God, who, being once in contact with the soul, reveals to it the truth of all the principles of faith, and gives it at the same time spiritual peace and happiness. This view led toa use of the word which was prevalent among the Reformers and their imniediate successors,—a subjective application which identified it with what was characteristic of the mind of a true theologian, an enlight- ened and experienced homo renatus. In this sense it was a living practical acquaintance with the revelation of grace and truth made by God to man, a “habitus practicus,” a “sapientia eminens practica,” as it was called. With it, however, these earlier Protestant divines generally con- joined that objective application of the term which was current in later scholasticism, and this at length wholly displaced the subjective acceptation ; in other words, theology came to signify, not knowledge of a certain kind as inherent in the mind and operative in the life of the individual, but

knowledge in itself, a body of systematized truth, a science. Theology, thus understood, may be viewed, discussed, and applied in a variety of ways, so as to give rise to certain kinds or species of theology. In the 17th century the necessity for specialization of this sort began, from the operation of several causes, to be widely and strongly felt, and it became usual for divines to indicate by the titles of their theological systems the point of view and mode of treatment adopted. An adjec- tive added to the term ‘“‘theologia” served their purpose. Of adjectives thus employed in the 17th and early part of the 18th century, the following may be mentioned as either frequently used or of some intrinsic interest :—theoretica, practica, didactica, elenctica, polemica, irenica, pacifica, positiva, comparativa, dogmatica, theoretico-practica, didac- tico-elenctica, &c.

The extension given to the signification of the term theology was for a very lengthened period almost univer- sally restricted to the knowledge derivable from the Scrip- tures, the systematic exhibition of revealed truth, the science of Christian faith and life. It is still thus, per- haps, that the word is most commonly understood. Two things, however, have naturally suggested the employment of it in a wider manner. First, there was the rise and development of a theology not based on revelation,—the

The Greeks and Romans could not distinguish between nature and revelation, reason and faith, because ignorant of revelation and faith in their distinctive Christian sense. In the patristic and scholastic ages of the church, and for some time after the Reformation, men were not in general prepared to admit that there was a knowledge of God and of His attributes and of His relations to the world which might be the object of a science distinct from and inde- pendent of revelation. Yet the most learned and thought- ful even of the scholastic divines recognized in some measure that such was the case, and could hardly, indeed, do otherwise after they had become acquainted with the contributions which Greek, Jewish, and Arabian philo- sophers had made to the defence and elaboration of the doctrine concerning God. The separation of natural and revealed theology was virtually the work of the scholastics. The Theologia Naturalis sive Liber Creaturarum of the Spanish physician, Raymond de Sebonde, who taught theology in the

university of Toulouse during the earlier part of the 15th century, was, perhaps, the first work which, proceeding on the principle that God has given us two books, the book of nature and the book of Scripture, confined itself to the interpretation of the former, merely indicating the mutual relations of natural and revealed religion. A conviction of the truth of the distinction which he so clearly apprehended gradually spread ; more and more importance came to be attached to it. The deists proceeded on it, and tried to exalt natural theology at the expense of all theology professedly based on revela- tion, by representing the former as the truth of which the latter was the perversion. The wisest of their opponents, and thoughtful Christian writers in general—the adhe- rents of the moderate and rational theology of the 17th and 18th centuries—strove, on the other hand, to show that natural theology was presupposed by revelation and should carry the mind onwards to the acceptance of reve- lation. Thus natural theology came into reputation, not- withstanding the opposition of those who have denied its existence and contended that the reason of itself can teacla us absolutely nothing about God or our duties towards

Him. The recognition of natural theology contributed to Compa- awaken an interest in the various religions of the world, rative

and thus led to the second circumstance referred to, namely, the rise of what may be called comparative theo- logy, although it has hitherto been more generally designated the science of religions. It can be shown to have originated in the attempts made to prove that the principles of natural theology were to be found in all religions. In Bishop Steuco of Kisami's De Perenni Philosophia, published in 1540, and in Lord Herbert of Cherbury's De Religione Gentiliwm, published in 1663, we have two of the earliest and most characteristic attempts of the kind. From that time to the present the study of religions has proceeded at varying rates of progress, but without interruption. Important results have been ob- tained, and especially this result, the ascertainment, to the satisfaction of all competent judges, of a right method of investigation,—the establishment, as the true mode of study, of the coniparative method. As we have a right to speak of comparative anatomy and comparative philology, so have we a right to speak of comparative theology. The inference from the preceding remarks is obvious. If there be a natural theology and a comparative theology, it is a

mistake to identify theology per se with Christian theology. The word Christian is, in this case, a real and great restriction of the signification of the word theology, and Christian theology is not the only kind of theology. The proper procedure is to give to theology a general and comprehensive meaning, which can be limited and specialized,

rise and development of what is called natural theology. | when requisite, by adjectives like “natural” or “Christian.”

it

| | _ logy.

Is theo- logy the science of reli- gion or the doc- trine of God?

Objec- tions to the for- mer deti- nition met.

262

What, then, is the general signification which we should give to the term? ‘There is room for difference of opinion, and especially as to whether God or religion should be regarded as the object of the science. Is theology the science which treats of God? or is it the science which treats of religion? ‘The latter view is now, perhaps, the more current. In addition to intrinsic reasons, the critical and sceptical spirit of the time is in its favour. Many speak of theology as a science of religion because they disbelieve that there is any knowledge of God to be at- tained. Dr Martineau, in his lecture on Jdeal Substitutes for God, protests against this tendency, and contends that the older view of theology, as the doctrine or rational apprehension of God, ought not to be abandoned, seeing that the new “science of religions,” ¢.¢., ‘the systematic knowledge of what men have believed and felt on things sacred to them,” can be no proper substitute for the old “theology.” We may admit, however, that the protest is essentially true,—that a knowledge of man’s religious opinions, emotions, and actions can never supply the place of a knowledge of God, that, when from religion its objec- tive basis, the reality and apprehensibility of God, is taken away, the study of it can have merely the psychological interest which belongs to mental disease and illusious,— and yet prefer the definition of theology as “the science of

religion” to its definition as “ the doctrine of God.” The latter seems much too narrow. Even Christian dogmatics is abont as much occupied with man as with God. The doctrines of sin and of the church, for example, are not doctrines regarding God. Then, although the new “science of religions” is not a substitute for the old “ theology,” it is still a science, or at least a very interest- ing and important branch of knowledge, which yet cannot be brought under the definition of theology approved by Dr. Martineau,—the definition immediately yielded by the etymology of the term. The science of religion is a very different thing from the “science of religions.” It is far more comprehensive. The “science of religions” is but one of the latest offshoots of the science of religion ; the old theology is its main trunk or stem. Theology, when viewed as the science of religion, has not to do merely with the religious consciousness and its states. It must aim at the complete comprehension of religion, and, unless religion be a delusion and disease, this can never be attained by treating religion merely as a subjective or psychological process to which there are no corresponding objective realities manifested either through nature or revelation. We have no right to assume that it is thus without a real and rational foundation in fact; on the contrary, we are bound to inquire whether it has external grounds and real objects or not, and, if it have them, what they are. We must endeavour to ascertain and expound its objective grounds as well-as its subjective contents. Thus the definition of theology as the science of religion in no way excludes what is implied in the definition of it as the science conversant about God and Divine things. It includes more than the latter definition, but does not exclude anything contained therein,

The definition of theology as the science of religion has been objected to by Dr Charles Hodge on two grounds :!— first, that the word religion is ambiguous, having both an objective sense and a subjective sense, and that its ety- mology is doubtful; and, second, that to define theology as the science of religion “makes theology entirely inde- pendent of the Bible. For, as moral philosophy is the analysis of our moral nature and the conclusions to which that analysis leads, so theology becomes the analysis of our religious consciousness together with the truths which that analysis evolves.” As to the first objection, the word

Systematic Theology, vol. i. pp. 20-21.

religion has, it is true, more significations than one, and consequently may be ambiguously used, but in point of fact it is not so used in the definition in question, in which religion is understood in its generic meaning, and as inclusive both of subjective and of objective religion. Theology has to treat of both, and if it treat of them aright it will not confound them. ‘“ The etymology of the word religion is doubtful.” Very true. But is no word to be employed in a definition if its etymology be doubtful? That would be an extremely hard law. In definition we have only to do with the actnal meaning of terms; we have nothing to do with their origin or history. As to the second objection, it has to be remarked that the definition does not make theology entirely independent of the Bible. It does not make Biblical theology in any degree independent of the Bible. It does not imply that the Bible is not the sole perfect standard by which truth and error, health and disease, are to be separated in the religious consciousness of individuals and the religious history of the race. It only implies that all religious phenomena whatever are to be studied by the theologian, just as moral philosophy cannot leave any moral pheno- niena unstudied. Moral philosophy, in treating of vice as well as of virtue, does not thereby equalize vice and virtue ; and no more does comparative theology, when it treats both of Christianity and heathendom, assume that the former has no superiority over the latter. It is merely a part of the task of moral philosophy to analyse the moral consciousness ; it is an equally essential part thereof to inquire into the foundation of rectitude, and to determine objective moral distinctions and relations, In like manner theology has much more to do than merely to analyse the religious consciousness ; it has also to treat of the grounds and objects of religion. If some reduce it to a mere analysis of the religious consciousness, and overlook or deny that there is an objective religious revelation in nature and Scripture as well as a religious susceptibility in the mind of man, this is no logical consequence of the statement that theology is the science of religion. There needs, perhaps, no other proof that the definition to which Dr Hodge objects is of some use than to consider for a moment his own definition. ‘Theology is the science concerned with the facts and the principles of the Bible.” Is theology, then, not concerned with the facts and prin- ciples of the physical world, the human mind, and history, so far as these are disclosures of God’s nature and

ways ? How can theology start from the Bible when it needs to be proved that there is a revelation from God in the Bible? And how can this be proved unless it is known from other sources than the Bible that there isa God? If there be such sources, theology must have to do with them; it can have no right to neglect anything by which God may be known or by which light may be thrown on the relations between God and man. It isa service to theology so to define it as to leave no room for asserting that it is only conversant with the Bible.

Theology, then, is the science of religion. What does this definition imply as to the relation of theology to religion? It iniplies, first, that theology presupposes and is preceded by religion. This is but anu instance of the general truth that experience must precede science, and that science must be founded on experience. The im plicit use of principles is always prior to their explicit development. Speech is a great deal older than gram- mar ; men reasoned long before Aristotle taught them how they reasoned ; and just as there must be speech before grammar, and reasoning before logic, so must there be religion before theology. Secondly, that theology is the science of religion implies that theology must not only succeed religion, but must evolve out of it a system of

Relation of theo-

logy to religion.

truths entitled to be called a science. Science is know- ledge in its completest, highest, and purest form. Theo- logy, therefore, by claiming to be the science of religion, professes to be the exhibition of religious facts and prin- ciples in their most general and precise shape, in their internal relationship to one another, in their organic unity and systematic independence. The principles of causality and of unity in the human mind impel it to seek law and order, explanation and connexion, as regards the pheno- mena of religion no less than any other species of pheno- mena; they impel it, in other words, to perfect its know- ledge of these phenomena, and can allow it no rest until it has attained to the system and science of them. Theology is the scientific system of them, and as such is a necessity to the thoughtful religious mind. It is no accident that in every age and nation thoughtful men have reflected on their religious convictions, and sought to

trace them to their grounds, and to harmonize and ‘systematize them, or that the Christian church has anxiously studied and debated for centuries problems concerning God, Christ, sin, salvation, &c.,—no accident, but the necessary conse- quence of those fixed laws of human nature by which man ever seeks, once that his intellect has been truly awakened, to define and complete his knowledge. Conscious that his religious experience, however vivid, involves much which requires to be cleared up; perceiving that the religious history of his race presents many apparently contradictory facts, many perplexing problems ; aware that the Bible is no more a system of theology than nature is a system of mechanics or chemistry,—man cannot, as a rational being, do otherwise than endeavour by the investigation of the whole phenomena of the case to verify, analyse, combine, and co-ordinate his notions as to spiritual things, so as to work them up into a comprehensive, consistent, firmly established, adequately certified, naturally organized whole, a scientific system.

But how may man hope to succeed in his efforts to arrive at a scientific understanding of his religious beliefs, feelings, and practices? How may‘he educe and elaborate from the phenomena of religion a system of theology entitled to be called science? Only, it is obvious, by following a truly scientific method. What then is a truly scientific method in theology? And what is implied in following it? To these questions a comprehensive, al- though necessarily brief, answer must now be given. scientific A right method in theology, as in all other sciences, is nethod such a use of reason on appropriate facts as will best attain ‘ truth. It implies, therefore, as an essential condition, a

right relation of reason to religious truth or fact, and to

the evidence for it. What the right relation is may, perhaps, be defined with substantial accuracy in the Adigious following propositions. (1) Religious truth, like all other

- truth, is “above reason” in the sense of being not created Above by but manifested to reason, but is not ‘‘ above reason”

veason, in any special sense which withdraws it from the cogniz- ance of reason. The truths of all science are the dis- . coveries but not the creations

of science, and they have been discovered because they existed, because they are the equivalents of a reality which is independent of science. In regard alike to mathematical, physical, mental, and religious truth, reason has only power to seek it, and to find or to miss it; it has no power to make it or right over it, but must accept it as something presented or given to it, and to which it is bound to do homage and yield submission. In this sense all truth is above reason and Tevealed to reason. In this sense reason stands to re-) ligious truth in the same relation as to physical truth, and to Christian truth in the same relation as to the truth In natural religion. Reason is simply the instrument or faculty of apprehending the truth manifested or revealed

at i © i © G Y

to it, and it can in no case apprehend truth without the aid of the appropriate manifestation or revelation. Unless Christ had lived and taught, reason could never have known His character and doctrine ; but no more could it have known Dante and his Divina Commedia, Shakespeare and his creations, Napoleon and his achievements, unless these men had appeared in the world and accomplished in

it their work. Without Christ the truth in Christ could not be known, but, Christ being given, that truth comes under the cognizance of reason, ceases to be in any special sense above reason, and affords to reason material for science. By truths above reason are sometimes meant truths which cannot be fully apprehended by reason. Such truths are, however, in no way peculiar to religion.

In all regions and directions reason finds that its range of vision is limited, and that its knowledge and science are bounded by nescience and mystery. Truths of special revelation are sometimes represented as above reason in the sense that reason can have no other evidence for them than that of testimony and external authority. But what truths of Scripture have thus been revealed to reveal no- thing, and are thus devoid of intrinsic light, of natural affinity to reason, of self-evidencing power? If there be any such, it must be admitted that they cannot in them- selves fall within the province of

science, although the testimony and assent to them may. Where reason stops science must end. (2) Reason in its investigation of Reason religion must be completely free, 2.¢., subject to no other must be laws than those which are inherent in its own constitution. ‘”°* In regard to most sciences there is no need to insist that the method of science is one in which reason is free, because all who occupy themselves with these sciences acknowledge it. But in regard to theology it is other- wise. All who call themselves theologians are by no means disposed to admit that reason, in its search for religious truth and in its efforts to construct theological science, must be absolutely free ; on the contrary, many of them hold that the church or the Bible, tradition or the common sense of humanity, must be allowed to have a co-ordinate or even superior jurisdiction. The proposition laid down implies that, if any view of this kind be true, theology is essentially different from science, and it is vain

to speak of scientific method in theology. It implies that

all claims to religious authority must be based on and con- formed to reason, and that all the deliverances of every professedly religious authority must be submitted without reserve or restriction to the reason of the theologian before

he can make a scientific use of them. This leads us to another proposition. (3) The only ascertainable limits of Reason reason in the investigation of religious truth, as of other a

° : oo : : y its

truth, are those which are inherent in its own constitution; 5. and in the search of religious truth, as of all other truth, jaws. reason ought to go as far as it can go without violation of the laws of its own constitution. Reason has its limits in

its own laws. It is the business of psychology and logic

to discover what these laws are. When they are known the powers of reason are known, because reason can never claim to be irrational. It is useless, however, to attempt

to mark off the external or objective boundaries of rational research, Human inquiry has, no doubt, external bound- aries beyond which it will never pass, but all apparent boundaries of this kind recede as they are approached. There is even absurdity, self-contradiction, in the very attempt to draw any line separating the knowable from the unknowable. To know it one must have already done what we affirm to be impossible,—known the un- knowable. We cannot draw a boundary unless we see over it. Reason cannot investigate too deeply any matter whatever, cannot possibly go too far, so long as it remains reason. Its own laws, the laws of evidence

Reason deals with evidence.

Sources of reli- gious truth.

and of inference, are the only discoverable expression of its lawgiver's "thus far." When it violates any of these laws it has gone too far, but only then, and then simply because it has ceased to be rational. As long as it con- forms to them the farther it goes the better. All this holds good not less in regard to religion than to any other object of investigation, and is an essential condition of the possibility of religious science. (4) In the study of religion, as in every other department of study, reason should admit nothing as true without sufficient evidence, while rejecting nothing sufficiently proved by evidence of any kind although it cannot be proved by evidence of another kind, or although it may be imperfectly under- stood or have unsolved difficulties connected with it. Theology is sometimes said to be a doctrine or science of belief or faith (a "Glaubenslehre"). Not a few, however, of those who say so regard belief or faith as essentially inclusive of reason, in the form of an immediate apprehen- sion of primary truth or self-evident fact ; in which case theology is only a Glaubenslehre in common with other sciences, and belief or faith is in no special mode or measure its foundation. But, whenever by belief or faith is meant mere belief or faith, a belief or faith independ- ent of and unconformed to reason, the apprehension and appreciation of truth,—to affirm that theology is based on such belief or faith is to represent it as so unlike every other science that it clearly cannot be a science at all. For all belief or faith we are bound to have real evidence, and enough of it. But we have no right to

reject any real evidence because there is not more or because there is not evidence of some other kind,—no right to neglect to follow any light there is because it may be dim, and much around it may be dark,—no more right to refuse to accept any well-established conclusion as to God and religion because there is great uncertainty as to the essence of religion, and because God in His absoluteness and infinity immeasurably transcends our highest thoughts, than we have to ignore or contest the conclusions of physical science because we cannot tell what matter is, and because we find that every hypothesis as to its nature brings with it many doubts and difficulties.

The foregoing conditions are perhaps the most general and fundamental of those to which reason must conform if it would originate and follow a scientific method in theology. The next question which demands an answer is, Whence are the data to be derived on which reason must operate in religious apprehension and _ theological investigation? What are the sources of religious truth ? Reason has not the truth in itself, but in order to possess it must find it. As the eye has not physical light within itself, but merely so corresponds to it as to apprehend it, not otherwise is it with reason and intellectual light. By sources of religious truth can only be meant the media through which God manifests Himself,—the ways by which He makes himself known ; and the physical world, finite minds, human history, Scripture, and the testemonium Spiritus Sanctt may all be maintained to be such sources. The atheist and the agnostic will not allow that there are any sources of religious truth ; the deist and the ration- alist will only admit the claims of general revelation, the exclusive Biblicist only of Scripture ; and the mystic will trust chiefly to special spiritual illumination; while the theologian of broader view will hold that all the ways indicated are sources, seeing that in and through them all knowledge and experience as to God and religion may be acquired, and must contend that in the study of theology none of them is to be ignored or excluded, underestimated or overestimated, but all are to be duly considered, and the information supplied by each to be taken in connexion with that supplied by the rest. The sources are distinct,

but not isolated. The light from each combines and harmonizes with the light from all the others. The revela- tion of God in nature is presupposed by that in Scripture, and Scripture contributes to unveil the spiritual signifi-

cance of nature. Without the light which the human mind supplies there can be no illumination from any other source, and yet all the light of the human mind is gained in connexion with the light from external sources. History gradually evolves the significance of nature, mind, and Scripture, yet cannot be understood if dissevered from the creation in which it is placed, from the mind of man in the principles and faculties of which it is rooted, or from Scripture as the record of the development of a plan of redemption which gives unity and meaning to the whole historical movement. However deep and full a source of religious truth the Bible may be, it is neither independent of other sources nor a substitute for them; on the con- trary, while casting light on them all it likewise receives light from them all. The living apprehension of spiritual realities presupposes a discernment which the Divine Spirit alone can give; yet that Spirit, according to the testimony of Scripture, speaks not of Himself, but only in conformity with what has already been uttered by the Father and the Son. It would obviously neither be consistent with the scope nor possible within the limits of an article like the present to determine the distinctive features, natural spheres, and various relationships of the media of revela- tion or sources of religious truth, but a sufficiently thorough investigation having this aim may safely be pronounced to be one of the chief desiderata of theological science.

The process of theological method itself has next to be Process considered. Its first step is the ascertainment of the of theo- relevant facts. But these are all the facts of nature and oe history, all the truths of Scripture, and all the phases of _ religion. The various departments of theology are based on and inclusive of various orders of these facts, and each order of facts must be ascertained and dealt with in appropriate special ways. Thus the relevant data of The facts natural theology are all the works of God in nature and of natw providence, all the phenomena and laws of matter, mind, He . and history,—and these can only be thoroughly ascertained “ by the special sciences. The surest and most adequate knowledge of them is knowledge in the form called scien- tific, and therefore in this form the theologian must seek to know them. The sciences which deal with nature, mind, and history hold the same position towards natural theo- logy which the disciplines that treat of the composition, genuineness, authenticity, text, development, &c., of the Scriptures do towards Biblical theology. They inform us, as it were, what is the true text and literal interpretation of the book of creation. Their

conclusions are the pre- misses, or at least the data, of the scientific natural theo- logian. All reasonings of his which disregard these data are ipso facto condemned. A conflict between the results of these sciences and the findings of natural theology is inconceivable. It would be a conflict between the data and conclusions of natural theology, and so equivalent for natural theology to self-contradiction. Then, the data of of Bibli- Biblical theology are all the words contained in the Bible, cal theo- viewed in their appropriate positions and historical con-°°8% nexions, and what these are and signify can only be ascertained by the processes of historical criticism and of hermeneutics. Biblical theology is the delineation of a section of the history of religious ideas,—that section of which the traces and records remain in the Bible. But the Bible comprehends many strata of writing, deposited at different times, and collocated and connected in various ways, and the history of its composition, the age and suc- cession of its parts, must be ascertained before we can exhibit the history of its contents, the course of the evolu-

reno . OG ¥ 265

There must be, therefore, in theology need and scope for a great variety of applications of method.

It is easy, however, to exaggerate the importance of Practical acquaintance with the formal rules of method laid down investi- by logicians. The theory of method must be preceded by &tion

tion of its ideas. If the theories of recent critics as to the formation and relationship of the component portions of the Old Testament be true, the view taken of the develop- ment of Old Testament theology must be very different

from that formed on the supposition that the traditional essential,

theory is correct. And which theory is correct is a ques- tion of fact which can only be decided by dispassionate and thorough critico-historical investigation. So false rcadings must be distinguished from true, erroneous trans- lations from correct, and appropriate from inappropriate interpretations, which presupposes an adequate measure of linguistic,

grammatical, and exegetical knowledge and skill. The religion of the Bible, however, is but one of a multitude of religions which have left traces of them- selves in documents, monuments, rites, creeds, customs, institutions, individual lives, social changes, &c.; and there is a theological discipline—comparative theology—which undertakes to disclose the spirit, delineate the character, – trace the development, and exhibit the relations of all re- ligions with the utmost attainable exactitude. Obviously the mass of data which this science has to collect, sift, and interpret is enormous. They can only be brought to light and set in their natural relationships by the labours of hosts of specialists of all kinds. That hypotheses in this domain will for long arise and vanish with disappointing rapidity is only what is to be expected from its vast extent, the amount of its buried wealth, the gradual and fragmentary way in which its contents must be disinterred, the losses and changes which have occurred in the course of time, and the constant suggestion of fresh interpretations of ancient texts and new solutions of old problems which must come from unceasing discovery. Some theological disciplines, it must also be observed, presuppose others, and have consequently among their data the conclusions of those other disciplines. All doctrine, for example, founded on special revelation presupposes doctrine founded on general revelation ; all Christian theology must imply and incorporate natural theology. Christian dogmatics has to make use of the results of natural theology, Biblical theology, and comparative theology, and to raise them to a higher stage by a comprehensive synthesis which con- nects them with the person and work of Christ, as of Him in whom all spiritual truth is comprehended and all spiritual wants supplied. The conception of it prevalent until lately, as a system formed of generalizations and inferences from texts of Scripture, answers properly to no theological science, but much more nearly to Biblical theology than to Christian dogmatics,

When religious data have been ascertained, the materials of theological science have been obtained, but the scientific . edifice itself has still to be constructed. The general truths involved in particular disclosures have to be evolved ; the laws of the development of phenomena have to be discovered ; elements have to be reached by analysis and comprehensive views by synthesis ; laws and facts, funda-

practice—true theory by successful practice; and the ablest practitioners are always only to a small extent guided in their practice by conscious reference to the rules of method prescribed by logicians. In theology, as in all other depart- ments of science, a man can only become an investigator by investigating. And whether he will become, through the practice of investigation, a successful investigator or not will depend far more on his general intellectual char- acter, his ingenuity, originality, tact, and sensibility, his familiarity with the relevant facts and with the researches which are really bringing new truths in his department to light, his perseverance and diligence, than on his know- ledge of what the theorists on method have taught as to its nature and requirements. Yet, of course, such instruc- tion as logical theory can give is not to be despised, but to be received and acted on with all due appreciation.

When the data of the theologian are before him as particular facts, it is obvious that he must so enumerate and classify, so analyse and generalize, so correlate and combine them, as to elicit from them the principles which they imply, before either his procedure or results can be properly characterized as scientific. In other words, a method which starts from particulars must, in order to be scientific, be largely inductive. But in theology, as in all other departments of knowledge, the only induction which is of any value is more than any mere sunimation or combination of facts. This is not the place for a discussion of the nature of a true induction; but on any view it must hold good that to understand aright what induction in theology is we must know what is implied in all that is comprehended in it,—the ascertainment and collocation of facts, the discrimination of their charac- teristics, the classification of them, the analysis of what is complex, the synthesis of what is partial, the tracing of uniform relations, the inferential act, &c. Much which would not be without interest or use, or even some degree of novelty, might be said on all these points. Numerous as have been treatises on theology, there has not as yet appeared a single earnest attempt to expound the nature of method in theology ; even the many works professedly dealing not only with the encyclopedia but with the methodology have, in reality, quite ignored theological method proper. The present writer can only here note the desideratum ; to supply it would require a special and lengthened discussion. The so-called methods of induction— the methods of agreement, of difference, and of concomitant

variations—are as applicable in theology as in physical or mental science. They are not, properly speaking, processes of induction ; they are merely rules for testing inductions. Their value, of course, is not thereby lessened.

Method must be largely induc-

tive.

The theologian, not less than the physicist, must be on Number his guard against fancying that the validity or certainty of of data his inductions is to be estimated by the number of his °“7 instances. Many who have undertaken to prove the Divine a existence by the cosmological and teleological arguments nature have made the fatal mistake of supposing that all that was of the needed was an accumulation of what they deemed ex- ~~ amples or illustrations of Divine wisdom. They have XXII —- 34

mental and derivative principles, have to be exhibited in their natural organic connexion. This can only be done aright by right methods, and only by a variety of methods. No one-sided process can be appropriate or sufficient. The method must conform to the nature of the matter dealt with and to the end that has to be attained. Theo- logy includes a variety of sciences or disciplines, and these differ so greatly in character that they plainly cannot be studied aright if studied precisely in the same way. Some of them are more allied to criticism, others to history, and others again to philosophy. In some deduction can mani- festly have little place, while in others there is no obvious reason why it should not be largely uscd. There is no kind of science which, with its special processes, may not be called on to contribute to some department of theology.

266

apprehend that the essential question at issue is not, What or how many appearances of order and of adaptation may be traced in the various provinces of nature? but, Do such appearances im any case warrant an inference to a super- natural intelligence and purpose? In like manner many dogmatic theologians have seemed to think that in order to establish a doctrine it was enough to cite a number of texts in its favour. Often their doctrines would be more easily believed if their texts were fewer. Often in

the Westminster Confession, for example, where the doctrine causes no difficulty, the texts cited in connexion therewith are quite inadmissible as proofs. Induction requires the strictest regard to relevancy. Whether the data for the proof of general truths in theology must be many or may be few will largely depend, as in physical and mental science, on the nature of the truths. When Newton had

TAH OLOGY

investigation and comprehensive and minute historical knowledge. Given, on the other hand, the Christian ideas of God and of man, and the fundamental relation between God and man cannot be otherwise conceived by enlightened reason and conscience than as one of salvation through faith and not by works. ‘True, as all physical nature obeys the law of gravitation, so all Scripture and spiritual experience testify to the power of the principle of faith; but then, also, as the decisive proof of the former lies in the thorough elucidation of any phenomenon which ex- emplifies it, not in the collection of numerous illustrative phenomena, so the decisive proof of the latter lies in an adequate analysis of any portion or form of the life of genuine faith, not in the accumulation of examples of faith drawn from the Scriptures or other records.

The two methods of induction to which reference has Histo-

just been made-—the historical and the thetical—are to Tical and be carefully distinguished but not absolutely separated, a and still less exhibited as antagonistic. Both have specific…

made out that the law of gravitation explained a single fact, applied to the moon, no person who fully compre-

hended his demonstration could seriously doubt either of tion

the certainty or of the universality of the law. It was a case of a vast intellectual conquest achieved by one decisive victory. What remained was merely to take possession of what had been won, and to explain certain apparent anomalies. On the other hand, when Mr Darwin published his Origin of Species, he had already accumu- lated, with amazing industry and

ingenuity, and through the uninterrupted investigations of many years, a multi- tude of observations and considerations in support of the general propositions therein enunciated as laws of bio- logical evolution. Of similar observations and considera- tions there has since been an enormous increase. Yet the so-called Darwinian laws are still under discussion. Why has their proof or disproof been so different a process from that of the establishment of the law of gravitation ? Largely because they are in themselves so different in nature. Laws of evolution can only be reached through the minute investigation of a far greater number of changes and appearances than laws of persistence. The discovery of truths of becoming may not be a more difficult but it is certainly a more delicate and complex process than the discovery of truths of being. Now this distinction not only emerges in theology but pervades it. In some de- partments of theology the laws to be discovered are laws of evolution, while in others they are laws of existence. Hence the method to be followed in the former must be predominantly chronological and genetic, in the latter predominantly analytic and synthetic. For example, in Biblical theology and comparative theology the inductive process must be of the kind appropriate in historical inves- tigation, whereas in natural theology and Christian dog- matics it must be of the kind appropriate in systematic investigations into which considerations of time, place, and circumstance do not enter. The faculties of mind and processes of method implied in the complete comprehension of religion as a concrete manifestation of spirit are those which are of prime moment in the historical disciplines of theology ; the faculties of mind and processes of method involved in the clear apprehension of the truths and laws of religion in its abstract or essential nature are those chiefly requisite in the theoretical disciplines of theology ; and, speaking generally, complete comprehension of the concrete presupposes a more minute and exhaustive ac- quaintance with particulars than does a clear apprehension of the abstract. To determine with scientific precision and thoroughness, for example, what were the stages of the development of doctrine in the Bible, or even to trace with such accuracy and completeness as the data supplied by the Bible and auxiliary sources permit the growth of single important ideas, as, eg., election, holiness, atone- ment, and kingdom of God, demands laborious critical

and appropriate functions ; neither is exclusively legiti- mate or can alone accomplish the work of science. The historical method by itself can only yield history. It has done all that can in any circumstances be reasonably expected from it, when it has enabled us accurately to realize the course of the history studied, or, in other words, when it has given us a correct reflexion of the history. If, not content therewith, we would further ascertain the nature and laws of the factors which formed the history we must supplement the historical with the thetical method. The historical method leads only to history, and in no form or province is history science. Science even of history, or of any department of history, cannot be reached simply by the historical method, but further requires recourse to the processes of positive science. Comparative theology, Biblical theology, and the history of Christian doctrines are most valuable theological dis- ciplines, but, inasmuch as their methods are purely histor- ical, their results are also purely historical, and they are not, rigidly speaking, sciences, but only sections of the history of religion, The tendency to substitute history for science, and the historical method for the scientific method, is prevalent in the present day in theology, as well as in ethics and jurisprudence, social philosophy and political economy. Obviously, however, it rests on ex- aggeration and illusion, and confounds things which ought to be distinguished. Neither history of the objects of a science, nor history of the ideas or doctrines of a science, is science, and the historical method of itself can only give us in connexion with science either or both of these forms of history. It is, therefore, inherently absurd to suppose that the historical method can be sufficient in such theological disciplines as natural theology and Christian dogmatics. In reality, it is not directly or immediately available in the study of these disciplines at all, and that just because it does not directly or immediately yield theory, doctrine, science. Only he who knows both the history of the objects and the history of the ideas of a science, and especially of a psychological, social, or religious science, can be expected to advance the science. In the sphere of religion, as in every other sphere, to confound history with science is to eliminate and destroy science ; but in no sphere is knowledge of history more a condition of the attainment of science, and historical research, properly conducted, more serviceable to scientific investigation, than in that -of religion. To the historical method we owe, not only the historical disciplines of theology, but also in a considerable measure the recent progress of its positive or

theoretical disciplines. It can never, however, be, as some fanatical disciples of the historical school would have us to suppose, the method of these last.

omplex

mand

‘The de-

; a

| lement ndis- ensable,

THEOLOG Y

The inductions of theology, even in its systematic or

oblems non-historical departments, often require to be very careful

and comprehensive in order to be conclusive. Theories or

- doctrines like the Christian dogmas of the Trinity, incar-

nation, and atonement were only arrived at through the labours and controversies of many generations of theolo- gians. It could not be otherwise. These dogmas, simple as they may seem to a superficial glance and untrained eye, are in reality very complex organisms of thought, only capable of being formed by a long process of evolution. They are theories inclusive of many theorems. They com- prehend a number of directly constitutive propositions and a still greater number of propositions subordinate and subsidiary to these. Every proposition which they involve should be the expression of real and relevant facts. As wholes they ought to combine a multitude of particulars of different kinds, and even of kinds the harmony of which is far from obvious and needs confirmation. Whoever intelligently accepts any one of these dogmas must, by necessary implication, reject a host of hypotheses regarding its subject, as either inadequate or positively erroneous. Inasmuch as they are not consistent with or are contrary to the dogma, he is logically bound to repudiate them, and yet he is only logically entitled to do so if his proof of the dogma have been

so comprehensive and complete as to include their separate and collective refutation. The establishment of the whole truth is only possible through the disproof of all the opposing errors. How the inductive method is applied in theology, however, will be better understood by the examination of a particular exemplifica- tion of it than by a general description ; and, perhaps, as regards at least form, a more careful or elaborate exempli- fication could hardly be pointed out than that exhibited in Dr Crawford's treatise on the atonement. An examination of it will show how very complex in reality may be a doctrine which is very simple inappearance, and how com- prehensive, therefore, must be the inductive procedure necessary to establish it and to warrant the rejection of the hypotheses which must seem to one who accepts it to err by excess or defect or to be absolutely false.

The inductions of theology, like those of other sciences, are seldom or never mere or pure inductions. They would be useless if they were. The examples of pure induction given in treatises on logic may serve their purpose, the illustration of the nature of ratiocination, but they are not reasonings of a kind which can increase positive know- ledge. The abstraction of induction from deduction may be needed to exhibit its distinctive formal character, but it is fatal to its practical efficiency. In all reasoning meant to increase our knowledge of objects, induction must receive from deduction some measure of assistance and guidance. This certainly holds true in theology. In regard to the doctrine of the Trinity, for example, the most difficult questions involved turn largely on the signi- fication and application of the terms employed in its ex- pression. These terms must be somehow defined, and definitions once introduced cannot fail to be used to some extent as principles of deduction. They are often largely so used by those who are quite unconscious of making any use of them, and who have no suspicion that the course and character of their reasonings are modified by them. Definitions often secretly introduce a great amount of hypothesis and deduction into reasonings imagined to be exclusively inductive. Further, principles of deduction are directly and explicitly introduced. The truth of the catholic doctrine, or indeed of any doctrine, of the atone- ment, for example, cannot be proved purely by induction. Tt is necessary to start with some assumption as to the authority of the Scriptures, or at least as to the authority of those whose teaching is contained in the Scriptures.

That assumption itself should, it is true, be proved by a process of apologetical and critical reasoning which is in the main inductive. It cannot, however, any more than the doctrine of atonement, be proved by a purely or ex- clusively inductive process, 7.e., without some co-operation or participation of deduction; and, once proved, it becomes a principle of which a deductive use is made. Every parti- cular statement of Scripture is read and interpreted in the light of it. So far as this is the case, deduction underlies all the inductions of doctrine based on the statements of Scripture. Of course, the dogmatic theologian, in so far as he founds on Scripture, is bound not to presuppose more than he is prepared to prove as a Christian apologist or Biblical critic and interpreter. The assumptions made in systematic theology ought to be the firmly ascertained results of its subsidiary sciences. And the less assumed the better, as the relevancy of the reasoning employed will be so much the more widely acknowledged. Every addi- tional assumption diminishes the number of persons who will grant the principles on which the argumentation pro- ceeds.. When, for instance, a doctrine like plenary inspira- tion is assumed as the basis of an argument for the atone- ment, the number of persons who can be benefited by the argument must be few. Those who will grant plenary inspiration are not likely to require to be convinced of the truth of the ordinary doctrine of the atonement ; they are almost certain to be already convinced. On the other hand, a man may have loose or vague views of inspiration, and yet it may be possible to satisfy him that the doctrine of the atonement is well founded. The proof of the

‘doctrine of the atonement may receive support and con-

firmation from the proof of the doctrine of plenary inspira- tion, but ought not to be made dependent on it.

Scientific method has not only to ascertain the facts and Systema- data of science, and to discover its laws, but also to dis- tization.

tribute and co-ordinate its contents. And this last is. like- wise an important function. Science is system. To exclude system from science is to suppress and destroy science. The spirit of system is in itself nothing more than the

spirit of order and unity. Without unity and order—that is, without system—there is no science ; instead of it there can be only confused ideas, isolated opinions. It is absurd to condemn either system or the spirit of system in theology or any other science. To systematize is an intellectual necessity; to systematize aright is a happy achievement and an immense boon; it is merely systematizing erroneously which is evil. Theology, by professing to be a science, pledges itself to systematize in a scientific manner. By claiming to be the science of religion it undertakes to exhibit the truths of religion in their proper relationship to one another, in their organic unity and essential interdependence. Thus to proceed is necessary to it, not only as a consequence, but also as a means of the development of its constituent dogmas, for no doctrine can be truly and fully evolved in isolation, but only in connexion with kindred doctrines and through the general growth of the science or system to which it belongs. Increase of insight into any one truth brings with it clearer views of all contiguous and related truths, and the collec- tive light thus gained illumines each particular to which it extends. To apprehend more distinctly the relations between either facts or theories is to understand better the facts or theories themselves. To comprehend any single doctrine aright we must study, not merely its special data, but those of allied doctrines, trace its connexions with those doctrines, and view both it and them as parts of an organic and harmonious whole. Hence the endeavour to systematize the contents of science should not merely follow the formation of its separate doctrines, but likewise accompany and participate in the process of their forma-

Abuse of

system.

Requi- sites of a true theo- logical

system.

tion. Wisely conducted systematization is entitled to be deemed an aid to discovery. It reveals where exploration is needed, and indicates the directions in which research will be successful. It is the highest form and

efiort of synthetic thought, and synthesis is a not less necessary and fruitful operation in scientific method than analysis. Unfortunately it cannot be denied that there has been a vast amount of erroneous systematizing in theology, and that it has done a vast amount of harm. Doubtless much of the aversion felt and expressed to system in theology is to be traced to the imperfect, artificial, false character of many theological systems. Instead of exhibiting religious truths in their real significance and interdependence, theo- logical systems have often disguised and disfigured, cramped and contorted these truths, or even ignored and rejected them. How, then, isa true and appropriate system to be distinguished from one which is false and imperfect? In various respects, which can here be merely mentioned. Thus, first, a true system is natural and not artificial. In equivalent terms, it is directly derived from the character of the matter of which it treats, and not arbitrarily ini- posed on that matter from without. Every system of thought, whether true or false, must, of course, be the product of intellect, but no true system is a mere inven- tion of intellect, a mere subjective creation interposed between the mind and things; it is, on the contrary, a representation of the real natures and relations of things. The human intellect can only construct a true system by finding in and among facts the connexions and harmonies which are actually there. But todo this may require more labour than is agreeable, or may contravene some cherished prejudice, or may not be recognized to be the sole legiti- mate procedure, and so it may devise, instead, a formula or scheme of thought suggested by some idea drawn from an extraneous source, force that scheme or formula upon things to which it is inappropriate, and so construct a sys- tem which is artificial and erroneous. Most sciences have suffered from artificial systematization of this kind, but probably none nearly so much as theology. Metaphysical philosophy has always sought to shape and modify religious and even distinctively Scriptural truths according to its own ideas, methods, and dogmas. Paul and John have often been merely the masks through which Plato and Aristotle have taught. Hegelian divines have passed all religious beliefs, all Scriptural doctrines, through the dia- lectic devised by their master, and, whatever those beliefs and doctrines may have been before subjection to the operation of that wonder-working machine, they have always come out ground into Hegelian notions. Juris- prudence exerted a similar influence, owing to its having been the only science which was studied with zeal and success in the Latin world when theology began

to be independently cultivated by the Latin Church. The Latin mind was so possessed by juristic or forensic ideas that the Latin fathers could not avoid looking at the gospel through them. This way of viewing it is still familiar. The so- called federal school of theology, long and widely influen- tial, exhibited the whole system of religious truth accord- ing to the analogy of a covenant,—a succession of cove- nants between God and man,—in other words, according to a conception which is essentially juristic and political, not intrinsically and properly religious. The making of a metaphor in this manner the basis of an entire system of theology is far from uncommon. ‘Thus, because sin may be likened to disease or to darkness or to death, and holi- ness to health or light or life, not a few would conceive of all religious truth according to these similitudes, and do violence to the reality when it does not easily adapt itself to the moulds which they have chosen for it. Dr Chalmers, for instance, distributed all systematic theology

into a study of the disease and a study of the remedy, and treated the doctrine of the Trinity merely as an appendix. At present, owing to the dominancy of physical science, there is a strong temptation to work upon spiritual facts with physical categories, and even to identify, 2.e., to con- found, the spiritual with the physical. Hence we hear of natural law, in the sense of mechanical or biological law, in the spiritual world.

Secondly, in a true system of theology the material and formal constituents of knowledge will be duly combined, but not in a false system. No true system of theology can be constructed simply by logical deduction from abstract conceptions, from a prior assumptions, from self-evident axioms. Mere reasoning from data so insufficient as these may be made plausible and imposing by being thrown into syllogistic, dialectic, or mathematical shapes, but it cannot be made truly profitable and productive. When the Wolfians had presented theology in the semblance of geometry, they had merely succeeded in dressing it in masquerade and binding it with fetters. Reason can only work effectively in theology when it is in possession of a large and close acquaintance with Divine things and acts harmoniously with the whole spiritual nature. On the other hand, without the application of logical reflexion to the truth implicitly contained in the sources of religious

knowledge, without the help of definition, induction, deduction, and all the processes involved in analysis, generalization, judgment, and reasoning, we never could reach a scientific system at all. Such a system is not simply an aggregation or accumulation of the data and con- stituents of religion, but the product of all the activities and forms of thought which give to the contents of re- ligious experience the order and organization which theo- logy, as science, demands.

Thirdly, a true system is one in which unity is the result of the conciliation of all relevant principles, even although they may be apparently antagonistic, while a false system is one which bases itself on some particular principle or idea to the exclusion of others, also legitimate. In a true system unity is produced by harmonizing differ- ences ; ina false system it is produced by ignoring differ- ences. A true system of theology is one which grows out of the struggle of opposing elements and recognizes the validity and significance of all religious truth. It is not, for example, so based on Divine sovereignty that injustice is done to human liberty, or so based on free will that God's agency is largely ignored, but it assigns to both Divine efficiency and human action their proper place, and does so, not merely by maintaining the truth of both, but also by exhibiting their relationship and harmony.

Fourthly, in a true system all the members are not merely included, connected, and classified,—they are also unified through reference to a centre. A true system must be a unity of members pervaded by a common life. In its remotest members must be traceable the pulsations of its heart. Only of late have theologians begun clearly to recognize that this characteristic of a true organic system must be taken into account in the formation of their science. Long after they were fully alive to the importance of treating of each head of doctrine or article of faith, each separate theological locus, they felt hardly any interest as to how the various doctrines, articles, or loci were to be connected. They were often content to take the order of arrangement from some external source, some creed, confession, or catechism. It was a step in advance when, although still arranging the dogmas merely in a series, they endeavoured to give each dogma its place, on the ground of its natural] and intrinsic relationship to

other dogmas. Theologians have, indeed, differed much as to what is the proper sertatim order. One, for example,

Specu- lative method in theo- logy,

iit EOL OG Y

has begun with the nature and state of man, a second with the being and character of God, a third with the Divine authority of the Scriptures, and a fourth has followed the order of the Divine dispensations. Yet there need be no doubt that there is such an order, one in which every dogma is exactly where it ought to be. This order, it may also be safely affirmed, can only be one of advance from the simpler to the more complex. An order in which each dogma has before it only its natural antecedents, and after it only its natural consequents, must be one of con- tinuously increasing complexity. The spirit of order and of system cannot rest, however, in the series. It must classify as well as connect the doctrines. This also may be accomplished in various ways, and even when there is general agreement as to whiat are the natural groups, there may be considerable difference of opinion as to their delim- itation. But the most perfect distribution by classifica- tion, if unsupplemented, must be unsatisfactory. A still higher kind of unity has to be attained. It is that of the only unity which is truly organic. It is that of co- ordina- tion and correlation through a single central principle. An intellectual system, a system of science or doctrine, can only have this unity, and be in consequence a true system, when all its particular truths and various departments or divisions of truth are connected with one another and combined into a whole by reference to a common and central truth. tion of systematizing has now begun to be felt among theologians, and hence in several modern systems of Christian dogmatics the doctrines are not merely distri- buted into groups, but an attempt is also made to find a centre for the whole system in a single pervasive idea. Such a centre Rothe, for example, finds in the religious consciousness, a consciousness of sin and of grace; Kahnis in the doctrine of the Trinity; and Thomasius and H. B. Smith in Christ Himself, His person and work. So far as Christian theology is concerned, the last of these views is doubtless correct. Christian theology, like Christianity itself, must be Christocentric. All its doctrines either directly and immediately relate to Christ’s manifestation of God and

redemption of man, or are the antecedents and consequents of those which do. To Christ the entire system owes its distinctive character. For general theo- logy, on the other hand, the central and vital idea can be no other than that of religion itself. It must obviously be one derived from the domain of the science itself, and indeed from the essential nature of the object of the science. As it would be an error to seek the principles of biology elsewhere than in “life,” or of psychology else- where than in “mind,” so must it be to seek the principles of theology elsewhere than in “religion.” Theology is the science of religion, and in the true idea of religion should be found the central and constitutive principle of the general system of theology. That it can be found therein will appear as we proceed.

Must the work of method in theology end, however, even with the formation of a system which answers to the requirements just indicated? Is there no still higher procedure or application of theological method legitimate ? This is to ask if there be any place for a speculative method in theology, aud if speculative theology rest on any solid basis.

The history of theology might, perhaps, suffice of itself to show, on the one hand, that speculation has a large and legitimate place in the sphere of theology, and, on the other hand, that its place is one the limits of which are difficult to fix or keep within. Christian theology was initiated by Gnostic speculation, grandly reasonable in aiming at the exhibition of Christianity as the absolute truth and absolute religion, but otherwise wildly extra-

The necessity of conforming to this condi-

vagant. An Origen and an Augustine owed largely to speculativeness both their successes and their failures. The defects of scholasticism were due more to misdirection of the reflective understanding than of the speculative reason, and it was especially the speculative and the mystic divines of the Middle Age who opened up the way to modern thought and modern theology. Men like Nicholas of Cusa, Bruno, Telesio, and Campanella, looking from the heights of speculation, saw some aspects of religious truth which the Reformers, standing on lower if safer and less cloudy ground, overlooked. A Descartes and a Spinoza, into whatever errors they ay have

fallen, certainly did much, and in a directly speculative manner, to enlarge and advance the philosophy of religion. Kant supposed that, by his critical researches into the nature and limits of knowledge, he had made an end of speculative theology and done what would effectually deter reason from specu- lative adventures. It soon became apparent that his expectations had been doomed to disappointment, that in reality he had excited speculative reason to extraordinary activity and even audacity, and inaugurated an era of theology far more speculative than any which had preceded it. The great speculative movement in philosophy headed by Fichte, Schelling, Hegel, Baader, Krause, and others passed on immediately into the sphere of theology, its leaders themselves proceeding to apply their principles and methods to the explanation of the doctrines and phases of religion. Theologians by profession soon followed in their footsteps. Daub and Marheinecke constructed systems of Protestant dogmatics by means of Hegel's dialectic. Strauss, Baur, and their followers reached by the same method negative and antichristian results, bringing out the contradictions between the doctrines of the church and the speculative truths to which it was held that they should give place. Many theological systems of an almost exclusively speculative character have since appeared in Germany. Weisse's Philosophische Dogmatik and Rothe's Theologische Ethik are good typical instances. And, while not so predominant, the speculative use of reason is yet conspicuous in the treatises on Christian dogniatics of Dorner, Martensen, Schéberlein, Hofmann, Liebner, Biedermann, and others. In the department of philo- sophy of religion a speculative procedure is not less fre- quently followed, either as alone appropriate or as a necessary supplement to the genetic and historic method. Rosmini, Gioberti, and Mamiani inaugurated in Italy a speculative theology second only to that of Germany. Contemporary French theological literature can boast of at least one work displaying real speculative power,—the Philosophie de la LInberté of M. Secrétan. In America Hickok, Bushnell, and Mulford may be named as having shown confidence in the competency of speculative reason in the spiritual sphere. In Britain Principal Caird has argued in favour of a speculative procedure in theology with rare skill in his Jntroduction to the Philosophy of fteligion. On the whole, however, both in America and Britain, the speculative method has received little recogni- tion from theologians. But this, of course, may be held to be partly cause

and partly effect of the want of life and originality, of thoroughness and truthfulness, of ordinary American and British systematic theology.

Is there, then, room and need in theology for the speculative method? The answer must depend on what is meant by speculative method. There are kinds of so- called speculation which are plainly illegitimate and in- applicable. Thus, some have represented speculative theo- logy as part of a philosophy of which the whole system is deduced in a purely and strictly logical manner from an a priort principle, idea, or datum. On this view the specu- lative thinker somehow apprehends an absolute first of

thought or being, or both, and then from this primary and necessary datum evolves syllogistically or dialectically a whole philosophy, which includes a whole theology. Such speculation may be safely pronounced futile and delusive. It can never reasonably vindicate its choice of a starting- point, for the absolute first of existence and thought can only be that to which the worlds of fact and experience, of matter and of mind, refer us as their ultimate explana- tion. It ascribes an extravagant power to mere formal thinking. It is only consistent with exclusive idealism and exclusive rationalism, both justly discredited species of philosophy. It makes theology wholly dependent on a philosophy which must be false, since pure reason cannot, as it assumes, spin out of its own essence or out of any single datum the whole system of truth.

There is, however, a theology which claims to be at once

Theo- speculative and independent of philosophy. Such was the logical theology which Rothe sought to elaborate in his Theological Zee of wyhics. In the “Introduction” to that work he has fully

explained his method. It is, as there represented, the very same method with that of speculative philosophy, but it starts from a diffcrent point,—not from pure self-conscious- ness, but from the religious self-consciousness or God- con- sciousness. Its primary datum is, according to Rothe, as immediately

certain as that of speculative philosophy, the pious man being just as directly sure of God as the natural man is of his own self. Out of this datum it must evolve all its conclusions by an inward logical necessity, and construct an entire theological system of such a nature that every single thought implicitly supposes the whole. Speculative theology thus conceived of needs but a single fact, the datum from which it starts, and that fact must be a self-evident one, given immediately in and by con- sciousness ; all the rest is a succession of inferences de- ductively obtained. The facts of religion presented in nature, history, and Scripture not only need not but ought not to be taken into account by it, although at the close of its labours its success must be tested by the con- formity or nonconformity of its results with those facts.

“This system of a priori thought,” says Rothe, ‘‘to be success- ful as a speculation, must be an absolutely corresponding and constant image of the reality; but the speculative process itself takes no thought whether thcre be such a reality existing, or how the ideas which it constructs are related toit; but, without looking either to the right hand or to the left, it follows only the course of logical necessity, until it has accomplished the whole circle of its ideas, and constructs a complete system. Then first the specu- lative thinker looks out of himself, in order to compare the system of thought which he has indcpendently constructed with the objective reality, and to assure himself of his correctness by such a comparison; but in so doing he is slipping out of the region of speculative into that of reflective thinking. The necessity of such a verification, indeed, he acknowledges unconditionally, but he dis- tinguishes clearly between the speculation itself and that reflective critical process by which alone such a verification can be realized. With reference to the empirical reality around him, he acknowledges that his speculation is incorrect if his system of thought is not there reproduced, but he still persists that he has to complete his speculative labour without any direct reference to it. He concludes rather, from a clear want of correspondency, that he has speculated incorrectly, and can look for his error in nothing else than in his departure from a strict adherence to the laws of logic. Forthwith, then, he destroys his laboriously constructed system; but desire again proceed to construct another, he must proceed in the very samc manner as before, ¢.¢., by looking solely into his own thoughts, as though there were no world around him.”

Rothe, it will be observed, cannot be charged with hav- ing made theology dependent on philosophy. He repre- sented theological speculation and philosophical speculation as starting from different data, as running parallel to each other, and so as throughout distinct. But this was to avoid one extreme by falling into another. It was virtu- ally to deny the unity of thought, and to assume an in- credible dualism in the universe of speculation. A theo- logy absolutely separated from philosophy must be even

more unsatisfactory than one wholly dependent on it. Then, the method itself proceeds on assumptions unsup- ported by evidence, yct far from self-evident. It assumes, for instance, that a system of ideas generated @ priori will be a counterpart of reality, although it is neither incon- ceivable nor improbable that the characteristics of real existence may be incapable of being determined by the mere logic of necessary thought. Reason should not thus be credited with the extraordinary power of comprehend- ing reality without requiring to apprehend and study it. Another assumption is, that a complete and self-consistent system can only be reached by an exclusively a priore procedure, whereas it is far more likely that such a system will only be attained by a combination of different pro- ecsses. Again, the primary datum of theological specula- tion as understood by Rothe—the idea of God—is assumed to be immediately given and immediately certain. But the idea of God is not immediately given or immediately certain. ‘The piety which chooses to affirm so is a piety capricious in its affirmations ; the speculation which starts from such a foundation starts from an assumption easily shown by psychology and history to be eryoneous. Rothe went even farther astray. He represented not only the bare consciousness of God but the Christian, yea, the evangelical God-consciousness, as a simple and primary datum of consciousness. This was utterly arbitrary. It was to treat as an original apprehension what is indubit- ably an acquired experience. No a priori system—no properly deductive system—can be reasonably imagined to have such a starting-point. For these and other reasons, theological speculation of the kind advocated by Rothe may be rejected.

Still another species of theological speculation, however, The has been attempted and commended,—one which seems Schrijt- more modest, and claims to be more distinctively Christian. pe a It is the method advocated and exemplified in the Schrift- —_— beweis of Von Hofmann. He, instead of starting like Rothe with the religious consciousness, chose to start from a real concrete fact, what he calls the Christianity of the Christian,—a Christianity which he supposes to have acquired in the Christian a separate standing of its own, in virtue of which, and independently even of Scripture,

it is self-evident certain truth sustained and authenticated by the Spirit of God. From this fact or experience, expressed in its simplest and most general form, as a personal re- lationship or fellowship between God and man through Jesus Christ, Hofmann would deduce the whole theological system by a process of “ thinking within ” the central fact, so as logically to evolve from it its manifold wealth of contents, and would refrain on principle from looking out- wards, and taking into account the religious facts presented by history, experience, or Scripture. Now, in this system also, speculation is in excess. Such a speculative deduc- tion of facts from facts as is contended for is impossible.

Facts are not so involved in one another that they can be evolved from one another by mere thinking, and still less so that from one fact a whole system of facts can be thus evolved. From a single bone, indeed, of an animal which he has never seen or heard of a naturalist may in thought correctly construct the whole skeleton, but not by think- ing‘ within or from the one fact before him, but by making use of all the knowledge he has acquired of the structure of animals, of the relations of bones to bones. Dr Hofmann himself was quite unable to carry out the method he contended for. His so-called speculative argu ments are mere semblances of what they profess to be. Instead of the contents of his system being really “de- rived” from the simplest expression of the fact of Chris- tianity, new propositions are constantly borrowed from the known contents of Christianity, and added from without

PrHaoOnL OG Y 271 to the simplest expression, in order to help out the unfold- | cannot, indeed, begin with it or confine itself to it,—cannot and as a ing of the system. Further, in Hofmann’s system of | start with some single immediately certain religious fact, supple- speculation, as in that of Rothe, we are asked to start | and then by mere force of logic evolve therefrom a whole eee c : é cauansis . a8 induc- from an assumption which is not, and cannot be, justi- | theological system. Its data are all real facts of religion, sion.

Specu- lation neces-

fied—the assumption that Christianity in the Christian is independent of its objective grounds. Surely every ex- perience may reasonably be called upon

to produce evi- dence of its legitimacy and validity; and, if so called upon, how can it avoid referring to its grounds? It is only by an examination of the grounds of an experience that we can know whether it is an experience of reality or a form or effect of illusion. The fact from which we are told by Hofmann that we must deduce all other facts is only itself intelligible in the light of many of these facts, and even of the Christian system as a whole; it is a fact which has many conditions, and the right understanding of it requires its being viewed under its various conditions, not as ab- stracted from and independent of them.

In the forms indicated, then, speculation has failed to make good its claim to participate in the formation and development of theology. Does it follow that its claim is

and these it must deal with, in the first place, mainly by observation and induction. But observation and induction will not always alone lead toa satisfactory result. Obser- vation is confined to experience, which gives only the par- ticular. Induction, in so far as it effects a transition from the particular to the general, already involves the activity of speculative reason ; it makes discoveries only when guided by theory; it can never of itself reach ultimate truth ; and it is manifestly not its function to raise coherent comprehensive systems on their proper construc- tive principles. Then, the theologian who renounces speculation must deal most inefficiently with the chief ideas and doctrines of his science. Consider the greatest idea of all— the idea of God. Mere observation and in- duction do not yield the idea. Exclusively applied, they cannot take us beyond the contingent and conditioned, cannot take us beyond atheism and secularism. Waive,

a. a wholly unfounded? By no means. Speculation in the | however, this objection, and grant that the idea of God tematiz- forms described pretends to an independence of reality and | may be given, say, through revelation. What sort of idea ation; a, creative power for which there is no warrant in reason or | must it be in the mind of the theologian who refuses to

confirmation in fact. Hence the futility of such specula- tion is no disproof of the utility of a speculation which will fully recognize reality and directly endeavour to elucidate it. Speculation of this latter kind seems to be a necessary condition of true systematization and a neces- sary supplement to

induction and to all the special methods of particular sciences. In a true philosophy, for instance, science and speculation must necessarily be combined. So far from claiming independence of the sciences, a true philosophy will base itself upon them, and seek to rise above them by means of them. It is only thus that it can hope to reach the ultimate universal and real principle of knowledge and being, without which there can be no rest for reason or unity in the universe. But, having ascended by an analytic and inductive course to the unity of an all-comprehensive ultimate principle, philosophy must en- deavour to descend from it in a synthetic and deductive manner, so as to exhibit the whole organism of existence, or to determine how the many laws of science and the many facts of experience are connected with the absolute in being and causation, and through it with one another. It is conceivable that the descent should be accomplished in various ways, and Plato and Plotinus, Descartes and Spinoza, Fichte, Schelling, Hegel, Krause, Gioberti, and others have attempted it each in a way of his own; but two things are obvious, namely, that philosophy cannot consistently decline the task, and that any method it may adopt in trying to perform it must be one essentially speculative. An inductive and analytic method is clearly inapplicable, for the highest and last results of induction and analysis are just what are to be elucidated through being viewed in relation to the one supreme truth or fact. And among the data with which philosophy must thus synthetically or speculatively deal are those of religion. It requires to show how what theology teaches as to God's nature and operations comports with what itself affirms as to the absolute source and ground of existence, and this necessarily commits it to have recourse to a theologico- speculative use of reason. And to a very large use of it

speculate? Merely that of a complex of the attributes predicated of God in the Bible. Surely that is unworthy to be accounted an idea of God atall. The theologian who is in earnest with the idea of God, who would find order and light in the idea, who would think of Him as He is, Absolute Being, Harmonious Life, Infinite Personality, Perfect Spirit, Ultimate and only Complete Explanation of the Universe, must assuredly speculate, and speculate freely and largely, although he ought also to do so humbly and reverently. Even if he would maintain that we cannot have a knowledge of God as He is—that we must renounce the hope of a speculative knowledge

of Him, and be con- tent with a merely regulative knowledge,—he will find that he needs, as Kant, Hamilton, Mansel, and Spencer have practically so fully acknowledged, speculation, and much speculation, to support his thesis. The mind is not necessarily relieved from the duty of exercising specula- tive thought on the nature of God by receiving a special revelation regarding God. Christianity is a proof that such revelation may only increase obligation in this re- spect. It brought with it a wondrous idea of God, one of marvellous practical efficacy, but one also which forced Christian reason into paths of speculation, which could only be formulated after lengthened and severe speculative labour, and which no intellectually or spiritually quickened soul can accept otherwise than with speculative exertion. And this may show that speculation is as legitimate and applicable within the sphere of Christianity as within that of general theology. The comprehension of Christianity requires that we penetrate to its distinctive and central principle, and view all its contents in the light of that principle. It is only so that we can hope to accomplish either a true systematization or a true elucidation of its contents. The procedure by which this is effected cannot be one of mere formal logic, of pure deduction, or strict demonstration ; it must be one which implies a constant reference to facts and inductive results ; but still it must be one which is essentially synthetic and speculative.

Theology is a unity, a whole, but a very eomplex unity, a whole Relations

of many dissimilar parts. It may be spoken of in a broad and of the general way as a seience, but not less eorreetly as a department of theo- scienees. It includes many studies or diseiplines whieh may be logical eultivated in a seientifie spirit and aecording to seientifie methods, sciences. and these stndies or diseiplines, while closely eonnected, are also

elearly distinet. They are by no means mere divisions of a speeial

seienee. Natural theology and Christian dogmatics are as distinct

from eaeh other as physics is from ehemistry or anatomy from physiology. Comparative theology and Biblieal theology are as

if, for example, theism be true; since, in this case, the absolute principle of philosophy can be no other than God Himself, and its highest task no other than to show Him to be the essence of all existence, the light of all knowledge. In this case philosophy must inevitably become in the highest stage of its development a speculative theology.

Nor can positive theology dispense with speculation. It

distinct from each other as the study of the general history of mankind is from the study of the history of England.

Hence arise a number of problems. How are the theological sciences related to the non-thcological sciences and to one another? How are they located in the vast organism of science as a whole? and how are they connected with one another so as to form a smnaller organic whole in themselves? What principles have they in common, and what tasks are proper to each? Wherein do they agree and wherein do they differ in their methods of research? These are very important questions. There cannot be an earnest and scientific study of theology where they are overlooked. It is the special task of the theological discipline called “encyclopedia of theology” to discuss and answer them,—or, in other words, to determine the boundaries of theology, to exhibit and explain its inner organization, to indicate its component parts, and to trace their relations both to one another and to the theological system asa whole. This discipline is, therefore, the appropriate scientific approach and introduction to theology and to the various theological sciences.

It is of comparatively little importance whether or not it be itself called a theological science. Strictly speaking, perhaps, it is rather a section or prolongation of that division of general philosophy which treats of the relations of the sciences. One of the tasks of philosophy is to define and distribute, classify and co-ordinate, the sciences, so as to exhibit them as parts of an har- monious cosmos or members of a well-proportioned corpus. But philosophy, when in the pursuit of its merely general ends, cannot be

expected to go into details and to concern itself with all the subdivisions and ramifications of science. It will be content to trace main lines, to appreciate leading principles, processes, and results, and, in a word, to exhibit the organic unity and variety of science as a whole. It will leave the exact and exhaustive dis- tribution and survey of any particular kind or group of sciences to those who are extensively and minutely acquainted with that kind or group of sciences. The comprehensive philosophic survey of any order or department of studies is the encyclopedia thereof. Hence there is encyclopedia of mathematics, of physics, of philo- logy, and of jurisprudence, as well as of theology. Encyclopedia of philosophy, however, comprehends all the departmental encyclo- predias of science. And this for the simple reason that philosophy is inclusive and unitive of all science. As scientia scientiarum philosophy is, as Hegel has aptly said, “ wesentlich Encyclopidie. ” Hence theological encyclopedia—the encyclopedia of the sciences conversant with religion—may reasonably be held to be essentially a prolongation, a direct continuation, of philosophy.

Theological encyclopedia has had its course determined by the general movenient of theology. The various theological disciplines required to be evolved before they could be co-ordinated. The designation “theological encyclopedia” first occurs in its current technical sense in Mursinna’s Prime Linex Encyclopadix Theologicz (1764). It was only with the publication of Schleiermacher’s Kurze Darstellung des theologischen Studiwms in 1811 that the full scientific importance of the discipline was made evident. It has since been diligently cultivated in Germany, and is at length find- ing recognition in other countries.

There are, however, serious defccts even in the latest and best expositions of it. Two of these may be noted as being so serious that, owing to their prevalence, theological encyclopedia can hardly be said to have even yet entered a truly scientific stage. One is the virtual or express identification of theology with Christian theology. All the chief theological encyclopedists of Germany—Hagenbach, Lange, Rabiger, Rothe, Von Hofmann—follow Schleiermacher in this amazingly absurd procedure. Logically the Brahmanist, Buddhist, and Mohammedan might with equal justice identify all theology with theirown. The superiority of Christianity to other religions, the uniqueness of Christianity among religions, does not alter the

nature or lessen the magnitude of the error. Every ency- clopedia of theology which confounds the general with the special so completely as to identify theology with Christian theology for- feits its title to recognition as scientific ; and almost all, even of the latest and best theological encyclopedias, do so, The other fault referred to is that, even in the latest and best of theological ency- clopedias, the constituent sciences of theology are not so co- ordinated with reference to a centre as to render apparent their organic connexions. The German encyclopedists since Schleier- macher claim, indeed, that they so distribute the various disciplines of theology as to exhibit its natural organization. But the claim is not well founded. In reality, their schemes of distribution have no real unity. They are simply arrangements of the various theo- logical disciplines in a fourfold, threefold, or twofold manner, 7.¢., for cxample, as exegetical, historical, systematic, and practical, or as historical, systematic, and practical, or as didactic and practical. But this is merely external classification. It may be faultless of its kind, but it cannot of itself yield more than a superficial and mechanical arrangement of the theological sciences. Theology, to be scientifically surveyed and distributed, must be viewed as a unity, and all its parts must be shown to be included in it, and

te i Ol OG

to have a definite place in it from its very nature and definition, as the science or philosophy of religion. Their relationship to one another must be determined by their relationship to the whole of which they are parts, to tliat science or rather philosophy which treats of religion as a whole. They can only be unified and co- ordinated in a truly organic manner by their due reference to religion, and consequently proper inclusion and location in the philosophy of religion. This necessity has as yct been only verbally acknowledged by: theological encyclopedists. !

There is an all-comprehensive science of religion,—one which Philo- It alone completely sophy of It is the one religion,

treats of religion in its unity and entirety. answers to the idea and definition of theology. general theological science, comprehends and dominates the special theological scicnces, so as to be the science of these sciences, and hence, in accordance with the true distinction between philosophy and

science, is properly called philosophy rather than science—the philosophy of religion. All philosophy is science, but all science is not philosophy. Philosophy, as distinguished from science, is general or universal as distinguished from particular or special science. This distinction is, of course, not an absolute one, but of degree—of more or less; every other distinction between them, however, is positively erroneous. The one general theological science is appropriately, therefore, termed philosophy. It is the philosophy of religion as there is a philosophy of nature and a philosophy of mind, cach inclusive of various sciences. Itis of the very nature of philosophy to be both before and after the sciences to which it relates, —to be at once their root and result, and at the same time their bond of union and source of life. And the general theology which may justly be identified with philosophy of reli- gion has undoubtedly held this relation to the special theological sciences. It preceded them, being the germ from which they evolved, the root from which they have sprung ; it has grown up along with them, permeating them as their common life ; and it also succeeds and transcends them, basing itself on them and per- fecting itsclf by means of then. It is the one generic science of the object with which it deals, and vast enough to comprehend a whole group of sciences, because its object—religion—is so rich, coinplex, and varied.

The primary task of a philosophy of religion is to ascertain and exhibit the nature of religion. Now, a general theory of religion is the natural introduction to all special religious studies and theo- logical sciences, and yet can itself only be brought to perfection through the advancement of these studies and sciences. For example, we can only adequately understand the nature of religion through study of the history of religion, and yet we cannot trace the history of religion at all unless we know generally what religion is. Again, in such works on Christian dogmatics as those of Schenkel, Kahnis, Biedermann, and Lipsius, we find a consider- able place assigned to an investigation into the general nature of religion. The investigation is manifestly not there strictly appro- priate ; its true position can only be in another and wider science. At the same time, it is undoubtedly a necessary antecedent to the investigations of Christian dogmatics, from the very fact that Christianity is a religion. On the other hand, Christianity is not only a religion, but a religion which claims to be the perfect or absolute religion ; and, clearly, if the claim be well founded,

the complete nature of religion can only be understood through that full knowledge of Christianity which Christian science may be expected to give.

From the very nature of religion the science or philosophy which treats of it as a whole must obviously be most comprehensive. Religion is a relation between a worshipping subject and a wor- shipped object. It implies both distinction and unity. Were there no distinction between the subject and the object there would be no religion, whether the self-identical unity were named God or man. Were there only distinction between them—were God and man absolutely separate from and indifferent to each other,— religion must be in this case also impossible. Religion thus supposes two factors, which are different yet related, so far distinct and so far akin; and our views of religion must depend on our views of these two factors. It involves still more. God does not

1 The best account of the history of theological encyclopedia is that given by Riabiger in his Theologik oder Encyclopidie der Theologie (1880), of which there is an English translation, with notes which considerably increase the value of the work, by the Rev. J. Macpherson (2 vols., 1884), The account in Zéckler's Handbuch der theol. Wissenschaften, i. 87-111 (1885), is also good. The fullest account of the history of attempts to classify the sciences is that of the present writer in Presby. Rev. for July 1885 and July 1886. The following may be specified as among the most useful of theological encyclopedias :—Schleicrinacher's Kurze Darstellung des theol. Studiums, Ist ed., 1810, 2d ed., 1830; Staudenmaier's Encyclopédie der theol. Wissenschaften, &c., 1834; Hagenbach's Encyclopddie u. Methodologie der theol. Wissenschaften, 10th ed., 1880; Crooks and Hurst's Encyclopedia and Methodology, on the Basis of Iagenbach, New York, 1884; Doede's Encyclopedie der Christelijke Theologie, 2d ed., 1883; Lange's Grundriss der theol. Encyclopddie, 1877; Von Hofmann's Encyclopadie der Theologie, 1879; Rothe's Theologische Encyclopédie, 1880; Drummond's Introduction to the Study of Theology; and Cave's Introduction to Theology, 1886. See also the article of Willibald Grimm, " Zur theol. Encyclopidie," in Zischr. f. wissensch. Theol., 1882, i.: and Gretillat's Exposé de Théologie Systématique, vol. i., ''Propédcutique,"

1885.

act on man by the direct manifestation of His absolute essence, nor does man know God by immediate vision. Take away the physical and moral worlds and the written word and the Incarnate Word of God—suppose, that is to say, both general and special revelation removed-———and au impassable chasm will separate man from God and all religion be destroyed. The revelation in nature and the reve- lation through particular inspiration and intervention, however, bridge over this chasm, and consequently religion is everywhere found existing in some form. But even revelation would be useless if man had not faculties to apprehend it and to avail him- self of it. The communion of man with God supposes powers of communion in man as well as in God. It can only be realized through religious faculties and processes which can be analysed and which have laws of exercise and evolution that can be traced. Further, religion has a history which shows how man has interpreted or misinterpreted the revelations made to him, what forms religion has assumed in various lands and ages, and how these forms—the religions of the world—have arisen and spread, developed and decayed, influenced one another and affected morality, eivilization, and general history. Thus religion, from its very nature or idea, requires us to treat—(1) of the object of religion (God), (2) of the subject in religion (man), and (3) of the media and process of religion, —or, in other words, (a) of the modes of Divine manifestation, (0) of the powers of human apprehension of the Divine, and © of religion itself asa kind of psychical life. All the special theological sciences deal with some of thesc themes, or some portion or portions of some of these themes, in certain aspects, but the philosophy or general science of religion deals with them all in their entirety and organic connectedness, the form appropriate to philosophy—to science which comprehends and thereby transcends special sciences.

For the philosophy of religion, as the highest discipline of theo- logy, the most uatural order to be followed in the treatment of its themes is probably that which has been indicated. It is the order which has been most commonly adopted in treatises that aimed at sys- tematic completeness. God, man, God’s manifestation of Himself to man, man’s experience of God, and the development of religions, —these are the topics, and such is,

in the main, the order of their discussion, usually found in philosophies of religion properly so ealled. This is, however, because the philosophy of meliict as a distinct discipline presupposes the results of the several special theological sciences. Theology ends as it begins, in unity ; but the unity in which it ends is very different from that in which it begins. It begins with the confused unity of common knowledge, the complex and undifferentiated germ of the theological sciences ;

either philosophy or theology. As a distinct department of philosophy, and the highest and most comprehensive theological science, it is of comparatively recent origin, and, indeed, younger than many a living individual ; but even in this latter sense the whole histories both of philosophy and of theology have been needed as the preparation and foundation for it. It could only appear in its alone adequate form when both philosophy and theology were highly developed, when both had freed theinselves from the yoke of all authority save that of truth and reason, when both had discovered their appropriate methods, when they could so combine as to do no violence to the proper nature of either—a kind of combination most difficult to accomplish. But this, as might easily be shown, was not before philosophy and theology became at once critical and speculative, or, in other words, before that great revolution of thought with which the names of Kant, Hegel, and Schleiermiacher are so gloriously associated. Only in the present century have philosophy and theology reached the stage in which they can unite and produce a philosophy of religion. And within the century many philosophies of religion have made their appear- ance, especially in Germany. Indeed, all the more eminent philo- sophers of Germany have fully recognized that a philosophy of religion is a most essential department of philosophy. That not a few of the so-called philosophies of religion produced have been very defective and erroncous is only what was to be expected. The worth of a man’s philosophy of religion cannot be greater than the worth of his philosophy and theology in general. It is impossible that the philosophy of religion of an Hegelian and a Neokantist can accord, very possible that both may be far remote from the truth. If empiricism, positivism, or materialism be true philosophy, or if authority be the foundation of religion and the standard of theo- logy, a philosophy of religion must be illegitimate and superfluous. When religion is assumed to consist merely of beliefs, emotions,

and actions which have no objective grounds, no real and rational

basis, its development can only be an object of history and of psychological analysis, and there can be no philosophy of religion, but simply a science of religions, which, seeing that it deals entirely with certain forms of mental disease and delusion, must be deemed merely a department of mental pathology. A philo- sophy essentially religious must combine with a theology essentially rational in order to yield what deserves to be called a philosophy of religion. If religion be the living apprehension and enjoyment of the truth which philosophy has for its mission to seek to coin- prehend, then, but only then, must a philosophy of religion be necessary alike to philosophy and religion.*

it ends with the unity of the clearest and deepest insight, in which We now pass to special theological disciplines which can at the Special

all distinctions are at once recognized and reconciled. This last is | utmost merely become sciences as distinguished from philosophy, theo-

the unity of that ultimate stage of theological knowledge which can | They all deal with religion, each of them treating of some particular logical alone claim to be philosophical as distinguished from scientific ; and | portion or aspect of it ; and the order and mode in which they do sciences: —

it can only be reached by those who have attained to an adequate mastery of all the sciences conversant with religion. The philo- sophical student of the whole must have studied scientifically its parts, know what is to be known about them, and make use of his knowledge in his own proper labours, The student of the parts ueeds to know only in a general way what religion is, and must follow in his studies an order of procedure determined by his lack or limitation of knowledge. The course by which the mind traverses the partial and special sciences of religion and rises to a philosophy of religion cannot be the same as that through which it unfolds a philosophy of religion itself, exhibits and confirms a religious theory of the universe, and harmonizes and elucidates all results of theo- logical research and all varieties of rcligious phenomena.

The philosophy of religion is itself, of course, special in relation to philosophy, of which it is only a department. And there may even be a special kind or form of the philosophy of religion, if that kind or form be general enough to include a natural group of theo- logical sciences aud to have regard to their collective effects. A special religion may be so significant, so important, and the subject of so many theological disciplines as to render indispensable the division alike of tle philosophy and of the sciences of religion into general and special. Christianity, as the most perfect form of religion, the fullest revelation of spiritual truth, the source and theme of a large group of scicnces, is such a religion. Hence there may be, and should be, not ouly a philosophy of religion but a philosophy of Christianity,—not only a generically religious but a specifically Christian theory of the universe. If the claims of Christianity be warranted, if in it religion and revelation were eonsummated, the philosophy of religion can only reach a satis- factory conclusion when it has passed into a philosophy of Christi- anity, or, in other words, attained such a comprehension of existence and life in relation to the person and work of Christ as is possible to the humanspirit. The philosophy of Christianity must obviously be connected with all Christian disciplincs in the same manner as

, the philosophy of religion is with all other theological disciplines. History The history of the philosophy of religion has, of course, been of philo- closcly eonjoined with the histories both of theology and of sophy of philosophy, and influenced by all the eauses which have affected religion, them. In the wide sense of religious reflexion it is as old as

so determines their relations to one another and the order of their succession. If we would rise, for example, through study of the parts or phases of religion in a sure and natural manner to a knowledge of it as a whole, we must necessarily begin with what of it is nearest and most accessible to us. But what is so is its

history. In its historical manifestation it is a phenomenon which Historical;

no one can refuse to acknowledge. The history itself, however, is not only a most extensive but a very complex phenomenon. It is external and internal, corporeal and spiritual, a history of outward events and actions, institutions and rites, and also of ideas, con- victions, and affections, What is external is

nearer and more accessible to us than what is internal, aud it is through the former that we must penetrate into the latter. They cannot be quite separated, for the external is only intelligible through the inter- nal, and the internal only attainable and verifiable through the external ; but they can be so far differentiated, and there is a history mainly of what is external in religion and another mainly of what is internal. The ordinary history of religion is mainly concerned with tracing the growth of religion in its most apparent form and institutional character. It may be divided into thrce great sections—the ethnic, Biblical, and ecclesiastical, —the history of the heathen religions, the history of the Jewish religion and of the risc of Christianity, and the history of the Christian church. acs

1 There is a laborious and impartial history of the philosophy of religion by Bernhard Piinjer, Geschichte der christlichen Religionsphilosophie, 2 vols., 1880- 83. Of this valuable work an English translation is soon to appear. Some ehapters of the history have been ably written by O. Pfleiderer in his Religions- philosophie auf geschichtlicher Grundlage, 1884, a first volume of a translation of which has been published. For a list of works ou the philosophy of religion the last edition of Hagenbach may be consulted. Here the following only can be mentioned :—Hegel, Philosophie der Religion, 2 vols., 1832; Krause, Die absolute Religionsphilosophie, 2 vols., 1835 ; Ohlert, Religionsphilosophie tn ihrer Ueberetin~ stimmung mit Vernunft, Geschichte, und Offenbarung, 1835 ; Billroth, Vorlesungen iiber Religionsphilosophie, 1837 ; Steffens, Christliche Religionsphilosophie, 2 vols., 1839; Taute, Religionsphilosophie, vom Standpunkte der Philosophie Herbaris, 2 parts, 1840-52 ; Rothe, Theologische Ethik, 3 vols., 1845 ; Weisse, Philosophische Dogmatik oder Philosophie des Christenthums, 3 vols., 1855-62; Apelt, Religions- philosophie, 1860; Stéekl, Lehrbuch der Religionsphilosophie, 2d ed., 1878 ; Lotze, Grundziige der Religionsphilosophie, 1882; Von Hartmann, Religion des Geistes, 1883; Teiehmiiller, Religionsphilosophie, 1886; Morell, Philosophy of Religion, 1849; Caird, Zntroduction to the Philosophy of Religion, 1876; Morris, Philosophy

and Christianity, 1883. MT, —-35

Psycho- logical ;

Apolo- getic ;

System- atic.

274: THREOLOe TFT

Whether history in this form, even when studied in the most accurate and thorough manner, should be called science may be doubted, as it is simply occupied with the discovery and description of the particular and concrete. It is not usual so to designate it in any of its sections. The history of religious beliefs and ideas may be as purely and properly history as that of external institu- tions and transactions. It deals, however, not only with what is internal and spiritual but also with what is abstract and general, and hence it is at least more akin to science than is common history, and its sections are often called sciences. These sections are threc in number, and correspond to the sections of the ordi- nary history. They are known as comparative theology, Biblical theology, and the history of Christian doctrine. To the last of these, symbolics may fairly claim to be a necessary supplement. They are quite distinct from a conceivably attainable knowledge of the laws of religious history, such as might be with strict propriety designatcd science of religious history, a department of science of history. Of historical science in this last sensc there is as yet extremely little. ;

Religion is a spiritual process, and its history continuously implies the affections and opcrations of mind. The historical treatment of religion, therefore, necessarily leads to its psycholog- ical treatment. ‘The history alike of religious events and actions and of religious ideas and beliefs can only be explained through a knowledge of the religious powers and processes, t.¢., of the psychological factors and states which condition and determine its development. The psychological study of religion, although it has been greatly neglected, should reach over a very large depart- ment of theology. The department may be distributed into three disciplines—the general, comparative, and special psychology of religion. The first should treat of the general religious nature of man; the sccond should discover aud compare the psychical peculi- arities to be found in the various religions; and the third should exhibit elaborately the psychology of a particular religion, as, ¢9., Biblical and Christian psychology.

The historical and psychological sciences of religion deal with religion merely as an historical and psychological phenomenon. They do not imply its truth, and can be cultivated by those who regard it as a delusion equally with those who acknowledge it to be a certainty. It is the office of apologetics to determine whether or not it is true and how far it is true. If it end not in a negative result, in agnosticism or atheism, it must prove that God reveals himself to man, and that man apprehends God. _In other words, apologetics treats of the media of revelation—alike the objective and subjective, Divine and human media—and so is the science, on the one hand, of revelation, and, on the othcr hand, of religious certitude. It is divisible into general and special, or, in equivalent terms, into theological and Christian apologetics, —the former being the scientific exhibition of the grounds of natural religion, and the latter of the grounds of the Christian religion. They are some- times combined, inasmuch as both are needed in order to establish the truth of Christianity. In Germany it has become not uncom- mon to fuse them into one under the name of fundamcntal theology, described as the science which treats of the foundation of Chris- tianity. And, undoubtedly, it is not only expedient but even necessary to treat of both as introductory and preparatory to the construction of Christian science. But the distinction between them must not, therefore, be forgotten or ignored. Theological apologetics might be irresistible although Christian apologetics were futile. Theological apologetics derives its validity from its relation to natural theology, which has an absolute value of its own, wholly independent of any other science, of Christianity, or of anything else. The alliance of theological and of Christian apologetics is perfectly legitimate; the attempt to combine them into a single science, into a single homogeneous discipline, is decidedly the reverse.

The highest stage of theological science is the methodical educa- tion and exhibition of the truth involved in religion, either as con- tents of faith or elements of life. When conversant with the faith it is dogmatics, when with the life ethics; but, of course, here again distinction is not to be confounded with separation. True faith is living faith, and true life is the life of faith. Dogmatics and ethics are so intimately related that it is not surprising that they should have been long left undifferentiated, or that a few eminent theologians should still deny that they can be properly treated apart. Theology at this stage is commonly designated systematic, although the

term is not a good one, and others, little if any better perhaps, as didactic, theoretical, positive, thetic, &c., have been suggested as substitutes. Systematic theology, like historical, psychological, and apologetic theology, is divisible into general and special, the former including natural theology and theological ethics, and the latter Christian dogmatics and Christian ethics. The identification, so common in Britain, of systematic theology with Christian dogmatics is, of course, solely due to the survival among us of prescientific thought and language in theology. _ The historical and psychological sciences of religion may be con- joined under the designation of empirical, or phenomenological, or

historical (in the widest sense); the apologetic and systematic sciences under that of didactic, thetic, speculative, or systematic (in a loose sense). This twofold division of them is the one gene- rally adopted. And as it rests on an obvious and important dis- tinction it is fully entitled to acceptance, provided it be so received as not to hide or extrude the fourfold division founded on the real moments or stages of the process of theological investigation.

There are a considerable number of disciplines not included in : the divisions indicated, yet for which the theological encyclopadist is bound to find appropriate places. The best classification of these Exegeti- is into exegetical and practical. So-called exegetical theology, cal and however, is in all its departments simply instrumental and intro- practical ductory to historical theology; and practical theology is in all its theology, departments concerned with the use and application of religious knowledge, not with its acquisition and advancement. The former is not directly occupied with religion but with the records and documents from which its history must be ascertained; the latter is art and not science.

Considering theology, then, only as science directly engaged on

religion, the following are the sciences which belong to general theology:—(1) the history of religions; (2) comparative theology; (3) psychology of religion; (4) theological apologetics; (5) natural theology ; and (6) theological ethics. Those of Christian theology are—(1) Biblical history; (2) ecclesiastical history; (8) Biblical theology; (4) history of Christian doctrine; (5) symbolics; (6) Biblical and Christian psychology; (7) Christian

apologetics; (8) Christian dogmatics; and (9) Christian ethics. The remainder of this article will be devoted to a brief indication of the nature of such of the above studies as have not already been treated of in separate articles.

The history of religions and comparative theology differ from History of each other as sacred history and Biblical theology or ecclesiastical religions history and the history of Christian doctrines differ. That they and com- should rarely be distinguished proves only that the ethnic sacred parative ‘ books have not yet been so closely studied as the Bible, and that theology. the histories of the great ethnic religions are not yet so well known as the history of Christianity. As regards both the history of religions and comparative theology, see RELIGIONS.

The general psychology of religion should analyse the religious Psycho- nature of man and trace the laws of its development. It has to logy of ascertain the principles which guide reason in the scarch after God; religion. to determine what subjective religion is, what elements it involves, i and through what stages it may pass; and to show how the under- standing and imagination, the emotions and affections, the qualities and energies of will, operate in religion and influence its character. While general psychology of religion thus treats man as framed and fitted for religion, the comparative psychology of religion treats of the psychological composition and peculiarities of the various concrete and collective manifestations of religion. It is related to the general psychology of religion as comparative psychology to general psychology. It must concern itself with the religions of the rudest peoples. It has to explain what is psycho- logically distinctive of fetichism, animal worship, naturalistic religions like the Vedic, anthropomorphic polythcisms like those of Greece and Rome, and pantheisms like Brahmanism and Bud- dhism. For example, in each of these forms of religion imagination works differently, and the comparative psychology of religion should give a complete view of the operations of imagination in the formation of the religions of humanity. So as regards all the chief intellectual principles and all the chief sentiments.

The psychological study of religion was not, as is often said, be- gun by Kant. Hume—in virtue of his Natural History of Religion, with its clear

recognition of the distinction between the causes and the reasons of religion —is much more entitled to be considered initiator in this department, but even his claim may be contested. The department is one of which there is as yet no general survey, and of which many portions have been entirely overlooked. What the ordinary psychologists—e.g., Bain, Sully, Thompson, Rabier, Fortlage, Striimpell, Volkmann, Wundt—say regarding it is very vague and meagre. The only two points which have been closely investigated are those as to the nature of religious cognition and the essence of religion, and as to both speculation has been fre- quently allowed to disturb and pervert psychological analysis. For some of the later literature on these points, see notes on article TueEIsM. Neither the general nor the comparative psychology of religion as yet exists in a separate and appropriate form. What religious psychology there is will be found chiefly in the writings of anthropologists like Bastian and Tylor, of comparative philo- logists like Max Miiller and Steinthal, of philosophers like Spencer and Renouvier, of theologians of the school of Schleiermacher, and, above all, in the histories of religions and the philosophies of religion. !

Theological apologetics is not to be confounded with natural

1 Aliiott's Psychology and Theology, Newman Smyth's Religious Feeling, Brinton's: Religious Sentiment, Happel's Anlage des Menschen zur Religion, Ulrici's Gott und Mensch, and Lesbazeille's " Bases Psychologiques de la Reli- gion" (two articles in Rev, Phil., vol. xxi., 1886) may be specially mentioned.

Cer orLloGc Y

theology, from which it is as distinct as Christian apologetics is from Christian dogmatics. It lays a foundation for natural theology, inasmuch as it vindicates religion by showing that it rests on objective spiritual truth. It presupposes a knowledge of religion as an historical and psychological phenomenon, but none of natural theology, which it, of course, leaves as a science to establish its own

problems and portions of theological ethics. Thus what has been just indicated as problem first—that as to the relation of religion and morality—has been long much discussed.? The sccond problem demands wide and close historical research ; it has been touched at a multitude of points, but only touched. With the third problem, or rather group of problems, alniost all systems of Christian ethics

doctrines. It has the following tasks to perform. (1) To show that man is capable of apprehending the divine. This requires the refutation of agnosticism and the vindication of the principles implied in religious knowledge and certitude.! (2) To prove the reality of a revelation of the Divine in physical nature, mind, and history. The results of the various sciences will thereby be shown to be data of theology. It requires the refutation of atheism, mate- rialism, positivism, and secularism, and of all principles which

have to some extent dealt ; and with the fourth and fifth problems almost all systems of moral philosophy. We now pass to Christian theology. Its historical section in- Biblical cludes, besides the histories of Isracl and the churcli (as to which and see IsRAEL and CuurcH History), Biblical theology, the history church of Christian doctrine, and Christian symbolics. history. All hermencutical studies are auxiliary to exegesis, and all Biblical Biblical exegesis leads up to that comprehensive and connected theology.

Natural theology.

logically involve these systems. (3) To exhibit the reasons for the true conception of the Divine, and to expose the arguments em- ployed in favour of false conceptions. The defence of theism, for example, must be accompanied by proof of the erroneousness and insufficiency of the polytheistic, dualistic, deistic, and pantheistic hypotheses. (4) To adduce whatever evidence may be contained in general revelation for the immortality of the soul and a future state of rewards and punishments.

Natural theology is the systematic exposition of the truths in natural or general revelation. Its data are the facts and laws of nature, as ascertained by physical, mental, and historical science. Its inductions and inferences relate to God, men, and their rela- tionship. Its appearance as a distinct

science may be dated from the publication of Raymond de Sebonde's Theologia Naturalis in 1436, although portions of it had been admirably presented by ancient philosophers, ¢.g., Socrates, Plato, Aristotle, aud Cicero. It flourished with extraordinary vigour in the latter half of the 17th and throughout the 18th century. It should endeavour to perform the following tasks. (1) To describe the nature,

character, and attributes of God, so far as they are disclosed

by the material world, mind, and history. (2) To treat of God in relation to the world and man, and of the world and man in relation to God, under which head all questions as to creation, pro- vidence, theodicée, optimism and pessimism, education of the human race, &c., will fall to be discussed from the standpoint of general revelation. (8) To determine, so far as can be done from general revelation, what man may reasonably hope for as to deliver- ance from sin and its consequences, and what he may reasonably believe as to the conditions of existence in a future world.- As to this third point the view is prevalent that the light of nature dis- closes nothing regarding man's salvation or future destiny. But does this view not arise from overlooking that the kingdom of God is within, and from falsely supposing that salvation is entrance into an external, non-spiritual heaven on conditions which, being in themsclves non-natural, cannot be naturally known? The heathen nations have certainly not supposed nature to be wholly silent and dark on the subject. In every developed ethnic religion there is a soteriology and eschatology as well as a theology. Man is no-

view of the development of Biblical ideas which it is the aim of Biblical theology to set forth. Biblical theology is not to be under- stood as meaning a theology founded on the Bible—Christian dogmatics under another name. It does not assume that the Bible is either a source or standard of truth. It docs not set forth the ideas which it exhibits as true in themselves, but only as truly in the Bible. It seeks no other truth than truth of exposition. It aims at doing no more than giving a true account of what are the religious ideas in the Bible, of how they are related as set forth in the Bible, and of what their history has been throughout the Biblical period. Its sole business is critically to ascertain and truthfully to exhibit what Scripture teaches, what each writer, even, of Scripture teaches, in a purely objective, organic,

historical manner. It cannot possibly be confounded with Christian dog- matics by any one who has the slightest notion of what it is, although the latter must in great part rest on it and derive most of its materials from it. It is the ultimate direct result and the most comprehensive and perfect product of Biblical exegesis, and related to the history of religious ideas as a part to the whole in which it is included, comparative theology preceding and the history of Christian doctrine following it. It divides into theology of the Old Testament and theology of the New Testament; and its method is one appropriate to an historical discipline, and, there- fore, chronological, genetic, analytic, and synthetic. It is a com- paratively recently constituted department of theological science, both Catholic and Protestant divines having made for ages the enormous mistake of studying Scripture—so far as their interest therein was theoretical and not practical—primarily in order to find proof of the doctrines contained in tlicir creeds and confessions, They failed to apprehend and appreciate the seemingly very simple thought that Scripture should be studied in the first instance with a single eye to find out what was really in it, and that to this end the study of it should be strictly and purely exegetical and *his- torical. J. Ph. Gabler, in his thesis De Justo Discrimine Theologiz Biblice ct Dogmaticx#, published in 1787, was the first clearly to show the true character of Biblical theology as an* essentially historical study. Since then it has been cultivated with great zeal by a host of able labourers. 4

where necessarily without hope any more than without God in the

ae The history of Christian doctrine ouly began to be treated as History of world.

a separate theological discipline in the latter part of the 18th Christian

Theo- Theological ethics differs from natural theology in that it seeks | century. Previously it was dealt with as an appendix to dog- doctrine. logical in nature, viewed as a Divine revelation, laws of spiritual life, not | matics or asa part of church history. It is not an appendix to ethics, merely religious doctrines. Its place is between moral philosophy | dogmatics, but it includes its history and contributes to lay a

and Christian ethics. It is unmistakably distinct from both, and | foundation for it. No doctrine can be either correctly understood

may be more plausibly included in natural theology than in cither. It should endeavour (1) to determine how religion and morality are distinct and how connected ; (2) to ascertain how morality has been affected and modified by the various positive ethnic religions and the various religious but non-Christian philosophies ; (3) to exhibit how the character of God, as delineated by natural theology, stands related to the moral law, the moral life, and the chief ethical end or supreme good of man ; (4) to describe the duties which the light of nature shows that man owes directly to God ; and (5) to trace how piety to God must influence personal and social virtue. Unlike moral philosophy and Christian ethics, it can hardly be said to have been yet treated as a separate discipline and prcsented as a whole. Daub and Marheineke have, indeed, written works nominally on Theological Morals, and Rothe and Von Hofmann on Theological Ethics, but in all these works it is really Christian ethics which is exhibited to us under certain speculative lights. There is, however, a very extensive literature relating to particular

1 For the literature on agnosticism, see above, p, 246 note 2.

3 For the literature of apologetics (theological and Christian), see Redford's Christian Plea against Modern Unbelief, pp. 497-533. For a list of the best works on theological apologetics and natural theology, see Cave's /ntroduction to Theology, pp. 149-161, Indications as to the history and literature of many particular questions and portions of both disciplines are given in the notes to Flint's Theism and Antitheistic Theories. One of the best sketches of the history of natural theology is that in Zéckler's Theologia Naturalis. Here it may be sufficient to mention the followine works :—Butler's Analogy; Paley's Natural Theology ; Chalmers's Natural Theology; the Bridgewater Treatises ; Thompson's Theism ; Tulloch's Theism ; M'Cosh's Method of the Divine Government ; Ulrici's Gott und die Natur, J ules Simon's Vatural Religion (Eng. tr.) ; Janet's Final Causes (Eng. tr.); Caro's Idée de Dieu, 5th ed.; Gratry's Connaissance de Dieu, 7th ed.; and Margerie's Theodicée, 3d ed,

or rightly developed where there is ignorance of its history. The history of Christian doctrine is a part of the history of Christianity, namely, the history

of Christian beliefs, as distinguished, on the one hand, from the history of Christian life and practice, and, on the other hand, from the outward history of the church. It is a part also of the history of religious thought, and_of the history of thought in general, and therefore closely connected with the history of philosophy. Its development must be admitted to be ruled by the general laws of the intellectual history of man. It may be taken, however, in a wider or narrower sense,—in the former being the history of Christian thought and belief as such, and in the latter the history ouly of dogmas strictly so called, 7, of doctrines formulated and promulgated by ecclesiastical authority, and accepted either by the whole church or by large divisions of the church. There ought perhaps to be a history of doctrines in both senses. One in the former sense has only been undertaken recently by Harnack. The method of the history of Christian doctrine must be strictly historical, and at the same time both analytic and synthetic, seeing that both the history of the separate doctrines and the general and connected evolution of the doctrines require to be traced. Its periods will coincide with those of church history, but they ought to be determined from direct examination

3 The following references may be given :—the last chapter of Janet's Za Morale; the first three chapters in Caro's Morale Sociale; many articles and reviews in Renouvier's Critique Philosophique ; Martenscn's Christian Ethics, $§ 5-14; Pfleiderer's Moral und Religion; Bradley's Ethical Studies, pp, 279- 305; and Caird's Introd. to Phil. of Rel., ch. ix.

4 For the history of Biblical theology, see Briggs's Biblical Study ; for the literature Cave, Hagenbach, Rabiger, or Zéckler; for a reference to some of the best works, see THEISM, supra, p, 239 notes 2 and 3,

Sym- bolics.

Biblical psycho- logy.

of the development of the doctrines. It is incorrect, therefore, to represent the discipline as having its gencral distribution into periods given it by church history.!

Symbolics is the historico-comparative study of the dogmatic systems of the various Christian communions, as expressed and involved in their symbolical documents. It treats of the origin, history, and contents, and relations of difference and agreement, of the various creeds and confessions of Christendom. It was pre- ccded by ‘‘polemics” and “controversial theology”—pre-scientific and anti-scientific kinds of theology. The older so-called system- atic theologies and systems of divinity consisted largely of sym- bolical matter treated in an unscientific and ungenerous spirit. Christian dogmatics will never be properly purified until Christian symbolics receives intelligent and due recognition, and has relegated to it the subjects which properly belong to it. Christian symbolics may be said to have made its appearance as a separate scientific discipline with Marheineke’s Symbolik, published in 1810. The chief reason why it appeared tlius late was the difficulty of exercis- ing in this sphere the impartiality of the true historical spirit. The arrangement of its material is determined partly by the order of succession in which the churches appeared in history and partly by the historical importance of the different churches. ‘‘ In some treatises on symbolics the symbolical system of doctrine of each church is treated separately, while in others the several doctrines of the various churches are compared together. Each of these methods has its advantages and disadvantages. Their combina- tion is requisite.””

The psychology of Christianity may be held to include Biblical ©

psychology and the psychology of the Christian life. It must be admitted, however, that the right of the former to a place among psychological sciences is doubtful. It is universally admitted that it ought to present what is taught in the Bible as to the origin, nature, faculties, states, processes, and future development of the human spirit, and also elicit the conceptions implied and _pre- supposed in the Biblical statements on these points. But if it do this in a merely historical manner, and do nothing beyond this, it must manifestly be regarded as simply a section of Biblical theology. To be entitled to be considered a separate psychologico-theological discipline it must at least also discuss the questions as to the truth of the ideas relative to the human spirit expressed and implied in Scripture, as to their accordance with the facts of mind, and their relationship to the conclusions of ordinary

scientific psychology ; and even then it may be held to be rather the result of a peculiar combination of history, apologetics, and psychology than a pro- perly psychological discipline. However this may be, the study is an exccedingly interesting one. It has had a lengthened history, for in almost every generation since the 2d century treatiscs on some of its subjects have appeared. It was inaugurated by Melito and Tertullian, obtained in the 17th and 18th centuries distinct re- cognition under the designation of " psychologia sacra" or '" psycho- logia e sacris literis collecta," and acquired tresh life and scientific form from the publication of Beck's Umriss der biblischen Seelenlehre in 1843.* '

The psychology of the Christian life isa much more comprehensive discipline than Biblical psychology, and one as to the precise place

THEOPHILUS. Nicholas Alemanni, in his notes to the first edition of the Anecdota of Procopius (see Pro- copius), published in 1623, repeatedly quotes a Life of Justinian, which he attributes to "Theophilus Abbas, preceptor Justiniani," but without telling us where he found this Life or who Theophilus was. Subsequent writers have continued to quote Theophilus from Ale- manni's notes for the facts ascribed to him in those notes, and, among others, for the name Upravda, said to have been the original name of Justinian, and other proper names of members of the family of that emperor. Mr Bryce has, since the article JusTINIAN was published, discovered in the Barberini library at Rome what appears to be the MS. of the so-called Life of Justinian used by Alemanni. It is in Latin, and purports to be an extract made by Ivan

| Among the best general histories of Christian doctrine are those of Neander, Gieseler, Hagenbach, Baur, Nitzseh, Thomasius, Harnack, Haag, Shedd, and Sheldon, There is a multitudinous literature relating to doetrine in particular periods and to partieular doctrines.

2 Sce Lumby's History of the Creeds, 1873 ; Sehaff's Creeds of Christendom, 3 vols.,4th ed., 1884; Winer's Confessions of Christendom ; and the Symbolics of Mohler, K6llner, Guericke, Oehler, Hofmann, &c.

3 The following are among the most useful books for the student of Biblieal psyebology :—Beck's Outlines of Biblicul Psychology (Eng. tr.);

Delitzsch's System of Biblical Psychology; Heard's Tripartite Nature of Man; Laidlaw's Bible Doctrine of Man; and Dickson's Baird Lecture for 1883.

theory of personal Christian experience, normal and abnormal, in

It seems doubtful whether this Theophilus Abbas, whom

and scope of which no dubiety need be felt. Its work is to elucidate Christian all the distinctively Christian phenomena both of the individual psycho- and of the collective life. As to the former it should evolve a logy,

its purity and in its perversions. As to the latter, it should explain } the spiritual expericnce of Christian society—the development of | Christian piety—in different ages, countries, and churches. For

the accomplishment of the former task it will find help and material

in religious poetry, religious biography and autobiography, and all

other expressions and records of personal Christian experience ; and

for the accomplishment of the latter in all the sources and contents

of church history, although these must be used in accordance with

the psychological purpose in view. Christian psychology thus understood is a department of theology still to form. And the

difficulties in the way of its formation must be allowed to be very

great. They will only be overcome by men in whom profound psychological science and insight are combined with a rare suscepti-

bility and richness of spiritual life.

For Christian apologetics, see APoLoGETics. For Christian dog- matics, see DOGMATIC.

Christian dogmatics and Christian ethics are the two disciplines Christian included in Christian systematic theology. They ought to be ethics, separated and cultivated apart, and yet must be recognized to be closely connected, and each the necessary complement of the other.

The former sees in Christ the truth and the way thereto; the

latter sees in Him the life and the way thereto. Christian ethics

is much the more recent discipline of the two, and it has not yet

attained the same definiteness and homogeneousness. Alike as to method and distribution there is greater indecision and confusion. Among its earlier cultivators were Daneus, Calixtus, Perkins, Ames, Colville, Mosheim, Crusius, Staéudlin, and Von Ammon. Schleiermacher may justly be regarded as the founder of modern Christian cthics. His superiority to his predecessors was due chiefly to his profounder apprehension of the nature of the problems of philosophical ethics, and to his comprehensive and spiritual concep- tion of the kingdom of God as the highest good, pervasive and regulative of every sphere of human life, industry and art, science and philosophy, family, church and state. The following may be given as a scheme of Christian ethics. I. Determination of the nature, limits, and method of the science, and of its relations to other disciplines, and especially to those which are ethical and theological. JI. Presuppositions of the science: these are—(1) the ethical idca of God as revealed in nature and in Christ ; (2) man as a moral being and in his relation to the law and revelation of God ; (8) ercation and providence as ethical systems; and (4) the king- dom of God in itsclf, in relation to creation and providence, and as the goal of moral life. III. The fundamental conceptions of the scicnce: these are—(1) the Christian ethical law; (2) the Christian conscience ; (8) the Christian ethical ideal; and (4) Christian virtue. IV. The reign of sin in the individual and society viewed in the light of Christianity. V. The origin and progress of the kingdom of God in the individual soul, and its manifestation in the virtues and graces of the Christian character. VI. The realization of the kingdom of God in the various spheres of society—the family, the church, the nation.4 (ROE)

Tomco Marnavich, a Croatian ecclesiastic (1573-1639), from a Life of Justinian by a certain Bogomil (Grace Theophilus), who is alleged to have been the instructor of Justinian, and abbot of St Alexander at Prisrend (in Macedonia), and afterwards bishop of Sardica (now Sofia, in Bulgaria), the original of which Life, in Slavonic, is stated in the Barberini MS. to exist in the Slavonic monastery of Basilian monks on Mount Athos. No such Slavonic MS. (so far as is known) has ever been discovered in Athos or elsewhere; no Slavonic MS. of the age of Justinian could possibly exist; and the contents of the Latin extract preserved at Rome are of so legendary a character as to throw the greatest doubt on the facts cited from Theophilus by Alemanni, including the name Upravda above referred to, and the Slavonic origin of Justinian.

4 The history of Christian ethies has been written by Wuttke, Christian Ethics, vol. i., but mueh better by Gass, Gesch. der christl. Ethik, 2 vols., and by Ziegler, Gesch. d. christ, Eth., 2 vols. Bestmann has written two volumes of a Gesch. d. christl. Sitte. Among well-known treatises on Christian ethics are those of De Wette, Schleiermaeher, Hirseher, Harless, Rothe, Wuttke, Sartorius, Martensen, Oettingen, Lange, Hofmann, Frank, and Dorner. Those of Wuttke, Sartorius (Doctrine of Holy Love), Harless, and Martensen have been translated into English. German literature is extremely rieh, while Freneh and English literatures are miserably poor, in this department. Wardlaw's Christian Ethics may be mentioned, but merely because it is English.

T H K—

the Roman MS. identifies with a certain Doninio, bishop of Sardica in 517 (see Marcellinus Comes, Chronicon, ad ann. 517), ever existed at all. Mr Bryce has printed this Roman MS., with his observations thereon, in the Archivio Storico of the R. Societ&' Romana di Storia Patria, 1887. THEOPHRASTUS, the successor of Aristotle in the Peripatetic school, was a native of Eresus, in Lesbos. The date of his birth is a matter of inference, and has been fixed between 373 and 368 B.c. It is said that his original name was Tyrtamus, and that the name Theo- phrastus was given him by Aristotle on account of his eloquence, but this story is quite as likely to be an after- thought suggested by the name at a later date. After receiving his

first introduction to philosophy in Lesbos fron one Leucippus or Alcippus, he proceeded to Athens, and became a member of the Platonic circle. After Plato's death he attached himself to Aristotle, and in all probability accompanied him to Stagira. The intimate friendship of Theophrastus with Callisthenes, the fellow- pupil of Alexander the Great, the mention made in his will of an estate belonging to him at Stagira, and the repeated notices of the town and its museum in the History of Plants are facts which point to this conclusion. Aristotle's affectionate confidence in his pupil and friend is proved by his making Theophrastus guardian of his children in his will, and designating him as his philosophic

successor at the Lyceum on his own removal to Chalcis. |

Eudemus of Rhodes was not without claims to this posi- tion, but the master, according to the well-known story, delicately indicated his preference by the remark that the wines of Lesbos and Rhodes were both excellent, but the Lesbian was the sweeter. Aristotle also bequeathed to Theophrastus his library and the originals of his own works. Theophrastus presided over the Peripatetic school for thirty-five years, and died in 288 B.c. Under his guidance the school flourished greatly in point of numbers, and at his death he bequeathed to it his garden with house and colonnades as a permanent seat of instruction. His popularity was also shown in the regard paid to him by Cassander and Ptolemy and by the complete failure of a charge of impiety brought against him. He was honoured with a public funeral, in which the whole people took part.

Theophrastus's philosophical relation to Aristotle and his place in the development of Peripatetic doctrine have been sketched under the head PErrpaTEtics, It remains to say a few words about his works. From the lists of the ancients it appcars that the activity of Theophrastus extended over the whole field of con- temporary knowledge. Logical, physical, biological, psychological, ethical, political, rhetorical, and metaphysicai treatises are men- tioned, most of which probably differed little from the Aristotelian treatment of the same themes, though supplementary in details. On the whole, Theophrastus seems to have developed by preference the observational and scientific side of his master, and of this character are the books and fragments that have come down to us. The most important of

these are two large botanical treatises, On the History of Plants (rep) pur@v isropias), in nine books (originally ten), and On the Causes of Plants (wep) putay airiév), in six books (originally cight). Thesc constitute the most important contribu- tion to botanical science till we come to modern times, and furnish proof of the author's extensive and careful observation combincd with a considerable critical sagacity. We also possess fragments of a History of Physics, a fragmentary treatise On Stones, a work On Sensation (rep) aic@4oews) in the same condition, certain meta- physical amopia:, which probably once formed part of a systematic treatise, and the well-known Ethical Characters (401×0l xapakriipes), containing a delineation of moral types, probably an extract or compilation by a later hand from a larger ethical work of Theo- phrastus. Various smaller scientific fragments havc been collected in the editions of J. G. Schneider (1818-21) and F. Wimmer (1886) and in Usener's Analecta Theophrastea.

THEOPHYLACT, a well-known Biblical commentator, was born most probably at Euripus, in Eubcea, about the middle of the 11th century. He became a deacon at Con- stantinople, and attained a high reputation as a scholar, as is shown by the fact that he became the tutor of

AM s BD) rafal

Constantine Porphyrogenitus, son of Michael VIL, for whom he wrote his Madea Baciuxy. About 1078 he went into Bulgaria as archbishop of Achris. In his letter he complains much of the rude manners of the Bulgarians, and he sought to be relieved of his office, but apparently without success. His death took place after 1107.

His commentaries on the Gospels, Acts, the Pauline epistles, and the Minor Prophets are founded on those of Chrysostom, but deserve the considerable place they hold in exegetical literature for their appositeness, sobriety, accuracy, and judiciousness. His other extant works include seventy-five letters and various homilies and orations and other minor pieces. A splendid edition of the whole in Greek and Latin, with a preliminary dissertation, was published in 1754-63 by J. F. B. M. de Rossi (4 vols. fol., Venice).

THEOPHYLACT of Simocatta. See vol. iv. p. 613.

THEOPOMPUS of Chios, a celebrated historian and rhetorician, was born about 378 B.c. In early youth he seems to have spent some time at Athens, along with his father, who had been exiled on account of his Laconian sympathies. Here he became a pupil of Isocrates, and rapidly made great progress in rhetoric : we are told that Tsocrates used to say that Ephorus required the spur but Theopompus the bit (Cic., Brutus, § 204). At first he appears to have composed epideictic speeches, in which he attained to such proficiency that in 352-351 he gained the prize of oratory given by Artemisia in honour of her husband, although Isocrates was himself among the com- petitors. It is said to have been the advice of his teacher that finally determined his career as an historian,—a career for which his abundant patrimony and wide knowledge of men and places (Fr. 26) had singularly fitted him. Through the influence of Alexander, he was restored to Chios about 333, and figured for some time as one of the boldest and most uncompromising leaders of the aristocratical party in his native town. After Alexander's death he was again expelled, and took refuge with Ptolemy in Egypt, where he appears to have met with a somewhat cold reception. The date of his death is unknown.

The works of Theopompus were chiefly historical, and later writers frequently cite them as authorities. They included an Epitome of Herodotus's History, the Hellenics (EAAnvixd, 'EAA nviral ioroptat), the History of Philip (:Aurmixd), and several panegyrics and hortatory addresses, the chief of which was the Letter to Alexander. The genuineness of the epitome of Herodotus has been called in question; we possess only five quotations from it, preserved by grammarians or lexicographers, and consisting only of single words. The Hedlenics was a somewhat ambitious work in 12 books, extending from 411 (where Thucydides breaks off) to 394 —the date of the battle of Cnidus. A few insignificant fragments remain, but do not suffice to give us any idea of the general character of the work. By far the most ambitious history written by Theopompus was,the @:Aurmixd. In this he narrated the history of Philip's reign (360-336) in 58 books, with frequent digressions on the names and customs of the various races and countries of which he had occasion to speak. So numerous were these digres- sions that Philip II]. of Macedon reduced the bulk of the history from 58 to 16 books by cutting out those parts which had no connexion with the achievements of the king. It was from this history that

Diodorus and Trogus Pompeius derived much of their materials. Several fragments, chiefly anecdotes and strictures of various kinds upon the character of nations and individuals, are preserved by Atheneus, Plutarch, and others. Of the Letter to Alexander we possess one or two fragments cited by Athenus, animadverting severely upon the immorality and dissipations of Harpalus. The Attack upon Plato, and the treatise On Piety, which are somctimes referred to as separate works, were perhaps only two of the many digressions in the history of Philip; some writers have doubted their authenticity.

The nature of the extant fragments fully bears out the criticisms of antiquity upon Theopompus. Their style is clear and pure, full of choice and pointed expressions, but lacking in the weight and dignity which only profound thought can supply. As we might expect in a pupil of Isocrates, he is especially careful to avoid hiatus. The artistic unity of his work suffered severely from the frequent episodes with which it was interspersed; his account of Sicily, for example, extended over several books. Another fault was his excessive fondness for romantic and incredible stories (Fr. 33, 66, 76, &c.); a collection of some of these was afterwards made and published under his name, with thie title of Oavydora

278

(Diog. Laert., i. 115). He was also severely blamed in antiquity for his censoriousness, and throughout his fragments no feature is more striking than this (Fr. 54, 65, &c.). _Onthe whole, however, he appears to have been fairlyimpartial. Philip himself he censures severely for drunkenness and immorality (Fr. 136, 178, 262, 298), while Demosthenes receives his warm praise (Fr. 239, 263). There ean be no doubt that in the Philippica the world has lost a great variety of pleasant tales and historians much valuable information

upon many difficult points of Greek history and life. See Miiller, Fragmenta Historicorum Grecorum, i. 278-333, Paris, 1885.

THEORBO. See Luts, vol. xv. p. 71.

THEOSOPHY, as its derivation implies, is a term used to denote those forms of philosophic and religious thought which claim a special insight into the Divine nature and its constitutive moments or processes. Sometimes this insight is claimed as the result of the operation of some higher faculty or some supernatural revelation to the indi- vidual; in other instances the theosophical theory is not based upon any special illumination, but is simply put forward as the deepest speculative wisdom of its author. But in any case it is characteristic of theosophy that it starts with an explication of the Divine essence, and endeavours to deduce the phenomenal universe from the play of forces within the Divine nature itself. It is thus differentiated at once from all philosophic systems which attempt to rise from an analysis of phenomena to a know- ledge, more or less adequate, of the existence and nature of God. In all such systems, God is the terminus ad quem, a direct knowledge of whom is not claimed, but who is, as it were, the hypothesis adopted, with varying degrees of certainty in different thinkers, for the explanation of the facts before them. The theosophist, on the other hand, is most at his ease when moving within the circle of the Divine essence, into which he seems to claim absolute insight. This, however, would be insufficient to distin- guish theosophy from those systems of philosophy which are sometimes called “speculative” and “absolute,” and which also in many cases proceed deductively from the idea of God. In a wide sense, the system of Hegel or the system of Spinoza may be cited as examples of what is meant. Both thinkers claim to exhibit the universe as the evolution of the Divine nature. They must believe, there- fore, that they have grasped the inmost principles of that nature: so much is involved, indeed, in the construction of an absolute system. But it is to be noted that, though there is much talk of God in such systems, the known universe—the world that now is—is nowhere transcended ; God is really no more than the principle of unity immanent in the whole. Hence, while the accusation of pantheism is frequently brought against these thinkers, the term theosophical is never used in their regard. A theosoph- ical system may also be pantheistic, in tendency if not in intention ; but the transcendent character of its Godhead definitely distinguishes it from the speculative philosophies which might otherwise seem to fall under the same defini- tion. An historical survey shows, indeed, that theosophy generally arises in connexion with religious needs, and is the expression of religious convictions or aspirations. Now the specifically religious consciousness is

not panthe- istic in any naturalistic sense ; God is rather regarded as the transcendent source of being and purity, from which the individual in his natural state is alienated and afar off. Theosophy accepts the testimony of religion that the present world lies in wickedness and imperfection, and faces the problem of speculatively accounting for this state of things from the nature of the Godhead itself. Theo- sophy is thus in some sort a mystical philosophy of the existence of evil; or at least it assumes this form in some of its most typical representatives.

The name with which it is oftenest coupled is mysticism (see Mysticism). The latter term has properly a practical rather than a speculative reference ; but it is currently

applied so as to include the systems of thought on which practical mysticism was based. Thus, to take only one prominent example, the profound speculations of Meister Eckuart (q.v.) are always treated under the head of Mysticism, but they might with equal right appear under the rubric Theosophy. In other words, while an emotional and practical mysticism may exist without attempting philosophically to explain itself, speculative mysticism is almost another name for theosophy. There is still a certain difference observable, however, in so far as the speculative mystic remains primarily concerned with the theory of the soul’s relation to God, while the theosophist gives his thoughts a wider scope, and frequently devotes himself to the elaboration of a fantastic philosophy of nature.

In the above acceptation of the term, the Neoplatonic doctrine of emanations from the supra-essential One, the fanciful emanation-doctrine of some of the Gnostics (the seons of the Valentinian system might be mentioned), and the elaborate esoteric system of the Kabbalah, to which the two former in all probability largely contributed, are generally included under the head of theosophy. In the two latter instances there may be noted the allegorical interpretation of traditional doctrines and sacred writings which is a common characteristic of theosophical writers. Still more typical examples of theosophy are furnished by the mystical system of Meister

Eckhart and the doctrine of Jacob BorHME (g.v.), who is known as “the theo- sophist.” par excellence. Eckhart’s doctrine asserts behind God a predicateless Godhead, which, though unknowable not only to man but also to itself, is, as it were, the essence or potentiality of all things. From it proceed, and in it, as their nature, exist, the three persons of the Trinity, conceived as stadia of an eternal self-revealing process. The eternal generation of the Son is equivalent to the eternal creation of the world. But the sensuous and phenomenal, as such, so far as they seem to imply independence of God, are mere privation and nothingness ; things exist only through the presence of God in them, and the goal of creation, like its outset, is the repose of the Godhead. The soul of man, which as a microcosmos resumes the nature of things, strives by self-abnegation or self-annihilation to attain this unspeakable reunion (what Eckhart calls being buried in God). Regarding evil simply as privation, Eckhart does not make it the pivot of his thought, as was afterwards done by Boehme, but his notion of the Godhead as a dark and formless essence is a favourite thesis of theosophy. The followers of Eckhart are either practical mystics, or reproduce at most what may be called their master’s speculative theology, till we come to Boehme.

Besides mystical theology, Boehme was indebted to the writings of Paracelsus. This circumstance is not acci- dental, but points to an affinity in thought. The nature- philosophers of the Renaissance, such as Nicholas of Cusa, Paracelsus, Cardan, and others, curiously blend scientific ideas with speculative notions derived from scholastic theology, from Neoplatonism, and even from the Kab- balah. Hence it is customary to speak of their theories as a mixture of theosophy and physics, or theosophy and chemistry, as the case may be. Boehme offers us a natural philosophy of the same sort. As Boehme is the typical theosophist, and as modern theosophy has nourished itself almost in every case upon the study of his works, his dominating conceptions supply us with the best illus- tration of the general trend of this mode of thought. His speculation turns, as has been said, upon the necessity of reconciling the existence and the might of evil with the existence of an all-embracing and all-powerful God, with- out falling into Manichzanism on the one hand, or, on the

other, into a naturalistic pantheism that denies the reality of the distinction between good and evil. He faces the difficulty boldly, and the eternal conflict between the two may be said to furnish him with the principle of his philosophy. It is in this connexion that he insists on the necessity of the Nay to the Yea, of the negative to the positive. Eckhart's Godhead appears in Boehme as the abyss, the eternal nothing, the essenceless quiet (" Un-grund" and "Stille ohne Wesen" are two of Boehme's phrases). But, if this were all, the Divine Being would remain an abyss dark even to itself. In God, however, as the condition of His manifestation, lies, according to Boehme, the " eternal nature" or the mysterrum magnum, which is as anger to: love, as darkness to light, and, in general, as the negative to the positive. This principle (which Boehme often calls the evil in God) illuminates both sides of the antithesis, and thus contains the possi- bility of their real existence. By the " Qual" or torture, as it were, of this diremption, the universe has qualitative existence, and is knowable. Even the three persons of the Trinity, though existing idealiter beforehand, attain reality only through this principle of nature in God, which is hence spoken of as their matrix. It forms also the matter, as it were, out of which the world is created ; without the dark and fiery principle, we are told, there would be no creature. Hence God is sometimes spoken of as the father, and the eternal nature as the mother, of things. Creation (which is conceived as an eternal pro- cess) begins with the creation of the angels. The subse- quent fall of Lucifer is explained as his surrender of himself to the principle of nature, instead of dwelling in the heart of God. He sought to make anger predominate over love ; and he had his will, becoming prince of hell, the kingdom of God's anger, which still remains, however, an integral part of the Divine universe. It is useless to follow Boehme further, for his cosmogony is disfigured by a wild Paracelsian symbolism, and his constructive efforts in general are full of the uncouth straining of an untrained writer. In spite of these defects, his speculations have exercised a remarkable influence within the present century, notably upon the later phases of Schelling's philosophy, upon Franz von Baader, Molitor, and others. Schelling's Philosophical Inquiries into the Nature of Human Freedom (1809) is almost entirely a reproduction of Boehme's ideas, and forms, along with Baader's writ- ings, the best modern example of theosophical speculation. In his philosophy of identity ScHELLING (q.v.) had already defined the Absolute as pure indifference, or the identity of

subject and object (of the ideal and the real), but without advancing further into theogony. He now pro- ceeded to distinguish three moments in God, the first of which is the pure indifference which, in a sense, precedes all existence—the primal basis or abyss, as he calls it, in agreement with Boehme. But, as there is nothing before or besides God, God must have the ground or cause of His existence in Himself. This is the second moment, called nature in God, distinguishable from God, but inseparable from Him. It is that in God which is not God Himself ; it is the yearning of the eternal One to give birth to itself, This yearning is a dumb unintelligent longing, which moves like a heaving sea in obedience to some dark and indefinite law, and is powerless to fashion anything in permanence. But in correspondence to the first stirring of the Divine existence there awakes in God Himself an inner reflexive perception, by means of which—since no object is possible for it but God—God beholds Himself in His own image. In this, God is for the first time as it were realized, although as yet only within Himself. This perception combines as understanding with the primal yearning, which becomes thereby free creative will, and

works formatively in the originally lawless nature or ground. In this wise is created the world as we know it. In every natural existence there are, therefore, two principles to be distinguished—first, the dark principle, through which this is separated from God, and exists, as it were, in the mere ground ; and, secondly, the Divine principle of understand- ing. The first is the particular will of the creature, the second is the universal will. In irrational creatures the particular will or greed of the individual is controlled by external forces, and thus used as an instrument of the universal, But in man the two principles are consciously present together, not, however, in inseparable union, as they are in God, but with the possibility of separation. This possibility of separation is the possibility of good and evil. In Boehme’s spirit, Schelling defended his idea of God as the only way of vindicating for God the conscious- ness which naturalism denies, and which ordinary theism emptily asserts. This theosophical transformation of Schelling’s doctrine was largely due to the influence of his contemporary BaADER (q.v.). Baader distinguishes, in a manner which may be paralleled from Boehme, between an immanent or esoteric process of self-production in God, through which He issues from His unrevealed state, and the emanent, exoteric, or real process, in which God overcomes and takes up

into Himself the eternal “nature” or the principle of selfhood, and appears as a Trinity of persons. The creation of the world is still further to be distinguished from these two processes as an act of freedom or will ; it cannot, therefore, be speculatively constructed, but must be historically accepted. Baader, who combined his theo- sophy with the doctrines of Roman Catholicism, has had many followers. Among thinkers on the same lines, but more or less independent, Molitor is perhaps the most important. SWEDENBORG (g.v.) is usually reckoned among the theosophists, and some parts of his theory justify this inclusion ; but his system as a whole has little in common with those speculative constructions of the Divine nature which form the essence of theosophy, as strictly under- stood. (A. SE.) THERA, or, as it is now called, SANTORIN, is a volcanic island in the Aigean Sea, the southernmost of the group of islands, called Sporades, which intervene between the Cyclades and Crete. From the last-named island it is separated by a space of 60 miles of sea, but the lofty Cretan ranges of Dicte and Ida are clearly visible from it in fine weather. In shape San- torin forms a crescent, and |, encloses a bay | ; on the north, |i Ye) re Qo east, and south, | {7 { “—~S8) AIMENIE SEES, > om, gh AE while on the western _ side lies the smaller island of Ther- asia. The en- circling wall thus formed, which is ellip- tical in shape and 18 miles round in its inner rim, is broken in two places,—towards the north-west by a strait a mile in breadth, where the water is not less than 1100 feet deep, and towards the south-west by an aperture about

3 miles wide, where the water is shallow, and an island called Aspronisi or White Island, lying in the middle, serves as a stepping-stone between the two promontories. The cliffs rise perpendicularly from the waters of the bay, in some places to the height of 1000 feet ; but towards the open sea, both in Santorin and Therasia, the ground slopes gradually away, and has been converted into broad level terraces, everywhere covered with tufaceous agglomerate, which, though extraordinarily bare and ashen to the eye, is the soil which produces the famous Santorin wine. Towards the south-east rises the limestone peak of Mount Elias, the highest point of the island (1887 feet), and the only part that existed before the voleano was formed. In the middle of the basin lie three small islands, which are the

centre of volcanic activity, and are called Pala, Mikra, and Nea Kaumene, or the Old, the Little, and the New Burnt Island ; the highest of these, Nea Kaumene, is 351 feet above the sea-level. Owing to the depth of the water there is no anchorage, and vessels have to be moored to the shore, except at one point in the neighbourhood of the modern town, where there is a slight rim of shallow bottom. The cliffs both of Santorin and Therasia present an extraordinary appearance, being marked in horizontal bands by black lava, white porous tufa, and other volcanic strata, some parts of which are coloured dark red. The modern town of Thera (or Phera, as it is more commonly pronounced) is built at the edge of these, overlooking the middle of the bay at a height of 900 feet above the water, and the houses of which it is composed are themselves peculiar, for their foundations, and in some cases their sides also, are excavated in the tufa, so that occasionally they are hardly traceable except by their chimneys ; and, owing to the absence of timber,—for, with the exception of the fig, the cactus, and the palm, there are hardly any trees in the island,—they are roofed with barrel vaults of stone and cement. Both wood and water have occasion- ally to be imported from the neighbouring islands, for there are no wells, and the rain water, which is collected in numerous cisterns, does not always suffice. The largest of the other towns or villages is that of Apanomeria, near the northern entrance, which is crowded together in a white mass, while the rocks below it are the reddest that are seen in the island.

Santorin has from the earliest times been a centre of volcanic agency, and is elosely connected with the earthquake movements to which the eountries in the neighbourhood of the Adgean are subject, and which have been the chief cause of the destruction of the public buildings of aneient Greece. It is hardly accurate to speak of the basin which forms the harbour as a crater, for most geologists, including Lyell, support the view that the whole of this space was once eovered by a single volcanie cone, the ineline of which is represented by the outward slope of Santorin and Therasia, while the position of the crater was that now oecupied by the Kaumene Islands; and that, at some remote period, owing to the sinking of the strata beneath, the central portion of this, extend- ing over an area which a French writer compares with that included within the fortifications of Paris at the time of the siege, fell in, by which convulsion the basin was formed. The principal erup- tions that have taken place within historic times are that of 196 B.C.,

when, as we Jearn from Strabo (i. 3, § 16, p. 57), flames rose from the water halfway between Thera and Therasia for four days, and the island of Palea Kaumene was ejected; that of 726 a.D., during the reign of the emperor Leo the Isaurian, when an addition was made to that island, and the pumiee-stone that was east forth was carricd by the waves to the shores of Asia Minor and Macedonia ; that of 1578, when Mikra Kaumene appeared; that of 1650, a fearful eruption, which destroyed many lives by its noxious exhala- tions, and ended in the upheaval of an island in the sea to the north-east of Santorin, which afterwards subsided and became a permanent reef below the sea-level; that of 1707, when Nea

Kaumene arose; and, within the recollection of the present genera- tion, that of 1866.

Sautorin and Therasia have been recently the scene of a remark- able archeological diseovery. In the southern parts of both those islands prehistoric dwellings have been found at some height above the sea, and there is no reasonable cause to doubt that these date

from a period antecedent to the falling in of the crater and the formation of the bay. This is proved by their position underneath the layer of tufa which eovers the islands, and, moreover, by these layers of tufa being broken off precipitously, in the same way as the lava-rocks, a fact which ean only be explained by the supposition that they all fell in together. The foundations of the dwellings rested, not on the tufa, but on the lava below it; and here and there between the stones branehes of wild olive were found, accord- ing to a mode of building that still prevails in the island, in order to resist the shocks of earthquakes. Part of the skeleton of a man was discovered, and large vases, some containing grain, others stone instruments very earefully worked. Some of these vases were of fine yellowish earth, ornamented with brown bands; some, of smaller size, were more elaborately decorated, sometimes with lines representing foliage, and in a few instances with figures of animals; some were of red earth, without ornament; while others, of pale red earth, were of very large dimensions. No implements of metal were found. Naturally it has been the subject of mueh discussion what was the origin of this very primitive art. The late M. Dumont, who was the leading authority on the subject (Les Céramiques de la Gréce Propre, pp.

74, 75, 209), though speaking with great caution on account of the insufficiency of the evidence, inelined to the belief that it was partly derived from Phoenician influence, but at the same time that there were evident traces of native originality. Comparing it in respect of date with the other prehistoric developments of art in the neighbourhood of the igean, he would place it later than that of Hissarlik, but earlier than those of Ialysus in Rhodes, and of Mycene.

In Greek legend the island of Thera was connected with the story of the Argonauts, for it was represented as sprung from a clod of earth which was presented to those heroes by Triton (Apollon., Argonaut., iv. 1551 sg., 1731 sg.). According to Herodotus (iv. 147), a Phenician colony was established there by Cadmus—a story which proves at least the belief that there was an early settlement of that race in the island. It has even been conjectured (see vol. xviii. p. 806) that the alphabet was introduced into Greece, not, as was eommonly believed, through Thebes, but by way of Thera. Subsequently, we are told, a colony from Sparta, ineluding some of the Minyz, was led thither by Theras, who gave the island his own name, in place of that of Calliste which it had borne before. But the one event which gave importance to Thera in ancient history was the planting of its famous colony of Cyrene on the north coast of Afriea by Battus in 631 3.c., in accordanee with a command of the Delphic oracle. The ancient capital, which bore the same name as the island, has been identified by an inseription as occupying a site on the eastern eoast called Mesa-Vouno, between Mount Elias and the sea. The other remains of the classical period consist of walls and tombs, together with several heroa or small shrines, one of which, now dedicated to St Nicholas Marmorites, who is so called in honour of his marble structure, is an almost unique specimen of a perfect Greek temple, for even the roof remains intact. After the fourth crusade, when the Byzantine empire was partitioned among the Latins, this island formed a portion of the duehy of the Archipelago; and it was at this period that it received the name of Santorin, i.¢., St Irene, after the patron saint of the place, to whom Tournefort mentions that in his time nine or ten ehapels were dedicated. At the present day Santorin is in a prosperous condition, for, in addition to the wine trade, which is highly remunerative, there is a large export of pozzolana, Which has been much used for the works at Port Said in eonnexion with the Suez Canal, since, when mixed with lime, it

forms a very hard cement which resists the action of the sea. General information with regard to the Thera group will be found in Ross's Inselreisen, and in Lieut. Leyccster's paper in vol. xx. of the Journal of the R. Geogr. Soc.; a very complete account of the scientific phenomena is given in Fouqué's Santorin et ses Eruptions. On the prehistoric antiquities, Lenormant, Revue Archéologique, new ser., vol. xiv., and Fouqué, Archives des Missions, 24 ser., vol. iv., and 'Une Pompéi Antéhistorique," in the Revue des Deux Mondes, vol. Ixxxiii., should be consulted. Of the life of the modern inhabitants a graphic account is given in Mr Bent's Cyclades. rf (H. F. T.)

THERAMENES, an Athenian who played a prominent part in the history of Athens towards the close of the Peloponnesian War and in the revolution which followed it. He was one of the conspirators who, in 411 3.c., abolished the democracy at Athens, and substituted the oligarchy of the Four Hundred. The adhesion of the army in Samos to the democracy, however, created dissensions among the oligarchs at Athens. Theramenes supported the more moderate section, and was the chief means of destroying a fortress which the extreme section had been building at the mouth of the harbour, ostensibly as a protection against any violent movement on the part of the democrats at Samos, but really, according to Theramenes, to admit the enemy. He further accused Antiphon and Archeptole- mus, members of the extreme oligarchical party, who,

according to Lysias, had been his own intimate friends, and secured their capital punishment. In 410 Theramenes commanded one of the three squadrons of the Athenian fleet in the victory over the Spartans at Cyzicus. In 409 he took part in the siege of Chalcedon and the capture of Byzantium. At the battle of Arginuse in 406 he was one of the officers deputed by the generals in command to pick up the crews of the disabled ships ; but the rescue was not effected, on account, it seems, of the storm. Nevertheless, on his return to Athens, Theramenes took a leading part in accusing and procuring the condemnation to death of the generals for neglecting to rescue the men. When Athens was besieged by the Peloponnesians, Thera- menes conducted the negotiations for surrendering the city, traitorously prolonging

them till starvation compelled the Athenians to accept the rigorous terms imposed by Sparta. After the surrender he formed one of the notorious Thirty who, backed by a Spartan garrison, misgoverned Athens. But by opposing their excesses he incurred their suspicions, and, being denounced by Critias, the most violent of the Thirty, he was, in defiance of the forms of law, put to death (404). He submitted to his fate with a fortitude which won the admiration of his contemporaries and of posterity, and which might well have graced the close of a better life. His ability and eloquence are recognized by Thucydides, and Aristotle is said by Plutarch (WVic., 2) to have reckoned him one of the three best patriots of Athens. This latter judgment is not borne out by the facts as we know them. Rather Theramenes appears as a selfish and faithless trimmer, who deserved his nickname Cothurnus (a boot which fitted either foot).

The chief authorities for his life are Thucydides, viii.; Xenophon, Hellenica, i., ii.; Lysias, Contra Hrat.; Diodorus, xiii., xiv.

THERAPEUTE. See Monacuism, vol. xvi. p. 698.

THERESA, Sr (1515-1582). Teresa de Cepeda, perhaps the favourite saint of modern Spain, was born at Avila, in Old Castile, on the 28th of March 1515,—at the very time, adds her biographer, ‘“‘ when Luther was secreting the poison which he vomited out two years later.” She was one of a large family—eight sons and three daughters. Her father was a Spanish gentleman of good family, whose time was chiefly occupied with devotional reading and works of charity. Teresa’s mother, his second wife, was a beautiful woman, confined generally to a sofa by delicate health. From her her daughter appears to have inherited both delicacy of health and a remarkably susceptible imagination. She delighted in the books of knight-errantry which abounded in the library, and her children sat up at night in their nursery over the same romances. But Teresa’s imagination was judiciously diverted by her father to another form of heroism. She was soon as deep in tlie histories of the martyrs as she had been in the tales of chivalry. She learned from these histories that martyrs passed straight to heaven without any detention in purgatory ; and, being eminently practical as well as imaginative, she resolved to secure that blessing for herself. When she was seven years old, she started off with her little brother to go

and seek martyrdom in the country of the Moors. They had reached the bridge on the stream which runs through the town, when an uncle met them and brought them back. Balked thus of their desire, they played at hermits, making themselves cells in the garden, and giving away their pocket-money to beggars. Teresa lost her mother early, and as she grew up the vanities and flirtations of a pretty girl took the place of these pious imaginations. Her father deemed it best to send her to be educated in an Augustinian convent in the town, but without any thoughts of her adopting a religious life. She would probably have married like her Sisters, had it not been for an attack of illness. She was

28]

sent away for change of air on a visit to one of her sisters, and on her way home spent some days with a saintly uncle, who was on the eve of entering a monastery, and who strongly urged her to withdraw from the world. Her father was greatly opposed to the step, but Teresa was not to be turned from what she conceived to be her duty. She was only eighteen when she left home one morning, and applied for admission at the Carmelite convent of the Incarnation. She was disappointed at first at the slack- ness of discipline. The sisters mixed freely in the society of Avila, receiving visits and returning them, and often absenting themselves from the cloister for months at a time. For the first three years she was constantly subject to attacks of sickness, fainting fits, and paroxysms of pain, but she prayed to St Joseph, after which she became comparatively better, though her nervous system was completely shaken. But she appears afterwards to have accommodated herself with tolerable success to the world- liness of her environment, though not without intervals of religious misgiving. “For twenty years,” she says, ‘I was tossed about on a stormy sea in a wretched condition, for, if I had small content in the world, in God I had no pleasure. At prayer time I watched for the clock to strike the end of the hour. To go to the oratory was a vexation to me, and prayer itself a constant effort.” At one time she abandoned prayer altogether, as she found it impos- sible to fix her thoughts, and she abhorred the hypocrisy of mechanically repeating a form of words. It was in the year 1554 (her noviciate dated from 1534), when she was thus nearly forty, that the event known as her conversion took place, and the second part of her life began. The death of her father roused her to

serious reflexion, and one day, as she entered the oratory, she was struck by the image of the wounded Christ, placed there for an approaching festival. The blood was depicted as stream- ing over the face from the thorns and running from the side and the hands and feet. The spectacle of suffering pierced Teresa's breast ; she fell in tears at the feet of the figure, and felt every worldly emotion die within her. The shock threw her into a trance, and these trances, accompanied by visions, recurred frequently in the subsequent part of her life. They have since been adduced as Divine attestations of her saintship, but the sisterhood in the convent set them down to possession by a devil; her new departure was due in their eyes to no worthier motive than the desire to be peculiar and to be reputed better than other people. Teresa herself was very humble, and thought their explanation might be true ; she took her case to her confessor and to the provincial-general of the Jesuits. The latter put her under a course of discipline : she was to flog herself with a whip of nettles, to wear a haircloth plaited with broken wires that would tear the skin, and to meditate daily on the details of Christ's passion. One day, while thus occupied, her trance came upon her, and she heard a voice say, "Thou shalt have no more converse with men, but with angels." After this the trance or fit always returned when she was at prayers, and she felt that Christ was close to her. Presently she was able to see him, '' exactly as he was painted rising from the sepulchre." Her confessor directed her to exorcise the figure, and she obeyed with pain, but, it is needless to say, in vain. The visions grew more and more vivid. The cross of her rosary was snatched from her hand one day, and when returned it was made of jewels more brilliant than diamonds, visible, however, to her alone. She had often an acute pain in her side, and fancied that an angel came to her with a lance tipped with fire, which he struck into her heart. The 27th of August is kept sacred in Spain to this mystery, which has also formed a favourite subject of Spanish painters; it forms the frontispiece of XXIII. — 36

the biography which is put into the hands of Catholics. She had also visions of another description: she was shown hell with its horrors, and the devil would sit upon her breviary, belabour her with blows, and fill her cell with imps. For several years these experiences continued, and the verdict as to

their source still remained far from unanimous. Meanwhile, on the broad stage of the world, the Reformation continued to spread and establish itself ; and this great falling away became the subject of much searching of hearts to pious Catholics. Teresa reflected like the rest, and her experience led her to find the real cause of the catastrophe in the relaxation of discipline within the religious orders. If the ancient rules could be restored, it appeared to her that the evil might be stemmed; and she formed the project of founding a house in which all the original rules of the Carmelite order before its relaxation would be observed. She met, not unnaturally, with great opposition from the authorities of the order, and in particular from the prioress and sisters of the Incarnation, who looked upon the step as a reflexion upon themselves. Nevertheless, she persevered with her scheme, being encouraged to appeal to the pope by cer- tain priests who saw the benefit which would accrue to the church from her zeal. A private house in Avila was secretly got ready to serve as a small convent, and, when the bull arrived from Rome, Teresa went out on leave from the Incarnation and installed four poor women in the new house dedicated to her patron St Joseph. It was on the 24th of August 1562 that mass was said in the little chapel and the new order constituted. It was to be an order of Descalzos or Barefoots, in opposition to the relaxed parent body, the Calzados. The sisters were not to be literally shoeless, but to wear sandals of rope; they were to sleep on straw, to eat no meat, to be strictly con- fined to the cloister, and to live on alms without regular endowment. . After lodging her four sisters, Teresa re- turned to the Incarnation, as in duty bound; but, when the secret was discovered, Carmelites and townspeople were alike furious. Violence, however, was prevented, and the matter was referred to the council of state at Madrid. Philip II. referred it again to the pope, and after six months a fresh bull arrived from Pius V. ‘The provincial of her order now gave her leave to remove and take charge of her sisterhood. The number of thirteen, to which on grounds of discipline she had limited the founda- tion, was soon filled up, and Teresa spent here the five happiest years of her life. Her visions continued, and, by command of her ecclesiastical superiors, she wrote her autobiography containing a full account of these experi- ences. She herself, however, profoundly as she believed in their reality, saw the danger which attaches to such experiences, and was far from basing any claim to holiness upon them. One of her visions about this time is interesting as illustrating what is called her

mysticism. She fancied that she was a mirror without frame and without dimensions, with Christ shining in the centre of it, and the mirror itself, she knew not how, was in Christ. Teresa was now encouraged to carry her work still further, for the church was girding itself to the work of the Counter-Reformation. The general of the order visited her at Avila, and gave her powers to found other houses of Descalzos, for men as wellas women. ‘The last fifteen years of her life were spent mainly in journeys with this end and in the continually growing labour of organization. She travelled in a rude cart in all weathers, and the story of her hardships and misadventures impresses us with the strength of will that animated her old and shaken frame. Convents were founded at Medina, Malaga, Valladolid, Toledo, Segovia, and Salamanca, and two at Alva under the patronage of the famous duke. Then she had three

years of rest, as prioress of her old convent of the Incar- nation. She next went to Seville to found a house, thus overstepping for the first time the boundaries of the Castiles, to which her authorization limited her. The

latent hostility of the old order was aroused ; the general .

ordered the immediate suppression of the house at Seville, and procured a bull from Gregory XIII. prohibiting the further extension of the reformed houses (1575). But the movement against her came from Italy, and was resented by Philip and the Spanish authorities as undue interfer- ence ; and, after a fierce struggle, during which Teresa was two years under arrest at Toledo, the Carmelites were divided into two bodies in 1580, and the Descalzos obtained the right to elect their own provincial-generals (see CARMELITES). The few remaining years of Teresa’s life were spent in the old way, organizing the order she had founded, and travelling about to open new convents. Sixteen convents and fourteen monasteries were founded by her efforts; she wrote a history of her foundations, which forms a supplement to her autobiography. At Burgos, during the whole of a wet autumn and winter, she endured terrible privations. Her own nuns, too, were not always as single-minded and obedient as the ideal sisterhood of her hopes had been. Those at St Joseph in Avila mutinied for a meat diet; the prioress at Medina answered her impertinently. Her last journey of inspec- tion was cut short at Alva, where she died on the 29th of September 1582,

and was laid in her first, but not her last, resting-place. A violet odour and a fragrant oil were said to distil from her tomb; and when it was opened nine months afterwards the flesh was found uncorrupted. A hand cut off by a fervent brother was found to work miracles, and the order became convinced that their founder had been a saint. It was resolved in 1585 to remove her remains to Avila, where she was born, the sisters at Alva being consoled by permission to retain the mutilated arm. But the family of the duke of Alva pro- cured an order from the pope enjoining that the body should be restored to Alva, and she was accordingly laid there once more in a splendid tomb. But even then she was not allowed to rest: she was again disentombed, to be laid in a more magnificent coffin, and the greed of reveren- tial relic-seekers made unseemly havoc of her bones. Teresa was canonized by Gregory XV. in 1622. The honour was doubtless largely due to her asceticism and mystic visions. She called herself Teresa de Jesus, to signify the closeness of her relation to the heavenly Bridegroom, who directed all her actions. Though she deprecated excess of ascetic severity in others, she scourged herself habitually, and wore a peculiarly painful haircloth. But her life shows her to have been, besides, a woman of strong practicality and good sense, full of natural shrewdness, and with unusual powers of organization. “You deceived me in saying she was a woman,” writes one of her confessors; “she is a bearded man.” She was brave in the face of difficulties and dangers, pure in her motives, and her utterances, some of which have been quoted, have the true ethical ring about them. Her MSS. were collected by Philip II. and placed in a rich case in the Escorial, the key of which the king carried about with him. Besides her autobiography and the history of her foundations, her works (all written in Spanish) contain a great number of letters and various treatises of mystical religion, the chief of which are The Way of Perfection and The Castle of the Soul. Both describe the progress

of the soul towards perfect union with God.

Her works, edited by two Dominieans, were first published in 1587, and have sinee appeared in various editions. They were soon afterwards translated into Italian, Freneh, and Latin; an English translation of the Life and works (exeept the letters) by A. Woodhead appeared in 1669. More recently various transla- tions of the Life have appeared,—by John Dalton

(1851), who also translated the Way of Perfection, and by David Lewis (1870), followed in 1871 by the Founda- tions from the same hand. Biographies appearcd soon after her death by the Jesuit Ribera, who had been her confessor (1602), and by Diego de Yepez, eon- fessor to Philip IT. (1599). Details are also given in Ribadeneyra's Flos Sanctorum and in Alban Butler's Lives of the Saints. A separate biography, with preface by Arehbishop Manning, appeared in 1865, and an interesting and sympathetie aecount of her life is given in the Quarterly Review for October 1883, (A. SE.)

THERESIOPEL, or THERESIENSTADT. See SZABADKA. THERMAL SPRINGS, See Groxoey, vol. x. pp. 223, 270, and MINERAL WATERS:

Paine meopYNaAMICS 283

THERMODYNAMICS. In a strict interpretation, this branch of science, sometimes called the Dynamical Theory

of Heat, deals with the relations between heat and work, –

though it is often extended so as to include all trans- formations of energy. Either term is an infelicitous one, for there is no direct reference to force in the majority of questions dealt with in the subject. Even the title of Carnot's work, presently to be described, is much better chosen than is the more modern designation. On the other hand, such a German phrase as die bewegende Kraft der Wdrme is in all respects intolerable.

It has been shown in a previous article (ENERGY) that Newton's enunciation of the conservation of energy as a general principle of nature was defective in respect of the connexion between work and heat, and that, about the beginning of the present century, this lacuna was com- pletely filled up by the researches of Rumford and Davy (see also Har). In the same article Joule's experimental demonstration of the principle, and his determination of the work-equivalent of heat by various totally independent processes, have been discussed. .

But the conservation of energy, alone, gives us an altogether inadequate basis for reasoning on the work of a heat-engine. It enables us to calculate

how much work is equivalent to an assigned amount of heat, and vice versa, provided the transformation can be effected ; but it tells us nothing with respect to the percentage of either which can, under given circumstances, be converted into the other. For this purpose we require a special case of the law of transformation of energy. This was first given in Carnot's extraordinary work entitled Aeflexions sur la Puissance Motrice du Feu, Paris, 1824.)

1 The author, N-L-Sadi Carnot (1796-1832), was the second son of Napoleon's celebrated minister of war, himself a mathematician of real note even among the wonderful galaxy of which France could then boast. The delicate constitution of Sadi was attributed to the agitated circumstances of the time of his birth, which led to the proscription and temporary exile of his parents. He was admitted in 1812 to the

cole Polytechnique, where he was a fellow-student of the famous Chasles. Late in 1814 he left the school with a commission in the Engineers, and with prospects of rapid advancement in his profession. But Waterloo and the Restoration led to a second and final proscrip- tion of his father; and, though Sadi was not himself cashiered, he was purposely told off for the merest drudgeries of his service; il fut *'envoyé successivement dans plusieurs places fortes pour y faire son métier d'ingénieur, compter des briques, réparer des pans de murailles, et lever des plans destinés a s'eufouir dans les cartons," as we learn from a biographical notice written by his younger brother. Disgusted with an employment which afforded him neither leisure for original work nor opportunities for acquiring scientific instruction, he presented himself in 1819 at the examination for admission to the staff-corps (état-major), and obtained a lieutenancy. He now devoted himself with astonishing ardour to mathematics, chemistry, natural history, technology, and even political economy. He was an enthusiast in music and other fine arts; and he habitually practised as an amuse- ment, while deeply studying in theory, all sorts of athletic sports, including swimming and fencing. He became captain in the engineers in 1827, but left the service altogether in the following year. His naturally feeble constitution, farther weakened by excessive devotion to study, broke down finally in 1832. A relapse of scarlatina led to brain fever, from which he had but partially recovered when he fell a victim to cholera. Thus died, at the early age of

thirty-six, one of the most profound and original thinkers who have ever devoted them- selves to science. The work named above was the only one he published. Though of itself sufficient to put him in the very fore- most rank, it contains only a fragment of Sadi Carnot's discoveries. Fortunately his manuscripts have been preserved, and extracts from them have been appended by his brother to a reprint (1878) of the Puissance Motrice. These show that he had not only realized for himself the true nature of heat, but had noted down for trial many of the best modern methods of finding its mechanical equivalent, such as those of Joule with the perforated piston and with the internal friction of water and mercury. W. Thomson's experiment with a current of gas forced through a porous plug is also given. One sentence of extract, however, must suffice, and it is astonishing to think that it was written over sixty years ago. "On peut donc poser en thése générale que la puissance motrice est en quantité invariable dans la nature, quelle n'est jamais, 4 proprement parler, ni produite, ni détruite. A la vérité, elle change de forme, c'est-a-dire qu'elle

The chief novelties of Carnot's work are the introduction of the idea of a cycle of operations, and the invaluable discovery of the special property of a reversible cycle. It is not too much to say that, without these wonderful novelties, thermodynamics as a theoretical science could not have been developed.

Carnot's work seems to have excited no attention at the time of its publication. Ten years later (1834) Clapeyron gave some of its main features in an ana- lytical form, and he also employed Watt's diagram for the exhibition of others. Even this, however, failed to call attention properly to the extremely novel processes of Carnot, and it was reserved for Sir W. Thomson (in 1848, and more at length in 1849) to point out to scientific men their full value. His papers on Carnot's treatise, follow- ing closely after the splendid experimental researches of Colding and Joule, secured for the dynamical theory of heat its position as a recognized branch of science. James Thomson, by Carnot's methods, predicted in 1849 the low- ering of the freezing point of water by pressure, which was verified experimentally in the same year by his brother. Von Helmholtz had published, two years before, a strikingly original and compreliensive pamphlet on the conservation of energy. The start once given, Rankine, Clausits, and W.

Thomson rapidly developed, though from very different standpoints, the theory of thermodynamics. The methods adopted by Thomson differed in one special characteristic from those of his concurrents,—they were based entirely on the experimental facts and on necessary principles ; and, when hypothesis was absolutely required, attention was carefully directed to its nature and to the reasons which appeared to justify it.

Three specially important additions to pure science followed almost directly from Carnot's methods :—(1) the absolute definition of temperature ; (2) the thermodynamic function or entropy; (3) the dissipation of energy. The first (in 1848) and the third (in 1852) were given by W. Thomson. The second, though introduced by Rankine, was also specially treated by Clausius.

In giving a brief sketch of the science, we will not adhere strictly to any of the separate paths pursued by its founders, but will employ for each step what appears to be most easily intelligible to the general reader. And we will arrange the steps in such an order that the neces- sity for each may be distinctly visible before we take it.

1. General Notions.—The conversion of mechanical work into heat can always be effected completely. In fact, friction, without which even statical results would be all but unrealizable in practical life, interferes to a marked extent in almost every problem of kinetics,—and work done against friction is (as a rule) converted into heat. But the conversion of heat into work can be effected only in part, usually in very small part. Thus heat is regarded as the lower or less useful of these forms of energy, and when part of it is elevated in rank by con- version into work the remainder sinks still lower in the scale of usefulness than before.

There are but two processes known to us for the con- version of heat into work, viz., that adopted in heat- engines, where the changes of volume of the "working substance" are employed, and that of electromagnetic engines driven by thermoelectric currents (see ELECTRICITY, vol. viii. p. 96). To the latter we will not again refer. And for simplicity we will suppose the working substance to be fluid, so as to have the same pressure throughout, or, if it be solid, to be isotropic, and to be subject only to hydrostatic

pressure, or to tension uniform in all directions and the same from point to point.

produit tantdt un genre de mouvement, tant6t un autre; mais elle n’est jamais anéantie.”

The state of unit mass of such a substance is known by experiment to be fully determined when its volume and pressure are given, even if (as in the case of ice in presence of water, or of water in presence of steam) part of it is in one molecular state and part in another. But, the state being determinate, so must be the temperature, and also the amount of energy which the substance contains. This consideration is insisted on by Carnot as the foundation of his investigations. In other words, before we are entitled to reason upon the relation between the heat supplied to and the work done by the working substance, Carnot says we must bring that substance, by means of a cycle of operations, back to precisely its primitive state as regards volume, temperature, and molecular condition.

2. Watt’s Diagram.—Watt’s indicator-diagram (see SrEAM-ENGINE) enables us to represent our operations graphically. For if OM (fig. 1) represent the volume, at any instant, of the unit mass of working substance, MP its pres- sure, the point P is determinate and correspouds to a definite temperature, definite energy, &c. If the points of any curve, | as PP’, in the diagram repre- Fig. 1. sent the successive states through which the working sub- stance is made to pass, the work done is (oc. cit.) repre- sented by the area MPP’M’. Hence, a cycle of operations, whose essential nature is to bring the working substance back to its primitive state, is necessarily represented by a closed boundary, such as PP’Q’Q, in the diagram. The area enclosed is the excess of the work done by the work- ing substance over that spent on it during the cycle. [This is positive if the closed path be described clockwise, as indicated by the arrow-heads. |

3. Carnot’s Cycle.—For a reason which will immediately appear, Carnot limited the operations in his cycle to two kinds, employed alternately during the expansion and during the compression of the working substance. The first of these involves change of volume at constant temperature ; the

second, change of volume without direct loss or gain of heat. [In his hypothetical engine the substance was supposed to be in contact with a body kept at constant temperature, or to be entirely surrounded by non-conducting materials.]| The corresponding curves in the diagram are called isothermals, or lines of equal temperature, and adiabatic lines respectively. We may consider these as having been found, for any particular working substance, by the direct use of Watt's indicator. It is easy to see that one, and only one, of each of these kinds of lines can be found for an assigned initial state of the working substance ; also that, because in expansion at constant temperature heat must be constantly supplied, the pressure will fall off less rapidly than it does in adiabatic expansion. Thus in the diagram the adiabatic lines PQ, P'Q' cut the lines of equal temperature PP', QQ' downwards and to the right. Thus the boundary of the area PP'Q'Q does not cross itself. To determine the behaviour of the engine we have therefore only to find how much heat is taken in along PP' and how much is given out in Q'Q. Their difference is equivalent to the work expressed by the area PP'Q'Q.

4. Carnot's Principle of Reversibility—tit will. be observed that each operation of this cycle is strictly reversible; for instance, to take the working substance along the path P'P we should have to spend on it step by step as much work as it gave out in passing along PP, and we should thus restore to the source of heat exactly the amount of heat which the working substance took from it during the expansion. In the case of the adiabatics

the work spent during compression is the same as that done during the corresponding expansion, and there is no question of loss or gain of heat directly.

If, however, a transfer of heat between the working substance and its surroundings have taken place on account of a finite difference of temperature, it is clear that such an operation is not reversible. Strictly speaking, isother- mal expansion or contraction is unattainable in practice, but it is (without limit) more closely approximated to as the operation is more slowly performed. The adiabatic condition, on the other hand, is more closely approximated to in practice the more swiftly the operation is

performed, We have an excellent instance of this in the compression and dilatation of air caused by the propagation of a sound- wave.

And now we have Carnot's invaluable proposition, a reversible heat-engine is a perfect engine,—perfect, that is, in the sense that no other heat-engine can be superior to it. Before giving the proof, let us see the immense con- sequences of this proposition. Reversibility is the sole test of perfection; so that all heat-engines, whatever be the working substance, provided only they be reversible, convert into work (under given circumstances) the same fraction of the heat supplied to them. The only circum- stances involved are the temperatures of the source and condenser. Thus we are furnished with a general principle on which to reason about transformation of heat, altogether independently of the properties of any particular substance.

The proof, as Carnot gave it on the hypothesis of the materiality of heat, is ex absurdo, It is as follows. Suppose a heat-engine A to be capable of giving more work from a given amount of heat than is a reversible engine B, the temperatures of source and condenser being the same for each. Use the two as a compound engine, A working direct and B reversed. By hypothesis B requires to be furnished with part only of the work given by A to be able to restore to the source the heat abstracted by A, and thus at every complete stroke of the compound engine the source has its heat restored to it, while a certain amount of external work has been done. This would be the PerpervaL MorIon (¢.v.).

5. The Basis of the Second Law of Thermodynamics.— Carnot's reasoning, just given, is based on the hypothesis that heat (or caloric) is indestructible, and that (under certain conditions) it does work in being let down from a higher to a lower temperature, just as does water when falling to a lower level. It is clear from several expressions in his work that Carnot was not at all satisfied with this view, even in 1824, and we have seen that he soon after- wards reached the true theory. But it is also clear that such an assumption somewhat simplifies the reasoning, for in his hypothetical heat-engine all the heat which leaves the boiler goes to the condenser, and vice versa in the reversed working. The precise point of Carnot's investiga- tion where the supposed indestructibility of heat introduces error is when, after virtually saying compress from Q' to a state Q determined by the condition

that the heat given out shall be exactly equal to that taken in during the expansion from P to P’, he assumes that, on farther com- pressing adiabatically to the original volume, the point P will be reached and the cycle completed. J. Thomson, in 1849, rectified this by putting it in the true form :-— compress from Q’ to a state Q, such that subsequent adiabatic compression will ultimately lead to the state P.

We have now to consider that, if an engine (whether simple or compound) does work at all by means of heat, less heat necessarily reaches the condenser than left the boiler. Hence, if there be two engines A and B as before, and the joint system be worked in such a way that B constantly restores to the source the heat taken from it by

THERMOD

A, we can account for the excess of work done by A over that spent on B solely by supposing that B takes more heat from the condenser than A gives to it. Such a com- pound engine would transform into work heat taken solely from the condenser. And the work so obtained might be employed on B, so as to make it convey heat to the source while farther cooling the condenser.

Clausius, in 1850, sought to complete the proof by the simple statement that “this contradicts the usual behaviour of heat, which always tends to pass from warmer bodies to colder.” Some years later he employed the axiom, “it is impossible for a self-acting machine, unaided by any external agency, to convey heat from one body to another ata higher temperature.” W. Thomson, in 1851, employed the axiom, “it is impossible, by means of inanimate material agency, to derive mechanical effect from any portion of matter by cooling it below the temperature of the coldest of the surrounding objects.” But he was careful to supplement this by further statements of an extremely guarded character. And rightly so, for Clerk- Maxwell has pointed out that such axioms are, as it were, only accidentally correct, and that the true basis of the second law of thermodynamics lies in the extreme small- ness and enormous number of the particles of matter, and in consequence the steadiness of their average behaviour. Had we the means of dealing with the particles individu- ally, we could develop on the large scale what takes place continually on a very minute scale in every mass of

gas, —the occasional, but ephemeral, aggregation of warmer particles in one small region and of colder in another.

6. The Laws of Thermodynamics.—I. When equal quan- tities of mechanical effect are produced by any means whatever from purely thermal sources, or lost in purely thermal effects, equal quantities of heat are put out of existence, or are generated. [To this we may add, after Joule, that in the latitude of Manchester 772 foot-pounds of work are capable of raising the temperature of a pound of water from 50° F. to 51° F. This corresponds to 1390 foot-pounds per centigrade degree, and in metrical units to 425 kilogramme-metres per calorie (see HEAT). |

II. If an engine be such that, when it is worked back- wards, the physical and mechanical agencies in every part of its motions are all reversed, it produces as much – mechanical effect as can be produced by any thermo-dynamic engine, with the same temperatures of source and refrigerator, from a given quantity of heat.

7. Absolute Temperature.—We have seen that the frac- tion of the heat supplied to it which a reversible engine can convert into work depends only on the temperatures of the boiler and of the condenser. On this result of Carnot's Sir W. Thomson based lis absolute definition of temperature. It is clear that a certain freedom of choice is left, and Thomson endeavoured to preserve as close an agreement as possible between the new scale and that of the air thermometer. Thus the definition ultimately fixed on, after exhaustive experiments, runs :—' The temperatures of two bodies are proportional to the quantities of heat respectively taken in and given out in localities at one temperature and at the other respectively, by a material system subjected to a complete cycle of perfectly reversible thermodynamic operations, and not allowed to part with or take in heat at any other temperature ; or, the absolute values of two temperatures are to one another in the pro- portion of the heat taken in to the heat rejected in a per- fect thermodynamic engine, working with a source and refrigerator at the higher and lower of the temperatures respectively."! If we now refer again to fig. 1, we see that, ¢ and ¢' being the absolute temperatures correspond- ing to PP' and QQ', and H, H' the amounts of heat taken

1 Trans. R.S.H., May 1854.

in during the operation PP’ and given out during the operation Q’Q respectively, we have H/t=H’/t’,

whatever be the values of ¢ and ¢. measured in terms of work, we have

H —- H’=area PP’Q’Q. Thus with a reversible engine working between tempera- tures ¢ and ?¢’ the fraction of the heat supplied which is converted into work is (¢-?’)/t.

It is now evident that we can construct Watt’s diagrain in such a way that the lines of equal temperature and the adiabatics may together intercept a series of equal areas. Thus let PP’ (fig. 2) be the iso- thermal ¢, and on it so take points P’, Pr’, FP”, de, thet, as the working sub- stance passes from P@ FP w P”, &ec., ¢ units of heat (the unit being of any assigned value) shall in each case be taken in. Let QQ’, RR’, &e., be other isothermals, so drawn that the suc- cessive areas PQ’, QR’, &c., between any two selected adiabatics, may be equal. Then, as it is clear that all the successive areas between each one pair of isothermals are equal (each representing the area ¢-<’'), it follows that all the quadrilateral areas in the figure are equal.

It is now clear that the area included between PP’ and the two adiabatics PQR, P’Q’R’ is essentially jincte, being numerically equal to ¢. Thus the temperature for each isothermal is represented by the corresponding area. This is indicated in the cut by the introduction of an arbitrary line SS’, supposed to be the isothermal of absolute zero. The lower parts of the adiabatics also are unknown, so that we may draw them as we please, subject to the con- dition that the entire areas PS’, P’S”, P’S’”, &c., shall all be equal. To find, on the absolute scale, the numerical valus of two definite temperatures, such as the usually employed freezing and boiling points of water, we must therefore find their ratio (that of the heat taken and the heat rejected by a reversible engine working between these temperatures), and assign the number of degrees in the interval.

Thomson and Joule experimentally showed that this ratio is about 1°365. Hence, if we assume (as in the centigrade scale) 100 degrees as the range,

the tempera- tures in question are 274 and 374 nearly. A full discus- sion of this most important matter will be found under Heat.

8. Lntropy.—Just as the lines PP’, QQ’, kc, are

characterized by constant temperature along each, so we figure to ourselves a quantity which is characteristic of each adiabatic line,—being constant along it. The equation of last section at once points out such a quantity. If we write # for its value along PQ, ¢’ for P’Q’, we may define thus ¢’-¢=H/t. From the statements as to the equality of the areas in fig. 2 the reader will see at once that the area bounded by t, t, b, ¢ is ¢-¢t’)(¢’-—¢). We are concerned only with the changes of @, not with its actual magnitude, so that any one adiabatic may be chosen as that for which ¢=0.

9. The Dissipation of Energy.—In the before-cited article ENERGY (vol. vili. p. 210) this part of the subject has already been treated. Since that article was written Sir William Thomson has introduced the term thermodynamic motinty to signify “the possession the waste of which is

Also, if heat be

Fig. 2.

called dissipation.” We speak ofa distribution of heat in a body or system of bodies as having motivity, and we may regard it from without or from within the system.

In the first case it expresses the amount of work which can be obtained by means of perfect engines employed to reduce the whole system to some definite temperature, that, say, of the surrounding medium. In the second case the system is regarded as self-contained, its hotter parts acting as sources, and its colder parts as condensers for the perfect engine.

As an instance of internal motivity we may take the case of a system consisting of two equal portions of the same substance at different temperatures, say a pound of boiling water and a pound of ice-cold water. If

we neglect the (small) change of specific heat with tempera- ture, it is found that, when the internal motivity of the system is exhausted, the temperature is about 46° C., being the centigrade temperature corresponding to the geo- metrical mean of the original absolute temperatures of the parts. Had the parts been simply mixed so as to dissipate the internal motivity, the resulting temperature would have been 50° C. ‘Thus the work gained (z.¢., the original inter- nal motivity) is the equivalent of the heat which would raise two pounds of water from 46° C. to 50° C.

As an instance of motivity regarded from without we may take the simple case of the working substance in § 2, on the hypothesis that there is an assigned lower tempera- ture limit. As there is no supply of heat, it is clear that the maximum of work will be obtained by allowing the substance to expand adiabatically till its temperature sinks to the assigned limit.

Thus if P (fig. 3) be its given position on Watt’s diagram, PQ the adiabatic through P, and P’Q the isothermal of the lower temperature limit, Q p is determinate, and the motivity is the area PQNM. If, again, we wish to find the motivity when the initial and final states P and P” are given, with the @ condition that the temperature || is not to fall below that of the ? af. state P’, the problem is reduced Fig 3. to finding the course PP’ for which the area PP’M’M is greatest. As no heat is supplied, the course cannot rise above the adiabatic PQ, and by hypothesis it cannot fall below the isothermal P’Q,—hence it must be the broken line PQP’. Thus, under the circumstances stated, the motivity is represented by the area MPQP’M’. If any other lawful course, such as PP’, be taken, there is an un- necessary waste of motivity represented by the area PQP’.

10. Elementary Thermodynamic Relations.—From what precedes it is clear that, when the state of unit mass of the working substance is given by a point in the diagram, an isothermal and an adiabatic can be drawn through that point, and thus ¢ and ¢ are determinate for each particular substance when p and v are given. Thus any two of the four quantities p, v, t, ¢ may be regarded as functions of the other two, chosen as independent variables. The change of energy from one state to another can, of course, be expressed as in § 9, above. Thus, putting E for the energy, we have at once

dk=tdp-pdv . .... (1) if ¢ and v be chosen as independent variables, and if heat be measured, as above, in units of work. This equation expresses, in symbols, the two laws of thermodynamics. For it states that the gain of energy is the excess of the heat supplied over the work done, which is an expression of the first law. And it expresses the heat supplied as the product of the absolute temperature by the gain of entropy, which is a statement of the second law in terms of Thomson's mode of measuring absolute temperature.

But we now have two equatious in partial differential co-

efficients :— dk sin ak do}? ()- ~P-

From these we have two expressions for the value of (saig dvdd }°

THERMODYNAMICS

Equating them, we are led to the thermodynamic relation

(z)~ – (a5)

the differential coefficients being again partial.

This expresses a property of all " working substances," defined as in § 1. Yo state it in words, let us multiply and divide the right hand side by ¢, and it then reads :—

The rate at which the tenperature falls off per unit increase of volume in adiabatie expansion is equal to the rate at which the pres- sure increases per dynamical unit of heat supplied at constant volume, multiplied by the absolute temperature.

To obtain a similar result with v and ¢ as independent variables, we have only to subtract from both sides of (1) the complete differential d (tp), so that

aK -tp)= — pdt —-pdv. Proceeding exactly as before, we find

(2)

dv dt }°

In words this result runs (when both sides are multiplied by ¢) :— The rate of increase of pressure with temperature at constant

volume, multiplied by the absolute temperature, ts equal to the rate

at which heat must be supplicd per unit increase of volume to keep

the temperature constant. Very slight variations of the process just given obtain the follow-

ing varietics of expression :— (i)~(&p) 4 (Gr)—G) dp dp dt dp)’ which are to be interpreted as above.

11. Increase of Total Energy under various Conditions.—The expression (1) of § 10 may be put in various forms, each convenient for some special purpose. We give onc example, as sufficiently showing the processes employed. Thus, suppose we wish to find how the energy of the working substance varies with its volume when the temperature is kept constant, we must express dE in terms of dv and di. Thus

. an=(52)at+e($F \dv— pao.

But we have, by § 10, under present conditions

dh\ (dp Hence ()-(Z)-».

a result assumed in a previous article (RADIATION, vol. xx. p. 217). If the working substance have the property (that of the so-called “ideal” perfect gas) po= Rt,

PAY

(7)=9

The energy of (unit mass of) such a substance thus depends upon its temperature alone.

12. Specific Heat of a Fluid.—Specific heat in its most general acceptation is the heat required, under some given condition, to raise the temperature of unit mass by one degree. Thus it is the heat taken in while the working substance passes, by some assigned path, from one isothermal ¢ to another ¢+1; and this may, of course, have as many values as there are possible paths. Usually, however, but two of these paths are spoken of, and these are taken parallel respectively to the coordinate axes in Watt's diagram, so that we speak of the specific heat at constant volume or at con- stant pressure. In what follows these will be denoted by ¢ aud & respectively.

Take v and p for the independent variables, as in the diagram, and let « be the specific heat corresponding to the condition

J (v, p)=const.

we see that, for it,"

mtderttl doe ede \y Then nit —tap—t(5 do+ Shap) ; ; af of while 0= qe t ane dt dt and mat ae * i ee *,dvdp* dpdv Thus lin df dt df dvdp dpdv

This expression vanishes iff and ¢ vary together, %.¢., in adiabatic expansion, and becomes infinite if f and ¢ vary together, 7.¢., in isothermal expansion ; as might easily have been foreseen. Other- wise it has a finite value. It is usual, however, to choose v and ¢ as independent variables, while we deal analytically (as distin- guished from diagrammatically) with the subject. From this point of view we have

THERMOYPYNAMICS

wag OE OO

But the last term on the right is, by definition, edt; so that (x o)dt=1SP dv

with the condition

af | et men: es do af laf Thus k-— C= — eee '

which is a perfectly general expression. As the most important case, let f represent the pressure, then we see, by § 10, that

dp dp

dv at’ and the formula becomes

k-c= -«(2 ; ap dt dv

13. Properties of an Ideal Substance which follows the Laws of Boyle and Charles.—Closely approximate ideas of the thermal behaviour of a gas such as air, at ordinary temperatures and pres- sures, may be obtained by assuming the relation

pv=Rt, which expresses the laws of Boyle and Charles. formula of last section, we have at once

2

7/5-R, vj e a relation given originally by Carnot.

Hence, in such a substance,

dgpact b-9@ ’ or $-b)=clogt(k-c)logv. In terms of volume and pressure, this is $- do=clog p/R+klogv, or pote Reb-¥0Nle, the equation of the adiabatics on Watt’s diagram. This is (for @ constant) the relation between p and v in the pro-

pagation of sound. It follows from the theory of wave-motion (HyDROMECHANICS) that the speed of sound is

a/ Eke, Cc

where ¢is the temperature of the undisturbed air. This expres- sion gives, by comparison with the observed speed of sound, a very accurate determination of the ratio &/cin terms of R. The value of R is easily obtained by experiment, and we have just seen that it is equal to k—c; so that & and ¢ can be found for air with great accuracy by this process,—a most remarkable instance of the indirect measurement of a quantity © whose direct determination presents very formidable difficulties.

14. Effect of Pressure on the Melting or Boiling Point of a Sub- stance.—By the second of the thermodynamic relations in § 10,

above, we have #- ag di} \dv/’

d ap— (FP)ae + (FE)av— (5 Jae + (2 oo.

But, if the fraction ¢ of the working snbstauce be in one molecular state (say liquid) in which Vp) is the volume of unit mass, while the remainder 1 —-e is in a state (solid) where V, is the volume of unit mass, we have obviously

v=eVy+(1-c¢)V,. Let L be the latent heat of the liquid, then

(52) a aa dv} UV,-V,)de XV)-V,)° Also, asin a mixture of the same substance in two different states,

the pressure remains the same while the volume changes at con- stant temperature, we have dp/dv=0, so that finally

51 \Vo= Wp,

Thus, by the

k-c=t

so that

which shows how the temperature is altered by a small change of pressure.

In the case of ice and water, V, is greater than Vj, so the temperature of the freezing-point is lowered by increase of pressure. When the proper numerical values of Vo, V;, and L are introduced, it is found that the freezing point is lowered by about 0°°0074 C. for each additional atmosphere.

When water and steam are in equilibrium, we have Vy much greater than V,, so that the boiling-point (as is well known) is raised by pressure. The same happens, and for the same reason,

%

with the melting point, in the case of bodies which expand in the act of melting, such as beeswax, paraffin, cast-iron, and lava. Such bodies may therefore be kept solid by sufficient pressure, even at temperatures far above their ordinary melting points.

This is, in a slightly altered form, the reasoning of James Thomson, alluded to above as one of the first striking applications of Carnot's methods made after his work was recalled to notice.

15. Hiffect of Pressure on Maxinwwin Density Point of Water.— One of the most singular properties of water at atmospheric pres- sure is that it has its maximum density at 4° C. Another, first pointed out by Canton in 1764, is that its compressibility (per atmosphere) is greater at low than at ordinary temperatures, —being, according to' his measurements, 0°000,049 at 34° F., and only 0'000,044 at 64° F. It is easy to see (though it appears to have been first pointed out by Puschl in 1875) that the second of these properties involves the lowering of the maximum density point by increase of pressure. To calculate the numerical amount of this effect, note that the expansibility, like all other thermal properties, may be expressed as a function of any two of the quantities p, », ¢, ; say in the present case pand?t. Then we have for the expan-

sibility 1 /dv a = 5 (ar) =(a) eset.

Also the compressibility may be expressed as

-3(2 —($) 3)

v\dp) \dp ad

The relation between small simultaneous increments of pressure and temperature, which are such as to leave the expansibility

unchanged, is thus (S) Bt-+ (Se =0 di dp JP:

Now the expansibility is zero at the maximum density point, for which therefore this equation holds. But the equations above

give de a de

()-(i)ne—(4)

(9-0

The volume of water at low temperatures under atmospheric pres-

sure varies approximately as Iles

so that

(¢- 4)? 144,000 °

Thus we have nearly; and from Canton's experi-

de_ 1 dt } 72,000 mental result above stated we gather that (roughly at least)

(3) =- 0-000,005 == = — 0‘000,000,3 ; from which the formula gives – 0°02 C. nearly for the change of the maximum density point due to one additional atmosphere.

Recent investigations, carried out by direct as well as by indirect methods, seem to agree in showing that the true value is somewhat less than this, viz., about —0°°018 C.; so that water has its maximum density at 0° C. when subjected to about 223 atmo- spheres. Thus, taking account of the result of § 14 above, we find that the maximum density point coincides with the freezing point at — 2°°8 C. under an additional pressure of about 377 atmospheres, or (say) 2°5 tons weight per square inch.

16. Motivity and Entropy, Dissipation of Energy.—The motivity of the quantity H of heat, in a body at temperature ¢, is

Hit a to)/t ? where t, is the lowest available temperature. The entropy is expressed simply as H/t, being independent of any limit of temperature. If the heat pass, by conduction, to a body of temperature ¢' (less than ¢, but greater than t)), the change of motivity (¢.¢., the dis-

sipation of energy) is al nia ioe 7)

which is, of course Joss; while the corresponding change of entropy

is the gain : el H(F 7) ‘ The numerical values of these quantities differ by the factor to, so that, if we could have a condenser at absolute zero, there could be no dissipation of energy. But we see that Clausius’s statement that the entropy of the universe tends toa maximum is practically merely another way of expressing Thomson’s earlier theory of the dissipation of ellergy. When heat is exchanged among a number of bodies, part of it

being transformed by heat-engines into work, the work obtainable | tures, until Fahrenheit proved that, however much water

(i.e., the motivity) is The work obtained, however, is simply 3(H). Thus the waste, or amount needlessly dissipated, is —t)%(H/t) . This must be essentially a positive quantity, except in the case when perfect engines have been employed in aJ/ the operations. In that case (unless indeed the unattainable condition ¢)—0 were fulfilled) 3(H/t)=0, which is the general expression of reversibility.

17. Works on the Subject.—Carnot’s work has, as we have seen, been reprinted. The scattered papers of Rankine,.Thomson, and Clausius have also been issued in collected forms. So have the experimental papers of Joule. The special treatises on T’hermo- dynamics are very numerous ; but that of Clerk-Maxwell (Theory of Heat), though in some respects rather formidable to a beginner, is as yet far superior to any of its rivals. (2”G.IL)

THERMOELECTRICITY. See Etxcrricity, vol. viii. pp. 94 sg.

THERMOMETER, an instrument for detecting and measuring differences in temperature. The name is usu- ally restricted to instruments adapted for use at moderate temperatures; those for measuring high temperatures are termed pyrometers (see PyRoMETER). Thermometry has been treated

theoretically under Hzat (see vol. xi. p. 558 sq.). It here remains to trace the history of ther- mometers, and to describe the principal forms in use.

History.—The honour of inventing the thermometer has been given to several natural philosophers of the 16th century; the claims of Robert Fludd are more tangible than those of Drebbel and Santorio, but the instrument invented by Galileo before 1597 seems best entitled to be considered the precursor of accurate thermometers. All the early instruments were air thermoscopes, and, until the variations of atmospheric pressure were discovered, their use was only deceptive. Galileo's thermometer (fig. 1) consisted of a glass bulb containing air, terminating below in a long glass tube which dipped into a vessel containing a coloured fluid. The variations of volume of the enclosed air caused the fluid to fall or rise in the tube, to which an arbitrary scale was attached. The great step in advance of inventing the alcohol thermometer is also due to Galileo, but the date (probably 1611 or 1612) is not precisely known. Rinieri

Fig. 1. certainly had alcohol thermometers made before 1647, and they are referred to as familiarly known in the

oldest memoirs of the Accademia del Cimento (1667). In form they resembled those now in use ; they had large spherical (or, occasionally, cylindrical or helical) bulbs, and the degrees in- tended to represent thousandths of the volume of the reservoir were marked with beads of enamel fused on to the stem (fig. 2). All the Florentine instruments were graduated in the same way, but the scale was arbitrary, and the recorded readings were accordingly supposed for a long time to be useless. In 1829 the fortunate discovery by Antinori of a number of those early Florentine thermometers enabled their scale to be ascer- tained and translated into known degrees. The temperature of melting ice was marked by them as 13°5, while 50 corresponded with 55°C. No

means of comparing observations made by ther-

mometers of different manufacture existed until

certain fixed points of universal accessibility were ~ —4 discovered. The thermal coriditions of freezing Fig. 2.

could be cooled down without freezing, the temperature when ice began to form was always the same. Hooke, in 1665 (Micrographia, p. 38), describes the manufacture and graduation of comparable spirit thermometers with the freezing point of water as the zero of their scales, and he evidently recognized it as fixed. Halley in 1693 stated that the temperature of boiling water is constant, and this was again proved by Amoutons in 1702. In 1694 Renaldeni of Padua proposed to graduate thermometers by taking as standards of temperature mixtures of definite volumes of ice-cold and boiling water. This method, although theoretically admirable (see Heat, vol. xi. p. 559), is defective in practice. Seven years later Newton proposed anonymously (Phil. Trans., 1701, vol. xxii. p. 824) a thermometer scale on which the temperature of freezing water was 0°, and that of the blood of a healthy man 12°. Continuing the graduation of a linseed-oil thermometer above this point, he found that water boiled at 34°. Fahrenheit in 1714 took as fixed points the temperature of the human body and that of a mixture of ice and sal ammoniac or common salt. In 1721 he made a mercury thermometer according to Halley's suggestion of 1693, and by means of it he proved the dependence of the boiling point on pressure. It was not until after Fahrenheit's death that the freezing and boiling points of water were universally accepted as fixed points on the thermometric scale. The thermometer has remained un- changed in its main features since the middle of the 18th century. Mercury has been found the most convenient fluid for ordinary use, in spite of the advantages (HEat, vol. xi. p. 561 sq.) presented by lighter and more volatile liquids. Graduation of thermometers, by marking off volumes of the stem equal to a given fraction of the capacity of the bulb, although reintroduced by Réaumur in 1730, has now been entirely discontinued.

The idea of a self-registering thermometer early pre- sented itself. Many forms were devised by natural philo- sophers and instrument-makers. That of Sixe, in 1782, a precursor of which, dating from the 17th century, is preserved amongst the instruments of the Florentine Academy, was the most successful.

Scales.—The absolute zero of temperature is the logical beginning of a thermometric scale, but some point easy of reference is desirable, and this is found in the tempera- ture at which ice melts and water freezes. The second

accepted fixed point is that at which distilled water boils under the pressure of 760 millimetres (29-92 in.) of mer- cury. For the division of the space between the two fixed points into degrees of convenient length only three of the innumerable methods proposed have survived, and one of these, the centigrade, is rapidly becoming universal. The oldest system, that of Fahrenheit, dates from 1724. It is used for meteorological purposes, and popularly, in Great Britain, the British colonies, and the United States. The freezing point is marked 32° and the boiling point of water 212°. At first Fahrenheit employed a scale of 180 degrees ; the zero was placed at "temperate" (9° C.); 90° at " blood-heat," the point to which the alcohol rose when the thermometer was placed under the arm of a healthy man; and ~ 90° at the temperature of a mixture of ice and salt, then believed to be the greatest possible cold. In 1714 Fahrenheit changed his scale at the suggestion of the Danish astronomer Roemer, placed 0° at his "absolute zero," and divided the space between that and the warmth of the human body into 24 degrees. The freezing point of water thus became 8°. For convenience, these long degrees were divided into quarters, which were afterwards

water were studied with great care, but natural congelation | termed degrees ; thus the freezing point became 32° and

was generally supposed to take place at variable tempera- | blood heat 96°.

A mercury thermometer graduated in

this way, with divisions of equal length continued above blood heat, registered 212° in boiling water. Thus the Fahrenheit scale came from a duodecimal reckoning.

De Lisle, in 1724, introduced a scale in which the boiling point of water was marked 0° and the temperature of the cellars of the Paris Observatory 100°. He after- wards adopted the freezing point of water as his upper fixed point, and called it 150°. This scale was used for many years in Russia, but is now obsolete.

In 1730 Réaumur made alcohol thermometers with their zero at the freezing point of water, and degrees of one- thousandth of the volume of the bulb. On some of these the boiling point of water was 80°; but the instruments were defective in principle and very unequal in their indications. Deluc introduced mercury thermometers graduated from 0° in melting ice to 80° in boiling water, and these, with Réaumur's name attached, are in use for popular purposes in Germany, Holland, and other parts of the Continent.

Celsius adopted a centesimal scale in 1742. The boiling point was marked 0° and the freezing point of water 100°. Linnzeus introduced the mode of reckoning from 0° in melting ice to 100° in boiling water, which is now known as the centigrade, and is used universally in laboratories, and in all except English-speaking countries for every scientific purpose.

Fahrenheit's scale is convenient for meteorological work on account of its short degrees, admitting of great accuracy in reading and compactness in recording, and on account of its low zero, which makes it possible in temperate climates to dispense with negative quantities. On the other hand, the centigrade scale is on the whole so con- venient, its use is so nearly universal, and the advantage of a uniform system is so great that it must ultimately be adopted for all purposes.!

Arm THERMOMETER.—Under constant pressure gases expand equally for equal increments of heat. Hencc, when an air thermo- meter is graduated between two fixed points the graduation may be continued above and below these points in degrees of the same length ; and any number of air thermometers so made will agree amongst themselves at every temperature. The principle of air thermometers is treated of in Huar (ut sup.), and examples of special forms are described in that article and in PYROMETER. The air thermometer is the ultimate standard of reference to which all other thermometers are referred.

AtcoHoL THERMOMETER.—Alcohol, the first liquid used for thermometric purposes, possesses numerous advantages, and on account of its low freezing point it is always used for observations in polar regions. Alcohol thermometers are graduated by fixing the freezing point in melting ice and by comparison with a mer- cury or air thermometer at several higher and lower temperatures. Recently low-temperature thermometers have been

verified at Kew in melting mercury at the temperature of —40. The law of expan- sion of alcohol in glass at low temperatures is not known with such precision as to make the minimum indications of Arctic expedi- tions entirely trustworthy. The graduation of ordinary minimum alcohol thermometers used for metcorological purposes is effected by comparison with mercury standards, and their indications, so far as this source of uncertainty is concerned, may consequently be relied on.

Mercury 1N Guass THERMOMETER.—The simplest form is the Weight Thermometer, a large glass bulb terminating in a capillary tube, and filled with a known weight of mercury at 0° C. The weight of mercury that escapes when the apparatus is heated to

‘ The process of converting readings of any one of the three existing scales into those of any other is a simple matter of proportion. They

stand in the ratio of 80; 100: 180 (82 being subtracted from Fahren- |

heit temperatures before the calculation is made, and added to the result when converting from Réaumur or centigrade into Fahrenheit). An easy rule for changing centigrade readings into Fahrenheit mentally 1s—multiply the centigrade temperature by 2, subtract one-tenth of the product, and add 32:e ., 10° C.=20-2+382=50° F. These tules are only to be applied to thermometers made with all modern precautions, When the boiling point was determined by immersing the bulb of the thermometer in boiling water or in steam at any pressure other than 760 mm. appropriate corrections have to be applied. For a detailed historical account, see Renou, “ Histoire du Thermométre,” Annuaire Soc. Mét. de France, 1876.

100° is determined, and the temperature of any enclosure is then ascertained by placing in it the thermometer filled at zero, and weighing the liquid that runs out. Thermometers on this principle were used by Regnault in his celebrated researches on steam.

Standard Thermometers.—The tube is sometimes made with elliptical bore to ensure visibility of the mercury column, but it is usually circular in

section. The internal diameter must be as nearly as possible uniform. This is tested by a preliminary calibration in which a short thread of mercury is measured in different parts of the tube. The length of stem and the range of the thermometer having been decided upon, the size of the bulb is calculated from the known expansibility of mercury and the section of the bore. The bulb is made as nearly as possible the required size, either by blowing it from a tubc or preferably by forming it of a glass cylinder, and attached to the stem. The bulb is usually cylindrical in form and it must be uniform in thickness. The utmost care requires to be exercised to keep the bulb and stem dry and clean and to fill them with pure mercury recently distilled. The mercury is boiled in the thermometer for some time to drive out all traces of air and moisture, and the point of the stem is sealed off. If the thermometer is not intended to measure tem- peratures up to the boiling point of mercury, an expansion should be made at the top of the tube to prevent bursting from accidental overheating. Under Hzrar (vol. xi. p. 561) the changes of volume which thermometer bulbs undergo in cooling and for a long time afterwards are discussed. The process of annealing by heating to a temperature excecding 400° C. for some hours as originally pro- posed by Person,? or in vapour of mercury for several days as recently practised at Kew, renders the thermometer much less liable to suffer change of zero by the lapse of time or by heating to any lower temperature. All instruments of precision should be treated in this way, or kept for several years after they have been filled and sealed before they are graduated.

The first fixed point on the scale is marked at the place whcre the mercury stands when the thermometer is buried in melting ice from which the water is allowed to drain away, the second at the place where the mercury stands when the thermometer is immersed in steam of water boiling freely under the pressure of 760 mm. (29°92 inches) of mercury corrected to 0°C. The space between these may be graduated either in arbitrary equidistant divisions, as it is best to do in delicate instruments, or in degrees of any scale. Each degree centigrade is y4y of the volume of the tube between the freezing and boiling points; if the tube is quite uniform in bore the degrees will be of equal length and may be marked off correctly by a dividing engine. If the preliminary calibration showed the tube to vary in diameter, the degree marks are often adjusted to correspond to intervals of equal volume. It is better in all cases, whether degrees or arbitrary divisions are

adopted, to have them of equal length and correct the readings by the calibration curve. The scale may be continued above and beneath the fixed points in degrees or divisions of the same length.

Calibration consists in measuring the internal volume of the thermometer tube by means of a thread of mercury detached from the main column. There are several ways of doing this, for parti- culars of which reference may be made to the British Association Report on the subject (1882, pp. 145-204), where references to original memoirs,are given. The best and simplest is Gay Lussac's "step by step " method.

The most recent and approved processes of manufacturing, testing, and using standard thermometers of great delicacy and high pre- cision are described by Guillaume in his "Etudes Thermométriques" (Travaux et Mémoires du Bureau International des Poids et Mesures, y., 1886) ;3 for additional information the work of Pickering cited below may also be consulted.

Comparison of Thermometers.—As the apparent expansion of mercury in glass from -39° to 100° C.* is very nearly proportional to the amount of heat imparted to it, a thermometer made and divided as indicated above is anatural standard. Butthe apparent expansion with different kinds of glass differs (see HEAt, vol. xi. pp. 568-4), and, except at the fixed points or near them, mercury thermometers of different construction will only fortuitously agree absolutely among themselves or with the air thermometer. Bosscha® states that at 50° C. the mercury thermometer shows an error of 0°°5, other experimenters place it as high as 1°, but Mascart found it to amount only to 0°06."7. For purposes of ordi- nary experiment thermometers are compared at several tempera- tures with some standard instrument of known value—that of the Kew observatory for Great Britain,—and all results are stated in terms of the standard. The methods of comparison at Kew are

2 Comptes Rendus, xix., 1844, p. 1314.

3 Abstract by Guillaume in the Séances de la Soc. Francaise de Physique, 1886, p. 219.

4 Ayrton and Perry, Phil. Mag. [5], xxii. 1886, p. 325.

5 See also Kraffts, Comptes Rendus, xcv. 836.

§ Comptes Rendus, lxix. 875. See Note by Regnault, idid., 879.

7 Berthelot, Mécanique Chémique, i. 158.

described by Welsh (Proc. R. S., vi. 181) and Whipple (Phil. Mag., [5], xxi., 1886, p. 27).

The reading of thermometers is greatly facilitated by the process of enamelling the back, and still more by that of entirely surround- ing the instrument with enamel except over a narrow strip through which the mercury is seen.1 The enamel must not be allowed to encroach og the bulb, for that would endanger the homogeneity and strength of the glass.

THERMOMETERS EMPLOYED FOR SPECIAL Purposes. —Physical and Chemical Work.—For all purposes of minute accuracy where thermometers are applicable standard instruments must be em- ployed. They must be used in one position only. The stem 1s usually engraved with an arbitrary seale of equal divisions, the total range not exceeding 15° C., and readings are made by a cathetometer at some distance. ‘The use of an intermediate bulb, first recommended by Person, enables the fixed points to be observed on instruments of. very short range. Results of great accuracy, certainly to 0°‘005 C., may be obtained in this way for comparative purposes if suflicient care be taken ; but the greater the sensitiveness of a thermometer the more difficult is it to obtain a series of concordant readings (HEat, vol. xi. p. 562). Pickering? uses thermometers of extreme sensitiveness, in which, by conveying the excess of mercury into an expansion at the top of the stem, he secures that the same part of the short arbitrary scale is used for every temperature that has to be measured. In physical researchies thermoelectric junctions are more often used than thermometers for measuring very small differences of temperature.

For ordinary work in a chemical or ae laboratory thermo- ineters are used which can be read easily to one-tenth of a degree centigrade, and have a range from 0° to 100°, or in some cases to 350°C, They are always either engraved on the stem or graduated on an included scale (see Huar, figs. 4, 5), and are not mounted on frames of any kind. It is not necessary to calibrate such thermo- meters ; but they should be compared with a standard at several temperatures and frequently verified in melting ice and steam of boiling water.

Zincke's chemical thermometer for high temperature has a scale commencing at 100° C. In Geissler's nitrogen thermometer the range is extended by raising the boiling point of the included mer- cury, the upper part of the tube being filled with rarefied nitrogen.

Meteorological.—The thermometer was early applied to the study of differences of climate, and this is still one of its most important uses. The wet and dry bulb thermometers placed in the shade give the temperature and humidity (see HyGrometry) of the surrounding air, but "shade" and "surrounding air" require to be defined. Shade is intended to exclude rain and prevent all radiation; and the surroundiug air is that of the atmosphere in the neighbourhood of the thermometer outside any shelter that may be used. The simplest way of observing is to hang up a thermometer in the shadow of some rather distant object and leave it until it acquires a steady temperature ; but this method has been found impracticable and does not give very exact results.

In different countries different patterns of thermometer shelter are employed and exposure takes place at a different height above the ground, Results so obtained cannot be critically compared, and the relative mean temperatures of the atmosphere in different countries are only known to within one or two degrees. The Stevenson double-louvred screen (see vol. xvi. p. 115), a box open below, provided with a solid roof, is used at all meteorological stations in Great Britain. It is placed 4 feet from the ground, and painted white outside and inside. The results derived from its use are comparable, because the conditions in which it is em- ployed are the same, but the general introduction of a double roof would greatly add to its efficiency. Exposure outside windows or in wall boxes is the rule in Austria. In France

the Renou screen is largely used; it is a flat roof one square metre in extent, and double; the thermometers are hung under it two metres from the ground, A similar roof, but of much larger size, is employed in Australia, in combination with a metal thermometer-box. A metallic box, constructed of double louvres with an air-space between, finds favour in Spain. In Russia and Switzerland Wild's shelter is extensively employed. The thermometers are enclosed in a case composed of two or three concentric zinc cylinders per- forated to admit air, and placed 11 feet above the ground. They are protected by a large shelter of wood, the south wall and roof of which are double and made of solid boards, between which air circulates; the east and west sides are louvred, and the north side entirely open. A similar shelter is used in Canada, to cover a box of single sheet-iron louvres in which the thermometers are placed 4% feet from the ground. Various systems of exposure were authorized in the United States until 1885. It was then decided, as the result of experiments * carried on for nearly two years, that a uniform pattern of shelter be adopted by the Signal Service. It

1 Whipple, Brit, Assoc, Reports, 1885, p. 937.

2 Phil. Mag., (5), xxi, 1886, p. 831; xxiii., 1887, pp. 401, 406.

hs age "Thermometer Exposure," Prof, Papers of Signal Service, No. xviii., é

radiation. Some form of sling ther- mometer should always be used for

THERMOMETER

is a single-louvred wooden box, 8 fect 6 inches long, 8 feet wide and high, with a movable bottom and a double roof. are provided with an upright flange on their inner side, designed to keep rain from the thermometers. to be fixed either 9 feet above a roof or 16 feet above grass.

The louvres The bottom of the shelter is

All these screens are confessedly imperfect, although most of

them are well adapted for the climates in which they are used, Numerous comparisons of different screens with each other have been made,* but in some cases sufficient precautions in the way of using instruments precisely similar and only dissimilarly situated have not been observed, and the results are uncertain. comparison of the leading forms of thermometer shelter in use is still a desideratum.

A critical

The sling thermometer® (thermometre Jronde), a small thermo-

meter whirled in the air at the end of a string, is often used as a standard, and gives more correct readings than most closed screens. devised a series of thermometer boxes on a new principle, radiation being taken advantage of to produce a constant draught over the thermometer bulbs by the use of along blackened chimney. These give admirable results. Very small and bright objects are little affected by radiation: hence thermometers with bulbs of small diameter and coated with a bright deposit of gold or silver have been used with- out screens. has also been calculated by means of a formula from the readings of two similar thermometers, the bulbs

All open screens are untrustworthy. Aitken® has

The air temperature

of which are unequally affected by

observations at sea; the Board of Trade screen generally employed is thoroughly objectionable, and can only give moderately good results by the exercise of great precautions on the part of the observer.”

As a rule, thermometers for meteorological purposes are made with spherical bulbs, although

[ZA

. . . o— am cylindrical reservoirs present cer- URS tain advantages. To ensure per- -_

fect uniformity in registration, the bulbs should all be as nearly as possible of one size, constructed of one kind of glass, and the mount- ing perfectly uniform. Better-class instruments have the bulb clear of the frame, and the stem attached to a slab of metal, of porcelain, Fig. 3.—Aitken's Thermometer Screen or of glass backed by wood; but ioe Waxtrance Theeaeeee sometimes they are simply fixed to a boxwood scale. In all cases they should be graduated on the stem, and compared with a standard, but in view of the uncertainty of the methods of ther- mometer exposure great delicacy is undesirable.

The influence of height on thermometers for ascertaining the temperature of the air 'has been investigated with somewhat con- flicting results ;® the disparity is at lcast partly due to the use of dissimilar instruments.

Registering Thermometers,—Rutherford's maximum, invented before 1790,° was an ordinary mercury thermometer placed horizon- tally ; the eolumn pushed before it a small steel index, which was left at the highest point reached. It is little used now. The maximum thermometers in common use for meteorological pur- poses are Negretti & Zambra's and Phillips's. The former is a modified outflow thermometer. It is made with a constriction in the tube near the bulb, past which the mercury easily expands, but cannot return when the temperature falls, as the column breaks at the narrowed point when the fluid in the bulb begins to contract. The thermometer acts horizontally, but Everett devised a modification which is hung bulb uppermost, and the mercury, as it passes the constriction, falls down and stands as a column in the inverted tube. The thermometer is set by swinging

MMMM WW

4 Gaster, Quart. Weather Report for 1879 (1882), Appendix ii.; Wild, Mitthetl. der naturforsch. Gesellsch. in Bern, 1860, 108; Marriott, Quart. J. Roy. Met. Soc., 1879, v. 217 ; Stow, 2. 1882, viil, 228; Gill, #., 1882, viii. 238; Mawley, 1b., 1884, x. 1; Aitken, Proc. R. S. E£., 1884, xii. 681; Dickson, %)., 1885, xiii. 199; Hazen, Joc. cit.

5 The first use of this instrument is usually stated to have been by Arago (Guvres, 1858, viii, p. 500), but Saussure employed it for wet-bulb

observations, and doubtless invented it (see Voyages dans les Alpes, 1796, iv. p. 267).

6 Proc. R. S. E., 1884, xii. 660; 1885, xiii. 199; 1886, xiii, 632.

7 Caborne, Quart. J. Roy Met. Soc., 1881, vii. 10.

8 Hazen, Joc. cit.; Wild and Cantoni in Report of Vienna Meteorological Con- ference, 1874; Symons, Proc. &. S., 1883, xxxv. 310; Omond, Proc. R. 8. £., 1886-87, 9 Trans. R. S. E., iii., 1794, p. 247.

it. Phillips's maximum, claimed also by Walferdin, has a por- tion-of the mercury thread separated from the rest by a minute bubble of air. It is placed horizontally, and, as temperature increases, the detached portion of mercury is pushed forward and ig not withdrawn when the main column retreats toward the bulb on cooling. It is set for a new observation by bringing it into a vertical position and tapping it slightly. By reducing the length of the index and the bore of the stem this thermometer may be made suitable for use in any position without altering its register. Walferdin's outflow maximum thermometer is a modification of that of Lord Charles Cavendish! and the type of a number of similar instruments. It is set by filling the stem entirely with mereury from a lateral chamber at the top (fig. 4). The instrument is placed vertically, and as temperature rises mercury overflows into the rescrvoir. To be read, the thermometer is brought back to its original tempera- ture, then the number of degree spaces left vacant at the top of the tube shows the excess of maximum tempera- ‘ ture above that at the time of setting.

The minimum thermometer in most frequent use is that of John Rutherford, invented in 1790. It is a spirit thermometer, preferably filled with amyl alcohol to reduce risk of distillation, in the column of which a small poree- lain index is included. The instrument is hung hori- zontally, and, as temperature falls, the index is drawn back by the surface tension of the fluid. When tempera- ture rises, the liquid flows past the index easily, leaving it at the lowest point attained. Baudin invented a modification called the thermometre & marteau in 1862; it acts vertically, the index being

fixed by a spring, as in Sixe's thermometer, and set by a long glass needle included in the stem, which, when the instrument is inverted, falls on the index and drives it to the surface of the alcohol. The mercurial minimum of Casella is an instrument of great delicacy and beauty, extremely difficult to make, and requir- ing careful handling in its 3 use. A side tube of wide = bore ae (fig. 5) is joined to the stem of an ordi- nary mercurial thermo- £ meter near the bulb. This tube terminates in a small chamber a}, cut off by a perpendicular glass diaphragm which is perforated by a hole of greater diameter than the thermometer stem. When set, the mercury in the stem indicates the actual temperature, and the chamber is empty. On the principle of Balfour Stewart's fluctua- tion thermometer,? when the instrument is heated the mercury remains stationary in the stem but expands into the chamber ad, When cooled, the mercury passes out of the chamber; when this is empty, the temperature has returned to that at which the instru- ment was set, the surface attraction of glass and mercury prevents the fluid leaving the diaphragm 3, and all subsequent contraction takes place from the stem. The position of the mercury column in the stem marks the minimum temperature since last setting. The instrument is set by raising the bulb end and allowing all the mercury to flow from the chamber.

Thermometers which record the actual temperature at any required time, by a change of position produced by a clock, were employed by Blackadder® in 1826. His process was complicated and uncertain. Negretti & Zambra have a simpler arrangement that works well. Several of their reversing thermometers (see under Deep-Sea Thermometers) are pivoted on a frame, and held upright by catches whieh are withdrawn in turn at definite intervals by an electrical arrangement regulated by a elock. Each instru- ment, when it reverses, preserves the record of temperature at that moment until it is set again.

No thoroughly satisfactory self-registering maximum or minimum thermometer has yet been produced. In all existing forms the indications are liable to be disturbed by shaking. Where alcohol is the fluid used, it is apt to volatilize and accumulate at the top of the tube, so registering a much lower temperature than actually occurs. It is extremely difficult also to free alcohol thermometers from air, which gradually escapes from solution in the fluid and renders the instrument untrustworthy or even useless.

Radiation Thermometers.—The intensity of solar radiation is measured by the pyrheliometer, which usually consists of a body heated by the sun's rays and a thermometer to measure the rise of temperature. In meteorology radiation is measured by thermo- meters simply exposed with blackened bulbs. Results of the utmost diversity are given by different methods. As thero is no means of determining the true measure of radiation, all that can be done is to have the instruments whose indications are to be compared constructed and exposed in the same way. The usual

1 Phil. Trans., i., 1757, p. 300. Henry Cavendish's register thermometer is on another principle and a much less practical Instrument (see Wilson's Life of

Cavendish, p. 477). Proc, R. S., viii 195. 3 Trans. R. S. E., 1826, x. 8387, 440.

form, as suggested by Herschel, is a maximum thermometer with a spherieal bulb half an ineh in diameter eoated with lamp- blaek and placed in the centre of a spherical vessel of clear glass, 24 inches in diameter, and exhausted of air. The state of the vacuum may be shown by including a small mereurial manometer, or a radiometer, or by soldering in platinum electrodes through which a discharge can be made in the interior. It is not essential that the vacuum be very perfect; some observers prefer to employ a globe filled with dry air. For separate instruments to be com- parable, Whipple 4 and Ferrel ® have shown that the bulbs must be truly spherical, of equal thickness and size (a difference of 8 per cent. in diameter produces variations of several degrees), blackened sufficiently to absorb all radiation falling on them, and placed accu- rately in the centre of perfectly spherical enelosures, which must also be of equal diameter. The stem should be as small as possible in proportion to the bulb; and before being used for comparative purposes all radiation thermometers should be compared with an arbitrary standard by daily exposure for several weeks to sunshine. Minimum radiation thermometers, intended to measure radiation from the earth at night, are usually filled with alcohol, and much ingenuity has been expended on inereasing their delicacy. The bulbs are made very large relatively to the bore, and constructed so as to expose a great surface, the

reservoir being often helical, lenticular, annular, spoon-shaped, forked, or even like a gridiron. Earth Thermometers. Saussure introduced the use of sluggish thermometers packed in non-conducting material for taking the temperature of the soil at different depths. Symon's earth thermo- meter on this principle is a slow-action instrument cased in felt, and is lowered by a chain into an iron tube which has previously been sunk to the required depth. It may be withdrawn and read with- out changing its record. The underground temperature committee of the British Association have used both slow-action and selé-negia- tering thermometers for their observations in mines and shafts. Thermometers with very long stems, which can be read above ground, fitted in deep borings in the rock, are used at the observa- tories of Greenwich and Edinburgh for investigating earth tem- perature. Those at present established at the Royal Observatory, Edinburgh,' are the successors of a sct fixed in the rock in 1837, and broken aecidentally in 1876. They are placed with their bulbs at depths of 25, 12, 6, 3 feet beneath the surface respectively, and one has its bulb just covered. 'The readings of the intermediate thermometers supply data for correcting the long columns of alcohol in the deeper ones for the different temperatures of their different parts. Allowance may be made for this effect without calculation by utilizing the principle applied by Sainte-Claire Deville to pyrometers. A second stem, similar in every way to that of the thermometer, nearly filled with the same fluid, but hermetically sealed at the lower end, is fixed beside the thermo- meter stem. The fluctuations it shows are due solely to causes affecting the stem and not the bulb of the thermometer, and they are eliminated from the readings of the latter by taking account only of the difference of level of the fluid in the two tubes. { Deep-Sea Thermometers. —The earliest ob- } servations of warmth beneath the surface were made by raising samples of water in a valved box and noting the temperature when it was brought on board. Saussure, in addi- tion to this, used sluggish thermometers, which he left immersed for several hours before reading. His latest thermometer for sca-work was filled with alcohol, and had a bulb more than an inch in diameter, which was imbedded in a mass of wax and enclosed in a stout wooden case. It attained the tem- perature of its surroundings very slowly, pre- served it for a long time, and gave, in his hands, thoroughly trustworthy results. On the introduction of registering thermometers these were used, but the unsuspected magni- tude of the effect of pressure at great depths made the earlier records entirely

misleading. A modification of Sixe’s thermometer, pro- tected from pressure by the addition of an outer bulb partially filled with a liquid, is now usually employed on deep-sea expeditions. Those used on the “Challenger,” under the name of Miller-Casella thermometers, were of the form shown in fig. 6. The tube is U-shaped, the bend and part of each limb filled with mercury, the rest of the tube, the bulb, and part of the expansion on the other side with alcohol. A steel index, held in its place by the pressure of a hair, is immersed

}), a Hi sl i}

Fic. 6.—Miller-Casella Thermometer,

4 Quart. J. R. Met. Soc., 1879, v. 142; 1884, x. 45.

5 Signal Service Prof. Papers, No. xiii., 1884, p. 34.

6 For a résumé of the methods and work of the committee, see Brit. Assoc. Reports, 1882, p. 74.

7 Trans. R. S. E., 1880, xxix. p. 687,

in the spirit m each limb above the mercury, which pushes one or other before it as the temperature is rising or falling, and leaves them at points denoting the highest and lowest tempera- tures passed through. The indexes are set by a magnet. The ‘‘Challenger” thermometers, which were not graduated on the stems, were secured side by side with porcelain temperature scales to vulcanite frames and placed in copper cases perforated to allow a circulation of water. Tait investigated the whole subject of pres- sure corrections after the return of the expedition, and found that the high result obtained by a previous experimenter was due mainly to heat developed by compression of the vulcanite, which affected the thermometer in the press, but would not do so at sea, The eorrection which had to be applied was rather less than } of a degree Fahr. per mile of depth.! These thermometers require to be immersed from twenty minutes to half an hour before they acquire the temperature of the water, they can only be read

to quarter degrees Fahr., and they simply indicate the extreme tem- peratures through which they have passed. Buchanan has greatly improved the instrument by reducing the bore of the tube on the minimum side, which is that most frequently used, thus giving long degrees. An arbitrary scale is engraved on the stem.* His mereury piezometer is affected by temperature and by pressure, and enables the actual temperature at any known depth to be found. Aimé in 18453 invented a very ingenious arrangement of outflow thermometers, which were inverted by a weight slipping down the line, and registered as they were being drawn up. His instru- ments were aceurate, but very delicate and troublesome / to manage, Within the last few years Negretti and Zambra have patented several forms of modified out- flow thermometers. The first instrument of the kind was complicated and unmanageable, but that now before the public is both simple and convenient. It consists of a mercury thermometer with a cylindrical bulb and a stem AC (fig. 7) of wide bore terminating inasmall pyriform aneurism. The stem is contracted and contorted just above the bulb, and when the in- strument is turned upside down the mercury column breaks at this point and flows down into the tube, which is graduated in the inverted position. To pro- tect it from pressure the thermometer is hermeti- cally sealed in a strong glass tube, the portion of whieh surrounding the bulb contains a quantity of mercury secured by a ring of india-rubber cement. When the thermometer is made to turn over at any depth in water of any temperature, the record remains nearly unaltered, and, until set for a new observa- tion, enables the actual temperature at the instant of reversal to be ascertained at any subsequent time and in any other place. The detached column stand- ing in the tube changes its length slightly by change of temperature. A series of experiments with twelve instruments has shown that for 60° F. change of tem- perature there is a difference of one degree in the reading of the inverted thermometer. Hence a cor- rection must be applied in all cases where the tem- perature at which the thermometer is read differs more than a few degrees from that at which it was inverted, contrary to the opinion of the German observers.4 If a thermometer is inverted in water and read while wet, the temperature by which it should be corrected

is obviously that given by the wet-bulb in air. In ae a a view of the great range of temperature experienced in Fatny deep-sea work in the tropics, the

size of the little Deep-Sea

overflow cell B, which prevents mercury from the bulb Thermometer from entering the tube must be considerably increased Mianeees)s before the thermometer can be used with safety for such purposes. The Negretti and Zambra thermometer acquires the temperature of its surroundings very rapidly (two or three minutes are usually sufficient); it can be read easily to tenths of a degree Fahr.; and, above all, it ascertains temperature at exact points of depth, and has thus revealed layers of remarkably varying temperature > which could not have been detected by the other instruments in use.

The loaded wooden frame originally employed for reversing the thermometer is unsatisfactory, and Magnaghi's reversing gear aetuated by the revolution of a small propeller set in motion by the water when the thermometer is drawn up briskly, is not to be trusted in shallow water or where there are rapid currents. When the pin is withdrawn the thermometer case turns over and is elamped by a side-spring on the frame. Rung® adopted a simpler and better though somewhat clumsy frame, in which the thermometer was made to turn by slipping a weight down the line.

1 " Challenger" Narrative, ii., App. I., 1882.

2 For a general account of dcep-sea thermometers, see Buchanan, Proc. R. S. £., Xx. 1878, 77; and " Chal.' Reports, Narrative, vol. i., 1884, p. 84.

3 Ann. Chim. Phys., [8], 1845, xv. 1.

4 Ergebnisse der Untersuchungensfahrt der Drache, Berlin, 1886, p. 2.

5 Mill, Jour. Scot. Met. Soc. [3], 1886, No. iii. p. 289.

6 Den Tekniske Forenings Tidskrift, 1883.

THERMOMETER

The United States Fish Commission? employ the thermometer in a frame adapted for use on a wire sounding line, and also actuated by a messenger,

but the thermometer is not clamped on turning over. The Scottish marine station produced® a modification of Magnaghi's frame, the propeller being replaced by a forked lever held down by a spiral spring and raised when the thermometer is to be reversed by the impact of a Rung's messenger (fig. 8). A messenger placed on the line below, and hung by a loop to the upper groove of the thermometer, is let go when the thermometer turns and reverses another instrument lower down. Instead of being lashed to the sounding line, the frame is retained by a ram's horn spiral below and clamped byasmallvice 4

at the upper end. Buchanan has modified and simplified the frame, combining its mode of attachment to the line with the American method of reversing.

Neumayer? has attempted to use a photo- graphic thermograph for deep-sea work, the light being supplied by a Geissler tube excited by a small battery. Siemens's electrical ther- mometer has also been experimented with,'° but has hardly been brought to a practicable state, and the same may be said for the use of thermoelectric junctions.

Hypsometer.—The boiling-point thermome- ter or hypsometer may be used to obtain an independent measure of the pressure of the atmosphere, and so to determine an altitude or verify an aneroid barometer. It consists of a very delicate mercury thermometer gradu- ated only for 20 or 25 degrees Fahr. in the neighbourhood of the boiling point of water and divided on the stem into tenths. A large aneurism on the tube a little above the bulb should allow the freezing point to be verified from time to time on the portion of stem beneath it. The thermometer is hung in a cylindrical tin vessel in which water is boiled by a spirit lamp placed underneath. The bulb must be raised considerably above the level of the water, and the whole stem to the top of the mercury column immersed in the steam. After steam has been escaping freely for some time the temperature is read, and by reference to a table the barometric pressure, and consequently the altitude, is obtained.

Clinical Thermometers.—The first use to which thermometers were applied was the study of the temperature of the blood in fevers ; and the constancy of the temperature of the healthy human body was for a century considered sufficient to entitle it to the posi- tion of a fixed point in graduating

thermome- ters. The increased importance now attached to temperature in disease has led to the pro- duction of many forms of clinical thermo- meter. The large instruments intended to be read in sitw are now entirely superseded by small maximum self-registering thermometers. Graduation is carried to one-tifth of a degree, and the usual range is about 25 degrees Fahr., —from 85° or 90° to 110° or 115°. Olive-shaped bulbs have been used, but a cylindrical form is most common. There should be an arrangement like that suggested for hypso- meters to enable the freezing point to be verified. Casella's thermo- meter on Phillips's system has a small cxpansion on the stem, followed by a contraction, to prevent the index following the rest of the mercury into the bulb when the instrument is not in use. The ''half-minute thermometer" is quick in action ; it has a bulb of very sinall diameter and an extremely fine bore, the mercury thread being rendered visible by Hicks's arrangement of a lens- fronted stem. Immisch's avitreous thermometer is recommended for clinical use on account of its small sizc, convenient shape, and non-liability to get out of order.

Thermometers for Technical Purposes.—These are made in an infinite variety of forms, adapted to the various processes of manu- facture and industry. The scale is often dispensed with in these instruments, a movable pointer being fixed at the point at which the mercury is to be kept. Air or steam thermometers (see PyRo- METER) arc rapidly superseding mercury instruments for all tem- peratures above the boiling point of water. The cheap German paper-scale thermometers are largely used, fitted in wooden cases,

Fie. 8.—Scot- tish Frame for Deep-Sea Ther- mometer. Mes- senger descend- ing to reverse the instrument.

7 Report, 1882.

8 Mill, Proc. R. S. E., xii. 1884, 928.

9 Nature, viii. 195. 10 " Challenger" Reports, Narrative, 1884, i. p. 95.

as dairy thermometers, and a larger size for brewing purposes. Alarm thermometers are often employed, in which electrie contact is made and a bell rung when the temperature exceeds or falls short of a certain limit. Thermostats of various forms are made use of, in which a thermometer, by the position of the mercury in the stem, regulates the gas-supply of a burner and thus the heat of au enclosure.

Metallic Thermometers.—Thermometers depending on change in length or form of composite metal bars, such as Crighton's zinc-iron bar and Bréguet's silver-gold-platinum spiral (see PYROMETER), are converted into registering instruments by the addition of two light pointers pushed forward by the index needle as it travels round the graduated are to either side and left at their extreme points. Jirgensen in 1841 constructed a chronometer, the balance wheel of which was arranged so as to exaggerate the effects of change of temperature and thus to affect the rate. It furnished a very close approximation to the mean temperature between the intervals of rating, and was approved by Arago for use in observa- tions. Hermann and Pfister's metallie thermometer! is probably the best adapted for meteorological purposes, and has given satisfactory results at the Zurich observatory. It is a flat spiral of brass and steel, which unrolls and coils up according to changes of temperature, moving an index on a divided horizontal circle and marking the maximum and minimum by light pointers. In order to secure regular results, the instrument must be annealed by heating for some time in boiling linseed oil.

Several instruments known popularly as metallic thermometers depend on a differeut principle, that of the change of form in a thin metallic enclosure containing liquid. ns Immisch's avitreous thermometer (fig. 9) is an example. A minute Bourdon's tube is fixed at one end, and the other bears on the short arm of a lever, the long arm of which acts by a rack on the pinion forming the axis of the pointer. It is only one inch in diameter and extremely accurate. UY

Thermographs.—The first form of thermo- // graph, due to Wheatstone, was an electrical {/ apparatus. It has recently been improved by Van Rysselberghe, in whose hands it has assumed the following form. The thermome- teris of rather wide bore and open above. At intervals of quarter

of an hour a wire is moved gradually down the tube by a clock until it touches the mercury; an electric circuit Avitreous Thermometer. is thus completed, and causes an indentation by a diamond point which moves in the same way as the wire down a rotating cylinder covered with thin sheet copper or zinc. The metal sheet is renewed at each revolution of the cylinder, and it is sufficient to join the indented points with a graver to have a plate from which any number of copies of the record may be printed. Cripp's thermo- = records hourly on a revolving cylinder. It consists essen- tially of a mercury thermometer coiled into a flat spiral and sus- pended on a horizontal axis. Any change of temperature displaces the centre of gravity of the system, and the instrument rotates through an arc, moving a pencil as it does so. A perfectly con- tinuous record is produced by the photographic thermograph. Wet and dry bulb thermometers are so arranged that a beam of light passes through an air-speck, which separates part of the mercury thread, or through the vacant part of the tube, and falls on a rotating cylinder covered with photographic paper on which it traces the curve of temperature fluctuation. This apparatus is probably the most perfect of its kind. In Bowkett's thermograph the change of form of a curved tube containing oil moves a pencil radially over a card turned horizontally by a clock. The resulting curve is referable to polar instead of rectangular coordinates ; the radius measures temperature, the angle time. Richard's thermo- graph is also actuated by means of a sealed metallic capsule con- taining fluid. It draws a continuous curve in ink on a revolving drum on which one sheet lasts for seven days. This instrument is largely employed in observatories to check eye-observations, and is peculiarly adapted for use in positions to which access can only be had occasionally. It is made in many forms, one of which is specially adapted for marine work, the sealed capsule being rolled into the form of a cylinder and exposed to the water on both surfaces. (H. R. M.)

THEROIGNE DE MERICOURT, Anne Joserx (1762-1817), was born at Marcourt (from a corruption of which name she took her usual designation), a small town in Luxembourg, on the banks of the Ourthe, on 13th August 1762. She was the daughter of a well-to-do farmer, Peter Théroigne. She appears to have been well educated, having been brought up in the convent of ee

1 Repert. fiir Meteorologie, i. pt. i. p. 7.

Robermont ; she was quick-witted, strikingly handsome in appearance, and intensely passionate in temper; and she had a strong and almost volcanic power of eloquence, which she used with great effect upon the mobs of Paris during that short space of her life (1789-93) which alone is of historical interest. The story of her having been betrayed by a young sezgneur, and having in consequence devoted her life to avenge her wrongs upon aristocrats, a story which is told by Lamartine and others, is unfounded, the truth being that she left her home on account of a quarrel with her stepmother. She went to Paris, and, on the outbreak of the Revolution, she was surrounded by a coterie of well-known men, chief of whom were Pétion and Desmoulins. She belonged to their party to the last, — became in fact the “Fury of the Gironde.” On 14th July 1789 she came prominently into notice at the fall of the Bastille, and for about four years thereafter she was seen in many of the stormiest scenes of the Revolution, being known as “la belle Liégoise,” and singularly attired in a riding habit, a plume in her hat, pistols in her belt, and a sword dangling by her side. Early in October she took a leading part in the march to Versailles, and the return journey with the king and queen to the capital. No horror appalled her, and the violence of her language and her power with the mob were no less remarkable than the influence which she was able, by combining cajolery, threats, and money, successfully to exert on the royalist soldiers, so winning them over to the Revolution. Being justly accused of dangerous conduct, her arrest was ordered in the following year (1790), and she left Paris for Mar- court, whence after a short stay she proceeded to Liége, in which town she was seized by warrant of the Austrian Government, and conveyed first to Tyrol and thereafter to Vienna, accused of having been engaged in a plot against the life of the queen of France. After an inter- view, however, with Leopold IT., she was released ; and she returned to Paris, crowned of course with fresh laurels because of her captivity, and resumed her influence. In the clubs of Paris her voice was often heard, and even in the National Assembly she would violently interrupt the expression of any moderatist views. She commanded in person the 3d corps of the so- called army of the fau- bourgs on 20th June 1792, and again won the

gratitude of the people. She shares a heavy responsibility for her connexion with the riots of the 10th of August. A cer- tain contributor to Desmoulins's journal, the Acts of the Apostles, Suleau by name, earned her savage hatred by associating her name, for the sake of the play upon the word, with a deputy named Populus, whom she had never seen, On the 10th of August, just after she had watched approvingly the massacre of certain of the national guard in the Place Vendéme, Suleau was pointed out to her. She sprang at him, dragged him among the infuriated mob, and he was stabbed to death in an instant. But the time came when her party was in peril at the hands of one more extreme, and she now wildly urged the mob to more moderate courses. Then the furies of the ‘‘ Mountain ” seized the fury of the Gironde, and they stripped her naked, and flogged her in the public garden of the Tuileries. ‘The infamous affront drove her mad. She was removed to a private house, thence in 1800 to La Salpetriere for a month, and thence to a place of confine-

‘ment called the Petites Maisons, where she remained—a

raving maniac—till 1807. She was then again renioved to La Salpetriere, where she died, never having recovered her reason, on 9th June 1817.

THESEUS, the great hero of Attic legend,? son of

? All the passages in the Jiiad and Odyssey in which his name or allusions to his legend occur are regarded with more or less proba- bility as spurious.

Aigeus, king of Athens, and Aithra, daughter of Pittheus, king of Troezen. Thus through his father he was descended from Erechtheus and the autochthones of Attica; through his mother he came of the Asiatic house of Pelops. A‘geus, being childless, went to Delphi to consult the god, who gave him an ambiguous answer. He went to Treezen, and told the oracle to Pittheus, who, seeing its bearing, contrived that AZgeus should have intercourse with his daughter /Athra. /Zgeus then departed to Athens, and in due time AXthra, who remained at Treezen, brought forth Theseus. It was given out that the child's father was Poseidon, the great god of Troezen, and in after ages the Troezenians pointed to the Holy Isle as the place where

Poseidon and A‘thra met, and where Atthra raised a temple to Athene Apaturia, at which Troezenian maids dedicated their girdles before marriage. For his tutor and guardian young Theseus had one Cannidas, to whom, down to Plutarch’s time, the Athenians were wont to sacrifice a black ram on the eve of the festival of Theseus. On passing out of boyhood, Theseus, in accordance with custom, went to Delphi, and there cut off his front hair. Aigeus had deposited his sword and boots under a heavy rock, telling AXthra that, if she gave birth to a son who, on attaining manhood, should be able to lift the rock and remove the sword and boots, she was to send him with all secrecy to his father at Athens. Theseus now lifted the rock, removed the sword and boots, and set out for Athens. He encountered many adventures on the way. First he met Periphetes, surnamed Corynetes (Clubman). Him Theseus slew, and carried off his club. At the isthmus of Corinth dwelt Sinis, called the Pine-Bender, because he killed his victims by fastening them to the top of a pine-tree (or two pine-trees), which he had bent down and then suffered to fly up. Theseus hoisted the Pine-Bender on his own pine-tree. Now, the deceased Pine-Bender had a pretty daughter, who ran and hid herself in a thicket where asparagus grew plentifully ; and, when Theseus came to look for her, she prayed to the asparagus, and promised that if it would hide her she would never injure asparagus any more. Theseus wiled her from the thicket, and from their union sprang the family of the Joxids, who worshipped asparagus. Next Theseus despatched the Crommyonian sow (or boar), a dreadful monster. Then he flung over the cliff the wicked Sciron, who, while his guests were perforce washing his feet, used to kick them over into the sea. In Eleusis Theseus wrestled with and killed Cercyon. A little farther on he slew Procrustes, who had only one bed for all comers: if his guest was too short for the bed, he stretched him out; if he was too long, he cut him down to the requisite length. At the Cephissus Theseus was met by the Phytalid family, who purified him from the taint of bloodshed. As he passed through the streets of Athens, his curls and long garment reaching to his ankles drew on him the derision of some masons, who were putting on tle roof of the new temple of Apollo Delphinius: ‘“ Why,” they asked, “‘ was such a pretty girl out alone?” In reply Theseus took the bullocks out of their cart and flung them higher than the roof of the temple. He found his father married to Medea, who had fled from Corinth. Being a witch, she knew Theseus before his father did, and tried to persuade ffigeus to poison his son ; but AXgeus at last recognized

him by his sword, and took him to his arms. Theseus was now declared heir to the throne, and the Pallantids, who had hoped to succeed to the childless king, conspired against Theseus, but he crushed the conspiracy. He then attacked the flame-spitting bull of Marathon and brought it alive to Athens, where he sacrificed it to Apollo Delphinius. Now comes the adventure of the Cretan Minotaur (see Minos), whom Theseus slew by the aid of ARIADNE (g.2.).

THESEUS

| While Theseus was in Crete, Minos, wishing to see whether Theseus was really the son of Poseidon, flung his ring into the sea. Theseus dived and brought it up, together with a golden crown, the gift of Amphitrite. On the return voyage the ship touched at Naxos, and there Theseus abandoned Ariadne. He landed also at Delos, and there he and the youths danced the crane dahce, the complicated movements of which were meant to imitate the windings of the Labyrinth.1 In historical times this dance was still danced by the Delians round the horned altar—an altar entirely composed of left-sided horns. Theseus had promised Aigeus that, if he returned success- ful, the black sail with which the fatal ship always put to sea 2 should be exchanged for a white one. But he forgot his promise ; and, when from the Acropolis at Athens Aigeus descried the black sail out at sea, he flung himself from the rock, and died. Hence at the festival which commemorated the return of Theseus there was always weeping and lamentation. Theseus now carried out a political revolution in Attica by abolishing the semi-inde- pendent powers of the separate townships and concen- trating those powers at Athens, and he instituted the festival of the Panathensa,? as a symbol cf the unity of the Attic race. Further, according to a democratic tradi- tion, he abolished the monarchy, and substituted in its place a popular government ; but, to obviate the evils of a pure democracy, he instituted the three classes or castes of the eupatrids (nobles), geomori (husbandmen), and demiurgi (artisans). He also minted coins bearing the figure of an ox. He extended the territory of Attica as far as the isthmus of Corinth.

He was the first to celebrate in their full pomp the Isthmian games in honour of Poseidon ; for the games previously instituted by Hercules in

honour of Melicertes had been celebrated by night, and had partaken of the nature of mysteries rather than of a festival. Of Theseus's adventures with the Amazons there were different accounts. According to some, he sailed with Hercules to the Euxine, and there won the Amazon Antiope as the meed of valour ; others said that he sailed on his own account, and captured Antiope by stratagem. Thereafter the Amazons attacked Athens. Antiope fell fighting on the side of Theseus, and her tomb was pointed out on the south side of the acropolis. By Antiope Theseus had a son, Hippo- lytus. On the death of Antiope, Theseus married Pheedra. She fell in love with her stepson Hippolytus, who, resist- ing her advances, was accused by her to Theseus of having attempted her virtue. Theseus in a rage imprecated on his son the wrath of Poseidon. His prayer was answered :. as Hippolytus was driving beside the sea, a bull issuing from the waves terrified his horses, and he was thrown and killed. This tragic story is the subject of one of the extant plays of Euripides.

The fanious friendship between Theseus and Pirithous, king of the Lapiths, originated thus. Hearing of the

1 The Ostiaks of Siberia have an elaborate crane dance, in which the dancers are dressed up with skins and the heads of cranes (Pallas, Reise durch verschiedene Provinzen des russischen Reichs, ili.

65). ;

2 So, too, the ship that sailed annually from Thessaly to Troy with offerings to the shade of Achilles put to sea with sable sails (Philostratus, Heroica, xx. 25). The ship that was to bring Iseult to the mortally wounded Tristram was to hoist a white sail if she was on board, a black sail if she was not. The black sails recur in the modern Greek version of the tale of Theseus. Researches, ix. 97.

3 Besides the Panathenea, Theseus is said to have instituted the festival of the Synotkia or Metoikia. Wachsmuth ingeniously sup- poses that the latter festival commemorated the local union in a single city of the separate settlements on the Acropolis and its immediate neighbourhood, while the Panathenea commemorated the political union of the whole of Attica (C. Wachsmuth, Die Stadt Athen im Alterthum, p. 453 sq.).

Compare Astatick

TH E—

strength and courage of Theseus, Pirithous desired to put them to the test. Accordingly he drove away from Marathon some cows which belonged to Theseus. The latter pursued, but, when he came up with the robber, the two heroes were so filled with admiration of each other that they swore brotherhood. At the marriage of Pirithous to Hippodamia (or Deidamia) a fight broke out between the Lapiths and Centaurs, in which the Lapiths, assisted by Theseus, were victorious, and drove the Centaurs out of the country. Theseus and Pirithous now carried off Helen from Sparta, and when they drew lots for her she fell to the lot of Theseus, who took her to Aphidne, and left her in charge of his mother Aithra and his friend Aphidnus. He now descended to the lower world with Pirithous, to help his friend to carry off Proserpine. But the two were caught, and confined in Hades till Hercules came and released Theseus. Meantime Castor and Pollux had captured Aphidnz, and carried off their sister Helen and JBthra. When Theseus returned to Athens, he found that a sedition had been stirred up by Menestheus, a descendant of Erechtheus, one of the old kings of Athens. Failing to quell the outbreak, Theseus in despair sent his children to Eubeea, and, after solemnly cursing the Athenians, sailed away to the island of Scyrus, where he had ancestral estates. But Lycomedes, king of Scyrus, took him up to a high place, and cast him into the sea, that he died. Others said that he fell of himself over the cliff as he was taking his evening walk. Menestheus reigned at Athens, but, when he died before Troy, the sons of Theseus recovered the kingdom. Long afterwards, at the battle of Marathon (490 3.c.), many of the Athenians thought they saw the phantom of Theseus, in full armour, charging at their head against the Persians. When the Persian war was over, the Delphic oracle bade the Athenians fetch the bones of Theseus from Scyrus, and lay them in Attic earth. It fell to Cimon’s lot in 469 B.c. to discover the hero’s grave at Scyrus, and bring back his bones to Athens. They were deposited in the heart of Athens, and henceforth escaped slaves and all persons in peril sought and found sanctuary at the grave of him who in his life had been a champion of the oppressed. His chief festival was on the 8th of the month Pyanepsion (October 21st), but the 8th day of every month was also sacred to him.

Whatever we may think of the historical reality of Theseus, his legend seems to contain recollections of historical events, e¢.g., the gvvoixiouds, Whether by this we understand the political central- ization of Attica at Athens or a local union of previously separate settlements on the site of Athens. The birth of Theseus at Treezen points to the immigration of an Ionian family or tribe from the south. With this agrees the legend of the contest between Athene and Poseidon for supremacy on the acropolis of Athens, for Theseus is intimately connected with Poseidon, the great Ionian god. Aigeus, the father of Theseus, has been iden- tified by some modern scholars with Poseidon.

The Athenian festival in October, popularly supposed to coin- memorate the return of Theseus from Crete, is interesting, as some of its features are identical with those of harvest-festivals still observed in the north of Europe. Thus the eiresione, a branch of olive wreathed with wool and decked with fruits, bread, &c., which was carried in procession and hung over the door of the house, where it was kept for a year, is the Erntemat (Harvest-may) of Germany.

The well-preserved Doric temple to the north of the acropolis at Athens, commonly known as the Theseum, was long supposed to be the sanctuary in which the bones of Theseus reposed. But archeologists are now much divided on this question. Itis agreed, however, that the temple is of the 5th century 8.c., and that the date of its construction cannot differ widely from that of the Parthenon.? There were several (according to Philochorus, four) temples or shrines of Theseus at Athens. Milchhofer thinks he has found one of them in the ncighbourhood of Pirzus.?

1 See W. Mannhardt, Antike Wald- und Feld-Kulte, p. 212 sq.

- For the literature on the subject, see Milchhéfer, in Baumeister’s Denk:niiler des classischen Alterthums, i. p. 170.

ae Livléuternder Text to the Karten von Attika (Berlin, 1881), i. Pp. of sq.

aD et 295

- Our chief authority for the legend of Theseus is the life by Plutarch, which is a compilation from earlier writers. G. Gilbert, who has investigated the sources from which Plutarch drew for his life of Theseus, believes that his chief authority was the Atthis of lster, and that Ister mainly followed Philochorus. See Philologus, xxxiii., 1874, p. 46 sg.

There is a modern Greek folk-tale which preserves some features of the legend of Theseus and the Minotaur, but for the Minotaur has been substituted a seven- headed snake. See Bernard Schmidt, Griechische Mahrchen, Sagen, und Volks- lieder, p. 118 sq. (J. G. FR.)

THESMOPHORIA, an ancient Greek festival, cele- brated by women only in honour of Demeter Occpodédpos. At Athens, Abdera, and perhaps Sparta, it lasted three days. At Athens the festival took place on the 11th, 12th, and 13th of the month Pyanepsion (24th, 25th, and 26th October), the first day being called Anodos (ascent), or, according to others, Kathodos (descent), the second Nesteia (fast), and the third Kalligeneia (fair- born).* If to these days we add the Thesmophoria, which were celebrated on the 10th at Halimus, a township on the coast near Athens, the festival lasted four days.° If further we add the festival of the Stenia, which took place on the 9th, the whole festival lasted five days.6 The Stenia are said by Photius to have celebrated the return of Demeter from the lower world (Anodos), and the women railed at each other by night.’ The Thesmophoria at Halimus seem to have included dances on the beach.® The great feature of the next day (the Anodos) is gene- rally assumed to have been a procession from Halimus to Athens, but this assumption seems to rest entirely on an interpretation of the name Anodos, and it loses all pro- bability when we observe that the day was by others called Kathodos.* Probably both names referred to the descent of Demeter or Proserpine to the nether world, and her ascent from it.12 The next day, Nesteia, was a day of sorrow, the women sitting on the ground and fasting.” As to what took place on the Kalligeneia we have no information. Nor can we define the time or nature of the secret ceremony called the “ pursuit,” or the “ Chalcidian pursuit,” and the sacrifice called the “penalty.”

During the Thesmophoria (and for nine days previously, if Ovid, Met., x. 434, is right, and refers to the Thesmo- phoria) the women abstained from

intercourse with their

4 Schol. on Aristoph., Thesmophoriazuse, 80 and 585; Diog. Laer., ix. 48; Hesychius, s.v. tpenwepos (the reading here is uncertain) and &vodos; Alciphron, iii. 89; Atheneus, 307f. Plutarch (Vit. Demosth., 80) states that the Nesteia took place on the 16th of Pyanepsion, but in this he stands alone.

5 Schol. on Aristoph., Thesm., 80; Photius, Lex., s.v. @ecuopoplwr yuépar 3’ (where Naber should not have altered the MS. reading 3’ into 18’); Hesychius, s.v. tpitn Ocopodgopiwr.

6 Schol. on Aristoph., Thesm., 834.

7 Photius, Lex., s.v. orqvia; cf. Apollodorus, i. 5, 1.

8 Plut., Solon, 8; for this passage probably refers to the Thesmo- phoria, the CapeColias mentioned being near Halimus (see Hrlduternder Text to the Karten von Attika, ii. 1 sg.). The Thesmophorium at Halimus is mentioned by Pausanias (i. 31, 1).

® Hesychius (s.v. &vodos) and the Schol. on Arist., Thesm., 585, suppose that the day was so called because the women ascended to the Thesmophorium, which (according to the scholiast) stood on a height. But ro ancient writer mentions a procession from Halimus. For the name Kathodos, see Schol., loc. cit.; Photius, Lez., s.v. Occuopopiwy jucpa 3’. For the statement that at one part of the festival (commonly assumed, by the writers who accept the statement, to be the Anodos) the women carried on their heads the “books of the law,” we have only the authority of the scholiast on Theocritus, iv. 25, who displays his ignorance by describing the women as virgins (see below), and saying that they went in procession to Eleusis. The statement may therefore be dismissed as an etymological fiction. Aristophanes, Hccles., 222, is no evidence for the book-carrying.

10 The Beeotian festival of Demeter, which was held at about the same time as the Athenian Thesmophoria, and at which the megara (see below) were opened, is distinctly stated by Plutarch (De Js. et Osir., 69) to have been a mourning for the descent (Kathodos) of Proserpine.

ll Plut., Dem., 30; Id., De Js. et Osir., 69.

12 Hesychius, s.v. Siwyua; Suidas, s.v. yarnidixby Slwyua; Hesy- chius, s.v. (nula. For flight and pursuit as parts of religious cere- monies, cf. Plutarch, Quest. Grec., 38; Id., Quest. Rom., 63; Id., De Def. Orac., 15; Ailian, Nat. An., xii. 34; Pausanias, i. 24, 4; Id., viii. 58, 3; Diodorus, i. 91; Lobeck, Aglaophamus, p. 676; Mar-

| quardt, Staatsverwaltung, 2d ed., iii. 3238.

husbands, and to fortify themselves strewed their beds with Agnus castus and other plants. The women of Miletus strewed their beds with pine branches, and put fir-cones in the sanctuaries of Demeter.! Whether un- married women were admitted to the festival seems doubt- ful; in Lucian's time it would appear that they were.? The women of each deme (township) elected two married women of their number to preside over them at the festival ; and every married man in the township who possessed property to the value of three talents had to provide a feast for the women on behalf of his wife.* During the festival the women seem to have been lodged by twos in tents or huts, probably erected within the sacred precincts of the Thesmophorium.* They were not allowed to eat the seeds of the pomegranate or to wear garlands of flowers.5 Prisoners were released at the festival,® and during the Nesteia the law-courts were closed and the senate did not meet.7 Aristophanes's play on the festival sheds little light on the mode of its celebration.

At Thebes Thesmophoria were celebrated in summer on the acropolis (Cadmeia) ; at Eretria during the Thes- mophoria the women cooked their meat, not at fires, but by the heat of the sun, and they did not invoke Kalli- geneia (which seems to mean that they did not celebrate the last day of the festival); at Syracuse, during the festival, cakes called mylloi, made of sesame and honey in the shape of pudenda muliebria, were handed round.® Agrigentum, Ephesus, and Dryme, in Phocis, had also their Thesmophoria.®

The above was nearly all that was known about the Thesmo- phoria down to 1870. In that year E. Rohde published in the LRheinisches Museum (N. F. 25, p. 548 sg.) a scholion on Lucian (Dial. Meretr., ii. 1), which he discovered in the Vatiean MS. Palatinus 73, and which furnishes some curions details about the Thesmophoria. It also explains two obscure and corrupt passages of Clemens Alexandrinus and Pausanias, the true meaning of which had been divined by Lobeck (Aglaophamus, p. 828 sg.). The sub- stanee of the scholion is this. When Proserpine was carried off by Pluto, a swineherd called Eubuleus was herding his swine at the spot, and his herd was engulfed in the chasm down which Pluto had vanished with Proserpine. Accordingly at the Thesmo- phoria it was customary, in memory of Eubuleus, to fling pigs into the ‘*chasms of Demeter and Proserpine.” (These ‘‘chasms ” may have been natural eaverns or perhaps vaults. The scholiast speaks of them also as adyta and megara.’°) In these chasms or adyta there wcre supposcd to be serpents, which guarded the adyta and consumed most of the ficsh of the pigs that were thrown

1 Milian, Nat. An., ix. 26; Sehol. on Theocr., iv. 25; Hesyehius, S.v. kvéewpov; Pliny, V. H., 24, 59; Dioseorides, i. 185 (184, ed. Sprengel); Sehol. on Nicander, Ther., 70 sg.; Galen, xi. 808, ed. Ktihn ; Steph. Byz., s.v. MfAnros.

2 Lucian, Dial. Meretr.,ii. 1. On the other hand, we read in Strabo (i. 8, 20) of virgins at Alponus aseending a tower as spectators (kara 6éav) of the Thesmophoria, which would seem to imply that they did not partieipate in it.

3 Iseus, De Cironis Hered., 19; Id., De Pyrrhi Hered., 80.

4 Aristoph., Thesm., 624, 658, with the Sehol. ad il. As to the custoin of camping out at festivals, Plutareh (Quast. Conviv., iv. 6, 2) eompares the Jewish Feast of Tabernaeles with the Greek Dionysia; from whieh we may perhaps infer that the worshippers camped out at the Dionysia. Cp. Gumilla, Wistoire de l’Orenoque, i. p. 256 sq.

5 Clem, Alex., Protrep., 19.; Schol. on Sophoeles, Gd. Col., 681.

§ Marcellinus on Hermogenes, in Rhetores Graeci, ed. Walz, iv. 462; Sopater, tbid., viii. 67.

7 Aristoph., Thesm., 80. The word tpirn seems to mean the Nesteia, as the Schol. ad J. takes it. That the “middle day” was the Nesteia we know from Athenzus, 307f.

8 Xenophon, Heilen., v. 2, 29; Plutareh, Quest. Gr., 31; Athen- wus, 6470,

® Polyenus, v. 1, 1; Herodotus, vi. 16; Pausanias, x. 33, 12.

10 Mr C. T. Newton discovered in the sauetuary of Demeter and the Infernal Deities at Cnidus a chamber whieh may have been one of the megara referred to by the scholiast. It eontained bones of pigs and marble figures of pigs. The ehamber was not, however, originally subterranean. See Newton’s Discoveries at Halicarnassus, &c., ii. p. 883 SY: 5 Id., Travels and Discoveries in the Levant, ii. p. 180 sq. Aecording to Porphyry (De Andro Nympharum, 6) the Infernal Deities had megara, as the Olympian had temples, and the sacrificial pits of the former eorresponded to the altars of the latter.

Bidet ee).

TH Bes POP Hea ie

in. The decayed remains of the flesh were afterwards fetched by women called “drawers” (antlctriai), who, after observing rules of ceremonial purity for three days, descended into the eaverns, and, frightening away the serpents by clapping their hands, brought up the remains and placed them on the altars.” Whoever got a portion of this deeayed flesh and sowed it with the seed in the ground was supposed thereby to secure a good crop. The rest of the scholion is obscure, and perhaps corrupt, but the following seems to be the sense. The ceremony above described was called the arretophoria, and was supposed to exercise the same quickening and fertilizing influence on men as on fields. Further, along with the pigs, sacred cakes made of dough, in the shape of serpents and of phalli, were cast into the eaverns, to symbolize the productivity of the earth and of man. Branches of pines were thrown in for a similar reason.

The custom described in this important scholion is elcarly the same as that referred to by Clemens Alexandrinus (Protrep., § 17) and Pausanias (ix. 8, 1). From the latter we learn that the pigs were sucking pigs, and from the former (if we adopt Lobeck's emendation peyapois (@vras for weyap{(ovres) that they were thrown in alive. From Pausanias we may further perhaps infer (though the passage is corrupt) that the remains of the pigs thrown down in one year were not fetched up till the same time next year (cp. Paus., x. 82, 14). The question remains, At what point of the Thesmophoria did the eeremony described by the scholiast on Lucian take place? Rohde thinks that it formed part of the cere- monies at Halimus, his chief ground being that Clemens (Protrep., 384) and Arnobius (v. 28) mention phalli in connexion with the "mysteries at Halimus"; but it is not certain that these mysteries were the Thesmophoria. The legend of Eubnleus seems to show that the ceremony commemorated the descent of Proserpine to the nether world; and, if we are right in our interpretation of the name Kathodos as applied to the first day of the Thesmophoria proper, the ceremony described would naturally fall on that day. Further, if our interpretation of Pausanias is correct, the same day must have witnessed the descent of the living pigs and the ascent of the rotten pork of the previous year. Hence the day might be indifferently styled Kathodos or Anodos (‘‘ descent" or ‘"ascent"); and so in fact it was.

It is usual to interpret Thesmophorus "lawgiver" and Thesmo- phoria " the feast of the lawgiver." But the Greek for ‘‘lawgiver" is not Thesmophorus but Thesmothetes (or Nomothetes, when nomos displaced thesmos in the sense of ‘"‘law"). If we compare such names of festivals as Oschophoria, Lampadephoria, Hydro- phoria, Scirophoria (‘‘ the earryings of grapes, of torches, of water, of umbrellas") with the corresponding Oschophorus, Lampade- phorus, Hydrophorus, also Thallophorus and Kanephorus, we can scarcely help concluding that Thesmophoria must originally have meant in the literal and physical sense the earrying of the thesmot, and Thesmophorus the person who so carried them; and, in view of the ceremony disclosed by the scholiast on Lucian (compared with the analogous ceremony observed by the Arrephoroi at Athens), we are strongly tempted to suppose that the women whom he calls Antletriai may have been also known, at one time or other, as Thesmophoroi, and that the thesmoi were the sacra which they carried and deposited on the altar. The

word would then be used in its literal sense, “that which is set down.” How the name Thesmophorus should have been transferred to the goddess from her ministers is of course a difficulty, which is hardly disposed of by pointing to the epithets Amallophorus (“sheaf-bearing”) and Melophorus (“apple-bearing”), which were applied to men as well as to the goddess.

As to the origin of the Thesmophoria, Herodotus (ii. 171) asserts that they were introduced into Grceee from Egypt by the daughters of Danaus; while, according to Plutarch (Fragments, p. 55, ed. Diibner), the feast was introduced into Athens by Orpheus the Odrysian. From these statements we can only infer the similarity of the Thesmophoria to the Orphic rites and to the Egyptian repre- sentation of the sufferings of Osiris, in connexion with which Plutarch mentions them. The Thesmophoria would thus form one of that class of rites, widely spread in Western Asia andin Europe, in which the main feature appears to be a lamentation for the annual decay of vegetation or a rejoicing at its revival. This seems to have been the root, e¢.g., of the lamentations for Adonis and Attis. See W. Mannhardt, Antike Wald- wnd Feld-Kuilte, p. 264 sq.

11 Compare the funetions of the two Arrephoroi at Athens (Paus., For serpents in connexion with Demeter, eompare Strabo, 1s Ly Oh

12’ This, as Mr Andrew Lang has pointed out, resembles the Khond eustom of burying the flesh of the human victim in the fields to fertilize them. The human vietim was with the Khonds, like the pig with the Greeks, a saerifiee to the Earth goddess, See W. Macpher- son, Memorials of Service in India, p. 129.

13 Reading éuBdAdovat, with Rohde, for AawBdvovor. Compare the eustom of Miletus supra. The pine-tree played an important part in the worship of Cybele. Cp. Marquardt, Staatsverwaltung, iii, 371.

TH E—

On the Thesmophoria, see Meursius, Gracia Feriata, p. 161 sq.; L. Preller, Demeter und Persephone, p. 335 sq.; Id., Griech. Myth., [8], i. 639 sg.; Fritsche’s ed. of the Thesmophoriazusz, p. 577 sq.; Aug. Mommsen, Heortologie, p. 287 sq.; Rheinisches Museum, xxv. (1870), p. 548; Gazette

Archéologique, 1880, p. 17; Mr Andrew Lang, in Nineteenth Century, April 1887. (J. G. FR.)

THESPL#, an ancient Greek city of Beotia. It stood on level ground commanded by the low range of hills which runs eastward from the foot of Mount Helicon to Thebes. In the Persian invasion the Thespian con- tingent of 700 men voluntarily stayed with the Spartans _at Thermopylae, and shared their fate. or its resistance to the Persians, the city was burned by Xerxes (480 B.c.). Nevertheless, in the next year 1800 Thespians shared in the great victory of Platwa. At the battle of Delium (424) the flower of the Thespians fell fighting against Athens on the side of Thebes, and in the following year the jealous Thebans availed themselves of the weakness of their gallant confederate to pull down the walls of Thespiz. The walls were restored by the Spartans under Agesilaus in 378, but were again destroyed by the The- bans, apparently before the battle of Leuctra (371). After the battle the Thespians, who had taken no part in it, withdrew to a strong place, Ceressus, from which, however, they were expelled by the Thebans. In 343 the city was not yet restored ; but it must have been sub- sequently, for it is mentioned in the Roman wars.

In the 2d century Pausanias mentions that Thespiz contained a theatre, a market-place (agora), and sanctuaries of Aphrodite, the Muses, and Hercules. Love (Eros) was the deity most vener- ated by the Thespians ; they possessed a very ancient image of him in the shape of an unhewn block of stone. The marble statue of Love by Praxiteles was the great sight at Thcspie, and drew crowds to the place. It was carricd off to Rome by Caligula, re- stored by Claudius, and again carried otf by Nero. There was also a bronze statue of Love by Lysippus. From an inscription we learn that one of the deities worshipped was Demeter Achea, the ‘Mater Dolorosa.” The Thespians also worshipped the Muses, and celebrated a festival in their honour in the sacred grove on Mount Helicon. Remains of what was probably the ancient citadel are still to be seen, consisting of an oblong or oval line of fortification, solidly and regularly built. The adjacent ground to the east and south is covered with foundations, bearing witness to the extent of the ancient city. The neighbouring village Eremo- kastro, on higher ground, was thought by Ulrichs to be probably the site of the ancient Ceressus. In 1882 there were discovered, about 1200 yards east of

Eremokastro, on the road to Arkopodi (Leuctra), the remains of a polyandrion, including a colossal stone lion. The tomb dates from the 5th century B.c., and is probably that of the Thespians who fell at Plata, for those who fell at Thermopyle were buried on the field.

See Leake, Zravels in Northern Greece, ii. 479 sq.; Dodwell, Tour through Greece, 1, 258; Bursian, Geogr. von Griechenland, i, 237 sq.; Ulrichs, Reisen u. Forschungen in Griecheniand, ii, 84 sq.; Mitthetl. d. deutsch. archdol. Inst. in Athen, 1879, pp. 190 sq., 278 sq.; Tlpaxriuxa ris év ’AOyvats apxarodoyeKys érarpias, 1882, pp. 65-74.

THESSALONIANS, Eristies To THE. ‘Thessalonica, now SALONIcA (q.v.), was in the time of the Romans the most important town of Macedonia. In consequence of its advantageous situation, on a good harbour and on the Via Egnatia, the great trade road which connected the Adriatic with the Hellespont, the town had surpassed the old capital Pella, and had indeed become one of the chief commercial centres of the ancient world. Since the Roman conquest the seat of the Roman provincial government had been here. Here, as in Corinth, the conditions were favourable for the reception of Christianity. The popula- tion was not purely Greek, but cosmopolitan, a mixture of divers nationalities. Such a population is always more susceptible to religious novelties for good and for evil than one of old, firmly established national growth. The apostle Paul experienced this to his great joy and satis- faction here also, as he for the first time set foot on the

1 Xenophon (J/ellen., vi. 8. 1 and 5) and Diodorus (xv. 46) speak of Thespie as if it had been destroyed and its inhabitants driven away before the battle of Leuctra; but, as the Thespian troops were present with the Thebans immediately before the battle (Paus., ix. 18, 8), it would seem that only the walls, not the city itself, had been previously destroyed. See Grote, Hist. of Greece, ix. p. 379.

shores of Europe with the message of Jesus Christ. It was about the year 52 or 53 that he, on his arrival from Philippi, preached the gospel of Christ in the rich merchant city. As in other places, he began with the Jews. There

wasa Jewish congregation at Thessalonica, as at all the great ports and trading centres of the Medi- terranean, with their own synagogue and regular service. For three Sabbaths Paul stood up in the synagogue, prov- ing by the Scriptures that Jesus was the promised and expected Messiah (Acts xvii. 1-3). He had not much success with the Jews, but this was more than compen- sated by the number of “devout Greeks” (z.e., Gentiles who already had some connexion with Judaism) whom he won to a belief in Christ. He found hearing especially with the chief women (Acts xviii. 4). But Paul had also converted a not smaller number of real heathens. Indeed, they must have constituted the majority of the Christian church there formed, for in his first epistle he says quite generally that his readers, in consequence of his preaching, had turned from idols to the one true God (1 Thess. i. 9).

Paul’s stay in Thessalonica was short. The plots of the Jews soon obliged him to leave the town, and he betook himself to Beroea (Acts xvii. 10), thence to Athens (Acts xvii. 15), and finally to Corinth (Acts xviii. 1). The two epistles were written to the church of Thessalonica during a stay of a year and a half in Corinth (Acts xviii. 11), about 53-54, not before this in Athens, as is asserted in the subscription of both epistles in the Codex Alexandrinus and other MSS. For when Paul wrote the first epistle some time had elapsed since the formation of the church : some members were already dead (1 Thess. iv. 13), and Paul had worked for some time, not only in Macedonia, but also in Achaia (i. 7, 8). On the other hand, the church appears to be comparatively young; the conversions are still spoken of everywhere in Macedonia and Achaia (i. 9). All this points to the conclusion that the first epistle was written in Corinth, and this is confirmed by the opening salutation (i. 1), in which Silvanus (Silas) and Timotheus are named as joint authors, for they were in Corinth with Paul (Acts xviii. 5).

The first epistle gives us a very clear picture of the disposition and state of such a young church, composed of former heathens. They had received with enthusiasm the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Bringer of salvation, the Saviour in the approaching day of judgment (i. 9, 10). But the realization of this salvation is now awaited with impatience, and a sense of disappointment is experienced because some members of the church have died without having seen the advent of the Lord (iv. 13). At the same time many there are still

living in gross heathen sins and vices (iv. 1-8). Paul had sent back Timotheus from Athens to Thessalonica in order to advise the young inexperienced church, and to obtain news concerning it (iii. 1-5). He has just returned to Paul (iii. 6), and the information received through this source is the occasion of the first epistle,? designed to supply the place of Paul's personal presence and bring new exhortation and instruction from the apostle to the young church, which still much needed guidance.

We have no information concerning the effect of this letter. It is conceivable, however, that the church re- quired yet further advice and direction from the apostle, and so far it is not remarkable that Paul saw the need for a second similar letter of teaching and exhortation. This second epistle also, if it is genuine, was written during Paul's stay of a year and a half at Corinth, very soon after

2 According to Acts xvii. 14-15 and xviii. 5, Silas and Timotheus had remained behind in Bercea, and first met Paul again in Corinth. But according to 1 Thess. iii. 1-5 it must be understood that Timotheus was in Athens with Paul, and had been sent thence to Thessalonica.

rac T ie

the first. For it also is written in the conjoined names of | critics are valid. It has been often said that the author,

Silvanus and Timotheus, who were still with Paul, while we must understand from Acts xviii. 18 that after Paul's departure from Corinth they ceased to be his companions. The occasion of this epistle seems especially to have arisen from the circumstance that the churcli had been put into fear and anxiety about the advent of Christ, perhaps by a pretended letter from Paul. Two passages point to the existence of such a thing: in ii. 2, Paul says that the church shall not let itself be alarmed ‘‘ by word or by letter as from us" (7.e., nominally coming from us), and in ii. 17 again Paul lays emphasis on his signature by his own hand as the token (of genuineness) to be noticed

in each letter. In any case the chief aim of the epistle is to tran- quillize the church concerning the advent of Christ, which is not yet immediately imminent. He particularly exhorts them not to let themselves be shaken in mind, as that the day of Christ is at hand (ii. 1, 2). For before this day comes the “man of sin” must first appear, who seats himself in the temple of God, and gives himself out for God (ii. 3-5). And he too is for the present kept back by another power (ii. 6, 7). Only when the latter is taken out of the way shall ‘that wicked ” be revealed, and the great falling away shall follow (ii. 8-12).

The genuineness of the two epistles has not remained unquestioned by the newer criticism. Baur declared him- self against the genuineness of both epistles,’ and he is followed by Van der Vies? and several others.? But in general the predominant opinion of impartial criticism at present is that the genuineness of the first epistle is certain, while that of the second must be given up.

This is the opinion of Hilgenfeld (Z. f. wiss. Theol., 1862, p. 225-264; 1866, p. 295-301; 1869, p. 441 sq.; 1870, p. 244 sq.), Van Manen (Onderzock naar de echthcid van Paulus tweeden brief aan de Thessalonicensen, Utrecht, 1865), 8. Davidson (Zntrod. to the New Testament, 2d ed., 1882, i. 4-16, 336-351), Weizsiicker (Das apostolische Zeitalter, 1886, p. 249-261); and Holtzmann also leans to the same view, without, however, definitely commit- ting himself (Hinl. in d. N. T., 2d ed., 1886, p. 283-241). The genuineness of the first epistle is vindicated by Lipsius (Zheol. St. u. Kr., 1854, p. 905-984), Von Soden (2bid., 1885, p. 263-310), and Paul Schmidt (Der erste Thessalonicherbrief neu erklért, Berlin, 1885), while, on the other hand, Kern (T%ibing. Zeitschr. f. Theol., 1839, ii. 145-214) and Bahnsen (Jahrb. fiir prot. Theol., 1880, p. 681-705) attack that of the second. Grimm (Zheol. St. wu. Kr., 1850, p. 753-816) and Westrik (De echtheid van den twecden bricf aan de Thessalonicensen, Utrecht, 1879) have entered the lists for the genuineness of both epistles.

like the author of the Apocalypse, regards Nero as the Antichrist, expecting him to reappear as the arch-enemy of Christ. But this interpretation of the short statement of our epistle cannot be proved. ‘The assumption that before the dawn of salvation godlessness would reach its height, through the

appearance of an arch-enemy of God and His church is, so to speak, a dogmatic postulate which rests on the prophecies of Daniel and other prophets of the Old Testament. And, in so far as the picture of this arch-eneiny is endowed with historical features, they can quite as well have been drawn from Caligula as from Nero. For Caligula had already laid claim to the honours of a god, and because of this appeared to the Jews to be the embodiment of godlessness. The assumption of such an Antichrist would not be striking in Paul. Even if it is correct (as is generally and with reason taken for granted) that by the hindrance which keeps back the appearance of Antichrist (2 Thess. ii. 6, 7) the established might of the Roman emperor and empire is to be under- stood, this view would be quite in keeping with Paul's views about the Roman dominion (Rom. xiii. 1-7). Yet it must be conceded that the statements on this head create real difficulty, if we compare them with those of the first epistle, in which all stress is laid on the fact that the day of the Lord comes asa thief in the night, and that man must be prepared for it at any moment (1 Thess. v. 1-11). In the second epistle it is pointed out with equal emphasis that the day of the Lord is not immediately imminent, and that certain events must come first (2 Thess. ii. 1-10). It is certainly very striking that Paul, so soon after the admonitions of the first kind, should have given the quieting assurances of the second. And 2 Thess. ii. 2 and iii. 7 can hardly be explained except by the supposition that the readers had been thrown into alarm by a pretended epistle from Paul. Could this have been dared in that early time, almost under the eyes of the apostle? Finally, it is not to be denied that the style of the second epistle is different from that of the first, and that the contents often appear a mere imitation, except in the eschatological passages on account of which it was written. It must therefore be admitted that weighty if not conclusive considerations have been produced against its genuineness. (z. 8*.)
THESSALONICA. See Satonica.

THESSALY is the district of northern Greece which See vol.

The final decision of the newer criticism is justified by | , ; intervenes between Macedonia and the more purely xi. Plates

the evidence. No real difficulties can be brought against

the genuineness of the first epistle, but they certainly can Hellenic countries towards the south, and between the . a against that of the second. When Baur finds that the | upland region of Epirus and the Aigean Sea. It forms an \,)_ xy,

epistles lack the characteristic Pauline ideas, he is only so | regular square, extending for about sixty miles in each Pl. 111.

far right that the doctrine of justification by faith is not dealt with, for which, however, no occasion arises. It has been asserted that there are traces of imitation of the epistles to the Corinthians, but the points of resemblance are’not such as to justify this conclusion. The connexion of the passage in 1 Thess. ii. 16 (the wrath of God is already come upon the Jews) with the destruction of Jerusalem rests on an arbitrary, nay false, interpretation. And it cannot be maintained. on impartial examination that in 1 Thess. ii. 14, 15, the Jewish churches of Palestine are set forth in a way unlike Paul, as an example for the heathen churches.

The objections to the second epistle are much weightier, though here also not all the arguments adduced by hostile

1 Paulus der Apostel Jesu Christi, 1845, and Theologische Jahr- biicher, 1855, p. 141-168, reprinted in 2d ed. of Paulus, ii. 341-369.

: De beide brieven aan de Thessalonicensen, Leyden, 1865.

- Holsten also (Jahrb. f. prot. Theol. 1877, p. 731 sq.) and Steck (Jahrb. f. prot. Theol., 1883, p. 509-524) dispute the genuineness of the first epistle, presupposing the spuriousness of the second.

direction, and this area, which is for the most part level, is enclosed by well-marked boundaries—by the Cambunian Mountains on the north, and by Othrys on the south, while on its western side runs the massive chain of Pindus, which is the backbone of this part of Greece, and towards the east Ossa and Pelion stand in a continuous line; at the north-eastern angle Olympus rises, and is the keystone of the whole mountain system. The elevation of some of the summits in these ranges is considerable, for three of the peaks of Pindus are over 5000 feet, and Olympus, Ossa, and Pelion reach respectively the height of 9754, 6407, and 5310 feet. The country that is contained within these limits is drained by a single river, the Peneius, which, together with the water of its numerous confluents, passes into the sea through the Vale of Tempe. This place, which the Greeks were accustomed to associate with rural delights, is a chasm, cloven in the rocks, as the fable tells us, by the trident of Poseidon, between Olympus and Ossa; but though it possesses every element of the sublime, yet its features are soft and beautiful, from the

T H E—

broad winding river, the luxuriant vegetation, and the glades that at intervals open out at the foot of the cliffs. It is about four miles and a half long, and towards the middle of the pass, where the rocks are highest, the pre- cipices in the direction of Olympus fall so steeply as to bar the passage on that side; but those which descend from Ossa are the loftiest, for they rise in many places not less than 1500 feet from the valley. Owing to the length and narrowness of the ravine, it was a position easily defended, but still it offered a practicable entrance to an invading force, in consequence of which a number of castles were built at different times at the strongest points. On the north side of Thessaly there was an im- portant pass from Petra in Pieria by the western side of Olympus, debouching on the plain northward of Larissa ; it was by this that Xerxes entered, and we learn from Herodotus

(vii. 173) that, when the Greeks discovered the existence of this passage, they gave up all thoughts of defending Tempe. On the side of Epirus the main line of communication passed over that part of Pindus which was called Mount Lacmon, and descended the upper valley of the Peneius to A¢ginium in the north-west angle of Thessaly, near which place now stand the extraordinary monasteries of Meteora. This was the route by which Julius Czesar arrived before the battle of Pharsalia. Another pass through the Pindus chain was that of Gomphi, farther south, by means of which there was com- munication with the Ambracian Gulf. The great southern pass was that of Ccela, which crosses Mount Othrys nearly opposite Thermopyle. These Thessalian passes were of the utmost importance to southern Greece, as commanding the approaches to that part of the country.

Though Thessaly is the most level district of Greece, it does not present a uniform unbroken surface, but is com- posed of a number of sections which open out into one another, divided by ranges of hills. The principal of these were called Upper and Lower Thessaly, the former com- prising the western and south-western part, which con- tains the higher course of the Peneius and all those of its tributaries that flow from the south—the Enipeus, the Apidanus, the Onochonus, and the Pamisus; while the latter, which reaches eastward to the foot of Ossa and Pelion, is inundated in parts at certain seasons of the year by the Peneius, the flood-water from which forms the lake Nessonis, and, when that is full, escapes again and pours itself into the Lake of Beebe. The chief city of the latter of these districts was Larissa ; and the two were separated from one another by a long spur, which runs southwards from the Cambunian Mountains on the western side of that city. Again, when Thessaly is entered from the south by the pass of Ccela, another plain, containing a small lake, which was formerly called Xynias, intervenes, and a line of low hills has to be crossed before the town of Thaumaci is reached, which from its commanding position overlooks the whole of the upper plain. The view from this point has been described by Livy in the following remarkable passage :—‘‘ When the traveller, in passing through the rugged districts of Thessaly, where the roads are entangled in the windings of the valleys, arrives at this city, on a sudden an immense level expanse, resembling a vast sea, is outspread before him in such a manner that the eye cannot easily reach the limit of the plains extended beneath ” (xxxii. 4). To the north-eastwards of this, where a

portion of the great plain begins to run up into the mountains, the Plain of Pharsalia is formed, which is intersected by the river Enipeus; and still farther in the same direction is the scene of another great battle, Cynoscephala. Thessaly was further subdivided into four districts, of which Pelasgiotis embraced the lower plain of the Peneius, and Hestixotis and Thessaliotis respectively

the northern and the southern portions of the upper plain ; while the fourth, Phthiotis, which lies towards the south- east, was geographically distinct from the rest of the country, being separated from it by a watershed. The determining feature of this is the Pagaseeus Sinus (Gulf of Volo), a landlocked basin, extending from Pagasz at its head to Aphetze at its narrow outlet, where the chain of Pelion, turning at right angles to its axis at the end of Magnesia, throws out a projecting line of broken ridges, while on the opposite side rise the heights of Othrys. In the heroic age this district was of great importance. It was the birthplace of Greek navigation, for this seems to be implied in the story of the Argonauts, who started from this neighbourhood in quest of the golden fleece. From it the great Achilles came, and, according to Thucydides (i. 3), it was the early home of the Hellenic race. The site of Ioleus, the centre of so many poetic legends, is at no great distance from the modern Volo. Near that town also, ata later period, the city of Demetrias was founded by Demetrius Poliorcetes, who called it one of the three fetters of Greece, Chalcis and Corinth being the other two.

The history of Thessaly is closely connected with its geography. The fertility of the land offered a teniptation to invaders, and was thus the primary cause of the early migrations. It was this motive which first induced the Thessalians to leave their home in Epirus and descend into this district, and from this movement arose the expulsion of the Beotians from Arne, and their settle- ment in the country subsequently ealled Beotia; while another wave of the same tide drove the Dorians also southward, whose migrations changed the face of the Peloponnese. Again, this rich soil was the natural home of a powerful aristocracy, such as the families of the Aleuade of Larissa and the Scopade of Crannon; and the absence of

elevated positions was unfavourable to the foundation of numerous cities, which might have fostered the spirit of freedom and democracy. The plains, also, were suited to the breeding of horses, and consequently the force in which the Thessalian nation was stroug was cavalry, a kind of troops which has usually been associated with oligarchy. The wealth and the semi-Hellenic character of the people—for in raee, as in geograph- ical position, the Thessalians held an intermediate place between the non-Hellenic Macedonians and the Greeks of pure blood— caused them to be wanting in patriotism, so that at the time of the Persian wars we find the Aleuade making comnion cause with the enemies of Greece. When they were united they were a formidable power, but, like other half-organized communities, they seldom combined for long together, and consequently they influenced but little the fortunes of the Greeks.

For several centuries during the Middle Ages Roumanian immi- grants formed so large a part of the population of Thessaly that that district was called by the Byzantine writers Great Walachia (MeydAn BaAaxtfa): the Jewish traveller, Benjamin of Tudela, who passed through the country in the latter half of the 12th century, describes them as then oceupying it. At the present day only a few colonies of that race remain, the principal of which are found on the western side of Olympus and in some of the gorges of Pindus. The Turkish inhabitants are settled in the larger towns, and here and there in the country districts, the most important eolony being those called Koniarates, who were brought from Konieh in Asia Minor shortly before the taking of Constantinople, and planted‘under the south-west angle of Olympus. The Greeks, however, form the vast majority of the population, so much so that, even while the country belonged to the Ottomans, Greek was employed as the official language. In accordance with the pro- visions of the Berlin treaty, Thessaly was eeded to the Greeks by the Porte in 1881, and since that period it has formed a portion of the Hellenic kingdom. eG IN, ta)

THETFORD, an ancient borough and market-town, partly in Norfolk and partly in Suffolk, is situated on the Thet and Little Ouse, and on the Great Eastern Railway line between Cambridge and Norwich, 36 miles south-west of Norwich, 12 north of Bury St Edmunds, to which there is a branch line, and 96 north-north-east of London. The Little Ouse, which divides the

counties, is crossed by a cast-iron bridge erected in 1829. In the time of Edward III. the town had twenty churches and eight monasteries. There are now three churches—St Peter's, St Cuthbert's, and St Mary's; of these St Mary's, on the Suffolk side, is the largest. There are various monastic

.remains in the town. The most important relic of anti- quity is the castle hill, a mound 1000 feet in circumference and 100 feet in height, probably the largest of the Celtic earthworks in England. The grammar school was founded in 1610. In King Street is the mansion-house occupied as a hunting lodge by Queen Elizabeth and JamesI. Brewing and tanning are carried on; and there are also manure and chemical works, brick and lime kilns, flour-mills, and. agricultural implement works. The Little Ouse is navi- gable from Lynn for barges. The population of the muni- cipal borough (area 7296 acres) in 1871 was 4166 and in 1881 it was 4032.

Thetford is supposed to have been the Sitomagus of the Romans. In the time of the Saxons, by whom it was called Theodford, it was the capital of East Anglia. During the heptarchy it was frequently desolated by the Danes. It was burned by them in 998 after a drawn battle between Swend and Ulfcytel, and again after Ulfcytel's second battle at Ringmere, 10th May 1004. From the reign of Athelstan to that of King John it posscssed a mint. The see of Elmham was removed to it in 1070, but it was trans- ferred to Norwich in 1094. At Domesday it had five burgesses, but by the time of Edward III. they had increased to 953. It was in- corporated by Elizabeth in 1573. Itreturned two members to parlia- ment from the time of Edward VI., but was disfranchised in 1868.

THEVENOT, Jean ve (1633-1667), an eminent Ori- ental traveller, was a native of Paris, where he received his education in the college of Navarre. The perusal of works of travel! moved him to go abroad, and his circum-stances permitted him to please himself. Leaving France in 1652, he first visited England, Holland, Germany, and Italy, and at Rome he fell in with D'Herbelot, who invited him to be his companion in a projected voyage to the Levant. D'Herbelot was detained by private affairs, but Thevenot sailed from Rome in May 1655, and, after vainly waiting five months at Malta, took passage for Constan- tinople alone. He remained in Constantinople till

the end of the following August, and then proceeded by Smyrna and the Greek islands to Egypt, landing at Alexandria on New Year's Day 1657. He was a year in Egypt, then visited Sinai, and, returning to Cairo, joined the Lent pilgrim caravan to Jerusalem. He visited the chief places of pilgrimage in Palestine, and, after being twice taken by corsairs, got back to Damietta by sea, and was again in Cairo in time to view the opening of the canal on the rise of the Nile (August 14, 1658). In January 1659 he sailed from Alexandria in an English ship, taking Goletta and Tunis on the way, and, after a sharp engagement with Spanish corsairs, one of which fell a prize to the English merchantman, reached Leghorn on April 12. He now spent four years at home in studies useful to a traveller, and in November 1663 again sailed for the East, calling at Alexandria and landing at Sidon, whence he proceeded by land to Damascus, Aleppo, and then through Mesopo- tamia to Mosul, Baghdad, and Mendeli. Here he entered Persia (August 27, 1664), proceeding by Kirmanshahan and Hamadan to Ispahan, where he spent five months (October 1664—February 1665), and then, joining company with the merchant TavERNIER (q.v.), proceeded by Shiraz and Lar to Bender-Abbas, in the hope of finding a passage to India. This was difficult, because of the opposition of the Dutch, and, though Tavernier was able to proceed, Thevenot found it prudent to return to Shiraz, and, having visited the ruins of Persepolis, made his way to Basra, and sailed for India November 6, 1665, in the ship " Hope- well," arriving at the port of Surat January 10, 1666. He was in India for thirteen months, and crossed the country by Golconda to Masulipatam, returning overland to Surat, from which he sailed to Bender-Abbas and went up to Shiraz.2_ He passed the summer of 1667 at Ispahan,

1 His uncle Melchisedech had similar tastes, and published a well- known collection of Voyages (fol., Paris, 1663, sq.).

® It was at this time that he met Chardin near Persepolis, but that

disabled by an accidental pistol shot, and in October started for Tebriz, but died on the way at Miyana (November 28, 1667).

Thevenot was an accomplished linguist, skilled in Turkish, Arabic, and Persian, and a curious and diligent observer. He was also well skilled in the natural sciences, especially in botany, for which he made large collections in India. His personal character was admirable, and his writings are still esteemed, though it has been justly observed that, unlike Chardin, he saw only the outside of Eastern life. The account of his first journey was published at Paris in 1665 ; it forms the first part of his collected Voyages. The licence is dated December 1663, and the preface shows that Thevenot himself arranged it for publication before leaving on his second voyage. The second and third parts were posthumously published from his journals in 1674 and 1684 (all 4to).

THIAN-SHAN, or CELEsTIAL MouNTAINS. (vol. ii. p. 686), Syr-Darta, and TURKESTAN.

THIBAUT, Anton Frizpricu Jusrus (1774-1840), one of the greatest of German jurists, was born at Hameln, in Hanover, January 4, 1774, that is, ten years after his contemporary and rival Hugo, about a year before Feuerbach, and five years before Savigny. Thibaut's father was an officer in the Hanoverian army, a skilful matheinatician, and, like his son, a man of much force of character. His mother was the daughter of the oberbiirgermeister of the town. The Thibauts were of French descent; they came from a family which had been driven out of France on the revocation of the edict of Nantes. Asa child and youth, Thibaut lived in Hameln, Harburg, and Hanover. He was fond of rowing, skating, and swimming, and, above all, of music, which remained his passion through life. Asa lad he set his heart, chiefly for romantic reasons, on being a forester, and he actually spent two years as such. But he soon became disenchanted, and in 1792 went to Gottingen to study. In 1793 he moved to Kéuigsberg, where Kant still taught. Thibaut was deeply affected by the critical philosophy; his very latest writings bear traces of it, and it is not unimportant in the history of jurisprudence in Germany that Hugo was equally influenced by it. From Kénigsberg Thibaut moved in 1794 to Kiel, where he formed a friendship with Niebuhr, at that time a student there. They lived for a year in the same house, taking their meals together, and holding much converse on literature and politics. Both already displayed the bent of their minds—Niebuhr despondent and affrighted at the progress of the irench Revolution, Thibaut

hopeful, un- dismayed, and certain that eventually all would be well. In 1798 he was appointed extraordinary professor of civil law, and in the same year appeared his Versuche tiber ernzelne Theile der Theorte des Rechts (Kiel, 1798), a col- lection of essays, of which by far the most important was entitled “Ueber die Einfluss der Philosophie auf die Auslegung der Positiven Gesetze.” Taking as his text an observation of Leibnitz, he sought to show that history without philosophy could not interpret and explain law. The essay was partly by anticipation a corrective of the teaching of the historical school of jurists. It enters into speculations on the possibility of forming an ideal body of law as a measure and mode of exposition of particular law, —speculations which have never been continued, certainly not by Thibaut. In 1799 he was made ordinary professor of civil law. In that year was published his Zheorie der logischen Auslegung des rémischen Rechts, one of his most remarkable works, a favourite book of Austin’s, and, as his well-annotated copy in the Inner Temple library shows, one which he had most carefully studied. In 1800 Thibaut married the daughter of Professor Ehlers at Kiel. In 1802 somewhat envious scholar is wrong in saying that this was Thevenot’s only visit to the ruins (Chardin, Voyages, ed. Langlés, viii. 845). See Thevenot, pt. ii. bk. 3, chap. 6.

See Asia

Poa AU

he published a short criticism of Feuerbach’s theory of criminal law. It is an excellent illustration of his good sense; it discriminates between what is good and what is unsound and crude in the writings of criminal law reformers; it recalls in many ways the speculations of Bentham. The same year appeared Thibaut’s essay Ueber Besitz und Verjihrung. In 1803 Thibaut was called to Jena, where he spent three years, made happier than they otherwise would have been by intercourse with Goethe and Schiller. At the invitation of the grand-duke of Baden he went to Heidelberg to fill: the chair of civil law and to assist in organizing the university; and he never quitted that town, though he received in after years, as his fame grew, invitations to Gottingen, Munich, and Leipsic. His class was large, his influence great; and, except Hugo and Savigny, no civilian of his time was so well known. In the work of the university he took an active part; and he

cultivated with rare devotion his favourite art. In 1814 appeared his Civilistische Abhandlungen, of which the prin- cipal was his famous essay, the parent of so much litera- ture, on the necessity of a national code for Germany. He had no wish to enter into official or practical life. ‘‘Tam Professor Thibaut, and wish to be nobody else.” In 1819 he was appointed representative in the first chamber of the Baden parliament. He was also made member of the Scheidungsgericht. In 1825 appeared anonymously his work Ueber die Reinheit der Tonkunst, in which he eulogized the old music, and especially that of his favourite master, Palestrina. It involved him in a contest with Nageli and other admirers of the new school of music, whose merits Thibaut was somewhat slow to

own. This has been translated into English by W. H. Gladstone. In 1836 Thibaut published his Hrérterungen

des rémischen Rechts. One of his last works was a contri- bution in 1838 to the Archiv fiir die civilistische Praxis, of which he was one of the editors (see below). He died peacefully, full of years and honour, on the 29th of March

1840.

Thibaut was of the middle height and broad-shouldered, his eyes bright and piercing, his head noble and striking ; his whole appearance told of power, simplicity, and reserve. All who knew him speak of his strong personality, his manly consistent nature. Young men loved him, and he drew to the young. If he sometimes signed his letters “Semper idem A. F. J. Thibaut,” it was not a phrase. Every incident told of him has a curious flavour. He was much more than a jurist: he deserves to be remembered in the history of music. Palestrina and the early com- posers of church music were his delight. “‘ Jurisprudence is my business; my music room is my temple.” His friend, Dr Baumstark, has left an interesting record of his musical pursuits and of the work of his ‘‘ Sangverein ” at Heidelberg. Among the masters of German prose Thibaut holds no mean place. Nothing could be clearer, more unpedantic and unpretentious, than his exposition ; his prose is scarcely inferior to Lessing’s. Like his speech, his written style was simple and manly, but it is simplicity marked by care, and is rich in the happy accidents of expression which come only to true artists. He liked the old classical

models; he read and reread the classics, ancient and modern, his taste being catholic enough to include Plato and Chrysostom, Montaigne, Hume's Essays, Adam Smith's works, Ferguson's Essay on the History of Civil Society (which he particularly admired), and the later developments of German literature.

Most of Thibaut's works have already been mentioned. Several of them, however, deserve further notice. And first as to his essay on the necessity of a code for Germany ("' Ueber die Nothwendig- keit eines allgemeinen biirgerlichen Rechts fiir Deutschland ").

No more persuasive argument for codification was ever advanced. It has all the vigour of Bentham's arguments for the same cause,

but is without his pamphleteering recklessness of expression. Unlike Hugo, whose education dated back to the time when French ~ literature was supreme in Germany and who felt himself somewhat a stranger to later German culture, Thibaut was of his own time, sensitive to the great change which had come over Germany after the battle of Leipsic, conscious of the insufficiency of Roman law, and eager to promote the greatness of his country. In his con- tribution to the Archiv fir die civilistische Praxis, in 1888, on "the so-called historical and unhistorical school," he tells the history of his memorable essay on the necessity of a code for Germany. He had seen many German soldiers in 1814 about to march to Paris. He realized the change which this denoted ; and out of the fulness of his heart he wrote the essay in a fortnight. The mode of treatment is more comprehensive than the theme ; and to-day, perhaps partly for this reason, the essay is as readable as it ever was; jurists have not yet carried out all the sug- gestions which it contains. For Germany, its soil freed and its honour vindicated, a happy future had, he predicted, been opened up. 'The division into small states was inevitable, and not to be deplored. The existence of great states is always in a sense unnatural ; it implies a warm life only at one point,—a constant repression of individuals for a common object, and no real unity between the rulers and the subjects. Ina land of small states, on the other hand, the peculiarity of each has full play; there is development of variety, and the unity of princes and people is deeper and more living." The

only unity practicable and needful in Thibaut's judgment was one of law; and for such all the German Governments should labour. His review of the state of jurisprudence in Germany is severe ; it recalls the contemporaneous criticisms passed by Bentham on English law. Thibaut pointed out luminously the contrast between the fundamental conceptions of Roman and Gernian society, and the inadequacy of Roman law to supply defects in German jurisprudence. It was not pleasing to many jurists to be told that a few lectures on the laws of the Persians and Chinese would do more to awaken a true judicial sense than minute disquisitions on the Roman law of intestacy— observations the full effect of which Thibaut himself did not perhaps conceive. The essay was as much a condemnation of the entire state of jurisprudence as an argument for codification ; it was a challenge to civilians to justify their very existence. Savigny took up the challenge thus thrown down ; and a long controversy as to points not very clearly defined took place. The glory of the controversy belonged to Savigny; the. real victory rested with Thibaut. By recent legislation Germany has carried out some of the ideas of Thibaut ; and others indicated but not developed in his essay remain to be completed by a scientific school of jurists. One of his works best worth reading is-his Theory of Construction. Though directly applicable to Roman law, it is of general use. The subject is divided into two branches—‘‘ Interpretation nach der Absicht des Gesetzgeber" and ‘‘ Interpretation nach dem Grunde des Gesetzes," or, as Austin expresses the distinction in a marginal note on his copy, ‘‘ What the legislator would have con- templated had he conceived his purpose completely and distinctly, and what the legislator actually contemplated." It would be inter- esting to compare the rules of interpretation stated by Thibaut with the rules of construction, familiar to English lawyers, laid down by Coke in Heydon's Case, 3, 7b, Reports. Thibaut's best-known work is on the Pandects (System des Pandektenrechts, 3 vols., 1808), a part of which was translated by Lord-Justice Lindley. He was one of the earliest to criticize the divisions found in the Institutes, and he carried on with Hugo a controversy as to these points. Thibaut's own classification earlier is unsatisfactory. He divided the subject into public law (that which treats of the relations between Government and subjects), private law, and international law. Public law he subdivided into constitutional law (Staats- recht, the laws binding on the sovereign) and administrative law (Regierungsrecht, or criminal law, and laws relating to finance and police). The laws relating to civil process were dealt with partly

under adininistrative law and partly under private law. Status was placed partly in the former partly in the latter; and the law as to guardianship and parental authority is treatcd as a part of the law of police. Thibaut, however, abandoned in practice this unscientific division. One of his most interesting works is his posthumous treatise on the ‘‘Code Civil,” Lehrbuch. des franzis- ischen Civilrechts in stcter Vergleichung mit dem rémischen Civil-recht. While criticizing the code, which he designates as in the highest degree unsystematic, he recognizes in it merits which German jurists of his time were reluctant to admit.

Jn modern German legal literature Thibaut’s influence is not very perceptible. Even at Heidelberg it was quickly superseded by that of his successor, Vangerow, and in Germany his works are now Httle used as text-books. But those best able to judge Thibaut have most praised him. Austin, who owed much to him, describes him as one “who for penetrating acuteness, rectitude of judgment and depth of learning, and eloquence of exposition may be placed, by the side of Von Savigny, at the head of all living civihans ;” and elsewhere he praises Thibaut’s indefatigable perseverance and

“sagacity not surpassable.” High though such eulogies are, they are scarcely adequate. In Thibaut’s works are promises which he did not fulfil, and they contain fertile suggestions whieh future jurists may utilize. It was not the least of his merits that he introduced seientific methods into legal practice and practical sense into jurisprudence. (J. Mt.)

THIELT, a town of Belgium, in the province of West Flanders, 15 miles south-south-east of Bruges, on a branch line between Ingelmunster and Deynze. It manufactures linen and woollen goods, gloves, vinegar and spirits, and has tanneries and bleacheries. ‘There is also some trade in cattle and grain. The town was of considerable import- ance in the Middle Ages, but was almost entirely destroyed by fire in 1383, a calamity from which it never wholly recovered. The population in 1876 was 10,527.

THIERRY, the name of two excellent French historians, brothers (Augustin and Amédée), both of whom, though their literary and historical faculty was

not quite equal, displayed the same devotion to historical study.

I. Jacques Nicoras Aveustin Tuterry (1795-1856), the elder and most gifted, was born at Blois on the 10th May 1795. He had no advantages of birth or fortune, but was greatly distinguished at the Blois grammar school, and entered the Ecole Normale, an establishment which, designed on the best principles to supply France with perfectly equipped teachers, has on the whole done more service to journalism and literature than to pedagogy. He appears to have been very susceptible to personal influences, and was for a time docile to St Simon and afterwards to Comte. But his real bent was towards more solid studies, and, under the impulse of the strong current setting at the time towards medizval research, he began, and in 1825 published, his History of the Norman Conquest of England, much altered and improved in the later edition of 1840. Two years later he published important Lettres sur Histoire de France, attacking the traditional method of history-writing, and recommending recourse to the original documents. About this time the heavy calamity of blindness threatened him, and by 1830 he had totally lost his sight. His marriage, however, with Julie de Quérengal, a woman of ability, considerably lightened his misfortune, and about the same time he was elected to the Académie des Inscriptions. He continued to pursue his historical studies, now through other eyes, and in 1834 published Dix Ans d'Htudes Historiques, which was followed by his capital work, the Lécits Merovingiens, in 1840. His later years were chiefly occupied in the study of the history of the Tiers Etat, which bore fruit in more than one publication. He died at Paris on May 22, 1856.

The duller school of picturesque Dryasdusts (a rather miraculous combination) who have profited by Thierry's labours and continued his work have sometimes charged both him and his brother with having entered on history with their minds full of Walter Scott, and with having subordinated facts to graphic presentation. The charge is entirely unjust, and is generally found in the mouths of those who are particularly ill qualified to make it, inasmuch as they owe Thierry nearly everything in style. By others he is de- scribed as the founder of the picturesque school, and in this capa- city, nodoubt, he has much to answer for. His own work, how- ever, is of a very high and remarkable character. He had hardly any forerunners, unless Gibbon may be counted as one, and his freedom from the besetting

sin of his own school—the subordina- tion of sober history to picturesque description and romantic narrative—is best seen by comparing him with his contemporary

Barante, who, however, is himself not to be named otherwise than honoris causa.

I]. Amépix Simon Dominique Turerry (1797-1873) was the younger brother of Augustin, and was born on the 2d August 1797. He began life as a journalist (after an essay, like his brother, at schoolmastering), was con- nected with the famous romantic harbinger the Globe, and obtained a small Government clerkship. His first book was a brief history of Guienne in 1825, and three years later appeared the Histoire des Gaulois, which was received

with much favour, and obtained him, from the royalist premier Martignac, a history professorship at Besancon. He was, however, thought too liberal for the Government of Charles X., and his lectures were stopped, with the result of securing him, after the revolution, the important post of prefect of the Haute-Saéne, which he held eight years. During this time he published nothing. In 1838 he was transferred to the council of state as master of requests, which post he held through the revolution of 1848 and the coup d'état till 1860, when he was made senator—a paid office, it must be remembered, and, in effect, a lucrative sinecure. He also passed through all the ranks of the Legion of Honour, became a member of the Académie des Inscriptions in 1841, and in 1862 received the honorary degree of D.C.L. at Oxford. He had, except during the time of his prefecture, never intermitted his literary work, being a constant contributor to the Revue des Deux Mondes, his articles (usually worked up after- wards into books) almost all dealing with Roman Gaul and its period. The chief were the Histoire d Attila (1856), frequently reprinted, the Histoire de la Gaule sous ? Administration Romaine (1840-2), a Tableau de UV Empire Romain, and, in imitation of his brother, certain Récits of Roman history, a book on St Jerome in 1867, and one on Chrysostom and Hudoxia in 1873. He died March 21, 1Ots.

His literary and historical genius was perhaps inferior to his brother's, and he exhibits more of the defects of the anecdotic method of writing history, but he shared Augustin's passion for going to the fountainhead and for animating the dry bones of mere chronicles and mere academic discussions with accounts of the life of peoples.

THIERS, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondisse- ment in the department of Puy-de-Déme, on the railway between Clermont and St Etienne, 24 miles east-north- east of the former town. It is most picturesquely situated on the side of a hill, at the foot of which the Durolle rapidly descends through a narrow valley into the Dore, in its turn a tributary of the Allier. The streets, rising in steep rows, contain many wooden and gabled houses, sonie of which are as old as the 15th century, and a fine view of the Plain of Limague and the Dime Hills is obtainable from the terraces. All the processes of making cutlery may be seen at Thiers, giving employment to 12,000 work- men in the town and the villages within a radius of 6 to 7 miles. Sheath-making, tanning, and paper-making (chiefly stamps and playing cards) employ 8000 hands, and the business done reaches £1,200,000 perannum. The churcli of Le Moutier, so named from a Benedictine monastery of which it formed part, contains building of the 7th, 8th, and 11th centuries; the tower is more modern. There were 12,005 inhabitants in 1886 (commune 16,754).

Thiers was sacked in 523 by the soldiers of Thierry, the son of Clovis; and Gregory of Tours speaks of a wooden ehapel which then existed here (on the site of the present church of Le Moutier). The church of St Genez was built in 573 by Avitus, bishop of Clermont, on the site of the ancient Tigernwm Castrwm, was rebuilt in 1016 by Wido, lord of Thiers, and again in the 12th century. There is some curious mosaic work of the 12th century, and a fine tomb of the 13th. The commercial importance of Thiers was greatly increased three centuries ago, when the manufacture of the larger kinds of cutlery was introduced from Chateldon, between Vichy and Thiers.

THIERS, Louis ApotpHE (1797-1877), "liberator of the territory," as even the short-lived gratitude of France continues to call him, was born at Marseilles on April 16, 1797. His family are somewhat grandiloquently spoken of as 'cloth merchants ruined by. the Revolution," but it seems that

at the actual time of his birth his father was a locksmith. His mother belonged to the family of the Chéniers, and he was well educated, first at the Lycée of Marseilles, and then in the faculty of law at Aix. Here he began his life-long friendship with Mignet, and was

i ce

called to the bar at the age of 23. He had, however, little taste for law and much for literature ; and he obtained (it is said by an ingenious trick, and in spite of unfair and prejudiced attempts to deprive him of it) an academic prize at Aix—for a discourse on Vauvenargues. In the early autumn of 1821 Thiers went to Paris, and was quickly introduced as a contributor to the Constitutionnel, at first on literary and then on general and especially political subjects, as well as art and the drama. In each of the years immediately following his arrival in Paris he collected and published a volume of his Constitutionnel articles, the first on the salon of 1822, the second ona tour in the Pyrenees. He was put out of all need of money by the singular benefaction of Cotta, the well- known Stuttgart publisher, who was part-proprietor of the Constitutionnel, and made over to Thiers his dividends, or part of them. Meanwhile he became very well known in Liberal society, especially in the house of Laffitte, and he had begun and was rapidly compiling (at first with the assistance of M. Felix Bodin and afterwards alone) the celebrated Histoire de la Révolution Francaise, which founded his literary and helped his political fame. The first two volumes appeared in 1823, the last two (of ten) in 1827. The book brought him little profit at first, but became immensely popular. The well-known sentence of Carlyle, that it is “as far as possible from meriting its high reputation,” is in strictness justified, not merely in regard to this, but in regard to all Thiers’s historical work, which is only too frequently marked by extreme inaccuracy, by prejudice which passes the limits of accidental unfairness ant sometimes seems to approach those of positive dishonesty, and by an almost complete indifference to the merits as compared with the successes of his heroes. But Carlyle himself admits that Thiers is “a brisk man in his way, and will tell you much if you know nothing.” In other words, the Histoire de la Révolution (again like its author’s other work) possesses in a very high degree the gifts of clearness, liveliness, and intelligible handling which so often distinguish French writing. Coming as it did just when the

reaction against the Revolution was about to turn into another reaction in its favour, it was assured of success.

For a moment it seemed as if the author had definitely chosen the lot of a literary man, even of a literary hack. He planned an Histoire Générale, and was about to survey mankind from China to Peru on the deck of a French man-of-war as a preliminary process. But the accession to power of the Polignac ministry in August 1829 changed his projects, and at the beginning of the next year Thiers, with Armand Carrel, Mignet, and others, started the National, a new opposition newspaper, which openly attacked the older Bourbon line and was foremost in pro- voking the famous and fatal Ordonnances of July. Thiers himself was the soul (or at least one of the souls) of the actual revolution. What share he had in the process sometimes attributed to him of " overcoming the scruples of Louis Philippe" is no doubt a debateable question, with the problem im imine of the debate whether Louis Philippe had any scruples to overcome. At any rate Thiers had his reward. He ranked, if not at once, yet very soon, as one of the radical though not republican supporters of the new dynasty, in opposition to the party of which his rival Guizot was the chief literary man, and Guizot's patron the duke of Broglie the main pillar among the nobility, and which might be called by comparison Conservative. At first Thiers, though elected deputy for Aix, obtained only subordinate places in the ministry of finance. After the overthrow of his patron Laffitte, he seemed to change his politics and became much less radical, and, after the troubles of June 1832, this tend-

ency was strengthened or rewarded by his appointment to the ministry of the interior. He repeatedly changed his portfolio, but.remained in office for four years, became president of the council and in effect prime minister, and began the series of quarrels and jealousies with Guizot which make one of the chief and not the most creditable features of the politics of the reign. At the time of his resignation in 1836 he was foreign minister, and, as usual, wished for a spirited policy in Spain, which he could not carry out. He travelled in Italy for some time, and it was not till 1838 that he began a regular campaign of parliamentary opposition, which in March 1840 made

him president of the council and foreign minister for the second time. But he held the position barely six months, and, being unable to force on the king an anti-English and anti-Turkish policy, resigned on October 29, after having, as was generally thought, with the direct purpose of stir- ring up Anglophobia, begged the body of Napoleon from England. This was made the occasion of the ceremony immortaliy ridiculed by Thackeray, and, it is said, con- demned by Thiers himself as unworthy of the occasion. He now had little to do with politics for some years, and spent his time on the preparation, on a much larger scale than his first work, of his Histoire du Consulat et de Empire, the first volume of which appeared in 1845, and which continued to occupy him for more than twenty years of composition and nearly twenty of publication. During the interval, though he was still a member of the chamber, he spoke rarely, but after the beginning of 1846 his appearances were more frequent, and he was evidently bidding once more for power on the liberal and reforming side. Immediately before the revolution of February he went to all but the greatest lengths, and whien it broke out he and Odillon Barrot were summoned by the king, but it was too late. Thiers was unable to govern the forces he had helped to gather, and he resigned.

Under the republic he took up the position of conserva- tive republican, which he ever afterwards maintained (his acceptance of the republic being not much more heartfelt than his subsequent acceptance, after an interval, of the empire), and he never took office. But the consistency of his conduct, especially in voting for Prince Louis Napoleon as president, was often and sharply criticized, one of the criticisms leading to a duel with a fellow deputy, Bixio. On the whole, his conduct during these years, and still more during the last years of Louis Philippe, may be said to have been not wholly creditable. He was arrested at the coup d’état (when some malicious and apparently false stories were spread as to his cowardice), was sent to Mazas, and then escorted out of France. But in the following summer he was allowed to return. For the next decade his history was almost a blank, his time being occupied for the most part on Zhe Consulate and the Empire. It was not till 1863 that he re-entered political life, being elected by a Parisian constituency in opposition to the Government candidate. For the seven years follow- ing he was the chief speaker among the small band of anti-Imperialists in the French chamber, and was regarded generally as the

most formidable enemy of the empire, — all the more formidable because he never gave occasion for taking any violent steps against him. It has been pointed out that, while nominally protesting against the foreign enterprises of the empire, he perpetually harped on French loss of prestige, and so contributed more than any one else to stir up the fatal spirit which brought on the war of 1870, and that, while constantly criticizing and weakening the Government of his country, he gave it no help nor even offered any. Even when the Liberal- Imperialist Ollivier ministry was formed, he maintained at first an anything but benevolent neutrality, and then

an open opposition, and it would be pleasant to feel more certain than we can feel that his vigorous denuncia- tion of the war with Prussia was the result of honest conviction, and not inerely of the fact that it was not Avs war. At any rate, it brought him great unpopularity for the moment, with a corresponding reaction of gratitude when the crash came. Again it is impossible to be sure whether mere “ canniness,” or something better, kept him from joining the Government of the National Defence, of which he was in a manner the author.

Nevertheless the collapse of the empire was a great opportunity for Thiers, and it was worthily accepted. He undertook in the latter part of September and the first three weeks of October a circular tour to the different courts of Europe, in the hope (which he probably knew to be a vain one, though the knowledge neither daunted his spirit nor relaxed his efforts) of obtaining some inter- vention, or at least some good offices. The mission was unsuccessful; but the negotiator was on its conclusion immediately charged with another—that of obtaining, if possible, an armistice directly from Prince Bismarck. For a time this also failed, as the Provisional Government would not accept the German conditions; but at last France was forced to yield. The armistice having been arranged, and the opportunity having been thus obtained of electing a National Assembly, Thiers was chosen deputy by more than twenty constituencies (of which he preferred Paris), and was at once elected by the Assembly itself practically president, nominally “chef du pouvoir exé- cutif.” He lost no time in choosing a coalition cabinet, and then personally took up the negotiation of peace. Probably no statesman has

ever had a more disgusting task ; and the fact that he discharged it to the satisfaction of a vast majority, even in a nation popularly reputed the vainest, the least ballasted with common sense, and the most ungrateful to public servants who are unsuccessful, is the strongest testimony to Thiers's merits. After contest- ing the matter, on the one side with the determination of Germany to have the pound of flesh, on the other with the reluctance of the Assembly to submit to the knife, he succeeded in convincing the deputies that the peace was necessary, and it was (March 1, 1871) voted by more than five to one.

Thiers held office for more than two years after this event,—a length of tenure which, in the circumstances and considering the French temper, is very surprising, and shows the strength of the general conviction that he alone could be trusted. He had at first to meet and crush at once the mad enterprise of the Paris commune ; and the severity which was undoubtedly shown in doing this is more than justified by two considerations,—first, that failure to suppress it would have meant anarchy through- out France; and, secondly, that the Germans would almost to a certainty have made it a pretext for further demands. Soon after this was accomplished, Thiers be- came (August 30) in name as well as in fact president of the republic, and he set himself with vigour and success to the tasks of rearranging the army, the finances (includ- ing the paying off of the war indemnity), and the civil

service, and of procuring the withdrawal of the German

arnly of occupation.

The strong personal will and inflexible opinions of the president had much to do with the resurrection of France ; but the very same facts made it inevitable that he should excite violent opposition. It seems to be gene- rally acknowledged that to him personally were due the establishment and retention of the republican rather than the monarchical form of government, to which latter the Assembly as first elected was notoriously disposed. He was a confirmed protectionist, and free-trade ideas had

made great way in France under the empire ; he was an advocate of long military service, and the devotees of la revanche were all for the introduction of general and com- pulsory but short service. Both his talents and his temper made him utterly indisposed to maintain the distant, Olympian, apparently inactive, attitude which is supposed to be incumbent ona republican president ; and (for his tongue was never a carefully governed one) he sometimes let drop expressions scarcely consistent with constitutional theories of the relation of the chief of the state, whether president or king, to parliament. In January 1872 he formally tendered his resignation; but the country was then in too manifestly disorganized a condition to allow even his enemies to accept it. His position, however, was clearly one not tenable for long in such a country as France. The Right (and not merely the Extreme Right) hated him for his opposition to the restoration of the monarchy, and with some justice reminded him of former declarations and opinions on the subject ; the Extreme Left could not forgive the suppression of the commune, while some radical leaders, who may have had little sympathy with the commune itself, saw in his great reputation and imperious personality a bar to their own accession to power. His chief supporters—men like Rémusat, Barthélemy Saint- Hilaire, and Jules Simon—were men rather of the past than of the present ; and he had few younger adherents.

The year 1873 was, as a parliamentary year in France, occupied to a great extent with attacks on Thiers. In the early spring regulations were proposed, and on April 13 were carried, which were intended to restrict the executive and especially the parliamentary powers of the president. On the 27th of the same month a contested election in Paris, resulting in the return of the opposi- tion candidate, M. Barodet, was regarded as a grave disaster for the Thiers Government, and that Government was not much strengthened by a dissolution and recon- stitution of the cabinet on May 19. Immediately after- wards the question was brought to a head by an interpel- lation moved by the duke of Broglie. The president declared that he should take this as a vote of want of confidence ; and in the debates which followed a vote of this character (though on a different formal issue, and proposed by M. Ernoul) was carried by 16 votes in a house of 704. Thiers at once resigned (May 24).

He survived his fall four years, continuing to sit in the Assembly, and, after the dissolution of 1876, in the Chamber of Deputies, and sometimes, though rarely, speaking. He was also, on the occasion of this dissolution, elected senator for Belfort, which his exertions had saved for France ; but he preferred the lower house, where he sat as of old for Paris. On May 16, 1877, he was one of the “363” who voted want of confidence in the Broglie ministry (thus paying his debts), and he took considerable part in organizing the subsequent electoral campaign. But he was not destined to see its success, being fatally struck with apoplexy at St Germain-en-Laye on September 3. Thiers had long been married, and his wife and _ sister-in-law, Mlle. Dosne, were his constant companions ; but he left no children, and had had only one—a daughter,—who long predeceased him. He had been a member of the Academy since 1834. His personal appearance was remarkable, and not imposing, for he was very short, with plain features, ungainly gestures and manners, very near-sighted, and of disagreeable voice; yet he became (after wisely giving up anattempt at the ornate style of oratory) a very effective speaker in a kind of conversational manner, and in the epigram of debate he had no superior among the statesmen of his time except Lord Beaconsfield.

Thiers is by far the most gifted and interesting of the group of literary statesmen—not statesmen who have had a penchant for

litcrature, but men of letters whose litcrary distinction has made them politicians—which forms a unique feature in the French political history of this century. Numerous as these are, there are only two who are at all comparable to him—Guizot and Lamartine ; and as a statesman he stands far above both. Noris this eminence merely due to his great opportunity in 1870 ; for Guizot might under Louis Philippe have almost made himself a French Walpole, at

least a French Palmerston, and Lamartine’s opportunitics aftcr 1848

were, for a man of political genius, illimitable. But both failed, —Lamartine almost ludicrously,—while Thiers in hard conditions made a striking if not a brilliant success.

As a man of lettcrs Thiers is very much smaller. He has not only the fault of diffuseness, which is common to so many of the best-known histories of this century, but others as scrious or more so. The charge of dishonesty is one never to be lightly made against men of such distinction as his, especially when their evi- dent confidence in their own infallibility, their faculty of ingenious casuistry, and the strength of will which makes them (unconsciously, no doubt) close and keep closed the eyes of their mind to all ineon- venicnt facts and inferences supply a more charitable explanation. But it is certain that from Thiers's dealings with the men of the first Revolution to his dealings with the battle of Waterloo, constant, angry, and well-supported protests against his unfairness were not lacking. Although his search among doeuments was undoubtedly wide, its results are by no means always accurate, and his admirers themselves admit great inequalities of style in him. These characteristics reappear (accompanied, however, by frequent touches of the epigrammatic power above mentioned, which seems to have come to Thiers more readily as an orator or a journalist than as an historian) in his speeches, which have, since his death, been collected in many volumes by his widow. Sainte-Beuve, whose notices of Thiers are generally kindly, says of him, ''M. Thiers sait tout, tranche tout, parle de tout," and this omniscience and "'cocksureness" (to use the word of a prime minister of England con- temporary with this prime minister of France) are perhaps the chief pervading features both of the statesman and the ian of letters.

His histories, in many different editions, and his specches, as above, are easily accessible; his minor works and newspaper articles have not, we believe, becn collected in any form. Works on him, by M. Laya, M. de Mazade, his colleague and friend M. Jules Simon, and others, are numerous. But a thorough biograph- ical study of him has not yet been made; and, though inonuments enough have been raised in his own country, {t is even there often complained that the incessant and futile political struggles of the last ten years have too much obscured the reputation and weakened the memory of the last great statesman of France. (G. SA.)

THIRLWALL, Connor (1797-1875), bishop of St David's, was born at Stepney on 11th January 1797, and was the son of the Rev. Thomas Thirlwall, at the time lecturer at St Dunstan's, Stepney, and afterwards

rector of Bowers Gifford, in Essex. The family were of North- umbrian extraction. Young Connop showed the most remarkable precocity, learning Latin at three, reading Greek at four, and writing sermons at seven. When he was twelve his admiring father published his Primitiz, sermons and poems, the thoughts of an imitative boy in the style of a grown man. . No especial greatness could have been safely predicted from these performances, which Thirlwall assiduously strove to suppress in after years. He shortly afterwards went to the Charterhouse, where

he wrote a number of letters to a friend named John Candler, some of which have been preserved. They dis- play the same extraordinary prematurity, but are barren of anything original except what he himself calls “ sensi- bility to the great and beautiful in morality.” By a curious coincidence his future rival in Greek history, Grote, and Hare, his coadjutor in the translation of Niebuhr, were among his schoolfellows. He took up his residence at Trinity College, Cambridge, in October 1814, and gained the Craven university scholarship, one of threc recorded instances of this honour being obtained by fresh- men, and the chancellor’s classical medal. In October 1818 he was elected to a fellowship, and immediately went for a year’s travel on the Continent. At Rome he gained the friendship of Bunsen, which had a most import- ant influence on his life. On his return, “distrust of his own resolutions and convictions” led him to abandon for the time his intention of being a clergyman, and he settled down to the study of the law, “with a firm determination not to suffer it to engross my time so as to prevent me from pursuing other branches of knowledge.” This was not the way to become lord chancellor, and, though he afterwards says, ‘‘My aversion to the law has not in- creased,” he adds, “It scarcely could.” How little his heart was with it was shown by the labour he soon im- posed upon himself of translating and prefacing Schleier- macher’s essay on the Gospel of St ~~Luke, “very injudi~~ ciously,” says Maurice, who seems to think that it may have cost Thirlwall the archbishopric of Canterbury. The translation, nevertheless, marks an era in English theology. He further, probably influenced by Hare, who had already translated Tieck, rendered two of the latter’s most recent Novellen into English. In 1827 he at length made up his mind to quit his uncongenial profession, and was ordained deacon the same

year. Beyond all question he might have obtained the highest distinction both as jurist and advocate, had law interested him more, or other things less. No one ever possessed a more judicial mind. Of his oratory, Mill, whom he opposed at a debating society, says, ‘‘ Before he had uttered ten sentences I set him down as the best speaker I had_ever heard, and I have never since heard any one whom I placed above him.”

It is not often that a scholar twice makes an epoch by a translation. Such was Thirlwall’s destiny : he joined with Hare in translating Niebuhr’s ZZistory of Rome ; the first volume appeared in 1828. The translation was attacked in the Quarterly as favourable to scepticism, and the translators jointly replied. In 1831 the friends estab- lished the Philological Museum, which lived through only six numbers, though among Thirlwall’s contributions was his masterly paper on the irony of Sophocles,—“ the most exquisite criticism I ever read,” says Sterling. On Hare’s departure from Cambridge in 1832, Thirlwall became assistant college tutor, which led him to take a memor- able share in the great controversy upon the admission of Dissenters which arose in 1834. Dr Turton, the regius professor of divinity, had written a pamphlet objecting to the admission, on the pretext of the apprehended un- settlement of the religious opinions of young churchmen. Thirlwall replied by pointing out that no provision for theological instruction was in fact made by the colleges except compulsory attendance at chapel, and that this was mischievous. This attack upon a time-hallowed piece of college discipline brought upon him a demand for the resignation of his office as assistant tutor. He complied at once ; his friends generally thought that he ought to have tested the master’s power. ‘The occurrence marked him out for promotion from a Liberal Government, and in the autumn lie received the chancellor’s living of Kirby- under-Dale, in Yorkshire. Though devoted to his par-

ochial duties, he found time to begin the book which has remained the principal work of one whose performance, however great, rarely rose to the level of his power. His History of Greece, unfortunately for him and for us, was a commission from Lardner’s Cabinet Cyclopedia, and was originally

intended to have been condensed into two or three duodecimo volumes. The scale was enlarged, but Thirlwall always felt cramped. He seems a little below his subject, and a little below himself. Yet, such was his ability that his history is usually allowed to fall only just short of Grote's, a work undertaken with far greater enthusiasm, and executed with far greater advantages. Sterling pronounces him "'a writer as great as Thucydides and Tacitus, and with far more knowledge than they." The first volume was published in 1835, the last in 1847. A noble letter from Thirlwall to Grote, and Grote's generous reply, are published in the life of the latter.

In 1840 Thirlwall was raised to the see of St David's. The promotion was entirely the act of Lord Melbourne, an, amateur in theology, who had read Thirlwall's introduction to Schleiermacher, and satisfied himself of 'the propriety of the appointment. 'I don't intend to make a heterodox bishop if I know it," he said. Thirlwall so little expected the honour that he was absent on a pedestrian tour, and it was some days before he could be found. In most essential points he was a model bishop, and in acquainting himself with Welsh, so as to preach and conduct service in that language, he performed a feat which few bishops could have imitated. It cannot be said that he was greatly beloved by his clergy, who felt their intellectual distance too great, and were alternately frozen by his taci- turnity and appalled by his sarcasm. The great monu- ment of his episcopate is the eleven famous charges in which he from time to time reviewed the position of the English Church with reference to whatever might be the most pressing question of the day,—addresses at once judicial and statesmanlike, full of charitable wisdom and massive sense. No similar productions, it may safely be said, were ever so eagerly looked for, or carried with them such weight of authority. His endeavours to allay ecclesi- astical panic, and to promote liberality of spirit, frequently required no ordinary moral courage. He was one of the four prelates who refused to inhibit Bishop Colenso from preaching in their dioceses, and the only one who with- held his signature from the addresses calling upon Colenso to resign his see. He took the liberal side in the questions of Maynooth, of the admission of Jews to parliament, of the Gorham case, and of the conscience clause. He was the only bishop who voted for the disestablishment of the Irish Church, though but as a painful necessity. Concur- rent endowment would have been much more agreeable to him. For many years he was the only statesman on the

bench ; it would have been a great benefit to the Church of England had it been possible to have raised him to the primacy upon the death of Archbishop Howley. But such was the complexion of ecclesiastical politics that the eleva- tion of the most impartial prelate of his day would have been resented as a piece of party spirit.

Thirlwall's private life was happy and busy. He never married, but found sufficient outlet for his deep affection- ateness of nature in his tenderness to the children of others, and to all weak things except weak-minded clergy- men. He was devoted to animals, and rivalled Southey and Jeremy Bentham in his love for cats. Perhaps the most durable monument to his memory will be his incomparable volume of letters to a friend, Miss Johnes of Dolaucothy, a young lady in every way worthy to be the correspondent of such a man. Even as letters these rank with the best in the language ; but as letters from age to youth, sym- pathizing with all its feelings, entering into all its pleasures,

at once inspiring and amusing, guiding without seeming to direct, aud entertaining without seeming to condescend, they are unique in their delightful branch of literature, They are also important as revealing Thirlwall's mind on numerous subjects which he has not elsewhere treated, and most interesting from their picture of simplicity of char- acter associated with greatness of intellect, and of the multiplicity of his intellectual interests, from which novels and fine art were by no means excluded. During his latter years he took great interest in the revision of the authorized version of the Bible, and was chairman of the revisers of the Old Testament. He resigned his see in May 1874, and retired to Bath, where he died on July

27, 1875.

As scholar, critic, and ecclesiastical statesman Thirlwall is almost above praise. He was not a great original thinker ; he lacked the creative faculty and the creative impulse. The world owes such vestiges of his power as it possesses to a series of fortunate accidents—an importunate editor, vexatious church controversies, and an admirable friend. Though not most

fully exerted, the force of his mind is perhaps best appreciated in the volume of his letters edited by Dean Perowne. His treatment of every question is consummate ; the largest and the smallest seem alike to him. His character, with its mixture of greatness and gentleness, was thus read by Carlyle :—‘“‘a right solid honest-hearted man, full of knowledge and sense, and, in spite of his positive temper, almost timid.”

Thirlwall’s History of Greece remains a standard book. His literary and theological remains have been edited by Dean Perowne in three volumes, two of which are oceupicd by his charges. His letters on literary and thcological subjects, with a connecting memoir, have been published by Dean Perowne and the Rev. Louis Stokes. His Letters to a Friend were originally published by Dean Stanley, and there is a revised and corrected edition. For a general vicw of Thirlwall’s life and character, see the Edinburgh Review, vol. cxliii.; for a picture of him in his diocese, Temple Bar, vol. lxxvi. The review of his letters in Blackwood’s Maga- zine for 1852 is by the late Rev. W. Lucas Collins. (R. G.)

THIRSK, a market-town in the North Riding of York- shire, is situated on the North Eastern Railway, and on the Codbeck, a branch of the Swale, 21 miles south of Darlington, 11 north-east of Ripon, and 210 north of London. The Codbeck is crossed by two stone bridges connecting the old and the new town. The church of St Mary, in the Perpendicular style, with parvise, chancel, nave, aisles, porch, and tower 80 feet in height, is the noblest church in the Riding. The chancel was repaired in 1844, and the whole building restored in 1877. The moat of the ancient castle built by the Mowbrays about 980 still remains. The principal modern buildings are the assembly rooms (1849), the mechanics’ institute (1852), and the new court-house (1886). Standing in the fertile district of the Vale of Mowbray, the town has an extensive home and foreign agricultural implement trade. Iron-founding, engineering, tanning, and brickmaking are carried on, and there are large flour-mills. The population of the parliamentary borough, now disfranchised (area 11,828 acres), in 1871 was 5734, and in 1881 it was 6312. The population of the township in 1881 was 3337.

Thirsk owes its origin to the castle of the Mowbrays, and here Roger de Mowbray erected his standard, in conjunction with tho king of Scotland,

against Henry II. Upon tho suppression of the revolt the castle was destroyed. In the rcign of Henry VII., Henr Percy, earl of Northumberland, is said to have bcen put to death beneath an elm tree which formerly grew on St James's Green. Thirsk was a borough by prescription, but was never incorporated. It first returned members to parliament in the reign of Edward I., but not again till the last parliament of Edward VI. In 1882 the

number of representatives was reduced to one, and in 1885 it ceased to be separately represented.

THISTLE. This term, as generally employed, is of vague application, being given to almost any herbaceous plant that is of a spiny character. More strictly, it is ap-

plied to the species of Carduus. These are Composite herbs with very spiny leaves, and similar bracts surrounding a head of purplish-white, tubular, 5-parted flowers seated on a pitted and hairy receptacle. The anthers have append- ages both at the apex and at the base. The style has a ring of hairs at the point of bifurcation of the two stig- mata. The fruit is surmounted by a tuft of silky white hairs. The species are numerous, and some are of great beauty, though not unnaturally looked on with disfavour by the farmer. The Cotton Thistle, remarkable for its covering of white down, is Onopordon Acanthium ; the Blessed Thistle is Carduus benedictus ; the Holy Thistle, the leaves of which are spotted with white, is C. Mari- anus. The common C., lanceolatus seems to be the most suitable prototype for the Scotch Thistle, though that honour is also conferred on Onopordon Acanthium, the cotton thistle, a doubtful native, and on other species. The great objection to thistles from an agricultural point

of view resides in the freedom with which they produce,

seed, and in the vigour of their underground growth, which makes their uprooting a matter of difficulty. Partial up- rooting may indeed, in the case of the perennial species, increase the mischief, for each fragment left behind may grow into a distinct plant. Annual species might be kept in check were they cut down before the flowers appear, but unless all the cultivators in a

particular district co-operate the efforts of individuals are of little avail. The Globe Artichoke and Cardoon are very near allies of the thistles. The Safflower, Carthamus, another thistle, yields a service- able dye; the Burdock, Arctiwm lappa, has an edible root ; and numerous allied species have medicinal properties.

THISTLE, Orper or THE. See KnicHuTHooD, vol. xiv. p. 123.

THISTLEWOOD CONSPIRACY, or Cato STREET Conspiracy, a plot formed in 1820 to murder Lord Castlereagh and other ministers of the British crown, and to seize the Bank and Mansion-House and proclaim a pro- visional government. Its chief instigator was Arthur Thistlewood, or properly Thistlewaite, born in 1770, the son of a civil engineer in Lincolnshire, who had held a commission in the militia and afterwards in the line in the West Indies. In America and in France he had imbibed revolutionary views, and, having lost his wife's fortune in speculation and on the turf, had planned the desperate sclieme probably for his own benefit as well as the good of the nation. The intention was to murder the ministers in the house of the earl of Harrowby in Mansfield Street on the evening of the 23d February. For this przpose between twenty and thirty men assembled in a stable in Cato Street, Edgeware Road, but while they were arming themselves they were pounced upon by the police, and a large number captured, though the majority, including Thistlewood, escaped. A reward of £1000 having been offered for Thistlewood, he was arrested next day at 10 White Street. After a trial Thistlewood and four others were executed on the lst May, while five were transported. On being asked on the scaffold if he repented, Thistlewood replied, '" No,

not at all; I shall soon know the last grand secret."

See the Trials of Arthur Thistlewood, James Ings, John Thomas Brunt, Richard Tidd, William Davidson, and others at the Session of the Old Batley 17-28 April 1820, 2 vols., 1820; and the Genileman's Magazine for the same year.

THOLUCK, Friepricu Aucust Gorrreu (1799-1877), German theologian and preacher, was born at Breslau, March 30, 1799, in humble circumstances. He received his education at the grammar school and

university of his native town, and early distinguished himself by wonder- ful versatility of mind, a phenomenal power of acquiring languages, and an omnivorous appetite for books. A romantic love of the East and its literature led him to exchange the university of Breslau for that of Berlin, that he might study Oriental languages to greater advan-

tage, and there he was received into the house of the Orientalist Von Dietz. He was introduced to Pietistic circles in Berlin, and came specially under the influence of Baron Von Kottwitz, who became his "'spiritual father," and of the historian Neander. Before deciding on the career of theological professor, he had in view that of a missionary in the East. Meanwhile he was feeling the influence to a certain degree of the romantic school, and of Schleier-

'macher and Hegel too, though he never sounded the

depths of their systems. At length, in his twenty-first year, he finally decided to adopt the academical calling. From December 1820 to April 1826 he was ''privat-docent " and " prof. extraordinarius " of theology in Berlin, though he was at the same time most active in the work of home and foreign missions. He lectured on the Old and New Testaments, theology, apologetics, and the history of the church in the 18th century. The first fruit of his Oriental studies and his introduction to his profession was his work

_Ssufismus, sive Theosophia Persarum Pantherstica (1821) ;

following the same line of study he published Lliiten- sammlung aus der morgenldndischen Mystik (1825) and Speculative Trinititslehre des spiiteren Orients (1826). His well-known essay on the nature and moral influence of heathenism (1822) was published by Neander, with high commendation, in his Denkwiirdigkeiten; and his Com- mentary on the Epistle to the Romans (1824) secured him a foremost place amongst the most suggestive, if not the most accurate, Biblical interpreters of that time. An- other work, which was soon translated into all the prin- cipal European languages, Die Lehre von der Stinde und vom Versdhner (1823), the outcome of his own religious history, procured for him the position which

he ever after held of the modern Pietistic apologist of evangelical Christianity. In 1825, with the aid of the Prussian Govern- ment, he visited the libraries of England and Holland, and on his return was appointed professor of theology at Halle, the centre of German rationalism. Here he made it his aim to combine in a higher unity the learning and to some extent the rationalism of Semler with the devout and active pietism of Francke ; and, in spite of the opposition of the theological faculty of the university, he succeeded in changing the character of its theology. This he effected partly by his lectures, particularly his exegetical courses, but, above all, by his personal influence upon the students, and, after 1833, by his preaching. His theological position was that of a mild and large-hearted orthodoxy, which laid more stress upon Christian experience than upon rigid dogmatic belief. On the two great questions of miracles and inspiration he made great concessions to modern criticism and philosophy. The battle of his life was on behalf of personal religious experience, in opposition to the externality of rationalism, orthodoxy, or sacrament- arianism. He fought this battle with weapons taken in the first instance from his own personal history, but also from the wide world of human culture, ancient and modern. Carl Schwarz happily remarks that, as the English apolo- gists of the 18th century were themselves infected with the poison of the deists whom they endeavoured to refute, so Tholuck absorbed some of the heresies of the rationalists whom he tried to overthrow. As a preacher Tholuck ranked amongst the foremost of his time. He was also one of the prominent members of the Evangelical Alliance, and few men were more widely known or more beloved throughout the Protestant churches of Europe and America than he. He died at Halle, June 10, 1877.

After his commentaries (on Romans, the Gospel of John, the Sermon on the Mount, and the Epistle to the Hebrews) and several volumes of sermons, his best-known books are Stunden christlicher Andacht (1889, 8th ed. 1870), intended to take the place of Zschokke’s standard rationalistic work with the same title, and his reply to Strauss’s Life of Jesus (Glaubwiirdigkeit der evangelischen

Geschichte, 1837). He published at various times valuable contribu- tions towards a history of rationalism,—Vorgeschichte des Ration- alismus (1853-62), Geschichte des Rationalismus, i. (1865), and a number of essays connected with the history of theology and espe- cially of apologetics. His views of inspiration were indicated in his work Die Propheten und thre Weissagungen (1860), in his essay on the “Alte Inspirationslehre,” Deutsche Zeitschrift fir christliche Wissenschaft (1850), and in his Gesprdche wiber die vornehmsten Glaubensfragcn der Zcit (1846, 2d ed. 1867).

See Das Leben Tholucks, by L. Witte, 2 vols., 1884-1886; A. Tholuck, ein Lebens- abriss, by M. Kihler (1877), and the same author’s art. ‘‘Tholuck,” in Herzog’s Real-Encyklopédie; ‘‘Zur Erinnerung an Tholuck,” by C. Siegfried, Protestant- ische Kirchzettung, 1885, No. 45, and 1886, No. 47; Carl Schwarz, Zur Geschichte der neuesten Theologie (4th ed., 1869); Nippold’s Handbuch der neuesten Kirchen- geschichte. :

THOMAS, Sz, one of the twelve apostles. The synop- tical Gospels give only his name, associating him in their lists with Matthew (Mat. x. 3; Mark iii. 18; Luke vi. 15); in Acts i 13 he is coupled with Philip. In the Gospel of John (xi. 16; xiv. 5; xx. 24 sq.; xxi. 2) he appears in a characteristic light, full of personal devotion and ready to die with his Master, but slow to grasp the true significance of the redeeming death of Jesus, and incredulous of the resurrection till direct evidence con- vinces him of its truth and at the same time of the Divinity of his risen Lord. John translates the Aramaic name or surname Thomas (N18) by the Greek equiva- lent Didymus (twin). Tradition has it that he was the twin brother of a sister Lysia (his parents being Diophanes and Rhoa, and his birthplace Antioch; “XII. Apost. Patric,” in Chron. Pasch., ii. 142), or of a brother Elieser (Hom. Clem., ii. 1), or, according to the Acta Thome (ed. Bonnet, pp. 11, 23), of Jesus Himself. The last form of the tradi- tion seems to be derived from the name Judas Thomas, which he bears in Edessene legend (cf. Eusebius, ZZ. Z., i, 18, 10), and implies the identification of Thomas with Judas, the brother of the Lord. The most ancient tradi- tion makes Thomas the evangelist of Parthia (Eus., HZ. #., iii. 1, 1); and at Edessa, which claimed to possess his bones, it was related that their missionary Thaddeus (Eus., H. H., i. 13, 10), or Addai (Doctrine of Addai, ed. Phillips,

1876, p. 5), was sent to them by him. Later tradition, originating with the Gnostic Acta Thome, and accepted by catholic teachers from the middle of the 4th century, makes him proceed to India and there suffer martyrdom. The Indian king Gundaphorus of the Acta is, however, certainly identical with the historical Gondophares (see Persia, vol. xviii. p. 603), whose dynasty was Parthian, though his realm included regions loosely reckoned to India. The Parthian and Indian missions of Thomas may perhaps therefore be regarded as derived from a single tradition. Later authors, but not the Acta, give as the scene of his martyrdom the city of Calamine, which the modern Christians of St Thomas (see below) identify with Mylapur, but which Gutschmid would connect with the Calama of Nearchus, on the coast of Gedrosia, which was under the sceptre of Gondophares. Other names of his- torical persons and places can be traced with more or less probability in the Acta, but these do not alter the utterly apocryphal character of the legend, which indeed is in many respects easier to understand if we accept the bold hypothesis of Gutschmid, that it was borrowed by the Gnostic author from a Buddhist story of the conversion of Arachosia (IV. Rhein, Mus., xix. 161 sq.).

The Acta Thomx, very imperfectly published by Thilo (1823) and Tischendorf (1851), have been edited in Greek, together with the Latin De Miraculis and Passio §. Thome, by Bonnet (Leipsic, 1883), and in Syriac, with an English translation, by W. Wright (Apocryphal Acts, 2 vols., London, 1871). See also Lipsius, Die apocryphen Apostelgeschichten, vol. i. (Brunswick, 1883), for these and other versions of the legend. The Acta are said by Photius to be a part of the Meploda: ray &roordéAwy of the Gnostic Leucius Charinus, but this unknown personage is to be thought of asa col- lector of Gnostic ‘* Acts of Apostles,” rather than as the first author.

In spite of extensive catholic revision, they form one of the most Interesting monuments of early Gnosticism. Internal evidence

assigns them with great probability to the school of Bardesanes, and the very ancient allegorical hymn about the soul which is in- serted in the Syriac text (p. 274 sq., Eng. tr., p. 238 sq.) is per- haps by Bardcsanes

himself (cf. Noldeke in Z D. M. G., 1871, p. 676). Itis one of the most remarkable pieces in Syriac literature.

CHRISTIANS OF Sr THOMAS is a name often applied to the members of the ancient Christian churches of southern India, which claim him as their first founder, and honour as their second founder a certain Thomas of Jerusalem, who is said to have led a Christian colony to Malabar in 345 a.p.! According to their tradition, St Thomas went from Malabar to Mylapur, now a suburb of Madras, where the shrine of his martyrdom, rebuilt by the Portuguese in 1547, still stands on Mount St Thomas, and where a miraculous cross is shown with a Pahlavi inscription which may be as old as the end of the 7th century. We know from Cosmas Indopleustes that there were Christian churches of Persian (East-Syrian) origin, and doubtless of Nestorian ereed, in Ceylon, in Malabar, and at Caliana (north of Bombay) before the middle of the 6th century, and even then St Thomas, the reputed apostle of Persia, may have been their special saint. The ancient churches of southern India never died out or wholly lost their sense of con-nexion with their mother church, for we find them sending deputies in 1490 to the Nestorian patriarch Simeon, who furnished them with bishops (Assemani, Bib. Or., iii. 1, 590 sg.). ard pressed by the Moslems, they welcomed the approach of the Portuguese, but proved by no means tractable to efforts to bring them within the Roman obedience. At length a formal union with Rome was carried through in the synod of Diamper (1599). Syriac was to remain the ecclesiastical language, but the service books wero corrected and purified from error. A century anda half of foreign Jesuit rule followed, but the love of independence was not lost. A great schism took place in 1658, and of 200,000 Christians of St Thomas only 400 remained loyal to Rome, though many of their churches were soon won back by the Carmelites. Those who remained independent fell under the influence of the Jacobite Mar Gregorius, styled patriarch of Jerusalem, who reached Malabar in 1665 as an emissary from Ignatius, patriarch of Antioch. From his time the independent Christians have been Jacobites, the counter-efforts of the Nestorians under Mar Gabriel, bishop of Adharbaijan, having apparently come to nothing after his death in 1730. Since the visit of Claudius Buchanan, whose Christian Re- scarches in Asia (1811) excited great interest, much has been done for the Christians of South India by English missionary effort, and Anglicans have cultivated friendly relations

with the clergy of the independent native church, while discouraging dependence on tho Jacobite patriarch of Antioch.

A valuable though tedious and ill-arranged history of the Christians of St Thomas has been written by W. Germann, Die Kirche der Thomaschristen, Giitersloh, 1877. See also La Croze, Histoire du Christianisme des Indes, The Hague, 1724; Alexius de Menezes, Historia Lcclesig Malabarice, Latin by F. Raulin, Rome, 1745 (especially for the synod of Diamper); Paulinus a S. Bar- tholomxo, /ndia Orientalis Christiana, 4to, Rome, 1794.

THOMAS, Sr, or Aquino. See AQuINas. |

THOMAS BECKET, or A Becket. See A Becker.

THOMAS or Crtano, the contemporary and supposed biographer of Francis of Assisi, was born probably towards the end of the 12th century, and died about 1255. He derives his surname from CrLANo (q.v.), in the Abruzzo Ulteriore. His name does not occur among those of the earliest disciples of Francis, but he is recorded by some historians of the order, though not by all, to have held the office of custos in various Franciscan houses (Cologne, Mainz, Worms, Spires) from 1221 onwards. An old biography of Francis, which is incorporated in the Acta Sanctorum, is attributed to Thomas with much probability, and nothing cogent has been urged against his authorship of the Dzes Irx (see Hymns, vol. xii. p. 583), although, so far as is at present known, his name is not associated with that re- markable poem by any writer earlier than 1385.

THOMAS or Ercenpouns, called also the Ruymer (c. 1225-c. 1300), occupies a prominent place as a poet and prophet in the mythical and legendary literature of Scot- land. The historical person of that name figures in two charters of the 13th century, and from these it appears that he owned lands in Erceldoune (now Karlston), in Berwickshire, which were made over by his son and heir to the cloister of the Holy Trinity at Soltra, or Soutra, on

1 See the sketch in Syriac of the history of the church of Malabar printed and translated by Land, Anced. Syr., i. 24 sq. It was sent to Schaaf at

Leyden in 1720 by Mar Gabriel, the last Nestorian bishop in Malabar (see Germann, p. 542),

the borders of the same county. He figures in the works of Barbour and Blind Harry as the sympathizing con- temporary of their heroes, and Wyntoun tells how he prophesied a battle. In the folk-lore of Scotland his name is associated with numerous fragments of rhymed or alli- terative verse of a more or less prophetic and oracular character ; but the chief extant work with which his name is associated is the poem of Sir T'ristrem, edited from the Auchinleck MS. by Sir Walter Scott in 1804, and again in 1886 for the Scottish Text Society by Mr G. P. M'Neill. In the latter edition the claim of Thomas to the authorship of this work (conceded by both editors) is fully discussed.

THOMAS A KEMPIS. See Kempis.

THOMASIUS, Curistian (1655-1728), German jurist and publicist, was born at Leipsic January 1, 1655, and educated by his father Jacob Thomasius, professor of philosophy and eloquence, a learned man, and friend of Spener. Through his father's lectures Christian came under the influence of the political philosophy of Grotius and Pufendorf, and continued the study of law under Stryck at Frankfurt on the Oder. In 168] he commenced the career of professor of law at Leipsic, and soon attracted attention by his abilities, but particularly by his daring attack upon all ancient prejudices. His views on matters of law were heretical; he made the daring innovation of lecturing in German instead of Latin; he published a monthly periodical in which he ridiculed with vast wit.and humour the pedantic weaknesses of the learned; he took valiantly the side of the Pietists in their controversy with the orthodox, and defended mixed marriages of Lutherans and Calvinists. In consequence of these and other sins, he was preached against from the pulpits, forbidden to lecture or to write (May 10, 1690), and his arrest was soon com- manded. He escaped the latter by flight to Berlin, and the elector Frederick ITI. offered him a refuge in Halle, with a salary of 500 thalers and the right to lecture there. He took part in founding the university of Halle (1694), where he became second and then first professor of law and director of the university. He was one of the most

esteemed university teachers and influential writers of his day. He died, after a singularly successful and honourable career, in his 74th year, September 23, 1728.

Though not a profound and systematic philosophical thinker, but rather a clever celectic of the common-sense school, Thomasius prepared the way for great reforms in philosophy, and, above all, in law, literature, social life, and theology. It was his mission to bring all the high matters of divine and human sciences into close and living contact with the everyday world. He made learning, law, philosophy, and theology look at everything from a rational common-sense point of view, and speak of everything in vigorous German. He thus created an cpoch in German hiterature, philo- sophy, and law, and Spittler opens with him the modern period of ecclesiastical history. Tholuck pronounces him ‘‘the personified spirit ofilluminism,” He made it one of the aims of his life to free politics and jurisprudence from the control of theology. He fought bravely and consistently for freedom of thought and speech on religious matters. He is often spoken of in German works as the author of the “‘ territorial system,” or Erastian theory of ecclesi- astical government. But he taught that the state may interfere with legal or public duties only, and not with moral or private ones. He introduced a new definition of heresy, and pronounced it a bug- bear of the theologians. He would not have even atheists punished, though they should be expelled the country. He came forward as an earncst opponent of the prosecution of witches and of the use of torture. In theology he was not a naturalist or a deist, but a believer in the necessity of revealcd religion for salvation. He felt strongly the influence of the Pietists at times, particularly of Spener, and there was a mystic vein in his thought ; but other elements of his nature were too powerful to allow hin to attach himsclf finally to that party.

Thomasius’s most popular and influential German publications were his periodical Monatsgesprdehe, vornehmlich tiber neue Bticher (1688); Kinleitung zur Vernunftlehre (1691, 5th ed. 1719); Verniinft- tge Gedanken tiber allerhand auserleserne, gemisehte, philosophisehe, und juristisehe Hiindel (1723-26); Gesehiehte der Weisheit und Thorheit (3 vols., 1698); Kurze Lehrsditze von dem Laster der

Zauberei mit dem Hexenprocess (1704); Weitere Erlduterungen der neweren Wissenschaft Anderer Gedanken kennen zu lernen (1711).

See Heinrich Luden's Christian Thomasius nach seinen Schicksalen und Schriften, 1805; Zeller's Geschichte der Philosophie in Deutschland, 2d ed., 1875, pp. 162-171; Gass, Geschichte der Protestantischen Dogmatik, ii. 484 sq.; the histories of German literature, especially Hettner's Geschichte der deutschen Lit. im 18ten Jahrh.; Tholuck's article in Herzog's Real-Encyklop.

THOMPSON, Sir Bengamin, Count Rumrorp (1753- 1814), an eminent man of science, enlightened philan- thropist, and sagacious public administrator, was born at Woburn, in Massachusetts, in 1753, and died at Auteuil, near Paris, in 1814. His family had been settled in New England since the middle of the century preceding his birth, and belonged to the class of moderately wealthy farmers. His father died while Thompson was very young, and his mother speedily married a second time. But he seems to have been well cared for, and his education was so far from neglected that, according to his own statement, he was at the age of fourteen sufficiently advanced "in algebra, geometry, astronomy, and even the higher mathe- matics," to calculate a solar eclipse within four seconds of accuracy. In 1766 he was apprenticed to a storekeeper at Salem, in New England, and while in that employment occupied himself in chemical and mechanical experiments, as well as in engraving, in which he attained to some pro- ficiency. The outbreak of the American war put a stop to the trade of his master, and he thereupon left Salem and went to Boston, where he engaged himself as assistant in another store. He afterwards applied himself to the study, with a view to the practice, of medicine, and then (although, as he affirms, for only six weeks and three days) he became a school teacher—it is believed at Bradford on the Merrimack. Thompson was at that period between eighteen and nineteen years old, and at nineteen, he says, ""T married, or rather I was married." His wife was the widow of a Colonel Rolfe, and the daughter of a Mr Walker, '"'a highly respectable minister, and one of the first settlers at Rumford," now called Concord, in New Hampshire. His wife was possessed of considerable pro- perty, and was his senior by fourteen years. This marriage was the foundation of Thompson's success. Within three years of it, however, he left his wife in America to

make his way to wealth and distinction in Europe, and, although his only child by her, a daughter, subsequently joined him, he never saw and, so far as anything appears to the contrary, never attempted or desired to see her again.

Soon after his marriage Thompson became acquainted with Governor Wentworth of New Hampshire, who, struck by his appearance and bearing, conferred on him the majority of a local regiment of militia. He speedily became the object of distrust among the friends of the American cause, and it was considered prudent that he should seek an early opportunity of leaving the country. On the evacuation of Boston by the royal troops, therefore, in 1776, he was selected by Governor Wentworth to carry despatches to England. On his arrival in London he almost immediately attracted the attention of Lord George Germaine, secretary of state, who appointed him to a clerkship in his office. Within a few months he was advanced to the post of secretary of the province of Georgia, and in about four years he was made under- secretary of state. His official duties, however, did not materially interfere with the prosecution of scientific pursuits, and in 1779 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. Among the subjects to which he especially directed his attention were the explosive force of gun- powder, the construction of firearms, and the system of signalling at sea. In connexion with the last, he made a cruise in the Channel fleet, on board the " Victory," as a volunteer under the command of Admiral Sir Charles Hardy. On the resignation of Lord North's administra- tion, of which Lord George Germaine was one of the least

lucky and most unpopular members, Thompson left the civil service, and was nominated to a cavalry command in the revolted provinces of America. But the War of Independence was practically at an end, and in 1783 he finally quitted active service, with the rank and half-pay of a lieutenant-colonel. He now formed the design of joining the Austrian army, for the purpose of campaigning against the Turks, and so crossed over from Dover to Calais with Gibbon, who, writing to his friend Lord Sheffield, calls his fellow-passenger "' Mr Secretary-Colonel- Admiral-Philosopher Thompson." At Strasburg he was introduced to Prince Maximilian,

afterwards elector of Bavaria, and was by him irvited to enter the civil and military service of that state. Having obtained the leave of the British Government to accept the prince's offer, he received the honour of knighthood from George III, and during eleven years he remained at Munich as minister of war, minister of police, and grand chamberlain to the elector. His political and courtly employments, however, did not absorb all his time, and he contributed during his stay in Bavaria a number of papers to the Philosophical Transactions. But that he was sufliciently alert as the principal adviser of the elector the results of his labours in that capacity amply prove. He reorganized the Bavarian army; he suppressed mendicity and found employment for the poor ; and he immensely improved the condition of the industrial classes throughout the country by providing them with work and instructing them in the practice of domestic economy. Of the prompt and the business- like manner in which he was wont to carry his plans into execution a single example may serve as an illustra- tion. The multitude of beggars in Bavaria had long been a public nuisance and danger. In one day Thompson caused no fewer than 2600 of these outcasts and depre- dators in Munich and its suburbs alone to be arrested by military patrols, and transferred by them to an indus- trial establishment which he had prepared for their recep- tion. In this institution they were both housed and fed, and they not only supported themselves by their labours but earned a surplus for the benefit of the electoral revenues. The principle on which their treatment pro- ceeded is stated by Thompson in the following memorable words :—" To make vicious and abandoned people happy," he says, "it has generally been supposed necessary first to make them virtuous. But why not reverse this order ? Why not make them first happy, and then virtuous?" In 1791 he was created a count of the Holy Roman Empire, and chose his title of Rumford from the name as it then was of the American township to which his wife's family belonged. In 1795 he visited England, one incident of his journey being the loss of all his private papers, includ- ing the materials for an autobiography, which were con- tained in a box stolen from off his postchaise in St Paul's Churchyard. During his residence in London he applied himself to the discovery of methods for curing smoky chimneys and the contrivance of improvements in the construction of fireplaces. But he was quickly recalled to Bavaria, Munich being threatened at once by an Austrian and a French army. The elector fied from his capital, and it was entirely owing to Rumford's energy and tact that a hostile

occupation of the city was prevented. It was now proposed that he should be accredited ag Bavarian am- bassador in London; but the circumstance that he was a British subject presented an insurmountable obstacle. He, however, again came to England, and remained there in a private station for several years. In 1799 he, in con- Junction with Sir Joseph Banks, projected the establishment of the Royal Institution, which received its charter of incorporation from George III. in 1800. Rumford him- self selected Sir Humphry Davy as the first scientific

lecturer there. Until 1804, when he definitively settled in France, Rumford lived at the Royal Institution in Albemarle Street, or at a house which he rented at Bromp- ton, where he passed his time in the steady pursuit of those researches relating to heat and light and the economy of fuel on which his scientific fame is principally based. He then established himself in Paris, and married (his first wife having been dead for many years) as his second wife the wealthy widow of Lavoisier, the celebrated chemist. With this lady he led an extremely uncomfortable life, till at last they agreed to separate. Rumford took up his residence at Auteuil, where he died suddenly in 1814, in the sixty-second year of his age.

He was the founder and the first recipient of the Rumford medal of the London Royal Society. He was also the founder of the Rumford medal of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and of the Rumford professorship in Harvard university. His complete works were published by the American Academy of Arts and Sciences at Boston in 1872 ; and a full and extremely interest- ing memoir of the author which was issued with them was repub- lished in London by Messrs Macmillan in 1876. (F. DR.)

THOMPSON, THomas Peronnet (1783-1869), mathe- matician and political writer, was born at Hull in 1783. He was educated at the Hull grammar school, and in October 1798 entered Queens’ College, Cambridge. He entered the navy as midshipman in the “Isis” in 1803, but in 1806 exchanged to the army. Through his ac- quaintance with Wilberforce, he was appointed governor of Sierra Leone in 1808, but was recalled on account of his hostility to the slave trade. In 1812 he returned to his military duties, and, after serving in the south of France, was in 1815 attached as

Arabic interpreter to an expedition against the Wahhabees of the Persian Gulf, with whom he negotiated a treaty (dated January 1820) in which the slave trade was for the first time declared piracy. He was promoted major in 1825, lieutenant- colonel in 1829, and major-general in 1854. He entered parliament as member for Hull in 1835, and afterwards sat for Bradford. He took a prominent part in the corn- law agitation, his Catechism of the Corn Laws (1827) being by far the most effective pamphlet published on the subject. He was joint-editor of the Westminster Review, to which he contributed a large number of articles, repub- lished in 1824 in six volumes, under the title Avxercises, Political and Others. His mathematical publications were of a somewhat eccentric kind. He published a Theory of Parallels (1844), and was also the author of Geometry without Axioms, in which he endeavoured to “get rid” of axioms and postulates. His new Z’heory of Just Intona- tion (1850) is, however, a contribution of great value to the science of musical acoustics, and has gone through many editions. It may be said to form the. basis of the tonic sol-fa system of music. He died 6th October 1869.

THOMSON, Sim Caries WYVILLE (1830-1882), was born at Bonsyde, Linlithgowshire, became professor of natural history in Aberdeen, Cork, Belfast, and finally Edinburgh, and will be specially remembered as a student of the biological conditions of the depths of the sea. Being interested in crinoids, and stimulated by the results of the dredgings of Sars in the deep sea off the Norwegian coasts, which had conclusively disposed of the error of Edward Forbes, that animal life ceased at a depth of a few hundred fathoms, he succeeded, along with Dr W. B. Carpenter, in obtaining the loan of H.M.S. “ Lightning ” and “ Porcupine,” for successive deep-sea dredging expedi- tions in the summers of 1868 and 1869. It was thus shown that animal life existed in abundance down to depths of 650 fathoms, that all invertebrate groups were represented (largely by Tertiary forms hitherto believed to be extinct), and, moreover, that deep-sea temperatures are by no means so constant as was supposed, but vary

OMS ON

considerably, and indicate an oceanic circulation. Further dredging expeditions at greater and greater depths fol- lowed. The remarkable results

gained for hydrography as well as zoology, in association with the practical needs of ocean telegraphy, soon led to the granting of H.M.S. “Challenger” for a circumnavigating expedition, and Thomson sailed at the end of 1872 as director of the scientific staff, the cruise lasting three years and a half. On his return he received many academic honours, and was knighted. In 1877 he published two volumes of a preliminary account of the results of the voyage, mean- while carrying on his administrative labours in connexion with the disposition of the special collections and publi- cation of the monographs of these. His health, never robust, was meanwhile giving way; from 1879 he ceased to perform the duties of his chair, and he died in 1882.

See obituary notice in Proc. Roy. Soc. Hdin., 1883, also Thom- son’s Voyage of H.M.S. Challenger, London, 1877, and Thom- son and Murray, Reports of the Voyage of H.M.S. Challenger, Edin- burgh, 1885.

THOMSON, James (1700-1748), author of The Seasons, was a native of the Scottish Border country, his father being successively minister of the parishes of Ednam and Southdean, in Roxburghshire. He was born at Ednam on September 11, 1700, and was reared at a dis- tance from the social influences and literary fashions that helped to form and fix the manner of the “classical” school, the monotony of which he was the first to break. Amidst the bare breezy hills and glens of a Border parish, his youth was safe against the ascendency of the taste established in the metropolis. Jedburgh school and Edinburgh university gave him his book learning of the ordinary type; and he was fortunate enough to have neighbours of extraordinary accomplishment, who opened his eyes to the poetic side of nature, and encouraged him in verse-making. The teacher from whom he learnt most was a Mr Riccalton, or Riccaulton, a graduate of Edin- burgh, who had taken to farming, but was afterwards persuaded to enter the church, and made some contribu- tions to theological literature. This scholarly enthusiast taught Latin to the boys of Jedburgh in an aisle of the church, and encouraged Thomson in his poetical turn by example as well as precept. We have the poet’s own acknowledgment that the first hint of the Seasons came from a striking dramatic poem by Riccaulton entitled A Winter’s Day. As a schoolboy Thomson wrote verses, and at the university he continued the practice, but his early efforts were not particularly promising. He was intended for the ministry, and was for five years a

student of divinity ; but in 1725 he determined to follow his friend and classfellow David Mallet to London, and seek his fortune there. Through the influence of Lady Grizel Baillie, herself a song-writer, he obtained a tutorship in the family of Lord Binning; but the plain-looking and plain-mannered poet had not the adroitness of his friend Mallet, and he gave up the post after a few months. It was while he lingered in the neighbourhood of Barnet, without employment, without money, with few friends, saddened by the loss of his mother (his father had died when he was eighteen), that Thomson conceived the idea of the first of his poems on the Seasons, Winter. The lines—

Welcome, kindred glooms, Congenial horrors, hail!

came from the heart; they expressed his own forlorn mood on the approach of the winter of 1725. Winter appeared in the spring of 1726. A publisher, Millan,—not Millar, who afterwards published for him,—gave him three guineas for the poem. ‘The tradition is that it attracted no notice for a month, but that, at the end of that time, a

SI]

houses to proclaim the discovery of a new poet. The town received the discovery with acclamation ; in another month a second edition was called for. No time could have been better suited for the appreciation of Thomson’s striking qualities; they were so entirely unlike what the public had for many years been accustomed to. The fresh treatment of a simple theme, the warm poetical colouring of commonplace incidents, the freedom and irregularity of the plan, the boldness of the descriptions, the manly and sincere sentiment, the rough vigour of the verse, took by surprise a generation accustomed to witty satire and burlesque, refined diction, translations from the classics, themes valued in proportion to their remoteness from vulgar life. Thomson at once became famous, and, his naturally easy temper roused to full exertion, vigorously followed up his success with Swmmer and an Ode to the Memory of Sir Isaac Newton. Spring was completed and published in 1728. A longer interval elapsed before the appearance of Autumn; it was published in 1730, and followed presently by a handsome edition of the whole four Seasons. Meantime, drawn into the ardent political strife of the time, he had produced, in 1729,

his Britannia, and early in 1730 had made his first attempt as a dramatist with Sophonisba. From this time there was a manifest slackening either in his will or in his power to produce. He was appointed travelling tutor to the son of Sir Charles Talbot, travelled with his pupil on the Continent, and in 1733 obtained a small sinecure in the Court of Chancery. It may have been this removal of the spur of necessity that made him take longer over his poems. But it isa fair theory that the rigid taste of the time for finish, which he had unconsciously defied with triumphant results, began to make good an ascendency over him, and that he wrote less because he was cramped by fear of the critics. None of the other Seasons have the same large and careless freedom as Winter ; Autumn especially, the last of them, is much more laboured, and his revisions and enlargements in successive editions show an anxious ambition after the finish of the classical school. How- ever this may be, he hesitated long over his next poem, Liberty ; the first part was published in 1734 and the conclusion in 1736. He intended it to be his masterpiece, but with all his care and pains it has fallen into deserved oblivion. In 1737 he lost his sinecure by the death of his patron, but was recompensed by a pension from the prince. Poverty, rather than natural fitness or inclination, drove him again to dramatic composition. Agamemnon was produced in 17388, with indifferent success. Next year a play, written in the interest of the prince and the oppo- sition, was interdicted by the lord chamberlain. The masque of Alfred, written by Thomson in conjunction with Mallet, and containing the song Rule Britannia, was produced in 1740, Tancred and Sigismunda in 1745. A year before this last event the “poetical posture” of the poet’s income was improved by his appointment to the sinecure office of surveyor-general of the Leeward Islands. The Castle of Indolence was his last work. It was not published till the year of his death (1748), but he had been long engaged upon it. The poem is full of character and humour, with here and there passages of elaborately rich description ; it is fuller than any other of the person- ality of the poet, of the good-nature, generosity, and solid wisdom which gained him the affection of so many friends ; but still it is in the Seasons, and especially in the first of them, that Thomson is seen at his best and strongest.

Till the advent of Scott and Byron, Thomson was the most widely popular poet in our language; and as late as the middle of this century a sumptuous

edition, illustrated by the Etching Club, was printed three times within ten years (1842-52). The

literary clergyman, Whatley, chanced to take it up from a | popular verdict on Thomson has been unanimously justified by

bookseller’s counter, and at once rushed off to the coffee-

critics. (W. M.)

312

THOMSON, Jamus (1834-1882), author of Zhe City of Dreadful Night, was born at Port Glasgow, in Renfrew- shire, on November 23, 1834, the eldest child of a mate in the merchant shipping service. His mother was a deeply religious woman of the Irvingite sect, and it is not improbable that it was from her the son inherited his sombre and imaginative temperament. On her death, James, then in his seventh year, was procured admission into the Caledonian Orphan Asylum, from which he went out into the world as an assistant army schoolmaster. At the garrison at Ballincollig, near Cork, he encountered the one brief happiness of his life: he fell passionately in love with, and was in turn as ardently loved by, the daughter of the armourer-sergeant of a regiment in the garrison, a girl of very exceptional beauty and cultivated mind. Two years later, when Thomson was at the training college at Chelsea, he suddenly received news of her fatal illness and death. The blow prostrated him in mind and body; and the former endured a hurt from which it never really recovered. Henceforth his life was one of gloom, disappointment, misery, and poverty, rarely alleviated by episodes of somewhat brighter fortune. While in Ireland he had made the acquaintance of Mr Charles Bradlaugh, then a soldier stationed at Ballincollig, and it was under his auspices (as editor of the London Investi- gator) that Thomson first appealed to the public as an author, though actually his earliest publication was in Tat’s Edinburgh Magazne for July 1858, under the signa- ture “Crepusculus.” In 1860 was established the paper with which Mr Bradlaugh has been so long identified, The National Reformer, and it was here, among other productions by James Thomson, that appeared (1863) the powerful and sonorous verses “To our Ladies of Death,” and (1874) his chief work, the sombre and imaginative City of

Dreadful Night. In October 1862 Thomson left the army, and through Mr Bradlaugh (with whom for some subsequent years he lived) gained employment as a solicitor's clerk. In 1869 he enjoyed what has been described as his "only reputable appearance in respect- able literary society," in the acceptance of his long poem, "Sunday up the River," for Fraser's Magazine, on the advice, it is said, of Charles Kingsley. In 1872 Thomson went to the Western States of America, as the agent of the shareholders in what he ascertained to be a fraudulent silver mine; and the following year he received a com- mission from The New York World to go to Spain as its special correspondent with the Carlists. During the two months of his stay in that distracted country he saw little real fighting, and was himself prostrated by a sunstroke, On his return to England he continued to write in The Secularist and The National Reformer, under the at last well-known initials "B.V."! In 1875 he severed his con- nexion with Zhe National Reformer, owing to a disagree- ment with its editor ; henceforth his chief source of income (1875-1881) was from the monthly periodical known as Cope's Tobacco Plant. Chiefly through the exertions of his friend and admirer, Mr Bertram Dobell, Thomson's best known book, The City of Dreadful Night, and other Poems, was published in April 1880, and at once attracted wide attention ; it was succeeded in the autumn by Vane's Story, and other Poems, and in the following year by Essays and Phantasies. All his best work was produced between 1855 and 1875 ("The Doom of a City," 1857 ; "Our Ladies of Death," 1861; Weddah and Om-el. Bonain : "The Naked Goddess," 1866-7 ; Phe Cig of Dreadful Night, 1870-7 4). In his latter years Thomson too often sought refuge from his misery of mind and body

1 Bysshe Vanolis : '* Bysshe," as the commonly used Christian name

of Shelley, Thomson's favourite writer ; and " Vanolis," an anagram of Novalis, the pseudonym of F. von HARDENBERG (q.v.).

in the Lethe of opium and alcohol. His mortal illness came upon him in the house of a poet friend ; and he was conveyed to University College hospital, in Gower Street, where shortly after he died (June 3, 1882). He

was buried at Highgate cemetery, in the same grave, in uncon- secrated ground, as his friend Austin Holyoake.

To the productions of James Thomson already mentioned may be added the posthumous volume entitled 4 Voice from the Nile, and other Poems (1884), which has the advantage of Mr Bertram Dobell's valuable prefatory memoir and an etched portrait of the poet. This volume contains niuch that is interesting, but uothing to iucrease Thomson's reputation. If an attempt be made to point to the most apparent literary relationship of the author of The City of Dreadful Night, one might venture the suggestion that James Thomson was a younger brother of De Quincey. If he has distinct affinity to any writer it is to the author of Suspiria de Profundis ; if we look further afield, we might perhaps disccrn shadowy prototypes in Leopardi, Heine, and Baudelaire. But, after all, Thomson holds so unique a place as a poet that the effort at classification may well be dispensed with. If he maintains his own lonely little height, it will be as a distinct individuality. His, it is absolutely certain, was no literary pessimism, no assumed gloom, The poem ''Insomnia" is a distinct chapter of bio- graphy ; and in "Mater Tenebrarum" and elsewhere among his writings self-revelative passages are frequent. The merits of Thomson's poetry are its imaginative power, its sombre intensity, its sonorous music ; to these characteristics may be added, in his lighter pieces, a Heine-like admixture of strange gaiety, pathos, and caustic irony. Much the same may be said of his best prose. His faults ave a monotony of epithet, the not infrequent use of mere rhetoric and verbiage, and perhaps a prevailing lack of the sense of form ; to these may be added an occasional vulgar recklessness of expression, as in parts of Vane's Story and in some of his prose writings. Time will reduce his noteworthy work within a harrow compass, but within that limit it will be found as remark- able as it is unique.

THOMSON, Joun (1778-1840), amateur landscape painter—Thomson of Duddingston, as he is commonly styled,—was born on September 1, 1778, at Dailly, Ayr- shire. His father, grandfather, and, as we are informed, great-grandfather also, were clergymen of the Church of Scotland. The father determined that his son should follow the ancestral profession, and, greatly against his natural bent,—for all his thoughts turned instinctively towards art,—he acceded to the parental wish. He studied in the university of

Edinburgh; and, residing with his elder brother, Thomas Thomson, afterwards celebrated as an antiquarian and feudal lawyer, he made the acquaint- ance of Francis Jeffrey and other young members of the Scottish bar afterwards notable. The pursuit of art, how- ever, was not abandoned ; during the recess he sketched in the country, and, while attending his final college session, he studied for a month under Alexander Nasmyth. After his father's death he became, in 1800, his successor as minister of Dailly; and in 1805 he was translated to the parish of Duddingston, close to Edinburgh. The practice of art was now actively resumed, and it came to be continued throughout life—apparently without any very great detriment to pastoral duties. 'Thomson's popu- larity as a painter increased with his increasing artistic skill; and, having mastered his initial scruples against receiving artistic fees, on being offered £15 for a land- scape—reassured by '' Grecian " Williams's stout assertion that the work was "worth thrice the amount "—the minister of Duddingston began to dispose of the produc- tions of his brush in the usual manner. Jn 1830 he was made an honorary member of the Royal Scottish Academy. Besides that of art, Thomson had other singularly varied tastes and aptitudes. He was an accomplished performer on violin and flute, an exact and well-read student of physical science, and one of the writers on optics in the early numbers of the Edinburgh Review. His life passed peacefully away in the kindly and charitable discharge of his clerical duties, varied by the enthusiastic pursuit of his art, and the enjoyment of intercourse with a singularly

~

T HO—

wide and eminent circle of friends, which, among artists, included Turner and Wilkie, and among men of letters Wilson and Scott,—the latter of whom desired that Thomson, instead of Turner, should have illustrated the collected edition of his works. He died at Duddingston on the 27th of October 1840 (not the 20th, as stated by some authorities). Thomson was twice married, and his second wife, the widow of Mr Dalrymple of Cleland, was herself also a skilful amateur artist.

Thomson holds an honourable position as the first powerful landscapist that Scotland produced, and he is still among her greatest. His styled was

founded, in the first instance, upon the practice of the Dutch masters ; but ultimately he submitted to the influence of the Poussins and the Italians, rightly believ- ing that their method—in the richer solemnity of its colour and the deeper gravity of its chiaroscuro—was more truly fitted for the portrayal of the scenery of Scotland, more in harmony with the gloom and the glory of its mountains and its glens and the passion of its wave-vexed cliffs. But to the study of the art of the past he joined a close and constant reference to nature which kept his own work fresh and original, though, of course, he never even approached such scientific accuracy in the rendering of natural form and effect as is expected from even the tyro in our recent schools of landscape. His art is clearly distinguished by ‘‘style” ; at their best, his works show skilful selection in the leading lines of their composition and admirable qualities of abstract colour and tone. Thomson is fairly represented in the Scottish National Gallery ; and the Aberlady Bay of that collection, with the soft infinity of its clouded grey sky, and its sea which leaps and falls again In waves of sparkling and of shadowed silver, is fit to rank among the triumphs of Scottish art.

THOR. See Alster, vol. i. p. 210, and MyrHo.oey, vol. xvii. p. 156.

THOREAU, Henry Davin (1817-1862), one of the most strongly-marked individualities of modern times, spent the greater part of his life in the neighbourhood of the place where he was born—Concord, a village town of Massachusetts, pleasantly situated some twenty miles north- west of Boston, amidst a pastoral country of placid beauty. To Thoreau this Concord country contained all of beauty and even grandeur that was necessary to the worshipper of nature: he once journeyed to Canada; he went west on one occasion ; he sailed and explored a few rivers ; for the rest, he haunted Concord and its neighbourhood as faith- fully as the stork does its ancestral nest. John Thoreau, his father, who married the daughter of a New England clergy- man, was the son of a John Thoreau of the isle of Jersey, who, in Boston, married a Scottish lady of the name of Burns. This last-named John was the son of Philippe Thoreau and his wife Marie le Gallais, persons of pure French blood, settled at St Helier, in Jersey. From his New England Puritan mother, from his Scottish grandmother, from his Jersey-American grandfather, and from his remoter French ancestry Thoreau inherited distinctive traits: the Saxon element perhaps

predominated, but the “hauntings of Celtism ” were prevalent and potent. The stock of the Thoreaus was a robust one; and in Concord the family, though never wealthy nor officially influential, was ever held in peculiar respect. As a boy, Henry drove his mother’s cow to the pastures, and thus early became enamoured of certain aspects of nature and of certain delights of solitude. At school and at Harvard university he in nowise distinguished himself, though he was an intelligently receptive student ; he became, however, pro- ficient enough in Greek, Latin, and the more general acquirements to enable him to act for a time as a master. But long before this he had become apprenticed to the learning of nature in preference to that of man: when only twelve years of age he had made collections for Agassiz, who had then just arrived in America, and already the meadows and the hedges and the stream-sides had become cabinets of rare knowledge to him. On the desertion of schoolmastering as a profession Thoreau became a lecturer and author, though it was the labour of his hands

which mainly supported him through many years of his life : professionally he was a surveyor. In the effort to reduce the practice of economy to a fine art he arrived at the conviction that the less labour a man did, over and above the positive demands of necessity, the better for him and for the community at large ; he would have had the order of the week reversed,—six days of rest for one of labour. It was in 1845 he made the now famous experi- ment of Walden. Desirous of proving to himself and others that man could be as independent of his kind as the nest-building bird, Thoreau retired to a hut of his own construction on the pine-slope over against the shores of Walden Pond,—a hut which he built, furnished, and kept in order entirely by the labour of his own hands. During the two years of his residence in Walden woods he lived by the exercise of a little surveying, a little job-work, and the tillage of a few acres of ground which produced him his beans and potatoes. His absolute independency was as little gained as if he had camped out in Hyde Park; relatively he lived the life of a recluse. He read consider- ably, wrote abundantly, thought actively if not widely, and came to know beasts, birds, and fishes with an intimacy more extraordinary than was the case with St Francis of Assisi. Birds came at his call, and forgot their hereditary fear of man; beasts lipped and caressed him ; the

very fish in lake and stream would glide, unfearful, between his hands. This exquisite familiarity with bird and beast would make us love the memory of Thoreau, if his egotism were triply as arrogant, if his often meaningless paradoxes were even more absurd, if his sympathies were even less humanitarian than we know them to have been. His Walden, the record of this fascinating two years' experi- ence, must always remain a production of great interest and considerable psychological value. Some years before Thoreau took to Walden woods he made the chief friend- ship of his life, that with Emerson. He became one of the famous circle of the transcendentalists, always keenly preserving his own individuality amongst such more or less potent natures as Emerson, Hawthorne, and Margaret Fuller. From Emerson he gained more than from any man, alive or dead; and, though the older philosopher both enjoyed and learned from the association with the younger, it cannot be said that the gain wasequal. There was nothing electrical in Thoreau's intercourse with his fellow-men ; he gave off no spiritual sparks. He absorbed intensely, but when called upon to illuminate in turn was found wanting. It is with a sense of relief that we read of his having really been stirred into active enthusiasm anent the wrongs done the ill-fated John Brown. With children he was affectionate and gentle, with old people and strangers considerate. In a word, he loved his kind as animals, but did not seem to find them as interesting as those furred and feathered. In 1847 Thoreau left Walden Lake abruptly, and for a time occupied himself with lead- pencil making, the parental trade. He never married, thus further fulfilling his policy of what one of his essayist-biographers has termed "indulgence in fine renounce- ments." At the comparatively early age of forty-five he died, on 6th May 1862. His grave is in the beautiful cemetery of Sleepy Hollow, beside those of Hawthorne and Emerson.

Thoreau's fame will rest on Walden, the Excursions, and his Letters, though he wrote nothing which is not deserving of notice. Up till his thirtieth year he dabbled in verse, but he had little ear for metrical music, and he lacked the spiritual impulsiveness of the true poet. He had occasional flashes of insight and could record beautifully, notwithstanding : his little poem '' Haze" is surcharged with concentrated loveliness. His weakness as a philosopher is his tendency to base the laws of the universe on the experience-born, thought-produced convictions of one man—himself. His

weakness as a writer is the too frequent striving after antithesis and paradox. If he had had all his own originality without the itch of appearing

original, he would have made his fascination irresistible. As it is, Thoreau holds a unique place. He was a naturalist, but absolutely devoid of the pedantry of science ; a keen observer, but no rctailer of disjointed facts. He thus holds sway over two domains: he has the adherence of the lovers of fact and of the children of fancy. He must always be read, whether lovingly or interestedly, for he has all the variable charm, the strange saturninity, the contradic- tions, austerities, and delightful surprises, of Nature herself.

See W. E, Channing, Thoreau the Poet Naturalist, Boston, 1873; F. B. San- born, Biography of Thoreau (American Men of Letters Series) ; H. A. Page, Bio- graphy of Thoreau; Emerson, Introduetion to Zxcursions ; J. Russell Lowell, My Study Windows; Will. H. Dircks, Introduction to Walden; Professor Nichol, American Literature, pp. 812 sg.; Mr Burroughs; Mr Henry James, &e. After Thoreau’’s death were published (besides the Excursions, 1863) The Maine Woods (1864); Cape Cod (1865); Letters and Poems (1865); A Yankee tn Canada (1866). In the Atlantic Monthly, in 1862, appeared ‘‘ Walking,” ‘‘ Autumn Tints, and ‘ Wild Apples”; in 1863 “‘ Night and Moonlight.” His best known work, Walden, eonstitutes the second volume of the series called The Camelot Classics ; otherwise Thoreau’s productions are not widely known in Britain.

THORIUM, in chemistry, is the name of the as yet unisolated radical of thoria, one of the now numerous “rare earths.” Thoria was discovered by Berzelius in 1828 in the mineral now called thorite. It is present also in pyrochlor, monazite, orangite, and euxenite. Being similar to the oxides TiO, and ZrO, of titanium and zirconium, thoria is assumed to be a binoxide ThO,. The atomic weight, according to Cleve, is Th= 233, O being 16.

THORN (Polish Zoran), an interesting old town in the province of West Prussia, is situated on the right bank of the Vistula, near the point where the river enters Prussian territory, 26 miles south-east of Bromberg and 92

miles south of Dantzic. Its position near the frontier of Russian Poland makes it a strategic point of importance ; and, strongly fortified since 1818, in 1878 it was converted into a fortress of the first class. The “ old town,” founded in 1231, and the “new town,” founded thirty-three years later, were united in 1454, and both retain a number of quaint buildings dating from the 15th and 16th centuries, when Thorn was a flourishing member of the Hanseatic League. The town-house, of the 14th and 16th centuries, the churches of St John and the Virgin, with aisles as lofty as the nave, the ruined castle of the Teutonic order, and the gates, leaning tower, and fragments of the walls, all of the 13th century, are among the most interesting edifices. The ancient wooden bridge, now burned down, at one time the only permanent bridge across the lower Vistula, has been succeeded by a massive iron railway viaduct, half a mile long. Thorn carries on an active trade in grain, timber, wine, colonial wares, and iron, and has manufactures of leather, hats, starch, candles, and numerous other articles. It is famous for its “ Pfeffer- kuchen,” a kind of gingerbread. Part of the trade is carried on by vessels on the Vistula. In 1885 the popu- lation was 23,914 (in 1816 7909), about three-fifths being Protestants and two-fifths (chiefly Poles) Roman Catholics.

Thorn, founded in 1231 by the Teutonic order as an outpost against the Poles, was colonized mainly from Westphalia. The first peace of Thorn, between the order and the Poles, was con- cluded in 1411, In 1454 the townspeople revolted from the knights of the order, destroyed their castle, and attached them- selves to the king of Poland. This resulted in a war, which was terminated in 1466 by the second peace of Thorn. In the 15th and 16th centuries Thorn was a Hanse town of importance, and received the titles of “queen of the Vistula” and “the beautiful.” It embraced the Reformation in 1557, and in 1645 it was the scene of a “colloquium charitativum,” or discussion betwixt the doctors of the rival creeds, which, however, resulted in no agreement. In 1724 a riot between the Protestant and Roman Catholic inhabitants was seized upon by the Polish king as a pretext for beheading the burgomaster and nine other leading Protestant citizens, an act of oppression which is known as the “bloodbath of Thorn.” The second partition of Poland conferred Thorn upon Prussia; by the treaty of Tilsit it was assigned to the duchy of Warsaw; but since the congress of Vienna it has again been Prussian. was born at Thorn in 1478.

THORNBACK is the name given toa species of ray (Ztaja clavata) which is found all round the coasts of Europe, and locally abundant; it derives its naine from

the peculiar armature of the skin of its body, the upper and lower surfaces of the body of the female being armed with scattered, more or less numerous, large round osseous bucklers, each with a spine in the centre; the tail also is armed with rows of similar bucklers. In the male fish these bucklers are absent, or nearly so. The thornback does not grow to the same large size as the skates, a specimen three feet across being considered large. It is more valued as food than the other rays, and consumed in large quantities, fresh as well as salted.

THORNHILL, Sir James (1676-1734), historical painter, was born at Melcombe Regis, Dorset, in 1676, coming of an ancient but impoverished county family. His father died while he was young, but he was befriended by his maternal uncle, the celebrated Dr Sydenham, and apprenticed to Thomas Highmore, sergeant-painter to King William III., a connexion of the Thornhill family. Little is known regarding his early career. About 1715 he visited Holland, Flanders, and France; and, having obtained the patronage of Queen Anne, he was in 1719-20 appointed her serjeant-painter in succession to Highmore, and was ordered to decorate the interior of the dome of St Paul’s with a series of eight designs, in chiaroscuro heightened with gold, illustrative of the life of that apostle,—a commission for which Louis Laguerre had previously been selected by the commissioners for the repair of the cathedral. He also designed and decorated the saloon and hall of Moor Park, Herts, and painted the great hall at Blenheim, the princesses’ apartments at Hampton Court, the hall and staircase of the Southsea Company, the chapel at Wimpole, the staircase at Easton-Neston, Northamptonshire, and the hall at Green- wich Hospital, usually considered his most important and successful work, upon which he was engaged from 1708 to 1727. Among his easel pictures are the altar-pieces of All Souls and Queen’s College chapels, Oxford, and that in Melcombe Regis church ; and he executed such portrait subjects as that of Sir Isaac Newton, in Trinity

College, Cambridge, and the picture of the House of Commons in 1730, now in the possession of the earl of Hardwicke, in which he was assisted by Hogarth, who married Jane, his only daughter. He also produced a few etchings in a slight and sketchy but effective manner, and executed careful full-size copies of Raphael's cartoons, which now belong to the Royal Academy. About 1724 he drew up a proposal for the establishment of a royal academy of the arts, and his scheme had the support of the lord treasurer Halifax, but Government declined to furnish the needful funds. Thornhill then opened a drawing- school in his own house in James Street, Covent Garden, where instruction continued to be given till the time of his death. He acquired a considerable fortune by his art, and was enabled to repurchase his family estate of Thorn- hill, Dorsetshire. In 1715 he was knighted by George L., and in 1719 he represented Melcombe Regis in parlia- ment, a borough for which Sir Christopher Wren had previously been member. Having been removed from his office by some court intrigue, and suffering from broken health and repeated attacks of gout, he retired to his country seat, where he died on the 4th of May 1734. His son James was also an artist. He succeeded his father as serjeant-painter to George IT., and was appointed "painter to the navy."

The high contemporary estimate of Sir James Thornhill's works a ae since been confirmed; in spite of Dr Young, ''late times "

O 70

"Understand How Raphael's pencil lives in Thornhill's hands."

He is weak in drawing,—indeed, when dealing with complicated figures he was assisted by Thomas Gibson; and, ignorant of the great monumental art of Italy, he formed himself upon the lower

THO—THO

model of Le Brun. It must, however, be admitted that, in the departments of art which he chose for his own, he was the best native painter of his time.

THORWALDSEN, Bertet (1770-1844), a very able Danish sculptor, was the son of an Icelander who had settled in Copenhagen, and there carried on

the trade of a wood-carver. While very young, Bertel Thorwaldsen learnt to assist his father ; at the age of eleven he entered the Copenhagen school of art, and soon began to show his exceptional talents. In 1792 he won the highest prize, the travelling studentship, and in 1796 he started for Italy ina Danish man-of-war. On the 8th of March 1797 he arrived in Rome, where Canova was at the height of his popularity. Thorwaldsen's first success was the model for a statue of Jason, which was highly praised by Canova, and he received the commission to execute it in marble from Thomas Hope, a wealthy English art-patron. From

that time Thorwaldsen's success was assured, and he did»

not leave Italy for twenty-three years. In 1819 he returned to Denmark, where he was received with the greatest enthusiasm. He was there commissioned to make the colossal series of statues of Christ and the twelve apostles which are now in the Fruenkirche in Copenhagen. These were executed after his return to Rome, and were not completed till 1838, when Thorwaldsen again returned to Denmark. He died suddenly in the Copenhagen theatre in 1844, and bequeathed a great part of his fortune for the building and endowment of a museuni in Copenhagen, and also left to fill it all his collection of works of art, and the models for all his sculpture, —a very large collection, exhibited to the greatest possible advantage. Thor- waldsen is buried in the courtyard of this museum, under a bed of roses, by his own special wish.

On the whole Thorwaldsen was the most successful of all the imitators of classical sculpture, and many of his statues of pagan deities are modelled with much of the antique feeling for breadth and purity of design. His attempts at Christian sculpture, such as the tomb of Pius VII. in St Peter's and the Christ and Apostles at Copenhagen, are less successful, and were not in accordance with the sculptor's real sympathies, which were purely classic. Thorwaldsen's private life was not admirable: he worked some-times with feverish eagerness; at other times he was idle for many months together. A great number of his best works exist in private collections in England. His not very successful statue of Lord Byron, after being refused a place in Westminster Abbey, was finally deposited in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge. The most widely popular among Thorwaldscn's works

have been some of his bas-reliefs, such as the Night and the Morning, which he is said to have modelled in one day. In the main his popularity is now a thing of the past, owing chiefly to the reac- tion against the pseudo-classic style of sculpture.

A well-illustrated account of Thorwaldsen and his works is given by Eugene Plon, Thorwaldsen, sa Vie, &c., Paris, 1880; see also Andersen, B. Thorwaldsen, Berlin, 1845; Killerup, Thorwaldsen's Arbeiten, &c., Copenhagen, 1852; and Thiele, Thorwaldsen's Leben, Leipsic, 1852-56.

THOU, Jacques AuGusTE DE (1553-1617), sometimes known by the Latinized form Tuuanus, as his great history is by the name Zhuana, was born at Paris on October 8, 1553. He belonged to a family of distinction in the Orléanais, of which the elder branch had, he tells us, been noblesse d'épée, though he gives no particulars except of those who had for some generations been noblesse de robe. He and his were closely connected by birth, marriage, and friendship with several of those great legal families—the Harlays, the Huraults, the Brularts, the Lamoignons, and others—which for many generations furnished France with by far her most valuable class of public men. The historian's father was Christophe de Thou, first president of the parlement of Paris, a man whose strong legal and religious prejudices against the Huguenots have rather obscured, in the eyes of historians, his undoubted ability and probity. Christophe's brothers, Adrien and Nicolas, were both men of mark, the former being also a lawyer, and the latter ultimately becoming bishop of Chartres, in which capacity he " instructed"

d15

Henry IV. at his conversion. De Thou's mother was Jacqueline Tuleu, dame de Céli. He was a delicate child, and seems by his own account to have been rather neglected by his parents ; perhaps it was for this reason that, though he grew stronger with age, he was destined for the church. He took minor orders, and obtained some benefices. It was, however, to the legal side of the ecclesiastical profession that he was devoted, and, after being at school at the Collége de Bourgogne, he studied law at Orleans, Bourges, and Valence, being at the last two places under the tuition of jurists no less celebrated than Hotman and Cujas. It was not, however, till he approached

middle life that he definitely renounced the clerical profession, married, and accepted lay offices. Mean- while he had travelled much and discharged important duties. In 1573, that he might profit by seeing foreign parts, he was attached to the suite of Paul de Foix, who was sent on a circular mission of compliment to the Italian princes, and with him De Thou visited Turin, Milan, Mantua, Venice, Rome, Florence, and many minor places. On his return he studied for four years, tra- velling to the Netherlands in the interval, and in 1579 to Germany. Two years later he was appointed to a royal commission in Guienne, and made the acquaintance of Henry of Navarre and of Montaigne. He had already become the friend of most of the eminent men of letters of the time, from Ronsard downwards, and was particularly intimate with Pierre Pithou, the soul of the future Satire Menippée. De Thou, by all his sympathies, belonged to that later and better phase of the politique party which devoted itself to the maintenance of royalty as the one hope of France; and, when Henry III. was driven from his capital by the violence of the Guises and the League, De Thou followed him to Blois. After his renunciation of orders, he had been made, first, master of requests, and then president @ mortier, which was the highest dignity he ever attained. After the death of Henry III. he attached himself closely to his successor, and in 1593 was appointed (he was a great bibliophile) grand maitre of the royal library, in succession to Amyot, the translator of Plutarch and Longus. It was in this same year that he began his history, the composition of which was inter- rupted, not only by his regular official duties, but by frequent diplomatic missions at home and abroad. His most important employment of all was on the commission which, in face of the greatest difficulties on both sides, successfully carried through the negotiations for the edict of Nantes. Nor were his duties as a diplomatist inter- mitted by the death of Henry IV., though the Govern- ment of Marie de’ Medici refused him the place of premier president which he desired, and hurt his feelings by appointing him instead a member of the financial com- mission which succeeded Sully. This appointment he rather strangely chose to think a degradation. It is, how- ever, absurd to say that the affair, which he survived six years, had anything to do with his death. That, as far as it was hastened by any mental affliction, seems to have been rather due to grief at the death of his second wife, Gasparde de La Chatre, of whom and of his sons and daughters by her (his first marriage with Marie de Bar- bangon had been childless) he was extremely fond. His eldest son, Francois

Auguste, was the friend of Cing Mars, and shared his downfall and fate. But this was a quarter of a century after De Thou's own death, which happened on May 7, 1617.

Although a distinguished ornament of France, De Thou has nothing to do, properly speaking, with French literature. Besides minor works in Latin (a poem on hawking, some paraphrases of the Bible, &c.), he wrote also in Latin the great history which has

made his name known. Entitled Histori# Sui Temporis, it begins shortly before the author's birth (in 1546), and extends to 1607,

ten years before his death. The first part, in eighteen books, was published in 1604; the second, third, and fourth appeared in 1606 and the two following years. The last part, which makes a total of 138 books, did not appear till 1620, under the care of the author's friends Rigault and Dupuy, whom he had named his literary executors. The first named likewise put final touches to De Thou's autobiography, which, also written in Latin, appears in French in most collections of French memoirs. It contains minute details of the author's life down to 1607, mixed with rather miscellaneous descriptions of interesting places which he had visited (such as Mont St Michel, an eagle's eyrie in Dauphiné, &c.); and its com- position is said to have been partly determined by the obloquy cast by bigoted adherents of the papacy on the History. De Thou was indeed obnoxious to these on many grounds. He had helped to nego- tiate the edict of Nantes; he had opposed the acknowledgment in France of the decrees of Trent; he had been a steady Anti-Leaguer ; and he was accused of speaking in the History itself of Protestants and Protestantism, not merely with criminal mildness, but with something like sympathy. It is needless to say that these blots in the History have seemed beauties to later and more dispassionate students. There is no doubt that the charges of partiality on minor and mostly personal points are either disprovable or unim- portant; and the whole seems to be as fair and as carefully accurate as at such a time was possible. On the other hand, the work is undoubtedly planned and executed on much too large a scale, and the inclusion of events in foreign countries, on which the author was often but ill-informed, has not improved it. But it is clearly and on the whole

excellently written, and will always be, as far as any general contemporary history can be so called, the great authority for at least the French part of its subject and period. It was first published as a whole when, as above mentioned, the last part appeared in 1620, and it was several times reprinted. More than a hundred years later, in 1733, an Englishman, Samuel Buckley, working in part on the materials of Thomas Carte, produced at London what is recognized as the standard edition of the original, in 7 vols. folio. The standard French translation was made im- mediately afterwards by a group of literary men, the best known of whom were the Abbé Desfontaines and Prévost, the author of Manon Lescaut, A choice copy of the first edition of the first part, with the arms of Henry IV. on the binding, is in the British Museum library.

THOUSAND AND ONE NIGHTS. The Thousand and One Nights, commonly known in English as The Arabian Nights' Entertainments, is a collection of tales written in Arabic, which first became generally known in Europe in the early part of last century through the French translation by Antoine GALLAND (g.v.), and rapidly attained such universal popularity that it is unnecessary to describe the contents of the book. But the origin of the Arabian Nights claims discussion in this place. In the Journal Asiatique for 1827, p. 253, Von Hammer drew attention to a passage in the Golden Meadows. of Mas'tdt (ed. Barbier de Meynard, iv. 89 sq.), written in 943 a.p., in which certain stories current among the old Arabs are compared with 'the books which have reached us in translations from Persian, Indian, and Greek, such as the book of Hezdr Afséne, a title which, translated from Persian into Arabic, means 'the thousand tales.' This book is popularly called The Thousand and One Nights, and contains the story of the king and his vizier and of his daughter Shirazdd and her slave girl Din4z4d. Other books of the same kind are the book of Ferza and Simas, containing stories of Indian kings and viziers, the book of Sindibad, &e." Von Hammer concluded that the Thousand and One Nights were of Persian or Indian origin. Against this conclusion De Sacy protested in a memoir (Mém. de P Acad. des Inser., 1833, x. 30 sq.), demonstrating that the character of the book we know is genuinely Arabian, and that it must have been written in Egypt at a compara- tively recent date. Von Hammer in reply adduced, in Jour. As., 1839, ii. p. 175 sq., a passage in the Fihrist (987 a.p.), which is to the following effect :-—

‘The ancient Persians were the first to invent tales, and make books of them, and some of their tales were put in the mouths of animals, The Ashghanians, or third dynasty of Persian kings, and after them the Sdsdnians, had a special partin the development of this literature, which found Arabic translators, and was taken

by accomplished Arabic literati, who edited it and imitated it. The earliest book of the kind was the Hezér afsdn or Thousand

T H O—

AP EPO

Tales, which had the following origin. A certain Persian king was accustomed to kill his wives on the morning after the consummation of the marriage. But once he married a clever princess called Shahrazad, who spent the marriage night in telling a story which in the morning reached a point so interesting that the king spared her, and asked next night for the sequel. This went on for a thousand nights, till Shahrazad had a son, and ventured to tell the king of herdevice. He admired her intelligence, loved her, and spared her life. In all this the princess was assisted by the king’s stewardess Dinazad. This book is said to have been written for the princess Homai (MSS. Homani), daughter of Bahman…. It contains nearly two hundred stories, one story often occupying several nights. Ihave repeatedly seen the coniplete book, but it is really a meagre and uninteresting production” (Fihrist, ed.

| Fliigel, p. 304).

Persian tradition (in Firdausi) makes Princess Homdi the daughter and wife of Bahman Ardashir, 7.e., Artaxerxes I. Longimanus. She is depicted as a great builder, a kind of Persian Semiramis, and is a half-mythical personage already mentioned in the Avesta, but her. legend seems to be founded on the history of Atossa and of Parysatis. Firdaus{ says that she was also called Shahrazdd (Mohl, v. 11). This name and that of Dinaz4d both occur in what Mas‘tdi tells of her. According to him, Shahraz4d was Homai’s mother (ii. 129), a Jewess (ii. 123). Bahman had married a Jewess (i. 118), who was instrumental in delivering her nation from captivity. In ii. 122 this Jewish

maiden who did her people this service is called Dinazad, but “the accounts,” says our author, “ vary.” Plainly she is the Esther of Jewish story. Tabari (i. 688) calls Esther the mother of Bahman, and, like Firdaust, gives to Homdi the name of Shahrazdd. The story of Esther and that of the original Wights have in fact one main feature in common. In the former the king is offended with his wife, and divorces her; in the Arabian Nights he finds her unfaithful, and kills her. But both stories agree that thereafter a new wife was brought to him every night, and on the morrow passed into the second house of the women (Esther), or was slain (Nights). At length Esther or Shahrazdd wins his heart and becomes queen. ‘The issue in the Jewish story is that Esther saves her people ; in the Wights the gainers are “ the daughters of the Moslems,” but the old story had, of course, some other word than “Moslems.” Esther’s foster-father be- comes vizier, and Shahrazdd’s father is also vizier. Shah- razad’s plan is helped forward in the Wights by Dinazdd, who is, according to Mas‘td{, her slave girl, or, according to other MSS., her nurse, and, according to the Fihrist, the king’s stewardess. The last account comes nearest to Esther ii. 15, where Esther gains the favour of the king’s chamberlain, keeper of the women. It is also to be noted that Ahasuerus is read to at night when he cannot sleep (Esther vi. 1). And it is just possible that it is worth notice that, though the name of Ahasuerus corresponds to Xerxes, Josephus identifies him with Artaxerxes I.

Now it may be taken as admitted that the book of Esther was written in Persia, or by one who had lived in Persia, and not earlier than the 3d century B.o. If now there is real weight in the points of contact between this story and the Arabian Nights—and the points of difference cannot be held to outweigh the resemblances between two legends, each of which is necessarily so far removed from the hypothetical common source—the inference is import- ant for both stories. On the one hand, it appears that (at least in part) the book of Esther draws on a Persian source ; on the other hand, it becomes probable that the Nights are older than the SAs4nian period, to which Lane, iii. 677, refers them.

It is a piece of good fortune that Mas‘idi and the Fihrist give us the information cited above. For in general the Moslems, though very fond of

stories, are ashamed to recognize them as objects of literary curiosity. In fact, the next mention of the Wights is found only after

a lapse of three centuries. Makrizi, describing the capital of Egypt, quotes from a work of Ibn Sa‘id (c. 1250 a.p.), who again cites an older author (Al-Kortobi), who, in speaking of a love affair at the court of the caliph Al-Amir (1097-1130), says “what is told about it resembles the romance of Al-Battal, or the Thousand and One Nights” (itat, Bulak ed., i. 485, ii. 181).

That the Wights which we have are not the original trans- lation of the Jezér Afsdne is certain, for the greater part of the stories are of Arabian origin, and the whole is so thoroughly Mohammedan that even the princes of remote ages who are introduced speak and act as Moslems. It might be conceived that this is due to a gradual process of modernization by successive generations of story-tellers. But against this notion, which has been entertained by some scholars, Lane has remarked with justice that, much as MSS. of the Wights differ from one another in points of language and style, in the order of the tales, and the division into nights, they are all so much at one in essentials that they must be regarded as derived from a single original. There is no trace of a recension of the text that can be looked on as standing nearer to the Hezér Afsdne. And the whole local colour of the work, in point of dialect and also as regards the manners and customs described, clearly belongs to Egypt as it was from the 14th to the 16th century. Some points, as De Sacy and Lane have shown, forbid us to place the book earlier than the second half of the 15th century. Galland’s MS. copy, again, was in existence in 1548. Lane accordingly dates the work from the close of the 15th century or the beginning of the 16th, but this date appears to be too late. For Abw1-Mahdasin, an Egyptian historian who died in 1470, writing of Hamdi, a famous highwayman of Baghdad in the 10th century, remarks that he is probably the figure who used to be popularly spoken of as Ahmed al-Danaf (ed. Juynboll, ii, 305). Now in the Waghts Ahmed al-Danaf really plays a part corresponding to that of the historical Hamdi, being now a robber (Lane, ii. 404) and again a captain of the guard (Lane, ii, 249). Tt would seem that Abu’l-Mah4sin had read or heard the stories in the Mights, and was thus led to compare the historical with the

fictitious character. And, if this be so, the oe must have been composed very soon after

1450.

No doubt the Nights have borrowed much from the Hezér Afsdne, and it is not improbable that even in the original Arabic translation of that work some of the Per- sian stories were replaced by Arab ones. But that our Nights differ very much from the Heedr Afséne is further manifest from the circumstance that, even of those stories in the Nights which are not Arabian in origin, some are borrowed from books mentioned by Mas‘tdi as distinct from the Hezér Afsdne. ‘Thus the story of the king and his son and the damsel and the seven viziers (Lane, chap. xxi. note 51) is in fact a version of the Book of Sindbdd,? while the story of Jalf‘4d and his son and the vizier Shammaés (M‘Naghten, iv. 366 sq.; of. Lane, iii. 530) corresponds to the book of Ferza and Simds.*

Not a few of the tales are unmistakably of Indian or

1 The hypothesis of gradual and complete modernization is also opposed to the fact that the other romances used by Cairene story- tellers (such as those of ‘Antar and of Saif) retain their original local colour through all variations of language and style.

2 On this famous book, the Syriac Sindibdn, the Greek Syntipas, and the Seven Sages of the European West, see Syriac LITERATURE (vol. xxii. p. 850) and Sparn (vol. xxii. p. 354).

3 De Sacy and Lane suppose that the original title of the Arabic translation of the Headér Afsdne was The Thousand Nights. But most MSS. of Mas‘tidi already have The Thousand and One Nights, which is also the name given by Makrizi. Both ciphers perhaps mean only “ very great number,” and Fleischer (De @lossis Habichtianis, p. 4) has shown that 1001 is certainly used in this sense.

Persian origin, and in these poetical passages are rarely inserted. In other stories the scene lies in Persia or India, and the source is foreign, but the treatment thoroughly Arabian and Mohammedan. Sometimes, in- deed, traces of Indian origin are perceptible, even in stories in which Hartn al-Rashid figures and the scene is Bagh- dad or Basra. But most of the tales, in substance and form alike, are Arabian, and so many of them have the capital of the caliphs as the scene of action that it may be guessed that the author used as one of his sources a book of tales taken from the era of Baghdad's prosperity.

The late date of the Nights appcars from sundry ana- chronisms. Inthe story of the men transformed into fish— white, blue, yellow, or red according as they were Moslems, Christians, Jews, or Magians (Lane, i. 99),—the first three colours are those of the turbans which, in 1301, Mohammed b. Kelaun of Egypt commanded his Moslem, Christian, and Jewish subjects respectively to wear.° Again, in the story of the humpback, whose scene is laid in the 9th century, the talkative barber says, '" this is the year 653" (=1255 a.p.; Lane, i. 332, writes 263, but see his note), and mentions the caliph Mostansir (died 1242), who is incorrectly called son of Mostadi.° In the same story several places in Cairo are mentioned which did not exist till long after the 9th century (see Lane, i. 379).7 The very rare edition of the first 200 nights pub- lished at Calcutta in 1814 speaks of cannon, which are first mentioned in Egypt in 1383; and all editions some- times speak of coffee, which was discovered towards the end of the 14th century, but not generally used till 200 years later. In this and other points, ¢.g., in the mention of a mosque founded in 1501 (Lane, iii. 608), we detect the hand of later interpolators, but the extent of such interpolations can hardly perhaps be determined even by a collation of all copies. For the nature and causes of the variations between different copies the reader may consult Lane, iii. 678, who explains how transpositions actually arise by transcribers trying to make up a complete set of the tales from several imperfect copies.

Many of the tales in the Wights have an historical basis, as Lane has shown in his notes. Other cases in point might be added: thus the chronicle of Ibn al-Jauzi (died 1200 a.p.) contains a narrative of Kamar, slave girl of Shaghb, the mother of Al-Moktadir, which is the source of the tale in Lane, i. 310 sg., and of another to be found in M'Naghten, iv. 557 sg. ; the latter is

the better story, but departs so far from the original that the author must have had no more than a general recollection of the narrative he drew on.8 There are other cases in the Nights of two tales which are only variations of a single theme, or even in certain parts agree almost word for word. Some tales are mere compounds of different stories put together without any art, but these perhaps are, as Lane conjectures, later additions to the book; yet the collector himself was no great literary artist. We must picture him as a professional story-teller equipped with a mass of miscellaneous reading, a fluent power of narration, and a ready faculty for quoting, or at a push improvising, verses. His stories became popular, and were written down as he told them,—hardly written by himself, else we should not have so many variations in the text, and such insertions of ‘the narrator says,” “my noble sirs,” and the like. The frequent coarseness of tone is proper to the condition of Egyptian society under the Mameluke sultans, and would not have been tolerated in Baghdad in the age

4 Gildemeister, De Rebus Indicis, p. 89 sq.

5 Quatremére, Sultans Mamloucs, ii. 2, p. 177 sg.

8 Lane, i. 842, arbitrarily writes “ Montasir” for ‘‘ Mostansir.” 7 See also Edinb. Review, July 1886, p. 191 sq.

8 See De Goeje in Gids, 1876, ii. pp. 397-411.

to which so many of the tales refer. Yet with all their faults the Wghts have beauties enough to deserve their popularity, and to us their merit is enhanced by the pleasure we feel in being transported into so entirely novel a state of society.

The original of some of the most interesting tales in Galland’s version, as “‘ Aladdin and the Wonderful Lamp,” ‘“‘ Ali Baba and the Forty Thieves,” has just been dis- covered by Dr Zotenberg in a MS. recently acquired by the National Library at Paris. A careful examination of this MS. and of the Wortley-Montagu MS. in the Bodleian may lead perhaps to a more certain conclusion as to the time of composition.

‘ The Thousand and One Nights became known in Europe through A. Galland’s French version (12 vols., 12mo, Paris, 1704-12) ; the publication was an event in literary history, the influence of which can be traced far and wide. This translation, however, left much to be desired in point of accuracy, and espccially failed to reproduce the colour of the original with the exactness which those who do not read merely for amusement must desire. It was with a special view to the remedying of these defects that Lane produced in 1840 his admirably accurate, if somewhat stilted, translation, enriched with most valuable notes and a discussion of the origin of the work (new edition, with some additional notes, 8 vols., 8vo., London, 1859). Lane’s translation omits the tales which he deemed uninteresting or unfit for a European public. No full translation into English can be published, and, though two such have been privately printed, and one of these (by Sir R. Burton) is being reproduced in an expurgated form, Lane’s version is still unsuperseded for all serious use. Of the Arabic text of the Nights the principal editions are—(1) M‘Naghten’s edition, 4 vols., 8vo, Calcutta, 1839-42 ; (2) the Breslau edition, 12 vols., 12mo, 1835-48, the first 8 vols. by Habicht, the rest by Fleischer (com- pare as to the defects of Habicht’s work, Fleischer, De Glossis Habichtianis, Leipsic, 1836) ; (8) the first Bulak edition, 4 vols., 1862-8. (M. J. DEG.)

THRACE is a name which was applied at various periods to areas of different extent, but for the purposes of this article it will be taken in its most restricted sense, as signifying the Roman province which was so called (Thracia, see Plate of the Roman empire in vol.’ xx.) after the district that intervened between the river Ister (Danube) and the Hemus Mountains (Balkan) had been formed into the separate province of Mcesia, and the region between the rivers Strymon and Nestus, which included Philippi, had been added to Macedonia. The boundaries of this were—towards the N. the Hemus, on the E. the Euxine Sea, on the 8. the Propontis, the Helles- pont, and the Augean, and towards the W. the Nestus. The most distinguishing features of the country were the chain of Rhodope (Despoto-dagh) and the river Hebrus (Maritza). The former separates at its northernmost point from the Hemus, at right angles, and runs southward at first, nearly parallel to the Nestus, until it approaches the sea, when it takes an easterly direction: this bend is referred to by Virgil in the line (@eorg., iii. 351)—

Quaque redit medium Rhodope porrecta sub axem.

The summits of this chain are higher than those of Heemus, and not a few of them range from 5000 to 8000 feet ; the highest point, so far as is at present known (for these mountains have been imperfectly explored), rises towards the north-west, near the point where now stands the famous Bulgarian monastery of Rilo. The Hebrus, together with its tributaries which flow into it from the north, east, and west, drains nearly the whole of Thrace. It starts from near the point of junction of Hemus and Rhodope, and at first takes an easterly direction, the chief town which lies on its banks in the earlier part of its course being Philippopolis ; but, when it reaches the still more important city of Hadrianopolis, it makes a sharp bend towards the south, and enters the sea nearly opposite the island of Samothrace. The greater part of the country is hilly and irregular, though there are considerable plains ; but besides Rhodope two other tolerably definite chains

intersect it, one of which descends from Hzemus to Adrian- ople, while the other follows the coast of the Euxine at no great distance inland. One district in the extreme north-west of Thrace lay beyond the watershed that separates the streams that flow into the Aigean from those that reach the Danube: this was the territory of Sardica, the modern Sophia. In the later Roman period two main lines of road passed through the country. One of these skirted the southern coast, being a continuation of the Via Egnatia, which ran from Dyrrhachium to Thessalonica, thus connecting the Adriatic and the /Zgean ; it became of the first importance after the foundation of Constan- tinople, because it was the direct line of communication between that cityand Rome. The other followed a north- westerly course through the interior, from Constantinople by Hadrianopolis and Philippopolis to the Hemus, and thence by Naissus (Nisch) through Meesia in the direction of Pannonia, taking the same route by which the post-road now runs from Constantinople to Belgrade. The climate of Thrace was regarded by the Greeks as very severe, and that country was spoken of as the home of the north wind, Boreas. The coast in the direction of the Euxine also was greatly feared by sailors, as the harbours were few and the sea proverbially

tempestuous ; but the southern shore was more attractive to navigators, and here we find the Greek colonies of Abdera and Mesambria on the Aigean, Perinthus on the Propontis, and, the most famous of all, Byzantium, at the meeting-point of that sea and the Bosphorus. Another place which proved attractive to colonists of that race was the curious narrow strip of ground, called the Thracian Chersonese, that intervened between the Hellespont and the Bay of Melas, which pene- trates far into the land onits northern side. Among the cities that occupied it, Sestos and Callipolis (Gallipoli) are the most worthy of mention. In order to prevent the incursions of the Thracians, a wall was built across its isthmus, which was less than five miles in breadth. The north-eastern portion of the Aigean, owing to its proximity to the coast of Thrace, was known as the Thracian Sea, and in this were situated the islands of Thasos, Samo- thrace, and Imbros.

There is no sufficient evidence to determine the ethnological affinities of the Thracian race. Their language has perished, and the information respecting them which has come down to us hardly furnishes more than material for conjecture, so that the most that we can affirm on the subject is that they belonged to the Indo- European family. The most striking archeological monuments of the prehistoric period are the sepulchral mounds, which have been compared in appearance to the tumulus on the plain of Marathon; these are found by thousands in various parts of the country, espe- cially in the neighbourhood of the ancient towns. As Roman implements and ornaments have been found in some of them, it is plain that this mode of burial continued to be practised until a late period. The deity whose worship prevailed most extensively in the country was Dionysus. The most powerful Thracian tribe was that of the Odrysx, whose king, Teres, in the middle of the 5th century B.c. extended his dominion so as to include the greater part of Thrace. During the Peloponnesian War his son Sitalecs was an ally of some importance to the Athenians, because he kept in check the Macedonian monarch, who opposed the interests of the Athenians in the Chalcidic peninsula. On the death of that prince his kingdom was divided, and the power of the Thracians was consequently diminished ; but in the time of Philip of Macedon we find Cersobleptes, who ruled the south-eastern portion of the country, exercising an important influence on the policy of Athens. During the early period of the Roman empire the Thracian kings were allowed to maintain an independent

sovereignty, while acknowledging the suzerainty of Rome, and it was not until the reign of Vespasian that the country was reduced to the form of a province. From its outlying position in the northern part of the Balkan peninsula, it was much exposed to the inroads of barbarian invaders, so that it was overrun by the Goths on several occasions, and subsequently by the Huns; but its proximity to Constantinople caused its fortunes to be closely connected with those of that city, from the time when it became the capital of the Eastern empire. In the course of time its inhabitants seem to have been thoroughly Romanized, and to have adopted the Latin language, and there is

much probability in the view that they were the progenitors of the Vlachs, or Roumanians south of the Danube, whose language is of Latin origin, and who at various periods formed an important factor in the countries to the northward of Greece. The first evidence of the development of this nationality is found in a curious story told by Theophanes at the end of the 6th century. At that time a khan of the Avars had overrun the Eastern empire and appeared before the walls of Constantinople; but two generals of the imperial forces, who had concealed themselves in the Balkan, succecded in mustering a considerable body of troops, and were on their way to surprise the rear of the Avars when their project was brought to an end by the following occurrence. One of the beasts of burden happened to fall down in the line of march, on which some one close by called out to its driver, in the language of the country, “Torna, torna, fratre,” that is, “ Turn him round, brother.” The driver did not hear this, but the other soldiers did; and, thinking the enemy were upon them, and that this was the sign for retreat, they took up the cry ‘‘ Torna, torna,” and the whole force fled precipitately. It seems probable that the men who used these words were Roumanian inhabitants of the Balkan. In the course of the Middle Ages the northern parts of Thrace and some other districts of that country were occupied by a Bulgarian popu- lation; and in 1861 the Ottomans, who had previously established themselves in Europe, made themselves masters of Adrianople, which for a time became the Turkish capital. When Constanti- nople fell in 1453, the whole country passed into the hands of the Turks, and in their possession it remained until 1878, when, in accordance with the

provisions of the treaty of Berlin, the northern portion of it was placed under a separate administration, with the title of Eastern Roumelia; this province has now become, to all intents and purposes, a part of the principality of Bulgaria. The population of Thrace at the present day is composcd of Turks, Gyeeks, and Bulgarians. (eile

THRALE. See Prozzi.

THRASYBULUS, an Athenian who played a distin- guished part in the latter years of the Peloponnesian War and in the restoration of the democracy at Athens. In 411 B.c., as an officer in the Athenian armament at Samos, he energetically opposed the oligarchical conspiracy of the Four Hundred, and was mainly instrumental in keeping the fleet and army loyal to the democracy and in procur- ing the recall of the banished Alcibiades. At the battle of Cynnosema, in the same year, he commanded the right wing of the Athenian fleet, and to his valour and conduct the Athenian victory was largely due. He took an active part in the naval operations of the following years, being present at the victories of Cyzicus (410) and Arginuse (406). In 407 he commanded a squadron on the Thracian coast, where he reduced places which had gone over to the Lacedeemonians. When the infamous Thirty Tyrants were at the height of their power in Athens, Thrasybulus, who as a democrat had been banished, marched from Thebes with about seventy men, with the connivance of Thebes, and established himself at Phyle, a strong place in the rear of Athens. There he repulsed an attack directed against him by the Thirty ; his numbers increased, and, after surprising and routing a body of foot and horse, he seized Pirseus, the port of Athens, but, finding the circuit of the walls too great to be defended by his small force, he retired into the adjoining Munychia. Here he was attacked by the troops of the Thirty, but in the street- fighting the democrats had the best of it, and the Thirty were in consequence deposed and retired to Eleusis. Hostilities, however, continued until Pausanias, one of the kings of Sparta, intervened, and by force and craft effected a reconciliation. The democrats marched into Athens with all the pomp of war, and sacrificed to Athene on the Acropolis. This restoration of the democracy by Thrasy- bulus ranked henceforward with the memorable deeds of Athenian history. To his counsels seems due in part the credit for the wise moderation with which the demo- crats used their

victory, and the inviolate good faith with which they observed the political amnesty. The grateful citizens rewarded their champion with an olive crown. In 395, when Thebes was threatened by Sparta, the Athenians, stimulated by Thrasybulus, repaid the

friendly shelter which the Thebans had afforded them in exile by resolving to stand by Thebes against Sparta, and by actually sending a force under Thrasybulus to her aid. In 390, while the war known as the Corinthian was still dragging on, Thrasybulus was sent with a fleet to check the growing power of Sparta in the Aigean. He substituted a, democracy for an oligarchy at Byzantium, and won the friendship of Chalcedon; then, landing in Lesbos, he defeated a joint force of Lacedeemonians and Lesbians. In the following spring he prepared to assist Rhodes, which was threatened by the Lacedemonians ; but to recruit his forces he levied contributions from various cities. At Aspendus, in Pamphylia, an outrage committed by some of his men roused the anger of the people, who fell on him by night, and slew him in his tent. He was buried at Athens, in the Ceramicus, near the graves of Pericles and Phormio.

THREADWORMS. See NEMATOIDEA.

THREE RIVERS, the third city of Quebec province, Canada, and capital of St Maurice county, is situated at the confluence of the rivers St Maurice and St Lawrence. The St Maurice flows in from the north, and, being divided at its mouth by two islands, the channels give the town its name. It is on the line of the Canadian Pacific Rail- way, 78 miles south-west of Quebec, and 92 north-east of Montreal. Founded in 1634, Three Rivers is one of the oldest towns in Quebec. It is the centre of a large lumber trade, which is carried on by the St Maurice and its tributaries. Three leagues from the city are the St Maurice forges, where iron wares were formerly manu- factured extensively. Other industries are furniture and cabinet making, boot and shoe making, and those carried on in the spool factories, brass and lead foundries, sawmills, and carriage factories. The city is the residence of the Roman Catholic bishop whose diocese bears the same name. ‘The chief trade is in lumber, grain, cattle, &c., which find sale in South America, the West Indies, Great Britain, and the United States. The city sends one

member to the Canadian House of Commons and one to the Legislative Assembly. The population of the city in 1881 was 8670 (males 4173, females 4497). The district of Three Rivers comprises the counties of St Maurice, Nicolet, Champlain, and Maskinongé.

THROAT DISEASES. These form a large and import- ant class, and include some of the most serious and fatal of maladies (see Croup and DipurHerta). The present article will be devoted mainly to a general account of the more common diseases affecting the upper part of the re- spiratory passages, but certain morbid conditions of the back of the mouth and of the gullet will also be referred to. The diagnosis of not a few of these diseases has been greatly aided by the introduction into medical practice of the laryngoscope ; but, while the use of this instrument is a part of the education of every well-equipped medical practitioner, the minute investigation and the treatment of the more occult and serious maladies affecting the throat are by general consent, and with much advantage, relegated to the specialist.

Laryngitis, or inflammation of the mucous membrane of the Larynx, may be either acute or chronic.

Acute laryngitis is usually produced by exposure to cold directly, or by a catarrh extending either from the nasal or from the bronchial mucous membrane into that of the larynx. Itisan occasional accom- paniment of certain of the infectious diseascs in which the throat is liable to suffer, such as small-pox, measles, scarlct fever, and crysipelas. Excessive use of the voicc, as in loud speaking or sing- ing, sometimes gives rise to laryngitis. Further, the inhalation of irritating particles, vapours, &c., and the local effects of swallowing very hot fluids, arc well-recognized causes. The chicf changes in the larynx are great redness, with swelling of the parts, which affect the whole interior of the cavity, but are specially marked where the tissues are lax, such as the neighbourhood of the epiglottis and

of the vocal cords. The effect is to produce narrowing of the channel for the entrance of air, and to this the chief dangers are due. The symptoms vary with the intensity of the attack, but, along with more or less feverishness

and constitutional disturbance, there is usually a sense of heat, dryness, and pain in the throat, attended with some difficulty in the act of swallowing. Cough is a constant symptom, and is eithcr loud, barking, or clanging, or else husky and toneless. It is at first dry, but afterwards is ac- companied with expectoration. The voice, like the cough, is rough or husky. The breathing shows evidence of laryngeal obstruction, both inspiration and expiration being prolonged and difficult, with a somewhat hissing sound, and with almost no interval between the two acts. In severe cases the face and surface generally become livid, and suffocation threatens, particularly during the paroxysms of coughing. In favourable cases, which form the majority, the attack tends to abate in a few days, but on the other hand death may oceur suddenly in a suffocative paroxysm, particularly in the case of children. Many cascs of acute laryngitis are so compara- tively slight as to make themselves known only by hoarseness and the character of the cough; nevertheless in every instance the attack demands serious attention. The treatment consists in kecp- ing the patient in bed in an atmosphere of 60° to 70° F., made moist by steam. The use of warm gargles, and the frequent inhalation of the vapour of hot water, containing such soothing substances as benzoin, conitim, hop, &c., and the application of hot fomentations to the throat, will be found of much value. Internally diaphoretics, such as small doses of antimony or Dover’s powder, are also to be recommended. Such remedies usually suffice to re- lieve the attack, but in very severe cases more active interference may be necessary. When there is much swelling of the mucous membrane in the upper portion of the larynx, scarification of the parts with the aid of the laryngoscope may afford relief, but tracheotomy should not be neglected where death appcars to be imminent from suffocation. Attacks of laryngitis may be largely prevented in those liable to them by a regimen calculated to in- vigorate the system, such as the cold bath, regular open-air exer- cise, &c.

Chronic laryngitis may occur as a result of repeated attacks of the acute form, or may arise independently from such causes as habitual exposure (especially where along with this there is over- indulgence in alcohol), the habitual overuse of the vocal organs, &c. The changes taking place in the parts are more permanent than in the acute form, consisting mainly in thickening of the mucous membrane, vocal cords, &. With it may be ulceration, and also sometimes destruction, of the cartilaginous parts of the

larynx. The symptoins vary according to the extent and amount, as well as the duration, of the inflammation. Thus there may simply be a certain huskiness or hoarseness on attempts at the use of the voice, this condition being well exemplified in the so-called clergyman's sore throat (dysphonia clertcorwm) ; while, on the other hand, there may be, not only complete loss of voice, but severe pain in the act of swallowing and great difficulty in breathing, accom- panied sometimes with expectoration of large quantities of matter in the cases where ulceration is present. Under this variety of the disease may be included the ulceration due to syphilis and that occurring in the course of phthisis, both of which are attended with the symptoms now mentioned. The diagnosis and the treat- ment of all such cases is greatly aided by the use of the laryngo- scope, by which a view of the affected parts can be obtained, and the proper remedics more readily applied. In the treatment of the chronic forms of laryngitis rest to the parts is essential, any attempts at continuing the use of the voice only aggravating the condition ; while tonic remedies and regimen should be diligently employed to strengthen the system generally. Applications to the affected parts in the forms of solutions of silver, alum, zinc, tannin, &c., either by means of a sponge-probang introduced into the cavity or by the simpler method of spraying, are often beneficial. The insufflation of powders, such as iodoform, or starch mixed with a minute quantity of morphia, is also of service, as are likewise in- halations of vapours of iodine, carbolic acid, turpentine, eucalyptus, &c. In aggravated forms of this disease tracheotomy is occasion- ally necessary to relieve threatened suffocation.

Symptoms similar to those already described are produced by tumours and other growths in the larynx. Such growths may be of simple character, in the form of isolated fibrous formations attached by a peduncle to some portion of the laryngeal mucous membrane, or as warty excrescences occurring upon or in the neigh- bourhood of the vocal cords. They are detected by means of the laryngoscope, and can often be dealt with effectually by the surgeon. In the more serious malignant tumours (epithcliomatous or cancer- ous), which either take origin in the larynx, or spread into it from adjacent parts, interference by surgical measures can only afford temporary relief.

Certain affections of the larynx are of purely nervous origin, and occur independently of any local disease. One of the most import- ant of these is laryngismus stridulus, otherwise called child-crow- tng or spasmodic croup. This condition occurs chiefly during the

early years of childhood, often in infants during dentition, and manifests itself after premonitory symptoms of a common catarrh, lasting a day or two, by the occurrence of a violent suffocative attack due to sudden spasmodic approximation of the vocal cords, and consequent intcrruption to the breathing. The symptonis are not connected with any local inflammatory condition, but are the result of reflex irritation affecting the nerves supplying the laryn- geal muscles. Such disturbance appears specially apt to occur in rickety or otherwise unhealthy children, in connexion either with dentition or with disorders of the alimentary canal. The onset is sudden, resembling a convulsive seizure, and symptoms of suffoca- tion are at once developed. The child makes strong efforts to inspire, which are accompanied with stridulous or crowing sounds, but, notwithstanding, very little air can enter the chest owing to the spasm of the glottis, and unless relief speedily comes death may be very rapid. In most cases, however, the attack quickly passes off, and the child seems little the worse. A liability to this disorder is sometimes observed in families, and in such instances the attacks are apt to occur in their more serious and fatal forms. Treatment to be of any avail must be promptly applied. It con- sists mainly in the employment of means to allay the spasm. The use of the warin bath is very serviceable for this purpose, as is also chloroform inhalation. But one of the simplest and most effec- tual measures is putting the finger back into the child’s mouth, which is sufficient in many cases to relax the spasm of the glottis, and permit the entrance of air. In impending asphyxia the dash- ing of cold water over the face and chest, and the use of artificial respiration, should be tried, and even trachcotomy or laryngotomy if practicable. In all cases every effort should be made to discover any causes likely to produce nervous irritation, such as teething, intestinal worms, &c., and to deal with these by appropriate reniedies.

Symptoms not unlike those now described sometimes occur in adults as the result of irritation of the recurrent laryngeal nerve, by the pressure upon it of a thoracic aneurism or other tumour. Such pressure, if long continued, results in paralysis of the nerve, occasioning more or less constant trouble in breathing.

In the condition known as nervous aphonia, which occurs mostly in women of hysterical habit or in circumstances of enfecbled health, the voice becomes reduced to a whisper, but there is seldom any affection of the breathing, or cough, and the laryngo- scope reveals a perfectly healthy state of the parts. In such cases the remedies must be directed,to the improvement of the general health. The use of electricity (faradism) applied to the neck is often attended with marked benefit.

Diseases affecting the Trachea are usually associated with laryngeal affections on the one hand or bronchial on the other, and their separate consideration is unnecessary.

The Tonsils are frequently the seat of inflammation, and acute tonsillitis or quinsy is one of the most common forms of sore throat. This affection is usually induced by cold, but it would appear to arise under other conditions also, such as digestive disturbances, &c. It is said to be more common in persons of rheumatic constitution, and one attack predisposes to others. The symptoms come on somewhat suddenly and sharply, with chill followed by fever, the temperature frequently attaining a high point of elevation. Pain is experienced in the act of swallowing from the outset. The inflammation is usually at first confined to one tonsil, but on examining the throat there isscen to be considerable redness and swelling of the whole surrounding mucous membrane, the uvula, soft palatc, &c., while a copious secretion accumulates at the parts, and causes much discomfort. The act of swallowing becomes increasingly difficult, and fluids are apt to regurgitate through the nose. Pain is felt along the Eustachian tube towards the ear, and there are tenderness and swelling in the neck abont the angle of the jaw on the affected side. The voice acquires a peculiar and very characteristic snuffl- ing tone, and there may be some embarrassment to the breathing. In a few days the inflamed tonsil shows signs of suppurating, and an abscess is seen to be bulging forward into the mouth. When this bursts or is evacuated,

speedy relief is obtained, and the patient is soon restored to his usual health. Occasionally, however, the inflammation passes from the onc tonsil to the other, and a similar expcrience has to be gone through again. An attack of quinsy rarely lasts beyond a week or ten days, and is not as a rule attended with danger to life, although it is said that suffocation has occasionally occurred owing to the bursting of a large tonsillar abscess during sleep, and the passage of its contents into the trachea. The treatment fora quinsy is much the sameas that for an ordinary catarrl or cold, —continement to the house, the employ- ment of diaphoretics or mild laxatives, together with light diet, being all that is necessary as regards general management. For the relief of the local inflammation the frequent employment of warm gargles of milk and water or glyccrin and water or the inhalation of vapour afford much relief, as do also hot applications to the neck. Some authorities recommend the sucking of ice and the external application of cold compresses, but on the whole

warmth appears to be the more soothing remedy. When an abscess has formed it may be punctured, but care requires to be observed in doing this that no injury be inflicted on any important blood-vessel.

The tonsils are frequently the seat of permanent enlargement (chronic tonsillitis), which may result from frequent attacks of quinsy or may exist independently. They are often seen in delicate young people, and, in the case of some at least, denote a strumous tendency. They give trouble from the mechanical impediment they present to swallowing and clear articulation, and when very large they cause the breathing to be more or less noisy at all times, but especially during sleep, while again they may give rise to a measure of deafness. They are treated by remedies which promote the general uutrition, such as cod-liver oil, iron, &c., by the use of astringent gargles, and when necessary by excision.

The Pharynax or upper portion of the gullet (seen to a large extent on looking at the back of the mouth) is frequently the seat of a chronic inflammatory condition, usually associated with derangements of the digestive organs, and sometimes the result of excessive tobacco smoking. On inspection the mucous membrane is seen to be unduly red and glazed

looking, with the enlarged follicles standing out prominently. It produces considerable irritation, cough, and discomfort, which may be of long continu- ance unless subjected to appropriate treatment. This consists in removing any local source of irritation, in rectifying by diet and other remedies (see SromMAcH DisEAsEs) any gastric disturb- ance, and by the application to the parts of silver or other mild caustic solution.

The Gsophagus or gullet may be the seat of catarrhal or inflammatory conditions, but the more important ailments affect- ing this tract are those which arise from local injuries, such as the swallowing of scalding or corrosive substances. This may cause ulceration followed with cicatrization which narrows the passage and produces the symptoms of stricture of the esophagus, —namely, pain and difficulty in swallowing, with regurgitation of the food. The severity of the case will necessarily depend upon the amount of narrowing and consequent mechanical obstruction, but in some instances this has occurred to such an extent as practically to occlude the canal. Cases of oesophageal stricture of the kind now referred to may sometimes be relieved by the diligent use of the bougie, but not unfrequently, in order to prevent death by starvation, surgical interference is requisite to form an opening into the stomach by means of which food may be introduced.

A still more serious and frequent cause of cesophageal stricture is that due to cancerous growth in the canal, which may occur at any part, but is most common at the lower end, in the vicinity of the entrance into the stomach. The symptoms of this condition are increasing difficulty in the passage downwards of the food, the steady decline in strength, and the development of the cancer- ous cachexia, together with enlargements of the glands in the neck ; while the diagnosis is rendered the more certain by the absence of any cause, such as local injury, for the formation of a stricture, and by the age (as a rule at or beyond middle life). Treatment here can only be palliative while life continucs, which in general is not long. Feeding by the bowel (enemata) may be advantageously resorted to as supplementary to efforts to admin- ister liquid nutriment in the usual way. It is to be observed in all cases of organic stricture that the food does not necessarily return at once, but seems as if it had passed into the stomach. In reality, however, it has passed into the dilated or pouched portion of the canal, which is almost

always present immediately above the seat of stricture, where it remains until, from its amount, it regurgitates back into the mouth, when it can be seen, by the absence of any evidence of digestion, that it has never been within the cavity of the stomach. While in this way a large quantity of the food returns, it often happens that a small amount of the liquid portion does trickle through the narrowed canal into the stomach, and thus life may be prolonged for a considerable time.

Strictures of the cesophagus may also be produced by the pres- sure of tumours or aneurisms within the cavity of the chest but external to the canal. Further, a variety of cesophageal stricture is not unfrequently met with which is due entirely to nervous causes, and is quite unconnected with organic disease,—namely, that form occurring in hysterical females termed spasmodic stric- ture. Here the attack of difficulty in swallowing comes on usually when the patient is at meals, and the food cannot pass down. The absence, however, of all history of any organic source of disease, and especially the perfect facility with which the cesophageal tube or bougie is passed, together with other manifestations of hysteria com- monly present, serve readily to establish the diagnosis. The remedies most suitable are tonics and the frequent passage of the stomach- tube, which as a rule soon entirely removes the tendency to spasm.

Fiually, difficulty in swallowing sometimes occurs in certain serious nervous diseases from paralysis affecting the nerves supply- ing the muscular coats of the csophagus, which thus loses its propulsive power. When such complications occur they usually denote an advanced stage of the central disease with which they are connected, and a speedily fatal termination. (J. O. A.)

321

THRONDHJEM, or TronpasEm (DRontHEIM), the third town of Norway, capital of the Throndhjem stift and of the South Throndhjem amt, is pleasantly situated on the southern shore of the Throndhjem fjord, at the mouth of the Nid, 348 miles by rail to the north of Christiania, in 63° 25’ 52” N. lat. and 10° 33’ 19” E. long. In front of the town is the islet of Munkholm, formerly a monastery and now a fortress; on the high ground to the east is the small stronghold of Christiansten. The houses of Throndhjem,

principally of wood, are substan- tial, spacious, and well lighted ; and the streets are wide, regular, and scrupulously clean. The principal building is the cathedral, partly dating from about 1090, but chiefly belonging to the 12th and 13th centuries (c. 1161-1248). Its extreme length was 325 feet and its extreme breadth 124 feet; but in the 14th, 15th, and 17th centuries it suffered greatly from repeated fires ; after the last of these the nave was completely abandoned, and soon became a heap of ruins. The building, which still ranks as the finest ecclesiastical edifice in Norway, and is the place of coronation of the Norwegian sovereigns, is now undergoing extensive but judicious restoration. The workmanship of its eastern windows and of the marble or steatite columns of the choir is specially noteworthy. Throndhjem possesses three churches in all, and among its other public buildings may be mentioned the residences of the stiftsamtmand and the bishop, the grammar school, the real school, the head office of the Bank of Norway, the deaf and dumb institute, the hospital, and the theatre. It is the seat of the royal Norwegian scientific society, in connexion with which are an excellent library and a good zoological and anti- quarian museum. Throndhjem, which has steamboat com- munication with Christiania, Hamburg, and Hull, and is connected with Sweden by the Meraker Railway (63 miles), carries on an extensive trade in copper (from the Roros mines), timber, oil, and dried and salted fish ; the industries include shipbuilding, sawmilling, distilling, tanning, rope-making, and ribbon-making. The popula- tion in 1875 was 22,152; in 1885 it was estimated at

24,000.

Throndhjem, originally Nidaros, was founded by Olaf Tryggvason, who built a royal residence and a church here in 996. It was made an archbishopric in 1152. The city attained its highest development about the latter half of the 13th century, by which time it had become an important pilgrimage centre and had as many as fifteen churches. It has sustained frequent sieges, as well as devastating conflagrations. Its importance declined about the time of the Reformation, when it ceased to be a resort of pil- grims. At the beginning of the present century its inhabitants numbered only 8882.

THRUSH (A. S. prysce, Icel. préstr, Norw. Trast, O. H. Germ. Drosce, whence the modern German Drossel, to be compared with the analogous English form THRostTLE,? now almost obsolete, both being apparently diminutives), the name that in England seems to have been common to two species of birds, the first now generally distinguished as the Song-Thrush, but known in many districts as the Mavis,? the second called the Mistletoe-Thrush, but having many other local designations, of which more presently.

The former of these is one of the finest songsters in Europe, but. it is almost everywhere so common that its merits in this respect. are often disregarded, and not unfrequently its melody, when noticed, is ascribed to the prince of feathered vocalists, the NIGHTINGALE (vol. xvii. p. 498). The Song-Thrush is too well known to need description, for in the spring and summer there is hardly a field, a copse, or a garden that is not the resort of a pair or more; and the brown-backed bird with its spotted breast,

1 For many interesting facts connected with the words “Thrush” and “ Throstle” which cannot be entered upon here, the reader should consult Prof. Skeat’s Htymological Dictionary.

2 Cognate with the French Jfauvis, though that is nowadays almost restricted to the REDWING (vol. xx. p. 818). Its diminutive is Mauviette, the modern table-name of the Skylark, and perhaps Mavis was in English originally the table-name of the Thrush,

o22

hopping over the grass for a few yards, then pausing to deteet the movement of a worm, aud vigorously seizing the same a moment after, is one of the most familiar sights. Hardly less well known is the singular nest built by this bird—a deep eup, lined with a thin but stiff eoating of fragments of rotten wood ingeniously spread, and plastered so as to present a smooth interior—in whieh its sea-green eggs spotted with blaek are laid, An early breeder, it builds nest after nest during the season, and there ean be few birds more prolifie. Its ravages on ripening fruits, especially strawberries and gooseberries, exeite the enmity of the imprudent gardener who leaves his erops unproteeted by nets, but he would do well to stay the hand of revenge, for no bird ean or does destroy so many snails, as is testified to the enrious observer on inspcetion of the stones that it seleets against whieh to dash its captures,—stoncs that are besmeared with the slime of the vietims and bestrewn with the fragments of their shattered shells. Nearly all the young Thrushes reared in the British Islands—and this expression includes the storm-swept isles of the Outer Hebrides, though not

those of Shetland—seem to cmigrate as soon as they are fit to journey, and at a later period they are followed by most of their parents, so that many parts of the kingdom are absolutely bereft of this speeies from October to the end of January. On the continent of Europe the autumnal influx of the birds bred in the North is regarded with much interest, as has been already stated (Brrps, vol. iii. p. 765), for they are easily ensnared and justly esteemed for the table, while their numbers make their appearanee in eertain districts a matter of great importanee.

The seeond specics to which the name applies is distinguished as the Mistletoe-Thrush, or, by eorrupt abbreviation, the Missel- Thrush.! It is known also in many districts as the ‘‘ Storm-eoek,” from its habit of singing in squally weather that silences almost all other birds, and ‘‘Holm- (¢.e., Holly-) Thrush,” while the harsh eries it utters when angry or alarmed have given it other loeal names, as *‘ Sereeeh,” ‘‘Shrite,” and ‘‘ Skrike,” all traeeable to the Anglo-Saxon Scric.? This is a larger speeies than the last, of paler tints, and eonspieuous in flight by the white patches on its outer tail-feathers. Of bold disposition, and fearless of the sleety storms of spring, as of predatory birds, the eock will take his stand on a tall tree, ‘like an enchanter ealling up the gale ” (as Knapp happily wrote), and thence with loud voiee proelaim in wild and diseontinuous notes the fervour of his love for his mate ; nor does that love eease when the breeding-season is past, since this species is one of those that appear to pair for life, and even when, later in the year, it gathers in small floeks, husband and wife may be seen in elose company. In defenee of nest and offspring, too, few birds are more resolute, and the Daw, Pie, or Jay that approaehcs with an ill intent speedily reeeives treatment that eauses a rapid retreat, while even the marauding eat finds the precinets of the ‘‘ master of the eoppiee” (Pen y llwyn), as the Welsh name this Thrush, unsuitable for its stealthy operations. The connexion of this bird with the mistletoe, whieh is as old as the days of Aristotle, is no figment, as some have tried to maintain. Not only is it exeecdingly fond of the luscious viseid berries, but it seems to be almost the only bird that will touch them. Of other British Thrushes, the FIELDFARE (vol. ix. p. 142), Repwrne (vol. xx. p. 818), and the Blaekbird and Ring-OvuseEt (vol. xviii. p. 75) have been before notieed in these pages, as has been (under the first of those headings) the so-ealled ‘‘ Robin” of North America.

The Thrushes have been generally considered to form a distinct Family, Z'urdidx, which is placed by some taxo- nomers the highest in rank among birds. An attempt has already been made (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. pp. 30, 48) to point out the fallacy of this view, and space is here wanting to dwell longer on the matter. This is the more to be regretted, for, though many modern systematists will admit the close connexion of the Turdidz and some of the so-called Family Sylvizdx or WARBLERS (q.v.), the abolition or modification of the latter, by wholly or par- tially merging it in the former, has not yet been satis- factorily effected, and Mr Seebohm, in his portion of the British Museum Catalogue of Birds (v. p. 1), being com-

1 There is no doubt of the bird taking its name from the plant

pelled by the conditions previously laid down by Mr Sharpe (op. ct, iv. pp. 6, 7) to unite them, protests against doing so. His own assignment of the Subfamily Turdine is into 11 genera, of which, however, 6 only would be commonly called Thrushes, and it must be borne in mind that in establishing these he regards coloration as the most valid character. They are Geocichla with 40 species, Zurdus with 48, Merula with 52, Mimocichla with 3, Catharus with 12, and Jfonticola with 10. These last, well known as Rock-Thrushes, make a very near approach to the NIGHTINGALE (vol. xvii. p. 498), REpsTartT (vol. xx. p. 317), and WHEATEAR (q.v.). (A. N.) THUCYDIDES. Thucydides was the greatest historian of antiquity, and, if not the greatest that ever lived, as some have deemed him, at least the historian whose work is the most wonderful, when it is viewed relatively to the age in which he did it. The most important facts which we know about him are those which he has told us himself. It matters very little, fortunately, that the biographical materials are scanty. For posterity, his life is represented by his life's labour, the MZistory of the Pelo- ponnesian War; and the biographical facts are of interest chiefly as aids to the appreciation of that history. He was probably born in or about 471 B.c.

Gellius, who says that in 431 Hellanicus ‘‘ seems to have been” sixty-five years of age, Herodotus fifty-three, and Thucydides forty (oct. Att., 15, 23). The authority for this statement was Pamphila, a compiler of biographical and historical notices, who lived in the reign of Nero. She must have had access to Greek sources of the 4th century B.c.; and her precision—though qualified, in the version of Gellius, by the word “seems ”—would warrant the supposition that she had taken some pains to secure accuracy. Further, the date which she assigns is in good accord with an inference fairly deducible from the language of Thucydides himself, viz., that in 431 he had already reached the full maturity of his powers. Kriiger, indeed, would place his birth earlier than 471, and Ullrich later, but for reasons, in each case, which can scarcely outweigh the ancient authority.

The parentage of Thucydides was suchas to place him Parent- in a singularly favourable position for the great work to 26°

which he afterwards devoted his life. His father Olorus, a citizen of Athens, belonged to a family which derived wealth and influence from the possession of gold mines at Scaptesyle, on the Thracian coast opposite Thasos, and was a relative of his elder namesake, the Thracian prince whose daughter Hegesipyle married the great Miltiades, so that Cimon, son of Miltiades, was a cousin, perhaps first cousin, once removed, of Thucydides. It was in the vault of the Cimonian family at Athens, and near the remains of Cimon’s sister Elpinice, that Plutarch saw the grave of Thucydides, Thus the fortune of birth secured three signal advantages to the future historian: he was rich ; he had two homes—one at Athens, the other in Thrace,—no small aid to a comprehensive study of the conditions under which the Peloponnesian War was waged ; and his family connexions were likely to bring him from his early years into personal intercourse with the men who were shaping the history of his time.

The only definite Date of ‘ testimony on the subject is contained in a passage of Aulus Pirth.

Mistletoe (Viscum album), about the spelling of which there can be po uncertainty—A.S. Misteltan, the final sylable originally signifying

twig,” and surviving in the modern ‘‘tine,” as of a fork or of a deer’s antler.

The development of Athens during the forty years The years from 471 to 431 was, in itself, the best education which 471-431 such a mind as that of Thucydides could have received. **

7 It seems quite possible that the word Surikr (vol. xxi. p 845), though now commonly accepted as the equivalent, in an ornithological sense, of Lantus, may have been originally applied to the Mistletoe- Thrush, In several of the Anglo-Saxon Vocabularies datiug from the 8th to the 11th century, as printed by Thomas Wright, the word Scric, which can be hardly anything else than the early form of '* Shrike," is glossed Turdus.

In the first two decades of his life the expansion and con- solidation of Athenian power was proceeding; between his twentieth and fortieth year the inner resources of the city were being applied to the embellishment and ennoble- ment of Athenian life. As Cimon had been the principal agent in the former period, so Pericles was the central

of surprise or complaint, that the History tells us nothing | simply because they did not belong to his subject. His of the literature, the art, or the social life under whose in- | work was intended to be "a possession for ever." He fluences its author had grown up. The Funeral Oration | could conceive a day when Sparta should be desolate, contains, indeed, his general testimony to the value and | and when only ruins of Athens should remain. But his ner the charm of those influences. There we have the very | imagination never projected itself into a time when the feof essence of the Athenian spirit condensed into a few preg- | whole fabric of Hellenic civilization should have perished. thens- nant sentences, which show how thoroughly the writer was | Could his forecast have extended to an age when men of imbued with that spirit, and how profoundly he appreci- | "barbarian" races and distant climes would be painfully ated its various manifestations. But he leaves us to | endeavouring to reconstruct a picture of that civilization, supply all examples and details for ourselves. Beyond a | —when his own narrative would need the help of side- passing reference to public " festivals," and to " beauti- | lights which seemed to him wholly unnecessary, —then, ful surroundings in private life," he makes no attempt | assuredly, he would have added all that such readers to define those "recreations for the spirit" which the | could require. But he would not have done this in the

Athenian genius had provided in such abundance. No | manner of Herodotus, by free indulgence in digression; writer of any age, perhaps, has rendered a more impressive | rather he would have gathered up the social and intel- tribute to the power of the best art than is implied in | lectual phenomena of his day in a compact and systematic the terse phrase of Thucydides, when, speaking of the | introduction, specially designed for the non-Hellenic reader. works which the Athenian daily saw around him, he The biography which bears the name of Marcellinus declares that ‘the daily delight of them banishes gloom ” | states that Thucydides was the disciple of Anaxagoras in Thucy- (dv Kal’ jpepav 7H répys 76 AuTypdv exdyooe). But it is | philosophy and of Antiphon in rhetoric. Such statements dides and not to Thucydides that we owe any knowledge of the | were often founded on nothing more than a desire to 42tiphon. particular forms in which that art was embodied. He | associate distinguished names, and to represent an eminent alludes to the newly-built Parthenon only as containing | man as having profited by the best instruction in each the treasury ; to the statue of Athene Parthenos which it | kind which his contemporaries could afford. In this case enshrined, only on account of the gold which, at extreme | there is no evidence to confirm the tradition. But it may need, could be detached from the image ; to the Propyleea | be observed that Thucydides and Antiphon at least belong and other buildings with which Athens had been adorned | to the same rhetorical school, and represent the same under Pericles, only as works which had reduced the | early stage of Attic prose. Both writers use words of an surplus of funds available for the war. Among the illus- | antique or decidedly poetical cast ; both point verbal con- trious contemporaries whose very existence would be | trasts by insisting on the precise difference between terms unknown from his pages are the dramatists Alschylus, | of similar import; and both use metaphors somewhat Sophocles, Euripides, Aristophanes ; the architect Ictinus; | bolder than were congenial to Greek prose in its riper the sculptor Phidias; the physician Hippocrates; the | age. The differences, on the other hand, between the philosophers Anaxagoras and Socrates. If Thucydides | style of Thucydides and that of Antiphon arise chiefly had mentioned Sophocles as a general in the Samian War, | from two general causes. First, Antiphon wrote for it may be doubted whether he would have noticed the | hearers, Thucydides for readers ; the latter, consequently, circumstance that Sophocles also wrote dramas, unless it | can use a degree of condensation,

and a freedom in the had been for the purpose of distinguishing him from a | arrangement of words, which would have been hardly namesake. And, had he lived to carry his story down to | possible for the former. Again, the thought of Thucy- the debate in the Athenian ecclesia, after the battle of | dides is often more complex than any which Antiphon Arginus, we may conjecture that Socrates, if named at | undertook to interpret ; and the greater intricacy of the all, would have been barely mentioned as the one prytanis | historian's style exhibits the endeavour to express each out of fifty who resisted an unconstitutional act,—with | thought.) Few things in the history of literary prose are Style of some expression, perhaps, of praise, but without any fuller | more interesting than to watch that vigorous mind in its Thucy- characterization. We think of the countless occasions | struggle to mould a language of magnificent but im- #4 which Herodotus, if he had dealt with this period, would | mature capabilities. The obscurity with which Thucy- have found for invaluable digressions on men and manners, | dides has sometimes been reproached often arises from the on letters and art ; we feel the severity of the loss which | very clearness with which a complex idea is present to the reticence of Thucydides has caused to us; and we | his mind, and his strenuous effort to present it in its might almost. be tempted to ask whether the more genial, | entirety, when the strong consciousness of logical cohe- if laxer, method of Herodotus does not indeed correspond | rence will make him heedless of grammatical regularity. better with a liberal conception of the historian's office. | He never sacrifices the thought to the language, but he No one can do full justice to Thucydides, or appreciate | will sometimes sacrifice the language to the thought. the true completeness of his work, who has not faced this | A student of Thucydides may always be consoled by the question, and found the answer to it. It would be a | reflexion that he is not engaged in unravelling a mere hasty judgment which inferred from the omissions of the | rhetorical tangle. Every light on the sense will be a light History that its author's interests were exclusively polit- | on the words ; and, when, as is not seldom the case, Thucy- ical. Thucydides was not writing the history of a period. | dides comes victoriously out of this struggle of thought Limit His subject was an event —the Peloponnesian War,—a war, | and language, having achieved perfect expression of his an as he believed, of unequalled importance, alike in its | meaning in a sufficiently lucid form, then his style rises sf _ direct results and in its political significance for all time. | into an intellectual brilliancy—

thoroughly manly, and also History, To his task, thus defined, he brought an intense concentra- | penetrated with intense fecling—which nothing in Greek

PReUeyY pI pests

figure of the latter. A consciousness of such periods may be traced in the passage of the Funeral Oration where Pericles refers, first, to the acquisition of empire by the preceding generation, and then to the improvement of that inheritance by his own contemporaries (ii. 36. 5). It is anatural subject of regret, though it is not a just cause

tion of all his faculties. He worked with a constant desire to make each successive incident of the war as clear as

323

possible. ‘To take only two instances: ‘there is nothing in literature more graphic than his description of the plague at Athens, or than the whole narrative of the Sicilian expedition. But the same temper made him resolute in excluding irrelevant topics. The social life of the time, the literature and the art, find no place in his picture

prose literature surpasses. 1 See Jebb’s Attic Orators, vol. i. p. 35.

324 TH UC Y Diets

His The History shows not only a thorough insight into the —Thucydides was an exile from Athens. It is not im- ne of relation political ideas of Pericles, but also a sympathy with him, | probable that the charge brought against him was that of Fie to public snd an admiration for his character, which indicate per- | treason (xpodocia), for which the penalty was death, and ““™ a sonal friendship. If, before 431, Thucydides had wished to | that he avoided this penalty by remaining in banish- take a prominent part in the public life of Athens, every- | ment. A special psephism is said to have been required thing was in his favour. But there is no trace of his | before Thucydides could return in 404, which would have having done so; and it is possible that his opportunities | been regular if a capital sentence had been

on record in this respect were modified by the necessity of frequent against him, but not so if he had been merely under visits to Thrace, where the management of such an | sentence of exile. Cleon is said to have been the prime important property as the gold mines must have claimed | mover in his condemnation ; and this is likely enough. the occasional presence of the proprietor. The manner in | Eucles was probably punished also. Grote was the first which he refers to his personal influence in that region is modern writer to state the reasons for thinking that such as to suggest that he had sometimes resided there | Thucydides may have been really guilty of culpable 430. (iv. 105.1). He was at Athens in the spring of 430, when | negligence on this occasion, and that his punishment— The the plague broke out. If his account of the symptoms which had usually been viewed as the vindictive act of plague. hag not enabled physicians to agree on a diagnosis of the | a reckless democracy—may have been well deserved. malady, it is at least singularly full and vivid, He had Everything turns on the question why he was at Thasos himself been attacked by the plague; and, as he briefly | just then, and not at Eion. No one disputes that, after adds, “he had seen others suffer.” The tenor of his | the summons from Eucles, he did all that was possible. narrative would warrant the inference that he had been | It is true that the facts of the situation, so far as we one of a few who were active in ministering to the sufferers know them, strongly suggest that he ought to have been in that fearful time when religion and morality lost all | at Eion, and do not disclose any reason for his being at control over the despairing population of Athens—when | Thasos. But it is only fair to remember, in a case of this all the ordinary decencies of life were set at nought, and | kind, that there may have been other facts which we do when even the nearest relatives failed in the duties of | not know. There issome presumptive evidence of careless- humanity towards the dying. ness ; but we can hardly say more than that. The absence 424, The turning-point in the life of Thucydides came in | of Thucydides from the neighbourhood of Amphipolis at the winter of the year 424. He was then forty-seven (if | that precise juncture may have had some better excuse his birth has been rightly placed in 471), and for the | than now appears. first time he is found holding an official position. He was From 423 to 404 the home of Thucydides was on 423-404, one of two generals entrusted with the command of the | his property in Thrace, but much of his time appears to Travels. regions towards Thrace (ra éxt @pdxys), a phrase which | have

been spent in travel. He visited the countries of denotes the whole Thracian seaboard from Macedonia east- | the Peloponnesian allies,—recommended to them by his ward to the vicinity of the Thracian Chersonese, though | quality as an exile from Athens; and he thus enjoyed often used with more special reference to the Chalcidic | the rare advantage of contemplating the great war from a peninsula. One reason why Thucydides had been chosen | point of view opposite to that at which he had previously for the post was the local influence which he possessed | been placed. He speaks of the increased leisure which his among the people of the Thracian seaboard, through his | banishment secured to his study of events. He refers family connexions and his ownership of the gold mines. partly, doubtless, to detachment from Athenian politics, His colleague in the command was Eucles. About the | partly, also, we may suppose, to the opportunity of visit- end of November 424 Eucles was in the city of Amphi- | ing places signalized by recent events, and of examining polis, on the river Strymon. That city was not merely their topography in the light of such information as he more important to Athens than any other place in the | could collect on the spot. The local knowledge which is region,—it was the stronghold of Athenian power in the | often apparent in his Sicilian books may have been north. To guard it with all possible vigilance was a | acquired at this period. The banishment of Thucydides matter of peculiar urgency at that moment. The ablest | was the most fortunate event that could have occurred for of Spartan leaders, Brasidas, was then in Thrace with a | him and for us, when it enabled him, in this way, to look Peloponnesian army,—not, indeed, close to Amphipolis, | at his subject all round. If it is always hard for an but still within a distance which imposed special caution | historian to be impartial, it is especially so for the historian on Athenian officers. He was in the Chalcidic peninsula, | of a great war in which his own country has been one of where he had already gained rapid success ; and part of | the combatants. The mind of Thucydides was naturally the population between that peninsula and Amphipolis | judicial, and his impartiality—which seems almost super- was already known to be disaffected to Athens. Under | human by contrast with Xenophon’s Hellenica—was in circumstances so suggestive of possible danger, we might | some degree a result of temperament. But it cannot be have expected that Thucydides, who had seven ships of | doubted that the evenness with which he holds the scales war with him, would have been near his colleague Eucles, | was greatly

assisted by the experience which, during these and ready to co-operate with him ata moment’s notice. | years of exile, must have been familiar to him— that of It appears, however, that, with his ships, he was at the | hearing the views and aimsof the Peloponnesians set forth island of Thasos, several miles distant from the Thracian | by themselves, and of estimating their merits otherwise coast. Brasidas, making a forced march from the Chal- | than would have been easy for an observer in a hostile cidic peninsula, suddenly appeared before Amphipolis. | camp. Eucles sent in all haste for Thucydides, who arrived with His own words make it clear that he returned to Athens, 404. his ships from Thasos just in time to beat off the enemy | at least for a time, in 404. Classen supposes that his Return to from Eion at the mouth of the Strymon, but not in time | return took place in the autumn of that year, about six Athens. Fall of to save Amphipolis. Only a few hours before, it had | months after Athens had surrendered to Lysander, and oo capitulated to Brasidas, who had offered exceptionally | while the Thirty were still in power. Finding that the

favourable terms. The profound vexation and dismay felt at Athens found expression in the punishment of the commander who seemed primarily responsible for so grave a disaster. For the next twenty years—z.e., till 404

rule of the oligarchy was becoming more and more violent, Thucydides again left Athens, and retired to his property in Thrace, where he lived till his death, working at his History. The preponderance of testimony certainly goes

Thue CY DIDES

to show that he died in Thrace, and by violence. It would seem that, when he wrote chapter 116 of his third book, he was ignorant of an eruption of Etna which took place in 396. There is some reason then, for believing

O25

Thucydides has subjected his materials to the most searching Dis- scrutiny. The ruling principle of his work has been strict adher- tinctive ence to carefully verified facts. “As to the deeds done in the war, aim of I have not

thought myself at liberty to record them on hearsay Thucy- from the first informant or on arbitrary conjecture. My account dides,

Death: that he did not survive his seventy-fifth year. According | rests either on personal knowledge or on the closest possible scrutiny before +o ancient tradition, he was killed by robbers. His relics ae Se eae ee by others. The process a ee was 396 : 1a: ; : 1, | laborions, because conflicting accounts were given those who B.C. (2). ae brought to Athens, and laid ae the vault of Cimon's had witnessed the several events, as pantielitey amare or memory family, where Plutarch saw their resting-place. The abrupt || saeced them:" ness with which the History breaks off agrees with the A period of at least twenty years must have elapsed between the Hero- story of a sudden death. The historian's daughter is said dae at Hite Eerie aera ee ang ee ere the dotus * ; istory of Thucydides received its present form. ere can be no and ue have saved the unfinished work, and to have placed " doubt that Thucydides knew the History of Herodotus, and that Thucy- in the hands of an editor. This editor, according to one | in some places he alludes to it. The diligence and the honesty of dides, account, was Xenophon, to whom Diogenes Laertius assigns | Herodotus are alike beyond question, and would, we may be sure, the credit of having '" brought the work into reputation, | have been fully recognized by Thucydides. The work of Herodotus when he might have suppressed it? The tradition is | WS distinct in kind from that of the Ionian chroniclers, and was Aoubeeal, th 3 see ly i of an immeasurably higher order. While they dealt, in a bold however, very doubtiul. In its origin, 1t may Rave been | fashion, with the annals of separate cities or peoples, Herodotus merely a guess, suggested by a feeling that no one then | set the first example of multifarious knowledge subordinated to the living could more appropriately have discharged the office execution of a great historical plan, and also showed for the first of literary executor than the writer who, in his /edlenica, time that a prose history could have literary charm. But Thucy- c i" aie dides doubtless thought of Herodotus as having certain traits in continued the narrative. common with the Ionian chroniclers, and as being liable, so far, to Con- At the outset of the History Thucydides has indicated his general | the same criticism. One such trait would be the inadequate sift- ception eonception of his work, and has stated the principles which governed | ing of evidence; another, the mixture of a fabulous element with of the its composition. His

purpose had been formed at the very begin- | historical fact; and another, perhaps, the occasional aiming at History. ning of the war, in the conviction that it would prove more im- | rhetorical effect. Of this last trait the chief instances would be portant than any event of which Greeks had record. The leading | those imaginary dialognes or speeches with which Herodotus some- belligerents, Athens and Sparta, were both in the highest condition | times enlivens his narrative. This brings us to an important topic, of effective equipment. The whole Hellenic world—including | —the purpose with which Thucydides himsclf has admitted speeches Greek settlements outside of Greece proper—was divided into two | into his History, and the manner in which they have becn com- parties, either actively helping one of the two combatants or medi- | posed. tating such action. Nor was the movement confined within even The speeches constitute between a fourth and a fifth part of the The the widest limits of Hellas; the ‘“‘barbarian” world also was | History. If they were eliminatcd, an admirable narrative would speeches. affected by it,—the non-Hellenic populations of Thrace, Macedonia, | indeed remain, with a few comments, usually brief, on the more Be Sicily, and, finally, the Persian kingdom itself. The aim | striking characters and events. But we should lose all the most Per- of Thucydides was to preserve an accurate record of this war, not | vivid light on the inner workings of the Greek political mind, on manent only in view of the intrinsic interest and importance of the facts, | the motives of the actors, and the arguments which they used,— interest but also in order that these facts might be permanent sources of | in a word, on the whole play of contemporary feeling and opinion. of the oes teaching to posterity. His hope was, as he says, that his | To the speeches is due in no small measure the imperishable war, istory would be found profitable by ‘‘those who desire an exact | intellectual interest of the History, since it is chiefly by the knowledge of the past as a key to the future, which in all prob- | speeches that the facts of the Peloponnesian War are so lit up with ability will repeat or resemble the past. The work is meant to be a | keen thought as to become illustrations of general laws, and to possession for ever, not the rhetorical triumph of an hour.” As | acquire a permanent suggestiveness for the student of politics. this context shows, the oft-quoted phrase, ‘a possession for ever,” When Herodotus made his persons hold conversations or deliver had, in its author’s meaning, a more definite import than any mere | speeches, he was following the precedent of epic poetry; his tone

anticipation of abiding fame for his History. It referred to the | is usually colloquial rather than rhetorical; he is merely making permanent value of the lessons which his History contained. | thought and motive vivid in the way natural to a simple age. Thucydides stands alone among the men of his own days, and has | Thucydides is the real founder of the tradition by which historians no superior of any age, in the width of mental grasp which could | were so long held to be warranted in introducing set speeches of seize the general significance of particular events. The political | their own composition. His own account of his practice is given education of mankind began in Greece, and in the time of Thucy- | in the following words. ‘‘As to the speeches made on the eve Their dides their political life was still young. Thucydides knew only | of the war, or in its course, I have found it difficult to retain a language. the small city-commonwealth on the one hand, and on the other | memory of the precise words which I had heard spoken ; and so the vast barbaric kingdom; and yet, as has been well said of him, | it was with those who brought me reports. But I have made the ‘there is hardly a problem in the science of government which | persons say what it seemed to me most opportune for them to say the statesman will not find, if not solved, at any rate handled, in | in view of each situation; at the same time I have adhered as the pages of this universal master.’ closely as possible to the general sense of what was actually said.”

Such being the spirit in which he approached his task, it is | So far as the language of the speeches is concerned, then, Thucy- interesting to inquire what were the points which he himself con- | dides plainly avows that it is mainly or wholly his own. As a sidered to be distinctive in his method of executing it. His Greek | general rule, there is little attempt to mark different styles. The predecessors in the recording of events had been, he conceived, of | case of Pericles, whom Thucydides mnst have repeatedly heard, is

The epic two classes. First, there were the epic poets, with Homer at their | probably an exception ; the Thucydidean speeches of Pericles offer poets. head, whose characteristic tendency, in the eyes of Thucydides, is | several examples of that bold imagery which Aristotle and Plutarch to exaggerate the greatness or splendour of things past—as, for | agree in ascribing to him, while the Funeral Oration, especially, instance, conceding the historical character of the Trojan war, he | has a certain majesty of rhythm, a certain

union of impetuous supposes the strength of the Greek fleet to be overstated in the | movement with lofty grandeur, which the historian has given to Iliad. Secondly, there were the Ionian prose writers whom he | no other speaker. Such strongly marked characteristics as the The calls “chroniclers” (Aoyoypdgor). These writers are directly known | curt bluntness of the Spartan ephor Stheneledas, or the insolent prose to us only by meagre fragments; but Dionysius of Halicarnassus | vehemence of Alcibiades, are also indicated. But the dramatic chroni- has described their general characteristics in a manner which serve: | truth of the speeches generally resides in the matter, not in the Their clers. to illustrate the differences indicated by Thucydides between their | form. In regard to those speeches which were delivered at Athens matter.

work and his own. Their general object was to diffuse a know- ledge of legends preserved by oral tradition, and of written docu- ments—usually lists of officials or genealogies—preserved in public archives; aud they published their materials as they found them, without any attempt at sifting fact from fable. Thucydides de- scribes their work by the word guy7:0éva1, but his own by tuyypaperv, —the difference between the terms answering to that between com- pilation of a somewhat mechanical kind and historical composition in a higher sense. The vice of the “*chroniclers,” in his view, is that they cared only for popularity, and took no pains to make their narratives trustworthy. In contrast with these predecessors,

Sra EEnTnEvU nn nea

1 Freeman, Historical Essays, 2d ser., iii.

before his banishment in 424,—and seven such speeches are contained in the History,—Thucydides could rely either on his own recollection or on the sources accessible to a resident citizen. In these cases there is good reason to believe that he has repro- duced the substance of what was actually said. In other cases he had to trust to more or less imperfect reports of the ‘‘ general sense”; and in some instances, no doubt, the speech represents simply his own conception of what it would have been ‘‘most opportune” to say. The most evident of such instances occur in the addresses of leaders to their troops. The historian’s aim in

these military harangues—which are usually short—is to bring The out the points of a strategical situation; a modern writer would military have attained the object by comments prefixed or subjoined to speeches.

326

his account of the battle. The comparative indifference of Thucy- dides to dramatic verisimilitude in these military orations is curi- ously shown by the fact that the speech of the gencral on the one side is sometimes as distinetly a reply to the speech of the general on the other as if they had been delivered in debate. We may be sure, however, that, wherever Thucydides had any authentic elue to the actual tenor of a speech, he preferred to follow that Voltaire's clue rather than to draw on his own invention. Voltaire has criticism. described the introduction of set speeches as ''a sort of oratorical falsehood, which the historian used to allow himself in old times." The strongest characteristic of Thueydides is his devotion to truth, —his laborious persistence in separating fact from fiction; and it is natural to ask why he adopted the form of set speeches, with the measure of fiction which it involved, instead of simply stating, in his own person, the arguments and opinions which he conceived to have been prevalent. The question must be viewed from the standpoint of a Greek in the 5th century B.c. Epie poetry had then for inany generations exercised a powerful influence over the Greek mind. Homer had accustomed Greeks to look for two ele- ments in any eomplete expression of human energy,—first, an account of a man's deeds, then an image of his mind in the report of his words. The Homeric heroes are exhibited both in action and in speech. Further, the contemporary readers of Thucydides were men habituated to a civic life in which public speech played an all-important part. Every adult citizen of a Greek democracy was a member of the assembly which debated and decided great issues. The law-courts, the festivals, the drama, the market-place itsclf, ministered to the Greek love of animated deseription. Toa Greek of that age a written history of political events would have seemed strangely insipid if specch ''in the first person" had been absent from it, especially if it did not offer some mirror of those debates which were inseparably associated with the central intcr- ests and the decisive moments of political life. In making historical persons say what they might have said, Thucydides confined that oratorical licence to the purpose which

is its best justification : with him it is strictly dramatic, an aid to the complete presentment of action, by the vivid expression of ideas and arguments which were really current at the time. Among later historians who continued the praetice, Polybius, Sallust, and Tacitus most resemble Thneydides in this particular ; while in the Byzantine historians, as in some moderns who followed classical precedent, the speeches were usually mere occasions for rhetorical display. Botta's History of Italy from 1780 to 1814 affords one of the latest examples of the practice, which was peculiarly suited to the Italian genius.

The present division of the History into eight books is one whieh might well have proceeded from the author himself, as being a natural and convenient disposition of the contents. The first book, after a general introduction, sets forth the causes of the Peloponnesian War. The first nine years of the war are contained in the second, third, and fourth books,—thrce years in each. The fifth book contains the tenth year, followed by the interval of the ‘‘insecure peace.” The Sicilian expedition fills the sixth and seventh books. The cighth book opens that last chapter of the struggle which is known as the ‘‘Decelean” or “*Jonian” War, and breaks off abruptly—in the middle of a sen- tence, indeed—in the year 411. The words in which Grote bids farewell, at that point, to Thucydides well express what every careful student must feel. “To pass from Thucydides to the Hellenica of Xenophon is a descent truly mournful; and yet, when we look at Greciah history as a whole, we have great reason to rejoice that even so inferior a work as the latter has reached us. The historical purposes and conceptions of Thucydides, as set forth by himself in his preface, are exalted and philosophical to a degree altogether wonderful, when we consider that he had no pre-existing models before him from which to derive them. And the eight books of his work (in spite of the unfinished condition of the last) are not unworthy of these large promises, either in spirit or in execution.”’

The prineipal reason against believing that the division into eight books was made by Thucydides himself is the fact that a different division, into thirteen books, was also current in antiquity, as appears from Marcellinus (§ 58). It is very improbable—indeed hardly conceivable—that this should have been the case if the eight-book division had come down from the hand of the author. We may infer, then, that the division of the work into eight

books was introduced at Alexandria,—perhaps in the 3d or 2d century B.c. That division was already familiar to the grammarians of the Augustan age. Dionysius of Halicarnassus, who recoguizes it, has also another mode of indicating portions of the work, viz., by stichometria, or the number of lines which they contained. Thus, in the MS. which he used, the first 87 chapters of book i. con- tained about 2000 lines (equivalent to about 1700 lines in Bekker's stereotyped 8vo text).

Ullrich has maintained with much acuteness that Thucydides composed the first three books and about half of book iv. in the years 421-413, and the rest of the work after 404. His general

The Greek view.

The eight books.

Origin of that division.

Order of com- position.

TH U—

as

ground is the existence in i—iv. of passages which seem to imply ignorance of later events. Classen has fully examined the evidence, and, as a result, has arrived at the following conelusion. It is possible that a first rough draft of the History, down to 413, may have been sketehed by Thucydides before 405. But the whole History, from the first book onwards, was worked up into its present form only after 404. This view is confirmed by some passages, found even in the earliest books, which imply that the writer already knew the latest incidents, or the final issue, of the war. We have seen that, after 404, Thucydides may have enjoyed some six or seven years of leisure. Several peculiarities of expres- sion or statement in book viii. suggest that it had not yet received the author's final revision at the time when death broke off the work. The absenee of speeches from the eighth book has also been remarked. But it should be observed that much of the eighth book is occupied with negotiations, either clandestine or indecisive,

or both. Its narrative hardly presents any moment which required such dramatic emphasis as the speeches usually impart. The mere misrepresentations by which Alcibiades and Chalcideus prevailed on the Chians to revolt certainly did not claim such treatinent.

The division of the war by summers and winters (xara @épos xa) Mode of xetuava)-—the end of the winter being considered as the end of the reckoning year—is perhaps the only one which Thucydides himself used, for time. there is no indication that he made any division of the History into books. His ‘‘summer” includes spring and autumn, and extends, generally speaking, from March or the beginning of April to the end of October. His ‘‘winter”—November to February inclusive—means practically the period during which military operations, by land and sea, are wholly or partly suspended. When he speaks of “summer” and “ winter” as answering respect- ively to “half” the year (v. 20. 3), the phrase is not to be pressed: it means inerely that he divides his year into these two parts. The mode of reekoning is essentially a rough one, and is not to be viewed as if the commencement of summer or of winter could be precisely fixed to constant dates. For chronology, besides the festivals, he uses the Athenian list of archons, the Spartan list of ephors, and the Argive list of priestesses of Hera.

There is no reference to the History of Thucydides in the extant Greek writers of the 4th century B.c. ; but Lucian has preserved a tradition of the enthusiasm with which it was studied by Demo- sthenes. The great orator is said to have copied it out eight times, or even to have learnt it by heart. It is at least beyond doubt that the study of Thucydides contributed a very powerful influence to the style of Demosthenes, though that influence rather passed into the spirit of his oratory than showed itself in any marked resemblances of form. The Alexandrian critics acknowledged Thucydides as a great master of Attic. Sallust, Cornelius Nepos, Cicero, and Quintilian are among the Roman writers whose admira- tion for him ean be traced in their work, or has been expressly recorded. The most elaborate ancient criticism on the diction and composition of Thucydides is contained in three essays by Dionysius of Halicarnassus.

Among the best MSS. of Thucydides, the Codex Vaticanus 126 (11th cent.) re- MSS,, &c, presents a reeension made Jn the Alexandrian or Roman age. In the first six books the number of passages in which the Vatieanus alone has preserved a true reading is eomparatively small; in book vii. it is somewhat larger; in book viii, it is so large that here the Vaticanus, as compared with the other MSS., aequires the eharaeter of a revisedtext. Other important MSS, are the Palatinus 252 (11th cent.); the Casselanus (1252 A.p.); the Augustanus Monacensis 430 (1301 a.p.). A collation, in books i. ii., of two Cambridge MSS. of the 15th eentury (Ny. 8. 18, Kx. 5. 19) has been published by Shilleto. Several Parisian MSS. (H.C. A. F.), and a Venetian MSS. (V.) eollated by Arnold, also deserve mention. The Aldine edition was published in 1502, It was formerly supposed that there had been two Juntine editions. Shilleto, in the ‘‘ Notice” prefixed to book i., first pointed out that the only Juntine edition was that of 1526, and that the belief in an earlier Juntine, of 1506, arose merely from the accidental omission of the word vicestmo in the Latin version of the imprint.

Of reeent editions, the most generally useful is Classen’s, in the Weidmann series (Berlin, 1862-78); each book ean be obtained separately. Arnold’s edition (1848-51) eontains much that is still valuable. For books i. and ii. Shilleto’s edition (1872-76) furnishes a eommentary whieh, though not full, deals admirably with many difficult points. Among other important editions, it is enough to name those of Duker, Bekker, Goeller, Poppo, and Kriiger. Bétant’s lexicon to Thucydides (2 vols., Geneva, 1843) is wellexecuted. Jowett’s translation (Oxford, 1883) is supplemented by a volume of notes. Dale’s version (Bohn) also deserves mention for its fidelity, as Crawley’s (London, 1876) for its vigour. Hellenica (London, 1880) contains an essay on ‘‘ The Speeehes of Thueydides,” pp. 266-323, which has been translated into German. The best elue to Thucydidean biblio- grapby is in Engelmann’s Scriptores Grect, pp. 748 sq., 8th ed., 1880. (lt. C. J.)

THUGS. That the Sanskrit root sthag (Pali, thak), “to cover,” “to conceal,” was mainly applied to fraudu- lent concealment, appears from the noun sthaga, “a cheat,” which has retained this signification in the modern vernaculars, in all of which it has assumed the form thag (commonly written thug), with a specific meaning. The Thugs were a well-organized

confederacy of professional assassins, who in gangs of from 10 to 200 travelled in various guises through India, wormed themselves into the confidence of wayfarers of the wealthier class, and, when a favourable opportunity occurred, strangled them by throw-

ing a handkerchief or noose round their necks, and then plundered and buried them. All this was done according to certain ancient and rigidly prescribed forms and after the performance of special religious rites, in which the consecration of the pick-axe and the sacrifice of sugar formed a prominent part. From their using the noose as an instrument of murder they were also frequently called Phdnsigérs, or " noose-operators." Though they them- selves trace their origin to seven Mohammedan tribes, Hindus appear to have been associated with them at an early period ; at any rate, their religious creed and prac- tices as staunch worshippers of Devi (K4li, Durga), the Hindu goddess of destruction, had certainly no flavour of Islam in them. Assassination for gain was with them a religious duty, and was considered a holy and honourable profession. They had, in fact, no idea of doing wrong, and their moral feelings did not come into play. The will of the goddess by whose command and in whose honour they followed their calling was revealed to them through a very complicated system of omens. In obedience to these they often travelled hundreds of miles in company with, or in the wake of, their intended victims before a safe opportunity presented itself for executing their design ; and, when the deed was done, rites were performed in honour of that tutelary deity, and a goodly portion of the spoil was set apart for her. The fraternity possessed also a jargon of their own (Ramisi), as well as certain signs by which its members recognized each other in the remotest parts of India. Even those who from age or infirmities could no longer take an active part in the operations con- tinued to aid the cause as watchers, spies, or dressers of food. It was owing to their thorough organization, the secrecy and security with which they went to work, but chiefly to the religious garb in which they shrouded their murders, that they could, unmolested by Hindu or Moham- medan rulers, recognized as a regular profession and pay- ing taxes as such, continue for centuries to practise their craft. Both the fractions into which they were divided by the Nerbudda river laid claim to antiquity : while the northern,

however, did not trace their origin farther back than the period of the early Mohammedan kings of Delhi, the southern fraction not only claimed an earlier and purer descent, but adhered also with greater strictness to the rules of their profession.

The earliest authenticated mention of the Thugs is found in the following passage of Zidu-d din Barnt's History of Firoz Shah (written about 1356): "In the reign of that sultan," that is, about 1290, "some Thugs were taken in Delhi, and a man belonging to that frater- nity was the means of about a thousand being captured. But not one of these did the sultan have killed. He gave orders for them to be put into boats and to be conveyed into the lower country, to the neighbourhood of Lakhnautt, where they were to be set free. The Thugs would thus have to dwell about Lakhnaut{, and would not trouble the neighbourhood of Delhi any more" (Sir H. M. Elliot's History of India, vol. iii. p. 141). The first European travellers who speak of them without mentioning their name are Thevenot (1665) and Fryer (1673). Though instances of Thuggee had been known to the English rulers in India for many years, and sporadic efforts had been made by them towards the extinction of the gangs, it was not till Lord W. Bentinck (1828-35) took vigorous steps in this matter that the system was gradually un- masked, and finally all but stamped out. His chief agent, Captain (afterwards Sir William) Sleeman, with several competent assistants, and the co-operation of a number of native states, succeeded in completely grappling with the evil, so that up to October 1835 no fewer than 1562

a, HU 327

hanged and 986 transported or imprisoned for life. It is true that, according to the Thuggee and Dacoity Report for 1879, the number of registered Punjabi and Hindus- tani Thugs then still amounted to 344. But all of these had already been registered as such before 1852. It may, therefore, fairly be assumed that none are alive now, and that the whole fraternity may be considered as extinct. Full particulars concerning the system of Thuggee are given by Dr Sherwood, ''On the Murderers called Phansigars," and J. Shake- spear, " Observations regarding Bradheks and Thegs"' (both treat- ises in vol. xiii., 1820, of the Asiatic Researches); [W. N. Sleeman,] Ramaseeana, or a Vocabulary of the Language used by the Thugs, with an

Introduction and Appendix, Calcutta, 1836 ; the Edinburgh Review for Jan. 1837 ; [E. Thornton,] Jllustrations of the History and Practices of the ‘Thugs, London, 1837; Meadows Taylor, Confessions of a Thug, London, 1839 ; Major Sleeman, Report on the Depredations committed by the Thug Gangs, Calcutta, 1840; J. Hutton, Popular Account of the Thugs and Dacotts, London, 1857 ; Yule and Burnell, Glossary of Anglo-Indian Colloquial Words and Phrases, London, 1886, p. 696 sq. (R. R.) THUGUT, Franz Marta von (1734-1818), foreign minister of Austria, was born of humble parentage at Linz in 1734, placed in the Government school of Oriental studies in 1752, and sent to Constantinople as an interpreter in 1757. At Constantinople he rose from post to post in the embassy, until in 1771 he became internuncius or ambassador. In 1776, after the war between Russia and Turkey, he obtained from the latter power the cession of the province of Bukowina to Austria. After thus crown- ing his long service in the East and gaining the confidence of Maria Theresa, he was sent by her without the know- ledge of her son, the emperor Joseph, to Berlin, to avert by a peaceful settlement with Frederick the Great the threatened Bavarian war. In 1790 he was employed in the negotiations of Sistova, and his next mission was to Paris, where he entered into close relations with Mirabeau as the friend of Marie Antoinette. On the invasion of France by the allied armics in 1792, Thugut was sent to the scene of operations. It is well known that Kaunitz, the veteran minister of Austria, condemned the terms of the alliance with Prussia, as securing to Prussia the annexation of a great part of Poland, while only holding out to Austria an uncertain prospect of acquiring its equivalent in Bavaria. Thugut, a politician of the same school, viewed the new alliance with even greater hatred. After the failure of the campaign of 1792 he formed the deliberate opinion that persons around the duke of Bruns- wick had been bribed by the French, and that the retreat had been ordered in consequence. A few months later the anticipations of Kaunitz were realized. Prussia seized western Poland, while Austria remained as far as ever from gaining Bavaria. The emperor Francis now dismissed the ministers responsible for the Prussian alliance, and called Thugut to power. From this critical moment the alliance was doomed, and the allied commanders thwarted rather than assisted one another’s operations on the eastern frontier of France. On the other hand, Thugut drew nearer to Russia, and negotiated at St Petersburg for the seizure of Venice by Austria. With England he desired to stand on a good footing ; but, while Pitt’s object was

the overthrow of the revolutionary Government, Thugut's was simply the acquisition of territory for Austria. This dis- crepancy of aim led to results exasperating to the English ministry, such as the fall of Toulon, to which Thugut neglected to send the troops which he had promised. The evacuation of Belgium in 1794, usually attributed to Thugut's treachery, was, however, due to the incapacity or intrigues of others. In 1795, after the withdrawal of Prussia from the coalition, Thugut obtained financial help from England, gained from Russia a large share of Poland in the last partition, and prepared to carry on the war

Thugs had been committed, of which number 382 were | against France with the utmost energy. The campaign

of the archduke Charles in 1796 drove the French from the east of the Rhine, and Bonaparte, who had conquered northern Italy up to Mantua, narrowly escaped destruc- tion before this fortress. But for the genius of the French commander and the wretched character of the Austrian generals and officers, the immense efforts made by Thugut at this time would have turned the tide of the war. Defeat after defeat seemed to make no impression upon his " world-desolating obstinacy "; and, even when Bonaparte had advanced to within eighty miles of Vienna, it is stated that the empress had to throw herself at her husband's feet when in conference with his minister, in order to overcome the resistance of the latter to an armistice. The subsequent peace of Campo Formio was hotly condemned by Thugut, who tendered his resignation. Then followed the congress of Rastadt and the murder of the French envoys, long attributed, but without any real ground, to Thugut himself. War was renewed ; the French were driven out of Italy by Austrian armies as- sisted by Suwaroff ; and it was determined that the allies should conquer Switzerland, and so invade France where the frontier is most open. Thugut, now at the height of his power, and far more anxious to recover Belgium than to overthrow the republic, took the fatal step of withdraw- ing a great part of the Austrian forces from Switzerland at the very moment when the Russians were entering it. The result was the destruction of the Russians by Masséna and the total failure of the campaign, followed by the se- cession of Russia from the coalition.

Still full of designs for annexation in Italy, Thugut continued the war with the help of England. On the very day when he renewed his engagements with England the news arrived of the battle of Marengo, which at one blow made an end of all that Austria had won in Italy in the preceding year. Nothing daunted, Thugut continued, during the armistice which followed, his preparation for the struggle with Moreau in the valley of the Danube; and, if he could have inspired his master with his own resolute spirit, the result of the war might have been different. But, while Thugut was actually receiving the British subsidies, the emperor, without the knowledge of his minister, surrend- ered the fortresses of Ulm and Ingolstadt to Moreau, in return for an extension of the armistice. Thugut's passionate indignation on learning of this miserable act is impressively described in Lord Minto's despatches from Vienna. He withdrew from office ; but Lord Minto's pro- tests compelled the emperor again to place in his hands the direction of affairs, which he held until the battle of Hohenlinden made all further resistance impossible. He was then, in deference to French influence, banished from Vienna, and never resumed office. In his retirement he was occasionally consulted, as after the battle of Wagram in 1809, when he recommended the emperor to make peace at any cost, stating that the existence of the Austrian monarchy was at stake and that the dissolution of Napoleon's empire was not far off. After the overthrow of Napoleon he returned to the capital, where he died May 29, 1818. Thugut possessed many of the qualities of a great man,—indomitable courage, calmness in danger, devotion to public interests, enormous industry; but all this was spoilt by the persistent disregard of obligations towards allies in the greedy pursuit of Austria's own aggrandizement, and by the intriguing spirit inseparable from this policy. The materials for forming a fair estimate of Thugut's conduct of affairs from 1793 to 1801 have but recently been given to the world. Of his private life next to nothing is known.

THULE was the name given by Greek and Roman geographers to a land situated to the north of Britain, which they believed to be the most northerly portion of

Europe, or indeed of the known world. ‘The first writer who mentioned the name was Pytheas of Massilia, whose statements concerning it have been already given under the heading Pyruzas. But it is impossible for us to deter- mine with certainty what those statements, which have only been transmitted to us at second or third hand, really were, and still more so what was their real signification. It is almost certain that Pytheas did not himself profess

‘to have visited Thule, but had only vaguely heard of its

existence, as a land of unknown extent, situated, accord- ing to the information he had received, six days’ voyage to the north of Britain. This account was adopted by Eratosthenes (though rejected by Polybius and Strabo), and accordingly this unknown land became a cardinal point in the systems of many ancient geographers, as the northern limit of the known world. Nothing more was learnt concerning it until the Romans under Agricola (about 84 a.p.) accomplished the circumnavigation of the northern point of Britain, and not only visited, but according to Tacitus subdued, the Orcades or Orkney Islands. On this occasion, the historian tells us, they caught sight also of Thule,! which in this instance could only mean the group of the Shetland Islands. No further account of this mysterious land is found in any ancient author, except vague statements, derived from Pytheas, but mostly in an inaccurate and distorted form, concern- ing its position and the astronomical phenomena resulting from this cause. It is probable that what Pytheas really reported was that at the summer solstice the days were twenty-four hours in length, and conversely at the winter solstice the nights were of equal duration, a statement which would indicate the notion of its position in about 66° N. lat., or under what we now call the Arctic Circle. The skill of Pytheas as an astronomer would have been quite sufficient to lead him to the conclusion that this would be the case at some point in proceeding northwards, and the rapid changes in this respect that would be reported to him by any navigators that had really followed the shores of Britain to any considerable extent in that direction would confirm him in the correctness of his views. He had, too, a very exaggerated notion of the extent of Britain (see PyrHEas), and hence he would be led to place an island which was six days’ voyage to the north of it much nearer to the Arctic Circle than its true position. The statement of Pytheas on this point

appears to have obtained almost universal belief until the time of Marinus of Tyre and his successor Ptolemy, who were led—apparently from their knowledge that the group of islands to which the name of Thule had been applied by the Romans was really not very far distant from the Orcades—to bring down its position considerably more to the south, so that Ptolemy placcs the island of Thule, which he still regards as the most northerly point of Europe, in only 63° N. lat. Unfortunately this more reasonable view has been discarded by many modern writers, who have gone back to the statements of Pytheas concerning the length of the day, and have in consequence insisted upon placing Thule within the Arctic Circle, and have thus been led to identify it with Iceland. The improbability of such an hypothesis, when we consider the state of ancient naviga- tion, is in itself a sufficient refutation, and there appears no reason- able doubt that the Thule of Pytheas, like that of the Romans and of Ptolemy, was merely an exaggerated and somewhat erroneous conception of the large group of the Shetland Islands, of which the principal, called Mainland, is in fact so predominant that the whole may well have been considered as one large island rather than a scattered group like the Orkneys. If we might trust to the accuracy of Strabo's quotation (ii. 5, p. 114), that Pytheas called Thule ''the most northerly of the British Islands," this would be decisive on the point; but unfortunately the verbal accuracy of such references by ancient writers can seldom be relied on, and Strabo had evidently never seen Pytheas's original work. It appears, however, to be certain that Iceland was really visited by some Irish monks long before its discovery by the Northmen, and is described under the name of Thule by a writer named Dicuil, himself an Irish monk, who wrote in the first half of the

1 "Dispecta est et Thule," Tac., Agric., c. 10.

9th century, in such a manner as to leave no doubt that his state- ments really refer to that extensive but remote island. See Letronne, Recherches sur Dicuil, Paris, 1814.

THUMMEL, Morirz Aucust von (1738-1817), Ger- man writer in prose and verse, one of the imitators of Wieland (see vol. x. p. 541), was born May 27, 1738, in the neighbourhood of Leipsic, was educated at Rosslcben and the

university of Leipsic, and from 1761 till 1783 held various offices in the ducal court of Saxe-Coburg. He died at Coburg on October 26, 1817. -He wrote a comic prose epic, Wilhelmine, oder der vermdhlte Pedant (1764) ; Die Inoculation der Liebe (1771), a tale in verse ; Reise in die mittiglichen Provinzen von Frankreich (1791— 1805), a romance in 10 vols.; and Der heilige Kilian, oder das Liebespaar (1818). An edition of his works was published at Leipsic in 8 vols. in 1854-55.

THUNBERG, Cart Peter (1743-1828), an eminent traveller, and one of the most distinguished botanists of the school of Linneus, was born in 1743. He became a pupil of Linneus at the university of Upsala, where he graduated in medicine in 1770. Obtaining a travelling scholarship, he visited Holland, whence he embarked on a voyage of exploration to Java, in quest of vegetable treasures. He sailed as far as the Cape of Good Hope in 1771, and three years afterwards went to Japan, remain- ing five years, engaged in making collections of plants, and in observing the habits, manners, and language of the people. On his return in 1779 he visited England, and made the acquaintance of Sir Joseph Banks. In 1777 he was made demonstrator of botany at Upsala, and he succeeded Linneus as professor of botany in 1784. Thunberg published in 1784 his Flora Japonica; in 1788 he began to publish his travels. He completed his Prodromus Plantarum in 1800, in 1805 his Icones Plant- arum, and in 1813 his Flora Capensis, Thunberg pub- lished numerous memoirs in the Transactions of many Swedish and foreign scientific societies, of sixty-six of which he was an honorary member. He died in 1828.

THUNDERSTORM. All the more ordinary pheno- mena of thunderstorms had, about 1750, been conclusively

. traced to electrical charges and discharges (ELECTRICITY, vol. viii. p. 6), so that they could easily be reproduced on a small scale in the laboratory. To the article cited we therefore refer for their explanation. Some of the laws of relative frequency of thunderstorms, in different places at the same season or in the same place at different seasons, will be found in MutTsoroxoey (vol. xvi. p. 128). A discussion of the cause of thunder, and of the circum- stances which give rise to a crash, a roll, or a peal of thunder is given under Acoustics (vol. i. p. 107). In what follows, therefore, the

rarer phenomena of thunder- storms, and the possible sources of the atmospheric elec- tricity, will be the chief points treated.

There can be little doubt that atmospheric electricity, at least in the great developments which characterize a thunderstorm, is due in some way to water. LBefore a great thunderstorm the lower air is usually at an abnor- mally high temperature, and fully saturated with water vapour, so that it is in a thoroughly unstable condition. Immense cloud masses, often miles in vertical thickness, which produce almost midnight darkness by day in the region of the storm, and which appear, when seen from a distance, as if boiling upwards, are always a notable feature of great thunderstorms. These are usually accom- panied by torrents of rain, or by violent hail-showers. And it is commonly observed that each flash of lightning is followed, after a brief interval, by a sudden but temporary increase in the rate of rainfall. At what stage of its transformations the electrification is developed by water- substance is, as yet, only guessed at,—though it seems

most reasonable to conclude that it is anterior to the formation of cloud, ze, to the condensation of vapour. And, though the idea was at one time very generally held and still has many upholders, it seems unlikely to be the direct result of evaporation. For, were it due directly either to evaporation or to condensation, it is almost im- possible to doubt that proof would long since have been furnished by careful experiment, even if made on a scale so limited as that afforded by our laboratories. No trace of electrical effect has been found to attend the precipita- tion of moisture ; and the electrical effects, sometimes con- siderable, which have been found associated with evapora- tion have always been accompanied by relatively violent physical and mechanical actions which are not observed in conjunction with atmospheric electricity. It has been suggested by some authorities that the electricity of a thunderstorm is developed during the formation of hail, by others that it is due to the molecular actions which accompany the diminution of total surface when two or more drops of water coalesce into a single one, It has been ascribed to the friction of moist against dry air, and to the dust-particles which appear to be necessary for the condensation of vapour. Again, it has been suggested that it may be a mere phenomenon of

contact electricity, due to the impact of uncondensed vapour particles on particles of air. It is almost unnecessary to observe that, whatever hypothesis we adopt, some explanation must be given of two important points :—(1) What becomes of the electricity equal and opposite to that in each drop, which must be produced simultaneously with it? (2) By what means is the attraction between the drops and the recipient of the opposite charge of electricity overcome so that the drops may be enabled to part with their charge? It is to be presumed that gravity satisfies the second of these questions. As to the first, it seems to necessitate the presence of something besides water, in order that the electric separation may be commenced, and thus appears to be fatal to the capillary theory indicated above. Whatever be the true source of the charge, it is easy to see, by known properties of electricity, that even an exceedingly small charge on each vapour particle would lead to a very high potential as soon asa visible drop is formed, and that as a drop increases in size its potential is proportional to its surface. That drops of rain are often individually electrified to a very high potential is proved by the frequent occurrence of “luminous rain,” when the ground is feebly lit up by the multitude of tiny sparks given out by the drops as they come near it. The flakes of falling snow, also, are often strongly electrified, so that smart sparks have been drawn from an umbrella on which the snow was falling. But the law of electric repulsion shows us at once that, as soon as the drops in a cloud are sufficiently electrified, at least the greater part of their charge must pass to the boundary of the cloud. When this occurs, the nature of the further behaviour of the charge presents no difficulty. The reason for our singu- larly complete ignorance of the source of atmospheric electricity seems to lie in the fact that it can only be discovered by means of experiments made on a scale very much larger than is attainable with the ordinary resources of a laboratory. The difficulties will probably be easily overcome by the first nation which will go to the expense of providing the necessary means.

Numberless other explanations of the origin of thunder- storms have been suggested; but the more reasonable of these do little more than shift the difficulty, for they begin by assuming (without any hint as to its source) an elec- trification of the earth as a whole, or of the lower (some- times the upper) layers of the atmosphere. Induction, convection, é&c., are then supposed to effect the rest.

nu = 42

=

330

Another and much less reasonable class of explanations depends upon magneto-electricity. Some of these introduce the so-called "‘ unipolar" induction supposed to be due to the rotation of the earth, which behaves like a gigantic magnet. Of this nature is the suggestion of Edlund, which was recently crowned by the Academy of Sciences of Paris. That rapid variations in the earth’s magnetic elements, such as often occur on a large scale, as in a ‘magnetic storm," have at least a share in the production of the aurora is a perfectly reasonable and even plausible hypothesis, long ago brought forward by Balfour Stewart. But we have yet to seek the source of these variations.

The brightness of a flash of lightning is usually much underrated. It is true that it rarely gives even at night an illumination greater than that due to moonlight. But it must be remembered that Swan has proved that the impression of a flash on the eye depends upon the duration, being nearly proportional to it, and steadily increasing for about a tenth of a second. Now the duration of a light- ning-flash is (roughly speaking) only about one millionth of asecond. This is proved by the fact that the most rapidly rotating bodies appear to be absolutely steady when illu- minated by it. Hence, if it could be made to last for a tenth of a second, it would give near objects an illumina- tion one hundred thousand times more brilliant than that of moonlight. It must be remembered that the flash is not a mere line, but a column, of intensely heated air, driven outwards from the track of the discharge at a rate initially far greater than that of sound.

What is called "summer lightning" or " wild-fire" is sometimes a rather puzzling phenomenon. In the majority of cases it is merely the effect of a distant thunderstorm. It is also often due to a thunderstorm in the higher strata of the atmosphere overhead,—the reason why we hear no thunder being not so much the distance from the spectator as the fact that sounds generated in rarer air lose rapidly in intensity as they are propagated into denser air. But, besides these more common forms of the phenomenon,

there is certainly a form of sheet lightning which occurs, without either sound or cloud, often close to the spectator. The cause of this is not at all obvious.

But the most mysterious phenomenon is what goes by the name of “globe lightning” or “ fire-ball,” a pheno- menon lasting sometimes for several seconds, and therefore of a totally different character from that of any other form of lightning. The fire-ball is almost incomparably less brilliant than forked lightning, because, though it lasts long enough to give the full impression of its brightness, it is rarely brighter than iron in the state which we call “red-hot.” It is always spherical, often more than a foot in diameter, and appears to fall from a thunder-cloud by its Own gravity, sometimes rebounding after striking the ground. It usually bursts with a bright flash and a‘loud explosion, occasionally discharging flashes of lightning. No experimenter has yet succeeded in producing artificially anything resembling these natural and intensely charged Leyden jars.

The term “ thunderbolt,” which is nowadays rarely used except by poets (and by the penny-a-liners), preserves the old notion that something solid and intensely hot passed along the track of a lightning flash and buried itself in the ground. Two distinct classes of phenomena probably gave rise to this notion. When lightning strikes the ground it often bores a hole of considerable depth, which is found to be lined in its interior with vitrified sand. This presents no difficulty. But AERoxrrss (q.v.) are often found, in the holes which they have made, still intensely hot, in conse- quence of their rapid passage through the air. A hasty generalization seems to have connected these two entirely independent phenomena, and thus given rise to the notion

of the thunderbolt. The ancient notion that a lightning flash could occur ina clear sky is probably to be accounted for by the occasional appearance of these ultramundane visitors.

The sulphurous smell of lightning, which is vividly de- scribed in the Odyssey, is now known to be due to the formation of OZONE (¢.v.).

For the precautions necessary to prevent danger from a thunderstorm, see LIGHTNING CoNnDUCTOR.

A whole volume of Arago's collected works is devoted to thunder- storms, and many important observations are to be found in the writ- ings of M. D'Abbadie and other scientific travellers. (P. G. T.)

THUN-KHWA, or Tuongcwa, a district in the Pegu division of Burmah, lying between 17° 37' and 19° 28' N. lat., and between 95° 53' and 96° 53' E. long., with an area of 5413 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by Henzada, E. by Rangoon, 8. by the Bay of Bengal, and W. by Bassein district. The whole district is a large deltaic plain, divided by the numerous channels of the Irrawaddy into saucer-shaped islands, with deep depressions in the centre. The Irrawaddy traverses Thin-khwa from north to south, throwing off numerous branches until it falls into the Bay of Bengal. Geologically, Thin-khwa is composed of "older alluvial clay," differing from that of the Gangetic basin in being less rich in lime.

The population of Thun-khwa in 1881 was returned at 284,063 (males 150,131, females 133,932); Hindus numbered 723, Moham- medans 1650, Christians 6894, and Buddhists 274,287. The largest towns in the district are Yandoon and Pantanaw, with populations (1881) of 12,673 and 6174 respectively. The land is much less fertile than that of the neighbouring districts. In 1885-86 the area under cultivation was 349,259 acres,-and the cultivable area 1,262,374 acres. The principal crops are rice, fruits, vegetables, and sugar-cane. The total revenue realized in the year 1885-86 amounted to £194,737, of which the land contributed £66,590. Thun-khwa was constituted a district in 1875, and its history previous to that date is identical with that of Henzada, to which adminis- trative division it originally belonged. During the first Burmese war no resistance was offered to the British in the district as it at present exists cxcept at the town of Donabyu. At the time of the second war Donabyu was undefended, but, after the occupation of Prome, Myat Htun, an ex-thigyi of a small circle, sueceeded in collecting a body of men and defied the British. Early in January 1858 the enemy were driven out of Donabyu, but on penetrating into the interior the British were forced to retire. In asubsequent

engagement the British were driven back; but the enemy were eventually dispersed and their works captured.

THURGAU, or Tuureovia, a canton of Switzerland (ranking as seventeenth in the Confederation), takes its name from the river Thur. It is bounded on the N. by the Rhine, on the EK. by the Lake of Constance (the can- tonal frontier being so drawn as to leave the town of Con- stance to Baden), on the S. by a line running from Arbon on the lake west and south-west to Hornli, and on the W. by a line drawn from Hornli passing east of Winterthur and west of Frauenfeld to the Rhine, a little west of Diessen- hofen and opposite Schaffhausen. It is thus shaped like a triangle, of which the Hérnli (3274 feet, the highest point in the canton) is the apex, and comprises the middle basin of the Thur. Its totalareais 381:4 square miles, of which 322°6 (or 84°6 per cent.) is reckoned as " productive land," 69-8 being covered by forests, and 6°9 by vineyards. Of the "unproductive" portion no less than 50°5 square niiles consists of the cantonal share of the Lake of Con- stance. According to the census of 1880, the population amounted to 99,552 (females being in a majority of 1000), an increase of 6252 on the census of 1870; of these, 99,026 are German-speaking. In religion the inhabitants are divided, there being 71,821 Protestants to 27,123 Roman Catholics; the canton till 1815 was in the diocese of Constance, and since 1828 has been in the reconstructed diocese of Basel, though for some time after 1873 the Government would not recognize the authority of Bishop Lachat, in consequence of his support of the dogma of

infallibility at the Vatican council. The capital is Frauen- feld (5811 inhabitants), and Romanshorn (population 3647) is an important railway centre on the lake. The canton has many small villages, and the population is chiefly employed in agricultural pursuits, though cotton-spinning is rapidly increasing. The orchards are so splendid that Thurgau has been called "the garden of Helvetia." A network of well-made roads traverses it in every direc- tion.

The Thurgau originally took in all the country, roughly speaking, between the Reuss, the Lake of Lucerne, the Rhine, and the Lake of Constance; but many smaller districts (Ziirichgau, Toggenburg, Appenzell, St Gall) were

gradually carved out of it, and the county was reduced to about the size of the present canton when in 1264 it passed by the gift of the last count of Kyburg to his nephew Rudolph of Hapsburg, chosen emperor in 1273, In 1415 the count, Duke Frederick of Austria (a Hapsburg), was put under the ban of the empire by the emperor Sigismund for having aided Pope John XXIII. to escape from Constance, and the couuty was overrun, Sigismund in 1417 mortgaging to the city of Constance the appellate jurisdiction in all civil and criminal matters ("landgericht" and "blutbann") arising within the county, which he had declared to be forfeited in consequence of Frederick's conduct. In 1460 some of the Confederates, now becoming very eager for conquests, overran and seized the county. Winterthur was saved, but in 1461 Frederick's son, Duke Sigismund, had perforce to cede the county to the Confederates. Henceforth it was ruled as a ''subject dis- trict" by seven members of the League,—Bern, occupied in the west, not being admitted to a share in the government till 1712, after one of the wars of religion. It was only in 1499 that the Con- federation (then consisting of ten members) obtained from Constance her supreme jurisdiction, through the mediation of the duke of Milan, but there were still forty-two minor jurisdictions belonging to various lords, spiritual and temporal, which went on till 1798 and greatly limited the power of the Confederates. Thurgau had hoped, but in vain, to be admitted in 1499 a full member of the Confederation.

At the time of the Reformation many of the inhabitants became Protestants, and bitter quarrels ensued between the Protestant and Catholic (the latter having a large majority) members of the Confederation who had rights over Thurgau, with regard to the toleration of the new doctrines in the ''subject districts" Thurgau. By the first peace of Kappel (1529) the majority in each ''eommune" was to settle the religion of that ''commune," but by the second (1531, after Zwingli's death) both religions were to be allowed side by side in each "commune." Thurgau thus became a ''canton of parity," as it is to this day. Its rulers, however, continued to watch each other very closely, and Kilian Kesselring, one of the chief military commanders in Thurgau, was in 1633, on suspicion of having connived at the advance of the Swedes through Thurgau on Constance, seized by the Catholic cantons and severely punished. In1798 Thurgau became free, and was one of the nineteen cantons of the Helvetic republic, being formally received (like the other ''subject lands") as a full member of the Swiss Confederation in 1803

by the Act of Mediation. It was one of the very first cantons to revise, in 1830, after the July revolution in Paris, its constitution in a very liberal sense, and in 1831 proposed a revision of the federal pact of 1815. This failed, but the new federal constitutions of 1848 (of which one of the two drafters was Kern of Thurgau) and 1874 were approved by very large majorities. In 1849 the cantonal constitution was revised and the veto introduced, by which the people might reject a bill passed by the cantonal assembly. Finally, in 1869, the existing constitution was drawn up, by which the ‘‘initiative” (or right of 2500 electors to compel the cantonal assembly to take any subject into consideration) and the ‘‘ obligatory referendum” (by which all laws passed by the cantonal assembly, and all financial resolutions involving a capital expenditure of 50,000 francs or an annual one of 10,000, must be submitted to a popular vote) were introduced. The cantonal government consists of a legislative assembly (now of ninety-seven members, one to every 250 electors) and an executive council of five members, both elected directly by the people; 5000 electors can at any time call for a popular vote on the question of the dismissal of either one or the other. Further, to show the very democratic character of the constitution, it may be added that members of both houses of the federal assembly are in Thurgau elected direct by the people. The “communes” in Thurgau are of no less than eleven or twelve varieties. The division of the lands, &c., of the old ‘ burgher communes” between them and the new communes, consisting of all residents (with whom political power rests), was carried out (1872) in all of the 214 communes; but there are still thirty-eight guilds or corporations with special rights over certain forests, &c.

The best history of the canton is that by J. A. Pupikofer, of which a second and very much enlarged edition is now (1887) being published.

|

such as ©

dol

THURII, or Taurivm, a city of Magna Grecia on the Gulf of Tarentum, near the site of the older SyBaris (¢.v.), but farther inland. It owed its origin to an attempt made in 452 B.c. by Sybarite exiles and their descendants to

repeople their old home. The new settlement was crushed by Crotona, but the Athenians lent aid to the fugitives, and in 446, or rather in 443, Pericles sent out to Thurii a mixed body of colonists from various parts of Greece, among whom were Herodotusand the orator Lysias. The pretensions of the Sybarite colonists led to dissensions and ultimately to their expulsion ; peace was made with Crotona, and also, after a period of war, with Tarentum, and Thurii rose rapidly in power and drew settlers from all parts of Greece, especially from Peloponnesus, so that the tie to Athens was not always acknowledged. The oracle of Delphi determined that the city had no founder but Apollo, and in the Athenian war in Sicily Thurii was at first neutral, though it finally helped the Athenians. Thurii had a democratic constitution and good laws, and, though we hear little of its history till in 390 it received a severe defeat from the rising power of the Lucanians, many beautiful coins testify to the wealth and splendour of its days of prosperity. In the 4th century it continued to decline, and at length called in the help of the Romans against the Lucanians, and then in 282 against Tarentum. Thenceforward its position was dependent, and in the Second Punic War, after several vicissitudes, it was de- peopled and plundered by Hannibal (204). In 194 a Roman colony was founded, with Latin rights, known for a time as Copiz, but afterwards by the old name of Thurii. It continued to be a place of some importance, the situa- tion being favourable and the region fertile, and does not seem to have been wholly abandoned till the Middle Ages. Its site, near Terranova di Sibari, is marked by consider- able ruins of the Roman period (cf. Lenormant, in Academy, xvil. 73, and Barnabei, zbid., xvi. 55 sq.).

THURINGIA (Germ. Thiiringen), a territorial term without modern political significance, designates, strictly speaking, only that district in Upper Saxony that is bounded by the Werra, the Harz Mountains, the Saale, and the Thuringian Forest ; but in common parlance it is frequently used as equivalent to the Thuringian states, t.¢., the group of small duchies and principalities lying between Prussia, Hesse-Nassau, Bavaria, and the kingdom of Saxony. The name is derived, with great probability, from that of the Hermunduri, a branch of the great Suevic family ; and the ancient Thuringians, a heathen tribe first mentioned in the 5th century by Vegetius Renatus, are believed to be the descendants of that Teutonic people. The Thuringians seem at one time to have occupied territories stretching from

the Elbe not far from Hamburg to the Danube at Ratisbon ; but about 531 their empire was overthrown by the united Franks and Saxons. The north part of their lands fell to the Saxons, and was known for some time as the North Thuringian gau; the district to the south of the Thuringian Forest was called Franconia after its con- querors ; and the name Thuringia was restricted almost to the narrow limits to which it now properly applies. The advance of the Sorbs to the east bank of the Saale about the middle of the 7th century made the limitation still more exact. Thuringia remained under Frankish dominion, and various Frankish counts ruled in the different "gaus" into which it was divided. Christianity, if not introduced, was confirmed in this district by the British Boniface ; a

1 The Thuringian states are Saxe-Weimar-Eisenach, Saxe-Coburg- Gotha, Saxe-Meiningen, Saxe-Altenburg, Schwarzburg-Rudolstadt, Schwarzburg-Sondershausen, and the two principalities of Reuss, all of which are separately described. Besides these, the term Thuringia also, of course, includes the various ''exclaves" of Prussia, Saxony, Bavaria, and Bohemia which lie embedded among them.

bishopric was founded at Erfurt ; and under Charlemagne the Thuringian mark was the base of active operations against the heathen Sorbs. In 839 the title of duke of Thuringia (ducatus Toringube) appears ; but that of land-grave seems to have superseded it ; neither dignity implied sovereignty over the whole district. Otto the Illustrious, duke of Saxony (880), added Thuringia to his duchy, but the union was not permanent. About the beginning of the 12th century Louis the Springer, builder of the Wart- burg, rose to eminence among the Thuringian nobles ; and about 1130 his son, also Louis, was appointed land- grave by the emperor Lothair I. Thuringia now began to be a united land under one prince; and the landgraves, who acquired the Saxon palatinate on the fall of Henry the Lion of Saxony in 1180, rose to considerable power. The last landgrave of this line was Henry Raspe (1242-1247), brother and successor of Louis the Saint. His death was followed by a devastating war of succes- sion between his niece Sophia, duchess of Brabant, and Henry the Illustrious, margrave of Meissen (1221-1288), whose mother Jutta was a Thuringian princess. Peace was finally

established in 1263: Sophia received Hesse, and Henry took the rest of Thuringia, the general history of which thenceforth merged in that of Meissen, and later of Saxony, although it maintained its separate name. Thuringia was included in the administrative circle of Upper Saxony (see vol. xxi. p. 352, note 3). For its subsequent fate, and the rise of the present Thuringian states, see under Saxony (vol. xxi. pp. 353 sq.). *

The most striking natural feature of Thuringia is the Thuringian Forest (Thiringerwald), a range or system of hills, extending in an irregular line from the neighbourhood of Eisenach in the north- west to the Lobensteiner Kulm on the Bavarian frontier on the south-east, and forming the southern boundary of Thuringia, separating it from Franconia. On the south-east it is continued directly by the Frankenwald Mountains to the Fichtelgebirge, which is in immediate connexion with the Erzgebirge, while on the north-east it approaches the Harz Mountains, and thus takes its place in the great Sudetic chain of central Germany. The length of the Thuringian chain is 70 miles, and its breadth varies from 8 to 25 miles. It nowhere rises into peaks, and only a few of its rounded summits reach the height of 3000 feet; the successive hills melt into each other in gentle undulations, forming a continuous and easily traced comb, and only the north-west slopes are precipitous, and seamed with winding gorges. This mountain- range encloses many charming and romantic valleys and glens; the most prominent feature of its picturesque scenery is formed by the fine forests, chiefly of pines and firs, which clothe most of the hills. The north-west part of the system is the loftier and the more densely wooded, as well as the more beautiful; the highest sum- mits here are the Grosscr Beerberg (3225 fect), Schneekopf (3179), and the Inselberg (2957), all in the duchy of Gotha. ‘The south- east part of the Thuringian Forest is the more populous and in- dustrial; the chief summits are the Kieferle (2851 feet) at Stein-heid, the Blessberg (2834 feet) near Schalkau, the Wurzelberg (2746 feet) near Oelze, and the Wetzstein (2719) near Lehesten. The crest of the Thuringian Forest, from the Werra to the Saale, is traversed by the Reunsteig or Rainsteig, a broad path of unknown antiquity, though it is belicved to be referred to in a letter of Pope Gregory III. dated 738. The name means probably “ frontier- path” ; and the path marks in fact the boundary between Thuringia and Franconia. It may be also regarded as part

of the boundary- line between North and South Germany, for dialect, customs, local. names and costume are different on the two sides.

THURINGORUM LEX. See Santo Law.

THURLES, an ancient market-town of Ireland, in the county of Tipperary, and the seat of the Catholic arch- diocese of Cashel, is pleasantly situated on the Suir, and on the Great Southern and Western Railway, 46 miles east of Limerick, 29 west from Kilkenny, and 87 south- west of Dublin. The cathedral of St Patrick is a beau- tiful building, erected at a cost of £45,000. The town is the seat of other important Catholic establishments, including an Ursuline convent, in which is a large board- ing-school for young ladies; a Presentation convent ; St Patrick's Catholic college (1829) for ecclesiastical students,

where was held in 1850 the synod of Thurles, composed of all the Catholic bishops of Ireland ; and an establish- inent of Christian Brothers, who devote themselves to the instruction of boys on the Lancastrian method. The town has a considerable agricultural and retail trade. The population was 5008 in 1871, and 4850 in 1881.

Originally the town was called Durlas O'Fogarty. In the 10th century it was the scene of the defeat of the Irish by the Danes. A preceptory was founded here by the Knights Templars; who pos- sessed themselves of a castle erected early in the 18th century. A castle was subsequently erected by James Butler, first lord palatine of Tipperary, of which till recently a tower still remained.

THURLOW, Epwarp Tuurtow, Baron (1732-1806), was born at Bracon-Ash, in the county of Norfolk, in 1732. His father was a clergyman, and held successively the livings of Little Ashfield in Suffolk and of Stratton St Mary's in Norfolk. His mother Elizabeth was the daughter of Robert Smith of Ashfield. Thurlow received his early education at home. He was next placed under the care of Mr Brett at Scarning, where he remained for four years, and was then sent to the grammar school of Canterbury, where he was considered a bold refractory clever boy. In October 1748 Thurlow

entered Caius College, Cambridge, and speedily justified his school reputation. The dean of the college, upon the extent and accuracy of whose classical: acquirements grave suspicion rested, had directed him, as a punishment for sonie act of insubordination, to translate a chapter of the Spectator into Greek. Thurlow executed his task with care, and then gave it for revisal, not to the dean, but to the tutor of the college. When reprimanded for having thus infringed the college rules, Thurlow retorted that he had carried his exercise to one who could inform the dean whether or not he had obeyed his orders. The insult was too grave for rustication, and yet too slight to justify expulsion. Thurlow was therefore permitted to withdraw his name from the college books, and he left Cam- bridge without a degree (1751). He now took chambers, and began regularly to keep terms in the Inner Temple, which he had joined while still an undergraduate. He was for some time a pupil along with the poet Cowper in the office of Mr Chapman, an eminent solicitor in Lincoln's Inn. On 22d November 1754 Thurlow was called to the bar, and subsequently went on the western circuit —at first with little success. But the tide turned. In the case of Luke Robinson v. the Earl of Winchelsea (1758) Thurlow came into collision with Sir Fletcher Norton, then the terror of solicitors and the tyrant of the bar, and put down his arrogance with dignity and success. From this time his practice increased rapidly. In December 1761 he was made a king's counsel, through the influence of the duchess of Queensberry. In January 1762 he was elected a bencher of the Inner Temple. It now became necessary for him to take his side in politics, and, after repeated oscillations, and with some hesitancy, Thurlow threw himself into the ranks of the Tory party. In May 1768 he became member for Tamworth. In 1769 the Douglas Peerage case came on for hearing in the House of Lords, and Thurlow, who had drawn the pleadings some years before (Votes and Queries, 3d ser., iii. 122), led for the appellant in a speech of great ability and analytic power. In March 1770, as a recognition of his defence in the previous January of the expulsion of Wilkes, Thurlow was made solicitor-general on the resignation of Dunning, and in the following year (23d January 1771), after he had enhanced his reputation with the Government by attacking the rights of juries in cases of libel (Rex v. Miller, 20 State Trials, 870-896) and the liberty of the press (16 Parly. Hist., 1144), was raised to the attorney-generalship. Thurlow's public life was as factious as his youth had been

daring, His violent hatred of the Amer- ican colonists, and his extreme and imprudent assertion

that as attorney-general he might set aside by scire facias as forfeited every charter in America (debate on the American Prohibitory Bill, 18 P. H., 999); his speech in aggravation of punishment in the case of Horne Tooke (20 St. Tr., 777-783), when he argued that the prisoner ought to be pilloried, because imprisonment was no penalty to aman of sedentary habits and a fine would be paid by seditious.subscription ; and his consistent opposition to all interference with the slave trade,—are characteristic of the man. In 1778 Thurlow became lord chancellor and Baron Thurlow of Ashfield (June), and took his seat in the House of Lords, where he soon acquired an almost dicta- torial power. He resolutely opposed the economical and constitutional reforms proposed by Burke and Dunning. Under Rockingham he still clung to the chancellorship, while conducting himself like a leader of the opposition. To the short-lived ministry of Shelburne he gave a con- sistent support. Under the coalition of Fox and North (April to December 1783) the great seal was placed in

commission, and Lord Loughborough was made first com-

missioner. But Thurlow, acting as the king's adviser, and in accordance with his wishes, harassed the new ministry, and ultimately secured the rejection of Fox's India Bill (24 P. H., 226). The coalition was at once dissolved. Pitt accepted office, and Thurlow again became lord chancellor (December 23, 1783). At first he sup- ported the Government heartily, but soon his overbear- ing temper asserted itself. Imprudently relying on the friendship of the king, and actuated by scarcely disguised enmity to Pitt, Thurlow passed rapidly from occasional acts of hostility to secret disaffection, and finally to open revolt. He delivered himself strongly against a bill, intro- duced without his privity, for the restoration to the heirs of attainted owners of estates forfeited in the Jacobite rebellion of 1745. Partly to please the king and queen, partly from dislike to Burke, and partly perhaps from a real belief in the groundlessness of the accusation, he supported Warren Hastings on every occasion ' with indecorous violence." His negotiations with the Whigs during the discussion of the Regency Bill (1788-19th

February 1789) went beyond the limits of mere perverse coquetry, and were designed to secure his seat on the woolsack in the event of Fox being called to power. The climax was reached in 1792, when he virulently attacked Pitt's bill " to establish a sinking fund for the redemption of the national debt," not on account of the economic objections to which it was justly liable, but on the trivial ground that it was an unconstitutional attempt to bind future parliaments. The bill was carried, but only by a narrow majority, and Pitt, feeling that co-operation with such a colleague was impossible, insisted successfully on his dismissal (June 15, 1792). The ex-chancellor, who had a few days before (June 12) been created Baron Thurlow of Thurlow, with remainder to his brothers and their male descendants, now retired into private life, and, with the exception of a futile intrigue, under the auspices of the prince of Wales, for the formation of a ministry from which Pitt and Fox should be excluded, and in which the earl of Moira should be premier and Thurlow chancellor (1797), finally abandoned the hopes of office and the dictatorship which he had so long exercised in the House of Lords. In 1795 he opposed the Treason and Sedition Bills without success. In 1801 he spoke on behalf of Horne Tooke—now his friend—when a bill was introduced to render a priest in orders ineligible for a seat in the House of Commons. His last recorded appearance in the House of Lords was on May 4, 1802. He now spent his time between his villa at Dulwich and Brighton, Bognor, Scar- borough, and Bath. He died at Brighton on 12th Septem- ber 1806, and was buried in the Temple church. Thurlow

was never married, but left three natural daughters, for whom he made a handsome provision. The title descended to his nephew, son of the bishop of Durham.

Lord Thurlow was a master of a coarse caustic wit, which habitu- ally in his private and too frequently in his public life displayed itself in profanity. He was a good classical scholar and miade occasional translations in verse from Homer and Euripides. His judicial and his ecclesiastical patronage was wisely exercised; he was the patron of Dr Johnson and of Crabbe, and was the first to detect the great legal merits of Eldon. Thurlow's personal ap- pearance was striking. His dark complexion, harsh but regular features,

severe and dignified demeanour, piercing black eyes and bushy eyebrows, doubtless contributed to his professional and political eminence and provoked the sarcasm of Fox that he looked wiser than any man ever was. Yet he was far from being an impostor. By intense though irregular application he had _ac- quired a wide if not a profound knowledge of law. Clear-headed, self-confident, and fluent, able at once to reason temperately and to assert strongly, capable of grasping, rapidly assimilating, and forcibly reproducing minute and complicated details, he possessed all the qualities which command success. His speeches in the trial of the duchess of Kingston for bigamy (20 S. 7., 355-651) are singularly vigorous and effective, while his famous opening in the Douglas Peerage case and his argument for the crown in Campbell v. Hall (20 S. 7., 812-316) show that he might have rendered high service to the judicial literature of his country had he relied more upon his own industry and less upon the learning of Hargrave and Kenyon

See Lord Campbell's Lives of the Chancellors, vii. 153-338 ; Foss's Judges of England, viii, 374-385; Public Characters, 1798 ; Notes and Queries, 2d ser., iii. 283; 3d ser., iii. 122; Reports of his decisions by Brown, Dickens, and Vesey (Junior); Brougham's Statesmen of the Time of George ILI. (A. W. R.)

THURSO, a seaport, police burgh, and burgh of barony of Caithness, Scotland, is situated at the mouth of the Thurso, on the beautiful Thurso Bay, at the northern terminus of the Highland Railway, 21 miles north-west of Wick, and 367 north of Edinburgh by rail. The new town, regularly built with broad streets and good houses, is steadily increasing in population. In Macdonald Square, now laid out with ornamental walks, there is a statue of Sir John Srncuarr (q.v.). Along the sands a promenade 300 yards in length was formed in 1882. The town-hall (1870) embraces a court-room and rooms for the free public library and the museum, which contains the geological and botanical specimens of Robert Dick, the "Thurso baker," commemorated by Samuel Smiles, as well as a large collection of northern birds. In the neighbourhood are large quarries for Caithness flags, which are cut and dressed in the town. They constitute the principal export, but the trade of the port is hindered by the inconvenience of the harbour. There is, however, communication with the south and west, and with Orkney by

steamer from Scrabster pier, 3 miles to the north. To the east is Thurso Castle, the residence of the Ulbster branch of the Sinclairs. The population in 1871 was 3622 and in 1881 it was 4026.

Thurso was the centre of the Norse power on the mainland when at its height under Thorfinn (1014), and afterwards till the battle of Largs. Count Moddan, nephew of King Duncan, quartered his army for a time at Thurso, which he terms ‘‘the town of Caith- ness,” and was plentifully supplied by spoil till surprised and slain by Thorkel in 1040. In the time of Malcolm II. Ear] Erlend resided in the town. In 1683 it was created a burgh of barony, and was the seat of the sheriff courts of the county till they were removed to Wick in 1828.

THYME. The genus Zhymus (nat. ord. Labiatx) com- prises a number of fragrant aromatic undershrubs, with very small Jeaves and whorls of small lilac flowers in the axils of the leaves or at the ends of the branches. The common garden thyme, a native of the Mediterranean region, is Thymus vulgaris; the wild thyme of our banks is T. Serpyllum. Marjoram (Origanum) is also closely allied. All these plants are remarkable for their essential oil, to which their fragrance is due. From this oil is produced by distillation a substance known as thymol, analogous to camphor. It is homologous with phenol or carbolic acid, and may be used as a disinfectant and germicide.

o04

TIBBUS, or Tusus, a nomad race of North Africa, occupying the eastern section of the Sahara from about 12°, where they are conterminous with the Tuareg Berbers, to about 24° E. long., and from Fezzan southwards nearly to Lake Tchad, 25° to 15° N. lat. Their westernmost settle- ments are the oases of Agram, Kawar, and Jebddo, their northernmost the district of Qatrin within the Fezzan frontier, while south and south-east they merge gradually in the Negroid populations of Kanem, Bornu (Tchad basin), Wadai, and north-west Dar-Fur. But the heart of the nation is concentrated in the central region of Tibesti or Tu, whence they take their collective name of Tib-bu or Tu-bu, z.¢., “people of Tibesti or Tu.”4 There are two main divisions,—the northern Teda, more or less full-blood Tibbus, and the southern Dasa, more or less mixed or Negroid Tibbus. Somewhat more

distantly connected with the same family are the Baele of the eastern and south- eastern oases and the Zoghawa (Zaghwa) of Dar-Fur, making a total population of about 190,000, distributed

as follows :— Teda (Tibesti, Qatrin, Kawar, Agram, &c.) ...29,000 Dasa (Borku, parts of Kanem, Wadai, Ennedi,

SEM RTDMMN Br lati 5 «hd oa v

190,000

The Tibbus, who are not expressly meutioned under this name by any ancient or medieval writer, are usually identified with the Garamantes of Herodotus (iv. 183), whose capital was Garama (Edrisi's Germa) in Phazania (Fezzan), and of whom Ptolemy al- ready spoke doubtfully as Ethiopians (Negroes?): "Ovrwy 6é xal avrav 46n waddov Aldiérwy (i. 8). But Leo Africanus transfers them to the Berber connexion, whose fifth great division he deals with under the names of Gumeri (Garamantes?) and Bardei or Bardoa, that is, the Teda of the Bardai oasis, Tibesti.2 Lastly

Barth on linguistic grounds grouped them with the Kantri of

Bornu, who are undoubtedly Negroes; and since his time (1852-53) the Tibbus have been regarded 'by most ethnologists as a Negro or at least a Negroid people? Nachtigal, who has studied them more carefully than any modern observer, sees good reason to challenge this conclusion (op. cit., ch. vii.); and, although his own inferences are somewhat vague, he supplies sufficient evidence for a solution of this difficult ethnological problem. There can be no doubt that the Teda, or true Tibbu, probably identical with the Tedamansii, a branch of the Garamantes, placed by Ptolemy south of the Samamycii in Tripolitana,4 are physically a Hamitic, uot a Negro people, closely resembling thcir western Tuareg neighbours. They are a pure homogeneous race, who have for ages undergone no perceptible change in their rocky homes, and who are still distinguished by the regular features, long black ringletty hair, haughty bearing, and fierce expression common to so many of the Berber and other Hamitic peoples. middle size, they are finely proportioned in all their limbs, except the somewhat too small hands and feet, with lighter complexion than that of the southern Dasa, and no

trace of the flat nose, thick tumid lips, or other marked characteristics of the true Negro. ‘‘Their women are charming while still in the bloom of youth, unrivalled amongst their sisters of North Africa for their physical beauty, pliant and graceful figures” (Keane’s Reclus, xi. p. 429). But there has been a general displacement of the race southwards ; and, while only a few still linger in the northern Qatrin and Kufara districts, large numbers have since medixval times penetrated into the Kanem, Bornu, Wadai, and Dar-Fur regions of central Sudan. Here they have everywhere merged with the natives, so that in the Dasa, Kanembu, Kanuri, Baele, and Zoghawa groups the Tibbu

Ue iohe Kanem-bu=people of Kanem, bu being the plural personal postfix answering to the Bantu prefix ba, wa (Ba-Suto, Wa-Ganda, &c.), and to the be of Ful-be=Ful people or Fulahs from Pil. In Tedaga the root tu means “rock ”; hence Tu-bu= “‘ rock-dwellers,” as described by Herodotus and as explained in their Arab designation Reshddeh, from reshad =rock, hill.

2 See Vater, Af, ethridates, ii. p. 45 of Berlin ed. 1812, and Nachtigal, Séhara und Sudan, 1881, ii. p. 189.

3 “ Urspriinglich ein Negervolk,” (Kinleitung), Berlin, 1880,

The original inhabitants of the Kufara (Kufra) oasis in south Tripolitana were Teda, some of whom still survive in a small hamlet south of Jebel Nari. Since the beginning of the 18th century they

have been replaced elsewhere in Kufara by the Zwiya Arabs from the Leshkerreh oases,

Lepsius, Vubische Grammatik

Mostly of

TIB—TIB

race presents all the shades of transition between the true Negro and the true Hamite that are also found to prevail between the

blacks of western Sudan aud the Tuareg Berbers, aud between the Nubas and other eastern Sudan Negroes and the Hamitic Gallas, Somali, and Bejas.

The saine transitional stages are observed in the Tibbu forms of speech, which constitute a wide-spread linguistic family, whose most archaic and purest branch is the Tedaga of Tibesti (Nachtigal). Through the southern Dasaga the Tedaga merges in the more highly developed and more recent Kanem, Bornu (Kanuri), Ennedi (Baele), and Dar-Fur (Zoghawa) dialects, which, owing to the ab- sence of grammatical gender and some other structural features, are usually classed as Negro languages. But a Negro tongue could not have arisen among the Hamites of the Tibesti uplands, and the explanation of this linguistic difficulty is obviously the same as that of the physical puzzle. The Negro affinities of the southern members of the group have arisen through assimilation with the original and now partly displaced Negro idioms of central Sudan. There remains the final difficulty that Tedaga itself has absolutely nothing in common with the Berber or any other Hamitic tongue. If therefore it is neither Hamitic nor Negro, the only two stock languages recognized by Lepsius in Africa (op. cit., passim), how is it to be placed? First of all Lepsius's hasty generalization, wholly inconsistent as it is with the conditions occurring in other parts of the continent, must be unhesitatingly rejected. Room having thus been found for other linguistic families, the Tedaga of Tibesti may be readily explained as an independent evolution from a primeval Tibbu-Berber germ, analogous to other linguistic evolu- tions in other isolated or inaccessible highland regions, such as the Caucasus, the Pyrenees, and the Anahuac tableland. The comnon germ, essentially evanescent in its nature, has long since perished, or can no longer be detected, and the Tibbu and Berber languages stand side by side as now fundamentally distinct, while the two races still remain physically one. The Tibbus are therefore a Hamitic people, who in their secluded rocky homes have had time to evolve an independent form of speech, which southwards has become largely assimilated to the Sudanese Negro dialects.

Lying on the track of the great caravan route between Fezzan and Lake Tchad, the Tibbus have always been a predatory race, levying blackmail on the convoys passing through their territory, maintaining intertribal feuds,

and carrying on constant warfare with the surrounding Berber and Sudanese populations. This, combined with the severe struggle for existence in their inhospitable upland valleys, has rendered them harsh, greedy, and suspicious, —sentiments reflected in their hard features and stern expression. Till comparatively recent times all were pagans, whence the term Kufra (Kufara), ‘Land of the Unbeliever,” applied by the Arabs to the southern oases of Tripolitana. But for two or three centuries they have been zealous Mohammedans, and some have even lately been brought within the influence of the political Sentisiya sect (see TRipout, below). They are a frugal race, living mostly on goat’s milk, dates, berries, durrha, and the fruit of the dum-palm ; nevertheless they are of robust con- stitution and remarkably agile. They are also intelligent, crossing the wilderness by a sort of instinct quite unintel- ligible to the stranger, and in all ordinary transactions they display surprising tact and shrewdness. The tribal organization embraces dardat or headmen, maina or nobles, and the common folk, while the unwritten law of custom rules supreme over all classes. The women, who are orderly and industrious, are well treated, and the polygamy allowed by the law is little practised. But the vendetta is still a social institution. a HK.)

TIBER. See Iraty, vol. xiii. pp. 438-439.

TIBERIAS, now Tapariya, a city of Palestine, on the western shore of the Sea of Galilee or Lake of Tiberias, occupies a narrow strip of plain under a hill in a feverish but fertile situation. Recent estimates place the popula- tion at from 2000 to 3000,—about half the inhabitants being Jews, and many of the latter immigrants from Poland. The streets are indescribably filthy, and an Arab saying is that “the king of the fleas holds his court at Tiberias.” The walls of the town and the castle on the north were in great part ruined by an earthquake in 1837, when half the population perished. The most interesting building

is a very ancient synagogue by the lake, the lower story of which is said to have been unaffected by the earthquake. Outside the town are the plastered monuments (‘‘ whited sepulchres”) of R. Akiba and Maimonides. Half an hour to the south are the famous hot baths mentioned by Pliny (Z.N., v. 15

[71]). Josephus calls this place Emmaus, which has suggested an identification with Hammoth-dor (Josh. xxi. 32) or Hammon (1 Chron. vi. 76 [61]), names which perhaps point to the existence of thermal springs.

Tiberias was founded by Herod Antipas apparently not before 26 A.D.,! and so was quite a new place at the time of our Lord's min- istry in Galilee. And, though it became the al of Galilee, it was at first a purely Greek city, which accounts for its not appearing among the scenes of the Galilean ministry. It joined in the war of liberty, but yielded without resistance to Vespasian, and was restored by him to its master Agrippa, on whose death in 100 it fell directly under Roman rule. The place came to be a great seat of Jews and Jewish learning: it was the residence of R. Judah, the editor of the Mishnah ; and, though the schools of Palestine were ultimately overshadowed by those of Babylonia, the school of Tiberias was still famous in the time of Jerome. According to Epiphanius, the first Christian church was built by Constantine, and from this time we hear of bishops of Tiberias. The Arabs took Tiberias in 637; it was restored to Christendom by Tancred, but yielded to Saladin in 1187 after the battle of Hittin. It was again in Christian hands from 1240 to 1247. In the middle of the 18th century it was one of the fortresses of the renowned Sheikh Zahir, who for many years defied the Turkish power.

TIBERIUS (42 B.c.~~37 a.p.), emperor of Rome, whose full name was TrBER1IUs CLaupiIus NERo, was born on the Palatine Hill on 16th November 42 B.c. When he became a member of the imperial family, the court genealogists made him out to be one of the ancient patrician Claudii ; but the pedigree is at some points difficult to trace. His father, who bore the same name, was an officer of Julius Czesar, who afterwards proposed to confer honours on the assassins, then joined Mark Antony's brother in his mad attack on Octavian, took refuge with Mark Antony, and returned to Rome when the general amnesty was proclaimed in 39 B.c. Livia, the mother of Tiberius, was also of the Claudian family, out of which her father had passed by adoption into that of the Livii Drusi. Early in 38 Livia was amicably ceded to Octavian (the future Augustus), and three months after her new marriage Drusus, brother to Tiberius, was born. Livia had no children by Augustus, and therefore devoted all her remarkable gifts to the advance~~ ment of her sons. They were treated with high considera- tion by

the emperor, yet Augustus held firmly to the hope that his throne might be filled on his death by one in whose veins ran the blood of the Octavii; and not till Tiberius was past forty did there appear any probability that he would ever rise to be emperor. He passed through the list of state offices in the usual princely fashion, beginning with the questorship at the age of eighteen, and attaining the consulate for the first time at twenty- nine. From the great capacity for civil business which he displayed as emperor it may be inferred that he applied himself with determination to learn the business of government.

But from 22 to 6 Bc, and again from 4 to 10 a.p. by far the greater part of Tiberius's life was spent in the camp. His first service was as legionary tribune in one of the desperate and arduous wars which led to peace in the Spanish peninsula through the decimation, or rather the extermination, of the rebellious tribes. In 20 B.c. Augustus sent Tiberius with an army to seat Tigranes of Armenia on the throne as a Roman vassal. As Tiberius approached the frontier of Armenia, he found its throne vacant through the assassination of the king, and Tigranes stepped into his place without a blow being struck, Tiberius crowned Tigranes king with his own hand. Then the Parthian mon- arch grew alarmed and surrendered "the spoils and the

(OS ea rr eS eee 1 See the discussion in Schiirer, Gesch. d. Jiid. Volkes, ii. 127 sq.

standards of three Roman armies." The senate ordered a thanksgiving such as was usually celebrated in honour of a great victory. The following year was passed by Tiberius as governor of Transalpine Gaul. In the next year (15) he was despatched to aid his brother Drusus in subjugat- ing the Reti and Vindelici, peoples dwelling in the mountainous region whence the Rhine, Rhone, and Danube take their rise.2_ Drusus attacked from the eastern side, while Tiberius operated from the upper waters of the Rhine, and by stern measures the mountaineers were re- duced to a state of quietude, and could no longer cut communications between northern Italy and Gaul, nor prosecute their raids in both countries. In 12 B.c. Agrippa, the great general of Augustus, to whom he may be almost said to have owed his

throne, and who was its chief sup- port, died at the age of fifty-one, leaving Julia, the emperor's only child, a widow. Agrippina, daughter of Agrippa by an earlier marriage, was wife of Tiberius, and had borne him a son, Drusus, afterwards father of Germanicus. Livia with great difficulty prevailed upon Augustus to replace Agrippa by Tiberius, who was com- pelled to exchange Agrippina for Julia, to his bitter grief. During the year of mourning for Agrippa, which delayed his new marriage, Tiberius was occupied with a victorious. campaign against the Pannonians, followed by successful expeditions in the three succeeding summers. For his victories in the Danube regions, the emperor conferred on him the distinctions which flowed from a military triumph in republican times (now first separated from the actual triumph), and he enjoyed the "ovation " or lesser form of triumphal entry into the capital. On the death of Drusus in the autumn of 9 B.c. Tiberius, whose reputa- tion had hitherto been eclipsed by that of his brother, stepped into the position of first soldier of the empire. The army, if it did not warmly admire Tiberius, entertained a loyal confidence in a leader who, as Velleius tells us, always made the safety of his soldiers his first care. In the campaign of the year after Drusus's death Tiberius traversed all Germany between the Rhine and the Elbe, and met with slight opposition. But it would be too much to believe the statement of Velleius that "he reduced Germany almost to the position of a tributary province." He was rewarded with the full triumph, the military title of "'imperator," and his second consulship, though the op- position of the powerful Sugambri had been only broken by an act of treachery, the guilt of which should perhaps be laid at the door of Augustus. In 7 B.c. there was another but insignificant campaign in Germany. Next year Augustus bestowed on his stepson the tribunician authority for five years. Tiberius was thus in the most formal manner associated with the emperor in the conduct of the government on the civil side; but Tacitus (Anv., ili. 56) goes too far when he says that this promotion marked him out as the heir to the throne.

Tiberius now suddenly begged permission to retire to Rhodes and devote himself to study. He seems to have declined absolutely at the time to state his reasons for this course, but he obstinately adhered to it, in spite of the tears of Livia and the lamentations of Augustus to the senate that his son had betrayed him. If we may believe Suetonius, Tiberius determined to commit suicide by abstention from food, and Augustus only gave way when

this design was all but accomplished. The depart- ure from Italy was as secret as it could be made. Years afterwards, when Tiberius broke silence about his motives, he declared that he had retired in order to allow the young princes, Gaius and Lucius, sons of Julia, a free course. There was perhaps a portion of the truth wrapped up in this declaration. Like Agrippa, who retired to Mytilene

2 Horace, Odes, iv. 14.

to avoid the young Marcellus, Tiberius had clearly no taste to become the servant of the two children whom Augustus had adopted in their infancy and evidently destined to be joint emperors after hisdeath, But it may well be believed that Tiberius, unlike Agrippa, had no burning ambition to see himself in the place destined for his stepsons ; and it may have been in his eyes one of the attractions of exile that it released him from the obligation to aid in carrying out the far-reaching designs which Livia cherished for his sake. But the contemporaries of Tiberius were no doubt right in believing that the scandal of Julia's life did more than all else to render his position at Rome intolerable. His conduct to her from first to last gives a strong impression of his dignity and self-respect. When at last the emperor's eyes were opened, and he in- flicted severe punishment upon his daughter, her husband, now divorced by the emperor's act, made earnest interces- sion for her, and did what he could to alleviate her suffer- ing. At Rhodes Tiberius lived simply, passing his time mainly in the company of Greek professors, with whom he associated on pretty equal terms. He acquired a very considerable proficiency in the studies of the day, among which must be reckoned astrology. But all his attempts at composition, whether in prose or verse, were laboured and obscure. After five years' absence from Rome, he begged for leave to return; but the boon was angrily re- fused, and Livia with difficulty got her son made nomin- ally a legate of Augustus, so as in some degree to veil his disgrace. The next two years were spent in solitude and gloom. Then, on the intercession of Gaius, Augustus allowed Tiberius to come back to Rome, but on the ex- press understanding that he was to hold aloof from all public functions,—an understanding which he thoroughly carried out.

He had scarcely returned before death removed (2 A.D.) Lucius, the younger of the two princes, and a year and a half later Gaius also died. The emperor was thus left with only one remaining male descendant, Agrippa Pos- tumus, youngest son of Julia, and still a boy. Four months after Gaius's death Augustus adopted Agrippa and at the same time Tiberius. The emperor now indi- cated clearly his expectation that Tiberius would be his principal successor. The two essential ingredients in the imperial authority —the proconsulare imperium and the tribunicia potestas—were conferred on Tiberius, and not on Agrippa, who was too young to receive them. Tiberius's career as a general now began anew. In two or three safe rather than brilliant campaigns he strengthened im- mensely the Roman hold on Germany, and established the winter camps of the legions in the interior, away from the Rhine.

In 5 a.p. it became necessary to attack Maroboduus, who by combining peoples formerly hostile to each other had constructed a formidable power, with its centre in Bohemia, menacing the Roman acquisitions in Germany, Noricum, and Pannonia. The operations were conducted both from the Rhine and from the Danube, Tiberius being in command of the southern army. Just as the decisive engagement was about to take place, Tiberius learned that Pannonia and Dalmatia were aflame with insurrection in his rear. He was therefore forced to conclude peace on terms honourable to Maroboduus. The terror inspired in Italy by the Pannonian and Dalmatian rebellion under the able chief Bato had had no parallel since the invasion of the Cimbri and Teutones. The four serious campaigns which the war cost displayed Tiberius at his best as a general. As he was about to celebrate his well-won triumphs, the terrible catastrophe to Varus and his legions turned the rejoicing into lasting sorrow, and produced a profound change in the Roman policy towards Germany.

Pier RT U's

Although Tiberius with his nephew and adopted son Ger- manicus made in 9 and 10 A.D. two more marches into the interior of Germany, the Romans never again attempted to bound their domain by the Elbe, but clung to the neighbourhood of the Rhine. Tiberius was thus robbed in great part of the fruit of his campaigns; but nothing can deprive him of the credit of being a

chief founder of the imperial system in the lands of Europe. From the beginning of 11, when he celebrated a magnificent triumph, to the time of the emperor's death in 14 Tiberius remained almost entirely in Italy, and held rather the position of joint emperor than that of expectant heir. Agrippa Pos- tumus had proved his incapacity beyond hope, and had been banished to a desolate island. In all probability Tiberius was not present when Augustus died, although Livia spread reports (eagerly amplified by Velleius) of an affectionate interview and a lingering farewell.

Tiberius ascended the throne at the age of fifty-six. What struck his contemporaries most was his absolute impenetrability. As was said of a very different man, the poet Gray, ''he never spoke out." All his feelings, desires, passions, and ambitions were locked behind an impassable barrier, and had to be interpreted by the very un- certain light of his external acts. It is recorded of him that only once did he as commander take counsel with his officers concerning military operations, and that was when the destruction of Varus's legions had made it imperatively necessary not lightly to risk the loss of a single soldier. He was an unparalleled master of passive and silent dissimulation, and the inevitable penalty of his inscruta- bility was widespread dislike and suspicion. But behind his defences there lay an intellect of high power, cold, clear, and penetrating all disguises. Few have ever possessed such mental vision, and he was probably never deceived either about the weaknesses of others' or about his own. For the littlencss and servility of public life in regions below the court he entertained a strong contempt. It isa question whether he ever liked or was liked by a single being ; but he did his duty by those with whom he was connected after a thorough though stern and unlovable fashion. As a general he commanded the full confidence of his soldiers, though he was a severe disciplinarian ; yet the men of his own legions greeted his accession to the throne with a mutiny. 'Tiberius proved himself capable in every department of the state more by virtue of industry and application than by genius. His mind moved so slowly and he was accustomed to deliberate so long that men sometimes made the mistake of deeming him a weakling and a waverer. He was in reality one of the most tenacious of men. When he had once formed an aim he could wait patiently for years till the favourable moment enabled him to achieve it, and if compelled to yield ground he never failed to recover itin the end. The key to much of his character lies in

the observation that he had in early life set before himself a certain ideal of what a Roman in high position ought to be, and to this ideal he rigidly and religiously adhered. He may in one sense be said to have acted a part throughout life, but that part had entered into and interpenetrated his whole nature. His ideal of character was pretty much that of the two Catos. He practised sternness, silence, simplicity of life, and frugality as he deemed that they had been practised by the Fabricii, the Curii, and the Fabii, ‘That Tiberius’s character was stained by vice before he became emperor no one who fairly weighs the records can believe. The persuasion entertained by many at the end of his life that he had been always a monster of wickedness, but had succeeded in concealing the fact till he became emperor, has slightly, but only slightly, discoloured the narratives we possess of his earlier years. The change which came over him in the last years of his life seems to have been due to a kind of constitutional clouding of the spirits, which made him what the elder Pliny calls him, ‘‘the gloomiest of mankind,” and disposed him to brood over mysteries and superstitions. As this gloom deepened his will grew weaker, his power tended to fall into the hands of unworthy instruments, terrors closed in around his mind, and his naturally clear vision was perturbed.

The change of masters had been anticipated by the Roman world with apprehension, but it was smoothly accomplished. Tiberius was already invested with the necessary powers, and it may even be that the senate was not permitted the satisfaction of giving a formal sanction to his accession. Agrippa Postumus was put to death; but Livia may be reasonably regarded as the instigator of this crime. Livia indeed expected to share the im- perial authority with her son. At first Tiberius allowed some recognition to the claim ; but he soon shook himself

Plate IV.

TI B—

free, and later became estranged from his mother and held —

no communication with her for years before her death. The history of Tiberius’s relations with other members of his family is hardly less miserable. Perhaps with any other commander than Germanicus the

dangerous mutiny of the troops on the Rhine which broke out soon after Tiberius's accession would have ended ina march of the discontented legions upon the capital. The perilous episode of Arminius caused the recall of Germanicus and his despatch to the East on an honourable but comparatively inactive mission. The pride and passion of Agrippina, the granddaughter of Augustus and wife of Germanicus, tended to open a breach between her husband and the emperor. In his Eastern command Germanicus found himself perpetually watched and even violently opposed by Piso, the governor of Syria, who was suspected to have received secret orders from Tiberius. When Germanicus died at Antioch in 19 A.D., the populace of Rome combined with Agrippina in demanding vengeance upon Piso; and the emperor was forced to disown him. The death of Germanicus was followed four years later by that of Drusus. These two princes had been firm friends, and Livilla, the wife of Drusus, was sister to Germanicus. Years afterwards it was found that Drusus had fallen a victim to the treachery of his wife Livilla, who had joined her ambition to that of the emperor's minister of state Sejanus. When Drusus died, Tiberius nominated two of Agrippina's sons as his heirs. But Sejanus had grown strong by nursing the emperor's suspicions and dislike for the household of Germanicus, and the mother and the princes were im- prisoned on a charge of crime. In his memoirs of his own life Tiberius declared that he killed Sejanus because he had discovered that he entertained a mad rage against the sons of Germanicus. But the destruction of Sejanus did not save Agrippina and her two children. The third son, Gaius Cesar (Caligula), lived to become emperor when Tiberius died in 37.

Throughout his reign Tiberius strove earnestly to do his duty to the empire at large ; his guiding principle was to maintain with an almost superstitious reverence the constitutional forms which had been constructed by Augustus. Only two changes of moment were introduced. The imperial guard, hitherto only seen in the city in small detachments, was by the advice of Sejanus encamped per- manently in full force close to the walls. By this measure the tur- bulence of the populace was kept in check. The officer in command of the guard became at once the most important of the emperor's lieutenants. The other change was the practically complete aboli- tion of the old comitia. But the senate was treated with an almost hypocritical deference, and a pedantically precise compliance with the old republican

forms was observed towards the senatorial magis- trates. The care expended by Tiberius on the provinces was unre- mitting. His favourite maxim was that a good shepherd should shear the flock and not flay it. When he died he left the subject peoples of the empire in a condition of prosperity such as they had never known before and never knew again. Soldiers, governors, and officials of all kinds were kept in wholesome dread of vengeance if they oppressed those beneath them or encouraged irregularity of any kind. Strict economy permitted light taxation and enabled the empcror to show generosity in periods of exceptional distress. Public security both in Italy and abroad was maintained by a strong hand, and commerce was stimulated by the improvement of com- munications. Jurisdiction both within and without the capital was on the whole exercised with steadiness and equity, and the laws of the empire were at many points improved. ‘The social and moral reforms of Augustus were upheld and carried further. Such risings against the emperor’s authority as occurred within the Roman domain were put down with no great difficulty. The foreign or rather the frontier policy was a policy of peace, and it

ras Soe

was pursued with considerable succcss. With few exceptions the duties of the Roman forces on the borders were confined to watch-

| ing the peoples on the other side while they destroyed each other.

On the Rhine, at least, masterly inactivity achieved tranquillity whicli lasted for a long period.

The disrepute which attaches to the reign of Tiberius has come inainly from three or four sources,—from the lamentable story of the imperial household, from the tales of hideous debauchery prac- tised in deep retirement at Capree during the last eleven years of the emperor’s life, from the tyranny which Sejanus was permitted to wield in his master’s name, and from the political prosecutions and executions which Tiberius encouraged, more by silent compliance than by open incitement. The stories of immorality are recorded chiefly by Suetonius, who has evidently used a poisoned source, possibly the memoirs of the younger Agrippina, the mother of Nero. Tiberius loved to shroud himself in mystery, and such

stories are probably the result of unfriendly attempts to uplift the darkness. If history ventures to doubt the blackness of Theodora, that of Tiberius grows continually lighter under the investigations of criticism. Suetonius makes the emperor's con- dition to have been one of mania, issuing frequently in the aban- donment of all moral restraint. But in that case the authority of Tiberius, which was as firmly upheld during the years spent at Caprese as it had been earlier, must have fallen to pieces and come to an end. With respect to Sejanus it is impossible to acquit Tiberius of blame. If he was deceived in his favourite he must have been willing to be deceived. He conferred on Sejanus a position as great as had been held by Agrippa during the reign of Augustus, and the minister was actually, and all but formally, joint emperor. Of the administrative ability of Sejanus there can be no question ; but the charm and secret of his powcr lay in the use he made of those apprehensions of personal danger which seem never to have been absent from his master's mind. The growth of '¢delation," the darkest shadow that lies on the reign, was in part a consequence of the supremacy and the arts of Sejanus. Historians of Rome in ancient times remembered Tiberius chiefly as the sove- reign under whose rule prosecutions for treason on slight pretexts first became rife, and the hateful race of informers was first allowed to fatten on the gains of judicial murdcr. Augustus had allowed considerable licence of speech and writing against himself, and had made no attempt to set upa doctrine of constructive treason. But the history of the state trials of Tiberius's reign shows conclusively that the straining of the law proceeded in the first instance from the eager flattery of the senate, was in the earlier days checked and controlled to a great extent by the emperor, and was by him acquiesced in after a time with a sort of contemptuous indifference, till he developed, under the influence of his fears, a readiness to shed blood.

The principal authorities for the reign of Tiberius are Tacitus and Suetonius. The Annals of Tacitus were not published till nearly eighty years after the death of Tiberius. He rarely quotes an authority by name. In all probability he drew most largely from other historians who had preceded him; to some extent he availed himself of oral tradition ; and of archives and original records he made some, but comparatively little, use. In his history of Tiberius two influences were at work, in almost equal strength: on the one hand he strives continually after fairness; on the other the bias of a man

steeped in senatorial traditions forbids him to attainit. Tacitus is certainly not among the historians in whom our confidence grows by repeated reading. Suetonius was @ biographer rather than an historian, and the ancient biographer was even less given to exhaustive inquiry than the ancient historian; moreover Suetonius was not gifted with great critical faculty, though he told the truth so far as he could see it. His Lives of the Twelve Cxsars was written nearly at the time when Tacitus was composing the Annals, but was published a little later. Velleius Paterculus is by far the oldest authority for any part of Tibe- rius's life. He had been an officer under Tiberius, and he eulogizes his old general enthusiastically,—feeling it necessary, however, to do less than justice to the achievements of Germanicus. To Velleius all defenders of Tiberius have eagerly appealed. In truth it is his silence alone which affords any external aid in repelling the charges of Tacitus and Suetonius, and the fact that Velleius published his work in the lifetime of his master deprives that silence of its value. The eulogy of Sejanus which is linked with that of Tiberius must needs shake faith in the scrupulousness of the author. It is still doubtful whether Dio Cassius (whose History ended with the year 229) in his narrative of the reign of Tiberius is to any great extent independent of Tacitus. In recent times a considerable mass of inscriptions has added to our knowledge of the adminis- tration of this emperor. The chief account of Tiberius in English is that contained in Dean Merivale's History of the Romans under the Empire. Mr Beesly has written an interesting defence of him in his Catiline, Clodius, and Tiberius. The best recent history of this period is Hermann Schiller's Ge- schichte der rémischen Kaiserzeit (Gotha, 1883). Numerous monographs relating to the reign have appeared in recent times on the Continent. The principles of the imperial administration of the provinces by Tiberius have been treated by Mommsen in the fifth volume of his History of Rome, translated into English under the title of The Roman Provinces from Augustus to Diocletian. (J.8. RB.)

TIBESTL See Samara, vol. xxi. p. 149, and Tipsus.

TiLBiT

IBET,! Thibet, or Tiibet, an extensive and highly elevated region in the heart of Asia, comprising tablelands ranging from 10,000 to 17,600 feet

above sea-

1 The name Tibet is not, as usually alleged, unknown in the country

level. The Himalayan mountain ranges and the transverse ranges of upper Yun-nan constitute the southern scarp,

itself, though only found there in an attenuated form. The following forms are also met with—in Chinese annals 7’u-bat (5th cent.) and

Bound- aries.

Name.

the Yun-ling Mountains of China the eastern scarp, and the Kuen-Lun (Kitn-Liun) ranges the northern scarp, towards Turkestan and Mongolia; on the west, where it narrows considerably, it merges into the Pamir tablelands. Its extreme length from east to west exceeds 1600 miles ; its breadth from north to south ranges from 150 miles in the west to an average of 500 in central Tibet and a maximum of 700 in the east. The area of Tibet exceeds 700,000 square miles.

Much of Tibet is wholly abandoned to wild animals, and much is uncultivable and occupied only by various wan- dering tribes of nomads. The centres of the settled and

it. tee Tie-bu-te, T’u-bo-te (11th cent.); in Mongolian, Tiibet, Tobdt ; in Arabic Tubbet; Rabbi Benjamin (1165), Thibet; J. de Plano Carpini (1247), Thabet ; Rubruquis (1253), Marco Polo (1298), Tebet ; Tbn Batuta (1840), Thabat ; Ibn Haukal (976), Al Biruni (1020), Odoric of Pordenone (c. 1328), Orazio della Penna (1730), Tibet. A Tibetan, arriving at Darchiendo from Lhasa, states that he comes from Teu-peu, meaning High or Upper Tibet,—Stod-Bod in contradistinction to Smad- Bod or Lower Tibet. The former expression, were it supported by any ancient authority, might be

regarded as the etymological origin of ‘* Tibet” ; historical evidence, however, seems to indicate another source, The state of which Lhasa is the capital is often called ‘‘ Deba jung” or ‘land of the Debas” (sdepa Ujongs). The title of the tepa lama is familiar, Chinese records say that the king of the country is called diba ; and Joh. Grueber informs us that the king is styled deva or teva, and is descended from an ancient race of Tangut Tatars. The Chinese annals of the T’ang dynasty record that Fanni Tubat, the historical founder of a state in the east of Tibet in 433, gave to his dominion his surname of Tubat. This was a famous family name proper to several Tatar dynasties which ruled in the north and north- west of China, and belonged to the Sien-pi race, in the language of which fubat meant ‘‘a coverlet.” An appended legend stated that the fifth ancestor of Liluku, the founder of the southern Liang dynasty and family and father of Fanni, derived the surname of Tubat, which became that of his family, from the fact that he was born in a coverlet while his mother Huykshe was sleeping. However worthless the legend, there is complete similarity between the name of the Tubat or Tobat Tatars and that of Tibet, and we may with considerable safety take the latter word as derived from the former, the fact being that it was and is still extensively used in the sense of ‘‘ great,” ‘‘ chief,” among the Tatar tribes. Tibet, however, is not the name by which the modern Tibetans designate themselves and their country. Bod-pa, ‘‘a man of Bod,’ Bod-yul, ‘‘country of Bod,” are the expressions in current use ; but what ‘‘ Bod” means is uncertain. Hodgson has maintained that before the arrival of Indian teachers the people had no name for themselves or their country, and the present Bod comes from the Sanskrit B’ét—an opinion which, though inconsistent with the evidence collected about Tubat, is rather confirmed by a legendary account. According to that account, the country, which was occupied by a race of men not yet emerged from primitive bar- barism, was originally called Bod-rgyal, 7.e., ‘‘ Bod’s victory.” The secondary name then might be in its simple form Bod, a Buddhist appellative suggested by the Sanskrit homonyms of -dat or -b’at, part of the name brought in by the Tatar conquerors. Anyhow there is no occasion for the other etymologies suggested, such as that from Buddha, or that proposed by Schiefner (¢’wb and p’od, both meaning ‘able,’ capable”). An old name for Tibet in the native books is Gdong-mar-gyi-yul, ‘country of the red-faced men,” so called ap- parently from the ancient national custom of painting the face red,— a practice which was forbidden by King

Srong-btsan at the instance of his wife Wan ch’eng, a Chinese princess. Among the Mongols Tibet was simply called Barontala (the ‘‘ right side’’), in contradis- tinction to Dziéntala (the ‘‘left side”), which was among them the name of Mongolia. In China, during the Yuan or Mongol dynasty, it was called Wei-sze-Tsang, in which we recognize the names of the two central provinces of DbUs(U) and Tsang. Khachi, Khache, Khaschi, Kashi, are varions forms of a term which is often met with in books as applied to a part of the plateaus of Tibet, and which cannot without difficulty be identified in positive geography. We take it to be simply a revival of the old name of the Tangut or Hia kingdom, the Khashi or Khoshi of the Mongols (982-1227), on the north-east of Tibet, on the west of the Hoang-ho, whence Ho-si in Chinese history, and per- haps the origin of the name. In the 11th century Milaraspa made use of the term K’aché for Mussulman ; Huc and Gabet have reported the use of the same expression in the central provinces with a similar acceptation. A popular ctymology has confounded it with the words K’a-ché for K’a-chen, literally ‘‘ big mouth,” which is now supposed to be its meaning when applied to Mohammedans. Kashmir is also called K’a-ché, from the fact that it is under Mohammedan rule, says Jaeschke ; but, as this has been the case only since 1605, there is great probability that here the term is simply used as an abridged form of Kashmir. (EEE AL:)

TIBREeT

[GEOGRAPHY,

agricultural population lie to the south, in a region named Bod-yul (meaning Bod-land) by the inhabitants, who are called Bod-pas ; by the Hindus it is called Bhot, and by the Chinese Si-tsang. The greater portion of this region is governed, under the supremacy of China, by lamas and gyalpos, ecclesiastical and lay Bod-pas, the principal seat of government being at Lhasa, the chief city of Bod-yul. Portions are subject to Kashmir and Nepal, and to independent chieftains, and portions are directly subject to China; but the Bod-pa ethnological element prevails more or less throughout.

Tibet was long a terra imcognita to Europeans. It is difficult of access on all sides, and everywhere difficult to traverse. Its great elevation causes the

climate to be rather arctic than tropical, so that there is no gradual blending of the climates and physical conditions of India and Tibet, such as would tend to promote intercourse between the inhabitants of these neighbouring regions ; on the contrary, there are sharp lines of demarcation, in a mountain barrier which is scalable at only a few points and in the social aspects and conditions of life on either side. No great armies have ever crossed Tibet to invade India; even those of Jenghiz Khan took the circuitous route wa Bokhara and Afghanistan, not the direct route from Mongolia across Tibet. for the early European travellers to find their way into and explore Tibet. Friar Odoric of Pordenone is sup- posed to have reached Lhasa circ. 1328, travelling from Cathay; three centuries afterwards the Jesuit Antonio Andrada, travelling from India, entered Tibet on the west, in the Manasarowar Lake region, and made his way across to Tangut and north-western China; in 1661 Fathers Grueber and D'Orville travelled from Peking wa Tangut to Lhasa, and thence through Nepal to India; and during the first half of the 18th century various Capu- chin friars appear to have passed freely between Delhi and Lhasa, by way either of Nepal or Kashmir. The first Englishman to enter Tibet was George Bogle, in 1774, on an embassy from Warren Hastings to the tashi (teshu) lama of Shigatze. In 1811 Thomas Manning made his way from India to Lhasa; he is the only Englishman who has succeeded in reaching the sacred city, and he had soon to leave it. During the 19th century Europeans have been systematically prevented from entering the country or speedily expelled if found in it. In 1844-46 the French missionaries Huc and Gabet made their way to Lhasa from China, but were soon deported back again. In 1866 the Abbé Desgodins travelled through portions of eastern Tibet and reached Chiamdo (in Kham), but was prevented from approaching any closer to Lhasa. Last of all the Russian Colonel Prejevalsky succeeded in exploring portions of northern Tibet, but was unable to penetrate southwards into Bodland.

Geographers have long been in possession of maps of Tibet, com- Maps.

piled from surveys executed early in the 18th century by lamas, under instructions from the Jesuit fathers who made a survey of China for the emperor Kang-he. The lamas' maps were the basis of D'Anville's Atlas, published in 1733, and were employed by Klaproth in constructing his map of Asia in 1824; but they are generally very meagre, only reliable in the

vicinity of the principal roads, and occasionally very misleading. They must have been compiled at best from rude estimates of distance and direction, and in some parts from mere hearsay or conjecture. They are, how- ever, supposed to have becn based on astronomical determinations of position ; but this is improbable, for the latitudes of such im- portant places as Lhasa and Batang are 30 to 60 miles in error, Our knowledge of the geography of the country is complete only for portions of western Tibet, which are subject to the maharajah of Kashmir, and have been regularly surveyed. This knowledge has been largely supplemented during the last twenty years by the work of natives of India—the so-called trans-Himalayan explorers of the Indian Survey, notably Pandits Nain Singh and Krishna (A—K)—who have been trained to carry route surveys through regions which they may, but Europeans may not, enter.

Thus it was no easy matter Euro-

Geogra- phical divisions.

Table- land.

Rivers.

GEOGRAPHY. |

Tibet is commonly divided into two parts called Great and Little Tibet, the former lying between 102° and 79° E. long., the latter between 79° and 74°. Great Tibet is broadly divisible into a western region, in which there is a considerable preponderance of tableland over hill and mountain and of lake basins over river basins, and an eastern region, in which the reverse holds good and the surface of the ground is so greatly corrugated that the natives call it rong-rtsub, “a rough country full of ravines.” In Little Tibet the Himalayas converge towards the Kuen- Lun, and the breadth of the plateau meridionally diminishes to less than a fourth of what it attains in Great Tibet. The entire region may be broadly divided into three longi- tudinal zones, increasing in elevation from south to north, viz., a southern zone, which contains the centres of the settled and agricultural population ; a middle zone, com- prising the pasture lands of the Bod-pa nomads; and a northern zone, for the most part abandoned to wild animals, but partly

occupied by tribes of Turkic and Mongolian nomads. The southern and middle zones comprise Bod- land proper and are divided into four provinces, viz.,— Nari (Ngari, Ari) on the west, between 74° and 85° E. long. ; Kham, otherwise Do-Kham, on the east, between 92° 30’ and 102°; and in the centre, Tsang, adjoining Nari, and U or Us (otherwise Y or Wei), adjoining Kham; the two central provinces are commonly called U-tséng, as one. A considerable belt of the middle zone is known as the Hor country. The middle and northern zones embrace the greater portion of the region known to Bod-pas as the Chang-tang (Bydn-tang, Jan-tang) or “Northern Plain,” which, however, protrudes southwards and abuts upon the Himalayas from 80° to 85° E. long., thus interposing a nomad population between the settled populations to the east and the west. The northern zone merges on the west into the Pamir tablelands.

The tableland of Tibet attains its maximum elevation, 17,600 feet above sea-level, on the 79th meridian, in the Lingzi-tang plateau of the northern zone; thence there is a gradual fall east, west, and south, the plateau level on the 97th meridian being about 13,500 feet in the northern zone and 10,000 in the southern. Between the 82d and 90th meridians the northern zone is known only from the maps of the lamas’ survey, which indicate a sur- face slightly corrugated with hills and containing numerous lakes, some of great size, but no rivers of importance.

The river basins in this zone apparently commence to the east of the 90th meridian and from them issue the Di-chu! (Chinese Kin-sha-kiang), whose headwaters unite at Dichu Rab-dun, in 94° 30’ E. long.; the Chiamdo river or Lan-tsan-kiang; the Hoang-ho, in about 96°, which flows through the Kiaring and Orin lakes (18,500 feet above the sea and each exceeding 80 miles in circum- ference) and passes northwards out of Tibet through the Kuen-Lun ; and the Ja-chu or Yalung-kiang, also in about 90° E. long., which flows southwards through eastern Tibet. In the middle zone a system of lakes on the 90th meridian gives birth to the Nag-chu, which becomes the Sok-chu and lower down the Giama-Nu-chu— known to the Chinese as the Lu-tse-kiang—and, trending southwards, winds round the eastern extremity of the Himalayas. In the lower zone the Indus and the Yaro-tsanpo rise on either side of the 82d meridian and flow in opposite direc- tions parallel to the Himalayas, and then, passing through openings in those

mountains twenty degrees apart in longi- tude, enter India on the extreme east and west. The Lohit Brahmaputra rises behind the eastern Himalayas and flows

1 Tibetans call rivers either ¢ésanpo=river or chu =water, the former being chiefly employed in southern Tibet, as ‘for the great Yaro-tsanpo (Upper river) and its principal tributaries. Lakes are called cho or tso. A mountain pass is called /é.

Lest T

south-westwards into India. The Giama-Nu-chu, Chiam- do-chu, and Di-chu flow southwards into Burma and Yun- nan, through closely contiguous valleys between a system of meridional ranges which project as spurs from the Tibetan plateau. West of 82° a single water-parting between north and south—that of the Mus-tagh and Karakoram, some- times called the Turkic —separates Indo-Tibetan from Turko-Tibetan waters; east of that meridian there are longitudinal water-partings between the basins of the several rivers already mentioned.

The Himalayan Mountains, which constitute so consider- Himala-

able a portion of the southern scarp of Tibet, consist of a yan re-

succession of longitudinal chains, running in general paral-“

lel to each other along the glacis of the plateau. These chains are much higher on their southern than on their northern faces, and are connected in some parts by trans- verse ridges, but in other parts are broken and interrupted by fissures and valleys. The principal chain is the one of high peaks covered with perpetual snow which culminates in Mont Everest, 29,000 feet above the sea. This chain may be regarded as the geographical boundary between Tibet and India. In some parts it is the water-parting ; but at the several points where its continuity is broken the water-parting recedes to an inner chain on the plateau, and basins are formed between the two chains, the waters of which descend in rivers to the plains of India. The

plateau isa region of plains and wide open valleys of little depth; the scarp is a region of mountains and narrow confined valleys of great depth. The narrow valleys of the scarp, being lower, are warmer and more favourably adapted for cultivation than the broad valleys of the plateau.

on.

Higher than these last are the plains of the Chang-tang, Chang- which are, for the most part, too high and cold for any tang

but pastoral uses. All such tracts the inhabitants call il

chdng-téng, though the word strictly signifies “the Northern Plain”; and all tracts which contain valleys warm enough for cultivation they call rong (signifying a ravine or narrow valley or cleft in a hill), but more par- ticularly the lower and warmer valleys which produce crops twice in the year; the word is also commonly em- ployed to indicate a warm country. The alluvial beds in the valleys are composed of the débris of the surrounding rocks, laid out in horizontal deposits, which in course of time have become furrowed into gigantic ravines with a succession of narrow terraces in steps on each flank. It is on the existing lower alluvial beds and the remnants of higher beds that cultivation is carried on, in plots which are usually well watered and very fertile. The sharp needle-peaks, which are highest of all and bare of soil, but covered with perpetual snow, are met with most frequently in tracts of rong, and the rounded hills coated with grass to altitudes sometimes exceeding 16,000 feet in tracts of chang-tang. The forest-clad mountain slopes which are occasionally met with occur chiefly in the rong. The general direction of the hill and mountain chains is cast and west, but north-west and south-east in western Tibet, north-east and south-west in the province of U, and north and south in eastern Tibet. The peaks rise in many parts to between 20,000 and 25,000 feet—in the Mus-tagh range to 28,250—above the sea-level, but rarely to more than 10,000, and often to not more than a few hundred, feet above the general level of the plateaus from which they spring. The principal water-partings in some dis- tricts follow the crests of low ridges and gentle undulations which are of barely appreciable elevation above the surface of the ground.

Nari, the western province of Bodland, is divided into Nari.

the sub-provinces of Ladak and Balti on the west, between 75° and 79° E. long., now a part of Kashmir; Khorsum,

g.

Khor- sum.

Mang- yul or Dokthol.

U-tsang.

The

Yaro- tsanpo.

340

between 79° and 82°, conterminous with the Himalayan provinces of British India; and Mang-yul or Dokthol, between 82° and 87°, conterminous with western Nepal. The last two are under the government of Lhasa. Western Nari is bounded on the south by that portion of the Himalayan chain of snow-peaks which stretches in almost a direct line north-west from the Manasarowar Lake region to the Nanga Parbat peak (26,620 feet), at first facing the plains of the Punjab, then passing north of Kashmir. The provinces appertaining to Kashmir have already been described in the article LADAK AND BALti (q.v.). The Karakoram chain, although its principal pass is 18,500 feet above sea-level, nowhere rises very high above the tableland. It constitutes a portion of the water-parting between India and Turkestan, separating the Lingzi-tang plateau, the highest in all Tibet, from the broad and open valley of Chang-chenmo; it has been traced eastwards to the meridian of 82°, but no farther. Khorsum is mainly chéng-tang, but has some upland cultivation round the capital, Rudok, and in the Gartang valley, and lowland cultivation in the rong of the great plateau (120 miles long by 15 to 60 broad) of Guge or Hundes, the upper basin of the Sutlej. In this province lie, within the small area of a square degree, the sources of four great rivers—the Indus, the Yaro-tsanpo, the Sutlej, and the Karnali—the sacred lakes of Manasarowar and Rakas Tal, 15,300 feet above the sea and each 50 miles in circumference, and two

famous mountains, Nimo Namling (25,360 feet) to the south, believed by the Tibetans to be their highest mountain, and to the north the sacred Kailas Gangri (21,830 feet), the Kantysee of the lamas' survey. From the Kailas Gangri a chain of hills stretches to the north-west, separating the upper basins of the Sutlej and the Indus; to the north of that another chain, running east and west, culminates in the Aling Gangri peaks (24,000 feet) and separates the Indus basin from the Pangong Lake (100 miles long, from 3 to 7 broad, and 14,000 feet in altitude), near which Rudok is situated. Roads pass from Ladak to Lhasa through the plains of Rawang and Sarthol, the gold-fields of Thok Jalung and Thok Daurakpa, and the Hor country. Mang-yul, or Dokthol, contains the upper basins of the Yaro-tsanpo—here known as the Nari-chu—and its prin- cipal affluents, the Cha-chu and the Charta-tsanpo. The province is wholly Chang-tang and its population nomadic, the capital, Sarka Jong, being merely a good-sized village. The common border of the provinces of Nari and Tsang falls nearly on the 87th meridian. Here the Chang-tang recedes from the Himalayas, and its southern scarp, trend-ing north-east, forms the upper fringe of tracts appertain- ing to U-tsang that are capable of producing a single crop annually. This region constitutes the most important portion of the basin of the Yaro-tsanpo, for it contains the chief towns and monasteries of the settled Bod-pas. Cultivation commences on a slight scale where the river enters Tsang on the west. The first town of any import- ance is Junglache (13,600 feet), on the right bank, with a large monastery. Thence goods may be taken down the river for some distance by boats of leather over a wooden framework, light enough to be carried back overland. Kighty-five miles lower down, also on the right bank, are the city of Shigatze or Digarchi (12,000 feet) and the great monastery of Tashilunpo (Teshu-Lumbo), the resi- dence of the "'tashi lama," one of two spiritual incarnations of equal rank, of which the other, the "dalai lama," resides at Lhasa; the monastery contains 3500 lamas. Between Junglache and Shigatze the river receives the Raka-tsanpo from the chang-tang on its left, and the Sakya-Jong-chu from that on its right. The latter descends from the Himalayan water-parting past the monastery of SdAkya

ial Lao ea 2

[GEOGRAPHY,

(13,900 feet), which is surrounded by cultivation and governed by a chief lama called the “sakya-gangma,” who is held in considerable reverence as an avatar. At Shigatze the Yaro-tsanpo receives the Pena-Nyang-chu from a valley to the south-east which contains the towns of Pena-jong and Gyangtse-jong (13,000 feet), and numer- ous monasteries and villages, and through which passes the main road from Bhutan to Shigatze travelled by Bogle in 1774. A little lower down it receives from the left the Shiang-chu, which rises in the Ninchen-thangla range and flows past the town of Namling (12,200 feet, 200 houses), where sheep are employed as baggage animals, the country being too cold for donkeys and the roads too stony for yaks. Then at Shangpa (Jagsa) it receives from the right the Rong-chu from the famous Yamdok-tso or Scorpion Lake to the south-east. This lake is 120 miles in circumference, 13,800 feet above the sea, and is sur- rounded by villages and monasteries; its scorpion claws embrace a peninsula which rises above 16,000 feet, is grass- grown to its summit, and embosoms the Damo-tso, a sacred lake, 24 miles round and 500 feet above the main lake, which is expected some day to rise and destroy all animal life by a flood. Here the roads from India via Bhutan and from Shigatze to Lhasa converge, and after crossing the Khamba-la (15,000 feet) strike the Yaro-tsanpo at Chiak-jam-chori (= “‘the iron bridge at the rocky bank”). The river in its course from Shangpa down to this point is unnavigable, passing over rapids between precipitous hills ; there is no road on either bank. A little below the bridge it receives from the left the Ki-chu, the river of LuAsa (q.v.), the chief city of Bodland. Below the .junc- tion of the Ki-chu the Yaro-tsanpo continues its eastward course through a broad and well-peopled valley. It is crossed at Chetang by a ferry on the road from Lhasa to Tawang in Bhutan wa the Yarlung-chu valley (right bank), which is said to be the pleasantest and most populous in Tibet ; fruits grow in profusion at its lower extremity and the hills are forest-clad. At Chetang the river is 350 yards broad, 20 feet deep, and 11,000 feet above the sea, and has a sluggish current. On crossing the meridian of 92° 30’ E. it passes out of the province of U into that of Kham and enters its eastern basin. After traversing the Kongbo (Khombo) district, it trends north-east for 100 miles—in general parallel with the contiguous Kongbo ranges and the distant Ninchen-thangla—and on reaching 94° turns abruptly to the south. Its course has been ex- plored 20 miles below the bend, to Gya-la-Sindong (8000 feet), but no farther. The basin is bounded on the north and east by the continuous plateaus of

Lharugo, Arig, Pemba and Lhojong, Pashu, Dainsi, and Nagong, and on the south by the inner Himalayan water-parting. Numer- ous tributaries join the river from both sides, but little is known of them. Those from Kongbo, Lharugo, and Arig are said to unite and join it a little above Gya-la-Sindong, and one from Nagong a little below. This last rises near the Ata-Gang-l4, a pass over the Himalayas between the Nagong plateau and the Zayul district, and is said to be on the direct road from Lhasa to Zayul wa Gya-la-Sin- dong ; it is probably joined by the Kenpu river of the lamas' survey, which rises in the southern scarp of the Pemba-Lhojong plateau and probably flows through the Potod and Pomed districts of Kham. The independent Lhoyul country lies to the south of the Nagong-chu (lit. "black water"). The region is generally of a compara- tively low elevation, is said to have much more of rong than of chdng-tang, and probably contains much more forest and luxuriant vegetation than any other part of Tibet north of the Himalayas.

Eastern basin of Yaro- tsanpo.

Lower

The lower course of the Yaro-tsanpo has long been a matter of Yaro-controversy between English and French geographers: the former tsanpo.

South Tibetan basins.

The Giama- Nu-chu.

Eastern plateaus,

have maintained, in accordance with information from natives of Tibet and Assam, that it enters the Assam valley and is the princi- pal source of the Brahmaputra river, of which the Lohit Brahma- putra river is the eastern source; the latter have maintained, on the authority of Chinese geographers, that it flows into Burma and is the principal source of the Irawadi river. But now its eastern basin has been explored, and the Lohit Brahmaputra has been found to have its sources in a range bordering the Giama-Nu-chu ; the

Yaro-tsanpo must therefore necessarily pass into Assam, and measurements of the discharges of the principal rivers entering Assam from the north conclusively identify it with the Dihong. That river, which receives the Lohit Brahmaputra a little below Sadiya (450 feet above the sea), has been explored upwards into the Himalayas to a point within 100 miles of Gya-la-Sindong ; but as yet nothing is known of the connecting channel, except that it must havea fall of about 7000 feet, or as much as the entire fall of the Yaro-tsanpo in its upper course of 900 miles.

The Tibetan basins to the south of the Yaro-tsanpo which are included between the Himalayan chains of water-parting and of high snow-peaks are the Bheri, the Kali Gandak, and the Buria Gandak, subject to Nepal; then the follow- ing, which are subject to Lhasa :—(1) the Tirsuli Gandak, on the direct road from Kathmandu to Dokthol via Kirong (9700 feet); (2) the Bhotia Kosi, through which the road from Kathmandu to Shigatze passes via Nilam Jong or Kuti (13,900 feet) into (3) the Arun-Barun basin, 120 miles by 30, which embraces the Dingri Maidan and Shikar Jong plateaus and the great Chomto Dong Lake (14,700 feet); this same road, after passing Sikkim and western Bhutan, where the chain of high snow-peaks, including Kanchinjinga (27,815 feet), is the water-parting, traverses (4) the Lhobra, (5) the Cha-yul, and (6) the Mon-yul basins, which are also crossed by the road between Chetang and Tawang. East of the 93d meridian the height of the peaks of the outer Himalayan chain falls to about 15,000 feet ; the inner line of water-parting recedes northwards, and with it the boundary of Lhasa rule. The included basins are occupied by independent semi-savage tribes,— Miris, Abors, Mishmis, &e.; but about the 97th meridian Lhasa rule again asserts itself, The mountains again rise to a great height in the Nechin-Gangra range, the eastern- most Himalaya, which terminates about the 98th meridian in spurs thrown off to the north and south, parting the waters of the Lohit Brahmaputra and the Giama-Nu-chu. The southern spur bends westwards in horse-shoe fashion round the Zayul basin, and then merges into the range which separates upper Assam and eastern Bengal from Burma. Lhasa rule extends over Zayul, and for a short distance down the valley of the Giama-Nu-chu, embracing some tracts which lie outside the geographical limits of Tibet, as lower Zayul, where the elevation falls below 4000 feet and the climate is so warm that criminals are sent there from Lhasa as a punishment.

The Giama-Nu-chu is called by the Chinese the Lu-kiang or Lu- tse-kiang. Its course is known down to about 27° 30’N. lat., a few marches below Bonga, on the left bank, where the Abbé Desgodins established a mission station temporarily ; but nothing certain is known of its lower course. It is generally believed to be identical with the Salwin river, which the Chinese also call the Lu-kiang ; but the similarity of name is not conclusive of identity, for the Lu country covers a large area, and its name may be given to a second river rising among the Ly-su and Lu-tse tribes to the south. Nothing certain is known of the Salwin above 25° N. lat.; where it is crossed on the road from Tali-fu to Bamo, it is almost certainly of too small a volume to have its sources farther off than, say, 250 miles in the southern Tibetan scarp, and not far away in the heart of Tibet. There is a considerable probability that the Giama-Nu- chu is the source of the Irawadi, and thus that Chinese geographers have been right in assigning a Tibetan origin to that river, though wrong in identifying it with the Yaro-tsanpo.

The Dayul plateau, with the lofty mountains of Kokarpo to the north near Dayul (11,450 feet) and Dokela to the south near Bonga, lies between the Giama Nu-chu and the Chiamdo or Lan-tsan-kiang ; the latter river is believed to become the Mekong of Cambodia. The Ou-kio river of the Abbé Desgodins rises in an important valley between

PieET

joins the former above Bonga.

34]

the Giama-Nu and Chiamdo rivers and, flowing past Dayul, Next comes the Makham plateau, between the Chiamdo and the Di-chu, of which the chief town (11,900 feet) is called Gartok by Tibetans and Kiangka by Chinese. East of the Di-chu or Kin-sha- kiang lie the plateaus of Batang, Litang, and Darchendo, which, though geographically and ethnologically Tibetan, are directly under China. The last two are separated by the Ja-chu, which is known as the Yalung in its southerly course to join the Kin-sha; the united streams flow east- wards through China as the Yang-tse-kiang or Blue river.

The western Hor country lies to the north, on the direct Western route between Ladak and Lhasa ; it isa region of extensive Hor grassy plains and numerous lakes, some of great size, and peu occasional hill ranges, which, though often snow-covered, are of no great elevation above the tableland. It is in- habited by nomads—Chang-pas of local origin and Kham- pas from the east—and occasional communities of gold- diggers and of traders in salt and borax, which are plenti- fully found on the margins of the lakes. Thok Daurakpa (15,300 feet), the centre of a large gold-field, is the chief settlement. Within a remarkable basin, surrounded by high hills and enclosing the great Dangra-Yum Lake and a cluster of small but well-built villages, Ombo, are lands which produce a profusion of barley at an altitude of 15,200 feet,—a unique instance of cultivation at so great a height, no other cultivation occurring within 300 miles on either side. The Tengri-nur or Nam-cho, 150 miles in circumference and 15,350 feet above the sea, lies to the north-west of Lhasa; and beyond it there is said to be a still larger lake, the Chargut-cho, and numerous smaller lakes, to one or more of which the sources of the Giama- Nu-chu may perhaps be traced, though as a rule the lakes in this region have no outlet. The Ninchen-thangla range lies between the Tengri-nur and Lhasa ; it is considered by some writers to rival the Himalayas, but is probably not more than 300 miles long nor anywhere higher than 24,000 feet above the sea.

The Chang-tang attains its greatest width (over 500 The

miles) on the meridian of 85°; north of Lhasa it contracts Chang- to 400 miles, and is probably narrowest (140 miles) on the” meridian of 97°. It is covered to a very considerable ex- tent, probably everywhere below 16,000 feet, with a succu- lent grass, which forms from May to August the softest of green carpets and furnishes an abundance of green pasture. Willow and tamarisk are occasionally met with on the margins of the lakes; but as a rule there is little wood or scrub of any kind, and cultivation only in very excep- tional localities, such as Ombo. Myriads of wild animals —chiefly the yak and the antelope, but also the ass and the camel—roam over the entire region, but mostly con- gregate in the uninhabited northern portion ; their argols furnish a plentiful supply of fuel, without which it would be impossible for travellers to cross the country, as there are stretches of hundreds of miles in which no other fuel is procurable. As the Chang-tang

narrows to the east, its surface becomes corrugated with chains of low hills. Here too there is more marsh land than on the west: the Odontala plateau at the sources of the Hoang-ho river is described by Prejevalsky as one vast bog in summer, during the prevalence of the south-west monsoon from the Indian Ocean. The openings between the meridional hill ranges to the south permit the rain clouds to pass up to much higher latitudes before discharging their moisture than on the west, where they are faced by the great longi- tudinal ranges of the Himalayas.

The Kuen-Lun has been identified, geologically, by The Stoliezka, as far west as the Victoria Lake on the great Kuen- Pamir, in 74° E. long. ; it has been surveyed between 77° ee and 82°, where it rises to more than 22,000 feet, and ;

towers above the plains of eastern Turkestan. To the east it is known for some distance as the Toguz-Davan (Eleven Passes) range; Prejevalsky observed a prominent peak (Jingri, 20,000 feet) on the 90th meridian, east of which successive portions are known as the Angirtakshia, Shuga, Namohon, Burkhan Budha, and Dzun-mo-Lun ranges. The rivers flowing north through openings in the Kuen-Lun are generally small, with the exception of the Hoang-ho. East of the 85th meridian the Kuen-Lun constitutes the chord of an are formed by the Altin Tagh, Nan-shan, and Koko- nur ranges, which project northwards and border the plains of the Lob-nur region and the Chinese province of Kan- suh ; several hill ranges and some great plateaus—notably those of Chaidam or Tsaidam—are comprised between the arc and the chord, and the region generally is closely allied to Tibet in its physical aspects. Occasional peaks rise to considerable altitudes and are covered with perpetual snow ; the plateaus form a succession of steps ascending from the plains of Gobi to the Tibetan plateau. Commer- Darehiendo, called Ta-chien-lu by the Chinese, on the extreme cial road eastern boundary of Tibet, is the principal emporium of the trade from between that country and China. Thence two important roads west to lead to Lhasa, one called the Jung-lam or “official road (935 east. miles long), the other the Chang-lam or “northern road” (890 miles), The former, which is the more direct, is the post road and that by which officials

travel between Lhasa and Peking ; but it crosses much rugged and difficult country. The other is preferred by traders, as being less difficult and less harassed by officials, and mostly passing over plains with an abundance of pasture for their baggage animals. The former has long been known from the pub- lished travels of Huc and Gabet and the embassies from Nepal to China, and its eastern section, from Batang to Darchiendo, has been traversed by several Europeans of late years. The latter lies in regions in eastern Tibet into which no European has yet penetrated, but which were recently crossed by Pandit Krishna from north to south ; they belong to the province of Kham, which appears to be split up into a number of districts, each governed by its own gyalpo or chieftain, who in some instances is subject to Lhasa, in others to China, but not unfrequently is independent of both. Darchiendo itself lies in the Minia (Miniak) district, from which the Chang- lam passes through a suceession of petty districts, Tau, Dango, Dau, and Rongbacha or Horko, skirting Niarong (Gyarung?). The inhabitants of this last are said to have conquered the neighbouring distriets and to have even braved the Chinese, but at last to have been won over to Lhasa by bribery. Rongbacha lies in the valley of the Ja-chu and contains the large town and monastery of Kanzego (2500 houses, 2000 lamas; 10,200 feet above the sea). Beyond it lies, in the valley of the Di-chu, the district of Dar-ge (De-gue), said to be one of the richest and most populous in all Tibet, con- taining towns in which the best jewellery, saddlery, guns, and swords are manufactured. The Chang-lam passes through Dar-ge up to Kegudo (11,800 feet), where it meets roads over the Chang- tang from Chaidam on the north and the Koko-nur district in the north-east. Very little is known of the country between the Chang- lam and the frontiers of China ; it is called Sifan or “the country of the western barbarians” by the Chinese ; to the north are the districts of Chiamogolok and Banakhasum, inhabited by marauding tribes, and lower down are tle Amdo and Thochu districts, on the borders of tracts oeeupied by the Manchu tribes of Sze-chuen (China). From Kegudo the Chang-lam trends westwards over the eastern Hor country, all chang-tang, for 300 miles. The route has not yet been explored, but probably passes through the pasture- lands of the Sok-pas ; on reaching Lake Chomora it turns south- wards, then passes the monastery of Shiabden (14,980 feet), a notable resting-place for caravans, crosses the lower scarp of the Chang-tang by the Lani pass (15,750 feet), and finally descends into the Lhasa plateau. Official The Jung-lim or official road from Darchiendo

passes through road, Litang (18,400 feet; 2500 houses) and Batang (8150 feet; 2000 from east houses) to Gartok or Kiangka, crossing en route the Yalung and to west. Kin-sha rivers ; thence it proceeds up the valley of the Chiamdo- ehu or Lan-tsan-kiang, and has been traversed by the Abbé Desgodins via Dayag (his Tchraya) to Chiamdo (his Tchamouto). He says, “To get an idea of the configuration of the ground let any one take a sheet of parchment, crumple it in his hands into many creases, and then spread it out on a table, and he will obtain a map in relief, furrowed with depressions and steep slopes and presenting very little flat surface.” Chiamdo is the chief town of the province of Kham, and, being considered a point of great strategie importanee, is strongly garrisoned ; it has a large monas- tery, containing 3000 lamas. It is situated at the junction of two rivers, which are frozen in winter ; but in summer the valleys are

highly cultivated. Thence the Jung-lam proceeds south-west to the bridge of Shang-ye-Jam (Kia-yu-kiao) over the Giama-Nu-ehu —here ealled the Sok river—and then ascends to Lhojong (18,140 feet)—the Lourondson of the lamas’ survey—where it is joined by the road from Gartok via Zayul and Nagong. It then trends westwards over the plateaus already mentioned as bordering the eastern basin of the Yaro-tsanpo, passes occasional small villages, monasteries, and lakes, erosses two lofty passes—the Nub-Gang-la (17,940 feet) and the Tola-la (17,350 feet)—descends to the little town of Giamda (10,900 feet) in Kongbo, and, passing out of Kham into U, enters the Lhasa plateau. From the capital it is eontinued over a distance of about 900 miles to the western limits of Khorsum, crossing the Yaro-tsanpo at the Chiak-jam-chori bridge and recross- ing at Junglache, midway passing through Shigatze ; it then tra- verses a great breadth of chang-tang and crosses the meridional water-parting at the Muriam-la (15,500 feet). There are twenty- five staging places called tarjwms, from 20 to 70 miles apart, be- tween Lhasa and Rudok, with accommodation—sometimes houses, but more generally tents—for about 200 men; they are under the charge of a jalno, who is bound to provide yaks and other beasts of burden and horses for carrying the mails, impressing them from the nomads encamped near the tarjums. The road is generally well defined : loose stones are cleared away in the narrow defiles, and piles of stones, surmounted by flags on sticks, are erected at places = the open stretches of tableland where the track is liable to be ost.

The climate of Tibet differs greatly in different parts and at Climate.

different seasons of the year. In western Tibet the frost is perma- nent from October to April, and the lakes and rivers down to 8000 feet are frozen every winter ; at 15,000 feet the thermometer falls below the freezing-point every night ; and at 20,000 feet there is probably perpetual frost in the shade. The mean monthly tempera- tures and ranges of temperature, embracing from six to ten years' observations at the meteorological observatory at Leh (in 34° 10' N. lat., height 11,540 feet), are as follows in degrees Fahrenheit :—

!

=|

$

a

) 3)

iI a

a § a

Month. Range.

=

a

3

a

31°°2 || Oct. | 41°°3 | 80°°5 81°°3 || Noy.| 82°°2 | 26°°7 31°4 || Dec. | 24°°8 | 25°-2

61°“1 59°°6 52°*8

April May March | 32°°0 | 28°°0 || June

42°°0 | 31°°0 | July 48°°6 | 30°°1 || Aug. 56°°4 | 31°°8 ||Sept.

At Lhasa (in 29° 39’ N. lat., height 11,800 feet) the mean tem- peratures observed by the pandits were 36° in February and March and 61° in June and July. Southern Tibet is described as being delightful in summer,—the land covered with vegetation, streams flowing in every valley, and all nature bright, + peers and fresh. But in winter snow and frost reign supreme ; all vegetation is dried up ; the lakes and rivers are frozen ; the roads and footpaths are paved with ice; and cold cutting winds sweep across the surface of the land. In northern Tibet Prejevalsky found ‘‘a terrible climate” in summer at 14,000 feet: in the second half of May wintry snowstorms were not unfrequent and the frost by night reached — 9° Fahr. ; and in June and July there were frosts (28° Fahr.) every clear night. In the winter the cold is intense ; Huc and Gabet, crossing the Di-chu river in 1846, found a great herd of yaks entombed in ice, the river having frozen whilst they were swimming across. cE We)

InDusTRY, TRADE, AND GOVERNMENT.

The industrial arts are at a somewhat low ebb, though in metal- Industry.

founding the natives display a certain amount of ability and taste. Their statues and small bells are, however, only copies of Indian models. They use the iron from their mines, which is very good, for making excellent blades for sabres and other weapons. The are very fond of precious stones, but do not know how to wor them. Their chief industries are connected with

wool, the great and inexhaustible staple of the country. Weaving is generally the work of women. The cloth usually employed for summer garments is the Jwa-wa, which is dyed with madder or indigo, and sold in pieces eight or ten inches in width and about twelve yards in length. Another sort of cloth largely sold is the chro or p'rug, of a better quality of wool, finer and thicker, which is often manu- factured in DbUs (U), whence it is sometimes ealled DbUs p'rug ; it is generally dyed dark red. TZ'erma is a superior kind of thin woollen cloth, a flannel-like fabric, dyed dark red, of which there are two sorts,—le-t'er, made of shawl wool, and bal-t'er, of common wool. Sag-lad is for fine cloth made of fine shawl wool (Je-na) ; and snam-bu is a woollen cloth, very coarse and loosely woven, the common sort of which is not dyed.

Every Tibetan is more or less a trader. Officers for the super- Trade.

intendence of trade, called garpons, are appointed by the king, the ministers, and the great lamaserais. The import and export traffic is carried on by caravans, which, according to the route and its difficulty, employ yaks or sheep. The two great markets are

Govern- ment.

ETHNOLOGY. |

Shigatze (or Digarchi) and Lhasa, where the caravans arrive in December and January from China and Mongolia, Kham and Sze-chuen, Bhutan, Sikkim, and Nepal, Kashmir and Ladak. Of the four principal trade routes the two which start from Darchiendo have been mentioned above (p. 342). The third route, 915 miles in length, starting from Si-ning in Kan-su (China), runs along the Koko-nur to Jun, thence to Di-chu Rab-dun, crosses the homa or lower Dangla, and proceeds via Giaro and Lake Choniora to Lhasa; this route, which is forbidden to the Chinese, is less frequented than the others because of the numerous bands of robbers infesting the country towards Si-ning. Much more im- portant is the route which comes from the west, with Leh as its starting point; it runs via Gartok, Lake Manasarowar, Muriam pass, Tadom, and Shigatze to Lhasa. Like the other caravans, the yearly one whieh follows this route stops several times on the way for local fairs; the districts passed through are compelled to fur- nish it with 300 yaks

for carrying goods and to provide food for the travellers. The centres for Tibetan trade on the borders are— for Mongolia and north China, Si-uing ; for Sze-chuen, Darchiendo ; and in Assam, Davangiri and Udalguri, where there is a great fair twice a year in connexion with the Tawang route. Darjiling is the central mart for the Chumbi valley trade, Patna for that passing through Nepal, and Leh and Kashmir in the west. From China come silks of all varieties (Buddhist prejudice not permitting the Tibetans to rear silk-worms and kill them), carpets, and hardware ; from Mongolia leather, saddlery, sheep, and horses; from Kham perfume ; from Sze-chuen brick tea (some six millions of pounds annually ; tea in leaf is not in use in Tibet); from Tawang, Bhutan, and Sikkim rice and tobacco ; from Nepal broadcloth, silk, indigo, coral, pearls, sugar, spices, and Indian manufactures ; from Ladak and Kashmir saffron and Indian commodities. Silver and gold are the most important articles of export ; then follow salt, wool, woollen manufactures, furs, drugs, and musk. By the Nepal and Ladak routes Tibet exports large quantities of yaks' tails, borax, gold, silver, and ponies. In 1882-83 the total exports to India amounted to £58,322 (Punjab £17,710, North-West Provinces and Oudh £40,612). The imports into Tibet reached £24,197 (£1530 from Punjab, £22,667 from North-West Provinces and Oudh). The principal exports were borax (£17,222), salt (£13,978), wool and woollen goods (£4936). The imports included grain (£13,587), eotton goods (£2875), and sugar (£2395). In 1883-84 the export of borax had increased by 12,329 maunds (about 458 tons), that of wool and woollen goods by 2244 maunds (82 tons), while the ex- ports of salt had decreased by 572 maunds (21 tons). The whole of the increase in borax is in the trade with Kumaun, and in weight it is almost double the increase in the export of rice from that district, for which it is bartered in Tibet, the usual rate of exchange being two of borax to one of rice. The total excess of the value of exports over imports amounted to nearly two lakhs of rupees. In 1885-86 the value of the wool and woollen stuffs exported rose from £4800 to £8800. These figures, however, convey no adequate idea of the British trade with Tibet, asa large quantity of goods passes through Nepal. Russian woollen cloths, coarse and loose, of scarlet, green, blue, and violet colour, as well as hearthrugs, thiekly woven and of a flowered pattern, come through Yarkand and are conveyed all over the country.

Since 1720 Tibet has been a dependency of China, and as such is under the Chinese viceroy of Sze-chuen. Chinese authority is re- presented by two imperial delegates, one of whom is the assistant of the other. Thcy direct exclusively the foreign and military ad- ministration of the eountry, leaving the civil and religious govern- ment in the hands of the Tibetans. They are appointed for terms of three years. Subordinate to these are two daluhi or great offieers and two paymasters, residing, one of each grade, at Lhasa and at Bzhikartse (Shigatze or Digarchi), Next in rank are three eommanders, residing at Lhasa, Digarchi, and Dingri near the Nepal frontier. Below these are three tingpuns, non-commis- sioned offieers, who complete the staff of military Chinese officers in the country. The usual number of Chinese troops, all Manchu- Tatars, in Tibet does not exceed 4500 men (2000 at Lhasa, 1000 at Digarchi, 1000 at Giangchi, 500 at Dingri). In matters of civil government the supreme authority belongs to the dalai lama, the rgyal-ba rin-po-cé, residing in the famous temple-palace of Potala (see Lirasa, vol. xiv. p. 500). But he is consulted only in cases of emergeney, when his decision is never questioned. His powers are transmitted to a special offieer for life, nominated by the Chinese Government, who is known by several titles, such as de-srt or the Mongol nomokhan, ‘‘king of the law”; he is the rgyal-po or ‘‘king”’ as well as the prime minister of the dalai lama, and the regent when the latter is a minor. He is selected from among the four head lamas of the Chomoling, Konduling, Tangialing, and Chajoling divisions near Lhasa, so-called from their chief monas-

1 This is still in a disturbed state, the pass being closed by the Tibetans in consequence (1) of the important preparations made in 1886 for a commercial mission to Lhasa by Mr. Macaulay and (2) of the pressure of the Nepalese Government on that of Tibet in a recent treaty, in order that the whole trade should pass through Nepal.

teries or dgonpa (vulg. gomba). Each of the four must be, like the dalai lama, an avatar, 7.c., when removed by death he must reappear in the flesh as a child, and be raised to that position. Of equal rank with the nomokhan is the deba lama of dGa-ldan, the great monastery near Lhasa; he, however,

is not an avatarian lama: his appointment has to be confirmed by the Chinese em- peror. Next to him is the lama gurw or chaplain of the dalai lama, the director of his conscience; he may be an avatar, but his nomination is also in the hands of the Chinese emperor, and this furnishes an interesting clue to the extent of the imperial power over the church of Tibet. The nomokhan rules with the help of five ministers: four of these—laymen—are for the financial, judieial, revenue, and home departments, and a fifth, a lama, for ecclesias- tical affairs. The four provinces of Mngari-Khorsum, DbUs, gTsang (Tsang), and Khams (Kham) are ruled each by a bka-blon or governor, with a proper staff of minor officers, under the authority of the nomokhan. Besides these there are several minor kings or tgyal-pos outside of the four provinces ; but within these provinees there are four principalities which are under the direct government of the Chinese imperial delegates. These are (1) Dayag or Chraya and (2) Kiamdo or Chiamdo, both on the east ; (3) bKra-8is-lhun-po or Tashilunpo, where resides the pan-ten rin-po-té lama, who yields to none but the dalai lama in religious importance, and, though an avatar, requires also the confirmation of the Chinese emperor to his election'; (4) Sakya-Kongma, south-west of the preceding. There is also a Chinese officer (y-tstn) in residence at Lhasa who supcrin- tends several minor principalities scattered over the country. Every five years Lhasa, Chiamdo, and Tashilunpo send envoys with presents to the emperor. In the east of the country is the princi- pality of Darge or Degue, in the upper course of the Yalung-kiang, ruled by a king who recognizes the suzerainty of China, and at the same time since 1863 has managed to keep on good terms with the king of Lhasa, to whom he has promised submission. On the lower course of the same river are the Chentui or Gyarung tribes, who from the conquest of Tibet were subject to China, but since 1864 have been transferred by the Chinese Government to the rule of the king of Lhasa, who is now represented among them by a Tibetan resident. South of the Chentui is the principality of Dar-rtse-mdo or Darchiendo, the Ta-chien-lu (Tatsienlu) of the Chinese, the rGyala of the Tibetans, where the government, under the supervision of Chinese officers, is entrusted to a native king, ealled Ming-chang-se by the Chinese and rGyala rgyal-bo or king of rGyala by the Tibetans.

ETHNOLOGY.

The Tibetans, in a legend of the Tandjur, pretend to be the de- Inhabit-
scendants of an ape, sent to the snowy kingdom (7.e. Tibet) by ants.

Chenresig (Spyan-ras-gzigs=Avalokitéshvara), and of a Tibetan srinmo (a female demon or rakshasi). They had six children, whom, as soon as they were weaned, they abandoned ‘in a forest of fruit trees. Coming back after a few years, the father found to his great surprise that their number had increased to 500. But, as they were starving, he had recourse to his patron Chenresig, who deelared that he would be the guardian of the race. So he went to Mount Tise (or Kaila the Su-Meru), and threw down a great quantity of the five kinds of grain, with which the famished apes long fed themselves. As the consequence of eating this grain the monkeys’ tails and the hair on their bodies grew shorter and shorter, until they finally dis-appeared. The monkeys began to speak and became men, and clothed themselves with leaves. The interest of this legend, when stripped of its Buddhistic adornments, lies in the fact that belief in a monkey ancestor seems to have been common to various branches of the race. The Tang-chang and Peh-lang tribes boasted also of being descended from a monkey ; they were the two great divisions of the Tang-hiang or Tangut, offsets of the same Sien-pi stock as that of the conquerors of Tibet under Fanni Tubat (see note, p. 338 above). The inhabitants of Tibet belong to the Mongoloid races. Besides the Tibetans so called, occupying the greater part of the country, especially in the south from west to east, there are Turkic tribes called Hor in the north-west, Mongol tribes called Sog (Sok) in the north-east, and several ill-defined tribes on the borders of China, who differ from the others. The Tibetan race is not thoroughly homogeneous, as may be seen from the various accounts of travellers. On the west they are described as being short, with an average stature of 5 feet 2 inches, according to the measurements of General Alexander Cunningham ; in central Tibet and the east they are of middle stature, rather tall than short,—a difference resulting ap- parently from their intermingling with the surrounding races. As general characteristics, they are strong, slender in limb, with black eyes slightly oblique, large mouth, brown hair, no beard, a elear ruddy brownish complexion with an intelligent expression. They are a people of good natural gifts, mild in temper, true to their word, kind and simple, fond of music, dancing, and singing, but thoroughly imbued with superstition and lacking enterprise. Ex- ception is made of the people of the eastern borders,

who are described as being cheats and cowards. The most highly gifted are the inhabitants of Amdo, the region beyond Kham, having

Koko-nur on thé north and China on the east. Taller than the Tibetans of the west, they are famed for their quick intelligence and open disposition ; a large proportion of the readers and chief lamas of the great schools and the higher officials belong to this race. The nomad tribes of the north-east are known by the Chinese common appellative of Sifan (‘‘western aliens”). They include Mongol, Tibetan, and other tribes. In the east, near the borders of China, are the numerous tribes called Gyarung or Chentui ; their language has been studied by Hodgson, who has pointed out its remarkable similarity of structure to that of the Tagals in the Philippines. To the south of these are the Laka or Lolo (mainly in Sze-chuen), Liso, and Moso; the last-named have advanced to some extent into Indo-China. The Laka or Lolo are remarkable for their European white features. Their language, along with that of the Liso and Moso, &c., forms a group cognate to the Burmese. Not so far east are the Lutze or Kunung, Mclam, Arru, Pagny or Djion, Telu, and Remepu, all speaking a dialect of Tibetan, mixed with foreign words, for which the name of Melam is appropriate. Savages are found, says the pandit explorer A—K, in some of the valleys of the range north of Saithang (#.¢., the Altin-tagh north of the Syrten plain). They have a thick and dark skin, are well built and apparently well fed. They are clad in skins, and live in caves and dens or under the shelter of overhanging rocks. Being ignorant of the use of arms in the chase, they lie in wait for their prey near springs of water or salt flats. They are remarkable for their fleetness of foot ; even a horseman finds difficulty in over- taking them. Whenever they see a civilized man they run off in great alarm. They are said to know how to kindle a fire by means of a flint; and they flay the animals they kill with sharp-edged stones. This is not the only survival of the Stone Age, for in the case of some religious rites the lamas are shaved with a ‘‘lightning stone.” The country is thinly peopled and large tracts in the upper plateaus and Mngari-Khorsum are quite uninhabited. In the province of Kham the population is very irregularly distributed, and the

nomad character of the tribes occupying a great part of the upper country makes any estimate doubtful. The central provinces of DbUs and gTsang are the most densely peopled, and A—K puts the population of Lhasa at 25,197 (7540 being lamas). The totals lately given by Chinese authorities (4,000,000) and by the Russian staff-officers (6,000,000) are probably nearer the truth than the 11,000,000 and 33,000,000 of former authorities. The Tibetans are a very social people, and all possible circumstances, especially marriages and births, are made occasions for feasting and enjoyment. The burial customs are peculiar. First the hair is plucked out from the top of the head, in order to facilitate transmigration. The corpse is not disposed of everywhere or always in the same way (lack of fuel sometimes preventing cremation), and the lamas decide whether it is to be put away by interment, by throwing into the river, by burning, or by exposure to beasts and birds of prey. The last-named mode (regarded as very honourable) has almost dis- appeared in the west, but is still practised in the central and eastern provinces ; the body is cut in pieces and the bones broken into frag- ments by professional corpse butchers, and, when all the flesh has been devoured at the selected spot, called dur krod, to which the body had been previously carried, it is not unusual to throw the remaining fragments of the broken bones into the river ; sometimes the phalanges of the fingers are preserved to be used in bead-rolls. The lamas are generally inhumed in a sitting posture, the knees being brought up to the chin and corded together as tightly as possible. In the case of the gyalpos or kahlons the body is burned in a metal vessel, the ashes being afterwards carefully collected to be made into an image of the deceased. Polyandry has been practised from the earliest times, and has been carried by the spread of the race into more genial countries, such as Bhutan. The joint husbands are usually, but not always, brothers. The arrangement seems to work smoothly, and women enjoy general consideration, according to all travellers who have spoken of the subject. The wedding ceremony takes place at the house of the bride’s parents, after adequate presents have been offered by the elder brother, husband or bridegroom, and without the assistance of any priest. It consists chiefly in the engagement of the intending sponses and the placing of a piece of butter by the bride’s parent on the head of the bridegroom and by his parent on that of the bride. Unless otherwise stated by the mother in each case, the elder husband is the putative father of the children, and the others are uncles. Polyandry has resulted in the assignment to the wife of a

paramount position, which in the north-east and east of the country has grown among certain tribes into a real sovereignty, of which we hear from the beginnings of Chinese history, and which has left certain sur- vivals among the Lolo and Moso tribes of the present day as well as in the late Burmese court.

There are two religions in Tibet—Buddhism, in the shape of LaMAisM (g.v.), and an earlier creed, generally called the Bon religion, of which not muchisknown. The latter, a creed evolved from Shamanism, does not seem, from what is said in Buddhist books, to have received any regular form either in doctrine or other- wise until the introduction of Buddhism, which incited the Bonpo

eee a

to seek in a better organization the means of holding their own. They borrowed much from the Buddhists, as the latter did from them,—many deities supposed to be Buddhist because of their Buddhist names being simply Bon gods. At the present day the two religions exist peaceably side by side, and the Bon creed has numerous adherents and rich convents in the central provinces of DbUs and gTsang, but few in the western and eastern provinces. The Bonpo are sometimes called the “ Sect of the Black,” as distin- guished from the “Red” or Old and “Yellow” or Reformed Lamaists, both appellations being derived from the colour of their garments, though Bonpo have been seen in red as well as in black. They are also called Grun-drin-pa (see below). The establishment of the Bonpa or Bon-éos, z.¢., the Bon religion, is attributed to Gsen-rabs, also called Bstan-pa GSen-rabs, ¢. ¢., GSen-rabs of the doctrine, the name under which he is worshipped in the temples of his sect, as, for instance, at Tsodam in east Tibet, not far from Bonga ; his statue, which occupies the central place, represents him as squatting, with his right arm outside his red scarf, and holding in his left the vase of knowledge. In a Bon sutra he is said to hold in his right hand the iron hook of mercy, with which he fishes people out of the ocean of transmigration, in his left hand the seal of equality, and to wear on his head the mitra jewel. His full name is Bon gsen- rabs-grun-drun.! Gsen-rabs-mi-po, or “(the) excellent human god,” another name of the same personage,

has been identified by some Tibetan authorities with Lao-tsze or Lao-kiun of China. This identification, however, rests only on the slender basis of an apparent affinity of sound between the sen of gen and a common Chinese appellative for the Taoists. The genuine resemblances between Bonpa and Taoism come from the fact that both reJigions have drawn from similar sources, from the native rude Shamanism which is much the same in both countries, from the tantric and esoteric doctrines of India, and from Buddhist ideas. The identity is sufficient to have deceived the uncritical mind of native scholars, and the matter has not yet been carefully examined by Europeans. The eighth book of the Grub-mthah-sel-kyi-mé-lon, in twelve books, by a Tibetan lama, Chkoikyi Nyima (1674-1740), which, with three others, has been lately translated by Sarat Chandra Das (in Jour. As. Soe. Beng. for 1881-1882), gives some information on the rise of the Bonpa in the region of Shang-shung, identified, not with the modern region of the same name in the north-west of Lhasa, but with Gugé or Ghughé and Knaor or Upper Besahr. Three stages are pointed out in the development of the Bonpa after the time of its mythical founder, who reckoned among his spiritual descendants sages of Persia, Leg-tang-mang (some names of Lao-kiun ?) of China, of Thomo, of Miniak (east Tibet), of Sumpar, and of Shang-shung. The first stage is that of the human and historical founder of the religion, a sage of the name of Shong-hon, who lived in the semi-historical time of Thi-de-tsanpo, the sixth king of Tibet (the first is said to have ruled about 415 B.c.). The second stage, dating from the 3d century B.c., is that at which Bon theories and doctrines began to exist, a beginning coincident with the arrival in the country of three Bon priests from Kashmir, Dusha, and Shang- shung. The recital down to this point gives evidence of the vague- ness of the traditions preserved by the Tibetans with reference to their own beginnings, and shows that the author has striven hard to put together shreds of ancient reminiscence within a fabulous and mythical account. With the third stage we come down to historical times. It is divided into three periods,—the first dating from the arrival of an Indian pandit by way of Kashmir, who wrote some of the Bon books; the second being that of the introduction of Buddhism and the consequent persecution leading the Bonpo to multiply their sacred books, which they concealed ; and the last being that of the revival of the Bonpa and the bring- ing forth of the hidden books subsequent to the overthrow and temporary effacement of Buddhism by gLang-dharma (908-1013). According to this source, which, however, is

certainly tinged by Buddhist prejudice, it was only at the last-mentioned date that the Bonpa reached its complete organization.

Eighteen principal gods and goddesses are enumerated, includ- ing the red wrathful razor spirit, the black wrathful razor spirit, the tiger god of glowing fire (the popular god universally wor- shipped), the messenger demon Rgyal-po, otherwise Pe(d)kar rgyal-po (much dreaded and worshipped in the central provinces : he is said to be identical with the deity Kye-pang of Lhasa, figured as a wooden stick or log decked with rags; see Jaeschke, Dvet., p. 7), the god of sound, the great demon, and the serpent demon. Information is lacking as to the specific characteristics of these gods, and it is not clear to which of them belongs the title of kun-tu bzang-po, frequently cited as the chief Bon god; he is re- puted to have a wife Yom-ki-long-mo, the eternal female principle, and from their union have resulted all the minor gods and the whole world.

a

1 The term gyuh-druis (svasti), also applied to his followers, means the cross cramponnée, the svastika, similar to that of the Buddhists, from which it differs only in direction, the Bonpo manner of circumambulation rcund a shrine or deity being from right to left, while the Buddhist manner is from left to right.

Bonpa.

Bonpa litera- ture.

History.

HISTORY. |

Of the Bonpa literature the only text which has been made accessible to Western scholars is a sutra translated by A. Schiefner in Mém. del Acad. de St. Pétersb. (xxviii., No. 1) called Gtsangma klu hbum dkar-po (The holy white naga, the hundred thousand”) ; but Buddhist influence is so manifest in it that no correct idea of the primitive Bon religion can be derived from it. In a native account, dating from the 18th century and translated by Sarat

Chandra Das, the following are enumerated—three works on philo- sophy and metaphysics, four meditative works, nine ritual serials, six series of epistles, and four mystic works of a late period, in all of which the title of the translated sutra is not made known. It is stated in the translation that these Bon scriptures originally consisted of wholesale plagiarisms, subsequently altered in ortho- graphy and terminology from Buddhist canonical works. The Bonpo are said to have got the counterparts of the Kah-gyur in general. As a correlative of the six-syllable prayer of the lamas 6m mani pad-me hum (vulgarly ‘‘om-mani pémé-on”), they have one in eight syllables, which they pronounce ma-tri-mu-tre-sa-la- dzu. The Bonpo are now frequently confounded with the Red Lamas or Buddhists of the Old school, who are distinguished from the Yellow or Reformed sect by their garments.

HISTORY.

From the 11th century B.c. the Chinese used to call by the name of Kiang the tribes (about 150 in number) of nomads and shepherds in Koko-nur and the north-east of present Tibet ; but their know- ledge continued to be confined to the border tribes until the sixth century of our era. In the annals of the T’ang dynasty it is said that the population of the country originated from the Bat-Kian or Fah Kiang; and, as the information collected in the first part of the notice concerning Tu-bat, afterwards Tu-ban, the modern Tu-fan, dates partly (as is proved by internal evidence) froin a time anterior to the T’ang dynasty (618 A.p.), some degree of reliance may be placed on its statements. There we are told that Fanni, a scion of the southern Liang dynasty of the Tu-bat family (which flourished from 397 to 415 at Liang-chu in Kan-suh), who had submitted to the northern Liang dynasty, fled in 433 with all his people from his governorship of Lin-sung (in Kau-chu) westwards across the Yellow river, and founded beyond Tsih-shih (‘‘ heapy stones”) a state amidst the Kiang tribes, with a territory extend- ing over a thousand lz. By his mild and just rule he was soon enabled to establish his sway over an immense territory. His original state was apparently situated along the upper course of the Yalung river, an affluent of the Kin-sha-kiang. The foregoing statements, which are most probably genuine history, are preceded in Tibetan chronicles by a mass of legends invented by the native

Buddhist historians for the purpose of connecting their monarchy with India.

up his residence in the Yarlung country south of Lhasa. This Yarlung, which borrowed its name from the Yalung of the state of Fanni Tu-bat, is a river which flows into the Yaro-tsanpo. The first king and his six successors are known as the seven celestial khrt; the next series consists of six kings known as the earthly legs ; and they were followed by cight terrestrial Jdé. This three- fold succession is apparently an imitation or a debased form of the ancient legend of heavenly, earthly, and human rulers, which was carricd into Persia and China, and from the latter country into Japan and Tibet,—the relative number of kings being altered in the last-named countries to suit local convenience and the small amount of truth which they contain. Whilst giving an Aryan descent to their first kings, the ancient Tibetans assigned to their princesses a divine origin, and called them lhamo, ‘‘ goddess.” The gynecratic habits of the race are manifested in the names of all these kings, which were formed by a combination of those of their parents, the mother’s generally preceding that of the father. The dé kings were followed by four rulers simply called bésan (“mighty ”).

Then occurs a break in the lineal descent, and the king next in order (c. 461) may be the Tatar Fanni Tu-bat, but most probably his son and successor. His name was Lha-tho thori gnyan-btsan, otherwise Gnyan-btsan of Lha-tho thori, according to the custom usual in Tibet of calling great personages after the name of their birthplace. Lha-tho means ‘‘heaps of stones,” and therefore

appears to be a translation of Tsih-shih, “heapy stones,” the country mentioned in connexion with the foundation of a state by FanniTu-bat. It was during his reign that the first Buddhist objects are reputed to have reached Tibet, probably from Nepal. Little is said of his three immediate successors. The fourth was gNam-ri srong btsan, who died in 630. During his reign the Tibetans obtained their first knowledge of arithmetic and medicine from China ; the prosperity and pastoral wealth of the country

were so great that ‘‘the king built his palace with cement moistened with the milk of the cow and the yak.” To the same king is attributed the discovery of the inexhaustible salt mine called Chyang-gi- ts’wa (Byang- gi-ts’wa= ‘‘northern salt”), which still supplies the greater portion of Tibet. The reign of his illustrious son, Srong btsan sgam-po, opened up a new era; he introduced Buddhism aud the art of writing from India, and was the founder (in 639) of Lha-ldan, afterwards Lha-sa. He was greatly helped in his proselytism by his two wives, one a Nepal princess, daughter of King Jyoti varma, the other an imperial daughter of China ; afterwards, they being childless, he took two more princesses from the Ru-yong (=‘‘left corner” ?) aud Mén (general appellative for the nations between Tibet and the Indian plains) countrics. As a conqueror he extended his sway from the still unsubdued Kiang tribes of the north to Ladak in the west, and in the south he carried his power through Nepal to the Indian side of the Himalayas. How far southward this dominion at first extended is not known; but in 703 Nepal and the country of the Brahmans rebelled, and the Tibetan king, the third successor of Srong btsan sgam-po, was killed while attempting to restore his power. It is rather curious that nothing is said of this Tibetan rule in India, except in the Chinese annals, where it is mentioned until the end of the monarchy in the 10th century, as extending over Bengal to the sea,—the Bay of Bengal being called the Tibetan Sea. J. R. Logan has found ethnological and linguistic evidence of this domination, which was left unnoticed in the Indian histories. Mang-srong mang btsan, the second son and successor of Srong btsan sgam-po, continuing the conquests of his father, subdued the Tukuhun Tatars around the Koko-nur in 6638, and attacked the Chinese ; after some adverse fortune the latter took their revenge and penetrated as far as Lhasa, where they burnt the royal palace (Yumbu-lagang), Khri Ide gtsng-brtan-mesag-ts’oms, the grandson of Mang-srong and second in succession from him, promoted the spread of Buddhism and obtained for his son, Jangts’a Lhapon, who was famous for the beauty of his person, the hand of the accomplished princess Kyim- shang, daughter, otherwise kung-chu, of the Chinese emperor Juy- tsung. But the lady arrived after the death of her betrothed, and after long hesitation became the bride of the father. She gave birth in 730 to Khri srong ldeu btsan, in the Buddhist annals the most illustrious monarch of his country, because of the strenuous efforts he made in favour of that religion during his reign of forty- six years (743-789). His son and successor Muni btsan-po, being

determined to raise all his subjects to the same level, enacted that there should be no distinction between poor and rich, humble and great. He compelled the wealthy to share their riches with the indigent and helpless, and to make them their equals in respect of all the comforts and conditions of life. He repeated this experi- ment three times; but each time he found that they all returned to their former condition, the rich becoming still richer and the poor still poorer. The sages attributed this curious phenomenon to the good and evil acts of their former lives. Nothing of im- portance occurred during the following reigns, until that of Ral- pachen, who won glory by his care for the translations of the Buddhist scriptures which he caused to be completed, or rewritten more accurately when required. In this reign a severe struggle took place with China, peace being concluded in 821 at Ch'ang- ngan and ratified at Lhasa the following year by the erection of bilingual tablets, which still exist. Ralpachen was assassinated by the partisans of glang-dharma and the country fell into dis- order. gLang-dharma instituted a violent persecution of Buddhism ; but he was soon assassinated in his turn, and the kingdom divided into a western and an eastern part by his two sons. The partition did not, however, prevent internecine wars. The history for some time now becomes rather intricate, and requires some attention. Pal K'or tsan, the second western king, after a reign of thirteen years died leaving two sons, Thi Tasi Tsegpa-pal and Thi Kyida Nyimagou. The latter went to Ngari (Mmgari) and founded the capital Purang; he left three sons, of whom the eldest declared himself king of Mang-yul (the Monhuil of our maps), the second seized Purang, and the youngest, Detsud-gan, became king of the province of Shang-shung (the modern Ghughé). The revival of Buddhism began with the two sons of the last-named, the elder of whom became a monk. The younger, Khorré, inherited his father's throne, and was followed in his authority by twenty successors. Tasi Tsegpa also had three sons,—Palde, Hodde, and Kyide. The descendants of the first made themselves masters of Gung-t'ang, Lugyalwa, Chyipa, Lhatse, Langlung, and Tsakor, where they severally ruled as petty chiefs. The descendants of Kyide spread themselves over the Mu, Jang, Tanag, Yarulag, and Gyaltse

districts, where they also ruled as petty princes. Hodde left four sons,—Phabdese, Thide, Thich'ung, and Gnagpa. The first and fourth became masters of Tsangrong, the second took possession of Amdo and Tsongkha, the third became king of DbUs, and removed the capital to Yarlung, south of Lhasa. He was followed on his throne from son to son by eleven successors. History is silent as to the fate of the eastern king, the other son of gLang-dharma, and his successors, but the geographical names of the chicftainships enumerated above make it clear that the western kingdom had extended its power to the east. Chronology is deficient for all that period. While the dynasty of Khorré in Shang-shung and that of Thich'ung in DbUs were running, another authority, destined to become the superior of both, had arisen in Tibet. Khorré left his throne to his son Lhade, who was himself succeeded by his three sons, the youngest of whom invited the celebrated Indian Buddhist, Atisha, to leave his monastery Vikrama Shila for Tibet, where he settled in the great lamaserai of Thoding in Ngari. Besides religious books and teachings, he introduced in 1026 the method of computing time by cycles of sixty years, '*obtained from the Indian province of Shambala." He was the first of the several chief priests whose authority became paramount in the country. The kings of DbUs greatly patronized them, as for instance in the case of the celebrated Sakya Pandita by the seventh of these kings. Pandita, at the special request of Kuyuk, the successor of Ogdai, paid a visit to his court in 1246-48. Five years afterwards Kublai Khan conquered all the east of Tibet ; and, aftcr he had ascended the throne of China, the Mongol emperor invited to his court Phagspa Lodoi Gyaltshan, the nephew of the same Pandita. He remained twelve years with the emperor, and at his request franred for the Mongol language an alphabet imitated from the Tibetan, which, however, did not prove satisfactory, and disappeared after eighty-five years without having been very largely used. In return for his services, Kublai invested Phagspa with sovereign power over (1) Tibet proper, comprising the thirtcen districts of U and Tsang, (2) Kham, and (3) Amdo. From this time the Sakya-pa lamas became the universal rulers of Tibet, and remained so, at least nominally, under twenty-one successive lamas during seventy years (1270-1340). Their name was derived from the Sakya monastery, which was their cradle and abode, and their authority for temporal matters was exercised by specially appointed regents. When the

ower of the Sakya began to wane, that of the rival monasteries of Digeaa! Phagdub, and T'shal increased largely, and their respective influence and authority overbalanced that of the successors of Phagspa. It was at this troubled epoch that Chyang Chub Gyalt- shan, better known as Phagmodu from the name of his native town, appeared on the scene. He subdued Tibet proper and Kham, for the continued possession of which he was, however, compelled to fight for several years ; but he succceded in the long run, and with the approval of the court of Peking established a dynasty which furnished twelve rulers in succession. When the Mongol dynasty of China passed away, the Mings confirmed and enlarged the dominion of the Tibctan rulers, recognizing at the same time the chief lamas of the eight principal monasteries of the country. Peace and prosperity gradually weakened the benign rule of the kings of this dynasty, and during the reign of the last but one internecine war was rife between the chiefs and nobles of U and Tsang. This state of things, occurring just as the last rulers of the Ming dynasty of China were struggling against the encroach- ments of the Manchus, their future successors, favoured the inter- ference of a Khoskot Mongol prince, Tengir To, called in the Tibetan sources king of Koko-nur. The Mongols were interested in the religion of the lamas, especially since 1576, when Altan, khakan of the Tumeds, and his cousin summoned the chief lama of the most important monastery to visit him. This lama was Sodnam rGyamtso, the third successor of Gedundub, the founder of the Tashilumbo monastery in 1447, who had been elected to the more important abbotship of Galdan near Lhasa, and was thus the first of the great, afterwards dalai, lamas. The immediate successor of Gedundub, who ruled from 1475 to 1541, had appointed a special officer styled depa to control the civil administration of the country. To Sodnam rGyamtso the Mongol khans gave the title of Vadjra Dalai Lama in 1576, and this is the first use of the widely known title of dalai lama. During the minority of the fifth (really the third) dalai Jama, when the Mongol king Tengir To, under the pretext of supporting the religion, intervened in the affairs of the country, the Pan-ch'en Lo-sang Ch'o-kyi Gyal-ts'ang lama obtained the withdrawal of the invaders by the payment of a heavy war indemnity, and then applied for help to the first Manchu emperor of China, who had just ascended the throne. This step enraged the Mongols, and caused the advance of Gushri Khan, son and successor of Tengir To, who invaded Tibet, dethroned all the petty princes, including the king of Tsang, and, after having subjugated the

whole of the country, made the fifth dalai lama supreme monarch of all Tibet, in 1645. The Chinese Government in 1653 confirmed the dalai lama in his authority, and he paid a visit to the emperor at Peking. The Mongol Khoskotes in 1706 and the Sungars in 1717 interfered again in the succession of the dalai

lama, but the Chincse army finally conquered the country in 1720, and the present system of government was established. The events which have happened since that time have been recorded in the articles LHasaA and LADAK.

LancuacE! AND LITERATURE.

Bod-skad is the general name of the language of Tibet, which Lan- is also occasionally called Gangs-tan-gyi skad (i.e. “the glaciers guage.

language”). This name is specially applied to the forms in use in DbUs-gTsang. The vernacular is called p’dl-skad or common language in contradistinction to the tos-skad or book language. Besides the Bod-skad there are two chief dialects? in Great Tibet, — that of Khams, spoken in the three provinces of Mdo (Darrtse- mdo), Kham, and Gong in the east, and that of Ngari-Khorsum in the west. Jaeschke arranged these dialects under three heads,— (1) western, including those of Balti and Purig, the most archaic, and of Ladak and Lahul; (2) central, including those of Spiti and of DbUsand gTsang ; (3) Khams. To the same Bhot group belong the Changlo or Bhutani or Lhopa, the language of Bhutan, of which we have a grammatical notice by Robinson (1849), and the Serpa and the Takpa, of Tawang, both of which are only known through the vocabularics collected by Hodgson. The later Takpa forms the transition between the Bhot group and the Si-fan group, which in- cludes the Miniak, Sungpan, Lifan, and Thochu dialects, spoken near the eastern borders, as well as the Horpa, spoken on a larger area west of the preceding, and much mixed with Turkic in-

1 The Capuchin friars who were settled in Lhasa for a quarter of a century from 1719 studied the language ; two of them, Francisco Orazio della Penna, well known from his accurate deseription of Tibet, and Cassian di Macerata sent home materials which were utilized by the Augustine friar Aug. Ant. Georgi of Rimini (1711-97) in his Alphabetum Tibetanwm (Roine, 1762, 4to), a ponderous and confused compilation, which may be still referred to, but with great caution. The Tibetan characters were drawn by Della Penna, and engraved by Ant. Fontarita in 1738. In 1820 Abel Rémusat published his Recherches sur les Langues Tartares, a chapter of which was devoted to Tibetan. The next work of importance was a dictionary, intended for European students, which was published, with Tibetan types, at the expense of the East India Company, in 1826 at Serampur, and edited by John Marshman, from a MS. copy made by Fr. Chr. G. Sehroeter, a missionary in Bengal, who had substituted English for the Italian of the original. It was the unsifted result of the labours of an unknown Italian missionary, who had been stationed either in eastern Tibet or close to the frontier in Bhutan. It was properly a collection of all the sentences he could get written by a native teacher, completed with extracts from the Padma tangyig, a popular series of legends about Padma Sambhava. Unfortunately the work was left unfinished, and unrevised, as there was no Tibetan scholar to correct the proofs. Though richer in words than later dictionaries, the work cannot, for these reasons, be accepted as an authority on any doubtful point. The grammatical notice, consisting of forty pages from Schroeter, prefixed to this Dictionary of the Bhotanta, or Butan Language, hardly deserves mention. At Calcutta in 1834 the Hungarian Alexander Csoma de Korés (1784-1842) brought out his Dictionary, Tibetan and English, and his Grammar of the Tibetan Language in English, prepared on the western frontier, where he had resided for several years at the monasteries of Yangla and Pukdal in Zanskar, and finally at Kanum in Upper Besahr, enjoying the help of native scholars. His works are admirable so far as concerns the literary language (chiefly that of the Buddhist translations). At St Petersburg J. J. Schmidt published his Grammatik der Tibetischen Sprache in 1839 and his Tibetisch-Deutsches Worterbuch in 1841, but neither of these works justified the great pretensions of the author, whose access to Mongolian sources had enabled him to enrich the results of his labours with a,certain amount of information unknown to his predecessors. In France, P. E. Foucaux published in 1847 a translation from

the Raya tcher rol pa, the Tibetan version of the Lalita Vistara, and in 1858 a Grammaire Thibétaine; while Ant. Sehiefner had begun at St Petersburg in 1849 his series of translations and researches. His Tibetische Studien (1851-68) is a valuable collection of documents and observations. In 1861 Lepsius published his paper Ueber Chinesische wnd Tibetische Lautverhdltnisse; and since 1864 Léon Feer has brought out in Paris many translations of texts from Tibetan Buddhist literature. In 1849 the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal published comparative vocabularies of spoken and written Tibetan by Bryan H. Hodgson, and grammatical notices of Tibetan (according to Csoina's grammar) and of Changlo, a Tibetan dialect, by W. Robinson. But it was at Singapore in 1852 that the general relationship of the Tibetan and the Burman, now admitted in comparative philology, was established for the first time, by J. R. Logan, in the Journal of the Indian Archipelago. Prof. Max Miller, in his "Letter on the Classification of the Turanian Languages" of 1853, arrived m- dependently at a similar conclusion. In 1857 the Moravian missionaries estab- lished a station at Kyelang, district of Garza, British Lahul, in Ladak, a school, and a lithographic press, and it is to the labours of FE. A. Jaeschke of this mission that we are indebted for the most valuable materials for the practical study of Tibetan. From 1860 to 1867 that scholar made several important com- munications, chiefly with reference to the phonetics and the dialectical pro- nunciation, to the academies of Berlin and St Petersburg, and in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal. In 1868 at Kyelang he published by lithography A Short Practical Grammar of the Tibetan Language, with special reference to the spoken dialects, and the following year a Romanized Tibetan and English Dic- tionary. He also published in 1871-76 at Gnadau in Prussia by the same process a Tibetan and German dictionary. Afterwards he prepared for the English Government A Tibetan-English Dictionary, with special reference to the prevailing dialects, in 1881. Dr H. Wenzel, one of his pupils, brought out in 1883 from his MS. a Simplified Tibetan Grammar. Major Th. H. Lewin with the help of a lama compiled A Manual of Tibetan, or rather a series of colloquial phrases, which was brought out at Calcutta in 1879. A portion of the New Testament has been translated into Tibetan. As regards native philology, the most ancient work extant is a grammar of the Tibetan tongue, by Tonmi Samb'ota, the introducer of the Indian alphabet, preserved in the Bstan-hgyur (mdo exxiv). This collection also contains other works of the same

kind, diction- aries by later writers, translations of many Sanskrit works on grammar vocabulary, &c., and bilingual dictionaries, Sanskrit and Tibetan. As separate publications there are several vocabularies of Chinese and Tibetan ; Mongol and Tibetan; Chinese, Manchu, Mongol, Oelét, Tibetan, and Turkish; Tibetan, Sanskrit, Manchu, Mongol, and Chinese.

2 There are without doubt many minor skad-lugs or dialects which are still unknown. For instance, in the Pan-yul valley north of Lhasa the inhabitants are said to speak an indistinct skad-lugs.

Philo- logy.

LANGUAGE. |

gredients. With the cxception of the Sokpa, a Mongol dialect, and of the Gyarung, a pre-Chinese dialect, the languages spoken in Tibet belong to the large linguistic family commonly called Tibeto- Burman, a division of the Kuen-lun group, which is a part of the Turano-Scythian stock.

The language is more consonantal than vocalic, though much softened in the central dialect. The consonants, 80 in number, which are deemed to possess an inherent sound a, are the follow- ing :—ka, k’a, ga, nga, ra, ta, dja, nya, ta, ta, da, na, pa, p’a, ba, ma, tsa, ts’a, dza, wa, zha, za, ’h, ya, ra, la, sha, sa, ha,’a; the so- called Sanskrit cerebrals are represented by the letters ta, @’a, da, na, sha turned the other way. Ya, when combined as second con- sonant with k-, p-, m-, is written under the first letter. Ra, when combined as second letter with k-, ¢-, p-, is written under the first, and when combined with another consonant as first letter over the second. The vowels are a, 7, wu, ¢, 0, which are not distinguished as long or short in writing, though they are so in the vernaculars iu the case of words altered by phonetic detrition. Agglomerations of consonants are not objectionable ; and they are often met with as initials, giving the appearance of telescoped words—an appearance which historical ctymology often confirms. Many of these initial consonants are silent in the softened dialects of the central provinces, or have been resolved into a simpler one of another character. The language is much ruled by laws of euphony, which have been strictly formulated by grammarians. Among the initials, five, viz., 9, d, }, m, ’h, are regarded as prefixes, and are called so for all purposes, though they belong

sometimes to the stem. As a rule none of these letters can be placed before any of the same organic class. Post-positions, pa or ba and ma, are required by the noun (sub- stantive or adjective) that is to be singled out ; po or bo (masc.) and mo (fem.) are used for distinction of gender or for emphasis. The cases of nouns are indicated by suflixes, which vary their initials according to the final of the nouns. The plural is denoted when required by adding one of several words of plurality. When several words are connected in a sentence they saline require more than one case element, and that comes last. There are personal, demonstrative, interrogativc, and reflexive pronouns, as well as an indefinite article, which is also the numeral for ‘‘one.” The personal pronouns are replaced by various terms of respect when speaking to or before superiors, and there are many words besides which are only cmployed in ceremonial language. The verb, which is properly a participle, has no element of person, and denotes the conditions of tense and mood by an external and internal inflexion, or the addition of auxiliary verbs and suffixes when the stem is not susceptible of inflexion. The conditions which approximate most closely to our present, perfect, future, and imperative are marked either by aspiration of the initial or by one of the five prefix con- sonants according to the rules of euphony, and the whole looks like a former system thrown into confusion and disorder by phonetic decay. As to the internal vowel, a or ¢ in the present tends to become o in the imperative, the ¢ changing to a in the past and future ; 7 and x are Icss Hable to change. A final s is also occasion- ally added. Only a limited number of verbs are capable of four changes; some cannot assume more than three, some two, and many only one. This deficiency is made up by the addition of auxiliaries or suffixes. There are no numeral auxiliaries or segrega- tives used in counting, as in many languages of eastern Asia, though words expressive of a collective or integral are often used after the tens, sometimes after a smaller numbcr. In scientific and astrological works, the numerals, as in Sanskrit, are expressed by symbolical words. In the order of the sentence the substantive precedes the adjective and the verb stands last; the object and the adverb precede the verb, and the genitive precedes the noun on which it depends. An active or causal verb requires before it the instrumental instcad of the nominative case, which goes only before a neuter or intransitive verb. The chief differences between the classical language of the Tibetan translators of the 9th century and the vernacular, as well as the language of native words, existed in vocabulary,

phraseology, and grammatical structure and arose from the influence of the translated texts.

The Tibetan language, in its written and spoken forms, has a great interest for philologists, on account of its bearing on the history of the so-called monosyllabic languages of eastern Asia. Is the Tibctan a monosyllabic language passing to agglutination ? or the reverse? The latter is the fact, as we shall see further on. The whole question has turned upon the elucidation of the pheno- menon of the silent letters, generally prefixed, which differentiate the spelling of many words from their pronunciation, in the central dialect or current speech of Lhasa. As long as the sounds of this dialect only were known, the problem could not be fully grasped. Rémusat rather dubiously suggested, while Schmidt and Schiefner maintained, that the silent letters were a device of grammarians to distinguish in writing words which were not distinguished in speech. But this convenient opinion was not sufficient for a general explana- tion, being supported by only a few cases. Among these are—(a) the addition of silent letters to foreign words in analogy with older terms of the language (¢g., the Persian ¢adjzk was tran-

er 6 eT

seribed staggzig or ‘‘tiger-leopard,” because the foreign term left untouched would have been meaningless for Tibetan readers) ; (0) the addition for the sake of uniformity of prefixed letters to words etymologically deprived of them; (c) the probable addition of letters by the Buddhist teachers from India to Tibetan words in order to make them more similar to Sanskrit expressions (for instance, xje- for ‘‘king,” written in imitation of raja, though the original word was je or she, as is shown by cognate languages). On the other hand, while phonetically the above explanation was not inconsistent with such cases as rka, dkah, bkah, bska, and nga, rnga, ngag, sngags, Inga, ngad, and brtse, brdzwn, dbyar, &c., where the italicized letters are pronounced iu full and the others are left aside, it failed to ex- plain other cases, such as dgra, mgron, spyod, spyan, sbrang, sbrul, bkra, k’ri, krad, k’rims, k’rus, &c., pronounced da, don, ¢od or $wod, ten, dang, dew, ta, tt, tad or teh, ?im, tu, &c., and many others, where the spoken

forms are obviously the alteration by wear and tear of sounds originally similar to the written forms. Csoma de Kérés, who was acquainted with the somewhat archaic sounds of Ladak, was able to point to only a few letters as silent. But Major Cunningham, in his book on the same country (1854), held that the Tibetan writing, when first applied to the language, was the faithful transcription of speech, and he gave as a proof that the name of the province of U, written DbUs, was the Debasx of Ptolemy. Foucaux, in his Grammaire (1858), quoted a fragment from a native work on grammar several centuries old, in which the pronunciation of the supposed silent letters is carefully described. Since then the problem has been disentangled; and now minor points only remain to be cleared up. Jaeschke devoted special at- tention to the dialectical sounds, and showed in several papers and by the comparative table prefixed to his dictionary that in the western and eastern dialects these sounds correspond more or less closely to the written forms. Thus the valuable testimony of these dialects may be added to the evidence furnished by foreign tran- scriptions of Tibetan words, loan words in conterminous languages, and words of common descent in kindred tongues. And the whole shows plainly that the written forms of words which are not of later remodelling are really the representatives of the pronunciation of the language as it was spoken at the time of the transcription. The concurrence of the evidence indicated above enables us to form the following outline of the evolution of Tibetan. In the 7th century there was no difference between the spoken and the written language. Soon afterwards, when the language was extended to the western valleys, the prefixed and most of the important con- sonants vanished from the spoken words. The ya-tag and ra-tag or y and r subscript, and the s after vowels and consonants, were still in force. The next change took place in the central pro- vinces ; the ra-tags were altered into cerebral dentals, and the ya- tags became&’ Later on the superscribed letters and finals d and s disappeared, except in the east and west. It was at this stage that the language spread in Lahul and Spiti, where the superscribed letters were silent, the d and g finals were hardly heard, and as, os, us, were at, ot, wi. The words introduced from Tibet into the border languages at that time differ greatly from those introduced at an earlier period. The other changes are more recent and re- stricted to the provinces of U and Tsang. The vowel sounds ai, ot, wi, have become é, 6, %; and a, o, u before the finals d and n are now d, 6, % The media# have become aspirate tenues with a low intonation,

which also marks the words having a simple initial consonant; while the former aspirates and the complex initials simplified in speech are uttered with a high tone, or, as the Tibetans say, ‘‘with a woman’s voice,” shrill and rapidly. An inhabitant of Lhasa, for example, finds the distinction between sh and zh, or be- tween s andz, not in the consonant, but in the tone, pronouncing sh and s with a high note and zh and z with a low one. The in- troduction of the important compensation of tones to balance phonetic losses had begun several centuries before, as appears from a Tibetan MS. (No. 4626 St Petersburg) partly published by Jaeschke (Monatsber. Akad. Berl., 1867). A few instances will serve to illus- trate what has been said. In the bilingual inscriptions, Tibetan and Chinese, set up at Lhasa in 822, and published by Bushell in 1880, we remark that the silent letters were pronounced: Tib. spudgyal, now pugyal, is rendered swh-pot-ye in Chinese symbols ; khri, now ¢4, is kich-li; hbrong is puh-lung; snyan is sheh-njoh and su-njoh; srong is su-lun, su-lung, and si-lwng. These tran- scriptions show by their variety that they were made from the spoken and not from the written forms, and, considering the limited capacities of Chinese orthoepy, were the nearest attempt at rendering the Tibetan sounds. Spra or sprew (a monkey), now altered into dew at Lhasa, few in Lahul, Spiti, and Tsang, is still more recognizable in the Gyarung shepri, and in the following degenerated forms—shrew in Ladak, strew-go in Khams and in cognate languages, soba in Limbu, sakew in Lepcha, stmai in Tablung Naga, sibeh in Abor Miri, shibe in Sibsagar Miri, sarrha in Kol, sara in Kuri, &e. Grog- ma (ant), now altered into the spoken oma, is still kyoma in Bhutan, and, without the suffix, Zorok in Gyarung, k’oro- in Sokpa, k’orok, k’alek in Kiranti, &. Grang-po (cold), spoken ¢’ammo, is still grang-mo in Takpa, k’yam in Bur-

Litera- ture.

048

mese, &. A respectful word for “head” is u, written dbu, which finds its cognates in Murmi thobo, Kusunda chipi, Sibsagar Miri ~~tub, &e. Byu (bird), spoken chya, is still pyc in Gyarung. Brjod (to speak), pronounced jod, is cognate to the Burmese pyauhtso, the Garo brot, &. The word for “cowries” is ’gron~~ in written, rum- in spoken Tibetan, and grwa in written

Burmese ; slop (to learn), spoken lop, is slop in Melam. “Moon”’ is zlava in written and dawa in spoken language, in which ~~va is a suffix ; the word itself is zla~~, cognate to the Mongol ssara, Sokpa sara, Gyarung t-stle, Vayu cholo, &c. The comnion spoken word for “head ” is go, written mgo, to which the Munipuri moko and the Mishmi mkura are related. Sometimes the written forms correspond to double words which have disappeared. For instance, gye (eight), which is written brgyad and still spoken vrgyad in Balti in the west and Khams in the east, is gyad in Ladak, Lahul, and U. The same

-word does not appear elsewuere; but we find its two parts separately,

such as Gurung pre, Murmi pre, Taksya phre, and Takpa gyet, Serpa gye, Garo chet, &c. Rta (horse) is reduced to ¢a in speech, but we find ri, rhyi, roh in Sokpa, Horpa, Thochu, Miniak, and ¢d, tah, teh, ?ay in Lhopa, Serpa, Murmi, Kami, Takpa, &c., both with the same meaning. Such are the various pieces of evidence obtained from an endless number of instances. The cases referred to above do not, owing to the difference of the causes, yield to any explana- tion of this kind. And it must be admitted that there are also many cases, some of them caused by irregularities of writing, modification of spelling by decay, and by a probable use of prefixes still unascertained, which also resist explanation, though the account just given stands good whatever solution the question of prefixes may receive in future. ‘ Little is known of the non-religious literature of Tibet. The most popular and widely circulated book is called The Hundred Thousand Songs of the Venerable Milaraspa. Their author Milar- aspa (unless the work should be attributed to his disciples), often called Mila, was a Buddhist ascetic of the 11th century ; according to Jaeschke, during the intervals of meditation he travelled through the southern part of middle Tibet as a mendicant friar, instructing the people by his improvisations in poetry and song, proselytizing, refuting and converting heretics, and working manifold miracles. His legends are not without wit and poetical merit. A number of poems written in an elevated and special style, dramatic works, aad collections of fairy tales and fables are said to be in existence. A very extensive work, the Djrung yg (Sgruhs yg), regarded as the national epic in Kham, has been partly seen by Desgodins and Baber. It isin prose; but the dialogue, interspersed with songs, is metrical, and is much more extensive

than the prose framework. Religious discussions and philosophical dissertations alternate with comic episodes. It includes three divisions,—the Djiwng ling, which describes the invasion of part of Tibet by the Djiung or Moso; the Hor ling, which recounts the conquest of the Hor (Turk tribes) by the Tibetans, and conveys much historical information ina tale of magic and marvel ; and the Djia ling (Chinese division), which narrates a contest of unknown date between the Tibetans and the Chinese. This work has apparently never been published, and even the manuscripts of the three divisions cannot, says Baber, be obtained in a complete form. But every Tibetan, or at least every native of Kham, who possesses any education, is able to recite or to chant passages of great length. Another Tibetan epic, the

TIBULLUS, Atsivs (c. 54-19 B.c.), was the second in the tetrad of the elegiac poets of Rome. As we learn from Ovid, he was the successor of Cornelius Gallus and the immediate predecessor of Propertius. The informa- tion which we possess about him is extremely meagre. Besides the poems themselves—that is to say, the first and second books—we have only a few references in later authors and a short Life of probable but not undoubted genuineness. We do not know his prenomen; and his birthplace is uncertain. It is, however, a plausible con- jecture that he came from Gabii. The year of his birth has been variously assigned; but 54 B.c. may be taken as approximately correct. This would make him about twenty- five when he accompanied Messala on his Aquitanian cam- paign in 29, and thirty-five at his untimely death in 19. His station was that of a Roman knight; and he had inherited a very considerable estate. But, like Virgil, Horace, and Propertius, he seems to have lost the greater part of it in 41 amongst the confiscations which Antony and Octavian found expedient to satisfy the rapacity of their victorious soldiery. Tibullus, like Propertius, seems to have lost his father early. He once mentions his mother

Gyaldrung, praises Dagyolong, a famous warrior who subdued the savage men of Kham. Besides these pocins we find allusions to a sgrung, referring to the Yesser Khan. Dramatic works exist, as well as translations of Galen, also of the Ramayana in the first vol. of the Bstodts’ogs of the Bstan-hgyur. For the religious literature, which is considerable, see LAMAISM.

Writing was not introduced until the 7th century. Notched Writing.

sticks (shing-chram) and knotted cords were in current use, but the latter contrivance is only faintly alluded to in the Tibetan records, while of the other there are numerous examples. No mention is anywhere made of a hieroglyphical writing, but on the eastern frontier the medicine-men or tomba of the Moso have a peculiar pictorial writing, which is known in Europe from two published MSS. (in Journ. Roy. As. Soc., 1885, vol. xvii.) ; though apparently now confined solely to purposes of witchcraft, it ve contains survivals of a former extensive system superseded by the alphabetic writing introduced from India. According to tradition —a tradition of which the details are open to criticism—the alpha- bet was introduced from India by Tonmi Samb'ota, who was sent to India in 632 by King Srong btsan to study the Sanskrit language and Buddhist literature. Tonmi Samb'ota introduced the so- called ‘‘ writing in thirty characters" (six of which do not exist in Sanskrit) in two styles,—the ‘‘thick letters" or ‘‘letters with heads," now commonly used iu printed books, and the half-cursive ‘cornered letters," so called from their less regular heads. The former are traditionally said to have been derived from the Landza character. The Landza of Nepal, however, is certainly not the origin of the Tibetan letter, but rather an ornamental development of the parent letter. The close resemblance of the Tibetan char- acters ‘‘ with heads" to the Gupta inscriptions of Allahabad shows them to have been derived from the monumental writing of the period ; and various arguments appear to show that the other Tibetan letter came from the same Indian character in the style in which it was used in common life. The Tibetan half-cursive was further developed into the more current ‘‘headless" characters of which there are several styles. From the monumental writing of Tibet was derived, for the special use of the Mongols in the 138th century, the short-lived writing known as Bagspa, from the name of tle lama who worked it out.

Bibliography.—The works of Csoma de Kéros, Alex. Cunningham, Sarat Chandra Das, Desgodins, Léon Feer, Ed. Foucaux, A. A. Georgi, Bryan H. Hodgson, H. A. Jaeschke, Th. H. Lewin, Max Miiller, A. Remusat, W. Robin- son, J. J. Schmidt,~~F. C. G. Schroeter, and A. Schiefner have been already men~~ tioned, and those of J. W. Bushell, A. Campbell, T. W. Rhys Davids, Huc and Gabet, Koeppen, C. Markham, Pallas, Ssanang Ssetsen,

Schott, Pundit Nain Singh, and others are referred to under Lamaism, LADAK AND Batti, and LuHasa (q9.v.). The following also may be named: E. Colborne Baber, “Travels and Researches in Western China,” in Roy. Geogr. Soc. Suppl. Papers, I., 1882; C. H. Desgodins, Le Thibet d’apres la correspondance des Missionatres, Paris, 1885; Th. Duka, Life and Works of Alexander Csoma de Kérés, London, 1885 ; Konrad Ganzenmiiller, Tibet, Stuttgart, 1878; Krick, Relation d@’ un Voyage au Thibet en 1852, Paris, 1854; A. Krishna, Explorations in Great Tibet and Mongolia, made in 1879-82; Report prepared by J. B. N. Hennessey, Dehra Dun, 1884, fol. ; Terrien de Lacouperie, ‘‘ Beginnings of Writing in and around Tibet,” in Journ. Roy. As. Soc., 1885, xvii. ; Id., The Languages of China before the Chinese, London, 1887; J. R. Logan, in Journal of the Indian Archipelago Eastern Asia, vol. vi., Singapore, 1852; W. Woodville Rockill, ‘‘The Early History of Bod-yul,” append. to The Life of the Buddha, from Tibetan sources, London, 1884 ; Em. von Schlagintweit, Die Koenige von Tibet, Munich, 1866, and Buddhism in Tibet, London, 1863; H. Strachey, Physical Geography of Western Tibet ; Trotter, Journ. Roy. Geog. Soc., 1877, vol. xlvii.; H. Yule, The Book of Ser Marco Polo, 2d ed., London, 1874. (T. DE L.)

and sister ; and, according to Ovid’s elegy upon him, they were alive at his death. .

Tibullus’s chief friend and patron was M. Valerius Messala Corvinus, himself an orator and poet as well as a statesman and commander. Messala, like Meecenas, was the centre of’a literary circle in Rome; but the bond between its members was that of literature alone. They stood in no relations to the court; and the name of Augustus is never once to be found in the writings of Tibullus. It was doubtless this community of taste which gained the young poet the friendly notice of Messala, who offered him an honourable position on his private staff when he was despatched at the end of 30 by Augustus to quell the Aquitanian revolt. Tibullus distinguished him- self in the campaign and was decorated for his services. But this did not rouse. in him any military ardour. His tastes lay in quite other directions ; and he always speaks of war with horror and dislike. At the end of the war in 29 Tibullus returned to Rome, and thenceforward his life seems to have been divided between Rome and his country estate, though his own

preferences were altogether for the country life. Soon after his return he made the

acquaintance of his first love, Delia. This is what he calls her in his poems; but we learn from Apuleius that her real name was Plania. Delia seems to have been a woman of middle station. It is impossible to give an exact account of the intimacy. The poems which refer to her are arranged in no chronological order. She appears now as single, now as married; but we do not hear any- thing either of her marriage or of her husband's death. It is clear, however, that it was the absence of her hus- band on military service in Cilicia which gave Tibullus the opportunity of making or renewing the acquaintance. It was not dropped when he returned, probably with Messala in 27. It was not a difficult task to deceive the simple soldier ; and Delia was an apt pupil in the school of de- ception,—too apt, as Tibullus saw with dismay when he found that he was not the only lover. His entreaties and appeals were of no avail; and after the first book we hear no more of Delia. It was during the earlier period of this attachment and probably in the spring of 28 that, yielding to his friend's earnest and repeated requests, Tibullus left Delia to accompany Messala on a mission to Asia. He fell ill, however, and could not get farther than Corcyra. In the second book the place of Delia is taken by Nemesis, which is algo a fictitious name. Nemesis (like the Cynthia of Propertius) was a courtesan of the higher class ; and she had other admirers besides Tibullus. He complains bitterly of his bondage, and of her rapacity and hardheartedness. In spite of all, however, she seems to have retained her hold on him until his death. Tibullus died prematurely, probably in 19, and almost immediately after Virgil, in order, as their contemporary Domitius Marsus pathetically puts it, 'That none might sing of gentle love in clegy's sad lay, Or gallant march of royal war on epic feet.cssay."

The character of Tibullus is reflected in his poems. Though not an admirable it is certainly an amiable one. He was a man of generous impulses and a gentle unselfish disposition. He was loyal to his friends to the verge of self-sacrifice, as is shown by his leaving Delia to accompany Messala to Asia, and constant to his mistresses with a constancy but ill

deserved. His tenderness towards them is enhanced by a refinement and delicacy of feeling which are very rare amongst the ancients. Horace and the rest taunt the cruel fair with the retribution that is coming with the years, when they will exult over the decay of the once imperious beauty. If Tibullus refers to such a fate, he does it by way of warning and not in any petty spirit of triumph or revenge. Cruelly though he may have been treated by his love, he docs not invoke curses upon her head. He goes to her little sister's grave, eae so often with his garlands and wet with his tears, and bemoans his fate to the dumb ashes there. Tibullus has no leanings to an active life: his ideal is a quiet retirement in the country with the loved one at his side. He has no ambition and not even the poet's yearning for immortality. His muse may go packing if it cannot propitiate the fair. As Tibullus loved the country life, its round of simple duties and innocent recreations, so he clung to its faiths, and in an age of crude materialism and the grossest superstition he was religious in the old Roman way. A simple, gentle, affectionate nature such as his could not fail to win esteem ; and his early death caused dcep regret in Rome. Tibullus was remarkable, his biographer tells us, for his good looks and the care that he bestowed upon his person. Asa poet he reminds us in many respects of the English Collins. His clear, finished, and yet unaffected style made him a great favourite with his countrymen and placed him, in the judgment of Quin- tilian, at the head of their elegiac writers. And certainly within his own range he has no Roman rival. For natural grace and tenderness, for exquisiteness of feeling and expression, he stands alone. He has far fewer faults than Propertius, and in particular he never overloads his lines with Alexandrian learning. But, for all that, his range is limited ; and in power and compass of ima- gination, in vigour and originality of conception, in richness and variety of poetical treatment, he is much his inferior. The same differences are perceptible in the way the two pocts handle their metre. Tibullus is smoother and more musical but liable to be- come monotonous ; Propertius, with occasional harshnesses, is more vigorous and varied. It need ouly be added that in many of Tibullus's poems a symmetrical composition is obvious, although the symmetry must never be reduced to a fixed and unelastic scheme.

It is probable that we have lost some of the genuine poems of Tibullus. On the other hand, much has come down to us under

his name which must certainly be assigned to others. Only the first and second books of the usual order, or about 1240 verses, can claim his authorship. The first book consists of poems written at various times between 30 and 26. It was probably published about 25 or 24. The second book seems to have been a posthumous publi- cation. It is very short, containing only 428 verses, and is evi- dently incomplete. In both books occur poems which give evidence of internal disorder ; but scholars cannot agree upon the remedies to be applied.

The third book, which contains 290 verses, is by a much inferior hand. The writer calls himself Lygdamus and the fair that he sings of Newra. He was born in the same year as Ovid, in the consulship of Hirtius and Pansa; but there is nothing Ovidian about his work. He has very little poetical power, and his style is meagre and jejune. He has a good many reminiscences and imi- tations of Tibullus and Propertius ; and they are not always happy. The separation of the fourth book from the third has no ancient authority. They form one in the best MSS., and are quoted as one in the anthologies of the Middle Ages. The division dates from the revival of letters, and is due to the Italian scholars of the 15th century. The fourth book consists of poems of very different quality. The first. is a composition in 211 hexameters on the achievements of Messala ; and very poor stuff it is. The author is unknown ; but he was certainly not Tibullus. The poem itself was written in 31, the year of Messala's consulship. The next eleven poems relate to the loves of Sulpicia and Cerinthus. Sulpicia was a Roman lady of high station and the daughter of Valeria, Messala's sister. She had fallen violently in love with Cerinthus, about whom we know nothing but what the poet tclls us; and he soon reciprocated her feelings. The Sulpicia elegies divide into two groups. The first comprises iv. 2-6, containing ninety-four lines, in which the theme of the attachment is worked up into four grace- ful poems composed for Sulpicia and Cerinthus alternately. The second, iv. 8-12 (to which seven should be added), consists of Sulpicia's own letters. They are very short, only forty lines in all; but they have a quite unique interest as being the only love poems by a Roman woman that have escaped the ravages of time. Their frank and passionate outpourings remind us of Catullus. The style and metrical handling betray the novice in poetical

writing ; and the Latinity is ‘‘feminine.” The thirteenth poem (twenty- four. lines) claims to be by Tibullus ; but it is a miserable forgery. It is little more than a cento from Tibullus and Propertius. The fourteenth is a little epigram of four lines. There is nothing to determine itsauthorship. Last of all comes the cpigram of Domitius Marsus already referred to. To sum up: the third and fourth books appear in the oldest tradition as a single book ; if separated, they would contain only 290 and 373 lines respectively, as against 812 of the first book and 428 of the incomplete second ; and they comprise pieces by different authors and in very different styles, none of which can be assigned to Tibullus with any certainty. The natural conclusion of this is that we have here a collection of scattered compositions relating to Messala and the members of his circle which has been added as an appendix to the genuine relics of Tibullus. When this collection was made cannot be exactly de- termined ; but it was certainly not till after the death of Tibullus, and probably not till after Messala’s. Besides the foregoing, two pieces in the collection called Priapea have been attributed to Tibullus ; but there is very little external and no internal evidence of his authorship. The text of Tibullus is, on the whole, better preserved than that of Catullus, and still more so than that of Propertius. But it still contains many corruptions and several lacune, besides the disarrangements already referred to.

The value of the short Vita Tibulli, which is found at the end of the Ambrosian and Vatican, also of inferior, MSS., has been inuch discussed. E. Baehrens maintains that it is genuine, and possibly an abstract from the book of Suetonius, De Poetis,—a con- jecture supported by the fact that even in so short a piece of writing more than one Suetonian phrase occurs (Baehr., T’ibullische Blatt. , p- 4 sg.),—while Schulze (Zischr. f. d. Gymnasialwesen, Berlin, xxxil. 658) regards it as a mere rifacimento of Horace, Hp., i. 4, and various passages in Tibullus. E. Hiller (Rhein. Mus., xviii. 350) thinks it genuine, but assigns it to the late classical period, —a view quite consistent with an ultimate Suetonian origin. It is as follows : —‘‘ Albius Tibullus, eques R. e Gabiis [Baehrens’s ingeni- ous conjecture for the MS. eques regalis, R. being the customary abbreviation for Romanus], insignis forma cultuque corporis observa- bilis, ante alios Corvinum Messalam ob ingenium [so Baehr., MSS. originem, others oratorem] dilexit, cuius et contubernalis Aquitanico bello militaribus donis

donatus est. Hic multorum iudicio principem inter elegiographos optinet locum. Epistule quoque eius, quam- quam breves, omnino utiles sunt [so the MSS.; Baehrens reads subtitles. The letters referred to are Sulpicia's]. Obiit adulescens, ut indicat epigramma superscriptum" (i.e., the one ascribed to Domitius Marsus. These words seem to be a later addition to the Life).—Another moot question of some importance is whether our poet should be identified with the Albius of Horace (0d., i. 33; Epist., i. 4), as is done by the commentator Porphyrio (200-250

A.D.) in his Scholia. In the former passage Horace tells Albius to moderate his grief at the cruelty of Glycera, nor to descant in piteous elegies on her broken faith and the victory of a younger vival. It is clear that Glycera cannot be Nemesis; for it is a pseudonym, as the context shows, and Horace would, of course, have used the same pseudonym as Tibullus. If, on the other hand, Nemesis were a real name, Horace had no occasion to use a pseudonym. It is possible that Tibullus had another mistress, Glycera, of whom we know nothing further, and that the miserabiles elegi have perished ; but this is a mere supposition. The Albius of the epistle has an estate at Pedum, where Horace conjectures he may be musing or writing. He is handsome, rich, and knows how to enjoy life. He is wise and has the gift of speech, popularity, reputation, and good health abwnde,—an enviable list of attributes, but certainly one which does not agree very well with what we know from elsewhere of 'fibullus. The theory, then, that these passages refer to Albius Tibullus must be pronounced, with Baehrens, unproven ; and the forma of Horace's Albius must not be used, as Schulze uses it, to subvert the credit of the insignis forma of the Life.—Ovid, Trist., iv. 10, 58 sq., 'successor fuit hic [Tibullus] tibi, Galle, Propertius illi, quartus ab his serie temporis ipse raul In the preceding couplet he had said, '' Vergilium vidi tantum nec amara Tibullo tempus amicitie fata dedere mex." Ovid, who was born in 48, would be only twenty-four at Tibullus's death if it occurred in 19.—The loss of Tibullus's landed property is attested by himself (i. 1, 19 sg.), '' Vos quoque felicis quondam, nunc pauperis agri custodes, fertis munera vestra, Lares. Tunc vitula innumeros lustrabat cesa iuvencos ; nunc agna exigui est hostia parva soli" (comp. 41, 42). Its cause is only an inference, though a very probable one. That he was

allowed to retain a portion of his estate with the family mansion is clear from ii. 4, 58, ‘* Quin etiam sedes iubeat si vendere avitas, ite sub imperium sub titulum- que, Lares.” Compare the passages quoted above andi. 1, 77, 78.— Messala composed epigrams (Plin., Hp., v. 3) and bucolic poems (comp. the pseudo-Virgilian Catalepton, ii.) ; but he was more conspicuous as a patron than as a poet. On his circle and that of Mecenas, see Teuffel, Gesch. der rémischen Literatur, 4th ed., p. 481 (vol. i. p. 389 of the Eng. transl.). Other members of the circle were Messala’s brother, Pedius Publicola, Mmilius Macer (probably the Macer addressed in ii. 6), Valgius Rufus, Lygdamus, Sulpicia, and others, and even Ovid to a certain extent (Ov., Pont., i. 7, 28 sq.; Trist., iv. 4, 27 sq.). Tibullus was Messala’s contubernalis in the Aquitanian war (Vita Tib. and Tib., i. 7, 9 sqg., a poem com- posed for Messala’s triumph). It should be stated that the date of the Aquitanian campaign is still undetermined. It has been assigned to 30, 29, and 28. He received militaria dona (Vita); Baehrens unkindly suggests it was for purely poetical services (7%b. £l., p. 15). Tibullus’s dislike of war is always coming to the surface (e.g., 1. 8; i, 10), and so also his love of quiet and retirement (i. 1; ii. 1; 3, 1 sq.).—Apuleius (Apol., 10), ‘‘accusent Tibullum … quod ei sit Plania in animo, Delia in versu”; this is the most probable form of the name, Delia (670s) being a translation of Plania. As regards her station, it should be noticed that she was not entitled to wear the stola, the dress of Roman matrons (i. 6, 68). Her husband is mentioned as absent (i. 2, 67 sq.). She eludes the custodes placed over her (i. 2, 15, and 6, 7). Tibullus’s suit was favoured by Delia’s mother, of whom he speaks in very affectionate terms (i. 6, 57 sq.). For Tibullus’s illness at Corcyra, see i. 3, 1 sq., 55 sq. The fifth elegy was written during estrangement (discidiwm) and the sixth after the return of the husband and during Delia’s double infidelity. On the difficulty of ‘‘harmonizing” the Delia elegies, see F. Leo (in Kiessling and Wilamowitz-Mollendorf’s Philol. Unters., ii. pp. 19-23), who 1s, however, too sceptical. Any other attachments that Tibullus formed (such as the supposed one for Glycera) must have fallen between the end of the Delia and the beginning of the Nemesis connexion.—Ovid, writing at the time of Tibullus’s death (Am., iii. 9, 81), says—“ Sic Nemesis longum, sic Delia, nomen habe- bunt, altera cura recens, altera primus amor.” Nemesis is the sub- ject of book ii. 3, 4, 6. The mention of a lena (ii. 6) settles her position. The connexion had lasted a year when ii. 5 was written (see ver. 109). Itis worth noticing that Martial selects Nemesis as the source

of Tibullus’s reputation, “fama est arguti Nemesis lasciva Tibulli ’ (Hpigr., viii. 73, 7); compare xiv. 193, “ussit amatorem Nemesis lasciva Tibullum, in tota iuvit quem nihil esse domo,” where, however, the second linc is taken from one of the Delia elegies. Ovid, Amores, iii. 9, 58, “me tenuit moriens deficiente manu.” The point of this can only be seen by reference to Tib., i.1, 60, where Delia is addressed, “te teneam moriens deficicnte manu.” —The epigram of Domitius Marsus ou his death is as follows: “Te quoque, Vergilio comitem, non equa, Tibulle, Mors invenem campos misit ad Elysios, ne foret aut elegis molles qui fleret amores aut caneret forti regia bella pede.”—Tibullus condemns the rough handling which the inamorata often suffered from her Roman lover, €.g-, 1. 10, 59-60—“A ! lapis est ferrumque, suam quicumque puellam verberat ; e caelo deripit ille deos.” The tenderness of the passage paraphrased above (ii. 6, 41) is perhaps unmatched in ancient poetry :

desino, ne domine luctus renoventur acerbi. Non ego sum tanti

trey ws

ploret ut illa semel.’’——His love for a rustic life and rustic worship appears throughout whole poems, as in i. 1 and ii, 1, 2, Of his poetry he says (ii. 4, 19), “Ad dominam faciles aditus per carmina quero; ite procul, Muse, si nihil ista valent.”—Specimens of Tibullus at his best may be found ini. 1, 3, 89-94; 5, 19-36; 9, 45-68; ii. 6. Quintilian says (Jnst., x. 1, 93), “Hlegia quoque Grecos provocamus, cuius mihi tersus atque elegans maxime videtur auctor Tibullus ; sunt qui Propertium malint ; Ovidius utroque las- civior sicut durior Gallus.” —Ovid (4Am., i.c.) well calls him cultus, Martial argutus, “fine-toned.” A short but not inadequate account of Tibullus’s prosody is given by L. Mucller in his introduction to Tibullus (Catullus, Tibullus, und Propertius, Leipsic, 1880). Catullus and Tibullus lengthen a short vowel before sp and fr; Propertius always keeps it short in similar conjunctions, even where s is followed by two consonants, as in striges. Catullus, and in three cases Tibullus, allow a trisyllabic verb to close the pentameter. Propertius never permits himself this liberty, al- though in his earlier joa he has as many trisyllabic endings as Tibullus.—The chronology of the first book is discussed amongst others by Baehrens (77%. Bl., pp. 12-24). But the data do not admit in all cases of his precise

determinations. Baehrens and Hiller (Hermes, xviii. 353) agree that the second book was post- humous. If it had been known to Ovid when he wrote his eleg on the poet's death, it seems certain that he would have quoted from it. Hiller assigns 2 B.c. as an inferior limit, by which time Ov., Ars Am., iii. 3, 535 sq., must have been written. Amongst the ''disarranged poems" are i. 1, 4, 6 and ii. 3,5. Proposed re- arrangements of them may be found in Hiller's Tibullus (1885). Charisius (pp. 66 and 105) quotes part of a hexameter which is not found in the extant poems of Tibullus, The Tibullian authorship of book iii. has long ago been sur- rendered by scholars. Its latest defenders have been Fuss (De Elegg. Libro quem Lygdami esse putant, Minster, 1867) and the English translator, J. Cranstoun. It has been suggested that Lygdamus (dv-ydos, white marble) is a Grecizing of Albius, some relation of Tibullus (compare Hiller, Hermes, xviii. 353, n. 2); and this is possible. Gruppe's long-exploded theory that Ovid was the author has been recently revived by J. Kleeman (De Libri ITT, Carminibus que Tibulli Nomine circumferuntur, Strasburg, 1876). Considerable difficulty is caused by iii. 5, 15-20, which contains agreements with three passages of Ovid, Ars Am., ii. 669 sy; Tr., iv. 10, 6: "cum cecidit fato consul uterque pari" (Lygdamus and Ovid using word for word the same expression for the year of their birth, the consulship of Hirtius and Pansa) ; and Am., xi. 14, 23 sq., which are much too close to be accidental, and in which the theory that Ovid was the imitator is excluded by the fact that the lines are much more appropriate to their surroundings in Ovid than in Lygdamus. In consequence Baehrens (7%. b/., 40) regards the poem as written after 13 a.p., the date of the Tristia, while Hiller (2.c., p. 859) regards the lines as a later addi- tion by Lygdamus himself. In either case it would be published after 18. The line quoted above may have obtained proverbial currency before either of the passages was written, as the death of both consuls in one year would have impressed the Ronian imagina- tion as powerfully as the coincident deaths of Adams and Jefferson did the American. In that case no part of book iii. need be later than the Christian era. For Lygdamus's imitations of Tibullus, see Gruppe, Die rémische Elegie, i. 112 sy. There are resemblances between the pseudo-Tibullus and the Catalepton (Baehr., op. cit., p. 52).—The view of Baehrens (7b. Blétt., 49) and others that ili. and iv. originally formed one book may now be considered estab- lished, in spite of Birt's objections (Das antike Buchwesen, 426 sq.) ; and Hiller in his edition prints them as one. They

were published some time after book ii., probably after the death of Messala (Baeh- rens, op. cit., 48, adds, “and of his son Messalinus’’). Further determination of the date is impossible. We do not know when they were added to the genuine poems of Tibullus ; but it was prob- ably before the Life was written.—Most scholars since Lachmann (Kl. Schr., ii. 149) have condemned the ‘‘ Panegyric on Messala.” It is an inflated and at the same time tasteless declamation, entirely devoid of poetical merit. The language is often absurdly exagger- ated, ¢.9., 190 sg. The author himself seems to be conscious of his own deficiencies (1 sy., 177 sq.). All that we know about him is that he, like so many of his contemporaries, had been reduced to poverty by the loss of his estates (181 sq.). The date is fixed by 121 sy.—Sulpicia was the daughter of Servius Sulpicius (iv. 10, 4), and she seems to have been under the tutelage of Messala (ef. 14, 5-8), her uncle by marriage (Haupt, Hermes, iv. 33 sq.). Cerin- thus is a real name. He was probably a Greek (Baehr., p. 41 and note). He is not to be identified with the Cornutus addressed in Tib., ii. 2,8. Gruppe (op. cit., 27) and Teuffel (Studien, 367) attri- bute iv. 2-6 to Tibullus himself; but the style is different, and it is best to answer the question as Baehrens does (p. 46) with a non liquet. For Sulpicia’s style and its feminine Latinity, compare Gruppe (op. cit., 1. 49 sg.).—The direct ascription of iv. 13 (verse 18—* nunc licet e caelo mittatur amica Tibullo’’) to Tibullus prob- ably led to its being included in the collection. Later on, it and

the epigram together caused the addition of the pseudo-Tibulliana to the genuine works. Although not suspected till recently, it is unquestionably spurious ; see the examination by Postgate (Journ. of Phil., ix. 280 sq.).—The authorship of the two Priapea (one an epigram and the other a longer piece in iambics) is discussed by Hiller (Hermes, xviii. 343-9). His conclusions are that, as regards the iambics, the theory that Tibullus was its author, though from the nature of the case it does not admit of complete disproof, rests upon the slightest of foundations, and, as regards the epigram, that the hypothesis of a Tibullian authorship is quite inadmissible.

The text of Tibullus is ina much better condition than it was in Lachmann’s time, thanks to the recent discovery of new MSS. by E. Baehrens. Of these

the Ambrosianus (A), of date about 1374, and the Vaticanus (V), end of the 14th or beginning of the 15th century, agree so closely that they can be referred to an original extant in the early part of the 12th or 13th century but long since lost. A third is the Guelferbytanus (G), written in Lombard characters, but on parchment of the beginning of the 15th century. Baehrens, who attaches great importance to the original readings of this codex, considers it a faithful copy of a 10thor1lthcentury MS. Besides these we havea number of extracts from Tibullus in the Florilegium Parisinum, an anthology from various Latin writers which probably dates back to the llth century, and which we have from two MSS. at Paris (7647 and 17903); see Meyncke, Rhein. Mus., xxv. 369 sg. Baehrens considers that these excerpta Parisina and G are closely con- nected, and that their original and that of A and V were both descended from a more ancient MS., which he calls O, but which was still full of corruptions. The so-called Excerpta Frisingensia, preserved in an 11th-century MS. (now at Munich), but unfortunately very few in number, are extracted from a much better MS. than O. Still better was the Fragmentum Cuiacianuwm, which we know only from Scaliger's collation (in the library at Leyden), and which is to be carefully distinguished from the codex Cuiacianus, a late MS. containing Catullus, Tibullus, and Propertius, and still extant. It only contained from iii, 4, 65 to the end. The codices which Lachmann uscd are later than all the foregoing and full of interpolations. Baehrens's estimate of the MS. authorities for Tibullus has not been accepted in all its details. In particular his high estimate of G has been disputed by Leo, op. cit., p. 3; Rothstein, De Tibulli Codicibus, p. 67 sq. (who also endeavours to raise Lachmann's MSS. to an inde- pendent position again); and others. R. Leonhard, in a careful disserta- tion, De Codicibus Tibullianis Capita Tria (Munich, 1882), agrees with Baehrens in the main, though his pedigree of the MSS. (p. 53) is more elaborate.

Editions.—The first two editions of Tibullus and the pseudo-Tibulliana are that with Catullus, Propertius, and the Silve of Statius by Vindelin de Spira (Venice, 1472) and one of Tibullus separately by Florentius de Argentina, prob- ably printed in the same year. Compare Huschke, Tibullus, Preef., vi. sq., xxiii. sg. Amongst others we may mention those by Scaligcr (with Catullus and Propertius, Paris, 1577, 1582, &c.), Broukhuys (Amsterdam, 1708), Vulpius (Padua, 1749), Heyne (Leipsic, 1817, 4th ed. by Wunderlich

; with supplement by Dissen, 1819), Huschke (Leipsic, 1819, 2 vols.), Lachmann (Berlin, 1829, the first critical edition), Dissen (Gottingen, 1835). The most important edition with critical apparatus is that of E. Baehrens (Leipsic, 1878). The most recent edition, with critical introduction and index, is E. Hiller's (Leipsic, 1885). Recent texts are those of L. Mueller (Leipsic, 1880; also with Catullus and Propertius)and Haupt-Vahlen (Leipsic, 1885). There is no good recent comment- ary on Tibullus ; we have to fall back on Heyneand Dissen. That by B. Fabricius (Berlin, 1881) does not even comprise all the poems. Some contributions are made to the subject in F. Leo's paper in Kiessling's and Wilamowitz-Moellendorf's Philol. Unters., ii. p. 3sg., and by J. Vahlen in the Monatsberichte of the Berlin Academy, 1878, pp. 343-356. For fuller bibliographies, see Engel- mann's Bibliotheca Scriptorum Latinorwm (ed. Preuss, 1882) and J. EB. B. Mayor's Bibliographical Clue to Latin Literature (1875). For the older editions, see the preface to Huschke's. There isan excellent account of Tibullus in W. 8. Teuffel's Gesch. d. rémisch. Literatur (4th ed., L. Schwabe, 1882). Those in the Eng. tr. and Pauly's Real-Encyklopddie are antiquated. The following translations into English verse are known,—by Dart (London, 1720), Grainger (London, 1739, 2 vols., with Latin text and notes, subsequently reprinted), Cranstoun (Edinburgh and London, 1872). An Essay towards a New Edition of the Elegies of Tibullus, with a Translation and Notes (London, 1792), merely con- tains i. 1 and 7, 29-48. Sir C. A. Elton, Specimens of the Classic Poets (London, 1814, vol. xii. 141-171) contains i. 1; ii. 4; iii. 2-4; 6, 33 toend; iv. 2,3. To these should probably be added Tibullus, with other Translations from Ovid, Horace, &c., by Richard Whiffin, London, 1829. Cranstoun's is the only com- plete version of merit ; but it is far inferior to the translations by Elton, from whom Cranstoun seems sometimes to have borrowed. (J. P. P.)

TIBUR. See Tivott.

TIC DOULOUREUX. See Neurateta.

TICINO, or Tesstn, a canton of Switzerland, ranking as eighteenth in the Confederation, consists of the upper basin of the river from which it takes its name,—the Val Leventina, with the tributary valleys of Blegno and

Maggia —and farther south takes in the districts of Lugano and Mendrisio between Lakes Maggiore and Como. Its total area is 1088-2 square miles, which is exceeded by only four other Swiss cantons,—Graubiinden (Grisons), Bern, Valais, and Vaud. Of this 725°8 square miles are classed as pro- ductive, including 215°3 square miles covered by forests and 33°8 by vines; of the unproductive portion 24°3 square miles are occupied by lakes (most of that of Lugano belonging to the canton) and 13:1 by glaciers. The highest points in the canton are the Basodine (10,749 feet) in the north-west and the Valrhein (11,148 feet) in the north-east corners. In 1880 the population was 130,777 (the females exceeding the males by 10,000, doubtless owing to the emigration of the latter), being an increase of 11,158 on that of 1870; the increase was particularly marked in the Val Leventina and is due to the influence of the St Gotthard Railway, which traverses

ool

the entire canton. Of this population 129,409 speak Italian ; 342 of the remainder form the German-speaking hamlet of Bosco or Gurin in the Val Caverna (in north- west), a colony from the neighbouring valley of Formazza or Pommat, which is politically Italian. In religion 130,017 are Roman Catholics. Until 1859 Ticino was partly (Val Leventina, Val Blegno, and the Riviera) in the metropolitan diocese of Milan, chiefly in that of Como, and is still practically (though not legally) administered by these two bishops,—all attempts made hitherto to incor- porate them with the see of Chur or to secure the erection of a special see for them having failed. The chief towns are Lugano (6129 inhabitants), Airolo (3674), Mendrisio (2749), Locarno (2645), and Bellinzona (2436). Formerly Lugano, Locarno, and Bellinzona were the capital by turns of six years each ; but since 1881 the seat of government has been permanently fixed at Bellinzona. Ticino stands in a comparatively low position as regards moral, educa- tional, agricultural, and commercial matters. It has pro- duced a number of sculptors, painters, and architects. Many of the men migrate during the summer in search of work as picture-dealers, waiters in cafés, chimney-sweeps, and especially as masons, plasterers, labourers, and navvies. A large quantity of fruit is grown; the chief articles ex- ported are cattle, hay, fish, chestnuts, and earthenware. In manners, customs, and general character the inhabitants strongly resemble their Italian neighbours.

The canton is made up of all the permanent conquests (with one or two trifling exceptions) made by different members of the Swiss League south of the main chain of the Alps. From an historical point of view Italian Switzerland falls into three groups :—(1) Val Leventina, 7 by Uri in 1440 (previously held from 1403 to 1426); (2) Bellinzona, the Riviera, and Val Blegno (held from 1419 to 1426), won in 1500 from the duke of Milan by men from Uri, Schwyz, and Nidwald, and confirmed by Louis XII. of France in 1503; (8) Locarno, Val Maggia, Lugano, and Mendrisio, seized in 1512 by the Confederates when fighting for the Holy League against France, ruled by the twelve members then in the League, and confirmed by Francis I. in the treaty of 1516. These districts were governed by bailiffs holding office two years and purchasing it from the members of the League; each member of group 8 sent annually an envoy, who conjointly constituted the supreme appeal in all matters. This government was very harsh and is one of the darkest pages in Swiss history. Yet only one open revolt is recorded—that of the Leventina against Uri in 1755. In 1798 the people were distracted by the Swiss and ‘‘Cisalpine re- public” parties, but sided with the Swiss. On being freed from their hated masters, they were formed into two cantons of the Helvetic republic—Bellinzona (=1 and 2 above) and Lugano (=3). In 1803 all these districts were formed into one canton—Ticino— which became a full member of the Swiss Confederation. From 1810 to 1813 it was occupied by the troops of Napoleon. The roads over the Bernardino (1819-23) and the St Gotthard (1820-30) were made under the constitution of 1814. But many of the old troubles reappeared and were only done away with by the consti- tution of 23d July 1830, which (with subsequent modifications) prevails at the present time. A legislative assembly (112 members) chosen by direct election and an executive (5 members) chosen by the legislature are its principal features. The ‘‘ optional referen- dum” (permitting the submission of any law toa popular vote if asked for by a certain number of citizens) was adopted in 1883. In 1848, on religious grounds and owing to fears as to customs duties, the canton voted in the minority against the Federal constitution of that year; but in 1874, though the people voted against the re- vised constitution, the legislature adopted it, and the canton was counted as one of the majority. Since 1830 the local history of the canton has been very disturbed owing to the fact that, though Roman Catholicism is the state religion, and all the population are Roman Catholic (the few Protestants having been expelled from

Locarno in 1555), they are divided between the Radical and Ultra- montane parties. Since 1876 the intervention of Federal troops (already known in 1870) has been quite common in consequence of conflicts of the local authorities inter se, or against the Federal assembly.

See Der Kanton Tessin, by Stefano Franscini (St Gall, 1835).

TICK. See Mire.

TICKELL, Tuomas (1686-1740), English man of letters, the son of a clergyman, was born at Bridekirk, near Car- lisle, in 1686. After a good preliminary education he

went to Queen's College, Oxford, where in 1708 he took his degree, and of which college he was two years later elected fellow. He did not take orders, but by a dispensa- tion from the crown was allowed to retain his fellowship until his marriage in 1726. Asa poet Tickell displayed very mediocre qualities. His success in literature, as in life, was mainly due to the friendship and patronage of Addison, who procured for him (1717) the under-secretary- ship of state, to the chagrin of Steele, who thenceforth bore Tickell no good will. During the peace negotiations with France Tickell published the Prospect of Peace, which was well spoken of in the Spectator and reached a sixth edition. In 1717 he brought out a translation of the first book of the Zliad contemporaneously with Pope's version. Ken- sington Gardens, his longest poem, which appeared in 1722, is inflated and pedantic, and was doomed to oblivion from its birth. Dr Johnson's criticism of it gives it its due meed of praise and blame. The most popular of Tickell's poeti- cal writings was the ballad of "Colin and Lucy," which will bear comparison with some of the ballad poems of Wordsworth. Whether from fear of Pope's rivalry or from unbiassed choice, Tickell abandoned the translation of the Iliad and set about rendering the Odyssey and Lucan into English. In 1725 he was appointed secretary to the lords justices of Ireland, —a post which he retained until his death, which took place at Bath on 23d April 1740. Tickell rose once above the level of mediocrity, when he wrote his elegy addressed to the earl of Warwick on the death of Addison. Posterity has endorsed Dr Johnson's affirmation that this elegy is equal in

sublimity and ele- gance to any funeral poem which had theretofore appeared, —and this notwithstanding Steele's caustic disparagement, that it was only "prose inrhyme." Tickell also contributed to the Spectator and the Guardian.

See ''T. Tickell," in Johnson's Lives of the Poets ; the Spectator ; Anderson's English Poets; Ward's English Poets.

TICKNOR, Grorcz (1791-1871), historian of Spanish literature, was born at Boston (Mass.), on Ist August 1791. He received his early education from his father, Elisha Ticknor, who, though at that time in business, had been principal of the local Franklin public school and was the originator both of the system of free primary schools in Boston and of the first New England savings-bank. He studied at Dartmouth College from 1805 to 1807, and on leaving it was placed for nearly three years under Dr Gardiner, a pupil of Dr Parr. In the autumn of 1810 Ticknor entered the office of a leading Massachusetts lawyer, and, though his studies appear to have been liter- ary rather than legal, he was admitted to the bar in 1813. He at once commenced practice ; but a year's experiment convinced him that scholarship and letters would be more congenial to his abilities. In the spring of 1815 he set sail for England. Attractive in appearance, cultured, vivacious, and sympathetic, he had won many influential friends in America, and his introductions gave him access to most of the men then worth knowing in Europe. He spent nearly two years at Gdéttingen; but he also visited the chief towns on the Continent, meeting Prescott for the first time at Paris, and spending some months in Spain and Portugal, the life and literatures of which had already strong attrac- tions for him. Returning to America in the summer of 1819, he was inducted in the August following to the Smith professorship of French and Spanish literature and to the college professorship of belles-lettres at Harvard. The history and criticism of Spanish literature was in many respects a new subject at that time even in Europe, —the Spaniards themselves having no adequate treatment of their literature as a whole, and both Bouterwek and Sismondi having worked with scanty or second-hand re- sources. 'To supply this want, therefore, he gave his most

serious thought, developing in his lectures the scheme of his more permanent work. In June 1821 his father died, and in September he married Anna, daughter of Samuel Eliot, a merchant and founder of the chair of Greek literature at Harvard College. In the years following 1821 Ticknor made a vain effort to introduce measures of university reform. The death of his only son in 1834 and the subsequent failure of his wife's health led him to resign his post at Cambridge to Longfellow ; and in the spring of 1835 he again went to Europe, where he re- mained until 1838. From that time till his death he lived chiefly at Boston. Till 1849 he published only occasional reviews and papers, such as his essays on Moore's Anacreon, on Milton's Paradise Lost, and on Thatcher's Sermons, in 1812; on Michael Stiefel, in 1816 ; on Griscom's Zour in Hurope and on General La Fayette, in 1824; on amusements in Spain and on changes in Har- vard College, in 1825; on Chateaubriand, in 1827; on Daniel Webster, in 1831; and on the best mode of teach- ing living languages, in 1832. His History of Spanish Interature, the first editions of which appeared in New York and London in 1849, was welcomed on all hands as the standard work on the subject, and was rapidly translated into Spanish and other Continental languages. Whatever its defects, it at least reduced to system and clearness a large mass of varied historical material hitherto only vaguely known ; and its copious references to authori- ties and editions and its loving exploration of the byeways of the literature made it as valuable to scholars as its direct and unpretentious style made it popular with general readers. In many respects it was the admirable literary complement of the historical work of Prescott. Like his, the bent of Ticknor's mind was expository rather than critical ; and in both cases the standards applied were of a conventional rather than of an advanced nature. As with Prescott the glow of vivid narration often hides rather than reveals the underlying problems of social and philo- sophic import, so with Ticknor a certain fund of graceful and genial commonplace is apt to gloss over the really vital critical issues of the subject-matter. At crucial moments in place of the keener edge of criticism one is apt to find only the paper-knife intelligence of the ordinary book-lover. The defect, however, was common to the critical schools of the time. The merits of the work in its accurate survey of comparatively untrodden ground were individual and of an exceedingly high order. Ticknor subsequently took an active part in the establishment of the Boston public library, in the interests of which he paid in 1856 another visit to Europe, and to which he left at his death his fine

collection of Spanish and Portuguese works. In 1859, on the death of Prescott, he at once began to collect materials for a life of his friend, which was published in 1864. His death took place at Boston on 26th January 1871.

A Life of Ticknor, with his letters and journals, was edited by George 8. Hillard, Boston, 1876.

TICONDEROGA, a village and township of the United States, in Essex county, New York, situated upon the stream connecting Lakes George and Champlain, and ex- tending back upon an abrupt promontory which separates the two lakes. Two railroads enter the village,—the Delaware and Hudson and a branch of the Central Ver- mont. The population in 1880 was 3304.

Commanding the direct route from the St Lawrence to the Hudson, Ticonderoga was early seized by the French and fortified under the name of Fort Carillon. In July 1758 it was unsuccess- fully attacked by Abercrombie. In the same month of the suc- ceeding year it was abandoned by the French upon the approach of an English army under Amherst, who occupied it and greatly strengthened its works. At the beginning of the Revolution, in 1775, the fort was surprised and captured by Ethan Allen anda

party of Vermont militia. In 1778 it was retaken by the English under Burgoyne and was held by them until the close of the war.

TIDES

J. On THE NATURE oF TIDES. 8 1. Definition of Tide.

HEN, as occasionally happens, a ship in the open sea meets a short succession of waves of very unusual magnitude, we hear of tidal waves; and the large wave caused by an earthquake is commonly so described. The use of the term “tide” in this connexion is certainly incor- rect, but it has perhaps been fostered by the fact that such waves impress their records on

automatic tide-gauges, as, for example, when the wave due to the volcanic outbreak at Krakatoa was thus distinctly traceable in South Africa, and perhaps even faintly at Brest. We can only adequately define a tide by reference to the cause which produces it. A tide then is a rise and fall of the water of the sea pro- duced by the attraction of the sun and moon. A rise and fall of the sea produced by a regular alternation of day and night breezes, by regular rainfall and evaporation, or by any influence which the moon may have on the weather cannot strictly be called a tide. Such alternations may, it is true, be inextricably involved with the rise and fall of the true astronomical tide, but we shall here distinguish them as meteorological tides. These movements are the result of the action of the sun, as a radiating body, on the earth, Tides in the atmosphere would be shown by a regular rise and fall in the barometer, but such tides are undoubtedly very minute, and we shall not discuss them in this article, merely referring the reader to the Mécanique Céleste of Laplace, bks. i. and xiii, There are, however, very strongly marked diurnal and semi-diurnal inequalities of the barometer due to atmospheric meteorological tides. ‘Sir William Thomson in an interesting speculation ! shows: that the interaction of these quasi-tides with the sun is that of a thermodynamic engine, whereby there is caused a minute secular acceleration of the earth’s rotation. This matter is, however, beyond the scope of the present article. We shall here extend the term “tide” to denote an elastic or viscous periodic deformation of a solid or viscous globe under the action of tide-generating forces. In the techni- cal part of the article by the term ‘a simple tide” we shall denote a spherical harmonic deformation of the water on the surface of the globe, or of the solid globe itself,

multiplied by a simple harmonic function of the time.

§ 2. General Description of Tidal Phenomena.?

If we live by the sea or on an estuary, we see that the water rises and falls nearly twice a day; speaking more exactly, the average interval from high water to high water is about 122 25™, so that the average retardation from day to day is about 50”. The times of high water are then found to bear an intimate relation with the moon’s position. Thus at Ipswich high water occurs when the moon is nearly south, at London Bridge when it is south-

west, and at Bristol when it is east-south-east. For a very rough determination of the time of high water it is suffi- cient to add the solar time of high water on the days of new and full moon (called the “establishment of the port”) to the time of the moon’s passage over the meridian, either Vari- visibly above or invisibly below the horizon. The interval ability of between the moon’s passage over the meridian and high _ water varies sensibly with the moon’s age. From new moon’s moon to first quarter, and from full moon to third quarter transit. (or rather from and to a day later than each of these

phases), the interval diminishes from its average to a mini-

Defini- – tion.

Atmo- spheric tides.

High water retarded 50™ per diem.

1 Société de Physique, September 1881, or Proc. Roy. Soc. of Edinburgh, 1881-82, p. 396. 2 Founded on Airy’s “Tides and Waves,” in Ency. Metrop.

mum, and then increases again to the average; and in the other two quarters it increases from the average to a maxi- mui, and then diminishes again to the average.

The range of the rise and fall of water is also subject Spring

to great variability. On the days after new and full moon 22 the range of tide is at its maximum, and on the day after ™@P- the first and third quarter at its minimum. The maximum is called “spring tide” and the minimum “ neap tide,” and the range of spring tide is usually between two and three times as great as that of neap tide. At many ports, how- ever, especially non-European ones, two successive high waters are of unequal heights, and the law of variability of the difference is somewhat complex ; a statement of that law will be easier when we come to consider tidal theories. In considering any tide we find, especially in estuaries, that the interval from high to low water is longer than that from low to high water, and the difference between the intervals is greater at spring than at neap.

In a river the current continues to run up stream for River some considerable time after high water is attained and tes. to run down similarly after low water. Much confusion has been occasioned by the indiscriminate use of the term “tide” to denote a tidal current and a rise of water, and it has often been incorrectly inferred that high water must have been attained at the moment of cessation of the upward current. The distinction between “rising and Distinc- falling” and “flowing and ebbing” must be carefully #7 of

SSS ae ; : d rise and maintained in rivers, whilst it vanishes at the seaboard. fa1; from If we examine the progress of the tide-wave up a river, flood and we find that high water occurs at the sea earlier than ebb. higher up. If, for instance, on a certain day it is high water at Margate at noon, it is high water at Gravesend at a quarter past two, and at London Bridge a few minutes before three. The intervalfrom low to high water diminishes also as we go up the river ; and at some distance up certain rivers—as, for example, the Severn—the rising water spreads over the flat sands in a roaring surf and travels up the river almost like a wall of water. This kind of sudden rise is called a “bore.” In other cases where the differ- ence between the periods of rising and falling is consider- able, there are, in each high water, two or three rises and falls. A double high water exists at Southampton.

When an estuary contracts considerably, the range of tide becomes largely magnified as it narrows ; for example, at the entrance of the Bristol Channel the range of spring tides is about 18 feet, and at Chepstow about 50 feet.

This augmentation of the height of the tide-wave is due Aug-

to the concentration of the energy of motion of a large na yen mass of water into a narrow space. At oceanic ports the holgh ‘iy tidal phenomena are much less marked, the range of tide estuaries. being usually only 2 or 3 feet, and the interval from high

to low water sensibly equal to that from low to high water.

The changes from spring to neap tide and the relation of

the time of high water to the moon’s transit remain, how-

ever, the same as in the case of the river tides.

In long and narrow seas, such as the English Channel, Land-

the tide in mid-channel follows the same law as at a station locked near the mouth of a river, rising and falling in equal times; *“*“* the current runs in the direction analogous to up stream for three hours before and after high water, and down stream for the same period before and after low water. But near the sides of channels and near the mouths of bays the changes of the currents are very complex; and near the headlands separating two bays there is usually at certain times a very swift current, termed a “ race.”

3 See a series of papers bearing on this kind of wave by Sir W. Thomson, in Phil. Mag., 1886-87. 2 ae:

Wind.

Atmo- spheric pressure,

Tide- generat- ing forces.

Theory of equa- torial canal on earth.

354

In inland seas, such as the Mediterranean, the tides are nearly insensible except at the ends of long bays. Thus at Malta the tides are not noticed by the ordinary observer, whilst at Venice they are conspicuous. ;

The effect of a strong wind on the height of tide is generally supposed to be very marked, especially in estu- aries. In the case of an exceptional gale, when the wind veered round appropriately, Airy states! that the water has been known to depart from its predicted height at London by as much as 5 feet. The effect of wind will certainly be different at each port. The discrepancy of opinion on this subject appears to be great,—so much so that we hear of some observers concluding that the effect of the wind is insensible. Variations in barometric pressure also cause departures from the predicted height of water, high barometer corresponding to decrease of

height of water. Roughly speaking, an inch of the mercury column will correspond to something less than a foot of water, but the effect seems to vary much at different ports.”

§ 3. General Explanation of the Cause of Trdes.

The moon attracts every particle of the earth and ocean, and by the law of gravitation the force acting on any par- ticle is directed towards the moon’s centre, and is jointly proportional to the masses of the particle and of the moon, and inversely proportional to the square of the distance between the particle and the moon’s centre. If we imagine the earth and ocean subdivided into a number of small portions or particles of equal mass, then the average, both as to direction and intensity, of the forces acting on these particles is equal to the force acting on that particle which is at the earth’s centre. For there is symmetry about the line joining the centres of the two bodies, and, if we divide the earth into two portions by an ideal spherical surface passing through the earth’s centre and having its centre at the moon, the portion remote fron the moon is a little larger than the portion towards the moon, but the nearer portion is under the action of forces which are a little stronger than those acting on the further portion, and the resultant of the weaker forces on the larger portion is exactly equal to the resultant of the stronger forces on the smaller. If every particle of the earth and ocean were being urged by equal and parallel forces, there would be no cause for relative motion between the ocean and the earth. Hence it is the departure of the force acting on any particle from the average which constitutes the tide-generating force. Now it is obvious that on the side of the earth towards the moon the departure from the average is a small force directed towards the moon; and on the side of the earth away from the moon the departure is a small force directed away from the moon. Also these two departures are very nearly equal to one another, that on the near side being so little greater than that on the other that we may neglect the excess. All round the sides of the earth along a great circle perpendicular to the line joining the moon and earth, the departure is a force directed inwards towards the earth’s centre. Thus we see that the tidal forces tend to pull the water towards and away from the moon, and to depress the water at right angles to that direction. If we could neglect the rotations of the bodies, and could consider the system as at rest, we should find that the water was in equilibrium when elongated

into a prolate ellipsoid with its long axis directed towards and away from the moon.

But it must not be assumed that this would be the case when there is motion. For, suppose that the ocean con- sisted of a canal round the equator, and that an earthquake or any other cause were to generate a great wave in the canal, this wave would travel along it with a velocity de-

1 Airy, “Tides and Waves.” 2 Airy, op. cit., §§ 572-573.

pendent on the depth. If the canal were about 13 miles deep, the velocity of the wave would be about 1000 miles an hour, and with depth about equal to the depth of our seas the velocity of the wave would be about half as great. We may conceive the moon’s tide-generating force as making a wave in the canal and continually outstripping the wave it generates, for the moon travels along the equator at the rate of about 1000 miles an hour, and the sea is less than 13 miles deep. The resultant oscillation of the ocean must therefore be the summation of a series of partial waves generated at each instant by the moon and always falling behind her, and the aggregate wave, being the same at each instant, must travel 1000 miles an hour so as to keep up with the moon.

Now it is a general law of frictionless oscillation that, if a slowly varying periodic force acts on a system which would. oscillate quickly if left to itself, the maximum ex- cursion on one side of the equilibrium position occurs simultaneously with the maximum force in the direction of the excursion ; but, if a quickly varying periodic force acts on a system which would oscillate slowly if left to itself, the maximum excursion on one side of the equili- brium position occurs simultaneously with the maximum force in the direction opposite to that of the excursion. An example of the first is a ball hanging by a short string, which we push slowly to and fro ; the ball will never quit contact with the hand, and will agree with its excursions. If, however, the ball is hanging by a long string we can play at battledore and shuttlecock with it, and it always meets our blows. The latter is the analogue of the tides, for a free wave in our shallow canal goes slowly, whilst the moon’s tide-generating action goes quickly.

is low water under and opposite to the moon, whilst the forces are such as to make it high water at those times.

If we consider the moon as revolving round the earth, the water assumes nearly the shape of an oblate spheroid with the minor axis pointed to the moon. The rotation of the earth in the actual case introduces a complexity which it is not easy to unravel by general reasoning. We can see, however, that if water moves from a lower to a higher latitude it arrives at the higher latitude with more velocity from west to east than is appropriate to its latitude, and it will move accordingly on the earth's surface. Following out this conception, we see that an oscillation of the water to and fro between south and north must be accompanied by an eddy. Laplace's solution of the difficult problem involved in working out this idea will be given below.

The conclusion at which we have arrived about the tides of an equatorial canal is probably more nearly true of the tides of a globe partially covered with land than if we were to suppose the ocean at each moment to assume the prolate figure of equilibrium. In fact, observation shows that it is more nearly low water than high water when the moon is on the meridian. If we consider how the oscillation of the water would appear to an observer carried round with the earth, we see that he will have low water twice in the lunar day, somewhere about the time when the moon is on the meridian, either above or below the horizon, and high water half way between the low waters.

If the sun be now introduced, we have another similar Sun's in- tide of about half the height, and this depends on solar fluence.

time, giving low water somewhere about noon and mid- night. The superposition of the two, modified by friction and by the interference of land, gives the actually observed aggregate tide, and it is clear that about new and full moon we must have spring tides and at quarter moons neap tides, and that (the sum of the lunar and solar tide- generating forces being about three times their difference)

Hence, Tides in- when the system is left to settle into steady oscillation, it verted.

Diurnal tides,

Evanes- cent in ocean of uniform depth.

Kepler.

Newton.

TiD ES

300

the range of spring tide will be about three times that | this to the fact that the oscillations would last for some

of neap tide.

So far we have supposed the luminaries to move on the equator ; now let us consider the case where the moon is not on the equator. Jt is clear in this case that at any place the moon's zenith distance at the upper transit is different from her nadir distance at the lower transit. But the tide-generating force is greater the smaller the zenith or nadir distance, and therefore the forces are different at successive transits. This was not the case when the moon was deemed to move on the equator. Thus there is a tendency for two successive lunar tides to be of unequal heights, and the resulting inequality of height is called a "diurnal tide." This tendency vanishes when the moon is on the equator; and, as this occurs each fortnight, the lunar diurnal tide is evanescent once a fort- night. Similarly in summer and winter the successive solar tides are generally of unequal height, whilst in spring and autumn this difference is inconspicuous.

One of the most remarkable conclusions of Laplace's theory of the tides, on a globe covered with ocean to a uniform depth, is that the diurnal tide is everywhere non- existent. But this hypothesis differs much from the reality, and in fact at some ports the diurnal tide is so large that during two portions of each lunation there is only one great high water and one great low water in each twenty- four hours, whilst in other parts of the lunation the usual semi-diurnal tide is observed.

§ 4. Historical Sketch.

In 1687 Newton laid the foundation for all that has since been added to the theory of the tides when he brought his grand generalization of universal gravitation to bear on the subject. Kepler had indeed at an earlier date recognized the tendency of the water of the ocean to move towards the centres of the sun and moon, but he was unable to submit his theory to calculation. Galileo expresses his regret that so acute a man as Kepler should have produced a theory which appeared to him to rein-

troduce the occult qualities of the ancient philosophers.-

His own explanation referred the phenomenon to the rota- tion and orbital motion of the earth, and he considered that it afforded a principal proof of the Copernican system.

In the 19th corollary of the 66th proposition of book i. of the Principia, Newton introduces the conception of a canal circling the earth, and he considers the influence of a satellite on the water in the canal. He remarks that the movement of each molecule of fluid must be accelerated in the conjunction and opposition of the satellite with the molecule, and retarded in the quadratures, so that the fluid must undergo a tidal oscillation. It is, however, in propositions 26 and 27 of book iii. that he first deter- mines the tidal force due to the sun and moon, The sea is here supposed to cover the whole earth, and to assume at each instant a figure of equilibrium, and the tide-gener- ating bodies are supposed to move in the equator. Con- sidering only the action of the sun, he assumes that the figure is an ellipsoid of revolution with its major axis directed towards the sun, and he determines the ellipticity of such an ellipsoid. High solar tide then occurs at noon and midnight, and low tide at sunrise and sunset. The action of the moon produces a similar ellipsoid, but of greater ellipticity. The superposition of these ellipsoids gives the principal variations of tide. He then proceeds to consider the influence of latitude on the height of tide, and to discuss other peculiarities of the phenomenon. Observation shows, however, that spring tides occur a day and a half after syzygies, and Newton falsely attributed

1 Founded on Laplace, Afécanique Céleste, bk. xiii. chap. i.

time if the attractions of the two bodies were to cease. The Newtonian hypothesis, although it fails in the form which he gave to it, may still be made to represent the

axes always directed towards a fictitious moon and sun, which are respectively at constant distances from the true bodies; these distances are such that the syzygies of the fictitious planets occur about a day or a day and a half later than the true syzygies. In fact, the actual tides may be supposed to be generated directly by the action of the real sun and moon, and the wave may be imagined to take a day and a half to arrive at the port of observation.

This period has accordingly been called “the age of the Age of

“ Astres tides, if the lunar and solar ellipsoids have their major fictifs.”

tide.” In what precedes the planets have been supposed to tide.

move in the equator ; but the theory of the two ellipsoids cannot be reconciled with the truth when they move in orbits inclined to the equator. At equatorial ports the theory of the ellipsoids would at spring tides give morn- ing and evening high waters of nearly equal height, what- ever the declinations of the bodies. But at a port in any other latitude these high waters would be of very different heights, and at Brest, for example, when the declinations of the bodies are equal to the obliquity of the elliptic, the evening tide would be eight times as great as the morning tide. Now observation shows that at this port the two tides are nearly equal to one another, and that their greatest difference is not a thirtieth of their sum.

Newton here also offered an erroneous explanation of the phenomenon. In fact, we shall see that by Laplace’s dynamical theory the diurnal tide is evanescent when the ocean is of uniform depth over the earth. At many non- European ports, however, the diurnal tide is very iniportant, and thus as an actual means of prediction the dynamical theory, where the ocean is treated as of uniform depth, may be hardly better than the equilibrium theory.

In 1738 the Academy of Sciences of Paris offered, as a D. Bern- The authors ote —

subject for a prize, the theory of the tides. of four essays received prizes, viz., Daniel Bernoulli, Euler, Maclaurin, and Cavalleri. The first three adopted not only the theory of gravitation but also Newton's method of the superposition of the two ellipsoids. Bernoulli's essay contained an extended development of the conception of the two ellipsoids, and, under the name of the equilibrium theory, it is commonly associated with his name. Laplace gives an account and critique of the essays of Bernoulli and Kuler in the Mécanique Céleste. The essay of Mac- laurin presented little that was new in tidal theory, but is notable as containing those theorems concerning the attraction of ellipsoids which we now know by his name. In 1746 D'Alembert wrote a paper in which he treated the tides of the atmosphere; but this work, like Maclaurin's, is chiefly remarkable for the importance of collateral points.

The theory of the tidal movements of an ocean was Laplace.

therefore, as Laplace remarks, almost untouched when in 1774 he first undertook the subject. In the Mécanique Céleste he gives an interesting account of the manner in which he was led to attack the problem. We shall give below the investigation of the tides of an ocean covering the whole earth; the theory is substantially Laplace's, although presented in a somewhat different form. This theory, although very wide, is far from representing the tides of our ports. Observation shows, in fact, that the irregular distribution of land and water and the variable depth of the ocean produce an irregularity in the oscilla- tions of the sea of such complexity that the rigorous solu- tion of the problem is altogether beyond the power of analysis. Laplace, however, rested his discussion of tidal observation on this principle—The state of oscillation of a system of bodies in which the primitive conditions of move-

356

Principle ment have disappeared through friction is coperiodic with of forced the forces acting on the system. Hence, if the sea is solicited ne by a periodic force expressed as a coefficient multiplied by the cosine of an

angle which increases proportionately with the time, there results a partial tide, also expressed by the cosine of an angle which increases at the same rate ; but the phase of the angle and the coefficient of the cosine in the expression for the height may be very different from those occurring in the corresponding term of the equilibrium theory. The coefficients and the constants or epochs of the angles in the expressions for the tide are only derivable from observation. The action of the sun and moon Is ex- pressible in a converging series of similar cosines ; whence there arise as many partial tides, which by the principle of superposition may be added together to give the total tide at any port. In order to unite the several constants of the partial tides Laplace considers each tide as being produced by a fictitious satellite moving uniformly on the equator. Sir W. Thomson and others have followed La- place in this conception; but in the present article we shall not doso. The difference of treatment is in reality only a matter of phraseology, and the proper motion of each one of Laplace's astres jictifs is at once derivable from the argument (or angle under the sign of cosine), which we shall here associate with the partial tides. ; Lubbock, Subsequently to Laplace the most important workers in Whewell, this field were Sir John Lubbock (senior), Whewell, and andAiry. Airy, The work of Lubbock and Whewell (see § 34 below) is chiefly remarkable for the coordination and analysis of enormous masses of data at various ports, and the con- struction of trustworthy tide-tables and of cotidal maps. Airy contributed an important review of the whole tidal theory. He also studied profoundly the theory of waves in canals, and explained the effects of frictional resistances on the progress of tidal and other waves. Of other authors whose work is of great importance we shall speak below.

Amongst all the grand work which has been bestowed on this difficult subject, Newton, notwithstanding his errors, stands out first, and next to him we must rank Laplace. However original any future contribution to the science of the tides may be, it would seem as though it must perforce be based on the work of these two.

A complete list of works bearing on the theory of the tides, from the time of Newton down to 1881, is contained in vol. ii. of the Bibliographie de ? Astronomie by Houzeau and Lancaster (Brussels, 1882). This list does not con- tain papers on the tides of particular ports, and we are not aware of the

existence of any catalogue of works on practical observation, reduction of observations, prediction, and tidal instruments. References are, however, given below to several works on these points.

Biblio- graphy.

II. TipE-GENERATING FoRCEs. § 5. Investigation of Tide-generating Potential and Forces.

We have already given a general explanation of the nature of tide-generating forces ; we now proceed to a rigorous investigation.

If a planet is attended by a single satellite, the motion of any body relatively to the planet's surface is found by the process described as reducing the planet's centre to rest. The planet's centre will be at rest if every body in the system has impressed on it a velocity equal and opposite to that of the planet's centre ; and this is accomplished by impressing on every body an accelera- tion equal and opposite to that of the planet's centre.

Let Mf, m be the masses of the planet and the satellite; 7 the radius vector of the satellite, measured from the planet's centre ; p the radius vector, measured from the same poiut, of the particle whose motion we wish to determine ; aud z the angle between r and p. The satellite moves in an elliptic orbit about the planet, and the acceleration relatively to the planet's centre of the satellite is (Af + m)/r? towards the planet along the radius vector r. Now the centre of inertia of the planet and satellite remains fixed in space, and the centre of the planet describes an orbit round that centre of inertia similar to that described by the satellite round the planet, but with linear dimensions reduced in the proportion of m to M-+m.

Tide- gener- ating forces.

rip hs

'are the differential coefficients with respect to p&, pn, pf of the

Hence the accelcration of the planet's centre is m/r® towards the centre of inertia of the two bodies. Thus, in order to reduce the planet's centre to rest,

we apply to every particle of the system an acceleration m/r? parallel to 7, and directed from satellite to planet.

Now take a set of rectangular axes fixed in the planet, and let M,r, Myr, Mgr be the coordinates of the satellite referred thereto ; and let ép, np, ¢p be the coordinates of the particle P whose radius is p. Then the component accelerations for reducing the planet's

centre to rest are —mM,/72, — mM,/7?, —mM,/r* ; and since these

i m, — — TPM E+ Mon + Myg), and since eos z=M,£+M.n+Ms3f, it follows that the potential of the forces by whieh the planet's centre is to be reduced to rest is

amp — Fx C0S 2

Now let us consider the other forces acting on the particle. The planet is spheroidal, and therefore does not attract equally in all directions ; but in this investigation we may make abstraction of the ellipticity of the planet and of the ellipticity of the ocean due to the planetary rotation. This, which we set aside, is considered in the theories of gravity and of the figures of planets. Outside of its body, then, the planet contributes forces of which the poten- tial is M/p. Next the direct attraction of the satellite contributes forces of which the potential is the mass of the satellite divided by the distance between the point P and the satellite ; this is—

m n/ (7? p? — 2rp cosz} To determine the forces from this potential we regard p and 2 as the variables for differentiation, and we may add to this potential any constant we please. As we are seeking to find the forces which urge P relatively to MJ, we add such a constant as will make the whole potential at the planet's centre zero, and thus we take as the potential of the forces due to the attraction of the satellite— m m {P p—2Qrpcosz} 7

It is obvious that 7 is very large compared with p, and we may therefore expand this in powers of p/r. This expansion gives us

M(Pn Pn PF 7 {2+ oP + BPet ke}

where P,= cos 2, P,=% cos? z~4, P3=$cos?z-$cosz, &c. The reader familiar with spherical harmonic analysis of course recog- nizes the Legendre's functions; but the result for a few terms, which is all that is necessary, is easily obtainable by simple algebra. Now, collecting together the various contributions to the potential,

and noticing that – . A =4 cosz, and is therefore equal and oppo-

?

site to the potential by which the planet's centre was reduced to rest, we have as the potential of the forces acting on a particle whose coordinates are pf, pn, pf

2

can i (2cos? z—4) ie cos?z—%cosz)+ .....(1). Potential. The first term of (1) is the potential of gravity, and the terms of the series, of which two only are written, constitute the tide-gener- ating potential. In all practical aged this series converges so rapidly that the first term is amply sufficient, and thus we shall generally denote

=e (COSSZ = F)Meaeassuscsaecesaues (2)

as the tide-generating potential.

In many mathematical works the tide-generating force is pre- Moon sented as being due to an artificial statical system, which produces and anti- nearly the same force as the dynamical system considered above. moon, This statical system is as follows. Stopping all the rotations, we divide the satellite into two equal parts, and place them diametri- cally opposite to one another in the orbit. Then it is clear that, instead of the term

m m a] {72+ p?—2rp coszt or" we have 4m 4m ™ Ce ef + aan oc nnannenen EE Solio n/ {72+ p?—Qrp cosz} | s/{72+p%+2rpcosz} 7 And this reduces to m m p3aP bat phat. ae The first term is the same as before; hence the statical system produces approximately the same tide-generating force as the true system. The "moon" and "anti-moon," however, produce

rigor- ously the same force on each side of the planet, whereas the true system only satisfies this condition approximately.!

1 The reader may refer to Thomson and Tait's Natural Philosophy (1883), part ii. §§ 798-821, for further considerations on this and analogous subjects, together with some interesting examples.

TIDES

§ 6. Form of Equilibrium.

Let us consider the shape assumed by a layer of fluid of density o, lying on a globe of mass Jf, when acted on by disturbing forces RE CY Wc. aneiiinn ec (3). Suppose the layer to be very thin, and that the mean radius of the layer is a, and let the equation to the boundary of the fluid be

Pee Clee ete iateansennsaveaneses (4). We assume this form, becausc the theory of harmonic analysis tells us that the departure from sphericity must be represented by a function of the form cos?z—4. That theory also gives us as the potential of a layer of matter of depth ea(cos* z— 4), and density o, at an external point the value

a\3 troa*(*) seus" a).

Hence the whole potential, outside of and up to the fluid layer, is

va ame (cos? z— 3) + $roa%(") e(cos? 2— 4) .....(5)s The first term of (5) is the potential of the globe, the second that of the disturbing force, and the third the potential due to departure from sphericity.

Now the fluid must stand in a level surface ; hence, if we equate this potential to a constant, we must get back to the equation (4), which was assumed to be that of the surface. In other words, if we put p=a[1+2(cos?z — 4)] in (5), the result must be constant, provided the departure from sphericity is small In effecting the substitution for p, we may put p=a in the small terms, but in the first term of (5) we put

Hit – e(c0s*2— 8} The whole potential (5) can only be constant if, after this substitu- tion, the coefficient of cos? z- 4 vanishes. Thus we must have

357

The axis of C is taken as the polar axis, and AB is the equatorial planc, so that the functions of £, 7, ¢ are functions of the latitude and longitude of the point P, at which we wish to find the potential.

The functions of M,, M,, M; depend on the moon’s position, and we shall have occasion to develop them in two different ways,— first in terms of her hour-angle and declination, and secondly (§ 23) in terms of her longitude and the elements of the orbit.

Now let A be on the equator in the meridian of P, and B 90° east of A on the equator. Then, if M be the moon, the inclination of the plane MC to the plane CA is the moon’s easterly local hour-angle. ee h=\local hour-angle of moon and 6=moon’s declination : we

ave M,=cosdécosh, M,=cosdsinh, M,=sin 6, whence 2M,M,=cos? 6 sin 2h, M,2-M,? =cos?6 cos 2h, 2M.M,=2 sin 6 cos 6 sin h, 2M,M3=2 sin 6 cos 6 cos h, M,?+ M,? -2M,?

3

Also, if \ be the latitude of P, €=cosA, y=0, ¢=sind,

= = T =1cos*r, Ef=4sin Q, &n=0,

3(€2 4 7? — 2¢?)=1-sin?d.

3

Hence (10) becomes : cos z— 4=4 cos? cos” 6 cos 2h+ sin 2A sin 6 cos 6 cos h +# (4 —sin? 5)(}—sim? A) 00… eee Gabe

The angle h, as defined at present, is the eastward local hour-angle, and therefore diminishes with the time. As, however, this function does not change sign with f, it will be more convenient to regard it as the westward

local hour-angle. Also, if hy be the Greenwich westward hour-angle at the moment under consideration, and / be the west longitude of the place of observation P, we have

=i -sin?6.

and

ém=0,

DE SO go gps 0 aT ae Ril Lhe scone (12) But if 3 be the mean density of the planet J7=47a8, and gravity | Hence we have at the point P, whose radius vector is a, g=H/a. Then we easily find that 3ma? oom 1 6 i 55 {4 cos? \ cos? 6 cos 2(h — 7) + sin 2A sin 5 cos 6 cos (Ay — Z) Or TL, cs RO (6). 45344 ain 6)(9 Sagi? N) pisses sates. one (13). Potential Nae of Thus the equation to the surface is The tide-generating forces are found by the rates of variation of y devel- ‘tee ee { T We liat a (ate z-4)} (7). for latitude and longitude, and also for radius a, if we care to find oped in un. elas me the radial disturbing force. ee — If o be a compared en 6, ine ee ae is a ; thus we en. sce that 1/(1— 20/5) is the coefficient by which the mutual attrac- : y ies ; ; = 1 tion of the fluid augments the deformation of the fluid under the ree sie Rea Sel One Ee, 8. action of the disturbing force. If the density of the fluid be the sunt : . same as that of the sphere, the augmenting factor becomes $, and The westward component of the tide-generating force at the earth’s we have e=4,5ma/gr®, which gives the form of equilibrium of a fluid surface, where p=a, 1s dV Ja cos ddl, and the northward component ; 38mg 36 is dV/ady ; the change of apparent level is the ratio of these to sphere under the action of these forces. Since a= 2(1 — Bs)& | gravity g. dREReIOt, differentiating (18), changing signs, and it follows that, when the form of equilibrium is p=a[1 +e(cos? z—4)], | writing sis) for pie we have component change of level south- the potential of the forces is 2M\r 2gr8 rat =r)e (cos? z— $) (8) = 3 : a 55)? ~~ ee fi pas = rads) {sin 2A cos? 6 cos 2(hy — 2) — 2 cos 2A sin 26 cos (49-4) Lunar More gencrally, if we neglect the attraction of the fluid on itself, 4M\r +sin 2A(1—3sin?6)}; so that o/6 is treated as small, and if p=a(1+s) be the equation to the surface of the fluid, where s is a function of latitude and longi- | component change of level westward tude, then the potential of the forces under which this is an equi- 3m (a3 : librium form is =i) {cos\cos*dsin 2(hy—1) v= Ie (9) +sin

Asin 26 sin (fig —Z)} .....sereee (14). ; a RR tarae The westward component is made up of two periodic terms, one going Tide- It thus appears that we may specify any tide-generating forces by through its variations twice and the other onee a day. The south- generat- means of the figure of equilibrium which the fluid would assume | ward component has also two similar terms; but it has a third ing foree under them, and in the theory of the tides it has been found prac- | term, which does not oscillate about a zero value. If A be a de- specified tically convenient to specify the forees in this way. clination such that the mean value of sin?6 is equal to sin? A, by equi- | By means of the principle of ‘ forced vibrations” referred to in | then, to determine the southward component so that it shall be librium the historical sketch, we shall pass from the equilibrium form to | a truly periodic function, we must subtract from the above form. the actual oscillations of the sea. sin 2\(1—8 sin? A), and the last term then becomes 4 in2 2 § 7. Development of Tide-generating Potential in Terms of asin oNeu A ‘ — ; ne Hour-Angle and Declination. In the case of the moon, A varies a little according to the position Develop- We now proceed to develop the tide-generating potential, and of the moon’s node, but its mean value is about 16 31.

ment of shall of course implicitly (§ 6) determine the equation to the equili- tide-gen- brium figure.

erating

We have already seen that, if z be the moon’s zenith distance at

potential. the point P on the earth’s surface, whose coordinates referred to

A, B, C, axes fixed in the earth, are aé, an, af, then

cos 2= —M, ar 1M. ae Ms, where M,, M,, M, are the moon’s direction cosines referred to the same axes. Then with this value of cos z—

7? M.2-M.2 eos? 2 — |= 287MM, +2*- CaN

5 =o + 2yfM.M, + 2é¢M,M, . 8 <u>725? M</u> M-2M;? a a

The constant portion of the southward component of force has its effect in causing a constant heaping up of the water at the equator ; or, in other words, the moon’s attraction has the effect of causing a small permanent ellipticity of the earth’s mean figure. This augmentation of ellipticity is of course very small, but it is necessary to mention it in order that the meaning to be attributed to lunar deflexion of gravity may be clearly defined.

If we consider the motion of a pendulum-bob during any one day, we sec that, in consequence of the semi-diurnal changes of level, it twice describes an ellipse with major axis east and west, with ratio of axes equal to the sine of the latitude, and with linear dimensions proportional to cos?6, and it once describes an ellipse whose north and south axis is proportional to sin 26 cos 2\ and whose east and

west axis is proportional to sin2ésind. Obviously the latter is eireular in latitude 30°. When the moon is on the equator, the maximum deflexion occurs when the moon’s loeal hour-angle is 45°,

and is then equal to 3m (a\3 oi *) cosi.

At Cambridge in latitude 52° 43’ this angle is 00216.

An attempt, made by George and Horace Darwin,’ to measure the lunar deflexion of a pendulum failed on account of incessant variability of level occurring in the supports of the pendulum and arising from unknown terrestrial changes. The work done, therefore, was of no avail for the purposes for which it was instituted, but remained asa contribution to an interesting subject now be- ginning to be studied, viz., the small changes which are always taking place on the upper strata of the earth.

§ 9. Correction to Equilibrium Theory for Continents.

Effect of In the equilibrium theory as worked out by Newton and Ber- land in noulli it is assumed that the figure of the ocean is at each instant equili- one of equilibrium under the action of gravity and of the tide- brium generating forces. Sir W. Thomson has, however, reasserted? a theory. point

which was known to Bernoulli, but has since been overlooked, namely, that this law of rise and fall of water cannot, when por- tions of the globe are continents, be satisfied by a constant volume of water in the ocean. The law would still hold if water were appropriately supplied to and exhausted from the ocean ; and, if in any configuration of the tide-generating body we imagine water to be instantaneously so supplied or exhausted, the level will every- where rise or fall by the same height. Now the amount of that rise or fall depends on the position of the tide-generating body with reference to the continents, and is different for each sucli position. Conversely, when the volume of the oeean remains con- staut, we have to correct Bernoulli's simple equilibrium theory by an amount which is constant all over the globe at any instant, but which changes in time. Thomson's solution of this problem has since been reduced to a form which is easier to grasp intelligently than in the shape in which he gave it, and the results have also been reduced to numbers.3 It appears that there are four points on the earth's surface at which in the corrected theory the semi- diurnal tide is evanescent, and four others where it is doubled. A similar statement holds for the diurnal tide. As to the tides of long period, there are two parallels of latitude of evanescent and two of doubled tide.

Now in Bernoulli's theory the semi-diurnal tide vanishes at the poles, the diurnal tide at tlie poles and the equator, and the tides of long period in latitudes 35° 16' north and south. The numerical solution of the corrected theory shows that the points and lines of doubling and evanescence in every case fall close to the points and lines where in the uncorrected theory there is evanescence. Whcn in passing from the uncorrected to the corrected theory we speak of a doubled tide, the tide doubled may be itself 222, so that the result may still be nz2. The conclusion, therefore, is that Thomson's cor- rection, although theoretically interesting, is practically so small that it may be left out of consideration.

III. DynamicaL THEORY OF TIDES.

§ 10. Historical Explanation.

The problem of tidal oscillation is essentially a dynamical one. Even when the ocean is taken as covering the whole earth, it pre- sents formidable diffieulties, and this is the only case in which it has been hitherto solved.*

Laplace gives the solution in bks. i. and iv. of the Afécanigue Céleste; but his work is unnecessarily complicated by the inappropriate introduction of spherical harmonic analysis, and it is generally admitted that his investigation is difficult. Airy, in his ‘‘Tides and Waves” (in Ency. Mctrop.) presents the solution free from that complication, but he has made a eriticism of Laplace’s method which we believe to be wrong. Sir W. Thomson has written some interesting papers (in Phil. Mag., 1875) in justification of Laplace, and on these we base the following paragraphs. This portion of the article is given more fully than others, because there exists no complete presentment of the theory free from objections of some kind.

§ 11. Equations of Motion. Let r, 0, ¢ be the radius vector, co-latitude, and east longitude of a point with reference to an origin, a polar axis, and a zero-meridian rotating with a uniform angular velocity m from west to east. Then, if K, H, = be the radial, co-latitudinal, and longitudinal accelerations of the point, we have

Dyna- mical theory.

Equa- tions of motion.

1 Reports to the British Assoc., 1881 (York) and 1882 (Southampton).

2 Thomson and Tait, Nat. Phil., § 807.

3 Darwin and Turner, Proc. Roy. Soc., 1886.

4 Sir W. Thoinson’s paper ‘‘On the Gravitational Oscillations of Rotating Water,” in Phil. Mag., August 1880, bears on the same subject. It is the only attempt which has hitherto been made to consider the effects of the earth’s rotation on the oscillations of land-locked seas.

TIDES

air don? ig gfe y

R=7p-” a) —r sin o(Geen é

mat S ae —r sin 6 cos o(+n) Pear: (15). ee (=) = ep a sin? 0 apt

Now suppose that the point never moves far from a zero position and that its displacements é, 7 sin@ co-latitudinally and longi- tudinally are very large compared with its radial displacement p, aud that the velocities are so small that their squares and products are negligible compared with n?r?; then we have dr_dp dt dt yao ‘ r sin 6 10 Ly sin 6), do _dé “di dt Hence (15) is approximately R= —n*rsin? 0

DY

ae dn

, avery small quantity ;

ede = ee Cle ER eer caCace (16). Com- a ” dé ponent H=sin 0-7 + 2n cos Oa accelera- tions.

With regard to the first equation of (16), we observe that the time has disappeared, and that 2 has exactly the same form as if the system were rendered statical by introducing a potential 4n?r*sin2@ and annulling the rotation of the axes. Bice inertia plays no sensible part radially, it follows that, if we apply these expressions to the formation of equations of motion for the ocean, the radial motion need not be considered. We are left, therefore, with only the last two equations of (16).

We now have to consider the forces by which an element of the Com- ocean is urged in the direction of co-latitude and longitude. These ponent forces are those due to the external disturbing forces and to the forces. pressure of the surrounding fluid, the attraction of the fluid on itself being supposed negligible. We have seen in (9) that, if fluid on a sphere of radius a be uuder the action of disturbing forces whose potential is Ur?, and if r=a+ be the equation to the sur- face, then must gj=Ua?. Hence, if ¢ be the equilibrium height of tide, the potential of the disturbing force is ger*/a*. But, if the elevation be }, the potential under which it would be in equili- brium is ghr?/a?. Therefore, if } be the elevation of the tide in our dynamical problem, the forces due to hydrostatie pressure on an element of the ocean are the same as would be caused by a potential — gh7?/a®. Hence it

follows that the whole forces on the clement are those due to a potential — g(-¢)r?/a. Therefore from (16) we see that the equations of motion are

oe 2nsinOcosé = 7d =e) dé at i d ..(17). Equa- Tp pe SS 2. we eee tions of sin 0 apt 2n cos 6 i can © 3 t) mere

It remains to find the equation of continuity. This may be deduced geometrically from the consideration that the volume of an element of the fluid remains constant ; but a shorter way is to derive it from the equation of continuity as it occurs in ordinary hydrodynamical investigations. If V be a velocity potential, the equation of con- tinuity for incompressible fluid is

df av . d smpecaVy AG “sind 5050) +305(7 sind cr?) d WGA The element referred to in this equation is defined by 7, 0, ¢,

r+6r, 6+60, +6. The co-latitudinal and longitudinal veloci- ties are the saine for all the elementary prism defined by 6, ¢,

dV dV 0+60, @+6¢, and the sea bottom. Then = Poe

sin Pall and, since the radial velocity is dh/dt at the surface of the

at ocean, where r=a+y, and is zero at the sea bottom, where r=a, adV_r-ady : : : we have a 7 ae Hence, integrating with respect to 7 from

r=a+y to r=a, and again with respect to ¢ from the time ¢ to the time when }, é, 7 all vanish, and treating y and as small com- pared with a, we have

Ha sin 6+ id. (yé sin 8) + IS og S100) = Olsens (18). Equa-

a6 dp tion of

This is the equation of continuity, and, together with (17), it forms continu- the system which must be integrated in the general problem of the jty, tides. The difficulties in the way of a solution are so great that none has hitherto been found, except on the supposition that y, the depth of the ocean, is only a function of latitude. In this case (18) becomes

TEDES

Led : ‘dn _ Bat ag gg VE 80 A) tga Oe vrerrerreree (19).

§ 12. Adaptation to Forced Oscillations.

Adapta- | Since we may suppose that the free oscillations are annulled by tion to friction, the solution required is that corresponding to forced oscil- forced lations. Now we have seen from (18) that e¢ (which is proportional oscilla- to VY) has terms of three kinds, the first depending on twice the tions. | moon’s (or sun’s) hour-angle, the second on the hour-angle, and the third independent thereof. The coefficients of the first and second terms vary slowly, and the whole of the third varies slowly. Hence e has a semi-diurnal, a diurnal, and a long period term. We shall see later that these terms may be expanded in a series of approxi- mately semi-diurnal, diurnal, and slowly varying terms, each of which is a strictly harmonic function of the time. Thus we may assume for ¢ a form e cos (2n/t-+kp +a), where f and & are numbers, aud where e is only a function of co-latitude and of the elements of the orbit of the disturbing body. According to the usual method of treating oscillating systems, we may therefore make the follow- ing assumption for the form of solution e=e cos (2nft+kp+a) h=h cos (2ft +k + a) ~=x cos (Qnft+kd +a) n=y sin (2nft+ko+a) where e, h, x, y are functions of co-latitude 9 only. Substituting these values in (19), we have

1 @ : ae go™ sin 0)+kyy +ha=0 Then, if we write u for h—e, and put m=n”a/g, substitution from (20) in (17) leads at once to . 1 du

xf?+y/ sin 0 cos =

...(20),

yf? sin 0+xfcos 0= -— Ey, Solving (22) for x and y, we have 1 (/du k&_ cosé Priel AN ee ee a aie 008 t= GN ae* f° ane -l1fcos@du ku . bas 2 es hae FORE – ee os 4m\ f d@- sin @ Then substituting from (28) in (21), we have

Final 1d sin 6 ty ucos@) | _ oe ‘do * sin 0 equation. sin 6 dé a = ne sin 0(f2 —- cos? @) SATO DE 6} =‘0). vse ccceesvones en eecasiane (24). This is Laplace’s equation for tidal oscillations in an ocean whose

depth is only a function of latitude. When u is found from this equation, its value substituted in (23) will give x and y.

»+-(23).

cosOdu ku

§ 13. Preparation for Solution.

The ocean which is considered in this case is not like that on the earth’s surface, and therefore it does not seem desirable to pursue the integration of (24) except in certain fier cases.

In (13) we have the expansion of the disturbing potential and implicitly of the disturbing forces in three terms, the first of which is variable in half a day, the second in a day, and the third in half the period of revolution of the tide-raising body. Forestal- ling the results of chapter iv.—each of these terms may be expressed as the sum of a series of strictly harmonic functions of the time ; the first set of these have all approximately semi-diurnal periods, the second approximately diurnal periods, and the third vary slowly in dependence on the periodic time of the tide-generating body. The first set involve twice the terrestrial longitude, the second the longitude, and the third set are independent of the longitude of the place of observation. From these statements compared with (138) we see that in the semi-diurnal terms / is approximately unity, 4=2, and e=E sin? 0; in the diurnal terms f is approximately 4, k=1, and e=E sin 6 cos @; in the terms of long period f is a small fraction (for the fortnightly tide about +g), k=0, e=E(4-cos? 6). The departure from exactness in the rela- tion f=1 for the semi-diurnal, and f=4 for the diurnal terms is generally (except for certain critical depths of ocean) not such as to greatly change the nature of the results from those obtained when Laplace’sf=1 and 3 rigorously. Hence the integration of (24) will be

Prepara- tion for solution.

three pursued on these three hypotheses, giving Laplacc’s three kinds of kinds of oscillation. The hypothesis which will be made with regard to y

oscilla. is that y=/(1—g cos? 6), and in the case of the semi-diurnal tides tion. we shall be compelled by mathematical difficulties to suppose g to

be either unity or zero. The tides of zonal seas may be worked out, and more complex laws of depth may be assumed; but for the discussion of such cases the reader is referred to Thomson’s papers in Phil. Mag., 1875.

There might be reason to conjecture that the form of u would be similar to that of e, and this isin fact the case for the diurnal tides

359

for any value of g and for the semi-diurnal tides when q is unity. Preli- Before proceeding further it will be convenient to exhibit two minary purely analytical transformations of the first two terms of (24) transfor- which hold true for certain values of & and f, and when u has such mations. a form as that suggested. If we put k=1, f=4, y=U(1-q¢ cos? 6),

then, if v= sin 6 cos @, it will be found on substitution that

. av dv v pee 1 a (sin apt 200086) i 2 cot “0 ate ye a sin 6 dé — cos? 6 Y + – cos? 0 = oe :

Again, if we put E=2, f=1, g=1, y=U(1— cos? 6)=1 sin? 6, and if v= sin? 6,

= naw dv 2Qv 1 ag Hsin egg +20c0s0) redo nO _ S. sin 6 d6 1 – cos? 6 YT costo v …(26).

Another general property of (24) is derived from the supposition that u is expressed in a series proceeding by powers of J; thus

2

lel as ia a oe Let v, %, 2, &e., be so chosen that, when u is substituted in (24), the coefficient of each power of / vanishes independently ; then the term independent of J obviously gives v= —e, and the connex-

ion between successive 2’s is cos 6 dup,

Gt, COSA Mm | kUm

(sin 0 +m cos 0) a f de + Sin 6

at 7 sin 0 (f*- cos? 6) SAUL UNO) salecisorrs(osersianssesaicies (28).

We shall suppose below that u is expansible in the form (27), and shall use (28) in conjunction with (25) or (26) for finding the successive values of the v's.

id sin 6 dé

§ 14. Diurnal Tide.

Let us first consider the diurnal tides. We have e=E sin 6 cos 6, Diurnal k=1, and f=; then %»=—-Esin@cos@. Hence by (28) and (25) tide. —Blgy + 41 =O) oo… sennnadsoreensie '

Applying the same theorem a second time,

V_=(2q/m)y,, and so on ; therefore u=%,[1 + 2l¢/ma + (2lg/ma)?+...]

and therefore 0= hoy

cs Soe : ee ie (30). Butu=h-—e; hence, —_—_2lq/ma he T— 2lq/ma° sae cee cesceeseersnreeees (81).

It appears, therefore, that the tide is " inverted," giving low water where the equilibrium tide gives high water. If q=0, so that the ocean is of uniform depth, the tide vanishes,

§ 15. Semi-Diurnal Tide, with Variable Depth.

Next let us consider the semi-diurnal tide in the case where y=1, Semi- so that y=/ sin? 6. Then e=E sin? 0, k=2, f=1; also y= —e= diurnal -—Esin?@. Hence by (28) and (26) — 8/x)+ 4mlv,=0, whence v,= tide. 2/mvy. Applying the same theorem a second time, 7.=(2/m)*%», and so on ; therefore u=%,[1 + 21/ma + (21/ma)?+...]

~ % ar € $_{1-2i/ma}$ = 1 —2l/ma’ -_ _ _ _2d/ma Hence h=u+e= 1— 2i/ma° 5 ad, eisle/ele”alo(ale oid wna vies (32),

If 22/ma =}, the height of tide is equal to the equilibrium height ; but it is inverted, giving low water where the equilibrium theory gives high water. In the case of the earth m=1/289, and therefore this relation is satisfied if? 7=a/1156. Hence in a sea 3000 fathoms deep at the equator, and shallowing to the poles, we have inverted semi-diurnal tides of the equilibrium height.

§ 16. Semi-Diurnal Tide, with Uniform Depth.

The method of development used above, where we proceed by powers of the depth of the ocean, is not applicable where the depth is uniform, because it leads to a divergent series. We have there- fore to resume equation (24). In the case of the semi-diurnal tides we have for the depth y=/ (a constant by hypothesis), 4=2, f=1 approximately, and e=Esin?@. Now for brevity let B=4ma/I, y=sin 6, so that e=Ev*, Then we find that on development (24) becomes da T du

v1 – Yh ras (8 — 2v? – By4)u= – BES ..... (33). Let us now assume as the solution of this equation u=(K,—- Ey*?+ Ky4+ Keo +... + Kow*+... ..... (84), Substituting from (34) in (33), and equating to zero the coefficients of the successive powers of v, we find K,=£, K, apparently inde- terminate, and 2i(2¢ + 6) Kop14 — 20(24+ 3) Kao + BKo=0 Since K,=0, this equation of condition may be held to apply for all positive integral values of z, beginning withi=0. It is obvious that Kg is determinable in terms of K, and K,, Kg in terms of K,

360

and K,, &c., so that all the X’s are to be found in terms of UE, which is known, and of K, which is apparently indeterminate.

The condition for the convergency of the series (34) for u and for the series du/dv is that Koi40/K2 shall tend to a limit less than

Again, under the same circumstances we have in the limit when 7 is very large—

(Qi+4)Ko p43 2344 ; 2143 ea(14 il ya a. 8 Vy?

(Qi +2) Korot)” 2142 2746 é+1 2(¢4+ 8) =(1 — 1/27)». ws But the ratio of successive terms of (1 —»*)~4 tends to (1 – 3/0)r*. Hence, if Kaj4o/Ko; does not tend to become infinitely small, du/dy=C+ D(1- v?)-4, where C and D are finite for all values of ». an _ {= FECN I-A +.

i .

Therefore at the cquator, where y=1, du/d0=D, a finite quantity. Hence the hypothesis that Ko:+2/Ks; tends to be not infinitely small

Now

TIDES

Since h vanishes when »=0, there is no rise and fall of water at the poles. When v=1 at the cquator, we find

p=40, h= —7:434E

B=10, h= 11:267E

p= 5,h= POAe.

The negative sign in the first case shows that the tide is inverted at the equator, giving low water when the disturbing body is on the meridian. Near the pole, however, that is, for small values of v, the tides are direct. In latitude 18° (approximately) there is a nodal line of evanescent semi-diurnal tide. In the second and third cases the tides are everywhere direct, increasing in magnitude from pole to equator. As § diminishes the tides tend to assume their equilibrium value, because all the terms, save the first, become evanescent. When S=1 (depth y; of radius) the tide at the equator still exceeds its equilibrium value by 11 per cent. As diminishes from 40 to 10 the nodal line of evanescent tide contracts round the ole, and when it is infinitely small the tides are infinitely great. “he particular value of 8 for which this occurs is that where the free oscillation of the ocean has the same period as the forced oscilla- tion. The values chosen by Laplace were

not well adapted for the illustration of the results, because in the cases of B=40 and B=10 the depth of the ocean is not much different from that value which would give infinite semi-diurnal tide. For values of 6 greater than 40 we should find other nodal lines dividing the sphere into regions of direct and inverted tides. We refer the reader to Sir W. Thomson's papers for further details on this interesting point.

§ 17. Tides of Long Period ; Laplace's Argument Srom Friction.

leads to the conclusion that u and du/dé are finite at the equator. But on account of the symmetry of the system the co-latitudinal displacement £ must vanish at the equator, and therefore x also. By (28), when f=1, k=2, v=sin 8,

1 /du) oo pasbe 6). vex ial got cos

In treating these oscillations Laplace remarks that a very small Laplace's — amount of friction will be sufficient to cause the surface of the argu- ocean to assume at each instant its form of equilibrium, and he ment adduces in proof of his conclusion the considerations given below. from The friction here contemplated is such that the integral effect is friction represented by a retarding force proportional to the velocity of the unsound,

But we have just seen that this hypothesis makes u finite when v=1 or 0=90", and therefore at the equator _1 dua = Fin do? Now symmetry necessitates a vanishing value of du/d@ at the equator. Thus the hypothesis that Kei+2/Ko: tends to be not in- finitely small is negatived, and we conclude that, on account of the symmetry of the motion, it is infinitely small for infinitely great values of i, This being established, let us write (36) in the form

a finite quantity.

Koso

water relatively to the bottom. Although proportionality to the square of the velocity would probably be nearer to the truth, yet Laplace's hypothesis suffices for the present discussion.

n oscillations of this class the water moves for half a period north, and then for halfa period south. In oscillating systems, where the resistances are proportional to the velocities, it is usual to specify the resistance by a modulus of decay, namely, that period in which a velocity is reduced to e~! of its initial value by friction. Now the friction contemplated by Laplace is such that the modulus of decay is short compared with the semi-period of oscillation. The quickest of the important tides of long period is the fortnightly (see chapter

Ku 207436 — (22 M5 Goes (36a). ner ponies as eee ct oe me a modulus sipesics , of decay mus ri red w 5 it seems prac- oli le — —— ene) meee be! te spe al ae 2 the bed of the root opie a : are = P+3t : ‘ materially affect the velocity of a slow ocean current in a day or two. se Ko 20430 – TESTE TESy _ [+1 1364 8 Hence we cannot accept Laplace’s discussion as satisfactory. How- fraction. 2(é+2)?+3(¢+2) —&c. (87). | ever this may be, we now give what is substantially his argument. And we know that this is a continuous approximation to Ko;40/Ko;, Let us write 6 for the reciprocal of the modulus of decay. Then which must hold in order that the latitudinal velocity may vanish | the frictional forces introduced on the left-hand side of (17) are at the equator. Writing N;=Ko:40/Ko, all the V’s may be com- | + édé/dt in the first and sin 66dn/dt in the second. Laplace’s puted from the continued fraction (37). Then hypothesis with regard to the magnitude of the frictional forces K,=E, K,/E=M, Kp/E=N No, Ke/E=N,N.N3, &e. enables us to neglect the terms d7£/d¢# and sin 6 d°n/dé? compared We cannot compute K, from K,, Kz from Kg, and so on; for, if we | with the frictional forces. Then, if we observe that in oscillations do, then, short of infinite accuracy in the numerical values, we shall | of this class the motion is entirely latitudinal, equations (17) and be gradually led to successive values of the K’s which tend to | (19) become de : dn gdy_ aa —2 — 2n sin 0 cos 8 = = (h- 2) equality. ; dt dt a ado This process was followed by Laplace without explanation. It ‘ dn dé was attacked by Airy in his ‘‘ Tides and Waves” (in Ency. Metrop.) sin 067 2n cosO- =O hse aees (38). and by Ferrel in his Tidal Researches (U.S. Coast Survey, 1873), but . d ; was justified by Sir W. Thomson in the Phil. Mag. (1875, p. 280). ha sin 6 aoe sin #)=0 The investigation given here is substantially Thomson’s. ’ : ; Solu- Laplace gives numerical solutions for -three different depths of From the first two of Ue we easily obtain tions. the sea, g2s5y, ras, sates Of the

earth’s radius. Since m=-4,, (6+ ae cos2 0) ee ae er (39). these correspond respectively to the cases of 8=40, 10, 5, and the &° dt a dé

solutions are

B=40, h=E{v?+ 20°1862»4 10°1164y8 — 18°1047v8 —15°4488r10 — 7:4581v12— 9:1975y14— 0:4501v18— 0:0687r18 — 0°0082»29 0-0008»22— 0:0001y7...}

B=10, h=E{v?7+ 6:1960v4 + 324746 + 0°7238y8 + 0-0919r1° 0°00767” 0:0004!4…}

B= 5, h=Elv?+ 0°75044 + 0°1566r5 + 0°0157v8+ 0:0009r1° + ...}

1 Thomson calls this a dissipation of accuracy. It may be illustrated thus. Consider the equation x2-32+2=0, which may be written either =3+4322 or x=3-2/c. Now letz,, 41=3+322,, and suppose we start with any value zo, less than unity, and compute a, 9,...,. Then, starting with x, in the equation %__1=3 — 2/a,,if we work backwards, we ought to come to the original value %. In fact, however, we shall only do so if there is infinite accuracy in all the numerical values. For, start with z9=4, then 2;=°75, x= “8542, #3= “9099, %4= “9527, x= “9692; and the values go on approximating to 1, which is a root of theequation. Next start backwards with z5;=-97, and we find 24=-938, x3= 868, X= “696, 7) = “127, x9 = -— 12°75, w_y=8°157, w_9=2°367, &_3=2°155, x_4=2°072; and the values go on approximating to 2, the other root of the equation.

As a first approximation we treat dt/dt as zero, and obtain h=z, or the height of water satisfies the equilibrium theory. In these tides (see chap. iv.) e=% (4- cos? 9) cos zt, so that from the third equation of (38) we can obtain a first approximation to £; then, sub- stituting in (39), we obtain on integration a second approximation to . Laplace, however, considers as adequate the first approxima- tion, which is simply the conclusion of the equilibrium theory.

§18. Tides of Long Period in an Ocean of Uniform Depth.

As it seems certain that these tides do not satisfy even approxi- Tides of mately the equilibrium law, we now proceed to find the solution long In the case of thesc tides k=0, f a small period

where there is no friction. fraction, and e=E(4-—cos?@), The equation (24) then becomes = 7a = d *+4ma(u+e)=0; sin 0 d@0* ——_—

\f’? — cos?

Method of con- tinued fraction.

TIDES

or, writing « for cos @ and e=E (4 — 2),

d (_1-# du ii (vies a.) = 27077 (U1. 30) besenEOeBReBbon (40). We shall confine the investigation to the case where y=/, a con- stant, and where the sea covers the whole surface of the globe. The symmetry of the motion in this case demands that u when ex- panded in a series of powers of « shall only involve even powers. Let us assume, therefore, that

1 d we = Tum Bue + Bus + aon + Bopp ywttt + sea peeeee tall): Th EE: : – we a az Bul (Bs = Bet alta (Boia — Boj) 241 + oe

—s —_—_——,. — — — 2 eee du = ae) B, + 8(B; — By)? +

+(2¢+1) (Bory — Bo-a)w#+ 20.0 oe. (42). Again, a= —f°B w+ (By, —/?Bs uF +... + (Bai — Bap) te… (48),

1 ;

u=C-$/°B yw? + 4(B, —f/?Bs)u4+ ... + 5; Bai-s —f*Boj-1)* + (44),

where C is a constant. Then, writing 6 for 4ma/J, as in the case of the semi-diurnal tide, substituting from (42), (48), and (44) in (40), and equating to zero the successive coefficients of the powers of p, we find C= wee Se)

By-B,(1- 535 778) +46B=0

; (45).

1 2 B = Bai – Ban(1 “For JB) SCT ED) Ba-3=0 Thus the constant C and Bs, B,, &c., are all expressible in terms of B,, and B, is apparently indeterminate. We may remark that, if

2 Bas 1E, or B-,= — 2E,

the equation of condition (45) may be held to apply for all values of ¢, from one to infinity. Let us write (45) in the form

Bort 1 ‘ B Bas

Baa) age 1)! Ot aR By When 7 is large Boj+1/Bo:-1 either tends to become infinitely small or it;does not do so. Let us ey punee that it does not tend to become infinitely small. Then it is obvious that the successive B’s tend to become equal to one another, and so also do the values of (Boj-2 —/*Bo:-1) /2¢ and the coefficients of du/du. Hence we have dujdu = D+M)/(1—m”), for all values of u, where Z and M are finite. Hence this hypothesis gives infinite velocity to the fluid at the pole, where ~=1. But with a water-covered globe this infinite velocity is impossible, and therefore the hypothesis is negatived, and By4:/Bs:-1 must tend to become infinitely small. This being established, let us write (46) in the form

pak Pie Bo-1_——:2t(2¢ +1) Bus ,_ FB Bawa 2i(2t+1) Boa By repeated applications of (47), we have in the form of a con- tinued fraction

B Baa 24(27+1) BO Boi-3 JB (20+ 2)(2¢+ 3) B 226-41) TB (24 +4)(27+5) (26+ 2)(2¢ + 8) 7B ~(Bi+ 4)(2545) + &c. (48).

And we know that this is a continuous approximation, which must hold in order to satisfy the condition that the water covers the whole globe. Let us denote this continued fraction by – V;. Then, if we remember that B_;= — 2E, we have B,=2EM,, B,/B,= — NV», B;/B3= — 3, B,/Bs= – My, &c., so that B,= —-2EN,N,, B;5=2EN|N,N3, By= ~~2EN, N,N,N, &c., and C= —~~ $E+2EN,/p. Then h=u+e =C+4E-(E+3/°B,)y? +4(B,—/°B,)u4 + 4(B, —/7B;) uo +... = E{2M1/8 -—(1 +f?)u? + 3.4 (1 + F722) ut 4 4N,N.(1 +f7N 5) uo +. . ny Now we find that, when 8=40, which makes the depth of

the sea 3000 fathoms or zg55 of the radius of the earth, and with J=‘0365012, which is the value for the fortnightly tide (see chap. iv.), N,=3°040692, N,=1:20137, N,=°66744, V,=‘42819, V;=:29819, N,= 21950, p= 16814, N= BRASH. LV — ll Ove Nive ale These values give

361

2N,/B=“15208, 1+f2N,=1-0041, 4N,(1+f2N,) =1°5298, EN,W(1+f2N,)=1:2187, 40,N,NQ(1+f2N,) =-60988 EN ,....N4(1 +f2N5) = “20888, AN, ...N5(1 725) =-05190, Ny… Ne(1/2N;)= “00976, 1N,... W(1 4/25) =-0014, ak Dia \ ase a RN, ...N9(1+f2Np) = 00017, a

h/e= {1520 – 1:0041 u? + 1°5228u4— 1:2187 48+ 6099u8 — 2089419 Solutions,

+ 0519)? — -0098 4 + 001436 — 000218} + (4 — 2) (50). At the pole, where w=1, h= —Ex ‘1087=e x “1556 5 and at the equator, where »=0, h= +E x ‘1520=e x ‘4561 } (51). Now let us take a second case, where 8=10, which was also one of those solved for the case of the semi-diurnal tide by Laplace, and we find h/E= ‘2363 —1-0016u? + °5910u4— 1627+ 02588 — ~~0026u1° + °0002.}2, At the pole, where w=1, we find h= —~~ E x ‘3187=e x ‘471, and at the equator h= +E x :2363=ex ‘709. With a deeper ocean we should soon arrive at the equilibrium value for the tide, for IN foe, Jsiee &c., become very small, and 2N,/8 becomes equal to 3. In this case, with such oceans as those with which we have to deal, the oe of long period are considerably smaller than the equilibrium value.

§ 19. Stability of the Ocean.

Imagine a globe of density 6, surrounded by a spherical layer of Stability water of density o. Then, still maintaining the spherical figure, and of the with water still covering the nucleus, let the layer be displaced ocean.

sideways. The force on any part of the water distant 7’ from the centre of the water and r from the centre of the nucleus is 4707″ towards the centre of the fluid sphere and 47(5—«)r towards the centre of the nucleus. If 6 be greater than o there is a force tend- ing to carry the water from places where it is deeper to places where it is shallower ; and therefore the equilibrium,

thus arbitrarily dis- turbed, is stable. If, however, 6 is less than o (or the nucleus lighter than water) the force is such that it tends to carry the water from where it is shallower to where it is deeper, and therefore the equilibrium of a layer of fluid distributed over a nucleus lighter than itself is unstable. As Sir William Thomson has remarked,}

if the nucleus is lighter than the ocean, it will float in the ocean Stabilities with part of its surface dry. Suppose, again, that the fluid layer of various be disturbed, so that its equation is r=a(1+s;), where s; is a sur- orders.

face harmonic of degree 7; then the potcntial due to this deforma-

t+3 tion is rat = s;, and the whole potential is

4rrda® dro wits Br | +1 rit *

If, therefore, o/(2i+1) is greater than }6, the potential of the forces due to deformation is greater than that due to the nucleus. But we have seen that a deformation tends to increase itself by mutual attraction, and therefore the forces are such as to increase the deformation. If, therefore, s=}(2/+1)é, all the deformations up to the ith are unstable, but the 7+1th is stable? If, however, o be less than 6, then all the deformations of any order are such that there are positive forces of restitution. For our present purpose it suffices that this equilibrium is stable when the fluid is lighter than the nucleus.

§ 20. Precession and Nutation.

Suppose we have a planet covered with a shallow ocean, and that Preces- the ocean is set into oscillation. Then, if there are no external dis- sion and turbing forces, so that the oscillations are ‘‘free,” not ‘‘forced,” nutation.

the resultant moment of momentum of the planet and ocean remains constant. And, since each particle of the ocean exccutes periodic oscillations about a mean position, it follows that the oscillation of the ocean imparts to the solid earth oscillations such that the re- sultant moment of momentum of the whole system remains constant. But the mass of the ocean being very small compared with that of the planet, the component

angular velocities of the planet necessary to counterbalance the moment of momentum of the oscillations of the sea are very small compared with the component angular velocities of the sea, and therefore the disturbance of planetary rotation due to oceanic reaction is negligible. If now an external disturbing force, such as that of the moon, acts on the system, the resultant moment of momentum of sea and earth is unaffected by the interaction between them, and the precessional and nutational couples are the same as if sea and earth were rigidly connected together. Therefore the additions to these couples on account of tidal oscillation are the couples due to the attraction of the moon on the excess or deficiency of water above or below mean sea-level. The tidal oscillations are very small in height compared with the equatorial protuberance of the earth, and the density of water is viths of that of surface rock ; hence the additional couples are very small compared with the couples due to the moon's action on the

1 Thomson and Tait, Nat. Phil., § 816. 2 Compare an important paper by Poincaré, in Acta Math. (1885), 7; 3, 4.

Correc- tions to preces- sion and nutation insen- sible.

Tides in rivers.

Inter- ference of waves in shal- low water.

solid equatorial protuberance. Therefore precession and nutation take place sensibly as though the sea were congealed in its mean position. If the ocean be regarded as frictionless, the principles of energy show us that these insensible additional couples must be periodic in time, and thus the corrections to nutation must consist of semi-diurnal, diurnal, and fortnightly nutations of absolutely insensible magnitude. 'We shall have much to say below on the results of the introduction of friction into the conception of tidal oscillations as a branch of speculative astronomy.

§ 21. Some Phenomena of Tides in Rivers.

In § 2 we have given a description of some of the phenomena of the tide-wave in rivers. As a considerable part of our practical knowledge of tides is derived from observations in estuaries and rivers, we give an investigation of two of the most important features of the tide-wave in these cases. It must be premised that when the profile of a wave does not present the simple harmonic form it is convenient to analyse its shape into a series of partial waves superposed on a fundamental wave ; and generally the principle of harmonic analysis is adopted, in which the actual wave is regarded as the sum of a number of simple harmonic waves.

The tide-wave in a river is a “long” wave in which the vertical motion of the water is very small compared with the horizontal, the river very shallow compared with the wave-length, and the water which is at any moment in a vertical plane always remains so throughout the oscillation.

Suppose that the water is contained in a straight and shallow canal of uniform depth ; then take an origin of coordinates at the bottom, with the x axis horizontal in the direction of the canal, and the y axis vertical ; let % be the undisturbed depth of water ; let 4+ 7 be the ordinate of the surface corresponding to that fluid whose undisturbed abscissa is x and disturbed abscissa x + & ; and

let g be gravity. The equations of motion and continuity } are

PE oy CHa

ae 9″ (1+ dé/dx)s . _ ~Adéldae_ see eeeecceeeenere (52). = 14 dé/de

For brevity we shall write ?=gh and u=t-2. Since for “ long” waves dt/dx is small, the equations (52) become approximately

f. (1-82)

aide. (aN 58 aes eh aes sieen aa h- ~ de® \de

For finding a first approximation we neglect the second term on the right of each of (53). The solution is obviously E=a cos m(vi — %) =a cos mu n= — mah sin mu (54) gives the height of the water whose undisturbed

abscissa is x, and since é is small this is approximately the height at the point on the bank whose abscissa is. But now suppose that at the origin (the mouth of the river) the canal communicates with a basin in which there is a forced oscillation of water-level given by = AORN eapanes PR he poner (55).

Fig. the over-tide is th of the fundamental and has a range of 2 feet. If the river shallows very gradually, the formula will still hold, and we see that the height of over-tide varies as (depth) 3.

Fig. 12 read from left to right exhibits the progressive change

of shape. The steepness of the advancing crest shows that it is a shorter time from low to high water than vice versa. The law of the ebb and flow of currents mentioned in § 2 may also be easily determined from the above investigation. We leave the reader to determine the effect of friction, which is given by inserting a term — pdé/dt on the right-hand side of (57).

(ii.) Compound Tides (see § 24).—We shall now consider the mutual influence of two waves of different periods travelling up the river together. In the first approximation they are quite inde- peudent, and we may assume

t=a cos m(vt—x)+bcos[n(vt—-x) +e] .....006 (61).

In proceeding to the second approximation, we only take notice of those terms which result from the interaction of the two, and omit all others, writing for the sake of brevity

wigs =(m—-n)\(vt-x) -«, {m+n} =(m+n)(vt ~— x) +e. With the value of £ assumed in (61), we find, on substituting in (53)

and only retaining terms depending on mutual influence, that the equations for the second approximation are

1 See, for example, Lamb’s Hydrodynamics, chap. vii. 2 From Airy, ‘‘Tides and Waves.” : 4

TIDES

This represents the oceanic tide, and n is that which we call below (§ 23) the speed of the tide. Then obviously m=1/v, so that at any point x up the river

x =H sin nf = =.) 2 f gh (56) gives the first approximation to the forced tide-wave, and it is clear that any number of oscillations may be propagated inde- pendently

the river. the investigation into two branches.

up the river with the velocity \/gh due to the depth of Over In passing to the second approximation we must separate tides.

(i.) Over- Tides (see § 24).—We now suppose that the tide at the .

river mouth is simply (55). On substituting the approximate values (54) in (53) our equations become

DE oh Bandy land of

ana sin 2mu tig n_ _ a eg ee ee = dat ee £m’a? cos 2mu

We have now to assume an appropriate form for the solution of (57), such as t=a cos mu+ Ax cos 2mu+ B sin 2mu 58). We have here in effect assumed that the second and third terms of (58) are small compared with the first. It is clear, however, that at a distance from the origin the term in A will become large. This difficulty may be eluded by taking the canal of finite length, and supposing that, where the canal debouches into a second basin, a second appropriate forced oscillation is maintained. The length of the canal remains arbitrary, save- that the second term of (58) shall still be small compared with the first. On substituting from (58) in (57) we have B indeterminate and A= — §a*m ; hence nlh=kma?—masinmu + fmsarasin 2mu + (2mB-} m’a?)cos2mu (59). This gives the elevation of the water whose undisturbed abscissa is 2, that is to say, at the point whose abscissa along the bank is X=a+é If we put <=X-—é in the largest term of (59), and treat ¢as small, and put =X in the small terms, (59) becomes

nlh= — ma sin m(vt — X) + §miarX sin 2m(vt — X)

+ (2mB — §m?a*) cos 2m(vt — X).

But at the origin (55) holds true, therefore B=;me’, – mah=H,

and mv=n. ‘Thus the solution is x ox,) 8H (e.g = ~—= J+ —=NXsi = . n= Hsin aft Jah a al sin 2n\ ¢ =a) (60)

From (60) we can see what the proper forced oscillation at the further end of the canal must be; but this matter has no present interest. The first term of (60) being called the fundamental, the second gives what is called the first over-tide; and by further approximation we can get the second, third, &c. The over-tide travels up the river at the same rate as the fundamental, but it has double frequency or me rae the ratio of its amplitude to that N

4h h g As a numerical example, let the range of tide at the river mouth be 20 feet and the depth of river 50 feet. The “speed” of the

semi-diurnal tide is about 1/1°9 radians per hour ; «/g=27 miles 8H nX_ 1

—_— —?

4h /gh 342

of the fundamental is

per hour ; hence X. Therefore 34 miles up the river

TE = oth + geabmnf(m +n)sin {m+n} —(m-n)sin{m— “he) n[h= — abmn{cos {m+n} — cos {m—n}]—-dé/dx

Now let us assume as the solution t=acos m(vt —x)+Azcos{m+n} + Bsin {m+n} (63) ;

+b cos [n(vt — x) €] Cx cos{m—n}+Dsin{m—n} J . and let us elude the difficulty about the increasing magnitude of the second term in the same way as before. Substituting in the equation of motion, we have for all time,

2(m+n)A sin {m+n} +2(m—n)C sin {m—n} +3abmn[(m +n) sin {m+n} — (m—n) sin {m—n}]=0. This gives A= — fabmn and C= +4abmn. B and D

remain arbi- trary as before, and will be dropped, because they are to be deter- mined by the condition that at the origin the terms of dé/dx in cos {m+n}, cos{m—n} are to vanish, whence n —amsin m(vt — x) — bn sin [n(vt — x) +€] + 2abmn[(m+n)a sin{m +n} —(m—n)ax sin ym — ny] + terms in cos{m+n}and cos {m—n}. Then we pass from x to X as in the last section, and make the terms in cos {m+n} and cos {m—}vanish by proper values of Band D, and we have n=amhsin m(vt — X) — bnhsin{[n(vt — x) +€] +8abmnX[(m+n) sin {m+n} —(m—n) sin {m—n}] (64).

Now at the river's mouth, where x=0, suppose that the oceanic tide is represented by 7=H, sin 2,¢ +H, sin (Mot + €).

Solution giving first over-tide,

TIDES

Then -am=HJh, – bn=H,/h, habmn=H,H,/h,

363

of heights and times of high and low water, soon shows that the

fe Ny te fusion of two simple harmonic or periodic funetions is insufficient MV=M, NV=Nq, V=A/gh, Mtn= /gh ? to represent the state of tide; and the height and time of high so that (64) becomes water are found to need corrections for the variations of declination, x ; xX of motion in right ascension, and of the parallaxes of both bodies.

Solutions n=A,sIin na(i = ~~.) + Hy, sin EG —-———)+ c| But when eontinuous tide-gauges were set up far more extended for com- a gh Noh data than those of the older observations became accessible to the pound 3H) i 1 + No ¢ dia [ie i(t- x) +e| investigator, and more and more corrections were found to be ex- tides. 4h / oh Nie gh pedient to adapt the formule to the facts. A systematic method 3H,H, nm, – Nay os a gs of utilizing all the data became also a desideratum. This state of

oa | Wen sin [= m)(t-Fa) = 1 (65). matters led Sir W. Thomson to suggest the analytic method.! It Analytic

As a numerical example, suppose at the mouth of a river 50 feet deep that the solar semi-diurnal tide has a range 2H,=4 feet, and thelunar 2H, =12 feet ; then n, +.=$#radians per hour, 2, — %.= #7

is true that the dynamical foundations of that method have always method.

lain below the surface of the synthetic method, and have constantly been appealed to for the theoretical determination of corrections ; nevertheless, we must regard the explicit adoption of the analytic

radians per hour, and as before \/gh=27 miles per hour. With | method asa great advance. In this method we conceive the tidal these figures 8H Hy m+ y_ 1 x forces or potential due to each disturbing body to be developed into Ah n/gh 70” a series of terins each consisting of a constant (determined by the

Thus 15 miles up the river the quater-diurnal tide (in § 24 below, called MS) has a semi-range of an inch. But the luni-soiar fort- nightly tide (called MSf in § 24) would have a semi-range of gyth of aninch. Where the two interacting tides are of nearly equal speed, the summation compound tide is very large compared with the differential tide. As before, when the river shallows gradually this formula will still hold.

It is interesting to note the kind of effect produced by these compound tides. When the primary tides are in the same phase

elements of the planct’s orbit and the obliquity of the ecliptic) multiplied by a simple harmonic function of the time. Thus in place of the terms of the synthetic method for the three classes of tides we have an indefinitely long series of terms for each of the three classes. The loss of simplicity in the expression for the forces is far more than counterbalanced by the gain of facility for the discussion of the oscillations of the water. This facility arises from the great dynamical principle of forced oscillations, which we have explained in the historical sketch. Applying this principle, we see that each individual term of the harmonic development of the tide-

x se al x generating forces corresponds to an oscillation of the sea of the Then (my +){ ¢- >=) +e=2n,t — (ny n.) 5 same period, but the amplitude

~~and phase of that oscillation must 1 n/, 1 1 2)) 4 : afpateree epend on a network of causes of almost inextricable complication. gh NV gh depend on a network of f almost inextricable complicat x x The analytic method, then, represents the.tide at any port by a (7 — No) oe = = (m — 9) 7 series of simple harmonic terms whose period is determined from and g 9 theoretical considerations, but whose amplitude and phase are found xX oH. a4 xX from observation. Fortunately the series representing the tidal n=(H, H,sinm,(t~~ mm Th an fe asin] Qmt—(m +N) | forces converges with sufficient rapidity to permit us to consider NV gh 4 gh NV gh only a moderate number of harmonic terms in the series. _ 8H Hy m4 – . (=e) + Now it seems likely that the corrections which have been applied sin Xx ; y. PP 4h Joh oq in the use of the synthetic method might have been elothed in a

Hence the front slope of the tide-wave is steeper at spring than at neap tide, and the compound tide shows itself in the form of an augmentation of the first over-tide ; and the converse statements hold of neap tide. Also mean-water mark is lower and higher alternately up the river at spring tide, and higher and lower alter-

more satisfactory and succinct mathematical form had investigators first carried out the harmonic development. In this article we shall therefore invert history and come back on the synthetic method from the analytic, and shall show how the formule of correction stated in harmonic language may be made comparable with them

in synthetic language. One explanation is expedient before pro- Fusion of ceeding with the harmonic development. There are certain terms terms

in the tide-generating forces of the moon, depending on the longi- affected tude of the moon’s nodes, which complete their revolution in 18°6 by mo- years. Now it has been found practically convenient, in the appli- tion of cation of the harmonic method, to follow the synthetic plan to the moon’s

nately at neap tide, by a small amount which depends on the dif- ferential tide. With the river which we were considering, the alternation would be so long that it would in actuality be either all lower or all higher.

IV. Toe Harmonic ANALYSIS.

Two ee : :

; F extent of classifying together terms whose speed differs only in node. ets § 22. Methods of applying Theory to Practice. , consequence of ‘he mdvenient of the moon’s abe, and at the bane Seat §=6The comparison between tidal observations and tidal theories, | time to conceive that there is a small variability in the intensity of ing ob- and the formation of tables predicting the tidal oscillations of the | the generating forces.

Serva- —_ sea, have been carried out in two different ways, which may be mi – a tions. = called the “synthetic” and the “analytic.” § 28. Development of Equilibrium Theory of Tides in Terms Syn- The semi-diurnal rise and fall of tide with the weekly alternation of the Elements of the Orbits. thetic of spring and neap would naturally suggest to the investigator Within the limits at our disposal we cannot do more than in- Equili- method. to make his formula conform to the apparent simplicity of the | dicate the processes to be followed in this development. brium phenomenon. He would seek to represent the height of water by We have already seen in (8) that the expression for the moou’s theory; either one or two periodic functions with a variable amplitude ; | tide-generating potential is elements such a representation is the aim of the synthetic method. That yao” —— or orbits method has been followed by all the great investigators of the past, ~ Ors Kan +>), intro- lege Bernoulli, La ops mpage Lubbock, Whewell, Airy. | and in (10) that duced. Since at European ports the two tides which follow one another on —7* M,?~~M,? any one day are nearly equal, or, in other words, there is scarcely cos? z— }=2)M,M, 2 2 aan 2 2 2ngMoM, + 26MM, a sensible diurnal tide, these investigators bestowed comparativel 2 NY.2 Ei 2 little attention to the diurnal wise If these are maeicctad, the eee eee synthetic method is simple, for a single function suffices to repre~~ as A pas the tide. In aca eaten hoiee however, the diurnal ed is | Where M,,M,,M; are the direction cosines of the moon referred to sometimes so large as to mask the semi-diurnal, and to make only | @X¢s fixed in the earth. We hy ers ba a single instead of a double high water in twenty-four hours. To find the functions M,M,, 3(M,’— Mz y represent this diurnal tide in the synthetic method we are compelled | &¢-» of the moon’s direction cosines. c to

introduce at least one more function. There should also be a | Let_A, B, C (fig. 2) be the axes ye third function representing the tides of long period ; but until the | 1 the Ny C being ba ae ‘ a last few years these tides have scarcely been considered, and there- and AB t a. e vu a he a fore we shall have little to say of them in explaining the synthetic | Second set of oe : (4 a the plane Three method. The expression for the tide-generating forces due to either | f the moon’s orbit ; bi ae ., age elasses sun or moon consists of three terms, involving the declinations and of the moon in her orbit; J=ZC, the 7 of tides. hour-angles of the planet. One of these terms for each goes through | °bliquity of the lunar orbit to the a

its period approximately twice a day, a second once a day, and the third varies slowly (§ 7). The mathematical basis of the synthetic method consists of a synthesis of the mathematical formule. The semi-diurnal term for the moon is fused with that for the sun, aud the same process is carried out for the diurnal and slowly varying terms. A mass of tidal observation at a place where the diurnal tide is small, even if, as in all the older observations, it consists merely

equator ; x=AX=BCY ; J=MX, the Fig. 2.

1 Airy, and after him Chazallon, appear to have been amongst the first to use a kind of harmonic analysis for reducing tidal observations ; but, as Airy did not emancipate himself from the use of hour-angles, declinations, &c., his work can hardly be considered as an example of the analytic method ; see his ‘‘ Tides and Waves,” and Hatt’s Phénoméne des Marées, Paris, 1885,

2 For further details of the analysis of this section, see the Report ‘‘On Harmonic Analysis, &c.,” for 1883 to the British Association (Southport).

Moon’s moon’s longitude in her orbit measured from X, the intersection of longitude the equator with the lunar orbit, hereafter called the “‘intersection. and obli- Then quity of orbit in- M,= —cos/ sin x+sin cos x cos if troduced. . M,= sinlsinl Writing for brevity p=cos $1, Y=Sin $I….sssceeeseereeeeeerenees (67), we find that M,?-M,2=p* cos 2(x — 1)

+ 2p°q cos 2x + qf cos 2(x +1) —2M,M,=the same with sines in place of cosines M.M,= — p*q cos(x — 20) +992? – g?) cos x + percos(x + 21) M,M,=the same with sines in place of cosines. 4 — Mg?= 4(p4 — 4p°q? +94) + 2p”q? cos 2 These are the required functions of My, Mg, M3. ee Now let ¢ be the moon’s mean distance, ¢ the eccentricity of the moon’s orbit, and let

M,= coslcosx+sin jose |

(68).

Moon’s distance and ec- centricity intro-

duced. Then, putting

— 72 f xe —)}iy,, ¥= 1a) ify, 2 =e) Fat, (70), we have _ 2_ v2 Ve gets enV + of at ON” + Ong VL-+ 2EXZ

2 2 92 KX21V2-972 OCCT gg Saba oles) (71).

2 3 3

Corresponding to the definition of a simple tide given in § 1, the expression for each term of the tide-generating potential should consist of a solid spherical harmonic, multiplied by a simple time- harmonic. In (71) p%n, p(é2—7?), &c., are solid spherical har- monics, and in order to complete the expression for V it is necessary to develop the five functions of X, Y, Z in a series of simple time- harmonics. But (71) may be simplified in such a way that the five functions are reduced to three. The axes fixed in the earth may be taken, as in § 7, to have their extremities as follows :—the axis C the north pole, the axis B 90° E. of A on the equator, and the axis A on the equator in the meridian of the place of observa- tion. Thus, if \ be the latitude of that place, we have

t=cos\, 7=0, f=sin X. Tide- Then, writing a for the earth’s radius at the place of observation, generat- (71) becomes

ing po- rae. . etal. A= aa cos? \(X? a Y?)+sin 2AXZ + $(4 — sin? \)§(X24 Y?2-22?)]_…...(7a).

The process of developing the three functions of X, Y, Z consists in the introduction of the formule of elliptic motion into (66) and (70), the subsequent development of the X-Y-Z functious in a series of trigonometrical terms, and the rejection of terms which appear numerically to be negligible. The terms depend- ing on the principal lunar inequalities— evection and variation— are also introduced. Finally, the three X-Y-Z functions are ob- tained as a series of simple time-harmonics, with the arguments of the sines and cosines linear functions of the earth's rotation, the moon's mean motion, and the longitude of the moon's perigee. The next step is to pass, according to the principle of forced oscillations, from the potential to the height of tide generated by the' forces corresponding to that potential. The X-Y-Z functions being simple time-harmonics, the principle of forced vibrations allows "us to conclude that the forces corresponding to V in (71a) will gencrate oscillations in the ocean of the same periods and types as the terms in V, but of unknown amplitudes and phases. Now let ¥?- 3%', XZ, 4(X?+ WW? – 22?) be three functions having respectively similar forms to those of RAS? d d-e -ey 3 a – ea but differing from them in that the argument of each of the simple time-harmonics has some angle subtracted from it, and that the term is multiplied by a numerical factor. Then, if g be gravity and h the height of tide at the place of observation, we must have

2

h =" lh cos?h(X2—I9) +- sin QAXZ + $(4—sin2A)4(F2 4 W"-22Z")] (72).

1(X?+V2— 272)

Height of tide at any port.

The factor ra*/y may be more conveniently written sa) %

where A/is the earth's mass. It has been so chosen that, if the equili- brium theory of tides were fulfilled, with water covering the whole _ earth, the numerical factors in the X-1J-Z functions would be each Defini- unity and the alterations of phase would be zero. The terms in tion of | 4(X* + 9? —

22”) require special consideration. The function of the high tide latitude being 4—sin?A, it follows that, when in the northern of tide of hemisphere it is high water north of a certain critical latitude, it long is low water on the opposite side of that parallel; and the same is period. true of the southern hemisphere. It is best to adopt a uniform

Thp i’s

system for the whole earth, and to regard high tide and high water as consentaneous in the equatorial belt, and of opposite meanings outside of the critical latitudes. We here conceive the function always to be written L-sin?\, so that outside of the critical lati- tudes high tide is low water. We may in continuing the develop- ment write the ¥-39-Z functions in the form appropriate to the equilibrium theory, with water covering the whole earth; for the actual case it is only then necessary to multiply by the reducing factor, and to subtract the phase alteration x. As these are un- known constants for each place, they would only occur in the development as symbols of quantities to be deduced from observa- tion. It will be understood, therefore, that in the following schedules the “argument” is that part of the argument which is derived from theory, the true complete argument being the “‘argu- ment” —x, where x is derived from observation.

Up to this point we have supposed the moon’s longitude and the earth’s position to be measured from the intersection ; but in order to pass to the ordinary astronomical formule we must measure the longitude and the earth’s position from the vernal equinox. Hence we determine the longitude and right ascension of the intersection in terms of the longitude of the moon’s node and the inclination of the lunar orbit, and introduce them into our formule for the X-B-Z functions. The expressions for the functions corresponding to solar tides may be written down by symmetry, and in this case the intersection is actually the vernal equinox.

The final result of the process sketched is to obtain a series of Explana- terms each of which is a function of the elements of the moon’s or tion of sun’s orbit, and a function of the terrestrial latitude of the place of schedules observation, multiplied by the cosine of an angle which increases below. uniformly with the time. We shall now write down the result in the form of a schedule ; but we must first state the notation em- ployed :—e,

e,=eccentvicities of lunar and solar orbits; J, w=ob- liquities of equator to lunar orbit and ecliptic ; p, p,=longitudes of lunar and solar perigees ; «,a,=hourly increments of p, p,; 3, h= moon’s and sun’s mean longitudes ; ¢, »=hourly increments of s,

h; t=local mean solar time reduced to angle ; y—7=15″ per hour ; A=latitude of place of observation ; £, y=longitude in lunar orbit,

and R.A. of the intersection ; NW=longitude of moon’s node; ¢= inclination of lunar orbit. The speed of any tide is defined as the Speed rate of increase of its argument, and is expressible, therefore, as defined. a i function of y, 7, o,@; for we may neglect w, as being very

small.

The following schedules, then, give h the height of tide. The arrangement is as follows. First, there is a universal coefficient ots) ® which multiplies every term of all the schedules. Secondly,

there are general coefficients, one for each schedule, viz., cos? A for the semi-diurnal terms, sin 2d for the diurnal, and }-$ sin?) for the terms of long period. In each schedule the third column, headed “coefficient,” gives the functions of Zand e (and in two cases also of p). In the fourth column is given the mean semi-range of the corresponding term in numbers, which is approximately the value of the coefficient in the first column when J=w; but we pass over the explanation of the mode of computing the values. The fifth column contains arguments, linear functions of 4, h, s,p,»,£. In [A, i.] 2¢ +2(h-v) and in (A, ii] ¢+(k—v) are common to all the arguments. The arguments are grouped in a manner convenient for subsequent computation. Lastly, the sixth is a column of speeds, being the hourly increase of the arguments in the preceding column, estimated in degrees per hour. It has been found practi- cally convenient to denote each of these partial tides by an initial letter, arbitrarily chosen. In the first column we ere a descriptive name for the tide, and in the second the arbitrarily chosen initial. In some cases no initial has been chosen, and here we indicate the tide by the analytical expression for its speed, or hourly increase of argument.

The schedule for the solar tides is drawn up in precisely the same manner, the only difference being that the coefficients are absolute constants. The eccentricity of the solar orbit is so small that the elliptic tides may be omitted, except the larger elliptic semi- diurnal tide. In order that the comparison of the importance of the solar tides with the lunar may be complete, the same universal – , om coefficient OM term is made to involve the factor = Here 7=9—% m, being the

1

With

M a 2

ee ae 46085 => T7996

To write down any term, take the universal coefficient, the Mode of general coefficient for the class of tides, the special coefficient, and reading multiply by the cosine of the argument. The result, taken with schedules the positive sign, is a term in the equilibrium tide, with water cxplained. covering the whole earth. The transition to the actual case by the introduction of a factor and a delay of phase (to be derived from observation) has been already explained. The sum of all the terms is the complete expression for the height of tide h.

3

(*) a is retained, and the special coefficient for each

sun’s mass.

TrDES 365

Schedule of Lunar Tides. [B.]—Schedule of Solar Tides.

: : i 38 mas , : ; 3 M/a\3 [A, i.]—-Universal Coefficient = amc)” Solar Tides; Universal Coefficient =5 = (<) a. Semi-diurnal Tides ; General Coefficient =cos?). : Gy > ae = og Speed in & Pr Speed in jesciptive = Coefficient. #9 | Argu- | Degrees – Descrip- |-8 Ccosmerent a O’s Argument

Degrees a A hs ment. | per m.s. tive Name. |= lala sae 2t+2(h -¥.) per m.s, ae) Hour. s > § Hour. | aa {i.]—Semi-diurnal Tides ; General Coefficient = cos? . Principal 530 on | Prinei Gn, ! ier ay | ACSA ewseaT 4406 -2(s-é) 2gr-os41042, | | Principal |g) | (1 – fe2)keostdw j2ts7] 22 |s0~-0000000 Luni-solar ’ wo Luni-solar (lunar {Ky} = (1+ ge*)sin?T_—|-03929 30°-0821872) | | “(solar por-| Kg} —Q+4e2)tsintw —_|-o1se8| otter |s0°-0821372 portion). tion). a = OPA valletic, N 3. 4ecos44I “08796 -2(s-£)-(s-p) 28°-4397296) Se. el-} = le,cost}w [01248 |2t—- (h – p,) |29°-9589314 Sealer feaeocthT x wears Fe a ag ae {ii.]—Diurnal Tides ; General Coefficient = sin 2). elliptic.’ | 1] {1-12tn?=cos(2p-28)} 4 tanR=— sin 2p-8) | Solar diur-) p | 711 — ge2)ksin.w cos?4w |08775| t-h-+-Jar |14°-9580814 Elliptic, cot24I-6cos2(p-é) | Luni-solar Z ‘ second PN] g.Ye2oostyT —O1I78 -2(6-8)-2s-p) __arreosssas| | (Solar por Ky | -C+4e7bsinwcosw [08407] r+-4— 4a j15”-o410689 % { i0n). Largan – }.49$mecosthI re 3 ~~2(s~~)-+(s-p)+2h-2s |28°-5125830] | | [iii.]}—Long Period Tides ; General Coefficient =} -— 3 sin? X. , 5 | Semi-an- T, ‘ eveoHonal. FH mecost4r — | ‘OOTY _o(s_£)-(s-p)-ah-+ 284m [09°-4556254 | | nual. [ss | zl —feMasin? w |-os64s| 2h | 0°-0821372 Varia- 007368 5 ; ; tional.4 | 3. 38m2cos# hI bei 4 ~~2(s~~&)+2h-2s 27 site From the fourth columns we sce that the coefficients in de- Scale of

scending order of magnitude are M., K, (both combined), S,, import- O, Ky (lunar), N, P, K, (solar), K, (both combined), K, (lunar), Mf, ance of Q, Mm, K, (solar), Ssa, », My, J, L, T, 2N, p, 00, 380-a, tides. y—80-@4+2n, y-40+20, o—-2n+a0, 2(o-7), X.

-{A, ii.]—Diurnal Tides ; General Coefficient =sin 2).

— a3 = Speed in The tides depending on the fourth power of the moon’s parallax

escrip- eae 5 =| A t | D i 2

tive Naine.| ‘nitial. Coefficient. see PEGE. peri. arise from the potential V=aP ($ cos?z-3cosz). They give rise : our. . . . .

| a wee a toa onal diurnal nee 0 and to a small ter-diurnal tide M;; but

ee 0 (1—§e2)Esin Tooe™}7118896 | —afe-B-eae his~-o4sesa we shall not give the analytical development.

ele Og epee tiealieay Oona) | eG s)aen jee leuiey § 24, Meteorological Tides, Over-Tides, and Compound Tides,

Ce aa – G+ ge*)isinIcosl |-18115 -iT 15°-0410686 All tides whose period is an exact multiple or submultiple of a Meteoro- Larger ; -2(5-8) mean solar day, or of a tropical year, are affected by meteorological logical elliptic. | @ fe.gsinI cos? $I |“03651 i aes 133986609] | conditions. ‘Thus all the tides of the principal solar astronomical tides,

. Gob io-er series 8S, with speeds y-—7, 2(y-7), 38(y—7), &c., are subject to

Smaller M e.p8inT cos” X |-005226| where tan 14-4990501| | More or less meteorological perturbation. An annual inequality in clliptic. v {5+ $c0s2(p-)} |-01649 =} tan(p-£) the diurnal meteorological tide S, will also give rise to a tide y— 2n, . ; and this will be fused with and indistinguishable from the astro-

Bsue, fegsinIcosl |-01485 | +(s-p)-}m |15°-5854483 cee P ; it will also give rise to a tide with speed -y, which will b elt: | soleupee sacle -2(s-£)-2(s—p)|aoocarac e indistinguishable from the astronomical part of K,. Similarly pe ail Go aaa al +27 128542862) | the astronomical tide K, may be perturbed by a semi-anuual in- ‘

[A, iii. Long Period Tides ; General Coefficient 4—%sin?A.

we 0 gos 5 : a, we ,| Initial. Coefficient. es | Argument. i a at AEs Hour ate) i a: Ss) Of variable oa i (1+ $e2)}(1-2sin2Z) -252948)

partis N,the/19°-34 per annum e } long. ofnode montily. Mm 8e.4(1-$sin2D) |-04136 s—p 0°*5443747 Q i r ’ 9 2C= Moathhy, (2-27-+| APmenA—gsin2z) “HEP 4 OD), 0°-4715911 Luni-solar : fort- MSf | Sm23(1-gsin2z) [[004229 945-1) 1°-0158958 nightly. 10 Fort- 5o2\L atn2 . ° nightly. Mf (1-$e2)ksin2I |-07827 2(s—&) 1°-0980330 Ter- 80-oF Je.4sin2I 01516 \(s—p)+2(s-£)| — 1°-6494077

inensual. |

1 Fused with 2y—o+o.

2 m is the ratio of the moon’s mean motion to the sun’s.

3 In these three entries the lower number gives the value when the co-efficients of the evection and variation have their full values as derived from lunar theory.

4 Indicated by 2MS as a compound tide (see below, § 24).

5 A fusion of y-o-k a, of which the latter is the tide named.

6 The upper number is the mean value of the coefficient of the tide y-7-@; the lower applies to the tide Mj), compounded from the tides y-o-@ and y-T+D.

7 The lower number gives the value when the coefficients in the evection have their full value as derived from lunar theory. aps ;

8 The mean value of this coefficient is (1+#e2)(1 — sin®/)(1 -$sin2w)=“25, and the variable part is approximately – (1+ $c) sint cosi sinw cosw cosN=

— 0328 cos N.

9 The lower of these two numbers gives the value when the coefficients in the evection and variation have their full values as derived from lunar theory. :

10 Indicated by MSf as a compound tide.

and annual tides of speeds 27 and 7 are all probably quite insensible as arising from astronomical causes, yet they have been found of sufficient importauce to be considered. ‘The annual and semi- annual tides are of enormous importance in some rivers, representing in fact the yearly flooding in the rainy season. In the reduction of these tides the arguments of the S series are ¢, 2¢, 3t, &c., and of the annual, semi-annual, ter-annual tides h, 2h, 3h. As far as can be forescen, the magnitudes of these tides are constant from year to year. :

We have in § 21 considered the dynamical theory of over-tides. Over- The only tides of this kind in which it has hitherto been thought tides,

necessary to represent the change of form in shallow water belong to the principal lunar and principal solar series. Thus, besides the fundamental astronomical tides M, and S,, the over-tides M,, Mg, Mg, and S,, S, have been deduced by harmonic analysis. The height of the fundamental tide M, varies from year to year, according to the variation in the obliquity of the lunar orbit, and this variability is represented by the coefficient cos‘4/. It is probable that the variability of M,, Mg, Mg will be represented by the square, cube, and fourth power of that coefficient, and theory (§ 21) indicates that we should make the argument of the over-tide a multiple of the argument of the fundamental, with a constant subtracted.

Compound tides have been also considered dynamically in § 21. Com- By combining the speeds of the important tides, it will be found that pound there is in many cases a compound tide which has itself a speed tides,

identical with that of an astronomical or meteorological tide. We thus find that the tides O, K,, Mm, P, M,, Mf, Q, M,, L are liable to perturbation in shallow water. If either or both the component tides are of lunar origin, the height of the compound tide will change from year to year, and will probably vary proportionally to the product of the coefficients of the component tides. For the purpose of properly reducing the numerical value of the compound tides, we require not inerely the speed, but also the argument. The following schedule gives the adopted initials, argument, and speed of the principal compound tides. The coefficients are the products of those of the two tides to be compounded.

Ti DES

¢ has simply to be reversed, with the difference that the instant of time to which to refer the argument is 04 of the first day of the

3606

[C.]—Sehedule of Compound Tides.

Imme-

itial Arguments com- need Speed in Degrees new year, and we must take note of the different value of wand f sal bined. sia pepe, Higur. for the new year. Tables* have been computed for f and w for i he moon’s node and for each kind of tide, and es By – 20 44°-0251728 all longitudes of the : . aes M4-O the mean longitudes of moon, sun, and lunar perigee may be ex- MS Mp+Se 4y- 20-29 58°-9841042 tracted from any ephemeris. Thus when the mean semi-range H MSf So -Mo eg 1°-0158958 and retardation x of any tide are known its height may be com- OMK aC : By – 40 42°-9271398 puted for any instant. The sum of the heights for all the principal 2 i in K Bey- 27 45°-0410686 tides of course gives the actual height of water. MN Mo+N a, Wises § 26. Numerical Harmonie Analysis for Tides of Short Period. eee ; ‘ ‘ : ‘ ; “2 es y+20-27 16°-0569644 The tide-gauge (described below, § 36) furnishes us with a con- Treat- OSM a _M Qy+20 -4N 31°-0158958 tinuous graphical record of the height of the water above some ment of , ees : 6y – 20-47 _ 88°-9841042 known datum mark for every instant of time. The first operation tide OMS is Qy ~~40~~+27 27°-9682084 performed on the tidal record is the measurement in feet and deci- curves, : M+83 6y — 40-2 87°-9682084 mals of the height of water above the datum at every mean solar

bs § 25. On the Form of Presentation of Results of Tidal Observations. Supposing n to be the speed of any tide in degrees per mean solar

diate re- hour, and ¢ to be mean solar time elapsing since 04 of the first day

sult of

of (say) a year of continuous observation, then the immediate result

harmonic of harmonic analysis is to obtain A and B, two heights (estimated analysis, in feet and tenths) such that the height of this tide at the time ¢

Final But hs pi yo results of the analysis are presented ae a erat A ‘a bet einai: 0 Be = — Sa rms of the form } ‘ ton ass anaililins fH cos (V+ -k) Commencing with 0» of the first day, we begin counting 0, 1, 2, ; , 2 : i) longi. | &¢ 98 the T-hand comes up to its hour-marks. But, as the S-hand con- where V isa linear function of the moon’s and sun’s mean iongi- | ,ains on the T-hand, there will come a time when, the T-hand stants. tudes, the mean longitude of the moon’s and sun’s perigees, and being exactly at the p hour-mark, the S-hand is nearly as far as the local pepe solar time at the place of observation, reduced to p+. When, however, the T-hand has advanced to the »+1 hour- angle at 15° per hour. /” increases uniformly with the time, and | ‘park the S-hand will be a little beyond p+1+4,—that is to say, its rate of increase per mean solar hour is the n of the first method, | «isto less thati half am hour before p+2. Counting, then, in and is called the speed of the tide. It is supposed that w stands | miiine by reference to S-time, we jump from p to pee. The for a certain function of the longitude of the node of the lunar | (ountin g will go on continuously for a number of hours nearly orbit at an epoch half a year later than 0» of the first day. Strictly | equal to 2p, and then another number will be dropped, and so on speaking, « should be taken as the same function of the longitude | phioy ghout the whole year. If it had been the T-hand which of the moon’s bon ee vey Thai bay 8 oon ssn ea oe Ask went faster than the S-hand, it is obvious that one number would tion is but small in the course of a year, u may be treated a8 a | 1. repeated at two successive hours instead of one being dropped. constant and put equal to an average value for the year, which | w, may deseribe cach such process as a ‘‘ change.” avenee value is taken as on ae value e. can lee) mie ua Now, if we have a sheet marked for entry of heights of water Method Tageta Vie oor eae t _ ae toe gin 4 yeatih ‘s according to T-hours from results measured at S-hours, we must of analy- as the “argument” in the schedules of § 28. nn : ~4 are t0- | enter the S- measurements continuously up to p, and we then come sis. gether the whole argument according to the equilibrium theory of | to a change; dropping one of the S-series, we go on again continu- tides, with sea covering the whole

earth, it follows that /n is the | 4ys17 until another change, when another is dropped; and so on. lagging of the tide which arises from kinetic action, friction of the | ging, g change occurs at He. Hae anhen a Toker talleudlaeae water, imperfect elasticity of the earth, and the distribution of land. exactly half-way between two S-hours, it will be more accurate at A . ‘ ais : It is supposed that His the mean value in British feet of the | . change to insert the two S-entries which fall on each side of semi-range of the particular tide in question; f is a numerical | the truth. If this be done the whole of the S-series of measure- factor of augmentation or diminution, due to the variability of | jonts is entered on the T-sheet. ‘Similarly, if it be the T-hand the obliquity of the lunar orbit. The value of fis the ratio of the | J hich goes faster than the Soleaidiuate may leave a gap in the ‘coefficient ” in the third column of the preceding schedules to the Tseriee instead of duplicating an entry. For the analysis of the mean value of the same term. For example, for all the solar tides | Pp tide there is therefore prepared a sheet arranged in rows and f be Dae y saa for the principal lunar tide M, it is equal to columns ; each row corresponds to one T-day, and the columns are cos g1 cos: fareas – ; for the mean value of this term has @ | marked Oh, 1h,... 23; the 0’s may be called T-noons. A dot coefficient cos*4w cos! 4%. It is obvious, then, that, if the tidal | j. put in each space for entry, and where there is a change two observations are consistent from year to year, H and x should come | gots are put if there is to be a double entry, and a bar if there is out the ma from each year’s reductions. It is only when the | to pe no entry. The numbers entered in each column are summed ; results are ie aa in such a form as this that it will be possible | the results are then divided, each by the proper divisor for its column, to judge whether the harmonic analysis is yielding satisfactory | 414 ¢hus the mean value for that column is obtained. In this way ae ee oe of giving the tidal results is also essential | 94 numbers are found which give the mean height of water at each Re ee zs garage ae ine se Rand I of the 24 special hours. It is obvious that if this process were con- ‘an as He show how to determine H and x from Rand ¢. It | tinued over a very long time we should in the end extract the tide a ved bss él =R/ 4 oi bi tee legal of f a eons under analysis from amongst all the others; but, as the process depends on the evaluation of the mean value of each of the terms | onjy extends over about a year, the elimination of the others is not in the ede into which we shall not enter. If Vy be the value quite complete. The elimination of the effects of the other tides Me OT! Cay — ml may be

improved by choosing the period for analysis not exactly cove use V4 = equal to one year. 1 dace (iit ; Let us now return to our general notation, and consider the 24 ie the rule for the pobre aes of kis: Add to the value of | mean values, each pertaining to the 24 T-hours. We suppose that ei 5 ie value of the argument at Oh of the first day. a all the tides except the T-tide are adequately eliminated, and, in = e results of harmonic analysis are usually tabulated by giving | fact, a computation of the necessary corrections for the absence con- H, « under the initial letter of each tide; the results are thus | of complete elimination, which is given in the Tidal Report to the stants. comparable from year to year.!_ For the purpose of using the tide- | British Association in 1872, shows that this is the case. It is

is given by A cos nf+B sin nt. If we put R=/(A?+ B?) and tan ¢=B/A, then the tide is represented by Rcos (nt — $).

In this form BR is the semi-range of the tide in British feet, and ¢is an angle such that {/n is the time elapsing after 04 of the first day until it is high water of this particular tide. It is obvious that ¢ may have any value from 0° to 360°, and that the results of the analysis of successive years of observation will not be com- parable with one another when presented in this form.

predicting machine the process of determining H and « from R and

1 See, for exam ple, a collection of results by Baird and Darwin, Proc. Roy. Soc., No. 239, 1885.

hour. The period chosen for analysis is about one year and the first measurement corresponds to noon,

If T be the period of any one of the diurnal tides, or the double period of any one of the semi-diurnal tides, it approximates more or less nearly to 24 m.s. hours, and, if we divide it into twenty- four equal parts, we may speak of each asa T-hour. We shall for brevity refer to mean solar time as S-time. Suppose, now, that we have two clocks, each marked with 860°, or 24 hours, and that the hand of the first, or S-clock, goes round once in 24 S-hours, and that of the second, or T-clock, goes round once in twenty-four T-hours, and suppose that the two clocks are started at 0° or 02 at noon of the

initial day. For the sake of distinctness, let us imagine that a T-hour is longer than an S-hour, so that the T-clock goes slower than the S-clock. The measurements of the tide curve give us the height of water exactly at each S-hour ; and it is re- quired from these data to determine the height of water at each T-hour. For this end we are, in fact, instructed to count T-time,

RR Nr A ne =e a _ 2 Report on Harmonic Analysis to Brit. Assoc., 1883, and more extended table in Baird's Manual of Tidal Observation, London, 1887.

3 A sample page is given in the Report to the Brit. Assoc., 1883.

Neces- obvious that any one of the 24 values does not give the true height sity for of the T-tide at that T-hour, but gives the average height of the augment- water, as due to the T-tide, estimated over half a T-hour before ing fac- and halfa T-hour after that hour. A consideration of this point tors. shows that ccrtain augmenting factors, differing slightly from unity, must be applied. In the reduction of the S-serics of tides, the numbers treated are the actual heights of the water exactly at the S-hours, and therefore no augmenting factor is requisite.

We must now explain how the harmonic analysis, which the use of these factors presupposes, is carried out.

If ¢ denotes T-time expressed in T-hours, and m is 15°, we express the height h, as given by the averaging process above explained, by the formula .

h=A)+ A, cos nt+ B, sin nt+ A, cos 2nt+B, sin 2nt+..., where ¢ is 0, 1, 2,...28. Then, if = denotes summation of the series of 24 terms found by attributing to ¢ its 24 values, it is obvious that Ag=¢ Zh; A,= 7, Zheos nt ; B, =p, Zhsin ne ; Ag=7z Zhecos 2nt; By=py Dhsin Qnt ; &c., &.

Since » is 15° and ¢ is an integer, it follows that all the cosines and siles involved in these scries are equal to one of the following, viz., 0, +sin 15°, tsin 30°, +sin 45°, tsin 60°, tsin 75°, £1. Itis found convenient to denote

these sines by 0,+8,,+S,,+S,, +S,, +§,,~~1. The multiplication of the 24 h's by the various S's and the subsequent additions may be arranged in a very neat tabular form, like that given in a Report to the British Association in 1883. The A's and B's having been thus deduced, we have R= \/(A?+B*), R must then be multiplied by the augmenting factor. We thus have the augmented R. Next the angle whose tangent is B/A gives ¢ The addition to ¢ of the appropriate V)+u gives x, and the multiplication of R by the appropriate 1/f gives H. The reduction is then complete. An actual numerical example of harmonic analysis is given in the Admiralty Scientific Manual (1886) in the article "Tides" ; but the process there employed is slightly different from the above, because the series of observations is sup~~ posed to be a short one.

§ 27. Harmonic Analysis for Tides of Long Period.

For the purpose of determining the tides of long period we have to climinate the oscillations of water-level arising from the tides of short period. As the quickest of these tides has a period of many days, the height of mean water at one instant for each day gives sufficient data. Thus there will in a year's observations be 365 heights to be submitted to harmonic analysis. To find the daily mean for any day we take the arithmetic mean of 24 consecutive hourly values, beginning with the height at noon. This height will then apply to the middle instant of the period from 08 to 23h, —that is to say, to 11> 30™ at night. The formation of a daily mean does not obliterate the tidal oscillations of short period, be- cause none of the tides, except those of the principal solar series, have commensurable periods in mean solar time. A small correc- tion, or "' clearance of the daily mean," has therefore to be applied for all the important tides of short period, except for the solar tides. Passing by this clearance, we next take the 365 daily means, and find their mean value. This gives the mean height of water for the year. We next subtract thre mea height from each of the 365 values, and find 365 quantities dh, giving the daily height of water above the mean height. These quantities are to be the subject of the harmonic analysis, and the tides chosen for evaluation are those which have been denoted above as Mm, Mf, MSf, Sa, Ssa.

Let dh= A cos(o-a)t+B sin(o-a)t

+C cos 2ot +D sin 2ot

C’ cos 2(6 — n)t D’ sin 2(o — n)é

+E cos nt +F sin nt

+G cos 2nt +H sin 2nt where ¢ is time measured from the first 112 30™. If we multiply the 365 oh’s by 365 values of cos («- @)t and effect the summation, the coefficients of B,C,D, &c., are very small, and that of A is nearly 1823. Similarly, multiplying by sin (¢ — a), cos 2ot, &c., we obtain 10 equations for A, B,C, &c., in each of which one coefficient is nearly 1825 and the rest small. These equations are easily solved by successive approximation. In this way A,B,C, &c, are found, and afterwards the clearance to which we have alluded is applied. Finally the cleared A,B,C, &c., are treated exactly as were the components of the tides of short period. Special forms and tables have been prepared for facilitating these operations.

Analysis,

Tides of long period.

Ifarmo- nically analysed.

V. SYNTHETIC METHOD. § 28. On the Method and Notation.

Synthetic The general nature of the synthetic method has been already method. explained ; we now propose to develop the expressions for the tide fron the result as expressed in the harmonic notatiou. If it should be desired to make a comparison of the results of tidal observation as expressed in the synthetic method with those of the harmonic method, or the converse, or to compute a tide-table from the har- monic constants by reference to the moon’s transits and from the

declinations and parallaxes of sun and moon, the analytical ex- pressions of the following sections are necessary.

In chapter iv. the mean semi-range and angle of retardation or lag of any one of the tides have been denoted by H andx«. We shall here, however, require to introduce several of the H's and K'S into the same expression, and they must therefore be distinguished from one another. This may in general be conveniently done by writing as a subscript letter the initial of the corresponding tide ; for example Hm, «Km will be taken to denote the H and x of the principal lunar tide Mz. This notation docs not suit the K, and Kj tides, and we shall therefore write H", x" for the semi-diurnal K,, and H', x' for the diurnal K, tide. These two tides proceed according to sidereal time and arise from the sun and moon jointly, and a synthesis of the two parts of each is effected in the harmonic method, although that synthesis is not explained in chapter iv. The ratio of the solar to the lunar part of the total K, tide is '46407 ; hence *683 H" is the lunar portion of the total K,. There will be no occasion to separate the two portions of K,, and we shall retain the synthesis which is effected in the harmonic method.

§ 29. Semi-Diurnal Tides.

The process adopted is to replace the mean longitudes and ele- Mean ments of the orbit in each term of the harmonic development of the longi- schedules of § 23 by hour-angles, declinations, and parallaxes. tude and

At the time ¢ (mean solar time of port reduced to angle) let elements a, 6, y be)'s R.A., declination, and hour-angle, and J)'s longitude replaced measured from the ''intersection." These and other symbols when by hour- written with subscript accent are to apply to the sun. Then pv angle, being the R.A. of the intersection, we have from the right-angled declina- spherical triangle of which the sides are 1, 5, a—y the relations tion, and

tan(a—v)=cosItanl, sind=sinZsin2 …..... (74). parallax. Now s—£ is the)'s mean longitude measured from the intersection and s—y is the mean anomaly ; hence approximately l=s—&+2esin (s—p) . From (74) and (75) we have approximately a=s-+ (v— £)+ 2esin (s—p) — tan? 4J sin 2(s — £). Now, h being the ©'s mean longitude, ¢+A is the sidereal hour- angle, and p=t+h-a. Hence t+h—s—(v—£)=y + 2esin (s—p) – tan?4Jsin 2(s—£) (76). Again, if we put

COSA HT PSMA oo ec. soc ssesesseeses ol CZ) we have approximately from (74) and (75) cos*6 — cos?A 5 = 00S 2(8— &) _ sin A (78) whence Sun ee one sin 2(s—&)

osin’A dt Obviously A is such a declination that sin? A is the mean value of sin?6 during a lunar month. Again, if P be the ratio of the)’s parallax to her inean parallax, the equation to the ellipse described

gives 1(P-1)=00s (s—p) i 1 dP _ on me re (79). whence eee p

Now it appears in schedule A of § 23 that the arguments of all the lunar semi-diurnal tides are of the form 2(¢+h—v)+2(s-—&) or +(s—p). It isclear, therefore, that the cosines of such angles may by the relations (76), (78), (79) be expressed in terms of hour-angles, declinations, and parallaxes. Also by means of (77) we may intro- duce A in place of Zin the coefficients of each term. An approxi- mate formula for A is 16°°51+3°°44 cos V—0°°19 cos 2. In the Report to the British Association for 1885, the details of the processes indicated are given.

Before giving the formula it must be remarked that the result Age of is expressed more succinctly by the introduction of the symbol 6’ declina- to denote the)’s declination at a time earlier than that of observa- tional tion by an interval which may be called the ‘‘age of the declina- and pa- tional inequality,” and is computed from the formula tan (x” — km)/2o rallactic or 522-2 tan (k”—Kkm). Similarly, it is convenient to introduce P’ correc- to denote the value of P at a time earlier than that of observation tions. by the ‘‘age of the parallactic inequality,” to be computed from tan (Km—Kn)/(o —-@) or 1055°3 tan (km—x,). These two ‘‘ages” probably do not differ in general much from a third period, com- puted from (ks—m)/2(6— 7), which is called the ‘‘ age of the tide.”

The similar series of transformations when applied to the solar tides leads to simpler results, because A, is a constant, being 16°38, and the “ages” may be treated as zero ; besides the terms depend- ing on dB, [at and dP, /dt are negligible. If now we denote by hy the height of water with reference to mean water-mark, in so far as the height is affected by the harmonic tides M,, S,, K,, N, L,

T, R,! the harmonic expression is transformed into

does to N amongst the lunar tides. It was omitted as unimportant in schedule [B, i.] of § 23.

Total semi- diurnal tide.

Com- mence- ment of synthesis.

One solar and one lunar term.

368

cos? A he ~ FH, cos (2W — Km) + H, cos (2, — 2 cos? ny ™m ‘ y m) & (y, s) cos? 6’ — cos*A , ‘é 7 9 = ig aa A, 683 H’ cos (2y — x”) cos? § — cos? A,, j ; a

fe sin 6 cos 6 dof ‘683 H” gsin? A, dt\cos(x” — km)

cos? A Hy C08 Kn — Hy, cos %

oe, (P -1) cos (2p — €)

€ cose +(P,- pes = Fle cos (2y, — ks) H

cost?A dP/dt Be 1] : hi

ecos? A, (o— a fine CO8 COSKi—Km) sin(2¥— Km) (80), where ¢ is an auxiliary angle defined by ?

3 sin oa Hz sin Ky a re (81).

The first two terms are the principal tides, and the physical origin of the remaining small terms is indicated by their involving 6’, 6,, dé/dt, P, P,, dP/dt, The terms in dé/dt and dP/dt are generally smaller than the others.

The approximation may casily be carried further. But the above isin some respects a closer approximation than the expression from which it is

derived, since the hour-angles, declinations, and paral- laxes necessarily involve all the lunar and solar inequalities.

§ 30. Syntheses of Solar and of Lunar Portions of the Semi-Diurnal Tide.

= Hytan®A, | sin (2 — Km)

+

tan e=

Let us write

M= or Se “oe A 68311” cos (x” — Kin) + or z (paz) Bete — Hoos wae=nee cp=Kkm+ ae -683H” sin (x” — km) St py) Hat Te a ak Z Pita * Km) H, tan? A,]

cos*A dP/dt ecos*A, ¢-@

H,, H, [ttn scat) alee |

cos?6, —cos?A, , ; H,-H,. M,=H,—— a 317H’(P,-1)

pa A é, 2m,=K,

Since observation and theory agree in showing that x” is generally

very nearly equal to x, we are justified in substituting «, for x” in

the small solar declinational term of (80) involving ‘317 H”. Then,

using (82) in (80),

he=M cos 2(y — w) + M, cos 2(y, — M,)...eeeseeeee (83).

If the equilibrium theory of tides were true, each H would be pro- portional to the corresponding term in the harmonically developed potential. This proportionality holds nearly between tides of almost the same speed; hence, using the expressions in the column of co- efficients in schedule [B, i.], § 28

(with the additional tide R there omitted, but having a coefficient (7,/7)4.4¢, cos*4w, found by sym- metry with the lunar tide L), and introducing A, in place of w in the solar tides, we may assume the truth of the proportion

cos? A, , ¢_ qian sin? A, sud =u any With this assumption, M, reduces to M a 00% Oey 3(P A *~ cos? A, st (i) += Cost a Hdl + 8(P,—1)} cos? 5, Hence M,=P? 3 Se eres a ee (84).

This is the law which we should have derived directly from the equilibrium theory, with the hypothesis that all solar semi-diurnal tides suffer nearly equal retardation. Save for meteorological influ- ences, this must certainly be true.

_A similar synthesis of M cannot be carried out, because the con- siderable diversity of speed amongst the lunar tides makes a similar appeal to the equilibrium theory incorrect. It may be seen, how- ever, that it would be more correct to write cos? 6’ instead of cos? A in the coefficient of the parallactic terms in M and 2y.

The three terms of M in (82) give the height of lunar tide with its declinational and parallactic corrections, and similarly the formula for « in (82) gives its value and corrections.

If now 7 denotes the mean solar time elapsing since the moon’s upper transit and y the angular velocity of the earth’s rotation, it is clear that the moon’s hour-angle

y=(y-da/dt)r;

TIDES

and, since M cos2(y—#) is a maximum when y=» or differs from pw by 180°, it follows that h/(y —da/dt) is the “interval” from the moon’s upper or lower transit to high water of the lunar tide. Since 7 is necessarily less than 12, we may during the interval from transit to high water take as an approximation da/dt=o, the moon’s mean motion.! Hence that interval is u/(y—¢), or vou hours nearly, when p is expressed in degrees. Thus (82) for

» gives by its first term the mean interval for the lunar tide, and by the subsequent terns the declinational and parallactic corrections.

We have said that the synthesis of M cannot be carried out as Approxi- but the partial synthesis below will give fairly mate

in the case of M,, good results. The proposed formula is

_ 3 cost A – cos? 6’ — cos? A, 5 5c ae, M= Pj Bet — a, OE cos? 6’ — cos? A, ; 2p = Km + — 9 A, +683 H” sin (x” — Km) 5 cos?6 a, = Pro? Ae

Dp, Hes. sont sseindossapsuniaidn aber 0 Meuierguasseemsmas dren aay (85). These formulse have been used in the example of the computation

§ 31. Synthesis of Lunar and Solar Semi-Diurnal Tides,

Let A be the excess of)’s over ©’s R.A., so that A=a-a,

Y=V+A, and h,=M cos 2(p — «)+M, cos (y+ A— H,) The synthesis is then completed by writing H cos 2(u—-¢)=M+M, cos 2(A – 4, +4), H sin 2(u-¢)= M, sin 2(A – 4, #), so that hg =H cos 2(Y— p)eveesereeeeereerererers (87). Then H is the height of the total semi-diurnal tide and /(y — da/dt) or ¢/(y—¢) or x5 ¢, when ¢ is given in degrees, is the ‘interval ” from the moon’s transit to high water. The formule for H and ¢ may be written H= v e Ae cos 2(A — 1, +#)} } *ay*__ M,sin 2A-#, +4) (88) a A et M+M, cos 2(A -#,+#)

They may be reduced to a form adapted for logarithmic calculation. Fort-

it follows that H nightly a period of half a lunation. These inequal- are called the ‘fortnightly or semi-menstrual inequalities ” in the ity.

Since A goes through its period in a lunation,

and ¢ have inequalities wit.

height and interval.

Spring tide obviously occurs when A=y,~ M. Since the mean value of A is s —h (the difference of the mean longitudes), and since the mean values of and 4, are $Xm, 4X, it follows that the mean value of the period elapsing after full moon and change of moon up to spring tide is («,—Kkm)/2(¢-%). The association of spring tide with full and change is obvious, and a fiction has been adopted by which it is held that spring tide is generated in those configura- tions of the moon and sun, but takes some time to reach the port of observation. Accordingly (xs— «m)/2(¢- 7) has been called the “age of the tide.” observations have yet been made. in general to differ very much from the ages of the declinational and parallactic inequalities.

In computing a tide-table it is found practically convenient not to use A, which is the difference of R.A.’s at the unknown time of high water, but to refer the tide to Ao, the difference of R.A.’s at the time of the moon’s transit. It is clear that Ay is the apparent time of the moon’s transit reduced to angle at 15° per hour. We have already remarked that $/(y- da/dt) is the interval from transit to high water, and hence at high water kn + dafat — da, [dt

~O y — daldt

the second term their mean values, and we then have

A=Aj+—— ye

and A= pt p= Ay — H+ Twa Ao mt Be v++0+e(90).

This approximate formula (90) may be used in computing from (88) the fortnightly inequality in the “ height ” and “‘ interval.” In this investigation we have supposed that the declinational and parallactic corrections are applied to the lunar and solar tides be- fore their synthesis ; but it is obvious that the process might be reversed, and that we may form a table of the fortnightly inequality based on mean values H,, and H,, and afterwards apply corrections. This is the process usually adopted, but it is less exact. The labour of computing the fortnightly inequality, especially by graphical methods, is not great, and the plan here suggested seems preferable. 1 The tide has been referred by Lubbock and others to an earlier transit, and not to the one immediately preceding the time under consideration. In

this case we cannot admit with great accuracy that da/di—c, since the interval may be 30 or 40 hours.

The average age is about 36 hours as far as Age of The age of the tide appears not tide.

As an approximation we may attribute to all the quantities in Refer-

TIDES

§ 32. Diurnal Tides.

369

§ 33. Explanation of Tidal Terms in eommon use > Datum Levels.

Diurnal These tides have not been usually treated with completeness in The mean height at spring tide between high and low water is Tidal tides not the synthetic method. In the tide-tables of the British Admiralty | called the spring rise, and is equal to 20H»+H,). The height termsex- easily _ we find that’ the tides at some ports are ‘‘affected by diurnal in- | between mean high-water mark of neap tide and mean low-water plained. treated equality” ; such a statement may be interpreted as meaning that | mark at spring tide is called the neap rise, and is equal to 2H». synthet- the tides are not to be predicted by the information given in the | The mean height at neap tide between high and low water is called ically. so-called tide-table. The diurnal tides are indeed complex, and do | the neap range ; this is equal to 2(H,,~~H,). Neap range is usually not lend themselves easily to a complete synthesis. In the har~~ | about one-third of spring range. The mean period between full or monic notation the three important tides are K,,0,P, and the lunar | change of moon and spring tide is called the age of the tide; this portion of K, is nearly equal to O in height, whilst the solar portion “A ae ie (Ks el — 7), or, if a eg oe Lg is nearly equal to P. A complete synthesis may be carried out on OE X (Ks — Km) § Ks — Km 18 commonly about 36°, and the age about the ties Eo ated in pen the sot at sal MCs ds, but the ad- | 36%, The period elapsing from the moon’s upper or lower transit vantage of the plan is lost in consequence of large oscillations of | until it is high water is called the interval or the lunitidal interval. the amplitude through the value zero, so

that the tide is often | The interval at full moon or change of moon is called the establish- represented by a negative quantity multiplied by a circular function. | ™ent of the port or the vulgar establishment. The interval at spring It is best, then, only to attempt a partial synthesis, and to admit a called ia ee seat ssi at gaat ; Bric the existence of two diurnal tides. e€ mean establishmen may € joun rom € vulgar establish- We see from schedules [A, ii.] and [B, i.], § 23, that the principal | ment by means of the spring and neap rise and the a of the tide, diurnal tides are those Icttered O, P, K,. Of these K, occurs both | 48 rsnigel fe a ne ae for the moon and the sun. The synthesis of the two parts of K, is ok & De the age o € tide reduced to angle a € rate 0 effected without difficulty, and ae elt is a feaik fer the total 1°-016 to the hour. Then the mean establishment in hours is equal to K, tide like that in [A, ii.], but with the » which occurs in the argu- the vulgar establishment in hours, diminished by a period expressed ment replaced by a different angle denoted as »'. If, then, we write | in hours numerically equal to zs of the angle whose tangent is Vo=t-+h—23—y +2440 H, sin a/(Hm + H, cos a), expressed in degrees. Also H,/H,, is equal V' =t+h—v! —4r } aed eaneecaones (91), to the ratio of the excess of spring rise over neap rise to neap rise. HIRIRSS Hides O'R: P itt Sota 'The French have called a quantity which appears to be identical Eee ee Urey ATO WEILLen as Lollows' :—- with H,,+H,, or half the spring rise, the unit of height, and then O =f, Hy cos (Vo = Ko), define the height of any other tide by a tidal coefficient. Pat pele ehee =n))_| nf tee tet ming nee ponding Ade Sey: = — Kp)} verre . 1 -tabl w-Wwa ar ordinary spring tides." alty The last two tides have very nearly the same speed, so that we | This datum is found by taking the mean of the low-water marks of datum. may assume «'=«,, and that H, has the same ratio to H' as in the such observations at spring tide as are available, or, if the obser- equilibrium theory. Now, in schedules [A, ii.], [B, ii.], § 23, the | vations are very extensive, by excluding from the mean such spring coefficient of Ky, viz., H' (the sum of the lunar and solar parts), is | tides as appear to be abnormal, owing to the largeness of the moon's '26522, and the coefficient of P, viz., H,, is '08775, so that H' | parallax at the time or any other cause. The Admiralty datum is =0'023 H,, or say=3H,. Hence we have not, then, susceptible of exact scientific definition ; but, when it Partial K,+P=H' [f – cos (2h —»')] cos (V' — x') has once been fixed with reference to a bench mark ashore, it is synthesis. — H' § sin(2h —') sin (VW —«'), Pes to adhere to it, by whatever process it was first

fixed. If. theref cit t 1s now proposed to adopt for any new Indian tidal stations a Indian Maar’, WEP low-water datum for the tide-table to be called ‘Indian low-water datum. Rr cos Y= H’ [f’ — 3 cos (2h = on he (98) mark,”? and to be defined as H,,+H,+H’+H, below mean-water R’ sin y=} H’ sin (2h -»’) F level. Although such a datum is uot chosen from any precise K,P=R’ cos (V’ p—«’). scientific Pott esetions it is susceptible of exact definition, is It is clear that y and R’ have a semi-annual inequality, and there- | low enough to exclude almost all negative entries from the table (a fore for several weeks together R’ and y may be treated as constant. | sine qua non for a good datum), and will differ but little from the Now suppose that we compute V, and V’ at the epoch—that is, at | Admiralty datum, however that may be determined. A valuable the initial noon of the period during which we wish to predict the | list of datum levels is given by Mr J. Shoolbred in a Report to the tides—and with these values put British Association in 1879. $o=Ky— Vo at epoch, {’=«’—- V’ at epoch — y. . . . 2 3 § 34. On the Reduetion of Observations of High and Low Water? Then the speed of Vo is y—20, or 13994303 per hour, or} A continuous register of the tide or observation at fixed intervals Observa- 860″ — 25°‘3673 id day j and the speed of V” is y, or 15 0410636 | of time, such as each hour, is certainly the best; but for the tions of per hour, or 360°9856 per day. Hence, if t be the mean solar time adequate use of such a record some plan analogous to harmonic H.W. – on the (x +1)th day since = na moment or epoch, analysis is necessary. Observations of high and low water only andL.W. , Vo~ ky= 860° + 13°943 t — — 25°°367n, have, at least until recently, been more usual. Some care has to V+ y—«’=360°n +15°°041 t-¢’ + 0°-986n. be taken with respect to these observations, for about high and low Diurnal Therefore the diurnal tides at time t of the (x +1)th day are given by | water an irregularity in the rise and fall becomes very noticeable, _ O=f,H, cos [13°-943t — ¢ — 25°-367n] (94) pele cared oS pm vee Ps ilies a i ae ee ions to K,+P=R’ cos [15041 t- ¢/+0°986n] © fre ions should therefore be taken every five or ten minutes for ha height of sie , 7 an hour or an hour, embracing the time of high and low water. H.w. If we substitute for t the time of high or low water as computed | The time and height of high aa low water Sy then be found andL.W, Simply from the semi-diurnal tide, it is clear that the sum of these by plotting down a curve of heights, and by taking as the true two expressions will give the diurnal correction for height of tide | tiqe-curve a line which presents a sweeping curvature and

smoothes at high or low water, provided the diurnal tides are not very large, away the minor irregularities. A similar but less elaborate process If we consider the maximum of a function would render hourly observations more perfect. In the reduction A cos 2(t — a) +B cos n(t— B), the immediate object is to connect the times and heights of high where B is small compared with A and n is nearly unity, we see | 224 low water with the moon's transits by means of the establish- that the time of maximum is given approximately by t=a, with a | ment, age, and fortnightly inequality in the interval and height. correction 6t determined from The reference of the tide to the establishment is not, howcver, —2A sin (23t) — nB sin n(a— B)=0; soo oe ce ae it is at ir pings the cit a a? establishment, which is the mean interval from the moon's transi a oe 180″ 5 nB sin n(a — B). to high water at spring tide, and the age of the tide, which is the w 4A mean period from full moon and change of moon to spring tide. Diurnal In this way we find that the corrections to the time of high water For these purposes the observations may be conveniently treated Graphi- correc- from O and K,+P are graphically.» An equally divided horizontal scale is taken to cal treat- tion to e tte i represent the twelve hours of the clock of civil time, regulated to ment. time of dt)= — 05-988 (1 zs —.) "T sin [13°943t — ¢ — 25° °3677]) (the time of the port, or—more accurately—arranged always to show H.W. D 2 2. ee and L.W. 6t'= — o-98s(1 +2) a sin [15°041t — ¢' + 0°:986n] (1 See Hatt, Phénoméne des Marées, p. 151, Paris, 1885. Meme H 2 See Prefaces to Indian Official Tide-Tables for 1887.

H denoting the height and t the time of high water as computed from the semi-diurnal tide. If t next denotes the time of low water the same corrections with opposite sign give the corrections for low water.

If the diurnal tides are large a second approximation will be necessary. These formule have been used in computing a tide-table in the example given in the Admiralty Scientific Manual (1886).

3 Founded on Whewell's article "Tides", in Admiralty Sc. Manual (ed. 1841), and on Airy's 'Tides and Waves," in Ency. Metrop.

4 Waves with a period of from five to twenty minutes are very common, and appear to be analogous to the ''seiches" of Geneva and other lakes. See Forel, Bulletin Soc. Vaud. Sci. Nat., 1873, 1875, 1877, and 1879; Ann.

Chimie et Physique, vol. ix., 1876; Comptes Rendus, 1879; Arch. Sci., Ph., et Nat., Geneva, 1885; also Airy, ‘‘On the Tides of Malta,” Phil. Trans., 1878, part i.

5 For a numerical treatment, see Directions for Reducing Tidal Observations, by Commander Burdwood, R.N., London, 1876.

Xx — 47

Graphi-

apparent time by being fast or slow by the equation of time ; this

cal deter- time-scale represents the time-of-clock of the moon’s transit, either

fair approximation. We find the time-of-clock of the moon’s upper or lower transit on the day, correct by the equation of time, read off the corresponding heights of high and low water from the figures,

‘nation upper or lower. The scale is perhaps most conveniently arranged 4 ? pany hes the order VW, Vie 4 ws XII F : _ TIL Then each interval | and the intervals being also read off are added to the time of the lishment, of time from transit to high water is set off as an ordinate above | moon’s transit and give the times of high and low water. At all &e. ” the corresponding time-of-clock of the moon’s transit. Asweeping | ports there is, however, an irregularity of heights and intervals

curve is drawn nearly through the tops of the ordinates, so as to cut off minor irregularities. Next along the same ordinates are set

off lengths corresponding to the height of water at each high water. A second similar figure may be made for the interval and height at low water.+ corresponding to XII is the establishment, since of high water at full high-water intervals t of high-water heights gives the mean establishment.

In the curve of high-water intervals the ordinate it gives the time moon and change of moon. That ordinate of which is coincident with the greatest ordinate Since the

between successive tides, and in consequence of this the curves pre- sent more or less of a zigzag appearance. Where the zigzag is perceptible to the eye, the curves must be smoothed by drawing them so as to bisect the zigzags, because these diurnal inequalities will not present themselves similarly in the future. When, as in some equatorial ports, the diurnal tides are large, this method of tidal prediction fails.

This method of working out observations of high and low water was not the earliest. In the Mécanique Céleste, bks.iand v., Laplace

Graphi- eal pre- diction,

Methods of La-

st it falls about fifty minutes later on each day, in setting | treats a large mass of tidal observations by dividing them into place, off Re cas dawn will be about five days for each | classes depending on the configurations of the tide-generating bodies. Lubbock, four times-of-clock of the upper transit. Hence in these figures we | Thus he separates the two syzygial tides at full moon and change Whewell. may regard each division of the time-scale I to II, II to III, &c., | of moon and divides them into equinoctial and solstitial tides. ing – instead of one hour. ‘Then the | He takes into consideration the tides of several days embracing ag teprpeeniing fran ty a oe f hiol ter heights to XII | th configurations. He goes through the tides at quadratures distance from the greatest ordinate of high-water heights to ese ; ‘ides is called the age of ie tide. From these two figures the times and | on the same general plan. ‘The effects of declination and parallax heights of high and low water may in general be predicted with | and the diurnal inequalities are similarly treated. Lubbock (Phil A.M. Midnight P.M. ae a Sel ¥ 2 VY WV nf ele: & 2:2 & 22 2 See Bas Pa 18 £t. ; L}14 #2. IRft. AKL £- \0f¢. : 4 Vas 8 ft. 416 fe 4 ft. 2 ft. Fic. 3.—Tide-curve for Bombay from the beginning of the civil year 1884 to the midnight ending Jan. 14, 1884, or from 12h Dec. 31, 1883, i > to 12h Jan. 14, 1884, astronomical time. > Trans., 1831 sq.) improved the method of

Laplace by taking into | graduated staff fixed in the sea, with such allowance as is possible account all the observed tides, and not merely those appertaining | made for wave-motion. It is far better, however, to sink a tube to certain configurations. He divided the observations into a | into the sea, into which the water penetrates through small holes. number of classes. First, the tides are separated into parcels, one | ‘The wave-motion is thus annulled. In this calm water there lies : for each month ; then each parcel is sorted according to the hour | a float, to which is attached a cord passing over a pulley and of the moon’s transit. Another classification is made according to | counterpoised at the end. The motion of the counterpoise against declination ; another according to parallax; and a last for the | a scale is observed. In either case the observations may be made diurnal inequalities. This plan was followed in treating the tides | every hour, which is referable, or the times and heights of high of London, Brest, St Helena, Plymouth, Portsmouth, and Sheerness. | and low water may be noted. We have cxplaincd in § 34 the Whewell (Phil. Trans., 1834 sq.) did much to reduce Lubbock’s | methods of reducing the latter kind of observation. Although results to a mathematical form, and made a highly important | more appropriate for rough observations, this method is susce tible J L] ghiy imp Pprop 1g P advance by the introduction of graphical methods by means of | of great accuracy when carefully used. It has been largely super- curves. The method explained above is due to him. Airy remarks | seded by the harmonic method, but is still adhered to by the British of Whewell’s papers that they appear to be ‘‘ the best specimens of | Admiralty. In more careful observations than those of which we reduction of new observations that we have ever secn.” are speaking the tidal record is automatic and continuous ; the reduction may be, and ‘wong at some future time will be, VI. TrpAu INSTRUMENTS AND TIDAL PREDICTION. mechanical ; and the prediction is so already. We shall therefore devote some space to general descriptions of the three classes of Obse : , § 35. General Remarks. instrument. The harmonic reductions are at present (1887) actu- ybserva- Practical tidal work is divisible into the three stages of observa- ally done numerically, and in chapter iv. we have indicated the tion and vation, reduction of observations, and prediction. 7 ical : : : : nature of the arithmetical processes. < The simplest observation is that of the height of water on a 10n, — el em 5 1 An example of this kind of curve for the high-water heights for Bombay, § 36. The Tide-Gauge. mae “iouptiet’ as te ta Wp ve anon os rent wee The site for the erection of a tide-gauge depenas on local circum- Tide- may be constructed for the low waters. In this case, however, the hours stances. It should be placed so as to present a fair representation gauge.

of the clock are repeated twice over, so that the morning and evening tides occur in different halves of the figure, and the hours are not hours of the moon’s transit, but the actual times of high water. It is obvious that the separation of the morning and evening tides prevents the occurrence of the zigzags referred to.

of the tidal oscillations of the surrounding arca. A tank is gener- ally provided, communicating by a channel with the sea at about 10 feet (more or less according to the prevalent surf) below the lowest low-water mark. In many cases on open coasts and fre-

quently in estuaries the tank may be dispensed with. At any rate we suppose that water is provided rising and falling with the tide, without much wave-motion. The nature of the installation de- pends entirely on the cireumstances of the case. A vertical pipe is fixed in the water in such a way as to admit it only through holes small enough to annul wave-motion and large enough to make no sensible retardation of its rise and fallin the pipe. The diameter of the pipe differs greatly in different instruments : some- times that which we have described as the tank serves as the pipe, and sometimes the pipe alone dips into the sea. A cylindrieal float, usually a hollow metallic box or a block of green-heart wood, hangs and floats in the pipe, and is of such density as just to sink without support. In Sir W. Thomson’s gauge the float hangs by a fine platinum wire, in Newman’s (used in India) by a metallic ribbon. In the latter a chain hangs at the bottom of the float of such weight that, whether the water be high or low, there is the same upward force on the float. It is necessary that the pull on the float should be eonstant, otherwise a systematic error is intro- duced between rising and falling water. The suspension wire is wrapped round a wheel, and imparts to it rotation proportional to the rise and fall of tide. By a simple gearing this wheel drives another, by which the range is reduced to any convenient extent. A fine wire wound on the final wheel of the train drags a pencil or pen up and down or to and fro proportionately to the tidal oscillations. The pencil is lightly pressed against a drum, which is driven by clockwork so as to make one revolution per day. The

en leaves its trace or tide-curve on paper wrapped round the Bai Generally, however, the paper is fixed to the drum, and the record of a fortnight may be taken without change of paper. An example of a tide-curve for Apollo Bunder, Bombay, from Ist to 15th January 1884, is shown in fig. 8. Sometimes the paper is in a long band, which the drum picks off from one coil and delivers on to another.

harmonic oscillatory motion, with a period proportional to the lunar half-day, whilst the sphere moves, relatively to the centre of the table, proportionately to the tide-heights on the same time-scale, then, at the end of a sufficient number of lunar days, we shall find that the total angie turned through by the cylinder is proportional to either the A or B eomponent of the lunar semi-diurnal tide. An index, which points to a dial, may be fixed to the cylinder, so that the required result may be read off.

In the harmonic analyser the tide-curve diagram is wrapped on a drum, which is turned by one hand, whilst with the other a pointer is guided to follow the tide-curve. As the drum turns proportion- ately to mean solar time, appropriate gearing causes two tables to execute harmonie oscillations in phases at right angles, with lunar semi-diurnal period. Atthe same time a fork attached to the pointer guides the two spheres so that their distances from the centres of their tables are equal to the tide-height in the diagram. The in- dexes attached to the two cylinders give the two components of the lunar semi-diurnal tide, and the approximation improves the longer the tide-curve which is passed through the machine. Corresponding to each of the principal lunar and solar tides there are a pair of tables, spheres with guiding forks, and cylinders similarly geared, and there is another sphere and another table, which last always turns the same way and at the same rate as the drum, from which the mean height of water isdetermined. Such an instrument has been constructed under the supervision of Sir W.. Thomson, but has not yet been put into practical use, so that we cannot say how it will compete with the arithmetical harmonic analysis.

§ 38. The Tide-Predicting Instrument.

The contact of the pen must be such that the work done in dragging it over the paper is small, otherwise a varying tension is thrown on to the float wire. Hence, if the fric- tion is considerable, the float must be large.

The first suggestion for instrumental prediction of tides was given, Tide- we believe, by Sir W. Thomson in 1872, and the instruments since predict- made have been founded on the principles which he then laid down. ing in- Mr Edward Roberts bore a very important part in the first practical strument.

The conditions necessary fora good tide-gauge appear to be better satisfied by Sir W. Thomson's than by any other; but, as his in- strument is recent, other forms have been much more extensively used, and have worked well. The peculiarity of Thomson's tide- gauge is that, by giving the drum an inclination to the vertical, the pressure of the pen on the paper and on its guides is very deli- cately regulated to the minimum necessary for effecting the purpose. In other gauges the drum has been either vertical or horizontal, and the amount of friction has necessarily been considerably greater.

§ 37. The Harmonie Analyser.

realization of such a machine, and a tide-predicter was constructed by Légé for the Indian Government under his direction. Thomson's is the only instrument in Europe as yet in regular practical nse for navigational purposes. It requires much skill and care in manipu- lation, and it has been ably worked by Mr Roberts for the pra tion of the Indian tide-tables ever since its completion. We refer the reader to Sir W. Thomson's paper on "Tidal Instruments," in Inst. C.#., vol. lxv., and to the subsequent discussion, for a full account of the several instruments, and for details of the share borne by the various persons concerned in the realization of the idea. Fig. 5 illustrates diagrammatically the nature of the instrument.

Har- If a function H be expressed as a series of harmonic terms, and | A cord passes over and under a succession of pulleys, being fixed at monic if one pair of these terms be A cos né+B sin nt, then, if Z' be a | one end and having at the other a pen which analyser. multiple of the complete period 27/n, we have touches a revolving drum. If all the pulleys but

Te sine J Hoos nt dt, B=”. vA Ti sin né dt. a4 4 TS o

Thus a machine whieh will effect these integrations will give A and Such a machine has been invented by Prof. James Thomson

and perfected by Sir W. Thomson. In fig. 4 let TT’ be a circular table, capable of rotation about the t inclined shaft s. Let S be a sphere touching the table anywhere along its horizontal diameter. Let C bea cylinder, of somewhat smaller diam- ¥, Ke eter than the sphere, capable of rota- i tion about a horizontal axis parallel to the table, and touching the sphere so that CS is parallel to TT’. Sup- pose that the point of contact of the sphere with the table is distant x ; Ss from the centre of the table, and F’- 4.—Harmonic analyser. nearer to us than the shaft; then, when the shaft sand the table TT’ turn in such a direction that T rises from the paper and T’ goes below it, the sphere will turn in the direction of its arrow. If the radius of the sphere is a, and that of the cylinder 0, then, when the table turns through a small angle 60, the sphere turns through 266/a and the cylinder through xd0/b. This angle vanishes if S touches the table at the centre, and is reversed if the sphere be moved across to the other side of the centre. Also whilst the table is turning the sphere may be rolled backwards and forwards without rubbing, and thus transmits motion from the table to the cylinder without slipping. Now suppose the turning of the table is so constrained that 64=k cos wdy, whilst x is constrained to be equal to the arbitrarily varying quantity H. Then the total angle turned through by the cylinder, as the machine runs, is proportional to fH cos ydy. If we impart to the table a simple 1 For further details concerning the establishment of tide-gauges, see Major

Braid’s Manual of Tidal Observation, London, 1887, and Sir W. Thomson, “ On Tidal Instruments,” in Inst. Civ. Eng., vol. lxv. p. 10.

one be fixed, and if that one executes a simple harmonic motion up and down, the pen will exe- cute the same motion with half amplitude. Ifa second pulley be now given an harmonic motion, the pen takes it up also with half amplitude. The same is true if all the pulleys are in harmonic motion. Thus the pen sums them all up, and leaves a trace on the revolving drum. When the drum and pul- leys are so geared that the angular motion of the drum is proportional to mean solar time, whilst the har- monic motions

of the pulleys cor- respond in range and phase to all the important lunar and solar tides, the trace on the drum is a tide-curve, from which a tide-table may be constructed. The harmonic motion of the pulley is given by an arrangement in- dicated only in the case of the lower pulley in the figure. The pulley frame has attached to its vertical portion a horizontal slot, in which slides a pin fixed to a wheel. Suppose that whilst the drum turns through 15° the wheel turns through 28°984. Nowa lunar day is 24°842 mean solar hours; hence as the drum turns through 15° x 24°842 the wheel turns through 24°842 × 28°-984 or 720°. Thus, if the drum turns with an angular velocity pro- portional to solar time, the wheel turns with twice the angular velocity proportional to lunar time,and the pulley geared to the wheel executes lunar semi-diurnal harmonie oseillations. When the throw of the pin and its angular position on its wheel are adjusted so as to correspond with the range and phase of the observed lunar scmi- diurnal tide, the oscillation of the pulley remains rigorously ac- curate for that tide for all future time, if the gearing be rigorously accurate, and with all needful accuracy for some ten years of tide

FIXED

Fic. 5.—Tide-predicting instrument.

2 For further details, see Appendixes iii., iv., v., to Thomson and Tait's Nat. Phil., 1879, vol. i., part i.; James Thomson, Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxiv., 1876, p. ne and (Sir W. Thomson) pp. 269, 271; Sir W. Thomson, Proc. Inst, C.E., vol. lxy.

Tides on Indian instru- ment.

Lines crowded near land.

with gearing as practically constructed. The upper pulleys have to be carefully counterpoised as indicated. It has not been found that any appreciable disturbance is caused by the inertia of the moving parts, even when the speed of working is high. The pre- dicter of the India Office takes about four hours to run off a year's tides, but greater speed seems attainable

by modification in the gearing. The Indian instrument, in the store department at Lam- beth, has pulleys for the following tides (see chap. iv.) : —M,, My, My K,, 8, 6s 0, N, P, Ke Q, », ‘ L, 4, 2MS, 25M, MS, Ssa, Sa.

§ 39. Numerical Harmonic Analysis and Prediction.

In chapter iv. we have discussed the application of the numerical harmonic method to a long series of hourly observations. An actual numerical example of this analysis, with modifications to render it applicable to a short series, such as a fortnight, is given in the Admiralty Seientific Manual, 1886, where also an example of the numerical and graphical prediction of the tides may be found. The formule used are those given in chapter v.

VII. Procress oF THE TIDE-WAVE OVER THE SEA, AND THE TIDES OF THE BRITISH SEAS. § 40. Meaning of Cotidal Lines.

Sufficient tidal data would of course give the state of the tide at every part of the world at the same instant of time, and if we were

ag 180 © 120 4 aa

A

14

to follow the successive changes we should be able to picture mentally the motion of the wave over the ocean and the successive changes in its height. The data are, however, as yet very incom- plete and only a rough scheme is possible. A map purporting to Cotidal give the progress of ‘the tide-wave is called a man of cotidal lines. lines, For a perfect representation three series of maps would be required, one for the semi-diurnal tides, a second for the diurnal tides, and a third for the tides of long period. Each class of map would then show the progress of the wave for cach configuration of the tide- generators. But as yet the only cotidal maps made are those for the mean semi-diurnal tide, and only for the configuration of new and full moon. The knowledge of the tides is not very accurate throughout the world, and therefore in the maps which we give it is assumed that the same interval elapses at all places between new. and full moon and spring tide.

At spring tide, as we have seen in (87) and (88),

h,=(M+M,) cos 2 (y — 4),

since A —, becomes then equal to— 4. As a rough approximation spring tide occurs when the moon’s transit is at one o’clock at night orin the day. We only assume, however, that it occurs simultan- eously everywhere. Now let 7 be the Greenwich mean time of high water, and / the E. long. in hours of the place of observation, then, the local time of high water being the time of the moon’s transit plus the interval, and local time being Greenwich time plus E. bere tite is re ee ede l=35 w—1+1),

.aan

SECA ee ett eect eer The

NUGSNS4:

|

PANTIL ESR UMass Caer AY, VA ae Ca AT

ents! coe ee et ee

$0000 120 130 140 150 160 170 180

eae 6.—Cotidal “ae of a aang

where # is in degrees. Therefore, if we draw over the ocean a succession of lines defined by equidistant integral values of the Greenwich time of high water, and if we neglect the separation of the moon from the sun in longitude i in twelve hours, the successive lines will give the motion of the semi-diurnal tide-wave in one hour.

§ 41. Cotidal Lines of the World.

No recent revisal of cotidal lines has been made with the aid of the great mass of tidal data which is now being accumulated, and we therefore reproduce (fig. 6) the chart of the world ‘prepared by Sir George Airy for

his article on ‘‘Tides and Waves.” The parts of the world for which data are wanting are omitted. The Roman numerals upon the cotidal lines denote the hour in Greenwich time of high water on the day of new or full moon. Airy remarks (§§ 575-584) that the cotidal lines of the North Atlantic are accurately drawn, that those of the South Atlantic are doubtful, and in the Pacific east of New Zealand are almost conjectural. The embodiment of recent observations in a cotidal chart would neces- sitate some modification of these statements.

When a free wave runs into shallow water it travels with less velocity and its height is increased. This is observable in the flexure and crowding of the cotidal lines near continents and oceanic islands, as, for example, about the Azores, the Bermudas, and the coast of South America. The velocity of the tide-wave gives good information as to the depth of the sea. In the North Sea it appears to travel at about 45 miles an hour, which corresponds to a depth

of 140 feet, and we know that the depth along the deeper channel

is greater and along the sides less than this. In the Atlantic the

wave passes over 90° of latitude, from the southern to the northern i one o’clock line, in twelve hours, that is at the rate of 520 miles an

hour. If the Atlantic tide could be considered as a free wave

generated by the Pacific tide, this velocity would correspond to a

depth of 18,000 feet. Airy considers, however, that the Atlantic

forms too large a basin to permit the neglect of the direct tidal

action, and thinks that the tides of this ocean derive extremely

little of their character from the Pacific.

‘‘There is another consideration,” he says, ‘‘ which must not be Sir G.

left out of sight. It is that, supposing the cotidal lines to be accu- Airy. rately what they profess to be—namely, the lines connecting all the

points at which high water is simultaneous—they may, nevertheless, : with a compound series of tide-waves, not at all represent the ridge of the tide-wave which actually runs over the ocean. Thus an eye at a great distance, capable of observing the swells of the tide-waves, might see one huge longitudinal ridge extending from the mouth of the Amazon to the sea beyond Iceland, making high water at one time from Cape de Verde to the North Cape, ‘and at auother time from Florida to Greenland, and another ridge transversal to the former, travelling from the coast of Guiana to the northern sea; and the cotidal lines which we have traced may depend simply on the combination of these waves. It does not appear likely that we can ever ascertain whether itis so or not; but it is certainly possible that the original waves may have these or similar forms ;

Sir G. Airy.

TIDES

and if so it is vain for us to attempt entirely to explain the tides of the Atlantic.”

He sums up the discussion of the chart by saying :—

‘‘Upon the whole, therefore, we are driven to the conclusion that we cannot at all explain the cause of the form of the cotidal lines in the ocean, so far as they have been traced with any prob- ability. And, supposing us to know with tolerable certainty those corresponding to the semi-diurnal tide, we cannot at all predict those which should hold for the diurnal tide.”

§ 42. Cotidal Lines of the British Seas.

Fig. 7 shows the cotidal lines in the seas surrounding the British Islands. Here the lines refer to full moon and change of moon and not to spring tide. The small figures along different parts of the coast denote the extreme range of the tide in yards. This figure is from the same source as the preceding one, and we again reproduce a portion of Airy’s remarks.

‘*The tides in the English Channel claim notice as having been the subject of careful examination by many persons, English and

& s * 2 o 2 4 s 8 o AT Whee (le | 4 a :

kd

Aisthe point at which Captain Hewitt observations ware made.

The small figures along the Coasts denote the whole range of the tide in yards,

The Roman numerals on the Cotidal

Lines denote the hour of High water

in Greenwich time an the dsya of

new and full moon

Fig. 7.—Cotidal lines of British seas.

French. It appears that in the upper part of the Channel the water flows up the Channel nearly three hours after high watcr and runs down nearly three hours after low water (this continuance of the current after high water, if it last three hours, is called by sailors tide-and-half-tide ; if it last one hour and a half, it is called tide-and-quarter-tide). On the English side of the Channel, especi- ally opposite the entrance of bays, the directions of the currents turn in twelve hours in the same direction as the hands of a watch ; on the French side they turn in the opposite direction. This is entirely in conformity with theory. The same laws are recognized as holding in the British [Bristol ?] Channel, and in the German or North Sea near the Scotch and English coasts.

‘‘ With regard to the Irish Channel we have only to remark that there is a very great difference in the height of the tide on the different sides, the tide on the east side being considerably the greater. They are also greater in the northern part (north of Wicklow on one side, and of Bardsey Island on the

other side) than in the southern part. Between Wexford and Wicklow they are very small. ;

‘‘ The tides of the German Sea present a very remarkable peculiar- ity. Along the eastern coast of England, as far as the mouth of the Thames, the tide-wave, coming from the Atlantic round the Orkney Islands, flows towards the south. Thus, on a certain day, it is high water in the Murray [Moray] Firth at eleven o’clock, at Berwick at two o’clock, at Flamborough Head at five o’clock, and so on to the entrance of the Thames, But on the Belgian and Dutch coasts immediately opposite, the tide-wave flows from the south towards the north. Thus, on the day that we have sup- posed, it will be high water off the Thames at eleven o’clock (the tide having travelled in twelve hours from the Murray Firth) and at Calais nearly at the same time; but at Ostend it will be at twelve, off The Hague at two, off the Helder at six, and so on.

373

‘‘We believe that a complete explanation may be found in the arrangement of the great shoals of the North Sea. It must be remarked that (except within a very small distance of Norway) the North Sea is considerably deeper on the English side than on the German side ; so much so that the tide-wave coming from the north runs into a deep bay of deep water, bounded on the west side by the Scotch and English coasts as far as Newcastle, and on the east side by the great Dogger Bank. As far as the latitude of Hull, the English side is still the deep one ; and, though a species of channel through the shoal there allows an opening to the east, yet immediately on the south of it is the Wells Bank, which again contracts the deep channel to the English side. After this (that is, in the latitude of Yarmouth) the deep channel expands equally to both sides. It seems reasonable to conclude from this that the great set of north tide is on the English side of the North Seca, both between the Dogger Bank and England and betwcen the Wells Bank and England (a branch stream of tide having been given off to the east between these two banks), and that any passage of tide- wave over these banks may be neglected. Now this view is sup- ported in a remarkable degree by the tidal observations on two dangerous shoals called the Ower and Leman, lying between Cromer and the Wells Bank, but nearer to the

latter. It appears that on these shoals the direction of the tide-current revolves in the same manner as the hands of a watch, proving conclusively that the Ower and Leman are on the left hand of the main stream of tide (supposing the face turned in the direction in which the tide pro- ceeds), or are on its eastern border, and therefore that the central stream is still nearer to the coast of Norfolk. From a point not far south of this we may suppose the tide to diverge in a fan-shaped form over the uniformly deep Belgian Sea. Along the English coast the wave will flow to the south; but it will reach the whole of the Belgian and Dutch coast at the same instant; and, if this tide alone existed, we doubt not that the time of high water would be sensibly the same along the whole of that coast.

“ But there is another tide of great magnitude, namely, that which comes from the English Channel through the Straits of Dover. This also diverges, we conceive, in a fan form, affecting the whole Belgian Sea: the western part turns into the estuary of the Thames ; the eastern part runsalong the Dutch coast, producing at successive times high water (even as combined with the North Sea tide) along successive points of that coast from Calais towards the Helder. And this we believe to be the complete explanation of the apparently opposite tide-currents. The branch tide of the North Sea running between the Dogger Bank and the Wells Bank will assist in propa- gating the tide along the German coast from the Helder towards the mouth of the Elbe. We have gone into some detail in this explanation for the purpose of showing the importance of consider- ing the form of the bottom in explanations of specific tides.

“ A set of observations has been made by Captain Hewett (at the point A, fig. 7) on the depth and motion of the water at a strictly definite point a few miles south of the Wells Bank, near the middle of the Belgian Sea. The result was that the change of elevation of the surface was insensible, but that there was a considerable stream of tide alternately north-east and south-west (magnetic). The point in question corresponds pretty well to the intersection of the cotidal lines of nine o’clock of the North Sea tide and three o’clock of the English Channel tide (ordinary establishment), and these tides would therefore wholly or partially destroy each other as regards elevation. As regards the compound tide-stream, the greatest positive current from oue tide will be combined with the greatest negative current of

the other, and this will produce a stream whose direction agrees well with observation. At 34 on the day of new moon, the North Sea tide would be running north (magnetic), and the English Channel tide would be running east, and therefore the compound current would be running north-east ; at 92 it would be running south-west. Both currents, and consequently the com- pound current, would cease at about 04, 6, &c., on the day of new moon ; and, as the observations were made rather more than a day before new moon, the slack water would occur an hour or more before noon. ‘The whole of this agrces well with the observations.”

VIII. TipAt DEFORMATION OF THE SOLID EARTH. § 43. Elastic Tides.

The tide-generating potential varies as the square of the distance Elastic from the earth’s centre, and the corresponding forces act at every tides.

point throughout its mass. No solid matter possesses the property of absolute rigidity, and we must therefore admit the sfohalile existence of tidal elastic deformation of the solid earth. The problem of finding the state of strain of an elastic sphere under given stresses was first solved by Lamé;! he made, however, but few physical deductions from his solution. An independent solution was found by Sir W. Thomson,” who drew some interesting conclu- sions concerning the earth.

1 Théorie Math. de l Elasticité, 1866, p. 213. 2 Thomson and Tait, Nat. Phil., §§ 732-737 and 833-842, or Phil. Trans., pt. ii., 1863, p. 583.

rrp ifs

parison with the rigidity of steel falls to the ground, the investiga-

tion remains as an important confirmation of Thomson’s conelusion

as to the great effeetive rigidity of the earth. When extensive and accurate knowledge of the tides has been attained, the attempted evaluation of the rigidity may conceivably be possible, because The 19- there is a minnte tide with a period of 18°6 years (§ 23, schedule yearly [A, iii.]) of which

Laplace’s argument must hold good. Great accu- tide. racy will, however, be necessary, because the height of the tide at

the equator only amounts to one-third of an inch, and a preliminary inquiry seems to show that there are other relatively considerable variations of sea-level arising from unexplained causes.”

Sir W. Thomson’s solution of the strain of an elastic sphere has Weight been also used to determine what degree of strength the materials of con- of the earth must have in order that the great continental plateaus tinents. and mountains may not sink in.* In another investigation it has been shown that local elastic yielding on the coast-lines of conti-

His problem, in as far as it is now material, is as follows. Let a sphere, of radins a and density w, be made of elastic material whose bulk and rigidity moduli are & and , and let it be subjeeted to forees due toa potential wr?S, per unit volume, where S, is a surface spherical harmonie of the second order. ‘Then it is required to find the strain of the sphere. We refer the reader to the original sources for the methods of solution applicable to spherieal shells and to solid spheres. In order to write Thomson’s solution we put 7, d, for radius vector, latitude, and longitude, and p, p, v for the corresponding displacements. Then the solution is as follows :— = 2 2 _ 22) In 4 22 p= (ioe + anal ®* 8r°)k + 2an]rSy 7 w P=9(19k + 4n)n

v [(8a? — 5r*)k + 3(a@? — rn}

aSe an

r ds, cosA dl

[(8a2 — 57?) + §(a2 — 7°) n]r (96).

= w ~ 2(19k + $n)n For either tidal or rotational stresses S,=1(sin?A — 4),

in the case of tides r=3m/c, m and ¢ being the moon’s mass and distance, and in the ease of rotation r= — 4w*, w being the angular velocity about

the polar axis. The equation to the surface is found by putting r=a+p, where in the expression for p we put r=a, Hence from (96) the form of surface is given by

nents may produce an augmentation of apparent tide in certain places on account of the flexnre of the upper strata, when a great weight of water is added and subtracted from the adjacent oceanic area at high and low tide.4 There is reason to believe that snch flexure has actually been observed by a delicate form of level on the coast of the Bay of Biscay.®

§ 45. Viscous and Elastico-Viseous Tides.

It might be supposed that the earth is composed of a viscous Viseous fluid of great stiffness, or that it possesses an elasticity which and breaks down under continued stress. Both these hypotheses have elastico- been considered, and the results are confirmatory of the conclusion viseous

_ 15wa? gsnfk oly a } oe SI): raa{ 1+” | 1+7) alk (sin? \ — 4) (97)

In most solids the bulk modulus is considerably larger than the and in this discussion it is sufficient to negleet n

rigidity modulus, : compared with % With this approximation, the ellipticity ¢ of the surface becomes _ 5wa? (08) Cag T ceieesrtseteteseeserees : Now suppose the sphere to be endued with the power of gravitation, and write 29

where g is gravity at the surface of the globe. Then, if there were

that the earth is made of very stiff material.® appear to have been worthy of attack, although the existcnee of measurable oceanic tides of long period negatives the adoption of the hypothesis of true viscosity, at least under stresses comparable with tide-generating forces.

If a sphere of radins a, density w, viscosity modulus v, be under the action of forces due to a potential per unit volume wr?S,cos nt, so that 2 is the speed of the tide, the solution of the problem shows that the tide of the sphere is expressed by

no elasticity, the ellipticity would be given by e=7/q, and without A gravitation bye=7/r. And it may be proved in several ways that, 8 C05 € COS (E— €).ccscsseserseeeens …(101), gravity and elasticity co-operating, Ge T es 16 19v 2 9 a ee ee (100). where tiic=”—, YSegg a: t+y g 1+12/g

If 2 be the rigidity of steel, and if the globe have the size and mean density of the earth, t/y=2, and with the rigidity of glass t/q =3. Hence the ellipticity of an earth of steel under tide-generating force would be + of that of a fluid earth, and the similar fraction for glass would be . If an ocean be superposed on the globe, then, if the globe rises and falls with the tide as though it were fluid, there will obviously be no tide visible to an observer carried np and down with the solid; and with any degree of rigidity the visible tide will be the excess of the fluid tide above the solid tide. Hence on an earth with rigidity of steel the oceanic tides wonld be reduced to 3, and with rigidity of glass to 2 of the tides on a rigid earth.

§ 44, Rigidity of the Earth.

Thus the tides of the viscous globe are to the equilibrium tides of a fluid globe as cos € to unity, and there is a retardation ¢/n of the time of high tide after the passage of the tide-generator over the meridian. Further, by arguments similar to that applied in the case of elastic tides, it is found that oceanic tides are reduced by the yielding in the proportion of sin ¢ to unity, and that there is an apparent acceleration of the time of high water by (4m —e)/n. It appears by numerical calculation that, in order that the oceanic semi-diurnal tide may have a value equal to two-thirds of the full amount on a rigid globe, the stiffness of the globe must be about twenty thousand times as great as that of pitch at freezing temperature, when it is hard and brittle. We must here pass by the results of the hypothesis of an elasticity degrading uuder the influence of continued stress.

Rigidity _ Although the computation of oceanic tides is as yet impossible, ofthe it cannot be admitted that perfect rigidity in the earth would aug- earth. ment the tides in the proportion of 5 to 2, although they might IX. Trpau FRIcTION.

perhaps be augmented in the proportion 4 to 3. Thus Thomson

§ 46. General Explanation.

These problems tides,

concludes that the earth’s mass must have an effective rigidity at least as great as that of steel. If it were true, as was held until recently, that the earth is a fluid ball coated with a crust, that crust must be of fabulous rigidity to resist the tidal surgings of

The investigation of the tides of a viscous sphere has led us to the General consideration of a frictionally retarded tide. The effects of tidal] explana- friction are of such general interest that we give a sketeh of the tion of principal results without the aid of mathematical symbols. In fig, tidal frie-

subjacent fluid. Hence we are led to the conclusion that far the larger portion of the earth’s mass, if not all of it, is a solid of great rigidity. Up to the present time the argument by which the tides of long period were proved to have approximately their equilibrium height has generally been accepted without much doubt, but we have (§ 17) shown good cause for rejecting Laplace’s argument, at

Attempt least fora fortnightly tide. It appeared formerly that, from nnmeri- to evalue cal data as to the heights of the tides of long period, we should

8 the paper is supposed to be the plane of the orbit of a satellite M tion.

revolving in the direction of the arrow abont the planet C, which rotates in the direction of the arrow about an axis perpendicular to the paper. The rotation of the planet is supposed to be more rapid than that of the satellite, so that the day is shorter than the month. Let us suppose that the planet is either entirely fluid, or has an ocean of such depth that it is high watcr under or nearly under the satellite. When there is no friction, with the satellite at m, the

rigidity be able to compute the actual effective rigidity of the earth’s mass. | planet is elongated into the ellipsoidal shape shown, cutting the by tides But from § 18 we see that, although these tides remain incalculable, | ean sphere, which is dotted. But, when there is friction in the of long yet with

such oceans as ours the tides of long period must conform | fluid motion, the tide is retarded, and high tide occurs after the period. much more nearly to the equilibrium laws than do the tides of | satellite has passed the meridian. Then, if we keep the same figure

short period. Thus a comparison of the observed heights of the tides of long period with the equilibrium law still remains of interest, although the evalnation of the earth's rigidity appears with present data nnattainable. Acting on the old belief, Mr G. H. Darwin has compared the lunar fortnightly and monthly tides, as observed for thirty-three years at various Indian and European ports, with the equilibrium theory, and has fonnd that the tide- heights were about two-thirds of the equilibrium height. From this the conclusion was drawn that the effective rigidity of the earth was as great as that of steel. Whilst, then, this preeise com-

1 Thomson and Tait, Nat. Phil., vol. i. pt. ii., 1883, § 847 sq.

to represent the tidal elongation, the satellite must be at M, instead of at m. If we number the four quadrants as shown, the satellite must be in quadrant 1. The protuberance P is nearer to the satellite than P', and the deficiency Q is further away than the deficiency

en i Ee

2 Darwin, "On 19-yearly Tide at Karachi," in Brit. Assoc. Report, 1886.

3 G. H. Darwin, Phil. Trans., pt. i., 1882, p. 187, with correction, Proc. Roy. Soc., 1885. ;

4 Td., Brit. Assoc. Rep., 1882, or Phil. Mag., 1882. ; ; 5 D'Abbadie, Annales Soc. Sc. de Bruxelles, 1881, or quotation by Darwin, 0c. cit.

6 G. H. Darwin, Phil. Trans., pt. i., 1879, p. 1; see also Lamb, "On the Oscillations of a Viscous Spheroid," Proc. Lond. Math. Soc., Nov. 1881, p. 51.

ChE s

Q’. Hence the resultant action of the planet on the satellite must be in some such direction as MN. The action of the satellite on the planet is equal and opposite, and the force in NM, not being through the planet’s centre, must produce a_ retarding couple on the planet’s rotation, the magnitude of which depends on the

been and will be given for such changes. Let C’ be the moment of inertia of the planet about its axis of rotation, r the distance of the satellite from the centre of the planet, & the resultant moment of momentum of the whole system, e the whole energy, both kinetic and potential, of the system. It is assumed that the figure of the planet and the distribution of its internal density are such that the attraction of the satellite causes no couple about any axis perpen- dicular to that of rotation. A special system of units of mass, length, and time will now be adopted such that the analytical re- sults are reduced to their simplest forms. Let the unit of mass be

length of the arm CN. Mm|(M+m). Let the unit of length y be such a distance that the This tidal frictional moment of inertia of the planet about its axis of rotation may be couple varies as the equal to the moment of inertia of the planet and satellite, treated

height of the tide, and also depends on the sa-

as particles, about their centre of inertia, when distant y apart from one another. This condition gives

Planet’s tellite’s distance ; its in- my \2 My

rotation tensity in fact varies as M sp +m +m +m) — 73

retarded. the square of the tide- Fic. 8 OM + 4 generating force, and = whence y= —— :

therefore as the inverse sixth power of the satellite’s distance. Thus tidal friction must retard the planetary rotation. Let us now con- sider its effect on the satellite. If the force acting on M be resolved along and

perpendicular to the direction CM, the perpendicular component tends to accelerate the satellite's velocity. It alone would carry the satellite further from C than it would be dragged back by the central force towards C. The satellite would describe a spiral, the coils of which would be very nearly circular and very nearly coincident. If now we resolve the central component force along CM tangentially and perpendicular to the spiral, the tangential component tends to retard the velocity of the satellite, whereas the disturbing force, already considered, tends to accelerate it. With

Satcllite's the gravitational law of force between the two bodies the retarda-

Let the unit of time 7 be the time in which the satellite revolves through 57°3 about the planet, when the satellite's radius vector is equal to y. In this case 1/r is the satellite's orbital angular velocity, and by the law of periodic times we have

7 P= w(M +m), where uw is the attraction between unit masses at unit distance. Then by substitution for y

_ f O(M+m) 4

~ etn J

This system of units will be found to make the thrce following Special functions each equal to unity, viz., piMm (M+m)3, wMm, and C. units.

The units are in fact derived from the consideration that these

velocity tion must prevail over the acceleration.! The moment of mo- f : h : retarded. mentum of the whole system remains unchanged, and that of the peg 5 ras tobeunity. In the case of the earth and moon, planetary rotation diminishes, so that the orbital moment of if we take the moon's mass as gyd of the earth's and the earth's momentum must increase ; now orbital moment of momentum in- nia ye "og as $dfa* (as is Mas nearly the case), it may easily creases with increasing distance and diminishing linear and angular ° a a the unit of mass is zy of the earth ae oe velocity of the satellite. The action of tidal friction may appear | ° lyre : en earth's radii or 33,506 se Jl (20,807 miles), somewhat paradoxical, but it is the exact converse of the

accelera- bass ‘ e unit of time 2 hrs. 41 minutes. _ In these units the present tion of the linear and angular velocity and the diminution of dis- pty _ Ng ey of the earth’s diurnal rotation Js eee by oo teas tance of a satellite moving through a resisting medium. The latter Me el the moon’s present radius vector by fs pri The two oes result is generally more familiar than the action of tidal friction, | °0°/*S pos supposed to revolve in circles about their RSS “ a and it may help the reader to realize the result in the present case. racer a with an angular velocity , the moment of momen- mentum. Tidal friction then diminishes planetary rotation, increases the tum of orbital motion is . . satellite’s distance, and diminishes the orbital angular velocity. .) Q+ ou Mr Vo 29 The comparative rate of diminution of the two angular velocities M+m) '" \M+m) M+m | is generally very different. If the satellite be close to the planet Then, by the law of periodic times in a circular orbit, the rate of increase of the satellite’s periodic time or month is large 7 = p(M +m) 5 compared with the rate of increase of the period of planetary rota- | whence Or? =p2(M+myirs, tion or day; but if the satellite is far off the converse is true. | The moment of momentum of orbital motion Hence, if the satellite starts very near the planet, with the month = ptMm(M+ m)-trt a little longer than the day, as the satellite recedes the month soon Ain a ati net i lt : Mig datizamiek, of increases, so that it contains many days. The number of days in | 20° ™ = 4 pci ie : “= = TO e a0=1 : fay cial the month attains a maximum and then diminishes. Finally the bo rg Th, - f planet’s rokalion i a — two angular velocities subside to a second identity, the day and | “™”* iat i at a (102). month being identical and both very long. Since the moon’s present radius vector is 11°454, it follows that We have supposed that the ocean is of such depth that the tides | the orbital momentum of the moon is 3°384. Adding to this the are direct ; if, however, they are inverted, with low water under or | rotational momentum of the earth, which is ‘704, we obtain 4°088 nearly under the satellite, friction, instead of retarding, accelerates for the total moment of momentum of the moon and earth. The the tide; and it would be easy by drawing another figure to see | ratio of the orbital to the rotational momentum is 4°80, so that that the whole of the above conclusions hold equally true with | the total moment of momentum of the

system would, but for the inverted tides. obliquity of the ecliptic, be 5‘80 times that of the earth’s rotation. Again, the kinetic energy of orbital motion is $47. Exact Investigation of the Secular Effects of Tidal Friction. 4 u(5f” 02+ dan *Mr Vow 4 Mm* ogg, Hm Tidal The general conclusions of the last section are of such wide in- M+m M+m M+m P friction. terest that we proceed to a rigorous discussion of the principal effects | The kinetic energy of the planet’s rotation is 4Cn*. The potential of tidal friction in the elementary case of the circular orbit. In | energy of the system is—Mm/r. Adding the three energies to- order, however, to abridge the investigation we shall only consider | gether, and transforming into the special units, we have the case when the planetary rotation is more rapid than the satel- SAU 0. eigge gine (108). lite’s orbital motion. | : , } Now let a=rt, y=n, Y=. Suppose an attractive particle or satellite of mass m to be moving | 1; wil] be noticed that x, the moment of momentum of orbital ‘ L gee : ; es Taig oat ta Berg the hn og Rp a ne ais ae motion, is equal to the square root of the satellite’s distance from : if oe : the planet. Then equations (102) and (103) become perpendicular to the plane of the orbit, with an angular velocity aebs (104) n; suppose, also, the mass of the planet to be partially or wholly ra ta(h yt 1 fat ee (105) imperfectly elastic or viscous, or that there are oceans on the sur- i” ge ae ae ee a ee coe face of the planet ; then the attraction of the satellite must produce (104) is the equation of conservation of moment of momentum, or, a relative motion in the parts of the planet, and that motion must shortly, the equation of momentum ; (105) is the equation of energy. be subject to friction, or, in other words, there must be frictional Now consider a system started with given positive moment of Energy tides of some sort or other. The system must accordingly be losing momentum / ; and we have all sorts of ways in which it may be ’ dimin- energy by friction, and its configuration must change in such a way started. If the two rotations be of opposite kinds, it is clear that Maxi- ished by that its whole energy diminishes. Such a system docs not differ we may start the system with any amount of energy however great, mumand friction. much from those of actual planets and satellites, and, therefore, the but the true maxima and minima of energy compatible with the minimum

given moment of momentum are supplied by d Y/dx=0, or e-h+1/2=0, that is to say, Gt — fice tM Oe, onnaateepecnuceesteeee (106).

We shall presently see that this quartic has either two real roots

results deduced in this hypothetical case must agree pretty closely Siete yc

with the actual course of evolution, provided that time enough has i EEE EEE

1 This way of presenting the action of tidal friction is due to Professor Stokes.

No rela- tive mo- tion be- tween satellite and. planet when energy maxi- mum or minimum,

Equa- tions of mo- mentum, energy, and no relative motion.

Graphical illustra- tion.

and two imaginary, or all imaginary roots. The quartic may be derived from quite a different cousideration, viz., by finding the con- dition under which the satellite may move round the planet so that the planet shall always show the same face to the satellite, —in fact, so that they move as parts of one rigid body. The condition 1s simply that the satellite's orbital angular velocity Q=n, the planet's angular velocity of rotation, or y=1/23, sincen=y and rt=O0-t=2. By substituting this value of y in the equation of momentum (104), we get as before xt —hae+1=0

At present we have only obtained one result, viz., that, if with given moment of momentuni it is possible to set the satellite and planet moving as a rigid body, it is possible to do so in two ways, and one of these ways requires a maximum amount of energy and the other a minimum ; from this it is clear that one must be a rapid rotation with the satellite near the planet and the other a slow one with the satellite remote from the planet. In the three equations

De cuss Fen Sl td ad (107), a ee ee eee (108), * OS hl lh (109),

(107) is the equation of momentum, (108) that of energy, and (109) may be called the equation of rigidity, since it indicates that the two bodies move as though parts of one rigid body. To illustrate these equations geometrically, we may take as abscissa 2, which is the moment of momentum of orbital motion, so that the axis of « may be called the axis of orbital momentum. Also, for equations (107) and (109) we may take as ordinate y, which is the moment of momentum of the planet's rotation, so that the axis of y may be called the axis of rotational momentum. For (108) we may take as ordinate Y, which is twice the energy of the system, so that the axis of Y may be called the axis of energy. Then, as it will be convenient to exhibit all three curves in the same figure, with a parallel axis of x, we must have the axis of energy identical with that of rotational momentum. It will not be necessary to consider the case where the resultant moment of momentum h is negative, because this would only be equivalent to reversing all the rotations ; is therefore to be taken as essentially positive. Then the line of momentum whose equation is (107) is a straight line inclined at 45° to either axis, having positive intercepts on both axes. The curve of rigidity whose equation is (109) is clearly of the same nature as a rectangular hyperbola, but it has a much more rapid rate of approach to the axis of orbital momentum than to that of rotational momentum. The intersections (if any) of the curve of rigidity with the line of momentum have abscissex which are the two roots of the quartic x4—ha?+1=0. The quartic has, therefore, two real roots or all imaginary roots. Then, since x=a/r, the intersection which is more remote from the origin indicates a configuration where the satellite is remote from the planet; the other gives the configuration where the satellite is closer to the planet. We have already learnt that these two cor- respond respectively to minimum and maximum energy. When x is very large, the equation to the curve of energy is Y=(h-—x)', which is the equation to a parabola with a vertical axis parallel to Yand distant A from the origin, so that the axis of the para- bola passes through the intersection of the line of momentum with the axis of orbital momentum. When « is very small, the equation becomes Y= —1/a*. Hence the axis of Y is asymptotic on both sides to the curve of energy. Then, if the line of mo- mentum intersects the curve of rigidity, the curve of energy has a maximum vertically underneath the point of intersection nearer the origin and a minimum underneath the point more remote. But, if there are no intersections, it has no maximum or minimum.

Fig. 9 shows these curves when drawn to scale for the case of the earth and moon, that is to say, withh=4. The points a and 8, which are the maximum and minimum of the curve of energy, are supposed to be on the same ordinates as A and B, the intersections of the curve of rigidity with the line of momentum. The in- tersection of the line of momentum with the axis of orbital momentum is denoted by D, but ina figure of this size it neces-

Ky

(01. 7Lae JO SILF

INS ADUING 10 OP WOLNINOM TF

Fig. 9.

sarily remains indistinguishable from B. As the zero of energy is quite arbitrary, the origin for the energy curve is displaced down- wards, and this prevents the two curves from crossing one another in a confusing manner. On account of the limitation imposed we

neglect the case where the quartic has no real roots. Every point

of the line of momentum gives by its abscissa and ordinate the square

root of the satellite’s distance and the rotation of the planet, and

the ordinate of the energy curve gives the euergy corresponding to

each distance of the satellite. Part of the figure has no physical meaning, for it is impossible for the satellite to move round the

planet at a distance less than the sum of the radii of the planet

and satellite. For example, the moon’s diameter being about 2200

miles, and the earth’s about 8000, the moon’s distance cannot be

less than 5100 miles. Accordingly a strip is marked off and shaded

on each side of the vertical axis within which the figure has no physical meaning. The point P indicates the present configura-

tion of the earth and moon. The curve of rigidity z*y=1 is the

same for all values of h, and by moving the line of momentum

parallel to itself nearer to or further from the origin, we may represent all possible moments of momentum of the whole system.

The smallest amount of moment of momentum with whicli it is Least mo- ~ — to set the system moving as a rigid body, with centrifugal mentum orce enough to balance the mutual attraction, is when the line of for which momentum touches the curve of rigidity. The condition for this no rela- is clearly that the equation a4 ~ha?+1=0 should have equal roots. tive mo- If it has equal roots, each root must be 3h, and therefore tion pos-

(3h)4 — h(8h)?+1=0, sible.

whence A4= 44/33 or h=4/3t=1°75. The actual value of /% for the

moon and earth is about 4; hence, if the moon-earth system were started with less than 7% of its actual moment of momentum, it

would not be possible for the two bodies to move so that the earth Maxi- should always show the same face tothe moou. Again, if we travel mum along the line of momentum, there must be some point for which number yx? is a maximum, and since yx*=n/Q there must be some point of daysin for which the number of planetary rotations is greatest during one month. revolution of the satellite; or, shortly, there must be some con- figuration for which there is a maximum number of days in the month. Now yz? is equal to #*(h-«), and this is a maximum

when «= h and the maximum number of days in the month is (3h)?(h — 8h) or 83h4/44; if A is equal to 4, as is nearly the case for

the earth and moon, this becomes 27. Hence it follows that we now

have very nearly the maximum number of days inthe month. A

more accurate investigation in a paper on the ‘‘Precession of a Viscous Spheroid” in Phil. Trans., part i., 1879, showed that, taking account of solar tidal friction and of the obliquity to the ecliptic,

the maximum number of days is about 29, and that we have already

passed through the phase of maximum. We will now consider the Discus- physical meaning of the figure. It is assumed that the resultant sion of moment of momentum of the whole system corresponds to a positive figure. rotation. Now imagine two points with the same abscissa, one

on the momentum line and the other on the energy curve, and suppose the one on the energy curve to guide that on the momentum

line. Then, since we are supposing frictional tides to be raised on

the planet, the energy must degrade, and however the two points

are set initially the point on the energy curve must always slide

down a slope, carrying with it the other point. Looking at the

figure, we see that there are four slopes in the energy curve, two running down to the planet and two down tothe minimum. There

are therefore four ways in which the system may degrade, according

to the way it was started; but we shall only consider one, that corresponding to the portion ABba of the figure. For the part of

the line of momentum AB the month is longer than the day, and

this is the case with all known satellites except the nearer one of History of Mars. Now, ifa satellite be placed in the condition A—that is to satellite say, moving rapidly round a planet which always shows the same as energy face to the satellite—the condition is clearly dynamically unstable, degrades. for the least disturbance will determine whether the system shall degrade down the slopes ac or ab—that is to say, whether it falls

into or recedes from the planet. If the equilibrium breaks down

by the satellite receding, the recession will go on until the system

has reached the state corresponding to B. It is clear that, if the intersection of the edge of the shaded strip with the line of mo- mentum be identical with the point A, which indicates that the satellite is just touching the planet, then the two bodies are in

effect parts of a single body im an unstable configuration. If, therefore, the moon was originally part of the earth, we should expect to find this identity. Now in fig. 9, drawn to scale to re- present the earth and moon, there is so close an approach between

the edge of the shaded band and the intersection of the line of momentum and curve of rigidity that it would be scarcely possible

to distinguish them. Hence, there scems a probability that the

two bodies once formed parts of a single one, which broke up in consequence of some kind of instability. This view is confirmed

by the more detailed consideration of the case in the paper on the "'Precession of a Viscous Spheroid," already referred to, and sub- sequent papers, in the Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society.?

1 For further consideration of this subject see a series of papers by MrG. H. Darwin, in Proceed. and Trans. of the Royal Society from 1878 to 1881, and Appendix G (b) to part ii. vol. i. of Thomson and Tait's Nat. Phil., 1883.

Accelera- tion of moon's motion due to tidal friction.

Various esti- mates of amount.

Numeri- cal result as to earth's rotation.

§ 48. Amount of Tidal Retardation of Earth’s Rotation.

With respect to the actual amount of retardation of the earth’s rotation, we quote the following from Thomson and Tait’s Nat. Phil. (1883), § 830.1

‘In observational astronomy the earth’s rotation serves as a time- keeper, and thus a retardation of terrestrial rotation will appear astronomically as an acceleration of the motion of the heavenly bodies. Itis only in the case of the moon’s motion that such an apparent acceleration can be possibly detected. Now, as Laplace first pointed out, there must be a slow variation in the moon’s mean motion arising from the secular changes in the eccentricity of the earth’s orbit around the sun. At the present time, and for several thousand years in the future, the variation in the moon’s motion is and will be an acceleration. Laplace’s theoretical calculation of the amount of that acceleration appeared to agree well with the results which were in his day accepted as represent- ing the facts of observation. But in 1853 Adams showed that Laplace’s reasoning was at fault, and that the numerical results of Damoiseau’s and Plana’s theories with reference to it consequently require to be sensibly altered. Hansen’s theory of the secular acceleration is vitiated by an error of principle similar to that which affects the theories of Damoiseau and Plana ; but, the mathe- matical process which he followed being different from theirs, he arrived at somewhat different results. From the erroneous theory Hansen found the value of 1218 for the coefficient of the term in the moon’s mean longitude depending on the square of the time, the unit of time being a century ; in a later computation given in his Darlegung he found the coefficient to be 1256.”

“In 1859 Adams communicated to Delaunay his final result, namely, that the coefficient of this term appears from a correctly con- ducted investigation to be 5”°7, so that at the end of a century the moon is 57 before the position it would have had at the same time if its mean angular velocity had remained the same as at the begin- ning of the century. Delaunay verified this result, and added some further small terms which increased the coefficient from 5”°7 to 6”1.

‘Now, according to Airy, Hansen’s value of the ‘advance’ represents very well the circumstances of the oy of Agathocles, Larissa, and Thales, but is if anything too small. Newcomb, on the other hand, is inclined from an

elaborate discussion of the ancient eclipses to believe Hansen's value to be too large, and gives two competing values, viz., 84 and 109.8

"In any case it follows that the value of the advance as theoreti- cally deduced from all the causes, known up to the present time to be operative, is smaller than that which agrees with observation. In what follows 12" is taken as the observational value of the advance, and 6" as the explained part of this phenomenon. About the beginning of 1866 Delaunay suggested that the true explana- tion of the discrepancy might be a retardation of the earth's rota- tion by tidal friction. Using this hypothesis, and allowing for the consequent retardation of the moon's mean motion by tidal reaction, Adams, in an estimate which he has communicated to us, founded on the rough assumption that the parts of the earth's retardation due to solar and lunar tides are as the squares of the respective tide-generating forces, finds 22 sec. as the error by which the earth, regarded as a time-keeper, would in a century get behind a perfect clock rated at the beginning of the century. Thus at the end of a century a meridian of the earth is 330" behind the position in which it would have been if the earth had continued to rotate with the same angular velocity which it had at the beginning of the century. ...

" Whatever be the value of the retardation of the earth's rotation it is necessarily the result of several causes, of which tidal friction is almost certainly preponderant. If we accept Adams's estimate as applicable to the outcome of the various concurring causes, then, if the rate of retardation giving the integral effect were uniform, the earth as a time-keeper would be going slower by '22 ofa second per year in the middle, and by '44 of a second per year at the end, than at

the beginning of the century. The latter is , of the present

1

717 ×10 angular velocity ; and, if the rate of retardation had been uniform during ten million centuries past, the earth must have been rotat- ing faster by about one-seventh than at present, and the centri-

1 See also G. H. Darwin's Address to Sect. A, Brit. Assoc. meeting, 1886.

2 ‘*Tt appears not unusual for physical astronomers to use an abbreviated phraseology, for specifying accelerations, which needs explanation. Thus, when they speak of the secular acceleration being, ¢.g., ‘12”°56 in a century,’ they mean by ‘acceleration’ what is more properly ‘the effect of the accelera- tion on the moon’s inean longitude.’ The correct unabbreviated statement is ‘the acceleration is 25°12 per century per century.’ Thus Hansen’s result is that in each century the mean motion of the moon is augmented by an angular velocity of 25°12 per century, so that at the end of a century the mean longi- tude is greater by 4 of 25712 than it would have been had the moon’s mean motion remained the same as it was at the beginning of the century. Con- sidering how absurd it would be to speak of a falling body as experiencing an acceleration of 16 feet in a second, or of 64 feet in two seconds, and how false and inconvenient it is to speak of a watch being 20 seconds fast when it is 20 seconds in advance of where it ought to be, we venture to suggest that, to attain clearness and correctness without sacrifice of brevity, ‘advance’ be sub- stituted for ‘acceleration’ in the ordinary astronomical phraseology.”

3 Researches on the Motion of the Moon, Washington, 1878.

fugal force must have been greater in the proportion of 8172 to Thom- 717? or of 67 to 51. If the consolidation took place then or earlier, gon’s ar- the ellipticity of the upper layers must have been >}, instead of gument about 3$5, asitisat present. It must necessarily remain uncertain as to age whether the earth would from time to time adjust itself completely of eon- to a figure of equilibrium adapted to the rotation. But it is clear go}ida- that a want of complete adjustment would leave traces in a pre- tion of ponderance of land in equatorial regions. The existence of large earth. continents and the great effective rigidity of the earth’s mass

render it improbable that the adjustinents, if any, to the appropri-

ate figure of equilibrium would be complete. The fact then that

the continents are arranged along meridians rather than in an equatorial belt affords some degree of proof that the consolidation

of the earth took place at a time when the diurnal rotation differed

but little from its present value. It is probable, therefore, that

the date of consolidation is considerably more recent than a thou-

sand million years ago. It is proper, however, to add that Adams Great lays but little stress on the actual numerical values which have yncer- been used in this computation, and is of opinion that the amount tainty of tidal retardation of the earth's rotation is quite uncertain." in pre-

§ 49. Effects of Tidal Friction on the Elements of the Moon's a Orbit and on the Earth's Rotation. ;

It would be impossible within the limits of the present article to Effects of discuss completely the effects of tidal friction ; we therefore confine tidal} ourselves to certain general considerations which throw light on friction. the nature of those effects. We have in the preceding sections supposed that the planet's axis is perpendicular to the orbit of the satellite, and that the latter is circular ; we shall now suppose the orbit to be oblique to the equator and eccentric, and shall also consider some of the effects of the solar perturbation of the moon- earth system. For the sake of brevity the planet will be called the earth, and the satellite the moon. The complete investigation was carried out on the hypothesis that the planet was a viscous spheroid, because this was the only theory of frictionally resisted tides which had been worked out. Although the results would be practically the same for any system of frictionally resisted tides, we shall Se below of the planet or earth as a viscous body.'

We shall show that if the tidal retardation be small the obliquity Obli- of the ecliptic increases, the earth's rotation is retarded, and the quity of moon's distance and periodic time are increased. Fig. 10 represents the the earth as seen from above the ecliptic south pole, so that S is the pole increases, and the outer circle the equator. The earth's rotation is in the direction of the curved arrow at S. The half of the inner circle /, f whieh & dciwn with » fil Base sama ee a semi-small-circle of south lati- tude, and the dotted semicircle is a semi-small-circle in the same north latitude. Generally dotted lines indicate parts of the figure which are below the plane of the Fic. 10. paper. It will make the explana- z tion somewhat simpler if we suppose the tides to be raised by a moon and anti-moon diametrically opposite to one

another. Let M and M’ be the projections of the moon and anti-moon on to the terrestrial sphere. Ifthe fluid in which the tides are raised were perfectly frictionless,> or if the earth were a perfect fluid or per- fectly elastic, the apices of the tidal spheroid would be at M and M’. If, however, there is internal friction, due to any sort of viscosity, the tides will lag, and we may suppose the tidal apices to be at T and T’. Now suppose the tidal protuberances to be replaced by two equal heavy particles at T and T’, which are in- stantaneously rigidly connected with the earth. Then the attrac- tion of the moon on T is greater than on T’, and that of the anti-moon on T’ is greater than on T. The resultant of these forces is clearly a pair of forces acting on the earth in the direction TM, T’M’. These forces clearly cause a couple about the axis in the equator, which lies in the same meridian as the moon and anti- moon. The direction of the couple is shown by the curved arrows at L,L’. If the effects of this couple be compounded with the existing rotation of the earth according to the principle of the gyroscope, the south pole S tends to approach M and the north pole to approach M’. Hence, supposing the moon to move in the ecliptic, the inclination of the earth’s axis to the ecliptic dimin-

‘ishes, or the obliquity increases. Next the forces TM, T’M’ clearly

produce, as in the simpler case considered above, a couple about the earth’s polar axis, which tends to retard the diurnal rotation.

This general explanation remains a fair representation of the state of the case so long as the different harmonic constituents of the aggregate tide-wave do not suffer very different amounts of re-

4 These explanations, together with other remarks, are to be found in the abstracts of Mr G. H. Darwin’s memoirs in Proc. Roy. Soc., 1878 to 1881. 5 We here suppose the tides not to be inverted. If they are inverted the conclusion is precisely the same. XXL — 48

TInelina- Suppose the motions of the planet and of its solitary satellite to : | trom | ; ‘ tion of — be Haterved to the invariable Tia of the system. The axis of | be some intermediate periodic time of the satellite for which the plane of resultant moment of momentum is normal to this plane, and the eccentricity does not tend tovary, = orbit component rotations are that of the

planet about its axis of figure But the preceding general explanation is in reality somewhat less generally and the orbital motion of the planet and satellite round their eom- | satisfaetory than it seems, _beeause it does not make clear the deereases. mon centre of inertia; the axis of this latter rotation is clearly the | existence of certain antagonistic influences, to which, however, we normal to the satellite’s orbit. Hence the normal to the orbit, the | shall not refer. The rigorous result, for. a viscous planet, shows axis of resnitant moment of momentum, and the planet’s axis that in. general the eccentricity of the orbit will increase ; but, if of rotation must always lie in one plane. From this it follows | the obliquity of the planet’s equator be nearly 90°, or if the viscosity that the orbit and the planet’s equator must necessarily have a | be so great as to approach perfect rigidity, or if the periodic time common node on the invariable plane. Ifcither of the component of the satellite (measured in rotations of the planet) be short, the rotations alters in amount or direction, a corresponding change eccentricity will slowly diminish. When the viscosity is small the must take place in the other, such as will keep the resultant | law of variation of eccentricity is very simple: if eleven periods moment of momentum constant in direction and magnitude. It | of the satellite occupy a longer time than eighteen rotations of the has been shown that the effeet of tidal friction is to increase the | planet, the eccentrieity increases, and vice versa. Henee in the distance of the satellite from the planet, and to transfer moment | case of small viscosity a circular orbit is only dynamically stable of momentum from that of planetary rotation to that of orbital if the eleven periods are shorter than the eighteen rotations. motion. If, then, the direction of the planet’s axis of rotation does not change, it follows that the ee to the lunar a must | X. CosMoGonic SPECULATIONS FOUNDED ON TIDAL FRICTION. approach the axis of resultant moment of momentum. y drawing : i othe of parallelograms on the same diameter and kecping one § 50. History of the ont and Moon. side constant in direction, this may be easily seen to be true. This We shall not attempt to discuss the mathematical methods by is equivalent to saying that the inclination of the satellite’s orbit | Which the complete history of a planet, attended by one or more will decrease. But this decrease of inclination does not always satellites, is to be traced. The laws indicated in the preceding neccssarily take place, for the previous investigations show that | sections show that there 18 such a problem, and that it may be another effect of tidal frietion may be to increase the

obliquity of solved, and we refer to Mr Darwin’s papers for details (Phil. Trans., the planet’s equator to the invariable plane, or, in other words, to | 1879-81). It may be interesting, however, to give the various increase the inclination of the planet’s axis to the axis of resultant results of the investigation 1 the form of a sketch of the possible moment of momentum. Now, if a parallelogram be drawn with evolution of the earth and moon, followed by remarks on the other a constant diameter, it is seen that by increasing the inclination planetary systems and on the solar system as a whole. alae ; of one of the sides to the diameter (and even decreasing its length) _We begin with a planet not very much more than 8000 miles in Conjec- the inclination of the other side to the diameter may also be in- | diameter, and probably partly solid, partly fluid, and partly gaseous. tural creased. The most favourable case for such a change is when the It is rotating about an axis inclined at about 11” or 12° to the nor- genesis of side whose inclination is increased is nearly as long as the diameter. | ™al to the ecliptic, with a period of from two to four hours, and is moon From this it follows that the inclination of the satellite’s orbit to the | Tevolving about the sun with a period not much shorter than our from invariable plane may increase, and that it is most likely to increase, | Present year. The rapidity of the planet’s rotation causes so great earth. when the moment of momentum of planetary rotation is large com- | compression of its figure that it cannot continue to exist In an

tardation ; and this is the case so long as the viscosity is not great. The rigorous result for a viscous planet shows that in general the obliquity will increase, and it appears that, with small viscosity of the planet, if the period of the satellite be longer than two periods of rotation of the planet, the obliquity increases, and vice versa. Henee zero obliquity is only dynamically stable when the period of the satellite is less than two periods of the planet’s rotation.

pared with that of the orbital motion. The analytical solution of the problem agrees with these results, for it shows that if the vis- cosity of the planet be small the inclination of the orbit always diminishes, but if the viscosity be large, and if the satellite moves with a short periodic time (as estimated in

rotations of the planet), the inclination of the orbit will increase. These results convey some idea of the physical causes which may have given rise to the present inclination of the lunar orbit to the ecliptic. For the analytical investigation shows that the inclination of the lunar orbit to a certain plane, which replaces the invariable plane when the solar attraction is introduced, was initially small, that it then

© tb hs

Then, when the satellite is in perigee, it is moving faster than the planet rotates, and when in apogee it is moving slower ; hence at apogee the tides lag, and at perigee they are aecelerated. Now the lagging apogean tides give rise to an accelerating force on the satellite, and increase the perigean distance, whilst the accelerated perigean tides give rise to a retarding force, and deerease the apogean distance. Henee in this ease the eccentrieity of the orbit will diminish, It follows from these two results that there must

ellipsoidal form with stability ; or else it is so nearly unstable that complete instability is induced by the solar tides. The planet then separates into two masses, the larger being the earth and the smaller the moon. It is not attempted to define the mode of separation, or to say whether the moon was initially a chain of meteorites. At any rate it must be assumed that the smaller mass beeame more or less conglomerated and finally fused into a spheroid, perhaps in consequence of impacts between its constituent mete- orites, which were once part of the primeval planet. Up to this point the history is largely speculative, for the conditions of insta- bility of a rotating mass of fluid have not yet been fully investigated.

increased to a maximum, and that it finally diminished and is still We now have the earth and moon nearly in contact with one Earth diminishing. another, and rotating nearly as though they were parts of one rigid and But the laws above referred to would, by themselves, afford a very body. This is the system which was the subject of dynamical moon unsatisfactory explanation of the inclination of the lunar orbit, be- investigation. As the two masses are not rigid, the attraction of subjeet cause the sun’s attraction is a matter of much importance. It has each distorts the other ; and, if they do not move rigorously with of inves- been found that, if the viscosity of the planet be small, the in- the same periodic time, each raises a tide in the

other. Also the tigation. clination of the orbit of the solitary satellite to the invariable plane | SU” raises tides in both. In consequence of the frictional resistance will always diminish ; but, when solar influence is introduced, the | these tidal motions, such a system 1s dynamically unstable. If corresponding statement is not true with regard to the inclination the moon had moved orbitally a little faster than the carth rotated, of the lunar orbit to the proper plane, for during one part of the she must have fallen back into the earth ; thus the existenee of moon’s history the inclination to the proper plane would have the moon compels us to believe that the equilibrium broke down increased even if the viscosity of the earth had been small. by the moon revolving orbitally a little slower than the earth Eecen- Consider a satellite revolving about a planet in an elliptic orbit, | Totates. In consequence of the tidal friction the periodic times both tricity of with a periodic time which is long compared with the period of rota- of the moon (or the month) and of the earth’s rotation (or the day) orbit tion of the planet ; and suppose that frictional tides are raised on | 12Crease ; but the month increases in length at a much greater generally the planet. The major axis of the tidal spheroid always points in rate than the day. At some early stage in the history of the system increases, advance of the satellite, and exereises on it a force which tends to | the moon was conglomerated into a spheroidal form, and acquired accelerate its linear velocity. When the satellite is in perigee the | 2 rotation about an axis nearly parallel to that of the earth. — tides are higher, and this disturbing force is greater than when the The axial rotation of the moon is retarded by the attraction of The satellite is in apogee. The disturbing force may therefore be repre- the earth on the tides raised in the moon, and this retardation takes moon. sented as a constant force, always tending to accelerate the motion place at a far greater rate than the similar retardation of the earth’s of the satellite, and as a periodic force which accelerates in perigee rotation. As soon as the moon rotates round her axis with twice and retards in apogee. The constant force causes a secular inerease’ the angular velocity with which she revolves in her orbit, the of the satellite’s mean distance and a retardation of its mean motion. | Position of her axis of rotation (parallel with the earth’s axis) The aceelerating force in perigee causes the satellite to swing out becomes dynamically unstable. The obliquity of the lunar equator further than it would otherwise have done, so that when it comes | t¢ the plane of the orbit increases, attains a maximum, and then round to apogee it is more remote

from the planet. The retarding diminishes. Meanwhile the lunar axial rotation is being reduced force in apogee acts exactly inversely, and diminishes the perigean towards identity with the orbital motion. Finally, her equator is distanee. Thus, the apogean distance increases and the perigean nearly coincident with the plane of the orbit, and the attraction of But i distance diminishes, or, in other words, the eccentricity of the orbit the earth on a tide, which degenerates into a permanent ellipticity may de-increases. Now consider another case, and suppose the satellite's 1 itici 7 ; erease. periodic time to be identical with that of fe Pareles rotation. youre ee ie SCA ER amen a eee

Pepi s

of the lunar equator, eauses her always to show the same face to

the earth. Theearth All this must have taken place early in the history of the earth, andlunar to which we now return. As the month increases in length the orbit. lunar orbit becomes eccentric, and the eccentricity reaches a maximum when the month occupies about a rotation and a half of the earth. The maximum of eccentricity is probably not large. After this the eccentricity diminishes. The plane of the lunar orbit is at first practically identical with the earth's equator, but as the moon recedes from the earth the sun's attraction begins to make itself felt. We must therefore introduce the eonception of two ideal planes (here called the proper planes), to which the motion of the carth and moon must be referred. The lunar proper plane is at first inclined at a very small angle to the earth's proper plane, and the orbit and equator coincide with their respective proper planes. As soon as the earth rotates with twice the angular velocity with which the moon revolves in her orbit, a new instability sets in, The month is then about twelve of our present hours, and the day about six such hours in length. The inclinations of the lunar orbit and of the equator to their respective proper planes increase. That of the lunar orbit to its proper plane increases to a maximum of 6° or 7°, and ever after diminishes, that of the equator to its proper plane increases to a maximum of about 9° 45', and ever after diminishes. The maximum inclination of the lunar orbit to its proper plane takes place when the day is a little less than nine of our present hours, and the month a little less than six of our present days. The maximum inclination of the equator to

its proper plane takes place earlier than this. Whilst these changes have been going on the proper planes have been themselves changing in their positions relatively to one another and to the eeliptic. At first they were nearly coincident with one another and with the earth's equator, but they then open out, and the inclination of the lunar proper plane to the ecliptie continually diminishes, whilst that of the terrestrial proper plane continually increases. At some stage the earth became more rigid, and oceans were formed, so that oceanic tidal friction ey came to play a more important part than bodily tidal riction. If this be the case, the eccentricity of the orbit, after passing through a stationary phase, begins to increase again. We have now traced the system to a state in which the day and month are increasing, but at unequal rates, the inclination of the lunar proper plane to the ecliptic and of the orbit to the proper plane are diminishing, the inclination of the terrestrial proper plane to the ecliptic is increasing and of the equator to its proper plane is diminishing, and the eccentricity of the orbit is increasing. No new phase now supervenes and at length we have the system in its present configuration. The minimum time in which the changes from first to last can have taken place is 54,000,000 years. There are other collateral results which must arise from a sup- posed primitive viscosity or plasticity of the earth's mass, For during this course of evolution the earth's mass must have suffered a screwing motion, so that the polar regions have travelled a little from west to east relatively to the equator. This affords a possible explanation of the north and south trend of our great eontinents. Also a large amount of heat has been generated by friction deep down in the earth; and some very small part of the observed in- ercase of temperature in underground borings may be attributable to this cause. The preceding history might vary a little in detail according to the degree of viscosity which we attribute to the earth's mass, and according as oeeanie tidal friction is or is not, now and in the more recent past, a more powerful cause of change than bodily tidal friction. The argument reposes on the imperfect rigidity of solids and on the internal friction of semi-solids and fluids ; these are vere cause. Thus changes of the kind here dis- theory cussed must be going on, and must have gone onin the past. And postu- for this history of the earth and moon to be true throughout, it is lates suf- only necessary to postulate a sufficient lapse of time, and that there ficient is not enough matter diffused through space to materially resist lapse of the motions of the moon and earth in perhaps 200,000,000 years. time. It seems hardly too

much to say that, granting these two postu- lates, and the existence of a primeval planet, such as that above described, a system would necessarily be developed which would bear astrong resemblance to ourown. A theory, reposing on vere cause, which brings into quantitative correlation the lengths of the present day and month, the obliquity of the ecliptic, and the inclination and eccentricity of the lunar orbit should have claims to acceptance.

§ 51. The Other Planetary Subsystems.

Other If this has been the evolution of the earth and moon, a similar planet- process must have been going on elsewhere. So far we have only ary sub- considered a single satellite and the sun, but the theory may of systems. course be extended, with modifications, to planets attended by several satellites. We will now, thercfore, consider some of the other members of the solar system. A large planet has much more energy of rotation to be destroyed, and moment of momentum to be redistributed, than a small one, and therefore a large planet ought to proceed in its evolution more slowly than a sinall one.

Distor- tion of plastic planet.

The

Therefore we ought to find the larger planets less advanced than the smaller ones. The masses of such of the planets as have satel- lites are, in terms of the earth’s mass, as follows :—Mars=4; Jupiter=340 ; Saturn=100; Uranus=17 ; Neptune=20.

Mars should therefore be furthest advanced in its evolution, and Mars. it is here alone in the whole system that we find a satellite moving orbitally faster than the planet rotatcs. This will also be the ultimate fate of our moon, because, after its orbital motion has been reduced to identity with that of the earth’s rotation, solar tidal friction will further reduce the carth’s angular velocity ; the tidal reaction on the moon will then be reversed, and the moon’s orbital velocity will increase and her distance from the earth

diminish. But, since the moon’s mass is very large, she must recede to an enormous distance from the earth before this reversal takes place. Now the satellites of Mars are very small, and therefore they need only recede a very short distance from the planet before the reversal of tidal reaction. The periodic time of the satellite Deimos is 30h 18™, and, as the period of rotation of Mars is 245 37™, Deimos must be still receding from Mars, but very slowly. The periodic time of the satellite Phobos is 7h 39™; therefore it must be approaching Mars. It does not seem likely that it has ever been remote from the planet.!_ The eccentricities of the orbits of both satellites are small: that of Deimos is 0057 and that of Phobos ‘0066. If the viscosity of the planet be small, or if oceanic tidal friction be the principal cause of change, both eccentricities are diminishing ; but, if the viscosity be large, both are increasing. As we have no means of knowing whether the eccentricities are increasing or diminishing, the larger eccentricity of the orbit of Phobos eannot be a fact of much importance either for or against the present views. But it must be admitted that it is a slightly unfavourable indieation. The position of the proper plane of a satellite is determined by the periodic time of the satellite, the oblateness of the planet, and the sun’s distance. The inclination of the orbit of a satellite to the proper plane is not determined by anything in the system. Hence it is only the inclination of the orbit which ean afford any argument for or against the theory. The proper planes of both satellites are necessarily nearly eoincident with the equator of the planet; but it is in accordance with the theory that the inclinations of the orbits to their respective proper planes should be small. Any change in the obliquity of the equator of Mars to the plane of his orbit must be entirely due to solar tides. The present obliquity is about 30°, and this points also to an advanced stage of evolution, at least if the axis of the planet was primitively at all nearly per- pendicular to the ecliptie.

We now come to the system of Jupiter. This enormous planet Jupiter. is still rotating in about ten hours; its axis is nearly perpendicular to the ecliptic ; and three of its satellites revolve in seven days or less, whilst the fourth has a period of 164 165, This system is obviously far less advanced than our own. The inclinations of the proper plancs to Jupiter’s equator are neccssarily small, but the inclinations of the orbits to the proper planes appear to be very interesting from a theoretical point of view. They are in the case of the first satellite 0° 0’ 0”, in the case of the second 0° 27’ 50”, in

that of the third 0° 12’ 20”, and in that of the fourth 0° 14’ 58”. We have shown above that the orbit of a satellite is first coincident with its proper plane, and that the inclination afterwards rises to a maximum and finally declines. If then we may assume, as seems reasonable, that the satellites are in stages of evolution corresponding to their distances from the planet, these inclinations aceord well with the theory. The eccentricities of the orbits of the two inner satellites are insensible, those of the outer two small. This does not tell strongly either for or against the theory, because the history of the eccentricity depends eonsiderably on the nature of the friction to which the tides are subject. Yet it on the whole agrees with the theory that the eccentricity should be greatcr in the more remote satellites. It appears that the satel- lites of Jupiter always present the same face to the planet, just as does our moon. This was to be expected.

The case of Saturn is not altogether so favourable to the theory. Saturn. The extremely rapid rotation, the ring, and the short periodic time of the inner satellites point to an early stage of development; whilst the longer periodic time of the three outer satellites and the high obliquity of the equator indicate a later stage. Perhaps both views may be more or less eorrect, for successive shedding of satellites would impart a modern appearance to the system. It has probably been previously remarked that the Saturnian system bears a strong analogy to the solar system, Titan being analogous to Jupiter, Hyperion and Japetus to Uranus and Neptune, and the inner satel- lites to the inner planets. Thus anything which aids us in forming a theory of the one system will throw light on the other. The details of the Saturnian system seem to be more or less favourable to the theory. The proper planes of the orbits (except that of Iapetus) are nearly in the plane of the ring, and the inclinations of all the orbits thereto appear not to be large. As the result of

1 Mr Nolan considers the theory inapplicable to the case of Mars ; see Nature, 29th July 1886.

a careful series of observations made at Washington in 1873, Prof. Asaph Hall! finds that the eccentricities of the orbits of Mimas, Enceladus, Tethys,

Dione, and Rhea are insensible, that of Titan is 0284, of Hyperion ‘1000, and that of Iapetus 0278. The satel- lite Iapetus appcars always to present the same face to the planet.

Concerning Uranus and Neptune there is not much to be said, as their systems are very little known ; but their masses are much

Neptune. larger than that of the earth, and their satellites revolve with a

Solar system as a whole.

Planet- ary sub- systems.

Distribu- tion of satellites amongst the planets,

The retrograde motion and_high inclination

short periodic time. The theory of the

of the satellites of Uranus are very remarkable.

inclination of the orbit has been based on an assumed smallness of

inclination, and it is not very easy to see to what results investi- gation might lead if the inclination were large. It must be ad- mitted, however, that the Uranian system points to the probability of the existence of a primitive planet, with retrograde rotation, or at least with a very large obliquity of equator.

It appears from this review that the other members of the solar system present some phenomena which are strikingly favourable to the tidal theory of evolution, and none which are absolutely con- demnatory. We shall show in the following section that there are reasons why the tidal friction arising in the planetary systems cannot have had so much effect as in the case of the earth and moon. That the indications which we have just noted were not more marked, but yet seemed to exist, agrees well with this conclusion.

§ 52. Influence of Tidal Friction on the Evolution of the Solar System.

According to the nebular hypothesis, the planets and the satcllites are portions detached from contracting nebulous masses. In the following discussion that hypothesis will be accepted in its main outline, and we shall examine what modifications are necessitated by the influence of tidal friction. It may be shown that the reaction of the tides raised in the sun by the planets must have had a very small influence in changing the dimensions of the

lanetary orbits round thesun. Froma consideration of numerical nega with regard to the solar system and the planetary subsystems, it appears improbable that the planetary orbits have been sensibly enlarged by tidal friction since the origin of the several planets. But it is possible that some very small part of the eccentricities of the planetary orbits is due to this cause. From arguments similar to those advanced with regard to the solar system as a whole, it appears unlikely that the satellites of Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn originated very much nearer the present surfaces of the planets than we now observe them. But, the data being insufficient, we cannot feel sure that the alteration in the dimensions of the orbits of these satcllites has not been considerable. It remains, however, nearly certain that they cannot have first originated almost in con- tact with the present surfaces of the planets, in the same way as in the preceding sketch (§ 50) has been shown to be probable with regard to the moon and earth. Numerical data concerning the distribution of moment of momentum in the several planetary sub-systems exhibit so striking a difference between the terres- trial system and those of the other planets that we should from this alone have grounds for believing that the modes of evolution have been considerably different. The difference appears to lie in the genesis of the moon close to the present surface of the planet, and we shall see below that solar tidal friction may be as- signed as a reason to explain how it has happened that the terres- trial planet had contracted to nearly its present dimensions before the genesis of a satellite, but that this was not the case with the exterior planets. The efficiency of solar tidal friction is very much greater in its action on the nearer planets than on the further ones. The time, however, during which solar tidal friction has been operating on the external planets is probably much longer than the period of its efficiency for the interior ones, and a series of numbers proportional to the total amount of rotation destroyed in the several planets would present afar less rapid

decrease as we recede from the sun than numbers simply expressive of the efficiency of tidal friction at the several planets. Nevertheless it must be admitted that the effect produced by solar tidal friction on Jupiter and Saturn has not been nearly so great as on the interior planets. And, as already stated, it is very improbable that so large an amount of momentum should have been destroyed as to materially affect the orbits of the planets round the sun.

We will now examine how the differences of distance from the sun would be likely to affect the histories of the several planetary masses. According to the nebular hypothesis, a planetary nebula contracts, and rotates quicker as it contracts. The rapidity of the revolution causes it to become unstable, or perhaps an equatorial belt gradually detaches itself ; it is immaterial which of these two really takes place. In either case the separation of that part of the mass which before the change had the greatest angular momentum permits the central portion to resume a planetary shape. The contraction and the increase of rotation proceed continually until another portion is detached, and so ou. There thus recur at inter- vals a series of epochs of instability or of abnormal change. Now

1 See Brit. Assoc. Report, 1886, p. 543.

tidal friction must diminish the rate of increase of rotation due to contraction, and therefore if tidal friction and contraction are at

work together the epochs of instability must recur more rarely

than if contraction alone acted. If the tidal retardation is suffi- ciently great, the increase of rotation due to contraction will be so

far counteracted as never to permit an epoch of instability to occur.

Since the rate of retardation due to solar tidal friction decreases rapidly as we reccde from the sun, these considerations accord with

what we observe in the solar system. For Mercury and Venus

have no satellites, and there is a progressive increase in the number

of satellites as we recede from the sun. Moreover, the number of | satellites is not directly connected with the mass of the planet, for Venus has nearly the same mass as. the earth and has no satellite,

and the earth has relatively by far the largest satellite of the whole system. Whether this be the true cause of the observed distribu-

tion of satellites amongst the planets or not, it is remarkable that

the same cause also affords an explanation, as we shall now show,

of that difference between the earth with the moon and the other planets with their satellites which has caused tidal friction to be

the priucipal agent of change with the former but not with the Case of latter. In the case of the contracting terrestrial mass we may earth and suppose that there was for a long time nearly a balance between moon the retardation due to solar tidal friction and the acceleration different due to contraction, and that it was not until the planetary mass from had contracted to nearly its prescnt dimensions that an epoch others, of instability could occur. It may also be noted that if there be

two equal planetary masses which generate satellites, but under

very different conditions as to the degree of condensation of the masses, the two satellites will be likely to differ in mass; we caunot of course tell which of the two planets would generate the

larger satellite. Thus, if the genesis of the moon was deferred

until a late epoch in the history of the terrestrial mass, the

mass of the moon relatively to the earth would be likely to differ

from the mass of other satellites relatively to their planets. If

the contraction of the planetary mass be almost completed before

the genesis of the satellite, tidal friction, due jointly to the satellite

and to the sun, will thereafter be the great cause of change in the system ; and thus the hypothesis that it is the sole cause of change

will give an approximately accurate explanation of the motion of

the planet and satellite at any subsequent time. We have already

seen that the theory that tidal friction has been the ruling power

in the evolution of the earth and moon coordinates the present motions of the two bodies and carries us back to an initial state

when the moon first had a separate existence as a satellite; and the initial configuration of the two bodies is such that we are led to believe that the moon is a portion of the primitive earth detached

by rapid rotation or other causes. There seems to be some reason

to suppose that the earliest form in which the moon had a separate existence was as a ring or chain of meteorites ; but this condition precedes that to which the dynamical investigation leads back.

Let us now turn to the other planetary sub-systems. The satcllites of the larger planets revolve with short periodic times ; this admits of a simple explanation, for the smallness of their masses would have prevented tidal friction from being a very efficient cause of change in the dimensions of their orbits, and the largeness of the planet's masses would have caused them to proceed slowly in their evolution. Ifthe planets be formed from chains of meteorites or of nebulous matter, their rotation has arisen from the excess of orbital momentum of the exterior over that of the interior matter.

As we have no means of knowing how broad the chain may have

been in any case, nor how much it may have closed in on the sun

in course of concentration, we are unable to compute the primitive angular momentum ofa planet. A rigorous method of comparison

of the primitive rotations of the several planets is thus wanting.

If, however, the planets were formed under similar conditions, then

we should expect to find the exterior planets now rotating more rapidly than the interior ones. On making allowance for the differ-

ent degrees of concentration of the planets, this is the case. That

the inner satellite of Mars revolves with a period of less than a third of the planet's rotation is perhaps the most remarkable fact Satel- in the solar system. The theory of tidal friction explains this lites of perfectly ; and this will be the ultimate fate of all satellites, be- Mars. cause the solar tidal friction retards the planetary rotation without directly affecting the satellite's orbital motion. Numerical com- parison shows that the efficiency of solar tidal friction in retarding

the terrestrial and martian rotations is of about the same degree

of importance, notwithstanding the much greater distance of the planet Mars. In the above discussion it will have been apparent

that the earth and moon do actually differ from the other planets

to such an extent as to permit tidal friction to have been the most important factor in their history.

By an examination of the probable effects of solar tidal friction Sum- on a contracting planetary mass, we have been led to assign a mary. cause for the observed distribution of satellites in the solar system, and this again has itself afforded an explanation of how it happencd that the moon so originated that the tidal friction of the lunar tides in the earth should have been able to exercise so large an

influence. We have endeavoured not only to set forth the in- fluence which tidal friction may have, and probably has, had in the history of the system,

if sufficient time be granted, but also to point out what effects it cannot have produced. These investi-

Jol

paramount importance in determining the present condition of the planets and their satellites. Throughout the whole of this dis- cussion it has been supposed that sufficient time is at our dis- posal ; Sir W. Thomson and others have, however, adduced reason-

gations afford no grounds for the rejection of the nebular hypo- | ing which goes to show that the history of the solar system must Limita- thesis; but, while they present evidence in favour of the main | be comprised within a period considerably less than a hundred tion of outlines of that theory, they introduce modifications of consider- | million years.' It would perhaps be premature to accept this as time.

:

able importance. 'Tidal friction is a cause of change of which Laplace's theory took no account; and, although the activity of that cause may be regarded as mainly belonging to a later period

'than the events described in the nebular hypothesis, yet it seems

that its influence has been of great, and in one instance of even

TABLE OF Cuap. 1.—On THe Nature oF Tipes. | § 15. Semi-diurnal tide with variable §1. Definition of tide. depth, ; ; ; § 2. General description of tidal pheno- | § 16. oe tide with uniform mena. aepth. ; : § 3. General explanation of the cause | $17. Tides of long period; Laplace's of tides. argument from friction. § 4. Historical sketch. § 18. Tides of long period in an ocean

of uniform depth. Cuap. II.—TipE-GENERATING FORCES. | § 19. Stability of the ocean. § 5. Investigation of tide-generating | § 20. Precession and nutation. potential and forces. §21. Some phenomena of

tides in § 6. Form of equilibrium. ; rivers. § 7. Development of tide-generating Cap, IV.—Harmonic ANALYSIS.

otential in terms of hour-angle Lig declination. 6 § 22. Methods of applying theory to practice.

8. Evaluation of tide-generating forces ives : and lunar cette of aay, § 23. Development of equilibrium § 9. Correction to equilibrium theory theory of tides in terms of the for continents.. elements of the orbits. § 24. Meteorological tides, over-tides, Cuap. III.—Dynamicat THEORY OF and compound tides. TIDES. § 25. On the form of presentation of re- § 10. Historical explanation. sults of tidal observation. § 11. Equations of motion. § 26. Numerical harmonic analysis for § 12. Adaptation to forced oscillations. tides of short period. § 18. Preparation for solution. § 27. Harmonic analysis for tides of § 14. Diurnal tide. long period.

the final and definite conclusion of science. If, however, it be con- firmed, we shall only be permitted to accept the doctrine that tidal friction has effected considerable modification in the configuration of the moon and earth, and must reject the earlier portion of the

history sketched above.

ConTENTS.

Crap. V.—SyNnrHETIC METHOD.

§ 28. On the method and notation.

§ 29. Semi-diurnal tides.

§ 30. Synthesis of solar and of lunar portions of the semi-diurnal tide.

§ 31. Synthesis of lunar and solar semi- diurnal tides.

§ 32. Diurnal tides.

§ 33. Explanation of tidal terms in common use ; datum levels.

§ 34. On reduction of observations of high and low water.

Cuap. VI.—Tipat INSTRUMENTS AND TIDAL PREDICTION.

§ 35. General remarks.

§ 86. The tide gauge.

§ 37. The harmonic analyser.

§ 38. The tide-predicting instrument.

§ 39. Numerical harmonic analysis and

prediction.

Cuap. VII.—PRoGRESS OF THE TIDE WAVE OVER THE SEA AND THE TIDES OF THE BRITISH SEAs.

(G. H. D.)

§ 41. Cotidal lines of the world. .

§ 42. Cotidal lines of the British seas. Cuap. VIII.—TipaL DEFORMATION OF THE SoLID EARTH.

§ 43. Elastic tides. § 44. Rigidity of the earth. § 45. Viscous and _ elastico – viscous tides. CuaP..IX.—Tipat FRiction. § 46. General explanation.

‘§ 47. Exact investigation of the secular

effects of tidal friction.

§ 48. Amount of tidal retardation of earth’s rotation.

§ 49. Effects of tidal friction on the elements of the moon’s orbit and on the earth’s rotation.

CHap, X.—CosmMoGonic SPECULATIONS FOUNDED ON TIDAL FRICTION.. § 50. History of the earth and moon. § 51. The otler planetary sub-systems. § 52. Influence of tidal friction on the evolution of the solar system.

§ 40. Meaning of cotidal lines.

TIDOR, or Trporg, an island (0° 39’ N. lat. and 127° 23’ E. long.) of the East Indian Archipelago, off the west coast of JiLoxo (g.v.) and south of Ternate, is nearly cir- cular in form, and has an area of about 58 square miles. A volcano (5900 feet), now quiescent, rises in the centre and occupies nearly the whole of the island ; its sides are densely covered with forests. The principal productions are sago, rice, cocoa-nuts, and bananas. The capital, Tidor, on the east coast, is a walled town and the seat of a sultan tributary to the Dutch. The population is estimated at 7500. Tidor, which is included in the residency of Ter- nate, is administered by a ‘‘controleur.”

TIECK, Lupwie (1773-1853), the most conspicuous figure of the German romantic school of literature, was born at Berlin on 31st May 1773. His father, a rope- maker, was dry, sarcastic, and matter-of-fact; his mother, gentle and pious, with a leaning to mysticism. Tieck par- took of both characteristics: half his work and half his genius seem a sceptical commentary on the other half. He emancipated himself from the prosaic influence of his father’s house by a passionate study of Shakespeare. After a brilliant career at school he repaired in 1792 to the university at Halle, and, returning to Berlin in 1794, devoted himself to authorship, in which he had already made experiments. As is so commonly the case with young writers of genius, his first tales (Abdallah, William Lovell) partook too largely of the melodramatic, and have little permanent value. But the romantic school of Germany, a movement comparable to the Lake school of England, was already in the air, and Tieck was deeply sensitive to its influence. He was strongly fascinated by two of its aspects in particular—the reaction in favour of German medizval art and the revived interest in fairy tales and

folk-lore in general. Inspired by his friend Wackenroder, a youth of pious ardour and most pious simplicity, he wrote his unfortunately unfinished romance Sternbald's Travels, a very gospel for the artist, at once the comple- ment and the antitype of Wilhelm Meister. His studies in popular literature resulted in the entertaining adaptation

of Blue Beard entitled Peter Lebrecht and several kindred works. Fair Eckbert, his masterpiece, and the master- piece of all romantic fiction, came to him, he said, by inspiration. He may well be believed: no artifice could have created the pervading sensation of dreamy solitude or the intense thrill of the catastrophe. The happy idea of dramatizing popular legend led to the production of a greatly improved Blue Beard, and subsequently of Puss in Boots, a satire on Kotzebue and Iffland, such an alliance of broad humour and dainty irony as we might expect to find in the lost Middle Comedy of Athens.

It might almost have been better if Tieck had con- tinued to walk in his own way. His was a susceptible nature, too sensitive for perfect independence. In 1798 he made the acquaintance of the Schlegels, and was drawn into their circle. Novalis, undoubtedly the greatest genius of the romantic school, was for a time a compensation to him for the death of Wackenroder, whose essays on art he edited with additions of his own. But Novalis himself soon died, and the influence of the Schlegel circle, with its bickerings and its "chopping and changing of ribs," was not wholly salutary either in a moral or a literary point of view. August Schlegel inspired Tieck with a passion for the Spanish drama. He also spent much time on a translation of Don Quixote, certainly a masterpiece, and rendered Ben Jonson's Silent Woman, having previously adapted Volpone. One important production of his own nevertheless belongs to this period, the romantic drama of Genoveva, enthusiastically admired by so clear-headed and impartial a judge as Bishop Thirlwall. He also pro- duced his delightful miniature drama of Lzttle Red Riding Hood, and was working with great spirit on The Emperor Octavian when he was suddenly attacked by rheumatic gout, which tormented him more or less for the remainder of his life. Between pain and unpleasant literary disputes his activity was long greatly impeded. 'The narrowness of his means also troubled him. He had married the

1 Thomson and Tait’s Nat. Phil., App. E; Nature, 27th January 1887 ; Wolf, Théories Cosmogoniques, 1886.

daughter of Pastor Alberti, and, although he was an ami-

able man and nothing is alleged against his wife, his

household does not seem to have been entirely comfort- able. He lived alternately in Jena, Berlin, and Dresden, where he became very intimate with Steffens, and wrote his powerful but dismal tale, Zhe Runenberg. The Emperor Octavian was completed in 1804, with less success than had been hoped. In the following year Tieck repaired to Italy, nominally to visit the baths of Pisa; but he made this medical injunction the plea for a long stay in the country. The effect of Italian scenery, plastic art, and new impressions in general was to wean him from much of the mysticism in which he had hitherto indulged, and to direct him to the criticism of life. The transition to his new manner is indicated by the additions to his former tales and dramas, which, after several years spent In wan- dering and in sickness, he published in 1812. The Elves, The Philtre, and The Goblet are tales, distinguished, the last two more especially, by brilliant colouring and elabo- rate art. ortunatus, a drama in two parts, added in 1816, wants the spirit of its predecessors, but is pervaded by a quiet sarcastic humour exceedingly enjoyable. Plays and stories were set in a framework of esthetic conversa- tion, and the entire collection was entitled Phantasus. By this publication Tieck settled accounts with the romantic school, and could no more be regarded as its leader. Tieck’s power of original composition failed him for some years. He devoted himself especially to antiquarian and dramatic studies. In pursuance of the latter he visited England, saw Kemble and Kean on the stage, and renewed acquaintance with Coleridge, whom he had known in Italy. The friendship of Solger was highly important to him, and helped him to the clear definite principles of composition and. criticism in which he had previously been deficient. The period of reflexion gradually worked itself into a period of productiveness, beginning with his charming novelette of Zhe Pictures, translated by Thirlwall. It was followed by a series of similar works extending over nearly twenty years, very unequal in value, but in their best examples belonging to a very high class of art. Their

great peculiarity is the blending of narrative with disquisition and comment, so thoughtful and ingenious that, interest- ing as the action commonly is, the interruption is not resented. They have usually a strongly marked ironical element, as though the writer were only half in earnest, a self-criticism of which a great creative genius would have been incapable, but which bestows unusual piquancy on productions of the second order. Zhe Pictures, already mentioned, is a fine instance of the masterly conduct of a story, and contains a very original figure, the shrewd, sottish, graceless old painter Eulenbéck, who, with talent enough to have made a name and a fortune, gains a pre- carious livelihood by forging old masters. Zhe Betrothal, also translated by Thirlwall, is a severe satire on hypo- critical pietism. Among the best of the other novelettes in this style may be mentioned Zhe TZ'ravellers, one of the most perfect specimens of the author's irony; Luck brings Brains, a fine study of the power of a weak charac- ter to rise to its opportunities when elevated by a sense of responsibility ; and Zhe Superfluities of Life, an anecdote delightfully told. Zhe Old Book and The Scarecrow, two of the most fantastically imaginative, resolve themselves into literary satire. The motive of the latter was bor- rowed by Hawthorne in his Mother Rigby's Pipe. Of fictions with an historical basis, the most popular are those derived from the lives of poets—A Poet's Life, of which Shakespeare is the hero, and A Poet's Death, relating the sad history of Camoens. he Revolt in the Cevennes is an historical romance of considerable compass; but Tieck's masterpiece in this department is his Witches' Sabbath, a

tale almost unparalleled in literature for its delineation of heart-breaking, hopeless misery. Zhe Young Carpenter (1836, but commenced much earlier) can hardly be as- signed to any of these classes. It has a strong affinity to Wilhelm Meister, and may be compared with Sternbald, both for its resemblance and its contrast. Finally, in Vittoria Accorambona (1840) Tieck takes yet another new departure, indicating affinities with the modern French school of fiction. The novel has been translated into English, but is probably best known to English readers by Mrs Carlyle's half-earnest half-mocking admiration of the hero Bracciano, a Blue Beard on the highest

principles, and her wish that she could have lived two hundred years before, ‘‘to have been—his mistress, not his wife.”

These novels were all written at Dresden, where Tieck had settled in 1819. He enjoyed especial favour at court, took an active part in the direction of the royal theatre, and gained a new description of celebrity by his semi-public readings from dramatic poets in the court circle. According to the almost unanimous testimony of his hearers, he was the finest dramatic reader of hisage. His daughter Dorothea, who united her father’s literary talent to her grandmother’s mystic piety, was of great assistance to him, especially in the translation of Shakespeare which passes under his name. Schlegel had translated seventeen plays. Tieck had undertaken to translate the remainder, and it has been generally supposed that he kept his word. In fact the translation was almost entirely executed by Dorothea Tieck and Count Wolf Baudissin, Tieck contributing hardly anything but his advice and his name. The truth slips out quite innocently in the pages of his biographer K6pke, and is fully told by Gustav Freytag (Jm Neuen eich, January 1880). During his residence at Dresden he collected his critical writings, produced his excellent translation of the English dramatists anterior to Shakes- peare, and edited the works of Novalis, Kleist, Lenz, and other contemporaries. In 1842 he accepted the invitation of Frederick William IV. to settle in Berlin, where he had already been to conduct the representation of the Antigone with Mendelssohn’s music. He found himself but little in his element in the city of his birth, and the dramatic representations directed by him, including revivals of some of his own plays, were rarely successful. In 1851 his health failed entirely, and he withdrew altogether from the world. He died on 28th April 1853.

Though not a writer of the highest rank, Tieck is nevertheless a most original genius, very unjustly neglected by his countrymen. The best of his compositions in the taste of the romantic school are absolute masterpieces; and his later productions, if imperfect, oceupy @ unique position in literature. He may be compared to Wieland, whom he decidedly surpasses, and to Ariosto, whom he would have more than rivalled if he had been capable of a great sustained effort. His susceptibility and self-distrust checked his genius, but at the same time gave it that peculiar ironic flavour which constitutes its special distinction. He is like an exquisite side dish,

not sufficiently substantial for a full meal. The attempts to extract a moral significance from the stories in Phantasus seem entirely thrown away; the purpose of his later writings, when there is any, is always definite. Perhaps the soundest criticism upon him, at bottom, is Heine's in his Romantic School, though

written at a time when it was his cue to show the works of that school as little quarter as possible. Carlyle's criticism is cxcellent, but only refers to the Phantasus.

The principal contribution to Tieck's biography is the delightful book of Rudolf Képke (Leipsic, 1855), chiefly drawn from his oral communieations and containing his opinions on a number of subjects. Particulars of his residence at Dresden, more especially of his con- nexion with the theatre, are given in the memoirs of Friesen (Weimar, 1871). Tales from Phantasus have been translated in Carlyle's Speciinens of German Romance, and are reprinted in his miseellanies. A greatly inferior version, in some places unscrupu- lously altered from Carlyle, was published in 1845 with an elaborate preface signed by J. A. F., who does not, however, appear to have been the translator. Several of Tieek's other works have been translated into English, but the only remarkable rendering is Bishop Thirlwall's of The Pictures and The Betrothal. A com-

Trey; pf 383

plete chronological list of his writings is appended to Képke's work. (R. G

TIEDEMANN, Friepricu (1781-1861), German anato- mist and physiologist, the son of a philosopher and psychologist of considerable repute, was born at Cassel on 23d August 1781. He graduated in medicine at Marburg in 1804, but soon abandoned practice owing to disappoint- ment at his failure to check his father's last illness. Re- pelled on the one hand by the brilliant but unsubstantial discourses of Schelling on the ‘‘ Naturphilosophie,” and attracted on the other hand by the practical skill and in- telligence of the surgical anatomist S6mmering, he returned to the study of natural science. He betook himself to Paris, and became an ardent follower of Cuvier. On his return to Germany he maintained the claims of patient and sober anatomical research against the prevalent specu- lations of

the school of Oken (see OKEN and MorpPHo.oey), whose foremost antagonist he was long reckoned. His manifold labours in the field of Cuvierian anatomy cannot be recorded here; but his remarkable studies of the de- velopment of the human brain, as correlated with his father's studies on the development of intelligence, may be mentioned. He spent most of his life (from 1816) as professor of anatomy and physiology at Heidelberg, and died at Munich on 22d January 1861.

TIENTSIN is the largest commercial city in Chih-li, the metropolitan province of China. It is situated in 39° 7' N. lat. and 117° 11' E. long., at the junction of the Peiho and the Wan-ho, which is connected by the Grand Canal with the Yang-tsze-kiang. It is a prefectural city, and the residence of the viceroy of the province during a great portion of the year. The town is built on a vast alluvial plain, which extends from the mountains beyond Peking to the sea, and through which the Peiho runs a circuitous course, making the distance by water from Tientsin to the coast about 70 miles, as against 35 miles by road. The soil of the surrounding country being strongly impregnated with soda and nitre is not fertile, but produces sorghum and other coarse grains. The city walls are well built, though not always kept in good order, and measure about three quarters of a mile each way. As in all Chinese cities, the more wealthy inhabitants live in the suburbs, but even their houses have a mean appear- ance, being built mainly of mud or dried bricks. The streets are for the most part unpaved, and in wet weather are little better than quagmires. Some improvements have, however, been made in this respect of late. The city has always been a great commercial depot. In 1885 the foreign imports amounted to £3,226,972 and the ex- ports to £980,852, and 375 foreign vessels of 279,829 tons visited the port, tea to the value of about £904,496 being landed for carriage overland, via Kalgan and Kiachta, to Siberia. During the winter the river is frozen, so that communication has to be carried on overland to Chin-kiang on the Yang-tsze-kiang, to which point also a line of tele- graph (now extended to Peking) was opened in 1881. The principal articles of import are shirtings, drills, T-cloths, jeans and twills, opium, woollens, steel, lead, needles, Japanese sea-weed, and sugar; and of export, skins, beans and pease, straw braid, coal, dates, wool, tobacco, and rhubarb. The coal exported is brought from the Kaiping colliery to the east of T'lentsin; its output in 1885 was

181,039 tons, 54,976 tons more than in 1884. An ex- perimental railway nearly two miles long has lately been constructed at T'ientsin.

In 1853 T'ientsin was besieged by an army of Taiping rebels, which had been detached from the main force at Nanking for the capture of Pcking. The defences of T'ientsin, however, saved the capital, and the rebels were forced to retreat. Five years later Lord

Elgin, accompanied by the representative of France, steamed up the Petho, after having forced the barriers at Taku, and took peaceable

possession of the town. Herc the treaty of 1858 was signed. Two years later, in consequence of the treacherous attack made on the English plenipotentiary the preceding year at Taku, the city and suburbs were occupied by an allied English and French force, and were held for two years. The city was constituted an open port. On the establishment of Roman Catholic orphanages some years later the pretensions of the priests so irritated the people that on the occurrence of an epidemic in the schools they attacked the French and Russian establishments and murdered twenty of the foreign inmates, besides numbers of their native followers. The Chinese Government at once suppressed the riot, and sent a repre- sentative to Europe to apologize for the outbreak.

TIERNEY, Georce (1761-1830), an English Whig politician, was born at Gibraltar on 20th March 1761, being the son of a wealthy merchant resident in Spain. He was sent to Peterhouse, Cambridge, where he took the degree of LL.D. in 1784, and was called to the bar; but, having inherited an ample fortune, he abandoned law and plunged into politics. He contested Colchester in 1788, when both candidates received the same number of votes, but Tierney was declared elected. He was, however, de- feated in 1790. He sat for Southwark from 1796 to 1806, and then represented in turn Athlone (1806-7), Bandon (1807-12), Appleby (1812-18), and Knaresborough (1818- 30). When Fox seceded from the House of Commons, Tierney became a prominent, if not the leading, opponent of Pitt's policy. It was perhaps for this reason that he was disliked by Fox. In 1797—such was the height of political passion at this epoch—Wilberforce noted in his diary that Tierney's conduct was "truly Jacobinical"; and in May 1798 Pitt accused him of want of patriotism. As the words were not

withdrawn, a duel ensued at Putney Heath on Sunday, 27th May 1798; but neither combatant was injured. In 1803 Tierney, partly through gratitude for the peace which had been ratified with France and partly because Pitt was out of office, joined the ministry of Addington as treasurer of the navy, and was created a privy councillor; but this ill-advised step alienated many of his supporters among the middle classes, and offended most of the influential Whigs. On the death of Fox he joined (1806) the Grenville ministry as president of the board of control, with a seat in the cabinet, and thus brought himself. once more into line with the Whigs. After the death of Ponsonby in 1817 Tierney became the recognized leader of the opposition in the House of Com- mons. In the neutral ministry of Canning, the place of master of the mint was held by him, and when Lord Goderich succeeded to the lead Tierney was admitted to the cabinet ; but he was already suffering from ill-health and took little part in its deliberations. He died suddenly at Savile Row, London, on 25th January 1830.

Tierney was a shrewd man of the world, with a natural aptitude for business. His powers of sarcasm were a cause of tcrror to his adversaries, and his presence in debate was much dreaded. His arguments were felicitous, and, though he never aimed at the high- est flights of eloquence, his choice of language was the theme of constant admiration. Lord Lytton, in his poem of St Stephen's, alludes to ‘‘ Tierney's airy tread," and praises his "light and yet vigorous" attack, in which he inflicted, ‘‘ with a placid smile," a fatal wound on his opponent.

TIERRA DEL FUEGO, a large archipelago at the southern extremity of South America, from which it is separated by Magellan Strait, at the Narrows and other points scarcely a mile wide. The group lies between 52° 40' and 55° 59' §. lat. and 63° 30' and 74° 35' W. long. stretching nearly in a line with the Patagonian Andes for over 400 miles north-west and south-east, between Capes Pillar and Horn, and for about 270 miles west and east from Cape Pillar to Cape Espiritu Santo (Catherine Point) in the north; southwards it tapers to 120 miles between Capes Horn and St Diego, the latter being continued east- wards to Staten Island, which is not usually included in the group. Although on ordinary maps this region pre- sents to the eye a hopelessly confused aggregate of islands,

channels, and fjord-like inlets, as if it had been submerged sufficiently to convert its deep valleys and gorges into

STRAIT or Bal 4, t MAGELLAN *«: C.Pillar

‘ ins. i ee STRAIT GF MAGELLAN C Espiritu S or

ATLANTIC

uas>

Pees Desolade Pash DOK BOs Caper) Navarin one Wollaston 1.

Ce

CAPE HORN

“STIERRA DEL” FUEGO Fuegian Archipelago

70

Map of Tierra del Fuego.

75

marine passages, bays, and bights, it is nevertheless clearly disposed in three main sections, which may be conveniently named East, West, and South Fuegia.

East Fuegia consists of the single island of King Charles’s South Land (eastern Tierra del Fuego), which is very much larger than all the rest of the group together, being considerably over 200 miles long from north to south. It obviously forms a southern extension of the Patagonian pampas, which it greatly resembles in its phy- sical constitution, climate, flora, and fauna. The low- lying, flat or slightly rolling plains are covered with a rich growth of tall herbage, which is frequented by the rhea, guanaco, and other animals common to the adjoining main- land, and also peopled by a branch of the

same Tehuelche (Patagonian) family. In the south a long peninsula pro- jects westwards to the Pacific. This western limb as- sumes a mountainous character, Mount Darwin (6800 feet) being situated about midway on its south side and Mount Sarmiento (6900, or perhaps 7000 feet), the culminating point of the archipelago, much nearer the Pacific. Although generally supposed to be volcanic, this peak presents such extremely precipitous, in fact, almost vertical flanks that John Ball considers it more probably “a portion of the original rock skeleton that formed the axis of the Andean chain during the long ages that preceded the great vol- canic outbursts that have covered the framework of the western side of South America.”! This is altogether an alpine region with numerous snow-clad summits and gla- ciers descending down to the sea (Darwin).

Along the south side of East Fuegia flows Beagle Channel, about 55° S. lat., separating it from South Fuegia, which comprises the islands of Hoste, Navarin, Gordon, Londonderry, Stewart, Wollaston, and numerous islets, disposed in triangular form with the base on Beagle Channel and the apex at the rocky headland of Cape Horn. At its western end Beagle Channel takes the name of Darwin Sound, which leads to the Pacific at Londonderry and Stewart Islands. North of these lies Brecknock Peninsula, the westernmost extension of East Fuegia, cut- ting off South Fuegia from Clarence Island and Desola- tion Land, which with Dawson Island and numerous rocks and islets constitute West Fuegia. Desolation Land, so named by Cook, who supposed it to form a continuous mass stretching from the western entrance of Magellan Strait to Cockburn Channel, really consists of at least three, and possibly more islands, separated from each other by very narrow channels flowing between the Pacific and the western branch of Magellan Strait. The name Desolation has been reserved for the northern member of

1 Notes of a Naturalist in South America, London, 1887, p. 245.

“

has been called Santa Ifiez; the other or others are still unnamed, When Ball passed through the strait, he was shown one of the narrow sounds “which have lately been ascertained to penetrate entirely through what used to be

considered a single island” (op. cit., p. 241).

Lying almost in a line with the main Andean axis, both West and South Fuegia are essentially highland regions, conforming in their general characteristics to the intervening western extension of East Fuegia. As compared with the great mass of the latter, they are everywhere extremely rugged and mountainous, having a mean elevation of not less than 3000 feet, a much moister climate, and arboreal instead of grassy vegetation. The isothermals of 32° Fahr. for July (winter) and 50° Fahr. for January (summer), with a mean annual temperature of 42° Fahr., show that tolerably mild winters are followed by cool summers, both seasons being accompanied by overcast skies, constant and sudden changes from fair to foul weather; whilst fogs, mists, rains, snows, and high winds (prevailing throughout the year) endanger the navigation of the intricate inland channels, and render the archipelago one of the dreariest regions on the globe.

A botanical parting line seems to be constituted by the range of hills running back of Punta Arenas along the east side of Brunswick Peninsula (which, although attached by a narrow neck of land to Patagonia, belongs physically to the insular domain), and termin- ating at Cape Froward (58° 54’ S. lat.), the southernmost point of the American mainland. West and south of this line the pampas are replaced by lofty mountains clothed with a dense forest vege- tation from the water’s edge to heights of 1000 and 1200 feet, above which stretches a zone of peaty soil with stunted alpine plants as far as the snow line (3000 to 3500 feet). The forest species are chiefly an evergreen beech (Fagus antarctica, 8.) and the winter bark (Winteria aromatica), also evergreen, with tall smooth stem and glossy leaves like the laurel. Wild celery, cress, cochlearia, and other anti-scorbutic plants occur on both sides of Magellan Strait, and the beech nourishes a large yellow mushroom, which, with the berries of a dwarf shrub, is the only vegetable food of the natives.

In West and South Fuegia the fauna is restricted mainly to two species of fox, a bat, rats, mice, the sea otter, the penguin and other aquatic birds, and various cetaceans in the surrounding waters.

To the three geographical divisions correspond three well-marked ethnical groups,—the Onas of East, the Yaghans of South, and the Alacalufs of West Fuegia. The first are estimated to number 2000, the others 3000 each, making a total population of some 8000 for the whole archipelago. The Onas are Patagonians who have crossed the strait. ‘The Alacalufs are also immigrants from the mainland, but probably they came at an earlier date, and from the western uplands, being apparently a branch of the Auca (Araucanian) race of the Patagonian and Chilian Cordilleras. They differ altogether in speech both from the Onas, with whom they come scarcely anywhere in contact, and from the Yahgans, who are the true aborigines of the archipelago. These last are in exclusive possession of South Fuegia, and also occupy the north side of Beagle Channel about Mount Darwin and further west. To them alone missionary enterprise has hitherto been extended, and the English station of Ushiwaya on Beagle Channel has for some years been the only centre of civilizing ifluences in the archipelago. As Lieutenant Bove of the Italian Antarctic expedition has made a special study of this branch,’ they are much better known than either of the neighbouring races. If they represent an earlier Araucanian immigration than that of the Alacalufs, their ex- tremely low social state, on which all observers are unanimous, may be regarded as the result of degradation from a higher con- dition during their long sojourn in their present inhospitable en- vironment. But it seems more probable that they are the direct descendants of the primitive race by which the archipelago has been occupied from a vastly remote period, as is shown by the very great number of kitchen-middens recently discovered on the coast. Although taller than the Negritoes of the eastern hemisphere (4 feet 10 inches to 5 feet 4 inches), the Yahgans present in some respects a more debased type, characterized by low brows, prominent zygomatic arches, large tumid lips, flat nose, loose wrinkled skin (* pelle grinzosa e cadente,” says Bove), black restless eyes very wide apart, coarse black unkempt hair, and head and chest disproportionately large compared with the extremely slender and outwardly curved legs, conveying an impression of top-heaviness like that of the Akkas of equatorial Africa. Their mental qualities are on the same low level, as is indicated by the almost total absence of clothing under such inclement skies, by the brutal treatment of their women, who when old and useless are often eaten, by the lack of human affections or love of offspring, who in rough weather are thrown overboard (Dr Fenton), either as a peace offering

to the spirits of the storm or to lighten the canoe, and by many repulsive practices connected with their food and social habits. The tribal organiza-

1 See Guido Cora's Cosmos for May 1883.

tion has not yet been reached, each family circle living apart and combining only in small groups against some common enemy, but recognizing no hereditary chief or even any temporary leader. Yet the missionaries, who have reduced the language to writing (Gospel of St Luke, London, 1881), assert that it contains no less than 30,000 words, although the numerals stop at jive, already a compound form (cz-pash-pa), and although the same word expresses both hand and jinger. But they have obviously failed to distinguish between distinct terms and the endless grammatical intricacies in which this, like so many other rude forms of speech, is still involved.

Since 1881 the eastern portion of Fuegia (with Staten Island) has belonged to the Argentine Republic and the western to Chili. The boundary line, which is purely conventional, runs from Cape Kspiritu Santo due south to Beagle Channel. Neither power has hitherto occupied any part of Fuegia, except Punta Arenas (Sandy Point) on the Patagonian side of Magellan Strait, where the Chilians have for some years maintained a convict and coaling station.

Fuegia was discovered by Magellan in 1520, when he sailed through the strait named after him, and called this region the '*Land of Fire," either from now extinct volcanic flames, or much more probably from the fires kindled by the natives along parts of his course. In 1578 Drake first sighted the point which in 1616 was named Cape Hoorn (Anglicized Horn) by the Dutch navi- gators Lemaire and Schouten. In 1619 the brothers Nodal first circumnavigated the archipelago, which was afterwards visited at intervals by Wood and Narborough (1670), Gennes and Froger (1696), Byron (1764), Wallis and Carteret (1767), Cook (1768), and Weddell (1822). But no systematic exploration was attempted until the British Admiralty undertook a thorough survey of the whole group by King (1826-28) and Fitzroy (1831-36). The latter expedition (Voyage of the '' Beagle") was accompanied by Charles Darwin, then a young man. To these admirable

surveys is due most of the present geographical terminology of the archipelago. Since then the work of exploration has been continued and nearly completed by Dumont d'Urville (1837), Charles Wilkes (1839), Parker Snow (1855), Bove (1883), aud various English, American, and Roman Catholic missionarics.

Bibliography.—De Brosses, Histoire des Navigations aux Terres Australes, Paris, 1756; J. Burney, History of Voyages and Discoveries in the South Sea, London, 1803-17 ; J. Weddell, A Voyage towards the South Pole and to Ticrra del Fuego, London, 1825; Charles Darwin, Journal of Researches, &c., during the Voyage of the ‘‘ Beagle" rownd the World, London, 1845; W. Parker Snow, A Two Year's' Cruise of Tierra del Fuego, London, 1857; G. Marguin, "La Terre de Feu," in Bull. de la Soc. de Géogr., November 1875; J. G. Kohl, Gesch. d. Entdeckungs- reisen, &¢., zur Magellan's Strasse, Berlin, 1877; ‘‘La Terre de Feu et ses Habitants," in Jowrnal des Missions Evangéliques, August 1876; D. Lovisato, Appunti Etnografict con Accenni Geologici sulla Terra del Fuoco, Turin, 1884; John Ball, Notes of a Naturalist in South America, London, 1887; R. W Coppinger, Cruise of the ‘‘ Alert," London, 4th ed, 1885; G. Sergi, Antropologia Fisica della Fuegia, Rome, 1887 ; Ramon Lista, ‘ East Fuegia," in Petermann's Mitteilungen, May 1887 ; and the works already mentioned.

TIFFIN, a city of the United States, in Seneca county (of which it is the county seat), Ohio, stands upon the Sandusky river, in 41° 7' N. lat., 83° 11' W. long., 42 miles south-east of Toledo. The city is situated in the midst of an agricultural region, for which it serves as a shipping and supply point, and has three railroads—the Baltimore and Ohio, the Indiana, Bloomington, and Western, and the North-Western Ohio. It is the seat of Heidelberg College, one of the minor educational institutions of the State. Tiffin had in 1880 a population of 7879, an increase of 2231 over that in 1870.

TIFLIS, capital of the province of the same name and of Russian Caucasia, is picturesquely situated (44° 48' E. long., 41° 42' N. lat.) at the foot of high mountains, on both banks of the river Kur, some 500 feet above the level of the Black Sea. The heat in summer is excessive, owing to the confined position ; but the surrounding hills (1350 to 2400 feet) shelter the town effectively from the cold winds of a generally severe winter. A large

square, the cathedral, one or more handsome streets, gardens, bridges, many fine or neat buildings—among them the grand-ducal palace, the opera-house, and the museum—European shops, the club or circle, hotels, and public offices are evidence that Western civilization has not only penetrated but has long prevailed in this geographically remote town. Of its 54 churches 26 are Armenian, 2 Lutheran, and 1 Catholic, The (Sion) cathedral traces back its origin to the 5th cen- tury ; but in the interval it has suffered much and often. Other churches date from the 14th and 15th centuries, the Armenian cathedral of Vank from 1480, and the Catholic church from the 14th century. Tiflis has two

gymnasia and pro-gymnasia for boys and two for girls, and a number of other schools; several scientific societies, of which the Caucasian branch of the geographical society is well known ; an astronomical and a physical observatory ; anda public library. The manufactures of the place are limited to a few cotton and silk factories, tanneries, soap- works, and brick-works. But the petty trades are largely developed ; and the artisans of Tiflis (about 8000) are re- nowned as silversmiths, gunsmiths, and sword-makers, Since 1883 Tiflis has been in railway connexion with Poti and Batum on the Black Sea and with Baku on the Cas- pian ; but the line from Russia to Vladikavkaz has not yet crossed the main chain of the Caucasus. The trade is of great importance, as Tiflis is the chief centre for the import of raw silk and silken goods, raw cotton, carpets, and dried fruits from Persia, as well as from trans-Caucasia, while a variety of manufactured wares are imported from Russia. The foreign trade of trans-Caucasia with Asia, mostly carried on from Tiflis, in 1884 reached the value of £1,729,800 for exports, and £857,070 for imports. In 1883 the population numbered 104,024, as against 71,051 in summer 1865 and 60,085 in winter, exclusive of a garrison of 6800. Ethnologically, the numbers are—Ar- menians 31,180, Georgians 14,787, and Russians 12,142, with an admixture of about 1200 Germans, 7150 Persians (in summer), 1500 Tatars, and some Jews and Greeks.

Many chroniclers and travellers have written about Tiflis. Per- haps one of the fullest accounts is contained in Brosset’s edition of the Description Géographique de la Géorgic (St Petersburg, 1842), by the illegitimate son of Wakhtang VL., king of Karthli, who became a pensioner of Peter the Great. English travellers since 1849 de- scribe Tiflis in its main features

much in the same terms. Lady Sheil, writing in 1849, calls it “most thriving, active, and bustling.” Edward Eastwick (1860), estimating its population at 40,000 and the height of the mountains overhanging it at 3000 feet, represents the plain in which the city is situated to be so barren that ‘even the Kur… imparts to it but a limited fertility.” Mounsey (1866) speaks in warm terms of its social charms and the great hospitality of its inhabitants, and notes it as the seat of governinent for the ‘Caucasian provinces of Russia, headquarters of an army of 150,000 men, and the residence of the governor-general.” In the old division of Tiflis three distinct towns were included,—Tiflis, Kal‘a (the fort), and Isni; subsequently Tiflis seems to have become known as Sdaiyidabad, Kal‘a as Tiflis, and Isni as Aulabar. Kal’a and Isni possessed citadels ; that of the former contained the church of St Nicholas and a royal palace, that of the latter the church of the Holy Virgin and the residence of the archimandrite. The town is now divided into quarters:—the Russian (the finest of all), the German, the Armenian, and that in which are congregatcd Jews, Mohammedans, and the mass of Orientals. ‘Tiflis can lay claim to a very considerable antiquity. In 455 the chieftain of Georgia, Wakhtang, transferred his capital from Mhtset to the warm springs of Tpilisi, where he erected several churches and a fort. In 570 the Persians took the place and made it the residence of their rulers, but retained it only for ten years. Tiflis underwent successive plunderings and devastations at the hands of the Greeks in 626, of one of the commanders of Omar in 781, of the Khazars in 828, and of the Saracens in 851. The Georgians, however, always managed to return to it and to keep it in their permanent posses- sion. Inthe course of the succeeding centuries Tiflis fell repeatedly into Persian hands ; and it was plundered by Timur about the end of the 14th century. Afterwards the Turks seized it several times, and towards the end of the 17th century the Lesghians made attacks upon it. In 1795, when the shah of Persia plundered Tiflis, Russia sent troops to its protection, and the Russian occupation became permanent in 1799. ; ;

TIGER. Although this name is often applied by settlers and sportsmen to several of the larger Melidx, as the leopard of Africa and the jaguar of America, it should properly be restricted to the well-known striped species of Asia, Melis tagris of Linnzeus, an animal which is only rivalled by the lion in size, strength, and ferocity among the cat-like beasts of prey. It is a true cat ona large scale, and possesses all the essential characters of the

genus as defined in the article Mamata (vol. xv. p. 434). It belongs to the section in which the pupil of the eye con- tracts under the stimulus of light into a round spot and not a vertical slit, and in which the hyoid bone is con-

nected loosely with the skull by a long ligament, instead of by a continuous chain of bones. In these points it agrees with the lion and the leopard and differs from the common cat. Almost everything that is said in the article Lion (vol. xiv. pp. 680-681) of the structure of the skele- ton, teeth, and claws of that animal will apply equally well to the tiger, the difference between the two lying mainly in the skin and its coverings. There are, however, slight distinctions in the proportionate size of the lower teeth, the general form of the cranium, and the relative length of the nasal bones and ascending processes of the maxillaries by which the skull of the lion and tiger can be easily discriminated by the practised observer. _ Although examples of both species present considerable variations in size, and reliance cannot always be placed upon alleged dimensions, especially when taken from skins

stripped from the body, it seems well ascertained that the length of the largest-sized Bengal tiger may exceed that of any lion. Larger specimens are certainly recorded, but 10 feet from the tip of the nose to the end of the tail is, ac- cording to Jerdon, an unusual length fora large male tiger. The female is somewhat smaller and has a lighter and nar- rower head. ‘The tiger has no mane, but in old males the hair of the cheeks is rather long and spreading. The ground colour of the upper and outer parts of the head, body, limbs, and tail is a bright rufous fawn, and these parts are beautifully marked with transverse stripes of a dark, almost black colour. The markings vary much in different individuals, and even on the two sides of the same individual. The under parts of the body, the inside of the limbs, the cheeks, and a large spot over each eye are nearly white. The tigers which inhabit hotter regions, as Bengal and the south Asiatic islands, have shorter and smoother hair, and are more richly coloured and distinctly striped than those

of northern China and Siberia, in which the fur is longer, softer, and lighter colourcd.

The tiger is exclusively Asiatic, but has a very wide range in that continent, having been found in almost all suitable localities south of a line drawn from the river Euphrates, passing along the southern shores of the Caspian and Sea of Aral by Lake Baikal to the Sea of Okhotsk. Its most northern range is the territory of the Amur, its most southern the islands of Sumatra, Java, and Bali. Westward it reaches to Turkish Georgia and eastward to the island of Saghalin. It is absent, however, from the great elevated plateau of Central Asia, nor does it inhabit

Ceylon, Borneo, or the other islands of the Indo-Malayan Archipelago, except those named. ‘

The principal food of the tiger in India is cattle, deer, wild hog, and pea-fowl, and occasionally human beings. The regular “man-eater” is generally an old tiger whose vigour is passed, and whose teeth are worn and defective ; it takes up its abode in the neighbourhood of a village, the population of which it finds an easier prey than the larger or wilder animals named above. Though chiefly affecting grassy plains or swamps, it is also found in forests, and seems to be fond of haunting the neighbourhood of old ruins. As a rule, tigers do not climb trees ; but when pressed by fear, as during an inundation, they have been known to do so. They take to the water readily and are good swimmers. The tigers of the Sundarbans (Ganges delta) continually swim from one island to the other to change their hunting-grounds for deer. The following extract from Sir J. Fayrer’s Royal Tiger of Bengal (1875) may complete this notice of the tiger’s habits.

“The tigress gives birth to from two to five, even six cubs; but three isa frequent number. She is a most affectionate and attached mother, and generally guards and trains her young with the most watchful solicitude. They remain with her until nearly full-grown, or about the second year, when they are able to kill for themselves and begin life on their own account. Whilst they remain with her she is peculiarly vicious and aggressive, defending them with the greatest courage and energy, and when

robbed of them is terrible in her rage ; but she has been known to desert them when pressed, and even to eat them when starved. As soon as they begin to require other food than her milk, she kills for them, teaching them to do so for themselves by practising on small animals, such as deer and young calves or pigs. At these times she is wanton and extravagant in her cruelty, killing apparently for the gratification of her ferocious and bloodthirsty nature, and perhaps to excite and instruct the young ones, and it is not until they are thoroughly capable of killing their own food that she separates from them. The young tigers are far more destructive than the old. They will kill three or four cows at a time, whilst the older and more experienced rarely kill more than one, and this at intervals of from three or four days to a week. For this purpose the tiger will leave its retreat in the dense jungle, proceed to the neighbourhood of a village or gowrie, where cattle feed, and during the night will steal on and strike down a bullock, drag it into a secluded place, and then remain near the “murrie,” or ‘‘kill,” for several days, until it has eaten it, when it will proceed in search of a further supply, and, having found good hunting ground in the vicinity of a village or gowrie, continue its ravages, destroying one or two cows or buffaloes a weck. It is very fond of the ordinary domestic cattle, which in the plains of India are generally weak, half-starved, under-sized creatures. One of these is easily struck down and carried or lo off. The smaller buffaloes are also easily dis- posed of ; but the buffalo bulls, and especially the wild ones, are formidable antagonists, and have often been known to beat the tiger off, and even to wound him seriously.” (W. H. F.)

TIGER CAT. See Ocetor.

TIGRANES, or DrKRAn, a name borne by several kings of ancient Armenia. According to the legend of the Ar- menians, the first of these kings was the Tigranes who in Xenophon’s romance appears as the schoolfellow of Cyrus, and to him they ascribe the foundation of Tigranocerta (Dikranagerd) on the Tigris. But in reality, as classical writers relate, this city was built by the first historical Tigranes of Armenia, variously known as Ticranzs II. and T1GRANES I., for whose history see Persia, vol. xviii. p. 595 sq. His son Tigranes is known by his rebellion against his father (PERSIA, wt supra). TicRanes III. (IL.), grandson of Tigranes II. (I.), hada short reign, which he owed to a revolution at home

and the favour of Augustus. He came to the throne in 20 8.c., having previously been an exile at Rome. Tigranes IV. (III.) was seated on the throne by the Parthians (PErsta, p. 600). For Tigranes V. (c. 60 a.D.), a great-grandson on his mother's side of Herod the Great, see Persta, vol. xvili. p. 602.

TIGRIS,! the shorter of the two large rivers rising in

1 The Tigris is the Hiddekel of the Bible, the Diklat or Idiklat of the cuneiform monuments. The old Persian form Tigra (''swift as an arrow"), whence Tigris, seems to be connected etymologically with

the highlands of Armenia and Kurdistan, and (when turned southward) running each its own independent course to the Persian Gulf. Like the Euphrates, the Tigris rises from two principal sources, of which the western and more distant—in 38° 10' N. lat. and about 39° 20' E. long—is a little south of Lake Giuljek, in a peninsula formed by the Euphrates, and some 2 or 3 miles only from the channel of that river. The names and sources of the different streams forming the Western Tigris—or that part: of the upper river which runs, roughly speaking, from Diarbekr to the junction with the Eastern Tigris, about 50 miles north-north-west from Jezira Ibn Omar—are given by Consul Taylor as the Arganeh M'adan and the Dibeneh Su, uniting at Ammaneh castle; the Ambar Su, rising at Heyni; the Batman Su, formed by the Kulp, the Kaushan, and the Sarum, rising north and north-west of Nerjiki; and the Khuzu or Huzu and the Arzen-Redhwan or Yezid Khaneh Su. Of the Eastern Tigris the chief tributaries are the Bohtan Su and its feeder the Bitlis (which receives the Keyzer or Shirwan), the Méx, the Shattak, the Cham- kari, and the Sarhal Su. Of these the most northerly points may be found on the Kulp or Dibeneh Su about 38° 40' N. lat. and the most easterly on the Shattak in 42° 50' E. long.

After the junction of the eastern and western branches (see the accompanying map) the river pursues a winding

Miles. oO

Map showing the tributaries of the Tigris.

course, generally south-east, for about 800 iniles, via Mosul and Baghdad, to the point of union with the Euphrates at Kurna, whence it becomes known as the Shattu ’l-Arab, and falls into the sea some 70 miles farther down. Between Mosul and Baghdad the Tigris receives from its left the Great and the Little Zab and other tributaries from the Kurdish Mountains. Below the confluence of the latter it is joined by the Diyala, also from the left, while on the right canals and watercourses connect it more or less directly with the Euphrates, which in the vicinity of Bagh- dad it approaches to within 30 or 35 miles. The Tigris is navigable for light freight-bearing steamers up to Bagh- dad, and for vessels of lighter draught to 20 miles below Mosul, but thence to Diarbekr only for rafts. ‘‘ But owing to the rapidity of the current the traffic is all down stream, carried on mainly by a primitive style of craft, which is broken up at Baghdad and transported by camels back to Mosul. The journey between these points occupies three or four days during the floods and from twelve to fourteen at other times.”

TILBURG, or Titpore, a town of Holland, in the

these names.

The modern Arabic name is Dijla (Aramaic Deklath, Digla).

province of North Brabant, 13 miles to the east-south-east of Breda, contains numerous and extensive woollen-fac- tories, employing from 5000 to 6000 persons, and also some calico-printing establishments. It has the usual public buildings, including four Roman Catholic churches, a Reformed church, and a synagogue, but none of architec- tural or historical interest. The population in 1879 was 28,390 and in 1887 32,016.

TILDEN, Samvuet Jonzs (1814-1886), American states- man, was born at New Lebanon, New York, on the 9th of February 1814. He studied at Yale and at the university of New York, but ill-health prevented him from finishing his course. He studied law and rose rapidly to the first rank at the New York bar. From boyhood he had had a fondness for politics, but had sacrificed it to the practice of law. After 1860 he drifted into New York State politics, and became chairman of the Democratic State Committee in 1866. The Tweed “ring” in New York city dreaded him, and in 1869 attempted to remove him from his chairmanship. Tilden then became the soul of the legal attacks upon the “ring,” and worked for the removal of the corrupt judges who were their tools; and in the “ring trials” he accomplished the mathematical feat of ascertaining and demonstrating from bank-books the principle on which the spoils had been divided. In 1874 he was elected governor of the State by the Democrats. For years another “ring” had been making money out of the State canals. This, too, Tilden succeeded in breaking up. In 1876 the National Democratic Convention nomi- nated him for the presidency, the Republicans nominating Governor Hayes of Ohio. The result was the disputed election of 1876-77, when each party secured about the same number of electors outside of the three Southern states of Florida, South Carolina, and Louisiana, The Democrats had a majority in these States ; but the return- ing boards, by rejecting votes which they believed had been obtained by fraud or intimidation, gave their States to the Republicans. Two sets of certificates were therefore sent to Washington, and as no provision had been made in the United States constitution for a dispute of this kind there was no power authorized to decide between the two parties. In this emergency Tilden consented to the ap- pointment of an extra-constitutional body, an “electoral commission,” to decide disputed cases, the decisions of which were to hold good unless reversed by concurrent vote of the two houses. The commission decided all the cases in favour of the Republican candidates, and Tilden was de- feated. He continued in retirement until his death, which took place at Greystone, New York, on 4th August 1886.

TILES (Saxon tigel, connected with Lat. tegu/a) are used for a great variety of architectural purposes, such as cover- ing roofs, floors, and walls, and are made of many different materials.

1. Roofing Tiles.1—In the most important temples of ancient Greece the roof was covered with tiles of white marble, fitted together in the most perfect way so as to exclude the rain. In most cases, as in the Athenian Parthenon and the existing temple at Augina, the tiles were large slabs of marble, with a flange along each side, over which joint-tiles (dppo/) were accurately fitted (see A in fig. 1). In the temple of Apollo at Bassx, though the main building was of limestone, the roof was covered with very beautiful tiles of Parian marble, which are specially mentioned by Pausanias as being one of the chief beauties of the temple. Some of these were found by Mr Cockerell during his excavations at Basse early in the 19th century.? In design they resemble the other examples mentioned

1 In Egypt and Assyria temples and palaces were mostly roofed with stone, while inferior buildings had flat roofs covered with beaten clay. 2 See Cockerell, Temples of Aigina and Basse, London, 1860.

above, but are peculiar in having the joint-piece worked out of the same slab of marble as the adjacent tiles (see B in fig. 1), at a great additional cost of both material and labour, in order to secure a more perfect fit. Fig. 2

Fic. 1.—Examples of roofing tiles from Greek temples. A, B, marble tiles from gina and Basse, showing two methods of working the joint-tiles. ©, C, clay tiles from Olympia. D, sketch showing method of jointing at the lower edge. EH, longitudinal section of a clay joint-tile (apuds). Fy, joint-tile with peg to fix it.

shows the way in which they were set on the roof. Great

splendour of effect must have been gained by continuing

the gleaming white of the columns and walls on to the roof. All along the eaves each end of a row of joint-tiles was usually covered by an antefiva, an oval-topped piece

Fie. 2.—Perspective sketch showing the arrangement of tiles B in fig. 1, at Basse. B, B, Dowels to fix the joint-tiles. , tilting piece. a, a, flat surface of

tiles.

of marble with honeysuckle or some other conventional

pattern carved in relief. In most cases the Greeks used

terra-cotta roofing tiles, shaped like the marble ones of fig. 1, A. Others were without a flange, being formed with

a concave upper surface to prevent the rain getting under

the joint-tiles. The lower edge of the tile, whether of

marble or of clay, was usually half-lapped and fitted into

a corresponding rebate in the upper edge of the next tile

(see D in fig. 1). The dppoé also were half-lapped at the

joints (see E in fig. 1). All these were usually fastened

with bronze nails to the rafters of the roof. In some cases each joint-tile had a projecting peg to fix it to the next appos, as shown at F. In the temples of imperial

Rome marble roofing tiles were used like those shown at

fig. 1. These were copied from the Greeks along with

most other architectural features. For domestic and other less important work clay tiles (tegule) were em- ployed, of the form shown in A, fig. 3. These are narrower

1 Marble tiles are said to have been first made by B zes of Naxo about 620 B.c. ; see Pausanias, v. 10, 2. oe –

at the lower edge, so as to fit in to the upper edge of the next tile, and the joints were covered with a semicircular joint-tile (¢mbrex). Rows of terra-cotta antefixe were set along the eaves of the roof, and were often moulded

with very beautiful reliefs. In localities which supplied lami- nated stone, such as Gloucestershire and Hampshire in

‘ (ae i 4

WC UY Fic, 3.—A, section and elevation of the clay tiles commonly used in ancient Rome. 3B, Roman stone tiles, each fixed with one iron nail at the top angle. C, pan-tiles used in medixval and modern times. Britain, the Romans often roofed their buildings with stone tiles, fastened with iron nails. Fig. 3, B, shows an example from a Roman villa at Fifehead Neville in Dorset, England. Each slab had a lap of about 2 inches over the row of tiles below it; many large iron nails were found with these stone tiles. In a few cases, in the most magni- ficent temples of ancient Rome, as in those of Capitoline Jupiter and of Venus and Rome, and also the small circular temple of Vesta,? tiles of thickly gilded bronze were used, which must have had the most magnificent effect. Those of the last-named building are specially mentioned by Pliny (H._W., xxxiv. 7) as having been made of Syracusan bronze,’ —an alloy in great repute among the Romans. The bronze tiles from the temples of Jupiter Capitolinus and of Venus and Rome were taken by Pope Honorius I. (625-638) to cover the basilica of St Peter, whence they were stolen by the Saracens during their invasion of the Leonine city in

846.4

In medizval times lead or copper ® in large sheets was used for the chief churches and palaces of Europe; but in more ordinary work clay tiles of very simple form were employed. One variety, still very common in Italy, is shown in O, fig. 3. In this form of so-called “ pan-tile” each tile has a double curve, forming a tegula and imbrex both in one, Stone tiles were also very common through- out the Middle Ages. Another kind of roofing tile, largely used in pre-Norman times and for some centuries later for certain purposes, was made of thin pieces of split wood, generally oak; these are called “shingles.” They stand the weather fairly well, and many old examples still exist, especially on the wooden towers and spires of East Anglia. At the present day, when slate is not used, tiles of burnt clay are the ordinary roofing material, and many compli- cated forms have been invented to exclude rain. Most of these are, however, costly and do not

answer better than a plain rectangular tile about 9 by 6 inches, fastened with two copper or even stout zinc nails, and well bedded on mortar mixed with hair. For additional security clay tiles are usually made with two small projections at the

2 The dome of the Pantheon was covered with tiles or plates of bronze thickly gilt, as were also the roofs of the forum of Trajan.

3 Bronze tiles for small buildings such as this were usually of a pointed oval form, something like the feathers of a bird. This kind of tiling is called pavonacewm by Pliny, H.N., xxxvi. 22.

4 Part of the bronze tiles had been stripped from the temple of Jupiter by the Vandals in 455; see Procopius, Bell. Van., i. 5.

5 The gilt domes of Moscow are examples of this use of copper.

.

e

TILES

upper edge, which hook on to the battens to which they are nailed. Broseley (Shropshire) is one of the chief places in England for the manufacture of roofing tiles of the better sort. The common kinds are made wherever good clay exists. In some places pan-tiles are still used and have a very picturesque effect ; but they are liable to _let in the rain, as they cannot be securely nailed or well bedded in mortar. In Gloucestershire, Yorkshire, and other counties of England, stone tiles are still employed, but are rapidly going out of use, as they require very strong roof-timbers to support them, and the great extension of railways has made the common purple slates cheap in nearly every district.

Some of the mosques and palaces of Persia are roofed with the most magnificent enamelled lustred tiles, decorated with elaborate painting, so that they shine like gold in the sun. They were specially used from the 13th

to the 15th century. In style and method of manufacture the finest of them resemble the frieze shown in fig. 5.

2. Wall Tiles.—These have been partly described under Mora DEcoraTION Th A 6 Gy SRR (vol. xvii. p. 35).! Jj ‘Ys In most Oriental # countries tiles were used in themostmag- nificent way through- PA out the Middle Ages, WZ especially in Damas- |! cus, Cairo, Moorish Spain, and in the} chief towns of Persia. Fig. 4 shows a fine example from a mosque in Damas- | cus. From the 12th to the 16th century a special kind of |f lustred tile was // largely employed for [Bf dadoes, friezes, and other wall surfaces, (4 being frequently made in large slabs 22ORiwMN ep Rts ayo NO? and modelled boldly Fic. 4.—Wall tiles from Damas in relief, with sen- lita tences from sacred books or the names and dates of reign- ing caliphs. The whole was picked out in colour, usually dark or turquoise blue, on a ground of cream-white enamel, and in the last firing minute ornaments in copper lustre were added over the whole design, giving the utmost splendour of effect (see fig. 5). Great skill and taste are shown by the way in which the delicate painted enrich- ments are made to contrast with the bold decoration in relief. These lustred tiles sometimes line the prayer-niche in houses and mosques ; in such cases the slabs usually have a conventional representation of the kaaba at Mecca, with a lamp hanging in front of it and a border of sentences from the Koran. The mosques of Persia are specially rich in this method of decoration, magnificent examples existing at Natenz, Seljuk, Tabriz, Ispahan, and other places.2 In the 16th and 17th centuries tiles of a coarse kind of majolica were used for wall decoration in southern Spain; some rich examples still exist in Seville. These appear to be the work of Italian potters who had settled in Spain. The azulejos (wall tiles) in the Alhambra and

1 For the enamelled wall tiles of ancient Egypt, see Porrrry, vol. xix. p. 603.

2 The South Kensington Museum, London, contains many fine ex- amples, as well as of the later sorts, like those shown in fig, 4.

2 See Coste, Monuments de la Perse, Paris, 1867.

other buildings in Spain are among the most beautiful productions of Hispano-Moorish art. In technique they resemble majolica ; but the finest kinds, dating from the SSN m * é Es; at PS i

yer

IAS Is Bel és NE oj a War Te O S

z Fic. 5.—Persian lustred tiles of the 13th ceutury, forming part ofa frieze. (South Kensington Museum.)

14th and 15th centuries, have designs taken from mosaic patterns, with complicated lines of geometrical interlacings.®

3. Floor Tiles.—From the 12th to the 16th century floor tiles in most northern countries of Europe were made by filling up with clay of a different colour patterns sunk in slabs of clay (see Encaustic Tixxs). In Italy, during the latter part of the 15th and the first half of the 16th century, majolica tiles, rich both in pattern and in colour, were used for pavements in many places. Comparatively few examples now exist; the majolica enamel was too soft to stand the wear of feet. One of the small south chapels in the church of 8. Maria del Popolo in Rome has a very fine pavement of these tiles, executed, probably at Forli, about 1480 for Cardinal della Rovere (Julius II.), whose arms—an oak tree—are repeated frequently among the rich decorations. A still more magnificent tile floor in the uppermost of Raphael's Vatican loggie is mentioned

5

é ') . S > : & 4 Fia. 6.—Majolica paving tiles from Siena, made in 1509. (South Kensington Museum.) Robbia made as a border for the tomb of Bishop Federighi at Florence. Fine examples of tile paving of 1487 exist in the basilica of 8. Petronio at Bologna, and others of 4 The method of manufacture employed by Moslem races for tiles is the same as that used for their pottery; see vol. xix. p. 620, also Murat Decoration, vol. xvii. pp. 35-86.

5 For the decorative use of tiles, see Julien Foy, La Céramique des Constructions, Paris, 1883,

rather earlier date in S. Paolo at Parma. The chapel of St Catherine at Siena and the church of 8. Sebastiano at Venice have majolica paving of about 1510. Fig. 6 shows an example of about this date from the Petrucci Palace in Siena, now in the South Kensington Museum.' In the early part of the 16th century majolica tiles from Spain were occasionally imported into England. At. the south-east of the mayor's chapel at Bristol there exists, though much worn, a fine pavement of Spanish tiles dating from about 1520. Others have been found in London, at Newington Butts, and in other places. At the present time imitations of the unfortunately named " encaustic tiles" are almost the only sort employed in England and other northern countries. Very coarse and poorly designed majolica tiles are still made and used for paving in Italy and Spain. (J. H. M.)

TILLEMONT, Stpastien LE Narn pe (1637-1698), ecclesiastical historian, was born at Paris on 30th Novem- ber 1637, and received his education in the "petites écoles" of the Port Royalists, Nicole being his principal master. At an early age he became an admiring student of Livy and Baronius and began to accumulate those vast collec- tions which form the basis of his monumental works. He continued to carry on his studies in the seminary at Beau- vais, where the bishop was a warm patron; but it was not until 1676, two or three years after his return to Paris, that, under the influence of Isaac de Sacy, he entered the priesthood. He took up his abode in a humble dwelling at Port Royal des Champs, where he remained till the dis- persion of the "solitaires" in 1679, after which event he spent the remainder of his life (with the exception of a visit to Arnauld in Holland in 1685) at Tillemont, between Montreuil and Vincennes. He died on 28th January 1698 and was buried at Port Royal; in 1711 his remains were removed to the church of St André des Arcs, Paris.

His great work, Mémoires pour servir & Vhistoire ecclésiastique des six premiers siéeles to 518 A.D. (1693-1712, 16 vols., 4to), is a model of patient, exhaustive, and what Gibbon has called '' sure-footed " erudition (see vol. v. p. 765). Of his equally learned Histoire des emperewrs et des

autres princes qui ont régné durant les six premiers siecles de Véglise (1690-1738, 4to) no more than four volumes were published. Tillemont also gave valuable assistance to Hermant, Du Fossé, and other Port Royalists in their historical work.

TILLOTSON, Joun (1630-1694), archbishop of Can- terbury, was the son of a Puritan clothier in Sowerby, Yorkshire, where he was born in October 1630. He en- tered as a pensioner of Clare Hall, Cambridge, in 1647, graduated in 1650, and was made fellow of his college in 1651. Chillingworth's Religion of Protestantism biassed his mind against Puritanism, and the bias was further confirmed by intercourse with Cudworth and others at Cambridge. In 1656 he became tutor to the son of Edward Prideaux, attorney-general to Cromwell. In what year he took orders is unknown, but, according to the Life published in 1717, the person who ordained him was Dr T. Sydserf, a Scottish bishop. 'Tillotson was present at the Savoy Conference in 1661, and remained identified with the Presbyterians till the passing of the Act of Uni- formity in 1662. Shortly afterwards he became curate of Cheshunt, Herts, and in June 1663 rector of Keddington, Suffolk. or several years after his ordination he devoted himself to an exact study of the Scriptures, ancient ethics, and the writings of the early fathers, especially Basil and Chrysostom. The result was seen in the general tone of his preaching, which was practical rather than theological, and, though regarded by some as latitudinarian, was char- acterized by the earnestness of sincere conviction and the balanced wisdom gained by thoughtful reflexion. He was, moreover, a man of the world as well as a divine, and in

1 See Vanzolini, Fabbriche di Matioliche, Pesaro, 1879, ii. p. 229 sq. ; and Frati, Pavimento nella Bas. Petroniana, Bologna, 1853.

? i 1.) Pl

his sermons he exhibited a certain indefinable tact which

enabled him at once to win the ear of his audience. His

style is chiefly remarkable for its simplicity and clearness,

and in this respect it mirrored his own candour and sin-
cerity. The qualities above mentioned. won him in his
lifetime the reputation of “having brought preaching to
perfection”; and probably it was because he was neither
brilliant, original, nor profound that his preaching was so
universally admired. ‘His sermons,” says Burnet, ‘were
so well heard and liked, and so much read, that all the
nation proposed him as a pattern and studied to copy
after him.” In 1664 he became preacher at Lincoln’s
Inn. The same year he married Miss French, daughter
of the canon of Christ Church, Oxford, and niece of Oliver
Cromwell; and he also became Tuesday lecturer at St
Lawrence, Jewry. ‘Tillotson employed his controversial
weapons with some skill against “atheism” and ‘“Popery.”
In 1663 he published a characteristic sermon on “The
Wisdom of being Religious,” and in 1666 replied to
Sergeant’s Sure Footing in Christianity by a pamphlet
on the Rule of Faith. The same year he received the de- gree of D.D. In
1670 he became prebendary and in 1672
dean of Canterbury. Through his wife Tillotson became

connected with Dr Wilkins, the second husband of her mother. In 1675 he edited Wilkins's Principles of Natural Religion, completing what was left unfinished of it, and in 1682 his Sermons, with a preface in which he vindicated Wilkins from certain misrepresentations of Wood in his

History and Antiquities of the University of Oxford. In

1680 he brought out Barrow's Treatise of the Pope's Su- premacy, and in 1683 his Sermons. On 5th November 1678 Tillotson preached a sermon against Popery before the House of Commons, in which he maintained that it

was their duty to make provision against the propagation

of a religion more mischievous than irreligion itself; but in a sermon on the Protestant religion in 1680 before the. king he propounded the proposition that Catholics could enjoy their own faith, but not openly draw men off from

the profession of the established religion. Along with

Burnet, Tillotson attended Lord Russell on the scaffold in

1683, and after the publication of Lord Russell's speech was appointed to appear before the privy council ; but his

explanations were regarded as satisfactory, the chief sus- picions in connexion with the speech resting on Burnet.

Tillotson afterwards enjoyed the friendship of Lady Rus- sell, and it was partly through her that he obtained so

much influence with Princess Anne, who followed his ad- vice in regard to the settlement of the crown on William of Orange. He possessed the special confidence of William and Mary, and was made clerk of the closet to the king,

27th March 1689. It was chiefly through his advice that the king appointed an ecclesiastical commission for tlie reconciliation of the Dissenters, and he

was regarded as the representative in the commission of the views of the king and queen. In August of this year he was appointed by the chapter of his cathedral to exercise the archiepis- copal jurisdiction of the province of Canterbury during the suspension of Sancroft. He was also about the same time named dean of St Paul's. Soon afterwards he was elected to succeed Sancroft; but he accepted the promo- tion with extreme reluctance, and it was deferred from time to time at his request till April 1691. His attempts to reform certain abuses of the church, especially that of non-residence among the clergy, awakened against him much ill-will, and of this the Jacobites took every possible advantage and pursued him to the end of his life with

insult and reproach. ' This," Burnet says, " could neither provoke him, nor fright him from his duty; but it affected his mind so much that this was thought to have shortened

his days." He died of palsy on 24th November 1694.

For his manuscript sermons Tillotson's widow received 2500 guineas, then an unexampled sum, and for many years their popu- larity remained unrivalled. During his lifetime he published Ser-

- mons on Several Occasions, 1671, republished with a second volume

added in 1678 ; Fifty Sermons and the Rule of Faith, 1691; Four Sermons concerning the Divinity and Incarnation of our Blessed Saviour, 1693 ; Six Sermons on Several Occasions, 1694. His Post- humous Sermons, edited by Dr Ralph Baker, appeared in 14 vols., 1694; third edition, 1704. His Works were published in 1707- 1710, and were frequently reprinted. In 1752 an edition appeared in 3 vols. with Life by Thomas Birch, D.D., compiled from Tillot- son's original papers and letters. Ofthe many subsequent editions the best is that, with Life by Birch, of 1820,10 vols. Various selec- tions from his sermons and works have been published separately.

See in addition to Birch's Life, Welford's Memorials, Burnet's Own Times, and Macaulay's History of England.

TILLY, Jonann TsERcLAES, Count oF (1559-1632), a famous general, was born in February 1559 at the chateau of Tilly in Brabant. It was originally intended that he should become a priest, and he was strictly educated by the Jesuits. He preferred, however, the life of a soldier, and began his military career in the Netherlands, under Alessandro Farnese, in the Spanish service. Afterwards he joined the imperial army, and as lieutenant-colonel under Duke Philip Emmanuel of Lorraine greatly distin- guished himself in Hungary in the war against the Turks. For his brilliant achievements he was raised to the rank of field-marshal. In 1610 he was put by Maximilian I. at the head of his Bavarian army ; and soon after the out- break of the Thirty Years' War he was made commander- in-chief of the troops of the Catholic League. In this position he displayed qualities which placed him among the foremost generals of the age. After the battle of. Prague (the White Hill) in 1620 he thoroughly subdued Bohemia, and in 1622 conquered the Palatinate,—a ser- vice for which Ferdinand II. gave him the title of count. In 1623 he defeated Christian of Brunswick at Stadtlohn in Westphalia, and in 1626 Christian IV. of Denmark at Lutter in Brunswick. The consequence of the latter victory was that Tilly and Wallenstein were able to cross the Elbe; but, as Tilly was wounded before Pinneberg in Schleswig-Holstein, the task of finally compelling the king of Denmark to accept terms of peace had to be left to Wallenstein alone. When Wallenstein was obliged in 1630 to withdraw for a while into private life, Tilly added to the functions he already discharged those of commander of the imperial forces. From this time the only important success achieved by him was the storming of Magdeburg (May 1631), a success accompanied by frightful cruelties, for which he was at least in part responsible. Gustavus Adol- phus had now come forward as the champion of Protest- antism, and Tilly, with all his genius and tenacity, was not a match for the Swedish king. Four months after the capture of Magdeburg Tilly was defeated at Breitenfeld in Saxony, and was himself so severely wounded that he escaped from the field with difficulty. In March 1632 he drove the Swedes from Bamberg and placed himself in an entrenched camp at Rain to prevent them from passing over the Lech. Gustavus Adolphus crossed the stream, and in the fight which ensued Tilly was mortally wounded. He died in April 1632 at Ingolstadt, and was buried at Alt-Oetting in Bavaria.

Tilly was of medium height, reserved in manner, and wholly indifferent to external marks of honour. The Roman Church never had a more devoted servant, and he gave evidence of the essential simplicity of his character by declining the offer of the emperor to make him a prince and to grant to him the principality of Calen- berg. As he was not married, his title and estates descended to his nephew.

See Klopp, Tilly im dreissigjdhrigen Kriege, Stuttgart, 1861, and Villermont, Tilly, Tournay, 1859.

TILSIT, a commercial town of East Prussia and the capital of Prussian Lithuania, is situated on the left bank of the Memel or Niemen, 52 miles south-east of the town of Memel and 60 north-east of Kénigsberg. The town

is spacious, and has a number of handsome modern build- ings, including a town-house, post-office, law-courts, and a large hospital. It contains three Protestant churches, a Roman Catholic church, and a Jewish synagogue. The manufactures include soap, leather, shoes, glass, and other articles, and there are iron-foundries and steam flour and saw mills. ‘Tilsit carries on trade in timber, grain, hemp, flax, herrings, and other northern produce; but its trade with Russia, at one time considerable, has fallen off since the construction of the railway from Kénigsberg via Inster- burg and Gumbinnen to Kovno. The river is navigable beyond the town. The market-gardening of the neigh- bourhood deserves mention, and the annual horse-fair and markets are of considerable local importance. In 1783 the population was 8060; in 1880 it had increased to 21,400, and in 1885 to 22,428.

Tilsit, which received town-rights in 1552, grew up around a castle of the Teutonic order, known as the ‘‘Schalauner Haus,” founded in 1288. It owes most of its interest to the peace signed here on 9th July 1807, the preliminaries of which were settled by the emperors Alexander and Napoleon on a raft moored in the Memel. The peace of Tilsit, which constituted the kingdom of Westphalia and the duchy of Warsaw, registers the nadir of Prussia’s humiliation under Napoleon (see Prussia, vol. xx. p. 11). The poet Max von Schenkendorf (1784-1817) was born at Tilsit.

TIMBER. See Buirprne, Forests, and StreNcTH oF Mareriazs ; also Fir, Oak, Prnz, Trax, &e.

TIMBUKTU, or Trmpvucroo (Sonrhai, Zimbutu ; Berber, Tumbutku ; Arab, Tin-buktu), a city of the Sahara, on the southern verge of the desert, in 18° 4’ N. lat. and 1° 45’ W. long., at the north-east extremity of the Fulah state of Moassina (Massina), 9 miles north of its riverine port Kabara, on the left bank of the Niger, at the confluence of the numerous branches of the Joliba (upper Niger) where it trends eastwards, and at the converging point of the main trade routes from the Gulf of Guinea and from the Mediterranean across the western Sahara. Timbuktu lies on a terrace formed by the southern scarp of the desert, about 800 feet above sea-level, and overlooking a chain of dhayas or marshy hollows, fringed here and there with a few mimosas and palm thickets, amid the surround- ing sandy wastes. These dhayas, which are flooded every three or four years, converting the lowland tracts between the terrace and the main stream into a labyrinth of channels and backwaters, mark the bed of a navigable creek which formerly branched from the Niger northwards to the foot of the scarp, and which in 1640 inundated a low-lying quarter of the city. According to Pouyanne and Sabatier, the main stream followed this course before it took its present easterly curve to Burum, where it bends southwards to the coast. Here also it was probably joined at some remote period by the now dried up Wady Messaura from the Tudt oases south of Algeria, although the rough levels taken by Oscar Lenz and others make it uncertain whether the flow through this depression was northwards or southwards. In any case Timbuktu has been left, so to say, high and dry by the general process of desiccation going on throughout the Saharian region. It was founded, or more probably captured, by the Tuareg Berbers about the 11th century, and under the Mandingo kings of Mali (Mallé) was a noted mart for gold and salt in the 14th century, mention of “Timboutch” occurring on a Catalan map dated 1373. Under Askia, founder of the extensive but short-lived Sonrhai empire (1492), it rose to great splendour and became with Gogo a chief centre of Moham- medan culture for the peoples of western Sudan. But since the overthrow (1591) of the Sonrhai dynasty by the Morocco captain, the Andalusian Jodar with his Ruma followers, Timbuktu has continued to be the prey of the surrounding unruly populations—Tuaregs, Arabs or Arab- ized Berbers, Fulahs (1800), and

Toucouleurs (1865). Being thus at the mercy of all, it has ceased to rebuild its

dismantled walls, being content to pay tribute to each in turn and sometimes to more than one simultaneously, for which it indemnifies itself by peaceful intervals of trade whenever the land routes are open and the upper and lower reaches of the Niger are clear of pirates. But at times even the short tract separating it from Kabara is so beset with marauders that it bears the ominous name of “Uyr-immandess,” that is, “He (God) hears not.” Recently, however, it has enjoyed a considerable interval of peace, and the population, estimated by Barth at 11,000 in 1853, had risen to 20,000 in 1880 (Lenz). These form a motley group of Sonrhais, Tuaregs, Mandingoes, Arabs from Mor- occo, Berabish Arabs, Bambaras, Fulahs, and since 1850 a few Jewish traders. Apart from some Christian captives, the place was reached during the 19th century by only four Europeans—Laing from Tripolitana (1826), who was murdered on his return journey, Caillié from the north (1828), Barth from central Sudan (1853), and Lenz from Morocco (1880). Since 1884, however, regular relations have been opened with the French on the upper Niger. From the ruins covering extensive tracts on the north and west sides, it is evident that Timbuktu was formerly a much larger place than at present. Even the great mosque, which must at onc time lave stood in the centre, now lies near the outskirts, where its high but unsightly earth tower forms a striking landmark. The aggregate of mean hovels or mud houses of which the place consists is only relieved by a few structures of a better class. As in former times, a great staple of trade is salt from Taudeni and other parts of the Sahara, here exchanged with gold dust for kola nuts from the south, Manchester goods, and some other European wares, which with tea are imported from Morocco or penetrate from the British protected territories along the lower Niger. Cowries, slowly peli to European moneys, are the chief currency. The local industries are mainly confined to some fancy and other leatherwork prepared by the Tuareg women. The local adminis- tration is in the hands of an hereditary kahia, a kind of mayor, descended from one of the Ruma families. The kahia is himself more or less under the control of a neighbouring Tuareg chief and of the powerful Bakhai family, who, as “TIME, MEASUREMENT oF.

Time is measured by suc- cessive phenomena recurring at regular intervals. The only astronomical phenomenon which rigorously fulfils this condition, and the most striking one,—the apparent daily revolution of the celestial sphere caused by the rotation of the earth,—has from the remotest antiquity been employed as a measure of time. The interval between two successive returns of a fixed point on the sphere to the meridian is called the sidereal day; and sidereal time is reckoned from the moment when the “first point of Aries” (the vernal equinox) passes the meridian, the hours being counted from 0 to 24. Clocks and chrono- meters regulated to sidereal time are only used by astro- nomers, to whom they are indispensable, as the sidereal time at any moment is equal to the right ascension of any star just then passing the meridian. For ordinary pur- poses solar time is used. In the article Astronomy (vol. ii. p. 771) it is shown that the solar day, as defined by the successive returns of the sun to the meridian, does not furnish a uniform measure of time, owing to the slightly variable velocity of the sun’s motion and the inclination of its orbit to the equator, so that it becomes necessary to introduce an imaginary mean sun moving in the equator with uniform velocity. The equation of time (loc. cit., pp. 772-773) is the difference between apparent (or true) solar tine and mean solar time. The latter is

that shown by clocks and watches used for ordinary pur- poses. Mean time is converted into apparent time by applying the equation of time with its proper sign, as given in the Vautical Almanac and other ephemerides for every day at noon. As the equation varies from day to day, it is necessary to take this into account, if the appar- ent time is required for any moment different from noon. The ephemerides also give the sidereal time at mean noon, from which it is easy to find the sidereal time at any moment, as 24 hours of mean solar time are equal to 24 3™ 565554 of sidereal time. About 21st March of each year a sidereal clock agrees with a mean-time clock, but it gains on the latter 3″ 56°5 every day, so that in the course of a year it has gained a whole day. For a place not on the meridian of Greenwich the sidereal time at noon must be corrected by the addition or subtraction of 98565 for each hour of longitude, according as the place is west or east of Greenwich.

While it has for obvious reasons become customary in all civilized countries to commence the ordinary or civil day at midnight, astronomers count the day from noon, being the transit of the mean sun across the meridian, in strict conformity with the rule as to the beginning of the sidereal day. The hours of the astronomical day are also counted from 0 to 24. An international conference which met in the autumn of 1884 at Washington, to con- sider the question of introducing a universal day (see below), has recommended that the astronoinical day should commence at midnight, to make it coincide with the civil day. The great majority of American and Continental astronomers have, however, expressed themselves very strongly against this change; and, even if it should be made in the British Nautical Almanac, it appears very doubtful whether the other great ephemerides will adopt it, the more so as astronomers have hitherto felt no in- convenience from the difference between the astronomical and the civil day.

Determination of Time.—The problem of determining the exact time at any moment is practically identical with that of determining the apparent position of any known point on the celestial sphere with regard to one of the fixed (imaginary) great circles appertaining to the observer's station, the meridian or the horizon. The point selected – is either the sun or one of the standard stars, the places of which are accurately determined and given for every tenth day in the modern ephemerides. The time thus determined furnishes the error of the clock, chronometer, or watch employed, and a second determination of time after an interval gives a new value of the error and thereby the rate of the timekeeper.

The ancient astronomers, although they have left us very ample information about their dials, water or sand clocks (clepsydrx), and similar timekeepers, are very re- ticent as to how these were controlled. Ptolemy, in his Almagest, states nothing whatever as to how the time was found when the numerous astronomical phenomena which he records took place; but Hipparchus in the only book we possess from his hand gives a list of forty-four stars scattered over the sky at intervals of right ascension equal to exactly one hour, so that one or more of them would be on the meridian at the commencement of every sidereal hour. In a very valuable paper! Schjellerup has shown that the right ascensions assumed by Hipparchus

agree within about 15’ or one minute of time with those calculated back to the year 140 B.c. from modern star-places and pro- per motions. The accuracy which, it thus appears, could be attained by the ancients in their determinations of time

1 “Recherches sur l’Astronomie des Anciens : I. Sur le chronométre

céleste d’Hipparque,” in Copernicus: An International Journal of As- tronomy, i. p. 25.

was far beyond what they seem to have considered neces- sary, as they only record astronomical phenomena (e.., eclipses, occultations) as having occurred “towards the middle of the third hour,” or “about 84 hours of the night,” without ever giving minutes! The Arabians had a clearer perception of the importance of knowing the accurate time of phenomena, and in the year 829 we find it stated that at the commencement of the solar eclipse on 30th November the altitude of the sun was 7° and at the end 24°, as observed at Baghdad by Ahmed ibn Abdallah, called Habash.? This seems to be the earliest determina- tion of time by an altitude; and this method then came into general use among the Arabians, who on observing lunar eclipses never failed to measure the altitude of some bright star at the beginning and end of the eclipse. In ‘ Europe this method was adopted by Purbach and Regio- montanus, apparently for the first time in 1457. Bernhard Walther, a pupil of the latter, seems to have been the first to use for scientific purposes clocks driven by weights : he states that on 16th January 1484 he observed the rising of the planet Mercury and immediately attached the weight to a clock having an hour-wheel with fifty-six teeth; at sunrise one hour and thirty-five teeth had passed, so that the interval was an hour and thirty-seven minutes. For nearly two hundred years, until the application of the pendulum to clocks became general, astronomers could place little or no reliance on their clocks, and consequently it was always necessary to fix the moment of an ob- servation by a simultaneous time determination. For this purpose Tycho Brahe employed altitudes observed with quadrants ; but he remarks that they are not always of value, for if the star is taken too near the meridian the altitude varies too slowly, and if too near the horizon the refraction (which at that time was very imperfectly

known) introduces an element of uncertainty. He therefore pre- ferred azimuths, or with the large “armillary spheres” which played so important a part among his instruments he measured hour-angles or distances from the meridian along the equator. Transits of stars across the meridian were also observed with the meridian quadrant, an instru- ment which is alluded to by Ptolemy and was certainly in use at the Mardgha (Persia) observatory in the 13th cen- tury, but of which Tycho was the first to make extensive use, It appears, however, that he chiefly employed it for determining star-places, having obtained the clock error by the methods already described.

In addition to these methods, that of “ equal altitudes ” was much in use during the 17th century. That equal distances east and west of the meridian correspond to equal altitudes had of course been known as long as sun-dials _ had been used ; but, now that quadrants, cross-staves, and parallactic rules # were commonly employed for measuring altitudes more accurately, the idea naturally suggested it- self to determine the time of a star’s or the sun’s meridian passage by noting the moments when it reached any par- ticular altitude on both sides of the meridian. But Tycho’s plan of an instrument fixed in the meridian was not for- gotten, and from the end of the 17th century, when Roemer invented the transit instrument, the observation of transits across the meridian became the principal means of deter- mining time at fixed observatories, while the observation of altitudes, first by portable quadrants, afterwards by re- flecting sextants, and during the 19th century by port- able alt-azimuths or theodolites, has been used on journeys.

1 For astronomical purposes the ancients made use of mean- time hours—Gpar lonuepwal, hore equinoctiales—into which they translated all indications expressed in civil hours of varying length—@paz xaipixal, hore temporales. Ptolemy counts the mean day from noon.

2 Caussin, Le livre de la grande table Hakémite, Paris, 1804, p. 100.

3 See his Epistole astronomice, p. 78. 4 See NAVIGATION, vol. xvii. pp. 251 and 258.

During the last fifty years the small transit instrument, with what is known as a “broken telescope,” has also been much employed on scientific expeditions; but great caution is necessary in using it, as the difficulties of getting a per- fectly rigid mounting for the prism or mirror which reflects the rays from the object-glass through the axis to the eye- piece appear to be very great, for strange discrepancies in the results have often been noticed. The gradual develop- ment of astronomical instruments has been accompanied by a corresponding development in timekeepers. From being very untrustworthy, astronomical clocks are now made to great perfection by the application of the pendu- lum and by its compensation, while the invention of chronometers has placed a portable and equally trust- worthy timekeeper in the hands of travellers.

We shall now give a sketch of the principal methods of determining time.

In the spherical triangle ZPS’ between the zenith, the pole, and a star the side 7P=90° — ¢ (¢ being the latitude), PS=90° — 6 (6 being the declination), and 7S or 7=90° minus the observed alti- tude. The angle ZPS=¢ is the star’s hour-angle or, in time, the interval between the moment of observation and the meridian pass- age of the star. We have then cos Z— sin @ sin 6

cos @ cos 6 which formula can be made more convenient for the use of logarithms by putting 7+¢+6=2S, which gives 21; sin(S— ¢) sin(S — 6) oo cos S cos(S—Z) ~

According as the star was observed west or east of the meridian, t will be positive or negative. Ifa be the right ascension of the star, the sidereal time =‘t+a, a as well as 6 being taken from an ephemeris. Ifthe sun had been observed, the hour-angle ¢ would be the apparent solar time. The altitude observed must be cor- rected for refraction, and in the case of the sun also for parallax, while the sun’s semi-diameter must be added or aibeeeteds accord- ing as the lower or upper limb was observed. The declination of the sun being variable, and being given in the ephemerides for noon of each aay: allowance must be made for this by interpolating with an approximate value of the time. As the altitude changes very slowly near the meridian, this method is most advantageous if the star be taken near the prime vertical, while it is also easy to see that the greater the latitude the more

uncertain the result. If a number of altitudes of the same object are observed, it is not necessary to deduce the clock error separately from each observa- tion, but a correction may be applied to the mean of the zenith distances. Supposing 2 observations to be taken at the moments T;, Tx, Ts,..., the mean of all being 7, and calling the z corre- sponding to this Z, we have

aZ 1 4=4+—7(T- Ty) +5

cost= A

a2Z apts — To? 3

dZ 1 &@Z t= 4+ (Ty — Th) +5 “gpl Fe- To)”;

and so on, ¢ being the hour-angle answering to Z>. As 2(7’- Ty) =0, these equations give gait tot tet ee ee (i Eo WPS oy = i n 2 ai? nN _mtetegt… @Z T2sin*4(T— TZ) – a ~ at? n ‘

But, if in the above-mentioned triangle we designate the angles at Z and S by 180°—4 and p, we have

sin z sin 4d=cos 6 siné; sinz cos d= —cos¢ sin 6+sin ¢ cos 6 cost; and by differentiation @Z_cos¢ cosdé cos A cosp

dt? sin Z ; in which 4 and p are determined by : sin t ‘ siné sin d= FZ cos 6 and sinp =sng °° @.

With this corrected mean of the observed zenith distances the hour- angle and time are determined, and by comparison with 7, the error of the timekeeper.

The method of equal altitudes gives very simply the clock error equal to the right ascension minus half the sum of the clock times corresponding to the observed equal altitudes on both sides of the meridian. When the sun is observed, a correction has to be applied for the change of declination in the interval between the observa- tions, Calling this interval 22, the correction to the apparent noon

given by the observations x, the change of declination in half the interval Ad, and the observed altitude 2, we have

sinh =sin ¢ sin (6 — Ad) + cos ¢ cos (5 — AS) cos (£ x) and sin h=sin ¢ sin (6 AS) + cos ¢ cos (6 + Ad) cos (f — x), whence, as cosx may be put=1, sinw=2, and tan Ad=Ad,

one tang tand

7 siné tant : which, divided by 15, gives the requircd correction in seconds of time. Similarly an afternoon observation may be combined with an observation made the following morning to find the time of apparent midnight.

The observation of the time when a star has a certain azimuth may also be used for determining the clock error, as the hour-angle can be found from the declination, the latitude, and the azimuth. As the azimuth changes most rapidly at the meridian, the observa- tion is most advantageous there, besides which it is neither neces- sary to know the latitude nor the declination accuratcly. In the article GropEsy (vol. x. p. 166) it has been shown how the observed time of transit over the meridian is corrected for the deviations of the instrument in azimuth, level, and collimation. This corrected time of transit, expressed in sidereal time, should then be equal to the right ascension of the object observed, and the difference is the clock error. In observatories the determination of a clock's error (a necessary operation during a night's work with a transit circle) is generally founded on observations of four or five "clock stars," these being standard stars not near the pole, of which the absolute right ascensions have been determined with great care, besides observation of a close circumpolar star for finding the error of azimuth and determination of level and collimation error.}

Observers in the field with portable instruments often find it inconvenient to wait for the meridian transits of one of the few close circumpolar stars given in the ephemerides. In that case they have recourse to what is known

as the method of time deter- mination in the vertical of a pole star. The alt-azimuth is first directed to one of the standard stars near the pole, such as a or 6 Urs Minoris, using whichever is nearest to the meridian at the time. The instrument is set so that the star in a few minutes will cross the middle vertical wire in the field. The spirit-level is in the meantime put on the axis and the inclination of the latter measured. The time of the transit of the star is then observed, after which the instrument, remaining clamped in azimuth, is turned to a clock star aud the transit of this over all the wires is observed. The level is applied again, and the mean of the two results is used in the reductions. In case the collimation error of the instrument is not accurately known, the instrument should be reversed and another observation of the same kind taken. The observations made in each position of the instrument are separately reduced with an assumed approximate value of the error of collimation, and two equations are thus derived from which the clock error and correction to the assumed collimation error are found. This use of the transit or alt-azimuth out of the meridian throws considerably more work on the computer than the meridian observations do, and it is therefore never resorted to except when an observer during field operations is pressed for time. The formule of reduction as developed by Hansen in the Astronomische Nachrichten (vol. xlviii.

p- 113 sq.) are. given by Chauvenet in his Spherical and Practical }

Astronomy (vol. ii. pp. 216 sq., 4th ed., Philadelphia, 1873). The subject has also becn treated at great length by Déllen in two memoirs, Die Zeitbestimmung vermittelst des tragbaren Durchgangs- instrument im Verticale des Polarsterns (St Petersburg, 1863 and 1874, 4to).

Longitude.—Hitherto we have only spoken of the de- termination of local time. But in order to compare ob- servations made at different places on the surface of the earth a knowledge of their difference of longitude becomes necessary, as the local time varies proportionally with the longitude, one hour corresponding to 15°. Longitude can be determined either geodetically or astronomically. The first method supposes the earth to be a spheroid of known dimensions. Starting from a point of departure of which the latitude has been determined, the azimuth from the

meridian (as determined astronomically) and the distance –

of some other station are measured. This second station then serves as a point of departure to a third, and by repeating this process the longitude and latitude of places at a considerable distance from the original starting-point may be found. Referring for this method to the articles EartH (FIGURE OF THE), GzopEsy, and SURVEYING, we

1 The probable error of a clock correction found in this way from oue star with the Dunsink transit circle was £08:052.

shall here only deal with astronomical methods of deter- mining longitude.

The earliest astronomer who determined longitude by astronomical observations seems to have been Hipparchus, who chose for a first meridian that of Rhodes, where he observed ; but Ptolemy adopted a meridian laid through the "'Insule Fortunate" as being the farthest known place towards the west.2, When the voyages of discovery began the peak of Teneriffe was frequently used as a first meri- dian, until a scientific congress, assembled by Richelieu at Paris in 1630, selected the island of Ferro for this purpose. Although various other meridians (e.g., that of Uranienburg and that of San Miguel, one of the Azores, 29° 25' west of Paris) continued to be used for a long time, that of Ferro, which received the authorization of Louis XIII. on 25th April 1634, gradually superseded the others. In 1724 the longitude of Paris from the west coast of Ferro was found by Louis Feuillée, who had been sent there by the Paris Academy, to be 20° 1' 45"; but on the proposal of Guil- laume de Lisle (1675-1726) the meridian of Ferro was assumed to be exactly 20° west of the Paris observatory. Modern maps and charts generally give the longitude from the observatory of either Paris or Greenwich according to the nationality of the constructor; the Washington meri- dian conference of 1884 has recommended the exclusive use of the meridian of Greenwich. On the same occasion it was also recommended to introduce the use of a "uni- versal day," beginning for the whole earth at Greenwich midnight, without, however, interfering with the use of local time.?

The simplest method for determining difference of longi- tude consists in observing at the two stations some celestial phenomenon which occurs at

the same absolute moment for the whole earth. Hipparchus pointed out how ob- servations of lunar eclipses could be used in this way, and for about fifteen hundred years this was the only method available. When RecioMonTANUS (q.v.) began to publish his ephemerides towards the end of the 15th century, they furnished other means of determining the longitude. Thus Amerigo Vespucci observed on 23d August 1499, some- where on the coast of Venezuela, that the moon at 7″ 30™ P.M. was 1°, at midnight 54° east of Mars; from this he concluded that they must have been in conjunction at 6″ 30”, whereas the Nuremberg ephemeris announced this to take place at midnight. This gave the longitude of his station as roughly equal to 54 hours west of Nuremberg. The instruments and the lunar tables at that time being very imperfect, the longitudes determined were very er- roneous ; see NAVIGATION (vol. xvii. p. 251), to which article we may also refer for a history of the long-discussed problem of finding the longitude at sea. The invention of | the telescope early in the 17th century made it possible to observe eclipses of Jupiter’s satellites; but there is to a great extent the same drawback attached to these as to lunar eclipses, that it is impossible to observe with suffi- cient accuracy the moments at which they occur.

Eclipses of the sun and occultations of stars by the moon were also much used for determining longitude be- fore the invention of chronometers and the electric tele- graph offered better means for fixing the longitude of observatories. These methods are now hardly ever em- ployed except by travellers, as they are very inferior as regards accuracy. For the necessary formule see Chau-

2 This was probably first done in the first century by Marinus of Tyre.

3 This proposal was chiefly dictated by a wish to facilitate the inter- national telegraph and railway traffic. In the United States, where the large extent of the country in longitude makes it impossible to use the time of one meridian, four standard meridians were adopted in 1888, viz., 75°, 90°, 105°, 120° west of Greenwich, so that clocks show- ing ‘‘ Eastern, Central, Mountain, or Pacific time” are exactly five, six, seven, or eight hours slower than a Greenwich mean-time clock.

TIM E

venet’s Spherical and Practical Astronomy, vol. i. pp. 518- 542 and 550-557.

We now proceed to consider the four methods for find- ing the longitudes of fixed observatories, viz., by (1) moon culminations, (2) rockets or other signals, (3) transport of chronometers, and (4) transmission of time by the electric telegraph.

1. Moon Culminations.—Owing to the rapid orbital motion of the moon the sidereal time of its culmination is different for different meridians. If, therefore, the rate of the moon’s change of right ascension is known, it is casy from the observed time of culmina- tion at two stations to deduce their difference of longitude. Let the right ascension of the moon a and its differential coefficients be computed for the Greenwich time 7’, and let the culmination be observed at two places whose longitudes from Greenwich are \ and N, the time of observation being 7+¢ and 7’+¢’ Greenwich time, or in local time 7+¢+A=0 and 7’+¢’+N=6’; we have then

ee Oe gee alae 6’- 9=(t’-)+5(t?-B)aat eo

and, as the difference of longitude is \’-A=(0’-0)-(¢’-Z), we have only to determine ¢’ —¢ from the first equation. This is simply done by a suitable selection of 7. Calling 7+4(¢+?t’)=7”, we have to put 7’-4(¢’-¢) and 7”’+3(¢’-¢) for T7+¢ and T+/. It is then easy to see that

1 gaye — peta dy _ psa 0 -O=(t — +t – OP 93

and, solving this equation by first neglecting the second term ou the right side and then substituting the value of ¢ -¢, thus found

ie 170-078 &a

“dafdt 24|_da/déi| dt In order to be as much as possible independent of instrumental elrors, some standard stars nearly on the parallel of the moon are observed at the two stations; these “‘moon-culminating stars” are given in the ephemerides in order to secure that both observers take the same stars. As either the preceding or the following limb, not the centre, of the moon is observed, allowance must be made for the time the semi-diameter

takes to pass the meridian and for the change of right ascension during this time. This method was

roposcd by Pigott towards the end of the 18th century, and has Bach much used ; but, thongh it may be very serviceable on journeys and expeditions to distant places where the chronometric and tele-

raphic methods cannot be employed, it is not accurate enough for

xed observatories. This is due, not only to the difficulties attend- ing the observation (the difference of personal error in observing the moon and stars, the different apparent enlargement of the moon by irradiation in different telescopes and under different atmo- spheric circumstances, &c.), but chiefly to the large coefficient with which 6’ — @ has to be multiplied in the final equation for V’ —X. Errors of four to six seconds of time have therefore frequently been noticed in longitudes obtained by this method from a limited number of observations: the longitude of the Madras observatory was for mapy years assumed to be 54 21™ 38-77, but subsequently by a telegraphic determination this was found to be 48°37 too great.

2. Signals.—In 1671 Picard determined the difference of longi- tude between Copenhagen and the site of Tycho Brahe’s observa- tory by watching from the latter the covering and uncovering of a fire lighted on the top of the observatory tower at Copenhagen. Powder or rocket signals have been in use since the middle of the 18th century; they are nowadays never used for this purpose, although several of the principal observatories of Europe were con- nected in this manner early in the 19th century.}

3. Transport of Chronometers.—This means of determining longi- tude was first tried in cases where the chronometers could be brought the whole way by sea, but the improved means of communication on land led to its adoption in 1828 between the observatories at Greenwich and Cambridge, and in the following years between many other observatories. A few of the more extensive expedi- tions undertaken for this object deserve to be mentioned. In 1843 more than sixty chronometers were sent sixteen times backwards and forwards between Altona and Pulkowa, and in 1844 forty chronometers were sent the same number of times between Altona and

Greenwich.? In 1844 the longitude of Valentia on the south- west coast of Ireland was determined by transporting thirty pocket chronometers via Liverpool and Kingstown and having an inter- mediate station at the latter place. ‘The longitude of the United States naval observatory has been frequently determined from Greenwich. The following results will give an idea of the accuracy of the method.?

in that term, ts

1 For instance, Greenwich and Paris in 1825 (Phil. Trans., 1826). The result, 6™ 215-6, is only about 0s°6 too great. ,

2 Asa great many of the chronometers used in 1844 were made by Dent and were of superior excellence, a smaller number was considered sufficient.

3 Gould, Transatlantic Longitude, p. 5, Washington, 1869.

Previous to 1849, 373 chronometers ……. 5h §m 128+52 Expedition of 1849, Bond's discussion …….. 118-20 os SICTS ice ccces 128° 06 rs »,. Bond's second result …….. 128° 26+0s-20 an 1835, 52 chronometers, 6 trips, Bond .. 138°490s-19

The value now accepted from the telegraphic determination is 5h §m 12509. The probable errors of the results for Pulkowa- Altona and Altona-Greenwich were supposed to be £05039 and 08-042. It is of course only natural tat the uncertainty of the results for the trans-Atlantic longitude should be much greater, considering the length of time which elapsed between the rating of the chronometers at the observatories of Boston (Cambridge, Massachusetts) and Liverpool. The difficulty of the method con- sists in determining the "travelling rate." Each time a chrono- meter leaves the station 4 and returns to it the error is determined, and consequently the rate for the time occupied by the journeys from 4 to B and from B to 4 and by the sojourn at B. Similarly a rate is found by each departure from and return to B, and the time of rest at A and B is also utilized for determining the station- ary rate. In this way a series of rates for overlapping intervals of time are found, from which the travelling rates may be interpolated. It is owing to the uncertainty which necessarily attaches to the rate of a chronometer during long journeys, especially by land, where they are exposed to shaking and more or less violent motion, that it is desirable to employ a great number. It is scarcely neces- sary to mention that the temperature correction for each chrono- meter must be carefully investigated, and the local time rigorously determined at each station during the entire period of the operations. 4. Telegraphic Determination of Longitude.—This was first sug- gested by the American astronomer 8. C. Walker, and owed its de- velopment to the United States Coast Survey, where it was employed from about 1849. Nearly all the more important public observa- tories on the continent of Europe have now been connected

in this way, chiefly at the instigation of the “Huropiiische Gradmessung,” while the determinations in connexion with the transits of Venus and those carricd out in recent years by the American and French Governments have completed the circuit of the greater part of the globe. The telegraphic method compares the local time at one station with that at the other by means of electric signals. If a signal is sent from the eastern station 4 at the local time 7, and received at the western station B at the local time 7, then, if the time taken by the current to pass through the wire is called 2, the difference of longitude is and similarly, if a signal is sent from B at the time 7, and received at A at Ts, we have A= 7, — T,- 2,

from which the unknown quantity x can be eliminated.

The operations of a telegraphic longitude determination can be arranged in two ways. KEither the local time is determined at both stations and the clocks are compared by telegraph, or the time determinations are marked simultancously on the two chronographs at the two stations, so that further signals for clock comparison are unnecessary. The first method has to be used when the tele- graph is only for a limited time each night at the disposal of the observers, or when the climatic conditions at the two stations are so different that clear weather cannot often be expected to occur at both simultaneously, also when the difference of longitude is so considerable that too much time would be lost at the eastern station waiting for the arrival of the transit record of one star from the western station before observing another star. The independent time determination also offers the advantage that the observations may be taken either by eye and ear or by the chronograph, and that the signals may be either audible beats of a relay or chrono- graphic signals, the rule being to have observations and signals made by similar operations. ‘The best way of using audible beats of a relay is to let the circuit pass through an auxiliary clock, which from second to second alternately makes and breaks the current, the making of the current being rendered audible by the tapping of the relays at both stations. If, now, the auxiliary and the observing clocks are regulated to a different rate, the coinci- dences of the beats of the relay with those of the observing clock can be noted with great accuracy, from which the difference between the two observing clocksis found. It has been proved by experience that the degree of accuracy with which the clock comparison can be made by one

coincidence is exactly equal to that of one chrono- graph signal, the probable error being in both cases about £05-015. It should, however, be mentioned that the interval between two consecutive coincidences cannot be made less than two minutes, whereas the chronograph signals may be given every second, and, as the observations made with the chronograph are also somewhat more accurate than those made by eye and ear, the chronograph should be used wherever possible. The other method, that of simultaneous registration at both stations of transits of the same stars, has also its advantages. Each transit observed at both stations furnishes a value of the difference of longitude, so that the final result is less dependent on the clock rate than in the first method, which necessitates the combination of a series of clock

errors determined during the night to forma value of the clock error for the time when the exchange of signals took place. When using this method it is advisable to select the stars in such a manner that only one station at a time is at work, so that the intensity of the current can be readjusted (by means of a rheostat) between every despatch and receipt of signals. This attention to the intensity of the current is necessary whatever method is em- ployed, as the constancy of the transmission time (x in the above equations) chiefly depends on the constancy of the current. The probable error of a difference of longitude deduced from one star appears to be! P

for eye and ear transits =£0%-08,

for chronograph transits 05-07 ; while the probable error of the final result of a carefully planned and well executed series of telegraphic longitude operations is gener- ally between £05015 and +£05‘025. .

It is evident that the success of a determination of longitude de- pends to a very great extent on the accurate determination of time at the two stations, and great care must therefore be taken to de- termine the instrumental errors repeatedly during a night’s work. But, in addition to the uncertainty which enters into the results from the ordinary errors of observation, there is another source. of error which becomes of special importance in longitude work, viz., the so-called personal error. The discovery of the fact that all

observers differ more or less in their estimation of the time when a star crosses one of the spider lines in the transit instrument was made by Bessel in 18207; and, as he happened to differ fully a second of time from several other observers, this remarkably large error naturally caused the phenomenon to be carefully examined. Bessel also suggested what appears to be the right explanation, viz., the co-operation of two senses in observing transits by eye and ear, the ear having to count the beats of the clock while the eye com- pares the distance of the star from the spider line at the last beat before the transit with the distance at the first beat after it, thus estimating the fraction of second at which the transit took place. It can easily be conceived that-one person may first hear and then see, while to another these sensations take place in the reverse order ; and to this possible source of error may be added the sensible time required by the transmission of sensations through the nerves to the brain and for the latter to act upon them. As the chronographic method of observing dispenses with one sense (that of hearing) and merely requires the watching of the star's motion and the pressing of an electric key at the moment when the star is bisected by the thread, the personal errors should in this case be much smaller than when the eye and ear method is employed. And it is a fact that in the former method there have never occurred errors of between half and a whole second such as have not unfrequently appeared in the latter method.

In astronomical observations generally this personal error does not cause any inconvenience, so long as only one observer is em- ployed at a time, and unless the amount of the error varies with the declination or the magnitude of the star; but when absolute time has to be determined, as in longitude work, the full amount of the personal equation between the two observers must be care- fully ascertained aud taken into account. And an observer's error has often been found to vary very considerably not only from year to year but even within much shorter intervals ; the use of a new instrument, though perhaps not differing in construction from the accustomed one, has also been known to affect the personal error. For a number of years this latter circumstance was coupled with another which seemed perfectly incomprehensible, the personal error appearing to vary with the reversal of the instrument, that is, with the position of the illuminating lamp east or west. But in 1869-70 Hirsch noticed during the longitude operations in Switzerland that this was caused bya shifting of the

reflector inside the telescope, by means of which the field is illuminated, which produced an apparent shifting of the image of the spider lines, unless the eye-piece was very accurately focused for the observer's sight. The simplest and best way to find the equation between two observers is to let one observe the transits of stars over half the wires in the telescope, and the other observe the transits over the remainder, each taking care to refocus the eye-piece for himself in order to avoid the above- mentioned source of error. The single transits reduced to the middle wire give immediately the equation ; and, in order to eliminate errors in the assumed wire-intervals, each observer uses alternately the first and the second half of the wires. Another method is in vogue at Greenwich, where each observer with the transit circle from a series of stars determines the clock error and reduces this to a common epoch (0 sid. time) by means of a clock rate found independently of personal error. The differences between the clock

1 Albrecht, Bestimmung von Ldngendifferenzen mit Hiilfe des elec- trischen Telegraphen, p. 80, Leipsic, 1869, 4to.

2 Maskelyne had in 1795 noticed that one of his assistants observed transits more than half a second later than himself, but this was sup- posed to arise from some wrong method of observing adopted by the assistant, and the matter was not further looked into.

errors thus found are equal to the personal equations. This method cannot, however, be recommended, as the systematic errors in the right ascensions of the stars and any slight variation of the clock rate would affect the personal equation ; the first method is there- fore generally used in longitude work. It is advisable to let the observers compare themselves at the beginning, middle, and end of the operations and, if possible, at both the instruments employed. A useful check on the results is afforded by simultaneous experi- ments with one of the instruments contrived by C. Wolf, Kaiser, and others (sometimes called ‘‘time collimators”), by which the absolute personal error of an observer can be determined. Though differing much in detail, these instruments are all constructed on the same principle: an artificial star (a lamp shining through a minute hole in a screen mounted on a small carriage moved by clockwork) passes in succession

across a nuinber of lines drawn on oiled paper, while an electric contact is made at the precise moment when the star is bisected on each line by the carriage passing a number of adjustable contact makers. The currents thus made register the transits automatically on a chronograph, while the observer, viewing the apparatus through his telescope, can observe the transits in the usual manner either by eye and ear or by chrono- graph, thus immediately finding his personal error. On the Conti- nent these contrivances have frequently been used to educate pupils learning to observe, and experience has repeatedly shown that a considerable personal error can be generally somewhat diminished

through practice.

Literature.—General treatises on spherical astronomy, such as Briinnow's Lehrbuch der sphirischen Astronomie (8d ed., Berlin, 1871; translated into English and several other languages) aud Chauvenet's Manual, treat very fully of the numerous methods of determining time by combination of altitudes or azimuths of several stars. The best handbook of telegraphic longitude work is Albrecht's already mentioned ; but any one engaging in practical work of this kind should consult the accounts of the numerous longitude determinations carried out during recent years, Fon sed the Publicationen des kon. Patel ad geodatischen Instituts ; Telegraphic Determination of Differences of Longitude by Officers of the United States Navy (Washington, 1880); Telegr. Determ. of Longi- tudes in Mexico, Central America, and on the West Coast of South America (Wash- ington, 1885); the Reports of the United States Coast and Geodetic Survey ; vol. ix. of the Account of the Great Trigonometrical Survey of India; and vol. iii. of Dun Echt observatory Publications. A discussion of all the investigations on personal errors up to 1875 was published by Dreyer in Proc. R. Irish Acad., 2d series, vol. ii., 1876, pp. 484-528. (J. L. E. D.)

TIMOLEON. The life of Timoleon, one of the noblest and most interesting of the men of old Greece, is closely bound up with the history of Si1crty (q.v.), and more par- ticularly of SyRacusE (g.v.), in the latter half of the 4th century B.c. It is as the champion of Greece against Carthage, and of constitutional government against violence and oppression, that he stands out as such a grand figure. His early career in his native Corinth was shaped

by a tragic incident. Timoleon had saved the life of his brother, Timophanes, on the field of battle; but, when that same brother, at the head of a band of mercenary soldiers, took possession of the acropolis and made himself practically a military despot and master of the city, Timoleon, after an ineffectual protest, let him be struck down by his brother- in-law and one or two other friends who had joined in his remonstrance. By the public opinion of Corinth generally his conduct was approved as patriotic ; but the curses of his mother and the cold looks of some of his kinsfolk and acquaintances drove him from the city into the solitude of the fields, and there, it would seem, for some years he pined away, hating life and even bent on ending it by voluntary starvation. He must have reached middle life when, in 344 B.c., envoys came from Syracuse to Corinth to appeal to the mother-city for relief from the intestine feuds and foreign mercenaries under which the Syracusans, and all the Greeks of Sicily, suffered. Carthage too, their old and bitter foe, after some years of quiet, was again bestirring herself and intriguing with the local des- pots. Corinth could not refuse her help, though her chief citizens declined the responsibility of attempting to estab- lish a settled government in the factious and turbulent Syracuse. By a sort of Divine inspiration, says Plutarch (Tim., 3), Timoleon, being named by an unknown voice in the popular assembly, was chosen by a unanimous vote to undertake the mission. THe sailed for Sicily with a few of the leading citizens of Corinth and a small troop of Greek mercenaries. On arriving at Rhegium he found that his movements were watched by a Carthaginian squadron, act- ing under the advice of a Syracusan, Hicetas, who had

made himself master of Leontini and aimed at supplanting with Carthaginian aid the younger Dionysius, still nomin- ally tyrant of Syracuse, but actually in possession only of the island citadel. Hicetas, whilst seeming to favour Corinthian intervention, was really working with Carthage on behalf of the tyrants. Timoleon, however, slipped away from the Carthaginian watch and landed at Tauromenium (Taormina), where he had a very friendly reception. At Adranum, an inland town, to which he came by invitation from a party among the citizens, he surprised Hicetas, and drove him back, with his troops utterly defeated, to Syra- cuse. The

Sicilian Greeks now rallied round him, and the following year (343) saw the surrender of Dionysius and Timoleon master of the entire city. Hailed by the citizens as a heaven-sent deliverer, he at once began the work of restoration, bringing in a multitude of new settlers from the mother-city and from Greece generally, and establishing a popular government on the basis of the laws of Diocles, which had been forgotten under the Dionysian régime. The impress of Timoleon's reforms seems to have lasted to the days of Augustus. The tyrants, too, in the other Sici- lian cities were put down, and his old enemy Hicetas went back to Leontini, where he lived as a private though power- ful citizen. He made one more attempt to overthrow Timoleon, and induced Carthage to send (340-339) a great army, which landed at Lilybeum (Marsala). The Syra- cusans could hardly be brought to face the invader; but with a miscellaneous levy of about 12,000 men, most of them mercenaries, Timoleon marched westwards across the island into the neighbourhood of Selinus and won a great and decisive victory on the Crimisus. The Carthaginian host is said to have outnumbered Timoleon's army in the proportion of seven to one. The general himself led on his infantry in person (Plut., Z'm., 27), and their enemy's dis- comfiture was completed by a blinding storm of rain and hail driven straight in their faces (Diod., xvi. 79). This victory gave the Greeks of Sicily many years of peace and safety from Carthage. Carthage made, however, one more effort and despatched some mercenaries to prolong the con- flict between Timoleon and the tyrants. But it soon ended (338 B.c.) in the defeat of Hicetas, who was taken prisoner and put to death, and in a treaty which confined the dominion of Carthage in Sicily to the west of the Halycus (Platani). Timoleon, having put down the despots and given freedom to the Greek cities of Sicily, retired into private life, though he remained practically supreme not only at Syracuse but throughout Sicily. This island, not- withstanding the many elements of discord which political revolution, with the return of exiles and the influx of new settlers, must have brought in, seems to have been during Timoleon's lifetime tranquil and contented. There are some characteristic stories told of his last days. Although blind, he used to come in his car into the assembly in the theatre and give his opinion, which was commonly accepted by a unanimous vote. An officious person once insisted on his giving the ordinary bail in a lawsuit ; but he replied that he had himself always been the consistent champion of law and of legal rights for them all. Again, when his military strategy was

unfavourably criticized, he expressed his grati- tude to heaven that he had won for the Syracusans the privilege of liberty of speech. He died in 337, and was buried at the cost of the citizens of Syracuse, who erected a grand monument to his memory in their market-place. Plutarch's Life of Timoleon and portions of Diodorus Siculus are our chief sources of original information. There is an admirable

and most interesting account of his life and work in chap. lxxxv. of Grote's History of Greece.

TIMON of Athens, a noted misanthrope, lived during

the Peloponnesian War. He is more than once alluded to by Aristophanes and other comedians of the Attic stage.

Pi ™M 397

Plutarch takes occasion to introduce a short account of his life in the biography of Mark Antony (ch. 70), and he gives his name to one of Lucian's dialogues. Shakespeare probably derived his knowledge of Timon mainly from Plutarch ; but the Timon of Shakespeare resembles the Timon of Lucian in so many points that some critics think Shakespeare (or whoever wrote the first sketch of the play) must have had access to the dialogue in question.

TIMON of Phlius, the well-known sillograph and scep- tic philosopher, flourished about 280 B.c. He studied philosophy under Stilpo the Megarian and Pyrrho of Elis, the famous sceptic. Thereafter he spent some time in Chalcedon, where he made a fortune by teaching and lec- turing. The rest of his life was passed chiefly at Athens, where he died at an advanced age.

The writings of Timon, if we may trust Diogenes Laertius (ix. ch. 12), were exceedingly numerous both in prose and in verse : besides the Zé\dor, he is asserted to have written epic poems, tragedies, comedies, satyric dramas, and other varieties. But he is best known as the author of the ZéA\o or sarcastic hexameter verses written against the Greek philosophers. They were divided into three books; in the first the author spoke in his own person, while in the second and third Xenophanes of Colophon replied to

inquiries addressed to him by Timon about early and late philo- ° sophers. From the fragments that remain (about 140 lines or parts of lines, printed in Mullach, Frag. Phil. Grexc., i. pp. 84-98) we see that Timon possessed some of the qualities of a great satirist together with a thorough command of the hexameter ; but there is no trace of any loftier aim than to awaken derisive laughter. Philosophers are ‘‘ excessively a ae murderers of many wise saws’ (ver. 96); the only two whom he spares are Xenophanes, ‘‘the modest censor of Homer’s lies” (v. 29), and Pyrrho, against whom ‘no other mortal dare contend” (v. 126). Besides the ZidXot we have some lines preserved from the Ivdaduol, a poem in elegiac verse, which appears to have inculcated the tenets of scepti- cism, and one or two lines or parts of lines which cannot be with certainty assigned to either poem.

TIMOR, an island of the East Indian Archipelago, the easternmost and largest of the lesser Sundanese group, stretching south-west and north-east for 300 miles between 8° 40’ and 10° 40’S. lat. and 123° 30’ and 127° E. long. It has a mean breadth of 60 miles, an area of over 11,000 square miles, and a population roughly estimated at about 500,000. Timor lies in deep water a little to the west of the hundred fathofn line, which marks in this direction the proper limit of the shallow Arafura Sea, flowing between it and northern Australia. It differs considerably from the other members of the Sundanese group both in the lie of its main axis (south-west and north-east instead of west and east), and in the great pre- valence of old rocks, such as schists, slates, sandstones, carboniferous limestones, and other more recent sediment- ary formations, and in its correspondingly slighter volcanic character. It comes, however, within the great volcanic zone which sweeps in a vast curve from the northern extremity of Sumatra, through Java and the other Sundan- ese islands, round to Amboina, Tidor, Ternate, Jilolo, and the Philippines. There appear to be at least two quiescent and other extinct cones, and the surface is everywhere ex- tremely rugged and mountainous, with numerous irregular ridges from 4000 to 8000 feet high, forming altogether a very confused orographic system. Mount Kabalaki in the eastern district of Manufahi rises above 10,000 feet (H. O. Forbes) ; the culminating point appears to be Mount Allas (11,500 feet) near the south coast. Owing to the preva- lent dry easterly winds from the arid plains of North Australia, Timor, like Ombay, Flores, and other neigh- bouring islands, has a much drier climate, with a corre- spondingly poorer

vegetation, than Java, and has few perennial streams and no considerable rivers. Hence, apart from almost untouched and unsurveyed stores of mineral wealth, such as iron, copper, and gold, which occur apparently in considerable quantities at several points, the island is poor in natural resources. The uplands, however,

yield good wheat and potatoes, while the woodlands, which nowhere form veritable forests, contain much excellent sandalwood. This and a noted breed of hardy ponies form the chief articles of export. Owing doubtless to the zone of deep water flowing between Timor and the Arafura Sea, the fauna of Timor presents, beyond a marsupial cuscus, scarcely any Australian types. The few mammals, such as a deer, a civet, a pig, a shrew, and monkeys, as well as the birds and insects, resemble ordinary Malayan forms as met with in Java and more especially in Celebes and the Moluccas. In its natural history, as well as its physical constitution and oceanic surroundings, Timor is thus entirely separated from Australia and should perhaps be grouped with Celebes, Buru, Ceram, and Jilolo as the surviving fragments of a Miocene continent intervening between Asia and Australia, but at no time connected with either.

The bulk of the population is certainly Papuan, but inter- mingled in the most varied proportions with Malayan, Indonesian, and other elements; hence it presents an extraordinary diversity of physical types, as is clearly shown by the portraits figured in H. O. Forbes’s Naturalist’s Wanderings in the Eastern Archipelago. The natives, still mainly independent of thcir nominal Dutch and Portuguese rulers, are divided into a large number of more or less hostile tribes, speaking as many as forty distinct Papuan and Malayan languages or dialects. Some are extremely rude and still addicted to head-hunting, at least during war, and to other bar- barous practices. In their wma-luli, or sacred (tabooed) enclosures, rites are performed resembling those of the Pacific islanders.

Politically Timor is divided between Holland and Portugal, the Dutch claiming the western section of 4500 square miles and 200,000 inhabitants, the Portugucse the eastern of nearly 6500 square miles and 300,000 inhabitants; the respective capitals, centres of govern- ment, and outports

are Kupang at the western extremity and Deli on the north-east coast. But there are a large number of practically independent petty states, as many as forty-seven in the Portuguese territory alone, where they take the name of ‘‘renos,” or kingdoms, under absolute ‘‘leoreis” or kinglets. The Dutch section forms with Sumba, Savu, Rotti, and the surrounding islets a residency administered by a Dutch resident stationed at Kupang, which has a population of 8000.

TIMOR LAUT (“Seaward Timor”), called also Trn- IMBER, an insular group in the East Indian Archipelago, forming the central and largest link in a double chain of islands which stretches from Timor through Kei and Aru to New Guinea. It lies nearly midway between Timor and Aru, and forms, not one continuous mass, as used to be supposed, but a group of three large islands,—Yamdena in the centre, separated by Wallace Channel from Larat in the north and by Egeron Strait from Selaru in the south, besides a cluster or chain of islets on the west and north sides. From one of these the name Yenimber appears to have been extended to the whole group, which stretches for about 100 miles south-west and north-east, nearly parallel with Timor, from which, however, it differs altogether in its physical constitution. H. O. Forbes, who surveyed Wallace Channel and the northern districts in 1882, describes it as a low coralline group seldom rising above 100 feet, except at Egeron Strait, where the cliffs are 400 feet high, and at Laibobar, apparently a volcanic islet on the west side, which has an extinct crater 2000 feet high. There are no streams, and the poor soil, covered with a typically coral island flora, yields little beyond maize—the staple food—manioc, sweet potatoes, tobacco, some sugar-cane, cotton, and a little rice. The fauna includes buffaloes in a wild state, a marsupial cuscus, some bats, the beautiful scarlet lory, new or rare varieties of the ground-thrush, honey-eater, and oriole. The birds seem to have come mainly from New Guinea, the insects from Timor, and a few of both from Australia.

The aborigines are evidently Papuans, with a language like that of the Kei Islanders ; but there isa large intermingling of Malayan and perhaps Indonesian elements. They are a fine race, often over 6 feet, and, like all Papuans, noted for their artistic sense, which is shown especially in their wood and ivory carvings. In other respects they are pagans in a low state of culture, mostly

divided into hostile communities and addicted to piracy. The group belongs to the Dutch, who have a “‘ post-holder ” stationed at Ritabel on the west coast of Larat, a trading station of the Bughis from Celebes.

TIMOTHEUS, a distinguished Athenian general, was a son of Conon, who restored the walls of Athens. To the military qualities of his father he added a love of letters, which found scope in his friendship with Isocrates. The considerable fortune which he inherited from his father seems to have been exhausted by him in the public service. In 375 B.c. the Athenians, then at war with Sparta, sent Timotheus with a fleet to the Ionian Sea, where he gained over Cephalonia and secured the friendship of the Acar- nanians and of Alcetas, king of the Molossians. He also made himself master of Corcyra, but used his victory with a moderation which won the goodwill of the conquered. At the same time he defeated a Spartan fleet at Alyzia on the Acarnanian coast. In 373 he was appointed to the command of a fleet destined for the relief of Corcyra, then beleaguered by the Spartans. But his ships were not fully manned, and to recruit their strength he first cruised in the Aigean. The delay excited the indignation of the Athenians, who brought him to trial; but, thanks to the exertions of his friends, Jason, tyrant of Phere, and Al- cetas, king of the Molossians, both of whom came to Athens personally to plead his cause, he was acquitted, but removed from the command, Iphicrates being appointed in his room. Being reduced to great poverty—for he had pledged his private property in order to put the fleet in an efficient state—he left Athens and took service with the king of Persia. We next hear of him in 367 or 366, when le was sent by the Athenians with an armament to support Ariobarzanes, satrap of Phrygia. But, finding that the satrap was in open revolt against Persia, Timotheus ab- stained from helping him and turned his arms against Samos, which was occupied by a Persian garrison. He took it after a ten months’ siege (365 B.c.). Sailing north, he then captured Sestus, Crithote, Torone, Potidza, Methone, Pydna, and many more cities. In 358 or 357, when Eubcea was in danger of falling into the hands of Thebes, the Athenians, in response to a spirited appeal of Timotheus, crossed over into the island and expelled the Thebans in three days. In the course of the Social War, which broke out shortly afterwards, Timotheus was de- spatched with Iphicrates,

Menestheus, son of Iphicrates, and Chares to put down the revolt. The hostile fleets sighted each other in the Hellespont ; but a gale was blow- ing, and Iphicrates and Timotheus decided not to engage. Chares, disregarding their opposition, lost many ships, and in his despatches he incriminated his colleagues so bitterly that the Athenians recalled them and put them on their trial for having taken bribes from the enemy to betray the fleet. The accusers were Chares and Aristophon. The former was an officer of notoriously bad character; the latter had himself stood in the dock no less than seventy- five times. Iphicrates was not above browbeating the jury, who accordingly acquitted him and his son. Timo- theus, who condescended to no such means of securing an acquittal, was condemned to pay avery heavy fine. Being unable to pay, he withdrew to Chalcis. The time and place of his death are not mentioned by ancient writers. The Athenians afterwards did what they could to repair the wrong they had done to Timotheus by remitting the greater part of the fine to his son Conon, by burying his remains in the Ceramicus, and by raising statues to his memory in the agora and the acropolis.

Our materials for the life of Timotheus are very imperfect, and the chronology is in some points uncertain. The chief authorities are Isocrates, Or., xv.; Xenophon, Hellenica, v. and vi.; Diodorus, xv. and xvi.; Cornelius Nepos, Vit. Zim.; and Polyznus, Strat.,

iii, 10. Other scraps are to be gleaned from the orators, Plutarch, &c. The speech Against Timotheus which has come down to us

under the name of Demosthencs is probably not by the orator. It is chiefly interesting as illustrating the straits to which Timotheus was reduced by his sacrifices in the public cause.

TIMOTHEUS, a celebrated Greek musician and poet, was a native of Miletus, and died, according to the Parian marble, in 357 or 356 B.c., at the age of ninety. He added one or more strings (the number is uncertain) to the lyre, whereby he incurred the displeasure of the con- servative Spartans. The few fragments of his poems are collected by Bergk in his Poetx Lyrici Greet.

TIMOTHY, or Trmoruevs (Acts xvi. 1, xvii. 14, c&c.), a Lycaonian, the son of a Gentile father but of a Jewish mother, Eunice (2 Tim. i. 5), became a disciple of Paul at the time of his visit to Derbe and Lystra, and in deference to Jewish feeling was circumcised. He accompanied the apostle on many of his journeys, and was employed by him on important missions (1 Thess. iii. 2; 1 Cor. iv. 17, xvi. 10). His name is associated with that of Paul in the opening salutations of both epistles to the Thessalonians, the second epistle to the Corinthians, and those to the Philippians and Colossians. He was therefore with Paul at Rome. At a later date he is mentioned in Heb. xiii. 23 as having undergone imprisonment but been released. For the epistles of Paul to Timothy, see PAsToRAL EPIsTLEs (vol. xviii. p. 348). On the basis of them he is tradition- ally represented as bishop of Ephesus, and tradition also tells that he suffered under Domitian. His martyrdom is celebrated on 24th January. The apocryphal Acta Timothei (Greek and Latin) have been edited by Usener en 1877); compare Lipsius, Apokr. Apostelgeschichten, ii, 2 (1884),

TIMUR Trmtr Bey or Trutr Lane (Timur ¢ Leng), “the lame Timur”—vulgarized into TAMERLANE—the renowned Oriental conqueror, was born in 1336 at Kesh, better known as Shahr-i-Sabz, “the green city,” situated some 50 miles south of Samarkand in Transoxiana. His father Teragai was head of the tribe of Berlas. Great- grandson of Karachar Nevian (minister of Jagatai, son of Jenghiz Khan, and commander-in-chief of his forces), and distinguished among his fellow-clansmen as the first con- vert to Islamism, Teragai might have assumed the high military rank which fell to him by right of inheritance ; but like his father Burkul he preferred a life of retirement and study. Under the paternal eye the education of young Timur was such that at the age of twenty he had not only become an adept in manly outdoor exercises but had earned the reputation of being an attentive reader of the Koran. At this period, if we may credit the Memoirs (Malfizdt), he exhibited proofs of a tender and sympathetic nature.

About 1358, however, he came before the world as a leader of armies. His career for the next ten or eleven years may be thus briefly summarized from the Memoirs. Allying himself both in cause and by family connexion with Kurgan, the dethroner and destroyer of Kezan, chief of the Jagatai, he was

deputed to invade Khorasan at the head of a thousand horse. This was the second warlike expedition in which he was the chief actor, and the accomplishment of its objects led to further operations, among them the subjection of Khwarizm and Urganj. After the murder of Kurgan the contentions which arose among the many claimants to sovereign power were arrested by the invasion of Tughlak Timur of Kashgar, a descendant of Jenghiz. Timur was despatched on a mission to the invader's camp, the result of which was his own appoint- ment to the government of Mdawar4'lmahr (Transoxiana). By the death of his father he was also left hereditary head of the Berlas. The exigencies of his quasi-sovereign position compelled him to have recourse to his formidable patron, whose reappearance on the banks of the Sihon

created a consternation not easily allayed. Maward'lnahr was taken from Timur and entrusted to a son of Tughlak; but he was defeated in battle by the bold warrior he had replaced at the head of a numerically far inferior force. Tughlak's death facilitated the work of reconquest, and: a few years of perseverance and energy sufficed for its accomplishment, as well as for the addition of a vast extent of territory. During this period Timur and his brother-in-law, Hosain—at first fellow-fugitives and wan- derers in joint adventures full of interest and romance— became rivals and antagonists. At the close of 1369 Hosain was assassinated and Timur, having been formally proclaimed sovereign at Balkh, mounted the throne at Samarkand, the capital of his dominions.

The next thirty years or so were spent in various wars and expeditions. He not only consolidated his rule at home by the subjection of intestine foes, but sought extension of territory by encroachments upon the lands of contemporary potentates. His conquests to the west and north-west led him among the Mongols of the Caspian, and to the banks of the Ural and the Volga; those to the south and south-west comprehended almost every province in Persia, including Baghdad, Kerbela, and Kurdistan. To this time belong the vestiges of his presence that still remain, such as the ruined monastery at Keghut near the Aras (Araxes), the cleft stone in the church at Dayiru '1- 'Omar (M'ar Jibrail) near Mardin, and the ruinless sites of such

ancient cities as Zaranj in Sistan. In 1398, when Timur was more than sixty years of age, Farishta tells us that, “informed of the commotions and civil wars of India,” he “began his expedition into that country,” and on 12th September ‘‘arrived on the banks of the Indus.” His passage of the river and upward march along the left bank, the reinforcement he provided for his grandson Pir Mohammed (who was invested in Multan), the capture of towns or villages accompanied, it might be, with de- struction of the houses and the massacre of the inhabitants, the battle before Delhi and the easy victory, the triumphal entry into the doomed city, with its outcome of horrors,— all these circumstances belong to the annals of India. In April 1399, some three months after quitting the capital of Mahmud Tughlak, Timur was back in his own capital beyond the Oxus. It need scarcely be added that an im- mense quantity of spoil was conveyed away. According to Clavijo, ninety captured elephants were employed merely to carry stones from certain quarries to enable the conqueror to erect a mosque at Samarkand. The war with the Turks which succeeded the return from India was rendered notable by the capture of Baghdad, Aleppo, and Damascus, and especially by the defeat and imprisonment of Sultan Bayazid. This was Timtr’s last campaign. Another was projected against China, but the old warrior was attacked by fever and ague when encamped on the further side of the Sthon (Syr-Daria) and died at Atrér (Otrar) on the 17th February 1405. Markham, in his introduction to the narrative of Clavijo’s embassy, states that his body “was embalmed with musk and rose water, wrapped in linen, laid in an ebony coffin, and sent to Samarkand, where it was buried.” Timur had carried his victorious arms on one side from the Irtish and the Volga to the Persian Gulf

and on the other from the Hellespont to the Ganges. Timtr’s generally recognized biographers are—‘Ali Yazdi, commonly called Sharifu ’d-Din, author of the Persian Zafar- nama, translated by Petis de la Croix in 1722, and from French into English by J. Darby in the following year; and Ahmed ibn Mohammed ibn Abdallah, al Dimashki, al ‘Ajmi, commonly called Ibn ‘Arabshah, author of the Arabic ‘Ajaibu °l Makhinkdt, trans- lated by the Dutch Orientalist Golius in 1636. In the work of the former, as Sir William Jones remarks, “the Tartarian conqueror is represented as a liberal, benevolent, and illustrious prince” ; in that of the latter he is ‘‘deformed and

impious, of a low birth and detestable principles.” But the favourable account was written

under the personal supervision of Timur’s grandson, Ibrahim, while the other was the production of his direst enemy. Few indeed, if any, original annals of this class are written otherwise than to order, under patronage, or to serve a purpose to which truth is secondary. Among less reputed biographies or materials for bio- graphy may be mentioned a second Zafarndma, by Maulana Nizému ’d-Din Shanab Ghazdni (Nizim Shami), stated to be ‘‘ the earliest known history of Timur, and the only one written _in his lifetime”; and vol. i. of the Matla‘u’s-Sa‘dain—a choice Persian MS. work of 1495—introduced to Orientalists in Europe by Ham- mer, Jahrbiicher, Dorn, and (notably) Quatremére. There are also the Memoirs (Malfizdt) and Institutes (Tuzwkdt), of which an important section is styled Designs and Enterprises (Tadbirdt wa Kangdshahd). Upon the genuineness of these doubt has been thrown. The circumstance of their alleged discovery and presenta- tion to Shah Jahan in 1637 was of itself open to suspicion. Alhazen, quoted by Purchas in his quaint notice of Timur, and referred to by Sir John Malcolm, can hardly be accepted as a seri- ous authority. His assumed memoir was printed for English readers in 1597 by William Ponsonby under the title of a Historie of the Great Emperor Tamerlan, drawn from the ancient monuments by Messire Jean du Bec, Abbot of Mortimer ; and another version of the same book is to be found in the Histoire du Grand Tamerlan, by De Sainctyon, published at Amsterdam in 1678. But, although the existence of this Alhazen of Jean de Bec has been believed by many, the more trustworthy critics consider the history and histo- rian to be equally fictitious. : ,

Reference may be made to two more sources of information. (1) Supposed likenesses of Timur are to be found in books and in the splendid collection of Oriental manuscripts and drawings in the British Museum. One contained in the Shah Jahén Néma—a gorgeous specimen of illuminated Persian manuscript and exquisite caligraphy—represents a most ordinary, middle – aged Oriental, with narrow black whisker fringing the cheek and meeting the tip of the chin in a scanty, pointed beard; a thin moustache

sweeps in a semicircle from above the upper lip; the eyebrow over the almond-shaped eye is marked but not bushy. But it were vain to seek for an expression of genius in the countenance. Another portrait is ree in a set of sketches by native artists, some of which, taken probably from life, show great care and cleverness. Timur is here displayed as a stoutish, long-bodied man, below the middle-height, in age and feature not unlike the first portrait, but with thicker and more straggling hair, and dis- tincter, though not more agreeable character in the facial expres- sion, yet not a sign of power, genius, or any elements of grandeur or celebrity. The uncomfortable figure in the Bodleian Library does not give much help. Sir John Malcolm has been at some pains to invest his portrait of Timur with individuality. But an analysis of his results leaves the reader in more perplexity than satisfaction at the kind of information imparted, and he reverts insensibly to the sources from which his instructor has himself been instructed. (2) As regards plays, in Marlowe's Tamburlainc Timur is described as tall of stature, straightly fashioned, large of limb, having joints strongly knit, long and sinewy arms, a breadth of shoulders to ‘‘ bear old Atlas's burden," pale of complexion, and with ‘amber hair wrapp'd in curls." The outline of this de- scription might be from Sharifu 'd-Din, while the colours are the poet's own. A Latin memoir of Tamerlane by Perondinus, printed in 1600, entitled Magni Tamerlanis Scytharum Imperatoris Vita, describes Timur as tall and bearded, broad-chested and broad- shouldered, well-built but lame, of a fierce countenance, and with receding eyes, which express cruclty and strike terror into the lookers-on. But Jean du Bec's account of Timur's appearance is quite different. Now Zamburlaine was written in 1586. The first English translation of Jean du Bec is dated in 1595, the Life by Perondinus in 1600, and Petis de la Croix did not introduce Sharifu 'd-Din or ‘Ali Yazdi to European readers till 1722. The dramatist must have heard of Timur in other quarters, equally reliable it may be with those available in the present stage of Oriental research. At the beginning of the 18th century Timur was represented in Rowe's Tamerlane as a model of valour and virtue. The plot, however, has little to do with history, and is improbable and void of interest. By Matthew Gregory Lewis again ‘‘Timour" is depicted as the conventional tyrant of a gorgeous melodrama, slaying, burning, slaughtering, and commit- ting every possible atrocity until checked by violent death and a poetical climax.

Apart from modern European savants and historians, and the more strictly Oriental chroniclers who have written in Persian, Turkish, or Arabic, the following authorities may be cited—Laonicus Chalcondylas, Joannes Leunclavius, Joachimus Camerarius, Petrus Perondinus, Lazaro Soranzo, Simon Mairlus, Matthew Michiovius. A score or so of other names are given by Samuel Purchas. See also Clements Markham's Clavijo, in the Hakluyt Society's pub- lications ; White's edition of Davy's translation of the Institutes (1783); Stewart's translation of the Malfigdt ; Malcolm's History of Persia; and Trans. Roy. Soc., 1885. (F. J. G.)

TIN—TIN

TIN (Lat. stannum, whence the chemical symbol "Sn"; atomic weight=117°6, O=16), being a component of bronze, was used as a metal thousands of years prior to the dawn of history. But it does not follow that pre- historic bronzes were made of metallic tin. When the un- alloyed metal was first introduced cannot be ascertained with certainty. All we know is that about the lst century the Greek word xacairepos designated tin, and that tin was imported from Cornwall into Italy after, if not before, the invasion of Britain by Julius Cesar. From Pliny's writings it appears that the Romans in his time did not realize the distinction between tin and lead: the former was called plumbum album or candidum to distinguish it from plum- bum nigrum (lead proper). The word stannum definitely assumed its present meaning in the 4th century (H. Kopp).

Grains of metallic tin occur as a subordinate admixture in the gold ores of Siberia, Guiana, and Bolivia. Of tin mineral compounds (which are not numerous) tinstone, SnO,, is the most important ; besides it only tin pyrites, which, according to Rammelsberg, exists in two varieties, FeCu,Sn8, and ZnFeCu,8n,8,, need be named here.

Tinstone or Cassiterite.—This native oxide of tin, SnO,, forms very hard quadratic crystals of specific gravity 6°8. The pure mineral is colourless, and it is very scarce ; most specimens are brown owing to the presence of ferric or manganic oxide. The faces of the crystals exhibit diamond lustre. There is also another native form, known as ‘‘ wood tin," occurring in roundish masses with a fibrous radiating fracture. The ore is found in veins or layers within the older crystalline rocks and slates. Being much more

highly proof against the action of water and carbonic acid than its matrix, the ore often presents itself in loose crystals as part of the sand of rivers (stream tin). The oldest known deposit of tinstone is that of Cornwall, where it occurs in granite and in the “killas” (a kind of metamorphic clayish slate), associated with wolframite, apatite, topaz, mica, tourmaline, arsenide of iron, and other minerals. Cornish tin ore is characteristically rich in arsenic. Minor Euro- pean deposits occur in the Erzgebirge, in Brittany, and in Galicia (Spain). A very considerable deposit of pure ore (chiefly stream tin) exists in the island of Banca; and in Malacca tinstone is found. Other relatively abundant deposits occur in Bolivia and Peru, and in Queensland and New South Wales (lately discovered).

Metallurgy.—In the extraction of tin from tinstone ore the first step is to pound the crude ore and wash away the lighter gangue with water (see METALLURGY, vol. xvi. p. 59). The washed ore is “roasted” to burn away the arsenic and sulphur and to convert the iron, originally present in the heavy and compact form of pyrites or arsenide, into light friable oxide, which is removed by a second washing process. If much oxide of copper is con- tained in the product, it is extracted with dilute sulphuric acid, and from the solution is recovered by precipitation with metallic iron (see CopPER, vol. vi. p. 347). The puri- fied ore, known as “black tin,” goes to the smelting furnace. During the roasting process the ore must be constantly agitated to prevent caking, and to bring the arseniferous, d&c., parts to the surface. To save manual labour, Oxland and Hocking have constructed a mechanical roaster. It consists of a slanting tube of boiler-iron, coated inside with fire-brick. The lower end opens into the fire-place ; the upper communicates with a set of chambers for the con- densation of the white arsenic produced. The washed ore, after being dried on the top of the chamber, is run thence by a funnel into the pipe, which is made to rotate about its axis from three to eight times per minute. Before the ore has travelled far down the arsenic and sulphur catch fire, and by the time it reaches the bottom it is fully roasted. It falls into a receptacle below the level of the

fire. Of the impurities of the ore the wolframite (tungstate of iron and manganese) is the most troublesome, because on account of its high specific gravity it cannot be washed away as gangue. ‘To remove it, Oxland fuses the ore with a certain proportion of carbonate of soda, which suffices to convert the tungsten into soluble alkaline tungstate, with- out producing noteworthy quantities of soluble stannate from the oxide of tin; the tungstate is easily removed by treatment with water.

Smelting.—The purified ore is mixed with about one- fifth of its weight of anthracite smalls, the mixture being moistened to prevent it from being blown off by the draught, and is then fused on the sole of a reverberatory furnace for five or six hours. The slag and metal pro- duced are then run off and the latter is cast into bars; these are in general contaminated with iron, arsenic, copper, and other impurities. To refine them, the bars are heated cautiously on an inclined hearth, when relatively pure tin runs off, while a skeleton of impure metal remains. The metal run off is further purified by poling, ze, by stirring it with the branch of a tree,—the apple tree being preferred traditionally. This operation is no doubt in- tended to remove the oxygen diffused throughout the metal as oxide, part of it perhaps chemically by reduction of the oxide to metal, the rest by conveying the finely diffused oxide to the surface and causing it to unite there with the oxide scum. After this the metal is allowed to rest for a time in the pot at a temperature above its freezing point and is then ladled out into ingot forms, care being taken at each stage to ladle off the top stratum. The original top stratum is the purest, and each succeeding lower stratum has a greater proportion of impurities ; the lowest consists largely of a solid or semi-solid alloy of tin and iron.

To test the purity of the metal, the tin-smelter heats the bars to a certain temperature just below the fusing point, and then strikes them with a hammer or lets them fall on a stone floor from a given height. If the tin is pure it splits into a mass of granular strings. Tin which has been thus manipulated and proved incidentally to be very pure is sold as grain tin. A lower quality goes by the name of block tin. Of the several commercial varieties Banca tin is the purest; it is indeed almost chemically pure. Next comes English grain tin. For the preparation of chemically pure tin two methods are employed. (1) Commercially pure tin is treated with nitric acid, which converts the tin proper into an insoluble hydrate of SnO,, while the

copper, iron, é&c., become nitrates; the oxide is washed first with dilute nitric acid, then with water, and is lastly dried and reduced by fusion with black flux or cyanide of potassium. (2) A solution of pure stannous chloride in very dilute hydrochloric acid is reduced with a galvanic current. According to Stolba, beautiful crystals of pure tin can be obtained as follows. A platinum basin, coated over with wax or paraffin outside, except a small circle at the very lowest point, is placed on a plate of amal- gamated zinc, lying on the bottom of a beaker, and is filled with a solution of pure stannous chloride. The beaker also is cautiously filled with acidulated water up to a point beyond the edge of the platinum basin. The whole is then left to itself, when crystals of tin gradually separate out on

the bottom of the basin.

Properties of Pure Tin.—An ingot of pure tin is pure white (ex- cept for a slight tinge of blue); it exhibits considerable lustre and is not subject to tarnishing on exposure to normal air. The metal is pretty soft and easily flattened out under the hammer, but almost devoid of tenacity. That it is elastic, within narrow limits, is proved by its clear ring when struck with a hard body under circumstances permitting of free vibration. The specific gravity of ingot tin is 7°293 at 18° C. (Matthiessen). A tin ingot, though seemingly amor- phous, has a crystalline structure, consisting of an aggregate of quadratic octahedra ; hence the characteristic crackling noise which

a bar of tin gives out when being bent. This structure can be rendered visible by superficial etching with dilute acid. As the minuter crystals dissolve more quickly than the larger ones, the surface assumes a frosted appearance (moirée métallique), not unlike that of a frozen window-pane in winter time. _ Its crystalline struc- ture must account for the striking fact that the ingot, when exposed for a sufficient time to very low temperatures (to ~~39° C. for 14 hours), becomes so brittle that it falls into powder under a pestle or hammer ; it indeed sometimes crumbles into powder spontaneously. At ordinary temperatures tin proves fairly ductile under the hammer, and its ductility seems to increase as the temperature rises up to about 100°C. At some temperature near its fusing point it be~~ comes brittle

(vide supra), and still more brittle from —14° C. downwards. This behaviour of the mctal may probably be explained by assuming that in any tin crystal the coefticient of thermic ex- pansion has one value in the direction of the principal axis and another in that of either of the subsidiary axes. From 0° to 100° the two coefficients are practically identical; below -14° and from somewhere above 100° C. upwards they assunie different valucs ; and, as the several crystals are oriented in a lawless fashion, this must tend to disintegrate the mass. Tin fuses at 232°-7 (Persoz) ; ata red heat it begins to volatilize slowly ; at 1600° to 1808° C. (Carnelley and Williams) it boils. The hot vapour produced com- bines with the oxygen of the air into white oxide, SnO,.

Industrial Applications. —Commereially pure tin is used (princi- pally in Germany) for the making of pharmaceutical apparatus, such as evaporating basins for extracts, infusion pots, stills, &c. It is also employed for making two varieties of tin-foil,—one for the silvering of mirrors (see Mirror, vol. xvi. p. 500), the other for wrapping up chocolate, toilet soap, tobacco, &c. The mirror foil must contain some copper to prevent it from being too readily amalgainated by the mercury. For making tin-foil the metal is rolled into thin sheets, pieces of which are beaten out with a wooden mallet. As pure tin does not tarnish in the air and is proof against acid liquids, such as vinegar, lime juice, &c., it is utilized for culinary and domestic vessels. But it is expensive, and tin vessels have to be made very heavy to give them sufficient stability of form ; hence it is generally employed merely as a protecting coating for utensils made essentially of copper or iron. The tinning of a copper basin is an easy operation. The basin, made scrupulously clean, is heated over a charcoal fire to beyond the fusing point of tin. Molten tin is then poured in, a little powdered sal-ammoniac added, and the tin spread over the inside with a bunch of tow. The sal- ammoniac removes the last unavoidable film of oxide, leaving a purely metallic surface, to which the tin adheres firmly. For tinning small objects of copper or brass (7.e., pins, hooks, &c.) a wet-way process is followed. One part of cream of tartar, two of alum, and two of common salt are dissolved in boiling water, and the solution is boiled with granulated metallic tin (or, better, mixed with a little stannous chloride) to produce a tin solution ; and into this the articles are put at a boiling heat. In the absence of metallic tin there is no visible change ; but, as soon as the metal is introduced, a

galvanic action sets in and the articles get coated over with a firmly adhering film of tin. Tinning wrought iron is effected by immersion. The most important form of the operation is mak- ing tinned from ordinary sheet iron (making what is called ‘‘ sheet tin”). The iron plates, having been carefully cleaned with sand and muriatic or sulphuric acid, and lastly with water, are plunged into heated tallow to drive away the water without oxidation of the metal. They are next steeped in a bath, first of molten ferrugin- ous, then of pure tin. They are then taken out and kept suspended in hot tallow to enable the surplus tin to run off. The tin of the second bath dissolves iron gradually and becomes fit for the first bath. To tin cast-iron articles they must be decarburetted superficially by ignition within a bath of ferric oxide (powdered hematite or similar material), then cleaned with acid, and tinned by immersion, as explained above. By far the greater part of the tin produced metallurgically is used for making tin alloys, the majority of which have been treated of in preceding articles; see LED, vol. xiv. p. 378 ; PEWTER, vol. xviii. p. 725; Bronze, vol. iv. p. 866; PHosPHORUS, vol. xviii. p. 817.

Tin Compounds.—The most important of these may be arranged into two classes, namely, stannous compounds, SnX,, and stannic compounds, SnX,4, where X stands for Cl, Br, 40, &c. Stannous compounds are, in general at least, characteristically prone to pass into the stannic form by taking up additional X, in the form of oxygen, chlorine, &c.

Stannous Chloride, SnCl,.—This can be obtained pure only by heating pure tin in a current of pure dry hydrochloric acid gas. It is a white solid, fusing at 250° C. and volatilizing at a red heat in nitrogen, a vacuum, or hydrochloric acid, without decomposition. The vapour density below 700° C. corresponds to Sn,Cl,, above 800°C. to nearly SnCl, (Von Meyer and Ziiblin). The chloride readily com- bines with water into an easily soluble crystallizable hydrate (‘‘ tin crystals”). This is made without difficulty by dissolving tin in strong hydrochloric acid and allowing it to crystallize. For its industrial preparation Nollner passes sufficiently hydrated hydro-

chloric acid gas over granulated tin contained in stoneware bottles and evaporates the concentrated solution produced in tin basins over granulated tin. The basin itself is not attacked. The crystals contain one H,O according to Berzelius, while Marignac finds two ; probably both are right. The crystals are very soluble in cold water, and if the salt is really pure a small proportion of water forms a clear solution ; but on adding much water most of the salt is decomposed, with the formation of a precipitate of oxy-chloride— 28nCl, +3H,0 =2HCl + Sn,0Cl,.2H,0. According to Michel and Kraft, one litre of cold saturated solution of tin crystals weighs 1827 grammes and contains 1333 grammes of SnCl,. The same oxy-chloride is produced when the moist crystals, or their solution, are exposed to the air; by the action of the atmo- spheric oxygen * 04+8SnCl,=Sn,Cl,0 +SnCl,. Hence all tin crystals as kept in the laboratory give with water a turbid solution, which contains stannic in addition to stannous chloride. The complete conversion of stannous into stannic chloride may be effected by a great many reagents,—for instance, by chlorine (bromine, iodine) readily ; by mercuric chloride, HgClo, in the heat, with precipitation of calomel, HgCl, or metallic mercury ; by ferric chloride in the heat, with formation of ferrous salt, FeCl, ; by ar- senious chloride in strongly hydrochloric solutions, with precipita- tion of chocolate-brown metallic arsenic. All these reactions are available as tests for stannosum or the respective agents. In opposi- tion to stannous chloride, even sulphurous acid (solution) behaves as an oxidizing agent. If the two reagents are mixed, a precipitate of yellow stannic sulphide is produced. By first intention SO,H, + 8Sn”Cl, = 388n’¥Cl,0 + HS. The stannic oxy-chloride readily exchanges its O for Cl, at the ex- pense of the hydrochloric acid, which is always present, and the H,S decomposes one-half of a molecule of SnCl, with formation of SnS,. A strip of metallic zinc when placed in a solution of stan- nous chloride precipitates the tin in crystals and takes its place in the solution. Stannous chloride is largely used in the laboratory as a reducing agent, in dyeing as a mordant.

Stannous Oxide.—This as a hydrate is obtained from a solution of stannous chloride by addition of carbonate of soda; it forms a white precipitate, which can be washed with air-free water and dried at 80°C. without much change by oxidation. If the hydrate is heated in carbonic acid, the black anhydride SnO remains (Otto). Precipi- tated stannous hydrate dissolves

readily in caustic potash ley ; if the solution is evaporated quickly, it suffers decomposition, with formation of metal and stannate,

28n0 + K,O =Sn0,K,0 +Sn. If it is evaporated slowly, anhydrous stannous oxide crystallizes out at a certain stage (Otto). Dry stannous oxide, if touched with a glowing body, catches fire and burns into binoxide, SnO,. Stan- nous oxalate when heated by itself in a tube leaves stannous oxide (Liebig).

Stannic chloride, SnCl,, is obtained by passing dry chlorine over granulated tin contained in a retort; the tetrachloride distils over as a heavy liquid, from which the excess of chlorine is easily re- moved by shaking with a small quantity of tin filings and re-dis- tilling. It is a colourless fuming liquid of specific gravity 2°269 at 0° (Pierre) and 2°234 at 15°C. (Gerlach), is fluid at — 29°C., and boils at 115°:4 C. under 753°1 mm. pressure (Pierre). The chloride unites energetically with water into crystalline hydrates (ex. SnCl,,3H,0), easily soluble in water. It combines readily with alkaline and other chlorides into double salts: thus SnCl,+2KCl=SnCl,K,, analogous to the chloro-platinate; another example is the salt SnCl,(NH,)., known industrially as ‘‘ pink salt,” because it is used asamordant to producea pink colour. The plain chloride solution is similarly used. It is usually prepared by dissolving the metal in aqua regia.

Stannic Oxide, SnO,.—This, if the term is taken to include the hydrates, exists in a variety of forms. (1) Jinstone (see above) is proof against all acids. Its disintegration for analytical purposes can be effected by fusion with caustic alkali in silver, with the formation of soluble stannate, or by fusion with sulphur and car- bonate of soda, with the formation of a soluble thio-stannate, SnS.+xNa,S. (2) A similar oxide is produced by burning tin in air at high temperatures or exposing any of the hydrates to a strong red heat. Such ¢in-ash, as it is called, is used for the polishing of optical glasses. (8) Meta-stannic acid (H,OSnO,, generally written

199N;0};, to account for the complicated composition of meta- stannates, ¢.g., the soda salt H,Na,Sn,0,,) is the white hydrate produced from the metal by means of nitric acid. It is insoluble in water and in nitric acid and apparently so in hydrochloric acid ; but if heated with this last for some tine it passes into a hydro- chlorate, which, after the acid mother liquor has been

decanted off, dissolves in water. The solution when subjected to distillation behaves pretty much like a physical solution of the oxide in hydro- chloric acid, while a solution of ortho-stannic acid in hydrochloric acid behaves like a solution of SnCl, in water, z.2., gives off no hydrochloric acid and no precipitate of hydrated SnO,. (4) Ortho-

stannic acid is obtained as a white precipitate on the addition of carbonate of soda or the exact quantity of precipitated carbonate of lime to a solution of the chloride. This hydrate, SnO,H.0, is readily soluble in acids forming stannic salts, and in caustic potash and soda, with the formation of ortho-stannates. Of these stannate of sodium, Na,SnO,, is produced industrially by heating tin with Chili saltpetre and caustic soda, or by fusing very finely powdered tinstone with caustic soda in iron vessels. A solution of the pure salt yields fine prisms of the composition Na,SnO;+10H,0, which effloresce in the air. The salt is much used asa mordant in dyeing and calico-printing. Alkaline and other stannates when treated with aqueous hydrofluoric acid are converted into fluo-stannates (e.g., K,SnO; into K,Sn¥F,), which are closely analogous to, and iso- morphous with, fluo-silicates.

Sulphides.—If tin is heated with sulphur the two unite very readily into stannous sulphide, SnS, a lead-grey mass, which under the circumstances refuses to take up more sulphur. But, if a mixture of tin (or, better, tin amalgam), sulphur, and sal-ammoniac in proper proportions be heated, stannic sulphide, SnS,, is produced in the beautiful form of aurum musivum (mosaic gold),—a solid consisting of golden yellow, metallic lustrous scales. It is used chiefly as a yellow ‘‘ bronze” for plaster-of-Paris statuettes, &c.

Analysis. —Tin compounds when heated on charcoal with car- bonate of soda in the reducing blowpipe flame yield metal and a scanty ring of white SnO,. The reduction, however, succeeds better with cyanide of potassium asa flux. Stannous salt solutions yield a brown precipitate of SnS with sulphuretted hydrogen, which is insoluble in cold dilute acids and in real sulphide of ammonium, (NH,),S ; but the yellow, or the colourless reagent on addition of sulphur, dissolves the precipitate as SnS, salt. The solution on acidification yields a yellow precipitate of this sulphide. Stannic salt,

SnCl,, solutions give a yellow precipitate of SnS, with sulphur- etted hydrogen, which is insoluble in cold dilute acids but readily soluble in sulphide of ammonium, and is re-precipitated therefrom as SnS, on acidification. Only stannous salts (not stannic) give a precipitate of calomel in mercuric chloride solution. A mixture of stannous and stannic chloride when added to a sufficient quantity of solution of chloride of gold, gives an intensely purple precipitate of gold purple (purple of Cassius),—a compound which, although known for centuries, is to this day little understood chemically. It behaves on the whole like a compound of Sn,0, with Au,O. The test is very delicate, although the colour is not in all cases a pure purple. ; ; (W. D.)

TINAMOU, the name given in Guiana to a certain bird as stated in 1741 by Barrere (France Hquinomale, p. 138), from whom it was taken and used in a more general sense by Buffon (Hist. Vat. Oiseaux, iv. p. 502). In 1783 Latham (Synopsis, ii. p. 724) adopted it as English, and in 1790 (Index, ii. p. 633) Latinized it Zinamus, as the name of a new and distinct genus. The ‘“‘Tinamou” of Barrere has been identified with the “Macucagua” described and figured by Marcgrave in 1648, and is the Zinamus major of modern authors.

Buffon and his successors saw that the Tinamous, though passing among the European colonists of South America as “ Partridges,” could not be associated with those birds, and Latham’s step, above mentioned, was generally ap- proved. The genus he had founded was usually placed among the Galline, and by many writers was held to be allied to the Bustards, which, it must be remembered, were then thought to be “‘Struthious.” Indeed the likeness of the Tinamou’s bill to that of the Raza (vol. xx. p. 506) was remarked in 1811 by LIlliger. On the other hand L’ Herminier in 1827 saw features in the Tinamou’s sternum that in his judgment linked the bird to the Ralliidx. In 1830 Wagler (Wat. Syst. Amphibien, &c., p. 127) placed the Tinamous in the same Order as the Ostrich and its allies ; and, though he did this on very insufficient grounds, his assignment has turned out to be not far from the mark, as in 1862 the great affinity of these groups was shown by Prof. Parker’s researches, which were afterwards printed in the Zoological T’ransactions (v. pp. 205-232, 236-238, pls. xxxix.-xli.), and was further substantiated by him in the Philosophical Transactions (1866,

pp. 174-178, pl. xv.). Shortly after this Prof. Huxley in his often-quoted paper in the Zoological Proceedings (1867, pp. 425, 426)

1 Brisson and after him Linnzus confounded this bird, which they had never seen, with the TRUMPETER (q.v.).

was enabled to place the whole matter in a clear light, urging that the Tinamous formed a very distinct group of birds which, though not to be removed from the Carinatz, presented so much resemblance to the fatite as to indicate them to be the bond of union between those two great divisions.!| The group from the resemblance of its palatal characters to those of the Emeu (vol. viii. p. 171), Dromezus, he called Dromexognathx, and his decision, if not his name,

has since been widely accepted.

The Tinamous thus—by whatever name we call them, Dromxo- gnathex, Tinami, or Crypturi—will be seen to be of great importance from a taxonomer's point of view, though in regard to numbers they are comparatively insignificant. In 1873 Messrs. Sclater and Salvin in their Nomenclator (pp. 152, 153) recognized nine genera and thirty-nine species, since which time about half a dozen other species may have been described ; but in 1880 Schlegel (Mus. Pays- Bas, viii., Monogr. 41, pp. 1-51) would only admit five genera and thirty-one 5 Sige latter because it was the number possessed by the Leyden museum. They are peculiar to the Neotropical Region—four species only finding their way into southern Mexico and none beyond. Some of them inhabit forests and others the more open country ; but setting aside size (which in this group varies from that of a Quail to that of a large common Fowl) there is an unmis- takable uniformity of appearance among them as a whole, so that almost. anybody having seen one species of the group would always recognize another. Yet in minor characters there is considerable difference among them ; and first of all the group may be divided into two sub-families, the first, Zinaminw, having four toes, and the second, Tinamotiding, having but three—the latter containing, so far as is known, but two genera, Calopezus and Tinamotis, eac consisting of a single species, while the former, according to Messrs.

Sclater and Salvin (wt supra), may be separated into seven genera, two being Tinamus and Nothocercus, characterized by the roughness of their posterior tarsal scales, the others, Crypturus, Rhynchotus, Nothoprocta, Nothura, and Taoniscus, having smooth legs.

To the ordinary spectator Tinamous have much the

look of Partridges, but the more attentive observer will

Rufous tinamou (Rhynchotus rufescens).

notice that their elongated bill, their small head and slender neck, clothed with very short feathers, give them a different air. The plumage is generally inconspicuous : some tint of brown, ranging from rufous to slaty, and often more or less closely barred with a darker shade. or black, is the usual style of coloration; but some species are characterized by a white throat or a bay breast. The wings are short and rounded, and in some forms the feathers of the tail, which in all are hidden by their coverts, are soft. In bearing and gait the birds show some resem- blance to their distant relatives the Ratitz, and Mr

1M. Alix also has from an independent investigation of the osteo-

logy and myology of Nothwra major come to virtually the same con- clusion (Journ. de Zoologie, iti. pp. 169 and 252, pls. Viii. -xi.).

Bartlett shows (Proc. Zool. Society, 1868, p. 115, pl. xii.) that this is especially seen in the newly-hatched young. He also notices the still stronger Ratite character, that the male takes on himself the duty of incubation. The eggs are very remarkable objects, curiously unlike those of other birds ; and, as before stated (Brrps, vol. iii. p. 775), their shell? looks as if it were of highly-burnished metal or glazed porcelain, presenting also various colours, which seem to be constant in the particular species, from pale primrose to sage-green or light indigo, or from chocolate- brown to pinkish orange. All who have eaten it declare the flesh of the Tinamou to have a most delicate taste, as it has a most inviting appearance, the pectoral

muscles being semi-opaque. Of their habits not much has been told. Darwin (Journal, chap. iii.) has remarked upon the silliness they show in allowing themselves to be taken, and this is wholly in accordance with what Prof. Parker ob- serves of their brain capacity, and is an additional testi- mony to their low morphological rank. At least one species of Tinamou has bred not unfrequently in confine- ment, and an interesting account of what would have been a successful attempt by Mr John Bateman to naturalize this species, Rhynchotus rufescens, in England, at Brightling- sea in Essex, appeared in Zhe Meld (23d Feb. 1884 and 12th Sept. 1885). The experiment unfortunately failed owing to the destruction of the birds by foxes. (A. N.

TINDAL, Matruew (1656-1733), one of the ablest and most popular of the English deists, the son of a clergyman, was born at Beer Ferris, Devonshire, in 1656. He studied law at Lincoln College, Oxford, where he came under the influence of the High Churchman George Hickes, dean of Worcester ; and in his twenty-second year he was elected fellow of All Souls College, and held his fellowship till his death. About 1685 he saw “that upon his High Church notions a separation from the Church of Rome could not be justified,” and accordingly he joined the latter. But, discerning the baselessness and absurdity of Rome’s claims, he returned to the Church of England at Easter 1688. In 1694 he published an Essay of Obedience to the Supreme Powers, in which he justified the Revolution against notions of passive obedience and jus divinwm ; in 1697 an Essay on the Power of the Magistrate and the Rights of Mankind in Matters of Religion, an able vindica- tion of liberty of conscience, though he allows no right of toleration to “atheists”; and in 1698 an essay on Zhe Liberty of the Press, a vigorous exposure of the proposal to appoint licensers of the press and a powerful plea for the free discussion of religion. The first of his two larger works, Zhe Rights of the Christian Church associated against the Romish and all other priests who claim an independent power over it, part i, appeared anonymously in 1706 (2d ed., 1706; 3d, 1707; 4th, 1709). The book was regarded in its day as an extremely forcible defence of the Erastian theory of the supremacy of the state over the church, and at once provoked a storm of counter-argument and abuse on the part of those who maintained the independent rights and authority of the church. The law also was invoked against it, and, after several attempts to proscribe the work had failed, one against the author, publisher, and printer succeeded on 12th December 1707, and another against a bookseller for selling a copy the next

day. The prosecu- tion did not prevent the issue of a fourth edition and gave the author the opportunity of issuing A Defence of the Rights of the Christian Church, in two parts (2d ed., 1709). The book continued to be the subject of denunciation for years, and.Tindal believed he was charged by Dr Gibson, bishop of London, in a Pastoral Letter, with having under- mined religion and promoted atheism and infidelity,—a

2 Herr von Nathusius has described its microscopic structure (Journ. fir wissensch. Zoologie, 1871, pp. 3380-355),

charge to which he replied in an anonymous tract, An Address to the Inhabitants of London and Westminster, a second and larger edition of which appeared in 1730. In this tract} he makes a valiant defence of the deists and of the use of reason in religious matters, and anticipates here and there his Christianity as Old as the Creation ; or the Gospel a Republication of the Religion of Nature, London, 1730 (2d ed., 1731; 3d, 1732; 4th, 1733), which was re- garded by friends and foes alike as the “ Bible” of deism. It was really only the first part of the whole work, and the second, though written and entrusted in manuscript to a friend, never saw the light. It was said that Dr Gibson prevented its publication. ‘The first part made a great noise, and the answers to it were numerous, the most able being by Dr James Foster (1730), Dr John Conybeare (1732), Dr John Leland (1733), and Bishop Butler (1736). It was translated into German by J. Lorenz Schmidt (1741), and from it dates the influence of English deism on German theology. It is by this book that Tindal is now chiefly remembered ; but he had probably adopted substantially the principles it expounds before he wrote his essay of 1697. He objected to be called a simple deist, and claimed the name of “ Christian deist,” as he held that true Christianity is identical with the eternal religion of nature. He died at Oxford on 16th August 1733.

The religious system expounded in Tindal’s Christianity as Old as the Creation, unlike the earlier system of Lord Herbert of Cher- bury, was based on the empirical principles of Locke’s philgonly: It assumed the traditional deistic antitheses of external and in- ternal, positive and natural, revelations and religions, and perpetu- ated at the same time the prevalent

misconceptions as to the nature of religion and revelation, The system was, moreover, worked out by the purely a priori method, with all but a total disregard of the facts of religious history. It starts from the tremendous assump- tions that true religion must, both from the nature of God and the nature of things, be eternal, universal, simple, and perfect ; it main- tains that this religion can consist of ae but the simple and universal duties towards God and man, the first consisting in the fulfilment of the second,—in other words, the practice of morality. The author's moral system is somewhat confused and inconsistent, but is essentially utilitarian. From such principles it follows neces- sarily that the true revealed religion can be nothing more nor less than a republication of the religion of nature or reason, and that, if Christianity is the perfect religion, it can only be that republica- tion, and inust be as old as the creation. The special mission of Christianity, therefore, was simply to deliver men from the super- stition which had in course of time got mixed up with the religion of nature. True Christianity consequently must be a perfectly ''reasonable service"; arbitrary and positive precepts can form no true part of it; revelation and reason can never disagree ; reason must be supreme, and the Scriptures as well as all religious doc- trines must submit to its tests; and only such writings can be re- garded as Divine Scripture which tend to the honour of God and the good of man. Thus tested, much in the Old and the New Testaments must be rejected as defective in morality or erroneous in fact and principle. The strength of Tindal's position was the underlying conviction of the essential harmony between man's re- ligious and rational nature, and consequently of the rationality of Christianity. Its weakness was that, like the whole religious philosophy of the time, it was founded on a total misconception of the nature of religion and of revelation, and on as complete a disre- gard of the course of man's religious development. Weak points in it were ably exposed by Foster, Conybeare, Butler, and others ; but its radical errors needed for their complete exposure the higher conceptions of religion and religious history which were originated by Lessing, Schleiermacher, and Hegel.

See Leland, View of the Principal Deistical Writers (London, 1798); Lechler, Geschichte des Englischen Deismus (Stuttgart, 1841); Theological Review, November 1864; Hunt, Religious Thought in England from the

Reformation to the End of Last Century (London, 1870-73); Leslie Stephen, History of English Thought in

He onl Century (London, 1876-80); A. S. Farrar, Bampton Lecture (1862), ect. iv.

TINGHAE. See Cuusan.

TINNE, Anexanprine (1839-1869), African traveller, born at The Hague on 17th October 1839, was the daughter of an English merchant and his wife, Baroness van Steen- gracht-Capellen. Her father died when she was five years ee en i a

1 A Second Address to the Inhabitants, &c., with replies to some of

the critics of that book, bears the same date, 1730, though some of the works it refers to appeared in 1731.

old, leaving her the richest heiress in the Netherlands, After travelling in Norway, Italy, and the East, and visit- ing Egypt, when she ascended the Nile to near the equator, Mademoiselle Tinné left Europe again in 1861 for a pro- longed sojourn in the Nile regions. Accompanied by her mother and her aunt, she set out from Cairo on 9th Janu- ary 1862. After a short stay at Khartoum, the party ascended the White Nile as far as Gondokoro and explored a part of the Sobat, returning to Khartoum in November. Baron von Heuglin and Dr Steudner having meantime joined the ladies at Khartoum, the whole party set out in February 1863 to explore the Bahr-el-Ghazal. The limit of navigation at the Bahr-el-Homr was reached on 10th March. From Lake Rek a journey was made overland, across the Bahr Jur and south-west by the Bahr Kosango, to Jebel Kosango, on the borders of the Niam-Niam country. During the journey all the travellers suffered severely. Steudner died in April and Madame Tinné in June, and after many fatigues and dangers the remainder of the party reached Khartoum in July 1864. Made- moiselle Tinné returned to Cairo by Berber and Suakim. The geographical and scientific results of the expedition, largely into a new country, were highly important, as will be seen in Heuglin’s narrative in Petermann’s Mittheilungen (Erg.-hft, Nov. 15, 1865), and in his own Travels in the Legion of the White Nile (1869). At Cairo Mademoiselle

Tinné lived in somewhat Oriental style during the next four years, visiting Algeria, Tunis, and other parts of the Mediterranean. In January 1869 she started from Tripolis with a caravan, intending to proceed to Lake Tchad, and thence by Wadai, Darfur, and Kordofan to the Upper Nile. In July, however, on the route from Murzuk to Rhat, she was murdered by her escort.

Besides the references already given, see John A. Tinné's Geogra- phical Notes of an Expedition in Central Africa by three Dutch Ladies, Liverpool, 1864.

TINNEVELLI, or TrNavetty, a district of British India, in the Madras presidency, lying between 8° 9' and 9° 56' N. lat. and 77° 16' and 78° 27' E. long. It has an area of 5381 square miles, and a coast-line of nearly 100 miles, Madura district bounds it on the N. and N.E., on the 8. and §.E. the Gulf of Mannar, and on the W. the southern Ghats. Tinnevelli is a large plain, with an aver- age elevation of 200 feet, sloping to the east with slight undulations. Along the western boundary the mountains rise to 4000 feet; but they send out no spurs into the district, nor are there any isolated hills. The district is watered by numerous short streams, the principal being the Tambraparni (length 80 miles). In the north the scenery is unattractive and the soil poor; in the south red sandy soil prevails, in which little save the Palmyra palm will grow. But along the banks of the rivers are rice-fields and a variety of trees and crops. Many shoals occur near the shore, and in the north-east numerous rocks and reefs. The hills which divide Tinnevelli from Travan- core are chiefly granite and gneiss; and along the coast stretches the broad belt of alluvium common to the whole east coast of India, and in it are many salt marshes, divided by sand-dunes from the sea. Several veins of cale spar cross the district from east to west, and the beds of all the rivers are more or less encrusted with a deposit of lime. The district contains many ancient and magnificent build- ings; but the most interesting antiquities are the large sepulchral earthen urns of prehistoric races which have been found at several places, especially along the course of the Tambrapani, and which contain bones, pottery of all sorts, beads and bronze ornaments, iron weapons, imple- ments, &c. As the seat of Dravidian civilization Tinnevelli possesses more antiquarian interest than any other part of Madras. The climate is very hot and dry except at

the season of the monsoons; the average annual rainfall throughout the district is less than 25 inches, Tinnevelli possesses several roads, but no canals. The South Indian Railway enters the district five miles north of Virudupatti and runs to Tuticorin (77 miles) ; a branch line (18 miles) connects this last town with Tinnevelli.

In 1881 the population numbered 1,699,747 (males 825,887, females 873,860), of whom 1,468,977 were Hindus, 89,767 Moham- medans, and 140,946 Christians. Tinnevelli has twelve towns with over 10,000 inhabitants each, viz., TINNEVELLI (see below) ; Srivil- liputur, 18,256; Palamcotta, 17,964; Tuticorin, 16,281 ; Kulase Kharapatnam, 14,972; Sivagiri, 18,632; Viravanallur, 12,318 ; Rajapalayam, 12,021; Tenkasi, 11,987 ; Kayalpatnam, 11,806 ; Kalladakurchi, 10,936; and Sivakasi, 10,838. Out of the total area of 5381 square miles 1408 are uncultivable waste. In 1885-86 cereals, chiefly rice and spiked millet or kambu, the staple food of the district, occupied 842,741 acres, pulses 192,841, oil seeds 78,127, and cotton 206,717. The total area of forest is roughly estimated at 1500 square miles. Tuticorin is the only port of any importance. The chief exports are cotton, coffee, jaggery, chillies, &c. ; sheep, horses, cattle, and poultry are also sent to Ceylon. There is a con- siderable inland trade with Travancore. The pearl fishery on the coast is now unimportant. Coastal navigation is dangerous. In 1885-86 the total revenue of the district was £365,744, of which the land-tax yielded £305,850.

The early history of Tinnevelli is mixed up with that of Madura and Travancore. Down to 1781 it is a confused tale of anarchy and bloodshed. In that year the nawab of Arcot assigned the revenues to the East India Company, whose officers then undertook the internal administration of affairs. Several risings subsequently took place, aud in 1801 the whole Carnatic, including Tinnevelli, was ceded to the British. Tinnevelli is now the most Christian district of all India, both Roman Catholic and Protestant.

TINNEVELLL, chief and largest town of the above dis- trict, is situated 14 miles from the left bank of the Tam- braparnt in 8° 43’ 47” N. lat. and 77° 43’ 49” E. long. The town was rebuilt about 1560 by Visvandatha, the founder of the Nayakkan dynasty of Madura, who erected many temples,

&c., among them the great Siva temple. Tinnevelli is an active centre of Protestant missions in south India. In 1881 the population was 23,221 (10,963 males and 12,258 females).

TINTORETTO. See Rosustt.

TIPPERAH, a district of British India, in the Chitta- gong division of the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, situated between 23° 0’ and 24° 16’ N. lat. and 90° 36’ and 91° 39’ E. long., with an area of 2491 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by Maimansinh and Sylhet, on the S. by Noakhalf, on the W. by the river Meghna, separating it from Maimansinh, Dacca, and Bakarganj, and on the E. by the state of Hill Tipperah. The district presents a continuous flat and open surface, with the exception of the isolated Lalmai range (100 feet), and is for the most part laid out in well-cultivated fields, intersected in all direc- tions by rivers and khals (creeks), which are partially affected by the tides. In the lowlands the soil is uni- formly light and sandy; but in the higher parts a deep alluvial soil alternates with bands of clay and sand. The principal rivers are the Meghna, which is navigable through- out the year for boats of 4 tons burden, and the Gumti, Dakatid, and Titds, which are also navigable for craft of 4 tons for a considerable portion of their course. There are many marshes or bhils. The principal road is the grand trunk (63 miles), which traverses the district from east to west. The wild animals include elephants, tigers, leopards, wild boars, jackals, and buffaloes. The climate is mild, agreeable, and healthy.

The population of the district in 1881 was 1,519,338 (males 770,893, females 748,445); of these Hindus numbered 511,025, Mohammed- ans 1,007,740, and Christians 199. There are only two towns with more than 10,000 inhabitants each, viz., Comillah (13,372) and Brahmanbéria (17,438). Comillah is the chief town of the district and is situated on the south bank of the Gumti, in 23° 28’ N. lat. and 91°14’ E. long. Rice is the staple crop of the district ; wheat and barley, Indian corn and millet, pease, gram, and several other pulses are also cultivated, as well as betel-leaf and betel-nut, sugar-cane, tobacco, &c. The chief exports are rice, jute, and betel-

nuts; and the principal imports sugar, timber, cotton goods, cocoa- nut oil, bamboos, spices, salt, tobacco, &c. In 1885-86 the net revenue of the district amounted to £181,481, the land-tax contri- buting £102,866. Tipperah came under the East India Company in 1765 ; but more than a fifth of its present area was under the immediate rule of the raja of Hill Tipperah, who paid a tribute of ivory and elephants. At that tinie Tipperah formed part of Jalal- pur ; but in 1822 it was separated, and since then great changes have been made in its boundaries. With the exceptiqn ofa serious raid in 1860 by the Kukis or Lushais, nothing has disturbed the peace of the district.

TIPPERARY, an inland county of Ireland, in the pro- vince of Munster, is bounded N.W. by Galway, N.E. by King's county, E. by Queen's County and Kilkenny, 8. by Waterford, and W. by Cork, Limerick, Clare, and Galway. Its greatest length north to south, from the confluence of the Little Brosna and the Shannon to the Knockmealdown Mountains, is 70 miles, and its greatest breadth west and east 40. The area is 1,061,731 acres, or about 1659 square miles.

The surface is extremely varied and picturesque. The Knockmealdown Mountains on the southern border (2609 feet) are principally of clay slate formation. To the north of this range are the picturesque Galtees, composed of Silurian strata overlaid by Old Red Sandstone (Galtymore 3015 feet). To the east, bordering Kilkenny, are the Slieveardagh Hills, composed of coalstone shales and sand- stones, and near Templemore the Devil's Bit Mountains, with a curious gap on the summit. In the north-west there is a Silurian and sandstone group (Keeper Hill 2265 feet). The greater part of the county is a gently undulating plain, belonging to the central Carboniferous limestone plain of Treland. From the rich level country the rock of Cashel, also composed of limestone, rises with great boldness and abruptness. Tipperary has only one river, the Suir, which has its source in the Devil's Bit Mountains, and flows south- wards by Templemore, Thurles, Caher, and Clonmel. The Nore, which also rises in the Devil's Bit Mountains, soon passes into Queen's county, and the Shannon forms part of the western border. A spur of the Leinster coal-field, the most important in Ireland, runs into Tipperary, extend- ing to Cashel, a distance of 20 miles with an average breadth of 5 miles. All the measuresare represented. The

productive portion of the field is at Killenaule. It con- sists of a narrow trough ranging in a north-east direction, the beds dipping towards the axis at a high angle. The coal is anthracite and the seams are thin, the workable portion being of limited extent. In the lower measures are marine fossils, and plant impressions are numerous. Copper is obtainable at Lackamore and at Hollyford near Thurles, but only in small quantities. There is a vein of lead at Shallee, and zinc has recently been dug in consider- able quantities at Silvermines on the north side of the Keeper Mountains. Manganese, malachite, galena, and barytes are also obtainable. There are slate quarries at Killaloe. Between Caher and Clonmel are extensive de- posits of fine pipe-clay. The Mitchelstown stalactite caverns, discovered accidentally in 1833, attract a large number of visitors.

Agriculture.—Tipperary ranks among the best agricultural dis- tricts of Ireland. The subsoil in the lower grounds is limestone, which is overlaid by a rich calcareous loam, capable of yielding the finest crops. The centre of the county is occupied by the Golden Vale, the most fertile district in Ireland, which stretches from Cashel to the town of Limerick. On the higher districts the soil is light and thin, partaking much of the character of the clay slate and sands on which it rests. Detached portions of the Bog of Allen encroach on the north-eastern parts of the county. The total num- ber of holdings in 1885 was 23,768, of which 14,369 were under 30 acres in extent, —4841 between 15 and 380 acres, 4444 between 5 and 15, 2861 between 1 and 5, and 2223 less than 1 acre. Of the total area 24°8 per cent. was under crops, including meadow and clover, 57°9 under grass, ‘1 fallow, 2°5 plantations, 4°9 bog and marsh, 6°4 barren mountain land, and 3-4 water, roads, fences, &c. The area under corn crops decreased from 85,883 acres in 1876 to

78,758 in 1885, the decrease having taken place since 1882, the areas in the previous years having been remarkably uniform. The area under wheat decreased from 13,423 acres in 1882 to 5474 in 1885, and that of oats from 57,332 to 50,196. But the area under barley, for which distillation canses a steady demand, rose from 13,551 acres in 1876 to 17,998 in 1885. The area under green crops manifests also a tendency to decrease ; the total area in

1885 was 58,8338 acres, 33,042 being under potatoes, 19,196 turnips, 2096 mangolds and beetroot, and 4499 other green crops. The area under meadow and clover has been steadily increasing, being 114,149 in 1876 and 127,478 in 1885. The total number of horses in 1885 was 27,365, of which 17,173 were used for agriculture ; the number of cattle 254,488, of which 80,508 were milch cows, the manufac- ture of butter occupying considerable attention ; of sheep 203,798, pigs 80,475, goats 13,011, and poultry 681,239. According to the latest landowners' Return (1876), the county was divided among 2372 proprietors owning 1,042,457 acres of an annual value of £676,683, the average value of the land being uearly 13s. per acre. The following possessed upwards of 10,000 acres each :—Viscount Lismore, 34,945; Lord Dunalley, 21,081; G. K. S. M. Dawson, 19,093 ; Lady Margaret Charteris, 16,617 ; marquis of Ormonde, 15,765 ; Viscount Hawarden, 15,272; N. Buckley, 13,260 ; earl of Clonmel, 11,098 ; and A. Moore, 10,200. =

Manufactures.—A few persons are employed in mining, but the occupation of the inhabitants is chiefly agricultural. There are a considerable number of meal and flour mills. 4 ; ;

Railways.—The county is remarkably well supplied with rail- ways. A branch of the Great Southern and Western runs from Roscrea to Nenagh, where it joins a branch of the Limerick and Waterford, which in its progress south-eastwards from Limerick crosses the southern corner of the county by Limerick Junction, Tipperary, Caher, and Clonmel. The main line of the Great Southern and Western to Cork and Killarney crosses the centre of the county by Templemore, Thurles, and Limerick Junction. A branch of the Limerick and Waterford connects Thurles with Clonmel.

Administration and Population.—Tipperary is divided into a north and south riding, each consisting of six baronies. For parlia- mentary purposes it is separated into four divisions—EKast, Mid, North, and South—each returning one member. It contains 193 parishes and 3253 town lands. Itis in the Leinster circuit. Assizes for the north riding are held in Nenagh and for the south riding in Clonmel. Quarter sessions are held at Cashel, Clonmel, Nenagh, Roscrea, Thurles, and Tipperary. There are twenty-four petty sessions districts and parts of six others. The county is within the Cork

military district. Ecclesiastically it belongs to the dioceses of Cashel, Emly, Killaloe, and Lismore. Since 1841 the population has decreased more than one-half. From 485,553 in that year it fell to 216,718 in 1871 and to 199,612 in 1881. The following towns in 1881 possessed over 4000 inhabitants each, viz.—Clonmel (partly in Waterford), 9325 ; Tipperary, 7274 ; Carrick-on-Suir (partly in Waterford), 6583; Nenagh, 5422; and Thurles, 4850. The number of persons who could read and write was 115,185, who could read only, 24,886; the remainder—60,041—were unable to read or write. There were 248 persons who spoke Irish only and 28,558 able to speak Irish as well as English.

History and Antiquities—Anciently Tipperary was included in the territory of the Tuatha Dé Danann, and afterwards probably of the clan of Degaid. Henry II., who landed at Waterford in October 1172, received at Cashel the homage of Donald O'Brien, king of Thomond. It was made a county by King John in 1210; in 1328 Edward III. made it a county palatine in favour of the earl of Ormonde ; and, though the king shortly afterwards resumed his regal prerogative, the county was regranted in 1837. In 1372 the grant was confirmed to James, second earl of Ormonde, the lands belonging to the church retaining, however, a separate jurisdiction, —a division which continued till the Restoration. In 1617 James I. took the county palatine into his own hands. It was, however, restored in 1661 to James, twelfth earl and first duke, whose re- galities were further made to include the portions of the county formerly under ecclesiastical jurisdiction. On the attainder of James, second duke, in 1715 the jurisdiction reverted to the crown. There are two round towers within the county,—one at Roscrea and the other on the rock of Cashel. Of the old castles there are few important examples. That built by the first earl of Ormonde at Thurles has now disappeared. On the rock of Cashel there are a massive guard tower and some remains of the ancient wall. The stronghold of Caher, now occupied as a barrack, is still in good pre- servation. At Roscrea one of the towers of the castle built by King John still remains, and the stronghold of the Ormondes, erected in the reign of Henry VIIL., forms the depédt attached to the barracks. The ecclesiastical ruins on the rock of Cashel are among the most remarkable in Ireland. They consist of a cathedral in the Pointed style of the 13th century, partly destroyed by fire in 1495 ; a curi- ous Saxon chapel, ascribed to Cormac MacCullinan, archbishop of Cashel (b. 831); the bishop's palace ;

the “vicar’s choral-house,’”— all on the summit of the rock ; and Hore abbey at its foot, founded

for Benedictines in 1272. The abbey of Holy Cross was fonnded in 1182 for Cistercian monks, and is one of the finest monastic ruins in Ireland. The relic of the true cross, from which the abbey takes its name, is in possession of the Catholic hierarchy of the district. The other principal ecclesiastical ruins are the priory of Athassel, founded for Augustinian monks about 1200; Fethard abbey, founded in the 14th century, now used as a chapel; the gable and porch of the abbey of Roscrea, founded by St Cronan in the 7th century ; and a portion of the Franciscan friary founded in the same town in 1490.

TIPPERARY, a market town in the above county, is beautifully situated near the base of the Slieve-na-muck or Tipperary Hills, a branch of the Galtee range, on the Waterford and Limerick Railway, 3 miles south-east of Limerick junction and 110 south-west of Dublin. It con- tains a handsome Protestant church, a Catholic chapel, an endowed grammar-school, a town-hall, and a new corn and butter market. Owing to its situation in the centre of a fine agricultural district, it enjoys considerable prosperity, and its butter market ranks next to that of Cork. The town is of great antiquity, but first acquired importance by the erection of a castle by King John, of which there are now no remains, A monastery founded for Augustin- ians by Henry III., which has also disappeared, gave a second impulse to its growth. Formerly it was a corpora- tion from a grant made in 1310 by Edward IL., but is now governed by commissioners under provision of the Town Improvement Act of 1854. The population in 1871 was 6638, and in 1881 it was 7274.

TIPPOO SAHIB (1749-1799), sultan of Mysore, was the son of HypER ALI (q.v.), and was born in 1749. He received a careful Mohammedan education, and was in- structed in military tactics by the French officers in the employment of his father. In 1767 in the invasion of the Carnatic he commanded a corps of cavalry, and he subsequently distinguished himself in the Mahratta War of 1775-79. On the outbreak of the first Mysore War in 1780 he was put at the head of a large body of troops, with which he

achieved several successes ; in particular he entirely defeated Brathwaite on the banks of the Colerun in February 1782. He succeeded his father in December 1782, and in 1784 concluded a treaty of peace with the English. In the same year he assumed the title of sultan. In 1787-88 he subjugated the Nairs of Malabar, and in 1789 provoked English invasion by ravaging the territories of the rajah of Travancore. When the English entered Mysore in 1790, he retaliated by a counter-invasion, but he was ultimately compelled by Cornwallis's victory at Arikera, near Seringapatam, to purchase peace by the cession of the half of his dominions (16th March 1792). The English having deemed it necessary to renew hostilities in March 1799, he was in less than two months shut up in Seringapatam and accidentally killed during the siege (4th May 1799). See Inp1a, vol. xii. pp. 803-4.

TIPTON, a town of England, in Staffordshire, is situated in the valley of the Stour, on the London and North- Western Railway, 44 miles south-east of Wolverhampton and 121 north-west of London. It is built in a somewhat scattered and irregular manner, with coal-pits and iron and other works interspersed. Branches of the Birming- ham Canal supply it with water communication. It de- pends chiefly on its iron manufactures, especially of a heavy kind, and has numerous large furnaces and rolling- mills. Its principal goods are rails, engine-boilers, tubes, fenders, and fire-irons. It also possesses works for making iron bridges and stations, cement-works, brick-works, and maltings. There are no public buildings of importance. Tipton has six churches. The parish church is of very ancient date, and its registers go back to the year 1513. Formerly the town was sometimes called Tibbington. It is under the government of a local board formed in 1866. The population of the urban sanitary district

TTR=T1R

(area, 2697 acres) in 1871 was 29,445, and in 1881 it was 30,013.

TIRABOSCHI, Grrotamo (1731-1794), the first his- torian of Italian literature, was born at Bergamo on 18th December 1731. He studied at the Jesuit college at Monza, entered the order, and was appointed in 1755 professor of eloquence in the university of Milan. Here he produced (1766-68) Vetera Humiliatorum Monumenta (3 vols.), a his- tory of the extinct

order of the Umiliati, which gave him at once a distinguished place in literature. Nominated in 1770 librarian to Francis III., duke of Modena, he turned to account the copious materials there accumulated for the composition of his Storia della Letteratura Italiana. This vast work, in which the progress of Italian literature from the time of the Etruscans to the end of the 17th century is traced in detail, occupied eleven assiduous years, 1771- 82, and the thirteen quarto volumes embodying it appeared successively at Modena during that period. A second en- larged edition (16 vols.) was issued from 1787 to 1794, and was succeeded by many others, besides abridgments in German, French, and English. ‘Tiraboschi died at Modena on 3d June 1794, leaving a high reputation for virtue, learning, and piety.

Tiraboschi wrote besides Biblioteca Modenese (6 vols., 1781-86) ; Notizie de’ Pittort, Scultori, Incisori, ed Architettt Modenesi (1786) ; Memorie Storiche Modenesi (5 vols., 1793-94), and many minor works. He edited the Nuovo Giornale dei Letterati d’ Italia (1773- 90), and left materials for a work of great research entitled Dizion- ario Topografico-Storico degli Stati Estensi (2 vols. 4to, Modena,

1824-25),

TIRESIAS, a famous Theban seer of Greek legend, was ason of Everes and Chariclo, and a descendant of Udeus, one of the men who had sprung up from the serpent’s teeth sown by Cadmus. He was blind, for which various causes were alleged. Some said that the gods had blinded him because he had revealed to men what they ought not to know. Others said that Athene (or Artemis) blinded him because he had seen her naked; when his mother prayed Athene to restore his sight, the goddess instead purged his ears so that he could understand the speech of birds and gave him a staff wherewith to guide his steps. Another story was that on Mount Cyllene (or on Cytherum) he saw two snakes coupling; he killed the female and became himself a woman. Seven years afterwards he saw the same sight, and killing the male became himself a man again. When Zeus and Hera disputed whether more pleasure was enjoyed by the male or the female sex, they referred the question to Tiresias, as he had experience of both. He decided in favour of the female sex, and Hera in her anger blinded him ; but Zeus

gifted him with long life and infallible divination. He lived for seven or, according to others, nine generations. In the war of the Seven against Thebes he foretold to the Thebans that they would be victorious if Menceceus offered himself in sacrifice. In the war of the Epigoni he advised the Thebans to flee. They fled, and he with them ; but coming to the Tilphusian well he drank of it and died. According to others, Tiresias was taken prisoner by the victorious Argives and died while they were taking him to Delphi. The Argives took his daughter Manto (or Daphne) prisoner and sent her to Apollo at Delphi, where, being as skilled a seer as her father, she gave oracles. A different version of the legend of Tiresias was given by the elegiac poet Sostratus (reported by Eustathius on Od., x. 492). According to him, Tiresias was originally a girl, but had been changed into a boy by Apollo at the age of seven ; after undergoing several more transformations from one sex to the other, she (for the final sex was feminine) was turned into a mouse and her lover Arachnus into a weasel. ‘Tiresias’s grave was at the Tilphusian spring; but there was a cenotaph of him at Thebes, where also in later times his “observatory,” or

place for watching for omens, was pointed out. He had an oracle at Orchomenus, but during a plague it became silent and remained so in Plutarch’s time. According to Homer, Tiresias was the only person in the world of the dead whom Proserpine allowed to retain intelligence. He figured in the great paintings by Polygnotus in the Lesche at Delphi. The story of his transformation into a woman is perhaps to be explained by the custom of medicine-men dressing like women, which prevails in Borneo, Patagonia, Kadiak (off Alaska), and probably elsewhere.!

TIRHUT, or TrrHoor, a district of. British India, was formerly the largest and most populous in Bengal. On lst January 1875 it was divided into the two districts of Darbhangah and Muzaffarpur. For the latter, see Muzar-FARPUR. The former, with an area of 3335 square miles, lies between 25° 30’ and 26° 40’ N. lat. and 85° 34’ and 86° 46’ E. long., and is bounded on the N. by Nepal, on the E. by Bhagalpur, on the 8. by Monghyr, and on the W. by Muzaffarpur. The population of Darbhangah in 1881 was 2,633,447 (males 1,295,788, females 1,337,659) ; of these Hindus numbered

2,323,979, Mohammedans 308,985, and Christians 325. Its chief towns are Dar- bhangah, the capital, with 65,955 inhabitants; Madhu- bani, 11,911; and Rusera, 11,578. The total revenue of Darbhangah district in 1885-86 amounted to £157,037, of which the land revenue yielded £80,442.

The alluvial tract of country formerly known as Tirhut is varied by undulations, with groves, orchards, and woods. The principal rivers are the Ganges, Gandak, Baghmati, Tiljuga, and Karai, which are rarely navigable, except during the rainy season, when they are mostly rapid and dangerous. Tirhut produces all sorts of crops, rice being the principal ; others are wheat, barley, maize, oil-seeds, &c.; opium and tobacco are largely grown for export. The chief industries include the manufacture of indigo, saltpetre, coarse cloth, pottery, and mats. The Tirhut State Railway runs from Mokameh on the left bank of the Ganges through Darbhangah and Muzaf- farpur districts north-west into Champaran district as far as Bettia. A ferry over the Ganges at Mokameh connects it with the East Indian Railway. There are two branches, one extending from Muzaffarpur south-west to Hajipur (to be connected with the Bengal and North-Western Railway at Sonapur by a bridge over the Gan- dak), the other (226 miles open for traffic in March 1886) from Samastipur via Darbhangah to Janjarpur, from which it will ex- tend eastwards to Partabganj, a mart upon the Kosi river near the Nepal frontier.

TIRLEMONT (Flem. Thienen), a town of Belgium, in the province of Brabant, 294 miles by rail to the east of Brussels, on the Great Geete. The old walls, dismantled since 1804, are nearly 6 miles in circuit, but enclose a large extent of arable and garden ground. The streets are regular, and there are some spacious squares; the market-place contains the town-hall, recently restored, and the church of Notre Dame du Lac, founded in 1298, en- larged in the 15th century, but still unfinished. The church of St Germain dates partly from the 9th century. The industries of the place include the making of steam- engines, brewing, distilling, soap-making, tanning, and various woollen and cotton manufactures. The population in 1876 was 13,296.

Tirlemont was once a much larger and more flourishing town than it now is; it has suffered much in war and was taken by the French in 1635, by

Marlborough in 1705, and again by the French in 1793. John Bolland, the famous editor of the Acta Sanctorum, was born here in 1596.

TIRYNS, the Tipuvs rexideooa of Homer (/1., ii. 559), was a small Peloponnesian city, in the prehistoric period of the Achzan race, long before the Dorian immigration. It stood on a small rock in the marshy plain of Argolis, about 3 miles from the sea, and was fabled to have

1 On this custom see Journals of James Brooke of Sarawak, ii. p. 65 sq.; H. Low, Sarawak, p. 175 sq.; Perelaer, Ethnogr. Beschrijving der Dajaks, p. 32 sq.; Carl Bock, Head Hunters of Borneo, p. 222 n.; Falkner, Description of Patagonia, p. 117; Trans. Ethnolog. Soc. Lond., new series, vii. p. 323; Holmberg, ‘Ethnogr. Skizzen,” in Acta Soc, Scient. Fennice, iv. p. 400 sq.

been founded by King Preetus, the brother of Acrisius, who was succeeded by the hero Perseus. It was the scene of the early life of Heracles, who is hence called Tiryn- thius. ‘The massive walls were said to have been the work of Cyclopean masons. Its period of greatest splen- dour was during the 11th and 10th centuries B.c.; but the city continued to exist till about 468 B.c., when it was destroyed through the jealousy of the inhabitants of the neighbouring Argos,! who had not assisted in the final de- feat of the Persians at Platza.?

Excavations made in 1884-85 by Schliemann and Dérpfeld over part of the rock on which Tiryns stood have exposed a most interesting building, quite unique as an example of a Greek palace of the 11th or 10th century B.C., and of special interest from the way in which it closely illustrates the Homeric palaces of Alcinous and Odysseus, and throws a new light on scenes such as the slaughter of

=

— OMEN

CI

=

in

foPen)om) 12

| FORECOURT ss

| 13

(OPEN) FORECOURT

PANN a. 1 . iY ily Has i) anes ann cS ny! 4 TF me Al VAL , ~Sa aN (aia

NINN, 9 Kips < WAS \ ZA N

17%,

wy)

ij

w

Fia. 1.—Plan of the palace in the upper part of Tiryns. outer wall. 2. Inner gate, approached between massive walls. 38. Main propyleum. 4. Inner propyleum. 5. Court (av\%) of the men, surrounded by a colonnade on three sides; the altar to Zeus Herceus is by the entrance. 6. Al@ovca, portico of the men’s megaron. 7. IIpédou0s, inner porch. 8. Men’s megaron, with roof supported on four columns, and the circular hearth in the middle. 9. Bath-room and small Gaddor. 10,10. Chambers round the great court. 11, 11. Guard chambers by the main propyleum. 12. Passage (Aavpy) from the main propyleum to the women’s part. 13, 13. Courts of the women. 14. Women’s megaron. 15. Chambers (@addor) in the women’s part. 16. Passage from women’s part to the rock-cut stairs. 17. Small postern door in the semicircular bastion, approached by flight of rock-cut steps. 18, 18. Massive outer wall of city. 19. Inner wall to guard

the entrance passage. 20. Part of outer wall with intermedi rows of chambers, as shown in fig. 2. ; een

The rock on which Tiryns is built is of an irregular oval shape about 330 yards long by 112 at the widest part, and is culvounital

Homer (Z.., ii. 559) speaks of the Tirynthians as subject to Argos. See Diod., iv.10; Paus., ii. 25; and Herod., vi. 83, ix.28. Schlie- mann (Tiryns, London, 1886) and Mahaffy (in Hermathena, Dublin), however, deny the truth of this statement, believing that Tiryns ceased to exist some centuries earlier, in spite of the strong evidence given by the inscription on the bronze column (now in Constantinople), formed by three twisted serpents, which once supported the golden tripod dedicated to Apollo out of the spoils from Platea. Tiryns occurs in the list of allied states present at that battle; moreover, recent dis-

Coveries have.brought to light remains of i ildi Lane toes mn g an important building of

1. Main gate in the

Tin YY Ns

by a very massive wall, varying from 30 to 40 feet in thickness and averaging when complete about 50 feet in height, measuring from its base outside. Inside, the wall was probably not more than 10 or 12 feet high above the ground, so the masonry acts as a retaining wall to a considerable depth of earth which covers the rock (see fig. 2 below). The wall is built of very large hammer- dressed blocks, some as much as 10 feet long by 3 feet 8 inches or 3 feet 6 inches wide, with smaller ones to fill up the interstices, The whole was bedded, not in mortar, but in clay, which has mostly been washed out of the joints; originally the surface was probably protected with a coating of stucco. The only important gateway, which was on the east side, away from the sea, probably resembled the ‘‘lion gate” at Mycene. The other entrances are mere slits in the wall. One of these and the chief gate are shown in fig.1. Internally the area of the city was divided by cross walls into three parts at successive levels. The lowest and middle divi- sions have not yet been excavated ; the upper part at the south end of the rock

was completely exposed in 1884-85 by Schliemann aud Dérpfeld, and the almost complete plan of the various struc- tures clearly made out. This division contains the palace of the ruler of Tiryns, a building which shows careful and skilful con- struction, elaborate decoration, and a well-arranged plan, suitable to the wants of a wealthy autocratic chief, who lived in a manner which partly recalls the luxury of an Oriental king, and also re- sembled the feudal state of a medieval baron, surrounded by a crowd of vassals, From’the main gate, which was defended by a tower, a strong passage led between the outer wall and an inner one to an inner gate, thence to a propyleum or double porch, with two wooden columns on each side,? idisliens which were chambers for guards. Then came another similar, but smaller propyleum, and opposite to that was the entrance to the great court (avn), nearly 53 by 70 feet, in which stands the altar to Zeus Herceus, with a circular pit beneath it to catch the victims’ blood. This court was surrounded by wooden columns supporting a roof, like a medieval cloister ; on the south side are chambers for attend- ants (@addpo). On the north side is the

{| i i

i

_ hall (ué-yapov 4), supported. by o~ TU columns (at@ovea)

and an inner vesti- bule (apédouos) with three doors.5 The hall is about 40 by 30 feet, with a cir- cular hearth-stone in the centre (éorla or éoxdpa). Four col- umns supported the roof, the central part of which probably rose above the rest like a medieval ‘‘lantern”; and in this there was prob- ably a door leading out to the flat roof

Mi dda) :

Fic. 2.—Section through the outer wall of the city at 20 in fig. 1. A. Outer base of wall. B. Inside level of city. C. Intermediate platform for the garrison. D. Chambers opening on to it, with roof formed of

it—— ; projecting courses of stone in large blocks. E. Top —

Homer (0Od., xxii. 126), through which one of the suitors escaped and so got arms from the treasury or armoury, which was on an — floor (see Od., xxii. 142 and xxi. 5). On the west side of the hall are a number of small chambers (@addor) for the unmarried men, and a bath-room about 12 by 10 feet, with its floor formed of one great slab of stone, sloped so as to drain out at one side through a pipe which passes through the wall. The women's part of the house is of equal importance to that of the men, and has its hall and two open courts with pillars. It is approached in a very cir- cuitous way,® either by a passage (Aavpy) leading from a side

ing a porticus or covered walk along the top of the wall. G. Outer wall of the colonnade built of brick, now missing. H. Probable roof of the colonnade of wood, covered with beaten clay.

3 The arrows in fig. 1 show the way from the city gate to the palace court and hall.

4 The women's hall is also called the megaron ; see Od., xviii. 198.

5 The mpédouos is mentioned by Homer (J1., ix. 473, and Od., iv. 302) ; but in the palace of Odysseus the af#ovea seems to have been the only vestibule to the megaron. In several respects the palace of Tiryns is more magnificent than that of Odysseus, whose hall was paved with clay, not concrete as at Tiryns ; see Od., xxi. 122, where Telemachus audi dé yaiay évagte, after cutting a trench to fix the row of axes.

6 The way to the harem in a modern Oriental house is similarly made as circuitous as possible, for the sake of privacy.

door in the main propyleum or by anothcr long passage wliich winds round the back of the men's hall, and so leads by a long flight of steps, cut in the rock, to the little postern door in the semicircular bastion. The many small rooms in this part of the palace were probably the bedrooms of the women and married couples of the chief's family. A staircase at 16 led to an upper floor, like the cdjuak bynrH of Od. xxi. 5. The circuit wall round the palace is more strongly constructed than the rest. On the south side it is built in

two offsets, forming a level platform for the garrison halfway up. In the upper and thinner part of the wall two narrow passages at different levels are formed in its thickness. They are roofed by projecting courses of stone in large blocks. The wall on the east side has a similar intermediate platform, on to which open a series of small chambers formed in the mass of the upper wall (see fig. 2). At the top level the wall was covered by a colonnade of wood pillars resting on circular stone blocks. This supported a flat roof and was open to the inside of the city. The back of the colonnade was built of brick, and is now missing, as are all the brick parts of the city, owing to the bricks having been only sun-dried.

The methods of construction employed in the Tiryns palace are of the highest interest. The foundations and about 3 feet of the walls above the ground are madc of large blocks of stone bedded in clay; above this the wall was of brick, sun-dried, and covered with stucco. The upper story was probably of wood. Some of the thresholds of the doors were massive blocks of stone (Adivos o¥d6s) 5 others were of wood (dptivos o¥5és). Wood was also used for all the columns, doorposts, and ante (rapacrdées), and in some cases the walls of the rooms were lined with wood, carefully fixed by dowels, the holes for which still exist.1 The doors had pivots of bronze revolving in well-fitted bronze cup-like sockets let into the thresholds. In the megaron and other rooms the floors are of good concrete, decorated with a simple series of incised lines, coloured blue and red. The stucco of the internal wall is decorated with bold and very effective patterns—birds aud scroll-work of semi-Oriental style ; in many cases the motives are obviously taken from textile ornaments, as in the most archaic style of vase painting. One example of rich and costly decoration remains,—part of a frieze of white alabaster, sculptured in relief with rosettes and interlacing patterns, and studded with jewel-like pieces of blue glass or enamel, the Opvyxds kvdvoo of Od. vii. 87.2 Further excavations in the lower parts of the city will probably bring to light the dwellings of the citizens who garrisoned the place. The great bulk of the Tirynthians must have lived in houses outside the citadel, but under the shelter of its protection, just as in medieval Italy villages grew up round the castles of any powerful lord. (J. H. M.)

TISCHENDORF,‘* Losecotr Frieprich KonsTANTIN (1815-1874), an eminent Biblical critic, the son of a physician, was born on 18th January

1815 at Lengenfeld, near Plauen, in the Saxon Voigtland. From the gymnasium at Plauen he passed in 1834 to the university of Leipsic, where he was mainly influenced by Winer, and began to take special interest in New Testament criticism. In 1840 he qualified as university lecturer in theology with a dissertation on the recensions of the New Testa- ment text, the main part of which reappeared in the follow- ing year in the prolegomena to his first edition of the New Testament. The importance of these early textual studies was that they convinced him of the absolute neces- sity of new and exacter collations of MSS., and to this work he now gave himself. Above all he desired to go to Rome; but lack of help and money compelled him to turn first towards Paris, where he remained from October 1840 till January 1843, busy with the treasures of the great library, eking out his scanty means by making collations for other scholars, and producing for Didot several editions of the Greek New Testament, one of them exhibiting the form of the text corresponding most closely to the Vulgate. The great triumph of these laborious months was the de- cipherment of the palimpsest Codex Ephraemi Rescriptus, of which the New Testament part was printed before he left Paris and the Old Testament in 1845. His success in dealing with a MS. much of which had been illegible

1 The marks of the wooden wall linings are specially clear in the little bathroom.

2 The genuineness of this line has been questioned, but apparently without much reason.

3 In modern Italian castello means a “village” as well as a “ castle.”

4 In 1869 he became Konstantin von Tischendorf, having been raised to a place in the hereditary nobility of Russia.

to earlier collators brought him into note and gained public and private support for more extended critical expeditions. From Paris he had paid short visits to Holland (1841) and England (1842). In 1843 he visited Italy, and after a stay of thirteen months went on to Egypt, Sinai, Palestine, and the Levant, returning by Vienna and Munich. From Sinai he brought a great

treasure, forty-three leaves of what is now known as the Codex Stnaiticus (&). For the time he kept the place of discovery a secret, hoping to return and procure the rest of the book, and the fragments were published in 1846 as the Codex Friderico-Augustanus, a name given in honour of the king of Saxony. He now became professor in Leipsic and married (1845). His teaching was apparently not very remarkable; but his vacations were often occupied by fruitful critical journeys, and in 1853 and 1859 he made a second and a third voyage to the East. In the last of these, in which he had

the active aid of the Russian Government, he at length got access to the remainder of the precious Sinaitic codex, and persuaded the monks to present it to the czar, at whose

cost it was published in 1862. To gain for critical study

a manuscript in point of age second only to the famous Vatican Bible was a splendid triumph, but Tischendorf's Eastern journeys were rich enough in other less sensational discoveries to deserve the highest praise.®

Side by side with his industry in collecting and collating MSS., Tischendorf pursued a constant course of editorial labours, mainly on the New Testament, until he was broken down by over- work in 1873. He died on 7th December 1874 at Leipsic.

The great edition, of which the text and apparatus appeared in 1869 and 1872," was called by himself editio viii.; but this number

is raised to twenty or twenty-one if mere reprints from stereotype plates and the minor editions of his great critical texts are anced

posthumous prints bring up the total to forty-one. Four main

recensions of Tischendorf's text may be distinguished, dating respect-

ively from his editions of 1841, 1849, 1859 (ed. viz.), 1869-72 (ed. viit.). The edition of 1849 may be regarded as historically the most

important from the mass of new critical material it used ; that of

1859 is distinguished from Tischendorf's other editions by coming nearer to the received text ; in the eighth edition the testimony of the Sinaitic MS. received great (probably too great) weight. The readings of the Vatican MS. were given with more exactness and certainty than had been possible in the earlier editions, and the editor had also the advantage of using the published labours of Tregelles. Whatever judgment may be passed on Tischendorf's critical tact and power, the apparatus of this final edition will not soon be superseded, and sums up a vast series of most important services to Biblical study.

Much less important was Tischendorf's work on the Greek Old Testament. His edition of the Roman text, with the variants of the Alexandrian MS., the Codex Ephraemi, and the Friderico- Augustanus, was of service when it appeared in 1850, but being stereotyped was not greatly improved in subsequent issues. Its imperfections, even within the limited field it covers, may be judged of by the aid of Nestle's appendix to the sixth issue (1880). Besides this may be mentioned editions of the New Testament Apocrypha (Acts of Apostles, 1851; Gospels, 1853, 2d ed. 1876; Apocalypses, 1866), and various minor writings, in part of an apologetic character, such as Wann wurden unsere Evangelien verfasst? (1865) and Haben wir den echten Schrifttext der Evangelisten und Apostel ? (1878).

TISIO, or Tist, BeNvENUTO (1481-1559), commonly called In GaroraLo, a painter of the Ferrarese school. He was born in 1481 at Garofolo, in the Ferrarese terri- tory, and constantly used the gillyflower (garofalo) as a symbol with which to sign his pictures. He took to draw- ing in childhood, and was put to study under Domenico Panetti (or Laneto), and afterwards at Cremona under his maternal uncle, Niccolé Soriani, a painter of credit, who died in 1499; he also frequented the school of Boccaccia

ee ee

5 See his Reise in den Orient, Leipsic, 1845-46.

6 The MSS. brought to Europe on the first two journeys are cata- logued in the Anecdota Sacra et Profana (Leipsic, 1855, enlarged 1861). See also the Monumenta Sacra Inedita (Leipsic, 1846), and Nova Collectio of the same

(1855-69). The third volume of the Nova Coll. gives the results of his last Eastern journey.

7 The prolegomena remained unfinished at his death, and are being supplied by C. R. Gregory.

XOMu. “52

410

Boccaccino. Removing to Rome, he stayed fifteen months with Giovanni Baldini, acquiring a solid style of draughts- manship, and finally to Mantua, where he remained two years with Lorenzo Costa. He then entered the service of the marquis Francesco Gonzaga. Afterwards he went to Ferrara, and worked there four years, showing diligence and delicacy without much severity or elevation of style. Attracted by Raphael’s fame, and invited by a Ferrarese gentleman, Geronimo Sagrato, he again removed to Rome, and found the great painter very amicable ; here he stayed two years, rendering some assistance in the Vatican frescos. From Rome family affairs recalled him to Ferrara; there Duke Alphonso I. commissioned him to execute paintings, along with the Dossi, in the Villa di Belriguardo and in other palaces. Thus the style of Tisio partakes of the Lombard, the Roman, and the Venetian modes. He painted extensively in Ferrara, both in oil and in fresco, two of his principal works being the Massacre of the Innocents (1519), in the church of 8. Francesco, and the Betrayal of Christ (1524), accounted his masterpiece. For the former he made clay models for study and a lay figure, and executed every- thing from nature. Both in the Ferrarese territory and in Rome his pictures of small dimensions are very numerous. He continued constantly at work until in 1550 blindness overtook him,—an affliction which he bore with patience, being a man of pleasant friendly disposition and of devout feeling. In the later years of his work he painted on all feast-days in monasteries for the love of God. He had married at the age of forty-eight and died at Ferrara on 6th (or 16th) September 1559, leaving two children. Garofalo combined sacred inventions with some very familiar details. A certain archaism of style, along with a strong glow of colour, suffices to distinguish from the true method of Raphael even those pictures in which he most closely resembles the great master, and this is sometimes very closely. He was a friend of

Giulio Romano, Giorgione, Titian, and Ariosto; in a picture of Paradise he painted this poet between St Catherine and St Sebastian. In youth he was fond of lute-playing and also of fencing. He ranks as the best of the Ferrarese painters; his leading Pau was Giro- lamo Carpi. The Adoration of the Magi, in the church of St George near Ferrara, and a Peter Martyr, in the Dominican church, Ferrara (sometimes assumed to have been done in rivalry of Titian), are aniong his principal works not already mentioned. The Palazzo Chigi and the Palazzo Borghese contain numerous examples, and

the London National Gallery four, one of them being a Madonna and Christ enthroned, with St Francis and three other saints.

TITANIUM (atomic weight!=48-08, O=16), desig- nates in chemistry a relatively rare element, which is cus- tomarily classed with the metals, although it comes nearer in its character to silicon than to any of the ordinary metals. Its discovery as an element was due to William Gregor, who found in the mineral menaccanite a new earth, which was regarded as the oxide of a new metal, menachin. Independently of him Klaproth in 1793 discovered a new metal in rutile and called it titanium; he subsequently found that it was identical with Gregor’s element. The latter name was, however, retained. Titanium, although pretty widely diffused throughout the mineral kingdom, is not found in abundance. The commonest titanium mineral is rutile (TiO,); anatase and brookite, though mineralogically different from rutile and each other, are forms of the same binoxide.

Metallic titanium is little known. In 1822 Wollaston examined a specimen of those beautiful copper-like crystals which are occa- sionally met with in iron-furnace slags, and declared them to be metallic titanium. This view had currency until 1849, when Wohler showed that the crystals are a compound, TiNC),+3Ti,No, of a cyanide and a nitride of the metal. Real titanium was made by Wohler and Deville in 1857 by heating to redness fluo-titanate of potassium (see below) in vapour of sodium in an atmosphere of dry hydrogen, and extracting the alkaline fluoride formed by water. The metal thus produced had the appearance of iron as obtained

by the reduction of its oxide in hydrogen. When heated in air, it burns brilliantly, with the formation of binoxide. Its most curi- ems IRA Speech et

1 According to T. E. Thorpe’s researches, published in 18838.

ous property is the readiness with which it unites with nitrogen gas intoa nitride. The exact composition of this nitride is not known ; but when heated in hydrogen it loses part of its nitrogen as am- monia, and becomes Ti;Ng, a metallic-looking yellow solid, and this when heated in nitrogen gas passes into higher nitrides, which are again available for the production of ammonia. Tessi¢d du Mothay in 1872 proposed to utilize these reactions for the production of ammonia from atmospheric nitrogen. Of other titanium compounds the most important are those formed on the type of TiX,, when X=Cl, Br, or 40, &c.

The binoxide TiO, exists as rutile. One method of preparing a purer oxide from the mineral is to fuse it, very finely powdered, with six times its weight of bisulphate of potash in platinum, then extract the fuse with cold water, and boil the filtered solution for alongtime. Titanic oxide separates out as a white hydrate, which, however, is generally contaminated with ferric hydrate and often with oxide of tin, SnO,. A better method is Wohler’s. He fuses the finely powdered mineral with twice its weight of carbonate of potash in a platinum crucible, pounds the fuse, and treats it in a platinum basin with aqueous hydrofluoric acid. The alkaline titan- ate first produced is converted into crystalline fluo-titanate, TiF,K., which is with difficulty soluble, and is extracted with hot water and filtered off. The. filtrate, which may be collected in glass vessels if an excess of hydrofluoric acid has been avoided, deposits the greater part of the salt on cooling. The crystals are collected, washed, pressed, and recrystallized, whereby the impurities are easily removed. The pure salt is dissolved in hot water and decomposed with ammonia to produce a slightly ammoniacal hydrated oxide ; this, when ignited in platinum, leaves pure TiO, in the form of brownish lumps, the specific gravity of which varies from 3°9 to 4°25, according to the temperature at which it was kept in igniting. The more intense the heat the denser the product. The oxide is fusible only in the oxy-hydrogen flame. It is insoluble in all acids, except in hot concentrated sulphuric, when finely powdered. Sup- posing the excess of vitriol to have

been boiled away, the residue, after cooling, dissolves in cold water. The solution, if boiled, de- posits its titanic oxide as a hydrate called meta-titanic acid, be- cause it differs in its properties from ortho-titanic acid, obtained by decomposing a solution of the chloride in cold water with alka- lies. The ortho-body dissolves in cold dilute acids; the meta-body does not. If titanic oxide is fused with excess of alkaline carbonate it expels CO, parts of carbonic acid for TiO, parts of itself. The salt R,OTiO, is decomposed by water with the formation of a solu- tion of alkali free of titanium, and a residue of an acid titanate, which is insoluble in water but soluble in cold aqueous mineral acids.

The chloride TiCl, is obtained as a distillate by heating to dull redness an intimate dry mixture of the binoxide and ignited lamp- black in dry chlorine. The reaction may be carried out in a hard glass tube. For methods of purification we refer to the handbooks of chemistry. The pure chloride is a colourless liquid of 1°7604 specific gravity at 0°C., boiling at 136°4 under 753°3 mm. pressure (T. E. Thorpe). It fumes strongly in moist air. When dropped very cautiously into cold water it dissolves into a clear solution, which, however, when boiled, deposits most of its oxide in the meta-hydrate form. There are, at least, two lower chlorides of titanium,—one of the composition Ti,Cl, and another of the com- position TiCl,, both solids and both extremely prone to pass into titanic compounds. A solution of the tetrachloride in water, as well as of the soluble hydroxide in dilute acid generally, when kept in contact with metallic zinc, is reduced to one of the lower chlorides with development of a violet colour. With regard to the detection of titanium we need not add much to what we have already given incidentally. Acid solutions of TiO, are not precipitated by sul- phuretted hydrogen ; but sulphide of ammonium acts on them as if it were ammonia, the H,S being liberated. Oxide of titanium when fused with microcosmic salt (¢.e., NaPOg) in the oxidizing flame yields a bead which is yellowish in the heat but colourless after cooling. In the reducing flame the bead becomes violet, more readily on the addition of tin; in the presence of iron it becomes blood-red. Titanic oxides when fused on charcoal, even with cyan- ide of potassium, yield no metal.

TITANS, powerful beings of Greek mythology, the children of Sky and Earth. According to Hesiod, the male Titans were Oceanus, Coeus, Crius,

Hyperion, Iapetus, and Cronus; the female were Thea, Rhea, Themis, Mnemosyne, Phoebe, and Tethys, to whom Apollodorus adds Dione. For the rebellion of the Titans against their father Sky (Uranus), the success and reign of Cronus, and the final consignment of the Titans to Tartarus by Zeus, see Myruo- Loey, vol. xvii. p. 155, and Saturn, vol. xxi. p. 320 sg.

TITHES. It has been explained in Sacririce (vol. xxi. p. 133) that among ancient peoples sacrificial gifts frequently assume the character of a tribute in kind, paid

to the deity in acknowledgment of the fruits of the land, or the increase of flocks attributed to his blessing. At first this tribute is not measured or enforced by law: the gift is a voluntary one, the magnitude of which may be fixed by a vow, or influenced by public opinion as to what is reasonable, but is not prescribed by any stated authority having power to exact what is prescribed. In the oldest Hebrew legislation sacrificial gifts to Jehovah (firstlings and first-fruits) are demanded; but apart from the consecra- tion of the firstlings, which is imperative (Exod. xxii. 29 sy., xxxiv. 19 sq.), the amount is not fixed. In Deutero- nomy (xiv. 22 sqg.), on the other hand, the tithe or tenth of corn, wine, and oil is required in addition to the firstlings of the flock and the herd. This precept, written down in the 7th century B.c., is plainly no innovation, but rests on older usage (cp. Gen. xxviii. 22; Amos iv. 4); the new point emphasized is not that tithes must be paid, but that they must be consumed at the central, instead of a local, sanctuary (Deut. xii. 6, 11, xiv. 23 sqq.), apparently at the great autumn feast or Feast of TABERNACLES (¢.2.).1 Such a tithe is still nothing more than the old offering of first-fruits (bikkwrim) made definite as regards quantity, and it was only natural that as time went on there should be some fixed standard of the due amount of the annual sacred tribute.2 The establishment of such a standard does not necessarily imply that full payment was exacted ; in Gen. xxviii. 22 Jacob vows of his own free will to pay tithes, just as the Arabs used to vow the tithe of the in- crease of the flock (schol. on Harith, Moall., 1. 69, ed. Arnold), The Arab did not always fulfil his vow, and there was no force to make him do so. But, however in- exactly it may often have been paid, the proportion of one part in ten seems to have been accepted in

many ancient nations as the normal measure of sacred tribute paid from the gains of husbandry, trade, or even of war.? The tithe, in fact, appears to have been a common form of tax upon the produce of land or other revenues, for civil as well as for sacred purposes. We find it in Greece (as at Athens), and in Sicily and Asia, under the Roman empire ; but its special home was in the East. It was exacted on agricultural products and flocks by Hebrew kings (1 Sam. viii. 15, 17), and on imports by the monarchs of Babylon (Aristotle, @con., ed. Berlin, p.1352b). Aristotle gives the tithe on fruits of the soil the first place among the revenues of satraps (Jdid., p. 1345b), and it still forms an important element in the fiscal system of Mohammedan states. It will be observed that the proportion of one in ten has been applied in the East, and in antiquity generally, to imports of very different kinds, and in Mohammedan taxation we find the name retained in cases where much less than a tenth is actually taken. In like manner Aris- totle (wt supra) makes Sexé7y a mere synonym of éexdptoy, or tax on produce; the proportion of one to ten, it would seem, was so commonly taken in antiquity as the basis of ad valorem taxes that any such tax or tribute might be called a tithe. As regards the sacred tithe of the Hebrews, a distinction is drawn in Deuteronomy between the ordi- nary annual tithe, which may not have been a full tenth, and the “whole” or “full tithe,” paid once in three years

i

1 Cp. Deut. xxvi. with 1 Sam. i. 21 (Sept.), and Jerome on Ezek, i. 3; and see Wellhausen, Prolegomena, p. 94 (Eng. tr., p. 92 sq.).

2 In Deuteronomy, accordingly, the first-fruits (bikkarim) are not mentioned ; the tithe takes their place. The word translated “ first- fruits” in Deut. (réshith) is a small gift to the priests, a mere basket- ful (xviii. 4, xxvi. 2 sq.).

3 For instances see Spencer, De Legibus Hebrworum, lib. iii., cap. 10, § 1. Among the Semites in particular note the tithe paid by the Carthaginians to the Tyrian Melkarth (Diod., xx. 14), and the tithe of frankincense paid in Arabia to the god Sabis (Pliny, H.N., xii. 32 ; and comp. W. R. Smith, Prophets of Israel, p. 382 sq.). A tithe of cattle appears in Lydia (Nic. Damasc., fr. 24).

(Deut. xiv. 28, xxvi. 12), which the legislator directs to be stored at home, and spent in feeding the poor.

From Amos iv. 4 it is sometimes inferred that in the 8th century B.C. the sacrificial tithe, presented at a sanctuary, was triennial. But when the prophet, mocking the false zeal of the people, says, '* Bring your sacrifices every morning and your tithes every three days" (not ''years," as E.V.), he hardly implies more than that occasions of sacrifice were three times as frequent as tithe-day, and so alludes to the fact that there were by old usage three annual feasts and one annual tithe. A triennial sacrificial tithe is inconceivable when it is remembered that the tithe is only an extension of the first-fruits. The triennial tithe in Deuteronomy seems to be rather an innovation necessary in the interests of the poor, when sacrificial feasts were transferred to the central sanctuary, and ceased to benefit the neighbours of the offerer, who had a prescrip- tive claim to be considered on such occasions (comp. 1 Sam. xxv. 8 sqq.; Neh. viii. 10; Luke xiv. 18).

The priests of the sanctuaries had of old a share in the sacrificial feasts, and among those who are to share in the triennial tithe Deuteronomy includes the Levites, 2.¢., the priests of the local sanctuaries who had lost their old perquisites by the centralization of worship. After the return, and before the work of Ezra, when Deuteronomy was still the law of the new Israel, but the Levites had become subordinate ministers of the temple, and required a more regular provision, the '' whole tithe" was naturally fixed on for this purpose ; but, instead of remaining in the hands of the tithe-payers to be doled out in charity, it was stored in the temple. Such, at least, was the plan pro- posed, though from Mal. iii. 8 sgg. it appears that it was very imperfectly carried out. As Malachi speaks in Deuteronomic phrase of the "whole tithe," the payment to the Levites was perhaps still only triennial; and, if even this was difficult to collect, we may be sure that the minor sacrificial tithe had very nearly disappeared. The indifference complained of in Mal. i. was in great part due to the fundamental changes in the religion of Israel, which made private altar gifts and feasts almost meaningless. On the other hand, the provision of regular support for the priests and Levites, the ministers of the public ritual, was now all important, and received

special attention from Ezra and Nehemiah (Neh. x. 37 sqq., xiii. 10 sqq.). They effected it by enforcing the new law of the priestly code (Num. xviii. 21 sgq.), in which it is formally laid down that the tithe is a tribute paid to the Levites, who in turn pay a tithe of it to the priests. The plain inten- tion of the priestly code is to allow the old tithe of Deuteronomy to drop; but the harmonistic interpretation of the later scribes was to the effect that two tithes were to be paid every year, and a third tithe, for the poor, on every third year (Tob. i. 7 sg.; Jos. Ant., iv. 8, § 22). The last change in the system was the appropriation of the Levitical tithe by the priests, which apparently was effected by John Hyrcanus, though a tradition glaringly inconsistent with Nehemiah ascribes it to Ezra (Mishnah, " Ma'aser Sh.," v. 15; "Sota," ix. 10, and Wagenseil's note).* (Ww. RB. 8.)

Tithes in Law. Tithes were generally regarded up to the 17th century as existing jure divino, and as having been payable to the support of the church ever since the earliest days of Christianity. History, as Selden showed in his learned and exhaustive treatise (History of Tithes, 1618), does not bear out this view.® In the words of Hallam, "the slow and gradual manner in which parochial churches became independent appears to be of itself a sufficient answer to those who ascribe a great antiquity to the universal payment of tithes." §

4A cattle tithe is demanded in Levit. xxvii. 32, and spoken of in 2 Chron. xxxi. 6. It is doubtful if this was ever acknowledged in practice. See Kuenen, Godsdienst, ii. 269 sq., and Wellhausen, op. cit., Vv. 1, § 2 (Eng. tr., p. 155 sq.), who argue that the passage in Leviticus isa later addition. The tendency of the Pharisees was to pay tithe on everything, and to make a self-righteous boast of this (Matt. xxiii. 23 ; Luke xviii. 12).

5 It was his denial of the divine right of tithes that brought down the wrath of the Star Chamber upon the author. He was forced to retract an opinion too liberal for the time. See SELDEN.

6 Hallam, Middle Ages, ii. 205.

Long before the 8th century payment of tithes was enjoined by ecclesiastical writers and by councils of the church ; but the earliest authentic example of anything like a law of the state enforcing payment appears to occur in the Capitularies of Charlemagne at the end of the 8th or beginning of the 9th century. Tithes were by that enactment to be applied to the maintenance of the bishop and clergy, the poor,! and the fabric of the church. In course of time the principle of payment of tithes was extended far beyond its original intention. Thus they became transferable to laymen and saleable like ordinary property, in spite of the injunctions of the third Lateran council, and they became payable out of sources of income which were not originally tithable. The canon law con- tains numerous and minute provisions on the subject of tithes. The Decretwm forbade their alienation to lay proprietors, denounced excominunication against those who refused to pay, and based the right of the church upon Scriptural precedents." The Decretals contained provisions as to what was and what was not tithable property, as to those privileged from payment, as to sale or hypo- thecation to laymen, as to priority over state taxes, &c.* Various questions which arose later were settled by Boniface VIII.* The council of Trent enjoined due payment of tithes, and excommuni- cated those who withheld them.° ae i ;

In England the earliest example of legal recognition of tithes is, according to Selden, a decree of a synod in 786.6 Other examples before the Conquest occur in the Fadus lfredi et Guthruni and the laws of Athelstan, Edgar, and Canute." The tripartite division of tithes does not appear to have been recognized in England by any genuine legal enactment except as what Mr. Frecman calls ''a counsel of perfection."® The earliest mention of tithes in statute law proper is in the Statute of Westminster the Second in 1285, ce. 5 of which deals with the patron's writ de advocatione dectmarum. From that date until the present year (1887) there have been a large number of Acts dealing with tithes,—the earliest which is still law being 2 Hen. IV. c. 4, making it an offence to purchase a bull from the pope for the discharge of land from tithes. The law has only attained its present condition by slow degrecs, and by the combined effect of statutes and judicial decisions. The effect of the Tithe Commutation Act of 1836 has been to make most of the old law of merely historical interest, as in the course of the commutation all the questions of law as to prescription, exemptions, &c., would have been

duly considered by the commissioners before the rent- charge was finally apportioned.

Tithes in English law are of three kinds,—predial, arising imme- diately from the soil, as ofcorn; mixed, arising from things nourished by the soil, as of milk or wool; personal, as of the profits of manual occupations or trades. The right to the last was considerably re- stricted by 2and 3 Edw. VI. c. 13. They are also divided from other points of view into ordinary and extraordinary,—the latter being a tithe at a heavier rate charged on hop and market gardens,—and into great and small, as a rule those which go to the rector and vicar respectively. In general great tithes are predial, small are mixed and personal. It is not everything that is tithable; ex- emptions are claimable either from the nature of the property or the privilege of the owner. Stone, lime, and such other substances as are not of annual increase are exempt. So are creatures fera nature. Exempt by privilege are the crown by its prerogative, and spiritual corporations in accordance with the maxim recognized equally by canon and common law, cecclesia decimas non solvit ecclesiz. Thus a rector pays no tithes to his vicar, or a vicar to his rector. On the same principle it is a ground of exemption that lands were anciently the property of the privileged orders (at the time of the dissolution of monasteries, the Cistercians and Hos- pitallers), or were lands of the greater monasteries discharged from tithe by 31 Hen. VIII. c. 13. Exemption may also be claimed by redemption, by substitution of a rent-charge, by a real composition (that is, an agreement between the incumbent and the landowner, with the consent of the ordinary and patron, for the discharge from payment of tithe by means of satisfaction by giving of land or some other real recompense), ‘by a modus (that is, a partial discharge owing to some customary method of tithing or modus decimandt), or by prescription under 2 and 8 Will. IV.c. 100. Tithes in extra- parochial places belonged at common law to the crown, except by custom. Tithes are incorporeal hereditaments (sec REAL EstTATe), and may be dealt with like any other real estate of that nature. Thus they are, if in lay hands, tenements which may be entailed or leased, are subject to dower and curtesy, are assets for the pay- ment of debts, and are (whether in lay hands or not) within the Statute of Limitations. They do not, however, issue out of the land like rents, but are collateral to it. Accordingly tithes are always freehold, even though they are charged on copyhold lands. Tithes

: See Dante, Par. xii. 98, ** decimas que sunt pauperum Dei.”

Pt. ii. 16, 7. 3 Bk. iii. 30. 4 Extrav. Comm., bk. iii. 7.

5 Sess. xxv. 12. 6 C. viii. s. 2.

7 The grant said to have been made by Athelwulf in 855, to which the general payment of tithes in England has been commonly traced, appears not . iach ery, evidence; see Hallam, Middle Ages, Supplemental

Ds :

8 See Rev. Morris Fuller in National Review, November 1886.

PriTrHetse

are presumed to go to the parson of the parish. This presumption may be rebutted by proof that some or all the tithes go to the vicar, where the rector is in holy orders, or to a lay impropriator. It is said that about a third part of the tithes in England is in the hands of laymen. At one time arbitrary consecration of tithes was allowed,—that is, payment to any priest at the will of the tithe- payer. This was forbidden by a decretal epistle of Innocent IIL, about 1200. ‘‘This epistle decretall,” says Coke, ‘‘ bound not the subjects of this realm, but the same being just and reasonable they allowed the same, and so became lex terre.” A vestige of the arbitrary consecration perhaps exists in the rarely occurring right of the parson of one parish toa portion of the tithes of another. Tithes are payable by all persons alike, whether members of the Church of England or not. Special enactments deal with their recovery fromm Roman Catholics and Quakers. Up to 1836 tithes were paid in kind, unless where any other method of payment applied in a particular case, such as a modus in the nature of a pecuniary compensation, or a pecuniary payment under the terms of a public or private Act, as in the city of London by 37 Hen. VIII. c. 12, 22 and 28 Car. II. c. 15, and other Acts. Even before 1836, however, the bulk of the tithes had been commuted, but such commutation was in ordinary cases good only during the tenure of a particular ineumbency, and did not bind the incuinbent’s successors. The Act of 1836 merely completed and gave legislative sanction to a tendency which had been long on the increase.

The effect of the Tithe Commutation Act, 1836 (6 and 7 Will. IV. c. 71, frequently amended since), was to substitute for the tithe paid in kind or the fluctuating commuted tithe a rent- charge—commonly called the tithe rent-charge—equivalent to the market value from time to time on a septennial average of the exact quantities of wheat, barley, and oats which made up the legal tithes by the estimate in 1836. Excepted from the operation of the Act are (unless where there is a special provision approved by the commissioners) tithes of fish or of fishing, or any personal tithes other than those of mills, or any mineral tithes, or pay- ments or rent-charges in lieu of tithes in London and other places, resting on the authority of local Acts. The Act has not been wholly successful in its working. By the transfer of estates, and by changes in local agriculture, the old estimates are no longer fairly applicable in all cases. The commutation has been, on the whole, to the advantage of the landowners, for the tithe remains fixed while the rental of land since 1836 has risen, accord- ing to Sir James Caird, from 33 millions to 52 millions per annum. Commutation under the Act is either by a voluntary agreement, confirmed by the tithe commissioners," or by an award of the commissioners. The machinery for determining the tithe for any given year is as follows:—the Board of Trade is to cause the average prices per imperial bushel of each sort of British corn to be computed from the summaries sent by the inspectors of corn returns, obtained from the averages stated by the inspectors, and published in the London Gazette weekly, quarterly, and yearly, and a septennial average is to be obtained from the sum of the annual averages divided by seven (45 and 46 Vict. c. 37, supersed- ing sect. 56 of the Actof 1836). The rent-charge is computed on the basis of one-third for wheat, one-third for barley, and one-third for oats. The respective prices were originally fixed by 7 Will. IV. and 1 Vict. c. 69, s. 7 (as altered by the London Gazette of 9th December 1837), at 7s. 14d. for wheat, 3s. 11d. for barley, and 2s. 9d. for oats per bushel. The prices for 1887 were 4s. 1ld., 3s. 10d., and 2s. 7$d. respectively. Owing to this fall in prices, tithe rent-charge which stood at £100 in 1836 was worth in 1887 only £87, 8s. 10d.

After the coming into force of the Act of 1836 all lands were discharged from tithe, and the tithe rent-charge was substituted, payable by equal half-yearly payments, each Ist of July and Ist of January. A tenant paying the rent-charge is to be allowed the same in account with his landlord. The

charge thus ultimately falls upon the landlord, whether or not he pays it in the first in- stance to the tithe-owner. Land may be given instead of a rent-charge where the tithe-owner is an ccclesiastical person. Gardens or small tenements may be exempt from tithe by 3 and 4 Vict. ¢. 15. Later Acts give.a power of redemption of rent-charge in the case of land required for pnblic purposes, settled land, &c. (9 and 10 Vict. c. 73; 23 and 24 Vict. c. 98; 41 and 42 Vict. c. 42; 45 and 46 Vict. c. 38). Merger of the rent-charge is allowed by tenants in fee or in tail under the Act of 1836, and by persons having powers of appointment, tenants for life, and owners of glebes under 1 and 2 Vict.c. 64 and 2 and 3 Vict. c. 62. The mode of recovery of arrears provided by the Act of 1836 was a new one. Up to that time arrears could not be distrained for, unless in exceptional cases. The remedy of the parson was a suit for subtraction of tithes, which, by 2 and 3 Edw. VI. c. 13, could only be brought in a spiritual court. The remedy of the lay holder was a suit or action in any temporal court by 32 Hen. VIII. ee ee eee

9 2 Inst., 641. 10 By the Settled Land Act, 1882, the tithe commissioners have, with other bodies, been merged in the land commissioners constituted by the Act.

ce. 7. Itis provided by the Act of 1836 that, if the rent-charge be

in arrear for twenty-one days, the person entitled to it may, after ten days' notice in writing, distrain upon the lands liable to the payment of it. If it be in arrear for forty days, and there be no sufficient distress on the premises, a writ of habcre facias posses- sionem may issue, directing the sheriff to summon a jury to assess arrears. Not more than two years' arrears can be recovered by either means. It appears from these sections of the Act that the charge binds the land alone, and that there is no personal liability of either landlord or tenant. Though the charge is on the land, it is not on the inheritance, and it has been recently decided that arrears are not recoverable by sale of the lands out of which the rent-charge issues. The assessment of the rent-charge on wastes, common or Lamnias lands, coppice wood, turnips, cattle agisted, &c., and the commutation of corn rents created by local Acts, are the subject of special provisions. The Act of 1836 and later Acts pro- vided for the division of the charge upon hop grounds, orchards,

fruit plantations, and market gardens into the ordinary and extra- ordinary charge, the latter to be a rate per acre in addition to the ordinary charge. The extraordinary tithe applies only while the land is cultivated as a hop ground, &c., and in case of new cultiva- tion comes into operation gradually, the full rate not being levied atonce. The incidence of the extraordinary tithe having been found an impediment to agriculture, especially in Kent, the Extraordinary Tithe Commutation Act, 1886 (49 and 50 Vict. c. 54), was passed as aremedy. It provides that no extraordinary tithe is to be charged upon any land newly cultivated after the passing of the Act. With regard to land subject at the passing of the Act to extraordinary tithe, the Act enables the land commissioners to certify the capital value of the extraordinary tithe on each farm or parcel of land, the land to be charged in lieu of the tithe with the payment of an annual rent-charge equal to 4 per cent. on the capital value. The owner or any other person interested in the land may redeem the charge at its capital value. Tithe rent-charge is subject by the Act of 1836 to all parliamentary, parochial, and county rates, and is an hereditament within the Poor Rate Act of the same year (6 and 7 Will. IV. c. 96). The latter Act further enacts that in estimating the net annual value of rateable hereditaments, the rent is to be estimated free, inter alia, of tithe commutation rent-charge, if any.

Scotland. —The terms “tithes” and “ teinds” are both in use, but the latter is the more common. Teinds are either drawn in kind, valued, or redeemed. Originally they were all drawn in kind, as in England, but their commutation or redemption was the subject of many Acts of the Scottish parliament, especially those passed in 1638, the practical effect of which has been to make a fixed burden on the land take the place of_a fluctuating payment, and to sub- stitute a payment of one-fifth of the rent for one-tenth of the pro- duce. In the first instance all teinds went to the church; but, when at the Reformation the crown became proprietor of the church lands, grants were made by it to the lords of erection or titulars of the tithes, laymen holding of the crown. The Act 1587, c. 29, annexed the church lands to the crown, with certain exceptions in favour of lay holders and others. All bishops’ teinds and those formerly part of the revenue of the chapel royal are now crown property. The Church Patronage Act of 1874 does not affect the right to teinds of a patron or titular. Teinds in lay hands are sub- ject to the burden of providing a suitable provision for the minister,

the stipend being fixed by the Court of Teinds. All lands are sub- ject to teinds except those which before the Reformation were feued cum decimis inclusis ct nunquam antca separatis, so that the grantee held lands and teinds together. In order to prove such an exemp- tion, the person claiming under a decimez inclusw title must show that the lands and teinds belonged to a monastery, that the lands were never teindable, that they were novalia, or reclaimed by the monks themselves, that the title bears that the lands are held cum decimis inclusis, &c., and that it is previous to 1587. The judges of the Court of Session sit as commissioners of teinds,—a jurisdic- tion specially preserved by art. xix. of the Act of Union,—and exercise wider powers than any existing body in England, as they possess at once the jurisdiction of a court of justice and of the English land commissioners. The constitution and procedure of the Court of Teinds is regulated by 48 Geo. III. c. 188 and sub- sequent Acts." .

Treland.—Many Acts of the Irish parliament deal with tithes, both generally and locally, the earliest being 83 Hen. VE coals based upon the English Act, 28 Hen. VIII. c. 20. After the ''tithe war" at the beginning of the 19th century, a tithe composi- tion payable by the occupier was fixed by 4 Geo. IV. c. 99. In 1888 an annual rent-charge equal in amount to three-fourths of the tithe ne

1 See, in addition to the authorities already cited, Montesquieu, Esprit des Lois, bk. xxxi. c. 12; Prideaux, On Tithes; Eagle, On Tithes; Shelford, On the Tithe Commutation Acts ; Phillimore, £c- clesiastical Lanw, vol. ii., 1488; Stephen, Comm., vol. ii. bk. iv. pt. ii. ch, iii.

2 See Selden, History of Tithes, c. vii. s. 9; G. J. Bell, Principles, §$ 837, 1147; W. Bell, Law Dict. and Digest, " Teinds."

composition was substituted for the latter by 1 and 2 Vict. c. 109. The rent-charge is recoverable by distress where the person liable is the occupier, in other cases by action in the High Court of Justice, or by civil bill in claims under £20. The Irish Church Act, 1869 (32 and 33 Vict. c. 42), vests all tithe rent-charge then belonging to clergy of the Irish Church in the commissioners of church tem- poralities in Ireland. By that Act and the

amending Act, 35 and 36 Vict. c. 90, the commissioners are enabled to purchase the surrender or assignment of any subsisting lease of tithe rent-charge made by an ecclesiastical person or corporation, and to sell any rent-charge vested in them to the owner of the land charged therewith for a sum equal to twenty-two and a half years' pur- chase. (J. Wt.)

TITHONUS, a character of Greek mythology, a son or, according to others, a brother of Laomedon, king of Troy. He was beloved by Eos (the Morning), who carried him away and dwelt with him at the limit of the world, by the Ocean stream. Eos begged of Zeus that her lover might live for ever, and her request was granted ; but she forgot to ask immortal youth for him, so he shrivelled up into a hideous old man, whom Eos kept shut up in a chamber. At last Tithonus prayed to be rid of the burden of old age and was turned into a grasshopper. Eos had two sons by him—Memnon, king of Aithiopia, and Emathion. Memnon was killed before Troy by Achilles; but the legend is later than the Jiéad, which does not mention it. As to Eos her-self, her name is etymologically identical with the Sanskrit ush and the Latin aurora, both meaning "morning." Ac- cording to Hesiod, Eos was a daughter of Hyperion and Thea, and sister of the Sunand Moon. Homer represents her arising every morning from the couch of Tithonus to carry light to gods and men, drawn ina chariot up the sky by her swift steeds Lampus and Phaethon. Her com- mon epithet in Homer is "rosy-fingered," the meaning of which is disputed. Besides Tithonus she loved Orion, till Artemis shot him with an arrow in Ortygia. She also loved and carried off the youthful hunter Cephalus ; he was already married to Procris, to whom, in spite of his infidelity, he was afterwards reconciled. A peculiar form of the Cephalus legend is given by Apollodorus (iii. 14, 3): Cephalus, a son of Hermes and Herse, was carried off by Eos, and from their union in Syria sprang Phaethon. By Astreeus, Eos became the mother of the Morning Star and all the starry host.

With regard to representations in art, the combat between Achilles and Memnon was figured on the chest of Cypselus (Pausanias, v. 19, 1), and it appears on early Greek vases of Melos, Corinth, and Chalcis. There was a group of Eos carrying off Cephalus on the roof of the Stoa Basileios at Athens, and the same scene was repre- sented on the throne at Amycle

(Paus., i. 8, 1; iii. 18, 12). It also appears on vases, and formed an acroterion group on the temple

at Delos. Eos in her chariot is represented on vases. See Roscher, Ausfiihrliches Lewikon der griech. u. rom. Mythologie, p. 1252 sq.

TITIAN (1477-1576). Tiziano Vecellio, or Vecelli, one of the greatest painters of the world, and in especial the typical representative of the Venetian school, was com- monly called during his lifetime “Da Cadore,” from the place of his birth, and has also been designated ‘Tl Divino.” The country of Cadore, in the Friuli, barren and poor, is watered by the Piave torrent poured forth from the Carnic Alps, and is at no great distance from Tyrol. ‘Titian, therefore, was not in any sense a Venetian of the lagoons and Adriatic, but was native to a country, and a range of association, perception, and observation, of a directly different kind. Venice conquered Friuli at a date not very remote from the birth of Titian; and Cadore, having to choose between Venetian and imperial allegiance, declared for the former. Approaching the castle of Cadore from the village Sotto Castello, one passes on the right a cottage of humble pretensions, inscribed as Titian’s birth- place ; the precise locality is named Arsenale. The near mountain—all this range of hills being of dolomite for- mation—is called Marmarolo. At the neighbouring village of Valle was fought in Titian’s lifetime the battle of

Cadore, a Venetian victory which he recorded in a paint- ing. In the 12th century the count of Camino became count also of Cadore. He was called Guecello; and this name descended in 1321 to the podest&a (or mayor) of Cadore, to the stock to which the painter belonged. Titian, one of a family of four, and son of Gregorio Vecelli, a distinguished councillor and soldier, and of his wife Lucia, was born in 1477.

It used to be said that Titian, when a child, painted upon the wall of the Casa Sampieri, with flower-juice, a Madonna and Infant with a boy-angel; but modern connoisseurs say that the picture is a common work, of a date later than Titian’s decease. He was still a child when sent by his parents to Venice, to an uncle’s house. There he was placed under an art-teacher, who may per- haps have been Sebastiano Zuccato, a mosaicist and painter now forgotten. He next became a pupil of Gentile Bellini, whom he left after a

while, because the master considered him too offhand in work. Here he had the opportunity of studying many fine antiques. His last instructor was Giovanni Bellini; but Titian was not altogether satisfied with his tutoring. The youth was a contemporary of Giorgione and Palma (Vecchio); when his period of pupilage expired, he is surmised to have entered into a sort of partnership with Giorgione. A fresco of Hercules on the Morosini Palace is said to have been one of his earliest works; others were the Virgin and Child, in the Vienna Belvedere, and the Visitation of Mary and Elizabeth (from the convent of S. Andrea), now in the Venetian academy. In 1507-8 Giorgione was com- missioned by the state to execute frescos on the re-erected Fondaco de' Tedeschi. Titian and Morto da Feltre worked along with him, and some fragments of Titian's paintings, which are reputed to have surpassed Giorgione's, are still discernible. According to one account, Giorgione was nettled at this superiority, and denied Titian admittance to his house thenceforth. Stories of jealousies between painters are rife in all regions, and in none more than in the Venetian,—various statements of this kind apply- ing to Titian himself. One should neither accept nor re- ject them uninquiringly ; counter-evidence of some weight can be cited for Vecelli's vindication in relation to Moroni, Correggio, Lotto, and Coello. Towards 1511, after the cessation of the League of Cambrai—which had endea- voured to shatter the power of the Venetian republic, and had at any rate succeeded in clipping the wings of the lion of St Mark—vVecelli went to Padua, and painted in the Scuola di 8, Antonio a series of frescos, which con- tinue to be an object of high curiosity to the students of his genius, although they cannot be matched against his finest achievements in oil painting. Another fresco, dated 1523, is St Christopher carrying the Infant Christ, at the foot of the doge's steps in the ducal palace of Venice. From Padua Titian in 1512 returned to Venice : and in 1513 he obtained a broker's patent in the Fondaco de' Tedeschi, termed " La Sanseria " or " Senseria " (a pri- vilege much coveted by rising or risen artists), and became superintendent of the Government works, being especially charged to complete the paintings left unfinished by Gio- vanni Bellini in the hall of the great council in the ducal palace. He set up an atelier on the Grand Canal, at S. Samuele,—the precise site being now unknown. It was not until 1516, upon the death of Bellini, that he came into actual enjoyment of his patent; at the same date an arrangement for painting was entered into with Titian alone, to the exclusion of other artists who had heretofore been

associated with him. The patent yielded him a good annuity —120 crowns —and exempted him from certain taxes,——he being bound in return to paint likenesses of the successive doges of his time at the fixed price of eight

for his productions.

1 i ary

crowns each. The actual number which he executed was five. all but centenarian life of incessant artistic labour and productiveness, was now in the fortieth year of his age. The same year, 1516, witnessed his first journey to Fer- rara. the church of the Frari, one of his most world-renowned masterpieces, the Assumption of the Madonna, now in the Venetian academy. indeed the most extraordinary piece of colourist execution on a great scale which Italy had yet seen. took note of the facts, and did not fail to observe that Titian was neglecting his work in the hall of the great council.

Titian, it may be well to note as a landmark in this

Two years later was produced, for the high altar of It excited a vast sensation, being

The signoria

Vecelli was now at the height of his fame; and towards 1521, following the production of a figure of St Sebastian

for the papal legate in Brescia (a work of which there

are numerous replicas), purchasers became extremely urgent It may have been about 1523, after some irregular living and a consequent fever, that he married a lady of whom only the Christian name, Cecilia, has come down to us; her first child, Pomponio, was born in 1525, and two (or perhaps three) others followed. Towards 1526 he became acquainted, and soon exceedingly intimate, with Pietro Aretino, the literary bravo, of influ- ence and audacity hitherto unexampled, who figures so strangely in the

chronicles of the time. Titian sent a portrait of him to Gonzaga, duke of Mantua. A great affliction befell him in August 1530, in the death of his wife. He then, with his three children—one of them being the infant Lavinia, whose birth had been fatal to the mother—removed to a new home, and got his sister Orsa to come from Cadore and take charge of the household. The mansion, difficult now to find, is in the Biri Grande, then a fashionable suburb, being in the extreme end of Venice on the sea, with beautiful gardens and a look-out towards Murano. In 1532 he painted in Bologna a portrait of the emperor Charles V., and was created a count pala- tine and knight of the Golden Spur, his children also being made nobles of the empire,—for a painter, honours of an unexampled kind.

The Venetian Government, dissatisfied at Titian's neg- lect of the work for the ducal palace, ordered him in 1538 to refund the money which he had received for time unemployed ; and Pordenone, his formidable rival of recent years, was installed in his place. At the end of a year, however, Pordenone died; and Titian, who had meanwhile applied himself diligently to painting in the hall the battle of Cadore, was reinstated. This great picture, which was burned with several others in 1577, represented in life-size the moment at which the Venetian captain, D'Alviano, fronted the enemy, with horses and men crashing down into the stream. Fontana's engraving, and a sketch by Titian himself in the gallery of the Uffizi in Florence, record the energetic composition. Asa matter of professional and worldly success, his position from about this time may be regarded as higher than that of any other painter known to history, except Raphael, Michelangelo, and at a later date Rubens. In 1540 he received a pen- sion from D'Avalos, Marquis del Vasto, and an annuity of 200 crowns (which was afterwards doubled) from Charles V. on the treasury of Milan. Another source of profit— for he was always sufficiently keen after money—was a contract, obtained in 1542, for supplying grain to Cadore, which he visited with regularity almost every year, and where he was both generous and influential. This reminds us of Shakespeare and his relations to his birthplace, Stratford-on-Avon ; and indeed the great Venetian and the greater Englishman had something akin in the essen- tially natural tone of their inspiration and performance,

air AN

and in the personal tendency of each to look after practical success and “the main chance” rather than to work out aspirations and pursue ideals. Titian had a favourite villa on the neighbouring Manza Hill, from which (it may be inferred) he made his chief observations of landscape form and effect. The so-called Titian’s mill, constantly discernible in his studies, is at Collontola, near Belluno. A visit was paid to Rome in 1546, when he obtained the freedom of the city, his immediate predecessor in that honour having been Michelangelo in 1537. He could at the same time have succeeded the painter Fra Sebastiano in his lucrative office of the piombo, and he made no scruple of becoming a friar for the purpose; but this project lapsed through his being summoned away from Venice in 1547 to paint Charles V. and others in Augsburg. He was there again in 1550, and executed the portrait of Philip If., which was sent to England and proved a potent auxiliary in the suit of the prince for the hand of Queen Mary. In the preceding year Vecelli had affianced his daughter Lavinia, the beautiful girl whom he loved deeply and painted various times, to Cornelio Sarcinelli of Serra- valle ; she had succeeded her aunt Orsa, now deceased, as the manager of the household, which, with the lordly in- come that Titian made by this time, was placed on a cor- responding footing. The marriage took place in 1554. She died in childbirth in 1560. The years 1551 and 1552 were among those in which Titian worked least assiduously,—a circumstance which need excite no surprise in the case of a man aged about seventy-five. He was at the council of Trent towards 1555, of which his admirable picture or finished sketch in the Louvre bears record. He was never in Spain, notwithstanding the many statements which have been made in the affirmative. Titian’s friend Aretino died suddenly in 1556, and another close inti- mate, the sculptor and architect Sansovino, in 1570. With his European fame, and many sources of wealth, Vecelli is the last man one would suppose to have been under the necessity of writing querulous and dunning letters for pay- ment, especially when the defaulter addressed was lord of Spain and of the American Indies ; yet he had constantly to complain that his pictures remained unpaid for and his pensions in arrear, and in the very year of his death (February) he recites the many pictures which he had sent within the preceding twenty years without receiving their price. In fact, there is ground for thinking that all his pensions and privileges, large as they were nominally, brought in but precarious returns. It has been pointed out that in the summer of 1566 (when he was elected

into the Florentine academy) he made an official declaration of his income, and put down the various items apparently below their value, not naming at all his salary or pensions. Possibly there was but too much reason for the omission. In September 1565 Titian went to Cadore and designed the decorations for the church at Pieve, partly executed by his pupils. One of these is a Transfiguration, another an Annunciation (now in §. Salvatore, Venice), inscribed "'Titianus fecit fecit," by way of protest (it is said) against the disparagement of some persons who cavilled at the veteran's failing handicraft. He continued to accept com- missions to the last. He had selected as the place for his burial the chapel of the Crucifix in the church of the Frari ; and, in return for a grave, he offered the Franciscans a picture of the Piet', representing himself and his son Orazio before the Saviour, another figure in the composition being asibyl. This work he nearly finished ; but some differences arose regarding it, and he then settled to be interred in his native Pieve. 'Titian was ninety-nine years of age (more or less) when the plague,' which was then raging 1n

iaiianee oe EO ee Se 1 Out of a total population of 190,000 there perished at this time

60,000.

Venice, seized him, and carried him off on 27th August 1576. He was buried in the church of the Frari, as at first intended, and his Piet&' was finished by Palma Giovane. He lies near his own famous painting, the Madonna di Casa Pesaro. No memorial marked his grave, until by Austrian command Canova executed the monument so well known to sightseers. Immediately after Titian's own death, his son and pictorial assistant Orazio died of the same epidemic. His sumptuous mansion was plundered during the plague by thieves, who prowled about, scarce controlled.

Titian was a man of correct features and handsome person, with an uncommon air of penetrating observation and self – possessed composure, —a Venetian presence worthy to pair with any of those "most potent, grave, and reverend signors" whom his pencil has transmitted to posterity. He was highly distinguished, courteous, and winning in society, personally

unassuming, and a fine speaker, enjoying (as is said by Vasari, who saw him in the spring of 1566) health and prosperity unequalled. The numerous heads currently named Titian's Mistress might dispose us to regard the painter as a man of more than usually relaxed morals; the fact is, however, that these titles are mere fancy-names, and no inference one way or the other can be drawn from them. He gave splendid entertain- ments at times; and it is related that, when Henry III. of France passed through Venice on his way from Poland to take the French throne, he called on Titian with a train of nobles, and the painter presented him as a gift with all the pictures of which he inquired the price. He was not a man of universal genius or varied faculty and accomplishment, like Leonardo da Vinci and Michelangelo ; his one great and supreme endowment was that of painting.

Ever since Titian rose into celebrity the general verdict has been that he is the greatest of painters, considered technically. In the first place neither the method of fresco painting nor work of the colossal scale to which fresco painting ministers is here in question. Titian's province is that of oil painting, and of painting on a scale which, though often large and grand, is not colossal either in dimension or in inspiration. Titian may properly be regarded as the greatest manipulator of paint in relation to colour, tone, luminosity, richness, texture, surface, and harmony, and with a view to the production of a pictorial whole conveying to the eye a true, dignified, and beautiful impression of its general subject- matter and of the objects of sense which form its constituent parts. In this sense Titian has never been deposed from his sovereignty in painting, nor can one forecast the time in which he will be deposed. For the complex of qualities which we sum up in the words colour, handling, and general force and harmony of effect, he stands unmatched, although in particular items of forcible or impressive execution—not to speak of creative invention—some painters, one in one respect and another in another, may indisput- ably be preferred to him. He carried to its acme that great colourist conception of the Venetian school of which the first masterpieces are due to the two Bellini, to Carpaccio, and, with more fully deve- loped suavity of manner, to Giorgione. Pre-eminent inventive power or sublimity of intellect he never evinced. Even in energy of action and more especially in majesty or affluence of composition the palm is not his; it is (so far as concerns the Venetian school) assignable to

Tintoretto. ‘Titian is a painter who by wondrous magic of genius and of art satisfies the eye, and through the eye the feelings,—sometimes the mind.

Titian’s pictures abound with memories of his home-country and of the region which led from the hill-summits of Cadore to the queen ~~city of the Adriatic. He was almost the first painter to exhibit an appreciation of mountains, mainly those of a turreted type, exemplified in the Dolomites. Indeed he gave to landscape generally a new and original vitality, expressing the quality of the objects of nature and their control over the sentiments and ima~~ gination with a force that had never before been approached. The earliest Italian picture expressly designated as ‘‘Jandscape”’ was one which Vecelli sent in 1552 to Philip II. His productive faculty was immense, even when we allow for the abnormal length of his professional career. In Italy, England, and elsewhere more than a thousand pictures figure as Titian’s; of these about 250 may be regarded as dubious or spurious. There are, for instance, 9 pictures in the London National Gallery, 18 in the Louvre, 16 in the Pitti, 18 in the Uffizi, 7 in the Naples museum, 8 in the Venetian academy (besides the series in the private meeting-hall), and 41 in the Madrid museum.

Naturally a good deal of attention has been given by artists, connoisseurs, and experts to probing the secret of how Titian managed to obtain such astonishing results in colour and surface. The upshot of this research is but meagre ; the secret seems to be not so much one of workmanship as of faculty. His figures were put in with the brush dipped in a brown solution, and then altered and worked up as his intention developed. The later pictures were

A416

touched off rapidly, telling well from a distant view. He himself averred that after his visit to Rome in 1546 he had greatly im- proved in art; and in his very last days he said—certainly with the modesty of genius, perhaps also with some of the tenacity of old age —that he was then beginning to understand what painting meant. In his earlier pictures the gamut of colour rests mainly upon red and green, in the later ones upon deep yellow and blue. The pigments which he used were nothing unusual; indeed they were both few and common. Palma Giovane records that Vecelli would set

pictures aside for months, and afterwards, examining them with a stern countenance as if they were his mortal enemies, would set to work upon them like a man possessed ; also that he kept many pictures in progress at the same time, turning from one to the other, and that in his final operations he worked far more with finger than with brush. It has been said, and probably with truth, that he tried to emulate Palma Vecchio in softness as well as Giorgione in richness. Michelangelo's verdict after inspecting the picture of Danae in the Rain of Gold, executed in 1546, has often been quoted. He said, "That man would have had no equal if art had done as much for him as nature." He was thinking principally of severity and majesty of draughtsmanship, for he added, 'Pity that in Venice they don't learn how to draw well. As a draughtsman of the human figure Titian was not only competent but good and fine, and he is reported to have studied anatomy deeply ; but one can easily understand that he fell nota little short of the standard of Michelangelo, and even of other leading Florentines. He was wont to paint in a nude figure with Venetian red, supplemented by a little lake in the contour and towards the extremities. He observed that a colourist ought to manipulate white, black, and red, and that the carnations cannot be done in a first painting, but by replicating various tints and mingling the colours. He distanced all predecessors in the study of colour as applied to draperies,—working on the principle (in which Giorgione may perhaps have forestalled him) that red comes forward to the eye, yellow retains the rays of light, and blue assi- milates to shadow. In his subject-pictures the figures are not very numerous, and the attitudes are mostly reserved; even in bacchanals or battles the athletic display has more of facility than of furor. His architectural scenes were sometimes executed by other persons, especially the Rosas of Brescia. The glow of late afternoon, or the passionate ardour of early sundown, was much affected by Titian in the lighting of his pictures. Generally it may be said that he took great pains in comes his works, and pains also in concealing the traces of labour. He appears to have had little liking for teaching, partly from distaste of the trouble, and partly (if we are to believe biographers) from jealousy. He was quite willing, however, to turn to some account the work of his scholars: it is related that on going out-of-doors he would leave his studio open, so that the pupils had a clandestine opportunity of copying his works, and if the copies proved of saleable quality he would buy them cheap, touch them up, and resell them. Titian's family relations appear to have been happy, except

as regards his eldest son Pomponio. This youth, at the age of six, was launched upon the ecclesiastical career; but he proved wasteful and worthless, and Titian at last got so disgusted with him that he obtained the transfer to a nephew of a benefice destined for Pomponio. The fortune which he left was, after his decease, squandered by the tonsured prodigal. The other son Orazio, born towards 1528, who (as we have seen) assisted Titian professionally, became a portrait-painter of mark,—some of his likenesses, almost comparable with Titian's own, being often confounded with his by owners and connoisseurs. He executed an important picture in the hall of the great council, destroyed by fire. He gave to alchemy some of the time which might have been bestowed upon painting. Several other artists of the Vecelli family followed in the wake of Titian. Francesco Vecelli, his elder brother, was in- troduced to painting by Titian (it is said at the age of twelve, but chronology will hardly admit of this), and painted in the church of S. Vito in Cadore a picture of the titular saint armed. This was a noteworthy performance, of which Titian (the usual story) became jealous ; so Francesco was diverted from painting to soldiering, and afterwards to mercantile life. Marco Vecelli, called Marco di Tiziano, Titian's nephew, born in 1545, was constantly with the master in his old age, and learned his methods of work. He has left some able productions, —in the ducal palace, the Meet- ing of Charles V. and Clement VII. in 1529; in S. Giacomo di Rialto, an Annunciation ; in SS. Giovanni e Paolo, Christ Fulminant. A son of Marco, named Tiziano (or Tizianello), painted early in the 17th century. From a different branclr of the family came Fabrizio di Ettore, a painter who died in 1580. His brother Cesare, who also left some pictures, is well known by his book of engraved costumes, biti Antichi e Moderni. Tommaso Vecelli, also a painter, died in 1620. There was another relative, Girolamo Dante, who, being a scholar and assistant of Titian, was called Girolamo di Tiziano. Various pictures of his were touched up by the master, and are difficult to distinguish from originals. Apart from mem- bers of his family, the scholars of Titian were not numerous ;

el a aN

Paris Bordone and Bonifazio were the two of superior excellence. Domenico Teoscopoli (or Domenico Greco) was employed by the master to

engrave from his works. It is said that Titian himself engraved on copper and on wood, but this may well be questioned.

We must now briefly advert to Titian's individual works, taking them in approximate order of time, and merely dividing portraits from other pictures. Details already given indicate that he did not exhibit any extreme precocity ; the earliest works which we procced to mention may date towards 1505. In the chapel of S. Rocco, Venice, is his Christ Carrying the Cross, now greatly dilapidated, which was an object of so much popular devotion as to produce offerings which formed the first funds for building the Scuola di S. Rocco; in the scuola itself is his Man of Sorrows. The singu- larly beautiful picture (see ScHooLs or PaInTING, vol. xxi. p. 436, fig. 16) in the Borghese Palace in Rome, commonly named Divine and Human Love (by some, Artless and Sated Love), bears some obvious relation to the style of Palma Vecchio. The story goes that Titian was enamoured of Palma's daughter; but nothing distinct on this point is forthcoming. The Tribute Money (Christ and the Pharisee), now in the Dresden gallery, dates towards 1508; Titian is said to have painted this highly finished yet not "niggling" picture in order to prove to some Germans that the effect of detail could be produced without those extreme minutie which mark the style of Albert Diirer. The St Mark in the church of the Salute—the evangelist enthroned, along with SS. Sebastian, Roch, Cosmo, and Damiano—a picture much in the style of Giorgione, belongs to 1512. Towards 1518 was painted, also in the same class of style, the Three Ages, now in Bridgewater House,—a woman guiding the fingers of a shepherd on a reed-pipe, two sleeping children, a cupid, an old man with two skulls, and a second shepherd in the distance, —one of the most poetically impressive among all Titian's works. Another work of approximate date was the Worship of Venus, in the Madrid museum, showing a statue of Venus, two nymphs, numerous cupids hunting a hare, and other figures. Two of the London National Gallery pictures—the Holy Family and St Cathe- rine and the Noli Me Tangere—were going on at much the same time as the great Assumption of the Madonna. In 1521 Vecelli finished a painting which had long been due to Duke Alphonso of Ferrara, probably the Bacchanal, with Ariadne dozing over her wine-cup, which is now in Madrid. The famous Bacchus and Ariadne in the National Gallery was produced for the same patron, in 1523. The Flora of the Uffizi,

the Venus of Darmstadt, and the lovely Venus Anadyomene of the Bridgewater Gallery may date a year or so earlier. Another work of 1523 is the stupendous En- tombment of Christ in the Louvre, whose depth of colour and of shadow stands as the pictorial equivalent of individual facial expression; the same composition, a less admirable work, appears in the Manfrini Gallery. The Louvre picture comes from the Gonzaga collection and from the gallery of Charles J. in White- hall. In 1580 Titian completed the St Peter Martyr for the church of SS. Giovanni e Paolo; for this work he bore off the ae in competition with Palma Vecchio and Pordenone. Of all

is pictures this was the most daring in design of action, while it yielded to none in general power of workmanship and of feeling. It showed the influence of Michelangelo, who was in Venice while Vecelli was engaged upon it. A calamitous fire destroyed it in 1867 ; the copy of it which has taken its place is the handiwork of Cardi da Cigoli. To 1530 belongs also the Madonna del Coniglio (Louvre), painted for Gonzaga; to 1536 the Venus of Florence; to 1538 the portraits of the Twelve Cesars, for Gonzaga; and to 1539 the Presentation of the Virgin in the Temple,—one of the conspicuous examples in the Venetian academy, yet not of the first interest or importance. About 1540 were done the forcible but rather uninspired paintings for S. Spirito, Venice, now in the church of the Salute—Cain Killing Abel, the Sacrifice of Abraham, and David and Goliath ; in 1543 the Ecce Homo of the Vienna gallery, where Aretino figures as Pilate. The Venus and Cupid of Florence, the Venus of Madrid, and the Supper of Emmaus in the Louvre were still in hand, or just completed, when Titian was summoned to Augsburg in 1547. In 1554 he sent to Philip IJ. in England a second Danae and a Venus and Adonis. About the same time he sent to Charles V. a Trinity (or, as Titian himself termed it, Last Judgment), which represented the emperor, with his family and others, all in shrouds, praying to the God- head; Moses and various other personages are also portrayed. This was the object upon which Charles continued to keep his eyes fixed until the film of death closed on them. Later pictures, from 1558 onwards, are the Martyrdom of St Lawrence, Christ Crowned with Thorns (Louvre), Diana and Acton, Diana and Callisto, Jupiter and Antiope, the Magdalene, Christ in the Garden, and Europa,—the last six for Philip II.; of the two Diana subjects there are duplicates in London and in Vienna. Philip, it will be observed, was equally aw fait with nudities and with sanctities.

The Jupiter and Antiope, now much restored, is commonly called La Vénus del Pardo, having at first been in the Pardo Palace. The Magdalene here spoken of (1561) seems to be the picture now in the Uffizi of Florence ; Titian, in one of his letters, said that it was the most

popular picture he had ever painted. In 1563 Vecelli offered to Philip II. his Last Supper, which had been in hand for six years ; it was cut down in the Escorial to suit-a particular space, and offers now little noticeable beyond the fine grouping. The St Jerome of the Brera Gallery in Milan, a work of wonderful energy, spirit, and force, especially for a more than octogenarian hand, was probably rather earlier than this; there is a replica of it in the Escorial. One of the master's latest pictures (1574-75) is in Madrid, and commemoratcs the Battle of Lepanto ; it is a work of failing power—but still the power of a Titian. Two of the mosaics in St Mark's church, Venice, —the Mark in pontificals, and the sword-sheathing angel on the right of the high altar,—are after Vecelli's designs ; but they are contrary to the true spirit of mosaic work, and the Mark in especial is a decided eyesore.

We now turn to the portraits, —works so great in style, so stately, and in the best sensc so simple in perception and feeling that, after allowing everything which can be said on behalf of some other masters of the craft, such as Raphael, Velazquez, Rubens, and Rembrandt, one is still compelled to say that Titian stands on the whole supreme. Among the highest examples are—Alphonso, duke of Ferrara (Madrid); the same duke and his second wife Laura Dianti (Louvre), commonly called Titian and his Mistress; Francis I. (Louvre), painted towards 1536, but not from direct sittings, for Titian never saw the French king; various likenesses of himself, one of about 1542, and another of 1562; Paul III., also the same pope with his grandsons Cardinal Alessandro and Duke Ottavio (Naples),—the former, done in about four weeks, was presented to the pontiff in May 1543, and cost two gold ducats; Pietro Aretino (Pitti); Titian's daughter Lavinia (with a fan in the Dresden gallery, with a jewelled casket in Lord Cowper's collection) ; the Cornaro Family (Alnwick Castle); L'Homme au Gant (Louvre), an unknown personage, youthful and handsome, the ne plus ultra of portraiture ; Sansovino, Eleonora duchess of Urbino, Francesco duke of

Urbino, Catherine Cornaro queen of Cyprus (these four are in the Uffizi) ; Charles V. on horseback (Madrid) ; Cardinal Bembo (Naples), discovered in an uncared-for condition in 1878, very unlike the portrait in the Barberini Gallery. The female portraits done by Titian are few, and are almost invariably of women of exalted rank. Of Ariosto, with whom Titian was intimate in Ferrara, though there may probably have been nothing approach- ing to a romantic friendship between them, the painter is said to have done three portraits. Much uncertainty, however, besets this matter. One of the three appears as a woodcut in an edition of the Orlando Furioso. A second, now at Cobham Hall, corresponds with the woodcut likeness, and is signed ‘‘Titianus F.” The third, a work of admirable beauty, and a most fitting likeness of a poct, is in the National Gallery of London. It is difficult, how- ever, to reconcile the features here with the other portraits, and some connoisseurs do not admit that the work is really a Titian.

Authorities—For English readers, the Life and Times of Titian by Crowe and Cavalcaselle (1877) has superseded all previous works, such as those of Sir Abraham Hume (1829) and Northcote (1830). Mr Josiah Gilbert’s book, Cadore, or Titian’s Country (1869), supplies many interesting side-lights on the subject. Mr R. F. Heath’s monograph (1885) is founded mainly on Crowe and Cavaleaselle and on Gilbert, and forms a very convenient compendium. In Italian, see the usual authorities—Ticozzi, Ridolfi, Lanzi, &c. (W. M. R.)

TITLES OF HONOUR are words and phrases used for marking and distinguishing the rank or station of the persons to‘whom they are assigned and appropriated. Whatever may have been their actual or verbal origin, it is certain that among nations which have made any con- siderable progress in civilization their immediate derivation has been in the great majority of cases from some kind of public office or employment. As Mr Freeman has pointed out,! the principal exceptions to this rule are the merely complimentary additions which it is usual to accord in Europe and America to persons who have no ascertained place or precedence in the social scale. Among ourselves “mister” or “master” (magister) and its feminine equiva- lents, and on the Continent signor, sefior, and sieur (senior) and their feminine equivalents, are the leading examples. They are employed simply to avoid the necessity of calling those to whom they are applied by their

proper names only, and are not indicative of any special rank or station. In France, however, mattre, which answers to our mister or master, is the professional designation of an avocat, and in England “sir,” which answers to segnor, senor, and sieur, is the appropriate prefix to the Christian name and surname of a baronet or a knight. Of the derivatives of dominus—don, donna, and dame—the last in French compounded like stewr with the possessive pro-

1 In Longman’s Mag., vol. ii. p. 477 sq.

noun in ordinary speech and appearing in madame as the feminine equivalent of monsiewr, much the same may be said as of the derivatives of magister and senior. And, although our word “lord” has a special reference to the House of Lords, as the German Herr has to the Herrenhaus in certain of its uses, it largely partakes of the character which belongs to them. Its derivation is analogous to theirs, and within somewhat narrower limits it is almost as indiscriminately employed. More strictly lord and lady are the equivalents of baron and baroness, the fifth grade of the British peerage? But colloquially it is applied to all grades of the peerage except the first ; and, though duchesses are not called ladies in society, dukes are unquestionably lords in their capacity as members of the second chamber of the legislature. Certain of the sons and daughters of peers are lords and ladies by courtesy, while the wives of baronets are legally and the wives of knights are conventionally called ladies, although the wives of knights are more accurately described as dames. But besides this we have our lord the king and our lady the queen, lord bishops, lord lieutenants, lord justices, lord advocates, lord mayors, lord provosts, lords of the council, lords of the treasury, lords of the admiralty, lords of manors, and a variety of other lords who have no neces- sary connexion with the nobility. Lord and lady in fact are among the titles of honour which have never been historically associated with any particular function. Lord was originally in Anglo-Saxon Aldford, probably a corrup- tion of hldfweard, “the warden of bread.” ‘Lady in Anglo-Saxon is Alexfdige, and has also some connection with Aldf. Neither name acquired by means of official association any definite signification beyond the more or less general ascription of superiority.’

It is exceedingly difficult to distribute titles of honour into rigidly distinct categories. The following is as near an approximation as we are able to make.

I. Supreme Sovereign Titlcs.—Among titles implying sovereignty the first place is occupied by ‘‘emperor” and “king.” Under existing international arrangements the crowned heads of Europe take precedence according to the date of their accession, and their rank is precisely the same, whether their style is imperial or royal. But the proper meaning of emperor is the chief of a confederation of statcs of which kings are members. The German emperor is an emperor in this scnse, and he of course has precedence of the kings of Saxony, Bavaria, and Wiirtcmberg, whose dominions are in- cluded in his empire. But neither he nor the emperors of Russia and Austria have any precedence as such of the queen of the United Kingdom or the kings of Italy and Spain. Originally the title of king was superior to that of emperor, and it was to avoid the assumption of the superior title of rea that the chief magi- strates of Rome adopted the names of Cwxsar, imperator, and prin- cops to signalize their authority. As émperator was the distinctive title of the ruler of the Western empire, so Baow\e’s was the dis- tinctive title of the ruler of the Eastern empire, and the Greek Baoweds is the exact equivalent of the Latin rex. The emperor of the East was called avroxpdrwp as well as Baowte’s. But Bacrdevs came to mean the same as imperator in so special a way that the word p#£ was borrowed to express what had grown to be the in- ferior dignity of king.4 Under Charlemagne the imperial style of Rome and the royal style of Germany were united.’ It was,

2 ‘

3 Miiller, Lect. Sci. Lang., 2d ser., p. 255.

4 Freeman, Comparative Politics, pp. 161-162. ¥

5 «

however, from Cesar, whieh was common to the Western and the Eastern emperors alike, that the Teutonic word for emperor— kaiser —was derived. Until recent times, in faet, uo sovereign thought of ealling himself emperor unless he claimed in some way to represent the Roman Cexsars. Down to the beginning of the 19th eentury a German emperor who was not Roman emperor would have been an anomaly. At remote periods more than one of the West-Saxon kings ealled himself emperor of Britain, and more than one king of Castile called himself emperor of the Spains. But these assumptions appear to have been merely intended as protests against the assertion of superiority over them by the Roman emperors, German or Greek. Later on the kings of Portu- gal called themselves emperor of the Indies. But that title, like the queen of the United Kingdom's title of empress of India, was secondary only and did not affect their official designation in the hierarehy of European sovereigns. ; ; The title of king does not suggest any of the questions which have been raised by that of emperor. ''There is," as Mr Freeman says, ''a common idea of kingship which is at onee reeognized, however hard it may be to define it. This is shown among other things by the faet that no difficulty is ever felt as to translating the word king and the words which answer to it in other languages. Etymologically indeed the Romanee and Teutonie words for king have quite distinct origins. The Latin rex eorresponds to the Sanskrit rajah, and meant originally steersmanu. The Teutonie king on the contrary corresponds to the Sanskrit ganaka, and '''simply meant father, the father of a family, the king of his own kin, the father of a elan, the father of a people."? In English there is no feminine form of king like kénigin, the feminine form of kénig in German. As the feminine equivalent of king, queen is used, whieh Prof. Max Miiller says is ''the old word for mother." He also eites the translation of the Bible by Ulfilas in the 4th eentury to prove its meaning at that early period as wife or woman. The queen was in faet in a special sense ''the woman," or ''the wife," the highest of women and the highest of wives in the king- dom.? King should properly deseribe the head of a nation in distinetion from the head of a tribe, as emperor should properly deseribe the head of a confederation in distinetion from the head ofanation. The idea of territorial sovereignty, of kingship over a land instead of over a people, grew up under the feudal system, In Britain it was unknown until long after the Norman Conquest. William the Conqueror, like Harold or Edward, was king of the English, and it was only from the reign of Henry II. that his suceessors were

transformed into kings of England. The Eastern titles of sultan and shah are aeeepted as equivalent to those of em- peror and king in the West. The sovereigns of China and Japan are called emperors both in eommon and in diplomatie parlanee. II. Honorary Religious Titles of Sovercigns.—The German em- perors were formerly styled ‘‘ defenders of the chureh,” while the kings of Franee were ealled ‘“‘ very christian majesty” and “ eldest sons of the chureh.” The queen of England is ‘‘ defender of the faith,” the emperor of Austria as king of Hungary ‘‘apostolie majesty,” the emperor of Russia as king of Poland “orthodox majesty,” the king of Spain ‘‘eatholie majesty,” and the king of Portugal ‘‘ very faithful majesty.” All these titles were originally eonferred by the popes. But the queen of the United Kingdom

1 Freeman, Comp. Pol., p. 138.

2 Max Miiller, Lect. Sci. Lang., 2d ser., p. 255. “All people, save those who fancy that the nante king has something to do with a Tartar khan or with a ‘‘ canning” or “ eunning”’ man, are agreed that the English cyning and the Sanskrit ganaka both eome from the same root, from that widely spread root whence eomes our own cyn or kin and the Greek yévos. The only question is whether there is any eon- nexion between cyning and ganaka closer than that which is implied in their both coming from the same original root. That is to say, are we to suppose that cyning and ganaka are strictly the some word eom- mon to Sanskrit and Teutonie, or is it enough to think that cyning is an independent formation made after the Teutons had separated them- selves from the eommon stock? ... The differenee between the two derivations is not very remote, as the cyn is the ruling idea in any case; but if we make the word immediately cognate with ganaka we bring in a notion about ‘ the father of his people’ which has no place if we simply derive cyning from cyn” (Freeman, Comp. Pol., pp. 450-451; see also his Norm. Cong., vol. i. p. 583, and Growth of the English Constitution, p. 171).

3 “The king’s wife was ealled regina in Latin from the beginning ; but there is no English word answering to regina: we have not and never had any word like the German kénigin. The queen is simply queen (cwen), woman, wife, the highest of wives in her husband’s dominions, So the earl’s wife was simply the earl’s wife; the Nor- man style of countess now eame in to

fill up what was thought a defect. So with all strictly English titles, knight, sheriff, portreeve, alderman: they have no feminines; in most cases the wife does not share her husband's dignity. But the mayor, being a French title, has his mayoress, just as the duke has his duchess " (Freeman on "Titles," in Longman's Magazine, vol. ii. p. 489).

TIT—

Tut

and the emperor of Austria alone employ them as part of their offieial deseription.

III. Inferior Titles of Sovereignty.—Grand-dukes rank next to kings. Grand-duke was the original title of the czars and was introdueed into western Europe by Pope Pius V., who ereated Cosimo de' Mediei grand-duke of Tuseany in the last half of the 16th eentury. There are now seven reigning grand-dukes in Germany. Prinee and duke are titles also borne by the reigning ehiefs of minor Germanic states. There are reigning prinees of Monaeo and Montenegro. 'The Eastern equivalents for these sub- ordinate titles are khedive, emir, khan, and bey.

IV. Titles of Nobility.—The titles of the greater nobility are prinee, duke, marquis, earl or count, viseount, and baron, and most of them exist in all European empires and kingdoms. In the United Kingdom there are no prinees outside the royal family. In Russia there are no dukes except the imperial grand-dukes and neither marquises nor viscounts. In Germany there are no viseounts. Among the titles of the lesser nobility or gentry baronet and esquire are peeuliar to the United Kingdom. Knight, chevalier, and ritter are recognized throughout Europe, and as far as Persia and Japan. Of old time in Seotland baron, now represented by laird, was not a title of the greater nobility, and the same may be said of frethcrr in Germany. The peeuliar designations of the ehiefs of some of the Seottish clans and Irish septs, as The Chisholm, The O'Donoghue, Cameron of Lochiel, Maegillieuddy of the Reeks, aud others must also be ineluded among titles of honour. It would be improper to prefix "'mister," or to affix ''esquire," to their names in addressing them either orally or in writing, and their wives are always ealled madam. Pasha, bey, and effendi are the most familiar of

the Eastern titles of nobility. The ecclesi- astical titles of arehbishop, bishop, dean, &e., and the military and naval titles of field-marshal, admiral, general, colonel, major, eaptain, &c., are eommon to all the eountries of Europe, and are expressed by words in their several languages whieh are the preeise equivalents ofeach other. But their incidentally dignified charaeter is so overshadowed by their essentially administrative eharaeter that they can be regarded as titles of honour only in the same sense as the titles of offieers of state or justice.

To the foregoing titles of honour may be added the large assort- ment of complimentary epithets whieh are attendant on them, and whieh are used as alternatively deseriptive of the persons by whom they are borne. The Roman Cesars were by decree of the senate ealled in Latin awgustus, or saered, which was rendered in Greek by oeBaorés, or adorable. They were also habitually styled divi, pius and felix, clemens, tranquillus, and sanctissimus. Augustalis majestas and ayia Baoitela were among the styles of the Western and Eastern emperors respeetively. Majesty, saered majesty, or Cesarean majesty, was the peculiar title of the emperors, and it was not assumed by any of the other sovereigns of Europe until eomparatively modern times. But it is said to have been adopted in Franee as early as the reign of Louis XI.; in England the first king who used it was Henry VIII. Before that the kings of Eng- land had beeu ealled grace and highness, and sometimes exeellent graee and kingly highness. All emperors are now imperial majes- ties, and all kings majesties, while grand-dukes, royal highnesses, and all inferior reigning potentates are highnesses of one sort or another. Imperial or royal highness is the proper title of the sons and daughters of emperors and kings, serene highness, or highness merely, being that of the members of prineely families. The German hohct, although it is eemmonly employed as the equivalent of highness or altcsse, has a special signifieation of its own. It holds an intermediate rank between altesse royal or royal highness and altesse sérénissime or serene highness, unless it is qualified by the adjectives kaiserliche or kinigliche. For many years, however, it has been appropriated to the less important reigning and the mediatized prineely houses, to distinguish them from the priueely houses of new ereation and the mediatized eountly houses, to whom the titles of durchlaucht and erlaucht are severally assigned. In the United Kingdom graee is the title of dukes and duehesses, and lordship and

ladyship of all other grades of the peerage and the bearers of eourtesy titles of superior rank to any one of them. Dukes and duehesses are styled most noble, marquises and mar- chionesses most honourable, and all other peers and peeresses, lords and ladies by courtesy ; privy couneillors and the lord mayor of London are styled right honourable. Honourable is the title of the younger sons of earls, the sons and daughters of viseounts and barons, and the judges of the High Court of Justice. Arehbishops are most reverend, bishops right reverend, deans very reverend, arehdeacons venerable, and all elerzymen reverend. The pope is his holiness, and eardinals are eminenees, Vieeroys, ambassadors, and governors are exeellencies. But we have not yet rivalled the niece gradations in the deseending seale of ¢llwstres, spectabiles, clar- tssimi, perfectissimi, and egregit which eharacterized the official or administrative hierarchy of the later Roman empire. (F. DR.)

‘ TITMOUSE (Anglo-Saxon Mase and Tytmase, German Meise, Swedish Mes, Dutch Mees, French Mésange), the

TIT—

name! long in use for several species of small English birds, which are further distinguished from one another by some characteristic appellation. These go to make up the genus Parus of Linneus, and with a very uncertain number of other genera form the Family Paridex of modern ornithology. Its limits are, however, very ill- defined ; and here only the species best known to English readers can be noticed.

The first to be mentioned is that called from its comparatively large size the Great Titmouse, P. major, but known also in many parts as the Oxeye,? conspicuous by its black head, white cheeks, and yellow breast, down which runs a black line, while in spring the cock makes himself heard by a loud love-note that resembles the noise made in sharpening a saw. It is widely distributed throughout the British Islands, and over nearly the whole of Europe and northern Asia. The next is the Blue Titmouse, Blue- cap, or Nun, P. ceruleus, smaller than the last and more common. Its names are so characteristic as to make any description needless. A third common species, but not so numerous as either of the foregoing, is the Coal-Titinouse, P. ater, distinguished by its black cap, white cheeks, and white nape. Some interest attaches to this species because of the difference observable between the

race in- habiting the scanty remnants of the ancient Scottish forests and that which occurs throughout the rest of Britain. The former is more brightly tinted than the latter, having a clear bluish grey mantle and the lower part of the back greenish, hardly either of which colours are to be seen in the same parts of more southern examples, which last have been described as forming a distinct species, P. britannicus. But it is to be observed that the denizens of the old Scotch fir-woods are nearly midway in coloration between the dingy southern birds and those which prevail over the greater part of the Continent. It would therefore seem unreasonable to ‘en of two species only: there should be either three or one, and the latter alternative is to be preferred, provided the existence of the local races be duly recognized. Much the same thing is to be noticed in the next species to be mentioned, the Marsh-Titmouse, P. palustris, which, sombre as is its plumage, is subject to con- siderable local variation in its very extensive range, and has been called P. borealis in Scandinavia, P. alpestris in the Alps, and P. lugubris in south-castern Europe, to say nothing of forms like P. baicalensis, P. camchatkensis, and others, whose names denote its local variations in northern Asia, while no great violence is exercised if to these be tacked on P. atricapilla with several geographical races which inhabit North America. A fifth British species is the rare Crested Titmouse, P. cristatus, only found in limited districts in Scotland, though common enough, especially in pine-woods, in many parts of Europe.

It is impossible to state how many species of Parus exist, their oo at present being wholly subjective to the view taken by the investigator of the group. Its latest monographer is Dr Gadow (Cat. B. Br. Museum, viii. pp. 3-53), who recognizes forty- eight, besides several sub-species. North-American ornithologists include some fifteen as inhabitants of Canada and the United States ; but scarcely two writers agree on this point, owing to the existence of sosmany local forms. Of the species inhabiting the Indian and Ethiopian Regions there is no space here to treat, and for the same reason the presumably allied forms of Australia and New Zealand must be left unnoticed. During the greater part of the year the various species of the genus Parws associate in family parties in a way that has been already described (Birps, vol. iii., p. 766), and only break up into pairs at the beginning of the breeding-season. The nests are nearly always placed in a hollow stump, and consist of a mass of moss, feathers, and hair, the last

being worked almost into a kind of felt. Thereon the eggs, often to the number of eight or nine, are laid, and these have a translucent white shell, freckled or spotted with rust-colour. The first plumage of the young closely resembles that of the parents ; but, so far as is known, it has always a yellower tinge, very apparent on the parts, if there be such, which in the adult are white. Few birds are more restless in disposition, and if “irritability” be the test of high organiza- tion, as a much bepraised systematist asserts, the Paridx should stand very near the top of the list. Most of the European species and some of the North-American become familiar, haunting the neighbourhood of houses, especially in winter, and readily availing Poet on eee ee

1 The prefix ‘‘ Tit,” by heedless writers often used alone, though equally proper to the Titlark (cf. Preri, vol. xix. p. 112), is perhaps cognate with the Greek riris, which originally meant a small chirping bird (Ann. Nat. History, ser. 4, x. p. 227), and has a diminutive form in the Icelandic Titlingur—the English or at least Scottish Titling. It is by false analogy that the plural of Titmouse is made Zitmice ; it should be Titmouses. A nickname is very often added, as with many other familiar English birds, and in this case it is “Tom.”

2 The signification of this name is obscure. It may perhaps be correlated with a Swedish name for the bird—Talgoze.

Pat A19

themselves of such scraps of food, about the nature of which they are not particular, as they can get. By gardeners every Tit- mouse is generally regarded as an enemy, for it is supposed to do infinite damage to the buds of fruit-trees and bushes; but the accusation is wholly false, for the buds destroyed are always found to be those to which a grub—the bird’s real object—has got access, so that there can be little doubt that the Titmouse is a great benefactor to the horticulturist, and hardly ever more so than when the careless spectator of its deeds is supposing it to be bent on mischief.

Akin to the genus Parus, but in many respects differing from it, is Acredula, containing that curious-looking bird the Long-tailed or Bottle-Titmouse, with its many local races or species, which must be here passed over

without a word. The bird itself, having its tail longer than its body, is unlike any other found in the northern hemisphere, while its nest is a perfect marvel of construction, being in shape nearly oval with a small hole in one side. The exterior is studded with pieces of lichen, worked into a firm texture of moss, wool, and spiders' nests, and the inside is profusely lined with soft feathers—2379 having been, says Macgillvray, counted in one example. Not inferior in beauty or ingenuity is the nest built by the Penduline Titmouse, Agithalus pendulinus, of the south of Europe, which differs, however, not merely in composition but in being suspended to a bough, while the former is nearly always placed between two or more branches.

The so-called Bearded Titmouse, Panurus biarmicus, has habits wholly unlike those of any of the foregoing, and certainly does not belong to the Family Paride, though its real affinity has not yet been clearly shown. It was formerly found in many parts of England, especially in the eastern counties, where it bore the name of Reed- Pheasant?; but through the draining of meres, the destruc- tion of reed-beds, and (it must be added) the rapacity of collectors it now only exists as a native in a very few localities. It is a beautiful little bird of a bright tawny colour, variegated with black and white, while the cock is further distinguished by a bluish grey head and a black tuft of feathers on each side of the chin. Its chief food seems to be the smaller kinds of freshwater mollusks, which it finds among the reed-beds it seldom quits.

The general affinities of the Paridx seem to lie rather with the Sittide (cf. NurHatcs, vol. xvii. p. 665) and the Tree-Creepers; and those systematists who would ally them to the Laniide (SHRIKE, vol. xxi. p. 845), or still more interpose the last between the former Families, have yet to find grounds for so doing. (A. N.)

TITUS. By this, his Roman pranomen, is usually known the eleventh of the Twelve Ceesars, Tirus FLavius SaBinus VESPASIANUS, emperor from 79 to 81 a.p. With his father Vespasian, who rose to empire from the camp, began the Flavian line of emperors, the last three Ceesars. Titus was born in 40, the year of the assassination of the fourth Czesar, Caius Caligula, and was brought up in the household of Claudius, with that emperor's son,

Britanni- cus. There was a story that he was dining at Nero’s table when Britannicus was poisoned, and that he himself tasted the fatal cup, and had in consequence a serious illness. Some time afterwards he erected two statues to the young prince’s memory. Educated in the imperial court, he was thoroughly trained in all elegant accom- plishments: he could speak Greek fluently, and could compose verses; he was a proficient in music; he could write shorthand, and could imitate handwriting so skil- fully that he used to say that he might have been a most

3 Persons fond of watching the habits of birds may with little trouble provide a pleasing spectacle by adopting the plan, practised by the late Mr A. E. Knox, of hanging a lump of suet or tallow by a short string to the end of a flexible rod stuck aslant into the ground close to the window of a sitting-room. It is seldom long before a Titmouse of some kind finds the dainty, and once found visits are made to it until every morsel is picked off. The attitudes of the birds as they cling to the swinging lure are very diverting, and none but a Titmouse can succeed in keeping a foothold upon it.

4 The common names given to this bird are so very inapplicable that it is a pity that ‘‘Silerella’’’ (from siler, an osier) bestowed upon it by Sir T. Browne, its original discoverer, cannot be restored.

~

A420

successful forger. He was very handsome, with a fine commanding expression, and a vigorous frame, well trained in all the exercises of a soldier. As a young man he served with credit in Germany and in Britain, and he practised at the bar. Soon he had the command of a legion, and joined his father in Syria; he took an active part in the Jewish war, capturing several important fort- resses, among them Taricheze and Gamala. In 68 he went at his father’s bidding on a visit of congratulation to the newly proclaimed emperor, Galba; but, hearing of Galba’s death and of the general confusion in the Roman world, he returned to his father in Palestine, having in the meantime consulted the oracle of the Paphian Venus as to his prospects and received a favourable answer. In the following year

Vespasian, who, through his son's pleasing manner and adroit management, had made a friend of Mucianus, the governor of Syria, became em- peror, and left Titus to finally settle the Jewish war by the capture of Jerusalem. Titus conducted the siege of the city, which for some months was defended amid in- credible horrors, with signal ability, and took and destroyed it in September 70. The army saluted their victorious general by the title of "imperator"; in the East Titus was now supreme, and practically emperor. On his return to Italy by way of Alexandria he fell in with that strange professor of mystical philosophy and magic, Apollonius of Tyana, and listened, it is said, to his pedantic talk and advice. As soon as he arrived at Rome there was the usual triumph for a decisive victory, and both father and son shared it. On the arch of Titus, as it is called, erected some few years afterwards (see vol. xx. p. 830), may still be seen sculptured representations of Jewish captives and of the captured trophies. Titus was now formally associated with his father in the government, with the title of Czesar, and during the nine remaining years of Vespasian's reign he controlled the administration, and was in fact emperor. He was anything but popular; he had the character of being luxurious, self-indulgent, pro- fligate, and cruel. Summary execution of obnoxious per- sons seems to have been not uncommon. There was a bad scandal too about his connexion with the shameless Jewish beauty Berenice, the sister of the Agrippa of the Acts of the Apostles; both brother and sister followed Titus to Rome, and were allowed to reside in the imperial palace. Public opinion at Rome was outraged, and Titus, though he had promised Berenice marriage, felt obliged to send her back to the East. Vespasian died in 79, leaving his son a safe throne and a well-filled treasury. The forebodings of the people were agreeably disappointed, for Titus, who, it was feared, would be a second Nero, was known as the "love and delight of mankind." It is possible that his popularity was in some degree due to the fears which the depravity of his brother Domitian, who, it was known, was to succeed him, had begun to excite ; but he had the tact to make himself liked by all. He seems to have been thoroughly kindly and good- natured; he delighted in giving splendid presents, and his memorable saying, "I have lost a day," is said to have been uttered one evening at the dinner table when he suddenly remembered that he had not bestowed a gift on any one that day.

Titus, like his father, spent money on great public works and in adding to the magnificence of Rome. The Colosseum was completed and dedicated in his reign, with combats of gladiators, shows of wild beasts, and sham sea-fights and representations of some of the great Greek naval battles. He gave the city what we should now call “a people’s palace” in his splendid baths, which surpassed those of Agrippa and of Nero, and supplied the mob with every luxurious appliance free of cost.

During his reign, in 79, occurred the memorable erup-

tion of Vesuvius which destroyed Herculaneum and Pompeii. and contributed liberally to the relief of the distressed inhabitants.

The emperor visited the scenes of desolation

During his absence a fire raged for three days at Rome, in which the Capitol was burnt; then followed a pestilence, and again Titus not only helped freely with his purse, but took pains to acquaint himself with the sufferers and gave them his personal sympathy. Italy and the Roman world generally were quict and peace- ful during this brief reign. The only fighting was in Britain under Agricola, who in the year 80 carried the Roman arms into Scotland as far as the Tay. In the following September Titus died, being in his fortieth year, after a reign of two years and rather more than two months. On his deathbed he said, so the story went, that there was but one thing of which he repented : this was commonly supposed to point to his having spared to punish his brother Domitian, who had more than once plotted against his life, and whose succession to empire he must have felt would be a calamity for Rome. The verdict of history is on the whole favourable to Titus, and perhaps deservedly so; but the general feeling throughout the Roman world after his death was that he had been fortunate in the briefness of his reign.

An admirable account of this emperor will be found in Merivale’s History of the Romans under the Empire, ch. 60. (W. J. B.)

TITUS, one of the companions of St Paul, was of Greek origin (Gal. ii. 3), and appears to have been among the apostle's earliest converts; he is first mentioned (Gal. ii. 1) as having accompanied Paul, then in the course of his second missionary journey, from Antioch to Jerusalem. Here the Judaizing brethren desired that he should be circumcised ; but the liberty of the gospel was successfully maintained. He was afterwards sent by Paul from Ephesus to Corinth, with, it would seem, a letter, no longer extant, more than once referred to in 2 Corinthians (ii, 3, vii. 8; comp. vol. vi. p. 401). He rejoined the apostle with favourable reports from Corinth in Mace- donia, and was again sent (from Philippi) with another epistle, probably what is now known as the second, to the Corinthians, and charged with the further duty of promot- ing the proposed collection for poor Christians in Judea. This is practically all that is known of him from the un- disputed Pauline epistles. He is nowhere mentioned in the Acts. In the pastoral epistle with which his name is associated he is represented (Tit. i. 5) as having been left by Paul in Crete to "set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city." He is expected afterwards to join Paul at Nicopolis (iii. 12). In 2 Tim. iv. 10 he is spoken of as having gone to Dalmatia. Tradi- tion, obviously resting on the Epistle to Titus, has it that he died in Crete as bishop at an advanced age.

TITUS, Epistte To. See Pastorat Epistizs, vol. xviii. p. 348 sq.

TITUSVILLE, a city of the United States, in Craw- ford county, Pennsylvania, in 41° 38' N. lat. and 79° 42' W. long., stands upon Oil Creek, in the midst of the oil region of north-western Pennsylvania. Its predomin- ant industries have reference to the production, refining, and transportation of petroleum. It has two railroads— the Dunkirk, Allegheny, and Pittsburg, and the Buffalo, New York, and Philadelphia. The city had a population of 8639 in 1870 and of 9046 in 1880.

Titusville, originally a small lumbering town, began its carccr of prosperity in 1859, when oil was discovered in this region, and during the succeeding years it was the scene of very great activity. It was chartered in 1867, when at the zenith of its prosperity.

Since that time it has settled down to a less feverish and more healthy growth.

TIUMEN. See Tyumen.

TIV—TLA

TIVERTON, a borough of Devonshire, England, is finely situated in the midst of beautiful scenery at the con- fluence of the Lowman and the Exe, 144 miles north of Exeter and 184 west-south-west of London. A branch line connects it with the Great Western, and the Exe Valley Railway with Exeter and Dulverton. The greater part of the town is on the left bank of the Exe ; the four principal streets are wide and regular. Since 1262, when Amicia, countess of Devon, caused a stream of water to be directed from Norwood to Tiverton, a distance of 5 miles, every street has had a constantly flowing supply. At points now spanned by bridges there were formerly two fords, one over the Exe and the other over the Lowman ; hence Twofordton and Twyfordton the former names of the town. There still remain the principal gateway and an octagonal turret of the ancient castle (now a private residence), built in 1106 by Richard de Riparus or Redvers, first earl of Devon, and the chief residence of the Redvers till the execu- tion of Henry Courtenay, marquis of Exeter, in 1539. The most ancient part of the church of St Peter is the Norman doorway ; the embattled western tower is 120 feet in height. For Blundell's free grammar-school (1604) new buildings have recently been erected in the Tudor style. Among other educational establishments are the school of science and art, the blue coat charity school (1714; re- established as a middle boys' and middle girls' school in 1876), and the Chilcott free school (1611). The other principal public buildings are the market-house (1830-31), the infirmary (1852), the town-hall (1864), and several almshouses. 'Tiverton was formerly famed for its woollen manufacture, introduced in the 14th century; its annual returns in 1612 were estimated at £300,000, about 8000 persons being employed in the industry. It is now chiefly noted for its lace manufacture, established by John Heath- coat, the inventor of the bobbin net frame. The popula- tion of the municipal borough (area, 17,491 acres) in 1871 was 10,024, and in 1881 it was 10,462.

The town existed in Saxon times. In the reign of Edward the Confessor it was held by vassals or servants, and in Domesday it is entered as terra regis. In 1200 it had amarket and three annual fairs. After the introduction of the

woollen trade in 1353 it rapidly increased, and Camden states that the trade had brought it “much gain and glory.” The town and castle were taken by Fairfax in 1645. Tiverton suffered from the plague in 1591 (when it had 5000 inhabitants), and from fire in 1598, 1612, and 1731. It was incorporated by James I. in 1615; but in 1732 its charter was forfeited, and a second was not bestowed till 1737. The borough was deprived

of parliamentary representation in 1885. See Harding’s History of Tiverton, 2 vols., 1845.

TIVOLI (Lat. Tibur), a town of Italy, situated 17 miles east-north-east of Rome on one of the spurs of Monte Ripoli, 830 feet above the sea. Its position is very striking and beautiful; it stands partly at the edge of the lofty cliff over which the river Anio falls in a most imposing mass of water. The present aspect of the fall is very different from what it was in ancient times, as the water has undermined and carried away great masses of the rock. In 1881 the population of the town was

9730, and of the commune 10,297.

Ancient Tibur was founded, according to the legend adopted by the Roman poets, many centuries before Rome, by the Siculi.t They were expelled by a Greek named Tiburtus, the son of Catil- lus, who became the eponymous hero of Tibur.?_ During the carly historic period Tibur, which stood on the borders of the Sabine territory, was always a bitter enemy of Rome, and on many occasions allied itself to various peoples, even the Gauls, in their attacks ou the city. With the rest of Latium, Tibur was finally conquered by Rome in 335 8.c., and on account of its constant cnmity was treated with much severity, not being admitted to the Roman franchise till towards the close of the republican period. Almost no mention of Tibur occurs during the time of the empire ; but the town is recorded to have suffered severely during the Gothic invasion in the 6th century.

1 Dion., i. 16, and Plin., H. W., xvi. 87. 2 Hor., Od., i. 18, 2; Ov., Fast., v. 74; Virg., @n., vii. 670.

Remains of its city wall still exist, built of squared blocks of tufa ; but the whole circuit is not clearly determinable. Even the site of the large and wealthy temple of Hercules is doubtful, which stood in an extensive temenos, containing libraries and a porticus, where Augustus sometimes administered justice. At the edge of the cliff still stands a small circular temple, of doubtful dedication, which once had eighteen columns, and closely re- sembled that in the Forum Boarium of Rome. Its cella walls are of concrete faced with opus reticulatum, and its columns of tra- vertine ; it dates from about the time of Christ. Its popular name is the ‘‘temple of the Sibyl.”4 Close by is another small prostyle-tetrastyle temple resembling that (so called) of Fortuna Virilis in Rome. Remains of the circuit wall of the forum also exist, with a large apsidal projection, as well as an extensive crypto-porticus, faced with blank arcading and divided internally by a row of twenty-eight columns. Tibur was a favourite summer residence of many wealthy Romans under the empire, and especially of Horace and Mecenas.° One of the chief aqueducts of Rome, “‘Anio vetus,” started from the Anio at Tibur. The ancient ‘“‘lapis Tiburtinus” (modern travertine) was so called from its chief quarries at Tibur, where it has been during long ages deposited by the water of the river Anio.

Hadrian’s villa, which stands at the foot of the Tibur spur of hill about 2 miles distant, is one of the most important Roman remains in the world. Between 1870 and 1882 the greater part of its immense area was excavated ; the whole circuit was once no less than 8 miles. The scheme of this wonderful group of build- ings was the fancy of the rich and highly educated emperor Hadrian, who desired to reproduce, within a short distance of Rome, a number of the chief Greek sites and buildings which he had visited in different parts of the world. Besides his own palace he built a large stoa peecile, copied from that at Athens, an odeum, a lyceum, an academy (with its gardens, halls, and porticus), libraries, Latin and Greek theatres, a stadium, palestra, hippo- drome, baths, and many temples. Large gardens, divided into an artificial ‘‘ Vale of Tempe,” ‘Elysian Fields,” and ‘‘ Tartarus,” were watered by a winding stream named the “Euripus.” In another place stood a “serapeum,”’ copied from that at Alexandria, and filled with pseudo-Egyptian statues and reliefs, many of which have been recently unearthed. Barracks for the pretorian guard and rows of dwellings for slaves completed this magnificent group of buildings. In many parts the

existing remains are wall pre- served and in some cases the uses of the different buildings can be determined. The main walls are of concrete faced with mixcd brick and opus reticulatum, once wholly covered with magnificent Oriental marbles and crowded with fine Greek and Greco-Roman sculpture ; mosaic of marble and glass was lavishly used for floors, walls, aud vaults, together with the most elaborate painted decora- tions. A large number of fine works of art have been discovered here, such as the mosaic of " Pliny's doves" and the Faun in rosso antico now in the Capitol. It is probable that the Venus de' Medici came from this villa, together with many other statues found in the 16th century whose provenance is now forgotten.

TLAXCALA (Zlascala, i.e., "' House of Bread"), an his- torical city of Mexico, capital of the state of Tlaxcala, which nearly coincides with the old native republic of Tlaxcala, occupying the easternmost of the four sections into which the Anahuac plateau is here divided by ranges of hills, between 19° and 20° N. lat. The modern town, standing on the site of the old Indian capital, lies (in 19° 19' N. lat., 98° 6' W. long.) on the little river Papagallo (Atoyac, formerly Zahuatl), which flows between two hills at an altitude of considerably over 7000 feet, some 30 miles north of La Puebla and 170 by rail from Vera Cruz. Tlaxcala was founded probably about the close of the 13th century, when the Tlaxcaltecs, a branch of the Nahuatl race closely akin to the Aztecs, withdrew from the western side of the central lacustrine district and established a powerful democratic state in a somewhat secluded, hill-encircled, but highly productive tract, 90 miles in length by 70 in breadth, with a total area of over 1550 square miles. The Tlaxcaltecs, hereditary foes of the Aztecs, became, after a short resistance (September 1519), the firm allies of the Spaniards, their co-operation

contributing largely, if not mainly, to the overthrow of

3 See App., Bell. Civ., v. 24; and Suet., Aug., 72.

4 It has also been called the temple of Vesta, but the real site of this last was on the other side of the river.

5 Hor., Od., i. 7, 10, and ii. 6, 5.

6 Many of the names given to different parts by the Roman anti- quaries are based on mere conjecture.

the Mexican empire. But the result was the enslavement of Tlaxcala itself, the general decay of the country, and the dispersion of most of the inhabitants by Cortes. Although now reduced to a population of a little over 5000, or, including the commune, to 36,000, and with no monuments beyond a fine church, an old episcopal palace, and a town-hall, the city at the time of the conquest was a very large place, containing nearly as many inhabitants as the whole of the modern state (130,000). When occupied by the Spaniards, its size and splendour excited the admiration of Cortes, who describes it in somewhat exaggerated language as ‘‘ much larger and much stronger than Granada, with as fine buildings and much more people than Granada had at the time it was captured, also much better supplied with the things of the earth” (Cartas, 67). It was disposed in four distinct quarters separated by high stone walls, each with a palace for the ruling chief, besides temples, and stone buildings for the nobles. But most of the other houses were low mud or adobe structures. In the daily market, which was said to be frequented by 30,000 people, were exposed for sale the products of the surrounding country,—maize, maguey (extracted from the aloe), and chilli pepper; to these are now added wheat, barley, pease, lentils, and a great variety of fruits.

A prominent feature of the landscape is the Sierra de Malintzi, or Malinche, that is, “ Lord of Marina,” a name given to Cortes after his alliance with the ‘‘heroine of the conquest.” The Sierra (originally Matlacuezatl), which rises grandly (more than 16,000 feet) above the plateau, takes a prominent plaee in Tlaxcalteean mythology, owing to the peculiar shape of its summit, representing in rough outline the body of a native woman lying at full length in its grave and partly wrapped in its cerements. There are some woollen manufactures, centred chiefly in the capital, and also a few silver, copper, lead, and coal mines in the San Ambrosio and San Mateo ranges ; but the state is essentially agricultural, yielding large annual crops of maize and wheat, the total produce being valued at over £1,000,000.

TLEMCEN, or TitrmsAn, a town of Algeria, chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Oran, lies 86 miles S.W. of Oran, 2625 feet above the sea, on a terrace on the northern slope of a range of rocky hills (3430 feet). Its white minarets, towers, and battlements rise picturesquely above the surrounding verdure, which is nourished by numerous springs, and even in ancient days gave rise to the Roman name Pomaria. The various quarters are grouped around the principal mosque,—the Jewish to the south- west, the Moorish to the south-east, that of the merchants to the north-east, while the new town with the civic build- ings lies to the north-west. Of the sixty-four mosques which existed at the period of the French conquest, several have disappeared. The great mosque has a minaret adorned with marble columns, and cased with mosaic of the most varied designs; a fountain of alabaster stands in the alabaster-paved inner court; and seventy-two columns support the pointed arches of the interior. The mosque of Abul Hasan, now used as a French and Arab school, has two series of arches, which rest on alabaster pillars, and the courts are ornamented by sculptures of great beauty and richness; the delicately carved cedar ceiling bears traces of polychromatic painting. The mosque of E~~Halawi is specially interesting for the sculptured capitals of its magnificent alabaster columns. Tlemcen, besides numerous other mosques, possesses a fine modern Roman Catholic church in the Byzantine style and five syna~~ gogues. The military authorities occupy the Mehuar or citadel, built in 1145, which separates the Jewish and Moorish quarters, and was formerly the palace of the rulers of Tlemcen. Only the mosque and the battlemented wall, flanked by two towers, remain of its former magnifi- cence. Among the antiquities preserved in the museum is the epitaph of Boabdil, the last king of Granada, who died at Tlemcen in 1494. The vast basin under the old

walls, now used as a reservoir (720 feet in length, 490 in width, and 10 in depth), was apparently made for naval exhibitions by the sovereigns of Tlemcen. The barracks of the Spahis occupy all that remains of Kissaria, a settlement of European merchants from Pisa, Genoa, Catalonia, and Provence. Leather, saddles, Turkish slippers, arms, and woollen goods are manufactured in Tlemcen ; the production of oil and flour and market-gardening occupy Europeans and natives; good tobacco is also grown.

There is an active trade in cattle, wool, grain, and fruit. A railway (37 miles) is being built (1887) to connect Tlemcen with Rahgun, its port. In 1886 the population (natives, Europeans, and Jews) was 19,745 (26,395 in the commune).

The town was originally at Agadir (Pomaria), to the east of the present site, where Roman inscriptions have been found. At the time of the Arab invasion the district was held by the Beni Ifren tribe of Zenata Berbers, who ultimately founded here the sove- reignty of the Beni Ya'la (1002-1080). In 1080 the Almoravid king, after besieging and sacking the place, built a new town on the site of his camp. His successors reigned sixty-five years, when, after holding Agadir four years against the enemy, they were overcome by the Almohades, who massacred the inhabitants, rebuilt, enlarged, and repeopled the ruined town, and surrounded Tlemcen and Agadir with a common wall. Tlemeen now flourished greatly under the 'Abd al-Wad, also a Zenadta dynasty, who ruled first for the Almohades and after 1242 as nominal vassals of the Hafsites of Tunis. In 1337 their power was temporarily extin- guished by the Merinids, who built the town of Mansura, west of Tlemcen. They left some fine monuments of the period of their ascendency, which lasted tweuty-two years. Once more, under the 'Abd al-Wad, from 1359 to 1553, Tlemcen enjoyed prosperity, when it had a population of 125,000, an extensive trade, a brilliant court, a powerful army, and its finest buildings were reared. The Spanish occupation of Oran struck a fatal blow at the European commerce of the town, which gradually lost all its territory to the Turks after they had seized Algicrs. When the Freneh entered Algeria the sultans of Morocco were worsted by the Kuluglis in their attempt to hold the town. In 18384, and again in 1837, Abd el-Kader sought to re-establish the ancient empire of Tlemcen, but the French definitely took possession in January 1842,

TOAD. This animal belongs to the Anurous division of the Amphibia, and toads and frogs are the only repre- sentatives of the Anura or Batrachia indigenous to Britain. To an ordinary observer the toad is proved to be an am- phibian by its moist soft skin, an anuran or tailless am- phibian by the want of a separate tail. The toad differs from the frog in the following points :—It has no teeth on either of its jaws or on the roof of its mouth, while the frog has a series of fine teeth on the upper jaw and also teeth on

the palate; the tongue in both animals is attached in front and free behind, but that of the frog is forked at its free extremity, that of the toad is not; the skin of the toad is rough with large protuberant warts, while that of the frog is smooth; the body of the toad is more globular and puffy than that of the frog; the hind legs in the toad are shorter, and the posterior digits not so completely webbed, the animal being more terrestrial in its habits than the frog. In the toad, as in the frog, there are four digits anteriorly, five posteriorly. The warts of the toad's skin contain large cutaneous glands, which secrete a thick yellowish fluid with acrid properties, capable of irritating and producing slight inflammation on the human skin, The use of this secretion is probably to protect the toad from being devoured by carnivorous animals. Like other Amphibia, it has a large membranous bladder communi- cating with the terminal part of the intestine—the allantoic bladder,—in which fluid accumulates, probably from the kidneys, though the ureters do not open directly into the bladder. The toad, when handled or alarmed in any way, ejects the contents of its bladder. Owing to these peculi- arities and its appearance, the animal is commonly regarded with loathing, and credited with far more poisonous pro- perties than it possesses. In its breeding habits the toad resembles the frog: its eggs are fertilized externally at the

History.

TO B—

moment of extrusion, as in the frog, the parents resorting to the water for the purpose of reproduction. The ova are laid in spring, and are arranged, not in shapeless masses, but in a string containing a double series of eggs adher- ing by their gelatinous envelopes ; the string extends toa length of three or four feet. The tadpoles are similar to those of the frog, but blacker ; their metamorphosis takes place in the same manner, the three pairs of external gills being first absorbed and replaced for a time by internal gills, which are in their turn lost, the branchial slits being closed by the coalescence of the opercular membrane with the skin. The metamorphosis is complete in autumn. The toad is carnivorous, feeding on flies and other insects and worms. It hibernates in winter, passing its period of torpidity in holes or burrows in the earth, The finding of toads in a state of hibernation

has given rise to stories of their being found in the centre of trunks of trees or imbedded in solid rock. The myth of the jewel in the head (Shakespeare) is probably founded on the brightness of the eyes, in which the iris is flame-coloured.

There are two kinds of toad in Britain,—the Common Toad, which is almost black in colour, and the Natter-jack Toad, which is lighter, smaller, and has a bright yellow line along the middle of the back. The length of the common toad is 34 inches, of the natter-jack 2} inches. The male natter-jack possesses a bladder or vocal sack beneath the throat communicating with the mouth, which acts as a resonator to its voice ; its cry is ‘“ gluck-gluck.” The vocal sack is absent in the common toad, and only in-completely developed in the Green Toad of the Continent.

In zoological classification the toad belongs to the genus Bufo, tirst constituted by Laurenti in the Synopsis Reptilium, of which the fol- lowing diagnosis is given in the Brit. Mus. Cat. Bair. Sal., 1882:—

Pupil horizontal, Tongue elliptical or pyriform, entire and free behind. Vomerine and maxillary teeth none. Tympanum dis- tinct or hidden, seldom absent. Fingers free; toes more or less webbed; the tips simple or dilated into small disks. Outer meta- tarsals united. Omosternum generally missing; if present cartila- ginous; sternum a cartilaginous plate, sometimes more or less ossified along the median line. Diapophyses of sacral vertebrae more or less dilated. Terminal phalanges obtuse or triangular. Distribution cosmopolitan, except Australia.

Bufo vulgaris, Laurenti, the Common Toad, is thus distinguished. Crown without bony ridges. First finger as long as or longer than the second. Parotids distinct. Tympanum smaller than the eye. Toes half webbed; no tarsal fold; subarticular tubercles of toes double. The species is widely distributed, occurring throughout Europe, Asia, and north-west Africa.

Bufo calamita, Laurenti, the Natter-jack Toad, shows the follow- ing differences from B. vulgaris :—toes not half webbed; tympanum rather indistinct; a tarsal fold. It is distributed throughout Europe.

According to Boulenger there are 77 species of Bufo known, of which 35 are confined to the Old World, the rest to the American continent. No species is common to the two grcat continents. The only other species occurring in Europe besides the two which are found in Britain is Bufo viridis, Laurenti, which ranges through- out Europe, Asia, and North Africa.

TOBACCO consists of the leaves of several species of Nicotiana (nat. ord. Solanacex), variously prepared for use aSa narcotic. While it is principally manufactured for smoking, a large amount is also prepared for chewing, and to a more limited extent it is taken in the form of snuff. Under one or other of these forms the use of tobacco is more widely spread than is that of any other narcotic or stimulant.

Although the fact has been controverted, there cannot be a doubt that the knowledge of tobacco and its uses came to the rest of the world from America. In Novem- ber 1492 a party sent out by Columbus from the vessels of his first expedition to explore the island of Cuba brought back information that they had seen people who carried a lighted firebrand to kindle fire, and perfumed themselves with certain herbs which they carried along with them. The habit of snuff-taking was observed and

described by Ramon Pane, a Franciscan, who accompanied Columbus on his second voyage (1494-6), and the practice of tobacco-chewing was first seen by the Spaniards on the coast of South America in 1502. As the continent of America was opened up and explored, it became evident that the consumption of tobacco, especially by smoking, was a universal and immemorial usage, in many cases bound up with the most significant and solemn tribal ceremonies.

The term tobacco appears not to have been a commonly used original name for the plant, and it has come to us from a peculiar instrument used for inhaling its smoke by the inhabitants of Hispaniola (San Domingo). The instru- ment, described by Oviedo (Historia de las Indias Occiden- tales, Salamanca, 1535), consisted of a small hollow wooden tube shaped like a Y, the two points of which being in- serted in the nose of the smoker, the other end was held into the smoke of burning tobacco, and thus the fumes

were inhaled. This apparatus the natives called “ tabaco ”; but it must be said that the smoking pipe of the con- tinental tribes was entirely different from the imperfect tabaco of the Caribees. Benzoni, on the other hand, whose Travels in America (1542-56) were published in 1565, says that the Mexican name of the herb was “ tabacco.”

The tobacco plant itself was first brought to Europe in 1558 by Francisco Fernandes, a physician who had been sent by Philip II. of Spain to investigate the products of Mexico. By the French ambassador to Portugal, Jean Nicot, seeds were sent from the Peninsula to the queen, Catherine de’ Medici. The services rendered by Nicot in spreading a knowledge of the plant have been commemo- rated in the scientific name of the genus Wicotiana. At first the plant was supposed to possess almost miraculous healing powers, and was designated ‘“‘herba panacea,” “ herba santa,” “sana sancta Indorum ” ; “divine tobacco ” it is called by Spenser, and “our holy herb nicotian” by William Lilly. While the plant came to Europe through Spain, the habit of smoking it was initiated and spread through English example. Ralph Lane, the first governor of Virginia, and Sir Francis Drake brought with them in 1586, from that first American possession of the English crown, the implements and materials of tobacco smoking, which they handed over to Sir Walter Raleigh. Lane is credited with having been the first English smoker, and through the influence and example of the illustrious Raleigh, who “ tooke a pipe of tobacco a little before he went to the scaffolde,” the habit became rooted among Elizabethan courtiers. During the 17th century the indulgence in tobacco spread with marvellous rapidity throughout all nations, and that in the face of the most resolute opposition of statesmen and priests, the ‘* counter- blaste ” of a great monarch, penal enactments of the most severe description, the knout, excommunication, and capital punishment. :

The species of Nicotiana number about fifty, but those of which Botany. the leaves are used as sources of tobacco are few. With the excep- tion of two species, one native of New Caledonia, the other proper to Australia, they are all of American origin. They form two well-defined groups, the first of which is characterized by the possession of an elongated corolla tube, red in colour, the plants having a single unbranched stalk which attains a height of from 5 to 7 feet; while to the second group belong such as have a swollen

corolla tube of a greenish-yellow colour, and a much- branched stem reaching a height of only from 2 to 5 feet. The type of the first group is the Virginian Tobacco, N. Tabacum, while the best known representative of the second is the Green Tobacco, WN. rustica. These two species, together with their numerous varieties, and with the Persian Tobacco, WV. persica,—the source of the famous Tumbeki or Shiraz tobacco,—are the sole sources of commercial tobacco. NV. Tabacum is the species from which the tobaccos of Cuba, the United States, and the Philippine Islands, and the Latakia of Turkey, are derived, and it is thus the source of not only the greater proportion of the tobacco of commerce but also the most highly prized and valuable of its varieties. N. rustica, originally a native of Brazil, is cultivated

Cultiva- tion.

to a considerable extent in South Germany, Hungary, and the East Indies,

The Virginian tobacco-plant, WV. Tabacum, is a eoarse rank- growing annual, with a simple unbranched cylindrical stem which attains a height of 6 feet and upwards, terminating in a panicle It has alternate simple oblong lanceolate leaves,

of pink flowers,

Fic. 1.—Flowering Top of V. Zabacum.

those at the lower part of the stem being slightly stalked, and of large size, reaching to two feet in length, while the upper are semi- amplexicaul and of variable outline. The seeds are brown in colour, with a rough surface, of minute size, and exceedingly numerous, as many as 40,000 having been counted ona single plant. The whole of the green parts of the plant are covered with long soft hairs which exude a viscid juice, giving the surface a moist glutinous feeling. The hairs are multicellular, and of two kinds, one

branching and ending in a fine point, while the other, unbranched, |

terminates in a elump of small cells. Stomata occur on both surfaces of the leaves, and, with the peculiar hair structure, render the microscopic appearance of the plant highly characteristic.

Fic. 2.—Microscopic Structure of Tobacco Leaf.

Tobacco will flourish over wide areas and in very dissimilar climates, but it is best suited for regions having a mean tempera- ture of not less than 40° F, and where early autumn frosts do not occur. It develops the most highly appreciated qualities in tropical lands possessed of a comparatively dry climate. ‘Tobacco is a most exhausting crop, and requires rich and abundant manuring, the eharacter of which exercises a distinct influence on the quality of the product. A crop grown under such widely different conditions of climate and agriculture as is the case with tobacco must of necessity be subject to varied treatment both in cultivation and in curing, and here we can refer only to the gencral features of the growing and securing of the crop.

In European cultivation, the tobacco-seed is sown in a hotbed about the end of March. The seed-beds are kept covered with damp straw or withered leaves till the seedlings appear above the ground, after which the eovering is removed, and, to protect the young plants from frost, to which they are extremely sensitive, the

‘manure.

beds are covered at night with mats. So soon as the plants can be handled, they are nicked out in rows in a garden bed, where they remain protected from night frost till they have developed five or six leaves and have a height of 3 to 4 inches. They are then ready for transplanting, by preference in moist weather, into prepared drills 20 to 25 inches apart in the field. The transplanting is done about the end of May, or earlier in localities free from night frosts, and in dry weather the field is plentifully soused with liquid The plants are carefully weeded and attended to, and the soil is frequently stirred with narrow hoes until the period when they show symptoms of flowering. This may be when they are only 3 feet high, or not until they

have reached their proper height_of 6 or 8 feet ; but the flowers must not be allowed to form, except in the case of a few plants left purposely for seed. To obtain fine and strong leaves on the plant is the great object of the cultivator, and a fine tobacco plant ought to have from eight to twelve large succulent leaves. Cultivators commonly diminish the number of leaves by ‘‘topping” or breaking off the top, under the

‘idea that the remaining ones will afford the strongest tobacco.

Suckers or shoots near the root are carefully removed, and every- thing7is done to concentrate the strength of the plant in the leaves. Every leaf injured by insects is removed, and the crop is watched until the leaves have a yellowish tint and begin to droop, when they are fit to be gathered. This is usually in September, so that the plants, from the time of their insertion on the mounds, have occupied the ground four months, during which time they have been subject to many vicissitudes,—from the attacks of insects, from a disease called “firing,’’ caused by the long continuance of very wet or very dry weather, and from the occurrence of autumn frosts while the crop is yet in the field.

In the harvesting of the tobacco crop several distinct methods are followed. In ordinary European cultivation the ripe leaves are separated from the standing stalks in the field. The three lower root-leaves are first stripped off and laid, face downward, arouud the root to wilt, after which they are bundled and carried to the barn. Afterwards the remainder of the leaves are separated, working from the top downwards, and, similarly, they are spread on the ground till by wilting they lose their brittleness. They are then bundled and packed, tops upward, closely on the floor of the barn for some time to sweat, by which the uniform ripening and subsequeut favourable drying are promoted. The bundles are carefully watched to prevent overheating, which would blacken and injure the leaves. In the tobacco-growing districts of the United States the entire plant is cut down in the field close to the ground, then the stalks are spitted on long rods or laths, care being taken to keep the leaves from touching each other, and on these rods they are carried and hung in the barn or curing-house for drying.

The curing of the leaves which follows has for its objects the Curing.

drying and preservation of the tobacco, and, by a process of slow fermentation, the modification of certain of the leaf constituents, and the development of the eharacteristic aroma of the substance. Subject to various minor modifications, the process of curing is carried out either slowly by the air-cure process or rapidly by ks. curing. The European cultivators, who generally cure by the slow process, either spit the leaves through the middle on a long rod or string them on a cord, taking care to keep each leaf from touehing its neighbour. These rods or cords of leaves are suspended in a barn or curing-shed in a way which allows the free circulation of the air, and at the same time brings the whole contents of the shed equally under the drying influence of the air currents. When the weather is clear and dry, free eirculation of the air is in every way promoted, but on humid days the moist air is excluded and sometimes artificial heat is required to prevent mildew and rotting of the leaves. Under Rvonnable circumstances the tobacco will be dry and ready for further treatment in from six to eight weeks, and the leaves should then have a fine bright warm brown colour.

In the United States the quick-drying process by artificial heat is employed principally for the preparation of export tobacco. Formerly the heat was obtained by means of an open charcoal fire within the curing-barn, but now the structure is heated by a system of flues which permits of the burning of any kind of fuel. For dark shipping tobacco, the entire plants, cut down close to the ground, are immediately housed, and at once dried off. Red shipping qualities are prepared by leaving the cut stems either in the field or hung on scaffolds in the barns for a few days to wilt and wither in the air, after which they are dried by artificial heat. In the treatment of both dark and red kinds the temperature within the barn is gradually raised till it reaches 170° F., and the drying is complete in from four to five days.

By whichever way treated, the tobacco-leaf at this stage is brittle, and cannot be handled without crumbling to powder. The contents of the barn are therefore left till moist weather occurs, and then by the admission of atmospherie air the leaf blades absorb moisture and become soft and pliant. In this condition the leaves are stripped from the stems, sorted into qualities, such as ‘‘ lugs,” or lower leaves, ‘‘ firsts,” and ‘‘seconds.” These are made up into

Chemis- try.

reps € & 6

“hands,” or small bundles of from six to twelve leaves. Each bundle is tied round with a separate leaf, and in this condition the tobacco is ready for bulking for fermentation.

For fermentation the tobacco, whether in bundles, hands, or separate leaves, is piled up or bulked on the floor in a barn into a solid stack to the height of 5 or 6 feet. Within this stack a process of fermentation is quickly set up, and the temperature of the mass rises steadily till it reaches about 130° F. Great care is now taken to prevent overheating, and to secure the uniform fermentation of all the tobacco. taken down and rebuilt, the tobacco from the top going to the bottom, and that exposed at the edges being turned in to the centre. In from three to five weeks the fermentation should be sufficiently carried out, and the leaves then have a nice uniform brown colour. The cured stack may in this condition be piled up in store without fear of further fermentative activity, till, with increasing summer heat, it is subject to the May sweat, which renders further watch- fulness necessary.

The components of tobacco, like those of all vegetable matters, arrange themselves under the three heads of water, mineral acids and bases (which pass into the ash on combustion), and organic substances. According to an investigation carried out by Beauchef in Gay-Lussac’s laboratory, the amount of ash from 100 parts of matter dried at 100° C. is in the roots 6 to 8, in the stems 10 to 13, and in the ribs and leaves 18 to 22 per cent. The greater part of the ash consists of insoluble salts, principally carbonate of lime. The soluble part consists largely of potash salts (KCl, K,COg, K,S80,), which may amount to from 5 to 35 per cent., and it is remarkable that tobacco contains no soda, In addition to the mineral salts proper, tobacco contains salts of ammonia and nitrates. In the leaf the proportion of nitrates is greater in the rib than in the lamine. In the former it may amount to as much as 10 per cent. (calculating the nitric acid as KNOg). According to Schloesing (Ann. Chim. Phys., [3], xl. 479), the proportion of (combined) nitric acid in tobacco has nothing to do with its combustibility, that is, the length of time a lighted cigar will glow spontaneously. This quality is a function chicfly of the potash present in combination with

organic acids. An incombustible tobacco, 7.€., a tobacco which does not keep a glowing ash, contains its organic acids in the form of lime and magnesia salts. The explanation is that, while organic potash salts, being fusible, yield when heated a porous charcoal which glows readily, the corresponding infusible lime salts yield a compact charcoal which is far less combustible. A combustible tobacco can be rendered incombustible by the incor- poration of sulphate or chloride of calcium or magnesium. By cultivation experiments in a potash-free soil, it has been ascertained that chloride of potassium used as a manure does not add to the organic potash salts in the leaves, but the sulphate, carbonate, and nitrate do give up their potash for the formation of organic salts.

Subjoined is an enumeration of the proximate organic com- ponents of tobacco leaves, and their relative proportions in 100 parts, according to the numerous analyses made in the laboratories of the French state tobacco factories :—

Nicotine, C,)H,,No, a liquid volatile alkaloid, from 1°5 to 9 per cent,

Essential oil, according to Schloesing, an important element in the flavour of tobacco, although its proportion is exceed- ingly small.

Nicotianine, a solid camphor-like body to which, according to other authorities, the odour of tobacco is principally due.

Malic and citric acids, together 10-14 per cent., calculated as anhydrides.

Acetic acid, very little in fresh leaves, but increasing in their fermentation. In snuff it may rise to 3 per cent.

Oxalic acid, 1 to 2 per cent.

Pectic acid, about 5 per cent.

Resins, fats, and other bodies extractable by ether, 4 to 6 per cent.

Sugar, little in the leavcs, more in the stems; in the fer- mentation it disappears.

Cellulose, 7 to 8 per cent.

Albuminoids, calculated from the nitrogen not present as nicotine, nitrates, or ammonia, about 25 per cent,

Excepting the nicotine, the several organic components of the leaves develop, roughly speaking, part passw until fructification, when certain components are attracted to the fruit, suffering ehemical changes while so moving. The nicotine determines the strength of a tobacco, but not its flavour or aroma. The manure supplied to a tobacco field does not increase the proportion of nicotine, but affects only the weight of the crop. The percentage of nicotine in the leaves may to some extent be modificd in cultiva- tion, —plants wide apart developing few leaves, but these thick, fleshy, and rich in nicotine, while closely packed plants throw out numerous but thin and membranous leaves having little nicotine. The proportion of nicotine present increases with the age of the plant. Schloesing found in leaves at various stages of growth the following percentage of nicotinc :— May 25 (very young leaves),

The pile is from time to time –

0°79; July 18, 1°21; Aug. 6, 1°93; Aug. 27, 2°27; Sept. 8, 3°36; Sept. 25, 4°32.

Regarding the changes which take place in the manufactured leaf, we take the case of snuff, because with it the chemical changes are carried farthest, and yet, qualitatively speaking, they are of the game nature as those which smoking tobacco undergoes. In the fermentation begun in curing and continued in the sauced leaf, the malie and citric acids and the nicotine undergo partial oxidation. The oxalate of lime and the pectates remain almost unchanged, and there are formed, of intermediate (not fully oxidized) bodies, ammonia, acetic acid, and black humic acid, the last giving to snuff its dark colour. A little methyl-alcohol is also at the same time formed. At this stage the tobacco-leaf is acid in reaction ; but after it is powdered, and again submitted for a prolouged period ‘to a slow fermentation in air-tight boxes, it becomes decidedly alkaline by the

ammonia, because, while acctic acid continues to be formed and the anmonia and nicotine remain what they are, the malic and citric acids are progressively destroyed. Uniess suuff contains free ammonia it is ‘flat,’ and destitute of pungency.

As to the composition of tobacco smoke, numerous investigations have been made, Kissling (Ding. Polyt. Jour., ccliv. 234-246), experimenting on cigars, found that a large proportion of the nicotine passes unaltered into the smoke. Dealing with a tobacco containing 3°75 per cent. of nicotine, he recovered from the sinoke 52°02 per cent. of the total nicotine consumed, while in the uncon- summed remains of the tobacco the proportion of nicotine was increased to 5°03 per cent. With a second sample of tobacco, having likewise 3°75 per cent. of nicotine, the smoke yielded only 27°83 per cent. of the total nicotine consumed, and the percentage in the unconsumed remains was raised to 4°51. From a tobacco containing only 0°30 of nicotine he recovered 84°23 of nicotine in the smoke. The composition of tobacco smoke is highly complex, but beyond nicotine the only substances found in appreciable quan- tities are the lower members of the picoline series.

The commercial varieties and the sources of supply of lcaf- Commer- Special qualities of tobacco, as cial varie- outside of which they ties.

tobacco are exceedingly numerous. of wines, &c., belong to particular localities, cannot be cultivated. These tobaccos are therefore natural mono- polies. Moreover, as is also the case ‘with wines, the erops vary in richness and delicacy of flavour with the seasons of their growth, so that in certain years the produce is of much greater value than in others. Further, the properties of certain classes of tobacco render them specially suitable for cigar-making. Others are best fitted for smoking in pipes; and there are numerous qualities which are valuable for snuff-making. National tastes and habits again frequently determine the destination of tobacco. Thus heavy, strong, and full-flavoured cigars and tobaccos are in favour in the United Kingdom, while on the Continent lighter and more brisk- burning qualities are sought after, and the materials consumed in the kalians of Persia and the Kast are not suitable for use in the short pipes of the Western nations.

Of cigar tobaccos the most valuable qualities in the world are cultivated in the north-west portions of the island of Cuba. The district of Vuelta Abajo is the source of the highest quality, after which comes the produce of Partidas and Vuelta Arriba.

Of ordinary smoking tobacco, among the most esteemed quali- ties are Varinas or kanaster, grown in the districts of Varinas, Merida, Margarita, &c., in Venezuela. The name kanaster, which covers several varieties of tobacco from South America, is given on account of the wicker baskets (Span. kanastra) in which the material is packed for export. The tobacco regions of the United States—Kentucky, Maryland, Virginia, and Ohio—send great sup- plies of smoking leaf of various qualities into the European market, especially into the United Kingdom, which is almost exclusively supplied from these sources. Smoking tobaccos of the highest quality, rivalling indeed the cigar tobacco of Cuba in flavour and value, are grown in Turkey, and specially in the province of Salonica. The famous Latakia of the English smokers is pro- duced in the province of Saida, in the northern part of Syria (see

Xe. — 54

Manu- facture.

Smoking mixtures.

Roll tobacco,

Cake tobacco,

Cigars.

LATAKIA), and thoughout Asiatic Turkey there is an extensive cultivation and export of smoking tobacco.

won oO Ue

shaped piece made to enclose the whole in a spiral manner, begin- ning at the thick end of the cigar and working down to the pointed

In the manufacture of tobacco for smoking, we have to do with |-end, where it is dexterously finished by twisting to a fine point

the numerous forms of tobacco used for smoking in pipes, embrac- ing cut smoking mixtures, cake or plug, and roll or spun tobacco. Under this heading come also the cigar and cigarette manufacture.

The raw material in the warehouses is of various qualities : some is strong, rough, and harsh, and so is unfit for ordinary smoking ; other samples are mild and fine, with aromatic and pleasant flavour, but devoid of strength. By a proper mixing and blending the manufacturer is enabled to prepare the smoking mixture which is desirable for his purpose; but certain of the rough, bitter qualities cannot be manufactured without a preliminary treatment by which their intense disagreeable taste is modified. The storing of such tobacco for a lengthened period matures and deprives it of harshness, and the same result may be artificially hastened by macerating the leaves in water acidulated with hydrochloric acid, and washing them out with pure water. The most efficient means, however, of improving strong, ill-tasting tobacco is by renewed fermentation artificially induced by moisture and heat.

The manufacturer having prepared his mixture of leaves, proceeds to damp them, pure water alone being used in the United Kingdom, whereas on the Continent and in America certain ‘‘sauces” are employed, which consist of mixtures of aromatic snbstances, sugar, liquorice, common salt, and saltpetre, &., dissolved in water. The primary object is to render the leaves soft and pliant; the use of the sauces is to-improve the flavour and burning qualities of the leaves used. When uniformly damped, the leaves are separately opened out and smoothed, the inidrib, if not already removed, is torn out, execpt when “‘bird’s eye” cut is to be made, in which mixture the midrib gives the peculiar “‘bird’s eye” appearance. The prepared tobacco, while still moist and pliant, is pressed between cylinders into a light cake, and cut into fine uniform shreds by a machine analogous to the chaff-cutter. The cut tobacco is now roasted, partly with the view of driving off moisture and bringing the material into a condition for keeping, but also partly to

improve its smoking quality. The roasting is most simply effected by spreading it on heated slabs, on which it is constantly turned ; but such a method does not yield uniform results, and it exposes the workers to a most deleterious atmosphere and noxious fumes. A roasting machine is in use, which consists of a revolving drum in which the tobacco is rotated, gradually passing from one end to the other, and all the time under the influeuce of a current of heated air passing through it.

For roll, twist, or pigtail tobacco the raw material is damped or sauced as in the case of cut tobacco. The interior of the roll consists of small and broken leaf of various kinds, called <‘ fillers” ; and this is enclosed within an external covering of large whole leaf of bright quality, such leaves being called “covers.” The material is supplied to the twisting machinery by an attendant, and formed into a cord of uniform thickness, twisted, and wound on a drum by mechanism analogous to that used in rope-spinning. From the drum of the twisting machine the spun tobacco is rolled into cylinders of various sizes. These arc enclosed in canvas, and around the surface of each stout hempen cord is tightly and closely coiled. In this form a large number, after being cooked or stoved in moist heat for about twenty-four hours, are piled between plates in an hydraulic press, and subjected to great pressure for a month or six weeks, during which time a slow fermentation takes place, and a considerable exudation of juice results from the severe pressure, The juice is collected for use as a sheep-dip.

Cake or plug tobacco is made by enveloping the desired amount of fillers within covering leaves of a fine bright colour. A large number of such packages are placed in moulds, and submitted to powerful pressure in an hydraulic press, by which they are moulded into solid cakes. Both cake and roll tobacco are equally used for smoking and chewing ; for the latter purpose the cake is frequently sweetened with liquorice, and sold as honey-dew or sweet cavendish.

For cigar-making the finest and most delicately flavoured qualities of tobacco are generally selected. A cigar consists of a core or central mass of fillers enveloped in an inner and an outer cover or tobe. The fillers or inner contents of the cigar must be of uniform quality, and so packed and distributed in a longitudinal direction that the tobacco may burn uniformly

and the smoke can be freely drawn from end to end. For the inner cover whole leaf of the same quality as the fillers is used, but for the outer cover only selected leaves of the finest quality and colour, free from all injury, are employed. The covers are carefully cut to the proper size and shape with a sharp knife, and, being damped, a pile of them smoothed out are placed together. In making cigars by the hand, the operator rolls together a sufficient quantity of material to form the filling of one cigar, and experience enables him or her to select very uniform quantities. This quantity is wrapped in the inner cover, an oblong piece of leaf the length of the cigar to be made, and of width sufficient to enclose the whole material. The cigar is then rolled in the hand to consolidate the tobacco and bring it into proper shape, after which it is wrapped in the outer cover, a

between the fingers. The finished cigars are either spread out in the sunlight to be dried, or, where that is impracticable, they are exposed to a geutle heat. They are then sorted into qualities according to their colour, packed and pressed in boxes, in which they are stored forsale. Machinery is now employed for forming and moulding the fillings of cigars.

Havana cigars are, as regards form, classification, method of putting up, and nomenclature, the models followed by manufacturers of all elasses of the goods. Genuine (‘‘legitimas”’) Havana cigars are such only as are made in the island; and the cigars made in Europe and elsewhere from genuine Cuban tobacco are classed as “‘Havanas.” Other brands of home manufacture contain sonie proportion of Cuban tobacco ; and very good cigars may be made in which the name only of that highly-prized leaf is employed. When we come to the inferior classes of cigars, it can only be said that they may be made from any kind of leaf, the more ambitious imitations being treated with various sauces designed to give them a Havana flavour. The highest class of Cuban-made cigars, called “‘vegueras,” are prepared from the very finest Vuelta Abajo leaf, rolled when it is just half dry, and consequently never damped with water at all. Next come the “‘regalias,” similarly made of the best Vuclta Abajo tobacco; and it is only the lower qualities, ‘‘ ordinary regalias,” which are commonly found in com- merce, the finer, along with the ‘‘vegueras,” being exceedingly high-priced. The cigars, when dry, are carefully sorted according to strength, which is estimated by their colour, and classed in a

scale of increasing strength as claro, colorado claro, maduro, and oscuro, They are pressed into the cigar boxes for sale, and branded with the name or trade mark of their makers. Cheroots differ from ordinary cigars only in shape, being either in the form of a trun- cated cone, or of uniform thickness throughout, but always having both ends open and sharply cut across. Cheroots come princi- pally from Manila, but there are now large quantities imported into the United Kingdom from the East Indies and Burmah.

Cigarettes consist of small rolls of fine cut tobacco wrapped in a Cigar- Origin- ettes,

covering of thin tough paper specially made for such use. ally cigarettes were entirely prepared by the smoker himself ; but, now that the consumption of cigarettes has attained gigantic pro- portions, especially in France, they are very largely made with the aid of an elaborate system of automatic machinery. The machines cut the paper, gum its edge, measure out the proper quantity of tobacco, wrap it up, make the gummed edge adhere, cut the ends, and pack the cigarettes in boxes.

The manufacture of snuff is the most complex, tedious, and Snuff,

difficult undertaking of the tobacco manufacturer; but it is an art now of relatively little and of decreasing importance. The tobacco best suited for snuff-making is thick fleshy leaf of a dark colour, the finest qualities of snuff being made with dark Virginia leaf and the Amersfoort leaf of Holland; but manufacturers work up many kinds with fragments from the making of smoking tobacco, midribs, &c. The varieties and qualities of snuff are many, the differences being dependent on the material employed, the sauces with which it is treated, and the method of manufacture. The sauces for snuff consist of solutions of common salt, with various aromatic substances according to the flavour desired in the finished snuff, aud with occasional additions of potash, sal ammoniac, and other salts. The following is an outline of the method adopted in making snuff on the great scale in the state manufacture of France. The tobacco leaves are moistened with about one-fifth of their weight of salt and water (sp. gr. 1°089), made up into blocks, and piled in large rectangular heaps, in quautities of 40 or 50 tons. The temperature gradually rises to 140° F., and sometimes reaches

170°; but the heat must be regulated, or parts of the mass would become black as if charred. The heaps are made up in spring and autunin, and the fermentation is continued for five or six months, when the temperature remains stationary or begins to decline, The heap is then opened, and the tobacco is ground, by which means a pale brown dryish powder (rdépé sec) is obtained. ‘This is mixed with about four-tenths of its weight of a solution of common salt, and is passed through a sieve, that the powder may be uniformly moistened. It is then packed in large open chests in quantities of froin 25 to 50 tons, where it remains for nine or ten months, and undergoes another fermentation, the temperature rising in the centre of the mass to 120° or 130°. During this process the snuff acquires its dark colour and develops its aroma, But it is not uniform in quality throughout, and is removed to a second chest, in such a way as thoroughly to mix all the different parts together, and, after the lapse of two months, it is again turned over ; and the process is sometimes repeated a third time. When the snuff is ripe, the contents of the various chests are mixed together in a large room capable of holding 350 tons of snuff, where it is left for about six weeks, and the whole mass being uniform in quality is sifted into barrels for the market. The process of manufacture occupies in all from eighteen to twenty months. During these

Fiscal restric- tions,

Physio- logical effects.

TO B—

repeated fermentations about two-thirds of the nicotine is destroyed, the acidity of the snuff disappears, and the mass becomes distinctly alkaline, notwithstanding that acetic acid is continuously evolved. The destruction of malic and citric acids continues, and the bases thereby set free saturate the acetic acid formed, leaving free ammonia in the snuff. The properties of snuff are dependent on the presence of free nicotine, free ammonia, and the peculiar aromatic principle developed in the fermentation.

The reduction of tobacco-leaf to a snuff powder is a task of con- siderable difficulty, owing to the gummy nature of the substance, which tends to coat and clog grinding surfaces. In early times the duly sauced and fermented

leaves were made up into “ carottes,” —tightly tied up spindle-formed bundles, from the end of which the snuffer, by means of a “snuff rasp,” rasped off his own supply, and hence the name ‘‘rapé,” which we have still as ‘‘ rappee,” to indicate a particular class of snuff. The practice of tying up the leaves in the form of carottes is still followed by makers of fine snuff, as the very slow fermentation which goes on within the bundles is favourable to the development of a rich aroma. For eee the leaves are first cut to shreds with a revolving

nife, and then powdered either by a kind of mortar and pestle mill, or by falling stampers supplied with knife cutting edges, or more commonly they are treated in a conical mill, in which both the re- volving cone and the sides have sharp cutting edges, so that the material undergoes a cutting rather than a grinding action. The snuff from the mill is sifted, and that which remains on the sieve ig returned to the mill, the remainder being passed on as rdpé sec for further treatment as described above.

In nearly all civilized countries the cultivation of tobacco and its manufacture are conducted under state supervision, and form an important source of public revenue. In France, Austria-Hungary, Italy, and Spain the cultivation is a state monopoly, and in other countries the crop is subject to heavy excise duties. Since the time of Charles II. the growth of tobacco in England has been practically prohibited, the original legislative exactment to that effect having been passed with the view of encouraging trade with the young colony of Virginia. When that motive ceased to have force the supposed difficulties of collecting the internal taxation still influenced the legislature to continue their prohibition, and consequently a penalty or prohibitive tax equal to sixteen hundred pounds per acre is exigible on the cultivation of tobacco in the United Kingdom. In Ireland the duty on the cultivation of tobacco was abandoned between 1822 and 1880, and in that interval the cultivation grew till about a thousand acres were under the crop. In 1886 the Government permitted the experimental cultivation of tobacco in England, under certain precautions and restrictions for the security of the revenue. Several proprietors in Kent, Norfolk, and other counties grew experimental patches with such success as to warrant the continuance of the experiment and to prove the entire practicability of cultivating tobacco as an English agricultural crop. The climate is, however, so variable that, were all

restric- tions removed, and tobacco grown subject only to excise supervision for collecting an equitable tax, it is more than doubtful whether its growth would be a safe and profitable undertaking.

The intlueuce of tobacco on health and morals has, ever since its introduction into Europe, becn a fruitful subject of controversy. On all grounds, except as a medicine, it met the most uncom- promising opposition when it first became known ; but it was precisely the expectations entertained regarding its medicinal virtues which were completely disappointed. Burton, in the Anatomy of Melancholy, gives strong expression to the two views : “Tobacco, divine, rare, superexcellent tobacco, which goes far beyond all the panaceas, potable gold, and philosopher’s stones, is a sovereign remedy in all diseases. A good vomit, I confess, a vir- tuous herb if it be well qualified, opportunely taken, and medi- cinally used ; but, as it is eommonly abused by most men, whieh take it as tinkers do ale, ’tis a plague, a mischief, a violent purge of goods, lands, health, —hellish, devilish, and danined tobacco, the ruin and overthrow of body and soul.” Burton’s meaning— that tobacco in moderation is a good thing, while its excessive use causes many physical and other evils—has many sympathizers ; but the difficulty is to define moderation and excess. Among modern authorities, Dr Jonathan Pereira says, ‘‘ I am not acquainted with any well-ascertained ill effects resulting from the habitual practice of smoking.” Similarly Sir Robert Christison eoncludes, ‘‘ In many individuals who use it habitually, the smoke has an extra- ordinary power in removing exhaustion, listlessness, and restless- ness, especially when brought on by bodily or mental fatigue, and this property is the basis of its general use as an article of luxury.” Dr E. A. Parkes sums up his observations thus : ‘‘ I confess myself quite uncertain. I can find nothing like good evidence in books ; too often a foregone conclusion, without any evidence to back it, is given, I think we must decidedly admit injury from excess ; from moderate use I can see no harm, except it may be in youth.” On the other hand, it is asserted by the opponents of tobacco, and by the anti-tobacco societies, that the habitual use of this narcotic leads, especially in the young, to decrease of bodily and mental

o’s. 427

vigour, and specially produces symptoms of anemia, palpitation, intermittent pulse, and other affections of the heart and circula- tion. It is an admitted fact that a disease of the vision—tobacco amblyopia—is contracted by sinokers, and is not uncommon among those using strong heavy preparations, such as blaek twist. Allowing that such incidental evils may arise from even compara- tively moderate indulgenee in tobacco, they are after all as nothing compared to the vast aggregate of gentle exhilaration, soothing, and social comfort, extracted from the Virginian weed.

With the almost universal prevalence of the use of tobacco, it must be obvious that the amount consumed yearly is very great. In the United Kingdom, which ——-—¥—_-~—

is much less a tobacco-consuming Total Per country than the United States Conéumption. | Hend. or many European countries, the ib ne consumption per head hassteadily | 1821 15,598,152 11-71 increased, as is shown in the | jSil 19,533,841 12°80 accompanying table. aa iee ae : 1851 28,062,978 16°87 _ The customs duty derived from | 1871 42,775,334 21°49 imports of tobacco amounted in | 1881 49,820,493 22°60

1886 to £9,298,990, and there cer- tainly is a considerable quantity of manufactured tobacco smuggled into the kingdom which comes into no official reeord. In the United States the production of tobaceo was in 1840 219,163,319 tb, in 1850 199,752,655 tb, in 1860 484,209, 461 tb, in 1870 262,735,341 th, and in 1880 472,661,157 tb. During the ten years ending 1881 the average annual production was 472,000,000 tb, cultivated on from 600,000 to 700,000 acres, the value of the crops ranging from $40,000,000 to $45,000,000. In the same ten years 2,540,818,001 tb of leaf were exported, 1,897,606,249 Ib were manufactured for home consumption, and the quantity consumed by growers was estimated to be equal to 280,000,000 Ib.

For Tobacco Pipe, see PIPE.

The literature of tobacco is very extensive. The late Mr William Bragge of Birmingham published in 1880 a revised bibliography of the subject, Bibliotheca Nicotiana, extending to 248 quarto pages. From such a mass of

authorities it would be vain here to make selections, but mention may be made of Fairholt's capital gossiping work, Tobacco, its [Jtstory and Associations (2d ed., 1876). As modern standard works there may also be quoted Tiedemann's Geschichte des Tabaks (1856) and Wagner's Tabakeultur, Tabak- und Cigarren-Fabrication (1884). In the Tenth Census Reports of the United States (1883), vol. ifi., there are a series of elaborate papers on the cultivation, manufacture, and statistics of American tobacco. (J. PA.—W. D.)

TOBAGO, the most southerly of the Windward group of British West Indian Islands (11° 9' N. lat., 60° 12' W. long.), 20 miles north-east from Trinidad, is 26 miles in length and 74 at its greatest breadth, with an area of 114 square miles (73,313 acres). Its formation is volcanic, and the physical aspect irregular and picturesque, with conical hills and ridges; the main ridge is 1800 feet high and 18 miles long. There are several excellent harbours. The products are sugar, rum, molasses, and fruits of various kinds, only the low ground being cultivated; production is not increasing. In 1885 the revenue was £10,826 and the expenditure £12,031, while the imports were £30,758 and the exports £26,414. The population in 1885 was 19,363 (9368 males and 9995 females), princi- pally of African race, the whites being very few. Tobago has a small legislative council and an administrator under the Government of the Windward Islands. Its capital is Scarborough (1200 inhabitants), on the south-east coast.

Tobago was discovered by Columbus in 1498, and the British flag was first planted in 1580, the island being then occupied by Caribs. It has subsequently been held by the Duteh and the French, but ultimately was ceded to the British crown in 1814.

TOBIT, THe Book or, one of the Old Testament apocrypha, relates with many marvellous' circumstances the virtues, trials, and final deliverance of Tobit, a pious Jsraelite who was carried to Nineveh in the captivity of the ten tribes, and, after rising into favour and wealth as a trader at the royal court, was reduced to poverty because he habitually buried those of his nation whom the tyrant slew and ordered to be cast forth unburied. Besides this he lost his eyesight through an accident. Reduced almost to despair, like Job, and taunted like Job by his wife ("where are thy alms and righteous

deeds 2”), he yet puts his faith in God and prepares to die, but first resolves to send his son Tobias to Rhagz (Rai), in Media, to reclaim an old loan. Now his prayers are heard and his righteous-

Com- merce.

ness rewarded, for Raphael, one of the seven angels that present the prayers of the saints before God, is sent in human form to conduct Tobias on his journey. Thus aided, Tobias not only recovers his father’s money, but by killing a fish which attacks him as he washes his feet in the Tigris, becomes possessed of two invaluable drugs, its liver with the heart and its gall. By fumigation with the former he drives away the demon Asmodeus, who had slain the seven bridegrooms of a virtuous Jewish maiden, Sara of Ecbatana, his own kinswoman, and so wins a good wife, and with the gall he heals his father’s eyes. In spite of the absurd machinery and other puerilities, the story is ingeniously constructed, and the picture of Tobit’s piety is natural and touching, so that the whole is a very good exhibition of the weakness and the strength of Judaism as It was among the Israelites of the dispersion.

The date of the book cannot be precisely determined. It was written before the destruction of the temple (xiv. 5), and is cited by early Christian writers. On the other hand, it is in the highest degree probable that the Greek text is original,! in which case the book can hardly be earlier than the 2d century B.c. A date about the middle of this century, or a little earlier, at the time of bitter conflict with the Greeks, seems to accord best with the tone of the book. The sympathy shown for the victims of tyranny, to whom burial was denied, acquires fresh mean- ing when compared with such a passage as 2 Mac. v. 10, and the prominence given to eschatological hopes in the closing verses fits a time when interest in the prophecies of Israel’s future glory was revived by the struggle for national independence in Judzxa.

That Tobit was written by a Jew of the Eastern dis- persion (so, e.g., Ewald, Gesch., iv. 269) will hardly be maintained by any one who accepts the Greek text as original. The book remained almost unknown to the Syriac church, a fact which tells strongly against the hypothesis of an Eastern origin; and at the period to which the work can be best referred Egypt is the

only probable place for a Jewish-Greek composition. The writer knows nothing about the geography of the East beyond a few names which every Jew must have heard,— the Tigris, which, by an error common among the Greeks but hardly possible to an Oriental Jew, he regards as flowing between Nineveh and Media; Rhage, which was a royal residence of the Parthians; the famous city of Ecbatana ; and Elymais (ii. 10), which was associated with the disaster of Antiochus Epiphanes. And in both forms of the Greek text (vi. 9 in the common text, and v. 6 in the longer) Rhagzw is falsely represented as quite near Ecbatana.? Noldeke surmises, as others have done before him, that the “ fish ” which attacked Tobias was the Egyptian crocodile, and this conjecture is raised almost to certainty when we read in Kazwini i. 132 that the smell of the smoke of crocodile’s liver cures epilepsy and that its dung and gall cure leucoma, which was the cause of Tobit’s blindness.? Thus the cures of Sara and Tobit are natural (cf. the longer Greek text, vi. 4 sq.); the angel’s help is necessary only to secure the medicaments and explain their use.

But though the story may have been written in Egypt it contains Persian elements. There is no inconsistency in

SSS eee eee eee eee eee ae 1 See the arguments of Noldeke, Monatsh. Berl. Ak., 1879, p. 45 Sq. This paper also contains the best discussion of the relation of the various texts of the book, , ? Néldeke shows that the same error in a less gross form appears in both texts in chap. ix. The further erroneous statement of the longer text that Ecbatana lies in a plain occurs also in Diod., ii. 18, 6, in a passage dependent on Ctesias, from whom the addition may have been taken. 3 Very similar statements as to the medical virtues of the crocodile (aquatic or terrestrial) occur in Greek and Latin writers,

this, for the authors of Jewish Haggada generally borrowed the themes which they embellished, and that from very various quarters. In fact, at the close of our book there is a brief allusion to another story,* quite unknown to us, which the author evidently did not invent. The proof of a Persian element in the tale lies, not in the localities, but in the angelology and demonology. Asmodeus is the Iranian evil spirit Aeshma Daeva, and

Raphael, as the guardian of Tobias, has a strong resemblance to the Iranian Craosha. Such precise adaptations of Zoroastrian ideas were hardly the common property of Judaism at so early a date; they lead us to conjecture that the writer borrowed from an Jranian story.® And only in this way can we explain the appearance of the dog who goes out and returns with Tobias and Raphael. This trait is so inconsistent with Jewish feelings towards the unclean animal that it is omitted in the Hebrew and Chaldee versions. But to the Iranians the dog was not only a sacred animal, the pro- tector of herds and homes, but was the companion of the protecting spirit Graosha (Bundahesh, chap. xix.), to whom Raphael in our tale corresponds.

The Greek text of Tobit is found in a shorter recension (the usual text) and in a longer form preserved in the Codex Sinaiticus (published by F. H. Reusch, 4to, Bonn, 1870). ‘There are frag- ments of another form of the longer text in several cursives. All the forms are given in Fritzsehe’s Libri Apoeryphi, Leipsic, 1871. The shorter text, in the judgment of Fritzsche and Néldeke, is the earlier. The longer text is also represented by the Latin versions, the second part of the rare Syriac version (the first part is from the hexaplar Greek), and two closely allied Jewish versions, the Aramaic (published by Neubauer, from a unique Midrash in the Bodlcian, Oxf., 1878) and the Hebrew, first printed in Coustantin- ople (1516), reprinted by Miinster in 1542 (whenee its common name Hebreus Munsteri) and included in Neubauer’s edition. The Aramaic scems to be a late form of the text known to Jerome, and of which he made use for the Vulgate Latin; it is certainly a trauslation from the Greek. There are recent commentarics on Tobit by Fritzsche (Kurzgef. Handb. zu den Apoer., ii., Leipsie, 1853), Reusch (Freiburg, 1857), Sengclmann (Hamburg, 1857), and Gutberlet (Theissing, 1877). Noldeke’s paper already quoted is indispensable. For other literature, see Schiirer, WTliche Zeit- gesch., li, 609. (W. R. 8.)

TOBOLSK, a government of Western Siberia, having the Arctic Ocean on the N., Archangel, Vologda, Perm, and Orenburg on the W., Akmolinsk and Semipalatinsk on the S., and Tomsk and Yeniseisk on the E., is one of the largest provinces of the Russian empire, occupy- ing nearly 7 per cent. (531,980 square milés) of its total area. It borders on the Arctic Ocean, from: the river Kara to the Bay of the Ghida, the broad peninsula of Yatmat projecting between the Kara Sea on the west and the Bay of the Ob; this last

penetrates into the continent for more than 550 miles, with a width of from 60 to 70 miles, and receives another long and wide outlet—the bay of the Taz (Tazovskaya). Another wide bay of the Kara Sea—the Baidaratsk, or Kara Bay—runs up into the Yatmat peninsula from the north-west. The islands be- longing to the government are few; Byelyi, at the ex- tremity of Yatmat, and a few small ones along the west coast of the peninsula, as also in the Obi Bay, are for the most part ice-bound. This extensive province occupies the greater part of the lowlands of north-western Asia, which extend eastward from the Urals, and only in the far north does it include the eastern slopes of these mountains. The Pai-ho coast-ridge only touches Tobolsk with its south- eastern extremity. The Urals proper, which run south- west from the Kara Sea as far as to the Tell-péss group (5540 feet), and thence take a southerly direction, form the boundary between Tobolsk and Vologda as far as the

- The story of Nadab and Achiacharus. The names are uncertain, and one text substitutes Aman (Haman) for Nadab. But the allusion is not to the book of Esther.

> Compare what is said under THOUSAND AND ONE Nicuts (p. 312) as to the probable influence of an Iranian legend on the book of Esther.

PO BOL s Kk

sources of the Petchora (61° 30’ N. lat.), but farther south their eastern slopes are included in the Russian government of Perm, and only their lowest spurs, 200 miles from the main ridge, belong to Tobolsk. The aver- age height of the northern Urals is about 3000 feet, and several of their summits range from 3300 to 4000 and even 4370 feet (Net-yu, in 68° N. lat.). The remainder of the government is of lowland character, hardly at any point rising above the sea by more than a few hundred feet, but these lowlands vary greatly in their different parts. They assume the character of grassy steppes or prairies in the south, of immense marshes sparsely covered with forest in the north, and of treeless tundras as the shores of the Arctic Ocean are approached. The southern steppes, in their turn, may be subdivided into two distinct portions,—the Tobot and Ishim steppe in the west, and the Baraba in the east. The former, nearly 43,000 square miles in area, is one of the most fertile parts of the empire. One-third is under forest,

and the remainder has a soil of very fertile black earth, which has the further advant- age of being sufficiently watered. The climate, indeed, is very severe, the mean annual temperature (30° to 34° F.) being such as is found only in the north of Sweden and in Archangel; but the warm summer (65° to 68° in July) and the amount of light received from a bright sky combine to make vegetation develop with a rapidity quite unknown to western Europe. This region now has a population of more than 800,000, almost all Russians (only 14,000 aborigines), so that it may be said to be more thoroughly Russian than the Volga provinces. The area under crops every year is 3} million acres, and the region promises to become a regular granary for Siberia and north-eastern Russia. The second portion of the southern plains, which might be called the Baraba region, being mostly occupied by the Baraba steppe, covers about 55,000 square miles. Only its western borders belong to Tobolsk. It also is perfectly flat, and covered with recent deposits ; but, as there is no definite slope, the surface waters move slowly, and accumulate into a very large number of lakes and marshes. The climate is moister and the summer still shorter and less hot than in the preceding region. Forests, consisting chiefly of birch, are spread in clusters over its surface. The soil of this region also is very pro- ductive, but the fertile patches are separated by marshy grounds, and the dense clouds of mosquitoes which float over it in summer are a positive plague to both man and beast. The population numbers only 250,000, also almost all Russians (only 4000 aborigines), and the area annually under crops is about 1,350,000 acres. To the north of the regions just specified is that occupied by the administra- tive districts of Tura, Tobolsk, and Tara, with an area of about 110,000 square miles; this may be described as the taiga region. It is covered throughout with impenetrable forests and quivering marshes—the dreadful wrmans, which are penetrated by man only for some 20 to 50 miles around the widely separated settlements. Immense cedar- trees, larches, firs, pines, birches, and maples grow very densely, and the underwood is so thick that a passage can be forced only with the aid of the hatchet, the difficulties being further increased by the layers of decayed wood and by the marshes. To cross these, which are treacherously concealed under a swaying layer of grassy vegetation, a kind of snow-shoe must be used even in the summer, and many can be crossed only in winter. Immense areas of the urmans, especially on the Vasyugan, have never been visited by man; but still, from time to time a Russian settlement arises in the

forests, mostly founded by Non- conformists in hiding, who freely receive all sorts of fugitives. The south-western parts of this region are crossed by the Siberian highway, and to this circumstance

‘alone is it indebted for its population of nearly 450,000

(32,000 aborigines). Only 2 per cent. of this area is under culture. Farther north extend the tundras, where the aver- age temperature rapidly decreases from the 25° F. found in the preceding region to 15°, 10°; and 7°. The frozen soil during the hottest part of the summer thaws only for a few inches beneath the surface. The frost sets in early, and a thick envelope of snow lowers the spring. tempera- ture. Forests cover the southern parts, but the trees become poorer, shorter, and thinner, and huddle into im- penetrable thickets ; while, farther north, only the creep- ing variety of birch and the dwarf varieties of willow hold their ground. Within the Arctic Circle the last traces of arboreal vegetation disappear, their northern limit being pushed south by the double bay of the Ob and the Taz, and by the proximity of the Kara Sea.

Apart from the Urals, there are no traces of hard rock anywhere in Tobolsk. Down to its southern borders it is covered with Post-Pliocene deposits, which are met with as far as the water- parting between the Irtish and the Aral-Caspian depression. This range of flat hills rises a few hundred feet above the sea-level, and it seems to mark the limit of extension of the Post-Glacial gulf of the Arctic Ocean which covered western Tobolsk during the Glacial period. Contrary to Humboldt’s hypothesis, it remains, however, doubtful whether it was connected in Post-Glacial times with the Aral-Caspian Sea otherwise than by means of narrow straits, which disappeared at any rate at an early stage in that geological period.

The climate of Tobolsk is one of great extremes, the differences between the averages for the hottest and coldest months reaching as much as 70° F. The average temperatures at Berezoff, Narym, Tobolsk, and Ishim respectively are 24°, 28°, 31°°8, and 382° (January, ~8°°3, — 8°, — 2°, and — 4°; July from 62° to 67°). Only 194 days at Ishim and 153 at Berezoff

have a temperature above 32°; and the Ob at Obdorsk continues ice-bound for 219 days (the Irtish 176 days at Tobolsk).

The government is watered by the Ob, which traverses it for more than 1300 miles, and is navigable throughout. It receives many tributaries, some of which are 200 to 350 miles long, but flow through quite uninhabited regions. The Irtish, a left-hand tribu- tary of the Ob, covers all the southern part of Tobolsk with its numerous tributaries. It waters Tobolsk for 760 miles, and is navigable for the whole of its length ; it receives the great Tobot, about 420 miles long, also navigable, the Ishim, and a number of less important streams; while the Tura, a tributary of the Tobot, is also a channel for navigation. The navigation lasts for nearly six months in the south. The first steamer on the Ob system was launched in 1845 and the second in 1860; since the latter date steam navigation has steadily developed.

Lakes, some of them salt, occur in great numbers on the water- parting between the Irtish and the Aral-Caspian, and everywhere in South Tobolsk. Lake Tchany, the largest, covers 1265 square miles. All are being rapidly dried up, and even within the last hundred years they have undergone great changes. Thus, in the group of lakes of Tchany, in the Baraba steppe, whole villages have arisen on ground that was under water in the earlier years of this century.! Immense marshes cover Tobolsk beyond 57°N. lat., —the Vasyugan marshes in the east,-the Kondinsk and Berezovsk marshes in the wést, both joining farther north the tundras of the Arctic shores.

The population reached 1,288,000 in 1882. Although recent immigrants, the Russians already constitute 94 per cent. of the aggregate population, ‘and their numbers are steadily increasing by immigration, and partly also by the arrival of exiles. No fewer than 43,750 immigrants from Russia settled at Tobolsk between 1846 and 1878, but of late this figure has greatly increased. In 1879 as many as 59,134 exiles were on the registers, but of these more than 20,000 had left their abodes and disappeared. As a rule the exiles belong to the poorest elass of population. Aeeording to M. Yadrintseff,?2 the native population of Tobolsk was repre- sented in 1879 by 29,150 Tartars and 8730 other Turkish inhabit. ants, chiefly in the south, 22,350 Ostiaks, chiefly on the Ob, 6920 Samoyedes in the north, and 6100 Voguls in the north-west; the total amounted to 74,220,—that is, 6°1 per

cent. of the aggregate population (1,206,000 in 1879). The OstTraKs (q.v.) are in a very miserable condition, having come under heavy obligations to the Russian merchants, and being compelled to hand over to them nearly all the produce of their hunting and fishing. The Tartar settlements in the south are prosperous, but not in the Tobolsk district, where their lands have been appropriated for the Russian Sinan Alibi? Scepter nN 2 =” tS ae eee

1 See Yadrintseff in Jzvestia Russ. Geogr. Soc., 1886. 2 Siberia as a Colony (Russian).

settlers. Of the Russians nearly 35,000 are Nonconformists, accord- ing to official figures, but the number is greatly understated. Many of the Samoyedes, Ostiaks, and Voguls are nominally Christians. The Russians and the Tartars, who chiefly inhabit South Tobolsk, mostly live by agriculture. Of the total area of land regarded as suitable for cultivation (28,400,000 acres), 15,600,000 are owned by the peasant communities. Summer wheat, rye, oats, barley, and some buckwheat are raised. Flax and hemp and tobacco are cultivated in the south, where cattle-brceding also is extensively carried on. The ravages of anthrax, however (see MURRAIN, vol. Xvi. p. 58), are very severe, especially in the marshy parts of the province. The indigenous inhabitants of the north had, in the same year, more than 100,000 reindeer. Dogs are used in sledges in the far north. In the forest region the chief means of cxistence are found in the forests. The pursuit of bears, wolves, foxes, squirrels, ermines, stags, elks, as also of sables and beavers (rapidly disappearing), is a regular occupation with the Russian peasants as well as with the indigenous inhabitants; sledges and cars, mats, sicves, wooden vessels, and pitch and tar are also manu- factured to a considerable extent in the villages (valued at about £150,000). Cedar-nuts (from 5000 to 8000 ewts. every year) are gathered, partly for the sake of their oil. The fisherics of the Ob and the southern lakes are important ; no fewer than 1700 Ostiaks are engaged in them on the Ob. No less than 200,000 ewts. of fish are annually caught in the district of Tara alonc, and Surgut exports it to the value of £10,000, while in the Narym region 10,000 ewts. of salt are used for preserving the fish.

The industries are insignificant (chiefly tanning, distilling, and tallow-melting); iron-works and woollen-cloth mills are still in their infancy. The export of cattle, hides, tallow, corn, flour, fish, and furs to Russia, both from Tobolsk and from the Kirghiz steppe, is of some importance. Spirits are sent farther east, to Tomsk; while all kinds of manufactured wares are imported from Russia. The fairs of Irbit and Ishim are the chief centres for trade.

The educational institutions are few. It is worthy of remark that of ‘‘secondary schools” (gymnasia and pro-gymnasia) there were in 1883 eight for girls, with 1065 scholars, and only four for boys, with 711 scholars; of primary schools there were 250, with 5844 boys and 1403 girls.

Tobolsk is divided into ten distriets (okrugs), the chief towns (with populations in 1883) being Tobolsk (20,130), Berezoff (1990), Ishim (7100), Kurgan (8570), Surgut (1460), Tara (8640), Turinsk (4650), Tyukatinsk (3900), Tyumefi (14,300), and Yalutorovsk (4500). Ofthese towns, only Topoisk and TyuMEN (q. v.) are really entitled to the designation, the others being mere villages, of less importance than many others on the great Siberian highway which crosses the government from Tyumefi to Tomsk. (ES AN i)

TOBOLSK, capital of the above government, is situated on the right bank of the Irtish, near its junction with the Tobot. It is 1535 miles from Moscow, and since the alteration of the course of the great Siberian highroad from Tyumefi to Tomsk it has become an out-of-the-way place, and is no longer either capital of Western Siberia or even an administrative centre for exiles, as it was for- merly. Viewed from the Irtish, the town has a picturesque aspect, with its kreml, or stone walls, built on a crag 200 feet high, its twenty-one churches, and several elegant buildings. The kreml, built under Peter I. by Swedish prisoners, in imitation of the kreml of Moscow, is 430 yards long by 200 yards in breadth, and contains two cathedrals erected towards the end of the 17th century. The bell of Uglitch, which rang the alarm when the czarevitch Dmitri was assassinated by order of Boris Godunoff, and therefore had its “ear torn away,” and was exiled to Siberia, stands close by. The palace of the governor, the administrative offices, the seminary where the historian of Siberia, Slovtsoff, received his education, the gymnasium where Mendeléeff the chemist was trained, and the Marie

school for girls, which now supplies Siberia with so many teachers, are in the upper part of the town, where broad grassy spaces separate the wide streets paved with thick planks. A monument to Yermak, the rebel Cossack who conquered Siberia, stands in a prominent place; and one of the sides of the large square on the crag is occupied by the immense prison, where more than 2000 exiles are gathered during the period of navigation. The lower part of the town stands on a sandy beach of the Irtish, and often suffers from floods. Its sanitary condition is very bad. The merchants of Tobolsk carry on a fairly brisk

trade in corn from the south, salt from Semipalatinsk, timber and fish from the lower Ob. The population is almost stationary (20,130 in 1883, as against 15,500 in 1839 and 15,200 in 1772). Some 12 miles to the south-east are the ruins of the “ fort of Kutchum,”—the seat of the capital of Siberia, Isker, before the Russian conquest.

Tobolsk was founded in 1587 by 500 Cossacks who left Tyumefi under Tchulkoff, and built a wooden fort at the mouth of the Old Tobot. During the next fifteen years several other forts were erected on the territory now occupied by Tobolsk. The Ostiaks and Samoyedes soon submitted to Russian rule, but the Tartars and Bashkirs made frequent raids, so that a line of forts had to be built in the 17th century from Orenburg to Ishim. In 1752 a new line of forts was erected some 150 miles farther south, and since that time Russian settlers have been able quietly to colonize the most fertile parts to the south of Tobolsk.

TOCQUEVILLE, Atexis Henri Crartes Cutret, ComTe DE (1805-1859), was born at Verneuil on July 29, 1805. His family on the father’s side were of good descent, and distinguished both in the law and in arms, while his mother was the granddaughter of Malesherbes. Alexis de Tocqueville was brought up for the bar, or, rather, according to the division of that profession in France, for the bench, and became an assistant magistrate in 1830. A year later he obtained from the Government of J uly a mission to examine prisons and penitentiaries in America, and proceeded thither with his lifelong friend Gustave de Beaumont. He returned in somewhat less than two years, and published a report on the subject of his mission, but the real result of his tour was the famous De la Démocratie en Amérique, which

appeared in 1835, and very soon made his reputation. It was at once caught up by influential members of the Liberal party in England, which country Tocqueville soon after visited, and where he married an Englishwoman. Returning to France, and beginning life as a country gentleman at Tocqueville, he thought to carry out the English ideal completely by standing for the chamber of deputies. But, with a scruple which illus- trated his character, he refused Government nomination from Molé, and was defeated. Later he was successful, and sat for several years both before and after the revolu- tion of February, becoming in 1849 vice-president of the assembly, and for a few months minister of foreign affairs. He was a warm supporter of the Roman expedition, but an equally warm opponent of Louis Napoleon, and after being one of the deputies who were arrested at the coup @état he retired from public life. Twenty years after his first, he produced another book, De l'Ancien Régime, which almost, if not quite, equalled its success. His health was never very strong, and in 1858 he broke a blood-vessel. He was ordered to the south, and, taking up his residence at Cannes, died there on the 16th of April 1859. Tle had published some minor pieces during his lifetime, and his complete works, including much un- published correspondence, were produced after his death in uniform shape by De Beaumont.

During the last twenty ycars of his life, and for perhaps half that time after his death, Toequeville had an inercasing European fame, which for the last ten or fifteen years has been stationary if not diminishing. Both phenomena are susceptible of explanation. Although he has been accused by some of his own countrymen of having "le style triste," his manner, which is partly imitated from Montesquieu, has considerable charm; and he was the first and has remained the chicf writer to put the orthodox liberal ideas which governed European politics during the first half or two- thirds of the 19th century into an orderly and attractive shape. He was, moreover, as has been said, much taken up by influen- tial persons in England,—Senior, John Stuart Mill, and others, — and he had the great advantage of writing absolutely the first book of reasoned politics on the facts of demoeratic government as observed in America. Besides all this he was, if not an entircly impartial writcr, neither a fanatical devotee of democracy nor a fanatical opponent of it. All this gave him a very great advantage

which he has not yet wholly lost. “At the same timc he had defects which were certain to make themselves felt as time went on, even

—

TO D—

without the altcration of the centre of liberal opinion which has taken place of late years. The chief of these was a certain weakness which can hardly be described in English by any word morc dig- nified than the familiar term “‘ priggishness.” His correspondence with Molé above alluded to is an instance of this, and it was also reflected on in various epigrams by countrymen and contemporaries ; one of these accuses him of having unluckily “ begun to think before he had begun to learn,” while another, with more real than apparent inconsistency, declares that he ‘‘avait l’air de savoir de toute éternité ce qwil venait d’apprendre.” His book on America, though undoubtedly a very remarkable piece of political deduction, has the drawback of proceeding on very insufficient premisses and of trying to be too systematic. His book on the Ancien Régime is also want- ing in solid information, and commits the great error of assuming rather than proving that the Revolution of 1789 was a proceed- ing of unmixed good, which delivered France from a state (not of unmixed evil, for Tocqueville was too careful a student to imagine that, but) of cvil exclusively caused by the existence of monarchical and aristocratic institutions. In fact, the fault of both books is that their author is not a practical politician, a fault which is constantly illustrated and exhibited in his correspondence. He appears both in reading history and in conducting actual political business (of which, as has been seen, he had some experience) to have been constantly surprised and disgusted that men and nations did not behave as he expected them to behave. This excess of the deductive spirit explains at once both the merits and the defects of his two great works, which will probably remain to some extent political classics, thongh they are less and less likely to be used as practical guides.

TODAS. See Niterr1 Hits, vol. xvii. p. 509.

TODLEBEN, or TorLesEn, EpuarpD Ivanovicx (1818- 1884), Russian general, was born at Mittau, in Courland, on May 20, 1818. His parents,

who seem to have been of German descent, were of the mercantile class, and he him- self was intended for commerce, but a strong instinct led him to seek the career of a military engineer. He entered the school of engineers at St Petersburg in 1835, and passed from that into the army in 1838. In 1847 and the two following years he was employed, as captain of engineers, in the campaigns against Schamyl in the Caucasus, where he directed the siege operations against the principal mountain fortresses. On the outbreak of war between Russia and the Porte in 1853, he was placed at the head of the staff of General Schilder-Schuldner, by whom Silistria was besieged. This general being wounded, Todleben acted in his place until the siege was raised. He was then transferred to the Crimea. Sebastopol, while strongly fortified toward the sea, was almost unprotected on the land side. Todleben, though still only of colonel's rank, became the animating genius of the defence. By his advice the fleet was sunk, in order to blockade the mouth of the harbour, and the de- ficiency of fortifications on the land side was made good before the allies could take advantage of it. The con- struction of earthworks and redoubts was carried on with extreme rapidity, and to these was transferred, in great part, the artillery that had belonged to the fleet. In what- ever direction the besiegers drew their lines, there Todleben met them with counterworks, until, with the arrival of heavy Russian reinforcements, the besiegers almost became the besieged. It was in these improvised operations by means of earthworks that Todleben's peculiar power and originality showed itself; he was not a great military leader in the wider sense, nor was he the creator of a great permanent system of defence like Vauban. But for the special problems of Russian warfare, both in 1854 and at a later epoch, he was exactly the man wanted. Until June 1855 he conducted the operations of defence at Sebastopol in person ; he was then wounded in the foot, and at the operations which immediately preceded the fall of the fortress he was not present. When he recovered from his wounds he was employed in strengthening the fortifications at the mouth of the Dnieper, and also those of Cronstadt. In 1856 he visited England, where his merits were well understood. In 1860 he was appointed assistant to the grand-duke Nicholas, and he became

subsequently chief of the department of engineers. For reasons which are not known he was given no command when war with Turkey began in 1877. It was not until the disasters before Plevna had heaped discredit upon the incompetent leaders of the Russian army that the soldier of Sebastopol was called to the front. Todleben saw that Plevna could not be taken by assault, and that it would be necessary to reduce it by drawing works round Osman Pasha, and cutting him off from communication with the other Turkish commanders. In due time Plevna fell. Todleben then undertook the siege of the Bulgarian for- tresses. After the conclusion of preliminaries of peace, he was placed in command of the whole Russian army, and became responsible for the government and administra- tion of the occupied districts. In the discharge of these duties he is said to have distinguished hiniself by his combined firmness and good temper in dealing both with Turkish authorities and with the native population. He received the highest military honours and commands when the war was over, and became governor of Odessa. But his health was broken; and after much suffering he died at a German watering-place in June 1884. He was buried with great solemnity at Sebastopol.

TODMORDEN, a market-town of England, partly in Lancashire but chiefly in the West Riding of Yorkshire, stands on the Calder, on the Rochdale Canal, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 13 miles west of Halifax, 9 north of Rochdale, and 2074 north-north-west of London. It lies in three valleys amidst scenery originally romantic, and still in part retaining that characteristic. The town- hall (1875) bridges the counties boundary, the Calder, enabling the magistrates to exercise jurisdiction in both counties. Of the other buildings, the Unitarian church, the market-hall, the free endowed school, and the Unita- rian free school may be mentioned. A bronze statue has been erected to John Fielden, to whose energy in develop- ing the cotton manufacture the town owes much of its prosperity. The staple industry is the spinning and weav- ing of cotton, and there are also foundries and machine- works. The population of the township of Todmorden and Walsden (area 7007 acres) in 1871 was 9333, and in 1881 it was 9237. In addition to this (situated wholly in Yorkshire), the urban sanitary district includes parts of Langfield and Stansfield in Yorkshire, and of Cliviger in Lancashire, the total area being 15,690 acres, with a population in 1871 of 21,764, and in 1881 of 23,862.

As early as the reign of Edward III. Todmorden was in the possession of the Radcliffes, a branch of the Radcliffes of Radcliffe Tower, but it was sold by them about the close of the 17th century. Todmorden Hall is an interesting old building of various dates.

TODY, Pennant's rendering (Gen. Burds, pp. 19, 61) through the French Zodier of Brisson (Ornithologie, iv. p. 528) of the somewhat obscure Latin word Todus,! not unhappily applied in 1756 by Patrick Browne (Civ. and Nat. Hist. Jamaica, p. 476) to a little bird remarkable for its slender legs and small feet, the "Green Sparrow" or (ee ee De ee

1 In Forcellini's Lexicon (ed. De Vit, 1875) we find "Todus genus parvissime avis tibias habeus perexiguas." Ducange in his Glossa- rium quotes from Festus, an ancient grammarian, "Toda est avis que non habet ossa in tibiis; quare semper est in motu, unde Todius (al. Todinus) dicitur ille qui velociter todet et movetur ad modum tode, et todere, moveri et tremere ad modum todx." The evidence that such a substantive as Todus or Toda existed seems to rest on the adjectival derivative found in a fragment of a lost play (Syrus) by Plautus, cited by this same Festus. It stands "cum extritis [ewtortis] talis, cum todillis [¢odinis] crusculis"; but the passage is held by scholars to be corrupt. Among naturalists Gesner in 1555 gave currency (Hist. Animalium, iii. p. 719) to the word as a substantive, and it is found in Levins's Manipulus Vocabulorum of 1570 (ed. Wheatley, 1867, col. 225) as the equivalent of the English " Titmouse." Ducange allows the existence of the adjective todinus. Stephanus suggests that ¢odi comes from ru7@oi, but his view is not accepted. The verb todere may perhaps be Englished to "toddle"!

"Green Humming-Bird" of Sloane (Voyage, ii. p. 306). The name, having been taken up by Brisson (loc. cit.) in 1760, was adopted by Linnzeus, and has since been recog- nized by ornithologists as that of a valid genus, though many species have been referred to it which are now known to have no affinity to the type, the Zodus viridis of Jamaica, and accordingly have since been removed from it. The genus Zodus was at one time placed among the Musci- capidex (cf. FiycaTcHER, vol. ix. p. 351); but Dr Murie's investigations (Proc. Zool. Society, 1872, pp. 664-689, pl. lv.) have

conclusively proved that it is not Passerine, and is nearly allied to the Momotide (af. Mormot, vol. xvii. p. 3) and Alcedinide (cf. KINGFISHER, vol. xiv. p. 81), though it should be regarded as forming a distinct Family Todidex, peculiar to the Greater Antilles, each of which islands has its own species, all of small size, the largest not exceeding four inches and a half in length.

Of the species already named, 7'. viridis, Mr Gosse (B. Jamaica, pp. 72-80) gives an interesting aceount, "Always conspicuous

from its bright grass-green coat and crimson-velvet gorget, it is still a very tame bird; yet this secms rather the tameness of

Be

Tody (Todus viridis). (After Gosse.) indifference than of confidence; it will allow a person to approach very near, and, if disturbed, alight on another twig a few yards distant . . . . commonly it is seen sitting patiently on a twig, with the head drawn in, the beak pointing upwards, the loose plumage puffed out, when it appears much larger than it is. It certainly has an air of stupidity when thus seen. But this abstraction js more apparent than real; if we watch it, we shall see that the odd- looking grey eyes are glancing hither and thither, and that ever and anon the bird sallies out upon a short feeble flight, snaps at something in the air, and returns to his twig to swallow it." Mr Gosse goes on to describe the engaging habits of one that he for a short time kept in captivity, which, when turned into a room, immediately began catching all the insccts it could, at the rate of about one a minute. The birds of this Family also shew their affinity to the Kingfishers, Motmots, and Bee-caters by burrowing holes in the ground! in which to make their nest, and therein laying eggs with a white translucent shell. The sexes differ little in plumage.

All the four species of Z’odus, as now restricted, present a general similarity of appearance, and, it may be pre- sumed, possess very similar habits. The genus has been monographed by Mr Sharpe (Jbis, 1874, pp. 344-355) ; but he was unfortunately misled by an exceptionally bright- eee Se et oe ee oe ee

1 This habit and their green colour has given them the French name of Perroquet or Todier de terre, by which they have been distinguished from other species wrongly assigned to the genus by some systematists 3 and, if we may believe certain French travellers, they must in former

days have inhabited some of the Lesser Antilles; but that is hardly probable.

coloured specimen to add a fifth and bad species to those that exist —and even these, by some ornithologists, might be regarded as geographical races. The Cuban form is T. multicolor; that of Hispaniola is 7. subulatus or domi- nicensis; and that of Porto Rico, originally named in error 7’. mexicanus, has since been called hypochondriacus. Apart from their structural peculiarities, one of the chief points of interest attaching to the Z’odidz is their limitation, not only to the Antillean Sub-region, but, as is now believed, to its greater islands. (A. N.)

TOGA. See Costume, vol. vi. p. 456.

TOGO-LAND, one of the portions of the African con- tinent under the protection of the German empire. It forms part of the territory on the west coast formerly dis- tinguished as the Slave Coast, and is bounded on the E. by Little Popo, on the 8,W. by the British Gold Coast Colony, and on the N.W. by the still independent territory of the Anlo tribes. The coast-line is only 22 miles in length, and with an area of about 500 square miles Togo-land is estimated to have a population of 40,000 souls. The great physical feature of the country is the Togo, Hakko, or Avon lagoon, which is cut off from the ocean by the narrow belt of sandy soil on which are situated Bagida, Porto Seguro, and Bay. The town of Togo lies on the east side of the Togo lagoon, where it extends eastward to Little Popo Lake. The lagoon

is fed by a stream from the north, the Haho or Hakko, first discovered by John Duncan in 1846.

See Hugo Zoller, Togoland; Petermann's Mittheilungen (1886) ; and Scott. Geogr. Mag. (1886), all of which give maps.

TOKAT, a decayed provincial town of Turkey, in the vilayet of Sivas, and capital of the upper basin of the Iris (Yeschil Irmak), is a poorly-built place of about 10,000 inhabitants, in a hot, narrow valley, dominated by the ruins of a Byzantine castle, and surrounded by gardens watered by the Iris. It was once an important commercial station, and has still copper foundries. Six miles up the valley are the ruins of the Pontic Comana (g.v.).

TOKAY, or Toxas, a small town in the county of Zemplén, in the north-east of Hungary, at the influx of the Bodrog into the Tisza, in 48° 7' N. lat., 21° 4' E. long. The slopes of the adjacent mountains of Hegyallya, which are of volcanic origin, produce excellent wine, several kinds of which are of perhaps the best, sweetest, and strongest quality in the world. Of these, however, none or hardly any come into the market, the wine usually sold under the name of Tokay not being a natural wine, and often not coming from the district at all. Tokay, along with about twenty-five neighbouring villages, pro- duces annually an average of 2,200,000 gallons. The vine culture has been greatly improved of late years by a company in Budapest. The timber trade, fishing, and export of fruits are also considerable. The population was 4479 in 1880.

TOKIO, formerly called YEpo, the present capital of the empire of Japan, is situated in 35° 41' N. lat. and 139° 46' E. long., at the head of the bay of the same name, on the south-east coast of Hondo (mainland), the largest of the group of Japanese islands. It is connected with the seaport of Yokohama by a railway 18 miles in length. The bay of Tokio is shallow, and therefore not well suited for the navigation of large vessels. The wide river Sumida, also called Okawa ("great river") near its mouth, runs through the town. For administrative pur- poses Tokio proper is divided into fifteen kw (districts), of which thirteen lie to the west and two to the east of the Sumida. Each ku is presided over by an official appointed by the Government, called the ku-chio (chief of the ku), and an assembly (Ku-Kwai) for local administrative purposes is elected every four years by the inhabitants. These ku and

six gun (suburban districts) collectively form the Tokio-Fu, and are under the general superintendence of the fu-chaji (governor). Matters affecting the interests of the whole fu are discussed by an assembly (Fu-K wai) composed of repre- sentatives from all the kuand gun. Order is maintained by a well-organized body of police (3648 men in 1885) under the command of a keishisokan (chief commissioner), who, like the fu-chiji, is responsible to the central Government. Since the establishment of this system crime has very materially decreased. There is also a fire brigade of 2000 men, which is connected with the police system, and renders effective service in checking the spread of the fires to which the town is peculiarly liable. Buildings of brick and stone have lately been erected in many parts of the town. The fifteen ku which form Tokio proper cover an area of 4°01 square ri, and the six gun 27°94 square ri, the whole fu thus extending to about 32 square ri (about 190 square miles). The greater part of the town is flat, particularly near the Sumida, and is intersected by numerous moats and canals, which, with the bridges cross- ing them, form a distinctive feature. There are hills vary- ing in height from 50 to 100 feet in the six districts of

pom WS, & 8

, Ss Bhissquehi2

K Sat i A eo Sehagyias x, = “ 2) Harb i %/ b . was eae Lama> vat i

s { ; eet a fe “hg 3 Saratogi: PE

wenarann,

British Miles \ AI ea ao a EER,

Environs of Tokio.

Hongo, Koishikawa, Ushigome, Yotsuya, Akasaka, Azabu, and in part of Shiba. The numerous residences of the old daimios were the chief characteristics of the town, especi- ally in the Kéjimachi-ku. Many of these have been de- molished and Government offices erected on their sites ;

some have given place to new streets and houses ; others, having survived the downfall of the shogunate, still remain surrounded by large gardens, which are celebrated for their elaborate rock-work, artificial lakes, and magnificent trees. Nearly in the centre of the Kéjimachi-ku, on an eminence, surrounded by moats, stood the residence of the shoguns, which was burnt down in 1872. An imperial palace is now in course of construction on this site. Outer moats connected with those already mentioned enclose the whole K6jimachi-ku and a greater portion of Kanda-ku; one of the moats terminates at the Sumida. The Nihonbashi, Kiobashi, and Kanda-ku, through which the O-dori (main street) passes, are the business quarters of the town. The Nihonbashi (Bridge of Japan), in the ku of the same name, also in the O-dori, is the centre from which all distances are calculated. Nearly all the principal buildings of the city—such as the Gwaimushé (Foreign Office), the Nai- inushé (Home Office), the Okurashé (Ministry of Finance), the Monbushé (Ministry of Education), and other Govern- ment offices, &c.—are situated in those four ku. Among the parks, those of Shiba and Uyeno rank first in size and beauty, the latter containing a large sheet of water. In

1868, when the imperial army entered the city, a body of men called the shogitai, loyal to the cause of Tokugawa, here made a last stand, and during the fighting the mag- nificent temple of Téyesau, on the hills of Uyeno, was burnt down. This park, as also the Mukojima (the em- bankment of the Sumida), and the Asukayama park, which is at some distance north-west of Uyeno, are celebrated for their sakura trees (species of cherry), which, when in full bloom, attract crowds of all classes. The famous temple of Kwannon (goddess of mercy) is in the Asakusa park, in which a continual fair is held, with the usual ac- companiments of booths, shows, tea-houses, &c. The dis- tricts of Fukagawa and Honjé lie on the east bank of the river, and are connected with the rest of the town by five wooden bridges of considerable length; they are inter- sected by numerous canals, and the streets there are regu- larly laid out. The means of communication are imperfect ; the streets of Tokio are in general irregular, and many are so narrow that they are unsuitable for carriages. The jinrvkisha, a kind of chaise drawn by one or in some cases by two or more men, supplies their

place to a great extent. The introduction of tramways in some parts of the town has had the good effect of diminishing the number of second-rate carriages drawn by miserable horses.

There are no reliable data as to the population of Yedo during the shogunate (see below). Owing to the influx caused by the periodical visits of the daimios with their numerous attendants, it probably exceeded one million during the early part of the present century. At the abolition of the shogunate there was a marked decrease, but the returns of recent years (1,121,560 in 1881; 1,173,603 in 1883; 1,300,073 in 1885) indicate a rapid increase. Of the 1,519,781 who constituted the popula- tion in 1886, 1,211,357 are to be classed as belonging to the town proper, and 308,424 to the six suburban districts. The sanitary condition of the city leaves much to be desired, but extensive improvements are now being carried out. The general health, however, is good, and the enforcement of vaccination has virtually stamped out the scourge of small-pox. The deaths from cholera are occasionally very numerous, especially among the lower classes.

A well-organized system of education exists, under the supervision of the ministry of education. In 1885 there were in the Tokio-Fu 658 public and private elementary schools, with 1563 teachers,—the cost of maintaining public schools being 145,152 yen (Japanese dollars). In the same year the boys and girls of school age numbered 172,653, of whom 77,001 attended schools recognized by the Government. Kindergartens on the European system have been introduced. There are also the shihangakko (normal schools), the chugakko (middle schools), and schools, both Government and private, for special branches. In the district of Hongo is the imperial university, sub- divided into the four branches of law, science, medicine, and literature. Many of the students attain a high degree of proficiency.

No mention is made of Tokio in Japanese history before the end of the 12th century. It appears to have assumed no importance till about 1457, when Ota Dokwan, a general in the service of Uyesugi Sadamasa, governor of Kamakura, bnilt a castle there. About thirty years later the town fell into the hands of H6jé of Odawara, and subsequently, on his overthrow by Hideyoshi and Iyeyasu, the castle was granted to the latter, who was the founder of the shogun house of Tokugawa. In 1590 Iyeyasu made his

formal entry into the castle of Yedo, the extent of which he greatly enlarged. From this date the real importance of Yedo commenced. The family of the Tokugawas furnished the shoguns (or tycoons) of Japan for nearly three hundred years, and these resided during that period at Yedo. Under them the town was vastly extended, land was reclaimed from the bay, canals were constructed, and a water supply introduced. The shoguns compelled the daimios (feudal lords) to reside at Yedo with their numerous retinues dur-

ing a considerable portion of their lives, and thus the prosperity of the town rapidly increased. At the restoration of the supreme authority of the emperor in 1868 the shogunate was abolished, and the population of Yedo specdily decreased. A fresh vitality was again imparted by the transfer of the court from Kioto, and the town then received its present name Tokio (eastern capital). It has since been the seat of the imperial Government, and may be considered the centre of the political, commercial, and literary activity of Japan. It is the channel through which the stream of European civilization pours into the country, and all recent pro- gress has there taken its rise. (R. 8S. L.)

TOLAND, Joun (1670-1722), or Janus Junius, as his sponsors are said to have named him, usually described as a chief leader of the English deists, was born November 30, 1670 or 1671, in the north of Ireland, near Londonderry. He was the son, perhaps illegiti- mate, of Catholic parents, and was brought up in their faith. But in his fifteenth year he became a zealous Protestant, and in 1687 he passed from the school at Redcastle to Glasgow university, recommended by the magistrates of Redcastle “for his affection to the Protest- ant religion.” Thus early in life he became “ accustomed to examination and inquiry, and was taught not to cap- tivate his understanding to any man or society.” After three years at Glasgow he entered the university of Edin- burgh, taking his M.A. degree there June 30, 1690. He then spent a short time in some Protestant families in England, and with their assistance went to Leyden univer- sity, to qualify him for entering the Dissenting ministry. He spent about two years in Leyden, studying ecclesi- astical history especially under the famous scholar Fred-

erick Spanheim. At the expiration of that time he took up his abode, January 7, 1694, at Oxford, having good introductions to Creech, Mill, and others. Here he made large use of the Bodleian Library, and soon acquired the reputation of being "'a man of fine parts, of great learn- ing, and of little religion," though there is no evidence to show that the last distinction was justly his due. His letters show that he then claimed to be a decided Christian, and that he was too orthodox to be classed with the Arians or the Socinians. At the same time the characteristic freedom and originality of his mind were displayed by his anticipation of subsequent doubts of the integrity of the book of Job, and the separation of the historical prologue and the speeches of Elihu from the original poem. While at Oxford he commenced the book which called him into notoriety, and became one of the standard " deistical writings"—his Christianity not Mys- terious.1 The book gave great offence, and several replies to it were immediately published. The author was pro- secuted by the grand jury of Middlesex the year of its publication ; and, when he attempted to settle in Dublin at the beginning of 1697, he was greeted with dangerous denunciations from the pulpits and elsewhere. He was soon prosecuted before the court of King's Bench, and on September 9th his book was condemned by the Irish parliament to be burned and its author to be arrested. He escaped the latter part of the sentence by flight to England. The title and the philosophical principles of Toland's book were singularly akin to those of Locke's famous work, Zhe Reasonableness of Christianity, pub- lished the year before ; and Locke's opponents seized the opportunity of fathering upon the philosopher the doc- trines of his more heterodox and less guarded disciple. Thus Toland's work became the occasion of the celebrated controversy between Stillingfleet and Locke, in which Locke takes pains to show the difference between his posi- tion and Toland's. Toland's next work of importance was

1 The first edition, London, 1696, was anonymous; the second, published the same year, bore on the title-page his name, and received a preface and some slight alterations ; and the third appeared in 1702 with an appended Apology for Mr Toland.

his Life of Milton (1698), in which, in connexion with his exposure of the fictitious authorship of the Hzkon Basilike, he found occasion to make reflexions on “the numerous supposititious pieces under the name of Christ and His apostles and other great persons.” This provoked the charge that he had called in question the genuineness of the New Testament writings, and he replied in his Amyntor, or a Defence of Milton’s Life (1699), to which he added a remarkable list of what are now called apocryphal New Testament writings. In his remarks he really opened up the great question of the history of the canon, towards the examination of which Stephen Nye, Jeremiah Jones, and Nathanael Lardner made in reply to him the first valu- able contributions. The next year his Amyntor and Chris- tianity not Mysterious were under discussion in both Houses of Convocation, and the Upper House declined to proceed against the author. In 1701 Toland spent a few weeks at Hanover as secretary to the embassy of the earl of Macclesfield, and was received with favour by the electress Sophia in acknowledgment of his book Anglia Libera, a defence of the Hanoverian succession. On his return from the Continent he published a defence of himself, and of the bishops for not prosecuting him, Vindicius Liberius (1702), and several political pamphlets. The next year he visited Hanover and Berlin, and was again graciously received by the electress and her daughter Sophia Char- lotte, queen of Prussia. On his return to England (1704) he published Letters to Serena, and afterwards acknowledged that the queen of Prussia was intended by the pseudonym. In these letters he anticipated some of the speculations of modern materialism, The next year appeared his Account of Prussia and Hanover, of which Carlyle has made use in his Life of Frederick the Great. From 1707 to 1710 he is again on the Continent,—at Berlin, Hanover, Diissel- dorf, Vienna, Prague, and The Hague, with very varying fortunes, but generally of an adverse character. In 1709 he published Adetsidemon and Origines Judaice (The Hague), in which, amongst other things, he maintained that the Jews were originally Egyptians, and that the true Mosaic institutions perished with Moses. This work pro- voked a number of replies from Continental theologians. In 1710 he returned to England, living chiefly in London and latterly at Putney, loving the country and his books, and subsisting precariously upon the earnings of his pen and the benevolence of his patrons. His literary projects were numerous (see the incomplete list in Mosheim); and the nobler traits of his warm Irish nature appear in his projected history of the ancient Celtic

religion and his chivalrous advocacy of the naturalization of the Jews. The last of his theological works were Nazarenus, or Jewish, Gentile, and Mahometan Christianity (1718), and Tetra- dymus (1720), a collection of essays on various subjects, in the first of which, ‘‘ Hodegus,” he set the example subsequently followed by Reimarus and the rationalistic school in Germany, of interpreting the Old Testament miracles by the naturalistic method, maintaining, for in- stance, that the pillar of cloud and of fire of Exodus was a transported signal-fire. His last and most offensive book was his Pantheisticon (Cosmopoli, 1720). He died May 11, 1722, as he had lived, in great poverty, in the midst of his books, with his pen in his hand, and left behind him a characteristic Latin epitaph, in which he could justly claim to have been “veritatis propugnator, libertatis assertor.”

Toland is generally classed with the deists, but at the time when he wrote his first book, Christianity not Mysterious, he was decidedly opposed to deism, nor does Leland deal with that work as an exposition of deistical views. The design of the work was to show, by an appeal mainly to the tribunal of Scripture, that there are no facts or doctrines of the ‘‘ gospel,” or ‘“‘the Scriptures,” or ‘Christian revelation” which, when revealed, are not perfectly

plain, intelligible, and reasonable, being neither contrary to reason nor incomprehensible to it. The work undoubtedly aimed a blow at some of the dogmas of later Christian times, but it claimed to be “a vindication of God’s revealed will against the most unjust imputations” which occasioned ‘‘so many deists and atheists.” Toland’s line of argument is to show that the supposition of the doctrines of the gospel being repugnant to clear and distinct ideas and common notions leads into absurdities and inevitable scep- ticism; that the proof of the Divinity of Scripture is its self-evidencing power; that, though men are dependent on Divine revelation for the knowledge of the most important truths, the truths must themselves be plain and intelligible when revealed ; that all the doctrines, precepts, and miracles of the New Testament are perfectly intelligible and plain; that, though reason is dis- ordered in the case of many men, the disorder is not in the faculty itself but in the use made of it; that in the New Testament

“mystery” never means anything inconceivable in itself, but things naturally intelligible enough, which are either so veiled by figurative words or rites, or so lodged in God’s sole knowledge and decree, that they could not be discerned without special revela- tion; that no miracle of the gospel is contrary to reason, for they were all produced according to the laws of nature, though above its ordinary operations, which were therefore supernaturally assisted ; that mysteries were first introduced into Christianity by the early admission into the church of Levitical ceremonics and heathen rites and mysteries, and especially by mixing up heathen philo- sophy with the simple religion of Christ. The work was intended to be the first of three discourses, in the second of which he was to attempt a particular and rational explanation of the reputed mysteries of the gospel, and in the third a demonstration of the verity of Divine revelation against atheists and all encmies of re- vealed religion, But, like so mauy other of his numerous projects, this failed of execution. After his Christianity not Mysterious and his Amyntor, Toland’s Nazarenus was of chief importance, as calling attention to the right of the Ebionites to a place in the early church, thongh it altogether failed to establish his main argument or to put the question in the true light. His Pantheis- ticon, sive Formula celebrandx Sodalitatis Socratice, of which he printed a few copies for private circulation only, gave great offence as a sort of liturgic service made up of passages from heathen authors, in imitation of the Church of England liturgy. The title also was in those days alarming, and still more so the mystery which the author threw round the question how far such societies of pantheists actually existed. Poor Toland had been outlawed by the churches of his day, and took a most imprudent delight in alarming and mystifying his persecutors. This and all his later works must be read from the point of view first suggested by Herder: ‘‘ Who can refuse to see in Toland the man of wide reading and of clear intellect, and the earnest inquirer, although, as em- bittered by persecutions, with every fresh book he dipped his pen in a more biting acid?”

See Mosheim’s Vindicia# Antique Christianorum Discipline, 1st ed., 1720, 2d ed., 1722 (the life of Toland prefixed to the 2d edition of this essay gives still the best and most learned account we have of his life and writings); ‘‘ Memoirs of the Life and Writings of Mr John Toland,” by Des Maizeaux, prefixed to The Miscellaneous Works of Mr John Toland, in 2 vols.,

London, 1747; Leland’s View of the Principal Deistical Writers; Herder’’s Adrastea; Lechler’s Geschichte des englischen Detsmus ; Isaae Disraeli’s Calamities of Authors; Theological Review, November 1864; Hunt’s article in Contemporary Review, vol. viii., and his Reli- gious Thought in England; Leslie Stephen’s History of English Thought in High- teenth Century; Cairns’s Cunningham Lectures for 1880, On Toland’s relation to the subsequent Tiibingen school, as presented in his Wazarenus, see Theological

Review, Oct., 1877; and on his relation to materialism, F, A. Lange’s Geschichte des Materialismus. (J. F. S.)

TOLEDO, a province of Spain, in New Castile, is bounded on the N. by Avila and Madrid, on the KE, by Cuenca, on the S. by Ciudad Real, and on the W. by Caceres, and has an area of 5620 square miles. The surface is throughout lofty, and in a great part of its extent mountainous. ‘Towards the centre, indeed, there are extensive plains or tablelands, but the whole of the south and east is occupied by the Montes de Toledo, which separate the waters of the Tagus on the north from those of the Guadiana on the south. These mountains are of no great height; and they were once densely covered with forests, whicll have now been almost entirely cut down, although there are still woods and groves of considerable extent on their lower slopes. Branches of this chain enclose the province on the east and west, and part of the range that stretches north of the Tagus approaches its north-western frontier. Toledo is well watered by the Tagus and its affluents, —the Tajuna, Jarama, Guadar- rama, Alberche, and Tietar on the north, and the Algodor, Torcon, Pusa, Sangrera, and Cedron on the south, The

Guadiana forms for a short distance the south-western frontier, and its tributary the Giguela waters the eastern part of the province. The country is rich in minerals, as yet almost entirely unworked, containing veins of gold, silver, lead, iron, quicksilver, copper, and tin. Coal, alum, cinnabar, &c., are also found. The soil produces corn, pulse, potatoes, oil, wine, flax, oranges, lemons, chestnuts, and melons in fair abundance, but the trade in agricultural products is almost confined to the province itself. The number of sheep and goats is few, of horses and mules still less; while the only oxen

are those used in agri- culture. Bees and silkworms are kept in considerable number. Manufactures once flourished, but are now in a very low state,— silk and woollen cloth, earthenware, soap, oil, chocolates, wine, rough spirit (aguardzente), guitar strings, and arms being almost the only articles made. The province is traversed by three lines of railway,— that of Madrid-Seville-Cadiz in the east, Madrid-Toledo- Ciudad Real through the centre, and Madrid-Caceres- Lisbon in the north. There are 12 partidos judiciales and 206 ayuntamientos; and three senators with eight deputies are returned to the cortes. The total population in 1885 was 332,000; the only towns with a population exceeding 10,000 are Toledo (20,251) and Talavera de la Reina (11,986). Some of the most brilliant fighting of the Peninsular War took place in Toledo and the neigh- bouring province of Caceres, the battle of Talavera de la Reina being fought on the 27th and 28th of July 1809. TOLEDO, the capital of the above province, and once of the whole of Spain, stands upon a circle of seven hills, 2400 feet above the sea, and washed on three sides by the Tagus. It is 37 miles west-south-west of Madrid. The river is spanned by two fine stone bridges,—the Alcantara, a Moorish bridge of a single arch, giving entrance to the city from the east, and the other, that of San Martin, from the west, while between them the river makes a sweep southwards. The place is enclosed on the land side by two walls, still in fairly perfect condition,—the inner one being built by King Wamba in the 7th century, the outer by Alfonso VI. in 1109. The gates are numerous and well preserved, the most noteworthy being the famous Puerta del Sol, the Puerta Visagra, and the Cambron. Some Roman remains (a circus, é&c.) lie without the walls, on the plain to the north-west. The appearance of Toledo from a distance is imposing in the extreme, from its noble situation and the terraced lines of its buildings; but upon a nearer approach it reveals itself as dull and decayed enough, with little or no traffic in the streets, and a strange silence brooding over all its ways, The houses are large, massive, and gloomy, generally Moorish in style, of the 12th, 13th, and 14th centuries, with a great central patio (courtyard), and yielding abundant traces of Arabic decoration. The principal public square is the Zocodover. It forms the favourite promenade, and from it the one fairly wide street of the city leads to the cathedral. The latter is the glory of Toledo, and one of the finest monuments of art in Spain. Built upon the site of an ancient mosque, and commenced in 1227, it was completed in 1492 ; and, though sacked over and over again,—finally by the French under La

Houssaye in 1808,—it is still, with the excep- tion, perhaps, of the cathedral of Seville, the richest and most magnificent foundation in the Peninsula. The ex- terior is unfortunately hidden to a great extent by mean surrounding buildings, but the fine western facade, with its two towers, one rising 325 feet, is effective. The interior is somewhat dwarfed in appearance by the immense width. It is 404 feet long by 204 feet broad, and is divided by 84 pillars into five naves, with central lantern and choir, and a complete series of side chapels. Most of these latter are late additions, of the 15th and 16th

centuries, and are very magnificent in detail. The 16th- century stained-glass windows, chiefly of Flemish work, are superb ; and the treasury, reliquaries, and library, not- withstanding their repeated despoilings, are not unworthy of the see which styles itself the “first of all the Spains.” In the Muzarabic chapel the ritual known by that name is still performed daily. Within the precincts of the cathedral are interred the archbishops and cardinals Tenorio, Fonseca, Mendoza, Ximenez, the great constable Alvaro de Luna, and a long array of kings and heroes. The archbishop is primate of Spain, and has for suffragans Coria, Cuenca, Siguenza, and Palencia. Besides the cathedral Toledo still possesses a great number of fine churches and other religious buildings, together with numerous Moorish and Jewish monuments. The most important church is the 15th-century florid Gothic San Juan de los Reyes, built by Ferdinand and Isabella. The best Moorish work is to be found in the old Jewish synagogues of Santa Maria la Blanca and El Transito, in the mosques of Cristo de la Luz and Las Tornerias, in some private houses, and in the later churches of San Roman, Santo Tomé, Santiago, and Santa Leocadia. The patio and staircase of the hospital of Santa Cruz pre- sent some of the finest Renaissance work extant. Seen from afar, the Alcazar, or royal palace, is one of the most conspicuous features of the city. It stands upon a com- manding position overlooking the Tagus, and was origin- ally built by King Wamba, but has been repeatedly altered and pulled about. It was almost entirely rebuilt by Charles V. and Philip IL, under the architects Covarrubias and Herrera, and has lately been converted into a huge military academy. The city is provided with numerous elementary schools, a public library, museum, town-hall, and several large hospitals. The well-known manufactory of swords is about a mile to the

north-west, beyond the Cambron gate. It is in excellent order, and produces blades as perfect as ever, but is no longer of great im- portance, employing only about 120 hands.

Toledo existed in the time of the Romans, who conquered it in 193 B.c. They strengthened the fortifications, and built an aqueduct to supply the place with water. By the Goths, who captured the city in 467 a.p., these works were kept up and improved ; and, under the Moorish domination, from 714 to 1085, Toledo was second only to Cordova in rank and importance, with a population of 200,000 souls. Alfonso VI. of Castile and Leon recovered the stronghold in 1085; and under him and his succes- sors it continued to flourish until the permanent establishment of the court at Madrid gave a deathblow to its prosperity. The population now is no more than 20,000.

TOLEDO, a city of the United States, the county seat of Lucas county, Ohio, is situated in 41° 40’ N. lat. and 83° 33’ W. long., chiefly upon a peninsula between the Maumee on the south and the Ottawa upon the north, just above their points of discharge into Maumee Bay, and 5 miles from Lake Erie. A small part of it, for- merly known as Maumee City, lies south of the Maumee. Toledo includes an area of 21°5 square miles within its corporate limits. The bay and river form an excellent harbour and roadstead. The harbour is easily made and is well sheltered, and the bottom affords good holding ground. Besides being open to the navigation of the Great Lakes, Toledo is the terminus of the Miami and Erie Canal, connecting it with Cincinnati (184 miles distant). Seventeen railroad lines enter it, making it one of the principal railroad centres of the country. The site of Toledo and the surrounding country are very level, and only slightly elevated above Lake Erie. The soil is very productive, and is highly cultivated, being largely devoted to market gardening. There are three public parks, having a total area of 41 acres. The city is well sewered. Water is obtained by pumping. The city, which is divided into eight wards, had in 1880 a population of

50,137. The number is probably now (1887) not far from 65,000. In 1840, 1850, 1860, and 1870 respect- ively the population was returned at 1224, 3829, 13,768, and 31,584.

Besides its large commercial interests, as one of the principal ports upon the Great Lakes, and its importance as one of the leading railroad centres of the country, Toledo holds high rank as a manu- facturing city. The capital invested in this class of industries in 1880 exceeded $5,500,000, and the products were valued at double this sum. They employed nearly 7000 persons, and paid in wages over two and a quarter millions of dollars. These industries are very varicd in character, but consist largely in lumber manufactures, brewing, and iron and stccl manufactures.

The first settlement within what are now the corporate limits of Toledo was made, shortly after the war of 1812, upon the south bank of the Maumee. North of the river no settlements were attempted until 1832, when the villages of Port Lawrence and Vistula were commenced in what is now the heart of the city. In the following year they were united under the present name. The city was incorporated in 1837. In 1852 it was made the county seat, and in 1874 its corporate limits were considerably enlarged.

TOLL is a sum of money paid for the use and enjoy- ment of a privilege. In England it is now always or almost always a sum of money; but formerly tolls in kind were not unknown. An instance is afforded by the Act of 36 Geo. III. c. 85, substituting a money payment for tolls of corn in kind taken by millers, with an exception in favour of tolls taken by custom in soke mills. Such customary tolls, if any such now exist, are apparently the only examples remaining of tolls in kind. The Weights and Measures Act, 1878, enacts that all tolls are to be charged and collected according to imperial weights and measures.

The word toll, in its earliest use, appears to have signified a franchise enjoyed by lords of manors, and is defined by Glanvill as the liberty of buying and selling in one’s own land: ‘tol, quod nos vocamus theloneum, scilicet libertatem emendi et vendendi in terra sua.” The word then became used to denote duties payable to the crown, especially on wool, generally with an inseparable epithet indicative of unpopularity. It thus took the form of “maletote” or ‘‘malum tolnetum,’’! against which many early statutcs

were directed, from the Magna Carta of John till the final abandonment of the duty by Edward III. In modern English law toll is either an incident of a FRANCHISE (q.v.), as of a market or fair, or is independent of franchise. In the latter case it is claimed by prescription, as toll traverse or toll thorough, or is created by Act of Parliament, as in the case of turnpikes, railways, harbours, navigable rivers, and canals. Toll traverse is paid for passing over a private way, bridge, or ferry. No consideration need be proved. Toll thorough is paid for the use of a highway. In this case, if charged by a private person, some consideration, such as repair of the highway, must be shown, as such a toll is against common right. In one case, that of the Cornish custom of tin-bounding, the right to tin tolls may depend upon custom. At common law a toll must be reasonable. The same principle appears in various Acts of Parliament. The Statute of Westminster the First, 8 Edw. I. c. 31, inflicts a penalty for taking excessive toll. The Railway Clauses Consolidation Act, 1845, and most special Acts of railway companies provide, by what are known as “the Shaftesbury clauses,” for the equality of tolls, that is, that all persons and classes of goods shall under like circumstances be treated alike as to charges. A right of distress is incident to the right to impose tolls, but the distress cannot be sold unless an Act of Parliament expressly authorizes the sale. Tolls are rateable for the relief of the poor where they are appurtenant to land, but not where they are extrinsic profits not arising from the possession of land. Exemption from tolls may be claimed by the prerogative, by grant or prescription, or by Act of Parliament. The king pays no toll, and may grant to another exemption from toll. The exemptions by Act of Parliament mainly affect persons in the public service, clergy on their parochial duty, and persons going to or returning from their usual place of religious worship. Most of the exceptions from turnpike tolls will be found in 3 Geo. IV. ce. 126. Turnpike tolls, bridge money, and causeway niail were abolished in Scotland by the Roads and Bridges Act, 1878, as from the Ist June 1888. In England there has been no such general abolition, but the abolition of tolls has been facilitated by several recent Turnpike Acts, and their entire disappearance is only a question of time.

In the United States tolls are a subject for State legislation,

1 The same term was known in medieval Italy. Dante, in /nferno, xi. 36, alludes to “ tollette dannose.”’

except in a few instances in which Acts of Congress have dealt with tolls in rivers and harbours (see Reviscd Statutes, tit.]xiii.).

The question of tolls was at one time an important one in international law. Tolls were cxacted on certain straits and tidal rivers by virtue of the sovereignty of a particular state. Such tolls have mostly ceased or been redeemed. Notable instances were the Scheldt tolls and the Sound dues levied by Denmark. See NavicaTion LAws.

TOLUCA, or Totoccan, a city of Mexico, the capital of the state of Mexico, on the Mexican National Railway, 45 miles south-west from the federal capital. It lies on the west side of the Anahuac tableland, at the foot of Mount San Miguel de Tutucuitlalpillo, at an elevation of 8653 feet above the sea, being the highest town in the republic next to the mining station of Ameca-meca (which is 8800 feet). Toluca had in 1886 a population of about 12,000, and is usually described as a well-built flourishing town, with fine buildings and clean well-drained streets. But T. M. Brocklehurst, who visited it in 1880, gives an un- favourable impression of the place, which presented nothing attractive beyond the Portales, a fine arcade running round a large block of central buildings, with a number of good shops under the arches (Mexico To-day, p. 222). There is also a good theatre, and in the Plaza de los Martires a well-executed white marble monument to the patriot Miguel Hidalgo y Costilla. But the Carmen, Vera Cruz, and one or two other churches are dirty and tawdry, with- out presenting any striking architectural features. The city is traversed by a foul stream flowing at the bottom of a barranca or deep ravine, along whose banks are herded numerous swine in a half-wild state, which supply the hams and sausages for which the place is noted. Here also soap and wax candles are manufactured and supplied to the surrounding districts. In the south-west the Nevado de Toluca, an extinct snow-clad volcano with a flooded crater, rises to a height of 15,156 feet above sea-level.

Although Toluca appears to have been one of the earliest Toltec settlements in Anahuac, its foundation dating probably from the 6th century, it has preserved no remains of its ancient grandeur, nor have any monuments been discovered in the district in any way comparable to those of Cholula, Tula, Teotihuacan, and other ancient centres of Toltec culture. Aecording to M. Charnay, Toluca formed one of the chief starting points of the great migrations which, after the overthrow of the Toltec empire by the Chichimec irruption in the 11th century, moved in two parallel streams south- wards, converging at Copan and spreading their arts and industries over Chiapas, Yucatan, and Guatemala (Ancient Cities of the New World, 1887, p. 125).

TOMATO. See HorticuLTurs, vol. xii. p. 288.

TOMPA, Mrmdty (= Micaaer) (1817-1868), one of the best and tenderest Hungarian lyric poets, was born in 1817 at Rima-Szombat, in the county of Gémor, of very humble parentage, his father being village bootmaker. He studied law and theology in Saros-Patak, and subse- quently at Budapest ; but, feeling little inclination for the first-mentioned career, after many vicissitudes he, at the age of thirty, accepted the post of Protestant minister in Beje, a small village in his native county, whence, in two years, he removed to Kelemér, and four years later to Hanva, in the county of Borsod, where he remained till his death in 1868.

At the age of four-and-twenty Tompa published his first poems in the Athenxwm, which soon procured for him a high reputation. His first volume, Népregék és Népmonddk (‘‘Folk-Legends and Folk-Tales”), in 1846, met with great success, and the same may be said of the first volume of his ‘“‘ Poems” in 1847. In 1848 he took part in the war of independenee, acting as field ehaplain to the volunteers of his eounty and seeing several battles; but the unfortunate close of that heroic struggle sileneed his poetic vein for a considerable time, and, when in 1852 and 1853 he gave vent to his patriotic grief in some masterly allegories on the state of oppressed Hungary, he was twice arrested by the Austrian authori- ties. After being released he published his Virdgregék (‘‘ Legends of Flowers”), a collection of poems of the highest order, showing great imagination and love of nature, and displaying the loftiest

humanity and great meditative power. Soon after this he became oppressed with nielancholy and abandoned this braneh of poetry. Indeed from this time he produced comparatively little. He pub- lished three volumes of sermons, ‘‘ which,” says his biographer, Charles Szisz, Protestant bishop of Budapest, “are among the best in Hungarian literature, and will favourably compare with those of Robertson, Monod, or Parker.” His colleeted poetieal works, in six volumes, were published at Budapest in 1870, and again, in four volumes, in 1885.

TOMSK, a government of Western Siberia, extending from the Chinese frontier to 60° N. lat., is bounded by Tobolsk on the N.W., by Yeniseisk on the N.E., by the Chinese province of Khobdo on the 8.E., and by Semi-palatinsk on the 8.W. Its area, 329,040 square miles, is fully one and a half times that of France. The surface is most varied, including in the south-east the high alpine tracts of the Altai Mountains, with an elevated steppe which skirts these, and in the north-west and west the lowlands of the Irtish and the marshy tracts of the Ob.

The Altai Mountains, which cover within the limits of the Russian empire an area of 53,000 square miles, or three times that of the whole of Switzerland, although visited by many geologists, still remain very imperfectly known, even as regards their orography. The country has been mapped only along the rivers and the course of a few footpaths, and great confusion still prevails with reference to the directions of the different chains of the Altai and their mutual relations (compare Srperta). The best descrip- tions, however (including the most recent by M. Potanin),} indicate in that part of Asia the very same leading orograph- ical features that are seen in the Tian-Shan Mountains farther south, and in the West Sayan range farther north. A plateau with an average altitude of more than 4000 feet, watered by the tributaries of the upper Yenisei, all flowing in open valleys 3000 to 4000 feet above the sea, is known to rise in that part of north-western Mongolia which is drained by the upper Yenisei and Selenga. The surface of this plateau is diversified by ridges, and by depressions like that of the Ubsa-nor—a relic of what was formerly a much larger lake. A lofty mountain chain, which has its south-east foot on the plateau and its north-

west foot in the valley of the Us, fringes the plateau, and has all the characters of a border-ridge. The present writer has proposed to call this Erghik-shan. It runs from north-east to south-west along the Russo- Chinese frontier, and is pierced by a deep gorge through which flows the Yenisei. A belt, some 200 miles in width, of alpine tracts, made up of three or four chains parallel to the border ridge, fringes the outer border of the plateau, and fills up the Minusinsk region. The structure of the hilly tracts (watered by the Kemtchik) between the Yenisei and the Altai remains quite unknown, no scien- tific man or topographer having ever visited it. But the very same orographical features as those already described reappear in the Altai region. There is now no doubt that the backbone of the Altai is a huge and lofty border-ridge, the Sailughem, which includes the small alpine plateaus of Ukek, the upper Tchuya, and Juvlu-kul, and runs from south-west to north-east, being a continuation of the border-ridge of the West Sayan. Its flat dome-shaped summits rise to about 10,000 feet, and the small alpine plateaus just named range from 7800 to 8200 feet in elevation. It has a very steep slope towards the north- west, 7.e., towards the broad valleys of the upper Bukh- tarma and Tchuya, and a very gentle slope towards the south-east, and its south-eastern hillfoots are on the level of the plateau of Khobdo (from 4500 to 5000 feet). A broad alpine region spreads to the north-west of the border- ridge, but in the imperfect state of our knowledge it is

1 Jivopisnaya Rossiya, vol. xi.; Sketches of N. W. Mongolia, vols. i. and iii.; Addenda to Ritter’s Asia.

difficult to discriminate the real directions of its chains. Nevertheless, another lofty chain, containing the snow-clad Alps of the Katuii (Katunskiye Byetki) and those of the Tchuya, and running also from south-west to north-east, parallel to the Sailughem border-ridge, can be distin- guished in the labyrinth of confusedly scattered mountains seen on our present maps. It is one of the most pictur- esque chains of the region, and contains the Byelukha peak, estimated at 11,000 feet, and the Alas-tu, of nearly the same height. It is pierced, however, by so many rivers, which rise on the north-west edge of the plateau, and find their way to the lowlands by

a series of gorges, that its continuity could be easily overlooked. Farther to the north-east it joins, in the opinion of the present writer, the high chain on the left bank of the Kemtchik, which is continued by the picturesque Alps on the northern bank of the Us. A third system of mountain chains, also parallel to the above, can be distinguished in the succes- sion of the Terektinsk Mountains, those which are pierced by the Tchulyshman and those which follow the right bank of the Abakan ; while traces of a fourth plication of the rocks may be discovered in the Tigeritsk Mountains, those pierced by the Biya below Lake Teletskoye, and tlie Kuznetskiy Atatau, on the left bank of the Abakan. A number of smaller, much lower, and shorter chains faintly appear as outer walls of this extensive alpine region. As for the Great Altai, or Altain-Nauru, our knowledge of which has been greatly increased by the recent explora- tions of M. Potanin,! it may be regarded as a south-western border-ridge of the Khobdo plateau, with its steep slope facing towards the wide Dzungarian depression, or rather to the broad trench of the Ulungur. Its direction is nearly at right angles to the above, running from north- west to south-east, like the Tarbagatai Mountains (see TURKEsTAN), and it is continued farther to the south-east by the Irdyn-ula and Artsa-bogdo Mountains, which separ- ate the eastern Gobi from the Tarim depression. It is most probable that upheavals, having the same north- western direction (which, according to M. Mushketoff, are in Central Asia more recent than the north-eastern ones), have to a certain extent modified the old north-eastern chains of the Altai,’and complicated the chains of its alpine region. If so, the structure of the Altai would be very similar to that of the Turkestan mountains. A chain having a north-western direction—the Salair Mountains— shoots off from the main ranges of the Altai, between the Tom and the Tchumysh ; it is about 170 miles in length, with a width of nearly 60 miles, and contains the best silver-mines of the region, as also several gold-washings. Its upheaval belongs to a more recent epoch than that of the Sailughem ridge, and (like the mountains of Turkestan, having a north-west direction) it is due to dioritic rocks. In the Kuznetsk depression it is covered with deposits of the Lower and Upper Carboniferous, containing beds of coal. The Kuznetskiy Atatau, in which Humboldt saw one of his meridional upheavals, consists of a series of ridges running south-west to north-east, with further con- tinuations within South Yeniseisk.?

The alpine region of the Altai is most picturesque; most of its chains, rising over 8000 and 9000 feet, are snowclad, and a great glacier descends from the hollows under the Byelukha peak ; several othcr tess known glaciers occur in the different ‘‘ byetkis” (snowclad chains). A thick forest vegetation clothes the mountain stopes, while beautiful valleys, often of great length, such as that of the Bukhtarma (180 miles) or that of the Uimon and Koksu, offer on their fertile and well-sheltered floors most favourable conditions for agriculture. Several lakes are met with, some, like the Juvlu-kul

and Kendykty-kul on the small alpine plateaus, at heights where only the dwarf birch grows and the polar marmot takes up its abode,

1 Sketches of N. W. Mongolia, St Petersburg, 1883 (Russian). ? Kropotkine, “ Orographical Sketch of the Districts of Minusinsk and Krasnoyarsk,” in Mem. Russ. Geogr. Soc., vol. v., 1875.

while two others, Lakes Kotyvanskoye and Teletskoye, respectively 1170 and 1600 feet above the sea, from thcir position amidst steep and picturesque mountains, recall those of Geneva and Lucerne.

The Altai flora is very rich. Although the Europcan flora (in- cluding the beech) which clothed the Altai at a recent period has disappeared, and the Siberian flora invades its hillfoots from the north-west, while the steppe flora is advancing from the south, still in a zone ranging from 1000 to 6000 feet above the sea the botanist has to admire a flora rich in bright flowers, tall grasses, and shrubs, several of which are now common ornamental plants in Europcan gardens; and the zoologist discovers in the Altai the meeting-place of the northern fauna (including the reindeer) with that of the high Central-Asian plateau (including the tiger and the two-humped cainel of Bactriana).

A strip of elevated plains or grassy steppes, also about 200 miles in breadth, girdles the alpine region upon the north-west. Its outer border can be roughly indicated by a line running north-east from Lake Gorkoye to Tomsk. They have an average altitude of from 700 to 1000 feet above the

sea, and are covered with a luxuriant grass vegetation; the conditions for agriculture are excel- lent, and Russian villages are rapidly springing up. The south-west portion is known as the Kumandinsk steppe. An innumerable succession of small lakes—rivers in the process of formation —cover this steppe, where we have a system of parallel undulations, resulting in tributaries of the Ob, all flowing north-eastward with remarkable regularity.

Beyond the high plains, that is, all over north-western Tomsk, are the lowlands, which may be subdivided into two portions,—the Baraba steppe in the south-west (see Toxsoxsk), and the marshy region of the Ob (the Vasyugan and Narym regions). The latter is one boundless marsh, a few settlements of native hunters occurring only along the rivers. The interior is for the most part inaccessible alike to boats and to human feet. Low hills, or rather swellings, intersect it, but even the highest points, barely 200 or 300 feet above the sea, are covered with marshy forests. The forests themselves grow on marshy ground ; but where the trees disappear one sees for hundreds of miles nothing but green flowery carpets, which, when trodden on, treacherously yield under the unwary traveller. Similar in character must have been the marshes in which the Siberian mammoths and rhinoceroses of the Quater- nary epoch found their graves. Only the light and broad-hoofed reindeer, but not the elk, can cross them. This inhospitable region is inhabited only by Ostiaks, who have been driven into it by stress of circumstances, and support themselves partly by fishing and partly by hunting.

The Sailughem ridge, and the high Khobdo plateau as well, con- sist of granites, syenites, porphyries covered only with the oldest metamorphic slates belonging to the Archaic formation (Huronian and Laurentian). The structure of the outer chains of the Altai is more complicated. Their backbone is also composed of granites, porphyries, and porphyrites covered with metamorphic slates which are intersected by layers of crystalline limestones, breccias, and veins of jade.? Diorites, diabases, augitic porphyries, and hyper- sthenites also appear, but they are of a more recent origin. Silurian clay-slates are widely spread in the southern Altai. Devonian slates and limestones are also developed in the southern Altai, and the metalliferous deposits of Zmeinogorsk, Petrovsk, Riddersk, &c.,

belong to that age. Carboniferous dolomitic limestones and slates are widely spread both in the southern and northern Altai, After the Carboniferous epoch the southern Altai was not again sub- merged, while the northern Altai was covered by the Jurassic sea, and has thick Jurassic deposits containing a copious fossil flora and rich beds of coal. Basaltic eruptions, dating from the Jurassic period, have been found in the Salair Mountains. Thick diluvial deposits cover the whole area, and in many valleys arc traces of immense former glaciers ; in fact, the whole of the Sailughem ridge must at one timc have been clothed with an ice-cap.4

The southern Altai is rich in silver, copper, lead, and zine; while in the Atatau are concealed its chief auriferous alluvial (or diluvial) deposits, iron-ores, and coal-seams. The mineral wealth of the Altai

is really immense, but only a very few of the mines already known are worked. In 1881 4030 tb of gold, 14,820 fb of silver, 13,100

3 Prof. Mushketoff in Picturesque Russia, vol. xi. * See Potanin, Sketches of N. W. Mongolia, vol. iii. pp. 6, 9 sq.

cwts. of lead, 6720 cwts. of copper, 240,000 cwts. of coal, 330,000 ewts. of salt, and 30,000 cwts. of bitter salt were obtained. In the same year only 3000 ewts. of iron were inanufactured, and that metal is still imported from the Urals. The jade, beautiful porphyries, and the like of the district, which are cut into works of art at the crown works of Kotyvafi, are well known through the urns and vases shown at the St Petersburg Hermitage. The mineral waters of the Altai are of high quality.

Tomsk is watered mainly by the Ob and its tributaries, only its south-east corner draining into the Abakan, a tributary of the Yenisei. The Ob, formed by the union of the Biya and Katufi, has within the government a course of more than 800 miles, and is navigated as far as Barnaut and Biysk. Its tributaries, the Tom (450 miles), the Vasyugan (530 miles), the Ket (230 miles), and the Tym (200 miles), are all navigable. The Tchutym and the Tchumysh are also great rivers. Of tributaries of the Irtish, the Bukhtarma, the Om, the Uba, and the Tara are worthy of notice. As many as 1500 lakes

have been counted on the maps, but this number is exceeded by the reality. Some of them are alpine; others dot the steppes or the marshy tracts. Lake Tchany, not- withstanding its rapid desiccation, still covers 1265 square miles. Many brackish lakes, Kutundinsk, Kutchuk, &c., attain a great size, and some small salt lakes yield about 100,000 ewts. of salt.

The climate is very severe, and has, moreover, the disadvantage of being very wet in the north-west. The average yearly tempera- tures at Tomsk, Kainsk, and Barnaut arc 30°°2, 31°, and 32°°7 (January, 4°, —6°°2, and 3° °7; July, 65°°5, 68°°5, and 62°°2). The Altai steppes, enjoying a much drier climate than the low- lands, are covered with a beautiful vegctation, and in the sheltered valleys corn is grown to heights of 8400 and 4250 feet.

The population, which is rapidly increasing, in 1882 reached 1,134,750. The Russians are ina large majority, the indigenous inhabitants numbering in 1879 only 68,600, or 6°6 per cent. of the aggregate population. They include 23,600 Altaian Tartars, 5730 Teleutes, 17,020 Mountain Kalmucks (see TaRTARs), 10,000 Tomsk Tartars, 2920 Samoyedes, and 4210 Ostiaks. The prevail- ing religion is Greek-Orthodox, but there are also some 50,000 Nonconformists, 7320 Catholics, 2600 Jews, 10,700 Mohammedans, and about 28,000 pagans.

Agriculture is the prevailing occupation. It is most productive on the elevated plains of Tomsk, Mariinsk, Barnaut, Kuznetsk, and Biysk. Cattle-breeding is much developed, especially in the Kutundinsk steppe; and bee-keeping is an important source of wealth. Fishing and hunting are extensively carried on in the forest region. Mining occupies several thousands of men in the Altai. Manufactures are insignificant, the aggregate production —chiefly from distilleries and tanneries—hardly amounting to £250,000. Trade is actively carried on at Tomsk and Barnaut, which are two great centres for the export and import trade of Siberia with Russia. The Biysk merchants carry on exchange trade with Mon- golia and China. There are eight gymnasia (696 boys and 569 girls in 1888) and 225 primary schools (5680 boys, 1780 girls). The government is divided into six districts, the chief towns of which (with populations in 1884) are Tomsk (31,380), Barnaut (17,180), Biysk (18,960), Kainsk (4050), Kuznetsk (7810), and Mariinsk (18,090). Narym (1600) also has municipal

institutions ; it is the centre for the administration of the wide Narym region. Of the above towns only Tomsk and Barnant have the aspect of European towns. Barnaut, capital of the mining district of the Altai, which belongs to the “ Cabinet of the Emperor,” is a wealthy city, with a mining school and laboratory, a botanic garden, a museum of mining and natural history, and a meteorological observatory. Kotyvaf, with a stone-cutting manufactory, has 12,250 inhabitants. Several mining villages are more important than the district towns :—Zyryanovsk (silver-mine ; 4500 inhabit- ants), Riddersk, Zmeinogorsk (6160), Suzunsk (5400), and Salairsk (3500). (P. A. K.)

TOMSK, capital of the above government, is situated on the Tom at its confluence with the Ushaika, 27 miles above its junction with the Ob, and 2377 miles from Moscow. It is one of the chief cities of Siberia, second only to Irkutsk in population and trade importance. The great Siberian highway from Tyumeii to Irkutsk passes through Tomsk, and it is the terminus of the navigation by steamer from the Urals to Siberia. It has, moreover, communication by steamer with Barnaut and Biysk in the Altai. The position of Tomsk determines its character, which is not that of an administrative centre, like so many Russian cities, but that of an entrepot of wares, with many storehouses and wholesale shops. Before 1824 it was a mere village; but after the discovery of gold in the district it grew rapidly ; and, although the immense

1 Yadrintseff’s Siberia.

wealth that accumulated suddenly in the hands of a few proprietors of gold diggings was as rapidly squandered, it continued to maintain its importance, owing to the navigation on the Irtish and the Ob, which meanwhile had grown up. It is built on two terraces on the high right bank of the Tom, and is divided into two parts by the Ushaika. The streets are rather narrow and steep ; many houses of the richer merchants are of stone, but rather heavy in appearance, and altogether the aspect of the streets is not attractive. The best building is that of the future university, which is a spacious and elegant struc- ture, with ample accommodation for library, museums, and clinical hospitals. The Government has not as yet given permission to inaugurate

the building. A large cathedral, begun some five-and-twenty years ago by proprietors of gold diggings, collapsed after considerable progress had been made. The industries are almost entirely confined to tanning and the manufacture of carriages. The trade is of great importance, Tomsk being not only a centre for traffic in local produce, in which sledges (50,000 every year) and cars are prominent items, but also for the trade of Siberia with Russia. The population in 1884 was 31,380. TONGA. See Frrenpty Istanps.

TONG-KING, Tune-Kine, Tonquin, or, as it is called See vol. by the Annamese, Donc-K1NG, consists of that portion of xxi. Pl. Annam between 18° N. lat. and the frontiers of the 1:

Chinese provinces of Kwang-se and Yun-nan, with an area of 60,000 square miles. On the W. it is bounded by the Tran-ninh range, which forms the limit of the Lao states, and on the E. by the sea. In shape it resembles, roughly speaking, an isosceles triangle, having its apex at its junc- ture with Annam and its base along the Chinese boundary. The name Tong-king, “the eastern capital,” was originally applied to Hanoi, but was eventually adopted as that of the whole country. It is the same word as ToxKIo (q.v.). Geographically Tong-king is divided into three well- defined areas. First, there is the delta of the Song-koi (“Red river”) and its affluents, which, beginning at Sontay, widens out into the low lands which constitute the most fertile district in Tong-king, and within which are situated the principal cities of the country. Here is grown the rice which constitutes 39 per cent. of the total exports from Tong-king, and which is reckoned in the Hong-Kong market to be equal in quality to the rice from Siam and superior to that from Cochin-China. During the rainy season this part of the country, with the exception of the embankments, is under water, but notwithstanding this the climate is fairly healthy, and the prevalence of fever and dysentery is not so great as might be expected. From the delta northward and westward rise plateau districts, while westward of 103° E. long. there stretches a forest region about which very little is known, but which is said by the natives to be inhabited only by savages and wild beasts. Politically the country is divided into sixteen provinces, of which the following seven are in the delta mentioned :— Bac-ninh, Sontay, Hanoi, Hai-Dzuong, Hung-yen, Nam- Dinh, and Ninh-Binh. Five provinces constitute the upland districts, viz., Cao-Banh, Lang-son, Thai-Nguyen, Tuyen-Kwan, and

Kwang-yen; while the forests form the province of Hung-hoa. The main geographical feature in the country is the Song-koi, which, taking its rise near Tali Fu, in Yun-nan, enters Tong-king at Lao-kai ("the Lao boundary"), and flows thence in a south-easterly direction to the Gulf of Tong-king. It was this river which mainly in the first instance attracted the French to Tong- king, as it was believed by the explorers that, forming the shortest route by water to the rich province of Yun-nan, it would prove also to be the most convenient and expedi- tious means of transporting the tin, copper, silver, and

gold which are known to abound there. This belief has, however, proved fallacious. The upper course of the stream is constantly impeded by rapids, the lowest being about 30 miles above Hung-hoa. Beyond this point navi- gation is impracticable during the dry season, and at all other times of the year goods have to be there transferred into flat-bottomed boats built for the purpose. Within the limits of Yun-nan the navigation is still more difficult. Near Sontay the Song-koi receives the waters of the Black river, the Clear river, and other streams, and from that point divides into a network of waterways which empty themselves by countless outlets into the sea.

Hanoi, the capital, is a fine city, and stands on the right bank of the Song-koi, at a distance of 80 miles from the sea. The commercial town extends along the water face for a distance of a mile and a half, while behind it stands the citadel, which encloses within its walls the palace, the treasury, the court of justice, the royal pagoda, the prison, the barracks, public offices, and official residences. Em- broidery and mother-of-pearl work are the principal in- dustries of Hanoi, which never has been and probably never will be a great commercial centre. But, notwithstanding this, the population is said formerly to have numbered 150,000, a number which has of late years probably been reduced by at least one-third.

Next in importance to Hanoi is Nam-Dinh, on one of the lower branches of the Song-koi. It is the centre of an extremely rich silk and rice district, and was before the war a great resort of Chinese merchants. But the chief place of trade is Hai-phong, on the Song-tam-bac Canal, 14 miles from the sea. This is the port of Tong-king, and its trade represents the foreign commerce

of the country. In 1880, the last year of anything like normal trade, goods were imported to the value of 5,467,315 francs, and the exports amounted to 7,507,528 francs. Of the imports 34 per cent. consisted of English cotton goods and yarn, 21 per cent. of opium, 11 per cent. of Chinese medi- cines, 9 per cent. of Chinese water-pipe tobacco, 5 per cent. of tea, and 20 per cent. of miscellaneous goods. From 97 to 98 per cent. of these goods came from Hong-Kong, Saigon furnished about 4 per cent., and rather more than 2 per cent. represented the trade from Annam and else- where. The exports were in the following proportions :— rice, 39 per cent.; raw silk and silk piece goods, 21; tin, 16; lacquer oil, 6; and miscellaneous goods, 18. Of these 79 per cent. were shipped to Hong-Kong, 16 per cent. went to Saigon, and the remaining 5 per cent. were distributed among the coast ports.

The mineral wealth of the country is doubtless con- siderable, though so little has been done in the direction of working it that it is impossible to form any idea of its richness. According to Major-General Mesny, there are flourishing gold-fields in seventeen districts, while silver and copper mining occupies a great deal of native and Chinese labour. Only very small quantities of these min- erals, however, are produced in evidence.

The population of Tong-king is estimated at about 12,000,000, and consists of Tong-kingese, Chinese, and an admixture of Lao from beyond the western frontier. The Tong-kingese belong to the Indo-Chinese stock. They are taller and a finer people than the Annamese, and they are more frivolous and excitable than their northern neigh- bours, the Chinese. Their intelligence is, generally speak- Ing, of a very low order ; they are dirty in their habits; and their natural timidity serves to make them deceitful. As traders they show little enterprise, and are quite unable to compete with the Chinese, into whose hands the com- merce had, before the arrival of the French, entirely fallen. Their spoken language is allied to the Cambodian, while Chinese forms the medium of literary communication.

TON G-

ror nc G

The Chinese records carry the history of Tong-king as far back as the 22d century B.c., but, as the data are neither well authenti- cated nor particularly

interesting, we need not dwell upon them. There is, however, one mention of Tong-king, or Yueh, as it was then called, in the 12th century B.c., which acquires importance from the fact that ambassadors from that country are said to have arrived at the Chinese court, bringing with them ‘‘ south-pointing chariots.” These are supposed by some to have been mariner’s compasses, but it is difficult to pronounce any opinion on a state- ment so obscure. During the reign of Che Hwang-te (218 B.c.), the emperor who made himself famous by building the Great Wall of China and burning the books, a Chinese army invaded Tong-king and captured the town of Luliang, possibly the modern Hanoi. The occupation, however, was only temporary, and it was not until the rise to power of the Han dynasty that any serious attempt was made to subjugate the country. At that time a Chinese general, Chaou T’o, who had established a principality consisting of the two modern provinces of Kwang-tung and Kwang-se, with his capital at Canton, invaded Tong-king, but was defeated and driven out of the country by the ruler, An-yang, whose victories were achieved mainly by the help of a foreign ‘‘divine mechanic.” This man, whoever he may have been, seems to have been thrown aside after serving his immediate purpose; and, having thus deprived himself of his right hand, An-yang fell an easy victim when attacked by a second army sent by Chaou T’o. On the subjugation of the empire by the Han sovereign, Chaou T’o’s principality was absorbed with the rest, and in 116 B.c. Tong-king became a dependency of China.

But this connexion brought no peace to the country, and for centuries rebellion followed on rebellion. A particular uprising in the Ist century is noticeable from two sisters, Chéng ‘I’séh and Chéng Urh, leading the rebel forces against the Chinese garrisons, with such success that the celebrated Ma Yuen had to be sent against the malcontents. After an arduous campaign Ma dis- persed the rebels and captured and executed the two sisters, thus putting an end to the rebellion. The next fourteen centuries fur- nish a perpetual record of wars and rumours of wars, the discon- nected narrative of which is generally uninteresting and sometimes unintelligible. In 1427 Li Loi acquired the throne, as so many of his predecessors had done, by violent means, but, unlike them, he established some degree of peace and order in the land. In the following century, however, the spirit of revolt broke out, and one of his successors owed the maintenance of his throne to the skill of his general Nguyen Dzo, on whom the title of hereditary viceroy

was consequently conferred. This viceroy gradually assumed the supreme authority in the district under his control and virtually separated Tong-king from Annam, pee the first under his own sway and leaving the southern portion of the country to the rot Jainéant. In this disunited condition the two countries remained during the 17th century and part of the 18th, till a successor of Nguyen invaded Annam, captured the imperial city of Hué, and dethroned the king, Gia Long, who fled to Siam. The Siamese sovereign entertained the fugitive with hospitality, but declined to help him to recover his throne. It happened, however, that at this time (1787) the Jesuit establishment of Bangkok was presided over by Bishop Pigneaux de Betaine, who thought he saw in the political condition of Annam a ineans of establishing the power of France in the eastern portion of Indo-China. With this object he proposed to Gia Long that he should accompany him to Paris to enlist the aid of Louis XVI. for the recovery of his throne. This the king declined to do, but as a compromise he sent his eldest son. The young prince was cordially received by Louis, before whom the bishop laid the following reasons for the interference of France on behalf of Gia Long. ‘‘The balance of political power in India appears at the present moment to be largely in favour of the English, and one may be justified in looking upon it as a matter of no little difficulty to restore the equilibrium. In my opinion the establish- ment of a French colony in Cochin-China will be the surest and most efficacious means to the end. .. . The most certain way of damaging the English in India is to ruin, or at any rate to weaken, her commerce in time of peace. Being situated nearer to China, we should undoubtedly absorb much of her trade. . In time of war it would be still more easy to stop all commerce between China and any hostile nation. ... From such a coign of vantage it would be easy to interfere with the designs which the English evi- dently have of extending their frontier more to the east.”

The embassy resulted in a treaty with Gia Long, by which the French king engaged to restore that monarch to his throne on con- dition that he accepted the virtual protectorship of France over Annam. But even before the initial steps towards the fulfilment of this contract could be carried out, the political uprising which finally brought the Freuch king to the scaffold made all interference in the East impossible. In these circumstances the bishop deter- mined to raise a sufficient force from the French and other

adven- turers who then frequented India and the neighbouring countries, and, with an army so recruited, he landed in Annam. The Anna- mese resistance was of the feeblest kind ; the usurper's power was

TON G-

broken at the first encounter, and Gia Long once again ascended his throne. As a reward for the services thus rendered to him, he extended a liberal protection to the Roman Catholic missionaries and their converts, and engaged French officcrs to fortify his towns and to drill his troops. He soon found, however, that his new allies had more ambitious designs than could be satisfied by doing him service. He therefore withdrew his countenance from them, and emphasized his displeasure by leaving his throne away from his eldest son, who had pleadcd his cause in Paris, and by giving it to his youngest son. This change of policy told, as was natural, with greatest force on the missionaries and their converts in the interior of the country. From 1833 to 1839 eleven missionaries were put to death, and thousands, it is said, of the native Christians suffered martyrdom. Neither change of sovereign nor varying circumstances brought any relief to the persecuted Christians, until in 1859 the French Government determined to intervene on their behalf. In that year Admiral Rigault de Genouilly took Saigon by assault, and was attempting to open negotiations with the king of Annam, when the outbreak of the China war compelled him to satisfy him- self with holding the captured town. So soon, however, as the Peking treaty was signed, the French resumed active operations in the neighbourhood of Saigon and took possession of the provinces of Mitto and Bienhoa in Cochin-China. These victories led to the conclusion of a treaty with the king, Tu Duc, which, howcver, did not prevent the French from adding the provinces of Kinh- luong, Chandoc, and Ha-tien to their acquired territory.

Having thus firmly established themselves in Annam, thcy began to turn their attention to Tong-king, attracted by the rcported richness of its mincral wealth. They found a ready pretext for interfering in its affairs in the disturbances arising from the in- vasion of its northern provinces by the disbanded followers of the Tai-ping rebels. Acting on the protectorship which they professed to exercise over all the territorics of Tu Duc, they proposed to him that a joint expedition composed of French and Annaniese

troops should be sent to quell the disturbances. On Tu Duc declin- ing to acecde, the French admiral was on the point of starting “to protect” Tong-king, when as before the outbreak of war put an cnd to the enterprise. The events of 1870 forbade any advance in the direction of Hoa mking but the return of peace in Europe was once more the signal for the renewal of hostilities in the East. The appearance of Garnier’s work on his expedition up the Mekong uted again an interest in Tong-king, and the reported wealth of the country added the powerful motive of self-interest to the yearn- ings of patriotism. Already M. Dupuis, a trader who in the pursuit of his calling had penetrated into Yun-nan, and had thus discovered that the higher waters of the Song-koi were navigable, had visited Hanoi with a small force of desperadoes, and was attempting to negotiate for the passage up the river of himself and a cargo of mili- tary stores for the Chinese authorities in Yun-nan. Meanwhile Captain Senez appeared from Saigon, having received instructions to open the route to French commerce. But to neither the trader nor the naval officer would the Tong-kingese lend a favourable ear, and in default of official permission Dupuis determined to force his way uptheriver. This he succecded in doing, but arrived too late, for he found the rebellion crushed and the stores no longer wanted.

On his return to Hanoi, Dupuis found that the opposition of the authorities had gathered strength during his abscnce. His arrival served to restore the position of the French, and, not wishing to niake an open attack upon them, the Tong-kingese general wrote to the king, begging him to induce the governor of Saigon to remove the intruder. An order was thereupon issued calling upon Dupuis to leave the country. This he declined to do, and, after some negotiations, Garnier with a detachment was sent to Hanoi to do the best he could in the difficult circumstances. Garnier threw himself heart and soul into Dupuis’s projects, and, when the Tong-kingese authorities refused to treat with him except on the subject of Dupuis’s expulsion, he attacked the citadel on November 20, 1873, and carried it by assault. Having thus secured his posi- tion, he sent to Saigon for reinforcements, and meanwhile sent small detachments against the five other important fortresses in the delta (Hung-yen, Phu-ly, Hai-Dzuong, Ninh-Binh, and Nam- Dinh), and captured them all. The Tong-kingese now called in the help of Liu Yung-fu, the leader of the ‘ Black Flags,” who at oncc marched with a large force to the scene of action, Within a few days he recaptured several villages near

Hanoi, and so threatening did his attitude appear that Garnicr, who had hurried back after capturing Nam-Dinh, made a sortie from the citadel. The movement proved a disastrous one, and resulted in the death of Garnier and of his second in command, Balny d'Avricourt.

Meanwhile the news of Garnier's hostilities had alarmed the governor of Saigon, who, having no desire to be plunged into a war, sent Philastre, an inspector of native affairs, to offer apologies to the king of Annam. When, however, on arriving in Tong- king Philastre heard of Garnier's death, he took command of the French forces, and at once ordered the evacuation of Nam-Dinh, Ninh-Binh, and Hai-Dzuong,—a measure which, however advan- tageous it may have been to the French at the moment, was most

disastrous to the native Christian population, the withdrawal of tlle French being the signal for a general massacre of the converts. In pursuance of the same policy Philastre made a convention with the authorities (February 6, 1874), by which he bound his country- men to withdraw from the occupation of the country, retaining only the right to trade at Hanoi and Hai-phong, and agreed to put an end to Dupuis's aggressive action. On the 15th of March a treaty was signed at Saigon.

For a tine affairs remained in statu quo, but in 1882 Le Myre de Villers, the governor of Saigon, sent Riviére with a small force to open up the route to Yun-nan by the Song-koi. With a curious similarity the events of Garnier's campaign were repeated. Find- ing the authorities intractable, Riviere stormed and carried the citadel of Hanoi, and then, with very slight loss, he captured Nam-Dinh, Hai-Dzuong, and other towns in the delta. And once again these victorics brought Liu Yung-fu and his Black Flags into the neighbourhood of Hanoi. As Garnier had done, so Riviére hurried back from Nam-Dinh on news of the threatened danger. Like Garnier also he headed a sortie against his enemies, and like Garnier he fell a victim to his own impetuosity.

In the meantime the Annamese court had been seeking to enlist the help of the Chinese in their contest with the French. The tic which bound the tributary nation to the sovereign state had been for many generations

slackened or drawn closer as circumstances determined, but never had it been entirely dissevered, and from the Annamese point of view this was one of the occasions when it was of paramount importance that it should be acknowledged and acted upon. With much more than usual regularity, therefore, the king despatched presents and letters to the court of Peking, and in 1880 he sent a special embassy, loaded with unusually costly offerings, and with a letter in which his position of a tributary was emphatically asserted. Far from ignoring the responsibility thrust upon him, the emperor of China ordcred the publication of the letter in the Peking Gazette. The death of Riviére and the defeat of his troops had meanwhile placed the French in a position of extreme difficulty. The outlying garrisons, with the cxception of Nam-Dinh and Hai-phong, were at once withdrawn to Hanoi, and that citadcl was made as secure as circumstances permitted. The Black Flags swarmed round its walls, and the reinforcements brought by Admiral Courbet and General Bouet were insufficient to do more than keep them at bay. So continued was the pressure on the garrison that Bouet determined to make an advance upon Sontay to relieve the blockade. After gaining some trifling suc- cesses, he attacked Vong, a fortified village, but he met with such resistance that, after suffering considerable loss, he was obliged to retreat to Hanoi. In the lower delta fortune sided with the French, and almost without a casualty Hai-Dzuong and Phu-Binh fell into their hands. These successes led to an ultimatum being sent to the king of Annam, in which were demanded the fulfilment of the treaty of 1874 and the acceptance of the protectorate of France over the whole of Annam, including Tong-king. This document met with no favourable reception, and, as at this moment a rein- forcement of 7000 men arrived from France, Courbet, determining to supersede diplomacy by arms, appeared with his fleet before Hué. He found that, though Tu Duc was dead, his policy of resistance was maintained, and he therefore stormed the city. After a feeble defence it was taken, and the admiral concluded a treaty with the king (August 25, 1883), in which the French pro- tectorate was fully recognized, the king further binding himself to recall the Annamese troops serving in Tong-king, and to con- struct a road from Saigon to Hanoi.

Though this treaty was exacted from the king under pressure, the French lost no time in carrying out that part of it which gave them the authority to protect the country, and on the 1st September Bouet again advanced in the

direction of Sontay. But again the resistance he met with compelled him to retreat, after capturing the fortified post of Palan. The serious nature of the opposition experienced in these expeditions induced the French commanders to await reinforcements before again taking the field. Meanwhile, on the determination to attack Sontay becoming known in Paris, the Chinese ambassador warned the ministry that, since Chinese troops formed part of the garrison, he should consider it as tanta- mount to a declaration of war. But his protest net with no con- sideration. On the arrival of reinforcements an advance was again made; and on the 16th December, after some desperate fighting, Sontay fell.

The immediate object of the French commanders was at this time to make themselves secure in the dclta, and to inflict such chastisement on the Black Flags and their allies as would prevent their disturbing the peace of the garrisons. This could not be attained so long as Bac-Ninh remained in the hands of the enemy. Generals Négrier, Briére de l'Isle, and Millot accordingly marched against the town, and began to shell it. But it was alrcady deserted, and Millot entered the gatcs without striking a blow. Thus, while one part of the programme was fulfilled to the letter, the other part, which was to have sealed the fate of the garrison, failed conspicuously. In these circumstances it was thought

Mom — <6

advisable to push on along the great north-eastern road to China ; and Négrier advanced about 30 miles towards Lang-son, captured a village there, and then returned to Bac-Ninh.

Meanwhile Briére de 1'Isle followed up that portion of the Bac- Ninh garrison which had escaped along the northern road in the direction of Thai-Nguyen. He captured the fort of Yen-Te, and marched on to Thai-Nguyen, where, as on so many occasions, there was a great display of martial ardour so long as the French were beyond firing distance, but the discharge of a few shells com- pletely discomfited the defenders, who fled out of the north gate as the French marched in at the south. As Briére de 1'Isle had _posi- tive orders not to hold the town, he burnt some of the buildings, and

evacuated it. The Chinese troops immediately returned, and again were driven out a month later, only to return again ou the withdrawal of the French. Once more, however, a column was sent against the city, which on this occasion was burnt to the ground.

The whole of the lower delta was thus made secure in the hands of the French. Hung-Hoa (a town about 15 miles north-east of Sontay) and Tuyen-Kwan (a fortified place about 40 iniles farther north) both fell before the invaders, but from both the garrisons escaped practically unscathed.

In the meantime M. Fournier, the French consul at Tientsin, had been negotiating for peace, so far as China was concerned, with Li Hung-chang, and on May 17, 1884, had signed and sealed a memorandum by which the Chinese plenipotentiary agreed that the Chinese troops should evacuate the northern provinces of Tong- king ‘‘immédiatement.” This expression was undeniably vague, and the French general in Tong-king, impatient of delay, in June dispatched Colonel Dugenne at the head of a strong force to occupy Lang-son. The expedition was badly arranged; the baggage train was far too unwieldy; and the pace at which the men were made to march was too quick for that scorching time of the year. They advanced, however, within 25 miles of Lang-son, when they suddenly came upon a Chinese camp. Aun irregular engagement commenced, and, in the pitched battle which ensued, the Chinese broke the French lines, and drove them away in headlong flight. This brought the military operations for the season to a close.

During the rainy season fevers of all kinds became alarmingly

revalent, and the number of deaths and of men invalided was very fais, In the meantime, however, an expedition, led by Colonel Donnier, against the Chinese garrison at Chu, about 10 miles south- east from Lang-kep, was completely successful ; and in a battle fought near Chu the Chinese were defeated, with a loss of 8000 killed, the French loss being only 20 killed and 90 wounded. In the skirmishes which followed the French were generally victorious, but not to such a degree as to warrant any enlargement of the campaign.

The arrival in January 1885 of 10,000 men having brought up the force under Briére de l’Isle to 40,000, he ordered an advance towards Lang-son.

The difficulties of transport greatly impeded his movements, still the expedition was successful. On the 6th February three forts at Dong-Song, with large supplies of stores and ammunition, fell into the hands of the French. Three days' heavy fighting made them masters of a defile on the road, and on the 18th Lang-son was taken, the garrison having evacuated the town just before the entrance of the conquerors. With his usual energy Négrier pressed on in pursuit to Ki-hea, and even captured the frontier town of Cua-ai. But Briere de l'Isle had now to hurry back to the relief of Tuyen-Kwan, which had been attacked by a Chinese force, and Négrier was left in command at Lang-son. The withdrawal of Briére de l'Isle's division gave the Chinese greater confidence, and, though for a time Négrier was able to hold his own, on the 22d and 23d of March he sustained a severe check between Lang-sou and Thatke, which was finally converted into a complete rout, his troops being obliged to retreat precipi- tately through Lang-son to Than-moi and Dong-Song. Briére de lIsle reached Tuyen-Kwan on the 3d of March, and found the Black Flags and Yunnan braves strongly posted on the side of an almost inaccessible pass. After having sustained a succession of attacks for eighteen days, and seven actual assaults, the delight of the garrison at seeing Briere de I'Isle's relieving force may be imagined. It was while matters were in this position that Sir Robert Hart succeeded in negotiating peace between the two coun- tries. By the terms agreed on (April 6, 1885), it was stipulated that France was to take Tong-king under its protection and to evacuate Formosa. The Chinese undertook at the same time to expend 80,000,000 francs on the construction of roads in South China.

The future fortunes of the colony must depend greatly on the administrative ability of the governors selected to rule over it. The death of Paul Bert was in this respect a great loss to Tong-king,

See France and Tong-King, by J. G. Scott, 1885; Tonkin, by C. B. Norman, 1884; Tungking, by W. Mesney, 1884. ip Ga 9)

TONGUE. See Anatomy, vol. i. p. 895, and Taste.

TONNAGE, Recister Tonnace, or INTERNATIONAL REGISTER ToNNAGE, is the unit on which the assessment of dues and charges on

shipping is based. The system at pre- sent in force is known asthe Moorsom system. A register

ton is 100 cubic feet of internal volume. Thus a vessel of 100,000 cubic feet of internal space within the points of measurements prescribed by the law is 1000 tons register. Vessels are sometimes bought and sold under this unit. The tonnage rules, which are very full and elaborate, are contained in part ii. of the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, sections 20 to 29 inclusive, and in section 9 of the Merchant Shipping Act, 1867, the latter being a special section in reference to a deduction from the gross tonnage in respect of crew space, which space must be fit for the proper accommodation of the men who are to occupy it to entitle to such deduction. This enactment has led to great improvement in seamen's quarters.

Section 60 of the Merchant Shipping Act, 1862, pro- . vides on the point of international tonnage as follows :— "Ships belonging to foreign countries which have adopted the British system of tonnage need not be remeasured in this country." The British system has been adopted by the following countries at the dates named :—United States, 1865 ; Denmark, 1867 ; Austria-Hungary, 1871 ; Germany, 1873 ; France, 1873; Italy, 1873 ; Spain, 1874 ; Sweden, 1875; Netherlands, 1876; Norway, 1876; Greece, 1878; Russia, 1879; Finland, 1877; Hayti, 1882; Belgium, 1884; Japan, 1884. It is also under consideration by China.

There are slight differences in the rules for deduction for engine room in some of the countries, but owners or masters of foreign steamships, where this difference exists, may have the engine-rooms remeasured in the United Kingdom if they desire; in other words, their net tonnage may be reduced to exact English measure.

The British system was also mainly adopted by the International Tonnage Commission assembled at Constan- tinople in 1873, the rules of such commission forming the basis of dues levied on the ships of all countries passing through the Suez Canal. A special certificate is issued in the respective countries for this purpose. The main point of difference from the British system is with respect to the deduction for engine room.

There are three terms used in respect of the tonnage of ships,—namely, tonnage under decks, gross tonnage, and register tonnage.

In obtaining the gross measurement the space under the tonnage deck is first measured—sections 20 and 21 (1), (2), and (3); then the space or spaces, if any, between the tonnage deck (the tonnage deck is the second deck from below in all vessels of more than two decks and the upper deck in all other vessels) and the upper deck— section 21 (5) of Act; and finally the permanent closed-in spaces above the upper deck available for cargo, stores, passengers, or crew—section 21 (4) of Act.

The allowance for engine room is governed by the percentage the net engine room—that is, the space ex- clusive of the coal bunkers—bears to the gross tonnage, and varies in paddle- and screw-steamers as laid down in section 23 of the Act.

In obtaining the tonnage under tonnage deck, ships are divided in respect of their length into five classes as follows :—

Class 1. Length 50 feet and under…....,....0.000 into 4 equal parts. re 2 5 » und not exceeding 120 feet, 6 is ” 3, ” 120 ” ” ” ” 8 ” ” 4. ” 180 ” » » 225 ” 10 2: sites o> – 225’gg- ANA UPWATAS.....cccceseeesees 12 if

The following is an epitome of the rule for tonnage under the tonnage deck :—

Length is taken inside on tonnage deck, from inside of plank at stern to inside of midship stern timber or plank; the length so taken, allowing for rake of bow and of stern in the thickness of the deck, and one-third of the round of beam, is to be divided into the prescribed number of equal parts (which determines the stations of the areas), according to the length of vessel, as above.

Area 1 is at the extreme limit of the bow. Area 2 is at the first point of division of the length. The rest are numbered in succes- sion, the last being at the extreme limit of the stern.

Depths are taken at each point of division of the length, or station

TO N—

of each area, from the underside of the tonnage deck to ceiling at inner edge of timber strake, deducting therefrom one-third of the round of the beam. The depths so taken are to be divided into four equal parts, if midship depth should not exceed 16 feet; otherwise into six equal parts.

Breadths are taken at each point of division of the depths and also at the upper and lower points of the depths. The upper breadth of each area is to be set down in its respective column in a line with No. 1 (left-hand numerals), and the rest in succession.

The number of eolumns for areas will vary according to the length, as in the several classes, and will be equal to the number of parts into which the length is divided plus one.

1 ON 443

The space or spaces between decks above the tonnage deck are dealt with by a similar formula. A mean horizontal area of the space, or each space if more than one, is found and multiplied by the mean height.

The permanent closed-in spaces above the upper deck available for cargo, stores, passengers, or crew are measured in the same manner by finding a mean area and multiplying by a mean height.

The measurement of net engine room is governed by the arrange- ment of the space, and is measured as a whole or in parts as may be required by its particular form.

The following is an example under class 2, depth under 16 feet, of tonnage under tonnage deck :—

Length 112°75 Feet + 6=18°791 Feet, the Common Interval between Areas.

Depths + 4, the Middle Depth being less than 16 Feet.

Area 1. Area 2, Area 3. Area 4. Feet. Feet. Feet. Feet. Wepthsiasssyacssece Ss 12°65 12°3 11°85

val between 3°162 3°075

breadths…..

Common wen} Pro- Baths,

No. of | Multi- | Being | Bdths, | Pro- | Baths. Pro:

Baths. | pliers. | sharp | Feet. | ducts, | Feet. | ducts. | Feet ducts 1 1 atthe | 19°35 | 19°35 20°2 20°2 20°4 20°4 2 4 18°85 5 20°4 81°6 20°5 82-0 8 2 “68 5 20°15 | 40°38 20°25 | 40°5 4 4 ‘ : 19°6 78°4 19°85 | 79:4 5 1 area. 1°85 1°85 3°0 30 6°35 6°35

}eommon inter- 223°5 228°65 val between 1:03 99 breadths…...

6705 205785 22350 205785

186°165 230°205 226°363

ai | ff

Area 2. Area 3. | Area 4,

This formula is also applicable for finding displacement tonnage of ships, that is, the external displacement measured by taking transverse areas to the height of the load water-line to find the cubie content, which content divided by 35 gives the displacement in tons weight, the difference between the light and load displace- ment representing the carrying powers of a vessel in tons.

‘«The rule,” says Mr Moorsom, ‘‘is founded on the purest mathe-

matical principles. It was first published in the Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society of 1798 by Attwood, in his ‘Disquisition on the Stability of Ships,’ who there describes it as one of those formule invented by Sterling for measuring spaces bounded by irregular curves, founded on Sir Isaac Newton’s dis- eovery of a theorem—a discovery which the immortal author himself considered amongst his happiest inventions—by which the areas of all curvilinear spaces not geometrically quadrible nor

discoverable by any known rules of direct investigation are so closely approxi- mated as to amount to geometrical exactness.”

Mr Allan Gilmour at the middle of the present century expressed his opinion, after a careful consideration of the tonnage question, which was receiving much attention at that time owing to the law 8 and 9 Vict. cap. 89, which had been adopted in place of the old tonnage law 18 Geo. III. cap. 74, not giving satisfaction, that the ‘‘system framed by Mr Moorsom will as it were eompel every one to build strong, fast-sailing, and good seagoing ships, and that, in fact, it will stand as long as the world remains.” It will be admitted that great progress has been made in every way in British shipping of late years, and for this due praise must be given to the influence of the present tonnage laws. (W. M*.)

TONNAGE anp POUNDAGE were customs duties anciently imposed upon exports and imports, the former being a duty upon all wines imported in addition to prisage and butlerage, the latter a duty imposed ad valorem at the rate of twelvepence in the pound on all merchandise imported or exported. The duties were levied at first by agreement with merchants (poundage in 1302, tonnage in 1347), then granted by parliament in 1373, at first for a limited period only. They were con- sidered to be imposed for the defence of therealm. From the reign of Henry VI. until that of James I. they were usually granted for life. They were not granted to Charles I., and in 1628 that king took the unconstitutional course of levying them on his own authority, a course denounced a few years later by 16 Car. I. c. 18, when the Long Parliament granted them for two months. After the Restoration they were granted to Charles II. and his two

Area 5. Area 6, Area 7.

Cubie Content and Register

Feet. Feet. Feet. Tonnage. 11°4 10°9 ann 2°85 2°795 . eeeens 3 No. of | Multi- | brought} Pro- Areas, | pliers, up. ducts. DEM La | ~~nic. | l = L Sq. Ft Bdths. | Pro~~ | Bdths. | Pro- | Being 1 1 0 0 Feet. ducts. | Feet. | ducts. | sharp 2 4 186°17 | 744°68 20°2 20°2 19-1 19-1 at the 3 2 230°21 | 460-42 20°35 81°4 18°65 74°6 |sternno 4 4 226°36 | 905-44 20-0 40-0 14°95 29°9 meas- 5 2 208°19 | 416°38 17°8 ele? 8°75 35°0 ured 6 4 145-24 | 580°96 6°85

6°35 1-0 1-0 area. vi 1 0 0 219-15 159°6 3107°88 “95 “91 6°26=} eommon interval between areas.

109575 1596 1864728 197285 14364 621576

— 1864728 208°192 145236 ere eet Tons 19455°32+100=194°55 under deck. Area 5. Area 6. Area 7.

successors for life. By Acts of Anne and George I. the duties were made perpetual, and mortgaged for the public debt. In 1787 they were finally abolished, and other modes of obtaining revenue substituted, by 27 Geo. III. c. 13. Poundage also signifies a fee paid to an officer of a court for his services, ¢.g., to a sheriff’s officer, who is entitled by 28 Eliz. c. 4

to a poundage of a shilling in the pound on an execution up to £100, and sixpence in the pound above that sum.

TONQUA BEAN. The Tonqua, Tonka, or Tonquin bean, also called the coumara nut, is the seed of Dupterix odorata, a Leguminous tree growing toa height of 80 feet, native of tropical South America. The drupe-like pod contains a single seed possessed of a fine sweet ‘‘ new- mown hay ” odour, due to the presence of a crystallizable principle called coumarin, to which also the dried stalks of Melilotus officinalis and the vernal grass Anthoxanthum odoratum owe their odour. Tonqua beans are used principally for scenting snuff and as an ingredient in perfume sachets and in perfumers’ “ bouquets.”

TONQUIN. See ToncG-KING.

TONSILLITIS. See THroat DIsEasEs.

TONSURE. The reception of the tonsure, in the Roman Catholic Church, is the initial ceremony which marks admission to orders and to the rights and privileges of clerical standing. It is administered by the bishop with an appropriate ritual. Candidates for the rite must have been confirmed, be adequately instructed in the elements of the Christian faith, and be able to read and write. Those who have received it are bound (unless in exceptional circumstances) to renew the mark, consisting of a bare circle on the

crown of the head, at least once a month, otherwise they forfeit the privileges it carries. A very early origin has sometimes been claimed for the tonsure, but the earliest instance of an ecclesiastical precept on the subject occurs in can. 41 of the council of Toledo (633 A.D.): “ omnes clerici, detonso superius capite toto, inferius solam circuli coronam relinquant.” Can. 33 of the Quini- sext council (692) requires even singers and readers to be tonsured. Since the 8th century three tonsures have been more or less in use, known respectively as the Roman,

the Greek, and the Celtic. The first two are sometimes distinguished as the tonsure of Peter and the tonsure of Paul; in the latter the whole head was shaven, but when now practised in the Eastern church this tonsure is held to be adequately shown when the hair is shorn close. In _ the Celtic tonsure (tonsure of St John, or, in contempt, tonsure of Simon Magus) all the hair in front of a line drawn over the top of the head from ear to ear was shaven.

TONTINE. ‘This system of life insurance owes its name to Lorenzo Tonti, an Italian banker, born at Naples early in the 17th century, who settled in France about 1650. In 1653 he proposed to Cardinal Mazarin a new scheme he had devised for promoting a public loan. His plan was to the following effect. A total of 1,025,000 livres was to be subscribed in ten portions of 102,500 livres each by ten classes of subscribers, the first class consisting of persons under 7, the second of persons above 7 and under 14, and so on to the tenth, which consisted of persons between 63 and 70. The whole annual fund of each class was to be regularly divided among the survivors of that class, and on the death of the last individual the capital was to fall to the state. This plan of operations was authorized under the name of “ tontine royale” by a royal edict, but this the parlement refused to register, and the idea remained in abeyance till 1689, when it was revived by Louis XIV., who established a tontine of 1,400,000 livres divided into fourteen classes of 100,000 livres each, the subscription being 300 livres. Although the classes were not quite filled, this tontine was carried on till 1726, when the last beneficiary died,—a widow who at the time of her decease was deriving from this source an annual income of 73,500 livres. Several other Government ton- tines were afterwards set on foot; but in 1763 restric- tions

were introduced, and in 1770 all tontines at the time in existence were wound up. Private tontines con- tinued, however, to flourish in France for some years, the “tontine Lafarge ” having been opened as late as 1791.

The tontine principle has often been applied in Great Britain, chiefly to the purchase of estates or the erection of buildings for which the necessary funds could not be procured by ordinary methods. The speculative element in the system has proved an attraction, The investor stakes his money on the chance of his own life or the life of his nomince enduring fora longer period than the othcr lives involved in the speculation, iu which case he expects to win a large prize. The only thing which will serve to distinguish this from au ordinary lottery is the assumption that some may apply greater care or skill in the selection of lives than others of the players. The tontine principle is nearly the converse of ordinary life assurance, where it is the man who dies early who obtains an advantage for his heirs at the expense of the long liver. But it has been occasionally introduced into life assurance in the distribution of profits or surplus, and so far it tends to redress the inequalities of the original contract, the profits being assigned to the longest livers to a larger extent than in the common life assurance system. The tontine principle has been brought into considerable prominence by some American life offices (see Insur- ANCE, vol. xiii. p. 183). All that is wanted to make the system fair is that every one should understand that in order to secure a dis- proportionate share of profits in the event of his surviving and keeping up his policy he must make a corresponding sacrifice if he dies early or discontinues his insurance.

TOOKE, Joun Horne (1736-1812), an ardent poli- tician and an erudite philologer, was the third son of John Horne, a poulterer in Newport Market, whose business the son, when a pupil at Eton with other boys of a more aristocratic position, in early life happily veiled under the title of a “Turkey merchant.” He was born in Newport Street, Long Acre, Westminster, on 25th June 1736. Some portion of his school days was passed, when he was about seven years old, in “an academy in Soho Square,” and when three years older he went to a school in a Kentish village. For a time (1744-46) he was at Westminster School, but the greater part of his educa- tion was got at Eton, and then under private tuition,

first at Sevenoaks in Kent (1753) and then at Raven- stone in Northamptonshire. In 1755 he was entered at St John's College, Cambridge, and took his degree of B.A. in 1758, as last but one of the senior optimes, Beadon, his life-long friend, afterwards bishop of Bath and Wells, being among the wranglers in the same year. Strange to say, the object of all this care and expense found hinself'doomed to the drudgery of ushership at a boarding school at Blackheath, and the pleasures of his lot were not enhanced by his father's strongly expressed desire that he should take orders in the Church of England. A strange vacillation marked his career at this period, a vacillation probably due to a constant struggle between his own inclination and the wishes of his father. He was admitted to the diaconate of the church, and almost at the same time was entered at the Inner Temple. He studied for the bar for some time, mostly in the company of Dunning and Kenyon, and then was ordained as a priest of the national church by the bishop of Salisbury. After this event his father obtained for him the next presentation to the small vicarage of New Brentford, to which Horne was duly admitted, and he retained its scanty profits until 1773. During a part of this time he was absent on a tour in France, acting as the bear-leader of a son of the miser Elwes. To his credit be it said that while he resided at Brentford he discharged with exem- plary regularity all the duties of his profession, and that, reviving a practice of the previous century, he studied medicine for the benefit of his poorer parishioners. Under the excitement created by the actions of Wilkes and the blunders of his ministerial opponents, Horne plunged into politics with consuming zeal, The newspapers abounded with his productions, but his chief effort was a. scathing pamphlet on Lords Bute and Mansfield, setting out the "petition of an Englishman." In 1765 he again went abroad as tutor, and on this occasion he escorted to Italy the son of a Mr Taylor, who lived near his Middlesex parish, a young man subject to fits of insanity. It was while passing through Paris on this tour that he made the personal acquaintance of Wilkes, and it was while at Montpellier, in January 1766, that a letter addressed by Horne to Wilkes laid the seeds of that personal antipathy which afterwards grew so rapidly. In the summer of 1767 the travelled parson landed again on English soil, and, in spite of his latent distrust of the so-called ‘‘ patriot," his exertions quickly obtained for Wilkes that seat for

the county of Middlesex which ensured his fortune. Horne was deeply concerned in all the proceedings of the corpo- ration of London in support of the popular cause, and he advised, if he did not actually draw up, the celebrated speech which Alderman Beckford addressed to his sovereign. As an incidental act in this struggle with the court and the majority of the House of Commons, Horne involved himself in a dispute with George Onslow, the member for Surrey, which culminated in a civil action, ultimately decided in Horne's favour, and in the loss by his oppo- nent of his seat in parliament. An influential association, called "the Society for Supporting the Bill of Rights," was founded, mainly through the exertions of Horne, in 1769, but the members were soon divided into two opposite camps of the thick and thin partisans of Wilkes and of those who refused to be labelled by the name of any combatant, and in 1770 Horne and Wilkes broke out into open warfare. Into this controversy, carried on with that unflagging zeal which always springs from personal hatred, none will now care to enter; it benefited the fortunes of neither of the combatants, and it damaged the success of the cause for which they had both laboured energetically. In 1771 Horne obtained at Cambridge, though not with- out some opposition fron. members of both the political

wooo K EB

parties, his degree of M.A., and in the same year he em- barked on a more laborious and costly undertaking, that of vindicating the right of printing an account of the debates in parliament, in which, after a protracted struggle between the ministerial majority and the civic authorities, the right' was definitely established. The energies of the indefatigable parson knew no bounds. In the same year (1771) he crossed swords with Junius, and ended in dis- arming his masked antagonist. It is a curious corollary to this controversy that more than one speculator has identified him with Junius. "Horne had now passed more than half the allotted span of life, and his only fixed income consisted of those scanty emoluments attached to a position which galled him daily. He resigned his bene- fice, and betook himself to the study of the law and to his studies in philology. An accidental circumstance, however, occurred at this moment which largely affected his future. His friend Mr William Tooke had purchased a consider- able estate south of the town of Croydon in Surrey, part of which seems to have

consisted of Purley Lodge in Coulsdon. The possession of this property brought about frequent disputes with an adjoining landowner, and, after many actions in the law courts, the friends of Mr Tooke's opponent endeavoured to obtain, by a bill forced through the Houses of Parliament, the privileges which the law had not assigned to him. Horne thereupon, bya bold libel on the Speaker, drew public attention to the case, and, although he himself was placed for a time in the custody of the sergeant-at-arms, the clauses which were injurious to the interests of Mr Tooke were eliminated from the bill through the publicity which his conduct had given to the matter. Mr Tooke's gratitude knew no bounds; he declared his intention of making his friend the heir to his fortune, and, if the design was never carried into effect, Horne derived from the generous old man during his life- time large gifts of money. No sooner had this matter been happily settled than Horne found himself involved in a more serious trouble than any that had yet befallen him. For his conduct in signing the advertisement soli- citing subscriptions for the relief of the relatives of the Americans murdered by the king's troops at Lexington and Concord, he was tried at the Guildhall in July 1777 before Lord Mansfield, found guilty, and committed to the King's Bench prison in St George's Fields, from which he only emerged after a year's durance, and after a loss, in fine and costs, amounting to £1200. Soon after his deliverance, as he had thrown off, as he thought, his clerical gown, he applied to be called to the bar, but his application was negatived on the ground that his orders in the church were indelible. To return to the church was now impossible ; and Horne tried his fortune, but without success, in farming some land in Huntingdonshire. Two tracts which were penned by him, one before and the other after this failure in practical life, exercised great influence in the country. One of them, criticizing the measures of Lord North's ministry, passed through nume- rous editions; the other set out a scheme of reform which he afterwards withdrew in favour of that advocated by Pitt. On his return from his voluntary banishment in Huntingdonshire, he became once more a frequent guest at Mr Tooke's house of Purley, and in 1782 assumed the name of Horne Tooke, which is now invariably assigned to him. In 1786 Horne Tooke conferred perpetual fame upon his benefactor's country house by adopting as a second title of his elaborate philological treatise of "Ezeo. Irepdevra, the more popular though misleading title of The Diversions of Purley. The treatise at once attracted attention in England and the Continent,

was universally read by the vulgar as well as the learned, and, while its conclusions, if not always carrying conviction to the erudite, were

deemed by them worthy of consideration as proceeding from a mind of extensive learning and singular acute- ness, the fame given to Purley by the choice of the title gratified its owner. The first part was published in 1786, the second in 1805, The best edition is that which was published in 1829, under the editorship of Richard Taylor, with the additions written in the author's interleaved copy. °

Between 1782 and 1790 Tooke gave his support to Pitt, and in the election for Westminster, a constituency in which Fox was vitally interested, he threw all his energies into the ministerial cause. With Fox he was never on terms of friendship, and Samuel Rogers, in his 7'able Talk, asserts that their antipathy was so pronounced that at a dinner party given by a prominent Whig not the slightest notice was taken by Fox of the presence of Horne Tooke. It was after the election of Westminster in 1788 that Tooke depicted the two rival statesmen in his celebrated pamphlet of Zwo Pair of Portraits. At the general election of 1790 he came forward as a candidate for that distinguished constituency, in opposition to Fox and Lord Hood, but was defeated; and, though he again sought the suffrages of its voters in 1796, and his speeches at the hustings were never exceeded in ability, he was again at the bottom of the poll. Meantime the excesses of the French republicans had unhinged the minds of all sections of society in England, and the actions of the Tory min- istry faithfully represented the feelings of the country. Horne Tooke was arrested early on the morning of 16th May 1794, and conveyed to the Tower. His trial for high treason lasted for six days (October 17-23) and ended in his acquittal, the jury only requiring the short space of eight minutes to settle their verdict. The evi- dence which the crown could adduce in support of the charge proved to be of the slightest description, and the demeanour of the accused throughout the proceedings furnished abundant proofs of the resolution of his mind and the force of his abilities. His public life after this event was only distinguished by one act of importance. Through the influence of Lord Camelford, the fighting peer, he was returned to parliament in 1801 for the pocket borough of Old Sarum.

No sooner was he returned to the House of Commons than Lord Temple endeavoured to secure his exclusion on the ground that he had taken orders in the church, and one of Gillray's caricatures delineates the two politicans, Temple and Camelford, playing at battledore and shuttlecock, with Horne Tooke as the shuttlecock. The ministry of Addington would not support this suggestion, but a bill was at once introduced by them and carried into law, which rendered all persons in holy orders ineligible to sit in the House of Commons. The parliamentary life of the member for Old Sarum was preserved through one parliament, but at its expiration he was excluded for ever.

The last years of Tooke's life were spent in retirement in a house on the west side of Wimbledon Common, and there he was visited by the leading members of the party of progress. The traditions of his Sunday parties have lasted unimpaired to this day, and the most pleasant pages penned by his biographer describe the politicians and the men of letters who gathered round his hospitable board. His con- versational powers rivalled those of Dr Johnson ; and, if more of his sayings have not been chronicled for the benefit of posterity, the defect is due to the absence of a Boswell. Through the liberality of his friends, his last days were freed from the pressure of poverty, and he was enabled to place his illegitimate son in a position which soon brought him wealth, and to leave a competency to his two illegiti- mate daughters. llness seized him early in 1810, and for the next two years his sufferings were acute. He died in his house at Wimbledon on 18th March 1812, and his body

was buried with that of his mother at Ealing, the tomb | which he had prepared in the garden attached to his house at Wimbledon being found unsuitable for the interment. An altar-tomb still stands to his memory in Ealing church- yard. A catalogue of his library was printed in 1813.

The Life of Horne Tooke, by Alexander Stephens, is written in an unattractive style, and was the work of an admircr only admitted to his acquaintance at the close of his days. Its main facts are reproduced with more brightness in an essay by Mr J. E. Thorold Rogers in the second series of his Historical Gleanings. Many of Horne Tooke's wittiest sayings are

preserved in the Zable Talk of Samuel Rogers and 8S. T. Coleridge. (ive 12, (Ch)

TOPAZ. It appears that the stone described by ancient writers under the name of tomagos, in allusion to its occurrence on the island of Topazion in the Red Sea, was the mineral which we now know as the chrysolite or PERIDOTE (9.v.). The topaz of modern mineralogists was unknown to the ancients. Topaz occurs either crystallized, in association with granitic roeks, or in the form of rolled pebbles in the beds of streams. The crystals are ortho- rhombic prisms, with a perfect cleavage parallel to the base, or transverse to the long axis of the prism. This cleavage is recognized by the lapidary as the “ grain” of the stone. It is notable that crystals of topaz are com- monly hemimorphic ; in other words, the prisms are ter- minated by dissimilar faces. This hemimorphism is asso- ciated with the property of pyroelectricity (see MrIner- ALOGY, vol. xvi. p. 376). The chemical composition of the topaz has given rise to much discussion, but the mineral is now generally regarded as a silicate of aluminium associ- ated with the fluorides of aluminium and silicon. When strongly heated it suffers considerable loss of weight. Brewster, examining the topaz microscopically, detected numerous fluid cavities, whence he concluded that it had been formed in the wet way. Two of the fluids obtained from these cavities have received the names of brewster- linite and cryptolinite. Some of the finest topazes are almost colourless, and may be occasionally mistaken for diamonds. The topaz, however, is inferior in hardness ; it lacks “fire”; and it becomes electric when heated—a, pro- perty not possessed by the diamond. Colourless topazes are known to French jewellers as gouttes d’eau, and in Brazil as pingas d@agoa—names which refer to the limpi- dity of the stone —while in England they pass in trade under the curious name of minas novas. The beauty of the stone is best developed when in the form of a brilliant. The topaz is cut on a leaden wheel by means of emery, and is polished with tripoli. Coloured topazes are usually either yellow or blue. The pleochroism of the stone is very marked: thus the colour of the sherry-yellow crystals from Brazil is resolved by the dichroiscope into brownish yellow and rose-pink. The colour is unstable, the yellow topaz especially being liable to suffer bleaching by exposure to sunlight. Hence the fine series of crystals of Siberian topaz from the Kochscharow collection, now in the British Museum, is carefully protected from light by means of opaque

pasteboard caps. In 1750 a Parisian jeweller named Dumelle discovered that the yellow topaz of Brazil, when exposed to a moderate heat, assumed a rose-pink colour. It is generally believed that all the pink topaz occurring in jewellery owes its tint to artificial treatment. Formerly it was the practice to heat the stone in a sand- bath, but the change of colour is now generally effected by wrapping the stone in German tinder, which is then ignited. This “burnt topaz” is sometimes known to jewellers as “ Brazilian ruby.” In like manner the blue topaz occasionally passes under the name of “Brazilian sapphire,” and the pale green as “aquamarine ’—a name which is strictly applicable only to the sea-green beryl. The largest known cut topaz is a fine brilliant, weighing 368 carats, and termed the “ Maxwell Stuart topaz.”

TO P—

YO ih

The topaz is occasionally found in Britain, but usually in small erystals ‘unfit for jewellery. It occurs in granite at St Michael’s Mount in Cornwall, in Lundy Island, and in Arran, but the finest British specimens are obtained from the Highlands of Scotland. Ben-a-bourd, one of the Cairngorm group, yiclds good blue crystals. Topaz occurs in colourless and blue crystals in the granite of the Mourne Mountaius in Ireland; and microscopic crystals are not uncommon in certain other granites. The famous topaz-rock of the Schneckenstein, in Saxony, yields pale yellow crystals of great beauty as mineralogical specimens, but not suited for cutting. The yellow Saxon topaz does not scem to change colour on exposure to heat. Some of the finest topaz comes from near Odon Tchelon, in Siberia; while the well-known deep-yellow crystals of Brazil occur near Villa Rica (Ouro Preto). Fine topaz, pale blue and colourless, is found, as rolled crystals, in Tasmania aud on Flinders Island in Bass’s Strait. It also occurs in the tin-drifts of New South Wales ; and beautifully-formed limpid crystals, of small size, accompany stream-tin at Durango, in Mexico. Fine topaz fit for jewellery has recently been worked at the Platte Mountain, near Pike’s Peak, Colorado. One stone, weighing 125 carats, has been described as being “as fine a gem as America has produced of any kind” (Kunz, 1885). Topaz also occurs in cavities in rhyolite at Nathrop and Chalk Mountain, Colorado, and

in trachyte near Sevier Lake, Utah. It is likewise found in Arizona, in New Mexico, and at Stoneham, Maine.

Oriental topaz is the name sometimes given to yellow corundum, a mineral which is readily distinguished from ordinary topaz by its superior hardness and density. The yellow and smoky varicties of quartz, or cairngorm, are often known in trade as Scotch topaz, but these are inferior to true topaz in hardness and in density. The chief differences between the three may be thus expressed :—

+ Scotch Topaz.

7

2°6

True Topaz.

8

3°5 Orthorhombic.

Oriental Topaz.

9 4

Hexagonal.

Mlandine@ssin…0.-.c0e+

Specific gravity Crystallization. ..... Hexagonal.

TOPEKA, a city of the United States, the county seat of Shawnee county and the capital of the State of Kansas, is situated (39° 3’ N. lat. and 95° 39’ W. long.) for the most part upon the south bank of the Kansas or Kaw river, upon a level prairie bench considerably elevated above the river. A small portion, known locally as North Topeka, lies upon the north side of the river. Besides the State capitol, which is an imposing building in the midst of an extensive park, the city contains the State insane asylum and the

reform school. The Atchison, Topeka, and Santa Fé Railroad. Company has its offices and work- shops here, and the city is also intersected by a branch of the Union Pacific line. In 1860 Topeka had only 759 inhabitants ; in 1870 the number had risen to 5790. In 1880 the population was 15,452 (8140 males and 7312 females) ; and in 1886 the number is returned at 25,005, making Topeka the second largest city in the State. The assessed valuation in 1886 was $6,547,079, and the debt of the corporation only $422,900.

TORCELLO, a small island 6 miles north-east of Venice, now almost deserted, but once a place of much importance. Torcello was one of the parent islands from which Venice was colonized, and possessed a cathedral church long before St Mark's was founded. In the 11th century Torcello had already begun rapidly to decline. The existing cathedral of S. Maria is a building of the highest ecclesiological importance, unique in Europe as a perfect example of the arrangement of the choir in the 6th or 7th century, when the original cathedral was built, and, though most of the upper structure was rebuilt by Bishop Orseolo! about 1008, the plan of the church and the fittings of the choir still exist as they were originally designed. The church consists of a nave, with ten bays of arches on marble monoliths, and three aisles each terminated by an apse. Round the walls of the central apse are six tiers of seats for the officiating clergy, and, in the centre, raised above the others, a marble throne

| for the bishop, approached by a flight of steps (see vol.

1 Son of the Venetian doge Pietro Orseolo I.

iii. p. 418, fig. 16). The high altar stood in front of the steps, and the celebrant stood with his back to the apse, looking over the altar towards the congregation. An exactly similar arrangement still exists in many of the early Coptic churches of Old Cairo: the church of Abu Sergeh is a specially perfect example! When the church was reconstructed in 1008, Bishop Orseolo did not interfere with the older and then obsolete arrangements of the choir, but added a later choir, formed by marble screens, projecting three bays into the nave, with seats along three sides of the enclosure,—an arrangement like that which still exists in the church of S. Clemente in

Rome (see Roms, vol. xx. p. 833). The present choir-stalls date from the 15th century. A fine marble ambo was at the same time placed outside the cancelli, and the position of the celebrant at the high altar was reversed. The vaults of the three apses are covered with fine glass mosaics, added probably in the 12th century: in the centre is a large figure of the Virgin, with the twelve apostles below ; other mosaics cover the vaults of the aisle-apses and the whole entrance wall. The latter, much restored, has scenes of the Crucifixion, the Doom, and Heaven and Hell. The sculpture of the nave capitals and on the marble cancelli is very graceful work of Byzantine style, closely resembling similar panels at Ravenna. One remarkable peculiarity of this church is the marble shutter which closes each window on the right wall; these have pivots which revolve in projecting corbels—a very early method of closing windows of which very few examples still exist. Even when the shutters were closed some dim light passed through the semitranslucent marble slabs.2 An octagonal baptistery, also built by Bishop Orseolo, stood outside the main entrance to the church, but has been rebuilt on a smaller scale. The crypt under the central apse of the cathedral is probably part of the original church, unaltered by any later changes.? The small church of 8. Fosca, which is connected with the cathedral by a loggia, is also a building of exceptional interest, dating from the 10th cen- tury. ‘It is purely Oriental in plan, and much resembles that of St Mark’s at Venice and 8. Vitale at Ravenna, on a small scale. It has a cruciform nave, with a large dome supported on eight columns, and a projecting choir with three apses. Externally it is surrounded by a loggia, supported on marble columns with rich Byzantine capitals. 8. Fosca was partially rebuilt in the 12th century, and has since been much modernized, but its original very interest-ing plan still remains but little changed.

TORGAU, a fortified town in the Prussian province of Saxony, is situated on the left bank of the Elbe, 30 miles north-east of Leipsic and 26 miles south-east of Witten- berg. Its most conspicuous building is the Schloss Hartenfels, on an island in the Elbe, begun in 1481 and completed in 1544 by the elector John Frederick the Magnanimous. This castle is one of the largest Renais- sance buildings in Germany, and contains a chapel con-secrated by Luther in 1544. The town-house is a quaint building of the middle of the 16th century, and there are several other large and fine buildings, chiefly modern. The parish church contains the tomb of

Catherine von Bora, Luther’s wife. The once flourishing weaving and brewing industries of Torgau have declined in modern times ; but the town has manufactures of gloves and

1 See Middleton in Archeologia, vol. xlviii. p. 398.

2 Similar marble slabs, not made to move, still exist in the apse windows of 8. Miniato, near Florence, and once existed in the basilica of S. Lorenzo fuori le Mura, Rome.

®’ The cathedral of Patenzo, in Istria, a work of the 6th century, much resembles the cathedral of Torcello (see vol. iii. p. 418, fig. 17). Similar plans are also to be seen in many of the early churches of Syria (see De Vogiié, Syrie Centrale, Paris, 1865) as well as in the Coptic churches of Egypt.

- OO 5 SAT

miscellaneous articles, and carries on trade in grain, &c., on the Elbe and by rail. The fortifications, begun in 1807 at Napoleon’s command, are largely surrounded with water ; they include a ¢éte-de-pont at the end of the bridge across the Elbe. In 1885 the population was 10,988 (in 1783 4000), a large proportion of them soldiers.

Torgau is said to have existed as the capital of a distinct princi- pality in the time of the emperor Henry I., but by 1305 it was in the possession of the margrave of Meissen. It was a frequent resi- dence of the electors of Saxony. In Reformation times Torgau appears as the spot where John of Saxony and Philip of Hesse formed their league against the Roman Catholic imperial estates ; and the Torgau Articles, drawn up here by Luther in 1530, were the basis of the Augsburg Confession. The Thirty Years’ War inflicted great suffering on the town. In 1760 Frederick the Great defeated the Austrians in the neighbourhood of Torgau. The town capitulated to Tauentzien on January 10, 1814, after a siege of three months.

TORONTO, the capital of the province of Ontario and the second largest city in the Dominion of Canada, is situated on a large and finely sheltered bay on the north shore of Lake Ontario, between the rivers Don and

Humber. The magnetical and meteorological observatory, in the university grounds, stands at a height of 108 feet above the lake, and approximately 342 feet above the level of the sea, in lat. 43° 39’ 35” N., long. 79° 23’ 39” W. Toronto is 39 miles north-east of Hamilton, at the head of Lake Ontario, and 310 miles west-south-west of Montreal. The bay is formed by a peninsula or island about 6 miles long, enclosing a fine basin of 3°44 square miles, with a narrow entrance at the west end. This forms a safe and commodious harbour. The city stands on a thick deposit of boulder clay, overlying shaly sandstones of the Cin- cinnati or Hudson River group, practically equivalent in

no se horal _— aN OL) Ce PS, oc LIC oan iss, ine [== + slema CII Je Fees |S Rere iio Heel fests jal TOTES x =| =n alae min 30S 3 SS am mes eel Sees BCE ee

Plan of Toronto.

1. Front Street. 10. Bay Street. 17. Metropolitan Church. 2. King Street (West). 11, Yonge Street.. ; 18. Free Library.

8. King Street. 12, Parliament Build- | 19. St James’s Cathedral. 4, King Street (East). ings. 20, River Don.

5. Richmond Street. 13. Government House. 21. Knox College.

6. Queen Street (West). 14. Upper Canada Col- | 22. University College.

7. Queen Street. lege. 23. Magnetic Observatory. 8. Queen Street (East). 15. Osgoode Hall. 24, Queen’s Park.

9. York Street. 16. St Michael’s Cathedral. | 25. St James’s Park.

position to the Caradoc horizon of British geology. These thin-bedded sandstones crop out on the lake shore, and have been quarried for flagging and building purposes at the mouth of the Humber. In the northern part of the city the boulder clay is overlaid by stratified clays of the Post-Glacial age, largely used in the manufacture of bricks, of which many of the houses are built. The site slopes gradually from the margin of the bay for a distance

of 3 miles to a terrace or ancient lake margin immediately outside the northern limits of the city, which occupies an area of 12°83 square miles, or of 17-99 square miles including the harbour and island. The streets cross each other at right angles. Yonge Street, the main thorough-

fare running north and south, was constructed as a great military road in 1796, and extends under the same name, for upwards of 30 miles, to Lake Simcoe. It constitutes the dividing line of the city, the streets being reckoned east or west according to their relation to it.

The city is the seat of the provincial Government, with the official residence of the lieutenant-governor, the parliament buildings and Government offices, the courts of law, and the educational departmental buildings for Ontario. The provincial legislature occupies the old par- liament buildings erected in 1849, when Toronto was the capital of Upper Canada; but they have long been recog- nized as inadequate for the purpose. Plans have accord- ingly been prepared, and the new buildings are now in process of erection. ‘The site is in the centre of the Queen’s Park, a finely wooded park of upwards of 30 acres, originally laid out for the provincial university, and on which the old buildings of King’s College stood. The new university building occupies a fine site immediately to the west. It is an imposing structure, of great architec- tural beauty, in the Norman style, with a massive central tower. The buildings of the provincial school of practical science, and of the magnetical observatory, are also erected in the university grounds. The observatory is one of the meteorological stations established by the British Govern- ment, on the recommendation of the Royal Society, in 1840. It is now maintained by the Dominion Government.

The university, University College, and the school of practical science embrace in their conjoint teaching a comprehensive system of training in arts and science ; and in them upwards of 500 students receive their training in arts, in the natural and applied sciences, and in engineering. There is also a medical faculty, reorganized under a recent Act, in conjunction with the department of science in the university. The university and college constitute unitedly the state institution maintained by public funds, and strictly secular. But it is surrounded with the theological and training

colleges of different denominations in affiliation with it, the students of which pursue their undergraduate course in the university for a degree in arts. The affiliated colleges, some of which give degrees in divinity, include Knox College (Presby- terian), Wycliffe College (Church of England), St Michael's College (Roman Catholic), Macmaster Hall (Baptist), and Victoria College (Methodist). Besides the provincial uni- versity and its affiliated colleges, Trinity College (Church of England) gives instruction in divinity and arts, and confers degrees in all the faculties. Toronto and Trinity medical schools occupy convenient buildings in the imme- diate vicinity of the general hospital, the Burnside lying-in hospital, and the Mercer eye and ear infirmary. The students in medicine number nearly 500, including a small number of lady students, for whom special instruction is provided. Upper Canada College, founded in 1829, is a provincial institution analogous to one of the great English public schools. It has about 300 students. The Collegiate Institute occupies a fine building immediately to the west of the horticultural gardens. It is the higher school, forming an important feature in the provincial system of education, and is maintained, along with the free public schools, from local taxes. Its students number 443, of whom 182 are females.

Osgoode Hall, the seat of the superior courts of law and equity, is an ornate Italian building, extended at various dates. The provincial asylum for the insane affords accommodation for upwards of 700 patients; it is sur- rounded with recreation grounds extending to 50 acres.

The city charities are numerous and well organized. The churches include some large and handsome buildings. Among the more important public buildings are those of

TO hk OG ©

the educational department, including a museum and gallery of art, normal and model schools; the custom- house, a fine Renaissance building, with extensive ware- houses attached; and the post-office, also of tasteful architectural design. The free city library occupies a com- modious building in Church Street, in addition to branch libraries in different parts of the city. It contains upwards of 47,000 vols. There are 35 city public schools, occupying large and commodious buildings, with 262 teachers and 20,213

children. The separate (Roman Catholic) schools number 13, with 60 teachers and 3792 children.

Toronto is the seat of many flourishing industries, in- cluding foundries, tanneries, furniture, stove, shoe, and other manufactories, flour-mills, breweries, &c. The site of the city is favourable to commerce. It is the centre of a rich agricultural district ; and its harbour is of easy access to the largest vessels that navigate the lakes. It lies directly opposite the mouth of the Niagara river, distant 40 miles; and throughout the season of navigation well- appointed steamers maintain communication with the prin- cipal routes of travel in the United States and Canada. By means of the Grand Trunk, the Great Western, the Northern, the Canada Pacific, and other railways, it forms an important commercial centre for distribution ; and it is the seat of the head offices of most of the banks and of the chief wholesale trade of western Canada. The direct route from the lower lakes to Lake Superior and the great North-West is by the Northern Railroad to Georgian Bay, where lines of steamers maintain constant communication from Collingwood and Owen Sound to Prince Arthur's Landing and the railways to Manitoba and the North-West.

In 1861 the population numbered 44,821 ; in 1871 it had increased to 56,092 ; in 1881 to 86,415; and in 1887 it is believed to amount to 140,000. The actual number on the assessment rolls is 111,800. The estimated value of real estate in Toronto is $105,000,000. The assessed value in 1886 was $83,556,811. The annual revenue of the city is estimated for 1887 at $1,812,941. The amount of customs duties for the fiscal year ending 30th June 1887 was $4,273,038. The value of exports to the same date was $3,192,157, and of imports $21,020,528. The city returns three members to the Canadian House of Commons, and three to the provincial legislature of Ontario.

In the despatches of Canadian officials of Louis XIV. in the 17th century Toronto means the country of the Hurons, a region lying between Lake Simcoe and Lake Huron, about 40 miles north. The river Humber, which enters Lake Ontario immediately to the west of the Bay of Toronto, though navigable only for a short distance eveu by canoes, formed with its portages a line of communication between Lake Ontario and the Huron country.

Hence the station near the mouth of the river became the common landing-place for trading and hunting parties bound for the region known of old as Toronto, and so received its name. A French trading post, built there in 1749, and originally named Fort Rouillé, after the French colonial minister Antoine Louis Rouillé, comte de Jouy, was familiarly known as Fort Toronto. The Northern Railway, the first one constructed in Upper Canada, followed the route of the old Indian trail, and established a direct line of comniunication, by means of steamers from Collingwood, with Lakes Huron, Michigan, and Superior. The railway passes through a fine agri-cultural country, and is uuw exteuded into the Muskoka and Nippitsing districts, bringing an extensive lumbering region into direct communication with Toronto.

The site for the town was surveyed inl 793 by Surveyor-General Bouchette, under the instruction of the lieutenant-governor, General Simcoe; and in his narrative of the original survey Bouchette describes the untamed aspect of the scene, with the

‘ group of wigwams of a little band of Mississaga Indians who con-

stituted the sole occupants of the land; while the waters of the bay and the neighbouring marshes were the haunts of innumerable coveys of wildfowl. The first parliament of Upper Canada held its second session in May 1793 at the town of Newark, at the mouth of the Niagara river; but in the following August the scat of government was transferred to Toronto, to which General Simcoe gave the name of York, in honour of the duke of York, the second son of George III. Under its new name the embryo metropolis

slowly progressed as the surrounding country was cleared and settled. The entrance to the harbour was guarded by two block houses ; provision was made for barracks and garrison stores; buildings were erected for the legislature ; and there the members of parliament, summoned by royal proclamation to ‘‘meet us in onr provincial parliament in our town of York,” assembled on the 1st of June 1797. Sixteen years later the population numbered only 456. The town was twice sacked in the war of 1812. General

Dearborn captured it at the head of a force of upwards of 2000 drawn from the neighbour- ing States. On their advance to the outworks of the garrison, the magazine of the fort exploded, whether by accident or design, killing many of the invaders. The halls of legislature and other buildings were burnt, and the town pillaged. On the restoration of peace the work of creating a capital for Upper Canada had well nigh to begin anew. But the city advanced with the general progress of the country. Trade centred in the little capital; the population in- creascd ; and needful manufactures were established. The organiza- tion of Upper Canada College in 1830, with a staff of teachers nearly all graduates of Cambridge, gave a great impetus to the city and pro- vince. In 1834 the population of York numbered fully 10,000; and an Act of the provincial legislature conferred on it a charter of in- corporation, giving it for the first time an efficient system of munici- pal government, with a mayor, aldermen, and councilmen, entrusted with the administration of its affairs. Under this charter it was constituted a city, with the name of Toronto. (D. W.)

TORPEDO. ‘Torpedoes may be briefly described as charges of some explosive agent, enclosed in water-tight cases, and moored or propelled under water at such depths that by their explosion they may sink or seriously damage a vessel in their vicinity. The use of torpedoes in naval warfare was proposed and even attempted in the end of the last and beginning of the present century, but no successful application of them was made until the American Civil War of 1861-64. The word “submarine mine” is generally substituted for “torpedo” when speaking of defensive or stationary mines, the latter term being reserved for loco- motive torpedoes, or others used in offensive operations.

1. Submarine Mines.—Submarine mines are divided into three classes:—(1) observation mines, fired by an electric current when the enemy is observed to be within the de- structive area of the mine; (2) electro-contact mines, which, when struck, fire by automatically completing the electric

The explosion of 500 ib of gun-cotton at a horizontal distance of 30 feet would seriously injure a vessel, and 30 ib in contact with the bottom below the armour would probably blow a hole through the outer and inner skin.

The depths given above are approximately the best depths to get the fullest effect out of the charges mentioned. When the water is so deep that if the mine were placed on the bottom it could not exert its full destructive effect on the bottom of a ship, it is given enough buoyancy to allow it to float above its moorings,—a mine on the bottom being termed a “ ground mine,” and a mine floating above its moorings a “ buoyant mine.”

If mines are placed too close together the explosion of one will damage those near it, the interval which must be left between them being—for a 100 tb mine, 100 feet ; for a 250 ib mine, 250 feet ; and for a 500 ib mine, 300 feet. There is therefore always a possibility of a ship passing through a single line of mines without coming within the destructive area of any. Mines are therefore generally arranged in two or more lines, the mines of one line covering the spaces left between the mines of the next, or several mines may be laid close together, and the whole exploded sinmultaneously.

The electric circuit of all electrical mines is very similar. A voltaic battery ashore has one pole put permanently to earth and the other pole joined to the electric cable lead- ing to the mine. This cable passes into the mine case through a water-tight joint, and is connected up to one pole of the electric detonator, the other pole of the deton- ator being connected to the mouth-piece of the mine and consequently to earth. To prevent the mine being fired until the proper moment has arrived, this circuit must be broken somewhere, and means provided for completing it when the mine is to be fired. In the case of observation inines this is done by inserting a firing key in the electric cable near the battery, and in electro-contact mines by a circuit closer in the mine.

The right moment to fire an observation mine is determined by Obser- two observers ashore, who have each adjusted two sights in line vation with the mine, as it was lowered into position,—the stations for mines,

circuit from the battery ashore; (3) mechanical mines, which, when struck, fire through the action of some con-

trivance within themselves, andare not connected with the shore. Mines of the first class are used in places where a channel has to be kept clear for screw steamers to pass, the second class in those parts of the channel where

there is little traffic, and the third class in channels which it is intended to bar equally against friend or foe.

Electrical mines have the advantage over mechanical that by the removal of the firing battery the passage of a ship is rendered perfectly safe, and that the condition of the mine can be ascertained by electrical tests, but the electric cables are able to damage, and add greatly to the expense of the defence.

Gun-cotton and dynamite are the explosives generally used in mines, the charges varying from 30 ib to 500 Ib, according to the description of mine. In all mines the charge is exploded by means of a detonator con- taining fulminate of mercury. In mines loaded with gun-cotton the detonator is inserted in a priming charge of dry gun-cotton, this priming charge being in a metal case, closely surrounded by the wet gun-cotton comprising the remainder of the charge. Where dynamite is employed the priming charge is not necessary. Experiments made to determine the horizontal distance at which an ironclad will be vitally injured by different charges have yielded the following general results :—

Charge. Submergence. Distance. DME TION oi… iccecss see eisessceeens 10 to 15 ft. 4 ft. 250 Ib ground mine…..... Seon ite 30 ft 10 ft. 500 ib ground mine…….....~~—/del>.++ 60 ft Wont:~~

these observers being chosen so that their lines of sight may be as nearly as possible at right angles to each othcr. The electric cable from the mine is led past both observers and connected to a firing battery, one pole of which is put permanently to earth. A firing key inserted in the circuit at the station of each observer renders the simultaneous pressure of both keys necessary to explode the mine. If each observer depresses his firing key as the centre of the enemy crosses his own line of sight, both keys can only be pressed simultaneously if the enenty arrives at the intersection of the two lines of sight, and consequently over the mine. When many inines are placed in one channel, it is usual to moor them in three lines, the prolongation of each line converging to an observing station, where the direction of each line is marked by sights. The electric cables from all the mines come to another observing station, and are there connected to separate firing keys, each of which has one pole joined up to a firing battery. The observer at this station

is also provided with a scparate sight marking the dircction of each mine in all the lines. The former station is termed the “ converg- ing” and the latter the “firing” station. The observer at the converging station telegraphs to the firing station the instant at which the centre of the enemy is on one of the lines of mines, the observer at the firing station determining by means of his sights which individual niine the enemy is over, and he can fire it by pressing the corresponding key.

Instead of separate sights for each mine, observing ares nay be used. These instruments are furnished with a telescope, which can be constantly directed on the enemy, a bar attachment auto- inatically closing the circuit when the direction of the enemy cor- responds toa mine. The camera obscura has also been used for determining the position of an enemy in the mine field.

Electro-contact mines are buoyant mines moored about 10 feet Electro- below the surface, and are in connexion with an electric battery contact ashore. They are arranged to explode on being struck by a passing mines.

ship, by means of an apparatus contained in the mine itself, called a circuit closer. Many different kinds of circnit closers are in ‘use, but they all depend upon there being a break in the electric circuit while the circuit closer is at rest, the circuit closer completing the circuit when the mine receives a blow. That most commonly used

Mechan- ical mines.

Electro- mechan- ical mines.

Counter- mining.

450

(fig. 1) consists of a steel spindle @ carrying a weight 6 on its upper end. This steel spindle carries an insulated brass ring ¢, to which the wire from the detonator d is attached, the other pole of the detonator being connected to the cable ¢ leading to the electric battery. On the mine being struck the inertia of the weight causes the steel rod to vibrate sufficiently to bring the insulated ring in contact with brass springs in connexion with the earth, thus com- pleting the circuit of the electric battery through the detonators. Another form of circuit closer is a tube of ee mercury, which by splashing up when the mine is struck completes the electric circuit between two previously insulated points.

A single main cable from the battery may have several clectro-contact mines attached to it; the expense of leading a separate wire from each mine to the battery is therefore avoided. If one mine was fired the broken end of its branch wire from the main cable would be left in the water, and on another mine being struck it would only receive a

——$___

oYo

Fig. 1. portion of the current, as the battery would be connected to earth

through the broken branch. Each branch wire must therefore havo a disconnector in circuit, clear of the explosion. The discon- nector consists of a platinum wire fuse contained in a strong iron case, and the same current which fires the detonator in the mine fuses the platinuin wire bridge of the disconnector, and the circuit to the broken branch remains insulated.

Mechanical mines, of which there are many different patterus, contain the means of ignition within themselves, and are nncon- nected with any apparatus ashore. They may be ignited by per- cussion, frietion, chemical action, and electricity.

A simple form of mechanical mine has a heavy top, which, on being pushed off by a passing ship, either pulls out a pin and re- leases a plunger, which is then forced by a powerful spring into a detonator, or a friction tube is fired when the weight falls on a line attached to it. Another form, known as Abel's mechanical ex- ploder, consists of a glass tube containing sulphuric acid, and sur- rounded by chlorate of potash and sugar. The whole is contained in an india-rubber tube, which projects from the top of the mine, the lower end being in communication with the charge. When struck, the india-rubber tube bends, and, the glass tube breaking, the sulphuric acid mixes with the chlorate of potash and sugar and inflames the charge.

Electro-mechanical mines can be made by placing a voltaic battery inside the mine itself and joining it wp toa fuse and circuit closer, the circuit closer completing the circuit when the mine is struck. Another form of electro-mechanical mine (fig. 2) has several projecting horns (a, a, a) of lead tubing. Inside each horn is a glass tube containing bichromate of potash, and immediately under it a row of small zine and carbon plates, 6, in a contain- ing cell. On any one of the lead horns being bent, the glass tube is broken, and the bichromate of potash drops into the eell, converting the arrangement into a voltaic battery, which, being already eounected to the electric fuse c, fires the mine.

All mechanical and clectro-mechanical mines are provided with some contrivance to gnard against accidental explosion during the process of laying. 1n mechanical mines a safety pin can be with- drawn after the miue is in position, or, in the case of Abel's exploder, the projecting tube is surrounded by iron segments which fall off when the mine is in position. In electro-mechanical nines two of the wires forming part of the circuit inside the mine may be brought through to the outside and kept apart till the mine is in position, these wires being long enough to allow of the operator retiring clear of the explosion before joining them up and rendering the mine dangerous.

Mechanical mines have the advantage over electrical that they require fewer trained men –

Fig. 2.

TOR? ED 0

charges in an enemy’s mine field. Mines containing heavy charges would be used for the purpose, several of these mines being dropped in succession from a boat towed by a fast steamer, the whole line being exploded together as soon as the last mine had been dropped. Numerous experiments have proved that the explosion of a 500 Ib mine will effectually destroy any mine within a radius of 100 feet; the countermines would therefore be dropped at double this distance apart, and the channel so cleared marked by buoys. Electric cables can also be caught and raised to the surface by grapnels; or the grapnel may have a ease of explosive between its arms, so that, instead of raising the wire, it may be cut by firing the charge.

2. Locomotive Torpedoes.—Locomotive torpedoes are a numerous class, the principal being the Whitehead, Lay, Sims, Brennan, and Ericsson. The Whitehead is the only one which can be considered a well-developed naval weapon.

This torpedo (fig. 3) is made in different sizes, varying

inches in diameter ; the cross section is circular, tapering to a point at each end. It is capable of being so adjusted that on being discharged it will travel at any depth be- tween 5 and 15 feet below the surface, and it will maintain this depth for its entire run. The torpedo travels at a uniform speed for the whole of its range, the speed and range varying for different patterns; the latest type has a speed of 24 knots for 600 yards. The torpedo can be set so that, in the event of its not striking the ship aimed at, it will stop at the end of its range and sink. Jor exercise it can be set to stop at any distance within the limits of its range, rise to the surface, and float. The torpedo is divided into several compartments. ‘The foremost A con- tains a charge of from 30 to 100 tb of gun-cotton, accord- ing to the size of the torpedo. This charge is fired on the torpedo striking a ship by a pistol which screws into the nose of the torpedo. On impact the point of the pistol is driven inwards and forces

the point of a steel striker into a detonator. By means of powerful air-punips air is com- pressed into the air-chamber B to a pressure of 1000 tb on the square inch, and actuates a three-cylinder engine, which drives two propellors revolving in opposite directions in the tail, The mechanism in the balance-chamber C works two exterior rudders on each side of the tail, which keep the torpedo at a uniform depth during its run. This device has never been patented, but is a secret; the details of it, however, have been purchased by all prominent maritime nations.

The tail F is fitted with four broad fins, which tend to keep the torpedo on a straight course and prevent it roll- ing. The horizontal tail fins carry four rudders, two hori- zontal and two vertical. The horizontal rudders worked from the balance-chamber keep the torpedo at its set depth ; the vertical rudders are permanently adjusted so as to cause the torpedo to travel in a straight line.

The air-chamber of a torpedo is usually made of fluid compressed steel, the remaining compartments of thin steel plate, and the interior mechanism of phosphor-bronze. In Germany torpedoes are now made entirely of phosphor- bronze.

The torpedo can be discharged from above or below

for their manipulation, aro

cheaper, and can be placed in

position very rapidly. But no really efficient method

has yet been devised that

will ensure a mechanical

NY/

mine, after it has been Ye placed in position, being safely taken up again for examination or removal, nor can any tests be applied to ascertain if it remains in an efficient condition.

All mines, especially thoso with electric cables attached, must be protected by gun fire or guard boats, as, if the mine field is un- protected, they can be easily destroyed by countermining or creep-

ing. Countermining is carried out by exploding a succession of

_———————————————————— === SS SSSSSSSAAASSSSS SSSA

| by an air-tight door.

LLL <

White- from 12 feet to 19 feet in length and from 12 to 15 head

torpedo,

Lay torpedo.

Sims torpedo.

Brennan torpedo.

Ericsson torpedo.

Out- rigger, drifting, and tow- ing tor- pedoes,

Torpedo boats.

TO R—

compressed air, the contents of which, by means of a suit- able firing valve d, can be instantaneously admitted into the gun. When the torpedo is to be discharged this firing valve is opened, and the compressed air in the reservoir forces the torpedo out at a high velocity, a tripper 6 pro- jecting through the top of the gun throwing back the starting lever of the torpedo on its way out. From below water the torpedo is discharged through a tube, the muzzle of which forms part of the stem of the ship, the tube being fitted with an outside valve which prevents the water from entering while the

torpedo is placed in the tube. Latterly powder has been used instead of compressed air for the ejecting force.

The Lay torpedo is a boat of cylindrical form, the fore part being charged with an explosive. The motive power is carbonic acid gas generated in the usual way. As only a very small portion of the boat is visible on the surface, two guide rods, one on each end of the vessel, mark its position at any part of itsrun. The boat ean be started, stopped, and steered by means of-an eleetrie cable, con- taining several insulated wires, which is paid out from the boat as it travels,

The Sims torpedo is cigar-shaped, and is suspended to a boat- shaped float. The torpedo is propelled by screws driven by an electric motor situated in the body, the current for which is supplied from a dynamo ashore. The electric cable is coiled on a drum in the torpedo, and pays out as the torpedo advances. The torpedo is also stecred from the shore by an eleetric current. Its speed is about 12 knots.

The principle of the Brennan torpedo is as follows. The torpedo contains two drums upon which a large amount of pianoforte wire is wound. One end of the wire from each drum is taken to large drums ashore, which are revolved by a steam-engine. By winding up on the large drums ashore a rotatory motion is imparted to the drums in the torpedo, which by means of gearing revolve two serew propellers, aud these drive the torpedo through the water. The torpedo can be steered from the shore in any direction, by winding on one drum faster than the other, which alteration in motion moves a vertical rudder on the torpedo.

The Ericsson torpedo is a long fish-shaped weapon, made of wood, and weighted so as to have little or no buoyancy. The charge is contained in a metal ease at the fore end. It is pro- pelled by a charge of gunpowder, out of a submarine gun fixed in the bows of a ship. Its range is about 300 feet, and it fires on impact.

Outrigger, Drifting, and Towing Torpedoes.—Before the introduc- tion of the Whitchead, vesscls armed with torpedoes were princi- pally supplied with the outrigger torpedo. The explosive is con- tained in a mctal case secured to the end of a steel or wooden pole, which lies fore and aft in the

vessel carrying it. The pole can _be rigged out until the torpedo is submerged a short distance ahead of the vessel, and is fired on contact with the euemy's side, either by an operator in the boat completing the electric cireuit, or by the eireuit being eompleted by a circuit closer in the torpedo. In rivers, or places with a current, drifting torpedoes can be used. They should be suspended from floats, and arranged in groups or pairs connected together by a rope, so that they may catch across the bows of a vessel at anchor. They can be fired after a given lapse of time by clockwork and other devices, or can be so arranged that the firing arrangement is released on a catch being withdrawn by the action of a propeller wheel, which remains stationary as long as the torpedo drifts with the current, but is revolved by the force of the current when the torpedo is stopped. Towing torpedoes are constructed to diverge from either side of a ship when towed, which is effeeted by shaping the torpedo like an otter. The torpedo tows on the surface, and, on striking a ship's side, the head con- taining the charge drops off, and fires as its weight tautens a line eonnecting it to the body.

Torpedo Boats.—The great improvements made of late years in machine guns have rendered the outrigger and towing torpedo of little value for torpedo boats, as it would be almost impossible to approach a vessel near enough to use them before the boat would be destroyed by the storm of missiles which would be fired at her. All torpedo boats under construction, and most of those already completed, are therefore armed with the Whitehead torpedo. A modern torpedo boat is built entirely of steel, the plates often not exceeding 7s inch in thickness, as, in order to get the necessary high speed, the minimum of weight consistent with the necessary strength is of the firstimportance. There are three classes of boats, known as first, second, and third. The first are eapable of keeping the sea on their own account ; the second are for harbour defence ; and the third ean be carried on board a ship.

The following table gives the dimensions and other details of a boat of each type :—

ros 451

| Full tnicaea Boiler | Distance —_ is- Horse- | Pressure,| €2 steam with th Length.) Beam. | place-, si Power ib per ") Coal carried at ' nent! rots. | at

Hull || Square. | ————_———= Speed. | Inch. | Full | Half Speed. | Speed. Ft. Ft. in.| Tons. Knots. | Knots. Ist class..; 135 13 0] 88 23 1150 140 400 2000 | 2d class…) 86 11 0] 30 20 450 125 150 400 3d elass…| 64 7 G6{ 125] 16°5 150 120 100 250

The boilers and machinery are protected by coal, and an armoured tower protects the steering gear and telegraphs for controlling the engines.

Torpedo Nets.—The introduetion of the modern torpedo boat has Torpedo caused great attention to be paid to any means which will protect nets.

a ship from the torpedo. Most nations are adopting steel-wire netting, suspended from booms attached to the ship's side, the booms keeping the nets sufficiently far off to prevent any damage being done to the bottom by the explosion of the largest charge carried by a Whitehead. This netting, besides being cumbersome and heavy, cannot be used unless the ship is stationary or nearly so, so that in many cases it would be useless, but for ships at anchor it is of great value. Increased cellular subdivision is also being given to ships under construction, and special vessels, called '* torpedo catchers," are being built by most nations. A torpedo catcher is a vessel of superior size and strength, but with the same high speed as a torpedo boat, the principal arm of the torpedo catcher being machine guns. (iy, BG)

TORQUATUS. See MANLivs.

TORQUAY, a watering-place of England, is finely situated on the northern recess of Tor Bay, Devonshire, and on the Dartmouth and Torbay branch of the Great Western Railway, 12 miles north of Dartmouth, 23 south of Exeter, and 220 west-south-west of London. Owing to the beauty of its site and the equability of its climate, it is the favourite watering-place of Devon, and, being screened by lofty hills on the north, east, and west, and open to the sea breezes'of the south, it has a high reputa- tion asa winter resi-

SOs Mary dence. The tem- a han oe perature seldom Wes "Qu

rises as high as 70° in summer or falls below freezing point in winter The lower ground is oecupied by shops, hotels, and the plainer class of houses,

while man- sions and _ villas occupy the pictur- esque acclivities of the _ well-wooded limestone cliffs, commanding a great variety of fine views. There are still some remains of the original Torre abbey, founded for Praemonstratensians by William, Lord Brewer, in 1196. They stand to the north of the modern man- sion, but, with the exception of a beautiful pointed-arch portal, are of comparatively small importance. On the south of the gateway is an old 13th-century building, known as the Spanish barn. On Chapel Hill are the remains of a chapel of the 12th century, dedicated to St Michael, supposed to have formerly belonged to the abbey. St Saviour's parish church of Tor-Mohun, or Tormoham, an ancient stone structure, was restored in 1874, The old church at St Mary Church, to the north of Torquay, has been rebuilt in the Early Decorated style; and in 1871 a new tower was also erected as a memorial to Dr Phillpotts, bishop of Exeter, who with his wife is buried in the churchyard. St John's church, by Street, is a very fine example of modern Gothic. Among the principal

ee

y, SO Ne

. etd o 07X50″ The Basi:

Ufer New Harbour ES y The.

Environs of Torquay.

secular buildings are the town-hall with square tower (1852), the post-office (1865), the museum of the natural history society (1874), the theatre and opera-house (1880), the county police court, the market, and the schools of art and science (extended in 1887). There are a number of benevolent institutions, including the Torbay infirmary and dispensary (1843), the homeeopathic dispensary (1848), the Western hospital for consumption (1852), Crypt House institution for invalid ladies (1854), and the Mildmay home for incurable consumptives (1886). In 1886 the local board purchased from the lord of the manor, at a cost of £85,000, the harbours, piers, baths, assembly rooms, &e., including 60 acres of pleasure grounds and open

spaces. The town is supplied with water from the Dart- moor hills, 16 miles distant, at a cost of £120,000. There is a convenient harbour, extended in 1870 at a cost of £70,000, and having a depth of over 20 feet at low water. The principal imports are coals, timber, and slates, and the principal exports are stones of the Transi- tion limestone or Devonshire marble, which is much valued for building purposes. In the town are a number of marble-polishing works. ‘Terra-cotta ware of very fine quality is also manufactured from a deposit of clay at Watcombe and at Hele. The population of the urban sanitary district (Tormoham with Torquay, area 1465 acres) in 1871 was 21,657, and in 1881 it was 24,767. There was a village at Torre even before the foundation of the abbey, and in the neighbourhood of Torre are remains of Roman occupation. The manor was granted by William the Conqueror to Richard de Bruvere or de Brewere, and was subsequently known as Tor Brewer. After the defeat of the Spanish Armada, Don Pedro’s galley was brought into Torbay; and William, prince of Orange, landed at Torbay 5th November 1688. The bay was a rendezvous for the British flect during the war with France, and the first good houses at Torquay were built for the officers. Until

half a century ago it was an insignificant fishing village. See Blewitt’s Panorama of Torquay, 1832, and White’s History of Torquay, 1878.

TORQUEMADA, Juan bE (1388-1468), or rather JOHANNES DE TURRECREMATA, cardinal, was born at Valladolid in 1388, and at an early age joined the Do- minican order, early distinguishing himself for learning and devotion. In 1415 he accompanied the general of his order to the council of Constance, whence he proceeded to Paris for study, and took his doctor’s degree in 1423. After teaching for some time in Paris, he became prior of the Dominican house first in Valladolid and then in Toledo. In 1431 Pope Eugenius IV. called him to Rome and made him “‘ magister sancti palatii.” At the council of Basel he was one of the ablest and most prominent supporters of the view of the Roman curia, and he was rewarded with a cardinal’s hat in 1439. He died in

1468.

His principal works are In Gratiani Deeretum Commentarii, 4 vols., Venice, 1578; Haxpositio Brevis et Utilis super Toto Psalterio, Mainz, 1474;

Questiones Spirituales super Evangelia Totius Anni, Brixen, 1498; Summa LEcelesiastica, Salamanca, 1550. The last- named work has the following topics:—(1) De Universa Ecclesia ; (2) De Ecclesia Romana et Pontificis Primatu; (3) De Universali- bus Conciliis; (4) De Schismaticis et Hereticis.

TORQUEMADA, Tomas DE, inquisitor-general for Castile and Leon, was born early in the 15th century, and died in 1498. When called to the work with which his name is so unenviably associated he was prior of the Dominican house in Segovia. See INQUISITION.

TORRE ANNUNZIATA, a town of Italy, in the pro- vince of Naples, 124 miles south-east from that city, on the Bay of Naples, at the southern base of Vesuvius. The inhabitants are mainly occupied in fishing and in a brisk coasting trade; there are also manufactures of Sa io and macaroni. The population in 1881 was

TORRE DEL GRECO, a town of Italy, in the province of Naples, 74 miles to the south-east of that city, lies

at the south-west foot of Vesuvius, on the shore of the Bay of Naples. It is built chiefly of lava, and stands on the lava stream of 1631, which destroyed two-thirds of the older town. Great damage was done by the erup- tions of 1737 and 1794, when immense streams of lava flowed through the town into the sea; the earthquake of 1857 and the eruption of December 8, 1861, were even more destructive. After each disaster the people have returned and repaired the ruin, the advantage de- rived from the rich land on the flanks of the volcano and the proximity to the sea and to Naples being more than enough to overcome apprehensions of danger. In the outskirts are niany beautiful villas and gardens. The inhabitants are largely employed in fishing (tunny, oyster, sardine, and especially coral), and the neighbourhood is famed for its fruit and wine. The population in 1881 was 21,588.

TORREY, Joun (1796-1873), a distinguished American botanist, was a member of an old New England family which contributed several officers to the War of Independ- ence. He was born at New York, and spent his school days there, save for the concluding year at Boston. When he was 15

or 16 years of age his father received a prison appointment at Greenwich, and there he made the ac- quaintance of Amos Eaton, one of the foremost pioneers of natural history studies and popular science teaching in America. He thus learned the elements of botany, as well as something of mineralogy and chemistry, so deter- mining the studies of his life. In 1815 he commenced the study of medicine, meanwhile finding time to prepare his first catalogue of plants, and to establish a correspondence with American and foreign botanists, and in 1818 he com- menced practice. Stimulated by Elliott's account of the flora of South Carolina and Georgia, Torrey commenced a systematic account of the botany of the Northern States, of which the first and only volume appeared in 1824. In the same year he obtained the chair of chemistry and geology at West Point military academy, whence he was translated three years later to the chemical professorship in the college of physicians, New York. He next de- scribed the collections of the first exploration of the Colorado Territory, so laying the foundation of all subse- quent work upon the flora of the Rocky Mountains. In these years he also monographed the sedges, and did good service in substituting the natural for the Linnzean system. In 1836 he was appointed botanist to the State of New York, producing his Flora of the State in 1843; while from 1838-43 he carried on the publication of the earlier portions of ora of North America, with the assistance of his pupil Asa Gray. Becoming more and more immersed in chemical labours, which from 1857 passed partly and soon completely into those of U.S. assayer, he notwith- standing continued to accumulate and work up masses of material for this vast undertaking, which still awaits com- pletion at the hands of his colleague and successor, Prof. Gray. He evinced a continued interest in botanical teach- ing, and made over his valuable herbarium and library to Columbia College two or three years before his death. He will be remembered not only as the father of American systematic botany, and an accurate and faithful, if some- what excessively cautious, investigator, but also as an eminent teacher, and for an excellence of personal char- acter and simplicity of beliefs mucli resembling Faraday's. His memory is literally kept green by the beautiful Con- iferous genus Zorreya, and his labours commemorated and continued in the valuable memoirs of the Torrey Botanical Club.

See Gray, in Silliman's Journal, 1873.

TORRICELLI, Evaneceista (1608-1647), physicist and mathematician, was born at Faenza, October 15, 1608.

TOR—TOR

Left fatherless at an early age, he was carefully educated under the care of his uncle, a Camaldolese monk, who in 1627 sent him to Rome to profit by the scientific teachings of Benedetto Castelli. The perusal of Galileo's Dialoghi delle Nuove Screnze (1638) inspired his fertile mind with many fresh developments of the new mechanical principles there sct forth, which he embodied in a treatise De Motu (printed amongst his Opera Geometrica, 1644). Its communication by Castelli to Galileo in 1641 led to the adoption as a disciple by the Florentine sage of one who seemed not unworthy to become his successor. 'Torricelli accordingly, repairing to Florence, October 10, 1641, resided with Galileo, and acted as his amanuensis during the three remaining months of his life. On its close his contemplated return to Rome was anticipated by his nomination as grand-ducal mathematician and professor of mathematics in the Florentine academy. The discovery which has perpetuated his fame was made in 1643. Galileo had failed to perceive why water rcfuses to rise above 33 fect in a closed tube. It occurred to Torricelli to try the experiment in a more compendious form. The anticipated result ensued that the suspended column of mercury was shorter than that of water in the proportion of its greater specific gravity. He immediately concluded both to be sustained by atmospheric pressure, and con- structed the " siphon-barometer " expressly for the purpose of measuring its fluctuations. By this momentous dis- covery the obscure notion of a fuga vacut was banished from physical science, and its progress most notably quickencd. The mercurial barometer was long known as the " Torricellian tube," and the vacuum it includes is still designated the " Torricellian vacuum."

The publication amongst Torricelli's Opera Geometrica (Florence, 1644) of a tract on the properties of the cycloid involved him in a controversy with Roberval, who accused him of plagiarizing his earlier solution of the problem of its quadrature. There seems, however, no room for doubt that Torricelli's was arrived at independently, The matter was still in debate when he was seized with fever and pleurisy, and died at Florence, after

twenty days' illness, October 25, 1647, at the age of 39. He was buried in San Lorenzo, and a commemorative statue of him erected at Faenza in 1864, He was of a singularly amiable dis- position, and possessed qualities the most felicitous for the investigation of nature. Among the new truths detected by him was the valuable mechanical principle that if any number of bodies be so connected that, by their motion, their ccntre of gravity can neither ascend nor descend, then those bodies are in equilibrium. He also discovered the remarkable fact that the parabolas described (in a vacuum) by indefinitely numerous projectiles discharged from the same point with equal velocities, but in all directions, are situated within a paraboloid which is a tangent to all of them. His theorem that a fluid issues from a small orifice with the same velocity (friction and atmospheric resistance apart) which it would have acquired in falling through the depth from its surface is of funda- mental importance in hydraulics. He greatly improved both the telescope and microscope, and invented the simple microscope composcd of a globule of melted glass. Several large object lenses, engraven with his name, are preserved at Florence. He uscd and developed Cavalieri's method of indivisibles.

A selection from Torricclli's manuscripts was published by Tominaso Bonaventura in 1715, with the title Leziont Accademiche (Florence). They include an address of acknowledgment on his admission to the Accademia della Crusca. His essay on the inundations of the Val di Chiana was printed in Raceolta d@ Autori che trattano del Moto dell' Aeque (vol. iv. p. 115, Florence, 1768) and amongst Opuscoli Idraulici (vol. ili. p. 347, Bologna, 1822).

For his life, see Fabroni, Vitzw Italorum, vol. i. p. 345; Ghinassi, Lettere fin qui Inedite di Evangelista Torricelli (Faenza, 1864);

Tiraboschi, Storia della Lett. It., vol. viii. p. 302 (ed. 1824); Montnela, Hist. des Math., vol. ii.; Marie, Hist. des Sciences, vol. inpe pelos:

TORRIGIANO, Pierro (c. 1470-1522), a Florentine sculptor, was, according to Vasari, one of the group of talented youths who studied art

under the patronage of Lorenzo the Magnificent in Florence. Ben. Cellini, report- ing a conversation with Torrigiano, relates that he and

‘Michelangelo, while both young, were copying the frescos

in the Carmine chapel, when some slighting remark made by Michelangelo so enraged the violent temper of Torri- giano that he struck him on the nose, and thus caused that disfigurement which is so conspicuous in all the portraits of Michelangelo. Soon after this Torrigiano visited Rome, and helped Pinturicchio in modelling the elaborate stucco decorations in the Appartamenti Borgia for Alexander VI. After some time spent as a hired soldier in the service of different states, Torrigiano was invited to England to execute the magnificent tomb for Henry VIL and his queen which still exists in the lady chapel of Westminster Abbey. This appears to have been begun before the death of Henry VII. in 1509, but was not finished till 1517. It consists of two colossal recum- bent effigies in gilt bronze on an altar-tomb of black marble, decorated with very graceful medallions of the patron saints of Henry and his wife, and other enrichments in bronze. The two effigies are well modelled, and have life-like but not too realistic portraits. After this Torri- giano received the commission for the altar, retable, and baldacchino which stood at the west, outside the screen of Henry VII.’s tomb, The altar had marble pilasters at the angles, two of which still exist, and below the mensa was a life-sized figure of the dead Christ in painted terra-cotta. The retable consisted of a large relief of the Resurrection. The baldacchino was of marble, with enrichments of gilt bronze ; part of its frieze still exists, as do also a large number of fragments of the terra-cotta angels which sur- mounted the baldacchino and parts of the large figure of Christ. The whole of this work was destroyed by the Puritans in the 17th century.!. Henry VIII. also com- missioned Torrigiano to make him a magnificent tomb, somewhat similar to that of Henry VII., but one-fourth larger, to be placed in a chapel at WinDsor (q.v.); it was, however, never completed, and its rich bronze was melted by the Commonwealth, together with that of Wolsey’s tomb. The indentures for these various works still exist, and are printed by Neale, Westminster Abbey, London, 1818, vol. i. p. 54-59. These interesting documents are written in English, and in them the Florentine is called “ Peter Torrysany.” For Henry VII.’s tomb lie contracted to receive £1500, for the altar and its

fittings £1000, and £2000 for Henry VIII.'s tomb. Other works attributed from internal evidence to Torrigiano are the tomb of Margaret of Richmond, mother of Henry VII., in the south aisle of his chapel, and a terra-cotta effigy in the chapel of the Rolls.

While these royal works were going on, Torrigiano Vis- ited Florence in order to get skilled assistants. He tried to induce Ben. Cellini to come to England to help him, but Cellini refused, partly from his dislike to the brutal and swaggering manners of Torrigiano, and also because he did not wish to live among "such beasts as the Eng- lish." The latter part of Torrigiano's life was spent in Spain, especially at Seville, where some terra-cotta sculp- ture by him still exists. His violent temper got him into

1 An old drawing still exists showing this elaborate work ; it is en- graved in the Hierurgia Anglicana, London, 1848, p. 267. Many hundreds of fragments of this terra-cotta sculpture were found a few years ago hidden under the floor of the triforium in the abbey; they are unfortunately too much broken and imperfect to be fitted together.

difficulties with the authorities, and he ended his life in 1522 in the prisons of the Inquisition.

TORSHOK, a district town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Tver, on the river Tvertsa, 38 miles by rail to the south-west of the Ostashkovo station of the St Petersburg and Moscow railway. It dates from the 11th century, and the very name (" market-place ") shows that this de- pendency of Novgorod was a commercial centre. It was strongly fortified with a stone wall, which, however, only partially protected it from the attacks of Mongols, Lithu- anians, and Poles. Torshok is now celebrated in Russia for its embroidered leather-work and manufacture of travel- ling bags, and for its trade in corn and flour. The popu- lation in 1884 was 12,900.

TORT, as a word of art in the law of England and the United States, is the name of civil wrongs (not being merely breaches of contract) for which there is a remedy by action in courts of common law jurisdiction. It may be said to correspond approximately to the term "delict" in Roman law and the

systems derived from it. But this is only a rough approximation. For in English usage tort includes, not only those matters which in Roman law are classed under obligations quasi ex delicto, but various others which Roman or modern Continental lawyers would refer to the law of ownership or real rights, and not to any such head as “delict.” The truth is that the actual development of tort as a legal genus has been purely historical and to no small extent accidental. Nothing can be learnt, of course, from the word itself. It is merely the French word for “ wrong,” specialized into a technical meaning by a process which was com- pleted only in the latter years of the 17th century and the earlier of the 18th.

The early common law had no theory of obligations in the Roman sense, and hardly any theory of contract. Its remedies were directed either to the restitution of some- thing which the defendant unjustly detained from the plaintiff—were it land, goods, or money—or to the repres- sion of violent wrongdoing. Only the former class of remedies was purely civil; the latter included a penal element of which formal traces remained long after the substance had vanished. A man who trespassed on his neighbour with force and arms offended the king as well as his neighbour, and was liable not only to pay damages to his neighbour but to make a fine to the king. Gradu- ally the category of “force and arms” was held to include all manner of direct injuries to person, land, or goods, though the force might consist in nothing more than the bare setting foot without lawful cause on the soil pos- sessed by one’s neighbour. But this was still a long way from making room for the modern growth of the law of torts. The decisive opening was given by the Statute of Westminster, which enabled actions to be framed “on the case “—in consimili casu,—that is, allowed legal remedies to be extended by analogy to the forms of action already recognized. Now those forms and their incidents were archaic and inelastic: the procedure was cumbrous, and plaintiffs were hable in many ways to irrational and irreparable discomfiture. The more modern action on the case was free from these drawbacks. Hence it was the aim of ingenious pleaders to extend the action on the case as much as possible ; and so successful was this movement that in the 16th century a special form of ‘ trespass on the case” became, under the name of assumpsit, the common and normal method of enforcing contracts not made by deed, and remained so till the middle of the present century. It still holds its place in those Amer- ican States where the old

forms of action have not been abolished. Note that ‘‘assumpsit” had become a sub- stantive title of the law, and was consciously referred to

its proper genus of contract, before the genus or order of torts was formed. Meanwhile other actions on the case, framed mostly on the analogy of trespass, but partly on that of other generically similar remedies of the old law, were applied to the redress of miscellaneous injuries to person or property which for one and another reason could not be touched, or could not be conveniently dealt with, by the old action of trespass itself. Some of these actions on the case acquired fixed forms of their own and became distinct species; others did not; there remained (and there still remains in theory) an undefined region of pos- sible new actions applying the principles of legal right and duty to new exigencies of fact.

The extension of forms of remedy grounded on trespass caused those forms which were grounded on restitution to fall into the background, with the curious result that in the modern-common law nothing is left answering to the vindicatio of the Roman law. We have an elaborate law of property, but when it comes to the practical protection of our rights we find that we can recover our property only by complaining of a wrong done to our possession or right to possession. The law puts the actual possessor in the first line, and allows an owner definitely out of posses- sion to sue only for “injury to the reversion,” though an owner who can resume possession at will is indeed more favourably treated. Its remedies are made efficient, but at the cost of straining the theory at various points. Hence many difficulties of detail and much obscurity of principle. The distinction between dominium and _obli- gatio exists, of course, in English law, but it is pecuharly hard for an English lawyer, with the usual unsystematic training, to grasp it with certainty or trace it with accuracy.

There is also a region of considerable obscurity about the points of contact between contract and tort. The questions thus raised are too technical for discussion here. Since pleadings have ceased to be formal they are much less likely to arise; on the other hand, they are more likely, in the exceptional cases where they may still arise, to be unexpected and baffling.

For the practical purposes of modern law we may dividc torts into three groups,—wrongs of a personal character, wrongs affecting property, and wrongs affecting person and property, either or both. Under the first group come the wrongs of physical violence and restraint, namely, assault and false imprisonment; then the wrong done to men's good name by libel and slander, in which kind there are sundry curious and not wholly rational distinctions; and we must here rather than elsewhere count deceit, and a somewhat ill- defined class of wrongs of a like nature, of whieh the generic mark is the necessary presence of a fraudulent intention, or at least reck- less disregard of good faith. In one case, that of malicious prose- eution, evil motive must be shown; in fact, the much-tormented word "malice" has very nearly its natural and ordinary meaning. So-called slander of title belongs to this class, being in truth a special form of deceit. Wilful interference with the exercise of public or private rights may be an actionable wrong, though the competitive exercise of like rights is none; and it is held, though not without doubt, that procuring a person to break his contract for one's own advantage (for example, a singer engaged by a rival opera manager, or a specially skilled workman in a rival factory) is on this principle a wrong to the other contracting party.

With regard to property the broad rule of the common law is that a man meddles with whatever belongs to others at his peril. This has been established and worked out only through a series of intricate formal distinctions. But the result is that, special excep- tions excepted, even the most innocent assumption of dominion without a real title makes one liable to the true owner.

Wrongs of the mixed kind atfeeting both person and property arise from the usc of one's own property, or the doing of acts lawful in themselves, in a manner inconsistent with the safety and con- venience of others. The accustomed heads of such wrongs are nuisanee and negligence. Generally some failure in due diligence is involved; but in some cases the law has, on grounds of general policy, imposed an absolute or all but absolute duty of avoiding harmful results. One must do certain things at one's peril, if at all, though the doing of them is not in itself unlawful; others are done not at one's peril, and yet under a wider responsibility than

the common run of lawful acts. It is not wrong to make an artificial reservoir of watcr on one's own land; but the landowner who does so must answer for all damage, though no failure in due diligence be shown, if the water escapes by any cause whieh reason- able human care could possibly have provided against. Again, the occupier of a place of business must keep it in safe repair, for the benefit of customers and others lawfully coming there; and, if harm is done through the want of repair, it is no excuse for him to say that he had engaged an apparently competent person to keep things in order. These are modern principles in the law, and seem to have hardly yct reached their full development. The doctrine of negligence is also mostly modern. Questions of much interest and difficulty are raised by "contributory negligence," ¢.¢., when it is alleged by way of defence that the party complaining suffered wholly or mainly by his own want of care. The true principle appears to be that, if under the circumstances the harm suffered by the plaintiff was the natural and probable consequence of the defendant's want of care, the defendant is liable,—and this whether the plaintiff, or some third person, has or has not in any degree contributed to the final result by want of care on his own part, or cven by a voluntary act, provided that the act be such as might have been foreseen and expected. But if the plaintiff has done something which, though induced by the defendant's default, was not a natural and probable consequence of it, or if the harm suffered is due to some act of a third person which could not have been reasonably foreseen or expected, then the defendant will not he liable.

A great number of special duties have been imposed on different classes of persons—public officers, undertakers of public oceupa- tions, and so forth —by modern Acts of Parliament, and are enfore- able by penalties. In some cases the breach of such a duty confers a separate right of action upon a person who thereby suffers damage, in others not, according to what appears to be the inten- tion of the enactment. No general rule can be laid down.

In practice, a large proportion of actionable injuries, especially injuries by negligence, are due to the acts or defaults of servants or workmen, from whom no substantial redress could be obtained or expected. It is held in the

common law, and appears to be held in all modern systems, that a master is liable for the acts and defaults of the servants employed by him, provided those acts or defaults occur in the course of the servant's employment, that is, while the servant is about the master's business, and acting with a view to the master's interest, and not for some different private purpose of his own, But a man is not generally liable for the conduet of an 'independent contractor"—a person who under- takes to do or get done certain work, but not to be under the employer's control as to the manner of doing it. One may be so liable, however, in virtue of special duties attached to particular situations by positive rules of lav. When a servant is injured by the act or default of another servant working under the same employer, the general rule of liability has been largely modified in the employer's favour, on grounds which have neither been con- sistently expounded nor generally reccived as satisfactory. The Employers' Liability Act of 1880 has remedied the most obvious hardships consequent on the decisions, but only by way of particu- lar exceptions, so that the law as a whole, if more just than it was, is much more intricate, and does not appear to rest on any intel- ligible principle. The Scottish courts were in a way to develop a more rational doctrine, but the House of Lords, instead of adopting it, forced the law of Scotland into conformity with judgments which were still of only recent authority in England. The subject, however, has given trouble everywhere, and legislative experiments have been tricd in many Continental countries. See Parliamentary Papers, Commercial, No. 21, 1886.

Literature,—There are several modern English and American text-books on the law of torts :—C, G, Addison, Wrongs and their Remedies, being a Treatise on the Law of Torts, 6th ed., by Horace Smith, London, 1887, la. 8vo; M. M. Bigelow, Leading Cases on the Law of Torts, Boston, Mass., 1875, la. 8vo: Id., Elements of the Law of Torts, 3d ed., Boston, Mass., 1886, sm. 8vo; C. Collett, Manwal of the Law of Torts and of the Measure of Damages, 6th ed., Madras, 1886, Svo; T. M. Cooley, A Treatise on the Law of Torts, Chicago, 1880, 8vo; S. Hastings, A 7'rea- tase on Torts, London, 1885, la. Svo; F. Hilliard, The Law of Torts or Private Wrongs, 4th ed., Boston, Mass., 1874, la. 8vo, 2 vols.; F. I. Piggott, Principles of the Law of Torts, London, 1885, 8vo ; F. Pollock, The Law of Torts, London, 1887, 8vo; A. Underhill, A Sununary of the Law of Torts, 3d ed., London, 1881, 8yo, There are also well-known works of a wider scope which touch

on many parts of the subject, such as that of Mayne on Damages; and monographs on special parts, such as those on Negligence by Campbell, Horace Smith, Shearman and Redfield, and Wharton, and those on Libel and Slander by Starkie (recent ed. by Yolkard) and Blake Odgers. The Government of India has taken steps to codify the law of civil wrongs (Whitley Stokes, The Anglo-Indian Codes). The general institutional books (Blackstone and Kent, and the later adaptations of Blackstone

in England) are of little use, as in almost every branch the law has been largely developed and modified by the decisions of the last fifty years. (F. PO.)

TORTOISE. Of the three names generally used for this order of reptiles, viz., Tortoise, Turtle, and Terrapin, the first is derived from the old French word tortis, 0 twisted, and was probably applied first to the common European species on account of its curiously bent fore-

| Seas, sometimes stray beyond those limits.

legs. Turtle is believed to be a corruption of the same word, but the origin of the name terrapin is unknown: since the time of the navigators of the 16th century it has been in general use for freshwater species of the tropics, and especially for those of the New World. The name tortoise is now generally applied to the terrestrial members of this group of animals, and that of turtle to those which live in the sea or pass a great part of their existence in fresh water.

Tortoises and turtles constitute one of the orders of Reptiles, the Chelonia. They are characterized by having the trunk of the body incased in a more or less ossified carapace, Which consists of a dorsal more or less convex portion, and of a flat ventral one, the so-called plastron. These portions are generally more or less firmly united on the side, but leave a wide opening in front through which the head and neck and the fore-limbs protrude, and one behind for the tail and hind-limbs. The dorsal carapace is (with the exception of Sphargis) formed by the dorsal vertebrae, by the ribs which are so much expanded as to form sutures with each other, and by a number of

lateral dermal ossifications (marginals). The plastron consists of from eight to eleven more or less dilated dermal bones, the sternal elements of higher Vertebrata being absent. This osseous case or shell receives in its interior the organs of the chest and abdomen, the humeral and pelvic bones, and the muscles for the humerus and femur. In many species, especially those of the family Testudinidz, or tortoises proper, the neck and head and the limbs can be withdrawn within the shell, the cervical and the proximal caudal vertebrae retaining their mobility. In the majority of Chelonians the osseous shell is covered with a hard epider- moid coat, which is divided into large symmetrical plates (commonly called “ tortoise-shell” in those species from which the article of commerce is obtained), which can be detached from the underlying bones. These epidermoid plates do not correspond in arrangement or extent with the bones of the carapace ; they vary considerably in form, and are therefore generally noticed in the descriptions of species. Their arrangement and terminology may be learned from the accompanying illustrations (figs. 1, 2).

The integuments of the head, neck, tail, and limbs are either soft and smooth or tubercular or scaly, the tubercles and scales having frequently an osseous nucleus.

Other parts also of the skeleton show remarkable pecu- liarities, so that the sometimes very fragmentary remains of Chelonians can almost always be recognized as such. All the bones of the skull are suturally united, with the exception of the mandible and hyoid bone; the dentary portion of the mandible consists of one bone only. The pectoral arch is composed of the scapula, with which the precoracoid is united, and the coracoid. Clavicles (epi- plastra) are represented by the anterior elements of the plastron. Two pairs of limbs are invariably present.

All Chelonians possess a tail, which is generally short, but sometimes elongate, and always provided with strong muscles at the base. No Chelonian possesses teeth ; but their jaws are provided with horny sheaths, with hard and sharp edges, forming a beak like that of a parrot.

The number of Chelonians known at present may be estimated at about 220, the freshwater species being far the niost numerous, and abundant in well-watered districts of the tropical and subtropical zones. Their number and

variety decrease beyond the tropics, and in the north they disappear entirely about the 50th parallel in the western and about the 56th in the eastern hemisphere, whilst in the southern hemisphere the terrestrial forms seem to advance to 36°S. lat. only. The marine turtles, which are spread over the whole of the equatorial and subtropical As in other

orders of Reptiles, the most specialized and the largest | ever, are but few in number: the large cats of South

forms are restricted to the tropics (with the exception of Macroclemmys) ; but, unlike lizards or snakes, Chelonians

Sm aeee

. –

‘ x

.

7 :

a

.

‘.

eon enen,

Ph \py} py izle

Ried: pete

», – poncee

oe

Vereen

Fig. 2.

Fics. 1, 2.—Shell of Zestudo pardalis, to show the divisions of the integument, which are marked by entire lines, and of the osseous earapace, these being marked by dotted lines. Fig. 1, Upper or dorsal aspeet. Fig. 2, Lower or ventral aspect.

Dermal Seutes :—co, eostals; v, vertebrals; m, marginals; 9, gulars; pg, post- gulars; p, pectorals; ab, abdominals; pa, preanals; an, anals.

Bones of the Carapaee:—co’, eostals; ze, neurals; nu, nuehal; py, pygul; m’, marginals; ent, entoplastron, ep, epiplastron; Ayo, hyoplastron ; hyp, hypo-plastron; zxyp, xyphiplastron.

are unable to exist in sterile districts or at great altitudes.

Chelonians are strictly animals of plains, or at least of low

country.

Chelonians show a great divergence in their mode of life, some living constantly on land, others having partly terrestrial partly aquatic habits, others again rarely leav- ing the water or the sea. The first-mentioned, the land tortoises proper, have short club-shaped feet with blunt claws, and a very convex, heavy, completely ossified shell. In the freshwater forms the joints of the limb bones are much more mobile, the digits distinct, armed with sharp claws, and united by a membrane or web; their shell is less convex, and is flattened, and more or less extensive areas may remain cartilaginous to lessen its specific gravity. As a rule, the degree of development of the interdigital web and of convexity of the shell indicates the prevalence of aquatic or terrestrial habits of a species of terrapin. Finally, the marine turtles have paddle-shaped limbs re- sembling those of Cetaceans.

Land tortoises are sufficiently protected by their cara- pace, and therefore have no need of any special modi- fication of structure by means of which their appearance would be assimilated to the surroundings, and thus give them additional security from their enemies. These, how-

America are said to be able to tear them out of the shell with their claws ; and the ancient tale of Aischylus having been killed by a tortoise carried aloft by an eagle and dropped on the head of the unfortunate poet seems to be founded on the fact that tortoises are a favourite prey of the Liimmergeyer (Gypaetus), which has the habit of dropping them from a height on rocks in order to break the shell. On the other hand, among the carnivorous terrapins and freshwater turtles instances of protective resemblance are not scarce, and may even attain to a high degree of specialization, as in Chelys ; their shells offer them less protection, and their enemies (crocodiles and alligators) are more numerous; they also require this special provision to enable them to approach or seize their prey with greater ease. The colours of land tortoises are generally plain or in simple patterns, whilst those of many terrapins are singularly varied, bright, and beautiful.

Chelonians are diurnal animals ; only a few are active during the night, habitually or on special occasions, as, for instance, during oviposition. Land tortoises are slow in all their movements, but all kinds living in water can execute extremely rapid motions, either to seize their prey or to escape from danger. All Chelonians are stationary, residing throughout the year in the same locality, with the exception of the marine turtles, which periodically migrate to their breeding-stations. Species inhabiting temperate regions hibernate.

Chelonians possess great tenacity of life, surviving injuries to which other Reptiles would succumb in a short time. The heart of a decapitated tortoise continues to beat for many hours after every drop of blood has been drained from the body, and the muscles of the trunk and head show signs of reflex action twenty-four hours after the severance of the spinal cord. The longevity of tor- toises is likewise a well-known fact, to which reference will again be made.

Land tortoises, a few terrapins, and some of the marine turtles are herbivorous, the others carnivorous, their prey consisting chiefly of fish, frogs, and other small aquatic animals.

All Chelonians are oviparous, and the eggs are generally covered with a hard shell.

In the system! proposed by Duméril and Bibron, and afterwards modified by Gray and Strauch, the Chelonians are arranged according to their mode of life, and divided into terrestrial, paludine, fluviatile, and marine forms. However natural such an arrangement may appear at first, a more careful examination proves it to be (as all arrange- ments based solely upon the mode of life) at variance with the structural affinities, whether the recent forms alone be considered or the fossil as well. The division of the bulk of the order into Cryptodira and Pleurodira, as suggested by Agassiz, Cope, and Riitimeyer, was a decided progress, as is also the elimination of the suborders Atheca and Trionychoidea recently proposed by Cope and Baur.

The order of Chelonians may then be divided into the following suborders and families :*—

SusorpEr I. ATHECA, Vertebre and ribs free, separated from a bony exoskeleton. Family 1. Srnarcipz.

Limbs paddle-shaped, clawless; phalanges without eondyles. Plastron reduced to an annular series of eight small bones. Exo- skeleton eonsisting of numerous small bony plates arranged like mosaie. Pelagic.

Genns: Dermatochelys (Sphargis).

Fossil genera: Psephophorus (Pliocene), Protosphargis (Cretaceous), Protostega (Cretaeeous), Psephoderma? (Triassie).

1 The more important works on this order of Reptiles have been enumerated in the article REPTILES, vol. xx. p. 440.

2 Only the more important and best known of the extinct genera are admitted into this synopsis.

lis oli h

SuporDer Il. TESTUDINATA.

Dorsal vertebree and ribs immovably united and expanded into bony plates forming a carapace, which is bordered by a complete series of marginal bones. Lpiplastra (clavicles) in contact with hyoplastra; entoplastron (interclavicle), if present, oval, rhom- boidal, or T-shaped. Sacral and caudal ribs articulating with the centrum and the neural arch. Digits with not more than three phalanges.

Series A. CRYPTODIRA.

Neck retractile by a sigmoid curve in a vertical plane. Pelvis not anchylosed to the carapace and plastron. Rarely one or two epidermic scutes (intergular) in addition to the normal six pairs.

Group A. Digitata. Digits short or moderately elongate; phalanges with condyles; claws four or five. Neck completely retractile.

Family 1. TestuDInIpz.

Plastral bones nine. Nuchal bone without costiform processes. Carapace with epidermic seutcs. Caudal vertebre procclous. Tropical and tempcrate zones, with the exception of Australia.

Recent genera: Dermatemys, Batagur, Clenmys, Pangshura, Geoemyda, Cycle- mys. Emys, Cistudo, Manouria, Testudo, Ilomopus, Cinyxis, Pyxis.

Fossil genera; Eurysternum (Jurassic), Chitracephaius (Cretaceous), Adocus (Cretaceous), Paleochelys (Miocene), Ptychogaster (Miocene), Colossochelys (Plio- cene).

Family 2, PLATYSTERNIDA.

Plastral bones nine. Nuchal bone without costiform processcs. Carapace with epidermic scutes. Caudal vertcbre mostly opistho- ecelous. Indian region.

Genus: Platysternum.

Family 3. BAENIDA.

Plastral bones cleven, mesoplastra being present. without costiform processes. Caudal vertebre opisthoccelous.

Fossil genera: Platychelys (Jurassic); Baena (Eocenc).

Family 4, CNELYDRIDA.

Plastral bones nine. Nuchal bone with long costiform processes, extending below the marginals, Carapace with epidermic scutes. Caudal vertebree mostly opisthocelous, Northern and tropical American regions.

Recent gen¢ra: Chelydra, Macroclemmys.

Fossil genus: 7relosternum (Cretaceous),

Family 5. Sravroryrip#H (Boulenger).

Plastral hones nine. Nuchal bone with short costiform pro- cesses, extending below the marginals. Carapace with epidermic scutes. Caudal vertebre proccelous. Ccntral-American district.

Genera: Staurotypus, Claudius.

Family 6. CINOSTERNIDZ.

Plastral bones eight, the entoplastron being absent. Nuchal bonc with short costiform processes, extending below the marginals. Carapace with epidermic scutes. Caudal vertebra proccelous.

Northern and tropical American regions. Genera: Aromochelys, Cinosternum.

Family 7. PseuporrionycmIp& (Boulenger). Shell without epidcrmic seutes. Fossil gencra: Pseudotrionyx and Anostira (Eocene). i Group B, Pinnata, Limbs paddle-shaped; phalanges without condyles; claws one

or two. Neck imperfectly rctractile; cervical vertebre short, | mostly articulated by amphiarthrosis.

Family 8. CHELONID&,

Plastral bones nine. Nuchal without costiform processes. Carapace with epidermic scutes. Hyo- and hypo-plastra not meet- ing mesially. Pelagic.

Recent genera: Chelone, Caouana, Caretta.

Fossil genus: Puppigerus (Miocene and Eocene)

Series B. PLEURODIRA.

Neck not retractile, bending laterally. Pelvis anchylosed to the | carapace and plastron. When epidermic scutes are present, onc or two intcrgulars in addition to the normal plastral scutes.

Nuchal bone Carapace with cpidermic scutes.

Family 1. CueLypip&,

Plastral bones nine. Carapace with epidermic scutes. Limbs with four or five claws. Australian and tropical American regions.

Recent genera: Platemys, Chelymus, Elseya, Chelodina, Hydraspis, Hydro-medusa, Chelys.

Fossil genera: Dlesiochelys (Jurassic), Craspedochelys (Jurassic), Jdiochelys (Jurassic), Votomorpha (Eocene),

Family 2. PELOMEDUSIDE. Plastral bones eleven, mesoplastra being present.

with epidermic seutcs. Limbs with four or five claws.

and tropical American regions.

Recent genera: Pelomedusa, Sternotherus, Dumerilia, Podocnemis, Pelto-cephalus. ! Fossil genera: Pleurosternum (Cretaceous, Eocene), Bothremys (Cretaccous).

Taphrosphys (Cretaceons).

Carapace African

Oils & 457

Family 3. CARETTOCHELYDID2.

Plastral bones nine. No epidermic scutes on the shell.

paddle-shaped, with only two claws. New Guinea. Genus: Carettochelys.

Family 4. MroLaniipa (Boulenger). Caudal vertebree opisthoccelous ; tail long and encased in a bony

sheath. Australia. Fossil genus : Miolania (Pleistocene).

SuzorpER II]. TRIONYCHOIDEA.

Dorsal vertebree and ribs immovably united, forming a carapace ; no pygal plate; marginal plates absent or forming an incomplete series. Plastron formed of nine bones, epiplastra separated from the hyoplastra by the entoplastron, which is A-shaped, without longitudinal process. Sacral and caudal ribs attached to transverse processes of the neural arch. Fourth digit with four or five phalanges.

Limbs

Family 1. TrioNycHIpa. No epidermic scutes. Limbs with three claws.

and American regions. Genera: Chitra, Heptathyra, Trionyx, Cyclanosteus, Emyda,

We add a few notes on such of the genera enumerated in this synopsis as have some special interest attached to them, either from a scientific or an

economic point of view.

The family Sphargidx is represented in the recent fauna by a single specics, Dermatochelys or Sphargis coriacea, the Leathery Turtle, the range of which extends over the tropical and subtropical seas of both hemisphercs, and which occasionally strays into the northern parts of the Atlantic, its ocewrence on the British coast having been recorded three or four times within the last century. It differs from all other Chelonians by its carapace being formed by ossifications of the skin only. Neither the vertebre nor the ribs cnter into its formation; the lattcr remain free, and are not patticularly dilated. During the life of the animal the carapace is flexible like thick leather, the bony deposits being arranged like mosaic, with several longitudinal ridges of larger osseous tubercles. The limbs are, as in othcr marine turtles, paddle- or fin-shaped, the anterior much longer than the postcrior, and all destitute of claws. This turtle is probably the largest living Chelonian, exceeding 6 feetin length. The names Testrdo lyra, Sphargis mercurialis, &c., have reference to the myth that the shell of this or some other turtle was used by Mercury in his construction of the lyre.

The family Z’estudinide is composcd of an unbroken series, from thoroughly -aquatic freshwater tortoises like Dermatemys and Batagur to the tortoiscs which live exclusively on land and are perfectly helpless in water. In the Central-American genus Der- matemys the digits are very broadly webbed, the cpidermic scutes are thin, and the nose is much produced,—characters which, together with the strong depression of the shell, give these terrapins some- what the aspect of the freshwatcr turtles or Z’’rionychide. ‘They feed exclusively upon leaves, grass, and especially fruit, and are eaten by the natives. Of the freshwater tortoises of the Old World the most thoroughly aquatic are the Batagurs, which inhabit the East Indies, and attain to a length of 2 feet. Like their American representative, Dermatemys, they are essentially herbivorous, and their flesh is eaten. The genus Clemmys is extremely abundant in species, most of which are of small size, and elegantly ornamented with symmetrical markings of bright colour. The majority of the species occur in North America and Mexico, and are of amphibious habits. Only one species, C. leprosa, inhabits southern Europe. A second European species belongs to the genus Hmys, £. orbi- cularis, which, towards the end of the Quatcrnary period appcars to

have been distributed over a great part of northern Europe, remains having been found in peat in England, Belgium, Denmark, and Sweden. Its habitat is now restricted to southern Europe, south-western Asia, and north-western Africa; but singularly it has survived in a few isolated northern stations, for instance, in the neighbourhood of Berlin and Konigsberg, although it is there on the verge of extinction. The mobility of the lobes of the

Indian, African,

| plastron, which distinguishes Emys from Clemmys, is carried a | degree further in the North-American genus Cistudo, the Box

Tortoisc; this terrapin possesses a hinge in the plastron, rendcring its antcrior and posterior portions movable, and converting them into lids by which the openings of the shell can be complctely closed when the head and limbs are retracted. A similar protective apparatus cxists in the tortoises of the genus Cinosternnm. In the African terrestrial genus Cinyzxis it is the posterior portion of the

| carapace that is movable, and separated from the anterior by a

hinge. True land tortoises, Zestwdo, occur in Africa, southern Europe, southern Asia, South America, and the southern parts of North America. Those best known in Europe are Testudo greca and the Moorish Tortoise, Zestudo mauritanica, large numbers of which are imported into the United Kingdom, chiefly from Morocco. But the most interesting are the gigantic tortoises which formerly inhabited in cxtreme abundance the Mascarene and Galapagos Islands, and are now on the verge of extinction, or have actually

XRT = 08

beeome extinet. At the time of their discovery those islands were | 870 Ib, and, although known to have been more than eighty years uninhabited by man or any large mammal; the tortoises, therefore, | old, was still growing at the time of its death. There is no evidence

to show that any of these tortoises were indigenous in the Seychelles; the speei- mens kept there in a semi-domestieated

ee ae:

Fia. ‘8,—Alligator Terrapin (Chelydra serpentina).

enjoyed perfect security; and this, as well as their extraordinary degree of longevity, aecounts for their enormous size and their large numbers. They could be captured in any quantity with the greatest ease within a few days, and proved to the ships’ companies who during their long voyages had to subsist mainly on salt provisions a most welcome addition to their table. They eould be carried in

Fig.4 Loggerhead (Caouana caretta)

the hold of a ship, without food, for months, and were slaughtered as oceasion required, each tortoise yielding, aecording to size, from 80 to 300 pounds of exeellent and wholesome meat. Under these cireumstances the numbers of these helpless creatures deereased so rapidly that in the beginning of this eentury their extermination was accomplished in the Masearenes, and now only a few remain in a wild state in Aldabra and in some of the islands of the Gala- pagos group. Singularly, the majority of these islands were in- habited each by one or more peculiar forms, specifically distinet

Fig. 5.—Green Turtle (Chelonta viridis). from those of the other islands. Aldabra, whieh was imported into London some years ago, weighed

A large male speeimen from

state have been either direetly imported from Aldabra or are the deseendants of imported individuals.

The family of Chelydride ineludes freshwater tortoises, whieh are known under the names of Snappers or Alli- gator Terrapins (fig. 3), on aceount of their ferocity and long compressed erested tail. They are now confined to North Ameriea east of the Roeky Mountains, Central America, and north-

west South Ameriea, but remains of two speeies of Chelydra, elosely related to their reeent representative, have been found in the Oligocene and Miocene A second genus, closely allied to Chelydra,

of central Europe. Macroclemmys temminckit, the shell of which attains to a length of 3 feet, and which is the largest known freshwater Chelonian, is restricted to the river-systems tributary to the Gulf of Mexico. The family of Cinosternide contains a rather large number of small-sized speeies, distributed from the northern parts of the

United States to the northern parts of Brazil. They are of amphibious habits. The front and hind lobes of the plastron are movable, and in certain species of Cinosternwm the animal can eompletely shut itself up in its shell.

The Chelonidx, or marine turtles, contain but few species, which are referred to three genera,—Caowana, Chelone, and Caretta. Their limbs are wholly modified into paddles, by means of whieh they ean propel themselves with extraordinary rapidity through the water, but which are entirely unfit for locomotion on land, where the progress of these animals is as awkward as that of a seal. The toes are enclosed ina common skin, out of whieh only one or two elaws project. The carapace is broad and much de-pressed, so that when the turtles are surprised on shore and turned

lic. 6.—Hawksbill Turtle (Caretta imbricata).

over on their baek, they eannot regain their natural position. Their capture forms a regular pursuit wherever they oecur in any numbers. Comparatively few are caught in the open sea, others in stake nets, but the majority are intercepted at well-known periods and loealities where they go ashore to deposit their eggs. These are very numerous, from 100 to 250 being produced by one female, and buried by her in the sand; they are eagerly searehed for and eaten, Some of the marine turtles are highly esteemed for the delicacy of their meat and of the gelatinous skinny parts of their neek and fins; others yield oil, and others again the tortoise- shell of eommerce. Probably the largest of these marine turtles is the Loggerhead (Caowana), which possesses fifteen vertebral and costal shields, and oceurs in the Atlantie as well as in the Indian

Ocean (fig. 4). It is carnivorous, feeding on fish, molluscs, and crustaceans, and not estcemed as food, although it is caten by the native fishermen.

Fic. 7.—The Matamata (Chelys fimbriata), with side view of head, and separate view of plastron.

way into the market is obtained from the Atlantic species of this genus; also tortoiseshell of an inferior quality is obtained from it.

The Green Turtle (fig. 5), which yields the mate- rials for the celebrated soup, belongs to the genus Chelonia; it is dis- tinguished from Caouana by having thirteen ver- tebral and costal shields only, which are not im- bricate. These animals

are herbivorous, feeding on marine Alg# only; they occur in the Indo-Pacificand Atlantic; and, although several species have been distinguished, they all may possibly be referable to one only, The turtle imported into Europe comes chiefly

Frc. 8.—Upper View of the Turtle of the Euphrates (7rionyx euphratica).

from the West Indies.

Instances are recorded of the flesh of this

species having aequired poisonous qualities. The Hawksbill Turtle, Caretta (fig. 6), so named from its rather elongate and eompressed

curved upper jaw, does not reach the same size as the other turtles and is readily recognized by the thirteen imbricate seutes of its carapace. It seems to be more abundant in the Indian than in the

Atlantic Oeean, but is he ae oe only in eertain ocalities. As, however, these turtles always re- sort to the locality where they were born, or where they have been wont to propagate their kind,and as their capture is very

scarcer and scarcer at places where they are known to have been abundant formerly. If the plates of tortoise- shell are detached from the animal when decom- position has set in, their colour becomes clouded

profitable, they become and milky, and hence

Nj

Fic. 9.—Lower View of Trionyx euphratica.

the cruel expedient is resorted to of suspending the turtle over fire till heat makes the shields start from the bony part of the cara- pace, after which the creature is permitted to escape to the water. There is no doubt that turtles thus allowed to escape to the water after such an operation may survive ; but it is very improbable that the epidermal shields are ever sufficiently regenerated to be fit for use. At Celebes, whence the finest tortoiseshell is exported to China, the natives kill the turtle by blows on the head, and immerse the shell in boiling water to detach the plates; dry heat is only resorted to by the unskilful. The natives eat the flesh of this turtle, but it is unpalatable to Europeans; the eggs, however, are regarded as equal to those of the other turtles.

Of the family Chelydidez the most remarkable type is the Matamata, Chelys fimbriata, a native of the Guianas and northern Brazil (fig. 7). In its strongly depressed and flat head, long tube- like snout, weak jaws, minute eyes, skinny tentacles, it bears a striking similarity to the Surinam toad, Pipa americana, which inhabits the same countries. The neck is very broad and depressed, and fringed with foliated tentacles, floating inthe water like some vegetable growth, whilst the rough bossed carapace resembles a stoue,—an appearance which evidently is of as great use to this ereature in escaping the observation of its enemies as in alluring to it unsuspicious animals on whieh it feeds.

The family of Carettochelydide contains a single genus, Caretto- chelys, quite recently discovered in the Fly river, New Guinea, and exhibiting a remarkable combination of characters. Its limbs are formed very much like those of the marine turtles, whilst the shell lacks epidermic scutes, as in the Trionychide.

In the freshwater turtles, or 7’rionychide (figs. 8 and 9), the eara- pace is reduced to a flat disk, which is eovered with soft skin. The

_ neck and limbs ean be lodged under the broad skinny borders of

the carapace ; also the plastron is very imperfectly ossified, and some- times dilated into large flexible lobes which may eover the limbs. The latter are much flattened and broadly webbed, and only the three inner toes armed with claws. The jaws are concealed under broad, fleshy lips, the nose projecting like a short proboscis. These

| turtles are carnivorous, and very ferocious; when they want to bite

or seize their prey they project their neck and head with lightning rapidity. They are well known on the upper Nile, Euphrates, Ganges, Yangtse-kiang, and Mississippi, and, indeed, distributed over all the large fresh waters of the geographical regions to which

460

In the United States, where twospecies, Trionyx muticus and T’rionyx ferox, occur, the flesh of the latter is said to be most delicate to eat, far surpassing in flavour that of the green turtle. (A. CG.)

TORTOISESHELL. The tortoiseshell of commerce consists of the epidermic plates of the hawksbill turtle, Caretta imbricata. The plates of the back or carapace, technically called the head, are 13 in number, 5 occupying the centre, flanked by 4 on each side. These overlap each other to the extent of one-third of their whole size, and hence they attain a large size, reaching in the largest to 8 inches by 13 inches, and weighing as much as 9 ounces. The carapace has also 24 marginal pieces, called hoofs or claws, forming a serrated edge round it; but these, with the plates of the plastron, or belly, are of inferior value. The plates of tortoiseshell consist of horny matter, but they are harder, more brittle, and less fibrous than ordinary horn. Their value depends on the rich mottled colours they display—a warm translucent yellow, dashed and spotted with rich brown tints—and on the high polish they take and retain. ‘The finest tortoiseshell is obtained from the Eastern Archipelago, particularly from the east coast of Celebes to New Guinea; but

the creature is found and tortoiseshell obtained from all tropical coasts, large supplies coming from the West Indian Islands and Brazil.

Tortoiseshell is worked precisely as horn; but, owing to the high value of the material, care is taken to prevent any waste in its working. The plates, as separated by heat from the bony skeleton, are keeled, curved, and irregular in form. They are first flattened by heat and pressure, and superficial inequalities are rasped away. Being harder and more brittle than horn, tortoise- shell requires careful treatment in moulding it into any form, and as high heat tends to darken and obscure the material it is treated at as low a heat as practicable. For many purposes it is necessary to increase the thickness or to add to the superficial size of tortoise- shell, and this is readily done by careful cleaning and rasping of the surfaces to be united, softening the plates in boiling water or sometimes by dry heat, and then pressing them tightly together by means of heated pincers or a vice. The heat softens and liquefies a superficial film of the horny material, and that with the pressure effects a perfect union of the surfaces brought together. Heat and pressure are also employed to mould the substance into boxes and the numerous artificial forms into which it is made up.

Tortoiseshell has been a prized ornamental material from very early times. It was one of the highly esteemed treasures of the far East brought to ancient Rome by way of Egypt, and it was eagerly sought by wealthy Romans as a veneer for their rich furniture. Jn modern times it is most characteristically used in the elaborate inlaying of cabinet work known as buhl furniture. It is also employed as a veneer for small boxes and fraines. It is cut into combs, moulded into snuffboxes and other small boxes, formed into knife-handles, and worked up into many other similar minor articles. The plates from certain other tortoises, known commercially as turtle-shell, possess a certain industrial value, but they are either opaque or soft and leathery, and cannot be mis- taken for tortoiseshell. A close imitation of tortoiseshell can be made by staining translucent horn. See Comp, vol. vi. p. 178.

TORTOLA. See Vircin Istanns.

TORTONA, a town of Italy, in the province of Ales- sandria, on the right bank of the Scrivia, at the northern foot of the Apennines, 13 miles to the

east of Alessandria,

was formerly a place of strength until its fortifications | were destroyed by the French after Marengo (1799); the |

ramparts are now turned into shady promenades. The cathedral, erected by Philip II., is architecturally uninter- esting, but contains a remarkably fine Roman sarcophagus. Silk-weaving, tauning, and hat-making are the chief indus- tries; and there is some trade in wine and grain. The population in 1881 was 9023 (commune 14,442).

Dertona is spoken of by Strabo as one of the most important towns of Liguria, and is alluded to by Pliny as a Roman colony. In the Middle Ages it was zealously attached to the Guelphic cause, on which account it was twice laid waste by Frederick Barbarossa (in 1155 and 1168).

TORTOSA, a fortified city of Spain, in the province of Tarragona, and 40 miles by rail to the south-west of that town, is picturesquely situated on the left bank of the

these rivers belong. Some of the species exceed a length of 3 feet. | Ebro (here crossed by a bridge of boats), 22 miles above

its mouth. It is for the most part an old walled town, with narrow, crooked, and ill-paved streets ; the houses are lofty, and massively built of granite. The slope on wliich it stands is crowned with an old ruined castle, com- manding a splendid view. The cathedral is a conspicuous building near the river; it occupies the site of a mosque built in 914 by ‘Abd al-Rahman ; the present structure, which dates from 1347, has its Gothic character disguised by a classical fagade with Ionic pillars and much tasteless modernization. ‘The stalls in the choir, carved by Cristo- bal de Salamanca in 1588-93, and the sculpture of the pulpits, as well as the ironwork of the choir-railing and some of the precious marbles with which the chapels are adorned, deserve notice. None of the other public build- ings, which include an episcopal palace, a town-hall, and numerous churches, require special mention. The manu- factures of Tortosa include paper, hats, leather, porcelain, majolica,

soap, and spirits. There is an important fishery in the river, and an active trade is carried on through thie harbour, which is accessible to vessels of 100 tons burden, corn, wine, oil, wool, silk, fruits, and liquorice (a specialty of the district) being among the leading articles of export. Near Tortosa are rich quarries of marble and alabaster, and the whole surrounding country is very fertile and beautiful. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1878 was 24,057.

Tortosa, the Dertosa of Strabo and the Colonia Julia Augusta Dertosa of numerous coins, was a city of the Iercaones in Hispania Tarraconensis, Under the Moors it became a place of great import- ance as the key of the Ebro valley. It was taken by Louis the Pious in 811 (after an unsuccessful siege two years before), but was soon recaptured. Having become a haunt of pirates, and exceed- ingly injurious to Italian commerce, it was made the object of a crusade proclaimed by Pope Eugenius III. in 1148, and was accord- ingly captured by Raymond Berengar, assisted by ‘‘emplars, Pisans, and Genoese. Tortosa fell into the hands of the duke of Orleans in 1708, and was again surrendered in the War of Independence in 1811 to the French under Suchet, who held it till 1814.

TORTURE. It is proposed to treat in this place not so much the innumerable modes of inflicting pain which have been from time to time devised by the perverted ingenuity of man as the subject of legal torture as it existed in the civilized nations of antiquity and of modern Europe, that is to say, torture inflicted with more or less appearance of legality by a responsible executive or judi- cial authority. From this point of view torture was always inflicted for one of two purposes—(1) as a means of eliciting evidence from a witness or from an accused person either before or after condemnation, (2) as a part of the punishment. Torture, as a part of the punishment, may be regarded as including every kind of bodily or mental pain beyond what is necessary for the safe custody of the offender (with or without enforced labour) or the destruc- tion of his life, —in the language of Bentham, an ajlictive as opposed to a simple punishment. Thus the unnecessary sufferings endured in English prisons before the reforms of Howard (see Howarp and Prison Discrping) and the drawing and quartering in the old executions for treason fall without any straining of terms under the category of . torture. The whole subject is now one of only historical interest as far as

Europe is concerned. It was, however, up to a comparatively recent date an integral part of the law of most countries (to which England, Aragon, and Sweden! formed honourable exceptions), as much a commonplace of law as trial by jury in England. One reason for its long continuance was no doubt the view taken in an age of judicial perjury? that truth was only to be attained by violent means, if not by torture then by ordeal or trial by battle. Speaking generally, torture may

1 But even in these countries, whatever the law was, torture certainly existed in fact. 2 Hallam, Afiddle Ages, vol. i. p. 282.

be said to have succeeded the ordeal and trial by battle (compare ORDEAL). Where these are found in full vigour, as in the capitularies of Charlemagne, there is no provision for torture. It was no doubt accepted reluctantly, but tolerated in the absence of any better means of eliciting truth, especially in cases of great gravity, on the illogical assumption that extraordinary offences must be met by extraordinary remedies.

The opinions of the best authorities have been in theory almost unanimously against the use of torture, even ina system where it was as completely established as it was in Roman law. “ Tormenta,” says Cicero,! in words which it is almost impossible to translate satisfactorily, “ oubernat dolor, regit quzesitor, flectit libido, corrumpit spes, infirmat metus, ut in tot rerum angustiis nihil veritati loci relinqua- tur.” Seneca says bitterly, “it forces even the innocent to lie.” St Augustine? recognizes the fallacy of torture. “ i” says he, “the accused be innocent, he will undergo for an uncertain crime a certain punishment, and that not for having committed a crime, but because it is unknown whether he committed it.” At the same time he regards it as excused by its necessity. The words of Ulpian, in the Digest of Justinian,® are no less impressive. ‘The torture (questio) is not to be regarded as wholly deserving or wholly undeserving of confidence ; indeed, it is untrust- worthy, perilous, and deceptive. For most men, by patience or the severity of the torture, come so to despise the torture that the truth caunot be elicited from them ; others are so

impatient that they will lie in any direction rather than |

suffer the torture ; so it happens that they depose to con- tradictions and accuse not only themselves but others.” Montaigne’s* view of torture as a part of the punishment is a most just one :—‘‘All that exceeds a simple death appears to me absolute cruelty ; neither can our justice expect that he whom the fear of being executed by being beheaded or hanged will not restrain should be any more awed by the imagination of a languishing fire, burning pincers, or the wheel.” Montesquieu? speaks of torture in a most guarded manner, condemning it, but without giving reasons, and eulogizing England for doing without it. The system was condemned by Bayle and Voltaire with less reserve. Among the Italians, Beccaria,® Verri,’ and Man- zoni® will be found to contain most that can be said on the subject. The influence of Beccaria in rendering the use of torture obsolete was undoubtedly greater than that of any other legal reformer. The great point that he makes is the unfair incidence of torture, as persons’ minds and bodies differ in strength. Moreover, it is, says he, to con- found all relations to expect that a man should be both accuser and accused, and that pain should be the test of truth, as though truth resided in the muscles and fibres of a wretch under torture. The result of the torture is simply a matter of calculation. Given the force of the muscles and the sensibility of the nerves of an innocent person, it is required to find the degree of pain necessary to make him confess himself guilty of a given crime. Benthain’s® objection to torture is that the effect is exactly the reverse of the intention. ‘‘ Upon the face of it, and probably enough in the intention of the framers, the object of this institution was the protection of innocence ; thie protection of guilt and the aggravation of the pressure upon innocence was the real fruit of it.” The apologists of torture, even among jurists, are not numerous. In fact, theoretical objections to it are often urged by the authors of books of practice, as by Damhouder, Von Rosbach, Von

De Civ. Dei, bk. xix. c. 6. Essay Ixv. (Cotton’s trans.). Des Delitti e delle Pene, c. xvi. Storia della Colonna Infame.

1 Pro Sulla, c. 28.

3 Dig., xiviii. 18, 28.

5 Espr. des Lois, bk. vi. c. 17. 7 Osservazioni sulla Tortura. 9 Works, vol. vii. p. 520.

wom m® to

Boden, and Voet. It is worthy of note, however, as illus-

| trative of the feeling of the time, that even Bacon !° com-

pares experiment in nature to torture in civil matters as the best means of eliciting truth. Muyart de Vouglans 1 derives the origin of torture from the law of God. Other apologists are Simancas, bishop of Badajos,’* Engel,!* and in England Sir R. Wiseman.*

Greece,—The opinion of Aristotle was in favour of torture as a mode of proof. It is, he says, a kind of evidence, and appears to carry with it absolute credibility because a kind of constraint is applied. It is classed as one of the “artless persuasions” (dreyvat wioress).!° At Athens slaves, and probably at times resident aliens, were tortured, but it was never applied to free citizens,!© such application being forbidden by a psephism passed in the archonship of Scamandrius. After the mutilation of the Herme in 415 B.c. a proposition was made, but not carried, that it should be applied to two senators named by an informer. In this particular case Andocides gave up all his slaves to be tortured.!’ Torture was sometimes inflicted in open court. The rack was used as a punishment even for free citizens. Antiphon was put to death by this means.18 The torture of Nicias by the Syracusans is alluded to by Thucydides !° as an event likely to happen, and it was only in order to avoid the possibility of inconvenient disclosures that he was put to death without torture. Isocrates and Lysias refer to torture under the generic name of oTpe- Brwows. As might be expected, torture was frequently inflicted by the Greek despots, and both Zeno and Anax- archus are said to have been put to it by such irresponsible authorities. At Sparta the despot Nabis was accustomed, as we learn from Polybius,” to put persons to death by an instrument of torture in the form of his wife Apega, a mode of torture no doubt resembling the Jungfernkuss once in use in Germany.

Rome.—The Roman system was the basis of all subse- quent European systems which recognized torture as a part of their procedure. The law of torture was said by Cicero to rest originally on custom (mores majorum).

There are frequent allusions to it in the classical writers 2! both of the republic and the empire. The law, as it existed under the later empire, is contained mainly in the titles De Questionibus 2 of the Digest and the Code,**—the former consisting largely of opinions from the Sententix Receptzx of Paulus," the latter being for the most part merely a re- petition of constitutions contained in the Theodosian Code." Both substantive law and procedure were dealt with by these texts of Roman law, the latter, however, not as fully

10 Nov. Org., dk. i. aph. 98. In the Advancement of Learning, bk. iy. ch. 4, Bacon collects many instances of constancy under torture.

1l Instituts du Droit Criminel, Paris, 1757.

12 De Catholicis Institutionibus Liber, ad precavendas et extirpandas Hereses admodum necessarius, Rome, 1575.

3 De Tortura ex Foris Christianis non proscribenda, Leipsic, 1738.

4 Law of Laws, p. 122, London, 1686.

15 Rhet., i. 15, 26.

16 The opinion of Cicero (De Partitionibus Oratoriis, § 34), that it was so applied at Athcns and Rhodes, seems, as far as regards Athens, not to be justified by existing evidence.

7 See Grote, Hist. of Greece, vol. vii. p. 274.

18 See Dict. of Antig., s.v. Bdoavos. In the Rane of Aristophanes, v. 617, there is a list of kinds of torture, and the wheel is alluded to in Lysistrata, v. 846. 19 vii. 86. 7

Psst Pe 21 'An interesting one, illustrating the uselessness of torture in the face of courage and resolution, is the abortive result of the torture of a Spanish peasant in 25 a.D. on the charge of being the murderer of Lucius Piso ('Tac., Anz., iv. 45). A somewhat similar case, occurring in Sicily, is given by Valerius Maximus, bk. iii. c. iii, The horrible torture of Epicharis,

a freed woman, is described by Tacitus, Ann., xv. 57. In Pliny's letter to Trajan (dpist., x. 97), he mentions having put to the torture two Christian deaconesses (ministre).

22 Qugstio included the whole process of which torture was a part. In the words of Cujacius, "questio est interrogatio qui fit per tormenta, vel de reis, vel de testibus qui facto intervenisse dicuntur.

23 Dig., xiviii. 18 ; Cod., ix. 41. 22 Wael. locales Bo) Ge

as in medieval codes, a large discretion being left to the judges. Torture was used both in civil and criminal trials,

but in the former only upon slaves and freedmen or | ae | were conceived in a spirit of as much fairness as such rules

infamous persons—such as gladiators—and where the truth could not be otherwise elicited, as in cases affecting the inheritance (7s hereditariz). Its place in the case of free citizens was taken by the reference to the oath of the party (see OatH). During the republic torture appears to have been confined to slaves in all cases, but with the empire (according to Dion Cassius under Tiberius) a free man became liable to it if accused of a crime, though not as a witness. 1 high a condition, he was subject to torture during the period between the edict of Diocletian in 303 and the edict of toleration of Galerius in 311. This short period excepted, the liability of a free man depended upon two conditions, the nature of the accusation and the rank of the accused. On an accusation of treason every one, whatever his rank, was liable to torture, for in treason the condition of all was equal.1_ The same was the case of those accused of sorcery (magi), who were regarded as humani generis inimici.2 A wife might be tortured (but only after her slaves had been put to the torture) if accused of poisoning her husband. In accusations of crimes other than treason or sorcery, certain persons were protected by the dignity of their position or their tender age. The main exemptions were contained in a constitution of Diocletian and Maximian, and included soldiers, nobles of a particular rank, 7.¢., eminentissimi and perfectissimi, and their descendants to the third generation, and decuriones

and their children to a limited extent—that is to say, they were subject to the torture of the plumbate in certain cases, such as fraud on the revenue and extor- tion. In addition to these, priests (but not clergy of a lower rank), children under fourteen, and pregnant women were exempt. A free man could be tortured only where he had been inconsistent in his depositions. No one was to be chained in prison before trial, nor could a prisoner be tortured while awaiting trial. The rules as to the torture of slaves were numerous and precise. It was a maxim of Roman law that torture of slaves was the most efficacious means of obtaining truth.? They could be tortured either as accused or as witnesses, but against their masters only in accusations of treason, adultery, frauds on the revenue, coining, and similar offences (which were regarded as a species of treason), attempts by a husband or wife on the life of the other, and in cases where a master had bought a slave for the special reason that he should not give evidence against him. The privilege from accusations by the slave extended to the master's father, mother, wife, or tutor, and also to a former master. On the same principle a freedman could not be tortured against his patron. The privilege did not apply where the slave was joint property, and one of his masters had been murdered by the other, or where he was the property of a corporation, for in such a case he could be tortured in a charge against a member of the corporation. Slaves belonging to the inheritance

could be tortured in actions concerning the inheritance. |

The adult slaves of a deceased person could be tortured where the deceased had been murdered. In a charge of adultery against a wife, her husband's, her own, and her father's slaves could be put to the torture. A slave manu- mitted for the express purpose of escaping torture was regarded as still liable to it. Before putting a slave to torture without the consent of his master, security must be given to the master for his value. The master of a slave tortured on a false accusation could recover double his value from the accuser. The undergoing of torture had at one time a serious effect upon the after-life of the

1 Cod., ix. 8, 4. 2 Cod., ix. 18, 7. 3 Cod., i. 3, 8.

Tf a Christian, of however >

Torn ?U he

slave, for in the time of Gaius a slave who had been tortured could on manumission obtain no higher civil rights than those of a dediticrus.4 The rules of procedure

could be. Some of the most important were these. The amount of torture was at the discretion of the judge, but it was to be so applied as not to injure life or limb. The examination was not to begin by torture ; other proofs must be exhausted first. The evidence > must have ad- vanced so far that nothing but the confession of the slave was wanting to complete it. Those of weakest frame and tenderest age were to be tortured first. Except in treason, the unsupported testimony of a single witness was not a sufficient ground for torture. The voice and manner of the accused were to be carefully observed. A spon- taneous confession, or the evidence of a personal enemy, was to be received with caution. Repetition of the torture could only be ordered in case of inconsistent depositions or denial in the face of strong evidence. There was no rule limiting the number of repetitions. Leading questions were not tobe asked. A judge was not liable to an action for anything done during the course of the examination. An appeal from an order to torture was competent to the accused, except in the case of slaves, when an appeal could be made only by the master. The appellant was not to be tortured pending the appeal, but was to remain in prison.' The principal forms of torture in use were the equuleus, or rack (mentioned as far back as Cicero), the plumbatz, or leaden balls, the wngule, or barbed hooks, and the jidiculx, or cord compressing the arm. Other allusions in the Digest and Code, in addition to those already cited, may be shortly noticed. The testimony of a gladiator or infamous person (such as an accomplice) was not valid without torture. This was no doubt the origin of the medizval maxims (which were, however, by no means universally recognized),—Vilitas persone est justa causa torquendi testem, and Tortura purgatur infamia. Torture could not be inflicted during the forty days of Lent.® Robbers and pirates might be tortured even on Easter Day, the Divine pardon being hoped for where the safety of society was thus assured.!° Capital punishment was not to be suffered until after conviction or confession under torture.1!_ Withdrawal from prosecution (abolitio) was not to be allowed as a rule after the accused had undergone the torture.!2 In

charges of treason the accuser was liable to torture if he did not prove his case. The infliction of torture, not judicial, but at the same time countenanced by law, was at one time allowed to creditors. They were allowed to keep their debtors in private prisons, and most cruelly ill-use them, in order to extort payment.!4 Under the empire private prisons were forbidden. In the time of Juvenal, if his sixth satire may be believed, the Roman ladies actually hired the public torturors to torture their domestic slaves. As a part of the punishment torture was in frequent use. Crucifixion, mutilation, ex- posure to wild beasts in the arena, and other cruel modes

4 Gains, i. 18.

5 The evidence on which the accused might be torturcd was ex- pressed in Roman law by the terms argumentum and indicium. The latter term, as will be seen, afterwards became one of the most im- portant in the law of torture, but the analysis of indictum is later than Roman law. Jndiciiwm was not quite the same thing as semiplena probatio, though the terms appear to be occasionally used as synonyms. Indicium was rather the foundation or cause of probatio, whether plena or semiplena. An indictwm or a concurrence of indicia might, according to circumstances, constitute a plena or semiplena probatio. The difference between the words may be illustrated by a passage from Justin, '* Ad cujus rei probationem immittit indices," xxxii. 2.

6 Dig., xlix. 1, 15. 7 Cod., vii. 62, 12.

Dig, sean, 1), PIL, B I (Cliyche, thuls WOH,

0 Cod,, iii. 12, 10. 11 Cod., ix. 47, 16. 2 Cod., ix. 42, 3. 8 Cod., ix. 8, 3. 14 See, for instance, Livy, vi. 26. ae (Cuiiag ve, Cy 28H ibs,

ror Un ©

of destroying life were common, especially in the time of the persecution of the Christians under Nero.' Cruci- fixion as a punishment was abolished by Constantine in 315, in veneration of the memory of Him who was crucified for mankind. The punishment of mutilation was mode- rated by Justinian, who forbade amputation of both hands or feet or of any limb, and confined

it in future to ainpu- tation of one hand.2 Scourging was inflicted only on slaves ; free men were exempt by the Lex Porcia and Lex Valeria, except in a few cases, such as that of adultery, the penalty for which was scourging and cutting off the nose.2 On the other hand, where the interests of the church were concerned, the tendency was in favour of greater severity. Thus, by the Theodosian Code, a heretic was to be flogged with lead (contusus plumbo) before banishment,‘ and Justinian made liable to tortnre and exile any one insulting a bishop or priest in a church.°

The Church.—As far as it could the church adopted the Roman law, with the important and characteristic difference (dating from the severe edicts of Theodosius the Great in 381) that heresy took the place of treason, it being regarded as a kind of treason against God (“ crimen lesee majestatis divine”). The doctrine of confiscation for treason was so convenient and profitable that it was rapidly adopted by the church.” As most instances in which torture was inflicted by ecclesiastical tribunals would be accusations of heresy or Judaism—a specially revolting form of heresy to medieval Christians—this theory practi- cally equalized all persons for the purpose of torture, in accordance with the doctrine that in treason all were equal. The church generally secured the almost entire immunity of its clergy, at any rate of the higher ranks, from torture by civil tribunals.® In many instances councils of the church pronounced against torture, e.g., in a synod at Rome in 384.9 Torture even of heretics seems to have been originally left to the ordinary tribunals. Thus a bull of Innocent IV., in 1252, directed the torture of heretics by the civil power, as being robbers and murderers of souls, and thieves of the sacraments of God.!° The church also enjoined torture for usury.1! A character- istic division of torture, accepted by the church but not generally acknowledged by lay authorities, was into spiritual and corporal, the latter being simply the imposi- tion of the oath of purgation, the only form originally in use in the ecclesiastical courts. The canon law contains little on the subject of torture, and that little of a com- paratively humane nature. It laid down that it was no sin in the faithful to inflict torture,!* but a priest might not do so with his own hands,!° and charity was to be used in all punishments.‘4 No confession was to be extracted by torture. The principal ecclesiastical tribunal by which torture was inflicted in more recent times was of course the

1 The well-known lines of Juvenal (Sat., i. 155),

‘*Teda lucebis in illa, Qua stantes ardent qui fixo gutture fumant,” will serve as an example of such punishments.

2 Nov., exxxiv. 13. D (Oink we Oy Bie 2 ay BBE

5 Nov., cxxiii. 81. On the subject of torture in Roman law refer- ence may be made to Westphal, Die Torturer der Griechen, Romer, und Deutschen, Leipsic, 1785; Wasserschleben, JZistoria Quexstionum per Tormenta apud Romanos, Berlin, 1836.

6 This term, which included blasphemy and cognate offences, is used both by ecclesiastical and secular jurists, e.g., by Suarez de Paz and by Jousse, Zraité de la Justice Criminelle.

7 See an article by Mr Lea in Zhe English MWistorical Review, April 1887, ‘‘ Confiscation for Heresy in the Middle Ages.”

8 See Escobar, Mor. Theol., tract. vi. c. 2. They were to be tortured only by the clergy, where possible, and only on indicia of special gravity.

9 Lea, Superstition and Force, p. 419, 3d ed., Philadelphia, 1878.

10 Leges et Constitutiones contra Mereticos, § 26.

1l Lecky, Rationalism in Europe, vol. ii, p. 34, n.

12 Deer, pt. ti. 28, 4, 45. 13 Decr., pt. i. 86, 25. Ewer, ptai. Leia, 11. 16 Decr., pt. ii. 15, 6, 1.

INQUISITION (q.v.). The code of instructions issued by Torqueniada in Spain in 1484 provided that an accused person might be put to the torture if semiplena probatio existed against the accused,—that is, so much evidence as to raise a grave and not merely a light presumption of guilt, often used for the evidence of one eye or ear witness of a fact. If the accused confessed during torture, and afterwards confirmed the confession, he was punished as

convicted ; if he retracted, he was tortured again, or sub- jected to extraordinary punishment. One or two inquis- itors, or a commissioner of the Holy Office, were bound to be present at every examination. Owing to the occurrence of certain cases of abuse of torture, a decree of Philip II. was issued, in 1558, forbidding the administration of torture without an order from the council. But this decree does not appear to have been fully observed. By the edict of the inquisitor-general Valdés, in 1561, torture was to be left to the prudence and equity of the judges. They must consider motives and circumstances before decreeing torture, and must declare whether it is to be employed in caput proprium, 1.e., to extort a confession, or im caput alienum, 7.e., t@ incriminate an accomplice. The accused was not to be informed of the grounds of torture. He was not to be questioned on a particular fact, but was to be allowed to say what he pleased. ‘Torture was not to be decreed until the termination of the process, and after defence heard, and the decree was subject to appeal, but only in doubtful cases, to the Council of the Supreme. It was also only in doubtful cases that the inquisitors were bound to consult the council; where the law was clear (and of this they were the judges) there need be no consultation, and no appeal was allowed. The judges, the registrar, and the executioners were the only persons allowed to be present at the torture. They were to be careful that the jailer suggested nothing to the accused during the tor- ture. On ratification twenty-four hours afterwards of a confession made under torture, the accused might be re- conciled, if the inquisitors believed him to be sincerely repentant. If convicted of bad faith, he might be relaxed, 7.e., delivered to the secular power to be burned. The inquisitors had a discretion to allow the accused to make the canonical purgation by oath instead of undergoing corporal torture, but the rule which allows this to be done at the same time discountenances it as fallacious. It is remarkable that the rules do not allow much greater efficacy to torture. They speak of it almost in the terms of Roman law as dangerous and uncertain, and depending for its effects on physical strength.!® Torture had ceased to be inflicted before the suppression of the Inquisition, and in 1816 a papal bull decreed that torture should cease, that proceedings should be public, and that the accuser should be confronted with the accused.!” It was still, however, customary for the fiscal, even in the latest times, to end the requisition by demanding torture as a matter of form. The rules in themselves were not so cruel as the con- struction put upon them by the inquisitors. For instance, by Torquemada’s

instructions torture could not be repeated unless in case of retractation. This led to the subtlety of calling a renewed torture a continuation, and not a repe- tition. The rules of Torquemada and of Valdés are those of the greatest historical importance, the latter forming the code of the Holy Office until its suppression, not only

16 The rules will be found in Llorente's List. of the Inquisition, cc. vi., xxii.

17 A case of actual torture occurred in Spain in the case of Van Halen, in 1817, in spite of the papal bull. In South America, as late as 1809, power to torture was conferred on inquisitors by the dean and chapter of Santiago. See Francisco Moyen, or the Inquisition in South America, by B. V. Mackenna (transl. by J. W. Dutffy, 1869), p. 217.

18 Prescott, Ferdinand and Isabella, vol. i. p. 327.

in Spain, but in other countries where the Inquisition was established. But several other codes of procedure existed before the final perfection of the system by Valdés. The earliest is perhaps the instructions for inquisitors (Diree- torium Inquisitorum) compiled a century earlier than Torquemada by Nicholas Eymerico, grand inquisitor of Aragon about 1368.1 Rules of practice were also framed two centuries later by Simancas, whose position as an apologist has been already stated. The text-book of pro- cedure of the Italian Inquisition was the Sacro Arsenale.? In the Netherlands, Francis Van der Helst was appointed inquisitor-general in 1521, with authority to torture heretics without observing the ordinary forms of law, and without appeal. In 1545 and 1550 instructions for the guidance of inquisitors were issued by Charles V.4 The liability of a judge for exceeding the law was not always recognized by the Inquisition to the same extent as by the lay tribunals. Llorente gives an instance of a warrant by an inquisitor to a licentiate ordering the torture of an accused person, and protesting that, in case of death or fracture of limbs, the fact is not to be imputed to the licentiate.°

Thus far of the law. In practice all the ingenuity of cruelty was exercised to find new modes of torment.® These cruelties led at times to remonstrance from the civil power. One example is the edict of Philip IL. just mentioned.

Another and an earlier one is an ordonnance of Philip the Fair, in 1302, bidding the Inquisition confine itself within the limits of the law.' At Venice the senate decreed that three senators should be present as inquisitors. Further details of the varieties of torture will be found, by those curious in such matters, in the works of Llorente, Herculano (Zistory of the Inquisition in Portugal), Motley, Garrido and Cayley, and Picart, to which may be added works giving accounts of the sufferings of individuals under the Inquisition, such as the narrative of the sutfer- ings of William Lithgow at Malaga in 1622 and of Van Halen in 1817, and (in the Spanish and Portuguese colonies) the cases of Francisco Moyen in Chili, and of Dellon at Goa in 1673.8 Mental torture may be exempli- fied by ExcoMMUNICATION (¢.v.), and by the secrecy and uncertainty of the proceedings of the inquisitors.

As the practice of torture, both by the civil and ecclesiastical power, became more systematized, it grew to be the subject of casuistical inquiry by churchmen, to an extent far exceeding the scanty discussion of the question in the text of the canon law. It will be sufficient here to cite as an example the treatment of it by Liguori, who incorporates the opinions of many of the Spanish casuists. On the whole, his views appear to be more humane than the prevailing practice. The object of torture he defines very neatly as being to turn semiplena into plena probate. For this proper indicia are necessary. He then proceeds to decide certain questions which had arisen, the most interesting of which deal with the nature of the sin of which the accused and the judge are guilty in particular instances. A judge sins gravely if he does not attempt all

1 An edition was published at Rome in 1558, and a compendium at Lisbon in 1762, and by Marchena at Montpellier in 1821.

2 The only edition which the writer has seen is dated Genoa and Perugia, 1653.

3 Motley, Dutch Republic, vol. i. p. 528.

olde paca 5 Llorente, c¢. xiv.

6 Among others were the gradual pouring of water drop by drop on a particular spot of the body, the ¢tormento de toca, or pouring of water into a gauze bag in the throat, which gradually forced the gauze into the stomach, and the péndola, or swinging pendulum, so graphi- cally described in one of Edgar Poe's tales.

7 Ordonnances des Rois, vol. i. p. 346.

8 The history of Dellon's narrative of his experiences in the prison of the Inqnisition is remarkable. It was translated into English in 1688 by the Rev. R. Wharton, a chaplain of Archbishop Sancroft, but was refused a licence, as being contrary to the king's religion, and the publisher was imprisoned.

YO TURE

| milder means of discovering truth before resorting to tor- ture. He sins in a criminal cause, or in one of notable infamy, if he binds the accused by oath to tell the truth before there is proof against him. It is tlie same if with- out oath he uses threats, terror, or exhibition of torments to confound the witness.? If any one, to avoid grave torments, charges himself with a capital crime, he does not sin mortally..° It was a doubtful question whether he sinned gravely in such a case.

England.—It is the boast of the common law of England that it never recognized torture as legal. One, perhaps the chief, reason for this position taken by the law is the difference of the nature of the procedure in criminal cases from that in general use in Continental countries. To use words more familiar in foreign jurisprudence, the English system is accusatorial as distinguished from inquisitorial. The common law of England has always shown itself averse to the inquisitorial system, and so (at least in theory) to the torture which may be regarded as an outcome of the system whose one end was to obtain a confession from the accused. The tendency of the small amount of statute law bearing on the subject is in the same direction. It was provided by Magna Charta, § 29, "that no free man… .~~should be destroyed in any way unless by legal judgment of his equals or by the law of the land." On this Sir E. Coke comments, " No man destroyed, &c., that is, forejudged of life or limb, dis~~ inherited, or put to torture or death.""! The Act of 27 Hen. VIII. c. 4 enacted that, owing to the frequent escape of

pirates in trials by the civil law, “the nature whereof is that before any judgment of death can be given against the offenders they must plainly confess their offence (which they will never do without torture or pains),” such persons should be tried by jury before commissioners under the Great Seal. Finally, the Bill of Rights provided that cruel and unusual punishments ought not to be inflicted. The opinions of tle judges have been invariably against torture in theory, however much some of them may have been led to countenance it in practice. The strongest authority is the resolution of the judges in Felton’s case (1628), “ that he ought not by the law to be tortured by the rack, for no such punishment is known or allowed by our law.” 2 in accordance with this are the opinions of Sir John Fortescue,!? Sir Thomas Smith, and Sir E. Coke, The latter says,—“ As there is no law to warrant tortures in this land, nor can they be justified by any prescription, being so lately brought in.” In spite of all this torture in criminal proceedings was inflicted in England with more or less frequency for some centuries, both as a means of obtaining evidence and as a part of the punishment. But it should be remarked that torture of the former kind was invariably ordered by the crown or council, or by some tribunal of extraordinary authority, such as the Star Chamber, not professing to be bound by the rules of the common law. In only two instances was a warrant to torture issued to a common law judge.’

A licence to torture is found as early as the Pipe Roll of 34 Hen. II.7 The Templars (see TEMPLARS) were tortured in 1310 by royal warrant addressed to the mayor

9 Theol. Mor., bk. ix. § 202. 10 § 274. 11 2 Inst., 480.

2 3 State Trials, 371. B De Laudibus Legun Anglia, c. 22.

14 Commonwealth of England, bk. ii. c. 27, It is curious that Sir T. Smith, with all his hatred of torture, was directed by a warrant under the queen’s seal alone (not through the council) to torture the duke of Norfolk’s servants in 1571. Ina letter to Lord Burghley he pleaded for exemption from so thankless a task.

15 3 Inst., 35. Nevertheless, in the trial of Lords Essex and Sonth- ampton, Coke is found extolling the queen’s mercy for not racking or torturing the

accused, 1 State Trials, 1338.

16 Jardine, Reading on the Use of Torture in the Criminal Law of England (1837), p. 52.

17 Pike, Hist. of Crime in England, vol. i. p. 427.

and sheriffs of London.! In this case it is recorded that torture was unknown in England, and that no torturer was to be found in the realm.? A commission was issued con- cerning the tortures at Newgate in 1334.3 -The rack in the Tower is said to have been introduced by the duke of Exeter in the reign of Henry VI., and to have been thence called “the duke of Exeter’s daughter.” 4 In this reign torture seems to have taken its place asa part of what may be called extraordinary criminal procedure, claimed, and it may be said tacitly recognized, as exercisable by virtue of the prerogative, and continued in use down to 1640.° The infliction of torture gradually became more common under the Tudor monarchs. Under Henry VIII. it appears to have been in frequent use. Only two cases are recorded under Edward VI. and eight under Mary.6 The reign of Elizabeth was its culminating point. In the words of Hallam, “the rack seldom stood idle in the Tower for all the latter part of Elizabeth’s reign.”? The varieties of torture used at this period are fully described by Dr Lingard,® and. consisted of the rack, the scavenger’s daughter,® the iron gauntlets or bilboes, and the cell called ‘‘ Little Ease.” The registers of the council during the Tudor and early Stuart reigns are full of entries as to the use of torture, both for state and for ordinary offences.?° Among notable prisoners put to the torture were Anne Ascue, the Jesuit Campion, Guy Fawkes,” and Peacham (who was examined by Bacon “before torture, in torture, and after torture”).!2 The prevalence of torture in Elizabeth’s reign led to the well-known defence attributed to Lord Burghley, ‘A declaration of the favourable dealing of Her Majesty’s commissioners appointed for the examin- ation of certain traitors, and of tortures unjustly reported to be done upon them for matter of religion,” 1583.! The use of torture in England being always of an extra-ordinary and extra-judicial nature, it is comparatively certain that it could hardly have been applied with that observation of forms which existed in countries where it was regulated by law. There were no rules and no re-

sponsibility beyond the will of the crown or council. This irresponsibility is urged by Selden * as a strong objection to the use of torture.

So far of what may be called torture proper, to which the common law professed itself a stranger. There were, however, cases fully recognized by the common law which differed from torture only in name. The pene forte et dure was a notable example of this. If a prisoner stood mute of malice instead of pleading, he was condemned to the peine, that is, to be stretched upon his back and to have iron laid upon him as much as he could bear, and more, and so to continue, fed upon bad bread and stagnant water through alternate days until he pleaded or died. It

1 Rymer, edera, vol. iii. 228, 232.

2 Hallam, ALiddle Ages, vol. iii. p. 232.

3 Pike, vol. i. p. 481. 43 Inst., 34.

5 This is the date of the latest warrant in Mr Jardine's work.

6 Tt is to be noticed, as Mr Jardine observes, that all these are cases of an ordinary nature, and afford no ground for the assertions made by Strutt and Bishop Burnet that torture was used to heretics as heretics. 7 Const. Hist., vol. i. p. 201.

8 Hist. of England, vol. viii., appendix, note v.

9 These two were cxactly opposite in principle. The rack stretched the limbs of the sufferer; the scavenger's daughter compressed him into a ball.

10 Fifty-five of these will be found in the appendix to Mr Jardine's work. An ordinary robber of plate was threatened with torture in 1567.—Froude, Hist. of England, vol. viii. p. 386.

M1 Jt is not certain whether he was racked, but probably he was, in accordance with the king's letter :—"If he will not otherwise con- fess, the gentlest tortures are to be first used to him, and so on, step by step, to the most severe, and so God speed the good work."

12 Dalrymple, Memoirs and Letters of James I., p. 58 ; Macaulay's Essay on the Works of Bacon.

18 Lord Somers's Tracts, vol. i. p. 189. 4 Table Talk, " Trial." 18 Stephen, Jist. of the Criminal Law, vol. i. p. 297,

was abolished by 12 Geo. III. c. 20. 7 and 8 Geo. IV. c. 28 enacted that a plea of "not guilty " should be entered for a prisoner so standing mute. A case of pene occurred as lately as 1726. At times tying the thumbs with whip- cord was used instead of the peine. This was said to be a common practice at the Old Bailey up to the last century.16 In trials for witchcraft the legal proceedings often partook of the nature of torture, as in the throwing of the reputed witch into a pond to see whether she would sink or swim, in drawing her blood,!' and in thrusting pins into the body to try to find the insensible spot. Confessions, too, appear to have been often extorted by actual torture, and torture of an unusual nature, as the devil was supposed to protect his votaries from the effects of ordinary torture.

Torture as a part of the punishment existed in fact, if not in name, down to a very recent period. Mutilation as a punishment appears in some of the pre-Conquest codes, such as those of Alfred, Athelstan, and Canute. Bracton, who does not notice torture as a means of obtain- ing evidence, divides corporal punishment into that inflicted with and without torture.!® Later instances are the punish- ment of burning to death inflicted on heretics under the Six Articles (31 Hen. VIII. c. 14) and other Acts, and on women for petit treason (abolished by 30 Geo. III. c. 48), the mutilation inflicted for violence in a royal palace by 33 Hen. VIII. c. 12, the punishment for high treason, which existed nominally until 1870 (see TrEAson), the pillory (abolished by 7 Will. IV. and 1 Vict. c. 23), the stocks, and the burning in the hand for felony (abolished by 19 Geo. III. c. 74). Corporal punishment now exists only in the case of juvenile offenders (see SUMMARY JURISDICTION) and of robbery with violence (see THEFT). It was abolished in the army by the Army Act, 1881.19

Scotland.—Torture was long a recognized part of Scottish criminal procedure, and was acknowledged as such by many Acts and warrants of

the Scottish parliament, and warrants of the crown and the privy council. Some of the more important instances arc the following. In 1542 the forfeiture of John, Lord Glaminis, was reduced by the parliament as having proceeded on a confession extorted by threats of the ‘‘pynebankis.” In 1567 four persons were ordered by the Privy Council to be tortured for complicity in Darnley’s murder.?° In 1591 a commission issued to torture certain persons accused. of witchcraft! James VI., in 1596, empowered the provost and bailies of Edinburgh to try rioters by torture. The torture was applied to Rhynd in 1600, on a charge of being privy to the Gowrie House couspiracy.22. Two Acts in 1649 dealt with torture: onc took the form of a warrant to examine witnesses against William Barton by any form of probation,’ the other of a warrant to a committee to inquire as to the use of torture against persons suspected of witch- eraft.24 In 1650 the parliament ordaincd the committee appointed for the examination of prisoners to intimate to Colonel Sibbald that if his examination were not satisfactory the parliament would ordain him to be tortured. The judges, in 1689, wcre empowered by the estates to torture Chiesly of Dalrye, charged with the murder of the Lord President Lockhart, in order to discover ac- complices. In the same ycar the use of torture without evidence or in ordinary cases was declared illegal in the Claim of Right. The careful wording of this will be noticcd: it does not object to torture altogether, but reserves it for cases where a basis of evidence had already been laid, and for crimes of great gravity, thus admitting the dangerous principle, founded on Roman law, that the importance of the crime is a reason for departing from the ordinary rules of justice. However great the crime, it is no more certain than in the case of a crime of less gravity that the person accused was the person who committed it. A warrant issued in the same year to put to the torture certain persons accused of con- spiring against the Government, and also certain dragoons suspected of corresponding with Lord Dundee. In 1690 an Act passed recit- ing the torture of William Carstares, a ministcr, in 1688, and re-

16 Stephen, vol. i. p. 800; Kelyng, Reports, p. 27.

7 The superstition was that any one drawing a witch’s blood was free from her power. This is alluded toin Henry VTI., pt. i. act i. sc. 5; ‘Blood will I draw on thee ; thou art a witch.”

18 1040. PAA Vict. c. 9, § 7.

20 Register of the Privy Council, vol. i. p. 525.

21 Tbid., vol. iv. p. 680. 22 Ibid., vol. vi. p. 156.

ae (, SEB} Be, B70.

XX 59

466

establishing his competencyasa witness.! The last warrant appears to be one in 1690 for torturing a man accused of rape and murder. In 1708 torture in Scotland was finally abolished by 7 Anne e. 21, § 5. Many details of the tortures inflicted will be found in Pitcairn's Criminal Trials and the introduction to Maclaurin's Criminal Cascs. Among other varieties—the nature of some of them can only be guessed—were the rack, the pilniewinkis, the boot," the caschie-laws, the lang irnis, the narrow-bore, and, worst of all, the waking, or artificial prevention of sleep.? The ingenuity of torture was exercised in a special degree on charges of witchcraft, uotably in the reign of James VI., an expert both in witchcraft and in torture. The Act of 1649 already cited shows that the prin- ciple survived him. Under the government of the dukes of Lauderdale and York torture as a practice in charges of religious and political offences reached its height. " The privy council was accustomed to extort confessions by torture; that grim divan of bishops, lawyers, and peers sucking in the groans of each undaunted enthusiast, in hope that some imperfect avowal might lead to the gacrifice of other victims, or at least warrant the execution of the present."4 With such examples before them in the law, it is scarcely to be wondered at that persons in positions of authority, especially the nobility, sometimes exceeded the law and inflicted torture at their own will and for their own purposes. There are several instances in the register of the privy council of suits against such persons, ¢.g., against the earl of Orkney, in 1605, for putting a son of Sir Patrick Bellenden in the boots. :

Treland seems to have enjoyed a comparative immunity from torture. It was not recognized by the common or statute law, and the cases of its infliction

do not appear to be numerous. In 1566 the president and council of Munster, or any three of them, were empowered to inflict torture, ‘‘in cases necessary, upon vehement presumption of any great offence in any party committed against the Queen’s Majesty.”® In 15838 Hurley, an Irish priest, was tortured in Dublin, by ‘toasting his fect against the fire with hot boots.”® In the case of Myagh, in 1581, the accused was brought over from Ireland by command of the lord deputy to be tortured in the Tower.? In 1615 one O’Kennan was put to the rack in Dublin by virtue of the lord deputy’s commission.® In 1627 the lord deputy doubted whether he had authority to put a priest named O’Cullenan to the rack. An answer was returned by Lord Killultagh to the effect that ‘‘you ought to rack him if you saw cause and hang him if you found reason.” ®

British Colonies and Dependencies. —The infliction of torture in any British colony or dependency has usually been regarded as contrary to law, and ordered only by arbitrary authority. It is true that in the trial of Sir Thomas Picton in 1806, for subjecting, while governor of Trinidad, a woman named Luisa Calderon to the torture of the picquet,!° one of the grounds of defence was that such torture was authorized by the Spanish law of the island, but the accused was convicted in spite of this defence, and the final decision of the Court of King’s Bench, in 1812, decrecing a respite of the defendant’s recognizances till further order, was perhaps not so much an affirmation of the legality in the particular instance as the practical expression of a wish to spare an eminent public servant.’ As to Tats, the second charge against Warren Hastings was extortion from the begums of Oude by means of the torture of their servants.” In the present Indian Penal Code and Evidence Act there are pro- visions intended, as Sir James Stephen says, to prevent the practice of torture by the police for the purpose of extracting con- fessions from persons in thcir custody.44 In Ceylon torture, which had been allowed under the Dutch government, was expressly abolished by royal proclamation in 1799.

United Statcs.—One instance of the peine forte et dure is known. It was inflicted in 1692 on Giles Cory of Salem, who refused to plead when arraigned for witchcraft.!° The constitution of the United States provides, in the words of the Bill of Rights, that cruel and unusual punishments are not to be inflicted.1® This is repeated in the constitutions of most States. The

infliction of cruel and unusual punishment by the master or officer of an American vessel on the high seas, or within the maritime jurisdiction of the United States, is punishable with fine or imprisonment, or both.?”

1 The thumbserew with which Carstares lad been tortured was afterwards presented to him as a remembrance by the Privy Council.

2 Persons subjected to more than usual torture from the boot were said to be ‘Sextremely booted.”

3 This seems to have been used in one ease in England. Lecky, Rationalism in Europe, vol, i. p. 122.

4 Hallam, Const. Hist., vol. iil. p. 436, p. 583, and ScoTLAND, vol. xxi. p. 516.

5 Froude, Hist. of England, vol. viii. p. 386.

7 Jardine, p. 29.

9 Jardine, p. 54.

10 In the picquet the sufferer was supported only on the great toe (which rested ona sharp stake), and by a rope attached to one arm.

11 30 State Trials, 449.

12 See the Report of the Proceedings, vol. i., and Macaulay’s Essay on Warren Hastings. 13 Stephen, Jndian Evidence Act, p. 126.

14 §§ 327-331 of Code; §§ 25-27 of Act.

15 Bouvier, Law Dict., s.v. ‘‘Peine Forte et Dure.”

16 Amendments. Art. viii. 17 Revised Stat., § 5347.

See Burnet, (ist. of Own Time, vol. i.

6 Jbid., vol. xi. p. 263. 8 Cal. State Papers (Irish series, 1615-1625), p. 78.

Lor? Uk i

Continental States. —The principles of Roman law were generally adopted. Want of space unfortunately prevents a detailed exaini- nation of the law of other countries, but that of Italy may fairly

be taken as the type of a system which reached at its maturity a

certain revolting completeness of which it is difficult to speak with patience. The law as it existed in Italy is contained in a long line of authorities, chiefly supplied by the school of Bologna, beginning with the glossatores and coming down through the post-glossatores, until the system attained its perfection in the vast work of Farinaccius, written early in the 17th century, where every pos- sible question that could arise is treated with elaborate minuteness. The writings of jurists were supplemented by a large body of legis- lative enactments in most of the Italian states, extending from the constitutions of the emperor Frederick II. down to the last century. It is not until Bartolus (1314-1357) that the law begins to assume a definite and complete form. In his commentary on book xlviii. of the Digest he follows Roman law closely, but introduces some further refinements: ¢.g., though leading questions may not be asked in the main inquiry they are admissible as subsidiary. There is a beginning of classification of indicia. A very full discussion of the law is contained in the work on practice of Hippolytus de Marsiliis,!8 a jurist of Bologna, notorious, on his own admission, as the inventor of the torture of keeping without sleep. He defines the question as inquisitio veritatis per tormenta et cordis dolorem, thus recognizing the mental as well as the physical elements in torture. It was to be used only in capital cases and atrocious crimes. The works of Farinaccius and of Julius Clarus nearly a century later were of great authority from the high official positions filled by the writers. Farinaccius was procurator-general to Pope Paul V., and his discussion of torture is one of the most complete of any. It occupies 251 closely printed folio pages with double columns, The length at which the subject is treated is one of the best proofs of the science to which it had been reduced. The chief feature of the work is the minute and skilful analysis of indicia, fama, presunptio, and other technical terms. Many definitions of indiciwm are suggested, the best perhaps being conjectura ex probabilibus ct non necessariis orta, a quibus potest abesse veritas scd non

verisimilitudo. For every infliction of torture a distinct ¢dictwm is required. But this rule does not apply where it is inflicted for discovering accomplices or for discovering a crime other than that for which it was originally inflicted. Torture may be ordered in all criminal cases, except small offences, and in certain civil cases, such as denial of a depositum, bankruptcy, usury, treasure trove, and fiscal cases. It may be inflicted on all persons, unless specially exempted (clergy, minors, &c.), and even those exempted may be tortured by command of the sovereign. There are three kinds of torture, levis, gravis, and gravissima, the first and second corresponding to the ordinary torture of French writers, the last to the extraordinary. The extraordinary or gravissima was as much as could possibly be borne without destroying life. An immense variety of tortures is mentioned, the most usual being the tying of one hand only with the cord. The judge could not begin with torture ; it was only a subsidium. If inflicted without due course of law, it was void asa proof. The judge was liable to penaltics if he tortured without proper tndicia, if a privileged person, or if to the extent that death or permanent illness was the result. An immense variety of tor- tures is mentioned, and the list tended to grow, for, as Farinac- cius says, judges continually invented new modes of torture to please themselves. Numerous casuistical questions are treated at length. Could a priest reveal an acknowledgment of an intended crime made to him in confession? What kinds of reports or how much hearsay evidence constituted fame? How far was a con- fession allowed to be extorted by blandishments or false promises on the part of the judge? Were there three or five grades in torture? Julius Clarus of Alessandria was a member of the council of Philip 11.2” Toa great extent he follows Farinaccius. He puts the questions for the consideration of the judge with great clear- ness. They are —whether (1) a crime has been committed, (2) the charge is one in which torture is admissible, (3) the fact can be proved otherwise, (4) the crime was secret or open, (5) the object of the torture is to elicit confession of crime or discovery of accomplices. He admits the tremendous power given toa judge of torturing a witness should he suspect that the latter knows the truth and is concealing it. An accuser may not be racked with the accused in order to test his sincerity. The clergy can be tortured only in charges of treason, poisoning, and violation of tombs. On the great question whether there are three or five grades, he decides in favour of five, viz., threats, taking to the place of torment, stripping and binding, lifting on the rack, rack- ing. Other

Italian writers of less eminence have been referred to for the purposes of this article. The burden of their writings is practically the same, but they have uot attained the systematic perfection of Farinaccius. Citations from many of them are made by Manzoni (see below). Among others are Guido de Suzara, Paris

18 Practica Criminalis que Averolda nuncupatur, Venice, 1532. 19 Praxis et Theorica Criminalis, bk. ii. tit. v. quest. 36-51, Frankfort, 1622, 20 Practica Criminalis Finalis, Lyons, 1637. .

Kinds of

de Puteo, Agidins Bossius of Milan, Casonus of Venice, Decianus, Follerius, and Tranquillus Ambrosianus, whose works cover the period from the 13th to the end of the 17th century. The law depended mainly on the writings of the jurists as interpreters of custom. At the same time in all or nearly all the Italian states the customary law was limited, supplemented, or amended. by legislation. That a check by legislative authority was necessary appears from the glimpses afforded by the writings of the jurists that the letter of the law was by no means always fol- lowed. The earliest legislation after the Roman law seems to be the constitutions of the emperor Frederick II. for Sicily pro- mulgated in 1231.

Several instanees of the torture of eminent persons occur in Italian history. The historical case of the greatest literary interest is that of the persons accused of bringing the plague into Milan in 1630 by smearing the walls of houses with poison. Aun analysis of the case was undertaken by Verri? and Manzoni,® and puts in a clear light some of the abuses to which the system led in times of popular panic. Convincing arguments are urged by Manzoni, after an exhaustive review of the authorities, to prove the ground- lessness of the charge on which two innocent persons underwent the torture of the canape, or hempen cord (the effect of which was partial or complete dislocation of the wrist), and afterwards suffered death by breaking on the wheel. The main arguments, shortly stated, are these, all based upon the evidence as recorded, and the law as laid down by jurists. (1) The unsupported evidenee of an accomplice was treated as an indiciwm in a

case not one of those exceptional ones in which such an indiciwm was sufficient. The evidence of two witnesses or a confession by the accused was neces- sary to establish a remote indiciwm, such as lying. (2) Hearsay evidence was received when primary evidence was obtainable. (8) The confession made under torture was not ratified afterwards. (4) It was made in consequcnee of a promise of impunity. (5) It was of an impossible crime.

Much general information on the subject will be found in the works of Mr Lea and Mr Lecky, to which reference has already been made, in the Penny Cyclo- pedia, s.v. “Torture,” in Zedler’s Universal Lexicon, s.v. “Tortur,” and in Meyer’s Esprit des Institutions Judiciaires. For England, Jardine’s work is the standard authority. Thirty-six kinds of torture are described in Meyer’s Kon- versations-Lexikon, s.v. “Tortur.” Instruments of torture are still preserved in the Tower of London and in the muscums of Munich, Ratisbon, Nuremberg, The Hague, and other places, Those at the Tower are the iron eollar, the bilboes, the thumbscrew, and the scayenger’s daughter. There is also a model of one of the forms of the rack. (J. Wt.)

TORY. See Wuic AnD Tory.

TOTEMISM. A totem is a class of material objects which a savage regards with superstitious respect, believing that there exists between him and every member of the class an intimate and altogether special relation. The name is derived from an Ojibway (Chippeway) word which was first introduced into literature, so far as appears, by J. Long, an Indian interpreter of last century, who spelt it totam.4 The connexion between a man and his totem is mutually beneficent: the totem protects the man, and the man shows his respect for the totem in various ways, by not killing it if it be an animal, and not cutting or gathering it if it be a plant. As distinguished from a fetich, a totem is never an isolated individual, but always a class of objects, generally a species of animals or of plants, more rarely a class of inanimate natural objects, very rarely a class of artificial objects.

Considered in relation to men, totems are of at least

totems. three kinds :—(1) the clan totem, common to a whole clan,

Clan totem.

and passing by inheritance from generation to generation ; (2) the sex totem, common either to all the males or to all the females of a tribe, to the exclusion in either case of the other sex; (3) the individual totem, belonging to a single individual and not passing to his descendants. Other kinds of totems exist and will be noticed, but they may perhaps be regarded as varieties of the clan totem. The latter is by far the most important of all; and where we speak of totems or totemism without qualification the reference is always to the clan totem.

The Clan Totem.—The clan totem is reverenced by a body of men and women who call themselves by the name

1 For instanee, Paris de Puteo illustrates the extra-legal cruelties sometimes practised by asserting that he saw a judge seize an aecused

by the hair of the head and dash his head against a pillar in order to extort a confession. 2 QOsservaziont sulla Tortura.

3 Storia della Colonna Infame. 7 + Voyages and Travels of an Indian Interpreter, p. 86, 1791.

AGT of the totem, believe themselves to be of one blood, de- scendants of a common ancestor, and are bound together by common obligations to each other and by a common faith in the totem. Totemism is thus both a religious and a social system. In its religious aspect it consists of the relations of mutual respect and protection between a man and his totem; in its social aspect it consists of the rela- tions of the clansmen to each other and to men of other clans. In the later history of totemism these two sides, the religious and the social, tend to part company ; the social system sometimes survives the religious; and, on the other hand, religion sometimes bears traces of totemism in countries where the social system based on totemism has disappeared. We begin with the religious side. Totemism as a Religion, or the Relation between a Man

Totem-

and his Totem.—The members of a totem clan call them- ism as a

selves by the name of their totem, and commonly believe themselves to be actually descended from it. Thus the Turtle clan of the Iroquois are descended from a fat

turtle, which, burdened by the weight of its shcll in walking, con- from trived by great exertions to throw it off, and thereafter gradually totem.

developed into a man.® The Cray-Fish clan of the Choctaws were originally eray-fish and lived underground, coming up oecasionally through the mud to the surface. Once a party of Choetaws smoked them out, and, treating them kindly, taught them the Choctaw language, taught them to walk on two legs, made them eut off their toe nails and pluck the hair from their bodics, after which they adopted them into the tribe. But the rest of their kindred, the cray-fish, are still living underground.® The Osages are desecnded from a male snail and afemale beaver. The snail burst his shell, developed arms, feet, and legs, and became a fine tall man; after- wards he married the beaver maid.? Some of the elans of western Australia are descended from ducks, swans, and other waterfowl.® In Senegambia each family or clan is descended from an animal (hippopotamus, scorpion, &c.) with which it counts kindred.®

Somewhat different are the myths in which a human ancestress is said to have given birth to an animal of the totem species. Thus the Snake clan among the Moquis of Arizona are descended from a woman who gave birth to snakes.!° The Bakalai in western equatorial Africa believe that their women once gave birth to the totem animals; one woman brought forth a calf, others a crocodile, hippopotamus, monkey, boa, and wild pig.”

Believing himself to be descended from, and therefore akin to, his totem, the savage naturally treats it with respect. If it is an animal he will not, as a rule, kill nor eat it. In the Mount Gambier tribe (South Australia) “a man does not kill or use as food any of the animals of the same sub- division with himself, excepting when hunger compels; and then they express

sorrow for having to eat their wingong (friends) or twmanang (their flesh). When using the last

.

word they touch their breasts, to indicate the close relation- ship, meaning almost a part of themselves.

To illustrate :—One day one of the blacks killed a crow, Three or four days afterwards a Boortwa (crow) named Larry died. He had been ailing for some days, but the killing of his wingong hastened his death. The tribes about the Gulf of Carpentaria greatly reverence their totems: if any one were to kill the totem animal in presence of the man whose totem it was, the latter would say, ‘“‘ What for you kill that fellow ? that my father!” or ‘‘ That brother belonging to me you have killed ; why did you do it?” 8 Sir George Grey says of the western Australian tribes that a man will never kill ‘an animal of his kobong (totem) species if he finds it asleep; ‘‘indeed, he always kills it reluctantly, and never without affording it a ehance to escape. This arises from the family belief that some one individual of the species is their nearest friend, to kill whom would be a great crime, aud to be earefully avoided.” 4 Amongst the Indians of British Columbia a man will

ts a

5 Second Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology, Washington, 1883, p. 77. 6 Catlin, North American Indians, ii. p. 128.

7 Schoolcraft, The American Indians, p. 95 sq. ; Lewis and Clarke, Travels to the Source of the Missouri River, London, 1815, i. p. 12.

8 Sir George Grey, Vocabulary of Dialects of S. W. Australia.

9 Revue d’ Ethnographie, iii. p. 396, v. p. 81.

10 Bourke, Snake Dance of the Moquis of Arizona, p. 177.

1 Du Chaillu, Hxplorations in Equatorial Africa, p. 308.

12 Stewart in Fison and Howitt, Kamilaroi and Kurnat, p. 169.

13 Jour. Anthrop. Inst., xiii. p. 300.

14 Grey, Journals of Tivo Expeditions in North- West and Western Australia, ii. p. 228.

Respect shown to totem.

Split totems.

Plant totems,

Totem taboos.

Totem kept in captivity.

Totem buried and mourned,

his face for shame, and afterwards demand compensation for the act. Whenever one of these Indians exhibits his totem badge (as by painting it on his forehead), all persons of the same totem are bound to do honour to it by casting property before it.! The Damaras in South Africa are divided into totem clans, called “eandas”; and according to the clan to which they belong they refuse to partake, ¢.g., of an ox marked with black, white, or red spots, or ofa sheep without horns, or of draught oxen. Some of them will not even touch vessels in which such food has been eooked, and avoid even the smoke of the fire which has been used to cook it.2 The negroes of Senegambia do not eat their totems.* The Mundas (or Mundaris) and Oraons in Bengal, who are divided into exogamous totem clans, will not kill or eat the totem animals which give their names to the clans. A remarkable feature of some of these Oraon totems is that they are not whole animals, but parts of animals, as the head of a tortoise, the stomach of a pig. In such cases (which are not confined to Bengal) it is of eourse not the whole animal, but only the special part, that the clans- men are forbidden to eat. Such totems may be distinguished as split totems. The Jagannathi Kumhar in Bengal abstain from killing or injuring the totems of their respective claus, and they bow to their totems when they meet them.®

When the totem is a plant the rules are such as these. A native of western Australia, whose totem is a vegetable, ‘may not gather it under certain circumstances and at a particular period of the year.”® An Oraon clan, whose totem is the kujrar tree, will not eat the oil of that tree, nor sit in its shade.’ The Red Maize clan of the Omahas will not eat red maize. Those of the people of Ambon and Uliase who are descended from trees may not use these trees for firewood.

The rules not to kill or eat the totem are not the only taboos ; the clansmen are often forbidden to touch the totem or any part of it, sometimes even to look at it.

Thus the Elk clan of the Omahas neither cat the flesh nor touch any part of the male elk. The Deer-Head clan of the Omahas may not touch the skin of any animal of the deer family, nor wear moccasins of deer skin, nor use the fat of the deer for hair-oil; but they may eat the flesh of deer.® Of the totem clans in Bengal it is said that they “are prohibited from killing, cating, eutting, burning, carrying, using, &c.,” the totem. The Bechuanas in South Africa, who havea well- developed totem system, may not eat nor clothe themselves in the skin of the totem animal.4!_ They even avoid, at least in some cases, to look at the totem. Thus to a man of the Bakuena (Bakwain) or Crocodile clan, it is ‘‘hateful and unlucky” to meet or gazc ona crocodile ; the sight is thought to cause inflammation of the eyes.

Sometimes the totem animal is fed or even kept alive in captivity. Among the mountaineers of Formosa each clan or village keeps its totem (serpent, leopard, &c.) in a cage.”® A Samoan clan whose totem was the eel used to present the first fruits of the taro planta- tions to the eels. Amongst the Narrinyeri in South Australia men of the Snake clan sometimes catch snakes, pull out their teeth or sew up their mouths, and keep them as pets. In a Pigeon clan of Samoa a pigeon was carefully kept and fed. Amongst the Kalang in Java, whose totem is the red dog, each family asa rule keeps one of these animals, which they will on no account allow to be struck or ill-used by any one. 16

The dead totem is mourned for and buried like a dead clansman. In Samoa, if a man of the Owl totem found a dead owl by the road side, he would sit down and weep overit and beat his forehead with stones till the blood

flowed. The bird would then be wrapped up and buried with as much ceremony as if it had been a human being. “This, however, was not the death of the god. He was supposed to be yet alive, and incarnate in all the owls in existence,’’!7 The generalization here implied is characteristic of totemism; it is not mercly an individual but the species that is reverenced. The

Wanika in eastern Africa look on the hyena as one of their

1 R. C. Mayne, British Columbia, p. 258. 2 C. J. Anderson, Lake Ngami, 222 sq. 3 Rev, d’ Ethn., iti. 396. “ Dalton in Trans. Ethnolog. Soc., new series, vi. p. 36; Id., Ethnol. of Bengal, pp. 189, 254; As. Quart. Rev., July 1886, p. 76. 5 As. Quart. Rev., July 1886, p. 79. 8 Grey, Journals, ii. 228 sq. 7 Dalton, Ethn. of Bengal, 254; Id., Trans. Ethnol. Soc., vi. 36. 8 E. James, Expedition from Pittsburgh to the Rocky Mountains, ii. p. 47; Third Rep. Bur. Ethnol., p. 225. 9 James, loc. cit.; Third Rep., 245. As. Quart. Rev., July 1886. 1 Casalis, The Basutos, 211. 12 Verhandl. der Berliner Gesell. f. Anthropologie, 1882, p. (62). 13 Turner, Samoa, p. 71. M Native Tribes of S. Australia, p. 63. 15 Turner, op. cit., p. 64. 16 Rafiles, Hist. of Java, i. p. 328, ed. 1817. 1 Turner, op. cit., p. 21, ef. 26, 60 sq.

Thorn i TS at

never kill his totem animal ; if he sees another do it, he will hide] ancestors, and the death of an hyena is mourned by the whole

people; the mourning for a chief is said to be as nothing compared to the mourning for an hyena.?® A tribe of southern Arabia used to bury a dead gazelle wherever they found one, and the whole tribe mourned for it seven days.4® A Californian tribe which reverenced the buzzard held an a1nual festival at which the chief ceremony was the killing of a buzzard without losing a drop of its blood. It was then skinned, the feathers were preserved to make a sacred dress for the medicine-man, and the body was buried in holy ground amid the lamentations of the old women, who mourned as for the loss of a relative or friend.?°

As some totem clans avoid looking at their totem, so others are Totem careful not to speak of it by its proper name, but usc descriptive not re-

epithets instead. The three totems of the Delawares—the wolf, ferred to” turtle, and turkey—were referred to respectively as ‘‘round foot,” by name, **‘crawler,” and “not chewing,” the last referring to the bird’s habit of swallowing its food ; and the clans called theniselves, not Wolves, Turtles, and Turkeys, but “ Round Feet,” “ Crawlers,” and “ Those who do not ehew.”**!_ The Bear clan of the Ottawas called them- selves not Bears but Big Feet.” The object of these circumlocu- tions is probably to give no offence to the worshipful animal.

The penalties supposed to be incurred by acting disre- Conse-

spectfully to the totem are various. The Bakalai think quences that if a man were to eat his totem the women of his ome clan would miscarry and give birth to animals of the totem to totem. kind, or die of an awful disease.** The Elk clan among the Omahas believe that if any clansman were to touch any part of the male elk, or eat its flesh or the flesh of the male deer, he would break out in boils and white spots in different parts of the body.2* The Red Maize subclan of the Omahas believe that, if they were to eat of the red maize, they would have running sores all round their mouth.*° And in general the Omahas believe that to eat of the totem, even in ignorance, would cause sickness, not only tothe eater, but also to his wife and children.” The worshippers of the Syrian goddess, whose creed was saturated with totemism, believed that if they ate a sprat or an anchovy their whole bodies would break out in ulcers, their legs would waste away, and their liver melt, or that their belly and legs would swell up.??

The Samoans thought it death to injure or eat their totems. The totem was supposed to take up his abode in the sinner’s body, and there to gender the very thing which he had eaten till it caused his death.?$

Thus if a Turtle man ate of a turtle he grew very ill, and the Samoan voice of the turtle was heard in his inside saying, ‘‘ He ate me ; mode of Iam killing him.”*? In such cases, however, the Samoans had a appeasing mode of appeasing the angry totem. The offender himself or one totem. of his clan was wrapped in leaves and laid in an unheated oven, { as if he were about to be baked. Thus if amongst the Cuttle-Fish clan a visitor had caught a cuttle-fish and cooked it, or if a Cuttle- Fish man had been present at the eating of a cuttle-fish, the Cuttle- Fish clan met and chose a man or woman

who went through the pretence of being baked. Otherwise a cuttle-fish would grow in the stomach of some of the clan and be their death.*° 4

In Australia, also, the punishment for eating the totem Aus- appears to have been sickness or death.?! But it is not ie merely the totem which is tabooed to the Australians, jopoos,

they have, besides, a very elaborate code of food prohibi- tions, which vary chiefly with age, being on the whole

strictest and most extensive at puberty, and gradually : relaxing with advancing years. Thus young men are for-

bidden to eat the emu; if they ate it, it is thought that | they would be afflicted with sores all over their bodies.*?

18 Charles New, Life, Wanderings, &c., in Eastern Africa, p. 122.

12 Robertson Smith, Kinship and Marriagein Karly Arabia, p. 195.

20 Boscana, in Alfred Robinson’s Life in California, p. 291 sq.; Bancroft, Native Races of the Pacific States, iii. p. 168.

*1 Brinton, The Lenape and their Legends, p. 39; Morgan, Ane. Soc., / p. 171; Heckewelder, p. 247.

22 See Acad., 27th Sept. 1884, p. 203.

23 Du Chaillu, Hquat. Afr., p. 309. 24 Third Rep., 225.

I (ikihes OB Ip 26 James, Hxped. to the Rocky Mountains, ii. p. 50.

°7 Plutarch, De Superst., 10; Selden, De Dis Syris, p. 269 sq., Leipsic, 1668. 28 Turner, Samoa, p. 17 sq. ae Histo, B00):

80 Turner, Samoa, p. 31 sq. Sh vale eh, sath iy HG.

32-7. L. Mitchell, Three Expeditions into the Interior of Eastern Australia, li, p. 341.

Totem helps clansman,

Totem ‘omens.

Co TT

The relation between a man and his totem is one of mutual help and protection. Ifthe man respects and cares

for the totem, he expects that the totem will do the same ®

y him. In Senegambia the totems, when they are dangerous animals, will not hurt their clansmen; e¢.g., men of the Scorpion clan affirm that scorpions (of a very deadly kind) will run over their bodies without biting them.) A Snake clan (Ophiogenes) in Asia Minor, believing that they were descended from snakes, and that snakes were their kinsmen, submitted to a practical test the claims of any man amongst them whom they suspected of being no true clansman. They made a snake bite him; if he survived, he was a true clansman ; if he died, he was not.” The Psylli, a Snake clan in Africa, had a similar test of kinship ; they exposed their new-born children to snakes, and if the snakes left them unharmed or only bit without killing them, the children were legitimate ; otherwise they were bastards.2 In Senegambia, at the present day, a python is expected to visit every child of the Python clan within eight days after birth.*

Other totem clans regard a man who has been bitten by the totem, even though he survives, as disowned by the totem, and therefore they expel him from the clan. Among the Crocodile clan of the Bechuanas, if a man has been bitten by a crocodile, or merely had water splashed over him by a crocodile’s tail, he is expelled the clan.°

But it is not enough that the totem should merely abstain from injuring, he must positively benefit the men who put their faith in him. The Snake clan (Ophiogenes) of Asia Minor believed that if they were bitten by an adder they had only to put a snake to the wound and their totem would suck out the poison and soothe away the inflammation and the pain.© Hence Omaha medicine- men, in curing the sick, imitate the action and voice of their (individual) totem.’ Members of the Serpent clan in Senegambia profess to

heal by their touch persons who have been bitten by serpents. A similar profession was made in antiquity by Snake clans in Africa, Cyprus, and Italy.®

Again, the totem gives his clansmen important informa- tion by means of omens. Jn the Coast Murring tribe of New South Wales each man's totem warned him of com- ing danger; if his totem was a kangaroo, a kangaroo would warn him against his foes.19 The Samoan totems gave omens to their clansmen. Thus, if an owl flew before the Owl clan, as they marched to war, it was a signal to go on; but if it flew across their path, or back- wards, it was a sign to retreat.11 Some kept a tame owl on purpose to give omens in war.!?

When the conduct of the totem is not all that his clansmen could desire, they have various ways of putting pressure on him.

Thus, in harvest time, when the birds eat the corn, the Sinall Bird clan of the Omahas take some corn which they chew and spit over the field. This is thought to keep the birds from the crops.¥ If worms infest the corn the Reptile elan of the Omahas eatch some of them and pound them up with some grains of corn which have been heated. They make asoup of the mixture and eat it, believing that the corn will not be infested again, atleast forthat year.4 During a fog the men of the Turtle subclan of the Omahas used to draw

1 Revue d' Ethnographie, iii. p. 396.

2 Varro in Priscian, x. 32, vol. i. p. 524, ed. Keil. For the snake descent of the clan, see Strabo, xiii. 1, 14; Allian, V. A., xii. 39.

3 Varro, loc. cit.; Pliny, NV. H., vii. § 14. Pliny has got it wrong end on. He says that if the snakes did not leave the children they were bastards. We may safely correct his statement by Varro's.

4 Revue d' Ethnographte, iii. p. 397.

5 Livingstone, South Africa, p. 255.. 8 Strabo, xiii. 1, 14.

7 James, Expedition to the Rocky Mountains, i. p. 247,

8 Revue d’ Ethnographie, iii. p. 396.

9 Pliny, V. H., xxviii. 30. ih, Zila She Satins WDB 0}, Sia AHO.

11 Turner, Samoa, 21, 24, 60. LEE Hite, BB) BER.

18 Third Report, p. 288 sg. The idea perhaps is that the birds eat in the persons of their clansmen, and give tangible evidence that they have eaten their fill. 14 Third Rep., 248.

the figure of a turtle on the ground with its face to the south. On the head, tail, middle of the back, and on each leg were placed small pieces of a red breech-cloth with some tobacco. This was thought to make the fog disappear. ®

In order, apparently, to put himself more fully under Man

the protection of the totem, the clansman is in the habit 2ssimi- ates

of assimilating himself to the totem by dressing in the skin

himself

or other part of the totem animal, arranging his hair and to totem.

mutilating his body so as to resemble the totem, and repre- senting it on his body by cicatrices, tattooing, or paint.

Among the Thlinkets on solemn occasions, such as dances, memorial festivals, and burials, individuals often appear disguised in the full form of their totem animals ; and, as a rule, each clans- man carries at least an easily recognizable part of his totem with him.!® Amongst the Omahas, the smaller boys of the Black Shoulder (Buffalo) clan wear two locks of hair in imitation of horns.’ The Small Bird clan of the Omahas ‘leave a little hair in front, over the forehead, for a bill, and some at the back of the head, for the

bird’s tail, with much over each ear for the wings.” 18 The Turtle subclan of the Omahas ‘‘ cut off all the hair from a boy’s head, except six locks ; two are left on each side, one over the forehead, and one hanging down the back in imitation of the legs, head, and tail of a turtle.” 1% The practice of knocking out the upper front teeth at puberty, which prevails in Australia and elsewhere, is, or was once, probably an imitation of the totem. The Batoka in Africa who adopt this practice say that they do so in order to be like oxen, while those who retain their teeth are like zebras. °°

The Haidas of Queen Charlotte Islands are universally tattooed, the design being in all cases the totem, executed in a conventional style. When several families of different totems live together in the same large house, a Haida chief will have all their totems tattooed on his person.*! Tribes in South America are especially distinguished by their tattoo marks, but whether these are totem marks is not said.2? The Australians do not tattoo but raise cicatriees ; in some tribes these cicatrices are arranged in patterns which serve as the tribal badges, consisting of lines, dots, circles, semicircles, &e.23 According to one authority, these Australian tribal badges are sometimes representations of the totem.*4

Again, the totem is sometimes painted on the person of the elans- man. This, as we lave seen (p. 468), is sometimes done by the Indians of British Columbia. Among the Hurons (Wyandots) each clan has a distinctive mode of painting the face; and, at least in the case of the chiefs at installation, this painting represents the totem.*° Ainong the Moquis the representatives of the clans at foot-races, dances, &c., have each a eonventional representation of his totem blazoned on breast or back.*6

The clansman also affixes his totem mark as a signature to treaties and other documents,’ and paints or carves it on his weapons, hut, canoe, &c.

The identification of a man with his totem appears further to have been the object of various ceremonies observed at birth, marriage, death, and on other occasions.

Tattoo-

ing.

Birth Ceremonies.—On the fifth day after birth a child Birth of the Deer-Head clan of the Omahas is painted with red Ste:

onies.

spots on its back, in imitation of a fawn, and red stripes are painted on the child's arms and chest. All the Deer- Head men present at the ceremony make red spots on their chests.22 When a South Slavonian woman has given birth to a child, an old woman runs out of the house and calls out, " A she-wolf has littered a he-wolf," and the child is drawn through a wolfskin, as if to simulate actual birth from a wolf. Further, a piece of the eye and heart of a

15 Third Report, 240.

16 Holmberg in Acta Soc. Scient. Fennicx, iv. 293 sqg., 328; Petroff, Report on Population, Industries, and Resources of Alaska, p. 166.

W Third Rep., 229. SDI 230% 19 Toid., 240.

20 Livingstone, South Africa, p. 532.

21 Geolog. Surv. of Canada, Rep. for 1878-79, pp. 108B, 1358; Smithsonian Contrib. to Knowl., vol. xxi. No. 267, p. 3 sq.; Nature, 20th Jannary 1887, p. 285; Mourth Annual Report of the Bureau of Ethnology, Washington, 1886, p. 67 sq.

22 Martius, Zur Ethnographie America's, zumal Brasiliens, p. 55.

23 Brough Smyth, Aborigines of Victoria, i. p. xli. sq., 295, ii. 313; Eyre, Jour., ii. 888, 335; Ridley, Kamilaroi, p. 140 ; Jour. and Proc. R. Soc. N. S. Wales, 1882, p. 201.

24 Mr Chatfield, in Fison and Howitt, Kamilaroi and Kurnai, p. 66 n, On tattooing in connexion with totemism, see Haberlandt in Mittheil. der anthrop. Gesell. in Wien, xv. (1885) p. [53] sq.

25 First Rep., pp. 62, 64. 26 Bourke, Snake Dance, p. 229.

27 Heckewelder, Indian Nations, p. 247.

°3 Third Rep., p. 245 sq.

Marriage cere- monies.

Death cere- monies.

Cere- moniesat puberty.

wolf are sewed into the child's shirt, or hung round its neck ; and, if several children of the family have died before, it is called Wolf. The reason assigned for some of these customs is that the witches who devour children will not attack a wolf.) In other words, the human child is disguised as a wolf to cheat its supernatural foes. The same desire for protection against supernatural danger may be the motive of similar totemic customs, if not of totemism in general.

Marriage Ceremonies.—Among the Kalang of Java, whose totem is the red dog, bride and bridegroom before marriage are rubbed with the ashes of a red dog's bones." Among the Transylvanian Gipsies, bride and bridegroom are rubbed with a weasel skin.? The sacred goatskin (zgis) which the priestess of Athene took to newly married women may have been used for this purpose.* At Rome bride and bridegroom sat down on the skin of the sheep which had been sacrificed on the occasion.° An Italian bride smeared the doorposts of her new home with wolf's fat.6 It is difficult to separate from totemism the custom observed by totem clans in Bengal of marrying, the bride and bridegroom to trees before they are married to each other. The bride touches with red lead (a common marriage ceremony) a mahwé tree,

clasps it in her arms, and is tied to it. The bridegroom goes through a like cereniony with a mango tree.’

Death Ceremonies.—In death, too, the clansman seeks to become one with his totem. Amongst some totem clans it is an article of faith that, as the clan sprang from the totem, so each clansman at death reassumes the totem form. Thus the Moquis, believing that the ancestors of the clans were respectively rattlesnakes, deer, bears, sand, water, tobacco, &c., think that at death each man, accord- ing to his clan, is changed into a rattlesnake, a deer, d&c.® Amongst the Black Shoulder (Buffalo) clan of the Omahas a dying clansman was wrapped in a buffalo robe with the hair out, his face was painted with the clan mark, and his friends addressed him thus: “ You are going to the animals (the buffaloes). You are going to rejoin your ancestors. You are going, or your four souls are going, to the four winds. Be strong.” ®

Ceremonies at Puberty.—The attainment of puberty is celebrated by savages with ceremonies some of which seem to be directly connected with totemism. The Australian rites of initiation at puberty include the raising of these scars on the persons of the clansmen and clanswomen which serve as tribal badges or actually depict the totem. They also include those mutilations of the person by knocking out teeth, &c., which we have seen reason to suppose are meant to assimilate the man to his totem.

At one stage of these Australian rites a number of men appear on the scene howling and running on all fours in imitation of the dingo or native Australian dog; at last the leader jumps up, clasps his hands, and shouts the totem uame ‘‘wild dog.”!” The Coast Murring tribe in New South Wales had an initiatory cere- mony at which the totem name ‘‘ brown snake” was shouted, and a medicine-man produced a live brown snake out of his mouth.!! As the fundamental rules of totem societies are rules regulating social intercourse, perhaps these pantomimes were intended to

supply the youths with a symbolic language by means of which they might communicate with persons speaking different languages,

1 Krauss, Sitte und Brauch der Stidslaven, p. 541 sq.

Rattles, List. of Java, i, 328. On rubbing with ashes as a religious ceremony, ef Spencer, De Legibus Hebreorum Ritualibus, vol. ii. diss. iii. lib, iii, cap. 1.

3 Original-Mittheil. aus der ethnolog. Abtheil. der kinigl. Museen zu Berlin, i. p. 156. 4 Suidas, s.v. avis.

> Servius on Virgil, d2n., iv. 374; Festus, s.v. In pelle.

8 Pliny, Wat. Wist., xxviii. 142.

7 Dalton, Hthn. of Bengal, 194 (Mundas), 319 (Kurmis). Among the Mundas, both bride and bridegroom are sometimes married to mango trees. For Kurmi totems, see As. Quart. Rev., July 1886, p. 77.

8 Schooleraft, Ind. Tr., iv. 86. 9 Third Rep., p. 229.

wh Fil HAS oan 250 1 Tbid., xvi. p. 43.

fo Tt Wiss

and thus ascertain whether they belonged to clans with which marriage was allowed. ‘The totem clans of the Bechuanas have each its special dance or pantomime, and when they wish to ascertain a stranger’s clan they ask him, “ What do you dance?” #2 We find elsewhere that dancing has been used as a means of sexual selection.

But in some cases these dances seem to be purely re- ligious. At their initiatory rites the Yuin tribe in New South Wales mould figures of the totems in earth and dance before them, and a medicine-man brings up out of his inside the “magic” appropriate to the totem before which he stands: before the figure of the porcupine he brings up a stuff like chalk, before the kangaroo a stuff like glass, &e.18

Again, it is at initiation that the youth is solemnly forbidden to eat of certain foods; but, as the list of foods prohibited to youths at puberty both in Australia and America extends far beyond the simple totem, it would seem

that we are here in contact with those unknown general ideas of the savage, whereof totemism is only a special product.

Thus the Narrinyeri youth at initiation are forbidden to eat twenty different kinds of game, besides any food belonging to women. If they eat of these forbidden foods it is thought they will grow ugly.“ In the Mycoolon tribe, near the Gulf of Carpentaria, the youth at initiation is forbidden to eat of eagle- hawk and its young, native companion and its young, some snakes, turtles, ant-eaters, and emu eggs. The Kurnai youth is not allowed to eat the female of any animal, nor the emu, nor the poreupine. He becomes free by having the fat of the animal smeared on his face.4® On the other hand, it is said that ‘‘initiation confers many privileges on the youths, as they are now allowed to eat many articles of food which were previously forbidden to them.” Thus in New South Wales before initiation a boy may eat only the females of the animals which he catches ; but after initiation (which, however, may not be complete for several years) he may eat whatever he finds. In North America the Creek youths at puberty were forbidden for twelve months to eat of young bucks, turkey-cocks, fowls, pease, and salt.

These ceremonies seem also to be meant to admit the Adinis- youth into the life of the clan, and hence of the totem. sion to

The latter appears to be the meaning of a Carib ceremony, in which the father of the youth took a live bird of prey, of a particular species, and beat his son with it till the bird was dead and its head crushed, thus transferring the life and spirit of the martial bird to the future warrior. Further, he scarified his son all over, rubbed the juices of the bird into the wounds, and gave him the bird’s heart to eat.2° Amongst some Australian tribes the youth at initia- tion is smeared with blood drawn from the arms either of aged men or of all the men present, and he even receives the blood to drink. Amongst some tribes on the Darling this tribal blood is his only food for two days. Among some tribes the youths at initiation sleep on the graves of their ancestors, in order to absorb their virtues.”! It is, however, a very notable fact that the initiation of an Australian youth is said to be conducted, not by men of the same totem, but by men of that portion of the tribe into which he may marry.?2 In some of the Victorian tribes no person related to the youth by blood can interfere or assist in his initiation.2?

Whether this is true of all tribes and of all the rites at initiation does not appear.

Connected with totemism is also the Australian cere- Resurree:

ife of

clan,

mony at initiation of pretending to recall a dead man to tio.

life by the utterance of his totem name. An old man lies

12 Livingstone, South Africa, p. 13; J. Mackenzie, Zen Years worth of the Orange River, p. 391, cf. p. 185n.; 1. A. LZ, xvi. 83.

18 Jour. and Proc. R. Soc. N. S. Wales, 1882, p. 206.

MU Nat. Tribes of S. Austral., p. 17. IG ale day Zcbbe jon Le

16 7bid., XivespeeilG. W Tbid., 360.

18 Jour. and Proc, R. Soc. N. S. Wales, 1882, pp. 208.

19 Gatschet, Migration Legend of the Creck Indians, i. p. 185.

20 Rochefort, Hist. nat. et mor. des les Antilles (Rotterdam, 1666), p. 556; Du Tertre, Wistotre générale des Antilles, vol. ii. p. 377.

21 Jour. and Proc. R. Soc. NV. S. Wales, 1882, p. 172:

22 Howitt in J. A. 1, xiii. 458.

*3 Dawson, Australian Aborigines, p. 80.

_ New birth.

Piacular sacrifice of totem,

down in a grave and is covered up lightly with earth ; but at the mention of his totem naine he starts up to life. Sometimes it is believed that the youth himself is killed by a being called Thuremlui, who cuts him up, restores him to life, and knocks out a tooth.2 Here the idea seems to be that of a second birth, or the beginning of a new life for the novice ; hence he receives a uew name at the time when he is circumcised, or the tooth knocked out, or the blood of the kin poured on him. Amongst the Indians of Virginia and the Quojas in Africa, the youths after initiation pretended to forget the whole of their former lives (parents, language, customs, &c.), and had to learn everything over again like new-born babes. A Wolf clan in Texas used to dress up in wolf skins and rnn about on all fours, howling and mimicking wolves; at last they scratched up a living clansman, who had been buried on purpose, and, putting a bow and arrows in his hands, bade him do as the wolves do—rob, kill, and murder.' This may have been an initiatory ceremony, revealing to the novice in pantomime the double origin of the clan—from wolves and from the ground. For it isa common belief with totem clans that they issued originally from the ground.

Connected with this mimic death and revival of a clans- man appear to be the real death and supposed revival of the totem itself. We have seen that some Californian Indians killed the buzzard, and then buried and mourned over it likea clansman. But it was believed that, as often as the bird was killed, it was made alive again. Much the same idea appears in a Zuni ceremony described by an eyewitness, Mr Cushing. He tells howa procession of fifty men set off for the spirit-land, or (as the Zunis call it) "'the home of our others," and returned after four days, each man bearing a basket full of living, squirming turtles. One turtle was brought to the house where Mr Cushing was staying, and it was welcomed with divine honours. It was addressed as, "Ah! my poor dear lost child or parent, my sister or brother to have been! Who knows which? May be my own great great grandfather or mother?" Nevertheless, next day it was killed and its flesh and bones deposited in the river, that it might "return once more to eternal life among its comrades in the dark waters of the lake of the dead." The

idea that the turtle was dead was repudiated with passionate sorrow ; it had only, they said, "'changed houses and gone to live for ever in the home of 'our lost others.'"® The mean- ing of sucli ceremonies is not clear. Perhaps, as has been suggested,' they are piacular sacrifices, in which the god dies for his people. This is borne out by the curses with which the Egyptians loaded the head of the slain bull.®

Sex Totems.—In Australia (but, so far as is known at present, nowhere else) each of the sexes has, at least in some tribes, its special sacred animal, whose name each individual of the sex bears, regarding the animal as his or her brother or sister respectively, not killing it nor suffer- ing the opposite sex to kill it. These sacred animals therefore answer strictly to the definition of totems.

Thus amongst the Kurnai all the men were called Yeerung (Emu-Wren) and all the women Djeetgun (Superb Warbler). The birds called Yeerung were the 'brothers' of the men, and the birds called Djcetgun were the women's "'sisters." If the men killed an emu-wren they were attacked by the women, if the

women killed a superb warbler they were assailed by the men. Yeerung and Djectgun were the mythical ancestors of the Kurnai.®

UWpeAe Ja, Sill 405 7s0- 2 Ib., xiv. 358.

3 Angas, i. 115; Brough Smyth, i. 75n; J. A. F., xiv. 357, 359; Nat. Tr. of S. Austr., pp. 232, 269.

4 R. Beverley, Wistory of Virginia (London, 1722), p. 177 s@.; Dapper, Description de V Afrique, p. 268.

5 Schoolcraft, Ind. Tr., v. 683.

6 Mr Cushing in Century Magazine, May 1883.

7 See Sacriricg, vol. xxi. p. 137.

8 Herod., ii. 39. 9 Fison and Howitt, 194, 201 sg., 215, 235.

The Kulin tribe in Victoria, in addition to sixteen clan totems, has two pairs of sex totems: one pair (the emu-wren and superb warbler) is identical with the Kurnai pair; the other pair is the bat (male totem) and the small night jar (female totem). The latter pair extends to the extreme north-western confines of Vic- toria as the “man’s brother” and the ‘‘woman’s sister.”!° The Ta-ta-thi group of tribes in New South Wales, in addition to regu- lar clan totems, has a pair of sex totems, the bat for men and a small owl for women; men and women address each other as Owls and Bats; and there is a fightif a woman kills a bat or a man kills asmallowl.!! Of some Victorian tribes it is said that “ the common bat belongs to the men, who protect it against injury, even to the half killing of their wives for its sake. The fern owl, or large goat- sucker, belongs to the women, and, although a bird of evil omen, creating terror at night by its cry, it is jealously protected by them. If a man kills one, they are as much enraged as if it was one of their children, and will strike him with their long poles.”

The sex totem seems to be still more sacred than the clan totem ; for men who do not object to other people killing their clan totem will fiercely defend their sex totem against any attempt of the opposite sex to injure it.!8

Individual Totems.—It is not only the clans and the sexes that have totems; individuals also have their own special totems, 7.¢., classes of objects (generally species of animals), which they regard as related to themselves by those ties of mutual respect and protection which are characteristic of totemism. ‘This relationship, however, in the case of the individual totem, begins and ends with the individual man, and is not, like the clan totem, transmitted by inheritance. The evidence for the existence of indi- vidual totems in Australia, though conclusive, is very scanty. In North America it is abundant.

In Australia we hear of a medicine-man whose clan totem through his mother was kangaroo, but whose ‘‘secret”’ (i.e. individual) totem was the tiger-snake. Snakes of that species, therefore, would not hurt him. An Australian seems usually to get his individual totem by dreaming that he has been transformed into an animal of the specics. Thus a man dreamcd three times he was a kangaroo; hence he became one of the kangaroo

kindred, and might not eat any part of a kangaroo on which there was blood; he might not even carry home one on which there was blood. He might eat cooked kangaroo; but, if he were to eat the meat with the blood on it, the spirits would no longer take him up aloft.

In America the individual totem is usually the first animal of which a youth dreams during the long and generally solitary fasts which American Indians observe at puberty. He kills the animal or bird of which he dreams, and henceforward wears its skin or feathers, or some part of them, as an amulet, especially on the war-path and in hunting.4® A man may even (though this scems exceptional) acquire several totems in this way; thus an Ottawa medicine-man had for his individual totems the tortoisc, swan, woodpecker, and crow, because he had dreamed of them all in his fast at puberty. The respect paid to the individual totem varies in different tribes. Among the Slave, Hare, and Dogrib Indians a man may not eat, skin, nor if possible kill his individual totem, which in these tribes is said to be always a carnivorous animal. Each man carries with him a picture of his totem (bought of a trader); when he is unsuccessful in the chase, he pulls out the picture, smokes to it, and makes it a speech.”

The Indians of Canada changed their okki or manitoo (indivi- dual totem) if they had reason to be dissatisfied with it; their women had also their okkis or manitoos, but did not pay so much heed to them as did the men. They tattooed theirindividual totems on their persons. Amongst the’Indians of San Juan Capistrano, a figure of the individual totem, which was acquired as usual by fasting, was moulded in a paste made of crushed herbs on the right arm of the novice. Fire was then set to it, and thus the figure of the totem was burned into the flesh.!® Sometimes the individual totem is not acquired by the individual himself at puberty, but is

WI, Ale Thy, Foi J CGS GA Sahl Tw, OY.

ll Jbid., xiv. 350. 22 Dawson, Australian Aborigines, p. 52.

Wh ilo thy Sabi FO Si50) LEN HGHihn, Seals, Te, 0), Tbid., 45.

16 Catlin, V. Amer. Indians, i. p. 36 sq.; Schoolcraft, Ind. Tr., v. p. 196; Id., Amer. Ind., p. 213; Sproat, Scenes and Studies of Savage Life, p. 178 sg.;

Bancroft, i. 283 sq.; Id., iti. 156; Mayne, Brit. Columb., p. 302; P. Jones, Hist. Ojebway Ind., p. 87 sq., &e.

W Annual Report of the Smithsonian Institution for 1866, p. 307.

18 Charlevoix, Hist. de la Nouv. Fr., vi. 67 sq. The word okki is Huron; manitoo is Algonkin (ibid.; Sagard, Le grand Voyage du pays des IIurons, p. 231).

19 Boscana in A. Robinson's Life in California, pp. 270 sq., 273; Bancroft, i. 414, iii, 167 sg.

Indi- vidual totems.

Blood feud.

Exo- gamy.

472

fixed for him independently of his will at birth. Thus among the tribes of the isthmus of Tehuantepec, when a woman was about to be confined, the relations assembled in the hut and drew on the floor figures of different animals, rubbing each one out as soon as it was finished. This went on till the child was born, and the figure that then remained sketched on the ground was the child's ¢ona or totem. When he grew older the child procured his totem animal and took care of it, believing that his life was bound up with the animal's, and that when it died he too must die Similarly in Samoa, at child-birth the help of several '' gods" was invoked in succession, and the one who happened to be addressed at the moment of the birth was the infant's totem. These " gods" were dogs, eels, sharks, lizards, &c. A Samoan had no objection to cat another man's "god"; but to eat his own would have been death or injury to him.2. Sometimes the okkis or mauitoos acquired by dreams are not totems but fetiches, being not classes of objects but individual objects, such as a particular tree, rock, knife, pipe, &c.®

Besides the clan totem, sex totem, and individual totem, there are (as has been indicated) some other kinds or varieties of totems; but the consideration of them had better be deferred till after the consideration of the social organization based on totemism.

Social Aspect of Totemism, or the relation of the men of w totem to each other and to men of other totems.—(1) All the members of a totem clan regard each other as kins- men or brothers and sisters, and are bound to help and protect each other. The totem bond is stronger than the bond of blood or family in the modern sense. This is ex- pressly stated of the clans of western Australia and of north-western America,‘ and is probably true of all societies where totemism existsin full force. Hence in totem tribes every local group, being necessarily composed (owing to exogamy) of members of at least two totem clans, is liable to be dissolved at any moment into its totem elements by the outbreak of a blood feud, in which husband and wife must always (if the feud is between their clans) be arrayed on opposite sides, and in which the children will be arrayed against either their father or their mother, according as de- scent is traced through the mother or through the father.° In blood feud the whole clan of the aggressor is responsible for his deed, and the whole clan of the aggrieved is entitled to satisfaction.6 Nowhere perhaps is this solidarity carried farther than among the Goajiros in Colombia, South Ame- rica. The Goajiros are divided into some twenty to thirty totem clans, with descent in the female line; and amongst them, if a man happens to cut himself with his own knife, to fall off his horse, or to injure himself in any way, his family on the mother’s side immediately demand payment as blood-money from him. “ Being of their blood, he is not allowed to spill it without paying for it.” His father’s family also demands compensation, but not so much.’

(2) Exogamy.—Persons of the same totem may not marry or have sexual intercourse with each other. The Navajos believe that if they married within the clan “their bones would dry up and they would die.”* But the penalty for infringing this fundamental law is not merely natural; the clan steps in and punishes the offenders. In Australia the regular penalty for sexual intercourse with a person of a forbidden clan is death.

It matters not whether the woman be of the same local group or has been captured in war from another tribe ; a man of the wrong

1 Bancroft, i. 661. 2 Tumer, Samoa, 17.

3 Lafitau, Murs des Sauvages Ameriquains, i. 370 sq.; Charlevoix, Hist. dela Nouv. Fr., vi. 68; Kohl, Kitcht Gami, i. 85 sq.

4 Grey, Jour., ii. 231; Report of the Smithsonian Inst. for 1866, p. 315; Petroff, Rep. on Alaska, p. 165. Other authorities speak to the superiority of the totem bond over the tribal bond (Morgan, League of the Iroquois, p. 82; Mayne, Brit. Columb., p. 257; American Antiquarian, ii. p. 109).

5 Grey, Journals, ii. 280, 288 sq.; Smithsonian Rep., loc. cit.

6 Fison and Howitt, 156 sq., 216 sg. Sometimes the two clans meet and settle it by single combat between picked champions (Jour. and Proc. R. Soc. N. S. Wales, 1882, p. 226).

7 Simons in Proc. R. Geogr. Soc., Dec. 1885, p. 789 sg.

8 Bourke, Snake Dance of the Moquis of Arizona, p. 279.

clan who uses her as his wife is hunted down and killed by his clansmen, and go is the woman; though in some cases, if they suc- ceed in eluding capture for a certain time, the offence may be con- doned. In the Ta-ta-thi tribe, New South Wales, in the rare eases which occur, the man is killed but the woman is ouly beaten or speared, or both, till she is nearly dead; the reason given for not actually killing her being that she was probably coerced. Even in casual amours the clan prohibitions are strictly observed ; any violations of these prohibitions ‘‘are regarded with the utmost abhorrence and are punished by death.”® An important exccption to these rules, if it is correctly reported, is that of the Port Lincoln tribe, which is divided into two clans, Mattiri and Karraru, and it is said that though persons of the same clan never marry, yet “they do not seem to consider less virtuous connexions between parties of the same class [clan] incestuous.”

Again, of the tribes on the lower Murray, lower Darling, &c., it is said that though the slight- est blood relationship is with them a bar to marriage, yet in their sexual intercourse they are perfectly free, and incest of every grade continually occurs,!!

In America the Algonkins consider it highly criminal for a man to marry a woman of the same totem as himself, and they tell of cases where men, for breaking this rule, have been put to death by their nearest relations.”

In some tribes the marriage prohibition only extends to Phratries,

a man’s own totem clan; he may marry a woman of any totem but his own. ‘This is the case with the Haidas of the Queen Charlotte Islands,!° and, so far as appears, the Narrinyeri in South Australia,1# and the western Aus- tralian tribes described by Sir George Grey. Oftener, however, the prohibition includes several clans, in none of which is a man allowed to marry. For such an exogamous group of clans within the tribe it is convenient to have a name ; we shall therefore call it a phratry (L. H. Morgan), defining it as an exogamous division intermediate between the tribe and the clan. The evidence goes to show that in many cases it was originally a totem clan which has undergone subdivision.

The Choctaws, for example, were divided into two phratries, American each of which included four clans; marriage was prohibited be- phratries.

tween members of the same phratry, but members of either phratry could marry into any clan of the other.1® The Seneca tribe of the Iroquois was divided into two phratries, each including four clans,—the Bear, Wolf, Beaver, and Turtle clans forming one phratry, and the Deer, Snipe, Heron, and Hawk clans forming the other, Originally, as among the Choctaws, marriage was prohibited within the phratry but was permitted with any of the clans of the other phratry; the prohibition, however, has now broken down, and a Seneca may marry a woman of any clan but his own. Hence phratries, in our sense, no longer exist among the Senecas, though the organization survives for certain religious and social purposes. Bf

The phratries of the Thlinkets and the Mohegans deserve especial attention, because each phratry bears a name which is also the name of one of

theclans included in it. The Thlinkets are divided as follows :—Raveu phratry, with clans Raven, Frog, Goose, Sea- Lion, Owl, Salmon ; Wolf phratry, with clans Wolf, Bear, Eagle, Whale, Shark, Auk. Members of the Raven phratry must marry members of the Wolf phratry, and vice versa.‘® Considering the prominent parts played in Thlinket mythology by the ancestors of the two phratries, and considering that the names of the phratries are also names of clans, it seems probable that the Raven and Wolf were the two original clans of the Thlinkets, which afterwards by subdivision became phratries. This was the opinion of the Russian missionary Veniaminoff, the best carly authority on the tribe.29 Still more clearly do the Mohcgan phratries appear to have been formed by subdivision from clans. They are as follows a —Wolf phratry, with clans Wolf, Bear, Dog, Opossum; Turtle

9 Howitt in Rep. of Smithsonian Inst. for 1883, p. 804; Fison and Howitt, pp. 64-67, 289, 344 sq.; J. A. 1., xiv. p. 351 sq.

10 Nat. Tr. of S. Australia, p. 222.

11 Jour. and Proc. R. Soc. N. S. Wales, 1883, p. 24; Transactions of the Royal Society of Victoria, vi. p. 16.

12 James in Tanner’s Narr., p. 313.

13 Geol. Sur. of Canada, Rep. for 1878-79, p. 1348.

14 Nat. Tr. of S. Austr., p. 12; J. A. L, xii. p. 46.

15 Grey, Jour., ii. p. 226.

16 Archxologia Americana, Trans. and Collect. Americ. Antig. Soc., vol.‘ii. p. 109; Morgan, A. S., pp. 99, 162.

W Morgan, op. cit., pp. 90, 94 sq.

18 A, Krause, Die Tlinkit-Indianer, 112, 220; Holmberg, op. cit., 293, 318; Pinart in Bull. Soc. Anthrop. Paris, 7th Nov. 1872, p. 792 sq.; Petroff, Rep. on Alaska, p. 165 sq.

19 Petroff, op. cit., p. 166. 20 Morgan, p. 174.

7

} | | | |

TO TE MIs M

phratry, with clans Little Turtle, Mud Turtle, Great Turtle, Yellow Eel; Turkey phratry, with clans Turkey, Crane, Chicken. Here we are almost forced to conclude that the Turtle phratry was origin- ally a Turtle clan which subdivided into a number of clans, each of which took the name of a particular kind of turtle, while the Yellow Eel clan may have been a later subdivision. Thus we get a probable explanation of the origin of split totems; they seem to have arisen by the segmentation of a single original clan, which had a whole animal for its totem, into a number of clans, each of which took the name either of a part of the original animal or ofa subspecies of it. We may conjecture that this was the origin of the Grey Wolf and Yellow Wolf and Great Turtle and Little Turtle

473

In such tribes the freedom of marriage is still more curtailed. A subphratry is not free to marry into either subphratry of the other phratry ; each subphratry is restricted in its choice of partners to one subphratry of the other phratry; Muri can only marry Kumbo, and vice versa; Kubi can only marry Ipai, and vice versa. Hence (supposing the tribe to be equally distributed between the phratries and subphratries), whereas under the two phratry and clan system a man is free to choose a wife from half the women of the tribe, under the phratry, subphratry, and clan system he is restricted in his choice to one quarter of the women.

A remarkable feature of the Australian social organiza- Equiva-

tion is that divisions of one tribe have their recognized lence equivalents in other tribes, whose languages, including the pa ea names for the tribal divisions, are quite different.

clans of the Tuscarora-Iroquois;! the Black Eagle and White Eagle and the Deer and Deer-Tail clans of the Kaws ;? and of the Highland Turtle (striped), Highland Turtle (black), Mud Turtle, and Smooth Large Turtle clans of the Wyandots (Hurons).? Warren actually

states that the numerous Bear clan of the Ojibways was formerly subdivided into subclans, cach of which took for its totem some part of the Bear's body (head, foot, ribs, &e.), but that these have now merged into two, the Common Bear and the Grizzly Bear.' The subdivision of the Turtle (Tortoise) clan, which on this hypo- thesis has taken place among the Tuscarora-Iroquois, is nascent among the Onondaga-Iroquois, for among them ''the name of this clan is Hahnowa, which is the general word for tortoise; but the clan is divided into two septs or subdivisions, the Hanyatengona, or Great Tortoise, and the Nikahnowaksa, or Little Tortoise, which together are held to constitute but one clan." ®

On the other hand, fusion of clans is known to have taken place, as among the Haidas, where the Black Bear and Fin-Whale clans have united ;° and the same thing has

happened to some extent among the Omahas and Osages.'

that "he was furnished with temporary wives by the various tribes with whom he sojourned in his travels; that his right to these women was recognized as a matter of course; and that he could always ascertain whether they belonged to the division into which he could legally marry, 'though the places were 1000 miles apart, and the lan- guages quite different.'"11 Again, it is said that "in cases of distant tribes it can be shown that the class divisions correspond with each other, as for instance in the classes of the Flinders river and Mitchell river tribes; and these tribes are separated by 400 miles of country, and by many intervening tribes. But, for all that, class corresponds to class in fact and in meaning and in privileges, although

Aus- In Australia the phratries are still more important than | 41. name may be quite different and the totems of each tralian jin America. Messrs Howitt and Fison, who have done | 4… +1.» io a : ; phratries. dissimilar. Particular information, however, as to the

so much to advance our knowledge of the social system of the Australian aborigines, have given to these exogamous divisions the name of classes; but the term is objection- able, because it fails to convey (1) that these divisions are kinship divisions, and (2) that they are intermediate divisions ; whereas the Greek term phratry conveys both these meanings, and is therefore appropriate.

We have seen examples of Australian tribes in which members of any clan are free to marry members of any clan but their own; but such tribes appear to be excep- tional. Often an Australian tribe is divided into two (exogamous) phratries, each of which includes under it a nuniber of totem clans; and oftener still there are sub- phratries interposed between the phratry and the clans, each phratry including two subphratries, and the sub-phratries including totem clans. We will take examples of the former and simpler organization first.

The Turra tribe in Yorke Peninsula, South Australia, is divided into two phratries, Wiltii (Eaglehawk) and Milta (Seal). The Faglehawk phratry includes ten totem clans (Wombat, Wallaby, Kangaroo, Iguana, Wombat-Snake, Bandicoot, Black Bandicoot, Crow, Rock Wallaby, and Emu); and the Seal phratry includes six (Wild Goose, Butterfish, Mullet, Schnapper, Shark, and Salmon). The phratries are of course exogamous, but (as with the Choctaws, Mohegan, and, so far as appears, all the American phratries) any clan of the one phratry may intermarry with any clan of the other phratry.8 But the typical Australian tribe is divided into two exogamous phratries; each of these phratries is subdivided into two subphratries; and these subphratries are subdivided into an indefinite number of totem clans. The phratries being exogamous, it follows that their subdivisions (the subphratries and clans) are so also. The well-known Kamilaroi tribe in New South Wales will serve as an example. Its subdivisions are as follows : °—

equivalent divisions is very scanty.13 This systematic cor- respondence between the intermarrying divisions of distinct and distant tribes, with the rights which it conveys to the members of these divisions, points to sexual communism on a scale to which there is perhaps no parallel elsewhere, certainly not in North America, where marriage is always within the tribe, though outside the clan.1* But even in Australia a man is always bound to

marry within a certain kinship group; that group may extend across the whole of Australia, but nevertheless it is exactly limited and defined. If endogamy is used in the sense of prohibition to marry outside of a certain kinship group, whether that group be exclusive of, inclusive of, or identical with the man's own group, then marriage among the totem societies of Australia, America, and India is both exogamous and endogamous ; a man is forbidden to marry either within his own clan or outside of a certain kinship group.

(3) Rules of Descent.—In a large majority of the totem Rules of tribes at present known to us in Australia and North descent.

America descent is in the female line; ze. the children belong to the totem clan of their mother, not to that of their father. In Australia the proportion of tribes with female to those with male descent is as four to one; in America it is between three and two to one,

As to the totem tribes of Africa, descent among the Damaras is in the female line,!® and there are traces of female kin among the Bechuanas.!" Among the Bakalai property descends in the male line, but this is not a conclusive proof that descent is so reckoned ; all the clans in the neighbourhood of the Bakalai have female descent both for blood and property.48 In Bengal, where there is a considerable body of totem tribes, Mr Risley says that after careful search he and his coadjutors have found no tribe with female

Phratries. Subphratries. Totem Clans, 0 et ——_ = ————4 descent, and only a single trace of it in one.'? Among the totem Muri.10 (Kangaroo, enee ag de aag aed ilbi. { eee d Iguana, Blac uc aglehawk, Scru jl. we . ¥ Dilb Kubi. Tarker Yellow-Fish, Honey-Fish, Bream, * Fison and Howitt, p. 58 sq.; ¢f Brough Smyth, i. p. 91. , (| Ipai. (| Emu, Carpet-Snake, Black Snake, Red Kan- J. A. J., xii, p. 300. ' : Kupathin. | Kumbo. {| garoo, Honey, Walleroo, Frog, Cod-Fish. 13 For a few particulars see Fison and Howitt, 38, 40; Brough

1 Morgan, op. cit., p. 78. " Morgan, p. 156. 3 First Rep., p. 59. 4 Collections of the Minnesota Historical Society, v. p. 49. 5 H. Hale, The Iroquois Book of Rites, p. 58 sq.

8 Geol. Surv. of Canada, Rep. for 1878-79, p. 1348. 7 Third Rep., p. 235; American Naturalist, xviii. p. 114.

8 Fison and Howitt, p. 285. Melisa deer aly 003

® Corresponding female forms are made by adding tha to these male

names: Muri—Matha (for Muritha), Kubi—Kubitha, &e.

e

Smyth, ii. 288; J. A. L., xiii, 804, 306, 346, xiv. 348 sg., 351.

MW First Rep., p. 68. Between North-American tribes “ there were no intermarriages, no social intereourse, no intermingling of any kind, exeept that of mortal strife” (Dodge, Our Wild Indians, p. 45).

1S Of. First Rep., loc. cit.; As. Quart. Rev., July 1886, p, 89 sg.

16 Anderson, Lake Ngami, p. 221.

W Casalis, The Basutos, p. 179 sq.

18 Du Chaillu, Journey to Ashango Land, 429; Id., EHquat. Afr., 308 sq. 19 As, Quart. Rev., July 1886, p. 94.

XXIII. — 60

474 Pee FT Te

tribes of Bengal descent is male.! In Assam the exogamous totem clans of the Kasias have female descent,? as also have the exogamous clans of the Garos, but it does not appear whether their clans are totem clans, though some of their legends point to totemism.?

MIs M

to the father’s sister to suckle. It is then spoken of as belonging to the paternal aunt, and is counted to its father’s clan.!° Among the Delawares

descent is regularly in the female line ; but it is possible to transfer a child to

wares In the Australian tribal organization of two phratries, its father’s clan by giving it one of the names which are ami ae ee # aoe a ee aia ee ig fe ape appropriated to the father’s clan. In the Hervey Islands, TUBS GEG NIL TOL 8 tt Laie! eek aerate : South Pacific, the parents settled beforehand whether the hgen ‘oieved. ~ 1b sepme that 1 all tribes thus tie child should belong to the father’s or mother’s clan. The the ciuldren are poe ynte the subphratry nether or ther | father usually had the preference ; but sometimes, when the father nor of their mother, and that descent in such cases | others clan was one which was bound to furnish human is either female or male, according as the subphratry nto | i ctims from its ranks, the mother had it adopted into her which the children are born 1s the ia apa subphratry | clan by having the name of her totem pronounced over it.!? of their mother’s or of their father’s subphratry. a ae In Samoa at the birth of a child the father’s totem was usu- former ease we have whee may be called ae 7 ally prayed to first; but if the birth was tedious, the mother’s descent ; in the latter, indirect male descent. Dut 1 1S | totem was invoked ; and whichever happened to be invoked only in the subphratry that descent is thus indirect. In at the Wioment of birth Pasha chilesmecwe foulae © seas ; , : t :

es poe : ae i e etl maior: ‘. He ee When a North American tribe is on the march, the members of Arrange- \ e clan aed of us pe Ege Oe eS Tae us, IN TAC | each totem clan camp together, and the clans are arranged in a ment of typical Australian organization, descent, whether female | fixed order in camp, the whole tribe being arranged in a great clans on or male, is direct in the phratry, indirect in the sub- | circle or in several concentric circles.4 When the tribe lives in the march,

phratry, and direct in the clan.

To take examples, the following is the scheme of descent, so far as the phratries and subphratries are concerned, in the Kamilaroi:—

Phratries, Male. Marries Children are one Muri. Kumbo. lpai. ea { Kubi. pai. Kumbo . lpai. Kubi. Muri. Kupathin. { Kumbo. Muti. Kubi.

This is an exainple of indirect female descent, because the child- ren belong to the companion subphratry of thcir mother, not to the companion subphratry of their father. But in the totems the female descent is direct ; e.g., if the father is Muri-Kangaroo and

settled villages or towns, each clan has its separate ward. The clans of the Osages are divided into war clans and peace clans; when they are out on the buffalo hunt, they camp on opposite sides of the tribal circle; and the peace clans are not allowed to take animal life of any kind; they must therefore live on vegetables unless they can obtain meat in exchange for vegetables from the war clans.‘6 Members of the same clan are buried together and apart from those of other clans; hence the remains of husband and wife, belonging as they do to separate clans, do not rest together.!”7_ It is remarkable that among the Thlinkets the body must always be carried to the funeral pyre and burned by men of another totem,’® and the presents distributed on these occasions by the representatives of the deceased must always be made to men of a different clan.

&e.

the mother is Kumbo-Emu, the children will be Ipai-Emu; if the | . Here we must revert to the religious side of totemism, i mother is Kumbo-Bandicoot, the children will be Ipai-Bandicoot.4 | 1 order to consider some facts which have emerged from 2” sub: The following is the scheme of descent in the Kiabara tribe:5— | the study of its social aspect. We have seen that some aoe Saas mine ana ames phratries, both in America and Australia, bear the names ; a ee of animals ;° and in the case of the Thlinkets and Mohegans Dilebi. { Baring. Bundah. Turowine, we have seen reason to believe that the animals which Turowine. Bulcoin, Baring. : : : eiieniane § Bulcoin. Tnrowine. Bundah. give their names to the phratries were once clan totems. ; EEE pail ee OES Bulcoin. The same seems to hold of the names of the Australian This is an example of indirect male descent, because the children phratries, Eaglehawk, Crow, and Seal, or at least of Eagle- belong to the companion subphratry of their father, not to the | hawk and Crow, for these are clan totems in other tribes, companion subphratry of their mother. We have no information | and are, besides, important figures in Australian mytho- as to the totems, but on the analogy of indirect female descent we

logy. Indeed, there appears to be direct evidence that both should expect them to be taken from the father. This at any rate Ne ely : desde . saagall we 1 : is true of a large tribe or group of tribes to the south of the Gulf the p ratries cerhaabibais 2 es: sMbomsinig

mother's or his father's clan. Among the Haidas, children regularly belong to the totem clan of their mother; but in very exceptional cases, when the clan of the father is reduced in numbers, the newly-born child may be given

1 As. Quart. Rev., July 1886, p. 94.

2 Dalton, Hthn. of Beng., p. 56 sq.; W. W. Hunter, Statistical Ac- count of Assam, ii. p. 217 sq.

2 Dalton, op. cit., 60, 63; Hunter, op. cit., ii. 154 sq.

- Fison and Howitt, p. 37 sq.; J. A. ZL, xiii. 335, 341, 344.

© Wf A. I., xiii, 336, 341. 6 Joid., xii. 504.

7 Tbid., xii. 500. 8 Letter of Mr S. Gason to the present writer.

he Zila Loy Sas X09):

W Adair, [ist. Amer. Ind., 183 sq.; Morgan, A.S., 83 sg.; Brinton, The Lenape and their Legends, 54; Id., Myths of the New World, 87 n; A. Hodgson, Letters from North America, i. p. 259; Dalton, Eth. of Beng., 56; cf. Robertson Smith, Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia, 315 sq. 18 Holmberg, op. ctt., 324.

19 Krause, Die Tlinkit-Indianer, 223.

20 As among the Chickasas, Thlinkets, and Mohegans in America, and the Turra, Ngarego, and Theddora tribes in Australia. The sub- phratries of the Kiabara also bear animal names.

21 Fison and Howitt, 38 sq., 40.

22 Wison and Howitt, p. 41. The totems of the phratries and sub- phratries are given by different authorities, who write the native names of the subphratries differently. But they seem to be speaking of the same tribe; at least Mr Fison understands them so.

TO CPE

As the subphratries of this tribe are said to be equivalent to the subphratries of the Kamilaroi, it seems to follow that the subphratries of the Kamilaroi (Muri, Kubi, Ipai,

Mis MM 475

division might have become hot wind carpct-snake had not civilization rudely stopped the proeess by almost extinguishing the tribe.”

Geographical Diffusion of Totemism.—In Australia Diffusion totemism is almost universal.6 In North America it may of totem- be roughly said to prevail, or have prevailed, among all the

and Kumbo) have or once had totems also. Hence it ap- pears that in tribes organized in phratries, subphratries,

Sub- totems.

and clans each man has three totems—his phratry totem, his subphratry totem, and his clan totem. If we add a sex totem and an individual totem, each man in the typical Australian tribe has five distinct kinds of totems. What degree of allegiance he owes to lus subphratry totem and phratry totem respectively we are not told; indeed, the very existence of such totems, as distinct from clan totems, appears to have been generally overlooked. But we may suppose that the totem bond diminishes in strength in proportion to its extension; that therefore the clan totem is the primary tie, of which the subphratry and phratry totems are successively weakened repetitions.

In these totems superposed on totems may perhaps be discerned a rudimentary classification of natural objects under heads which bear a

certain resemblance to genera, species, &c. This classification is by some Australian tribes extended so as to include the whole of nature. Thus the Port Mackay tribe in Queensland (see above) divides all nature between the phratries; the wind belongs to one phratry and the rain to another ; the sun is Wutaru and the moon is Yungaru ; the stars, trees, and plants are also divided between the phratries.! As the totem of Wutaru

is kangaroo and of Yungaru alligator, this is equivalent to

making the sun a kangaroo and the moon an alligator.

The Mount Gambier tribe in South Australia is divided into two phratries (Kumi and Kroki), whieh again are subdivided into totem

tribes east of the Rocky Mountains,' and among all the Indian (but not the Eskimo) tribes on the north-west coast as far south as the United States frontier. On the other hand, highly competent authorities have failed to find it among the tribes of western Washington, north-western Oregon, and California. In Panama it exists apparently among the Guaymies: each tribe, family, and individual has a guardian animal, the most prevalent being a kind of parrot.2 In South America totemism is found among the Goajiros on the borders of Colombia and Venezuela,!? the Arawaks in Guiana,!! the Bosch negroes also in Guiana," and the Patagonians.!* Finding it at such distant points of the continent, we should expect it to be widely prevalent ; but, with our meagre knowledge of the South American Indians, this is merely conjecture. The aborigines of Peru and the Salivas on the Orinoco believed in the descent of their tribes from animals, plants, and natural objects, such as the sun and earth ;!* but this, though a presumption, is not a proof of totemism.

In Africa totemism prevails in Senegambia, among the Bakalai on the equator, on the Gold Coast and in Ashantee, and among the Damaras and Bechuanas in southern Africa. There are traces of totemism elsewhere in Africa. In east- ern Africa the Gallas are divided into two exogamous sec- tions, and have certain forbidden foods.!® In Abyssinia certain districts or families will not eat of certain animals

clans. Everything in nature belongs to a totem elan, thus: ?— or parts of animals.!’ The territory of the Hovas in Mada- Se) I ee gascar is divided and subdivided into districts, the names (| 1. Mila=Fish-Hawk. Smoke, honcysuckle, trees, &c. of the subdivisions referring “rather to clans and divi- 2, Parangal = Pelican. Dogs Packwood trees, fre, frost) | sions of people than to place.” One of these names is “ the Kumi. <| 3, Wa=Crow. Rain, thunder, lightning, winter, | | powerful bird,” 7.¢., either the eagle or the vulture, The 4, Wila= Black Cockatoo. Stars, moon, &c. sane clan is found occupying separate districts.° One 5. Karato=A harmless Snake. fe ish, stringybark trees, seals, | | Madagascar tribe regard a species of lemur as “an embodi- 1, Werio=Tea-Trec, Ducks, wallabies, owls, eray-fish, dc. ment of the spirit of their ancestors, and therefore they feces are Ce Pe ner oo fovich @ small) | look with horror upon killing them.” Other Malagasy 8. Kardal= Black evestioss Cock-| | Kangaroo, seta rest Go| | tribes and families refrain from eating pigs and goats;

With reference to this classifieation Mr D. S. Stewart, the authority for it, says, “I have tried in vain to find some reason for the arrangement. I asked, ‘To what division does a bullock belong?’ After a pause came the answer, ‘It eats grass: it is Boortwerio.’ I then said, ‘A eray-fish does not cat grass; why is it Boortwerio?’ Then eame the standing reason for all puzzling questions: ‘That is what our fathers said it was.’”3 The natural objeets thus classed under and sharing the respect due to the totem may be conveniently called, as Mr Howitt proposes,* subtotems. Again, the Wotjoballuk tribe in north-western Victoria has a system of subtotems, thus :°—

Totem Clans. | Subtotems.

Phratries. |

1, Hot Wind. | Each totem has subordinate to it 2. White crestless Cockatoo.| a number of objects, animal or | 3. Belonging to the Sun. | vegetable, ¢.g., kangaroo, red 4. Deaf Adder. gum-tree, &.

| 5. Black Cockatoo. Do

6, Pelican. 5

Gamutch

Krokitch. ;

- :

Of the subtotems in this tribe Mr Howitt says, “ They appear to me to be totems in a state of development. Hot wind has at least five of them, white eockatoo has seventeen, and so on for the others. That these subtotems are now in process of gaining a sort of inde- pendence nay be shown by the following instance: a man who is Krokitch-Wartwut (hot wiud) claimed to own all the five subtotems of hot wind (three snakes and two birds), yet of these there was one which he specially claimed as ‘belonging’ to him, namely, Moiwuk (carpet-snake). Thus his totem, hot wind, seems to have been in process of subdivision into minor totems, and this man’s

EE ae eee ec ne ies: AS Ae 1 Brough Smyth, i. 91; Fison and Howitt, 168; cf J. A. L, xiii, 300. 2 Fison and Howitt, loc. cit. 4 In Smithson. Rep. for 1883, p. 818.

3 Fison and Howitt, 169. 5 Ibid.

others will not eat certain vegetables nor even allow them to be carried into their houses.19 The only occasion when the Sakalava tribe in Madagascar kill a bull is at the cir- cumcision of a child, who is placed on the bull’s back during the customary invocation.”°

In Bengal, as we have seen, there are numerous totem tribes among the non-Aryan races. In Siberia the Yakuts

6 Perhaps the only known exceptions are the Kurnai in eastern and the Gournditch-mora in western Vietoria. For the latter see Fison and Howitt, p. 275.

7 Gatschet, Migration Legend of the Creek Indians, 153; H. Hale, The Iroquois Book of Rites, p. 51.

8 George Gibbs in Contrib. to N. American Ethnol., i. 184; 8. Powers, Tribes of Calif., 5.

9 A, Pinartin Revue d’ Ethnographie, vi. p. 36.

10 Simons in Proc. R. Geog. Soc., Dec. 1885, pp. 786, 796.

11 Brett, Ind. Tribes of Guiana, 98; Im Thurn, Among the Indians of Guiana, 175 sq.

12 Crevaux, Voyages dans l’ Amérique du Sud, p. 59.

13 Falkner, Descr. of Patagonia, 114.

14 Garcilasso de la Vega, Royal Commentaries of the Incas, pt. i. bk. i. chs. 9, 10, 11, 18; Gumilla, Mist. de l’Orénoque, i. 175 sq.

1 Revue d’ Ethnologie, iii. 396 sg., v. 81; A. B. Hllis, The Tshi- speaking People of the Gold Coast, p. 204 sq.; Bowdich, Mission to Ashantee, ed. 1873, p. 216; Du Chaillu, Hquat. Afr., 308 sq.; Id., Journey to Ashango Land, 427, 429; C. J. Anderson, Lake Ngami, 221 sq.; Livingstone, Travels in S. Africa, 138; Casalis, The Basutos, 211; J. Mackenzie, Ten Years North of the Orange River, 393; Us PARLE xVie GOs].

16 Charles New, Life, Wanderings, &c., in Eastern Africa, 272, 274.

17 Mansfield Parkyns, Life in Abyssinia, 2938; Tr. Ethnol. Soc., new series, vi. 292. 18 Ellis, Hist. of Madagascar, i. 87.

19 Folk-Lore Record, ti, 22, 30. a stiri). Tey, CS).

are divided into totem clans; the clansmen will not kill their totems (the swan, goose, raven, &c.);1 and the clans are exogamous.? The Altaians, also in Siberia, are divided into twenty-four clans, which, though interfused with each other, retain strongly the clan feeling; the clans are exo- gamous ; each has its own patron divinity and religious ceremonies ; and the only two names of clans of these and kindred tribes of which the meanings are given

are names of animals. Totemism exists among the mountaineers of Formosa,* and there are traces of it in China.’ In Polynesia it existed, as we have seen, in Samoa. In Melanesia it appears in Fiji,° the New Hebrides,’ and the Solomon Islands. Amongst the Dyaks there are traces of totemism in the prohibition of the flesh of certain animals to certain tribes, respect for certain plants, &c.9 Tt exists in the islands of Ambon, Uliase, Leti, Moa, Lakor, Keisar (Makisar), Wetar, and the Aaru and Babar archipelagos.!° In the Philippine Islands there are traces of it in the reverence for certain animals, the belief that the souls of ancestors dwell in trees, &ec.12

With regard to ancient nations, totemism may be re- garded as certain for the Egyptians, and highly probable for the Semites,! Greeks, and Latins. If proved for one Aryan people, it might be regarded as proved for all; since totemism could scarcely have been developed by any one Aryan branch after the dispersion, and there is no evi- dence or probability that it ever was borrowed. Prof. Sayce finds totemism among the ancient Babylonians, but his evidence is not conclusive.18

No satisfactory explanation of the origin of totemism has yet been given. of totemism in a ‘misinterpretation of nicknames”: savages first named themselves after natural objects, and then, confusing these objects with their ancestors of the same names, reverenced them as they already reverenced their ancestors.14 But this view attributes to verbal mis- understandings far more influence than, in spite of the so-called comparative mythology, they ever seem to have exercised.

Literatwre.—Apart from the original authorities, the literature on totemism is very scanty. The importance of totemism for the early history of society was first recognized by Mr J. F. M‘Lennan in papers published in the Fortnightly Review (Oct. and Noy. 1869, Feb. 1870). The subject has since been treated of by E. B. Tylor, Early History of Mankind, p. 284 sq.; Sir Jolin Lubbock, Origin of Civilization, 260 sq.; A. Lang, Custom and Myth, p. 260, &c.; Id., Myth, Titual, and Religion, i. p. 58 sq., &c.; E. Clodd, Myths and Dreams, p. 99 sq.; W. Robertson Smith, Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia. See also SacrIFIcE, vol. xxi. Ds 135. For fuller details, see J. G. Frazer, Totemism (Edinburgh, 1887). (J. @ BR.)

TOTILA. See Jusrrnzan and Narsxs.

1 Strahlenberg, Description of the North and Eastern Parts of Hurope and Asia, London, 17388, p. 383.

2 Middendorf, Siber. Reise, p. 72, quoted by Lubbock, Origin of Civilization, p. 1385. The present writer has been unable to find the passage of Middendorf referred to.

3 W. Radloff, Aus Siberien, i. 216, 258. The Ostiaks, also in Siberia, are divided into exogamous clans, and they reverence the bear (Castren, Vorlesungen tiber die Altaischen Volker, 107, 115, 117). This, however, by no means aniounts to a proof of totemism.

4 Verhandi. d. Berl. Gesell. Anthropologie, &c., 1882, p. (62).

- Morgan, A. S., p. 364 sg, One of the aboriginal tribes of China worships the image of a dog (Gray, China, ii. 306).

6 Williams, Fiji and the Ijians, ed. 1860, i. 219 sq.

? Turner, Samoa, 334, 8 Fison and Howitt, p. 37 n.

® Low, Sarawak, 265 sg., 272-274, 306; St John, Life in the Forests of the Far East, i. 186 sq., 203; cf. Wilken in Ind. Gids, June 1884, p. 988 sq.; Ausland, 16th June 1884, p. 470.

1 Riedel, De sluik- en kroesharige rassen tusschen Papua en Selebes, pp. 82, 61, 258, 334, 341, 376 sq., 414, 432.

11 Blumentritt, Der Ahnencultus und die religidsen Anschauungen der Malaien des Philippinen-Archipel, 159 Sq.

12 See W. R. Smith, Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia.

13 A. H. Sayce, The Religion of the Ancient Babylonians, p. 279 sq.

4 Spencer, Principles of Sociology, i. 367.

TOTTENHAM, or Torrennam Hicu Cross, a suburb of London, in the county of Middlesex, is situated on the old “Great Northern” road, about 44 miles north from Shoreditch. The cross at Tottenham is not a market-cross, and its origin is doubtful. Towards the close of the 16th century it consisted of a column of wood, capped with a square sheet of lead. The present cross of brick was erected by Dean Wood about 1600, and the ornamental work of stucco was added in 1809. In the time of Isaak Walton there stood over it a shady arbour of woodbine, sweetbriar, jessamine, and myrtle. Formerly Tottenham

| was noted for its “ greens,” in the centre of one of which _ stood the famous old elm trees called the “Seven Sisters” :

these were removed in 1840, but the name is preserved in the Seven Sisters Road. Bruce Castle, occupying the site of the old mansion of the Bruces, but built probably by Sir William Compton in the beginning of the 16th century,

| 1s now occupied as a private boarding school. The church

of All Hallows, Tottenham, was given by David, king of Scotland, probably when he visited Henry in 1126, to the canons of the church of Holy Trinity, London. It has frequently been restored and altered. The older parts are the tower, nave, and south aisle of the Perpendicular period and the south porch of the 16th century. There are a large number of monuments and brasses. Tottenham consists chiefly of an irregular line of houses for about two miles along the high road, with short side streets at intervals. There area number of almshouses, including the Sanchez almshouses, founded in 1596 by Balthazar

| Sanchez, or Zanchero, confectioner to Philip of Spain ; Mr Herbert Spencer finds the origin |

Reynardson’s (1685); Pheasunt’s, or “The Pound,” for poor widows, originally founded by George Hynningham in 1536, and further endowed by Pheasunt and Saunders ; and the sailmakers’ almshouses, founded in 1869 by the Drapers’ Company for forty-five inmates. The free gram- mar school was enlarged and endowed in 1686 by Sarah, dowager duchess of

Somerset. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 4642 acres) in 1871 was 22,869, and in 1881 it was 46,456.

In the reign of the Confessor the manor of Tottenham was pos- sessed by Earl Waltheof, who in 1070 married Judith, niece of the Conqueror, aud was created in 1072 earl of Northumberland, Huntingdon, and Northampton, but joined the conspiracy against William, was betrayed by his wife, and was beheaded at Winchester, It was inherited by his daughter Maud, who was married first to Simon de St Liz and afterwards to David, sou of Malcolm IU oe king of Scotland, who was created by Henry I. earl of Hunting- don, and received possession of all the lands formerly held by Earl Waltheof. In 1184 the manor was granted by William the Lion, king of Scotland, to his brother David, earl of Augus and Gallo- way, the grant being confirmed in 1199 by King John of England, who created him earl of Huntingdon. He married Maud, heiress of Hugh, earl of Chester, and his son John inherited both earldoms. The son married Helen, daughter of Llewelyn, prince of Wales, by whom he was poisoned in 1237, dying without issue. She retained possession till 1254, when the manor was divided between his coheirs Robert de Brus, John de Baliol, and Henry de Hastings, each division forming a distinct manor bearing the name of its owner. In 1429 they all came into the possession of Alderman Gedeney. William Bedwell, the Arabic scholar, was vicar of Tottenham, and published in 1682 a Briefe Description of the Towne of Tottenham, in which he printed for the first time the burlesque poem, the “ Turnament of Tottenham.”

Sce Robinson’s Wistory of Tottenham, 1840.

TOUCAN, the Brazilian name of a bird,’ long since adopted into nearly all European languages, and apparently first given currency in England (though not then used as an English word) in 166816 by Charleton (Onomasticon, p. 115) ; but the bird, with its enormous beak and feather-

© Commonly believed to be so called from its cry; but Prof. Skeat (Proc. Philolog. Society, 15th May 1885) adduces evidence to prove that the Guarani Tucd is from ¢7, nose, and cdng, bone, 7.e., nose of bone.

36 In 1656 the beak of an ‘‘Aracari of Brazil,” which was a Toucan of some sort, was contained in the Museum Tradescantianum (p82); but the word

Toucan does not appear there.

mow ¢ AN

like tongue, was described by Oviedo in his Sumario de la |

Natural Historia de las Indias, first published at Toledo in 1527 (chap. 42),1 and, to quote the translation of part of the passage in Willughby's Ornithology (p. 129), 'there is no bird secures her young ones better from the Monkeys, which are very noisom to the young of most Birds. For when she perceives the approach of those Enemies, she so settles her self in her Nest as to put her Bill out at the hole, and gives the Monkeys such a welcom therewith, that they presently pack away, and glad they scape so." Indeed, so remarkable a bird must have attracted the notice of the earliest European invaders of America, the more so since its gaudy plumage was used by the natives in the decoration of their persons and weapons. In 1555 Belon (Hist. Nat. Oyseaux, p. 184) gave a characteristic figure of its beak, and in 1558 Thevet (Singularitez de la France Antarctique, pp. 88-90) a somewhat long descrip- tion, together with a woodcut (in some respects inaccurate, but quite unmistakable) of the whole bird, under the name of "Toucan," which he was the first to publish. In 1560 Gesner (Icones Avium, p. 130) gave a far better figure (though still somewhat incorrect) from a drawing received from Ferrerius, and suggested that from the size of its beak the bird should be called Burhynchus or Ramphestes. This figure, with a copy of Thevet's and a detailed descrip- tion, was repeated in the posthumous edition (1585) of his larger work (pp. 800, 801). By 1579 Ambroise Paré (Quvres, ed. Malgaigne, iii. p. 783) had dissected a Toucan that belonged to Charles IX. of France, and about the same time Léry (Voyage fait en la Terre du Bresil, chap. xi.), whose chief object seems to have been to confute Thevet, confirmed that writer's account of this bird in most respects. In 1599 Aldrovandus (Ornithologia, i. pp. 801-803), always ready to profit by Gesner's information, and generally without acknowledgment, again described and repeated the former figures of the bird ; but he cor- rupted his predecessor's Ramphestes (which was nearly right) into amphastos, and in this incorrect form the name, which should certainly be Rhamphestes or Rham- phastas, was subsequently adopted by Linnzeus and has since been recognized by systematists. Into the rest of the

early history of the Toucan's discovery it is needless to go.? Additional particulars were supplied by many succeeding writers, until in 1834 Gould completed his Monograph of the family? (with an anatomical appendix by Sir R. Owen), to which, in 1835, he added some supplementary plates; and in 1854 he finished a second and much improved edition. The latest systeniatic compendium on Toucans is Cassin's "Study of the Ramphastide," in the Proceedings of the Philadelphia Academy for 1867 (pp.

100-124),

By recent systematists 5 genera and from 50 to 60 species of the Family are recognized; but the characters of the former have never been satisfactorily defined, much less those of numerous snbdivisions which it has pleased some writers to invent. There can be little

doubt that the bird first figured and described by the earliest authors above nained is the 2. toco of nearly all ornithologists, and

1 The writer has only been able to consult the reprint of this rare work contained in the Biblioteca de Autores Hspanoles (xxii. pp. 473- 515), published at Madrid in 1852.

2 One point of some interest may, however, be noticed. In 1705 Plot (NV. £. Oxfordshire, p. 182) recorded a Toucan found within two miles of Oxford in 1644, the body of which was given to the repository in the medical school of that university, where, he said, ''it is still to be seen." Already in 1700 Leigh in his Laneashire (i. p. 195, Birds, tab. 1, fig. 2) had figured another which had been found dead on the coast of that eounty about two years before. The bird is easily kept in captivity, and no doubt from early times many were brought alive to Europe. Besides the one disseeted by Paré, as above mentioned, Joh. Faber, in his additions to Hernandez's work on the Natural History of Mexieo (1651), figures (p. 697) one seen and described by Putens (Dal Pozzo) at Fontainebleau.

3 Of this the brothers Sturm in 1841 published at Nuremberg a German version.

as such is properly regarded as the type of the genus and therefore of the Family. It is one of the largest, measuring 2 feet in length, and has a wide range throughout Guiana and a great part of Brazil. The huge beak, looking like the great claw of a lobster, more than 8 inches long and 38 high at the base, is of a deep orange colour, with a large black oval spot near the tip. The eye, with its double iris of green and yellow, has a broad blue orbit, and is surrounded by a bare space of deep orange skin. The plumage generally is black, but the throat is white, tinged with yellow and commonly edged beneath with red; the upper tail-coverts are white, and the lower scarlet. In other species of the genus, 14 to 17 in number, the bill is mostly particoloured—green, yellow, red, chestnut, blue, and black variously combining so as oftcn to form a ready diagnosis; but some of these tints are very fleeting and often leave little or no trace after death. Alternations of the brighter colours are also displayed in the feathers of the throat, breast, and tail-coverts, so as to be in like manner characteristic of the species, and in several the bare space round the eye is yellow, green, blue, or lilac. The sexes are almost alike in coloration, and externally differ chiefly in size, the males being largest. The tail is nearly square or moderately rounded. In the genus Pteroglossus, the ** Aracaris ” (pronounced Arassari), the sexes more or less differ in appearance, and the tail is gradnated. The species are smaller in size, and nearly all are banded on the belly, which is generally yellow, with black and scarlet, while except in two the throat of the males at least is black. One of the most remarkable and beautiful is P. beauharnaisi, by some authors placed in a distinct genus and called Beauharnaisius ulocomus. In this the feathers of the top of the head are very singular, looking like glossy cnrled shavings of black horn or whalebone, the effect being due to the dilatation of the shaft and its coalescence with the consolidated barbs. Some of the feathers of the straw-coloured throat and cheeks partake of the same structure, but in a less degree, while the subterminal part of the damina is of a lustrous pearly-white.4 The beak is richly coloured, being green and crimson above and lemon below. The upper plumage generally is dark green, but the mantle and rump are crimson, as are a broad abdominal belt, the flanks, and many crescentic markings on the otherwise yellow lower parts. The group or genus Selenodera, proposed by Gould in 1837 (Icones Aviuwm, pt. 1), contains

some 6 or 7 species, having the beak, which is mostly transversely striped, and tail shortcr than in Péeroglossus, Here the sexcs also differ in coloration, the males having the head and breast black, and the females the same parts chestnut; but all have a yellow nuchal crescent (whence the name of the group). The so-called Hill-Toucans have becn separ- ated as another genus, Andigena, and consist of some 5 or 6 species chiefly frequenting the slopes of the Andes and reaching an eleva- tion of 10,000 feet, though one, often placed among them, but perhaps belonging rather to Pteroglossus, the A. bailiont, remark- able for its yellow-orange head, neck, and lower parts, inhabits the lowlands of sonthern Brazil. Another very singular form is 4. laminirostris, which has affixed on either side of the maxilla, near the base, a quadrangular ivory-like plate, forming a feature unique in this or almost in any Family of Birds. The group

The monstrous serrated bill that so many Toucans possess was by Buffon, after his manner, accounted a grave defect of Nature, and it must be confessed that no one has given what seems to be a satisfactory explanation of its precise use, though on evolutionary principles none will now doubt its fitness to the bird's require- ments. Solid as it looks, its weight is inconsiderable, and the perfect hinge by which the maxilla is articulated adds to its efficiency as an instrument of prehension. Swainson (Classi/. Birds, ii. p. 188) imagined it merely ''to contain an infinity of nerves, disposed like net-work, all of which lead immediately to the nostrils," and add to the olfactory faculty. This notion seems to be borrowed from Trail (Trans. Linn. Society, xi. p. 289), who admittedly had it from Waterton, and stated that it was 'fan admirable contrivance of nature to increase the delicacy of the organ of smell;'' but Sir R. Owen's description shews this view to be groundless, and he attributes the extraordinary develop- ment of the Toucan's beak to the need of compensating, by the additional power of mastication thus given, for the absence of any of the grinding structures that are so characteristic of the in- testinal tract of vegetable-eating birds—its digestive organs posscss- ing a general simplicity of formation. The question is one worth deciding, and would not be difficult to decide by those who have the opportunity. The nostrils are placed so as to be in most

4 This curious peeuliarity naturally attracted the notice of the first discoverer of the speeies, Poeppig, who briefly deseribed it in a letter

published in Froriep’s Notizen (xxxii. p. 146) for December 1831.

> Readers of Mr Bates’s Naturalist on the River Amazons will reeolleet the aecount (ii. p. 344) and illustration there given of his encounter with a flock of this species of Toucan. His remarks on the other species with which he met are also exeellcnt.

forms invisible until sought, being obscured by the frontal feathers or the backward prolongation of the horny sheath of the beak. The wings are somewhat feeble, and the legs have the toes plaeed in pairs, two before and two behind. The tail is eapable of free vertical motion, and controlled by strong muscles, so that, at least in the true Toueans, when the bird is preparing to sleep, it is re- verted and lies almost flat on the back, on which also the huge bill reposes, pointing in the opposite direction.

As may be inferred from the foregoing, the Toucans are a Neotropical form, and by far the greater number inhabit the northern part of South America, especially Guiana and the valley of the Amazons. Some three species occur in Mexico, and several in Central America. One, R. witell- tnus, which has its headquarters on the mainland, is said to be common in Trinidad, but none are found in the Antilles proper. The precise place of the Family in the heterogeneous group Picariz cannot yet be determined. Its nearest allies perhaps exist among the Capitonide; but none of them are believed to have the long feather-like tongue which is so characteristic of the ‘Toucans, and is, so far as known, possessed besides only by the Momotide (cf. Moroz, vol. xvii. p. 3). But of these last there is no reason to deem the Toucans close relatives, and, according to Swainson (w supra, p. 141), who had opportunities of observing both, the alleged resemblance in their habits has no existence. Those of the Toucans in confinement have been well described by Broderip and Vigors (Zool. Journal, i. p. 484; ii. p. 478), and indeed may be partially observed in many zoological gardens. Though feeding mainly on fruits, little seems amiss to them, and they swallow grubs, reptiles, and small birds with avidity. They are said to nest in hollow trees, and to lay white eggs. (a. N.)

TOUCH may be defined as a sense of pressure, referred usually to the surface of the body. It is often understood asa sensation of contact as distinguished from pressure, but it is evident that, however gentle be the contact, a certain amount of pressure always exists between the sensitive surface and the body touched. Mere contact in such circumstances is gentle pressure ; a greater amount of force causes a feeling of resistance or of pressure referred to the skin; a still greater amount causes a feeling of muscular resistance, as when a weight is supported on the palm of the hand; whilst, finally, the pressure may be so great as to cause a feeling of pain. The force may not be exerted vertically on the sensory surface, but in the opposite direction, as when a hair on a sensory surface is pulled or twisted. Touch is therefore the sense by which mechanical force is appreciated, and it presents a strong resemblance to hearing, in which the sensation is excited by intermittent pressures on the auditory organ. In addition to feelings of contact or pressure referred to the sensory surface, contact may give rise to a sensation of temperature, according as the thing touched feels hot or cold. These sensations of contact, pressure, or tempera- ture are usually referred to the skin or integument cover- ing the body, but they are experienced to a greater or less extent when any serous or mucous surface is touched. The skin being the chief sensory surface of touch, it is there that the sense is most highly developed, both as to delicacy in detecting minute pressures and as to the char- acter of the surface touched. ‘Tactile impressions, pro- perly so called, are absent from internal mucous surfaces, as has been proved in men having gastric, intestinal, and urinary fistule. In these cases, touching the mucous surface caused pain, and not a sensation of touch.

Organs of Touch.—Comparative Sketeh.—The organs of toueh present many varieties of form, from a simple filament of sensitive protoplasm to a highly complex end-organ connected with the eommeneement of a sensory nerve-fibre. The bodies of the lowest organisms are formed of contraetile protoplasm, and mechanical con- taet with any resisting substances causes a change of form. Here is the simplest kind of touch—a response on the part of any portion of the surface of the body to a mechanical stimulus. The pseudopodia

Tay i ==

of the Rhizopoda are also organs of touch, and probably the cilia, the flagella, and the short rod-like bodies seen on many Jnfusoria belong to the same class of sensory organs. Among the Celentera (hydroid polyps, tubularians, Hydromeduse, Medusx%, Anthozoa or sea-anemones) tentacles are found, usually arranged in circles around the mouth or on portions of the body engaged in loeomo- tion, as on the margins of the umbrella of Medusw. These have a large amount of sensibility, and serve as organs of touch. In some also there are stiff hairs on the tentacles and around the mouth, more differentiated tactile organs. The Vermes show organs of touch in the form of modified cells of the integument, eonnected with sensory nerves. These cells often assume the form of stiff rods projected from the surface (tactile sete). Such are often found over the whole body of Turbellaria and Nemertina, on the tentacles of Bryozoa, on the head segment of Lumbricide, and on the tentacles and antenne of Chetopoda. In the latter group of animals tactile organs are also found in ring-like arrangements, called eirrhi, on the foot-stumps or parapodia. In some Hirudinea (leeches) compli- eated tactile rods are embedded in cup-shaped organs scattered over the body. Large prominenees of the euticle, called tactile papille, are also found in many of the Vermes near the oral and genital orifiees. The Echinodermata have also special parts devoted to touch, and these show their highest differentiation in the tentaeles of the Holothuroida. Arthropoda show tactile organs in the form usually of rod-like bodies projecting from the surface of the appendages and chiefly connected with nerves passing to ganglionic cells. In Crustacea such organs are found on the antenne and other appendages, and on the antenne in Myriapoda and Jnseeta. In the latter they are also found on the tarsal joints of the feet. The ap- pearance of these rod-like bodies is seen in fig. 1.

Ciliated tentacular processes exist in the larva of Braehiopoda which are probably touch organs, but there are no definite organs of this kind in the adult form. The Jfol- lusea have’the sense of toueh widely diffused. All the soft parts of the body are capable of feeling when touehed, and in various situations there arefine hair-like prolongations Fie. 1, —Nerve-ending from eells, These are supplied with ric tactile rods, from iy nerves, and are touchorgans. Such ; wade ae are found on the edge of the mantle ganglionic

swelling; s, tactile rods; in Lamellibranchiata, where they < fine hairs of cuticle (Leydig). may be in rows; they also exist on the siphons, and ‘‘they serve to watch over the particles that get into the mantle cavity with the water” (Gegenbaur). Processes of a tactile kind are also found on the epipodium, the edge of the mantle, and the cephalic tentacles in many Gasteropoda, and on the dorsal tufts of the Vudibranchiata, Here and there also there are enlargements of the integument covered with cilia and supplied by a nerve which have been regarded as touch organs, but are by some supposed to be eonneeted with smell (see SMELL). The 7wnieata have cells with long filamentous processes in the integument, which are probably tactile in function,

In the great majority of fishes touch is limited to the lips, to parts of the fins, and to special organs called barbels, In the Cyprinoids there is a fold of skin bordering the mouth which is highly tactile. The lip of the sturgeon is eovered with numerous papille; the sucking lip of the lamprey is papillose and highly sensitive. The fins are in many fishes modified to serve as organs of touch. Thus the gurnards (7riglidz) have three soft flexible rays detached from the fin, and ‘‘the filiform radial appendages of the Polynemide, the prolonged ventral fins of Osphromenus, T’richo- gaster, and other Labyrinthibranehs, and of the Ophidiide,” are examples of this class of organs (Owen). The barbels are long slender processes of skin, either single or in pairs, found in the Silwridx, loaches, barbels, cods, sturgeons, and in the parasitic Myzinidw. The nerves for the barbels come from the fifth pair of cranial nerves. ‘‘A cod, blind by absence or destruetion of both eyeballs, has been captured in good eondition, and it may be sup- posed to have found its food by exploring with the symphysial barbule, as well as by the sense of smell” (Owen). Bodies some- what similar to the Paeinian corpuscles (to be afterwards described) were discovered by Savi in 1844 in the torpedo; they are arranged in linear series on the anterior part of the mouth and nostrils, and over the fore part of the electrical organs. Each is composed of two capsules, one connected with the other, and containing a granular substance in which the nerve end is embedded. Peculiar mucous glands are also found outside the electrical organs of the torpedo which are believed to minister to touch. Similar organs exist in sharks, and John Hunter dissected the snout of the spotted dog-fish (Scylliwm) ‘‘ to show the manner of the nerves ramifying,

as also their apparent termination in this part, each ultimate nerve appearing to terminate in the bottom of a tube or duct, the sides of which secrete and convey a thick mucus to the skin.” These ‘‘nervo-mucous” organs are found in the sides and under part of the head and on the fore part of the trunk.

The Amphibia and Reptilia do not show any special organs of touch. The lips of tadpoles have tactile papille. Some snakes have a pair of tentacles on the snout, but the tongue is probably the chief organ of touch in most serpents and lizards. All reptiles possessing climbing powers have the sense of touch highly developed in the feet.

Birds have epithelial papille on the soles of the toes that are no doubt tactile. These are of great length in the capercailzie (Tetrax urogallus), ‘enabling it to grasp with more security the frosted branches of the Norwegian pine trees” (Owen). It has been sug- gested that the delicate ‘‘papillose” digits of the smaller birds assist thein in nest-building by having the sense of touch highly developed. Around the root of the bill in many birds there are special tactile organs, assisting the bird to use it as a kind of sensi- tive probe for the detection in soft ground of the worms, grubs, and slugs that constitute its food. Special bodies of this kind have been detected in the beak and tongue of the duck and goose, called the tactile corpuscles of a Merkel, or the corpuscles of Grandry (fig. 2). Sim- ilar bodies have been { found in the epidermis \ of man and mammals, in the outer root-sheath of tactile hairs or feelers. They consist of small j bodies composed of a ead capsule enclosing two or Fie. 2.—Tactile Corpuscles from duck’s tongue. more flattened nucleated il as cells, piled ina row. Each corpuscle is separated from the others by a transparent protoplasmic disk. Nerve fibres terminate either in the cells (Merkel) or in the protoplasmic intercellular matter (Ranvier, Hesse, Izqui- erdo). Another form of end-organ has been described by Herbst as existing in the mucous membrane of the duck’s tongue. These cor- puscles of Herbst are like small Pacinian cor- puscles with thin and very close lamelle. Developments ofintegument devoid of feathers, such as the ‘‘wattles” of the cock, the ‘‘ca- runcles” of the vulture and turkey, are not tactile in their function.

In the great majority of Mammalia the general surface of the skin shows sensitive- ness, and this is developed to a high degree on certain parts, such as the lips, the end of Fre. 3.—Tactile Corpuscle a teat, and the generative organs. Where from the hand. touch is highly developed, the skin, more especially the epidermis, is thin and devoid of hair. Inthe Monkeys tactile papille are found in the skin of the fingers and palms, and in the Z skin of the prehensile tails of various species (Ateles). Such papille also abound in the naked skin of the nose or snout, as in the shrew, mole, pig, tapir, and elephant. In the Or- nithorhynchus the skin covering the mandibles is tactile (Owen). In many animals certain hairs acquire great /\// size, length, and stiffness. These con- ‘(3))/ stitute thevibrissz, or whiskers. Each large hair grows from a firm capsule sunk deep in the true skin, and the hair bulb is supplied with sensory nerve filaments. In the walrus the capsule is cartilaginous in texture. The marine Carnivora have strong vibrisse which “act as a staff, in a » wayanalogous to that held and applicd by the hand of a blind man” (Owen). Each species has hairs of this kind developed on the eyebrows, lips, or cheeks, to suit a particular mode of existence, as, for example, the long fine whiskers of the night-prowling felines, and in the aye-aye, a monkey having nocturnal habits. In the Ungulata the hoofs need no delicacy of tonch as regards the discrimination of minute points. Such animals, however, have broad, massive sensations of touch, enabling them to appreciate the firmness of the soil on which they tread, and under the hoof we find highly vascular and sensitive lamelle or papille, contributing no doubt, not only to the growth of the hoof, but also toits sensitiveness. The Cetacea have numerous papille in the skin, regarding which John Hunter remarks : “ These villi are soft and pliable ; they float in water ; and each is longer or shorter according to the size of the animal. In the spermaceti

Fia. 4.—Tactile Corpuscles from clitoris of rabbit. m, nerve.

whale they are about a quarter of an inch long; in the grampus, bottlenose, much shorter; in all they are extremely vascular; they are sheathed in corresponding hollows of the epiderm.” In some whales the skin is thrown into numerous longitudinal plaits on the under and fore part of the body

(Balznoptera). Prof. Owen remarks regarding these: ‘‘It is peculiar to the swifter swimming whales that pursue mackerel and herring, and may serve to warn them of shoals, by appreciation of au impulse of the water rebounding therefrom, and so conveying a sense of the propinquity of sunken rocks or sand-banks. Sensitiveness to the movements of the ambient ocean is indicated by certain observed phenomena. The whale-fishers aver that when a strageler is attacked its fellows will bear down from some miles’ distance, as if to its assistance; and it may be that they are attracted by perception of the vibration of the water caused by the struggles of the harpooned whale or cachalot” (Owen’s Comparative Anatomy, vol. iii. p. 189). Bats have the sense of touch strongly developed in the wings and external ears, and in some species in the flaps of skin found near the nose. These “nose-leaves” and expanded ears frequently show vibratile movements, like the antenne of insects, enabling the animal to detect slight atmospheric impulses. In the vampires (Desmodz) and fruit-eating bats (Pteropi) the auricular and nasal appendages are small; ‘‘such sensitive tactile guides or warners in flight are only needed in the bats of active food, which must follow in swift evolutions, like the swallows, but in gloom, the volatile insects that people the summer air at dawn or dusk” (Owen), There is little doubt that many special forms of tactile organs will be found in animals using the nose or feet for burrowing. A peculiar end- organ has been found in the nose of the mole, while there are ‘‘ end- capsules ” in the tongue of the elephant and ‘‘ nerve rings” in the ears of the mouse.

End-Organs of Touch in Man.—In man three special forms of tactile end-organs have been described, and can be readily demonstrated.

(1) The End-Bulbs of Krause.— These are oval or rounded bodies, from 5} to z+ of an inch long. Each consists of a delicate capsule, composed of nucleated con- nective tissue enclosing numerous minute cells. On tracing the nerve fibre, it is found that the nerve sheath is con- tinuous with the capsule, whilst the axis cylinder of the nerve divides into branches which lose themselves among the cells. Waldeyer and Longworth state that the nerve fibrils terminate in the cells, thus making these g bodies similar to the cells described by Merkel (ut supra). See fig.5. These bodies are found in the deeper layers of the con- junctiva, margins of the lips, nasal mu- cous membrane, epi-

glottis, fungiform Fre. 5.—End-Bulb from human ‘ conjunctiva, a, nucleate

and circumvallate capsule; 6, core Cc, entering

papillee of the nerve-fibre terminating in the

: core at d. tongue, glans penis

and clitoris, mucous membrane of the rectum of man, and they have also been found on the under surface of the “toes of the guinea-pig, ear and body of

the mouse, and in the wing of the bat” (Landois and Stirling). In the genital organs aggregations of end-bulbs occur, known as the “genital corpuscles of Krause” (fig. 4). In the synovial mem- brane of the joints of the fingers there are larger end-bulbs, each connected with three or four nerve-filaments.

(2) The Touch Corpuscles of Wagner and Meissner.—These are oval bodies, about 3p of an inch long by z$,5 of an inch in breadth. Each consists of a series of layers of connective tissue pi 6 Ena-B

xs – } ulb from arranged transversely, and containing in conjunctiva ofealf. n,

. . nerve. the centre granular matter with nuclei

(fig. 7). One, two, or three nerve fibres pass to the lower end of the corpuscle, wind transversely around it, lose the

white substance of Schwann, penetrate into the corpuscle, where the axis cylinders, dividing, end in some way un- known. ‘The cor- puscles do not con- tain any soft core, but are apparently built up of irregu- lar septa of con- nective tissue, in the meshes _ of which the nerve fibrils end in ex- pansions similar to Merkel’s cells. Dr Thin describes simple and com-

pound corpuscles according to the number of nerve j Fig. 7.—Vertical Section of the Skin of the palm of the rey fibres enterin © hand. a, blood-vessel ; 6, papilla of the cutis vera; them. These bodies c, capillary; d, nerve-fibre passing to a touch-cor- are found abun- puscle; e, Wagner's touch-corpuscle; jf, nerve-

fibre, divided transversely; g, cells of the Malpighian

layer of the skin. (From Landois and Stirling,

after Biesiadecki.)

dantly in the palm of the hand and sole of the foot, where there may be as many as 21 to every square millimetre (1 mm.= ;; inch). They are not so numerous on the back of the hand or foot, mamma, lips, and tip of the tongue, and they are rare in the genital organs. '" Kollmann describes three special tactile areas in the hand :—(1) the tips of the fingers, with 24 touch corpuscles in a length of 10 mm. ; (2) the three eminences lying on the palm behind the slits between the fingers, with 5:4-2°7 touch-corpuscles in the same length; and (3) the ball of the thumb and little finger, with 3-1-3°5 touch corpuscles. The first two areas also contain many of the corpuscles of Vater or Pacini, whilst in the latter these corpuscles are fewer and scattered. In the other parts of the hand the nervous end- organs are much less developed" (Landois and Stirling).

(3) The Corpuscles of Vater or Pacini.—These, first described by Vater so long ago as 1741, are small oval bodies, quite visible to the naked eye, from +; to =, of an inch long and =; to 5 of an inch in breadth, attached to the nerves of the hands and feet. They can be readily demonstrated in the mesentery of the cat (fig. 8). Each corpuscle consists of 40 to 50 lamellee or coats, like the folds of an onion, thinner and closer to- gether on approaching the centre. Each lamella is formed of an elastic material mixed with delicate con- nective tissue fibres, and the inner surface of each is lined by a single continuous layer of endothelial cells. A double-contoured nerve fibre passes to each, The white substance of Schwann becomes continuous with the lamelle, whilst… ¢ vater's or Pacini's Cor- the axis cylinder passes into the puscle. a, stalk; 6, nerve-fibre body, and ends in a small knob or png lee eeact Sieve in a plexus. Sometimes a blood- 4er, with

its end divided at 7. vessel also penetrates the Pacinian body, entering along with the nerve. Such bodies are found in the subcutaneous tissue on the nerves of the fingers and toes, near joints, attached to the nerves of the abdominal plexuses of the

OW Se

sympathetic, on the coccygeal gland, on the dorsum of the penis and clitoris, in the meso-colon, in the course of the intercostal and periosteal nerves, and in the capsules of lymphatic glands (William Stirling).

Physiology of Touch in Man.—Such are the special end- organs of touch. It has also been ascertained that many sensory nerves end in a plexus or network, the ultimate fibrils being connected with the cells of the particular tissue in which they are found. Thus they exist in the cornea of the eye, and at the junctions of tendons with muscles. In the latter situation “ flattened end-flakes or plates” and “elongated oval end-bulbs” have also been found (Sachs, Rollett, Golgi). A consideration of these various types of structure show that they facilitate inter- mittent pressure being made on the nerve endings. They are all, as it were, elastic cushions into which the nerve endings penetrate, so that the slight variation of pressure will be transmitted to the nerve. Probably also they serve to break the force of a sudden shock on the nerve endings.

Sensitiveness and Sense of Locality. —The degree of sensitiveness of the skin is determined by finding the smallest distance at which the two points of a pair of – compasses Can hi be felt. This method, first followed by Weber, is em- ployed by phy- sicians in the diagnosis of nervous affections involving the sensitiveness of the skin. The following table shows the sensitiveness in millimetres for an adult, whilst the corresponding numbers for a boy 12 years of age are given within brackets (Landois and Stirling, after

Fic. 9.—sthesiometer of Sieveking.

Weber) :-— Millimetres. Tip of tongué…..... eSaincten aac Onn pee este 1 ‘1] Third phalanx of finger, volar surface…..... 2-2°3 [1°7] Red part of the lip…....csccsssssesseseeeeceeeeseees 4°5 [3°9] Second phalanx of

finger, volar surface……... 4-4°5 [3°9] First phalanx of finger, volar surface…….....-. 5-5‘5 Third phalanx of finger, dorsal surface……..... 6°8 [4°5] Tip Of OSG... cvasimsyeros denned seatipang s+ ay senniages 68 [4°5] Head of metacarpal bone, volar…….....:0+-+ 5-6°‘8 [4‘5] Ball. Of Wace 5 eerwceeewmnes atementeoeien sett ey 6°5-7 Ball of Little fim ger seccas si o0es: aaeetees enews acien- oes 5°5-6 Contre Of pales. sc. svc .nersssnsiancacsaw nanacs yeraenere 8-9 Dorsum and side of tongue ; white of the lips ;

metacarpal part of the thumb….....++ 9 [6°8] Third phalanx of the great toe, plantar surface, 11:3 [6°8] Second phalanx of the fingers, dorsal surface… 11°38 [9] PRR derccee avs nasiownmins HSA cient Prige Raves pox 11°3 [9] i. reer. Cece cee. ales [9] Centre of hard palate. .....cssssseseeseseeeeeneeees 13°5 [11°3] Lower third of the fore-arin, volar surface…..... 15 In front of the 7yZoMa…….....:scccseeereeeee serene 15°8 [11°3] Plantar surface of the great t0@.....seeeeeeeee 15°8 [9] Inner surface of the lip. ..... -secsecseanseeeess 20°3 [13 °5] Behind the zygoma…….....cc.seccerseenseenense een ens 22:6 [15°8] OreliGatl in. «ince stem cerehen wavelet lias tecsioubearns 22°6 [18] QCCIBIG fn… eicrs aaveT ev nsavioeainsaipaewrenmamesiimeenines 271 [22°6] Baeke Of Wie RAI ose: andar romero ters asielsnsoweiioeisice meanest 81 °6 [22°6 Under: tite @b ins « 5 cesnceeciep sews etentes soereeea pe om 338 [226] Wr RPO Eh wat naciiocda 2. one nee OM aeer gee pace seem dere 338 [22-6] amiee rag. os fisicsagydaane eae beteor a nner veto ase aes ebetinens 36°1 [31°6] Sacrum (gluteal region).....s6sceeeeeeeeeeees 44°6 [33°8] Pare-aim and Magis. sess sesin.s .sensmee, suoravanyapieneans 45 ‘1 133 °8] TING cso acct acs ata he eects eee wow ern ee eae ce 54:1 [361] Back of the fifth dorsal vertebra ; lower dorsal

and. Tumibar TegiOWi…ci…sece0saeren snaaes teres 54:1

Middle of the neck 67°7 ; Upper arm; thigh; centre of the back…..... 67°7 [31°6-40°6]

These investigations show not only that the skin is sensitive, but that one is able with great precision to distinguish the part touched. This latter power is usually called the sense of locality, and it is influenced by various conditions. ‘he greater the number of sensory nerves in a given area of skin

the greater is the degree of accnracy in distinguishing different points. Contrast in this way the tip of the finger and the back of the hand. Sensi- tiveness increases from the joints towards the extremities, and, as pointed out by Vierordt, sensitiveness is great in parts of the body that are actively moved. The sensibility of the limbs is finer in

Sere ee eer er

nO UC

the transverse axis than in the long axis of the limb, to the extent of 4 on the flexor surface of the upper limb and } on the extensor surface (Landois). It is doubtful if exercise improves sensitive- ness, as Francis Galton found that the performances of blind boys were not superior to those of other boys, and he says that “the guidance of the blind depends mainly on the multitude of col- lateral indications, to which they give much heed, and not their superiority to any one of them.” When the skin is moistened with indifferent fluids sensibility is increased. Suslowa made the curious discovery that, if the area between two points distinctly felt be tickled or be stimulated by a weak electric eurrent, the impressions are fused. Stretching the skin, and baths in water containing carbonic acid or common salt, increase the power of localizing tactile impressions. In experimenting with the com- passes, it will be found that a smaller distance can be distinguished if one proceeds from greater to smaller distances than in the re- verse direction. A smaller distance can also be detected when the points of the compasses are placed one after the other on the skin than when they are placed simultaneously. If the points of the compasses are unequally heated, the sensation of two contacts becomes confused. Ananemic condition, ora state of venous con- gestion, or the application of cold, or violent stretching of the skin, or the use of such substances as atropine, daturin, morphia, strychnine, alcohol, bromide of potassium, cannabin, and hydrate of chloral blunt sensibility. The only active substance said to increase it is caffein.

Absolute sensitiveness, as indicated by a sense of pressure, has been determined by various methods. “wo different weights are placed on the part, and the smallest difference in weight that can be perceived is noted. Weber placed small weights directly on the skin; Aubert and Kammler

loaded small plates; Dohrn made usc of a balance, having a blunt point at one end of the beam, rest- ing on the skin, whilst weights were placed on the other end of the beam to equalize the pressure; Eulenberg invented an instrument like a spiral spring paper-clip or balance (the baresthesiometer), having an index showing the pressure in grammes; Goltz employed au india-rubber tube filled with water, and this, “to ensure a con- stant surface of contact, bent at one spot over a piece of cork, is touched at that spot by the entaneous part to be examined, and, by rhythmically cxerted pressure, waves analogous to those of the arterial pulse are produced in the tube” (Hermann); and Landois invented a mercurial balance, enabling him to make rapid variations in the weight withont giving rise to any shock (figured in Landois and Stirling’s Physiology, p. 1155). These methods have given the following general results. (1) The greatest acuteness is on the forehead, temples, and back of the hand and forearm, which detect a pressure of ‘002 gramme; fingers detect ‘005 to ‘015 gramme; the chin, abdomen, and nose ‘04 to ‘05 gramme. (2) Goltz’s method gives the same general results as Weber’s experiment with the compasses, with the exception that the tip of the tongue has its sensation of pressnre much lower in the scale than its sensation of touch. (3) Eulenberg found the following gradations in the fineness of the pressure sense:—the forehead, lips, back of the cheeks, and temples appreciate ditferences of gy to = (200: 205 to 300 : 310 grammes). The back of the last phalanx of the fingers, the forearm, hand, Ist and 2d phalanges, the palmar surface of the hand, forearm, and upper arm distinguish differences of zy to ay (200: 220 to 200: 210 grammes). The front of the leg and thigh is similar to the forearm. Then follow the back of the foot and toes, the sole of the foot, aud the back of the leg and thigh. Dohrn placed a weight of 1 gramme on the skin, and then determined the least additional weight that could be detected, with this result:~~— 3d phalanx of finger, 499 gramme ; back of the foot, °5 gramme ; 2d phalanx, ‘771 gramme; Ist phalanx, ‘82 gramme; leg, 1 gramme; back of hand, 1°156 grammes; palm, 1‘108 grammes ; patella, 1°5 grammes; forearm, 1°99 grammes; umbilicus, 3°5 grammes ; and back, 3°8 grammes (Landois and Stirling). (4) In passing from light to heavier weights, the acuteness inereases at once, a maximum is reached, and then with heavy weights the power of distinguishing the differences diminishes (Hering, Bieder~~ mann). (5) A sensation of pressure after the weights have been removed may be noticed (after-pressure sensation), especially if the weight

be considerable. (6) Valentine noticed that, if the finger were held against a blunt-toothed wheel, and the wheel were rotated with a certain rapidity, he felt a smooth margin. This was ex- perienced when the intervals of time between the contacts of suc- cessive teeth were less than from z}y to yty of a second. The same experiment can be readily made by holding the finger over the holes in one of the outermost circles of a large syren rotating quickly : the sensations of individual holes become fused, so as to give rise to a feeling of touching a slit. (7) Vibrations of strings are de- tected even when the number is abont 1500 per second ; above this the sensation of vibration ceases. By attaching bristles to the prongs of tuning forks, and bringing these into contact with the lip or tongue, sensations of a very acute character are experienced, which are most intense when the forks vibrate from 600 to 1500 per second.

481

Information from Tactile Impressions.~~—These enable us to come to the following conclusions. (1) We note the existence of some~~ thing touching the sensory surface. (2) From the intensity of the sensation we determine the weight, tension, or intensity of the pres- sure. This sensation is in the first instance referred to the skin, but after the pressure has reached a certain amount muscular sensa- tions are also experienced—the so-called muscular sense, (3) The locality of the part touched is at once determined, and from this the probable position of the touching body. Like the visual field, to which all retinal impressions are referred, point for point, there is a tactile field, to which all points on the skin surface may be referred. (4) By touching a body at various points, from the difference of pressure and from a comparison of the positions of various points in the tactile field we judge of the configuration of the body. A number of ‘tactile pictures” are obtained by pass- ing the skin over the touched body, and the shape of the body is further determined by a knowledge of the muscular movements necessary to bring the cutaneous surface into contact with different portions of it. If there is abnormal displacement of position, a false conception may arise as to the shape of the body. Thus, if a small marble or a pea be placed between the index and iniddle finger so as to touch (with the palm downwards) the onter side of the index finger and the inner side of the middle finger, a sensation of touching one ronnd body is experienced ; but if the fingers be

crossed, so that the marble touches the inner side of the index finger and the outer side of the middle finger, there will be a feeling of two round bodies, because in these circumstances there is added to the feelings of contact a feeling of distortion (or of muscular action) like what would take place if the fingers, for pur- poses of touch, were placed in that abnormal position, Again, as showing that our knowledge of the tactile field is precise, there is the well-known fact that when a piece of skin is transplanted from the forehead to the nose, in the operation for removing a deformity of the nose arising from lupns or other ulcerative disease, the patient feels the new nasal part as if it were his fore- head, and he may have the curious sensation of a nasal instead of a frontal headache. (5) From the number of points touched we judge as to the smoothness or roughness of a body. A body having a uniformly level surface, like a billiard ball, is sinooth ; a body having points irregular in size and number ina given area is rough ; and if the points are very close together it gives rise to a sensation, like that of the pile of velvet, almost intolerable to some indivi. duals. Again, if the pressure is so uniform as not to be felt, as when the body is eaepeed in water (paradoxical as this may seem, it is the ease that the sensation of contact is felt only at the limit of the fluid), we experience the sensation of being in contact with a fluid. (6) Lastly, it would appear that touch is always the result of varia- tion of pressure. No portion of the body when touching anything can be regarded as absolutely motionless, and the slight oscillations of the sensory surface, and in many cases of the body touched, prodnce those variations of pressure on which touch depends.

Theories as to Towch.—To explain the phenomenon of the tactile field, and more especially the remarkable variations of tactile sensibility above described, various theories have been advanced, (1) The one most generally known is that of E. H. Weber, as modified or restated by Lotze, Meissner, Czermak, and others. It assumes that, whilst we refer every tactile sensation to a certain position in the tactile field, we do not refer it merely toa point, but to a circular or oval area on the skin, called a circle of sensibility. Further, it is assumed that if two such circles touch or ov erlap they

| cannot be individually perceived, and that they can only be so

individually perceived when one or more circles of sensibility inter- vene, or, in other A 6

words, when there is a ‘non-irri- tated sensory ele- ment” between the two points touched (figs. 10 and 11).

Hach circle of sensibility may be supposed to be innervated by a distinct fibre. Thus, suppose the sensitive surface of the skin to be diagrammatically represented as in figs. 10 and 11, each square would be a “ circle of sensibility.” In more sensitive regions the squares would be smaller and the number of nerve terminations greater than in less sensitive regions. In fig. 10 the area contains nine “circles” and has nine nerve terminations, whilst in fig. 11, although the total area is the same, there are thirty-six ‘‘ circles ” and thirty-six nerve filaments. If the points of the compasses be placed at a and c in fig. 10 the sensation will be that of one point ;

Fig. 10. Fig. 11. Figs. 10 and 11.—Diagrams of Tactile Innervation. (From Beaunis, Physiologie Humaine.)

| there would also be a sensation of one point if they were placed at ¢

JUL == fn

482

and ; but if the points touch ¢ and e there will be a double sensa- tion, because the “circle” d intervenes. Again, in fig. 11, where the ‘‘ circles ” are much smaller and more numerous, the minimum distance at which two sensations are experienced is much less than in fig. 10, for this would happen when the compasses touch a@ and d. It will also be observed that the same distance d e in fig. 10 would give a single sensation, whilst it would give a double sensation in fig. 11. But ce in fig. 10 gives a double sensation, and yet the same distance would give a single sensation if the points of the com- passes touched adjoining ‘‘circles.” A ‘‘circle of sensibility, ‘a however, cannot be regarded as an anatomical magnitude or ‘ cutaneous sensory unit,” or, in other words, the area of distribu- tion of a single nerve-fibre. The extent of any such hypothetical circle can be altered by practice and attention, and we may therefore assume

that the circles overlap, and that even the same area of skin receives numerous nerve fila- ments, and that consequent- ly, when a body is touched, it excites at once many fila- ments, This is illustrated / by fig. 12.

It will be seen that each area receives a certain num- ber of nerve fibres and each nerve fibre supplies fibrils that cross the fibrils of ad- joining nerves. Ifthe point of the compass touch at a, it will irritate all the fibres from 1 to 7, but these will not be excited with equal in- tensity ; the excitation will be at a maximum at 4, more feeble for 3 and 5, and still more feeble for 2 and 6; so that the intensity of the excitation may be represented by the curve above a. In this case the sensation will be that of one point, because all the fibrils have been excited. If the other point of the compass be placed at b, there will be an intermediary region not excited, and two points will be felt. Suppose now the second point of the com- passes is moved to ¢, all the fibrils between the two points a and ¢ are excited, and there is likely a sensation of single contact ; but the excitation of the fibrils 7 and 8 is very feeble, and it is possible, by attention and practice, to leave these out, and then there will be a sensation of two contacts (Beaunis). This mechanical theory has no anatomical basis, except it be the statement made by Krause that the distance of the two points of the compasses at which two points are felt includes in the mean 12 tactile corpuscles. Whilst atten- tion has been mainly directed to the skin as the locality where an anatomical explanation is to be sought for, it must not be forgotten that processes may be in operation in the nerve centres. It is well known that irradiation of nervous impulses occur in the nerve centres (see PHysroLoGy, vol. xix. p. 29), and it is not unlikely that, when a nervous impression reaches the brain from a particular area of skin, this may be diffused to neighbouring nerve-cells, exciting these, and that then the effect on these cells, in accordance with the law that sensations in nerve centres are referred to the origins in the periphery of the sensory nerve fibres reaching them, will be referred to adjoining areas of skin, or, in other words, to adjoining points in the tactile field.

Wundt has propounded a psycho-physiological theory that every part of the skin with tactile sensibility always conveys an impres- sion of the locality of the sensation, Each area of skin has a ‘local colour,” and this diminishes from area to area. The grada- tion is sudden where the sense of locality is

acute and gradual where it is obtuse. ‘A circle of sensation is an area where the local colour changes so little that two separate impressions fuse into one ” (Landois). Practice enables one to notice the changes of local colour, and thus more and more accurately to discriminate points closer and closer together. This theory does not appear to explain anything; it simply restates the phenomena for which an explana- tion is desired.

SENSATIONS OF TEMPERATURE. —The skin is not merely the seat of tactile impressions, but also of impressions of temperature. This depends on thermic irritation of the terminal organs, as proved by the following cxperiment of E. H. Weber :—‘‘If the elbow be dipped into a very cold fluid, the cold is only felt at the immersed part of the body (where the fibres terminate); pain, however, is felt in the terminal organs of the ulnar nerve, namely, in the finger points; this pain, at the same time, deadens the local sensation of cold.’”” If the sensation of cold were due to the irritation of a specific-nerve fibre, the sensation of cold would be referred to the tips of the fingers. When any part of the skin is above its normal mean temperature, warmth is felt ; in the opposite case, cold. The normal mean temperature of a given area varies according to the distribution of hot blood in it and to the activity of nutritive changes occurring in it. When the skin

s 40 ts

Fia. 12.—Diagram showing overlapping of ‘*circles of sensibility.” (From Beaunis.)

| affections of the skin.

T OU wh

is brought into contact with a good conductor of heat there isa sensation of cold. A sensation of heat is experienced when heat is carried to the skin in any way. The following are the chief facts that have been ascertained regarding the temperature sense. (1) FE. H. Weber found that, with a skin temperature of from 15°‘5 C. to 85° C., the tips of the fingers can distinguish a difference of 25° C. to ‘2° C. Temperatures just below that of the blood (33° C.- 27° C.) are distinguished by the most sensitive parts, even to ‘05° C. (2) The thermal sense varies in different regions as follows :

— tip of tongue, eyelids, cheeks, lips, neck, belly. The ‘‘perceptible minimum” was found to be, in degrees C: :—breast, *4°; back, ‘9°; back of hand, °8°; palm, °4°; arm, °2°; back of foot, °4°; thigh, *B°; leg, *6° to ‘2°; cheek, 4°; temple, ‘3°. (8) If two different teniperatures are applied side by side and simultaneously, the impressions often fuse, especially if the areas are close together. (4) Practice is said to improve the thermal sense. (5) Sensations of heat and cold may curiously alternate ; thus ‘‘ when the skin is dipped first into water at 10° C. we feel cold, and if it be then dipped into water at 16° C. we have at first a feeling of warmth, but soon again of cold” (Landois). (6) The same temperature applied to a large area is not appreciated in the same way as when applied to a small one; thus “‘the whole hand when placed in water at 29°°5 C. feels warmer than when a finger is dipped into water at 32° C,

There is every reason to hold that there are different nerve fibres and different central organs for the tactile and thermal sensations, but nothing definite is known. The one sensation undoubtedly affects the other. Thus the minimum distance at which two com- pass points are felt is diminished when one point is warmer than the other. Again, a colder weight is felt as heavier, ‘‘ so that the apparent difference of pressure becomes greater when the heavicr weight is at the same time colder, and less when the lighter weight is colder, and difference of pressure is felt with equal weights of unequal temperature” (E, H. Weber). Great sensibility to differ- ences of temperature is noticed after removal, alteration by vesi- cants, or destruction of the epidermis, and in the skin affection called herpes zoster. The same occurs in some cases of locomotor ataxy. Removal of the epidermis, as a rule, increases tactile sensibility and the sense of locality. Increased tactile sensibility is termed hyperpselaphesia, and is a rare phenomenon in nervous diseases. Paralysis of the tactile sense is called hypopselaphesia, whilst its entire loss is apselaphesia. Brown-Séquard mentions a case in which contact of two points gave rise to a sense of a third point of contact. Certain conditions of the nerve centres affect the senses both of touch and temperature. Under the influence of morphia the person may feel abnormally enlarged or diminished in size. As arule the senses are affected simultaneously, but cases occur where one may be affected more than the other. Herzen states that ‘limbs which are sleeping” feel heat and not cold (Landois).

Pain.—In addition to sensations of touch and of temperature referred to the skin, there is still a third kind of sensation unlike either, namely, pain. This sensation cannot be supposed to be excited by irritations of the end-organs of touch, or of specific thermal end-organs (if there be such), but rather to irritation of ordinary sensory nerves, and there is every reason to believe that painful impressions make their way to the brain along spinal tracks in the spinal cord. If we consider our mental condition as regards sensation at any moment, we notice numerous sensations more or less definite, not referred directly to the surface, nor to external objects, such as a feeling of general comfort, free or im- peded breathing, hunger, thirst, malaise, horror, fatigue, and pain. These are all caused by the irritation of ordinary sensory nerves in different localities, and if the irritation of such nerves, by chemical, thermal, mechanical, or nutritional stimuli, passes beyond a certain inaximum point of intensity the result is pain. Irritation of a nerve, in accordance with the law of ‘‘ peripheral reference of sensation,” will cause pain. Sometimes the irritation applied to the trunk of a sensory nerve may be so intense as to destroy its normal function, and loss of sensation or anesthesia results. If then the stimulus be increased further, pain is excited which is referred to the end of the nerve, with the result of producing what has been called anzsthesia dolorosa. Pains frequently cannot be distinctly located, probably owing to the fact of irradiation in the nerve centres and subsequent reference to areas of the body which are not really the seat of irritations. Theintensity of pain depends on the degree of excitability of the sensory nerves, whilst its mas- siveness depends on the number of nerve fibres affected. The quality of the pain is anal produced by the kind of irritation of the nerve, as affected by the structure of the part and the greater or less continuance of severe pressure. Thus there are piercing, cutting, boring, burning, throbbing, pressing, gnawing, dull, and acute varieties of pain. Sometimes the excitability of the cutaneous nerves is so great that a breath of air or a delicate touch may give rise to suffering. This hyperalgia is found in inflammatory In neuralgia the pain is characterized by its character of shooting along the course of the nerve and by

severe exacerbations, In many nervous diseases there are dis- ordered sensations referred to the skin, such as alternations of heat and cold,

burning, creeping, itehing, and a feeling as if inseets were crawling on the surface (formieation). This condition is termed paralgia. The term hypalgia is applied to a diminution and analgia to paralysis of pain, as is produced by anestheties. MuscuLar Sense.—The sensory impressions considered in this article are elosely related to the so-ealled muscular sense, or that sense or feeling by which we arc aware of the state of the muscles of a limb as regards eontraction or relaxation. Some have held that the muscular sense is really due to greater or less stretching of the skin and therefore to irritation of the nerves of that organ. That this is not the case is evident from the faet that disordered move- ments indicating perversion or loss of this sense are not affeeted by removal of the skin (Claude Bernard). Further, cases in the human being have been noticed where there was an entire loss of cutaneous sensibility whilst the muscular sense was unimpaired. It is also known that muscles possess sensory nerves, giving rise, in eertain circumstanees, to fatigue, and, when strongly irritated, to the pain of cramp. Muscular sensations are really excited by irritation of sensory nerves passing from the muscles themselves. We arc thus made conseious of whether or not the museles are eontracted, and of the amount of eontraction necessary to overcome resistanee, and this knowledge enables us to judge of the amount of voluntary im- pulse. Loss or diminution of the museular sense is seen in chorea and especially in locomotor ataxy. Increase of it is rare, but it is seen in the curious affection called anxietas tibiarum, “a painful eon- dition of unrest, whieh leads to a continual change in the position of the limbs” (Landois). See also PaysioLoay. (J. G. M.)

TOUL, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Meurthe-et-Moselle, on the left bank of the Moselle, 199 milés east of Paris by the railway to Nancy, at the point where the Marne Canal joins those of the Rhine and the East. The isolated hills of St Michel and Barine respectively rise 548 feet and 574 feet above the town, which is a stronghold of the first order, the centre of an entrenched camp protected by numerous forts and redoubts, and a link in the chain of fortifications which extends from Verdun to Belfort. The light and elegant church of St Etienne (formerly the cathedral) has a fine choir and transept, dating from the 13th century ; the nave and aisles are of the 14th, and the beautiful recently restored fagade and the towers (246 feet) of the 15th. The interior (118 feet in height, 289 in length, and 89 in width) has fine glass, a remarkable

organ-loft, and some interesting monuments. charming Gothic cloister (13th and 14th centuries) were much damaged during the Revolution. The choir and transept of St Gengoult, a fine church of the 13th century with a fagade of the 15th, contain some interesting 13th- century glass ; and the light groups of supporting columns, and the sculptures in the cloisters (first half of the 16th century), should also be mentioned. The old episcopal palace (18th century) is now used as the town-hall ; it contains the museum and library, in which is preserved the golden bull by which the emperor Charles IV. in 1367 contirmed the liberties of the city. The population, 9632 in 188], was 9981 in 1886 (commune 10,459).

Toul (Zudiwm) is one of the oldest towns of France; originally capital of the Leuei, in the Belgic eonfederation, it acquired great importanee under the Romans. It was evangelized by St Mansuy in the latter half of the 4th century, and beeame one of the leading sees of north-east Gaul. After being sacked successively by Goths, Burgtindians, Vandals, and Huns, Toul was conquered by the Franks in 450. Under the Merovingians it was governed by counts, assisted by elective officers. The bishops, who had beeome increasingly powerful, were invested with sovereign rights in the 10th century, holding only of the emperor, and for a period of 300 years (18th to 16th centuries) the citizens maintained a long struggle against them. The town was forced to yield for a time to the count of Vaudemont in the 12th eentury, and twice to the duke of Lorraine in the 15th, and was thrice devastated by the plague in the 16th, Charles V. made a solemn entry into the town in 1544, but in the following year, at the instance of the Cardinal de Lorraine, it placed itself under the perpetual protection of the kings of France. Henry II. took possession in 1552, but the town with its territory was not officially incorporated with France till 1648. Henry IV. was received in state in 1603, and in 1637 the parlement of Metz was transferredto Toul. In 1700 Vauban recon-

structed the fortifications of the town, and in 1790 the bishopric was suppressed and the diocese united to that of Nancy. Toul eapitulated in

1870, after a bombardment of twelve days from heights now inelnded in the new fortifications.

TOULON, a French fortress of the first class, chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Var, of the 5th naval arrondissement, and of a military subdivision, is situated on the Mediterranean, 42 miles east-south-east of Marseilles by the railway to Nice. The bay, which opens to the east, has two divisions, the “grand rade” and the “petite rade”; it is sheltered on the north and west by high hills, closed on the south by the peninsula of Capes Sicié and Cépet, and protected on the east by a huge

fl Bare d Detite Rade la Seyne (

Scale of English Mile

Environs of Toulon.

break water,—the entrance, 1300 feet wide, being defensible by torpedoes. A ship coming from the open sea must first pass the forts of St Marguerite, of Cape Brun, of La Malgue, and of St Louis to the north, and the battery of the signal station to the south; before reaching the petite rade it must further pass under the guns of the battery of Le Salut to the east, and of the forts of Balaguier and L’Eguillette to the west. The Bay of La Seyne lies west of the petite rade, and is defended by the forts of Les Six-Fours, Napoleon (formerly Fort Cairo), and Malbous- quet, and the batteries of Les Arénes and Les Gaus. To the north of Toulon rise the defensive works of Mont Faron and Fort Rouge, to the east the forts of Artigues and St Catherine, to the north-east the formidable new fort of Le Coudon, and to the south-east that of La Colle Noire, respectively dominating the highway into Italy and the valley of Hyéres with the Bay of Carqueyranne. The port of Toulon consists of the old dock, of which one-third is reserved for the national navy, a new dock, wholly so devoted, a harbour capable of receiving trading vessels drawing from 16 to 18 feet, but only used for car- goes of wood and wine, and the Castigneau dock. The naval arsenal (including the arsenal of Castigneau, which is contiguous with it, in the direction of La Seyne) extends over 4 miles, has an area of 667 acres, and employs from 12,000 to 13,000 men. It contains the offices connected with the administration of the port, the office of naval construction, a well-stored naval museum, and a

great variety of workshops. These last include a rope-work 1050 × 66 feet, covered building yards, careening basins, forges, armourers' and joiners' shops, general magazines, recoustructed ona fireproof principle since the conflagra-

tion of 1793, in which are stored all materials required in the arsenal and on board ship, a park of artillery, a splendid collection of arms, and separate storehouses for various classes of rigging. The Castigneau arsenal con- tains the navy bakery of twenty ovens, capable of cooking 600,000 rations daily, the foundry and_boiler-making works, engineers' workshops, forges, three large careening basins, a washing house, a slaughter house, stores of pro- visions, coals, anchors and machinery, and the like. The Mourillon arsenal, to the south-east of the town, has stores of wood, building yards, and appliances for naval con- struction in wood and iron. The town, enlarged to the north under the second empire, has on that side a fine new quarter; but in the old town the streets are for the most part narrow, crooked, and dirty, and to their insanitary state the cholera epidemic of 1884 has been attributed. The chief buildings are the old cathedral of St Marie Majeure, the church of St Louis, the town-hall, the theatre (seating 2000 persons), the museum, the library (18,000 volumes), the naval and military hospital, with a natural history collection and an anatomical museum attached, a naval school of medicine, a school of hydrography, and large barracks. The imports are wine (2,470,000 gallons in 1881), corn, wood, coal, hemp, iron, sugar, coffee, and fresh fish; the exports are salt, copper ore, barks for tanning, and oils. In 1882 the movement of the port was represented by 280 vessels (41,000 tons). The in- teresting buildings and gardens of the hospital of St Mandrier stand on the peninsula of Cape Cépet, and near them is the lazaretto. In 1881 the population of Toulon was 48,832, and in 1886 it was 53,941, exclusive of 12,487 soldiers, sailors, &c. (commune 70,122).

The Roman Telo Martius is supposed to have stood near the lazaretto. The town was successively sacked by Goths, Burgun- dians, Franks, and Saracens. During the early Middle Ages, and till conquered by Charles of Anjou in 1259, it was under lords of its own, and entered into alliance with the republics of Marseilles and Arles. St Louis, Louis XII., and Franeis I.

strengthened its fortifications. It was seized by the emperor Charles V. in 1524 and 1536. Henry IV. founded a naval arsenal at Toulon, which was further strengthened by Richelieu, and Vauban made the new doek, a new eneeinte, and several forts and batteries. In 1707 the town was unsuccessfully besieged by the duke of Savoy, Prince Eugene, and an English fleet. In 1721 there was an outbreak of the plague. In 1792, after great and sanguinary disorder, the royalists of the town sought the support of the English and Spanish fleets eruising in the neighbourhood. The eonvention having replied by putting the town ‘‘ hors la loi,” the inhabitants opened their harbour to the English. The army of the republic now laid siege to the town, and it was on this oecasion that Napoleon Bona- parte first made his name as a soldier. The forts eommanding the town having been taken, the English ships retired after setting fire tothearsenal. Theconflagration was extinguished by the prisoners, but not before 38 out of a total of 56 vessels had been destroyed. Under the Directory Toulon became the most important French mili- tary fort on the Mediterranean ; it was here that Napoleon organized the Egyptian campaign, and the expedition against Algiers set out from Toulon in 1830. The fortifications have been strengthened by Napoleon I., Louis Philippe, Napoleon III., and since 1870.

TOULOUSE, chef-lieu of the French department of Haute-Garonne, 478 miles south from Paris and 160 south- east from Bordeaux, stands on the right bank of the Garonne, which here describes a bold outward curve to the east. On the left bank is the Faubourg St Cyprien. The river is spanned by three bridges, —that of St Pierre to the north, that of St Michel towards the south, and tlie Pont Neuf in the centre ; the last-named, a fine construction of seven arches, was begun in 1543. The city is peculiarly subject to great floods, such as that of 1855, which de- stroyed the suspension bridge of St Pierre, or the still more disastrous one of June 1875, which, besides carrying away that of St Michel, laid the Faubourg St Cyprien under water, destroyed 7000 houses, and drowned 300 people. East and north of the city runs the great Canal du Midi (from the Mediterranean), which here joins the Garonne.

Between this canal and the city proper extends the long line of boulevards (Boulevards Lacrosses, d’Arcole, du 22 Sen- tembre, é&c.) leading by the

Allée St Etienne to the Boulid- grin, whence a series of allées shoot out in all directions. South-west the Allée St Michel leads towards the Garonne, and south the Grande Allée towards the Faubourg St Michel. These boulevards take the place of the old city walls. Between them and the canal lie the more modern

WARD 87 PIERRE

mA

Plan of Toulouse.

The more ancient part of the city consists of narrow irregu- lar pebble-paved streets. Most of the houses are of brick, and none of any great architectural pretensions, except those which date back at least to the 17th century. In 1868 the municipal authorities determined to construct two entirely new streets, broad and straight, intended to cut one another at right angles near the centre of the city. Of these the first, the Rue de Metz, starts eastward from the Pont Neuf, and will ultimately intersect the Rue d'Alsace- Lorraine running from north to south. These alterations, however, go on very slowly. The Place du Capitole may be regarded as the centre, whence streets branch out in every direction. Eastward and north-east the Rue La Fayette leads across the boulevards towards the Allée La Fayette, beyond which, across the Canal du Midi, are the Kole Vétérinaire and the railway station, and still farther off the obelisk erected to commemorate the battle of Toulouse (April 10, 1814), and the observatory. From the north-west of the Place du Capitole the Rue du Taur runs due north past the ancient Eglise du Taur to the great Kglise St Sernin, the largest and most famous church of southern France. From the north-west corner of the same Place the Rue des Lois conducts towards the Ecole de Droit and the arsenal. Ina more westerly direction the Rue Pargamin- iére stretches towards the venerable church and the bridge of St Peter From the south-west corner the Rue des Balances extends towards the Rue de Metz and the Pont Neuf. From the south the Rue St Rome, Rue des Changes, and Rue des Filatiers lead to the Place des Carmes or de la République ; while from the south-east corner the Rue de la Pomme and the Rue Boulbonne lead across the Rue d'Alsace-Lorraine to the cathedral of St Stephen. In the

south of the city lies the palais de justice, near which are the ancient church.of the Inquisition and several of the finest houses in Toulouse. Going northwards, the traveller passes the Eglise de la Dalbade on his way towards the Pont Neuf, immediately to the north of which is the Eglise de la Daurade. North of this church, but somewhat farther from the river, is the military hospital, to the immediate east of which lie the lycée, the church of the Jacobins, and the public library. South-east from this, about half- way towards the cathedral, is the museum. North of the military hospital and beyond the Rue Pargaminiére lie the arsenal and the Faubourg St Pierre. Slightly to the north- west of the Pont St Pierre the Canal de Brienne (finished 1778) cuts across the angle formed hy the Garonne and Canal du Midi. Between the Canal de Brienne and the Garonne is the chief manufacturing part of the city, where the great Bazacle flour-mill stands. Along the right bank of the river run the various quays of St Pierre, &e. In the Faubourg St Cyprien, just north of the Pont Neuf, is the Hotel Dieu St Jacques, said to have been founded before the 12th century, with its large gardens. Close to the Pont St Pierre is the hospital of St Joseph de la Grave, which makes up 1432 beds, and affords shelter to found- lings and the aged. South of the Allée St Michel is the Jardin des Plantes, founded by the ill-fated La Pérouse. The most interesting building is the church of St Sernin or Saturninus, whom legend represents as the first preacher of the gospel in Toulouse, where he was perhaps martyred towards the middle of the 3d century. The oldest part of the present building was consecrated by Urban II. in 1096. This church is now the largest edifice of southern France, being 375 feet from east to west and 217 feet in its utmost breadth. The nave (12th and 13th cen- turies) is remarkable for having double aisles. Four pillars, sup- porting the central tower, are surrounded by heavy masonry, which somewhat spoils the general harmony of the interior. In the southern transept is the “ portail des comtes,” so named because hear it lie the tombs of William Taillefer, Pons, and other early counts of Toulouse. The little chapel in which these tombs (as- cribed to the 11th century) are found was restored by the capitols of Toulouse in 1648. Another chapel contains a Byzantine Christ of late 11th-century workmanship. The choir (11th and

12th cen- turies) ends in an apse, or rather chevet, surrounded by a range of columns, marking off an aisle which in its turn opens into five chapels. The stalls are of 16th-century work and very grotesquely carved. Against the northern wall is an ancient table d'autel, which an 11th-century inscription declares to have belonged to St Sernin. In the crypts are many relics, which, however, were robbed of their gold and silver shrines during the Revolution. 'he finest gate is on the south, and is surmounted by a fine representation of the Ascension in Byzantine style. The capitals of the St Sernin pillars are sometimes ornamented with leaves and sometimes with grot- esque animals, &c. The belfry consists of five stories, of which the two highest are of later date, but harmonize very well with the three lower ones. The cathedral, dedicated to St Stephen, datcs from three different epochs. The nave, commenced by Raymond VI. towards the beginning of the 13th century, still displays the sculptured arms of its founder, and a few years ago preserved the pulpit in which St Bernard and St Dominic are said to have preached. The choir, commenced by Bertrand de Lille (c. 1272), was burned in 1609, but restored in the same century. It is sur- rounded by seventeen chapels, which were finished by the Cardinal d'Orléans, nephew of Louis XI , towards the beginning of the 16th century. These chapels are adorned with glass dating from the 15th to the 17th century. The great western gate was constructed by Peter du Moulin, archbishop of Toulouse, from 1439 to 1451. It has been greatly battered, and presents but a poor approximation to its ancient beauty. Over this grand gate, which was once ornamented with the statues of St Sernin, St Exuperius, and the twelve apostles, as well as those of the two brother archbishops of Toulouse, Denis (1423-1439) and Peter du Moulin, there is a beauti- ful 13th-century rose-window, whose centre, however, is not in a perpendicular line with the point of the Gothic arch below. In the same way the choir and the nave have not the same axis. Among other remarkable churches may be noticed those of St Pierre des Cuisines (12th century), with its beautifully sculptured eapitals; of Notre Dame de la Daurade, near the Pont Neuf, built on the site of a 9th-century Benedictine abbey, but reconstructed in 1764; and of Notre Dame de la Dalbade, perhaps existing in the 11th century but in its present form dating from the 15th. The Eglise des Jacobins, held by Viollet le Duc to be 'one of the most beautiful brick churches constructed in the Middle Ages,"

was built towards the end of the 13th century, and originally con- sisted of but one structure divided into two aisles by a range of columns. It has a beautiful octagonal belfry. Before the Revolu- tion it contained the mausoleum of Thomas Aquinas. On the left of the Garonne stands the church of St Nicholas, also with an octa- gonal belfry and a spire dating from the 15th century. There are many other churches of considerable antiquity.

Of secular buildings the most noteworthy are the capitole, the museum, and the lycee. The capitole (16th-17th centuries) has a long Ionic fagade constructed by Cammas (1750-60). The theatre is situated in the left wing. Running along almost the whole length of the first floor is the ‘‘ salle des illustres” adorned with the busts of forty-four great natives of Toulouse; the word “native” has, however, been construed very liberally. In the capitole the Académie des Jeux Floraux holds its annual meetings. Themuseum (opened 1795) occupies the church and other buildings of the Augus- timian convent (14th-15th cent.). It contains a splendid collection of antiquities arranged in two cloisters, and a collection of pictures, The natural history museum is at the Jardin des Plantes. ‘The lycée occupies the group of buildings known as ‘‘Les Jacobins,” the Hotel Bernui (16th century), &c. Here is the public library (65,000 volumes).

Toulouse is singularly rich in mansions of the 16th and 17th centuries. Several of these are richly adorned by Bachelier, Michel- angelo’s pupil. The Hétels d’Assezat, de St Jean, Las Bordes, Fel- zins, Duranti, and Maison de Pierre may be specially mentioned. A few houses are said to date from the 14th century or even earlier. Near the Allée St Michel is the palais de justice, the old meeting house of the parlement of Toulouse. Close by was the old Chateau Narbonnais.

Besides its university, which ranks next to those of Paris and Lyons, and has faculties of law, science, letters, and medicine, Toulouse possesses many educational and learned societies, among which may be mentioned the Ecole des Beaux Arts et des Sciences Industrielles, the Ecole Normale, the Ecole de Musique, the Aca- démies des Jeux Floraux, des Sciences et des

Belles Lettres et Arts, and de Législation, the Société d'Agriculture, and the archeological Société du Midi.

The geographical position of Toulouse, on the plain of Languedoc, has made it the chief entrepét of the district for wine, corn, and almost all the industries of the neighbourhood. Besides the grind- ing of flour, its leading industries are cabinetmaking, hat-making, calico printing, the manufacture of pots and pans, macaroni, and starch, leather-making (morocco), cloth and paper making, glass- blowing, saddlery, and pottery. The tobacco factory occupies 1250 hands, and manufactures 1000 tons of snuff, a corresponding quantity of tobacco, and 250 tons of cigars annually.

The population of the city, 127,196 in 1881, numbered 133,775 in 1886, that of the commune being 147,617.

Tolosa (ToAéoca), chief town of the Volee Tectosages, does uot seem to have been a place of great importance during the early centuries of the Roman rule in Gaul, though one incident in its early history gave rise to the famous Latin proverb ‘‘ habet aurum Tolosanum” (Aul. Gell., iii. c. 12). It was possessed of a circus and an amphitheatre, but its most remarkable remains are to be found on the heights of Old Toulouse (vetus Tolosa) some 6 or 7 miles to the east, where huge accumulations of broken pottery and fragments of an old earthen wall mark the site of an ancient settlement. The numerous coins that have been discovered on the same spot do not date back farther than the 2d century B.c., and seem to indicate the position of a Roman manufacturing centre then beginning to occupy the Gallie hill-fortress that, in earlier days, had in times of peril been the stronghold of the native tribes dwelling on the river bank. Tolosa does not seem to have been a Roman colony; but its importance must have increased greatly towards the middle of the 4th century. Itis to be found entered in more than one itinerary dating from about this time; and Auson- ius, in his Ordo Nobilium Urbium, alludes to it in terms implying thatit then hada large population. In 419 it was taken by Wallia, king of the Visigoths, under whom or whose successors it became the seat of the great Teutonic kingdom of the West-Goths, —a king- dom that within fifty years had extended itself from the Loire to Gibraltar and from the Rhone to the Atlantic. On the defeat of Alaric II. (507) Toulouse fell into the hands of Clovis, who carried away the

royal treasures to Angouléme. Under the Merovingian kings it seems to have remained the greatest city of southern Gaul, and is said to have been governed by dukes or counts dependent on one or other of the rival kings descended from the great founder of the Frankish monarchy. It figures prominently in the pages of Gregory of Tours and Sidonius Apollinaris. About 628 Dagobert erected South Aquitaine into a kingdom for his brother Charibert, who chose Toulouse as his capital. For the next cighty years its history is obscure, till we reach the days of Charles Martel, when it was besieged by Seina, the leader of the Saracens from Spain (ec. 715-20), but delivered by Eudo, ‘‘princeps Aquitaniz,” in whom later writers discovered the ancestor of all the later counts of Toul- ouse. Modern criticism, however, has discredited this genealogy ;

and the real history of Toulouse recommences in 780 or 781, when Charlemagne appointed his littie son Louis king of Aquitaine, with Toulouse for his chief city.

During the minority of the young king his tutor Chorson ruled at Toulouse with the title of duke or count. Being deposed at the eouncil of Worms (790), he was succeeded by William Courtnez, the traditional hero of southern Franee, who in 806 retired to his newly founded monastery at Gellone, where he died in 812, In the un- happy days of Louis the Pious and his children Toulouse suffered in common with the rest of western Europe. It was besicged by Charles the Bald in 844, and taken four years later by the Normans, who in 848 had sailed up the Garonne as far as its walls. About 852 Raymond I., eount of Querci, succeeded his brother Fridolo as count of Rouergue and Toulouse; it is from this uoble that all the later counts of Toulouse trace their deseent. Raymond I.’s grandchildren divided their parent’s estates; of these Raymond IL, the elder (d. 924), became eount of Toulouse, and Ermengaud, the younger, count of Rouergue, while the hereditary titles of Gothia, Querei, and Albi were shared between them. Raymond II. ’s grand- son, William Taillefer (d. c. 1037), married Emma of Provence, and handed down part of that lordship to his younger son Bertrand.! William’s elder son Pons left two children, of whom William IV. sueceeded his father in Toulouse, Albi, Querci, &c.; while the younger,

Raymond IV. of St Gilles (c. 1066), made himself master of the vast possessions of the counts of Rouergue, married his eousin the heiress of Provence, and about 1085 began to rule the immense estates of his elder brother, who was still living.

From this time the counts of Toulouse were the greatest lords in sonthern France. Raymond IV., the hero of the first crusade, assumed the formal titles of marquis of Provence, duke of Nar- bonne, and count of Toulouse. While Raymond was away in the Holy Land, Toulouse was seized by William IX., duke of Aquitaine, who claimed the city in right of his wife Philippa, the daughter of William IV., but was unable to hold it long (1098-1100). Raymond's son and successor Bertrand followed his father's exaniple and set out for the Holy Land in 1109, leaving his great estates at his death to his brother Alphonsc-Jourdain. The rule of this prince was disturbed by the ambition of William IX. and his grand- daughter Eleanor, who urged her husband Louis VII. to support her claims to Toulouse by war. On her divorce from Louis and her marriage with Henry II., Eleanor's claims passed on to this monarch, who at last forced Raymond V. to do him homage for Toulouse in 1178. Raymond V., the patron of the troubadours, died in 1194, and was succeeded by his son Raymond VI., under whose rule Languedoc was desolated by the remorseless crusaders of Simon de Montfort. Raymond VII., the son of Raymond VI. and Princess Joan of England, succeeded his father in 1222, and died in 1249, leaving an only daughter Joan, married to Alfonso the brother of Louis IX. On the death of Alfonso and Joan in 1271 the vast inheritance of the eounts of Toulouse lapsed to the crown.?

From the middle years of the 12th century the people of Toulouse seem to have begun to free themselves from the most oppressive feudal dues. An act of Alphonse-Jourdain (1141) exempts them from the tax on salt and wine; and in 1152 we have traces of a "commune consilium Tolose" making police ordinances in its own name " with the advice of Lord Raymond, count of Toulouse, duke of Narbonne, and marquis of Provence." This act is witnessed by six ''capitularii," four duly appointed judges (judices constituti), and two advocates. Twenty-three years later there are twelve eapitularii or consuls, six for the city and six for its suburbs, all of them elected and sworn to do justiee in whatever municipal matters were brought

before them. In 1222 their number was increased to twenty-four; but they were forbidden to touch the city property, which was to remain in the eharge of certain “commun- arli” chosen by themselves. Early in the 14th century the consuls took the name of ‘‘domini de capitulo,” or, a little later, that of ‘‘capitulum nobilium.” From the 13th century the consuls met in their own house, the ‘‘palatium commmunitatis Tolose ” or hétel- de-ville. In the 16th century a false derivation changed the ancient consuls (domint de capitulo) into the modern “‘ capitouls ” (domini capitolit Tolosant), a barbarous etymology which in its turn has, in the present eentury, transformed the old assembly house of Toulouse into the capitole.

_ The parlement of Toulouse was established as a permanent court in 1448. Louis XI. transferred it to Montpellier in 1467, but restored it to Toulouse before the close of the next year. This

1 About 975 there was a partition of the estates which William Taillefer and his cousin Raymond I1. of Auvergne held in common,—Albi, Querci, &c., falling to William, and Gothia, &c., to Raymond.

2 List of the counts of Toulouse, mainly from De Vic and Vaissete :—

Chorson…....00+. 778-790 | Raymond II.. 918-924 | Bertrand…..... 1096-1109 SWiilliainitece…:. seco 790-806 | Raymond Ill. 924-c.950 | Alphonse-Jour-

eertes | Garsende, for GAIN ee cscees ss 1109-1148 Berenger sees 817-835 herson:.-... c.950-c. 975 | Raymond V…. 1148-1194 Ecfrid Lace . 835-845 | William Tail- Raymond VI… 1194-1222 Fridolo… . 845-852 1Gfereeesr.se: c.975-c.1037 | Raymond VII. 1222-1249 Raymond f…..... 852-864 | Pons…...-..00 1037-1060 | Alfonso and Bernard COURSED 864-875 | William IV… 1060-c.1093 ORM sc. cose.c08 1249-1271 WO se icncesesessses 875-918 | Raymond IV. 1093-1105

TOU—

TOU

parlement was for Languedoc and southern France what the parle- ment of Paris was for the north. Towards the end of the 16th cen- tury, during the wars of the League, it was split up into three different sections, sitting respectively at Carcassonne or Beziers, at Castel Sarrasin, and at Toulouse. The three were reunited in 1596. Under Francis I. it began to perseeute heretics, and in 1618 rendered itself notorious by burning the philosopher Vanini. The univer- sity of Toulouse owes its origin to the action of Gregory IX., who in 1229 bound Raymond VII. to maintain four masters to teaeh theology and eight others for canon law, grammar, and the liberal arts. Civil law and medicine were taught only a few years later. The famous ‘‘ Floral Games” of Toulouse, in which the poets of Languedoc contended (May 1-3) for the prize of the golden violet and other gold or silver flowers, given at the expense of the city, were instituted in 1323-24.

See, besides the various guide-books, De Vie and Vaissete, Histotre de Lan- guedoc, ed. 1878 sq.; Catel, Histoire de Toulouse, 1623; La Faille, Histoire de Toul- ouse, 1687, 1701; Du Mége, Histoire des Institutions de Toulouse, 4 vols., 1844— 46; D’Aldeguier, Histotre de la Ville de Toulouse, 1833-35, (T. A. -A.)

TOUNG-NGU, a district in the extreme north of the Tenasserim division of Burmah, with an area of 6354 square miles, and lying between 17° 37’ and 19° 28’ N. lat., and between 95° 53’ and 96° 53’ E. long. It is bounded on the N. by Upper Burmah, on the E. by a high mountain range known as the “Great Watershed,” on the S. by Shwe-gyeng district, and on the W. by the Pegu Yomas. Three mountain ranges traverse the district—the Pegu Yomas, the Poung-loung, and the Nat-toung or “Great Watershed,”—all of which have a north and south direc- tion, and are covered for the most part with dense forest. The Pegu Yomas have a general elevation of from 800 to 1200 feet, while the central range averages from 2000 to 3000 feet. The rest of Toung-ngt forms the upper portion of the valley of the Tsit-toung (Sittang) river, the only large river in the district, the chief tributaries of which are the Tshwa, Khaboung, Hpyu, Thouk-re-gat, and Rouk- thwa-wa, all being navigable for a great portion of their course. Limestone appears in various places, and in the north-east a light grey marble is quarried for lime. The rivers form the chief means of communication during the rainy season. Of

late years some good roads have been constructed, and the Burmah State Railway, when com- pleted, will intersect the district from south to north.

In 1881 the population numbered 128,848 (males 68,484, females 60,364), of whom 93,997 were Buddhists, 17,448 Christians, 2086 Hindus, 1962 Mohammedans, and 12,612 aborigines. The only town in the district is Toung-ngt, on the Tsit-toung river in 18° 55’ 24” N. lat. and 96° 31’ 4” E. long., with a population of 17,199 in 1881. Of the total area only 59 square miles are actually under cultivation, owing mainly to the hilly nature of the country. Rice is the chief produet; other crops include oil-seeds, sugar-cane, cotton, fruit, and vegetables. The principal manufactures are silk, saltpetre, and gunpowder. In 1885-86 the gross value of the district was £15,098, of which the land produced £5880.

TOUR, Maurice QUENTIN DE LA (1704-1788), the renowned pastellist, was born at St Quentin on the 5th September 1704. On leaving Picardy for Paris he entered the studio of an artist nanied Du Pouclie, and then that of Spoéde,—an upright man, but a poor inaster, rector of the Academy of St Luke, who still continued, in the teeth of the Royal Academy, the traditions of the old guild of the master-painters of Paris. This possibly contributed to the adoption by De la Tour of a line of work foreign to that imposed by an academical training ; for pastels, though occasionally used, were not a principal and distinct branch of work until 1720, when Rosalba Carriera brought them into fashion with the Parisian world. In 1737 De la Tour exhibited the first of that splendid series of a hundred and fifty portraits which formed the glory of the Salon for the succeeding thirty-seven years. In 1746 he was received by the Academy; and in 1751, the following year to that in which he received the title of painter to the king, he was promoted by that body to the grade of councillor. His work had the rare merit to satisfy at once both the taste of his fashionable models and the judgment of his brother artists. His art, consummate of its kind, achieved

the task of flattering his sitters, whilst hiding that flattery behind the just and striking likeness which, says Mariette, he hardly ever missed. His portraits of Rousseau, of Voltaire, of Louis XV., of his queen, of the dauphin and dauphiness, are at once documents and masterpieces un-

surpassed except by his life-size portrait of Madame de Pompadour, which, exhibited at the Salon of 1755, is still the chief ornament of the cabinet of pastels in the Louvre. It is and will probably always be the most perfect model of this class of work as long as time and damp spare the fragile dust to which it owes its beauty. The museum of St Quentin, however, also possesses a magnificent collection of works which at his death were in his own hands. De la Tour retired to St Quentin at the age of 80, and there he died on 17th February 1788. The riches amassed dur- ing his long life were freely bestowed by him in great part before his death ; he founded prizes at the school of fine arts in Paris and for the town of Amiens, and endowed St Quentin with a great number of useful and charitable institutions. He never married, but lived on terms of warm affection with his brother (who survived him, and left to the town the drawings now in the museum) ; and his relations to Mdlle. Fel, the celebrated singer, were dis- tinguished by a strength and depth of feeling not common to the loves of the 18th century.

Sec, in addition to the general works on French art, Desmaze, three works, of which the most important is Le Reliquaire de la Tour; Guiffrey and Tourneux, Correspondance Inédite de M. Q. de la Tour; Champfleury, De la Tour, and Peintres de Laon et de St Quentin; and Dréolle de Nodon, Eloge Biographique de M. Q. de la Tour.

TOURACO, the name, evidently already in use, under which in 1743 Edwards figured a pretty African bird,} and presumably that applied to it in Guinea, whence it had been brought alive. It is the Cuculus persa of Lin-

; Ba \ v = Pd iy White-Crested Touraco (Turacus albicristatus). After Schlegel.

neus, and 7’wracus or Corythaix persa of later authors, who perceived that it required generic separation. Cuvier, in 1799 or 1800, Latinized its native name (adopted in the meanwhile by both French and German writers) as above, for which barbarous term Illiger, in 1811, substituted a

1 Apparently the first ornithologist to make the bird known was Albin, who figured it in 1788 from the life, yet badly, as ‘‘ The Crown- bird of Mexico.” He had doubtless been misinformed as to its proper country; but Touracos were called ‘‘ Crown-birds”’ by the Europeans in West Africa, as

witness Bosman’s Description of the Coast of Guinea (1721), ed. 2, p. 251, and W. Smith’s Voyage to Guinea (1745), p. 149, though the name was also given to the Crowned Cranes, Balearica.

more classical word. In 1788 Isert described and figured (Beobacht. Gesellsch. naturf. Freunde, iii. pp. 16-20, pl. 1) a bird, also from Guinea, which he called Musophaga violacea. Its affinity to the original Touraco was soon re- cognized, and both forms have been joined by modern sys- tematists in the Family Musophagide, commonly Englished Plantain-eaters or Touracos, sometimes spelt Tourakoos.

To take first the Plantain-eaters proper, or the genus Musophaga, of which only two species are known. Oue about the size of a Crow is comparatively common in museums, and is readily recog- nized by having the horny base of its fine yellow bill prolonged backwards over the forehead in a kind of shield. The top of the head, and the primaries, except their outer edge and tip, are deep crimson ; a white streak extends behind the eye; and the rest of the plumage is of a rich glossy purple. The second species, MV. ross&, Which is rare, chiefly differs by wanting the white eye-streak, Then of the Touracos—the species originally described is about the size of a Jay, and has the head, crest (which is vertically com- pressed and tipped with red), neck, and breast of a fine grass-green, varied by two conspicuous white streaks—one, from the gape to the upper part of the crimson orbit, separated by a black patch from the other, which runs beneath and behind the eye. The wing- coverts, lower part of the back, and tail are of a bright steel-purple, the primaries deep crimson, edged and tipped with bluish-black. Over a dozen other congeneric species, more or less resembling this, have now been described, and all inhabit some district of Africa; but there is only room here to mention that found in the Cape Colony and Natal, where it is known as the ‘‘ Lory” (ef. vol. xv. p. 7, note 1), and, though figured by Daubenton and others, first differentiated in 1841 by Strickland (Ann, Nat. History, vii. p. 33) as Turacus albicristatus—its crest having a conspicuous white border, while the steel-purple of 7’. persa is replaced by a rich and glossy bluish-green of no less beauty. In nearly all the species of this genus the nostrils are almost completely hidden by the frontal feathers;

but there are two others in which, though closely allied, this is not the case, and some systematists wonld place them in a separate genus Gallirex; while another species, the giant of the Family, has been moved into a third genus as Corythgola cristata. This differs from any of the foregoing by the absence of the crimson coloration of the primaries, and seems to lead to another group, Schizorrhis, in which the plumage is of a still plainer type, and, moreover, the nostrils here are not only exposed but in the form of a slit, instead of being oval as in all the rest. This genus contains about half a dozen species, one of which, S. concolor, is the Grey Touraco of the colonists in Natal, and is of an almost uniform slaty- brown. A good deal has been written about these birds, which form the subject of one of the most beautiful monographs ever published —De Tocrako'‘s afgebeld en beschreven,—by Schlegel and Westerman, brought out at Amsterdam in 1860; while the latest collected information is contained in an elaborate cssay by Herr Schalow (Jour. f. Ornithologie, 1886, pp. 1-77). Still, much remains to be made known as to their distribution throughout Africa, and their habits. They seem to be all fruit-eaters, and to frequent the highest trees, seldom coming to the ground. Very little can be confidently asserted as to their nidification, but at least one species of Schizorrhis is said to make a rough nest and therein lay three eggs of a pale blue colour. An extraordinary peculiarity attends the crimson coloration which adorns the primarics of so many of the Musophagide. So long ago as 1818, Jules Verreaux observed (Proc. Zool. Society, 1871, p. 40) that in the case of 7'. albicristatus this beautiful hue vanishes on exposure to heavy rain and reappears only after some interval of time and when the feathers are dry.?

The Musophagide form a very distinct Family of Prof. Huxley's Coccygomorphx, having perhaps the Colidex and Cuculide as their nearest allies. Eyton pointed out (Ann. Nat. History, ser. 3, ii. p. 458) a feature possessed in common by the latter and the Musophagidz, in the ‘‘ process attached to the anterior edge of the ischium," which he likened to the so-called ‘“ marsupial" bones of Didelphian Mammals. J. T. Reinhardt has also noticed (Vidensk. Meddels. Naturhist. Forening, 1871, pp. 326-341) another Cuculine character offered by the os uncinatum affixed

2 The fact of this colouring matter being soluble in water was inci- dentally mentioned at a meeting of the Zoological Society by Mr Tegetmeier, and

brought to the notice of Prof. Church, who, after experiment, published in 1868 (Student and Intellectual Observer, i. pp. 161-168) an account of it as “ Tnracin, a new animal pigment con- taining copper.” Further information on the subject was given by Monteiro (Chem. News, xxviii. p. 201; Quart. Jour. Science, ser. 2, iv. p. 132). The property is possessed by the crimson feathers of all the Lirds of the Family.

to the lower side of the ethmoid in the Plantain-eaters and Touracos; but too much dependence must not be placed on that, since a similar structure is presented by the FRicaTs-BirD (vol. ix. p. 786) and the Perrexs (vol. xviii. p. 711). A corresponding process seems also to be found in TroGon (q.v.). The bill of nearly all the species of Musophayidx is curiously serrated or denticulated along the margin, and the feet have the outer toe reversible. No inember of the Family is found outside of the conti- nental portion of the Ethiopian Region. (A. N.)

TOURCOING, a manufacturing town of France in the department of Nord, 7 miles north-east of Lille on the railway to Ghent, is rapidly becoming one with the neigh- bouring town of Rovupaix (q.v.). Wool, cotton, linen, and silk are spun in more than 65 mills (40,000 spindles) ; there are upwards of 25 combing establishments (by machine and hand), 50 to 55 manufactories of velvet-pile carpets, furniture stuffs, and all kinds of woven goods, be- sides dye-works, soap-works, a sugar refinery, and machine workshops. The total industrial production of Tourcoing may be set down at about £6,800,000 per annum. Tour- coing possesses a chamber of commerce, a conseil de prud- hommes, a consultative chamber of arts and manufactures, a wool ‘‘conditioning” bureau, schools of drawing, paint- ing, music, and architecture, and a horticultural society. In 1866,a pyramid was erected to commemorate a battle gained by Jourdan and Moreau in the neighbourhood in 1794. The population, 34,415 in 1881, was 41,570 in 1886 (commune 58,008).

Famed since the 14th century for its woollen manufactures, Tourcoing was fortified by the Flemings when Louis XI. of France disputed the inheritance of Charlesthe Bold with Mary of Burgundy. The town suffered much from the French in 1477, from the Huguenots in 1556, aud by fire in 1607 and

1711. The inhabitants, 18,000 in 1789, were reduced by the French Revolution to 10,000, but a new era of prosperity hegan in 1832. In 1801 the popula- tion of the commune was 23,493, and in 1871 it was 43,322.

TOURGUENTEFYF, Ivan (1818-1883), the descendant of an old Russian fainily, was born at Orel, in the govern- ment of the same name, in 1818. His father, the colonel of a cavalry regiment, died when our author was sixteen years of age, leaving two sons, Nicholas and Ivan, who were brought up under the care of their mother, the heiress of the Litvinoffs, a lady who owned large estates and many serfs. Ivan studied for a year at the university of Mos- cow, then at St Petersburg, and was finally sent in 1843 to Berlin. His education at home had been conducted by German and French tutors, and was altogether foreign, his mother only speaking Russian to her servants, as became a great lady of the old school. For his first acquaintance with the literature of his country the future novelist was indebted to a serf of the family, who used to read to him verses from the Rossiad of Kheraskoff, a once-celebrated poet of last century. Tourguenieff's early attempts in literature, consisting of poems and trifling sketches, may be passed over here ; they were not with- out indications of genius, and were favourably spoken of by Bielinski, then the leading Russian critic, for whom Tourguenieff ever cherished a warm regard. Our author first made a name by his striking sketches "'The Papers of a Sportsman " (Zapiski Okhotnika), in which the miser- able condition of the peasants was described with startling realism. The work appeared in a collected form in 1852. It was read by all classes, including the emperor himself, and it undoubtedly hurried on the great work of eman- cipation. Tourguenieff had always sympathized with the

muzhiks; he had often been witness of the cruelties

of his mother, a narrow-minded and vindictive woman. Ta some interesting papers recently contributed to the "European Messenger " (Viestnik Evropt) by a lady brought up in the household of Mme Tourguenieff, sad

details are given illustrative of her character. Thus the dumb porter of gigantic stature, drawn with such power in Afumu, one of our author's later

sketches, was a real person. We are, moreover, told of his mother that she could never understand how it was that her son became an author, and thought that he had degraded himself. How could a Tourguenieff submit himself to be criticized ?

The next production of the novelist was “A Nest of Nobles” (Deorianskoe Gniezdo), a singularly pathetic story, which greatly increased his reputation. This ap- peared in 1859, and was followed the next year by “On the live ” (Nakanuné),—a tale which contains one of his most beautiful female characters, Helen. In 1862 was published “ Fathers and Children ” (Otzi ¢ Dieti), in which the author admirably described the nihilistic doctrines then beginning to spread in Russia, he himself inventing the word nihilism, which seems likely to become permanent. In 1867 appeared “Smoke” (Dim), and in 1877 his last work of any length, “Virgin Soil” (Nov). Besides his longer stories, many shorter ones were produced, some of great beauty and full of subtile psychological analysis, such as Rudin, “ The Diary of a Useless Man” (Dnevnik Lishnago Chelovieka), and others. These were afterwards collected into three volumes. The last works of the great novelist were “Poetry in Prose” and “Clara Milich,” which appeared in the pages of the ‘“‘ European Messenger.”

Tourguenieff, during the latter part of his life, did not reside much in Russia; he lived either at Baden Baden or Paris, and chiefly with the family of the celebrated singer Viardot Garcia, to the members of which he was much attached. He occasionally visited England, and in 1879 the degree of D.C.L. was conferred upon him by the university of Oxford. He died at Bougival, near Paris, on September 4, 1883 ; according to his wish, his remains were taken to St Petersburg, and buried in the Volkoff cemetery, near those of the critic Bielinski.

Unquestionably Tourguenieff may be considercd one of the greatest novelists of our own or any other times, and worthy to be ranked with Thackeray, Dickens, and George Eliot: with the genius of the last of these he has many affinities. His studies of human nature are profound, and he has the wide sympathies which are essential to genius of the highest order. A melancholy, almost pessimist, feeling pervades his writings, but perhaps this is always found in those who have truly listened to the “still, sad music

of humanity.” This morbid self-analysis seems natural to the Slavonic mind, and Tourguenieff has given abundant proof of possessing it. The elosing chapter of ‘‘A Nest of Nobles” is one of the saddest and at the same time truest pages in the whole range of existing novels.

The writings of Tourguenieff have been made familiar to persons unacquainted with Russian by French translations. There are some versions in English, but the only two worthy of notice are the translation of the ‘‘ Nest of Nobles” under the name of “ Lisa,” by Mr Ralston, and ‘‘ Virgin Soil,” by the late Mr Ashton Dilke.

TOURMALINE. See Execrrictrry, vol. viii. p. 99; Gxo- Locy, vol. x. p. 228; and MineRazoey, vol. xvi. p. 409.

TOURNAI (Flem. Doornik), a town of Belgium, capital of an arrondissement in the province of Hainault, 53 miles by rail west-south-west from Brussels, is divided into two parts by the Scheldt, which is here spanned by seven bridges and lined with spacious tree-shaded quays. The older, which is also the busier and more important portion of the town, stands on the left bank; the new town is distinguished by its neat regular streets and modern architecture. The cathedral, which is a fine example of the Romanesque style, is a cruciform basilica, with a series of chapels and five towers. The nave was probably consecrated in 1171; the transepts date from the 13th century; and the (Gothic) choir was completed in 1338, at which time also the Romanesque facade was altered, and a porch in the Pointed style added. The sculptures in the porch range in date from the 13th to the

17th century, and deserve special notice, particularly those of later date by native artists. The general effect of the interior is harmonious and impressive. The capitals of the pillars are rich and varied ; the passage round the choir contains several pictures of the Flemish school ; the richly sculptured Renaissance roodloft dates from 1566; and most of the stained glass in the transept dates from about 1456. The adjacent belfry, dating originally from 1187, and partly rebuilt in 1391, was restored in 1852. In the Grande Place, not far from the cathedral, is the church of St Quentin,

sometimes spoken of as “la petite cathédrale,” in the Transition style, and nearly of the same date as the cathedral. The church of St Jacques dates from the 13th and 14th centuries, and that of St Brice from the 12th. The buildings of the old monastery of St Martin, on the south-west side of the town, are now used as an hétel de ville, in connexion with which there is a small picture gallery containing some examples of Rembrandt, Rubens, and Van Dyck. The town contains courts of law, an athenzeum, a theatre, a school of arts and manufactures, an episcopal palace and seminary, a natural history museum, besides other public buildings. The fortifications of Vauban, extended after the second treaty of Paris, are now demolished, and their place taken by boulevards. The lead- ing objects of manufacture are stockings and “ Brussels” carpets ; the other industries include paper-making, thread- making, and the spinning of wool and flax. The trade of the place is very considerable, as vessels of 150 tons burden can ascend the river to this point, and its railway communications are good. The population in 1876 was

32,145.

Tournay, supposed to be the Civitas Nerviorwm of Cesar, and afterwards known as Tournacus, was onc of the first places con- quered by the Franks, and Clovis made it for a time his capital. In modern times, standing as it does on the frontier between Belgium and France, it has been frequently besieged and taken. History records specially the siege by Alexander of Parma in 1581, when it was bravely but unsuccessfully defended by the princess D’Epinoy, whose statue now stands in the Grande Place. Perkin Warbeck was a native of Tournai.

TOURNAMENTS. Tournaments and jousts were the chief military exercises and displays of the age of chivalry. Besides being the appropriate sports and pastimes of a warlike era and caste, they were intended to test the skill and exhibit the prowess of the knights and squires who took part in them. Considered under their more serious aspect, apart from their association with pomp and festivity, they were, practically speaking, the equivalents of the reviews and sham-fights of later times, and were designed as a preparation for the actual manceuvres and real conflicts of the battlefield. Tournaments and jousts differed from one another principally in

the circumstance that in the first several combatants on each side were engaged at once, and in the second the contention was between two combatants only. The former consisted of the mutual charges of equal troops of cavalry, while the latter consisted of a duel on horseback. Du Cange says that the French towrnoi, English ‘ tournament,” ‘“ was a general expression which comprehended all sorts of com- bats that were performed by way of exercise. But it more properly meant such as were performed by companies, where many were in conflict against the same number, representing the form of a battle. When those general combats were ended, then single ones commenced ; for all who were desirous of displaying their address, and attract- ing public notice for their valour, offered single combat with sword or lance against all who should present them- selves”; and he adds that these combats were called by the old French writers “ joustes,” which is the same word as the English “‘jousts.” But jousts were held far more frequently than, and quite independently of, regular

tournaments throughout the period in which the customs of chivalry were observed, and, according to some author- ities, the lance alone was used in them, while in the others all weapons except firearms were employed. In both cases such weapons were usually although not invariably rendered innocuous, and it was only rarely that the combatants were killed or injured by wounds, as distinguished from falls and bruises. But in one way or another tournaments and jousts were always extremely dangerous, and a long list of eminent persons met their deaths in them, from Raoul, Comte de Guines, to Henry IT. of France. It may be assumed that jousts in some shape existed at all periods, in which men fought in armour and on horseback, and were in the habit of practising themselves in time of peace for the exigencies of warfare. But it is very doubtful when and where tournaments, in the proper sense of the term, were originally instituted. The older writers on the subject sought to connect them with the “Troja” or “ludus Trojz ” among the Romans. But this is a piece of archeology of the same sort as that which identified the knighthood of the Middle Ages with the ancient ‘“ordo equestris,” and will not, of course, bear examination. Much reliance again has been placed by some of them on the account of a sham-fight which was held at the celebrated interview between the emperor Louis and

Charles the Bald in 841, which in certain respects bore a close resemblance to a tournament, and was no doubt the kind of exhibition out of which the tournament of a later age was developed. Others attribute the institution of tournaments to the emperor Henry the Fowler, who died in 936, or to Geoffrey de Preuilly, the ancestor of the counts of Tours, who died in 1066. However this may be, it is certain that they were in vogue on the Continent at the end of the 11th century, and that in the early part of the 12th century they were introduced into England. In the 13th and 14th centuries they were common all over Christendom, including the Eastern as well as the Western empire and the states comprised in or adjacent to it. It was not until the end of the 16th century that tilts and hastiludes passed out of fashion in Britain, and even in the earlier years of the 17th century they were occasionally celebrated under the patron- age of Henry, prince of Wales, son of King James I.

The older authorities on tournaments and jousts are exceedingly numerous. But all that is material in what they have written will be found in Ste Palaye's Mémoires sur l_Aneienne Chevalerie and Mills's History of Chivalry. The " Dissertations" of Du Cange at the end of Joinville's Memoirs and the Chronieles of Froissart and Monstrelet may also be consulted. Ste Palaye aud Mills were both industrious compilers, and the second is much indebted to the first.

TOURNEBOUT, a wind instrument of wood, in which a cylindrical column of air is set in vibration by a reed. The lower extremity is turned up in a half circle, and from this peculiarity it has gained the French names towrnebout and cromorne,—the latter a corruption of the German name Krummhorn. There appears to be no English equivalent. The reed of the tournebout, like that of the bassoon, is formed by two tongues of cane, adapted to the small end of a conical brass tube, the large end being inserted in the body of the instrument. It presents, however, this differ- ence, that it is not, like that of the bassoon, in contact with the player's mouth, but is covered again by a cap pierced with a hole in the upper part, through which opening the air is introduced which sets the reed in vibration, the reed being therefore subject to no pressure of the lips. The compass of the instrument is naturally limited to the simple fundamental sounds which the successive opening of the lateral holes gives rise to. The tournebouts have not much length for the

deep sounds they produce, which arises from these instruments sounding, like all tubes of cylindrical bore provided with reeds, the same as the stopped pipes of an organ. That is to say, theoretically

they require only half the lengths necessary for the open pipes of an organ, or for conical tubes pro- el

vided with reeds, to produce notes of the E same pitch. Moreover, when, to obtain a harmonic, the column of air is divided, the tournebout will not give the octave like the oboe and bassoon, but the twelfth, corre- sponding in this peculiarity with the clarinet jg and all stopped pipes or bourdons. With & the ordinary boring of eight lateral holes, the tournebout possesses a limited scale em- bracing a ninth. Sometimes, however, the deeper sounds are completed by the addition of one or more keys, By its structure the tournebout is one of the oldest wind instru- ments ; it is evidently derived from the Greek aulos and the Roman tibia, which consisted equally of a simple cylindrical pipe of which the column of air was set in vibration by a double reed. |

Notwithstanding the successive improve- 4 ments that were introduced in the manu- jj facture of wind instruments, the tournebout |), scarcely ever varied in the details of its |)’ construction. Such as we see it represented |) in the treatise by Virdung! we find it again “= about the epoch of its dis- . appearance, in L’Art du Faiseur eg a’Enstruments de Encyclopédie de Diderot et d Alembert (Paris,

1751-80).

The tournebouts existed as a com- plete family from the 15th century. According to Virdung, it was formed of four individual instru- ments; Pretorius? cites five,—the deep bass, the bass, the tenor

or alto, the cantus or soprano, and the high soprano, with com- of

ZETEC TTT TT

Re

a

Bass Tournebout,

pass respectively O.

—_ Be A eens nee Pee Sas. Jel WON Dees ee SE =a! Ss ere — -, — —-— a – — ~

-

~o- . —__—._ A band, or, to use the expression of Pre- and —=——f#— torius, an “accort,” of tournebouts compre- a @

== hended—1 deep bass, 2 bass, 3 alto-tenor, 2 cantus (soprano), 1 high soprano=9.

The tournebouts were not always an orchestra by themselves; they allied themselves also to other instruments, and notably to flutes and oboes. It was thus that the little groups of musicians in the service of princes, or those engaged by some large town on the occasion of a festival or public ceremony, were composed of several tournebout players combined with some flautists and oboe players. In 1685 the orchestra of the Neuc Kirche at Strasburg comprised two tournebouts, and until the middle of the last century these instruments formed part of the music called ‘‘la grande écurie” in the service of the French kings. Tournebouts have in our days become of extreme rarity, and scarcely exist in collections. The museum of the Conservatoire Royal de Musique at Brussels has the good fortune to possess a complete family, which is regarded as having belonged to the duke of Ferrara, Alphonso II. d’Este, a prince who reigned from 1559 to 1597. The soprano (cantus or discant) has the same compass as above, while the alto, the tenor (furnished wants key), and bass have an extent respectively of

The bass (see accompanying figure), besides having two keys, is distinguished from the others by a kind of small bolt, two of which slide in grooves and close the two holes that form the lowest notes of the instrument. It is very curious to observe that the employ- ment of these bolts, placed at the extremity of the tourncbout and out of reach of the fingers of the instrumentalist, forces him to require the assistance of a person whose sole mission is to attend to these bolts during the performance.

The ‘‘ Platerspil” of which Virdung gives a drawing is only a kind of tournebout. It presents especially the peculiarity that,

1 Musica getutscht und auszgezogen, Basel, 1511. ? Organographia, Wolfenbiittel, 1618.

instead of having a cap to cover over the reed, there is a spherical receiver surrounding the reed, to which the tube for insufflation is adapted. This receiver was of wood worked round, or perhaps consisted of a simple gourd. (V. M.)

TOURNEFORT, Josepn Pirron pr (1656-1708), a botanist of considerable reputation, was born at Aix, in Provence, in 1656. He studied in the convent of the Jesuits at Aix, and was destined for the church, but the death of his father left him free to follow his botanical inclinations. After a couple of years collecting, he studied medicine at Montpellier, but soon returned to his favourite pursuit, and was appointed professor of botany at the Jardin des Plantes in 1683. By the king’s order he travelled through western Europe, where he made very ex- tensive collections, and subsequently spent three years in Greece and Asia Minor (1700-1702). Of this journey a description in a series of letters was posthumously pub- lished in 3 vols. (Relation d’un Voyage du Levant, Lyons, 1717). His principal work is entitled Jnstitutiones Rei Herbarrz (3 vols., Paris, 1700), and upon this rests chiefly his claims to remembrance as one of the most eminent of the systematic botanists who prepared the way for Linneeus. His exact position

among these has been dis- cussed at length by Sachs (Geschichte d. Botanik, Munich, 1875). He died December 28, 1708.

TOURNEUR, Cyrm, a tragic poet of the first order, has left no record of his existence beyond the respective dates of his first and last extant works (1600-1613), An allegorical poem, worthless as art and incomprehensible as allegory, is the earliest of these ; an elegy on the death of Prince Henry, son of James I., is the latest. The two plays on which his fame rests, and on which it will rest for ever, were published respectively in 1607 and 1611, but all students have agreed to accept the internal evidence which assures us that the later in date of publication must be the earlier in date of composition. His only other known work is an epicede on Sir Francis Vere, of no great merit as poetry, but of some value as conveying in a straightforward and masculine style the poet's ideal con- ception of a perfect knight or "happy warrior," comparable by those who may think fit to compare it with the more nobly realized ideals of Chaucer and of Wordsworth. But if Tourneur had left on record no more memorable evi- dence of his powers than might be supplied by the survival of his elegies, he could certainly have claimed no higher place among English writers than is now occupied by the Rev. Charles Fitzgeoffrey, whose voluminous and fervent elegy on Sir Francis Drake is indeed of more actual value, historic or poetic, than either or than both of Tourneur's elegiac rhapsodies. The singular power, the singular originality, and the singular limitation of his genius are all equally obvious in Zhe Atheist's Tragedy, a dramatic poem no less crude and puerile and violent in action and evolution than simple and noble and natural in expression and in style. The executive faculty of the author is in the metrical parts of his first play so imperfect as to sug- gest either incompetence or perversity in the workman; in The Revenger's Tragedy it is so magnificent, so simple, impeccable, and sublime, that the finest passages of this play can be compared only with the noblest examples of tragic dialogue or monologue now extant in English or in Greek. 'There is no trace of imitation or derivation from an alien source in the genius of this poet. The first editor of Webster has observed how often he imitates Shakespeare ; and, in fact, essentially and radically inde- pendent as is Webster's genius also, the sovereign influence of his master may be traced not only in the general tone of his style, the general scheme of his composition, but now and then in a direct and never an unworthy or

imperfect echo of Shakespeare’s very phrase and accent. But the resemblance between the tragic verse of Tourneur

fo7—

and the tragic verse of Shakespeare is simply such as |

proves the natural affinity between two great dramatic poets, whose inspiration partakes now and then of the quality more proper to epic or to lyric poetry. The fiery impulse, the rolling music, the vivid illustration of thought by jets of insuppressible passion, the perpetual sustenance of passion by the implacable persistency of thought, which we recognize as the dominant and distinctive qualities of such poetry as finds vent in the utterances of Hamlet or of Timon, we recognize also in the scarcely less magnificent

poetry, the scarcely less fiery sarcasm, with which Tourneur has informed the part of Vindice—a harder-headed Hamlet, a saner and more practically savage and serious Timon. He was a satirist as passionate as Juvenal or Swift, but with a finer faith in goodness, a purer hope in its ultimate security of triumph. This fervent constancy of spirit

relieves the lurid gloom and widens the limited range of |

a tragic imagination which otherwise might be felt as oppressive rather than inspiriting. His grim and trenchant humour is as peculiar in its sardonic passion as his elo- quence is original in the strenuous music of its cadences, in the roll of its rhythmic thunder. As a playwright, his method was almost crude and rude in the headlong straightforwardness of its energetic simplicity; as an artist in character, his interest was intense but narrow, his power magnificent but confined ; as a dramatic poet, the force of his genius is great enough to ensure him an

enduring place amoug the foremost of the followers of Shakespeare. (A. ©. 8.) TOURS, a town of France, formerly the capital of Touraine, now chef-lieu of the department of Indre-et- Loire, the see of an archbishop, and the headquarters of the 9th corps d’armée, lies 145 miles (by rail) south-west of Paris, on the left bank of the Loire, a little above the

AY = Dy, LOS Li.

Plan of Tours.

SS \

junction of the Loire and Cher. Many foreigners, especi- ally English, live at Tours, attracted by the town itself, its mild climate, its beautiful situation in “the garden of France,” and the historic chateaus of the neighbourhood. The Loire is crossed by two suspension bridges, by a rail- way bridge, and by a fine stone bridge, but its waters too often either expose large stretches of sand, or come down in devastating flood. Many of the inhabitants belong

_astical and civil architecture.

to the leisured class, and the town possesses societies of | science, art, and literature, of agriculture, of horticulture, of archaeology, of medicine, and a library (50,000 volumes, _and 1200 MSS., including a gospel of the 8th century, on ‘which the kings of France took oath as honorary canons of the church of St Martin). The industrial establishments

ew U 491

include four large silk mills, the printing and publishing works of Mame (1200 workmen), manufactories of cloth, carpets, files, white lead, stained glass, boots and shoes, and pottery. A considerable trade is carried on in wine, brandy, and dried fruits, and the sausages and confection- ery of the town are well known. The population, 52,209 in 1881, was 59,585 in 1886.

Tours, under the Gauls the capital of the Turones or Turons, originally stood on the right bank of the Loire, a little above the present village of St Symphorien. At first called Altionos, the town was afterwards officially known as Cexsarodunum. The Romans removed the town from the hill where it originally stood to the plain on the left bank of the river. Behind the present cathe- dral, remains of the amphitheatre (443 feet in length by 394 in breadth) built towards the end of the 2d century might till lately beseen. Tours became Christian about 250 through the preaching of Gatien, who founded the bishopric. The first cathedral was built a hundred years

later by St Litorius. The bishopric became an archbishopric when Gratian made Tours the capital of Lugdunensis Tertia, and about the same time the official name of Cesarodunum was changed for that of Civitas Turonorwm. St Martin, the great apostle of the Gauls, was bishop of Tours in the 4th century, and he was buried in a suburb which soon became as important as the town itself from the number of pilgrims who flocked to his tomb. Towards the end of the 4th century, apprehensive of barbarian inva- sion, the inhabitants pulled down some of their earlicr buildings in order to raise a fortified wall, the course of which can still be traced in places. Their advanced fort of Larcay still overlooks the valley ofthe Cher. Affiliated to the Armorican confederation in 435, the town did not fall to the Visigoths till 478, and the new masters were always hated. It became part of the Frankish dominions under Clovis, who, in consideration of the help afforded by St Martin, presented the church with rich gifts out of the spoils taken from Alaric, confirmed and extended its right of sanctuary, and accepted for himself and his successors the title of canon of St Martin. The basilica, built under Bishop St Perpetuns from 472 to 477, was the largest and finest church of France, and one of the most important built in the West during the decline of the Roman empire ; it is said by St Gregory of Tours to have been 160 feet long, 60 wide, and 45 high. It seems to have been one of the first which had an ambulatory round the choir. Tours grew rapidly in prosperity under the Merovingians, but abuse of the right of sanctuary led to great disorder, and the church itself became a hotbed of crime. Charlemagne re-established discipline in the disorganized monastery and set over it the learned Alcuin, who established at Tours one of the oldest public schools of Christian philosophy and theology. The abbey was made into a collegiate church in the 11th century, and was for a time affiliated to Cluny, but soon came under the direct rule of Rome, and for long had bishops of its own, The suburb in which the monastery was situated became as important as Tours itself under the name of Martinopolis, The Normans, attracted by its riches, pillaged it in 853 and 903. Strong walls were erected from 906 to 910, and in the 12th century the name was changed to that of Chateauneuf. Philip Augustus abolished the dis- orderly commune in 1212, but the innumerable offerings of princes, lords, and pilgrims maintained the prosperity of the town all through the Middle Ages. A 13th-century writer speaks with enthusiasm of the wealth and luxury of the inhabitants, of the beauty and chastity of the women, and of the rich shrine of the saint. A third

church, replacing one which had been built after the burning of that of St Perpetuus in 997, was begun in 1175, and finished in the 13th century. It was 374 feet long and 85 feet high, and had five towers, of which only two remain. The rest of the church, sold to speculators after the Revolution, disappeared under the first empire. Of the monastic buildings, only a beautiful inclosed gallery, built by Bastien Frangois, nephew of Michel Colomb, ‘in the time of the Renaissance, remains, but the streets which formerly belonged to Chateauneuf show many interesting relics of ecclesi-
About 1130 Archbishop Hildevert built a cathedral in the old Roman town itself, on the ruins of those successively erected by Litorius and Gregory of Tours. This was burnt in 1166 during the quarrel between Louis VII. of France and Henry II. of England, the latter being lord of Tours and count of Anjou. The work was resumed in 1175, but not finished till 1547. Part of the towers belong to the 12th century; the choir to the 13th; the transept and first bays of the nave to the 14th; the remaining bays, the cloister on the north, and the fine fagade to the 15th; and the two Renaissance towers (217 feet and 223 feet) to the 16th. The building is nevertheless remarkable for the

| harmony and regularity of its construction; specially noteworthy

details are the triple western portal, the upper staircase of the north tower, a Renaissance staircase in the cloister, the old wood- work in chestnut-wood, and the splendid glass of the 13th, 14th, and 15th centuries. A pretty little mausoleum, built in 1506 by Jean Juste, is the burial-place of three young sons of Charles

492

VIII. The archbishop’s palace is to the right of the cathedral, with an interesting chapel of the 12th century, and an outside pulpit of the 16th. During the 10th century the Benedictine abbey of St Julien was re-established by Archbishop Théotolon, and a Romanesque church built, of which the great square tower still remains. St Julien has a fine nave and double aisles; the straight terminal wall has two 16th-century apses attached. There are some paintings of the 12th century under the tower.

The magnificence of Tours declined in the 14th century; it was then united to Chateauneuf by a common wall, of which an elegant round tower (the Tour de Guise) remains near the quay, and both towns were put under the same government. The numerous and long-continued visits of Charles VII., Louis XI., and Charles VIII. in Touraine during the 15th century favoured the commerce and industry of the town, then peopled by 75,000 inhabitants. To the flourishing school of art which existed at the Renaissance are due several private houses, a fountain, and the church of Notre Dame La Riche, with splendid windows by Pinaigrier. An unimportaut building, part of a modern chateau, is all that remains of the royal residence and magnificent gardens of Plessis-lés-Tours, where Louis XI. shut himself up and died, the states in 1506 proclaimed Louis XII. the father of his people, and Henry III. and Henry of Navarre united in 1589 against the Leagne. From that year Tours was deserted by the kings of France. A fine bridge of fifteen arches was built across the Loire from 1765 to 1777 by Bayeux. The chief modern buildings are the theatre, the church of St Joseph, the railway station, and a museum with collections of antiquities, pictures, pottery, and mineralogy. There are also antiquities in the museum of the archeological society of Indre-et-Loire. The gardens and a remarkable portal of the archbishop's palace, a magnificent iron gate of the 18th century in the prefecture, once the convent of the Visitation, and the general hospital (1200 beds) should also be mentioned. In 1870 Tours was the seat of the government of the national defence. Tours is the birthplace of the heretic Berengarius, the two marshals Boucicaut, the novelist Honoré de Balzac, the poet Destouches, the painters Fouquet and Clouet, and Madame de la Valliére.

TOUSSAINT LOUVERTURE, Prerre- Dominique (1746-1803), one of the liberators of Hayti, claimed to be descended from an African chief, his father, a slave in Hayti, being the chief's second son. He was born 20th May 1746 at Breda, and was at first surnamed Breda, which was changed to Louverture in token of the results of his valour in causing a gap in the ranks of the enemy. From childhood he manifested unusual abilities, and succeeded, by making the utmost use of every opportunity, in obtaining a remarkably good education. He obtained the special confidence of his master, and was made super- intendent of the other negroes on the plantation. After the insurrection of 1791 he joined the insurgents, and, having acquired some knowledge of surgery and medicine, acted as

physician to the forces. His rapid rise in influ- ence aroused, however, the jealousy of Jean Francois, who caused his arrest on the ground of his partiality to the whites. He was liberated by the rival insurgent chief Baisson, and a partisan war ensued, but after the death of Baisson he placed himself under the orders of Jean Frangois. Subsequently he joined the Spaniards, but, when the French Government ratified the Act declaring the freedom of the slaves, he came to the aid of the French. In 1796 he was named commander-in-chief of the armies of St Domingo, but, having raised and disciplined a power- ful army of blacks, he made himself master of the whole country, renounced the authority of France, and announced himself "the Buonaparte of St Domingo." For further details of his career see Haytt (vol. xi. p. 545). He was taken prisoner by treachery on the part of France, and died

in the prison of Joux, near Besancon, 27th April 1803. See Mémoires written by himself, 1853; Saint-Remy, Vie de

Toussaint Louverture, 1850 ; Gragnon-Lacoste, Toussaint Louver-

ture, Général en Chef de ? Armée de Saint-Domingue surnommé le

Premier des Noirs, based on private papers of the Louverture family, 1877.

TOWN, TOWNSHIP. See Borovueu, Crry, Munt- CIPALITY, and Unirep Srarss, pp. 731, 827.

TOWNSHEND, CHar.es TowNsHEND, SEconD Vis- count (1674-1738), a statesman of unsullied integrity, was the eldest son of Horatio, the first viscount, and was

born in 1674. He succeeded to the peerage in December 1687, and was educated at Eton and King's College, Cam- bridge. When he took his seat in the House of Lords his sympathies leant to Toryism, but this predilection soon faded away, and in February 1701-2 it was rumoured among the

courtiers that he would hold the office of privy seal in the Whig ministry which William ITI. had in view. For some years after the accession of Queen Anne he remained without office, but on 29th September 1707 he was created captain of the yeomen of the guard, and in the same year he was summoned to the privy council, a distinction renewed by the queen's two successors on the throne. The command of the yeomen remained in his hands until 13th June 1711, but its responsibilities did not prevent him from acting as joint plenipotentiary with the duke of Marlborough in the peace negotiations with France which were carried on at Gertruydenberg, near Breda, or from serving as ambassador extraordinary at The Hague congress (2d May 1709-26th March 1711). Town- shend was high in favour with George I., and on that king's arrival at The Hague in September 1714 he pub- lished the appointment of Townshend as secretary of state for the southern department, and entrusted to his new minister the privilege of nominating his own colleague. Horace Walpole, his brother-in-law and private secretary, recommended Stanhope for the vacant post, and Stanhope was duly appointed. Townshend did not neglect to avail himself of the advantages afforded by his attendance on the king, and before the arrival of George I. in England he had obtained complete ascendency both over his mind and the dispositions of the advisers by whom his line of conduct was generally determined. The policy of the new ministers at home and abroad lay in the promotion of peace. With this object they endeavoured to limit the charges against their predecessor Harley, Lord Oxford, to high crimes and misdemeanours. To gain this end they brought about, in 1716, an alliance between those ancient rivals in arms, France and England. In spite of their success, their influence was gradually undermined by the intrigues of Lord Sunderland and by the discontent of the Hanoverian favourites, who deemed the places and the pensions which they had gained an insufficient reward for their exertions. In October 1716 Stanhope accompanied the king on his journey to Hanover, and during this visit was seduced from his allegiance to his colleagues by the wily Sunderland, who had ingratiated himself into the royal favour. George I. was induced to believe that Townshend and Walpole were caballing with the prince of Wales, and were forming designs against the royal authority. Town- shend was dismissed in December 1716 from his place of secretary of state, and was offered in lieu thereof the splendid banishment of lord-lieutenant of Ireland, a gilded sinecure which he at first contemptuously declined and

only condescended ultimately to accept on the condition that he was not required to set foot on Irish soil. His latent spirit of hostility to this arrangement quickly devel- oped into open antagonism, and in March 1717 Townshend was dismissed from his position. At the close of May 1720 a partial reconciliation took place between the op- posing Whig sections of Stanhope and Townshend. The latter was readmitted into the ministry as lord president of the council (11th June 1720), and his devoted relation and colleague Sir Robert Walpole became paymaster-general. When the South Sea Bubble burst, the fortunes of the principal members of the ministry shared in the misfortune of the scheme which they had promoted. Stanhope, in a paroxysm of passion during a heated debate, broke a blood- vessel, and Sunderland, though acquitted of the charge of personal corruption, was forced to retire into private life. The withdrawal of these statesmen assigned to their rivals

T@WRHRS HE N D

the chief prizes in the state: Townshend became (10th February 1721) secretary of state, and Walpole gained the position of first lord of the treasury and chancellor of thie exchequer. The death of George I. threatened a change of advisers, but the dismay of the new king’s favourite, Spencer Compton, at being called upon to draw up the royal speech, led to the old ministers of the crown being retained in their places. What the attacks of the opposi- tion could not effect, the internal strife of the administra- tion accomplished. Townshend was of a proud, impetuous disposition, born with a nature more accustomed to rule than to obey. His family had for several generations stood higher in the social life of Norfolk than Walpole’s progenitors, and when he himself attained to distinction in politics his position as a member of the Upper House was greater than that enjoyed by his friend in the Commons. As the power of the Lower House increased, and as Walpole became more and more the object of the attacks of the Tories, the pre-eminence of Townshend passed from him. So long, to use the witty remark of Sir Robert Walpole, as the firm was Townshend and Walpole, things went well with them, but when the positions were re- versed jealousies arose between the partners. ing alienation was hastened by the death, in 1726, of the secretary’s wife, the sister of Walpole. At the close of 1729 Townshend endeavoured to obtain the appoint- ment of his old and

attached friend, Lord Chesterfield, as his fellow secretary of state, and the failure of the attempt brought about a fierce scene between Walpole and himself. They broke out into passionate words, seized one another by their coat-collars, and would have come to blows had they not been prevented by their friends who were pre- sent. After this outbreak of passion further co-operation was impossible, and Townshend, having the good sense to recognize the position, retired into private life on 15th May 1730. The chief domestic events of his ministry were the impeachment of Bishop Atterbury, the partial restoration of Lord Bolingbroke, and the troubles in Ireland over the granting to a man called Wood of a patent for coining pence. Its concluding act was the signing of the treaty of Seville (9th Noveniber 1729). Townshend died of apoplexy 21st June 1738.

Townshend was slow in forming, but resolute in adhering to, his opinion, and, like most other men of that stamp, was impaticnt of contradiction. His manners have been styled ‘‘coarse, rustic, and seemingly brutal,” but these defects were not visible in his domestic lite. Never did minister leave office with eleaner hands; he did not add one acre to his estate nor leave large fortunes to his younger children.

TOWNSHEND, Cuartxs (1725-1767), a politician ever to be remembered as the embodiment of wit and in- discretion, was the second son of Charles, third Viscount Townshend, who married Audrey, the daughter and heiress of Edward Harrison of Ball’s Park, near Hertford, a lady who rivalled her son in brilliancy of wit and frankness of expression. Charles was born 29th August 1725, and was sent for his education to Leyden and Oxford. At the Dutch university, where he matriculated 27th October 1745, he associated with a small knot of English youths, afterwards well known in various circles of life, among whom were Askew, the book-collector, Dowdeswell, his subsequent rival in politics, Wilkes, the witty and un- principled reformer, and Alexander Carlyle, the genial Scotchman, who devotes some of the pages of his Autodio- graphy to chronicling their sayings and their doings. He represented Great Yarmouth in parliament from 1747 to 1761, when he found a seat in the treasury borough of Harwich.

The grow- .

Public attention was first drawn to his abilities | in 1753, when he delivered a lively attack, as a younger – son who might hope to promote his advancement by allying | himself in marriage to a wealthy heiress, against Lord |

493

Hardwicke's marriage bill. Although this measure passed into law, he attained this object in August of the follow- ing year by marrying Caroline, tlie eldest daughter of the second duke of Argyle and the widow of Francis, Lord Dalkeith, the eldest son of the second duke of Buccleugh. In April 1754 Townshend was transferred from the posi- tion of a member of the Board of Trade, which he had held from 1749, to that of a lord of the admiralty, but at the close of 1755 his passionate attack against the policy of the ministry, an attack which shared in popular estimation with the scathing denunciations of Pitt, the supreme success of Single-Speech Hamilton, and the liope- less failure of Lord Chesterfield's illegitimate son, caused his instant dismissal. In the administration which was formed in December 1756, and which was ruled by Pitt, the lucrative office of treasurer of the chamber was given to Townshend, and in the following spring he was sum- moned to the privy council. With the accession of the new monarch in 1760 this volatile politician transferred his attentions from Pitt to the young king's favourite, Bute, and when, at the latter's instance, several changes were made in the ministry, Townshend was promoted to the post of secretary of war. In this place he remained after the great commoner had withdrawn from the cabinet, but in December 1762 he threw it up. Bute, alarmed at the growth in numbers and in influence of his enemies, tried to buy back Townshend's co-operation by sundry tempting promises, and at last secured his object in March 1763 with the presidency of the Board of Trade. When Bute retired and George Grenville accepted the cares of official life, the higher post of first lord of the admiralty fell to Townshend's lot, but with his usual impetuosity he pre- sumed to designate one of his satellites to a place under him at the board, and the refusal to accept the nomination led to his exclusion from the new administration. While in opposition his mind was swayed to and fro with con- flicting emotions of dislike to the head of the ministry and of desire to share in the spoils of office. The latter feeling ultimately triumphed ; he condescended to accept

in the dying days of Grenville's cabinet, and to retain through the " lutestring" administration of Lord Rockingham,— 'pretty summer wear," as Townshend styled it, " but it will never stand the winter,'—the highly-paid position of paymaster-general, refusing to identify himself more closely with its fortunes as chancellor of the exchequer. The position which he refused from the hands of Lord Rocking- ham he was forced to accept from the imperious Pitt (August 1766), and a few weeks later his urgent appeals to the great minister for increased power were favourably answered, and he was admitted to the inner circle of the cabinet. Dowdeswell, his predecessor at the exchequer, resented his removal for his brilliant rival. The new chancellor proposed the continuance of the land tax at four shillings in the pound, while he held out hopes that it might be reduced next year to three shillings, where- upon his predecessor, by the aid of the landed gentlemen, carried a motion that the reduction should take effect at once. This defeat proved a great mortification to Lord Chatham, and in his irritation against Townshend for this blow, as well as for some acts of insubordination, he meditated the removal of his showy colleague. Before this could be accomplished Chatham's mind became im- paired by some mysterious malady, and Townshend, who was the most determined and influential of his colleagues, swayed the ministry as he liked. His wife was created (August 1767) Baroness Greenwich, and his brother was made lord-lieutenant of Ireland. He hiniself delivered in the House of Commons many speeches unrivalled in parliamentary history for wit and recklessness; and one of them still lives in history as the 'champagne speech,"

His last act was to pass through parliament resolutions which even his colleagues deprecated in the cabinet, for taxing several articles, such as glass, paper, and tea, on their importation into America, which he estimated would produce the insignificant sum of £40,000 for the English treasury, and which shrewder observers prophesied would lead to the loss of the American colonies. Shortly after this event he retired to his wife's country seat in Oxford- shire, where he died on 4th September 1767, from a fever which he had neglected.

The universal tribute of Townshend's colleagues allows him the possession of boundless wit and ready eloquence, set off by perfect melody of intonation, but marred by an unexampled lack of judg- ment and discretion. He shifted his ground in politics with every new moon, and the world fastened on him the nickname, which he himself adopted in his ''champagne" spcech, of the Weathercock. His official knowledge was considerable; and it would be unjust to his memory to ignore the praises of his contemporaries or his profound knowledge of his country's commercial interests. The House of Commons recognized in him its spoilt child, and Burke happily said that ''he never thought, did, or said anything " with- out Judging its effect on his fellow-members. Charles Townshend is the subject of a memoir by Mr Percy Fitzgerald.

TOXICOLOGY. See Poisons.

TRACHIS, a city of ancient Greece, at the foot of Mount (Eta, a little to the north-west of Thermopyle. As commanding the approach to Thermopyle from Thes- saly, it was a place of great military importance. Accord- ing to Homer, it was one of the places subject to Achilles, and was famed in legend as the scene of Hercules's death— an event which forms the subject of Sophocles's play The Trachinian Women. In historical times it first attained importance on the foundation of Heraclea by the Spartans in 426 B.c. The Thessalians, jealous of the establishment of a Spartan outpost on their borders, attacked Heraclea, and in 420 the Heracleots were defeated by them with heavy loss. In the winter of 409-8 Heraclea sustained another disastrous defeat. In 395 the Thebans expelled the Spartans, and restored the city to the old Trachinian and Citzan inhabitants. In later times Heraclea was one of the mainstays of the Etolian power in northern Greece, In 191 3.c., after the defeat of Antiochus at Thermopylae, Heraclea was besieged and taken from the AStolians by the Romans under the consul Acilius Glabrio. From Livy's account of the siege (xxxvi. 24), it appears that the citadel was outside the town, which lay on the low ground be- tween the rivers Karvunaria (Asopus) and Mavra-Neria (Melas). There are still traces of the citadel on a lofty rock above.

TRACT SOCIETIES are associations for publishing or circulating religious treatises or books. The circulation of short treatises for the promotion of

Christian know- ledge is older than the invention of printing. Wickliffe, for instance, was a great writer and circulator of tracts, employing his Oxford friends and pupils to multiply copies. So was Luther in his day, with the help by that time of printer and bookseller. In later times John Wesley was a busy worker in this way; and Hannah More, from her own pen, produced what were known as the " Cheap Repository Tracts," highly lauded by Bishop Porteus, and widely used towards the close of the 18th century. Before this time there had been efforts of associated labour for the same object, a "book society for promoting religious knowledge among the poor" having been estab- lished in 1750. A similar society was formed at Edin- burgh in 1793. But it was at the close of the century, in 1799, that there was founded in London the Religious Tract Society, an institution unparalleled in the extent and variety of its operations, and the parent of numerous societies in different parts of the empire as well as in the United States and on the continent of Europe. There are other associations with kindred objects, but in connexion

TO xX—

an A

with particular ecclesiastical systems. Thus the tract department of the Christian Knowledge Society is specially connected with the Church of England; and the Wesleyans, Baptists, and other denominations have their own tract societies. The Church of Rome also has now similar associations. The Religious Tract Society is alone in being confined to the diffusion of religious truth common to all Protestant Christians, to the exclusion of topics touched by ecclesiastical divisions. This catholicity is secured by the fundamental rules of the society, and by its managing committee being composed half of Churchmen and half of Nonconformists of all denominations.

A brief statement of the proceedings of the Religious Tract Society, as presented in its latest annual Report, will best serve to show the general objects and operations of all such organizations, — any special or varied action elsewhere adopted being noted as we proceed. The main object of the society is the preparation and publication of religious literature. At first this consisted mostly of tracts and small treatises. After a time larger books

were pub- lished, including series of reprinted works of the early Reformers and English Protestant theologians and Biblical expositors, and also books on common subjects treated in a religious spirit. The society also issues magazines for all classes. Four of these period- icals, the Leiswre Hour, the Sunday at Home, the Boys' Own Paper, and the Girls' Own Paper, have a united circulation, including monthly parts and yearly volumes, of nearly 600,000 numbers weekly, or above 30 millions in the year. The total annual issue, including books, tracts, &c., at home and abroad, is nearly 86 millions.

The distribution of this is chiefly through the ordinary channels of trade, with the exception of the tracts, which are circulated by home and foreign missionary societies, and varions agencics public and private. Almost every missionary agency is indebted to the Religious Tract Society for the work carried on through the press. Grauts are made, either free or as nearly as possible at cost price ; and, when it is advisable to produce publications at foreign stations, grants of paper and other material, as well as money payments, are voted. The publications are in almost every tongue, the list containing works in 174 languages and dialects.

The funds for this large and varied work come partly from donations, subscriptions, and legacics, but chiefly from the profits of the sales of the society's publications. The total missionary and evangelistic expenditure in the ycar euding March 31, 1886, amounted to £47,722, of which £19,019 was supplied from the trade funds, which have also borne the entire cost of management, both of the business and missionary departments. The total amount received from sales, subscriptions, and all other sources was £212,731, 11s. 8d.

The American Tract Socicty and some of the Continental societies undertake the distribution as well as the production of tracts and books, by means of paid colportenrs and other agents. The Continental societies produce most of their own books and tracts, aided largely by grants of money and paper from the Religious Tract Society.

TRACTION, Execrric. The driving of vehicles by electricity was made commercially practicable by the in- vention of the dynamo-electric machine, which gave a ready means of producing electrical energy by the

expendi- ture of mechanical work, and by the further discovery that the function of the dynamo could be reversed,—that it was capable of acting efficiently as a motor to do mechan- ical work when supplied with energy in the electrical form. Experiment has shown that when a dynamo is used to produce an electric current, which, in its turn, drives another dynamo serving as a motor, the double con- version of energy may be performed with no very serious loss. In favourable cases, when the dynamo and motor are close together, the motor will yield more than 80 per cent. of the work which is spent in driving the dynamo. When they are far apart there is an additional loss, due to the resistance of the conductor which connects them, and a further loss due to its imperfect insulation. The use of high electromotive force, which reduces the first of these, tends to increase the second ; it is, however, practicable to keep both within reasonable limits. Early attempts to apply electricity to traction were made by Robert David- son, who placed an electromagnetic locomotive on the Edinburgh and Glasgow Railway in 1837, and by Jacobi

of St Petersburg, who propelled a boat on the Neva in 1839 by an electromagnetic engine driven by a battery of Grove’s cells. The inefficiency and bulkinesssof early electromotors, and the cost of producing electric energy when a galvanic battery was the source, made it impossible for electricity under such conditions as these to compete with other methods of traction. A good battery using zinc as the active metal consumes from 1 to 2 1b of zinc per hour per horse-power developed ; a good steam-engine consumes from 2 to 3 tb of coal in doing the same amount of work, and the cost of zinc is about fifty times that of coal. Hence, notwithstanding modern improvements in electro- motors, the cost of producing mechanical power by means of electricity, when a zinc-consuming battery is the source, is still prohibitive.

The earliest practical electric railway was constructed at the Berlin exhibition of 1879 by Dr Werner Siemens. At one station was a dynamo driven by a steam-engine. The current was conducted to the moving car through a special rail placed between the ordinary rails and insulated from the ground by blocks of wood. From this rail it passed through a motor-

dynamo on the car, and the ordinary rails completed the circuit. Electrical contact with the ordinary rails was made by the wheels, and with the central rail by a pair of brushes made of copper wire which rubbed against its sides. Spur-wheels were used to connect the motor shaft with the wheels and to effect a suitable reduc- tion of speed. The line was half a mile long and of 2-feet gauge. ‘The motor developed about 34 horse-power, and

ie WN 495

placed on passenger cars; their speed is regulated by means of resistance coils, which the driver of the car switches into the circuit. A similar tramway, 3 miles long, connecting Bessbrook and Newry, was opened in 1885; there also water-power is made use of to drive the generating dynamos. On these lines the train usu- ally consists of a motor car with passengers, followed by two or three goods waggons, and the whole working ex- penses are from 3d. to 4d. per train-mile. The speed is 10 miles an hour.

Amongst early electrical railways Mr Volk’s short line on the beach at Brighton deserves mention. There the rails themselves act as conductors, and are insulated only by wooden sleepers lying on the shingle. The line has been in operation since 1883, with a working expense of only 2d. per car-inile.

Other English and Continental lines will be referred to later ; it is, however, in America that electrical traction has hitherto found its widest development. In 1880 Mr Edison ran an electric locomotive on an experimental track near his laboratory at Menlo Park. Soon after the Chicago exhibition of 1883, at which an electric railway was shown in action, a large number of permanent lines were estab- lished. There are now more than twenty electrical tram- ways at work in the United States, under the patents of Edison, Field, Daft, Van Depoele, Sprague, and others. Many more lines are projected, and experiments are in progress on the application of electrical traction on a large scale to the elevated railways of New York.

In all the instances which have been referred to above, electricity Electric is employed as a means of transmitting power as it is wanted from traction a

generating station to the cars, through a conductor extending by storage along the track. Another method of effecting electric traction is batteries.

was carried by a separate truck, forming a locomotive which drew a car with 20 passengers at a speed of from 4 to 7 miles an hour.

The success of the Berlin experiment was complete, and Messrs Siemens followed it up in 1881 by the construction of a permanent electric tramway, 1} miles in length, at Lichterfelde, which has now (1887) been in continuous operation for six years. At Lichterfelde the ordinary rails, insulated by wooden sleepers, are the only con- ductors. Where roads cross the line the rails are cut out of circuit, and the current is carried past the gap by underground cables, but switches are provided by which the current can be sent into the insulated sections if re- quired. Each car takes 24 passengers, and runs at a speed of 12 miles an hour. There is no separate locomotive, the motor-dynamo being on the car itself. In 1882 Messrs Siemens constructed an electric tramway in the mines of Zankerode, in Saxony, and built for it a locomotive able to draw 8 tons at a speed of 74 miles an hour. Overhead conductors were employed, consisting of a pair of insulated j-shaped rails fixed to the roof of the workings; the current was conveyed to and from the locomotive by means of a pair of contact carriages sliding on these conductors, and connected with the car by short flexible cables. A similar line was opened in 1883 at the Hohenzollern col- liery in Upper Silesia.

The same year witnessed the completion of another pioneer undertaking of the first importance, an electric tramway 6 miles long connecting Portrush and Bushmills, in the north of Ireland. Here the insulated conductor is a special rail, carried alongside of the line on wooden posts

to carry a store of energy on the car or on a special locomotive, by using secondary batteries which are charged from time to time at the gencrating station. This system, which was introduced in England by Mr Reckenzaun and on the Continent by M. Julicn, has been successfully employed on several lines.

The system of storage, by means of secondary batteries, has the great advantage over the system of transmission through a con- ductor that it

makes each car independent and that it is applicable to ordinary tramway lines. As regards economy of power, we have in the storage system a more complex series of transformation of energy, aud therefore a larger number of items of loss. In both systems alike we have a ccrtain loss of energy at the dynamo and at the motor. A secondary battery yiclds in the electrical form only about 70 per cent. of the encrgy given toit. In comparing the two methods, the loss which this involves has to be set off against that which occurs in the transmission system in the process of conduc- tion, an item which may be very small in favourable cases, but which becomes large when there are many cars to be driven, when the line is long, and when, owing to the use of an exposcd conductor, the electromotive force has to be kept low. Under average con- ditions it is probable that the conductor system has a slight ad- vantage over the other in this respect, but the difference is not material, especially as the cost of power is a comparatively small part of the whole working expense of a line. The difference is slightly affected by the fact that in the storage system there is an extra weight to be carried—namely, the batteries—amounting to about 4 or 4 of the whole weight, and the tractive force required to overcome friction is increased in a corresponding degree. A serious objection to the storage system is the probable cost of renewing batteries. In respect, however, both of durability and of power (in relation to weight) secondary batteries have of late undergone a marked improvement; and it is likely that the storage system will prove the most applicable to tramways in city strects, where conductors on the level of the road are impracticable and overhead conductors would not be permitted.

at a height of 14 feet above the ground. Contact is made by springs shaped like carriage-springs, which project from one side of the car at both ends, so that the length of the car enables continuous contact to be maintained at cross- roads, where there are gaps in the conducting rail, past which the current is taken by underground cables. The ordinary rails serve as return conductors. The dynamos are driven by turbines at a station nearly a mile distant from the line; they supply a current of 100 amperes with an electromotive force of 250 volts. The motors are

The existing methods of electrical traction as applied to tramways Classifica- mnay be classified as follows :— tion of I. Motor driven by

storage batteries, the batteries and motor systems. being carried either (a) in the car itself or (b) on a separate truck forming a locomotive. Reckenzaun's and Julien's cars, in which the battcries are under thé seats, are examples of the first plan, which is in operation on lines at Antwerp, Hamburg, Brussels, and New York. Mr Elieson's tramway locomotive working in London on the North Metropolitan tramways is an example of the second plan, It is obviously preferable, when space can be found on the car itself for the motor and batteries, to place them there rather than on a separate truck. When a separate locomotive is used it

iust be heavy enough to grip the rails, and the whole weight to be drawn is then considerably greater.}

II. Conductor systems, which may be classified thus:—

(a) Those using the ordinary rails as the only conductors. The lines at Lichterfelde and Brighton, already mentioned, are exam- ples of this plan, which is quite inapplicable where the rails are laid flush with the roadway as in city streets.

(b) Those using a third (insulated) rail, above ground. To this class belong the Portrush, the Bessbrook, and several American lines. This plan, like the last, is not applicable to city streets.

(c) Those using one (or in some cases two) overhead conductors. A line of this type has been successfully worked between Modling and Hinterbriihl, near Vienna, and another between Frankfort and Offenbach, both since 1884, at a cost of about 34d. per car-mile. The conductors consist of slotted tubes 1 inch in bore supported on posts 18 feet high and stayed by wires at intermediate points to keep them from sagging. The contact carriages are pistons sliding in the tubes.2 The Daft lines at Baltimore and other places in America, and the Van Depoele lines, of which some 30 miles are in operation, are mostly worked by means of overhead conductors.

(d) Those using underground conductors in a slotted channel or conduit. This system, which has the obvious advantage that the eonductor is placed

entirely out of the way of street traffic, has been introduced at Blackpool by Mr Holroyd Smith, and, in America, at Cleveland by Messrs Bentley and Knight and at Philadelphia by Mr Schlesinger. In the Blackpool line the conductor is split into two parts which run parallel to each other within the conduit on its two sides, and are touched by a contact arin which reaches down through a narrow central slot at the level of the street; an electromotive force of 200 volts is employed. The conduit is placed midway between the rails, but it may be questioned whether, in view of the conditions of ordinary street traffic, a better place for it would not be at one side. Mr Field has proposed a tramway with two conduits, one beside each rail, containing two conductors, one to be charged positively and the other negatively, so that a comparatively high resultant difference of potential is available for the motor although the potential of neither conductor differs to a dangerous degree from that of the earth.

(e) One system remains to be described, which was proposed in 1881 by Messrs Ayrton and Perry as specially applicable to electric railways of considerable length, in which an exposed conductor would give rise to much loss through leakage. Their plan is to use a well-insulated conductor in a closed channel underground. The line is divided into short sections; each of these has an exposed conductor, which may be one of the rails, and this is placed in temporary contact with the insulated conductor as the train passes, by the pressure of the wheels on a flexible rail or stud, or by means of automatic electromagnetic switches. Leakage is thus restricted to the continuous and well-insulated conductor, together with that section of the surface conductor which is in contact with the former at any one time; and the system has the further advantage that it gives the means of providing an automatic block by which suc- cessive trains are kept from overtaking oue another.

The form and disposition of the motor-dynamo and the mode by which it is connected with the driving-axle of the car are matters in which much variety of practice exists. The question of gearing is complicated by the fact that the frame of the car oscillates verti- cally with respect to the axles. Spur-wheels, worm-gear, friction- gear, belts, multiple-band gear, and chain-gear are or have been used. Mr Reckenzaun’s car is carried by two bogie trucks, one under each end, and each bogie carries a motor whose

axle, placed longitudinally, drives a central spur-wheel on one axle of the bogie by means of a worm. An advantage possessed by two inotors is that, by coupling them in series or parallel, or by using one only, the driver is able to command different grades of power without the use of resistance coils.

TRACTION

volume of traffic requires it, a nearly continuous stream. Each train consists of a series of buckets or skeps whieh hang each from a single running wheel or pair of wheels, and are spaced by wooden connecting bars. A small electric motor, which hangs below the line and is geared by spur and chain gearing to a pair of driving- wheels, forms the locomotive. In general, the line is slpctricalle divided into equal sections, which have the same length as a single train, so that the front carriage is always on the section in advance of the rear carriage. The train is furnished with a continuous conductor from end to end, through which it makes electric con- taet between the section in front and the section behind, and the motor is included in the circuit of this conductor. Two systems of working are used, which enable trains to be run either in electrical series or ‘‘ parallel.” In the series system the successive sections of the line are electrically connected, so long as no train is on them, by means of switches at the joints between the sections, so that the whole forms one continuous conductor, When a train comes on any one section it breaks contact at the joint between that section and the one behind it; the circuit, however, remains closed through the conductor on the train itsclf, and in this way the motor receives the current which is passing through the line. Other trains at other places in the line receive the same current, each by breaking for the time the ordinary contact between the two sections it touches, and substituting a contact through its own conductor and motor. When a train leaves a section it replaces the switch that makes contact with the section behind. If, how- ever, there are more than one train on the line, an automatic block system is added to prevent one from overtaking another by letting the section which a train leaves stand insulated for a time. No control is exercised from the vehicles themselves; in fact, the trains run without attendants. In the simplest parallel system of tel- pherage a continuous conductor distinct

from the line is stretched alongside of it; tho trains make contact between the two. The

figure shows another plan, known as the cross-over parallel system,

Cross-over Parallel System of Telpherage.

which is suitable where a double line of trains is desired. There A,, B,, Ag… form successive sections of one line, and By, Ag, B. . of another. Aj, As, A,... are electrically continuous, an are connected to one pole of the dynamo. 8, B,, B;.. . are also continuous, and are connected to the other pole. Thus the sections of each line are alternately positive and negative, Any train, such as P or Q, bridges the gap between two sections and receives a current which suffers reversal as the train passes from one section to the next. It is to be regretted that space does not admit of any description of the details of telpherage, many of which present the utmost ingenuity. The system was shown to be practicable by experiments on an experimental line at Weston. The first telpher line on a commercial basis was erected in 1885 at Glynde, in Sussex, and has been maintained in operation notwithstanding many diffi- culties inseparable from so completely novel an undertaking.

The electrical propulsion of boats, by means of storage batteries, Pro- has been the subject of several successful experiments, but has not pulsion In this connexion reference should of boats.

found systematic application. be made to a scheme proposed by Ayrton and Perry for the haulage of boats on canals or of waggons upon roads. Their proposal was to have a conductor ranged along the towing path, or along the side of the road. A motor running on this was to pull itself along and drag the boat or waggon after it.

In aerial navigation, storage batteries working an electric motor Aerial

In cars driven by storage batteries the same | have been used to drive the propeller of a “ dirigible” balloon. navigatiou.

object may be secured by various groupings of the cells. Space does not admit of more than the briefest reference to the Theory Tel- Telpherage.—\n all the methods of electrical traction to which | theory of electric motors. A motor may be regarded as a dynamo of | pherage. reference has been made the road on which the cars run is essen- | acting to produce an electromotive force ¢ which is opposite in motors.

tially a railway or tramiway of the kind used in horse traction and steam traction. In 1881 the late Prof. Fleeming Jenkin devised a system of electric locomotion in which the vehicles are hung upon what resembles an exaggerated telegraph line. To this he gave the name of telpherage. As developed by the inventor, in conjunction with Messrs Ayrton and Perry, the system is especially adapted to the transport of goods at a slow speed, in localities where the traffic would be insufficient to support an ordinary railway.

The telpher line is a steel rod or cable, suspended from brackets on posts about 70 feet apart; it serves at once as carrier of weights and conductor of electricity. The line may be made rigid, and in that case a high speed of transit may be attained; but in general the line is flexible aud the trains travel slowly in what may be, if the ; 1 For a comparison of the weights to be drawn and the tractive force required in different systems, see a paper by Mr Reckenzaun, lect. Rev., May 21, 1886.

. 2 For details of the construction and working expenses of these and other lines, see the valuable paper by Mr Reckenzaun, Jour. Soc. of Arts, April 20, 1887.

Statistics of American lines will be found in a paper by T. C. Martin, read before the American Institute of Electrical Engineers, May 18, 1887,

direction to the externally impressed electromotive force E. The resultant electromotive force is E—e, and on this, together with the resistance of the circuit, the strength of the current C depends. The electrical power supplied is CE, and of this the motor utilizes Ce. The efficiency is e/E. It is easily seen, as was first shown by Jacobi, that the power developed by the motor (Ce) is a maximum when c=}E, But this condition of maximum power involves that half the energy supplied is wasted ; to secure higher efficiency,

motors are in practice run at much less than their maximum power, so that e may approach more nearly to equality with E. The field magnets of motors, like those of dynamos, may be wound with coils in series with the armature coil, or with coils forming a shunt to the armature, or with a combination of both. A very important part of the theory deals with the automatic regulation of speed by the use of compound winding. In a paper of fundamental importance with regard to this part of the subject, Messrs Ayrton and Perry* have shown that a motor may be made to run

3 “Electromotors and their Government,” Jour. Soc, Tel. Eng. , 1883.

at constant speed under varying loads when the external electro- motive force is eonstant, provided that a differential combination of direct shunt and reverse series winding be employed,—the shunt coil serving to energize the magnets and the series eoil to reduce their magnetism to a certain extent when the current in the arma- ture is increased. The proportion of series to shunt winding neeessary for this result depends on the relation of the resistance of the armature to that of the shunt coil, and it is an easy deduction from the theory that, when the resistance of the armature is negligibly small, the speed of a simple shunt-wound motor driven by means of a constant external electromotive force is sensibly constant, a result which has been experimentally demonstrated by Mr Mordey (Phil. AMag., Jan. 1886). It is shown in the same paper that a similar means of governing may be used when the current passing through the motor is kept constant, instead of the external electromotive force. The principle of differential com- pound winding to secure automatic regulation of speed has been applied in several American motors, notably by Mr Sprague.

Details of most of the electrical tramways and railways mentioned in the text will be found in the journals Electrical Review, Electrician, and Electrical World (New York) of the dates referred to. See also he Electric Motor and its Appli- cations, by T. C, Martin and J. Wetzler (New York, 1887). The Portrush line is described by E. Hopkinson and A. Siemens in a paper read before the Society of Arts, April 1883. For telpherage, in addition to articles in the journals named, see Fleeming Jenkin, ‘‘On

Telpherage," Jour. Soc. Arts, May 1884; also Profes- stonal Papers of the Corps of Royal Engineers, Chatham, vol. x., 1884. (J. A. E.)

TRACY, Antoine Louis Craupre Dersturt, ComTE DE (1754-1836), was born in Bourbonnais on July 20, 1754. The noble family to which he belonged was of Scottish descent, tracing its origin to Walter Stutt, a gentleman who in 1420 accompanied the earls of Buchan and Douglas to the court of France, and whose family afterwards rose to be counts of Tracy. The father of Destutt de Tracy (as he is usually called) was a soldier, and died a field-marshal. Destutt de Tracy began his studies under the superintend- ence of his mother, and afterwards prosecuted them at the university of Strasburg. During his student days, how- ever, he was chiefly noted for his skill in every kind of manly exercise. On leaving the university he enibraced a military career, in which his advance was rapid. When the Revolution broke, Tracy, who was then thirty-five years of age, took an active part in the provincial assembly of Bourbonnais. He was elected a deputy of the nobility to the states-general, where he sat alongside of his friend La Fayette. In the spring of 1792 he received the rank of field-marshal, along with the sole command of the cavalry th the army of the North ; but, as the conduct of affairs fell more and more into the hands of the extremists, he took an indefinite leave of absence, and settled with his family at Auteuil. Here, in the society of Condorcet and Cabanis, he devoted himself to scientific studies. Under the Reign of Terror he was arrested and imprisoned for nearly a year. It was his solitary meditations at this period, we are told, which discovered to him his true bent. Under the influence of Locke and Condillac he aband- oned the natural sciences for tlle study of mind. On the motion of Cabanis he was named associate of the Institute in the class of the moral and political sciences. He soon began to attract attention by the mémovres which he read before his colleagues—papers which formed the first draft of his comprehensive work on ideology. The society of "ideologists" at Auteuil embraced, besides Cabanis and Tracy, who have been called respectively the physiologist and the metaphysician of the school, Volney, who has been called its moralist, and Garat, its professor in the National Institute. Under the empire he was a member of the senate, but took little part in its deliberations. Under the Restoration he became a peer of France, but protested against the reactionary spirit of the Government, and re- mained in opposition. In 1808

he was elected a member of the French Academy in room of Cabanis, and in 1832 he was also named a member of the Academy of Moral Sciences on its reorganization. He appeared, however, only once at its conferences. He was old and nearly blind, and filled with sadness, it is said, by the loss of his friends and the discredit into which his most firmly

cherished opinions had fallen. “His only distraction was to have Voltaire read aloud to him.” He died at Paris on the 9th of March 1836.

Destutt de Tracy. was the last eminent representative of the sensualistic school whieh Condillac founded in France upon a one- sided interpretation of the doctrines of Locke. He pushed the sensualistic principles of Condillae to their last consequences, being in full agreement with the materialistic views of his friend Cabanis, though the attention of the latter was devoted more to the physio- logieal, that of Tracy to the psychological or ‘‘ ideological ” side of man. His ideology, he frankly stated, formed ‘‘a part of zoology,” or, as we should say, of biology. To think is to feel. The four faculties into which he divides the eonscious life—perception, memory, judgment, will—are all varieties of sensation. Pereeption is sensation caused by a present affection of the external extremities of the nerves; memory is sensation caused, in the absence of pre- sent exeitation, by dispositions of the nerves which are the result of past experiences; judgment is the perception of relations between sensations, and is itself a spccies of sensation, beeause if we are aware of the sensations we must also be aware of the relations between them; will he identifies with the feeling of desire, and therefore includes it as a variety of sensation. It is easy to see that such eonclusions ignore important distinctions, and are, indced, to a large éxtent an abuse of language. As a psychologist Destutt de Tracy deserves eredit for his distinction between active and passive touch, which has developed into the modern theory of the museular sense. His account of the notion of external existence, as derived, not from pure sensation, but from the experience of action on the one hand and resistanee on the other, may be compared with the account of Bain and later psyehologists. Tracy worked up his separate monographs extending over a number of years into the Eléments d’ Idéologie (1817-18 and 1824-5), which presents his complete doctrine. He also wrote in 1806 a Commentaire sur l’ Esprit des Lois de Montesquieu, in which he argues ably in sup- port of a free constitution on grounds whieh hardly admit of being harmonized with his general philosophieal prineiples. The book was translated in America by his friend President Jefferson, who reeommended it for use in the colleges. The first Freneh edition appeared in 1817, and it was several times reprinted.

TRADE, Boarp or. The greater part of such super- vision of commerce and industry as exists in the United Kingdom is exercised by the “ Committee of Privy Council . for Trade ” (see Privy Councit), or, as it is usually called, the Board of Trade. As early as the 14th century councils and commissions had been formed from time to time to advise parliament in matters of trade, but it was not till the middle of the 17th century, under the Commonwealth, that any department of a pernianent character was attempted. Cromwell’s policy in this respect was continued under the Restoration, and in 1660 a committee of the privy council was appointed for the purpose of obtaining information as to the imports and exports of the country, and improving trade. A few years later another committee of the council was appointed to act as intermediaries between the crown and the colonies, or foreign plantations, as they were then called. This joint commission of trade and plantations was abolished in 1675, and it was not until twenty years later that the Board of Trade was revived under William III. Among the chief objects set before this board were the inquiry into trade obstacles and the employment of the poor ; the state of the silver currency was also a subject on which John Locke, its secretary, lost no time in making representations to the Government. Locke’s retirement in 1700 removed any chance of the Board of Trade advo- cating more enlightened opinions on commercial subjects than those generally held at that time. It had only a small share in making the constitutions of the colonies, as all the American ones except Georgia and Nova Scotia were formed before the reign of Charles II.; and in 1760 a secretary of state for the colonies was appointed, to whom the control drifted away. In 1780 Burke made his cele- brated attack on the public offices, which resulted in the abolition of the board. In 1786, however, another per- manent committee of the privy council was formed by order in council,‘and with one or two small exceptions the legal constitution of the Board of Trade is still regulated by that order. Under it all the principal officers of state,

including the first lords of the treasury and admiralty, the secretaries of state, and certain members of the privy council, among whom was the

archbishop of Canterbury, obtained seats at the board ex officio; and ten unofficial members, including several eminent statesmen, were also placed on the committee.. The duties of the revived board were made the same as they were in the beginning of the century, but, in addition, the regulation of the food supply of the country, by restricting or relaxing the export and import of corn, was brought into prominence owing to a larger population requiring to be fed. New duties were thrown on the board by the growth of joint-stock com- panies, the development of railways, and the increase in shipping, and it was necessary to break it up into depart- ments charged with the administration of the various Acts of Parliament. The Board of Trade thus became a mere name, the president being practically the secretary of state for trade, and the vice-president became, in 1867, a parlia- mentary secretary, with similar duties to those of a par- liamentary under-secretary of state. At present, besides the president, who has usually a seat in the cabinet, the parliamentary secretary, and a permanent secretary, there are six assistant secretaries, each in charge of a department.

1. The Commercial Department is the real remains of the original Board of Trade, as it combines the charge of the trade statistics with the general consultative duties with which King Charles II.'s board was originally entrusted. The statistical work includes compiling the abstracts relating to the United Kingdom, the col- onies, and foreign countries, the supervision of the trade accounts, and the preparation of shipping, railway, emigration, and fishery statistics. A record of the prices of corn has been obtained from actual sales in the chief market towns for about a hundred years, the original object being the sliding scale of corn duties, but these are now continued to govern the tithe payments, and form an un- broken series of prices based on actual transactions, and not mere market quotations. Foreign and colonial customs tariffs and regulations are also matters on which information is published, and labour statistics are for the future to have special attention. In 1872 one of the most important functions of the commercial department, viz., the negotiation of commercial treaties, was trans- ferred to the Foreign Office, but the Board of Trade is still con- sulted on these matters by the Foreign Office, as well as by the Colonial Office on colonial commercial matters, and by the other public departments. The Bankruptcy Act of 1883 added a new branch of work, but for this there is now a separate establishment under an inspector-general. The last new work

undertaken by the department is the publication (begun August 1886) of a Monthly Journal of commercial information, chiefly from official sources.

2. The Railway Department was originally constituted in 1840, and performs multifarious duties under various Railway Acts, including the inspection of railways before they are open, inquiries into accidents, reports on proposed railways, approval of bye-laws, appointment of arbitrators in disputes, as well as many duties under private Railway Acts. The inspection of tramways, their bye-laws and ‘‘ provisional orders,” are all dealt with here, as are similar orders relating to gas and water schemes and to electric lighting. Patents, designs, and trade marks are now dealt with by the Patent Office, which is subordinate to the railway department, and copy- right, art unions, and industrial exhibitions are also among the matters dealt with by the departinent.

8. The Marine Department was created a separate branch of the Board of Trade in 1850, about which time many new and import- ant marine questions came under the Board of Trade, such, for example, as the survey of passenger steamers, the compulsory examination of masters and nates, the establishment of shipping offices for the engagement and discharge of seamen. Further work fell to the marine department by the Act of 1853, which gave it the control of lighthouse funds, and to a certain extent of pilotage. The consolidating Merchant Shipping Act of 1854 and subsequent legislation so much increased the department that in 1866 it was divided into three, viz., the present marine department, which deals with ships and seamen, the harbour department, and the finance department.

4. The Harbour Department was, as stated above, a branch of the marine department until 1866, so far as it is connected with the physical adjuncts of navigation, but various other matters have since been added, ¢.g., the charge of the foreshores belonging to the crown, formerly managed by the commissioners of woods and forests, and the protection of navigable harbours and channels, long under the control of the Admiralty. Lighthouse funds, pro- visional orders for oyster and mussel fisheries, the management of

Holyhead and Ramsgaté harbours and of Dover pier, wreck, and quarantine are all ainong the matters dealt with by this depart- ment, which also has charge of the standards department for weights and measures.

5. The Finanee Department was, like the harbour department, separated in 1866 from the marine department. The accounts of all the branches of the Board of Trade are in its charge, including the subordinate officcs. It also deals with the accounts of harbours, lighthouses, and mercantile marine offices, and of the merchant, seamen's fund, and with the consuls' accounts for disabled scamen abroad. Savings banks and seamen's money orders are also among the accounts and payments with which it is charged, and outside these marine matters it has to prepare for parliament the life in- surance companies' accounts and to take charge of the bankruptcy estate accounts.

6. The Fisheries Department.—By a recent Act the powers of the Home Office over salmon and other fisherics have been transferred to the Board of Trade, and a small department has consequently been created charged with the care of those industries.

TRADE-MARKS. There seems no reason to doubt that the practice of employing a mark to denote the goods of a particular trader (not necessarily the manufacturer) grew out of the use of signs, which, first affixed to the dealer's shop, were afterwards represented on his tokens, and eventually placed on the goods themselves. Trade- marks proper appear to have been in use in England in the reign of Elizabeth. The first reported case was in 1783, when Lord Mansfield decided that the sale by the defendants of a certain medicine under the name or mark of the plaintiff was a fraud. By other decisions it was affirmed that the use of another's trade-mark was action- able, even without the intent to defraud. The law, how- ever, remained in an unsatisfactory condition till, by the Merchandise Marks Act in 1862, it was made a misdemean- our to forge or counterfeit a trade-mark, while penalties were inflicted for the sale of articles bearing a forged mark.

In 1875 the Trade Marks Registration Act established for the first time a registry of trade-marks in Britain, greatly facilitating the proof of title. A more precise definition of a trade-mark was also provided. In 1883 this Act was repealed by the Patents, Designs, and Trade Marks Act, in which its principal provisions were incorporated. All proceedings for the registration

of trade-marks are now regulated by the Patents Act. A trade-mark may be a name printed or otherwise delineated in some particular or distinctive manner, or a signature, or a device, mark, brand, &c. Registration is compulsory, at least in the sense that the owner cannot prevent infringement or sue for damages for infringement unless he has registered, though it would appear that this disability exists only in the case of a mark capable of being registered under the Act. There are certain ¢xdicia which cannot be registered because they do not fall within the definition of a trade-mark, but which may yet be protected at equity. Registration is deemed equivalent to public use of the mark, and, after the expira- tion of five years, is conclusive evidence of right to exclusive use. Applications for registration have to be addressed to the comptroller of patents ; should he refuse to register, there is an appeal to the Board of Trade. If there is opposition, the matter goes to the High Court of Justice. Registration holds good for fourteen years, at the end of which time it has to be renewed. Special provision is made in the Act for the retention of certain of the ancient privileges of the Cutlers Company of Sheffield. The total number of marks now upon the register is nearly 50,000.

The Customs Consolidation Act, 1876, forbids the importation of articles of foreign manufacture bearing any mark purporting to be the mark of manufacturers resident in the United Kingdom, or stating or implying that such articles were manufactured in the United Kingdom. The Merchandise Marks Act, 1887, consolidated and amended the law of offences relating to trade-marks and trade descriptions. It repealed the Act of 1862 and replaced it by fuller provisions. It is now an offence to forge a trade-mark, to falsely

apply to goods any trade-mark or any mark so nearly resembling a trade-mark as to deceive, to make any die, &c., for the purpose of

forging or for being used for forging a trade-mark, to apply any false trade description to goods, to dispose of or have in possession any die, &c., for the purpose of forging a trade-mark, or to cause any of the above-mentioned things to be done. There are special sections in the Act dealing with its application to watches and watch-cases. Where a watch-case is of foreign manufacture it must, if stamped at an assay office in the United Kingdom,

bear a mark differing from the mark placed upon watches manufactured in the United Kingdom. A warranty is implied in the sale of goods bearing a trade-mark or trade description. See WARRANTY.

In most foreign countries provisions have long existed for the registration of trade-marks ; and they also form one of the classes of “industrial property” for the protection of which an inter- national convention was formed in 1883. This convention now includes sixteen states,—the more important being Belgium, France, Great Britain, Italy, Netherlands, Norway, Portugal, Spain, Sweden, Switzerland, and the United States. The subjects of all the contracting states enjoy in each state the same rights and privileges as that state grants to its own subjects for the pro- tection of trade-inarks. Registration also in one of the states con- fers certain rights of priority in the others.

United States.—The legislation of the different States and Territories varies considerably, some providing for the registration of trade-marks either with or without protection for unregistered trade-marks, while others provide only for protection without registration. On March 3, 1881, Congress passed an Act ‘‘to authorize the registration of trade-marks and to protect the same,” which provides that owners of trade-marks used in commerce with foreign nations or with the Indian tribes, provided such owners be domiciled in the United States or located in any foreign country or tribe which affords similar privileges to citizens of the United States, may obtain registration of trade-marks under the Act. Registration is not compulsory ; failure to register a trade-mark, or to renew registration, does not deprive the owner of any remedy he might have at law or in equity; and the courts will, generally speaking, protect the unregistered equally with the registered.

For fuller information see L. B. Sebastian’s Law of Trade Marks, or R. W. Wallace’s edition of the Patents, Designs, and Trade Marks Act ; and in Amcrica Rowland Cox’s American Trade-Mark Cases, Cox’s Manual of Trade-Mark Cases, and William Henry Brown’s Treatise on the Law of Trade Marks.

TRADE UNIONS are combinations for regulating the relations between workmen and masters, workmen and

tive conditions on the conduct of any industry or business. By the common law all such combinations were, with cer- tain rare and unimportant exceptions, regarded as illegal. They were considered to be contrary to public policy, and were treated as conspiracies in restraint of trade. Those who were engaged or concerned in them were liable to be criminally prosecuted by indictment or information, and to be punished on conviction by fine and imprisonment. The offence was precisely the same whether it was committed by masters or by workmen. But, although the provisions of the common law applied mutatis mutandis to both of them alike, it was, practically speaking, in reference rather to the latter than to the former that their effects were developed and ascertained. While it was held to be perfectly lawful for workmen, as individuals, to consent or to refuse to labour for any remuneration or for any time they pleased, when two or more of them joined together, and agreed to labour only on certain stipulated terms with respect either to the payment or the duration of their labour, they were guilty ¢pso facto of a miisdemeanour. It was immaterial whether the end they had in view was to determine wages or to limit work; or whether the means they adopted for promoting its attainment was a simul- taneous withdrawal from employment, an endeavour to prevent other workmen from resuming or taking employ- ment, or an attempt to control the masters in the manage- ment of their trade, the engagement of journeymen or apprentices, or the use of machinery or industrial processes ; or whether in seeking to enforce their demands they relied merely on advice and solicitation, or resorted to reproach and menace, or proceeded to actual violence. In any event their combination in itself constituted a criminal conspiracy, ~~and rendered them amenable to prosecution aud punish~~ ment.

| tion laws," in the session of 1824. workmen, or masters and masters, or for imposing restric- |

| proper."

From the reign of Edward I. to the reign of George | IV. the operation of the common law was enforced and |

enlarged by between thirty and forty Acts of Parliament, all of which were more or less distinctly and explicitly designed to prohibit and prevent what we have learned to describe and recognize as the “ organization of labour.” But the rise of the manufacturing system towards the end of the last century, and the revolution which accompanied it in the industrial arrangements of the country, were attended by a vast and unexpected extension of the move- ment which the legislature had for so long and with so much assiduity essayed to suppress. Among the multi- tudes of workmen who then began to be employed in single factories or in neighbouring factories in the same towns, trade unions in the form of secret societies speedily became numerous and active, and to meet the novel requirements of the situation a more summary method of procedure than that which had hitherto been available was provided by the 40th Geo. III. cap. 106. By this statute, passed in 1800, it was enacted that all persons combining with others to advance their wages or decrease the quantity of their work, or in any way to affect or control those who carried on any manufacture or trade in the conduct and management thereof, might be convicted before one justice of the peace, and might be committed to the common jail for any time not exceeding three calendar months, or be kept to hard labour in the house of correction for a term of two calendar months. The discontent and disorder of which, in conjunction with a state of commercial depres- sion and national distress, the introduction of steam and improved appliances generally into British manufactures was productive in the first quarter of the current century led to the nomination of a select committee by the House of Commons, to inquire into the whole question of what were popularly and comprehensively designated the “combina- After taking evidence, the committee reported to the House that “those laws had not only not been efficient to prevent combinations either of masters or workmen, but on the contrary had, in the opinion of many of both parties, had a tendency to produce mutual irritation and distrust, and to give a violent character to the combinations, and to render them highly dangerous to the peace of the community.” They further reported that in their judgment “ masters and workmen should be freed from such restrictions as regards the rate of wages and the hours of working, and be left at perfect liberty to make such agreements as they mutually think They therefore recommended that “the statute laws which interfered in these particulars between masters and workmen should be repealed,” and also that “the common law under which

a peaceable meeting of masters or workmen might be prosecuted should be altered.” In pursuance of their report, the 4th Geo. IV. cap. 95 was at once drafted, brought in, and passed. But the immediate results of the change which it effected were regarded as so inconvenient, formidable, and alarming that in the session of 1825 the House of Commons appointed another select committee to re-examine the various problems, and review and reconsider the evidence which had been submitted to their predecessors in the previous year. They reported without delay in favour of the total repeal of the 4th Geo. IV. cap. 95, and the restoration of those provisions of the combination laws, whether statutory or customary, which it had been more particularly intended to abrogate. The consequence was the enactment of the 6th Geo. IV. cap. 129, of which the preamble declares that the 4th Geo. IV. cap. 95 had not been found effectual, and that combinations such as it had legalized were “injurious to trade and commerce, dangerous to the tranquillity of the country, and especially prejudicial to the interests of all who were concerned in them.” The effect of the 6th Geo. IV. cap, 129 was to leave the common law of conspiracy

in full force against all combinations in restraint of trade, except such as it expressly exempted from its operation as it had been before the 4th Geo. IV. cap. 95 was passed. It comprised, however, within itself the whole of the statute law relating to the subject, and under it no persons were liable to punishment for meeting together for the sole purpose of consulting upon and determining the rate of wages or prices which they, being present, would require for their work or pay to their workmen, or the hours for which they would work or require work in any trade or business, or for entering into any agreement, verbal or written, for the purpose of fixing the rate of wages or prices which the parties to it should so receive or pay. But all persons were subjected to a maximum punishment of three months’ imprisonment with hard labour who should by violence, threats or intimidation, molestation, or obstruction do, or endeavour to do, or aid, abet, or assist in doing or endeavouring to do, any of a series of things inconsistent with freedom of contract which the Act enumerated and defined. Afterwards, in order to remove certain doubts which had arisen as to the true import and meaning of the words “molestation” and ‘

obstruction," it was provided by the 22d Vict. cap. 34 that "no person, by reason merely of his endeavouring peaceably and in a reasonable manner, and without threat or intimidation direct or indirect, to persuade others to cease or abstain from work, in order to obtain the rate of wages or the altered hours of labour agreed to by him and others, should be deemed to have been guilty of ' molestation ' or 'obstruction.'" In spite of the partial recognition which trade unions had thus received, they continued to be un- lawful, although not necessarily criminal, associations. In certain cases, they were by statute exempted from penal consequences, and their members were empowered to combine for specified purposes, and to collect funds by voluntary contributions for carrying them into effect. But in the estimation of the common law the special privileges which had been accorded to them under particular circum- stances did not confer any general character of legality upon them, and where their rules were held to be in restraint of trade, as in the prohibition of piece-work or the limitation of the number of apprentices, they were still regarded as conspiracies. Hence they were practically excluded from the advantages in regard to the security of their property and the settlement of their disputes which, under the Friendly Societies Act, 18th and 19th Vict. cap. 63, had been granted to all associations established for any purposes which were not illegal. In this condition the law was when what became notorious as the " Sheffield and Manchester outrages " suggested the appointment of the royal commission on trade unions, which investigated the subject from 1867 to 1869. The outcome was, first, a temporary measure for the more effectual protection of the funds of trade unions, passed in 1869, and, secondly, the two measures which, as amended and amending, are cited together as the "Trade Union Acts 1871 and 1876"— the 34th and 35th Vict. cap. 22 and the 39th and 40th Vict. cap. 31.

By these statutes, construed with tne Conspiracy an Protection of Property Act, 1875, the 38 and 39 Vict. cap. 86, the law relat- ing to combinations, whether of workmen or of masters, assumed the shape in which it exists at the present time. In connexion with trade disputes no person'can now be prosecuted for conspiracy to commit an act which would not be criminal if committed by him singly, and consequently employers and employed alike may lawfully do in combination all that they would be entitled to do as individuals. The purposes of a trade union arc not to be deemed illegal

merely because they are in restraint of trade, and the cir- cumstance that they are in restraint of trade is not to render any member of it liable to prosecution, nor is it to avoid or make void- able any agreement or trust relating to it. No court, however, can entcrtain legal proccedings with the object of directly enforcing or recovering damages for the breach of an agreement between the

members of a trade union as such, concerning the conditions on which the members for the time being shall or shall not sell their goods, transact their business, employ or be employed, or the pay- ment by any person of any subscription or penalty to a trade union, or for the application of the funds of a trade union to provide benefits or to furnish contributions to any employer or workman not a member of such trade union in consideration of such employer or workman acting in conformity with the rules or resolutions of such trade union, or to discharge any fine imposed upon any person by any court of justice or any agreement made between one trade union and another, or any bond to secure such agreements. But such incapacity to sue on such agreements is not to be taken as constituting any of them illegal. Every person, however, com- mits a misdemeanour, and on convietion is liable to a maximum fine of £20, or to a maximum imprisonment of three months with hard labour, who wilfully and maliciously breaks a contract of service or hiring, knowing, or having reasonable cause to believe, that the probable consequence of his so doing, either alone or in combination with others, will be to endanger human life or cause serious bodily injury, or to expose valuable property, whether real or personal, to destruction or serious injury ; or who, being em- ployed by a municipal authority or by any company or contractor on whom is imposed by Act of Parliament, or who have otherwise assumed, the duty of supplying any place with gas or water, wilfully and maliciously breaks a contract of service or hiring, knowing, or having reasonable cause to believe, that the probable consequence of his so doing, alone or in combination with others, will be to deprive the inhabitants of that place, wholly or in part, of their supply of gas or water; or who, with a view to compel any other person to do or to abstain from doing any act which such other person has a right to abstain from doing or to do, wrongfully and

without legal authority uses violence to or intimidates such other person or his wife or children, or injures his property; or who persistently follows such person about from place to place ; or who hides any tools, clothes, or other property owned or used by such other person, or deprives him of or hinders him in the use thereof; or who watches or besets the house or other place where such person resides or works or carries on business or happens to be, or the approach to such house or place; or who follows such other person with two or more other persons in a disorderly manner in or through any street or road. But attending at or near the house or eis where a person resides or works or carries on busi- ness in order mercly to obtain or communicate information is not watching or besetting within the statute. In regard to registration, trade unions are placed on a similar footing with friendly and provident and industrial societies, and they enjoy all the privileges, advantages, and facilities which those associations possess and command. On their side, however, they have to comply with the same conditions, are subject to the same liabilities, and are com- pelled to make the same periodical returns.

Although there are several large and influential societies among the employers of labour which come within the legal definition of trade unions, what are commonly as well as more accurately meant by trade unions are societies exclusively composed of the employed, —the suppliers of labour whether skilled or unskilled. Of trade

‘unions in this sense, —those of which the members are all artisans or

labourers, —the organization is everywhere pretty much the same, although the rules and regulations of various associations differ in detail more or less distinctly and widely from one another. Their ordinary constitution is that of a society divided into districts, and again into smaller local bodies. The seat of the governing authority —the general or executive council—is usually fixed at some large centre of industry or commerce, as London, Manchester, or Bir- mingham, and it is often changed at stated intervals by a vote of the society at large. Itis the policy of the trade unions, by this method of organization, to extend the area of their influence, and so to increase their power in dealing with the masters or in con- trolling their own members in any emergency. Each of the branches has a separate government for special

purposes. But for general purposes all the branches are under the command of the exccutive council or central committec, which is constituted of members or officers who are elected by the whole society. The terms on which members are admitted are different in different associations. But in all of them there are certain limits as to age and the number of years during which the candidate has been apprenticed to or has worked in the trade. The revenne and reserve of all the societies are derived from admission fees and weekly or monthly subscriptions, together with the amount of the fines which are imposed for neglect of duty and breaches of the rules and regulations. These sources of income arc sufficient for ordinary purposes ; and extraordinary charges, such as are entailed by a “strike” or a ‘‘lock-out,” are nearly always, if not invari- ably, met by means of ‘‘ levies” made on the members by order of the executive council or central committec. The following account of the Amalgamated Society of Engineers may be accepted as furnishing a typical example of the organization and management of a large and flourishing trade union.

TRADE

According to the thirty-third annual Report of that society, it appears that in 1883 the union consisted of 424 branches, chiefly in towns in the British Isles, but with a fair sprinkling in Canada, the United States, Australia, India, and other parts of the globe. The number of members was 50,418.

Ont oOn Ss 501

Amalgamated Society of Engincers the contribution of each member is generally 1s. a week, and if a man be in arrears he is suspended from the benefits of the society, unless indeed he is out of work or in distressed circumstances. At the end of 1883 the union had a balance in hand of £178,128, or upwards of £3, 10s. a man.

In some trade unions—for example, those of the compositors— there is a special body (“fathers of chapels”) whose business it is to see that the rules and regulations of the societies they belong to are faithfully observed in the establishments where they are employed. In others again—for instance, in the National Agricultural Labourers Union, as distinguished from the Federal Union of Agricultural Labourers—the system of management is

completely centralized, the secretary or the executive committee having entire control of the funds and business of the whole association. In all large towns there are trade councils formed of delegates from the different trade unions within their area, whose function it is to discuss and supervise the general interests of the unionists in the several trades of which they are representative. Morcover, an annual trade unions congress is held in some great centre of industry and population in one of the threc kingdoms, at which delegates from almost all the trade unions throughout the realm are present and take part in debating questions, whether social or political, which are of special interest to the working classes, At these assemblies, which have now been held for twenty consecutive years, a parliamentary com- mittee, which remains in existence for the ensuing twelvemonth, is chosen, to whom the whole body of trade unionists looks for counsel and assistance with respect to legislation intended or desired on their behalf. To the action of the trade unions congress and their parliamentary committee much of the legislation which has been recently effected on questions affecting the welfare of the order of the community to which they belong is to be attri- buted,—notably the Employers' Liability Act and the amended Factory and Mines Acts. (See Trade Unions, &c., by William Trant.)

The objects of trade unions are twofold, —first, those of a friendly or benefit society, and, secondly, those of a trade society or guild. In the former capacity they afford relief to their members when they are out of work from any cause, including sickness or accident ; they occasionally provide them with superannuation allowances, and they almost always make burial allowances on account of deceased members and their wives. In the latter capacity it is their special business to promote what they conceive to be the interests of the trade with which they are connected by placing the workmen, so far as combination will fulfil that purpose, on a footing approaching to equality with the capitalists by whom they are employed in the disposal of their labour. Of course this is the great object for which the unions really exist. But, as the com- missioners on trade unions have pointed out, it is found desirable to conjoin the objects of a friendly or benefit society with it, because by that means additional members and funds are obtained, and the authority which the union as a trade society has over its members is thus augmented. The leading aims of all trade union- ism are to increase wages and to diminish the labour by

which it is needful to earn them, and further to secure a more equal distribution of work among the workmen in any given trade than would be the case under a régime of unrestricted competition. Hence their rules prescribe a minimum amount of wages to be accepted and a maximum amount of work to be done by their members, and prohibit piece work or working overtime. The methods by which the unionists endeavour to accomplish their end, which is in a sense the monopoly of the labour market, are either direct or indirect. The direct method is a "strike," or simultaneous cessation of labour on the part of the workmen. It is the ultimate sanction as between the employed and their em- ployers of the demands made by the union. But, where the unionists are strong, the mere threat of a strike is often sufficient to fulfil the intended purpose, and arbitration is still more frequently found effectual for bringing about a settlement or com- promise. The indirect methods to which the trade unionists resort for reaching their aims are by limiting the number of workmen to be employed in any trade and by repressing or discountenancing competition among those who are actually employed in it. Most of them forbid the admission of more than a stipulated proportion of apprentices, and some of them prohibit the engagement of women to do work which can be done by men. Nearly all of them resist the common employment of unionists and non-unionists, and do their best to exclude non-unionists from employment altogether. But the amount expended by trade unions in the conduct of trade disputes is very much less than is generally imagined. Mr George Howell, for instance, showed conclusively in the Contemporary Review that such was the case three or four years ago, and Mr Murchie, the chairman of the parliamentary committee, stated at the trade unions congress at Stockport in the autumn of 1885 that Mr Howell's contentions had been signally confirmed by more recent experience. Taking the seven largest trade unions, those whose statistics had been relied on by Mr Howell—namely, the Amalgamated Engineers, the Ironfounders, the Boiler Makers

and Iron Shipbuilders, the Steam-Engine Makers, Ironmoulders of Scotland, Amalgamated Tailors, and Amalgamated Carpenters and Joiners—he affirmed that, while in the nine years preceding 1884 their receipts were £2,818,548, thcir expenditure was £2,963,186, of which amount £1,207,180

was spent in unemployed benefit, £592, 273 in sick benefit, £975,052 in compensation for loss of tools, superannuations, accidents, funerals, minor grants and benefits, and expense of management, only £188,680 had been spent in connexion with “trade movements,” or about 64 per cent. of the whole sum expended.

There are no really trustworthy means of arriving at anything approaching to an accurate estimate of the actual numerical strength of the trade unions in the United Kingdom. According to the last Report of the registrar general of friendly societies, there were in the year 1883 registered in his office 195 trade unions with 253,088 members and £431,495 funds, of which 12 returned over £10,000 funds, 9 over 10,000 members, and 6 over £10,000 income. But this of course conveys a very inadequate notion of the dimensions to which trade unionism has attained, since many of the largest and most influential societies are still unregistered.

The following table shows the number of delegates and the ageregate membership of the societies represented by them at the trade unions congresses in the years from 1880 to 1886, both inclusive :—

Number} mage | Trade Total Number | Number | of — |gouncils| Unions Ppsiieltos ars sented of Bodies repre- repre- (0) Persons sented by directly Delegates.| repre- Beited sented repre- Trade (approxi- sented. ‘ |directly.| sented. | Councils. mate). 1880 122 105 | (7 88 474,213 92,511 | 381,702 1881 154 122 18 104 460,797 86,376 | 374,421 1882 153 126 23 103 508,337 102,972 | 405,365

1883 173 135 21 114 561,091 94,166 466,925

1884 | 142 116 21 95 597,636 109,984 487,652 1885 162 136 27 109 631,606 131,368 | 500,238

1886 143 121 24 97 635,380 122,207 513,173

Weshallnotbefar wrong, perhaps, ifwesetdownthenumberof trade unionists in all the three kingdoms at about 800,000. (F. DR.)

TRAGEDY. See Drama.

TRAJAN (c. 538-117 a.p.). Marcus Utprus TRAIANus, the fourteenth Roman emperor, was a native of Italica, in Spain. The family to which he belonged was probably Italian and not Iberian by blood. His father began life as a common legionary soldier, and fought his way up to the consulship and the governorship of Asia. He was one of the hardest fighters in Judea under Vespasian and Titus ; he served too against the Parthians, and won the highest military distinction open to a subject, the grant of the triumphal insignia. Thus he acquired a prominent place among the brand new patricians created by the Flavians as substitutes for the nobles of old descent who had succumbed to the cruelty and rapacity of the emperors from Tiberius to Nero. The younger Trajan was rigor- ously trained by his father, and deeply imbued with the same principles and tastes. bred. No better representative of the true old hardy Roman type, little softened either by luxury or educa- tion, had come to the head of affairs since the days of Marius. The date of his birth was probably 53 a.p. His training was almost exclusively military, but his ex- perience as an officer gave him an acquaintance with almost every important province of the empire which was of priceless value to him when he came to the throne. For ten years, he held a commission as military tribune, which took him to many lands far asunder ; then he filled important posts in Syria and Spain. How much actual warfare Trajan saw in those days we can hardly tell ; he certainly went through some severe service under his father’s command against the Parthians. he had achieved a considerable reputation. At that time L. Antonius Saturninus headed a rebellion in Germany, which threatened seriously to bring Domitian’s rule to an

end. ‘Trajan was ordered in hot haste from Further Spain Although he carried his troops over that |

to the Rhine. long and arduous march with almost unexampled rapidity,

TR A—

He was a soldier born and |

By the year 89 |

i A

But his promptitude raised him higher in the favour of Domitian, and he was advanced to the consulship in 91.

| Of the next five years of his life we know nothing posi-

tively. It is not unlikely that they were spent at Rome or in Italy in the fulfilment of some official duties. When the revolution of 96 came, and Nerva replaced the murdered Domitian, Trajan had conferred upon him one of the most important posts in the empire, that of consular legate of Upper Germany. An officer whose nature, as the event showed, was interpenetrated with the spirit of legality was a fitting servant of a revolution whose aim it was to substitute legality for personal caprice as the dominant principle of affairs. The short reign of Nerva really did start the empire on a new career, which lasted more than three quarters of a century. But it also demon- strated how impossible it was for any one to govern at all who had uo claim, either personal or inherited, to the respect of the legions. Nerva saw that if he could not find an Augustus to control the army, the army would find another Domitian to trample the senate under foot. In his difficulties he took counsel with L. Licinius Sura, a lifelong friend of Trajan, and in October 97 he ascended the Capitol, and with all due solemnity proclaimed that he adopted Trajan as his son. The senate confirmed the choice, and acknowledged the emperor's adopted son as his successor. In a letter which Nerva sent at once to Trajan he quoted most significantly a line from the begin- ning of the Iliad, where Chryses, insulted by Acliilles, prays to Apollo: " May thy shafts afford me vengeance on the Greeks for my tears." After a little hesitation Trajan accepted the position, which was marked by the titles of imperator, Cesar, and Germanicus, and by the tribunician authority. He immediately proceeded to Lower Germany, to assure himself of the fidelity of the troops in that province, and while at Cologne he received news of Nerva's death (January 98). The authority of the new emperor was recognized at once all the empire over. The novel fact that a master of the Romans should have been born on Spanish soil seems to have passed with little reinark, and this very absence of notice is significant. Trajan's first care as emperor was to write to the senate an assurance like that which had been given by Nerva, that he would neither kill nor degrade any senator. He ordered the establishment of a temple and cult in honour of his adoptive father, but he

did not present himself at Rome for nearly two years after his accession. Possibly he had taken measures before Nerva's death to secure the revenge which Nerva craved, but probably did not live to see. In his dealings with the mutinous pretorians the strength of the new emperor's hand was shown at once. He ordered a portion of the force to Germany. They did not venture to disobey, and were distributed among the legions there. Those who remained at Rome were easily overawed and reformed. It is still more surprising that the soldiers should have quietly submitted to a reduction in the amount of the donative or gift which it was custom- ary for them to receive from a new emperor, though the civil population of the capital were paid their largess (congt- arium) in full. By politic management Trajan was able to represent the diminution as a sort of discount for immediate payment, while the civilians had to wait a con- siderable time before their full due was handed to them. The secret of Trajan's power lay in his close personal relations with the officers and men of the army and in the soldierly qualities which commanded their esteem. He possessed courage, justice, and frankness to a high degree. Having a good title to military distinction himself, he could afford, as the unwarlike emperors could not, to be generous to his officers. The common soldiers, on the

he only arrived after the insurrection had been put down, | other hand, were fascinated by his personal prowess and

EA) AN

his somewhat ostentatious caniaraderie. His features were firm and clearly cut; his figure was tall and soldierly, and exhibited the sinewy hard health of a veteran cam- paigner. His hair was already grey before he came to the throne, though he was not more than forty-four years old. The stoutness of the emperor's arm had been proved in the face of his men in manya hard fight. When on service he used the mean fare of the common private, dining on salt pork, cheese, and sour wine. Nothing pleased him better than to take part with the centurion or the soldier in fencing or other military exercise, and he would applaud any shrewd blow which fell upon his own helmet. He loved to display his acquaintance with the career of dis- tinguished veterans, and to talk with them of their bat- tles and their wounds. Probably he lost nothing of his popularity with the army by occasional free

indulgence in sensual pleasures, with which, as Bacon remarks, the soldier is apt to pay himself for the perils he encounters. Yet every man felt and knew that no detail of military duty, however minute, escaped the emperor's eye, and that any relaxation of discipline would be rigidly punished, yet with unwavering justice. Trajan emphasized at once his personal control and the constitutionality of his sway by bearing on his campaigns the actual title of " proconsul," which no other emperor had done. All things considered, it is not surprising that he was able, without serious opposition from the army, to remodel the whole military institutions of the empire, and to bring them into a shape from which there was comparatively little departure so long as the army lasted. In disciplinary matters no emperor since Augustus had been able to keep so strong a control over the troops. Pliny rightly praises Trajan as the lawgiver and the founder of discipline, and Vegetius classes Augustus, Trajan, and Hadrian together as restorers of the morale of the army. The confidence which existed between Trajan and his army finds expression in some of the coins of his reign.

For nearly two years after his election Trajan did not appear in Rome. He had decided already what the great task of his reign should be—the establishment of security upon the dangerous north-eastern frontier. Before visiting the capital he determined to put affairs in train for the attainment of this great object. He made a thorough in- spection of the great lines of defence between the Danube and the Rhine, and framed and partly carried out a vast scheme for strengthening and securing them. The policy of opposing uncivilized tribes by the construction of the limes, a raised embankment of earth or other material, intersected here and there by fortifications, was not his invention, but it owed in great measure its development to him. It is probable that the northernmost part of the great limes Germanizx, from the Rhine at Rheinbrohl, nearly midway between Coblenz and Bonn, to a point on the Main east of Frankfort, where that river suddenly changes its course from north to west, was begun by Domitian. The extension of this great barrier southwards was undertaken by Trajan, though we cannot say how far he carried the work, which was not entirely completed till long after his time. The dimes leaves the Main at Milten- berg, a point at which the north and south course of the river is broken by a great angle, and then follows a hne generally parallel to the stream of the Neckar, till it reaches Lorch, a place between Stuttgart and

Aalen. Here it meets the so-called dimes Retizx, which trends eastward till it cuts the Danube at Kelheim, a place some distance short of Ratisbon, the ancient Castra Regina. This grand work, which would have excited the envy of Augustus, is trace- able in its main extent at the present day. We may with- out hesitation follow the opinion of Mommsen, who main- tains that the dimes was not intended, like Hadrian's wall

between the Tyne and the Solway, and like the great wall of China, to oppose an absolute barrier against incursions from the outside. It was useful as marking definitely the boundary of the Roman sway, and as assuring the Romans that no inroad could be made without intelligence being had of it beforehand, while the limes itself and the system of roads behind it enabled troops to be directed rapidly to any threatened point, and the fortified positions could be held against large numbers till reinforcements arrived. Great importance was no doubt attached to the perfection of the lines of communication bearing on the dimes. Amonga people of roadmakers, Trajan was one of the greatest, and we have definite evidence from inscriptions that some of the military roads in this region were constructed by him. The more secure control which the Romans now maintained over the territory within the limes tended to its rapid civilization, and the Roman influence, if not the Roman arms, soon began to affect powerfully the regions beyond.

After his careful survey of the Rhine end of the great defensive barrier, Trajan proceeded to consider it and plan it from the Danube. From the age of Tiberius onwards the Romans possessed the whole southern bank of the river from its source to the Euxine. But the precarious tenure of their possession had been deeply impressed on them by thie disasters and humiliations they had under- gone in these districts during the reign of Domitian. A prince had arisen among the Dacians, Decebalus by name, worthy to be placed at the head of all the great barbarian antagonists of Rome. Like Maroboduus, he was able to combine the forces of tribes commonly hostile to each other, and his military ability almost went the length of genius. After he had swept the province of Mcesia bare, he was defeated by one of Domitian's lieutenants, but the position of affairs on the

Danubio-Rhenish border was still so threatening that the emperor was glad to conclude a treaty which conferred extraordinary advantages on his foe. Not only did the Romans stipulate to pay to Dece- balus an annual subsidy, which he must have regarded as a tribute, but they agreed to supply him with engineers and craftsmen skilled in all kinds of construction, but particularly in the erection of fortifications and defensive works. During the nine or ten years which had elapsed since the conclusion of this remarkable treaty, the Dacian prince had immensely strengthened the approaches to his kingdom from the Roman side. He had also equipped and drilled his formidable army after the Roman fashion. It was impossible for a soldier like Trajan to endure the conditions laid down by Domitian; but the conquest. of Dacia had become one of the most formidable tasks that had ever confronted the empire. ‘Trajan no doubt planned a war before he left the Danube for Rome late in 99.

The arrival of the emperor had been awaited in the capital with an impatience which is expressed by Pliny and by Martial.! All that had happened since Trajan’s eleva- tion to the throne had raised high at Rome.the hope of a prosperous and glorious reign. As he entered the city and went on foot to the Capitol, the plaudits of the people were unmistakably genuine. During his stay in the city he riveted more firmly still the affections both of the senate and of the people. The reconciliation of the empire with liberty, inaugurated, as Tacitus says, by Nerva, seemed now to be securely achieved. Trajan was absolutely open and simple, and lived with men at Rome as he had lived with his soldiers while on service. He

1 Tt has been conjectured, not improbably, that the Germania of Tacitus, written at this period, had for one of its aims the enlighten- ment of the Romans concerning the formidable character of the Ger- mans, so that they might at once bear more readily with the emperor’s prolonged absence and be prepared for the necessity of decisive action on the frontier.

realized the senate’s ideal of the citizen ruler. The assur- ance that no senator should suffer was renewed by oath. All the old republican formalities were most punctiliously observed—even those attendant on the emperor’s election to the consulate, so far as they did not involve a restora-

tion of the old order of voting at the comitia. The vene- ration for republican tradition is curiously attested by the reproduction of many republican types of coin struck by senatorial officers. Trajan seized every opportunity for emphasizing his view that the princeps was merely the greatest of the magistrates, and so was not above but under the laws. He was determined, he said, to be to his subjects such a ruler as he had desired for himself when a subject. There is a pretty story to the effect that he handed the commander of the preetorians his sword, and said, “ Use it for me if I do well, but against me if I do ill.” Martial, who had called Domitian his lord and his god, now cried, “In him we have no lord, but an imperator!” Real power and influence were accorded to the senate, which had now, by the incorporation of members whose origin was provincial, become in a manner representative of the whole empire. Trajan associated with the senators on equal terms, and enjoyed in their company every kind of recreation. All pomp was dis- tasteful to him, and discarded by him. There was practi- cally no court, and no intrigues of any kind were possible. The approach to his house was free, and he loved to pass through the city unattended, and to pay unexpected visits to his friends. He thirsted for no senator’s blood, and used severity against the delatores alone. There was but one insignificant conspiracy against him during his whole reign. Though not literary himself, Trajan conciliated the literary men, who at all times had close relations with the senate. _ His intimate, M. Licinius, played an excellent Meecenas to his Augustus. In his efforts to win the affec- tions of Roman society, Trajan was excellently aided by his wife Plotina, who was as simple as her husband, bene- volent, pure in character, and entirely unambitious. The hold which Trajan acquired over the people was no less firm than that which he maintained upon the army and the senate. His largesses, his distributions of food, his public works, and his spectacles were all on a generous scale. The exhibitions in the arena were perhaps at their zenith during his tenure of power. Though, for some un- explained reason, he abolished the mimes, so beloved of the populace, at the outset of his reign, he availed himself of the occasion of his first triumph to restore them again. The people were delighted by the removal of the imperial exedra in the circus, whereby five thousand additional places were provided. Taxation was in many directions reduced, and the financial exactions of the imperial officers controlled by the erection of a special court. Elaborate precautions were taken to save Italy from famine ; it is said

that corn for seven years' consumption at the capital was retained in the granaries. Special encouragement was given to merchants to import articles of food. The corporation of bakers was organized, and made more effective for the service of the public. The internal trade of Italy was powerfully stimulated by the careful maintenance and extension of the different lines of road. But the most striking evidence of Trajan's solicitude for his people's welfare is found in his institution of the alimenta, whereby means were provided for the rearing of poor and orphan children in Italy. The method had been sketched out by Nerva, but its great development was due to Trajan. The moneys allotted by the emperor were in many cases sup- plemented by private benevolence. As a soldier, Trajan realized the need of men for the maintenance of the empire against the outer barbarians, and he preferred

carrying a step farther the policy of Augustus, who by a system of rewards and penalties had tried to encourage marriage and the nurture of children. The actual effect of Trajan's regulations is hard to measure; they were probably more effectual for their object than those of Augustus. The foundations were confiscated by Pertinax, after they had existed less than a century.

During the year 100, when Trajan was consul for the third time, Pliny, who had been designated consul for a part of it, was appointed to deliver the " Panegyric" which has come down to us, and which forms the most important source of our knowledge concerning this emperor. Pliny's eulogy of Trajan and his denunciation of Domitian are alike couched in extravagant phrases, but the former per- haps rests more uniformly on a basis of truth and justice than the latter. The tone of the " Panegyric" certainly lends itself to the supposition of some historians that Trajan was inordinately vain. That the emperor had an honest and soldierly satisfaction in his own well-doing is clear; but, if he had had anything like the vanity of a Domitian, the senate, ever eager to outrun a ruler's taste for flattery, would never have kept within such moderate bounds.

Towards the end of 100, or early in 101, Trajan left Rome for the Danube. Pretexts for a Dacian war were not difficult to find. Although there was no

lack of hard fighting, victory in this war depended largely on the work of the engineer. The great military road connecting the posts in Upper Germany with those on the Danube, which had been begun by Tiberius, was now extended along the right bank of the river as far as the modern Orsova. The year 101 was spent mainly in road-making and fortifica- tion. In the following campaign, after desperate fighting to the north of the Danube in the mountainous region of Transylvania, such as Ceesar never encountered in all his Gaulish wars, the capital of Decebalus was taken, and he was forced to terms. He agreed to raze all fortresses, to surrender all weapons, prisoners, and Roman deserters, and to become a dependent prince under the suzerainty of Rome. Trajan came back to Italy with Dacian envoys, who in ancient style begged the senate to confirm the con- ditions granted by the commander in the field. The em- peror now enjoyed his first Dacian triumph, and assumed the title of Dacicus. At the same time he royally enter tained the people, and no less royally rewarded his brave officers. But the Dacian chief could not school his high spirit to endure the conditions of the treaty, and Trajan soon found it necessary to prepare for another war. A massive stone bridge was built across the Danube, near the modern Turn Severin, by Apollodorus, the gifted architect who afterwards designed the forum of Trajan. In 105 began the new struggle, which on the side of Decebalus could now only lead to victory or to destruction. The Dacians fought their ground inch by inch, and their army as a whole may be said to have bled to death. The prince put an end to his own life. His kingdom became an imperial province ; in it many colonies were founded, and peopled by settlers drawn from different parts of the empire. The work done by Trajan in the Danubian regions left a lasting mark upon their history. The emperor returned to the capital in 106, laden with cap- tured treasure. His triumph outdid in splendour all those that went before it. Games are said to have been held continuously for four months. Ten thousand gladiators contended in the arena, and eleven thousand beasts were killed in the contests. Congratulatory embassies came from all lands, even from India. The grand and enduring monument of the Dacian wars is the noble pillar which still stands on the site of Trajan’s forum at Rome.

The end of the Dacian wars was followed by seven years

that these men should be of Italian birth. He was only | of peace. During part of that time Pliny was imperial

legate in the provinces of Bithynia and Pontus, and in constant communication with Trajan. The correspondence is extant, and gives us the means of observing the prin- ciples and tendencies of the emperor as a civil governor.

The provinces (hitherto senatorial) were in considerable disorder, which Pliny was sent to cure. It is clear from the emperor's letters that in regard to nine out of ten of the matters which his anxious and deferential legate referred to him for his decision he would have been better pleased if the legate had decided them for him- self, Trajau's notions of civil government were, like those of the duke of Wellington, strongly tinged with military prepossessions. He regarded the provincial ruler as a kind of officer in command, who ought to be able to discipline his province for himself, and only to appeal to the commander-in-chief in a difficult case. In advising Pliny about the different free communities in the pro- vinces, Trajan showed the same regard for traditional rights and privileges which he had exhibited in face of the senate at Rome. At the same time, these letters bring home to us his conviction that, particularly in financial affairs, it was necessary that local sclf-government should be carricd on under the vigilant super- vision of impcrial officers. The control which he began in this way to exercise, both in Italy and in the provinces, over the '"municipia " and ''libere civitates," by means of agents entitled (then or later) "correctores civitatium liberarum," was carried continually farther and farther by his successors, and at last ended in the complete centralization of the government. On this account the reign of Trajan constitutes a turning point in civil as in military history. In other directions, though we find many salutary civil measures, yet there were no far-reaching schemes of reform. Many details in the administration of the law, and particularly of the criminal law, were improved. To cure corruption in the senate the ballot was introduced at elections to magis- tracies, The finances of the state were economically managed, and taxpayers were most carefully guarded from oppression. Trajan never lacked money to expend on great works of public

utility; as a builder, he may fairly be compared with Augustus. His forum aud its numerous appendages were constructed on a magnificent scale. Many regions of Italy and the provinces besides the city itself benefited by the care and munificence which the emperor bestowed on such public improvements. His attitude towards religion was, like that of Augustus, moderate and con- servative. The famous letter to Pliny about the Christians is, according to Roman ideas, merciful and considerate. It was im- possible, however, for a Roman niagistrate of the tinie to rid him- self of the idea that all forms of religion must do homage to the civil power. Hence the conflict which made Trajan appear in the eyes of Christians like Tertullian the most infamous of monsters. On the whole, Trajan's civil administration was sound, careful, and sensible, rather than brilliant or epoch-making.

In 113 or 114 Trajan left Italy to make war in the East. The never-ending Parthian problem confronted him, and with it were more or less connected a number of minor difficulties. Already by 106 the position of Rome in the East had been materially improved by the peaceful annexa- tion of districts bordering on the province of Syria. The district of Damascus, hitherto a dependency, and the last remaining fragment of the Jewish kingdom, were incor- porated with Syria; Bostra and Petra were permanently occupied, and a great portion of the Nabathean kingdom was constituted the Roman province of Arabia. Rome thus obtained mastery of the most important positions lying on thie great trade routes from East to West. These changes could not but affect the relations of the Roman with the Parthian empire, and the affairs of Armenia be- came in 114 the occasion of a war which has been described under Prrsta, vol. xviil. p. 603. Trajan's campaigns in the East ended in complete though brilliant failure. In the retreat from Ctesiphon (117) the old emperor tasted for almost the first time the bitterness of defeat in the field. He attacked the desert city of Hatra, westward of the Tigris, whose importance is still attested by grand ruins. The want of water made it impossible to maintain a large force near the city, and the brave Arabs routed the Roman cavalry, Trajan, who narrowly escaped being killed, was forced to withdraw. A morealarming difficulty lay before him. Taking advantage of the absence of the emperor in the far East, and possibly by an understanding with the leaders of the rising in Armenia and the annexed portions of

Parthia, the Jews all over the East had taken u parms at the same moment, and at a given signal. The massacres they committed were portentous. In Cyprus 240,000 men are said to have been put to death, and at Cyrene 220,000. At Alexandria, on the other hand, many Jews were killed. The Romans punished massacre by massacre, and the complete suppression of the insurrection was long delayed, but the Jews made no great stand against disciplined troops. Trajan still thought of returning to Mesopotamia, and of avenging his defeat at Hatra, but he was stricken with sickness and compelled to take ship for Italy. His illness increasing, he landed in Cilicia, and died at Selinus in that country about the end of July 117. Trajan, who had no children, had continually delayed to settle the suc- cession to the throne, though Pliny in the " Panegyric " had pointedly drawn his attention to the matter, and it must have caused the senate much anxiety. Whether Hadrian, the cousin of Trajan, was actually adopted by him or not is impossible to determine ; certainly Hadrian had not been advanced to any great honours by Trajan. Even his military service had not been distinguished. Plotina asserted the adoption, and it was readily and most fortunately accepted, if not believed, as a fact.

The senate had decreed to Trajan as many triumphs as he chose to celebrate. For the first time a dead general triumphed. When Trajan was deified, he appropriately retained, alone among the emperors, a title he had won for himself in the field, that of " Parthicus." He wasa patient organizer of victory rather than a strategic genius. He laboriously perfected the military machine, which when once set in motion went on to victory. Much of the work he did was great and enduring, but the last year of his life forbade the Romans to attribute to him that felicitas which they regarded as an inborn quality of the highest generals. Each succeeding emperor was saluted with the wish that he might be " better than Trajan and more fortunate than Augustus." Yet the breach made in Trajan's felicitas by the failure in the East was no greater than that made in the felicitas of Augustus by his retirement from the right bank of the Rhine. The question whether Trajan's Oriental policy was wise is answered emphatically by Mommsen in the affirmative. It was certainly wise if the means existed which were necessary to carry it out and sustain it. But succeeding history proved that those

means did not exist. The assertion of Mommsen that the Tigris was a more defensible frontier than the desert line which separated the Parthian from the Roman empire can hardly be accepted. The change would certainly have created a demand for more legions, which the resources of the Romans were not sufficient to meet without danger to their possessions on other frontiers.

The records of Trajan's reign are miserably deficient. Our best authority is the 68th book of Dio Cassius; then comes the " Pane- gyric" of Pliny, with his correspondence, The facts to be gathered from other ancient writers are scattered aud scanty. Fortunately the inscriptions of the time are abundant and important. Of modern histories which comprise the reign of Trajan the best in English is that of Merivale; but that in German by H. Schiller (Geschichte der rémischen Kaiserzett, Gotha, 1883) is more on a level with recent inquiries. There are special works on Trajan by H. Francke (Giistrow, 1837), De la Berge (Paris, 1877), and Dierauer (in M. Biidinger's Untersuchungen zur rémischen Kaisergeschichte, Leipsic, 1868). A paper by Mommsen in Hermes, iii. pp. 30 sg., entitled "Zur Lebensgeschichte des jiingeren Plinius," is important for the chronology of Trajan's reign, (Jp SeRs)

TRALEE, a market-town and seaport, and the chief town of Kerry, Ireland, is situated on the Ballymullen or Leigh river, about a mile from where it discharges itself into Tralee Bay, and on the Great Southern and Western Railway, 21 miles north-west of Killarney and 18 south- west of Listowel. It is a neat, well-built, and compara- tively prosperous town. The principal public buildings are XXIII. — 64

5906

the court-house, the town-hall, the corn exchange, the chamber of commerce, the workhouse, the infantry barracks, the county hospital, and the fever hospital. A ship canal, permitting the passage of ships of 200 tons burden, and constructed at an expense of £30,000, connects it with Tralee Bay. Coal, iron, and timber are imported, and there is a considerable export of grain. There is a large trade in butter. The population of the town in 1871 was 9506 and in 1881 it was 9396.

Tralee, anciently Traleigh, the “strand of the Leigh,” owes its origin to the foundation of a Dominican monastery in 1213 by John Fitz-Thomas, of the Geraldine family. During the reign of Elizabeth it was in the possession of Earl Desmond, on whose for- feiture it eame into possession of the Dennys. At the time of the rebellion in 1641 the English families in the neighbourhood asked to be placed in the castle under the charge of Sir Edward Denny, but during his absence a surrender was made. The town was in- corporated by a charter in the 10th of James I., and had the privi- lege of sending two members to the Irish parliament. Though disfranchised at the Union, it obtained the privilege of returning one member in 1832, but in 1885 it was merged in the county.

TRAMWAY. Originally a tramway signified a wheel track laid with timbers, and afterwards with iron plates, having a flange on the inner edge by which wheels of the ordinary sort were kept in the track (see Ramuway). The introduction of the flanged wheel and edge rail caused tramways to be superseded by railways, but not until many miles of tramroads had been laid and successfully worked in various parts of the United Kingdom. Although the name is sometimes given to a light railway, by a tramway is now generally understood a street railway, constructed so as to interfere but little with the ordinary traffic, on which vehicles having flanged wheels are propelled by animal or mechanical power. Tramways in this sense originated in the United States.

A street railway for passengers was laid in New York in 1832, but it was soon removed on account of the accidents caused by it. In 1852 a French engineer, Loubat, revived tramways in New York, and they were soon afterwards laid in other American cities. A short line was also laid in Paris in 1853. The rails used were of wrought-iron, 5 inches wide, having a groove for the flanged wheels of the cars 1¢ to 24 inches wide and 1 to 14 inches deep (fig. 1). To lessen the inconvenience to

ordinary traffic occasioned by 7 , oe

this rail, the “step rail” (fig. 2) BOG ITAL / 1A iy

was introduced, consisting of a flat surface 3 to 5 inches wide, which can be used by ordinary [’ wheels, and a raised tread on [7 the outer side 1 inch

higher and | 12 inch wide, on which the flanged wheels of the cars run.

Fig. 2.

This form of rail is still very general in America, and is a good one for the tramways, though not for the general public. In 1858-9 Train, an American, endeavoured to obtain an Act of Parliament authorizing tramways in London ; failing in that, he laid tramways, by consent of the road author- ity, first in 1860 at Birkenhead, and soon afterwards in

London. The rail laid at Birkenhead had a step of ? inch between flat surfaces 3 inches and 14 inches wide. That laid in London was narrower, with a step of half an inch, but the slippery flat surface and the step of the rail caused serious inconvenience and numerous accidents to carriages, and the tramways were removed in a few months, after one of them had been successfully indicted asa nuisance. In Birkenhead, in spite of complaints of the inconvenience caused to the general traffic, the original rails remained until 1864, when, after a short length had been laid as an experiment with a rail of the grooved section now in general use (fig. 3), the whole of the tram- way, several miles in length, was. relaid with it. The

tramway was subsequently indicted as a nuisance, but the trial resulted in a verdict in favour of the grooved rail. In 1868 an Act of Parliament authorizing the construction of about 63 miles of tramways in Liverpool was obtained ; and in 1869-71 Acts for 61 miles of tramways in London were passed, and were soon followed by other Acts for tramways in Glasgow, Dublin, Edinburgh, and other pro- vincial towns.

In 1870 the Tramways Act was passed, enabling the Tram. Board of Trade to make provisional orders authorizing the Ways

construction of tramways in Great Britain, with the con- sent of the local authorities, and giving considerable powers for regulating their construction and working. By the Act the gauge, unless otherwise prescribed by special Act, is to be such as will admit of the use of carriages con- structed for use on railways of a gauge of 4 feet 8} inches. Tramways for which Acts had

been previously obtained were of 4 feet 84 inches gauge, to comply with a standing order intended for railways, and not to make them available for railway rolling stock, which the narrow groove of an ordinary tramway rail will not admit. There is reason to think that a narrower gauge, such as 3 feet 6 inches, is often sufficient and preferable to the 4 feet 84 inches gauge.

Tramways in towns, authorized by provisional order, are to be constructed in the middle of the road, and are not to be so laid that for 30 feet and upwards a less space than 9 feet 6 inches shall be left between the outside of the footpath and the rail, if one-third of the owners or occupiers of premises abutting upon that part of the road object. Vehicles are thus enabled to stop at the road side without hindrance from the tramears. To leave 9 feet 6 inches on each side of a single line of tramway of 4 feet 84 inches gauge a street must be upwards of 24 feet wide. No carriage used on a tramway must extend more than 11 inches beyond the outer edge of the wheels, and there must be a space of at least 15 inches between the sides of the widest carriages or engines to be used, when passing one another. A width of uot less than 3 feet 2 inches between double lines and at passing places is thus necessary, anda double line of tramway, leaving 9 feet 6 inches space on each side, requires a street at least 32 feet 6 inches wide between the footways. In nar- row roads there is a convenience in having the tramway at the side, and it is sometimes provided for in special Acts. The space between the rails, and for 18 inches beyond them, is repairable as part of the tramway. Power is given to local authorities to purchase tramways at the expiration of twenty-one years, and they may be removed under certain circumstances.

It appears from a parliamentary return that in 1886 there were 779 miles of street tramways open for traffic in Great Britain, on which a capital of £11,503,438 had been expended, the net receipts for the year being £563,735, and the working expenses 79 per cent. of the gross receipts.

ct.

The grooved rail first laid in England was 44 inches wide and Con-

an inch thick, having a tread or rolling surface for the wheel 1$ inches wide, and a groove # inch deep, ? inch wide at the bottom, and 1} inches wide at

the top (fig. 3). The rail was spiked through to a longitudinal timber laid on cross sleepers, and secured to them by angle brackets and spikes. This rail and method of laying were gene- rally adopted, but it was found that the heads of the spikes wore off, and the rails required re- spiking, and split and worked loose at the joints. A rail known as the box-rail was introduced, having flanges below on each side, through holes in which clips are driven to fasten the rail to the tim-

Fig. 3.

struc- tion.

Paving.

TRAMWAY

ber. This constitutes a good fastening, and the flanges give stiffness to the rail, but the clips cause gaps between the rail and the paving stones, which lcad to the formation of ruts alongside the rails. The longitudinal timbers, instead of being laid on cross sleepers, on which the paving does not bed well, are often fixed in cast-iron chairs con- nected by transverse tie-bars.

Fig. 5

Steel rails of a flatfooted or a bridge section, and of such a depth as to constitute both rail and sleeper, are also used. In some of the latest and best examples the rail is of a flatfooted section (fig. 5), 6 or 7 inches deep, and 6 or 7 inches wide at the base, weighing 65 to 93 Ib per yard. The head has a groove either planed out or rolled in it, giving the usual profile to the upper surface. The joints are fished in the ordinary way, and are as strong as the rail itself. Cross ties are sometimes used, but when the rail is slightly bedded in the concrete foundation they are dispensed with. The paving is set in cement close against the rail, and is bedded directly or in sand on the base of the rail, upon which there is a bearing of 14 or 2 inches. Such a tramway will stand steam traction and the heaviest strect traffic, but the rail, which is of an expensive section, requires entire renewal when the head is worn out. Iron or stcel continuous bearings are less elastic, and therefore more jarring and noisy than timber sleepers.

The profile of the upper surface of tram rails has been little altered since the first grooved rail was devised for Birkenhead in 1868, though slight modifications have been made in the form of the groove with the ‘object of lessening tractive resistance. For the sake of the ordinary traffic the groove should not exceed 1 inch in width, and a rounded section with sides splaying outwards facili- tates the forcing out of the mud and dirt. A nearly upright side next the tread or rolling surface with a splay on the inner side throws the mud away from the wheel. The upper corners of the rail should be angular, to make as thin a joint as possible between the rail and the paving. There has been a tendency to diminish the width, and a rail as narrow as 8 inches has been laid. A deviation from the usual profile has been adopted in Liverpool, where the groove is in the middle of a rail 3} inches wide.

A tramway must not only afford a good rolling surface capable of bearing the weights running on it, but it must also be able to resist the shocks of heavy vehicles crossing the rails in all directions. The space between the rails, and for 18 inches beyond them, which is repairable with the tramway, is always paved, sometimes in pro- vincial towns and in the suburbs of London with wood, but generally with stone sets in the best manner ou a concrete foundation. The sets alongside the rail should be carefully dressed and fitted to make a thin joint. There is much extra wear, and a tendency to form a rut alongside the rail, arising from ordinary wheels using the tram rail, and unless the surface of the paving is kept to the level of the rail the wheels of carriages are caught by the rail, and damage and accidents are caused. To resist the wear near the rails, chilled cast- iron blocks have been used where the traffic is great. Ona mac- adamized road there is the same tendency to form a rut along the outer edge of the tramway paving, which is to some extent prevented by giving a serrated edge to the paving. There is always great diffi- culty in keeping the road surface to the level of the paving, and it is better to pave the entire width of a strect in which a tramway is laid.

Although cars can be drawn round very sharp curves, the latter Curves,

should be as easy as possible. A radius of 150 to 200 feet is the least that should be used when there is any choice, but necessity may compel the use of curves of 50 or even 30 feet radius. On such curves, however, the cars are liable to be strained, and the resistance to traction is greatly increased.

A single line of tramway must have passing places for the cars, Passing consisting of pieces of double line of length sufficient to hold two places.

cars at least, with connecting curves and the necessary points and crossings. Where steam or other mechanical power is to be used the passing loops should be at Icast 200 feet in length. There is inevitable delay and interference with the street traffic at passing places, and where cars are to be run at frequent intervals it is better to lay down a double line if the street is wide enough. It is a great advantage to the ordinary traffic to have the cars moving always in the same direction on the same line of rails.

For horse traction fixed points of chilled cast-iron or steel are Points sufficient, as the driver can turn his horses and direct the car on to and When mechanical power is used, drop points cross- In the former the groove leading ings.

either line of rails. or movable points are required. into the road to be taken is of the full depth, and the other groove shallow, so that the engine and cars naturally take the former. On coming out of the shallower groove to the deeper there is, how- ever, a drop encountered which is damaging to the rolling stock, and especially to the engines. Movable points require setting by hand, or they are actuated by a spring or balance weight. In one form of spring point one groove is filled up by a tongue which is pressed down by wheels passing out of a loop, but which forms the side of the groove for wheels running the opposite direction. A spring point of steel, which is forced aside by the flange of the wheel passing out, and shuts close again by its own elasticity, is also successfully used. A movable point on one side of the way is sufficient. Crossings are either built up from rails cut to the required angle, or they are cast solid in steel or chilled iron. Fill- ing 4 apis of the same material, roughened on the surface for foot- hold, are inserted between the rails at the angles of points and crossings. Both points and crossings wear rapidly, and are trouble- some to maintain in good condition, and when uot so maintained are dangerous to ordinary traffic.

The tramcars generally in use in the United Kingdom are con- Cars.

structed to carry 22 persons inside and 24 outside. They are 16 feet pe in the body, or 24 feet including the platforms at each end, and weigh 24 to 2? tons when empty and about 54 tons when fully loaded. Smaller cars to carry 20 or 14 persons inside, drawn by one horse, are useful to run at short intervals when the traftic is not great, a frequent service of cars being a great element of success. The car wheels are usually of steel or chilled iron, with a flange half an inch deep, and are fitted with powerful brakes. The axles are about 6 feet apart, giving a short wheel-base to enable the cars to pass sharp curves, but with the disadvantage of overhanging ends. Cars to be drawn by mechanical power, espe- cially if outside passengers are to be carried, should have a flexible wheel-base, either by means of bogie frames or radiating axles. In Hamburg and Copenhagen tramcars have wheels without flanges, and a small guiding wheel running in the groove, which can be raised to allow the car to leave the track.

The tractive force required on a straight and level tramway is Traction.

found to vary from zy to 2p of the load, according to the con- dition of the rails. On a tramway in average condition it is about z3,. The resistance is thus at the best nearly double that on a railway, and sometimes as much as on a good’ pavement. This is due to the friction of the flange of the wheel in the grooved rail, and to tlie circumstance that the latter is always more or less clogged with dirt. The clearance between the flange and the groove is necessarily small, as the former must have sufficient strength, and the latter must be narrow. The least inaccuracy of gauge, therefore, causes extra friction, which is greatly increased on curves. By removing the flanges from two of the four wheels of a tramway car Tresca found that the resistance was reduced from z}, to qi, of the load. The resistance due to gravity is of course not lessened on a tramway ; and, if ;$, of the load be the tractive force required on the level, twice as much, or #5 of the load, will be required on a gradient of 1 in 100 and three times as much on a gradient of 1 in 50. To start a tramear, four or five times as great a pull is required as will keep it in motion afterwards, and the constant starting after stoppages, especially on inclines, is very destructive to horses. Horses employed on tramways are worked only a few hours a day, a day’s work being a journey

of 10 or 12 miles, or much less on steep gradients. In London a tram- car horse bought at the age of five years has to be sold at a low price after about four years' work. On the Edinburgh tramways, in consequence of the steep gradients, the horses last a less time, and they have to be constantly shifted from steep to easier gradients. The cost.of traction by horses is generally 6d. or 7d. per mile for two horses, and more when the gradients are steep.

The application of steam as a motive power on street tramways Steam is attended with special difficulties, arising from the conditions traction.

Fireless engines,

Com- pressed air.

508

under which the engines have to work. A tramway engine must be able to draw its load up steep gradients, demanding perhaps seven or eight times the power required on a level, and it must have the necessary adhesion without being too heavy for the permanent way. It must be capable of traversing sharp curves, of going backwards or forwards with safety, and of stopping and starting quickly. For the safety and convenience of the public the Board of Trade require that tramway engines shall have brakes to each wheel, to be applied by hand and by steam, a governor so arranged as to shut off the steam and apply the brakes when the engine excceds the speed of 10 miles an hour or other stated speed, an indicator to show the speed, a whistle or bell to be sounded as a warning, and a fender to push aside obstructions; the engine must be free from noise produced by blast, and from clatter of machinery such as to constitute a reasonable ground of complaint ; and the machinery and fire must be concealed from view; no smoke or steam must be emitted so as to constitute any reasonable ground of complaint to passengers or the public. ;

The first attempt to use steam on a modern tramway was with Grantham's combined engine and car. It was about 25 feet long, having a vertical boiler in a central compartment, with the steam cylinders below, driving one pair of wheels 2 feet 6 inches in diameter. It carried 20 passengers inside and 24 outside, weighing 64 tons empty and 12 tons when fully loaded. In a later

car the boiler and machinery were at one end, and the body of the car was carried on a bogie frame. In a combined engine and car the weight of the car and passengers is utilized for adhesion of the driving wheels, and this is conveniently effected in Rowan's car, in which there are two four-wheel bogies, the leading one carrying the engine and boiler, and half the body of the car and passengers. The engine can be detached from the car for repair and another engine can be substituted in a few minutes. Economy of rolling stock, and the advantage of being able to use cars intended for horses, are in favour of independent engines. They are usually in general construction similar to locomotives, but are enclosed so as to resemble in outward appearance a short tramcar. The cylinders are 6 to 9 inches in diameter, with a stroke of 10 to 12 inches. The wheels are coupled, 2 to 3 feet in diameter, and the engines weigh 4 to 6 tons with fucl and water. The governor to shut off steam and apply the brakes when any determined speed is attained is actuated either by the engine wheels or by an independent wheel to prevent the possibility of the brakes being put on when the driving-wheels slip. An effectual way of rendering the exhaust steam invisible is to condense it by passing it throngh water in a tank, or through a shower of water let off at each blast, but when the water gets hot it must be changed, and in streets it is difficult to get rid of the hot water. Several methods of superheating by passing the exhaust steam through the fire have been adopted, but they are all attended with an increased consumption of fuel, which in cold damp weather is considerable. _ It is now preferred to pass the steam into tubes exposed to the air on the top of the engine car, from which the condensed water is returned to the feed-tank, to be again pumped into the boiler at a high temperature. Any steam remaining uncondensed passes into the smoke-box. Com- pound cylinders have been applied to tramway engines, giving a greater range of power, economizing fuel, and rendering the exhaust steam easier to deal with. The extra complication of a compound engine is, however, a drawback.

The cost of steam traction with engines of ordinary size is gene- rally 3d. to 4d. per mile run by the engine, and more on lines with steep gradients. 'To this must be added for depreciation 10 per cent., or, according to some authorities, 15 per cent. on the original cost of the engines, making altogether 4d. to 6d. per mile run on a tramway with average gradients.

Fireless engines were first tried in New Orleans, and have been in snecessful use on tramways in France for some years. The motive power is obtained from water heated under pressure to a very high temperature in stationary boilers and carried in a reservoir, where it gives off steam as the pressure and temperature are reduced. Two tons of water heated to give a steam-pressure of 250 Ib to the square inch serves for a run of 8 or 10 miles, leaving more than 3% of the water and a pressure of 20 to 25 tb above the atmosphere on returning to the boiler. Large boiler-power is required to reheat the engine reservoirs quickly, and this cannot be afforded for only a fewengines, but, when worked on a sufficient scale, the fireless engines are claimed to be economical, the economy Li Ps from the generation of the steam in large stationary

oilers.

Compressed air as a motive power offers the advantage of having neither steam nor the products of combustion to be got rid of. In Scott Moncrieff's engine, which was tried on the Vale of Clyde tramways in 1876, air was compressed to 310 ib on the square inch, and expanded in the cylinders from a uniform working pressure to that of the atmosphere. There is a considerable loss of heat during the expansion of the air which is attended with a serious loss of pressure, and in Mékarski's system, which has been in use for the ptopulsion of tramcars at Nantes for seven years, the loss of pres-

sure is considerably lessened by heating the air during expansion. The air, at a pressure of 426 Ib per square inch, is stored in cylindrical reservoirs beneath the car, and before use is passed through a vessel three quarters full of water heated to 300° F., by which it is heated and mixed with steam. The heat of the latter is absorbed by the air during its expansion, first to a working pressure which can be regulated by the driver, and then to atmospheric pressure in the cylinders. At Nantes the average cost for three years for propel- ling a car holding 34 persons was about 6d. per mile.

In San Francisco a main charged with air at a pressure of about 120 Ib per square inch has been laid along the tram route, from which reservoirs on the

cars are charged by means of standpipes and flexible connexions at convenient points, the operation taking a very short time. The inventor claims to utilize 30 per cent. of the power applicd to the compressor.

Street tramways worked by means of a wire rope have been in successful operation in San Francisco since 1873. There are now upwards of 24 miles of double line in San Francisco, and 10 miles in Chicago, and the system is being adopted in other American and colonial cities. It has also been in operation in England at Highgate Hill for several years, and is about to be adopted in other localities. The motive power is trans- mitted from a stationary engine by a rope of steel wire running always in one dircction up one track and down the other, in a tube midway between the rails, on pulleys which are arranged so as to suit curves and changes of gradient as well as straight and level lines, Over the rope is a slot ? inch wide, in which travels a flat arm of steel connecting the dummy car with the gripper which grasps the cable. The flat arm is in three pieces, the two outer ones constituting a frame which carries the lower jaw of thegripper, with grooved rollers at each end of it, over which the cable runs when the gripper is not in action. The upper jaw is carried by the middle piece, which slides within the outer frame, and can be de- pressed by a lever or screw, pressing the cable firston the rollers, and then on the lower jaw until it is firmly held. The speed of the cable, which is gene- rally 6 to 8 miles an hour, is thus imparted to the car gradually and without jerk. The arrangements for pass- ing the pulleys, for changing the dummy and cars from one line to the other at the end of the road, for keeping the cable uniformly taut, and for crossings and junctions with other lines are of considerable ingen- uity. When the cars are cast off from the = cable they must be stopped by hand brakes, which on steep gradients especially must be of great power.

The system has advantages on double lines with few and easy curves when the m gradients are long and steep, and it can be = employed on gradients too steep for steam 5S traction. On level lines it is doubtful if it could compete in economy with steam, or even with horse traction, unless with a very frequent service of cars, though then it presents the advantages of being comparatively quiet, and free from smoke and steam, and of admitting a frequent service of cars with little extra cost. On the cable roads of San Francisco it has been found that, of the average daily power em-

ployed, 68 per cent. is expended in moving the cables, &c., 28 per cent. for the cars, and 4 per cent. for passengers. It is considered that it is practicable to utilize in moving cars and passengers as much as 50 per cent. of the power, provided the cars are fully loaded and run at short intervals.

Electricity has been applied as a motive power on a tramway about 2 miles long at Blackpool. The current is conveyed by two copper conductors in a central channel beneath the roadway, and is communicated to the motors in the ear by a collector running

SNBEAIS DE SCE He eee eee Saw HE KURTA URS RERERARRAN – SEL SPIE i NJ i6)to

[4 O) tt

;

Fia. 6.—Gripper.

Fig. 7.—Carrying Pulley.

Cable tram- ways.

Electric motors.

See vol. Xxii. Plate I.

TR A—

upon the conductors and passing through a narrow slit in the channel. The return current passes through the rails. The cars carry.as many as 56 passengers on a level line. Tramways have also been worked by accumulators at Antwerp and Brussels, but the weight of them appears to be at present prohibitory to this method of applying electricity, except for short trips. See TRACTION.

For fuller information, see D, K. Clark, Tramways, their Construction and Maintenance; F, Sérafon, Les Tramways et les Chemins de Fer sur Routes; ** Street Tramways," Proc. Inst. C. E., vol. 1.~~vol. Ixvii.; " The Working of~~

~~Train~~ ways by Steam," Jd¢d., vol. Ixxix.; and F. B. Smith, Cable Tramways. (T. C.)

TRANCE. See SieeP; also Magnetism (ANIMAL).

TRANI, a seaport of Italy, on the Adriatic, in the province of Bari, and 26 miles by rail west-north-west of that town, still retains its old walls and bastions, with the citadel, now used as a prison. Some of the streets remain much as they were in the medieval period, and many of the houses display more or less of Norman decoration. The cathedral, on a raised open site near the sea, dating from about the year 1100, is a basilica with three apses, a large crypt, and a lofty tower. The arches of the Roman- esque portal are beautifully ornamented, in a manner suggestive of Arab influence ; the bronze doors, executed by Barisanus of Trani in 1175, rank among the best of their period in southern Italy. The capitals of the pillars in the crypt are fine examples of the Romanesque. The interior of the cathedral has been barbarously modernized. The vicinity of Trani produces an excellent wine (Moscado di Trani); and its figs, oil, almonds, and corn are also pro- fitable articles of trade. The harbour was once deep and good, but latterly has got silted up. The population of the town in 1881 was 25,173 (commune 25,647).

Trani is the Zwrenwm of the itineraries. It first became a flourishing place under the Normans and during the crusades, but attained the acme of its prosperity as a seat of trade with the East under the Angevine princes. Several synagogues continue to afford an indication of its former commercial prosperity.

TRANQUEBAR, a seaport town in the Tanjore district of Madras presidency, India, in 11° 1' 37" N. lat. and 79° 55' EK. long. In the 17th century it belonged to the Danes ; it was taken by"the British with other Danish settlements in 1807, but restored in 1814, and finally purchased in 1845 for a sum of £20,000. In Danish times Tranquebar was a busy port, but its prosperity has fluctuated considerably of late years, and is now at a very lowebb. It was the first settlement of Protestant mis- sionaries in India, founded by Ziegenbalg and Plutschau (Lutherans) in 1706; and as a mission station it. still retains its importance.

TRANSBAIKALIA (Zabatkalskaya Oblast), a province of Eastern Siberia, to the east of Lake Baikal, has Irkutsk on the west, Yakutsk on the north, the province of Amur on the east, and Mongolia on the south. Its area (240,780 square miles) is about as great as that of Austria- Hungary, but its population is under half a million. With regions of a purely Siberian character on the one hand, and including on the other the outer borders of the Mongolian steppes and the upper basin of the Amur, Transbaikalia forms an intermediate link between Siberia, Mongolia, and the northern Pacific littoral. The mountains of the Yablonovoi Khrebet, which run in a north-easterly direction from the sources of the Kerulefi to the bend of the Olekma in 56° N. lat., divide the province into two quite distinct parts : to the west the upper terrace of the high East Asian plateau continued from the upper Selenga and Yenisei (from 4000 to 5000 feet high) towards the plateau of the Vitim (3500 to 4000 feet) ; and to the east the lower terrace of the same plateau (about 2800 feet high), which appears as a continuation of the eastern Gobi. The continuity of the high plateau extending from the upper Selenga to the upper Vitim was for a long time overlooked in consequence of a broad and deep valley by which it is intersected. Beginning at Lake Baikal, it pierces the huge north-western border-ridge of the plateau,

and runs eastward up the Uda, with an imperceptible

gradient, like a gigantic railway cutting enclosed between two steep slopes, sending another branch south towards Kiakhta. After having served, through a succession of geological periods, as an outlet for the water and ice which accumulated on the plateau, it is now utilized for the two highways which lead from Lake Baikal over the plateau (3500-4000 feet) to the Amur in the east and the Chinese depression in the south. Elsewhere, the high and massive border-ridge on the north-western edge of the plateau can be crossed only by difficult footpaths. The border-ridge just mentioned, pierced by the wide opening of the Selenga, runs from south-west to north-east under different names, being known as Khamar-daban to the south of Lake Baikal (the Khamar-daban peak raising its bald summit to a height of 6900 feet above the sea), and as the Barguzin Mountains (7000 to 8000

feet) along the eastern bank of the Barguziu river, while farther to the north-east it has been described by the present writer under the names of the South Muya and Tchara Mountains (6000 to 7000 feet). Resting its south-east base on the plateau, it descends steeply on the north-west to the lake, or to the broad picturesque valleys of the Barguzin, the Muya, and the Tchara. Larch, fir, and cedar forests thickly clothe the ridge, whose dome-shaped rounded summits (goltsy) rise above the limits of tree vegetation, but do not reach the snow-line (here above 10,000 feet). The high plateau itself has the aspect of an undulating table-land, intersected by low ranges, which rise some 1500 or 2000 feet above its surface, and are separated by broad, flat, and marshy valleys, which the rivers languidly traverse till they find their way across the border-ridges. Those of the valleys which are better drained have fine meadow lands, but as a whole the plateau has the appearance, especially in the north, of a wet or marshy prairie in the hollows, while the hills are thickly clothed with forests (almost exclusively of larch and birch). Numberless lakes and ponds occur along the river courses. Tungus hunters find a livelihood in the forests and on the meadows, but permanent agricultural settlements are impossible, corn seldom ripening on account of the early frosts. The lower parts of the broad and flat valley of the Djida have, however, a few Cossack settle- ments, and on the upper Selenga and Yenisei Mongolian shepherds (Uryankhes and Darkhates) inhabit the high grassy valleys about Lake Kossogol (5560 feet above the sea). Quite different is the lower terrace of the plateau, occupied by the eastern Gobi and the Nertchinsk region of Transbaikalia, and separated from the above by the Yablonovoi ridge. This last is the south-eastern border

ridge of the higher terrace. It rises to 8250 feet in the Sokhondo peak, but elsewhere its dome-shaped summits do not exceed 5000 or 6000 feet. When crossing it from the north-west, about Tchita, the traveller hardly perceives that he is approaching the great water-parting between the Arctic and the Pacific oceans. Numberless lakes, with flat : undetined borders, feed streams which flow lazily amidst marshes, some of them to join the great northward rivers,

others to find their way to the Amur and the Pacific. Low hills rise gently above the edge of the plateau, but an abrupt slope descends towards the south-east, where the hill-foots of the Yablonovoi are nearly 1500 and 2000

feet lower than on the north-west. Climate, flora, and fauna suddenly change as soon as the Yablonovoi has been crossed ; the steppes of Dauria (continuations of those of the Gobi), covered with a bright luxuriant vegetation, meet the view of the spectator. The Siberian flora gives way to the much richer Daurian flora, which in turn is exchanged for the Pacific littoral flora as soon as the traveller descends from the lower terrace of the plateau towards the Manchurian plains and lowlands.

The lower terrace, occupied in Transbaikalia by the Nertchinsk district, has the character of a steppe, but is also intersected by a number of ranges, all running south- west to north-east, and all being plications of Silurian and Devonian rocks, containing silver, lead, and copper, and also auriferous sands. Agriculture can be easily carried on in the broad prairies, the only drawbacks being droughts, and also frosts in the settlements in the higher close valleys of the Nertchinsk or Gazimur Mountains. The lower terrace is in its turn fringed by a border-ridge—the Great Khingan —which has, with reference to the lower terrace, the same characters as the Yablonovoi in relation to the upper, and separates Siberia from northern Manchuria. This import- ant ridge, as shown elsewhere (vol. xxii. pp. 3, 4), does not run from south to north, as represented on the old maps, but from south-west to north-east ; it is pierced by the Amur near Albazin, and joins the Okhotsk ridge, which in its turn does not join the Yablonovoi Mountains. The mountains drawn west and east on older maps to connect the Yablo- novoi with the Okhotsk ridge have no actual existence.

The rivers belong to three different systems,—the affluents of Lake Baikal, of the Lena, and of the Amur. Of the first the Selenga (800 miles long) rises in the Hanghai Mountains of north- western Mongolia, one of its great tributaries (the Ebin-gol) being an emissary of Lake Kossogol. It flows past Selenghinsk and enters Lake Baikal from the south-east, forming’a wide delta. The Tchikoi, the Khitok, and the Uda are its chief tributaries in Transbaikalia.1 The Barguzin and the Upper Angara are two large tributaries of Lake Baikal from the north-east. Of the tributarics of the Lena, the Vitim with its affluents (Karenga, Tsipa, Muya, Katar, Katakan) flows on the high plateau through uninhabited regions, as also does the

Olekma. The tributaries of the Amur, which is formed by the junction of the Shilka and the Arguii, are much more important. The Argufi, which at a quite recent epoch received the waters of the Dalai-nor, and thus had the Kerulefi for its source, is no longcr in communication with the rapidly drying Mongolian lake, and has its sources in the Gafi, which flows from the Great Khingan. It is not navigable, but receives the Gazimur and several other streams which water the Nertchinsk mining district. The Shilka is formed by the union of the Onon and the Tchita rivers, and is navigable from the town of Tehita, thus being an important channel of transit to the Amur.

Lake Baikal, with an area of 12,430 square miles (nearly equal to that of Switzerland), extends in a half crescent from south-west to north-east ; it has a length of over 400 miles and a width of from 20 to 53 miles. Its level is 1561 feet above the sea.? About the middle it is divided into two parts, the Great Lake and the Little Lake, by the island Olkhon and the peninsula of Svyatoi Nos, which closely approach one another. Between the two there is a submerged ridge, which must be considered as a continuation of the Barguzin Alps. The wide delta of the Selenga narrows the Great Lake in its middle part, and renders it more shallow in the east than in the west—the greatest depth (4186 feet) having been reached by Dr Godlevski in the south-west. The depth of the Little Lake does not exceed 210 feet. According to Tchersky, the trough now occupied by the base had its origin in three sepa- rate synclinal valleys, which date from the Azoic epoch, and were gulfs of the ocean during the Silurian or Huronian period. They coalesced at a much later epoch.? Of other lakes, the Gusinoye and Lake Baunt on the Vitim plateau, and Oron at its base, are worthy of notice. Many lakes yield common salt or sulphate of natron.

The high plateau consists of granites, gneisses, and syenites, covered with Laurentian schists. Silurian and Devonian marine deposits occur only on the lower terrace. Since that time the region has not been under the sea, aud only freshwater Jurassic deposits and coal-beds are met with in the depressions. During the Glacial period most of the high terrace of the plateau and its border ridges were undoubtedly covered with vast glaciers. Volcanic rocks of more recent origin (Mesozoic ?) are met with in the north-western border ridge and on its slopes, as well as on the Vitim

plateau. During the Glacial period the fauna of the lowest parts of Trans-baikalia was decidedly arctic; while during the Lacustrine or Post-Glacial period it was covered with numberless lakes, the

1 Steamers have ascended the lower Selenga and the Uda up to Verkneudinsk.

2 According to the levelling made in 1875-76 from Zverinogoloysk, in Oren- burg, to Lake Baikal. There is uncertainty as to the absolute altitude, that of Zverinogolovsk, 318 feet, having still to be verified. See Mem. Russ. Geogr. Soc.: Phys. Geogr., vol. xv., 1885.

3 I, Tchersky, ‘‘ Results of the Exploration of Lake Baikal,” in Mem. Russ. Geogr. Soe. , Phys. Geogr., vol. xv., 1886, with a geological map on a scale of 7 miles to an inch; Fr, Schmidt’s report inthe yearly Report of the Russian Geo- graphical Society for 1886 (both Russian).

shores of which were inhabited by Neolithicman. Only few traces of these have remained, and they are rapidly drying up. Earth- quakes are very frequent on the shores of Lake Baikal, especially at the mouth of the Selenga, extending as far as Irkutsk, Barguzin, and Selenghinsk; in 1862 an extensive area was submerged by the lake. Numerous mineral springs, some of them of high repute, are spread all over Transbaikalia. The chief of them are the hot alkaline springs (130° F.) at Turka, at the mouth of the Barguzin, whither hundreds of patients resort annually, those of Pogromna on the Uda (very similar to the Seltzer springs), those of Motokova near Tchita, and those of Darasun in the Nertchinsk district (very rich in carbonic acid and phosphate of iron).

The flora and fauna of Transbaikalia, owing to their intermediate character between a purely Siberian flora and fauna and those characteristic of the Mongolian and Manchurian regions, have been the subject of many careful investigations since the time of Pallas down to those of Turczaninoff, Middendorff, Schrenck, Radde, and Polyakoff. Their various characters in different parts of this ex- tensive territory could not be described without

entering too largely into details. The reader may consult the works of the authors just named (see vol. xxii. p. 12).

The climate is, as a whole, exceedingly dry and extreme. The winter is cold and dry; snow is so trifling that the horses of the Buriats find their food throughout the winter on the steppes, and in the very middle of the winter wheeled vehicles are used all over the west. To the east of the Yablonovoi ridge the Nertchinsk district feels the influence of the North Pacific monsoon region, and snow falls more thickly, especially in the valleys, but the summer continues to be hot and dry. On the high plateau, even the summer is cold, owing to the altitude and the humidity arising from the marshes, and the soil is frozen to a great depth. In the vicinity of Lake Baikal the moderating influence of the great water-basin is felt to some extent, and there is a cooler summer; in winter exceedingly deep snow covers the goltsys and valleys of the mountains around the lake.*

The population (497,760 in 1882) is exceedingly sparse, unless the immense uninhabitable spaces of the plateaus be left out of account. Even on the lower terrace nearly the whole of the region on the left bank of the Shilka is unsuited for agriculture, as also are the Gazimur Mountains, where only a few settlers gain a liveli- hood in some of the valleys, struggling against an unhealthy climate and the influcnce of goitre. The Russian population there gathers around the crown mines of the Nertchinsk district, while the steppes are occupied by Buriats. A succession of villages, supported partly by agriculture and partly by hunting and trade with Mongolia, are settled along the Shilka between Tchita and Sryetensk, while farther down the river flows in such a wild mountain region that only a few families are settled, at distances some 20 miles apart, to maintain communication, The same is true with regard to the lower Argufi. The valleys of the Uda, the lower Selenga, and especially the Tchikoi and the Khitok have been occupied since the beginning of the century by Raskolniks, who have received the name of Semeiskiye on account of their large (compound) families, and there one finds, in a condition of prosperity such as is unknown in Russia proper, some of the finest represen- tatives of the Russian race. The remainder of the steppe of the Uda is occupied by Buriats, while the forests and marshes of the plateau are the hunting

grounds of the nomad Tunguses. Only the valley of the Djida in the south of the Khamar-daban is settled in its lower parts.

The Russians of Transbaikalia present a great variety of ethno- logical types. Mainly owing to the difficulties of communication, many Great Russian Raskolniks and Little Russian settlers have preserved their ethnographical features pure from any admixture; while there are, on the other hand, villages in the Nertchinsk district, chiefly composed of the earliest Russian settlers, where a great admixture of Tungusian or Mongolian blood is observable. On the upper Argufi the Cossacks are in features, character, lan- guage, and manners largely Mongolian. The Russians along the Chinese frontier constitute a separate voisko of the Transbaikalian Cossacks, There is great uncertainty as to the numbers of the Buriats ; they are estimated at about 150,000. The Tunguses num- ber only a very few thousands.

Agriculture is carried on to a limited extent by the Buriats and in all Russian settlements; but it prospers only in the valleys of west Transbaikalia, and partly in the Nertchinsk region, while in the steppes of the Argufi and Onon even the Russians resort chiefly to cattle-breeding and trade, or to hunting. On the whole, corn has to be imported ; summer wheat and summer rye, oats, and barley are the chief crops in the east, winter rye not being sown in con- sequence of the want of snow. Cattle-rearing is extensively carried on, especially by the Buriats, but their herds and flocks, which wander freely over the steppes throughout the winter, are often destroyed in great numbers by the snow-storms of spring. Hunt- ing is an important occupation, even with the Russians, many of

4 “Das Klima yon Ost-Sibirien,” by A. Woyeikoff, in Meteor. Zettsch., 1884.

See vol. ii. Plate XXVI.

whom leave their homes in October to spend six weeks in the taiga (forest-region). The fisheries of Lake Baikal and the lower parts of its affluents are important. Enormous quantities of Salmo omul arc taken every year; and,

although the curing is most primitive, the annual yield is valued at £20,000. The Salmo thymalus, S. oxyrhynchus, and S. fluviatilis are also taken largely.

The possibilities of discoverics of gold are absorbing all the industrial forces of Transbaikalia. Gold-diggings occur chiefly in the basins of the Shilka and the upper Vitim, also on the Tchikoi and the Khilok. No less than 25,400 Ib is extracted annually by private enterprise, and about 3200 to by the crown, at the Kara gold-diggings, where nearly 1400 convicts are employed. The silver mining formerly carried on at several crown works is now on the decrease (see NERTCHINSK); the quantity extracted in 1884 was only 241 Ib. Every kind of manufactured ware has to be imported from Russia; and even petty trades are almost unknown in the villages.

The trade of the province is chiefly represented by that of Kiakhta. The Cossacks on the frontier carry on some trade in brick-tea, cattle, and hides with Mongolia. The export of furs is of considerable value.

The communications of Trausbaikalia are limited to the great Amur highway, which fringes the south coast of Lake Baikal and passes through Verkhneudinsk, Tchita,and Nertchinsk to Sryetensk, whence steamers ply down to the mouth of the Amur; in winter, further communication with the Amur beyond Sryctensk is main- tained on sledges on the ice of the Shilka, but in the autumn and spring a horseback journey as far as Kumara is the only possible method of reaching the middle Amur. Steamer communication is also maintained for six or seven months across Lake Baikal, from Posolskoye, at the mouth of the Selenga, to Listvenichnaya, 40 miles from Irkutsk. A highway connects Verkhneudinsk with Seleng- hinsk and Kiakhta, and communication on the steppes of the Argufi and the Onon as well as up the Barguzinis easy. The rest of Trans- baikalia can be visited only on horseback.

Transbaikalia is divided into five districts, the chief towns of which (with populations in 1880) are Tchita, capital of the province (12,600 inhabitants), Barguzin (800), Nertchinsk (4070), Seleng- hinsk (1150), and Verkhneudinsk (4150). Kiakhta has 4290 inhabitants, and Sryetensk, being at the head of the navigation, is a rising town. (BoA)

TRANSCASPIAN REGION (Zakaspiyskaya Oblast), an extensive territory to the east of the Caspian, annexed by Russia within the last fifteen years, is bounded on the S. by the highlands of Khorasan and Afghanistan, on the N. by Uralsk (from which it is divided by a line drawn from the Mortvyi Kuttuk Bay of the Caspian to the south extremity of Lake Aral), on the N.E. by Khiva and Bokhara, and on the S.E. (where it penetrates towards Herat on the slopes of the Paropamisus, and includes the Badhyz plateau) by Afghan Turkestan. So defined, it has an area of 220,000 square miles.

Although nine-tenths of this territory consists of unin- habitable desert, an interest attaches to it on account of the great physical changes it has undergone during the Post-Glacial period. Since Pallas visited its borders, and still more since Humboldt discussed its history, it has never ceased to attract the attention of geographers. In fact, some of the most interesting problems of geography, such as those relating to the changes in the course of the Jaxartes and the Oxus, the bifurcation and the oscillation of a great river, and the supposed periodical disappearance of Lake Aral, are connected with the Transcaspian deserts ; and it is here that we must look for a clue to the great physical changes which transformed the Mediterranean of Western Asia—the Aral-Caspian and Pontic basin—into a series of separate seas, and desiccated them, powerfully influencing the distribution of floras and faunas, and com- pelling the inhabitants of Western and Central Asia to enter upon their great migrations. But down toa very recent date the dry and barren deserts, peopled only by wandering Turcoman bands, remained almost a terra incog- nita, and only now are we beginning to make the very

first steps towards their really scientific exploration.

A mountain chain, in length comparable to the Alps, separates the deserts of the Transcaspian from the highlands of Khorasan. It runs from north-west to south-east, and appears as a continua- tion of the Caucasus. It begins in the Krasnodovsk peninsula of

the Caspian, under the names of Kuryanin-kara and Great Balkans, whose masses of granite and other crystalline rock reach a height of more than

5000 feet. Farther to the south-east these are con- tinued in the much lower Little Balkans and Kyuren-dagh (2000 fect), the Kopepet-dagh, Kosty-dagh, Asilma, and Zaryn-kul,—the name of Kopepet-dagh or Kopet-dagh being often now used to designate the whole chain which rises steep and wild above the flat deserts from the Caspian to the river Murghab,—a stretch of 600 miles. In structure itis homologous with the Caucasus chain; it appears as an outer wall of the Khorasan plateau, and is separated from it by a broad valley, which, like the Rion and Kura valley of Transcaucasia, is watered by two rivers flowing in opposite directions,—the Atrek, which flows north-west into the Caspian, and the Keshefrud, which flows to the south-east, and is a tribu- tary of the Murghab. On the otlicr side of this valley the Allah- dagh and the Binalund border-ridges (9000 to 11,000 feet) fringe the edge of the Khorasan plateau. At its south-eastern extremity this outer wall loses its regularity where it meets with the spurs of the Hindu-kush. Descending towards the steppe with steep stony slopes, it rises to heights of 6000 and 9000 feet to the east of Kizil-arvat, while the passes which lead from the Turco- man deserts to the valleys of Khorasan are seldom as low as 3500, usually rising to 5000, 6000, and even 8500 feet, and in most eases being very difficult. This wall is pierced by but one wide opening, that between the Great and Little Balkans, through which the sea which once covered the steppe maintained connexion with the Caspian.

While the Allah-dagh and Binalund border-ridges are chiefly composed of crystalline rocks and metamorphic slates covered with Devonian deposits, a series of more recent formations—Upper and Lower Cretaceous, and Miocene—are shown in the outer wall of the Kopet-dagh. Here again we find that the mountains of Asia which stretch towards the north-west continued to be uplifted at a geologically recent epoch. Quaternary deposits have an extensive developinent on its slopes, and its hillfoots are bordered by a girdle of loess.

The loess terrace, called ‘‘Atok” (‘‘mountain base”), is but narrow, ranging in width from 10 to 20 miles; still its chain of settlements have rendered it possible to lay down a railway which now connects the Caspian with Sarakhs. It is very fertile, but could produce nothing without irrigation, and the streams flowing from the Kopet-dagh are few and meagre. The winds which reach the northern slope of the mountains have been deprived of all

their moisture in crossing the Kara-kum—the Black Sands of the Turcoman desert ; and even such rain as falls on the Kopet-dagh (104 inches at Kizil-arvat) too often reaches the soil in the shape of showcrs which do not saturate it, so that the average relative humidity is but 56 and the average nebulosity only 3°9, as against 62 and 4°1 at even so dry a place as Krasnovodsk. Still, at those places where the mountain streams are closer to one another, as at Geok-tepe, Askabad, Lutfabad, and Kahka, the villages are more populous, and the houses are surrounded by gardens, every square yard and every tree of which is fed by irrigation.

Beyond this narrow strip of irrigated land begins the desert, — the Kara-kum,—which extends from the mountains of Khorasan to Lake Aral and the Ust-Urt, and from the Caspian to the Amu, interrupted only by the oases of Merv and Tejefi. It appears, how- ever, that the terrible shifting sands blown into barkhans, or elongated hills, sometimes 50 and 60 feet in height, are grouped chiefly in the west, where the country has more recently emerged from the sea. Farther to the east the barkhans are more stable, their slopes being covered with bushes (for the most part leafless); the caravans sometimes follow their crests, and the shifting sands occupy restricted spaces. Large areas amidst the sands are occupied by takyrs, or flat surfaces covered with clay which is hard as a rule, but becomes alniost impassable after heavy rains. In these takyrs the Turcomans dig ditches, draining into a kind of cistern—the kak—where the water of the spring rains keeps for a few months. Wells are sunk also along the routes of the caravans, and water is found in them at depths of 10 to 50 or occasionally 100 feet and more. All is not desert in the strict sense ; in spring there is for the most part a covering of grass, which allows of journeys across the desert. There are footpaths in several directions, especially from the irrigated and cultivated Atok towards Khiva.

The vegetation of the Kara-kum cannot be described as poor ; the typical representative of the sand deserts of Asia, the saksaul (Anabasis Ammodendron), has been almost destroyed within the last hundred years, and never appears in forests, but the borders of the spaces covered with salted clay are brightened by forests of tamarisk, which are inhabited by great numbers of the desert warbler (Atraphornis aralensis)—a typical inhabitant of the sands,—sparrows, and ground-choughs (Podoces); the

Houbara macquennii, Gray, though not frequent, is characteristic of the region. Hares and foxes, jackals and wolves, marmots, moles, hedgehogs, and one species of marten live in the steppe, especially in spring. As a whole, the fauna is richer than might be sup- posed, while in the Atok it contains representatives of all the

species known in Turkestan, mixed with Persian and Himalayan species.

The Uzboi.—A feature distinctive of the Turcoman desert is secn in tle very numerous shors, or elongated depressions, the lower portions of which are occupied mostly with sand impregnated with brackish water. They are obviously the remains of brackish lakes, and, like the lakes of the Kirghiz steppes, they often follow one another in close succession, thus closely resembling river-beds. As the direction of these shors is generally from the higher terraces watered: by the Amu-Daria towards the lowlands of the Caspian, they were usually regarded as old beds of the Amu-Daria, and were held to support the idea of its once having flowed across the Turco-man desert towards what is now the Caspian Sea.

As for the ancient texts with regard to the Jaxartes and Oxus, it becomes more and more probable that their interpretation, if possible at all, is only so when it is admitted that, since the epoch to which these relate, the outlines of the Caspian Sea and Lake Aral have undergone notable changes, commensurate with those which are supposed to have occurred in the courses of the Central Asian rivers, The desiccation of the Aral-Caspian basin proceeded with such rapidity that the shores of the Caspian could not possibly maintain for some twenty centuries the outlines which they have at present. When studied in detail, the general configuration of the Transcaspian region leaves uo doubt that both the Jaxartes and the Oxus, with its former tributaries, the Murghab and the Tejeii, once flowed towards the west; but the Caspian of that time

1 See N. Zarudnyi, ‘Les Oiseaux de la Contrée Transcaspienne,” in Bull. Soc. Nat. Mosc., 1885.

2 It is to be observed that on the original Russian map of the Transcaspian, drawn immediately after the survey of the Uzboi had been completed, the Uzboi has not the continuity which is given to it on subsequent maps,

3 Their original papers are printed in the Jzrestta of the Russian Geogr. Soc., 1883 to 1887, as also in the Journal of the Russian Ministry of Roads and Com- munications,

4 According to A. E. Hedroitz and A. M. Konshin the old Tonu-Daria bed of the Amu contains shells of molluscs now living in the Amu (Cyrena fluminalis, Dreissena polymorpha, and Anodonta). The Sary-kamysh basin is characterized by deposits containing Neritina liturata, Dreissena polymorpha, and Lymnzus, characteristic of this basin. Below thc Sary-kamysh there are no more deposits containing shells characteristic for the Amu; Anodontz are found quite occasion- ally on the surface, not in beds, in company with the Caspian Cardium (Didacna) trigonoides, var. crassum, Cardium ptramidatum, Dreissena polymorpha, D. rostriformis, Hydrobia caspia, Neritina liturata, and Dreissena brardit; the red clays with these fossils extend for 130 miles to the east of the Caspian (/zvestia of Russ. Geog. Soc., 1883 and 1886).

5 As by Jenkinson, who mentions a sweet-water gulf of the Caspian within six

days' march from Khwarezm, by which gulf he could mean nothing but the Sary- Kamysh depression.

was not the sea of our days; its gulfs penetrated the Turcoman steppe, and washed the base of the Ust-Urt plateau, as is shown by the deposits of its shells described by the Russian engineers.

Kelif-Uzboi.—There is also no doubt that, instead of flowing north-westward of Kelif, the Amu once flowed to join the Murghab and Tejeii; the succession of depressions described by the Russian engineers as the Kelif-Uzboi® supports this hypothesis, which a geographer cannot avoid making when studying a map of the Transcaspian region; but the date at which the Oxus followed such a course, and the extension which the Caspian basin then had towards the east, remain unsettled. Much, however, has still to be

done before we can fully reconstruct the geological history of that region since the Phocene epoch, or show how far the data of Pliny, Strabo, and Ptolemy were descriptions of actual facts.”

Population.—With the exception of some 35,000 Kirghiz en- camped with their herds on the Ust-Urt plateau (a swelling some 600 to 1000 feet in height and nearly 92,000 square miles in extent, which, owing to its dryness and cold winter, can be inhabited only by nomad cattle-breeders) and a few Persians in the Lutfabad and Shilghyan villages of the Atok, the whole of the population of the Transcaspian region consists of Turcomans. Until a very recent date their chief occupation was cattle-rearing and robbery. Even those Turcomans who had settled abodes on the oases of the Atok, Tejei, and Merv were in the habit of encamping during spring in the steppes, and there practising robbery. Robber bands were easily formed, and on their powerful horses they extended their excursionsto distances of 200 and 300 miles from their abodes. They infested the Astrabad province ; and the villages of the khanates of Afghan Turkestan, from Balkh to Meshhed, were periodically devastated by them. The aspect of the steppe has, however, greatly changed since the Russian advance, the fall of the Turco- man stronghold of Geok-tepe, and the massacres which ensued ; the Persians are already beginning to avenge themselves on the inhabitants of the Atok by disputing with them the supplies of water coming from the Kopet-dagh.

The chief oasis of the Turcoman desert is the Atok, which extends along the base of the Kopet-dagh, and is now traversed by the Transcaspian railway. The Akhal and the Arakadj oases, collectively called Atok, now have a population of about 42,000 Tekke-Turcomans, who have recently settled there, and live for the most part in miserable clay huts or in felt tents (kibitkas), They raise wheat, barley, aud lucerne ; and the Persians have excellent gardens. Some cotton is also grown, and the culture of the silk-worm is beginning to spread. The chief settlements are Askabad, Kizil-arvat, and Geok-tepe.

The oasis of MERv (qg.v.) is inhabited by Akhal-tekkes (about 160,000), mostly poor. In January 1887 they submitted to Russia.

The oasis of Tejefi has recently sprung up where the river Tejefi (Heri-rud) terminates in the desert. Formerly it was only tem- povarily visited by the

Tekkes who came to cultivate the fields in summer. In 1883 it was estimated to have 7500 inhabitants.

South-West Turcomania.—The region between the Heri-rud and the Murghab, as they issue from the highlands, described in English maps under the name of Badhyz, and by the Russians as South- West Turcomania, has of late attracted a good deal of attention since the Russian occupation of Sarakhs on the Tejefi (see AFGHANISTAN and PersiA) and Penjdeh on the Murghab. It has the characters of a plateau reaching about 2000 feet above the sea, with hills 500 and 600 feet high covered with sand, the spaces between being filled with loess. The Borkhut Mountains which conuect the Kopet-dagh with the Sefid-kuh, reach 3000 to 4000 feet, and are crossed in a gorge by the Heri-rud. Thickets of poplar and willow follow the courses of both the Murghab and Heri-rud, and the trecsreach a considerable size. Pistachio and mulberry trees grow in isolated groups on the hills; but there are few places available for culture, and the Saryks (some 60,000 in number) congregate in only two oases at Yot-otan and Penjdeh. Cattle-breeding is their chiefoccupation, and enables thein to live in a certain degree of affluence. Brigandage, formerly a notable source of income, is now being suppressed. The Sarakhs oasis is now occupied by the Salors, hereditary enemies of the Tekkes, who number about 3000 tents at Old Sarakhs, and 1700 more on the Murghab, at Tchardjui, at Maimene, and close to Herat.

Great modifications in the life of the steppe have of course been brought about by the Russian conquest, which was followed with

6 In connexion with this southern ‘told bed,” it is worthy of notice that the Ersari-Turcomans call it Unghyuz or Onguz (‘‘dry old bed”), and there can be no doubt that when the Bolshoi Tehertezh of the 16th century (speaking from anterior information) mentions a river, Ughyuz or Ugus, flowing to the west from the Amu towards the Caspian, it is merely describing as a river what its very name shows to have been a dry bed, only supposed to have been once occupied bya river. The similarity of the names Ongus and Ugus with the Ogus and Ochus is so striking that one is inclined to see in the Ogus or Ochus nothing but the mention of a dry old bed. Compare

Petrusevitch, ‘‘ The South-East Shores of the Caspian,” in Zapiski of the Caucasian Geogr. Soc., vol. xi., 1880.

7 Such an intermingling of modern data with older traditions is not unknown to geographers. A striking instance of it is given in the supposed connexion of Lake Aral with the Arctic Ocean during historical times; pliysical changes are procecding so rapidly in Asia that we find traces of like survivals of traditions even in this age of accurate surveys.

See vol. Do. Plates Ih, JOU

TR A—

great rapidity by the construction of a railway from Mikhailovsk on the Caspian to Kizil-arvat and Sarakhs, and thence to Merv and north-eastward to T’chardjui on the Amu, from which point it is now being continued across Bokhara towards Samarkand. Attempts at growing cotton and tea are being made, and land has been rented at Merv for cotton plantations. Cotton is to be pressed by steam at Bokhara and Tchardjui, to be sent to Russia by the Trans- caspian railway.

Caspian Lttoral.—The Caspian littoral is divided into two districts, Krasnovodsk and Manghishtak. The former has about 15,500 settled inhabitants and 3056 Turcoman kibitkas (partly shifted in summer to Persian territory). The chief settlements of the district are Krasnovodsk on the Krasnovodsk Gulf; Mikhailovsk, the terminus of the Transcaspian railway, in regular communication by steamer with Baku; and Tchikishlyar, close to the mouth of the Atrek. The Manghishtak district, which includes the Ust-Urt plateau, has a population of about 34,500 Kirghiz. Its chief settlement is Alexandrovsk.

The total population of the Transcaspian region was estimated in 1883—that is, before the annexations in South-West Turcomania —at from 214,000 to 260,000 inhabitants (EAP EK)

TRANSCAUCASIA, the name given to that portion of the Russian empire (in Caucasus, Armenia, and Asia Minor) which lies to the south of the main Caucasus ridge. It comprises the governments of Kutais (inclusive of the

province of Batum), Tiflis, Elisabethpol, Erivaii, and Kars, with parts of Daghestan and most of Baku, and the separate military districts of Tchernomorsk and Zakataty. Sometimes Transcaucasia is identified with Southern Caucasus, and then it is intended to include the whole of Daghestan. So defined, it would have an area of 95,930 square miles, and a population of 4,173,380.

Three regions must be distinguished :—(1) the narrow strip of land between the main Caucasus ridge and the Black Sea (TCHERNoMoRsK district, g.v.) ; (2) the broad valley, watered by the Rion in the west and the Kura in the east, which separates the main Caucasus ridge from the region next to be mentioned; (3) the highlands, mountains, and plateaus of Lazistan, Kars, and Armenia.

The valley referred to, which crosses the isthmus from the Black Sea to the Caspian, consists of two widely different sections, —the drainage-area of the Rion, which is Mediterranean in its physical characteristics, and the valley of the Kura and Araxes, which slopes to the Caspian, and in its lower parts becomes purely cis-Caspian. The Mesques or Meshik Mountains (3000-5000 feet), a ridge running south-west to north-east, and probably a con- tmuation of the Black Sea coast ridge (Tchorokh Moun- tains), separate the two, The drainage area of the Rion, which corresponds approximately to the government of Kutais, includes the former provinces of Imeritia, Min- grelia, Guria, and Swanetia on the upper Ingur and Tshenis- tshali. With the exception of the valley of the Rion (some 25 miles broad), and the sandy and marshy littoral, it is wholly occupied by spurs of the main Caucasus ridge, the Meshik, and the Wakhan Mountains; the last-named rise to 10,000 and 11,000 feet above the sea in their highest summits, and are intersected by deep and fertile valleys. The region is characterized by a heavy rainfall and a moist maritime climate. The vegetation, which is luxuriant, is of a circum-Mediterranean character: fine forests of de- ciduous trees clothe the mountain slopes, and the high- land villages nestle amid thickets of azalea, almond, and rhododendron. Maize, the mulberry, the vine, and a great variety of fruit trees are cultivated. Mingrelia and Imeritia are the real gardens of Caucasus ; but the high valleys tributary to the Ingur, inhabited by Swanians, are wild and difficult of access ; in some of them, which are narrow and marshy, fevers and

scurvy prevail. The Rion is not navigable, and of its tributaries only the Tshenis-

! No Russian sea shows so rapid a growth of navigation as the Caspian Sea during the last fifteen years. In 1884 no less than 1945 steamers (611,000 tons), engaged in foreign trade, entered the Russian ports of the Caspian, as against 409 (113,000 tons) in 1876.

a ak o13

tshali and the Kvirila are worthy of mention. Several lakes (such as the Paleostom, surrounded by marshes at the mouth of the Rion) occur in the coast region. The popu- lation consists of Imeritians, Mingrelians, Gurians, and Swanians, all belonging to the Kartvelian branch of Caucasians (see vol. x. p. 433), with a few Ossetians, J ews, Armenians, and Tartars. Russians are not numerous.

The pass of Suram, by which the Transcaucasian railway now crosses the Mesques Mountains, leads from the valley of the Rion to that of the Kura. Spurs from the Caucasus and the Anti- caucasus fill np the broad longitudinal depression between these, so that above Tiflis the bottom of the valley is but a narrow strip. But below that city it suddenly widens, and stretches for nearly 350 miles eastward towards the Caspian with a steadily increasing breadth, until it becomes nearly 100 miles wide in the steppe of Mugafi on the Caspian littoral. The snow-clad peaks of the main Caucasus, descending by short steep slopes, fringe the valley on the north-east ; while a huge wall, much lower, and having the characters of a border-ridge of the Armenian plateau, bounds the valley on the south-west.?_ The floor of the valley gently slopes from 12900 feet at Tiflis to 500 feet in its middle, and to 85 feet below the level of the ocean on the Caspian shore; but a plateau ranging from 2000 to 3000 feet in height, very fertile along the Ataza, a left-hand tributary of the Kura, stretches along the southern hill- foots of the main ridge. In its lower course the Kura is joined by the Araxes, a river nearly as large as itself, which brings to it the waters of the Armeuian plateau.

The highest mountains of the Caucasus enclose the upper parts of the valley (now the government of Tiflis), An unbroken series of peaks, from 10,000

to 12,600 feet in height, mostly snow-clad and separated by but slight depressions, is seen in profile as one looks from some height of the Anticaucasus towards the main chain and the broad valley of the Kura. Deep short gorges and valleys indent the steep slopes which are inhabited by Ossetians, Tushes, Pshavs, and Khevsurs in the west, and by the various tribes of the Lesghians in the east. Every available patch is used in these high and stony valleys for the culture of barley, even at heights of 7000 and 8000 feet above the sea; but cattle-breeding is the chief resource of the mountaineers, whose little communities are separated from one another by passes in few cases lower than 10,000 feet. The steppes which cover the bottom of the valley are for the most part too dry to be cultivated without irrigation. It is only nearer the hillfoots in Kahetia, where multitudinous streams supply the fields and the gardens of the plateau of the Atazaii, that wheat, millet, and maize are grown, and orchards, vineyards, and mulberry-tree plantations are possible. Lower down the valley cattle-rearing becomes the chief source of wealth, while in the small towns and villages of the former Georgian kingdom (see GxoreiA) various petty trades, testifying to a high development of artistic taste and technical skill, are widely diffused. Further down the Kura, in the government of Elizabethpol, and especially on the right bank of the river, a population of Russian agriculturists—chiefly Nonconformists —is rapidly springing up, so that corn is exported from the villages on the Ganja. The slopes of the Anticaucasus are covered with beautiful forests, and the vine is grown at their base, while in the broad and wide steppes the Tartars rear cattle, horses, and sheep. The lower part of the Kura valley, which belongs mainly to the province of Baku, assumes the character of a dry steppe where the rainfall hardly reaches 13°7 inches at Baku, and is still less in the Mugah steppe (in most striking contrast with the moistness of the Lenkorafi region close by). The steep slopes of the Great Caucasus are still covered with thriving forests ; but forests and meadows dis- appear in the steppe, whose scanty vegetation has a Central-Asian character. Only tugais, or thickets of poplar, dwarf oak, tama- risk, and so on, follow the actual] course of the Kura, whose delta is covered with impenetrable growths of rushes. The Mugafi steppe, however, does not deserve its ancient evil reputation; the serpents with which it was said to abound are entirely fabulous, and in the winter it is full of life; herds of antelopes roam over it, and its southern irrigated parts promise to become the granary of Caucasus,? although its unirrigated parts will probably never

recover their former richness, the Kura having’excavated its bed to a much greater depth. The Apsheron peninsula, in which the Great Caucasus terminates at Baku, to be continned farther south-east by a sub- marine plateau of the Caspian, is the seat of those remarkable naphtha springs which have recently given rise to an important industry and now supply most of the Volga steamers with fuel; while the western shores of the wide Kizil-agatch Bay—the Tatysh, or Lenkoraii district on the slopes of the Armenian plateau—on account of their rich vegetation, fertile soil, and moist climate, are one of the most beautiful possessions of Russia in Asia.

2? For this valley and the contrasts between the Caucasus and Anti-caucasus, see Raddes Ornis Caucasica, Cassel, 1884. 3 Seidlitz, Spiski naselennykh myest Bakinskot gubernii. Se, — 65

The population includes only a few Russians (about 16,000); the |

majority are Tartar shepherds, next to whom eome the Iranian Tates and Talyshes (the latter probably aborigines of Baku), who eonstitute 23°1 per cent. of the population; some 27,000 Armenians, chiefly about Shemakha, and 35,000 Kurins, or Lezghians, on the slope of the Great Caucasus, must be added, as also some Jews and Arabs.

A mining industry of some importance has been growing up of late in this part of Transcaucasia. The copper works of Kedabek in Elizabethpol yield from 10,000 to 15,000 cwts. of eopper annually; nearly 300,000 cwts. of manganese are extracted in Kutais, and 30,000 ewts. of sulphur in Daghestan and Baku ; the coal-mines of Kutais, the alum ores of Elizabethpol, and the fire-clay and cement of Tchernomorsk, are but recently opened up.

The highlands of Transcaucasia, which extend from north-west to south-east for nearly 375 miles, with an average width of 160 miles, must in their turn be sub- divided into two sections—the Armenian plateau, including the provinces of Erivaii and Kars and parts of Baku, and the Black Sea coast-region, including the former province of Batum (now the Batum and Artvin districts of Kutais).

The former of those is an immense plateau separated by the valley of the Araxes from the highlands of Adherbaijan and of Turkish Armenia, which belong to the drainage-areas of the Euphrates or those of Lakes Van and Urmia. All over Kars and Erivafi is a series of plateaus ranging in altitude from 5000 to 6500 feet, sometimes quite flat, sometimes broadly undulating, covered with rich meadows, and for the most part available for agriculture. Dome-shaped mountains, isolated, or grouped into relatively low ridges, rise from these plateaus to heights which range from 8000 to 9500 feet, and occasionally reach 10,000 or 11,000 above sea-level. Several summits in the east exceed that height, and the Alaghéz reaches 13,436 feet.

This plateau region is bounded on the south by the valley of the Araxes, the river which forms the frontier with Turkey, except where it is crossed by Russia in the south of Kars and west of Erivafi.. There the river flows in a broad valley 4500 feet above sea-level, and the Kars plateau falls towards it by a steep slope, while on the other side a steep, rocky ridge of exeeedingly wild aspect rises as the northern border-ridge of the South Armenian (Alashkert) plateau and the water-parting between the Caspian Sea and the Indian Ocean. This ridge, which includes the Allah-dagh and Késa-dagh (10,720 and 11,260 feet respectively), as also the Great and Little Ararats (17,100 and 12,990 feet), has no general name, but is described under the names of Shah-ioly, or Agri-dagh.?

A number of lakes occur on the plateau, especially along its northern border-ridge, the chief being that of Goktcha, an extensive alpine basin (500 square miles 6310 feet above sea-level) sur- rounded by wild mountains. Most of the depressions of the plateau bear traces of having been under water during the Lacustrine (Post-Glacial) period. Granites and other unstratified rocks con- stitute the nucleus of the Armenian and Kars plateaus. These are eovered with Azoic slates, and partly with Devonian and Carbonifer- ous deposits; Jurassic and Cretaceous are wanting, but the Tertiary (Eocene and Miocene) are widely spread both in the valley of the Rion and Kura and in the depressions of the plateau. Rocks of volcanic origin are widely diffused all over Erivafi: the Alexandropol plateau, surrounded by extinct volcanoes, is all covered with volcanic products, which overlie the Tertiary deposits and in turn are covered with Glacial boulder-elay.

The Alaghoz, the Ararats, and the peaks around Lake Goktcha are huge trachitic masses surrounded by volcanic rocks. Iron and copper ores are widely spread; alum and rock-salt are obtained, the latter at Kulpi and Nakhichevafi. Mineral springs are numer- ous. ‘The region is watered by the upper Araxes—too rapid and rocky to be navigated—and its tributaries, most of which flow at the bottoms of deep gorges. The upper Kura waters western Kars. The climate presents all the varieties which might be expected in a region of so varied altitudes. While eotton grows in the dry and hot climate of the valley of the lower Araxes, the winter is severe on the plateau, and Alexandropol (5010 feet) has an average temperature of only 41°°5 (Jan. 12°°8; July, 73°°6). The difference between summer and winter is still more striking at Erivafi (3210 feet), which has in January an average of only 5° while that of August reaches 77°°7.. On the Kars plateau the winter is still more severe. Kaghyzman (4620 feet) and Sary-kamysh (7800 feet) have the winter temperature of Finland, and the latter place, with an annual mean the same as that of Hammerfest (36° F.), has frosts of

1 ‘W. Massalsky, ‘‘Government of Kars,” in Zgvestia of Russ. Geogr. Soc., vol. xxiii., 1887.

27° and heats of 99°. The vegetation of the Kars plateau reflects these extremes of climate, and, besides the alpine vegetation of the high yailas (alpine meadows), we find there the Anatolian, Armenian, and Pontic floras meeting. The population of Erivafi consists of Armenians (54 per cent.), Tartars (40 per cent.), some 28,000 Kurds, and some 4400 Russians, together with a few Greeks and Jews. In localities under 4000 feet eotton and rice are the chief crops, oil-yielding plants, the vine, the mulberry, and fruit trees being also cultivated. Higher up wheat and barley are grown, while at altitudes above 6000 and 7000 feet the Tartars aud Kurds support themselves by rearing cattle. Many petty trades are developed in the towns among the Armenians, and the trade of Erivai with Persia and Turkey amounts to about 10,000,000 roubles.

The population of the provinee of Kars (167,610 in 1883) is very mixed. In a remote antiquity it was inhabited by Armenians, whose capital Ani, Mren with its beautiful ruins of a grand cathedral, and several other towns now in

ruins testify to the former wealth and populousness of the country. After the fall of the Armenian empire the Turks occupied the region ; Kurds from Kurdistan and Diarbekr invaded the alpine pasturages of the valley of the Araxes; later on, Kabards, Circassians, Osses, and Karapapakhs found refuge there; and finally, after the last war the Mohammedans emigrated to Asia Minor (82,760 in 1878-81), while Christian Armenians, Greeks, Russian Raskolniks, and some Yezids took their place. The population consists now of Turks, Armenians, Turcomans, Greeks, Kurds, Adherbaijan Tartars, Gipsies, and Russians. The Kars sanjak, which was one of the granaries of Turkey, has lost this reputation; but the crops (chiefly wheat and barley) are now again increasing where the early frosts do not interfere with agriculture. Cotton is raised in the Olty region; and in the valley of the Araxes gardening and the eulture of the silkworm are widely diffused; while cattle-rearing is the chief source of income in the highlands, especially with the Kurds, who move their felt tents on the yailas to higher levels as the summer sun burns up the vegetation.

The western part of the Transcaucasian highlands com- prises the Batum and Artvin districts, which now belong to Kutais. The whole of the region is occupied by alpine ridges—the Pontic ridge in the west, and those of Arjar and Arsian in the east, whose highest peaks rise to 10,000 and 11,000 feet, without, however, reaching the limits of perpetual snow. The Tchorokh and its tributaries, moun- tain streams enclosed in deep valleys, water the region ; the Tchorokh is navigable by small boats for 60 miles.

The coast region enjoys an excellent climate; the average yearly temperature at Batum is 65° F., that of the coldest month (February) being 41°°5, and that of July 76°°5. During the last four years the thermometer never fell lower than 39°°5 at Batum. The rainfall is excessive (93°4 inches), and days are recorded on which the amount of rain exceeded 10 inches. The region has accordingly a very luxuriant and subtropical vegetation, and even higher up the hills the villages are literally buried amidst gardens. The higher hills have luxuriant meadows. Rice is eultivated in the coast region, and millet, barley, tobacco, and a variety of fruit- trees on higher altitudes. The inhabitants (about 90,000 in 1884) are chiefly Georgians, approaching the Gurians most nearly. The Lazes number about 2000 and the Kurds about 1000.

Towns.—The chief towns of Trarscaucasia are more important than those of northern Caucasus. TIFLIS (q.v.), with 104,024 in- habitants in 1888, is the capital of Caucasia. KurTais (q.v.) (18,000), to which tradition assigns an age of 4000 or 5000 years, has grown rapidly of late, owing to its sitnation at the head of the alluvial plain of the Rion and the proximity of the Tkvibula coal deposits and the Kvirila manganese mines. Khoni (4060) and Orpiri are mere administrative centres of Kutais. Redut-kale (620) has lost its importance as a seaport, and Poti (3110), at the mouth of the Rion, has not yet become an important port, notwithstanding efforts to improve its roadstead and its railway connexion with Tiflis and Baku. The chief Black Sea port of Transcaucasia is BATUM (q.v.), which has been diligently fortified of late, and has now a popula- tion of 12,000. Artvin (5860) and Ardjari are the two other ehief towns of the Batumi region. The chief towns of the government of Tiflis besides its eapital are Gori, capital of Georgia (population 4800), Mtzhet (770) at the junction of the Vladikavkaz highway with the Transcaucasian railway, Telav (7020), Dushety (8600), Zakataty (1080), chief town of a separate military district, and Sig- nakh (10,340), which are built in the spurs of the main chain; while Akhattsikh (18,270), on the upper Kura and on the Kars plateau, is a busy centre for petty trades. The old city of Ahatkataki (3200) on the same plateau is now a Russian fort. ELIZABETHPOL, NUKHA, and SHUSHA (gq.v.) are the principal towns in the provinee of Elizabethpol. Baxv (g.v.), the terminus of the Transcaucasian

railway, and in regular steamer communication with Mikhailovsk in the Transcaspian region, derives its importance from the naphtha wells which surround it. SHEMAKHA (g.v.) (28,810), and Saliany (10,170), at the head of the delta of the Kura, and notable for its fisheries, are the only places of importance in the province of Baku. ERIVAN (q.v.) (12,450), capital of the province of Erivafi, and the chief city of the Armenian plateau, is one of the oldest cities of the country, and, owing to its position, would be much more important than itis, but foritselimate. Etchmiadzin, or Vagarshapad (2910), is the real capital (the Rome) of Armenia, for its antiquities, mon- astery, library, and printing offices. Nakhitchevahi (5390)—the Naxuana of Ptolemy—is another centre of Armenia. The most populous town of the

region, however, is Alexandropol (23,010) or GuMRI (q.v.),.the ehief Russian fortress of Transcaucasia, —the other towns of Erivai being Ani, or Oni, Novobayazet at Lake Goktcha, and Ordubad (8600). The long-disputed Kars (q.%.), which has now 7340 inhabitants, is the chief town of the new Russian province of the same name, annexed in 1878. Kaghyzman (3700), on the upper Araxes, is but a collection of clay houses sur- rounded by rich gardens; Ardahan (1270), on the upper Kura, and Olty (580) are the only other towns of Kars worthy of notice as administrative centres. (BEAL IS)

TRANSIT CIRCLE, or Merrpi1an Crrcie, an instru- ment for observing the time of a star's passing the meridian, at the same time measuring its angular distance from the zenith. The idea of having an instrument (quadrant) fixed in the plane of the meridian occurred even to the ancient astronomers, and is mentioned by Ptolemy, but it was not carried into practice until Tycho Brahe constructed a large meridian quadrant. This instru- ment enabled the observer to determine simultaneously right ascension and declination, but it does not appear to have been much used for right ascension during the 17th century, the method of equal altitudes by portable quad- rants or distance measures with a sextant being preferred (see OBSERVATORY and TimE). These methods were, how- ever, very inconvenient, which induced RoEMER (q.v.) to invent the transit instrument about 1690. It consists of a horizontal axis in the direction east and west resting on firmly fixed supports, and having a telescope fixed at right angles to it, revolving freely in the plane of the meridian. At the same time Roemer invented the altitude and azimuth instrument for measuring vertical and horizontal angles, and in 1704 he combined a vertical circle with his transit instrument, so as to determine both coordinates at the same time. 'This latter idea was, however, not adopted elsewhere, although the transit instrument. soon came into universal use (the first one at Greenwich was mounted in 1721), and the mural quadrant continued till the end of the century to be employed for determining declinations. The advantage of using a whole circle, as less liable to change its figure, and not requiring reversal in order to observe stars north of the zenith, was then again recog- nized by RamspEN (g.v.), who also improved the method of reading off angles by means of a inicrometer microscope as described below. The making of circles was shortly afterwards taken up by TRovueHTon (¢.v.), who in 1806

constructed the first modern transit circle for Mr Groom- bridge's observatory at Blackheath, but he afterwards abandoned the idea, and designed the mural circle to take the place of the mural quadrant. In the United Kingdom the transit instrument and mural circle continued till the middle of the present century to be the principal instru- ments in observatories, the first transit circle constructed there being that at Greenwich (mounted in 1850), but on the Continent the transit circle superseded them from the years 1818-19, when two circles by Repsoup (¢.v.) and by REICHENBACH (g.v.) were mounted at Géttingen, and one by Reichenbach at Kéonigsberg.1 The firm of Repsold was for a number of years eclipsed by that of Pistor and Martins in Berlin, who furnished the observatories of

1 The most notable exception was the transit instrument and vertical circle of the Pulkova observatory, specially designed by the elder Struve for fundamental determinations:

O15

Copenhagen, Albany, Leyden, Leipsic, Berlin, Washington, and Dublin with first class instruments, but since the death of Martins the Repsolds have again taken the lead, and have of late years made transit circles for Strasburg, Bonn, Wilhelmshafen, Williamstown (Massachusetts), Madison (Wisconsin), &c. The observatories of Harvard College (United States), Cambridge, and Dun Echt have large circles by Troughton and Simms, who also made the Greenwich circle from the design of Airy.?

We shall describe the principal features of a transit circle, referring for smaller transit instruments and altazi- muths to the article SURVEYING (vol. xxii. p. 719).

In the earliest transit instrument the telescope was not placed in the middle of the axis, but much nearer to one end, in order to prevent the axis from bending under the weight of the telescope. It is now always placed in the centre of the axis. The latter consists of one piece of brass or gun-metal with carefully turned cylindrical pivots at each end. The centre of the axis is shaped like a cube, the sides of which form the basis of two cones which end in cylindrical parts. The pivots rest on -shaped bearings, either let into

the massive stone or brick piers which support the instrument or attached to metal frameworks bolted on the tops of the piers. In order to relieve the pivots from the weight of the instrument, which would soon destroy their figure, the cylindrical part of each end of the axis is supported by a hook supplied with friction rollers, and suspended from a lever supported by the pier and counterbalanced so as to leave only about 10 pounds pressure on each bearing. Near each end of the axis is attached a circle or wheel (generally of 3 or 34 feet diameter) finely divided to 2’ or 5’ on a slip of silver let into the face of the circle near the circum- ference. The graduation is read off by means of microscopes, generally four for each circle at 90° from each other, as by taking the mean of the four readings the eccentricity and to a great extent the accidental errors of graduation are eliminated.? In the carlier instru- ments by Pistor and Mar- wards they let the piers be tins the microscopes were ¢=S* made narrower, so that the fixed in holes drilled = microscopes could be at the through the pier, but after- sides of them, attached to

>

Transit Circle.

radial arms starting from near the bearings of the axis. This is preferable, as it allows of the temporary attachment of auxil- iary microscopes for the purpose of investigating the errors of graduation of the circle, but the plan of the Repsolds and of Simms, to make the piers short and to let the microscopes and supports of the axis be carried by an iron framework, is better still, as no part of the circle is exposed to radiation from the pier, which may cause strain and thereby change the angular distance between various parts of the circle. Each microscope is furnished with a micrometer screw, which moves a frame carrying a cross, or

2 This instrument differs in many particulars from others: the important principle of symmetry in all the parts (scrupulously followed in all others) is quite discarded ; there is only one circle ; and the instrument cannot be reversed. There is a similar instrument at the Cape observatory.

3 On Reichenbach’s circles there were verniers instead of micro- scopes, and they were attached to an alidade circle, the immovability of which was

tested by a level.

o16

better two close parallel threads of spider’s web, with which the distance of a division line from the centre of the field can be measured, the drum of the screw being divided to single seconds of arc (0.1 being estimated) while the number of revolutions are counted by a kind of combin the field of view. The periodic errors of the screw must be investigated and taken into account, and care must be taken that the microscopes are placed and kept at such a distance from the circle that one revolution will corre- spond to 1’, the excess or defect (error of run) being determined from time to time by measuring standard intervals of 2’ or 5’ on the circle.

The telescope consists of two slightly conical tubes screwed to the central cube of the axis. It is of great importance that this connexion should be as firm and the tube as stiff as possible,! as the flexure of the tube will affect the declinations deduced from the observations. The flexure in the horizontal position of the tube may be deter- mined by means of two collimators or telescopes placed horizontally in the meridian, north and south of the transit circle, with their object glasses towards it. If these are pointed on one another (through holes in the central cube of the telescope), so that the wire-crosses in their foci coincide, then the telescope, if pointed first to one and then to the other, will have described exactly 180°, and by reading off the circle each time the amount of flexure will be found. M. Loewy has constructed a very ingenious apparatus? for determining the flexure in any zenith distance, but generally the observer of standard stars endeavours to eliminate the effect of flexure in one of the following ways : —either the tube is so arranged that eye-piece and object-glass can be interchanged, whereby the mean of two observations of the same star in the two positions of the object-glass will be free from the effect of flexure, or a star is not only observed directly (in zenith distance Z), but also by reflexion from a mercury trough (in zenith distance 180° — Z), as the mean result of the Z.D. of the direct and reflexion observa- tions, before and after reversing the instrument east and west, will only contain the terms of the flexure depending on sin2Z, sin4Z, &e. In order to raise the instrnment a reversing carriage is provided which runs on rails between the piers, and on

which the axis with circles and telescope can be raised by a kind of screw-jack, wheeled out from between the piers, turned exactly 180°, wheeled back, and gently lowered on its bearings.

The eyc end of the telescope has in a plane through the focus a number of vertical and oue or two horizontal wires (spider lines). The former are used for observing the transits of the stars, each wire furnishing a separate result for the time of transit over the iniddle wire by adding or subtracting the known interval between the latter and the wire in question. The intervals are determined by observing the time taken by a star of known declination to pass from one wire to the other, the pole star being hest on account of its slow motion.? The instrument is provided with a clamping apparatus, by which the observer, after having beforehand set to the approximate declination of a star, can clamp the axis so that the telescope cannot be moved except very slowly by a handle pushing the end of a fine screw against the clamp arm, which at the other side is pressed by a strong spring. By this slow motion the star is made to run along one of the horizontal wires (or if there are two close ones, in the middle between them), after which the microscopes are read off. The field or the wires can be illuminated at the observer's pleasure ; the lamps are placed at some distance from the piers in order not to heat the instrument, and the light passes through holes in the piers and through the hollow axis to the Eure, whence it is directed to the eye-end by a system of prisms.

The time of the star's transit over the middle wire is never exactly equal to the actual time of its meridian passage, as the plane in which the telescope turns never absolutely coincides with the meridian. Let the production of the west end of the axis meet the celestial sphere in a point of which the altitude above the horizon is 6 (the error of inclination), and of which the azimuth is 90° —a (the azimuth being counted from south through west), while the optical axis of the telescope makes the angle 90°+¢ with the west end of the axis of the instrument, then the correction to the sin (¢— 8) ~, cos(p ee 5,

cos 8 cos 6 where ¢ is the latitude of the station and 8 the declination of the star (see GEODESY, vol. x. p. 166). This is called Tobias Mayer's formula,

and is very convenient if only a few observations have to be reduced. Putting db sin ¢~-a cos ¢=n, we get Hansen's for-

1 Reichenbach supplied his tubes with counterpoising Ievers like those on the Dorpat refractor (see TELESCOPE, fig. 20).

2 Comptes Rendus, vol. 1xxxvii. p. 24.

3 The transits are either observed by “‘eye and ear,” counting the second beats of the clock and comparing the distance of the star from the wire at the last beat before the transit over the wire with the distance at the first beat after the transit, in this way estimating the time of transit to 08°1; or the observer employs a“ chronograph,” and by pressing an electric key causes a mark to be

made on a paper stretched over a uniformly revolving drum, on which the clock beats are at the same time also marked electrically.

observed time of transit will be a

4 The idea of illuminating through the axis is due to Ussher, professor of |

astronomy in Dublin (a. 1790).

TR A—

ok &

mula, which gives the correction =0 sec $+ 7 (tan 6 — tan @)+¢sec 8, which is more convenient for a greater number of observations, The daily aberration is always deducted from c¢, as it is also multiplied by secd (being 0”.3lcospsecd). The above correc- tions are for upper culmination ; below the pole 180°-—36 has to be substituted for 6. The constant cis determined by pointing the instrument on one of the collimators, measuring the distance of its wire-cross from the centre wire of the transit circle by a vertical wire movable by a inicrometer screw, reversing the instrument and repeating the operation, or (without reversing) by pointing the two collimators on one another and measnring the distance of first one and then the other wire-cross from the centre wire. The inclin- ation b is measured directly by a level which can be suspended on the pivots. Having thus found

0 and c, the observation of two stars of known right ascension will furnish two equations from which the clock error and the azimuth can be found. For finding the azimuth it is most advantageous to use two stars differing as nearly 90° in declination as possible, such as a star near the pole and one near the equator, or better still Gf the weather permits it) two successive meridian transits of a close cireumpolar star (one above and one below the pole), as in this case errors in the assumed right ascension will not influence the result.

The interval of time between the culminations or meridian transits of two stars is their difference of right ascension, 24 hours corresponding to 360° orl hour to15°. If once the absolute right ascensions of a number of standard stars arc known, it is very simple by means of these to determine the R.A. of any number of stars. The absolute R.A. of a star is found by observing the interval of time between its culmination and that of the sun. If the inclination of the ecliptic (e) is known, and the declination of the sun (8) is observed at the time of transit, we have sin a tan e =tan 6, which gives the R.A. of the sun, from which together with the observed interval of time corrected for the rate of the clock, we get the R.A. of the star. Differentiation of the formula shows that observations near the equinoxes are most advautageous, and that errors in the assumed ¢ and the observed 5 will have no influence if the Aa is observed at two epochs when the sun's R.A. is A and 180-A oras near theretoas possible. A great number of observations of this kind will furnish materials for a standard catalogue ; but the right ascensions of many important catalogues have been found by making use of the R.A.'s of a previous cata- logue to determine the clock error and thus to improve the indi- vidual adopted R. A.'s of the former catalogue.

In order to determine absolute declinations or polar distances, it is first necessary to determine the co-latitude (or distance of the pole froin the zenith) by observing the upper and lower culmination of a number of circumpolar stars. The difference between the circle reading after observing a star and the reading corresponding to the zenith is the zenith distance of the star, and this plus the co-latitude is the north polar distance or 90°—5. In order to determine the zenith point of the circle, the telescope is directed vertically downwards and a basin of mercury is placed under it, forming an

absolutely horizontal mirror. Looking through the telescope the obsérver sees the horizontal wire and a reflected image of the same, and if the telescope is moved so as to make these coincide, its optical axis will be perpendicular to the plane of the horizon, and the circle reading will be 180°+zenith point. In observations of stars refraction has to be taken into account as well as the errors of graduation and flexure, and, if the bisection of the star on the horizontal wire was not made in the centre of the field, allowance must be made for curvature (or the deviation of the star's path from a great circle) and for the inclination of the hori- zontal wire to the horizon. The amount of this inclination is found by taking repeated observations of the zenith distance of a star during the one transit, the pole star being most suitable owing to its slow motion.

Literature.—The methods of investigating the errors of a transit circle and correcting the results of observations for them are given in Briinnow's and Chauvenet's manuals (see Time). For detailed descriptions of modcrn transit circles, see particularly Annalen der Sternwarte in Leyden (vol. i.), the Washington Observations for 1865, and the Publications of the Washburn observatory (vol. ii.).

The Greenwich circle is described in an appendix to the Greenwich Observations for 1852.

TRANSMIGRATION. See Merempsycuosis. TRANSPORTATION. See Prison Discipiine. TRANSUBSTANTIATION. See Eucnwarist,

TRANSVAAL, or Soura Arrican REPUBLIC, a country See vol. i.

in South Africa, northernmost of the European states, lying between 22° 15' and 28° §. lat., and 25° and 32° 10' E. long., is bounded N. and N.W. by the Limpopo, separat- ing it from the Makalaka and Bamangwato countries; W. partly by the Marico and the Hart, partly by an irregular line between these streams, separating it from the new British protectorate of Bechuanaland ; S. by the Vaal and the Buffalo, separating it from the Orange Free State and

te 2h Ss VY 2 A L

O17

Natal; E. by the Libomba Mountains, separating it from | basins. The water-parting between these two river systems

Zululand and the Portuguese East African possessions.! Transvaal thus forms a compact inland territory nearly as broad as long, not more than 45 or 50 miles from the Indian Ocean at Delagoa Bay, but otherwise lying com- pletely within the outer rim of the vast South African tableland. A line drawn from the south-west extremity, where it touches Griqualand West, north-eastwards to the Limpopo-Shasha confluence, gives an extreme length of 500 miles, the distance from the same confluence southwards to the Natal frontier being 425, and the greatest length east and west between the Zulu and Bechuana frontiers about 400 miles. Inthe absence of accurate surveys, the total area has been variously estimated at from 110,000 to 120,000 square miles, with a population (including aborigines) roughly calculated at from 750,000 to 800,000.

Physical Features.—Physically Transvaal forms a well- marked section of the great South African plateau, an elevated shallow basin with a mean altitude of over 3000 feet, whose conformation has been compared to that of a saucer. On the south and east this basin is separated from the coast by a lofty inner and less elevated outer rim, the former from 6000 to 10,000, the latter about 2000 feet high, sweeping round in curves concentric with that of the seaboard, from Cape Colony through Natal and the east side of Transvaal northwards to the equatorial regions. The inner rim, whose various sections in the extreme south are known as the Roggeveld, Nieuweveld, and Quathlamba ranges, takes in Natal and Transvaal the general name of the Drakenberg Mountains. From the Natal frontier to the Lipalule (Olifant) tributary of the Limpopo, the Drakenberg maintains the aspect of a more or less continuous range 5000 to 7000 feet high, culminating in the Mauchberg (8725), the highest point in Transvaal. A little to the east is the Spitskop (5637), and further south the Klipstad (6020) and Holnek (5600). This section, whose several ridges are known as the Verza- melberg, Randberg, Slangapiesberg, and Komatiberg, falls everywhere precipitously eastwards towards the Libomba range, or outer rim of the plateau, which maintains a mean elevation of 2000 feet along the eastern border of Trans- vaal. Beyond the Lipalule, the Drakenberg loses the character of a well-defined mountain system, broadening out into

uplands moderately elevated above the surround- ing plateau, and breaking into ridges, such as the Murchi- son and Zoutpansberg ranges, which run east and west between the Lipalule and Limpopo. The whole system slopes gently westwards to the central tableland, which is itself intersected by several broken ranges, such as the Maquassieberg, Gat Rand, Witwater Rand, and Magalies- berg in the south, the Dwarsberg, Marikele, Hanglip, Waterberg, and Blauberg in the north, all mostly trending in the direction from east to west. But few of these ridges rise much above 4000 feet, and, as the plateau has a mean altitude of considerably over 3000 feet, they detract little from the aspect of a vast level or slightly rolling upland plain, almost everywhere presented by Transvaal west of the Drakenberg orographic system.

The numerous fossil remains of aquatic life, together

with extensive sandy tracts and the presence in several |

places of water-worn shingle, give to the central tableland the appearance of an upheaved lacustrine basin, whose waters escaped at one time through the Limpopo to the Indian Ocean, at another through the Vaal to the Orange river, and thence to the Atlantic. The Vaal and Limpopo are still the two great fissures in the plateau, which carry off most of the surface waters to the surrounding marine

1 The boundaries of Transvaal, long a subject of dispute with Great Britain and the other conterminous states, were at last precisely defined by the convention of February 27, 1884.

les, not in the Drakenberg, itself pierced by the Lipalule and several of its affluents, but in the Witwater Rand towards the south-west of the state. From this point the Limpopo, or Crocodile, sweeps round first to the west, then to the north-east, describing a semicircle of about 1000 miles to the Limvuba (Pafuri) confluence, where it leaves Transvaal, flowing thence for nearly 340 miles through

| Portuguese territory south-east to the Indian Ocean.

Captain G. A. Chaddock has shown (1884) that it is navigable for steamers to this confluence, above which it is obstructed by the Tolo Azime and other rapids. Throughout its whole course it receives nunierous affluents on both sides, such as the Shasha and Nuanetsi from the north, the Marico, Nyl, Limvuba, Lipalule, and others from Transvaal, of which region it drains fully 95,000 square miles. With the exception of a few tracts watered by the headstreams of the Buffalo (Tugela), Mvolozi, Usutu, and Umcomati (King George), flowing in independent channels eastwards to the Indian Ocean, all the rest of Transvaal is drained by the Vaal westwards to the Orange and Atlantic. The Vaal has its easternmost sources in the Wakkerstroom district on the west slope of the Draken- berg, whence it flows for about 450 miles, partly within, but mainly along, the southern frontier of Transvaal, of which, with the Hart and other tributaries on its right bank, it drains about 20,000 square miles altogether. Besides these perennial streams, there are numerous shallow lagoons or saltpans scattered over the western and northern districts, as well as thermal and mineral waters, such as the Warmbad in the Nyl valley. But the only lake pro- perly so called is Lake Chrissie, a sheet of water nearly 40 miles round, and in parts very deep, which lies on the west side of the Drakenberg, 5755 feet above sea-level.

Climate.—Although lying on the border of and partly within the tropics, Transvaal, thanks to its great elevation above the sea, and to the absence of extensive marshy tracts, enjoys on the whole a healthy invigorating climate, well suited to the European consti- tution. Owing to the dryness of the air, due to the proximity of the Kalahari desert, the western and central districts are specially favourable to persons suffering from consumption and other chest complaints. But some of the low-lying moist tracts along the Limpopo and other river valleys, close to or within the torrid zone, are extremely insalubrious, fever of the general African type being here endemic, and its prevalence usually marked by the presence of the destructive tsetse fly. The route from Delagoa Bay to the interior also traverses a fever-stricken coast district between the sea and the Libomba escarpment, dangerous especially in the rainy summer season. The rains generally begin about October, some- times a little before or after, and last intermittently till April. But the rainfall is very unequally distributed, most of the moisture-bear- ing clouds from the Indian Ocean being arrested by the great barrier of the Drakenberg, or counteracted by the dry west winds from the Kalahari desert. Thus, while

there is abundance of rain in the east, the country gradually becomes drier as it approaches Bechuana-. land. During the dry winter season (April to September) keen frosty winds blow from the south, sweeping freely over the central plains and carrying the moisture to be precipitated as snow along the eastern highlands. Nevertheless, according to the careful meteorological observations made by Mr Lys at Pretoria between 1877 and 1880, the mean annual temperature is considerably over 68° F., falling to about 40° in June and rising to 90° and occasion- ally even 95° in January. The rainfall in the same central district seldom reaches 30 inches, which is probably a fair average for the whole of Transvaal, falling to 12 towards the western and rising to 60 on the eastern frontier.

Mineral Resources. —Transvaal yields to no other African region in the abundance of its mineral resources, while it is altogether un- rivalled in their extraordinary variety. These include, besides the precious metals and diamonds, iron, copper, lead, cobalt, sulpliur, saltpetre, and coal, this last with gold, copper, and iron being probably the most abundant and widely distributed. Gold, largely diffused throughout the Drakenberg and in the northern Zoutpans- berg and Waterberg districts and in the Rustenburg and Marico districts in the extreme west, as well as in the highlands between Transvaal and the Zambesi, has hitherto been worked chiefly in the rich auriferous region of Lydenburg about Mount Mauchberg and Mount Spitskop in the central parts of the Drakenberg range, and farther south in the Johannesburg and Lower Kaay (Sheba)

district, Middelburg. The Lydenburg deposits, discovered in 1878, lie at an elevation of 4500 to 5000 feet 40 miles south of the Lipalule river and 125 north-west of Lorenzo Marques on Delagoa Bay, the chief diggings being at Pilgrim’s Rest and Mac Mac close to the Spitskop. In the Middelburg district the chief centres of mining operations are the recently founded towns of Barberton and Johannesburg. In some years the Lydenburg, Marabastad, and other diggings have jointly yielded over £300,000, obtained by washing and without any quartz-crushing. Iron ores are also widely distributed, and the Yzerberg (“Iron Mountain”) near Marabastad (24° S., 30° E.) consists of an enormous mass of rich iron ore, which the

natives have worked for ages. Diamonds are chiefly confined to the Bloemhoff district on the Vaal above the great diamantiferous region of Kimberley in Griqualand West. Coal abounds in the south-eastern districts (Wakkerstroom, Utrecht), and also farther north in Middelburg (Nazareth) and Lydenburg. In some places seams 7 or 8 feet thick lie so near the surface that they are quarried and the coal carted away by the natives. The prevailing formations where this great mineral wealth is embedded are quartz, porphyry, granites, clay slates, greenstone, Lower Devonian strata, conglomerates, and limestones.

Flora. —In Transvaal, as in most of the continent, an herbaceous flora prevails largely over forest growths, which are here confined chiefly to the deep kloofs (gorges) of the mountain ranges, and to the courses of the larger streams. Bush, including mimosas, thorn thickets, and creepers, covers extensive tracts on the northern and southern plains, and the Wakkerstroom and Utrecht districts to- wards Natal are well wooded. But elsewhere the characteristic features are grasslands, downs, hill slopes, flats, and even many parts of the higher uplands being covered with savannahs generally affording good pasturage and fodder for cattle. In the woodlands the prevailing species are three varieties of yellow wood (Podo- carpus), often growing to an enormous size, the Cape beech (Myr- sine), several varieties of the wild pear (Olinia) and of stinkwood (Oreodaphne), ironwood, and ebony. The Boers and other settlers have hitherto occupied themselves chiefly with stock-breeding (sheep, cattle, and horses), but there can be no doubt that much of the country is eminently suited for the cultivation of cereals, yield- ing two annual crops and producing some of the finest wheat in the world. Tobacco, the vine, and most European fruits and vegetables also thrive well, while semi-tropical products, such as cotton, sugar, and coffee, might be raised in the warmer northern districts.

Fauna,—By the early settlers Transvaal was described as the ‘‘naradise of hunters,” ! abounding in the characteristic large animals, such as the lion, leopard, rhinoceros, elephant, giraffe, zebra, quagga, several varieties of antelope, and the ostrich, which roam over the continent from Soudan to the Cape. All these animals still exist, but in greatly reduced numbers, being now largely replaced by the domestic animals—cattle, sheep, and horses —introduced by the white settlers. All the large rivers are in- habited by the

hippopotamus and crocodile, the ‘fatter giving an alternative name to the Limpopo; the buffalo, gnu, eland, spring- bok, wildbeeste, baboon, and several other members of the ape family are also frequently met with. The country is sufictonielly swept by destructive flights of locusts; but the greatest enemy of the stock-breeder is the tsetse fly, which infests the coastlands and many of the riverine tracts, but shows a tendency to disappear with the large game, retreating with the advance of the plough. A tsetse belt 40 miles wide along the whole course of the Limpopo still bars the spread of European settlements beyond Transvaal in the direction of the Zambesi.

Inhabitants. —Of the population not more than 50,000 are whites, mostly Boers (descendants of the early Dutch, French, and German immigrants to the Cape), with a large and increasing percentage of British settlers, attracted in recent years especially to the Lyden- burg and other mining districts. All the rest are natives, belong- ing mainly to the Basuto and Bechuana branches of the Bantu family, and consequently allied in speech and to a large extent in physique to their Zulu-Kaffre neighbours. A considerable number of these natives have abandoned the tribal state and taken service, either freely or by compulsion, with the whites as farm labourers in the rural districts, and as domestic servants in the towns, and are now also largely employed in mining operations. The great bulk of the rest, who retain their national usages and recognize the authority of more or less independent tribal chiefs, are concentrated in the northern and eastern provinces of Zoutpansberg (364,000), Waterberg (174,000), and Lydenburg (123,000). There are also about 40,000 in Bloemhoff (extreme south-west), and the same number in the western provinces of Rustenburg and Marico, but only a few scattered groups in all the rest of the country. These western and south-western tribes (Barolongs, Batlapins, Bakwenas, Bakhatlas, &c.) are all Bechuanas; the others mainly Makatis, as the Basutos are here collectively called. It may be stated in a general way that the whole country south of the Lipalule is now free of native claims and open to European colonization, while

1 On the route between the Orange and Vaal (1835-37) the “ voor-trekkers ” hre said to have Killed as many as 200 lions:

the northern region between that river and the Limpopo is still to a large extent occupied by unreduced or nnbroken Basuto communities.

Natural and Political Divisions.—Transvaal has been divided into three more or less distinct natural regions, determined chiefly by the relief of the land, and its climatic and economic conditions. These are—(1) the Hooge veld, or uplands, comprising the southern districts drained by the Vaal and the Drakenberg highlands as far north as the Lipalule, about 35,000 square miles altogether, with an altitude ranging from 4000 to 7000 feet; (2) the Banken veld, or terrace lands, comprising the low eastern zone between the Drakenberg and Libomba ranges, falling in many places down to a level of 2000 feet, with an area of 15,000 to 20,000 square miles; (3) the Bosch veld, or bush country, comprising all the rest of the land, with an altitude of 3000 to 4000 feet and an area of 60,000 square miles. For administrative purposes the country is again divided into thirteen provinces :—Zoutpansberg and Waterberg in the north; Lydenburg, Middelburg (formerly Nazarcth), Pretoria, Rustenburg, and Marico in the centre; Utrecht, Londina, Wak- kerstroom, Heidelberg, Potchefstroom, and Bloemhoff in the south, In the southern part of Lydenburg lies the somewhat detached district of New Scotland, comprising some 500,000 acres selected by the late Mr M‘Corkindale as a Scotch pastoral and agricultural settlement. It isa healthy prosperous country, lying on the slopes of the Drakenberg, within 310 iniles of Durban, Natal. But the most thickly settled province is Potchefstroom, a fertile tract, 3500 to 5000 feet high, abundantly watered by the Mooi, Schoen, and other streams flowing to the Vaal, and well suited for tillage and pasturage. Its capital of like name (derived from elernents in those of Potgieter, Scherf, and Stockenstroom, three popular Boer leaders during the early migrations) is the most settled and one of the largest towns in Transvaal. The only other placcs deserving the name of town are Pretoria, capital of the province of like name and of the state, occupying a somewhat central position 100 miles north-east of Potchefstroom, 980 from Cape Town, 820 from Port Elizabeth, and 400 from Durban; Barberton, in the Lower Kaap mining district, 150 miles by road from Delagoa Bay, only three years old, but already by far the largest place in the state, with a population (1887) of 15,000; and Johannesburg, centre of the gold- fields of the same name, 30 miles south-east of Pretoria, and 72 east of

Potchefstroom, founded in 1886, but already larger than Pretoria, with a population of over 4000.

Administration and Statistics.—Transvaal enjoys representative institutions, with a volksraad or parliament of forty-four members elected for four years, one-half retiring every two years, the executive being entrusted to a president elected for five years by the whole body of electors, assisted by a council of four, the ex- officio vice-president and the state secretary, with two others appointed by the volksraad. The revenue, derived chiefly from land sales, quit rents, stamps, hut-tax, and customs, balanced the expenditure in 1885, and exceeded it by £15,000 in 1886, the re- spective sums being £260,000 and £245,000. In 1884 the public debt was £396,000, the exports (gold, ivory, corn, wool, hides, cattle, ostrich feathers, &c.) about £600,000, and the imports probably over £1,000,000. The long-projected railway, intended to afford an outlet to the coast at Delagoa Bay, was completed in 1887 from Lorenzo Marques, the seaward terminus, to the Transvaal frontier, a distance of 50 miles. Transvaal is in telegraphic communication with the Cape and the rest of the world through the Orange Free State.

History.—The historic life of Transvaal begins with the “ Great Trek,” or general exodus of the Cape Colony Boers, who, being dis- satisfied, especially with the liberal policy of the British Government towards the natives, removed northwards in large numbers between the years 1833 and 1837. By 1836 some thousands had already crossed the Vaal, that is, had reached the “Trans-Vaal” country, which at that time was mostly under the sway of the powerful refugee Zulu chief Moselekatzc, whose principal kraal was at Mosega in the present Marico district on the west frontier. To avenge the massacre of some emigrant bands, the Boers under Maritz and Potgieter attacked and utterly defeated Moselekatze at this place in 1837. Next year the Zulu chief withdrew beyond the Limpopo, where he founded the present Matebele state between that river and the Zambesi, thus leaving the region betwecn the Vaal and Limpopo virtually in the hands of the Trekkers. But their position was rendered insecure on the east side by the military despotism of the fierce Zulu chief Dingaan, who, after the murder of his brother Chaka, had asserted his authority over the whole of Zululand and most of the present Natal. The situation was rendered almost desperate by

the complete rout and wholesale massacre (1838) of the right division of the emigrant Boers, who had ventured to cross the Buffalo under Pieter Retief, and who were defeated by Dingaan, first at Umkongloof (“ Aceldama ”), then at Wecnen (“ Weeping”), and again soon after under Uys, Maritz, and Potgieter, when as many as 800 fell before the irresistible onslaught of the disciplined Zulu warriors. At this critical juncture the Trekkers were saved from utter extermination by

TR A—

Andries Pretorius of Graaff Reinet, by whom Dingaan met with a first check before the close of 1838, followed in January 1840 by a still more crushing defeat. Dingaan having been soon after murdered, the friendly Panda was set up in his place, and Natal proclaimed a Boer republic. But the British occupation of that territory in 1843 induced the Boers to retire in two bands across the Drakenberg, the southern division settling in the present Orange Free State, the northern again passing into Transvaal. But, owing to internal dissensions, and the perpetual bickerings of the two most prominent personalities, Pretorius and Potgieter, all attempts at establishing an organized system of government through- out Transvaal ended in failure, till Pretorius induced the British Government to sign the Sand River convention (January 17, 1852), which virtually established the political independence of that region. The death both of Pretorius and Potgieter in 1853 pre- pared the way for a period of internal peace under Pretorius’s eldest son Marthinus Wessels Pretorius, first president of the ‘ Dutch African Republic,” whose title was afterwards altered (1858) to that of the “South African Republic.” But a fatal element of weakness lay in the persistent refusal of the Boers to treat the natives on a footing of equality, or even with common justice. The murder of Hermann Potgieter and family (1854), avenged by Pretorius at Makapan’s Cave, was followed (1856) by the “ Apprentice Law,” establishing a system of disguised slavery, which was further strengthened by the sanction (1858) of the Grond wet, or ‘‘ Funda- mental Law,” declaring that the ‘‘ people will admit of no equality of persons of colour with the white inhabitants either in state or church.” Owing to this policy opposition was constantly shown both to the English traders, disposed to deal fairly with all, and to the missionaries, preachers of universal equality, as illustrated by the plunder of Livingstone’s house by

the commando sent against the native chief Secheli in 1852. A brief chronicle must here suffice of subsequent events down to the present time : — 1857. Invasion of the Orange Free State by Pretorius; dispute settled without bloodshed by the treaty of June 1. 1859. Pretorius elected president of the Free State; fails to effect the union of the two states. Return of Pretorius, during whose absence affairs had fallen into confusion ; continued troubles with the natives ; quarrels with the Batlapins, Barolongs, and Griquas in the west; in the cast with Ketchywayo, king of Zululand, about the Boers' right to the Wakkerstroom and Utrecht districts. Discovery of diamonds, and Mauch's announcement of gold- fields in the interior. Pretorius's proclamation extending the boundaries of the state west to Lake Ngami, east to Delagoa Bay, whence disputes and negotiations with England and Portugal, Delagoa Bay being ultimately awarded (July 1875) to Portugal by the French president, Marshal MacMahon, to whose decision the matter had been referred. Boundary disputcs towards the south-west settled by the award of Lieutenant-Governor Keate of Natal, leading to the resignation of Pretorius and appointment of President Burgers. The Fundamental Law forces Burgers to measures leading to the war with Sikokuni, chief of the Bapedi, south of the Olifant river, who claimed large part of Lydenburg and even of Pretoria; Burgers's visit to Europe in connexion with the Delagoa Railway scheme; on his return he finds everything in the greatest confusion; Boers dispirited by repeated reverses in the Sikokuni war; an empty treasury; broken credit; the state practically bankrupt and exposed to in- minent danger of invasion by Bapedis and Zulus. Hence 1876-77. Intervention of England, and Sir Theophilus Shepstone's proclamation (April 12, 1877) annexing Transvaal, followed by the appointment of Sir W. Owen Lanyon as British administrator. 1880-81. Revolt of the discontented Boers, who, being snccessful in a few contests with British troops, induced the British Government to restore the republic nnder the " suzerainty " of the queen, by the treaty of peace of March 21, 1881, a British resident being appointed, with the functions of a consul-gcneral. S. J. Paul Kriiger elected president. Convention of London (February 27, ratified by the volks- raad, August 8) recognizing the state as the South African Republic, and considerably restricting the British suzerainty. Proclamation (March 23) of the British protectorate over

1863.

1867.

1868.

1871.

1875.

1883, 1884.

1885.

Bechuanaland, thereby arresting the westward advance of

the Boers into the Bamangwato, Bakwena, Bangwaketsi, and Barolong territories, and keeping open the great trade route from Cape Colony through Hopetown and Shoshong to the Zambesi.

Fresh discoverics of rich auriferous deposits especially in the Middelburg province, followed by a great influx of English- speaking populations, threatening to swamp the Boer element.

1886.

TRA 519

1886. Projected South African confederation, opposed by Kriiger, but supported by the Orange State, Cape Colony, and a majority of the Transvaal Boers. Connected with this scheme is the proposal of a uniform tariff and the immediate construction of a through railway from Cape Town to Delagoa Bay. GAS ERK)

TRANSVERSE FLUTE, Tur,—or German Furs, as it was formerly designated in Great Britain,—may be de- scribed as a musical instrument in which a column of air is set in vibration by regular pulsations derived from a current of air directed by the lips of the executant against the side of an orifice serving as an embouchure, pierced laterally in the substance of the pipe and towards its upper extremity. This mode of blowing appears to be of very ancient origin: the Hindus, Chinese, and Japanese claim to have

used it from time immemorial ; in Europe the high antiquity of a lateral embouchure is generally admitted, although it does not really rest, so far as our present knowledge goes, on any conclusive evidence.}

The oblique flute of the Greeks was of Egyptian origin, and it is therefore safest to suppose it to have been like the instrument frequently figured on the monuments of ancient Egypt, which, held obliquely, was blown through the orifice itself of the pipe at its upper extremity. The same instrument (called “nay ”) is still used in Moham- medan countries. The flute is often mentioned in medieval poetry, but no details of its construction are given. It was the custom, moreover, to designate various instru- ments by this name. The oldest representation we know of the transverse flute is found in the 11th-century frescos of the cathedral of St Sophia at Kieff. Eustache Des- champs, a French poet of the 14th century, in one of his ballads, makes mention of the “ flute traversaine,” and we are justified in supposing that he refers to the transverse flute. It had certainly acquired some vogue in the 15th century, being figured in an engraving in Sebastian Vird- ung’s celebrated work,? where it is called “‘ Zwerchpfeiff,” and, with the drums, it already constituted the principal ele- ment of the military music. Agricola? alludes to it as the “ Querchpfeiff” or ‘Schweizerpfeiff,” the latter designa- tion dating, it is said, from the battle of Marignan (1515), when the Swiss troops used it for the first time in war.

From Agricola onwards transverse flutes formed a complete family, said to comprise the discant, the alto and tenor, and the bass,—- a : = respectively. There is evidently (oe oO: an error in the indications of

? ——o—’ —__— pitch here given, for the instru- @ ments must in fact have produced

“@m sounds an octave higher than those noted. Pretorius,4 who in a special note warns his readers against inaccuracies of this kind which were then frequent, designates the transverse flute as “traversa Querpfeiff” and “ Querflot,” and notifies the bass in

je the tenor —_— andthe — = asvarieties then ope — , Amd ab —t—, diseant ¥#y=wZ— in use. A flute in Cee. in concert at that

tiie included two discants, four altos or tenors, and two basses. The same author distinguishes between the ‘‘Traversa” and the “‘Schweizerpfeiff” (which he also calls ‘‘ Feldpfeiff,” 7.¢., mili- tary flute), although the construction was the same. There were

two kinds of —— respectively; they were ent- “Feldpfeiff,” (ay—S— and (pj—— ployed exclusively with the in —— —~o— military drum.®

1 The Louvre has two ancient statues (from the Villa Borghese) representing satyrs playing upon transverse flutes. Unfortunately these marbles have been restored, especially in the details affecting our present subject, and are therefore examples of no value to us. Another statue representing a flute-player occurs in the British Museum. The instrument has been supposed to be a transverse flute, but erroneously, for the insufflation of the lateral tube against which the instrumentalist presses his lips, could not, without the intervention of a reed, excite the vibratory movement of the column of air.

2 Musica getutscht und auszgezogen, Basel, 1511.

3 Musica Instrumentalis, Wittenberg, 1529

4 Organographia, Wolfenbittel, 1618.

5 It is from the word Pfeif that the French Fifre and the English Fife, still applied to the military flutes in present use, are evidently derived.

Mersenne’s! account of the transverse flute, then designated “flite d’allemand” or ‘‘flfte allemande” in France, is obscure enough; but the tablatures and an ‘‘ Air de Cour” for four flutes in his work lead_us to believe that there were then in use in France

the sopra- the tenor —{7——— and _ the bass 7=——— no flute => or salto flute descend- =e in -o— flute in > — ing to el eal

The Museum of the Conservatoire @ Royal of Brussels pos- sesses specimens of all varieties hitherto mentioned except the last. All of them are laterally pierced with six finger holes;? they have a cylindrical bore, and are fashioned out of a single piece of wood. Their compass consists of two octaves and a fifth. The successive opening of the lateral holes gives rise to a series of fundamental notes forming the first octave. By a stronger pres- sure of the breath these notes are reproduced in the next octave higher, and the extent of eompass of the instrument is completed in the higher region by the production of other harmonics.®

The largest bass flute in the Brussels museum is in

; at the French normal pitch A 435 double ©): ~~be— vibrations per second. It measures 0°95 ———— m. from the centre of the blow orifice to the lower extremity of the tube. The disposition of the lateral holes is such that it is impossible to cover them with the fingers if the flute is held in the ordinary way. The instrument must be placed | against the mouth in an almost vertical direction, inclining the extremity of the tube either to the |} right or the left. This inconvenient position makes | it necessary that the instrument should be divided into two parts, enabling the player to turn the head joint that the embouchure may be most com~~ modiously approached by the lips, which is not at all easy. The first and fourth of the six lateral holes are double, but those holes are stopped up with wax which have become useless through the player’s habit of using the fingers of the right or left hand to eover the higher three holes. The bass flute shown in fig. 1 is the facsimile of an instrument in the Museo Civico of Verona. The original, unfortunately no longer fit for use, is nevertheless sufficiently well preserved to allow of all its proportionate measurements being given. The lowest note, Eb, is obtained with a remark- able amplitude of sound, thus upsetting a very prevalent opinion that it is impossible to produce ti by lateral insufflation sounds which go a little Fig. 1. Fig. 2. rhe ae the ordinary limit downwards of the modern orchestral flute.

The bass flute cited by Mersenne should not differ much from that of the Musco Civico at Verona. We suppose it to have been in 2 and that it was furnished with an open key like that **—e6— which was applied to the recorders (fldtes dowees) of the —— same epoch, the function of the**

key being to augment by another note the compass of the instrument in the lower part. Following Quantz, it was in France and about the middle of the 17th century that the first modifications were introduced in the manufacture of the flute. The improvements at this period con- sisted of the abandonment of the cylindrical bore in favour of a conical one, with the wide part in the head of the instrument. At the same time the flute was made of three separate pieces called head, body, and foot, which were ultimately further subdivided. The body or middle joint was divided into two pieces, so that the instrument could be tuned to the different pitches then in use by a replacement with longer or shorter pieces. It was probably about 1677, when Lully introduced the German flute into the opera, that recourse was had for the first time to keys, and that the key of Df was applied to the lower part of the instrument. The en- graving of B. Picart, dated 1707, which ornaments the work of the French flautist Hotteterre-le-Romain,' represents the flute as having reached the stage of improvement of which we have just spoken, but the body was still formed of one piece only. In 1726 Quantz,® finding himself in Paris, had a second key applied to

1 Harmonie Universelle, Paris, 1636.

_2 It is usual to indicate the tonality of flutes by the note produced when the six lateral holes are covered by the fingers. This custom is objectionable, because it is the disposition of the fingers which is made use of to sound D, The prac- tice has for its result that the tonality is always a note lower than the signature used. : Thus the flute in D is really in C; that in F in Ep, &e.

3 Victor Mahillon, Hints on the Fingering of the Boehm Flute, London, 1884.

4 Fétis, Rapport sur la Fabrication des Instruments de Musique 4 l Exposition Universelle de Paris, en 1856.

5 Versuch einer Anweisung die Fléte traversiére zu spielen, Berlin, 1752.

6 Unless where the contrary is stated, we have always in view, in describing the successive improvements of the fiute, the treble flute in D, which is considered to be typical of the family. 7 Principes de la Flite Traversiére.

; 8 Herrn Johann Joachim Quantzius Lebenslauf, von ihm selbst entworfen," in the fistorisch-Kritische Beitrdége zur Aufnahme der Musik, by Marpurg Berlin, 1754. Quantz was professor of the flute to Frederick the Great. ,

the flute, placed nearly at the same height as the first, that of the , intended to differentiate the DZ and the Eb. This innovation was generally well reeeived in Germany, but — does not appear to have met with corresponding success in other countries. In France and England manufacturers adopted it but rarely; in Italy it was declared useless. About the samme time flutes were construeted with the lower extremity lengthened and furnished with two supplementary keys to produce the Cg and C. This innovation, spoken of by Quantz, did not meet with a very favourable reception, and was shortly afterwards abandoned. Passing mention may be made of the drawing of a flute with a C key in the Musie-Saal of J. F. B. Mayers, Nuremberg, 1741.

The tuning of the instrument to different pitches was effected, as already explained, by changes in the length, and notably by substituting a longer or shorter upper piece in the middle joint. So wide were the differences in the pitches then in use that seven such pieces for the upper portion of it were deemed necessary. The relative proportions between the different parts of the instru- ment being altered by these modifications in the length, it was conceived that the just relation eould be re-established by dividing the foot into two pieces, below the key. These two pieces were adjusted by means of a tenon, and it was asserted that, in this way, the foot eould be lengthened proportionately to the length of the middle joint. Flutes thus improved took the name of ''flfites & registre." The register system was, about 1752, applied by Quantz to the head joint, and, the embouchure section being thus capable of elongation, it was allowable to the performer, according to the opinion of this professor, to lower the pitch of the flute a semitone, without having recourse to other lengthening pieces, and without disturbing the accuracy of intonation.

The upper extremity of the flute, beyond the embouchure orifice, is closed by means of a cork stopper. On the position of this cork depends, in a great

measure, the accurate tuning of the flute. It – is in its right place when the accompanying octaves are oti true. Quantz, in speaking of this accessory, mentions as the use of a nut-screw to give the required position to a the cork. He does not name the inventor of this ap- pliance, but, according to Tromlitz,! the improvement was due to Quantz himself. The invention goes back to 1726.

When the Method of Quantz appeared there were still in use, besides the orchestral flute in D, the little fourth flute in G, the low fourth flute in A, and the fifite d'amour a note higher; in France they had, moreover, the little octave flute in D (octave). A bass flute in D had also been attempted (see fig. 2). When Ribocq published his Bemerkungen tiber die Flite' the flute had already the five keys here shown. This author does not cite the inventor of these new keys, but some claim them for Kusder, a musical-instru- ment maker in London, others for Johann George Tromlitz of Leipsic, and Ribocq declares he has seen no flutes so constructed other than by these two makers. But Tromlitz lays no claim for himself to the credit of this improvement. He only says that ''he had occupied himself for several years in applying these keys so as not to augment the difficulty of playing, but, on the contrary, to render the handling of them as easy as possible." " We may therefore regard the London maker as the author of the first flute with five keys, with, however, a reservation as to the G key, which, from 1727, had been applied by Hoffmann of Rasten- berg }8 to the transverse flute and the oboe, The higher key of Ch, adopted from 1786 by Tromlitz, we believe to have been first re- commended by Ribocq (1782).

In 1785 Richard Potter, of London, improved Quantz's slide applied to the head joint as well as to the register of the foot by a double system of tubes forming double sliding air-tight joints. In the document?4 describing this improvement Potter patented the idea of clothing the holes which were covered by keys formed by metal conical valves. The keys mentioned in the patent were four,—Df, F, GE, Ag. The idea of extending the compass of the flute downwards was taken up again about the same time by two players of the flute in London named Tacet and Florio. They de- vised a new disposition of the keys C and C@, and confided the execu- tion of their invention to Potter. In Dr Arnold's New Instructions for the German Flute occurs a tablature, the engraving of which goes back to the end of the 18th

century, and bears the following title, “A Complete Drawing and Concise Scale and Description of Tacet and Florio’s new invented German Flute, with all the addi- tional keys explained.” It explains the use of six keys,—C, CH, Dg, F, Ge, ‘—that are not always figured, because the employ- ment of so many keys was at onee admitted. Tromlitz himself, who, however, made flutes with nine keys,—adding Eb, another F, and Ch, declared that he was not in favour of so great a complica- tion, and that he preferred the flute with only two keys, Dg and Eb,

9 Antonio Lorenzoni, Saggio per ben sonare tl flauto traverso, Vicenza, 1779. 10 Ausfiihrlicher und griindlicher Unterricht die Fidte zu spielen, Leipsic, 1797. Compare Schilling, Univ.-Lexicon, Leipsic, 1835. 11 Stendal, 1782. 12 Kurze Abhandlung von Flétensptelen, Leipsic, 1786. 13 Gerber, Lexicon der Tonkiinstler, Leipsic,1790. 14 English patent, No. 1499,

with a register foot joint and a cork nut-screw at the head joint. This-instruinent met all requirements. He was even against the use of the keys for Ch and CZ, because they altered the recognized quality of tone of the instrument. When Tromlitz published his method, the family of flutes had become modified. It compre- hended only the typical flute in D, the fidte d’amour a minor third lower, a ‘‘third” flute a minor third higher, and, finally, the little octave flute.

While Tromlitz was struggling in Germany with the idea of augmenting the compass of the flute downwards by employing open keys for CQ and CZ, an Italian, Giovanni Batista Orazi,! increased the scale of the instrument downwards by the application of five new keys, viz., B, Bh, A, Ab, and G. At the same time that he produced this invention? he conceived the plugging of the lateral holes by the valve keys then recently invented by Potter. But it was hardly possible to obtain a perfect plugging of seven lateral holes with the aid of as many keys, for the control of which there were only the two little fingers, and therefore this invention of Orazi proved a failure.

In 1808 Frederick Nolan,? of Stratford, near London, conceived an open key, the lever of which, terminating by a ring, permitted the closing of a lateral hole at the same time the key was being acted upon. The combination in this double action is the embryo of the mechanism that a little later was to transform the system of the flute. Two years later Macgregor,‘ a imusical-instrument maker in London, constructed a bass flute an octave lower than the ordi- nary flute. The idea was not new, as is proved by the existence of the bass flute mentioned above, The difference between the two instruments lies in the mechanism of the keys. ‘That employed by Macgregor consisted of a double lever, a contrivance dating from before the middle of the 18th century, of which the application is seen in an oboe of large dimensions preserved in the National Museum at Munich.®

About 1830 the celebrated French flautist Tulou added two more keys, those of FZ and CE, and a key, called s “de cadence,” to facilitate the accompany- a Bheodr ie” ing shakes. i go- eases

To increase the number of keys, to improve eel a. their system of plugging, and to extend the = scale of the instrument in the lower region, —— = — these had hitherto been the principal problems dealt with in the improvement of the flute. No maker, no inventor whose labours we have called attention to, had as yet devoted his atten- tion to the rational division of the column of air by means of the lateral holes. In 1831 Theobald Bochm, a Bavarian, happening to be in London, was struck with the power of tone the celebrated English performer Charles Nicholson drew from his instrument. Boehm learned, and not without astonishment, that his English colleague obtained this result by giving the lateral holes a much greater diameter than was then usually admitted. About the same time Boehm made the acquaintance of an amateur player named Gordon, who had effected certain improvements ; he had bored the lateral hole for the lower E, and had covered it with a key, while he had replaced the key for F with aring. These innova- tions set Boehm about attempting a complete reform of the instru- ment.§ He went resolutely to work, and during the year 1832 he produced the new flute which bears his name. This instrument is distinguished by a new mechanism of keys, as well as by larger holes disposed along the tube in geometrical progression.

Boehm’s system had preserved the key of GE open ; Coche,’ a professor in the Paris Conservatoire, assisted by Auguste Buffet the younger, a musical-instrument maker in that city, modified Boehm’s flute by closing the GZ with a key, wishing thus to render the new fingering more conformable, to the old. He thus added a key, facilitating the shake upon ce with Dé, and brought about some other changes in the instrument of less importance.

Boehm had not, however, altered the bore of the flute, which had been conical from the end of the 17th century. In 1846, however, he made further experiments, and the results obtained were put in practice by the construction of a new instrument, of which the body was bored cylindrical, but the head was modified at the embouchure. The inventor thus obtained a remarkable equality in the tones of the lower octave, a greater sonorousness, and a perfect accuracy of intonation, by establishing the more exact proportions which a column of air of cylindrical form permitted.

The priority of Boehm’s invention was long contested, his detractors maintaining that the honour of having reconstructed the flute was due to Gordon. But an impartial investigation

‘ Saggio per costrutre e suonare un flauto traverso enarmonico che ha % suont basst del Violino, Rome, 1797

2 The idea of this large flute was taken up again in 1819 by Trexler of Vienna, who called it the ‘‘panaulon.” 3 Patent, No. 3183. 4 Patent, No. 3349.

5 Another specimen, almost the same, constructed about 1775, and called ‘“* Basse de Musette,” may be seen in the Museum of the Paris Conservatoire.

6 See Ueber den Flotenbau und die neuesten Verbesserungen desselben, Mainz, 1847; and W. S. Broadwood, An Essay on the Construction of Flutes originally written by Theobald Boehm, published with the addition of Correspondence and

other Documents, London, 1882. ‘ Examen critique dela Flite Ordinaire comparée & la Flite Boehm, Paris, 1838.

vindicates the claim of the former to the invention of the large lateral holes.§ His greatest title to fame is the invention of the mechanism which allows the production of the eleven chromatie semitones intermediate between the fundamental note and its first harmonic by means of eleven holes so disposed that in opening them successively they shorten the column of air in exact propor- tional quantities.? Boehm? has published a diagram or scheme to be adopted in determining the position of the note-holes of wind instruments for every given pitch. This diagram gives the position of the intermediate holes which he had been enabled to establish by a rule of proportion based on the law of the lengths of strings.

The Boehm flute, notwithstanding the high degree of perfection it has reached, has not secured unanimous favour ; even now there are players who prefer the ordinary flute. The change of fingering required for some notes, the great delicacy and liability to derange- ment of the mechanism, have something to do with this. In Eng- land especially, the ordinary flute retains many partisans, thanks to the improvements introduced by a clever player, Abel Siccama, in 1845.” He bored the lateral holes of E and A lower, and covered them with open keys. He added some keys, and made a better disposition of the other lateral holes, of which he increased the diameter, producing thus a sonorousness almost equal to that of the Boehm flute, while yet preserving the old fingering for the notes of the first two octaves. But in spite of these improvements the old flute will not bear an impartial comparison with that of Boehm, (VY. M.)

TRANSYLVANIA (Germ. Stebenbiirgen), a mountain- ous principality (Gross-Fiirstenthum) forming the extreme eastern portion of Austria-Hungary, is bounded on the W. and N. by Hungary proper, on the E. by Bukowina and Moldavia, and on the S. by Walachia. The German name is usually derived from the seven principal fortified towns or “burgs” founded by the German colonists, though some authorities prefer to connect it with the Zibin Mountains on the south frontier. The Latin name appears first after the 12th century, and signifies “beyond the woods,” 2.¢., from Hungary ; the Magyar and Roumanian names (Erdély and Ardealu) both mean “ forest-land.” For all political and administrative ends, and in the

official statistics and returns, Transylvania is now wholly incor- porated with Huneary (q.v.), and to all intents and pur- poses is a part of that kingdom. The principality has the form of an irregular circle, with an area of about 21,000 square miles, and is on all sides surrounded by mountain chains, while the interior is barred and striped with lower ranges. On the west or Hungarian side there are various wide and comparatively easy passes into the interior, but on the east and south frontiers the lofty bounding mountains present steep and rugged faces outwards, giving to Transyl- vania the general aspect of a huge natural fortress. These niountains are a continuation of the Hungarian and Galician Carpathians ; in fact, the mountains of Transyl- vania may be regarded together as forming the south- eastern main group of the Carpathian system. The loftiest and most rugged peaks are on the north and south boundaries. On the north the highest summit is the Pietross (7534 feet), one of the Rodna Alps; on the south are the Butshetsh (8262 feet), the Kénigstein (7357 feet), and the Negoi (8340 feet). The east is bounded by several parallel chains, the highest peak in which is the Pietrossul (6910 feet) ; and on the west border the greatest height is attained towards the south, where several peaks reach 7200 feet. On the west are the Transylvanian Ore Mountains (Erzgebirge), with the curious Detunata (“thunder-smit ”), and the Bihar group, with its numerous caverns. There are numerous valleys, ravines, and cations in the network of mountains covering the interior of the country, but it is only along the courses of the principal rivers that plains of any size are found. The chief rivers are the Aluta or Alt, which flows south, pierces the southern boundary mountains at the Rother Thurm Pass,

8 They existed long before, however, in the Chinese Ty and the J. apanese Fuye.

9 The reader may consult with advantage Mr C. Welch’s History of the Boehm Flute (London, 1883), wherein all the documents relating to this interesting dis- cussion have been collected with great impartiality.

10 See the Essay on the Construction of Fi tutes, already cited.

11 Patent, No. 10553. ASL, — 66

and joins the Danube, and the Maros, to the west, and the Szamos, to the north, both tributaries of the Theiss, which also falls into the Danube. All these are navigable, and are fed by various tributaries. The largest lake is the Hodoser or Eseger See, 13 miles long. Transylvania abounds in mineral springs of all kinds, especially saline and chaly- beate. The climate is tolerably severe: hot summers alter- nate with very cold winters; but the rainfall is not great.

The mineral wealth of Transylvania is very considerable. Gold is found in eertain quantity in mines, and it is also “washed” in some of the streams, chietly by Gipsies. The gold is often found in conjunction with tellurium (first discovered in Transylvania in 1782, and until the present century not found anywhere else, see TELLURIUM). Silver, copper, lead, and iron are also worked to some profit. Coal occurs in considerable abundance, and it is mined in the Schilthal, but the superabundance of timber has re- tarded its exploitation. Hills largely formed of pure salt are met with here and there, and there are also very rich subterranean deposits of salt, sometimes cropping upon the surface. Some of the saline springs also yield salt enough to render their evaporation profitable. The vegetation of Transylvania is luxuriant, except of course in the higher mountain zoncs. Fruits abound, as apples, pears, peaches, apricots, plums, cherries, chestnuts, and almonds ; mulberries are also cultivated. The vine flourishes best in the valley of the Maros. Agriculture is one of the most important industries, though the available good land is by no means fully taken up. The chief crop is maize ; but wheat, rye, and other grains, potatoes, saffron, hemp, flax, and tobacco are also grown. Extensive forests clothe much of the country, but are in a some- what neglected condition. On the boundary mountains the trees are mainly coniferous ; in the interior oaks, elms, beeches, and ashes are conspicuous.

The forests afford cover for many wild animals. Bears, wolves, foxes, boars, and various varieties of game are found, and on some of the mountains the chamois. There is abundant pasturage on which excellent cattle are reared; and in some districts bnftaloes are bred for draught purposes. More important is the breeding of a sturdy race of horses, thousands of which are annually exported. The mountains maintain very large flocks of sheep, of which two kinds are distinguished—with a fine

short-stapled and a coarse long-stapled wool respectively. Silkworms are bred, and some silk is spun; and the export of honey and wax, from both wild and domestic bees, is not ineonsiderable. Neither the means of com- munication with the external world nor the manufacturing industry in Transylvania is developed to any important extent; the latter, indeed, has to a certain extent gone back. The most industrious and in general the most advanced of the population are the “Saxons”; and trade, the great bulk of which is with Roumania, is mainly in the hands of Armenians and Greeks. The chief com- mercial centres and principal towns are Herrmannstadt, Kronstadt, Bistritz, and Szamos-Ujvar.

Perhaps the most interesting point in connexion with Transyl- vania is the variety of its population, which in 1880 numbered 2,084,048 in all. Until 1848 the chief influence and privileges, as well as the only political rights, were divided among the three ‘‘ privileged nations” of the Hungarians, Szeklers, and Saxons. The first are the descendants of the Magyar conquerors. The Szeklers, 7.c., “ guardians,”’ chiefly on the east borders, settled in eastern Transylvania to act as guardians of the frontiers. The Saxons are the posterity of the German immigrants brought by King Geisa IJ. (1141-1161) from Flanders and the lower Rhine to cultivate and repeople his desolated territories. At first these were known as Teutones, Teutonici Hospites, and Flandrenses, but since the beginning of the 13th eentury the general name of ‘‘ Saxons,” as tantamount to “Germans,” has prevailed (cf. Saxony, vol. xxi. p- 351). The Hungarians and Szeklers together number 609,208, and the Saxons 204,713, but by far the most numerous element, though long excluded from power and political equality, is formed by the Walachians or Roumanians, 1,146,611 in number, a mixed race, not entitled to the descent which they elaim from the early Roman colonists of Dacia. The Gipsies of Transylvania, who are heard of under a voivode or prince of their own in 1417, are esti- mated at 46,460; many of them have abandoned a nomadie life and have taken to agriculture or gold-washing. Jews, Armenians, Bulgarians, Ruthenians, and Greeks are also represented in the medley of peoples. About 70,000 (chiefly children) are returned, unclassed, as “‘not able to speak.” The Magyars are mostly Roman Catholics or Unitarians, the Germans Protestants, and the Roumanians adherents of the Greek Church.

Transylvania formed part of the Roman provinee of Dacia. After the withdrawal of the Romans the country became for centuries the prey of the various peoples who swept across it in their restless migrations. At the beginning of the 11th century (1004) Stephen I. of Hungary made himself master of the land, which was thenceforward governed as an Hungarian province by a

voivode. In 1538 the voivode, John Zapolya, succeeded in render- ing himself independent, and he and his suceessors, who were generally elected by the people, were supported by the Turks against the house of Austria, while the difficult nature of their couutry preserved them on the other hand from becoming too dependent on their powerful allies. After the defeat of the Turks at Vienna in 1683, thcir influence in Transylvania waned, and in 1699, by the peace of Carlowitz, the Porte acknowledged the suzerainty of Leopold 1. of Austria over Transylvania. By the Leo- poldine diploma of 1691 Leopold had guaranteed the ancient rights and laws of the land, and united it formally with the Hungarian crown. In 1765 Maria Theresa made it a grand principality (Gross- Fiirstenthum). The efforts of the Roumanian inhabitants to secure recognition as a fourth “nation,” and the opposition of the non-Magyar population to a closer union with Hungary, led to troubles and disagreement early in the 19th century, culminating in bloody internecine struggles in 1848. In 1849 Transylvania was divided from Hungary by an imperial decree, and became an Austrian crown-land ; but in 1860 the old order was renewed, and the complete incorporation with Hungary was perfected in 1868. Since that time the policy of the Hungarian party has on the whole prevailed, and the Magyarization of the principality is steadily being carried through, in spite of the bitter protests and discontent of both the Saxons and Roumanians. An Hungarian university was founded at Klausenburg in 1872; and Hungarian is recognized as the official language. (F. MU.)

TRAPANT, a seaport of Italy, capital of the province of Trapani, and an episcopal see, lies on the extreme north-west coast of Sicily, 19 miles to the north-north-east of Marsala and 4 miles to the west-south-west of Monte St Giuliano. It lies on a sandy peninsula resembling a sickle (whence the

name, from épéravov), projecting west- ward and concave towards the north. It is a place of considerable enterprise; the streets are, comparatively speaking, regularly built and well kept; and the popula- tion are above the average in industry and intelligence. The town is still surrounded by a wall with bastions. Some of the medizval houses are interesting architec- turally, but none of the public buildings require special notice. Among the institutions of Trapani may be men- tioned the lyceum (with natural history collection and picture gallery), the gymnasium, the technical and navi- gation schools, and the library. Some of the churches contain choice works of art. The industries of the place include linen manufacture and works in coral, wood, iron, marble, alabaster, mother-of-pearl ; there are also extensive salt lagoons in the immediate neighbourhood, and there is considerable traffic in salt, soda, sulphur, and grain. The harbour, on the south-west side of the sickle, is sheltered by a mole and protected by a fort in the islet of Colum- bara; it has a lighthouse at the entrance, and is accessible to vessels of about 400 tons. The population in 1881 was

32,020.

Trapani, the ancient Drepanum or Drepana, was the seaport of Eryx (see Eryx and Monte San GIULIANO), and is represented by Virgil as the scene of the death of Anchises, and of the funeral games celebrated in his honour. Towards the beginning of the First Punic War (c. 260 B.c.) it was made a fortress by Hamilcar Barca, who removed hither the greater number of the inhabitants of Eryx, the remainder being transferred in 249. It fell into the hands of the Romans at the end of the war, and does not figure again in ancient history. It appears, however, to have continued to flourish as a commercial town, being mentioned both by Cicero and by Pliny. In the Middle Ages it became a royal residence.

TRAPPISTS. The abbey of Notre Dame de la Maison- Dieu de la Trappe was founded in 1140 by Rotrou, count of Perche, at Soligny-la-Trappe, a village of Haut-Perche, now in the arrondissement of Mortagne, department of the Orne, so named from the narrow gorge which forms its entrance, comparable to a trap-door. It was at first attached to the congregation of Savigny, a minor off- shoot of the order of Fontevrault, but that congregation was united in 1148 to the Cistercian order, and, by the special

intervention of St Bernard, was affiliated, with all its dependencies, to his own abbey of Clairvaux. No medizval monastic order fell more rapidly and signally from the spirit of its original institute than the

Cistercian, and La Trappe formed no exception to the general decay. Indeed, its geographical position in a district fiercely contested during the long war between France and England hastened its declension, for it was several times taken and pillaged, while the members of the community, at last compelled to break up and disperse, returned at the close of the war with their traditions interrupted, their discipline relaxed, and their moral tone deteriorated. Nor was this the worst. The introduction of the "commendam" system into the French Church, whereby secular ecclesiastics were empowered to hold monastic benefices without residence or conformity to the rule of the society in which they ranked as heads, wrought yet further mischief; and, though the Trappists at first endeavoured to resist Jean du Bellay, the celebrated bishop of Paris (afterwards cardinal-bishop of Ostia), whom Francis I. nominated in 1526 as abbot commend- atory, and were upheld by the pope in continuing to elect their own abbots, yet their efforts were fruitless, and Du Bellay was succeeded by a series of titular abbots, under whose nominal rule the estates of the abbey were impov- erished, the buildings suffered to fall into nearly total ruin, and the conduct of the monks became a public scandal. In fact, the community was broken up, the dismantled monastic buildings were abandoned to a few domestics and their families, and the scattered Trappists seldom reas- sembled save for hunting parties and similar amusements. Such was the condition of things when a reformer arose in the person of one of those very abbots commendatory who had been the ruin of the institute.

Armand Jcan Bouthillier de Rancé, second son of Denis Bouthillier de Rancé and Charlotte Joly his wife, was born in Paris on January 9, 1626. By his father's side he was sprung from a patrician family of Breton origin long settled in Normandy; by his mother's he was con- nected with powerful members of the official hierarchy. His near kindred were wealthy, titled, and highly placed in the magistracy, the army, and the dignities of the church ; while the fact that Cardinal Richelieu was one of his sponsors and gave him

his own fore-names sufficiently attests the political influence just then at their disposal. The child showed early tokens of considerable abilities, and was intrusted by his father to accomplished tutors, under whom he made rapid progress. He was originally intended to enter the order of the Knights of Malta, but the death of his elder brother in 1637, after a long illness, changed his father's plans, and the child (who had been tonsured in 1635 by way of precaution against such a contingency) was at once put in possession of the various benefices which had been secured for his elder; so that, while still under eleven years of age, he was canon of Notre Dame de Paris, abbot of La Trappe, of Notre Dame du Val, and of St Symphorian of Beauvais, and prior of Boulogne, near Chambord, and of St Clementin, in Poitou. In 1642 he was sent to the Collége d'Harcourt, where he began the usual course of philosophy, but addicted himself almost at ouce to the then popular study of judicial astro- logy, which he soon forsook for the cognate delusion of alchemy. Nevertheless, he distinguished himself in the more accredited studies of the college, and graduated as M.A. in 1644. It was then usual for Parisian students in theology to attend the course of lectures delivered at the Sorbonne, but De Rancé preferred to return home and pursue his theological studies under private instruction, He was ordained deacon in 1648, and, being in the hey- day of youth, with high spirits and popular manners, fell readily into the dissipations of the time, leading a very irregular life, yet not so as to forfeit the goodwill of even his stricter acquaintance. He was ordained priest in 1651, but made no alteration in his habits, and yet so far kept

up his studies that, when examined in 1652 for his licence as bachelor in theology, he came out at the head of the candidates, while the famous Bossuet ranked only as third. In 1653 he lost his father, who bequeathed property to him which doubled his already large income, and in 1654 he graduated as doctor of divinity, when his uncle, the archbishop of Tours, made him one of his archdeacons, hinting that this preferment would be merely the prelim- inary of a mitre. He never so much as pretended to discharge the duties of his new office, but spent his time amusing himself at his chateau of Véretz; in despite of which his uncle nominated him as deputy from the diocese of Tours to the general assembly of the French

clergy convoked by the king in 1655 to discuss the Jansenist controversy. The chief matter of intcrest in this connexion is that he was one of the minority of 65 doctors of the Sorbonne who refused to vote, with the majority of 127, a censure upon the Jansenist leader Arnauld, though he took part later against that school. The sudden death of the duchess of Rohan-Montbazon, with whom he was intimate, and whose relations with him were the subject of much hostile comment, is said to have been the first great shock which began the process of change in his views of life and duty. A story, which was first given currency in an anonymous account of his con- version published at Cologne in 1668, much heightens this by alleging that De Rancé arrived at the duchess's house unaware of her death, and went direct to her apartment without being warned by the servants, only to find her head lying apart from her decapitated body, having been cut off because the coffin was too short and there was no time to procure another. The truth of this story (itself containing several improbable incidents) was promptly denied by Maupeou, the earliest of De Rancé's biogra- phers, and has been rejected by Bayle and St Simon, though accepted by La Harpe and Voltaire. What is cer- tain is that the alteration in his habits nearly synchronizes with the death of Madame de Montbazon, and that the years 1657, 1658, and 1659 were mainly spent in solitary studies or in visits to the monasteries of which he was titular head, varied by conferences with eminent ecclesi- astics whose advice he sought, while in 1660 the death of the duke of Orleans, whose chief almoner he was, appears to have given the final direction to his thoughts, though it was not for some years that he carried out his new plans to the full. His first resolution was to sell his patrimony and resign his benefices, and in 1662 he actually sold his chateau of Véretz, made over two man- sions in Paris to the hétel-dieu, and obtained permission to transfer all his abbeys except Boulogne and La Trappe to resident heads chosen by himself. His canonry of Notre Dame had been resigned so far back as 1653 because of some difficulty about residence. After making provision for family claims, and retaining a comparatively small sum for the repair of Boulogne and La Trappe, he distributed the remainder of his property to the poor. In 1662 he visited La Trappe, which he found in a deplorable condi- tion, and the few resident monks so indisposed to listen to his projects of reform that they threatened to murder him and throw his body into the abbey ponds. In his turn he threatened them with the king's direct interfer- ence, and such was the terror of Louis XIV.'s

name that they at once submitted, and consented to retire upon the payment of a moderate pension; whereupon De Rancé filled their places in 1663 with monks of the strict Cistercian observance, and carefully repaired the monastic buildings there and at Boulogne. In that same year he finally decided to enter the monastic lifc, and began his

| noviciate at the Cistercian abbey of Perseigne in Maine, _assulning, on his profession in 1664, the actual headship

o24

of the abbey of La Trappe, whose nominal abbot he had been for nearly thirty years. Associating himself with other personages who desired to revive the Cistercian dis- cipline, he made two journeys to Rome to obtain papal sanction for their plans, and after considerable delay a brief was procured from Alexander VII. authorizing the abbot of Citeaux, as general of the Cistercians, to hold a grand chapter of the order to discuss the proposed reforms, which actually did meet in 1667. But De Rancé's ideas went much beyond the mere re-establishment of the strict observance ; and, though he judged some details of the original rule unsuited to his own day, and blended with it some particulars borrowed trom the Benedictine rule, yet he was so far from diminishing its general austerity that he added to the protracted fasts, the total abstinence froin flesh-meat, fish, eggs, and wine, the laborious manual occupations, the hard beds, and the severe asceticism, even in the church services, which made part of the original rule, also the obligation of perpetual silence, save at prayers (to which eleven hours daily are devoted), and save also the "“‘ Memento mori" with which the Trappists greet each other on first meeting, which is the distinguishing feature of La Trappe, a rule from which none are dispensed save the abbot and the guest-master, as obliged to hold some degree of intercourse with outsiders; and he further or- dained that each monk should spend some time each even- ing digging his own grave, and should sleep on straw in his coffin for a bed. These austerities, though cheerfully embraced by the monks of La Trappe, and attracting enthusiasts from without, were far from being approved generally, even in the Cistercian order itself, and, when a decree was issued by the council of state in 1675 giving the abbot of Citeaux absolute authority over all Cistercians of the strict observance, De Rancé took alarm,

and, think- ing it possible that an attempt might be made to mitigate the severities he had introduced (particularly as the mor- tality amongst the members of his society had been very large, and was currently attributed to insufficient nutri- ment), induced them to renew their vows and to pledge themselves against the admission of any relaxations. Nor was he content with opposing this kind of resistance to the bishops, abbots, and others who remonstrated with him upon the subject, but he also took up his pen in defence of his views, and published in 1683 his treatise De la Sainteté et des Devoirs de la Vie Monastique, which involved him in much controversy, notably with the learned Benedictine Mabillon, who replied to him in his well-known work Z'raité des Etudes Monastiques, published in 1691. Advancing years and unremitting asceticism told even on the strong constitution of De Rancé, and he found himself unable to take his share of the manual labours of the house, or even to be present in chapter, so that in 1695 he felt obliged to resign the abbacy, and pro- cured the nomination of the prior Zosimus to succeed him, but he died before the arrival of the bulls for his instal- lation, and Dom Francis-Armand was substituted in his room, and inducted into office in 1696. He proved a failure as a ruler, and La Trappe broke up into two fac- tions during his headship, some holding to him and others to De Raneé, till the new abbot resigned in a fit of disgust of which he soon repented, but could not succeed in recalling his abdication. Dom Jacques de la Tour, a man in sympathy with De Rancé, was then nominated by the crown, and while he was still abbot De Rancé died, on October 20, 1700, in the seventy-fifth year of his age. De Rancé was a tolerably copious author, though most of his writings were little more than occasional pamphlets suggested by the controversies in which he was engaged, short devotional treatises, and notices of deceased members of his community, but his reputation for ability and scholar-

rk eras! s

ship was never contested. He was a successful admini- strator, and, though the extreme severity of his institute resulted in the failure of fully six-sevenths of the postu- lants who presented themselves, he gathered round him during his government of the abbey no fewer than three hundred ascetics, French, Belgians, Germans, Italians, and Jrishmen, one-third of whom were drawn from less austere communities or from the ranks of the

parochial clergy and candidates for the priesthood. Of lay outsiders who joined him, the largest proportion consisted of rural artisans and labourers, and of soldiers, from officer to private (a class for which La Trappe has always continued to have attrac- tions), with a small sprinkling of the legal profession ; while two physicians and a single tradesman complete the tale of those who persevered out of the two thousand or so who presented themselves. No daughter houses were founded from La Trappe during De Rancé's life, for, though he was ready enough to send some of his monks for a time or even permanently to revive the Cistercian discipline in other monasteries, he was opposed on principle to every scheme which tended to drain the resources of La Trappe itself, and it was not till 1705 that the first offshoot of the Trappists was planted at Buon-Solazzo, near Florence, at the solicitation of Cosmo III., grand-duke of Tuscany.

No remarkable events occurred in connexion with La Trappe till the French Revolution, when the order was included in the general suppression of monastic societies by the Constituent Assembly in 1790. Even then the high character borne by La Trappe, and honourably distin- guishing it from too many monasteries at that time, seemed likely toexempt it from the common fate, and great efforts were made to obtain its exclusion from the operation of the decree. A petition addressed by the Trappists to the National Assembly was referred to the council-general of the department of the Orne at Alengon, which reported against it to the ecclesiastical committee of the assembly, though admitting that all the local municipalities which they had consulted were in favour of sparing the abbey. Dom Augustin (Louis Henri L'Estrange), at that time master of the novices, foreseeing the result of the inquiry, went to Switzerland to provide a refuge for the brethren, and obtained permission from the authorities of canton Freiburg to take possession of Val-Sainte, an unoccupied Cistercian monastery, and to bring no more than twenty- five persons thither. This necessitated leaving more than a hundred at La Trappe to await the coming storm, which burst upon Trinity Sunday, June 3, 1792, when com- missioners seized all the movable goods scheduled in their inventory, and compelled the inmates to disperse. Some betook themselves to Soleure; a few retired singly into private dwellings ; but various groups set out together to found colonies in Spain, Germany, England, and Canada ; while the earlier Swiss and Tyrolese houses were compelled to break up and seek refuge elsewhere from the

French invaders. But amidst all difficulties and discouragements the order not merely maintained itself, but grew and strengthened, and in 1808 ventured to plant anew two houses in France itself. This same year, however, saw the division of the order into two congregations, because the Trappists of Darfeld, under their prior Eugene de Prade, resisted what they considered to be the excessive demands made upon them by the abbot of the order, that very L'Estrange who had led out the colony of Val-Sainte (and who had been constituted its head, and that of the whole society, by a brief of Pius VI. in 1794), and the dispute was appealed to Rome, with the result that in June 1808 judgment was given against L'Estrange, and Darfeld was erected into an independent abbey under De Prade as abbot, and subjected to the jurisdiction of the bishop of Miinster. Nearly every Trappist house at this date was

TR A—

within Napoleon's dominions, and, as the order sided with the pope against the emperor, the latter expelled its monks from all monasteries in the empire, and imprisoned not a few of them. With his fall they revived again, and ob- tained permission to return to France, whither between 1814 and 1825 they drifted back from most of their places of exile, though 1450 were expelled anew in 1880 under the operation of the Ferry laws. La Trappe itself was repurchased by L'Estrange, and became once more the mother house, while there are fifteen other French mon- asteries of the order, four Belgian, two English (Mount St Bernard, Leicestershire, and Stape Hill, Dorset), two in Ireland, one each in Germany, Savoy, and Algiers, two in Italy, two (Gethsemane in Kentucky and New Melleray in Iowa) in the United States, and one originally settled in Pennsylvania, but now at Tracadie in Nova Scotia. An order of Trappistine nuns was founded by Dom Augustin in 1827, and has nine French houses and one English. The total numbers are computed at 3000 members of both sexes.

The bibliography relating to De Rancé and the Trappists is copious, and the following list is not exhaustive. Savary (Bishop of Séez), Imago R. P. Dom. Arm. Joan. le Bouthillier de Raneé, Abbatis de Trappa, 1701; Maupeou, Viede M. l' Abbé de la Trappe, Paris, 1702; Marsollier, Vie del Abbé Bouthillier de Raneé, Paris, 1702; Le Nain (brother of Tillemont), Vie de Le

Bouthillier de Raneé, Abbé et Réformateur dela Trappe, Rouen, 1715; Inguimbert, Genuinus Character D. Arm. Joannis Buttilieri Rancei, Rome, 1718; Charles Butler, ‘‘ Life of De Rancé,” Afiseellanies, vol. iii., London, 1817 ; Dubois, Histoire de 1 Abbé De Rancé et de sa Réforme, 2 vols., Paris, 1866; Félibien, Desertption de la Trappe, Paris, 1672; Helyot and Badiche, Histoire des Ordres Religicux, art. “ La

Trappe,” Paris, 1859; Wetzer and Welte, Kirehenlexicon, art.“ Trap- pisten,” Freiburg, 1849. (GR. 1, 1b.)

TRAS-OS-MONTES (i.¢., ‘Behind the Mountains ”) is the north-east frontier province of Portugal, situated on the other side of the Serra de Mara&o from Oporto. On the W. it is bounded by Entre Minho e Douro, and on the 8. by Beira. The area is 4260 square miles, and the popula- tion increased from 393,279 in 1878 to 396,676 in 1881. Physically the province is a mountainous plateau, the most elevated in Portugal, and characterized by the picturesque- ness and wildness of its scenery. Monte Zinho reaches a height of 7445 feet. Vast tracts are covered with heath ; but in certain parts the soil is fertile, and the rich wine- growing district on the upper Douro (Alto Douro) is the uiative country of port. Silk-growing is also carried on ; and wheat, rye, hemp, and flax appear among the exports. The province is divided into the two administrative dis- tricts of Villa Real and Braganza. Besides the two towns thus named, two only, Chaves and Miranda do Douro, are of any considerable size.

TRAVANCORE, a native state in Madras presidency, India, between 8° 4’ and 10° 22’ N. lat. and between 76° 12’and 77° 38’ E. long., with an area of 6730 square miles. It is bounded on the N. by the native state of Cochin, on the E. by the British districts of Madura and Tinnevelli, and on the S. and W. by the Indian Ocean. This state is described as one of the most picturesque portions of southern India. Its most marked physical feature is furnished by the Western Ghats, which rise to an elevation of 8000 feet and are clothed with magnificent primeval forest ; they throw out spurs towards the coast, along which there is a belt of flat country of about 10 miles in width, covered with an almost unbroken mass of cocoa- nut and areca palms, which to a great extent constitute the wealth of the country. The whole surface is undulat- ing, and presents a series of hills and valleys

traversed from east to west by many rivers, the floods of which, arrested by the peculiar action of the Arabian Sea on the coast, spread theniselves out into lagoons or backwaters, connected here and there by artificial canals, and forming an inland line of smooth-water communication for nearly

ee my 525

the whole length of the coast. The chief river is the Periyar, which is navigable for 60 miles; other important rivers are the Pambai and its tributary the Achinkoil, the Kallada, and the Western Tambraparni. Iron is abundant. Elephants are numerous, and tigers, leopards, bears, bison, elk, and various kinds of deer abound in the forests. The state possesses some good roads, and, on the whole, internal communication is tolerably complete. Travancore has an abundant rainfall, with every variety of climate and temperature.

In 1881 the population of Travancore was found to number 2,401,158 (males 1,197,134, females 1,204,024), of whom 1,755,610 were Hindus,146,909 Mohammedans, and 498,542 Christians. The chief towns are TRIVANDRUM (q.v.), the capital, Aleppi, the com- mercial centre and chief seaport of the state, and Quilon, another seaport and military headquarters. Among the principal articles which the state produces are rice, cocoa-nut palm, pepper, areea- nut, cardamoms, tamarind, coffee, timber, &c. The manufaetures comprise cocoa-nut, gingelly, lemon-grass, and laurel oils, jaggery and molasses, salt, arrack, eotton cloths and yarns, pottery, and coir yarn, rope, aud matting. Its revenue in 1884-85 was esti- mated at £640,548, Travancore state is in subsidiary alliance with the British Government, to which it pays a tribute of £80,000 a year. Itis one of the few states which have never turned against the British. Under the enlightened rule of the late maharajah the country made great progress, and it now stands very high among native states. It is free from debt, and has a surplus of revenue over expenditure. The sovereignty as well as the inheritance of property passes in the female line.

TRAWLING. See Fisuerizs.

TREASON. The law which punishes treason is a necessary consequence of the idea of a state, and is essen- tial to the existence of the state. Most, if not

all, nations have accordingly, at an early period of their history, made provision by legislation or otherwise for the punishment of those offences against public order which consist in more or less direct attacks upon the safety of the state or its chief. The principle is universal; it is the application of the principle which leads to differences of opinion. What would have been a capital crime at Rome under Tiberius may be no offence at all in England. It is to the advantage of both the state and the citizen that what is treason and what is not should be clearly defined, so that as little as possible discretionary power, apt to be strained in times of popular excitement, should be left to the judicial or executive authorities. The importance of this was seen by Montesquieu. Vagueness in the crime of treason, says he, is sufficient to make the government degenerate into despotism.! At the same time, it may be observed that despotic Governments have not always left the crime undefined. The object of Henry VIII., for instance, was rather to define it as closely as possible by making certain acts treason which would not have been so without such definition. In both ancient and modern history treason has generally been a crime prosecuted by exceptional procedure, and visited with afflzctive as distinguished from simple punishments (to use the termino- logy of Bentham).

In Roman law the offences originally falling under the head of treason were almost exclusively those committed in military service, such as in England would be dealt with under the Army Act. The very name perduellio, the name of the crime in the older Roman law, is a proof of this. LPerduelles were, strictly, public enemies who bore arms against the state; and traitors were regarded as having no more rights than public enemies. The Twelve Tables niade it punishable with death to communicate with the enemy or to betray a citizen to the enemy. Other kinds of perduellio were punished by interdiction of fire and water. The crime was tried before a special tribunal, the duumvirt perduellionis, perhaps the earliest permanent criminal court existing at Rome. At a later period the

1 Esprit des Lois, bk. xii. e. 7.

name of perduellio gave place to that of lxsa majestas, deminuta or minuta majestas, or simply majestas. The lex Julia majestatis, to which the date of

48 3n.c. has been conjecturally assigned, continued to be the basis of the Roman law of treason until the latest period of the empire. The original text of the law appears to have still dealt with what were chiefly military offences, such as sending letters or messages to the enemy, giving up a standard or fortress, and desertion. With the empire the law of majestas received an enormous development, mainly in the reign of Tiberius, and led to the rise of a class of pro- fessional informers, called delatores.t The conception of the emperor as divine? had much to do with this. It became a maxim that treason was next to sacrilege? in gravity. The law as it existed in the time of Justinian is

contained chiefly in the titles of the Digest * and Code |

“Ad legem Juliam majestatis.” The definition given in the Digest (taken from Ulpian) is this : ‘‘majestatis crimen illud est quod adversus populum Romanun vel adversus securi- tatem ejus committitur.” Of treasons other than military offences, some of the more noticeable were the raising of an army or levying war without the command of the emperor, the questioning of the emperor’s choice of a suc- cessor, the murder of (or conspiracy to murder) hostages or certain nagistrates of high rank, the occupation of public places, the meeting within the city of persons hostile to the state with weapons or stones, incitement to sedition or administration of unlawful oaths, release of prisoners justly confined, falsification of public documents, and failure of a provincial governor to quit his province at the expiration of his office or to deliver his army to his successor, The intention (volwntas) was punishable as much as an overt act (efectus).6 The reported opinions as to what was not treason show the lengths to which the theory of treason must have been carried by at least some person in authority. It was not treason to repair a statue of the emperor which had decayed from age, to hit such a statue with a stone thrown by chance, to melt down such a statue if unconsecrated, to use mere verbal insults against the emperor, to fail in keeping an oath sworn by the emperor, or to decide a case contrary to an imperial constitution. Treason was one of tlie “ publica judicia,” i.c., one of those crimes in which any citizen was entitled to prosecute. The law went further than this, and deprived the accused in a charge of treason of his ordinary remedy for malicious prosecution. It also took from him the privilege (which those accused of other crimes generally possessed) from

accusation by women or infamous persons, from liability to be put to the torture, and from having his slaves tortured against him (see Torrurz). The punishment from the time of Tiberius was death (usually

]

by beheading)” and confiscation of property, coupled with |

complete civil disability. A traitor could not make a will or a gift or emancipate a slave. Even the death of the accused, if guilty of treason of the gravest kind, such as levying war against the state, did not extinguish the charge, but the memory of the deceased became infamous, and his property was forfeited as though he had been con- victed in his lifetime.

— ee eee ee eee

1 See Merivale, Hist. of the Romans under the Empire, vol. iii. p. 467, vol. v. p. 141.

® «*Principes instar deorum esse” are the words of Tacitus.

3 This crime was called lasa majestas diving in later law.

4 xlviii, 4. 1b, tele

° A similar provision was contained in the Golden Bull of Charles IV. c. 24. In English law, with the one exception of a statute of Richard H. (21 Ric. IL. c. 3) repealed in the first year of Henry IV., an overt act las always been necessary. he difficulty of proving a mere intention is obvious. In French and German law the overt act (attentat or Unternehmen) is as indispensable as in English. –

7 To harbour a fugitive enemy was punishable only by deportation, Dig., xlviii. 19, 40.

TREASON

The law of England corresponds to a considerable extent with Roman law; in fact, treason is made by Blackstone the equivalent of the crimen lesx

majestatis. The history of the crime in the two systems agrees in this that in both the law was settled by legislation at a com- paratively early period, and subsequently developed by judicial construction. In both, too, there were exceptional features distinguishing this crime from other offences.' For instance, at comnion law treason was not bailable (except by the Queen's Bench) or clergyable, could not be cleared by sanctuary, and did not admit of accessories, for all were principals, nor could a married woman plead coercion by her husband. To stand mute and refuse to

| plead did not save the lands of the accused, as it did in

felony, so that the "peine forte et dure " (see Torrurn) was unnecessary in treason. These severities were due to the conception of treason as a breach of the oath of allegiance. Other differences introduced by statute will be mentioned later. In some cases a statute simply affirmed the common law, as did the Statute of Treasons to a great extent, and as did 26 Hen. VIII. c. 13, depriving those accused of treason of the benefit of sanctuary. How far the Roman law was consciously imitated in England it is impossible to determine. It was certainly not adopted to its full extent, for many acts were majestas which were never treason, even in the most despotic periods. Treason was the subject of legislation in many of the pre-Conquest codes. 'The laws of Alfred® and A®thelred !° punished with death any one plotting against the life of the king. Soon after the Conquest the Leyes Henrict Primi put any one slaying the king's messenger in the king's mercy. The crime was shortly defined by Glanvill!2 and at greater length by Bracton,!° who follows Roman law closely. He includes under treason sedition and coining. Treason seems to have rested chiefly, if not wholly, upon common law until the year 1352, when the famous Statute of Treasons (25 Edw. III. st. 5, ¢ 2) was passed. The statute appears to have arisen from a petition of the Commons in 1348, praying for a definition of the offence of accroaching royal power, a charge on which several persons—notably Gaveston and the Despencers—had suffered, The offences made treason by the statute are. these :—(1) to compass or imagine the death of the king, the queen, or their eldest son and heir; (2) to violate the king's companion, or his eldest daughter unmarried, or the wife of his eldest son and heir; (3) to levy war against the king in his realm, or be adherent to the king's enemies in his realm, giving them aid and com- fort in the realm or elsewhere; (4) to

counterfeit the king’s great or privy seal or his money ; (5) to bring false money into the realm, counterfeit to the money of Eng- land, as the money called Lushburgh,!® knowing the money to be false; (6) to slay the chancellor, treasurer, or the king’s justices of the one bench or the other, justices in eyre, or justices of assize, and all other justices assigned to hear and determine, being in their places doing their offices. The statute further defined petty treason to be the slaying of a master by his servant, a husband by his wife, or a prelate by a man secular or religious owing him allegiance. In all cases of treason not specified in the statute the justices before whom the case came were to tarry without going to judgment until the cause had been

8 The position of treason as a special crime prosecuted by special procedure is one common to most legal systems at some period of their existence. For instance, in Germany, by a constitution of Henry VIL. the procedure was to be summary, sine strepitu et figura judicti.

ee, ah HUTA BU) EN bsabe, 2 He i Ile 131180.

14 These words, according to Luders (Law Tracts, note ad fin.), mean to attempt or contrive.

1 This by 1 Mary, sess. 8, c. 1 includes a queen regnant:

16 ¢.¢,, Luxemburg.

TREASON

showed and declared before the king and his parliament whether it ought to be judged treason or felony. The statute, so far as it defines the offence, is still law, except the clauses as to counterfeiting the seal, coining, and petit treason, repealed respectively, after a considerable amount of intermediate modification by statute, by 11 Geo. IV. and 1 Will. IV. c. 66, 2 and 3 Will. IV. c. 34, 30 Geo. IIL. c. 48, and 9 Geo. IV. c. 31. Petit treason is now treated as murder, 24 and 25 Vict. c. 100.1 From the time of the passing of the Statute of Treasons the limits of treason were continually being extended for a time, and again reduced to the bounds fixed by the statute. It protected only the king’s life, and its insufficiency was supplemented

in periods of danger by legislation, often of a temporary |

nature. Under Richard JI. and Henry VIII. many new offences were made treason,? but the Acts creating these new treasons were repealed at the earliest opportunity by the parliaments of their successors, and the Statute of Treasons was made the final standard by 1 Mary, sess. 1, ce. 1. The reign most prolific in statutory additions to the Jaw of treason was undoubtedly that of Henry VIII. Legislation in this reign was little more than a register of the fluctuating opinions of the monarch. Thus, by 25 Hen. VIII. c. 22 it was treason not to believe Mary illegitimate and Elizabeth legitimate; by 28 Hen. VILL. ce. 7 it was treason to believe either legitimate; by 35 Hen, VIII. c. 1 it was treason not to believe both legitimate. An interesting act of this reign, 37 Hen. VIL ¢. 10, shows that a class of men like the Roman delatores must have been called into existence by all the new legislation, ‘The Act constituted it felony to make anonymous charges of treason without daring to appear in support of them before the king or council. Out of the mass of Henry VIII.’s Acts, only two are still law,—28 Hen. VIII. c. 15 and 35 Hen. VIII. c. 2, giving power to try treasons committed within the jurisdiction of the admiralty and out of the realm. Many other instances of offences of a temporary kind made treason at different times occur among the statutes, especially in those levelled at the papal jurisdiction by the parliaments of Elizabeth. A few of the more interesting of other kinds may be briefly noticed. It was treason by 21 Ric. Il. c. 4 to ‘attempt to appeal or annul judgments made by parliament against certain traitors; by 2 Hen. V. st. 1, c. 6, and 29 Hen. VI. c. 2 to break a truce or safe-conduct ; by 5 and 6 Edward VI. c. 11 to hold castles, fortresses, or muni- tions of war against the king; by 17 Car. IIc. 5 to adhere to the United Provinces; by 9 Will. IIL ¢. 1 to return without licence if an adherent of the Pretender ; by 12 and 13 Will. IIL. c. 3 to correspond with the Pre- tender ; and by 57 Geo. III. c. 6 to compass or imagine the death of the prince regent. In addition to these, many Acts of attainder were passed at different times. One of the most severe was that against Catherine Howard, 33 Hen. VJIL c. 21, which went as far as to make it treasonable for any queen to conceal her ante-nuptial incontinence. Other Acts were those against Archbishop Scrope, Owen Glendower, Jack Cade, Lord Seymour, Sir John Fenwick, James Stuart, and Bishop Atterbury. In one case, that of Cromwell, Ireton, and

Bradshaw, an Act of attainder was passed after the death of those guilty of the treason, 12 Car. II. c. 30. At times

1 Since the disappearance of petit treason as a distinct crime, it seems useless to retain the old name of high treason by which what may be called treason proper was formerly known.

2 One reason for making these offences treason rather than felony was no doubt to give the crown rather than the lord of the fee the right to the real estate of the criminal on forfeiture. Had the offences been felony the king would have had only his year, day, and waste on the estate escheating to the lord, as was the case in treason before the Statute of Treasons (see FELONY).

O27

Acts of indemnity were passed to relieve those who had taken part in the suppression of rebellion from any possible Hability for illegal proceedings. Three such Acts were passed in the reign of William IIL.

The Statute of Treasons, as interpreted by the judges, is still the standard by which an act is determined to be treason or not. The judicial interpretation has been sometimes strained to meet cases scarcely within the contemplation of the framers of the statute: é.g., it became established doctrine that a conspiracy to levy war against the king’s person or to imprison or depose him might be given in evidence as an overt act of compassing his death, and that spoken words, though they conld not in themselves amount to treason, might constitute an overt act, and so be evidence. Besides decisions on particular cases, the judges at different times came to general resolutions which had an appreciable cffect on the law. The principal resolutions were those of 1397 (confirmed by 21 Ric, II. ce, 12), of 1557, and those agreed to in the case of the regicides at the Restoration and reported by Sir John Kelyng. A remarkable resolution in favorem ret among the latter was that a prisoner ought not to be ironed during trial. The result of judicial decisions on the Statute of Treasons was summed up in Acts passed in 1786, made permanent in 1817 and in 1848 (57 Geo. III. c. 6 and 11 Vict. c. 12, the latter often called the Treason Felony Act). The effect of this legislation, according to Mr Justice Stephen, is that such of the

judicial constructions as extend the imagining of the king's death to imagining his death, destruction, or any bodily harm tending to death or destruction, maim or wounding, im- prisonment or restraint, have been adopted, while such of the con- structions as make the imagining of his deposition conspiring to levy war against him, and instigating foreigners to invade the realm, have not been abolished, but are left to rest on the authority of decided cases. The present state of the law has been incorpor- ated by skilled lawyers in the draft criminal code, which will no doubt become an Act when parliament has leisure to devote to matters of this kind. The code draws a distinction between treason and treasonable crimes, the former including such acts (omitting those that are obviously obsolete) as by the Statute of Treasons and subscquent legislation are regarded as treason proper, the latter including the crimes contained in the Act of 1848. In the words of the code (§ 76) "treason is (a) the act of killing Her Majesty, or doing her any bodily harm tending to death or destruction, maim or wounding, and the act of imprisoning or restraining her; or (d) the forming and manifesting by an overt act an intention to kill Her Majesty, or to do her any bodily harm tending to death or destruc- tion, maim or wounding, or to imprison or to restrain her; or © the act of killing the eldest son and heir-apparent of Her Majesty, or the queen consort of any king of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland; or (d) the forming and manifesting by an overt act an intention to kill the cldest son and hcir-apparent of Her Majesty, or the quecn consort of any king of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland; or (e) conspiring with any person to kill Her Majesty, or to do her any bodily harm tending to death or destruction, maim or wounding, or conspiring with any person to imprison or restrain her ; or (/) levying war against Her Majesty either with intent to depose Her Majesty from the style, honour, and royal name of the imperial crown of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland or of any other of Her Majesty's dominions or countries; or in order by force or constraint to compel Her Majesty to change her measures or counsels, or in order to intimidate or overawe both Houses or either House of Parliament ; or (g) conspiring to levy war against Her Majesty with any such intent or for any such purpose as aforesaid; or (h) instigating any foreigner with force to invade this realm or any other of the dominions of Her Majesty; or (2) assisting any public enemy at war with Her Majesty in such war by any means whatso- ever; or (j) violating, whether with her consent or not, a queen consort, or the wife

of the eldest son and heir-apparent for the time being of the king or queen regnant.”” There are a few other Acts still in force besides those of 1817 and 1848 which have dealt with substantive law. By 11 Henry VII. c. 1 obedience to the de facto sovereign for the time being is not treason. By 1 Anne st. 2, c. 21, it is treason to endeavour to hinder the next successor to the crown from succeeding, and by 6 Anne ec. 41 it is treason to maliciously, advisedly, and directly by writing or printing main- tain and affirm that any person has a right to the crown otherwise than according to the Acts of Settlement and Union, or that the crown and parliament cannot pass statutes for the limitation of the succession to the crown.

The Acts dealing with procedure and punishment are more nnmerous, and are characterized by a slowly increasing favour shown to the accused,—in fact, considerably greater than in felony, for counsel were not allowed to prisoners in charges of felony until 1836, and such prisoners are still not entitled to a copy of the indictment or the names of the witnesses or jury. With respect to the mode of trial, the effect of common law and legislation is that there are now four varieties, —IMPEACHMENT (g.v.), trial of a peer

by the peers, court martial, and trial by a judge of the High Court of Justice and a jury. The offence cannot be tried at quarter sessions. Trial by battle in cases of treason ceased in the 14th century, as far as regards appeals in the common law courts or in parliament, by the effect of several statutes passed between 1332 and 1399, Appeals of treason were finally abolished in 1819 (see APPEAL). In the court of the lord high constable an award of battle occurred as lately as 1631 in the case of Lord Rea.’ Traitors in the reign of Edward 1V., and perhaps later, were at times tried by martial law. The issue of commissions of martial law in time of peace was declared illegal by the Petition of Right in 1628. The prerogative of the crown to try traitors by martial law in time of open rebellion still exists, and is recognized by statute. In two Acts, for instance, dealing with Ireland, 48 Geo. III. ¢. 117 and 8 and 4 Will. IV. c. 4, it was provided that nothing in the Acts was to take away the undoubted prerogative of the crown for the public safety to resort to the exercise of martial law against open enemies and traitors. A

peer is tried before the House of Lords, or the court of the lord high steward if the trial be during the recess of parliament. Procedure in such trials is regulated by 7 and 8 Will. III. ¢. 3, and other Acts. The last trial of a peer for treason was that of Lord Lovat in 1746-47. Persons subject to naval or military law are triable by court martial in certain cases under the powers given by the Naval Discipline Act, 1866, and the Army Act, 1881. The trial of treason committed out of the realm is regulated by 35 Hen. VIII. c. 2, 5 and 6 Edw. VI. c. 11, and 7 Anne c. 21. Lord Macguire was tried by jury in England under 35 Hen. VIII. c. 2 for treason committed in Ireland." Procedure before and at the trial depends upon a large number of Acts, of which the most important is one passed in 1695 (7 and 8 Will. IIL. ce. 3). It enacted that persons indicted for treason are to have a copy of the indictinent delivered to them five days before trial. The court is empowered to assign counsel for the prisoner (a power extended to impeachments by 20 Geo. II. c. 80). The oath of two witnesses, or confession in open court, or refusal to plead, or per- emptory challenge of more than thirty-five jurors is necessary for conviction. The witnesses must be both to the same overt act or one to one and the other to another overt act of the same treason. If two or more treasons of divers kinds are alleged in one indict- ment, one witness to prove oue treason and another to prove another are not sufficient. No person is to be indicted unless within three years after the offence, except on a charge of attempted assassination of the king. The accused is to have copies of the panel of the jury® two days before trial. He is entitled to the sane process to compel his witnesses to appear as is usually granted to compel the witnesses for the prosecution. No evidence is to be given of any overt act not expressly laid in the indictment. The Act expressly denied the prisoner the names of the wituesses against him. The law on this point was altered by 7 Anne c. 21, which enacted that a list of such witnesses was to be delivered to him ten days before trial. Such witnesses had previously been made examinable upon oath by 1 Anne st. 2,¢. 9. By 5 and 6 Vict. c. 51 (extending the provisions of an Act of 1800) the advantages given by the Act of William II1. are not to extend to a prisoner charged with treason in comipassing or imagining any bodily harm tending to the death or destruction, maiming or wounding of the queen, where the overt act is an attempt to injure the person of the queen. In such a case the trial is to proceed in every respect and on the like evidence as if it were for murder. By 11 Vict. c. 12 no prosecution for a felony under the Act, in so far as it is

expressed by open and advised speaking only, is to be instituted unless information be given to a justice or sheriff within six days and a warrant issued within ten days of the information, and no person is to be convicted of such an offence except on con- fession in open court or proof by two witnesses. The prisoner is not to be acquitted if the facts amount to treason. There may be accessories to felonics under this Act, which, as has been already stated, there cannot be to treason. The prosecutor and witnesses are not entitled to costs. By a later Act of the same year (11 and 12 Vict. ¢. 42, § 23) a person charged with treason is not to be admitted to bail except by order of a secretary of state or by the Queen's Bench Division or a judge thereof in vacation.

The punishinent of treason at common law was barbarous in the extreme.4 The sentence was that the offender, if a man, be drawn on a hurdle to the place of execntion, that there he be hanged by the neck till he be dead, that his head be severed from his body, and that his body be divided into four quarters, the head and quarters to be at the disposal of the crown. A woman was drawn to the place of execution, and there burned alive. The Acts of 30 Geo. III. c. 48 and 54 Geo. III. ce. 146 changed the sentence to

1 Shakespeare twice makes effective usc of the trial by battle in treason, in King Lear and Richard 1/, 2 4 State Trials, 653.

3 By the Bill of Rights the jurors in trials for treason must have been free-holders, This provision of the Act was repealed by 9 Geo. IV. c. 50.

4 The exceptional character of the punishment, like that of the procedure, may be paralleled from Germany. The punishment of traitors by Frederick II. by wrapping them in lead and throwing them into a furnaee is alluded to by Dante, Inferno, xxiii. 66.

Yh HA SO W

hanging in the case of women, and in tlie case of men enabled the erown, by warrant under the sign manual countersigned by a secretary of state, to change the sentence to beheading or remit it altogether. By the Felony Act, 1870, the punishment is hanging only, but 54 Geo. III. ¢. 146 appears to be still so far in force that beheading may be substituted by warrant of the

crown where the crininal isa man. Attainder and forfeiture are abolished by the Felony Act, 1870, except where the offender has been outlawed.° The maximum penalty for a felony under the Act of 1848 is penal servitude for life. In every pardon of treason the offence is to be particularly specified therein (see Panpon).

Trials for treason in Great Britain and Ireland have been very numerous, and occupy a large part of the numerous volumes of the State Trials. Some of the more interesting may be mentioned. Before the Statute of Treasons were those of Gaveston and the Despensers in the reign of Edward II. on charges of accroaching the royal power. After the Statute were those (some before the peers by trial or impeachment, most before the ordinary criminal courts) of Empson and Dudley, Fisher, More, the earl of Surrey, the duke of Somerset, Anne Boleyn, Lady Jane Grey, Sir Thomas Wyatt, Cranmer, the queen of Scots, Sir Walter Raleigh, Strafford, Laud, Sir Henry Vane and other regicides, William, Lord Russell, Algernon Sidney, the duke of Monmouth, and those implicated in the Pilgrimage of Grace, the Gunpowder, Popish, Rye House, and other plots, Cases where the proceeding was by bill of attainder have been already mentioned. Occasionally the result of a trial was confirmed by statute. In some of these trials, as is well known, the law was considerably strained in order to insure a con- viction. Since the Revolution there have been the cases of those who took part in the risings of 1715 and 1745, Lord George Gordon in 1780, Hardy and Horne Tooke in 1794, the Cato Street con- spirators in 1820, Frost in 1840, and the Fenians in 1867. It should be noticed that mauy cases of proceedings for treason against foreigners occur. Treason committed by them within the realm is a breach of what has been called local allegiance, due to the sovereign of the country in which they reside. Such are the cases of Leslie, bishop of Ross, ambassador to Elizabeth from the queen of Scots, the Marquis de Guiscard in Queen Anne’s reign, aud Gyllenborg, the ambassador from Sweden to George I]. Pro- ceedings against ambassadors for treason have never gone beyond imprisonment, more for safe custody than as a punishment. No amount of residence abroad will suffice to exempt a native-born subject from the penalty of treason if he bear arms against the country of his birth.®

Misprision (from the old French mespris) of treason, in the words of Blackstone, “ consists in the bare knowledge and concealinent of treason, without any degree of assent thereto, for any assent makes the party a principal traitor.” At common law even the eonccal- ment was treason, but 5 and 6 Edw. VI. ec. 11 and 1 and 2 Ph. and M. c. 10 made concealment a misprision only. The offence was dealt with by many Acts, under some of which rather remark- able crimes were made misprision; ¢.g., 14 Eliz. c. 3 constituted the counterfeiting of foreign coinage a inisprision. The procedure in trials for misprision is in general the same as that followed in trials for treason, most of the Acts regulating procedure including both crimes. The punishment is loss of the profit of the lands of the offender during life, and imprisonment for life.

Cognate Offences.—Under this head may be conveniently grouped certain offences against public order which, though not technically treason or treasonable offences (to use the language of the draft criminal code), are so nearly allied to them as to make it convenient to treat them under the head of treason. The most interesting of these for historical reasons is premunire. The word is derived from premunire or premonert facias, the introductory words of the writ of summons to the defendant to answer the charge. From this the word came to be used to denote the offences prosecuted by means of such a writ, usually of an ecclesiastical kind. The Statute of Premunire, specially so called, is 16 Ric. II. c. 5, enact- ing that the procuring at Rome or elsewhere of any translations, bulls, &c., against the king puts the persons offending out of the king’s protection, subjects their goods to forfeiture and themselves to attachment or process of premunire facias. The Act introduced no new principle, but simply continued the anti-papal policy visible in the Statutes of Provisors, the earliest of which dated from 1807. At different times many other Acts were passed, extending the penaltics of premunire to other crimes, usually those connected with the supremacy of the pope (2 Hen. IV. c. 4, mentioned under TITHES, isan example), but sometimes of a more distiuctly political as distinguished from religious nature. Thus it is premunire by 13 Car. I. c. 1 to affirm the power of parliament to legislate with- out the crown, by the Habeas Corpus Act to send a prisoner beyond seas, and to verbally assert the right of a person to the crown con-

5 Proceedings after the death of an alleged traitor might at one time have been taken, but only to a very limited cxtent as compared with what was allowed in Roman and Scots law. Sir E. Coke (4 Rep., 57) states that there might have been forfeiture of the land or goods of one slain in rebellion on view

of the body by the lord chief justice of England as supreme coroner. 6 See neas Maedonald's case, 18 State Trials, 857.

ree AS ON

trary to the Acts of Settlement and Union is premunire by 6 Anne c. 41. To do so by writing or printing is, as has been said, treason. The latest Act constituting a premunire is the Royal Marriage Act, 12 Geo. III. c. 11, which subjects to the penalties of premunire any one guilty of a breach of the provisions of the Act. A peer charged with premunire is not entitled to trial by his peers, but is to be tried by a jury. The most famous historical instance of a prosecution on the Statute of Premunire was that of Wolsey in 1529. Other offences cognate to treason are publishing scandalous stories about the king (the leasing-making of Scotch law), mal- administration and sale of public offices, coining, offences against the Foreign Enlistment Act, and the crimes specially provided against by 33 Hen. VIII. c. 12 and 5 and 6 Vict. c. 51. The former Act punished malicious striking in the king's palace by perpetual imprisonment, fine, and loss of the right hand. The minute provisions for the mutilation of the offender are very curious, but not of immediate interest, as that part of the Act which inflicted mutilation was repealed by 9 Geo. IV. c. 31. By 5 and 6 Vict. c. 51 it is a high misdemeanour, punishable by penal servitude for seven years, to wilfully discharge, point, aim, or present at the person of the queen any gun or other arms, loaded or not, or to strike at or attempt to throw anything upon the queen's person, or to produce any firearms or other arms, or any explosive or dangerous matter, near her person, with intent to injure or alarm her or to commit a breach of the peace. For other offences which are more or less nearly connected with treason refer- ence may be made to the articles Lipet, OATHs, PeriTIoNn, Riot, and SrpirTion.?

Scotland. —Treason included treason proper, or crimes against the crown or the state, such as rebellion, and crimes which, though not technically

treasonable, were by legislation punished as treason. Examples of the latter were the remaining in England against the king's will, 1480, c. 19; wilful fire-raising, 1526, c. 10; kidnapping, 1567,c. 27; theft, reset, and stouthrief by banded men, 1587, c. 34. There were also many acts dealing with offences in the nature of resistance to authority, such as unlawful convocations, and with treasons of a merely transitory nature, such as attempting to restore the Ruthvens (1600), taking or owning the Covenants (1685), or corresponding with James VII. (1698). Acts of forfeiture were sometimes directed against individuals, as 1645, c. 23, against the marquis of Huntly. Scottish procedure was as a rule less favour- able to the accused than English. In one matter, however, the opposite was the case. Advocates compellable to act on behalf of the accused were allowed him by 1587, c. 57, more than a century before the concession of a similar indulgence in England. At one time trial in absence and even after death was allowed, as in Roman law. In the case of Robert Leslie, in 1540, a summons after death was held by the estates to be competent, and the bones of the deceased were exhumed and presented at the bar of the court.? The Act 1542, c. 18, confined this revolting procedure to certain treasons of the more heinous kind. By 7 Anne c. 21 trial in absence—the last instance of which had occurred in 1698—was abolished. The same Act assimilated the law and practice of treason to that of England in other respects by enacting that no crime should be treason or misprision in Scotland but such as was treason or misprision in England. The Act further provided that the trial was to be by a jury of twelve, not fifteen asin other crimes, before the court of justiciary, or a commission of oyer and terminer containing at least three lords of justiciary. To slay a lord of justiciary or lord of session, or to counterfeit the great seal, was made treason. The Act also contained provisions as to forfeiture,? qualification of jurors, and procedure. Outlawry for treason was regulated by 22 Geo. II. c. 48. The punishment still remains the same as it was in England before the Felony Act, 1870, and attainder and forfeiture are still the effects of condemnation for treason, the Act of 1870 not extending to Scotland. One or two other statutory provisions may be briefly noticed. The trial of a peer of Great Britain for treason committed in Scotland is to be by a commission from the crown, on indictment found by a jury of twelve (6 Anne c. 23, 6 Geo. IV. c. 66). Bail in treason-felony is only to be allowed by consent of the public prosecutor or warrant of the high or circuit court (11 Vict. c.12). The term lese-majesty was sometimes

used for what was treason proper, ¢.g. in 1524, c. 4, making it lese-majesty to transport the king out of the realm, sometimes as a synonyni of leasing-making. This crime (also called

1 Authorities.—The text-writers on criminal law, such as Hale and Hawkins; Bacon, Law Tracts, Cases of Treason; Coke, 3 Jnst., 1-39; Sir R. Holbourne, Reading on the Statute of Treasons; Luders, Law Tracts; Foster, Discourse of Treason; Stephen, Comm., vol. iv. bk. vi. ch. vi. The Statute of Treasons is noticed by Hallam, Const. Hist., vol. iii. p. 203; Stubbs, Const. Hist., vol. iii. p. 513. The most valuable modern authorities are Stephen, Hist. of the Criminal Law, vol. ii. ch. xxifi., and Willis Bund, Selection of Cases from the State Trials.

2 In the one instance in England—that of Cromwell, Ireton, and Bradshaw — where the bodies of alleged traitors were exhumed after dcath they were not brought to the bar of a court as in Scotland. ;

3 The provisions in the Act as to forfeiture (now repealed) were, according to Blackstone, Comm., vol. iv. p. 384, the result of a compromise between the House of Lords, in favour of its continuance, and the House of Commons, supported by the Scottish nation, struggling to secure a total immunity from this disability.

029

verbal sedition) consisted in the engendering discord between king and people by slander of the king.4 The earliest Act against leasing-making eo nomine was in 1524. The reign of James VI. was pre-eminently prolific in legislation against this crime. It is now of no practical interest, as prosccutions for leasing-making have long fallen into desuetude. Atone time, however, the powers of the various Acts were put into force with great severity, especially in the trial of the earl of Argyll in 1681. The punishment for leasing-making, once capital, is now, by 6 Geo. IV. c. 47, fine or imprisonment, or both. The offence of premunire was introdueed into Scotland at a comparatively late period. By 6 Anne c. 28 it is premunire for the peers of Scotland assembled to elect represen- tatives to treat of any other matter.®

Ireland.—Numerous Acts, beginning with 18 Hen. VI. c. 2, were passed by the Ivish parliamcent—in many cases mere echoes of previous English legislatiou. As in England and Scotland, there was a tendency to include under treason crimes of quite another character. Murder was made treason by 10 Hen. VII. c. 21, and arson by 13 Hen. VIII. c. 1. Apparently the law must sometimes have been strained against accused persons, for 3 and 4 Ph. and M. c. 11 enacted that trials for treason were to be according to the common law. ‘Treasons of a temporary nature were often the subject of legislation. Anexample is 11 Eliz. c. 6, making it treason to assume the name and authority of O’Neill. The provisions of the English Act of William III. as to witnesses, &c., were not extended to Ireland until 1821 by 1 and 2 Geo. IV. c. 24. Many Acts of indemnity were passed both by the parliaments of Ireland and of the United Kingdom. Among the more important were an Irish Act of 1799 (89 Geo, III. c. 3), indemnifying those who had been active in suppressing the treasonable rising of the previous year, and one of the parliament of the United Kingdom (41 Geo. III. c. 104), iudemnifying those who had taken part in the suppression of rebellion subsequent to 1799. The law is now practically the same as that of England, unless where exceptional political cireum- stances have led to exceptional legislation. Thus a series of enact- ments called the ‘‘ Whiteboy Acts” (passed by the Irish and the United Kingdom parliaments between 1775 and 1830) was intended to give additional facilities to the executive for the suppression of tumultuous risings. Many Irish Acts dealt with unlicensed posses- sion and manufacture of arms. A similar policy was eontinued after the Union, and appears in the Peace Preservation Act, 1881, continued in 1887 for five years. Some Acts, such as 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 4, went as far as to make offenders in a proclaimed district triable by court-martial. By the Prevention of Crime Act, 1882, now expired, the lord-lieutenant was empowered to issue special commissions for the trial without jury of treason and treason-felony. The power was never exercised. The Criminal Law and Procedure (Ireland) Act, 1887, deals with resistance to authority and offences of a treasonable nature, especially “dangerous associations,” though treason is not mentioned by name.

British Colonies and Dependencies.—The law in the main agrees with that of the mother country, but it is quite competent for a colony to deal with treason by its own legislation which need not necessarily be in accordance

with English law, and is sometimes ex- pressed in more definite terms. Thus the Indian penal code makes it punishable with transportation for life to wage war against the Government of any Asiatic power in alliance or at peace with the queen, or to attempt to excite feelings of disaffection to the Govern- ment. Numerous temporary Acts were passed about the time of the mutiny, one of the most characteristic being an Act of 1858 making rebellious villages liable to confiscation. By the Cape of Good Hope statutes it is treason to deliver arms or gunpowder to the queen's enemies. Many colonies adopt the English legislation as to procedure, and some, as New South Wales, &c., enact the Treason Felony Act. A striking feature of colonial legislation on this subject is the great number of Acts of indemnity passed after different rebellions. Instanees of such Acts occur in the legislation of Canada, Ceylon, the Cape of Good Hope, New Zealand, St Vin- cent, and Jamaica. The most important in the history of law is the Jamaica Act of 1866, indemnifying Mr Hyre for any aets com- mitted during the suppression of the rising in the previous year. It was finally held by the Exchequer Chamber in 1870 that this Act protected Mr Eyre from being sued successfully in England on a cause of action arising out of his acts during the outbreak (‘‘ Phil- lips v. Eyre,” Law Reports, 6 Queen's Bench, 1).

United States.—The law is based upon that of England. By Art. 3 s. 8 of the constitution ‘‘ treason against the United States shall consist only in levying war against them, or in adhering to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort. No person shall be convicted of treason unless on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or on confession in open court. The Congress shall have power to declare the punishment of treason; but no attainder of treason shall work corruption of blood or forfeiture, except during the life of the person attainted.” By Art. 2 s. 4

4 Itis called by Hallam ‘‘the old mystery of iniquity in Scots law.” 5 For the existing Scots law of treason see Macdonald, Criminal Law, p. 220. For leasing-making see Hume, Comm., vol. i. p. 345.

impeachment for and conviction of treason is a ground for remov- ing the president, vice-president, and other civil officers. The punishment by an Act of 1790 was declared to be death by hanging. But during the Civil War a new Act (17 July 1862) was passed, providing that the punishment should be death, or, at the diseretion of the court, imprisonment at hard labour for not less than five years, and a fine of not less than 10,000 dollars to be levied on the real and personal property of the offender, in addition to disability to hold any office under the United States. The Act of 1862 and other Acts also deal with the crimes of ineiting or engaging in rebellion or insurrection, criminal correspondence with foreign Governments in relation to any disputes or controversies witli the United States, or to defeat the measures of the Government of the United States, seditions, conspiracy, recruiting soldiers or sailors and enlistment to serve against the United States. The Act of 1790 further provides for the delivery to the prisoner of a copy of the indictment and a list of the jurors, for defence by counsel, and for the finding of the indietment within three years after the commission of the treason. Misprision of treason is de- fined to be the crime committed by a person owing allegiance to the United States, and having knowledge of the commission of any crime against them, who conceals and does not as soon as may be disclose and make known the same to the president or to some judge of the United States, or to the governor or to some judge or justice of a particular State. The punishment is imprisonment for not more than seven years and a fine of not more than 1000 dollars (see Revised Statutes, §§ 1033, 1034, 1048, 5331-5338; Story, Constitution of the United States, §§ 1296-1301, 1796-1802). Treason against the United States cannot be inquired into by any State court, but the States may, and some of them have, their own constitutions and legislation as to treasons committed against themselves, generally following the lines of the constitution and legislation of the United States. In some cases there are differ- ences whieh are worth notice. Thus the constitution of Massa- chusetts, § 25, declares that no subjeet ought in any case or in any time to be declared guilty of treason by the legislature. The same provision is contained in the constitutions of Vermont, Connecticut, Pennsylvania, Alabama, and others. In some States the erime of treason cannot be pardoned ; in others, as in New York, it may be pardoned by the legislature, and the governor may suspend the sentence until the end of the session of the legislature next following conviction. In some States a person convicted of treason is

disqualified for exercising the franchise. In New York conviction carries with it forfeiture of real estate for the life of the convict and of his goods and chattels. (J. WT.)

TREASURE-TROVE is defined by Blackstone to be money or coin, gold, silver, plate, or bullion found hidden in the earth or other private place, the owner thereof being unknown. This definition is simply an extension of the Roman law definition of thesaurus inventus as an ancient deposit of money (vetus depositio pecunie) found by accident and without actual search. The right to treasure- trove was not, however, the same in Roman and English law. The former at its latest stage divided it between the finder and the owner of the land on which it was found, except where it was found on public or imperial property, when one-half went to the fisc. Ifa man found treasure on his own land, he had a right to the whole. The rights of the crown, modified by those of the feudal lord, gradu- ally became more extensive in the feudal law of Europe, so much so as to become, in the words of Grotius, " jus commune et quasi gentium." In more recent times there has been a return, at any rate in the case of France, to the division made by the Roman law. In England the com- mon law, which at one time apparently conferred treasure- trove, wherever found, upon the finder, now gives it all to the king, in accordance with the maxim "quod uullius est fit domini regis." This is always provided that the owner cannot be known or discovered. If he can be, he and not the king is entitled to it.

A right to treasure-trove may be granted by the British crown as a FRANCHISE (g.v.). It is the duty of one finding treasure to make it known to the coroner. By the statute De Officio Coronatoris (4 Edw. I. st. 2), the coroner is to inquire of treasure that is found, who were the finders and likewise who is suspected thereof, and that may be well perceived where one liveth riotously, haunting taverns, and hath done so of long time. Concealment of treasure- trove is a mlisdemeanour at common law. There can be no lareeny

of it until it has been found by the coroner to be the property of the crown. The Home Office has recently issued a notification

modifying the existing regulations so far as to permit the finders of coins and antiquities coming under the description of treasure- trove to retain

artieles not actually required for national institu- tions, and the sum received from such institutions as the antiquarian value of any articles retained, subject to a deduction of 20 per,cent. from the antiquarian value of the objects retained and 10 per cent. from the value of other objects. In the United States treasure- trove is usually vested in the State as bona vacantia. Louisiana follows the French Code Civil, and gives half to the finder and half to the landowner. The importance of treasure-trove in India led to the passing of the Indian Treasure-Trove Act (Act vi. of 1878). It provides that treasure is to be delivered to the finder if no owner appears. If the owner can be found, three-fourths go to the finder and one-fourth to the owner, power being reserved to the Govern- ment to acquire it by payment of a sum equal to one-fifth more than the value of the material.

TREATIES. 1. A treaty is a contract between two or Termino-

more states. The term “ tractatus,” and its derivatives, though of occasional occurrence in this sense from the 13th century onwards, only began to be commonly so employed, in lieu of the older technical terms “conventio publica,” or ‘“‘fcedus,” from the end of the 17th century. In the language of modern diplomacy the term “ treaty” is re- stricted to the more important international agreements, especially to those which are the work of a congress, while agreements dealing with subordinate questions are de- scribed by the more general term “convention.” The present article will disregard this distinction.

2. Tlie making and the observance of treaties is neces- Anti- sarily a very early phenomenon in the history of civilization, quity.

and the theory of treaties was one of the first departments of international law to attract attention. Treaties are recorded on the monuments of Egypt and Assyria ; they occur in the Old Testament Scriptures; and questions arising under owOjKa and “foedera” occupy much space in the Greek and Roman historians.1

3. Treaties have been classified on many principles, Classifica of which it will suffice to mention the more important. A tion.

‘personal treaty,” having reference to dynastic interests, is contrasted with a “real treaty,” which binds the nation irrespectively of constitutional changes ; treaties creating outstanding obligations are opposed to “ transitory con- ventions,” e.g., for cession of territory, recognition of inde- pendence, and the like, which operate irrevocably once for all, leaving nothing more to be done by the contracting parties ; and treaties in the nature of a definite transaction (Kechtsgeschdft) are opposed to those which aim at estab- lishing a general rule of conduct (Rechtssatz). With refer- ence to their objects, treaties may perhaps be conveniently classified as (1) political, including treaties of peace, of alliance, of cession, of boundary, for creation of inter- national servitudes, of neutralization, of guarantee, of submission to arbitration ; (2) commercial, including con- sular and fishery conventions, and slave trade aud naviga- tion treaties ; (3) confederations for special social objects, such as the Zollverein, the Latin monetary union, and the still wider unions with reference to posts, telegraphs, sub- marine cables, and weights and measures; (4) relating to criminal justice, ¢g., to extradition and arrest of fugitive seamen ; (5) relating to civil justice, e.g., to the protection of trade-mark and copyright, to the execution of foreign Judgments, to the reception of evidence, and to actions by and against foreigners ; (6) providing general rules for the conduct of warfare, e.g., the declaration of Paris and the convention of Geneva. It must be remarked that it is not always possible to assign a treaty wholly to one or other of the above classes, since many treaties contain in com- bination clauses referable to several of them.

1 For the eelebrated treaty of 509 B.c. between Rome and Carthage, see Polybius iii. 22; and, on the subject generally, Barbeyrac’s full but very uneritical Histoire des Anciens Traitéz, 1739; Miiller- Jochmus, Geschichte des Vilkerrechts im Alterthum, 1848; BE. Egger,

Ftudes Historiques sur les Traités Publics chez les Grees et chez les Romains, new ed., 1866,

fi

Ana- logies.

Requi- sites.

PRE ATPES

4. The analogy between treaty-making and legislation is striking when a congress agrees upon general principles which are afterwards accepted by a large number of states, as, for instance, in the case of the Geneva convention for improving the treatment of the wounded. Many political treaties containing “transitory” conventions, with reference to recognition, boundary, or cession, become, as it were, the title-deeds of the nations to which they relate! But the closest analogy of a treaty is to a contract in private law, as will appear fron the immediately following paragraphs.

5. The making of a valid treaty implies several re- quisites. (1) It must be made between competent parties, 2.€., sovereign states. A “concordat,” to which the pope, as a spiritual authority, is one of the parties, is therefore not a treaty, nor isa convention between a state and an individual, nor a convention between the rulers of two states with reference to their private affairs. Semi- sovereign states, such as San Marino or Egypt, may make conventions upon topics within their limited competence. It was formerly alleged that an infidel state could not be a party to a treaty. The question where the treaty- making power resides in a given state is answered by the municipal law of that state. It usually resides in the executive, though sometimes, as in the United States, it is shared by the legislature, or by a branch of it. (2) There must be an expression of agreement. This is not (as in private law) rendered voidable by duress ; e.g., the cession of a province, though extorted by overwhelming force, is nevertheless unimpeachable. Duress to the individual negotiator would, however, vitiate the effect of his signa- ture. (3) From the nature of the case, the agreement of states, other than those the government of which is auto- cratic, must be signified by means of agents, whose authority is either express, as in the case of plenipoten- tiaries, or implied, as in the case of, e.g., military and naval commanders for matters, such as truces, capitulations, and cartels, which are necessarily confided to their discretion. When an agent acts in excess of his implied authority he is said to make no treaty, but a mere “sponsion,” which, unless adopted by his Government, does not bind it, e., the affair of the Caudine Forks (Livy, ix. 5) and the con- vention of Closter Seven in 1757. (4) Unlike a contract in private law, a treaty, even though made in pursuance of a full power, is, according to modern views, of no effect till it

is ratified. (5) No special form is necessary for a treaty, which in theory may be made without writing. It need not even appear on the face of it to be a contract between the parties, but may take the form of a joint declaration, or of an exchange of notes. Latin was at one time the language usually employed in treaties, and con- tinued to be so employed toa late date by the emperor and the pope. ‘Treaties to which several European powers of different nationalities are parties are now usually drawn up in French (the use of which became general in the time of Louis XIV.), but the final act of the congress of Vienna contains a protest against the use of this language being considered obligatory. A great European treaty usually commences ‘“‘In the name of the Most Holy and Indivisible Trinity,” or, if the Porte is a party, “In the name of Almighty God.” (6) It is sometimes said that a treaty must have a lawful object, but the danger of accepting such a statement is apparent from the use which has been made of it by writers who deny the validity of any cession of national territory, or even go so far as to lay down, with Fiore, that “all should be regarded as void which are in any way opposed to the development of the free activity of a nation, or which hinder the exercise of its natural rights.” (7) The making of a treaty is some-

NS) EE ee 1 Qf, Sir Edward Hertslet’s very useful collection entitled The Map

of Europe by Treaty, 1875.

dol

times accompanied by acts intended to secure its better performance. The taking of oaths, the assigning of ‘‘con- servatores pacis,” and the giving of hostages are now obsolete, but revenue is mortgaged, territory is pledged, and treaties of guarantee are entered into for this purpose.

6. A “ transitory convention ” operates at once, leaving no duties to be subsequently performed, but with reference to conventions of other kinds questions arise as to the duration of the obligation created by them, in other words, as to the moment at which those obligations come to an end. This may occur by the dissolution of one of the contracting states, by the object-matter of the agreement ceasing to exist, by full performance, by performance be- coming impossible, by lapse of the time for which the

agree- ment was made, by contrarius consensus or mutual release, by “denunciation” by one party under a power reserved in the treaty. By a breach on either side the treaty usually becomes, not void, but voidable. A further cause of the termination of treaty obligations is a total change of circumstances, since a clause “‘rebus sic stantibus” is said to be a tacit condition in every treaty.2. Such a conten- tion can only be very cautiously admitted. It has been put forward by Russia in justification of her repudiation of the clauses of the treaty of Paris neutralizing the Black Sea, and of her engagements as to Batoum contained in the treaty of Berlin. The London protocol of 1871, with a view to prevent such abuses, lays down, perhaps a little too broadly, “that it is an essential principle of the law of nations that no power can liberate itself from the engagements of a treaty, nor modify the stipulations thereof, unless with the consent of the contracting powers, by means of an amicable arrangement.” Treaties are in most cases suspended, if not terminated, by the outbreak of a war between the contracting parties, and are therefore usually revived in express terms in the treaty of peace.

7. The rules for the interpretation of treaties are not so different from those applicable to contracts in private law as to need here a separate discussion.

8. Collections of treaties are either (i.) general or (ii.) national.

(i.) The first to publish a general collection of treaties was Leibnitz, whose Codex Juris Gentium, containing documents from 1097 to 1497, ‘‘ea que sola inter liberos populos legum sunt loco,” appeared in 1698, and was followed in 1700 by the Mantissa. The Corps Universel Diplomatique du Droit des Gens of Dumont, con- tinued by Barbeyrac and Rousset in thirteen folio volumes, con- taining treaties from 815 A.D. to 1730, was published in 1726-39. Wenck’s Corpus Juris Gentium Recentissimi, 3 vols. 8vo, 1781-95, contains treaties from 1735 to 1772. The 8vo Recueil of G. F. de Martens, continued by C. de Martens, Saalfeld, Murhard, Samwer, Hopf, and Stoerk, commenced in 1791 with treaties of 1761, and is still in progress. The series in 1887 extended to sixty-four volumes. See also the following periodical publications:—Das Staatsarchiv, Sammlung der officiellen Actenstiiche zur Geschichte der Gegenwart, Leipsic, commencing in 1861; Archives Diplo- matiques, Stuttgart, since 1821;

Archives Diplomatiques, Reeucil Mensuel de Diplomatie et d' Histoire, Paris, since 1861; and Herts- let's British and Forcign State Papers, from the termination of the War of 1814 to the latest period, compiled at the Foreign Office by the Librarian and Keeper of the Papers, London, since 1819, and still in progress.

(ii.) The more important collections of national treaties are those of M. Neumann and M. de Plassan for Austria, 1855-84; Beutner for the German empire, 1883; Calvo for ''l'Amérique Latine," 1862-69 ; De Clereq for France, 1864-86 ; De Garcia de la Vega for Belgium, 1850-83; Lagemans for the Netherlands, 1858-82; Soutzo for Greece, 1858 ; Count Solar de la Marguerite for Sardinia, 1836-61 ; De Castro for Portugal, 1856-79 ; Rydberg for Sweden, 1877 ; Kaiscr (1861) and Eichmann (1885) for Switzer- land ; Baron de Testa (1864-82) and Aristarchi Bey (1873-74) for Turkey ; F. de Martens for Russia, 1874-85 ; Mayers for China, 1877. The official publication for Italy begins in 1864, for Spain in 1843, for Denmark in 1874. The treaties of Japan were pub- lished by authority in 1884. Those of the United States are con-

tained in the Statutcs at Large of the United States, and in the ee

"2 Of, Bynkershoek, Quest. Jur. Pub., ii. c. 10.

Duration.

Interpre- tation.

Collec-

tions :

general ;

national.

collections of J. Elliott (1884) and H. Minot (1844-50); see also Mr Bancroft Davis's Notes upon the Treatics of the United States with other

Powers, preceded by a List of the Treaties and Conventions with Foreign Powers, chronologically arranged, and followed by an Analytical Index and a Synoptical Index of the Treaties, 1873. In England no treaties were published before the 17th century, such matters being thought ‘“‘not fit to be made vulgar.” The treaty of 1604 with Spain was, however, published by authority, as were many of the treaties of the Stuart kings. Rymer’s Federa was published, under the orders of the Government, in twenty volumes, from 1704 to 1732. Treaties are officially published at the present day in the London Gazette, and are also presented to parliament, but for methodical collections of treatics made by Great Britain we are indebted to private enterprise, which pro- duced three volumes in 1710-18, republished with a fourth vol- ume in 1732. Other three volumes appeared in 1772-81, the collection commonly known as that of C. Jenkinson (8 vols.) in 1785, and that of Chalmers (2 vols.) in 1795. J. Macgregor pub- lished (1841-44) eight volumes of commercial treaties, but the great collection of the commercial treaties of Great Britain is that of L. Hertslet, librarian of the Foreign Office, continued by his son and successor in office, Sir Edward Hertslet, entitled 4 Complete Collec- tion of the Treaties and Conventions and Reciprocal Regulations at present subsisting between Great Britain and Foreign Powers, and of the Laws and Orders in Council concerning the same, so far as they relate to Commerce and Navigation, the Slave Trade, Post Office, &c., and to the Privileges and Interests of the Subjects of the Contracting Parties, 1820-86,16 vols. Sir Edward Hertslet also com- menced in 1875 a series of volumes containing T’reaties and Tariffs regulating the Trade between Britain and Foreign Nations, and Extracts of Treaties between Foreign Powers, containing the Most Favoured Nation Clauses applicable to Great Britain. The treaties affecting British India are officially set out, with historical notes, in A Collection of Treaties, Engagements, and Sannuds relating to India and Neighbouring Countries, by C. W. Aicheson. This work, with the index, extends to eight volumes, which appcared at Calcutta in 1862-66.

TIES

(ii.) For the innumerable conventions to which Great commer.

Britain is a party as to commerce, consular jurisdiction, fisheries, and the slave trade, it must suffice to refer to the exhaustive and skilfully devised index to Hertslet's Commercial Treaties, forming volume xvi., 1885.

(iii.) The social intercourse of the world is facilitated by conventions, such as those establishing the Latin monetary union, 1865; the international telegraphic union, 1865; the universal postal union, 1874; the international bureau of weights and measures, 1875; and providing for the protection of submarine cables in time of peace, 1884. Such treaties are somewhat misleadingly spoken of by recent writers (L. von Stein and F. de Martens) as con- stituting a "' droit administratif international."

(iv.) The following are the now operative treaties of as to ex-

extradition to which Great Britain is a party:—with the United States, 1842; Brazil and Germany, 1872; Austria, Denmark, Italy, Norway and Sweden, 1873 ; Hayti and Netherlands, 1874; Belgium and France, 1876 ; Spain, Portugal (as to India only), 1878 ; Tonga, 1879 ; Luxemburg, Equador, and Switzerland, 1880 ; Salvador, 1881; Uruguay, 1884; Guatemala, 1885; Russia, 1886. It will be observed that all these, except the treaty with the United States, are subsequent to and governed by the provisions of 33 and 34 Vict. c. 52, "The Extradition Act, 1870." Before the passing of this general Act, it had been necessary to pass a special Act for giving effect to each treaty of extradition. The most complete collec- tion of treaties of extradition is that of F. J. Kirchner, L?Extradition, Recueil, dc., London, 1883.

List of 9. It may be worth while to add a list of some of the (v.) General conventions, to which most of the Euro-as to import- more important treaties, now wholly or partially in force, pean states are parties, were signed in 1883 at Paris for Copyright, fee especially those to which Great Britain is a party, classified | the protection of industrial, and in 1886 at Bern for the *™? " according to their objects, in the order suggested in para- | protection of literary and artistic, property. graph 3. (vi.) Certain bodies of rules intended to mitigate the as to the political; (i) The principal treaties affecting the distribution of | horrors of war have received the adhesion of most civilized conduct

ot war~

states. Thus the declaration of Paris, 1856 (to which, pare however, the United States, Spain, Mexico, Venezuela,

territory between the various states of Central Europe are those of Westphalia (Osnabriick and Miinster), 1648;

Utrecht, 1713; Paris and Hubertsburg, 1763; for the parti- tion of Poland, 1772, 1793; Vienna, 1815; London, for the separation of Belgiuin from the Netherlands, 1831, 1839 ‘ Zurich, for the cession of a portion of Lombardy to Sardinia, 1859; Vienna, as to Schleswig-Holstein, 1864; Prague, whereby the German Confederation was dissolved, Austria recognizing the new North German Confederation, trans- ferring to Prussia her rights over Schleswig-Holstein, and ceding the remainder of Lombardy to Italy, 1866 ; Frank- fort, between France and the new German empire, 1871. The disintegration of the Ottoman empire has been regu- lated by the great powers, or some of them, in the treaties of London, 1832, 1863, 1864, and of Constantinople, 1881, with reference to Greece ; and by the treaties of Paris, 1856 ; London, 1871 ; Berlin, 1878 ; London, 1883, with reference to Montenegro, Roumania, Servia, Bulgaria, and the navigation of the Danube. The encroachments of Russia upon Turkey, previous to the Crimean War, are registered in a series of treaties beginning with that of Kutchuk-Kainardji, 1774, and ending with that of Adrian- ople in 1829. The independence of the United States of America was acknowledged by Great Britain in the treaty of peace signed at Paris in 1783. The boundary between the United States and the British possessions is regulated in details by the treaties of Washington of 1842, 1846, 1871. Switzerland, Belgium, Corfu and Paxo, and Lux- emburg are respectively neutralized by the treaties of Vienna, 1815, and of London, 1839, 1864, 1867.

Columbia, Bolivia, and Uruguay have declined to accede), prohibits the use of privateers and protects the commerce of neutrals ; the Geneva convention, 1864, gives a neutral character to surgeons and hospitals; and the St Peters- burg declaration, 1868, prohibits the employment of ex- plosive bullets weighing less than 400 grammes.

It were greatly to be wished that the official publication of treaties could be rendered more speedy and more methodical than it now is. The labours of the publicist would also be much lightened were it possible to con- solidate the various general collections of diplomatic acts into a new Corps Diplomatique Universel, well furnished with cross references, and with brief annotations showing how far each treaty is supposed to be still in force.

10. In addition to the works already citcd in the course of this Litera- article the following are for various reasons important :—Joh. Lupus, ture.

De Confederatione Principum, Strasburg, 1511 (the first published monograph upon the subject); Bodinus, Dissertatio de Contractibus Summarum Potestatum, Halle, 1696; Neyron, De Vi Foderum inter Gentes, Gott., 1778; Neyron, Hssai Historique et Politique sur les Garanties, &c., Gott., 1797; Wachter, De Modis Tollendi Pacta inter Gentes, Stuttg., 1780; Dresch, Ucber die Dawer der Volkervertrdége, Landshut, 1808; C. Bergbohm, Staatsvertriige und Gesetze als Quellen des Volkerrechts, Dorpat, 1877; Jellinek, Die rechtliche Natur der Statenvertridgen, Vienna, 1880; Holzen- dorff, Handbuch des Volkerrechts, vol. iii., 1887. On the history of the great European treaties generally, see the Histoire Abrégée des Traités de Paia entre les Puissances de 0 Europe, by Koch, as recast and continued by Schéll, in 1817 and 1818, and again by Count de Garden in 1848-59; as also the Recueil Manuel of De Martens and Cussy, now continued by Geffcken. For the peacc of West- phalia Piitter’s Geist des westphilischen Friedens, 1795, is useful; for the congress of Vienna, Kliiber’s Acten des Wiener Congresses, 1815-19, and Le Congres de Vienne et les Traités de 1815, précédé des Conférences de Dresde, de Prague, et de Chatillon, suivi des Congrés d’ Aiu-la-Chapelle, Troppau, Laybach, et Vérone, by Count

TR E—

Angeberg. The last-mentioned writer has also published collec- tions of treaties relating to Poland, 1762-1862; to the Italian question, 1859; to the congress of Paris, 1856, and the revision of its work by the conference of London, 1871; and to the Franco- German War of 1870-71. For the treaties regulating the Eastern question, see The European Concert in the Eastern

Question, by T. E. Holland, 1885, and La Turquie et le Tanzimat, by E. Engelhardt, 1882-84, (DERE)

TREBIZOND, in Greek Trapezus, a city of Asia Minor, situated on the Black Sea, near its south-eastern angle, from the time of its foundation as a Greek colony to the present day has always been a considerable emporium of commerce, and at one time was for two centuries and a half the capital of an empire. Its importance is due to its geographical position, because it commands the point where the chief and most direct trade route from Persia and Central Asia to Europe, over the tableland of Armenia by Bayazid and Erzeroum, descends to the sea. Its safety also was secured by the barrier of rugged mountains which separates its district from the rest of Asia Minor, rising to the height of 7000 or 8000 feet above the sea-level. So complete is the watershed that no streams pass through these ranges, and there is hardly any communication in this direction between the interior of Asia Minor and the coast. For the same reason, together with its northern aspect, the climate is humid and temperate, and favourable to the growth of vegetation, unlike that of the inland regions, which are exposed to great extremes of heat in summer and cold in winter. The position which was occupied by the Hellenic and medieval city is a sloping table of ground (whence the original name of the place, Trapezus, or the “ Tableland”), which falls in steep rocky precipices on the two sides, where two deep valleys, de- scending from the interior, run parallel at no great distance from one another down to the sea. The whole is still inclosed by the Byzantine walls, which follow the line of the cliffs, and are carried along the sea-face ; and the upper part of the level, which is separated from the lower by an inner cross wall, forms the castle; while at the highest point, where a sort of neck is formed between the two valleys, is the keep which crowns the whole. The fortifications and their surroundings are singularly pictur- esque, for the towers, some round, some angular, which project from them are in many cases covered with creepers, and the gardens that occupy the valleys below teem with luxuriant vegetation. On each side, about half-way be- tween the keep and the sea, these ravines are crossed by massive bridges, and on the further side of the western- most of these, away from the city, a large tower and other fortifications remain, which must have served to defend the approach from that quarter. The area of the ancient city is now called the Kaleh, and is inhabited by the Turks ; eastward of this is the extensive Christian quarter,

and beyond this again a low promontory juts northward into the sea, partly covered with the houses of a well-built suburb, which is the principal centre of commerce. The harbour lies on the eastern side of this promontory, but it is an unsafe roadstead, being unprotected towards the north-east, and having been much silted up, so that vessels cannot approach within a considerable distance of the shore. The neighbourhood of this is the liveliest portion of the city, as it is from here that the caravans start for Persia, and at certain periods of the year long trains of camels may be seen, and Persian merchants conspicuous by their high black caps and long robes. The total population of the place is estimated at 32,000, of whom 2000 are Armenians, 7000 or 8000 Greeks, and the rest Turks.

The city of Trapezus was a colony of Sinope, but it first comes into notice at the time of the Retreat of the Ten Thousand, who found repose there. Notwithstanding its commercial importance,

the remoteness of its position prevented it from being much known to fame eithcr in the Hellenic or the early medieval period ;

its greatness dates from the time of the fourth crusade (1204), when the Byzantine empire was dismembered and _ its capital occupied by the Latins. During the confusion that followed that event a scion of the imperial family of the Comneni, called Alexius, escaped into Asia, and, having collected an army of Iberian mercenaries, entered Trebizond, where he was acknowledged as the legitimate sovereign, and assumed the title of Grand Comnenus. Though only twenty-two years of age, Alexius was a man of ability and resolute will, capable of establishing order in a time of anarchy; and thus he succeeded without difficulty in making himself master of the greater part of the southern coast of the Black Sea. The empire that was thus founded continued to exist until 1461, when the city was taken by Mohammed II., eight ycars after he had captured Constantinople. The cause of this long duration, and at the same time the secret of its history, is to be found in the isolated position of Trebizond and its district,.between the moun- tains and the sea, which has already been described. By this means it was able to defy both the Seljiks and the Ottomans, and to maintain its independence against the emperors of Nica and Constantinople. But for the same reason its policy was always narrow, so that it never exercised any beneficial influence on the world at large. It was chiefly in the way of matrimonial alliances that it was brought into contact with other states. The imperial family were renowned for their beauty, and the princesses of this race were sought as brides by Byzantine emperors of the dynasty of the Palzologi, by Western nobles, and by Mohammedan princes; and the connexions thus formed originated a variety of diplomatic relations and friendly or offensive alliances. The palace of Trebi- zond was famed for its magnificence, the court for its luxury and elaborate ceremonial, while at the same time it was frequently a hotbed of intrigue and immorality. The Grand Comneni were also patrons of art and learning, and in consequence of this Trebi- zond was resorted to by many eminent men, by whose agency the library of the palace was provided with valuable manuscripts and the city was adorned with splendid buildings. The writers of the time speak with enthusiasm of its lofty towers, of the churches and monasteries in the suburbs, and especially of the gardens, orehards, and olive groves. It excited the admiration of Gonzales Clavijo, the Spanish envoy, when he passed through it on his way to visit the court of Timur at Samarkand (Clavijo, Historia del Gran Tamorlan, p. 84); and Cardinal Bessarion, who was a

native of the place, in the latter part of his life, when the city had passed into the hands of the Mohammedans, and he was himself a dignitary of the Roman Church, so little forgot the im- pression it had made upon him that he wrote a work entitled “The raise of Trebizond” (Eyxdéuiov TpareCodvros), which exists in manuscript at Venice. Little was known of the history of the empire of Trebizond until the subject was taken in hand by Prof. Fallmerayer of Munich, who discovered the chronicle of Michael Panaretus among the books of Cardinal Bessarion, and from that work, and other sources of information which were chiefly unknown up to that time, compiled his Geschichte des Kaiserthums von Lrapezunt (Munich, 1827). Finlay’s account of the period, in the fourth volume of his History of Greece, is based on this. From time to time the emperors of Trebizond paid tribute to the Seljuk sultans of Iconium, to the grand khans of the Mongols, to Timur the Tartar, to the Turcoman chieftains, and to the Ottomans; but by means of skilful negotiations they were enabled practically to secure their independence. We find them also at war with many of these powers, and with the Genoese, who endeavoured to monopolize the commerce of the Black Sea. The city was several times besieged, the most formidable attack being that which occurred in the reign of Andronicus I., the second emperor, when the Seljuks, under the command of Melik, the son of the great sultan Ala-ed-din, first assaulted the northern wall in the direction of the sea, and afterwards endeavoured to storm the upper citadel by night. They failed, however, in both attempts; and in the latter, owing to the darkness, and to the occurrence of a violent storm which suddenly swelled the torrents in the ravines, their force was thrown into inextricable confusion, and they were com- pelled to abandon their camp and make the best of their eseape from the country. So great was the strength of the fortifieations that, when Mohammed II. turned his thoughts towards the subju- gation of this state, he might have experienced much difficulty in reducing it, and might have been disposed to offer favourable terms, had it not been for the pusillanimous conduct of David, the last emperor, who surrendered the place almost unconditionally. Several interesting monuments of this period remain at Trebizond in the form of churches in the Byzantine style of architecture. One of these is within the area of the old city, viz., the chureh of the Panaghia Chrysokephalos, or Virgin of the Golden Head, a large and massive but excessively plain building, which is now the Orta-hissar mosque. On the further side of the eastern ravine stands

a smaller but very well proportioned structure, the church of St Eugenius, the patron saint of Trebizond, now the Yeni Djuma djami, or New Friday mosque. Still more important is the church of Haghia Sophia, which occupics a conspicuous position overlook-

ing the sea, about two miles to the west of the city. The porches of this are handsomely ornamented, and about a hundred feet from it rises a tall campanile, the inner walls of which have been covered in parts with frescos of religious subjects, though these are now much defaced. But the most remarkable memorial of the Middle Ages that exists in all this district is the monastery of Sumelas, which is situated among the mountains, about 25 miles from Trebizond, at the side of a rocky glen, at a height of 4000 feet above the sea. Its position is most extraordinary, for it occupies a cavern in the middle of the face of a perpendicular cliffa thousand feet high, where the white buildings offer a marked contrast to the brown rock which forms their setting. It is approached by a zigzag path at the side of the cliff, from which a flight of stone steps and a wooden staircase give access to the monastery. ‘Dike valley below is filled with the richest vegetation, the undergrowth being largely composed of azaleas and rhododendrons. An antiquity of 1500 years is claimed for the foundation of the monastery, but it is certain that the first person who raised it to importance was the emperor Alexius Comnenus III. of Trebizond; he rebuilt it in 1360, and richly endowed it. The golden bull of that emperor, which became thenceforth the charter of its foundation, is still preserved; it is one of the finest specimens of such documents, and contains portraits of Alexius himself and his queen. The monastery also possesses the firman of Mohammed II. by which he accorded his protection to the monks when he became master of the country. (Gh 1d, Jes)

TREDEGAR, a town of Monmouthshire, England, is situated on the Sirhowy river, and on the London and North Western Railway system, 7 miles east-north-east of Merthyr Tydvil and 249 west of London. The town owes its existence to the establishment in the beginning of the century of the works of the Tredegar Iron and Coal Company, who lease the soil and minerals from Lord Tredegar. The iron-works, chiefly for the smelting of

iron and the manufacture of iron and steel rails, are of enormous extent, and employ upwards of 4000 men. The town is also surrounded by iron and coal mines, the pro- perty of the company. It consists chiefly of workmen's houses, but is built with regularity and neatness, the prin- cipal streets diverging from an open space called the Circle, in the centre of the town, where there are a number of good shops. The church of St George is a tasteful modern building in the Norman style. The temperance hall, union workhouse, and literary institute and library deserve notice. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 7029 acres), a small portion of which is in Brecknockshire, in 1871 was 16,989 and in 1881 it was bese

TREE-CREEPER, one of the smallest of British birds, and, regard being had to its requirements, one very gene- rally distributed. It is the Certhia familiaris of ornitho- logy, and remarkable for the stiffened shafts of its long and pointed tail-feathers, aided by which, and by its com- paratively large feet, it- climbs nimbly, in a succession of jerks, the trunks or branches of trees, invariably proceed- ing upwards or outwards and generally in a spiral direc- tion, as it seeks the small insects that are hidden in the bark and form its chief food. When in the course of its search it nears the end of a branch or the top of a trunk, it flits to another, always alighting lower down than the place it has left, and so continues its work.

Inconspicuous in colour, for its upper plumage is mostly of various shades of brown mottled with white, buff, and tawny, and beneath it is of a silvery white, the Tree-Creeper is far more common than the incurious suppose; but, attention once drawn to it, it can be frequently seen and at times heard, for though a shy singer its song is loud and sweet. The nest is neat, generally placed in a chink formed by a half-detached piece of bark, which secures it from observation, and a considerable mass of material is commonly used to partly stuff up the opening and give a sure foundation for the tiny cup, in which are laid from six to nine eggs of a translucent white, spotted or blotched with rust-colour. The Tree-Creeper inhabits almost the whole of Europe as well as Algeria, and has been traced across Asia to Japan. It is now recognized as an inhabitant of the greater part of North America, though for a time examples from that part of the world, which differed slightly in the tinge of the plumage, were accounted a distinct species (C. americana), and even those from Mexico and Guatemala (C.

mexicana) have lately been referred to the same. It therefore occupies an area not exceeded in extent by that of many Passerine birds, and is one of the strongest witnesses to the close alliance of the so-called Nearctic and Palearctic Regions.

Allied to the Tree-Creeper, but wanting its lengthened and stiff tail-feathers, is the genus Tichodroma, the single member of which is the Wall-Creeper (7. muraria) of the Alps and some other mountainous parts of Europe and Asia, and occasionally seen by the fortunate visitor to Switzerland fluttering like a big butterfly against the face of a rock, conspicuous from the scarlet-crimson of its wing-coverts aud its white spotted primaries. Its bright hue is hardly visible when the bird is at rest, and it then presents a dingy appearance of grey and black. Itis a species of wide range, ex- tending from Spain to China; and, though but seldom leaving its cliffs, it has wandered even so faras England. Merrett (Pinaz, p. 177) in 1667 included it as a British bird, and the correspondence between Marsham and Gilbert White (Proc. Norf. and Norw. Nat. Society, ii. p. 180) proves that an example was shot in Norfolk, 30th October 1792; while another is reported (Zoologist, ser. 2, p. 4839) to have been killed in Lancashire, 8th May 1872.

The genus Certhia as founded by Linnzeus contained 25 species, all of which, except the two above mentioned, have now been shewn to belong elsewhere ; and for a long while so many others were referred to it that it became a most heterogeneous company. At present, so few are the forms left in the Family Certhude that systematists are not wanting to unite it with the Sittide (cf. NurHatcn), for the two groups, however much their extreme members may differ, are linked by so many forms which still exist that little violence is done to the imagination by drawing upon the past for others to complete the series of descend- ants from a common and not very remote ancestor, one that was possibly the ancestor of the WRENS (q.v.) as well. One thing, however, has especially to be noticed here. The Certhiide have not the least affinity to the Picidx (cf. WoopPECKER, infra), but are strictly Passerine, though the Australian genus Climacteris may possibly not belong to them. Ca)

TREE-FERN. In old and well-grown specimens of some of the familiar ferns of our temperate climates the wide-spreading crown of fronds may be observed to rise at a distance often of a good many inches above the surface of the ground, and from a stem of considerable thickness. The common male fern Mephrodium (Lastrxa) furnishes the commonest instance of this ; higher and thicker trunks are, however, occasionally presented by the royal fern (Osmunda regalis), in which a height of 2 feet may be attained, and this with very considerable apparent thick- ness, due, however, to the origin and descent of a new series of adventitious roots from the bases of each annual set of fronds. Some tropical members and allies of these genera become more distinctly tree-like, e.g., Zodea ; Pteris also has some sub-arboreal forms. Oleandra is branched and shrub-like, while Angiopteris and Marattia (Marat- tiacex) may also rise to 2 feet or more. But the tree-ferns proper are practically included within the family Cyathe- acee. This includes five genera (Cyathea, Alsophila, Hemitelia, Dicksonia, Balantium) and nearly 200 species, of which a few are herbaceous, but the majority arboreal and palm-like, reaching frequently a height of 50 feet or more, Alsophila excelsa of Norfolk Island having some- times measured 60 to 80 feet. The fronds are rarely simple or simply pinnate, but usually tripinnate or decom- pound, and may attain a length of 20 feet, thus forming a splendid crown of foliage. The stem may occasionally branch into many crowns. The genera are of wide geo- graphical range, mostly of course within the tropics of the Old and New World ; but South Australia, New Zealand, and the Southern Pacific islands all possess their tree-ferns. In Tasmania Alsophila australis has been found up to the snow-level, and in the humid and mountainous regions of the tropics tree-ferns are also found to range up to a con- siderable altitude. The fronds may either contribute to the apparent thickness of the stem by leaving more or less

of their bases, which become hardened and persistent, or they may be articulated to the stem and fall off, leaving characteristic scars in spiral series upon the stem. The stem is frequently much increased in apparent thickness by the downgrowth of aerial roots, forming a black coating several inches or even a foot in thickness, but its essential structure differs little in principle from that familiar in the rhizome of the common bracken

(Pteris). To the ring or rather netted cylinder of fibro-vascular bundles character- istic of all fern stems scattered internal as well as external bundles arising from these are superadded ; and in a tree- fern these are of course in greater numbers. The outer bundles give off branches to the descending roots from the region where they pass into the leaves.

Tree-ferns are of course cultivated for their beauty alone; a few, however, are of some economic applications, chiefly as sources of starch. Thus the beautiful Alsophila excelsa of Norfolk Island is said to be threatened with extinction for the sake of its sago-like pith, which is greedily eaten by hogs; Cyathea medullaris also furnishes a kind of sago to the natives of New Zealand, Queens- land, aud the Pacific islands. A Javanese species of Dicksonia (D. chrysotricha) furnishes silky hairs, which have been imported as a styptic, and the long silky or rather woolly hairs, so abundant on the stem and frond-leaves in the various specics of Cibotiwm, have not only been put to a similar use, but in the Sandwich Islands furnish wool for stuffing mattresses and cushions, which was formerly an article of export. The ‘‘Tartarian lamb,” or Agnus scythicus of old travellers’ tales in China and Tartary, is simply the woolly stock of C. Barometz, which, when dried and inverted and all save four of its frond-stalks cut away, has a droll resemblance to a toy sheep.

See Fern; J. Smith, Historia Filicum; Luerssen, Med. Pharm. Botanik; and

pa the structure of the stem, De Bary’s Vergleich. Anatomie d, Phanerog. u. ‘arne.

TREGELLES, Samvet Pripgavx (1813-1875), New Testament scholar, was born at Wodehouse Place, near Falmouth, on January 30, 1813. His parents were Quakers, and he himself for many years was in communion with the (Darbyite) Plymouth Brethren, but latterly he became a member of the Church of England. He was educated at Falmouth grammar school, and afterwards, without having attended any university, held various modest educational appointments, but finally devoted himself entirely to a laborious student life, until he was incapacitated for literary work by paralysis in 1870. He died at Plymouth on April 24, 1875.

Most of his numerous publications had reference to his great critical edition of the New Testament (see BIBLE, vol. ili. p. 648). They include an Accownt of the Printed Text of the Greek New Testament (1854), a new edition of Horne's Introduction (1860), and Canon Muratorianus: Earliest Catalogue of Books of the New Testament (1868). As early as 1844 he published an edition of the Apocalypse, with the Greek text so revised as to rest almost entirely upon ancient evidence. Tregelles wrote Heads of Hebrew Grammar (1852), translated Gesenius's Hebrew Lexicon, and was the author of a little work on the Jansenists (1851) and of various works in exposition of his special eschatological views (Remarks on the Prophetic Visions of Daniel, 1852, new ed. 1864).

TREMATODA, popularly known as "flukes," form one of the three main divisions of the flatworms or Platyhel- minthes. They have been defined thus (Jackson, 1) :1—

'"'Unisegmental Vermes, with a flattish, leaf-like, more or less cylindrical body provided with organs of adhesion in the shape of suckers and sometimes of chitinoid hooks. The cuticle, so called, appears to be a metamorphosed layer of cells. There is a well-developed nervous system, the ganglia of which are entirely supra-pharyngeal, 2.e., dorsal. There is a mouth, and an alimentary canal which is usually forked, but no anus. The excretory system has the form of more or less branching tubes commencing with flame- cells, and either ending in a contractile vesicle or opening by two independent orifices. Hermaphrodite self-impreg- nation occurs, as well as reciprocal impregnation. The embryo either develops direct into the sexual form (mono- genetic 7''rematoda) or gives origin to a series of inter-

1 These figures refer to the bibliography at the end of the article.

mediate non-sexual dimorphic forms (digenetic 7'rematoda). Parasitic."

Llistorical Sketch.—Some of the more salient points in the history of our knowledge of these animals have already been alluded to in the article Parasirism (q.v.); a few additional facts must, however, be mentioned here. The Trematoda were first formed into a group by Rudolphi (2), who included in it the following genera :—dMonostoma, Amphistoma, Distoma, Tristoma, Pentastoma, and Poly- stoma ; the name had reference to the

suckers, which Rudolphi regarded as being for the most part openings into the body (Gr. tpjya, an aperture). Some of these forms were soon perceived to have but small connexion with the others; and Cuvier (8) reduced the whole to one genus, for which he adopted the name Fasciola, Linn. The Pentastomes have since been transferred to the ARACHNIDA (qg.v.).

Our scientific acquaintance with the group may be said to date from 1831, when Mehlis noticed that the eggs of certain Distomes hatched into a minute ciliated body with an eye-speck resembling an Infusorian, an observation which gave the key to the life-history of these forms. Von Siebold in 1835 (4) supplemented this discovery by the observation that the ciliated embryo of donostomum mutabile contained, as a “necessary parasite,” as it was termed, an organism identical with the ‘“ kingsyellow worm” (#edia), found by Bojanus in pond-snails, and Von Baer had previously shown (5) that these gave rise to free-swimming organisms not unlike tailed Trematodes. The materials were thus ready to hand for a co-ordination of the whole life-history, and Steenstrup recognized it as an instance of the so-called “alternation of generations ” (6). These researches received important additions at the hands of Pagenstecher (7) and others, who showed experi- mentally that encysted Distomes grow mature directly after their transference from one host to another, and thus that a migration is necessary to the attainment of their mat- urity. Diesing’s great work (8) appeared in 1850, and has formed the groundwork of all subsequent treatises on the systematic arrangement of parasitic worms, although it included forms which really belong to quite different groups. In 1861 Van Beneden gained a prize offered by the French Academy by his elaborate memoir on the intes- tinal worms (9), in which he not only described many new and interesting forms, but gave anatomical details regard- ing others previously known, and entered into detailed comparisons between the Cestodes and Trematodes, both in their adult and immature states. Of recent years the chief additions to our knowledge have been more in the direction of further details regarding the structure and life-history of special forms than the elaboration of new general principles.

Anatomy.—In endeavouring to give a very bricf account of the more salient points in the anatomy of the Z’rematoda it has been thought expedient to select some well-known form as a type, and afterwards to indicate the

characters in which other species differ from it ; for this purpose the common liver-fluke, Hasciola (Distomumr)' hepatica has been chosen, as it is not unfrequently found in the bile-ducts of sheep and other domestic animals, and constitutes a scourge much dreaded by farmers. The account here given is in the main abstracted from Sommer (10).

External Appearance. —The animal has a flattened oval shape, with a sub-triangular process on the broader end, which represents the head. The total length varies from 20 to 35mm., the breadth from 6to 12mm. On superficial examination two narrower lateral areas may generally be distinguished from a broader median one ; the former are occasionally of a coarsely granular appearance and reddish-brown or orange in colour, and increase in breadth towards the posterior end of the body, where they commonly unite. The median area is commonly greyish-yellow in colour, sometimes spotted with black ; its anterior portion corresponds to the uterus, the posterior to the testes. Two suckers (fig. 1, A, 0, s) are in the middle line of the body; one is at the anterior extremity, and is directed forwards and somewhat downwards ; it is known as the

anterior or oral sucker, being perforated by the cesophagus. The posterior or ventral sucker is situated, as its name implies, on the inferior surface of the body, just behind the head-papilla. The

Fig. 1.—A, Fasciola hepatica, from the ventral surface (X 2); the alimentary and nervous systems only shown on the left side of the figure, the excretory only on the right. a, right main branch of the intestine; c, a diverticulum ; G lateral ganglion ; 7, lateral nerve; 0, mouth; p, pharynx; s, ventral sucker; ¢s, cirrus sac; d, left anterior dorsal excretory vessel; m, main vessel; », left anterior ventral trunk; «, excretory pore, B, Anterior portion more highly magnified (from Marshall and Hurst, after Sommer). cs, cirrus sac; d, ductus ejaculatorius ; , female aperture; o, ovary: od, oviduct; p, penis; s, shell- gland; ¢, anterior testis; w, uterus ; va, vp, vasa deferentia; vs, vesicula semin- alis; y, yolk-glaud; yd, its duct. ©, Genital sinus and neighbouring parts (from dohaaorh 4, ventral sucker; 6, cirrus sac; c, genital pore; d, evaginated cirrus sac (? penis); ¢, end of vagina; /, vasa dcferentia; g, vesicula seminalis; h, ductus ejaculatorius; ¢, accessory gland. D, A

ciliated funnel from the éx- cretory apparatus, highly magnified (from Fraipont.) 0, orifice of the funnel. E, Egg of Fasciola hepatica; x 330 (from Thomas).

suckers measure on an average about 1 mm. in diameter, the ven- tral being slightly the larger. The internal organs communicate with the outer world by four apertures :—(1) the mouth (0), situated at the anterior pole of the body and perforating the oral sucker ; (2) the excretory pore (x), placed at the opposite extremity, and giving exit to the effete products; (8) the porus genitalis (fig. 1, B, p), leading into a sinus into which the ducts of both sets of genital organs open,—it is to be found on the under surface of the head-papilla at or near its centre; (4) the opening of the Laurer-Stieda canal, situated on the dorsal surface of the animal, near the junction of the two portions of the median area,—it is excessively minute and difficult of detection. and leads by a narrow canal into the duct of the yolk-gland.

Internal Structure.—All Trematoda have been commonly re- garded, like other flat-worms, as devoid of a body-cavity (ccelom), and as consisting of parenchymatous tissue, in which the various organs were embedded. Recent researches of Fraipont (15) appear to show, however, that the intercellular spaces in this tissue are to be regarded as the homologue of a celom. The ‘body is enclosed by a complex sheath (cortex), which may be resolved into several layers, which will be discussed in order, proceeding from without inwards. (1) The cuticle, which encloses the whole body, is a thin, pellucid, structureless membrane; at the margin of the mouth it is reflected so as to form a lining for the cesophagus, and similarly at the opening of the genital sinus it passes inwards to form a lining to the vagina. The same phenomenon is observed at the excret- ory aperture. By the application of ammonia the cuticle may be separated from the subjacent tissues and its peculiarities demon- strated; although apparently smooth to the naked eye, it presents under the microscope numerous sharp backwardly directed pro- cesses, each of which encloses a hard stylet-shaped body. These prominences are closely set over the whole body except immediately

around the suckers, extending even into the interior of the sinus genitalis. The cuticle is furthermore perforated by innumerable fine pores, directed

outwards and somewhat backwards. With regard to the homology of the cuticle of Trematodes the same un- certainty prevails as in the case of Cestodes (see TapE- Worms); the general opinion is that it is not comparable with the chitin. ous cuticle of Arthropoda, but is either a s ecially developed base- ment-membrane (Kerbert, 11) or a layer of modified cells (Ziegler, 12, and Schwarze, 18). (2) The outer cellular layer is the matrix of the cuticle. (8) The muscular coat consists of three different layers :—(i.) a thin layer of circular fibres; (ii.) the longitudinal | muscles, which form a series of separate bundles; (iii.) the oblique muscles, confined to the anterior half or third of the body, and crossing so as to form a rhomboidal lattice-wor »—they are espe- cially strong on the anterior ventral aspect of the animal. (4) The inner cellular layer consists of elements which closely resemble those of the outer, but are somewhat larger; they have been mistaken by various observers for cuticular glands. The suckers may be con- sidered as parts of the cortical layer ; speaking generally, each has the form of the segment of a sphere, although the anterior one is shallower at the lower than at the upper margin, and is penetrated by the esophagus. Each consists of three sets of muscles, —a thin outer equatorial layer, a second meridional, and a mass of radially disposed fibres forming the greater part of the substance. It would appear that the function of the first two of these groups is to flatten out the sucker, whilst the radial ones restore its cavity and thus produce a suctorial action. To the ventral sucker are attached a number of muscular fibres belonging to the dorso-ventral system, and in particular a strong bundle, which passes from behind down- wards and forwards.

The digestive system (fig. 1, A), the presence of which furnishes Digestive one of the most characteristic differences between Trematodes and system.

Cestodes, extends throughout the body on a plane between the peripheral nervous and reproductive systems. It has only one aperture, as above- mentioned, in the centre of the anterior sucker. The anterior portion or pharynx, although very short, measuring not much more than 1 mm. in length, is again divisible into two sections. The hinder of these is the larger, and is sometimes spher- oidal but more commonly fusiform in shape ; it has strong muscular walls, which, in conjunction with protractor and retractor muscles, bring about a kind of pumping action whereby nutritive fluids are

taken into the stomach, which name may be applied to the larger posterior section of the alimentary tract, since in it the digestive processes are carried on. The canal, which leads from the posterior end of the pharynx, divides almost immediately into two branches, which diverge at first rapidly and then run almost parallel, as far as the hinder end of the body. Each of these gives off from its outer aspect some 16 or 17 lateral branches ©, which divide and sub- divide till their ramifications fill nearly the whole area of the body. The digestive tract is lined by a layer of simple cells, resembling a cylinder epithelium. These behave towards the blood corpuscles and other contents of the intestine exactly as would a number of Amebx, putting out processes or pseudopodia, which ingest them,— so that, in common with many of the lower Invertebrates, the liver-

•

fluke lives by ‘intracellular digestion” (see Metschnikoff, 14),

The canals of the excretory system (m) may be divided into three Excretory consists of very fine tubules system.

groups. (1) The collecting network which anastomose freely with each other: they are situated on the boundary between the cortical and middle layers, and are therefore visible from either side of the body. (2) Conducting vessels (v, d) receive the contents of this network. Each of these is formed by the union of a larger or smaller number of the delicate canals just described, and after a longer or shorter course opens into the median excretory canal (m). On the way, however, it communicates with the neighbouring vessels, so that a second network is formed, which is distinguished from that of the collecting tubules by the greater size of its meshes and by the fact that it is specially visible from the dorsal surface of the animal. In the head four of these con- ducting vessels arise, which are disposed in two pairs, one situated dorsally and one ventrally. As they pass backwards they receive many branches, the dorsal unites with the ventral of its own side, and the two tubes thus formed unite to constitute the last division of the excretory system. (3) The median vessel (mm) passes along the body for the posterior two-thirds of its length, immediately beneath the dorsal cortical layer. It is widest near the commence- ment, where it measures about 0°5 mm. in diameter, and finally opens at the posterior

extremity of the body. The wall of the excretory apparatus is constituted everywhere by an exceedingly delicate elastic membrane, which exhibits neither a cellular lining nor cilia; furthermore, neither valves nor muscles have been de- monstrated in connexion with it. It contains a thin colourless fluid, in which very small highly refractive drops are suspended. The details of the termination of the excretory system seem to have been first clearly made out by Fraipont (15), who worked upon species in which they are more distinct than in the form now under consideration. The spaces between the round connective- tissue cells of the body are star-shaped in form, and into these the

Repro- ductive organs,

Tre wareo D A

finest excretory tubules, above mentioned, open by funnels (fig. 1, D), into each of which projects a vibratile cilium, thus constituting the so-called ‘‘flamc-cells.” These researches have given rise to numerous differences of opinion, as regards questions both of fact (16) and of priority (17).

The liver-fluke contains a complete set of male and female organs, which form the most conspicuous part of its anatomy, and both of which open into the genital sinus which has been described above. A. The Male Organs. (i.) The testes (fig. 1, B, ¢) are two in number, situated one behind the other in the hinder division of the median area. They rest upon the ventral cortical layer in the parenchyma

‘of the body, and immediately above them are the ramifications of

the digestive tract. Each consists of a large number of ramifying tubes, often with slightly dilated extremities. These unite into three or four, and eventually into two, main excretory ducts (va, vp), which terminate at the base of the cirrus-pouch. Within the testicular tubules may be found spermatozoa in all stages of de- velopment; the first stage appears to consist of small roundish membranelcss cells with a single nucleus; the nucleus then divides and the cells become polygonal from mutual pressure. These large cells lie in the middle rather than at the sides of the tube, and among them are a number which, while they possess on one side a smooth evenly

rounded contour, are on the other very irregularly and deeply serrated. These serrations elongate until they become the delicate filameuts of spermatozoa, the small shining heads of which are still embedded in the protoplasm of the cell. (ii.) The vasa deferentia (va, vp) are a pair of slender elongated canals, which lie on the two sides of the middle line, and unite at the inner extremity of the cirrus-pouch, which they penetrate in common. Their walls eonsist of a very delicate homogeneous but resistant membrane, upon which contractile fibres are disposed, close together and parallel to the axis. (iii.) The cirrus-pouch (¢ s) is a muscular egg- shaped organ; the upper pole, which receives the united vasa deferentia, is situated above the ventral sucker and separated by only a very slight interval from the dorsal cortical layer, whilst the position of the lower pole is indicated by the porus genitalis (p). The inuscles are disposed in two layers, of which the inner is thin and composed of circular fibres; the outer longitudinal layer is much thicker, and its fibres are disposed in bundles; furthermore its apex receives a large number of dorso-ventral fibres. Within the cirrus-pouch the two terminal sections of the male conducting apparatus are situated. (iv.) The first of these is the vesicula semin- alis (fig. 1, B, vs; C, g), a large, spindle-shaped dilatation of the canal usually more or less curved upon itself. Its wall is somewhat more complex than that of the vasa defcrentia, consisting of a layer of tissue with many nnclei but no distinct cell-boundaries, succeeded by a delicate layer of circular muscular fibres, which is again fol- lowed by a layer of longitudinal ones. (v.) The ductns ejaculatorius (fig. 1, C, 2), which immediately succeeds the vesicula seminalis, is a long slender tube, disposed in coils, and usually projecting like a papilla into the base of the sinus genitalis. Its walls are furnished with a number of unicellular glands. B. The Female Organs. The female reproductive apparatus may be roughly divided into two portions, that which produces the eggs and that which conveys them to the outside of the body ; in the former of these processes three organs take part—one producing the geri, another the second- ary or food-yolk, and a third the egg-shell. (i) The germarium or ovary (fig. 1, 13, 0) is situated between the anterior testis and the ven- tral sucker, in about three cases out of four on the right hand side of the body. It has the form of a branching tubular gland, the rami- fication being dichotomous throughout; in most cases the branches are about as large as the stems which give rise to them. The ovi- duct passes towards the shell-gland, narrowing as it approaches this, and finally unites with the excretory

duct of the yolk-glands. (ii.) The yolk-glands (y) of the liver-fluke are paired organs of consider- able size; they extend over both lateral areas, to which they impart the opaque appearance and reddish colour above alluded to. They are composed of innumerable small acini, spheroidal in shape and situated in groups on minute ductules, which unite to form a longi- tudinal canal on either side of the body. These canals are on the whole parallel to the margins of the animal and distant from it about one-fifth of its greatest breadth. At the anterior margin of the testicnlar area each longitudinal canal gives off a transverse branch, which unites with its fellow of the opposite side in the middle line to form a pear-shaped reservoir, situated just behind the posterior margin of the shell-gland. From this reservoir the eomimon yolk-duct passes forwards in the substance of the shell- gland and there unites with the oviduct. Previously to this, how- ever, it gives off a minute canal, which after an upward course opens on the dorsal surface of the animal; it is known as the Laurer- Stieda canal, and its function has been the subject of much discus- sion. It has been supposed (1) ‘‘ to serve for copulatory purposes,” as has been seen by Zeller (18) in Polystomum, and as is supported by its structure in Axine and Mierocotyle, and (2) “ to act as a safety tube for the escape of over-abundant or altered vitelline products and spermatozoa,” the main argument in support of which is that its ealibre is too narrow to admit of copulation taking place by

DOT

its means; compare Sommer (10), Kerbert (11), Poirier (19), Looss (20), and Lorenz (21). (iii.) The uterus or female conducting appa- ratus (7) originates at the union of the ducts of the germarium and yolk-gland. Its first portion, which lies within the shell-gland, is a delicate narrow canal, except when it is distended either by eggs or by semen. The median section of the organ is by far the largest both in length and breadth; it occupies almost the whole of the anterior part of the median area of the animal, betwcen the ventral sucker and the shell-gland, and forms four or five large coils lying alternately right and left, which as a rule are filled with com- pletely formed eggs. The third section of this organ includes the coils which lie above and anterior to the ventral sucker ; it is some- times called the vagina. When it contains eggs these are generally ina single file, and thus give ita moniliform appearance ; it lies en- tirely on the left side of the

body, gradually approaching the middle line as it passes forward, until it ends below the cirrus-pouch at the left and postcrior aspect of the genital pore (fig. 1, C,c). (iv.) The shell-gland (fig. 1, B, s), which (as its name implies) furnishes the external coating of the eggs, has been already several times men- tioncd. In the Trematodes, as in the tape-worms, it forms a kind of central point of the female generative system; it is a spheroidal mass of unicellular glands, each of which opens by its own special duct into the commencement of the utcrus. The secretion of the shell-gland is liberated in the form of small pellucid droplets, which unite to form drops ; afterwards it becomes thick and viscid and of a mahogany brown colour. In this condition the drops are dis- persed through the uterus mixed with the secretions of the other genital glands, and they apply themselves to the recently formed eggs, producing a delicate membrane around them. This process is carried on in those coils of the uterus which lie immediately out- side the shell-gland, corresponding to the ‘‘ootype” described by Van Beneden in other Trematodes.

The eggs undergo a gradual development as they pass along the uterus. ‘The ripe primitive ovum, on entering the female conduct- ing apparatus, becomes coated with a larger or smaller number of spherules of secondary yolk, and then undergoes the process of segmentation which leads to the formation of a morula. At this point it receives the secretion of the shell-gland. The completely formed egg (fig. 1, E) hasa length of 0°13 mm, and is ovoid in shape, with a small lid or operculum at the broader end; its contents consist of a number of roundly polygonal cells, with only a small quantity of secondary yolk remaining among them. All of these but one have a thick granular protoplasm, the exceptional cell having homogeneous and strongly refracting contents. It usually lies immediately under the operculum, and is partly embedded in the other cells. They are often present in the bile-ducts in such quantities as to form a stiff brownish mass resembling wet sand, and the number produced by a single fluke has been estimated at half a million.

The mode of fertilization of the liver-fluke has given rise to much discussion. According to Sommer, the organ which has usually been described as a cirrns or penis is merely the genital sinus eva- ginated by abnormal pressure (fig. 1, C, d) ; it is furthermore but ill-adapted to enter

either of the canals which could possibly serve as a vagina. He is therefore of opinion that self-impregnation occurs, the external aperture being closed by the oblique muscles, and the semen passing directly from the vas deferens through the genital sinus into the uterus. The whole question of the fertiliza- tion of the Trematodes is a matter on which very varied opinions have been expressed, even by authors who have examined the same forms. The assertion of Von Siebold that a direct internal com- munication exists between the male and female organs has been denied by Stieda (22) and by many subsequent writers, but has been restated by Lorenz (21) and by Zeller in the case of Polystomum integerrimum (18); however this may be, there can be no doubt that self-impregnation does occur in certain cases. The structure of the organs renders it more than probable in some species (see Poirier, 19, p. 582) ; Zaddach has observed it actually taking place in Distomum eirrigerum encysted in Astacis (23), and a single Poly- stomam tnategerrimum has been found in a frog's bladder with sperm in the female passages. Reciprocal fertilization, in which two in- dividuals act both as male and female simultaneously, has been recorded by Zeller in Polystomwum integerrinvum, by Looss (20) in Distomum elavigerum, and by Cobbold in Distomwm eamputla.

The nervous system consists of a commissure passing round the Nervous cesophagus very obliquely, and swelling out into ganglia at three system.

points. Tristomwm molx possesses eyes of an extremely simple type, the retina being merely a ganglion cell (Lang, 24). Life-History and Development.—The life-history of Fasciola hepatiea was worked out independently by Thomas (25) and Leuckart (26); regarding the question of priority see Jackson (27). The development of the embryo can only take place outside the body of the host and at a lower temperature, the most favourable being from 23° to 26° C., at which the process occupies two or three weeks. The free embryo (fig. 2, A) is conical in shape, with a rounded apex, its average length being 0‘13 mm. At the broader anterior end is a retractile head-papilla, with the exception of which the body

is ciliated allover. The interior of the body is composed of granular nucleated cells, and it contains a double eye-spot, composed of two erescentic masses of pigment. There are also two ciliated funnels forming the rudiments of the excretory system and a granular mass behind the head-papilla, probably representing the digestive tract. The embryo swims actively about, but if it does not succced in meet- ing the appropriate host for its next stage of development (Limnexus truncatulus, a small pond snail) its period of vitality seems to be limited to about eight hours. If it should meet with one of these

Ff. [OO

E Fig, 2.—Five stages in the life-history of Fasctola hepatica; all highly magnified. A, The free-swimming embryo. B, A sporocyst containing young rediz. C, A young redia, the digestive tract shaded. D, An adult redia, containing a daughter-redia, two almost mature cercarize, and germs, E, A free cercaria. The letters have the same significance throughout. c, nearly ripe cercarie ; cc, cystogenous cells; dr, daughter-redia; dt, limbs of the digestive tract; J, head-papilla; h, eye-spots ; h’, same degenerating ; &’, germinal cell ; J, cells of the anterior row; m, embryo in optical section, gastrula stage ; m, pharynx of redia ; 0, digestive sac; oe, esophagus ; p, lips of redia ; qg, collar; 7, processes serving as rudimentary feet; s, embryos; ¢, trabeculz crossing body-cavity of redia ; uw, glandular cells (?); v, birth-opening; w, w’, morule ; y, oral sucker; y’, ventral sucker; z, pharynx. (All from Marshall and Hurst after Thomas.) snails it applies the head-papilla to some part of its surface and begins to bore, twisting round and round on its axis by means of its cilia, the head-papilla becoming pointed and elongated to four or five times its original length. Eventually the tissues of the snail are separated as if by a wedge, and a gap is formed through which the embryo forces an entrance into its body. Here it under- goes a metamorphosis, losing its organs of locomotion and becom- – ing what is termed a ‘‘sporocyst” (fig. 2, B). This is an elliptical sac, which commonly attains a length of 0°7 mm. Its wall con- sists of a structureless cuticle, beneath which are external, circular, and internal longitudinal muscle-fibres. These are succeeded by an epithelium, the elements of which vary greatly in size. These sporocysts may be produced by a process of transverse fission. Within the sporocyst rounded masses of cells are formed (morule),

which undergo a process of invagination, producing a gastrula, which again develops by the formation of a digestive tract into what is known as a ‘‘redia”’ (fig 2, C, D). This forces its way through the wall of the sporocyst, which heals up immediately, and then wanders through the tissue of the snail, most commonly finding its way to the liver. If many redie are present the snail usnally perishes. The adult redia may attain a length of 16 mm. It has an elongated cylindrical form, and near its posterior extremity are two processes directed backwards, which probably serve as aids to locomotion. At the anterior extremity is the mouth, leading into a muscular pharynx, followed by a saccular digestive tract. A ring-shaped thickening is seen a little way behind the mouth, and immediately posterior to this a special aperture for the exit of the germs formed within the redia. About a score of these are usually to be found in all stages of development, the earliest being a rounded mass of cells (morula), which elongates, one end at the

same time becoming more attenuated than the other, and gradually forming an elongated tail, while the body becomes oval and de- pressed (fig. 2, E). ‘Two suckers and the rudiment of the future digestive tract make their appearance. As soon as the “ cercaria,” this being the name given to the present organism, has attained this stage of development it emerges from the redia, and by the aid of its suckers and tail wriggles its way out of the host, swimming freely about in the water. Like other cercarie developed in rediee this one has no head-spine, but in mature examples the anterior of the body often exhibits a number of very minute spines. An interesting feature in the animal is the presence of the ‘‘cysto- genous cells,” two lobate masses arranged one on each side of the body. These cells contain small rod-like bodies, whence they have been termed ‘‘cellules & batonnets,” and similar bodies have been found in the protective cyst which they excrete; Sonsino (28) has suggested that they may assist in imparting stiffness to this strue- ture, and has noticed that they are more abundant in those forms which encyst in the open air. When the cercaria has swum about for a short time it finds its way to the water-plants, and encysts itself on their stems and leaves. During this process the tail is swung vigorously about, until finally a more violent motion de- taches it; at the same time the cells just mentioned throw out a gummy secretion, which rapidly hardens and encloses the ecercaria in a kind of case. It is in this condition that the larve

are swallowed by the grazing sheep to form sexually mature flukes in their livers.

The life-history of a typical digenctic Trematode may be summed up as follows:—(1) the egg, produced sexually; (2) the ciliated embryo; (3) the sporocyst; (4) the redia, produced asexually ; (5) the cercaria, produced asexually; (6) the adult Trematode. Hence it would appear that the digenetic forms have at least one, usually many, asexual generations before the sexual one appears. The embryo may form either a sporocyst or a redia, these two forms being distinguished by the presence of a digestive tract and of a special birth-opening in the latter. Within these parent forms the germs may arise from two sonrces,—the eclls which occupy the central region of the young sporocyst or redia, or the epithelium lining the body-walls. “The germs to which a sporocyst gives origin may develop in some instances into sporocysts, in others into rediz or into cercarie. And it does not seem certain that there is any limit to the possible number of successive generations of redi. Both cercarie and redie may occur side by side in the same nurse. The last term in the series is, however, invariably a eercaria.”

Pagenstecher, Ercolani (29), and others have stated that the tail of a cercaria may become a sporocyst and produce germs, but this has not met with general acceptance, and the supposition is not supported by the structure of the tail, which consists of a “con- tractile substance, occupying the axis and periphery, with large vesicular cells between” (Schwarze, 13). Ercolani (29) has also published striking statements to the effect that the structure of these entozoa is so profoundly modified by their habitat that what have been hitherto described as distinct species may be only ‘“‘ local varieties’; thus he finds that Cercaria armata develops in Tropi- donotus into Distomum signatum, whilst in Aus nuusculus and MM. decumanus it becomes a distinct dwarfed form, D. muris.

Pathological and Economic Relations.—Although the number of Trematodes which have been recorded from the human body is about equal to that of the Cestodes, the medical significance of the former is much less than that of the latter, because as a rule they occur in smaller numbers and are less apt to invade organs of vital importance. The Trematodes which have been found in man are—

Fasciola hepatica, Linn., . in the liver.

Distomum lanceolatum, Mehlis, : , . oo iwer:.

D. ophthalmobium, Diesing, . 5 : 5 » lens ofthe eye, D. heterophyes, Bilharz, . 4 * . < », Small intestine, D. crassum, Busk=D, buskii, Wedl, : : » intestine.

D, capense, Harley, . . : 5 : 5 »» eggs in the blood. D. spatulatum, Leuckart, . “ F 3 ‘5 sy diver.

D, endemicum, Baelz, ; 5 ‘ 3 : 45 Liven.

D, hepatis innocuum, Baelz, . . : o9 abyer:

D. rathouisi, Poirier (42), , F : : sy diver

Bilharzia hematobia, Cobbold, s ; i » veins of bladder, &c. Monostomum lentis, Nordmann, 7 5 »» lens of the eye. Hexathyridium pinguicola, Treutler, 5 a 3) ovary.

i, venarum, Treutler, . veins,

For the general principles which govern the pathological effects of Trematodes in common with other entozoa, reference may be made to the article TapE-Worms; only a few special cases need be alluded to here. The occurrence of most of the forms in the above list has only been recorded very few times, and in many cases the effects produced were very inadequately studied, so that we can hardly be said to possess a knowledge of their individual pathology. Ina case of Distomwm lanceolatum which occurred in Bohemia, the liver was enormously enlarged and the contracted gall-bladder contained eight calculi and forty-seven flukes; the symptoms during life were emaciation, pain over the liver, and distention of the abdomen.

The effects produced by Bilharzia hematobia are very well de- fined and exceedingly disastrous. The mature worms in eouples

TREAT OD A

inhabit the veins, especially those of the urinary bladder and mesentery ; extravasations of blood and villous growths or ulcera- tions of the mucous membrane of the bladder present themselves, and thus the eggs of the parasite find their way into the urine, in which they are evacuated, and can be detected by microscopic examination. With the characteristie presence of the eggs are associated colic, anemia, and great prostration of the vital powers, more particularly in the later stages; the disease when once fairly established is almost always fatal ; see Cobbold (1).

From a practical point of view by far the most important Trema- tode is Fasciola (Distomum) hepatiea, which gives risc to the disease known as ‘‘liver rot” in sheep. It is always more or less abund- ant in certain districts, and it is estimated that in the United Kingdom the annual loss of sheep due to it is not less than 1,000,000. The symptoms are said to be emaciation, tenderness in the loins, harshness and dryness of the wool, and a scaly con- dition of the skin. On post-mortem examination fluid is found in the peritoneal cavity and the viscera have a blanched appearance ; the liver is dark chocolate or sometimes pale in colour, nodular, and uneven, the ducts are thickened and Distomes are found within them. Dead flukes have been known to furnish the nuclei of gall-stoncs in the gall-bladder. Briefly stated, the principal preventive measures seem to be as follows :—(1) destruction of the

eggs, and especially abstention from putting manure of rotten sheep on damp ground ; (2) slaughter of sheep which are badly

fluked ; (3) adequate drainage of pastures ; (4) an allowance of salt and a little dry food to the sheep; and (5) dressings of lime or salt on the ground to destroy the embryos (Thomas, 25). A series of wet seasons increases the prevalence of the malady, and animals which have been allowed to graze in low-lying ill-drained lands are specially liable to infection—facts which are readily explicable on a consideration of the life-history given above.

: chat Arrangement.—The Trematoda may be classified as ollows :—

1. MONOGENEA, Van Beneden; development direct, that is, without the media- tion of nurse forms.

(i.) Tristome, Leuckart; body roundish or elongate; posterior extremity never specially developed. Two adoral suckers often present; a large ventral sucker often armed with chitinoid structures. Sexual apertures on the left side or sdmedian. Laurer-Stieda canal single or double. Ova with a filament at one pole only.

1, Tristomide, Van Beneden.—l. Zristomum, Cuvier; about a dozen genera of previous writers are here included; over 14 species are known, all parasitic on fishes ; Taschenberg (80).

2. Monocotylidz, Taschenberg.—1. Calicotyle, Diesing; only species C. kréyeri (31). 2. Pseudocotyle, Taschenberg. 3. Monocotyle, Taschen- berg; only one species, M@. myliobatis, on the gills of the eagle-ray (Myliobatis aquila).

3. Udonellidz, Johnston.—l. Udoneila, Jhnst.; five species, the type being U. caligorum, parasitic on a erustacean (Caligus), which in its turn in- fests the holibut (Zippoglossus vulgaris).

(ii,) Potystommm, Leuckart; body elongate, pointed and narrow anteriorly; broad behind and generally provided with special organs of adhesion in the shape of suckers or chitinoid hooks, of suckers or claspers with chitinoid strnctures. Two adoral suckers in some instances. Sexual apertures median. Laurer-Stieda canal single or double. Male sexual aperture often armed with chitinoid hooks. Ova frequently provided with two long appendages.

1. Octobothriidz, Taschenberg.-—1. Octobothrium, Nordmann; about a dozen genera of various authors are here included by Taschenberg (80), containing fourteen species, parasitic on fishes, and almost invariably on the gills. 2. Anthocotyle, Hesse and Van Beneden; one species (A. merlucti), found in the hake. 38. Phyllocotyle, Hesse and Van Beneden; one species, from the gurnard. 4. Platycotyle, Hesse and Van Beneden ; one species, from the gurnard. 5, Pleurocotyle, Gervais and Van Beneden (=G@rubea cochlear, Dies.); one species, from the gills of the mackerel. 6. Diplozoon, Nordmann (see below). 7. Hexacotyle, Blainville ; one species, from Thynnus brachypterus. 8, Plectanocotyle, Dies.; from the gills of Labrax mucronatus.

2. Polystomide, Van Beneden.—1. Polystomum, Zeder; two species, best known P. integerrimum (see below); Hexathyridium is probably a synonym. 2. Onchocotyle, Dies.; tive species, from the gills of sharks and rays. 38. Erpocotyle, Hesse and Van Beneden; one species, from the gills of Mustelus levis. 4. Diplobothrium, F. S. Leuckart; one species, from the gills of a sturgeon.

3. Microcotylide, Taschenberg.—l. Axine, Abildgaard, two species. 2. Microcotyle, Van Beneden ; about half a dozen species, all parasitic on the gills of fishes (see below). 3. Gastrocotyle, Hesse and Van Bene- den; one species, from the gills of Caranz trachurus. 4. Aspido- gaster, Von Baer (sce below). 5. Cotylaspis, Leidy; one species, occurring in Anodonta. 6, Aspidocotyle, Dies.

4, Gyrodactylide, Van Beneden.—1. Gyrodactylus, Nordmann (see below). 2. Dactylogyrus, Dies.; about twenty species, all parasitic on fishes, mostly on the gills. 8. Zetraonchus, Dies.; three species, on the gills of freshwater fishes. 4. Dtplectanum, Dies. 5. Calceostomum, Van Beneden; one species, on the gills of Sctwna aquila. 6. Sphyranura, Wright (34, 45); one species, from the mouth of Menobranchus lateralis.

IT. DIGENEA, Van Beneden ; one or more non-sexual forms intervene between two successive sexual forms.

(i.) Monosromipz, Van Beneden ; elongate, oval, or rounded in shape ; one oral sucker.—l. Monostomum, Zeder ; fifty to sixty species in mammals, birds, and fishes; type, 4. mutabile, Zeder, found in the body-cavity and eye of water-birds. 2 Notocotyle, Dies.; MW. triseria’e, Dies. (=Monostomum verrucosum).

“i.) Distomipa, Van Beneden; body flattish, more or less leaf-like or clougate; an oral and a ventral sub-median or posterior sucker.—l. Distomum, Retzius (see below). 2. Fasciola, Linn.; three species are known; F. hepatica is described above ; F. giganiea inhabits the liver of the giraffe: 3. Bilharzia, Cobbold (= G@ynxcophorus, Dies.) ; one species (sée below). 4: Echinostomum, Dujardin; &. gadorum, Van Beneden, in the intestine of Gadus carbonarius (the coal-fish), and tweuty-five

other species in the alimentary canal of mammals, birds, and fishes, 5, Amphistomum, Rudolphi; about twenty species in different Verte- brates ; A. subclavatum (G6ze) in the rectum of the frog. 6. Gastrodts~ cus (?), Leuckart (see also 37). 7. Homalogaster, Poirier (38). 8. Gas- trothylaz, Poirier. 9. Euryceelium, Brock (44), has the excretory vessels dilated into wide chambers (? ccelom).

(iii.) GASTEROSToM1D#, Von Siebold; oral sucker sub-median and ventral; also an anterior sucker.—1. Gasterostomum, Von Siebold; eight species, all in fishes; larval form Bucephalus (see below).

(iv.) Hotostomip", Claus (48); body flattened, and divided into an antcrior and posterior part, the former bearing an anterior and ventral sucker; two adoral lobes with glands in connexion, or a circumoral fold with lobes.—1. Holostomum, Nitzsche; twenty-three species, most in water- birds; H. variabile, in various raptorial birds; larval forms Tetracotyle and Diplostomum. 2. Hemistomum, Dies.; three species, one in the wild-cat, two in birds. 3. Hustemma, Dies.

The true position of the following is doubtful:—Nematobothrium, Van Bene- den (9); Didymozoon, Von Linstow (30); Stichocotyle, Cunningham (89).

Dipiozoon paradoxum (18) infests the gill of the minnow in large numbers. The eggs hatch in the water, continuing to be attached to the gill by a filament at

Fie. 3.—A, Diplozoon paradoxum, two united specimens, B, Polystomum inte- gerrimum; Xabout 100 (after Zeller). C, Microcotyle mormyri; x7. D, E, two views of the chitinous framework of a sucker of Axine belones; highly magnified (after Lorenz). F,

one extremity. The embryo is elongated oval in shape, and ciliated all over ; on its back are two eyes, consisting of a cup-shaped mass of pigment, with a spheroidal lenticular body. It presents also the mouth with two peculiar suckers, the ceso- phagus and intestine, and the two claspers of the Diporpa.

The embryo swims vigorously about until it finds its way to the gill of a minnow, failing which it dies in about six hours. Attached to its host it may live isolated for a considerable time, increasing in size; usually, however, it unites with another individual in a kind of reciprocal copulation (fig. 3, A). One individual by means of its ventral sucker seizes the dorsal papilla of another, and then the two twist across each other so that the sucker of tlie second seizes the papilla of the first. After this a complete fusion of the individuals takes place, the papillz and suckers growing together so firmly as to be anatomically inseparable. Both individuals continne to grow and develop a second, third, and sometimes a fourth pair of claspers.

In Polystomum integerrimum (18), which inhabits the bladder of the frog, the eggs are developed during the winter and are laid in the spring, when the frogs resort to the water. 1t appears probable that the worm protrudes its body from the frog and thus deposits the egg directly in the water. The young worm, as it escapes from the egg, which takes place aftcr a lapse of six or eight weeks, measures about 0°3 mm. in length, and swims vigorously about by the aid of a coating of cilia. At its posterior extremity is a rounded disk (fig. 3, B_, round the margin of which sixteen delicate hooks are placed at equal intcrvals. Above the four hindmost of these are two others still smaller and more delicate. Upon the back are situated four eyes disposed in pairs. The mouth is wide and leads into a pharynx, and this into the intestine; two excretory vessels are present, but there is no trace of generative organs. The hindermost pair of suckers is the first to be developed, and they enclose those two hooks which lie at the outer side of the very delicate ones mentioned above, which eventually become the strong terminal hooks of the adult. The other two pairs of suckers are formed in a similar manner, the development of all three being usually completed during the month of July. The young Polystomum attacks not the full-grown frog but the tadpole, entering the gill-cavity and subsequently proceeding to the bladder. Like the frog it requires four or five years to attain sexual maturity. In certain cases the Polystomum does not migrate; it then becomes prematurely sexual and dies when the tadpole nndergoes meta:norphosis ; under these circumstances the sexual organs are simpler than usual: the testis is simple; the germarium is long and coiled; there is neither prostate nor Laurer-Stieda canal; and the oviduct has no dilated anterior portion.

Microcotyle mormyri, Lorenz (21) (fig. 3, C), has no penis, the semen issuing by an opening posterior to the spiked birth-opening; the vagina opens medially, not

marginally. The posterior extremity is pointed. Aine belones, Abildg.,resembles it, but is broad and obliquely truncated behind, this margin bearing a row of fifty to seventy peculiar attaching organs, which are of the form of a hand-satchel (fig. 3, D, E), the metal clasp being represented by a complicated chitinous framework. There are four groups of hooks and one ring of the same round the genital open- ing. The mouth has a sucker at cither side, and above it an oval body which can be evaginated like the proboscis of a Dendrocele Plauarian.

Aspidogaster conchicola (32) is found in the pericardial cavity of the freshwater mussel; it is conical anteriorly with a terminal oral sucker; the ventral sucker is very large and divided into rectangular areas; the excretory pore is at the pos- terior extremity of the body, and the genital organs open on the left side of the fore-part of the anlmal (fig. 3, F).

Gyrodactylus elegans (38) is found on the fins and surfaee of the body of the pike, stickleback, and other freshwater fishes, and measures about 0°56 mm. in length ; it is flattened in form and tapers towards cither end (fig. 38, G). At the anterior extremity are two lappets, while the postcrior is furnished with a sub- triangular plate, which bears the organs of attachment in the shape of two large curved hooks inits centre and sixteen smaller ones on its circumference. The most interesting peculiarity, however, of this form is to be found in the fact that each embryo before it is extruded (the animal is viviparous) contains another embryo, and this in its turn another, so that three embryonic generations are present simultaneously. oles A

The genus. Distomum is by far the most extensive in the group, containing at the present time over 300 species, which occur almost exclusively in Vertebrates ; the most important are perhaps D. lanceolatum, which inhabits the same situa- tions as Fasciola hepatica, D. clavigerum, from the frog, and De militare, Van Beneden, from the intestine of the duck. The name Fasciola (Linn.) has the priority over Distomum (Distoma) of Retzius,

which, however, has obtained ex- tensive currency. The name Fasciola may appropriately be used in a restricted sense for forms which have a branched digestive tract, F. hepatica above de- scribed being taken as the type. This separation has not met with gencral recog- nition, although supported by Blanchard and Cobbold (1). W einland has proposed to substitute the term Dicroceelium, used by Dujardin, for Distomun, retaining Fasciola for the type-species, but this proposal has not met with acceptance. The Distomes vary in size from forms almost microscopic to those which, like D. ingens, Moniez (35), measure 6 cm. long in alcohol, or even 12°5 cm. in the fresh condition (D. gigas, Nardo). Distomum halosaurz, Bell (86), is parasitic upon a dcep-sea fish taken in 1090 fathoms, Distomum macrostomum (fig. 4, B) of the woodpecker (Apternus tridactylus) has a remarkable larval form known as Leuco- chloridium paradoxum, which is parasitic on Succinea putris, and consists of a number of branching threads, from which are developed one or two contractile sacs (fig. 4, C, D). Their growth distends the tentacle until it bursts and the sac

Fic. 4.—A, Bilharzia hematobia, the thin female in the gynecophoric canal of the stouter male; x15 (after Leuckart), B, Distomuwm macrostomum, showing the digestive and the greater part of the genital apparatus with the cirrus pro- truded; x30. C, Snail (Succinea), the tentacles deformed by Leucochloridium ; natural size. D, Leucochloridiun: removed from the tentacle; natural size (after Zeller). E, Bucephalus polymorphus; highly magnified (after Zieglcr). F, Portion of a sporocyst containing Bucephalt in process of development; xX about 50 (after Lacaze- Duthiers).

hangs outwards. The threads within the Succinea contain only granular cells» whilst the contractile sac is occupied by an organism ovoid in form, with a thick clear border, the rudiments of two suckers, a digestive tract, and excretory system.

Bitharzia hematobia, Cobbold (1), is one of the most dangerous human parasites, and occurs in the blood of the portal vein and in the veins of the mesentery and bladder. The sexes are distinct, the female being from 16 to 20 mm. in length, and somewhat resembling a Nematode on superficial examination. The male is only from 10 to 14 nm. in length, but much thicker. The surface of the female is covered with fine spines most distinct

towards the tail; at the anterior pointed extremity is the oral sucker, from which a narrow opening leads into a wide pharynx, followed by the intestine, which at first forms two branches, these ugain uniting posteriorly to the generative organs. The ventral sucker is placed

only 0°2 mm. behind the oral one, and it is immediately succeeded by a long narrow groove, which extends down the ventral surface and corresponds to the canalis gynzcophorus of the male (see fig. 4, A).

The stages in the life-history of Gasterostomum are so remarkable that a short account of them must be given. From the egg there escapes (1) a club-shaped embryo, which in a manner hitherto unobserved enters the freshwater mussel, Anodonta or Unio, where it forms (2) the sporocyst (fig. 4, F); this is several centi- metres long and provided with lateral branches; it occurs chiefly in the liver and ovary, and it is best developed near the skin. The wall of the sporocyst consists of cells, muscles, and perhaps a cuticle; the extremities are pointed and filled with cells, and it is here that growth takes place. Within moniliform dilatations of these ramified tubes are formed balls of cells, each of which develops into (3) a *“bucephalus.” This organism (fig. 4, E) consists of a small oval body about 0°25 mm. in length with a double tail. At one extremity is a mass of glands with an invagination of the integument, which has been mistaken by many observers for the alimentary canal. This, however, opens about the middle of the body, and consists of a muscular pharynx, a forwardly directed oesophagus, and a simple saccular intestine. The excretory system terminates in an S-shaped vesicle, which opens posteriorly in such a way that its contraction drives the fluid into the tail, whence it prebably finds its exit by osmosis. Traces of genital

organs are found in the form of an elongated plug of cells in the hinder fourth ‘

of the body, and two rounded masses of undifferentiated cells situated dorsally. The tail is double, and from about 0°5 to 2°56 mm. long according to its state of contraction. Each half consists of a spheroidal basal portion, and an elongated tapering filament. These caudal appendages contain many nucleated connective- tissue cells with fine protoplasmic processes, The larve swim freely in the water, but sink and perish after about twelve hours,

unless they enter-the mouth of certain fishes (e.g., Leuciscus erythrophthalmus), when (4) they lose their tails and become encapsuled under the skin. The generative organs now become further developed; cuticular spines and the anterior sucker are formed. [If the fish thus infected be swallowed by a pike or perch the cyst is dissolved, and the worms (5) become adult, eontinuc to live in the intestine, and produce eggs. For further details, see Ziegler (12).

Phylogenetic Relations—The detailed comparisons of Van Beneden (9) and the subsequent researches of others leave no doubt that the Trematoda are closely related to the Cestoda. A considcration of their peculiarities leads moreover to the opinion that the former are more primitive than the latter; that is to say, the common ancestors of the two groups resembled Trematodes rather than Cestodes. The ancestry of the 7'rematoda is probably to be sought in types such as the Planarians rather than the Leeches ; characters uniting them with the former are the possession of a commonly branched alimentary canal without an anus, but with a powerful pharynx; the gencrative system is hermaphrodite, and similar arrangements obtain in the excretory vessels, nerves, and muscles, while histological agreements also are not wanting. Furthermore, certain forms are known which help to fill up the gap between the two groups: Monocelis cwudatus has a discoid posterior organ of attachment, and I. protractilis a true sucker. Such forms as these could scarcely be distinguished from ectoparasitic Trematodes ex- cept for their ciliated epithelium (Leuckart, 1). In this connexion, however, it is worth while to call attention to the researches of Fewkes (40) on a marine cercaria, which had a tail distinctly annelid in character, with bundles of bristles disposed at intervals along it. Compare also Schauinsland (41).

Bibliography.—(1) Jackson, in Rolleston's Forms of Animal Life, 2d ed., Oxford, 1887; other important text-books are Leuckart, Parasitten des Menschen, Leipsic, 1863, new edition and English translation in preparation; Kiichenmeister und Ziirn, Parasiten des Menschen, Leipsic, 1881; Cobbold, Hntozoa, London, 1864; Id., Parasites, 1879; (2) Rudolphi, Lntozoorum Hist, Nat,, Amsterdam, 1808-9, and Entozoorum Synopsis, Berlin, 1819; (3) Cuvier, Regne animal, Paris, 1829; (4) Von Siebold, Archiv f, Naturgesch., i., 1885; (5) Von Baer, Vova Acta Acad. Cxs. Leop.,

xiii, 1826; (6) Stcenstrup, Alfernation of Generations, Ray Society, 8vo, London, 1845; (7) Pagenstecher, Zrematodenlarven und Trematoden, Heidelberg, 1857; (8) Diesing, Systema Helminithum, Vienna, 1850; (9) Van Beneden, “ Vers intestinaux,” Comptes Rendus, Paris, 1861; (10) Sommer, Ztschr. wiss. Zool., xxxiv,, 1880; (11) Kerbert, Archiv f. mikr. Anat,, xix., 1881; (12) Ziegler, Zischr. wiss. Zool., xxxix., 1883; (13) Schwarze, Op. cit., xllii,, 1886, (14) Metschnikotf, Quart. Jour, Micr Sei., xxiv., 1884; (15) Fraipont, Arch. d. Biol., i., 1880, ii., 1881; (16) Pintner. Arb. Zool. Inst. Wien, iii., 1880; (17) Van Beneden and Lankester, Zool. Anz., iv., 1881, v. 1882; (18) Zeller, Ztschr. wiss. Zool., xxii., 1872, xxvii., 1876; (19) Poirier, Arch. Zool. Expér., ili., 1885; (20) Looss, Ztschr. wiss. Zool., xli., 1885; (21) Lorenz, Arb. Zool. Inst, Wien, i., 1878 ; (22) Stieda, Reichert, and Du Bois Reymond’s Archiv, 1881; (23) Zaddach, Zool. Anz., iv., 1881; (24) Lang, Mitth. Zool. Stat, Neapel, ii., 1881; (25) Thomas, Quart. Jour. Micr. Sct., xxiii., 1883, also Jour. Roy. Agric. Soc., xix., 1883; (26) Leuckart, Zool, Anz., v., 1882; (27) Jackson, Op. cit., vi, 1883: (28) Sonsino, Arch, Ital. Biol,, vi., 1885; (29) Ercolani, Mem. Acad. Sci. Inst. Bologna, [4], ii., 1882, iii., 1883, also abstract, Arch. /tal. Biol., i, 1882; (80) Taschenberg, Ztschr. gesammt. Naturw., tii, 1879; (81) Wierzejski, Zéscho. wiss, Zool., xxix., 1877, (32) Huxley, Anat. Invert, Anim., London, 1877; (83) Wagener, Arch. f. Anat, u. Phys., 1860; (84) Wright, Proc. Canad. Inst., i., 1884; (35) Moniez, Bull. Soc. Zool. France, xi., 1886 ; (36) Bell, Ann. and Mag, Nat, J7ist., [5], xix., 1887 ; (87) Lejtenyi, Abhandl. Senck. Geselisch., xii., 1881; (38) Poirier, Bull. Soc. Philom. Paris, (7), vii., 1883; (89) Cunningham, Vans. Roy, Soc. Edin., xxxti., 1884; (40) Fewkes, Amer. Jour. Sct., (3), xxiii, 1882; (41) Schauinsland, Jena Zeitschr., xvi., 1883; (42) Poirier, Arch. Zool. Expér., [2], v., 1887; (48) Von Linstow, Archiv f. Naturgesch., xliii., 1877; (44) Brock, Gottinger Nachrichten, 1887; (45) Wright and Macallum, Amer. Jour, Morph., i., 1887. (W. E. HO.)

TRENCH, RicHarp CuHeENEVIx (1807-1886), arch- bishop of Dublin, poet, scholar, and divine, was born at Dublin, September 9, 1807, and graduated at Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1829. While incumbent of Curd- ridge Chapel, near Bishop Waltham in Hampshire, he published (1835) The Story of Justin Martyr and other Poems, which, having been very favourably received, was followed in 1838 by Sabbation, Honor Neale,

and other Poems, and in 1842 by Poems from Eastern Sources. ‘These volumes revealed the author as decidedly the most gifted

ay

;

TRE—TRE

of the immediate disciples of Wordsworth, with a warmer colouring and more pronounced ecclesiastical sympathies than the master, and strong affinities to Tennyson, Keble, and Milnes. In 1841 he resigned his living to become curate to Samuel Wilberforce, then rector of Alverstoke, and upon Wilberforce’s promotion to the deanery of West- minster, in 1845, he was presented to the rectory of Itchenstoke. In 1845 and 1846 he preached the Hulsean lecture, and in the former year was made examining chaplain to Wilberforce, now bishop of Oxford. He was shortly afterwards appointed theological professor and examiner at King’s College, London. In 1851 he estab- lished his fame as a philologist by his charming little work on The Study of Words, originally delivered as lectures to the pupils of the Diocesan Training School, Winchester. His purpose, as stated by himself, was to show that in words, even taken singly, “‘ there are boundless stores of moral and historic truth, and no less of passion and im- agination laid up ”—a truth enforced by a number of most apposite illustrations. The book may be regarded as a comment on the saying that “language is fossil poetry.” It was followed by two equally delightful little volumes of similar character—Knglish Past and Present (1855), and A Select Glossary of English Words (1859). All have gone through numerous editions, aud they have probably con- tributed more than all the labours of severer but less cultured and tasteful philologists to promote the historival study of the English tongue. Yet Trench did little more than indicate the existence of a vast region of research extending over all literary languages. Another great service to English philology was rendered by his paper, read before the Philological Society, ‘On some Deficiencies in our English Dictionaries” (1857), which gave the first impulse to the great enterprise now proceeding under the auspices of Dr Murray. His advocacy of a revised translation of the New Testament (1858) powerfully aided to promote another great national undertaking. In 1856 he published a valuable essay on Calderon,

with a transla- tion of a portion of Life is a Dream in the original metre. He had not, meanwhile, been forgetful of professional claims upon his pen. In 1841 he had published his Votes on the Parables, and in 1846 his Notes on the Miracles, works which, containing much to gratify every school of thought, and little to offend any, obtained the most exten- sive popularity, and have been resorted to by English theologians of all persuasions, who have turned the author to the same account as he has turned his patristic, Romanist, and Lutheran predecessors. There is, in fact, very little originality in these volumes, but they are treasuries of erudite and acute illustration, selected from various quarters with admirable judgment, and displayed with consummate taste.

In 1856 Trench was raised to the deanery of West- minster, probably the position in the whole church which suited him best. In January 1864 he was advanced to the more dignified but less congenial post of archbishop of Dublin. Stanley had been named, but rejected by the Trish Church, and, according to Bishop Wilberforce's corre- spondence, Trench's appointment was favoured neither by the prime minister nor the lord lieutenant. It was, more- over, unpopular in Ireland, and a blow to English litera- ture; yet the course of events soon proved it to have been most fortunate. Trench, indeed, could do nothing to prevent the disestablishment of the Irish Church, though he resisted with dignity, and repelled the insidious pro- posal that she should do execution upon herself. But, when the disestablished communion had to be reconstituted under the greatest difficulties, it was found of the highest importance that the occupant of his position should be a man of a liberal and genial spirit, able to ward off the

narrowness which would have alienated the sympathies of English churchmen, and sown the seeds of schism in a body beyond all others in need of amity and unity. This was the work of the remainder of Trench's life; and, if less personally agreeable and of less general utility than the literary performances which might have been expected from him if he had remained at Westminster, it was much more weighty and important. It exposed him at times to considerable misconstruction and obloquy, but he came to be appreciated, and, when in November 1884 he resigned his

archbishopric from infirmity, clergy and laity unani- mously recorded their sense of his ‘‘ wisdom, learning, dili- gence, and munificence.” He had found time for Lectures on Medizxval Church History (1878) ; his poetical works were rearranged and collected in two volumes (last edition 1885). He died in London, after a lingering illness, on March 28, 1886.

As a man Trench was universally beloved and esteemed. He was remarkable fora high spirit, munificence, and general elevation of sentiment. Asa prose author he ranks among the most useful and agreeable of his generation, and may almost be said to gain in both respects by his deficiency in originality. Both as Biblical commen- tator and philologist, he has done far more by popularizing the researches of more exact scholars and more profound thinkers than he could have done by striving to make discoveries of his own. For durable fame as a poet originality is indispensable, and here Trench fails. The style of his poems is frequently admirable, but even when not obviously derived from some other writer it wants the stamp of strong individuality. He has written little beyond the reach of any man uniting exquisite culture to the accomplish- ment of verse: the pieces where poetry seems a natural language with him are chiefly to be found among his elegiac poems, which express real personal experience, and appeal movingly to the heart. (R. G.)

TRENCK, the name of two barons of old German extraction, who, endowed with exceptional physical powers, and each blending to a singular if not to an insane degree the hero and the Bobadil, have left startling records of not wholly dissimilar adventures and misfortunes.

1. Franz, BARON VoN DER TRENCK (1711-1749), was born at Reggio, Calabria, where his father was lieutenant- colonel in the Austrian service. After his rough early training in the camp, he made himself so unendurable at the college of Vienna that he was speedily removed, and entered in 1727 as ensign in the Palfy regiment, from which, however, after a brief but riotous course of duelling, gambling, and love-making, he received a new dismissal. He returned to his father, and, on the outbreak of war between the Russians and Turks, raised a corps of 300 men at his own expense and joined the Russian army on the Hungarian frontier. His brilliant exploits won him the favour of his commander, but a breach of orders, followed by

an assault on his colonel, brought him under sentence of death, from which a daring feat of arms alone saved him. A sentence of exile to Siberia, incurred soon after by a second affray with a superior officer, was commuted to imprisonment at Kieff and expulsion from the country. His term of imprisonment having expired, he retired to his estate, where he armed and drilled his vassals, and in a series of encounters compelled the Slavonian brigands to seek refuge in Turkish territory. From these marauders he recruited in 1740 the formidable body of pandours with which he joined the levies in aid of Maria Theresa. Repulsing the French near Linz, he penetrated into Bavaria, took Deckendorf and Reichenhall, and destroyed Cham,—the conduct of his troops being marked not less by atrocity than by desperate courage. Recalled to Vienna to render account for the cruelties practised, he refused to defend himself, and, being set at liberty, rejoined his men, opened in 1743 a passage across the Rhine for the army, and became as much the terror of Alsace as he had been of Bavaria. On tle retreat of the army to Bohemia he covered the rear and took several towns, but had his right

foot crushed by a cannon-ball. surgeon, and, having made a species of triumphal entry into Vienna, he resuined his command. But in September 1745, after having boldly penetrated with his pandours to the tent of Frederick II., he suffered the king to escape him while his followers were stopping to plunder, and he was thereupon accused of having been bribed by that monarch to release him. He was condemned on inquiry to pay an indemnity for peremptory dismissal to the officers accusing him, but he refused to acknowledge the sentence, and, raising new troops, added to the list of his exploits. His conduct leading to a renewal of the inquiry, he laid hands on the president of the court-martial and was thrown into prison, but was enabled to escape by the baroness Lestock, with whom he fled to Holland. He was brought back to Vienna, and condemned to perpetual im- prisonment in the Spielberg, where, finding escape impos- sible, he poisoned himself, October 1749, at the age of 38.

See his autobiography—Merkwiirdiges Leben und Thaten des Freiherrn Franz von der Trenck, Vienna, 1770; also, Franz von der Trenck, by E. F.

Hiibner, with preface by Schubart, 3 vols., 1788.

2. FRIEDRICH, FREIHERR VON DER TRENCK (1726-1794), cousin of the preceding, born at Konigsberg, 16th February 1726. His precocious abilities won him the favour of Frederick the Great, in wliose guards he was enrolled at an early age as cadet, and by whom he was made cornet in 1743 and aide-de-camp for his gallantry in 1744. An intrigue with the princess Amelia, sister of the king, led to his temporary confinement until the campaign of 1745 recalled him to the army. He was again thrown into prison, however, on the discovery of a correspondence between him and his cousin, then fighting with his pandours in the service of Maria Theresa, but in December 1746, after many failures, he succeeded in escaping from the fortress of Glatz. He went to Vienna, was involved in several duels by his cousin, who was too closely confined to give expression to his animosities except by proxy, and finally accepted a company in the service of the ezar. On the declaration of peace the empress Elizabeth bestowed on him a diamond-hilted sword, and a Russian princess left him a fortune, which was still further increased by the death of his cousin, who, on condition of his entering none but the Austrian service, made him his heir. The latter inheritance being heavily burdened, he spent the next three years in a series of lawsuits, and then, after a journey to Italy, became a captain in an Austrian regiment of cuirassiers. At the death of his mother he revisited Ger- many, but was promptly seized by the unforgetful king and closely imprisoned in the fortress of Magdeburg, his efforts to escape securing him the honour of a specially constructed cell, a heavy burden of chains, and the additional punishment of being roused every quarter of an hour by the sentries, Still unsubdued, he found means to remove his chains in the brief intervals afforded him, and occupied himself with French and German composition. In the meantime the princess Amelia had not ceased to move in favour of his release, and Trenck, having been set free in 1763, returned to Vienna only to be recoufined there as a lunatic. He was speedily released by the inter- vention of the king, and raised to the rank of major by way of compensation ; but, being by this time satiated with

royal patronage and prisons, he retired to Aix-la-Chapelle, |

commenced business as a wine merchant, and devoted his leisure to literature and politics, publishing, among other works, a gazette entitled the Friend of Man and an attack on Frederick II. as the ‘‘ Macedonian hero.” His com- mercial experiences, however, were not encouraging, and, after spending three years (1774-1777) in England, he returned to Vienna, became the secret agent of Maria Theresa, and at her death withdrew to his castle of Zwer-

Maria Theresa sent him a | bach, where he gave himself to agriculture and wrote his

famous autobiography. Not until 1787 was he permitted to return to his own country, where he is said to have had an affecting interview with the princess Amelia a few days before her death. The publication of his memoirs (Lebens- geschichte) in 1786, translated into French by himself in 1789, gave him immediate and wide notoriety, and wax effigies of the illustrious prisoner in his chains were exhi- bited on the Parisian boulevards &@ deux sous en sortant. Despite the grounds which the memoirs undoubtedly furnish for Carlyle’s terse characterization of him as an “ extensively fabulous blockhead,” they took a strong hold of the popular imagination, and obliterated for a time the fame of his more darkly passionate pandour cousin. The tragic elements in the story were, however, to be empha- sized by a still more tragic close. His ready advocacy of the French Revolution involved him in disgrace with the Austrian authorities, and, after deprivation of his pension and further imprisonment, he set out towards the close of 1791 for Paris. In place of an enthusiastic reception, he was arrested by order of the Committee of Public Safety as a secret emissary of the king of Prussia, and, after con- finement in the St Lazarus prison, was literally dragged to the guillotine on 25th July 1794. His Sdimmtliche Gedichte und Schriften were published at Leipsic in 1786.

TRENDELENBURG, Friepricu ApotF (1802-1872), one of the chief revivers of Aristotelian study in the pre- sent century, was born on November 30, 1802, at Eutin, near Liibeck. He received his education at the gymnasium of his native town and at the universities of Kiel, Leipsic, and Berlin, displaying from his earliest years an extra- ordinary industry and

thirst for knowledge. He was intro- duced to philosophy by Konig, the rector of the gymnasium a Kantian ; and at Kiel he came under the influence of Reinhold and Von Berger, to the latter of whom, a follower of Schelling, some of his own most characteristic views may be traced. At Berlin he heard Hegel and Schleiermacher ; but his university studies lay chiefly in the direction of classics and classical philology under Wachsmuth, Hermann, and Boeckh. The combination of the philosopher and the philologist, together with a defi- nitely historical turn of mind, is what is most distinctive of all Trendelenburg's work. He became more and more attracted to the study of Plato and Aristotle, and his doctor's dissertation, published in 1826, was an attempt to reach through Aristotle's criticisms a more accurate knowledge of the Platonic philosophy (Platonis de Ideis et Numeris Doctrina ex Aristotele Illustrata). Recognizing the sphere in which his best life-work could be done, he declined the offer of a classical chair at Kiel, and accepted instead a post as tutor to the son of Herr von Nagler, postmaster-general, and an intimate friend of Altenstein, the enlightened minister of education in Prussia. He held this position for seven years (1826-33), occupying his leisure time with the preparation of a critical edition of Aristotle's De Anima, and conscientiously extending his knowledge in all directions. His acquaintance with Karl Ferdinand Becker, the philologist and scientific gram- marian, was of importance for his own views on the origin of the logical categories and the relation of thought to language. In 1833 Trendelenburg was appointed extra- ordinary professor in Berlin, and four years later he was advanced to an ordinary professorship. During nearly forty years he proved himself markedly successful as an academical teacher, treating in turn all the usual philo- sophical disciplines, besides holding more select classes for the study of Aristotle with advanced students. During the greater part of that time he had also to examine in philo- sophy and pedagogics all candidates for the scholastic pro- fession in Prussia. He died on the 24th of January 1872.

TR E—

It was with a view to the philosophical preparation in the gymnasia that he published (1836) his Elements Logices Aristo- telice. This useful little book contains a selection of passages from the Organon, giving ina connected form the substance of Aristotle's logical doctrine. The Greek text is

furnished with a Latin transla- tion and notes, and at a later date Trendelenburg supplemented this book with further explanations for the use of tcachers (Erlauterungen zu den Elementen der aristotelischen Logik, 1842). The Elementa has passed through eight editions, and the Hrlduter- wngen through three. In 1840 appeared the first of his important works, which, under the modest title of Logische Untersuchungen, develops a coherent philosophical theory, besides acutely criticiz- ing other standpoints, and in particular the then dominant Hegelian system. The Logisehe Untersuehungen were, indeed, an important factor in the reaction against Hegel which set in about that time in Germany. ‘Two articles written by Trendelenburg in the con- troversy which ensued were republished separately, under the title Die logisehe Frage in Hegel’s System (1848). A second and en- larged edition of the Logisehe Untersuchungen appeared in 1862, and a third in 1870. In 1846 he published the first volume of his “Historical Contributions to Philosophy” (Historische Beitréige sur Philosophie), containing a history of the doctrine of the cate- gories, which forms a pendant to his own elaboration of the same subject in the Logische Unterswehungen. A second volume of the ‘‘ Historical Contributions’ appeared in 1855, and a third in 1867, consisting of detached essays on points of interest in the history of philosophy. A number of these are papers originally read before the Prussian Academy of the Sciences, of which Trendelenburg was made a member in 1846. He was secretary of the philosophico- historical section from 1847 till 1871, and devoted much of his valuable time to the duties devolving upon him.

Trendelenburg’s philosophizing is conditioned throughout by his loving study of Plato and Aristotle, whom he regards not as opponents but as building jointly on the broad basis of idealism, His own standpoint may almost be called a modern version of Aristotle thus intcrpreted. While denying the possibility of an absolute method and an absolute philosophy, as contended for by Hegel and others, Trendelenburg was emphatically an idealist in the ancient or Platonic sense; his whole work was devoted to the demonstration of the ideal in the real. But he maintained that the procedure of philosophy must be analytic, rising from the particular facts to the universal in which we find them explained. We divine the system of the whole from the part we know, just as from a torso we may reconstruct a work of art; but the process of reconstruction must, in the case of

philosophy, remain approxi- mative. Our position forbids the possibility of a final system. Instead, therefore, of constantly beginning afresh in speculation, it should be our duty to attach ourselves to what may be considered the permanent results of historic developinent. The classical expression of these results Trendelenburg finds mainly in the Platonico-Aristotelian system. The philosophical question is stated thus—How are thought and being united in knowledge? how does thought get at being? and how does being enter into thought? Proceeding on the principle that like can only be known by like, Trendelenburg next reaches a doctrine peculiar to himself (though based upon Aristotle) which plays a central part in lis speculations. Motion is the fundamental fact common to being and thought; the actual motion of the external world has its counterpart in the constructive motion which is involved in every instance of percep- tion or thought. From motion he proceeds to deduce time, space, and the categories of mechanics and natural science. ‘These, being thus derived, are at once subjective and objective in their scope. It is true matter can never be completely resolved into motion, but the irreducible remainder may be treated like the mpdérn tan of Aristotle as an abstraction which we asymptotically approach but never reach. The facts of existence, however, are not ade- quately explained by the mechanical categories. The ultimate inter- pretation of the universe can only be found in the higher category of End or final cause. Here Trendclenburg finds the dividing line between philosophical systems. On the one side stand those which acknowledge none but efficient causes, —which make force prior to thought, and explain the universe, as it were, a tergo. This may be called, typically, Democritism. On the other side stands the “organic” or teleological view of the world, which interprets the

ae ir 543 parts through the idea of the whole, and sees in the efficient causes only the vehicle of ideal ends. This may be called in a wide sense Platonism. Systems like Spinozism, which seem to form a third class, neither sacrificing force to thought nor thought to force, yet by their denial of final causes inevitably fall back into the Demo- critic or essentially materialistic standpoint, leaving us with the great antagonism of the mechanical and the organic systems of philosophy. ‘The latter view, which receives its first support in the facts of life, or organic nature as such, finds its culmination and ultimate verification in the ethical world, which

essentially consists in the realization of ends. Trendelenburg's Naturreeht may, therefore, be taken as in a manner the completion of his system, his working out of the ideal as present in the real. The ethical end is taken to be the idea of humanity, not in the abstract as formulated by Kant, but in the context of the state and of history. Law is treated throughout as the vehicle of ethical requirenients. In Trendelenburg's treatment of the state, as the ethical organism in which the individual (the potential nan) may be said first to emerge into actuality, we may trace his nurture on the best ideas of Hellenic antiquity. (A. SE.)

TRENT (Tridentum ; Ital. Trento; Germ. Trient), a city of the Austrian empire, capital of Italian or ‘‘ Welsch ” Tyrol, stands on the left bank of the Adige, where it is joined by the Fersina, on the Brenner Railway, 35 miles below Botzen and 60 miles above Verona. It has a very picturesque appearance, especially when approached from the north, with its embattled walls and towers filling the whole breadth of the valley, a conspicuous feature being the rocky citadel of Dos Trento (the Roman Verruca) on the right bank of the river. Of the old walls some massive remains are attributed by local tradition to Theodori¢c the Goth. Notwithstanding many symptoms of decay, Trent, with its numerous palaces, substantial houses, broad streets, and spacious squares, still retains the aspect of a flourish- ing Cisalpine town. In appearance it is quite Italian, and the inhabitants speak Italian only. The cathedral, on the south side of the spacious Piazza del Duomo, was begun in its present form in 1212, and finished about the beginning of the 15th century. It preserves, however, some Lombardic features of ornamentation in the portals and elsewhere which possibly date from the 7th or 8th century. The church of St Maria Maggiore, a simple but good example of the Italian style of the 15th century, was the meeting-place of the famous council (see below), and possesses a picture containing portraits of the members. Trent is the seat of a prince-archbishop, and has all the public offices according with its administrative rank. It has a museum and library, a gymnasium, a “lyceum,” a seminary, and a deaf and dumb institute. The chief industries are silk-spinning and weaving, tanning, sugar-refining, and glass-blowing ; and there is considerable trade in wine, grain, and fruit, as also in marble from the extensive quarries in the neighbourhood. The population in 1880 was 19,585.

Tridentum is mentioned by the geographers as capital of the Tri- dentini, and seems ultimately to have been made a Roman colony. It suffered much during the period of barbaric invasion, but was resuscitated by Theodoric, becoming the seat successively of Gothic and Lombard dukes and Frankish counts. In 1027 it passed under the rule of its bishops, with whom it had frequent disputes, in which it sought the favour and alliance of the lords of Tyrol. The Venetians made repeated efforts to set up the lion of St Mark within the walls of Trent, but were decisively and finally repulsed in 1487.

TRENT, THe Councit or, which may be described as the watershed of Roman Catholicism and Protestantism, is the most important occurrence in post-medizval church history. It is the culminating event in a long series of similar assemblies, convoked to remedy the evils occasioned during and by the great schism of the papacy, and by the dissolution of lay and clerical morals to which the pagan temper of the Renaissance had largely contributed. But the councils «f Pisa, Constance, Basel, Fcrrara-Florence, and the Lateran had met and parted without attempting to deal effectually with any of the practical scandals and abuses in the church which were sapping the loyalty and

044

affection it had formerly enjoyed; and these repeated fail- ures, by destroying all hope of redress at the hands of the constituted authorities, precipitated the crash of the Re- formation, which was in its inception scarcely concerned with doctrinal issues directly, but aimed mainly at faults of administration and morals.

Consequently a largely new problem presented itself for solution, and necessitated a fundamental change in the attitude of those concerned. Hitherto, whatever may have been the fierceness and bitterness of the disputes which the 15th-century councils had attempted to allay, they were, so to speak, family quarrels between members of the same great household, accustomed to the same mode of looking at religious questions, acknowledging the same hierarchy, and accepting the same standards, and thus with a vast body of agreement to go upon as a basis of reconciliation, leaving only comparatively minor details to beadjusted. But the German and Swiss Reformation had generated new conimunions, novel alike in their

polity and much of their theology, and in active revolt, not merely against this or that detail or abuse, but against the Roman Catholic Church in its entirety, hierarchical, doctrinal, and political, The movement had not been confined long to its earlier limits, but had spread over all western Europe, had virtually conquered Holland and Scandinavia, was mak- ing great strides in France and England, and was begin- ning to threaten even Italy and Spain. Thus, the task was no longer the comparatively simple one of satisfying the demands of friendly remonstrants, but of winning back alienated nations, and, if that were too much to hope for, at least of saving the remnant of the Roman obedience from further disintegration. And for this purpose it was no longer sufficient, as it would have been a few years earlier, to discuss administrative details alone, but a review of the whole theological fabric of Latin Christianity, no part of which had been left wholly unimpeached, became a necessary factor in any possible scheme of reconcilia- tion. ‘True, a precedent had been set in the theological discussions at the council of Ferrara-Florence, with its abortive effort to reunite Oriental and Latin Christendom, but the area and number of differences to be reconciled upon that occasion were incomparably smaller than those which had subsequently arisen, and the situation was thus one of extreme difficulty and delicacy, since there was always the danger of alienating many who had continued loyal so far, if very large concessions were made to the revolted Protestants, not a few of whom, besides, had already passed beyond the possibility of reconciliation. But, on the other hand, Luther had himself appealed to a general council from the bull “ Exsurge Domine” launched at him by Leo X. in 1520, and his demand was taken up by the emperor and the princes of Germany, whether Catholics or Protestants, as the only conceivable means of terminating a crisis whose religious and political results might prove far more serious than even the least hopeful ventured to forecast. There was thus steady pressure from one side put upon the Roman curia to obtain the con- vocation of such a council, while scarcely less resistance to the proposal was offered by two very unlike parties in the Roman Church itself. For not only did those oppose it who were interested in the maintenance of the principal abuses complained of, and who feared that sweeping measures might be taken for their abolition, but some of

Yh hy FT

the ablest champions of internal reforms, such as Cardinals | Sadolet, Contarini, and Reginald Pole, were equally hostile |

to it, for the very different reason that they believed any such council likely to contain a majority determined on making it as abortive as those great synods had been which were fresh in the memory of all. Accordingly, this section gave its voice for the alternative scheme of pro-

ceeding by way of less formal conferences, at which mutual explanations and concessions night be made by Catholics and Protestants, whereby a modus vivende could be established, with less chance of the whole effort being wrecked by the intrigues of those who desired nothing less than practical reforms. A fresh difficulty was pre- sented by the opposition of the German princes to the assemblage of the council at Rome or anywhere outside Germany, as they distrusted the probable action of the Italian element, certain to preponderate in that event; and, as the curia was equally bent on holding it within the sphere of direct papal influence, this dispute made it impracticable to agree even on the preliminaries during the pontificates of Hadrian VI. and Clement VII. The diet of Spires in 1529 renewed the demand for a general council, to be held in some large German city ; and the diet of Augsburg in 1530 summoned the Lutherans to return into Catholic communion at once and uncondition- ally, leaving their doctrines (formulated in the Confession of Augsburg that very year) to be judged of in a future council, which the emperor Charles V. pledged himself to obtain within a brief space. Clement VII. then pope, was displeased at this initiative on the emperor’s part, but offered to convoke a council in some Italian city, such as Mantua or Milan, belonging to the empire, and outside the States of the Church,—expressing his wish that Charles V. should personally attend it. But he hampered this pro- posal with conditions which made it valueless for the main object of such an assembly, by declaring that no theo- logical questions upon which the church had spoken could be reopened, and that, if Protestants were to be admitted to the council at all, it must be, not as disputants, but as on their trial, and pledged beforehand to submit to the decisions of the council. No result, consequently, followed upon this step, nor was an embassy which Clement

sent in 1533 to the German princes and to the kings of France and England with very similar provisions more successful, for it merely drew out a peremptory rejection of the scheme from the Protestants assembled at Schmalkald, by the emperor's desire, for the purpose of discussing it. So the matter rested till the accession of Alexander Farnese to the papal throne as Paul III. in 1534, A much abler man than his predecessor, he was also more alive to the imperative need of at least appearing to approve some measure of reform, if the church was to be saved from impending dangers (indeed, a report on this subject, drawn up at his desire by a committee of cardinals in 1536, is one of the most important documents of the era), and he was thought to be favourable to the project of a council, whereas there is little doubt that Clement VII. had weighted his acceptance of the plan with impossible con- ditions, in order to avoid its realization, yet so as to let the responsibility of refusal rest with others than himself. Paul III. sent Vergerio as envoy into Germany, to confer with the emperor and the princes, offering to convoke a council at Mantua, and urging the danger of attempting to hold it in Germany, by reason of the violent lengths to which the Anabaptists were then proceeding. But, while the Catholic princes were content with this offer, it was refused by the Protestants, and the ambassadors of France and England supported them in their attitude. Vergerio, who had also a fruitless interview with Luther, returned to Rome early in 1536, but Paul ILI. was not discouraged by his failure, and proposed, in a consistory on April 8, to convoke a council at Mantua. This plan was in turn upset, not only by the continued resistance of the Protestants, but by the refusal of the duke of Mantua to permit the use of his city for such a purpose, unless upon conditions which the pope was unwilling to accept. Notice was accordingly given of a council to be opened

at Vicenza on May 1, 1538, and legates were despatched thither to make the preliminary arrangements, and to preside so soon as the members should assemble. But when the appointed time was only five days off not one bishop had arrived, and the pope was forced to prorogue the council again and again. Meanwhile, the method which Contarini and Sadolet had recommended, that of conferences between the Catholics and Protestants, was being acted on in Germany, and meetings of this nature were convened

successively at Haguenau, Worms, and Ratisbon, at the last of which, in 1541, Contarini was present as legate of the pope, and showed so much tact, moderation, and sympathy that he succeeded in securing a large measure of agreement upon the controversies in dispute, notably on the vexed question of Justification. But, as his concessions and explanations were promptly repudiated at Rome, no practical result followed. In 1542 Paul IIT. sent Morone as his envoy to the diet of Spires to offer Trent as his final concession of the place of assembly, on the ground that its position in Tyrol, and its being part of the dominions of the king of the Romans, ought to meet all the reasonable requirements of the German princes. Ferdinand, king of the Romans, who presided at the diet, was content with this offer, as were the Catholic princes generally, but the Protestants con- tinued to object, and refused any council which should not be completely free from papal influence and authority. However, the pope issued, on May 22, 1542, a bull appointing the meeting of the council for November 1 fol- lowing. He sent three legates to Trent to make prepara- tions,—Morone, Parisio, and Reginald Pole; but they did not reach the city till three weeks later than the appointed date for opening the council, and so few bishops arrived during seven months from that time that it was necessary to prorogue the assembly. In fact, the idea of the council was distasteful to a very large proportion of the Latin clergy, especially such as apprehended danger to their private interests from the reforming plans of the pope, and also such as were alarmed lest serious religious innova- tions might be made in order to conciliate the Protestants. While this delay continued, another diet at Spires in 1544 resulted in great advantages to the Lutherans, who availed themselves of the political straits of Charles V. to extort several important concessions from him. The obnoxious edicts passed against them s Worms and Augsburg were rescinded ; they were permitted to retain such ecclesiastical property as they had seized ; they were made eligible for such civil and ecclesiastical offices as had been previously barred against them; and general tolera- tion for the time being was established. This policy was extremely distasteful to the pope, who addressed a brief to the emperor, strongly remonstrating against it, and renewing his offer of a council. Charles V., who had not been a free agent in the matter, was much of the pope’s mind, and proceeded to relieve himself of one difficulty in the way of reversing his action, by concluding peace with Francis I. of France on September 8, 1544. Hereupon Paul III. directed public thanksgivings to be

offered throughout the whole Latin Church, and issued a bull removing the suspension of the council, and summoning it to meet at Trent on March 15, 1545. Unable from age and illness to be present himself, as he had wished, he named Giammaria del Monte, bishop of Palestrina (after- wards Pope Julius III.), Marcello Cervini (afterwards Pope Marcellus II.), and Reginald Pole as his legates. The ex- perience of former abortive openings was repeated, for they found but one bishop awaiting them, and so few con- tinued to arrive that a fresh prorogation was forced upon the legates, and the pope, in the bull authorizing this action, added a proviso that no proxies should be received,

but that all bishops summoned should attend in person, under severe penalties for contumacy. On November 7, 1545, the legates received final instructions to open the council upon December 13, and did so with solemn cere- monial, but only as a formal initiative of the proceedings, for the first session was postponed till January 7, 1546. When that time arrived, no more than some five and twenty archbishops and bishops, five generals of religious orders, and the ambassadors of King Ferdinand had as- sembled, and none of the conciliar officers had yet been nominated, nor any programme of procedure sketched out. The most important question arising under this last head was whether the voting should be taken by nations, as at the council of Constance, or by individuals, and the matter was referred to the pope, who gave his decision for the latter, as at once the more ancient (since Constance and Basel were the only precedents for the national vote) and the more convenient. Moreover, this ruling secured from the outset a working majority of Italian bishops in the assembly, at once by reason of the small size of the average Italian diocese, and of the greater ease with which Trent could be reached from Italy than from any other country which sent representatives thither, besides enabling the pope to swell the majority (as in the Vatican council three centuries later) with bishops im partibus, having no dioceses or jurisdiction, thus amply justifying the objec- tion taken all along by the German Protestants to the assemblage of the council anywhere outside Germany.

Some preliminaries had to be settled before the second session, and the plan of holding private ‘‘ general congregations,” where theologians of non-episcopal rank could sit and share in the dis- cussion and preparation of the decrees to be proposed and voted on in public session, was at once adopted and observed thenceforward. And first, the question was raised whether any persons except bishops should be allowed to vote upon matters of doctrine. The decision was that the vote should be allowed to the generals of religious orders also, and that the right of the proxies of absent bishops to vote should be referred to the pope. The title to be given to the council at the head of the deerces in each session was then discussed, and a proposal to add the words “‘ representing the church universal” (as at Basel and Constance) to the usual formula ‘‘weneral and cecumenical” was rejected at the instance of the legates, as indirectly menacing to papal autocraey. The legates also privately informed the pope that the majority of the members desired to take up the question of practical reforms before that of doctrine, and that it might be necessary to yield the point to avoid scandal or the imputation of sympathy with abuses, but that they would insist, in that case, on making the measures of reform apply all round, to princes and laymen as well as to ecclesiastics, which would probably damp the ardour of its advocates.

The aetual business of the second session (January 7, 1546) was confined to the promulgation of a decree touching the discipline to be observed by the members of the council during its progress, as well in the matters of their private devotion and their food as in the conduct of the debates. The congregations which preceded the third session were mainly occupied with debating the thorny question of the order in which the discussion of faith and of dis- cipline was to come, and it was at last agreed to take them simultancously.

So few additional bishops had arrived up to this time that it was judged inexpedient to pronmlgate any decrees in the third session (February 4, 1548), and little was done except the publie recitation of the Niceno-Constantinopolitan creed as the authoritative con- fession of the Roman Church, and, as the council worded it, ‘‘ that firm and only foundation against which the gates of hell shall not prevail.” A fortnight after this third session Martin Luther died (February 18, 1546), just as the situation in

Germany was becoming more strained, and the emperor, alarmed at the rapid advance of Reformed opinions and practices (notably in the Palatinate, where the elector had made large concessions), was taking measures for suppressing the religious revolt by force of arms. The canon of Scripture was proposed in the congregations before the fourth session as the subject for discussion, and the three following questions were raised :—(1) Were all the books of both Testaments to be approved and received? (2) Was there to be a fresh inquiry into their canonical character before giving such approval? (38) Should there be any distinction drawn between the books, as being some of them read merely for moral instruction, and others for proving the doctrines of Christian belief? The first of these . guestions was decided affirmatively. The second led to much de-

XR == 69

bate; the conclusion arrived at was that a secret examination of the evidence should be made, but not suffcred to appear in the public acts of the council. The third question was decided nega- tively. These congregations were the first whercin theological experts and canonists, not being members of the council, were admitted to a share in the discussions. The nature and function of tradition was also debated at this time, and the legates informed the pope that there was a strong tendency in the council to set it aside altogether, and to make Scripture the sole standard of appeal. Another burning question debated was that of vernacular transla- tion and lay study of Scripture. The result, in the fourth session (April 8, 1546), was the promulgation of two decrees, the first of which enacts, under anathema, that Scripture and tradition are to be received and venerated equally, and that the deutero-canonical books are part of the canon of Scripture. The second decree de- clared the Vulgate to be the sole authentic and standard Latin version, and gave it such authority as to supersede the original texts; forbade the interpretation of Scripture contrary to the sense received by the church, ‘‘or even contrary to the unanimous con- sent of the fathers”; imposed various restrictions upon printers and vendors of Bibles; made licences to read any Biblica).iinanu- script or publication compulsory; and prohibited the application of Scripture language to profane and superstitious

purposes. The subjects next taken up were the doctrine of original sin and the reformation of abuses concerned with preachers and lecturers, which were made the matter of two decrees in the fifth session (June 17, 1546). The most noticeable point in the former is the saving clause, whereby the tenet of the Immaculate Conception of the Blessed Virgin is excepted from decision, and left open; the latter enjoins the erection of a lectureship of Scripture in all cathedrals, collegiate churches, and monasteries, imposes the duty of preaching upon all bishops and persons with cure of souls, lays down stringent rules as to preaching licences, and forbids the “questors” (that is, the collectors of alms commissioned by the mendicant orders) to preach anywhere. There was a treaty concluded between the pope and the emperor a few days after this session, to make war against the German Protestants on the express ground of their refusal to submit to the council, and from this may be dated the end of any serious effort in the council itself to deal with the question of reconciliation, although the original motive for its convocation. Moreover, so little interest was felt even by the Roman episcopate in the proceedings at Trent that, instead of fresh accessions coming to recruit the small numbers present, constant defections took place, and a proposal to stop this by forbidding any bishop to quit Trent without formal permission was carried. The doctrine of Justification, made a burning question by the pro- minence given to it in Lutheran theology, was next taken up, and, this being, so to speak, a new controversy, with few precedents to guide the council, the discussion was proportionably protracted. It is noteworthy that Luther’s views found some supporters, and the resignation of the legateship at this time by Reginald Pole, and his departure from the council, never to return, is attributed to his dissatisfaction with the conclusions arrived at upon this subject in itsdecree. The disciplinary question discussed at this time was that of the obligation of residence, especially as regards bishops; and decrees upon both these subjects were promulgated in the sixth session (January 18, 1547),—that on Justification being a formal dogmatic treatise in sixteen chapters, thirty-three canons; that on residence reviving former canons, and imposing new penaltics, but avoiding the solution of a question hotly debated in the council, whether the residence of bishops was obligatory jure divino, or merely by ecclesiastical precept. Meanwhile, Charles V. was victorious in his war with the Protestants, and had all Germany in his power, but, instead of using the opportunity, as the pope expected, to put down the Reformers,

he alleged that the recent war had not been one of religion, and assumed an attitude of tolera- tion, Hereupon Paul IIL, in order to break up this truce, sent instructions to the legates to press on decrees displeasing to the Protestants, judging that the emperor's well-known interest in the council would cause him to be accounted responsible for its measures, and thus lose all credit for his recent forbearance. In the seventh session, held on March 8, 1547, two decrees were promulgated, —one defining the sacraments as seven in number, and as being all channels of grace, also adding special canons concerning baptism and confirmation; the other dealing with pluralities, unions of benefices, repair of churches, and kindred matters, but with no great stringency. A more important part of the business of this session was the open declaration of a measure which the pope and the legates had been privately planning for some time, the trans- ference of the council from Trent to some city more directly under papal control; for, while Trent sufficed for headquarters as against Protestants, yet it was found that a virtual coalition between the Spanish, French, and German bishops to resist the Italians inter- fered with the intentions of the papal court, and could be most effectively broken up by a change of place. Occasion was accord- ingly taken from an outbreak of disease, alleged to be infections, at Trent to issue a bull transferring the council to Bologna, which

was read in the seventh session, while the promulgation of a decree in accordance with it formed the whole business of the eighth session (March 11, 1547). When it had been passed, the legates produced a brief which they had obtained more than two years before, empowering them to transfer the council as they pleased. But, while they themselves quitted Trent the next day, and were followed by the majority of the bishops, those of the emperor's party continued in session at Trent, and refused to leave it without

the permission of their sovereign, though they abstained from all –

conciliar action, in order to avoid the charge of schism. Charles V., incensed at the pope's action, sent a mandate approving and confirming their

conduct. The ninth session, held at Bologna (April 21, 1547), and the tenth also (June 2, 1547), were merely formal, nothing being done save to prorogue the council. The practical result of this split in the council was to relieve the Pro- testants fron1 imminent peril; for, while the emperor's successes enabled him to put severe pressure upon them to submit to its decrees, it was itself incapacitated for valid action, as neither the bishops at Bologna nor those at Trent could claim to be the whole council, nor demand acceptance of their acts as binding. Hence Charles V. was urgent for the return of the entire body to Trent, and threatened, in case of refusal, to go to Rome, and hold the council there himself. Aud he took an even more peremptory step by constituting himself arbiter of the whole controversy, appointing Julius Pflug, bishop of Naumburg, a prelate known to be friendly to the Lutherans, Michael Holding, called Sidonius, afterwards bishop of Merseburg, and John Agricola, a Lutheran writer of some mark, to draft an eirenicon yee the points in dispute, which was published under the title of the '' Interim," by the emperor's authority, at the diet of Augsburg, May 15, 1548. It proved, however, inefficacious, and was formally repudiated and answered by the Catholic princes and states of the empire, and yet more peremptorily by the Protestants, its only result being the " In- terimistic controversy." It was succeeded by another formulary concerning reformation, accepted by the diet. While the emperor was endeavouring to force the " Interim" upon his dominions, the pope, on his part, strove to remove the dead-lock of the divided council, and convoked a committee to consist of members of both the Bolognese and the Tridentine sections to confer upon ecclesi- astical reforms. But the bishops at Trent, having communicated with the emperor, and waited three weeks for his sanction, re- fused to leave that city, and the pope was compelled to direct the legates at Bologna to dismiss the bishops assembled there, and to announce the suspension of the council, which was accordingly done upon September 17, 1549. Paul III. died on November 10, 1549, and was succeeded on February 7, 1550, by Cardinal del Monte, the chief legate at the council, who took the title of Julius III. The break in the continuity of the council occasioned by these proceedings lasted till May 1, 1551, when the eleventh session was held at Trent under the presidency of Cardinal Crescenzio, sole legate in title, but with two nuncios, Pighini and Lippomani, as co-ordinate assessors. It was merely formal, as was also the twelfth session, on September 1, 1551. Just at this time Henry II., king of

France, having quarrelled with the pope about the duchy of Parma, sent an envoy to the council at Trent, with letters styling it a ‘‘convention,” denying its cecumenical character, declaring that it was not accessible to himself or to the French bishops, and notifying a protest against the validity of its proceedings, which he desired might be registered, and a copy of the register returned to him. No reply was made to this demand; so Henry dismissed the papal nuncio from his court, and published a

manifesto to justify himself, at the same time that, in order to .

repel any charge of sympathy with the Protestants, he promulgated a severe edict against them. But the absence of French bishops, and the comparatively scanty attendance from Germany, threw matters more than ever into the hands of the Italian majority, as appeared from the decrees promulgated in the thirteenth session (October 11, 1551), and indeed from the attitude taken up by the legates just before it. For the obstinate refusal of the Protestants to attend or even recognize the council was on the point of giving way, and the imperial ambassadors demanded a safe-conduct for such as might present themselves, with some warranty that it should be really safe. They also desired the postponement of any decision on the doctrine of the Eucharist, and especially as regards the communion of the laity in the chalice. The pope expressed himself willing to grant both these demands, but no real attention was paid to either of them. As respects the attendance of the Protestants, the letters of Francis Vargas, fiscal (attorney-general) in Spain to Charles V., and his agent at the council, state plainly that the legates merely pretended to desire it, and were secretly doing everything to prevent it, while the very points as to which delay had been promised were made the subject of the decrees in the above-named session. The decree on the Eucharist was specially directed against Lutheran and Zwinglian opinions then recently broached, and was couched in eight chapters with eleven canons appended. It reasserted the doctrine of Transubstantiation, already defined by the fourth Lateran council in 1216, while, by

the third of the canons, which declares that the wnole sacrament is entire in each kind, it indirectly, though effectively, ruled against the grant of the

chalice to the laity; and in fact the Reformed thesis that they were entitled to it by divine right, and could not be debarred from it without sin, was unanimously condemned in the previous congregation. Some unimportant decrees affecting the criminal jurisdiction of bishops, and for referring the trials of bishops themselves to the pope, were enacted at the same time; but more noteworthy was a decree for postponing the decision upon lay and infant communion, and for granting a safe-conduct to the Protestants, which was the last business transacted upon this occasion. But the safe-conduct was worded so as to excite general and reasonable suspieion on the part of thosc to whom it was ‘offered, and Vargas, who was no friend to their opinions, comments freely upon its deceptive ambiguity. In the fourteenth session (November 25, 1551) decrees upon penance and extreme unction, prepared in the congregations, and embodied in twelve chapters upon the former and three on the latter topic, followed severally by fiftecn’and four canons, were promulgated. Some disciplinary

enactments affecting the clergy, and corrective of minor abuses, ’

were enacted at the same time, the most important provisions being the abolition of the papal dispensations exempting their holders from the jurisdiction of the ordinary, and the restriction of the action of titular bishops. But the reforming party in the council was much discontented with the inadequacy of these measures, which added little to the very small progress made so far in the revival of discipline. Although no Protestant theologians had yet presented themselves at Trent, representatives of the duke of Wiirtemberg arrived at this time, who were instructed to lay the Wiirtemberg Confession before the council, and to say that Pro- testant divines who could give explanations of it were waiting some forty miles from Trent, and were prepared to attend the council so soon as a safe-conduct exactly conformable with that granted to the Bohemians by the council of Basel was issued, and on the further conditions that the discussions actually going on should be suspended and all the matters so far decided be reopened, that the pope should cease to preside by legates or otherwise, but declare lis own submission to the decrees of the council, and absolve the bishops from their oath of allegiance to himself in order to secure their liberty of action. The envoys refused to treat with the legates at all, and condueted their negotiations through the imperial ambassadors.

Crescenzio was very angry, and refused all concession, even going so far as to abstract the conciliar seal, lest the safe-conduet might be granted; but pressure was put upon him by the imperial ambassadors, and he was forced to eonsent to the admission of the Protestant envoys at a private congregation to be held in his own house, though he resisted the demand for introducing them to a public session. And, when the safe-conduct was recast, it was found to differ seriously from that proposed as its model, especially by failing to give the Protestants the rights of session and suffrage, of observing their own religion in their houses, and of being guaranteed against insults to their creed. To the remonstrances made in consequence the legate returned a per- emptory reply, refusing to make any further change, and only the instanees of the emperor, then at Innsbruek, but three days' journey from Trent, induced the Protestant envoys to remain a little longer, to find if any better terms could be obtained. Some more Protestant envoys from Strasburg and other cities, and from Maurice of Saxony, arrived early in 1552, and were admitted to a congregation held on January 24, where they renewed the demands already mentioned, and required also that the decrees of Constance and Basel, declaring the pope inferior and subject to a general council, should be reaffirmed. They were promised an answer in due time, and the fifteenth session was held the next day (January 25, 1552), wherein the council was prorogucd, anda safe-eonduct more in aceordance with the Protestant demands was drawn up and pub- lished. It is remarkable, however, for one omission, and for one significant clause. The omission is that of toleration for the private exercise of their religion; the insertion is a proviso pledging the council not to avail itself, ''for this one occasion," of any laws or canons whatever, '"'especially those of Constanee and Siena," as against the Protestants. The reference is to the canon of Constance by means of which John Huss was tried and burnt, declaring a safe-conduct no protection against trial for heresy, even if the accused has come in reliance on the safe-conduct, and would not have come without it, which canon was reaffirmed at the council of Siena in 1423. While the negotiations occasioned by these proceedings were in course, war broke out anew in Germany, and Maurice of Saxony obtained considerable successes over the emperor, took Augsburg, and was marching down upon Tyrol, so that Charles V. fled in haste from Innsbruck, and the legate convened the sixteenth session (April 28, 1552) of the council, wherein a decree was promulgated suspending it for two years in

consequence of the perils of war. There was a general stampede from Trent at once, and the legate Crescenzio, then very ill, had just strength to reach Verona, where he died three days after his arrival,

So ended what is styled by some historians, and cor- rectly, the first council of Trent, for, although the usual computation recognizes only one such council, yet an in- terruption of ten years, a widely changed personality, and a marked alteration in tone make the resumed synod virtually another assembly, and one by no means entitled to the degree of respect which the ability and learning of many members of that first convoked won for it. When the council dispersed, Julius III. at once in consistory repeated the policy of Paul IJI., and nominated a com- mittee to prepare a scheme of reform, but it never took action of any kind; and at the close of the two years' suspension of the council the question was put in con- sistory as to the resumption of the sessions, and decided, with the pope's approval, in the negative. Julius ITI. died on March 23, 1555, and was succeeded on April 11, 1555, by Cardinal Marcello Cervini, one of the former legates at the council, a man of high reputation for personal devoutness and freedom from that sympathy with abuses which marked too many of the dignitaries of the time. He took the title of Marcellus II., and his first public utterance was to intimate his purpose of re- assembling the council, and of carrying out a plan of thorough reform in discipline, particularly directed to abating the pomp and luxury of the prelacy. But he was in feeble health when elected, and the fatigues of his new position brought on an attack of apoplexy which carried him off three weeks after his accession. In his room was chosen, on May 23, 1555, Cardinal Giovanni Pietro Caraffa, who took the title of Paul IV. He was known to profess great austerity of life, to have actually founded the Theatines, an ascetic community, and to be a stern and implacable advocate for several measures of repression against innovators in matters of religion or impugners of papal prerogative, as he quickly showed by setting up the Inquisition in Rome, and taking care that it should not be idle. His election consequently caused much alarm, and was especially displeasing to the emperor ; and the earlier acts of his pontificate seemed to justify the

estimate formed of his character and the fears of those who apprehended that he would proceed to reform discipline in a swifter and more drastic fashion than had hitherto been essayed. For in fact he pledged himself to this effect in the first bull published after his accession, follow- ing it up with a show of activity by at once setting some minor reforms on foot.

During these three years important events had taken place in Germany. By the peace of Passau in 1552, the Protestants of the Augsburg Confession were secured from all molestation, and in the free exercise of their religion and of their civil rights, and this was followed up by a decree of the diet of Augsburg, on September 25, 1555, that, failing a national council to settle the religious disputes, the emperor, the king of the Romans, and the other Catholic princes should not interfere in any way with the religious liberties of the Lutherans holding to the Confession of Augsburg, provided they in their turn would exhibit equal tolerance towards Catholics; that no penalty, save the loss of benefices, should be imposed on any Catholic ecclesiastics joining the Lutheran body ; and that such benefices as the Protestants had already annexed for the support of their schools and ministers should remain in their possession. Paul IV. was much incensed at these proceedings, and used all efforts to procure their repeal, on the failure of which he openly broke with the emperor, formed an alliance with the French king against him, and imprisoned the cardinals and other personages of the imperial party on whom he could lay hands, confiscating the property of such as saved themselves by flight. He continued for a time in the measures of reform with which

he began his reign, striking against jobbery, pluralities, dispensations, and laxity of clerical manners ; but all this short-lived zeal was speedily neutralized by his nepotism, surpassing that of any of his predecessors, and throwing the government of the States of the Church into the hands of his dissolute nephews, upon whom he rained all the wealth, honours, and authority in his power to bestow. And, as was to be expected, he set himself steadily to oppose every one of the class of reforms which touched doctrinal questions, just those for which the Protestants were urgent, encouraging only such as promoted the unity and discipline of the Roman Church itself,

and made it more capable of effective resistance to the Reformation. Fle was not favourable to the reassembling of the council, not merely because of his experience of its languid action, nor even his dislike of the struggles of the non-Italian minority to assert some measure of independence against the coercive tutelage exerted by the several papal legates from the very first, but because he regarded himself as the sole and proper person to consider such matters at all, and a bull of his own promulgation a better mode of procedure, at once in fulness of authority and swiftness of formulation, than any conciliar decree. Consequently, no step for the resumption of the council was taken during his reign, which ended on August 18, 1559, After a longer inter- regnum than usual, Giovanni Angelo de' Medici (not a member of the great Florentine house, but of humble Milanese extraction) was elected on December 26, 1559, as Pius IV. Markedly unlike his predecessor in almost every personal quality, he was much his superior in practical shrewdness and tact, and had none of that dislike to a council which Paul IV. had shown. So great, too, had been the strides made by the Reformation during his predecessor's reign that he might well think Paul IV.'s policy undesirable, and he had this special motive for reversing it, that a movement was going on in France for the convocation of a national council there to consider the whole religious situation, which might very conceivably result in a revolt like that of England from the Roman obedience. Accordingly, Pius IV. determined on the resumption of the council of Trent, and issued a bull on November 29, 1560, convoking it anew.

But the whole face of Western Christendom, the whole religious situation, had materially changed since the ori- ginal assemblage of the synod in 1545. First, the imposing personality of Charles V. was removed from the scene, and Ferdinand I., his successor, enjoyed neither his per- sonal ascendency nor his political power, and could not be accounted as a possible competitor with the pope for the first place in the Catholic world, nor even as an ally with means for crushing the Reformation. Next, the Reformation itself was by this time an accomplished fact, a consummated revolt from medizeval Christianity. It had taken definite shape in various countries; it had its own theological systems and traditions ; besides that a whole generation had now grown up under its influence, never having had any personal associations with Latin

Christianity. And, on the other hand, the very lengths

to which some of the Reformers had gone in their revolt generated a corresponding reaction in the Roman Church, so that many influential persons who had been in favour of moderate reforms and of explaining disputed points of theology were convinced that no limits could be logically or practically set to concessions in this direction, and therefore that it was necessary to make a stand against any concessions at all. And, what is more, one noticeable effect of the wave of controversy which had swept over western Europe was to accentuate points of difference, to close questions previously open, to make the current beliefs more incisive and, so to speak, legal in form, to diminish

rh Ee NY

[couNcIL,

seriously the neutral area between the competing religious systems, and thus to bring them face to face as irrecon- cilable foes. One factor more, of greater importance at the time than any other, contributed to the revolution which is marked by the second council of Trent. As Spain took the political lead in the earlier half of the 16th century, so it took also the lead in theology. The Spanish divines were abler and more learned than all save the very foremost in any other country, and their influence was throughout the greatest at the council of Trent on purely theological issues. Now, the political and the theological genius of Spain had both just found their highest exponent in one person and the organization which he devised, Ignatius Loyola and the Company of the Jesuits. Two of his immediate disciples and recruits, Salmeron and Laynez, were chosen to be the pope's theologians at the council of Trent, and exercised a greater influence than any other divines there in the formulation of its dogmatic decrees. But the Jesuits were to do more than this. The militant spirit of their founder had nothing in common with the alarm and vacillation which had for the most part marked the action of the Roman Church in dealing with the Lutheran and Calvinist revolt; and, instead of being con- tent with devising schemes for standing on the defensive, and saving the remnant yet left to the Roman obedience, he conceived the bolder and safer plan of vigorous aggres- sion, to reconquer all that had been lost, and to add fresh acquisitions thereto.

The Counter-Reformation which he initiated was in full operation when the second council of Trent assembled, and it was by this spirit that it was guided in its deliberations and decrees. ‘The very thought of compromise was abandoned in fact, if not in open expression, and the only reforms thenceforward taken into consideration were such as would remove causes of weak- ness and scandal in the Latin Church, enabling it, without sacrificing one of its claims, to overcome by superior mass and discipline, by closer unity and more organized enthusi- asm, the heterogeneous, disordered, and already dissociated forces of Protestantism. The most obvious effect of these principles upon the second council of Trent was that the diminution, tlie all but disappearance, of variety of opinion amongst its members, and the resolution to crush Protest- antism rather than to parley with it in any scheme of mutual concession or accommodation, tended to shorten the preliminary discussions in a marked degree, so that little is to be noted of the long and animated debates of the earlier period, and the last few sessions exhibit even tokens of actual hurry to end the matter anyhow.

There was no intention on the pope’s part to proclaim the Counter-Reformation as the policy of the council, even if it may be safely assumed that he could predict its action, and he sent nuncios to the Protestant sovereigns as well as to the Catholics to signify the approaching resumption of its sittings. Francis II. of France had died between the promulgation of the bull and its notification in France, but the young king Charles IX., by the advice of the parlement of Paris, directed all the bishops of the kingdom to be in readiness for journeying to Trent. Three nuncios were despatched to Germany, but the princes assembled in diet at Naumburg received them unfavourably, asserting anew their determination to recognize no council which did not avow Scripture as its standard of appeal and give right of free discussion to Protestants, denying the right of any one save the emperor to convene a general council at all, and inveighing strongly against the papacy. The king of Denmark declined to admit the nuncio on any terms, declaring that neither he nor his father had ever had any dealings with the pope ; and Martinenghi, the nuncio commissioned to Elizabeth of England, was stopped by a messenger while still on the

Continental side of the Channel, and informed that he would not be permitted to land on the English coast. The free cities of the empire also refused the summons, as did five of the Swiss cantons; and even a large number of Roman Catholic prelates, while professing unqualified obedience to the pope's commands, showed much unwilling- ness to act upon them, and pleaded age, illness, or dio- cesan business as excuses for absenting themselves from the council. In this unprontising posture of affairs the preparations for the council were pressed on, and Cardinals Ercole Gonzaga, bishop of Mantua, Seripando, Hosius, Simoneta, and (later on) Altemps, the pope's nephew, were named as legates, being directed to open the session of the council upon Easter Day, April 6, 1561. But they did not even arrive in Trent until April 16, and found no more than nine bishops awaiting them. Several causes conduced to this disappointment: the king of Spain had not yet accepted the bull convoking the council; the French bishops were more than fully occupied with the rapid advances of the Reformation in their midst; and the Germans had no great inclination for the repetition of their experience ten years before. It was thus necessary to postpone the assemblage till January 1 and then to January 18, 1562. That there might be a sufficient number of Italian bishops present to outvote any possible combination of others, the pope collected a large number of prelates, appointed them salaries for maintenance, and sent them off to Trent. Two questions of the highest practical importance came up for discussion in the pre- liminary congregation, wherein ninety-two bishops were present :—(1) Was the council to be styled a " continua- tion" of the previous one, or to be reckoned as a new synod? (2) Should the unprecedented clause in the papal decree for opening the council (but not found in the bull of convocation), " proponentibus legatis ac prasidentibus," be accepted and acted on, or rescinded? 'To declare the council a "continuation" of its precursor was to accept and ratify all which had been done therein ; to treat it as a new one was to make every decree of the earlier sessions merely provisional and alterable. To adopt the novel clause embodied in the papal decree was to gag the council from the outset and deprive it of freedom by concentrat- ing the initiative in the hands of the legates ; and Guerrero, archbishop of Granada, pressed this objection with much urgency. On the other hand, this same prelate, acting on the orders of Philip II., demanded that the council should be plainly declared a continuation of its precursor, for Philip had already introduced some of the

regulations of that synod into his dominions, and would lose credit if they were rescinded, or even treated as lacking full sanction. Contrariwise, the bishops of other nations present held that there was no prospect of inducing the Germans, English, and other partly alienated nationalities to send representatives, unless the proceedings so far should be regarded as capable of reconsideration and alteration at the hands of the actual assembly. The authorities at Rome were not unprepared for some difficulty on this head, and had endeavoured to evade it by using the indeterminate word "celebrated," which might be taken either way, and the Spanish remonstrants were privately told that it was understood that business should be taken up just where it had left off under Julius IIL, thus making the synod a continuation of the former one, but that any express statement to that effect had been carefully avoided, lest the Protestants should take offence, and thus one aim of the council might be defeated. The Spaniards were partly contented with this reply, but urged that nothing which could be interpreted as the convocation of a new council should be suffered to appear in the wording of the decree about to be publicly read, which was conceded.

TRER?

O49

The seventeenth session was held (January 18, 1562) in the presence of the legates, —106 bishops, 4 abbots, 4 generals of orders, and the duke of Mantua, nephew of the chief legate, being present. Four Spanish bishops lodged a protest against the proposing clause —two of them unreservedly, two in a more qualified manner—and they particularly objected to the novelty of the clause, and to the manner in which it had been sprung upon the council, the arch- bishop of Granada and the bishop of Orense pointing out that it was not in the original bull, with which the subsequent decree ought to be in complete agreement, and the former adding that it was not even in the copy of the decree shown to him. But the Italian majority was too strong, and the protest was overruled,— the prorogation of the council to February 26, 1562, being the only further business transacted. But a very important question was laid before the congregations which followed this session, that of providing some remedy for the injury done to the Roman Catholic Church by the circulation of more or less hostile books, a difficulty

made incomparably greatcr from the middle of the 15th century onwards than at any previous time in history, by reason of the invention of printing. The council of Lateran in 1515 had made a licence from the ecclesiastical authorities requisite before any book could be printed, under pain of excommunication, but this penalty did not affect Protestant printers, and the issue of a catalogue of books forbidden to Catholics became a necessary addi- tion. Such a catalogue was issued by Paul IV. in 1559, but some machinery for supplementing it as fresh books poured from the press could alone meet the permanent danger. Another matter debated in these congregations was the invitation of Protestants to attend, and inwhatcharacter. In the eighteenth session (February 26, 1562) two decrees on these subjects were promulgated,—one appointing a committee to report to the council on the whole question of heretical books; the other publishing a safe-conduct to the German Protestants, extended by a rider to those of other nations. The congregations held after this session were busied chiefly with the questions of residence and the abuse of indulgences, besides several less important details of reform. A warm debate arose as to the nature of the obligation to reside,—the Spaniards holding it to be of divine right, the Italians to be of no more than ecclesiastical precept. So powerful a body in the council took the Spanish view that the legates were alarmed, especially as ominous speeches were made to the effect that the Roman curia must be re- formed on the basis of the report of cardinals to Paul III. before anything of moment could be done in the way of real improvement. Accordingly, they sent a messenger to the pope, bringing with him a schedule of the proposed reforms, and asking for advice in the crisis. The pope desired them to counteract the opposition bishops, to postpone the question of residence, if they could not suppress it altogether, and despatched Visconti, bishop of Ventimiglia, as extra nuncio to the council, to report accurately to him everything said or done there, and with him sent also all the bishops who could be collected at Rome to swell the Italian vote, and thus defeat the opposition indirectly. There was much debate also on the scope of the safe-conduct, as the Spaniards were anxious that it should not protect those against whom the Inquisition had taken action, while others desired to sce its terms enlarged sufficiently to meet the requirements of the Protestants, who objected to its suspicious silence on several weighty particulars. As the French ambassadors were expected, nothing was done in the nineteenth session (May 14, 1562) save to prorogue

the council. On May 26, 1652, De Lanssac (who had been lately French envoy at Rome), Du Ferrier, and De Pibrac, envoys from Charles IX., were ad- mitted to audience, and demanded, amongst other matters, that the council should be formally declared a new one, wherein the imperial ambassadors supported them, while Philip II. of Spain, contrariwise, insisted that it should be declared a continuation of the former synod. The legates strove to satisfy both parties, and received contradictory directions from Rome, at first ordering them to announce the continuation of the former council, and afterwards leaving the matter to their discretion. So little agreement could be arrived at that the twentieth session (June 4, 1562) was held merely to prorogue the council. The question of communion in both kinds was the next to come up for consideration. It was such a capital one, if any hope of winning back the Protestants was to be entertained, that the imperial and French ambassadors had special injunctions to forward by all means in their power an affirmative decision. 'The Frenchmen saw little prospect of carry- ing this matter in the temper of the Italian majority, and were for opposing the discussion which the legates had announced, but the imperial ambassadors were more hopeful, and persuaded them to give way. While the question was being debated in the con- gregations, the Venetian and Bavarian ambassadors arrived, the latter armed with a formidable schedule of complaints against pre- valent abuses, and of demands for correspondingly drastic reforms, beginning with the pope and the curia, and making havoc amongst cardinals, dispensations, exemptions, pluralities, office-books, ex- clusively Latin services, and othcr like matters, thus threatening all manner of vested interests and long-rooted customs. The

legates put them off, alleging the pressure of other business, notably the question of communion in both kinds, which was, in fact, being discussed and decided in accordance with the views of the Italians and Spaniards, and against those of the French and Germans. In the twenty-first session (July 16, 1562) a decree couched in four dogmatic chapters and four canons was promul- gated upon it, to the following purport:—laymen, and priests other than the actual celebrant, are not bound by divine right to com- municate in both kinds; the church has full power to make what changes it pleases in the mode of administering sacraments; the whole sacrament of the Eucharist is

received entire under either kind singly; and little children are not bound to communicate. The canons pronounce anathemas against maintainers of the con- trary propositions. At the same time a decree upon reformation was enacted, most of the clauses dealing with the duties of bishops in the matters of ordination, patronage, division, and union of beuefices, discipline of ineffective parish priests, and visitation of monasteries, but a more permanent interest attaches to the ninth and concluding chapter of the decree, whereby the name and office of the ‘‘questors of alms,” that is to say, the vendors of indulg- ences, are abolished on the ground of the impossibility of other- wise putting a stop to the abuses and depravity of their proceedings. All privileges and customs to the contrary, even if of time im- memorial, are rescinded; the publication of indulgences is confined thenceforth to the ordinaries of each place, assisted by two members of the chapter; and these same officers are directed to collect the alms and charitable donations of the people, but forbidden to receive any commission or payment for so doing. ‘This decree is a virtual confession of the justice of the agitation against Tctzel and his fellows which served as the signal for beginning the great religious strife of the 16th century; and it is noticeable that it was the pope’s own voice against the system which decided the action of the council, wherein a powerful niinority was found to defend it. Several weighty mattcrs then came before the congregations, that of residence again being pressed by the Spaniards, while the imperial and Bavarian ambassadors renewed their requisition for permissive communion in both kinds (for the decree on that subject had gone no further than to declare it unnecessary, and had not explicitly forbidden it), and the French ambassador not only sup- ported them in their demand, but added on his own part that in France they desired vernacular services, the abolition of image- worship, and permission for the clergy to marry. The nuncio Visconti wrote to the pope in great alarm, expressing apprehensions at the very free language employed by the fathers of the council on these matters, the probability of their conceding the emperor’s demands, and of similar ones being advanced thereupon, all making in the same direction. An intrigue to compel the resignation of Cardinal Gonzaga, who was not thought sufficiently opposed to these measures, and who was far less peremptory in his presidency of the council and use of the closure than Crescenzio had been, was set on foot, and defeated only by the strong representations made at Rome by the archbishop of Lanciano, who said that

there was already so much division in the council that it could but just hold together, and would almost certainly be broken up by any step of the kind. The next subject which was brought on for considera- tion was the sacrifice of the Mass, and the debates thereon were very animated, disclosing considerable variety of opinion amongst the theologians,—no fewer than five clearly distinct views of the tenet, apart from mere verbal or minor differences, being adduced and argued for. As sixty French bishops, to be accompanied by twelve theologians, and headed by Charles de Guise, cardinal of Lorraine, were undcr orders to repair to Trent, the French ambas- sador presscd the legates to postpone the next session till their arrival, as De l'Isle, ambassador at Rome, did the pope; but each replied evasively, referring the applicant to the other. The question of communion in both kinds was also very warmly dis- cussed, and the council was warned that a negative decision would lead to the secession of multitudes who had not yet broken with the Roman Church; but the Jesuit Laynez, who was the chief advocate for refusal, replied that to diminish the church would not destroy it, and that anything was better than concession in the matter. The numbers in the division taken on the question were as follows:—29 were in favour of granting communion in both kinds ; 31 agreed thereto, but desired the execution of the decree to be left to the pope's discretion; 38 were for total refusal; 24 strove to evade responsibility by referring the matter to the pope entirely; 19 were willing to make the concession to the Bohemians and Hungarians, but would refuse it to all others; 14 asked for a postponement; and 11 remained neutral, declining to vote any way—being a total of 166 suffrages, so split up as to make it im- practicable to frame a decrce. In this difficulty, the legate seized the opportunity of persuading the council to refer the matter to the pope's decision, thereby at once checkmating the reforming section, and indirectly ruling the vexed point of the relative superiority of pope and council in favour of the former, and so virtually reversing those decrees of Constance and Basel which had long been thorns in the side of the Roman curia. In point of

fact, the pope had written some time before to the legates, recom- mending them to yield to the emperor’s demand of the chalice for the laity, but they had replied that it would be impolitic to make it a conciliar act, and that it would be more expedient to frame a mere general declaration that it might be proper to make the con- cession in certain cases, but that the pope should be the sole judge of them. In the twenty-second session (September 17, 1562) the decree on the sacrifice of the Mass was promulgated in nine chapters and as many canons, directed for the most part against current Protestant objections to the doctrine and ceremonial of the Missal. Rules to secure greater order and reverence in the celebration of Mass, and for the suppression of sundry superstitious observances connected therewith, were also enacted,—besides some minor re- forms of little note, and a decree referring to the pope the whole question of the concession of the chalice. The meagreness and insignificance of the reforms enacted thus far caused much dis- pleasure in France, and the king directed his ambassador to press once more for delay till the arrival of the French, German, and Polish bishops who were expected at Trent, as the emperor also instructed his envoy. But the pope was busy in recruiting the Italian majority, and was unfavourable to this request, lest the Italians should be outvoted by the new-comers; yet so contentious were the debates on the sacrament of orders, and on the nature and ex- tent of the rights of bishops—notably whether they were inherently above priests, and whether they were necessarily subject to the pope, deriving their jurisdiction and other powers solely through delegation from him, or if they were not of Divine institution, and his colleagues rather than his deputies (which latter thesis was steadily maintained by the Spaniards)—that it proved impossible to frame the decrees and hold the session before the arrival of the cardinal of Lorraine, who reached Trent on November 18, 1562, accompanicd by fourteen bishops, three abbots, and eighteen theo- logians. The discussions, further complicated with the question of residence, were renewed hereupon, and long before any signs of agreement were visible the French ambassadors laid before the legates a schedule of reform in thirty-four articles, requiring, not only the removal of various abuses in patronage, and the punish- ment of negligence on the part of the parochial and monastic clergy, but also that vernacular services should be permitted, and communion in both kinds enjoined, while all abuses and supcrsti- tions connected with image-worship, indulgences, pilgrimages, and relics should be summarily

abolished. Lorraine, on being asked how far he agreed with these demands, said that he disapproved of some of them, but that if he had not consented to take charge of them in their actual form, they would have been made still more drastic. No definite action was taken upon them either at Trent or at Rome, and the proceedings dragged on inefiectively for some months longer. On March 2, 1563, Cardinal Gonzaga, first legate, died, and was speedily followed by Cardinal Seripando. The impcrial and French ambassadors endeavoured to get the cardinal of Lorraine named as first legate and president, but he was not acceptable at Rome, and the post was given to Cardinal Morone, with whom Cardinal Navagero was associated, to fill the place of Seripando. All these events delayed the twenty-third session until July 15, 1563, nearly ten months later than the preceding oue.

was promulgated, the most noticeable points of which are the assertion that the church can constitute other impediments to matrimony besides the forbidden degrees of the Levitical code, and can dispense with such impediments ; that clerks in holy orders and regulars vowed to celibacy cannot contract valid marriage ; and that celibacy is superior to matrimony. The simultaneous decrec on reformation lays down rules for the creation of bishops and cardinals, so as to avoid unfit promotions; directs that diocesan synods shall be held yearly, and provincial synods trien- nially ; lays down rules for episcopal visitations, and for the quali- fications to be exacted of persons promoted to cathedral dignities and canonries ; appoints the provincial synod the judge of minor causes against bishops, referring graver causes to the pope’s de- cision ; and enacts various other technical regulations. By this time all concerned were thoroughly weary of the council, and the remaining matters for discussion were hurriedly discussed, result- ing, in the twenty-fifth and last session (December 3 and 4, 1563), in a decree, very cautiously worded, upon purgatory, the cultus of saints, and that of relics and images. In this same session was also enacted a dccree in twenty-two chapters, regulating several matters affecting the discipline of convents of monks and nuns ; and another decree on reformation, in twenty-one chapters, the most important of which enjoin all cardinals and bishops to keep modest households, and not to enrich their kindred with church property ; that all prelates shall receive and publish the decrees of the

council ; that duelling shall be prohibited under severe penal- ties ; and that the authority of the Holy See both is, an _is to be understood to be, untouched by any decrees of the council touch- ing the reform of morals and discipline. On the last day of the session was passed a somewhat indefinite decree upon indulgences, forbidding all evil gains connected therewith, and directing that, wherever abuses or superstitions are prevalent concerning them, the bishops shall collect the facts, lay them before the provincial synod, and after discussion there refer them to the pope for ulti- mate decision. The distinction of meats, and the duc observance of festivals and fasts, were also enjoined ; and a formal statement was made that the committees whieh had been engaged upon the index of prohibited books, on the draft of a catechism, and on the revision of the Missal and Breviary, thinking that the synod could not deal with them conveniently, had determined to lay their reports before the pope to ratify and publish at his pleasure. Formal acclamations, and an anathema agaiust all hereties, closed the session; and the legates, after forbidding any bishop, under pain of excommunication, to leave Trent till he had either signed his assent to the decrees, or left documentary proof of such assent, gave the blessing and dissolved the assembly.

Two hundred and fifty-five signatures were attached to the decrees, and also those of the ambassadors still remain- ing at Trent. The bull of confirmation was issued at Rome on January 26, 1564, and followed by another fixing May 1, 1564, as the date from which the decrees should be

held binding. The bull of confirmation forbade all persons

whatsoever, whether ecclesiastics or laymen, to gloss or

interpret the decrees upon any pretext whatever, without papal authority for the purpose. The republic of Venice was the first power to signify its reception of the decrees, followed speedily by the other Italian states (except Naples) and by Portugal ; but the king of Spain, though receiving the decrees, issued them at first in his own name, and not in that of the pope ; the emperor and the king of Bohemia demanded the lay use of the chalice and the marriage of priests as the terms on which they would accept the council, and obtained a partial concession of the former demand, but were refused the latter ; and in France, while the dogmatic decrees were

accepted, the disciplinary ones were not, and have never, in spite of efforts many times renewed, made part of French ecclesiastical law. The pro- vision referring the explanation of the council to the pope was given shape by Sixtus V., who erected in 1588 a Con- gregation of the Council of Trent to sit permanently at Rome, where it has ever since continued to be included amongst those standing committees which divide among them the adininistration of the pontifical government.

Two questions remain to be considered in relation to this great synod :— how far was it free, and representative of the mind of Latin Christianity at that time ? and what have been its effects upon dogma and discipline? Ample materials exist for answering the first question, in the form of contemporary letters, either separately published, as

those of Vargas, or included in the great collection of documents made by Le Plat, and in the official acts of the council itself, drawn up by the secretaries Paleotto and Massarelli. From these it is perfectly clear that the council was never free for a moment, but was hampered and fettered, not merely by the permanent fact of a large Italian majority, subsidized by the pope,! but by the method of procedure in the congregations, since by a skilful distribution of the members into groups or classes, so as to prevent combined action, and by careful packing of the sub-committees to which the preparation of business for debate was entrusted, little could be done save when and how the majority pleased ; and, above all, the vigilant supervision exercised by the legates, their constant refer- ence to Rome of every point of any importance before they would permit it to come on for regular discussion (so that Lanssac, one of the French envoys, somewhat profanely said that the Holy Spirit was brought to the council in a carpet-bag from Rome), and their uncompromising use of their presidential authority to interrupt or silence un- acceptable speakers (as frequently appears in the Acts) effectually bound the council hand and foot ; and thus its decisions, as a whole, represent little more than the Italian and, to some extent, Spanish opinions of the time, and not those of German, French, or Hungarian Catholics. The demeanour of the legates differed much, and

there is a wide interval between the open browbeating employed by Crescenzio and the high-bred dignity of Gonzaga or the diplomatic subtlety of Morone ; but the policy was alike in all cases, and its results the same. As to the dogmatic effect of the council, it went much further than merely restating the current Catholic theology of the pre- Reformation era; for it marks a new departure, closing many questions previously left open (nothing is more noteworthy in the debates than the manner in which several divines of unquestioned ability and loyalty delivered themselves of opinions closely allied to those advocated by leading Reforniers, and then still tenable within the Roman obedience), re-wording old propositions, or framing new ones, in an incisive fashion. It recovered for papal authority all it had lost, or was likely to lose, through the action of Basel and Constance ; and, above all, it unified Roman teaching for the first time, and crystallized it into rigid compactness. Thus it made concessions and explana- tions for the reconciliation of the revolted Protestants, although the primary cause of the council, practically im- possible thenceforward, since the Roman Catholic system, thus hastily consolidated out of a former condition of partial flux, became like a ‘Prince Rupert’s drop,” from which, if the smallest fragment be broken, the mass is at once resolved into disintegrated powder. In the matter of disciplinary reform the council enacted but little of an effective nature, except in the abolition of the traffic in indulgences, and the establishment of theological seminaries, which has proved the most effectual agency for creating that doctrinal uniformity which now prevails throughout the Roman obedience ; and the real honours of the Counter-Reformation rest with the Jesuits, to whose unremitting diligence, powerful organization, and ceaseless precept and example must be attributed by far the larger part of the abatement of ecclesiastical abuses and scandals which marks the succeeding era. Doubtless, the Tridentine decrees, in strong and resolute hands, proved most useful subsidiary weapons to compel local reforms ; but decrees of little less stringency had been enacted by previous

1 The Italian character of the eouneil of Trent ean best be exhibited by a classified table, showing the nationality of the bishops present in the later sessions :—Italians, 189; Spaniards, 31; Freneh, 26; Greeks (titulars), 6; Portuguese, 3; Ilyrians, 3; Irish, 3; Germans, 2; Flemish, 2; Polish, 2; Croatian, 1; Moravian, 1; English, 1.

synods, and had rusted unused, because there was no one able and willing to put them in operation against the passive resistance of powerful vested interests.

The bibliography of the council of Trent is very extensive, but a comparatively small number of volumes really suffices the student. The first work of import- ance is F. Paolo Sarpi's Jstorta del Concilio Tridentino, originally published in London (1619) by Antonio de Dominis, archbishop of Spalato, under the pseudonym of Pietro Soave Polano (an imperfect anagram of Paolo Sarpi Veneto), but better studied in the French version by Pere Le Courayer, with valuable notes (see Sarpi). The rival work of Sforza Palavicino, Zstoria del Conctlio di Trento (1656-57), written to order as a refutation of Sarpi's work, is also indispensable. He had free access to many official documents which Sarpi could not consult, and often corrects lim upon points of detail, but a careful reader will find that he confirms him far oftener than he refutes him. It is not enough, as Ranke points out, to compare those two, and take the mean statement as a guide, for they are sometimes in blank contradiction, and other witnesses must be called in to decide the matter. The Acts of the council, so far as they were drafted by Paleotto, were first published by Mendham in 1842; the complete Acts, by both Paleotto and Massarelli, were not accessible till published as Acta Genuina Ccumenict Conctlti Tridentint by Theiner in 1874. The vast compilation of Jodocus Le Plat, Monumentorum ad Historiam Concilii Tridentint Amplissima Collectio (7 vols. 4to, 1781-87), is full of valuable and interesting matter. The speeches of the Jesnit Laynez, which had snch a powerful effect npon the council, have been recently published under the title of Lainez, Disputationes Tridentinex, 2 vols., 1886, Vargas, Lettres e¢ Mémoires concernant le Conctle de Trent (1700, partly translated in Geddes, The Council of Trent no Free Assembly, 1714), is of much value. The canons and decrees of the council have been many times published, and are readily accessible; the best edition is that by Richter and Schulte (1853). There is a convenient abridgment of Palavicino's history prefixed to the Rev. James Waterworth's English version of the Decrees and Canons of Trent (1848), but it is not trustworthy, for the translator has suppressed many statements of the original which tellin various ways against the

freedom of the action of the council. To these may be added Sickel, Axktenstticke zur Geschichte des Konzils zu Trient, 1872; Calenzio, Documentt Inediti e Nuovt Lavort Letterarti sul Con- cilio dt Trento, 1874; Dollinger, Sammlung von Urkunden zur Geschichte des Concils von Trient, 1876; and the article on the council in Wetzer and Welte's Kirchenlexicon, (R. F. L.)

TRENTON, a city of the United States, county seat of Mercer county, New Jersey, and capital of the State, is situated in 40° 14' N. lat. and 74° 45' W. long., 33 miles north-east of Philadelphia and 57 sonth-west of New York. It lies very near sea-level (under 45 feet), upon the left (eastern) bank of the Delaware river, at the head of navi- gation. The city is irregularly built, the streets of different sections running in various directions, without any appear- ance of system; this is doubtless due to the fact that different portions of the city were originally settled as independent villages. 'Till recently Trenton was rather backward in the matter of municipal improvements, but an extensive system of paving and sewage has now been entered on. The water supply is obtained by pumping into a reservoir. Street cars run upon one or two of the principal streets; and the city is traversed by the main line of the New York division of the Pennsylvania Rail- road. Manufactures are the leading industry, the capital invested in 1880 having been $6,966,830 and the produc- tion $12,712,762. In iron and steel manufactures over $2,000,000 were invested, the industry next in importance being the manufacture of stone and earthen ware, for which this city has a national reputation. Rubber goods, watches, and woollen cloths are also made. The population, 22,874 in 1870, was 29,910 in 1880.

Trenton was formed by a consolidation under onc charter of several independent villages, known as Falls of the Delaware (settled in 1680), Kingsborough, Bloomsburg, and Lamberton. The name Trenton was given to the settlements about 1720. Its early growth was slow. In 1790 it was selected as the State capital, and two years later it received a city charter. Its growth since that time has been steady, and during the past thirty years has been very rapid.

TREPANG. See Bécux-pz-Mzr.

TRESPASS, in law, is any transgression of the law less than treason, felony, or misprision of either. The term includes a great variety of torts committed to land, goods, or person, distinguished generally by names drawn from the writs once used as appropriate to the particular trans- gression, such as wi et armis, quare clausum fregit, de bonis asportatis, de uxore abducta cum bonis vir, quare jilium et heredem rapuit, kc. Up to 1694 the trespasser was regarded, nominally at any rate, as a criminal, and was liable to a fine for the breach of the peace, commuted for a small sum of money, for which 5 W. and M. c. 12 sub- stituted a fee of 6s. 8d. recoverable as costs against the defendant. ‘Trespass is not now criminal except by special

statutory enactment, e.g., the old statutes against forcible entry, the Game Acts, and the private Acts of many rail- way companies. When, however, trespass is carried suffi- ciently far it may become criminal, and be prosecuted as assault if to the person, as nuisance if to the land. At one time an important distinction was drawn between trespass general and trespass special or trespass on the case, for which see Tort. The difference between trespass and case was sometimes a very narrow one; the general rule was that where the injury was directly caused by the act of the defendant the proper remedy was trespass, where indirectly, case. The difference is illustrated by the action for false imprisonment: if the defendant himself imprisoned the plaintiff the action was trespass; if a third person did so on the information of the defendant it was case. A close parallel is found in Roman law in the actio directa under the lex Aquilia for injury caused directly, the actio utilis for that caused indirectly. One of the reasons for the rapid extension of the action on the case, especially that form of it called asswmpsit, was no doubt the fact that in the action on the case the defendant was not allowed to wage his law (see WacER).

In its more restricted sense, trespass is generally used for entry on land without lawful authority by either a man, his servants, or his cattle. To maintain an action for such trespass the plaintiff must have possession of the premises. The quantum of possession necessary to enable him to bring the action is often a question difficult to decide. In most instances the tenant

can bring trespass, the reversioner only case. By the Judicature Act, 1873, a mortgagor in possession can sue for trespass in his own name. Remedies for trespass are either judicial or extra- judicial. The most minute invasion of private right is trespass, though the damages may be nominal if the injury was trivial. On the other hand, they may be exemplary if circumstances of aggravation were present. Pleading in the old action of trespass was of a very tech- nical nature, but the old-fashioned terms alia enormia, replication de injuria, new assignment, &ec., once of such frequent occurrence in the reports, are of merely historical interest since the introduction of a simpler system of pleading, unless in those American States where the old pleading has not been reformed. The VENUE (¢.v.) in trespass was formerly local, in case transitory. In addi- tion to damages for trespass, an injunction may be granted by the court. The power to grant injunctions against threatened or apprehended trespass has been considerably enlarged by the Judicature Act, 1873. The principal instances of extra-judicial remedies are distress damage feasant of cattle trespassing, and removal of a trespasser without unnecessary violence, expressed in the terms of Latin pleading by molliter manus inyposuit.

Trespass may be justificd by exercise of a legal right, as to serve the process of the law, or by invitation or licence of the owncr, or may be excused by accident or inevitable necessity, as deviation from a highway out of repair. Where a man abuses an authority given by the law, his wrongful act relates back to his entry, and he becomes a trespasser ab initio, that is, liable to be treated as a trespasser for the whole time of his being on the land. Mere breach of contract, such as refusal to pay for wine in a tavern which a person has lawfully cntered, does not constitute him a trespasser ab initio. A trespass of a permancnt naturc is called a continuing trespass; such would be the perinitting of one’s cattle to feed on another’s land without authority.

In Scots law trespass is used only for torts to land. By the Trespass (Scotland) Act, 1865, trespassers are liable on summary conviction to fine and imprisonment for encamping, lighting fires, &c., on land without the consent and permission of the owner.

TREVES (French, 7Z’réves; German, Zier), formerly the capital of an archbishopric and spiritual electorate of the empire, and now the seat of a

Roman Catholic bishop and the chief town of a governmental! district in the Prussian province of the Rhine, is situated on the right

TR E—

bank of the Moselle, pleasantly surrounded by low vine- clad hills, 60 miles south-west of Coblentz and 86 miles south of Cologne. It lies in the midst of a carefully cultivated and fertile plain, the rich vegetation of which forms a pleasing setting to its red sandstone walls and venerable towers. Most of the old streets of the town are quaint and irregular; but much of the space enclosed within the circuits of the walls is now occupied by orchards and gardens. The population of Treves in 1885 was 26,125, five-sixths of whom were Roman Catholics. Their chief occupations are fruit-growing and vine-dressing ; the industries of the place, including the manufacture of cotton and linen, dyeing, and tanning, are not very exten- sive. A specialty of Treves is the preparation of stones for Gothic churches, which are sent off ready to be at once placed in position. A river traffic is carried on in wine, cattle, and wood.

Treves claims to be the oldest town in Germany, and it contains more important Roman remains than any other place in northern Europe. The most remarkable of these is the Porta Nigra, a huge fortified gateway, 115 feet long, 70 to 95 feet high, and 30 feet deep. It is formed of uncemented blocks of sandstone, held together by clamps of iron, and now blackened with time; the details are very rude. Opinions vary widely as to the date of its erection, but recent authorities refer it to the 1st century of the Christian era. During the Middle Ages the structure was converted into two churches, one above the other; alk additions have, how- ever, now been removed, except the apse at the east end. The basilica, long used as the archiepiscopal palace and now consccrated as a Protestant church, probably dates from the reign of Constan- tine. The so-called Roman baths are in all probability the relics of an extensive impcrial palace. Just outside the town are the remains of an amphitheatre, capable of accommodating 30,000 spectators, where Constantine caused several thousand Franks and Bructeri to be butchered for the public amusement. Perhaps the oldest Roman remains in Treves are some of the piers of the bridge over the Moselle, dating from about 28 3.c. This bridge, which is at one corner of modern Treves, lay near the middle of

the much more extensive Roman city. There are also numerous Roman antiquities in the neighbourhood of Treves, the most important of which are the Igel column, a sepulchral monument of the 2d century, and the mosaic pavements at Nennig and Fliessem.

Another group of interesting buildings belongs to the second period of prosperity enjoyed by Treves under the rule of its medizval prelates. The cathedral, described by Ltibke as the most important example of pre-Carlovingian building in Germany, mirrors the entire history of the town. Its kernel consists of part of a Roman basilica of the 4th century, which seems to have been converted into a Christian church at a very early period. It was restored by Bishop Nicetius about 550, and in the 11th and 12th centuries it was again restored and greatly extended by Archbishop Poppo and his successors, who added an apse at each cnd and left it substanti- ally in its present form. The cathedral is connected by beautiful cloisters of the 13th century with the circular Liebfrauenkirche, one of the most interesting early Gothic churches in Germany (1227-43), catching up the architectural thread at the point dropped by the cathedral. Among the treasures of the latter is. the ‘‘ holy coat of Treves,” belicved by the devout to be the seamless garment worn by our Saviour at the crucifixion, and said to have been pre-sented to the town by the empress Helena, the central figure in Treveran Christian legend. Its exhibition in 1844 attracted a million and a half of pilgrims to Treves. According to recent authorities, the earliest churches in Treves were those of Sts Eucharius, Maximin, Matthew, and Paul, all without the walls, now rebuilt or convertcd to sccular purposes. Of the modern buildings none call for special remark, The town library contains about 100,000 volumes, including several valuable specimens of early printing. Its greatest treasure is the Codex Aureus, a manuscript of the Gospels presented to the abbey of St Maximin by Ada, sister of Charlemagne. The same building also contains an interesting collection of Roman and medieval antiquities.

A medieval legend, preserved in an inscription on the old Rothes Haus inn, places the foundation of Treves 1300 years before that of Rome, and ascribes it to Thebetas, son of Ninus, king of Assyria. But, fable apart, we must still allow that Treves has good claim to call itself the oldest town in Germany. It is a little doubtful whether the Treviri were of Teutonic or

Celtic stock. St Jerome records that the language of the Treviri of the 4th century resembled that of the Gauls of Asia; but, even if we admit this evidence as conclusive of their Celtic origin, we must recognize the fact that they were Celts who were long under Teutonic influence. Their authentic history begins with the story of their subjection by Julius

Cesar (56 B.c.), who describes them as a warlike race, with the best cavalry in Gaul. The Roman town, Colonia Augusta Trevirorum (or Treverorum), was probably founded by the emperor Claudius,and rapidly obtained a wealth and importance which justified the poet Ausonius (4th century) in describing it as the second metropolis of the empire, or ‘‘ Rome beyond the Alps.” It became the capital of Belgica Prima, and during the 4th century was a favourite residence of Constantine and other Roman emperors. Most of the palaces and public buildings, of which the remains arc still extant, were built at this period, while the surrounding hills were covered with villas. Treves was laid in ruins by Attila in 451, and about 465 was permanently taken possession of by the Franks. It was included in the kingdom of Austrasia, and became a German city in 870. Like its prototype Rome, it attained a second era of prosperity and importance as an ecclesiastical capital (see below), and in the Middle Ages the ‘‘ Sancta Civitas Trevirorum ’’ swarmed with ‘‘religious” of all kinds and grades. Unlike most of the German episcopal cities, however, it did not succeed in shaking off the ecclesiastical yoke, nor did it attain, except transitorily, the position of a free imperial city. Wars and sieges occasionally checked but did not stop its growth. Art and science were sedulously fostered in the monastic schools, and a university, founded in 1478, existed down to 1798. The importance of Treves departed with the overthrow of the ecclesiastical principality. In 1786 the last elector shifted his residence to Coblentz, and from 1794 to 1814 Treves was capital of the French department of the Sarre. Since the latter date it has belonged to Prussia.

The archbishopric and ecclesiastical electorate of Treves, bounded by Nassau, Cologne, Luxemburg, Lorraine, the Rhenish Palatinate, Hesse-Rheinfels, and Katzenelnbogen, had an area of about 3200 square miles and a population of 250,000 to 300,000. Itssuffragan bishops were those of

Metz, Toul, and Verdun, and after 1777 also those of Nancy and St Dié. As elector of the German empire the archbishop took thesecond place, and borethe styleof arch-chancellor of Gaulor Burgundy. Legend places the foundation of the bishopric of Treves in the 1st century of the Christian era, but the first bishop known to history is Agricius, who flourished about 314. The see appears as an archbishopric in the 9th ccntury, and in the Middle Ages the archbishops attained considerable tciporal power. Among the most prominent were Baldwin of Luxemburg (1307- 1854), brother of the emperor Henry VII., who may be regarded as the founder of the territorial greatness of the see, and Richard von Greiffenklau (1511-1531), who distinguished himself by his successful opposition to the Reformation. The last archbishop was Clemens Wenceslaus (1768-1802) of Saxony. The part of the archbishopric on the left bank of the Rhine was taken by France in 1801, and the rest was secularized in favour of the prince of Nassau-Weilburg in 1803. After the fall of Napoleon the archbishopric was incorporated with Prussia. A new bishopric of Treves was instituted in 1821, the boundaries of which are almost conterminous with those of the old archbishopric; the bishop is a suffragan to the archbishop of Cologne.

See ‘‘Augusta Treverorum,” an article by E. A. Freeman in the British Quarterly Review for July 1875.

TREVIRANUS, Gortrriep RemnnoLtp (1776-1837), German naturalist, was born at Bremen, February 4, 1776, studied medicine at Gottingen, in 1797 became professor of mathematics in the Bremen lyceum, and died at Bremen, February 16, 1837.

He made numerous important contributions to comparative anatomy, especially in regard to birds and spiders. Though noted for his learning and acute observation, his studies in geographical distribution cannot be said to have led to any very definite results. It is rather on account of his contributions to xtiology that he de- serves to be remembered, though his work in this department has been to a great extent overlooked. In the first of his larger works, Biologie oder Philosophie der lebenden Natur, which appeared from 1802-1805, he gave clear expression to the theory of ‘‘ descent with modification.” He believed that simple forms (Protists), which he termed ‘‘zoophytes,” were ‘‘the primitive types from which all the

organisms of the higher classes had arisen by gradual development." '¢ Every living creature has a potentiality of endless modification of adapting its structure to the changes in the external world." He also maintained that each species has its day or pcriod, at the end of which it does not become extinct, but has simply ceased to be, because it has become something else. That he stated the theory of descent with much elearness, and with a sufficient background of actual knowledge of forms, must be acknowledged by all; the only difficulty relates to the question of priority. The first volume of his biology was published in 1802, but he states that this had been written about 1796. Now it was not till 1801 that Lamarck first began to free himself from the traditional dogma of the immuta- bility of species, and to publish his views of evolution. Neither Goethe nor Oken can be said to have done much more than follow up the ironical insinuations of Buffon (1753-76) and the ingenious suggestions of Erasmus Darwin, whose Zoonomia was translated

into German between 1795 and 1797, while both Treviranus and Lamarck tackled the problem not merely of the theory of descent but of the mechanism of evolution. On this point the merits of Lamarck certainly outweigh those of his contemporary. Trevir- anus laid down as a fundamental proposition "that all living forms are the results of physical influences which are still in operation, and vary only in degree and direction." Like many after him, he directed attention to the influence of the male elements in fertiliza- tion as a source of variation, but laid emphasis only on the intra- organismal power of adaptation to surroundings. Whatever opinion he entertained in regard to the priority and the importance of the contribution made by Treviranus to the theory of evolution, it is at least certain that he was a learned naturalist and an acute thinker. His most important later work of a synthetic nature was entitled Erscheinungen und Gesctze des organischen Lebens

1831).

\ See — E. Haeckel’s Schépfungsgeschichte, pp. 83-5; Carus, Geschichte der Zoologie, p. 610.

TREVISO, a town of Italy, in the province of the same name, lies in the midst of a district of great fertility, at the confluence of the Piavesella with the Sile, which is here navigable for large boats and communicates by canals with the lagoons of Venice (17 miles distant). It is an old town, with narrow irregular colonnaded streets and some good squares. The cathedral of San Pietro, dating from 1141 and restored and enlarged in the 15th century by Pietro Lombardo, but still unfinished, contains a fine Annunciation by Titian (1519), an Adoration of the Shepherds, the masterpiece of Paris Bordone (born at Treviso in 1500), and frescos by Pordenone. There are numerous statues and reliefs by Pietro, Tullio, and Martino Lombardo, and by Sansovino. The Gothic church of San Niccold (1310-52) contains a fine tomb by Tullio Lombardo, frescos by Giovanni Bellini, and a large altar-piece by Fra Marco Pensabene and others ; in the adjoining chapter-house are forty portraits of celebrated Dominicans by Tommaso da Modena (1352). The Monte di Piet’ contains an Entomb- ment by Pordenone (according to others by Giorgione). The churches of S. Leonardo, 8. Andrea, S. Maria Maggiore, and S. Maria Maddalena also contain precious art treasures, and the town is enriched besides by various open-air frescos. The town-hall and theatre are also conspicuous buildings. Silk and cotton goods, cutlery, majolica, and paper are the chief manufactures of the place, and an active trade is also carried on in corn, fruit, and cattle. The population in 1881 was 31,249.

Treviso, the ancient Tarvisiwm, is not mentioned by any of the ancient geographers, though Pliny speaks of the Silis as flowing “ex montibus Tarvisanis.” In the 6th century it appears as an important place. From 1318 it was for a short time the seat of a university (see UNIVERSITIEs). In 1339 it came under the Venetian sway. In the 15th century its walls and ramparts were renewed under the direction of Fra Giocondo, two of the gates being built by the Lombardi. Treviso was taken in 1797 by the French under Mortier (duke of Treviso). In March 1848 the Austrian garrison was driven from the town by the revolutionary party, but in the follow- ing June the town was bombarded and compelled to capitulate.

TREVITHICK, Ricuarp (1771-1833), inventor of the locomotive, was descended froma family of great antiquity in the county of Cornwall, and was born 13th April 1771, in the parish of Illogan. Shortly afterwards the family re- moved to Penponds, near Camborne, where the boy attended his first and only school, his attainments being limited to reading, writing, and arithmetic. Though slow and obstin- ate as a scholar, he spent much time drawing lines and figures on his slate, and possessed such instinctive skill in mechanics that while still a youth he was able to solve a difficulty in the correction of underground levels which had puzzled some of the mine agents. He inherited more than the average strength for which his family were famous, standing 6 feet 2 inches in height, while his frame was the very model of an athlete. His feats in wrestling and lift- ing and throwing weights were unexampled in the district. At the age of eighteen he began to assist his father as mine manager, and, manifesting great fertility of mechanical in-

vention, was soon recognized as the great rival of Watt in improvements on the steam-engine (see vol. xxii. p. 476). On the death of his father in 1797, he succeeded him as leading engineer in Cornish mining. He married the same year. His earliest invention of importance was his improved plunger pole pump (1797), which has superseded all others for deep mining. In 1798 he applied the principle of the plunger pole pump to the construction of the water- pressure engine, which he subsequently improved in various ways. About this time he also perfected a high-pressure non-conducting steam-engine, which became a successful rival of the low-pressure steam-vacuum engine of Watt. At an early period he had begun experiments in the con- struction of locomotives, and a model constructed by him before 1800 is now in the South Kensington Museum. On Christmas eve 1801 his common road locomotive carried the first load of passengers ever conveyed by steam, and on 24th March 1802 he and Andrew Vivian applied for a patent for steam-engines in propelling carriages. In 1803 his locomotive was run in the streets of London, from Leather Lane by Gray’s Inn Lane and along Oxford Street to Paddington, the return journey being made by Islington. The cost was, however, found too great, and his thoughts were now directed to the construction of a steam loco- motive for tramways, with

such success that in February 1804 he worked a tramroad locomotive in Wales, running with facility up and down inclines of 1 in 50. In 1808 he constructed a circular railway in London near Euston Square, on which the public were carried at the rate of twelve or fifteen miles an hour round curves of 50 or 100 feet radius. The ideas of Trevithick were successfully developed by Stephenson so as to revolutionize the system of modern travelling, but Trevithick had made consider- able progress towards this before Stephenson had begun his experiments. Trevithick applied his high-pressure engine with great success to rock boring and breaking, as wellas to dredging. In 1806 he entered into a twenty- one years' engagement with the board of Trinity House, London, to lift ballast from the bottom of the Thames, at the rate of 500,000 tons a year, for a payment of 6d. a ton. The following year he was appointed along with Vazie to execute the Thames driftway, but the work was abandoned owing to disputes about payment when unex- pected difficulties had occurred. He then set up work- shops at 72 Fore Street, Limehouse, for the construction of iron tanks and buoys and model iron ships. He was the first to recognize the importance of iron in the construction of large ships, and in various ways his ideas have also influenced the construction of steamboats. In the appli- cation of steam to agriculture the name of Trevithick occupies one of the chief places. A high-pressure steam threshing engine was erected by him in 1812 at Trewithen, the property of Sir Charles Hawkins, while, in the same year, in a letter to the Board of Agriculture, he stated his belief that every part of agriculture might be performed by steam, and that such a use of the steam-engine would "double the population of the kingdom and make our markets the cheapest in the world." In 1814 he entered on an agreement for the construction of engines for the Peruvian mines, and to superintend their working renioved to Peru in 1816. Thence he went in 1822 to Costa Rica. He returned to England in 1827, and in 1828 petitioned parliament for a reward for his inventions, but without success. He was equally unsuccessful in his endeavours to induce the lords commissioners of the Admiralty to afford him facilities for demonstrating the value of certain improvements he claimed to have made in steam navigation. He died 22d April 1833.

See Life of Richard Trevithich, with an Account of his Inventions,

| by Francis Trevithick, C.E., 2 vols., 1872.

TRIAL, in law, is the examination of a cause before a court of justice. It is the stage in the cause next after PLEADING (qg.v.). Advance in legal development is generally marked by difference in the mode of trial. This was especially the case in the history of Roman law, and it has been the same in England (see Action). Many forms of trial, notably those by ORDEAL (q.v.), by wager of battle or of law (see WAGER), and by grand assize, have become obsolete, and new forms have been created by legislation in order to meet altered circumstances of society. Up to a very recent date the tendency of the Roman and English systems was in opposite directions. In the former and in systems founded on it, such as the Scotch, trial by the judge became the rule, in the latter trial by judge and jury. But the Judicature and Summary Jurisdiction Acts have recently made considerable innovations upon the old common-law right to trial by Jury (¢.v.) or per pais, as it was also called. The modes of trial in England are very numerous, as to a certain extent each Court (q.v.) has its own procedure. Certain broad rules of justice are observed by all courts, such as that both sides are to be heard, or to have an opportunity of being heard, before decision, and that (unless in very exceptional cases) the trial is to be in public.

For purposes of convenience rather than as a scientific division trials may be divided into civil and criminal. An ordinary trial in a civil case may be either in a court of appellate jurisdiction (in which case it is perhaps more properly called a hearing), in the High Court of Justice before a judge or referee, or in an inferior court. Where the trial is in a court of first instance, it may be either with or without a jury. In Chancery and Admiralty proceedings a jury is not used, and the right to a jury in the Queen’s Bench Division has been considerably restricted by the Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, Order xxxvi. Before these rules either party had an absolute right to have issues of fact in an action in that division tried by jury. Now, unless in certain actions, mainly of tort, in which a jury is as of right, a jury can only be obtained by application of a party to the action, subject to the power of the court to direct trial without a jury of any issue requiring prolonged examination of documents or accounts or scientific or local investi- gation. The question of VENUE (g.v.) in civil actions lias ceased to

be of importance since the Judicature Acts. Most courts are en- titled in proper cases to the assistance of assessors. Trial with assessors is in frequent use in the Admiralty Division. A trial whether by jury or not may be by affidavit or on viva voce evidence. The latter is the rule where the trial is by jury. In a county court a jury of five is allowed in certain cases on application. In other inferior courts of local jurisdiction a jury is sometimes the rule, as in the (London) Lord Mayor's Court, sometimes not, as in the Chancellor's Court at Oxford or Cambridge. In criminal cases the trial is by jury, except where a court of SUMMARY JURISDICTION (g.v.) is empowered to try offences of a comparatively unimportant nature. The right to trial by due process of law before condemna- tion is secured to the subject by sec. 29 of Magna Charta. A new trial may be ordered in civil actions and in misdemeanours (in the latter case only after conviction of the defendant) on various grounds, the most usual of which are misdirection by the judge, improper ad- mission or rejection of evidence, and the finding of a verdict against the weight of evidence. In actions in the High Court new trials are less liberally granted than was the case before the Judicature Acts, Order xxxix. considerably restricting the right. An applica- tion for a new trial of an action is no longer made by ex parte motion in the first instance, as was the course before 1883, but upon notice of motion. Besides the ordinary modes of trial, there are others of an exceptional nature or of rare occurrence. In a trial by arbitration, the tribunal is chosen by the parties themselves, and they are not entitled to object to the trial as conducted by the arbitrator as long as it couforms to rules of ordinary justice. Peers are tried for treason or felony before the House of Lords, or the court of the Lord High Steward if the trial takes place duriug the recess of parliament. A trial at bar—a survival of the universal mode of trial before the writ of Nist Prius (q.v.) was given by the Statute of Westminster the Second—takes place before three or four judges of the Queen's Bench Division, and is in use as of right where the crown is interested in the litigation, or at the discretion of the court in other cases where questions of unusual importance or difficulty are raiscd. The trial of a petition of right (see PETITION, vol. xviii. p. 705) is now assimilated to that in civilactions. Trials by record, by certificate, and by inspection, though not expressly abolished, appear to have become obsolete. IMPEACHMENT (9.2.) is still a right of the House of Commons, but has not recently been

exercised. CouRT-MARTIAL (q.v.) is the mode of trial for offences committed by persons in the naval or military service of the crown.

In Scotland and the United States trials are either with or with- out a jury. The most usual trials in Scotland are those before a judge of the Court of Session or the High Court of Justiciary or in a sheriff court. In the United States trials are either ina United States or a State court ; in the latter case they are regulated by State legislation.

TRIBONIAN, the famous jurist and minister of Justi- nian, was born in Pamphylia in the latter part of the 5th century. Adopting the profession of an advocate, he came to Constantinople and practised in the prefectural courts there, reaching such eminence as to attract the notice of the emperor Justinian, who appointed him in 528 one of the ten commissioners directed to prepare the first Codex of imperial constitutions. In the edict creat- ing this commission (known as Hec Que) Tribonian is named sixth, and is called "' virum magnificum, magisteria dignitate inter agentes decoratum" (see J/ec Que and Summa Reipublice, prefixed to the Codex). When the commission of sixteen eminent lawyers was created in 530 for the far more laborious and difficult duty of com- piling a collection of extracts from the writings of the great jurists of the earlier empire, Tribonian was made presi- dent and no doubt general director of this board. He had already been raised to the office of queestor, which at that time was a sort of ministry of law and justice, its holder being the assessor of the emperor and his organ for judi- cial purposes, something like the English lord chancellor of the later Middle Ages. The instructions given to these sixteen commissioners may be found in the constitution Deo Auctore (Cod., i. 17,1), and the method in which the work was dealt with in the constitution Tanta (Cod., i. 17, 2), great praise being awarded to Tribonian, who is therein called ex-queestor and ex-consul, and also as magister offici- orum. This last constitution was issued in December 533, when the Digest was promulgated as a law-book. During the progress of the work, in January 532, there broke out in Constantinople a disturbance in the hippodrome, which speedily turned to a terrible insurrection, that which goes in history by the name of Nika, the watchword of the insurgents. 'Tribonian was accused of having pros- tituted

his office for the purposes of gain, and the mob searched for him to put him to death (Procop., Pers., i. 24-26). Justinian, yielding for the moment, removed him from office, and appointed a certain Basilides in his place. After the suppression of the insurrection the work of codification was resumed. A little earlier than the publication of the Dzgest, or Pandects, there had been published another but much smaller law-book, the Jnsti- tutes, prepared under Justinian's orders by Tribonian, with Theophilus and Dorotheus, professors of law (see Preface to Institutes). About the same time the emperor placed Tribonian at the head of a fourth commission, consisting of himself as chief and four others,—Dorotheus, professor at Beyrut, and three practising advocates, who were directed to revise and re-edit the first Codex of imperial constitu- tions. The new Codex was published in November 534 (see constitution Cord? Nobis prefixed to the Codex), With it Tribonian's work of codification was completed. But he remained Justinian's chief legal minister. He was re- instated as queestor some time after 534 (Procop., Pers., 1. 25; Anecd., 20), and seems to have held the office as long as he lived. He was evidently the prime mover in the various changes effected in the law by the novels of Justi- nian (Wovelle Constitutiones), which became much less frequent and less important after death had removed the great jurist. The date of his death has been variously assigned to 545, 546, and 547. Procopius says (Anecd., 20) that, although he left a son and many grandchildren, Justinian confiscated part of the inheritance.

556

The above facts, which are all that we know about Tribonian, rest on the authority of his contemporary Proeopius and of the various imperial constitutions already eited. There are, however, two articles in the Lexicon of Suidas under the name "Tribonianos." They appear to be different articles, purporting to refer to different persons, and have been generally so received by the editors of Suidas and by modern legal historians. Some authorities, how- ever, as for instance Gibbon, have supposed them to refer to the same person. 'The first article is unquestionably meant for the jurist. It is based on Procopius, whose very words are to some extent copied, and indeed it adds nothing to what the latter tells us, except the statement that Tribonian was the son of Macedonianus, was dd ducnydpwv trav

biwdpywy, and was a heathen and atheist, wholly averse to the Christian faith. The second article says that the Tribonian to whom it refers was of Side (in Pamphylia), was also dd Sukyyspwv Trav brdpxwv, was a man of learning, and wrote various books, among which are mentioned certain astronomical treatises, a dialogue On Happiness, and two addresses to Justinian. None of these books relate to law; and the better opinion seems to be that there were two Tribonians, apparently contemporaries, though possibly some of the attributes of the jurist have been, by a mistake of the compilers or transcribers of the Lexicon of Suidas, extended to the man of letters of the same name.

The character which Procopius gives to the jurist, even if touched by personal spite, is entitled to some credence, because it is con- tained in the Histories and not in the scandalous and secret Anecdota. It is as follows: —‘‘Tribonian was a man of great natural powers, and had attained as high a culture as any one of his time; but he was greedy of money, capable of selling justice for gain, and every day he repealed or enacted some law at the instance of people who purchased this from him according to their several needs… . He was pleasant in manner and generally agree- able, and able by the abundance of his accomplishments to cast into the shade his faults of avarice’ (Pers., i. 24, 25). In the Anecdota Procopius adds as an illustration of Justinian’s vanity the story that he took in good faith an observation made to him by Tribonian while sitting as assessor, that he (Tribonian) greatly feared that the emperor might some day, on account of his piety, be suddenly carried up into heaven. This agrees with the character for flattery which the minister seems to have enjoyed. The charge of heathenism we find in Suidas is probable enough ; that is to say, Tribonian may well have beeu a crypto-pagan, like many other eminent courtiers and litterateurs of the time (including Procopius himself), a person who, while professing Christianity, was at least indifferent to its dogmas and rites, cherishing a sentimental recollection of the older and more glorious days of the empire.

In modern times Tribonian has been, as the master workman of Justinian’s codification and legislation, charged with three offences, —bad Latinity, a defective arrangement of the legal matter in the Code and Digest, and a too frec handling of the extracts from the older jurists included in the latter

compilation. The first of these charges cannot be denicd ; but it is hard to see why a lawyer of the 6th century, himself born in a Greck-speaking part of the empire, should be expected to write Latin as pure as that of the age of Cicero, or cven of the age of Gaius and the Antonines. To the second charge also a plea of guilty must be entered. The Code and Digest are badly arranged according to our notions of scientific arrangement. These, however, are modern notions. The ancients generally cared but little for what we call a philosophic distribu- tion of topics, and Tribonian seems to have merely followed the order of the Perpetual Edict which custom had already established, and from which custom would perhaps have refused to permit him to depart. He may more fairly be blamed for not having arranged the extracts in each title of the Digest according to some rational principle ; for this would have been easy, and would have spared much trouble to students and practitioners ever since. As to the third complaint, that the compilers of the Digest altered the ex- tracts they collected, cutting out and inserting words and sentences at their own pleasure, this was a process absolutely necessary ac- cording to the instructions given them, which were to prepare a compilation representing the existing law, and to be used for the actual administration of justice in the tribunals. The so-called Emblemata (insertions) of Tribonian were therefore indispensable, though, of course, we cannot say whether they were always made in the best way. Upon the whole subject of the codification and legis- lation in which Tribonian bore a part, see JUSTINIAN,

Tribonian, from the little we know of him, would seem to have been a remarkable man, and in the front rank of the great ones of his time, — There is nothing to show that he was a profound and philosophical jurist, like Papinian or Ulpian. But he was an energetic clear-headed man, of great practical force and skill, cul- tivated, accomplished, agreeable, flexible, possibly unserupulous, Just the sort of person whom a restless despot like Justinian finds useful. His interest in legal learning is proved by the fact that he had collected a vast legal library, which the compilers of the Digest found valuable (see const. Tanta).

The usual criticisms on Tribonian may be found in the Anti-Tribonianus

(1567) of Francis Hotman, the aim of which is shown by its alternative title, Sive discursus in quo jurisprudentie Tribonianew sterilitas et legum patriarum excellentia exhibetur ; and an answer to them in J, P. von Ludewig, Vita Jus- tiniani et Theodore, nec non Triboniant, (J. BR.)

TRIBUNE (tribunus) was a name assigned to officers of several different descriptions in the constitution of ancient Rome. The connexion of the word with tribus, “tribe,” is obvious. The original tribunes were no doubt the commanders of the several contingents of cavalry and infantry which were supplied to the Roman army by the early gentilician tribes,—the Ramnes, the Tities, and the Luceres. In the historical period the infantry in each legion were commanded by six tribunes, and the number six is probably to be traced to the doubling of the three tribes by the incorporation of the new elements which received the names of Mamnes secundi, Tities secundi, Luceres secundi. The tribuni celerum or commanders of the cavalry no longer existed in the later times of the republic, having died out with the decay of the genuine Roman cavalry.!. So long as the monarchy lasted these tribunes were doubtless nominated by the commander-in- chief, the king; and the nomination passed over on the establishment of the republic to his successors, the consuls. But, as the army increased, the popular assembly insisted on having a voice in the appointinents, and from 362 B.c. six tribunes were annually nominated by popular vote, while in 311 the number was raised to sixteen, and in 207 to twenty-four, at which figure it remained. The tribunes thus elected ranked as magistrates of the Roman people, and were designated tribunz militum a populo, while those who owed their office to the consuls bore the curious title of tribuni rufuli. The rights of the assembly passed on to the emperors, and “the military tribunes of Augustus” were still contrasted with those nominated in the camp by the actual commanders. The obscure designation tribunus zrarws, “tribune of the treasury,” had also, in all prob- ability, a connexion with the early organization of the army. The officer thus designated was at any rate the paymaster of the troops, and the soldier who was defrauded of his pay was allowed to exact it from this tribune by a very summary process. There was still another and im- portant class of tribunes who owed their existence to the army. In the long struggle between the patrician and plebeian sections of the population, the first distinctions in the public service to which the plebeians forced their way were military, and the contest for admission to

the consulate was in large part a contest for admission to the supreme command of the national forces. In 445 3.c., the year in which mixed marriages of patricians and plebeians were for the first time permitted, power was given to the senate (then wholly patrician) of determining from year to year whether consuls or military tribunes with consular authority (tribunit militares consulari potestate or imperio) should be appointed. But, even when the senate decided in favour of electing tribunes, no election was valid without the express sanction of the senate superadded to the vote of the centuriate assembly. If it happened to be too in- vidious for the senate openly to cancel the election, it was possible for the patricians to obtain a decision from the sacred authorities to the effect that some religious practice had not been duly observed, and that in consequence the appointment was invalid. According to tradition, recourse was had to this device at the first election, a plebeian having been successful. Forty-five years elapsed after the creation of the office before any plebeian was perntitted to fill it, and it was held by very few down to the time at which it was abolished (367 B.c.) and the plebeians were fully admitted to the consulate. The number of consular

1 In the legends of the foundation of the republie Brutus is repre- sented as having exercised authority, when the king was banished, merely by virtue of holding the office of tribunus celerwm.

tribunes elected on each occasion varied from three to six ; there was no year without a patrician, and to the patrician members were probably confined the most highly esteemed duties, those relating to the administration of the law and to religion.

But by far the most important tribunes who ever existed in the Roman community were the tribunes of the com- mons (¢ribuni plebis). These; as has been explained in Rome (vol. xx. p. 736 sq.), were the most characteristic outcome of the long struggle between the two orders, the patrician and the plebeian. When in 494 B.c. the plebeian legionaries met on the Sacred Mount and bound themselves to stand by each other to the end, it was determined that the plebeians should by themselves annually appoint ex- ecutive officers to stand over against the patrician officers, —

two tribunes (the very name commemorated the military nature of the revolt) to confront the two consuls, and two helpers called zdiles to balance the two patrician helpers, the questors. The name edile is obviously connected with ades, “a temple,” and is an indication of the-fact that there was a religious core to the insurrection, just as there was a religious core to the patrician opposition. The temple of Diana and Ceres on the Aventine Hill became for a time to the plebeians what the temple of Saturn was to the patricians,—their official centre and their record office. The insurgent leaders also pressed religion into their service in another way. The masses assembled on the Sacred Mount bound themselves by a solemn oath to re- gard the persons of their tribunes and eediles as inviolable, and to treat as forfeited to Diana and Ceres the lives and property of those who offered them insult. That this purely plebeian oath was the real ultimate basis of the sanctity which attached to the tribunate during the whole time of its existence can hardly be believed, though this view has had powerful support both in ancient and in recent times. The revolution must have ended in something which was deemed by both the contending bodies to be a binding compact, although the lapse of time has blotted out its terms. The historian Dionysius may have been only technically wrong in supposing that peace was con- cluded between the two parties by the fetial priests, with the forms adopted by Rome in making treaties with a foreign state. If this were fact, the “sacrosanctity” of the tribunes would be adequately explained, because all such formal fadera were “sacrosanct.” But, notwithstanding that the plebeians may safely be assumed to have been conscious of having to a large extent sprung from another race than the patricians and their retainers, it is not likely that the feeling was sufficiently strong to permit of the compact taking the form of a treaty between alien powers. Yet there must have been a formal acceptance by the patricians of the plebeian conditions ; and most probably the oath which was first sworn by the insurgents was after- wards taken by the whole community, and the “sacro- sanctity” of the plebeian officials became a part of the constitution. There must also have been some constitu- tional definition of the powers of the tribunes, These rested at first on an extension of the power of veto which the republic had introduced. Just as one consul could annul an act or order of his colleague, so a tribune could annul an act or order of a consul, or of any officer inferior to him. There was no doubt a vague understanding that only acts or orders which sinned against the just and established

practice of the constitution should be annulled, and then only in cases affecting definite individuals. The tribune was to give his help against illegality in concrete instances. The cases which arose most commonly concerned the administration of justice and the levying of troops.

Although the revolution of 494 gave the tribunes a foot- hold in the constitution, it left them with no very definite

resources against breaches of compact by the patricians. The traditional history of the tribunate from 494 to 451 B.C. is obscure, and, so far as details are concerned, nearly worthless ; but there is a thread running through it which may well be truth. We hear of attacks by patricians on the newly won privileges, even of the assassination of a tribune, and of attempts on the part of the plebeians to bring patrician offenders to justice. The assembled plebeians attempt to set up a criminal jurisdiction for their own assembly parallel to that practised by the older centuriate assembly, in which the nobles possess a pre- ponderating influence. Nay, more, the plebs attempts something like legislation ; it passes resolutions which it hopes to force the patrician body to accept as valid. As to details, only a few are worth notice. In the first place, the number of tribunes is raised to ten, how we do not know; but apparently some constitutional recognition of the increase is obtained. Then an alteration is made in the mode of election. As to the original mode, the ancient authorities are hopelessly at variance. Some of them gravely assert that the appointment lay with the assembly of the curiz—the most ancient and certainly the most patrician in Rome, even if we allow the view, which, in spite of great names, is more than doubtful —that the plebeians were members of it at any time when it still possessed political importance. The opinion of Mommsen about the method of election is more plausible than the others. It was in accordance with the Roman spirit of order that the tribunes, in summoning their assemblies, should not ask the plebeians to come en masse as individuals, and vote by heads, but should organize their supporters in bands. The curia was certainly a territorial district, and the tribunes may have originally used it as the basis of their organization. If tribunes were elected by plebeians massed curtatim, such a meeting would easily be mistaken in later times for the

comitia curiata. At any rate, a change was introduced in 471 by the Publilian Law of Volero, which directed that the tribunes should be chosen in an assembly organized on the basis of the Servian or local tribe, instead of the cura. This assembly was the germ of the comitia tributa. The question by what authority the Law of Volero was sanctioned is difficult to answer. Possibly the law was a mere resolution of the plebeians with which the patricians did not interfere, because they did not consider that the mode of election was any concern of theirs. In the first period of the tribunate the tribunes almost certainly agitated to obtain for their supporters a share in the benefits of the state domain. And, whatever view may be taken of the movement which led to the decemvirate, an important element in it was of a certainty the agitation carried on by the tribunes for the reduction of the law of Rome toa written code. Until they obtained this, it was impossible for them effectually to protect those who appealed against harsh treatment by the consuls in their capacity of judges.

During the decemvirate the tribunate was in abeyance. It was called into life again by the revolution of 449, which gave the tribunes a considerably stronger position. Their personal privi- leges and those of the ediles were renewed, while sacrosanctity was attached to a body of men called judices decemviri, who seem to have been the legal assistants of the tribunes. The road was opened up to valid legislation by the tribunes through the assembly of the tribes, but in this respect they were submitted to the control of the senate. The growth of the influence of the tribe assembly over legislation belongs rather to the history of the ComrTrA (qg.v.) than to that of the tribunate. After the Hortensian Law of 287 B.c. down to the end of the republic nearly all the legislation of Rome was in the hands of the tribunes. The details of the history of the tribunate in its second period, from 449 to 367 B.c., are hardly less obscure than those which belong to the earlier time. There was, however, on the whole, undoubtedly an advance in dignity and importance. Gradually a right was acquired of watching and inter- fering with the proceedings of the senate, and even with legislation.

558

Whether the absolute right of veto had been achieved before 367 may well be doubted. But the original awxiliwm, or right of pro- tecting individuals,

was, during this period, undergoing a very remarkable expansion. From forbidding a single act of a magis- trate in relation to a single person, the tribunes advanced to for- bidding by anticipation all acts of a certain class, whoever the persons affected by them might prove to be. It therefore became useless for the senate or the comitia to pass ordinances if a tribune was ready to forbid the magistrates to carry them out. Ultimately the mere announcement of such an intention by a tribune was sufficient to cause the obnoxious project to drop: that is to say, the tribunes acquired a right to stop all business both in the delibera- tive assembly, the senate, and in the legislative assemblies, the comitia. The technical name for this right of veto is intercessio. To what extent the tribunes during the time from 449 to 367 took part in criminal prosecutions is matter of doubt. The XII. Tables had settled that offenders could only be punished in person by the centuries, but tradition speaks of prosecutions by tribunes before the tribes where the penalty sought was pecuniary. The two main objects of the tribunes, however, at the time of which we are speak- ing were the opening of the consulate to plebeians and the regula- tion of the state domain in the interests of the whole community. Both were attained by the Licinio-Sextian Laws of 367. ’

Then a considerable change came over the tribunate. From being an opposition weapon it became an important wheel in the regular machine of state. The senate became more and more plebeian, and a new body of nobility was evolved which comprised both orders in the state. The tribunes at first belonged to the same notable plebeian families which attained to the consulate. The old friction between senate and tribunes disappeared. It was found that the tribunate served to fill some gaps in the constitution, and its power was placed by common consent on a solid constitutional basis. From 357 to 134 B.c. (when Tiberius Gracchus became tribune) the tribunate was for the most part a mere organ of senatorial govern- ment. As the change made by the Gracchi was rather in the practice than in the theory of the tribunate, it will be convenient at this point to give a definite sketch of the conditions and _privi- leges attaching to the office.

Even after the difference between patrician and tae birth had ceased to be of much practical consequence in other directions, the plebeian character was a necessity for the tribune. When the patricians P. Sulpicius Rufus and,

later, P. Clodius (the antagonist of Ciccro) desired to enter on a demagogic course, they were com- pelled to divest themselves of their patrician quality by a peculiar legal process. Even the patricians who became so by mere fiat of the emperors were excluded from the tribunate. The other neces- sary qualifications were for the most part such as attached to the other Roman magistracies,—complete citizenship, absence of certain conditions regarded as disgraceful, fulfilment of military duties. The minimum age required for the office was, as in the case of the queestorship, twenty-seven. The tribunate stood outside the round of magistracies the conditions of which were regulated by the Villian Law of 180 B.c. The election took place in a purely plebeian assembly, ranged by tribes, under the presidency of a tribune selected by lot. The tribune was bound by law to see a complete set of ten tribunes appointed. Technically, the tribunes were reckoned, not as magistrates of the Roman people, but as magis- trates of the Roman plebs; they therefore had no special robe of office, no lictors, but only messengers (viatores), no official chair, like the curule seat, but only benches (subsellia). Their right to summon the plebs together, whether for the purpose of listening to a speech (in which case the meeting was a contio) or for passing ordinances (comitia tributa), was rendered absolute by the ‘‘laws under sacred sanction” (leges sacratx), which had been incorpor- ated with the constitution on the abolition of the decemvirate. The right to summon the senate and to lay business before it was acquired soon after 367, but was seldom exercised, as the tribunes had abundant means of securing what they wanted by pressure applied to the ordinary presidents,—the consuls or the urban pretor, When an interregnwm came about and there were no ‘“magistrates of the Roman people,” the plebeian tribunes became the proper presidents of the senate and conductors of ordinary state business. At the end of the republic there were interregna of several months’ duration, when the tribunes held a position of more than usual importance. A tenure of the tribunate did not, until a comparatively late period (probably about the time of the Second Punic War), confer a claim to a permanent seat in the senate. The candidates for the office were mainly young men of good family who were at the beginning of their political career, but the office was often filled by older men of ambition who were struggling upwards with few advantages. The plebeian cdiles very soon after 367 became dissociated from the tribunes and as- sociated with the

curule ediles, so that in the political hierarchy they really ranked higher than those who were originally their superior officers.

The real kernel of the tribune’s power consisted in his inter- cessio or right of annulling ordinances, whether frained by the senate

£ETEU DE

or proposed by a magistrate to the comitia, or issued by a magistrate in pursuance of his office. From 367 B.c. down to the time of the Gracchi the power of veto in public matters was on the whole used in the interests of the aristocratic governing families to check opposition arising in their own ranks. A recalcitrant consul was most readily brought to obedience by an exercise of tribunician power. But, although modern readers of the ancient historians are apt to carry away the idea that the tribunate was an intensely political office, it is safe to say that the occasions on which tribunes found it possible to play a prominent part in politics were extremely few, even in the late republic. On the other hand, the tribunes found a field for constant activity in watching the administration of justice and in rendering assistance to those who had received harsh treatment from the magistrates. The tribunes were in fact primarily legal functionaries, and constituted in a way the only court of appeal in republican Rome. It was to this end that they were forbidden to pass a whole night away from the city, except during the Latin festival on the Alban Mount, and that they were expected to keep their doors open to suppliants by night as well as by day. They held court by day in the Forum close by the Porcian basilica, and frequently made elaborate legal inquiries into cases where their help was sought. Naturally this ordinary hum- drum work of the tribunes has left little mark on the pages of the historians, but we hear of it not unfrequently in Cicero’s speeches and in other writings which deal with legal matters. According to the general principle of the constitution, magistrates could forbid the acts of magistrates equal to or inferior to themselves. For this purpose the tribunes were deemed superior to all other officers. If a tribune exercised his veto no other tribune could annul it, for the veto could not be itself vetoed, but it was possible for another tri- bune to protect a definite individual from the consequences of dis- obedience. The number of the tribunes (ten) made it always pos- sible that one might baulk the action of another, except at times when popular feeling was strongly roused. In any case it was of little use for a tribune to move in any important matter unless he had secured the co-

operation or at least the neutrality of all his colleagues. The veto was not, however, absolute in all directions. In some it was limited by statute: thus the law passed by Gaius Gracchus about the consular provinces did not permit a tribune to veto the annual decree of the senate concerning them. When there was a dictator at the head of the state, the veto was of no avail against him. One of the important political functions of the tri- bunes was to conduct prosecutions of state offenders, particularly ex-magistrates, These prosecutions began with a sentence pro- nounced by the tribune upon the culprit, whereupon, exercising the right given him by the XII. Tables, the culprit appealed. If the tribune sought to inflict punishment on the culprit's person, the appeal was to the assembly of the centuries; if he wished for a large fine, the appeal was to the assembly of the tribes. As the tribune had no right to summon the centuries, he had to obtain the necessary meetings through the urban pretor. In the other event he himself called together the tribute assembly and proposed a bill for fining the culprit. But the forms of trial gone through were very similar in both cases.

It is commonly stated that a great change passed over the tri- bunate at the time of the Gracchi, and that from their day to the end of the republic it was used as an instrument for setting on foot political agitation and for inducing revolutionary changes. This view is an inversion of the facts. The tribunate did not create the agitation and the revolutions, but these found vent through the tribunate, which gave to the democratic leaders the hope that acknowledged evils might be cured by constitutional means, and in the desperate struggle to realize it the best democratic tribunes strained the theoretic powers of their office to their ruin. For the bad tribunes did not hesitate to use for bad ends the powers which had been strained in the attempt to secure what was good. But herein the tribunate only fared like all other parts of the republican constitution in its last period. The consuls and the senate were at least as guilty as the tribunes. After a severe restriction of its powers by Sulla and a restoration by Pompey, which gave a twenty years' respite, the tribunate was merged into the imperial con- stitution, of which indeed it became the chief corner-stone. The emperors did not become tribunes, but took up into their privileges the essence of the office, the "tribunician authority." This dis- tinction between the essential principle of the office and the actual tennre of the office was a creation of the late republic. Pompey, for example, when he went to the East, was not made

proconsul of all the Eastern provinces, but he exercised in them a “pro-consular authority” which was superior to that of the actual pro- consuls,—an authority which was the prototype of the imperial authority on its military side. Similarly the emperor, as civil governor, without being tribune, exercised powers of like quality with the powers of the tribune, though of superior force. By virtue of his tribunician authority he acquired a veto on legislation, he became the supreme court of appeal for the empire, and to his per- son was attached the ancient sacrosanctity. Augustus showed the highest statesmanship in founding his power upon a metamorphosed

tribunate, rather than upon a metamorphosed dictatorship, upon traditions which were democratic rather than upon traditions which were patrician and optimate. The tribunes continued to exist till a late period, with gradually vanishing dignity and rights ; but it is not necessary here to trace their decay in detail.

The name “tribune” was once again illuminated by a passing glory when assumed by Cola di Rienzi. The movement which he headed was in many respects extremely like the early movements of the plebeians against the patricians, and his scheme for uniting Italy in one free republic was strangely parallel with the greatest dream of the Gracchi. See Roms, vol. xx. p. 800 sq.

The history of the tribunate is interwoven with that of Rome, and must, to a large extent, be sought for in the same sources. The principles attaching to the office are profoundly analysed by Mommsen in his Staatsrecht, and are clearly set forth by E. Herzog in his Geschichte u. System der romischen Staatsverfassung (Leipsic, 1884). (.S8. R.)

TRICHINA, TRICHINOSIS. See NemarorpgEa, and PARASITISM, vol. xvill. p. 270.

TRICHINOPOLI, a district of British India, in the Madras presidency, lying between 10° 37’ and 11° 30’ N. lat. and 78° 12’ and 79° 30’ E. long. Its area is 3561 square miles. It is bounded on the north and north-west by Salem, on the north and north-east by South Arcot, on the east and south-

east by Tanjore, on the south by Pudukottai state and Madura, and on the west by Coim- batore. The surface is generally flat, though diversified by masses of crystalline rock, of which the Trichinopoli rock in the fort is a well-known example. The district is well wooded, though nothing worthy of the name of forest is to be found in it. The only mountains are the Pachaimalais, which rise to 2500 feet and extend into Salem district. The Kaveri (q¢.v.) and its branch the Colerun are the only rivers of any importance. Trichi- nopoli has numerous roads, and the South Indian Railway traverses it from east to west. The climate is very hot, and not liable to great variations; the annual average rainfall is about 38 inches.

In 1881 the population of the district was 1,215,033 (males 586, 434, females 628,599), of whom Hindus numbered 1,119,484, Moham- medans 34,104, and Christians 58,809. The only town with a population exceeding 10,000 is Trichinopoli, the capital, with 84,449 inhabitants. This city is chicfly noticeable for its strong fort, perched on a granite peak 500 feet high, and the group of temples and temple buildings situated on and around it. The town next in importance is SRIRANGAM (q.v.). The chief crops of the district are rice, cotton, tobacco, indigo, sugar-cane, cocoa-nut, plantain, areca-nut, and chillies; and the most important local industries are weaving and the manufacture of cigars. The prin- cipal exports are grain of all kinds, especially rice ; the imports, tobacco and salt. In 1885-86 the gross revenue of the district was £225,896, the land-tax yielding £185,889. Trichinopoli dis- trict, along with the rest of the Carnatic, of which it formed part, passed to the British by treaty in 1801.

TRIC TRAC. See Backeammon, vol. il. p. 199.

TRICYCLE. Though velocipedes were made and used more than one hundred years ago, none were practically successful until the brothers Starley constructed in 1876 the Coventry tricycle. One of the earliest descriptions of a cycle occurs in the Journal de Paris of 17th July 1779. Somewhat later M. Richard invented a machine driven by mechanism almost identical with that of the modern omnicycle, but without the expanding segments. Early in the 19th century the cranked axle worked by treadles and levers came into fashion; then the heavy four-wheelers were preferred. All these machines, how- ever, laboured under three fatal defects:

it was almost impossible to drive them up-hill, to check them in going down-hill, and to prevent their overturning in rounding a corner.

It was the success of the early bicycle (see Bricycur) which suggested the belief that a serviceable tricycle could be made. One of these bicycles was specially constructed for ladies, the hind wheel being placed well on one side ; but, though it could be ridden, it was not a commercial success. The brothers Starley, by putting a second small wheel in front of the large driving wheel and on the same side as the small hind wheel, gave stability to the machine;

it was steered by turning the small wheels opposite ways, and driven by the large wheel by means of cranks and connecting rods. The same machine with chain driving —the Coventry rotary—is still very largely used. In 1877 James Starley, it is believed without any knowledge of the gear used by Fowler for traction engines, re-in- vented the same differential gear for tricycles. By this the same force is, under all circumstances, applied to each of two equal driving wheels, and the evil effects of driving a single wheel are done away with. This gear was used in the original Salvo tricycle, which is the type of the surest machine at the present day. In the early days of the modern tricycle other designs were carried out, which have now become practically obsolete. In one form the hind wheel of a bicycle was replaced by a pair of equal wheels, one’ on each side, but the instability of such a construction was fatal. In another, the Challenge, the two wheels were placed in front of the large driver and turned together to steer the machine; stability was ob- tained by putting the rider in front of the large wheel and lower down, the power being communicated by cranks and connecting rods. But the weight of this machine and the small proportion of the load on the driving wheel were serious defects.

Single-driving rear-steerers were at this time very com- mon, and, though highly objectionable, are still to be seen. Rear-steerers were improved by making both front wheels drivers and allowing for the overrunning of one or the other by clutch, as in the Cheylesmore, or by ratchet driv- ing ; but steering by the hind wheel is essentially wrong, and these machines are avoided by experienced riders. Rear-steerers have, however, lately been

made with a through axle and differential gear (Rover), the rider being placed further back so as to increase the load on the steering wheel; but the evil of rear-steering is only re- duced, not removed. The clutch is also employed on some front-steerers ; and, though in certain respects it has an advantage over the differential gear, for general use it is not so suitable. The differential gear is an essential feature of the modern tricycle.

In 1878 Messrs Doubleday and Humber patented the Humber machine, which is both driven and steered by the two front wheels, the rider being seated on a trailing backbone and hind wheel as in the bicycle. This machine requires skill to manage: the steering is at first difficult to control and a spill over the handles is quite possible ; under a skilful rider, however, the Humber is generally recognized as one of the fastest machines. It is steered by a cross handle, like the bicycle, and this method of steering, in spite of the fact that it boxes the rider into the machine, is becoming very general in front steerers in place of the rack and pinion steering hitherto in use. The Cripper is a very popular example. The brake is an im- portant feature in roadster tricycles. It is always made to act on the box of the differential gear where that is used ; but in clutch or single-driven machines one or two independent band-brakes or spoon-brakes are used.

In early days the steering wheel was made small to save weight ; the drivers were often 50 inches or more in diameter; and the machine was as short as possible. Owing to the discomfort attending a small wheel anda short base the tendency at present is to increase the size of the steering wheel and the length of the base, and to diminish the diameter of the drivers,—two notable examples being the Quadrant and the Crescent. It is usual, especially when small driving wheels are used, to gear the machine up, just as in the old days they were commonly geared down; that is, the chain wheel on the crank axle has more or fewer teeth than that on the wheel axle, and thus the wheels turn faster or slower than the

cranks, or are equivalent to larger or smaller wheels. Two- speed gears are becoming general, among which may be especially mentioned the Cryptodynamic. By means of these it is possible to change the gear of the machine so as to havea high gear under favourable conditions and a low

gear when mud, wind, or an ascent make travelling difficult. Although chain gearing is used in nearly every machine made, connecting rods, wheels, or bands are fitted instead to some machines. The necessity for such mechan- ism has been avoided by making the wheel axle also the

treadle axle; but great instability is the result.

Machines in which the arms instead of the legs supply the power are made, and are of immense service to those who have lost the use of their legs. .

Owing to the inconvenience caused by doorways being often too narrow to allow a tricycle to pass through, many machines are made to fold up into a narrower space or to shut up like a telescope.

It is important that the rider should be so placed that he can, without leaning forward, put most of his weight on the treadles, and this is more than ever needed as the steepness of an ascent in- creases, becausc the slope of the machine has a contrary effect. Slid- ing seats were arranged for this purpose; but Mr Warner Jones has made use of a swinging frame which the rider can lock in any posi- tion he pleases. It is this same swinging frame which gives such comfort to the rider of the Otto bicycle, placing him at all times in the position most suitable for the occasion,

Carrier tricycles, in which due provision is made for the proper distribution of the load, are largely used by the post-office and by tradesmen in their business. The “Coventry chair” is a kind of bath chair driven as a tricycle by a rider behind. When invalids have overcome a certain prejudice as to the danger of this kind of vehicle, it will no doubt be more-generally used,

In machines for two riders the riders sit side by side (sociables) or one is placed before the other (tandems). Sociable machines are both front-steering and rear-stcering. Rear-steerers with each rider driving the wheel on his side only are nearly as objectionable as the single-driving rear-stecrer. Front-steering sociables with dif- ferential gear are safe and comfortable ; but all sociables are slow machines. For nearly every imake of single tricycle there is a corresponding tandem. The Coventry rotary in the tandem form suffers more from the single-side driving than in the single form, the rear-steering machines not so much, owing to the greater weight

which the stecring wheel has to bear. The Humber is less sen- sitive in the steering, owing to the greater moment of inertia of the frame and the front rider. The front-steerer cannot be made safer, but an excellent tandem is formed by placing the rear-rider on a trailing tail asin the Humber. Tandems have an advantage over sociables and perhaps over single tricycles in the matter of speed ; they are, however, not quite so safe, and their appearance alone prevents many from riding them. Many sociables and tandems are convertible into single machines with but little trouble.

The following tables of quickest times which have been accomplished up to the end of 1886 (certified by the National Cyclists' Union) will show the com- parative value of the bicycle and tricycle as racing machines.

On a prepared racing path.

Distance. | Time, tricycle. Time, bicycledt | Sa a a nn 2 min. 32°4 sec.

Ud 5, 28! os |

2 min. 46°8 sec. LTO 4s

Sd nite Satta ads ne ne 59 10°6

bal a ? +2 ? 6 hrs. 43 min. 32°5 sec. 5 hrs. 50 min. 5°4 sec. |

: . . 20 miles 460 yds., tricycle. Greatest distance in one hour { 20 , 560 4, i bicycle.

On a public road.

Land's End to John o' Groats1 { 5 days 10 hrs., tricycle. (about 870 miles) 5 1 ,, 45 min., bicycle.

" i i 2504 miles, tricycle. Greatest distance in 24 hours 295°, ar cycle, (C. V. B.)

TRIESTE (Germ. 7'riest, Slav. Z'rst, Lat. Tergeste), the principal seaport of the Austrian-Hungarian empire, is picturesquely situated at the north-east angle of the Adriatic Sea, in the Gulf of Trieste and at the foot of the barren

Karst Hills. The old town, nestling round the hill on which the castle stands, consists of narrow, steep, and irregular streets. It is connected by the broad and hand- some Corso with the well-built new town, which lies on the flat expanse adjoining the crescent-shaped bay, partly on ground that has been reclaimed from the sea. The prevailing air of the town is Italian rather than German. The castle, built in 1680, is believed to occupy the site of

1 These two by the same rider.

the Roman capitol (see below). Near it is the cathedral of S. Giusto, an unimposing but interesting building, mainly of the 14th century, and incorporating fragments of a Roman temple and early Christian churches, Don Carlos of Spain (d. 1855) is interred in the south aisle, and Fouché, Napoleon’s minister of police, in front of the church, while the churchyard contains the grave and monument of Winckelmann, the archzologist, who was murdered at Trieste in 1768. The Arco di Riccardo, also in the old town, derives its name from a popular delusion that it was connected with Richard Cceur-de-Lion, but is probably an arch of a Roman aqueduct. A collection of Roman antiquities found in or near the town has been formed near the castle. The most prominent building in the new town is the Tergesteo, a huge edifice containing the exchange and numerous shops and offices. The new municipal buildings, with the handsome hall of the pro- vincial diet, the Palazzo Revoltella, the offices of the Austrian Lloyd’s, and the handsome old exchange are also noteworthy. The church of 8. Maria Maggiore is Ty TTY AY LT

74a Gp

OO00cs0

000000 :

;

Plan of Trieste,

a characteristic specimen of Jesuit architecture, and the new Greek church is one of the handsomest Byzantine structures in the empire. The city hospital has accom- modation for 2000 patients. The huge Politeama is the largest theatre. In front of the Palazzo Revoltella is a monument to the emperor Maximilian of Mexico, who had been an admiral in the Austrian service. His sumptuous chateau of Miramar is one of the lions of the neighbour- hood. The capacious harbour, consisting of two parts, the old and the new, is protected by extensive moles and breakwaters, and has been greatly improved within the last ten or fifteen years. From the harbour the Canal Grande extends into the town, allowing large vessels to unload at the warehouses. At the end of the Molo Sta Teresa is a lighthouse upwards of 100 feet high. The population of the town (6424 in 1758) and district of Trieste in 1880 was 144,844, of whom 74,544 belonged to the town proper and 133,019 to the town and suburbs, The town population is very heterogeneous, but the Italian element far exceeds all the rest. There are about 5000

Greek.

Indian.

Germans and also numerous Greeks, English, and French. The population includes 26,000 Slavs, most of whom live in the country districts and are engaged in agriculture. Trieste has been a frec imperial port since 1719. It may be said to nearly monopolize the trade of the Adriatic, and has long eclipsed its ancient rival Venice. The anuual value of its exports and imports is about 30 millions sterling. Among the chief im- ports are coffee, wine, fruit, grain, tobacco, petroleum, cotton, coals, and manufactured goods of various kinds; the exports include spirits, liqueurs, sugar, meal, timber, glass, and machinery. Large quantities of fish are sent to Vienna. In 1885 the port was entered by 6971 vesscls with an aggregate burden of 1,267,946 tons. The trading fleet of Trieste numbers about 500 ships of 100,000 tons burden. The chief shipping company is the Austrian Lloyd’s, founded in 1836, the steamers of which ply to the Mediterranean ports, Alexandria, Constantinople, the Black Sea, &c. The exten- sive wharfs and dockyards of the company lie to the south of the town. The chief branches of industry

practised at Tricste are shipbuilding, soap-boiling, machine -making (especially marine engines), tanning, brewing, rope-making, and the manufacture of liqueurs (rosoglio). Trieste is the seat of government for the so-

TR iG O N

RIGONOMETRY is primarily the science which is concerned with the measurement of plane and spherical triangles, that is, with the determination of three of the parts of such triangles when the numerical values of the other three parts are given. Since any plane tri- angle can be divided into right-angled triangles, the solu- tion of all plane triangles can be reduced to that of right- angled triangles; moreover, according to the theory of similar triangles, the ratios between pairs of sides of a right-angled triangle depend only upon the magnitude of the acute angles of the triangle, and may therefore be regarded as functions of either of these angles. The primary object of trigonometry, therefore, requires a classi- fication and numerical tabulation of these functions of an angular magnitude ; the science is, however, now under- stood to include the complete investigation not only of such of the properties of these functions as are necessary for the theoretical and practical solution of triangles but also of all their analytical properties. It appears that the solution of spherical triangles is effected by means of the same functions as are required in the case of plane triangles. The trigonometrical functions are employed in many branches of mathematical and physical science not directly concerned with the measurement of angles, and hence arises the importance of analytical trigonometry. The solution of triangles of which the sides are geodesic lines on a spheroidal surface requires the introduction of other functions than those required for the solution of triangles on a plane or spherical surface, and therefore gives rise to a new branch of science, which is from analogy frequently called spheroidal trigonometry. Every new class of surfaces which may be considered would have in this extended sense a trigonometry of its own, which would consist in an investigation of the nature and properties of the functions necessary for the measurement of the sides and angles of triangles bounded by geodesics drawn on such

surfaces.

HIsTory.

An account of Greek trigonometry is given under PTOLEMY (q.v.).

The Indians, who were much more apt calculators than the Greeks, availed themselves of the Greek geometry which came from Alexandria, and made it the basis of trigonometrical calculations. The principal improvement which they introduced consists in the formation of tables of half-chords or sines instead of chords. Like the Greeks, they divided the circumference of the circle into 360 degrees or 21,600 minutes, and they found the length in minutes of the arc which can be straightened out into

called Kiistenland or Coast district, and is the seat of naval and military commanders and other officials. The town council, pre- sided over by the podesta, is also the diet of the crownland of Trieste (35 square miles). Trieste is the seat of the bishop of Capo d'Istria.

History At the time of the foundation of Aquileia by the Romans, the district which now includes Trieste was occupied by Celtic and Illyrian tribes ; and the Roman colony of Tergeste does not seem to have been established till the reign of Vespasian. After the break-up of the Roman dominion Trieste shared the general for- tunes of Istria and passed through various hands. From the em- peror Lothaire it received an independent existence under its count- bishops, and it maintained this position down to its capture by Venice in 1203. For the next 180 years its history consists chiefly of a series of conflicts with this city, which were finally put an end to by Trieste placing itself in 1882 under the protection of Leopold III. of Austria. The overlordship thus established in- sensibly developed into actual possession; and except in the Napoleonic period (1797-1805 and 1809-1813) Trieste has since remained an integral part of the Austrian dominions.

TRIGGER-FISH. See Fitz-Fisu.

Ont Th ¥

the radius to be 3438’. The value of the ratio of the circumference of the circle to the diameter used to make this determination is 62832 : 20000, or t= 31416, which value was given by the astronomer Aryabhata (476-550 ; see SANSKRIT, vol. xxi. p. 294) in a work called Arya- bhatiya, written in verse, which was republished? in Sanskrit by Dr Kern at Leyden in 1874. The relations between the sines and cosines of the same and of complementary arcs

were known, and the formula sin $a = »/1719(34388 — cos a) was applied to the determination of the sine of a half angle when the sine and cosine of the whole angle were known. In the Stirya-Siddhdnta, an astronomical treatise which has been translated by Ebenezer Bourgess in vol. vi. of the Journal of the American Oriental Society (New Haven, 1860), the sines of angles at an interval of 3° 45’ up to 90° are given; these were probably obtained from the sines of 60° and 45° by continual application of the dimidi- ary formula given above and by the use of the complement- ary angle. The values sin 15°=890’, sin 7° 30’= 449’, sin 3° 45’ = 225’, were thus obtained. Now the angle 3° 45’ is itself 225’; thus the arc and the sine of z’gth of the cir- cumference were found to be the same, and consequently special importance was attached to this arc, which was called the right sine. From the tables of sines of angles at intervals of 3° 45’ the law expressed by the equation sin (n+ 1. 225’) — sin (1. 225’) =sin (n . 225’) — sin (7 — 1. 225’) (1. 225’)

225

was discovered empirically, and used for the purpose of recalculation. Bhaskara (fl. 1150) used the method, to which we have now returned, of expressing sines and cosines as fractions of the radius; he obtained the more correct values sin 3° 45’=100/1529, cos 3° 45’= 466/467, and showed how to form a table, according to degrees, from the values sin 1° = 10/573, cos 1° = 6568/6569, which are much more accurate than Ptolemy’s values. The Indians did not apply their trigonometrical knowledge to the solution of triangles ; for astronomical purposes they solved right- angled plane and spherical triangles by geometry.

The Arabs were acquainted with Ptolemy’s Almagest, and they probably learned from the Indians the use of the sine. The celebrated astronomer of

Batnee, Abu ‘Abdallah Mohammed b. Jabir al-Battani (Bategnius), who died in 929/930 a.D., and whose Zables were translated in the 12th century by Plato of Tivoli into Latin, under the title De sctentia stellarum, employed the sine regularly, and was fully conscious of the advantage of the sine over the chord ; indeed, he remarks that the continual doubling is saved

— sin

1 See also vol. ii. of the Asiatic Researches (Calcutta).

by the use of the former. He was the first to calculate sin¢ from the equation sin¢/cos¢=4, and he also made a table of the lengths of shadows of a vertical object of height 12 for altitudes 1°, 2°,...of the sun; this is a sort of cotangent table. He was acquainted, not only with the triangle formule in the Almagest, but also with the formula cos a=cos 6 cose+sinb sine cos A for a spherical triangle ABC. Abu ’1-Wafa of Baghdad (b. 940) was the first to introduce the tangent as an independent function : his ““‘umbra” is the half of the tangent of the double are, and the secant he defines as the ‘diameter umbre.” He employed the umbra to find the angle from a table and not merely as an abbreviation for sin/cos; this improvement was, however, afterwards forgotten, and the tangent was re-invented in the 15th century. Ibn Yunos of Cairo, who died in 1008, showed even more skill than Al-Battdénf in the solution of problems in spherical trigonometry and gave improved approximate formule for the calculation of sines. Among the West Arabs, Abu Mohammed Jabir b. Aflah, known as Geber b. Aflah, who lived at Seville in the 11th century, wrote an astronomy in nine books, which was translated into Latin in the 12th century by Gerard of Cremona and was published in 1534. The first book con- tains a trigonometry which is a considerable improvement on that in the Almagest. He gave proofs of the formule for right-angled spherical triangles, depending on a rule of four quantities, instead of Ptolemy’s rule of six quantities. The formule cos B=cos 6 sin A, cos c=cot A cot B, ina triangle of which C is a right angle

had escaped the notice of Ptolemy and were given for the first time by Geber. Strangely enough, he made no progress in plane trigono- metry. Arrachel, a Spanish Arab who lived in the 12th century, wrote a work of which we have an analysis by Purbach, in which, like the Indians, he made the sine and the arc for the value 3° 45’ coincide.

Purbach (1423-1461), professor of mathematics at Vienna, wrote a work entitled Zractatus super propositiones Ptole- met de sinubus et chordis (Nuremberg, 1541). This treatise consists of a development of Arrachel’s method of inter- polation for the calculation of tables of sines, and was pub- lished by Regiomontanus at the end of one of his works. Johannes Miiller (1436-1476), known as Recromontanus (q.v.), was a pupil of Purbach and taught astronomy at Padua ; he wrote an exposition of the Almagest and a more important work, De triangulis planis et sphericis cum tabulis sinuum, which was published in 1533, a later edition ap- pearing in 1561. He re-invented the tangent and calcu- lated a table of tangents for each degree, but did not make any practical applications of this table, and did not use formule involving the tangent. His work was the first complete European treatise on trigonometry, and contains a number of interesting problems; but his methods were in some respects behind those of the Arabs. Copernicus (1473-1543) gave the first simple demonstration of the fundamental formula of spherical trigonometry ; the T’rigo- nometria Copernici was published by Rheticus in 1542. George Joachim (1514-1576), known as Ruxricus (¢.v.), wrote Opus Palatinum de triangulis (see TaBius, p. 9 above), which contains tables of sines, tangents, and secants of ares at intervals of 10” from 0° to 90°. His method of calculation depends upon the formule which give sin na and cosa in terms of the sines and cosines of (n—1)a and (n — 2)a; thus these formule may be regarded as due to him. Rheticus found the formule for the sines of the half and third of an angle in terms of the sine of the whole angle. In 1599 there appeared an important work by Pitiscus (1561-1613), entitled Trigonometriz seu de dimen- stone triangulorum; this contained several important theo- rems on the trigonometrical functions of two angles, some of which had been given before by Finck, Landsberg,

and Adriaan van Roomen. Francois Viéte or Viera (q.v. (1540-1603) employed the equation (2 cos}¢)3 — 3(2 cosd¢) = 2cos ¢ to solve the cubic x — 3a*x =a*b(a> 4b); he ob- tained, however, only one root of the cubic. In 1593 Van Roomen proposed, as a problem for all mathematicians, to solve the equation

45y — 3795y° + 95634y —... + 945y41 — 459/43 4. 5 = 0.

Viéte gave y=2sin 7:4, where C’ =2sin ¢, asa solution, and also twenty-two of the other solutions, but he failed to obtain the negative roots. In his work Ad angulares sectiones Vitte gave formule for the chords of multiples of a given arc in terms of the chord of the simple are.

A new stage in the development of the science was commenced after Napier’s invention of logarithms in 1614. Napier also simplified the solution of spherical triangles by his well-known analogies and by his rules for the solution of right-angled triangles. The first tables of logarithmic sines and tangents were constructed by Edmund Gunter (1581-1626), professor of astronomy at Gresham College, London ; he was also the first to employ the expressions cosine, cotangent, and cosecant for the sine, tangent, and secant of the complement of an arc. A treatise by Albert Girard (1590-1634), published at The Hague in 1626, con- tains the theorems which give areas of spherical triangles and polygons, and applications of the properties of the supplementary triangles to the reduction of the number of different cases in the solution of spherical triangles. He used the notation sin, tan, sec for the sine, tangent, and secant of an arc. In the second half of the 17th century the theory of infinite series was developed by Wallis, Gregory, Mercator, and afterwards by Newton and Leibnitz. In the Analysis per xquationes numero terminorum infinitas, which was written before 1669, Newton gave the series for the are in powers of its sine; from this he obtained the series for the sine and cosine in powers of the arc; but these series were given in such a form that the law of the formation of the coefficients was hidden. James Gregory discovered in 1670 the series for the arc in powers of the tangent and for the tangent and secant in powers of the arc. The first of these series was also discovered inde- pendently by Leibnitz in 1673, and published without proof in the Acta eruditorum for

1682. The series for the sine in powers of the are he published in 1693; this he obtained by differentiation of a series with undetermined coefficients.

In the 18th century the science began to take a more analytical form ; evidence of this is given in the works of Kresa in 1720 and Mayer in 1727. Oppel's Analysis triangulorum (1746) was the first complete work on analytical trigonometry. None of these mathematicians used the notation sin, cos, tan, which is the more surprising in the case of Oppel, since Euler had in 1744 employed it in a memoir in the Acta eruditorum. John Bernoulli was the first to obtain real results by the use of the symbol —1; he published in 1712 the general formula for tan n¢ in terms of tan¢, which he obtained by means of trans- formation of the arc into imaginary logarithms. The greatest advance was, however, made by Euler, who brought the science in all essential respects into the state in which it is at present. He introduced the present nota- tion into general use, whereas until his time the trigono- metrical functions had been, except by Girard, indicated by special letters, and had been regarded as certain straight lines the absolute lengths of which depended on the radius of the circle in which they were drawn. Euler's great im- provement consisted in his regarding the sine, cosine, &c., as functions of the angle only, thereby giving to equations connecting these functions a purely analytical interpreta- tion, instead of a geometrical one as heretofore. The

Concep- tion of angles of any mag- nitude,

_ Numeri-) cal meas- urement of angu- lar mag- nitudes.

exponential values of the sine and cosine, De Moivre's theorem, and a great number of other analytical properties of the trigonometrical functions are due to Euler, most of whose writings are to be found in the Memoirs of the St Petersburg Academy.

The preceding sketch has been mainly drawn from the following sources : —Cantor, Gesch. d. Math.; Hankel, Gesch. d. Math. ; Marie, Hist. des sc. math. ; Suter, Gesch. d. Math. ; Kliigel, Math. Worterbuch.

Plane Trigonometry.

Imagine a straight line terminated at a fixed point O, and initially coincident with a fixed straight line 0A, to revolve round Q, and finally to take up any position OB.

We shall suppose that, when this re-

volving straight line is turning in one

direction, say that opposite to that in

which the hands of a clock tum, it is

describing a positive angle, and when

it is turning in the other direction it 0 is describing a negative angle. Before finally taking up the position OB the straight line may have passed any num- ber of times through the position OB, making any number Of complete revo- lutions round O in either direction. Each time that the straight line makes a complete revolution round O we consider it to have described four right angles, taken with the positive or negative sign according to the direction in which it has revolved; thus, when it stops in the position OB, it may have revolved through any one of an infinite number of positive or negative angles any two of which differ from one another by a positive or negative multiple of four right angles, and all of which have the same bounding lines 04 and OB. If OB” is the final position of the revolving line, the smallest positive angle which can have been described is that described by the revolv- ing line making more than one-half and less.than the whole of a complete revolution, so that in this case we have a positive angle greater than two and less than four right angles. We have thus shown how we may conceive an angle not restricted to less than two right angles, but of any positive or negative magnitude, to be generated.

Two systems of numerical measurement of angular magnitudes are in ordinary use. For practical measurements the sexagesimal system is the one employed: the ninetieth part of a right angle is taken as the unit and is called a degree ; the degree is divided into sixty equal parts called minutes ; and

the minute into sixty equal parts called seconds; angles smaller than a second are usually measured as decinials of a second, the “thirds,” “fourths,” &c., not being in ordinary use. In the common notation an angle, for ex- ample, of 120 degrees, 17 minutes, and 14°36 seconds is written 120° 17’ 14”°36. The decimal system measurement of angles has never come into ordinary use. In analytical trigonometry the circular measure of an angle isemployed. In this system the unit angle is the angle subtended at the centre of a circle by an arc equal in length to the radius. The constancy of this angle follows from the geometrical propositions—(1) the circumferences of different circles vary as their radii; (2) in the same circle angles at the centre are proportional to the arcs which subtend them. It thus follows that the unit mentioned above is an angle independent of the particular circle used in defining it. The constant ratio of the circumference of a circle to its diameter is a quantity incommensurable with unity, nsually denoted by 7, We shall indicate later on (p. 571 sq.) some of the methods which have been employed to approximate to the value of this quantity. Its value to 20 places is 3°14159265358979823846 ; its reciprocal to the same number of places is °31830988618379067153. In circular measure every angle is measured by the ratio which it bears to the unit angle. Two right angles are measured by the quantity 7, and, since the same angle is 180°, we see that the number of degrees in an angle of circular measure @ is obtained from the formula 180 × 6/7. The value of the unit of circular measure has been found to 41 places of decimals by Glaisher (Proc. London Math.

Soc., vol. iv.); the value of B from which the unit can be easily

4a

a Fig. 1.

calculated, is given to 140 places of decimals in Grunert’s Archiv, vol, i., 1841. To 10 decimal places the value of the unit angle is 57° 17’ 44”-8062470964, The unit of circular measure is too large to be convenient for practical purposes, but its use introduces a simplification into the series in analytical trigonometry, owing to the fact that the sine of an angle and the angle itself in this measure, when the magnitude of the angle is indefinitely diminished, are ultimately in a ratio of equality.

If a point moves from a position 4 to another position B on a straight line, it has described a length AB of the straight line. It is convenient to havea simple mode of indicating in which direction on the straight line the length 4B has been described ; this may

be done by supposing that a point moving in one specified direction Sign of is describing a positive length, and when moving in the opposite portions direction a negative length. Thus, if a point moving from 4 to B of an in- is moving in the positive direction, we consider the length AB as finite positive ; and, since a point moving from B to J is moving in the straight negative direction, we consider the length BA as negative. Hence line. any portion of an infinite straight line is considered to be positive

or negative according to the direction in which we suppose this

portion to be described by a moving point ; which direction is the positive one is, of course, a matter of convention.

If perpendiculars AZ, BM be drawn from two points 4; B on Projec- any straight line, not necessarily in the same plane with AB, the tions of length LY, taken with the positive or negative sign according to straight the convention as stated above, is called the projection of «42 on lines on the given straight line; the projection of BA being MZ has the each opposite sign to the projection of AB. If two points A, B be joined other. by a number of lines in any manner, the algebraical sum of the projections of all these lines is LM,—that is, the same as the pro- Jection of AB. Hence the sum of the projections of all the sides of any closed polygon, not necessarily Se on any straight line, is zero. This principle of projections we shall apply below to ob- tain some of the most important propositions in trigonometry.

Let us now return to the conception of the generation of an Defini- angle as in fig. 1. Draw BOB’ at right angles to and equal to 4.4’. tion of

£ We shall suppose that the direction from 4’ trigono- to A is the positive one for the straight line metrical ‘ s AOA’, and that from B’ to B for func- rai BOB’. Suppose OP of fixed length, tions.

equal to OA, and let PM, PN be

drawn perpendicular to 4’A, B’B

oe respectively ; then OJ and ON,

taken with their proper signs, are the projec-

7 tions of OP on A’A and BB. The ratio of

Fig. 2. the projection of OP on B’B to the absolute

‘ length of OP is dependent only on the magni-

tude of the angle POA, and is called the sine of that angle; the ratio of the projection of OP on 4’ to the length OP is called the cosine of the angle POA. The ratio of the sine of an angle to its cosine is called the tangent of the angle, and that of the cosine to the sine the cotangent of the angle; the reciprocal of the cosine is called the secant, and that of the sine the cosecant of the angle. These functions of an angle of magnitude a are denoted by sin a, cos a, tan a, cot a, sec a, cosec a respectively. If any straight line RS be drawn parallel to OP, the projection of RS on either of the straight lines 4’A, B’B can be easily seen to bear to RS the same ratios which the corresponding projections of OP bear to OP: thus, if a be the angle which RS makes with 4’, the projections of RS on A’A, BB are RS cos a and RS sin a respectively, where

RS denotes the absolute length RS. It must be observed that

the line SZ is to be considered as parallel not to OP but to OP”,

and therefore makes an angle r+a with 4’; this is consistent

with the fact that the projections of SR are of opposite sign to

those of RS. By observing the signs of the projections of OP for

the positions P, P’, P”, P’”’ of P we see that the sine and cosine of

the angle POA are both positive ; the sine of the angle P’OA is posi-

tive and its cosine is negative ; both the sine and the cosine of the

angle P”OA are negative; and the sine of the angle POA is

negative and its cosine positive. If a be the numerical value of

the smallest angle of which OP and OA are boundaries, we see

that, since these straight lines also bound all the angles 2nr+a,

where m is any positive or negative integer, the sines and cosines

of all these angles are the same as the sine and cosine of a. Hence

the sine of any angle 2n7+

and negative if a is between m and 27, and the cosine of the same

angle is positive if a is between 0 and $7 or $7 and 2m and negative if a is between 47 and 37.

In fig. 2 if the angle POA is a, the angle POA is —a, P’OA is w—a, P’OA is r+a, POB is =” a. By observing the signs of the

projections we see that

sin(-—a)=-sina, sin(r—a)=sina, sin(r+a)=—sina, cos(—a)=cosa, cos(r—a)=-cosa, cos(r+a)=—cosa, sin(47 —a)=cosa, cos(4m—a)=sina. Also sin(jr+a)=sin(r7-4r-a)= sin(hr—a)= cosa, cos(4a + a)=cos(r — 44 —a)= — cos(4r —a)= — sina, From these equations we have tan(— a) = — tana, tan(w — a)= — tana, tan(7-+a)=—tana, tan(4r—a)=cota, tan($r+a)=—cota, with

corresponding equations for the cotangent.

The only angles for which the projection of OP on B'B is the same as for the given angle PO.A (=a) are the two sets of angles bounded by OP, 04 and OP', OA; these angles are 2n7+a and 2nm +m —a,and are all included in the formula rr +(—1)"a, wherer is any integer ; this therefore is the formula for all angles having the same sine asa, The only angles which have the same cosine as aare those bounded by OA, OP and OA, OP", and these are all included in the formula 2n7-+a. Similarly it can be shown

Rela- tions be- tween trigono- metrical func- tions.

that na+a includes all the angles which have the same tangent as a.

From the Pythagorean theorem, the sum of the squares of the projections of any straight line upon two straight lines at right angles to one another is equal to the square on the projected line, we get sin2a+cos'a=1, and from this by the help of the definitions of the other functions we deduce the relations 1+tan?a=sec'a, 1+cot?a=cosec?a. We have now six relations between the six functions; these enable us to express any five of these functions in terms of the sixth. The following table shows the values of the trigonometrical functions of the angles 0, 47, 7, 37, 27, and the signs of the functions of angles between these values; J denotes numerical increase and D numerical decrease.

'Angle ….| 0 |0…40| 9 ljw.f.a| @ |w…97 gm im… 20 or | = = – — | = eS ID Mash, i 0 iB J D p70 nh l= il -~D 0 Cosine aeor 4 tD 0) ty | -1 =D a) 10 al 1} i\Tangent ..| 0] +7 |e) -D j 0] 41 estes)» ID "us Cotangent ||} +D oO) ar

|e) =p oh on | |Secant …. 1] +2 |e) -D | -1) -I tx lif 1| Cosecant ..| boo! +D 1) eee Vices! aD. -1 a + «|

The correctness of the table may be verified from the figure by con-

Values of trigono- metrical functions for some angles.

Formule for sine and co- sine of sum and differ- ence of two angles.

sidering the magnitudes of the projections of OP for different positions.

The following table shows the sine and cosine of some angles for which the values of the functions may be obtained geometrically :— oT sine cosine 5 aa ot Vb- SJB R‘4sn oo – i™ i. 4 4 7 | as VB-1 | 10425 | yg | 10 | é 4 4 5 1 [3 ° 1 a = vas 60 <7 6 | ro 2 2 8 7 ss 4/10 — 24/5 a/b La os 4 | ~s – 10 J i 1 Tv | ° — — ° oa | 4 45 JE Vi 45 ee cosine | sine |

These are obtained as follows. (1) – The sine and cosine of this angle are equal to one another, since sin 1 = 098 (G -j7 the sum of the squares of the sine and cosine is unity each is Je (2) 4 and – Consider an equilateral triangle ; the projection of

) ; and since iL

one side on another is obviously half a side; hence the cosine of

an angle of the triangle is t or cos – =), and from this the sine is x uw Que 3a : : : P (3) 10’ B’ 5’ 10° In the triangle constructed in Euc. iv.

10 each angle at the base is =, and the vertical angle is – If a

found.

be a side and b the base, we have by the construction a(a — b)=0? ;

hence 2b=a(/5-1); the sine of a is = or V5- 1 and cos 5 is ee a eee Te

Ota (4) 79’ jo’ Consider a right-angled triangle, hav- ing an angle 7. Bisect this angle, then the opposite side is cut by the bisector in the ratio of 4/8 to

2; hence the length of the smaller segment is to that of the whole in the ratio of 4/3 to \/3 +2,

afi

therefore tan 737 = ToT tan $0 or tan fy7=2— 4/3, and from this

3+

we can obtain sin 77 and cos yr.

Draw a straight line OD making any angle 4 with a fixed straight line OA, and draw OF making an angle B with o OD, this angle being measured positively in the same direction as A; draw FZ a perpendicular on DO (produced if necessary). The projection a of OF on O4 is the sum of the projections of E OE and EF on OA, Now OF is the projection ; of OF on DO, and is therefore equal to OF cos B, * ‘Fig. 3. and LF is the projection of OF on a straight line making an angle +47 with OD, and is therefore equal to OF sin B; hence

OF cos(A+B)=OE cos A+ EF cos (47+ A) =OF (cos A cos B-sin A sin B),

or cos (4+ B)=cos A cos B—sin A sin B.

The angles 4, Bare absolutely unrestricted in magnitude, and thus this formula is perfectly general. We may change the sign of B, thus cos (4 — B)=cos A cos(—B)-—sin 4 sin (— B),

or cos (4 — B)=cos A cos B+sin A sin B. If we projected the sides of the triangle OZF on a straight line making an angle +47 with OA we should obtain the formule

ae 7

OMETRY

sin (4+ B)=sin A cos Btcos A sin B,

which are really contained in the cosine formula, since we may put 4n-— Bfor B. The formule tan Attan B cot A cot B1 = (223) =72eae tan B’ cot B£cot A

are immediately deducible from the above formule. The equations

sin C+sin D=2 sint (C+D) cost (C- D),

sin C-sin D=2 sin} (C— D) cosh (C+D),

cos D+cos C=2 cost (C+D) cos4 (C— D),

cos D—cos C=2 sin} (C+D) sin} (C- D), may be obtained directly by the method of projections. Take two equal straight lines OC, OD, making angles C, D with O04, and draw OF perpendicular to CD. The angle which O# makes with OA is 4(C+ JD) and that which DC makes “ is $47+C+D); the angle COZ is 34(C—D). é The sum of the projections of OD and DE# ou o OA is equal to that of O#, and the sum of the projections of OD and DE is equal to that of OC; hence the sum of the projections of OC and OD is twice that of O#, or cos C +cos D=2 cos 4(C+D) cos3(C-—D). Theos ‘ a difference of the projections of OD and OC Fig. 4. on OA is equal to that of HD, hence we have the formula cos D— cos C=2 sin $(C+D)sin}(C-D). The other two formule will be obtained by projecting on a straight line inclined at an angle +47 to OA, –

[PLANE.

cot (A+B)=

As another example of the use of projections, we will find the sum Sum of of the series cosa+cos(a+f)+cos(a+28)+...+cos(a+n— 1). series of Suppose an unclosed polygon each angle of which is 7 — to be in- Cosines scribed in a circle, and let 4), A,, A,..~~, An be n+1 consecutive im arith~~ angular points ; let D be the diameter of the circle ; and suppose a metical straight line drawn making an angle a with 44,, then a+, Progres- a+26,...are the angles it makes with 4,4, .4,A;,...; we have by S10l.

projections

i=

AA,, cos(a+ “5-*) =AA,(cosa+cosa+B+... +cosa+x-— 1),

Ae Dein :

also AAy=Dsin® e

2?

hence the sum of the series of cosines is cos (« + os =f) sin – cosec a

By a double application ot the addition formule we may obtain the Formule

formule sin (4, + 4,-A,)=sin 4, cos A, cos 4, cos A, sin A, cos As + cos A, cos A, sin A, -~ sin A, sin A, sin A, ; cos (.4, + 4,+-A43)=cos A, cos A, cos A,—cos A, sin A, sin A, — sin A, cos A, sin A, – sin A, sin A, cos Ag. We can by induction extend these formule to the case of 7 angles. Assume sin (4,4,...+4An)=S)—-834+8,~~... cos (4, + Agt … +An)=So—~~ Sot+8y- .. where S,, denotes the sum of the products of the sines of 7 of the angles and the cosines of the remaining n—,r angles ; then we have sin (4, + 4,+ ... +A,An,1)=008 A, 1(8) — 83 85 – ...) +sin 4,,,1(S)—- S2+Sy-...). The right-hand side of this equation may be written (S, cos A,,,) +S) sin 4,1) — (S3 608 4,4) +S, sin 4,41) + +++ or 8’, – S’g+ eee where S’, denotes the quantity which corresponds for n+1 angles to S, for m angles; similarly we may proceed with the cosine for- mula. The theorems are true for n=2 and n=3; thus they are true generally. The formule cos 2.4 =cos?4 — sin*4 =2 cos*4 —-1=1-2sin?4, : 2 tan A sin 24=2sin A cos A, tan 24= 7 ene sin 84=8sin 4-4sin®4, cos34=4cos*4 —38 cos A, n(n —1)(n – 2) .

sinnA=n cos”—14 sin 4 — os”-34 sin? 4+...

| 3 n ~un—1)...(n—2r) ee +(ee oo oral cos*—*r-1 4 sin?*t+1 4, n(n —1) sh cos 2.4 =cos nA — re cos”-2.4 sin? 4 +... n(n —1)...(n—2r+1)

+(~~1)” [2r cos”~~*” 4 sin’“A +...

may all be deduced from the addition formule by making the angles all equal. From the last two formule we obtain by division tan nA

n(n -1yfn-2 m-1)...(n-2r) ntan 4 MOSTAR tanta… (mPa tan27 +144… = -1) -1)...(n-2r4+1 – 1-9) tanta t… 4-1 1) 3c OD ee Bas me ; Mais 3 tan A — tan?4

In the particular case of n=3 we have tan 3.4 =~ sa

Proper- ties of triangles.

Solution of tri- angles.

SPHERICAL. |

The values of sin}.A, cos$A, tan} are given in terms of cos A by the formule

sin 34=(-19(=S4)F, cos 34=(~~1)”(~~ acy i r{1—cos A\% tan $4=(-1) (Cae A

; ‘ ; ae ol where p is the integral part of oa? 2 the integral part of int 2

and r the integral part of S

Sin 4.4, cos 4.4 are given in terms of sin A by the formule 2sinsA=(-1)”(1+sin Aji+(- 1)”(1 ~~‘sin .4)3, 2. cos $A =(— 1)””(1+sin A)P~~ (—1)”(1 - sin 4), where p’ is the integral part of oe and q the integral part of A_}l or 4 In any plane triangle ABC we will denote the lengths of the sides BC, CA, AB by a, b, ¢ respectively, and the angles BAC, ABC, ACB by A, B, C respectively. The fact that the projections of b and c ona straight line perpendicular to the side a are equal to one another is expressed by the equation bsin C=csin B; this equation and the one obtained by projecting c and a on a straight ; ‘ ; a C line perpendicular to a may be written ee The equation a=b cos (+c cos B expresses the fact that the side a is equal to the sum of the projections of the sides 6 and c on itself ; thus we obtain the equations a=bcosC+e cos B b=c cosA+acosC }. c=acosB+bcos A If-we multiply the first of these equations by —a@, the second by b, and the third by c, and add the resulting equations, we obtain

6? +c? — a?

the formula ?+¢?- a?=2bc eos A or eos A= , Which gives

2be the cosine of an angle in terms of the sides. From this expression for cosA the formule sin}.4A = { ae } cosh A= os) 7

tan34= ee : sin A =; {s(s — a@)(s— b)(s — c)}4, where s denotes}(a +6 +c),can be deduced by means of thedimidiary formula.

From any general relation between the sides and angles of a triangle other relations may be deduced by various methods of transformation, of which we give two examples.

(a) In any general relation between the sines and cosines of the angles 4, B,C of a triangle we may substitute pA +qB+r0, rA+pB+qC, gA+rB+pC for A, B, C respectively, where p, 9g, 7 are any quantities such that p+q+r+l1 is a positive or nega- tive multiple of 6, provided that we change the signs of all the sines. Suppose pt+g+r+1=6n, then the sum of the three angles one —- (pA +qB+r0), ne ~~, 2nw~~(GgA+rB+pC) is a; and, since the given relation follows from the condition 4+B +O=7, we may substitute for 4, B, C respectively any angles of which the sum is 7; thus the transformation is admissible.

(8) It may easily be shown that the sides and angles of the triangle formed by joining the feet of the perpendiculars from the angular points 4, B, Con the opposite sides of the triangle ABC are ee a cos A, bcos B, ccos CO, r- 2A, r- 2B, r- 20; we may therefore substitute these expressions for a, b,c, A, B, C re- spectively in any general formula. By drawing the perpendiculars of this second triangle and joining their feet as before, we obtain a triangle of which the sides are —acos.4 cos2A, —bcos Bcos 2B, —ccos (cos 20 and the angles are 44-7, 4B-7,4C—m; we may therefore substitute these expressions for the sides and angles of the original triangle ; for example, we obtain thus the formula

as a? cos? A cos? 2.4 — b? cos? B cos? 2B — ¢ cos® C eos? 2C eis 2be cos B cos C’cos 2B cos 2C : This transformation obviously admits of further extension.

(1) The three sides of a triangle ABC being given, the angles can be determined by the formula

Ltan 4 =10+$ log (s—3) +4 log (s~0)- blog s— blog (s— a)

and two eorresponding formule for the other angles. (2) The two sides a, b and the included angle C being given, the angles 4A, B ean be determined from the formule: . A+B=r7-C, Ltan}(4 -B)= log (a — b) – log(a+b)+Lcot 30, and the side c is then obtained from the formula log c= loga+Lsin C-Lsin A. (3) The two sides a, 6 and the angle 4 being given, the value of sin B may be found by means of the formula | Lsin B=Lsin A+logb-loga;

THRTGONOMETRY

565

this gives two supplementary values of the angle B, if bsin A

If dbsin 4>a there is no solution, and if bsin d=a there is one solution. In the case bsin.4 a, but the acute value only of B is admissible if b

The other side c can then be determined as in case (2).

(4) If two angles A, B and a side a are given, the angle C is de- termined from the formula C=r-A-JB and the side 0 from the formula log b= loga+Lsin B-Lsin A.

The area of a triangle is half the product of a side into the per- Areas pendicular from the opposite angle on that side; thus we obtain of tri- the expressions $dcsin A, {s(s — a)(s — b)(s — c)}3 for the area of a angles triangle. A large collection of formule for the area of a triangle and are given in the Annals of Mathematics for 1885 by M. Baker. quadri-

Let a, b, c, d denote the lengths of the sides 4B, BC, CD, DA laterals. respectively of any plane quadrilateral and 4+C=2a; we may obtain an expression for the area S of the quadrilateral in terms of the sides and the angle a. We have 2S=ad sin A +bcsin (2a—.A) and 4(a2+d?-0?-c?) =ad cos A — be cos (2a — A) ; hence 48?+4(a?+d?-3?-¢?)?=a7 d? +0? & — Qabcd cos 2a.

If 2s=a+b+c+d, the value of S may be written in the form S= {s(s— a)(s— b)(s —¢)(s — d) — abcd cos? a} 4,

Let R denote the radius of the circumscribed circle, r of the in- Radii of

scribed, and 7}, 7s, 73 of the escribed circles of a triangle ABC; the circum-

values of these radii are given by the following formule. scribed, Pes in- ~ 4S 2sin A' scribed, mo. per er , and =e (s—a) tant A =4Rsin} A sing B sin} C, enosbed S ' circles qs tan} A=4R sin} A cos} B coss C. of a tri- angle.

Spherical Trigonometry.

We shall throughout assume such elementary propositions in spherical geometry as are required for the purpose of the investiga- tion of formule given below.

A spherical triangle is the portion of the surface of a sphere Defini- bounded by three arcs of great circles of the sphere. If BC, CA, tion of AB denote these arcs, the circular measure of the angles subtended spherical by these ares respectively at the centre of the sphere are the sides triangle. a, b, ¢ of the spherical triangle ABC; and, if the portions of planes passing through these ares and the centre of the sphere be drawn, the angles between the portions of planes intersecting at 4, B, C respectively are the angles 4, B, O of the spherical triangle. It is not necessary to consider triangles in which a side is greater than 7, since we may replace such a side by the remaining arc of the great circle to which it belongs. Since two great circles intersect each Asso- other in two points, there are eight triangles of which the sides are ciated arcs of the same three great circles. If we consider one of these triangles. triangles ABC as the fundamental one, then one of the others is equal in all respects to 4.BC, and the remaining six have each one side equal to, or common with, a side of the triangle 4BC, the opposite angle equal to the corresponding angle of ABC, and the other sides and angles supplementary to the corresponding sides and angles of ABC. These triangles may be called the associated Transfor- triangles of the fundamental one ABC. It follows that from any mation. general formula containing the sides and angles of a spherical triangle we may obtain other formule by replacing two sides and the two angles opposite to them by their

supplements, the remain- ing side and the remaining angle being unaltered, for such formule are obtained by applying the given formule to the associated triangles.

If A’,B’,C’ are those poles of the arcs BC, CA, AB respectively which lie upon the same sides of them as the opposite angles 4, B, C, then the triangle .4‘B’C’ is called the polar triangle of the triangle ABC. The sides of the polar triangle are r— 4, 7— B, r—C, and the angles r—a, t—b, w—c. Hence from any general formula connecting the sides and angles of a spherical triangle we may obtain another formula by changing each side A

into the supplement of the opposite angle and

each angle into the supplement of the op-

posite side.

Let O be the centre of the sphere on which Funda- is the spherical triangle ABC. Draw AL per- mental pendicular to OC and AM perpendicular too 8 equa- the plane OBC. Then the projection of O04 P tions be- on OB is the sum of the projections of OL, re tween LM, MA on the same straight line. Since AIT ncaa sides and

has no projection on any straight line in the plane OBC, this gives angles, OA cosc=OL ecosa+LM sin a.

Now OL=O4A cosb, LM=AL cosC=OA4 sind cosC;

therefore cosc=cosa cosb+sina sin b cos C.

We may obtain similar formule by interchanging the letters a, 8, ¢,

thus cosa@=cosb cosc+sind sine cos A cos b=cose cosa+sine sina cosB cosc=cosa cosb+sina sind eosC

Formule for sine and co- sine of half angles ;

These formule (1) may be regarded as the fundamental equations connecting the sides and angles of a spherical triangle ; all the other relations which we shall give below may be deduced analytically from them ; we shall, however, in most cases give independent proofs. By using the polar triangle transformation we have the formule cos A = — cos B cos C''+sin B sin C cosa cos B= — cos C cos 4 +sin C sin A cnt cos (= — cos A cos B+sin A sin B cose In the figure we have 4M=AL sin C=rsind sin@, where r denotes the radius of the sphere. By drawing a perpendicular from 4 on OB, we may in a similar manner show that 4M/=r sinc sin B: therefore sin B sin c=sin C sin b. By interchanging the sides we have the equation sind sinB_ sinC_ sin@ sind sine — we shall find below a symmetrical form for &. If we eliminate cos} between the first two formule of (1) we have cos @ sin*c=sin b sine cosA+sine cose sina cos B;

: sin b therefore cota sinc= a cos.4+cosc cos B

=sin B cot 4+ cosc cos B. We thus have the six equations cotasin b=cot A sin C+ cos b cos C cot bsina=cot B sin C+cosacosC cot bsin c=cot Bsin.4+ cos ccosA

cot csin b=cot CsinA+cosbcosdA fost (4). cot csina=cot Csin B+cosacos B cotasin c=cotA sin B+cos ccos BJ

7 ; 4 <2

Sands 2 formula (1) gives C08. C=€06 @ COBD .... ciassssencevend (a), and (3) gives sin b=sin B sin ¢ f = sng=anA gine ("eee (8) ; from (4) we get tana=tan A sin b=tan ccosB (y) tand=tanBsina=tanccosA§ cc –

cos c= COtd COtB…....0.000s00s00 (e) cos 4d=cos asin B

cos B=cos b sin A follow at once from (a), (8), (y). These are the formule which are used for the solution of right-angled triangles. Napier gave muemonical rules for remembering them.

The following proposition follows easily from the theorem in equation (3) : —If AD, BE, CF are three ares drawn through 4, B, C to mect the opposite sides in D, E, F respectively, and if these arcs pass through a point, the

segments of the sides satisfy the relation sin BDsin CE sin AF’=sin CD sin AE sin BF; and conversely if this velation is satisfied the arcs pass through a point. From this theorem it follows that the three perpendiculars from the angles on the opposite sides, the three bisectors of the a angles, and the three arcs from the angles to the middle points of the opposite sides, each pass through a point.

If D be the point of intersection of the three bisectors of the angles 4, B, C, and if DE be? ¢ drawn perpendicular to BC, it may be shown Fic 6 that BH=}(a+c-b) and CH=}(a+b-0), salad and that the angles BDE, ADC are supplementary. We have

The formulee and

ales sine sin ADB snd. sin ADC a A 5 =. a) a i oe ee 4 ‘fee sin BD sin 4 sin CD gis A 2

_ Sin BD sin CD sin ODE sin BDE

—, ~; But sin BD sin BDE=sin BE sin 6 sine

=sin ite!) , and sin CD sin CDE=sin CE=sin a — ; there- ~- a@+e-—b . atb —c)? sin —>-— sin 5 fore sin — = ; ey (5). 2 sin bsinc

Apply this formula to the associated triangle of which 7-4, a —B, Care the angles and r- a, w—b, c are the sides ; we obtain

(– b+c-a ,. atb+e sin —~— sin —< a the formula cos = = aetna (6). 2 sin 6 sinc By division we have sin (1-4 sin tO = * a ints 2 a, (7); 2 b+c-a , at+b+e

2) Se SR) z 2

and by multiplication

sin 4 = { sin © se sin

b+c-a@. cta-b., ay a sin 6 sine Ce 2

i = = {1 – cos? a — cos? b — cos? 2 Sart sinc’ s*b—cos*c+2 cosa cosh cos c}

OMETRY

Hence the quantity & in (3) is ee Te ee } yee my 5 > cos* a — cos? b — cos?¢ +. 2 cosa cos b cos as (8).

App

[SPHERICAL.

ly the polar triangle transformation to the formule (5), (6), Of half.

(7), (8) and we obtain sides, ‘ a_ {cos AtOr® ,,,4+B-C)3 cos 5 = ——i. te Vig Ma ee re (9); : ateao B+C-A At BseCys : ar ~ = — om ips oan } ona loig (10) ; sin B sin@ ; – cos 240-4 wees 7 tan 5= ALOLB ALBoOt Oe (11). Cos —S— cos

, 1 9 9

Ifk = eee {1 — cos”. — cos?.B- cos? C’~ 2.cos.A cos Beos}3, we have a) eee a ay ee (aN Let # be the middle point of AB; draw ED at right angles to De- AB to meet AC in D; then DE bisects d lambre’s the angle ADB. Let CF bisect the angle formule, DCB and draw FG perpendicular to B C, Fy then og= 2″ aree.***, =cos or eo ee (16). The four formule (13), (14), (15), (16) were first given by Delambre in the Connaissance des Temps for 1808, Formule equivalent to these were given by Mollweide in Zach’s Monatliche Correspondenz for November 1808. They were also given by Gauss (7’heoria motus, 1809), and are usually called after him. From the same figure we have tan F@=tan FOG sin CG =tan FBG sin BG ; Napier’s Low C. se A-B. a+b analogies. therefore cot au =tan 9 sn-~>> — A-B 2 C or tan = = ote cot 2 4 Faata Cewvatevsianayacere Ga) $111 “a

Apply this formula to the associated triangle (7 -—a, b, r-¢, r- A, L, t-C), and we have a+b

or 9

If we apply these formule (17), (18) to the polar triangle, we have

deg tee a—b 2 (3 hus * “yee a indie megoras 4 (19) ; sin

2

ite a+b my c ws FS A ee (20). cos 5

The formule (17), (18), (19), (20) are called Napier’s ‘‘ Analogies” ; they were given in the Miri. logar. canonis descriptio.

Schmeis- ser’s formule.

Cagnoli’s formule.

Solution of tri- angles ;

Ambigu- ous cases,

) Radii of yj circles

| related to y triangles. ib

SPHERICAL. |

Tess tL 1 Pies ie geen a b Cite we use the values of sin5, sing, sin 5, cos5, cos5, cos 5 give by (9), (10) and the analogous formule obtained by interchanging

the letters, we obtain by multiplication one Gane Bar Oe 2) slll 2 cos 3 sinoG>=sm 9 cos aa aan 608 cos g sin C’=cos £ cos fe | pa Fax Z | sin ® sin z sin C’=cos < cos aa 2 2 i”) 2 jj These formule were given by Schmeisser in Crelle’s Journ., vol. x.

The relation sin bsinc + cosbcosccosA =sinBsin C— cosB cos Ccosa was given by Cagpoli in his 7rigonometry (1786), and was redis- covered by Cayley (Phil. Mag., 1859). It follows from (1), (2), and (3) thus: the right-hand side of the equation equals sin B sin -+ cos a(cos.é — sinBsinC cosa) =sinB sinC'sin2a + cosacosA, and this is equal to sin b sin ¢+cos A (cos a —sin bsine cos A) or sind sine+ cos b cos¢ cos A.

The formule we have given are sufficient to determine three parts of a triangle when the other three parts are given ; moreover such formule may always be chosen as are adapted to logarithmic calcu- lation. The solutions will be unique except in the two cases (1) where two sides and the angle opposite one of them are the given parts, and (2) where two angles and the side opposite one of them are given.

Suppose a, b, A are the given parts. We determine B from the

: sind. Bo formula sin B= Sng 2 A; this gives two supplementary values of

B, one acute and the other obtuse. Then Cand care determincd from

sin tie sin ae c 2 A-B c a—b the equations tan = = eee cot z 7 tan =. ae tan 2 sin —— sin =

2 2

Now tan g tan 5 must both be positive ; hence 4 —- Band a—-b must have the same sign. We shall distinguish three cases. First,

suppose sindsin a, there is no solution when sin db sin A>sina; but if sin dsin 4A-B, is negative ; hence there are two solutions if 4 is acute and none if 4 is obtuse. These two solutions fall together if sind sin 4 =sina. If a is obtuse there is no solution unless 4 is obtuse, and in that case there are two, which coincide as before if sin }sin_A=sin a.

Hence in this case there are two solutions if sindsin.AXsina and the two parts 4, a are both acute or both obtuse, these being coinci- dent in case sin bsin d=sin a; and there is no solution if one of the two A, a is acute and the other obtuse, or if sindsin A>sina. Thirdly, ifsindb=sina then B=A or r- A. If

@ is acute, a—bdis zero or negative, hence 4 — B is zero or negative ; thus there is no solution unless 4 is acute, and then there is one. Similarly, if a is obtuse, 4 must be so too in order that there may be a solution.

If a=b=5, there is no solution unless 4 =3 and then there are an

infinite number of solutions, since the values of C and c become indeterminate.

The other case of ambiguity may be discussed in a similar manner, or the different cases may be deduced from the above by the use of the polar triangle transformation. The method of classification

=

according to the three cases sin b=sin a was given by Professor

Lloyd Tanner (AZessenger of Math., vol. xiv.). If r is the angular radius of the small circle inscribed in the “Ages triangle ALC, we have at once tan r=tan “3 Sin (s—a@), where 2s=a+b+c; from this we can derive the formule fied Nill wee al pemes ee ee tan r=% cosec $= “9 S&C -p Sec 5 seco =sin@ sin> sin 9 sec 7) (21), where », WV denote the expressions {sin s sin (s—@) sin (s— 8) sin (s —c)t4, 5 — cos S’cos (S — A) cos (S— B) cos (S – C)} 2.

The escribed circles are the small circles inscribed in three of the associated triangles ; thus, applying the above formule to the triangle (a,7 — b, r—c, A, – B,w— C), we have for 7), the radius of the escribed circle opposite to the angle 4, the following formule

t me (s—a) a cosec = cosec g = = — = fs oa roe ‘ an 7, =tan 3 Sin s=n cosec 9 5) 9 2

i ye see eee =sin @ cos = = =

2 2 2

tro Owow ET R Y

The pole of the circle circumscribing a triangle is that of the circle inscribed in the polar triangle, and the radii of the two circles are complementary ; hence, if 22 be the radius of the circum- scribed circle of the triangle, and R,, Ry, Rs the radii of the circles

circumscribing the associated triangles, we have by writing 57 8 for 7, & ~f, for r,, r-a@ for A, &c., in the above formulz Q = fee S= Al = oawec f cose” cos °— _Nsec S cot &=co 9 ms 5) 9 cosec g— —Nsec : b =sin A cos 9 COs 5 cosee 5 SCO OcE A OEEAOR (28) ; a n a Oe 2 cot &, = — cot 5 cosS=5 cosec 5 sec 5 sec ga sec (S— A) ‘ 7 a. O a Ss Y Z sd D) sin A sin g SID 5 COSEE Foeeeereeeeessesns (24),

The following relations follow from the formule just given :— 2 tan & =cotr, +cotr,+cot 7; — cot7, 2 tan k,=cotr +cotry+cotr;—cotry, tanr tan7, tan7, tan7,=n”, sin*s=cotr tan 7, tan 7, tan rs, sin? (s—a)=tanr cotr, tan7, tan 7. If L=A+B+C-7, it may be shown that Z multiplied by the Formule square of the radius is the area of the triangle. We give some of for the more important expressions for the quantity HZ, which is called spherical

the spherical excess. excess, bee wee gone fqn oa 2 7 D 2 We have —— – age |; ———— a: sin 2 cos 3 cos 2 cos 2 é E a+ C a—b sin rie : gt OS (5-7 co; mE ‘ sin C cos 2 cos S cos oS a 2 2 2 C . (C-E c a+b sin 5 — sin (3 – COS 5 — Cos —>— . oe en ae eh sins +sin (= =) cos gt 60s oF E Bae 8 s- ¢ therefore ——G— p= tan 5 tan om tan* rm Similarly tan ? tan? c= tan = tan s—* :

;

therefore tan Z= tan 5 tan = tan 5 a tan al Cee (eR: This formula was given by L’Huillier.

cos iad Also sin 2 cos a cos g sin = = a sin ge : 2, i, 2 2 iC 2 cos = vy) cos gaa! cos aye Ee i cos a Ph Pe 2 7} c Qe Cos 5

whence, solving for cos = we get

E_1+cosa+cosb+ cose

5 eM a Bor eR Pree

2 2 2

This formula was given by Euler (Nova acta, vol. x.).

cos

If we find sing from this formula, we obtain after reduction a 4 “Boa cos d cos ¢

2 2 2

a formula given by Lescell (Acta Petrop., 1782). From the equations (21), (22), (28), (24) we obtain the following formule for the spherical excess :—

sin? A =tan & cot R, cot &, cot Ry

4(cot 7, + cot ry + cot 7s)

(cot r — cot 7, + cot 72+ cot 7s) (cot 7+ cot 7 — cot 7, + cot 73) (cot r+cotr, + cot 7, — cot 7’) The formula (26) may be expressed geometrically. Let Jf, N be the middle points of the sides 4B, AC. Then we find cos MN _1+cosa+cos b+-cose

; hence cos 4 =cos MN sec”, 4 asa” cos © . :

2 2

A geometrical construction has been given for # by Gudermann (in Crelle’s Journ., vi. and viii.). It has been shown by Cornelius Keogh that the volume of the parallelepiped of which the radii of

Proper- ties of spherical quadri- lateral inscribed in small circle,

Periodi- city of functions,

Connex- ion with theory of

568

the sphere passing through the middle points of the sides of the triangle are edges is sin 5 .

Let ABCD be a spherical quadrilateral inscribed in a small circle ; let a, b, c, d denote the sides 4B, BC, CD, DA respectively, and z, y the diagonals AC, BD. It can easily be shown by joining the angular points of the quadrilateral to the pole of the circle that A+OC=B+D. If we use the last expression in (23) for the radii of the circles circumscribing the triangles BAD, BCD, we have

: a d Tee b Cc y = ~¢C <—gin C’cos = cos = cosec = ; sin A cos g 68 5 cosec 5 sin C 5 5 93 sin A sin C whence ee tie ce eae 0S = COS cos — cos oad eal he.

This is the proposition corresponding to the relation 4 +C=7 for a plane quadrilateral. Also we obtain ina similar manner the theorem

. 2 ae} an =_—s me on ute sin B cos 5 sin 4 COS 5

analogous to the theorem for a plane quadrilateral, that the diagonals are proportional to the sines of the angles opposite to them. Also the

3 Ee ote 0) ee Ct eee chords 4B, BO, CD, DA are equal to 2 sin 9 2 sin 2 2 sin » 2 sin 5

respectively, and the plane quadrilateral formed by these chords is inscribed in the same circle as the spherical quadrilateral ; hence by Ptolemy’s theorem for a plane quadrilateral we obtain the analogous theorem for a spherical one

in ~ sin ¥=sin © sin © sin 2 sin –

sin 5 sin 5=sing 3 5 9

It has been shown by Remy (in Crelle’s Jowrn., vol. iii.) that for

any quadrilateral, if z be the spherical distance between the middle points of the diagonals,

cos a+cosb+cos¢+cosd=4 cos $x cos $y cos $2.

This theorem is analogous to the theorem for any plane quadri- lateral, that the sum of the squares of the sides is equal to the sum of the squares of the diagonals, together with twice the square on the straight line joining the middle points of the diagonals.

A theorem for a right-angled spherical triangle, analogous to the Pythagorean theorem, has been given by Gudermann (in Crelle's Jowrn., vol. xhii.),

Analytical Trigonometry.

Analytical trigonometry is that branch of mathematical analysis in which the analytical properties of the trigonometrical functions are investigated. These functions derive their importance in ana- lysis from the fact that they are the simplest singly periodic functions, and are therefore adapted to the representation of undu- lating magnitude. 'The sine, cosine, secant, and cosecant have the single real period 27 ; 7.¢., each is unaltered in value by the addi- tion of 27 to the variable. The tangent and cotangent have the period 7. The sine, tangent, cosecant, and cotangent belong to the class of odd functions ; that is, they change sign when the sign of the variable is changed. The cosine and secant are even func- tions, since they remain unaltered when the sign of the variable is reversed.

The theory of the trigonometrical functions is intimately con- nected with that of complex quantities,—that is, of quantities of

the form x+.y (.=s/-1). Suppose we multiply together, by the

complex yules of ordinary algebra, two such quantities, we have

quanti- ties,

(21 + 64),)(q + Yo) = (22y%q — YyYo) + (Yo + ZaY)y)- We observe that the real part and the real factor of the imaginary part of the expression on the right-hand side of this equation are similar in form to the expressions which occur in the addition formule for the cosine and sine of the sum of two angles; in fact, if we put %=7, cos), y,=7, Sin 0), To=72 COS Oy, Yo=1_ SID Oy, the above equation becomes

7(cos 6, +4 Sin 6)) x 7,(cos 0. +4 sin 6.) =7y7'o(cos 9, + 45+ Sin 6; + 9p).

We may now, in accordance with the usual mode of representing complex quantities, give a geometrical interpretation of the meaning of this equation. Let P, be the point whose coordinates referred to rectangular axes Ox, Oy are x, y,; then the point P, isemployed to represent the quantity z,+:y,. In this mode of representation real quantities are measured along the axis of x and imaginary ones along the axis of y, additions being performed according to the parallelogram law. The points 4,.4, represent the magnitudes +1, the points a,a, the magnitudes +1. Let P, represent the expression q+tYo and P the expression (+1y)(%_+tY). The quantities 14,9};7o)92 are the polar coordinates of P, and P, respectively referred

to Oas origin and Oz as initial line; the above equation showse= that 7,7, and 6,+ 4, are the polar coordinates of P; hence OA |, ~ : OP, ::OP,: OP and the angle POP, is equal to the angle P,OA. Thus we have the following geometrical construc- tion for the determination of the point P. On OP, draw a triangle similar to the triangle OAP, so that the sides OP,, OP are homologous to the sides OA, OP, and so that the angle POP, is positive; then the vertex P represents the product of the expressions represented by P,P, If x+y, were to be divided » by 2, +1%, the triangle OP'P, would be drawn on the negative side of P,, similar to the triangle OAP, and having the sides OP', OP, homologous to OA, OP, and 2" would represent the quotient.

If we extend the above to » complex quantitics by continual repeti- tion of a similar operation, we have—

(cos 6, ++ sin 4) (cos .+¢sin 6,)... (cos 6, ++ sin 8,,)

we

a De Moivre’s

A, theorem,

et teal +n) +eSin(0, +094… Ia, Fig. 8. + On). If 0,=6,=... =0,=9,, this equation becomes (cos #+1 sin @)”=

cos 26+. sin 2; this shows that cos +1 sin@ is a value of (cos7@ + .sinné) 4 Ifnow we chieye 6 into 4 we see that cos . +c sin 2 is a value of (cos@+csin @)n; raising each of these quantities to any positive integral power 2, cos ey sin = is one value of (cos 8 2 Also

m m it 2 ee) i cos(0 +esin(4) ie”

m : cos—O +1 sin —0 n n

+csin 0)”,

hence the expression of the left-hand side is one value of

(cosé +e sin 6)” or of (cos + «sin)~ 2. We have thus De Moivre’s theorem that cosk+.sin k6 is always one value of (cos 6+. sin 6)*, where & is any real quantity.

The principal object of De Moivre’s theorem is to enable us to The »

‘ = roots of a find all the values of an expression of the form (a+1b)”, where m complex

and # are positive integers prime to each other. If w=7 084, quantity. m

™m b=rsin 6, we require the values of 7” (cos 0+. sin)", One value is immediately furnished by the theorem ; but we obscrve that, since the expression cos 6+. sin is unaltered by adding any multiple of

m.0+2si4r . m.0+ 287 ———- + es

m Q7 to O, the th power ofr” (cos is a+ub,

if s is any integer; hence this expression is one of the values re- quired. Suppose that for two values s, and s, of s the values of this

m.@ + 28y0 _ Mm. + 2somr ; nN a multiple of 2m or s;—s, must be a multiple of x. Therefore, if we give s the values 0,1, 2,... 2-1 successively, we shall get » differ- m

expression are the same; then we must have

ent values of (a+.b)”, and these will be repeated if we give s other

™ values ; hence all the values of (a +10)” are obtained by giving s

m the values 0, 1, 2,...%-—1 in the expression r® (cos m0 2″ tek

nN

m. 0+ 239 ‘“

csin), where r=(a? b*)sand 6=are tan =

We now return to the geometrical representation of the complex quantities. If the points B,, By Bs, ... By Trepre- sent the expression x+vy, (x+cy)*, (wtwy),...(e+ey)” respectively, the triangles OAB,, OB,B,,... OB,_)B,, are all similar. Let (x+cy)”=a+.b, then the con- verse problem of finding the nth root of a+16 is equivalent to the geometrical problem of describ- ing such a series of triangles that O4 is the first side of the first triangle and OB, the second side of the ath. Nowit is obvious that this geometrical problem has more solutions than one, since any number of com- plete revolutions round O may be made in travelling from B, to B, The first solution is that in which the vertical angle of each triangle Fig. 9. is + BOA ; the second is that in which each is *(B,OA + 2a), In

this case one complete revolution being made round 0; the third

ANALYTICAL. |

has * (ByOA+4n) for the vertical angle of each triangle ; and so

on. There are n sets of triangles which satisfy the required condi- tions. For simplicity we will take the

case of the determination of the values ‘ed of (cos6+csin 0)%. Suppose B to re- 7

present the expression cos@+ Sin 0. 4%

If the angle AOP, is 46, P, represents {

the root cos +esin 3 the angle AOB a

is filled up by the angles of the three

similar triangles AOP,, P,Op,, p,OB.

Also, if P,, P; be such that the angles

P,OP,, P\OP, are oa = respectively, me the two sets of triangles AOP,, P,Ops, mae p,0B and AOP;, P;O0p, p,VB satisfy the conditions of simi- larity and of having OA, OB for the bounding sides; thus P,, 1 204+ 2m 6+ 49 . O+40 +cesin 3 , COS a +esin 3 respectively. If B coincides with A, the problem is reduced to that of finding the three cube roots of unity. One will be repre- sented by 4 and the others by the two angular points of an cqui- lateral triangle, with 4 as one angular point, inscribed in the circle. The nth The problem of determining the values of the mth roots of unity roots of is equivalent to the geometrical problem of inscribing a regular unity. polygon of 7 sides in a circle. Gauss has shown in his Disquisi- tiones arithmetice that this can always be done by the compass

and ruler only when 7 is a prime of the form 2°+1, The determina- tion of the nth root of any complex quantity requires in addition, for its geometrical solution, the division of an angle into m equal parts, ; ; Factoriz- ~ Weare now in a position to factorize an expression of the form ations. 2”-(a+.b), Using the values which we have obtained above for

1

i

x

2

P; represent the roots cos =

(a+1b)”, we have

s=n-1 ds x” —(a+i)=P [=-” (cos? =” +1 sin “tet | s(); s=0 n e If }=0, a=1, this becomes s=n—~1 27 s. Qsm e-1l=P [#- cos SF ~« sin s=0 U nN T

s=5-1

=(x%-1)(@+1)P S (» — cos Lah sin cad s=1 n W

3

s=5-1 =(a%—-1)(@+1)P ; (2 — 2x cos 2 1) (neven)(2) s=

n-1 s=“9_ a” —1=(x%-1)P . (22-2 cos = +1) (n odd) ...(8). s=1 If in (1) we put a= —1, D=0, and therefore 0=7, we have s=n-1 Ona i Rec 1 e+1=P [2-cos ##*—. in| s=0 117 zt = aoe =P * [28-2008 seit +1] (n even) ..... (4). s=0 n n-3 —_= a> oF itp 2s +11 41a (e+1)P [22-22 cos . +1] (m oda) (8). s=

Also x?” — Quy” cos n@ +” = (a — y* cos nO +1 sin n0)(a” — y” cos nO — 1 sin 26)

s=n-1 =? (e-y a te, sin = ST) s=0 n s=n-1 ~~ eee =F [# — 2xy cos 0+ _— +y| ern ae (6). s=0 ie

Airy and Adams have given proofs of this theorem which do not involve the use of the symbol « (see Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. xi.).

A large number of interesting theorems may be derived from De Moivre's theorem and the factorizations which we have deduced from it; we shall notice one of them.

Example In equation (6) put y=, take logarithms, and then differentiate of De

Moivre's theorem.

each side with respect to x, and we get Qn(a2n-1 = gn) s=n-1 a" — 2 cosnd+-a-2"" 59

2(x — 2-8) 2s w-2 cos 6 + —— +a?

Put war, then we have the expression

TRIGONOMETRY

569

mate — bn) : (a? — b?) (a2" — 2a"b" cos no +b) for the sum of the series

s=n-1 1

y i

s=0 9 237 a a" — 2ab cos 0+ arr

We shall now consider what meaning can be assigned to the Complex symbol +4, 'The quantity ¢ is defined as the limit of (1 +2)", = u where 7 is a positive quantity, and is increased indefinitely ; then, €xP00-

for a real value of x, ¢" is the limit of € +2 r or of (1 e)", ae: where m=nx, when m is increased indefinitely. We may define e* TY as the limit of € nad when m is increased indefinitely. To determine the value of this limit put 1 < =r cos i,2-=r sin 0;

then e*+ is the limit of r"(cosm6+.csin m@), and 7" is equal to

22 ety

aly a 1 2 or ultimately to (+2) 2, which has e” for m mm n

Also @ is are tan —2— or —¥

; e+ xe+m hence m@ is ultimately equal to y, and thus the equation

e+ —¢(cos y+ sin y) follows from our definition. It may be

shown at once that &+4 x its e”+1t+Y+), and, if we suppose

that a®t denotes e@+)!°8% we may show that complex expon-

ents defined thus obey the same laws as real ones.

When the exponent is entirely imaginary we have, in accordance Expon-
with the above definition, ential

eY¥=cosy+csin yand e~Y=cos(—y)+csin(-y)=cosy—csiny; values of we
thus obtain the exponential values of the sine and cosine— sine and t _
cosine. iad +e7%),

If we give imaginary or complex values to the variables in alge- Expan-
braical expansions we obtain analogous trigonometrical theorems ; sions of
it is, however, necessary to consider the convergency of the serics sines so
obtained in order to determine within what limits the values of and the
variables must lie. If we expand e” and e~ by putting vy cosines

m 3 and their

its limiting value, in the limit ;

sin y=ale¥ —e~),cosy=

‘ ; ae y and—vcy in the series l+yt+ 79+ T79-3t ae

powers.

we obtain the series sin y=y — Fat – ir + Ree $ ea es as = ee ak cos y=1 j2 tj Sage These serics are convergent for all finite values of y. They may also be got from the expressions which we have obtained for the cosine and sine of a multiple of an angle in terms of the cosine and sine of the angle, and would thus be made to rest upon a basis independent of the symbol «. Consider the binomial theorem Expan- (a-+by=a”-+narto um Van m524. wie oe | 2 powers 4 ar Pee 3 bn. ere Putting a=e, b=e~“, we obtain asi ‘of (2 cos 0)” =2 cos nO + n2 cos n — 26 4 MoD cosn— 40+... sines and : ‘ | 2 cosines of 4 Man)...(m—7+) eosn BAI} ay multiple r are.

When 7 is odd the last term is gtin= 1)... Xn +8)

| $a —1) n(n—1)...(4u+1) , we obtain the formula

(- 1)2(2 sin 6)”=2 cos n6 — 2n cos(n — 2)0 ae Pe. cos(n — 4)0—...

cos @,

and when v is even it is

If we put a=e4, b= -e~# nN

5n(a-1)...(yn+1)

n-rn(n-1)...(n—7 +1) i ie [an

+(-1

when 7 is even, and n-1

(-1) ? (2sin@)”=2sinnd — n.2sin(n —2)0+

2cos(n—2r)0…+(-1)

n(n —1)

“Tg 2sin(n – 4)6…

n(n —1)...3(1+ 3) an 9 | (a – 1)

when 7 is odd. These formule enable us to express any positive

integral power of the sine or cosine in terms of sines or cosines of

multiples of the argument. There are corresponding formule when

n is not a positive integer. XXIIL — 72

nal +(-1) ?

570

Expan- Consider theidentity log (1—pz) + log (1-qxz) =log(1-p + qu+pq2x*). sion of Expand both sides of this equation in powers of x, and equate the sines and coefficients of x”, we then get

cosines of u(n—3 multiple 2″ +9”=(p+q)”—n@+q)““pa+ oo (p+q) “pig? ++ wri of = 1 ee r—1)\(n—r—2)...(n—2r4+ Dnt gpg” +. : sines and [7

cosines of If we write this series in the reverse order, we have are, My eS NTS 2 9 %n2-92 Le 4 n +q n*(n?—-27) 3 P+9 prsar=2t1)| (99)? (og) (25) tg oe

oe) a) ~(e)’+ = 1)s(n+9) |

CS when ” is even, and Se

n-1 n-1 =

aon — n(n? — 1? > (pt+ay3 prpgr=2-1) ® [n(oa) ? (252) -M* Pipe) * (PE2)

2 12 2 32 n-5 a 9 5 _ n=l a i (nq) (73) sare Gee) a yo+ar |

when 2 is odd. If in these three formula we put p=c®, g=e-%, we obtain the following scrics for cos n# :—

nn —3 2 cos nO =(2 cos 0)” — n(2 cos 8)” + Mahe cos 6)r-4—,.,

SENS SB) = EE ean

ap (a il) Nl , when 7 is any positive integer; ly 2 2 92 2/992 2_ 42 = n> n? (n? — 2?) wn? —2)\(n?- 47) 2 =1-,~cos*@ +—-_—— cos#@ — +‘ cos89 (~~1)*cosn@=1 2 cos*6 + [2 cos#é [6 = n tines $C = 1)72”~~) COS... cose ee ceeeecoee (8) when 7 is an even positive integer ; n-1 Fe 2_ 122 2 — nn? —-1 n(n? — 1?) 2? — 8?) (-1) 2 cosnd=ncosné — Lae deere 6 +. -—-——-.>+————“‘c0s°6 — [8 5 n-1 i,

A ae 0 i <. e (9) when 7 is odd. Ifin the same three formule we put p=e”, g= —e~, we obtain the following four formule :—

x n(n — 8)

(- 1)22 cos 20=(2 sin 6)” — n(2 sin 6)”-2 4+ — (2 sin 0)”-4- ...

i2 ” pas = = ews Ya sin 0)”-®” ,,.(meven)(10); a (~~1) * 2sinn@=the same series (nm odd) ..... (11); 2 2(4)2 — 92 ‘ 2/2 _ 92 2_ 42 . cosna=1— 7 sin?g4 “2 sintg~~ Se) sin? aa +... $971 sin "6 (m even) cicceeeeecceees (12) ; 2_ 42 2 _ 12)(n2_ 92 sinnd=n sin 6 — oc sin +e) sin’ §— ae ii +(-1) 2 21 sin” 6 (0 Odd) c.ccsceseses. (13). P q P-Yq

Next consider the identity pe Toe (pees one Expand both sides of this equation in powers of x, and equate the coefficients of a”-1, then we obtain the equation

nan -38)(n—4 oe =(p+qp*—(n-2)(p+ 9)“pq + Ny Oe…

+(-1/ ws = Mea COTE (ie ee oles

If, as before, we write this in the reverse order, we have the series

(2 i n(252) a)? tan Ge oe

2 _ 92)(n2_ 42 a 2. nr a is PE eo? ee eee ‘(+a |

when x is even, and n-1 n-1

(-1) ®[(om)? – HOLM) on) F

n~5 ee en +... een

when 7 is odd. _ If we put p=e%, g=e-, we obtain the formule

n-1

= (p+ a |

TRIGONOMETRY

[ANALYTICAL.

(a — 8)(n— 4) Le mo 2) 9 cosa)n—2-14.,,. } (14),

sin n@=sin@ (2cos@)”—1 — (n — 2)(2 cos6)”-3 +.

(ea ore Daal

where 7 is any positive integer ;

n ‘ ae 92 2 92 AZ u ue) py ae) Me : legs

(2cos0)r-5

LSS 4 (-1 ie sinvé=sin8 { coca: & Li Do n

=-1

+(-1)? (2cos6)r-1 C1) (Gl) n-1 pas ihe G 2 12 ones 12 2_ 92 (-1) 2 sinné=sine ee r2 00389 4 sty ae wees on (=)? 2 cosayr-t | (n CS) aR (16). If we put in the same three formula p=e, ¢= — e-, we obtain the series 7 3)\(n —4 (-1) 2 sinne =cos6[sin”~~18 (n—2)sinn~~%9 4. e3) vee Sieg eee

r (n—r—1)(n—7r-2)...(n—2r) .

+(~~1) ie sin?~~%r19 +... a even) (17); mal” (—1) ? cosn@= the same series (grodd) #3. (18) ; ya —~ 92 2 Ag sin n0 =cos6 nm sin 6 — os) sin?@ + —e

sin’é + o=5 _ wee t(- 1)? (2 sin)r-1 } (WEVEN) .occccccees (19) ; 2_ 72 2 _ 12)/n2_ 92 cos nd =coso {1-1 inte y CO Vn? = 8) sag ae, [2 | 4 + (2sin)n-1 } Cc (20).

We have thus obtained formule for cos 7@ and sinné both in ascending and in descending powers of cos and sin . Viéte ob- tained formule for chords of multiple arcs in powers of chords of the simple or complementary arcs equivalent to the formule (18) and (19) above. These are contained in his work Theoremata ad angulares scctiones, James Bernoulli found formule equivalent to (12) and (13) (Mém. de ? Académie des Sciences, 1702), and trans- formed these series into a form equivalent to (10) and (11). John Bernoulli published in the Acta eruditorum for 1701, among other formule already found by Viéte, one equivalent to (17). These formule have been extended to cases in which n is fractional, nega- tive, or irrational ; sec a paper by D. F. Gregory in Camb. Math. Jowrn., vol. iv., in which the series for cos 26, sin 26 in ascending powers of cos @ and sin 6 are extended to the case of a fractional value of m. These series have been considered by Euler in a memoir in the Nova acta, vol. ix., by Lagrange in his Calcul des Sonctions (1806), and by Poinsot in Recherches sur Vanalyse des scc- tious angulaires (1825).

The gencral definition of Napierian logarithms is that, if e7+” Theory =a-+0b, then x+w=log (a+b). Now we know that e+ = ¢%os y of loga-

+ve* sin y; hence ¢* cos y=a, e” sin y=b, or c=(a2+0%)t, y= Tthms are tan qt where m is an integer. If }=0, then m must be even or odd according as a is positive or negative ; hence

log. (a+b) =log, (a2 +82) +: (are tan ° £2nm)

or loge (a+b) =log, (a2 +b)? +2 (are tan “ +2n+7),

according as a is positive or negative. Thus the logarithm of any complex or real quantity is a multiple-valued function, the differ- ence between successive values being 2m ; in particular, the most general form of the logarithm of a real positive quantity is obtained by adding positive or negative multiples of 27 to the arithmetical logarithm. On this subject, see

De Morgan’s Trigonometry and Double Algebra, chap. iv., and a paper by Prof. Cayley in vol. ii. of Proc. London Math. Soc.

We may suppose the exponential values of the sine and cosine Hyper- extended to the case of complex arguments; thus we accept bolic early) 4 ¢- Ua+ty) early) _ ¢- Katey) a trigono-

a 7 as the definitions of the metry,

functions cos (x+y), sin (a+vy) respectively. If z=0, we have ey +¢e7 y e +e7 y 2 Bo}

cos wy =

and sin y= 5(el —e-“), The quantities wv—e-y , F : 5 are called the hyperbolic cosine and sine of y and are

written cosh y, sinh y; thus cosh y=cosvy, sinh y= -—csinvw. The functions cosh y, sinh y are connected with the rectangular hyperbola in a manner analogous to that in which the cosine and sine are

ANALYTICAL, |

connected with the circle. We may easily show from the definitions that cos*(a +uy)+sin*«+ry)=1, cosh? y — sinh? y= 1; cos(a + wy) = cos x cosh y—csin# sinh y, sin(x+cy) =sin # cosh y+ cos xsinh y, cosh(a.+ 8) =cosh a cosh 8 sinh a sinh f, sinh(a 8) =sinh a cosh 8 — cosh a sinh 8. These formule are the basis of a complete hyperbolic trigonometry. The connexion of these functions with the hyperbola was first pointed out by Lambert.

Expan- If we equate the coefficients of x on both sides of equation (13), sionofan we get 3 5 angle in ran O45 sin?@ 1.3 sin’? 1.3.5 sin’) (21); powers of 3 2.4 fl 4.4.0 -h. its sine. » must lie between the values +2 5° This equation may also be written in _ form a #2 1.3 ane 3.5 o re sin 2a 53 45 *o.4.677°” when « lies between £1. By equating the coefficients of n? on both sides of equation (12) we get 2sin4o 2.4 sin’? 2.4.6 sin in

-

6?=sin? O+3 5 S08. os + 2a. 74 (22), which may also be written in the form 20 2k 2.4.6 H > ee eo ie (arc sin) @+5 5 +35 3 +e oa when x is between +1. Differentiating this equation with regard to x, we get

= 24

i= [= + Fat Stas 4S re ge tees if we put arc sin «=arc tan A this equation becomes y 2 ¥ 2.4/7 :) end eS t+ 3 ioe 3.51 +y2 tJ (23). This equation was given with two proofs by Buler i in the Nova acta for 1798. L+e_ LS oe ae Gregory's We have Slog *® tte te + aes5 – put vy for «, the left side ee becomes 3} {log (1 +cy) — log (1 —«y)} or care tan ykinr ; ; . hence arc tan y=nr = =y-% + = ae The scrics is convergent if y lies 'shea +1; if we suppose arc tan y restricted to values between #7, we have 3. of arctany=y —"% 4% -,,, bauenseeasestore (24), which is Gregory's series. 305 = Various series derived from (24) have been employed to calculate oat OF the value of r. At the end of the 17th century 7 was calculated – — to 72 places of decimals by sain eherp; by means of the

series obtained by putting arc tan y=" 8 v=Z5 in (24). The cal-

culation is to be found in Sherwin's Mathematical Tables (1742). About the same time Machin employed = serics obtained from — arc, tan 555

939 5=7 to calculate mw to 100 de-

Long afterwards Euler employed the series obtained

the equation 4 are tan ; 5 cimal places. from — =are tan, +are tang, which, however, gives less rapidly con-

4

verging series (Introd., Anal. infin., vol. i.). Lagny employed the

formula arc tan a= 5 communicated to the Paris Academy in 1719. Vega calculated 7 to 140 ra places by means of the series sa from the

to calculate m to 127 places ; the result was

3 1

equation z =5 arctan 7 2arctan-.. The formula 3 7 =arc tan gt

10°

are tan 5 tare tan 5 was used by Dase to calculate m to 200 decimal places. Rutherford used the equation =4 arc tan —are tan 5 + are tan 99° If in (23) we put y=5 was 7 we have 1 tt | 24. 264. } St ER 1+3. tot 3-5 102 +.. 42 2 ft nie kel eS +7 5 00) + of,

a rapidly convergent series for which was first given by Hutton in Phil. Trans. for 1776, and afterwards by Euler in Nova acta for 1798. Euler gives an ee sesh al in the same manner from

the identity r= 20 are jae +8arctan-~. The calculation of r has

7 B been carried out to 707 places of decimals ; see Proc. Roy. Soc., xxi. and xxii. ; also SQUARING THE CIRcLE (vol. xxii. p. 435 sq.).

THRIiGUNOUME TRY

571

We shall now obtain expressions for sina and cos 2 as infinite Faetoriz-

products of eee pee We have : ation of MMe Ai os i sinv=2sin ~ sin —— =2° sin — sin a sin gol sin eat sa one 2 2 2. 46 4 4 ? eosine. proceeding continually in this way with each factor, we obtain ‘ ct. em… pom : ~ sinv=2”-! sin — sin aol 6 ee lr n D n g «£ where 7 is any positive integral power of 2. Now

EO “CR — TT et+rmT . rT—-x EOE ice sin sin =sin ——— sin ——— =sin? — ~sin?-, n n n n n n

. e+4n0 ze

and sin ——~— =cos -.

n 2

Hence the above may be written c a oh a | eee SNOT kc sinz=2”” sin ® (sin? — —sin?—) sin? — —sin?-)... n n n n n mg eure ae x sin? — —sin? =) cos~, n 7 where K=4n-1. Let x be ae small, then we have

Qa BN SE * sin? — ... sin? n n- n

sin? a/n sin? x/n — EC aa a il = a ars soe 1 ae sin? a/n sin? 2a/n We may write this

x sin? x/n sinz= nsin= cos— 1- Soe ie

sin* m/n

;

hence

f . & x

sinx=nsin — cos —(1 nv n

sin? a/n)

sin? kr/n]° where & denotes bo product

sin? z/n /) R, sin? m+ wera T n? sin

sin? ma/n sin’ = n m m+ 2Qn m+ 29 and m is any fixed integer ‘igen of n. It is necessary, a we niake » infinite, to determine the limiting valne of the quantity

sin?

se

sing . sing R; then, since the limit of ——————is——, and that of : c die inte m sin — cos = Gi sre, is unity, we have

=o 0-S)0-m) Cae)

Now 2 is less than unity, since sin” is less than sin red m+2r =

, sin

.; also by an elementary algebraical proposition F is aio m +l n

het 1 -sin? 2 (cosec? +... +cosec? Lf) and cosec 6 a if n n 20

0< = ; Ris therefore greater than

_@ ik 1 al

- ase m+2 fue = 2

1 1 1

or hee 1-9 m a aeitmein m+2 +e i ~~z)> or than 1~~ 2 Hence R=1- = where @ is some proper fraction ; 4m 4m’ i

whence

sinw=e (1-%)(1-385)... (1-55) (1-%

When m is indefinitely increased this becomes

9 2 n=+0 sine=a(1~)(1-gra)---=0P (1 a} (25). T Oh ge nT

n=—- © The expression for cos x in factors may be found in a similar manner

by means of the equation cosxv=2 sin = cos 2 rk or may be

deduced thus 4 4

sin 27 _ P(1- set) =) =(1-4 =)(1 – jee) (1-3 = ai): r

Qsinz rae) = =) n 4

+a (1 + =~) ee (26). n=-o ak

If we change x into ww, we have the formule for sinhz, cosha as infinite products—

cos v=

n=O N=O 4g? sinh x=x2P , cosha=P 1 +). n=0 n=0 2n+1 x Se

In the formula for sin z as an infinite product put 2=e 9? We then

® Wn did Di 0s get1= 5° ee ee ; if we stop after 2n factors in the numer- ator and denominator, we obtain the approximate equation 17.37, 57… (2n=1) 13 9.20… Cnr

ivi TRIGONOMETRY [ANALYTICAL.

Oull ba These scries were given by Schellbach (in Crelle's Journ., Vol. xviii.).

or 5-3-2 5, — = Var, where n is a large integer. This ex- 9 1.3.5…2v=1 4 : i AD ieee Oe pression was obtained in a quite different manner by Wallis (Arith- If in the same series (12), (13) we put 6 g) US gas WEES metien infinitorwm, vol. i. of Opp.). 4a? 400?(4ax2— 2?) dap doe? — 2?ar?)(dan? — 4272) a o+y)P(1+2=4) Cost= 1 Tee ee ie ee es ee sin(+y) 9″ Nr , Qa Qax(dee®— mr?) Qar(doe? — ®)(4a? — 3292) a ae aP(1+=) Le ee 1.2.94.0R 7 age We have of course assumed the legitimacy of the substitutions or cos y¥+sin y cot x made. These last series have been discussed by M. David (Bull. =(1 +1 ee \(a fees \(1 4. -)(1 – .) rn Soc. Math. de Franee, vol. xi.) and ia: as i vol. vii.). . a ot eoae : : If U,, denotes the sum of the series sacheeithicn + «an Von that Equating the coefficients of the first power of y on both sides we seaginet I Be Bae ‘ obtain the series age ios ee 4 ; 1 i 1 . 1 4 1 2 ae of the series jn tamt int -»., and W,, that of the series [mam cote=~+ ——+——_ 4. —__ wien See ‘ e e+e ex-w “£+20 w- 2Qr : ir : : kj ‘ / From this we may deduce a corresponding series for cosec x, for, since | T5m~ Fmt +++» we one by taking logarithms in the formule ; 25) and (26 eosec a= cot = — cot 2, we obtain ico Nangi(es) Ney nl a\4 1. /e\s ~ log (a cosec z)=0,(2) +5U,(2) 300(2) ee 1 j 1 Le ee (28), Hi 7 2 7 3 1

Seg atm -T atin non x+80 23m log (sec x) = va F) +57(=) +h) 4 By resolving oe ay) into factors we should obtain in a similar v6 7 2 by 8 T y h eosrt and differentiating these series we get manuer the series 1 t og ZF piigses 2 2 + 20 % By cnt P ra 2 4, (20) 9 Cob w= yt — had — eo Huiesvarnalaienarstevetave) site (31), ae, ag — Soe et | Bee Be In Sw — We Ba Oe ; . Ss and thence ek 2 2 2 = tan = —2 2% 4+ <p Ota +. — 2a ts... (82). ssowmtan(T +2) —tana=— 7 42 =P 2 T T 1% 42 m—2e m+ Qn 3m — 2 In (31) must lie between +7 and in (32) between +47. Write Barc ' . | equation (30) in the form SSR ee (30). | ed (seo Sete Oe These four formule may also be derived from the product formule = Serer 2 for sina and cos by taking logarithms and then differentiating. oe ee Glaisher has proved them by resolving the expressions for "*" | and expand each term oe this scries in powers of 2°, then we get per sec en ae ie (33) and |. '++ 48 products into partial fractions (see Quart. Journ, i 7 (aaah On a ; SEES . c : : where x must lie between 4m, By comparing the scrics (31) (32) Math., vol. xvii.). The series for oe es ale TP quieuise by ® (33) with the expansions of cot a, tan x, sec x obtained otherwise, continued use of the equation cota = (cots + cot 5") (see a paper | we can calculate the values of U2, U,... Vo, V,..0and Wy, W.... hil, meat , 2 2 When U,, has been found, Vp may be obtained from the formula by Dr Sehréter in Schlémilch's Zeitschrift, vol. xiii.). OY, =k IU Seriesfor Various series for may be derived from the series (27), (28), (29), For Lord Brounker's series of 7, see SQUARING THE CIRCLE (vol. m derived (30), and from the series obtained by differentiating them one or more | xxii, p. 485). It can be got at once by putting a=1, b=3, from times. For example, in the formule (27) and (28), by putting : ie 7 i B2 eae pa o=5.... in Huler's theorem =——=-——-...,.=— _* 7 series for a= "we get b¢ + b-a+ e~b+ eot and n Sylvester gave (Phil. Mag., 1869) the continued fraction eosec. ay 211 - oe aye re it } 1. I eed De 8} Si, dl a = eee ee are Ne 2 ie Ieee > r=nsin Z {14 1. z, mon! a \; which is equivalent to Wallis's formula for 7. This fraction was nD w —-1l m+1 Mm-1 A411 originally given by Euler (Comm. Acad. Petropol., vol. xi.) ; it

if we put n=8, these become is also given by Stern (in Credle’s Journ. 5 Wola

It may be shown by means of a transformation of the scries for 5 eee ee r=8VB(1-545-5+7-at), cos wand = that tan a= @ tt This may be also 85/37 ee 2 2 ae Wis = let st tatoe easily shown as follows. Let y=cos 4/2, and let y’, y”... denote : 2 ee the differential coefficients of y with regard to x then b formi

Byer yw y forming Epa itienoeiinayeat | : ‘welebh 1 1 1 these we can show that 4ay’+2y’+=0, and thence by Leibnitz’s

theorem we have Aary+2) 4. (44 2)y™+D 4 y(™) = 0, y 4dr ym)

(etm? (emp (ea ome* eon

cosee’an= om iG oe aes tees 5 = 2 = Yi, put =e, and we get 7?=9 l+patmtigat-.

4x 2 Therefore +{=-2-—,, “= — 2(2n+1)-—__—___ These series, among others, were given by Glaisher (Quart. Jowrn. Y _ yiy” year) 4 4 sag al Math., vol. xii.), i ’ hence ~~2V x cot Vz= — 2~~ = = =a vee Sums of | We have sinh wax meP(1 3), cosh ra= P(14 ——) R abt = . 72 eertain a n ; 2n+ 1/2 f Replacing N/ x by x we have tan x=—— a series, We differentiate these formule after taking logarithms, we obtain Seno

the series

7 oe] ome _ 7% tan w (n?— 1) tan® (n? – 4) tan2x (n?~ 9) tan2x ; py, Coth mx Qe? ae | Ppt Wage eS ee Te iy, pe ume drei 1 this was published in Mém. de l’Acad. de St Pétersb. i VOlsNG, De ~ [2p ge” 2 g2 tb Bea i on Glaisher has remarked (Mess, of Math., vol. iv.) that this may be

derived by forming the differential equation

(1 = a2%)h™+2) _ (om 4 Lacy™*D + (n2 – m)y™=0, where 7/=cos(n arc cos x), then replacing x by cos x, and procecding as in the former case. Ifwe

put »=0, this becomes pa on tan®s 4 tan2e 9 tan’ ~1P BP oe jae whence we have

These series were given by Kummer (in Crelle’s Journ., vol. xvii.),

1 1 1

Pen qo gant Q2n 1 an ax 82n 4 o2n +..., has been fonnd by Glaisher (Proe. Lond. Math. Soc., vol. vii.). Certain If in the series (12) and (18) we put n= Qe, 6=-, we get series for 6 sine and

The sum of the more general series

. 2 yWq2— 12) 9(g2 — 12) (42 92 eosine, cos a1 -— 7 dale) once = Wags col x mw? 4? Oy? eae 3 |2 [4 16 are tan e=.-— at = wa — 1) al 2_ 12) 2 _ 92) 1+ 34+ 54+ 7+ 2n+1+ sin J = ve{ ee —— _ i It is possible to make the investigation of the properties of the

simple circular functions rest on a purely analytical basis. The sine

Sums of powers of reei- proeals of natu- ral num- bers.

Con- tinued faetors for 7.

Con- tinued fraetions for trigo- nometri- eal fune- tions,

TRI-TRI

Purely of x would be defined as a function such that, if z= _ , then analyti- * wi- y*

eal treat- y=sina; the quantity = would be defined to be the complete integral ment of f! dy We shdul k om ieee 1 dy

circular wary 6 shou on have 5-2= | ——— Now change func- 0 y F et

tions. the variable in the integral to z, where y?+2°=1, we then have

eg a= | —— and 2 must be defined as the cosine of x, and is

Je “2 thus equal to sin G – “), satisfying the cquation sin®x+cos’v=1.

Next consider the differential equation dr

dy + —— = 0. V1i-y NI-# This is equivalent to d(yN1—-2+2V1-y?)=0; hence the integral is

yNV1—-#@+2V1-y2=

whence yNI-B4eN1- Yau.

TRILOBITES. See Crustacga, vol. vi. p. 659 sq.

TRINCOMALEE, a town and naval station in the island of Ceylon, is situated on the north-east coast— which is bold, rocky, and picturesquely wooded—by road 113 miles north-north-east of Kandy, in 8° 33’ 30” N. lat. and 81°13’ 10” E. long. It is built on the north side of the Bay of Trincomalee, on the neck of a bold peninsula separating the inner from the outer harbour. There is a lighthouse on the extremity of Foul Point at the southern side of the bay, and another on the summit of Round Island. The inner harbour is landlocked, with a safe anchorage and deep water. close to the principal wharves ; the outer harbour has an area of about 4 square miles, with a depth of about 70 fathoms. There is an admiralty dockyard, and the town is the principal naval station in the Indian seas. The breadth of the streets and esplan- ades somewhat atones for the mean appearance of the houses, but the town generally has a gloomy and im- poverished aspect. Pearl oysters are found in the lagoon of Tambalagam to the west of the bay. The Government buildings include the barracks, the public offices and re- sidences of the civil and naval authorities, and the official house of the officer commanding-in-chief in the Indian seas. There is an hospital and outdoor dispensary, and also a friend-in-need society. ‘The population of Trincomalee in 1881 was 10,180.

The town was one of the earliest settlements of the Malabar race in Ceylon, who at a very early period erected on a height at the extremity of the peninsula, now crowned by Fort Frederick, a temple dedicated to Konatha, or Konasir, named the “ temple of a thousand columns.” The building was desecrated aud destroyed in 1622, when the town was taken by the

Portuguese, who made use of the materials for the erection of the fort. The town was successively held by the Dutch (1639), the French (1678), the Dutch (1674), the French (1782), and the Dutch (1783). After a siege of three weeks it surrendered to the British fleet in 1795, and with other Dutch possessions in Ceylon was formally ceded to Great Britain by the treaty of Amiens in 1801. Its fortifications have lately been strengthened. :

TRINIDAD, a West Indian island, lying north-east of Venezuela, between 10° 3’ and 10° 50’ N. lat. and 61° 39’ and 62° W. long., being the most southern of the chain of islands separating the Atlantic from the Caribbean Sea. Its area is 1754 square miles, or nearly 1,123,000 acres. In shape the island is almost rectangular, but from its north-west and south-west corners project two long horns towards Venezuela, enclosing the Gulf of Paria. The north-west horn terminates in several islands, in one of the channels between which (the Boca Grande) lies the small British island of Patos. The general aspect of Trini- dad is level. But three parallel ranges, varying from 600 to 3100 feet in height and clothed with forests, run from

573

The integral may also be obtained in the form ye- V1 =n 1 —-2=V 1-2 ¥ dy es an uw du Let a= ——— = ee; = ————e vi-¥ oV1-2 . pVl- we? we have a+$=y7, and siny=sina cos#+cosa sin f,

cos y=cos a cos 8—sina sin 8, By means of the addition theorems and

the values sin 3= 1, cos 320 we can prove thatsin G

cos (5+<) =-sinw; and thence by another use of the addition

the addition theorems.

+0) =00s 2,

theorems that sin (r+) = —sinx cos (7 +x)= — cos x, from which the periodicity of the functions sin x, cos x follows. We have also [ope —t loge (VI=y+ey) 5

ao

whence log, (V1-y?+1y) log. (V1- 2.) =a constant. Therefore (V1=yeuy(N1 —- 2 +2) = V1 v2 +00, since w=y when z=0 ; whence we have the equation (cosa+esin a)(cos8+csin 8)=cos (a+ 8)+csin (a+ 8), (E. W.

from which De Moivre's theorem follows.

H.)

east to west. The plains are watered by numerous streams, and the mountains are deeply furrowed by innumerable ravines. The rivers falling into the gulf are somewhat ob- structed by shallows, especially the Caroni and the Couva. Geologically, as well as botanically and zoologically, Trini- dad differs little from the adjacent mainland, with which at one time it probably was connected. The soil, which is

Cateng pie

e iat atlas ae A Me St David A

wi ae 4s | sf | rene a 8

a =— iB S See OF : Manzanife

oF p~]

~

Cascaal P* a

Paria

San Fernandoft—ge> La Brea ProZone.

: ' Y 'ase jsiov is

Serpents M*"

ENGLISH MILES Orrxvene ‘2

Map of Trinidad.

fertile, consists of clay, loam, and alluvial deposits. ‘The Moriche palm and mountain cabbage, as well as the cedar and the balata, are prominent objects. Poisonous and medicinal plants grow everywhere, and the woods contain an inexhaustible supply of timber. There are two mineral springs. The most curious natural feature of the island is the pitch lake! in La Brea, 90 acres in extent, which furnishes an important export. The climate is healthy, the mean temperature being in January 76° Fahr, and in September 79°; it occasionally reaches 90”.

The population, which numbered 109,638 in 1871, was returned in 1881 at 153,128 (83,716 males and 69,412 females), and in 1885 at 171,914. Of these about 100,000 are natives of the island, prin- cipally of African race, 50,000 are coolies introduced from India (an industrious and prosperous element of the population), while the remainder includes the English and other European settlers. About 2000 coolies are introduced annually. Many French families from other parts of the West Indies settled in Trinidad many years ago, and traccs of this and of the Spanish occupation are obvious in laws, municipal arrangements, language, and population. The two principal towns are Port of Spain and San Fernando. The former (34,000 inhabitants), the capital of the island, is built on a gently inclined plain near the north-east angle of the Gulf of Paria,

1 This is vividly described by Charles Kingsley in A¢ Last.

and is a fineand safe port. In the town there are two cathedrals (the Roman Catholic and the Anglican), and outside it a botanical gardcn. San Fernando, about 30 miles southward, with a popula- tion of 7000, is an important shipping place.

Of the total area about 300,000 acres are cultivated. The principal productions of the island are sugar and cocoa; coffee is also becoming important. Trinidad has suffered much from the effect of foreign state

bounties, especially the export premiums of Germany and France. The sugar production in 1871 was 53,000 tons, in 1881 44,000 tons, and in 1885 64,000 tons. The prin- cipal exports in 1885 were—sugar, 64,000 tons (value £684,675) ; rum, 72,525 galls. (£7878) ; molasses, 2,416,761 galls. (£45,835) ; cocoa, 14,904,840 lbs. (£421,974) ; coffee, 20,270 lbs. ; asphalt, 28,505 tons raw and 6731 tons boiled ; cocoa-nuts, 9,645,700 ; bitters (Angostura and others) and liquors, 32,240 galls. ; the total value was £2,246,664, including £707,421 specie and bullion. The imports in 1885 (including bullion and specie) were £2, 241,478. Among the principal items are cottons, linens, woollens, and textiles generally (largely from the United Kingdom), £235, 895 ; fish, flour, and provisions (principally from the United States), £270,000 ; lunber (from Canada), £43,075; rice (half from India), £113,940; hardware and machinery (principally from the United Kingdom), £116,894 ; gold (principally from Venezuela in transit), £651,398. The sailing vessels entering Trinidad ports in 1885 had a burden of 150,219 tons, the steamers a burden of 385,950 tons. The total public revenue in 1885 was £429,307, of which £240,444 was for customs and excise. The total expenditure was £443,920. There are 145 public schools, of which 61 are Government and 61 assisted, with a total attendance of 13,282 scholars. The principal towns are connected by railway lines.

Trinidad was discovered by Columbus on 31st July 1496. It remained in Spanish possession (although its principal town, San José de Oruia, was burnt by Sir Walter Raleigh in 1595) until 1797, when a British expedition from Martinique caused its capitu- lation, and it was finally ceded to Great Britain in 1802 by the treaty of Amiens. Its real starting-point as a productive country was in 1781, when the Madrid Government began to attract foreign immigrants. Trinidad is still strictly a crown colony of Great Britain. The legislative council includes the governor as president, and six official and eight unofficial members, all appointed by the crowu. During the labour crisis caused by emancipation and the subsequent equalization of the British duties on free and slave- grown sugar, the colony was greatly assisted by the skilful ad-

ininistration of Lord Harris, governor from 1846 to 1851. See De Verteuil, Trinidad; Colonial Office List ; Guppy, Trinidad Almanac; and Government Geological Swrvey.

TRINITARIANS (Ordo Sanctx Trinitatis et Captorum), a religious order instituted about the year 1197 by Inno- cent IIL. at the instance of John de Matha (1160-1213) and Felix de Valois (0b. 1212), for the ransom of captives among the Moors and Saracens. The rule was the Augus- tinian, the dress white with a red and blue cross. De Matha was the first general and De Valois the first abbot of the mother house at Cerffroid near Meaux, where the idea of the institution had originated in a miraculous ap- parition. By 1200 as many as 200 Christians had been redeemed out of slavery in Morocco by the order, which accordingly spread rapidly not only in France but also in Italy and Spain. Further favoured by Honorius III. and Clement IV., the Trinitarians spread into Portugal, the United Kingdom, Bohemia, Saxony, Poland, and Hungary, and even into America. In the 18th century they had in all about 300 houses; but the order is now almost extinct. About the middle of the 17th century it was stated that in France the "redemptions" up to that time had numbered 246, the number of prisoners bought off being 30,720; for Castile and Leon the corresponding figures were 362 and 11,809. The order is sometimes spoken of as the "ordo asinorum" from the circumstance that originally its members were not permitted to use any other beast of burden. In France they were known as Mathurins from the chapel of St Mathurin or Mathelin in Paris, which belonged to them.

TRINITY HOUSE, Corporation or. An association of English mariners, which originally had its head-quarters at Deptford in Kent. In its first charter, received from Henry VIII. in 1514, it was described as the " guild or fraternity of the most glorious and undividable Trinity of St Clement," the court being made to consist of master,

wardens, and assistants, numbering thirteen in all and elected annually by the brethren. Deptford having been made a royal dockyard by Henry VIIL, and being the station where outgoing ships were supplied with puots, the corporation rapidly developed its influence and useful- ness. By Henry VIII. it was entrusted with the direction of the new naval dockyard. From Elizabeth, who con- ferred on it a grant of arms in 1573, it received authority to erect beacons and other marks for the guidance of navi- gators

along the coasts of England. It was also recog- nized as the authority in the construction of vessels for the royal navy. In 1604 a select class was constituted called elder brethren, the other members being called younger brethren. By the charter of 1609 the sole management of affairs was conferred on the elder brethren, the younger brethren, however, having a vote in the election of master and wardens. The practical duties of the fraternity are discharged by the acting elder brethren, who have all had experience in naval affairs; but as a mark of honour persons of rank and eminence are admitted as elder brethren and now form a large proportion of the mem- bers. In 1647 the corporation was dissolved by parlia- ment, but it was reconstructed in 1660, and the charter was renewed by James II. in 1685. A new hall and almshouses were erected at Deptford in 1765 3 but for some time the offices of the corporation had been trans- ferred to London, and in 1798 their headquarters were removed to Trinity House, Tower Hill, built from the designs of Wyatt. By an Act of 1836 they received powers to purchase from the crown, as well as from private proprietors, all interests in coast lights. For the maintenance of lights, buoys, é&c., they had power to raise money by tolls, the surplus being devoted to the relief of old and indigent mariners or their near relatives. In 1858 the control of the funds collected by the corpora- tion was transferred to the Board of Trade, and the money over which the brethren were allowed independent control was ultimately reduced to the private income derived from funded and trust property. Their practical duties in the erection of lighthouses, buoys, and beacons remain as im- portant as ever, the number of persons employed in their service being over 800. They also examine navigating lieutenants in the royal navy, and act as nautical advisers in the High Court of Admiralty.

TRINITY SUNDAY, which immediately follows Whit- sunday, was in the older liturgies regarded merely as the “Octave” of Pentecost. The habit of keeping it as a distinct festival seems to have sprung up about the 11th century. According to Gervase of Canterbury, it was Thomas Becket who introduced it into England in 1162. The universal observance of it was established by Pope John XXII. in 1334.

TRIPOLI, a North African state, bounded by the Medi- Plate V. terranean on the north, by the desert of Barca (or Libyan Desert), which separates it

from gypt, on the east, by the Sahara and Fezzan on the south-east, south, and south- west, and by Tunis on the north-west. The country is made up of a strip of fertile soil adjacent to the sea, with vast sandy plains and parallel chains of rocky moun- tains, which finally join the Atlas range near Kairwén in Tunis. It is naturally divided into five parts, viz.,—Tripoli proper, to the north-east of which is the plateau of Barca and Jebel al-Akhdar, to the south the oasis of Fezzan, to the south-east that of Aujala, and to the south-west that of Ghaddmes.1 It is very badly watered: the rivers are

‘ Concerning the last-named districts full information can be found in Sahara und Sudan (Berlin, 1879-81) by Dr Nachtigal, who continued the explorations of southern Tripoli commenced by Barth and Rohlfs. Consult also Narrative of Travels and Discoveries in Northern and Central Africa, by Denham, Clapperton, and Oudney, London, 1826.

small and the desert wells and watering places are often dry. As regards the coast, it is extremely difficult to fix the exact border between Egypt and Tripoli. The sea- board of the Libyan Desert is so little known to Europeans that the spacious harbours of Tebruk (Tabraca and Tabarka) and Bomba (Bomba) have almost escaped notice. The land bordering the sea to the west of Cape Ras al-Tin does not partake of the sterile character of the wastes of Barca. The district of Jebel al-Akhdar (“the Green Mountain ”), which intervenes between Ras al-Tin and Benghazi, abounds in wood, water, and other resources; but its ports are scarcely worthy of the name, except Derna (Darnis), where vessels from Alexandria call to embark honey, wool, and wax. From Mersd Suza (Apollonia, later Sozusa), now a mere boat cove, but once a powerful city of Cyrenaica, to Benghazi the coast abounds in extensive ruins. Benghazi itself, on the Bay of Sidra (Syrtis Major), is an insignificant fortified town trading in cattle and other produce. The principal products of the country are corn, barley, olives, saffron, figs, and dates,—these last being perhaps the finest in the whole of North Africa. Fruit also is abundant in cer- tain parts, and so are many kinds of vegetables. The horses and mules, though small, are capable of much hard work. The native tissues and pottery are almost as good as those of Tunis.

Great quantities of castor oil come from Tad- jura. In consequence of recent events in Tunis, Tripoli has become the last surviving centre of the caravan trade to Northern Africa. It is at least 250 miles nearer the great marts of the interior than either Tunis or Algiers. A large proportion of the commerce of Tripoli is in the hands of British merchants or dealers in British goods, who send cloth, cutlery, and cotton fabrics southwards and re- celve in return esparto grass, ivory, and ostrich feathers. The sirocco blows with great force at times during the autumn, and the heat is asa rule much greater than in Tunis. The climate is very variable; cold nights often succeed warm days; storms are of frequent occurrence ; and rain is at times wanting for many months. In addi- tion to the capital TRipoxt (see below), called Tardbulus al-Gharb to distinguish it from the town of the same name in Syria, the only important places are Murzuk and Ghadames in the interior and Benghazi (Berenice) on the coast. The population of the country consists of Moors, Arabs, Kabyles, Kuluglis (descendants of Turkish fathers and Moorish mothers), Turks, Jews, Europeans, and Negroes. Nothing like a census has ever been attempted, and the number of inhabitants is purely a matter of con- jecture. In the interior the population is very scattered, and it is not probable that the total exceeds from 800,000 to a million. The Europeans (2500 or 3000) on the coast are nearly all Maltese. There is a Jewish colony of about 4000 in the capital, and the trade is almost entirely in their hands and in those of the Maltese.

Since 1835 Tripoli has lost the semi-independent character of a regency which it formerly enjoyed in common with Tunis, and has become a vilayet or outlying province of the Turkish empire. For administrative purposes it is divided into five districts, which are again subdivided into twenty-five cantons, the former being governed by inotasarrifs and the latter by caimacams. Each vill- age has its sheikh, who is assisted by a sort of municipal council. Since the invasion of Tunis by the French, the Turkish garrison of Tripoli has been considerably reinforced, and many new fortifi- cations are partially erected on the coast. The chief judge or cad? is nominated by the Porte; the mu/tis are subject to his authority. There are also a criminal court and a commercial tribunal, The taxes are collected by a receiver-general, also nominated from Constantinople, and they press very heavily on all classes of the

1 The best kuown English work on Tripoli is F. W. and H. W. Beechey's Proceedings of the Hxpedition to Explore the Northern Coast of Africa from Tripoli Hastwards, London, 1828. Admiral W. H. Smyth's Afediterranean, London, 1854, contains a description of the coast. See also Rae, Country of the Moors, London, 1877, and Broad- ley, Tunis Past and Present, London and Edinburgh, 1882.

inhabitants. The principal sources of revenue are the usual Mo- hammedan taxes. The constant succession of Turkish governors, each of whom invariably follows a different policy from that of his predecessor, has been fatal to the material progress of the country. There are few elementary schools in the capital, and instruction in the interior is entirely limited to the Koran.

History.—After falling successively into the hands of the Phe- nicians, Romans (a four-sided triumphal arch, erected in honour of Aurelius Antoninus and Aurelius Pius, still stands near the Marina gate), Vandals, and Greeks, Tripoli was finally conquered by the Arabs twelve centuries ago, and has remained a Moslem state ever since. In 1510 Ferdinand the Catholic of Spain took it, and thirteen years later it was given to the Knights of St John, who were expelled in 1553 by the Turkish corsairs Dragut and Sinan. Dragut, who afterwards fell in Malta, lies buried in a much vener- ated kubba close to one of the mosques. After his decease the con- nexion between Tripoli and Constantinople seems to have been considerably weakened. But the Tripolitan pirates soon became the terror and scourge of the Mediterranean; half the states of Europe seem at some time or other to have sent their fleets to bombard the capital. In 1714, when Hosain ibn 'Ali founded the present line of the beys of Tunis,? Ahmed Pasha Caramanli achieved independ- ence, and his descendants governed Tripoli until 1835. In that year the Turks took advantage of a civil war to reassert their authority, and since that date Tripoli has been governed by repre- sentatives of the sultan.

The khouan (ikhwdn) or semi-religious semi-political fraternities which exercise such considerable influence in Tunis, Algeria, and Morocco are perhaps still more powerful in Tripoli. The most remarkable is that of the

Senzstya, the centre of whose authority is Jaghbub or Jerabub, north-west of the oasis of Stwa. The sectaries of Senustya are found in all parts of North Africa, but exist in unusual force in Tripoli, and particularly in Ghadames and Murzuk. A certain halo of romance surrounds the history of this powerful sect; but its chief has, up to the present time (1887), not played any conspicuous part in the affairs of the Soudan or in those of the North African littoral. Mohammed el-Semisi came originally in 1830 from Mostaghanem in Algeria. He acquired a high reputation for sanctity at Fez in Morocco. After a visit to Mecca and the holy places he started a zéwiya or convent-college at Alexandria, but, being excommunicated by the sheikh al-Islam at Cairo, he fled across the Libyan Desert to the Jebel al-Akhdar near Benghazi. He afterwards removed to Jaghbub, which has never been visited by any European traveller. Here he established his zawiya in the midst of palm-groves and soon gathered nearly a thousand followers. His austere doctrines are received with enthusiasm in the Moslem states of Northern and Central Africa. He established some one hundred sanctuaries in every considerable place between Morocco and Mecca, and appointed mukaddemin or lieutenants in nearly every part of Islam. Senusi the elder died in 1860 and was succeeded by his son, who bore the title of Al- Mahdi. Under his rule the prosperity of the zawiya at Jerabub is said to have greatly increased. Pilgrims to Mecca from North Africa, as well as those coming from Bornou and the Saharan pro- vinces, flock there to seek his blessing. He not only receives caravans of ivory and ostrich feathers from the different sultans of the in- terior, but cargoes of arms and ammunition often arrive for him at the almost unknown harbours of the coast. Rohlfs, Nachtigal, and Duveyrier found their passage barred by Senusian agents. It was confidently expected Scnusi would make some demonstration at the beginning of the 14th century of the Hijra (November 1882). His followers were, however, doomed to disappointment. Most of the Tripolitan sheikhs are affiliated to the Senusiya confraternity.

From an archeological point of view Tripoli possesses an interest equal to, if not greater than, that which attaches to Tunis. On this subject the fullest information is afforded by the book of the Beecheys, and in a less degree by that of Mr Rae. The former is illustrated by numerous plans and engravings and still affords the safest guide to the antiquities of Tripoli. CAQ E BS)

TRIPOLI, the capital of the above country, is situated in 32° 53’ 40” N. lat. and 13° 11’ 32” E. long., on a pro- montory stretching out into the Mediterranean and forming a small bay. Its crenellated enceinte wall has the form of an irregular pentagon. A line of small half-ruined forts is supposed to protect one side of the harbour, and the castle of the governor the other. The desert almost touches the western side of the city, while on the east is the ver- dant oasis of Meshiga, where are still to be seen the tombs of the Caramanlian sultanas and the twelve-domed mar- about of Sy Hamonda. In the town itself there are seven

? The Letters (London, 1819) of Richard Tully, who was consul at Tripoli from 1783 to 1793, throw a strange and vivid light on Tri- politan life during the 18th century.

principal mosques, six of them possessing lofty minarets in the Turkish style. The streets are narrow, dirty, and unpaved ; there is no European quarter properly so called : Tripoli is still a typical Moorish city. Its population num- bers about 20,000.

TRIPOLI (Zardbulus), a town of Syria, capital of Liwa, on the river Kadisha or Abi ‘Ali, in 34° 26° N. lat. and 35° 50’ E. long., is situated in a fertile maritime plain covered with orchards and dominated by a castle over- hanging a gorge of the river, some parts of which are, perhaps, the work of the crusaders. The port (Al-Mind) is about two miles distant, on a small peninsula. The population is estimated at 17,000, with the port at 24,000 or a little more. Nearly half of these are Christians, the Maronites preponderating. There is a considerable export of silk cocoons and a native silk manufacture; the sponge fishery is a large industry ; tobacco is exported; and soap is made from the olive oil of the district. There are eighteen churches, and several monasteries, nunneries, and large khans.

The ancient Phcenician city which we know only by its Greek name of Tripolis was the seat in Persian times of the federal council of Sidon, Tyre, and Aradus, each of which cities had its separate quarter in the ‘“‘triple town” (see vol. xviii. p. 809). In the second and first centuries B.c. it struck coins, on which it is designated a ‘‘holy and autonomous” city. These are

succeeded by imperial coins ranging from 32 B.c. to 221 a.p, About 450, and again in 550, it was destroyed by earthquake. The Arabs took it in 638 after a prolonged siege, the inhabitants withdrawing by sea. It appears from Beladhori (p. 127) that at this time the city still consisted of three fortified places. Mo‘aiwiya recruited the population by a colony of Jews and gave it fortifications and a garrison against the naval attacks of the Greeks, who, notwith- standing, retook it for a brief space in the time of Abdalmalik (Beladh., wt sup.). It was again taken by the Greeks in the war of 966-69 and was besieged by Basil II. in 995, after which date it was held by a garrison in the pay of the Fatimite caliphs of Egypt, who treated the city with favour and maintained in it a trading fleet. At this time, according to the description of Nasiri Khosrau (ed. Schefer, p. 40 sgq.), who visited it in 1047, it lay on the peninsula of Al-Mina, bathed on three sides by the sea, and had about 20,000 inhabitants and important industries of sugar and paper-making. Of the great sea-walls and towers there are still imposing remains. From this date tillit was taken by the crusaders, after a five years’ siege, in 1109, the ruling family was that of ‘Ammar, who founded a library of over 100,000 volumes. Under the crusaders Tripoli continued to flourish, exported glass to Venice, and had 4000 looms (Quatremére, Hist. des Sultans Mamlouks, ii, 103). In 1289 it was taken and destroyed by the sultan Kalatin of Egypt, and a new city was begun on the present site, which rapidly rose to importance (Ibn Battta, i. 137). Its medizval prosperity has obliterated most relics of remoter antiquity.

See Renan, Mission de Phénicie, p. 129 sqq.

TRIPOLITZA, officially Trrpotis, a town of Greece, capital of the nomarchy of Arcadia, is situated in a plain 3000 feet above sea-level, 22 miles south-west of Argos. The name has reference to the three ancient cities of Man- tinea, Pallantium, and Tegea, of which Tripolitza is the modern representative. Before the war of independence it was the capital of the Morea and the seat of a pasha, with about 20,000 inhabitants; but in 1821 it was taken and sacked by the insurgents, and in 1825 its ruin was com- pleted by Ibrahim Pasha. The town has since been re- built, and now (1887) contains about 10,000 inhabitants.

TRISMEGISTUS. See Hermes TRISMEGISTUS.

TRISTAN. See Romances, vol. xx. p. 644 sq.

TRISTAN DA CUNHA, a group of three small vol- canic islands, situated in the South Atlantic nearly midway between the Cape of Good Hope and the coast of South America, the summit of the largest being in 37° 5’ 50” S. lat. and 12° 16’ 40” W. long. They rise from the low submarine elevation which runs down the centre of the Atlantic and on which are likewise situated Ascension, St. Paul’s Rocks, and the Azores ; the average depth on this ridge is from 1600 to 1700 fathoms, while depths of 3000 fathoms are found on each side of it. The depth between

the islands is in some places over 1000 fathoms. Tristan, the largest and northernmost island, is nearly circular in form, about 7 miles in diameter, with a volcanic cone in the centre (7640 feet). Precipitous cliffs, 1000 to 2000 feet in height, rise directly from the ocean on all sides, except on the north-west, where there is an irregular plain, 100 feet above the sea, and 24 miles in length and 4 mile in breadth. The crater of the central cone is said to be filled with a freshwater lake which never freezes. Inac- cessible Island, the westernmost of the group, is about 20 miles from Tristan. It is quadrilateral in form, the sides being about 2 miles long. The highest point (1840 feet) is on the west side ; all round there are perpendicular cliffs 1000 feet in height. At the base of these are in some places narrow fringes of beach a few feet above the sea- level. Nightingale Island, the smallest and most southern of the group, is 10 miles from Inaccessible Island. Its coasts, unlike those of the other two islands, are surrounded by low cliffs, from which there is a gentle slope up to two peaks, the one 1100 feet, the other 960 feet high. There are two small islets—Stoltenkoff (325 feet) and Middle (150 feet)—and several rocks adjacent to the coast. The rocks are feldspathic basalt, dolerite, augite-andesite, side- romelane, and palagonite; some specimens of the basalt have porphyritic augite. The caves in Nightingale Island indicate that it has been elevated several feet. On almost all sides the islands are surrounded by a broad belt of kelp, the gigantic southern sea-weed (Macrocystis pyrifera), through which a boat may approach the rocky shores even in stormy weather. There is no good or safe anchorage. The beaches and lower lands are covered with a dense growth of

tussock grass (Spartina arundinacea), 8 to 10 feet in height, which shelters millions of penguins (Hudyptes chrysocoma), which there form their rookeries. There is one small tree (Phylica nitida), which grows in detached patches on the lower grounds. Independently of introduced plants, fifty-five species have been collected in the group, twenty-nine being flowering plants and twenty-six ferns and lycopods. A majority of the species are characteristic of the present general flora of the south temperate zone rather than any particular part of it: botanically the group is generally classed with the islands of the Southern Ocean. A finch (Wesospiza acunhe), a thrush (Wesocichla eremita), and a water hen (Gallinula nesiotis) are the only land birds—the first two being peculiar to the islands. In addition to the penguins numerous Other sea birds nest on the islands, as petrels, albatrosses, terns, skuas, and prions. One or two land shells, a few spiders, several Coleoptera, a small lepidopter, and a few other insects are recorded, but no Orthoptera or Hymenoptera. The prevailing winds are westerly. De- cember to March is the fine season. The climate is mild and on the whole healthy, the temperature averaging 68° Fahr. in summer, 55° in winter,—sometimes falling to 40°. Rain is frequent ; hail and snow fall occasionally on the lower grounds. The sky is usually cloudy. The islands have a cold and barren appearance. The tide rises and falls about four feet.

The islands were discovered and named by the Portuguese in 1506. The Dutch described them in 1643. D'Etcheverri landed on them in the year 1767, when he gave Nightingale and In- accessible Islands their names. Their exact geographical position was determined by Captain Denham in 1852, and the "Challenger" completed the exploration of the group in 1873. When first dis- covered the islands were uninhabited. Towards the end of the 18th and in the beginning of the 19th century several sealers resided on them for longer or shorter periods. In 1816 the islands were taken possession of by Great Britain. In 1817 the garrison was withdrawn, but Corporal William Glass, his wife and family, and two men were allowed to remain. This small colony received addi-

tions from time to time from shipwrecks, from whalers, and from the Cape of Good Hope. In 1826 there were 7 men and 2 women

besides children. In 1873 there were 84 inhabitants, in 1886 97. They possess cattle, sheep, and geese. There are usually good potato crops. The settlement has always been on the flat stretch of land on the north-west of Tristan, and is called Edinburgh. Two Germans lived for several years on Inaccessible Island, but with this exception there have been no settlements either on this or on Nightingale Island.

TRITON. The genus Z’riton was constituted by Lau- renti, in his Synopsis Reptiliwm, and the name was adopted by nearly all writers on Amphibia. In Brit. Mus. Cat. – Batrachna Gradentia, by G. A. Boulenger, the genus is expanded and called by the name MMolge, which was used by Merrem in his Zentamen Syst. Amphibia, 1820. The genus belongs to the division Mecodonta of the family Salamandrida in Strauch’s classification (see AMPHIBIA, vol.i.p. 771). The definition of Molge given by Boulenger, which closely agrees with that of Triton adopted by Strauch, is as follows. Tongue free along the sides, adherent or somewhat free posteriorly. Palatine teeth in two straight or slightly curved series. Fronto-squamosal arch present (except in JZ. cristatus), ligamentous or bony. Toes five. Tail compressed. In Bell’s British Reptiles, 2d ed., 1849, four species were described as occurring in Britain, Ac- cording to Boulenger, there are only three British species, Molge cristata, Boul. (Laurenti), M. vulgaris, Boul. (Linn.), and MM. palmata, Boul. (Schneider). We give a short ac- count of these under the names Z’riton cristatus, 7’. vul- garis, and 7’. palmatus respectively.

The name 7’riton cristatus for the first species has been used by a great number of authoritative writers on Amphibia, including Laureuti, Tschudi, Bonaparte, Duméril and Bibron, and Strauch, and also by Bell and Fleming among students of British fauna.} The diagnosis of 7. cristatus is as follows: —The males have a dorsal crest which is toothed ; the fronto-squamosal arch is absent ; the colour of the ventral surface is orange with black spots. This species is commonly known as the great water-newt. The average length of the adult is 6 inches. The colours are most brilliant in the male, and more developed in the breeding season—spring and summer—than in winter. The back is blackish or yellowish brown, with round black spots; the sides of the tail are white. The dorsal crest of the male is separated entirely from the tail crest, and both disappear in winter. The skin is covered

with warty tubercles, There are no parotids ; but glandular pores are present over the eyes and in a longitudinal series along each side. The species is pretty common in ponds and ditches in most parts of Britain, but more abundant in the south than in the north; in the neighbourhood of London it is found in great numbers. Its food consists of aquatic insects and other small animals; in the spring it devours the young tadpoles of the frog with avidity, and occasionally it feeds on the smaller species, 7. vulgaris. In winter it hibernates, either quitting the water and hiding under stones or remaining torpid at the bottom of the water. It breeds chiefly in May and June. As in all Salamandrida, a true copulation takes place and the fertilization of the ova is internal. The female deposits each egg separately in the fold of a leaf, which she bends by means of her hind feet; the adhesive slime surrounding the vitellus keeps the leaf folded. The tadpole when first hatched is much more fish-like in form than that of the frog, the body dimin- ishing in thickness gradually to the end of the tail. A continuous median fin runs along the back from the head, round the end of the tail, along the ventral median line, to the region of the gills, thus extending, as in many fish larve, in front of the anus. The larva possesses three pairs of branched external gills, and in front of these a pair of processes by which it can adhere to fixed objects in the water. 7. cristatus is abundant throughout Europe, ranging from Sweden and Russia southwards to Greece, and from Britain to the Caucasus.

The diagnosis of 7. vulgaris, the Lissotriton punctatus of Bell, is :—Males with a dorsal crest continuous with the caudal, and

with an even margin and continuous with the caudal; fronto- squamosal arch long; toes in male webbed. Other less distinctive features are that the back is flattened, with a raised line on each side, and the tail in the male truncate, terminating in a short slender filament. This species is not so common in Britain as the other two; it is widely distributed throughout Europe. It was first discovered in Britain in 1848.

Boulenger recognizes nineteen species of Molge, of which nine besides those found in Britain are European. Only two species occur in America.. Strauch gives twenty species.

TRIUMPH, an honour awarded to generals in ancient Rome for decisive victories over foreign enemies; for victories in civil war or over rebels a triumph was not allowed. The power of granting a triumph rested with the senate; and it was a condition of granting it that the victorious general, on his return from the war, should not have entered the city until he entered it in triumph. Lucullus on his return from Asia waited outside of Rome three years for his triumph. The triumph consisted of a solemn procession, which, starting from the Campus Martius outside the city walls, passed through the city to the Capitol. Rome was en féte, the streets gay with garlands, the temples open. The procession was headed by the magis- trates and senate, who were followed by trumpeters and then by the spoils, which included not only arms, standards, statues, &c., but also representations of battles, and of the towns, rivers, and mountains of the conquered country, models of fortresses, &c. Next came the victims destined for sacrifice, especially white oxen with gilded horns. They were followed by the prisoners who had not been sold as slaves but kept to grace the triumph; they were put to death when the procession reached the Capitol. The chariot which carried the victorious general (riwmphator) was crowned with laurel and drawn by four horses. The general was attired like the Capitoline Jupiter in robes of purple and gold borrowed from the treasury of the god; in his right hand he held a laurel branch, in his left an ivory sceptre with an eagle at the point. Above his head the golden crown of Jupiter was held by a slave who re- minded him in the midst of his glory that he was a mortal man. Last came the soldiers shouting Jo triumphe and singing songs both of a laudatory and scurrilous kind. On reaching the temple of Jupiter on the Capitol, the general placed the laurel branch (in later times a palm branch) on the lap of the image of the god, and then offered the thank-offerings. A feast of the magistrates and senate, and sometimes of the soldiers and people, con- cluded the ceremony, which in earlier times lasted one day but in later times occupied several. A naval or maritime triumph was sometimes celebrated for victories at sea. Generals who were not allowed a regular triumph by the senate had a right to triumph at the temple of Jupiter Latiaris on the Alban Mount.

TRIVANDRUM, a town of India, capital of the native state of TRAVANCORE (q.v.), is situated in 8° 29’ 3” N. lat. and 76° 59’ 9” KE. long., near the coast, not far from Cape Comorin. It is the residence of the

maharajah, and con- tains an observatory and a museum, besides several other fine buildings. Commercially it is inferior in importance to Aleppi, the trade centre of the state. In 1881 it had a population of 37,652.

TROAD anp TROY. The Troad (77 Tpeds), or land of Geogra- Troy, is the north-western promontory of Asia Minor, Phical The name “ Troad” is never used by Homer,—who calls oun

festooned ; belly not brilliantly coloured; back spotted. This species, often called the common or small newt, has a smooth skin,

ion.

no glandular pores on the sides, but two patches on the head. It is as abundant in Britain as the former, or more so, but differs somewhat in habits, in autumn and winter being almost entirely terrestrial, and only living in water during the breeding season. Like the former species it is carnivorous, It is found in most parts of Britain, and throughout Europe, except in the south of France, Spain, and Portugal ; it also extends into temperate Asia.

T. palmatus Tschudi (Schneider), the Lissotriton palmipes of Bell, is thus distinguished :—Male with dorsal crest, which is low

1 The species of Triton are called in English efts, evets, or newts.

the land, like the city, Tpot,—but is already known to Herodotus. The Troad is bounded on the north by the Hellespont and the westernmost part of the Propontis, on the west by the Aigean Sea, and on the south by the Gulf of Adramyttium. The eastern limit was variously defined by ancient writers. In the widest acceptation, the Troad was identified with the whole of western and south- western Mysia, from the Alsepus, which flows into the XXIII. — 73

Natural divisions.

Propontis a little west of Cyzicus, to the Caicus, which flows into the AZgean south of Atarneus. But the true eastern boundary is undoubtedly the range of Ida, which, starting from near the south-east angle of the Adramyttian Gulf, sends its north-western spurs nearly to the coast of the Propontis, in the region west of the Ausepus and east of the Granicus. Taking Ida for the eastern limit, we have the definition which, as Strabo says, best corresponds with the actual usage of the name Troad. Ida is the key to the physical geography of the whole region ; and it is the peculiar character which this mountain-system 1mparts to the land west of it that constitutes the real distinctness of the Troad from the rest of Mysia. Nature has here provided Asia Minor with an outwork against invaders from the north-west ; and as in the dawn of Greek legend the Troad is the scene of the struggle between Agamem- non and Priam, so it was in the Troad that Alexander won the battle which opened a path for his further advance.

The length of the Troad from north to south—taking a straight line from the north-west point, Cape Sigeum (Yeni Shehr), to the south-west point, Cape Lectum (Baba-Calessi) —may be roughly given as forty miles. The breadth, from the middle point of the west coast to the main range of Ida, is not much greater. The whole central portion of this area is drained by the Mendere (the ancient Scamander), which rises in Ida and is by far the most important river of the Troad. The basin of the Mendere is divided by hills into two distinct parts, a southern and a northern plain. The southern—anciently called the Samonian plain —is the great central plain of the Troad, and takes its modern name from Bairamitch, the chief Turkish town, which is situated in the eastern part of it near Ida. It is of an elongated form, the extent from north to south being large in proportion to the average width, and is en-

runs parallel with the Adramyttian Gulf from east to west, forming a southern barrier to the valley of the Touzla, and walling it off from a thin strip of seaboard. This plateau seems to have been formed by a volcanic upheaval which came late in the Tertiary period, and covered the limestone of the south coast with two successive flows of trachyte. The lofty crag of Assus, washed by the sea, is like a tower standing detached from this line of

mountain- wall, The western coast is of a different character. North of the Touzla extends an undulating plain, narrow at first, but gradually widening. Much of it is covered with the valonia oak (Quercus dgilops), one of the most valuable products of the Troad. Towards the middle of the west coast the adjacent ground becomes higher, with steep acclivities, which sometimes rise into peaks; and north of these, again, the seaboard subsides towards Cape Sigeum into rounded hills, mostly low.

The timber of the Troad is supplied chiefly by the pine- Natural But nearly all the products.

forests on the slopes of Mount Ida. plains and hills are more or less well wooded. Besides the valonia oak, the elm, willow, cypress, and tamarisk shrub abound. Lotus, galingale, and reeds are still plentiful, as in Homeric days, about the streams in the Trojan plain. The vine, too, is cultivated, the Turks making from it a kind of syrup and a preserve. In summer and autumn water-melons are among the abundant fruits. Cotton, wheat, and Indian corn are also grown. The Troad is, indeed, a country highly favoured by nature—with its fertile plains and valleys, abundantly and continually irri- gated from Ida, its numerous streams, its fine west sea- board, and the beauty of its scenery. Under a good government, it could not fail to be exceedingly prosperous. Under Turkish rule, the natural advantages of the land suffice to mitigate the poverty of the sparse population, but have scarcely any positive result.

In the Homeric legend, with which the story of the Early Troad begins, the people called the Troes are ruled by a history ; king Priam, whose realm includes all that is bounded by); 07.

closed by hills which, especially towards the south, are low and undulating. From the north end of the plain of Bair-

amitch the Mendere winds in large curves through deep ngdoum

Coasts.

gorges in metamorphic rocks, and issues into the northern plain, stretching to the Hellespont. This is the plain of Troy, which has an average length of

seven or eight miles from north to south, with a breadth of some two or three from east to west. The hills which enclose it on the south and east are quite low, and towards the east the acclivities are in places so gentle as to leave the limits of the plain somewhat indefinite. Next to the basin of the Mendere, with its two plains, the best marked feature in the river- system of the Troad is the valley of the Touzla, the ancient Satniois. The Touzla rises in the western part of Mount Ida, south of the plain of Bairamitch, from which its valley is divided by hills; and, after flowing for many miles almost parallel with the south coast of the Troad, from which, at Assus, it is less than a mile distant, it enters the Aigean about ten miles north of Cape Lectum. Three alluvial plains are comprised in its course. The easternmost of these, into which the river issues from rugged mountains of considerable height, is long and narrow. ‘The next is the broad plain, which is overlooked by the lofty site of Assus, and which was a fertile source of supply to that city. The third is the plain at the embouchure of the river on the west coast. This was anciently called the Halesian (‘AAjovov) plain, partly from the maritime salt-works at Tragase, near the town of Hamaxitus, partly also from the hot salt-springs which exist at some distance from the sea, on the north side of the river, where large formations of rock-salt are also found. Maritime salt-works are still in operation at the mouth of the river, and its modern name (Touzla =salt) preserves the ancient association. A striking feature of the southern Troad is the high and narrow plateau which

“Lesbos, Phrygia, and the Hellespont” (J/., xxiv. 544), 2.€., the whole ‘‘ Troad,” with some extension of it, beyond Ida, on the north-west. According to Homer, the Achzeans under Agamemnon utterly and finally destroyed Troy, the capital of Priam, and overthrew his dynasty. But there is an Homeric prophecy that the rule over the Troes shall be continued by Aineas and his descendants. From the “* Homeric” Hymn to Aphrodite, as well as from a passage in the 20th book of the Ilad (75-353)—a passage un- doubtedly later than the bulk of the book—it is certain that in the seventh or sixth century B.c. a dynasty claim- ing descent from Auneas reigned in the Troad, though the extent of their sway is unknown. The Homeric tale of Troy is a poetic creation, for which the poet is the sole witness. The analogy of the French legends of Charle- magne warrants the supposition that an Achzan prince once held a position like that of Agamemnon. We may

suppose that some memorable capture of a town in the Troad had been made by Greek warriors. But we cannot regard the Zéiad in any closer or more exact sense as the historical document of a war. The geographical compact- ness of the Troad is itself an argunient for the truth of the Homeric statement that it was once united under a strong king. How that kingdom was finally broken up is unknown. Thracian hordes, including the Treres, swept into Asia Minor from the north-west about the beginning of the seventh century B.c., and it is probable that, like the Gauls and Goths of later days, these fierce invaders made havoc in the Troad. The Ionian poet Callinus has recorded the terror which they caused further south.

A new period in the history of the Troad begins with the foundation of the Greek settlements. The earliest

Greek

settle- ments,

Greek Ilium.

{rm OA WD

and most important of these were olic. Lesbos and Cyme in Afolis seem to have been the chief points from which the first Holic colonists worked their way into the Troad. Commanding positions on the coast, such as Assus and Sigeum, would naturally be those first occupied ; and some of them may have been in the hands of Aolians as early as the 10th century B.c. It appears from Hero- dotus (v. 95) that about 620 B.c, Athenians occupicd Sigeum, and were resisted by olic colonists from Myti- lene in Lesbos, who had already established themselves in that neighbourhood. Struggles of this kind may help to account for the fact noticed by Strabo, that the earlier colonies had often migrated from one site in the Troad to another. Such changes of seat have been, he observes, frequent causes of confusion in the topography ; and the fact has an important bearing on attempted identifications of the more obscure ancient sites.

Among the Greek towns in the Troad, three stand out with especial prominence—Ilium in the north, Assus in the south, and Alexandria Troas

in the west. The site of the Greek Ilium is marked by the low mound of Hissarlik (“place of fortresses”) in the Trojan plain, about three miles from the Hellespont. The early Greek settlers in the Troad naturally loved to take Homeric names for their towns. The fact that Homer places the town of Dardania far inland, on the slopes of Ida, did not hinder the founders of the Aolic Dardanus from giving that name to their town on the shores of the Hellespont. The site of the historical Thymbra, again, cannot be reconciled with that of the Homeric Thymbra. Similarly, the choice of the name Ilion in no way justifies the assumption that the Greek settlers found that spot identified by tradition with the site of the town which Homer calls Ilios. It does not even warrant the hypothesis that they found a shrine of Athene Ilias existing there. For them, it would be enough that the sounding name could be safely appro- priated,—the true site of Homeric Ilias being forgotten or disputed,—and that their town was at least in the neigh- bourhood of the Homeric battlefields. The Greek Ilium may have been founded about 700 B.c. It is noticeable that no ancient writer suggests a later date than the time of Croesus (c. 550 B.c.); and Strabo says that the establishment of the colony at Hissarlik—after previous occupation of a different site—took place “in the time of the Lydians” (eri Avdav). It would be reasonable to infer that the Greek Ilium preserved some well-marked traces of Lydian influence, perhaps in architecture or art, perhaps in manners or traditions. The traces of Lydian workmanship found in the excavations at Hissarlik are thus easily explained, without recourse to the shadowy hypothesis of a distinct Lydian settlement on the spot. When Xerxes visited the Trojan plain, he “went up to the Pergamon of Priam,” and afterwards sacrificed to the Tlian Athene (Herod., vii. 42). It is doubtful whether the “Pergamon” meant was at the Greek Ilium, or at another site (to be mentioned presently), Bunarbashi; strong reasons in favour of the latter have lately been adduced by Mr George Nikolaides, in his “IAcddos ZrparnyeKy Avacxevj. In the 4th century Ilion is mentioned among the towns of the Troad which yielded to Dercyllidas (399 B.c.), and as captured by Charidemus (359 B.c.). It pos- sessed walls, but was a petty place, of little strength. In 344 p.c. Alexander, on landing in the Troad, visited Tlium. In their temple of Athene the Ilians showed him arms which had served in the Trojan war, including the shield of Achilles. Either then, or after the battle of Granicus, Alexander directed that the town should be enlarged, and should have the rank of “city,” with politi- cal independence, and exemption

from tribute. The battle of Ipsus (301 B.c.) added north-western Asia Minor to the

dominions of Lysimachus, who executed the intentions of Alexander. He gave Ilium a wall 5 miles in circum- ference, incorporating with it some decayed towns of the neighbourhood, and built a handsome temple of Athene. In the 3d century B.c. Ilium was the head of a federal league (xowdv) of free Greek towns, which probably in- cluded the district from Lampsacus on the Hellespont to Gargara on the Adramyttian Gulf. Twice in that century Ilium was visited by Gauls. On the first occasion (278 B.c.) the Gauls, under Lutarius, sought to establish a stronghold at Ilium, but speedily abandoned it as being too weak for their purpose. Forty years later (218 B.c.) Gauls were brought over by Attalus I. to help him in his war against Acheus. After deserting his standard they proceeded to pillage the towns on the Hellespont, and finally besieged Ilium, from which, however, they were driven off by the troops of Alexandria Troas. At the beginning of the 2d century B.c. Ilium was in a state of decay. As Demetrius of Scepsis tells us, the houses "' had not even roofs of tiles," but merely of thatch. Such a loss of prosperity is sufficiently explained by the incursions of the Gauls and the insecure state of the Troad during the latter part of the 3d century. The temple of the Ilian Athene, however, retained its prestige. In 192 B.c. Antiochus the Great visited it before sailing to the aid of the Mtolians. In 190 B.c., shortly before the battle of Magnesia, the Romans came into the Troad. At the moment when a Roman army was entering Asia, it was politic to recall the legend of Roman descent from A®neas. Lucius Scipio and the Ilians were alike eager to do so. He offered sacrifice to the Ilian Athene; and after the peace with Antiochus (189 B.c.) the Romans annexed Rheeteum and Gergis to Ilium, "not so much in reward of recent services, as in memory of the source from which their nation sprang." The later history of [lium is little more than that of Roman benefits. A disaster befell the place in 85 B.c., when Fimbria took it, and left it in ruins; but Sulla presently caused it to be rebuilt. Augustus, while confirming its ancient privileges, gave it new terri- tory. Caracalla (211-217 a.p.) visited Ilium, and like Alexander paid honours to the tomb of Achilles. The latest coins found on the site are those of Constantius II. (337-361). In

the 4th century, as some rhetorical “Letters” of that age show, the Jlians still did a profit- able trade in attracting tourists by their pseudo-Trojan memorials. After the 4th century the place is lost to view. But we find from Constantine Porphyrogenitus (911-959) that in his day it was one of the places in the Troad which gave names to bishoprics.

While the Greek Ilium at Hissarlik owed its importance Assus.

to a sham pretension, which amused sight-seers and occa- sionally served politicians, Assus, on the south coast, has an interest of a more genuine kind, and is, indeed, a better type of ancient town-life in the Troad. Its situation is one of the most magnificent in all the Greek lands. The seaward faces of the isolated and sea-washed rock on which Assus stood are carved to south and south-west into terraces. The natural cleavage of the trachyte into joint planes had already scarped out shelves which it was comparatively easy for human labour to shape; and so, high up on this cone of trachyte, the Greek town of Assus was built, with its colonnades, baths, theatre, its public walks and its monuments of the dead, mounting tier above tier, till the summit of the crag was crowned with a Doric temple of Athene. The view from the summit is not only very beautiful but also of great historical interest. In front is Lesbos, one of whose towns, Methymna, is said to have sent forth the founders of Assus, as early, perhaps, as 1000 or 900 B.c. The whole south coast-line of the Troad is seen, and in the south-east the ancient territory

580

of Pergamum, from whose masters the possession of Assus passed to Rome by the bequest of Attalus III. (133 B.c.). The great heights of Ida rise in the east. Northward the Touzla is seen winding through its rich valley from a rocky defile in the east to the oak-forests in the western hills, This valley was traversed by the road which St Paul must have followed when he came overland from Alexandria Troas to Assus, leaving his fellow-travellers to

7&0 2,

fortified with towers at regular intervals. Remains of some ancient buildings, including a bath and gymnasium, can be traced within this area.

The harbour had two large basins, now alniost choked with sand. A Roman colony was sent to the place, as Strabo mentions, in the reign of Augustus. The abridged name “Troas” (Acts xvi. 8) was probably the current one in later Roman times. The site is now called Eski Stambul.

Many classical sites of less note in the Troad have been Other identified with more or less certainty. Neandria seems to ancient be rightly fixed by Mr F. Calvert at Mount Chigri, a hill 4

proceed by sea. The north-west gateway of Assus, to which this road led, is still flanked by two massive towers, of Hellenic work, and of an age which leaves no doubt

that they are the same between which St Paul entered the town. On the shore below, the ancient mole at which he embarked for Mytilene with his companions can still be traced by large blocks under the clear water. Assus affords the only harbour on the 50 miles of coast between Cape Lectum and the east end of the Adramyttian Gulf ; hence it must always have been the chief shipping-place for the exports of the southern Troad. Too much off the highways to become a centre of import trade, it was thus destined to be a commercial town, content with a modest provincial prosperity. The great natural strength of the site protected it against petty assailants; but, like other towns in that region, it has known many masters,— Lydians, Persians, the kings of Pergamum, Romans, and Ottoman Turks. From the Persian wars to about 350 B.c. Assus enjoyed at least partial independence. It was about 348-345 B.c. that Aristotle spent three years at Assus with Hermeas, an ex-slave who had succeeded his former master Eubulus as despot of Assus and Atarneus. Aristotle has left some verses from an invocation to Arete (Virtue), commemorating the worth of Hermeas, who had been seized by Persian treachery and put to death. Under its Turkish name of Beihram, Assus! is still the

not far from Alexandria Troas, remarkable for the fine view of the wholé Troad which it commands. Cebrene has been conjecturally placed in the eastern part of the plain of Bairamitch, Palescepsis being further east on the slopes of Ida, while the new Scepsis was near the site of Bairamitch itself. The evidence for this, however, is ambiguous. At the village of Kulaklee, a little south of the mouth of the Touzla, some Corinthian columns and other

fragments mark the temple of Apollo Smintheus and (approximately) the site of the Homeric Chryse. Colonze was also on the west coast, opposite Tenedos. Scamandria occupied the site of Eneh, in the middle of the plain of Bairamitch, and Cenchree was probably some distance north of it. The shrine of Palamedes, mentioned by ancient writers as existing at a town called Polymedium, has been discovered by Mr J. T. Clarke on a site hitherto unvisited by any modern traveller, between Assus and Cape Lectum. It proves to have been a sacred enclosure (temenos) on the acropolis of the town; the statue of Palamedes stood on a rock at the middle of its southern edge. Another interesting discovery has been made by Mr Clarke,—viz., the existence of very ancient town walls on Gargarus, the highest peak of Ida.

commercial port of the southern Troad, being the place to which loads of valonia (acorn-cups for tanning) are con- veyed by camels from all parts of the country. The

The modern discussion as to the site of Homeric Troy Site of may be considered as dating from Lechevalier's visits to Homeric the Troad in 1785-86. Homer describes Troy as "a great 1?°Y:

recent excavations at Assus, conducted by explorers repre- senting the Archeological Institute of America, have yielded results far more valuable for the history of Greek art and architecture than any excavations yet undertaken in the Troad. The sculptures form one of the most important links yet discovered between Oriental and early Greek art, especially in respect of the types of animals, The later Hellenic town-walls of Assus also well repay the new study which they have received. With their ramparts, towers, and posterns they form the finest and most instructive extant specimen of Greek military engineering. The director of the exploration, Mr J. T. Clarke, published in 1882 an excellent report on the,work so far as it had then been carried.

town," "with broad streets," and with a high acropolis, or ""Pergamus," rising above it, from which precipitous rocks descend abruptly to the plain beneath. These are the precipices over which the Trojans proposed to hurl the wooden horse, "' when they had dragged it to the summit." Homer marks the character of the acropolis by the epithets "lofty," "windy," and

more forcibly still by “ beetling.” One site in the Trojan plain, and one only, satisfies this most essential condition. It is the hill at its southern edge called the Bali Dagh, above the village of Bundar- bashi. It has a height of about 400 feet, with sheer precipices descending on the south and south-west to the valley of the Scamander (Mendere), Remains found upon it—though it has never yet been thoroughly explored—

ae Alexandria Troas stood on the west coast at nearly its | show it to have been the site of an ancient city. Homer ok middle point, a little south of Tenedos. It was built by | describes two natural springs as rising a little to the

Antigonus, perhaps about 310 B.c., and was called by him Antigonia Troas. Early in the next century the name was changed by Lysimachus to Alexandria Troas, in honour of Alexander’s memory. As the chief port of north-west Asia Minor, the place prospered greatly in Roman times, and the existing remains sufficiently attest its former importance. The site is now covered with valonia oaks; but the circuit of the old walls can be traced, and in several places they are fairly well preserved. They had a circumference of about 6 English miles, and were

7 The name Assus probably means “ dwelling,” ‘‘town,” being con- nected with the Sanskrit vas, “to dwell,” which appears in the Greek astu, and also in the ending of such names as Mylasa and Larissa, where in Greek the s is alternatively single or double—an ending which, as Fligier has shown, is found in old town names from India to Dacia. Homer supplies an example in his “steep Pedasus ”

on the Satniois, and it has been suggested by Mr J. T. Clarke that Pedasus may have been identical in site with the later Assus.

north-west of Homeric Troy. A little to the north-west of Bundrbashi these springs still exist. “This pair of rivu- lets are the immutable mark of nature by which the height towering above is recognized as the citadel of Ilium” (E. Curtius).

The low mound of Hissarlik—the site of the Greek Rejec- Ilium—stands only 112 feet above the level of the open tion of To call it “beetling ” Hin

plain in which it is situated. (o¢pudecoa) would have been a travesty of poetical licence on which no poet could have ventured, and to describe it as “lofty” or “windy” would have been not less strange. There are no natural springs near it, such as Homer mentions. The folic settlers, having called the place Ilion, naturally persisted in maintaining its identity with Troy. Polemon, a native of the Greek Ilium, who lived about 200 z.c., declared that his fellow- townsmen could show the very stone on which Palamedes

By an- cient

. criticism ;

By modern.

fro 2 D

had given lessons in the game of draughts. The only other ancient writer who is known to have admitted the Ilian claim is Hellanicus of Lesbos (c. 482-397 B.c.), who, as Strabo remarks, wished “to gratify the Ilians, as is his wont.” Like the Ilians, Hellanicus was of Alolian origin ; and in compiling the local legends of various places he is known to have been wholly uncritical, merely repeating what was told to him as he had heard it. On the other hand, the claim of the Greek Ilium to stand on the site of Troy was decisively rejected by the general consent of those ancient writers who had any claim to critical authority. The orator Lycurgus (c. 332 B.c.) speaks of the site of Troy as desolate, and this at a moment when the recent visit of Alexander the Great to the Greek Ilium (334 B.c.) had drawn attention to the claim made by its inhabitants. Demetrius, a native of Scepsis in the Troad, who flourished about 160 B.c., wrote a book entitled Tpwikds Avaxoopos (“The Marshalling of the Trojans”), an exhaustive commentary on the catalogue of the Trojan forces in the second book of the Jliad. Demetrius knew the topography of the Troad as thoroughly as he knew the text of Homer. The extant notices of his work, which had a great reputation in antiquity, warrant the belief that he was not only learned but acute. In the Diacosmus, which was the chief work of his life, he must have bestowed much thought on the question as to the site of Homeric Troy,—the central point of his subject. He pronounced decidedly, as we know from Strabo, against the claim of the Greek Ilium. It has been suggested that Demetrius

rejected the Ilian claim because, as a native of Scepsis, he was jealous of Ilium,—a suggestion which is not only absurd in itself, since it assumes that such a motive would have induced Demetrius to mar his life's work, but also betrays ignorance of Strabo's text. Scepsis was not a possible claimant of the contested honour, since it was not in the plain of Troy but in the plain of Bairamitch ; and further, Demetrius had already provided in another manner for the Homeric dignity of Scepsis by making it the royal seat of Aineas on the strength of its position relatively to Lyrnessus. The verdict of Demetrius against the Ilian claim was also the general verdict of the other ancient writers consulted by Strabo, as the latter's language shows. From the passage in which Strabo notices the various definitions of the Troad (xiii. § 4) it appears that among such writers were the following historians and geographers :—Charon of Lamp- sacus (flor. 500 B.c.), Damastes of Sigeum (400 B.c.), Scylax of Caryanda (350 3.c.), Ephorus of Cyme (340 B.c.), Eudoxus of Cyzicus (130 B.c.). It is to such writers as these that Strabo refers when he indicates the general consent of his authorities. In favour of the claim of the Greek Ilium, on the other hand, there are only two literary witnesses, and these, as we have seen, are alike worthless. Equally valueless from a critical pot of view is the fact that the Ilian claim was sometimes allowed by soldiers or statesmen who wished to utilize Trojan memories. They required an official Troy, and they cared not where they found 'it. Nothing could more curiously illustrate the extreme poverty of the case for the Greek Ilium than the fact that some of its advocates have been reduced to arguing as if Alexander and Lucius Scipio, when they led their armies through the Troad, had been conducting archeological excursions, and as if their acquiescence in a convenient local myth had the weight of independent critical testimonies.

In negativing the Ilian claim the conclusion of ancient criticism has been confirmed by a great preponderance of modern opinion. Since Lechevalier visited the Troad in 1785-86 an overwhelming majority of competent judges have favoured his belief that the Bali Dagh above Bunar-

bashi was the Pergamus of the Homeric poet's conception. Before Leake's visit this opinion had been expressed by Choiseul-Gouffier, Morritt,

Hawkins, Gell, and Hamilton. Leake spoke with a decision which derives additional weight from the habitual sobriety of his acute judgment, and from the care with which, in this case, he had ex- amined the alleged objections to the view which he finally adopted. He remarks that no one accustomed to observe the sites of ancient Greek towns could fail to fix on Bunar- bashi ‘‘for the site of the chief place of the surrounding country.” So Mr Tozer, in his Highlands of Turkey, says: “‘ A person accustomed to observe the situation of Hellenic cities would at once fix on this as far more likely to have recommended itself to the old inhabitants of the country than any other in the neighbourhood.” Count von Moltke has expressed the same opinion, that ‘he knew no other site in the Trojan plain for a chief town of ancient time.” Another supporter of Bundrbashi is Forchhammer. Another is Kiepert. The opinion of Ernst Curtius has been already cited. But space precludes more names; it is enough to say that the correspondence of the Bali Dagh with the Homeric Pergamus—a correspondence absolutely unique in the Trojan plain—has been recognized with virtual una- nimity by modern travellers who have patiently inspected the scenery of the Jdiad, having competent knowledge, and being free from bias in favour of a theory formed before their visit. Partial excavations on the summit of the Bali Dagh have been more than once undertaken, with the result of discovering ancient walls. Pottery, too, has been found there, part of which is allowed on all hands to be probably as old, at least, as 900 B.c. But the Bali Dagh has never yet been explored with any approach to thoroughness.

The result of the excavations conducted by Dr Schlie- The re- mann on the mound of Hissarlik has been to lay bare mains at

the remains of the Greek Ilium, and also, below these, some prehistoric remains of a rude and poor kind. In Troy, his first book on the subject, the explorer held that the remains of the Greek Ilium ceased at a depth of 6 feet below the surface, and that all the other remains, down to 524 feet, were prehistoric. He distinguished the latter into five groups, representing five prehistoric “cities” which had succeeded each other on the site; and in his second work, Jlios, he added to these a sixth prehistoric city, on the strength of some scanty vestiges of supposed Lydian workmanship, found at a depth of 64 feet. In both books, Homeric Troy was identified with the third prehistoric city from the bottom, which was supposed to have been

destroyed, though not totally, by fire. Professor Jebb was the first to show (1) that the lines of demarcation between the alleged prehistoric strata, as drawn in Llios, could not be accurate, and (2) that, if any part of the prehistoric remains could be supposed to represent Homeric Troy, it must be that part which Dr Schliemann had called the second city from the bottom, and the destruction of which by fire appeared to have been total. In 1882 the architects employed by Dr Schliemann proved that the stratification given in Jlios had in fact been incorrect. The errors, too, affected precisely that region of the deposit which was most important to the Trojan hypothesis, viz., the lower strata. In Dr Schliemann's third volume, 7'roja, these errors were admitted ; and Troy was now identified, no longer with the third city, but with the second, of which the supposed area was now enlarged. Another fact to which the English critic had drawn attention was that the remains of the Greek Ilium must extend to a considerably greater depth than 6 feet below the surface. Further examination confirmed this view also. It showed that the remains on the mound at Hissarlik belong to the following periods or groups. (1) At the top, the remains of the Greek Ilium as it existed in the Roman age, 7.e., as rebuilt

082

after its destruction by Fimbria in 85 B.c. (2) A city which, like the former, extended beyond the mound of Hissarlik (its acropolis) over the adjacent plain. This corresponds with the Greek Ilium of the Macedonian age, as embellished and enlarged by Lysimachus, c. 300 B.c. (3) A smaller city, probably confined to the mound. Here we may recognize the Greek [lium as it existed before the Macedonian age. It was a small and poor place, as appears from the known incidents of its history in the 5th and 4th centuries B.C., owing its chief importance to the shrine of Athene Ilias. (4) A petty town or village, confined to the mound, and poorly built. The evidence of architecture fails to decide whether it was Hellenic or not; if Hellenic, it might represent the primitive settlement of the Holic colonists, perhaps c. 700 B.c. It was a small house in this village that Dr Schliemann at first identified with Priam's palace. The ground-plan shows four rooms, of which the largest measured 24 feet 4 inches by 12 feet. (5) A large town, to which the mound was only acropolis, and which extended to some distance south and south-east over the plain. These remains are unquestionably

prehistoric. (6) A few remains of a small settlement which, if indeed distinct from No. 5, preceded it. The reason for distinguishing 6 from 5 is that some of the acropolis buildings of 5 are above those of 6, and seem to have been built on carefully levelled ground. Apart from architectural evidence, objects found in the excavations prove that the remains of the historical age extend much below 6 feet. One of these was a terra-cotta disk, stamped with the head of a warrior, in an advanced style of workmanship, found at 26 feet 3 inches below the surface (Z'roy, p. 294). Another is a terra- cotta ball, found at 26 feet, which cannot be older than c. 360 B.c. Then, at 20 feet, was found another terra-cotta, marked with the Greek letter P, A piece of ivory, belong- ing to a seven-stringed lyre, and therefore not older than c. 660 B.c., was found at 26 feet. Thus we have at His- sarlik the remains of the Greek Ilium in three successive phases,—Roman, Macedonian, and Aiolic, and below these the remains of at least one prehistoric settlement, the age and origin of which are unknown. Their re- We can no longer either prove or disprove that these lation to prehistoric remains are those of a town which was once Homer. taken after a siege, and which originally gave rise to the legend of Troy. But most certainly it is not the "lofty " Troy of which the Homeric poet was thinking when he embodied the legend in the Iviad. The conception of Troy which dominates the Iliad is based on the site at Bunarbashi, and suits no other. The sole phrase in the epic which favours Hissarlik occurs in book xx. (216 sq.), where Dardania is said to have been built on the spurs of Ida, when Ilios "had not yet been built in the plain"; and this phrase occurs in a passage which, as the best recent critics agree, is one of the latest interpolations in the Jliad, having been composed after the Greek Ilium had actually arisen "'in the plain." Its purpose was the same as that which appears in the Hymn to Aphrodite, viz., to glorify reputed descendants of Aineas, and it probably belongs to the same age, the 7th century B.c. The tactical data of the Lliad —those derived from the incidents of the war—can- not be treated with such rigour as if the poem were a military history. But Nikolaides has shown that they can at least be brought into general agreement with the site at Bunarbashi, while they are hopelessly incompatible with Homeric Hissarlik, The Jliad makes it clear that the general

ne description of the Trojan plain was founded on accurate Troy. knowledge. At this day all the essential Homeric features

can be recognized. And it is probable that the poet who created the Troy of the Jliad knew, personally or by description, a strong town on the Bali Dagh above Bunar- bashi. The legend of the siege may or may not have

arisen from an older town at Hissarlik, which had then disappeared. The poet might naturally place his Troy in a position like that of the existing strong city on the Bali Dagh, giving it a “ beetling” acropolis and handsome buildings, while he also reproduced the general course of the rivers and that striking feature,—an indelible mark of the locality,—the natural springs at the foot of the hill, just beyond the city gates on the north-west. But, while he thus imagined his Troy in the general likeness of the town on the Bali Dagh, he would retain the privilege of a poet who was adorning an ancient legend, and whose theme was a city that had long ago vanished. Instead of feeling bound to observe a rigorous accuracy of local detail, he would rather feel impelled to avoid it; he would use his liberty to introduce some traits borrowed from other scenes known to him, or even from imagination. To this extent, and in this sense, his topography would be eclectic. Such a consideration might suffice to explain the fact, well known to those who have studied this question on the spot, that neither Bundrbashi nor any other one site can be harmonized with every detail of the poem. The re-commendations of Bundrbashi are, first, that it satisfies the capital and essential conditions, while no other site does so, and secondly, that the particular difficulties which it leaves unsolved are relatively slight and few. This character of Homeric topography becomes still easier to understand, if, as most critics would now concede, our Iliad contains work of various hands and ages. Few questions, perhaps, of equal literary interest have been so much confused by inattention to the first conditions of the problem. The tale of Troy, as the Iliad gives it, is essentially a poetical creation; and we have no evidence other than the Ldiad. That is, our sole data are (1) of the mythical class, (2) of inadequate precision, and (3) of un- certain origin. But they show a general knowledge of the ground ; and the question is how far particular features of the ground can be recognized in the poem. It may be doubted whether the case admits of any solution more definite than that which has been indicated above.

Bibliography.—1. Works dealing with the Troad generally,— Strabo, bk. xiii. ch. 1, is the principal source for the ancient Troad. Of books by modern travellers in Asia Minor the following may be mentioned :—Philip Barker Webb, in the Italian Biblioteca Acerbi, June and July, 1821, whose studies are better known through the French edition, Topographie de la Troade, 1844; W. M. Leake, Journal of a Tour in Asia Minor, London, 1824; P. de Tchihatchef, Asie Minewre, &c., Paris, 1853-69; R. Virchow, '*Beitrage zur Landeskunde der Troas," in Zrans. of Berlin Acad., 1879; H. F. Tozer, The Highlands of Turkey, 1869; H. Schliemann, Reise der Troas in Mai, 1881; Joseph T. Clarke, Report on the Investigations at Assos, Boston, U.S.A., and London, 1882, including "Notes on the Geology and Topography of the Troad" by J. S. Diller, and on '' Bunarbashi," &c., by W. C. Lawton and C. H. Walker. J. T. Clarke's '' Notes on Greek Shores," in the Report of the Archeo- logical Institute of America for 1880, are also valuable.

2. For the question as to the site of Troy, see — Lechevailier, Voyage de la Troade, Paris, 1802; Gustave D'Eichthal, Le Site de Lrotie selon Leehevatier, &c., Paris, 1875; H. Schliemann's roy (1875), Zdios (1880), Trroja (1884), which contain many good plans and illustrations ; E. Brentano, Zur Lésung der troianischen Frage, Heilbronn, 1881, and Zrota und Neu-Ilion, ibid., 1882; R.C. Jebb, "Schliemann's Ilios," in Edinb. Rev., No. ccexiv., April, 1881; Id., '' Homeric and Hellenic Llinm," in Journ. of Hellenie Studies, vol. ii, pp. 7-43, 1881; Id., 'The Ruins at Hissarlik," béd., iii. 185-217, 1882; Id., "Homeric Troy," in Fortnightly Review, April, 1884 ; G. Nikolaides, 'I\iddos Zrparnyicy Acacxev}, Athens, 1883; P. W. Forchhammer, Erklérung der llias, auf Grund der in der beigege- benen Original-Karte von Spratt and Forehhammer dargestellten topischen und physischen Eigenthiimlichkeiten der Troisehen Ebene, Kiel, 1884; and W. J. Stillman, '' Les Découvertes de Schliemann," in the journal L'Homme, Paris, October, 1884. (R. C. J.)

LEGEND oF TRoy.

According to Greek legend, the oldest town in the Troad was that founded by Teucer, who was a son of the river Scamander and the nymph Idea. 'Tzetzes says

that the Scamander in question was the Scamander in Crete, and that Teucer was told by an oracle to settle wherever the "'earth-born ones" attacked him. So when he and his company were attacked in the Troad by mice, which gnawed their bow-strings and the handles of their shields, he settled on the spot, thinking that the oracle was fulfilled. He called the town Sminthium and built a temple to Apollo Sminthius, the Cretan word for a mouse being sminthius. In his reign Dardanus, son of Zeus and the nymph Electra, daughter of Atlas, in con- sequence of a deluge, drifted from the island of Samo- thrace on a raft or a skin bag to the coast of the Troad, where, having received a portion of land from Teucer and married his daughter Batea, he founded the city of Dardania or Dardanus on high ground at the foot of Mount Ida. On the death of Teucer, Dardanus succeeded to the kingdom and called the whole land Dardania after himself. He begat Erichthonius, who begat a son Tros by Astyoche, daughter of Simois. On succeeding to the throne, Tros called the country Troy and the people Trojans. By Callirrhoe, daughter of Scamander, he had three sons,—TIlus, Assaracus, and Ganymede. From Ilus and Assaracus sprang two separate lines of the royal house,—the one being Ilus, Laomedon, Priam, Hector; the other Assaracus, Capys, Anchises, Aineas. [lus went to Phrygia, where, being victorious in wrestling, he received as a prize from the king of Phrygia a spotted cow, with an injunction to follow her and found a city wherever she lay down. The cow lay down on the hill of the Phrygian Até; and here accordingly Ilus founded the city of Ilios. It is stated that Dardania, Troy, and Ilios became one city. Desiring a sign at the foundation of Ilios, Ilus prayed to Zeus and as an answer he found lying before his tent the Palladium, a wooden statue of Pallas, three cubits high, with her feet joined, a spear in her right hand, and a distaff and spindle in her left. Ilus built a temple for the image and wor- shipped it. By Eurydice, daughter of Adrastus, he had a son Laomedon. Laomedon married Strymo, daughter of Scamander, or Placia, daughter of Atreus or of Leucippus. It was in his reign that Poseidon and Apollo, or Poseidon alone, built the walls of Troy. In his reign also Hercules besieged and took the city, slaying Laomedon and his children, except one daughter Hesione and one son Pod- arces. The life of Podarces was granted at the request of Hesione; but Hercules stipulated that Podarces must first be a slave and then be redeemed by Hesione; she gave her veil for him; hence his name of Priam (from priasthat to buy). Priam married first Arisbe and after- wards Hecuba and had fifty sons and

twelve daughters. Among the sons were Hector and Paris, and among the daughters Polyxena and Cassandra. To recover Helen, whom Paris carried off from Sparta, the Greeks under Agamemnon besieged Troy for ten years. (See ACHILLEs, Agamemnon, Agax, Hector, HELEN, Paris.) At last they contrived a wooden horse, in whose hollow belly many of the Greek heroes hid themselves. Their army and fleet then withdrew to Tenedos, feigning to have raised the siege. The Trojans conveyed the wooden horse into Troy ; in the night the Greeks stole out, opened the gates to their returning friends, and Troy was taken.

See Homer, JU., vii. 452 sq., xx. 215 sq., xxi. 446 sg. ; Apollo- dorus, ii. 6, 4, iii. 12 ; Diodorus, iv. 75, v. 48; Tzetzes, Sehol. on Lyeophron, 29, 72, 13802 ; Conon, Narrat., 21; Dionysius Halicarn., Antig. Rom.,i. 68 sg. The Iliad deals with a period of fifty-one days in the tenth year of the war. For the wooden horse, see Homer, Od., iv. 271 sq.; Virgil, 4n., ii. 13 sq.

TROGLODYTES (rpwyAodira:), a Greek word mean- ing '"cave-dwellers." Caves have been widely used as human habitations both in prehistoric and in historic times (see Cave), and ancient writers speak of Troglodytes in various parts of the world, as in Moesia near the lower

583

Danube (Strabo, vii. 5, p. 318), in the Caucasus (Id., xi. 5, p- 506), but especially in various parts of Africa from Libya (Id., xvii. 3, p. 828) to the Red Sea. Herodotus (iv. 183) tells of a race of Troglodyte Ethiopians in inner Africa, very swift of foot, living on lizards and creeping things, and with a speech like the screech of an owl. The Garamantes hunted them for slaves. It has been supposed that these Troglodytes may be Tibbus, who still in part are cave-dwellers. Aristotle also (//tst. An., vii. 12) speaks of a dwarfish race of Troglodytes on the upper course of the Nile, who possessed horses and were in his opinion the Pyg- mies of fable. But the best known of these African cave- dwellers were the inhabitants of the "Troglodyte country" on the coast of the Red Sea, who reached as far north as the Greek port of Berenice, and of whose strange and sav- age customs an interesting account has been preserved by Diodorus and Photius from Agatharchides.1_ They were a pastoral people, living entirely on the flesh of their herds, or, in the season of fresh pasture, on mingled milk and blood.

But they killed only old or sick cattle (as indeed they killed old men who could no longer follow the flock), and the butchers were called “unclean”; nay, they gave the name of parent to no man, but only to the cattle of which they had their subsistence. This last point seems to be a confused indication of totemism. They went almost naked; the women wore necklaces of shells as amulets. Marriage was unknown, except among the chiefs, —a fact which agrees with the prevalence of female kin- ship in these regions in much later times. They practised circumcision or a mutilation of a more serious kind. The whole account, much of which must be here passed by, is one of the most curious pictures of savage life in ancient literature.

The Biblical Horim, who inhabited Mount Seir before the Edom- ites, bore a name which means cave-dwellers, and may probably have been a kindred people to the Troglodytes on the other side of the Red Sea. Jerome, on Obadiah 5, speaks of this region as con- taining many cave-dwellings, and such habitations are still some- times used on the borders of the Syro-Arabian desert.

TROGON, a word apparently first used as English? by Shaw (Mus. Leverianum, p. 177) in 1792, and now for many years accepted as the general name of certain birds forming the Family Zrogonidx of modern ornithology, the species Trogon curucur of Linneeus being its type. But, since doubts exist as to whether this is that which was subsequently called by Vieillot 7. collaris or the 7. melan- urus of Swainson, though evidence is in favour of the former (cf. Cabanis, Mus. Heineanum, iv. p.177, and Finsch, Proc. Zool. Society, 1870, p. 559), several recent writers have dropped the Linnean specific term.

The Trogons are birds of modcrate size: the smallest is hardly bigger than a Thrush and the largest less bulky than a Crow. In inost of them the bill is very wide at the gape, which is invariably beset by recurved bristles. They seize most of their food, whether caterpillars or fruits, on the wing, though their alar power is not exceptionally great, their flight being described as short, rapid, and spasmodic. Their feet are weak and of a unique structure, the second toe, which in most birds is the inner anterior onc, being re- verted, and thus the Trogons stand alone, since in all other birds that have two toes before and two behind it is the outer toe that is turned backward.

The plumage is very remarkable and charac- teristic. There is not a species which has not beauty beyond most birds, and the glory of the group culminates in the QUEZAL (q.¥.). But in others golden green and steely blue, rich crimson ? and tender

1 See also Artemidorus in Strabo, xvi. 17, p. 785 sg.

2 Trogonem (the oblique case) occurs in Pliny (H. N., x. 16) as the name of a bird of which he knew nothing, save that it was mentioned by Hylas, an augur, whose work is lost ; but some would read Trygonem (Turtle-Dove). In 1752 Méhring (4v. Genera, p. 85) applied the name to the ‘‘Curucui’”’ (pronounced ‘‘Suruqua”’ jide Bates, Nat. Amazons, i. p. 254) of Marcgrave (Hist. Nat. Brasilix, p. 211), who described and figured it in 1648 recognizably. In 1760 Brisson (Ornithologie, iv. p. 164) adopted Trogon as a generic term, and, Lin- neus having followed his example, it has since been universally accepted.

3M. Anatole Bogdanoff determined the red pigment of the feathers

pink, yellow varying from primrose to amber, vie with one another in vivid coloration, or contrasted, as happens in many species, with awarm tawny or asombre slaty grey—to say nothing of the delicate freckling of black and white, as minute as the markings of a moth’s wing—the whole set off by bands of white, produeing an effect hardly equalled in any group. It is impossible within brief space to describe its glowing tints ; but the plumage is further remarkable for the large size of its contour-feathers, whieh are extremely soft and so loosely scated as to come off in scores at a touch, and there is no down. The tail is generally a very characteristic feature, the rectrices, though in some cases pointed, being often curiously squared at the tip, and when this is the case they are usually barred ladder- like with white and black.! According to Gould, they are larger and more pointed in the young than in the old, and grow squarer and have the white bands narrower at each succeeding moult. He also asserts that in the speeies which have the wing-coverts freckled, the freckling becomes finer with age. So far as has been observed, the nidification of these birds is in holes of trees, wherein

are laid without any bedding two roundish eggs, generally white, but certainly in one species (Quezal) tinted with bluish green.

The Trogons form a very well-marked Family, belonging to the multifarious group treated in the present series of articles as Picariz; but, instead of being (so far as is known) like all the rest of them and, as Prof. Huxley believed, " desmognathous," they have been shown by W. A. Forbes (Proc. Zool. Society, 1881, p. 886) to be "schizognathous "—thus demonstrating, in the words of the latter, "'that the structure of the palate has not that unique and peculiar significance that has been claimed for it in the classification of birds." Perhaps the explanation of this anomaly may lie in the fact that the Trogons are a very old form. The remains of one, 7. gallicus, have been recognized by Prof. A. Milne-Edwards (Ois. foss. de la France, ii. p. 895, pl. 177, figs. 18-22) from the Miocene of the Allier, and it may not be too much to suppose that the schizognathous structure was more ancient than the desmognathous. Again too this fortunate discovery of that emincnt paleontologist seems to account for the remarkable distribution of the Trogons at the present day. While they chiefly abound, and have developed their climax of magnificence, in the tropical parts of the New World, they yet occur in the tropical parts of the Old. The species now inhabiting Africa, forming the group Hapaloderma, can hardly be separated gencrically from those of the Neotropical Trogon, and the difference between the Asiatic forms, if somewhat greater, is still comparatively slight. It is plain then that the Trogons are an exceptionally persistent type ; indeed in the whole Class few similar instances occur and perhaps none that can be called parallel. The extreme development of the type in the New World just noticed also furnishes another hint. While in some of the American Trogons (Pharomacrus, for instance) the plumage of the females is not very much less beautiful than that of the males, there are others in which the hen birds retain what may be fairly deemed a more ancient livery, while the cocks flaunt in brilliant attire. Now the plumage of both sexes in all but one? of the Asiatic Trogons, Harpactes, resembles rather that of the young and of those females of the American species which are modestly clothed. The inference from this fact would seem to be that the general coloration of the Trogons prior to the establishment, by geographical estrangement, of the two types was a russet similar to that now worn by the adults of both sexes in the Indian region, and by a portion only of the females in the

Neotropical. The Ethiopian type, as already said, very closely agrees with the American, aud therefore would be likely to have been longer in connexion therewith. Again, while the adults of most of the American Trogons (Pharomacrus and Luptilotis excepted) have the edges of the bill serrated, their young have them smooth or only with a single notch on either side near the tip, and this is observable in the Asiatic Trogons at all ages. At the same time the most distinctive features of the whole group, which are easily taken in at a glance, but are difficult to express briefly in words, are equally possessed by both branches of the Family, showing that they were in all likelihood—for the possibility that the peculiarities may have been evolved apart is not to be over- looked—reached before the geographical sundering of these branches (whereby they arc now placed on opposite sides of the globe) was effected.

It remains to say that about sixty species of Trogons are recognized, which Gould in the second edition of his Monograph of the Family (1875) divides into seven genera ; but their characters are hardly laid down. Pharomacrus,

Euptilotis, and Trogon inhabit the mainland of tropical

of Pharomacrus auriceps to be a substance which he ealled “zooxan- thine” (Comptes Rendus, 2d November 1857, xlv. p. 690).

1 In the Trogon of Cuba, Prionotelus, they are most curiously seooped out, as it were, at the extremity, and the lateral pointed ends diverge in a way almost unique among birds.

. Or two speeies if H. macloti be more than a local form of H. remnwardti,

| sums).

America, no species passing to the northward of the Rio Grande nor southward of the forest district of Brazil, while none occur on the west coast of Peru or Chili. Prionotelus and Tmetotrogon, each with one species, are peculiar respectively to Cuba and Hispaniola. The African form /lapaloderma has two species, one found only on the west coast, the other of more general range. The Asiatic Trogons, L/arpactes (with eleven species according to the same authority), occur from Nepal to Malacca, in Ceylon, and in Sumatra, Java, and Borneo, while one species is peculiar to some of the Philippine Islands. (A. N.)

TROGUS, Cy. Pompgius, a Roman historian, nearly contemporary with Livy. Although the epitome of his historical writings by Justin, and a few fragments, are all that have come down to us, there is abundant reason to believe that he deserves a place in the history of Roman literature by the side of Sallust, Livy, and Tacitus. Of his life little is known. He was almost certainly of Greek descent. His grandfather served with Pompey in the war against Sertorius, and received through the influence of that general the Roman citizenship; hence the name Pompeius, which was adopted as a token of gratitude to the benefactor. The father of Trogus was an officer of Cesar. Trogus himself seems to have been a man of encyclopedic knowledge. He wrote, after Aristotle and Theophrastus, books on the natural history of animals and plants, used by the elder Pliny, who calls Trogus ‘one of the most precise among authorities” (auctor ipse e severis- But the principal work of Trogus consisted of forty-four Libri Historiarum

Philippicarum. This was a great history of the world, or rather of those portions of it which came under the sway of Alexander and his successors. The tale began with Ninus, the founder of Nineveh, and ceased at about the same point as Livy's great work, viz.,9 a.D. The last event recorded by the epitomator JusTIN (q.v.) is the recovery of the Roman standards captured by the Parthians (20 3.c.). The history of Rome was treated as merely subsidiary to that of Greece and the East. The work was based upon the writings of Greek historians, such as Theopompus, Ephorus, Timeus, Polybius. It has been contended that Trogus did not gather together the information from the leading Greek historians for himself, but that it was already combined into a single book by some Greek, whom Trogus followed closely with some superficial errors. But the assumption appears improbable in itself, merely on a review of the remains of the historical writings, and is moreover incon- sistent with what we know of the works in natural history, for which Trogus certainly went back to what were re-garded in his time as first-hand authorities. It is generally admitted that Trogus had genuine qualifications for writing history, though he could not rid himself entirely of the faults of his authorities. His idea of history was more severe and less rhetorical than that followed by Sallust and Livy, whom he blamed for putting elaborate speeches in the mouths of the characters of whom they wrote. Yet his own Latin style had a vivid force which is still to be recognized in the extracts made by Justin. For the ancient history of the East, Trogus, even in the present mutilated state of his historical work, often proves to be an authority of great importance.

The chief modern editions are those of Gronovius (Leyden, 1719 and 1760); Frotscher (Leipsic, 1827-30); and Jeep (Leipsic, 1859 and 1862). In Engelmann's Bibliotheca Scriptorum Classicorwm, ii., under Justin and Trogus, will be found a large number of references to scattered modern articles. Perhaps the most important is that of A. v. Gutschmid on the sources of the history of Trogus, in the ce supplementary vol. of the Jahrbb..f. class, Philol. (Leipsic,

TROITSK, a district town of Russia, in the government of Orenburg, situated in a fertile steppe 392 miles to the

north-east of Orenburg, on the Siberian highway, is one of those towns which have grown rapidly of late in the south-east of Russia. The Troitskiy fort, erected in 1743, became a centre for the exchange trade with the Kirghiz steppe and Turkestan, and in that trade Troitsk is now second only to Orenburg. Cotton, silk, and especially horses and cattle are imported, while leather, cotton, and woollen and metal wares are exported. An active trade in corn for the Ural gold-mines is carried on, The popu- lation in 1884 was 13,000.

TROLLOPE, Anruony (1815-1882), English novelist, was born in Keppel Street, Russell Square, London, accord- ing to most authorities, on 24th April 1815; in his own Autobiography he merely gives the year. His father, a barrister, who had been fellow of New College, Oxford, brought himself and his family into the sorest straits by unbusiness-like habits, by quarrelling with his profession, or at least with the attorneys, and by injudicious specu- lations, especially in farming. ‘Trollope’s mother, Frances Milton, according to her son, was nearly thirty when she married in 1809. By her husband’s wish she made a strange journey to America in 1827, for the purpose of setting up a kind of fancy shop in Cincinnati, which failed utterly. Her visit, however, furnished her with the means of writing Zhe Domestic Manners of the Americans. This at once brought her in a considerable sum, and thence- forward she continued to be the mainstay of her family. Her husband being obliged at last actually to fly the country from his creditors, his wife maintained him by her pen, at Bruges, till his death there in 1835. For some time Mrs Trollope wrote chiefly travels ; but she soon be- came known as a novelist, and was very industrious. Her novels, the best of which are probably The Vicar of Wrea- hill and The Widow Barnaby, are now rarely read, and indeed were never at their best above good circulating library level: they are written with cleverness indeed, and a certain amount of observation, but with many faults of taste, and with an almost total want of artistic complete- ness and form. Her late beginning, her industrious career (for she wrote steadily for more than thirty years, till her death in October 1863, at Florence), and the entire absence in her of any blue-stocking or femme-savante weakness would have made her remarkable, even if she had not transmitted, as she undoubtedly did transmit, her talent, much increased, to her children.

Anthony Trollope was the third son. By his own account few English men of letters have had an unhappier childhood and youth. He puts down his own misfortunes, at Harrow, at Winchester, at Harrow again, and elsewhere, to his father's pecuniary circumstances, which made his own appearance dirty and shabby, and subjected him to various humiliations. But it is permissible to suspect that this was not quite the truth, and that some peculiarities of temper, of which in after life he had many, contributed to his unpopularity. At any rate he seems to have reached the verge of manhood as ignorant as if he had had no edu- cation at all. While living abroad he tried ushership ; but at the age of nineteen he was pitchforked by favour (for he could not pass even the ridiculous examination then usual) into the post-office. Even then his troubles were not over. He got into debt; he got into ridiculous entanglements of love affairs, which he has very candidly avowed ; he was in constant hot water with the authori- ties ; and he seems to have kept some very queer company, which long afterwards stood him in stead as models for some of his novel pictures. At last in August 1841 he obtained the appointment of clerk to one of the post-office surveyors in a remote part of Ireland, with a very small nominal salary. This salary, however, was practically quadrupled by allowances ; living was cheap ; and the life

suited Trollope exactly, being not office work, which he always hated, but a kind of travelling inspectorship. And here he not only began that habit of hunting which (after a manner hardly possible in the stricter conditions of official work nowadays) he kept up for many years even in England, but within three years of his appointment engaged himself to Miss Rose Heseltine, whom he had met in Ireland but who was of English birth. They were married in June 1844, His headquarters had previously been at Banagher ; he was now transferred to Clonmel. Trollope had always dreamt of novel-writing, and his Irish experiences seemed to supply him with promising subjects. With some assistance from his mother he got his first two books, Zhe Macdermots of Ballycloran and The Kellys and the O'Kellys, published, the one in 1847, the other the next year. But neither was in the least a. success, though the second perhaps deserved to be; and a third, Za Vendée, which followed in 1850, besides being a much worse

book than either, was an equal failure. Trollope made various other literary attempts, but for a time ill fortune attended all of them. Meanwhile he was set on a new kind of post-office work, which suited him even better than his former employment—a sort of roving commission to inspect rural post deliveries and devise their extension, first in Ireland, then throughout the west of England and South Wales. That he did good work is undeniable ; but his curious conception of official

~~duty (on his discharge of which he prided himself im~~

mensely) is exhibited by his confessions that he “got his hunting out of it,” and that he felt “the necessity of travelling miles enough [he was paid by mileage] to keep his horses.” It was during this work that he struck the vein which gave him fortune and fame—which might per- haps have given him more fame and not much less fortune if he had not worked it so hard—by conceiving The Warden. This was published in 1855. It brought him little immediate profit, nor was even Barchester Towers, which followed, very profitable, though it contains his fresh- est, his most original, and, with the exception of The Last Chronicle of Barset, his best work. The two made hima reputation, however, and in 1858 he was able for the first time to sell a novel, The Three Clerks, for a substantial sum, £250. A journey on post-office business to the West Indies gave him material for a book of travel, The West Indies and the Spanish Main, which he frankly and quite truly acknowledges to be much better than some subse- quent work of his in the same kind. From this time his production (mainly of novels) was incessant, and the sums which he received were very large, amounting in one case to as much as £3525 fora single book, and to nearly £70,000 in the twenty years between 1859 and 1879. All these particulars are given with great minuteness by himself, and are characteristic. The full high tide of his fortunes began when the Cornhill Magazine was established in the autumn of 1859. He was asked at short notice to write a novel, and wrote Framley Parsonage, which was extremely popular; two novels immediately preceding it, The Ber- trams and Castle Richmond, had been much less successful.

As it will be possible to notice few of his subsequent works in detail, the list of them, a sufficiently astonishing one, may be given here :— Tales of All

Cowntries (3 series, 1861-1870); Orley Farm, North America (1862); Rachael Ray (1863); The Small House at Allington, Can You Forgive Her? (1864); Miss Mackenzie (1865) ; The Claverings, Nina Balatka, The Last Chronicle of Barset (1867); Linda Tressel (1868); Phineas Finn, He Knew He Was Right (1869); Brown, Jones, and Robinson, The Vicar of Bullhampton, An Editor's Tales, Cxsar (1870); Sir Harry Hotspur of Humblethwaite, Ralph the Heir (1871); The Golden Lion of Granpere (1872) ; The Eustace Diamonds, Australiaand New Zealand (1873); Phineas Redux, Harry Heathcote of Gangotl, Lady Anna (1874); The Way We Live Now (1875) ; The Prime Minister (1876) ; The American Senator (1877); Is He Popenjoy ? South Africa (1878) ; John Caldigate, An Eye for

an Hye, Cousin Henry, Thackeray (1879); The Duke's Children, Cicero (1880); Ayala's Angel, Dr Wortle's School (1881); Frau Frohmann, Lord Palmerston, The Fixed Period, Kept in the Dark, Marion Fay (1882); Mr Searborough's Family, The Land Leaguers (1883) ; and An Old Man's Love (1884).

How this enormous total was achieved in spite of official work (of which, lightly as he took it, he did a good deal, and which he did not give up for many years), of hunting three times a week in the season, of whist-playing, of not a little going into general society, he has explained with his usual curious minuteness. He reduced novel-writing to the conditions of regular mechanical work—so much so that latterly he turned out so many words in a quarter of an hour, and wrote at this rate so many hours a day. He divided every book beforehand into so many days' work and checked off the tallies as he wrote.

A life thus spent could not be very eventful, and its events may be summed up rapidly. In 1858 he went to Egypt also on post-office business, and at the end of 1859 he got himself transferred from Ireland to the eastern dis- trict of England. Here he took a house at Waltham. He took an active part in the establishment of Zhe Jort- nightly Review in 1865; he was editor of St Paul's for some time after 1867; and at the end of that year he resigned his

position in the post-office. He stood for Beverley and was defeated; he received from his old department special missions to America and elsewhere (he had already gone to America in the midst of the Civil War). He went to Australia in 1871, and before going broke up his household at Waltham. When he returned he established himself in London, and lived there till 1880, when he removed to Harting on the confines of Sussex and Hampshire. He had visited South Africa in 1877 and travelled elsewhere. On 3rd November 1882 he was seized with paralysis, and died on 6th December.

Of Trollope's personal character it is not necessary to say much. Strange as his conception of official duty may seem, it was evidently quite honest and sincere, and, though he is said to have been as an official popular neither with superiors nor inferiors, he no doubt did much good work. Privately he was much liked and much dis- liked,—a great deal of real kindness being accompanied by a blus- tering and overbearing manner, and an egotism, not perhaps more deep than other men's, but more vociferous. His literary work needs more notice. Nothing of it but the novels is remarkable for merit. His Cesar and the Cicero are curious examples of a man's under- taking work for which he was not in the least fitted. Thackeray exhibits (though Trollope appears to have both admired Thackeray as an artist and liked him as a man) grave faults of taste and judg- ment and a complete lack of real criticism. The books of travel are not good, and of a kind not good. Nina Balatka and Linda Tressel, published anonymously and as experiments in the romantic style, have been better thought of by the author and by some competent judges than by the public or the publishers. Brown, Jones, and fobinson was still more disliked, and is certainly very bad as a whole, but has touches of curious originality in parts. The rest of the novels have been judged very differently by different persons. There is no doubt that their enormous volume prejudiced readers against them even long before the author let the public into the secret of their manufacture, which has made the prejudice deeper. There is also no doubt that Trollope seldom or never creates a character of the first merit (Mr Crawley in the Last Chroniele of Barset is the one possible exception), and that not one of his books can be called a work of genius. At the same time no one probably has produced anything like such a volume of anything like such merit. He claims for himself that his characters are always more or less alive, and they are. After

his first failures he never pro- duced anything that was not a faithful and sometimes a very aniusing transcript of the sayings and doings of possible men and wonien. His characters are never marionettes, much less sticks. He has some irritating mannerisms, notably a trick of repetition of the same form of words. He is sometimes absolutely vulgar, — that is to say, he does not deal with low life, but shows, though always robust and pure in morality, a certain coarseness of taste. He is constantly rather trivial, and perhaps nowhere out of the Barset series (which, however, is of itself no inconsiderable work) has he produced books that will live. The very faithfulness of his representation of a certain phase of thought, of cultivation, of society, uninformed as it is by any higher spirit, in the long run damaged, as it had first helped, the popularity of his work. But,

allowing for all this, it may and must still be said that he held up his mirror steadily to nature, and that the mirror itself was fashioned with no inconsiderable art. (G. SA.)

TROMBONE, a musical instrument of brass. It has a cupped mouthpiece, and is formed of two principal parts ——the bell, the bore of which gradually widens, and the slide, which is composed of two cylindrical tubes parallel to each other, upon which two other tubes, communicating at their lower extremities by a pipe curved in a half-circle, glide without loss of air. The mouthpiece is adapted to one of the upper ends of the slide and the bell to the other end. When the slide, which is moved by the right hand, is closed, the instrument is at its highest pitch ; the note is lowered in proportion as the column of air is lengthened by drawing out the slide.

Formerly the trombone was known as the sackbut; its modern designation —great trumpet—comes from the Italian. The Germans call it posaune. It is difficult to say where or at what epoch the instrument was invented. In a manuscript of the 9th century, preserved at Boulogne, there is a drawing of an instrument which bears a great resemblance to a trombone deprived of its bell. Virdung! says little about the trombone, but he gives an engraved representation of it, under the name of busawn, which shows that early in the 16th century it was almost the same as that employed in our day. By that time the trombone had come into vogue in England: the band of musicians

in the service of Henry VIII. included ten sack- but players, and under Elizabeth, in 1587, there were six. English instrumentalists then enjoyed a certain reputa- tion and were sought for by foreign courts; thus in 1604 Charles IIT. of Lorraine sought to recruit his sackbut players from English bands. Pretorius? classes the trom- bones in a complete family, the relative tonalities of which were thus composed :—1 alt-posaun, 4 gemeine rechte pos- aunen, 2 quart-posaunen, | octav-posaun,—S8 in all. The alt- posaun was in D. With the slide closed it gave the first of the accompanying harmonics: e_#._ =: The gemeine rechte posaunen, a or ordinary trombones, were in A. Without using the slide they gave the subjoined sounds: = f. The quart-posaun was made

either in E, the fourth below oe the gemeine rechte posaun, or in D, the lower fifth. In the latter case it was exactly an octave below the alt-posaun. The octav-posaun was in A. It was constructed in two different fashions : either it had a length double that of the ordinary trom- bone, or the slide was shortened, the length of the column of air being still maintained by the adaptation of a crook. ‘The first system, which was invented by Hans Schreiber four years before the work of Pretorius appeared, gave the instrumentalist a slide by which he could procure in the lower octave all the sounds of the ordinary trombone. ‘The second system, which Pretorius had known for years, was distinguished from the first, not only by modifications affecting the form, but also by a larger bore. Mersenne® calls the trombone trompette har- monique, but he does not appear to have made himself acquainted with its construction, for we can scarcely find an allusion in the confused text of his work to the tonality of the trombone then in vogue. He established this fact, however, that it was customary in France to lower the instrument a fourth below the pitch of the ordinary trom- bone by means of a tort, a kind of crook with a double turn that was fitted between the bell and the slide, “in order,” he said, ‘to make the bass to hautbois concerts.” The compass of the trombone is not limited to the mere harmo-

1 Musica getutscht wnd auszgezogen, Basel, 1511. 2 Organographia, Wolfenhbiittel, 1619. 3 Harmonie Universelle, Paris, 1627.

———

TR O—

nics obtained by leaving the instrument at its shortest length— that is, with the slide close up ; it in fact comprises seven positions, which are obtained by shifting the slide as many lengths and in such a way that each of these produces a series of harmonics a semitone lower than the length which has preceded. This system, so simple and rational, might have been expected always to serve for the basis of the technique of the instrument; but from the middle of the 18th century the art of playing the trombone became the object of purely empiric teaching. Only four positions were made use of.' By the first—that is, with the slide close up—there was obtained from the ordinary trombone, then called the tenor trom- bone, the first series of the subjoined harmonics (the numerals indicating the order):

the fundamental or first note e——— —_———— being difficult to obtain; the et Te ae second position produced

@: the third : — ; : 2 Sa position == e=—_ ——$=————__ produced ea

: — In thus lowering by semitones, the and the fourth = sounds avnichéd bw the four positions ave the tenor trombone a diatonic scale from — i his scale was formed with notes that could ——_ a. be perfectly just, but the result would have — been less satisfactory to the ear if the player had strictly observed the rules laid down by the teaching of that period for the production of the chromatic intervals. Thus to pass from a note furnished by one of the four positions to another a semitone lower it was necessary to lengthen the slide by two fingers ; if the semitone higher was required the slide had to be shortened to the same extent.2 A consideration of the laws

affecting lengths of pipes will show the viciousness of that rule.

Of all wind instruments the trombone has perhaps been least modificd in form; changes have occasionally been attempted, but for the most part with only trifling success. The innovation which has had the most vogue dates from the end of the 18th century ; it consisted in bending the tube of the bell in a half circle above the head of the executant, which produced a very bizarre effect. It also gave rise to very serious inconveniences: by destroying the regularity of the proportions of the bell it pre- judicially affected the quality of tone and intonation of the instru- ment. For a long

time the curved bell with its serpent’s mask was maintained in military music, and it is only about twenty years ago that it was completely given up. By giving a half turn more to the bell tube its opening was directed to the back of the exccutant ; but this form, in fashion for a little while about 1830, was not long adhered to, and the trombone reassumed its primitive form, which is still maintained. As appears from a patent de- posited by Stolze] and Bliimel at Berlin on 12th April 1818, the application of ventils or pistons was then made for the first time.® The ventils, at first two in number, effected a decided lengthening of the instrument. The first augmented the length of the tube by a tone, lowering by as much the natural harmonics. The second produced a similar effect for a semitone, and the simultaneous em- ployment of the two pistons resulted in the depression of a tone and ahalf. The principle, therefore, of the employment of ventils or pistons is the same as that which governs the use of slides. For instance, a trombone is provided with three pistons, and without their help it produces the first of the following sets of harmonics (the numbers indicating the order). 5, Then by pressing down the second (1) * z= piston we obtain a ig a: of the Sf a = eee eo

column of air that lowers the in- a

1 2 3 =

strument by a semitone and makes

6 8

it produce the second set of harmonics (g = here shown ; with the aid of the first = ~ = piston we relengthen the column, so S——y—— i

£

as to get a whole tone lower, produc- ing the third set of sounds; the third

@) «a piston, in the same way, lowers the —a aa

instrument a tone and a half, as in “—bg—-—- —— —— (4) o f = (4); by the simultaneous employ-

= —=ment of the second and third pis- — —— tons we arrive at two tones, as in (5);

(5) b Be: the combination of the first and

—— ee third pistons lowers the instrument = two tones and a half, as shown in (6);

= =

1 Der sich selbst informirende Musicus, Augsburg, 1762, by Johann Jacob Lotter.

2 It need hardly be remarked that the higher semitone cannot be produced in the first position.

3 This was mentioned in the Leipsic Allgemeine musikalische

Zeitung in 1815, the merit of the invention being assigned to Heinrich Stolzel of Pless in Silesia.

(6) oe “& ‘nally, uniting the three pistons lowers ee = the trombone three tones and a half, —— as shown in (7).

(7) is a esateing the increased facility SSeeeee = obtained by the use of pistons, the —— — very far from having gained the

suffrages of all players: many prefer the slide, believing that it gives a facility of emission that they cannot obtain with a piston trombone. For this illustration of the use of pistons, we have taken a tenor trombone in Bh; the flat tonalities having been preferred for military music since the commencement of the 19th century, the pitch of each variety of trombones has been raised a semitone. At present six trom- boues are more or less in use, viz., the alto trombone in F, the alto in Eb (formerly in D), the tenor in Bb (formerly in A), the bass in G, the bass in F (formerly in E), the bass in Eb (formerly in D). This transposition has uo reference to the number of vibrations that may be officially or tacitly adopted as the standard pitch of

any country or locality. A trombone an octave lower than the tenor has recently been reintroduced into the orchestra, principally by Wagner. The different varieties just cited are con- structed with pistons or slides, as the case nay be. (Vv. M.)

TROMP, the name of two famous Dutch admirals.

I. Martin Harpertzoon Tromp (1597-1653) was born at Brielle, South Holland, in 1597. At the age of eight he made a voyage to the East Indies in a merchantman, but was made prisoner and spent several years on board an English cruiser. On making his escape to Holland he entered the navy in 1624, and in 1637 was made lieutenant- admiral. In February 1639 he surprised, off the Flemish coast near Gravelines, a large Spanish fleet, which he com- pletely destroyed, and in the following September he de- feated the combined fleets of Spain and Portugal off the English coast—achievements which placed him in the first rank of Dutch naval commanders. On the outbreak of war with England Tromp appeared in the Downs in command of a large fleet and anchored off Dover. On the approach of Blake he weighed anchor and stood over towards France, but suddenly altered his course and bore down on the English fleet, which was much inferior to his in numbers. In the engagement which followed (19th May 1652) he had rather the worst of it and drew off with the loss of two ships. In November he again appeared in command of eighty ships of war, and a convoy of 300 merchantmen, which he had undertaken to guard past the English coast. Blake resolved to attack him, and, the two fleets coming to close quarters near Dungeness on the 30th November, the English, after severe losses, drew off in the darkness and anchored off Dover, retiring next day to the Downs, while Tromp anchored off Boulogne till the Dutch merchantmen had all passed beyond danger. The statement that he sailed up the Channel with a broom at his masthead in token of his ability to sweep the seas is probably mythical. In the following February (1653), while in charge of a large convoy of merchantmen, he maintained a running fight with the combined English fleets under Blake, Penn, and Monk off Portland to the sands of Calais, and, though baffling to some extent the purposes of the English, had the worst of the encounter, losing nine ships of war and thirty or forty merchantmen. On 3d June he fought an indecisive battle with the English fleet under Dean in the Channel, but the arrival of

reinforcements under Blake on the following day enabled the English to turn the scale against him and he retired to the Texel with the loss of seventeen ships. Greatly discouraged by the results of the battle, the Dutch sent commissioners to Cromwell to treat for peace, but the proposal was so coldly received that war was imme- diately renewed, Tromp again appearing in the Channel towards the end of July 1653. In the hotly-contested conflict which followed with the English under Monk on the 29th Tromp was shot by a musket bullet through the heart. He was buried with great pomp at Delft, where there is a monument to his memory in the old church.

588

II. Cornetivs Tromp (1629-1691), the second son of the preceding, was born at Rotterdam on 9th September 1629. At the age of nineteen he commanded a small squadron charged to pursue the Algerian pirates. In 1652 and 1653 he served in Van Galen's fleet in the Mediter- ranean, and after the action with the English fleet off Leghorn, 13th March 1653, in which Van Galen was killed, Tromp was promoted to be rear-admiral. On 13th July 1665 his squadron was by a hard stroke of ill fortune de- feated by the English under the duke of York. In the fol- lowing year Tromp served under De Ruyter, and on account of De Ruyter's complaints of his negligence in the action of 5th August he was deprived of his command. He was, however, reinstated in 1673 by the stadtholder William, afterwards king of England, and in the actions of 7th and 14th June, against the allied fleets of England and France, manifested a skill and bravery which completely justified his reappointment. In 1675 he visited England, when Charles II. created him a baron. In the following year he was named lieutenant-admiral of the United Pro- vinces. He died at Amsterdam, 29th May 1691, shortly after he had been appointed to the command of a fleet against France. Like his father he was buried at Delft.

See H. de Jager, Het Geslacht Tromp, 1883.

TROMSO, a town of Norway, capital of the amt of the same name and an episcopal see, stands on the eastern shore of a low fertile islet of the same name between Hvaloe and the mainland, in 69° 38' N. lat. and 18° 55' E. long. It consists principally of one wide street of wooden houses ; the chief

public buildings are the town-hall, the national church, the Roman Catholic church, and the museum, which contains a good zoological collection. The town has a high school and a normal seminary. The main specialty of the place is bears' skins and other kinds of fur. The herring fishery of Tromsé is very productive, and the activity of the town is further increased by the circum- stance that it is the port of call for ships making for the seal fishing and walrus hunting on Spitzbergen and Nova Zembla. Tromsé was founded in 1794. The population, which in 1816 did not exceed 300, was 5409 in 1882.

TRONDHJEM. See THronpHJeEm.

TROPIC-BIRD, so called of sailors from early times,! because, as Dampier (Voyages, i. p. 53) among many others testifies, it is 'never seen far without either Tropick," and hence, indulging a pretty fancy, Linnzeus bestowed on it the generic term, continued by modern writers, of Phaethon, in allusion to its attempt to follow the path of the sun.2 There are certainly three well-marked species of this genus, but their respective geo- graphical ranges have not yet been definitely laid down. All of them can be easily known by their totipalmate condition, in which the four toes of each foot are united by a web, and by the great length of the two middle tail-quills, which project beyond the rest, so as to have gained for the birds the names of " Rabijunco," " Paille- en-queue," and " Pijlstaart" among mariners of different nations. These birds fly to a great distance from land and seem to be attracted by ships, frequently hovering round or even settling on the mast-head.

The Yellow-billed Tropic-bird, P. flavirostris or candidus, appears to have habitually the most northerly, as well, perhaps, as the

1 More recently sailors have taken to call it '' Boatswain-bird "»— a name probably belonging to a very different kind (ef. Sxua).

- Occasionally, perhaps through violent storms, Tropic- birds wander very far from their proper haunts. In 1700 Leigh, in his 1. H. Lancashire (i. pp. 164, 195, Birds, pl. i, fig. 3), described and figured a "Tropick Bird" found dead in that county. Another is said by Mr Lees (Zoologist, ser. 2, p. 2666) to have been found dead at Cradley near

Malvern—apparently before 1856 (J. H. Gurney, jun., op. cit., p. 4766) —which, like the last, would seem (W. H. Heaton, op. cit., p. 5086) to have been of the species known as P. aethereus. Naumann was told (Rhea, i. p. 25) of its supposed occurrence at

widest range, visiting Bermuda yearly to breed there, but also occurring numerously in the southern Atlantic, the Indian, and a great part of the Pacific Ocean. In some islands of all these three it breeds, sometimes on trees, which the other species are not known to do. However, like the rest of its congeners, it lays but a single egg, and this is of a pinkish white, mottled, spotted, and smeared with brownish purple, often so closely as to conceal the ground colour. This is the smallest of the group, and hardly exceeds in size a large Pigeon ; but the spread of its wings and its long tail make it appear more bulky than it really is. Except some black markings on the face (common to all the species known), a large black patch partly covering the scapulars and wing-coverts, and the black shafts of its elongated rectrices, its ground colour is white, glossy as satin, and often tinged with roseate. Its yellow bill readily distinguishes it from its larger con- gener P. aethereus, but that has nearly all the upper surface of the body and wings closely barred with black, while the shafts of its elongated rectrices are white. This species has a range almost equally wide as the last; but it does not seem to occur in the western part of the Indian Ocean. The third and largest species, the Red-tailed Tropic-bird, P. rubricauda or phenicurus, not only has a red bill, but the elongated and very attenuated rectrices are of a bright crimson red, and when adult the whole body shows a deep roseate tinge. The young are beautifully barred above with black arrow-headed markings. This species has not been known to occur in the Atlantic, but is perhaps the most numerous in the Indian and Pacific Oceans, in which last great value used to be attached to its tail-feathers to be worked into ornaments.?

That the Tropic-birds form a distinct family, Phaethon- tidz, of the Steganopodes (the Dysporomorphe of Prof. Huxley), was originally maintained by Brandt, and is now generally admitted, yet it cannot be denied that they differ a good deal from the other members of the group‘; indeed Prof. Mivart in the Zoological Transactions (x. p. 364) will hardly

allow Fregata and Phaethon to be steg- anopodous at all; and one curious difference is shown by the eggs of the latter, which are in appearance so wholly unlike those of the rest. The osteology of two species has been well described and illustrated by Prof. Alph. Milne-Edwards in M. Grandidier's fine Ocseaua de Mada- gascar (pp. 701-704, pls. 279-281a). A. N.)

TROPPAU (Slavonic Opava), the chief town of Austrian Silesia, is a busy commercial place on the right bank of the Oppa, close to the Prussian border. A well-built town with extensive suburbs, it has two market-places and con- tains six churches, an old town-house recently restored in the Gothic style, and numerous educational, benevolent, and commercial institutions. The site of the former fortifica- tions is laid out in pleasant promenades. Troppau manu- factures large quantities of cloth, especially for the army ; and its industrial establishments include a large sugar- refinery and manufactories of machines and stoves. In 1880 the population was 20,562. German is spoken in the town proper, buta dialect of Polish prevails in the suburbs.

Troppau was founded in the 13th century ; but almost its only claim to historical mention is the fact that in 1820 the monarchs of Austria, Russia, and Prussia met here to deliberate on the tend- encies of the Neapolitan revolution. 'This congress of Troppau, however, left nearly the whole matter to be considered and decided at Laibach. The former principality of Troppau is now divided be- tween Austria and Prussia, the latter holding the lion's share.

TROTZENDORFF, or Troceporrivs, VALENTIN FrieDLAND (1490-1556), called Trotzendorff from his birthplace, near Gorlitz, in Prussian Silesia, was born on 14th February 1490, of parents so poor that they could not keep him at school. The boy taught himself to read and write while herding cattle; he made paper from birch bark, and ink from soot. When difficulties were overcome and he was sent for education to Gorlitz, his mother's last

Heligoland, and Col. Legge (B. Ceylon, p. 1174) mentions one taken in India 170 miles from the sea. The case cited by MM. Degland and Gerbe (Ornith. Européenne, ii. p. 863) seems to be that of an Albatros.

3 A fourth species, P. indicus, has been described from the Gulf of Oman, but doubt is expressed as to its validity (cf Legge, ué supra, pp. 1178, 1174).

4 Sulide (Gannet), Pelecanide# (PELICAN), Plotide (SNAKE-BIRD), Phalacrocoracidse (CORMORANT), and Fregatide (FRIGATE-BIRD).

words were ‘‘stick to the school, dear son.” The words determined his career : he refused all ecclesiastical promo- tion, and lived and died a schoolmaster. He became a distinguished student, learned Ciceronian Latin from Peter Mosellanus and Greek from Richard Croke, and after graduation was appointed assistant master in the school at Gorlitz. There he also taught the rector and other teachers. When Luther began his attack on indulgences, Trotzendorff resigned his position and went to study under Luther and Melanchthon, supporting himself by private tuition. Thence he was called to be a master in the school at Goldberg in Silesia, and in 1524 became rector. There he remained three years, when he was sent to Lieg- nitz. He returned to Goldberg in 1531 and began that career which has made him the typical German school- master of the Reformation period. His system of educa- tion and discipline speedily attracted attention. He made his best elder scholars the teachers of the younger classes, and insisted that the way to learn was to teach. He organized the school in such a way that the whole ordi- nary discipline was in the hands of the boys themselves. Every month a “consul,” twelve ‘“senators,” and two “censors” were chosen from the pupils, and over all Trot- zendorff ruled as “dictator perpetuus.” One hour a day was spent in going over the lessons of the previous day. The lessons were repeatedly recalled by examinations, which were conducted on the plan of academical disputa- tions. Every week each pupil had to write two “ exercitia styli,” one in prose and the other in verse, and Trotzendorff took pains to see that the subject of each exercise was something interesting. The fame of the Goldberg school extended over all Protestant Germany, and a large number of the more famous men of the following generation were taught by Trotzendorff. He died on 20th April 1556.

See Herrmann, Merkwiirdige Lebensgeschichte eines beriihmtes Schulmans, V. F. Trotzendorffs, 1727 ; Frosch, V. F. Trotzendorff, Rektor zw Goldberg, 1818; Pinzger, V. F. Trotzendorff (with the Goldberg portrait,

and a complete list of his writings), 1825 ; Koehler, V. F. Trotzendorff, ein biographischer Versuch, 1848. These biographies appear to take al/ their facts from a funeral or memorial oration delivered by Balthasar Rhau in the university of Wittenberg on 15th August 1564, and published in an edition of Trotzendorff's Rosarium, 1565.

TROUBADOURS. See Provencan LITERATURE, vol. xx, p. 873, and Franck, vol. ix. p. 646.

TROUGHTON, Epwarp (1753-1835), instrument maker, was born in the parish of Corney in Cumberland in October 1753. He joined his elder brother John in carrying on the business of mathematical instrument makers in Fleet Street, London, and continued it alone after his brother's death, until he in 1826 took W. Simms as a partner. He died in London on 12th June 1836.

Troughton was very successful in improving the mechanical part of most nautical, geodetic, and astronomical instruments. He was completely colour-blind, which prevented him from attempting ex- periments in optics. The first modern transit circle (see RobMER) was constructed by him in 1806 for Groombridge; but Troughton was dissatisfied with this form of instrument, which a few years afterwards was brought to great perfection by ReicHrnbacn and REPSOLD (qq.v.), and designed the mural circle in its place. The first instrument of this kind was erected at Greenwich in 1812, and ten or twelve others were subsequently constructed for other obser- vatories; but they were ultimately superseded by Troughton's earlier design, the transit circle, by which the two coordinates of an object can be determined simultaneously. He also made transit instru- ments, equatorials, &c.; but his failure to construct an equatorial mounting of large dimensions, and the consequent lawsuit with Sir James South, embittered the last years of his life.

TROUT. See Satmonip#; also ANGLING, vol. il. p. 41.

TROUVILLE, a fashionable seaside town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Calvados, and a port of the English Channel, is situated at the mouth of the river Touques, on the right bank, 136 miles west-north-west of Paris and 34 north-east of Caen by rail. The climate is

mild, and the neighbourhood well wooded ; there are villas

in all styles of architecture, a casino, and vast stretches of sand where the visitors (15,000 in 1881) bathe and walk. With Havre, which lies on the other side of the estuary of the Seine, 8 or 10 miles off, there is continual steamer com- munication. In 1886 the population was 5750 (commune 6300). Deauville, on the left bank of the Touques, opposite Trouville, is remarkable for its casino, terrace, and fine mansions, but, except during the race-week in August, is comparatively deserted. In 1886 its population was 2100 (commune 2220). In 1866 a dock, 985 feet in length by 262 in breadth, with 24 feet of depth at high water, was constructed between Trouville and Deauville; in 1882 292 vessels (54,391 tons) entered and 283 (53,510 tons) cleared.

TROVER, or trover and conversion, the name of a form of action in English law no longer in use, corresponding to the modern action of conversion. It was brought for damages for the detention of a chattel, and differed from detinue in that the latter was brought for the return of the chattel itself. The name trover is due to the action having been based on the fictitious averment in the plaintiff's de- claration that he had lost the goods and that the defendant had found them. The necessity for this fictitious aver- ment was taken away by the Common Law Procedure Act, 1852. An action of trover lay (as an action of con- version still lies) in every case where the defendant was in possession of a chattel of the plaintiff and refused to de- liver it up on request, such refusal being prima facie evidence of conversion. The damages recoverable are usually the value of the chattel converted. In an action for detention of a chattel (the representative of the old action of detinue), the plaintiff may have judgment and execution by writ of delivery for the chattel itself or for its value at his option. An action for conversion or detention must be brought within six years. The corresponding action in Scotch law is the action of spuilzie. It must be brought within three years in order to entitle the pursuer to violent profits, otherwise it prescribes in forty years.

TROWBRIDGE, an ancient town of Wilts, England, is situated on the river Mere or Biss, a feeder of the Avon, and on a branch of the Great Western

Railway, 33 miles north-west of Salisbury and 974 west of London. The parish church of St James is an ancient stone structure in the Gothic style, with a west square tower, surmounted by a spire 159 feet in height, and a baptistery (1885). The site of the ancient castle was at the mound called Courthill, but all traces of it have long disappeared, it having been demolished before the reign of Henry VIII. Among the charitable institutions are the Edward and Yerbury alms- houses (1698), the old men's almshouses, and the cottage hospital (1886). There are a market house and a town hall. Public gardens 4 acres in extent were opened in 1884, A water company (incorporated in 1873) supplies the town with water from the chalk hills in the neigh- bourhood of Biss. The principal industry is the manu- facture of kerseymere and of broad and other woollen cloths, established as early as the reign of Henry VIII. The town is governed by a local board of health of twenty- one members. The population of the urban sanitary dis- trict (area 2080 acres) in 1871 was 11,508, and in 1881 it was 11,040.

The town was defended in behalf of Matilda against Stephen by Humphrey de Bohun. By Leland it is called Throughbridge or Thoroughbridge. Anciently it was a royal manor forming part of the duchy of Lancaster, having been grantcd by the crown to John of Gaunt. Afterwards it reverted to the crown and was given by Henry VIII. in the 28th ycar of his reign to Sir Edward Seymour. It again lapsed to the crown under Elizabeth, and in the 24th year of her reign was assigned to Edward, earl of Hertford. By mar- riage it passed to the Rutland family, who, however, eventually sold it. It formerly gave the title of baron to the Seymour family. The poet Crabbe was rector of the parish from 1814 to 1832.

TROY. See Troan.

TROY, a city of the United States, county seat of Rensselaer county, New York, is situated in 42° 44' N. lat. and 73° 41' W. long., upon the east bank of the Hudson river, at the head of tide water. It is nearly north of New York City (147 miles) and somewhat north of west from Boston (136 miles). The city, which has a length of about 4 miles, with an average breadth of 1 mile, is built mainly upon a level terrace slightly elevated above the river, but of

late years the residence portion has extended up the hills (rising to 400 feet) which limit this plain on the east. It is in the main regularly laid out, and is traversed by street railways. Troy is situated at what is practically the terminus of the Erie Canal, con- necting the Hudson river (here navigable for vessels of 8 to 10 feet draught) with Lake Erie, and of the Champlain Canal. It has three railroads, by which it is connected with New York on the south, Buffalo on the west, and also with the east and north. The principal industries, which

in 1880 gave employment to 22,434 persons, are metal- working, especially in iron and steel, and the making of

stoves and linen goods. The value of the products was $26,497,163. The city is the seat of the Rensselaer

Polytechnic Institute, which was for many years the lead- ing engineering school of the United States, and still The population, which in 1810 was only 3895, had in 1830 risen to 11,556, and by 1880 to 56,747 (27,154 males and 29,593 females, the

maintains a high reputation.

excess of the latter being explained by the large number of women employed as factory operatives). tion of foreign born (16,938) was large.

The city was founded in 1787 by the Vanderheyden, and two years later the present name was adopted.

In 1794 it was incorporated as a village, and in 1816 it received a The opening of the Erie and the Champlain Canals

city charter. in 1823 insured its prosperity and rapid growth.

TROY, Jean FRAncors pe (1679-1752), a French painter, highly endowed by nature, was born at Paris in

1679. He received his first lessons from his father, him-

self a skilful portrait-painter, who afterwards sent his son to Italy. There his amusements occupied him fully as much as his studies; but his ability was such that on his return he was at once made an official of the Academy and obtained a large number of orders for the decoration of public and private buildings, executing at the same time a quantity of easel pictures of very unequal merit. Amongst the most considerable of his works are thirty- six compositions painted for the hotel of De Live (1729), and a series of the story of Esther, designed for the Gobelins whilst De Troy was director of the school of France at Rome (17 38-51),—a post which he resigned in a fit of irritation at court neglect. He did not expect to be taken at his word, but found himself forced to return to France, and was making ready to leave when he died suddenly (24th January 1752) of an attack on the lungs,

His desire to make a figure in the world led him to neglect his more serious duties and injured his professional reputation. The life-size painting (Louvre) of the First Chapter of the Order of the Holy Ghost held by Henry IV., in the church of the Grands Augustins, is one of his most complete performances, and his dramatic composition, the Plague at Marseilles, is widely known through the excellent engraving of Thomassin. The Cochins, father and son, Fessard, Galimard, Bauvarlet, Herisset, and the painters

Boucher and Parrocel have engraved and etched the works of De Troy.

TROY, Wzst. See Wusr Troy.

TROYES, a town of France, formerly the capital of Champagne, and now chef-lieu of the department of Aube, and an episcopal see, is 104 miles south-east of Paris by the railway to Belfort, at the junction of the line from Orleans to Chalons. Several arms of the Seine and also

The propor-

Dutch, under the name of

the Haute-Seine Canal run through the town. The cathedral of St Peter and St Paul, the building of which lasted from 1206 till the 16th century, still

wants the south tower. The choir, the end chapels, and the sacristry were restored in 1849-1866. The 16th-century facade, with mutilated bas-reliefs and statues, is surmounted by the tower of St Peter (230 feet). The choir, one of the most beautiful in France, belongs to the 13th century, as does also its ré- markable glass. The treasury contains gospels of the 11th and 12th centuries, precious stones brought from the East at the time of the crusades, and ancient and beautiful lace. The unfinished church of St Urban, begun in 1262 at the expense of Urban IV., is a charming specimen of the best period of Gothic architecture, the side portals being remarkably light and delicate. The church of St Madeleine, built at the beginning of the 12th century, enlarged in the 16th, and recently restored, contains a rich rood-screen by Jean de Gualde (1508). In 1420 the treaty of Troyes was signed in the church of St John, where Henry V. of England and Catherine of France were sub- sequently married. The church of St Remy, with a Romanesque tower, the churches of St Nizier and St Nicholas, both of the 16th century, and that of St Pantaléon, of the 16th and 17th, should also be noticed. There are some curious fireplaces in the town hall (17th century), and the municipal archives contain the correspondence of the dukes of Lorraine and Guise. The old abbey of St Loup is occupied by the library (80,000 volumes and 2720 manuscripts) and a museum containing numerous collec- tions ; that relating to natural history is rich in ornithology and entomology, and has many aerolites. Most of the old houses of Troyes are of wood, but some of stone of the 16th century are remarkable for their beautiful and original architecture. The chief industry of Troyes and the surrounding district is the manufacture of cotton and woollen hosiery, which is woven almost entirely by hand, and is exported to America and Switzerland. One-fourth of the population live by subsidiary industries. There are 14 cotton mills with 10,000 spindles, bleaching, dressing, and dye works, workshops for making looms, needle factories, iron and copper foundries, 8 flour mills, and nursery and market gardens. A trade is carried on in pork and cheese. A few miles from the town stands the curious church of St Andrew (16th century), with a remarkable portal. The population in 1886 was 46,972 (46,067 in 1881).

At the beginning of the Roman period Troyes (Augustobona) was the principal settlement of the Tricassi. It was christianized in the 8rd century, and its bishop St Loup (426-479) founded renowned schools, and averted

the fury of Attila. In 484 Troyes passed into the hands of Clovis, and belonged sometimes to Neustria, sometimes to Austrasia, till all Gaul was united under Charles Martel, In 878 Pope John VIII. presided at a council in Troyes. The town was fired and sacked by the Saracens in 720, and by the Normans in 889 and 905. In’ 1229 Theobald IV., besieged in his capital, was delivered by king Louis IX., and in 1230 he granted the inhabitants a municipal charter. From this time the fairs of Troyes became celebrated. During the captivity of King John in England, Troyes resisted all attacks, and after Agincourt took the part of the Burgundians. In 1417 the rule of Queen Isabeau of Bavaria was established in Troyes, where in 1418 the parlement of Paris met ; and on 21st May 1420 Henry V. of England, Charles VI. of France, Isabeau, and Philip of Burgundy signed the famous treaty of Troyes. On 9th July 1429 the town capitulated to Joan of Arc. In the 16th century Protestantism made rapid progress, but in 1562 the Huguenots were forced to retire to Bar-sur-Seine ; after the massacre of St Bartholomew in Paris, the Calvinists in the prisons of Troyes met the same fate. In 1577 the inhabitants Joined the League, and only opened their gates to Henry IV. in 1594. In 1787 the parlement of Paris again met here. In 1814 both the allied and the imperial armies occupied Troyes; and in 1870 the town was occupied by the Germans.

TROYES, Curestren pr. See CHRESTIEN DE TROYEs, and RoMANc#E, vol. xx. p. 645. TRUCE OF GOD. The orderly administration of

justice and the universal peace, which the Roman empire

established from the Euphrates to the Atlantic, did not long survive the inroads of the Teutonic tribes who in western Europe divided the inheritance of the Latin world. All the early Teutonic codes, being based, however remotely, on the right of private war and private vengeance, might discourage, but were powerless to abolish, the instinct which impels the members of half-civilized communities to avenge their own wrongs. Hence the pax Romana died with the empire ; nor could the splendid organization of Charlemagne do more than effect a very partial resusci- tation of it. Throughout the 9th and 10th centuries, as the life-benefices of the later

Carolingian kings became gradually transformed into hereditary fiefs, the insecurity of life and property grew greater ; for there was no central

power to curb the injustice of the petty dukes and counts.

who warred and pillaged at their will. At this moment, when western Europe threatened to sink back into the chaos from which it had been won by Rome, the church came forward to arrest the process of its dissolution. Speaking at first in her own interest and in that of the poor, whose great protector she claimed to be, she decreed a special peace for the unarmed clerk and the industrious husbandman. The council of Charroux in Poitou led the way in 989, With the opening of the next century the movement spread over Aquitaine and the rest of France. Everywhere the bishops set themselves to exact from the whole diocese, noble and simple alike, a novel oath to abstain from violence and to respect the sanctity of churches. William V. of Aquitaine, the most powerful lord of southern France, lent his influence to the cause at the councils of Limoges (994) and Poitiers (999). The latter council prescribed the methods by which all who violated their solemn engagement should be punished. The times, however, were hardly ripe for the inauguration of an era of peace. Gerard of Soissons, perhaps, was not the only bishop who eyed this dream of universal harmony askance, as tending to encroach on the king's prerogative (see Bouquet, x. 201); and, on the whole, it may be said that the "Peace of God" was at best but a somewhat ineffectual protection to churches, priests, and labourers. If there was any hope of restraining the mutual feuds of the barons it must be by other means. And here the church again, re- cognizing the impossibility of absolutely stopping all feudal warfare, endeavoured to limit it. This limitation of the right of perpetual warfare, reduced to writing, sanctioned by an oath, and confirmed by the decrees of councils, assumed the name of the "Truce of God" (éreva or treuga Dei). The truce of God seems to have been first estab- lished at the synod of Tuluges, near Perpignan in Roussil- lon, on 16th May 1027. In accordance with its decrees all warfare was to be suspended from noon on Saturday till prime on Monday ; and the peace of God was perman- ently extended to all monks, clerks, bishops, and churches. Like the paz ecclesiz, this laudable example was soon fol- lowed elsewhere. About 1041 it extended itself over Aquitaine and all France; in 1042 the council of Caen, under the sanction of Duke William, established

it in Normandy—a country in which, according to a contempo- rary writer (Rodolph Glaber, v. 1), it was not at first accepted. By this time its terms had been much enlarged ; and we may perhaps take the provisions of a second synod at Tuluges (1041) as representing its normal form. According to this synod the treuga Dei was to last from the Wednesday evening to the Monday morning in every week, from the beginning of Advent to the octave of the Epiphany, from the beginning of Lent till the octave of Pentecost, for the feasts of the Holy Cross, the three great feasts of the Virgin, and those of the twelve apostles and a few other saints. More usually the interval between the Epiphany octave and Lent and that from Easter to

Rogations were left subject to the weekly truce only. Thus from being a mere local institution it spread rapidly over all France, and seems to have crossed into Germany, Italy, Spain, and England. It had also its special courts and methods of procedure. Excommunication and banish- ment for seven or thirty years were its penalties. Before long both the pax ecclesrx and the treuga Dei were sanc- tioned by the holy see. Special clauses were added to protect pilgrims, women, merchants, monks, and clerks ; while the cattle and agricultural implements of the peasant —his ox, horse, plough, and even his olive-trees—were covered by the egis of the church. The first olause of the council of Clermont (1095), at which Urban IT. preached the first crusade, proclaimed the weekly truce for all Christendom, and perhaps enjoined it in its most extended form, adding also a clause by which the oath was to be renewed every three years by all men above the age of twelve, whether noble, burgess, villain, or serf.1_ The same council seems to have accorded safety to all who took re- fuge at a wayside cross (cap. 29) or at the plough (homines ad carrucas fugientes). The truce of God was most powerful in the 12th century, during which period it was sanctioned both by local and papal councils, such as that held at Rheims by Calixtus IT. in 1119, and the Lateran councils of 1139 and 1179. With the 13th century its influence began to decline, as the power of the king gradually led to the substitution of the king’s peace for that of the church.

For an exhaustive account of the whole question, see M. Semi- chon’s book, to which the above article is largely indebted.

TRUCK SYSTEM. See Lazovr, vol. xiv. p. 172, and WAGES.

TRUFFLE, the name of several different species of sub- terranean fungi which are used as food. The species sold in English markets is Zuber xstivum; the commonest species of French markets is.7. melanosporum, and of Italian the garlic-scented Z. magnatum. Of the three, the English species is the least excellent, and the French is possibly the best. The truffle used for Perigord pie (pdté de foie gras) is TZ. melanosporum. When, however, the stock of Z’. melanosporum happens to be deficient, some manufacturers use inferior species of Zuber, such as the worthless or dangerous Cheromyces meandriformis. Even the rank and offensive Scleroderma vulgare (one of the puft- ball series of fungi) is sometimes used for stuffing turkeys, sausages, &c. Indeed, good truffles, and then only 7’. xsti- vum, are seldom seen in English markets. The taste of 7. melanosporum can be detected in Perigord pie of good quality. True and false truffles can easily be distinguished under the microscope.

Tuber xstivum, the English truffle, is roundish in shape, covered with coarse polygonal warts, black in colour outside and brownish and veined with white within ; its average size is about that of a small apple. It grows from July till autumn or winter, and pre- fers beech, oak, and birch woods on argillaceous or calcareous soil, and has sometimes been observed in pine woods. It grows gregari- ously, often in company with 7. brwmale and (in France and Italy) T. melanosporum, and sometimes appears in French markets with these two species, as well as with 7’. mesentericum. The odour of T. xstivum is very strong and penetrating ; it is generally esteemed powerfully fragrant, and its taste is considered agreeable. Its price in England is two or three shillingsa pound. The common French truffle, 7. melanosporwm, is a winter species. The tubers are globose, bright brown or black in colour, and rough with polygonal warts ; the mature flesh is blackish grey, marbled within with white veins. It is gathered in autumn and winter in beech and oak woods, and is frequently seen in Italian markets, where it is some- times sold for 12s. 6d. a pound. The odour of 7. melanosporwm is very pleasant, especially when the tubers are young, then

some- what resembling that of the strawberry ; with age the smell gets very potent, but is never considered really unpleasant. The com- mon Italian truffle, 7. magnatum, is pallid ochreous or brownish buff in colour, smooth or minutely papillose, irregularly globose, and lobed ; the interior is a very pale brownish liver colour veined

1 Labbe's Concilia, xx. 816 ; with which ¢f Semichon, La Paix et la Tréve de Dieu, Paris, 1869, p. 125.

with white. It grows towards the end of autumn in plantations of willows, poplars, and oaks, on clayey soil. Sometimes it occurs in open cultivated fields. The odour of the mature fungus is very potent, and is like strong garlic, onion, or decaying cheese. 7. brumale, referred to above, grows in Britain. It is a winter truffle, and is found chiefly under oaks and abele trees from October to December. It is black in colour, globose, more or less regular in shape, and is covered with sharp polygonal warts; the mature flesh is blackish grey marbled with white veins. The odour is very strong and lasts a long time ; the taste is generally esteemed agree- able. Cheromyces meandriformis, which occurs in Britain, is some- times sold for 7. magnatwm, the colour of the flesh of both species being somewhat similar. Scleroderma vulgare, the a false truffle,

is extremely common on the surface of the ground in woods, and is gathered by Italians and Frenchmen in Epping Forest for the inferior dining-rooms of London where Continental dishes are served. It is a worthless, offensive, and possibly dangerous fungus. A true summer trufile, 7. mesentericwm, found in oak and birch woods on calcareous clay soil, is frequently eaten on the Continent. It is esteemed equal to 7. awstivum. It probably grows in Britain. Another edible species, 7. macrosporum, also grows in Britain, in clayey places under young beeches and oaks, on the borders of streams and roads, and sometimes in fields ; more rarely it grows in plantations of willow and poplar. j onions or garlic. Terfezta leonis, a famous truffle of Italy, Algeria, Sardinia, &c., resembles externally a potato. It grows in March, April, and May. Some persons eat it in a raw state, sliced, and dipped in oil or egg. It is not scented, and its taste is generally considered insipid or soapy. Sometimes an ally of the puff-balls, and

therefore (like Scleroderma) not a true trufile, Melanogaster variegatus, is eaten in England and France. It has been, and possibly still is, occasionally sold in England under the name of “red truffle.” It is a small ochreous brown species with a strong aromatic and pleasant odour of bitter almonds. When the plant is eaten raw the taste is sweet and sugary, but when cooked it is hardly agreeable. The odour belonging to many truffles is so potent that their places of growth can be readily detected by the odour exhaled from the ground. Squirrels, hogs, and other animals commonly dig up truffles and devour them, and pigs and dogs have long been trained to point out the places where they grow. Pigs will always eat truffles and dogs will do so occasionally ; it is there- fore usual to give the trained pig or dog a small piece of cheese or some little reward each time it is successful. Truffles are repro- duced by spores, bodies which serve the same urpose as seeds in flowering plants ; in true truffles the spores are borne in transparent asci or sacs, from four to eight spores in each ascus. The asci are

Spores of the chief European trufiles,

Enlarged 500 diameters. zstivum; 2, T. brumale; 8, T. melanosporum; 4, T. mesentericum ; 5, I’. mag- natum ; 6, Cheromyces meandriformis ; 7, Scleroderma vulgare; 8, Melanogas- ler variegatus,

1, Tuber

embedded in vast numbers in the flesh of the truffle. In false truffles the spores are free and are borne on minute spicules or supports. The spores of the chief European truffles, true and false, enlarged five hundred diameters, are shown in the accompanying illustration. Many references to truffles occur in classical authors. The truffle Elaphomyces variegatus was till quite recent times used, under the name of Hart’s nut or Lycoperdon nut, on account of its supposed aphrodisiac qualities.

TRUMBULL, the surname of more than one individual of note in the literature, art, and politics of America.

1. Bensamin TRUMBULL was born at Hebron, Connecti- cut, on 19th December 1735, and died at North Haven, Connecticut, on 2d February 1820. He graduated at Yale in 1759, and entered the ministry. His literary

work was considerable, the most important being the standard His- tory of Connecticut to 1764.

2. Joun TRUMBULL was born at Waterbury, Connecti- cut, on 24th April 1750, and died at Detroit, Michigan, on 12th May 1831. He graduated at Yale in 1767 , and became a lawyer and author of high reputation. His best

It has a strong scent of

joined.!

TRU—TRU

work is M‘Fingal, a Hudibrastic poem, intended to serve the Whig side in the American Revolution.

3. JOHN TRUMBULL, son of the following, was born at Lebanon, Connecticut, on 6th June 1756, and died at New York City, on 10th November 1843. He graduated at Harvard in 1773, studied painting with Benjamin West in London, and left at his death a number of historical works. The earlier of these are the better; the later and larger were painted for the capitol at Washington.

4, JONATHAN TRUMBULL was born at Lebanon, Con- necticut, on 10th June 1710, and died at the same place on 17th August 1785. He graduated at Harvard in 1727, and became a lawyer and colonial politician. His place in American history was gained as governor of Connecticut from 1769 until 1783, through the whole period of the American Revolution. He was a trusted supporter and confidential adviser of Washington, who was accustomed to speak of him as “brother Jonathan,” and the term has since passed into popular use as equivalent to the people of the United States.

5. JONATHAN TRUMBULL, son of the preceding, was born at Lebanon, Connecticut, on 26th March 1740, and died at the same place on 7th August 1809. He graduated at Harvard in 1759, and served as member of congress, 1789-95 (being speaker of the house of representatives dur- ing the last two years of his term), as United States senator, 1795-96, and as governor of Connecticut, 1798-1809.

TRUMPET, a musical instrument, consisting of a long, narrow brass tube, cylindrical for the greater part of its length: the fusiform development which terminates in the bell or opening of the lower end only begins at a point that varies from a third to a fourth of the total length from that extremity. The air inside is set in vibration by the lips (which act as true reeds) applied to the edges of a basin-like mouthpiece fitted to the upper part of the instrument. The material has nothing to do with the production of that brilliant quality of tone by which the trumpet is so easily distinguished from every other mouth- piece instrument: the difference is partly due to the dis- tinct form given to the basin of the mouthpiece, but prin- cipally to the proportions of the column of air determined by the conical or cylindrical form of its envelope.

The possibility of producing sonorous disturbance of a mass of air through a mouthpiece, or more simply through the orifice of the tube, has been known from a very early period, —a shell bored at its extremity, or a horn with the point removed, being without doubt the most ancient instrument for producing sound. Nearly all the nations of antiquity had mouthpiece instruments; but the greater number of these, though grouped under the general de- signation of trumpets, have only a very distant relationship to the modern instrument. The Romans had four such instruments,—the tuba, buccina, cornu, and lituus. The tuba, represented in the bas-reliefs of the triumphal arch of Titus, was a kind of straight bronze clarion, with a conical column of air. It is ordinarily designated the Roman trum- pet, and was about 39 inches long ; its compass should not go beyond the first six proper notes of the harmonic scale. The Roman tuba and the Greek salpinx are supposed to be one and the same instrument. The buccina was also of bronze, with a tube measuring fully 11 feet in length. The tube is only slightly conical, and the quality of tone bears a striking resemblance to that of the bass trombone in G; the proper tones for har- — oe Aen hee those sub- = = ———— The cornu was Soe often made of a bullock’s horn, but bronze was also employed,

1 The difficulty of producing the fundamental or first proper note increases with the length and narrowness of the tube. The propor- tions of the buccina render the production of this note very difficult.

as in a specimen in the British Museum. This instrument measured 4 feet 6 inches in length, and the scale was that herewith shown. The Roman cornu was probably like the Greek keras. The three preceding instruments were used in giving signals to the infantry. The cavalry calls were given with the lituus, a specimen of which exists in the museum of the Vatican, found in 1827 in a tomb at Cerveteri (Czre). The tube is cylindrical for the greater part of its length, its conical development beginning only at the lower end, where the instrument begins to curve. The lituus easily produces the accompanying -~—-——— ae proper notes; its quality of == =

tone is like that of a trumpet =

in G. In Ireland and Denmark numerous mouthpiece instruments in bronze have been found, sixteen different specimens being preserved in the museum of the Royal Irish Academy at Dublin, and six (of which facsimiles exist in South Kensington Museum) in the museum at Copenhagen. But none of these have the proportions of a trumpet ; all, by the conical development of the tube as well as by the curved form, recall their first model, the horn, successive transformations of which have given rise to the clarion and the numerous family of bugles.

We have no precise information as to the form which the lituus, the ancestor of the modern trumpet, assumed during the Middle Ages. A miniature in the Bible! pre- sented in 850 to Charles the Bald places the lituus in the hands of one of the companions of King David, but we are not warranted in concluding from this that the Etruscan instrument was in use in the 9th century. The earliest representation of the trumpet with its present proportions of tube and form of bell seems to belong to the 15th century. Fra Angelico (d. 1455) has painted angels with trumpets having either straight or zigzag tubes, the shortest being about 5 feet long. The perfect representation of the details, the exactness of the propor- tions, the natural pose of the angel players, suggest that the artist painted the instruments from real models.

The credit of having bent the tube of the trumpet in three parallel branches, thus creating its modern form, has usually been claimed for a Frenchman

named Maurin

(1498-1515).

Italy about the middle of the 15th century, as is proved by the bas-reliefs of Luca della Robbia intended to orna- ment the organ chamber of the cathedral of Florence (see vol. xx. p. 588); there a trumpet having the tube bent back as just described is very distinctly figured. From the beginning of the 16th century we have numerous sources of information. Virdung? cites three kinds of mouthpiece instruments—the /felttrumet, the clareta, and the thurner horn ; unfortunately he does not niention their distinctive characters, and it is impossible to make them out by examination of his engravings. Probably the felttrumet and the clareta closely resembled each other ; but the compass of the former, destined for military sig- nals, hardly went beyond the 8th proper tone, while the latter, reserved for high parts, was like the clarino (see below). The thurner horn was probably a kind of clarino or clarion used by watchmen on the towers. The trummet and the jdger trommet are the only two mouth- piece instruments of the trumpet kind cited by Preetorius.? The first was tuned in D at the chamber pitch or " kam- merton," but with the help of a shank it could be put in C, the equivalent of the "chorton" D, the two differ- ing about a tone. Sometimes the trummet was lowered

1 Tn the Bibliothéque Nationale.at Paris. 2 Musica getutscht und auszgezogen, Basel, 1511. 3 Organographia, Wolfenbiittel, 1619.

But the transformation was really made in °

593

to Band even Bb, The jaiger trommet, or "trompette de chasse," was composed of a tube bent several times in circles, like the posthorn, to make use of a comparison employed by Pretorius himself. His drawing does not make it clear whether the column of air was like that of the trumpet ; there is therefore some doubt as to the true character of the instrument. The same author further cites a wooden trumpet (Aélzern trommet), which is no other than the Swiss alpen-horn or Norwegian luur. Mersenne's* information is not very instructive; but he gives a description of the sowrdine, a kind of

mute or damper introduced into the bell, already employed in his time, and still made use of to weaken the sound. The shape of the trumpet, as seen in the bas-reliefs of Luca della Robbia, was retained for more than three hundred years: the first alterations destined to revolutionize the whole technique of the instrument were made about the middle of the 18th century. Notwithstanding the im- perfections of the trumpet during this long period, the performers upon it acquired an astonishing dexterity. The usual scale of the typical trumpet, that in D, is

Pretorius exceeds the limits of this compass in the higher range, for he says a good trumpeter could produce the subjoined notes. 2 e: = This opinion is shared by Bach, who, eee EE in a trumpet solo which ends the ——————— cantata “Der Himmel lacht,” wrote up a to the twentieth of these sounds. So considerable a compass could not be reached by one instrumentalist : the trumpet part had therefore to be divided, and each division was designated by a special name.’ The fundamental or first proper note was called jflattergrob, the second grobstimme, the third faulstimme, the fourth mittelstimme. The part that was called principal went from the fifth to the tenth of these tones. The higher region, which had received the name of “clarino,” was again divided into two parts: the first began at the eighth proper tone and mounted up towards the extreme high limit of the com- pass, according to the skill of the executant ; the second, beginning at the sixth proper tone, rarely went beyond the twelfth. Each of these parts was confided to a special trumpeter, who executed it by using a larger or a smaller mouthpiece.

Playing the clarino differed essentially from playing the military trumpet, which corresponded in compass to that called principal. Compelled to employ very small mouthpieces to facilitate the emis- sion of very high sounds, clarino players could not fail to alter the tone of the instrument, and instead of getting the brilliant and energetic quality of tone of the mean register they were only able to produce more or less doubtful notes without power and splendour. Apart from this inconvenience, the clarino presented numerous deviations from just intonation. Hence the players of that time failed to obviate the bad effects inevitably resulting from the natural imperfection of the harmonic scale of the trumpet. in that extreme part of its

compass; in the execution, for instance, of the works of Bach, where the trumpet should give sometimes

, and —, the instrumentalist could only com- == some- — mand the eleventh proper tone, which times is neither the one nor the other of these.

Further, the thirteenth proper tone, for which ~9-—@—. is written, is really too flat, and it is absolutely im- == possible to remedy this defect, since it entirely depends the laws of resonance affecting columns of air.

Since the abandonment of the clarino (about the middle of the 18th century) our orchestras have been enriched with trumpets that permit the execution of the old clarino parts, not only with perfect justness of intonation, but with a quality of tone that is not deficient in character when compared with the mean register of the old principal instrument. The introduction of the clarinet or little clarino is one of the causes which led to the abandonment: of the older instrument and may explain the preference given by the composers of that epoch to the mean register of the trumpet. The clarino having disappeared before Mozart’s day, he had to. change the trumpet parts of Handel and Bach to allow of their execution by the performers of his own time. It was now that. crooks began to be frequently used. Trumpets were made in F instead of in D, furnished with a series of shanks of increasing length for the tonalities of E, Eh, D, Dp, C, B, Bh, and sometimes. even A.

4 Harmonie Universelle, Paris, 1636.

> Der sich selbst informirende Musicus, Augsburg, 1762, by Lotter.

upon

The first attempts to extend the limited resources of the instru- ment in its new employment arose out of Hampel’s idea of lowering the harmonic sounds by introducing the hand into the bell. But, instead of fixing the

shanks between the mouthpiece and the upper extremity, they were adapted to the body of the instrument itself by a double slide, upon the two branches of which tubes were in- serted bent in the form of a circle and gradually lengthened as required. This modified instrument became known as the “in- vention horn.” This system was applied to the trumpet by Michel Woegel (born at Rastatt in 1748), whose “invention trumpet” had a great success, notwithstanding the unavoidable imperfection of a too great disparity in quality of tone between the open and the closed sounds. The idea of applying the trombone slide to the trumpet is obvious. The slide trumpet is mentioned by T. E. Altenburg,! who compares it, and with reason, to the alto trombone; and there are grounds for identifying it with the “tromba da tirarsi” employed by J. S. Bach in some of his com- positions. The slide trumpet is still used in England in a some- what modified form. About 1760, Kolbel, a Russian musician, applied a key to the horn, and soon afterwards the trumpet re- ceived a similar addition. By opening this key, which is placed near the bell, the instrument was raised a diatonic semitone, and by correcting errors of intonation by the pressure of the lips in the mouthpiece the following diatonic succession was obtained.

ee This invention was improved === = o—*-— in 1801 by Weidinger, trum- : peter to the imperial court at Vienna, who increased the number of keys and thus made the trumpet chromatic thoughout its scale. The instrument shown in the accompanying figure is in G; the keys are five in number, and as they open one after another or in combination

it is possible to connect the second proper tone with the third by chromatic steps, and thus

produce the following succession. The number

———————— of keys

SSS wee ap- — — 2 ew

= : fF = a. plied to

A fill wp the

gaps between the extreme sounds of the interval of a fifth ; and a like result was arrived at more easily for the intervals of the fourth, the major third, &c., furnished by the proper tones of 8, 4, 5, &c. But, though the keyed trumpet was a notable improvement on the invention trumpet, the sounds obtained by means of the lateral open- ings of the tube did not possess the qualities which distinguish sounds caused by the reson- ance of the air-column vibrating in its entirety. But in 1815 Stolzel made a genuine chromatic trumpet PY the invention of the ventile or piston; for this ingenious mechanism, see S ‘Tromsone. The simple trumpet is now no i longer employed except in cavalry regiments, Keyed trumpet. It is usually in Eh. The bass wane in Eb, which is an octave lower, is sometimes, but rarely, used. Trumpets with pistons are generally constructed in F, with crooks in E and Eb. In Ger- many trumpets in the high Bb with a crook in A are very often used in the orchestra. They are easier for cornet A piston players than the trumpet in F. The present writer has recently constructed for the concerts of the Conservatoire at Brussels trumpets in the high D, an octave above the old trumpet in the same key. They permit the execution of the high trumpet parts of Handel and J. 8. Bach. The bass trumpet with pistons used for Wagner’s tetralogy is in Eb, in unison with the ordinary trumpet with crooks of D and C ; but, when constructed so as to allow of the production of the second proper tone as written by this master, this instrument belongs rather to the trombones than to the trumpets. (V. M.) TRUMPET, Speakine anp Hzarine. The speaking trumpet, though some instrument of the kind appears to have been in earlier use in more than one part of the world, 1s connected in its modern form with the name of Athanasius Kircher and that of Sir Samuel Morland, who in 1670 proposed to the Royal Society of London the ques- tion of the best form for a speaking trumpet. Lambert, in the Berlin Memoirs for 1763, seems to have been the first to give a theory of the action of this instrument, based on an altogether imaginary analogy with the behaviour of light. In this theory, which is still commonly put forward, it is assumed that sound, like light, can be propagated in rays.

This, however, is possible only when the aperture through

1 Versuch einer Anleitung zur heroisch-mustkalischen Trompeter- und Pauker-Kunst, Halle, 1795,

which the wave-disturbance passes into free air is large compared with the wave-length. If the fusiform mouth of the speaking trumpet were half a mile or so in radius, Lambert's theory might give an approximation to the truth. But with trumpets whose aperture is only a foot in diameter at most the problem is one of diffraction ; and it has not yet been seriously studied from this point of view.

In the case of the hearing trumpet, the disturbance is propagated along the converging tube much in the same way as the tide-wave is propagated up the estuary of a tidal river.

Until the theory has been rigorously worked out the only safe course to adopt in manufacturing either class of instruments is to be guided by the results of varied trials.

The theoretical foundations of the subject will be found in Lord Rayleigh's Sound and in Sir G. Airy's Tides and Waves, respectively. In speaking and hearing trumpets alike all reverberation of the instrument should be avoided by making it thick and of the least elastic materials, and by covering it externally with cloth.

TRUMPETER, or Trumprt-Birp, the literal rendering in 1747, by the anonymous English translator of De la Condamine's travels in South America (p. 87), of that writer's " Oiseau trompette" (Mém. de l'Acad. des Sciences, 1745, p. 473), which he says was called "Trompetero " by the Spaniards of Maynas on the upper Amazons, from the peculiar sound it utters. He added that it was the '"Agami" of the inhabitants of Para and Cayenne," wherein he was not wholly accurate, since those birds are specifically distinct, though, as they are generically united, the state- ment may pass. But he was also wrong, as had been Barrere (France Equinowiale, p. 132) in 1741, in identify- ing the "Agami" with the "Macucagua" of Marcgrave,

ep STG

— = SSS SS : — Wie — (E Steep —__ . sage

White-winged trumpeter (Psophia leucoptera). After Mitchell.

for that is a TrnaMmou (q.v.); and both still more wrongly accounted for the origin of the peculiar sound just men- tioned, whereby Barrere was soon after led (Ornith. Spec. Novum, pp. 62, 63) to apply to the bird the generic and vulgar names of Psophia and " Petteuse," the former of which, being unfortunately adopted by Linneeus, has ever since been used, though in 1766 and 1767 Pallas (Miscel- lanea, p. 67, and Spicilegia, iv. p. 6), and in 1768 Vosmer (Descr. du Trompette Américain, p. 5), showed that the

2 Not to be confounded with the "Heron Agami" of Buffon (Oiseaux, vii. p. 382), which is the Ardea agami of other writers.

notion it conveys is erroneous. Among English writers the name "Trumpeter" was carried on by Latham and others so as to be generally accepted, though an author may occasionally be found willing to resort to the native 'A gami," which is that almost always used by the French.

Messrs Sclater and Salvin in their Nomenclator (p. 141) admit 6 species of Trumpet-Birds—(1) the original Psophia crepitans of Guiana ; (2) P. napensis of eastern Ecuador (which is very likely the original ''Oiseau trompette" of De la Condamine) ; (3) P. ochroptera from the right bank of the Rio Negro ; (4) P. lewcoptera from the right bank of the upper Amazons ; (5) P. viridis from the right bank of the Madeira; and (6) P. obscwra from the right bank of the lower Amazons near Para. And they have remarked in the Zoological Proceedings (1867, p. 592) on the curious fact that the range of the several species appears to be separated by rivers, a statement confirmed by Mr Wallace (Geogr. Distr. Animals, ii. p. 358) ; and in connexion therewith it may be observed that these birds have short wings and seldom fly, but run, though with a peculiar gait, very quickly. A seventh species, P. cantatrix, from Bolivia, has since been indicated by Prof. W. Blasius (Journ. f. Ornith., 1884, pp. 208-210), who has given a monographic summary of the whole group very worthy of attention. The chief distinctions between the species lie in colour and size, and it will be here enough to describe briefly the best known of them, P. crepitans. This is about the size of a large barndoor Fowl ; but its neck and legs are longer, so

that it is a taller bird. The head and neck are clothed with short velvety: feathers ; the whole plumage is black, except that on the lower front of the neck the feathers are tipped with golden green, changing according to the light into violet, and that a patch of dull rusty brown extends across the middle of the back and wing-coverts, passing into ash-colour lower down, where they hang over and conceal the tail. The legs are bright pea-green. The habits of this bird are very wonderful, and it is much to be wished that fuller accounts of them had appeared. The curious sound it utters, noticed by the earliest observers, has been already mentioned, and by them also was its singularly social disposition towards man described ; but the information supplied to Buffon (Oiseaux, iv. pp. 496-501) by Manoncour and De la Borde, which has been repeated in many works, is still the best we have of the curious way in which it becomes semi-domesticated by the Indians and colonists and shows strong affection for its owners as well as for their living property—poultry or sheep—though in this re- claimed condition it seems never to breed.1 Indeed nothing can be positively asserted as to its mode of nidification ; but its eggs, according to Mr E. Bartlett, are of a creamy white, rather round, and about the size of Bantams'. Waterton in his Vanderings (Second Journey, chap. iii.) speaks of falling in with flocks of 200 or 800 ‘‘ Waracabas,” as he called them, in Demerara, but added nothing to our knowledge of the species; while the contributions of Trail (Mem. Wern. Society, v. pp. 528-532) and Dr Hancock (Mag. Nat. History, ser. 2, ii. pp. 490-492) as regards its habits only touch upon them in captivity.

To the Trumpeters must undoubtedly be accorded the rank of a distinct Family, Psophiide ; but like so many other South-American birds they seem to be the less specialized descendants of an ancient generalized group — perhaps the common ancestors of the Aalhde and Gruidx—and they are therefore rightly placed in Prof. Huxley's Geranomorphe.? The structure of the syrinx is stated by Trail (ut supra) to be quite unique; but his description of it is unsatisfactory, and he clearly had not an adult male to dissect or he would have hardly failed to notice the curious arrangement of the trachea in that sex made known by Hancock (ut supra). This, though different from that described in any CRANE (q.v.), sug- gests an early form of the structure which in some of the Gruidx is so marvellously developed, for in Psophia the windpipe runs down the breast and belly immediately under the

skin to within about an inch of the anus, whence it returns in a similar way to the front of the sternum, and then enters the thorax. Analogous instances of this forma- tion occur in several other groups of birds not at all

1 In connexion herewith may be mentioned the singular story told by Montagu (Orn. Dict., Suppl. Art. ‘‘ Grosbeak, White-winged”’), on the authority of the then Lord Stanley, afterwards president of the Zoological Society, of one of these birds, which, having apparently escaped from confinement, formed the habit of attending a poultry- yard. On the occasion of a pack of hounds running through the yard, the Trumpeter joined and kept up with them for nearly three miles !

2 Cf. Parker, Trans. Zool. Soc., x. p. 502 sq.

allied to the Psophiide. The skeleton and some of the detached bones are figured in Eyton’s Osteol. Avium (pls. xxix, and 5 R). (a. N.) TRURO, a city, municipal borough, and port of Corn- wall, England, is situated on a kind of peninsula formed by the rivers Allen and Kenwyn, which below the town unite with a branch of Falmouth harbour called Truro ereek or river. Truro is 300 miles south-west of London by the Great Western Railway, and 11 north of Falmouth, to which theré is a branch line. The town is regularly built, chiefly of granite, with spacious streets, through the principal of which there flows a stream of water. The new cathedral of St Mary by Mr Pearson, R.A., one of the most important modern ecclesiastical buildings in England, is a fine example of Early English at its best period. The old south aisle of the church previously existing is ingeniously incorporated in the new edifice. The secular buildings include the town-hall and market-house in the Italian style (1846), the corn exchange, the theatre, the public rooms, the music-hall, and the county library (1792). There is also a theological library, presented by Bishop Phillpotts in 1856 and largely augmented by a bequest of books in 1883. Among the educational and benevolent institutions are the grammar-school (founded by a member of the Borlase family, and having two exhibitions at Exeter College, Oxford), the cathedral divinity schools, the Wesleyan middle schools, the literary institution, the royal Cornwall infirmary, the dispensary, and a hospital for ten widows. There is sufficient depth of water in the channel of Truro creek to permit

vessels of 70 tons burden to come up to the town quay. The principal imports are coal from Wales and timber from Norway, and the exports consist of tin, iron ores, lead, and zinc, from the mines in the neighbourhood. The population of the municipal borough (area 1171 acres) in 1871 was 11,049, and 10,619 in 1881.

Truro is one of the oldest towns in England. It is the seat of the stannary and other courts connected with the duchy of Corn- wall (see CORNWALL, vol. vi. p. 427). It was one of the ancient — privileged tin coinage towns. Anciently it was called Tueura, Treura, and Truruburgh. It was a borough by prescription, but was incorporated by Reginald, earl of Cornwall. in the 12th cen- tury it belonged to Richard de Lucy. Ina charter of Henry VII. it is called the ‘‘ ville de Teuro.” The government was vested in a mayor and burgesses by Elizabeth, who gave the corporation juris- diction over the port of Falmouth, the port dues of that town being collected by them until its incorporation by Charles II. Norden, writing of Truro in 1574, says, “there is not a towne in the west part of the shire more commendable for neatness of buyldinges, nor more discommendable for the pride of the people.” In 1642 Sir Ralph Hopton levied here a large body of men for the king. By the Municipal Act Truro was divided into two wards, and is governed by a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen councillors. The corporation act as the urban sanitary authority. Truro sent two represent- atives to parliament from the 23d year of Edward I., but ceased to be separately represented in 1885. By Act 89 and 40 Vict. c. 54 it was constituted the head of a new diocese comprising the archdeaconry of Cornwall.

TRUST. In Roman and English law alike that legal relation between two or more persons implied in the word trust was of comparatively late growth. The trust of English law is probably based upon a combination of the Roman conceptions of wsus and jfidercommissum. To usus is perhaps due the name as well as the idea of that right over property, coordinate with the right of the nominal owner, possessed by the person having the use. To jidecommissum appears to be due the name as well as the idea of that confidence reposed in another which is the essence of the modern trust. Usus was in Roman law a personal servitude, or right of one person over the land of another, confined to his personal wants and without the right to the produce and profits which wsusfructus carried. It has little in common

with the use of English law but the name and the conception of a dual ownership. The jidetcom- missum 18 more important; see Roman Law, vol. xx. p.

596

707. By the legislation of Justinian the law of legata was practically assimilated to that of jideccommissa. The only thing that distinguished the one from the other was the mode in which the gift was made: if by words of direct bequest, it was a legatum, if by precatory words, a Jideicommissum. It may be noticed, as an illustration of the course afterwards taken by the law in England, that Jideicommissa in favour of the church were so far favoured over others that if paid over by mistake they could not be recovered. In addition to wsus and jideicommissum, the Roman division of ownership into quiritary and bonitary (to use words invented at a later time) may perhaps to some extent have suggested the English division into legal and equitable estate. The two kinds of ownership were amalgamated by Justinian. Legal and equitable estate are still distinct in England, though attempts have been made in the direction of amalgamation. The gradual manner in which the beneficiary becanie subject to the burdens attaching to the property of which he enjoyed the benefit was a feature common to both the Roman and the

English system.

Uses in Early English Law.—The use or trust} is said to have been the invention of ecclesiastics well acquainted with Roman law, the object being to escape the provisions of the laws against MorrMAIN (g.v.) by obtaining the conveyance of an estate to a friend on the understanding that they should retain the use, 4.¢., the actual profit and enjoyment of the estate. Uses were soon ex- tended to other purposes. They were found valuable for the defeat, of creditors, the avoiding of attainder, and the charging of portions. A use had also the advantage of being free from the incidents of feudal tenure: it could be alienated inter vivos by secret conveyance, and could be devised by will. In many cases the feoffee? to uses, as he was called, or the person seised to the use of another, seems to have been specially chosen on account of his rank and station, which would enable him to defy the common law and protect the estate of his cestut gue use, or

the person entitled to the beneficial enjoyment. The Act of 1 Ric. Il. c, 9 was directed against the choice of such persons. This alienation of land in use was looked upon with great disfavour by the common law courts, in whose eyes the cestui que use was only a tenant at will. Possibly the ground of their refusal to recognize uses was that the assizes of the

ing's court could only be granted to persons who stood in a feudal relation to the king. The denial of the right followed the denial of the remedy. The use was on the other hand supported by the Court of Chancery, and execution of the confidence reposed in the feoffee to uses was enforced by the court in virtue of the general jurisdiction which as a court of conscience it claimed to exercise over breach of faith. Jurisdiction was no doubt the more readily assumed by ecclesiastical judges in favour of a system by which the church was generally the gainer. A double ownership of land thus gradually arose, the nominal and ostensible ownership,—the only one acknowledged in the courts of common law,—and the beneficial ownership protected by the Court of Chancery. The reign of Henry V. to a great extent corresponds with that of Augustus at Rome, as the point of time at which legal recognition was given to what had previously been binding only in honour. The means of bringing the feoffee to uses before the court was the writ of subpena, said to have been invented by John de Waltham, bishop of Salis- bury and master of the rolls in the reign of Richard II. By means of this writ the feoffee to uses could be compelled to answer on oath the claim of his cestui que use. The doctrine of the Court of Chancery as to the execution of a use varied according as there was transmutation of possession or not. In the former case it was unnecessary to prove consideration ; in the latter, generally a case of bargain and sale, the court would not enforce the use unless it was executed in law,—that is, unless there was a valuable considera- tion, even of the smallest amount. Where no consideration could be proved or implied, the use resulted to the feoffor. This theory led to the insertion up to a recent date in deeds (especially in the lease of the lease and release period of conveyancing) of a nominal consideration, generally five shillings. Lands either in possession, Teversion, or remainder could be granted in use. Most persons could be feoffees to uses. The king and corporations aggregate

1 Use seems to be an older word than trust, Its first occurrence in statute law is in 7 Ric. II. c. 12, in the form eps. In Littleton ‘‘con- fidence” is the word employed. The Statute of Uses seems to regard use, trust, and confidence as synonymous. According to Bacon, it was its permanency that distinguished the use from the trust.

? Feoffment, though the usual, was not the only mode of conveyance to uses. The preamble of the Statute of Uses mentions fines and re- coveries, and other assurances,

TR Us?

were, however, exceptions, and were entitled to hold the lands dis- charged of the use. On the accession of Richard III., who from his position of authority had been a favourite feoffee, it was necessary to pass a special Act (1 Ric. III. c. 5), vesting the lands of which he had been feoffee either in his co-feoffees or, in the absence of co- feoffees, in the cestui que use. The practical convenience of uses was so obvious that it is said that by the reign of Henry VII. most of the land in the kingdom was held in use. The freedom of uses from liability to forfeiture for treason must have led to their general adoption during the Wars of the Roses. The secrecy with which a use could be transferred, contrary as it was to the publicity required for livery of SEIsrn (¢.v.) at common law, led to the inter- ference of the legislature on several occasions between the reigns of Richard II. and Henry VIII., the general tendency of the legislation being to make the cestui que usemoreand more subject to the burdens incident to the ownership of land. One of the most important statutes was the Statute of Mortmain (15 Ric. II. ¢. 5), forbidding evasion of the Statute De Religiosis of Edward I. by means of feoff- ments to uses. Other Acts enabled the cestui que use to transfer the use without the concurrence of the feoffee to uses (1 Ric. III. c. 1), made a writ of formedon maintainable against him (1 Hen. VII. e. 1), rendered his heir liable to wardship and relief (4 Hen. VII. c. 17), and his lands liable to execution (19 Hen. VII. c. 15). At length in 1535 the famous Statute of Uses (27 Hen. VIII. c. 10) was passed.* The preamble of the statute enumerates the mischiefs which it was considered that the universal prevalence of uses had occa- sioned, among others that by fraudulent feoffments, fines, recoveries, and other like assurances to uses, confidences,

and trusts lords lost their feudal aids, men their tenancies by the curtesy, women their dower, manifest perjuries in trials were committed, the king lost the profits of the lands of persons attainted or enfeoffed to the use of aliens, and the king and lords their rights of year, day, and waste, and of escheats of felons' lands. To remedy this state of things it was enacted, inter alia, that, where any person was seised of any here- ditaments to the use, confidence, or trust of any other person by any means, the person having such use, confidence, or trust should be seised, deemed, and adjudged in lawful seisin, estate, and possession of such hereditaments. Full legal remedies were given to the cestui que use by the statute. He was enabled to distrain for a rent charge, to have action, entry, condition, &c. The effect of this enactment was to make the cestui que use the owner at law as well as in equity (as had been done once before under the ex- ceptional circumstances which led to 1 Ric. III. oc. 5), provided that the use was one which before the statute would have been en- forced by the Court of Chancery. For some time after the passing of the statute an equitable as distinct from a legal estate did not exist. But the somewhat narrow construction of the statute by the common law courts in Tyrrel's case® (1557) enabled estates cognizable only in equity to be again created. In that case it was held that a use upon a use could not be executed; therefore in a feoffment to A and his heirs to the use of B and his heirs to the use of C and his heirs only the first use was executed by the statute. The use of B being executed in him, that of C was not acknowledged by the common law judges; but equity regarded C as beneficially entitled, and his interést as an equitable estate held for him in trust, corresponding to that which B would have had before the statute. The position taken by the Court of Chancery in trusts may be compared with that taken in MorTGacE (q.v.). The Judicature Act, 1873, while not going as far as the Statute of Uses and combining the legal and equitable estates, makes equit- able rights cognizable in all courts. From the decision in Tyrrel's case dates the whole modern law of uses and trusts. In modern legal language use is restricted to the creation of legal estate under the Statute of Uses, trust is confined to the equitable estate of the cestui que trust or beneficiary.

Uses since 1535.—The Statute of Uses is still the basis of con- veyancing. A grant in a deed is still, after the alterations in the law made by the Conveyancing Act, 1881, made ''to and to the use of A." The statute does

not, however, apply indiscriminately to all cases, as only certain uses are executed by it. It does not apply to leaseholds or copyholds, or to cases where the grantee to uses is anything more than a mere passive instrument, ¢.g., where there is any direction to him to sell the property. The seisin, too, to be executed by the statute, must be in another than him who has the use, for where A is seised to the use of A it is a common law grant. The difference is important as far as regards the doctrine of PossEssIon (g.v.). Constructive possession is given by a deed operating under the statute even before entry, but not by a common law grant (at any rate sufficient to entitle the grantee to be registered as a voter), until actual receipt of rent by the

3 The use, as in later times the trust, was, however, forfeited to the crown on attainder of the feoffee or trustee for treason.

+ It was adopted in Ireland exactly a century later by 10 Car. I. ce. 1 (Ir.), The law of uses and trusts in Ireland is practically the same as that in England, the main differences being in procedure rather than in substantive law. ® Dyer's Reports, 155a.

grantee. The operation of the Statute of Uses was supplemented by the Statute of Inrolments and that of Wills. (See Writ.) The Statute of Inrolments (27 Hen. VIII. c. 16) enacted that no bargain and sale should pass a freehold unless by deed indented and inrolled within six months after its date in one of the courts at Westminster or with the custos rotulorwm of the county. As the statute referred only to freeholds, a bargain and sale of a lease- hold interest passed without inrolment. Conveyancers took advan- tage of this omission (whether intentional or not) in the Act, and the practical effect of it was to introduce a mode of secret aliena- tion of real property, the lease and release, which was the general form of conveyance up to 1845. (See Rau Estars, SALe.) Thus the publicity of transfer, which it was the special object of the Statute of Uses to effect, was almost at once defeated. In addition to the grant to uses there were other modes of conveyance under the statute which are now obsolete in practice, viz., the covenant to stand seised and the bargain and sale. Under the statute, as before it, the use has been found a valuable means of limiting a remainder to the person creating the use and of making an estate take effect in

derogation of a former estate by means of a shifting or springing use. At common law a freehold could not be made to commence in futuro; but this end may be attained bya shifting use, such as a grant (common in marriage settlements) to A to the use of B in fee simple until a marriage, and after the celebration of the marriage to other uses. An example of a springing use would be a grant to A to such uses as B should appoint and in default of and until appointment to C in fee simple. The difficulty of deciding where the seisin was during the suspension of the use led to the invention of the old theory of scintilla juris, or continued possibility of seisin in the grantee to uses. This theory was abolished by 28 and 24 Vict. c. 38, which enactcd that all uses should take effect by force of the estate and seisin originally vested in the person seised to the uses. The most frequent instances of a springing use are powers of appointment, usual in wills and settlements. There has been ei legislation on the subject of powers, the main effect of which has been to give greater facilities for their execution, release, or abandonment, to aid their defective execution, and to abolish the old doctrine of illusory appointments.

Trusts. —A trust in English law is defined by Mr Lewin, adopt- ing Coke's definition of a use, as ''a confidence reposed in some other, not issuing out of the land, but as a thing collateral, annexed in privity to the estate of the land, and to the person touching the land, for which cestui que trust has no remedy but by swbhpena in Chancery." The term trust or trust estate is also used to denote the beneficial interest of the cestui que trust. The term éruster is not used, as it is in Scotland, to denote the creator of the trust.

tive trust. The present law governing trusts rests upon the doc- trines of equity as altered by legislation. Its great importance has led to its becoming one of the most highly developed departments of equity. The devolution of successive interests in wills and settlements is almost wholly attained by means of trusts.

Who may be a Trustee or Cestui que Trust.—The modern trust is considerably more extensive in its operation than the ancient use. Thus the crown and corporations aggregate can be trustees, and personalty can be held in trust. Provision is made by the Muni- cipal Corporations Act, 1882,

for the administration of charitable and special trusts by municipal corporations. The crown does not appear to be a trustee to as complete a degree as a subject may be. Unsuccessful attempts have recently been made to impress the crown, or a secretary of state as agent of the crown, with trusts of funds voted by parliament for the public service, of booty of war granted by royal warrant, and of money paid over by a foreign state in pursuance of a treaty. There are certain persons who for obvious reasons, even if not legally disqualified, ought not to be appointed trustees. Such are infants, lunatics, persons domiciled abroad, felons, bankrupts, and cestwis que trustent. The appointment of any such person, or the falling of any existing trustee into such a position, is generally ground for application to the court for ap- pointment of a new trustee in his place. Any one may be a cestui que trust except a corporation aggregate, which cannot be a cestui que trust of real estate without a licence from the crown.

Creation and Extinction of the Trust.—A trust may be created either by act of a party or by operation of law. Where a trust is created by act of a party, the creation at common law ueed not be in writing. The Statute of Frauds (see FRAvuD) altered the common law by enacting that all declarations or creations of trusts or con- fidences of any lands, tenements, or hereditaments shall be mani- fested and proved by some writing, signed by the party who is by law enabled to declare such trust, or by his last will in writing, or else they shall be utterly void and of none effect. Trusts arising or resulting by implication or construction of law are excepted, and it has been held that the statute applies only to real estate and chattels real, so that a trust of personal chattels may still be declared by parol. The declaration of a trust by the crown must be by letters patent. Trusts created by will must conform to the require- ments of the Wills Act (see WiLL). Except in the case of charitable trusts, the cestui que trust must be a definite person. A trust, for instance, merely for keeping up family tombs is void. Alteration of the trust estate by appointment of a new trustee could up to 1860 only be made where the instrument creating the trust gave a power to so appoint, or by order of the Court of Chaucery. But now by the Conveyancing Act, 1881 (superseding Lord St Leonards's Act of 1860), the surviving or continuing trustee or trustees, or the personal representative of the last surviving or continuing trustee, may nominate in writing a new trustee or new trustees. On such appointment the number of trustees may be increascd. Existing

trustees may by deed consent to the discharge of a trustee wishing to retire. Trust property may be vestcd in new or continuing trustees by a simple declaration to that effect. By the Conveyancing Act, 1882, a separate set of trustees may be appointed for any part of the property held on distinct trusts. Trusts created by opera- tion of law are either those which are the effect of the application of rules of equity or those which have been constituted by a judicial authority. They include resulting and constructive trusts. A resulting trust is a species of implied trust, and consists of so much of the equitable interest as is undisposed of by the instrument creating the trust, which is said to result to the creator and his representatives. An example is the purchase of an estate in the name of the purchaser aud others, or of others ouly. Here the beneficial interest is the purchaser's. An example of a constructive trust is a renewal of a lease by a trustee in his own name, where the trustee is held to be constructively a trustee for those interested in the beneficial term. An instance of a constructive trust upon which the courts have often been called upon to decide is the fiduciary relation between the promoter of a proposed joint-stock company and the members of the company when formed. The other trusts falling under the head of trusts by operation of law would be those imposed upon a trustee by order of a court, even though they are imposed in pursuance of provisions contained in a trust created by a party. Such would be the trusts which have come within the cognizance of the court by virtue of the Trustee Act, 1850, or in any other way. The powers of the court over trusts have been much extended by legislation. The Act of 1850 (13 and 14 Vict. c. 60) enabled the Court of Chancery to appoint new trustees where expedient, and to make vesting orders in many cases where such orders could not previously have been made, as where a trustee was a lunatic, or an infant, or refused to convey. This Act was extended by the Trustee Extension Act, 1852 (15 and 16 Vict. c. 55). By the Conveyancing Act, 1881, a trustec ap- pointed by the Chancery Division is to have the same powers as if he had been originally appointed a trustee by the instrument creating the trust. The Bankruptcy Act, 1883, enables the court to appoint a new trustee in the place of a bankrupt trustee. Be-

sides being duly created, it is necessary for the validity of the trust that it should be a lawful one. An unlawful trust is one which contravenes the-policy of the law in any respect. Examples of such trusts are trusts for a corporation without licence, for a per- petuity, and for purposes subversive of morality, such as trusts for illegitimate children to be hereafter born. Superstitious uses (see RoMAN CATHOLIC CuuRCcH, vol. xx. p. 632) also fall under this head. There are also certain trusts which are avoided by statute under particular circumstances, such as settlements in fraud of creditors (see BANKRUPTCY, SETTLEMENT). The law cannot be evaded by attempting to constitute a secret trust for an unlawful purpose. If an estate be devised by words prima facie carrying the beneficial interest, with an understanding that the devisee will hold the estate in trust for such a purpose, he may be compelled to answer as to the secret trust, and on acknowledgment or proof of it there will be a resulting trust to the heir-at-law. In the case of an advowson suspected to be held for the benefit of a Roman Catholic patron, there is a special enactment to the same effect (see QUARE ImpEpiT). The rules of equity in charitable trusts (whieh include all those mentioned in the preamble to 48 Eliz. ¢, 4)l are less strict than those adopted in private trusts. Charitable trusts must be lawful, e.g., they must not contravene the Statutes of Mortmain; but a wider latitude of construction is allowed in order to carry out the intentions of the founder, and they will not be allowed to fail for want or uncertainty of objects to be benefited. The court, applying the doctrine of ey prés, will, on failure of the original ground of the charity, apply the funds as nearly as possible in the same manner. On this principle gifts originally made for purely charitable purposes have been extended to educational pur- poses. Further, trustees of a charity may act by a majority, but ordinary trustees cannot by the act of a majority (unless specially empowered so to do) bind a dissenting minority or the trust pro-

erty. A trust estate is subject as far as possible to the rules of fie applicable to a legal estate of a corresponding nature, in pur- suance of the maxim, ‘‘ Equity follows the law.” Thus trust pro- perty is assets for payment of debts, may be taken in execution, passes to creditors in bankruptcy, and is subject to dower and curtesy, to the rules against perpetuities, and to the Statutes of Limitation. This assimilation of the legal and equitable estates has been produced partly by judicial decisions, partly by legisla- tion. A trust is

extinguished, as it is created, either by act of a party or by operation of law. An example of the former mode of extinction is a release by deed, the general means of discharge of a trustee when the purposes of the trust have been accomplished. Extinction by operation of law takes place when there is a failure of the objects of the trust: ¢.g., if the cestui que trust die intestate without heirs or next of kin, the trustee retains the property dis- charged of the trust if it be real estate, if it be personalty it falls to the crown. Equitable interests in real estate abroad are asa rule subject to the lex loci rei site, and an English court has no jurisdiction to enforce a trust or settle a scheme for the administra- tion of a charity in a foreign country. An English court has, however, jurisdiction to administer the trusts of a will as to the whole real and personal estate of a testator, even though only a very small part of the estate, and that wholly personal, is in England. ae a decided by the House of Lords in a well-known case in

hights and Duties of the Trustee.—The principal general properties of the office of trustee, as given by Mr Lewin, are these :—(1) A trustee having once accepted the trust cannot afterwards renounce. (2) He cannot delegate it. (8) In the case of co-trustees the office must be exercised by all the trustees jointly. (4) On the death of one trustee there is survivorship: that is, the trust will pass to the survivors or survivor. (5) One trustee shall not be liable for the acts of his co-trustee. (6) A trustce shall derive no personal benefit from the trusteeship. The office cannot be renounced or delegated, because it is one of personal confidence. It can, however, be resigned, and recent legislation, as has been already stated, has given a retiring trustee large powers of appointing a successor. In the case of the death ofa single or last surviving trustee of real estate, the trust estate by the Conveyancing Act, 1881, now devolves upon his personal representative instead of upon his heir or devisee. The liability of one trustee for the acts or defaults of another often raises very difficult questions. A difference is made between trustees and executors. An executor is liable for joining in a receipt pro forma, as it is not necessary for him to do so, one executor having authority to act without his co-executor ; a trustee can show that he only joined for conformity, and that another received the money. A trustee’s receipt in writing is, under the Conveyancing Act, 1881 (superseding Lord St Leonards’s Act of 1860), a sufficient discharge, and exonerates the person paying from seeing that the money paid is duly applied according to the

trust. If one trustee be cognizant of a breach of trust committed by another, and conceal it or do not take active measures to protect the cestui que trust's interests, he will be liable for the breach of trust. An indemnity

‘ See Craritigs, where the preamble of the statute is set out in full, Ewing v. Orr-Ewing, Law Reports, 9 Appeal Cases, 34,

PEUs tg

clause is now implied by statute in every trust deed, but this does not protect a trustec against liability which would attach at law. A trustee, if he commit a breach of trust at the request of his cestui que trust, may secure himself by an indemnity, provided that the cestui que trust has been fully informed of the facts of the case, and is not under any disability to consent, such as infancy. The rule that a trustee is not to benefit by his office is subject to some ex- ceptions. He may do so if the instrument creating him trustee. specially allows him remuneration, as is usually the case where a solicitor is appointcd. Where the trust entirely fails, as has been said above, the trustee is indirectly remunerated by his right to retain the trust estate. The main duties of trustees are to place the trust property in a proper state of security, to keep it (if per- sonalty) in safe custody, and to properly invest and distribute it. A trustee must be careful not to place himself in a position where his interest might elash with his duty. Asa rule he cannot safely purchase from his cestui que trust while the fiduciary relation exists between them. In all purchases with trust money he is bound to obtain the best price, unless where an Act of Parliament, like the Housing of the Working Classes Act, 1885, specially authorizes sale at an under value. Investments by trustees demand special notice. The general rule is that a trustee must take as much care of the trust property as of his own. He is, therefore, justified in following the usual course of business adopted by prudent men in making investments, ¢.g., by employing a stock-broker in the ordinary way. At the same time he has not an uncontrolled power of investment, for (unless authorized by the instrument creating the trust) he cannot lend trust money on personal security or invest in shares of a private company. A trustee of shares may be liable as a beneficial owner, even though his name appears on the register of the company as a trustee. By recent legislation trust- ees, where not expressly forbidden by the

instrument creating the trust, have either an absolute or qualified right to invest in certain securities. They have an absolute right to invest in real sccurities in the United Kingdom (but not on a second mortgage), in charges or mortgages under the Improvement of Land Act, 1864, in con- sols, exchequer bills, or any security the interest whereon is guar- anteed by parliament, in Bank of England, Bank of Ireland, East India, and Metropolitan Board of Works stock. They have a qualified power of investment (that is, an extension of powers already given in the instrument) in debentures or debenture stock of railway and other companies, and of corporations and local authorities under the Local Loans Act, 1875, in mortgage deben- tures under the Mortgage Debenture Acts of 1865 and 1870, and in securities of the Isle of Man Government. Trustees under the Settled Land Act, 1882, have somewhat larger powers as to railway stock, In many cases there are restrictions on investment in stock certificates payable to bearer, although in authorized securities. A power of varying investments is generally implied, though not expressly given by statute, as in Scotland. The duties of trustees in the distribution of trust fands have been made less onerous by the Trustee Relief Acts of 1847 and 1849, which: enabled trustees or a majority of them to pay into the Bank of England to the account of the particular trust any moneys belonging to the trust, thus bringing the property within the jurisdiction of the court, from which it can only be obtained on petition. Similar powers were conferred upon trustees of charities by 18 and 19 Vict. c. 124. By more recent Acts (22 and 23 Vict. c. 85, 23 and 24 Vict. c. 88) application for advice may be made by a trustee to a judge of the . Chancery Division on a petition or summons. The liability of a trustee to his cestui que trust on any claim for property held on an express trust or in respect of breach of such trust is not barred by any statute of limitations, 86 and 37 Vict. c. 66, s. 26 (2). The powers of trustees have lately been considerably extended by the Conveyancing Act, 1881, and the Settled Land Act, 1882, in other matters besides those that have been already noticed. One of the most important of the new powers is that of compounding, compromising, or abandoning claims relating to the trust. For the trustee in bankruptcy, see BANKRUPTCY. The trustee to pre- serve contingent remainders, at one time common in conveyancing, has ceased to be necessary (see REMAINDER, TERM). A bare trustee is one to whose office no duties were originally attached, or who, though such duties were attached, would

on the requisition of the cestui que trust be compellable to convey the estate to him or by his direction. The term is used in some Acts of Parliament, for instance the Vendor and Purchaser Act, 1874.8

Rights and Duties of the Cestut que Trust.—These may be to a great extent deduced from what has been already said as to the correlative duties and rights of the trustee. The cestui que trust has a general right to the due management of the trust property, to proper accounts, and to enjoyment of the profits. He can asa rule only act with the concurrence of the trustec, unless he seeks a remedy against the trustee himself. Thus the trustee must be a party to an action brought in respect of the trust estate, and must join in presenting a petition in bankruptey on aceount of a debt

3 The phrase ‘‘ bare trust” oceurs as long ago as 1686, Nevil v. Saunders, 1 Vernon’s Rep., 415.

due to the estate, but the cestui que trust on giving indemnity can require the trustee to lend his name asa party. He may also require the trustee to execute conveyances of the legal estate according to his dircctions. Trust property, if parted with by the trustee in fraud of the trust may be followed by the cestui que trust, even into the hands of a purchaser for value with notice of the trust. The cestui que trust may lose his rights by fraud, by laches, and by concurrence or acquiescence in a breach of trust. Though no lapse of time bars his remedy against the trustee personally, he cannot, by the terms of the Real Property Limitation Act, 1874, recover land or rent vested in a trustee upon an express trust after twelve years from the time when the right accrued or six years after the cesser of any disability. The equitable right of the cestui que trust has sometimes been recognized by statute in cases where it would be manifestly unjust that he should suffer dis- ability by virtue of his having merely an equitable interest. The cestui que trust has the right of voting for members of parliament, and is qualified to serve as a juror. On bankruptcy of the trustee the trust estate is not affected. Nor was it affected even before the Felony Act, 1870, by the conviction and attainder of the trustee for felony. Attainder of the trustee for treason involved, however, forfeiture of a trust estate of inheritance. (See TrEa- son.) The recognition of the cestui que trust as owner is still not

complete. Thus no notice of a trust is recognized in certain public documents, as the books of the Bank of England and the registers kept under the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, the Com- panies Act, 1862, the Land Transfer Act, 1875, and the Colonial Stock Act, 1877.

Procedure.—This is regulated almost entirely by legislation. Proceedings relating to a trust may be brought in different courts of first iustance,—(1) the Chancery Division of the High Court of Justice or the Chancery Court of the County Palatine of Lancaster, (2) a court of bankruptcy, (3) a county court, (4) a criminal court. (1) By the Judicature Act, 1878, § 34, the execution of trusts, charitable or private, is assigned to the Chancery Division. The rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, provide for special indorse- ment in an action on a trust, for the partics to the action, for interrogatories and pleading, and for proceeding by originating summons. (See Summons.) Forms of pleading are given in the appendix to the rules. An injunction rather than an action may sometimes be the proper remedy, as in the case of threatened breach of trust. The Trustee Relief Acts, the Trustee Act, and Lord St Leonards's Act of 1859 provide for proceeding by petition or sum- mons. Applications under the Conveyancing Act must be in chambers in the first instance, and so must applications under the Trustee Relief Acts where the money or securities in court do not exceed £1000 or £1000 nominal value. The procedure in charit- able trusts differs to some extent from that in use in private trusts. The most usual course of proceeding is by information in the name of the attorney-general, Another mode is by petition under Sir Samuel Romilly's Act, 52 Geo. III. c. 101, superseding the cumbrous procedure by commission which had been previously in use under 43 Eliz. c. 4. A third mode is under the powers of the Charitable Trusts Acts, the first of which was passed in 1853. No proceeding under these Acts can be taken without the authority of the charity commissioners. (2) The equitable debt duc from the trustee to the cestui que trust will support a petition in bankruptcy, and is a debt provable in bankruptcy. An order of discharge in bankruptcy does not release the bankrupt from any debt or liability incurred by means of fraudulent breach of trust, nor does it release a co-trustee of the bankrupt. (3) The County Courts Equitable Jurisdiction Act, 1865, confers on county courts the authority of the High Court in the execution of trusts and proceedings under the Trustee Acts where the trust estate does not exceed £500 in amount or

value. By the County Courts Act, 1867, applications may be made at chambers for transfer to a county court of an action pending in the High Court where the property does not exceed £500 in amount or value. The same Act allows trust funds not exceeding that limit to be paid into the post office savings bank in a county court town in the name of the registrar. A county court has jurisdiction in charitable trusts where the income of a charity does not exceed £50. The county court rules, 1886, contain orders regulating the practice with respect to both private and charitable trusts. Powers similar to those given to county courts in England have been conferred upon the civil bill courts in Ireland. (4) At common law trustees committing a fraudulent breach of trust could not be punished criminally. This was altered by the Fraudulent Trustees Act of 1857, now superseded by the Larceny Act, 1861, under which a trustee on an express trust, whether public or private, created by dced, will, or instru- ment in writing, who with intent to defraud converts to his own use or benefit or the use or benefit of any other person than the cestui que trust, or for any purpose other than the public or charit- able purpose, or otherwise disposes of or destroys such property or any part thereof, is guilty of misdemeanour and punishable with penal servitude for a term not exceeding seven years. No prosecu- tion is to be commenced without the sanction of the attorney-

general or—where civil proceedings have been already taken against the trustee—without the sanction of the civil court. The offence cannot be prosccuted at quarter sessions. !

Scotland.—The history of the law differs considerably from that of England, though perhaps the position of the Scotch trustee is now not very different from that of the trustee in England. The Statute of Uses did not apply to Scotland, since neither that nor any similar legislation was necessary in a system in which law and equity were administered by the same tribunals. Trusts seem to have existed from time immemorial, and have been frequently regulated by statute. The policy of the English Statute of Frauds was no doubt intentionally imitated in the Act 1696, c. 25, enacting that no action of declarator of trust should be sustained as to any deed of trust made for thereafter, except upon a declaration or back- bond of

trust lawfully subscribed by the person alleged to be trustee and against whom or his heirs or assignees the declarator should be intended, or unless the same were referred to the oath of the party simpliciter. The Act does not apply to all cases, but only to those in which by the act of parties documents of title are in the name of a trustee, but the beneficial interest in another. The person creating the trust is called the trustcr, a term unknown in England. On the other hand the term cestwi que trust is unknown in Scotland. The office of trustee is prima facie gratuitous, as in England, it being considered to fall under the contract of mandate. Some of the main differences between English and Scotch law are these. There is no presumption in Scotland of a resulting trust in favour of a purchaser. A trust which lapses by the failure of a beneficiary goes to the crown as wltimus heres, not to the trustee. The office of trustee is not a joint office, therefore there is no right of survivorship, and on the death of a trustee the survivors are in- competent to act, unless a certain number be declared or presumed to be a gworwm, or the office be conferred on trustees and the accedors and survivors of them. Sometimes the concurrence of one trustee is rendered absolutely necessary by his being named sine quo non. The Court of Session may appoint new trustees, but generally appoints a judicial factor. There has been a considerable amount of recent legislation, chiefly in the direction of extending the powers of trustees and of the court, in trust matters. By 24 and 25 Vict. c. 84 (amended by 26 and 27 Vict. c. 115) an agpecnae of gratuitous trustees by deed or local act was to be held to include certain provisions usually included in deeds of appointment, 7.c., powers of resignation and of assumption of new trustees, and provisions that the majority of trustees accepting and surviving should be a guorum, and that each trustee should only be liable for his own acts and intromissions and should not be liable for omissions. The Trusts Act, 1867 (30 and 31 Vict. c. 97), added to the common law powers of trustees by giving them authority to appoint factors and law agents, to discharge trustees who have resigned, to grant leases for a limited period, to uplift, discharge, or assign debts, to compromise claims, to grant all necessary deeds, and to pay debts due by the truster or the trust estate. It also gave the Court of Session power (exercisable by the lord ordinary in the first instance) beyond what it possessed by its nobele offictum, in cases of expediency, of selling the trust estate, of granting feus or long leases, and of borrowing and excambion. Power was given to trustees to appoint

additional trustees by deed of assumption, and where such assumption could not be made the court might appoint. Authority was conferred upon the beneficiary of a lapsed trust to complete title on petition. The powers of investment given to trustees have since been largely increased by the Trusts Amendment Act, 1884. They are now much the same as those allowed in England. The principal differences are that in Scotland there is a statutory power to vary securities, and that statutory investment by a Scotch trustee is not allowed in Bank of Ireland stock or on real security in Ireland. The Titles to Land Consolida- tion Act, 1868 (31 and 32 Vict. c. 101), contained provisions as to the mode of completing title by a judicial factor on a trust estate and by trustees in sequestration and as to the vesting in trustees of heritable property conveyed for religious or educational purposes, The Conveyancing Act, 1874 (37 and 38 Vict. c. 94), dealt with compositions payable by trustees on the death of a vassal, and with completion of title by the heir of a sole or last sur- viving trustee, by a successor of an ex officio trustee, and by trustees where words of conveyance are not expressed to be in favour of such trustees. Forms of documents relating to trust property will be found in Juridical Styles and in the schedules to the Acts of 1867, 1868, and 1874. A conveyance in trust may be either absolute with a back-bond or in form a conveyance in trust. A trustee is responsible for the due execution of the trust, subject to the limitations contained in 24 and 25 Vict. c. 84. The provision of the Companies Act, 1862, that no trust is to be entered on the

1 The principal authority is Lewin's Law of Trusts (Sth ed., 1885). The powers of trustees under the Conveyancing and Settled Land Acts will be found summarized in the treatises on these acts by Wolstenholme and Turner. The principal authorities on charitable trusts are Shelford and Tudor (1862). For the history may be consulted Bacon, Law Tracts; Reading, On the Statute of

Uses; Gilbert, On Uses; Sanders, On Uses and Trusts; Spence, Equitable Juris- diction, vol. i. p. 485; Digby, Hist. ofthe Law of Real Property, chaps. vi. vii.

register, does not apply to Scotland. A trustee, a member of a joint-stock company, though entered on the register as a trust disponee, may incur personal liability as a partner, unless the con- trary be expressed. Liability under such circumstances was established in the litigation which followed the suspension of the City of Glasgow Bank in 1878.1 A sheriff court has jurisdiction over actions of declarator, relating to questions of heritable right or title, where the value of the subject in dispute does not exceed £50 by the year or £1000 in value (40 and 41 Vict. c. 50). A judicial factor may be appointed by the sheriff court where the yearly value of the estate does not exceed £100 (43 and 44 Vict. c. 4). Fraudulent trustees are criminally liable at common law, not by statutory enactment, as in England. Adjudication on a trust bond isa mode of obtaining the decision of the Court of Session on a bond by a fictitious creditor, for the purpose of giving title to the heir, by preventing his liability to possible passive representation. It is regulated by 1695, c. 24.?

United States.—In New York and some other States uses and trusts have been abolished (with certain exceptions), and every estate, subject to those exceptions, is deemed a legal right cogniz- able in courts of law. The exceptions are in New York implied trusts and express trusts to sell land for the benefit of creditors, to sell, mortgage, or lease lands for the benefit of legatees, or for the purpose of satisfying any charge thereon, to receive the rents and profits of lands and apply them to the use of any person during the life of such person or any shorter term, or to receive such rents and profits, and accumulate the same within the limits allowed by the law. Trusts of personalty for public purposes are very generally allowed in States where private trusts do not exist. Provisions similar to those of the English Statute of Frands have been generally adopted by the States which recognize private trusts. Some States go further than the statute and allow the creation of trusts (other than those arising by implication or operation of law) only by means of will or deed. Where the trust is of real estate, the deed must generally be registered (see REGISTRATION). Forms of deeds of trust are given in the Statutes of Virginia and other States. The English doctrine of cy prés seems to have been adopted only in Pennsylvania. Conveyances in trust for the settlor are generally void against creditors by the policy of the Acts of Eliza- beth. By the legislation of some States a freehold may commence in futuro without the operation of the Statute of Uses. Societies

of professional trustees, receiving a percentage of the income of the property as payment for their trouble and liability, are frequently recognized by law. Such societies are generally under an obliga- tion to make periodical returns of their receipts and expenditure. A public trustee as a corporation sole exists in some States. Trustee process in the New England States is what is generally known as garnishee process in England, that is, a means of reaching pro- perty and credits of a debtor in the hands of third persons for the benefit of an attaching creditor.3 (J. Wt.)

TSARITSYN, a district town of the government of Saratoff, Russia, situated on the right bank of. the lower Volga where it suddenly turns towards the south-east, only 40 miles distant from the Don. It is the terminus of a railway line which begins at Riga and, running south-eastwards, crosses all the main lines which radiate from Moscow to the south. It is also connected by rail with Katatch on the Don, where merchandise from the Sea of Azoff is disembarked and transported by rail to Tsaritsyn, to be sent thence by rail or steamer to different parts of Russia. Corn from Middle Russia for Astrakhan is trans- ferred from the railway to boats at Tsaritsyn ; timber and wooden wares from the upper Volga are unloaded here and sent by rail to Katatch ; and fish, salt, and fruits sent from Astrakhan by boat up the Volga are here unloaded and despatched by rail to the interior of Russia. The town has grown rapidly since the completion of the rail- way system, and has a large trade in naphtha from Baku, which is shipped up the Volga to Tsaritsyn and sent thence by rail to the interior of Russia. The railway between the Baskunchak salt lakes of Astrakhan and the Volga has made Tsaritsyn also a depét for the salt trade. In 1882 10,000,000 ewts. of merchandise, valued at one mil- lion sterling, were landed at Tsaritsyn, and since then the

1 The principal case was Muir v. City of Glasgow Bank, Law Re- ports, 4 Appeal Cases, 337.

2 See G. J. Bell, Principles, §§ 1991-2001; R. Bell, Law Dict., s.v. “Trust” and “Trustee,”

< See Washburn, Real Property, vol. ii, bk. ii., chaps. ii, iii. ; Stimson, American Statute Law, $$ 1700-1754.

figures have notably increased. In addition Tsaritsyn is the centre of the trade connected with the mustard plantations of Sarepta, Dubovka, and the neighbourhood ; 170,000 cwts. of mustard seed are either ground or converted into oil annually, the exports being 70,000 ewts. of mustard and half the corresponding quantity of oil (valued at £250,000). The fisheries of the place are also important. The population (6750 in 1861) numbered 31,220 in 1882. It is still larger in summer, Tsaritsyn having become the gathering-place of poor people in search of work, and the misery and filth in its poorer quarters are very great. The buildings of the town do not improve proportionately with the increase of wealth. They include a (wooden) theatre, a public library, and two gymnasia for boys and girls. The old church of St John (end of 16th century) is a fine specimen of the architecture of its period.

Tsaritsyn was founded in the 16th century, when a fort was erected to prevent the incursions of the free Cossacks and runaway serfs who gathered on the lower Volga, as also those of the Kalmucks and Circassians. In 1606 Tsaritsyn took part in the rising in favour of the false Demetrius, and Razin took the town in 1670. The Kalmucks and Circassians of the Kubafi attacked it repeatedly in the 17th coef so that it had to be fortified by a strong earthen and palisaded wall, traces of which are still visible.

TSARSKOYE SELO, a district town of Russia, in the government of St Petersburg, and an imperial residence, 18 miles to the south of the capital, is situated on the Duderhof Hills and consists of the town proper, surrounded by several villages and a German colony, which are summer resorts for the inhabitants of St Petersburg, and the imperial parks and palaces. The town is built according to a regular plan, and its houses, a great number of which have been erected by the crown, are nearly all surrounded by gardens. The cathedral of St Sophia is a miniature copy of that at Constantinople. The town has two gymnasia for boys and girls. The imperial parks and gardens cover 1680 acres; the chief of them is the “old” garden containing the “old palace,” built by Rastrelli, the gallery of Cameron adorned with fine statues, and numerous pavilions and kiosks. The population numbered 15,000 in 1885.

When Peter I. took possession of the mouth of the Neva a Finnish village, Saari-mois, stood on the site now occupied by the town, and its Russified name Sarskaya was changed into Tsarskoye when Peter I. presented it to his wife Catherine. It was especially em- bellished by Elizabeth. Under Catherine II., a town, Sophia, was built close by, but its inhabitants were transferred to Tsarskoye Selo under Alexander J. The railway connecting the town with St Petersburg (1838) was the first to be constructed in Russia.

TSCHUDI, or Scuupy, the name of one of the oldest and most distinguished families of the land of Glarus, Switzerland. From 1029 to 1253 a member of the clan held the office of steward of the abbess of Sickingen on the Rhine, the lady of the manor ; and after Glarus joined the Swiss Confederation in 1352 various members of the family held high political offices at home, and were dis- tinguished abroad as soldiers and in other ways. In litera- ture, its most eminent member was GILES or ANGIDIUS TscHupi (1505-1572), who, after having served his native land in various offices, in 1558 became the chief magistrate or "'landammann." Originally inclined to moderation, he became later in life more and more devoted to the cause of the counter-Reformation. It is, however, as the his- torian of the Swiss Confederation that he is best known ; by incessant wanderings and unwearied researches amongst original documents he collected material for three great works, which therefore can never wholly lose their value, though his researches have been largely supplemented and corrected by those of more recent students. In 1538 his book on Rhetia, written in 1528, was published in Latin and in German—De prisca ac vera Alpina Rhetia, or Die

uralt wahrhaftig Alpisch Rhétva. His other works were not published until long after his death.

The Beschreibung Galliz Comatz appeared under Gallati's editorship in 1758, and is mainly devoted to a topographical, historical, and antiquarian description of ancient Helvetia and Rhetia, the latter part being his early work on Rhetia revised and greatly enlarged. This book was designed practically as an introduction to his mag- num opus, the Chronicon Helveticwm, part of which (from 1100 to 1470) was published by J. R. Iselin in two stately folios (1734-36) ; the rest (to 1564) consists only of

rough materials. The value of the work rests very largely on the constant use of original docu- ments, no fewer than 750 being printed in Iselin's edition, eet the transcripts do not always in point of accuracy come up to the standard demanded by the modern critical historian. Many ballads are incorporated and also many oral traditions, both being employed to give life and picturesqueness to his story, though often at the expense of historical truth, the stock instance of which is the manner in which he completed and elaborated the Tell legend (see TELL). In many ways his book, save in its flowing and quaint German, is rather like the work of a 14th-century chronicler than a critical history ; but it has been the source from which all later Swiss writers have drawn their information, and in many cases preserves the evi- dence of original documents which have since disappeared. It is in short a history rather resembling that of Livy than that of Hallam or Stubbs.

Subjoined is a list of other prominent members of the family. Dominic (1596-1654) was a Benedictine monk at Muri and wrote a painstaking work, Origo et genealogia gloriosissimorum comitum de Habsburg (1651). JosEpu, a Benedictine monk at Einsiedeln, wrote a useful history of his abbey (1823). The family, which be- came divided in religious matters at the Reformation, also includes several Protestant ministers,—Joun Henry (1670-1729), who wrote Beschreibung des Lands Glarus (1714) ; Joun Tuomas (1714-1788), who left behind him several elaborate MSS. on the local history of Glarus ; and Joun JAMES (1722-1784), who compiled an elaborate family history from 900 to 1500, and an account of other Glarus families. JoHN Louis (d. 1784), who settled in Metz and contri- buted to the Encyclopédie, and Frizpricu (1820-1886), the author of Das Thierleben der Alpenwelt, were distinguished naturalists. Among the soldiers may be mentioned CurisToPHER (1571-1629), a knight of Malta and an excellent linguist, who served in the French and Spanish armies ; while the brothers Lovis Lronarp (1700- 1779) and JosepH ANTHONY (1703-1770) were in the Neapolitan service. VALENTINE (1499-1555), the cousin of Giles, was, like the latter, a pupil of Zwingli, whom he afterwards succeeded as pastor of Glarus, and by his moderation gained so much influence that during the thirty years of his ministry his services were attended alike by Catholics and Protestants.

TSE-NAN FOO, the capital city of the province of Shan- tung in China, stands in 36° 40’ N. lat. and 117° 1’ E. long. It is situated in one of the earliest settled districts of the empire, and figures repeatedly in the records of the wars which troubled the country during the six centuries that preceded the Christian era. On the establishment of the Han dynasty (.c. 206) it had the name which it now bears; but during the next 200 years it was known at different periods as P’ing-yuen, Ts’ien-sh’ing, and Po-hai. In the 4th century its name was changed to Tse; and by the founder of the T’ang dynasty (618-907) it was christened Lin-tsze, by which name it was known until the overthrow of the Mongol dynasty in the 14th century, when the name of Tse-nan was restored to it. The city, which lies in the valley of the present channel of the Yellow river (Hoang-Ho), and at a short distance from its banks, is surrounded by a triple line of defence. First is the city wall, strongly built and carefully guarded, outside this a granite wall, and beyond this again a mud rampart. The streets are full of good shops, among which book, picture, and flower shops are conspicuous. There are two fine examination halls, one for bachelors of arts and the other for doctors of law, several handsome temples, and a metropolitan “drum” tower. The most noticeable feature about the city is three springs outside the west gate, which throw up as many streams of tepid water to a height of about 2 feet. This water, which is pleasant to the taste, and is highly prized for its healing qualities, flows in such abundant quantities that it fills the moat and forms a fine lake in the northern quarter of the city. With the taste which Chinamen always show in such matters, the lake is divided into a number of water avenues

by floating banks, on which flowers and trees are skilfully

/more painful than that of a gnat.

arranged, and is further adorned with several picturesque summer houses, which form points of attraction to picnic parties and pleasure-seekers during the warmer months. Its waters abound with many species of edible fish. The population of the town is reckoned at about 100,000, among whom are 2000 Mohammedan families. The city is the centre of a Roman Catholic see, and has opened its gates to several Protestant missionary bodies.

See Williamson, Jowrneys in North China, London, 1870.

TSETSE FLY (Glossina morsitans). The tsetse fly, so much dreaded by the traveller in South Africa, belongs to the sub-family Muscine and is closely allied to Stomowys. It is scarcely larger than the common house fly, which it resembles in its general shape. It can, however, be easily distinguished by its colour and the position of its wings. These are longer than the abdomen, and when at rest they project behind it, overlapping one another at their tips. This gives the fly a longer and narrower outline than that of the house fly. The colour is somewhat like that of the honey bee: the thorax is chestnut brown x with four longitudinal black stripes, the abdomen light yellow with transverse bars of dark brown on its dorsal surface. The proboscis, with which the fly inflicts its sting, is grooved and contains two long styles; and it is guarded by a pair of setose palps. At the base of the proboscis is a dilated horny bulb, and in this swelling it is supposed that | the poison is secreted. The bite of the Tsetse fly (Glossina tsetse is innocuous to man and is not morsitans). Large game, goats, and apparently all animals whilst suckling, are also un- affected by it. But to the horse, ox, and dog it is fatal. The poison may take effect after a few days, or the animal may remain apparently unaffected for some months; but eventually symptoms of poisoning appear. These symptoms seem to be rather variable; as a rule swellings arise under the jaws and around the navel, the eyes and nose begin to run, and, although the animal con- tinues to graze, it becomes more and more emaciated, suffers violently from purging, and at length succumbs to extreme exhaustion. Post-mortem examination shows that the muscles, and especially the heart, are in a very soft and flabby condition. The lungs and liver are affected, the gall bladder distended with bile. The fat is of a greenish yellow colour and oily consistency, the blood small in quantity and very thin, with hardly any power of staining. At present no cure is known for the bite, nor does inoculation seem to afford any protection. The fly is said to avoid animal excreta, and in some parts a paste composed of milk and manure is smeared on cattle which are about to pass through the “fly-belts.” This affords a certain amount of protection. Lion’s fat is used in the same way, and is said to be efficacious.

The fly is found as a rule in the neighbourhood of water, and its habitat is usually sharply defined. Often it occurs on one side of a stream but not on

the other. The limits of the ‘‘fly-belts” are well known to the natives, and travellers can ensure comparative safety to their cattle by passing through these districts after sun- down. The northern limits of the area inhabited by the tsetse are not known. It is found throughout the valley of the Limpopo river, but does not come much south of this, except in the eastern borders of the Transvaal. Here it extends far south of Delagoa Bay, and infests the Lobombo Mountains and the Amatonga country, reaching to the confines of Santa Lucia Bay. It appears to be gradually retreating northwards, following the big game.

The fly is figured in Proc. Zool. Soc., 1850, and by Frank Oates, Matabele Land and the Victoria Falls, 1881.

TUAM, a market town and episcopal city of Galway, Treland, is the terminus of the Athenry and Tuam Railway, and lies 20 miles north-east of Galway and 129 west of Dublin. An abbey was founded here towards the end of the

a2, == 96

5th century, and in the beginning of the 6th an episcopal see by St Jarlath. The new Protestant cathedral of St Mary occupies the site of the original cathedral, built in 1130, and includes the chancel arch of the ancient building, now forming the great doorway,—a very fine specimen of the old Romanesque. The Roman Catholic cathedral in the later Early English style is one of the finest modern Catholic churches in Ireland. Adjoining it is the Roman Catholic college of St Jarlath, usually called the “New College,” founded in 1814 for the education of candidates for the priesthood. To the west are the archbishop’s palace and a convent of Presentation nuns. The other public buildings are the workhouse, the dispensary, and the market-house. The town has a considerable retail trade, and is a centre for the disposal of agricultural pro- duce, From 4223 in 1871 the population decreased to 3567 in 1881.

The see of Tuam was raised to an archbishopric about 1152. Under the Church Temporalities Act of 1839 it was reduced to a bishopric, but is still

the seat of a Roman Catholic archbishop. It received its first charter in the 11th year of James I. It formerly returned two members to parliament, but was disfranchised at the Union.

TUAMOTU ARCHIPELAGO,! a broad belt of seventy coral islands lying between 14° 5’ and 23° 22’ §. lat. and 134° 25’ and 148° 40’ W. long., and now under the pro- tection of France. They trend in irregular lines in a north- west and south-east direction, and cover 1500 miles of the Pacific, the easternmost Tuamotus being 3600 miles from Peru.2 With the exception of a few insignificant islands the archipelago consists of atolls (see CoraLs and Pactric OcEan), mostly chains of low islets that crown the reefs and sometimes also obstruct the deep lagoons which they encircle. The largest island, Nairsa (Dean’s Island), with a lagoon 45 miles long by 15 wide, is made up of twenty islets. Fakarava, the next in size, consists of fifteen islets, and its oblong lagoon affords the best anchorage in the group. Hao has fifty islets, and its lagoon is dangerously studded with coral. The symmetrically placed eleven islets of Anao suggested to Captain Cook the name of Chain Island. Matahiva, Niau, and Mururoa are good specimens of the horse-shoe-shaped atoll. Nengonen- gone, Fangataufa, and Marutea, true lagoon islands, form unbroken rings round their lake-like lagoons. In a few of the smaller atolls the lagoons have been completely silted up. To the south-east lie the Gambier Islands, a cluster of four larger and many smaller volcanic islets, enclosed in one wide reef. The wooded crags of Mangareva, the largest islet, 5 miles in length, rise to a height of 1300 feet and are covered with a rich vegetation, quite Tahitian in character; but, as in the other Tuamotus, there is a dearth of animal life. This group was discovered by Captain Wilson of the London Missionary Society in 1797. Tahitian teachers were sent thither in 1834; but Catholic missionaries followed in 1836, and converted the entire population. The natives, once very numerous, now number less than a thousand, and are still decreasing. Cannibal- ism was formerly prevalent. In physique, language, re- ligion, and custom the Gambier Islanders closely resemble the Rarotongans. Beechey surveyed the group in 1826, and D’Urville in 1838. Pitcairn Island and a few unin- habited rocks lie still farther to the south-east. The Tuamotus are healthy and as a rule have a lower mean

1 There is uo collective name for the archipelago among the Tuamotuans themselves, but the Tahitians call it Paumotu (7.e., Cloud of Islands). The group is Bougainville's Dangerous Archipelago, Fleurieu's Bad Sea, Krusenstern's Low Islands, and the Pearl Islands of traders.

2 Distinct names have been given to eight clusters of the archi- pelago,—Disappointment Islands, King George's Islands, Palliser Islands, Raeffsky Islands, Two Groups, Duke of Gloucester Islands, Acton or Amphitrite group, and Gambier Islands.

temperature than Tahiti. The easterly trade winds prevail. Rain and fogs occur even during the dry season. The stormy season lasts from November to March, when de- vastating hurricanes are not uncommon and a_ south-westerly swell renders the western shores dangerous. Plants and animals are very meagrely represented, even more so than in the atolls of Micronesia. Cocoa-palms and the pandanus thrive on many of the islets, and the bread-fruit, banana, pine-apple, and arum have been intro- duced from Tahiti into the western islands. Mammals are represented by a rat; among land-birds a parakeet, a thrush, and a dove are noticeable ; and of reptiles there is only one lizard. Insects are scarce. But the sea and lagoons teem with turtle, fish, mollusks, crustaceans, and zoophytes. Coral grows luxuriantly everywhere. From the abundance of pearl-oysters the archipelago gets its name of Pearl Islands; pearl-fishing indeed is the only remunerative industry. Under French control the newest appliances for obtaining shells have now mostly superseded the laborious diving of the natives. The Tuamotus are very thinly inhabited by a fine strong Polynesian race, more muscular and mostly darker-skinned than that inhabit- ing Tahiti. In the west considerable intermixture with other races has taken place. Of the habits of the people little is known, and many of the islands are still marked 'hostile inhabitants" on the English Admiralty charts. In the eastern islands cannibalism existed. Tattooing is not universal. Clothing and ornaments are very scanty. The huts are mean square buildings, often mere shelters of leaves. Good outrigger and single and double canoes are built, the larger ingeniously stitched together of small pieces of drift wood. Fishing with net and hook is much

practised. Food besides fish consists almost exclusively of cocoa-nuts and pandanus fruit. Water is scarce.

Magellan's first discovery of land after reaching the Pacific in 1520 was one of the Tuamotus. Various portions of the archipelago were in turn crossed by Queiros (1605), Lemaire and Schouten (1616), Roggeween (1722), Byron (1765), Wallis (1767), Bougain- ville (1768), Cook (1769), the " Duff" (1797), Krusenstern (1803), Kotzebue (1816), Fitzroy (1835), D'Urville (1838), and Belcher (1840). The first systematic survey was instituted in 1818 by Bellinghausen, and was continued in 1823 by Duperry, in 1826 by Beechey, and in 1889 by Wilkes. Thanks to these many explorers, the islands have been christened and rechristened with a chaos of Spanish, Dutch, English, French, German, and Russian names.

See the narratives of the various explorers cited above, and Meinicke, Inseln

des stillen Oceans (Leipsic, 1876); for general statistics and an account of the pearl-fisheries, see Notices Coloniales, Paris, 1886.

TUBERCLE. See PatnHouoey, vol. xviii. p. 405, and PHTHISIS.

TUBEROSE. The cultivated tuberose (Polianthes tuber- osc) is allied to the Mexican agaves and is a native of the saine country. The tuberous root-stock sends up a stem 3 feet in height, with numerous lanceolate leaves and terminal racemes of white funnel-shaped, very fragrant flowers. Each flower is about 14 inches long, with a long tube and a six-parted limb. The stamens are six in number, emerging from the upper part of the tube, and bear linear anthers. The ovary is three-celled ; but the mature fruit and seed are not botanically known. The plant is largely grown in the United States and at the Cape of Good Hope for export to England, as it is found that imported bulbs succeed better than those grown in the United Kingdom. The cultivated plants have double flowers and require a rich soil, considerable heat, and, at first, abundance of water.

TUBINGEN, the university town of Wiirtemberg, is picturesquely situated on the hilly and well-wooded banks of the Neckar, at the junction of the Ammer and Stein- lach, 18 miles south of Stuttgart, and on the S.E. border

of the Black Forest. The older town is irregularly built and unattractive, but the newer suburbs, the chief of which is the Wilhelmsstrasse, are handsome. The most

conspicuous building is the old ducal castle of Hohen- tiibingen, built in 1507-1540 on a hill overlooking the town, and now containing the university library, observa- tory, chemical laboratory, &c. Among the other chief buildings are the quaint old Stiftskirche (1469-83), and the new aula and numerous institutes of the university, all of which are modern. A monument was erected in 1873 to the poet Uhland (1787-1862), who was born and is buried here. Tiibingen's chief claim to attention lies in its famous university, founded in 1477 by Duke Eberhard. The university adopted the Reformed faith in 1534, and in 1536 a Protestant theological seminary—the so-called Stift—was incorporated with it. In 1817 a Roman Catholic theological faculty (the 'Convict ") and a faculty of politics and economics were added, and in 1863 a faculty of science. The leading faculty has long been that of theology, and an advanced school of theological criticism, the founder and chief light of which was F. C. Baur (q.v.), is known as the Tiibingen school. Melanchthon was lec- turer at Tiibingen before he was summoned to Wittenberg. The university is attended by about 1400 students, a con- siderable proportion of whom are foreigners, and has a teaching staff of 53 professors, 17 extraordinary professors, and 10 lecturers. The commercial and manufacturing industries of the town are slight. Printing, book-selling, the manufacture of surgical and philosophical instruments, and the cultivation of hops, fruit, and vines are among the leading occupations of the inhabitants. The population in 1885 was 12,660 (11,708 in 1880). The country in the neighbourhood of Tiibingen is very attractive ; one of the most interesting points is the former Cistercian monas- tery of Bebenhausen, founded in 1185, and now a royal hunting-chateau.

Tubingen is mentioned as a strong fortress in 1078. In 1342 it was purchased by the count of Wiirtemberg, whose descendants afterwards acquired the title of duke. The treaty of Tiibingen is the name given in German history to an arrangement made in 1514 between Duke Ulrich and

his subjects, by which the latter acquired various rights and privileges on condition of relieving the former of his debts. The town was captured by the Swabian League in 1519, by Turenne in 1647, and again in 1688 by the French, who destroyed the fortifications. Tiibingen was made a garrison town in 1875.

TUCKER, Asranam (1705-1774), holds a place of his own among the English moralists of the 18th century. He was born in London, of a Somerset family, on 2d September 1705. His father, a wealthy city merchant, died in his son's infancy, leaving him to the guardianship of his uncle, Sir Isaac Tillard, a man of a rare integrity of character, to whom Tucker never failed to acknowledge a deep debt of gratitude. In 1721 Tucker entered Merton College, Oxford, as a gentleman commoner. Here he devoted himself chiefly to philosophical and mathematical studies, but also found leisure to master French and Italian, and to acquire considerable proficiency in music. He after- wards studied law at the Inner Temple, but as his fortune made him independent of a profession he was never called to the bar. In 1727 he bought Betchworth Castle, near Dorking, where he passed the remainder of his life, occu- pied, in addition to his favourite studies, with the usual pursuits of a well-to-do country gentleman. He took no part in politics, however, and even wrotea pamplilet, The Country Gentleman's Advice to his Son on the Subject of Party Clubs (1755), cautioning young men against the dangers of rashly pledging themselves to political principles and measures of which their riper judgment may disapprove. In 1736 Tucker married Dorothy Barker, the daughter of a neighbouring landed proprietor. His wife, to whom he was fondly attached, died in 1754, leaving him with two daughters. 'As soon as the first excess of his grief was somewhat mitigated," we are told, "he occupied himself in collecting together all the letters that had passed between

them at periods when they were accidentally separated from each other, which he transcribed twice over, under the title of 'The Picture of Artless Love.' One copy he gave to Mr Barker, his father-in-law, and the other he kept, and frequently read over to his daughters." He took an active part in the education of his daughters, and from this time onward began to occupy

himself with the composition of the work by which he is known—The Light of Nature Pursued. He made several sketches of the plan of his work, one of which—in dialogue—he went the length of printing before finally deciding on the method he should pursue. He also sought to qualify himself for authorship by the study of the most elegant Greek and Latin classics and by translating the most adniired passages of Cicero, Demosthenes, and Pliny several times over. Moreover, after his work was written, he twice transcribed it with his own hand. In 1763 he published a specimen under the title of "Free Will." The strictures of a critic in the Monthly Review of July 1763 drew from him a pamphlet called Man im Quest of Himself, by Cuthbert Comment. This, as its sub-title states, is "'a defence of the individu- ality of the human mind or self"; it has been reprinted in Parr's Metaphysical Tracts (1837). In 1765 the first four volumes of his work were published under the pseudo- nym of Edward Search. The remaining three volumes did not appear till after his death. His eyesight failed him completely in 1771, but his cheerfulness did not leave him. He contrived an ingenious apparatus which enabled him to write so legibly that the result could easily be tran- scribed by his daughter. In this way he completed the later volumes, which were ready for publication when he was seized by his last illness. He died on 20th November 1774.

A second edition of The Light of Nature aupained in 1805, with a short life of the author by his grandson, Sir H. P. St John Mild- may, which forms the sole biographical source. The work has siuce been repeatedly re-published in two large closely printed volumes. A useful abridgment was published (anonymously) by Hazlitt in 1807; for, as he truly says, it is "swelled out with endless repetitions of itself The author was a private gentleman, who wrote at his ease, and for his own amusement. When a subject presented itself to him, he exhausted all he had to say upon it, and then dismissed it for another. If the same subject recurred again in a different connexion, he turned it over in his thoughts afresh ; as his ideas arose in his mind, he committed them to paper ; he repeated the same things over again or inserted any new observa- tion or example that suggested itself to him in confirmation of his argument ; and thus by the help ofa new title, and by giving a different application to the whole, a new chapter was completed. By this means, as he himself remarks, his writings are rather a tissue of loose essays than a regular work." In spite of Tucker's elaborate care in

composition, there is no doubt that this fairly characterizes the rambling prolixity of his book; but it may be questioned whether an epitome can convey the real merits of such a style and treatment—qualities which have earned for Tucker from Sir James Mackintosh the designation of a ‘‘ metaphysical Montaigne.” These are his sound hearty common sense, the origin- ality of a man who looks at everything for himself completely untrammelled by system, a remarkable aptness in illustration, and occasional gleams of a mild humour. Though the The Light of Nature embraces in its scope many psychological and more strictly metaphysical discussions, it is chiefly in connection with cthics that Tucker’s speculations are remembered. This is the subject which the author puts into the foreground himself; from his earliest youth, he tells us, his thoughts took a turn “toward searching into the foundations and measures of right and wrong.” In some important points Tucker anticipates the utilitarianism shortly afterwards systematized by Paley, and Paley, it may be noted, expresses in the amplest terms his obligations to his prede- cessor, ‘ Every man’s own satisfaction” Tucker holds to be the ultimate end of action ; and satisfaction or pleasure is one and the same in kind, however much it may vary in degree. This universal motive is further connected, as by Paley, through the will of God, with the ‘ general good, the root where out all our rules of conduct and sentiments of honour are to branch.” Tucker adopts from Hartley the principle of association, or, as he calls it, ‘‘ translation,” to explain the formation of the moral sentiments and the phenomena of disinterested action generally. In his general analysis of the mind he professes to follow Locke, though with great latitude in details, and even in much that is not matter of detail.

TUCKER, Jostax (1711-1799), dean of Gloucester from 1758, a sagacious and candid writer on politics and political economy. See PorrticaL Economy (vol. xix. p. 365).

TUCSON, a city in Pima county, Arizona Territory, United States, is situated in 32° 13’ N. lat. and 110° 53’ W. long. at an elevation of 2403 feet above the sea, upon the Santa Cruz river and on the Southern Pacific Railroad, about 70 miles from the Mexican frontier. The surround- ing

country is arid and barren, except where it has been fertilized by irrigation. The climate is exceedingly hot and dry. The principal industries of Tucson, besides stock- rearing, are connected with mining, as it is a supply point for mining districts in the neighbouring mountains and has several smelting works. The population, which in 1860 was 915, in 1870 3224, had grown by 1880 to 7007, and in 1887 was estimated to number nearly 10,000. About one-half are of foreign birth, a large proportion being Mexicans. ‘Tucson is one of the oldest settlements in the United States, having been founded as a Jesuit mission by the Spaniards in the 17th century.

TUCUMAN, or, more fully, San MicuEen pE Tucuman, capital of the province of Tucuman, in the Argentine Re- public, is a straggling town, on the right bank of the Tala (a subtributary of the Rio Salado), at the eastern base of the Sierra de Aconquija, in 26° 50’ 8. lat. and 64° 35’ W. long. It is connected by rail with Cordova and Rosario. The surrounding district is fertile, and also produces excel- lent timber. Leather and sugar are the principal objects of industry. The population was recently estimated at

17,000.

TUDELA, a city of Spain, in the province of Navarre, is situated on the right bank of the Ebro where it is joined by the Queyles, and on the railway from Zaragoza to Pamplona, about 50 miles to the north-west of the former city. The Ebro is here crossed by a fine old bridge, 400 yards in length, consisting of seventeen arches. The only building within the town of any interest is the fine church of Santa Maria, founded in 1135 and consecrated in 1188, the doorways and cloisters being specially rich in sculptural ornamentation. The manufactures of the place (cloth, silk, pottery) are unimportant. There is some trade in wine and oil. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 10,086.

Tudela, anciently Z’utela, was the birthplace of the celebrated

medieval traveller BENJAMIN (g.v.) of Tudela, It was made an episcopal see in 1783, which was suppressed in 1851.

TUDOR, Hovuss or. See Henry VII. and Lancaster, Hous of, vol. xiv. p. 257.

TUKE, Samven (1784-1857), English philanthropist, son of Henry Tuke, born at York in 1784, greatly advanced the cause of the amelioration of the condition of the in- sane, and devoted himself largely to the York Retreat, the methods of treatment pursued in which he made more widely known by his Description of the Retreat near York, &e. (York, 1813). His writings on the construction of asylums and on other subjects connected with the insane are well known. He died in 1857.

TUKE, Wint1am (1732-1822), English philanthropist, was born at York in 1732. He devoted himself to many philanthropic objects, but his name is more especially known in connexion with the humane treatment of the insane, for whose care he projected in 1792 the Retreat at York, which became famous both abroad and in Great Britain aS an institution in which a bold attempt was made to manage lunatics without the excessive restraints then regarded as essential. Not less remarkable was the departure from the beaten track of treatment in regard to copious bleedings and the frequent administration of emetics and depressing remedies. The asylum was entirely under the management of the Society of Friends, and

remains so at the present time, but there are a large number of inmates not connected in any way with this body. The original character of the methods pursued at the Retreat attracted much attention, and its marked suc- cess led to comparisons being made between it and other establishments, the abuses in some of which became so notorious as to be brought under the notice of parliament, and led to more stringent legislation in the interests of the insane. The condition of this unfortunate class became greatly improved in consequence. William Tuke did not live to see the most important of the Acts passed, but when he died, in 1822, the superiority of the treatment adopted at the Retreat was fully acknowledged.

See Report of the Seleet Committee of the House of Commons, 1815- 1816; Dr Conolly, Treatment of the Insane without Mechanical Restraints, 1856; Dr Hack Tuke, Chapters in the History of the Insane in the British Isles, 1882.

Henry TuKE (1756-1814), son of the preceding and father of Samuel Tuke, co-operated with his father in the reform at the York Retreat. He was the author of several moral and theological treatises, which have been translated into German and French.

TULA, a government of central Russia, bounded by Moscow on the N., Ryazaii on the E., Tamboff and Orel on the 8., and Kaluga on the W., has an area of 11,950 square miles. It is intersected from south-west to north- east by a gently undulating plateau, from 950 to 1020 feet in height, which separates the drainage area of the Oka from that of the Don. The average elevation of Tula is about 800 feet, and its surface is an undulating plain ; but the rivers flow in valleys so deeply cut and so scored with ravines that in their neighbourhood the country assumes the aspect of a hilly region. Devonian limestones, dolomites, and sandstones appear chiefly in the south-west ; Lower and Middle Carboniferous limestones and clays occupy the remainder of the area. The former contain deposits of coal, which are now worked (chiefly at Malevka and Novoselsk) to the extent of nearly one and a half million ewts. annually. Jurassic clays are found in patches here and there. Glacial boulder clay covers most of the region, while Lacustrine deposits are widely spread in the valleys and depressions. Iron-ore is found all over the government ; limestone, fire-clay, and pottery clay are also obtained. The soil is black earth in the south and east and clay or sandy clay in the north-west. Tula is watered chiefly by the Oka and its tributaries (Upa, Zusha, Osetr, and Pronya). The Don rises in Lake Ivan-Ozero (which feeds also a tributary of the Oka), and has a course of 35 miles within Tula. It is not navigable, and Peter I.’s attempt to connect it with the Oka by means of a canal was never carried out. Lakes and marshes (chiefly in the north-west) are few. Forests (8 per cent. of the area) are rapidly disappearing. The climate is less rigorous than that of Moscow, the average yearly temperature being 40°°2 Fahr. (January, 13°°8 ; July, 67°°5).

The flora of Tula deserves some attention as marking the trans- ition from that of the south-east steppes to that of north-west Russia. A line drawn on the northern slope of the watcr-parting already mentioned (a few miles to the south of the city of Tula) divides the province into two parts, of which the southern is a black earth region and the other is chiefly covered with boulder clay. The boundary is marked by a series of crown forests—

formerly a means of defence against the nomad tribes, whence their name Zasyeka—which at the same time constitute a line that is not passed by several species characteristic of the steppe region, such as the Lilia of the steppes, Lilium Martagon, Linum flavum, Lathyrus pisiformis, Geranium sanguineum, Pyrethrum corym- bosum, and Serratula heterophylla. On the other hand, several northern species, which are quite common in the marshes of Mos- cow, do not penetrate into Tula, and several others, such as Linnxa borealis, Viola palustris, Cirsium palustre, Pedicularis palustris, do not cross the Zasyeka. The same forests shelter several northern species which do not appear either in northern or southern Tula, as also several southern herbaceous plants which. are now only occasionally met with in the black earth steppes of south Russia. Several West-European plants (Sanicula ewropea, Carex remota,

Cephalanthera ensifolia, Allium ursinwm) find their eastern limits in Tula, Another interesting feature is the extension down the valley of the Oka, not ouly of pine-forests, which are not found elsewhere within the province, but also of many herbaceous plants originally from the south or south-west. The steppe flora of Tula is being rapidly impoverished in consequence of the spread of agri- culture: many steppe plants are now found only in their last retreats on the dry uncultivated limestone crags.

The population of the government (750,000 in 1777) in 1888 was 1,360,000, of whom 115,770 were urban. They are all Great Russiaus, and either Orthodox Greeks or Raskolniks. Their chief occupation is agriculture, 70 per cent. of the area being arable. Nearly one-half of the soil belongs to landlords and merchants, and the other half to the peasant communities (53 per cent. of the area, and 58 per cent. of the land under culture). ‘The crops for 1883-85 averaged 7,574,200 quarters of grain and 10,172,000 bushels of potatoes, largely used for distilleries. Beet-root culture is increasing (8520 acres in 1885, yielding 59,800 cwts. of sugar). The growth of tobacco is also spreading (10,000 cwts. in 1885). There were in 1883 380,620 horses, 203,500 cattle, and 786,000 sheep. Manu- factures are rapidly developing; their aggregate production was valued at £1,649,720 in 1888 (distilleries £293,956, sugar-works £601,827, tanneries £148,356, iron works, brass

works, &c., about £150,000). Petty trades, especially the manufacture of tea-urns, small brass ware, and harmoniums, and also weaving, arc extensively carried on and support a lively export trade; timber, raw metals, and various manufactured wares are imported. The government is traversed by the Moscow and Sebastopol and the Ryazhsk and Vyazemsk Railways, as well as by the Oka. The government is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which, with their population in 1882, are Tuta (see below), Alexin (4960), Bogoroditsk (8030), Byeleff (9300), Epifai (3820), Efremoff (7770), Kashira (4610), Krapivna (1560), Novosil (4660), Odoeff (5140), and Tcheriit (2675). Byeleff, Alexin, and Kashira are important loading places on the Oka. The villages Malevka (coal-mines) and Niki- tino have more than 5000 inhabitants each.

History.—Before the Slavonic immigration, the territory of Tula was inhabited by the Mordves on the north and the Mestchers in the south. The Slavs who occupied the Oka belonged to the branch of the Vyatichis, who were soon compelled to pay a tribute to the Khazars. Subsequently the territory on the Oka belonged to the principality of Tchernigoff, thus maintaining its connexion with south-west Russia. In the 14th century part of it fell under the rule of Ryazafi and Moscow, while the remainder was under Lithu- anian dominion till the 15th century. Several of the towns of Tula were founded in the 12th century, but the colonization of this fertile region went on slowly on account of the raids of the Tatars.

TULA, capital of the above government, is situated on the Upa, 120 miles by rail to the south of Moscow. Other railway lines connect it with Ryazafi and Orel. It is built in the broad but low, marshy, and unhealthy valley of the Upa and is divided into three parts,—the Posad on the left bank, the Zaryetskaya or Oruzheinaya on the right bank, and Tchulkova between the Upa and the Tulitsa. It is an old town of Old Russia, but its growth began only towards the end of the 18th century after the manufacture of arms had commenced, and now (1887) its population has reached 65,100 (63,500 in 1882). They are employed chiefly either at the imperial gun factory or at numerous private factories (about 130, with 4350 men) and small workshops. The main branch of the industry is the making of rifles (from 20,000 to 30,000 annually). Next in im- portance comes the manufacture of samovars (tea-urns), in which more than 5000 persons are engaged. All

sorts of cutlery and ironmongery are manufactured in the small workshops of Tula, which have a high repute in Russia. No fewer than 240,000 harmoniums are turned out annually; nearly 150,000 cewts. of steel, iron, and brass are imported

every year for this industry alone.

The town of Tula is first mentioned in 1147 ; but its former site scems to have been higher up the Tulitsa. Its wooden fort was replaced in 1514-1521 by a stone ‘‘kreml,” which still exists. Boris Godunoff founded a gun factory at Tula in 1595, and in 1632 a Dutchman, Winius, established an iron foundry. Michael Alexis and Peter I., especially the last-named, took great intercst in the gun factories, and large establishments were built in 1705 and 1714, which soon turned out 15,000 rifles in a year. Catherine IJ. and Paul I. further improved the manufactures, which during the wars with France supplied more than half a million rifles.

TULIP (Zulipa), a genus of bulbous herbs belonging to the Lilvaceex, The species are found wild along the

northern shores of the Mediterranean, in the Levant, Armenia, Caucasus, Persia, Central Asia, and Afghanistan. The cup-shaped flowers have six regular segments in two rows, as many free stamens, and a three-celled ovary with a sessile stigma, which ripens into a leathery many-seeded capsule. The species are numerous, and are distinguished one froin another by the scales of the bulb being woolly or smooth on the inner surface, by the character of the flower- stalks, by the filaments being hairy or otherwise, and by other characters. Owing to the great beauty of the flowers they have been favourites in European gardens for two or three centuries, and have been crossed and recrossed till it has become almost impossible to refer the plants to their original types. The early flowering “Van Thol” tulips, the segments of which are mostly scarlet with yellow edges, are derived from 7. suaveolens, a native of the Caspian region. 7’, Gesneriana, a native of Armenia and central Russia, is the origin of some of the later flowering varieties. 7’. pubescens, thought by Mr Baker to be a hybrid between the two species just named, is the source of some of the early

flowering kinds known as “pottebakker,” &c. 7. oculus solis and 7’. Clusiana are lovely species, natives of southern France, and 7”. silvestris, with elegant yellow pendulous flowers, is a doubtful native of England. During the last few years, owing to the exertions of Russian naturalists, a large number of new species have been discovered in Turkestan, and introduced into Europe. Some of these are very beautiful, and render it probable that by intercrossing with the older species still further difficulties will be presented in the way of identification. These difficulties are further enhanced by the fact that, quite apart from any cross-breeding, the plants, when subjected to cultivation, vary so greatly in the course of two or three years from the original species from which they are directly descended that their parentage is scarcely recognizable. This innate power of variation has enabled the florist to obtain, and ultimately to “fix,” so many re- markable varieties. At the present day tulips are less fashionable than they once were, and consequently the enormous prices given for new or improved varieties no longer obtain, though, even now, two and three guineas are asked for special bulbs. It must, however, be remembered that the “tulipomania” of the 17th century was really a form of gambling, in which admiration of the flower and interest in its culture were very secondary matters. Tulips were introduced into the Low Countries in the 16th century from Constantinople and the Levant by way of Vienna and Venice. There is a legend that an Antwerp merchant, to whom bulbs were sent, cooked them for onions; and to this day the natives of some parts of Persia and Afghanistan use the bulbs of Z’ulipa chrysantha for food. The mode of growth of a tulip bulb is worthy of attention. In spring, at the flowering period, each bulb is a composite structure. It consists, first, of the bulb of the year, which produces the flowers and the leaves. From the axil of one (or more) of the scales of the flowering bulb emerges a secondary bulb, destined to form leaves and flowers for the next season’s growth. In like manner from the side of the second generation are produced tertiary bulbs, which flower in the third year after their formation. Each bulb, there- fore, has an existence of three years, flowering in the third year, and dying afterwards, so that the bulb planted in the autumn is not the same one that flowered in the spring, but a second generation. For the cultivation of tulips, see HorTIcULTURE, vol. xii. p. 259.

TULLE, a town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Corréze and a bishop's see, is 61 miles east-north-east of Périgueux by the railway from Bordeaux to Clermond- Ferrand. The town rises picturesquely on both banks of the Corréze, a sub-tributary of the Dordogne. The Corréze,

crossed by four bridges, flows between embankments, and the narrow streets on the steep left bank are connected by stairs. Of the 12th-century cathedral only the porch and the nave of six bays remain, the choir and transept having been destroyed in 1793; but there is a 14th-century tower, with a fine stone steeple. The neighbouring cloister (13th century) is being restored. The abbot's house (15th century) has a carved doorway and well-preserved windows ; and some curious houses of the 12th, 13th, and 14th centuries still exist. Tulle possesses normal schools for male and female teachers, and is the headquarters of the Historical Society of Lower Limousin. The principal industry is the manufacture of firearms. The Government establishments employ from 1500 to 3000 workmen, and can turn out 70,000 guns annually. Manufactories for the variety of lace called "tulle" were first established here. There is a collection of the firearms of all nations. The population in 1886 was 10,635 (commune 16,275).

Tulle (Tutela Lemovicum) owed its importance in the Middle Ages to an abbey founded by St Martin, or, according to another authority, in the 7th century, which was raised to a bishopric in 1317. Mascaron was bishop in the 17th century. The town was taken by the English in 1346, and was subsequently ravaged by the Black Death. It was again conquered by the English in 1369 ; but, when the inhabitants succeeded in freeing themselves, they were exempted from all imposts by Charles V. The viscount of Turenne, leader of the Protestauts, tried in vain to seize Tulle in 1577, but was successful in 1585.

TULLE, a term restricted in England to a fine bobbin- net of silk, used for veils, scarves, millinery purposes, and trimmings of ladies' dresses, &c. The French used the word to mean all machine-made lace the basis of which is the intertwisted net-work made on the bobbin-uet machine. The word is derived from the town of Tulle in France (see above).

TULLOCH, Joun (1823-1886), Scottish theologian, was born at Bridge of Earn, Perthshire, in 1823, went to school at Perth, and received his university education at St Andrews and Edinburgh. In 1845 he became minister of St Paul's, Dundee, and in 1849 of Kettins, in Strath- more, where he remained for six years. His literary gifts, shown in his contributions to various reviews, as well as his talent for society drew attention to him, and in 1854 he was appointed to the principalship of St Mary's College, St Andrews. The appointment was immediately followed by the appearance of his Burnet prize essay on Z'heasm. At St Andrews, where he held along with the principal- ship the post of professor of systematic theology and apologetics, his work as a teacher was distinguished by several features which at that time were new. He lectured on comparative theology and treated doctrine historically, as being not a fixed product but a growth. From the first he secured the attachment and admiration of his students. In 1862 he was appointed one of the clerks of the General Assembly, and from that time forward he took a leading part in the councils of the Church of Scotland. In 1878 he was chosen moderator of the Assembly. No one, except perhaps Dr Robert Lee, has done more during the last generation to widen the national church. Two positions on which he repeatedly insisted in the Assembly have taken a firm hold of the mind of that church,—first, that it is of the essence of a church to be comprehensive of various views and tendencies, and that a national church

especially should seek to represent all the elements of the

life of the nation; secondly, that subscription to a creed can bind no one to all its details, but only to the sum and substance, or the spirit, of the symbol. For three years before his death he was convener of the church interests committee of the Church of Scotland, which had to deal with a great agitation for disestablishment. He was also deeply interested in the reorganization of education in Scotland, both in school and university, and acted as one

of the temporary board which settled the primary school system under the Education Act of 1872. His death took place at Torquay on 13th February 1886. .

Tulloch’s best known works are collections of biographical sketches of the leaders of great movements in church history, such as the Reformation and Puritanism. His most important book, Rational Theology and Christian Philosophy (1872), is one in which the Cambridge Platonists and other leaders of dispassionate thought in the 17th century are similarly treated. He delivered the second series of the Croall lectures, on the Doctrine of Sin, which were afterwards published. He also published a small work, Zhe Christ of the Gospels and the Christ of History, in which the views of Renan on the gospel history were dealt with; a monograph on Paseal for Blackwood’s Foreign Classics serics ; and a little work, Beginning Life, addressed to young men, written at an earlier period. A Life of Tulloch by Mrs Oliphant is in preparation.

TULLUS HOSTILIUS, third legendary king of Rome, is represented as having reigned for thirty-two years (670-638 B.c.). His successful wars with Alba, Fidena, and Veii shadow forth the earlier conquests of Latian territory and the first extension of the Roman domain beyond the walls of Rome. See Rong, vol. xx. p. 733.

TUMKUR, or Toomxoor, a district of India, in the west of the Nandidrug division of Mysore, situated between 12° 43’ and 14° 10’ N. lat. and 76° 10’ and 77° 30’ E. long., with an area of 3420 square miles. It is bounded on the north by the Bellary district, on the east by Kolar and Bangalore, on the south by Mysore, and on the west by Chitaldrig and Hassan. Tumkur consists chiefly of elevated land intersected by river valleys. A range of hills rising to nearly 4000 feet crosses it from north to south, and forms the water-parting between the systems of the Krishna and the Kaveri. The principal streams are the Jayamangala and the Shimsha, The mineral wealth of Tumkur is con- siderable: iron is obtained in large quantities from the hill sides ; and excellent building stone is quarried. The slopes of the Devaray-durga Hills, a tract of 18 square miles, are clothed with forests, in which large game are numerous, including tigers, leopards, bears, and wild hogs. The climate of Tumkur is generally considered as equable and healthy ; the average annual rainfall amounts to nearly 33 inches. The Mysore State Railway enters the district at the south-east corner and traverses it to the west.

In 1881 the population of Tumkur numbered 413,183 (males 208,258, females 209,930), embracing 395,443 Hindus, 17,130 Mohammedans, and 6038 Christians. Tumkur town, situated at the base of the Devaray-durga Hills, 43 miles north-west of Bangalore, with a population of 9909, is the administrative headquarters. The cultivated products consist chiefly of vdgi, millet, wheat, sugar- cane, various pulses, and oil seeds. Of the total area 745 square miles are cultivated and 1544 cultivable. The chief industries are the making of coarse cotton cloths, woollen blankets, and ropes. The exports comprise rdgi, unhusked rice, cocoa-nuts, areca-nuts, earth salt, pulses, and vegetables ; the imports include European piece goods, rice, spices, cotton, &c.

The history of Tumkur is comnion to the rest of Mysore. After the assumption of the administration of Mysore by the British in 1832 the district received its present name and limits.

TUMOUR. See Parnotoey, vol. xviii. p. 367, and SurGErRY, vol. xxii. p. 687.

TUMULUS. See Arcuirecturs, vol. ii. p. 384, and Barrows, vol. ii. 397.

TUNBRIDGE, or TonBRIDGE, a town of Kent, England, is situated on rising ground above the Medway, and on the South-Eastern Railway, 41 miles (by rail) south-east of London and 33 north-west of Hastings. The Medway is crossed by a stone bridge, erected in 1775. The town consists chiefly of one long main street and a large number of suburban villas. The church of St Peter and St Paul, chiefly Decorated and Perpendicular with some portions of an earlier date, has lately been restored. The grammar school, founded by Sir Andrew Judd, an alderman of London, in the lst year of Edward VI., was rebuilt in 1865, remodelled in 1880, and extended in 1887. Among other public buildings are the town hall and market house, the

public hall, and the free library. Some traffic is carried on by the Medway, which has been made navigable for barges. Tunbridge ware, chiefly sold at Tunbridge Wells, is largely manufactured. There are gunpowder mills on the banks of the Medway; and wool-stapling, brewing, and tanning are

carried on. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1200 acres) in 1871 was 8209 and in 1881 it was 9317,

Tunbridge owed its early importance to the castle built by Richard, earl of Clare, in the reign of Henry I. The castle was besieged by William Rufus, was taken by John in the wars with the barous, and again by Prince Edward, son of Henry III. Subsequently it became the property of the Staffords, and on the attainder of the duke of Buckingham in the reign of Henry VIII. was taken posses- sion of by the crown. It was dismantled during the Civil War. The remains now consist chiefly ofa finely preserved gateway flanked by two round towers. Formerly it was defended by three moats, one of them formed by the Medway. The lords of ‘the castle had the right of attending the archbishops of Canterbury on state occasions as chief butlers.

TUNBRIDGE WELLS, an inland watering-place of England, chiefly in Kent but partly in Sussex, is situated in the midst of charming and picturesque scenery, on the South-Eastern Railway and at the terminus of a branch line of the London, Brighton, and South Coast Railway, 46 miles (by rail) south-east of London and 5 south of Tunbridge. It owes its popularity to its chalybeate spring and its romantic situation. The wells are situated near the Parade (or Pantiles), a walk associated with fashion since the time of their discovery. The houses and shops in tue Parade somewhat resemble the Rows at Chester. It was paved with pantiles in the reign of Queen Anne. The town is built in a picturesquely irregular manner, and a large part of it consists of districts called “ parks,” occupied by villas and mansions. On Rusthall common, about a mile from the town, is the curiously shaped Toad Rock, and about a mile south-west the striking group called High Rocks. The principal public buildings are the pump-room, the town-hall, the corn exchange, the public hall, the mechanics’ institute, the friendly society’s hall, the dis- pensary and infirmary, and the provident dispensary. The Tunbridge Wells sanatorium is situated in grounds sixty acres in extent, and is capable of receiving 150 visiters. There is a large trade in Tunbridge ware, which is made chiefly at Tunbridge, and includes work tables, boxes, toys, &c., made of hard woods, such as beech, sycamore, holly, and cherry, and inlaid with mosaic. The town is governed by a local board of twenty-four members. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 3351 acres) in 1871 was 19,410 and in 1881 24,308.

The town owes its rise to the discovery of the medicinal springs by Dudley, Lord North, in 1606. Henrietta Maria, wife of Charles I., retired to drink the waters at Tunbridge after the birth of her eldest son Charles. Soon after the Restoration it was visited by Charles II. and Catherine of Braganza. It wasa favourite residence of Anne previous to her accession, and from that time became one of the special resorts of London fashion. It reached the height of its comparative popularity in the latter half of the 18th century, and is specially associated with Colley Cibber, Samuel Johnson, Cumberland the dramatist, Garrick, Richardson, Reynolds, Bean Nash, Miss Chudleigh, and Mrs Thrale. The Tunbridge of that period is sketched with much graphic humour in Thackeray's Vir- ginians. Though it still attracts an increasing number of visiters, its importance in refcrence to London society has considerably declined.

TTUNG-CHOW, a sub-prefectural city in Chih-li, the metropolitan province of China, is situated on the banks of the Peiho in 39° 54' N. lat. and 116° 41' E. long., about 12 miles south-east of Peking. Like most Chinese cities, T'ung-Chow has appeared in history under various names. By the founder of the Han dynasty (206 B.c.) it was called Lu-Hien ; with the rise of the T'ang dynasty (618 a.p.) its name was changed to Heuen-Chow; and at the begin- ning of the 12th century, with the advent of the Kin dynasty to power, Heuen-Chow became T'ung-Chow. The

city marks the highest point at which the Peiho is navi- gable, and here merchandise for the capital is transferred to a canal, by which it reaches Peking. The city, which is faced on its eastern side by the river, and on its other three sides is surrounded by populous suburbs, is upwards of 3 miles in circumference. The walls are about 45 feet in height and about 24 feet wide at the top. They are being allowed to fall into decay. Two main thoroughfares run through the city, one connecting the north and south gates, and the other the east and west gates. The place derives its importance from the fact that it is the port of Peking. Its population was estimated at about 50,000 in

1887.

It was at T’ung-Chow that Sir Harry Parkes, Sir Henry Loch, and their escort were treacherously taken prisoners by the Chinese when

they were sent forward by Lord Elgin to negotiate terms of peace after the troubles of 1860.

TUNGSTEN (Germ. wolfram, or, antiquated, scheel), one of the metallic elements of chemistry. The mineral tungsten (meaning in Swedish “heavy stone”) used to be taken for a tin ore until this was disproved by Cronsted. Scheele showed in 1781 that it is a compound of lime with a peculiar acid, the metallic nature of which was recog- nized in the same year by Bergmann. It occurs only as a component of a number of relatively rare minerals, the most important of which are wolfram or wolframite, (Fe, Mn)O.WO,, and scheelite (tungsten), CaOWO, (see MineRALocy). The metal is prepared from the pure oxide WO, by reduction with hydrogen in a platinum tube at a high temperature. It forms resplendent tin-white or grey plates, or a dull black powder similar to hydrogen-reduced iron, Sp. gr.=19°129, water of 4° C.=1 (Roscoe). It is more difficult to fuse than even MANGANESE (q.v.). It is unalterable in ordinary air; oxygen and even chlorine act upon it only at a high temperature. Hydrochloric and sulphuric acid do not attack it. Nitric acid attacks it slowly, aqua regia readily, with formation of the trioxide WO. Impure tungsten is now being prepared industrially for the production of a peculiar kind of steel (see Ion, vol. xiii. p. 352),

Chlorides.—Tungsten forms four chlorides, —WCl,, WCl,, WCl;, WCly. _ The highest, WCle, is obtained by heating the pure powdery metal in a current of absolutely pure chlorinc. In the presence of moisture or air oxy-chlorides are produced. It sublimes off as a dark red liquid, freezing into crystals. ‘These fuse at 275° C. and re-solidify at 270° ; the liquid boils at 846°-7. The sp. gr. of the vapour is in accordance with the formula at 350° ; at higher tempera- tures it dissociatcs into WCl, and free Cl, (Roscoe). When the vapour of WCl, is passed over heated trioxide, the two bodies unite, WO, with 2WCl, into 3WOCl,, forming magnificent red needles, which fuse at 210°:4 and boil at 227°°5 C. (Wohler). Both compounds, WCl, and WOCI,, are decomposed by water, the oxy-chloride more readily,

with formation of hydrochloric acid and trioxide. For other chlorides and oxy-chlorides, see the ordinary hand-books of chemistry.

Oxides, WO, and WO;, and Compounds of These with Each Other. —The trioxide, popularly known as tungstic acid, is the more important. Impure trioxide is producible by treating scheelite (WO;CaO) with hot hydrochloric acid. Wolframite is not so readily decomposed ; but when fused with twice its weight of chloride of calcium it passes into lime salt, obtainable as an insoluble residue by lixiviation of the fuse with water. The oxide obtained forms a yel- low powder insoluble in water and in hydrochloric acid. To purify it, it is washed, dissolved in aqueous ammonia, and the filtered solution evaporated, when an acid tungstate of ammonia separates out in scales of great purity. These, when heated in air, leave behind them a psendo-morphose of pure yellow oxide. Trioxide of tungsten combines with basic oxides into tungstates ; but the pro- portion in which it unites with a given base is subject to great variation : for instance, the quantity Na,O of soda unites into so many definite tungstates with 1, 14, 2, 23, 22, 24, 4 times Wo, and in each case more or less of watcr. To each of these soda salts corresponds theoretically a certain tungstic acid,—to the salt Na,OW.0,, for instance, the acid H,OW,0, or H,W.0,. But few of these hydrates actually exist, and they are not individual acids in the sense in which the three phosphoric acids are, except per- haps that remarkable substance known as metatungstic acid,

H,W,0\,+7H,O. This acid forms crystals 6f the stated composi- tion ; it dissolves in water and the solution unites with bases into meta-tungstates. Most meta-tungstates are soluble in water; of the tungstates proper only the alkali salts are so soluble. The soda tungstate, 5Na,O .12W0O,+«H.0, known as para-tungstate of soda, is made industrially by fusing wolframite with carbonate of soda and lixiviating the fuse with water. The insoluble oxides of iron and manganese are filtered off ; the filtrate, while still hot, is nearly neutralized with hydrochloric acid and allowed to crystallize. It forms large crystals containing twenty-one, twenty-five, or twenty- eight times H,O according to the temperature at which they are formed. The salt has been recommended as a mordant in dyeing and calico-printing, but has

not taken root in these industries. Oppenheim and Versmann recommended it before 1862 as the best means for rendering textile fabrics uninflammable. If,a solution of the para-tungstate is boiled with hydrated tungstic acid (as ob- tained by precipitating any ordinary alkaline tungstate solution with hydrochloric acid in the heat), or is simply mixed with excess of acetic acid, the meta-tungstate is formed ; in the latter case it separates out as a heavy oil. Meta-tungstate of soda forms octa- hedral crystals of the composition Na,O.4WO,;+10H,0. If con- centrated warm solutions of this salt and the equivalent quantity of chloride of barium are mixed and allowed to cool after addition of a little hydrochloric acid, 1neta-tungstate of barium crystallizes out as BaO.4W0,+9H,0, in large quadratic pyramids which are very easily soluble in water. From this salt the free acid is easily produced by addition of the exact quantity of sulphuric acid re- quired to precipitate the baryta, and from it any other meta- tungstate is easily produced. Meta-tungstic acid solution is a sensitive and characteristic precipitant for almost all alkaloids (strychnine, quinine, &c.). The alkaloid, whatever its name, goes down as a flocculent insoluble meta-tungstate. Tungstic acid com- bines with phosphoric acid and with silicic acids into highly com- plex phospho-tungstic acids and silico-tungstic acids. Of the for- iner there is quite a series, eaeh consisting of one P,O, united with respectively fourteen, sixteen, eighteen, twenty, twenty-two, twenty- four times WO, aud six H,O of basic water. Of silico-tungstic acids three are known, namely, one 4H,0 .Si0,. 10W0O,+3Aq and two Si0,.12WO,xH,O. All these complex acids (both kinds) are easily soluble in water. The phosphio-acids are delicate precipitants for all alkaloids.

The binoxide, WO,, is obtained when the trioxide is reduced by hydrogen at a dull red heat. This oxide is very prone to pass into trioxide or tungstate. An interesting and beautiful class of con- pounds of WO,, WOy, and bases are known as tungsten bronzes. The first of these was discovered by Wohler. Normal tungstate of soda, Na,OW0Os, is fused, and trioxide added to it as long as it dissolves. The product is then heated in hydrogen as long as water goes away, and the substance thus reduced is exhausted successively with water, hydrochloric acid, caustic potash ley, and again with water. A residue of the composition Na,O. W20g+ WO, remains in the shape of magnificent gold-like lustrous cubes, of specific gravity 6°617, which conduct electricity like a metal. Only hydrofluoric acid dissolves this

soda-tungsten bronze. There are a number of other tungsten bronzes, all distinguished by metallic lustre and magni- ficent purple, red, yellow, or blue colours.

Analysis. —Oxides of tungsten dissolve in fused microcosmic salt, Na,OP,O; ; the bead becomes blue in the reducing flame, in the presence of iron blood-red, and in the oxidizing flame colourless. Whien heated on charcoal with (not too much) carbonate of soda or cyanide of potassium in the reducing flame, they yield a grey heavy powder of metal, obtainable by elutriation. The process fails in the presence of too much alkali. Insoluble tungstates (¢.g., the ordi- nary tungsten minerals) are disintegrable by fusion with alkaline carbonate ; the fuse, when treated with water, yields a solution of alkaline tungstate. This solution, when mixcd with excess of hydro- chloric acid, gives a white precipitate of hydrated trioxide, whieh on boiling becomes yellow by partial dehydration. The yellow unignited precipitate is soluble in aqueous ammonia, If tungstate of alkali solutions are mixed with hydrochloric acid and then treated with metallic zinc, they become blue through the formation of a compound of WO, and WO, or rather the respective chloride ; this reaction gains in definiteness through the presence of phosphoric acid. (W. D.)

TUNGUSES, a wide-spread Asiatic people, forming a inain branch of the Mongol division of the Mongol-Tatar family. They are the Z’ung-hu of the Chinese, probably a corrupt form of tonki or donki, that is, “men” or “people.” The Russian form Z’ungus, wrongly supposed to mean “lake people,” appears to occur first in the Dutch writer Massa (1612); but the race has been known to the Russians ever since they reached the Yenisei. The Tungus domain, covering many hundred thousand square miles in central and east Siberia and in the Amur basin, stretches from

the Yenisei eastwards to the Pacific, where it occupies most of the seaboard between Corea and Kamchatka. It also reaches the Arctic Ocean at two points, in the Nisovaya tundra, west of the Khatanga river, and ina comparatively small enclosure in the Yana basin over against the Liakhoff (New Siberia) Archipelago. But the Tunguses proper are chiefly centred in the region watered by the three large eastern tributaries of the Yenisei,

which from them take their names of the Upper, Middle or Stony, and Lower Tunguska. Here the Tunguses are known to the Samoyedes by the name of Aya or “younger brothers,” implying a comparatively recent immigration (confirmed by other in- dications) from the Amur basin, which appears to be the original home both of the Tunguses and of the closely-allied Manchus. The Amur is still mainly a Tungus river almost from its source to its mouth: the Oroches (Orochus), Daurians, Birars, Golds, Manegrs, Sanagirs, Ngatkons, Nigidals, and some other aboriginal tribes scattered along the main stream and its affluents,—the Shilka, Sungari, and Usuri,—are all of Tungus stock and speech. On the Pacific the chief subdivisions of the race are the Lamuts, or “ sea people,” grouped in small isolated hunting communities round the west coast of the Sea of Okhotsk, and further south the Yu-pi-ta-tze (“fish clad”), the Tazi of the Russians, between the Amur delta and Corea. The whole race, exclusive of Manchus, numbers probably about 80,000, of whom 15,000 are in the Amur basin, the rest in Siberia.

The Tungus type is essentially Mongolic, being characterized by broad flat features, small nose, wide mouth, thin lips, small black and somewhat oblique eyes, black lank hair, dark olive or bronze complexion, low stature, averaging uot more than five feet four inches ; they are distinguished from other Mongolic peoples by the square shape of the skull and the slim, wiry, well-proportioned figure. This description applies more especially to the Tunguska tribes, who may be regarded as typical Tuiguses, and who, unlike most other Mongols, betray no tendency to obesity. They arc classed by the Russians, according to their various pursuits, as Reindeer, Horse, Cattle, Dog, Steppe, and Forest Tunguses, A few have become settled agriculturists; but the great bulk of the race are still essentially forest hunters, using the reindeer both as mounts and as pack animals. Nearly all lead nomad lives, in pursuit of fur-bearing animals, whose skins they supply to Russian and Yakut traders, in exchange for provisions, clothing, and other necessaries of life. The picturesque and even elegant national costuine shows in its ornamentation and general style decided Japanese influence, due no doubt to long-continued intercourse with that nation at some period previous to the spread of the race from the Amur valley to Siberia. Many of the Tungus tribes have been baptized, and are, therefore, reckoned as ‘‘ Greek Christians’’; but Russian orthodoxy has not penetrated far below the

surface, and most of them are still at heart Shamanists and nature-worshippers, secretly keeping the teeth and claws of wild animals as idols or amulets, and observing Christian rites only under compulsion. But, whether Christians or pagans, all alike are distinguished above other Asiatics, perhaps above all other peoples, for their truly noble moral qualities. All observers describe them as ‘‘ cheerful under the most depressing circumstances, persevering, open-hearted, trustworthy, modest yet self-reliant, a fearless race of hunters, boru amidst the gloom of their dense pine-forests, exposed from the cradle to every danger from wild beasts, cold, and hunger. Want and hardships of every kind they endure with surprising fortitude, and nothing can induce them to take service under the Russians or quit their solitary wood- lands” (Keane’s Asia, p. 479). Their numbers are steadily de- creasing owing to the ravages of small-pox, scarlet fever, and especially famine, their most dreaded enemy. Their doniain is also being continually encroached upon by the aggressive Yakuts from the north and east, and from the south by the Slavs, now settled in compact bodies in the province of Irkutsk about the upper course of the Yenisei. It isremarkable that, while the Russians often show a tendency to become assimilated to the Yakuts, the most vigorous and expansive of all the Siberian peoples, the Tunguses everywhere yield before the advance of their more civilized neighbours or become absorbed in the surrounding Slav communities. In the Amur valley the same fate is overtaking the kindred tribes, who are disappearing before the great waves of Chinese migration from the south and Russian encroachments both from the east and west. In 1880 the Oroches were already reduced to about 260, and the Tazi to a little over 200. For the philological relations of the Tunguses, see vol. xviii. p. 779.

609

TUNICATA

HIS group of animals was formerly regarded as con- stituting along with the Polyzoa and the Brachio-

poda the invertebrate class Molluscoidea. It is now known to be a degenerate branch of the Chordata, and to be more

in the test of some Ascidians of “tunicine,” a substance very similar to cellulose, and in the following year Lowig and Kolliker (7) confirmed the discovery and made some additional observations upon this substance and upon the

nearly related to the Vertebrata than to any group of the

structure of the test in general. Huxley (8), in an im- Huxley. Invertebrata

portant series of papers published in the 7’ransactions of the Royal and Linnean Societies of London from 1851 on- wards, discussed the structure, embryology, and affinities of the pelagic Tunicates Pyrosoma, Salpa, Doliolum, and Appendicularia. These important forms were also investi- gated about the same time by Gegenbaur, Vogt, H. Miiller, Krohn, and Leuckart. The most important epoch in the history of the Z’unicata is the date of the publication of Kowalevsky’s celebrated memoir upon the development of Kowa. a Simple Ascidian (9). The tailed larva had been previously levsky. discovered and investigated by several naturalists— notably Tailed

Hisrory,}

More than two thousand years ago Aristotle gave a short account of a Simple Ascidian under the name of Tethyum, He described the appearance and some of the more important points in the anatomy of the animal. From that time onwards to little more than a century ago, although various forms of Ascidians had been briefly de- scribed by writers on marine zoology, comparatively little advance was made upon the knowledge of Aristotle.

Simple Ascid- ians.

| tion.

later Kuhl and Van Hasselt’s investigations upon the same animal resulted in the discovery of the alternation in the directions in which the wave of contraction passes along the heart and in which the blood circulates through the body. It has since been found that this observation holds good for all groups of the Tunicata. In 1826 H. Milne- Edwards and Audouin made a

series of observations on living Compound Ascidians, and amongst other discoveries they found the free-swimming tailed larva, and traced its development into the young Ascidian. Milne-Edwards

Ss: (5) also founded the group of “Social” Ascidians, now

known as the Olavelinidx, and gave a classification of the Compound Ascidians which was universally accepted for many years. From the year 1826 onwards a number of new and remarkable forms were discovered, as, for instance,

Com- Schlosser and Ellis, in a paper containing a description of . larva. pound = Botryllus, published in the Philosophical Transactions of H. Milne-Edwards (5), J. P. van Beneden (ro), and Krohn Best 4.4 Roval Society for 1756. first beo ee Re Con oma (zz); but its minute structure had not been sufficiently ians. ane y. i ac vont ee examined, and the meaning of what was known of it had Ascidians into notice ; but it was not until the commence- Meant d aot df ky j ; ment of the 19th century, as a result of the careful ana- Dot ae aagusboort. git ee Kow alevsky in Relation- Ne Fecal invdsiiontions an Cuvier ® upon the Simple 1866 to demonstrate the striking similarity in structure ship to Rend Aséititans and = Savigny (2) upon the ae ae man and in development between the larval Ascidian and the Sere | Savigny. : Bp ey P a : vertebrate embryo. He showed that the relations between the close relationship between these two groups of the ih h : Tunicata was conclusively demonstrated. Up to 1816, ea eee eee ae uel a tania ae the date of publication of Savigny’s great work (2), the hiouh eeouan —- leet ioe st ‘We. few Compound Ascidians then known had been generally 1 s t Th di y — 4; Ae hie regarded as Alcyonaria or as Sponges; and, although pga) ee many new Simple Ascidians had been eoeaied by 0. F Tunicata are closely allied to Amphioxus and the Verte- Miiller (z) and others, their internal structure had ot ye ot i ve koe ie Be is saaarabi the aa) Lamarck. been investigated. Lamarck (3) in 1816, chiefly as the | °” see i eat es eee ae ie “- pa result of the anatomical discoveries of Savigny and Cuvier, Wasa Esacui inal ee — dy prin: | SUE 4 anes : 5 ‘ emia th cles Pointe hich he pled between te | Gogengate side trendh fm the lower end of he Pin The Tunicata included at that time, besides the Simple Mec eee ae = i ma get da), seat ‘ i 4 oaus (Cephalochorda), and the Vertebrata. Kowalevsky’s SS ee cei ee

great discovery has since been confirmed and extended to Saipag deaemiciWls, Honeealtin 177 y all other groups of the Z'unicata by Kupffer (72), Giard Kupffer, Gham Chamisso in 1820 made the important discovery that (73 and 75), and others, Important observations upon Giard, &e. isso and qa in its life-history passes through the series of changes we Se ote oeation': od the formation of colonies in Gemma- eo ich wows aiterwands moredally desesihed by Stecusiian (ene forms of Compound Ascidians have been made by tion. jtionof 2 Hi) ae Cael PeeteN f y te eiig its a f P Krohn, Metschnikoff, Kowalevsky, Ganin, Giard, Della jgenera- 10 Sigh itas ue S.C Valle, and others, and have gradually led to the establish-

ment of the general principle, that all the more important layers of the bud are derived more or less directly from the corresponding regions in the body of the parent.

In 1872 Fol (74) added largely to the knowledge of the Fol, &e.

Appendicularude, and Giard (75) to that of the Compound Ascidians. The latter author described a number of new forms and remodelled the classification of the group. The most important additions which have been made to the Compound Ascidians since Giard's work have been those described by Von Drasche (z6) from the Adriatic and those discovered by the "Challenger" expedition (77). The structure and the systematic arrangement of the Simple Ascidians have been mainly discussed of recent years by Alder and Hancock (78), Heller (79), Lacaze-Duthiers (20), Traustedt (27), and Herdman (77, 22). In 1874

some of the Bolteninx (Macleay), Chelyosoma (Broderip and Sowerby, and afterwards Eschricht), Oikoplewra (Mertens), Perophora (Lister), Pelonaia (Forbesand Goodsir), Chondro- stachys and Diplosoma (Denis Macdonald), Diazona (Forbes and Goodsir), and Ahodosoma (Ehrenberg, and afterwards Lacaze-Duthiers).

In 1845 Carl Schmidt (6) first announced the presence

Ussoff (23) investigated the minute structure of the nervous gyp. system and of the underlying gland, which was first dis- neural covered by Hancock, and showed that the gland has a sland duct which communicates

with the front of the branchial — sac or pharynx by an aperture in the dorsal (or “olfactory ”) tubercle. tubercle. In an important paper published in 1880 Julin (24) drew attention to the similarity in structure and rela- tions between this gland and the hypophysis cerebri of the vertebrate brain, and insisted upon their homology. He suggests that they perform a renal function. The 7haliacea XXII. — 77

1 Only the more important works can be mentioned here. Fora more detailed account of the history of the group and a full biblio- graphy, see (7) in the list of works at the end of this article.

7

Thali- aced.

Van Beneden and Julin.

Ascidia mentula.

External charac- ters.

The test.

610

have of late years been the subject of several very import- ant memoirs. The researches of Todaro, Brooks (25), Salensky (26), and others have elucidated the embryology, the gemmation, and the life-history of the Salpidx ; and Grobben, Barrois (27), and more especially Uljanin (28) have elaborately worked out the structure and the details of the complicated life-history of the Doliolidx. Finally, in an important work published in 1886 on the morpho- logy of the Twnicata, E. van Beneden and Julin (30) have, mainly as the result of a close comparison of the embryo- logy of Ascidians with that of Amphiowus and other Chordata, added considerably to our knowledge of the position and affinities of the Z’wnicata, and of the exact relations of their organs to the corresponding parts of the body in the Vertebrata.

ANATOMY.

As a type of the Tunicata, Ascidia mentula, one of the larger species of the Simple Ascidians, may be taken. This species is found in most of the European seas, generally in shallow water on a muddy bottom. It has an irregularly ovate form, and is of a dull grey colour. It is attached to some foreign object by one end (fig. 1). The opposite end of the body is usually nar- br row, and it has a terminal i opening surrounded by eight rounded lobes. This is the mouth or branchial aperture, and it always indicates the anterior end } of the animal. About half-way back from the anterior end, and on a rounded projection, is the atrial or cloacal aperture— an opening surrounded by six lobes—which is always placed upon the dorsal re- gion. When the Ascidian is living and undisturbed, water is being constantly drawn in through the branchial aperture and passed out through the atrial. If coloured par- ticles be placed in the water near the apertures, they are seen to be sucked into the body through the branchial aperture, and after a short time some of them are ejected with consider- able force through the atrial aperture. The current of water passing in is for re- spiratory purposes, and it also conveys food into the animal, The atrial current is mainly the water which has been used in respiration, but it also contains all excretions from the body, and at times the ova and spermatozoa or the embryos.

The outer grey part of the body, which is attached at or near its posterior end and penetrated by the two aper- tures, is the ‘“‘test.” This is a firm gelatinous cuticular secretion from the outer surface of the ectoderm, which is a layer of flat cells lining its inner surface. Although at first produced as a cuticle, the test soon becomes organized by the migration into it of cells derived from the ectoderm (see fig. 2). These test cells may remain as rounded or fusiform or stellate cells imbedded in the gelatinous matrix, to which they are constantly adding by secretions on their

Fic. 1.—Ascidia mentula from the right side. at, atrial aperture ; br, branchial aperture ; ¢, test. (Original.)

1 Some writers use a different nomenclature of regions ; see (77).

TUATCaAaAT «&

surfaces; or they may develop vacuoles in their proto- plasm, which become larger and fuse to form a huge ovate

te

clear cavity (a “bladder cell”), — sur- rounded by a delicate film of protoplasm and having the nucleus still visible at one point ; or they may form pigment gran- ules in the pro- toplasm ;_ or, lastly, they ,, may deposit carbonate of lime, so that one or several of them together produce a calcareous spicule in the test. Only the unmodified test cells and the bladder cells are found in Ascidia mentula. Calcareous spicules are found chiefly in the Didemnidx, amongst Compound Ascidians ; but pigmented cells may occur in the test of almost all groups of Zunicata. The matrix in which these structures are imbedded is usually clear and apparently homogeneous ; but in some cases it becomes finely fibrillated, especially in the family Cynthiidx. It is this matrix which contains tunicine. At one point on the left side near the posterior end a tube enters the test, and then splits up into a num- ber of branches, which extend in all directions and finally terminate in rounded enlargements or bulbs, situated chiefly in the outer layer of the /

test. These tubes are known as the “ vessels” of the test, and they contain blood. Each vessel is bounded by a layer of ec- toderm cells lined by con- nective tissue (fig. 3, B), and is divided into two tubes by a septum of con- nective tissue. The septum

‘Fe 1G. 2.— Diagrammatic section of part of mantle and test of an Ascidian, showing the formation of a vessel aud

Prine tin

the structure of the test. m, mantle; e, ectoderm; tc test cell; tm, matrix; ble, bladder cell; s,s’, blood sinus in mantle being drawn out into test; mc, mantle cells ; y, septum of vessel. (From Herdman, Challenger Report.

Fig. 8.—A, a vessel from the test. B, dia-

does not extend into the grammatic transverse section of a ves- sel. ec, ectoderm; ct, connective tissue ;

terminal bulb, and conse- 5, ¥, the two tubes; y, septum ; tk, ter- quently the two tubes com- minal bulb. (Original.)

municate at their ends (fig. 3,4). The vessels are formed by an outgrowth of a blood sinus (derived originally from the blastoccele of the embryo) from the body wall (mantle) into the test, the wall of the sinus being formed by con- nective tissue and pushing out a covering of ectoderm in front of it (fig. 2, s'). The test is turned inwards at the branchial and atrial apertures to line two funnel-like tubes, —the branchial siphon leading to the branchial sac and the atrial siphon leading to the atrial or peribranchial cavity.

The body wall, inside the test and the ectoderm, is formed Mantle.

of a layer (the somatic layer of mesoderm) of connective tissue, inclosing muscle fibres, blood sinuses, and nerves. This layer (the mantle) has very much the shape of the test outside it, but at the two apertures it is drawn out to form the branchial and atrial siphons (fig. 4). In the walls of these siphons the muscle fibres form powerful circular bands, the sphincter muscles. Throughout the rest of the mantle the bands of muscle fibres form a rude irregular network. They are numerous on the right side of the body, and almost totally absent on the left. The muscles are all formed of very long fusiform non-striped fibres. The con- nective tissue of the mantle is chiefly a clear gelatinous

Bran- chial sac and neigh- bouring organs.

TURLC ATA

matrix, containing cells of various shapes ; it is frequently pigmented and is penetrated by numerous lacunz, in which the blood flows. In- dt side the mantle, in , all parts of the body, except along the ven- tral edge, there is a cavity,—the atrial or peribranchial cavity, —which opens to the exterior by the atrial aperture. This cavity is lined by a layer of cells derived origin- ally from the ecto- derm! and directly continuous with that layer through the atrial aperture (fig. 5); consequently the mantleiscovered both externally and inter- nally by ectodermal cells. @ q

The branchial aper- pdr---~~ ture (mouth) leads in- to the branchial si-

phon (buccal cavity Fia. 4.—Diagrammatic dissection of A. mentula to

show the anatomy. at, atrial aperture; br, or stomodeeum), and branchial aperture; a, “anus ; brs, branchial this opens into the sac; dl, dorsal lamina; dt, dorsal tubercle ; anterior end of a very

end, endostyle; h, heart; 7%, intestine; m, mantle; ng, nerve ganglion; o, cesophagus; large cavity (the bran- chial sac) which ex-

@a, cesophageal aperture; ov, ovary; por, tends nearly to the

peribranchial cavity; 7, rectum; st, stomach ; t, test; tm, tentacles; vd, vas deferens; ngl, subneural gland. (Original.)

posterior end of the body (see figs. 4 and 5). This branchial sac is an enlarged and modified pharynx, and is therefore properly a part of the ali-

mentary canal, The ceso- phagus opens from it far back on the dorsal edge (see below, p. 612). The wall of the branchial sac is pierced by a large number of ver- tical slits,—the stigmata, —placed in numerous trans- verse rows. These slits “ place the branchial sac in communication with the

-*

a7

chial and peribranchial cavities. represents a section taken along the dotted line A-Bin A.

The lettering is the same as for fig. 4. B (Original.)

peribranchial or atrial cavity, which lies outside it (fig. 5, 2B). Between the stigmata the wall of the branchial sac is traversed by blood-vessels, which are arranged in three regular series (fig. 6),—(1) the transverse vessels, which run horizontally round the wall and open at their dorsal and ventral ends into large longitudinal vessels, the dorsal and ventral sinuses ; (2) the fine longitudinal vessels, which run vertically between adjacent transverse vessels and open into them, and which bound the stigmata; and (3) the internal longitudinal bars, which run vertically in a plane

1 According to E. van Beneden and Julin’s recent investigations (30) only the outer wall of the atrium is lined with epiblast, the inner wall being derived from the hypoblast of the primitive branchial sac.

internal to that of the transverse and fine longitudinal vessels. These bars communicate with the transverse vessels by short side branches where they

cross, and at these »…. points are prolonged into the lumen of the sac in the form of hollow papille. The edges of the stigmata are richly set with cilia, which drive the water from the bran- chial sac into the peribranchial ca-

vity, andso cause

the currents that _, flow in through

SS SS

~“ —

VS

= eer the branchial – ; aperture and SS “7 out through the lo i atrial. Miss

Alo 5 Fic. 6.—A. Part of branchial sac of Ascidia from inside. ongitsvent- B. Transverse section ’ same. tr, a pee Seeeal ed, connecting duct; hm, horizontal membrane; 7 ral edge the wall internal longitudinal bar ly, fine longitudinal vessels: of the branchial p, p’, papille; sg, stigmata. A and B are drawn to sac is continu-

different scales. (From Herdman, Challenger Report.) ous externally with the mantle (fig. 5, B), while internally it is thickened to form two parallel longitudinal folds

bounding a groove, the “‘ endostyle,” hypobranchial groove, Endo- The endoderm cells style.

or ventral furrow (figs. 4, 5, end). which line the endostyle are greatly enlarged at the bottom and on parts of the sides of the furrow so as to form' projecting pads, which bear very long cilia. It is generally supposed that this organ is a gland for the pro- duction of the mucous secretion which is spread round the edges of the branchial sac and catches the food particles in the passing current of water; but it has recently been pointed out that there are comparatively few gland cells in the epithelium of the endostyle, and that it is more prob- able that this furrow is merely a ciliated path along which the mucous secretion (produced possibly by the subneural gland) is conveyed posteriorly along the ventral edge of the branchial sac.

of the posterior of two circular ciliated ridges,—the peri- pharyngeal bands, —which run parallel to one another round the front of the branchial sac. The dorsal ends of

the posterior peripharyngeal band bend posteriorly (en- Dorsal closing the epibranchial groove), and then join to form lamina.

the anterior end of a fold which runs along the dorsal edge of the branchial sac as far as the cesophageal aperture. This fold is the dorsal lamina (figs. 4, 5, dl). It probably serves to direct the stream of food particles entangled in a string of mucus from the anterior part of the dorsal lamina to the cesophagus.

mentula, is represented by a series of elongated triangular processes—the dorsal languets,—one attached in the dorsal median line opposite to each transverse vessel of the branchial sac. The anterior peripharyngeal band is a complete circular ridge, having no connexion with either the endostyle or the dorsal lamina. In front of it lies the prebranchial zone, which separates the branchial sac behind from the branchial siphon in front. The prebranchial zone is bounded anteriorly by a muscular band—the pos- terior edge of the sphincter muscle,—which bears a circle

of long delicate processes, the tentacles (figs. 4, 7, 8, tn). Ten- These project inwards at right angles so as to form a net- tacles.

work across the entrance to the branchial sac. Each tentacle consists of connective tissue covered with epithe-

At its anterior end the edges of the Peri- endostyle become continuous with the right and left halves pharyn-

In many Ascidians this organ, Dorsal instead of being a continuous membranous fold as in A, languets.

lium (endoderm), and contains two or more cavities which are continuous with blood sinuses in the mantle. In the

Subneur- dorsal median line near the anterior end of the body, and al gland. imbedded in the mantle on the ventral surface of the nerve

Dorsal

tubercle.

Nervous system.

ganglion, there lies a small glandular mass—the subneural gland—which, as Julin has shown (24), there is reason to regard as the homologue of the hypo- fy physis cerebri of the vertebrate brain. Ae Julin and E. van Beneden have sug- gested that the function of this organ may possibly be renal! The sub- neural gland, which was first noticed ~. f by Hancock, communicates anteriorly, as Ussoff (27) pointed out, by means of a narrow duct with the front of the branchial sac (pharynx). The opening of the duct is enlarged to form a funnel-shaped cavity, which may be folded upon itself, convoluted, or even broken up into a number of smaller openings, so as to form a complicated projection, called the dorsal tubercle, situated in the dorsal part of the prebranchial zone (fig. 7). The dorsal tubercle in A. mentula is somewhat horse-shoe-shaped (fig. 8) ; it varies in form in most Ascidians |) according to the genus and species, //) and in some cases in the individual also. Possibly, besides being the F opening of the duct from the sub- neural gland, it may be a sense-organ for testing the quality of the water entering the branchial sac.

The single elongated ganglion in the median dorsal line of the mantle “eu”, ay is sg between the branchial and atrial si- ialsiphon. (Original.) phons is the only nerve-centre in A. mentula and most other Tunwata. It is the degenerate remains of the anterior

i I”

ik i

1a. 7.—Diagrammatic sec- tion through anterior dor- sal part of A. mentula, showing the relations of the nerve ganglion, sub- neural gland, &c. Letter- ing as for fig. 4; , nerve; m’, myelon; pp, peripha- ryngeal band; sgl, sub- neural gland; sgd, its

\—__tn

Fic. 8.—Dorsal tubercle and neighbouring organs of A. mentula. Lettering as before ; egr, epibranchial groove; z, prebranchial zone. (Original.)

part of the cerebro-spinal nervous system of the tailed larval Ascidian (see below, p. 614). The posterior or spinal part has entirely disappeared in most Z’unicata. It persists, however, in the Appendiculariide, and traces of it are found in some Ascidians (e.g., Clavelina ; see Julin). The ganglion gives off distributory nerves at both ends, ee Oe CEE EY Se ee ee ee ee ee

1 See also Herdman, Nature, vol. xxviii. p. 284.

which run through the mantle to the neighbourhood of the apertures, where they divide and subdivide. The only sense-organs are the pigment spots between the branchial and atrial lobes, the tentacles at the base of the branchial siphon, and possibly the dorsal tubercle and the languets or dorsal lamina. These are all in a lowly developed con- dition. The larval Ascidians on the other hand have well- developed intra-cerebral optic and auditory sense-organs ; and in some of the pelagic Z’unicata otocysts and pigment spots are found in connexion with the ganglion.

The mouth and the pharynx (branchial sac) have already been described. The remainder of the alimentary canal is a bent tube which in A. mentula and most other Ascid- ians lies imbedded in the mantle on the left side of the body, and projects into the peribranchial cavity. The cesophagus leaves the branchial sac in the dorsal middle line near the posterior end of the dorsal lamina (see fig. 4, ea). It is a short curved tube which leads ventrally to the large fusiform thick-walled stomach. The intestine emerges from the ventral end of the stomach, and soon turns anteriorly, then dorsally, and then posteriorly so as to form a curve—the intestinal loop—open posteriorly. The intestine now curves anteriorly again, and from this point runs nearly straight forward as the rectum, thus com- pleting a second curve —the rectal loop—open anteriorly (see fig. 4). The wall of the intestine is thickened inter- nally, to form the typhlosole, a pad which runs along its entire length. The anus opens into the dorsal part of the peribranchial cavity near to the atrial aperture. The walls of the stomach are glandular; and a system of delicate tubules with dilated ends, which ramifies over the outer wall of the intestine and communicates with the cavity of the stomach by means of a duct, is probably a digestive gland.

A mass of large clear vesicles which occupies the rectal loop, and may extend over the adjacent walls of the in- testine, is a renal organ without a duct. Each vesicle is the modified remains of a part of the primitive ccelom or body-cavity, and is formed of cells which eliminate nitro- genous waste matters from the blood circulating in the neighbouring blood-lacunze and deposit them in the cavity of the vesicle, where they form a concentrically laminated concretion of a yellowish or brown colour. These concre- tions contain uric acid, and in a large Ascidian are very numerous. The nitrogenous waste products are thus de- posited and stored up in the renal vesicles in place of being excreted from the body. In other Ascidians the renal organ may differ from the above in its position and structure; but in no case has it an excretory duct, unless the subneural gland is to be regarded as a renal organ.

The heart is an elongated fusiform tube placed on the ventral and posterior edge of the stomach, in a space (the pericardium) which is part of the original ccelom or body- cavity, the rest of which exists merely in the form of lacune and of the cavities of the reproductive organs and renal vesicles in

the adult Ascidian. The wall of the heart is formed of a layer of epithelio-muscular cells, the inner ends of which are cross-striated ; and waves of contraction pass along it from end to end, first for a certain number of beats in one direction and then in the other, so as to reverse the course of circulation periodically. At each end the heart is continued into a vessel (see fig. 9), a large sinus or lacuna lined with a delicate endothelial layer. The sinus leaving the ventral end of the heart is called the branchio-cardiac vessel,? and the heart itself is merely the differentiated posterior part of this sinus and is therefore a ventral vessel. The branchio-cardiac vessel, after giving off a branch which, along with a corresponding branch from the cardio-visceral vessel, goes to the test, runs along the

2 On account of the periodic reversal of the circulation none of the vessels can be called arteries or veins.

Sense organs.

Aliment-

ary canal.

Excre- tory organs.

Blood- vascular system

coelom,

PFURYCAT A

ventral edge of the branchial sac externally to the endostyle, and communicates laterally with the ventral ends of all the transverse vessels of the branchial sac. The sinus leaving the dorsal end of the heart is called the cardio-visceral vessel, and this, after giving off to the test the branch above mentioned, breaks up into a number of sinuses, which ramify over the alimentary canal and the other viscera, These visceral lacune finally communicate with a third great sinus, the viscero-branchial vessel, which runs forward along the dorsal edge of the branchial sac exter- nally to the dorsal lamina and joins the’ dorsal ends of all the transverse vessels of the

branchial sac. Besides these three chief systems there are numerous lacunz in all parts of the body, by means of which anastomoses are established between the different currents of blood. All these blood spaces and lacunz are to be regarded as derived from the blastoccele of the embryo, and not, as has been usually

Course of supposed, from the ccelom (30). When the heart contracts

circula- tion.

Repro- ductive organs.

ventro-dorsally, the course of the circulation is as follows: the blood which is flowing through the vessels of the branchial sac is collected in an oxygenated condition in the branchio-cardiac vessel, and, after receiving a stream of blood from /

the test, en-

ters the heart. It is then pro- pelled from the dorsal

t end of the Fic. 9.—Diagram of circulation in Ascidia. Lettering as be- hy t int fore; bc, branchio-cardiac or ventral vessel; cv, cardio- ear m O visceral vessels; vb, viscero-branchial or dorsal vessel ; the cardio-

vt, vessels to test. (Original.) visceral vessels, and so reaches the test and digestive and other organs ; then, after circulating in the visceral lacuna,

‘it passes into the viscero-branchial vessel in an impure

condition, and is distributed to the branchial vessels to be purified again. When the heart on the other hand contracts dorso-ventrally, this course of circulation is reversed. As the test receives a branch from each end of the heart, it follows that it has afferent and efferent vessels which- ever way the blood is flowing. In some Ascidians the vessels in the test become very numerous and their end branches terminate in swollen bulbs close under the outer surface of the test. In this way an accessory respiratory organ is probably formed in the superficial layer of the test. The blood corpuscles

are chiefly colourless and amoeboid ; but in most if not all Ascidians there are also some pigmented corpuscles in the blood. These are gener- ally of an orange or reddish brown tint, but may be opaque white, dark indigo-blue, or of intermediate colours. Pre- cisely similarly pigmented cells are found throughout the connective tissue of the mantle and other parts of the body.

A. mentula is hermaphrodite, and the reproductive organs lie, with the alimentary canal, on the left side of the body. The ovary is a ramified gland which occupies the greater part of the intestinal loop (see fig. 4). It contains a cavity which, along with the cavities of the testis, is derived from a part of the original ccelom, and the ova are formed from its walls and fall when mature into the cavity. The oviduct ig continuous with the cavity of the ovary and leads forwards alongside the rectum, finally opening near the anus into the peribranchial cavity. The testis is com- posed of a great number of delicate branched tubules, which ramify over the ovary and the adjacent parts of the intestinal wall. Those tubules terminate in ovate swell- ings. Near the commencement of the rectum the larger tubules unite to form the vas deferens, a tube of consider- able size, which runs forwards alongside the rectum, and, like the oviduct, terminates by opening into the peri-

1 See Herdman, Nature, vol. xxxi. p. 247.

branchial cavity close to the anus. The lumen of the tubules of the testis, like the cavity of the ovary, is a part of the original ccelom, and the spermatozoa are formed from the cells lining the wall. In some Ascidians repro- ductive organs are present on both sides of the body, and in others (Polycarpa) there are many complete sets of both male and female systems, attached to the inner surface of the mantle on both sides of the body and projecting into the peribranchial cavity.”

Empryo.ocy? anp Lire History.

In most Ascidians the eggs are fertilized in the peribranchial Embryo- cavity, and undergo most of their development before leaving the logy.

parent ; in some cases, however, the eggs are laid, and fertilization takes place in the surrounding water. The segmentation is com- plete and regular (fig. 10, A) and results in the formation of a spherical blastula, which then undergoes invagination (fig. 10, B). The embryo elongates, and the blastopore or invagination opening comes to be placed on the dorsal edge near the posterior end (fig. 10, C). The hypoblast cells lining the archenteron are columnar in form, while the epiblast cells are more cubical (fig. 10, B, C, D). The dorsal surface of the embryo now becomes flattened and then depressed to form a longitudinal groove, extending forwards from the blastopore to near the front of the body. This ‘‘ medullary groove” now becomes converted into a closed canal by its side walls growing up, arching over, and coalescing in the median dorsal

Fic. 10.—Stages in the embryology of a Simple Ascidian (after Kowalevsky). A to F. Longitudinal vertical sections of embryos, all placed with the dorsal surface uppermost and the anterior end at the right, A. Early blastula stage, during segmentation. B. Early gastrula stage. C. Stage after gas- trula, showing commencement of notochord. D. Later stage, showing forma- tion of notochord and of neural canal. HE. Embryo showing body and tail and completely formed neural canal. F. Larva just hatched; end of tail cut off. G. Transverse section of tail of larva.

adp, adhering papille of larva; at, epiblastic (atrial) involution; au, auditory organ of larva; ar, archenteron; bc, blastoccele; bp, blastopore; ch, noto- chord; ep, epiblast; hy, hypoblast; mc, neural canal; nec, neurenteric canal; oc, ocular organ of larva; g, gelatinous investment of embryo; m, muscle cells of tail; mes, mesenteron; mc, mesoderm cells; nv, cerebral vesicle at anterior end of neural canal.

line (fig. 10, D). This union of the lamingw dorsales to form the neural canal commences at the posterior end behind the blastopore and gradually extends forwards. Consequently the blastopore comes to open into the posterior end of the neural canal (fig. 10, D), while the anterior end of that cavity remains open to the exterior, In this way the archenteron communicates indirectly with the exterior. The short canal leading from the neural canal to the archenteron is known as the neurenteric canal (fig. 10,

2 For structure of other forms, see p. 614 sg. below. 3 For reproduction by gemmation, see under ‘‘ Classification,” p. 614 sq. below.

Larval The embryo is hatched about two or three days after fertilization,

stage. in the fort st a tadpole-like larva, which swims actively through pre fag eee the sea by vibrating its long tail. The anterior end of the body pe iia: – ke reproduction is provided with three adhering papille (fig. 10, F, adp) in the exaasaition: oe euadadvarg han form of epiblastic thickenings. In the free-swimming tailed larva “ inweitia in the Wie diator the nervous system, formed from the walls of the neural canal, Gis di -case of he Sand e. becomes considerably differentiated. The anterior part of the Honetthen wdene of tive Pak: cerebral vesicle remains thin-walled (fig. 10, F), and two unpaired ors ete es der Seager iain sense organs develop from its wall and project into the cavity. pletel hea aia af tia govt These are a dorsally and posteriorly placed optic organ, provided a ae a ses lactating | with retina, pigment layer, lens, and cornea, and a ventrally placed encotmal forme. Tt ae Wns auditory organ, consisting of a large spherical partially pigmented daadae Midd or’ae decen. otolith, attached by delicate hair-like processes to the summit of a oad ch aadae bier hollow crista acoustica (fig. 10, F, aw). The posterior part of the Semaeds he ie 4 ae A cerebral vesicle thickens to form a solid ganglionic mass traversed rin ea allasce) mm diti vad by a narrow central canal. The wall of the neural canal behind the thar te the adult Jorn of cerebral vesicle becomes differentiated into an anterior thicker the other groups, ‘The order region, placed in the posterior part of the trunk and having a Fra. 11.—Othopleuna eophocdven in Hane” imeludes a single family, the superficial layer of nerve fibres, and a posterior narrower part which | * (atter Fol) a ou vak { side, magnified APPENDICULARIUDA, all the traverses the tail, lying on the dorsal surface of the notochord, and | ix times.’ The arrows indicate the course members of whi ck ane waite gives off several pairs of nerves to the muscles of the tail. Just in of the water; «, lateral reticulated parts Of snq free-swimmin The front of the anterior end of the nervous system a dorsal involution “Haus.” wisiy ak, ke aa of aL, of the epiblast breaks through into the upturned anterior end of | .., in most parts of the world. They possess the power to form Struc- the mesenteron and thus forms the mouth opening. Along the | ith great rapidity an enormously large investing gelatinous layer ture of ventral edge of the

mesenteron, which becomes the branchial sac, (fig. 11), which corresponds to the test of other groups. This was Appen- the endostyle is formed as a narrow groove with thickened side = ‘ dicianin walls. It probably corresponds to the median portion of the thyroid Ep Oe ; body of Vertebrata. A curved outgrowth from the posterior end of the mesenteron forms the alimentary canal (cesophagus, stomach, and intestine), which at first ends blindly. An anus is formed later by the intestine opening into the left of two lateral epiblastic involutions (the atria), which rapidly become larger and fuse dorsally to form the peribranchial cavity. Outgrowths from the wall of the branchial sac meet these epiblastic involutions and fuse with them to give rise to the first formed pair of stigmata, which thus come to open into the peribranchial cavity ; and these alone correspond to the gill clefts of Amphioxus and the Vertebrata.

Metamor. After a short free-swimming existence the fully developed tailed

phosis larva fixes itself by its anterior adhering papille to some foreign

to adult object, and then undergoes a remarkable series of retrogressive

form. changes, which convert it into the adult Ascidian. The tail atro- phies, until nothing is left but some fatty cells in the posterior part of the trunk. The adhering papille disappear and are replaced functionally by a growth of the test over neighbouring objects. The nervous system with its sense organs atrophies until it is re- Gems tothe ainigis areal ganghion, placed on the dorrel aan Bite Fia. 12.—Semi-diagrammatic view of Appendicularia from the right. a, anus 5

D, nec). Previous to this stage some of the hypoblast cells at the front edge of the blastopore and forming part of the dorsal wall of the archenteron (fig. 10, C, ch) have become separated off, and then arranged to form an elongated band, two cells wide, underlying the posterior half of the neural canal (fig. 10, D, E, ch.). This is the origin of the notochord. Outgrowths from the sides of the archenteron give rise to laterally placed masses of cells, which are the origin of the mesoblast. These masses show no trace of meta- meric segmentation. The cavities (reproductive and renal vesicles)

which are formed later in the mesoblast represent the ecelom. Consequently the body-cavity of the Tunicata is a modified form of enteroceele. The anterior part of the embryo, in front of the notochord, now becomes enlarged to form the trunk, while the posterior part elongates to form the tail (fig. 10, E). In the trunk the anterior part of the archenteron dilates to form the mesenteron, the greater part of which becomes the branchial sac; at the same time the anterior part of the neural canal enlarges to form the cerebral vesicle, and the opening to the exterior at the front end of the canal now closes. In the tail part of the embryo the neural canal remains as a narrow tube, while the remains of the wall of the archenteron—the dorsal part of which becomes the notochord—are converted into lateral muscle bands (fig. 10, G) and a ventral eord of cells, which eventually breaks up to form blood corpuscles. As the tail grows longer, it becomes bent round the trunk of the embryo inside the egg-membrane. About this period the epiblast cells begin to form the test as a enticular deposit upon their outer surface.

The test is at first devoid of cells and forms a delicate gelatinous |

investment, but it shortly afterwards becomes cellular by the migration into it of test cells formed by proliferation from the epi- blast.?

pharynx, and a slight nerve cord running for some distance pos- teriorly (Van Beneden and Julin). Slight changes in the shape of the body and a further growth and differentiation of the branchial sac, peribranchial cavity, and other organs now produce gradually the structure found in the adult Ascidian.

The most important points in connexion with this process of development and metamorphosis are the following. (1) In the Ascidian embryo all the more important organs (¢.g., notochord, neural canal, archenteron) are formed in essentially the same

1 Some of the first test cells are also probably derived from the epithelium of the egg follicle.

manner as they are in Amphiowus and other Chordata. (2) The free-swimming tailed larva possesses the essential characters of the Chordata, inasmuch as it has a longitudinal skeletal axis (the noto- chord) separating a dorsally placed nervous system (the neural canal) from a ventral alimentary canal (the archenteron); and therefore during this period of its life-history the animal belongs to the Chordata. (3) The Chordate larva is more highly organized than the adult Ascidian, and therefore the changes by which the latter is produced from the formcr may be regarded as a process of degeneration (77). The important conclusion drawn from all this is that the Tunicata are the degenerate descendants of a group of the primitive Chordata (sce below p. 618).

CLASSIFICATION AND CHARACTERS OF Groups, Order JL—LARVACEA.

Free-swimming pelagic forms provided with a large locomotory Char-appendage (the tail), in which there isa skeletal axis (the urochord). acters of A relatively large test (the ‘‘Haus”) is formed with Larvacea.

great rapidity as a secretion from the ectoderm ; it is (\ merely a temporary structure, which is cast off and (\ replaced by another. The branchial sae is simply an \ enlarged pharnyx with two ventral ciliated openings x (stigmata) leading to the exterior. There is no se-

[ee peribranchial cavity. The nervous

f 3 of re

system consists of a large dorsally placed ganglion and a long nerve cord, which y stretches backwards over the alimentary canal to reach the tail, along which it runs on the left side of the urochord. The anus opens

at, one of the atrial apertures; app, tail; br, branchial aperture ; brs, branchial sac; dt, dorsal tubercle; end, endostyle; h, heart; i, intestine; m, muscle band of tail ; n, nerve cord in body ; 7’, nerve cord in the tail; @, esophagus ; ot, otocyst ; ov, ovary ; pp, peripharyngeal band ; ng, cerebral ganglion ; ng’, caudal ganglion; ng’, enlargement of nerve cord in tail; so, sense organ

(tactile) on lower lip ; sg, ciliated aperture in pharynx; st, stomach ; tes, testis ; u, urochord ; w’, its cut end. (Original.)

first described by Von Mertens and by him named ‘‘Haus.” It is only loosely attached to the body and is frequently thrown off soon after its formation. The tail in the Appendiculartide is at- tached to the ventral surface of the body (fig. 12), and usually

Thali- acen.

Charac- ters of Cyclo- MYATIC.

Struc- ture of Dolio- lum.

TURPCATA

points more or less anteriorly. It shows distinct traces of meta- meric segmeutation, having its muscle bands broken up into myo- tomes, while the nerve cord presents a series of enlargements from which distributary nerves are given off (fig. 12, ng”). Near the base of the tail there is a distinct elongated ganglion (fig. 12, ng’). The anterior (cerebral) ganglion has connected with it an otocyst, a pigment spot, and a tubular process opening into the branchial sac and representing the dorsal tubercle and associated parts of an ordinary Ascidian. The branchial aperture or mouth leads into the branchial sac or br pharynx. ‘There are no tentacles. The endostyle is short. ; There is no dorsal lamina, and the peripharyngeal bands run ; dorsally and posteriorly. The wall of the branchial sac has 4r 2“. only two ciliated apertures, They are homologous with the primary stigmata of the typical Ascidians and the gill clefts of Vertebrates. They are placed far back on the ven- tral surface, one on each side of the middle line, and lead

into short funnel-shaped tubes which open on the surface of so“

the body behind the anus (fig. 12, aé). These tubes corre- spond to the right and left atrial involutions which, in an ordinary Ascidian, fuse to form the peribranchial cavity. The heart, according to Lankester, is formed of two cells, which are placed at the opposite ends and connected by delicate con- tractile protoplasmic fibrils. The large ovary and testis are placed at the

posterior end of the body. The remainder of the structural details can be made out from fig. 12.

The family Appendiculariidew comprises the genera, —Otkopleura (Mertens), and Appendicularia (Cham.), in both which the body is short and compact and the tail relatively long, while the endostyle is straight; Fritillaria (Q. and G.), in which the body is long and composed of anterior and posterior regions, the tail relatively short, the endostyle recurved, and an ectodermal hood is formed over the front of the body ; and Kowalevskia (Fol), a remarkable form de- scribed by Fol (rg), in which the heart, endostyle, and intestine are said to be absent, while the branchial sac is provided with four rows of ciliated tooth-like processes.

Order II.—THALIACEA.

Free-swimming pelagic forms which may be either simple or compound, and the adult of which is never provided with a tail or a notochord, The test is permanent and may be either well developed or very slight. The musculature of the mantle is in the form of more or Jess complete circular bands, by the contraction of which locomotion is effected. The branchial sac has either two large or many small apertures, leading to a single peribranchial cavity, into which the anus opens. Alternation of generations occurs in the life- history, and may be complicated by polymorphism. The Thaliacea comprises two groups, Cyclomyaria and Hemimyaria.

Sub-order 1.—Cyclomyaria.

Free-swimming pelagic forms which exhibit alternation of genera- tions in their life-history but never form permanent colonies. The body is cask-shaped, with the branchial and atrial apertures at the opposite ends. The test is more or less well developed. The mantle has its musculature in the form of circular bands surrounding the body. The branchial sac is fairly large, occupying the anterior half or more of the body. Stigmata are usually present in its posterior part only. The peribranchial cavity is mainly posterior to the branchial sac. The alimentary canal is placed ventrally close to the posterior end of the branchial sac. Hermaphrodite reproductive organs are placed ventrally near the intestine.

This group forms one family, the DoLioLipa, including two genera, Doliolum (Quoy and Gaimard) and Anchinia (C. Vogt).

Dolioltum, of which several species are known from various seas, has a cask-shaped body, usually from 1 to 2 cm. in length. The terminal branchial and atrial apertures (fig. 13) are lobed, and the lobes are provided with sense organs. The test is very slightly developed and contains no cells. The mantle has eight or nine circular muscle bands surrounding the body. The most anterior and posterior of these form the branchial and atrial sphincters. e wide branchial and atrial apertures lead into large brauchial and peribranchial cavities, separated by the pos- terior wall of the branchial sac, which is pierced by stigmata ; con- sequently there is a free paee for the water through the body along its long axis, and the animal swims by contracting its ring- like muscle-bands, so as to force out the contained water posteriorly. Stigmata may also be found on the lateral walls of the branchial sac, and in that case there are corresponding anteriorly directed diverticula of the peribranchial cavity. There is a distinct endo- style on the ventral edge of the branchial sac and a peripharyngeal band surrounding its anterior end, but there is no representative of the dorsal lamina on its dorsal edge. The csophagus com- mences rather on the ventral edge of the posterior end of the branchial sac, and runs backwards to open into the stomach, which is followed by a curved intestine opening into the peribranchial cavity. The alimentary canal as a whole is to the right of the middle line. The hermaphrodite reproductive organs are to the left of the middle line alongside the alimentary canal. They open

into the peribranchial cavity. The ovary is nearly spherical, while the testis is elongated, and may be continued anteriorly for a long

distance, The heart is placed in the middle line ventrally, be- “Ze n / sgl i

é br

end : Sg .s ast . ov

brs tee yt z Fia. 13.—Doliolum denticulatum, sexual generation, from the left side. Letter- ing as for fig. 12; ml—m8, muscle bands; ng, nerve ganglion; sg, stigmata; sgl, subneural gland ; pbr, peribranchial cavity ; atl, atrial lobes; so, sense organs; bri, branchial lobes. (Original.) tween the posterior end of the endostyle and the oesophageal aperture. The nerve ganglion lies about the middle of the dorsal edge of the body, and gives off many nerves. Under it is placed the subneural gland, the duct of which runs forward and opens iuto the anterior end of the branchial sac by a simple aperture, surrounded by the spirally twisted dorsal end of the peripharyngeal band (fig. 13, df). The ova of the sexual generation produce tailed larve; these Develop- develop into forms known as “nurses” (blastozooids), which are ment of asexual, and are characterized by the possession of nine muscle Dolio- bands, an auditory sac on the left side of the body, a ventrally- Zum. placed stolon near the heart, upon which buds are produced, and a dorsal outgrowth near the posterior end of the body. The buds give rise eventually to the sexual generation, which is polymor- phous, having three distinct forms, in two of which the reproduc- tive organs remain undeveloped. The buds while still very young migrate from their place of origin on the stolon, divide by fission, aad become attached to the dorsal outgrowth of the body of the nurse, where they develop. The three forms produced are as follows. (1) Nutritive forms (trophozooids), which remain permanently at- tached to the nurse and serve to provide it with food ; they have the body elongated dorso- ventrally, and the musculature is very slightly developed. (2) Foster forms (phorozooids), which, like the preceding, do not become sexually mature, but, unlike them, are set free as cask-shaped bodies with eight muscle bands and a ventral outgrowth, which is formed of the stalk by which the body was formerly united to the nurse. On this outgrowth the (3) forms (gonozooids) which become sexually mature are attached while still young buds, and after the foster forms are set free these reproductive forms gradually attain their complete development, and are event- ually set free and lose all trace of their connexion with the foster forms. They resemble the foster forms in having a cask-shaped body with eight muscle bands, but differ in having uo outgrowth or process, and in having the reproductive organs fully developed.! Anchinia, of which only one species is known, 4. rubra, from Anchinia. the Mediterranean, has the sexual forms permaneutly attached to portions of the dorsal outgrowth from the body of the unknown nurse. The

body is elongated dorso-ventrally. The test is well developed and contains branched cells. The musculature is not so well developed as in Doliolum. There are two circular bands at the anterior end and two at the posterior, and two on the middle of the body. The stigmata are confined to the obliquely placed posterior end of the branchial sac. The alimentary canal forms a U-shaped curve. The reproductive organs are placed on the right side of the body. The life-history is still imperfectly known. As in the case of Doliolum the sexual generation is polymorphous, and has three forms, two of which remain in a rudimentary condition so far as the reproductive organs are con- cerned. In Anchinia, however, the three forms do not occur to- gether on one stolon or outgrowth, but are produced successively, the reproductive forms of the sexual gencration being independent of the ‘‘ foster forms” (see Barrois, 27).

Sub-order 2.—Hemimyaria.

Free-swimming pelagic forms which exhibit alternation of genera- Charac- tions in their life-history and in the sexual condition form colonies. ters of The body is more or less fusiform, with the long axis antero-posterior, Hemi- and the branchial and atrial apertures nearly terminal. The test myaria. is well developed. The musculature of the mantle is in the form of a series of transversely-running bands, which do not form com- plete independent rings as in the Cyclomyaria. The branchial and

1 For further details see Uljanin (28).

Salpide.

peribranchial cavities form a continuous space in the interior of the body, opening externally by the branchial and atrial apertures, and traversed obliquely from the dorsal and anterior end to the ventral and posterior by a long narrow vascular band, which represents the dorsal lamina, the dorsal blood-vessel, and the neighbouring part of the dorsal edge of the branchial sac of an ordinary Ascidian. The alimentary canal is placed ventrally. It may either be stretched out so as to extend for some distance anteriorly, or—as is more usual—be concentrated to form along with the reproductive organs a rounded opaque mass near the posterior end of the body, known as the visceral mass or ‘‘nucleus.” The embryonic development is direct, no tailed larva being formed.

This sub-order contains two very distinct families, the SALPIDs, which are the typical members, and the OcTACNEMIDA, including a single very remarkable form (Octacnemus bythius), which in some respects does not conform with the characters given above. :

The Salpide includes the single genus Salpa (Forskal), which, however, may be divided into two well-marked groups of species, —(1) those, such as 8S. pinnata, in which the alimentary canal is stretched out along the ventral surface of the body, and (2) those, such as S. fusiformis (fig. 14, A), in which the aliment- ary canal forms a compact globular mass, the “nucleus,” near the posterior end of the body.

jecting into the branchial sac. The nerve ganglion, subneural gland, dorsal lamina, peripharyngeal bands, and endostyle are placed in the usual positions. A pigment spot and an otocyst are found in connection with the ganglion. ‘The large spaces at the sides of the dorsal lamina (often called the gill or branchia of Salpa), by means of which the cavity of the branchial sac is placed in free communication with the peribranchial cavity, are to be regarded as gigantic stigmata formed by the suppression of the lateral walls of the branchial sac. Fig. 16 represents an aggre- gated or sexual Salpa which was once a member of a chain, since it shows a testis and a

developing embryo. The ova (always few in number, usually only one) appear at a very early period in the developing chain Salpa, while it is still a part of the gemmiparous stolon in the body of the solitary Salpa. This gave rise to the view put forward by Brooks (25), that the ovary really belongs to the solitary Salpa, which is therefore a female producing a series of males by asexual gemmation, and depositing in each of these an ovum, which will afterwards, when fertilized, develop in the body of the male into a solitary or female Salpa. This idea would of course entirely destroy the view that Salpa is an example of alterna- tion of generations. The sexual or chain Salpa, although really hermaphrodite, is always protogynous: %.e., the female elements or ova are produced at an earlier period than the male organ or testis.

About fifteen species altogether are known ; they are all pelagic forms and are found in nearly all seas. ach species occurs in two

This prevents self-fertilization. The ovum is fertilized by the Develop- spermatozoa of an older Salpa belonging to another chain, and ment of the embryo is far advanced in its development before the testis is Salpa.

forms—the solitary asex- ual (proles solitaria) and)\ gz the aggregated sexual | (proles gregaria)—which are usually quite unlike

ma OF

end. 7 \—3 one another. ‘The soli- MSt-~ tary form (fig. 14, B)

2 Wes gives rise by internal

~~visc Ag ed 7 gemmation to a complex 4~~-asc tubular stolon, which

gem. — \ 7 contains processes from

ray all the more important 1 organs of the parent body and which becomes seg- mented into a series of Fic. 14.—Salpa runcinata-fustformis, A. Aggre- buds or embryos. As gated form. B. Solitary form. Lettering as the stolon elongates, the before ; 1-9, muscle bands ; a pots a embryos near the free i . + vi. h A

Goramilbatomn Beales ey Seem 7 Coes end which have become

mass (nucleus), (Original.) sivahead ir thee dame, lopment are set free in groups, which remain attached together by processes of the test, each enclosing a diverticulum from the mantle so as to form ‘‘chains” (fig. 15). Each member of the chain isa Salpa

formed. Atan early period in its development a part of the embryo becomes separated off, along with a part of the wall of the cavity in which it lies, to form the “ placenta,” in which the embryonic and the maternal blood streams circulate in close proximity (or actually coalesce during one period) and so allow of the passage of nutriment to the developing embryo. At a somewhat later stage a number of cells placed at the posterior end of the body alongside the future nucleus become filled up with oil-globules to form a mass of nutrient material—the eleoblast—which is used up later on in the develop- ment. Many suggestions have been made as to the homology of the eleoblast. The most probable is that it is the disappearing rudiment of the tail found in the larval condition of most Ascidians.

The family Octacnemidw includes the single remarkable form Qcta- Octacnemus bythius, found during the “ Challenger” expedition, and cnemide.

first described by Moseley (29). Itis apparently a deep- & sea representative of the pelagic Sai- pid, and may pos- sibly be fixed. The body is somewhat discoid, with its margin prolonged

Fie. 17.— Diagrammatic vertical longitudinal section of Octacnemus bythius (after Moseley). 67, branchial aperture; m, opening of cesophagus; 7, rectum; at, atrial aperture ; rm, rm, radiating muscles ; n, nucleus ;

to form eight taper- ing processes, on to which the muscle

of the sexual or aggregated form, and when mature may—either still attached to its neighbours or se-

h, les of nucleus; g, respiratory membrane; parated from them (fig. 14, A)— poe gh 4 thickened margin of eee of Ttest : be, pedicle of produce one or

several embryos, mantle are con- attachment. which develop into the solitary tinued. The aili- ; Salpa. Thus the two forms alter- mentary canal forms a compact nucleus (fig. 17); the endostyle is

Struc- nate regularly. The more import- very short ; and the dorsal lamina is apparently absent. The re- ture of ant points in the structure of a production and life-history are entirely unknown. Salpa. typical Salpa are shown in fig. 16.

Order III.—ASCIDIACEA.

Fixed or free-swimming Simple or Compound Ascidians which in A scid- the adult are never provided with a tail and have no trace of a iacea. notochord. The free-swimming forms are colonies, the Simple Ascidians being always fixed. The test is permanent and well developed ; as a rule it increases with the age of the individual.

The branchial sac is large and well developed. Its walls are per- forated by numerous slits (stigmata) opening into the peribranchial cavity, which communicates with the exterior by the atria] aperture. Many of the forms reproduce by gemmation, and in most of them

The branchial and atrial apertures are at opposite ends of the body, and each leads into a large cavity, ; / the branchial and peribranchial i a eg ON Me oe oa; which rae in free see ecg! Sil showing a cain of embryos nearly tion at the sides of the obliquely- ready to be set free. gem, young running dorsal lamina or “gill.” aggregated Salpw forming the chain ; The teat’ig swell developed. gud 20) 3) senaa’lRns of ue adheres closely to the surface of a en

the mantle. ‘The muscle bands of the mantle do not completely encircle the

t emb the sexually-produced embryo develops into a tailed larva. body. They are sgdngdim = The Ascidiacea includes three groups,—the Simple Ascidians, present dorsally ean SE ie the Compound Ascidians, and the free-swimming colonial Pyrosoma. and _ laterally,

Sub-order 1.—Ascidize Simplices.

Fixed Ascidians which are solitary and very rarely reproduce by Simple gemmation ; if colonies are formed, the members are not buried in Ascid- a common investing mass, but each has a distinct test of its own. ians. No strict line of demarcation can be drawn between the Simple and the Compound Ascidians, and one of the families of the former group, the Clavelinidx (the Social Ascidians), forms a transition from the typical Simple forms, which never reproduce by har to the Compound forms, which always do (see p. 618 below), The Ascidie Simplices may be divided into the following families :—

Family I.—CLavELINIDm. Simple Ascidians which reproduce by gemmation to form small colonies in which each ascidiozooid has a distinct test, but all are connected by a common blood-system.

but the major- ity do not reach the ventral sur- face. In many cases neigh- bouring bands join in the med- ian dorsal line, = (fg. 14). The “ene anterior end of

Semi-diagrammatic representation of Salpa from

left side. Lettering as before; emb, embryo; m, mantle ;

1, languet; sgd, duct of subneural gland; 1-11, muscle

the dorsa] Ja- bands of mantle; ¢’, thickening of test over nucleus; dl, : 6 gill or branchia. (Original.)

mina is pro-

longed to form a prominent tentacular organ, the languet, pro-

Com- pound Ascid- jans.

TUNICATA

Buds formed on stolons which are vascular outgrowths from the pos- terior end of the body, containing prolongations from the ectoderm, mesoderm, and endoderm of the ascidiozooid. Branchial sac not folded ; internal longitudinal bars usually absent; stigmata straight; tentacles simple. This

family contains three genera: Ecteinascidia (Herdman), with internal longitudinal bars in branchial sac ; Clavel- ina (Savigny), with intestine extending behind branchial sac; and Perophora (Wieginann), with intestine alongside branchial sac.

Family 11.—Ascrpi1pa&. Solitary fixed Ascidians with gelatinous test ; branchial aperture usually eight-lobed, atrial aperture usually six-lobed. Branchial sac not folded; internal longitudinal bars usually present ; stigmata straight or curved; tentacles simple. This family is divided into three sections :—

Sub-family 1—Hyrosyruina. Branchial sac with no internal longitudinal bars. One genus, Hypobythius (Moseley).

Sub-family 2.—Ascipinaz. Stigmata straight. Many genera, of which the following are the more importaut :—Ciona (Fleming), dorsal languets present ; Ascidia (Linneus, = Phallusia, Savigny), dorsal lamina present (see figs. 1 to 10); Rhodosoma (Ehrenberg), anterior part of test modified to form operculum; Abyssascidia (Herdman), intestine on right side of branchial sac.

Sub-family 3.—CorELLINa#. Stigmata curved. Three genera :— Corella (Alder and Hancock), test gelatinous, body sessile ; Coryn- ascidia (Herdman), test gelatinous, body pedunculated; Chelyo- soma (Brod. and Sow.), test modified into horny plates.

Family I11.—Cynruips. Solitary fixed Ascidians, usually with leathery test; branchial and atrial apertures usually both four-lobed. Branchial sac longitudinally folded ; stigmata straight ; tentacles simple or compound. This family is divided into three sections :—

Sub-family 1.—SryEnin#, not more than four folds on each side of branchial sac ; tentacles simple. The more important genera are —Styela (Macleay), stigmata normal, and Bathyoncus (Herdman), stigmata absent or modified.

Sub-family 2.—CynTuin#, more than eight folds in branchial sac; tentacles compound; body sessile. The chief genus is Cynthia (Sa- vigny), with a

large number of species.

Sub-family 3.—Bot- TENIN#, more than eight |

y

folds in branchial sac ; | tentacles compound ; |\/7 body pedunculated (fig. |/ 18, A). The chief genera are—Joltenia (Savigny), branchial aperture four- ee ae lobed, stigmata normal; br f il and Culcolus (Herd- Fic. 18,—Culeolus willemesi. A. Entire body, man), branchial aper- natural size. B. Part of branchial sac mag- : nified. at, atrial aperture; br, branchial aper- ture with less than four ture; ped, peduncle; bdr f, slight fold of branch- lobes, stigmata absent or ial = o4 as silgeove coe heed : ae] sp, calcareous spicules In vessels ; tr, Sverse fo ee (fg. i meee vosnels, (After. Herdman, Challenger Report.) genus discovered by the ‘‘ Challenger” expedition (see 77).

Family IV.—Mo.ievutipaz. Solitary Ascidians, sometimes not fixed ; branchial aperture six-lobed, atrial four-lobed. Test usually incrusted with sand. Branchial sac longitudinally folded ; stigmata more or less curved, usually arranged in spirals; tentacles compound. The chief genera are—Molgula (Forbes), with distinct folds in the branchial sac, and Hugyra (Ald. and Hanc.), with no distinct folds, but merely broad internal longitudinal bars in the branchial sac. In some of the Molgulide (genus Anurella, Lacaze-Duthiers, 20) the embryo does not become converted into a tailed larva, the development being direct, without metamorphosis. The embryo when hatched assumes gradually the adult structure, and never shows the features characteristic of larval Ascidians, such as the urochord and the median sense-organs.

Sub-order 2.—Ascidiz Composite.

Fixed Ascidians which reproduce by gemmation, so as to form colonies in which the ascidiozooids are buried in a common invest- ing mass and have no separate tests. This is probably a somewhat artificial assemblage formed of two or three groups of Ascidians which produce colonies in which the ascidiozooids are so intimately united that they possess a common test or investing mass. This is the only character which distinguishes them from

the Clavelinida, but the property of reproducing by gemmation separates them from the rest of the Ascidiw Simplices. The Ascidiew Composite may be divided into the following families :—

Family I.—Distromipa. Ascidiozooids divided into two regions, thorax and abdomen ; testes numerous; vas deferens not spirally coiled. The chief genera are—Distoma (Gaertner) ; Distaplia (Della Valle); Colella (Herdman), forming a Peep colony (see fig. 19, A) in which the ascidiozooids devclop incubatory pouches, connected with the peribranchial cavity, in which the embryos undergo their development (77) ; and Chondrostachys (Macdonald).

- on the inner surface next to the central

617

Family II.—Canocormips. Colony not fixed, having a large axial cavity with a terminal aperture. Branchial apertures five-lobed. This includes one species, Celocormus huxleyi (Herdman), which is a transition form between the ordinary Compound Ascidians (@.9. Distomidsx) and the Ascidix Salpiformes (Pyrosoma). ;

Family I1].—Dipemnipz. Colony usually thin and incrusting Test containing stel- late calcareons spi- cules. Testis single, large; vas deferens pews coiled. The chief genera are—Di- demnum (Savigny), in which the colony is thick and fleshy Az and there are only Fig. 19.—Colonies of Ascidia: Composite (natural size). three rows of stig- A. Colella quoyi. B. Leptoclinum neglectum. C. Pha- mata on each side of ‘yngodictyon mirabile. D. Botryllus, showing ar-

: . rangement of ascidiozooids in circular systems each =~ ree 4 of which has a central common cloaca. (After Herd-

man, Challenger Report.) (Milne-Edwards), in which the colony is thin and incrusting (fig. 19, B) and there are four rows of stigmata on each side of the branchial sac.

Family IV. —ipaoadyipa: Test reduced in amount, rarely con- taining spicules. Vas deferens not spirally coiled. In Diplosoma (Macdonald), the most important genus, the larva is gemmiparous.

Family V.—Potyciinip#. Ascidiozooids divided into three regions,—thorax, abdomen, and post-abdomen. Testes numerous ; vas deferens not spirally coiled. The chief genera are—Pharyngo- dictyon (Herdman), with stigmata absent or modified, containing one species, Ph. mirabile (fig. 19, C), the only Compound Ascidian known from a depth of 1000 fathoms ; Polyclinuwm (Savigny), with a smooth-walled stomach ; Aplidium (Savigny), with the stomach wall longitudinally folded ; and Amarouciwm (Milne-Edwards), in = ae ascidiozooid has a long post-abdomen and a large atrial

anguet.

Family VI.—Borryiuipa. Ascidiozooids having the intestine and reproductive organs alongside the branchial sac. Dorsal lamina present ; internal longitudinal bars present in branchial sac. The chief genera are—Botryllus (Gaertn. and Pall.), with simple stellate systems (fig. 19, D), and Botrylloides (Milne- Edwards), with elongated or ramified systems,

Family VII.—PotysTyE.ipa. systems. Branchial and atrial apertures four-lobed. Branchial sac may be folded; internal longitudinal bars present. The chief genera are—Thylaciwm (Carus), with ascidiozooids projecting above general surface of colony; Goodsiria (Cun- ningham), with ascidiozooids completely imbedded in investing mass; and Chorizo- cormus (Herdnian), with ascidiozooids united in little groups which are connected by stolons. The last genus contains one species, Ch. reticulatus, a transition form between the other Polystyelidew and the Styeling amongst Simple Ascidians.

The methods of reproduction by gemma- tion differ in their details in the various groups of Compound Ascidians ; but in all cases the process is essentially a giving off from the parent body of groups of cells re- presenting the ectoderm, the mesoderm, and the endoderm, which develop into the corresponding layers of the bud. The first ascidiozooid of the colony produced by the tailed larva does not form sexual repro- ductive

organs, but reproduces by gemma- tion so as to make a colony. Thus there is alternation of generations in the life- history. In the most completely formed colonies (¢.g., Botryllus) the ascidiozooids are arranged in groups (systems or cceno- bii), and in each system are placed with their atrial apertures towards one another, and all communicating with a common cloacal cavity which opens to the exterior = in the centre of the system (fig. 19 D).

Ascidiozooids not grouped in

Sub-order 3.—Ascidie Salpiformes.

Free-swimming pelagic colonies having the form of a hollow cylinder closed at one end. The ascidiozooids forming the colony yy, 99, are imbedded in the common test in such a manner that the branchial apertures open on the outer surface aud theatrial apertures

x

natural size. A. Side view of entire colony. B. End view of open extremity. (Original.)

cavity of the colony. The ascidiozooids are produced by gemmation from a rudimentary larva (the cyathozooid) developed sexually.

XXIII. — 78

Repro- duction by gem- mation.

Ascidiz Salpi-

Pyrosoma elegans, Sormes.

618 TUNLTCATA

Struc- This sub-order includes a single family, the Pyrosomrpa, con- | branchial cavity, and consist of a lobed testis and a single ovum at ture of taining one well-marked genus, Pyrosoma (Péron), with several | a time. The development takes place in a part of the peribranchial Develop- Pyro-

species. They are found swimming near the surface of the sea, | cavity (fig. 21, ein). The segmentation is meroblastic, and an ment of soma. chiefly in tropical latitudes, and are brilliantly phosphorescent. elongated embryo is formed on the surface of a mass of yolk. The Pyro-

A fully developed Pyrosoma colony may be from an inch or two to embryo, after the formation of an alimentary cavity, a tubular soma.

upwards of four feet in length. The shape of the colony is seen in fig. 20. It tapers slightly towards the closed end, which is rounded. The opening at the opposite end is reduced in size by the presence of a membranous prolongation of the common test (fig. 20, B). The branchial apertures of the ascidiozooids are placed upon short papilla projecting from the general surface, and most of the ascidio- zooids have long conical processes of the test projecting outwards beyond their branchial apertures (figs. 20, 21, and 22). There is only a single layer of ascidiozooids in the Pyrosoma colony, as all the fully developed ascidiozooids are placed with their antero- posterior axes at right angles to the surface and communicate by their atrial apertures with the central cavity of the colony (fig. 21).

evn

em

Fic. 21.—Part of a longitudinal section through wall of Pyrosoma, showin, arrangement of ascidiozooids, magnified (partly after Savigny). at, atria apertures; br, branchial apertures ; asc, young ascidiozooid of a future colony produced by budding from cy, cyathozooid ; em, embryos in various stages ; t, test ; tp, processes of test ; brs, branchial sac ; yas, young ascidiozooid,

Their dorsal surfaces are turned towards the open end of the colony. The more important points in the structure of the ascidiozooid of Pyrosoma are shown in fig. 22. A circle of tentacles, of which one, placed ventrally (fig. 22, tn), is larger than the rest, is found just inside the branchial aperture. From this point a wide cavity, with a few circularly-placed muscle bands run- ning round its walls, leads) back to the large branchial sac, which occupies the

greater part of the = body. The stigmata = wees are elongated trans- ==”

versely and crossed by internal longitu- dinal bars. The dor- sal lamina is repre- sented by a series of eight languets (7).

The nerve ganglion “~~ {on which is placed a small pigmented ete sense organ), the sub- am neural gland, the dor- sal tubercle, the peri- pharyngeal _ bands, and the endostyle are

placed in the usual sa cee positions. Ca ceeh Fig. 22.—Mature ascidiozooid of Pyrosoma, from left

A ‘ side (partly after Keferstein). Lettering as before ; side of the anterior cm, cellular mass, the seat of phosphorescence; end of the branchia] ¢m’, posterior cellular mass; gs, gemmiparous sac, close to the peri- stolon; mb, muscle band; ngl, subneural gland ; pharyngeal bands, is

pig, pigment spot on ganglion; tp, process of test. a mass of rounded gland cells which are the source of the phosphores- cence. The alimentary canal is placed posteriorly to the branchial sac, and the anus opens into a large peribranchial (or atrial) cavity,

of which only the median posterior part is shown (pdr) in fig. 22. The reproductive organs are developed in a diverticulum of the peri-

sa

Ov.

nervous system, and a pair of laterally placed atrial tubes, divides into an anterior and a posterior part. The anterior part then segments into four pieces, which afterwards develop into the first ascidiozooids of the colony, while the posterior part remains in a rudimentary condition, and was called by Huxley the ‘‘cyatho- zooid”’ ; it eventually atrophies. As the four ascidiozooids increase in size, they grow round the cyathozooid and soon encircle it (fig. 21, ase and cy). The cyathozooid absorbs the nourishing yolk upon which it lies, and distributes it to the ascidiozooids by means of a heart and system of vessels which have been mcanwhile formed. When the

cyathozooid atrophies and is absorbed, its original atrial aperture remains and deepens to become the central cavity of the young colony, which now consists of four ascidiozooids placed in a ring, around where the cyathozooid was, and enveloped in a common test. The colony gradually increases by the formation of buds from these four original ascidiozooids,

PHYLOGENY,

The accompanying diagram shows graphically the probable Phylo- origin and course of evolution of the various groups of T’uwicata, geny.

and therefore exhibits their relations to one another much more correctly than any system of linear classification can do. The ancestral Proto-Tunicata are here regarded! as an offshoot from the Proto-Chordata—the common ancestors of the Tunicata (Uro- chorda), Amphioxus (Cephalochorda), and the Verte- brata. The ancestral Tunicata were probably free- swimming forms, not very unlike the existing Appendiculariide, and are represented in the life-history

MOLG,

of nearly all 6. sections of the . Tunicata by = the tailed lar-

val stage. The a

Larvacet are

% Bor. shoot from %, the ancestral forms which ra Yemiw 2 ‘opto.

gave rise to the two lines of descendants, the Proto-Thaliacca and the Proto-Ascidiacea. The Proto-Thaliacea then split into the ancestors of the existing Cyclomyaria and Hemimyaria. The Proto-Ascidiacea gave up their pelagic mode of life and became fixed. This ancestral process is repeated at the present day when the free-swimming larva of the Simple and Compound Ascidians becomes attached. The Proto-Ascidiacea, after the change, are probably most nearly repre- sented by the existing genus Clavelina. They have given rise directly or indirectly to the various groups of Simple and Com- pound Ascidians and the Pyrosomidex. hese groups form two lines,

which appear to have diverged close to the position of the family Clavelinidw. The one line leads to the more typical Compound Ascidians, and includes the Polyclinide, Distomide, Didemnidz, Diplosomide, Celocormide, and finally the Ascidia Salpiformes. The second line gave rise to the Simple Ascidians, and to the Botryllide and Polystyelide#, which are, therefore, not closely allied to the other Compound Ascidians. The later Proto- Ascidiacea were probably colonial forms, and gemmation was retained by the Clavelinid# and by the typical Compound Ascidians (Distomide, &c.) derived from them. The power of forming colonies by budding was lost, however, by the primitive Simple Ascidians, and must, therefore, have been regained independently by the ancestral forms of the Botryllide and the Polystyelide. If this is a correct interpretation of the course of evolution of the Tunicata, we arrive at the following important conclusions. (1) The Z'wnicata, as a whole, form a degenerate branch of the Proto- Chordata ; (2) the Ascidiw Salpiformes (Pyrosoma) are much more closely related to the typical Compound Ascidians than to the other

' pelagic Twnicata, viz., the Larvacea and the Thaliacca ; and (8) the Ascidie Composite form a polyphyletic group, the sections of which have arisen at several distinct points from the ancestral Simple Ascidians.

Bibliography.—(7) Cuvier, ''Mém. s. les Ascidies," &c., in Mém. d. Mus., vol. ii, p. 10, Paris, 1815; (2) Savigny, Mémoires sur les Animauaz sans Vertebres, pt. ii. fase. i., Paris, 1816; (3) Lamarck, Hist. Nat. d. Anim. sans Vertebres, 1st ed., Paris, 1815-23; (4) O. F. Miiller, Zool. Danica, vol. iv., 1806; (5) Milne-Hd-

wards, ''Obsery. s. les Ascidies Composées," &c., in Mém. Acad. Sci., Paris, vol. xviii., 1842; (6) Schmidt, Zur vergl. Physiol. d. wirbellos. Thiere, Bruns-

1 By Dohrn and others their point of origin is placed considerably further up on the stem of the Chordata, thus causing the Tunicata to be regarded as very degenerate Vertebrata (see 32).

wick, 1845 ; (7) Lowig and _Kolliker, ‘De la Compos., &c., d. Envel. d. Tun.,” in Ann. Sc. Nat., ser. iii. (Zool.), vol. v., 1846; () Huxley, Phil. Trans. Boole; (9) Kowalevsky, ‘‘Entwickel. d. einf. Ascid.,” in Mem. St Petersb. Acad. Sc., ser. vii., Vol. x., 1866; (vo) J. P. van Beneden, “Rech. s. ’Embryolog., &c., d, Asc. Simp.,” in Mém. Acad. Roy. Belg., vol. xx., 18473 (zr) Krohn, in Wieg- mann and Miiller’s Archiv, 1852; (72) Kupffer, Arch. f. mikr. Anat., 1869, 1872; (73) Giard, “ Htude d. pee Embryolog. d. Tun,, &c.,” in Arch. Zool. Hxpér., vol. i., 1872; (74) Fol, “Etudes sur les Appendiculaires du Détroit de Messine,” in Mém. Soc. Phys. Hist. Nat. Genéve, vol. xxi.; (75) Giard, ‘ Re- cherches s. 1. Asc. Comp.,” in Arch. Zool. Expér., vol. i., 18723 (76) Von Drasche, Die Synascidien der Bucht von Rovigno, Vienna, 1883 3 (77) Herdman, ‘ Report upon the Tunicata of the Challenger Expedition,” pt. i. in Zool. Chall. Exp., vol. vi., 1882; pt. ii, in Zool. Chall. Exp., vol. xiv., 18863 pt. iii., not yet pub- lished ; (75) Alderand Hancock, in Ann. Mag. Nat. Hist., 1863, 1870 ; (79) Heller,

TUNING FORK, a small bar of cast tool steel with tolerably defined edges, bent into a fork with two prongs. A handle of the same metal extending from the bend of the fork serves as a sound-post to transmit the vibrations of the fork to any resonance board or body convenient for reinforcing the sound. The fork is set in vibration by striking one of the prongs against any hard substance, by pressing the prongs together if the fork is a light one, or, if it is large, by drawing a double bass bow across one of the prongs. The larger forks are sometimes made with a worm upon the handle in order that they may be screwed into a resonance box, the dimensions of which should agree with the pitch of the fork. The ordinary use of a tuning fork is to serve as a pitch carrier or standard, for which it is particularly suited owing to the permanence with which it maintains the pitch to which it may be tuned. It is flattened by heat and sharpened by cold about 1 vibration in 20,000 for every degree Fahr., so that the exact pitch always depends upon the temperature. A tuning fork is tuned by filing the ends of the prongs or between them near the ends to make it sharper, or by filing between them near or at the bend to make it flatter. Less filing is required to flatten than to sharpen. It should be allowed to rest after tuning, on account of the disturbance of the molecular structure by the filing, and after a few days should be compared again with the pitch required, and corrected. The tuning fork is also of value in certain physical investigations, from the

constancy of its rate of vibration. In England it is generally tuned to C in the treble clef, because organ-builders start their tuning from that note; in France it is tuned to A in the treble clef, which is the note of the third open string of the violin. The French diapason normal is tuned to A at 15°C. (=59° Fahr.) and is fixed at 435 double vibrations in a second. The inventor of the tuning fork was John Shore, royal trumpeter in 1711, sergeant trumpeter at the entry of George I. in 1714, and lutanist to the chapel royal in 1715.

According to Chladni, whose analysis of the tuning fork has been generally accepted, it has two nodes or points of least vibration at the bend, with a ventral or vibrating loop between, by which its vibrations are transmitted to the handle. That this is not the case has been shown by Mr W. F. Stanley.' The fundamental note appears to be an octave bclow the note which the ear recognizes as the pitch of the fork. Helmholtz, Tyndall, and others accept the latter as the fundamental, and Helmholtz expressly says that each prong may be regarded as an elastic rod fixed at one end.?_ The fork is really a bent elastic rod vibrating at both ends, with a node at the bend, through which, and in the same way as with the bridge of any stringed instrument, the vibrations are conducted. As well as the second partial, the third and fourth are in large forks fre- quently distinguishable, but such partials above the octave are very weak, In addition to the lower harmonic partials it is generally easy to produce with a blow a very high inharmonic tinkle or ringing metallic note, that will continue to sound for some time without blending with the true note of the fork. The precise interval varies, but is usually two octaves and between a flat fifth and a major sixth above the recognized pitch of the fork. With ordinary tuning forks this tinkling note is to be found amongst the highest treble notes of the pianoforte. Theorists give other inharmonic proper tones in due ascending order; they are derived from calculation on the assumption that they proceed as the squares of the odd numbers, but are beyond practical verification owing to

1 Nature, vol. xxvi. pp. 166, 243, 2 Sensations of Tone ; Eng. transl. by A. J. Ellis, 2d ed., 1885, p. 70.

*'Untersuch. u. d. Tunic. d. Adriat. Meeres," in Denkschr. d. k. Akad. Wiss., 1875-77 ; (20) Lacaze-Duthiers, " Asc. Simp. d. Cétes d. 1.

Manche,” in Arch. Zool. Huper., 1874, 1877; (27) Traustedt, in Vidensk. Medd. Naturh. For., Copen- hagen, 1881-84; (22) Herdman, ‘‘Notes on British Tunicata, &e.,” in Journ. Linn. Soc., Zool., vol. xv., 1880; (297) Ussoff, in Proc. Imp. Soc. Nat. Hist., Moscow, vol. xviii., 1876; (2¢) Julin, “Rech. s. l’Org. d. Asc. Simp.,” in Arch. d. Biol., vol. ii., 1881; (25) Brooks, ‘Development of Salpa,” in Bull. Mus. Comp. Zool., Harvard, vol. iii. p. 291; (26)Salensky, Zischr. f. wiss. Zool., 1877; (27) Barrois, Journ, d. Anat. et Phys., vol. xxi., 1885; (28) Uljanin, Fauna, &c., d. Golfes von Neapel, vol. x., 1884; (29) Moseley, ‘‘On Deep-Sea Ascid.,” in Trans. Linn. Soc., ser. ii., vol. i., 1876; (30) E. van Beneden and Julin, “ Morph. d. Tuniciers,” in Arch. d. Biol., vol. vi., 1886; (37) Lankester, Degeneration (Nature series), London, 1880; (32) Dohrn, “Stud. z. Urgesch. d. Wirbelth.,” in Mitth. Zool. Stat. Neapel. CW. A. HE)

their extreme position in the scale of musical sounds and the varia- tion of power in diffcrent ears to distinguish them.

The tuning fork was used by Scheibler (1777-1837) as the easiest means for correctly determining the pitch numbers of vibrations. To make a Scheibler tonometer, take a fork in which the octave can be easily heard and intercalate as many forks as, giving count- able beats with each other, will fill up the octave. ‘The addition of the whole number of beats and thcir fractions in the octave will be the vibrating number, in double vibrations per second, of the lower fork. In order to measure the fractions of vibrations accu- rately forks should be chosen that are audible for 40, or at least 20 seconds. For instance, 60 beats counted in 20 seconds would be 3 a second, and 65 in the same time 3:25. The forks should remain for three months after filing before their differences are finally detcrmined, and the whole examination should be conducted in a known, uniform temperature. Scheibler considered four beats a second between two forks a good number for counting; but Mr A. J. Ellis, who has used Scheibler’s invention as a basis for an exhaust- ive historical statement of musical pitch? and as the novel and exact means for determining the non-harmonic musical scales of various nations, especially Eastern nations,‘ considers three beats a second the best counting number. This would increase the number of intermediate forks.

Attempts have been made to use tuning forks instead of strings for key-board instruments, the object being to obtain permanence of tuning with the soft, unexciting quality of tone furnished by the fork. The inventions of Clagget, London, 1788, of Riffelsen (the melodikon), Copenhagen, 1808, and of Schuster (the adiaphonon), Vienna, 1819, were of this nature. The latest adaptation of a key- board to tuning forks has been effected by Mr Machell of Glasgow ; it was shown at the Inventions Exhibition, South Kensington, London, 1885.

TUNIS, Rxcency or, formerly one of the Barbary states Plate V.

of north Africa, but since 1881 a dependency of France, whose resident-general exercises all real authority in the nominal dominions of the bey. Is bounded on the west by Algeria, on the north by the western basin of the Mediter- ranean, on the east from Cape Bon to the Gulf of Gabes (Kabis) by the eastern basin of the same sea, and on the south-east by the province of Tripoli. On the south the boundary is the Sahara and the frontier line is indefinite. The greatest breadth from east to west is about 150 miles, the length from north to south about 300 miles. The population does not exceed a million and a half.

Physical Features.—Tunis is formed by the prolongation towards the east of the two great mountain chains of ALGERIA (q.v.), and closely resembles that country in its physical features, products, and climate; see Arrica, vol. i, p. 265. The northern Algerian chain (the Little Atlas) is prolonged through Tunis to Ras Sidi “Alf al-Makki, the highest summits never attaining an altitude of 4000 feet. It forms a picturesque, fertile, and well-watered region, with extensive cork woods in its western parts, and sepa- rated from the southern mountains by the valley (the ancient Zeugitana) of the Mejerda (the ancient Bagradas), the most important river of north Africa, which after a tortuous course of nearly 300 miles falls into the Gulf of Tunis at Porto Farina. The basin of the Mejerda, which is now tra- versed by the railway from Algiers to Tunis, is very fertile, and many important ruins testify to its prosperity in Roman times. The rich lacustrine deposits in the Dakhila, or plain of Bulla Regia, show that it was only in relatively recent times that its upper waters found a passage to the sea by

3 “On the History of Musical Pitch,” in Journ. Soc. of Arts, 5th

March and 2d April 1880 ; see also 7th January 1881. 4 “On Musical Scales,” ibid., 27th March and 30th October 1885,

cutting a deep gorge through the cretaceous barrier that shuts in this upland plain upon the east. The southern wall of the Mejerda valley and of the Gulf of Tunis is formed by a branch of the southern Algerian chain, con- nected with Jebel Auras (Mount Aurés) by the plateau of Tebessa (Theveste) and running north-east to Cape Bon. Its highest summits (Zilk and Zaghwan) rise above 5000 feet. Another branch of the southern chain runs from the Sahara side of Mount Aurés south-east towards the head of the Lesser Syrtis or Gulf of Gabes. Between these two branches lies a mountainous plateau, whose waters descend eastward but do not reach the sea. Arrested by a line of hills running parallel to the coast, they form a chain of lakes and marshes, which for the most part dry up in summer. It is to this region of inland drainage (the ancient Byzacene) that the plain of Kairwan belongs. Its southern part from Sbeitla (Sobaitala) to the Syrtis is relatively sterile, and even in antiquity appears to have formed an exception to the general fertility of the country, which was one of the granaries of Rome. The upland district from Tebessa southward sinks into the desert by a step-like series of great plateaus, separated by rugged walls of variegated marls, sands, and alluvium, torn into fantastic shapes, and scored with deep ravines by streams which at some remote period of copious rainfall poured down into the Sahara. Farther east the plateaus disappear and the mountains rise like a rampart from the Sibakh (sing. Sebkha), or Saharian marshes and salt-flats. The depression to which the Sibakh belong terminates to the east in the Shott (Shatt) al-Jerid, which is separated from the Lesser Syrtis only by a narrow isthmus; see SAHARA, vol. xxi. p. 151. Even the Sahara of Tunis abounds in

fertile oases.

Climate.—The mean annual temperature at Susa is 75° Fahr., the mean of the winter or rainy season 60° and of the hot season 97°. At Tunis the temperature rarely exceeds 90°, except with a wind from the Sahara. The prevailing winds from May to Sep- tember are east and north-east and during the rest of the year meri: west and east. A rainy season of about two

months usually begins in January ; the spring season of verdure is over in May ; summer ends in October with the first rains. Violent winds are common at both equinoxes.

Flora and Fawna.—Both are generally the same as those of ALGERIA (q.v.). The lion and panther are almost extinct, but the sportsman finds in abundance the wild boar, partridge, Carthage fowl, quail, and snipe. The African moufflon still exists in the southern mountains. Herds of buffaloes are found in the district of Mater. The stag occurs in the eastern districts. The camel, now so important, was hardly known here before the Roman sovereignty. Red mullet, tunny, and other fish abound around the coast ; and fishing stations are numerous. The town of Bizerta and the Kerkenna Islands are mainly dependent on their fisheries. The coral and sponge fisheries, of which Sfax and the island of Jerba (Djerba) are centres, are also considerable. Of noxious creatures may be named the scorpion, much more formidable than that of Algiers, a venomous tree snake (Hchis carinata), in the sandy lands between Kafsa and Sfax, and a species of python called taguerga, which infests some parts of the southern mountains.

Cork and ‘‘zen” trees cover about 360,000 acres towards the Algerian frontier, and the pine and deciduous oak almost as large an area south of the Mejerda ; but the country is uch less wooded than in antiquity. The richness of the grain crops is still remark- able, in spite of imperfect cultivation. Olives and many excellent fruits are largely produced, and vineyards have been much extended since the French occupation. Esparto grass abounds in the uplands. The oases of the Jerid are devoted to the date palm and produce the best dates known in the European market.

_ Minerals.—The mineral wealth of Tunis, like that of Algeria, is considerable, but it has been imperfectly explored. The iron mines of the northern mountains and the argentiferous lead mines of Al-Resas near Tunis were worked in antiquity, as were also the marble quarries of Simittu (Chemtou), on the upper Mejerda, which are now in the hands of a Belgian company. The thermal springs of Hammam al-Anf on the Bay of Tunis are supposed to have heal- ing virtues ; they are now connected with the capital by rail.

_ Inhabitants. —The industrious Berbers (Kabyles), the oldest stock in the country, are less sharply marked off from the Arabs than in Algeria, but are distinguishable by their lighter complexion and often fair hair. They form a large part of the population in the

northern and eastern mountains, and in the island of Jerba (Jirba). They are organized in tribes with purely democratic self- government, and laws of their own, which are not those of the Koran. The pastoral Arab nomads are descended from the second Arab invasion, which began in the 11th century (see below). They have little agriculture and are still as indolent and unruly as their ancestors. ‘The Arabs of the towns are usually known as Moors; among them the Spanish Moors, descendants of the Andalusian refugees, form an exclusive and aristocratic class. The pure Turks and the Kuluglis (sons of Turkish fathers by Moorish women or slave girls) are no longer numerous. Of Kuropeans there are some 10,000 Italians, 8000 Maltese, and 4000 French (exclusive of the army). The Jews number some 50,000, of whom perhaps half are in the capital. The trade of the country is largely in their hands.

Towns.—For the capital Tunis, see below. Of the coast towns Srax and Susa have separate notices; Bizerta(Benzert), the ancient Hippo Zarytus, is the chief place on the north coast, with 5000 in- habitants. It stands on a canal connecting the sea with a lake which might easily be converted into a magnificent land-locked harbour. On the east coast are Hammamet (Hamamat), with 3700 inhabitants; Monastir, with 5600 inhabitants and a trade in cereals and oils; Mahdiya (Mehedia), with 6300 inhabitants, the fallen city of the Fatimites, which since the French occupation has begun to rise again, and has a new harbour; and Gabes (Kabis) on the Syrtis, a group of small villages, with an aggregate population of 14,000, the port of the shott country and a depot of the esparto trade. Of the inland towns the holy city of KArRWAN (q.v.) is the most remarkable. Its fine mosques are now open to visiters. Sbeitla (Lat. Sufetula), in the mountains south-west of Kairwan, is remarkable for its magnificent Roman remains, the triumphal arch of Constantine, and the three temples which form the hieron. The principal towns of the Mejerda basin are Bedja (Baja), the ancient Vaga, an

important corn market, and higher up, near the border, the fortress of Kéf (Sicca Veneria), with 4000 inhabitants, boldly perched on the steep slope of a volcanic mountain.

Commerce.—The total imports of the regency in 1885 were valued at £1,098,047, of which about 27 per cent were British goods, chiefly cotton fabrics. In 1884 the imports were valued at £1,157,182. The most important export is olive oil, and after it come wheat, esparto grass, barley, sponges. The value of the total exports in 1884 was £745,554, and in 1885 £882,946. In 1885 1,085 vessels (71,188 tons) entered the port of Goletta, and the entries at other ports were 3033 (55,050 tons).

History.—The history of Tunis begins for us with the establish- ment of the Pheenician colonies; see vol. xviii. p. 806, PHa@NICIA and CARTHAGE. The Punic settlers Semitized the coast, but left the Berbers of the interior almost untouched. The Romans entered into the heritage of the Carthaginians and of the vassal kings of Numidia, and Punic speech and civilization gave way to Latin, a change which from the time of Cesar was helped on by Italian colonization. Rich in corn, in herds, and in later times also in oil, and possessing valuable fisheries, mines, and quarries, the province of Africa, of which Tunis was the most important part, attained under the empire a prosperity to which Roman remains in all parts of the country still bear witness. Carthage was the second city of the Latin part of the empire, ‘‘ after Rome the busiest and perhaps the most corrupt city of the West, and the chief centre of Latin culture and letters.” In the early history of Latin Christ- ianity Africa holds a more important place than Italy. It was here that Christian Latin literature took its rise, and to this province belong the names of Tertullian and Cyprian, of Arnobius and Lactantius, above all of Augustine. Lost to Rome by the invasion of the Vandals, who took Carthage in 4389, the province was re- covcred by Belisarius a century later (533-4), and remained Roman till the Arab invasion, for which see vol. xvi. p. 567. The con- queror ‘Okba founded the city of Kairwan (c. 670), which was the residence of the governors of Africa under the Omayyads and there- after the capital of the Aghlabite princes, the conquerors of Sicily, who ruled in merely nominal dependence on the ‘Abbasids (see vol. xvi. p. 579).

The Latin element in Africa and the Christian faith disappeared in a single generation; the Berbers of the mountains, who had never been Latinized and never really Christianized, accepted Islam without difficulty, but showed their stubborn nationality, not only in the character of their Mohammedanism, which has always been mixed up with the worship of living as well as dead saints (mara- bouts) and other peculiarities, but also in political movements. The empire of the Fatimites (see vol. xvi. p. 587) rested on Berber support, and from that time forth till the advent of the Turks the dynasties of north Africa were really native, even when they claimed descent from some illustrious Arab stock. When the seat of the Fatimite empire was removed to Egypt, the Zirites, a house of the Sanhaja Berbers, ruled as their lieutenants at Mahdiya, and about 1050 Mo‘izz the Zirite, in connexion with a religious movement against the Shi’ites, transferred his very nominal allegiance to the Abbasid caliphs. The Fatimites in revenge let loose upon Africa a vast horde of Bedouins from Upper Egypt (B. Hilal and Solaim),

the ancestors of the modern nomads of Barbary. All Africa was ravaged by the invaders, who, though unable to found an empire or overthrow the settled government in the towns, forced the agricul- tural Berbers into the mountains, and, retaining from generation to generation their lawless and predatory habits, have ever since made order and prosperity almost impossible in the open parts of the country. The Zirite dynasty was finally extinguished by Roger I. of Sicily, who took Mahdiya in 1148 and established his authority over all the Tunisian coast. Even Moslem historians speak favourably of the Norman rule in Africa ; but it was brought to an early end by the Almohade caliph ‘Abd al-Mu’min, who took Mahdiya in 1160. The Almohade empire soon began to decay, and in 1336 Abu Zakariya, prince of Tunis, was able to proclaim himself independent and found a dynasty, which subsisted till the advent of the Turks. The Hafsites (so called from Abu Hafs, the ancestor of Abu Zakariya, a Berber chieftain who had been one of the intimate disciples of the Almohade mahdi) assumed the title of Prince of the Faithful, a dignity which was acknowledged even at Mecca, when in the days of Mostansir, the second Hafsite, the fall of Baghdad left Islam without a titular head. In its best days

the empire of the Hafsites extended from Tlemcen to Tripoli and they received homage from the Merinids of Fez; they held their own against repeated Frankish invasions, of which the most notable were that which cost St Louis of France his life (1270) and that of the duke of Bourbon (1390), when English troops took part in the unsuccessful siege of Mahdiya. They adorned Tunis with mosques, schools, and other institutions, favoured letters, and in general appear to have risen above the usual level of Moslem sovereigns, But their rule was troubled by continual wars and insurrections ; the support of the Bedouin Arabs was imperfectly secured by pensions, which formed a heavy burden on the finances of the state ;! and in later times the dynasty was weakened by family dissensions. Leo Africanus, writing early in the 16th century, gives a favourable picture of the "'great city" of Tunis, which had a flourishing manufacture of fine cloth, a prosperous colony of Christian traders, and, including the suburbs, nine or ten thousand hearths ; but he speaks also of the decay of once flourishing provincial towns, and especially of agri- culture, the greater part of the open country lying waste for fear of the Arab marauders. Taxation was heavy, and the revenue very considerable: Don John of Austria in a report to Philip II. states that the land revenue alone under the last Hafsite was 375,935 ducats, but of this a great part went in pensions to the Arabs. The conquest of Algiers by the Turks gave a dangerous neighbour to Tunis, and after the death of Mohammed the Hafsite in 1525 a disputed succession supplied Khair al-Din Barbarossa with a pretext for occupying the city in the name of the sultan of Constantinople. Al-Hasan, the son of Mohammed, sought help from the emperor, and was restored in 1535 as a Spanish vassal, by a force which Charles V. commanded in person, while Andrea Doria was admiral of the fleet. But the conquest was far from complete, and was never consolidated. The Spaniards remained at Goletta and made it a strong fortress; but the in- terior was a prey to anarchy and civil war, until in 1570 'Ali Pasha of Algiers utterly defeated Hamid, the son and successor of Hasan, and occupied Tunis. In 1573 the Turks again retreated on the approach of Don John, who had dreams of making himself king of Tunis ; but this success was not followed up, and in the next year Sultan Selim II. sent a strong expedition, which drove the Spaniards from Tunis and Goletta, and reduced the country to a Turkish province. The civil administration was now placed under a pasha ; but ina few years a military revolution transferred the supreme power to a dey elected by the janissaries, who

formed the army of occupation. The government of the deys lasted till 1705, but was soon narrowed or overshadowed by the authority of the beys, whose proper function was to manage the tribes and collect tribute. From 1631 to 1702 the office of bey was hereditary in the descendants of Murad, a Corsican renegade, and their rivalry with the deys and internal dissensions kept the country in con- stant disorder. Ibrahim, the last of the deys (1702-1705), destroyed the house of Murad and absorbed the beyship in his own office ; but, when he fellin battle with the Algeriaus, Hosain b. ‘Ali, the son of a Greek renegade, was proclaimed sovereign by the troops under the title of “bey,” and, being a prince of energy and ability, was able to establish the hereditary sovereignty, which has lasted without change of dynasty to the present time. Frequent wars with Algiers, which need not detain us, form the chief incidents in the internal history of Tunis under the beys. Under deys and beys alike Tunis was essentially a pirate state. Occasional acts of chastisement, of which the bombardment of Porto Farina by Blake in 1655 was the most notable, and repeated treaties, extorted by European powers, checked from time to time, but never put an end to, the habitual piracies, on which indeed the public revenue of Tunis was mainly dependent. The powers were

1 In the 13th and 14th centuries the Hafsites also paid tribute to Sicily for the freedom of the sea and the right to import Sicilian corn, —a clear proof of the decline of Tunisian agriculture.

generally less concerned for the captives than for the acquisition of trading privileges, and the beys took advantage of the com- mercial rivalry of England and France to play off the one power against the other. The release of all Christian slaves was not effected till after the bombardment of Algiers; and the definite abandonment of piracy may be dated from the presentation to the bey in 1819 of a collective note of the powers assembled at Aix-la- Chapelle. The Government had not elasticity enough to adapt itself to so profound a change in its ancient traditions ; the finances became more and more hopelessly embarrassed, in spite of ruinous taxation ; and attempts at European innovations in the court and army made matters only worse, so long as no attempt was made to improve the internal condition of the country. In the third quarter of the 19th century not more than a tenth part of the fertile land was under cultivation, and the yearly charge on the

public debt exceeded the whole annual revenue. In these circum- stances only the rivalry of the European powers that had interests in Tunis protracted from year to year the inevitable revolution. The French had long regarded the dominions of the bey as their natural inheritance, and in 1881, having got a grievance against the bey in a commercial transaction of the French African Society, with the execution of which he had interfered (the affair of the Enfida estate), a French force crossed the Algerian froutier under pretext of chastising the independent Kroumir or Khomair tribes in the north-east of the regency, and, quickly dropping the mask, advanced on the capital and compelled the bey to accept the French protectorate. The actual conquest of the country was not effected without a serious struggle with Moslem fanaticism ; but all Tunis was brought completely under French jurisdiction and administra- tion, supported by military posts at every important point. The power of the bey is null and his dignity merely nominal,—a fact acknowledged by Great Britain by the surrender in 1883 of Her Majesty's consular jurisdiction in the regency.

Literature.—Of Arabic sources accessible in translations the geographical works of Ya'kubi (Descriptio al Magribi, by De Goeje, Leyden, 1860), Al-Bakri

(Deser. de l'Afrique septentr., by De Slane, Paris, 1859; Arabic text, ibid., 1857), and Hdrisi (Descr, de l' Afrique, &c., by Dozy and De Goeje, Leyden, 1866) belong to the 10th, 11th, and 12th centuries respectively ; the history of Ibn Khaldun (Hist. des Berbéres, by De Slane, 4 vols., Algiers, 1852-56) includes the earlier Hafsites, that of Al-Kairawani (Hist. de l' Afrique, by Pellissier aud Rémusat, Paris, 1845, in Expl. Scient. de U' Algérie, vol. vii.; Arabic text, Tunis, 1286 AH.) deals especially with Tunis, and goes down to 1681. The geography of Tunis is treated by EH. Pellissier (Hxplor. Scient. de lV Algérie, vol. xvi., Paris, 1853), C. Tissot (Géog. Comparée de la Province Romaine d'Afrique, vol. i., Paris, 1884), and Piesse (Itinéraire de l' Algérie, &c., new ed., Paris, 1887), and in Murray's Handbook, by Sir R. Playfair (1887), who has also published Travels in the Foot- steps of Bruce in Alg. and Twnis(London, 1887). A French survey is in progress, and some of the maps are published. For the modern history, see Rousseau, Annales Tunisiennes (Algiers, 1864), and Broadley, Tunis Past and Present (Edinburgh, 1882); for the archeology, Davis, Carthage

and her Remains (Lon- don, 1860), Guérin, Voyage Archéologique (1862), and D'Herisson, Mission Archéol. en Tunisie (Paris, 1881). The excellent description of Africa by Leo Africanus is in Ramusio and Purchas. Shaw's Travels (1788) may still be consulted. Of other books of travels Maltzan's Reise (Leipsic, 1870) deserves mention.

TUNIS, capital of the regency of the same name, in 36° 50' N. lat. and 10° 12' E. long., is situated on an isthmus between two salt lakes, a marshy sebkha to the south-west and the shallow Boheira to the north-east. The latter is twelve miles in circumference, and on the side opposite Tunis is connected with the Bay of Tunis at the port of Goletta (Halk al-Wad) by a short canal. The old town, of which the walls have in great part disap- peared, lies between two suburbs, the Ribdt al-Soweika on the north and the Ribdt Bab al-Jezira on the south. These suburbs were surrounded by a wall in the beginning of the 19th century. Between the old town and the Marine Gate on the Boheira a European quarter, containing the palace of the resident, public offices, the provisional cathedral, and huge blocks of new houses in the French style, has sprung up. At the extreme west of the old town is the citadel, now used as barracks, whose lofty circuit includes the mosque built by Abu Zakariyé the Hafsite in 1232. To the same century belongs the great mosque of the Olive Tree (Jami' al-Zeittuna) in the centre of the town, with its many domes and spacious cloister, which possesses a library and serves as a college for some 450 students of Moslem learning. To the north near the walls of the old town rises the dome of the mosque named after Sid{ Mahrez, a re- nowned saint of the 5th century of the Flight, whose tomb gives it a right of sanctuary for debtors. There are many other mosques and chapels, but all are closed against Christians. The palace of the bey, between the citadel and the mosque of the Olive Tree, is partly in bad French taste, but contains some rooms of the 18th century with admir-

able Moorish decoration in the delicate stucco arabesque work for which Tunis was formerly famous. The chief attraction of the old town lies in its bazaars, which retain their Oriental character unimpaired. Water is supplied to numerous fountains by an ancient aqueduct from Jebel Zaghwan, repaired at a cost of half a million sterling by the late Bey Mohammed al-

Sédik. The principal educational establishments besides that of the great mosque are the Sddikiya college, founded in 1875 for gratuitous instruction in Arabic and European subjects, the college of St Charles, conducted by priests and open to Christians and Moslems alike, and the normal school, founded in 1884 by the bey to train teachers in the French language and European ideas. The population of Tunis is about 125,000, of whom one-fifth are Jews and one-fifth Europeans, chiefly Maltese and Italians.

The environs of Tunis are admirable from the beautiful views they present ; the finest prospects are from the hill on the south- east, which is crowned by a French fort, and from the Belveder on the north of the town (Jebel al-Tuba), on which stands a very ancient fortress. Half-an-hour's drive west of the town is the decaying palace called the Bardo, a little town in itself, remarkable for the "lion court" and some apartments in the Moorish style. The port of Goletta, with 4000 inhabitants, is connected with Tunis by a railway 10 miles long. The older or southern part of the town next the canal has a fortress, now used as barracks, built by the Turks on the site of the Spanish fortress destroyed in 1574. The ruins of Carthage lie a few miles north of Goletta. The chief manufactures of Tunis are still textiles, as in the time of Leo Africanus. The manufacture of silk dates from the settlement of Moorish refugees from Spain abont 1600. There are also tanneries, a tobacco factory, and some minor industries. The annual exports of grain, oil, stuffs, hides, and essences are valued at £720,000, and the imports, chiefly of cotton goods, at £560,000. There are two French steamers weekly between Marseilles and Goletta, and the coast towns are served and connected with Malta both by French and Italian packets.

History.—Tunis was a Carthaginian city and is repeatedly men- tioned in the history of the Punic wars. Strabo speaks of its hot baths and quarries. Under the Arabs it rose to importance, be- came the usual port for those going from Kairwan to Spain, and was one of the residences of the Aghlabites. In the 10th century it suffered severely, and was repeatedly pillaged in the wars of the F4timites with Abu Yazid and the Zendta Berbers. For its later fortnnes see above in the history of the country, of which since the accession of the Hafsites it has been the capital.

TUNNELLING. The process of making a more or less horizontal underground. passage, or tunnel, without removing the top soil is known as tunnelling. In former times any long tube-like passage, however constructed, was called a tunnel. At the present day the word is sometimes popularly applied to an underground passage constructed by trenching down from the surface to build the arching and then refilling with the top soil; but a passage so con- structed, although indistinguishable from a tunnel when completed, is more correctly termed a “covered way,” and the operations ‘‘cutting and covering,” instead of tunnel- ling. Making a small tunnel, afterwards to be converted into a larger one, is called “driving a heading,” and in mining operations small tunnels are termed “ galleries,” “‘ driftways,” and “adits.” If the underground passage is vertical it is a shaft; if the shaft is commenced at the surface the operations are known as “sinking,” and it is called a “rising” if worked upwards from a previously constructed heading or gallery.

Tunnelling has been effected by natural forces to a far greater extent than by man. In limestone districts innumerable swallow-holes, or shafts, have been sunk by the rain water following joints and dissolving the rock, and from the bottom of these shafts tunnels have been excavated to the sides of hills in a manner strictly analogous to the ordinary method of executing a tunnel by sinking shafts at intervals and driving headings therefrom. Many rivers find thus a course underground. In Asia Minor one of the rivers on the route of the Mersina Railway extension pierces

a hill by means of a natural tunnel, whilst a little south at Seleucia another river flows through a tunnel, 20 feet wide and 23 feet high, cut 1600 years ago through rock so hard that the chisel marks are still discernible. The Mammoth cave of Kentucky and the Peak caves of Derbyshire are examples of natural tunnelling. Mineral springs bring up vast quantities of matter in solution. It has been estimated that the Old Well Spring at Bath has discharged since the commencement of the 19th century solids equivalent to the excavation of a 6 feet by 3 feet heading 7 miles long; and yet the water is perfectly clear and the daily flow is only the 150th part of that pumped out of the great railway tunnel under the Severn. Tunnel- ling

is also carried on to an enormous extent by the action of the sea. Where the Atlantic rollers break on the west coast of Ireland, on the seaboard of the western Highlands of Scotland, and elsewhere, numberless caves and tunnels have been formed in the cliffs, beside which artificial tunnelling operations appear insignificant. The most gigantic subaqueous demolition hitherto carried out by man was the blowing up in 1885 of Flood Rock, a mass about 9 acres in extent, near Long Island Sound, New York. To effect this gigantic work by a single instantaneous blast a shaft was sunk 64 feet below sea level, from the bottom of which four miles of tunnels or galleries were driven so as to completely honeycomb the rock. The roof rock ranged from 10 feet to 24 feet in thickness, and was supported by 467 pillars 15 feet square; 13,286 holes, averaging 9 feet in length and 3 inches in diameter, were drilled in the pillars and roof. About 80,000 cubic yards of rock were excavated in the galleries and 275,000 re- mained to be blasted away. The holes were charged with 110 tons of “rackarock,” a more powerful explosive than gunpowder, which was fired by electricity, when the sea was lifted 100 feet over the whole area of the rock. Where natural forces effect analogous results, the holes are bored and the headings driven by the chemical and mechanical action of the rain and sea, and the explosive force is ob- tained by the expansive action of air locked up in the fissures of the rock and compressed to many tons per square foot by impact from the waves. Artificial breakwaters have often been thus tunnelled into by the sea, the com- pressed air blowing out the blocks and the waves carrying away the débris.

With so many examples of natural caves and tunnels in existence it is not to be wondered at that tunnelling was one of the earliest works undertaken by man, first for dwellings and tombs, then for quarrying and mining, and finally for water supply, drainage, and other requirements of civilization. A Theban king on ascending the throne began at once to drive the tunnel which was to form his final resting place, and persevered with the work until death. The tomb of Menptah at Thebes was driven at a slope for a distance of 350 feet into the hill, when a shaft was sunk and the tunnel projected a further length of about 300 feet, and enlarged into a chamber for the sarcophagus. Tunnelling on a large scale was also carried on at the rock temples of Nubia and of India, and the architectural features of the entrances to some of these temples might be studied with advantage by the

designers of modern tunnel fronts. Petrie has traced the method of underground quarrying followed by the Egyptians opposite the Pyramids. Parallel galleries about 20 feet square were driven into the rock and cross galleries cut, so that a hall 300 to 400 feet wide was formed, with a roof supported by rows of pillars 20 feet square and 20 feet apart. Blocks of stone were removed by the workmen cutting grooves all round them, and, where the stone was not required for use, but merely had to be removed to form a gallery, the grooves were wide enough for a man to stand up in.

TUNNELLING

Where granite, diorite, and other hard stone had to be cut, the work was done by tube drills and by saws supplied with corundum, or other hard gritty material, and water, —the drills leaving a core of rock exactly like that of the modern dianiond drill. As instances of ancient tunnels through soft ground and requiring masonry arching, re- ference may be made to the vaulted drain under the south- east palace of Nimrud and to the brick arched tunnel, 12 feet high and 15 feet wide, under the Euphrates. In Algeria, Switzerland, and wherever the Romans went, re- mains of tunnels for roads, drains, and water-supply are found. Pliny refers to the tunnel constructed for the drainage of Lake Fucino as the greatest public work of the time. It was by far the longest tunnel in the world, being more than 34 miles in length, and was driven under Monte Salviano, which necessitated shafts no less than 400 feet in depth. Forty shafts and a number of “ cuniculi” or inclined galleries were sunk, and the excavated material was drawn up in copper pails, of about ten gallons capacity, by windlasses. The tunnel was designed to be 10 feet high by 6 feet wide, but its actual cross section varied. It is stated that 30,000 labourers were occupied eleven years in – its construction. With modern appliances such a tunnel could be driven from the two ends without intermediate shafts in eleven months.

No practical advance was made on the tunnelling methods of the Romans until gunpowder came into use. Old en- gravings of mining operations early in the 17th century show that excavation was still accomplished by pickaxes or hammer and chisel, and that wood fires were lighted at the ends of the headings to split and soften the rock in advance (see fig. 1). Crude methods of ventilation by

Cr RD Rae

EY S SS) a, Basel, 1621.) shaking cloths in the headings and by placing inclined boards at the top of the shafts are also on record. In 1766 a tunnel 9 feet wide, 12 feet high, and 2880 yards – long was commenced on the Grand Trunk Canal, England, and completed eleven years later; and this was followed by many others. On the introduction of railways tunnel- ling became one of the ordinary incidents of a contractor’s work ; probably upwards of 4000 railway tunnels have been executed.

Subaqueous Tunnelling.—In 1825 Brunel commenced and in 1843 completed the Thames tunnel, which was driven at points through liquid mud by the aid of a ‘“‘shield” at a cost of about £1300 per lineal yard. It is now used by the East London Railway. In 1872 Chesborough began tunnelling under the Detroit river, between Canada po Michigan, U.S., but the work was abandoned

owing to continued irruptions of water after some 600 yards of headings had been driven.

623

The most important subaqueous work yet accomplished — the Severn tunnel, 44 miles in length—was commenced in 1873 and finished in 1886, Messrs Hawkshaw, Son, Hayter, and Richardson being the engineers and Mr T. A. Walker the contractor. The bed of the Severn is formed principally of marls, sandstones, and con- glomerates in nearly horizontal strata, overlying highly inclined coal measures, shales, and sandstones, which are also exposed in the bed of the river. The tunnel is made almost wholly in the Trias and Coal Measure formations, but for a short distance at its eastern end it passes through gravel. The lowest part of the line is below the “Shoots,” where the depth is 60 feet at low water and 100 feet at high water, and the thickness of Pennant sandstone over the brickwork of the tunnel is 45 feet. Under the Salmon Pool, a de- pression in the bed of the river on the English side, there is a cover of only 30 feet of Trias marl. Much water was met with through- out. In 1879 the works were flooded for some months by a large land spring on the Welsh side of the river. The water which sup- plied the spring came from fissures in the carboniferous limestone, which

was met with only at this place, and it is now conveyed by a side heading parallel to the tunnel to a shaft 29 fect in diameter, in which are fixed pumps of adequate power. On another occasion the works were flooded by water which burst through a hole in the river bed at the Salmon Pool. This hole, which was in the Trias marl] and had an area of 16 feet by 10 feet, was subsequently filled with clay and the works were completed beneath it. The tunnel is for a double line of railway and is lined throughout with vitrified bricks set in Portland cement mortar. A heading was first driven entirely across the river to test the ground and sub- sequently another heading at a lower level. ‘‘ Breakups” were made at intervals of two to five chains and the arching was carried on at each of these points. All parts of the excavation were timbered, and the greatest amount excavated in any one week was 6000 cubic yards. Owing to the inrush of water it was frequently necessary to completely roof the timbering with felt or corrugated iron before the bricklayers could commence the arching. The total amount of water raised at all the pumping stations is about 27,000,000 gallons in twenty-four hours; but the total pumping power provided is equal to 66,000,000 gallons in twenty-four hours. The ventilation is effected by a fan of the Guibal pattern, 40 feet in diameter and 12 feet wide, making forty-three revolutions and drawing 447,000 cubic feet of air per minute from the tunnel through an 18-feet shaft at Sudbrooke (Monmouth).

Another example of subaqueous tunnelling, second only in im- portance to the foregoing, is the Mersey tunnel, the length of which between the pumping shafts on each side of the river is 1 mile. From each shaft a drainage heading was driven through the red sandstone with a rising gradient towards the centre of the river. This heading was partly bored out by a Beaumont machine to a diameter of 7 feet 4 inches, and at a rate attaining occasionally 65 lineal yards per week. All of the tunnel excavation, amounting to 820,000 cubic yards, was got out by hand labour, since heavy blast- ing would have shaken the rock. The minimum cover between the top of the arch and the bed of the river is 30 feet. Pumping machinery is provided for 27,000,000 gallons per day, which is more than double the usual quantity of water ; and ample ventila- tion is secured by two 30-feet diameter and two 40-feet diameter Guibal fans. Messrs Brunlees and Fox were the engineers, and Messrs Waddell the contractors

for the works, which were opened in 1886, about 6 years after the commencement of operations,

Proposals for the construction of a tunnel about 30 miles in length to connect England and France have been brought forward periodically from the commencement of the 19th century, but nothing was done until 1881, when preliminary works of some im- portance were commenced by Sir Edward Watkin and the South- Eastern Railway Company. At the proposed point of crossing the deepest part of the channel is 210 feet, and, as the beds on the English side and those on the French side, so far as relates to the grey chalk and chalk miarl, are each 225 feet thick, it is assumed that those strata are continuous and that the tunnel would be driven through a water-tight material. Shafts have been sunk near Folkestone, and experimental headings have been driven 2000 yards under the sea, on the line of the tunnel. The heading, 7 feet in diameter, was cut by a Beaumont boring machine, having two arms with steel teeth, and driven by compressed air; the usual rate of progress was 15 lineal yards per day. ,

A partially constructed subaqueous tunnel now lies drowned under the Hudson river at New York. An attempt was made to drive a double tunnel through the mud and silt forming the river bed. In 1880, when about a hundred yards had been a geet the water burst in, and twenty men were drowned. Work was sub- sequently resumed on the following plan (see fig. 2). A pilot tunnel, consisting. of an iron tube of 6 feet 6 inches in diameter, was advanced from 30 to 40 feet ahead of the main tunnel, to form a firm support for the iron plates of the latter by means of radial screws. Compressed air, pumped into the tunnel at a pressure of about 20 Ib per square inch, prevented the weight of silt and water from crushing the plating and flowing into the tunnel. The excavated

gilt was mixed with water and ejected by compressed air. Between the shafts the length of the proposed tunnel is 1 mile, and about

MEAN HICH WATER

IIR — = YUM YT TTT Yi i YY Y YY ff YYyw—yy YY 4, GY ME

UY, YY YY, Wy Yyy Yi Yy Yj L Vy Yi,

Ae

LH

ATEN ii i

fare com oe

il

KZ ‘i

Uf, Wy; YY UY a rH : UY Yy Y y ATE — ULE Mey |

YY YYW YY wi fy YY, Fig. 2.—Hudson river tunnel—method

one-eighth of the distance had been accomplished when the works were stopped for financial reasons.

Small subaqueous tunnels have been driven through clay without difficulty under Lakes Michigan and Erie, and elsewhere in America. In England a heading was driven nearly across the Thames in 1807, and eighty years later two 10 feet 6 inch iron-lined tunnels were constructed under the river close to the foundation of London Bridge by Mr Greathead, with the aid of a simple annular shield advanced by six hydraulic presses. Where open gravel or water has to be tunnelled through a diaphragm must be fitted to the shield. Mallet proposed in 1858 to carry in this way a tubular tunnel across the English Channel. Various plans have been suggested for the removal of the soil in advance of the shield. Mr Greathead would effect it by the circulation of a closed current of water, carrying the stuff through the shield from front to back ; and an American plan provides for forcing it bodily out of the way by a lock slonteh shield, aided by jets of water at a very high pressure.

Tunnelling through Mountains. —Where a great thickness of rock overlies a tunnel, it is necessary to do the work wholly from the two ends, without intermediate shafts. The problem resolves itself into devising the most

expeditious way of excavating aud removing the rock, and there are none of the uncertainties and difficulties which make subaqueous tunnelling of so high an interest. Ex- aera has led to great advances in speed and economy, as will

e seen from the following particulars of the three tunnels through the Alps, the longest yet constructed.

Tunnel. Length. | Progress per Day. Cost.

Miles Lineal Yards. Per Lineal Yard. Mont Conia)... cis as newie 74 2°57 £226 St Gotthard …..... 9% 6°01 143

Arlberg

In 1857 the first blast was fired in connexion with the Mont Cenis works; in 1861 machine drilling was introduced ; and in

1871 the tunnel was opened for traffic. With the exception of about 300 yards the tunnel is lined throughout with brick or stone. Little interest now attaches to the method of tunnelling adopted at Mont Cenis, as it is in several respects obsolete. During the first four years of hand labour the average progress was not more than 9 inches per day on each side of the Alps ; but with compressed- air rock-drills the rate towards the end was five times greater.

In 1872 the St Gotthard tunnel was commenced and in 1881 the first locomotive ran through it. Mechanical drills were used from the commencement. Tunnelling was carried on by driving in advance a top heading about 8 feet square, then enlarging this sideways, and finally sinking the excavation to invert level (see figs. 8 and 4). Air for working the rock-drills was compressed to seven atmospheres by turbines of about 2000 horse-power. Six to to eight Ferroux drills, making about 180 blows a minute, were mounted on a carriage and pushed up to the point of attack. From thirteen to eighteen holes were drilled by the machine and its sixteen attendants to depths of from 2’ 7” to 4’ 3” in three to five hours, and the work of charging with dynamite, firing, and clearing away was then done

by twenty-two men in three to four hours. The charge per hole averaged 12 fb, and after firing a strong current

of compressed air was directed over the face of the excavation. Four sets of holes were under favourable circumstances drilled in

Fies. 8 and 4,—Method of excavation in St Gotthard tunnel,

twenty-four hours, which rendered a progress of 18 feet per day in such rock as gneiss attainable in each heading.

The driving of the Arlberg tunnel was commenced in 1880 and the work was completed in little more than three years. The main heading was driven along the bottom of the tunnel and shafts were opened up 25 to 70 yards apart, from which smaller headings were driven right and left. The tunuel was enlarged to its full section at different points simultaneously in lengths of 8 yards, the excava- tion of each occupying about twenty days, ee the masonry 14 days. Ferroux percussion air drills and Brandt rotary hydraulic drills were used, and the performance of the latter was especially satisfactory. After each blast a fine spray of water was injected, which assisted the ventilation vaptnctaly. In the St Gotthard tunnel the discharge of the air drills was relied on for ventilation. In the Arlberg tunnel over 8000 cubic feet of air per minute were thrown in by ventilators. In a long tunnel the quick transport of materials is of equal importance with rapid drilling and blasting. In the Arlberg, to keep pace with the miners, 900 tons of excavated material had to be removed, and 350 tons of masonry to be introduced, daily at each end of the tunnel, which necessitated the transit of 450 wagons. This traffic was carried on over a length of 34 miles on a single track of 27-inch gauge with two sidings. When the locomotives ran into the tunnel the fires were damped down, and, as the pressure in the boiler was fifteen atmospheres, the stored- up heat in the water furnished the necessary power. The cost per lineal yard varied according to the thickness of masonry lining and the distance from the mouth of the tunnel. For the first 1000 yards from the entrance the prices per lineal yard were £11, 8s. for the lower heading; £7, 12s. for the upper one; £380, 10s. for the unlined tunnel; £45 for the tunnel with a thin lining of masonry; and £124,

5s. with a lining 3 feet thick at the arch, 4 feet at the sides, and 2 feet 8 inches at the invert.

Long Tunnels.—The new Croton aqueduct tunnel fron Croton dam to the reservoir in New York is worthy of note both for its The distance

Fras. 5 and 6.—-Great Northern Railway tunnel. Method of tunnel- ling under the Metropolitan cattle market, London,

have to be taken to avoid settlement. The important Metropolitan tunnels constructed by Sir John Fowler have already been de- scribed under Rartway (vol. xx. p. 239). Another successful ex-

—

ample of such work is the tunnel driven in 1886 by Mr Johnson, the Great Northern Company's engineer, under the Metropolitan cattle market. Where clear of buildings the tunnel was executed in 12-feet lengths measured from the finished brickwork, the ex- cavation extending another 5 feet. The face of the excavation was carried out in four sections, the first between the head trees and the first sill was formed with a rake of 1 in 43, the second and third with a rake of 1 in 6, and the fourth was vertical, the whole face being close boarded (see figs. 5 and 6). The arch and sidc walls were eight rings and the invert six rings thick.

Where open ballast and running sand heavily charged with water are met with a tun- nel cannot be driven E23 on the ordinary sys- "7 tem without seri- «, ously endangering [adjoining buildings. ~~: To meet such cases, | and also to provide a safe means of tun~~ nelling under dock basins, canals, and rivers, the pneu- matic shield (see fig. 7) was designed by Mr Benjamin Baker. The shicld is supported against external pressure by vertical girders about 6 feet apart. Horizontal shelves of steel plates with cutting edges are spaced about 4 feet apart, and the face of the shield is closed by vertical plates and_ slides ; the arrangement is such that any slide can be opened to admit of the ballast or sand being excavated, whilst the compressed air filling the tunnel pre- vents the influx of water during the proccss. Where

hard water- tight clay is encountered, sections of the shield plates are unbolted to admit miners. When sufficient material has been excavated the shield is advanced by hydraulic pressure and the brick arching built.

See Aquepucr and Rartway; also Drinker's Tunnelling, New York, 1878 (a most important work); and Proc. Inst. Civ. Eng., art. ''Tunnels." (B. B.)

TUNNY (Thynnus thynnus), one of the largest fishes of the family of Mackerels, belongs to the genus of which the Bonito (7h. pelamys) and the Albacores (Th. albacora, Th. dlalonga, &c.) are equally well-known members. From the latter the tunny is distinguished by its much shorter pectoral fins, which reach backwards only to, or nearly to, the end of the first dorsal fin. It possesses nine short fin- lets behind the dorsal, and eight behind the anal fin. Its colour is dark bluish above, and greyish, tinged and spotted with silvery, below. The tunny is a pelagic fish, but periodically approaches the shore, wandering in large shoals, at least in the Mediterranean, within well-ascer- tained areas along the coast. The causes by which its wanderings are regulated in the Atlantic Ocean are much less understood ; it not unfrequently appears in small com- panies or singly in the English Channel and in the German Ocean, probably in pursuit of the shoals of pilchards and herrings on which it feeds. The regularity of its appear- ance on certain parts of the coasts of the Mediterranean has led to the establishment of a systematic fishery, which has been carried on from the time of the Phcenicians to the present day. Immense numbers of tunnies were caught

Fia. 7.—Mr B, Baker's pneumatic shield.

on the Spanish coast and in the Sea of Marmora, where, however, this industry has much declined. The Sardinian tunnies were considered to be of superior excellence. The

Tunny (Thynnus thynnus).

greatest number is now caught on the north coast of Sicily, the fisheries of this island supplying most of the preserved tunny which is exported to other

parts of the world. In ancient times the fish were preserved in salt, and that coming from Sardinia, which was specially esteemed by the Romans, was known as Salsamentum sardicum. At pre- sent preference is given to tunny preserved in oil. Many of the fishes, especially the smaller ones, are consumed fresh. The tunny occurs also in the South Pacific; but several other species seem to take its place in the Indo- Pacific Ocean. It is one of the largest fishes, attaining to a length of ten feet and to a weight of more than a thousand pounds.

On the tunny fisheries of ancient and modern times, see Cuvier and Valenciennes, Hist. Nat. des Poissons (vol. viii. pp. 71-92).

TUNSTALL, a market town of Staffordshire, England, is situated on a branch line of the London and North- Western Railway and on the Trent and Mersey Canal, 4 miles north-west of Stoke and 168 north-west of London. Among the public buildings are the market (1858), town hall (1884), old court-house (now used as a free library and reading room), and board schools (1880). The chief manufactures are those peculiar to the Potteries district ; there are also large iron-works (coal and iron being obtained in the neighbourhood), and brick and tile works. The town is chiefly the growth of the 19th century, and in 1811 numbered only 1677 inhabitants. In 1885 it was included for parliamentary purposes in the borough of Newcastle-under-Lyme. It is governed by a local board of twenty-four members. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 690 acres) was 13,540 in 1871, and 14,244 in 1881.

TURANIAN. This word means etymologically no more than “not Iranian,” and in this sense the word Turan was used by Sasanian monarchs to cover those parts of their realm that did not belong to Iran. The application of the word to denote the Ural-Altaic family of languages is extremely unfortunate and seems to be falling out of use. See PuiLonoey, vol. xviii. p. 779.

TURBINE. See Hypromecuantcs, vol. xii. p. 524.

TURBOT)! the largest and best known of a genus of flat fishes, khombus, which bears the appropriate systematic name of Lh, maximus. The turbot has great width of body, and is scaleless, but is covered with conical bony tubercles. The eyes are on the left side of the body, the lower being slightly

in advance of the upper; the mouth is large and armed with teeth of uniformly minute size. The turbot is found all round the coasts of Europe (except in the extreme north), preferring a flat sandy bottom with from 10 to 50 fathoms of water. The broad banks off the Dutch coast are a favourite resort. It is a voracious fish, and feeds on other fish, crustaceans, and mollusks. It

1 The word ‘‘ turbot” is of great antiquity, perhaps of Celtic origin ; it is preserved in French in the same form as in English, and is com- posed of two words, of which the second is identical with the ‘but ”

in holibut and with the German ‘‘ Butte,” which signifies flat fish. The German name for the turbot is ‘‘ Steinbutte.”

seems to constantly change its abode, wandering northward during the summer, and going into deeper water in the cold season. Some thirty years ago it was estimated that the Dutch supplied turbot to the London market to the value of £80,000 a year. At present (1887) the value of turbot annually sold in London cannot be ascertained ; but it must be several times that amount, and is principally earned by English line-fishermen and trawlers. Although the turbot abounds off the west coast of Ireland, the fishing is not carried on with the same energy and success as in the English Channel and German Ocean. The turbot is also common, though not abundant, in the Mediterranean, and is replaced in the Black Sea by an allied species with much larger bony tubercles (2h. mexoticus). Both species grow to a large size, being usually sold at from 5 to 10 tb ; but the common turbot is stated to attain toa weight of 30 tb. Both from its size and the excellent flavour of its flesh it ranks next after the codfish among British sea-fishes.
TURENNE, Henri DE LA Tour dD’ AUVERGNE, VICOMTE pE (1611-1675), a famous French general of the 17th century, was the second son of Henri, Duc de Bouillon, by Elizabeth, daughter of William I., prince of Orange, and was born at Sedan on 11th September 1611. carefully educated in the strictest doctrines of the Reformed religion, and at the age of thirteen was sent to learn war from his uncles Maurice and Henry of Nassau in the

campaigns of these princes against the Spaniards. In 1626 he received a commission as captain of infantry in the service of Holland, and by 1630 had shown such military capacity that Richelieu invited him back to France and appointed him colonel of a regiment. He was present at the relief of Casale, and on 21st June 1635 was made a maréchal de camp for his services at the siege of La Motte in Lorraine under De la Force. In that year he took com- mand of a division in the army under Cardinal La Valette in the defence of Mainz, and, when the cardinal's army had to fall back on Metz from want of provisions, Turenne commanded the rear-guard, covering the retreat with admirable skill. In 1636 he was present under La Valette at the siege of Saverne, where he was wounded, and in the campaign in Franche Comté; in 1637 he served under the same commander in Flanders, took Landrecies, and drove back the cardinal infant from Maubeuge. In 1638 he served under Bernhard of Saxe-Weimar at the siege of Breisach, and in the following year was transferred to the army of D'Harcourt in Italy. It was at this epoch that he established his fame as a general. In November 1639 he covered the retreat of the army, and fought a famous engagement, known as the battle of the "route de Quiers" ; in 1640 he saved Casale, and insisted upon not abandoning the siege of Turin, which town surrendered on 24th Sep- tember ; in 1641 he took Coni, Ceva, and Mondovi; and on 11th March 1642 he was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-general. After he had served for a short time in Roussillon, he was appointed by Richelieu in 1643 to the command of the army in Italy, under Thomas of Savoy, although his brother, the Duc de Bouillon, had just before been arrested as an accomplice in the conspiracy of Cing Mars. Mazarin did not exhibit quite so much confi- dence in Turenne, and in December 1643 removed him from Italy, sending him to collect the remains of Bernhard of Saxe-Weimar's army and form them once more into an organized force ; but he softened the transference by creat- ing Turenne a marshal of France on 16th May 1644. Turenne's four campaigns in Germany, which largely contributed to the peace of Westphalia, have always been regarded as models in the art of war. In June 1644 he crossed the Rhine at Breisach, and was marching against the Comte de Mercy, the Imperialist general, who was at Freiburg, when he was superseded by the Duc d'Enghien,

He was

better known by his later title of the Prince de Condé. D'Enghien, after fighting the three days' battle of Freiburg, left the army again to Turenne, who took Philippsburg and Mainz, and then went into winter quarters. In May 1645 Turenne was surprised by Mercy at Marienthal and de- feated ; but he skilfully concentrated the remains of his army and retreated into Hesse, where he was soon joined by D'Enghien. The two marshals, having reorganized their army, marched against Mercy and totally defeated him at Nordlingen on 3d August 1645, when Mercy was killed. D'Enghien again left the army to Turenne, who in con- junction with the Swedish army under Wrangel overran Franconia and Swabia, taking all the fortresses there in 1646. In 1647 he conducted a still more masterly cam- paign, and after beating the Bavarians and Imperialists in two engagements he and the Swedes occupied Bavaria, — and drove the old duke out of his dominions.

When the troubles of the Fronde (see France, vol. ix. p-. 572, and Mazarrn) broke out, Turenne, who was in com- mand of the veteran troops of Bernhard of Saxe-Weimar in Alsace, hesitated which side to take, till the Duchesse de LONGUEVILLE (9.v.), with whom he fell violently in love, persuaded him to side with the parlement. But his troops refused to follow him, and he had to fly with her to Flanders. He there took a command in the Spanish army under Don Estevan Gomar, and, when trying to raise the siege of Réthel, was utterly defeated by Du Plessis-Praslin. But in 1652 he defeated Condé at Gien, and nearly an- nihilated his army in the battle of the Faubourg St. Antoine. When the troubles of the Fronde were over, Turenne marched upon the frontier, and in several cam- paigns defeated the Spaniards over and over again, by these victories paving the way for the peace of the Pyrenees (1659), the natural complement of the peace of West- phalia. In these campaigns he had once more to fight against Condé, general-in-chief of the armies of Spain, and in 1654 he showed his superiority by raising the siege of Arras and driving the Spaniards from their lines. In 1656 Condé, assisted by Don John of Austria, won an exactly similar victory and relieved Valenciennes, which Turenne was besieging. The prolonged contest between the two was decided in 1658 by Turenne's victory of the Dunes, in which Cromwell's contingent of 6000 soldiers took part.

Louis XIV. now began to rule in reality, and one of his first acts was to create Turenne in 1660 marshal-general of the armies of France. Seven years later Turenne occupied French Flanders and took all the fortresses in that province, though the king was nominally in com- mand of the army,—an exploit equalled in the following year by Condé's rapid occupation of Franche Comté. It was in 1668 that Turenne made his notorious change of faith. Born of Calvinist parents and educated a Protestant, he had in compliance with the tenets of his religion refused to marry one of Richelieu's nieces in 1639, and had eventually married a daughter of the Protestant Marshal de la Force. But it can hardly be believed that he was converted at the age of fifty-seven from religious convictions. In 1672 the second great European war broke out, brought about by the ambition of Louis XIV. Turenne once more took command of the army, which the king accompanied, and speedily occupied the greater part of Holland, which, however, they were forced to evacuate owing to the Dutch cutting their dykes. In the following year Turenne marched into Westphalia to oppose the imperialist forces, and, though his army was small com- pared to that of Montecuculi, the imperialist general, he managed to make head against both him and the elector of Brandenburg. In 1673 he was compelled to act on the defensive; but in 1674 in spite of his inferiority of numbers

he boldly resumed the aggressive. Crossing the Rhine at Philippsburg in June, and marching rapidly to Sinsheim, he defeated the imperialist general Caprara and the duke of Lorraine. He then retired for a time, but in December of the same year he made a sudden rush into the enemy's winter quarters and utterly routed the elector of Branden- burg, who was then general of the imperialists, at Colmar. Between the battle of Sinsheim and the dash at Colmar, Turenne, under orders from Louvois, committed the acts which are the greatest blot upon his fame by devastat- ing the Palatinate. After the rout of Colmar, and the defeat of Tiirkheim which followed it, he laid waste the greater part of Alsace, as a defensive measure against another advance of the imperialists. He then advanced into the heart of Germany, and again met Montecuculi, who had succeeded the elector of

Brandenburg as general- in-chief. The two generals manceuvred for four months in much the same way as Wellington and Marmont marched and counter-marched before the battle of Salamanca; at last, on 27th July 1675, their field of battle was chosen, and, as Turenne was directing the position of a battery, he was struck by a cannon ball and killed on the spot. The news of his death was received with universal sorrow ; Fléchier, Mascaron, Saint-Evremond, and Lamoignon wrote éloges of him; and Madame de Sevigné describes the consternation caused by his sudden loss. His body was taken to St-Dénis, and buried with the kings of France. Even the extreme revolutionists of 1793 respected it, and, when the bones of the sovereigns were thrown to the winds, the remains of Turenne were preserved at the museum of natural history until 23rd September 1800, when they were removed by order of Bonaparte to the church of the Invalides at Paris, where they still rest. Turenne's fame rests on his military achievements ; as a man he was not more distinguished for his virtues than the duke of Marlborough, whom in many respects he resembled. He had indeed the calmness of all philosophic, cold-minded temperaments, but few other praiseworthy qualities. As a politician he holds no high place. (H. M. 8.) TURGAI, a Russian province in Central Asia, formerly a part of the Kirghiz steppe, and now embodied in the governor-generalship of the Steppes, is bounded by Uralsk and Orenburg on the W. and N., by Akmolinsk on the E., and by Syr-Daria and the Sea of Aral on the S. This extensive and irregularly-shaped territory, which has an area (176,800 square miles) as large as that of Caucasia and Transcaucasia taken together, belongs to the Aral- Caspian depression. It has, however, the Mugojar Hills on its western border and includes a part of the southern Urals ; and from Akmolinsk it is separated by a range of hills which runs between the two chief rivers of the Kirghiz steppe—the Turgai and the Sary-su. In the north it includes the low belt of undulating land which stretches from the Mugojar Hills towards the north-east and sepa- rates the rivers belonging to the Aral basin from those which flow towards the Arctic Ocean, and beyond this range it embraces the upper Tobot. The remainder is steppe land, sloping gently towards the Sea of Aral. The Mugojar Hills consist of an undulating plateau nearly 1000 feet in height, built up of Permian and Cretaceous deposits, and deeply grooved by rivers. They are not the independent chain which our maps make them out to be!: they merely continue the Urals towards the south, and are connected with the Ust Urt plateau by a range of hills which was formerly an island of

the Aral-Caspian Sea. Their northern extremity joins the undulating plateau (400 to 600 feet), built up of sandstones and marls, which separates the tributaries of the Tobot from those of the

Ural, and falls by a range of steep crags—probably an old

1 See P. S. Nazaroff, in “Recherches Zoologiques dans les Steppes des Kirghizes,” in Bull, Soc. des Natur. de Moscow, 1886, No. 4.

shore-line of the Aral basin—towards the steppes. The steppe-land of Turgai is only some 300 feet above the sea-level, and is dotted with lakes, of which the Tchotgar- denghiz, which receives the Turgai and its tributary the Irghiz, is the largest. The Turgai was, at a recent epoch, a large river flowing into the Sea of Aral and receiving an extensive system of tributaries, which are now lost in the sands before joining it. Remains of aquatic plants buried in the soil of the steppe, and shells of A/ytclus and Cardium, both still found in the Sea of Aral, show that during the Glacial period this region was covered by the waters of the Aral-Caspian Sea.

The climate of Turgai is exceedingly dry and continental. Orsk, a town of Orenburg, on its north-western border, has a January as cold as that of the west coast of Nova Zembla (— 4° Fahr.), while in July it is as hot as July in Morocco (78°); the corresponding figures for Irghiz, in the centre of the province, are 7° and 77°. At Irghiz and Orsk the annual rainfall is somewhat undcr 10 and 12 inches respectively (3 inches in summer). Thc west winds are desiccated before they reach the Turgai steppes, and the north- east winds, which in winter bring cold, dry snows from Siberia, raise in suinmer formidable clouds of sand. A climate so dry is of course incompatible with a vigorous forest growth. There is some timber on the southern Urals, the Mugojar Hills, and the water- parting of the Tobot; elsewhere trees are rare, —only shrubs, such as the wild cherry (Cerasus Chamecerasus) and the dwarf almond (Amygdalus nana) growing on the hilly slopes, while the rich black- earth soil of the steppe is chiefly covered with feather grass (Stipa pennata), the well-known ornament of the south Russian steppes. In spring the grass vegetation is luxuriant, and geese and cranes are attracted in vast numbers by the fields of the Kirghiz from the depth of the steppe. The

jerboa (Dipus jaculus) and the mar- mot (Spermophilus rufescens) are characteristic of the fauna of the region ; another species of marmot (Arctomys bobac) and the Canis corsac are common ; and the saiga antelope of Central Asia is occa- sionally met with. Further south the black earth disappears and with it the feather grass, its place being taken by its congener, Stipa capillata. Trees disappear, and among the bushes along the banks of the rivers willows and the pseudo-acacia or Siberian pea tree (Caragana microphyla) are most prevalent. In the imiddle parts of the province the clayey soil is completely clothed with worm- wood (Artemisia fragrans and A. monogyna), with a few grassy plants on the banks of the rivers and lakes (Lasiagrostis splendens, Alhagi camelorum and A. kirghizorum, Obione portulacoides, Hali- modendrum argentewm); while large areas consist of shifting sands, salt clays clothed with a rich carpet of various Salsolacex, and dried beds of old Jakes. Such lakes as still exist, notwithstanding the rapid desiccation now going on, are surrounded by rush thickets, —the retreat of wild boars. Turgai is thus the borderland between the flora of Europe and that of Central Asia.

In 1882 the population of Turgai was estimated at 323,110, all nomad Kirghiz, with the exception of some 3600, who are settled in four villages officially described as towns. Agriculture is in its earliest stage of development ; but some 100,000 quarters of corn are raised in the south-west by the Kirghiz, who sell some of it in Orenburg. Cattle-breeding is the chief occupation, and within the province there are some 800,000 horses, 335,000 cattle, about 200,000 camels, and more than two million sheep. But the want of fodder in spring occasions violent murrains, which sometimes result in actual famine among the Kirghiz. Endeavours have recently been made to induce the people to make communal stores of hay, but the 300,000 cwts. yearly collected in this way are in- sufficient. The Kirghiz of the southern parts go in winter to the better sheltered parts of Syr-Daria, while in the summer some 30,000 kibitkas (felt tents) of nomads come from the neighbouring provinces to graze their cattle on the grassy steppes of Turgai. Some 80,000 cwts. of salt are annually got from the lakes. The four settlements of the province are Turgai, chief town and seat of the provincial administration, with less than 400 inhabitants, and the ‘‘district towns’’ of Irghiz (920), Ak-tube (400), and Kara- butak (300), the last two being more or less fortified. Several merchants in these carry on trade with the Kirghiz,

exchanging manufactured goods for wool and skins, which are sent to the fronticr settlements of Orcnburg. ‘Therc is a brisk caravan traffic through Turgai.

TURGOT. Anne Ropert Jacques Turcot, Marquis DE L’AULNE (1727-1781), French statesman and economist, was born at Paris, 10th May 1727. He was the third son of Michel Etienne Turgot and of Madeleine Francoise Martineau. His family, which was ancient and noble, is said to have been originally Scottish, but had long been settled in Normandy. His ancestors early abandoned the

sword for the robe. Both his father and grandfather had been in the civil service of the state: his father was ‘“‘prévot des marchands” at Paris, and won a high reputa- tion as a magistrate and administrator. Turgot in his childhood was timid, and showed in company an absent and embarrassed air, from which he never afterwards entirely freed himself, and which in later life was some- times unjustly attributed to hauteur. His mother, through excessive or injudicious efforts to correct these faults, ap- pears to have aggravated them. He obtained his early education at the Collége Louis-le-Grand, and was after- wards a student of the Collége du Plessis. He then entered the seminary of St Sulpice, and thence passed to the Sor- bonne with the view of taking his licence in theology. But he decided finally in 1751 not to follow the ecclesi- astical profession. His opinions were inconsistent with that calling, and he said “he could not consent to wear a mask all his life.” He showed at this time an enthusiastic love of literature and powers of memory which are de- scribed as ‘‘ prodigious,” as well as a penetrating intellect and a sound judgment. We have the testimony of the Abbé Morellet, who was then his intimate acquaintance and constant companion, to the singular purity, the simplicity, modesty, and frank gaiety which characterized him.

As prior of the Sorbonne (an honorary office conferred annually on some distinguished student) he wrote and delivered publicly in 1750 two remarkable pieces,—one On the Benefits which the Christian Religion has conferred on Mankind, the other On the Historical Progress of the Human Mind. Having chosen the law as his profession, he was appointed in 1752

“conseiller substitut du pro- cureur général,” and afterwards “‘conseiller au parlement.” The controversy arising from the refusal of the sacraments to the Jansenists by the archbishop of Paris being then agitated between the parlement and the clergy, Turgot wrote (1753) Letters to a Vicar-General on Toleration and a pamphlet entitled Le Conciliateur, in favour of religious liberty and against the interference of the temporal power in theological disputes. In 1753 he became ‘maitre des requétes.” He discharged his professional duties with scrupulous purity and conscientious industry. He con- tinued at the same time his studies in ancient and modern literature (including English and German), mathematics, astronomy, chemistry, and natural history, and frequented the salons of Madame de Graffigny (authoress of Les Lettres Pérumennes), Madame Geoffrin, and Madame du Deffand. Whilst he enjoyed the acquaintance and society of D’Alem- bert, Baron d’Holbach, Raynal, Marmontel, Morellet, Galiani, Helvétius, and other notabilities of the time, he maintained his intellectual independence and refused to connect himself with any party or political group. About this time he also entered into relations with Quesnay and Gournay—the principal members of the physiocrats. He was attracted to them by the similarity of their sentiments on social questions and their opinions on economic policy to those which he himself entertained. Turgot accompanied Gournay in 1755 and 1756 in his official tours of inspec- tion as intendant of commerce, and on Gournay’s death in 1759 he wrote his Hloge. He then made a short visit to eastern France and a part of Switzerland. When he arrived at Geneva he went to see Voltaire at Les Délices, and formed with him what proved to be a lasting friendship. He contributed about this period several articles to the Encyclopédie. In 1761 the controller-general Bertin ap- pointed him intendant of the généralité of Limoges. In that district thé mass of the people were sunk in poverty and barbarism ; the corvées for the construction of roads and the transport of military equipages were oppressive ; the country was depopulated by the requisitions for the militia ; the taxation was excessive and unfairly distri-

buted ; the state of the roads was wretched; and the general condition of agriculture was deplorable. Turgot’s administration of the district lasted for thirteen years, and was marked by a steady pursuit of the public good, and a

firm resistance to inertia, prejudice, and corruption. In particular he strongly maintained the cause of the in- dustrious poor, and insisted on a more equitable assess- ment of the public charges which pressed unduly upon them. With nobly disinterested spirit he refused to be transferred to other généralités in which the salary was higher and the administration easier. Rising above the common prejudices of the philosophes, he sought the co-operation of the clergy, both to inform him of everything relating to the circumstances of the people which it was desirable for him to know, and to explain to their flocks the nature and objects of the measures he proposed to put in operation ; and he acknowledges that he found in them earnest and active auxiliaries. But he was not seconded as he ought to have been by the central Government, and had often to remonstrate with the Abbé Terray, minister of finance. During the scarcity of 1770 and 1771, which was particularly severe in Limousin, he devoted himself with untiring assiduity to the relief of the distressed, and, when he had exhausted such public funds as were avail- able, incurred for the same object a personal debt of more than 20,000 livres. Shortly after the accession of Louis XVI. Turgot was appointed by Maurepas (19th July 1774) minister of marine, and in that capacity began at once to initiate important reforms and to conceive far-reaching projects. But he filled the post only for five weeks, being then (21st August) promoted to the ministry of finance. In his new office he addressed to the young king a declara- tion of the principles by which he intended to be guided : “No bankruptcy, no increase of taxation, and no borrow- ing.” Economy and wise management were to be his only resources, Fearing the opposition he must encounter, he appealed to Louis to support him. By a decree of the 13th September 1774, he re-established free trade in grain within the kingdom, which had been suspended by Terray, and authorized the importation of supplies from abroad ; the traffic in other alimentary substances was also relieved of many impediments, and various monopolies and exclu- sive privileges were abolished; the octvoi taxation was reformed, public works promoted, and improvements in agriculture encouraged. Some of these measures were made the pretext for disturbances, known as la guerre des farines, which Turgot always suspected the Prince de Conti of having fomented. The riots had to be suppressed by armed force, and the energetic action of the minister against them was made a ground of attack by his enemies. The parlement had been weakly recalled by Louis from the exile to which in the preceding reign

Maupeou had condemned it. It now constituted itself the organ of the resistance of menaced interests to the measures of Turgot, who would gladly have abolished it, providing in its place better political securities and courts of justice on a new plan. In January 1776 he presented to the king a memoir proposing, amongst other things, the abolition of the corvée, to be replaced by a territorial tax, from which the privileged classes were not to be exempt, and the suppression of the jurandes (exclusive trade corporations). The edicts for these purposes were submitted to Miromesnil, keeper of the seals, a secret enemy of Turgot, who, spurred on by Maurepas, wrote a memoir against them, and opposed them in the king's council. The courtiers, the nobility, the clergy, and the leading members of the industrial corpora- tions now combined against the minister, and were joined by a large part of the common people, who did not under- stand his policy. The Count de Provence, afterwards Louis XVIIL., wrote a pamphlet, entitled Zhe Dream of M. de

TU TeG OT

aurepas, against Turgot. The parlement refused to register the decrees; but the king held a lit de justice, which Voltaire proposed to call a lit de bienfaisance, and compelled the registration, This forced submission only aggravated the rancour of Turgot's enemies, and the king had not the firmness to sustain his minister against the coalition. A vile conspiracy having poisoned Louis's mind against him, he addressed to the king an eloquent letter in which he pointed out the grave perils impending over the throne and the state, and warned Louis that princes who are tempted to give themselves up to the direction of courtiers should remember the fate of Charles I. The minister received his dismissal on the 12th of May 1776. He had been in office only twenty months, of which he had lost six in repressing sedition, and for seven more had been con- fined to his bed by the gout; but he had done during his tenure an extraordinary amount of work. Voltaire, how- ever, nobly avenged Turgot on his enemies in his Epttre aun Homme, The fallen minister devoted his remaining years to his favourite studies, especially to physical science and the ancient poets ; he enjoyed the society of Lavoisier, D'Alembert, Condorcet, Bossut, Rochon, and Rouelle, and attended the meetings of the Academy of Inscriptions, of which he was elected vice-director in 1777. He also cor- responded with

Price and Franklin, and, if we may believe Condorcet, with Adam Smith, whose acquaintance he had made at Paris in 1766.1! Turgot died at Paris on 18th March 1781.

Turgot's official career is for ever memorable in the history of social politics. Never did a public man give himself to the service of the community with more earnest and unselfish devotion. He made it his object to convince before commanding, in order that his aims might be better understood and his directions more surely obeyed ; wd, in issuing any instruction, making any decision, or advising any legislative act, he stated fully, by way of preamble, the grounds on which he proceeded. In the documents which he prepared on these occasions we have a body of valuable materials on administrative and economic questions ; some of them contain the substance of chapters in the Wealth of Nations. When he became minister, the finances were in what seemed a desperate condition, and the general state of affairs justified the prediction of Louis XV.—''aprés moi le déluge." Turgot framed a vast plan of reform, at once administrative and economic, as the only hope for the salvation of the state. He speaks of his system of measures as intended for '' the regulation of the kingdom," thus showing that he contemplated nothing less than a pacific revolution. But the first condition of success in such an effort was wanting, namely, the entire confidence and unfaltering support of the king, and the energetic exercise of the royal power in carrying out a policy of thorough reform against all adverse influences.* Turgot's struggle, though it failed from causes independent of himself, cannot be re- garded without profound synipathy and admiration. Nor was it without a large measure of inimediate success. Whilst he scrupu- lously observed all the pecuniary obligations of the state, he greatly diminished the crushing deficit which he found on his accession to office, and re-established the public credit in such a degree that the Dutch bankers offered him a loan of sixty millions of livres at less than 5 per cent. His financial and other plans, of course, fell with him, and his most important measures were annulled; but his policy and his writings exercised a lasting influence, and many of his projects were realized by the Revolution. Turgot is alto- gether one of the most massive and imposing figures of the 18th century. His whole character and public action are marked by an air of austere grandeur. Single-mindedness and veracity were of the very essence of his nature. Absolutely unbiased by selfish ends, he

lived only for France, for truth, and for his duty. Be- lieving intensely in a definite system of social and economic princi- ples, which he had early formed by independent study and reflexion, he was prepared to carry them out with dauntless determination,

1 Dugald Stewart, however, eannot find any evidenee of a ecorre- spondenee between Turgot and Smith. It has also been said that during this period Turgot corresponded with Hume. But little more than three months intervened between his dismissal and the death of Hume (25th August 1776) and there appears to be no trace of letters having passed between them in this interval. They had corresponded, but at a much earlier date; see Burton's Life of Hume, ii. 352, 381.

2 Some have thought that the cardinal error in Turgot's policy lay in his not having convoked the states-general ; that would, however, have been simply to open the flood-gates.

and with a lofty contempt for the interested or prejudiced opposi- tion they were sure to encounter. He has been accused of a doc- trinaire rigidity, and it is possible that, as a practical man, he wanted flexibility ; yet he was often willing, not indeed to disguise his convictions, but to postpone the realization of his plans. In his public acts he always showed a lively concern for the poor and the suffering ; in private life he was humane and benevolent; in his relations with his friends, amiable and affectionate. Malesherbes, the only other minister of his time who was worthy to be his col- league, said of him that ''he had the head of Bacon and the heart of L'H6pital," and, on the moral side at least, this was no exagger- ated estimate.

Possessed of a many-sided culture, Turgot wrote on a great variety of subjects—philosophic, scientific, and literary—though political economy is the branch of knowledge with which his name must always be most closely associated. Already in 1749, whilst a student at St Sulpice, he addressed to his friend, Abbé de Cicé, afterwards bishop of Auxerre, a Letter on Paper Money, in which he asserted, in opposition to the views of Law and his followers, doctrines similar to those now accepted by all competent

authorities. In one of his discourses at the Sorbonne in 1750, moving into the higher regions of the philosophy of society, he makes a remarkable attempt to work out the pregnant conception, already enunciated by Pascal, of the continuity of the intellectual movement of our race, thus preparing the way for Condorcet's Esquisse, and ulti- mately for the sociology of Comte. In 1753 he translated under the title of Questions Importantes sur le Commeree, a tract of Dr Josiah Tucker on the expediency of naturalizing foreigners. He contributed to the Eneyelopédie the articles Etymologie, Existence, Expansivbilité, Fondations, and Foires et Marehés. The first of these contains much that is just as well as interesting, though in the time of Turgot the subject could not yet be treated on genuinely scientific bases. In the second he undertakes a refutation of the Berkeleian theory. The third contains some ingenious suggestions in practical physics. The article on foundations maintains the right of the Government to dispose of them for the public good, suppressing them if hurtful, and directing the funds to more useful objects; the policy advocated in it was afterwards carried into effect by the constituent assembly. In the paper on fairs and markets he argues that these are institutions adapted only for an immature state of commercial relations, and that more good would be done by liberating trade from the legislative fetters which every- where impeded it than by bestowing special privileges or other encouragements on particular localities as centres of exchange. Iu the Eloge of Gournay he combines with his tribute to the memory of his friend a vindication of the principle of industrial freedom, which that friend had condensed in the oft-repeated maxim, "Vaissez faire, laissez passer." To the period of Turgot's intend- ance belong his unfinished Valeurs et Monnaies, intended to form an article in the Dietionnaire de Commeree of Morellet ; his Letters (to the Abbé Terray) on the Freedom of the Oorn-Trade ; his memoir Sur les Préts @ Argent, in which he insists on the necessity of leaving free the interest on loans; and that on the principles which should direct legislation respecting mines and quarries, as well as the work on which his reputation as a systematic economist mainly rests, namely, his Réflexions sur la Formation et la Distribution des Riehesses, This treatise was written for two Chinese youths who had been sent over by the Jesuit missionaries to study in France. The work was first published in 1766 in the Ephémérides du Citoyen, edited by Dupont de Nemours, and speedily passed through four editions. It gives in brief compass a luminous statement of some of the most

important principles relating to the economic con- stitution of societies—the division of labour, the origin and use of money, the nature of capital and the different modes of its employ- ment, the necessary rise of capitalist chiefs of industry, the legiti- macy of interest on loans, and the impossibility of arbitrarily fixing the rate of that interest. It unfortunately contains, along with many truths, the erroneous doctrines of the physiocrats on the exclusive productiveness of agriculture and on the consequent pro- priety of imposing taxes only on the land of a country. This book was erroneously represented by Condorcet as ‘‘the germ of the Wealth of Nations,” and has been spoken of by others as “anticipating some of the leading principles” of Smith. The truth is, most of what it contains had either been fully set forth by the earlier economists or was familiar to Quesnay and his group. It is, in fact, not a work of research but of exposition, and, regarded in this light, has real originality and may justly be pronounced a masterpiece.

Fuller information on the life, administrative labours, and writings of Turgot will be found in the following works :—Dupont de Nemours, Notes et Mémoires sur la Vie, ? Administration, et les Ouvrages de Turgot, 1782, and enlarged in his edition of Turgot’s works mentioned below; Condorcet,,Vie de Turgot, 1786; A. Batbie, Turgot, Philosophe, Economiste, Administrateur, 1861; J. Tissot, Turgot, sa Vie, son Administration, ses Ouvrages (a mémoire couronné), 1862; A. Neymarck, Turgot et ses Doctrines, 1885. The last-named contains the most complete treat- ment of the subject. See also an Floge by Dupuy (1781) in the Mémoires de Académie des Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres, vol. xlv.; L. de Lavergne, Les Economistes Francais au Dix-Huitiome Sidcle, 1870, and Mr. John Morley’s article in his Critical Miscellanies, 2d scries, 1877. A collected edition of Turgot’s

writings was published for the first time by Dupont in 9 vols. (Paris 1808-11); the most complete and in every respect best edition is that contained in the Collection des Principaux Economistes of Coquelin and Guillaumin, 2 vols., 1844, with a biographical notice by pegens Daire. An English translation of The Formation and Distribution of Wealth was published in London in 1793, and was reprinted in 1859 in Lord Overstone’s Select

Collection of Scarce and Valuable Economical Tracts, edited by J. R. M‘Culloch. @. K. 1.)

TURIN, a city of northern Italy, formerly the capital of Piedmont and the Sardinian states and now the chief town of a province in the compartimento of Piedmont, 1s situated in 45° 4′ 8” N. lat. and 7° 48’ 22” E. long. in the alluvial valley of the Po, just above the confluence of the Dora Riparia. By rail it is 54 miles from the Mount Cenis tunnel. The communal ‘palace stands 788 feet above the sea, The Monte dei Cappuccini in the neighbourhood reaches 922 and La Superga 2405 feet. As viewed from the east the city stands out boldly against the Alps. Taken as a whole Turin may be described as a very modern city, with broad and regular streets, and large squares and public gardens. ‘The cathedral of St John the Baptist is a cruci- form Renaissance building dating from the close of the 15th century. The site was first occupied by a church erected, it is said, by the Lombard duke Agilulf (7th century). Be- hind the high altar of the cathedral (from which it is separated by a glass screen) is the chapel of the Sudario or Sidone, built (1657-1694) by Guarini as a royal burial- place. The “sudario” from which it takes its name is asserted to be ‘the shroud in which Joseph of Arimathea wrapped the body of Jesus. La Beata Vergine della Con- solata, another of Guarini’s works, has a tower which originally belonged to the church of St Andrew, founded by the monk Bruning in 1014, and attracts attention by Vin-

a… – opon\ |

Ooonee&

EGINA MARGHERITA

7 |

} ic

ine

oe

“wl C800

5 Ravan,

a)

io Me

O00 oo00

ha

<3

a

>

aia Tro EEGs: VINZAGLIO®

j= ee

ene MANU ELE U1 pA To ry

ws C4 [4

jE A NGL moon TE

1. Madama palace. 5. Carignano palace. 2. Royal palace. 6. Di Citta palace.

3. Cathedral. 7. Academy of science. 4. University.

8. Academy of art. 9. Museum. 10. Arsenal,

cenzo Vela's beautiful kneeling statues of Queen Maria Teresa and Queen Maria Adelaide, as well as by the image of the Madonna, which has the credit of having warded off the cholera in 1835. Other churches of some note are San Felippo Neri (1672-1772), the dome of which fell in just as it was approaching completion under the hands of Guarini, and La Gran Madre de Dio, erected to commemor- ate the return of the royal family in 1814. Of the secular buildings the more interesting are the Madama palace, first erected by William of Montferrat in the close of the 13th century, and the extensive royal palace begun in the 17th century. The university, founded in 1400 by Lodovico di Acaja, has faculties of jurisprudence, medicine and surgery, literature and philosophy, and the mathematical, physical,

TU R—TUR

and natural sciences. The number of students enrolled was 2132 in 1886. About 1876 the old university build- ings erected in 1713 by the Genoese architect Ricca began to prove too small for their purpose; and at the present time (1887) new buildings, fitted more especially for the medical and scientific departments, are being erected. The area of the botanical gardens has also been extended and the observatory enlarged. The medical school derives advantage from the number of important hospitals in the city. The royal lunatic asylum can accommodate 980 patients. Turin has a prison on the cell system (672 cells) and a female penitentiary for 300, besides two houses of correction. The academy of sciences was founded in 1757. It

occupies a building erected in 1687 by Guarini as a Jesuit college. The museum of antiquities and the picture gallery, of which it has the custody, are both of high in- terest—the former for the local antiquities of Piedmont and Sardinia (notably from Industria) and for the Egyp- tian treasures collected by Donati and Drovetti, and the latter for its Van Dycks. There is a museum of zoology and mineralogy in the royal palace (another of Guarini's buildings), and the Castello palace contains the royal armoury (a collection made by Charles Albert in 1833) and the royal library with its rich manuscript collection and its 20,000 drawings, among which are sketches by Raphael, Michelangelo, and Da Vinci. The civic museum has a great variety of artistic and literary curiosities, among them a remarkable collection of autographs and the Lom- bard missal (1490). The Jewish synagogue, a striking and conspicuous building, erected in 1863 by Alessandro Anto- nelli, was purchased by the municipality in 1879 for a Renaissance museum. Other public institutions are the Albertine academy of the fine arts, the geographical society, and the Alpine club,

The industries of Turin and its suburbs give employment to 17,936 persons (13,305 men, 4631 women). Spinning-mills, weav- ing-factories, ‘‘ vesta” factories (De Medici), breweries, and iron- works are among the more extensive establishments. The com- mercial relations of the city are very extensive. It is the seat of the central offices of the North Italian Railway ; and the central station is one of the most imposing buildings of its class in the country. The mean annual temperature at Turin (1866-84) is 53° Fahr, (Jan. 36°, July 74°), with a maximum of 96° and a minimum of 4°“1. Mists are frequent in the winter mornings, and to a less degree in autumn. Snow seldom falls in any great quantity, and on an average only on 7 days per annum. The rainfall, distributed over 100 days, reaches 32 inches—December being 1°6 and April 4°3. Water of good quality is brought to the city from a distance of 15 miles. The population of Turin was only about 4200 in 1377 and 9000 in 1580; but by 1702 it was returned as 48,866. In 1848 it had risen to 136,849, and in 1861 to 204,715. In spite of the changes caused by the removal of the capital, first to Florence and then to Rome, the census of 1881 showed 283,124 inhabitants (commune 252, 832).

Turin, Augusta Taurinorum, took its name from the Taurini or Taurisci, an ancient Ligurian people. The town is first alluded to (but not distinctly by

name) in the year 218 B.c., when it was cap- tured by Hannibal after a three days' siege, being at that time a

lace of great strength. A colony of Roman veterans was intro- 'tba into the city, possibly after the battle of Philippi, or at any rate after the battle of Actium. It was assigned to the Stcllatine tribe. Of Roman architecture scarcely any trace remains even in the oldest parts of Turin, but the arrangement of the streets of the old town recalls the alignments of the Roman military settlement. The Palazzo delle due Torri, often designated the Porta Palatina, is probably part of a building of the 8th century. Turin continued

'to be a place of importance and military strength under numcrous

vicissitudes, till at length it was made the chief town of Piedmont by Amadeus, first duke of Savoy. Under Emmanuel Philibert it became the usual residence of the ducal family, and in 1515 the bishopric was raised to metropolitan rank by Leo X. Between 1536 aud 1562 Turin was occupied by the French, and in 1630 it lost 8000 of its citizens by the plague. The French were masters once more from 1640 to 1706, and again from 1798 till 1814, when the Sardinian states were restored to the house of Savoy. Between 1859 and 1865 Turin was the capital of united Italy. Among the many men of mark born in Turin it is cnough to mention Lagrange, Gioberti, Cesare Balbo, Cavour, Marochetti the sculptor, D' Azeglio, and Sommellier.

Meaning of term Central Asia.

631

TURKRESTAN

HE terms "Turkestan" and "Central Asia" are often used indiscriminately to describe the whole of the immense territory to the east of the Caspian, comprised between Siberia on the north and Khorasan (Persia), Afghanistan, and Tibet on the south, or to designate separate, sometimes arbitrarily determined, parts of the same region. In the beginning of the 19th century the whole of the territory just named, with its great variety of

altitudes, climate, inhabitants—these last differing as much in their history as in their present characteristics— was comprised under the vague denomination of High Tartary, or High or Interior Asia. After the appearance of Humboldt's first draft of Asie Centrale in 1831, the term "Central Asia" came into favour. But Humboldt's limits of Central Asia were too mathematical (from 39}° to 494° N. lat.), and were further unsatisfactory because influenced by his erroneous conception of the mountains of Central Asia, which he' supposed to run either along parallels or along meridians. Richthofen made an attempt to limit the sense of the term, proposing to apply it only to that region—embracing the Tarim drainage area and the Gobi —which has no outlet either towards the ocean or to the Sea of Aral and Lake Balkash (Balkhash), and which constitutes the Hang-hai of the Chinese and the supposed bed of the Tertiary Asiatic Mediterranean. But this ter- minology, besides the drawback of including within Central Asia the steppes of the Gobi as far east as Transbaikalia

and the Great Khingan, notwithstanding the broad differ-

ences by which they are distinguished from the drainage area of the Tarim, was open to another objection, which has been pointed out in M. Mushketoff's Z'urkestan. It excluded from Central Asia Turkestan proper, which never- theless has had the same recent geological history as the Tarim region, and therefore has so many features in com- mon with it as regards soil, climate, flora, fauna, popula- tion, and even civil history. On the other hand, if Central or Interior Asia were to include West Turkestan, and its limits to be determined by those of the drainage-areas which have no outlet to the ocean, the basins of the Volga and Ural,—that is, territories purely European in charac- ter,—would have to be comprised under the same denomi- nation. The fact is that in Asia, as so often elsewhere, hydrographical considerations alone furnish no sound basis for geographical delimitations,. and that these last must result from a complicated variety of considerations, chiefly orographical, inasmuch as orographical are indicative of other physical characters, such as geology, climate, flora, fauna, and soon. Such were the views of Ritter and Hum- boldt, and we are now brought back to their conceptions, but corrected into accordance with improved knowledge of the Asiatic continent. The name Central Asia can still be used with great advantage to designate that

immense por- tion of the continent to the east of the Caspian and the Ust-Urt plateau which is limited on the north by the im- portant climatic and geo-botanic boundary of the Irtish and Aral water-parting and the Great or Ektagh Altai, on the east by the eastern Gobi, and on the south by the northern border of the Khor plateau (Attyn-Tagh and Kuen-Lun), the Hindu-Kush, and the Kopet-Dagh. Ex- tensive as it is, this territory has its own climatic and geo- botanic features ; it forms a distinct part of the continent, when the orography of Asia is broadly viewed; and its inhabitants have a number of common characteristics re- sulting directly from the physical features of the territory. But this immense area must be subdivided ; and its sub- divisions become apparent as soon as the orographical features are grasped.

Two great plateaus constitute the two backbones, as it were, of the orographical structure of Asia,—that of east- ern Asia, an immense triangle stretching north-eastwards, having the Himalayas for its base and the peninsula of the Tchuktchis for its apex; and that of western Asia, which extends at right angles to the above, from the lower Indus to the Black Sea. The Hindu-Kush connects these two massive swellings, both continents of the oldest forma- tion in Asia. Both are fringed on their northern edges by lofty chains of mountains. The Tian-Shan, the Altai, the Sayan, and the Vitim Mountains rise in a long succes- sion on the borders of the former, while a series of chains, which might be described under the general name of Kopet-Dagh, continued into the Transcaucasian chains, rise on the north-eastern edge of the western plateau.

An inimmense trapezoidal depression occupies the angle on the west where the great plateaus meet, and this de- pression is West Turkestan. Its south-eastern limits are the Hindu-Kush and the Tian-Shan ; on its south-western edge it has the Iranian plateau; and its north-west and north-east boundaries correspond with the edge of the Ust- Urt and the Irtish and Aral water-parting, which separates it from Siberia. The trapezium is 1100 miles long from south-west to north-east, and 900 miles wide from south- east to north-west. It thus includes, not only the depres- sion at the junction of the two plateaus, but also the girdle of alpine tracts which fringes them, and in whose deep and sheltered valleys the Turkish and partly Iranian popu- lation of Turkestan find a fertile soil and plenty of water for their fields,

while their herds graze on the rich alpine meadows in the very heart of the Tian-Shan. Not oro- graphically only but also in respect of its recent geological past, its climate, flora, fauna, and inhabitants, this region forms a geographical domain by itself, quite distinct from the steppes of south-eastern Russia, the prairies of Siberia, and the two great plateaus by which it is inclosed ; and, although it is easily subdivided into two parts—the dry lowlands of the Transcaspian depression and the plains and highlands of Turkestan proper—it presents one geo- graphical whole when contrasted with the surrounding regions. Some doubt may arise as to the propriety of including in it the plateau of Pamir; but its flora and fauna are so closely connected with those of the Tian-Shan that, although better treated as a separate sub-region, like the Transcaspian Turcoman steppes, it cannot be separated from the above. For the orographer, the “Roof of the World” is merely a succession of the wide syrts or alpine plateaus that are characteristic of the Tian-Shan. Most of this territory has within recent years been annexed to the Russian empire. Bokhara, with its vassal khanates in the gorges of the Pamir slopes, and Khiva, although they are still described as independent, are in reality rapidly becoming dependencies of Russia, and the railway from the Caspian, which is about to connect Merv with Samar- kand, will complete the annexation of Bokhara. West Turkestan, therefore, is often called Russian Turkestan, as distinguished from Chinese or East Turkestan.

Great Asiatic

plateaus.

West Turk- estan.

This second great region of Central Asia also has well- East

defined limits. there is in the great eastern plateau a depression bordered by the deep slopes of the Pamir (Humboldt’s Bolor) on the W., the border-ridges of Tibet (Kuen-Lun and Attyn- Tagh) on the §., the eastern Tian-Shan on the N., and the western Gobi on the E.!_ Although we call it a depression,

ni AEE eee ee eee

1 Tn the map (issued October 1887) embodying the results of Prje- valsky's fourth journey, East Turkestan is plainly demarcated from the Gobi. This last falls by a steep slope towards the Tarim depression,

A glance at any recent map shows that Turk-] estan.

632

because it is much lower than the surrounding plateaus, it is itself a plateau, ranging from 3000 to 4000 feet above sea-level, This depression-—the Hang-hai of the Chinese, which, during the later Tertiary and earlier Quaternary period, was covered by a sea, of which a very small sur- vival still exists in Lob-Nor—is now drained by the Tarim. Its deserts, in which human settlements are now very rare, though formerly the population was much denser, have been described under a variety of names (Little Bokhara, Alty-shar or Jity-shar, Kashgaria, and so on); but the name of East Turkestan has prevailed, and there is no reason for abandoning it, provided it is not confounded with Dzun- GaRIA (q.v.) in the north and the great Desert of Gobi in the east. Dzungaria is a deep trench leading from the lowlands to the central plateau, and has special physical

60 fi) 100 160 200

te

its vassal khanates, and parts of Afghan Turkestan. (B) East Turkestan, comprising the Tarim region as far east as Lob-Nor. (C) Dzungaria, limited on the north-east by the Tarbagatai, Altai-Nauru, Irdyn-ula, and Artsa-bogdo Mountains.

West TURKESTAN.

As comprised within the above limits, West Turkestan has an area of nearly 1,680,000 square miles, and a population of nearly 8,500,000.? It presents a very great variety of aspects, including the lonely plateau of Pamir,

which narrows to the east of Lob-Nor and terminates about Aii-si, some 4800 feet above sea-level.

- See also the following maps :—Htmanaya, vol. xi. Pl, XVI. ; SIBERIA, vol. xxii. Pl. I.; and Trser, Pl. IV. above.

2 Separate portions of it are described under AFGHANISTAN, BoK-HARA, Kuiva, Oxus, Syr-Daria, SEMIPALATINSK, SEMIRYETCHENSK, TRANSCASPIAN REGION, ZERAFSHAN.

TUREKESTAN

Map of East and West Turkestan?

[WEST.

features and a history of its own. The Mongolian Gobi, on the other hand, owing to its position on the lower terrace of the plateau of eastern Asia, must be regarded as a separate unity. In fact, it appears to be more closely connected with the plateau of the Selenga on the north and that of Ordos on the south than with East Turkestan; and it, too, has its own physical features, its own inhabit- ants, and its own history.

The expression Central Asia thus includes the following countries. (A) West Turkestan, comprising the Tian-Shan highlands, the Balkash plains, and the Aral-Caspian low- lands, politically divided into Russian Turkestan (the general-governorship of Turkestan and the Aral-Caspian slope of Turgai and Akmolinsk), the Chinese oasis of Kulja (Kuldja), the Transcaspian region, Khiva, Bokhara and

Zz 7\6 . C) a

f

in height second only to that of Tibet; the immense com- plex of alpine tracts described under the general name of Tian-Shan (three times as long as the Alps of Europe), which lift their snow-clad peaks four and nearly five miles above the sea, and feed huge glaciers, while their deep valleys and gorges partake of almost every variety of climate and vegetation ; rich prairies and still wider lowlands descend- ing below the level of the ocean;

and deserts where the winds, burning hot or icy, but always dry, have free scope to modify the surface, which is bare of vegetation.

Nevertheless West Turkestan is sharply divided into two Highland parts,—the highlands in the south-east and the plains and region.

deserts in the north-west. The former cover an area nearly 1000 miles long by 270 broad, of which the northern parts are described under the general name of Tian-Shan (pro- perly, T'han-Shaii). Their distinctive feature is that, like the highlands of Siberia, they constitute a high border-

Pamir plateau.

WEST. |

ridge, running W.S.W. to E.N.E. on the edge of the great plateau of eastern Asia. This plateau is fringed on its outer side by a complex of shorter ranges, which mostly run parallel to the border-ridges and send off a series of isolated chains, due to a later system of upheaval, through the plains and steppes in a north-western direction. Down to the middle of the 19th century these highlands were almost absolutely unknown, and the orography of Central Asia as shown on our maps was quite hypothetical. Numer- ous surveys by Russian and British explorers have, how- ever, recently disclosed the real structure of those regions ; and it has now become possible to discriminate the leading features of the orographical conformation of the country. The Hindu-Kush, with its snow-clad summits of 18,000 and 20,000 feet, limits the highlands of Turkestan to the south-east. It appears now to be settled that this ridge runs from north-east to south-west, as far at least as the latitude of Cabul, and possibly still farther south; and the last Russian surveys of the Pamir show that it extends north-east as far as Tash-Kurgan (37° 45' N. lat., 75° E. long.). At the foot of its north-western slope it has the plateau of Pamir—the 'Roof of the World,"—with an area of about 37,000 square miles. A series of chains, gently sloping and dome-shaped, rising 4000 or 5000 feet above the level of the plateau, traverse it from south-west to north-east, with a remarkable parallelism, dividing it into a series of broad parallel flat-bottomed grooves or valleys,

Lake Balkash and the Sea of Aral. Thus the border-ridge

of the Central Asian plateau would have a length of more

than 1000 miles from the Amu to Kulja, and the valleys of the upper Naryn and Tekkes would therefore be homologous with that of the Atai.

A girdle of alpine tracts, from 150 to 180 miles in Alpine width, which fringes the outer edge of the Pamir plateau, tracts.

consists of shorter chains running parallel to the border ridge and ranging from 11,000 to 17,000 and 20,000 feet in altitude. They are separated by deep valleys, mostly with three separate foldings of Azoic rocks. Some of these ranges are covered with perennial snow and feed great glaciers, among which Schurovsky and Fedtchenko glaciers around the lofty Kok-su group are especially worthy of mention. These subsidiary chains all belong to the oldest system of upheavals, which have had a north-east direction, and which at four different places are modified by more modern ones having a north-western direction. In lat. 47° N. the orographical structure becomes more complicated, the alpine region being pierced by the broad Dzungarian trench, which leads from the lowlands of the Irtish to the heights of the Central Asian plateau. A high ridge—the Tarbagatai—continued in the Tchinghiz (Jinghiz) and Karkaralinsk Mountains, branches off north-westwards, separating Turkestan from Siberia. Further east the Tian- Shan is continued on our maps in an eastern direction ; but our knowledge of it still remains very imperfect.?

which do not sink below 10,000, and sometimes 14,000, feet above sea-level. Thus the features of the lower plateaus of north-eastern Asia reappear here on a greater scale, hav- ing the same characters and the same direction in the

A series of deep depressions,—Balkh, Ferghana, Issyk- Lacus- kul, and Kulja,—sinking to low levels amidst the Tian-Shan ene f highlands follow

one another ina north-east direction. That jp. °

of Issyk-kul is occupied by the lake of the same name ghan.

plaitings of the earth’s crust.

Nearly 150 miles to the north-west of the Hindu-Kush lies the north-western border of the Pamir, fringed by the lofty Trans-Atai Mountains. Their crest, covered with snow, rises nearly 4 miles above the sea (Kaufmann Peak 23,000 feet); but the traveller approaching them from the south would hardly guess their height, because their southern slope towards the wildernesses of the plateau, themselves 13,000 feet high, is very gentle. The great elevation of the border-chain is only realized when it is seen from the Atai valley on the north, where its steep and deeply furrowed sides tower up like a dark wall, from 11,000 to 14,000 feet high, above the high and broad valley of the Kizil-su. The geological structure of the Atai valley must not be inferred from its orographical features, otherwise we should describe it as longitudinal. It is watered by the Kizil-su, which flows towards the west- south-west and joins the Amu-Daria under the name of Vaksh (or Wakhsh). On the north it has the lofty Atai- Tagh range, also partially snow-clad. On our best maps the Trans-Atai Mountains are figured as an isolated range, some 120 miles in length; and it cannot yet be affirmed with certainty which chains of the Tian-Shan, possessing the same border-ridge characters, ought to be considered as its continuations. Further research is needed to determine whether it is continued south-west by the Darvaz, or Lahor, Mountains, where the group of lofty Sel-tau peaks feed the extensive Fedtchenko glacier, or by the Hoja-Mahomet chain on the left bank of the Amu-Daria.1_ Thus the real north-western limits of the Pamir are still unsettled. As for the north-eastern continuations of the Trans-Atai, the present writer is inclined to trace them, not in the Kokshat-tau, but in the Terskei Ala-tau and the high mountains of Sary-yassy, where the Khan-Tengri lifts its snow-clad granitic cap 24,000 feet above the sea, and is surrounded by numerous vast glaciers (Semenoff’s and Mushketoff’s Muz-art), It would thus separate, broadly speaking, the drainage area of the Tarim from those of T See G. Grum-Grzimailo, in Zzvestia of Russ. Geog. Soc., vol. xxii.,1886.

(5000 feet above the sea), while the second and fourth, now desiccated, are lacustrine basins. A great number of smaller lacustrine basins, mostly filled with Tertiary con- glomerates, occur higher up in the mountains. For the orographer and the geologist they are homologous with those of the Altai and east Siberia (Bukhtarma, Us, Irkut, Bar- guzin, and others). The rivers that issued from the high alps had to pierce many parallel ridges in order to reach the plains, and they frequently expanded into wide lakes before cleaving through the chains of mountains the narrow and deep transverse gorges by which they descended to the lower terraces.

Like the highlands of Siberia, those of Turkestan are Lowland fringed by a girdle of plains, having an altitude of froni plains.

1000 to 1500 feet, and these again are skirted by an im- mense lowland area reaching only 400, 300, and 150 feet, or even sinking below the level of the ocean. These plains and lowlands cover nearly 650,000 square miles. Some geographers divide them into two portions,—the higher plains of the Balkash (the Ala-kul and Balkash drainage areas) and the Aral-Caspian depression, which occupies nearly two-thirds of the whole and has been ably described by M. Mushketoff under the appropriate name of Turanian basin,—the Kara-tau Mountains being considered as the dividing line between the two. The Balkash plains, more than 1000 feet above the sea, and covered with clay, with a girdle of loess at their foot, are well watered by the Ili and other feeders of Lake Balkash (see SEMIRYETCHENSK) and on their rich prairies are the homes of numerous Kirghiz. In the south-west the clayey soil becomes saline. There is the Famine steppe (Bek-pak-data), while in the Ak-kum steppe, which surrounds Lake Kara-kul, large areas are covered with sands, partly shifting. A gulf of clayey plains penetrates up the Ili into the in-

- The present writer is inclined to consider the “ Eastern Tian-Shan ” of our maps, which runs east-south-east to Bagratch-kul, as a separate chain belonging to the more modern system of north-western upheavals, meeting at its eastern extremity a chain which trends towards the

north-east. Sill, — 86

terior of the mountains, and its thick layers of loess form the Kulja oasis. Another gulf, penetrating much more deeply into the highlands up the trench occupied by Lakes Ebi-Nor and Ayar, and joining the trench of the upper Irtish, leads by an imperceptible gradient up to the plateau of Central Asia. It is known as the " Dzungarian Gate," and a gate it has been since the dawn of history for whole nations of nomads who have migrated from the rapidly desiccating plateau down to the grassy prairies of Siberia and Russia. The plains and lowlands of the Turanian basin are subdivided by a line drawn from north-east to south-west along a slight range of hills running from the sources of the Ishim towards the south-east corner of the Caspian (Bujnurd and Elburz edge of Khorasan). This low range, which most probably separated the lowlands of the Aral-Caspian region (submerged during the Post-Plio- cene period) from the higher plains which had emerged by the end of the Tertiary period, now divides the Transcas- pian steppes from the somewhat different higher plains (see TRaNscAsPIAN Recron). In the Turanian basin the contrast between desert and oasis is much stronger than in the Balkash region. Fertile soil, or rather soil which can be rendered fertile by irrigation, is limited to a narrow terrace of loess along the foot of the mountains (see SyR- Daria), and is surrounded by barren deserts. Even where the loess spreads over terraces at some distance from the mountains, as in the south-east Transcaspian region, it can be cultivated only when irrigated. The dryness of the climate is excessive: rain falls only where the hills cause the clouds to condense, the soil elsewhere being moistened only occasionally by a few showers. Two rivers only— the Syr and the Amu—succeed in crossing the desert and reaching the Sea of Aral. But their former tributaries no longer run their full course: the glacier-fed Zerafshan dries up amidst the gardens of Bokhara soon after emerging from the highlands ; and the Tejeii, the Murghab, and the Andkho lose themselves amidst the fields of the Turcomans. The only tributaries which the Amu retains are those which have the whole of their course in the highlands. In the north such formerly important tributaries of the Syr-Daria as the Tchu, with its subtributary the Sary-su, now dry up

some hundreds of miles distant from the main stream. The arid desert absorbs every drop of running water which reaches its borders.

The whole area is now undergoing geological changes on a vast scale. Rivers have changed their courses, and lakes their outlines. Far away from their present shores the geologist finds indubitable traces of the recent presence of the lakes in the shells they have left amidst the sands. Traces of former rivers and channels, which were the main arteries of prosperous regions within the period of written history, have now disappeared. Of the highly developed civilizations which grew up and flourished in Bactriana, Bokhara, and Samarkand the last traces are now under- going rapid obliteration with the desiccation of the rivers and lakes. The great ‘ Blue Sea ” of Central Asia, the Sea of Aral, which at a recent epoch (Post-Glacial) extended south-west to Sary-kamysh, and the shells of which are found north and east of its present shores from 50 to 200 feet above its present level (162 feet above the ocean, and 245 above the Caspian), now occupies but a small portion of its former extent. It covers a shallow depression, some 23,000 square miles in area, which is drying up with as-tonishing rapidity, so that the process of desiccation can be shown on surveys separated only by intervals of ten years ; large parts of it, like Gulf Aibughir, have dried up since the Russians took possession of its shores. Steamers regularly ply on its waters and ascend both its tributaries. The whole country is dotted with lakes, which are rapidly disappearing under the hot winds of the deserts; and the

clayey takyrs of the steppes give evidence of thousands of lakes which have quite recently ceased to exist, leaving beds of clay kept wet by the condensed moisture of winter and the few rain-showers of early spring.

Like the highlands of eastern Asia, those of Turkestan are mostly Geology,

built up of Azoic euotind aud metamorphic slates, resting upon granites, syenites, old orthoclase porphyries, and the like. These upheavals date from the remotest geological ages; and since the Primary epoch a triangular

continent having its apex turned to- wards the north-east, as Africa and America have theirs pointing southward, rose in the middle of what now constitutes Asia. It is only in the outer foldings of the highlands that Primary fossiliferous deposits are found,—Devonian, Carboniferous, and Permo-Carbonic. Within that period the principal valleys were excavated, and their lower parts have been filled wp subsequently with Jurassic, Creta- ceous, and Tertiary deposits. One of the most striking instances of this is the very thick Cretaceous and Tertiary deposits which cover the bottom of the valley of the Vaksh (right tributary of the Amu) and are continucd for about 300 miles to the north-east, as far as the Atai valley,—probably along the edge of the Pamir plateau. The deposits of the Secondary period have not maintained their hori- zontal position. While upheavals having a north-eastern strike continued to take place after the Carboniferous epoch,} another series of upheavals, having a north-western strike, and occasioned by the expansion of diabases, dolerites, melaphyres, and andesites, occurred later, subsequently at least to the close of the Tertiary period, if not also before it, dislocating former chains and raising rocks to the highest levels by the addition of new upheavals to the older ones. Throughout the Triassic and Jurassic periods nearly all Turkestan remained a continent indented by gulfs and lagoons of the south European Triassic and Jurassic sea. Immense fresh-water lakes, in which were deposited layers of plants (now yielding coal), filled up the depressions of the country. Cretaceous and Tertiary deposits occur extensively along the edge of the highlands. Upper and Middle Cretaceous, containing phosphates, gypsum, naphtha, sul- phur, and alum, attain thicknesses of 2000 and 5000 feet in Hissar. Representatives of all the Tertiary formations are met with in Turk- estan ; but, while in the highlands the strata are coast ~~deposits, they assume an open sea character in the lowlands, and their rich fossil fauna furnishes evidence of the gradual shallowing of that sea, until at last, after the Sarmathian period, it became a closed Medi~~ terranean. During the Post-Pliocene period this sea broke up into several parts, united by narrow straits. The connexion of Lake Balkash with the Sea of Aral can hardly be doubted ; but this por- tion of the great sea was the first to be divided. While the Sea of Aral remained in connexion with the Caspian, the desiccation of the Lake Balkash basin, and its break-up into smaller separate basins, were already going on. The Quaternary epoch is repre- sented by vast morainic deposits in the valleys of the Tian-Shan. About Khan-Tengri glaciers descended to a level of 6800 feet above

the sea,* and discharged into the wide open valleys or syrts. It is most probable that, when allowance has been made for the oblitera- tion of glacial markings, and the region has been better explored, it will appear that the glaciation of Turkestan was on a scale at least as vast as that of the Himalayas. In the lowlands the Aral-Caspian de- posits, which it is difficult to separate sharply from the later Tertiary, cover the whole of the area. They contain shells of molluscs now inhabiting the Sea of Aral, and in their petrographical features are exactly like those of the lower Volga. The limits of the Post-Pliocene Aral-Caspian sea have not yet been fully traced. It extended some 200 miles north and more than 90 miles east of the present Aral shores. A narrow strait connected it with Lake Balkash. The Ust- Urt plateau and the Mugojar Mountains (see Turca1) prevented it from spreading north-westward, and a narrow channel connected it along the Uzboi (see p. 512 supra) with the Caspian, which sent a broad gulf to the cast, spread up to Volga, and was connected by the Manytch with the Black Sea basin. Great interest, geological and historical, thus attaches to the recent changes undergone by this basin ; but much still remains to be done before the numcrous questions arising in connexion with it can be settled. Since the theory of geological cataclysms was abandoned, and that of slow modifications of the crust of the earth accepted, new data have been obtained in the Aral-Caspian region to show that the rate of modi- fication after the close of the Glacial period, although still very slow, was faster than had been supposed from the evidence of similar changes now going on in Europe and America. The effects produced by desiccating agencies are beyond all comparison more powerful than those which result from the earthquakes that are so frequent in Turkestan. All along the base of the highlands, from Khojend to Vyernyi, earthquakes are frequent ;? but, however destructive of life, their effects lie beyond the scope of our observational methods.

1 Mushketoff’s Turkestun (pp. 35, 681) seems to justify this con- clusion.

2 See I. Ignatieff, in Jzvestia of Russ. Geogr. Soc., vol. xxiii., 1887.

3 For a list of them, see Jzvestia of Russ. Geogr. Soc., vol. xxiii., 1887 ; also Orloff, in Mem. of Kazan Naturalists, 1878, iii.

Climate.

Fauna.

WEST. |

The climate of West Turkestan is exccedingly dry and con- tinental. Although the country is comprised within the lati- tudes of Sicily and Lyons, it has a south Norwegian January and a Persian summer. Temperatures of more than 100° Fahr. in the shade are common, and the heat is rendered still more unbearable by the reflexion from a soil destitute of vegetation. The winter is for the most part so cold that the average temperature of January is below the freezing point, and even reaches 0° Fahr. Snow falls for several months on the lower Syr-Daria, and, were it not blown away by the winds, sledge-communication would be possible. This river is frozen for an average of 123 days every year in its lower parts, and nearly 100 days at Perovsk. At'Tashkend there is snow during two months and temperatures of —10° Fahr. have been measured. In 1876, on 24th October, almond-trees, vines, and cotton crops were buried under a heavy snowfall. To the south of Khojend the winter becomes more clement. Absence of rain is the distinctive feature of the climate. Although it rains and snows heavily on the mountains, only 11 inches of rain and snow fall throughout the year at Tashkend, at the base of the highlands; and the steppes of the lower Amu have less than 3 inches.

showers are all that fall from the almost invariably cloudless sky The following table will illus-

above the Transcaspian steppes. trate the climate of Turkestan :—

Lati- | Height | Average temperature. Rain in

tude. | in feet. Year. | January. | July. inches. Akmolinsk …..... 51°12' | 1020 | 28°°8 0°°0 69°-2 9°2 Semipalatinsk …... 50° 24' 590 | 27°-0 Oia d 72°°5 77 MONT Zia isco pieisis vie 8ie's 48° 37' 360 | 21°°8 34 76°2 671 Kazalinsk …....... 45° 45' 160 | 45°°5 10°°6 78°°0 7:9 Alexandrovsk …... 44° 33' | -30 | 51°:2 25°°0 78°°0 a aa ecan ss Onna 43° 51' | 2100 | 48°7 | 144 | 76°5 mi BNUESESIatel eer etalelolei ere ei eie 2 OME! 215 53°°0 19°°4 79°°6 2-9 Petro-Alexandrovsk | 41° 28' 325 | 55°*0 oH " 24 Tashkend …..... 41°19 | 1480 | 583 29°*0 775 | 113 Krasnovodsk …..... 40°

00’ | -70 | 59°8 36°°3 83°°2 am Yarkand(EastTur.)..| 38° 21’ | 4120 §4°°2 21°:2 81°°7 .

The fauna of Turkestan belongs to the great zoo-geographical domain of northern Asia, and is only differentiated by the presence of species which have disappeared from the peripheric parts of the Old World and now find a refuge in the remotest regions of the uninhabited plateau. From the great Paleoarctic region it is distinguished by the presence of Himalayan species. The distinct- ive animal of the Pamir plateau is the magnificent Ovis poli (con- jectured to be the ancestor of our common sheep), mentioned by Marco Polo and rediscovered by Syevertsoff. It breeds by thousands on the Pamir, climbing the highest ridges, which it prefers to the valleys. The region to which it is confined has the shape of an ellipse, with its longer axis running south-west to north-east. The animal is rare on the upper Naryn, and never penetrates to the west of Sel-su. In the alpine tracts of the Tian-Shan, on the borders of the Pamir, their horns and skulls are frequently met with, but there the place of the species is now taken by Ovis karelint. The wild horse, which occurred in Poland a few centuries ago, has been discovered by Prejevalsky in the highlands of Dzungaria and described as Equus prjcvalsktt by Polyakoff. The wild camel in- habits the lonely plateaus south of the Ala-Shan ; but no descrip- tion of it has been published. The other mammals of Turkestan are mostly those which are met with elsewhere in north Asia, The large light-coloured Himalayan bear (Ursus isabellinus) has its home on the Pamir, and the smaller, strong, white-clawed Lewconyx up to the highest levels on the Tian-Shan, Antelopes, Lepus lehmanni, Lagomys rutilus, various species of Arvicole, and the Himalayan long-tailed marmot (Arctomys caudatus), the most char- acteristic inhabitant of the alpine meadows, are the only mammals of the Pamir proper. In the alpine region are found the badger (Meles taxus), the ermine (Fetortus ermineus) and six other Jfus- telidx, the wild dog (Canis alpinus), the common and the black- eared fox (C. melanotis), while the corsac fox (C. corsae) is met with only on the plains. Two species of lynx, the cheetah (Felis jubata), Felis manui, and Felis irbis, this last extending westwards as far as the Persian Gulf and eastwards as far as the river Amur, must be added to the above. The tiger is met with only on the lower Amu-Daria, except when it wanders to the alpine region in pursuit of the maral deer (Cervus maral). The jackal is charac- teristic of the steppes; it banishes

the wolves and foxes. Hares are represented by several species, Lepus lehmannt being the most characteristic. Both the common and the long-tailed marmot (4. baibacinus and A. caudatus) are found at the foot of the mountains, as also four species of Spermophilus, three of voles, two of the mouse, and three of the hamster. The Meriones (four species) and the jerboa (five species) are only met with in the steppe region. Of ruminants, besides the sheep (0. poli, O. karelini, 0. nigrimontana, O. heinsit), we find one mufflon (Musimon vignet), formerly known only in the Himalayas, the Chinese antelope (Antilope subgutiturosa) and the saiga antelope in the steppes, the Siberian ibex and another goat, the yak, the zcbu or Indian ox, the common ox, the camel,

and the dromedary. The wild boar is common in the reed thickets along the rivers and lakes, where it stays during the winter, migrating to the highlands in summer. The hedgehog and porcu- pine are common in the plains.

It would be impossible to describe in a few words the avifauna. No fewer than 385 species are recorded, most of them being middle- European and Mediterranean. A large number were formerly known only in the Himalayas, or in Persia, while others have their origin in east Asia. The commonest are mostly European acquaintances. As for the very rich insect fauna, of which full descriptions are now accessible, it is worthy of note that among the Lepidoptera of the Pamir there is an interesting mixture of Tian-Shan with Himalayan species. M. Grum-Grzimailo found on the Pamir the Colias nastes, a species characteristic of Labrador and Lapland ; like the alpine plants which bear witness to a Glacial period flora in the Himalayas, this butterfly is a survival of the Glacial period fauna of the Pamir.}

Asa whole the flora of Turkestan belongs to that of Central Asia, which was formerly continued by geo-botanists as far west as the steppes of Russia, but which must now be considered as a separate region subdivided into two, —the Central Asian proper and that of the Gobi. It has its own habitus, notwithstanding the number of species it has in common with Siberia and south-east Russia on the one haud and with the Himalayas on the other, and

this habitus is due to the dryness of the climate and the consequent changes undergone by the soil. Towards the end of the Glacial period the Tian-Shan Mountains had a flora very like that of northern Caucasus, combining the characters of the floras of the European Alps and the Altai, while the prairies had a flora very much like that of the south Russian steppes. During the Stone Age the human inhabit- ants lived in forests of maple, white beech, and apple trees. But the gradual desiccation of the country resulted in the immigration from the Central Asian plateau of such species as could adapt them- selves to the dry climate and soil, in the disappearance of European and Altaic species from all drier parts of the region, in the survival of steppe species, and in the adaptation of many of the existing species to the needs of an arid and extreme climate and a saline soil." At present the flora of Turkestan has a variety of characters, depend- ing on the various physical aspects of the separate regions, the Pamir vegetation and oe of the Aral-Caspian steppes constituting two types with numberless intermediate gradations.

There is no arboreal vegetation on the Pamir, except a few willows and tamarisks along the rivers. Mountain and valley alike are covered with soft carpets of grass, various species of Festuca predominating almost to the exclusion of all others. In the immediate vicinity of water the ryang (Carex physoides) grows, and a few patches are covered with Allium. To these may be added a few Ranunculacex, some Myosotis, low Scabiose, the common Taraxacum, one species of Chamomitla, and a few Leguminose. In the north and west the Stipa of the Russian steppes superscdes Festuea and affords splendid pasture for the herds of the Kara- Kirghiz. In the gorges and on the better-watered slopes of the mountains the herbaceous vegetation becomes decidedly rich. Be- sides the above-named there are many other Graminex, such as the beautiful Lasiagrostis splendens, and whole seas of Seabiose. Eremurus, of a variety of colours and 6 to 7 feet in height, forms thickets along with the tall Seorodosma fetida. The northern slopes of the Atai chain are richer in trees. Up to 12,000 feet full- grown specimens occur of the artcha (Juniperus pscudo-Sabina), characteristic of the whole northern slopes of the Turkestan high- lands, the poplar, a very few birches (B. Sogdiana), and a rich underwood of shrubs familiar in European gardens, such as Rhodo- dendron chrysanthum, Sorbus aucuparia (rowan), Berberts heteropoda (berberry), Lonicera Tatarica (honeysuckle), and Cratx#gus

(haw- thorn). Farther east and north comes the Turkestan pine (Picca Schrenkiana), while at lower levels there grow numerous willows, black and white poplars, tamarisk, large Celtis, as well as shrubs of Eleagnus (wild olive), Hippophae rhamnoides (sallow thorn), Rubus frueticosus (blackberry), Prunus spinosa (blackthorn), and P. Ar- meniaca (apricot). The characteristic poplar, Populus diversifolia, which does not seem to have found yet the shape of leaves best suited to the climate, and therefore produces them in most striking variety, and the dwarf Acer Lobelii—very different, however, from the European maple—also occur.

The above applies to most of the highlands of the Tian-Shan, The drier southern slopes are quite devoid of arboreal vegetation.

1 For ampler information, see Syevertsoff's ‘‘ Vertical and Horizontal Distri- bution of Turkestan Animals,” in Izvestia of the Moscow Soc. of Amateurs of Nat. Science, 1873; Fedtchenko's “Travels to Turkestan,” extending over 18 parts of vols. xi., xix., xxi., xxiv., and xxvi. of the same Fzvestia, and forming a series of monographs by specialists which deal with separate divisions of the animal and vegetable kingdom (the flora by Regel); Oshanin's Zo0-Geographical Problems in Turkestan, Tashkend, 1880; Gruin-Grzimailo's ‘‘ Flora and Fauna of Pamir,” in Izvestia of Russ. Geogr. Soc., 1886; Works of the Aral-Caspian Expedition; Butleroff's ‘‘Ornith. of Nukus,” in Mem. St Petersb. Soc. Nat., vol. x., 1879; and the journeys of Borschoff, Semenoff, Syevertsoff, Osten-Sacken (Sertum Tian-Shanicum), Regel, Prjevalsky, and many others. Cf. also for the southern parts of the region Reports of the Afghan Boundary Commission.

2 See M. Krasnof's researches in Jzvestia of Russ. Geogr. Soc., vol. xxili., 1887.

On the northern slopes, at the higher levels, only the Juniperus pseudo-Sabina grows on the mountains, and rich meadow grasses cover the syrts. Lower down, at about 7500 to 8000 feet the conifer zone begins, characterized by the Pieca Schrenkiana, which furnishes the inhabitants

with timber and fuel. Of course the artcha and a few other deciduous trees also occur. The richest zone is that which comes next, extending downwards to 5000 and 4500 feet. There woods of birch, several species of poplar, the maple (decr Semenovit), and a rich underwood spread over the mountain slopes. Orchards of apple and apricot surround the villages. The meadows are covered with a rich vegetation,—numberless bright Pxonie, variegated Scabiosx, large Convolvulacex, all kinds of Campanule, dark-coloured Eremarus, splendid Umbellifcre, yellow-flowered Gat- liwm, a mass of Rosacex, Althex, Glycyrrhize, high-stemmed. Seorod- osma fetida, and tall Gramince. But, as soon as the soil loses its fertile humus, it produces only a few of Phlomis, Alhagi camelorum, Psammex, Salsolacex, Artemisix, Peganwm, and some poppies and

exact numbers. Murrains are of frequent occurrence ; a recent one resulted in a terrible famine among the Kirghiz. Live eattle, hides, wool, came]-hair, tallow, felt, and leather are exported to a considerable extent.

The mineral wealth of Turkestan is considerable. auriferous sands have been discovered at many places, but the per- centage of gold is too poor to make the working remunerative. Silver, lead, and iron ores occur at several places ; but the want of fue] is an obstacle to their exploitation. The vast coal-beds of Kulja and several inferior ones in Turkestan are not yet seriously worked, the total yearly output being only some 120,000 ecwts. The naphtha wells of Ferghana and the layers of graphite about Sairam-Nor are also neglected. There are abundaut deposits of gypsum, alum, kaolin, marble, and similar materials. Notwith- standing the salt springs of Ferghana and Syr-Daria, the salt lakes of the region, and the rock-salt strata of the Alexandrovsk Mountains, salt is imported.

Traces of Minerals,

Chamomillz, but only in the spring. The invading steppe plants appear everywhere in patches in the Turkestan meadows. Very often—almost invariably on the drier southern slopes of the

Turkestan has no manufacturing industry carried on by means Industry of machinery, except a few distilleries and two establishments for and dressing raw cotton. But there is a great variety of artisan work, trade.

Vege-

mountains—the steppe vegetation climbs up to the level of the alpine. Nowhere, perhaps, is the effect of various soils—loess, clay, salt clay, and sand—upon vegetation better observable than in the recently-emerged and arid regions of Turkestan. a

The ‘‘culture” or ‘‘ apricot” zone is followed by the prairie belt, in which black-earth plants (Stipa and the like) struggle for exist- ence against invading Central Asian forms. And then come the lowlands and deserts with their moving sandy barkhans, shors, and takyrs (see TRANSCASPIAN REGION). Two species of poplar (P. pruinosa and P. diversifolia), Eleagnus angustifolia, the ash, and a few willows grow along the rivers. Large areas are wholly destitute of vegetation, and after crossing 100 miles of such a desert the traveller will occasionally come upon a forest of saksaul (Anabasis Ammodcndron). Contorted stems, sometimes of consider- able thickness, very hard, and covered with a grey cracked bark, rise out of the sand, bearing green plumes of thin branches, with smal] greyish leaves and pink fruit. Sometimes the tree is a mere knot peeping above the sand with a crown of thin branches. But even these fantastic growths are rapidly being destroyed by the Kirghiz herdsmen, who use them for fuel.!’ In spring, however, the steppe assumes quite another aspect, being covered, except where the sands are shifting, with a rich vegetation. Persian species penetrate into Bokhara and the region of the upper Amu.

As already stated (p. 685), the climate of Turkestan varies con-

tablepro- siderably from north to south. In Akmolinsk and Semiryetchensk

which, however, has been for some time declining and now stands at a rather low level. Trade is very actively carried on. Its importance may be judged by the fact that in 1876 27,900 camels were used for the transport of wares to Tashkend. This town and Bokhara are the chief commercial centres, the principal articles of export to Russia, via Orenburg and

Semipalatinsk, being raw cotton and silk, cattle and their products, while manufactured wares are imported in return. There is also an import and export trade to and from Urumtchi and China, via Kulja and Ak-su.

Turkestan has been the theatre of so many migrations and con- Ethno-

quests that its present population could not fail to be very mixed. Both Aryans and Mongols (especially the Ural-Altaic branch) have their representatives there, the former settled for the most part, the latter chiefly nomad. The Ural-Altaians, or Turanians, are numerically the predominant element, and consist of Turcomans, Kirghiz, Uzbegs, and Sarts. The Turcomans inhabit chiefly that part of Turkestan which is now known as the TRANSCASPIAN Recion (g.v.). They number less than one million. The Kara- Kalpaks (‘‘ Black Bonnets”) may number about 50,000 in Turke- stan, and some 300,000 in the Russian empire altogether. Very little is known of their history. They are supposed to be but recent immigrants to Syr-Daria, having come from the former Bulgarian empire on the middle Volga. Their language and habits are the same as those of the Kirghiz; but for the last century and a half they have had some acquaintance with agricul-

ducts. most of the kinds of corn which characterize Middle Russia ture. Their pacific temper exposed them to_the raids of the are grown. South of the Tchu and the Syr-Daria gardening is a | Kirghiz, Who compelled them first to settle in Dzungaria, then to considerable industry ; and, although rye and wheat continue to change their dwellings several times, and ultimately (in 1742) to be the chief crops, the culture of the apple, and especially of the | recognize the sovereignty of Russia. Even since that time they apricot (wryuwk), acquires importance. Attempts are also made to have been driven by the persecutions of their old enemies to cultivate the vine. The inhabitants of the neighbourhood of Tash- | cross the Aral-Caspian steppes and seek refuge near Astrakhan. kend and Samarkand, as well as those of the much more northern | The real masters of the steppes and highlands of Turkestan are but better sheltered Kulja oasis, add the cultivation of the almond, the Kirghiz, of whom there are two branches, —the Kazak (Cossack) pomegranate, and fig. Vines are grown and cotton planted in | Kirghiz and the Kara (Black) Kirghiz or Burut (see Krreuiz). those districts.

Finally, about Khojend and in Ferghana, where | The Uzhegs, who played a predominant political part in Turkestan the climate is milder still, the vine and the pistachio tree cover the | before the Russian conquest, are of Turco-Tartar origin and speak hills, while agriculture and horticulture have reached a high degree | a pure Jagatai dialect ; but they are mixed to a great extent with of perfection. Successful attempts are now being made to grow | Persians, Kirghiz, and Mongols. They are subdivided into clans and the tea-plant in the Transcaspian region. lead a semi-nomadic life, preserving most of the attractive features Agri- The arable land, being limited to the irrigated terraces of loess | of their Turkish congeners—especially their honesty and independ-

culture. already spoken of, occupies less than a fiftieth of the whole area of

West Turkestan, even when the Transcaspian deserts are left out of account. The remainder is nearly equally divided between pasture land and desert (sandy steppe and ‘barren mountain). Owing to a very equitable distribution of irrigation water in accord- ance with Moslem law, agriculture and gardening have reached a high stage of devclopment in the oases. Two crops are usually taken every year? Wheat, barley, millet, pease, lentils, rice, sorghum, lucerne, and cotton are the chief agricultural products. Carrots, melons, vegetable marrows, and onions are extensively grown. Rye and oats are cultivated in Kazalinsk and Kopat. Corn is exported. Owing to the irrigation, total failure of crops and consequent famines are unknown, unless among the Kirghiz shepherds. The kitchen gardens of the Mohammedans are, as a rule, admirably kept. Potatoes are grown only by the Russians. The cultivation of cotton is rapidly extending (32,000 acres in 1886), as also is sericulture, which is chiefly carried on in Ferghana, whence silk cocoons are an important item of export. Cattle-breeding is extensively pursued, and in Russian Turkestan alone recent estimates show 400,000 camels, 1,600,000 horses, 1,200,000 cattle, and 11,000,000 sheep. This last figure, however, is but a very rough estimate,—the flocks on the Kirghiz steppe being so large that the proprietors themselves do not know their

1 See Olga Fedtchenko and Prof. Sorokine’s drawings of saksaul forests in Album of Views of Russ. Turkestan ; also Bull. Soc. Nat. Mose., 1884, No.

1.

2 See Middendorff’s very valuable sketches of agriculture in Ferghana in Mem. Acad. Sc. of St Petersburg, 1881. ~ .

ence. When settled they are mostly designated as Sarts—a name which has reference more to manner of life than to anthropological classification, although a much stronger admixture of Iranian blood is evident in the Sarts, who also speak Persian at Khojend and Samarkand. Tarantchi or Taranji (‘labourer” in Chinese) is the name given to those Sarts who were settled in the Kulja region by the Chinese Government after the rising of 1758. They coustitute about two-fifths of the population of Kulja. After defeating the Dzungaiis in the year 1865, they took the political power in Kulja’ into their own hands, offering shelter to the Kirghiz who made inroads on the Russian dominions. This was made a pretext for the annexation of Kulja by Russia in 1871; but it has been since restored to China, The origin of the Dzungatis is somewhat prob- lematical. They number nearly 20,000, and inhabit the valley of the Ili in Kulja and partly are settled in Russian Turkestan, They are Mohammedans, but have adopted Chinese manners of life. The Mongolian branch is represented in Turkestan by Kalmucks and Torgoutes (Torgod) in the north-east and in Kulja, where they are mixed with Solons, Sibos, and Chinese. The Aryan Tajak (see Tasak), the aborigines of the fertile parts of Turkestan, were subdued by the Turco-Mongolian invaders and partly com- pelled to emigrate to the mountains, where they are now known as Galtchas. They constitute the intellectual element of the country and are the principal owners of the irrigated land,—the Uzbegs being their labourers,—merchants, and mollahs or priests. They are Sunnite Mussulmans. The other representatives of Aryan 3 See N. Mayett’s Turkestan Exhibition of 1886, Tashkend, 1886,

Cities.

General

:

condi- tion of the eountry.

Effeets of

Russian

influence. life, elsewhere, where both civilizations—the European and the Asiatic.

|

EAST. |

race in Turkestan are a few Persians, mostly liberated slaves ; Indians, who carry on trade and usury in the cities; a few Gipsies; and the Russians. Among these last two distinct elements must be noticed,—the Cossacks, who are settled on the borders of the Kirghiz steppe and have assumed many Kirghiz features, and the peasant-settlers who are beginuing to colonize the valley of the Ili and to spread farther south. Exclusive of the military, the Russians number about 75,000, nearly two-thirds being in Semiryetehensk (Cossacks and peasants).

Turkestan has no lack of populous cities, which, notwithstanding recent vicissitudes, continue to be important for their trade, while several others are widely famous for the part they have played in history. Kuoxanp,? Marcuinay, Namangan, and Andijan in Ferghana ; TasHKEND and Kuoyenp in Syr-Daria ; SAMARKAND in Zerafshan; BoxHara and Kuiva in the independent khanates have each from 30,000 to 100,000 inhabitants.

Populous cities adorned with fine monuments of Arabian archi- tecture, numerous ruins of cities decayed, grand irrigation canals now lying dry, and written monuments of Arabian literature testify to a time when civilization in Turkestan stood at a much higher level than at present. This period was during the first centuries after its conversion to Islam. Now all is in decay. The beautiful mosques and madrasas are dilapidated ; no astronomers watch the sky from the tops of their minarets; and the scholars of the madrasas waste their time on the most deplorably puerile scholas- ticism. The inspiration of early belief has disappeared ; the ruling motive of the mollahs (priests) is the thirst for personal enrichment, and the people no longer follow the khojas (see p. 639 below). The agricultural labourer has

preserved the uprightness, diligence, and sobriety which characterize the Turkish peasant in Asia as well as in Europe; but the richer inhabitants of the cities are grossly sensual. Centuries of wars, followed by massacres and cruel vengeance, an unceasing eivil strife between parties disputing for supremacy in the name of religion, conspiracies, appeals to foreigners, and endless intrigues have hastened the decay of Mohammedan civilization in the khanates of Turkestan and paved the way for Russian conquest.

It remains, however, an open question whether the Russians will be able to bring new vigour to the country and awaken intellectual They have failed to do so in eastern Russia, at Kazan, and

—remain as thoroughly estranged from one another as they were three centuries ago. This estrangement is not merely religious, but soeial and economical. The followers of Islam, whose common law and religion know only of a temporary possession of the land, which belongs wholly to the Prophet, cannot accept the principles of unlimited property in land which European civilization has borrowed from Roman law; to do so would put an end to all public irrigation works, and to the system by which water is used according to each family's needs, and so would be fatal to agricul- ture. When taking possession of Turkestan, the Russians began to grant deeds establishing property rights over land in accordance with Roman law. Buta study of the Mohammedan system soon put an end to so erroneous a policy, and Mussulman law is still respected. The Russians have abolished slavery in Turkestan ; and their rule has put an end to the interminable intestine struggles, which had weakened and desolated the whole region. The barbar- ous tortures and executions which rendered Khiva notorious in the East are no longer heard of; and the continual appeals of the khojas for "'holy" war against their rivals find no response. But the Russian rule has imposed many new taxes, in return for which Turkestan only gets troops of Russian merchants and officials, who, instead of becoming the exponents of what is best in European civilization, too often accept the worst features of the depraved Mussulman civilization of the higher classes of the country. New tribunals and new justices of the peace are about to be introduced (1887) ; schools are being diligently spread ; but the wants of the natives are set behind those of the children of the Russian officials and merchants and the supposed necessities of Russification. A consulting hospital for

Mohammedan women has receutly been opened by women graduates in medicine at Tashkend.

East TURKESTAN.

As already stated, by this name we designate that vast depression in the great plateau of eastern Asia which lies between the Tian-Shan Mountains in the north-west ; the steep slopes of the Pamir and of the Tibet plateau, bordered by the Kuen-Lun, in the south-west and south ; the Attyn-Tagh in the south-east as far as Lake Lob-Nor ; and in the north-east the still imperfectly known mountains

1 See Collection of Papers on Turkestan, St Petersburg, 1876, by MM. Syevertsoff and Khoroshkin.

? Each of these towns in small eapitals is deseribed in a separate article.

which run east-south-east fron the Tian-Shan, having the Bagratch-kul on their northern slope. Farther east the Kuruk-Tagh and the steep slope of the Gashuii Gobi separate East Turkestan from the higher terrace of the plateau, so that about Lob-Nor the Tarim depression is narrowed to a width of about 100 miles ; and on the 98th meridian, at Lake Tchin-shen-ho, the steep edge of the Gobi meets the spurs of the Nan-Shaii Mountains.4 This region has been and still is designated by a variety of names, such as the Tangut Plain, West Gobi (a most in- appropriate name, as already pointed out by Ritter), Alty- shar or Jity-shar (the land of six or seven cities), Little Bokharia, Kashgaria, and so on. In its physical features it forms a connecting link between the Chinese territories and the Aral-Caspian depression. It covers about 465,000 square miles, but has hardly more than 1,000,000 inhabit- ants.

Although lying at a high altitude (Kashgar 4000 feet Physical and Yarkand 4120 feet), it has the character of a depres- features.

sion in comparison, not only with the mountains, but also with the lofty plateaus which surround it,—Tibet, Pamir, and the Tian-Shan syrts. It has a general slope towards the east, and its lowest portions (formerly occupied by a great lacustrine basin) are only 2600 feet above the sea.® At its north-east edge, ¢.¢, at the foot of the remotest offshoots of the Tian-Shan, M. Prjevalsky measured an altitude of only 2600 feet. Its average altitude ranges from 3100 to 3700 feet, increasing to 4200 at its outer rim. No mountains or hills diversify its surface, which is that of a high plain. All the mountains which enclose it rise to considerable heights, far above the snow line. The steep slopes of the Pamir culminate in Tagharma Peak (25,360 feet). In the north the snowclad Kokshat-tau and Kirghiznyn Ala-tau form a series of uninterrupted chains, which reach a height of 24,000 feet in the Khan- Tengri and have at their southern base the broad and high alpine plateaus, or syrts, of which the Yutduz, dotted with lakes, has acquired historical fame as the meeting- place of the armies of Timur before his Dzungarian march. On the southern borders of East Turkestan, in the Kuen-Lun and Karakorum Mountains, is the Dapsang—one of the highest peaks of the globe ; and farther east the Attyn- Tagh and the Nan-Shafi (with Humboldt and Ritter ranges), which are among the highest mountains of Asia, separate it from the lofty Chaidam or Tsaidam plateau.6 East Turkestan is thus secluded by high mountains and plateaus from the rest of the continent. passes which lead to it climb to altitudes of 14,000 feet. It is open only towards the east, where it is connected with the Gobi depression. Its position as the highway from China to West Turkestan and the Dzungarian empire has made it known, though only very imperfectly until lately, through Chinese documents, the narratives of the journeys of Buddhist missionaries, and the travels of Marco Polo, Rubruquis, and a few Jesuits. From a remote antiquity it was crossed by caravans going from China to Lake Balkash, Ferghana, and the Oxus. The route, after crossing the Gobi, proceeded either to the Dzungarian Gate, or, wa Kashgar, to the high passes of Terek-Davan and Muz-art, which led to Ferghana and Issyk-kul. Both passes have a wide renown in Central Asia, the latter especially, on account of its difficulties, one of which is a

3 See the map of Asia, by A. Petermann, in Stieler’s Hand-Atlas, No. 58, where the orography of Asia is represented, in the present writer’s opinion, in a more trustworthy manner than on other maps of Asia,

4 See map to Prjevalsky’s fourth journey in Zzvestia of Russ. Geogr. Soc., 1887.

> Barometrieally observed, the possible error being about 300 feet.

§ Prjevalsky, Reisen in Tibet und am oberen Laufe des Gelben Flusses, Jena, 1884.

Even the few Passes.

River Tarim.

Deserts.

638

huge glacier, which has to be ascended with the help of the ice axe,

One river only, the Tarim—now lost in the marshes of Lob-Nor—and its tributaries, water this region. It is formed by the confluence of several rivers flowing from the semicircle of mountains which fence in East Turkestan on the south, west, and north. The Kashgar-Daria rises under the name of Kizil-su on the Atai. The Yarkand- Daria has its origin in a high valley between the Kuen- Lun and Karakorum Mountains, at the base of Dapsang, from several streams, such as the auriferous Zerafshan, which is fed by the glaciers of the Karakorum pass ; after piercing the Kuen-Lun, it enters the plain, where its waters are soon diverted to the fields and gardens of the Yarkand oasis. ‘The Khotan-Daria rises farther east in the same valley, and also pierces the Kuen-Lun, its two branches— the Kara-kash and Urung-kash—being renowned for their “black” and “white” jade. This river only reaches the Tarim during the summer. The Tian-Shan Mountains contain the sources of several feeders of the Tarim; but some of them no longer reach the main stream. The Kizil-Kunghei disappears after having watered Utch-Turfan (Uj-Turfan); the Ak-su meets the Khotan-Daria at its junction with the Tarim; but the Baidu-gol and the Kutcha are lost in Lakes Baba-kul and Sary-kamysh. From the Yutduz plateau comes the Haidu-gol, which flows past Kara-Shar and enters the Bagratch-kul Lake, whence it issues under the name of Kontcha-Daria, and, crossing the east of East Turkestan from north

to south, joins the marshes of Lob-Nor ; thus the long-doubted con- nexion between these two lakes—the northern and the southern—really exists. The Tarim is navigable for steamers from the confluence of the Yarkand and Khotan rivers all the way to Lob-Nor.! These rivers, however, do not bring life to the immense deserts, the aspect of which recalls partly the Aral-Caspian depression and partly the Mongolian Gobi. Their undulating surface is covered with a gravelly soil, out of which all the finer particles have been winnowed by the wind, and it resounds under the hoofs of the passing hordes; grass covers it only in the beginning of spring. Here and there occur clayey deposits with an efflorescence of salt, which is hard in summer but impassable after rains. Then come immense areas of loose sand, which is raised in clouds by storms of wind, and the hills of which, moving on like waves, invade the cultivated fields that have been conquered by laborious effort from the desert. The features with which the traveller in the Sahara, or on the plateau of eastern Iran about Lake Zareh (Hamun) is familiar, are here reproduced on the same large scale. The Takla-makan desert north of Khotan covers 93,000 square miles—an area nearly equal to that of Great Britain. As one approaches Lob-Nor, and thus touches upon territory that has emerged at a still more recent epoch, the desert becomes still drearier and still less passable on account of the shifting sands. Lob-Nor now consists of two basins; but the largest of them, although it has an area four times as large as that of the Lake of Geneva, can hardly be called a lake, since its greatest depth is less than 20 feet, while reeds rise 20 feet above the thin film of water and extend far beyond its shores. In fact the whole of the region, notwithstanding its considerable altitude above the ocean, has but recently emerged from under water. During the later portion of the Tertiary period it was covered with an immense Mediterranean sea, and even during the Post-Pliocene period was occupied by a lake. But, as we see on a smaller scale in Finland and Sweden, where the higher

} At the confluence the Tarim has at low water a depth of 8 to 5

feet and a width of 190 yards; towards Lob-Nor the depth increases to 14 feet (Prjevalsky, in Zzvestia of Russ. Geog. Soc., 1887).

TUrE KS Pa

lacustrine depressions are more advanced in the process of desiccation than those situated at lower levels, so in Central Asia the more elevated Tarim region is more advanced in its desiccation than the Balkash basin, and this latter again is ina more advanced stage of the same process than the Aral-Caspian depression. The desiccation of East Turkestan must have gone on, however, within historical times at a much more rapid rate than geologists seen pre- pared to admit. East Turkestan has not always been the desert it now is. Many cities, in which Greek and Byzan- tine coins have been found, lie buried beneath the sands, and in one of these Buddhist statues have been discovered. Indeed it is very probable that the great migration of the first centuries of our era resulted from the necessity of abandoning East Turkestan.

The climate is severc: a cold winter follows a burning summer. Climate,

A few showers slightly moisten the surface in spring ; but the summer and autumn are rainless. The airis continually charged with dust, and often with sand.

The vegetation of the interior of East Turkestan is very poor, Flora,

being the same as that of the steppes of West Turkestan. On the sandy hills are some tamarisks and Elxagnus, rapidly being used up as fuel ; along the rivers are copses of poplars, which have diffi- culty in maintaining themselves, because no humus gathers in their shade, the dry leaves being blown away by the storms and scattered as dust over the desert ; and, finally, along the old beds of rivers and lakes grow dense and rank beds of reeds, where the wild boar has his habitat. Immense areas are covered with Salsolacex, and the gravelly ground is clothed in spring with a rich carpet of grass. The oases possess all the plants which are cultivated in West Turkestan,—the inulberry, walnut, pear, apple, apricot, olive, and vine. Cotton, rice, maize, millet, and wheat are grown; and Middendorff’s* remark, that on the edge of the desert we find the best cultivated fields and the richest gardens, is still more appli- cable to the oases of East than to those of West Turkestan. But outside the oases desolation reigns. Wind freely modifies the sur- face, carrying away the finest particles of the

gravelly soil, breaking down the barkhans as soon as man has destroyed the vegetation which grew on them, and lifting the sand into the air and whirling it along in columns of the most fantastic shapes.

As a rule, the mammals are not numerous, and the fauna closely Fauna,

resembles that of the Tian-Shan. It seems to be owing to the loneliness of its deserts that East Turkestan has preserved the wild ancestors of our domestic animals. Besides the wild ass (Zquus hemionus), Prjevalsky discovered in the Dzungarian steppes the wild horse—the real ancestor of our domestic horse—and on the plateau of Tsaidam the wild camel and the wild yak.®

Raw cotton and silk are exported to a considerable amount ; but Indus- of manufactured cottons only arough mata is sent to Semiryetchensk tries and Some silk wares, carpets, and silk “‘ grain” are minerals.

for the Kirghiz. exported from Khotan, leather-ware from Yarkand, polished and copper ware from Ak-su, and small iron ware from Kutcha. Stock-breeding is of paramount importance, and cattle, asses, camels, and sheep are reared in considerable numbers. Mineral resources are not wanting, but the mining industry is in a primitive condition. Gold is obtained from alluvial deposits at Kiria, coal at Kashgar, jade in Khotan, and sulphur and saltpetre at Utch-Turfan.

It is only along the base of the mountains, where there is a fringe Oases.

of loess, and where streams bring the necessary moisture, that human settlements have sprung up, or rather maintained them- selves until now. The series of oases skirts the base of the Tian- Shan and the Kuen-Lun. Kashgar stands at the apex of the angle made by those two ranges, while Yanghi-hissar, Yarkand, Khotan, and Kiria lie along the Kuen-Lun, and Utch-Turfan, Ak-su, Bai, Kutcha, Kurta, Karashar, and Turfan along the Tian-Shan. Many miles of desert separate these oases from each other; and their population could be, and has been, much greater than it is, for there is no Jack of water in the streams which rise beneath the snow covering of the mountains. The various oases, which arc named after their chief towns, have always been nearly independent of each other. Still, in the course of their much disturbed history, Khotan, Yarkand, Kashgar, and Ak-su, one

after another acquired a kind of supremacy over the rest. At present Yarkand and Kash- gar are the most important. The city of Yarkand has ncarly 60,000 inhabitants ; it is surrounded by walls, and has a separate fort, Yanghi-hissar ; ruins of old settlements are scattered around. Its Chinese merchants carry on an active trade, and the Turkish popu- lation are breeders of cattle on an extensive scale. Wheat, barley, rice, beans, sorghum, mulberries, and a variety of fruit trees are

2 Op. cit. * Prjevalsky, Reisen in Tibet, &c. ; aud Wilkins (naturalist of M. Kuropatkin's expedition) in the Russian periodical Priroda, 1887, No. 3.

¥

1

EAST. |

grown in the gardens. KASHGAR (q.v.), surrounded by a series of populous villages, is the chief commercial centre, owing to its posi- tion on the highway to Lake Issyk-kul. It is surrounded by forts, one standing at the confluence of the Kashgar and Yarkand rivers. Kuoran (9.v.) or Iltchi (also Yu-thian), a very populous city under the Han dynasty of China (206 B.0.-1 A.p.), has much deelined of late. It is renowned for its gold mines, and especially for its jade and its musk. Copper kettles, carpets, some silk, and felt ware are manufactured. Sanju (7000 houses), Kilian, Pialma, Guma, Kargatyk, and Posgan, on the slopes of the Kuen-Lun between Yarkand and Khotan, are the richest parts of the region. Naya, Kiria, Tchira, all on small rivers flowing from the Kuen-Lun, con- tinue the line of oases towards the east, terminating in Tchertchef, which now consists of but a few score of houses. The oases at the base of the Tian-Shan are Utch-Turfan (Ust-Turfan), Ak-sn (formerly the capital of Sairam), Bai, Kutcha with Shah-yar, Bugur, Kurta, Karashar, and Turfan. Their inhabitants grow eorn to a consider- able amount, and keep numerous herds of cattle and flocks of sheep. The chief exports are wool, fowls, and the horns of the maral deer. On the lower Tarim, where a few settlements, supported chiefly by fishing, continue to struggle against the encroaching desert, the ruins of formerly populous towns testify that the region was not always the dreary waste it now is,

The population is mixed, Aryans and Turanians being thoroughly intermingled. On the slopes of the Pamir, about Sary-kol, there is a purely Aryan population of Persian Galtchas. Kirghiz and Kara-Kirghiz inhabit the slopes of the Tian-Shan. Kalmucks occur in the north-east ; and in the central parts the population consists of Turkish Sarts and Uzbegs and of Persian Tajak,—the Mongolian element increasing towards the north-east. The language is Turkish, like that spoken in West Turkestan, with several varieties of pvtots and a eonsiderable addition of Chinese words. As arule, the inhabitants of East Turkestan have an air of poverty. There are no rich mosques in their towns, sueh as those of Samarkand and Bokhara ; the houses are of unbaked brick and poorly furnished. The dress is that customary in West Turkestan. But the habits of the people differ to some extent and the women enjoy greater liberty than in other Mohammedan countries: they go in the streets unveiled ; free marriages, contracted for short terms, are not un- frequent. Asarule, the position of women is inore independent —a feature noticed even by the earliest travellers in the country.

The aggregate population of East Turkestan, estimated between 575,000 and 1,500,000 in 1825, is now (1887) hardly more than 1,000,000. Kuropatkin estimates it at 1,200,000, Forsyth at 600,000. The population of the chief towns may be stated approximately as follows—Yarkand, 60,000; Kashgar, 50,000; Khotan, 40,000 ; Sanjn, 35,000; Ak-su, 20,000 ; Kiria, 15,000; Yanghi-hissar, 10,000 ; Kargatyk, 10,000 ; Kurta, 6000.

It appears very probable that at the dawn of history East Turke- stan was inhabited by an Aryan population, the ancestors of the present Slavonic and Teutonic raees, and that a civilization not inferior to that of Bactriana had already developed at that time in the region of the Tarim.’! Our knowledge, however, of the history of the region is very fragmentary until about the beginning of the Christian era. When the Huns (Hiong-nn) occapied west and east Mongolia in 177 b.c., they drove before them the Yue-chi (Yutes, Yetes, or Ghetes), who divided into two hordes, one of whieh in- vaded the valley of the Indus, while the other met the Sace in East Turkestan and drove them over the Tian-Shan into the valley of the li. ‘Thus by the beginning of our era the Tarim region had a mixed population of Aryans and Ural-Altaians, some being settled agriculturists and others nomads.

There were also several inde- pendent cities, of which Khotan was the most important. One portion of the Aryans emigrated and settled in what is now Wakhan (on the Pamir plateau), the present language of whieh seems very old, dating anterior to the separation of the Vedic and Zend languages. In the 1st century the Chinese extended their rule westwards over East Turkestan as far as Kashgar. But their dominion seems to have been merely nominal, for it was soon shaken off. By the end of the 5th century the western parts fell under the sway of the ‘‘ White Huns” or Ephthalites, while the eastern parts were under Tangut (Thygun) dominion. The Chinese, how- ever, still retained the region about Lob-Nor. Buddhism penetrated into the country at an early date; but in East Turkestan there were also followers of Zoroastrianism, of Nestorian Christianity, and even of Manicheism. An active trade was carried on by means

1 Such is the conclusion reached by Lassen (Indische Alterthumskunde), and supported by M. Grigorieff (Ritter’s Asien in Russ. transl. ; Addenda to “ Hast Turkestan,” in Russian). In connexion with the objection based upon the sub-boreal character of the regions which were the cradle of the Aryals, as proved by the so-called paleontology of the Aryan languages, it may be ob- served that by the end of the Glacial, and during the earlier Lacustrine (Post- Glacial) period, the vegetation of Turkestan and of Central Asia was quite different from what it is now. It was Siberian or north European. The researches by M. Krasnoff (see above, p. 635) as to the characters of the former flora of the Tian-Shan, and the changes it has undergone in consequence of the extremely rapid desiccation of Central Asia, must be carefully borne in mind in all speculations founded upon the testimony of language as to the original home of the Aryans.

of numerous caravans. The civilization and political organization of the country were dominated by the Chinese, but were also in- fluenced to some extent by Greco-Bactrian civilization. Buddhism spread rapidly in the south-west, and the study of Pali beeame widely diffused. Our information as to the state of the country from the 2d century to the first half of the 7th is slight, and is chiefly derived from the Journeys of the Buddhist pilgrim

Fa-hien in 399, Song-yun in 518, and Hwen-t’sang in 629. By this time Buddhism had reached its culminating point ; in Khotan there were 100 monasteries and 5000 monks, and the Indian sacred literature was widely diffused; but already there were tokens of its deeay. Even then the eastern parts of the Tarim basin seem to have been growing less and less populous. To the east of Khotan cities which were prosperous when visited by Song-yun had a century later fallen into ruins, while their inhabitants had migrated westwards. Legend has it that all the inhabitants of Go-lao-lo-tsia were buried in a sandstorm, and this seems to be but a poetical way of represent- ing a phenomenon which was steadily going on in East ‘Turkestan.

Little is known about these regions during the 7th, 8th, and 9th centuries. In the 7th century the Tibetan king, Srong-btsan, with the help of the western Turks, subjugated the western part of the Tarim basin. During the following century the Mohammedans under Kotaiba, after several excursions into West Turkestan, took Samarkand, Ferghana, Tashkend, and Khokand (712-713), and invaded East Turkestan, penetrating as far as Turfan and China. The Chinese supremacy was not shaken by these invasions. But, on the outbreak of internal disturbances in China, the Tibetans took possession of the western provinces of China, and intercepted the communications of the Chinese with Kashgaria, so that they had to send their troops through the lands of the Hui-khe (Hoei-ke, or Hoei-hu). In 790 the Tibetans were masters of East Turkestan ; but their rule was never strong, and towards the 9th century we find the country under the Hoi-he. Who these people were is somewhat uncertain. According to Chinese documents, they came from the Selenga ; but most Orientalists identify them with the Uigurs. In the opinion of M. Grigorieff, whom we follow in this sketch,” the Turks who succeeded the Chinese in the western parts of Hast Turkestan were the Karluk Turks, who extended farther south-west up to Kashmir, while the north-eastern parts of the Tarim region were subdued by the Uigurs. Soon Mongolian hordes, the Kara-Kitais, entered East Turkestan (11th century), and theu ne into West Turkestan, Khiva falling under their dominion.

uring the following century Jenghiz Khan overran China, Turke- stan, India, Persia, Russia, and Hungary; Kashgaria fell under his rule in 1220, though not without strenuous resistance followed by massacres. The Mongolian

rule was, however, not very heavy, the Mongols merely exacting tribute. In fact, Kashgaria flourished under them, and the fanaticism of Islam was considerably abated. Wonien again acquired greater independence, and the religions toleration then established permitted Christianity and Buddhism to spread freely. This state of affairs lasted until the 14th century, when Tughlak Timur, who extended his dominions to the Kuen- Lun, accepted Islam. He transferred his capital from Ak-su to Kashgar, and had a summer residence on the banks of Issyk-kul. His son reigned at Samarkand, but was overthrown by Timur-lang (see TimuR), and the reign of the great conqueror was a fertile source of suffering to the region. To put an end to the attacks of the wild Tian-Shan tribes, he undertook in 1389 his renowned march to Dzungaria, which was devastated ; East Turkestan also sutfered severely.

The re-introduction of Islam was of no benefit to the Tarim region. In the 14th and 15th centuries Bokhara and Samarkand beeame centres of Moslem scholarship, and sent great numbers of their learned doctors to Kashgaria. Rubruquis, who visited East Turkestan in 1254, Marco Polo between 1271 and 1275, and Hois in 1680, all bore witness to great religious tolerance; but this entirely disappeared with the invasion of the Bokharian mollahs. They created in East Turkestan the power of the khojas, who afterwards fomented the many intestine wars waged between the rival factions of the White and the Black Mountaineers. In the 17th century a powerful Kalmuck confederation arose in Dzungaria, and extended its sway over the Ili and Issyk-kul basins, having its capital on the Ili. To this power or to the Kirghiz the ‘‘ Whites” and ‘‘ Blacks” alternately appealed in their struggles, in which Yarkand supported the latter and Kashgar the former. These struggles paved the way for a Chinese invasion, which was supported by the White khojas of Kashgar. The Chinese entered Dzungaria in 1758, and there perpetrated a terrible massacre, the vietims being estimated at one million. The Kalmucks fied and Dzungaria be- eame a Chinese province, with a military colonization of Sibos, Solons, Dahurs, Chinese criminals, and Moslem Dzungars. The Chinese next re-conqucred East Turkestan, marking their progress by massacres and transporting 12,500 partisans of independence to the Ili valley. Hercupon the dissentient khojas fled to Khokand and there gathered armies of malcontents and fanatic followers of

2 See Ritter's Asien, " Kast Turkestan " (Russ. trans.), ii. 282; also Kuropat- kin's Kashgaria.

Islam. Several times they succeeded in overthrowing the Chinese rule—in 1825, in 1830, and in 1847—but their successes were never permanent. After the ''rebellion of the seven khojas" in 1847 nearly 20,000 families from Kashgar, Yarkand, and Ak-su fled to West Turkestan through the Terek-Davan pass, many of them perishing on the way. In 1857 another insurrection broke out ; but a few months later the Chinese again took Kashgar (for the details see Kasucar). In the course of the Dzungarian outbreak of 1864 the Chinese were again expelled; and Yakub Beg became master of Kashgar in 1872. But five years later he had again to sustain war with China, in which he was defeated, and East Turkestan once more became a Chinese province.

Bibliography.—The literature on Turkestan has of late years become very voluminous, especially in the form of papers scattered through the periodicals published by the European Geographical Societies and other scientific bodies. The reader is referred to the following works as fitted to facilitate research. Vols. vi. and vii. of Elisée Reclus's Géographie Universelle contain maps showing the routes of the chief explorers. Prof. Mushketoff's Turkestan (in Russian, vol. i. 1886) contains an excellent critical analysis of all explorations of Turke- stan and works thereupon, and the information they contain with regard to

researches into the geography and history of East Turkestan down to 1873. Amu and Uzbot (Saratoff, 1879), by the chief of the Amu-Daria expedition, and Bogdanoff's Review of Expeditions and Explorations in the Aral-Caspian Region from 1720 to 1874 (St Petersburg, 1875) are most useful works. Prof. Lenz's paper '' Ueber den friiheren Lauf des Amu-Daria, in Mem. Acad. Sc. St Petersburg, discusses valuable information borrowed from ancient sources, Mezhoff's Turkestanskiy Sbornik is a catalogue of the Central-Asian library at Tashkend, and his annual " Index" contains full classified lists of Russian geographical literature. Of works of a general

character, with descriptions of both regions (apart from travels), the following, arranged in chronological order, are worthy of mention :— Semenoff's "Tian-Shan," being vol. i. of Ritter's Asien (Russ. trans., 1856); Grigorieff's " East Turkestan," forining two vols. of Ritter's Asien (Russ. transl., 1869 and 1873); Syevertsoffs "Vertical and Hori- zontal Distribution of Mammalia in Turkestan," in Izvestia Lub. Est. of Moscow, 1873; Wenjukoffs Die Russisch-Asiatischen Grenzlande (trans. from Russian by Krahmer, Leipsic, 1874); Hellwald's Centralasien, 1875; Petzholdt's Umschau im Russ. Turk., 1877; Kuropatkin's Kashgaria, 1879 (partially translated into French); Kostenko's Turkestanskiy Krai, 3 vols., 1880, very copious translations from which are embodied in Lansdell's Central Asia, but unhappily too inti- mately combined with less useful information ; Schlagintweit's Reisen in Indien und Hochasien, vol. iii, Hast Turkestan; Prjevalsky's three journeys to Central Asia (the first two translated into English ; all three in German); Olga Fedtchenko's Albwm of Views of Russ. Turk., 1885; Nalivkin's History of the Khanate of Kokand (in Russ.), Kazan, 1885; Vambéry's Das Tiirkenvolk, 1885;

the physical geography and geology of West Turkestan. Prof. Grigorieff's addenda to Ritter's Asie embody the whole of the older and more modern

before had succeeded his father, first coined money and Found- caused the khutba, or public prayer for the reigning ing of monarch, to be read in his name—the two prerogatives of Ottoman

Roskoschny's Afghanistan u. angrenz. Lander (for Afghan Turk.); and Mushke- toffs Turkestan, vol. i. (in Russian), 1886. (P. Aw Ke)

Part I.—HiIstTory. OMEWHERE about the second decade of the 13th

Er-Togh-Shah, its hereditary chief.

rul,

century the little Turkish tribe which in due course was to found the Ottoman empire fled before the Mongols from its original home in Central

Asia, and, passing through Persia, entered Armenia, under the leadership of Suleyman His son, Er-Toghrul, who succeeded him as head of the tribe, when wandering about the country with his warriors came one day upon two armies engaged in a furious battle. Er-Toghrul at once rode to the assistance of the weaker party, who were on the point of giving way, but who through the timely aid thus rendered not only regained what they had lost but totally defeated their enemies. The army thus saved from destruction proved to be that of ‘Ald4-ud-Din, the Seljuk sultan of Asia Minor, and their adversaries to be a horde of marauding Mongols. By way of recompense for this service ‘Al4-ud-Din granted to Er-Toghrul a tract of land on the Byzantine frontier, including the towns of Sugut

an independent sovereign in the East—may be regarded as the birth-year of the Ottoman empire; and it was about this time that his followers and subjects began to call themselves ‘Osmanlis, or, as we might render it, ‘Osmanites. Having thoroughly established his authority in his capital of Yeni Shehr, ‘Osman began to wrest from the Greeks many of the neighbouring towns and strongholds, among others Ayina Gol and Koyun Hisdri, routing before the last named a large Byzantine army. He then turned his attention to the administration of his state, and such was the feeling of security he succeeded in establishing that large numbers of people from the surrounding districts flocked into his dominions and became his subjects. After six years of peace several of the Byzantine castellans of the neighbourhood, instigated by the governor of Brusa (Broussa), made a simultaneous attack upon the Ottomans, but “Osman totally defeated them and sent in pursuit Kara

‘Osmin, and Eski Shehr. ‘Osman, the son of Er-Toghrul and the | ‘Ali Alp, who took possession of all their domains. Ghazan, prince from whom the race derives its name of ‘Osmanli (see | the khan of the Mongols, who had entered into an alliance Turks, p. 661 below), corrupted by Europeans into Otto- | with the emperor of Constantinople, sent to all the Turkish man, was born in Sugut in 1258 (4.4. 656). While still | princes an arrogantly worded message forbidding them to young ‘Osman won from the Greeks Karaja Hisdr (Kara- | do any hurt to the Byzantine territories. To show how hissar) and some other towns, on which account he received | light he held this menace, ‘Osm4n assembled an army from his suzerain, the Seljuk sultan of

Konya (Konieh), the | forthwith, marched to Niceea and thence to the Bosphorus, title of beg or prince, along with the drum and the horse- | laying waste the country as he went and taking possession tail standard, the symbols of princely rank. of a number of towns and villages. Michael, called by Early In 1300 (699) the Seljuk empire (see Sztsuxs) fell to | the Turkish historians Késa Mikhal or Michael Scant- Turkish pieces under the onslaught of the Mongols, who were, how- | beard, the governor of one of these, embraced Isl4m and palities, ever, powerless to replace it by any government of their | became one of the most trusted officers of ‘Osman and

own. Thereupon ten separate Turkish dynasties arose from its ruins: that of Karasi sprang up in ancient Mysia, the houses of Saru Khan and Aydin in Lydia, of Mentesha in Caria, of Tekka in Lycia and Pamphylia, of Hamfd in Pisidia and Isauria, of Karaman in Lycaonia, of Kermiyan in Phrygia, of Kizil Ahmedli in Paphlagonia, and of ‘Osindn in Phrygia Epictetus. These principalities were all eventually merged in that of the ‘Osmanlis, once the least among them, and the inhabitants assumed the name of Ottoman. Hence by far the greater portion of the people called Ottomans owe their name to a series of political events. On the collapse of the Seljuk power the Greeks retained hardly any possessions in Asia except Bithynia and Trebizond. Armenia was abandoned for a time to roving Tatar or Turkman tribes, till some sixty or seventy years later one or two petty local dynasties sprang up and founded short-lived states.

The year 1301 (700), in which ‘Osman, who shortly

of his son and successor Orkhan. The descendants of this Michael were the hereditary commanders of the akinjis, a corps of light cavalry who played a great part in the early Ottoman wars. The first service on which Michael was employed was to destroy, along with Orkhan, a Mongol horde that had taken and pillaged the Ottoman town of Karaja Hisar. Meanwhile ‘Abd-ur-Rahman and Akcha Koja, two of “Osman’s generals, were adding to the Ottoman dominions in the north, capturing several towns and laying siege to the city of Nicwa. The Ottoman chiefs next resolved to acquire Brusa, the natural capital of these parts, So they built round it a series of towers, in which they placed garrisons, with the view of intercepting communications

and eventually starving the city into sub- mission. At length, in 1326 (726), after a desultory siege of eight years, the keys were, through the intervention of Mikhal, handed over to Orkhan, who was in command of the Ottomans, and the townspeople were allowed to ransom

ower,

Orkhan.

| Battle of Xosovo,

[HISTORY. |

themselves for 30,000 sequins. Very soon after this ‘Osman died, aged seventy, at Sugut, whence his remains were carried for burial to Brusa. ‘Osman was distinguished for piety and generosity as well as for equity and courage. He cared nothing for amassing wealth, and on his death his personal effects were found to consist of two or three suits of clothes, a few weapons, some horses, and a flock of sheep. And so high was his reputation for justice that, we are told, many of the Asiatic subjects of the Cesars fled to him for that protection which their own rulers would not or could not give them.

Orkhan, who succeeded his father ‘Osman, continued the war against the Greeks, taking from them Nicomedia, Nicea, and many of the towns which they still retained in Asia. Hitherto the Ottomans had not interfered with the other Turkish states; but now Orkhan, granting a short respite to the Byzantines, took advantage of a dis- pute regarding the succession to the throne of Karasi, entered that principality, and annexed it to his own dominions. To his son Suleyman the Ottomans owe their first establishment in Europe: one night that prince, accom- panied by a few companions, crossed the Hellespont on a raft and surprised the town of Galipoli (Gallipoli). The next day he brought over a number of Turkish troops, with whose assistance he possessed himself of many of the neighbouring towns and villages; but his career was cut short by a fatal fall from his horse when out hunting. Orkhan did not long survive his son, grief at whose un- timely end is said to have hastened his own death, in 1359 (761). This monarch is celebrated for the number of mosques, colleges, and other public institutions that he

founded. During his reign the Ottoman army was thoroughly organized, and a body of regular paid soldiers was raised, which formed the nucleus of the military power of the state, though the old irregular militia was still called out whenever a campaign was to be undertaken. The famous corps of the janissaries (Turkish yeni cher, i.c., ‘‘new troop”) was instituted at this time. It consisted of the children of Christian subjects, who were educated as Mussulmans and brought up to a military life.

Having taken the city of Angora from certain territorial lords who, incited by the prince of Karaman, had attacked the Ottoman dominions, Murad I., the son and successor of Orkhan, found himself free to extend his possessions across the Hellespont. He forthwith passed over into Europe, where he and his generals soon reduced almost all Roumelia, capturing Adrianople, Philippopolis, and many other places of importance. These successes alarmed the Christian princes, who determined to make a vigorous effort to drive the Turks back into Asia. The kings of Bosnia, Hungary, and Servia accordingly marched with a large army upon Adrianople, but were surprised during the night and completely defeated by an inferior Turkish force. Some time after this victory Murad returned to Asia, where he celebrated the wedding of his son Bayezid with the daughter of the prince of Kermiyan, a large portion of whose territory was made over to the ‘Osmanli monarch as the dower of the bride. Next year, when Murad set out to inspect his new possessions, he met the prince of Hamid, whom he constrained to sell all his dominions. The Karaman prince, ever the jealous rival of the Ottoman, now stirred up some of the Turkman tribes to ravage his enemy’s land; but Murdd was beforehand with him, and, entering his country, defeated him and annexed the district of Ak-Shehr to his own kingdom. The Bosnian and Bulgarian princes having allied themselves against the sultan, the Turkish commander in Europe invaded Bulgaria, which was speedily subdued and added to the Ottoman possessions. Murad next entered Servia and advanced to the plain of Kosovo, where he found awaiting him the

levies of Servia, Bosnia, Hungary, Albania, and Walachia. The Turks, though far inferior in number to their adver- saries, gained a complete victory, 1389 (791), but it was purchased with their sovereign's life. After the battle Murad was riding over the field with some of his people, when a wounded Servian, who was lying among the slain, sprang up and stabbed him so that he died almost im- mediately afterwards. In consequence of this battle Servia became subject to the Turk.

Bayezid I., surnamed Yildirim, "Thunderbolt," on account Bayezid

=

of the fury of his attack and the rapidity of his movements, | received the oath of fealty on the battlefield of Kosovo. He did much to secure the position of the Ottomans, in Europe, taking many of the towns which still remained to the Christians in Roumelia. In Asia he annexed the remaining Turkish principalities, and pushed his conquests as far as Cesarea and Sivas. The Christians made another great effort to free themselves from their Eastern foes: whilst Bayezid was absent in Asia, the king of Hungary led a powerful army, in the ranks of which were many knights of France and Germany, into the Ottoman domin- ions and laid siege to Nicopolis. Bayezid sped to the

"rescue, and inflicted an overwhelming defeat on the Chris-

tians. He next turned his attention to Constantinople, the reduction and annexation of which he had long medi- tated, when he was summoned to meet Timur, the Tatar conqueror, who had invaded his Asiatic dominions and taken Sivas. The Ottoman and Tatar hosts encountered each other outside Angora, and there the former sustained their first disastrous overthrow, Bayezid being taken prisoner and his army practically annihilated. Next year, 1403 (805), he died in captivity ; the story of his having been imprisoned in an iron cage is not confirmed by the Turkish historians, and is most probably fictitious. After this victory Timur overran the Ottoman territories in Asia, taking and sacking Brusa, Nicwa, and many other cities. With a view to the complete annihilation of the 'Osmanli power, he restored the independence of the Turkish princi- palities which Bayezid had annexed, and placed them under the rule of their former emirs.

On the withdrawal of Timur from Asia Minor the four surviving sons of Bayezid fought for what was left of their father’s kingdom; after ten years of civil war success

finally rested with Muhammed, who alone of the four is Muham- The attention med I.

reckoned among the Ottoman sovereigns. of the new sultan, whom his people called Chelebi Muham- med or Muhammed the Debonair, was turned rather to the restoration of his father’s empire than to the conquest of neighbouring countries. In Europe he lived on amicable terms with the Byzantine emperor, and the Christian kings further north did not venture to make any serious attack upon him. But in Asia he had to contend with many enemies, the most formidable of whom was the emir of Karaman, who, having been defeated and made prisoner, was generously pardoned and restored to liberty. Another difficulty with which Muhammed had to deal was a strange religious outbreak: a vast number of fanatic dervishes, headed by an apostate Jew and a Turkish adventurer of low birth, rose in revolt, and were only dispersed after several bloody battles. This sultan, who was much be- loved by his subjects and is spoken of with praise by the Byzantine historians, was stricken with apoplexy while riding in Adrianople, and died almost immediately in the thirty-third year of his age, 1421 (824).

The first care of his son and successor Murad II. was Murda

to rid himself of a pretender to the throne who, aided by I. the Greek emperor, had made a descent upon the Asiatic shore of the Dardanelles. This adventurer was soon de- feated and pursued to Adrianople, where he was taken and hanged. In revenge for the assistance rendered to XXIII. — 81

Muham- med II.

Fall of Constan- tinople.

his enemy, the sultan invested Constantinople, but he was compelled to relinquish the siege in order to subdue a revolt headed by his brother, which had broken out in Asia. Murad again annexed all the Turkish principali- ties which had been restored by Timur, except those of Kizil Ahmedli and Karaman, which did not finally become incorporated with theeempire till the time of Muhammed II. The Turks were now called upon to face the most formidable Christian enemy they had yet encountered, namely Hunyady, the illegitimate son of Sigismund, king of Hungary. This famous general, after having inflicted several severe though not very important defeats upon his adversaries, invaded European Turkey with a large army of Hungarians, Poles, Servians, Bosnians, Walachians, and Frankish crusaders, the last-named being under the command of Cardinal Julian. The Ottoman army was utterly routed, Sophia taken, and the chain of the Balkans forced ; and Mur4d was compelled to sign a treaty for ten years, by which he resigned all claims to Servia and gave over Walachia to Hungary. Weary of the cares of state, and thinking that peace was, for a time at least, secured, Murd4d abdicated in favour of his young son Muhammed and sought a quiet retreat in the town of Magnesia. But he was not allowed to enjoy repose for long: the Chris- tian princes, incited by Cardinal Julian and in direct violation of the treaty, assembled their forces, and, under Hunyady as commander-in-chief, without declaring war, entered the Turkish dominions and took many of the Ottoman strongholds in Bulgaria. When the news reached MurAd he resumed the imperial power, put himself at the head of his troops, and advanced to meet the invaders, who had just captured Varna. Outside that town a great battle was fought, in which a copy of the violated treaty, raised high upon a lance, formed one of the standards of the Ottomans. The conflict, which was long and bloody, resulted in the total overthrow of the Christians, the Polish king, Ladislaus, and Cardinal Julian being among the slain, 1444 (848). Murad again abdicated and sought the retirement of Magnesia ; but once again he had to take up the reins of government. This time the janissaries and sipAhis, accustomed to the firm rule of the victor of Varna, had refused obedience to the young Muhammed. The sultan remained at the head of the state until his death, which occurred in 1451 (855).

Muhammed II., who now ascended the throne for the third time, determined to accomplish the long-cherished design of his house, and make

Constantinople the capital of the ‘Osm4nli empire. He easily found a pretext for declaring war against Constantine Paleologus and in the spring of 1453 (857) led an immense army to beleaguer the city. His troops covered the ground before the land- ward walls between the Sea of Marmora and the Golden Horn; but he found that even his monster cannon could do but little against the massive fortifications. At length he resolved to assail the city from its weakest side, that facing the Golden Horn. But the Greeks, having foreseen the likelihood of an attack from this quarter, had thrown a great chain across the entrance to the harbour, thereby blocking the passage against the hostile ships. The Ottomans, however, constructed a road of planks, five miles long, across the piece of ground between the Bosphorus, where their own fleet lay, and the upper part of the Golden Horn. Along this road they hauled a number of their galleys, with sails set to receive the aid of the favouring wind, and launched them safely in the harbour, whence they cannonaded with more effect the weaker defences of the city. This compelled the Greek emperor to withdraw a portion of his little garrison from the point where the more serious attack was being made, to repair the destruc- tion wrought in this new quarter. At dawn on May 29th

the Ottomans advanced to storm the city. The Christians offered a desperate resistance, but in vain. . The emperor died fighting in the forefront of the battle, and at noon Muhammed rode in triumph into his new capital and went straight to the cathedral of St Sophia; there, before the high altar, where the preceding night Constantine had received the Holy Sacrament, he prostrated himself in the Moslem act of worship. The capture of Constantinople is not the only exploit to which Muhammed owes his sur- name of Fatih, or the Conqueror: he also reduced Servia and Bosnia, overthrew and annexed the Greek empire of Trebizond and the Turkish principality of Karaman, acquired the suzerainty of the Crimea, and won many of the islands of the Greek Archipelago from the Venetians and Genoese. But before Belgrade, which he had besieged as the first step to an attack upon the northern kingdoms, he suffered a serious defeat, being

driven wounded from the field by Hunyady and John Capistran, with the loss of 300 cannon and 25,000 men. Rhodes, whither an Ottoman force was despatched, was the scene of another failure: here the Knights of St John gallantly and suc- cessfully withstood their Muhammedan foes, and compelled them to retire from the island. In Albania a long and, for a time, successful resistance was offered to the Turkish arms by the famous George Castriot, the Iskender Beg of the Turks. This chieftain had been in his youth in the service of Murad II., and was by him appointed governor of his native Albania, whereupon he revolted and tried to restore the independence of his country. Among the favourite designs of Muhammed were the subjugation of Italy and the establishment of the Mussulman dominion in the capital of Western Christendom. A Turkish army crossed the Adriatic and stormed the city of Otranto; but its further progress was stopped, and for ever, by the death of the Conqueror, which occurred a few months later, in 1481 (886). The Muhammedan soldiers besieged in Otranto, being unsupported from Turkey, were, after a long and brave defence, forced to surrender.

Bayezid II. was hardly seated on the throne before he Bayeaid was called upon to face a formidable revolt raised by his 1. younger brother Jem. This youthful pretender, who was both talented and high-spirited, was, after a number of adventures, finally compelled to fly the country. He sought the protection of the Knights of St John at Rhodes, who, however, retained him a prisoner, and made an arrangement with Bayezid whereby they received from that monarch a yearly sum of 45,000 ducats as the price of the compulsory detention of his brother. After thirteen years of captivity the unfortunate prince was murdered by Pope Alexander VI. (Borgia), who, it is said, received 300,000 ducats from the sultan as the reward of his crime. Though frequently compelled to engage in defensive wars, Bayezid was of a peace-loving and unambitious disposition, and a few towns in the Morea were all the additions made to the empire while he was on the throne. It was during his reign, however, that the Ottoman fleet began to be formidable to Christendom, the desperate battle off Sapienza, won by Kemal Re’is against the Venetians, being the first of the Turkish naval victories over the Mediterranean powers. Bayezid, whose pacific habits had alienated the sympathies of the janissaries, was in 1512 (918) forced by these dreaded guards to abdicate in favour of Selim, the youngest of his three sons. This

prince had already been in open revolt against his father; but his determined and warlike char- acter had won for him the esteem of the Turkish preetorians. Bayezid's health, which had long been failing, gave way under this blow; and the old sultan died three days after his deposition, at a little village on the way to Demitoka, whither he was going to end his life in retirement.

Selim I. was personally the greatest of the Ottoman

monarchs : his unflinching courage and tireless vigour were not more remarkable than his political sagacity and his literary and poetic talents; but so merciless was he that he has always been known in Turkish history as Yawuz Selim or Selim the Grim. Happily for Europe he turned his attention to the neighbouring Muhammedan states and left the Christian powers in peace. Having caused both his brothers to be put to death, he marched against Persia, the king of which country had given refuge to the family of one of the hapless Turkish princes. The quarrel between them was further embittered by religious hatred: the shah of Persia was the pillar of the Shi'ites, as the Ottoman sultan was of the Sunnites. Selim in his fanatical zeal had ordered a massacre of his Shf'ite subjects, in which forty-five thousand persons suffered death. The shah was eager to avenge the slaughter of his co-religionists. The janissaries showed signs of insubordination upon the march, but Selim resolutely maintained order and reduced them to submission. At length they came upon the Persian host drawn out on the plain of Chaldiran, where a great battle was fought, which ended in the rout of the Persians and left the way to Tabriz, the residence of the Persian king, open to the sultan. Thither Selim proceeded; but eight days later he set out on his homeward march. The battle of Chaldiran brought no addition of importance to the empire; but the districts of Diydér-Bekr (Diarbekr) and Kurdistan, through which the army had passed on the way to Persia, were completely subdued and annexed to the Ottoman dominions. Selim's next important campaign was against the Memluks of Egypt. This body of Eastern chivalry offered a most gallant resistance to the 'Osmanlis ; but, possessing no artillery, which they disdained as un-

becoming men of valour, they were defeated in a series of engagements, and Selim and his army entered Cairo as conquerors in 1517 (923). The results of this war were momentous and far-reaching: the Ottoman empire was greatly increased by the addition of Egypt, Syria, and the Hejaz, of all of which the Memluks had been lords; the ealiphate of Islam was won for the house of ‘Osman, Selim constraining the representative of the old ‘Abbasid family, who resided, a purely spiritual prince, at Cairo, to make over to him and his heirs the rights and privileges of the successors of the Prophet. The sultan at the same time acquired from him the sacred banner and other relics of the founder of Islam, which had been handed down to the Arabian prince from his fathers, and which are now pre- served in the seraglio at Constantinople. On his return Selim set himself to strengthen and improve his fleet, doubtless with a view to the conquest of Rhodes. He died, however, in 1520 (926), before his extensive prepara- tions were completed. This sultan reigned only eight years, but in that short time he almost doubled the extent of the Ottoman empire.

Suleyman I., who succeeded his father Selim as sultan, had not been long on the throne before he found himself involved in a war with the king of Hungary. He marched northwards with a powerful army and wrested from the enemy several places of importance, including the strongly fortified city of Belgrade. Having left a large garrison in this city, which was regarded as the key to the Chris- tian lands north of the Danube, the sultan returned to Constantinople, where he continued his father’s work of creating a strong and efficient Ottoman fleet. When all was ready Suleyman set out for Rhodes, determined to

- wipe away the disgrace of his ancestor’s second failure, as

he had done that of his first. The conquest of Egypt had, moreover, rendered the possession of Rhodes necessary to the Turks, as the passage between Constantinople and their new acquisition could never be safe so long as that island remained in hostile hands. The Knights of St

John met the attack in a manner worthy of their illustri- ous order ; but the overwhelming force of the Ottomans and the hopelessness of any relief compelled them to accept the sultan's terms. These were highly honourable to the de- fenders, who were permitted to retire unmolested, while Suleyman pledged himself to respect the Christian religion in the island, which now, 1522 (929), became his. Four years after the conquest of Rhodes the sultan again invaded Hungary, where in the renowned battle of Mohacz he annihilated the army of the Magyars and slew their king. Thence he marched along the Danube to Buda- Pesth, which opened its gates to him, and there he rested a little while before starting on his homeward way. The disturbed state of Asia Minor hastened Suleyman's depart- ure ; but in three years (1529) he was back at Buda, osten- sibly as the ally of Zapolya, an Hungarian who claimed the throne left vacant by Louis, who fell at Mohacz. Ferdinand of Austria had opposed the claim of Zapolya, who thereon had applied to the sultan for aid, which that monarch was most willing to accord. The troops of Ferdinand being driven from Buda, Suleyman, accom- panied by his protégé, advanced upon Vienna. On 27th September 1529 the vast Turkish host, under the personal command of one of the greatest of the family of 'Osman, laid siege to the capital of the German empire, and on the 14th of the following month, after a most desperate assault carried on for four days, the invaders were compelled to retire, leaving the city in the possession of its heroic defenders. The torrent of Turkish military might had now reached its northern limit : once again it vainly swept round the walls of Vienna, but further it never went. Suleymén next directed his arms against Persia, from which country he won a large portion of Armenia and 'Irak as well as Baghdad, the old capital of the 'Abbasid caliphs. In 1542 he was again in Hungary, having been appealed to by the widow of Zapolya on behalf of her infant son against the pretensions of Ferdinand. Suleyman promised to place the child upon the throne when he should be of a proper age; in the meantime he treated Hungary as an Ottoman province, dividing it into sanjaks or military dis- tricts, and garrisoning Buda and other important cities with Turkish troops. Six years later a truce for five years was concluded between the sultan and Ferdinand, whereby almost all Hungary and Transylvania were made over to the former, who was also to receive a yearly present, or more correctly tribute, of thirty thousand ducats. The Turks, now at the zenith of their

power, were the terror of all around them. The achievements of the Ottoman navy

during the reign of Suleyman were hardly, if at all, less Annexa- Khayr-ud-Din, the tion of

remarkable than those of the army. Barbarossa of the Europeans, won Algiers for Turkey, and

held the Mediterranean against the fleets of Spain and py ip0}j,

Italy ; Torghud added Tripoli to the empire; and Piydla routed the galleys of Genoa, Florence, Naples, and Malta off the isle of Jerba. But fortune did not always smile upon the crescent. In 1565 (973) Suleyman sustained the second great check he was destined to encounter. The Turks once more measured swords with the Knights of St John and drove them from Malta, which had been given to the order by Charles V. on its expulsion from Rhodes. A powerful Turkish army and fleet, commanded by officers of renown, were accordingly despatched to win Malta for the Ottoman crown ; but so valiantly was it defended that the Turks were forced to withdraw with a loss of twenty- five thousand men. Suleyman died in harness. In 1566 (974), when seventy-six years of age, he entered Hungary for the last time, summoned thither to aid his vassal, young Sigismund Zapolya. Sziget, a place which had foiled the Turks on previous occasions, was the first object of attack. Count Zrinyi, the governor, determined to resist to the last,

Selim Il.

Murad Il.

so the Ottomans found themselves compelled to undertake the siege of this comparatively unimportant town. There on the night of 4th September the great sultan died, and a few hours later Count Zrinyi and his brave companions perished amid the smoking ruins of the fortress they had most nobly held. Under Suleyman I., whom European historians call the Magnificent, but whom his own people style Kanuni or the Lawgiver, the

Turkish empire attained the summit of its power and glory. The two great dis- asters, at Vienna and Malta, were eclipsed by the number and brilliancy of the sultan's victories, by which large and important additions were made to the empire in Europe, Asia, and Africa.

Selim II., the unworthy son and successor of the Magni- ficent Suleyman, was the first Ottoman monarch who shrank from leading his army in person. He was a man of mean and ignoble character, whose sole pleasure seems to have consisted in the indulgence of his degraded tastes and vicious appetites. The first conflict between the Turks and the Russians occurred in his reign. In view of a threatened war with Persia, the grand vizier Sokolli con- ceived the idea of uniting the rivers Don and Volga by a canal, by means of which an Ottoman fleet could be sent into the Caspian. But in order to carry out this scheme it was necessary that the town of Astrakhan should be in the hands of the Turks. A considerable force was accord- ingly despatched from Constantinople to take possession of that city; but the Russian army which Ivan the Terrible sent to its relief drove back the Turks and their Tatar allies from before the walls, 1569 (977). Cyprus was the next object of attack. This island, which belonged to Venice, was assailed and taken, though not without heavy loss, at a time of peace between the republic and the Porte, 1570-71 (978). The Christian powers of the Mediterranean were roused and alarmed by this act of treachery, and a maritime league was formed through the efforts of Pope Pius V., with Spain, Venice, and Malta for its most important members. On 7th October 1571 the Christian fleet, under the command of Don John of Austria, encountered the Ottoman ships, led by the galley of the kapudan pasha, Mu'ezzin-zdda 'Ali, just outside the Gulf of Lepanto. A furious conflict ensued, which resulted in the utter defeat of the Turks, their admiral being killed and their fleet almost annihilated. This famous fight, although it brought little immediate material advantage to the victors, was of the highest moral value to them ; for it broke the spell of Barbarossa, and showed that the Ottoman was no longer invincible on the seas. The only other event of importance during this reign was the final conquest of Tunis for Turkey by Kilij 'Alf, who won it from the Spaniards in 1574 (982). Selim IT. died miser- ably the same year.

Murad III., who now succeeded to the Ottoman throne, was no improvement upon his father; he ruled in name only, all real power being in the hands of worthless favour- ites. As a natural consequence the empire began rapidly to decay ; corruption infected all ranks of official society, the sultan himself selling his favours for bribes; while the other great curse of old Turkey, military insubordina- tion, showed itself in a more threatening aspect than ever. The janissaries mutinied on several occasions, and each time compelled the weak Murad to accede to their demand. Notwithstanding this wretched state of affairs, some exten- sive and important, though not permanent, additions were made to the empire. These, consisting of Azerbijan and Georgia—the latter had been in alliance with Persia—were the result of a campaign against the last-named country, the internal condition of which was then even worse than that of Turkey. Transylvania, Moldavia, and Walachia rose in revolt, encouraged by the war which broke out in

KEY

1593 between Turkey and Austria. In 1594 hostilities with Persia were resumed; and early in the following year Murad died, leaving the empire to his eldest son Muhammed III.

[HISTORY,

Things had been going very badly in the war with Muham-

Austria, when in June 1596 the grand vizier and the muftt, joining their voices with that of Sa‘d-ud-Din the historian, prevailed upon the new sultan, whose character resembled only too closely that of his father, to place himself at the head of the Ottoman army which was about to march into Hungary. Four months later Muhammed met the imperi- alists under the archduke Maximilian, and the Transyl- vanians led by Prince Sigismund, on the marshy plain of Keresztes, where a battle lasting three days took place. Although at one time things looked so hopeless for the Turks that the sultan would have fled but for the entreaties and remonstrances of Sa‘d-ud-Din, the ‘Osmanlis gained a complete and decisive victory. But nothing came of it; for Muhammed, instead of following up his success, hastened back to Constantinople to receive the

congratu- lations of his courtiers and to resume his indolent and voluptuous life. Nothing else worthy of note occurred during his inglorious reign. He died in 1603 (1012).

Muhammed III. was the last heir to the Ottoman throne who was entrusted with the government of a pro- vince during his father's lifetime ; henceforth all the sons of the sultan were kept secluded in a pavilion called the Kafes or cage in the seraglio gardens. This new system, which was necessarily very prejudicial to the character of the future rulers, had its origin in the same dread of rivals that caused a sultan in those times to put all his brothers to death immediately on his accession.

The reign of Ahmed I. is not marked by any event of Ahmed],

importance. The peace of Sitavorok (Zsitvatorok) between Turkey and Austria, 1606 (1015), made no change of any moment in the territorial possessions of either power, but is interesting as being the first treaty in which an Ottoman sultan condescended to meet a Christian prince on a footing of equality. Hitherto the Turkish monarchs had affected to grant merely short truces to their European enemies. But this peace was to be permanent ; the annual payment or tribute of thirty thousand ducats by Austria was to be discontinued ; and the ambassadors sent from the Porte were now to be officials of rank, and not, as formerly, menials of the palace or camp.

Ahmed died in 1617 (1026) and was succeeded by his Mustafa

brother Mustafa I. Up till this time the succession had I. been regularly from father to son; but, as Mustafa's life had been spared by his brother on his accession, that prince now ascended the throne in preference to 'Osman, the eldest son of Ahmed I. This arose from the peculiar nature of the Turkish law of succession, which gives the throne to the eldest male relative of the deceased sovereign. Mustafa was, however, imbecile ; so after a reign of three nionths he was deposed, and his nephew 'Osman, though only fourteen years of age, seated on the throne in his stead.

An unsuccessful war with Persia, which had been going 'Osman

on for some time, was now brought to an end by a treaty 1. which restored to the shah all the territories conquered since the days of Selfm II. In 1621 the sultan led his troops against Poland, partially with the view of weakening the janissaries, whom he justly regarded as the most deadly enemies of his empire. This expedition was not attended by any important results, neither Turks nor Poles gaining a decisive advantage. On his return “Osman formed another plan for freeing himself from his tyranni- cal soldiery: he gave out that he was going to make the pilgrimage to Mecca, but his real intention was to proceed only as far as Damascus, there place himself at the head

Murad IV.

Ibrahim.

’U R&R

of an Asiatic army, and march against the janissaries and sip4his in Constantinople. But the janissaries heard of this design and rose in revolt. Incited by a vizier whom ‘Osmdn had deposed, they seized their sovereign and dragged him to the state prison of the Seven Towers, where shortly afterwards he was foully murdered by the traitor minister, 1622 (1031).

The wretched Mustafa was again raised to the throne, only to be deposed fifteen months afterwards in favour of Murad, the eldest surviving brother of ‘Osman.

In Murad IV., who succeeded to the supreme power in 1623 (1032), when a child of eleven years, Turkey had once more a sultan of the old ‘Osmanhi type. Since the death of Suleyman the empire had been cursed with a succession of rots fainéants, under whom it had rapidly fallen to decay. The vigour and courage of the new sultan stayed it for a while upon its downward course, and re- stored to it something of its bygone glory. While still quite young, Murd4d had been compelled by the mutinous janissaries to deliver into their cruel hands his favourite vizier, Hafiz Pasha. This embittered him against that corps, and, when soon afterwards the soldiers began openly to discuss his deposition, Murdd swiftly and suddenly cut off the ringleaders and all others whom he suspected of disloyalty ; this struck fear into the hearts of the dis- affected soldiers, who, finding themselves without any to organize or direct them, returned to their allegiance. Murad next turned his attention to checking the intoler- able corruption and abuses which pervaded every depart- ment of the state. He had but one simple though terribly drastic method of reform,—the execution of every official wliom he even suspected of any malpractice. Having re- stored some sort of order in his capital, Murdd marched against Persia and recaptured the city and district of Erivan. In 1638 (1048) he undertook a second and more important campaign against the same power. His object was the recovery of Baghdad, which had been taken by the shah’s troops some sixteen years before. The Persians resisted long and gallantly, but at length the Turks carried the city by storm, when Murad disgraced himself by the slaughter of a vast number of the inhabitants. By the peace which followed Turkey restored Erivan to Persia, but retained Baghdad, which has been in its hands ever since. Murdd on his return entered Constantinople in triumph. This sultan died in 1640 (1049); his death is said to have been hastened by habits of intemperance, which he had contracted towards the close of his life.

Ibrahim, the brother of the late sultan, now mounted the Ottoman throne. He was another of those wretched princes who gave themselves up to the indulgence of their own follies and vices without bestowing a thought upon the welfare of their people or the prosperity of their country. All the evils that had been curbed for a time by the stern hand of Murad broke out afresh and in worse form than before. The sultan himself was the most venal of the venal. Shut up in the seraglio, he thought of nothing but the gratification of

his own and his favourites' caprices ; gem-encrusted coaches and pleasure-boats, and carpets and hangings of richest sable for his rooms, were among the objects for which he plundered his people and sold every office to the highest bidder. This went on for eight years, till at length his subjects, weary of his ex- actions and tyranny, deposed him, and made his son Muhammed, then only seven years of age, sultan in his room. The only events of note that occurred during Ibrahim's tenure of power are the capture of Azoff from the Cossacks and the occupation of Crete. This island, which was then in the hands of Venice, was soon overrun, but it was not till well on in the next reign, after a siege of twenty years, that the Ottomans succeeded in taking Candia the capital.

1566-1687,]

KE Y 645

The minority of Muhammed IV., who became sultan in Muham- 1648
(1058), was marked by all the troubles and evils that med IV.

might have been anticipatéd, until the grand vizierate was conferred on Képrili Muhammed in 1656 (1067). This statesman, who was seventy years old when he entered upon the duties of prime minister of Turkey, was the founder of an illustrious family of viziers, whose integrity and strength of character did much to counteract the per- nicious influence of degenerate sultans and to prop up for a season the declining empire. Old Képrili accepted the office of grand vizier only upon condition of receiving absolute power ; this he employed much in the same way as Murad IV. had done when he set about the work of reform: he executed every one who fell under his suspicion. He died in 1661 (1072), leaving the vizierate to his son Fazil Ahmed. Ahmed was, like his father, a man of great ability, and happily for Turkey he enjoyed the complete confidence of the young sultan, who cared for nothing but the chase, whence he is called in the Ottoman histories Avji Muhammed or Muhammed the Huntsman. Before long Ahmed was called on to lead the Turkish army against Austria. He took Neuhiiusel and several places of little importance ; but near the convent of St Gotthard (on the Raab) he was completely defeated in 1664 (1075) by a smaller Christian force under Montecuculi. A truce for twenty years on the basis of the treaty of Sitavorok was the result of this battle ; the Ottomans,

however, re- tained Neuhausel. Ahmed next appeared in arms in Crete, for the purpose of bringing to a close the siege of Candia, which had been going on ever since 1648; but it was not till other three years had passed that the brave garrison opened the gates to the grand vizier, in 1669 (1079). The sultan himself was induced to head the next campaign, which was undertaken on behalf of the Cossacks of the Ukraine, who had craved the protection of the Porte against Poland. The Turks took the cities of Kamenetz and Lemberg, whereupon King Michael sued for peace, 1672 (1083), and promised to make over Podolia and the Ukraine to Turkey and to pay an annual tribute of 220,000 ducats. The sultan accepted these terms and returned home in triumph ; but the Poles refused to be bound by them, and under the command of Sobieski they attacked and defeated the troops of Ahmed Pasha. The war lasted till 1676, when it was brought to an end by the treaty of Zurawno, which left the sultan in possession of Podolia and almost all the Ukraine. Three days after this peace was signed Ahmed Pasha died. Few men have done more to ruin their country than Kara Mustafa, who succeeded Ahmed in the grand vizierate. His pet scheme was the conquest of Germany and the establishment of a great Turkish province between the Danube and the Rhine, with himself as nominal viceroy but virtual sovereign. He

accordingly marched with an enormous army, probably not Siege of In the Vienna.

far off half a million strong, against Vienna. summer of 1683 (1094) this mighty host appeared before the walls of the Austrian capital. For an account of the siege, see vol. xix. p. 296. A few weeks after his discom- fiture Kara Mustafa was executed at Belgrade by the sultan’s orders. Venice and Russia now declared war against Turkey; misfortune followed misfortune ; city after city was rent away from the empire; the Austrians were in possession of almost the whole of Hungary, the Italians of almost all the Morea. At length a severe defeat at Mohacz, where Suleyman had triumphed years before, exhausted the patience of the soldiery, and Muhammed TV. was deposed in 1687 (1099).

The first year of the reign of Suleyman II., who suc- Suley- ceeded his brother, was marked by a serious mutiny of the ™én IL

janissaries of the capital, who, aided by the dregs of the population, created a reign of terror in Constantinople,

Ahmed II.

Mustafa Il.

646

during which they pillaged the palaces of the principal officers of the government and murdered the grand vizier, along with many of the members of his household. The Austrians, under Charles of Lorraine, Louis of Baden, and Prince Eugene, were carrying all before them in the north : Erlau, Belgrade, and Stuhlweissenburg fell into their hands; and by the end of 1689 the Ottomans had lost almost all their former possessions beyond the Danube. Meanwhile the Venetian leader, Morosini, was equally successful in the Morea, completing the conquest of that province, which he added to the dominions of St Mark. When matters had come to this pass, the sultan summoned an extraordinary meeting of the divan to consult on the measures to be taken to meet the danger threatening on every hand. By the unanimous advice of his ministers, Suleyman appointed to the grand vizierate Képrili-zada Mustafa, another son of old Képrili Muhammed. This statesman, who had been trained in the duties of office under his father and brother, worthily upheld the high name of his house. He gave up the whole of his gold and silver plate to be coined into money wherewith to pay the troops; he sought out the best men to fill positions of trust and responsibility in the army and navy; and he exercised and encouraged a wise and just policy of toleration towards the Christian subjects of the sultan. Such was the confidence which his high character and illustrious connexion inspired that large numbers of volunteers hastened to join the Turkish hosts ; and in a very few weeks from the time when he took com- mand of the army Mustafa had driven the Austrians out of Servia, and Belgrade once more received a garrison of Ottoman troops. Mustafa returned in triumph to Con- stantinople, where, early in the summer of 1691 (1102), Suleyman IIL. died, and was succeeded on the throne by his brother Ahmed II.

The most important event which occurred during the brief and disastrous reign of this monarch was the defeat and death at Slankamen (Szlankament)

of K6prili-zada Mustafa, who in August 1691 advanced from Belgrade to attack the Austrians under Louis of Baden. The un- fortunate result of the battle was in great measure owing to the rashness of the vizier, who, in opposition to the advice of the oldest and most experienced of his officers, refused to await behind the lines the attack of the enemy. The Ottomans fought with desperate courage ; but the day was decided against them by the death of Mustafa, who was shot while cutting his way through the Christian ranks. Ahmed II. reigned for four years, during which the hapless empire, besides continuing to suffer defeat at the hands of foreign foes, was visited with the curses of pestilence and domestic insurrection.

On the death of Ahmed II. in the year 1695 (1106) Mustafa IL, son of Muhammed IV., was girt with the sword of ‘Osman. The new sultan, aware of the pitiful condition to which the empire had sunk, in part, at least, through the negligence and indifference of his pre- decessors, resolved to restore the old Ottoman usages, and placed himself at the head of his armies. His first cam- paign was altogether successful: he recaptured several important fortresses and totally defeated a great Austrian army. During the following winter he worked hard to repair the finances and bring the forces of the empire into a higher state of efficiency ; and, when he set out in the spring against the Austrians, fortune continued to smile upon his banners. He defeated the duke of Saxe, raised the siege of Temesvar, and strengthened the garri- sons of those fortresses which Turkey still held in Hungary. But in the next year, 1697, all was changed : Prince Eugene was at the head of the Austrians, and on the banks of the Theiss, near Zenta, the Turks sustained an overwhelming defeat, which compelled the sultan to

retreat to Temesvar. ‘Thence he returned to Constanti- nople, and never again led an army against the enemy. Recourse was once more had to the house of K6prili, and Amuja-zida Huseyn, a nephew of old K6prili Muhammed, was promoted to the grand vizierate. Huseyn raised fresh troops ; but he saw that what was really needful was peace, and this he succeeded in bringing about.

on the one hand and Austria, Venice, Russia, and Poland on the other. The basis of the treaty, agreed to with certain modifications, was that each power should retain the territories in its possession at the time of opening negotiations. This arrangement left Austria in possession of Transylvania and almost all Hungary and Slavonia ; Venice remained mistress of its conquests in Dalmatia and the Morea; Poland received Podolia; and Russia, which under Peter the Great was only now becoming con- scious of its strength, retained Azoff, which it had wrested from Turkey three years before. Huseyn Pasha took advantage of the restoration of peace to check the disorders which had sprung up in various parts of the empire, and to endeavour to effect much-needed reforms in many de- partments of the state. But unfortunately his efforts were thwarted by others less disinterested than himself; and, broken-hearted by the calamities of his country, he retired from office three years after the peace of Carlowitz, and very shortly afterwards died. Mustafa II. very soon followed the example of his minister, and abdicated in 1703 (1115) in favour of his brother Ahmed III.

Although the peace of the empire was often broken Ahmed during his reign, Ahmed III. was not of a warlike disposi- UL

tion, and all the representations and entreaties of Charles XII. of Sweden, who after the disaster of Pultowa had taken refuge in Turkey, failed to induce him to re-open hostilities with the czar. In 1710 Nu‘man Pasha, son of Amuja-zida Huseyn, and the last of the Képrili family, was appointed grand vizier. Though able and tolerant, he was so much addicted to interfering in the business of his sub- ordinates that he became the object of general dislike, and was dismissed from his office after holding it for four- teen months. The menacing preparations of Russia in the south had more influence with the Porte than the prayers of the Swedish king, and in 1711 the new grand vizier, Baltaji Muhammed, marched into Moldavia to meet the forces of Peter the Great, who had formed an entrenched camp near the village of Hush, on the right bank of the Pruth. Here the vizier blockaded him, and after two days’ severe fighting compelled him to surrender with all his army. By the treaty which followed the czar pledged himself, among other things, to restore the fortress of Azoff and all its dependencies to the sultan, and to grant the king of Sweden a free and safe passage to his own

country through the Muscovite dominions. The lenity of Baltaji Muhammed in not destroying the czar and his army when they were within his grasp caused such discontent at Con- stantinople that he was dismissed from the vizierate, which was conferred on ‘Alf Pasha, known as Damad ‘Alf or ‘Ali the Son-in-Law, from the circumstance of his having married a daughter of the sultan. This vizier distinguished himself by winning back from Venice the whole of the Morea in a single campaign (1715). His next venture, a war against Austria, undertaken in the following year, had a very different issue, he himself being slain and his army routed in a great battle at Peterwardein. Next year Prince Eugene, the conqueror of Damdd ‘Alf, laid siege to Belgrade, which he forced to capitulate after driving off a large army sent by the Turks to its relief.

acquired that portion of Hungary which had remained in ™’

At Carlowitz Peace of on 26th January 1699 a peace was arranged, through the Carlo- intervention of England and Holland, between Turkey “

These events Treaty of – led to the peace of Passarowitz in 1718, by which Austria Passat

‘Mahmud I,

Wars with Russia.

1687-1791.]

the possession of Turkey, as well as extensive territories in Servia and Walachia. The grand vizier Ibrdhim, another son-in-law of the sultan, who was at the head of affairs from 1718 to 1730, contrived to secure for the empire an un- usually long respite from internal disorders ; but the sultan’s love of costly pomp and splendour and the luxurious magni- ficence of his court rendered him so unpopular that, in consequence of a riot in the autumn of 1730 (1143), he voluntarily abdicated the throne, and his nephew Mahmud I. became padishah in his stead. (z. J. W. G.)

LMistory from 1718.

With the treaty of Passarowitz the Venetian republic disappears from the scene of Turkish warfare. Russia gradually becomes a more formidable enemy than Austria ; and the subject Christian races imperceptibly enter on the first stages of national consolidation and revival. After the long and resultless war with Persia hostilities again broke out with Russia in 1736. Marshal Miinnich stormed the lines of Perekop and devastated the Crimea; but he was unable to maintain his army there and retreated with greatly diminished forces. Azoff was taken by General Lascy ; and in the following year Otchakoff fell into the hands of Miinnich, while the Crimea was again invaded and ravaged. Austria now joined Russia, and the Porte had to sustain a war in Servia and Bosnia as well as on the coasts of the Black Sea. The double combat was carried on with very different results. While the Russians won victory after victory, and finally penetrated into the heart of Moldavia, the Austrians were defeated and driven across the Danube. On their advancing from Belgrade in the summer of 1739 they were defeated with great loss at Krotzka, and compelled to sue for peace. The treaty of Belgrade, which was signed on lst September 1739, restored to the Porte Belgrade and Orsova, with the portions of Servia, Bosnia, and Walachia which it had ceded to Austria at the peace of Passarowitz. Russia, unable to continue the war with a victorious Turkish army ready to fall upon its flank, had to conclude peace on very moderate terms. It received Azoff, but under a stipulation that the fortifications should be razed, and that no Russian vessels of war should be kept either on the Black Sea or on the Sea of Azoff. The peace was the last advantageous one made by the Porte without allies; and the succeeding thirty years were on the whole a period of respite from misfortune.

After this followed the wars with the empress Catherine, before whose genius and resources it seemed as if Turkey must inevitably sink into nothingness. The first contest was provoked by the arnied intervention of the empress in Polish affairs and her well-known intrigues with rebellious subjects of the Porte. War was rashly declared by Mustafa III. in October 1768. In 1769 the Russians entered Moldavia and captured the fortress of Choczin (Chotim) ; in the following year their armies made good the conquest of Moldavia and Walachia, while a fleet from the Baltic entered the Greek Archipelago and landed troops in the Morea. The Greeks of the Morea rose in insurrection ; they were, however, overpowered, and the

small Russian force withdrew, leaving the Greeks to the vengeance of their conquerors. At sea the Turks suffered a severe defeat near Chios, and their fleet was subsequently blockaded and set on fire in the Bay of Tchesme, the principal officers in the Russian navy being Englishmen. Assistance was, moreover, given by the Russians to Ali Bey, a Mameluke chieftain who was in rebellion against the Porte in Egypt, and to Tahir, a sheikh who had made himself independent at Acre. In 1771 the Russians invaded and conquered the Crimea. Austria now took alarm, and signed a con- vention with the Porte preparatory to armed intervention.

But the partition of Poland reunited the three neighbour- ing Christian powers and prevented a general war. An armistice was agreed upon between Russia and the Porte, and negotiations followed. These were broken off in 1773. The Russians crossed the Danube, and, though unsuccess- ful in their attempts upon Silistria and Varna, so com- pletely defeated the Turkish forces in the field that on 21st July 1774 the Porte concluded peace at Kutchuk- Kainardji under conditions more unfavourable than those which it had rejected in the previous year. The Tartar territory of the Crimea, with Kuban and the adjoining districts, was made into an independent state, Russia retaining Azoff, Kertch, and Kinburn. Moldavia and Walachia were restored, but on the condition that, as occasion might require, the Russian minister at Constan- tinople might remonstrate in their favour. Russia, in fact, was given a species of protectorate over these provinces. Permission was given to Russia to erect a church in Con- stantinople, and the following engagement was made: “The Porte promises to protect the Christian religion and its churches; and it also allows the court of Russia to make upon all occasions representations as well in favour of the new church at Constantinople as on behalf of its ministers, promising to take such representations into con- sideration.” Out of this clause arose the claim of Russia to the right of protection over all the Christian subjects of the Porte, though the specific right of intervention was clearly attached only to a single church and its ministers. By other clauses in the treaty the obligations restraining Russia from making fortifications and placing ships

of war on the Black Sea were annulled. It received the right of free navigation for its merchant ships on all Turkish waters, and the right of placing consuls at all Turkish ports. These last two conditions were of great historical importance through their effect upon Greece. The consuls appointed were usually Greek traders, and permission to carry the Russian flag was indiscriminately given to Greek vessels. Hence there followed that great development of Greek commerce, and of the Greek merchant navy, which in half a century made the insurgent Greeks more than a match for the Turks at sea.

The stipulation that the Crimea and adjoining districts should be made into an independent state was of course not intended by Russia to be anything more than a veil for annexation ; and in 1783 Catherine united this territory to her dominions. She had now definitely formed the plan of extinguishing Turkish sovereignty in Europe and placing her younger grandson on the throne of a restored Greek kingdom. The boy was named Constantine; his whole education was Greek and such as to fit him for the throne of Constantinople.

besieged Otchakoff, Joseph invaded Bosnia; but he was unsuccessful and retired ingloriously into Hungary. Otcha- koff was stormed by Suwaroff on 16th December 1788. In the following year the Turkish armies were overthrown by Suwaroff in Moldavia and by the Austrian Laudon on the south of the Danube. The fate of the Ottoman empire seemed to tremble in the balance; it was, how- ever, saved by the convulsions into which Joseph’s reckless autocracy had thrown his own dominions, and by the triple alliance of England, Prussia, and Holland, now formed by Pitt for the preservation of the balance of power in Europe. Joseph died in 1790; his successor Leopold II. entered into negotiations, and concluded peace at Sistova in August 1791, relinquishing all his conquests except a small district in Croatia. Catherine continued the war alone. Ismail was captured by Suwaroff with fearful slaughter, and the Russian armies pushed on south of the Danube. Pitt, with

Joseph IT. of Austria threw himself War with eagerly into the plan for a partition of the Ottoman empire, Russia and in 1788 followed Russia into war. While the Russians 224

Affairs

648 YO ip

the triple alliance, attempted to impose his mediation on the empress Catherine, and to induce her to restore all her conquests. She refused, and both Prussia and Eng- land armed for war ; but public opinion declared so strongly against the minister in England that it was impossible for him to pursue his plan. Catherine nevertheless found it in her interest to terminate the war with the Porte. Poland claimed her immediate attention; and, adjourning to a inore convenient season her designs upon Constantinople, she concluded the treaty of Jassy in January 1792, by which she added to her empire Otchakoff, with the sea- board as far as the Dniester. The protectorate of Russia over Tiflis and Kartalinia was recognized.

Catherine's successor Paul (1796-1801) made it his business to reverse his mother's policy by abandoning the attack on Turkey. Bonaparte's invasion of Egypt and

in Evypt the destruction of the French fleet by Nelson at the battle

and Syria.

Internal condi- , tion of empire.

of the Nile led the Porte to join the second coalition against France. Bonaparte, invading Syria, was checked and turned back at Acre, where Jezzar Pasha was assisted in his strenuous defence by an English squadron under Sir Sidney Smith. A Turkish army was meanwhile trans- ported from Rhodes to the Egyptian coast. This army was destroyed by Bonaparte on his return to Egypt at the battle of Aboukir on 25th July 1799, after which Bona- parte set sail for France, leaving the Egyptian command to Kléber. Kléber, cut off from all communication with France and threatened by superior Turkish forces, entered into a convention at El Arish for the evacuation of Egypt. This convention, however, was annulled by Lord Keith, the English admiral, and Kléber replied by giving battle to the Turks and defeating them at Heliopolis on 20th March 1800. Egypt was finally wrested from the French by the English expedition under Abercromby, and

restored to the sultan. The Ionian Islands, which France had taken from Venice at the time of the treaty of Campo Formio, were conquered by a combined Russian and Turkish force, and were established as a republic, at first under the joint protectorate of Russia and the Porte, afterwards under the sole protectorate of Russia. The former Venetian ports on the mainland of Epirus and Albania were given up to Turkey. Somewhat later, under pressure from St Peters- burg, the sultan undertook not to remove the hospodars, or governors, of Walachia and Moldavia without consult- ing Russia, and to allow no Turks except merchants and traders to enter those territories.

On the restoration of peace France reassumed its ancient position as the friend and ally of the Porte. The sultan now on the throne was Selim III. (1789-1807). Though the results of the war of the second coalition had been favourable to Turkey, the Ottoman empire was in a most perilous condition. were making themselves independent of the sultan’s author- ity ; a new fanatical sect, the Wahhabees, had arisen in Arabia and seized upon the holy places; the janissaries were rebellious and more formidable to their sovereign than to a foreign enemy; and the Christian races were beginning to aspire to independence. It had seemed for a while as if the first to rise against the Porte would be the Greeks, among whom the revolutionary influences of 1789 and the songs of the poet Rhegas, put to death by the Turks in 1798, stirred deep feelings of hatred against their oppressors. Circumstances, however, postponed the Greek revolt and accelerated that of the Servians. In the country immediately south of the Danube the sultan’s authority was defied by the janissaries settled about Belgrade and by Passwan Oglu, ruler of Widdin in Bulgaria. The pasha of Servia, hard pressed by these rebels, called upon the rayas to take up arms in defence of the sultan. They did so, and in 1804 the janissaries

Everywhere the provincial governors

“m iW

answered by a series of massacres in the Servian villages.

[HISTORY.

\,

The Servians now rose as a nation against the janissaries, Servian

Kara George became their chief, and in combination with revolt.

the pasha of Bosnia, acting under the sultan's orders, ex- terminated the janissaries or drove them out of the country. Victorious over one oppressor, the Servians re- fused to submit to another. They carried on the war against the sultan himself, and at the suggestion of Russia sent envoys to Constantinople demanding that for the future the fortresses of Servia should be garrisoned only by Servian troops.

When the third European coalition against France was Difficul-

in course of formation Russian and French influences were ties of

in rivalry at Constantinople. The victories of Napoleon

in 1805 gave him the ascendency, and his envoy prevailed eign.

upon the sultan to dismiss, without consulting Russia, the hospodars of Walachia and Moldavia, who were considered to be agents of the court of St Petersburg. This was a breach of the engagement made by the sultan in 1802, and it was followed by the entry of Russian troops into the principalities. England, as the ally of Russia, sent a fleet under Admiral Duckworth through the Dardanelles to threaten Constantinople. While the admiral wasted time in negotiations, the French ambassador, General Sebastiani, taught the Turks how to fortify their capital. The English admiral found that he could do nothing, and repassed the Dardanelles, suffering some loss on the passage. The war on the Danube was not carried on with mucli vigour on either side. Alexander was occupied with the struggle against Napoleon on the Vistula ; Selim ITI. was face to face with mutiny in Constantinople, having brought upon himself the bitter hatred of the janissaries by attempt- ing to form them into a body of troops drilled and discip- lined after the methods of modern armies. While the military art in Europe had been progressing for centuries, Turkey had made no other changes in its military system than those which belonged to general decay.

Its troops were a mere horde, capable indeed of a vigorous assault and of a stubborn defence, but utterly untrained in exer- cises and manceuvres, and almost ignorant of the meaning of discipline. Selim was a reformer in government and administration as well as in military affairs. He broke from the traditions of his palace, and began a new epoch in Turkish history; but the influences opposed to him were too strong, and a mutiny of the janissaries in Con- stantinople deprived him of his crown, He was allowed to live, but as a prisoner, while the puppet of the janis- saries, Mustafa IV., was placed on the throne (May 1807).

A few weeks after this event the treaty of Tilsit ended the war between France and Russia, and provided for the nominal mediation of Napoleon between Russia and the Porte. A truce followed between the armies on the Danube. Among the Turkish generals who had understood the neces- sity of Selim's reforms, and who were prepared to support

him against the janissaries, was Bairaktar, commander at Bairak-

Rustchuk. As soon as the truce gave him freedom of tar.

action, Bairaktar marched upon Constantinople. Leading his troops against the palace, he demanded the restoration of Selim. As the palace gates were closed, Bairaktar ordered an assault; but at the moment when his troops were entering Selim was put to death. Besides Mustafa there was only one member of the house of Osman remain- ing, his brother Mahmud, who concealed himself in the furnace of a bath until the palace was in the hands of Bairaktar's soldiers. (July 1808). vizier. He was rash enough, however, to dismiss part of his own soldiers from Constantinople. The janissaries attacked him in his palace. A tower in which he defended himself was blown up, and after a battle in the streets of

He was then placed on the throne Mahmud For a while Bairaktar governed as grand ll.

17oi-11827.]

Constantinople between the janissaries and the remainder of Bairaktar's troops, during which the dethroned sultan Mustafa was put to death, the

janissaries remained con- querors, and Mahmud was forced to submit to their de- mands. The innovations of the late reign were abolished, and for a while Mahmud seemed content to reign as ser- vant of the reaction.

It is well known that plans for the partition of the Otto- man empire occupied Napoleon and Alexander at Tilsit. Austria, though unwilling to see Russia aggrandized, was prepared in the last resort to combine with the dismember- ing powers, if all attempts to prevent the execution of the plan by diplomatic means should fail. But after a few years the alliance declined and a war between France and Russia was seen to be inevitable. Meanwhile the conflict on the Danube had been resumed, and the Servians were still in arms. The Russians had advanced into Bulgaria and captured Silistria. England, which had made peace with Turkey in 1809, sought to reconcile the belligerents, in order that the czar might be free to employ his whole Peace of force against Napoleon. In May 1812 a treaty was signed Bucha- at Bucharest, by which Bessarabia was ceded to Russia, vest. the river Pruth becoming the boundary of the two empires. The Porte in this treaty promised to grant an amnesty to the Servians, to leave to them the management of their internal affairs, and to impose upon them only moderate taxes. These promises, however, were neither accepted by the Servians as a sufficient concession, nor were they observed by the Porte. The Servians continued to fight, and ultimately secured their autonomy about 1817 without help from Russia.

Mahmud II. (1808-1839) was the only sultan of modern times who possessed the qualities of a great ruler. Brought up in the seclusion of the seraglio till the age of twenty- three, when he was suddenly placed on the throne, it is surprising that he should have shown the power, the re- solution, and the intelligence which marked his govern- ment. The difficulties of his reign were enormous. He belonged to an epoch when the Ottoman empire might fairly be considered as in actual dissolution. This he to some extent arrested, and the reforms which he effected, partial and imperfect as they were, have prolonged the existence of the Turkish state to our own day. The first and most obvious internal danger to be met was the insub- ordination of the provincial pashas. Against these rebelli- ous servants Mahmud waged a persistent and unwearying war, now employing them against one another, now crush- ing them by his own armed force.

One of the most for- AliPasha midable was Ali Pasha of Janina, who had made himself fJanina. master of Albania and part of Greece. When Mahmud in 1820 threw his armies upon this chieftain, the outbreak of hostilities in Epirus was the signal for the insurrection of Greece. While Hypsilanti, grandson of a hospodar of Moldavia who had been put to death by the Porte, raised the standard of revolt.in Moldavia, asserting that Russia had promised the Chri8Wans its support, the Greeks of |sreek re- the Morea rose and exterminated the Turkish population polt. among them. Hypsilanti was soon crushed ; and the ris- ing in the Morea was answered by massacres of the Greeks in the principal cities of the empire, and by the execution of Gregory, patriarch of Constantinople, the head of the Greek Church. These deeds of violence excited the utmost indignation in Russia. A despatch was sent to Constanti- nople, calling upon the Porte to restore the churches which had been destroyed, to guarantee the inviolability of Christian worship in the future, and to discriminate in its punishments between the innocent and the guilty. These demands were presented as an ultimatum by the Russian ambassador, who, not receiving an answer within the time allowed, quitted Constantinople (27th July 1821). The

wUiw@ bY

649

influence of Austria and England, however, restrained the emperor Alexander from declaring war, and the Greeks were left to sustain their combat by themselves. As long as Ali Pasha was unsubdued, the only forces which the sultan could employ against the Greeks were irregular bands of volunteers. It was by one of these hordes that the fearful massacres of Chios, in the spring of 1822, were perpetrated. In that same spring, however, the overthrow and death of Ali set free the regular troops. Two armies of considerable strength now moved southwards from Thessaly, with the object of reducing the country north of the Gulf of Corimth and then uniting to conquer the Morea. The western army, commanded by Omer Brionis, was checked by the Suliotes, and subsequently beaten back by the defenders of Missolonghi. The eastern army, after advancing under the command of Dramali into the Morea, was compelled to retreat. But the passes in its rear had been seized by the Greeks; on all sides the enemy

closed in upon it; and it was only through the disorders of the Greeks themselves that Dramali's force escaped annihila- tion. _Of those who survived the encounter most perished by sickness and famine in the neighbourhood of Corinth. Nor was the fortune of the Ottomans better at sea. The destruction of their admiral's vessel with all its crew by the fire-ship of the Greek captain, Kanaris, caused such terror that all further attempts to reduce the islands were abandoned, and the fleet returned to the Dardanelles. After an interval of ineffective land warfare, the sultan determined to call upon Mehemet Ali, pasha of Egypt, for assistance. Mehemet had risen to power in the disturbed period that followed the expulsion of the French from Egypt. He had a more powerful fleet than that of his sovereign, and an army disciplined after the European system. In calling upon his powerful vassal for help the sultan must have been aware of the dangers which his ag- grandizement would involve. Mehemet eagerly responded Mehemet to Mahmud's call; and his son Ibr4him, in command of a Ali's as- powerful armament, set sail in the spring of 1824 from 'ince Alexandria against Crete. This island was rapidly con-purkey, quered, and Ibrahim, after failing in some combined opera- tions against Samos, crossed over to the Morea. Here he marched across the peninsula, carrying all before him. Nauplia alone maintained its defence, while the Egyptian sent out his harrying columns, slaughtering and devastat- ing in every direction. From the Morea Ibrahim was summoned to assist the Turks, who had been for nine months unsuccessfully engaged in a second siege of Mis- solonghi. Ibrdhim began his siege operations in the beginning of 1826; but it was not for three months more that Missolonghi fell. The tide of Ottoman conquest moved on eastwards, and the acropolis of Athens capitu- lated in the following year. But the defence of Misso- longhi had lasted long enough to bring the powers of Europe into the field. On the death of the emperor Alexander at the end of 1825, Canning sent the duke of Wellington to St Petersburg to negotiate conditions of joint diplomatic action on the part of England and Russia. A protocol signed at St Petersburg on 4th April 1826 fixed the conditions on which the mediation of Great Britain was to be tendered to the Porte. Greece was to remain tributary to the sultan, but to be governed by its own elected authorities and to be independent in its com- mercial relations, The surviving Turkish population was to be removed from Greece; all property belonging to Turks, whether on the continent or the islands, was to be purchased by the Greeks. This protocol was

developed into the treaty of London between England, Russia, and France, signed in July 1827, by which the three powers bound themselves to put an end to the conflict in the East. In pursuance of this treaty the mediation of the XXIII. — 82

Battle of Hydra.

Nava- rino,

Suppres- sion of janis- saries.

War with Russia.

650

powers was offered to the Porte, and an armistice demanded. It was contemptuously refused. The united fleets of the powers consequently appeared before Navarino, where Ibra- him was assembling his forces for an expedition against After a vain attempt at negotiation, they entered the harbour and fought the battle of Navarino, on 20th October 1827, in which the Turco-Egyptian fleet was totally destroyed. Canning had just died; his successors could only speak of Navarino as an “untoward event” and with- draw from further interference, leaving Russia and the Porte face to face. After a proclamation by the sultan calling the Mohammedans to arms, war was declared by Russia in April 1828. The moment was singularly favourable for Russia, for Mahmud had, little more than a year before, exterminated the janissaries. After bringing over soldiers from Asia to make him secure of victory in the event of a conflict, he had called upon the janissaries to contribute a certain number of men to the regiments about to be formed on the European pattern. The janissaries refused and raised the standard of rebellion. Mahmud opened fire on them with cannon, and the slaughter did not cease until the last of them had perished. The great difficulty in the way of a military reorganization was thus removed, and the newly-modelled regiments were raised to about 40,000 men. Small as the army was with which he had to meet the Russian invasion in 1828, the campaign of that year was honourable to the Turkish arms. Though Varna fell into the hands of the Russians, Silistria and Shumla were successfully defended, and the Russians, after suffering great losses, were compelled to

withdraw to winter quarters on the Danube. In the following year they advanced through Bulgaria, defeated the Turks at Kulevtcha, and, after the surrender of Silistria, crossed the Balkans under the command of Diebitsch. They reached Adrianople, which immediately capitulated. Diebitsch, concealing the real weakness of his force, sent out detachments towards the Euxine and the Mgean, while the centre of his army marched on Constantinople. Had the sultan known the insignificant number of his enemy, he might safely have defied him. But the wildest exaggerations were current in the capital; Kars and Erzeroum had fallen into the hands of Paskiewitch, commander of the czar's forces in Asia ; and in Constantinople the friends of the slaughtered janissaries threatened revolt. Mahmud listened to the advocates of peace, and on 14th September hostilities were

Treaty of brought to a close by the treaty of Adrianople. This treaty

Adrian- ople.

gave Russia the ports of Anapa and Poti on the eastern coast of the Black Sea; but its most important clauses were those which confirmed and extended the protectorate of the czar over the Danubian principalities. The office of hospodar, hitherto tenable for seven years, was now made an appointment for life, and the sultan undertook to permit no interference on the part of neighbouring pashas with these provinces. No fortified point was to be re- tained by the Turks on the left bank of the Danube ; no Mussulman was to reside or hold property within the principalities. The Bosphorus and the Dardanelles were declared free and open to the merchant ships of all nations. The Porte further gave its adherence to the treaty of London relating to Greece, and accepted the act entered into by the allied powers for regulating the Greek frontier. An indemnity in money was declared to be owing to Russia; and by leaving the amount to be fixed by subsequent agreement Russia retained in its own hands the most powerful means of enforcing its influence at Constantinople. The suzerainty over Greece, which the powers had at first agreed to leave to the sultan, was by common consent abandoned, and Greece became an independent kingdom. At the close of eight years of warfare Mahmud's south- ernmost provinces were even more completely severed from

rerRkK ny

the empire than Servia and the Danubian principalities. Conflict It was in vain that he had borne the humiliation of calling with upon his vassal, Mehemet Ali, for help, and Mehemet's Mehemet

[HISTORY.

reward had now to be paid. Crete was offered to him; this, however, was far from satisfying his ambition, and in November 1831 he threw an army under Ibrahim into Palestine and began the conquest of Syria. The sultan now declared Mehemet and his son to be rebels, and de- spatched an army against them. The first encounter took place in the valley of the Orontes. The Turks were put to the rout, and retired into Cilicia. Ibrdhim following gained a second victory at the pass of Beylan, and, after crossing Mount Taurus, destroyed the last army of the sultan at Konieh, on 21st December 1832. In this ex- tremity Mahmud looked for help to the European powers, and Russia at once tendered its aid. At the request of the sultan a Russian fleet appeared before Constantinople. The French ambassador thereupon threatened to quit the capital; and finally, under French mediation, terms of peace were signed with Ibrahim at Kutaya (April 1833), the sultan making over to his vassal, not only the whole of Syria, but also the province of Adana between Mount Taurus and the Mediterranean.

Scarcely had this treaty been concluded when Russian Alliance influence again won the ascendency at Constantinople, and with a treaty of alliance between Turkey and Russia was signed 8%

at the palace of Unkiar Skelessi, which in fact reduced Turkey to the condition of a vassal state. The form of the treaty was skilfully framed to disguise the relation of dependence which it created and the right of intervention in the internal affairs of the Ottoman empire which it gave to Russia. Each power pledged itself to render assistance to the other not only against the attack of an external enemy but wherever its peace and security might be en- dangered. Another article declared that, in order to diminish the burdens of the Porte, the czar would not demand the material help to which the treaty entitled him, but that in lieu thereof the Porte undertook, when- ever Russia should be at war, to close the Dardanelles to the war-

ships of all nations. The control of the Dardanelles was thus transferred from Turkey to Russia, and the en- trance to the Black Sea converted into a Russian fortified outpost. In this treaty, brilliant as it appeared, Russia had gone too far. The Western powers declared that they would not recognize it, and the most strenuous and system- atic efforts were henceforth made both by France and England to diminish Russian influence in the East. France, anxious to gain in Egypt a counterpoise to England's naval power in the Mediterranean, made itself the patron and ally of Mehemet Ali. England adhered to the cause of the sultan, and on many occasions showed its hostility to Mehemet. Thus the two Western powers, though both in antagonism to Russia, were directly in conflict with one

another in their Eastern policy. Mahmud in the mean- Renewal time was steadily preparing to renew the war with his rival. of war

He obtained the services of Moltke and other Prussian

officers in organizing his army, and, after a successful met,

campaign against the rebellious tribes of Kurdistan, as- sembled his troops in the spring of 1839 on the upper Euphrates, and marched against Ibrahim. In the opera- tions which followed the advice of the European officers was persistently disregarded by the pasha in command; and on 24th June the Turkish army was annihilated by Ibréhim at Nisib. To complete the ruin of the empire, the Turkish admiral, Achmet Fewzi, sailed into the port of Alexandria and handed over his fleet to Mehemet Ali. The sultan did not live to hear of the overthrow of his hopes. He died in the same week in which the battle of Nisib was fought, leaving the throne to his son 'Abd-ul-Mejid (1839-1861).

ction + Eng nd an Wirance.

'ing in massacres of the former.

1827-1876.]

The very suddenness of these disasters contributed ulti- mately to the preservation of the Ottoman empire, inas- much as it compelled the powers

of Europe to take action. The French and English fleets appeared in the Dardan- elles. The czar saw that it was impossible to maintain the treaty of Unkiar Skelessi, and this treaty was tacitly abandoned. Russia now addressed itself to the task of widening the existing differences between France and England. France insisted on far more favourable condi- tions for Mehemet Ali than England would allow, demand- ing that Egypt and all Syria should be given to him in hereditary dominion, with no further obligation towards the sultan than the payment of an annual tribute. Russia and the other powers took part with England, and ulti- mately, without asking the sanction of France, the four powers signed a treaty pledging themselves to enforce upon Mehemet the terms proposed by England, which practically reduced him to the position of an ordinary pasha in Palestine, while leaving him the hereditary govern- ment of Egypt. On the publication of this treaty Thiers, the French minister, prepared for war. He was, however, dismissed by Louis Philippe, and his successor, Guizot, accepted the situation. As Mehemet Ali refused to give up his conquests, an Anglo-Austrian naval squadron was sent to co-operate with a Turkish force in attacking the coast-towns of Syria. Acre was captured, and Ibrahtm, assailed by the mountain tribes of the interior, was forced to retire to Egypt. A convention made between Mehemet and Sir Charles Napier, who had appeared at Alexandria with part of the fleet, formed the basis of the ultimate settlement, by which Mehemet, after formal submission to the sultan, was recognized as hereditary governor of Egypt. Russia now united with the other powers in a declaration that the ancient rule of the Ottoman empire, forbidding the passage of the Dardanelles to the war-ships of all nations, except when the Porte should itself be at war, was accepted by Europe at large.

The young sultan entered on his reign nominally as an

- independent sovereign, but really under the protection of ‘the European powers.

His minister, Reshid Pasha, who had gained in an unusual degree the confidence of Western statesmen, understood the necessity of bringing the Turkish system of government more into harmony with the ideas of the civilized world. An edict, known as the Hatti- sherif of Gulhane, announced

the speedy establishment of institutions ‘‘which should insure to all subjects of the sultan perfect security for their lives, their honour, and their property, a regular method of collecting the taxes, and an equally regular method of recruiting the army and fixing duration of service.” Scarcely had this edict been published when Reshid was driven from power by a palace intrigue. His reforming efforts, like those of Mahmid, were not wholly ineffective ; yet little was realized in com- parison with what was promised and what was needed. The Turkish Government was soon discredited, and the intervention of Europe required, by conflicts between the Christian and Mohammedan tribes in the Lebanon, result- After the convulsions of 1848 the sultan incurred the enmity of the autocratic courts by refusing to give up Kossuth and other exiles who had taken refuge within his dominions. The suppression of the national Hungarian Government by Russia in 1849 had heightened in the emperor Nicholas the sense of his own power. He now looked forward to the speedy extinction of Turkey, and in 1853 proposed to the British ambassador, Sir H. Seymour, a plan for the division of ‘the sick man’s” inheritance as soon as he should expire. Disputes between France and Russia relating to the rights of the Latin and Greek Churches in certain sacred places were made the occasion for the assertion of a formal claim on the part of

the czar to a protectorate over all Christians in Turkey belonging to the Greek Church. This claim not being acknowledged by the Porte, a Russian army entered the Danubian principalities. After ineffective negotiations war was declared by the sultan on 4th October 1853. Hostilities commenced in Walachia, and the Turkish fleet was attacked and destroyed at Sinope. England and France allied themselves with the Porte, and landed an army at Varna in the spring of the following year. Silistria was successfully defended by the Turks; and, on the occupation of the Danubian principalities by Austria, the allies took

up the offensive and transferred their forces to the Crimea. Crimean The siege of Sebastopol followed, ending in its capture in War.

September 1855. Meanwhile Russian and Turkish forces were opposed in Asia. Kars maintained a gallant defence, but succumbed to famine two months after the fall of Sebastopol. The peace of Paris followed, in which Russia ceded to Turkey the portion of Bessarabia adjacent to the mouth of the Danube. The Black Sea was neutralized, Russia and the Porte alike engaging to keep no war-ships and to maintain no arsenals there. The exclusive pro- tectorate of Russia over the Danubian principalities was abolished, and the autonomy of these provinces, as well as of Servia, placed under the guarantee of all the powers. The Porte published a firman, the Hatt:~~Humaiun, profess~~ ing to abolish "every distinction making any class of the subjects of the empire inferior to any other class on account of their religion, language, and race," and establishing complete equality between Christians and Mahommedans ; the powers in return declared the Porte admitted to the advantages of the public law and concert of Europe. The absurd stipulation was added that no right should thereby accrue to the powers to interfere either collectively or separately in the relations of the sultan with his subjects.

The Crimean War gave to part of the Balkan population Internal twenty years more of national development under the 4is-

slackened grasp of the Porte; and by extinguishing the friendship of Austria and Russia it rendered the liberation of Italy possible. But each direct proviso of the treaty of Paris seemed made only to be mocked by events. Scarcely a year passed without some disturbance among the Christian subjects of the sultan, in which the interfer- ence of the powers invariably followed in one form or another. A new series of massacres in the Lebanon in 1860 caused France to land a force in Syria. Walachia and Moldavia formed themselves into a single state under the name of Roumania, to which the house of Hohenzollern soon afterwards gave a sovereign. Bosnia and Montenegro took up arms. Servia got rid of its Turkish garrisons. Crete fought long for its independence, and seemed for a moment likely to be united to Greece under the auspices of the powers; but it was ultimately abandoned to its Turkish masters. The overthrow of France in the war of 1870 and the consequent isolation of England led Russia to declare the provision of the treaty of Paris which excluded its ships of war and its arsenals from the Black Sea to be no longer in force. To save appearances,

the British Government demanded that the matter should be referred to a Huropean conference, where Russia's will was duly ratified.

A few years later the horizon of eastern Europe visibly darkened with the coming storm. Russian influences were no doubt at work; but the development of national feeling which had so powerfully affected every other part of Europe during the 19th century could not remain without effect among the Christian races of the Balkan peninsula. In 1875 Bosnia and Herzegovina revolted. In the meantime the government of 'Abd-ul-'Aziz (1861- 1876) had become worse and worse. The state was bank- rupt. Ignatieff, the Russian ambassador, gained complete ascendency in the palace, and frustrated every attempt on

652

the part of the better Turkish statesmen to check the torrent of misrule. His creature, Mahmud Pasha, main- tained his place in spite of universal contempt, until a conspiracy was formed at Constantinople, which cost the sultan his throne (30th May 1876) and a few days later his life. His imbecile successor, Murad V., gave place after a reign of three months to 'Abd-ul-Hamid II. The Bosnian insurrection had already extended to Bulgaria, and the slaughter of the Turkish inhabitants in certain villages had been avenged by massacres of the most fearful character. Servia and Montenegro took up arms. The resources of European diplomacy were exhausted in fruit- less attempts to gain from the Porte some real securities

Warwith for better government, and in April 1877 Russia declared

Russia.

Treaties of San Stefano and Berlin.

war. The neutrality of Austria had been secured by a secret agreement permitting that country to occupy Bosnia and Herzegovina, if Russia should extend its influ- ence beyond the Balkans. The Bulgarian massacres had excited such horror and indignation in England that Lord Beaconsfield was forced to remain neutral. The ministry contented itself with stating that England would not per- mit Egypt to be the scene of hostilities, nor

acquiesce in any prolonged occupation of Constantinople by Russian troops. Turkey was thus left without anally. The Russians entered Bulgaria in June; and, while Rustchuk was besieged, their advanced guard under Gourko hurried across the Balkans. Meanwhile Osman Pasha, coming from Widdin, occupied and fortified Plevna on the Russian line of march. Against his redoubts the Russians, ill commanded, threw themselves in vain, and Gourko was compelled to fall back on the Shipka Pass. But in December the capture of Plevna, in which Roumanian troops cooperated, set free the invading army, and the march on Constantinople was resumed, The Balkans were passed in mid-winter ; Adrianople was occupied; and the Turkish armies were captured or annihilated. The Russians now pressed forward to the very suburbs of Constantinople, and on 3d March 1878 peace was concluded at San Stefano. In Asia the Russians had captured Kars and were besieging Erzeroum. The treaty of San Stefano ceded to Russia the portion of Bessarabia taken from it in 1856, together with the Dobrudja, and also Kars, Batoum, and the adjoining territory in Asia. It recognized the independence of Servia, Montenegro, and Roumania, and largely extended the territory of the first two. Bulgaria was constituted an autonomous state, though tributary to the Porte, and was defined so as to extend to the A‘gean Sea and to include the greater part of the country between the Balkans and the coast. Crete, Thessaly, and Epirus were to receive the necessary reforms at the hands of a European com- mission. To this treaty Great Britain refused to give its assent, and vigorous preparations were made for war. The fleet was at the Dardanelles, and Indian troops were brought to Malta. Russia could no longer count on the neutrality of Austria. Under these circumstances the court of St Petersburg consented to submit the treaty to a European congress, which, after a secret agreement had been made between Russia and England on the principal points of difference, assembled at Berlin. The treaty of San Stefano received various modifications, the principal being a reduction of the territory included in Bulgaria and the division of that state into two parts. Bulgaria north of the Balkans was constituted an autonomous prin- cipality ; Bulgaria south of the Balkans was made into a province, with the title of Eastern Roumelia, subject to the authority of the sultan, but with a Christian governor and an autonomous administration. Austria received Bosnia and Herzegovina. The territory ceded to Servia and Montenegro by the treaty of San Stefano, as well as that ceded to Russia in Asia, was somewhat diminished.

The Porte was advised to make some cession of territory to Greece, and the line of frontier subsequently recom- mended gave to Greece Janina as well as Thessaly. The usual promises of organic reform were made by Turkey. By a separate convention England undertook the defence of Asiatic Turkey and received Cyprus. The organization of Eastern Roumelia was duly taken in hand by a Euro- pean commission and brought to a favourable conclusion ; but it was not until a naval demonstration had been made by England that the final cession of Dulcigno to the Monte- negrins was effected, and that Thessaly, without Epirus, was

given up to Greece. Alexander of Battenberg became prince Bul- By a popular movement in 1885 Bulgaria garian

of Bulgaria.

,

and Eastern Roumelia were united into a single state. question,

This revolution occasioned the utmost displeasure at St Petersburg ; and under Russian influence Prince Alexander was kidnapped and forced to abdicate. The Porte offered

no armed resistance to the union. (cae)

Literature.—The best work on Ottoman history is Von Hammer’s Geschichte des Osmanischen Reiches (Buda-Pesth, 1834-35), which covers the period between 1300 and 1774. The author availed himself of the writings of the Turkish annalists as well as of those of his European predecessors; and all later Western historians of the empire have borrowed directly or indirectly from his volumes. This valuable work has been translated into French by Hellert, Histoire del’ Empire Ottoman (Paris, 1835-41), The best English work is Creasy’s History of the Ottoman Turks (London, 1854-56); it is compiled for the most part from Von Hammer.

Prince Cantemir of Moldavia’s History of the Growth and Decay of the Othman Empire (London, 1734) contains many interesting particulars, but is not always trustworthy. The best Turkish authorities for the period 1300-1730 are—Sa‘d-ud-Din, 1’dj-ut-Tevarikh (1300-1520) ; Pechevi, Tartkh, t.e., “History” (1520-1631); Natima, Tarikh (1591-1659); Rashid, Tarikh (1661-1722); and Chelebi-zada, Tarikh (1722-28). For the later period, see Zinkeisen, Geschichte des Osmanischen Reiches, 7 vols, (Hamburg and Gotha, 1840-63); Finlay, Greece under Othoman Domination (Edinburgh, 1856); Kanitz, Donau-Bulgarien (Leipsic, 1875-79); Prokesch-Osten, Geschichte des Abfalls der Griechen (Stuttgart, 1867); Finlay, Greek Revolution (Edinburgh, 1861); Bourchier’s Codrington; H. von Moltke, Russisch-Tiirkische Feldzug (1828-29) (2d ed., Berlin, 1877); H. von Moltke, Briefe tiber Zustiinde in der Tiirket (1835-39) (3d ed., Berlin, 1877); Prokesch-Osten, Mehmed Ali (Vienna, 1877); Rosen, Ge- schichte der Tiirket (1826-56) (2 vols., Leipsic, 1866-67); Kinglake, Invasion of the Crimea (6 vols., new ed., Edinburgh, 1875-80); Hichmann, Reformen des Osmani- schen Reiches (Berlin, 1858); V. Baker, War in Bulgaria (2 vols., London, 1879); W. Miiller, Russisch-Ttirkischer Krieg (Stuttgart, 1878). For the diplomatic his- tory, see Aus Metiernich’s Papieren (Vienna, 1880-84); Wellington, Despatches(new ser., London, 1867-71); Gentz, Dépéches Inédites (3 vols., Paris, 1876-77); Sir H. Bulwer, Palmerston (2 vols., London, 1871); Guizot, Mémoires (Paris, 1858-67); Sir F. Hertslet, British and Foreign State Papers (London, 1819, and still in progress), and Map of Europe by Treaty (1875); Parliamentary History; and Papers Presented to Parliament.

SULTANS OF THE Hovsz oF ‘OSMAN.

The dates are those of the sultan’s accession, according to the Moslem and Christian eras.

A.H. A.D.

1, ‘Quintin 1. caesnesce screen son of Er-Toghrul ..... 700 1801 Pig O) dsc) hn ipenermencaes coach. son of Osman Loco… 726 1326 OD QM coisa sina sna set @on) Of OURAN... 000000 s.0ers 761 1359 4. “Baye Ue ocr yor Gnd Wilwuml, Ny ooooogsonooane 791 1889 I bovieevortay eb bt apaasando sobbing noo ncod cho) GeouapudaCoaGu 804 1402

5. Muhammed I. ..... son Of Bayezid. I. ...s.0..ce0e 816 1413 me UU Ae son of Muhammed I…..... 824 1421 7. Muhammed IT…..... SOT Of MMA TT isnt exnse 855 1451 8. Bayer UW. oti. serae son of Muhammed II. ..... 886 1481 O. SelM, Kesccocenss es gon-of Bayezid UY. ..c.c0..00 918 1512 10. Suleynmin I. .....cssta SOnlOL SelimMles cree eres 926 1520 Tdie, yeti JN, earns ceca son of Suleyman I…..... 974 1566 V2. Ma VN cps caenee SOM GE SOU M, cicse.vecnes 982 1574 13. Muhammed III. ..... Son) of Mumia WT sescesees 1003 1595 IAN Aimed veces nae ace son of Muhammed ITI. ..... 1012 1603 NB. Milustata: To, sssicessvane son of Muhammed ITI. ..... 1026 1617 16) Osmeli Wo icsscscscsonans Sou Of Avail: [e..nccsenes cannne 1027 1618 VITA HEMT AIM ss srceea rev ersiswiots (Mestored yy… cer snusonem eee 1081 1622

Tf. WY ee cock ncecn sce Son Of Alammed Gl tieccceee-saco 10382 1623 TS. UOUOHA oo… caves o— Son of Aimed 1, oo .50. ccc. scene 1049 1640 19. Muhammed IV…..... son of lbralium') vy.a0c0 sue 1058 1648 20) SuleymanUll…i….---0- son of liloraliiam! Gam… .cnpenee 1099 1687 PAGE. LD cagsens'en ved son Of IDTSHIM .....:...ss0n0% 1102 1691 22, WISE MT… .. cossooe nse sou of Muhammed IV. ..... 1106 1695 23. BMOMEO TIL. cic. ssinsal son of Muhammed IV. ..... 1115 1708 24, Malimindg, ...0/..0e50s son of Mustafa IT. ..... 1143 1730 26. 'Ogman TUT csawsmeroon somot WL usta 1. .incuswann 1168 1754 26. Mista EU… icnvscnes son of Ahmed ITI. ..... 1171 1isi 27. 'Abd-ul-Hamid I. ..... on Of Ahmed Bl… 21… -00 1187 1778 Zo. Womm Ve cc wecescss «sae son of Mustafa III. ..... 1203 1789 29, MinistatawlVe came son of 'Abd-ul-Hamid I. ...1222 1807 305 Malm) Ul. . scenes son of 'Abd-ul-Hamid I. ...1223 1808 31. 'Abd-ul-Mejid …..... son of Mahmud IT…..... 1255 1839 32. 'Abd al AZIZ .....0+0..8OH Ol Mec mMIC ANGE wc 2seresce 1277. 1861 BEE GeeGl Wy Bonocassonooane son of 'Abd-ul-Mejid …..... 1293 1876 34, 'Abd-ul-Hamid II. ...son of 'Abd-ul-Mejid …..... 1293 1876

Plate VI.

Bound- aries.

Area and popula- tion.

“graphy.

GEOGRAPHY. |

Part IL—GEroGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

Turkey, or the Ottoman empire (Osmanii Vilateti), embraces extensive territories in south-eastern Europe, western Asia, and northern Africa, grouped mainly round the eastern waters of the Mediterranean, and along both sides of the Red Sea, the west coast of the Persian Gulf, and the southern and western shores of the Black Sea. These territories form an aggregate of provinces and states, some under the direct control of the sultan, some enjoying a large share of political autonomy, some practically independ- ent, either administered by foreign powers or ruled by hereditary vassals or tributary princes. The present (1887) extent of the Ottoman empire is about 1,692,150 square miles, and its popula- tion 42,346,000.

EvROPEAN TURKEY.

Since the Russo-Turkish War of 1878 (see above), the extremely irregular frontiers of European Turkey are conterminous with Greece in the south, and in the north with Montenegro, Austria, Servia, and Roumania, being separated from the last country partly by the Danube, partly by a conventional line drawn from Silistria on that river to Mangalia on the Black Sea. By the’Berlin congress Roumania and Servia, hitherto vassal states, were made absolutely independent kingdoms, Roumania at the same time receiving the district of Dobrudja between the lower Danube and the Black Sea, and Servia those of Nish and Leskovatz about the upper Morava river. Montenegro was also recognized as an independ- ent principality, with an increase of territory, which gave ita sea

frontier limited southwards by the river Boyana, and including °

the Albanian ports of Dulcigno and Antivari on the Adriatic. The Greco-Turkish frontier was also shifted north, Greece obtaining most of Thessaly and a strip of Epirus (south Albania), so that since 1881 the border line runs from near Mount Olympus on the Gulf of Saloniki (40° N. lat.) west to the Pindus range, then south- west to the Gulf of Arta on the Ionian Sea. A still

more serious step was taken towards disintegration by the withdrawal of Bulgaria and Eastern Roumelia from the immediate jurisdiction of the Sublime Porte. The former was constituted a tributary principality, with representative institutions, and Eastern Roumelia was erected into an autonomous province, both under the guarantee of the European powers. But in 1885 the latter province declared for union with Bulgaria, and since then these two territories have practically formed one state administered from Sophia, Europe assenting and Turkey consenting (imperial firman of 6th April 1886) on the retrocession to Turkey of the Moslem districts of Kirjali and the Rhodope. In the year 1878 Austria occupied and assumed the civil administration of the north-western provinces of Bosnia and Herzcgovina, besides taking military possession of the contiguous strategical district of Novi-Bazar. The direct possessions of the sultan have thus been reduced in Europe to a strip of territory stretching continuously across the Balkan Peninsula from the Bosphorus to the Adriatic (29° 10’ to 19° 20’ E. long.), and lying in the east mainly between 40° and 42° and in the west between 39° and 48° N. lat. It corre- sponds roughly to ancient Thrace, Macedonia with Chalcidice, Epirus, and a large part of Illyria, constituting the present administrative divisions of Stambul (Constantinople, including a small strip of the opposite Asiatic coast), Edirneh (Adrianople), Saloniki with Kosovo (Macedonia), Janina (parts of Epirus and Thessaly), Shkodra (Scutari or upper Albania). To these must be added the Turkish islands in the Aigean usually reckoned to Europe, that is, Thasos, Samothrace, Imbros, and, in the extreme south, Crete or Candia, with estimated (1887) areas and populations as under :—

a Area in q Provinces. Square Miles. Population. COTSEATIAMOM Cerie ets cieie ce syoisctrlec jeu ea ascne gests 1,100 1,200,000 FNOTIAMOPIC faceseclec 2 da. 0s cit 12,800 560,000 Saloniki and Kosovo .. 32,000 1,900,000 AMINA Ge eee. «oc 14,000 1,440,000 SYCTUEy GPCR Omen ence 13,000 390,000 Candia and other islands 8,800 230,000 Iinmediate possessions…….....6- 76,700 5,720,000 Bulgaria, tributary principality……..... 24,300 2,008,000 Hast Roumelia, antonomous province …..... 14,000 975,000 Bosnia, Herzegovina, and Novi-Bazar, occupied SV SPAMLUGUTIAMRE cc tater ere rents eiiave 0 e%alescee a eoare 23,570 1,504,000 Total European Turkey since 1878 .. 188,570 10,207,000 Dobrudja, ceded to Roumania…….....+.- 4,200 150,000 Nish

and Leskovatz, ceded to Servia……..... 4,250 367,000 Dulcigno, &c., ceded to Montenegro……..... 2,000 116,000 Parts of Thessaly and Epirus, ceded to Greece 2,000 100,000 (?) Total European Turkey before 1878.. 151,020 10,940,000

For detailed accounts of the physical features, climate, fauna, and flora of these regions, the reader is referred to the articles ALBANIA, Bosnia, BunGaria, CONSTANTINOPLE, Erirus, Hrrzrcovina, Macrponia, and Turacr. Here it will suffice to remark in a general way that the territory still directly administered from

Stambul comprises one of the most favoured regions of the temperate zone. The extensive igneous and metamorphic system of the Great Balkans and Rhodope (Despoto-Dagh), culminating in the Rilo Dagh (9000 feet), interspersed in the Pindus range farther west by Permian formations of unknown age, and succeeded in the extreme east (both sides of the Bosphorus) by Lower Devonian sandstones and some more recent volcanic rocks, is pierced by the four rich alluvial valleys of the Maritza, Kara-su or “Blackwater,” Struma (Strymon), and Vardar. These rivers, flowing in nearly parallel south-easterly courses to the Mgean, collect most of the drainage of Roumelia, as Thrace and Macedonia are commonly called by the Turks. The whole region thus enjoys a somewhat southerly aspect, sheltcred from the north by the lofty crests of the Rilo Dagh and northern Pindus, and in every way admirably suited for the culti- vation of most cereals, as well as of cotton, tobacco, madder, the mulberry, the vine, and fruits. Here maize yields such a bountiful harvest that, although originally introduced from America, it has long been regarded as indigenous, and for the Italians is simply the Turkish corn (“gran turco’’) in a pre-eminent sense, The inhabit- ants also, Greeks intermingled with Turks in the east, with Bul- garians in the west, are intelligent and industrious, noted for their skill in the manufacture of carpets and other woven goods, of saddlery, arms, and jewellery.

Asiatic TURKEY.

The mainstay of the Ottoman dynasty is the Asiatic portion of the Bound- ee where the Mohammedan religion is absolutely predominant, aries. an

where the naturally vigorous and robust Turki race forms in Asia Minor a compact mass of many millions, far outnumbering any other single ethnical element and probably equalling all taken collectively. Here also, with the unimportant exception of the islands of Samos and Cyprus and the somewhat privileged district of Lebanon, all the Turkish possessions constitute vilayets directly controlled by the Porte. They comprise the geographically distinct regions of the Anatolian plateau (Asia Minor), the Armenian and Kurdish highlands, the Mesopotamian lowlands, the hilly and partly mountainous territory of Syria and Palestine, and the coast- lands of west and north-east Arabia. The changes caused by the Russo-Turkish War of 1878 were the cession to Persia of the little district of Kotur on the eastern frontier and to Russia of the districts of Kars and Batoum on the north-east frontier, while to England were conceded the military occupation and administration of Cyprus. Asiatic Turkey is conterminous on the east with Russia and Persia; in the south-west it encloses on the west, north, and north-east the independent part of Arabia. Towards Egypt the frontier is a conventional line drawn from Akabah at the head of the Gulf of Akabah north-westwards to the little port of El Arish on the Mediterranean. Elsewhere Asiatic Turkey enjoys the ad- vantage of a sea frontage, being washed in the north-west and west by the Euxine, Agean, and Mediterranean, in the south-west by the Red Sea, and in the south-east by the Persian Gulf. The above enumerated five natural divisions of Asiatic Turkey are divided for administrative purposes into about twenty vilayets, which, however, have been and still are subject to considerable

fluctuations. The subjoined grouping, with areas and populations, Area and is based mainly on data lately communicated confidentially to the popula- His estimates of population tion.

British Government by Mr Redhouse. have been strikingly confirmed by the official returns that have for the first time just been made for certain provinces in Asia Minor and the Armenian highlands. Thus the census of the Trebizond vila-

yet, completed in 1886, gave a total of 1,010,000, which differs only by 7000 from Mr Redhouse’s estimate for 1878 (1,017,000). So also the just completed (1887) census for the Erzeroum vilayet gives 583,000, or 998,000 including the territory ceded to Russia in 1878, which is 45,000 higher than Mr Redhouse’s estimate.

Natural . Area in .

Divisions. Provinces. Square Miles. Population.

(Broussa with Bigaand Ismid 32,000 1,900,000

Aidin (Smyrna) 23,000 1,610,000

HASHUSIGEVTINLLTL Voretele efolerahelelalepetstars 21,000 1,260,000

‘ A ANGORA ase. 27,000 860,000

Asia Minor Konieh ey ae te 39,000 1,280,000

C102 i CneOReIo oD 65 Gani 16,000 470,000

[Siva with Janik……..... 26,000 1,770,000

duel nigel Gannocoacenrs 0000 12,000 1,010,000

Armenia and Erzeroum and Van…..... 40,000 ; rT aan oa

Kurdistan Diarbekr with Aziz …... 38,000 560,000

z (GCC ccscscarrorstonr en’s 100,000 4,750,000

Mesopotamia /) Basra with El-Hasa |... 31,000 1,085,000

(25 Se) me ReeiowaeMleleoiaes serhirrnei 46,000 1,450,000

Syria and Damascus ‘ 1,560,000

Palestine WEGDANTOM, OF oi edceie ever ae 35,000 450,000

cee 890,000

Arabia TRO F corns ceaaneeye 200,000() | { 120009

aoe Me shad cs tracunstarants 1,700 525,000

ULILOSMEMey sneer catia rsiaotoaceisvemonters 210 41,000

OVADEUISS .sorerer eters ere nasuteis anes 3,670 235,000

Total Asiatic Turkey….; 691,580 | 24,339,000

Physieal features.

654

Detailed descriptions of Asiatic Turkey will be found under the separate articles ARABIA, ARMENIA, ASIA MiNor, KURDISTAN, MESOPOTAMIA, PALESTINE, and Syria. Of these natural divisions Asia Minor or Anatolia is by far the most important for extent, population, and natural resources. It constitutes an elevated and fertile plateau enclosed by irregular mountain ranges, which in the Taurus and Antitaurus on the south and east rise to from 7000

PUR ic i

[GEOGRAPHY.

two holy cities of Mecca and Medina. These are held by military occupation, probably at a loss to the imperial exchequer, and cer- tainly against the wishes of the inhabitants. But these drawbacks are supposed to be more than compensated by the political prestige derived from the possession of the Holy Land of Islam.

AFRICAN TERRITORIES.

Since the abandonment of eastern or Egyptian Soudan in 1884, Area and consequent on the revolt of the Mahdi, and the occupation of popula. Tunis by the French in 1881, Turkey in Africa has been reduced tion,

to 10,000 feet, culminating in the voleanic Erjish-Dagh, or Argeus, nearly 12,000 feet high. ‘The plateau, which has a mean altitude

of some 3000 feet, is depressed in the centre, where the Tuz-gol (Tatta Palus) and several other lacustrine basins have at present no outflow, but which appear to have formerly drained through the Sakaria (Sangarius) northwards to the Euxine. In the same di- rection, and in curiously parallel curves, flow the more easterly Kizil-Irmak (Halys) and Yeshil-Irmak (Iris), which carry otf most of the surface waters of the plateau. The western rivers —Granicus, Xanthus (Scamander), Hermus, Simois, Meander—although re- nowned in song and history, are comparatively insignificant coast-streams, rushing from the escarpment of the plateau down to their fjord-like estuaries in the Aigean. None of the rivers are navigable to any distance from their mouths, and in the absence of good means of communication the very rich resources of the plateau in minerals and agricultural produce have hitherto been little deve- loped. Owing to the different elevations and varied aspects of the land towards the Euxine, Mgean, and Mediterranean, the climate is extremely diversified, presenting all the transitions from intense summer heat along most of the seaboard to severe winters on the lofty tablelands of the interior, which are exposed to biting winds from the Russian steppes. Anatolia has an endless variety of natural products, from the hardy boxwood of Lazistan (Trebizond vilayet) to the sub-tropical figs and grapes of the western coast- lands. On the plateau thrives the famous breed of Angora goats, whose soft, silky fleece (mohair) forms a staple export.

Of far less economic importance are the Armenian uplands, form- ing a rugged plateau of limited extent, above which rise many lofty peaks, culminating in the tower-crested Ararat (16,916 fect), the converging point of three empires. The long and terribly severe winters, intolerably hot short summers, and generally poor soil of Armenia present a marked contrast to the far more temperate climate, rieh upland valleys, and densely wooded slopes of the more southern Kurdistan highlands. But these advantages are counter- balanced by the generally inaccessible nature of the country, the want of good highways, and especially the lawless character of its inhabitants, who have undergone little social change since the days of their wild Karduchi forefathers. In the heart of this savage region lies the

magnificent basin of Lake Van, which, like Tuz-gol and the more easterly Urmiya, has no present outflow, but formerly, no doubt, discharged to the Tigris valley.

In the Van district lie the sources of most of the head streams of the Tiaris (¢.v.) and EupHRATEs (q.v.), which have created the vast and fertile alluvial plains of Mesopotamia. This latter region, the seat of the ancient Accadian and Assyrian and the more recent Moslem cultures, forms a continuous plain from the escarpments of the Kurdistan highlands to the Persian Gulf, broken only in the north by the Sinjar Hills, and capable of yielding magnificent crops wherever water is available. But under Osmanli rule the splendid system of irrigation works, dating from the dawn of history, has fallen into decay: the lower Euphrates now overflows its banks and converts much of the region above and below Kurnah, at the confluence of the two great arteries, into malarious marshlands. Hence the populous cities and innumerable villages formerly dotted over the Babylonian plains have been succeeded by the scattered hamlets of the Montefik and othcr amphibious Arab tribes.

This lowland region is separated by the morc elevated Syrian desert or steppe from the much smaller and less productive pro- vinces of Syria and Palestine. Here the main physical features are at once simple and yet striking. The narrow, hilly region dis- posed north and south between the Mediterranean and the desert, and stretching for over 400 miles between Anatolia and the Sinai Peninsula, culminates towards the centre in the parallel Libanus and Antilibanus (10,000 to 11,000 feet), enclosing between them the fertile depression of the Beka‘ (Ceele-Syria). The stupendous ruins of Baalbek, standing at the highest point of this depression in 30° N. lat., mark the parting line between the northern and southern watersheds of the region. Northwards flows the El-‘Asi (Orontes), southwards the Liténi (Leontes), both through the Beka‘ in moderately sloping beds to the Mediterranean. For further particulars, see the articles LEBANON, JORDAN, PALESTINE. In the Lebanon the Christian Maronite communities enjoy a mea- sure of self-government under the guarantee of France, while their pagan neighbours and hereditary foes, the Druses, are gradually withdrawing to the hilly Hauran district beyond Jordan.

Turkey’s Arabian possessions comprise, besides El-Hasa on the Persian Gulf, the low-lying, hot, and insalubrious Tehama and the south-western highlands (vilayets of Hejaz and Yemen) stretehing continuously along the east side of the Red Sea, and including the

-their own officials” (Proc. R. Geog. Soc., August 1887, p. 487).

to the two territories of Egypt and Tripolitana with Barca and Fezzan, jointly occupying the north-east corner of the continent. Of these Tripolitana alone is directly administered, constituting the pashalik or vilayet of Tripoli. Egypt, whose southern frontier was temporarily fixed in January 1887 at the station of Akashe above Wady Halfa, near the second cataract in Lower Nubia (22° N. lat.), has formed a practically independent principality under the dynasty of Mehemet Ali since 1841, subject only to an annual tribute of £695,000 to the Porte. The areas and populations of Turkey in Africa were estimated as follows in 1887:—

Area in . Sq. Miles. Population. Tripoli, with Barca and Fezzan, a vilayet …..... 485,000 1,000,000 Eeypt, tributany principality …....00ce-0-++ ses: 374,000 6,800,000 Total Mur keyiiPAtnieay ss fcc ave\sce ste visie. elepereiays 862,000 7,800,000

THE EMPIRE.

Turkey is essentially a theocratic absolute monarchy, being sub- Adminis. ject in principle to the direct personal control of the sultan, who tration,

is himself at once a temporal autocrat and the recognized caliph, that is, ‘‘ successor” of the Prophet, and consequently the spiritual head of the Moslem world (see MOHAMMEDANISM). But, although the attempt made in 1876 to introduce representative institutions proved abortive, this theoretical absolutism is nevertheless tem- pered not only by traditional usage, local privilege, the juridical and spiritual precepts of the Koran and its ‘wlemd interpreters, and the privy council, but also by the growing force of public opinion and the direct or indirect pressure of the European powers. The ‘ulema! form a powerful corporation, whose head, the sheikhu ’U- Islam, ranks asa state functionary scarcely sccond to the grand vizier, or prime minister. Owing to their intensely conservative and fanatical spirit,

the ‘ulema have always been determined oppo- nents of progress, and are at present one of the greatest obstacles to reform in a political system where the spiritual and temporal functions are inextricably interwoven. Besides these expounders of Koranic doctrine, the sovereign is to some extent bound also by the Multeka, a legal code based on the traditional sayings of Mohammed and the recorded decisions of his successors, having the force of precedents.

The grand vizier (sadr-azam), who is nominated by the sultan, presides ex-officio over the privy council (mejliss-i-khass), which, besides the sheikhu ’l-Islim, comprises the ministcrs of home and foreign affairs, war, finance, marine, trade, public works, justice, public instruction, and worship, with the president of the council of state and the grand master of artillery. For administrative purposes the immediate possessions of the sultan are divided into vilayets (provinces), which are again subdivided into sanjaks or mutessariks (arrondissements), these into kazas (cantons), and the kazas into nahiés (parishes or communes). A vali or governor- general, nominated by the sultan, stands at the head of the vilayet, and on him are directly dependent the pashas, effendis, beys, and other administrators of the minor divisions. All these officials unite in their own persons the judicial and executive functions, and all alike are as a rule thoroughly corrupt, venal in the dispen- sation of justice, oppressors of the subject, embezzlers of the public revenues, altogether absorbed in amassing wealth during their mostly brief and precarious tenure of office.* Foreigners settled in the country are specially protected from exactions by the so-called “capitulations,” in virtue of which they are exempt from the juris- diction of the local courts and amenable for trial to tribunals pre-

1 See Sunnirtes, vol. xxii. p. 660.

2 Major-General F. T. Haig, who travelled through the heart of Yemen in the winter of 1886-87, thus speaks of the administration in that almost exclu- sively Moslem province: ‘‘The fiscal system of the Turks, if it were really carried into effect, would be by no means bad; but like every other depart- iment of the government it is ruined by the utter corruption that prevails in every branch of the administration from top to bottom. No more

eloquent expounders of the evils and hopelessness of their whole system are to be found

than the Turks themselves, as I found from conversation with two or three of Mr G. P. Devey also, consul at Erzeroum, reports that in a part of that province the sheep-tax for 1885 was collected three times over: ‘On the first occasion the real number had been underestimated, and the collector therefore came again, and, finding that such was the case, made the villagers pay the whole sum of 14,000 piastres (9000 had been levied on the previous occasion), instead of the difference, on the ground that they had cheated the Government in not declaring their whole stock. A third time a collector visited the caza, and, when the villagers could produce no receipt that the tax had been paid (for none had been given), a third time the full sum was taken” (Cons. Rep., July 1887, p. 3).

sided over by their respective consuls, Cases between foreigners of different nationalitics are heard in the court of the defendant, and between foreigners and Turkish subjects in the local courts, at which a consular dragoman attends to see that the trial is conducted according to law.

The trade returns for the last few years show that the country is slowly recovering from the disastrous consequences of the Russo- Turkish War. For the four years 1882-86 the exports from and imports to Turkey were valued as under :—

Exports.1 Imports. Exports,1 Imports. 1882-3 | £10,900,000 | £17,000,000 1884-5 | £11,326,000 | £18,263,000

1883-4 9,550,000 17,350,000 1885-6 10,690,000 17,702,000

The share of the chief foreign states in these exchanges is shown in the subjoined table? for the years 1884-85 and 1885-86 :—

Imports from Exports to

1884-5. 1885-6. 1884-5, 1885-6,

£8,304,000 £7,755,000 | £3,923,000 | £4,031,000

2,225,000 2,050,000 4,083,000 3,296,000 3,800,000 3,468,000 1,113,000 1,001,000 1,556,000 366,000 341,000 536,000 339,000 327,000 318,000 500,000 437,000 166,000 63,000 107,000 482,000 7,990 7,450

Roumania 565,000 88,000 96,000 Ist; leh WR ge nenoneee 254,000 261,000 2,525 9,486

The chief staples of the export trade are raisins (£1,370,000 in 1884-85), wheat (£900,000), cotton (£700,000), opium (£500,000), olive oil (£450,000), valonia (£450,000), barley (£332,000), figs (£200,000), sesame (£196,000), maize (£194,000), pulse (£185,000), nuts (£184,000), mohair (£145,000), wool (£140,000), dates (£115,000); and of the import trade cotton and cotton stuffs (£4,350,000, in 1883-84), cereals and flour (£1,350,000), sugar (£1,150,000), draperies, hosiery, &c. (£735,000), woollen stuffs (£650,000), coffee (£535,000), metals (£516,000), ironmongery (£475,000), dyes (£450,000), silk and silk stuffs (£400,000), petroleum (£375,000), hides and skins (£255,000), live stoc (£236,000), cheinicals (£167,000), coal (£135,000).

In the next table are given the principal seaports of the empire with their imports, exports, and shipping for 1886 :—

——$__,

Exports. | Imports. Jee Tonnage. PMOXONATIAL G)0.665.ccci ees eves £11,710,000|£9,417,000 | 1249 | 1,020,000 Constantinople ……. Sout o8 Or 9072 | 5,195,000 | SIM UMATereleieiscisisisissisieeisic se ses eee 4,331,000 | 2,706,000 | 1645 | 1,363,000 Salen tol igehpoics os. cannon amen 1,362,000 | 1,660,000 | 5440 574,000 Iskanderoon and Tripoli …..... 022,000 | 1,670,000 626 351,000 Samsun, with Ordu and Unieh ..| 806,000 787,000 478 455,000 Trebizond and Kirasun …..... 15,000 {| 1,904,000 | 6063 478,000 Beyrut, with Akka and Haifa ..} 602,000 995,000 | 4009 618,000 HES hve Oa Wevatac copes ec cia WINER, wc se: 457,000 201,000 778 145,000 Cretei(Six OBIS). ..cccs’s aos e sss 385,000 | 633,000 | 3760 491,000 , WC COARAUGIIR a teleteis.sissistsielsieiee sere 298,000 HGDO00!|| 5… Face Tripoli (Africa) ..... 231,000 310,000 501 272,000 |

SS By Sb. chCU ene Cee mene 222,000 281,000 | 1371 115,000 | Gallipoli and Rodosto ……..... 212,000 185,000 | _…. Bh | BEM Rerevereoceiesvokeray «, ocecsysielevereactiets 172,000 709,000 712 1,109,000 SOHRUOOCHUAODHE DEB ecc 121,000 111,000 261 54,000 easuefeLeveliorebernicsasisscsliehe; sustale eratene 120,000 240,000 | 1000 459,000 Ghoe 5 abo Geken o OM OORmadDC 119,000 ? 1040 | 317,000

All branches of the foreign trade, together with most of the local traffic and the banking business, are almost exclusively in the hands of Greeks, Armenians, Jews, and foreigners. The Turks and other Mohammedans are engaged nearly altogether in agricultural and pastoral pursuits. But the land, especially in Anatolia, is gradu- ally passing from its Moslem owners into the possession of Christian mortgagees. Scarcely any accurate agricultural returns are avail- able, except for one or two districts. In the Erzeroum vilayet in 1886? the live-stock stood as under,—sheep 1,485,000, goats 645,000, oxen 470,000, buffaloes 48,000, horses 61,000, asses 42,000, mules 5000; beehives numbered 80,000. The chief agricultural produce for the same year was—wheat 16,690,000 bushels, barley 13,297,000 bushels, beans 46,250 cwts., melons 17,000 ewts., mulberries 10,000 ewts., other fruits 40,000 cwts. In the same year of the 12,000 square miles constituting the Trebizond vilayet 2100 were under cultiva- tion, 1860 uncultivated, 2520 woodland, and 5520 highland pastur- age, the annual yield being about 2,300,000 cwts. of cereals, 1,000,000 ewts. of nuts, fruits, vegetables, &c., and 500,000 ewts. of fodder ;

1 Exclusive of tobacco, which for fiscal reasons is not included in the general trade returns, but the export of which amounted to £11,500,000 in value for 1884-5, and nearly £11,000,000 for 1885-6,

2 Consul-General Fawcett’s Report for July 1887, p. 81.

3 Cons. Rep. for July 1887.

FURKE Y

whilst of live-stock there were 300,000 sheep and goats, 150,000 horses, 25,000 mules and asses, 60,000 oxen.4

Previous to 1880 Turkey was commonly regarded as practically Finance.

bankrupt. But since then a considerable improvement has been effected. Trustworthy data are still wanting; but a careful estimate gave the gross revenue and expenditure of 1884 at £T16,313,000 and £116,223,000 respectively, the expenditure including over £T4,000,000 available for state creditors, The public debt stood at £106,437,000 in 1882. The sultan is reported to draw a sum of from £1,000,000 to £2,000,000 annually from the public revenues for the support of the seraglio or imperial household of over five thousand persons.

Until 1886 the military service, compulsory on all Moslems over Army.

18 years of age, was kept up by 45,000 annual recruits drawn by ballot ; but in November of that year universal conscription of the whole able-bodied male population was decreed. By this measure the army, hitherto reckoned at about 160,000 men, with a war strength of from 450,000 to 500,000, will be probably raised to a permanent footing of 1,000,000 effectives under the flag and in the reserves, These will continue to be grouped in the three categories of the nizam or regulars in active service, the redif or first reserve, and the mustahfiz or second reserve. There is to be a considerable increase of cavalry, all conscripts being allowed to join that branch of the service who have the means of providing themselves with mounts and equipment. For military purposes the empire is divided into seven divisions, with headquarters at Constantinople, Adrianople, Monastir, Erzingian, Teagan Damascus, and Sanaa, all except Sanaa (for Yemen) hitherto furnishing an army corps for the nizam and two for the redif.

The navy at the beginning of 1887 comprised 15 large and Navy.

several smaller ironclads (monitors, gunboats, &c.), a number of mostly old-fashioned steamers, and 14 torpedo boats, and was manned by 80,000 sailors and 10,000 marines (nominal strength), raised by conscription or voluntary enlistment and serving for 12 years in the active and reserve elasses.

Public instruction is much more widely diffused throughout the Educa- empire than is commonly supposed, This is due partly to the tion.

Christian communities, notably the Maronites and others in Syria, the Anatolian and Roumelian Greeks, and the Armenians of the castern provinces and of Constantinople. Education is practically limited amongst the Mohammedans to reading and writing and the study of the Koran, But amongst the Christians, especially the Armenians, the Greeks of Smyrna, and the Syrians of Beyrut, it embraces a considerable range of subjects, such as classical Hellenic, Armenian, and Syriac, as well as modern French, Italian, and English, modern history, geography, and medicine. Large sums are freely contributed for the establishment and support of good schools, and the cause of national education is seldom forgotten in the legacies of patriotic Anatolian Greeks. Even the Turks are be- stirring themselves in this respect, and great progress has been made aug the last twenty years in the Erzeroum vilayet.5 In 1886 that province contained 1216 schools and 163 madrasas (colleges), with a total attendance of 25,680, including 1504 girls. Elsewhere few official statistics are available.

Besides administrative and financial reforms, one of the most Commu- pressing needs is improved means of communication. In Trebizond nication.

the route from the coast at Unieh through Niksar to Sivas has recently been completed to the limits of the vilayet. But the works on the more important road from Kirasun to Kara-hissar for the silver and lead mines at Lijessy are still suspended, owing to dis- putes between the contiguous provincial administrations, Many of the great historic highways are also much out of repair. At the end of 1885 only 1250 miles of railway were completed in the em- pire, of which 903 were in Europe and 347 in Asia. The chief lines are those connecting the capital with Adrianople (210 miles), Adrianople with Saremby (152), Saloniki with Uskub (150), Zenica with Brod (118), Uskub with Mitrovitza (75), and Kulleli with Dégéagatch (70) in Europe, and, in Asia, Scutari with Ismid (40), Smyrna with Ala-Shehr (130), and Smyrna with Denizli (170). By imperial decree (August 1887) a contract was granted to an English syndicate for the extension of the Ismid line and the

construction of a system of Asiatic railways to extend to Baghdad within the space of ten years.

The telegraph system is much more developed, comprising (1885) 14,620 miles, with 26,100 miles of wire and 470 stations. The yearly average of letters and packages of all sorts sent through the 710 post-offices scarcely exceeds 2,600,000. Most of the foreign postal service is conducted through the British, Austrian, German, French, and Russian privileged post-offices.

For the ethnography of the Turks, see Turxs. (Ay iy Ky)

Part ITI.—Literatvre, In all literary matters the Ottoman Turks have shown themselves a singularly uninventive people, the two great schools, the old and the new, into which we may divide their literature, being closely

4 Cons. Rep., May 1887. 5 Cons, Rep., July 1887, p. 4.

Old school.

General

character in tone, sentiment, and form.

of Otto- man litera- ture,

Pre- classical period,

656

modelled, the one after the classics of Persia, the other after those of modern Europe, and more especially of France. The old or Persian school flourished from the foundation of the empire down to about 1830, and still continues to drag on a feeble existence, though it is now out of fashion and cultivated by none of the lead- ing men of letters. These belong to the new or European school, which sprang up some fifty or sixty years ago, and which, in spite of the bitter opposition of the partisans of the old Oriental system, has succeeded, partly through its own inherent superiority and partly through the talents and courage of its supporters, In expel- ling its rival from the position of undisputed authority which it had occupied for

upwards of five hundred years. For the present purpose it will be convenient to divide the old school into three periods, which may be termed respectively the pre-classical, the classical, and the post-classical. Of these the first extends from the early days of the empire to the accession of Suleyman I., 1301- 1520 (700-926); the second from that event to the accession of Mahmud I., 1520-1730 (926-1143); and the third from that date to the accession of ‘Abd-ul-‘Aziz, 1780-1861 (1143-1277).

The works of the old school in all its periods are entirely Persian We find in them the same beauties and the same defects that we observe in the productions of the Iranian authors. The formal elegance and conventional grace, alike of thought and of expression, so characteristic of Persian classical literature, pervade the works of the best Ottoman writers, and they are likewise imbued, though in a less degree, with that spirit of mysticism which runs through so much of the poetry of Iran. But the Ottomans did not stop here: in their romantic poems they chose as subjects the favourite themes of their Persian masters, such as Leyli and Mejnun, Khusrev and Shirin, Yusuf and Zuleykha, and so on; they constantly allude to Persian heroes whose stories occur in the Skadh-Ndma and other storehouses of Iranian legendary lore; and they wrote their poems in Persian metres and in Persian forms. The mesnevi, the kasida, and the ghazel,—all of them, so far at least as the Ottomans are concerned, Persian,—were the favourite verse-forms of the old poets. A mesnevi is a poem written in rhyming couplets, and is usually narrative in subject. The kasida and the ghazel are both monorhythmic ; the first as a rule celebrates the praises of some great nan, while the second discourses of the joys and woes of love. Why Persian rather than Arabian or any other literature became the model of Ottoman writers is explained by the early history of the race (see TuRKs). Some two centuries before the arrival of the Turks in Asia Minor the Seljuks, then a mere horde of savages, had overrun Persia, where they scttled and adopted the civilization of the people they had subdued. Thus Persian became the language of their court and Government, and when by and by they pushed their conquests into Asia Minor, and founded there the Seljuk empire of Rum, they carried with them their Persian culture, and diffused it among the peoples newly brought under their sway. It was the descendants of those Persianized Seljiks whom the early Ottomans found ruling in Asia Minor on their arrival there. What had happened to the Seljuks two centuries before

happened to the Ottomans now: the less civilized race adopted the culture of the more civilized ; and, as the Seljuk empire fell to pieces and the Ottoman came gradually to occupy its place, the sons of men who had called themselves Seljuks began thenceforth to look upon themselves as Ottomans. Hence the vast majority of the people whom we are accustomed to think of as Ottomans are so only by adoption, being really the descendants of Seljttks or Seljukian subjects, who had derived from Persia whatever they possessed of civilization or of literary taste. An extraordinary love of precedent, the result apparently of conscious want of original power, was sufficient to keep their writers loyal to their early guide for centuries, till at length the allegiance, though not the fashion of it, has been changed in onr own days, and Paris has replaced Shiraz as the shrine towards which the Ottoman scholar turns. While conspicu- ously lacking in creative genius, the Ottomans have always sliown themselves possessed of receptive and assimilative powers to a remarkable degree, the result being that the number of their writers both in prose and verse is enormous. Of course only a few of the most prominent, either through the intrinsic merit of their work or through the influence they have had in guiding or shaping that of their contemporaries, can be mentioned in a brief review like the present. It ought to be premised that the poetry of the old school is greatly superior to the prose.

Ottoman literature may be said to open with a few mystic lines, the work of Sultan Veled, son of Maulana Jelal-ud-Din, the author of the great Persian poem the Mathnawi. Sultan Veled flourished during the reign of ‘Osman I., though he did not reside in the territory under the rule of that prince. Another mystic poet of this early time was ‘Ashik Pasha, who left a long poem in rhyming couplets, which is called, inappropriately enough, his Divén. The nocturnal expedition across the Hellespont by which Suleyman, the son of Orkhan, won Galipoli and therewith a foothold in Europe for his race, was shared in and celebrated in verse by a Turkish noble or chieftain named Ghazi Fazil. Sheykhi of Kermiyan, a

Torr kon

[LITERATURE |

contemporary of Muhammed I. and Murad II., wrote a lengthy and still esteemed mesnevi on the ancient Persian romance of Khusrey and Shirin; and about the same time Yaziji-oghlu gave to the world a long versified history of the Prophet, the Muhammedtya. The writers mentioned above are the most important previous to the capture of Constantinople ; but there is little literature of real merit prior to that event. ‘The most notable prose work of this period is an old collection of stories, the History of the Forty Vezirs, said to have been compiled by a certain Sheykh-zada and dedicated to Murad II.

With the accession of Selim’s son, Suleyman I., the classical Classical period begins. Hitherto all Ottoman writing, even the most highly period.

finished, had been somewhat rude and uncouth; but now a marked improvement becomes visible alike in the manner and the matter, and authors of greater ability begin to make their appearance. Fuzuli, one of the four great poets of the old school, seems to have been a native of Baghdad or its neighbourhood, and probably became an Ottoman subject when Suleyman took possession of the old capital of the caliphs. His language, which is very peculiar, seems to be a sort of mixture of the Ottoman and Azerbijan dialects of Turkish, and was most probably that of the Persian Turks of those days. Fuzuli showed far more originality than any of his predecessors ; for, although his work is naturally Persian in form and in general character, it is far from being a mere echo from Shiraz or Ispahan. He struck out a new line for himself, and was indebted for his inspiration to no previous writer, whether Turk or Persian. An intense and passionate ardour breathes in his verses, and forms one of the most remarkable as well as one of the most attractive characteristics of his style ; for, while few even among Turkish poets are more artificial than he, few seem to write with greater earnestness and sincerity. His influence upon his suc- cessors has scarcely been as far-reaching as might have been ex- pected,—a circumstance which is perhaps in some measure owing to the unfamiliar dialect in which he wrote. Besides his Divdn, he left a beautiful mesnevi on the story of Leyli and Mejnun, as well as some prose works little inferior to his poetry. Baki of Constantinople, though far from rivalling his contemporary Fuzul, wrote much good poetry, including one piece of great excellence, an elegy on Suleyman I. The Ottomans have as a rule been

particu- larly successful with elegies ; this one by Baki has never been sur- passed. Ruhi, Lami‘i, Nev’i, the janissary Yahya Beg, the mufti Ebu-Su’id, and Selim II. all won deserved distinction as poets. During the reign of Ahmed I. arose the second of the great poets of the old Ottoman school, Nef‘i of Erzerim, who owes his pre- eminence to the brilliance of his kasidas. But Nef’i could revile as well as praise, and such was the bitterness of some of his satires that certain influential personages who came under his lash in- duced Murad IV. to permit his execution. Nef‘, who, like Fuzuli,

formed a style of his own, had many to imitate him, of whom Sabri Shakir, a contemporary, was the most successful. Nwili, Jevri, and Fehim need not detain us; but Nabi, who flourished under Ibrahim and Muhammed IV., calls for a little more attention. This prolific author eopied, and so imported into Ottoman litera- ture, a didaetic style of ghazel-writing which was then being

(1141) appeared the first book printed in that country ; it was Van- kuli’s Turkish translation of Jevhert’s Arabic dictionary.

Coming now to the post-classical period, we find among poets Post- worthy of mention Beligh, Nevres, Hishmet, and Sunbuli-zada elassieal Vehbi, each of whom wrote in a style peculiar to himself. Three period, poets of note—Pertev, Neshet, and Sheykh Ghalib—flourished

“lassical

introduced in Persia by the poet Sd’ib ; but so closely did the pupil follow in the footsteps of his master that it is not always easy to know that his lines are intended to be Turkish. A number of poets, of whom Seyyid Vehbi, Raghib Pasha, Rahm of the Crimea, Kelim, and Sami are the most notable, took Nabi for their model. Of these, Sami is remarkable for the art with which he constructed his ghazels. Among the writers of this time who did not copy Nabi are Sabit, Rasikh, and Talib, each of whom endeavoured, with no great success, to open up a new path for himself. We now reach the

reign of Ahmed III., during which flourished Nedim, the greatest of all the poets of the old school. Little appears to be known about his life further than that he resided at Constan- tinople and was alive in the year 1727 (A.u. 1140). Nedim stands quite alone: hc copied no one, and no one has attempted to copy him. There is in his poetry a joyousness and sprightliness which at once distinguish it from the work of any other Turkish author. His ghazels, which are written with great elegance and finish, con- tain many graceful and original ideas, and the words he makes use of are always ehosen with a view to harmony and cadence. His kasidas are almost cqual to his ghazels; for, while they rival those of Nef in brilliancy, they surpass them in beauty of diction, and are not so artificial and dependent. on fantastic and far-fetched conceits. The classical period cames to an end with Nedim ; its brightest time is that which falls between the rise of Nef‘{ and the death of Nedim, or, more roughly, that extending from the acces- sion of Ahmed I., 1603 (1012), to the deposition of Ahmed III.,

1730 (1148).

We will now glance at the prose writers of this period. Under the name of Humdyin Ndma (Imperial Book) ‘Ali Chelebi made a highly esteemed translation of the well-known Persian classic Anvér-i Suheyli, dedieating it to Suleyman I. Sa‘d-ud-Din, the preceptor of Murad III., wrote a valuable history of the empire from the earliest times to the death of Selfm I. This work, the Tdj-ut-Tevdrikh (Crown of Chronicles), is reckoned, on account of its ornate yet clear style, one of the masterpieces of the old school, and forms the first of an unbroken series of annals which are written, especially the later among them, with great minutencss and detail. Of Sa‘d-ud-Din’s successors in the office of imperial historiographer the most remarkable for literary power is Na‘imé. His work, which extends from 1591 (1000) to 1659 (1070), contrasts strongly with that of the earlier historian, being written with great directness and lucidity, combined with much vigour and picturesqueness. Evliya, who died during the reign of Muhammed IV., is noted for the record which he has left of his travels in different countries. About this time Tash-képri-zdda began and ‘Atd-ulldh continued a celebrated biography of the legists and sheykhs who had flourished under the Ottoman monarchs. Haji Khalifa (see vol. xi. p. 377), frequently termed Katib Chelebi, was one of the most famous uien of letters whom Turkey has

produced. He died in 1658 (1068), having written a great number of learned works on history, biography, chronology, geograpliy, and other subjects. The Persian- izing tendency of this school reached its highest point in the pro- ductions of Veysf, who left a Life of the Prophet, and of Nergisi, a miscellaneous writer of prose and verse. Such is the intentional obscurity in many of the compositions of these two authors that every sentence becomes a puzzle, over which even a scholarly Otto- man must pause before he can be sure he has found its true mean- ing. The first printing press in Turkey was established by an Hungarian who had assumed the name of Ibrahim, and in 1728

TURKEY, an abbreviation for TurKry-Cock or TuRKEY- Hun as the case may be, a well-known large domestic gallinaceous bird. How it came by this name has long been a matter of discussion, for it is certain that this valu- able animal was introduced to Europe from the New World, and in its introduction had nothing to do with Turkey or with Turks, even in the old and extended sense in which that term was applied to all Mahometans. But it is almost as unquestionable that the name was origin- aly applied to the bird which we know as the GurnEa- Fown (g.v.), and there is no doubt that some authors in the 16th and 17th centuries curiously confounded these two species. As both birds became more common and better known, the distinction was gradually perceived, and the name “Turkey” clave to that from the New World— possibly because of its repeated call-note—to be syllabled

under Selim III. The last-named is the fourth great poet of the old school. Husn wu ‘Ashk (Beauty and Love), as his great poem is called, is an allegorical romance full of tenderness and imaginative power. Ghalib’s style is as original as that of Fuztl{, Nef, or Nedim. The most distinguished of the prosc writers of this period are perhaps Rashid, the imperial historiographer, ‘Asim, who trans- lated into Turkish two great lexicons, the Arabic Kdmuis and the Persian Burhdn-t Kati‘, and Kani, the only humorous writer of merit belonging to the old school.

When we reach the reign of Mahmid IL. the great transition Transi- period of Ottoman history, during which the civilization of the tion West began to struggle in earnest with that of the East, we find period.

the change which was coming over all things Turkish affecting literature along with the rest, and preparing the way for the ap- pearance of the new school. The chief poets of the transition are Fazil Bey, Wasif, notable for his not altogether unhappy attempt to write verses in the spoken language of the capital, ‘Izzet Molla, Pertev Pasha, ‘Akif Pasha, and the poetesses Fitnet and Leyla. In the works of all of these, although we occasionally discern a hint of the new style, the old Persian manner is still supreme.

More intimate relations with western Europe and a pretty general Modern and literature, together with the sehool.

study of the French language steady progress of the reforming tendency fairly started under Mahmud II., have resulted in the birth of the new or modern school, whose objects are truth and simplicity. In the politieal writings of Reshid and ‘Akif Pashas we have the first clear note of change; but the man to whom more than to any other the new departure owcs its success is Shinasi Efendi, who employed it for poetry as well as for prose. The European style, ou its introduc- tion, encountered the most violent opposition, but now it alone is used by living authors of repute. if any of these does write a pamphlet in the old manner, it is merely as a tour de force, or to prove to some faithful but clamorous partisan of the Persian style that it is not, as he supposes, lack of ability which causes the modern author to adopt the simpler and more natural fashion of the West. The whole tone, sentiment, and form of Ottoman litera- ture have been revolutionized by the new sehool : varieties of poetry hitherto unknown have been adopted from Europe ; an altogether new branch of literature, the drama, has arisen ; while the sciences are now treated and seriously studicd after the system of the West. Among writers of this school who have won distinction are Ziydé Pasha, Jevdet Pasha, the statesman and historian, Ekrem Bey, the author ofa beautiful series of miscellaneous poems, Zemzema, Hamid Bey, who holds the first place among Ottoman dramatists, and Kemal Bey, the leader of the modern sehool and one of the most illustrious men of letters whom his country has produced. He has written with conspicuous success in almost every branch of literature,—history, romance, ethics, poetry, and the drama. For the Turkish language, see p. 661 below.

There is no work in existence which gives a satisfactory account of Ottoman literature. Von Hammer-Purgstall's Geschichte der Osmanischen Dichtkunst (Pesth, 1836) is not always trustworthy and leaves much to be desired in many ways. Other works on the poetry are La Muse Ottomane, by Servan de Sugny (Paris, 1853); On the History, System, and Varieties of Turkish Poetry, by Red- house (London, 1878); Ottoman Poems, by Gibb (London, 1882), Of transla- tions we have Baki's Divan, by Hammer (Vienna, 1825); the Travels of Evliyd, by Hammer (London, 1834); Rose wid Nachtigall (a poem of Fazli, a mediocre writer of the time of Suleyman I.), Turkish and German, by Hammer (Pesth) ; Les Conseils de Nabi Efendi, by Pavet de Courteille (Paris, 1857); The History of the Forty Vezirs, by Gibb (London, 1886). An interesting and valuable sketch of Ottoman poetry is given by Kemal Bey in a series of articles in the Turkish literary journal Mejmiu' a-i Ebu-z-Ziyd. (E. J. W. G.)

turk, turk, turk, whereby it may be almost said to have named itself (cf, Votes and Queries, ser. 6, iii. pp. 23, 369). But even Linnzus could not clear himself of the confusion, and unhappily misapplied the name Meleagris, undeniably belonging to the Guinea-Fowl, as the generic term for what we now know as the Turkey, adding thereto as its specific designation the word gallopavo, taken from the Gallopava of Gesner, who, though not wholly free from error, was less mistaken than some of his contemporaries and even successors. }

' The French Cog and Poule d' Inde (whenee Dindon) involve no contradietion, looking to the general idea of what India then was. One of the earliest German names for the bird, Kalekuttisch Hin (whence the Seandinavian Kalkon), must have arisen through some

mistake at present inexplieable; but this does not refer, as is generally supposed, to Caleutta, but to Calieut on the Malabar coast (cf. Notes

and Queries, ser. 6, x. p. 185). XXIII. — 83

658

The Turkey, so far as we know, was first described by Oviedo in his Sumario de la Natural Historia de las Indias} (cap. xxxvi.), said to have

been published in 1527. He, not unnaturally, includes both Curassows and Turkeys in one category, calling both “ Pavos”’ (Peafowls) ; but he carefully distinguishes between them, pointing out among other things that the latter make a wheel (hacen la rueda) of their tail, though this was not so grand or so beautiful as that of the Spanish ‘‘Pavo,” and he gives a faithful though short description of the Turkey, The chief point of interest in his account is that he speaks of the species having been already taken from New Spain (Mexico) to the islands and to Castilla del Oro (Darien), where it bred in a domestic state among the Christians. Much labour has been given by various naturalists to ascertain the date of its introduction to Europe, to which we can at present only make an approximate attempt ;* but after all that has been written it is plain that evidence concurs to show that the bird was established in Europe by 1530—a very short time to have elapsed since it became kuown to the Spaniards, which could hardly have been before 1518, when Mexico was discovered. The possibility that it had been brought to England by Cabot or some of his successors earlier in the century is not to be overlooked, and reasons will presently be assigned for supposing that one of the breeds of English Turkeys may have had a northern origin ;> but the often quoted distich first given in Baker’s Chronicle (p. 298), asserting that Turkeys came into England in the same year—and that year by reputation 1524—as carps, pickerels, and other commodities, is wholly untrustworthy, for we know that both these fishes lived in the country long before, if indeed they were not indigenous to it. The earliest documentary evidence of its existence in England is a “constitution” set forth by Cranmer in 1541, which Hearne first printed (Leland’s Collectanca, ed. 2, vi. p. 38). This names “Turkey- cocke” as one of ‘‘the greater fowles” of which an ecclesiastic was to have ‘‘but one in a dishe,” and its association with the Crane and Swan precludes the likelihood of any confusion with the Guinea-Fowl. Moreover the comparatively low price of the two Turkeys and four Turkey-chicks served at a feast of the serjeants- at-law in 1555 (Dugdale, Origines, p. 185) points to their having become by that time abundant, and indeed by 1573 Tusser bears witness to the part they had already begun to play in “Christmas husbandlie fare.” In 1555 both sexes were characteristically figured by Belon (Oyseaua, p. 249), as was the cock by Gesner in the same year, and these are the earliest representations of the bird known to exist.

There is no need to describe here a bird so familiar and in these days so widely distributed. As a denizen of our poultry-yards (see Poutrry, vol. xix. p. 646) there are at least two distinct breeds, though crosses between them are much commoner than purely-bred examples of either. That known as the Norfolk breed is the taller of the two, and is said to be the more hardy. Its plumage is almost entirely black, with very little lustre, but the feathers of the tail and some of those of the back have a brown- ish tip. The chicks also are black, with occasionally white patches on the head. The other breed, called the Cambridgeshire, is much more variegated in colour, and some parts of the plumage have a bright metallic gloss, while the chicks are generally mottled with brownish grey. White, pied, and buff Turkeys are also often seen, and if care be taken they are comimonly found to ‘‘ breed true.” Occasionally Turkeys, the cocks especially, occur with a top-knot of feathers, and one of them was figured by Albin in 1788. It has becn suggested with some appearance of probability that the Norfolk breed may be descended from the northern form, Jlelcagris gallopavo or americana, while the Cambridgeshire breed may spring from the southern form, the Jf mexicana of Gould (Proc. Zool. Socicty, 1856, p. 61), which indeed it very much resembles, especi-

1 Purchas (Pilgrimes, iii. p. 995) in 1625 quoted both from this and from the same author's Hystoria General, said to have been pub- lished a few years later. Oviedo's earlier work is only known to the present writer by the reprint of 1852.

2 The bibliography of the Turkey is so large that there is here no room to name the various works that might be cited. Recent research has failed to add anything of importance to what has been said on this point by Buffon (Oiseaux, ii pp. 132-162), Pennant (Arctic Zoology, pp. 291-300),—an admirable summary, —and Broderip (Zo0- logical Recreations, pp. 120-137)—not that all their statements can be wholly accepted. Barrington's essay (Aiscellanies, pp. 127-151), to prove that the bird was known before the discovery of America and was trausported thither, is an ingenious piece of special pleading which his friend Pennant did him the real kindness of ignoring.

3 In 1672 Josselin (New England's Rarities, p. 9) speaks of the settlers bringing up ' great store of the wild kind " of Turkeys, " which remain about their houses as tame as ours in Englaud." The bird was evidently plentiful down to the very seaboard of Massachusetts, and it is not likely to have been domesticated by the Indian tribes there, as, according to Hernandez, it seems to have beeu by the Mexicans, It was probably easy to take alive, and, as we kuow, capable of endur- ing the voyage to England.

ally in having its tail-coverts and quills tipped with white or light ochreous, —points that recent North-American ornithologists rely upon as distinctive of this form. If this supposition be true, there would be reason to believe in the double introduction of the bird into England at least, as already hinted, but positive information is almost wholly wanting.* The northern form of wild Turkey, whose habits have been described in much detail by all the chief writers on North-American birds, is now extinct in the settled parts of Canada and the eastern States of the Union, where it was once so numerous ; and in Mexico the southern form, which would seem to have been never abundant since the conquest, has been for many years rare. Further to the south, on the borders of Guatemala and British Honduras, there exists a

perfectly distinct species, J/. ocellata, whose plumage almost vies with that of a Peacock in splendour, while the bare skin which covers the head is of a deep blue studded with orange caruncles (Proc. Zool. Socicty, 1861, pl. x1.).

The genus Meleagris is considered to enter into the Family Phasianide, in which it forms a Subfamily Jfele- agrine, peculiar to North and Central America. The fossil remains of three species have been described by Prof. Marsh—one from the Miocene of Colorado, and two, one much taller and the other smaller than the existing species, from the Post-Pliocene of New Jersey. Both the last had proportionally long and slender legs. (A. N.)

TURKS. The use of the name “Turks” has never been limited in a clear and definite way from the time of the Byzantine authors to the present day. To the former, as also to the Arabs, it has a collective sense like Scythians or Huns;° at the present day we are wont to restrict the name to the Osmanli Turks, though they themselves refuse to be called Turks, having, as they hold, ceased to be such in becoming imbued with Arabo-Persian culture. On the other hand, when we speak of Uigurs and Tatars, we mean tribes who style themselves Turks and really are such. It is only by the aid of historical and linguistical evidence that we can determine the true limits of the Turkish name.

The national Turkish traditions, preserved by the Origin.

Persian historians Rashid ed-Din and Jowaini from Uigurian books which are now lost, point to the region watered by the river Selenga and its affluents, the Orkhon and the Tugila, as the primitive seat of the Turkish people. Rashid ed-Din combines this tradition with that of the Mohammedan descendants of Oghuz, who, in accordance with Moslem traditions, derive the whole Turkish stock from Japhet, the son of Noah, or more accurately from Turk, the son of the former (Yafiz-oglan), and pretend that he pitched his tents in the vicinity of Lake Issyk-kul (in Semiryetchensk). wander so far to the west, and even farther, in remote antiquity, it seems pretty certain that the Uigurian tradi- tion has preserved the memory of the true origin of the race, that Turks and Mongols were originally different stems of a single people, and that these two members of the Urat-Aurtaic (¢.v.) family were more closely related to each other than

to any other member of the same family (Finno- Ugrians, Samoyedes, Tungus-Manchus). The evidence for this rests, not on the ethnological system of Rashid ed-Din, though it affords a secondary argument, but on the in- dubitable affinity of the Mongolian and Turkish languages and the similarity of the ethnological characters of the two races. Here, of course, we do not argue from the Osmanlis, who have lost all their original race-characters and have become “Caucasians” of the best type, but rather, for in- stance, from the Kirghiz, who are considered as the typical Turks of the present day, and are described by Ujfalvy as being midway between the Mongol and the Caucasian. We must now turn our attention to the wanderings of the Turks and their subsequent fate,—a rather difficult task,

4 The results of a comparison of the skulls of wild and domesticated Turkeys are given by Dr Shufeldt in Journ. of Comp. Medicine and Surgery, July 1887.

5 Constantine Porphyrogenitus calls the Magyars Turks, even in contradistinction to the truly Turkish Petchenegs.

But, though Turkish tribes did Ethno-

© Un Ks

owing to the want of accurate information. The only truly historical records are to be found in the Chinese chronicles and encyclopzedias,! where, however, the Turkish proper names appear in such distorted forms as to be un- recognizable ; yet, till the 6th century of our era, no other accounts are available.

It is generally admitted that the first Turkish people mentioned by the Chinese are the Hiong-nu, who, wander- ing to the west, occupied the country south of the Altai Mountains and expelled (about 177 3.c.) the former occupants of those regions, the Yue-chi,? Kan-goi, and Usun (U-ssun),—tribes of unknown nationality, but possibly also Turks. The Hiong-nu were identified by Deguignes with the Huns, this denomination being used in a political or collective sense, and including, besides the Huns proper, the Ephthalites or White Huns, Avars, Bulgars, Magyars, Khazars, and Petchenegs, who are styled by several scholars Hunnic or Scythian

peoples,—a term of no scientific value whatever, as the main body of these peoples consisted really of Mongol-Turks or Finno-Ugrians. As, however, separate articles have been devoted to most of these ethnical names, we abstain from further details, as also from discussion of the question of the Turkish origin of the Magyars and the Khazars, though that of the former seems to us as improbable as that of the latter is certain.* Be this as it may, the Hiong-nu are, so to speak, proto- Turks, and the history of the Turks proper begins with the Tu-kiu, the Chinese equivalent of the word Turk. Originally a division of the Hiong-nu, almost extirpated by wars, but miraculously saved from complete destruction, the Tu-kiu settled south of the Kin-Shan (Altai?) Moun- tains, and were miners and iron-smelters in the service of the Juen-Juen® ("les Tartares Geou-gen" of Deguignes). About 552 a.p., however, they conquered their former masters and founded a mighty empire under princes who took the title of Ili khan. In these Tu-kiu Deguignes re- cognized the Turks who entered into friendly relations with Byzantium, and to whom Justin II. sent two ambassadors, —Zemarchus (568) and Valentinus (575). The narratives of these ambassadors are preserved in the fragments of Menander Protector ; and (comparing the variations of the corrupt text with the record of Tabari) from him we learn that at the first date the reigning prince was Sinjibulus (Arabic Sinjibu).6 From the Greek and the Arabo-Persian accounts it seems that Sinjibu put an end to the empire of

1 Translated in the well-known works of Deguignes, Visdelou, &c.; for a French translation by Stanisl. Julien of the accounts of the Pien-i-tien, referring to the Tu-kiu, see Journ. Asiat., 1864, p. 325 sq.

2 Comp. Persta, vol. xviii. pp. 592-4, 600, 603.

3 Radloff, for instance, thinks that the name U-ssun, and perhaps remnants of the people denoted by it, survive in the present Uisuns, a division of the Great Horde of the Kirghiz. At the time of Alexander the Great's expeditions against the Scythians beyond the Jaxartes, we find in that region certain traces of the Turkish language in names of places and persons (cp. vol. xviii. p. 582, note 4), It is therefore certain that long before the age of the Hiong-nu Turkish tribes had spread to the borders of the Jaxartes, and even along the northern coast of the Caspian to the rivers Ural and Volga.

But the ethnical denominations of antiquity—Scythians, Parthians, Massagete, Sace, &c.—do not convey to our mind clear ethnical distinctions, so that the true nationality of these peoples has been much debated. Neither are the pre-Semitic culture of Babylonia and the supposed "Turanian" origin of the Accads facts of such character that from them we can infer the presence of Turks in these regions in remote antiquity.

4 On the Petchenegs see below.

5 From their Chinese name it may be inferred that the Juen-Juen were a Mongolian people, in which case the Avars, who are supposed to have been a division of them, were also Mongols.

6 See Nildeke, Geschichte der Perser und Araber, p. 158. The first part of this name is without doubt the Turkish siinjii, stingit, which means 'lance,' a Turkish proper name of the same kind as Kilij= "sword," which in its Persian form, Nizek, was afterwards borne by a prince of Transoxiana, often mentioned in the accounts of the Arabic conquest.

the Ephthalites or Haitals in those regions. He shared the conquered country with Khosrau I., the Oxus becoming the frontier between Iran and Turin. The memory of the empire of Sinjibu and of its political strength has been preserved by the Arabic authors Ibn Khordadbeh and Mas'udi, who inform us that the Turkish tribe of the Karluks, settled in the provinces of Ferghana and Shash (Tashkend), were of old the mightiest of all the Turks, and that their sovereign, the khakan of khakans, was obeyed by all the neighbouring princes. To them they reckon the mythical Afrasiab and the historical Shawa.' It is un- certain at what epoch the empire of the Karluks came to an end; but the Chinese assert that about 650 they reduced the inhabitants of the Ili and Jaxartes territory, though they were unable to protect them afterwards against the inroads of the Arabs under Kotaiba b. Moslim (706-714). The latter defeated the armies sent to their aid under Kurbogha Noyon, a sister's son of the Chinese emperor.' It is also doubtful if the so-called Afrasiab kings or Ilek- khans, who reigned in the 10th century at Kashgar and Balasaghun and conquered (999) the dominions of the

Samanids in Transoxiana, belonged to the Karluks, as is supposed by Grigorieff and Lerch, or to the Uigurs, as others think.

The name Uigurs is very common during the Mongolian The period, and Rashid ed-Din and others use it (by an ana- Vigurs.

chronism) in speaking of remote antiquity, though it is wholly unknown to the Arabic geographers, and, as Vambéry has shown, to the Uigurs themselves,—nay, even impossible in the old Turkish language, in which the form would be Utkur. The name Ugur, Ogur, or Ogor of Byzantine authors is really different ; but Grigorieff has recognized the name in the corrupt Arabic form of Tagazgaz, which must be read Toguz-Ugur,® the "Nine Ugurs," to dis- tinguish them from another division of the same tribe, the On-Ugur or "Ten Ugurs." In the time of Ibn Khor- dadbeh and Mas'udi these Turks had gained the supremacy amongst their brethren, and had their residence at Kushan, which has been identified with the Kiao-chang of the Chinese. According to their accounts, the Kiao-chang form the southern division of the Hui-khe (Hoei-ke of Deguignes), and were settled before the Christian era south and east of the Tian-Shan up to the Pamir plateau and the Kuen-Lun. The Arabic authors make them adherents of Manichzism ; but, as the original Turkish Shamanism has developed into a dualistic system, this statement may rest on a partial misapprehension. It seems, however, certain that Buddhism reached these Turks on its way towards China, for we know that this religion spread in the 2d century B.c. throughout the adjacent kingdom of Bactria, and was still flourishing when Hwen-T'sang visited (7th century) those regions. Thus we can understand why the old Ural-Altaic religion bears a Sanskrit name. The northern division of the Hui-khe, which remained unknown to the Arabs, wandered from the Selenga region to the sources of the Yenisei, vanquished the Tu-kiu (745), and founded an empire from the Selenga to Lake Balkash, till they were overthrown (841) by the Ha-kas (identified with the Kirghiz), These northern Uigurs are called by the Chinese Kao-che, Chi-le, Di-li, and Te-le. The history of the southern branch is unknown, for the chronological data of Rashid ed-Din and Abu-'1-Ghazi are contradictory and useless, though their statements that the prince bore the title of Idi-kut and submitted to the Mongols have full historical weight. That the Uigurs rose during the

7 Cp. Mas‘udi, ed. Paris, i. 288; Noldeke, ut sup., p. 269, n. 1.

8 The title Noyon, if the present writer’s conjecture on the text of Tabari, ii. 1195, is right, proves that Kurbogha was a Mongolian prince.

® Before this Reinaud had conjectured that the Tagazgaz were the same as the Uigurs, but failed to correct the Arabic corruption.

The Petch- enegs.

The Comans.

The Ghuzz.

Mongolian epoch to a certain supremacy by higher culture is attested by Rashid ed-Din and Jowaini, who often men- tion Uigurian books.

The Petchenegs (Gr. Ilar€waxa1, Uargwaxirar; Mag- yar Besenyd; Lat. Bisseni) were of old, as Constantine Porphyrogenitus tells us, settled about the lower Ural and Volga, but were driven thence (894-899) by the Ghuzz (Ouzoi). A part of them returned afterwards to their ancient abode, but the great majority wandered westward and settled on both sides of the Dnieper, driving the Hungarians before them to the Carpathians. Here they annoyed the neighbouring peoples by their raids, and en- gaged readily in the Russian expeditions against the Greek empire, till the policy of the Byzantine court incorporated large numbers of them with its own armies, sometimes with fatal result, as was experienced by Romanus Diogenes, when these auxiliaries passed to the camp of his antagonist Alp Arslan. At the period of the first crusade the Christian armies met with them on their march through Servia and Bulgaria ; but the Petchenegs are not mentioned after the 13th century. The learning of Orientalists has discovered faint traces of the language once spoken by them in the Turkish dialect of the Bosnians.1

Comans or Cumani (Russ. Polowtze, Magyar Palocz and Kun) is a term chiefly used by Europeans for the Turkish tribes that occupied Moldavia

and the adjacent regions of south Russia. The origin of the name is uncertain ; but it seems to be Turkish, though it rarely occurs in Oriental records. The most probable conjecture regarding the people denoted by it is that they were a mixture of Ghuzz and Petchenegs. Oriental authors know much more of their neighbours to the east, the Kipchaks, a very common name of Turkish clans down to the present day. Some- times both names are combined: Rubruquis speaks of the Coman Kipchaks. Anna Comnena informs us that the Comans spoke the same dialect as the Petchenegs, a dialect well known to European scholars from the so-called Codex Cumanicus.2. On the arrival of the Mongols in these regions, the Kipchaks suffered great hardships, and large numbers of them were sold as slaves throughout the Mohammedan world. From them sprang the Bahrite Mameluke sultans of Egypt (1250-1380). The Comans sought refuge amongst the Hungarians and became Chris- tians; but their arrival, causing internal dissensions in Hungary, greatly favoured the advance of the Mongolian arms. The remnants of the Comans, Kipchaks, and other Turkish tribes continued to dwell in southern Russia under Mongolian rule (see Moncoxs), whilst others became merged with the Hungarians.

The Ghuzz dwelt originally in the far East amongst the Toguz-Ugur, but migrated in the reign of the caliph Al- Mahdi (775-785) to Transoxiana, where they adhered to the cause of the famous Al-Mokanna‘, not from religious predilection, but to satisfy their love of war and plunder. In the same manner they afterwards served every warlike prince in their neighbourhood, and entered like other Turks into the service of the caliphs. The main body of the life-guard of the ‘Abbasids consisted of Turks, and some individuals rose very soon to high commands. En- trusted with the administration of distant provinces, they founded independent princely houses, such as those of the Tulunids and Ikhshids in Eeypr (vol. vii. p. 750) and the Ghaznavids (see Guaznt). In the meantime fresh bands of the Ghuzz poured from the east and the north into Turkestan, the region becoming overstocked with a nomadic population. Some of them sought and found an outlet to the west by occupying the territory of the Petchenegs and jorping Che Tunisie Dep aie a sae eee aa

‘ Comp. Blau, Bosnisch- Tiirkische Sprachdenkméler (Leipsic, 1868), p. 815. * Edited by Geza Kuun, Buda-Pesth, 1880-83,

the great majority, seeing the ruined state of the empire of the caliphs, crossed the Oxus and overran the northern and eastern provinces of Persia. How these loose desul- tory bands were guided to subsequent victories, and moulded with the peoples amongst whom they settled into regular political bodies, has been already narrated under SELJUKS (q.v.).

Meanwhile they underwent a great change in their out- ward appearance, habits, &c., as Rashid ed-Din relates, owing to the influence of the air and the water, and, we may add, to frequent intermarriage with the inhabitants of the countries invaded by them. After some generations the change was great enough to strike their Iranian neigh- bours, who called them Turkmans (Turcomans),? a term implying resemblance to Turks. It is therefore quite natural that the modern Osmanlis should have become Caucasians ; for, if Rashid ed-Din in the 13th century noticed the difference between a Turkman and a genuine Turk, the six centuries which have elapsed since amply suffice to have obliterated all original Ural-Altaic charac- teristics. The old name Ghuzz, originally, as it seems, the Turkish Oghuz (an eponymous hero of whom Turkish chronicles tell many fables) was wholly superseded by the new name Turkman and by other political names.

During the Seljukian period there arose in Transoxiana the empire of the Kharizm shahs, founded by Mohammed b. Anushtegin, upon whom the government of Kharizm (Khiva),—which down to 995 had belonged to princes of Iranian descent—was conferred (1097) by the Seljuk prince Barkiyarok. His son Atsiz became independent (1138), but his empire seemed destined to early ruin by the arrival of the Kara-Chitai, who defeated the Seljuk prince Sinjar (1141) and became for a time supreme masters of Turkestan. Nevertheless the Kharizmian dynasty held its place as a tributary sovereignty, and developed great power under the princes Takash and Mohammed his son. The former defeated and killed (1194) the last Seljuk prince of ‘Irak, and the latter ex- tended his dominion from the Caspian to the Indus and from the Jaxartes to the coast of ‘Oman. His cunning antagonist, the “Abbasid caliph An-Nasir, invoked the aid of Jenghiz Khan, who scarcely required this invitation to attack Mohammed. The sack of Bokhara was followed in the same year (1220) by that of the

other principal cities of Transoxiana and by the persecution of the un-happy prince, who died in a forgotten island of the Cas- pian. His son Jelal-ed-Din was driven towards India, but by a change of fortune ascended once more the throne of his fathers, till the new Mongol khan, Ogdai, sent fresh armies against him and forced him to seek refuge in the Kurdish Mountains, where he was murdered (1231). The fate of the Turks of Transoxiana was shared by their brethren in Asia and Europe, and new Mongol-Turkish empires arose, of which an outline has been given under Moncots. As the Mongol rule grew weaker, there arose in Persia and on the frontiers of Asia Minor the Turkman dynasties of the Ak Koyun-lu, the Kara Koyun-lu, the Zw'1-kadria, and the Ramazan Oglu, whose history is closely connected either with that of the rise of the Ottoman power (see below) or with the history of Pzrsia (see vol. XVili. p. 632 sq.).

At the present day the Turkish people occupy a very extensive area, the centre of which lies in Khiva, Bokhara, and Khokand,

and which stretches from the lower Lena in Siberia to the Danube and from the Crimea to Kerman and India. Politically they be-

3 The term " Turkman" occurs in Arabic chronicles of the Seljukian period, and even in Mokaddast, p. 274. Rashid ed-Din therefore exaggerates in stating that it only came into use in his lifetime. But Vambeéery's statement that it was applied of old to the descendants of Oghuz is contradicted by the genuine Persian text of Rashid ed-Din and the unanimous testimony of history. His objections against the popular etymology mentioned above are, however, not quite unfounded.

Turk- mans,

Empire of Khar. izm.

Modern tribes.

TURKS

long to Russia, Turkey, Persia, China,and Afghanistan. In religion the great majority are Mohammedans; a few tribes in Russia are baptized Christians;

and some others adhere to the original Sha- manism, which has also influenced the religious conceptions of the Christian and Mohammedan Turks. The principal Turkish peoples are the following. (I.) By a popular distinction the Turks of Siberia and Russia, with some colonies in Turkey, are styled Tatars (see Tarrars), though the Yakuts of northern Siberia are not usu- ally included in this term. The Yakuts, who are perhapsa mixture of Turkish and Tungus tribes, deviating from the ordinary course of Turkish wanderings, are settled about the lower Lena, and number probably 200,000 (Rittig, 80,000; Lansdell, 210,000).1_ They are nominally Christians. (II.) On the Kirghiz (Kara-Kirghiz and Kazaks) and Kara-Kalpaks sce Kireuiz; but note that the Kip- chaks, named there as a separate tribe, really form a subdivision of the Kazak-Kirghiz, and are perhaps akin to the Kitai-Kipchaks, who are reckoned to the Uzbegs. (III.) Uzbeg is a political, not an ethnological denomination, originating from Uzbeg Khan of the Golden Horde (1812-1340). It was used to distinguish the followers of Shaibani Khan (16th century) from his antagonists, and became finally the name of the ruling Turks in the khanates as opposed to the Sarts, Tajiks, and such Turks as entered those regions at a later date and are known to be Kirghiz, Kara-Kalpaks, or Taranjis. The Uzbegs are therefore a mixed race of different Turkish tribes. According to Kostenko,? they number 201,972 in the Russian pro- vinces of Sir-Daria, Ferghana, Zerafshan, and Amu-Daria, and Vambéry conjectures that there are 1,000,000 more in Bokhara, 700,000 in Khiva, and 200,000 under Afghan supremacy, giving a total number of about 2,000,000. They are agriculturists or inhabit the cities; a few are semi-nomads. (IV.) The castern Turks on the southern slopes of the Tian-Shan Mountains at Kashgar, Ust- turfan, Ak-su, Sairam, Kutcha, Yarkand, Khotan, &c., are the rem- nants of the ancient Uigurs; and of the same origin are the Taranjis (=agriculturists), settled in the Ili valley and elsewhere. The number of the latter is given as about 50,000; that of the former may be estimated from the statements of Forsyth? and Kuropatkin 4 at about 1,000,000 for the whole district, the great majority being Turks and the rest Mohammedan Chinese (Sungans). (V.) The Turcomans (properly Turkmans) inhabit the steppe east of the Cas- pian and south of the Oxus from Astrabad to the Paropamisus. The term is sometimes taken to include their brethren in Persia and Asia Minor, who will be treated separately. The following are the principal tribes:—(1) the Tchaudors and Imrailis, in the north- western part of the Ust-Urt to the Gulf of Karaboghaz; (2) the

Yomuts, extending from Khiva across the Ust-Urt to the Caspian, and along the sea-board to Persia ; (3) the Goklen, on Persian ter- ritory, between the upper Gorgen and Atrek; (4) the Tekkes, the most numerous tribe at the present day, divided into the Akhal Tekkes and the Merv Tekkes, so named after the centres where their greatest nuinbers are found ; (5) the Sakars, on the left bank of the Oxus, to the east of Tcharjui, considered by Vambéry as a division of the Tekkes; (6) the Sariks, at Penjdeh and Yul-utan on the north-western slopes of the Paropamisus; (7) the Salors, one of the oldest Turkman tribes, who suffered greatly from the Tekkes, till they finally migrated (1857) to Zurabad in Persia, and left their former districts to the Tekkes and Sariks; (8) the Ersaris, on the Oxus about Khoja Salih; and (9) the Ali-elis, about Andkhui. Their total number, inclusive of sonie Turkmans who do not belong to any of these tribes, and are scattered throughout the provinces of Syr-Daria, Amu-Daria, Zerafshan, and Astrakhan (about 16,000), is estimated by Vambéry at about 1,000,000, and by Grodekoff at 1,170,000. The Turkmans are, with few exceptions, nomads, and were formerly the terror of their neighbours, who feared them as the ‘‘man-stealing Turks” ; but since Merv has been annexed to Russia (1884) they have been compelled to abandon their predatory habits.° (VI.) The Turkish nomads scattered throughout Persia are partly the descendants of the Ghuzz tribes that invaded the country at the Seljukian period ; others have migrated thither in the following centuries. They are known by the name of [lat or Iliyit (meaning tribes or peoples) and consist of sevcral tribes, having each its own chieftain, the Ilkhani, appointed by the shah. An accurate list of the names of these tribes does not exist; but the most powerful and most numerous are the following. (1) The Kajars, who dwelt in Transcaucasia down to the time of Abbas the Great, by whom one division of them was compelled to settle at the south-east corner of the Caspian near Astrabad. To this division belongs the present dynasty of Persia. (2) The Afshars or Aushars, avery numerous tribe, in the province of Adarbaijan (Azerbijan). A division is also settled in the mountainous regions of the Anti- taurus; its members are nominally subjects of the Ottomian empire but really independent. (3) The Shekakis and Shah-sewen. The

1 Cp. HE. Petri, ‘‘Neueres iiber die Jakuten,” in Peterm. Mitth., 1887, vol. xxxiil. p. 102 sq. 2 Turkestanskit Krai, St Petersburg, 1880, p. 326.

3 Report of a Mission to Yarkand.

4 Kashgaria, translated by W. E. Gowan, Calcutta, 1882.

5 Cp. N. Petrusevitch, The Turcomuns, translated by R. Michell; O'Donovan,

The Merv Oasis, London, 1882; and the journals of travellers in these regions, Vambéry, Schuyler, Lessar, &c.

latter is not a tribal, but a political hame, meaning those who

the shah, t.¢., partisans of the Safawi dynasty (1459-1736) mene Shiite faith. (4) The Kara Koyun-lu, near the town of Khoi, the remnants of the once powerful tribe named above. Besides these

many other names are recorded of tribes wandering in the Trans- caucasian regions and in the provinces of Adarbaijan and Mazen- deran, but many of them are very uncertain. All these Turks are comprehended under the general denomination of Adarbaijani Turks; they are nomads or semi-nomads and speak a peculiar Turkish dialect, the Turk Azeri or Adarbaijani Turkish. Some specimens of it have been published by Chodzko, Bergé, Melgunoff, and Barbier de Meynard. In the southern provinces of Persia are settled the (5) Kashkais, (6) Abul-werdis, (7) Kara-Gozliis, (8) Bahar-lu, and (9) Inan-lu. To the first named are reckoned by some the Khalaches,* an old Turkish tribe which was already settled near Herat before the Seljukian period and has given rise to some Indian dynasties. Vambéry thinks that the total number of Iranian Turks may amount to about two millions, or, if we add the Caucasian Turks under Russian supremacy, three millions." (VI1). The Osmanlis, under which term are comprehended all the Turkish sub- jects of the sultan of Turkey, consist chiefly of the following elements. (1) Turkmanian tribes and Turks of every description, who poured into Asia Minor after the defeat of Romanus Diogenes (1071) ; to these we may also reckon the Ottomans proper, though they did not enter the country till after the downfall of the Kharizmian empire. The Mongolian invasion drove the obscure ancestors of this the most illustrious Turkish dynasty to

Asia Minor, whence they gradually spread to the province of Khodawendikyar (Bithynia). (2) Tatars scattered amongst the rest of the population, but forming a large colony in the Dobrudja. In part they occupied their present settlements before the conquest of Constautinople ; but others have immigrated into Asia Minor during the last two centuries from the Crimea and Caucasus, since the Russian conquests of those regions. They have fared very badly under Turkish rule, as is attested by Captain Wilson. That tribes of Turkish origin were settled in Europe long before the rise of the Ottoman power is known from the Byzantine authors, who mention a colony of them (about 30,000) as early as the 10th century in the Vardar valley in Macedonia.® (3) The so-called Kizil-bashis or "Red Heads," a nickname of the Shi'itic Turkish immigrants from Persia, who are found chiefly in the plains from Kara-hissar along Tokat and Amasia to Angora. During the wars with Persia the Turkish sultans forced them to settle here. They are agriculturists and highly praised by several travellers for their honesty and laborious habits. (4) Turkmenian tribes—Yuruks and Gétchebes (words meaning "nomads" and characteristic of their most distinctive quality),—who occupy the mountains in summer and descend into the plains in winter, though some are settled in the plains of Cilicia near Tarsus and Adana, the rest being scmi-nomads. Reclus estimates the total number of Turks in Europe at 1,500,000 and 35,000 Tatars. For Asia Minor statistics are wanting ; but P. de Tchihatchef, the chief authority for matters relating to this peninsula, thinks that 6,000,000 is a fair estimate for the total population, including Greeks, Armenians, Kurds, &c., but excluding the islands. It appears therefore neces- sary to reduce the already moderate number of Osmanlis given by Vambéry (10,000,000) to about 6,000,000.

LANGUAGE.

The Turkish, or, as some prefer to say, the Turco-Tatar language, is a member of the Ural-Altaic family (see UrAL-ALTAIC) and comprehends many dialects, which differ considerably in their vocabulary and in a less degree also in their grammar. The study of these dialects has made great advances during the 19th cen- tury. Abel Remusat in 1820 knew only of four, viz., the Uigurian, Jagatai, Tatar, and Osmanli. Béresine in 1848 distinguished nine- teen, grouped round three types, viz., (1) Jagatai dialects

(Uigur, Coman, Jagatai, Uzbegian, Turkmani, Kazani literary language); (2) Tatar dialects (Kirghizian, Bashkiri, Nogai, Kumi, Karatchai, Kara-Kalpaki, Meshtcheryaki, and Siberian) ; (8) Turki dialects (Derbendi, Adarbaijani, Krimmi, Anadoli,and Rumili). Bohtlingk (1851) added the Yakuti, and Shaw (1877) the Eastern Turki. Radloff (1882) subdivided the one Siberian dialect of Béresine into more than a dozen different dialects.

6 Cp. the Tabakat i-Ndsirt, by Major Raverty, p. 553 sg., where the name is incorrectly written Khalj.

? Cp. Lady Sheil, Glimpses of Life and Manners in Persia (London, 1856), and various articles by Von Seidlitz in the Russische Revue, &c.

8 Cp. Lejean, ‘ Ethnographie der Europdischen Tiirkei,” in Peterm. Ergtnz.-Heft 4 (1861), p. 38.

Turks of southern Persia.

Osman- lis.

Dialecti- cal varie- ties,

Alpha- bet.

Ety- mology.

Syntax.

662

On the phonetical characteristics of each of these dialects ample information is given in his Phonetik der nérdlichen Tiirk. Sprachen. These great dialectical varieties are easily accounted for by the want of a common Turkish literary language understood every- where. The most developed and refined Turkish tongue, that of the Osmanlis, which is very rich in literary monuments, has admitted too many Arabic and Persian words, grammatical forms, and even whole sentences, and has been too much spoiled by the precepts of Persian rhetoric, to produce a popular literature. With the exception of some tales and novels, this literature has remained an

exotic production, unintelligible even to the people who are sup- posed to speak the same language (see TURKEY, p. 656 above). The Jagatai and Uzbegian dialects would have answered the purpose better, and present the best type of a (hypothetical) general Turkish language, of which the most prominent features may be here given. : E

The Arabic alphabet is in general use, though some tribes in Russia make use of Russian and others in Asia Minor of Armenian and Greck characters. But the oldest Turkish alphabet, the Uigurian, is a direct transformation of the Syriac, and has fourteen characters. When and by whom it was invented is uncertain ; the Arabic author of the Fihrist does not mention it, and the Uigurian MSS. which we possess date for the most part from the 15th century. Itis commonly supposed to be the work of Nestorian missionaries, who may have preached the Gospel amongst the Turks as early as the 6th or 7th century.' In the age of Sinjibu the Turks seem to have used the Sogdian characters in their political inter- course with Byzantium ; but as a rule they remained illiterate till their conversion to Islam. As the Semitic languages are charac- terized by the three-radical system and the constancy of the con- sonants, all Ural-Altaic languages are dominated by the law of vowel harmony and agglutination. We have therefore in Turkish a double range of vowels, commonly eight in number, of which a, %, 0, wv denote the hard or guttural aud , 7, 6, the soft or palatal vowels, the vowels in every separate word being of the same range. The z only is in most dialects indifferent. The law of agglutination is derived from the same principle, but has regard, not only to the vowels, but also to the consonants and the syllables ; it is an abuse of the term if it is taken to mean that in Turkish no real ctymology exists, but only an agglutination of themes and roots.

As regards the etymology we observe the absence of gender, of a separate form for the dual, and of the nominative in the nouns. There are commonly five oblique cases—genitive, dative, accusa- tive, commorative, and ablative—though Bohtlingk has shown that in the Yakut dialect, which distinguishes ten cases, the genitive is wanting. The adjective, unless used as substantive, is uninflected both as attribute and as predicate ; the comparative is formed by the suffix -rak (~~rck), and takes the compared noun in the ablative ; the superlative has no specific form, though a peculiar intensive is formed by prefixing to the adjective (though in writing always~~

~~as two words) a syllable beginning with the same consonant, and ending in a labial » or m: for instance, kap kara, “intensely black” ; kip kizil, “intensely red.” The decimal system has prevailed over an original septimal system. The article does not exist. The relative pronoun has been borrowed from the Persian in many dialects ; it is absent in the original Turkish. The theme of the verb is seen in the impcrative, from which are derived various participles aud gerunds, used either separately or combined with pronominal suffixes. These combinations supply the forms of the simple tenses and moods, though different dialects use different forms of participle and gerund for this purpose. Compound tenses and moods are expressed by means of auxiliary verbs. The theme of the imperative may, by the addition of a simple consonant, vowel, or syllable, be modified into a negative, passive, reflexive, reciprocal, impossible, causative, or doubly causative form, which are con~~ jugated in the same manner as the original form. The causative forms again admit of a passive negative, &c., so that in fact the number of possible verbal forms derived from a single theme has been calculated by Shaw at 29,000. There are no prepositions, only postpositions.

In syntax the order of the words and clauses of a period is almost the inverse of what seems natural to us, the subject and its predicate being placed at the end, while all hypothetical, causal, prohibitive,—in short all subordinate—clauses come first. In the simple style of illiterate peasants, and in popular romances and tales, this method presents no inconvenience as regards easy under- standing, but in the artificial, often excessively long periods of an Osmanli stylist, it presents serious difficulties to a European reader.

Bibliography.—(a) General works on the history and ethnography of the Turks: Deguignes, Histoire des Huns; Vambéry, Das Tiirkenvolk (Leipsic, 1885), Ursprung der Magyaren (Leipsic, 1882), and several other publications ; Radloff, Aus Sibirien (Leipsic, 1884); W. Grigorieff, Zemlewjedjenie K. Rittera Wostotschnt ili Kitaiski Turkestan; Neumann, Die Volker des stidlichen Russland (Leipsic, 1847). We may add the historians of the Mongols—D’Ohsson,

oworth, and others—the numerous journals of travellers amongst Turkish peoples, and several articles in the Russische Revue, Journal of the Royal

Asiatic

1 For details about the spread of Christianity amongst the Turks, –

see Yule, Cathay and the Way thither, i. 90-100.

TU R—

YU Rn

Soc., &e. A full bibliography of works relating to Central Asia may be found in V. J. Mejoff, Recueil du Turkestan (St Petersburg, 1878-84), and a useful ex- cerpt at the end of vol. ii. of Lansdell's Russian Central Asia. Other works have already been cited in the course of this article.

(b) For the study of Turkish dialects the subjoined books may be used. (1). Osmanli: the grammars and dictionaries of Redhouse, Mallouf, Zenker, Barbier de Meynard, &c. (2) Uigur: the works of Klaproth ; Abel Rémusat. Recherches sur les Langues Tartares (Paris, 1820); and Vambéry, Uigurische Sprachmonu- mente und das Kudatku Bilik (Innsbruck, 1870). (8) Jagatai: the dictionary of Pavet de Courteille, and Vambéry, Jagataische Sprachstudien (Leipsic, 1867). (4) Eastern Turki: Shaw's grammar and vocabulary (Jour. Roy. As. Soc. of Bengal, 1877). (5) Tatar dialects: the grammars of Kasimbeg-Zenker (Leipsic, 1848), Ilminski (Kazan, 1869), and Radloff (Leipsic, 1882); Dictionary of Trojanski (Kazan, 1833); the chrestomathies of Béresine (Kazan, 1857), Terentieff, and specially Radloff, Proben der Volksliteratur der ttirkischen Stamme Stid-Sibiriens (St Petersburg, 1872). And (6) Yakuti: Bohtlingk, Die Sprache der Jakuten (St Petersburg, 1851).: ' M. T. H.)

TURMERIC, the tuberous root of Curcuma longa, L., an herbaceous perennial plant belonging to the natural order Zingiberacex. It is a native of southern Asia, being cultivated on a large scale both on the mainland and in the islands of the Indian Ocean. Turmeric has been used from a remote period both as a condiment and as a dye stuff, and to a more limited extent as a medicine. In Europe it is employed chiefly as a dye, also as an ingre- dient in curry powder and as a chemical test for alkalies. The root is prepared by cleaning it and drying it in an oven. There are several varieties

(Madras, Bengal, Gopalpur, Java, China, and Cochin turmeric), differing chiefly in size and colour and to a slight degree in flavour. Some of these consist exclusively of the ovate central tubers, tech- nically known as “ bulbs,” and others of the somewhat cylindrical lateral tubers, which are distinguished in trade as “fingers.” Both are hard and tough, but break with a short resinous or waxy fracture, which varies in tint from an orange brown to a deep reddish brown.

Turmeric has a characteristic odour and an aromatic taste. The aroma it owes to a complex essential oil, which consists princi- pally of an alcohol called turmerol (formula CygH,.0), which differs from carvol in being unable to combine with hydrogen sulphide ; the other constituents of the oil have not been determined. The colour is due to curcumin, C,4H,,0, of which the drug contains about 0°3 per cent. It possesses the properties of an acid, forming red-brown salts with alkalies and being precipitated from alkaline solutions by acids. When pure it forms yellow crystals having a vanilla odour and exhibiting a fine blue colour in reflected light. It is soluble in alcohol, in chloroform, and in alkaline solutions, but only sparingly in water. Paper tinged with a tincture of tur- meric exhibits on the addition of an alkali a reddish brown tint, which becomes violet on drying. This peculiarity was pointed out by Vogel in 1815, and since that date turmeric has been utilized as a chemical test for detecting alkalinity. In India the drug is considered to possess cordial and stomachic properties: a decoction made with milk and sweetened is used as a remedy for colds. Externally it is employed in skin diseases and in the form of a cooling lotion for relieving the pain of conjunctivitis ; the fumes of the burning tubers directed into the nostrils relieve congestion in cases of coryza. The cultivation of turnieric is carried on most successfully in light rich soil in well-watcred districts. The plant is easily propagated by offsets. An acre yields about 2000 Ib. Turmeric is said to grow in large quantities on the slopes of hills bordering the plains of the Beni in Bolivia and also in Panama. Several species of Cwrcwma and of allied genera yield yellowish aromatic roots. In Sierra Leone a kind of turmeric is obtained from a species of Canna.

TURNER, Cuarues (1773-1857), an English engraver, was born at Woodstock in 1773. He entered the schools of the Royal Academy in 1795; and, engraving in stipple in the manner of Bartolozzi, he was employed by

Alderman Boydell. His finest plates, however, are in mezzotint, a method in which he engraved J. M. W. Turner's Wreck and twenty-four subjects of his Liber Studiorum, Reynolds's Marlborough Family, and many of Raeburn's best portraits, including those of Sir Walter Scott, Lord Newton, Dr Hamilton, Profs. Dugald Stewart and John Robison, and Dr Adam. He also worked after Lawrence, Shee, and Owen. He was an admirable engraver, large, broad, and masterly in touch ; and he reproduced with great fidelity the characteristics of the various painters whose works he translated into black and white. In 1828 he was elected an associate engraver of the Royal Academy. He died in London on Ist August 1857.

ruUwN # RR

TURNER, JosepH Matiorp Witiiam (1775-1851), one of the greatest painters of the English school, was born in London on 23d April1775. His father, William Turner, a native of Devonshire, kept a barber's shop at 26 Maiden Lane, in the parish of St Paul's, Covent Garden ; he was "'a cheerful, talkative little man, with small blue eyes, a parrot nose, projecting chin, and a fresh complexion indicative of health." Of the painter's mother, Mary Marshall or Turner, little is known; she is said to have been a person of ungovernable temper and towards the end of her life became insane. Apparently the home in which Turner spent his childhood was not a happy one, and this may account for much that was unsociable and eccentric in his character. The earliest known drawing by Turner, a view of Margate Church, dates from his ninth year. It was also about this time that he was sent to his first school at New Brentford. Of education, as the term is generally understood, he received but little. His father taught him to read, and this and a few months at New Brentford and afterwards at Margate were all the schooling he ever had; he never mastered his native tongue, nor was he able in after life to learn any foreign language. Notwithstanding this lack of scholarship, one of his strongest characteristics was a taste for associating his works with personages and places of legendary and historical interest, and certain stories of antiquity seem to have taken root in his mind very strongly. By the time Turner had completed his thirteenth year his school days were over and his choice of an artist's career settled. In 1788-89 he was receiving lessons from Palice, '"'a floral drawing master," from T. Malton, a perspective draughtsman, and from Hardwick, an

architect. He also attended Paul Sandby's drawing school in St Martin's Lane. Part of his time was employed in making drawings at home, which he exhibited for sale in his father's shop window, two or three shillings being the usual price. He coloured prints for engravers, washed in backgrounds for architects, went out sketching with Girtin, and made draw- ings in the evenings for Dr Munro "for half a crown and his supper." When pitied in after life for the miscellaneous character of his early work, his reply was 'Well! and what could be better practice?" In 1789 Turner became a student of the Royal Academy. He also worked for a short time in the house of Sir Joshua Reynolds, with the idea, apparently, of becoming a portrait painter ; but, the death of Reynolds occurring shortly afterwards, this intention was abandoned. In 1790 Turner's name appears for the first time in the catalogue of the Royal Academy, the title of his solitary contribution being "View of the Arch- bishop's Palace, Lambeth." About 1792 he received a commission from Walker, the engraver, to make drawings for his Copper-Plate Magazine, and this topographical work took him to many interesting places. The natural vigour of his constitution enabled him to cover much of the ground on foot. He could walk from 20 to 25 miles a day with ease, his baggage at the end of a stick, making notes and memoranda as he went. He rose early, worked hard all day, wasted no time over his simple meals, and his homely way of living made him easily contented with such rude accommodation as he chanced to find on the road. A year or two after he accepted a similar conimission to make drawings for the Pocket Magazine, and before his twentieth year he had travelled over many parts of England and Wales. None of these magazine drawings are remarkable for originality of treatment or for artistic feeling.

Up to this time Turner had worked in the back room above his father's shop. His love of secretiveness and solitude had already begun to show itself. An architect who often employed him to put in backgrounds to his drawings says, "he would never suffer me to see him draw, but concealed all that he did in his bed-room."

663

On another occasion, a visitor entering unannounced, Turner instantly covered up his drawings, and, in reply to the intimation, "I've come to see

the drawings for oe the answer was, ‘‘ You shan’t see ’em, and mind that next time you come through the shop, and not up the back way.” Probably the increase in the number of his engage- ments induced Turner about this time to set up a studio for himself in Hand Court, not far from his father’s shop, and there he continued to work till he was elected an associate of the Royal Academy (1799).

Until 1792 Turner’s practice had been almost exclusively confined to water colours, and his early works show how much he was indebted to some of his contemporaries. There are few of any note whose style he did not copy or adopt. His first exhibited oil picture appeared in the Academy in 1793. In 1794-95 Canterbury Cathedral, Malvern Abbey, Tintern Abbey, Lincoln and Peterborough Cathedrals, Shrewsbury, and King’s College Chapel, Cambridge, were among the subjects exhibited, and during the next four years he contributed no less than thirty-nine works to the Academy. In the catalogue of 1798 he first began to add poetic quotations to the titles of his pictures ; one of the very first of these—a passage from Milton’s Paradise Lost—is in some respects curiously prophetic of one of the future characteristics of his art.

‘Ye mists and exhalations that now rise From hill or steaming lake, dusky or grey

Till the sun paints your fleecy skirts with gold, In honour of the world’s great author rise.”’

This and several other quotations in the following years show that Turner’s mind was now occupied with something more than the merely topographical element of landscape, Milton’s Paradise Lost and Thomson’s Seasons being laid under frequent contribution for descriptions of sunrise, sunset, twilight, or thunderstorm. Turner’s first visit to Yorkshire took place in 1797. It seems to have braced his powers and possibly helped to change the student into the painter. Until then his work had shown very little of the artist in the higher sense of the term: he was little more than a painstaking and tolerably accurate topographer, but even under these conditions he had begun to attract the notice of his brother artists and of the critics. England was, at the time, at a low point both in literature andart. Among the artists De Loutherbourg and Morland were almost the only men of note left.

Hogarth, Wilson, Gainsborough, and Reynolds had passed away. Beechey, Bourgeois, Garvey, Farington—names well-nigh forgotten now—were the Academicians who painted landscape. The only formidable rivals Turner had to contend with were De Loutherbourg and Girtin, and after the death of the latter in 1802 he was left undisputed master of the field.

It is not therefore surprising that the exhibition of his works in 1798 was followed by his election to the associ- ateship of the Royal Academy. That he should have attained to this position before completing his twenty-fourth year says much for the wisdom and discernment of that body, which further showed its recognition of his talent by electing him an Academician four years later. Turner owed much to the Academy. Mr Ruskin says, “It taught him nothing.” Possibly it had little to teach that he had not already been able to learn for himself; at all events it was quick to see his genius and to confer its honours, and Turner, naturally generous and grateful, never forgot this. He enjoyed the dignity of Academician for nearly half a century, and during nearly the whole of that period he took an active share in the direction of the Academy’s affairs. His speeches are described as “‘con-fused, tedious, obscure, and extremely difficult to follow”; but at council meetings he was ever anxious to allay anger and bitter controversy. His opinions on art were always

listened to with respect ; but on matters of business it was often difficult to know what he meant. His friend Chantrey used to say, ‘‘He has great thoughts, if only he could express them.” When appointed professor of per-spective to the Royal Academy in 1808, this painful lack of expression stood greatly in the way of his usefulness : he was often at a loss for words to express his ideas, and when he had recourse to his notes he found difficulty in reading them. Mr Ruskin says, ‘‘The zealous care with which Turner endeavoured to do his duty is proved by a series of large drawings, exquisitely tinted, and often completely coloured, all by his own hand, of the most difficult perspective subjects, illustrating not only directions of line, but effects of light, with a care and completion which would put the work of any ordinary teacher to utter shame.” In teaching he would neither waste time nor spare it. ‘If a student would take a hint, Turner was delighted

and would go on with him giving hint after hint ; if he could not follow, he left him. Explanations are wasted time; a man who can see understands a touch ; a man who cannot misunderstands an oration." With his election to the associateship of the Academy in 1799, Turner's early struggles may be considered to have ended. He had emancipated himself from hack work, had given up making topographical drawings of castles and abbeys for the engravers—drawings in which mere local fidelity was the principal object —and had taken to composing as he drew. Local facts had become of secondary importance compared with effects of light and colour. He had reached manhood, and with it he abandoned topographical fidelity and began to paint his dreams, the visionary faculty— the true foundation of his art—asserting itself, nature being used to supply suggestions and materials.

His pictures of 1797-99 had shown that he was a painter of no ordinary power, one having much of the poet in him, and able to give expression to the mystery, beauty, and inexhaustible fulness of nature. His work at this period is described by Mr Ruskin as "stern in manner, reserved, quiet, grave in colour, forceful in hand."

Turner's visit to Yorkshire in 1797 was followed a year or two later by a second, and it was on this occasion that he made the acquaintance, which afterwards ripened into a long and staunch friendship, of Fawkes of Farnley Hall. From 1803 till 1820 Turner. was a frequent visitor at Farnley. The large number of his drawings still preserved there—English, Swiss, German, and Italian, the studies of rooms, outhouses, porches, gateways, of birds shot while he was there, and of old places in the neighbour- hood—prove the frequency of his visits and his affection for the place and for its hospitable master. A caricature, made by Fawkes, and "thought by old friends to be very like," shows Turner as 'a little Jewish-nosed man, in an ill-cut brown tail-coat, striped waistcoat, and enormous frilled shirt, with feet and hands notably small, sketching on a small piece of paper, held down almost level with his waist." It is evident from all the accounts given that Turner's personal appearance was not of a kind to com- mand much attention or respect. This may have pained his sensitive nature, and led him to seek refuge in the solitude of his painting room. Had he been inclined he had abundant opportunity for social and friendly intercourse with his fellow-men, but he gradually came to live more and more in a state of

mental isolation, keeping himself to himself, entirely absorbed in his art. “This man must be loved for his works, for his person is not striking nor his conversation brilliant,” is the testimony of Dayes, the water-colour painter (and Girtin’s master), in 1804. Turner could never make up his mind to visit Farnley again after his old friend’s death, and his voice would falter when he spoke of the shores of the Wharfe.

Li Oe a a,

Turner visited Scotland in 1800, and in 1801 or 1802 he made his first tour on the Continent. In the following year, of the seven pictures he exhibited six were of foreign subjects, among them Bonneville, the Festival upon the Opening of the Vintage of Macon, and the well-known Calais Pier in the National Gallery. The last-named picture, although heavily painted and somewhat opaque in colour, is magnificently composed and full of energy. A better idea of its masterly composition can be formed from Mr Seymour Haden’s vigorous etching than from the picture itself, which is now greatly darkened by time.

In 1802, the year in which Turner became a Royal Academician, he took his old father, who still carried on the barber business in Maiden Lane, to live with him. The powder tax, imposed in 1795, drove out wigs and spoiled the old man’s trade. ‘‘It is precisely,” says Mr Hamerton, ‘‘ when the painter wins the full honours of the Academy—honours which give a recognized and envied position in London society—that he takes his father home ; a meaner nature would have tried to keep the old man at a safe distance.” Turner’s relations with his father were of the most dutiful and filial kind to the last.

In 1804 Turner made a second tour on the Continent, and in the following year painted the Shipwreck and Fishing Boats in a Squall (in the Ellesmere collection), seemingly in direct rivalry of Vandervelde, in 1806 the Goddess of Discord in the Garden of the Hesperides (in rivalry of Poussin), and in 1807 the Sun rising through Vapour (in rivalry of Claude).? The last two are notable works, especially the Sun. In after years it was one of the works he left to the nation, on the special condition of its being hung beside the Claudes in the National Gallery. In this same year (1807) Turner commenced his most serious rivalry. Possibly it arose out of a desire to

break down Claude worship, the then prevailing fashion, and to show the public that there was a living artist not un- worthy of taking rank beside him. That the Leber Studt- orum was suggested by the Liber Veritatis of Claude, and was intended asa direct challenge to that master, is be- yond doubt. There is, however, a certain degree of un- fairness to Claude in the way in which the challenge was given. Claude made drawings in brown of his pictures as they left the easel, not for publication, but merely to serve as private memoranda. Turner's Liber drawings had no such purpose, but were intended as a direct appeal to the public to judge between the two artists. The first of the Liber drawings were made in the autumn of 1806, the cthers at intervals till about 1815. They are of the same size as the plates and carefully finished in sepia. About fifty of them are now to be seen in the Turner rooms of the National Gallery. The issue of the Zber began in 1807 and continued at irregular intervals till 1819, when it stopped at the fourteenth number. 'Turner had resolved to manage the publishing business himself, but in this he

1 Turner's father died in 1880, and the loss of " poor old Dad," as he used to call him, left a terrible void, He had lived in his son's house for nearly thirty years, looking after the frugal affairs of his household, and making himself useful in various ways. It is said that he used to prepare and strain his son's canvases and varnish them when finished, which may explain a saying of Turner's that ''his father used to begin and finish his pictures for him." He also attended to the gallery in Queen Anne Street, showed in visiters, and took care of the dinner, if he did not himself cook it. Turner was never the same man after his father's death, living a life of almost complete isolation.

2 This spirit of rivalry showed itself early in his career. He began by pitting himself against his contemporaries, and afterwards, when his powers were more fully developed, against some of the old masters, notably Vandervelde and Claude. During these years, while he kept up a constant rivalry with artists living and dead, he was continuing his unresting and untiring study of nature, and, while seemingly a mere follower of the ancients, was accumulating that immense store of knowledge which in after years, when his true genius asserted itself, he was to use to such purpose.

was not very successful. He soon quarrelled with his engraver, I. C. Lewis, on the ground that he had raised his charges from five guineas a plate to eight. He then employed Charles Turner, who agreed to do fifty plates at the latter sum, but, after finishing twenty, he too wished to raise his price, and, as a matter of course, this led to another quarrel. Reynolds, Dunkarton, Lupton, Say, Dawe, and other engravers were afterwards employed—Turner himself etching and mezzotinting some of the plates. Each part of the Zcber contained five plates, the subjects, divided into “historical,” “ pastoral,” ‘ marine,” &c., embracing the whole range of landscape art. Seventy- one plates in all were published (including one as a gift of the artist to his subscribers); ten other plates—more or less completed—intended for the fifteenth and sixteenth numbers were never published, the work being stopped for want of encouragement. Absence of method and business habits may account for this. Turner is said to have got up the numbers in his own house with the help of a female servant. The plates, which cost the subscribers only five shillings apiece, were’ so little esteemed that in the early quarter of the 19th century they were sometimes used for lighting fires. So much has fashion, or public taste, changed since then that a fine proof of a single plate has sold for £210. The merit of the plates is un- equal; some—for example, Solway Moss, Inverary Pier, Hind Head Hill, Ben Arthur, Rizpah, Junction of the Severn and Wye, and Peat Bog—are of great beauty, while a few are comparatively tame and uninteresting. Among the unpublished plates Stonehenge at Daybreak and Sheep Washing, Windsor Castle take a high place. The Liber shows strong traces of the influence of Cozens and Girtin, and, as a matter of course, of Claude. In most of the designs the predominant feeling is serious; in not a few, gloomy, or even tragic. A good deal has been written about Turner’s intention, and the “lessons” of the Liber Studiorum. Probably his only intention in the beginning was to show what he could do, to display his art, to rival Claude, perhaps to educate public taste, and at the same time make money. If lessons were intended they might have been better conveyed by words. “Silent always with a bitter silence, disdaining to tell his meaning,”—such is Mr Ruskin’s explanation; but surely Turner had little reason for either silence or contempt because the public failed to see in landscape art the means of teaching it great moral lessons. almost complete

epitome of Turner’s art. Already in this work are seen strong indications of one of his most remark- able characteristics—a knowledge of the principles of struc- ture in natural objects: mountains and rocks are drawn, not with topographical accuracy, but with what appears like an intuitive feeling for geological formation ; and trees have also the same expression of life and growth in the drawing of stems and branches, This instinctive feeling in Turner for the principles of organic structure is treated of at con- siderable length in the fourth volume of Modern Painters, and Turner is there contrasted with Claude, Poussin, and some of the Dutch masters, greatly to their disadvantage.

After 1797 Turner was little concerned with mere topo- graphical facts: his pictures might be like the places re- presented or not; much depended on the mental impression produced by the scene. He preferred to deal with the spirit, rather than with the local details of places.

1 “The strange unity of vertebrated action and of a true bony con- tour, infinitely varied in every vertebra, with this glacial outline, together with the adoption of the head of the Ganges crocodile, the

The seventy plates of the Liber contain an’

in the Apollo, exhibited in 1811. Both these monsters are imagined with such vividness and reality, and the sense of power and movement is so completely expressed, that the spectator never once thinks of them as otherwise than representations of actual facts in natural history. It needs but a little comparison to discover how far Turner surpassed all his contemporaries, as well as all who pre- ceded him, in these respects. The imaginative faculty he possessed was of the highest order, and it was further aided by a memory of the most retentive and unerring kind. A good illustration of this may be seen at Farnley Hall in a drawing of a Man-of-War taking in Stores. Some one, who had never seen a first-rate, expressed a wish to know what it looked like. Turner took a blank sheet of paper one morning after breakfast, outlined the ship, and finished the drawing in three hours, Fawkes sitting beside him from the first stroke to the last. The size of this drawing is about 16 in. by 11 in. Mr Ruskin thus describes it ¢

“The hull of a first-rate occupies nearly one half of the picture to the right, her bows toward the spectator, seen in sharp per- spective from stem to stern, with all her port-holes, guns, anchors, and lower rigging elaborately detailed, two other ships of the line in the middle distance drawn with equal precision, a noble breezy sea, full of delicate drawing in its waves, a store ship beneath the hull of the larger vessel and several other boats, and a complicated cloudy sky, all drawn from memory, down to the smallest rope, in a drawing-room of a mansion in the middle of Yorkshire.”

About the year 1811 Turner paid his first visit to Devonshire, the county to which his family belonged, and a curious glimpse of his simple manner of life is given by Redding, who accompanied him on some of his ex- cursions. On one occasion they spent a night together in a small road-side inn, Turner having a great desire to see the country around at sunrise.

‘‘ Turner was content with bread and cheese and beer, tolerably good, for dinner and supper in one. In the little sanded room we conversed by the light of an attenuated candle and some aid from the moon until nearly midnight, when Turner laid his head upon the table and was soon fast asleep. Three or four hours rest was thus obtained, and we went out as soon as the sun was up to ex- plore the surrounding neighbourhood. It was in that early morning Turner made a sketch of the picture Crossing the Brook.” In another excursion to Borough Island, “‘the morning was squally and the sea rolled boisterously into the Sound. Off Stakes Point it became stormy ; our Dutch boat rode bravely over the furrows. Two of the party were ill. Turner was all the while quiet, watch- ing the troubled scene. Bolt Head, to seaward, against which the waves broke with fury, seemed to absorb his entire notice, and he scarcely spoke a syllable. While the fish were getting ready Turner mounted nearly to the highest point of the island rock, and seemed writing rather than drawing. The wind was almost too violent for either purpose.”

This and similar incidents show how careless of comfort Turner was, and how devoted to his art. The tumult and discomfort by which he was surrounded could not distract his powers of observation; and some thirty years later there is still evidence of the same kind. In the catalogue of the exhibition of 1842 one of his pictures bears the following title, “‘Snow-

Storm: steam-boat off a harbour's mouth making signals in shallow water, and going by the lead. The author was in that storm the night the 'Ariel' left Harwich."

From 1813 till 1826, in addition to his Harley Street residence, Turner had a country house at Twickenham. He kept a boat on the river, also a pony and gig, in which he used to drive about the neighbouring country on sketch- ing expeditions. The pony, for which Turner had a great love, appears in his well-known Frosty Morning in the National Gallery. He appears to have had a great affec-

fish-eater, to show his sea descent (and this in the year 1806, when hardly a single fossil saurian skeleton existed within Turner's reach), renders the whole conception one of the most curious exertions of the imaginative intellect with which I am acquainted in the arts" (Ruskin, Mod. Painters, vol. v. p. 318).

covin, —= "84

tion for animals, and one instance of his tenderness of heart is given by one who often joined him in the amuse- ment of fishing, of which Turner was very fond. "I was often with him when fishing at Petworth, and also on the banks of the Thames. His success as an angler was great, although with the worst tackle in the world. Every fish he caught he showed to me, and appealed to me to decide whether the size justified him to keep it for the table or to return it to the river; his hesitation was often almost touching, and he always gave the prisoner at the bar the benefit of the doubt."

In 1813 Turner commenced the series of drawings, forty in number, for Cooke's Southern Coast. This work was not completed till 1826. The price he at first received for these drawings was £7, 10s. each, afterwards raised to £13, 2s. 6d.

Crossing the Brook appeared in the Academy of 1815. It may be regarded as a typical example of Turner's art at this period, and marks the transition from his earlier style to that of his maturity. It represents a piece of

Devonshire scenery, a view on the river Tamar. On the left is a group of tall pine-trees, beautifully designed and drawn with great skill and knowledge of structure, in the foreground a couple of children, with a dog carrying a bundle in its mouth across the brook, and beyond, a vast expanse of richly-wooded country, with glimpses of a winding river, an old bridge, a mill, and other buildings, and, in the far distance, the sea. Both in design and execution this work is founded upon Claude. Some critics consider it one of Turner's greatest works; but this is open to question. It can hardly be called a work in full colour: it is limited to greys and quiet greens for the earth and pale blues for the sky. It is a sober but very admirable picture, full of diffused daylight, and in the painting of its distance better than any master who had preceded him. The fascination of the remote, afterwards so distinctive an element in Turner's pictures, shows itself here. Perhaps nothing tests the powers or tries the skill of the landscape-painter more severely than the representa- tion of distant effects. They come and go so rapidly, are often in a high key of light and colour, and so full of mystery and delicacy, that anything approaching to real imitation is impossible. Only the most retentive memory and the most sensitive and tender feeling will avail. These qualities Turner possessed to a remarkable degree, and as his powers matured there was an ever-increasing tendency in his art to desert the foreground, where things were definite and clear, in order to dream in the infinite suggestiveness and space of distances. Dido Building Carthage also belongs to this period. It hangs beside the Claudes in the National Gallery. It pertains to the old erroneous school of historical painting. Towering masses of Claudesque architecture piled up on either side, porticoes, vestibules, and stone pines, with the sun in a yellow sky, represent the Carthage of Turner's imagination. With all its faults it is still the finest work of the class he ever painted. Carthage and its fate had a strange fascination for him, It is said that he regarded it asa moral example to England in its agricultural decline, its increase of luxury, and its blindness to the insatiable ambition of a powerful rival, He returned again to this theme in 1817, when he exhibited his Decline of the Carthaginian Empire: Host- ages Leaving Carthage for Rome,—a picture which Mr Ruskin describes as "little more than an accumulation of academy student's outlines coloured brown."

In 1818 Turner was in Scotland making drawings for

1 Crossing the Brook was a great favourite with Tumer. It was painted for a patron, who, dissatisfied with it, left it on the painter's hands. The price asked (£500) seems to have been part of the objec- tion. Turner subsequently refused an offer of £1600 for it.

TU RN @ &

the Provincial Antiquities for which Sir Walter Scott supplied the letterpress, and in 1819 he visited Italy for the first time. One of the results of this visit was a great change in his style, and from this time his works became remarkable for their colour. Hitherto he had painted in browns, greys, and blues, using red and yellow sparingly. He had gradually been advancing from the sober grey colouring of Vandervelde and Ruysdael to the mellow and richer tones of Claude. His works now begin to show a heightened scale of colour, gradually increasing in richness and splendour and reaching its culminating point in such works as the Ulysses, Childe Harold's Pilgrimage, the Golden Bough, and the Fighting Téméraire. All these works belong to the middle period of Turner's art (1829- 39), when his powers were entirely developed and entirely unabated. Much of his most beautiful work at this period is to be found in his water-colour drawings: those exe- cuted for Whitaker's History of Richmondshire (1819-21), for Cooke's Southern Coast (1814-26), for The Rivers of England (1824), for England and Wales (1829-38), Pro- vincial Antiquities (1826), Rogers's [taly (1830), Scott's Works (1834), and The Rivers of France (1833-35) are in many instances of the greatest beauty. Of the Richmond-shire drawings Mr Ruskin says, 'The foliage is rich and marvellous in composition, the rock and hill drawing in- superable, the skies exquisite in complex form."

But perhaps one of the greatest services Turner rendered to the art of England was the education of a whole school of engravers. His best qualities as a teacher came from the union of strength and delicacy in his work ; subtle and delicate tonality was almost a new element for the engraver to deal with, but with Turner's teaching and careful supervision his engravers by degrees mastered it more or less successfully, and something like a new de- velopment of the art of engraving was the result. No better proof can be found of the immense advance made than by

comparing the work of the landscape engravers of the pre-Turnerian period with the work of Miller, Goodall, Willmore, Cooke, Wallis, Lupton, C. Turner, Brandard, Cousen, and others who worked under his guidance. The art of steel engraving reached its highest development in England at this time. Rogers's Italy (1830) and his Poems (1834) contain perhaps the most beautiful and delicate of the many engravings executed after Turner's drawings. They are vignettes,? a form of art which Turner understood better than any artist ever did before,—perhaps, we might add, since. The Alps at Daybreak, Columbus Discovering Land, and Datur Hora Quiett may be given as examples of the finest.

In 1828 Turner paid a second visit to Italy, this time of considerable duration, on the way visiting Nimes, Avignon, Marseilles, Genoa, Spezzia, and Siena, and in the following year he exhibited the Ulysses Deriding Polyphe- mus, now in the National Gallery. It marks the beginning of the central and best period of Turner's power. 'This work is so well known that description is hardly needed. The galley of Ulysses occupies the centre of the picture ; the oars are being thrust out and the sailors flocking up the masts to unfurl sail, while Ulysses waves the blazing olive tree in defiance of the giant, whose huge form is seen high on the cliffs above; and the shadowy horses of Phoebus are traced in the slanting rays of the rising sun. The impression this picture leaves is one of great power and splendour. The painting throughout is magnificent, especially in the sky. Leslie speaks of it as "a poem of

2 «© Of all the artists who ever lived I think it is Turner who treated the vignette most exquisitely, and, if it were necessary to find some par- ticular reason for this, I should say that it may have been because there was nothing harsh or rigid in his genius, that forms and colours melted

into each other tenderly in his dream-world, and that his sense of gradation was the most delicate ever possessed by man" (Hamerton).

matchless splendour and beauty." From this period on- ward till about 1840 Turner's life was one of unceasing activity. Nothing is more astonishing than his prodigious fertility ; he rose early, worked from morning till night,

entirely absorbed in his art, and gradually became more and more solitary and isolated. Between 1829 and 1839 he sent fifty-five pictures to the Royal Academy, painted many others on private commission, made over four hundred drawings for engravers, besides thousands of studies and sketches from nature. His industry accounts for the immense quantity of work he left behind him. There is not the slightest evidence to show that it arose from a desire to make money, which he never cared for in com- parison with his art. He has been accused, perhaps not without some cause, of avarice and meanness in his busi- ness dealings, and many stories are told to his discredit. But in private he often did generous things, although owing to his reserved disposition his virtues were known only toa few. His faults on the other hand—thanks to the malice, or jealousy, of one or two individuals—were freely talked about and, as a matter of course, greatly ex- aggerated. “Keep it, and send your children to school and to church,” were the words with which he declined repayment of a considerable loan toa poor drawing-master’s widow. On another occasion, when interrupted in his work, he roughly chid and dismissed the applicant, a poor woman; but she had hardly left his door before he followed her and slipped a £5 note into her hand. His tenants in Harley Street were in arrears for years, but he would never allow his lawyer to distrain; and if further proof of his generosity were needed his great scheme for bettering the condition of the unfortunate in his own profession should suffice. On one occasion he is known to have taken down a picture of his own from the walls of the Academy to make room for that of an unknown artist.

The first of Turner’s Venetian pictures (Bridge of Sighs, Ducal Palace and Custom House, Venice, Canaletti Painting) appeared in the Academy in 1833. Compared with the sober, prosaic work of Canaletti, Turner’s pictures of Venice appear like poetic dreams. Splendour of colour and carelessness of form generally characterize them. Venice appeared to him “‘a city of rose and white, rising out of an emerald sea against a sky of sapphire blue.” Many of these Venetian pictures belong to his later manner, and some of them, the Sun of Venice Going to Sea (1843), Approach to Venice (1844), and Venice, Evening, Going to the Ball (1845), to his latest. As Turner grew older his love of brilliant colour and light became more and more a characteristic. In trying to obtain these qualities he gradually fell into an unsound method of work, treating oil as if it had been water-colour, using

both indiscrimi- nately on the same canvas, utterly regardless of the result. Many of his finest pictures are already in a ruined state, mere wrecks of what they once were.

The Fighting Téméraire Tugged to her Last Berth to be Broken up (see vol. xxi. p. 441, fig. 43) was exhibited in the Academy of 1839. By many it is considered one of his finest works. Turner had all his life been half a sailor at heart: he loved the sea, and shipping, and sailors and their ways; many of his best pictures are sea pieces ; and the old ships of Collingwood and Nelson were dear to him. Hence the pathetic feeling he throws around the fighting Téméraire. The old three-decker, looking ghostly and wan in the evening light, is slowly towed along by a black, fiery little steam tug,—a contrast suggesting the passing away of the old order of things and the advent of the new; and behind the sun sets red in a thick bank of smoke or mist. The Slave Ship, another important sea picture, was exhibited in the following year, and in 1842 Peace: Burial at Sea, commemorative of Wilkie.

667

Turner had now reached his sixty-seventh year, but no very marked traces of declining power are to be seen in his work. Many of the water-colour drawings belonging to this period are of great beauty, and, although a year or two later his other powers began to fail, his faculty for colour remained unimpaired almost to the end. He paid his last visit to the Continent in 1843, wandering about from one place to another, and avoiding his own country- men, an old and solitary man. At his house in Queen Anne Street they were often ignorant of his whereabouts for months, as he seldom took the trouble to write to any one, Two years later (1845) his health gave way and with it both mind and sight began to fail. The works of his declining period exercised the wit of the critics. Turner felt these attacks keenly. He was naturally kind- hearted and acutely sensitive to censure. ‘A man may be weak in his age,” he once remarked, “but you should not tell him so.”

After 1845 all the pictures shown by Turner belong to the period of decay, —mere ghosts and shadows of what once had been. In 1850 he exhibited for the last time. He had given up attending the meetings of the Academi- cians ; none of his friends had seen him for months; and even his old

housekeeper had no idea of his whereabouts. Turner's mind had evidently given way for some time, and with that love of secrecy which in later years had grown into a passion he had gone away to hide himself in a corner of London. He had settled as a lodger in a small house in Chelsea, overlooking the river, kept by his old Margate landlady, Mrs Booth. To the children in the neighbourhood he was known as "Admiral Booth." His short, sailor-like figure may account for the idea that he was an impoverished old naval officer. He had been ill for some weeks, and when his Queen Anne Street house- keeper at last discovered his hiding-place she found him sinking, and on the following day, the 19th December 1851, hedied. He was buried in St Paul's cathedral, in deference to a wish he had himself expressed.

He left the large fortune he had amassed (about £140,000) to found a charity for the ‘‘ maintenance and support of male decayed artists, being born in England, and of English parents only, and of lawful issue." His pictures he bequeathed to the nation, on con- dition that they were to be exhibited in rooms of their own, and that these rooms were to be called ‘‘Turner's Gallery." The will and its codicils were so confused that after years of litigation, during which a large part of the money was wasted in legal expenses, it was found impossible to decide what Turner really wanted.

It is unnecessary here to do more than allude to the charges which have been brought against Turner's moral character. Like most men of note he had his enemies and detractors, and it is to be regretted that so many of the stories they set in circulation should have been repeated by one of his biographers, who candidly admits having ‘spared none of his faults," and excuses himself for so doing by ‘‘ what he hopes" is his ‘‘ undeviating love of truth." The immense quantity of work accomplished by Turner during his lifetime, work full of the utmost delicacy and refinement, proves the singularly fine condition of his nervous system, and is perhaps the best answer that can be given to the charge of being excessively addicted to sensual gratification. In his declining years he possibly had recourse to stimulants to help his failing powers, but it by no means follows that he went habitually to excess in their use. He never lost an opportunity of doing a kindness, and under a rough and cold exterior there was more good and worth hidden than the world imagined. ‘‘ During the ten years I knew him,"

says Mr Ruskin, ‘‘years in which he was suffering most from the evil-speaking of the world, I never heard him say one depreciating word of any living man or man’s work; I never saw him look an unkind or blameful look; I never knew him let pass, without sorrowful remonstrance, or endeavour at mitigation, a blameful word spoken by another. Of no man but Turner, whom I have ever known, could I say this.” Twice during his earlier days there are circumstances leading to the belief that he had thoughts of

marriage, but on both occasions it ended in disappointment, and his home after his father died was cheerless and solitary, without solace or comfort of any kind.

If Turner had died early his reputation as an artist would have been very different from what it ultimately became. He would not have been recognized as a colourist. It was only after the year 1820 that colour began to assert itself strongly in his work. He painted for many a year in greys and greens and browns, went steadily through ‘‘ the subdued golden chord,” and painted yellow mists and suns rising through vapour; but as time went on that was no longer enough, and he tried to paint the sun in his strength and the full glories of sunshine. The means at the painter’s dis- posal are, however, limited, and Turner, in his efforts after brilliancy, began to indulge in reckless experiments in colour. He could not endure even the slightest restraints which technical limitations im- pose, but went on trying to paint the unpaintable. As a water- colour painter Turner stands pre-eminent ; he is unquestionably the greatest master in that branch of art that ever lived. If his work is compared with that of Barrett, or Varley, or Cozens, or Sandby, or any of the earlier masters, so great is Turner’s superior- ity that the art in his hands seems to be lifted altogether into a higher region. ;

In 1843 a champion, in the person of Mr Ruskin, arose to defend Turner against the unjust and ignorant attacks of the press, and what at first was intended as a “short pamphlet, reprobating the manner and style of these critics,” grew into the five volumes known as Modern Painters. The writer employs all his eloquence and his great critical faculty to prove how immeasurably superior ‘Turner was to all who had ever gone before, hardly restricting his supremacy to landscape art, and placing him among the

“‘seven supreme colourists of the world.” Two lives of Turner have been written, one by Mr Thornbury, the other by Mr Hamerton. The work of the latter deserves the highest commendation ; it gives a clear and consistent history of the great artist, and is characterized by refined thought and critical insight. An excellent little book by Mr W. C. Monkhouse should also be noticed. (G. RE.)

TURNHOUT, a town of Belgium, in the province of Antwerp, 25 miles east-north-east from Antwerp and 6 from the Dutch frontier, stands in the middle of a wide plain. It is a prosperous manufacturing and commercial centre, the chief industries being the weaving of cottons and linens (especially ticking), lace-making, paper-making, brick-making, dyeing, bleaching ; there is also an establish- ment for the rearing of leeches. The population of the commune in 1876 was 15,743.

TURNING. See Larue.

TURNIP. See AcricuLturE, vol. i. pp. 365-368, and HorvricuLtTurgE, vol. xii. p. 288.

TURNIP-FLY, Turntp-Fuea, or Earta FLEA-BEETLEz, the name applied to several species of Haltica which infest turnip fields and do considerable damage to crops. The genus belongs to the family Chrysomelidz, and includes about 100 species. ‘The turnip-fly most usually met with, Haltica nemorum, is scarcely 2mm. in length and of a shining black colour, with two och- reous yellow longitudinal bands run- ning along each wing-case; the bands are slightly sinuous and bend inwards at the hinder end. Of the eleven- jointed antenne the first three seg- ments are yellow and the remainder black. The cox are black, the rest of the legs having a yellowish hue.

Turnip fly (Haltica nemorum).

it The coxe and

tibize are stout and formed for leaping, especially in the

posterior pair of legs. The remarkable power of jumping has given rise to the name turnip-flea. The females are slightly longer and decidedly stouter than the males.

Another species, H. concinna, has a greenish yellow or brassy appearance, and the tibiz of the two posterior legs are armed with a thorn-like hook. A third species, #. consobrina, is of a dark blue colour above, whilst another species, H. obscurella, often very abundant, is of a lighter blue colour, and larger than those mentioned above.

The life-history of Haltica nemorwm may be taken as an example of that of the genus. The beetles begin pairing during April, and continue all through the summer. The female lays but few eggs,

usually one a day. The eggs are deposited on the under surface of a leaf, close under one of the projecting veins ; they possess a pro-

tective colouring. The development within the egg lasts ten days, at the end of which a small larva creeps out, and at once eats its way through the lower epidermis of the leaf into the mesophyll and there forms long winding burrows. The larva or maggot is of a yellowish colour and somewhat cylindrical in form. It has three pairs of legs anteriorly and a pair of pro-legs at its hinderend. The most anterior aud the most posterior segment bear a black spot. The mouth is provided with a pair of mandibles, by means of which the larva eats its way through the soft tissue of the leaf. This larval condition lasts about six days; the maggot then leaves the leaf and buries itself some one or two inches beneath the surface of the earth; here it turns into a chrysalis. From this the full- grown beetle emerges after an interval of fourtéen days, and it is in this stage of its life-history that it proves most destructive to the turnip crop. Several broods may be produced each season; the beetle lives through the winter sheltered under fallen leaves, pieces of wood, clods of earth, &c., until the warmth of spring awakens it, when it soon begins to lay eggs.

Since the chief damage to the crop is due to the perfect beetle devouring the young leaves of the turnip plant, one of the most important methods of dealing with the pest is to ensurc a strong and healthy growth of the plant, by means of manuring, watering, &c. Another preventative is the removal of such weeds as the shepherd's purse and charlock, which harbour the insect in great numbers, and the removal of any stubble in which it might pass the winter. When a crop is badly attacked dressings of soot and gas-lime mixed with sulphur and lime, or of soot or lime alone, prove efficacious, but these must be applied whilst the dew is on the leaves or the ''fly" will escape.

TURNSTONE, the name long given! to a shore-bird, from its habit of turning over with its bill such stones as it can to seek its food in the small crustaceans or other animals lurking beneath them. It is the Tringa interpres? of Linneus and Strepsilas interpres of most later writers, and is remarkable as being perhaps the most cosmopolitan of birds; for, though properly belonging to the northern hemisphere, there is scarcely a sea-coast in the world on which it may not occur: it has been obtained from Spitzbergen to the Strait of Magellan and from Point Barrow to the Cape of Good Hope and New Zealand— examples from the southern hemisphere being, however, almost invariably in a state of plumage that shows, if not immaturity, yet an ineptitude for reproduction. It also, though much less commonly, resorts to the margins of inland rivers and lakes; but it is very rarely seen except in the neighbourhood of water, and salt water for preference.

The Turnstone is about as big as an ordinary Snipe; but, com- pared with most of its allies of the group Limicolx, to which it be- longs, its form is somewhat heavy, and its legs are short. Still it is brisk in its movements, and its variegated plumage makes it a pleasing bird. Seen in front, its white face, striped with black, and broad black gorget attract attention as it sits, often motionless, on the rocks ; while in flight the white of the lower part of the back and white band across the wings are no less conspicuous even at a distance. A nearer view will reveal the rich chestnut of the mantle and upper wing-coverts, and the combination of colours thus ex- hibited suggests the term " tortoise-shell" often applied to it—the quill-feathers being mostly of a dark brown and its lower parts pure white. The deeper

tints are, however, peculiar to the nuptial plumage, or are only to be faintly traced at other times, so that in winter the adults—and the young always—have a much plainer appearance, ashy-grey and white being almost the only hues observ- able. From the fact that Turnstones may be met with at almost any season in various parts of the world,' and especially on islands as the Canaries, Azores, and many of those in the British seas, it has been inferred that these birds may breed in such places. In some cases this may prove to be true, but in most evidence to that effect is wanting. In America the breeding-range of this species has not been defined. In Europe there is good reason to suppose that it

1 The name seems to appear first in Willughby's Ornithologia (p. 231) in 1676; but he gave as an alias that of Sea-Dottrel, under which name a drawing, figured by him (pl. 58), was sent to him by Sir Thomas Browne.

2 Linneus (Cl. och Gothlandska Resa, p. 217), who first met with this bird on the island of Gottland, 1st July 1741, was under the mis- taken belief that it was there called Tolk (=interpres). But that name properly belongs to the REDSHANK (q.v.), from the cry of warning to other animals that it utters on the approach of danger.

3 The authors of The Water Birds of North America (i. p. 123) in reference to this fact raise the ingenious question, " Do birds, after they have become old, effete, or barren, prefer to stay in a warm climate ?"

includes Shetland ; but it is on the north-western coast of the continent, from Jutland to the extreme north of Norway, that the greatest number are reared. The nest, contrary to the habits of most Limicol#, is generally placed under a lcdge of rock which shelters the bird from observation,! and therein are laid four eggs, of a light olive-green, closely blotched with brown, and hardly to be mistaken for those of any other bird. A second species of Turn- stone is admitted by some authors and denied by others. This is the S. melanocephalus of the Pacific coast of North Amcrica, which is said to be on the average larger than S. interpres, and it never exhibits any of the chestnut colouring.

Though the genus Strepsilas seems to be rightly placed among the Charadriidx (cf. PLovEr), it occupies a some- what abnormal position among them, and in the form of its pointed beak and its variegated coloration has hardly any very near relative. (A. N.)

TURPENTINE consists of the oleo-resins which exude from certain trees, especially from some conifers and from the terebinth tree, Prstacia Terebinthus, L. It was to the product of the latter, now known as Chian turpentine, that the term was first applied. The terebinth tree (réppuvOo0s of Theophrastus) and its resin (fytivy teppivOwn) were well known and highly prized from the earliest times. The tree is a native of the islands and shores of the Medi- terranean, passing eastward into Central Asia; but the resinous exudation found in commerce is collected in the island of Scio. Chian turpentine is a tenacious semi-fluid transparent body, yellow to dull brown in colour, with an agreeable resinous odour and little taste. On exposure to the air it becomes dry, hard, and brittle. In their general characters, turpentines are soft solids or semi-fluid bodies, consisting of a mixture of one or more resins with essential oils, which, although differing in physical pro- perties, have a composition corresponding to the formula C,,)H,,. They also contain minute quantities of oxygenated oils. Formerly they had considerable reputation in medi- cine, and they still continue to be employed in plasters and ointments ; but their great use is in the arts, for which they are separated by distillation into rosin or colophony (see Rosin, vol. xx. p. 852) and oil or spirit of turpentine.

Crude or common turpentine is the commercial name which embraces the oleo-resiu yielded by several coniferous trees, both Kuropean and American. The principal European product, some- times distinguished as Bordeaux turpentine, is obtained from the sea pine, Pinus maritima, in the Landes department of France. Crude turpentine is further yielded by the Scotch fir, P. sylvestris, throughout northern Europe, and by the Corsican pine, P. Laricio, in Austria and Corsica. In the United States the turpentine-yielding pines arc the swamp pine, P. palustris, and the loblolly, P, Tzda, both inhabiting North and South Carolina, Georgia, and Alabama. Venice turpentine is yiclded by the larch tree, Larix europexa, from which it is collected principally in Tyrol. Stras- burg turpentine is obtained from the bark of the silver fir ; but it is collected only in small quantities. Less

known turpentines are obtained from the mountain pine, P. Pwmilio, the stone pine, P. Cembra, the Aleppo pine, P. halepensis, &c. The so-called Canada balsam, from Abtes balsamea (see BALSAM, Vol. ili. p. 293), is also a true turpentine.

Oil of turpentine as a commercial product is obtained from all or any of these oleo-resins, but on a large scale only from crude or common turpentine. The essential oil is rectified by redistilla- tion with water and alkaline carbonates, and the water which the oil carries over with it is removed by a further distillation over calcium chloride. Oil of turpentine is a colourless liquid of oily consistence, with a strong characteristic odour and a hot disagree- able taste. Its boiling point ranges from 152° to 172° C. at ordinary temperature ; its sp. gr. is between 0°856 and 0°870 ; and in optical properties it rotates the plane of polarized light both to right and left in varying degrees according to its sources. It is soluble in alcohol, ether, benzol, other essential oils, and the fixed oils, and itself is a solvent of resins and caoutchouc. On exposure to the air it dries to a solid resin, and when oxidized in the presence of water gives off peroxide of hydrogen—a reaction utilized in the preparation of a disinfectant called ‘‘sanitas.” Oil of turpentine is largely used in the preparation of varnishes, and as a medium by painters in their ‘‘ flat” colours.

1 There is little external difference between the sexes, and the brightly-contrasted colours of the hen-bird seem to require some kind of concealment.

669

TURPIN, archbishop of Rheims and the supposititious author of Historia Karoli Magni et Rotholandi, is probably to be identified with Tilpin, who was archbishop of Rheims towards the end of the 8th century. This Tilpin is alluded to by Hinemar (845-882), his third successor in the see. According to Flodoard (0b. 969), Charles Martel drove Ragobert, bishop of Rheims, from his office, putting in his place a warrior-clerk, Milo. The same writer repre- sents Milo as discharging a mission among the Vascones or Basques, the very people to whom authentic history has ascribed the great Carolingian disaster at Roncesvalles. It is possible that we owe the warlike legends that have accumulated round the name of Turpin to some confusion

of his identity with that of his martial predecessor. Flodoard says that Tilpin was originally a monk of St Denis; and we know from Hinemar that, after his appoint- ment to Rheims, he occupied himself in securing the re- storation of the metropolitan rights and landed property of his church, whose revenue and prestige had been im- paired under Milo's rule. He was, according to the latter authority, elected in the days of Pippin, the son of Charles Martel, 2.¢., between 752 and 768. He died, if we may trust the evidence of a diploma alluded to by Mabillon, in 794. Hinemar, who composed his epitaph, makes him bishop for forty years and more, from which it is evident that he was elected somewhere about 754. Flodoard, however, states that he died in the forty-seventh year of his bishopric. Tilpin was present at the synod of Rome in 769 ; and Pope Hadrian, at the request of Charlemagne, sent him a pallium and confirmed the rights of his church (Gallia Christiana, ix. 28-30). According to Flodoard, he substituted monks for canons in the monastery of St Remigius; and 17th-century tradition ascribed to him an ancient pontificale, still extant in Marlot's days (17th century).

The above is a summary of all that authentic history and trust- worthy tradition teach about the author to whom the common voice of the Middle Ages ascribed the Historia Caroli Magni. A short account of the work has been given elsewhere (RoLAND, LEGEND oF). But, popular as this production was during the Middle Ages, it was rather the crystallization of earlier Bolan! legends than the source of later ones. Potthast has enumerated about fifty codices without by any means, according to M. Gaston Paris, exhausting the list. The latter writer has made the Historia Karoli the subject of a special study (De Pseudo-T'urpino, Paris, 1865), which may be recommended as a model of brilliant though cautious scholarship. The great popularity of the pseudo-Turpin seems to date from the latter half of the 12th century ; and M. Paris enumer- ates at least five French translations belonging to the 13th, and one into Latin verse of about the same age. Mr Ward (Cat. of Romances, 549) has recently expressed a doubt as to whether the Turpin chronicle was completed at Vienne.

TURQUOISE, a blue or bluish green mineral, valued, when cut and polished, as an ornamental stone. The finest variety occurs in Persia, whence it originally reached western Europe by way of Turkey, and thus

came to be called by the Venetians, who imported it, turchesa, and by the French turquoise. It is chemically a hydrated phosphate of aluminium, associated with a variable pro- portion of hydrated phosphate of copper, to which it owes much of its colour. The green tints of certain varieties appear to be due to admixture with salts of iron. A fine blue Persian turquoise, analysed by Prof. A. H. Church, yielded—alumina 40°19, phosphorus pentoxide 32°86, water 19°34, cupric oxide 5:27, ferrous oxide 2°21, and manganous oxide 0°36. The most valued tint of the turquoise is a delicate blue, inclining slightly to green; in many speci- mens the green becomes more pronounced with age. Although the turquoise is practically opaque, sections may be ground so thin as to admit of examination by trans- mitted light. Its microscopic structure was first studied by Prof. Fischer of Freiburg (Baden), afterwards by H. Biicking of Strasburg, and recently by Clarke and Diller.

Thin sections are almost colourless. Between crossed Nicols they show either a fibrous texture or a finely-granular aggregate of doubly-refracting particles without definite crystalline outlines. The mineral has never been found crystallized, but occurs as veins, nodules, stalactitic masses, and incrustations. Large pieces are exceedingly rare. The specific gravity of turquoise is about 2°75, and its hardness below 6 ; it takes a fair polish and exhibits a feeble lustre. It is usually cut en cabochon or with a low convex surface, and in the East is frequently engraved with Persian and Arabic inscriptions, generally passages from the Koran,— the incised characters being in many cases gilt. Such objects are worn as amulets. The turquoise has always been associated with curious superstitions, the most com- mon being the notion that it changes colour with variations in the state of its owner’s health, or even in sympathy

with his affections.

Persia is the chief centre of the turquoise trade, where the same mines have been worked for at least eight centuries. The finest stones are found near Nishapur in Khorasan (see Persta, vol. xviii. p. 622). Tavernier, writing in the 17th century, states that the best turquoise, reserved for the sole use of the shah, was obtained from the mine which he describes as the Vieille

Roche, while inferior stones were got from the Nouvelle Roche. These terms still survive, all turquoise of fine colour being said in trade to be from the “old rock,” and that which is pale, or changes tint on exposure, is from the “new rock.” According toa recent report by Consul Benjamin at Teheran the best turquoise is found at Abu Riah, and all the Khorasan mines are farmed by a few prominent officials, who pay to the shah an annual rent of about £6500. Dr Tietze has lately described specimens of the matrix of the mineral brought to Vienna from Persia by General Schindler. These show that the turquoise occurs, not in clay-slate, as is often stated, but in a porphyritic trachyte or trachytic breccia, and in loose fragments in the neigh- bouring alluvium. The mineral is also found in Kerman in southern Persia, but the stone is of pale colour, tending to fade, and the mines which yield it are now nearly abandoned. In 1849 Major C. Macdonald found turquoise in Wady Maghara and Wady Sidreh, near SINAI (q.v.), where, according to Mr H. Bauerman, it lines the open joints of a ferruginous sandstone, and is also embedded in small ochreous nodules in the rock itself. The redder the rock the finer the colour of the associated turquoise. As the colour is liable to fade, the Arabian turquoise has not a good name among jewellers, and the workings were abandoned by Macdonald in 1865. In Wady Maghara there are relics of extensive mining operations, pre- sumably for turquoise, of so early a date that the rock was wrought by flint implements. The early inhabitants of Mexico made much use of this mineral for inlaying obsidian ornaments, and for mosaic work with iron- pyrites. It was probably one of the stones known as chalchihuitl In 1858 Prof. W. P. Blake called attention to the occurrence of turquoise at Cerillos, about 22 miles south- west of Santa Fé, in New Mexico, where mining operations for this mineral were carried on two centuries ago. The turquoise varies in colour from sky-blue to apple-green, and is found as nodules and small veins in a felspathic rock of microgranitic texture, probably of eruptive origin. The mines of Cerillos are no longer worked. A similar green mineral is found at Turquoise Mountain in Cochise county and at Mineral Park, Mohave county, Arizona. It also occurs to a small extent in southern Nevada, where it is found as blue grains disseminated through a sandstone. In Europe, the turquoise is found at Oelsnitz in Saxony and near Jordansmiihl in Silesia, occurring at the latter locality in clay-slate. Under the names of cadlais and callaina Pliny described a green mineral which, if not our turquoise, seems to have been very closely related to it. A bright

green mineral, wrought into beads, and found with stone hatchets in ancient graves at Men-er Hreeck (Rock of the Fairy) in Brittany, was described in 1864 by M. Damour, who, seeking to identify it with Pliny's cadlais, revived this name. Dana afterwards brought the word into harmony with our mineralogical nomenclature by writing it callainite. The mineral in question is a hydrated phosphate of aluminium, apparently identical with Breithaupt's variscite. By many mineralogists the true torquoise is called calaite (see vol. xvi. p. 405).

Turquoise is commonly imitated by enamels, but of late some ingenious counterfeits have been made with the same chemical composition as the natural stone. To increase the deception, pieces of ochreous matter are inserted at the back of the artificial turquoise, to imitate the natural matrix. In order to distinguish between the genuine stone and itsimitations, Pohl recommends that a splinter should be strongly heated in a platinum capsule, when the true turquoise is reduced to a brownish black powder or a friable mass with a decrepitating sound ; the false turquoise does not de- crepitate, but either fuses to a glass or is reduced to a frit.

For recent information on the turquoise, see ‘‘ Das Vorkomimen der Tiirkise bei Nischapur in Persien,” by Dr E. Tietze, in Verhandl. d. k, k. geolog. Reichsan- stalt, No. 6, 1884, p. 93; ‘‘Mikroskopische Untersuchung des Tiirkis,” by H. Biicking, in Zeitsch. f. Krystallog., vol. ii., 1878, p. 163 ; ‘Hine einfache und sichere Unterscheidungsweise der echten Ttirkise von deren Nachahinungen,” in N. Jahrb. f. Mineralogie, 1878, p. 864; ‘Turqois from New Mexico,” by F. W. Clarke and J. 8. Diller, in Americ. Journ. Science, Sept. 1886, p. 211; ‘* Re- vision of Mineral Phosphates, No. iv., Calaite,” by A. H. Church, in Chem. News, x. p. 290; and note in Journ, Soc. Arts, xxxii., 1884, p. 1084.

TURRETIN, or Turretini. Three theologians of this name figure in the history of Genevan theology.

1. Benorr Turretin (1588-1631), the son of Francesco Turretini, a native of Lucca, who settled in Geneva in 1579, was born in that town on 9th November 1588. He was ordained a pastor in Geneva in 1612, and became

professor of theology in 1618. In 1620 he represented the Genevan Church at the national synod of Alais, when the decrees of the synod of Dort were introduced into France ; and in 1621 he was sent on a successful mission to the states general of Holland, and to the authorities of the Hanseatic towns, with reference to the defence of Geneva against the threatened attacks of the duke of Savoy. He published in 1618-20 a defence of the Genevan translation of the Bible. Benoit Turretin died at Geneva on 4th March 1631.

2. FRANCOIS TURRETIN (1623-87), son of the preceding, was born at Geneva on 17th October 1623. After study- ing theology in Geneva, Holland, and France, he became a pastor in Geneva in 1647; after a brief pastorate at Leyden, he again returned to Geneva as professor of theology in 1653. He was one of the most influential supporters of the Yormula Consensus Helvetica, drawn up chiefly by Heidegger, in 1675, and of the particular type of Calvinistic theology which that symbol embodied. His Institutio Theologizx Hlenctice (3 vols. 4t0, Geneva, 1680-83) has passed through frequent editions, the last reprint having been made in Edinburgh in 1847. F. Turretin died at Geneva on 28th September 1687. He was also the author of volumes entitled De Satisfactione Christi Disputationes (Geneva, 1666) and De Necessaria Secesstone Nostra ab Ecclesia Romana (Geneva, 1687).

3. Juan ALPHONSE TurrRetIN (1671-1737), son of the preceding, was born at Geneva on 13th August 1671. He was educated at Geneva and in Holland, and after travelling in England and in France was received into the "'Vénérable Compagnie des Pasteurs" of Geneva in 1693. In 1697 he became professor of church history. During the next forty years of his life he enjoyed great influence in Geneva as the advocate of a more liberal theology than had prevailed under the preceding genera- tion, and it was largely through his instrumentality that the use of the Formula Consensus Helvetica as a symbol was discontinued in 1725. He also wrote and laboured for the promotion of union between the Reformed and Lutheran Churches, his most important work in this con- nexion being NVubes Testium pro Moderato et Pacifico de Rebus Theologicis Judicio, et Instituenda inter Protestantes Concordia (Geneva, 1719). Besides this he wrote Cogita- tiones et Dussertationes Theologicx, on the principles of natural and revealed religion (Geneva, 1737); and com- mentaries on

Thessalonians and Romans were published posthumously. He died at Geneva on Ist May 1737.

TURTLE. See Torroisz.

TUSCANY (Ital. Toscana), one of the sixteen comparti- menti of the kingdom of Italy, contains eight provinces— Arezzo, Florence, Grosseto, Leghorn, Lucca, Massa-Carrara, Pisa, and Siena—and has an area of 9287 square miles, with a population of 2,208,869 in 1881. In 1859, im- mediately before it united with the kingdom of Sardinia, the grand-duchy of Tuscany, exclusive of Massa-Carrara, which then belonged to Modena, but including the islands of Gorgona, Elba, Pianosa, Formica, Montecristo, Giglio, and Gianutra, as well as the duchy of Lucca (united to it

in 1847), had an area of 8625 square miles and a popula- tion of 1,806,940. See Irany, vol. xiii. pp. 489-490. ETRuRIA (q.v.) was finally annexed to Rome in 351 pB.c. (see Rome), and constituted the seventh of the eleven regions into which Italy was, for administrative purposes, divided by Augustus. Under Constantine it was united into one province with Umbria, an arrangement which subsisted until at least 400, as the Wotdtia speaks of a "‘ consularis Tuscie et Umbrie." In Ammianus Mar- cellinus there is implied a distinction between "Tuscia suburbicaria" and ‘‘Tuscia annonaria," the latter being that portion which lies to the north of the Arno. After the fall of the Western empire Tuscia, with other provinces of Italy, came successively under the sway of Herulians, Ostrogoths, and Greek and Lombard dukes. Under the last-named, ‘‘ Tuscia Langobardorum," comprising the districts of Viterbo, Corneto, and Bolsena, was distinguished from " Tuscia Regni," which lay more to the north. Under Charlemagne the name of Tuscia or Toscana became restricted to the latter only. One of the earliest of the Frankish marquises was Boniface, either first or second of that name, who about 828 fought with success against the Saracens in Africa. Adalbert I., who succeeded him, in 878 espoused the cause of Carloman as against his brother Louis ITI. of France, and suffered excommunication and imprisonment in consequence. Adalbert II. (the Rich), who married the ambitious Bertha, daughter of Lothair, king of Lorraine, took a prominent part in the politics of his day. A subsequent

marquis, Hugo (the Great), became also duke of Spoleto in 989. The male line of marquises ended with Boniface II. (or III.), who was murdered in 1052. His widow, Beatrice, in 1055 married Godfrey, duke of Lorraine, and governed the country till her death in 1076, when she was succeeded by Mariupa (q.v.), her only child by her first husband. Matilda died in 1114 without issue, bequeathing all her extensive possessions to the church. The consequent struggle between the popes, who claimed the inheritance, and the emperors, who maintained that the countess had iro right to dispose of imperial fiefs, enabled the prin- cipal cities of Tuscany gradually to assert their independence and

govern themselves under consuls and elders of their own selection.:

The most important of these Tuscan republics or self-governed com- munes were Florence, Pisa, Siena, Arezzo, Pistoia, and Lucca. Some account of the manner in which they were all gradually absorbed by Florence will be found under FroreNnce and Mzpict. The title of grand-duke of Tuscany was conferred on Cosmo de' Medici by Pius V. in 1567, and the emperor (Maximilian II.), after withholding his consent for some years, ultimately confirmed it to Cosmo's successor in 1576. In 1735, in view of the childlessness of Giovan Gastone, the last of the Medici, the succession of Francis, duke of Lorraine, afterwards emperor Francis I., was arranged for by treaty. In 1765 he was succeeded as grand-duke by his second son Leopold (see Lropoun II.), who, on becoming emperor in 1790, handed Tuscany over to his second son Ferdinand, third grand-duke of the name. The duchy was occupied by the French in 1799, ceded to Louis, prince of Parma, by the convention of Madrid in 1801, and annexed to the French empire in 1808. Ferdinand, however, was reinstated in 1814, and on his death in 1824 was succeeded by his son Leopold, second grand-duke of the name, who was deposed by the constituent assembly on 16th August 1860. See ITALy.

TUSCULUM, an ancient Latin city, situated in a com- manding position on one of the eastern ridges of the Alban Hills, near the site of the modern Fraseart (q.v.). It has a very beautiful and extensive view of the Campagna, with Rome lying fifteen miles! distant to the north-west, on the west the sea near Ostia, and the long range of the Sabine Hills on the north-east.

According to tradition, the city was founded by Telegonus, the son of Ulysses and Circe; hence Horace (Hpod., i. 30) speaks of it as “Circa meenia” and Ovid (/ast., iii. 91) as “Telegoni mcenia” (see also Prop., iii. 30, 4, and Sil. Ital., xii. 535). The legendary descent of one of the chief Tusculan families, the gens Mamilia, from Ulysses through Telegonus is com- memorated on some denarii struck by the Mamilian gens in the later years of the Roman republic; these have on the reverse a figure of Ulysses recognized by his dog Argo. When Tarquinius Superbus was expelled from Rome his cause was espoused by the chief of Tusculum, Octavius Mamilius, who took a leading part in the formation of the Latin League, composed of the thirty principal cities of Latium, banded together against Rome. Mamilius com- manded the Latin army at the battle of Lake Regillus, a

1 Dionysius (x. 20) states that Tusculum was only 100 stadia (about 123 miles) from Rome ; but the fifteenth milestone on the Via Latina was close to the walls of Tusculum.

piece of water which then lay immediately below the Colles Tusculani, but is now dried up. At this battle (497 3.c.) Mamilius was killed, and the predominance of Rome among the Latin cities was practically established. From that time Tusculum became an ally of Rome, and on that account frequently incurred the hostility of the other Latin cities. In 378 3.c., after an expression of complete submission to Rome, the people of Tusculum received the Roman fran- chise, and thenceforth the city continued to hold the rank of a municipium. Several of the chief Roman families were of Tusculan origin, e.g., the gentes Mamilia, Fulvia, Fonteia, Juventia, and Porcia; to the last-named the celebrated Catos belonged. During the imperial period little is re- corded about Tusculum ; but soon after the transference of the seat of empire to Constantinople it became a very important stronghold, and for some centuries its counts occupied a leading position in Rome and were specially influential in the selection of the popes. During the 12th century there were constant struggles between Rome and Tusculum, and towards the close of the century the Romans, supported

by the German emperor, gained the upper hand, and the walls of Tusculum, together with the greater part of the city, were destroyed.

Extensive remains still exist of the massive walls, which sur- rounded the city, and of its arx—a separate citadel—which stood on an abrupt rock, approached only on one side, that towards the city, with which it was connected by long walls. The walls are built of large blocks of the native ‘‘lapis Albanus” or peperino, some of them as muchas 5 feet long by 3 feet thick. They probably belong to the early republican period ; restorations in concrete faced with eee reticulatuni” of the 1st century B.c. can be traced in many places.

During the latter years of the republic and under the empire Tusculum was a favourite site for the country villas of wealthy Romans. That of Lucullus was very large and magnificent ; other handsome houses were built there by Julius Cesar, L. Crassus, Q. Metellus, Marcus Brutus, and others. A palace was erected fe Tiberius near Tusculum on the way to Rome, close to the Via

atina.

The most interesting associations of the city are those connected with Cicero, whose favourite residence and retreat for study and literary work was at Tusculum. It was here that he composed his celebrated Tusculan Disputations and other philosophical works. Much has been written on the position of his villa, but its true site still remains doubtful. Its grounds are known to have adjoined the more splendid villas of Lucullus and the consul Gabinius (see Cic., De Fin., iii. 2, and Pro Dom., 24). The most probable site is that now marked by the Villa Rufinella to the west of Tusculum, where the hill is divided into two ridges. The scholiast on Horace, Epod., i. 30, states that Cicero’s villa was ‘‘ad latera superiora,”’ the plural probably being used in allusion to the double ridge. The other theory, which places the site at Grotta Ferrata, some distance farther to the west, has little evidence to support it. Although Cicero (Pro Sestio, 43) speaks of his own house as being insignificant in size compared to that of his neighbour Gabinius, yet we gather from other notices in various parts of his works that it was a building of no mean size and pretension. It comprised two gymnasia (Div., i. 5), with covered porticus for exercise and philosophical discussion (Zusc. Disp., il. 3). One of these, which stood on higher ground,

was called “the Lyceum,” and contained a library (Div. ii. 3); the other, on a lower site, shaded by rows of trees, was called ‘‘the Academy.” The main building contained a covered porticus or cloister, with apsidal recesses (ewedr#) containing seats (see Ad Fam., vii. 23). It also had bath-rooms (4d Fam., xiv. 20), and contained a number of works of art, both pictures and statues in bronze and marble (Zp. ad Att., i. 1, 8,9, 10). The central atrium appears to have been small, as Cicero speaks of it as an atriolum (dd Quint. Fr., iii. 1). The cost of this and the other house which he built at Pompeii led to his being burdened with debt (Zp. ad Att., ii. 1). Nothing now exists which can be asserted to be part of Cicero’s villa with any degree of certainty. The so-called ‘‘ scuola di Cicerone,” near the line of the ancient wall of Tusculum, is the substructure of some building formed in the usual Roman way by a series of vaulted chambers, and is clearly later in date than the time of Cicero. Other remains of houses exist in and near the city, but nothing is known as to their history or ownership.

Ruins of two theatres still exist. One of them, which is not earlier than the beginning of the 1st century, between the city and the arx, is fairly perfect, and still possesses most of its ancient seats, divided into four cunei by three flights of steps. Only traces remain

of the other theatre, which abutted against the long walls that defended the road from the city to the arx. Remains of an amphi- theatre of no great size can be traced, dating probably from the 3d century. There is also a large piscina, near the first-mentioned theatre. In the vicinity of Tusculum a number of interesting tombs have been discovered at various times ; some, as for example that of the Furii, contained valuable inscriptions of the 4th and 3d centuries B.C.

The city was supplied with water by the Aqua Crabra, and near it were the springs which fed two of the Roman aqueducts—the Aqua Tepula and Aqua Virgo (Front., De Aq., 8).

For further information the reader is referred to Compagni, Memorie Storiche

dell’ Antico Tusculo; Canina, Descr. dell’ Antico Tusculo ; Gell, Topogr. of Rome and its Vicinity ; and Nibby, Dintorni di Roma, vol. ill.

TUSSER, THomas (c. 1527-1580), poet, was the son of William Tusser by Isabella, daughter of Thomas Smith of Rivenhall, Essex, where he was born about 1527. Not- withstanding strong reluctance on his part he was sent in his early years to a music school, and became chorister in the collegiate chapel of the castle of Wallingford. He was afterwards admitted into the choir of St Paul’s, and went thence to Eton, where he was under the tuition of Nicholas Udall. In 1543 he was elected to King’s College, Cam- bridge, and soon afterwards exchanged to Trinity Hall. On leaving the university he was for about ten years at court, probably in some musical capacity. He then settled as a farmer in Suffolk, near the river Stour, an employment which he seems to have regarded as combin- ing the chief essentials of human felicity. Subsequently he lived successively at Ipswich, West Dereham, Norwich, and London. ‘There he died in April 1580, and was buried in the church of St Mildred in the Poultry. His monument was destroyed in the fire, but the quaint epitaph is preserved in Stow’s Survey of London. A marble tablet, on which the epitaph is inscribed, has been erected to him in the church of Manningtree, Essex.

Tusser’s poems on husbandry have the charm of simplicity and directness, and their practical saws were apparently relished, for in his lifetime they went through a number of editions. They are 4 Hundreth Good Pointes of Husbandrie, 1557, 1561, 1562, 1564, and 1570; A Dialogue Wyuynge and Thryuynge, 1562; A Hundrethe Good Pointes of Husbandrie lately married unto a Hundrethe Good Pointes of Huswifry, 1570; Five Hundreth Pointes of Good Hus- bandrie united to as many of Good Wiferie, 1578, 1576, 1577, 1585, 1586, 1590, 1593, reprinted with memoir by William Mavor, 1812, by Auber, 1873, and by the English Dialect Society, 1879. His metrical autobiography, printed in the Appendix to Five Hundreth Pointes, 1573, was republished in 1846 along with his will, which would seem to refute the sarcasms which became current, that he had not been successful in practising his own maxims. One of these references is contained in a volume of epigrams by H. P., The More the Merrier, 1608. One of the epigrams entitled dd Tusserum, begins thus :—

“ Tusser, they tell me, when thou wert alive, Thou, teaching thrift, thyselfe could’st never thrive.”

Possibly Tusser obtained the reputation of being poor from his practice of thrift ; but in any case, if his will represents his worldly condition at the time of his death, hc was not in poverty in his later years.

TVER, a government of central Russia, on the upper Volga, bounded by Pskoff and Novgorod on the W. and N., Yarostavl and Vladimir on the E., and Moscow and Smo- lensk on the 8.; it has an area of 25,225 square miles. Lying on the southern slope of the Valdai plateau, and intersected by deep valleys, it has the aspect of a hilly region, but is in reality a plateau ranging from 800 to 1000 feet in height. Its highest parts are in the north-west, where the Volga, Western Dwina, and Msta rise in marshes and lakes. The plateau is chiefly built up of Carboniferous limestones, Lower and Upper, underlain by Devonian and Silurian deposits, which appear only in the denudations of the lower valleys. The whole is covered by a thick sheet of boulder-clay (the bottom-moraine of the Scandinavo-Russian ice-sheet) and subsequent lacustrine deposits. A number of dsar (see vol. x. p. 368) occur on the slopes of the plateau. Ochre, brick, and pottery clays, as also limestone for building, are obtained, and there are

chalybeate springs. The soil, which is clayey for the most part, is not fertile as a rule.

Nearly the whole of Tver is watered by the upper Volga (350 miles) and its tributaries, several of which (Vazuza, Dubna, Sestra, Tvertsa, and the tributaries of the Mologa) are navigable. The Vyshnevototsk system of canals connects the Volga (navigable some 60 miles from its source) with the Baltic, and the Tikhvin system connects the Mologa with Lake Zadoga. The Msta, which flows into Lake Ilmef, and its tributary the Tsna, water Tver in the north-west, and the Western Dwina rises in Ostashkoff. This network of rivers highly favours navigation : as many as 3000 boats yearly pass through the Vyshnevototsk system, and corn, linseed, spirits, flax, hemp, timber, metals, and manufactured ware to the annual value of £1,500,000 are shipped from, or brought to, the river ports of the

government. Lakes, ponds, and marshes are numerous in the west and north-west, Lake Seliger—the source of the Volga—and Lake Mstino being the most important. The forests—coniferous in the north and deciduous in the south—are rapidly disappearing, but still cover 890,000 acres. The climate is continental ; the average yearly temperature at Tver (41°°5 Fahr.) is the same as that of Orel and Tamboff (January 11°, July 67°). The population (1,646,683 in 1883, as against 1,567,300 in 1872) is unequally distributed, and in the districts of Kalyazin and Kashin attains a density not much less than that of the more highly favoured black-earth provinces of south east Russia (16 and 17 per square mile), Apart from some 100,000 Karelians and a few Poles and foreigners, the people are all Great Russians. Some traces of Finnish Ves and of Lithuanians are found in the north-east and south. he official returns give the number of Raskolniks as 25,000. Only 157,110 are urban; but agriculture is not the chief occupa- tion. While barley and oats are exported, rye is imported. The crops for 1883-1885 averaged 2,889,400 quarters of corn and 4,078,400 bushels of potatoes. Cattle-rearing does not prosper, and the in- crease shown by the returns for 1883 (351,630 horses, 583,670 cattle, and 373,780 sheep) as against those of 1872 is simply due to better registration. Cheese-making has recently been introduced on the co-operative principle (2168 cwts. of cheddar exported to Britain in 1881). The fisheries in the lakes and rivers are productive. The peasants are principally engaged in various manufactures. The total production of the larger manufactures in 1883 was valued at £2,237,250 (tanneries £244,460, cottons £803,270, distilleries £320,010, flour-mills £263,500), and that of the petty trades carried on in combination with agriculture (preparation of pitch, tar, and turpentine, boat-building, construction of cars, sledges, wheels, boxes, tubes, and wooden vessels, and cabinet-making) was estimated in 1884 at £3,000,000, giving occupation to 101,400 persons. Certain branches of the leather industry are important, Kimry and Ostash- koff sending to the market £650,000 worth of boots annually. The small workshops of Tver and the surrounding district work some 4500 ewts. of iron into nails every year, and the Ostashkoff smiths use some 7000 cwts. of iron annually in the manufacture of hatchets, scythes, sickles, and different agricultural implements. Weaving, lace-making, leather embroidery, stocking-making, felting, and the like are also important petty trades, several of these being organized on co-operative principles by the zemstvos. The railway from St Petersburg to Moscow crosses Tver, and

sends off two branches to Rzheff and to Rybinsk, all three lines being among the busiest in Russia. The river traffic also is considerable. The chief centres of trade, besides the city of Tver, are Byezhetsk, Rzheff, Kashin, Ostashkoff, Torshok, Krasnyi Kholm, and Vesiegonsk during its fair. The provincial assembly of Tver is one of the most prominent in Russia for its efforts in the cause of education and sanitary improvement. In 1883 there were 997 primary schools with 47,680 scholars (8500 girls), 17 gymnasia and progymnasia (1697 boys and 1268 girls), and two normal schools for teachers. The government is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which, with their a eae in 1884, are—TveER (see below), Byezhetsk (5890),

alyazin (5200), Kashin (5730), Kortcheva (2275), Ostashkoff (9900), Rzheff (26, 480), Staritsa (2700), Torshok (12,910), Vesiegonsk (3370), Vyshniy Vototchok (11,590), and Zubtsoff (3160).

TVER, capital of the above government, lies 102 miles by rail to the north-west of Moscow, on both banks of the Volga (here crossed by a floating bridge) at its junction with the Tvertsa. The low right bank is protected from inundations by a dam. Asa whole the town is but poorly built. The oldest church dates from 1564, and the cathedral from 1689. An imperial palace, the courts, and the post- office rank among its best buildings. A public garden occupies the site of the former fortress. The population was 39,100 in 1884. The manufactures, chiefly of cotton, employ 5900 workmen (5710 at the cotton mills), and a number of nail-making workshops employ some 800 men, while more than 1000 women are engaged in the domestic

manufactory of hosiery for export to Moscow and St Petersburg. The traffic of the town is considerable, Tver being an intermediate place for the trade of both capitals with the provinces of the upper Volga.

Tver dates its origin from 1180, when a fort was erected at the mouth of the Tvertsa to protect the Suzdal principality against Novgorod. In the 13th century it became the capital of an in- dependent principality, and remained so until the end of the 15th century. Mikhail Yaroslavovitch, prince of Tver,

was killed fighting against the Tatars, as also was Alexander Mikhailovitch, who boldly fought for the independence of Tver against Moscow. It long remained an open question whether Moscow or Tver would ultimately gain the supremacy in Great Russia, and it was only with the help of the Tatars that the princes of the former eventually succeeded in breaking down the independence of Tvcr. In 1486, when the city was almost entirely burned down by the Muscovites, the son of Ivan III. became prince of Tver; the final annexation to Moscow followed four years later. In 1570 Tver had to endure, for some reason now difficult to understand, the vengeance of Ivan the Terrible, who ordered the massacre of 90,000 inhabitants of the principality. In 1609-12 it was plundered both by the followers of the second false Demetrius and by the Poles.

TWEED, a river in the south of Scotland, has its rise in the south-west corner of Peeblesshire, not far from the Devil's Beef Tub in Dumfriesshire. The stream flowing from Tweed's Well, about 1500 feet above sea-level, is generally regarded as its source, although the honour is also claimed for other streams issuing from a higher eleva- tion. For the first 36 miles of its course it intersects the county of Peebles—frequently on this account called Tweeddale—in a north-easterly direction, passing between verdant hills separated by valleys watered by its numerous affluents. Having passed several picturesque keeps and castles, it reaches the town of Peebles, shortly before which it receives the Lyne Water from the north and the Manor Water from the south. The valley now widens; the scenery becomes softer and richer ; and the river, bending in a more easterly direction, passes Innerleithen, where it receives the Leithen from the north and the Quair from the south. It then crosses Selkirkshire in a south-easterly direction, and, having received the Ettrick from the south on the borders of Roxburghshire, flows northward past Abbotsford, forming for about 2 miles the boundary between the counties of Selkirk and Roxburgh. After receiving the Gala, the Tweed crosses the north-western corner of Roxburghshire past Melrose and its abbey, and, after being joined by the Leader from the north, winds past Dryburgh abbey round the south-western corner of Berwickshire.' The remainder of its course is in a north- easterly direction through Roxburghshire past Kelso, where it receives the Teviot from the south, and then between the counties of Berwick and Northumberland, past Cold- stream and Norham castle to the town of

Berwick, where it reaches the North Sea. It receives the Eden Water from the north at Edenmouth, the Leet Water from the north at Coldstream, and the Till from Northumberland between Coldstream and Norham castle. The last 2 miles of its course before reaching Berwick are in England. Though the latter part of its course is through a compara- tively level country, the scenery along the river is full of charm, owing to the picturesque variety of its finely wooded banks. The associations connected with the keeps and castles of the Tweed have supplied materials for several of Sir Walter Scott's poems and romances ; and its varied beauties have been sung by Hogg, Leyden, Thomson, and many others. The bed of the river is pebbly and sandy, and, notwithstanding discolorations from manufactures, the stream, from its clear and sparkling appearance, is still well entitled to the name of the "silver Tweed." The total area drained by it is about 1870 square miles, and its total length is 97 miles. Next to the Tay it is the largest river in Scotland. The Tweed has, however, no estuary, and its traffic is chiefly confined to Berwick. But for a short dis-

tance up the river some navigation is carried on by barges. The river is one of the best in Scotland for trout and salmon fishing.

See Sir Thomas Dick Lauder's Scottish Rivers and Prof. Veitch's River Tweed, 1884.

TWEEDS. See Wootten anp Worsrep MaNurac- TURES.

TWELVE TABLES. See Roman Law, vol. xx. p. 679 sg., and Rome, vol. xx. p, 737.

TWENTY-FOUR PARGANAS, the metropolitan dis- trict of the lieutenant-governorship of Bengal, India, takes its name from the territory originally ceded to the East India Company, which contained twenty-four parganas or sub-districts. The district lies between 21° 55' 20" and 22° 57' 32" N. lat. and 88° 6' 45" and 88° 20' 51" E. long. It has an area of 2124 square miles, and is bounded on the north by Nadiya, on the north-east by Jessore, on the south and south-east by the Sundarbans, and on the west by the river Hugli (Hooghly). The country consists for the most part of a vast alluvial plain

within the delta of the Ganges, and is everywhere watered by numerous rivers, all branches of the Hugli. In the northern portion the soil is very rich, but the southern or seaboard part con- sists of the network of swamps and inland channels known as the Sundarbans. The Hugli and six other streams are navigable by the largest boats throughout the year. The district is well supplied with canals, the most important being Tolly's Nala (10 miles long), which connects the Hugli with the Bidyédhari. The Twenty-Four Pargdnas was once famous for its sport, but owing to the extension of cultivation game is now scarce. 'Tigers are seldom met with ; leopards are more numerous; there are several varieties of deer. The district has many roads, and is traversed by the Eastern Bengal Railway and the Calcutta and South-Eastern State Railway.

In 1881 the population of the district, exclusive of Calcutta, numbered 1,869,859 (males 975,430, females 894,429), embracing 1,153,040 Hindus, 701,306 Mohammedans, and 13,976 Christians. The ten following municipalities had each a population of upwards of 10,000—South Suburban, 51,658 ; Agarpara, 30,317 ; Barangar, 29,982; Naihati, 21,533 ; Nawabganj, 17,702; Basurhat, 14,848 ; South Dum Dum, 14,108 ; Baduria, 12,981 ; Rajpore, 10,576; and Barasat, 10,533. The administrative headquarters of the district are at Alipur, a southern suburb of Calcutta. Rice forms the staple crop of the district ; other crops are pulses, oil seeds, sugar-cane, tobacco, &c. Its principal exports are rice, sugar, pdn leaf, fish, pottery, &c.; the imports comprise pulses of all kinds, oil-seeds, spices, turmeric, chillies, cloth, cotton, &c. The objects of the rural manufactures are sugar, cotton curtains, brass and iron work, horn sticks, and cotton and tasar silk cloth. The gross revenue of the district in 1885-86 amounted to £338,895, of which the land-tax contributed £155,181. The district was ceded to the East India Company by treaty by the nawab nazi of Bengal in 1757. Since

then several changes have been made in its boundaries, the latest in 1863.

TWICKENHAM, a town of Middlesex, England, is situated on the north bank of the Thames and on the London and South-Western Railway, 11} miles south-west of London by rail. It is a straggling and irregular town, but has many fine suburban villas, and the district is noted for its sylvan beauty.

Opposite the town there is an eyot in the river about 8 acres in extent, called Eel Pie Island, much resorted to by boating parties. The parish church of St Mary was rebuilt in red brick in very plain style after the fall of the old one in 1713, but the picturesque western tower of the 14th century still remains. It con- tains many interesting monuments, including one to Pope, who was buried in thenave. The principal public build- ings are the town-hall and assembly rooms (built in 1876, and containing the free library established in 1882), the economic museum, the royal naval female school for the daughters of naval and marine officers, the Montpellier lecture hall, the metropolitan and City of London police orphanage, the almshouses of the London Carpenters' Com-

pany, and a branch of the national refuge for the homeless and destitute. The population of the urban sanitary dis- trict (area 2415 acres) in 1871 was 10,533, and in 1881 it was 12,479.

Twiekenham at Domesday was ineluded in Isleworth. Anciently it was called Twittenham or Twicanham. The manor was given in 941 by King Edmund to the monks of Christ Church, Canter- bury, from whom it had been previously taken, but it was again alienated, for it was restored to the same monks by Edred in 948. In the reign of Henry VIII. it came into the possession of the erown, and by Charles I. was assigned to Henrietta Maria as part of her jointure. It was sold during the Protectorate, but after the Restoration the queen mother resumed possession of it. In 1670 it was settled for life on Catherine of Braganza, queen of Charles II. It still remains in possession of the crown, but since the death of Catherine has been let on leases. In the neighbour- hood are many residenees of literary or historical interest. Pope's villa, where he lived from 1717 till his death in 1744, has been removed. Among old mansions of interest still remaining are

Strawberry Hill, the residence of Horace Walpole, now much altered; Marble Hill, built by George III. for the countess of Suffolk, and subsequently resided in by the marquis of Wellesley ; Orleans House, built

in the reign of Queen Anne by Johnstone, occupied for some time by the duke of Orleans, and from 1879 to 1883 as a club house ; York House, said to have been the residence of James II. when duke of York, bestowed by Charles II. on Lord Clarendon when he married the duke of York's daughter, and in modern times resided in by the Comtc de Paris ; and Twickenham House, formerly the residence of Sir Jahn Hawkins, author of the History of Music, and the meeting place of the " Literary Club." Of the old manor house of Twickenham, to which Catherine of Aragon is said to have retired after her divorce from Henry VIIL., and which was subsequently the residence of Catherine of Braganza, queen of Charles II., the only remains are a ruin called the Aragon tower. Twickenham Park House, for some time the residence of Lord Chancellor Bacon, has been demolished.

TWILIGHT. The light of what is called the "sky" depends upon the scattering or reflexion of direct sunlight in the earth's atmosphere, mainly if not entirely due to those fine dust particles which (as we have recently learned) form the necessary nuclei for condensation of aqueous vapour. Were it not for these particles the sky would appear by day as it does in a clear winter night, and the stars would be always visible. Alpine climbers and aeronauts, when they have left the grosser strata of the atmosphere below them, find this state of things approxi- mated to; and even at the sea-level the blue of the sky is darker when the air contains but few motes. After the sun has set, its rays continue for a time to pass through parts of the atmosphere above the spectator's horizon, and the scattered light from these is called twilight. It is, of course, most brilliant in the quarter where the sun has set. Before sunrise we have essentially the same phenomenon, but it goes by the name of "dawn." The brilliancy of either depends upon several conditions, of which the chief is, of course, the degree by which the sun has sunk below the horizon. But the amount of dust in the air affects the phenomenon in two antagonistic ways: it diminishes the amount of sunlight which reaches the upper air after pass- ing close to the earth and it increases the fraction of this light which is scattered to form twilight. Hence no general law can be laid down as to the duration of twilight ; but it is usual to state (roughly) that it lasts until the sun is about 18° under the horizon. If we make this assumption, it is a simple matter of calculation to solve questions as to the duration of twilight at a given place at a given time of

year, the maximum duration of twilight at a given place, &c. In the older works on astronomy such questions were common enough, but they have now little beyond anti- quarian interest. The more complex phenomena of twi- light, such as the “ after-glow,” &c., probably depend upon the precipitation of moisture on the dust particles as the air becomes gradually colder. This will of course alter the amount of scattering; but it may also lead (by reflexion from strata of such particles) to an increase in the amount of light to be scattered.

and the large collieries in the neighbourhood.

‘March 1790.

TWI—T Y L

TYCHO BRAHE. See Braue.

TYLDESLEY wits SHAKERLEY, a town of Lan- cashire, England, is situated on a considerable eminence, 11 miles west-north-west of Manchester and 199 north-west of London (by the London and North-Western Railway). The church of St George, a handsome building in the Early Pointed style, erected in 1827, has lately undergone restoration. Public baths were built in 1876. A public cemetery was formed in 1878. The town is the growth of the 19th century and depends upon its cotton-mills It is governed by a local board of health of sixteen members. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 2490

acres) in 1871 was 6408 and in 1881 it was 9954.

At Domesday Tyldesley formed part of the manor of Warrington. One of its proprietors, Sir Thomas Tyldesley, was a distinguished Royalist. His son Edward in 1672 sold the manor to Ralph Astley, and from the Astleys it passed in 1728 to Thomas Johnson of Bolton. In 1823 it beeame the property of George Ormerod, author of the History of Cheshire.

TYLER, Joun (1790-1862), tenth president of the United States, was accustomed with pride, but with the support of conjecture rather than evidence, to claim re- lationship with Wat Tyler of the reign of Richard IL.

The earliest of his American ancestors was Henry Tyler, a reputed native of Shropshire, England, who in 1652 settled at Middle Plantation, Va., on the outskirts of what is now the city of Williamsburg. John Tyler was the son of Judge John Tyler, some time governor of Virginia, and was born at Greenway in that State, 29th In 1802 he entered the grammar school of William and Mary, where, though fond of fun and frolic and cultivating an inherited taste for the violin, he made good progress in his studies. After graduating in 1806 he entered on the study of law, and in 1809 was called to the bar, where his progress from the first was rapid. He became a member of the State legislature in December 1811. In 1813 he raised a company in defence of Rich- mond, in command of which he subsequently served with the fifty-second regiment at Williamsburg and Providence Forge. In December 1816 he was elected to the house of representatives at Washington, where he displayed much readiness and skill in debate as an uncompromising advocate of popular rights. In 1825 he was elected governor of Virginia by a large majority, and the follow- ing year was re-elected unanimously. In 1827 he was chosen a senator. He opposed Clay on the tariff question in 1832, delivering a speech against the protective duties which lasted three days; but he voted for Clay's Com- promise Bill of 1833. He was the only senator who voted against the Force Bill on 20th February of this year, a singularity of conduct which somewhat damaged his repu- tation in Virginia. Although opposed to the establish- ment of the United States Bank, he supported the resolu- tions in 1835 censuring President Jackson for the removal of the deposits, on the ground that the procedure was un- constitutional. In consequence of a vote of the Virginia legislature instructing him to vote for the expurgation of these resolutions from the senate journal he resigned, 21st February 1836. His action led the Whigs to bring him forward as a candidate for the vice-presidency, but he only received forty-seven votes. For some time after this he ceased to take an active part in politics ; removing in the end of the year from Gloucester to Williamsburg, where he had better opportunities for legal practice, he devoted his chief attention to his professional duties. At the Whig convention which met at Harrisburg, Penn- sylvania, 4th December 1839, he was nominated again for the vice-presidency on the Harrison ticket, and elected in November 1840. On the death of Harrison, soon after his inauguration in 1841, Tyler succeeded him. His ele-

vation to the presidency was thus accidental in a double sense, for he had been nominated for the vice-presidency to reconcile the extreme faction. His policy in office (see Unirep States) was opposed to the party who nominated him and was on Democratic lines. In 1845 he was suc- ceeded by Polk, and he spent the remainder of his life in retirement from active duties. He was nominated in 1861 for the lower house of the permanent congress, but died at Richmond on the 18th of the following January.

See L. G. Tyler, Life and Times of the Tylers, 2 vols., 1884.

TYNDALE, Witt1aM (c. 1484-1536), translator of the New Testament and Pentateuch (see ENGLISH BisBxg, vol. vill. pp. 384, 385), was born in Gloucestershire, possibly in the parish of Slimbridge, about the year 1484. Of his early education nothing is known; about his twentieth year he went to Oxford, where tradition has it that he was entered of Magdalen Hall. He afterwards resided at Cambridge. Ordained to the priesthood, probably towards the close of 1521, he entered the household of Sir John Walsh, Little Sodbury, Gloucestershire, in the capacity of chaplain and domestic tutor. Here he spent two years, and in the course of his private studies began to contemplate seriously the work of translating the New Testament into English. His sympathy with the “new learning,” which he had not concealed in conversation with the higher clergy of the neighbourhood at Sir John’s table, led to his being summoned before the chancellor of Worcester as a suspected heretic ; and “with the goodwill of his master” he left for London in the summer of 1523. There he preached a little at St Dunstan-in-the-West, and worked at his translation, living for some months in the house of Humphrey Monmouth, an alderman; but finding publication impossible in England he sailed for Hamburg in May 1524. After visiting Luther at Witten- berg, he settled in Cologne, where he made some progress with a quarto edition of his New Testament, when the interference of the authorities of the town compelled his flight to Worms. The octavo edition (see vol. viii. p. 384) was here completed in 1526. Where Tyndale resided in the interval between 1526 and 1530—the year of publica- tion of his translation of the Pentateuch—is not known ; his Parable of the Wicked Mammon (1527), Obedience of a Christian Man (1528), and Practice of

Prelates (1530), all bear to have been printed at ‘“‘ Marlborowe in the land of Hesse ” or ‘ Marborch.” From 1530 onwards he appears to have lived chiefly in Antwerp, but of his life there hardly anything is recorded, except that as a marked man he was continually the subject of plots and intrigues, and that at last he was arrested and thrown into prison in the castle of Vilvorde, some six miles from Brussels, in 1535. Having been found guilty of heresy, he was put to death by strangling, and his body afterwards burnt at the stake on October 6, 1536.

The orks of Tyndale were first published along with those of Frirx (q.v.) and Barnes, “three worthy Martyrs and principal Teachers of the Church of England,” by John Daye, in 1578 (folio). His Doctrinal Treatises and Introductions to Different Portions of the Holy Scripture were published by the Parker Society in 1848. For biography, see Demaus, William Tyndale (London, 1871) ; also the Introduction to Mombert’s critical reprint of Tyndale’s Pentateuch (New York, 1884), where a full bibliography is given. There seems no reason to doubt that the translation of Joshua, Judges, Samuel, Kings, and Chronicles in Matthew’s Bible is sub- stantially the work of Tyndale.

TYNE, a river in the north-east of England, is formed of two branches, the North Tyne, rising in the Cheviots on the borders of Roxburgh, and the South Tyne, rising at Tynehead Fell, at the south-eastern extremity of Cumber- land. The North Tyne flows south-eastwards by Belling- ham, a short distance below which it receives the Rede from the north, and 2 miles above Hexham it is joined by the South Tyne, which before the junction flows north-

ward to Haltwhistle, and then eastward, receiving the Allen from the right a short distance above Haydon Bridge. The united streams then have a course of about 30 miles eastwards to the sea at Tynemouth. Fora con- siderable part of its course the Tyne flows through a pleasant and richly cultivated country, but in its lower reaches the presence of coal pits has almost completely robbed the scenery of its natural charms, and the former sylvan retreats of monks and abbots are now occupied by blast furnaces and shipbuilding yards, and similar scenes of busy industry, which line both

banks of the river from Newcastle to the sea. The river is navigable to Blaydon for small craft, and to Newcastle, 8 miles from its mouth, for large vessels.

The coal trade of the Tyne is the most important in England, and for its general shipping trade the river ranks next in import- ance to the Thames and the Mersey. The principal ports are Newcastle and North and South Shields, but below Newcastle the river is everywhere studded with piers and jetties. About a seventh of the whole tonnage of vessels built in England is built

on the Tyne, the most important works being those of Jarrow. For boat-racing the Tyne vies in celebrity with the Thames.

TYNEMOUTH, a municipal and parliamentary borough of England, in Northumberland, includes the townships of Chirton, Cullercoates, North Shields, Preston, and Tyne- mouth. This last, the principal watering-place on this part of the coast, is picturesquely situated on a promontory on the north side of the Tyne at its mouth. It is connected with Newcastle, 8 miles to the west-south-west, by a branch of the North-Eastern Railway ; its distance from London is 273} miles by rail. The town has rapidly increased within recent years, and contains many well-built streets, squares, and villas. On the point of the promontory there is a small battery called the Spanish battery, and near it a monument has been erected to Lord Collingwood. Within the grounds to which the gateway of the old castle gives entrance are the ruins of the ancient priory of St Mary and St Oswin —the principal remains being those of the church. A pier, half a mile long, serves as a breakwater to the harbour. Among the principal public buildings are the assembly rooms and the aquarium (1872). The muni- cipal buildings of the borough of Tynemouth are situated in North Shields, where are also the custom house, a master niariners' home, a seamen's institute, and a sailors' home founded by the late duke of Northumberland. Shipbuilding is carried on, and there are rope and sail works. The fish trade is of considerable importance and employs several steam and sailing boats. The population of the municipal and parliamentary borough of Tynemouth (incorporated in 1849 ; area 4303 acres), divided into the three wards of

North Shields, Percy, and Tynemouth, was 38,941 in 1871, and 44,118 in 1881.

Tynemouth was a fortress of the Saxons, and was anciently known as Penbal Crag, ‘‘the head of the rampart on the rock.” From remains found in 1783 it is supposed to have been a Roman station. The first church was built of wood by Edwin, king of Northumbria, about 625, and was rebuilt in stone by his successor Oswald in 634. The body of Oswin, king of Deira, was brought hither for burial in 651, and on this account Tynemouth came to be in great repute as a place of burial both for royal and ecclesiastical persons. ‘The monastery was repeatedly plundered and burnt by the Danes, especially during the 9th century. After its destruction by Healfdeane in 876 it was rebuilt by Tostig, earl of Northumberland, who endowed it with considerable revenue; but, having been granted in 1074 to the monks of Jarrow, it became a cell of Durham. Malcolm III., king of the Scots, and his son Edward, who were slain in battle at Alnwick on 13th November 1093, were both in- terred in the monastery. In 1095 Earl Mowbray, having entered into a conspiracy against William Rufus, converted the monastery into a castle, which he strongly fortified. By William Rufus the priory was conferred on St Albans abbey, Hertfordshire. It was surrendered to Henry VIII. on 12th January 1539, and the site and remains were granted by Edward VI. in 1550 to the earl of Warwick, afterwards duke of Northumberland. In 1644 the castle was taken by the Scots under the earl of Leven. The town enjoyed various immunities at a very early period, which were

Predis- posing and ex- citing causes.

afterwards the subject of some dispute. Edward I. restored to it several free customs of which it had been deprived. Afterwards it received a confirmation of its various former charters by Edward II. and Richard II.

TYPE-FOUNDING. See Typocrapny.

TYPE-WRITING. See Writtnc MAcHINEs.

TYPHON, orTyPHoEts, son, according to Hesiod (Theog., 820 sg.), of the Earth and Tartarus, is described as a grisly monster with a hundred dragons' heads who was conquered and cast into Tartarus by Zeus. According to Iliad il. 282, he lies in the land of the Arimi (Cilicia). Other legends place his prison under tna or in other volcanic regions and make him the cause of eruptions. The myth, there- fore, as we have it, rests on a personification of volcanic forces. He is the father of dangerous winds (typhoons), and by later writers is identified with the Egyptian Set (see vol. vii. p. 717).

TYPHUS, TYPHOID, anp RELAPSING FEVERS. These are conveniently considered together, as they con- stitute the important class of continued fevers, having certain characters in common, although each is clearly dis- tinguishable from the others. The following is a general account of the more salient features of each.

Typuus Fever.

Typhus?! isa continued fever of highly contagious nature, lasting for about fourteen days and characterized mainly by great prostration of strength, severe nervous symptoms, and a peculiar eruption on the skin. It has received numerous other names, such as spotted, pestilential, putrid, jail, hospital fever, &c. It appears to have been known for many centuries as a destructive malady, frequently appearing in epidemic form, in all countries in Europe, under the con- ditions to be afterwards referred to. The best accounts of the disease are those given by English writers, who narrate its ravages in towns and describe many "black assizes," in which it was communicated by prisoners brought into court to the judges, jurymen, court-officials, &c., with fatal effect, producing oftentimes a widespread consternation. Typhus fever would seem to have been observed in almost all parts of the world; but, although not unknown in warm countries, it has most frequently prevailed in temperate or cold climates.

The causes concerned in its production include both the predisposing and the exciting. Of the former the most powerful of all are those influences which lower the health of a community, especially overcrowding and poverty. Hence this fever is most frequently found to affect the poor of large cities and towns, or to appear where large numbers of persons are living crowded together in unfavour- able hygienic conditions, as has often been

seen in prisons, workhouses, &c. Armies in the field are also liable to suffer from this disease ; for instance, during the Crimean War it caused an enormous mortality among the French troops. Some high authorities, including Dr Murchison, have held that such conditions as those referred to are capable of generating typhus fever by themselves, and the apparent occasional de novo origin of this disease has doubtless the support of many striking facts which would appear to favour this view (see PaTHoxoey, vol. xviii. p. 803). In the light, however, of recent researches into the relation of specific disease germs to the production of fevers and other infectious maladies, there is increasing difficulty in maintaining this position; and the direction of opinion is decidedly towards the view that, however much insani- tary conditions and overcrowding act as causes predispos- ing to the reception of the disease, the introduction into the system of a living organism or germ is necessary to the manifestation of the phenomena of the fever. Never- tbeloss no speciie Supa ae 7 ee ee 1 From rigos, smoke or mist, in allusion to the stupor of the disease.

in the case of typhus fever. This disease is now much less frequently encountered in medical practice than formerly, —a fact which must mainly be ascribed to the great attention which in recent times has been directed to improvement in the sanitation of towns, especially to the opening up of crowded localities so as to allow the free circulation through them of fresh air. In most large cities, however, limited epidemic outbursts of the disease occur from time to time, under the conditions of over- crowding and poverty, although the increased facilities possessed by local authorities for recognizing such out- breaks, and for the prompt isolation or removal of infected persons to hospitals, operate in general effectually to prevent any extensive spread of the fever. All ages are liable to typhus, but the young suffer less severely than the old. The disease appears to be communicated by the ex- halations given off from the bodies of those suffering from the fever, and those most closely in contact with the sick are most apt to suffer. This is shown by the frequency with which nurses and physicians take typhus from cases under their care. As in all infectious maladies, there is

often observed in typhus a marked proclivity to suffer in the case of individuals, and in such instances very slight exposure to the contagion may convey the disease. Typhus is highly contagious throughout its whole course and even in the early period of convalescence. The contagion, how- ever, is rendered less active by the access of fresh air; hence this fever rarely spreads in well-aired rooms or houses where cases of the disease are under treatment. As a rule one attack of typhus confers immunity from risk of others, but numerous exceptions have been recorded.

The course of typhus fever is characterized by certain well-marked stages. (1) The stage of incubation, or the period elapsing between the reception of the fever poison into the system and the manifestation of the special evidence of the disease, is believed to vary from a week to ten days. During this time, beyond feelings of languor, no particular symptoms are exhibited. (2) The invasion of the fever is in general well marked and severe, in the form of a distinct rigor, or of feelings of chilliness lasting for hours, and a sense of illness and prostration, together with headache of a distressing character and sleeplessness. Feverish symptoms soon appear and the temperature of the body rises to a considerable height (103°-105° Fahr.), at which it continues with but little daily variation until about the period of the crisis. It is, however, of import- ance to observe certain points connected with the tem- perature during the progress of this fever. Thus about the seventh day the acme of the fever heat has been reached, and a slight subsidence (1° or less) of the tem-

os

w —

< =)

oO ce

=

z w

< = <

i we

3 2

bt

< 4

“ a

=

uw

-

FB

Temperature chart of typhus fever.

perature takes place in favourable cases, and no further subsequent rise beyond this lowered level occurs. When it is otherwise, the case often proves a severe one. Again, when the fever has advanced towards the end of the second week, slight falls of temperature are often observed, prior to the

extensive descent which marks the attainment of the crisis. The pulse in typhus fever is rapid (100-120

Course of the fever,

T- ity.

FEVER. |

or more) and at first full, but later on feeble. Its condi- tion as indicating the strength of the heart's action is watched with anxiety. The tongue, at first coated with a white fur, soon becomes brown and dry, while sordes (dried mucus, &c.) accumulate upon the teeth; the appetite is gone and intense thirst prevails. The bowels are as a rule constipated, and the urine is diminished in amount and high-coloured. The physician on examination may make out distinct enlargement of the spleen. (3) The third stage is characterized by the appearance of the eruption which generally shows itself about the fourth or fifth day or later, and consists of dark red (mulberry coloured) spots or blotches varying in size from mere points to three or four lines in diameter, very slightly elevated above the skin, at first disappearing on pressure, but tending to become both darker in hue and more permanent. They appear chiefly on the abdomen, sides, back, and limbs, and occasionally on the face. Besides this, the character- istic typhus rash, there is usually observed a general faint mottling all over the surface. The typhus rash is rarely absent and is a very important diagnostic of the disease. In the more severe and fatal forms of the fever, the rash has all through a very dark colour, and slight subcutaneous hemorrhages (petechiz) are to be seen in abundance. After the appearance of the eruption the patient's condition seems to be easier, so far as regards the headache and discomfort which marked the outset of the symptoms ; but this is also to be ascribed to the tendency to pass into the typhous stupor which supervenes about this time, and becomes more marked throughout the course of the second week, The patient now lies on his back, with a dull dusky countenance, an apathetic or stupid' expression, and con- tracted pupils. All the febrile symptoms already mentioned are fully developed, and delirium, usually of a low muttering kind, but sometimes wild and maniacal (delirium ferox) is present both by night and day. The peculiar condition to which the term "coma vigil" is applied, in which the patient, though quite

unconscious, lies with eyes widely open, is regarded, especially if persisting for any length of time, as an unfavourable omen. Throughout the second week of the attack the symptoms continue unabated ; but there is in addition great prostration of strength, the pulse becoming very feeble, the breathing shallow and rapid, and often accompanied with bronchial sounds. (4) A crisis or favourable change takes place about the end of the second or beginning of the third week (on an average the 14th day), and is marked by a more or less abrupt fall of the temperature (vde chart) and of the pulse, together with slight perspiration, a discharge of loaded urine, the return of moisture to the tongue, and by a change in the patient's look, which clears up and shows signs of returning intelligence. Although the sense of weakness is extreme, convalescence is in general steady and comparatively rapid.

Typhus fever may, however, prove fatal during any stage of its progress and in the early convalescence, either from sudden failure of the heart's action —a condition which is specially apt to arise— from the supervention of some nervous symptoms, such as meningitis or of deepening coma, or from some other complication, such as bronchitis. Further, a fatal result sometimes takes place before the crisis from sheer exhaustion, particularly in the case of those whose physical or nervous energies have been lowered by hard work, inadequate nourishment and sleep, or intemperance, in all which conditions typhus fever is apt to assume an unusually serions form.

Occasionally troublesome sequela remain behind for a greater or less length of time as the effects of the fever. Among these may be mentioned mental weakness or irritability, occasionally some form of paralysis, an inflamed condition of the lymphatic vessels of one leg (the swelled leg of fever), prolonged weakness and ill health, &c. Gradual improvement, however, may be confidently anticipated and even ultimate recovery.

The mortality from typhus fever is estimated by Murchison and others as averaging about 18 per cent. of the cases, but it varies

much according to the severity of type (particularly in epidemics), the previous health and habits of the individual, and very specially the age,—the proportion of deaths being in striking relation to the advance of life. Thus, while in children under fifteen the death-rate is only 5 per cent., in persons over fifty it is about 46 per ceut.

The treatment of typhus fever includes the prophylactic measures Treat- of attention to the sanitation of the more densely populated por- ment.

tions of towns. The opening up of cross streets intersecting those which are close-built and narrow, whereby fresh air is freely admitted, has done much to banish typhus fever from districts where previously it was endemic. Further, the enforcement of the law regulating the number of persons accommodated in common lodging- houses, and the application of the powers now vested in local authorities for dealing with cases of overcrowding everywhere, and for isolation and treatment of the infected, have had a like salutary effect. Where typhus has broken out in a crowded dis- trict the prompt removal of the patients to a fever hospital and the thorough disinfection and cleansing of the infected houses are to be recommended. Where, on the other hand, a single case of acci- dentally caught typhus occurs in a member of a family inhabiting a well-aired house, the chance of it being communicated to others in the dwelling is but small; neverthcless every precaution in the way of isolation and disinfection should be taken.

The treatment of a typhus patient is conducted upon the same general principles as have been illustrated in other fevers (see SCARLET FEVER, SMALLPOX). Complete isolation should be main- tained throughout the illness, and the services of a day anda night nurse procured, who should keep a strict watch and preserve a record of the temperature and other observations, the times of feeding and the form of nourishment administered, as well as every other fact noticed, for the physician’s information. Due attention should be given to the ventilation and cleansing of the sick chamber. The main element in the treatment of this fever is good nursing, and especially the regular administration of nutriment, of which the best form is milk, although light plain soup may also be given. The food should be administered at stated intervals, not, as a rule, oftener than once

in one and a half or two hours, and it will fre- quently be necessary to rouse the patient from his stupor for this purpose. Sometimes it is impossible to administer food by the mouth, in which case recourse must be had to nutrient enemata. Alcoholic stimulants are not often required, except in the case of elderly and weakly persons who have become greatly exhausted by the attack and are threatening to collapse. The best indication for their use is that furnished by the condition of the circulation : when the pulse shows unsteadiness and undue rapidity, and the first sound of the heart is but indistinctly heard by the stethoscope, the prompt administration of stimulants (of which the best form is pure spirit) will often succeed in averting danger. Should their use appear to increase the restlessness or dclirium they should be discontinued and the diffusible (ammoniacal or ethereal) forms tricd instead.

Many other symptoms demand special treatment. The headache, which persists for days at the commencement and is with many a very distressing symptom, may be mitigated by removing the hair and applying cold to the head. The sleeplessness, with or without delirium, may be combated by quietness, by a moderately darkened room (although a distinction between day and night should be made as regards the amount of admitted light), and by soothing and gentle dealing on the part of the nurse. Opiate and sedative medicines in any form, although recommended by many high authorities, must be given with great caution, as their use is often attended with danger in this fever, where coma is apt to supervene. When resorted to, probably the safest form is a combination of the bromide of potassium or ammonium with a guarded amount of chloral. The writer has seen alarming effects follow the administra- tion of opium. Occasionally the deep stupor calls for remedies to rouse the patient, and these may be employed in the form of mustard or cantharides to the surface (calves of legs, nape of neck, over region of heart, &c.), of the cold affusion, or of enemata containing turpentine. The height of the tempcrature may be a serious symptom, and antipyretic remedies appear to have but a slight influ- ence over it as compared to that which they possess in typhoid fever, acute rheumatism, &c. The cold bath treatment, which has been recommended, cannot be carried out without serious risk to life in the necessary movement of the patient. It is a well-recognized rule that persons suffering from typhus fever ought not to be moved up in bed for any purpose after the first few days.

Cold sponging of the hands and feet and exposed parts, or cold to the head, may often considerably lower the temperature. Throughout the whole progress of a case the condition of the bladder requires special attention, owing to the patient's drowsiness, and the regular use of the catheter becomes, as a rule, necessary with the advance of the symptoms.

The complications and results of this fever fall to be dealt with according to the methods of treatment applicable to their character and extent.

Nature of typhoid.

Causes of

its ont- break.

TYPHOID oR ENTERIC FEVER.

Typhoid or enteric fever (évrepov, the intestine) is a con- tinued fever characterized mainly by its insidious onset, by a peculiar course of the temperature, by marked abdominal symptoms occurring in connexion with a specific lesion of the bowels, by an eruption upon the skin, by its uncertain duration, and by a liability to relapses.

This fever has received various names, such as gastric fever, abdominal typhus, infantile remittent fever, slow fever, nervous fever, &c. Dr Murchison, in reference to its supposed origin in putridity, uses the term " pythogenic fever," but this designation has not been generally adopted. Up till a comparatively recent period typhoid was not dis- tinguished from typhus fever. For, although it had been noticed that the course of the disease and its morbid ana- tomy were different from those of ordinary cases of typhus, it was believed that they merely represented a variety of that malady. The distinction between the two diseases appears to have been first accurately made in 1836 by Messrs Gerhard and Pennock of Philadelphia, and still more fully demonstrated by Dr A. P. Stewart of Glasgow (afterwards of London). Subsequently all doubt upon the subject was removed by the careful clinical and pathological observations made by Sir

William Jenner at the London fever hospital (1849-51). A clear distinction has been established between the two fevers, not only as regards their phenomena or morbid features, but equally as regards their origin. While typhus fever is a disease of overcrowding and poverty, typhoid may occur where such conditions are entirely excluded ; and the connexion of this malady with specific emanations given off from decomposing organic or feeculent matters, or with contamination of food or water by the products of the disease, is now almost universally admitted. Alike in sporadic cases and in extensive epidemic outbreaks the existence of insanitary conditions in house drainage, water supply, &c., can in the majority of instances be made out. The question whether such conditions alone will suffice to beget this fever—or, in other words, its de novo origin—has, as in the case of typhus, been much dis- cussed, and an affirmative opinion expressed by some high authorities. But the same remark must again be made as to the difficulties in the way of maintaining such a position in view of the evidence of the part played by microbes in infective processes.

That all insanitary conditions in respect of drainage of houses and localities furnish the most ready means for the introduction of the contagion of typhoid there is a general agreement, as there is equally that the most certain means of preventing its appearance or spread are those which provide a thoroughly trustworthy and secure drainage, a safe method of disposal of sewage, and a pure and abundant water supply. Typhoid fever is much less directly com- municable from the sick to the healthy than typhus. The infective agent appears to reside in the discharges from the bowels, in which, particularly when exposed and under- going decomposition, the contagium seems to multiply and to acquire increased potency. Thus in sewers, drains, &c., in association with putrefying matter, it may increase in- definitely, and by the emanations given off from such de- composing material accidentally escaping into houses, or by the contamination of drinking water in places where wells or cisterns are exposed to fecal or sewage pollution, the contagion is conveyed. Of the precise nature of the contagious principle we have as yet no full information,} but there appears to be strong reason for believing that a specific microbe or organism plays a part in the propagation of the disease. Still it is obvious that for its successful

1 A bacillus frequently noticed in certain tissues in cases of typhoid

fever has not yet been satisfactorily proved to be an organism character- istic of that disease, nor even to be constantly present.

implantation in and effect upon the system a peculiar con- dition of preparedness or receptivity to the morbific agent must be presupposed to exist in the individual, regarding which also our knowledge is of the vaguest. There is abundant evidence that one of the vehicles for the con- veyance of the contagion is food, especially milk, which may readily become contaminated with the products of the disease where an outbreak of the fever has occurred in a dairy.

Typhoid fever is most common among the young, the majority of the cases occurring between the ages of fifteen and twenty-five (Murchison). But children of any age may suffer, as may also, though more rarely, persons at or beyond middle life. It is of as frequent occurrence among the well-to-do as among the poor. The greater number of cases appcar to occur in autumn. In all countries this fever scems liable to prevail ; and, while some of its features may be modified by climate and locality, its main characters and its results are essentially the same everywhere.

The more important phenomena of typhoid fever will be better Patho. understood by a brief reference to the principal pathological changes logical which take place during the disease. These relate for the most part changes

to the intestines, in which the morbid processes are highly character- of istic, both as to their nature and their locality. be presently specified) are evidently the result of the action of the contagium on the system, and they begin to show themselves from the very commencement of the fever, passing through various stages during its continuance. The portion of the bowels in which they occur most abundantly is the lower part of the small intestine (ileum), where the ‘‘ solitary glands” and ‘‘ Peyer’s patches” on the mucous surface of the canal become affected by diseased action of a

definite and progressive character, which stands in distinct relation to the symptoms exhibited by the patient in the course of the fever. (1) These glands, which in health are comparatively indistinct, become in the commencement of the fever enlarged and prominent by infiltration due to inflammatory action in their substance, and consequent cell proliferation. This change usually affects a large extent of the ileum, but is more marked in the lowcr portion near the ileo-ceecal valve (see ANATOMY). It is generally held that this is the condition of the parts during the first eight or ten days of the fever. (2) These enlarged glands next undergo a process of slough- ing, the inflammatory products being cast off either in fragments or en masse. This usually takes place in the second week of the fever. (8) Ulcers are thus formed varying in size according to the gland masscs which have sloughed away. They may be few or many in number, and they exhibit certain characteristic appearances. ‘Thus they are frequently, but not always, oblong in shape, with their long axis in that of the bowel, and they have somewhat thin and ragged edges. They may extend through the thickness of the intestine to the peritoneal coat and in their progress erode blood-vessels or per- forate the bowel. This stage of ulceration exists from the second week onwards during the remaining period of the fever, and even into the stage of convalescence. (4) In most instances these ulcers heal by cicatrization, leaving, however, no contraction of the calibre of the bowel. This stage of healing evidently occupies a consider- able time, since the process does not advance at an equal rate in the case of all the ulcers, some of which have been later in forming than others. Even when convalescence has been apparently com- pleted, some unhealed ulcers may yet remain and prove, particularly in connexion with errors in diet, a cause of relapse of some of the symptoms, and even of still more serious or fatal consequences. The mesenteric glands external to, but in functional rclation with, the intestine, become enlarged during the progress of the fever, but usually subside after recovery.

Besides these changes, which are well recognized, others more or less important are often present. Among tliese may be mentioned one which the present writer has repeatedly observed in the severe and protracted forms of this fever, namely, marked atrophy, thin- ning, and softness of the coats of the intestines, even after the ulcers have healed,—a condition which may not improbably be the cause of that long-continued impairment of the

function of the bowels so often complained of by persons who have passed through an attack of typhoid fever. Other changes common to most fevers are also to be observed, such as softening of the muscular tissues generally, and particularly of the heart, and evidences of complica- tions affecting chest or other organs, which not unfrequently arise. The swelled leg of fever sometimes follows typhoid, as does also periosteal inflammation.

The symptoms characterizing the onset of typhoid fever are very Progress much less marked than those of most other fevers, and the disease of the in the majority of instances sets in somewhat insidiously. Indeed, disease.

it is no uncommon thing for patients with this fever to go about for a considerable time after its action has begun. The most marked of the early symptoms are headache, lassitude, and discomfort, to- gether with sleeplessness and feverishness, particularly at night ; this last symptom is that by which the discase is most readily de- tected in its early stages. The peculiar course of the temperature

The changes (to typhoid,

FEVER. |

is also one of the most important diagnostic evidences of this fever. During the first week it has a morning range of moderate febrile rise, but in the evening there is a marked ascent, with a fall again

TY P—

7 YP 679

tremors and jerkings of the muscles (subsultus tendinwm), in drowsi- ness, and occasionally in “coma vigil.” – In severe cases the ex- haustion reaches an extreme degree, although even in such instances

towards morning, each morning and evening, however, showing respectively a higher point than that of the previous day, until about the eighth day, when in an average case the highest point is attained.

the condition is not to be regarded as hopeless. In favourable cases a change for the better may be anticipated between the twenty-first and twenty-eighth days, more usually the latter. It does not, how- ever, take place as in typhus by a well-marked crisis, but rather by what is termed a ‘‘lysis” or gradual subsidence of the febrile symptoms, especially noticeable in the daily decline of both morning and evening tempcrature, the lessening of diarrhoea, and im- rovement in pulse, tongue, &c. Convalescence proceeds slowly and is apt to be interrupted by relapses (due not unfrequently to errors in diet), which are sometimes as severe and prolonged as the original attack, and are attended with equal or even greater risks. Should such relapses repeat themselves, the case may be protracted for two or three months, but this is comparatively rare. Death in typhoid fever usually takes place from one or other of Causes of the following causes. (1) Exhaustion, in the second or third weeks, death in or later. The attending symptoms are increasing emaciation, weak- typhoid.

This varies according to the severity of the attack ;

Sarre Hae WC Vo EEE HHH PCE Se a a Fe a a He ae el sa |

TEMPERATURE FAHRENHEITS SCALE TEMPERATURE CEXTIGRADE SCALE

Ee at ae ae esl Di (aa es sor see et it if} A CECE ECE “ele le|efalele[elelo[e] ||

Temperature chart of typhoid fever,

but it is no unusual thing to register 104° or 105° Fahr. in the even- ing and 103° or 104° in the morning. During the second week the daily range of temperature is comparatively small, a slight morning remission being all that is observed. In the third week the same condition continues more or less; but frequently a slight tendency to lowering may be discerned, particularly in the morning tempera- ture, and the febrile action gradually dies down as a rule between the twenty-first and twenty-eighth days, although it is Hable to recur in the form of a relapse. Although the patient may, durin

the earlier days of the fever, be able to move about, he feels Meat} and uneasy ; and usually before the first week is over he has to take to bed, and soon the effects of the attack become more apparent. He is restless, hot, and uncomfortable, particularly as the day ad- vances, and his cheeks show a red flush, especially in the evening or after taking food. The aspect, however, is different from the oppressed stupid look which is present in typhus, and more resem- bles the appearance of hectic. The pulse in an ordinary case, al- though more rapid than normal, is not accelerated to an extent corresponding to the height of the temperature, and is, at least in the earlier stages of the fever, rarely above 100°. In severe and protracted cases, where there is evidence of extensive intestinal ulceration, the pulse becomes rapid and weak, with a dicrotic char- acter indicative of cardiac feebleness. The tongue has at first a thin whitish fur and is red at the tip and edges. It tends, however, _ to become dry, brown or glazed looking, and fissured transversely, while sordes may be present about the lips and teeth. There is much thirst and in some cases vomiting. Splenic and hepatic enlarge- ment may be made out. From an early period in the disease abdo- minal symptoms show themselves with greater or less distinctness and are frequently of highly diagnostic significance. The abdomen is somewhat distended or tumid, and pain accompanying some gurgling sounds may be elicited on light pressure about the lower part of the right side close to the groin,—the region corresponding to that portion of the intestine in which the morbid changes already referred to are progressing. Diarrhcea is a frequent but by no means constant symptom. When present it may be slight in amount, or, on the other hand, extremely profuse, and it corresponds as a rule to the severity of the intestinal ulceration. The discharges are highly characteristic, being of light yellow colour resembling pea soup in appearance. Should intestinal hemorrhage occur, as is not unfrequently the case during some stage of the fever, they may be dark brown, or composed entirely of blood. The urine is scanty and high-coloured. About the beginning, or during the course of the second week of the fever, an eruption frequently makes its appearance on theskin. It consists of isolated spots, oval or round in shape, of a pale pink or rose colour, and of about one to one and a half lines in diameter. They are seen chiefly upon the abdomen, chest, and back, and they come out in crops, which continue for four or five days and then fade away. At first they are slightly elevated, and disappear on pressure. In some cases they are very few in number, and their presence

is made out with difficulty ; but in others they are numerous and sometimes show themselves upon the limbs as well as upon the body. They do not appear to have any relation to the severity of the attack, and in a very consider- able proportion of cases (particularly in children) they are entirely absent. Besides this eruption there are not unfrequently numer- ous very faint bluish patches or blotches about half an inch in diameter, chiefly upon the body and thighs. When present the rose-coloured spots continue to come out in crops till nearly the end of the fever, and they may reappear should a relapse subse- quently occur. These various symptoms persist throughout the third week, usually, however, increasing in intensity. The patient becomes prostrate and emaciated ; the tongue is dry and brown, the pulse quickened and feeble, and the abdominal symptoms more marked ; while nervous disturbance is exhibited in delirium, in

ness of the pulse, and cadaveric aspect. Sometimes sinking is sudden, partaking of some of the characters of a collapse. (2) Hemorrhage from the intestines. The evidence of this is exhibited, not only in the evacuations, but in the sudden fall of tem perature and rise in pulse-rate, together with great pallor, faintness, and rapid sinking. Sometimes hemorrhage, to a dangerous and even fatal extent, takes place from the nose. (3) Perforation of an intestinal ulcer. This gives rise, as a rule, to sudden and intense abdominal pain, together with vomiting and signs of collapse, viz., a rapid flickering pulse, cold clammy skin, and the marked fall of tempera- ture. Symptoms of peritonitis (see Perrroniris) quickly supervenc and add to the patient's distress. Death usually takes place within 24 hours. Occasionally peritonitis, apart from perforation, is the cause of death. (4) Occasionally, but rarely, hyperpyrexia (excessive fever). (5) Complications, such as pulmonary or cercbral inflamma- tion, bedsores, &c.

Certain sequele are sometimes observed, the most important being the swelled leg, periostitis affecting long bones, general ill- health, and anemia, with digestive difficulties, often lasting for a long time, and sometimes issuing in phthisis. Occasionally, after severe cases, mental weakness is noticed, but it is usually of com- paratively short duration.

The mortality in typhoid fever varies with the character of the Mor- outbreak, the general health and surroundings of the individuals tality.

attacked, and other conditions. At one time it was regarded as, on an average, about the same as that of typhus; but under modern methods of treatment the chances of recovery are much greater, and the death-rate may be stated as about 12 per cent. or perhaps some- what less.

The treatment embraces those prophylactic measures which aim Treat- at preventing the escape of sewer gases into dwelling-houses by ment.

careful attention to the drainage and plumber-work, and also secure an abundant supply of pure water for domestic use (see HYGIENE, SEWERAGE, and VENTILATION). When an outbreak of the fever occurs in a family, all such matters should be specially inquired into, and the sources of milk supply carefully scrutinized. The discharges from the bowels of the typhoid patient should be at once disinfected with carbolic acid or other similar agent, and the greatest care taken as to their disposal, with the view of obviating any risk of contamination of drinking-water, &. The general management is conducted upon the same principles as are observed in the case of typhus, except that in typhoid fever very special care is neces- sary in regard to diet. Milk, the great value of which as a fever- food was first clearly set forth by Prof. Gairdner, is of eminent service in typhoid, but it must be administered with due regard to time and to the digestive powers of the patient. When given too frequently or in too great quantity it may, by its imperfect digestion, prove a source of irmtation to the bowels. Even when given with every care it may fail to agree, as is proved by the presence of un- digested curd in the evacuations. In such a case its admixture with lime water or with peptonizing agents may render its digestion less difficult, but sometimes its use must for a time be suspended. It is, however, rare that milk cannot be borne when carefully ad- ministered. Barley water or simple soups, such as chicken broth, beef-tea, &c., are occasionally useful either as substitutes for or adjuvants to milk. All through the fever the patient should be fed at regular periods—not, as a rule, oftener than once in one and a half or two hours—although in the intervals water or other fever- drink may be given from time to time. In convalescence the diet should still be largely milk and soft matters, such as custards, light puddings, meat jellies, boiled bread and milk, &c., but other solid foods, with the exception of fish, should be for a long time avoided. In changing the diet it is of importance to note its effect upon the temperature,

which may sometimes be considerably disturbed from this cause, even after the apparent subsidence of all febrile action. Stimulants, although unnecessary in a large proportion of cases, are occasionally called for when there is great exhaustion, and in prolonged attacks. Their effect, however, should be care-

fully watched. They are usually best administered in the form of pure spirit.

The more prominent symptoms which mark the course of typhoid fever frequeutly call for special treatment. Thus, when the fever continues long, with little break in its coursc, the employment of remedies to control its action (antipyretics) may often be resorted to with benefit. Such drugs as quinine, salicin, salicylic acid, and salicylate of soda, kairin, antipyrin, antifebrin, &c. (in ten to thirty grain doses of one or other), may frequently break in upon the con- tinuity of the fever, and by markedly lowering the temperature relieve for a time the body from a source of waste, and aid in tranquillizing the excited nervous system. The times for their administration are either one or two hours before the usual maximum temperature or during the period of remission. These remedies may, however, fail, or by inducing sickness or great prostration and depression of the circulation require to be discontinued. For a similar purpose the cold bath is recommended by many high authorities and is regularly employed in Germany. The method recommended by Liebermcister is this: ‘‘ When the temperature rises above 104° Fahr., the patient should be placed in a bath of about 94°, which is gradually cooled down by the addition of cold water to 68° Fahr., and remain immersed for twenty or thirty minutes, the limbs being all the while gently rubbed. He should then be put back into bed.” Another method is that of Dr Brand of Stettin: “ When the patient’s temperature attains 102° Fahr., he should be placed in a tepid bath of 70° and allowed to remain till a sense of coldness or shivering is produced, which usually occurs in from five to twenty minutes.” By such means no doubt the temperature can often be reduced 2° or 3° Fahr., but it is very apt to rise again and the bath must then be repeated. It is claimed by the advocates of this method of treatment that it has been suc- cessful in diminishing greatly the mortality of typhoid fever, but they hold at the same

time that its success in large measure depends upon its employment from an early stage in the disease. British physicians are much divided upon the point, many high authorities agreeing in its marked utility, while others no less eminent regard it as fraught with danger from the frequent movement of the patient from bed, the shock to the system, and the risk of hemor- rhage, pneumonia, or other complications, and as a plan of treat- ment difficult of being carried out in ordinary practice. Although employed in some fever hospitals and with apparent success, it has not yet commended itself for general adoption. Other methods of applying cold, while probably less effectual than the bath, are much more available, as, for example, the tepid or cold pack, the frequent sponging of portions of the body with cold water, or the applica- tion of icebags to the head. The present writer has resorted to these methods in many cases of typhoid fever, with the effect of wnarkedly lowering a high temperature. When diarrhea is ex- cessive it may be restrained by such remedies as chalk, bismuth, Dover's powder, &. Hemorrhage is dealt with by preparations of ergot, or by acetate of lead, gallic acid, or other styptics. In the event of perforation of the bowel opium is the only means avail- able to lessen the distress attending that fatal occurrence.

In the convalescent stage, and even after apparently complete recovery, the utmost care should be observed by the patient as to diet, all hard and indigestible substances being dangerous from their oo . to irritate or reopen unhealed ulcers, and bring on a relapse of the fever or cause a sudden perforation. Lastly, the general health demands careful attention for a length of time, in view of the remoter risks of chest and other diseases already alluded to.

RELAPSING FEVER.

This 1s a continued fever occasionally appearing as an epidemic in communities suffering from scarcity or famine. It is characterized mainly by its sudden invasion, with violent febrile symptoms, -which continue for about a week and end in a crisis, but are followed, after another week, by a return of the fever.

This disease has received many other names, the best known of which are famine fever, short fever, synocha, bilious relapsing fever, recurrent typhus,

and spirillum fever. As in the case of typhoid, relapsing fever was long believed to be simply a form of typhus. The distinction between them appears to have been first clearly established in 1826, in connexion with an epidemic in Ireland. Out- breaks of relapsing fever have occurred in all parts of the world at times and in places where famine has arisen ; but the disease has been most closely observed and studied in epidemics in Great Britain and Ireland, Germany, Poland, Russia, America, and India. It has frequently been found to prevail-along with an epidemic of typhus fever.

?

TY P—TYP

Relapsing fever is highly contagious, and appears, like typhus, Causes of to be readily communicated by the exhalations from the body. With origina. respect to the nature of the contagion, certain important and inter- tion. esting observations have been made. In 1873 Obermeier discovered in the blood of persons suffering from relapsing fever minute organisms in the form of spiral filaments of the genus Spirochete (see vol. xxi. p. 399, fig. 1, n), measuring in length 35 to rey inch and in breadth g54¢oy to sodon inch, and possessed of rotatory or twisting movements. This organism has received the name of Spirillum obermeiert. It appears to be present in abundance dur- ing the height of the febrile symptoms, and is not seen during the interval until the relapse is impending, when it is again present as before. This observation has been confirmed by numerous investi- gators, and it has been found that inoculation with the blood containing these Spirilla produced the symptoms of relapsing fever in both men and animals, Comparatively little is as yet known of the life-history of these organisms, and the question whether they are to be regarded as the prime source of the disease or as mere accompaniments affords ground for difference of opinion (see PaTH- OLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 403); nevertheless their discovery and the con- ditions of their presence already mentioned are noteworthy facts in reference not only to the pathology of this fever but also to the general doctrine of infectivencss in disease-processes. The most con- stantly recognized factor in the origin and spread of relapsing fever is destitution ; but this cannot be regarded as more than a predis- posing cause favouring the reception and propagation of the morbific agent, since in many lands

widespread and destructive famines have prevailed without any outbreak of this fever. Instances, too, have been recorded where epidemics were distinctly associated with over- crowding rather than with privation. Relapsing fever is most commonly met with in the young. One attack does not appear to protect from others, but rather, according to some authorities, en- genders liability.

The extreme contagiousness of relapsing fever has occasionally Its con been shown by its spreading widely when introduced into a district, tagions- even among those who had not become predisposed by destitution ness. or other depressing conditions. The contagion, like that of typhus, appears to be most active in the immediate vicinity of the patient and to be greatly lessened by the access of fresh air. It is capable of being conveyed by clothing. The incubation of the disease is about one week. The symptoms of the fever then show themselves with great abruptness and violence by a rigor, accompanied with pains in the limbs and severe headache. The febrile phenomena are very marked, and the temperature quickly rises to a high point

TEMPERATURE FAHRENHEITS SCALE

Temperature chart of relapsing fever.

(105°-107° Fahr.), at which it continues with little variation, while the pulse is rapid (100-140), full, and strong. There is intense thirst, a dry brown tongue, bilious vomiting, tenderness over the

liver and spleen, and occasionally jaundice. Sometimes a peculiar bronzy appearance of the skin is noticed, but there is no character- istic rash as in typhus. There is much prostration of strength. After the continuance of these symptoms for a period of from five to seven days, the temperature suddenly falls to the normal point or below it, the pulse becomes correspondingly slow, and a profuse perspiration occurs, while the severe headache disappears and the appetite returns. Except for a scnse of weakness, the patient feels well and may even return to work, but in some cases there remains a condition of great debility, accompanied with rheumatic pains In the limbs. This state of freedom from fever continues for about a week, when there occurs a well-marked relapse with scarcely less

abruptness and severity than in the first attack, and the whole symptoms are of the same character, but they do not, as a rule, continue so long, and thcy terminate in a crisis in three or four days, after which convalescence proceeds satisfactorily. Second, third, and even fourth relapses, however, may occur 1n exceptional cases.

The mortality in relapsing fever is comparatively small, about 5 Mor- per cent. being the average death-rate in epidemics (Murchison). tality, The fatal cases occur mostly from the complications common to &e. continued fevers, The treatment is essentially the same as that for typhus fever (see above). (3, On Bs)

Harliest lefini- sions.

681

or PeerG RA P HY

Part I,—HIsTor1Icau.

YPOGRAPHY (writing by types) is the art of print- fi ing (cast-metal) movable types on paper, vellum, &c. It is quite distinct, not only from writing, but from xylo- graphy or wood-engraving, 7.e., the art of cutting figures, letters, or words on blocks of wood and taking impressions from such blocks, by means of ink or any other fluid

coloured substance, on paper or vellum.

Possibly the earliest attempt to describe the art of typography is that in the Donatus issued by Peter Schoeffer, perhaps before 1456, the colophon of which says that it was finished ‘‘ Arte nova imprimendi seu caracterizandi [from character = letter]... absque calami exaratione.” Fust and Schoeffer in the Mainz psalter of 1457 said that it was formed by an ‘‘adinventio artificiosa impri- mendi ac caracterizandi absque calami ulla exaratione.” The colo- phon of the Catholicon of 1460 is more precise, and says that the book was printed ‘‘non calanii, stili, aut penne suffragio, sed mira patronarum formarumque concordia, proporcione, ac modulo.” In 1462 Albrecht Pfister had “ gedrucket”’ the Four Histories. In the Liber Sextus

Decretaliwm, published in 1465, Fust and Schoeffer say that it was completed “non atramento [“atramento communi,” in the Justinianus of 1468 and 1472], plumali canna neque erea, sed artificiosa quadam adinventione imprimendi seu caracterizandi,” a phrase which they slightly varied in Cicero’s Offcia, issued in the same year: ‘‘non atramento, plumali canna neque erea, sed arte quadam perpnicra.” The edition of St. Jerome’s Epistles of 1470 is said to have been completed by an ‘‘ars impressoria,” the Decretum Gratiani of 1472 by an ‘‘ars quedam ingeniosa impri- mendi,” the Dyalogus of 1478 by an ‘‘ars magistra.”” We find further—“ ars sancta” or “divina,” “nova ars scribendi,” “novum exscribendi genus prope divinum,” “sculptoria archetyporum ars,” “ars mirifica formandi,” “ars excusoria,” “nova imprimendi ratio,” ‘ars pressure,” ‘‘chalcotypa ars,” ‘chalcographia” (1472 and later), ‘‘chalcographia excusoria impressoriaque,” ‘‘libraria im- pressio,” “empryntynge ” (Caxton, 1482), “prenterei” (Schoeffer, 1492), ‘‘truckery” (1505), ‘‘impression des livres” (1498), and ** prenten.”

The early printers called themselves, or were called by others, ‘‘librorum prothocaragmatici” (Gramm. Rhythm., 1468), “¢impres- sores librorum,” ‘‘exsculptor librorum” (Jenson, 1471), ‘chal- cographus” (1473; Hain, 13086), ‘‘magister artis impressoric,” ‘“boeckprinter” ; and during the 16th century we find them still frequently called ‘‘ chalcotypus” and ‘‘ chalcographus.”

The types were at first designated more by negative than positive expressions. In 1468 they were called ‘‘caragma,” later on ‘car- acter” or ‘‘character,” ‘‘archetipe note” (1478 ; Hain, 130386), ‘‘sculptoria archetyporum ars,” ‘‘chalcotypa ars,” ‘‘ forme,” ‘ar- tificiosissimee imprimendorum librorum forme.” We goon hear also of the process and material by which they were produced. The Grammatica of 1468, published by Schoeffer, says that it was “cast” (sum fusus libellus). In 1471 “nee formule” are spoken of ; and Bernardus Cenninus and his son say that they had printed the Virgil “expressis ante calibe caracteribus et deinde fusis literis” (with letters first cut into steel and then cast). In 1473 Friedrich Creusner at Nuremberg says that he had ‘‘ cut” (sculpsit) the work of Diogenes (Hain, 6192). Johan Zeiner of Ulm says in 1474 that he had perfected a book, not with the pen, but with letters of metal (stagneis caracteribus). In 1474 Joh. Ph. de Lignamine speaks of ‘‘metallice forme.”

In 1476 Husner of Strasburg represents the Nider as being printed with “letters cut of metal (litteris sculptis artificiali certe conatu ex wre).” Nicolas Jenson printed in 1480 with letters ‘‘cut and cast” (sculptis ac conflatis).

The word typographus does not seem to occur before 1488, when it was used in the preface of P. Stephanus Dulcinius Scale to the

” Astronomicon of Manilius, printed in that year at Milan by Antonius

Zarotus ;1 in 1498 Erasmus uses it in a letter (dated 13th Feb.) to Christianus, a Liibeck merchant ;2 and in 1517 Johan Schoeffer applies the word to himself in the colophon of the Aneas Sylvius published by him. But of the use of the word typographia no earlicr instance is known than 1520, in which year Gerardus Novio- magus (=Geldenhaurius) in his Lucubratiuncula de Batavorwm Insula (pref. to Nicol. Buscoducensis, dated 1520) says: ‘‘inventa Germanorum . . . bombarda videlicet, typographia, pyxis char- taque nautica ;” and Johan Schott, a printcr of Strasburg, in the Geogr. Ptolem. published by him, describes his grandfather, Johan Mentelin, as ‘primus typographie inventor.’ Gerardus, it may be added, borrowed the whole passage from Pet. Montanus (li. 1 Adag., published a. 1504), who has chalcographia instead of typo-

1 Maittaire, Annales Typogr., i. 508, note 1. 2 Opp., iii. col. 24.

graphia. Meerman indeed® speaks of a use of the word typographia (or at least of typographus) earlier than 1520, and refers to the preface of Bernardinus Veronensis in the edition of Tibullus, Catullus, and Propertius published at Venice in 1493 by Symon Bevilaqua, “at least, Meerman adds, “as it (the preface) is read in the Annal, Typogr. of Maittaire, 3. 560, 2d ed.” But on page 560 Maittaire quotes the first two lines of Bernardinus’s preface (till dicit) and then adds: ‘ Grecis characteribus destitutus, typographus necesse habuit hiatus in commentario hic illic relinquere,” which is evi- dently Maittaire’s own remark, not that of Bernardinus. The pre- sent writer at least has been unable to find such a passage in the Tibullus.

Although the art of writing and that of block-printing both differ widely from printing with movable metal types, yet this last process seems to have been such a gradual transition from block-printing, and block-printing in its turn to have been such a natural outcome of the many trials that were probably made to produce books in some more expeditious manner than could be done with hand- writing, that a cursory glance at these two processes will not seem out of place, all the less as a discussion on the origin and progress of typography could hardly be under- stood without knowing the state of the literary develop- ment at the time that printing appeared.

The art of printing, ¢.c., of impressing (by means of First certain forms and colours) figures, pictures, letters, words, attempts lines, whole pages, &c., on other objects, as also the art of a ua engraving, which is inseparably connected with printing, ® existed long before the 15th century. Not to go back to remoter essays, there is reason to suppose that medieval kings and princes (among others William the Conqueror) had their monograms cut on blocks of wood or metal in order to impress them on their charters. Such impressions from stamps are found instead of seals on charters of the 15th century. Manuscripts of the 12th century show Initials which, on account of their uniformity, are believed to have been impressed by means of stamps or dies. But the idea of multiplying representations from one engraved plate or block or other form was unknown to the ancients, whereas it is predominant in what we call the art of block- printing, and especially in that of typography, in which the same types can be used again and again.

Block-printing and printing with movable types seem to have East been practised in China and Japan long before they were known in Asiatic Europe. It is said that in the year 175 the text of the Chincse printing. classics was cut upon tablets, which were erected outside the uni- versity, and that impressions were taken of them, some of which are said to be still in existence. Printing from wooden blocks can be traced as far back as the 6th century, when the founder of the Suy dynasty is said to have had the remains of the classical books engraved on wood, though it was not until the 10th century that printed books became common. In Japan the earliest example of block-printing dates from the period 764-770, when the empress Shiyau-toku, in pursuance of a vow, had a million small wooden toy

pagodas made for distribution among the Buddhist temples and monasteries, each of which was to contain a dharani out of the Buddhist Scriptures entitled ‘“ Vimala nirbhasa Sitra,” printed on a slip of paper about 18 inches in length and 2 in width, which was rolled up and deposited in the body of the pagoda under the spire.

In a journal of the period, under the year 987, the expression “printed” book ” (swr2-hof) is found applied to a copy of the Bud- dhist canon brought back from China by a Buddhist priest. This, of course, must have been a Chinese edition; but the use of the term implies that printed books were already known in Japan. It is said that the Chinese printed with movable types (of clay) from the middle of the 11th century. The authorities of the British Museum exhibit as the earliest instance of Corean books printed with movable types a work printed in 1337. To the Coreans is attributed the invention of copper types in the beginning of the 15th century ; and an inspection of books bearing dates of that

3 Orig. Typogr., i. p. 82, note cx. 4 Passavant, Le Peintre-Graveur, i. 18, Leipsic, 1860-64; John Jackson, Wood-Engraving, London, 1839 ; Bucher, Gesch. der techn.

Kinste, p. 362 sq. = XIII. —* 86

MS. period.

Classes of writ- ing.

period seems to show that they used such types, even if they did not invent them.?

From such evidence as we have it would seem that Europe is not indebted to the Chinese or Japanese for the art of block-printing, nor for that of printing with movable types.

In Europe, as late as the second half of the 14th cen- tury, every book (including school and prayer books), and every public and private

document, proclamation, bull, letter, &c., was written by hand; all figures and pictures, even playing-cards and images of saints, were drawn with the pen or painted with a brush. In the 13th century there already existed a kind of book trade. The organi- zation of universities as well as that of large ecclesiastical establishments was at that time incomplete, especially in Italy, France, and Germany, without a staff of scribes and transcribers (scriptores), illuminators, lenders, sellers, and custodians of books (stationari librorum, librarit), and per- gamenarii, t.e., persons who prepared and sold the vellum or parchment required for books and documents. The books supplied were for the most part legal, theological, and educational, and are calculated to have amounted to above one hundred different works. As no book or docu- ment was approved unless it had some ornamented and illuminated initials or capital letters, there was no want of illuminators. The workmen scribes and transcribers were, perhaps without exception, caligraphers, and the illuminators for the most part artists. Beautifully written and richly illuminated manuscripts on vellum became objects of luxury which were eagerly bought and treasured up by princes and people of distinction. Burgundy of the 15th century, with its rich literature, its wealthy towns, its love for art, and its school of painting, was in this respect the centre of Europe, and the libraries of its dukes at Brussels, Bruges, Antwerp, Ghent, &c., contained more than three thousand beautifully illuminated MSS.

In speaking of the writing of the manuscripts of the 15th and two preceding centuries, it is essential to dis- tinguish, in each country, between at least four different classes of writing, and two of these must be again sub-divided each into two classes, All these different kinds of writing were, in the first instance, taken as models for cutting such portions of text as were intended to illustrate and explain the figures in block-books, and afterwards as models for the types used in the printing of books and documents.

(1) The book hand, that is, the ordinary writing of legal, theo- logical, and devotional books, was used by the official transcribers of the universities and churches. These men had received a more or less learned education, and consequently wrote or transcribed books with a certain pretence of understanding them and of being able to write with greater rapidity than the ordinary caligrapher. Hence their writing may be called (a) the current or

eursive book hand, of which a good many illustrations may be found in Wilh. Schum, Exempla Codicum Amplon. Erfurtensium. Quite distinct from this current writing, and much clearer and more distinct, is (6) the wpright or set book hand, which was employed by some writers who worked for universities and churches, and also by a good many who may be presumed to have worked in large cities aud com- mercial towns for schools and the people in general without uni- versity connexion. (2) In the church hand (Gothic or black letter) were produced transcripts of the Bible, missals, psalters, and other works intended for use in churches and private places of worship. This writing we may again subdivide into two classes,—(a) the orna- mental or caligraphic writing, found exclusively in books intended for use in churches or for the private use of wealthy and distin- guished persons, and (b) the ordinary wpright or set church hand, employed for less ornamental and less expensive books. (3) The letter hand may be said to be intermediate between the sct literary book hand and the set literary church hand, and to differ but little from either. It was employed in all public documents of the

nature of a letter. (4) The court or charter hand was used for charters, title-deeds, papal bulls, &c.

1 See Ern. Satow, ‘‘On the Early Hist. of Printing in Japan,” in Trans. Asiat. Soe. of Japan, x. 48 sq.; and Stan. Julien, “‘ Documents sur l’Art d’Imprimer,” &c., in Journ. Asiat., 4™* ser., ix. 505.

YEO Gh AP aa ¥

Dypold Liber (Lauber), a teacher and transcriber at Hagenau in 15th. Germany, is kuown to have carried on a busy trade in manuscripts century just about the time of the invention of printing. His prospectuses, books in handwriting of about the middle of the 15th century, announce written,

German).

[HISTORICAL.

that whatever books people wish to have, large or small, “ geistlich oder weltlich, hiibsch gemolt,” are all to be found at Dypold Lauber’s the scribe.

He had in stock Gesta Romanorum, mit den Viguren gemolt; poetical works (Parcival, Tristan, Freidank) ; romances of chivalry (Der Witfarn Ritter; Von eime Cletruwen Ritter der sin eigen Hertze gab umb einer schincen Frowen willen ; Der Ritter unter dem Zuber); Biblical and legeudary works (A Rimed Bible; A Psalter, Latin and German; Episteln und Evangelien dureh das Jor; Vita Christy ; Das gantze Passional, wintertetl und summerteil ; devotional books (Bellial ; Der Selen Trost; Der Rosenkrantz; Die zehn Gebot mit Gloscen; Small Bette-Biicher); and books for the people (Gute bewchric Artznien-Biicher ; Glemolte Loss-Biicher, 1.e., fortune-telling books ; Sehachtzabel gemolt). The lower educational books consisted for the most part of the Abccedaria, containing the alphabet, the Lord's prayer, the creed, and one or two prayers ; the Donatus, a short Latin grammar extracted from the work of Atlius Donatus, a Roman grammiarian of the 4th century, and distinctly mentioned in aschool ordinance of Bautzen of 1418 ; the Doetrinale, a Latin grammar in leonine verse, compiled by Alexander Gallus (or De Villa Dei), a minorite of Brittany of the 13th century ; the Sunmula Logica of Petrus Hispanus (afterwards Pope John XXI1.), used in the teaching of logic and dialectics ; and Dionysius Cato's Disticha de Moribus, and its supplement called Haeetus, with the Floretus of St Bernard, used in the teaching of morals. As helps to the clergy in their attempts to educate the lower classes, and as a means of assisting and promoting private devotion, there were picture books accompanied with an easy explanatory text, for the most part representations of the mystic relation between the Old and New Testaments (typology). Among these books the Biblia Pauperum? stands first. It represents pictorially the life and passion of Christ, and there exist MSS. of it as early as the 13th century, in some cases beautifully illuminated.? A richly illumi- nated MS. of it, executed in the Netherlands c. 1400, is in the British Museum (press-mark, King's, 5), and also fragments of one of the 14th century (press-mark, 31,303). A reniodelling and develop- meut of this work is the Spcewlum Humane Salvationis, a work in rhyme of the 14th century, which in forty-five chapters represents the Bible history interwoven with Mariolatry and legend. Of this work the Paris uational library and arsenal library each possesses a MS. composed in 1824, whereas the British Museum has nine MSS. (six being illuminated) of the 14th and 15th centuries, written in the Netherlands, Germany, France, and England, one (press-mark, 16,578) bearing the distinct date 1879 and another (press-

mark, Egerton, 878) that of 1486. A work of a similar nature is the Apocalypsis, of which at least two recensions with illustrations may be pointed out. One gives the text as we know it, with or without commentary, for which cf. Brit. Mus., 17,333 (French), 18,633 (French, but written in England), Reg. 2 D. xiii., and 22,498 (French),—all four early 14th century. Another is more a short history or biography of St John, but the illustrations follow those of the former work very closely ; ¢f. Brit. Mus., 19,896 (15th century, It is this last recension which agrees with the block- book to be mentioned hereafter. Other devotional works are the Ars Moriendi, the Antichrist, and other works which will be found mentioned among the block-books.

Block-Printing or Xylography.

When all this writing, transcribing, illuminating, &c., Block- had reached their period of greatest development, the art printing

of printing from wooden blocks (block-printing, xylography) on silk, cloth, &c., vellum, and paper made its appearance in Europe. It seems to have been practised, so far as we have evidence, on cloth, &c., and vellum as early as the 12th century,‘ and on paper as far back as the second half of the 14th century, while it was largely employed in the early part of the 15th in the production of (1) separate leaves (called briefs, from breve, scriptum), containing either a picture (print, prent, shortened from the Fr. emprint, empreinte, and already used by Chaucer, C. 7’, 6186, six- text, D. 604, printe, prente, preente, and in other early English documents ; also called in colloquial German Helge, Helglein, or Halge) or a piece of text, or both together ; ec A et

2 We find this title applied to at least three works,—(1) the well- known block-book, of which we speak below, (2) a treatise “in qua de vitiis et virtutibus agitur,” and (3) a work in rhyme by Alexander Gallus.

3 See Laib and Schwarz, Biblia Pauperum, Zurich, 1867.

4 Weigel, Anfange, i. 10.

HISTORICAL. |

and of (2) whole block-books, sometimes consisting of half picture and half text, or wholly of text, or altogether of picture.’ It is, however, certain that about 1400 xylo-

graphy was known all over Germany, Flanders, and Holland.

In these blocks, as in wood-engraving now, the lines to be printed were in relief. The block, after the picture or the text had been engraved upon it, was first thoroughly wetted with a thin, watery, pale brown material, much resembling distemper; then a sheet of damp paper was laid upon it, and the back of the paper was care- fully rubbed with some kind of dabber or burnisher, usually ealled a frotton, till an impression from the ridges of the earved block had been transferred to the paper. In this fashion a sheet could only be printed on one side (anopisthographie) ; and in some copies of block-books we find the sides on which there is no printing pasted together so as to give the work the appearance of an ordinary book. There are only a few block-books whieh do not possess this char- acteristic, as the Legend of St Servatius in the royal library of Brussels, Das Zeitglécklein in the Bamberg library (cf. Falkenstein, p. 49), Das geistlich und weltlich Rom at Althorp and Gotha (cf. Falkenstein, p. 46) ; but these belong to the end of the 15th eentury, and therefore to a later period than the ordinary bloek-books. Con-

in that year, it may refer to that event. Another in the Weigel eollection representing the bearing of the eross, St Dorothea and St Alexis, has the date 1443, also written in by hand, though the woodcut is considered to belong to that period. These are the only known wood-engravings with dates anterior to the secoud half of the 15th century. But there exist a good many woodcuts which, from the style of the engraving, are presumed to be of an earlier date, and to have been printed partly in the fourteenth and partly in the first half of the 15th century. J.D. Passavant? enumerates twenty-seven, all of German origin and preserved in various libraries in Germany, while in the Collectio Weigeliana (vol. i.) no fewer than 154 are recorded, some of which are to be ascribed to the Netherlands. We know of

the existence of at least five engravings which may be aseribed to the Netherlands :—(1) representing the Virgin Mary, with Dutch inscriptions, in the museum at Berlin ; (2) representing the Virgin Mary spoken of above, in the library at Brussels ; (3) representing St Anthony and St Sebastian, in the Weigel colleetion ; (4) a St Hubert and St Eustatius, in the royal library at Brussels ; (5) representing the Child Jesus, in the library at Berlin ; (6) the Mass of St Gregory, with indulgenee, in the Weigel colleetion (ef. i. 195).

Of block-books of probable German origin the following are Bloek- known :— books of

(1) The Apocalypsis, or Historia 8. Johannis Evangelista: ejusque German Visiones Apocalyptice (Germ. Das Buch der haymlichen Offenba- origin.

sequently, if a man wanted to set up as a printer of briefs or books, he needed no apparatus but a set of wood-blocks and a rubber. Formerly it was the general opinion that playing-cards had

been the first products of xylography ; but the earliest that have been preserved to us are done by hand, while the printed ones date from the 15th eentury, therefore from a period in which woodcuts were already used for other purposes. It is believed that some of the wood engravings and block-books were printed in monasteries. In a necrology of the Franciscan monastery at Nordlingen, which . comes down to the beginning of the 15th century, this entry occurs : “VII. Id. Augusti, obiit Frater h. Luger, laycus, optimus incisor lignorum”; and on some of the engravings we find the arms of certain monasteries, whieh may, however, merely mean that they were printed for, not in, those monasteries. The registers of Ulm mention several wood-engravers (formsehneider),—in 1398 a eertain Ulrich ; in 1441 Heinrieh Peter von Erolzheim, Joerg, and another Heinrich ; in 1442 Ulrich and Lienhart; in 1447 Claus (Nicolas), Stoffel (Christopher), and Johann; in 1455 Wilhelm; in 1461 Meister Ulrich, &c. Ina register of taxes of Nérdlingen we find from 1428 to 1452 a certain Wilhelm Kegeler mentioned as bricf- triieker ; in 1453 his widow is called alt brieftriickerin; and in 1461 his brother Wilhelm is registered for the same craft. At Mainz there was a printer, Henne Cruse, in 1440. At Nuremberg we find in 1449 Hans, a formsehneider, while his son Junghans exercised the same industry

from 1472 to 1490. Hans von Pfedersheim printed at Frankfort in 1459, and Peter Schott at Strasburg in 1464.

The earliest dated woodeut that we know of is the St Christopher of 1423, preserved in the library of Lord Spencer at Althorp. The Mary engraving, which is preserved at Brussels and apparently . bears the date mceecxviii., is now declared to be of 1468, the date having been falsified. The next date after that of the St Christopher is 1487, found on a woodcut preserved in the imperial library at Vienna. It was discovered in 1779 in the monastery of St Blaise in the Black Forest, and represents the martyrdom of St Sebastian, with fourteen lines of text. The date, however, is said by others to refer to a concession of indulgences. A woodcut, preserved in the library at Vienna, which represents St Nicolas de Tolentino, has the date 1440, but written in by hand; as the saint was canonized

rungen Sanet Johans). Of this work six or seven editions are said to exist, each containing forty-eight (the 2d and 3d edition fifty) illus- trations, on as many anopisthographic leaves, whieh seem to have been divided into three quires of eight sheets each. The first edition alone is without signatures.

(2) Ars Moriendi. Of this work some authors think that there are early German editions, among others that spoken of below as the 2d Duteh edition. Certainly German is the edition of Hans Sporer of Nuremberg, 1478, in the public library at Zwickau, of another by Ludwig zu Ulm, in the Paris national library, and of that described in Collectio Weigel. (ii. 16), where also other, but opisthographic, editions are deseribed.

(3) drs Memorandi; thirty leaves, folio, printed on one side, fifteen leaves being letter-press and fifteen plates.

(4) Salve Regina, bears the name of its engraver, Lienhart czu Regenspurck. It is eomposed of sixteen leaves; two leaves (signature a) are wanting in ane only copy known of it, whieh was in the Weigel collection (ii. 108).

(5) Vita Christi ; thirty-two leaves, sm. 8vo. Paris library (Sotheby, ii. 148).

(6) The Len Commandments for Unlearned People (Die zehn Bott Sir die wngelernte Leut). Ten leaves are preserved in the library at Heidelberg

bound up with a manuscript (No. 488).3

(7) Lhe Passion of Our Lord; sixteen leaves, in the Weigel colleetion (Sotheby, ii. 141).

(8) Lhe Antichrist (Der Enndchrist) ; twenty-six leaves, small oH (eomey, ii, 88; Weigel, ii. 111). Copies, Lord Spencer and coll. Weig.

(9) The Fifteen Signs of the Last Judgment; twelve engravings, usually bound up with the engravings of Zhe Antichrist (Sotheby, ii. 42). Copy, Lord Speneer. There is also an edition published at Nuremberg in 1472 by Junghannss Priftmaler.

(10) Symbolum Apostoliewm ; small quarto, seven leaves printed on one side only, and containing twelve woodcuts with German inscriptions. The only copy of it known is preserved in the library of Munieh (Sotheby, ii. 148).

(11) Lhe Legend of St Meinrad ; forty-eight leaves. The only copy known is preserved in the Munich library (Sotheby, ii. 150).

(12) The Aecht Schalkheiten, of which eight leaves were in the Weigel collection (i. 112; Sotheby, ii. 154).

(18) The Fable of the Sick Lion ; twelve leaves, preserved in the library at Heidelberg (No. 488 ; see Sotheby, ii. 159, pl. Ixxxvi.).

(14) Defensoriwm Inviolate Virginitatis b. Marix# Virginis ; six- teen leaves fol. The unique copy is in the British Museum. On the first leaf are the initials of the printer F[riedrich] W[altheren] and the date 1470 (Sotheby, ii. p. 63).

(15) The same work, twenty-seven leaves, large folio, with the imprint “Johannes eysenhiit impressor Anno ab incarnaedis dfiice M* quadringentesimo septuagesimo j°” (¢f. Sotheby, ii. 72). Copy in the British Museum.

(16) Lhe Danee of Death (Dance Macabre; Der Doten Dantz) ; twenty-seven leaves (Sotheby, ii. 156).

(17) Die Kunst Ciromantia of Dr Johan Hartlieb (Sotheby, ii. 84).

(18) Der Beiehtspiegel or Confessionale ; eight engravings (Sotheby, ii. 145). Copy in the royal library at The Hague.

(19) The Apostles' Creed ; seven leaves, folio. fenbiittel.

(20) The Credo, in German ; twelve leaves, quarto. royal library at Munich.

Two copies in the

Copy at Wol-

Copy in the

1 We have also evidence that sometimes the picture or figures were printed from blocks, space being reserved for the text, to be added afterwards by hand (see Bernard, Origine, i. 102).

2 Le Peintre-Graveur, i. 27 sq. i 3 See Joh. Geffcken, Der Bildercatechismus des 15 Jahrh., Leipsic, 1855, quarto; Sotheby, ti. 160.

Of Nether- landish origin.

Nicholas V.'s in-

of 1454,

Propugnacula, sew Turris Sapientizx ; one sheet, plano, Brit. Mus. (Sotheby, ii 164).

Block-books of Nethcrlandish origin are :—

(1) Biblia Pauperum ; forty leaves (each bearing a signature ; @ to v, -a-to-v-). As many as seven editions have been distinguished by Sotheby (i. 43; see also Holtrop, Monwm. Typ., p. 8).

(2) Ars Moriendi ;1 twenty-four leaves, smal] folio, thirteen con- taining text, cleven plates (see Sotheby, L 69; Holtrop, p. 8).

(3) Canticum Canticorum, Historia sew Providentia B. Virginis Mariz ex Cantico Canticorum; sixteen leaves, in fol. (Sotheby, 1. 77; Holtrop, p. 6).

(4) Liber Regum, seu Historia Davidis; twenty leaves, (Sotheby, i. 120b). Some consider this to be a German work,

(5) Exercitium super Pater Noster, by Henricus de Pomerio; ten leaves, small folio (Sotheby, ii. 137; Holtrop, p. 10).?

(6) Temptationes Demonis Temptantis Hominem de Septem Peceatis Mortalibus; a single large folio leaf printed on one side. Two copies, one in British Museum, the other in the library at Wolfenbiittel.

(7) Vita Christi, or the Life and Passion of Christ ; thirty-six cuts, originally printed in a press on six anopisthographic leaves, 8vo. In the library at Erlangen (see Campbell, Annales, 746).

(8) Historia Sanctee Crucis; a fragment of one leaf (with signature g), preserved in the Weigel collection (ii. 92), which seems to be a proof-sheet only. :

(9) Alphabet in figures (Holtrop, p. 11; Sotheby, i. 122).®

(10) Pomerium Spirttuale, by Henricus de Pomerio or Henry Bogaert ; twelve leaves, having twelve woodcuts accompanied by MS. text, in the library at Brussels (Holtrop, fon. Typ., p. 9). It bears the date 1440 in two places; but some contend that this refers to the date when the book was written,* not when the engrav- ings were printed.

Besides the works of Sotheby, Holtrop, and Weigel, already quoted, consult W. M. Conway, The Woodcutters of the Netherlands in the 15th Century,

Cambridge, 1884; Heineken, ldée Générale, Leipsic, 1771; J. Ph. Berjeau, Facsimiles of the Biblia Pauperum, Canticum Canticorum, Speculum, London, 1859-1861; and Id., Catal. Illustré des Livres Xylogr., London, 1865.

folio

Early Printing at Mainz.

When we, for the moment, leave out of sight the question as to when, where, and by whom the art of printing with movable metal types was invented, and take our stand on well-authenticated dates in such printed documents as have been preserved to us, we find that the first printed date, 1454, occurs in two different editions of the same letters of indulgence issued in that year by Pope Nicholas V. in behalf of the kingdom of Cyprus.

These two editions are distinguished respectively as the 31-line The former, of which three different

for the word with which the document commences, and for the Christian name of the pope's legate ; (2) a smaller text or brief type, which was afterwards very closely imitated, if not actually used, at Eitville, in printing the 1472 edition of the Vocabularius ex quo and an edition of the Summa de Articulis Fidei of Thomas Aquinas; (3) a large initial V and two large initials M, which differ from each other. In the 30-line indulgence occur (1) a large church type, which is used as in the 31-line indulgence, and is usually re- garded as identical with that of the 42-line Bible ; (2) a smaller text or brief type, of which as yet no further trace has been found ; (3) a large initial U, and two large initials M, which differ from each other, the first being identical with the initial M of the second absolution of a 33-line indulgence printed by Peter Schoeffer in 1489 for ''Raymundus Peyraudi, archidiaconus Alnisiensis in

1 Heineken enumerates six editions, of which one has inscriptions in German. See also an article by Guichard, in Bull. dw Bibliophile, Paris, 1841.

2 See also W. M. Conway, Notes on the Exercitiwm super Pater Noster, 1887.

3 There is one copy in the British Museum and another in the library at Basel,

this last having the date 1464 engraved on the letter A, which is mutilated in the former. A similar alphabet prescrved at Dresden seems to be a copy made in Germany.

4 Mr W. M. Conway is of a different opinion; see Notes on Exercitium. Dumnortier testifies to having seen another copy unaccompanied by MS. (*‘ Notes sur l’Imprimerie,” in Bull. Acad. Roy. de Belg., vol. viii., 1841).

5 No inferences can be drawn from this priority, as it merely rests on the date of a sold copy that has come to light.

. we OG i A. Pon a

[HISTORICAL,

ecclesia Xauton,” who issued it at the order of Pope Innocent VIIL., ‘pro tuicione orthodoxe fidei contra Turchos.” These two

different editions are usually regarded as having been printed at Mainz Mainz ; and, so long as there is no evidence to the contrary, we may printing,

assume that such was really the fact. But we must at the same time conclude that about November 1454 there were at least two rival printers at work there,—(1) the printer of the 31-line indulgence, whose name has not yet transpired, but who may have been Johan Gutenberg, perhaps subsidized by Johan Fust ; (2) the printer of the 30-line indulgence, who was no doubt Peter (Schoeffer) de Gernss- heym, on account of the connexion of this indulgence with that of 1489, which was unquestionably printed by him. Latterly four written copies of the same indulgence have been found, which re- spectively bear the dates,—Frankfort, 10th April 1454 (in the pos- session of Herr Lais, Wiesbaden); Frankfort, 11th April 1454 (Frankfort

archives) ; 11th July 1454 (place unknown ; Darmstadt archives) ; Liibeck, 6th October 1454, As their dates “precede by a few weeks only the earliest known printed date (15th November 1454), they mark, perhaps, the exact time when printing made its appearance at Mainz in an already advanccd state of perfection.

In following up the basis afforded by the above indulgences we Early may give a short chronological view of the early printing at Mainz, typesand so far as it is at present known, referring for niinute details to J. H. books at Hessels, Gutenberg: Was he the Inventor of Printing? 1882, p. Mainz,

150 sq.

Types 1 (large church type) and 2 (smaller brief type), used by an un- known printer, 1454.

(i.) 31-line indulgence; three different issues (A, B, C), with the printed year mnccccliiii., and one issue (D) withthe printed yearmeccelv. All printed on vellum. Of issues A and B no sold copies have yet come to light. Three unsold copies of each are preserved at (1) Bruns- wick, (2) Wolfenbiittel, and (3) Hanover (Culemann). Of issue C eight sold copies are known to exist in various libraries, with dates from Nov. 15 1454 to Apr. 80 1455. Also four unused copies have been dis- covered. Ofissue D ten sold copies with dates from Mar. 71455 to Apr. 80 1455 and four unused copies are known.

Lord Spencer’s library, in the Brit. Mus., at Jena, Leipsic, Antwerp, &e.6

Typrs 8 (large church type) and 4 (smaller brief type), used by Peter Schoeffer de Gernssheym, 1454-1455,

sold copies, with dates Apr. 11 and 29 1455, are in the Berlin library and the Brit. Mus. Of issue C two sold copies, with dates Feb. 22 and Apr. 24 1455, are at Hanover (Culemann) and Wolfenbiittel. An unsold copy is at Hanover (Cule- mann).

TYPE 8, continued (till about 1457); of type 4 no further trace is found. (ii.) Donatus of 24, 25, or 26 lines, 24

leaves; one leaf (the 8th or 9th ?) in the Mainz library. (iii.) Donatus of 32 lines, 14 (?) leaves, the 10th (?) in the Mainz library. (iv.) Donatus of 33 lines, two leaves

Type 1, continued ; for type 2 see below.

ii.) Manwng widder die Durke. An al- manac for Jan. 1455, in 4to, 5 leaves, 20 and 21 uneven lines, The only copy known was dis- covered at Augsburg, and is now in the Munich library.

(iii.) Conjunctiones et Oppositiones Solis et Lung.

(vili.) 36-line Bible.

Mainz, and is now in the Paris library.

(iv.) Der Cistanus (not Cislanus) zu

Dutsche, A broadside sheet, printed on one side, 36 lines, besides separate head-line. The Tross copy, mentioned in Suppl. to Brunet's Manuel (1878, s.v. " Cis- lanus "), was bought in 1870 for the Cambridge university library.

(v.) and (vi.) Donatus. Two different

editions of 14 (?) leaves each, 27 lines (B. Mus., C. 18.e 1, Nos. 2 and 5),

(vii.) Donatus of 30 lines, 12 (7) leaves ;

a fragment of the 8th (%) in the Mainz library.

2 vols. fol., 882 leaves, with 2 columns of 36 lines each on a page. Some _ biblio- graphers call this the Pfister Bible, assuming that Pfister printed it. The Paris library possesses a paper copy, and also a separate copy of the last leaf, which bears the MS. date 1461. Other copies exist in

in the Paris library.

(v.) Donatus of 35 lines, folio; printed,

according to the colophon, ‘‘ per Petrum de Gernssheym, in urbe Moguntina cum suis capitalibus.”

(vi.) 42-line Bible (also called Mazarine

Bible), printed before Aug. 15 1456, as the binder of the paper copy in the Paris library states that he finished its rubrication on that day. 2 vols. fol., 641 leaves of 2 columns of 42 lines each, ex- cept that in some copies the columns of pp. 1-9 contain 40 lines only, while the 10th page has 2 columns of 41 lines each, though the difference in the number of lines makes no difference in the space which they occupy.?

(vii.) 42-line Cantica ad Matutinas.

The first and only leaf known is in the Paris library. It is printed on vellum, and corresponds in every respect to the 42-line Bible, laa double columns, 42 lines, ve,

The above four types and the books printed with them (besides a few others printed by Albrecht Pfister at Bamberg) are the only ones that stand in close connexion with the question regarding the introduction, or the possible invention, of printing at Mainz. It has been pointed out above that one of the initial M’s of the 30-line indulgence of 1454 occurs again in an indulgence of 1489, printed by Schoeffer ; hence types 3 and 4 and the books printed with them must be ascribed to this printer, in spite of the fact that the capital P found in the indulgence does not seem to occur again in the 42- line Bible. No further trace of the brief type 4 has yet been found, and perhaps Schoeffer melted it down for his other types. As Schoeffer, in the colophon of the Donatus (v.) which bears his

6 See Hessels, Gutenberg, p. 160; and Bernard, Origine, ii, 31.

; ? For other copies, see Bernard, Origine, i. 164, 177-192; and Hessels, Guten- erg, 170.

HISTORICAL. |

name alone, says that it was printed ‘‘cum suis capitalibus,” and as these capitals gradually disappear after 1459 and the type of the 42-line Bible is no longer found after 1456, we must presume that the seven incuuabula mentioned above were printed by Peter Schoeffer alone before he entered (in 1457) into partnership with Johan Fust.1 There is no such certainty as regards types 1 and 2 and the books printed with them. If the 31-line indulgence may be assumed to have been printed at Mainz, its printer was in all probability Johan Gutenberg, though it would seem from a lawsuit of 1455 (see p. 690 below) between him and Fust that in that year Gutenberg had not yet printed anything, and in 1454 (1455) Fust evidently called him to account for not having produced anything. Certain circum- stances point to Albrecht Pfister as the printer of the eight incuna- bula in the left-hand colunm. First, he undoubtedly printed with type 1 in that city as early as 1461, for on 14th February of that ycar he issued in that type an edition of Boner’s Edelstein (88 leaves, fol., with wood engravings), and printed with the samc type at least eight other works,” one of which was issued in 1462, the seven others without a date. Secondly, most of the copies of the 36-line Bible were at one time or another preserved in the libraries of Bavaria, and a great number of fragments have been discovered in monasteries in that country, even in a register of the abbey of St Michael at Bamberg of the year 1460. ‘Thirdly, a transfer of type from Gutenberg to Pfister is contrary to all analogy in the infancy of printing, when every printer started with a type of his own making. But, as there is no direct evidence as to who really possessed types 1 and 2 before 1460, we have not felt justified in assigning the 31-line indulgence and’ the other seven incunabula (including the 36-line Bible) to Pfister. It is alleged that, in consequence of the lawsuit between Gutenberg and Fust, the former was deprived of all tools, &c., which he had made, or is supposed to have made, with the money which the latter had advanced to him, and that afterwards a certain Dr Homery or Humery, a syndic of Mainz, lent him fresh money to enable him to establish another printing office. This allegation is made on the strength of a letter of obligation (of 26th February 1468), given by Dr Homery to Adolph, the archbishop of Mainz, by which he acknowledges to have received from the said arch- bishop ‘‘several forms, letters, instruments, implements, and other ae belonging to the work of printing, which Johan Gutenberg had left after his death, and which had belonged and still did be- loug to him (Dr Homery).” It is presumed that with these types, which we may call the

Mainz type No. 5, Gutenberg printed (i.) Joannes de Balbis, Catholicon, 1460, 378 leaves, folio, 2 columns of 66 lines each, copies of which exist in the Cambridge university library, three in the British Museum, two in the Paris library, in Lord Spencer's library, in the Wolfenbiittel and Mainz libraries, &c. ; (i1.) Mattheus de Cracovia, Tractatus Rationis, 22 leaves, 4to, 30 lines, three copies of which are in the British Museum, one at Althorp, one in the Cambridge library, two in the Paris library, &c. ; (iit and iv.) Thomas Aquinas, Summa de Articulis Fidet, two editions in 4to, the first of 13 leaves and 34 lines,—two copies of which are in the British Museum, one in Lord Spencer's, the Cambridge library, &c.—and the second of 12 leaves and 36 lines, —copies in the British Museum and the Paris library ; and (v.) in- dulgence of 1461 of 15 lines.

On 18th January 1465 Adolph II., archbishop of Mainz, ap- pointed ''Johan Gudenberg, on account of his grateful and willing service, his servant and courtier (dhiener und hoffgesind) for life, promising to supply him with clothing and each year 20 'malter' of corn and 2 'fuder' of wine." It has always been inferred from this that Gutenberg had quitted Mainz and gone to Eltville (Elfeld) to reside at the archbishop's court, and that, his dignity as courtier preventing him from printing himself, he passed the Catholicon types on to Henry Bechtermuncze at Eltville. But recent re- searches have shown that Gutenberg remained at Mainz till his death in 1468. We certainly find in 1467 the Catholicon type with some additions (already found in the indulgence of 1461) at Eltville near Mainz, in the hands of Henry and Nicholas Bechtermuncze and Wigandus Spyes de Orthenberg, who finished on 4th November of that year (vi.) Vocabularius ex quo (a Latin-German vocabulary) in 4to, 166 leaves, 35 lines, the only known copy of which is in the Paris library, and (vii.) Vocabularius ex quo, second edition, with colophon dated 5th June 1469, 4to, 165 leaves, 35 lines, copies of which exist in Lord Spencer's library, at Blenheim, and in the Paris library. Now it is asked how the Bechtermunczes could have been using the Catholicon type in 1467, if we assume that it was this type to which Homery refers in his letter of obligation as being in his possession. Some, therefore, conclude that the Catholi- con and the four other works in the same type were printed at Mainz by Henry Bechtermuncze, who may afterwards have trans- ferred his printing office to Eltville. In that case it is

difficult to see what type Homery could refer to, unless it were type 2, a close imitation of which, if not the actual type, was nsed by Nicholas

1 See for details, Hessels, Gutenberg, p. 166 sq. 2 See Hessels, Gutenberg, p. 161 sq.

cowee og ha’ PH Y

Bechtermuncze at Eltville in printing (12th March 1472) a third edition of the Vocabularius ex quo, 166 leaves, 35 lines, copies of which are preserved in the Paris and Hamburg libraries, and an edition of Thomas Aquinas, Swmma de Artieulis fidet, 12 leaves, 35 lines (Munich library).

It is necessary to point out that for nearly seventy years eight books—(1) Prognostication or Calendar; (2) Hermaun de Saldis, Speculum Sacerdotum ; (3) Traetatus de Celebratione Missarum; (4) a work in German treating of the necessity of councils; (5) Dialogus inter Hugonem Oathonem et Oliverium super Libertate Ecclesiastica ; (6) Sifridus de Arena, Determinatio Duarum Questionwm; (7) Id., Responsio ad Quatuor Questiones; (8) Ki lagspiegel, or New geteutscht Rechtbuch—have becn ascribed to Gutenberg on the strength (a) of the date 1460, whieh was said to be found in the Prognostieation in the Darnistadt library, and (2) of a so-called rubrication alleged to be in a copy of the Zractatus de Celebratione Missarum, in which “Johannes dictus a bono monte” and Johannes Numeister are represented as offering this work on 19th June 1463 to the Carthusians at Mainz. But the date in the Prognostication has been falsified from 1482 into 1460, aud the rubrication in the Traetatus is a forgery. The eight books are now eonsidercd to have been printed by Erhard Reuwich. :

When we set aside the above works, there is no further difficulty as regards the history of Mainz printing. Fust and Schoeffer worked together from 1457 to 1466, starting in August 1457 with an edition of the Psalicrium, printed in large missal types, which, as far as we know, is the first printed book which bears a date, besides the place where it was printed and the name of the printers. It was reprinted with the same types in 1459 (the second printcd book with date, place, and name of printer), in 1490, and in

1502 (the last work of Schoeffer, who had manufactured its types). In 1459 Fust and Schoeffer also published Gul. Durantus, Rationale Divin- orum Offictorwm, with the small type (usually called Durandus type) with which they continued to print long afterwards. In 1460 they published the Constitutiones of Pope Clement V., the text printed in a type (Clement type) about a third larger than the Durandus. This type was, however, in existence in 1459, as the colophon of the Durandus is printed with it.+

Spread of Typography.

Having explained the early printing of Mainz, in so far as it Spread bears upon the controversy (see below) as to where and by whom of typo- the art of printing was invented, we can follow its spread to other graphy.

countries. After Mainz it was first established in 1460 at Stras- burg, where the first printers were,—1. Johann Mentelin, who com- pleted a Latin Bible in that year, according to a rubrication ina copy at Freiburg in the Breisgau ; 2. Adolph Rusch de Inguilen, who is presumed to be the printer of the undated books with a singularly- shaped R,° e. 1464; 8. Henricus Eggestein, 1471; 4. George Husner; 5. Martin Flach, &c. In 1461 at Bamberg, where the first printer was Albrecht Pfister, who in that year published Boner's Edelstein, though it is still doubtful whether he did not print earlier (see above); 2. Joh. Sensenschmidt, c. 1480. 1465 at Subiaco ; first and only printers Conrad Sweynheym and Arnold Pannarts, who aleed in that year an edition of Cicero, De Oratore, and Lactantius, and removed to Rome in 1467. 1466 at Cologne, the printers being—1. Ulrich Zell, who published in that year Chrysostom, Super Psalmo Quinquagesimo Liber Primus, though it is presumed that he printed in 1463; 2. Arnold Ther Hoernen, 1470; 3. Johannes Koelhoff of Liibeck, 1470, who printed the Cologne Chroniele in 1499; 4. Nicolaus Gotz, 1474; 5. Goiswinns Gops, 1475; 6. Petrus de Olpe, 1476 (not 1470); 7. Conradus Winter of oe: 1476; 8. Joh. Guldenschaaf, 1477 ; 9. Henricus Quentel, 1479, &c.® 1467 at Eltville; first printers Nicolas and Henry Bechtermuncze and Wygandus Spyes de Orthenberg, who completed in that year a Vocabulartus ex quo. 1467 at Rome ; first printers Conrad Sweynheym and Arnold Pannarts from Subiaco, who published an edition of Cicero's Epistole ad Familiares, and Ulrich Hahn or Udalricus Gallus, who issued on 31st Deceinber 1467 Turrecremata's

Meditationes. 1468 at Augsburg; first printer Giinther Zainer or Zeyner. Same year at Basel; first printer Bert- hold Rot of Hanau. Same year at Marienthal; Brothers of the Common Life. 1469 at Venice ; printers,—1. Johannes of Spires ; 2. his brother Vindelinus of Spires ; 8. Christopher Valdarfer ; 4. Nicolas Jenson, &c. The further spread of typography is indicated by the following data:—1470 at Nuremberg (Johan Sensenschmidt, Friedr. Creusner, Anton Koberger, &c.), Berona or Beromiinster in Switzerland (Helyas Helye alias De Llouffen), Foligno (Emilianus de Orfinisand Johannes Numeister), Trevi(Johann Reynard), Savigliano

3 See Hessels, Gutenberg, pp. 107-114.

4 See further Bernard, Origine de I' Imprimerie, i. 216 sq.

5 M. Philippe, Origine de UImprimerie & Paris, p. 219, mentions two books printed in this type, which contain manuscript notes to the effect that they were purchased in 1464 and 1467, so that Inguilen should be placed before Eggestein.

6 Johan Veldener, who is said to have printed at Cologne, was never established there, but at Louvain (1473-77), Utrecht (1478-81), and Culenborg or Kuilenburg (1483-84); see Holtrop, Mon. Typ., pp. 42, 47, 109.

(Hans Glim), Paris (first printers the three partners Ulrich Gering, Michael Friburger, Martin Krantz); 1471 at Spires, Bologna, Ferrara, Florence, Milan, Naples, Pavia, Treviso, Savigliano (?) ; 1472 at Esslingen, Cremona, Mantua, Padua, Brescia, Parma, Monreale (Mondovi), Fivizzano, Verona, Icsi (2), St Ursino (?) ; 1473 at Lauingen, Ulm (perhaps as early as 1469), Merseburg, Alost, Utrecht, Lyons, Messina, Buda; 1474 at Louvain, Genoa, Como, Savona, Turin, Vicenza, Valencia (?); 1475 at Liibeck, Breslau, Blaubeuren, Burgdorf, Trent, Cracow (?), Modena, Reggio (in Calabria), Cagli, Caselle or Casale, Pieve (Piove) di Sacco, Perugia, Piacenza, Saragossa ; 1476 at Rostock, Bruges, Brussels, Angers, Toulouse, Polliano

(Pogliano) ; 1477 at Reichenstein, Deventer, Gouda, Delft, Westminster, Lucca, Ascoli, Palermo, Seville ; 1478 at Oxford, St Maartensdyk, Colle, Schussenried (in Wiirtemberg), Eichstadt, Geneva, Vienne, Trogen (2), Chablis, Cosenza, Prague, Barcelona ; 1479 at Erfurt, Wiirzburg, Nimegucn, Zwolle, Poitiers, Toscolano, Pinerolo, Novi, Lerida, Segorbe ; 1480 at. London, St Albans (or in 1479), Oudenarde, Hasselt, Reggio (in Modena), Salamanca, Toledo, Nonantola, Friuli (2), Caen; 1481 at Passau, Leipsic, Magdeburg, Treves, Urach, Casale di San Vaso, Saluzzo, Albi, Rougemont (?); 1482 at Reutlingen, Mcmmingen, Metz, Pisa, Aquila, Antwerp, Promentour, Zamora, Odense ; 1483 at Leyden, Kuilcnburg (Culenborg), Ghent, Chartres, Chalons-sur-Marne (?), Troyes, Gerona, Stockholm ; 1484 at Bois-le-Duc, Siena, Udine, Soncino, Winterberg, Klosterneuburg, Rennes, Loudéac ; 1485 at Heidelberg, Ratisbon, Pescia, Vercelli, Tréguier or Lantreguet, Salins, Burgos, Palma, Xeres; 1486 at Miinster, Stuttgart, Chia- vasco, Voghera, Casal Maggiore, Abbeville, Briinn, Schleswig ; 1487 at Ingolstadt, Gaeta, Rouen, Murcia ; 1488 at Stendal, Viterbo, Gradisca, Besancon, Constantinople ; 1489 at Hagenau, San Cucufat (near Barcelona), Coria, Pamplona, Tolosa, Lisbon ; 1490 at Orleans, Grenoble, Déle ; 1491 at. Hamburg, Nozzano, Goupillicres, Angou- léme, Dijon, Lantenac ; 1492 at Zinna, Valladolid, Leiria ; 1493 at Liineburg, Cagliari, Freiburg (in Breisgau), Urbino, Acqui ; 1494 at Oppenheim, Monterey, Braga ; 1495 at Freisingen, Freiberg, Seandiano, Forli, Limoges, Schoonhoven (monastery Den Hem), Wadstena, Cettinje ; 1496 at Offenburg, Provins, Granada; 1497 at Munich, Barco, Carmagnola, Avignon; 1498 at Tiibingen, Perigueux, Schiedam, Tarragona; 1499 at Montserrat, Madrid ; 1500 at Olmiitz, Pforzheim, Sursée, Perpignan, Valenciennes, Jacn. Printing was introduced into Scotland in 1505 by the establishment of Andrew Millar at Edinburgh,! and into Ireland, at Dublin, in 1551. As for non-European countries and towns, printing was established in Mexico in 1544, at Goa about 1550, at Tranquebar in 1569, Terceira in the Azores 1583, Lima 1585, Manila and Macao (China) 1590, in Hayti in the beginning of the 17th century, at Puebla in 1612, Cambridge (Mass.) 1638, Batavia 1668, Tiflis 1701, German- town 1735, Ceylon 1737, Halifax (Nova Scotia) 1766, Madras 1772, Calcutta 1778, Buenos Ayres 1789, Bombay 1792, in Egypt (at Alexandria, Cairo, and Gizeh) in 1798, at Sydney 1802, Cape Town 1806, Montevideo 1807, Sarepta 1808, Valparaiso 1810, Astrakhan 1815, in Sumatra and at Hobart Town and

Santiago (in Chili) in 1818, in Persia (at Teheran) in 1820, and at Chios about 1821.?

Till the moment (say 1477) that printing spread to almost all the chief towns of Germany, Italy, Switzerland, France, the Nether- lands, Spain, England, not a single printer carried away with him a set of types or a set of punclies or moulds from the master who had taught him, but, in setting up his printing office, each man cast a set of types for his own use, always imitating as closely as possible the handwriting of some particular manuscript which he or his patron desired to publish. When we compare Schocffer's 30-line indulgence of 1454 with a manuscript copy of the same indulgence dated 10th April 1454, now in the hands of a private collector at Wiesbaden, we sec that the types uscd in printing that document were specially cast for the purpose after the model of the handwriting employed for the written copies. We know also that the types of the 36-line and 42-line Bibles and those of the psalter of 1457 are the closest possible imitations of the ornamental church handwriting customary at the time of their production. Also, when we compare the 31-line indulgence of 1454 with the German block- book called the Hnadtchrist, and both in their turn with the German MSS. of that period (especially the manuscript portions in the printed copies of the indulgences), we see that the cutter of the text type of the indulgence, as well as the engraver of the block- book, formed his characters according to some German handwriting (book hand) of the period. This imitation extcnded, not only to the shape of the lctters, but likewise to all those combinations of letters (double p, double 7, double s, sé, tz, tu, re, cu, ct, st, de, co, ct, te, cc, or, ve, po, fa, he, be, &c.) and contractions (for pro, -wm, -em, ~~en, the~~, wer, -bus, -bis, sed, am, tur, qui, que, quod, secundum, &c.) which were then, and had been for many centuries, in use by scribes. In most, if not all cases, the MSS. which the printers

1 See Rob. Dickson, Introd. of Art of Print. into Scotl., Aberdeen, 1885.

2 On the introduction of printing in various towns, consult Henry Cotton, A Typog. Gazet., 8vo, Oxford, 1831 and (second series, 8vo, Oxford) 1866; (P. Deschamps) Dict. de Géogr. & UUsage du Libraire, 8vo, Paris, 1870; R. C.

Hawkins, Titles of the First Books from the Earliest Presses Established in Different Cities in Europe, 4to, New York, 1884.

ry Pr oOG RA Pa

[HISTORICAL.

imitated were indigcnous to the place where they settled. Thus the first printers of Subiaco, though they were Germans and had most probably learned the art of casting types and printing at Mainz, clearly cut their types after the model of some Italian MS. which was free from any Gothic influence, but written in a pure Caroline minuscle hand, differing but slightly from the Caroline minuscles which the same printers adopted two years afterwards at Rome. The first Paris printers started in 1470 with a type cast in the most exact manner, on the model of the Caroline minuscle handwriting then in voguc at Paris. John de Westphalia, who introduced printing into Belgium, used from the beginning a type which he calls Venetian. Whcre therefore there is a great simi- larity, but no absolute identity, between the types of two printers (e.g., Schoeffer and Ulr. Zell), it should be attributed to the simi- larity of the handwritings which the printers followed rather than to any attempt on their part to imitate each other’s types. To this universal system (clearly discernible in the first twenty-five years of printing) of each printer setting up business with a new type cast by himself, there are, according to the conjecturcs of a good inany bibliographers, only two exceptions. One is Albrecht Pfister (see above); the other is the Bechtermunczes of Eltville (see above).

Another most important feature in the earliest books is that the Uneven. printers imitated, not only the handwriting, with all its contrac- ness of tions, combined letters, &c., but all the other peculiarities of the lines,

MSS. they copied. There is in the first place the unevenness of the lines, which very often serves as a guide to the approximate date of a book, especially when we deal with the works of the same printer, since each commenced with uneven lines, and gradually made them less uneven, and finally even. This unevenness was unavoidable in manuscripts as well as in block-books ; but in the carliest printed books it is regarded as evidence of the inability of the printers to space out their lines. If this theory be correct,

this inability was perhaps owing to the types being perforated and connected with each other by a thread, or to some other cause which has not yet been clearly ascertained. But it is not impos- sible that the unevenness was simply part and parcel of the system of imitating MSS., and that only gradually (about 1473 or 1474, but in some cases later) printers began to see that even lines looked better than uncven. This seems clear when we obscrve that the imitation of MSS. was carricd so far that somctimes things which deviated from the work of the scribe, but had accidentally been printed in, were afterwards erased and altered in conformity with the MS. The Paris library, for instance, posscsses two copies of the Liber Epistolarwm of Gasparinus Pergamensis (printed at Paris in 1470) in both of which the initial G of the first line and the initial M of the fourth line were printed in, and, whilst they have been allowed to remain in one of the copies, in the other they were regarded as a fault and replaced by a rubricated L and M.

In the second place the initials of books or the chapters of books Initials,

in MSS., and again in block-books and the earliest products of printing, were always, or at least in most cases (they are printed in the indulgences of 1454), omitted by the scribe and the printer, and afterwards filled in by the rubricator. As the latter artists were sometimes illiterate and very often filled up the gap by a wrong initial, we find in a good many MSS. as well as early printed books small letters written eithcr in the margin or in the blank left for the initial, to guide the rubricator. In most cases where these letters (which are now called initial directors) were written in the margin, they were placed as much as possible on the edges of the pages in order that they might be cut away by thc binder as unsightly ; but ina vast number of incunabula they have remained till the present day.? After a few years these initial directors were in a good many books printed in (in lower-case type) with the text. In all cascs, whether written or printed, they were meant to be covered by the illuminated initial ; but, as a matter of fact, the latter very seldom covers the initial director so completcly as to make it invisible, and in a good many cases the intended illu- niination was never carried into effect.

With respect to the hyphens, which were uscd in the 1454 Hyphens

indulgences and the 36-line and 42-line Bibles, always outside the printed margin, some of the earlicst printers did not cmploy them at the moment that they started their presses, and in the case of some printers the non-use or use of hyphens, and thcir position outside or inside the printed margin, serve as a guide to the dating of their products. After about 1472 they become more uniform in their shape and more generally used.

The use of signatures is confined in MSS. mostly to mark the Signa- quires, and in block-books to mark each shcet or page ; they do tures.

not occur in printed books before 1472 (at least in no carlier book with a date), when they appear in Joh. Nider's Preccptorrwm Divine Legis, published by Johan Koelhoff at Cologne.

Catchwords (eustodes) were used for the first time about 1469 by Catch-

Johannes of Spires, at Venice, in the first edition of Tacitus.

3 The university library of Basel possesses a collection of the earliest Paris books still bound in their original binding, in which these initial directors are written not only on the outer edges but on the inner sides of the pages, and so close to the back that they can only be seen by stretching the books wide open.

Pere Gr APH Y 687

whereas the judges speak of ''the work to the profit of both " (49),

and "their common use" (60). (B) In the earliest? book pub- From lished with a date (the Mainz psalter, issued 14th August 1457 by book Fust and Peter Schoeffer) it is said that it was perfected at Mainz colo- by an ''adinventio artificiosa imprimendi ae caracterizandi absque phons, calami ulla exaratione" (repeated and varied later ; see p. 681 above). &c.;

HISTORICAL. |

Pagination or rather foliation was first used by Arn. Ther Hoernen, at Cologne in 1471, in Adrianus's Liber de Remediis Fortwitorum Caswum,

having each leaf (not page) numbered by figures placed in the end of the line on the middle of each right-hand page.

The practice among early printers of imitating and reproducing MSS. was not abandoned till many years after the first printed

book (1454) made its appearance ; and, looking at the books printed, say from 1454 to 1477, from our present standpoint of daily im- provement and alteration, the printing of that period may be said to have been almost wholly stagnant, without any improvement or modification. If some printers (for instance, Sweynheym aud Pannarts at Subiaco and Rome, and Nicolas Jenson at Venice) pro- duced handsomer books than others, this is to be attributed to the beauty of the MSS. imitated and the paper used rather than to any superior skill. Generally speaking, therefore, we shall not be very far wrong in saying that the workmanship of Ketelaer and De Leempt's first book, published at Utrecht ¢. 1473, and that of Caxton's first book issued at Westminster in 1477, exhibit the very same stage of the art of printing as the 1454 indulgences. If therefore any evidence were found that Ketelaer and De Leempt and Caxton had really printed their first books in 1454, there would be nothing in the workmanship of these books to prevent us from placing them in that year. And conversely, if the indulgences of 1454 had been issued without a date or without any names to in- dicate their approximate date, their workmanship would invariably induce bibliographers to ascribe them to circa 1470, if not somewhat later. Even after 1477 the alterations in the mode of printing books proceeded very slowly and almost imperceptibly. It came to be no longer a universal system for printers to begin business by cast- ing a type for themselves, but some received their types from one of their colleagues. And, though there were still many varieties of types, one sort began to make its appearance in two or thrce different places. The combinations of letters were the first to dis- appear; but the contractions remain in a good many books even of the 17th century.

Some theorics have been based on, and others have been con- sidered to be upset by, the supposition that the early printers always required as much type as printers of the present day, or at any rate so much as would enable then: to set up, not only a whole quire of 4 or 5 sheets (=8 or 10 leaves=16

or 20 pages), but even two quires (=40 pages), Consequently calculations have been madc that, for instance, the printer of the 42-line Bible required a fount of at least 120,000 characters. But, though the Speculum Humane Salvationis seems to have been printed by whole sheets (2 pages), there are numberless proofs that many early books were printed page by page, even when in small 4to. For instance, in some books it has been observed that portions of the types with which the text of the first, second, or third pages of a quire had been printed were used to ‘‘lock up” the types employed for the later pages of the same quire, as is evident from the blank impres- sions of such portions being found on these later pages. Again, in some books two, three, or four blank Icaves are found at the end, showing a niiscalculation of the printer. Moreover, the numerous itinerant printers of the 15th century, who established a press for a short time wherever they went, prove that the furniture of the earliest printing offices must have been of no great extent.

The Invention Controversy.

Now that we have traced the art of printing from the moment (1454) that it made its appearance in a perfect

” State at Mainz, and have followed its spread to all the chief . places of Europe till 1500, we must take notice of the

controversy which has been carried on for nearly four hundred years as to when, where, and by whom the art was invented. For this purpose we will gather up into a chronological sequence (a) a few of the most important expressions used by the earliest printers in their colophons, (6) whatever documentary evidence there may be on the subject, and © some accounts of the earliest authors on the subject. (The letters A, B, &c., are for the sake of

convenient reference.)

The earliest testimony (A) to which we may refer is the notarial instrument, dated 6th November 1455, of the lawsuit between Fust and Gutenberg, whereby the former sought to recover 2026 guilders from the latter in repayment of 1600 guilders (800 advanced in 1450 or 1449 and another 800 in 1452), with the interest thereon. Fust speaks here? of “ the work ” (line

24), and of “our common work” (line 60); Gutenberg speaks of “tools” in preparation, ‘“workmen’s wages, house-rent, vellum, paper, ink, &c.” (lines 37- 40), of “such work” (41), and of “the work of the books” (42) ;

1 See Bernard, Origine del’ Impr., i. 164, who was a printer himself and speaks ‘ DWe ones io fils: ae of the instrument as published by J. D. Koehler, Ehren-Rettung Johann Guttenderg’s, Leipsic, 1741.

(C) In 1460 the Catholicon was published at Mainz, without the name of the printer ; but the colophon, after stating that the book was printed at Mainz, which town God’s mercy had deigned to prefer above other nations of the earth, adds (D) that the book was printed and completed “ non calami, stili, aut penne suffragio, sed mira patronarum formarumque concordia, proporcione, et modulo.” This work is considered to have been printed by Gutenberg, and the mention of God’s mercy is regarded as an allusion to the in- vention of printing. The phrase is, however, also found in the Liber Sextus Decrctalium, in the Summa of Thomas Aquinas, and in the Clementine, published respectively on 17th December 1465, 6th March, and 8th October 1467, by Fust and Schoeffer. (EZ) On 17th January 1465 Adolph II., archbishop of Mainz, by a publie decree, appointed Gutenberg as his servant in reward for “his services,’”’ but he does not speak of him as the inventor of printing, noreven asa printer. (F) In the Grammatica Rhythmiea, published in 1466 by Fust and Schoeffer, the third line of the colophon runs: “Hine Nazareni sonet oda per ora Johannis,” which was formerly regarded as an allusion to Johann Fust or Johann Gutenberg, but which more probably refers to Johann Brunnen or Fons, the author of the grammar. (G) Ou 26th February 1468 Dr Homery wrote to the archbishop of Mainz the letter quoted above, from which it may be inferred that Gutenberg had been a printer, though not a word is said as to his being the inventor of printing. (H) In 1468 Schoeffer reprinted Fons’s Grammatica, and in the colophon it is said: ‘At Moguntina sum fusus in urbe libellus meque (the book) domus genuit unde caragma venit.” (I) Schoeffer published on 24th May 1468 the first edition of Justinian’ Imper. Institutionwm Juris Libri VI, cum Glossa. To this were added by way of colophon some verses commencing : ‘‘Scema tabernaculi, &c.,” in which it is said that (the ornament of the church) Jesus ‘hos dedit eximios sculpendi in arte magistros. . . Quos geuuit ambos urbs Moguntina Johannes, librorum

insignes prothocaragmaticos," which is regarded as an allusion to Johann Gutenberg and Johann Fust as first printers. (K) In the same year (1468) Johannes Andreas, bishop of Aleria, says, in the dedication of his edition of St Jerome's Epistles, published in that year (13th December) at Rome, to Pope Paul II., that 'Germany is to be honoured for ever as having been the inventress of the greatest utilities. Cardinal Cusa wished that the sacred art of printing, which then (under Cardinal Cusa, who died llth August 1464) seemed to have arisen in Germany, were brought to Rome." (L) In 1470 Guil. Fichet, in an octastichon inserted in the Paris edition of 1470 of the Letters of Gasparinus of Bergamo, exhorts Paris to take up the almost divine art of writing (printing) which Germany is acquainted with. In the same year Erhard Windsberg writes to the same effect in an epigram inserted in the Epistole Phalaridis published at Paris about 1470. (M) In 1471 Ludovy. Carbo speaks, in the dedication of the Letters of Pliny to Borso, duke of Modena, of the Germans having invented printing. Nicolaus Gupalatinus speaks (Venice, 1471) of a German being the inventor of printing, and Nicolaus Perottus of the art which had lately come from Germany. (N) On 21st May 1471 Nicolas Jenson published an edition of Quintilian, edited and revised by Ognibene de Lonigo (Omnibonus Leonicenus), who in the preface speaks of its printer as ''librarie artis mirabilis inventor, non ut scribantur calamo libri, sed veluti gemma imprimantur, ac prope sigillo, primus omnium ingeniose demonstravit." (O) About 1472 the first three printers of Paris published Gasparinus Perga- niensis's Orthographize Liber, to which is prefixed (in the copy of the university of Basel) a letter, dated 1st January, from Guil- laume Fichet, prior of the Sorbonne, to Robert Gagnin, in which he says that 'it 1s rumoured in Germany that not far from the city of Mainz a certain Johann Gutenberg (Johannes, cui cognomen Bone- montano) first of all invented the art of printing (impressoriam artem), by means of which books are made with letters of metal, not with a reed (as the ancients did), nor with the pen (as is done at present)." (P) On 14th July 1474 Joh. Philippus de Lignamine pub- lished at Rome Chronica Summorum Pontifieum Imperatorumque, in which we find, between two entries, relating one to 14th J uly 1459 and the other to Ist October 1459, an undated paragraph in which it is said that Jacobus with the surname of Gutenberg of Strasburg and a certain other one named Fustus, "imprimendarum litterarum in membranis cum metallicis formis periti, trecentas cartas quisque eorum per diem facere innotescunt

apud Moguntiam Germanie civitatem.” The same is said of Mentelin, and (under 1464) of Conrad Sweynheym, Arnold Pannarts, and Udalricus Gallus. (Q) On 23d May 1476 Peter Schoeffer issued the third edition of the Lnstitutiones of Justinian, with the same imprint as in the edition

3 The earliest is perhaps the Donatus issued by Peter Schoeffer, before 1456, the colophon of which says that it was finished : imprimendi seu caracterizandi . . . absque calami exaratione.”

possibly “ Arte nova

From docu- mentary evidence.

of 1468 (see testimony I), but with the addition that Mainz is the ‘“‘impressorie artis inventrix elimatrixque prima.” (R) In 1478 an edition of the Fascieulus Temporwm was issued at Cologne, in which it is stated under the year 1457 that the printers of books were multiplied on earth, deriving the origin of their art from Mainz. The earlier editions mercly stated that the printers of books were multiplied on earth. (S) In 1483 Matthias Palmerius of Pisa pub- lished at Venice the Chron. Euseb., in which under the year 1457 it is stated that students owe a great debt to Germany, whcre Johannes Guttenberg zum Jungen, knight of Mainz, invented the art of printing in 1440. (T) In the same year Jac. Phil. Foresta of Bergamo published Supplementum Chronicorum, in which he says under the year 1458 that the art of printing books was first dis- covered in Germany, according to some by Guthimberg of Strasburg, according to others by Faust (see P), according to others by Nicolas Jenson (see N). (V) On 6th March 1492 Peter Schoeffer published the Nicdersiehstsche Chronik of Conrad Botho, saying in, the colo- phon that it was ‘‘geprent … in… Mentz, die eyn anefangk is der prentery.” (X) At the end of 1494 two Heidelberg professors, Adam Wernher and Joh. Herbst, composed some Latin verses in honour of Johannes Gensfleisch (a family name by which Gutenberg was known, and which was turned into the Latin Ansicarus), whom they called “ primus librorum impressor” and_‘‘impressorie artis inventor primus.”! (Y) In 1499 Jacobus Wimpheling (born at Schlettstadt 1450, died 1528) published (at Mainz, by P. Friedberg) an Oratio in Memoriam Marsilti ab Inghen (d.

1896), in which he, on leaf 22a, praises Joannes Ansicarus in verse on account of his invention at Mainz. (Z) These verses are preceded by an epitaph on Johann Gensfleisch, "' artis impressorie inventor" and "repertor," written in Latin by Adam Gelthus, a relative of Gutenberg. (AA) In the same year Polydore Vergil (De Inventoribus Rerum, Venice, 1499, lib. ii. cap. 7) says that a certain Peter [Schoeffer ?], a German, invented in 1442 the art of printing at Mainz in Germany, as he had heard from the latter's countryman; this statement was re- peated in a Venice edition of 1503. In later editions '' Peter'' was altered to ''Joh. Gutenberg." (BB) In the same year Koelhoff, printer at Cologne, published Cronica van der hilliger Stat van Coellen, in which on fol. 312b it is said: (1) The art of printing was found first of all in Germany at Mainz about the year 1440; (2) from that time till 1450 the art and what belonged to it were investi- gated ; (3) and in 1450, when it was a golden year (jubilee), they began to print, and the first book that they printed was the Bible in Latin, in a large letter, resembling that with which at present missals are printed. (4) Although the art was found at Mainz in the manner in which it is generally employed now, yet the first pre- figuration was found in Holland from out the Donatuses which were printed there before that time, and from and out of them was taken the beginning of the aforesaid art, and it was found much more masterly and exact (subtilis) than that other manner was, and has become more and more artistic. (5) Omnibonus wrote in a preface to Quintilian, and in some other books too, that a Walloon from France, named Nicol. Jenson (see N), discovered this art ; but that is untrue, for there are those still alive who testify that books were printed at Venice before Nicol. Jenson came there, and began to cut and make letters. (6) But the first inventor of printing was a citizen of Mainz, named Junker Johan Gudenburch. (7) From Mainz the art was introduced first of all into Cologne, then into Strasburg, and afterwards into Venice. (8) The origin and progress of the art were told to the writer verbally by Ulrich Zell of Hanau, still printer at Cologne (anno 1499), through whom the said art came to Cologne. (CC) In 1501 Jacob Wimpheling (see Y), who stated in his Oratio Querulosa contra Invasorcs Sacerdotwm, Flam- inum, &ec., published at Delft ¢. 1495, that chalcography had been invented at Mainz, published a work (Germania, Strasburg, Joh. Priiss, 1501) in which he says (on p. 43) that the invention was made at Strasburg by Johann Gutenberg of Strasburg, and that it was perfected at Mainz. (DD) In 1503 Johann Schoeffer (the son

of Peter Schoeffer and the grandson of Johann Fust) published an edition of Hermes Trismegistus, in which he represents himself as one of the most distinguished citizens of Mainz, descended from the most fortunate race who invented the art of printing. (EE) In 1504 Ivo Wittig, who was a relative of Gutenberg, and a canon and the keeper of the seal of the St Victor cathedral near Mainz (of which Gutenberg had been a lay member), erected in the house “Zum Gutenberg” a memorial stone and an epitaph to Joh. Guten- berg of Mainz, ‘‘qui primus omnium litteras ere imprimendas invenit.” (FF) In 1505, in the German translation of Livy pub- lished by Johann Schoeffer (see KK), the dedication to the emperor Maximilian, which was probably written by Ivo Wittig (see EE), speaks of Johann Giittenbergk as inventor of printing (1450) and Johann Faust and Peter Schoeficr as improvers of the art. This work was reprinted six times (1514, 15238, 1533, 1551, 1553) with the same dedication; but in 1509 the Breviartwm Moguntinum says that it was printed at the expense and trouble of Johann

1 These verses were not published at the time, but in the 19th century by F. J. Mone, Quellensamml. der bad. Landesgesch., iii. 163, from the contemporary MS. of Adam Wernher, preserved in the archives of Carlsruhe.

TY Pee RAP HY

[HISTORICAL,

Schoeffer, whose grandfather (7.¢., Johann Fust) was the first in- ventor and author of the art of printing (see DD). (GG) In 1505 Jacob Wimpheling, in his Epithoma Germanorwm (Strasburg, 1505), asserts (on leaf xxxvili b. and xxxixa.) that in 1440 Johann Guten- berg of Strasburg invented there the art of printing. And in 1507, in his Catal. Episeoporum Argent. (Strasburg, 1507), he says that the art was invented, though in an imperfect manner, by a certain Strasburger, who afterwards went to Mainz and joined others work- ing and trying the same art, where it was, tnder the guidance of Johann Gensfieisch, perfected in the house ‘‘ boni montis ” (Guten- berg). This he repeated in 1515. (HH) About 1506 Johannes Trithemius wrote his Chronicon of Spanheim, published at Frank- fort in 1601, in which he says (p. 366) that the art of printing books was discovered afresh

at Mainz by Johan Gutenberg, who, after having spent all his property in accomplishing the new in- vention, perfected it by the advice and assistance of Johann Fust. The first propagator of the new art was, aftcr the inventor, Peter Schoeffer. (II) In 1515 Johann Schoeffer published Joh. Tri- themius's Compendium sive Breviartum Historie Franeorwm, and said in the colophon that the book was published at Mainz, the first inventress of the art of printing, by Johann Schoefler, grand- son of the late Johann Fust, the first author of the said art, who finally from his own genius commenced to excogitate and to investi- gate the art in 1450, and in 1452 perfected it and commenced printing, assisted by many necessary inventions of Peter Schoeffer von Gernsheim, his servant and adopted son. Johann Fust and Peter Schoeffer kept this art secret, binding all their servants and domestics by oath never to reveal it ; but in 1462 it was spread by the same domestics into divers countries. (KK) On 9th December 1518 the emperor Maximilian accorded to Johann Schoeffer the privilege of printing Livy (1518-1519), and says in it that ‘‘ he has learned and been advised on the faith of worthy testimonies that the ingenious invention of chalcograpliy was effected by the printer's grandfather.”” (LL) In 1519 Joh. Thurmayer Aventinus (1474-1534) wrote that ‘‘in 1450 Joannes Faustus, a German, a citizen of Mainz, invented a new kind of writing, called chaleography, and completed it in two years; it was kept secret by him and Peter Schoeffer, his son-in-law, but divulged in Germany ten years afterwards by Faust's servant, Johannes Guttenberger, a Strasburger.” (MM) In a pedi- grec of Lourens Janszoon Coster of Haarlem and his descendants, drawn up not later than 1520, it is asserted that in 1446 ‘‘he brought the first print into the world.” This document, of which the date 1446 seems to have been altered into 1440, is preserved in the Haarlem town library. (NN) In 1520 Johan Schott, a printer at Strasburg and grandson of Johan Mentelin, the first printer of that town, published an edition of Ptolemy, at the end of which he printed the arms of his grandfather with the following legend: ‘“Insigne Schottorum Familie ab Friderico Rom. Imp. III. Joan. Mentelio primo Typographie Inventori ac suis concessum : Anno Christi 1466.” Apart from the assertion that Mentelin was the inventor of printing, we may remark that the emperor Frederick III. raised Mentelin to the rank of a nobleman in 1466 and granted him new arms. (OO) About 1533 the Neapolitan Mariangelo Accorso, who had resided at the court of Charles V., wrote on an edition of Donatus (in the possession of Aldus Manutius, jun.) that “Joh. Faust of

Mainz first discovered the art of printing with metal types, which afterwards he made of lead; his son Peter Schoeffer added afterwards much to polish the said art. This Donatus and Confessionalia were printed first of all in 1450. Faust derived the suggestion from a Donatus printed before in Holland from an engraved block." 'This paragraph is found on p. 411 of the Biblioth. Apost. Vatieana of Angelo Roccha (Rome, 1591). Some consider its latter part to have been derived from the Cologne Chroniele (BB), and it seems probable that it was a mixture of some of the above testimonies. (PP) In 1536 Johan Schott (see NN) published Historicn Handt-Buchlein (Strasburg, 1536), in which (on leaf b! and b*) he says that "Hans Mentlin of Strasburg in- vented the art, which, through infidelity, was brought to Mainz." On the strength of this and other statements (CC, GG, NN) the bicentenary of the Strasburg invention was celebrated there in 1640. (QQ) In 1541 Joh. Arnold (Bergel or) Bergellanus, who had settled as press-reader at Mainz two years previously, published his Encomium Chalcographiz (Mainz, Fr. Behem, 1541, 4to), in which the lawsuit between Fust and Gutenberg (A) 1s alluded to for the first time. Bergel had read Tritheim's books (HH), in which the invention is ascribed to Johann Gutenberg with two coadjutors, Johann Faust and Peter Schoeffer, which he (Bergel) had heard confirmed in conversations with Mainz citizens ; he had also seen some old tools prepared for the work by the originators which were still in existence. Gutenberg invented it in 1450. (RR) About 1561 Jan Van Zuren (born at Haarlem in 1517) and Dirk Volkerts Coornhert (born at Amsterdam in 1522) established a printing office at Haarlem. Of the former it is alleged that he had compiled a work on the invention of printing, which is presumed to have been lost during the sicge of Haarlem in 1573, It was not publicly spoken of till 1628, when Peter Scriverius published his Laurecranz voor Laurens Coster. Scriverius had only found the

=

title, preface, and introduction, in which Van Zuren contendcd that the first foundations of the art were laid at Haarlem, and that it afterwards accompanied a foreigner to Mainz. In this introduction he does not mention the name of the inventor, nor a date, but points in indefinite terms to the

house of the inventor as still existing. (SS) In the same year (1561) Van Zuren and Coornhert published an edition of the Oficia Ciceronis, in which the latter, in a de- dication to the magistracy of Haarlem, refers to the rumour that the art of printing books was invented first of all at Haarlem, and was brought to Mainz by an unfaithful servant and much improved there. He adds that very old and dignified persons had often told him, not only the family of the inventor, but also his name and sur- name, and had explained the first crude way of printing, and pointed out to him the house of the first printer. (TT) In 1566 Luigi Guicciar- dini, a Florentine nobleman who had visited the Netherlands and had resided many years at Antwerp, finished a description of the Netherlands (published in 1567), in which, alluding to Haarlem, he speaks of the invention there according to the assertions of the inhabitants, the evidence of some authors, and other remembrances g the inventor died before the perfection of his art; his servant went to Mainz, where he perfected the art, and hence the report that it was invented there. (VV) About 1568 (it is calculated) Hadrianus Junius wrote his Batavia, published at Leyden in 1588, with two prefaces, dated, the one from Leyden, 6th January 1575, the other from Delft ad annwm salutis 1575. On p. 253 he says that the opinion that the forms of the letters whcreby books are printed were first discovered at Mainz is very inveterate, but old and eminent inhabitants of Haarlem had assured him that they had heard from their ancestors that there lived at Haarlem, more than 128 years before, in a decent house then existing, near the market- place, opposite the royal palace, Lourens (son of) Jan, surnamed Coster, who, while walking in the wood near Haarlem, began to shape beechen bark first into figures of letters, by which, reversely impressed one by one on paper, he composed one or two lines to serve as an example for the children of his son-in-law. When this succeeded, he began to contemplate greater things, and first of all invented, assisted by his son-in-law Thomas (son of) Peter, a more glucy and substantial kind of ink (as the ordinary ink was found to blot), with which he printed whole tablets with pictures, with the letters added. Junius had seen books of this kind printed by Coster (the beginnings of his labours) on the rectos of the leaves only, not on both sides ; the book was written (in Dutch) by an anonymous author, and entitled Speculum Nostre Salutis, in which care was taken that the blank versos could be pasted together, so that the blank pages should not present any unsightliness. After- wards (Coster) changed the beechen characters into leaden, and the latter

again into tin ones. Very ancient wine-pots cast of the remains of these types were still to be seen in the house of Lourens, which was afterwards inhabited by his great-grandson Gerard (son of) Thomas, who had died an old man a few years before. When the new merchandise attracted purchasers everywhere, workmen were added to (Lourens's) HOHeliold, among whom was a certain John (whether, as was suspected, Faust, or another of the same name, Junius did not inquire), who was bound to the work of print- ing by oath. But, when he thought he knew the art of joining the letters and of casting the types, &c., he stole away, when every- body had gone to church, the whole apparatus of the types and the tools prepared by his master, and hastened to Amsterdam, thence to Cologne, until he arrived at Mainz, where he could remain in safety, and, having opened a work-office, issued within the space of one year, about 1442, the Doctrinale of Alexander Gallus and the Tracts of Petrus Hispanus, printed with the same types which Lourens had used at Haarlem. Junius recollects that Nicolaus Gale, his tutor, a man of firm memory and venerable old age, had told him that as a boy he had often heard a certain bookbinder Cornelis (a man of more than eighty years of age, who had been an under-workinan in the same office) narrating the story of the invention (as he had heard it from his master), the polishing and increase of the crude art, &c., and cursing those nights which he had passed, during some months, with the culprit in one bed. The burgomaster Quirinus Talesius admitted to Junius that he had formerly heard nearly the same from the mouth of the same book- binder. (XX) In 1628 Scriverius in his Lawrceranz (see RR) placed the date of the Haarlem invention as far back as 1428, and men- tioned as its inventor Lourens Janszoon, sheriff of Haarlem. He asserts that the art of printing appeared, "not in the manner as it is used now, with letters cast of lead and tin, but a book was eut leaf for leaf on wooden blocks," aud the Haarlem inventor was robbed in 1440 by Johan Gutenberg. Scriverius based the date 1428 upon a Hebrew Chronicle compiled by Joseph ben Meir {born 1496, d. c. 1575), and published in 1554 at Sabionetta by Comelius Adelkind, where, under the year of the Jewish era 5188 (= 1428), the author mentions a book (without giving the title) printed at Venice and seen by him. Scriverius, being convinced that this could only refer to a book printed at Haarlem, applied the entry to a xylographic Biblia Pauperum, of which he gave a description, together with several other block-books and early printed books.

(YY) In 1689 Boxhorn pushed the date of the Haarlem invention back to 1420, referring, as his authority, to the same Chronicle of

Rabbi Joseph. Since that time the date of the Haarlem invention

has been variously placed between 1420 and 1430.

Later testimonies are mere repetitions of earlier state- Other ments.! We need not say much about the story of Antonio claim- Cambruzzi, who asserted that Pamfilo Castaldi invented ts printing at Feltre, in Italy, in 1456, and that Fausto Comes- burgo, who lived in his house in order to learn the Italian language, learned the art from him and brought it to Mainz; this story, however, has found so much credence that in 1868 a statue was erected at Feltre in honour of Castaldi. Nor need we speak of Kuttenberg in Bohemia, where John Gutenberg is asserted to have been born and to have found the art of printing. We may also pass over Johann Fust, later on called Faust (testimonies P, T, DD, FF, II, KK, LL, OO), as we know from the Mainz law- suit of 1455 (A) that he had simply assisted Gutenberg with loans of money. We may also pass over Johann Mentelin of Strasburg (testimonies NN, PP), onlyremarking here that he had already printed a Bible in 1460, and that he is mentioned in Strasburg registers as a chrysographer or gold-writer from 1447 to 1450; but of his whereabouts between 1450 and 1460 there is no record. That he had gone, or had been called, after 1450 by Gutenberg to Mainz has been asserted but not proved, and there is no reason why he should not be one of the two Johannes alluded to as the prothocaragmatict of Mainz in the Justinian of 1468 (testimony I.). That Nicolas Jenson came to be regarded in certain circles and for a time as the inventor of printing is owing to testimony N being misunderstood. There re- main, therefore, to be considered the testimonies which bear on the rival claims of Haarlem and Mainz. The contro- versy between Germany and Holland was publicly started as early as 1499 by the Cologne Chronicle (testimony BB), that between the two towns mentioned not publicly before 1561 (testimony RR); while no rival inventor to Guten- berg was mentioned publicly and in print earlier than 1588 (testimony VV).

Let us first consider the claims of Germany and Mainz as centred Claims of in the person of Henne (=Hans or Johann) Gensfleisch, called Guten- Gutenberg or Gudenberg, the latter name derived from his mother, berg. whose maiden name was Elsa Wyrich, who lived in the *‘ Hof zum Gutenberg” at Mainz. He is supposed to have been born at that town about 1400. He is first mentioned in a Mainz document, dated 16th January 1430. In a document of 28th March 1430 he is spoken of as being ‘‘not in Mainz.” Documents from 14th March 1434 to 18th September 1444 prove him to have been at Strasburg during that time, and documents dated respectively 17th October 1448, 6th November 1455, 21st June 1457, 10th April 1461, show that he was in or near Mainz on those days. By a decree of 17th January 1465 the archbishop of that town rewarded him for “his services,” and in the bond of Dr Homery, dated 26th February 1468, he is spoken of as dead. There are, moreover, six forged documents (including some relics of an ancient press bearing the date 1441) respectively dated 24th March 1424, 1487, 3d July 1453, 20th July 1459, 19th June 1463, and an entry in an anniversarium which has been applied to Gutenberg, but does not concern him (see Hessels, Gutenberg).

In former years, when printing was believed to have been invented in 1440, the records of the Strasburg lawsuit of 1439, between Gutenberg and some Strasburg artisans about certain industrial undertakings (as the art of polishing stones, the manufacture of looking-glasses), were considered to prove the invention of printing at Strasburg, not, however, by Mentelin, as had been thought by some (testimonies NN, PP), but by Gutenberg. The records came to light about 1740, just when Schoepflin, the principal discoverer, had been commissioned to search for documents of this kind. Doubts may be suggested as to their genuineness, but they have all perished, partly during the revolution of 1798 and partly during the siege of Strasburg in 1870. However, nobody would now assert that printing was invented in 1439 or at Strasburg; and those who still believe that Gutenberg was the inventor of printing refer to them only as showing that he was a mechanic as early as 1489, and that he understood the art of pressing.”

1 Over a hundred of them have been collected by Ger. Meerman, Origines Typogr., ii. p. 58 sq. * See Hessels, Gutenberg, pp. 28, 185, &c.

690

The first document that connects Gutenberg with the art of print- ing is the notarial instrument of 6th November 1455 (testimony A). But it says nothing of an invention or a new mode of print- ing. And yet the occasion was such as to make it almost imperative on Gutenberg to mention it, for he had spent 1600 guilders of Fust's money, apparently without printing anything,' and was on the point of being robbed by the latter and having taken away from him all that he had made and done to give effect to his idea or invention. In the next testimony (B), 7.¢., the earlicst Mainz books with printed dates (1457 to 1467), there is evidence that the new art of printing is not only not kept secret but fully appreciated. at Mainz, and its importance fully realized and advertised ; but, though they speak of a "nova ars imprimendi" and an ''adinventio imprimendi," there is not a syllable as to a Mainz invention or inventor. In testimonies C and D (the Catholicon of 1460) there is again not one word about an invention or an inventor, or about Mainz, Yet Gutenberg is supposed to have printed the Catholicon ; and it is incredible that he, who had been wronged and robbed by his two rivals (Fust and Schoeffer), should agree with them in explaining and proclaiming the new art, but never with one word assert his claim to the honour and profit of the invention, if he had made any, and should even omit his name, whereas he saw his two rivals never neglect to print their names in full on every book which they published. Those who believe that Gutenberg was the inventor of printing suggest that he kept silent, as otherwise his creditors would have seized his copies and his printing office. But this explanation cannot be accepted ; for the verbose colophon at the end of a gigantic folio book like the Catholicon, published at a time when there were perhaps not more than three printing offices in the world, was calculated to draw attention to its printer and his residence, not to conceal him. Testimony F (1466) is no longer regarded as having any reference to Gutenberg or the inven- tion of printing. H (1468) was formerly thought to mean: oe the book, am cast (7.¢., its types are cast) in the Mainz city, and the house whence the type came (=where the type was invented) produced me." But of late years it has been shown that the author of the book, Johann Fons, was Peter Schoeffer's press-corrector. And, as he no doubt resided in

Schoeffer’s house, the two lines evi- dently mean: ‘‘I ama little book cast in Mainz, and I was born (=written) in the same house whence the type comes ? (=where I ain printed).” Testimony I (also of 1468) speaks of two Johannes (Gutenberg and Fust) as the ‘‘prothocaragmatici librorum quos genuit urbs Moguntina.” But this certainly means, not that the first printers of books were born at Mainz, but that the two Johannes were the chief printers of books (born) produced at Mainz.

When we now place together the clear documentary testimonies (A to I) of the first fourteen years of printing (1454 to 1468) at Mainz, we see that they all come from Mainz itself. Everybody connected with the art speaks of it in the most public and un- reserved manner ; its importance is as fully realized and advertised during that period as it is in the present day ; the German nation is even congratulated on possessing it; there is never any secrecy about it; once (about 1456) it is even called a new art. But, in the midst of all this publicity, the art which Mainz and Germany pos- sess is never said to have been invented at Mainz, The supposed Mainz inventor (Gutenberg) even speaks himself on two occasions (in the lawsuit of 1455 and in the Catholicon of 1460), but never says that he had made an invention. The archbishop, too, speaks publicly of Gutenberg in 1465 (testimony E), and rewards him for services, but does not speak of him as the inventor of printing, nor even as aprinter. Nor does Dr Homery, in his letter to the archbishop (testimony G), in which he refers to Gutenberg’s print- ing apparatus, call him the inventor of printing.

In 1468 we enter on a new phase in the history of the invention. Even if we reject testimony I as being merely local, testimony K (1468) speaks of the art of printing as having arisen in Germany. This testimony, however, does not come from Germany, nor from Mainz, but from Italy, and is supposed to owe its inspiration to the two German printers who had established a printing office at Subiaco in 1465, and in 1467 at Rome, and who most likely learned their craft at Mainz. But, as the two printers are mentioned in the testimony, and as it does not speak of Gutenberg, nor of Mainz, it is far more likely that it was merely derived from the colophons of Fust and Schoeffer, or from something that Cardinal Cusa had heard during his embassies in Germany. To the Mainz colophons we must also ascribe (a) the two testimonies of 1470 (L) and (0) the three of 1471 (M), all five of

which come from France and Italy. At last, in 1472, we find in testimony O the invention of printing ascribed to Gutenberg of Mainz, but it is mentioned as a rumour, and comes from France. Guil. Fichet of Paris, who gives it, is

1 In tine 42 Gutenberg distinctly declares that ‘“‘he hoped that he was under no obligation to Fust to devote the first 800 guilders to the work of the books ;” and, as Fust, by advancing the second 800 guilders in 1452, had become Guten- berg’s partner, it seems clear-that the former claimed in 1454, when the trial is calculated to have commenced, his money and interest because Gutenberg

had as yet not printed anything. 2 Venit is the present not the perfect tense.

who commenced printing at Paris in 1470. But, as two of them had resided, immediately before they came to Paris, in the univer- sity of Basel, and are supposed to have learned their art there, the rumour is ascribed to ‘ Bertolff von Hanauwe,’ who appears in the lawsuit of 1455 as Gutenberg’s servant, and who was printing at Basel in 1468. Perhaps it came rather from information which Fichet obtained from the St Victor cathedral, near Mainz, as he speaks of the art having been invented not far from that town. Testimony P (1474) again comes from Italy, from Rome, and was perhaps derived from one of the German printers settled there at that time. It merely speaks of Gutenberg, Fust, and Mentclin as printers, but says not a word which even touches upon the invention of the art. In testimony Q (1476) we have definite mention of Mainz as the inventress of the art ; it is given as an addition to the Mainz colophon of 1468 (see I). In 1478 Mainz is again mentioned in a Cologne testimony ®, which gives evidence of research, as it is an amplification of an earlier one in which Mainz was not men- tioned. Germany, Gutenberg, and Mainz are again mentioned in the Venetian testimony S (1483), which gives for the first time 1440 as the date of the invention. In the same year we have two earlicr testimonies (P and N) worked into one (T), to the effect that printing was invented either by Gutenberg or by Fust or by Jenson, Testimony V (1492), which states that

printing com- menced at Mainz, is practically equivalent to Q. In 1494 and 1499 we have three German testimonies (X, Y, Z) as to Gutenberg being the inventor of printing; these, however, come, not from Mainz, but from Heidelberg. Zis given bya relative of Gutenberg, Adam Gelthus ; and, as the latter resided at Heidelberg, it is clear that he was the real source of the other two Heidelberg testimonies (X and Y). Two years later, when Wimpheling, the author of testimony Y, had left Heidelberg, he ascribed (CC) the invention of printing to Strasburg, though stating that Gutenberg was the inventor. Testimony AA is recorded above to show the great con- fusion that reigned in people's minds about the invention. We must add to these testimonies those of 1504 (EE) and 1505 (FF), which are owing to Ivo Wittig, a relative of Gutenberg, and a canon and the keeper of the seals of the St Victor cathedral, near Mainz, of which Gutenberg had been a lay member according to its liber fratcrnitatis. Thus in the period from 1468 to 1505 we have (1) several vague statements made in Italy and France as to the art of printing being known or practised or invented in Ger- many, statements which arose from the books and colophons pub- lished at Mainz; (2) one item of rumour in 1472 that Gutenber invented it near that town ; (8) two Mainz statements, of 1476 an 1492, and one Cologne statement, of 1478, that it was invented at Mainz ; (4) three German statements, of 1492, 1494, and 1499, that Gutenberg had invented it ; and (5) two Mainz statements, of 1504 and 1505, to the same effect. It is to be particularly noticed that the statements (2, 4, 5) which speak distinctly of Gutenberg being the inventor can be clearly traced to Gutenberg himself and two of his relatives.

Seeing then how slender the basis is for the tradition that Contra printing was invented by Gutenberg at Mainz, and that even this dictionol slender basis was not laid till fourteen years after the art had Guten- been fully established and proclaimed in that city, we cannot be berg's surprised to find the tradition promptly contradicted. This con- claims,

tradiction was made in 1499 (testimony BB) in a Chronicle pub- lished at Cologne. To facilitate the understanding of this testimony it is divided above into eight sections. The first (taken from Hart- mann Schedel's Chronicle, 1493), second, sixth, seventh, aud eighth are no doubt due to the compiler of the Chronicle, and must not be connected with the third, fourth,

and fifth, which, according to the compiler, are due to Ulrich Zell, a printer at Cologne, who had probably settled there about 1463, and had most likely learned his art at Mainz, as he called himself ‘“‘clericus Moguntinus.” As Zell’s testimony leaves to Gutenberg nothing but the honour of having perfected the art, various attempts have been made to ex- plain away this account. As long as no typographically printed Donatus had been found that could be fitted into Zell’s account, it was argued that he meant Donatuses printed from wooden blocks; and this argument is brought forward even at the present time. But a practical printer like Zell must have been able to express himself to that effect if he had really meant to say so; and, as block-printing was not less practised in Germany than in Holland, we could hardly assume that things printed in Holland would have inspired the German inventor rather than the same things printed in Germany. That testimony OO speaks of a Donatus printed from wooden blocks may be ascribed to the notion arising at that time (c. 1533) that block-printing had given rise to typography. It has also been asserted that Holland in the Chronicle means Flanders ; but the Chronicle is usually very correct in geographical matters. It has also been suggested that Zell most likely learned his art m Fust and Schoeffer’s office and invented the passage to injure the reputation of Gutenberg, who had been their enemy. Finally it has been said that Zell did not suggest or write the passage at all; but it is hard to see how this can be maintained in face of the com- piler’s own statement to that effect. Therefore, all these sugges-

tions failing to weaken Zell’s testimony, we must see how far it can be brought into harmony with other circumstances and the testi- monies MM, RR, 8S, TT, VV, XX, YY, which claim the honour of the invention for Haarlem in Holland. Testimonies RR and SS do not mention the name of the inventor. But the former is a mere introduction destined for a complete book that was lost during the siege of Haarlem in 1573 before it was printed ; we are, there- fore, not entitled to say that Van Zuren did not know the name. SS may have omitted the name, because the publication of Van Zuren’s work was in contemplation at the time that it was written. That Guicciardini (testimony TT) in 1566 did not mention the name of the reputed Haarlem inventor cannot be considered as an in- dication that it was

not known or had not. yet been “invented” when he wrote, as his accounts of the cities of the northern Netherlands are all very meagre and were for the most part derived from correspondence. In Junius’s account (VV), however, we find every particular that could be desired. He begins by re- ferring to the difficulty of vindicating the honour of the invention for Haarlem on account of the deep-rooted and general opinion that it took place at Mainz. He then mentions that Lourens (son of Jan) surnamed Coster resided at Haarlem “more than 128 years ago” and gives us to understand that in the year indicated by that phrase he invented the art of printing. As Junius’s book was not pub- lished till after his death, in 1588, and the two prefaces in it are dated 1575 (he died 16th June 1575), the number 128 is supposed to go back from the date when he actually wrote his account, which he is calculated to have done about 1568. Thus we get the year 1440 as the supposed date of the Haarlem invention, though, if we based our calculation upon the date of the preface, the year 1446 or 1447 would have to be assumed. But, as Junius adds that Coster’s types were stolen by one of his servants, who fled with them to Mainz, and establishing there a printing office printed within a year’s time, in 1442, two books, he must, if this latter date is correct, have meant 1440, By testimonies XX and YY we see that in the 17th century the date of the Haarlem invention was first put back as far as 1428, then to 1423; and since then it has usually been re- garded as 1423, especially after it was discovered that the Haarlem wood where Coster is said to have cut his wooden letters was destroyed during a siege in 1426,

The researches as regards the reputed Haarlem inventor have hitherto not been made ina manner adequate for scientific purposes. It would appear that by the pushing back of the date of the inven- tion, in spite of Junius, to 1420-1428, two inhabitants of Haarlem have been mixed up by the Dutch authors on the subject. (1) Lourens Janszoon, who never bore the surname Coster, and whose existence seems to be authenticated by documents from 1404 to 1439, was sheriff, and a wine merchant aud innkeeper, and is sup- posed to have died in 1439. About 1870, however, researches brought to light that there had been (2) a Lourens Janszoon Coster at Haarlem, duly authenticated by genuine official documents as a chandler and innkeeper, from 1486 to 1483, who went away from Haarlem in the latter year. The name of this man and some genea- logical particulars known of him fit into

the story of Junius, though there are certain particulars in Junius's account which cannot yet be properly explained.

Junius bases his account of the Haarlem invention on three books, a Dutch edition of the Speculum Humane Salvationis, the Doctrinale, and the Tracts of Petrus Hispanus (Pope John XXI1.). The first work, he said, was printed by Coster himself as a first specimen of his art, and it would seem from his words that he con- sidered the work to be printed with wooden types. The two Dutch editions of the Spcculwm, however, were printed, like the two Latin editions of the same work, with movable metal type, though in one of the Latin editions there are twenty leaves the text of which is

'printed apparently from wooden blocks. The Doctrinale and the Tracts of Hispanus were printed, Junius says, at Mainz by Coster's workman with the types which he had stolen from Coster. Of the Hispanus 7'racts no edition has yet come to light that would answer to Junius's description. But of the Doctrinale we have four edi- tions, all printed in the same type (i.) as the four editions of the Speculum, With these same types are printed no less than six editions of the short Latin grammar of Mlius Donatus; and editions of this school-book printed in Holland were, according to Zell in the Cologne Chronicle, the models for the printing at Mainz, which commenced about 1450. As there are no other editions of Donatus printed in Holland that could be placed before the year 1450, the claims of Haarlem and Holland are based on them; and we will, therefore, briefly describe the types and books which must be con- nected with the Specula, Doctrinalia, and Donatuscs just mentioned. In one of the editions of the Speculum in Dutch oecur two leaves printed in a different type (ii.) from the rest of the work. This type is in its turn so very much like another type with which a work of Laur. Valla (Facctiw Morales) is printed that we link it (iii.) on to the two just mentioned. Then again type iii. is, in some of its capitals, identical with a type (iv.) used for a work of Ludovicus de Roma, Singularia Juris, at the end of which, on the last leaf, commences another work, printed in a different type (v.).

ae OrGikeA PH ¥

Type vi. is identical with type v., except in its capital P, which is larger. We have also works printed in two different types (vii., vill.) which both show such a great family likeness to each other and to types i. to vi. that it would not be advisable to separate them without evidence that they do not belong to the same office. With these eight types, which we cannot at present separate, forty- seven different books were printed, so far as we know at preseut. In type i.:—four editions (two in Latin,! two in Dutch) of the Speculum Humanx Salvationis, a work which consists of woodcuts with explanatory text underneath ; a Dutch version of The Scven Penitential Psalms; one Donatus of 27 lines; two editions of Donatus of 28 lines; a Liturgical Book in 16mo; three editions of Donatus of 30 lines ; one Donatus, in French, of 29 and 30 lines on a page; four editions of Doctrinalc of 32 lines; one Catonis Disticha of 21 lines, In type ii.:—two leaves only (49 and 60) of one of the Dutch editions of the Speculwm. In type iii.—Lauren- tius Valla, Facctiw# Morales, &. In type iv.:—four editions of Donatus of 24 lines ; Lud. (Pontanus) de Roma, Singularia Juris ; Lud. (Pontanus) de Roma (2), Treatise on Canonical Law (2). In type v.:—Pius II., Tractatus ct Epitaphia (printed at the end of the Singularia Juris) ; Guil. de Saliceto, De Salute Corporis ; one Donatus of 26 lines ; five editions of Donatus of 27 lines ; one Doc- trinale of 26 lines; one Doctrinale of 28 lines; one Doctrinalc of 29 lines; one Doctrinale of 32 lines; Catonis Disticha; Guil. de Saliceto, De Salute Corporis, together with Turrecremata, De Salute Animex; Pius II., Tractatus de Amore, &c.; Pindar of Thebes, Iliados Homerice Epitome, cum Preefatione Pit II.; another edition of the same work. In type vi.:—one Donatus of 26 lines; one Donatus of 27 lines. In type vii.:—one Donatus of 27 lines. In type viii.: —an Abccecdarium of two leaves and a Donatus of 31 lines.”

Type v. must have been in existence before 13th September 1474, as there is evidence that a copy of the Saliccto, printed in that type, was bought for the monastery of St James at Lille by its abbot Conrad du Moulin, who filled that office from the end of 1471 to 18th September 1474. As a work in this type (the Tracts and Epitaphs of Pius II.) is printed at the end of the Stagularia Juris in type iv., we may assume that this type existed a considerable time before type v. As the books printed in types iv. and v. show greater progress in style and workmanship than the books printed in types i. to iii., we must assign the latter to an earlier period than the former.

There is indeed positive evidence that type i. must have existed a considerable time before the end of 1473, as fragments of a Donatus printed in that type were used by a book- binder at Haarlem to strengthen the binding of an account-book of the cathedral church in that town for the year 1474. From these facts alone we may safely assume that none of the forty-seven books can be dated after 1474, or, if any, only a few in types v. and vii. On the other hand, four of the works in type v. cannot be dated before 1458, as they bear the name of Pius I]., who was not elected pope till that year. When we consider that there are twenty differ- ent editions of the Donatus printed in these types, and place an interval of about eighteen months between the successive editions, we get a period of some thirty years from about 1445 to 1474 for the issue of the twenty editions. That we reach the year 1445 by such a calculation is purely accidental ; but there is evidence that in 1446 and 1451 printed® Doctrinalia were bought at Bruges and Valenciennes by Jean Le Robert, the abbot of Cambray, according to two entries in his diary, preserved in the archives at Lille. And, as we know positively that there was no printing done at Mainz before 1454, nor anywhere else so early, we can only apply these entries to the Doctrinalia printed in Holland in the same types as the four editions of the Specudwm (on which Junius based the tra- dition of the Haarlem invention), and six editions of the Donatus, which we may fit into Zell's account. That the editions of the Speculum, of the Donatus, and of the Doctrinalc in type i. may be dated as early as 1445-1454 is clear when we compare them with the earliest products of Mainz printing, for which the Donatuses, according to the Cologne Chronicle, served as models. For instance, no difference in workmanship can be detected between the Donatuses printed in Holland and the three editions of Donatus in the 36-line Bible type and the four editions of the same in the 42-line Bible type, all seven presumably printed at Mainz and before 1456. Nor is the workmanship of the Spccwla (in type i.) or of the Pacetia Morales (in type iii.) different from or later than that of the Mainz Catholicon of 1460.

It has been pointed out above that the first products of the art of printing were not meant to be anything but faithful imitations of manuscript books, and that no material deviations from the general plan become observable till about 1473-1477. Nowhere is the plan of the MS. period more strictly adhered to than in the

1 Twenty leaves of one of the Latin editions are apparently printed from wooden bloeks, the text as well as the engravings. f

2 For a detailed list of these books, and further partieulars regarding them, see J. H. Hessels, Haarlem, the Birthplace of Printing, London, 1887, p. 25 sq.

8 The abbot speaks of Doctrinalia ‘‘gette” or ‘‘jettez en molle,” and the phrase is, as Bernard (Origine, i. 97 sg.) shows by eight examples from 1474—the year when printing is first offieially spoken of in Franee—to 1593, and down to the present day, applied to typographieally-printed books only.

Inven- tion at Haarlem by Coster.

‘Wooden types,

692

forty-seven books of which we are speaking. They are all without signatures, without initial directors, without hyphens, without catchwords, that is to say, without any of those characteristics which we see gradually, one after the other, come into almost general use from 1473 (if not earlier) to 1480. The four editions of the Speculum are all entirely printed_anopisthographically, the woodeuts at the top of the pages as well as the explanatory text (in type i.) underneath, which would hardly be the case ifeche books had been printed after 1471, when the printing of woodcuts, together with text in movable types, had already been known for eleven years. Their types have nothing in common with any of those used in the Netherlands after 1473, but remind us in every respect of the earlier period of the Dutch block-books and MSS. They are all, so far as we know, without any colophon (except such a word as explicit), which would, for a collection of forty-seven books, be incompatible with a period after 1471, but not with the earlier period of the block-books and MSS. Moreover, out of the forty-seven books no less than thirty-five are printed on vellum, which is incompatible with a period after 1471, when printing on paper had become universal, but not with the earlier period of the MSS.

There is, therefore, no reason whatever to discredit Zell's state- ment in the Cologne Chronicle of 1499, that the Donatuses printed in Holland were the models, the ‘‘ beginning” of the art of print- ing, at Mainz, nor that of Hadrianus Junius in his Batavia, that printing was invented at Haarlem by Lourens Janszoon Coster. The two statements were made independently of each other. That of Zell must be regarded as a direct contradiction of the vague rumours and statements about an invention of printing at Mainz in Germany by Gutenberg, which gradually crept into print in and after 1468 in Italy and France, and which found their way into Germany about 1476, after Mainz and Germany had given the greatest publicity to the existence of the art in their midst for more than twenty-two years, but had been silent about an invention and an inventor. And, though Zell accords to Mainz the honour of having improved the art and having made it more artistic, he denies it the honour of having invented or begun it, and this latter honour was never claimed by that town before 1476. Junius's account is the embodiment of a local tradition at Haarlem, the first written traces of which we have in a pedigree (testimony MM) of the family of the reputed Haarlem inventor, which must have ex- isted at least as early as 1520. His account has been indirectly confirmed by the finding of several fragments at Haarlem, all belong- ing to the groups of books mentioned above, but still more by the discovery of several fragments of the Donatuses printed in the Speculum type, all used as binder's waste by Cornelis, the book- binder, the very man whom Junius alleges to have been the servant of Coster. As the case stands at present, therefore, we have no choice but to say that the invention of printing with movable metal types took place at Haarlem about the year 1445 by Lourens Janszoon Coster.

Early Types and their Fabrication.

We must now take notice of two theories or traditions which have been current for a long time as to some in- tervening stage between the art of block-printing and the art of printing with movable cast types.! One theory or tradition would have it that the inventor of printing, after the idea of single, individual, movable types had arisen in his mind, practised his new invention for some consider- able time with wooden types, and that he came only

gradually to the idea of movable types cast of metal.

Junius gives us to understand that in his opinion the Dutch Speculum was printed with such wooden types. Of Johann Guten- berg it was asserted that he printed his first Bible with wooden types. The Mainz psalter, printed in 1457 by Joh. Fust and Peter Schoeffer, was alleged to have been printed with wooden types, in which case the 4th edition, published in 1502, and even the 5th edition of 1516, would be printed with wooden types, the same being used for them as for the editions of 1457 and 1459. Theod. Bibhander was the first to speak (in 1548) of such types and to de- scribe them: first they cut their letters, he says, on wood-blocks the size of an entire page; but, because the labour and cost of that way was so great, they devised movable wooden types, perforated and joined one to the other by a thread.? Bibliander does not say that he had ever seen such types himself, but Dan. Speckle or Specklin (died 1589), who ascribed the invention to Mentelin, asserts that he saw some of these wooden types at Strasburg.? Angelo

1 We do not allude to Tritheim's assertion that the Catholicon of 1460 was printed from wooden blocks; for this story, which he declares he had heard from Peter Schoeffer, if it were true, would belong to the history of block-printing. Nor need we speak of Bergellanus's verses (1541), in which he dis- tinctly alludes to carved blocks.

Pe ate! de Ratione Communit Omnium Linguarum et Literarum, Zurich, » p. 80.

3 Chron. Argent., MS., ed. Jo. Schilterus, p. 442.

TVR OG hk Arey

[HISTORICAL,

Roccha asserted in 1591 that he had seen at Venice types perforated and joined one to the other by a thread, but he does not say whether they were of wood or of metal.4 In 1710 Paulus Pater asserted that he had seen wooden types made of the trunk of a box-tree, and perforated in the centre to enable them to be joined together by a thread, originating from the office of Fust at Mainz.® Bodman, as late as 1781, saw the same types in a worm-

eaten con- dition at Mainz; and Fischer stated in 1802 that these relics were used as a sort of token of honour to be bestowed on worthy apprentices on the occasion of their finishing their term.

Besides those who believed in these wooden types from the fact that the letters (especially in the Speculum) vary among themselves in a manner which would not be the case had they been cast from a matrix in a mould, there were authors and practical printers who attempted to cut themselves or to have cut for them some such wooden types as were alleged to have been used by the early printers. Some of them came to the conclusion that such a process would be quite practicable ; others found by experiment that it would, in the case of small types, be wholly impossible. Up to the present time no book or document has come to light which can be asserted to have been printed with such single, movable, wooden types. But nearly all the experiments to which we have alluded were made with the idea that the inventor of printing, or the earliest printers, started, or had to start, with as large a supply of type as a modern printer. This idea is erroneous, asit is hardly any longer denied that, for a good many years after the first appearance of the art, printers printed their books (large or small) not by quires (qua- ternions or quinternions) but page by page.® Therefore, all con- siderations of the experimenters as to the impracticability of such wooden types, on account of the trouble and length of time required for the cutting of thousands of types, fall to the ground in face of the fact that the earliest printers required only a very small quantity of type, in spite of the peculiar forms (combined letters, letters with contractions, &c.) which were then in vogue.

The other theory would have it that between block- Sculpto. printing and printing with movable cast types there was fusi

an intermediate stage of printing with “ sculpto-fusi ” types, that is, types of which the shanks had been cast in a quadri- lateral mould, and the “faces,” 7.¢., the characters or letters, engraved by hand afterwards. This theory was suggested by some who could not believe in wooden types and yet wished to account for the marked irregularities in the types of the earliest printed books.

Gerardus Meerman, the chief champion of this theory, based it, not only on the words of Celtes (Amores, iii. 3), who in 1502 de- scribed Mainz as the city “que prima sculpsit solidos wre char- acteres,” but on the frequent recurrence of the word sew/ptus in the colophons of the early printers (for Jenson and Husner of Strasburg, see p. 681 above). Sensenschmid in 1475 said that the Codex Jus- tintanus was “cut” (dnsculptus), and that he had “cut” (sculpsit) the work of Lombardus, Jn Psalteriwm. Meerman also explained the account of the invention of printing by Trithemius’ as mean- ing that, after the rejection of the first wooden types, the inventors discovered a method of casting the bodies only of all the letters of the Latin alphabet from what they called matrices, on which they cut the face of each letter; and from the same kind of matrices a method was in time discovered of casting the complete letters of sufficient hardness for the pressure they had to bear, which letters they were before—that is, when the bodies only were cast—obliged to cut. In this way Meerman explained that the Speculwm was printed in sculpto-fusi types, although in the one page of which he gives a facsimile there are nearly 1700 separate types, of which 250 alone are e’s. Schoepflin claimed the same invention for Stras- burg, and believed that all the earliest books printed there were produced by this means, Both Meerman and Schoepflin agreed that engraved metal types (Jitere in wre sculpte) were in use for many years after the invention of the punch and matrix, mention- ing among others so printed the Mainz psalter, the Catholicon of 1460, the Egeestein Bible of 1468, and even the Praceptoriwm of Nider, printed at Strasburg in 1476. But the great difficulty con- nected with the process of first casting the shanks and afterwards engraving the faces of the types has become apparent to those who have made experiments ; and it seems more probable that the terms sculpere, exsculpere, insculpere are only a figurative allusion to the first process towards producing the types, namely, the cutting of the punch, which is artistically more important to the fabrication of types than the mechanical casting,—all the more as Schoeffer in 1468 makes his Grammatica Vetus Rhythmica say, ‘‘1 am cast at

4 De Bibliotheca Vaticana, Rome, 1591, p. 412.

5 De Germanie Miraculo, Leipsic, 1710, p. 10.

6 See, for instance, W. Blades, Life of Caxton, i. 39.

7 Annales Hirsaugienses, ii. 421: ‘ Post hee inventis successerunt subtiliora, inveneruntque modum fundendi formas omnium Latini alphabeti literarum, quas ipsi matrices nominabant, ex quibus rursum eeneos sive stanneos charac-

teres fundebant, ad omnem pressuram sufficientes, quos prius manibus sculpe- pant.” 8 Origines Typographice, The Hague, 1765, Append., p. 47.

types,

HISTORICAL. |

Mainz,” an expression which could hardly be anything but a figura- tive allusion to the casting of the types.

Granting that all the earlier works of typography pre- served to us are impressions of cast-metal types, there are still differences of opinion, especially among practical printers, as to the probable methods employed to cast them. It is considered unlikely that the inventor of printing passed all at once to the perfect typography of the punch, the matrix, and the mould. Bernard ! considered that the types of the Speculum were cast in sand, as that art was certainly known to the silversmiths and trinket-makers of the 15th century ; and he accounts for the varieties obgerv- able in the shapes of various letters on the ground that several models would probably be made of each letter, and that the types, when cast by this imperfect mode, would require some touching up or finishing by hand. He ex- hibits a specimen of a word cast for him by this process which not only proves the possibility of casting types in this manner but also shows the same kind of irregularities

as those observable in the types of the Speculum.

But here again it is argued that in types cast by this or any other primitive method there would be an absence of uniformity in what founders term “height to paper.”” Some types would stand higher than others, and the low ones, unless raised, would miss the ink and not appear in the impression. The comparative rarity of faults of this kind in the Speculwm leads one to le

that, if a process of sand-casting had been adopted, the difficulty of uneven heights had been surmounted either by locking up the forme face downwards, or by perforating the types either at the time of casting or afterwards, and holding them in their places by means of a thread or wire. To this cause Ottley attributed the numerous misprints in the Speculum, to correct which would have involved the unthread- ing of every line in which an error occurred. And, as a still more striking proof that the lines were put into the forme one by one, in a piece, he shows a curious printer's blunder at the end of one page, where the whole of the last reference-line is put in upside down, thus :—

Moe was hespot slapende enve niet puetenve, *yaqides ai sigauag A "turn" of this magnitude could hardly have occurred if the letters had been set in the forme type by type. Another suggested mode is that of casting in clay moulds, by a method very similar to that used in the sand process, and resulting in similar peculiarities and variations in the

types.

Ottley, who was the chief exponent of this theory, suggested that the types were made by pouring melted lead or other soft metal into moulds of earth or plaster, after the ordinary manner used from time immemorial in casting statues of bronze and other articles of metal. But the mould thus formed could hardly avail for a second casting, as it would be scarcely possible to extract the type after casting without breaking the clay, and, even if that could be done, the shrinking of the metal in cooling would be apt to warp the mould beyond the possibility of further use. Ottley there- fore suggests that the constant renewal of the moulds could be effected by using old types cast out of them, after being touched up by the graver, as models,—a process which he thinks will account for the varieties observable in the different letters, but which would really cause such a gradual deterioration and attenua- tion in the type, as the work of casting progressed, that in the end it would leave the face of the letter unrecognizable as that with which it began. It would therefore be more reasonable to suppose that one set of modcls would be used for the preparation of all the moulds necessary for the casting of a sufficient number of types to compose a page, and for the pcriodical renewal of the moulds all through the work, and that the

variations in the types would be due, not to the gradual paring of the faces of the models, but to the different skill and exactness with which the successive moulds would be taken. It is evident that the sand and clay methods of casting types above described must be slow. The time occupied after the first engraving of the models in forming, drying, and clear- ing the moulds, in casting, extracting, touching up, and possibly perforating the types required for one page, would exceed the time required by a practised xylographer for the cutting of a page of text upon a block. But he that has gone through the trouble of casting separate movable types has a clear gain over the wood- block printer in having a fount of movable types, which, even if the metal in which they were cast were only soft lead or pewter, might be used again and again in the production of any other page of text, while the wood-block can only produce the one page which

1 Origine de VImprimerie, i. 40.

it contains. Moreover, only one hand could labour on the xylo- graphic block; but many hands could be employed in the mould- ing and casting of types, however rude they might be. Bernard states that the artist who produced for him the few sand-cast types shown in his work assured him that a workman could easily pro- duce a thousand such letters a day. He also states that, though each letter required squaring after casting, there was no need to touch up the faces.

There remains yet another suggestion as to the method in which the types of the rude school may have been produced. This may be described as a system of what the founders of sixty years ago called polytype, which is a cast or facsimile copy of an engraved block, matter in type, &e.

Lambinet,? who is responsible for the suggestion, based upon a new translation of Trithemius’s narrative, explains that this process really means an early adoption of stereotype. He thinks that the first printers may have discovered a way of moulding a page of some work—an Abecedarium—in eooling metal, so as to get a matrix- plate impression of the whole page.

Upon this matrix they would pour a liquid metal, and by the aid of a roller or cylinder press the fused matter evenly, so as to make it penetrate into all the hollows and corners of the letters. This tablet of tin or lead, being easily lifted and detached from the matrix, would then appear as a surface of metal in which the letters of the alphabet stood out reversed and in relief. These letters could easily be detached and rendered mobile by a knife or other sharp instrument, and the operation could be repeated a hundred times a day. The metal faces so produced would be fixed on wooden shanks, type high, and the fount would then be complete. Lambinet's hypothesis was endorsed by Firmin- Didot, the renowned type-founder and printer of Lambinet's day. But it is impossible to suppose that the Mainz psalter of 1457, which these writers point to as a specimen of this mode of execution, is the impression, not of type at all, but of a collection of "casts" mounted on wood.

Whatever value there may be in the above theories with regard to the movable types of the first printer, certain it is that the shape and manufacture of the types used as early as c. 1470 do not seem to have differed materially from those of the present types.

This is evident (1) from the shape of the old types which were discovered in 1878 in the bed of the river Saéne, near Lyons, opposite the site of one of the 15th-century printing houses of that city, and which there is reason to believe belonged once to one of those presses, and were used by the early printers of Lyons ; (2) from a page in Joh. Nider's Lepra Moralis, printed by Conrad Homburch at Cologne in 1476, which shows the accidental impression of a type, pulled np from its place in the course of printing by the ink-ball, and laid at length upon the face of the forme, thus leaving its exact profile indented upon the page; (3) from an entirely similar page (fol. 4>) in Liber de Laudibus ac Festis Gloriosx Virginis, Cologne, c. 1468. From the small circle appearing in the two last-mentioncd types, itis presumed that the letters were pierced laterally by a circular hole, which did not penetrate the whole thickness of the letter, and served, like the nick of modern types, to enable the compositor to tell by touch which way to set the letter in his stick. The fact that in these two cases the letter was pulled up from the forme seems to show that the line could not have been threaded.

Vine. Fineschi, Wotizie Storiche sopra la Stamwperia di Ripoli (Florence, 1781, p. 49), gives an extract from the cost-book of the Ripoli press, about 1480, by which it appears that steel, brass, copper, tin, lead, and iron wire were all used in the manufacture of types at that period?

The history and nomenclature of the earliest types are practically a continuation of the history and nomenclature of the characters figured in the earliest block-books, wood- engravings,and MSS. For instance, Gothic type was first seen about the year 1445; but it should not be forgotten that the Gothic writing, of which that type was an imita- tion, was already known and used about the second half of the 12th century. Again, the pure Roman type, which appeared about 1464, is nothing but an imitation of what in palzography is called the Caroline minuscule, a hand- writing which was already fully developed towards the end of the 8th century. Consequently, details as to the history and development of the various types properly belong to

the study of PaLmocrapuy (¢.v.). 2 Origine de V Imprimerie, Paris, 1810, 2 vols. 8vo, i. 97

3 On the above theories and types consult T. B. Reed, Old English Letter Foundries, pp. 8-26.

Poly- type.

Shape of

earliest

type.

History of the earliest

types.

Gothie.

Bastard Italian or Roman.

Roman.

Burgun- dian.

694

The broad outlines of the history of the earliest types are as follows :—

Gothic type, of the angular or pointed kind, was first used by the Haarlem printer of the Speculum, Donatus, &c. (see specimen No. 1, taken from the British Museum copy of the Speewlwn Humane Salvationis, mixed Latin edition), presumably ¢. 1445. An entirely similar but larger type (No. 2, taken from the British Museum copy of Ludovicus [Pontanus] de Roma, Singularia) was used, presumably by the same printer, ¢. 1465-1470. Gothic type appeared in Germany as a church type in 1454, in the 31-line indulgence, pre- sumably printed by Johan Gutenberg at Mainz (No. 8, from the Gottingen copy), and in the 30-line indulgence (No. 4, taken from the British Museum copy), printed by Peter Schoeffer at Mainz. Type No. 3 was also used about the same time for the 36-line Bible and type No. 4 for the 42-line Bible. Two much larger Gothic types appeared in the psalter of 1457, published by Fust and Schoeffer (see Bernard, Origine, pl. vii.). In Italy Gothic type appears in 1468 (No. 5, taken from the British Museum copy of Cicero, De Oratore published at Rome by Ulr. Hahn, 15th December 1468, in small Roman type, with imprint in Gothic), but in a more rounded form ; it is practically the ordinary Italian writing influ- enced by the Gothic. In France Gothic began to be used in 1478 ; in England it — first in Caxton’s type about the year 1480.! It was employed extensively in a great many of the earliest presses all over Europe, and continued to be used largely at all times, especially for Bibles, law books, royal proclamations, &c., and even to this day it is the national character of Germany. It is now usually called lettre de forme, black letter or English in English- speaking countries, lettre Flamand in Holland, and fractur in Germany.

Bastard Italian or bastard Roman was introduced in 1454 at Mainz in the 31-line (No. 6) and 80-line (No. 7) indulgence. It is also called lettre de somnve, some think from the Swimma of Thomas Aquinas, printed in the type of the Bible of 1462 by Fust and Schoeffer. Varieties of this kind of

type were, like the Gothic, much used by the earliest printers, as, for instance, the printer of the 1460 Catholicon, t.e., by Mentelin of Strasburg, e. 1460, and by Ulrich Zell at Cologne, ¢. 1466, &c. In England it appeared in the first three books printed (1478, 1479) at Oxford (No. 8, taken from the British Museum copy of Jerome's Haupositio in Simbolum Apostolorwm, wrongly dated 1468 for 1478).

Roman type, the Caroline minuscule of paleography, was first used in Germany about 1464, at Strasburg, by the printer whose fount of type is known by a peculiarly shaped R, and who on that account is usually called ''the R printer" (No. 9, taken from the British Museum copy of Durandus, Rationale, of which the Basel library possesses a copy which was bought in 1464).? In Italy it appears in 1465 at Subiaco (see Bernard, pl. xii., No. 19), at Rome in 1467 (op. eit., pl. xii., No. 20), but in all its purity at Venice in 1469, used by Johannes of Spires (op. eit., pl. xii., No. 23), and at Paris in 1470 (op. ezt., pl. xiii, No. 25). In England it was not used before 1518, when Richard Pynson printed Pace's Oratio in Pace Nuperrima (see facsimile in Reed's Type Foundries, p. 92).

Burgundian type, or gros batarde or seeretary, was first used about 1470-72 by Colard Mansion at Bruges (No. 10, taken from the British Museum copy of La Controversie de Noblesse, e. 1471-72). With a somewhat similar type (No. 11, taken from the British Museum copy of the Reewyell) William Caxton is presumed to have printed, likewise at Bruges, a set of five books, of which the Reewyell of the History of Troye, a translation of a work by Raoul le Feévre, is the best known and was probably printed ¢. 1471.3 To this same class belong the first type (No. 12, from the British Museum copy of the Dietes) used in England by William Caxton for the printing of Dietes and Sayings of the Philosophers (18th November 1477), and that used by the printer of St Albans (No. 13, taken from the Cambridge university library copy of Aug. Dactus, Elegancie). It

Defadli want PAtnocalat Ot prime mpto «= it furtit- DI

No. 1.—Speculum type, c. 1445 (2). No. 2.—Pontanus type, c. 1470 (%).

VY. Hereatur

Aptorz ei? ac Aiicte b? excel fib; crismib;

“ Nos. 3 and 6.—Mainz 31-line indulgence, 1454.

ifereatur « aplon. efg ac atide exceffiby crimini

Nos. 4 and 7,—Mainz 30-line indulgence, 1454.

(6) (7)

1 See Blades, Life of Caxton, pl. xvii. 2 See Jules Philippe, L’Imprimerie & Paris, p. 219. 3 Cf. Blades, Life of Caxton.

TY Peek Ara eg

[HISTORICAL,

thbri.g noBlelfe iad ajwicam. x Bonne

No. 5.—Cicero, De Oratore, 1468. No. 10.—Controversie de Noblesse, c. 1471-72.

Duis eft qui Remifimus de mevdius fe dif dinibo. Nae d dat affectum antonomafice

No. 8.—Jerome’s Expositio (1468), 1478, No. 9.—Durandus, c. 1464.

J lemeathcles. na of Qtalaleol Ale generacion and, fF Heth forie & Angythiemenp Cloes flow QUE

No. 11.—Recuyell of the Hist. of Troye, No. 12.—Dictes and Sayings, ec. 1471. 1477.

was an imitation of the manuscript hand ee of the English and Bur oka scribes fatue éabuno plebie: 8 rofiess nomiors

of the 15th century, and, after having 0 figured for a long time in several of the A a. early London and provincial presses, was 7U0 Wanmbale penu

about 1534 entirely superseded by the No. 18.—Aug. Dactus, Ele- English black letter. To this class of paren, 1478,

type belong also the later lettre de eivilité (c. 1570), the script (lettre coulée, lettre de finance, Dutch gesehreven schrift), set court, base secre-

tary, and running secretary types.

On the types before 1500, consult also the facsimiles in Holtrop's Mon. Typ. des Pays-Bas, The Hague, 1868; R. O. Hawkins, First Books and Printers of the Fifteenth Century, New York, 1884; William Blades, The Life of Caxton, London, 1861-63 ; Bernard, Origine de l' Imprimerie, Paris, 1858, vol. i., plates iii.~~xiii. ; Placidus Braun, Notitia de Libris ab Artis Typogr. Inventione usque ad Annum 14,79 Impressis, Augsburg, 1788; H. Noel Humphreys, Hist. of the Art of Print~~ ing, fol., London, 1867. The types after 1500 can best be learned from the catalogues of type-founders, among which those of Messrs Enschedé of Haarlem occupy a foremost place. Of others we may mention—Indice dei Caratteri nella Stampa Vaticana, 4to, Rome, 1628; Epreuves des Caractéeres qui se trouvent chez Claude Lameste, 4to, Paris, 1742; Eprewves des Car. de la Fonderie de Claude Mozet, 8vo, Nantes, 1754; Les Car. de ' Imprimerie par Fournier le Jeune, 8vo, Paris, 1764: Proefvan Letteren, Bloemen, &c., van Ploos van Amstel, 8vo, Amster- dain, 1767; Kpreuve de Car. de Jacques Francois Rosart, 8vo, Brussels, 1771; Schriften… bey J. H. Prentzler, 4to, Frankfort-on-Main, 1774; Epreuves des Car. de la Fond. de J. L. Joannis, 8vo, Paris, 1776; Epreuves des Car. de la Fond. de J. L. de Boubers, 8vo, Brussels, 1777 ; Proeve van Letteren welke gegooten worden door J. de Groot, 8vo, The Hague, 1787 ; Pantographie, by Edmund Fry, 8vo, London, 1799; and Manuale T'ypographico, by G. Bodoni, 4to, Parma, 1818.

Subsequent to 1500.

Though the Cologne Chronicle of 1499 denies to Mainz Printers

the honour of the invention of the art of printing, it was a

right in asserting that, after it had been brought there from Holland, it became much more masterly and exact, and more and more artistic. During

the first half century of printing a good many printers distinguished themselves by the beauty, excellence, and literary value of their productions. We may mention as such :—Johan Fust and Peter Schoeffer at Mainz; Johan Mentelin and Heinrich Eggestein at Strasburg; Ulrich Zell at Cologne ; Sweyn- heym and Pannarts at Subiaco and at Rome; Nicolas Jenson at Venice ; Anton Koberger at Nuremberg; Kete- laer and De Leempt at Utrecht; Johan Veldener at Louvain, Utrecht, and Kuilenburg; Gerard Leeu at Gouda; Johan of Westphalia at Louvain; and William Caxton (g.v.) at Westminster.

Very soon the demand for books increased, and with it came a reduction in their prices. This caused a decline in the execution of printing, which begins to be appreciable about 1480 in some localities, and may be said to have become general towards the end of the 15th century. At all times, however, we find some printers raise their art to a great height by the beauty of their types and the literary excellence of their'productions, Among the later printers we may mention the Aldi of Venice (1490 to 1597; see

by

HISTORICAL. |

MANvTIUS, vol. xv. p. 512); G. B. Bodoni of Parma (1768- 1813 ; see vol. iii. p. 849) ; John Amerbach at Basel (1492- 1516); John Froben at Basel (1496-1527 ; see vol. ix. p. 791); John Baskerville at Birmingham (1750-1775 ; see vol. ili, p. 421); the house of Wechel, first at Paris (¢. 1530-1572), afterwards at Frankfort; Christopher Plantin at Antwerp (1554-1589), but continued long after under the firm Oficina Plantiniana (see vol. xix. p. 17 6); the Elzevirs, first at Leyden, afterwards at Amsterdam (1580-1680 ; 'see vol. viii. p. 156); Antoine Verard at. Paris (1485-1513) ; Josse Bade at Paris (1495-1535 ; see Bapivs, vol. iii. p. 228); and the Estiennes at Paris (1502-1598 ; see STEPHENS, vol. xxii. p. 534),

History of Modern Types.

The Italic type is said to be an imitation of the handwriting of Petrarch, and was introduced by Aldus Manutius of Venice for the purpose of printing his projected small editions of the classics, The cutting of it was entrusted to

Francesco da Bologna, an artist who is presumed to be identical with the painter Francesco Francia or Raibolini. The fount is a ‘‘lower case” only, the capitals being Roman in form. It contains a large number of tied letters, to imitate handwriting, but is quite free from contractions and liga- tures. It was first used in the Virgil of 1500. Aldus produced six different sizes between 1501 and 1558. It was counterfeited almost immediately in Italy, at Lyons, and elsewhere. Originally it was called Venetian or Aldine, but subsequently Italic type, except in Germany and Holland, where it is called “cursive.” The Watians also adopted the Latin name ‘‘characteres cursivi seu cancellarii.” In England it was first used by Wynkyn de Worde in Wakefield’s Oratio in 1524. The character was at first intended and used for the entire text of classical works. When it became more general, it was employed to distinguish portions of a book not properly belonging to the work, such as introductions, prefaces, indexes, notes, the text itself being in Roman. Later it was used in the text for quotations, and finally served the double part of emphasizing certain words in some works, and in others, chiefly translations of the Bible, of marking words not rightly forming a part of the text.

Greek type (minuscules) first occurs in Cicero, De Offctis printed at Mainz in 1465 by Fust and Schoeffer. The fount used is rude and imperfect, many of the letters being ordinary Latin. In the same year Sweynheym and Pannarts used a Sood Greek letter for some of the quotations in their edition of Lactanttus (sce, for in- stance, leaves lla, 19a, 36a, 139, 140) ; but the supply was evidently short at first, as some of the larger quotations in the first part of the book were left blank to be filled in by hand. The first

book wholly printed in Greek minuscules was the Grammar of:

Lascaris, by Paravisinus, at Milan in 1476, in types stated to have been eut and cast by Demetrius of Crete. The fount contains breathings, accents, and some ligatures. The headings to the ehapters are wholly in capitals. The Anthologia Greca of Las- caris was printed at Florence in 1494 wholly in Greek capitals (littere majusculz), and it is stated in the preface that they were designed after the genuine models of antiquity to be found in the inscriptions on medals, marbles, &c. But as late as 1493 Greek type was not common, for in that year the Veuice printer Symon Bevilaqua issued

Tibullus, Catullus, and Propertius with blanks left in the commentary for the Greek quotations. In England Greck letters appeared for the first time in 1519 in W. de Worde's edition of Whitenton's Grammatica, where a few words are in- troduced cut in wood. Cast types were used at Cambridge in Galen's De Tempcramentis, translated by Linaere, and printed by Siberch in 1521, who styles himself the first Greek printer in England; but the quotations in the Galen are very sparse, and Siberch is not known to have printed any entire book in Greek. The first printer who possessed Greek types in any quantity was Reginald Wolfe, who held a royal patent as printer in Greek, Latin, and Hebrew, and printed in 1548 two Homilies of Chryso- stom, edited by Sir John Chcke, the first Greek lecturer at Cambridge. In Edinburgh, in 1563, and as late as 1579, the space for Greek words was left blank in printing, to be filled in by hand. In 1632 Cambridge applied to Oxford for the loan of a Greek fount to print a Greek Testament, and the same university made an offer in 1700 for the purchase of a fount of the king's Greek at Paris, but withdrew on the French Academy insisting as a con- dition that every work printed should bear the imprint '' characteribus Grecis e typographeo regio Parisiensi." It should not be forgotten that the large number of ligatures in the Greek of that day made the production of a fount a serious business. The Oxford Augustin Greek comprised no fewer than 354 matrices, the

1 These paragraphs on the various types are for the most part taken from T. B. Reed's History of the Old English Letter Foundries, London, 1887, p. 50 sq.

great primer 456, and even one fount showed 776 different sorts. The Dutch founders effected a gradual reduction of the Greek typographical ligatures. Early in the 19th eentury a new fashion of Greek, for which Porson was sponsor and furnished the drawings, was introdueed, and has remained the prevailing form to this day,

The first Hebrew types are generally supposed tc have appeared Hebrew. in 1475 in Petrus Niger's Tractatus contra Perfidos Judzos (leaf 10), printed by

Conrad Fyner at Esslingen. De Rossi states that a Hebrew work in four folio volumes entitled Arba Turim of Rabbi Jacob ben Asher, was printed in 1475 at Pieve di Sacco in Austrian Italy, while in the same year, a few months earlier, Salomon Jarchi's . Comment. on the Pentateuch appeared at Reggio in Italy, printed in the Rabbinical character. Numerous other Hebrew works followed before 1488, in which year the first entire Hebrew Bible was printed, with points, at Soncino, by a family of German Jews. The first English book in which any quantity of Hebrew type was used was Dr Rhys's Cambro-Brytannicew Cymreceve Lingus Institu- tiones, printed by Thomas Orwin in 1592, though already in 1524 Greek characters, but cut in wood, were used by W. de Worde in Wakefield's Oratio. But the Hebrew fount made use of in Walton's Polyglott in 1657 was probably the first important fount cut and cast in England, though there were as yet no matrices there for Rabbinical Hebrew. In the beginning of the 18th century Amster- dam was the centre of the best Hebrew printing in Europe.

The first book printed in Arabie types is said to be a Diwrnale Arabie. Grecorum Arabum, printed at Fano in Italy in 1514.2 Two years later P. P. Porrus's Polyglott Psalter, comprising the Arabic version, was printed at Genoa ; and two years later a Koran in Arabic is said to have been printed at Venice. In 1505 an Arabic Vocabulary at Granada had the words printed in Gothic letters with the Arabic points placed over them; and in other presses where there were no Arabic types the language was expressed in Hebrew letters or cut in wood. De Guignes and othcrs mention a fount of Arabic used by Gromors in Paris in 1539-40 to print Postel's Grammar. In England some Arabic words were introduced in Wakefield's Oratio of 1524, but apparently cut in wood. In Minsheu's Ductor in Linguas, 1617, the Arabic words are printed in Italie chavacters. Laud's gift of Oriental MSS. to Oxford in 1635, and the appoint- ment of an Arabic lecturer, were the first real incentives to the cultivation of the language by English scholars. Previous to this it is stated that the Raphelengius Arabic press at Leyden had been purchased by the English Orientalist, William Bedwell; but, if it was brought to England, it does not appear to have been im- mediately made use of. The Arabic words in Thomas Greave's Oratio de Lingue Arabice Utilitate, printed at Oxford in 1639, were written in by hand.

Syriac type, probably cut in wood, first appeared in Postel's Syriac. Linguarum XII. Alphabeta, printed in Paris in 1538; but the charaeters are so rude-in form and execution as to be searcely legible. In 1555, however, Postel assisted in eutting the' punehes for the Syriac Peshito New Testament, printed at Vienna in 4to, the first portion of the Scriptures, and apparently the first book, printed in that language. In 1569-72 Plantin at Antwerp included the Syriac New Testament in his Polyglott, and reissued it in a separate form in 1574. In England Syriac was usually expressed in the earlier works in Hebrew characters. But in 1652, when the prospectus and pre- liminary specimen of Walton's Polyglott were issued, we find Syriac type in use.

Of the Armenian character the press of the Vatican possessed a Armen- good fount in 1591, when Angelo Roccha showed a specimen in ian. his Bibliotheca Apostolica Vaticana. A psalter is said to have been printed at Rome in 1565, and Rowe Mores mentions doubtfully a liturgy printed at Cracow in 1549. Armenian printing was practised in Paris in 1633 ; but the Armenian bishops, on applying to France for assistance in printing an Armenian Bible in 1662, were refused, and went to Rome, where, as early as 1636, the press of the Propa- ganda had published a specimen of its Armenian matrices. The patriareh, after fifteen months' residence in Rome, removed to Amsterdam, where he established an Armenian press, and printed the Bible in 1666, which was followed in 1668 by a separate edition of the New Testament. In 1669 the press was set up at Marseilles, where it continued for a time, and was ultimately removed to Con- stantinople. In England the first Armenian type was that presented by Dr Fell to Oxford in 1667. The alphabet given in the pro- legomena of Walton's Polyglott was cut in wood.

Of Ethiopic the earliest type appeared in Potken's Psalter and Ethiopic. Song of Solomon, printed at Rome in 1513. The work was reprinted at Cologne in 1518 in Potken's Polyglott Psalter. In 1548 the New Testament was printed at Rome by some Abyssinian priests. The press of the Propaganda issued a specimen of its fount in 1631, and again in Kireher's Prodromus Coptus in 1636. Erpenius at Leyden had an Ethiopie fount, whieh in 1626 was acquired by the Elzevirs. Usher attempted to procure the fount for England ; but, his attempt failing, punches were eut and matrices

prepared by the London founders for the London Polyglott, which showed the Psalms, Canticles, and New Testament in the Ethiopic version.

2 See Panzer, vii. 2.

Of Coptic the press of the Propaganda possessed a fount, and a specimen was issued in 1636, in which year also Kircher's Prodromus Coptus appeared from the same press. In England David Wilkins's edition of the New Testament was printed in 1716 from Coptic types cast with matrices which Dr Fell had presented to Oxford in 1667. The alphabets shown in the introduction and prolegomena to the London Polyglott of 1655 and 1657 were cut in wood.

Of Samaritan the press of the Propaganda had a fount in 1636, and the Paris Polyglott, completed in 1645, contained the entire Pentateuch in type the punches and matrices of which had been specially prepared under Le Jay's direction. The fount used for the London Polyglott in 1657 is admitted to have been an English production, and was probably cut under the supervision of Usher.

With Slavonic type a psalter was printed at Cracow as early as 1491, and reprinted in Montenegro in 1495. The only Slavonic fount in England was that given by Dr Fell to Oxford, and this, Mores states, was replaced in 1695 by a fount of the more modern Russian character, purchased probably at Amsterdam. The Oratio Donvinica of 1700 gives a specimen of this fount, but renders the Russian. Hieronymian version in copper-plate. Modern Slavonic, better

known as Russian, is said to have appeared first in portions of the Old Testament printed at Prague in 1517-19. Ten years later there was Russian type in Venice. A Russian press was established at Stockholm in 1625, and in 1696 there were matrices in Amsterdam, from which came the types used in Ludolph's Grammatica Russica, printed at Oxford in that year, and whence also, it is said, the types were procured which furnished the first St Petersburg press, estab- lished in 1711 by Peter the Great. Mores notes that in 1778 there was no Russian type in England, but that Cottrell was at that

time engaged in preparing a fount. It does not appear that this project was carried out, and the earliest Russian in England was cut by Dr Fry from alphabets in the Vocabularia, collected and published for the empress of Russia in 1786-89. This fount appeared in the Pantographia in 1799. Etruscan. A fount of the Etruscan character cut by William Caslon about 1733 for Swinton of Oxford was apparently the first produced. Fournier in 1766 showed an alphabet engraved in metal or wood. In 1771 the Propaganda published a specimen of their fount, and Bodoni of Parma in 1806 exhibited a third in his Oratio Dominica.

Runic types were first used at Stockholm in a Runic and Swedish Alphabetarium, printed in 1611. The fount, which was cast at the expense of the king, was afterwards acquired by the univer- sity. About the same time Runic type was used at Upsala and at Copenhagen. Voskens of Amsterdam had matrices about the end of that century, and it was from Holland that Francis Junius is supposed to have procured the matrices which in 1677 he pre- sented to Oxford. ‘This fount appears in the Oratio Dominica of 1700, and in Hickes’s Thesawrus, 1708-5, and it remained the only one in England.

Matrices of Gothic type were presented to Oxford by Francis Junius in 1677, and a fount of them was used for the Oratio Dominica of 1700 and in Hickes’s Thesaurus. A different fount was used for Chamberlayne’s Oratio Dominica, printed at Amsterdam in 1715. Caslon cut a fount which appeared in his first specimen in 1734, This and the Oxford fount were the only two in England in 1820.

Founts of Icelandic, Swedish, and Danish were included in Junius’s gift to Oxford in 1677, and were, perhaps, specially pre- pared in Holland. The first-named is shown in the Oratio Dominica of 1700 and in Hickes’s Thesaurus. Printing had been practised in Iceland since 1531, when a Breviary was printed at Hoolum, in types rudely cut, it is alleged, in wood. In 1574, however, metal types were provided, and several works produced. After a period of decline, printing was revived in 1778, and in 1810 Sir George M‘Kenzie reported that the Hoolum press possessed eight founts of type, of which two were Roman, and the remainder of the common

Icelandic character, which, like the Danish and Swedish, bears a close resemblance to the German.

For the Anglo-Saxon language the first type was cut by John Day in 1567, under the direction of Archbishop Parker, and appeared in Alfric's Paschal Homily in that year and in the /fredi Res Gestze of Asser Menevensis in 1574. Anglo-Saxon type was used by Browne in 1617, in Minsheu's Ductor in Linguas ; and Haviland, who printed the second edition of that work in 1626, had in 1623 made use of the character in Lisle's edition of Ailfric's Homily.

The first fount of Irish character was that presented by Queen Elizabeth to O'Kearney in 1571, and used to print the Catechism which appeared in that year in Dublin, from the press of Franckton. But the fount is only partially Irish, many of the letters being ordinary Roman or Italic. It was used in several works during the early years of the 17th century, and as late as 1652 in Godfrey Daniel's Christian Doctrine, printed in Dublin. The Irish seminaries abroad were better supplied with Irish type. A new type was cut by Moxon, and appeared in 1681 in Boyle's New Testament, printed by Robert Everingham.

The earliest specimen of music type occurs in Higden's Poly- chronicon, printed by De Worde at Westminster in 1495. The square notes appear to have been formed of ordinary quadrats, and

Coptic.

Samari- tan.

Slavonic.

Runic,

Gothic.

Scandi- navian.

Anglo- Saxon.

Trish.

Music.

i? Pr GR AY HY

Jiguratus). Before 1550 several European presses followed Petrucci’s

[HISTORICAL,

the staff-lines of metal rules imperfectly joined. In Caxton’s edi- tion of the same work in 1482 the space had been left to be filled up by hand. The plain chant in the Mainz psalter of 1490, printed in two colours, was probably cut in wood. Hans Froschauer of Augsburg printed music from wooden blocks in 1473, and the notes in Burtius’s Opusculwm Musices, printed at Bologna in 1487, appear to have been produced in the same manner; while at Lyons the missal printed by Matthias Hus in 1485 had the staff only printed, : the notes being intended to be filled in by hand. About 1500 a

musical press was established at Venice by Ottavio Petrucci, at which were produced a series of mass-books with lozenge-shaped notes, each being cast complete with a staff-line. In 1513 he re- moved to Fossombrone, and obtained a patent from Leo X. for his invention of types for the sole printing of figurative song (cantus

example, and music type was used, among other places, at Augs- burg in 1506 and 1511, Parma in 1526, Lyons in 1532, and Nurem- berg in 1549. In 1525 Pierre Hautin cut punches of lozenge-shaped music at Paris. Round notes were used at Avignon in 1532, In England, after its first use, music-printing did not become general till 1550, when Grafton printed Marbecke’s Book of Common Prayer, ‘‘noted” in movable type, the four staff-lines being printed in red and the notes in black. There are only four different sorts of notes used,—three square and one lozenge. About 1660 the de- tached notes hitherto employed began to give place to the ‘‘new tyed note,” by which the heads of sets of quavers could be joined. But at the close of the 17th century music-printing from type be- came less common, on

account of the introduction of stamping and engraving plates for the purpose.

Printing for the blind (compare vol. iii. p. 826) was first intro- Printiz duced in 1784 by Valentin Haiiy, the founder of the asylum for for the blind children in Paris. He made use of a large script character, blind, from which impressions were taken on a prepared paper, the im- pressions being so deeply sunk as to leave thcir marks in strong relief and legible to the touch. Hatiy's pupils not only read in this way, but executed their own typography, and in 1786 printed an account of their institution and labours as a specimen of their press. The first school for the blind in England was opened in Liverpool in 1791, but printing in raised characters was not successfully ac- complished till 1827, when Gall of the Edinburgh asylum printed the Gospel of St John from angular types. Alston, the treasurer of the Glasgow asylum, introduced the ordinary Roman capitals in relief, and this system was subsequently improved upon by the addition of the lower-case letters by Dr Fry, the type-founder, whose specimen gained the prize of the Edinburgh Society of Arts in 1837. Several rival systems have competed in England for adoption, of which the most important are those of Lucas, Frere, Moon, Braille, Carton, and Alston; the last-named, as perfected by Dr Fry, seems likely to become the recognized method of print- ing for the blind in all European countries.

'As regards initials in the earliest printed books, see above, p. 686. Initi The trouble and cost involved in the use of the initial director early suggested the use of wood-cut initials, and Erhard Ratdolt of Venice, about 1475, is generally supposed to have been the first printer to introduce the litere# florcntes, called also Icttres towrneures, or typt tornatissimi, which eventually superseded the hand-painted initials, Caxton introduced one or two kinds in 1484. Among the earliest to be used are the so-called Lombardic initials or capitals. The more elaborate initials, such as those used in the Mainz indulgences and psalter, by Aldus at Venice, by Johann Schoeffer at Mainz in 1518, by Tory and the Estiennes at Paris, by Froben at Basel, and by the other great printers of their day, were known as lettres griscs. Besides these, the ordinary "two-line letters" or large plain capitals came into use; and these were generally cast, whilst the ornamental letters were for the most part engraved on wood or metal.

Type ornaments and flowers began, like the initials, with the Orna illuminators, and were afterwards cut on wood or metal. The first ments printed ornament or vignette is supposed to be the scutum or arms and of Fust and Schoeffer in their edition of the Bible of 1462. There flowers is no vignette in the Subiaco Lactantius of 1465 (as stated by Mr Reed, Letter Foundries, p. 82). In Holtrop's Monum. Typogr. des Pays-Bas may be seen borders used by some of the earliest printers of Holland (1475-1490) which would not look bad even in the present time. Caxton in 1490 used ornamental pieces to form the border for his Fifteen O's. At the same time the Paris printers engraved still more elaborate border pieces. At Venice entire frames were engraved in one piece, while Aldus as early as 1495 used tasteful head-pieces cut in artistic harmony with his lettres griscs. Early in the 16th century we observe detached ornaments and flourishes which have evidently been cast from a matrix.

Literature.—Besides the works of Berjeau, Bernard, Blades, Hawkins, Hessels, Holtrop, Noel Humphreys, Koehler, Jules Philippe, T. B. Reed, Sotheby, Weigel, &c., already mentioned, consult also Bigmore and Wyinan, A Biblio- graphy of Printing, London, 1880; Geo. Wolfg. Panzer, Annales Typog., Nurem- berg, 1793, &c.; Lud. Hain, Repertorium Bibliog., Stuttgart, 1826-38; Holtrop, Cat. Librorum Sec. XVo Impressorum in Bibl. Regia Hagana, The Hague, 1856; M. F. A. G. Campbell, Ann. de la Typog. Néerlandaise au XVe Siécle, The Hague, 1874; Rob. Sinker, A Cat. of the XV. Century Printed Books in the Library of

PRACTICAL. |

Trinity College, Cambridge, Cambridge, 1876; W. Th. Lowndes, Bibliographer's Manual, ed. by Henr. G. Bohn, London, 1858, &.; J. C. Brunet, Manuel du Libraire, Paris, 1860 (four earlier editions); Th. F. Dibdin, Bibliotheca Spenceriana, London, 1814, &c., and his other works; Ennen, Katalog der Incunabeln in der Stadt-Bibliothek zu K6ln ; Schoepflin, Vindicie Typog., 1760; Meerman, Origines Typog., The Hague, 1765; Dupont, Hist. de V Impr., Paris, 1869 ; Firmin-Didot, Hist. de la Typog., Paris, 1882; E. Duverger, Hist. de Invention de UImpr., Paris, 1840; P. Lambinet, Origine de l'Impr., Paris, 1810; Ch. Ruelens, La Légende de St Servats, Brussels, 1873, 8vo; J. P. A, Madden, Lettres d'un Biblio- graphe,

Paris, 1868-78; Wetter, Krit, Gesch. der Erfindung der Buchdrucker- kunst, Mainz, 1836; A. de Vries, Eclaircissemens sur U Histoire del' Inv. de UImpr., The Hague, 1843; Jos. Ames, Typogr. Antiquities (augmented by W. Herbert), London, 1785-90; T. C. Hansard, Typographia, London, 1825; Thomas, Hist, of Printing in America, Albany, 1874; Th. L. Devinne, The Inv. of Print., London, 1877; W. Skeen, Early Typography, Colombo, 1872; Sam. Palmer, A General Hist. of Print., London, 1732; W. Young Ottley, Inquiry concerning the Inv. of Print., London, 1863; Henry Bradshaw, .A Classified Index of the 15th Century Books in the Collection of the late M. J. de Meyer, London, 1870; Id., Hist. of the Founts of Type and Woodcut Devices used by Printers in Holland in the Fifteenth Century, London, 1871; Id., The Printer of the Historia 8S. Albani, Cambridge, 1868; A. Von der Linde, Haarlem Legend, London, 1870; Id., Gutenberg, Stuttgart, 1881; Id., Gesch. der Erfind. der Buchdruckerkunst, Berlin, 1886 ; Schaab, Gesch. der Erfind. der Buchdruckerk., Mainz, 1830; K, Falkenstein, Gesch. der Buchdruckerk., Leipsic, 1856; Lorck, Hand. der Gesch. der Buchdruckerk., Leipsic, 1882; K. Faulmann, Iilustr. Gesch. der Buchdruck- erk., Vienna, 1882; M. Denis, Wiens Buchdruckergesch. bis 1560, Vienna, 1782 ; C. R. Hildeburn, A Centwry of Printing—The Issues of the Press in Pennsylvania, 1684-178), Philadelphia, 1887 ; and J. Garcia Icazbalceta, Bibliog. Mexicana del Siglo XVI., Mexico, 1887. The titles of other works on the invention, progress, and process of printing, &c., may be learned from the lists of books on such subjects in the works already quoted. ier ele) Eel

Part IT.—Practicat.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of im- pressing letters, characters, or figures on paper, cloth, or other material, the definition being based on the etymology (Old Fr. empreindre, from Lat. imprimere). Technically the same definition might be applied to such arts as those of calico and oileloth print- ing, and even of moulding, embossing, coining, and stamping ; but in point of fact these are never understood when the word "printing" is employed. There is also printing without pressure, such as photographic printing. The use of a pigment or ink must be regarded as an indispensable element. The application of the term is therefore confined to the use of pressure and a pigment for literary and

pictorial purposes. As thus defined, printing includes three entirely different processes—not inaptly called the polygraphic arts—viz., chalcography or copperplate printing (compare ENGRAV- ING, vol. viii. p. 489 sg.), LirHogRrApPHy (g.v.) or chemical stone- printing, and typography or letterpress printing, The last-named is that to which the present article is confined.

The difference between the three methods lies essentially in the nature or conformation of the surface that is inked, and which afterwards gives a reproduction or image in reverse on the material to be impressed. In copperplate printing the whole of a flat sur- face is inked, and a portion of the ink sinks into an incision or trench, in which it still remains after the surface is cleansed. When pressure is brought to bear, this ink is transferred to the paper, giving an impression of a line. In lithographic printing the flat surface is protected except at certain places, where it is slightly coated with the ink, which practically leaves the stone ee level, but also marks a line when pressure is brought to bear.

n typography the printing surface is in relief. It alone receives ink, the remainder being protected by its lower level. Any kind of printing done from a relief surface belongs to letterpress print- ing, such as a woodcut, a casting in metal, india-rubber, celluloid, xylonite, &. (or “‘stereotype”), or a deposition by electricity (or ‘electrotype”’). The typographic method requires a surface that is more difficult to form than either of the other two. In litho- graphy the surface may be obtained by merely writing or drawing on the stone ; in copperplate printing the line may be immediately incised into or seratched on the plate ; but for letterpress printing the surface between the lines in relief has to be cut away. Hence the tediousness of wood-engraving, in which all the surface of the block has to be removed except those parts that are to be printed from and whieh form the black lines in the impression ; and the conformation of a type surface is similar.

Typography, however, has many compensating advantages. Im- pressions are taken with much greater facility. The inking appli- ance glides over the relief lines to be printed from, whereas it would cling to the entire surface of the stone or the metal ; hence mueh greater pressure would be required in these cases. The unprintable part of the stone in lithography has to be

damped, so as to re el the ink ; the same portion has to be inked and then cleaned off in copperplate printing ; but in letterpress printing the ink only that has to be transferred to the paper needs to be applied to the type. When the design has been drawn on the stone or scratched into the copper, the result does not admit of any further application beyond that at first contemplated. But in letterpress printing the surface may be of a composite character. It may be formed of single pieces representing the several letters, and these, when once formed, may be employed in endless combinations. Only by such means are eheap newspapers and books possible. Before the in- vention of typography (as in the East to the present day), the dif-

ferent pages of a book were printed from wooden blocks, cut after the manner of a wood-engraving. Blocks of this kind are of no use for printing after their first purpose has been fulfilled. They must necessarily be made very slowly and with much labour. Th forming a page of a book, on the other hand, by the typographic method there need (excluding necessary wear and tear) only be the cost of ‘‘composing” the types and of “‘distributing” them into their proper receptacles, from which they may be re-taken many times to form other compositions.

Types: their Material Characteristics,

Exclusive of such printing surfaces as wood-bloeks and casts, the Book- letters, marks, and signs with which letterpress printing is executed work are called types, a proportioned quantity of each of the letters of fount.

the alphabet in any one body or face forming a fount. A book- work fount contains single letters, diphthongs, ligatures (such as ff, fl), accented letters, figures, fractions, points, reference marks, dashes or metal rules (as), leaders (as …...), braces (——.), and signs (as & £). It also includes quadrats,—pieces of metal of various widths, which do not print, but are used to compensate for the shortness of occasional lines, as at the close of a paragraph— and spaces, which separate words and letters. There are thus about 226 separate characters in every ordinary English book-work fount.

The table used by type-founders to regulate the number of each Bill of The sorts are type.

of the several sorts in a fount is called a bill of type. supplied by English type-founders in certain definite proportions, depending upon the number of lower-case m’s. A bill of 3000 m’s usually contains the following :—

[Lower-case.

Figures, &c. Capitals, Small Caps. m 3,000 | , 4,500 | A 700 | A 450 a 9,000 | ; 800 | B 450 | B 270 b 2,000 | : 600 | C 500 | c 850 c 4,000]. 8,000 | D 550 | D 350 dy 2.35 06,000) |< 1,000 | E 750 | B 450 e … 14,000 | ? 300 | F 450 | F 800 fay) 18 0000T 200 | G 450 | G 270 g 2,000 | ’ 800 | H 450 | H 300 h 6,000 | (400 | I 900 | I 450 i 9,000 | [200 | J 300 | J 200 j 500 | * 250 | K 3800 | K 200 k 800 | + 100 | L 550 | L 800 1 5,000 | + 100 | M . 650 | M 300 n 8,000 | § 100 | N 550 | N 350) 8,000 | || 100 | O 550 | o 850 p 2,400 | 4 70 | P 500 | P 270 q 600 Q 200 | Q 120 r 7,000 | 1 700 | R 500 | R 330 8” cer “8000512 600 | S 600 | s 850 t _… 10,000: } 8 600 | T 800 | T 420 u … 4,500 | 4 500 | U 850 | U 240 v 1,500 | 5 500 | V 350 | Vv 200 w 2,500 | 6 500 | W 550 | w 270 x 500 | 7 500 | X 20GN FEA. x 120 y 2,500 | 8 500 | Y 850 | y 200 be 300 | 9 500 | Z 150 | z 120 & 300 | 0 700 | x, 100 | az 60 ff 400 | £ 200; i. 100 | @ 60 | fi 500

fl 300 | é 200;4 . 150 SPACES. ffl 200 | & 200}4 . 150 | Thick 20,000 ffi 800 | a 100 | # 150 | Middle 8,000 ee 200 | é 100 Thin 8,000 ce 100 4 50 | Hair 3,000 — 500 | All other 100 | % 50 | Em qds. 3,000 — 150 | accents 4 50 | En qds. 6,000 —— 100] each 2 50 | —~~ea. 20

80 | & @, ¥, Ib, 50 | § i 25

100 each é 50 | -—-“““ 25 ei ce 100 | a. 30 | 2 50 | ——+._ 25

Large quads, one-tenth of fount. Italic, one-tenth of Roman.

Such a fount would weigh about 750 tb if of piea size, 480 tb if long primer, 400 fb if bourgeois, 330 fb brevier, 280 Ib minion, 220 tb nonpareil, The numbers of the respective letters are based on the requirements of the English language ;! other languages of course require different proportions.

In Latin and French, for instance, q and u would be deficient, h in excess, and w needless. The number of the respective letters may be, and sometimes is, appor- tioned by weight ; for example, in one of the ‘‘ schemes” of founts

1 There is a tradition in one of the oldest English foundries that this scale originated in a laborious calculation of the comparative number of different letters used in setting up a lengthy debate in the House of Commons, it being supposed then that the purest English was spoken there. The scale is, however, frequently found defective in practice. It is a curious fact, for instance, that the matter of Charles Dickens’s works will empty the vowel boxes long before those of the consonants, and that Lord Macaulay’s statelier style will run with like persistency on consonants.

XXIII. — 88

Parts of a type.

Species of letter.

Speci- mens of

used by type-founders a fount of 125 tb Roman with, as its comple- ment, 10 Tb Italic, includes 8 oz. of E, M, C; 90z. of T; 8 tb ofe; 5 tb each of a, h, n, 0, t; and so on, down to 3 oz. of z. To estimate the quantity of type required for a page, the number of square inches it contains is measured and divided by 4, the quotient being the approximate weight of the matter in pounds. In small founts, however, 50 per cent. is added, and in large ones 30 to 40 per cent., to allow for the letters generally left in the cases, not being required in the job, and for sorts, &c. These figures, although useful, are only approximative, the proportion of the several ingredients of type-metal used by different founders for the various sizes of type greatly varying the calculation.

Each of the parts of a.type has a technical name. In the an- nexed diagram (fig. 1) of the capital letter M the darkest space a, a, a, a, is called the face ;

and only that part of the type touches the paper in printing. The face is divided into the stem, marked 1, which comprises the whole outline of the type M; the serifs, or the hori- zontal lines marked 2, which complete the outline 2 : of the letter; the beard, consisting of the bevel or sloping part marked 8, 6, and the shoulder or flat por- tion below b. The shank is the entire body of the letter, d, the front part (that shown) being known as the belly and the corresponding part behind as the back. The spaces at h and h are the counters, which regulate the distances apart of the stems in a line of type. The hollow groove extending across the shank at ¢, ¢ is the nick, which enables the work- man to recognize the direction of the type and to distinguish different founts of the same body. The absence of this simple expedient would retard the operation of composing types by fully one-half. The earliest type-founders did not know the use of the nick. In some letters, such as j and f, a part of the face overhangs the shank; this is called the kern. The groove g divides the bottom of the type ‘into two parts called the feet. An impression from that .part of a type on which it stands would be as ™. Types must be perfectly rectangular, the minutest deviation rendering them useless. Any roughness at the sides is called burr, and any injury to their faces a batter. Smoothness, sharpness of angle, and perfection of finish are also prime requirements. A line of types, when viewed along the back, presents the appearance of a solid bar of metal.

Types which have the face cast in the middle of the shank, as a, c, e, m, &c., and thus leave an open space above them corresponding to that below, caused by the beard, are known as short letters. Those whose stem extends to the top of the shank, as b, d, f, &., are called ascending letters. Those that have a stem extending over the shoulder, as g, p, &c., are called descending letters. ‘Those that are both ascending and descending, and extend over the whole of the shank, as Q and j, are long letters. Small letters and figures cast upon the upper part of the shank, as 1%, are called superiors ; those very low down on the shank are inferiors,as H,. Types that are very heavy and massive in appearance are called fat-faced ; those that are fine and delicate, lean-faced. A type whose face is not in proportion to the depth of the shank (¢.g., a small pica cast on a pica body) is a bastard type. .

Types are of various sizes, ranging from those used in printing pocket Bibles to those for large placards. The variation is con-

Fic. 1.—Finished type.

principal fined to the superficial dimensions of their ends, or bodies, as they

bodies,

are called. Each body has a distinctive name. The following are specimens of the principal bodies of ordinary types, and show the relation of the various bodies one to another—

Printing bh

Canon—17# lines to the foot.

Printing has b

Double great primer—25§ lines to the foot.

Printing has been

Double English—82 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to

Double Pica—41} lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be

Great primer—51} lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the ac

English—64 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or Pica—714 lines to the foot,

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or prac Small pica—83 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of Long primer—89 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of i Bourgeois—1023 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impress Brevier—111 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing Minion—122 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing lett Emerald—138 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing letters, Nonpareil—143 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing letters, charact Ruby—166 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing letters, characters, or fig Pearl—178 lines to the foot.

Printing bas been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing letters, characters,or figures on paper, cloth, Diamond—207 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing letters, characters, or figures on paper, cloth, or othe

Gem—222 lines to the foot.

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or practice of impressing letters, characters, or figures on paper, cloth, or other

Brilliant—239 lines to the foot.

It is a confusing and inconvenient anomaly that the types made Size of by different English founders vary in size, although they bear the ty same

name, The above figures refer to the types of Messrs Miller and Richard, the royal type-founders for Scotland; but other eminent makers supply, for instance, long primer which is 893, 90, or 92 lines to the foot. This has been remedied in America by an agreement on the part of the founders to adopt one standard pica, to divide that pica into a certain number of equal parts, and to cast all their types as multiples of one of these parts. They divide the pica into twelve points, and the point is the unit upon which the system is based. There is also another practical advan- tage in this multiple system : each type bears a simple proportion to the others, and therefore can be used in exact combination. Thus pearl is 5, nonpareil 6, minion 7, brevier 8, bourgeois 9, long primer 10, small pica 11, and pica 12 points. In Germany, France, and other countries of the Continent a uniform system of points has been adopted, based on a scale of 183 ‘‘ Ciceros” (corpus 12) to 60 | centimetres. The types which most nearly correspond to those already mentioned are :—

Point Size in Point Size in Enis to Centi- Ems to Centi- Foot. metre. y Foot. metre SGI) oni ajsrosela tetas 162°15 °1879 BOrgigD) weecasi saverets 90°08 °3383 Nonpareille 6 …... 18512 “2256 Garmond 10 …..... 81:07 = *8759 Colonel Por sieteiaic oe 115°83 +2632 CICeVONTA he ts. aw oe 67°56 = 4511 Petit @cuusn mga 101°34 = *8008

The number of lines given to the foot in the above specimens of bodies is the theoretic and practically the only approximative standard. The height of types varies slightly with different founders, the mean being 33 in. The old Scotch height is about hy in. higher. Types lower than the ordinary dimension are said to be low to paper, and if surrounded by higher types will not give a perfect impression. Spaces and quadrats were formerly only three- fourths of an inch in height ; but, since electrotyping has become so common, they are almost invariably cut high, 7.e., up to the shoulder of the type. Six lines of pica and twelve lines of nonpareil each cover an inch in depth. It is, however, not possible to know the size of a type in a printed page by placing a rule measure upon it, as many books are not set solid: the lines are not close together, but leaded out with pieces of lead, to make them cover a larger space. A communication of great importance contributed to a newspaper may be set up in the same type as the leading

article; but if not leaded it will appear to the non-technical reader to be in a smaller character.

The width of pages or columns, in the technical language of the printing office, is expressed according to the number of ‘‘ems,”—

PRACTICAL, |

that is, of a pica m,—the square of the depth of pica. As the latter

is one-sixth of an inch, the em is the same width, and a page of

twenty-four ems wide is equal to one 4 inches wide. The columns of this Hncyclopedia are 19 ems wide.

According to the purpose for which they are used, types are divided into two classes—book type, including Roman and Italic, and job type, including a multitude of fanciful forms of letters, chiefly founded on the shape of the Roman and Italic letters, and intended to be more prominent, delicate, elegant, &c. It is imn- possible to enumerate all the varieties of the latter class, as addi- tions are being constantly made and once popular styles always going out of fashion. The leading varieties are the antiques, which are Roman letters with strokes of nearly uniform thickness, as M; sanserifs or grotesques, which have no serifs, as M; blacks, as fA; and scripts, which represent the modern cursive or Italian hand-

writing, as /, Black letter is now only a jobbing type in English-

speaking countries, although, as stated in the historical section of this article, it was the first character used in printing. It is still used in Germany, with certain modifications, as the principal text- letter for books and newspapers. A comparison of the numerous reproductions that have been issued of Caxton's works with any modern line of black letter will show how greatly the form and style have been altered within a period of four centuries. The present style of Roman type dates only from about the first quarter of the 18th century. Previously the approved shape was as follows : —

Printing has been defined to be the act, art, or

The use of this type was revived by Whittingham of the Chiswick Press abont 1843, and it has since become a favourite form, under the name of old style. Some of the punches cut by the first notable English type-founder, Williarn Caslon (1692-1766), have been pre- served and types are being constantly cast from them, Nearly all founders now produce modernized old style. For the recent revival of old style printing, see p. 710 below.

Large letters, such as are employed for large bills and posters, are made of wood, chiefly rock maple, sycamore, pine, and lime. These are cut up, planed to the required size, and then engraved, generally by special machinery, this being a business quite dis- tinct from that of letter-founding. The larger letters are designated as two line, three line, four line, &.,— meaning twice, thrice, or four times the depth of face of pica or great primer, &c,

Type metal is an alloy, of which lead is the principal ingredient ; but, owing to its softness, antimony and tin are added (see vol. ii. p. 129 and vol. xiv. p. 378). A patent type metal (Besley's) was invented in 1855 in which the mixture consisted of lead, regulus of antimony, tin, nickel, copper, and bismuth. Nearly all type is now made with some of these metals superadded. Ductility, hard- ness, and toughness are the prime requisites of a type metal.

The earliest printers made their own types, and the books printed from them can now be distinguished with almost as much certainty as handwriting can be identified. The modern printer has recourse to the type-founder, The first step in the making of type is cutting the letter on the end of a piece of fine steel, forming the punch (sce fig. 2), which is after- wards hardened. This is an operation requir-

ing great care and nicety (there being comparatively few

adepts at it), in order that the various sorts in a fount may be ex- actly uniform in width,

height, and general proportions to each other, A separate Fia. 2.—Punch. Fic. 3.—Drive. Fic. 4.—Matrix.

punch is required for

each character in every fount of type, and the making of them is the most expensive branch of type-founding. During the pro- cess of its manufacture the punch is frequently tested or measured by delicate gauges to insure its accuracy. When finished it is held over a light, the flame of which blackens the letter, and thus enables an impression, called a smoke proof, to be stamped on paper. When the letter is perfect, it is driven into a piece of polished copper, called the drive or strike (fig. 3). This passes to the justifier, who makes the width and depth of the faces uniform throughout the fount. They must then be made to line exactly with each other. When completed, the strike becomes the matrix (fig. 4), wherein the face of the type is made. This method of making a matrix has until now been in almost universal use in Great Britain. It is, however, a very slow and costly process. In America the great majority of matrices are made otherwise. If the design of the fount to be produced is original, it is often cut by hand or by an engraving-machine on the piece of metal which is to form the matrix. If, on the other hand, an existing fount has to be copied, the matrix is made by electro-deposition.

A perfectly good type is selected, and inserted in a mould specially made, called a fusible mould (fig. 5). Sufficient metal of a more fusible nature than the type is cast round it, and forms a shape similar to that of the ordinary mat- rix. This fusible cast is then placed in a box pro- tected by glass and gutta- percha, in order that the copper deposit may be kept square and to the proper dimensions. This arrangement also limits the deposition to the face. The box is immersed in the copper electrotyping solution, in which it may be left until the deposit of metal has increased to a thickness at which it

Fig. 5.—Mould. may be backed up with copper, or it is left until it reaches the

full thickness, which is about 35; of an inch. It is then fitted in line, set, position, and height. The minutest imperfection or blemish is reproduced by the deposition, and the type cast from such a matrix is a perfect counterpart of the original. A school of type-engravers has recently sprung up in the United States, cutting exclusively on metal and producing ornamentation and finish which the punch-cutters cannot rival. It is expected that in the course of time the electrotype matrix will nearly supersede that made in the old-fashioned way with the punch. In the ordinary method the mould in which the body of the type is formed is made of hardened steel in two parts; one part is fastened to the machine and is station- ary, while the other is movable so that it may be adjusted for the proper width of the letters, as one is wider than another. The com- bined matrix and mould are then adjusted to the type-casting machine, which manufactures types at the rate of from 25 to about 120 per minute, according to the body. The metal is kept fluid by a little furnace underneath and is injected into the mould by a pump, the spout of which is in front of the metal pot. The mould is movable, and at every revolution of the wheel it comes up to the spout, receives a charge of metal, and flies back with a fully formed type in its bosom ; when the upper half of the mould is lifted, a type is ejected. The spring in front holds the copper matrix in close proximity to the mould. The letter a, for instance, stamped in the matrix is directly opposite the aperture in the mould which meets the spout of the pump. When a due proportion of a’s are cast, another matrix with b stamped on it takes its place, and so on throughout the whole fount. The types, however, are not finished when they leave the machine.

There will be found attached to each a wedge-shaped jet (fig. 6), somewhat similar to that

on a bullet cast ina hand-mould. These are picked off by

boys at the rate of from 2000 to 6000 per hour,

which still adheres to the shoulder of the type is taken off

by the rubbers, who rub the sides on circular stones or on

files. The types afterwards go to the setters, who arrange

them in long lines ready for the dresser, and he slips them

into a long stick, turns them on their face, and, after duly

fastening them, cuts with a plane a groove in the bottom,

which forms the feet. (These processes are now frequently

performed by a machine, which produces types that do not

require rubbing or dressing.) The types are then dressed

and the picker takes them in hand, in order to pick out Fic. 6. each defective letter with the aid of a magnifying glass. ae They are finally made up into parcels of a convenient size, jet.

called type-founders' pages, weighing about 8 tb each.

Subjoined is a description of a machine for performing automa- Auto- tically the various operations of casting and finishing type which matic was invented about twenty years ago by Messrs J. R. Johnson and typecast- J.S. Atkinson. In this apparatus the metal is fused, injected into ing and the mould, the cast letter turned out, rubbed or planed, first on finishing one side and then on the other, the feet cut out and smoothed, the machine. dressed sides planed alternately, and the finished letter set up on a stick ready for use by the printer. The casting machine and the dressing machine

are in reality distinct, though mounted on a com- mon frame. The whole is driven by a steam-engine or other prime mover. The casting machine consists of a furnace covered by a shallow pot holding the fused metal. In this is a pump, and the mould is placed opposite its nozzle. The mould being adjusted and the matrix in its place, the molten metal is injected and then solidifies, forming a perfect type, but with jet attached. This letter is then thrust out, and the mould closes again for another jet of molten metal. All this is effected by one revolution of the axle of the machine. The letters pass through a channel one by one into the dressing machine. On arriving there they have each of their sides planed in succession by being held against cutters.

When one side is made true with respect to the set of the letter on

Type- case.

Com- posing.

700

its face, it is passed over a second cutter, which planes the second side absolutely parallel to the first. After this the type is carried in a line at right angles to its former course past a series of similar cutters, which plane out the foot, further smooth its surface, and plane each of the two dressed sides in sueccssion ; this completes the dressing or finishing of the types, which, continuing on their course, pass upon a composing stiek and are ready for the printer. The line of types presents the appearance of a solid bar of metal, so true, flat, and square are the surfaces of the several separate letters. This machine has been considerably improved by Mr P. M. Shanks. The new machine is of simpler construction and its parts are more compact. It does not produce better type, nor work quicker,—the speed in all type machines being regulated by the time required to cool the volume of metal, which, when on the machine, is assisted by having water percolating through the heated parts of the mould. The working of the new machine is more readily grasped by the manipulator, and there is considerable re- duction in its cost.
Type-Setting or Composing.

We may now describe the manipulation of the types in the print- ing office, and for the sake of conciseness reference must be made only to the operations connected with ordinary book-work. These differ in details from the methods in use in the other two depart- ments of the printing business, —news-work and job-work.

The types, received from the foundry in the packages called pages, are placed in shallow trays called cases. These contain compartments or boxes, each of which is appropriated to some par- ticular sort or character. ‘The cases when in use stand on frames or sloping desks. The case at the top is the wpper case, and that below the lower ease. The former contains ninety-eight cqual-sized boxes, pager princi- Yo UK;

ally to the capital /ZeUches //) etd small iaitial iG ME: Sai letters; the latter UL has fifty-three boxes of vari-

ous sizes, appropri. ated

Fic. 7.—Type-case.

to the lower-case sorts. The difference in the size of the boxes corresponds to the difference of quantity of letters in a fount, as already stated,—the lower-case e for instance having the largest box. The localization of the letters, &c., is a subject on which opinions differ, the object being to bring the letters most frequently required nearest to the hand of the compositor as he stands at work. As a man picks out from the boxes seldom less than 1500 letters per hour and distributes or replaces on the average about 5000 per hour, it is necessary that the most economical allocation of the boxes should be adopted. The system of allocating the various types is called the day of the case ; fig. 7 illustrates the plan used in the principal English book offices ; but there are many deviations.

The types when taken from the cases are arranged in lines or ‘* composed” in an instrument called a composing stick, made of iron, brass, or gun metal. ‘The’ slide in the middle is movable so as to accommodate varying lengths of lines. In the composing room the frames are arranged in rows, supporting the cases. The compositor fixes the ‘‘copy,” or document whieh he is to repeat in type, in a convenient place before his eye, and on some

part of the case that is seldom used. In his left hand he holds the com- posing stick, and with the thumb and first finger of the right hand lifts the letters from the boxes, and arranges them in the com- posing stick, every letter, point, or sign being picked out separately. In this operation he is much assisted by the use of a setting-rule, a thin brass or stcel plate which, being removed as successive lines are completed, keeps the type in place. “When so many words and parts of words as will nearly fill the line have been composed, it is made the exact length required by inserting or diminishing the space between the several words. This is called justifying the line and is effected by means of the spaces already mentioned. If the work is not “solid ’—that is, if the lines are not close together— the strips of metal called leads are used. They vary in thickness, but always form aliquot parts of pica body. A good compositor must possess intelligence and a reasonable amount of general know- ledge: he must be able to read his copy with readiness, and_ to understand its meaning, in order to punctuate it properly. He should be able to spell correctly, as some copy is almost undeciphcer- able in regard to separate letters, while other copy is incorrectly spelt. When the composing stick is filled, the type is lifted on to a galley, a shallow tray of wood or metal, two or three sides of which are flanged, for the purpose of supporting the type, when the

galley is slightly inelined. Stickful after stickful of type is placed

reetor of the press—deseribed below—begins.

on the galley until it is full. The matter is then fastened up, a proof taken at the proof press, and the work of the reader or eor- The proof, marked with the necessary corrections, is given back to the eompositor, in order that he may make the required alterations in the type.

The type, being duly corrected, is made up into pages of the Impos. required length (unless the author has desired to see proof in ing, slip). It is then imposed, that is, the pages are’ arranged in such a manner that, when printed and the sheet folded, they will fall in due numerical sequence. The

impression from any arrangement of pages will be the reverse of that in whieh they are laid down.

If an ordinary four-page newspaper supplement be opened and

A come out with the first page uppermost, it will be found that on

this side the order of pages is 4, 1; when turned the pages are 2,

3. The type pages must be ranged in the reverse way, as1, 4; 3, 2,

Thus the fourth page is placed alongside the first, because both

must be printed together on the outside ; the third page is to the

left, and the second to the right, because in books the odd page—the. verso —is always to the right. For a quarto a sheet of paper is folded twiee, that is once across its breadth and then once in a : perpendicular direction down the middle. It contains four leaves, ;

and if these are printed on both sides eight pages. The two sides , of a sheet are called the outer and inner formes respectively. A ‘ sheet of octavo is folded three times, making 8 leaves or 16 pages.

The size of a book depends, not only upon the number of times the

sheet has been folded, and described accordingly as 4to, 8vo, 12mo, &c., but upon the size of the sheets. The dimensions of the papers commonly used in book-printing are :—imperial, 22 × 30 inches ; super royal, 204×274; royal, 20×25; medium, 19×24; demy, 174 × 224; double crown, 20×80; double foolscap, 17 × 27 ; post, 15%x194. Hence to say that a book is a quarto merely gives no precise indication of its dimensions, as a quarto of one size of paper may be smaller than an octavo of another ; it is also necessary to know the size of the sheets of which it is composed. :

When a printed book is opened, it will be found that at the foot Signa- of certain pages there is usually a letter and at the foot of another tures a letter anda figure, as B, B 2; further on another letter and another letter and figure. On going through the book it will be seen that the letters are in

regular alphabetical order, and occur at regular intervals of eight, twelve, sixteen, &., pages. These designate the several shects of which the book is composed and are called signa- twres, so that a sheet may be designated B, and the pages of which it consists are thereby sufficiently indicated. (Occasionally, as in 7 the present work, numbers are used instead of letters.) These signatures assist the binder in folding, as they occupy a certain specified place in each shect ; hence to ascertain if the sheet has been folded properly it is only necessary to examine the position of the signature. The binder also is thus assisted in gathering or collating together the sheets of a volume in proper order. Signa- ture A is omitted, because it would be on the title or first page, and would be both unnecessary and unsightly. By old custom J, V, and W are discarded, I and J, U and V being originally used indis- q criminately by printers, while W was written UU or VV. When the alphabet is exhausted, a new one is commenced, distinguished by a figure precedent, as 2B, 2C, &c.

The pages of types are arranged in proper order on a flat table, Forme covered with stone or metal, called the imposing stone, and are then ready to be made into a forme, that is, in such a state that they can be securely fastened up and moved about. The forme is en- closed in an iron frame or chase, subdivided by a cross bar. The portions of the type are separated by furniture, which may be of metal or wood or both. It is of the same height as the chase, but lower than the type, and therefore does not print, but forms the margin of the printed pages. At the sides of the two sections of the formes are pieces of furniture of a tapering shape, called side- sticks, and at the top and bottom corresponding pieces, called foot- sticks. Small wedges, called guoins, are inserted and driven forward by a mallet and a shooting-stick, so that they gradually exert in- creasing pressure upon the type. Other mechanical means for locking up are also occasionally adopted. When sufficiently locked up, the whole is quite as firm and portable, however many thousands of pieces of metal it may consist of, as if it were a single plate.

In this rapid sketch we purposely omit mention of several opera- tions which, though important and indispensable, are only of interest to the workman.

For many years endeavours have been made to construct Type machines for type-setting which should obviate hand labour. setting Picking out the types separately from their boxes and arranging mac them singly in the composing stick is an irksome and monotonous operation, and one which it might be thought comparatively easy

to perform by automatic machinery. But of the many different composing machines that have been invented less than half a dozen have stood the test of practical experience. These have been con- fined to special classes of work, and it is open to doubt whether

the nimble fingers of a good compositor, aided by the brains which no machinery can supply, do not favourably compare on the

PRACTICAL, |

ground of economy with any possible mechanical arrangement. On the other hand, employers and makers of machines allege that owing to the opposition of the men machine type-setting has not had fair play. However that may be, it is undeniable that a composing machine is still rare in printing offices, and where employed it is only as an auxiliary to the ordinary labour of the men. It deserves to be mentioned that nearly the whole of the Times, with the single exccption of the advertisements, has for years past been set up by machinery, and that more than 10,000 pages of the present edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica have also been so set up. We have not space to describe with any minuteness the construction of ———— composing machines. In the Fraser machine (fig. 8), one of the simplest of its class, which has been made use of to the extent already mentioned in the present work, the types are contained in a series of grooved trays A, in the upper art of the machine, the trays ising previously been filled by complementary apparatus called the distributor. In these trays the types are kept in position, and pressed to- wards the front part of each tray, by slips of metal at- tached by eords to the box- wheels B; each of these con- tains a spring of suflicient strength to press the line of types steadily forward against the separators C, which are formed with an inverted shoulder, under which the front type in each line passes. The keys are connected by levers to the separators, and the depression of any key causes the corresponding separ- ator to descend, carrying with it the front

type of the line into the grooved face-plate, down which it slides into the com- posing stick G. Immediately the finger is lifted from the key the spiral spring D raises the separator to its original position, and the next type in the line takes the place of the one just released, and so in succession as fast as the keys can be pressed. Under the keys runs a rod connected by a crank motion with the pusher G, which, with every depression of a key, pushes forward the line of type in the composing stick, thus making room for the next letter. The matter is thus set in one continuous line, ready to be divided into lines of the required length either by the operator at the machine or by another hand working in conjunction. The speed of the machine varies from 6000 to 12,000 types per hour, but is regulated solely by the skill of the operator, as the machine will work as fast as the keys can be pressed. The composing machines now employed at the Z'imes office are an improved form of an apparatus invented by Charles Kastenbein, and introduced there in 1872. The oper- ator sits in front of four rows of keys one above the other, something like the manuals of an organ, but only about 3 feet wide. Each of the keys corresponds to a type or character. The types are kept in tin tubes placed vertically at the top of the machine. The de- pression of a key works a series of levers, and an iron finger pushes the undermost type from its tube, when it falls into a groove formed in a conducting plate, narrowing at the bottom to its apex. Iinme- diately below is a receptacle, and by the action of a treadle the type is pushed along a channel. Other letters follow, the matter being thus set up in a long line, on a groove of the width of an em quad, and running from left to right. The type when it first eomes into the groove is in an upright position, but in passing along it becomes twisted, so that the letters stand at an angle of about 45° when they reach the point at which they are justified. This groove eom- municates at its dexter extremity with the justifying galley,—a simple apparatus, something of the nature of a composing stick and

Fia. 8.—Fraser composing machine.

the adoption to setting up types of the Jacquard card of the power loom, which weaves automatically the most intricate patterns of cloth. The

apparatus consists of three parts,—two used for pre- paring the ‘‘card” or ribbon, which directs the third in the opera- tion of type composing. The perforator is like a small cottage pianoforte. When the keys are struck they produce a perforation, and the ribbon is made to move aside a little, so that a new surface may be presented for puncturing. The composer is a circular iron table, 4 feet in diameter, having round its periphery a number of boxes divided into sections, each of which holds one kind of type. On a slightly lower plane is a wheel carrying little brass tables, hinged at one end. When the machine is im motion, the types are pushed out on to the table, which passes with its freight round its course until it comes to the point of delivery, when the types are swept off. The rising of the table, and the drawing out of the types, are guided by the perforated paper. Hence the machine sets types without a human compositor. When once the ribbon is perforated, it may be used over again for subsequent editions of the same work, which may be in a different size of type. These machines are only in use.in the office of the inventor.

As has been already described under RevorTIne (vol. xx. p. 406), the parliamentary reports of some newspapers are set up entirely without copy, —by the ear, not by the eye. It has been found that by the aid of the machine the matter can be set up half as fast again as it eould be written out: the average speed of the compos- ing machine is 230 lincs per hour when the copy is dictated to the operator, whereas the most skilful workman setting at ease in the usual way can do but 50 lines per hour.

For many years it was a favourite idea with inventors, especially Logo- those who were not practical printers, that great economy might be types.

gained in eomposition by the use of word-characters or “ logotypes,” instead of single letters. The constant repetition of many words seemed to suggest that they might be cast in one piece. Combina- tions suitable for affixes and suffixes, as ad-, ac-, in-, -ing, ~~ment, &c., it was also suggested, should be used instead of the single component Ictters. The suggestion has, however, not been carried out, at least to any considerable extent. The chief practical objection to it is that it involves the use of cases with an inconveniently large num~~ ber of boxes. The more the variety of characters is multiplied the more “travel” of the compositor’s hand over the cases is

necessary for picking them up, and by so much is the speed of his work re-
tarded. Logotypes, too, are more liable to accident; when one letter is
damaged the combination is rendered useless.

The correction of the type is a subject that should be understood Correct- by
all who have to do with printing, as many mistakes are made ing type.

on the part of authors which a little technical knowledge would prevent. In
the course of setting any copy or MS. which may be given him the
compositor unavoidably picks up some wrong letters, or mistakes the words
in the copy before him, or fails to follow the style prescribed for the work.
These are called printer's errors. When the compositor has finished his task,
a first proof of the matter is taken, This proof is read through and compared
with the copy by the proof reader or corrector of the press and an assist- ant,
the copy-holder or reading boy. The proof is then sent back to the
compositor and the latter is required to correct all the inac- curacies
indicated therein—in fact, to attend to all the directions given by the reader
—and this has to be done at his own cost if he is working on piece—that is,
paid by results according to work done —or by the employer if he is
working ''on establishment wages " or paid by time. Another proof called a
revise is now taken ; this is carefully compared with the previous proof. If
the corrections have not all been made, the revise is marked accordingly,
and sent back to the compositor, who is required to remedy the imperfec-
tions. When the proof is deemed aceurate, or '' clean," it is sent, generally
along with the copy, to the author,—being now termed an author's proof.
Finally, in the printing office the matter is carefully re-read and compared
with the last author's proof by the press reader, who signs it and on his
responsibility the type is printed off.

The operation of distributing the types is the converse of that Distri- of
composing: it is de-composing the forme and returning the buting several
letters to their proper boxes in the case. Itis done, as already type.

galley combined. Then the type is divided into portions or lines of the
required length and justified in the galley, which is adjustable

to the width of the required length. As the long line approaches him, the
justifier with a small bodkin accelerates a portion large enough in his

judgment to fill the width of his column. When this is done he presses his foot on the treadle under him, and thereby causes the line to be pushed into the galley. The line is justified by spaces and quads, and enough type is then taken for another line. The Gonos depends on the operator, and varies from 6000 to 13,000 types per hour, the average being about 8000, with two operators,—a justifier and a compositor being also necessary. These machines are worked in the J%mes office at the rate of a column of solid minion an hour. The machine occupies a floor space of only about 4 feet wide by 2 deep.

Another machine at present in use is that of Mr Robert Hattersley of Manchester. It probably furnished the general scheme of others in use. One of the most ingenious machines of the kind is that of Mr Alexander Mackie of Warrington, its general principle being

mentioned, with remarkable rapidity. The forme is first washed over with an alkaline or other detergent to remove the ink from its surface, and then laid down on the imposing surface, unlocked, and damped ; this assists the cohesion of the type, after the chase, furniture, sidc sticks, &c., areremoved. The compositor then takes in his left hand, supported by a setting rule, a portion of type in lines, and with the right hand takes a word or so between the finger and thumb, letting each letter drop separately into Its proper box. There is hardly any operation which so strikes a spectator as dis- tributing, for a competent distributor literally showers the types into their receptacles. The types are held upside down, that is, with the nicks uppermost ; hence the letters of each word are read from left to right like ordinary matter when printed, but the words are of course dealt with in the inverse order.

Distributing machines of many different kinds have been invented.

Type-dis- They may be divided into two classes,—those worked entirely by tributing keys or notes, like the pianoforte, and those in which the distributing

machines.

Advan- tages of stereo-

typing.

Process of stereo- typing.

is to a certain extent done automatically. For the former class only the type in ordinary use in printing offices is required. For the latter the type requires to be specially prepared, each character having a distinctive nick or nicks upon it, which correspond with the particular channel of the machine it is intended to occupy, and by which it is guided to its special compartment. Kastenbein has produced a distributor which may be described as a composing machine reversed. The matter to be decomposed is placed at the top in its appropriate tray or fixed galley, the sides of which are adjustable to fit any measure, the back being so constructed that it may be advanced to keep the matter always up to the front. As the matter is pressed towards the front, the first letter of it is brought in contact with a steel pusher, behind it being an aperture com- municating with the channel of the guide plate. The matter is read by the operator ; and he touches the key corresponding to the letter that comes first. Thus the types are conveyed one by one to the guide plate or conductor. It has grooves furnished with little gates or switches, like the points of a railway, and these direct the types into their proper channels. The tubes into which the types are deposited are placed at the foot of each groove. Thus every time a key is depressed the switches move, the pusher sends the type to be distributed out of the line, it falls through the palin and, passing down the channels in the guide plate, reaches the proper tube. The speed

is to a certain extent depend- ent upon the skill of the operator, but averages be- tween 3500 and 4000 per hour. A good compositor can by hand alone distribute as many letters as this. But for <= the purposes of the composing “ machine, hand distributed types would have to be set up again, as the composing | — | machine is supplied not from ordinary cases but from tubes of type. In the Fraser dis- —— a

tributing machine (fig. 9) the Fic, 9.—Fraser distributing machine. page of matter to be distri- buted is placed on the upper part of the machine at H, whence by suitable apparatus it is moved line by line towards the separator

Tin front. The matter is there read by the operator, and as each letter comes in contact with the separator the corresponding key is pressed and the type is conveyed to the guide plate, where a series of switches guide it to its proper compartment in the tray of the composing machine.

Stereotyping, Electrotyping, de.

The method of reproducing and multiplying letter-press printing surfaces by taking casts of them, or stereotypes, has greatly con- duced to the progress of typography,—much more so, indeed, than might be realized by those who are unacquainted with the practical details of the art. Stereotyping (orepeds, fixed or solid ; Tvzos, type or forme) is the method of taking casts from a fixed or mov- atte forme; thus, printing from stereotypes is distinguished from typography, in which impressions are taken from movable types. It does not supersede type-founding, but supplements it, for a page of reading matter requires first of all to be set up letter by letter, and then the casts or plates are taken, each of which may be printed from with nearly as much perfection as from the original forme. Hence a printing surface may be reproduced to an almost infinite extent, and the means of production of impressions on the press or machine are increased in proportion to the number of casts taken. It ensures an accurate copy of an original text, whereas in repro- duction by resetting the movable types there is a liability to devia- tion. When only a cast is worked from, any accident may be re- paired by taking another cast, and the cost is slight compared with that of composing over again. A smaller quantity of type may be used in an office where this process is used ; a portion of a work may be set up, a cast taken, and the types returned to the cases. The plates are more easily stored than movable formes, and are not liable to the danger, as in the latter, of types falling out. Above all, the mould may be bent to any curve required, and a circular cast obtained, which may be fastened round the cylinder of a machine (see infra in regard to rotary printing).

The process of stereotyping, divested of merely technical details, is as follows. From a forme of matter, which may be wholly or in part composed of movable types, a matrix or mould is taken. The original is in rilievo ; the mould consequently is in intaglio. From this the stereo plate is cast, and it of course is again in rilievo. This in turn may likewise become an original,

and casts may be taken from a plate, or other casts from the same mould. The first books were printed from solid wooden blocks, each of which formed a page. Then came the era of typography, in which these pages

were composed, mosaic-like, of movable types. Now has succeeded the period of stereotyping, in which pages formed of single blocks —but of metal, not of wood—are used, The two essential parts are, therefore, the making of the matrix and of the cast, which is com- posed of an alloy something like that for type metal. The mould may be of plaster of Paris or papier-mache ; the latter being the simplest material, and that almost universally used, need alone be here referred to. The following account of the process, when carried out on the smallest possible scale, is sufficient perhaps to show the general principles of the art. The papier-maché for the mould, called flong, is made by uniting several sheets of paper with a paste made of wheaten flour, starch, and alum, to which whiting is added. These ingredients are often varied ; the general object in using them is to obtain a paste which will stand a high temperature without burning. A sheet of brown paper is laid down on a smooth surface and pasted over ; blotting paper is laid on that and pressed down, then pasted over, and a sheet of tissue paper added, which is also pasted, and another sheet of tissue paper placed on the top. This is well smoothed and pressed to give the incorporated material greater firmness and cohesion. Next, to prepare the forme for being moulded, it is surrounded with metal ‘‘ clumps” of the height of the type, placed close to the matter, and then oiled to prevent the flong sticking to it. The latter is then thoroughly damped, to render it quite plastic. The forme being on a level surface, the flong is laid upon it, and on that a piece of linen. ‘The surface is next well beaten all over with a long-handled brush, till the flong sinks into all the declivities of the forme and receives a deep impression of it. This is a process requiring experience and practice. The linen being removed, a piece of very stout paper is laid on the top, and also beaten down, so as to strengthen the flong, and the moulding is finished. The next point is to dry the mould.

In the most rudimentary method a combined drying and casting press is used. It consists of a flat iron surface, with a lid attached to one end by hinges. Over the surface is a cross-head fitted with a screw; pressure may be exerted on anything placed between, the arrangement being like that of a screw letter-copying press. The cross-head can be moved to one side when it is necessary for the lid to be lifted up. Underneath the press is a series of gas jets, by means of which the bed plate is heated. The press stands on supports, but is attached to them only by an axle, and it can be readily changed from the horizontal to the vertical position. The lid of the box is raised and the forme with the flong upon it placed on the centre of the iron surface. After being covered with a blanket, the lid is screwed down upon the whole, and, the gas being a ae the forme and mould are heated for a few minutes, after which the lid is raised, the steam evaporates, and the flong, which has now become the matrix, is thoroughly dry. In large stereotyp- ing foundries, after the flong has been well beaten upon the forme, until the impression of the types is plainly seen on the back, it is baked and dried (the forme still underneath) on a long thick iron slab, called a hot chamber, because it is heated from within by steam. The matrix is then removed from the forme, and any superfluous margin cut away or trimmed ; after this the matrix is dusted with powdered French chalk and is ready for being cast from.! A method has lately come into use for obviating the necessity of keeping the matrix on the type while it is being hardened by drying by heat, whereby the type is injured. The matrix is dried separately, being removed when moist from the forme, as soon as the impression is obtained. It is then placed on a bed of sand heated by gas. The forme is never heated, and there is a great saving of time, because the drying can be done in two minutes. The matrix is laid on the bed of the casting box face upwards, with gauges around it to de- termine the height or thickness of the cast. The lid is put down and screwed tightly, and the position of the press altered from the horizontal to the upright. The metal is then poured in and the press restored to its former position. The matrix is carefully raised aud the plate exposed. It has only to be “trimmed,” the super- fluous metal cut away, and the back planed, to be ready for mount- ing on a block of wood to make it type high.

In stereotyping for the Walter and similar presses the process Stereo The forme is laid on the table of the moulding typmg machine and the flong placed on it and thoroughly beaten in by fora

is as follows.

| q i

hand or passed through a moulding machine, which performs the Walter

same operation. and when nearly dried the matrix is removed from it and again dried. It is then placed in the casting box, which is curved to the circumference of the cylinder of the press. The box, being ona swivel, is set upright. The metal is now poured in from a ladle and the plate cast. It is allowed to stand a minute and then taken out, still hot, and placed upon a “finishing saddle” of the same circular form as the back of the plate, and secured by clamps and screws. An angular-shaped knife or chisel, fixed in a carri- age, is moved by a handle in a semicircular direction across the surface of the plate, in order to remove superfluous portions of metal and to form a bevel whereby the plate can be subsequently

1 These matrices can be preserved for several years, and the stereotyping pro- cess postponed until actually required.

The forme is next placed on a heating surface, press;

Ciluloid

PRACTICAL. |

clamped on the machine. If necessary the plate may be smoothed at the back by a specially-contrived planing machine. The plate is now ready for being placed on the printing machine. Each single operation can be performed with the utmost possible despatch. If the organization is sufficiently perfect, the time for making a plate, from the moment when the forme comes down from the machine-room to that wherein the perfect plate is set on the machine, need only be about eight minutes,

In newspaper establishments where stereotyping is thus adopted the pages are not all made up simultaneously: some are kept open till the last for the latest telegrams. The moment a page is com- pleted and locked up in its chase it is sent down to the foundry, and as many casts taken as there are

printing machines to be set going. One page follows another with rapidity, the first being placed in position on the machine, while the later ones are in the foundry. When all the plates are finished and fixed in their places, six, eight, or ten machines may be simultaneously printing at the rate of nearly 12,000 per hour each. The enormous increase in the circulation of the great daily newspapers would have been impossible but for the cxtraordinary facilities for rapid production provided by stereotyping. This process is also of special utility to the newspaper printer in the case of telegrams arriving late. In machines which printed from the type, late telegrams could only be inserted by a ‘‘stop-press”; that is, the printing was inter- rupted while the alteration was being made. But, when the papier-maché casts of the pages have been taken, the type itself is liberated and sent back to the composing room, so that, if later news arrives while the machines are running, the foreman printer alters the page, a fresh cast of it is taken, and a machine started without intcrrupting the production fora moment. The London evening papers have usually five editions, and for every edition fresh casts are made of one or more of the pages.

Quite recently the substance called celluloid has been introduced instead of the metal referred to previously. A mould is made of yellow oxide of lead and glycerin formed into a semi-fluid paste, which is applied to the surface of the type. The matrix is placed on a powerful press and a heated sheet of celluloid about 3, of an inch thick is laidon it. When pressure is applied, a perfect facsimile is obtained, and it is ready to be printed from when mounted in the usual way. Whereas a good electrotype from a wood block averages six hours in its production, a cast in celluloid can be got in less than an hour. These blocks are very tough and many thousands more of impressions can be printed from them than from stercotypes with- out their showing signs of wear. For small stamps india-rubber is used as a stereotyping material, and afterwards vulcanized. These stamps, being flexible, print on rough surfaces which would not take an impression from ordinary stereotypes. With a flexible surface, too, much less pressure is required.

Machines have been invented to do away with the use of types altogether. The principle is to punch the characters successively on some substance which will act like the flong and become a mould from which sterco plates

may be cast. In an apparatus recently introduced the flong is a prepared piece of millboard, which is placed in front of the steel punches. The latter are driven into the flong with lightning speed and great accuracy. By turning a handle all the Roman punches are changed to Italic; by anothcr a set of sanserif or other founts comes into play. For set- ting time-tables and logarithms the apparatus is said to save ninety per cent. over the ordinary system of hand-setting. The obstacle to the more general use of it is the difficulty of correcting errors. In another machine the punches are driven into a block of teak wood. They are cast to thicknesses which are the multiple of a “point”; hence by a simple calculation they may be spaced out to the exact number of points chosen for the length of the line, and every line leaves the machine justified. The block when com- plete is removed and a stereotype taken, which can be printed as in the ordinary method of typography.

For the reproduction of wood engravings electrotyping has nearly superseded stereotyping, as it produces much better copies. For obtaining plates of type matter it is also better than stereo- typing, as many thousands of impressions may be taken without reducing the sharpness of an electro, while ordinary stereotype would be almost worn out by printing a much smaller number. This arises from the superior hardness and toughness of copper, of which the surface of the electro is formed. Electrotyping, however, is costlier and slowcr.

The forme to be clectrotyped is placed upon a level plate, and surrounded with type-high clumps or metal furniture, and then floated with plaster of Paris, which prevents the mould of wax (to be afterwards made) from penetrating too far into the interstices of the spaces. The forme is next brushed with finely powdered blacklead or plumbago. The nioulding composition is made of melted wax, with the addition of a little blacklead. This is poured into a shallow metal moulding tray, to which two pieces of stout wire are soldered, in order that it may be afterwards suspended in the depositing trough. After the composition is cooled and set its surface is brushed with blacklead, and it is then ready for moulding.

The moulding press may be somcthing like a letter-copying press

or, in a large establishment, may consist of a powerful hydraulic or other press capable of exercising a pressure of many tons. The forme is placed exactly under the centre of the platen, with the moulding tray containing the wax, slightly warm, upon it. An impression is then taken, and the mould afterwards separated from the forme, The mould has next to go through the process of building, that is, heated wax is dropped upon such portions as should be more deeply sunk in the finished electrotype plate, namcly, the places where ‘‘whites” are to appear in the print. The mould, having been finished, has to be blackleaded, plumbago being a con- ductor of electricity, while wax is a non-conductor. The material is well brushed in, filling all the interstices of the forme ; and the entire surface of the mould must be properly covered, to ensure a perfect deposit of the copper. To facilitate this operation, a blackleading machine is used in large establishments. The forme is placed upon a carriage formed of transverse bars and is moved backwards and forwards by a handle and rounce to bring it under the blacklead brush. After the mould is blackleaded, the back of the moulding pan is coated with wax, to prevent the copper from being deposited upon it. The mould is now quickly immersed in one of the compartments of the battery. The process of depositing a copper solution upon the blackleaded surface of the mould is continued until a solid plate is formed, which, though it is scarcely thicker than a finger nail, being about 5 inch, forms, when pro- perly backed, the best and most enduring surface for letterpress printing that has been discovered.

The moulding tray containing the mould is hung on the brass rod of the depositing trough facing a plate of copper, and the con- nexion of the battery made: that is, the mould is attached to one pole of the battery and the plate of copper to the other. The copper, so to speak, is decomposed on the one hand and recomposed on the other: in other words, the current of electricity being com- plete, and the mould submerged in the sulphate of copper solution, the deposition of copper on the mould at once commences, Here it remains until the deposit is sufficient, the time usually occupied being from 8 to 12 hours, according to the state of the solution and the strength of the batteries. ‘The dynamo-electro machine, which is now employed in large houses, very materially reduces this period ; otherwise

Smee’s batteries are generally used. When the deposit, or, as it is called, the shell, formed on the wax mould is of proper thickness, it is disengaged from the wax,—the mould being placed with its back on an inclined board, and boiling water poured over the shell, which melts the surface of the wax, except a thin coating, the removal of which is effected by placing the mould and shell on a steam heating table. . Thus the wax mould is destroyed, and it is not possible to obtain more than one shell from a mould, whereas the stereotype process cnables almost an number of casts to be taken from the same matrix. The shell, being too thin and fragile to be printed from, is next backed, or filled up with metal of a somewhat softer kind than stereo metal. The shell, after being further cleaned, is lowered on to the top of a vessel of molten type metal ; and, when the solder previously used to unite the copper and the metal has fused, the latter is poured over it in a molten state until it is covered. The plate is washed, dried, and polished, the back roughly planed to a surface parallel to the front, the edges squared, and all imperfections made good. The thickness of a plate is usually a pica or 3th inch. It is mounted as an ordinary stereotype plate. Within the last few years the pro- cess has been greatly facilitated by the employment of specially contrived apparatus, and illustrations can be produced in three hours from the time the mould is made. Curved electros are pro- duced, as well as curved stereos, for use in rotary printing. Facing with nickel by the electroplating process is now largely adopted for hardening stereotypes and electrotypes and rendering them more durable, This process also prevents the deterioration of such plates by the action of the acids or other chemical reagents often present in printing inks, such as cyanide of potassium in red ink and nitric acid in some blue inks.

Polytyping is a method invented in France about the end of the Poly- 18th century, but now seldom practised in the United Kingdom. typing.

The apparatus somewhat resembles a pile-driver. It has two upright guides about six feet high, and a pulley at the top, which elevates by means of a rope a heavy plate, on which the matrix is placed in an inverted position. At the foot of the machine there is a sub- stantial iron bed, upon which the operator places some molten metal. He then pulls the rope until the matrix, with its weight attached, is elevated to the top of the machine, when it is suddenly allowed to fall. The result is similar to that made on a medal by

means of a die,—a perfect reproduction of the matrix in relief, which is mounted on a metal stand to type height. The results are excellent, as the plastic metal is forced into the finest lines of the matrix. Duplicates of a block can be thus produced more rapidly than by the ordinary stereotype process ; and another ad- vantage is that the intaglio parts are much deeper, —a point of some importance in printing. The matrix may be made from the block by the electrotyping process.

Process blocks.

Typo- etching.

Tone blocks.

Typo- graphic etching.

704

Substitutes for Vood-Engraving.

Formerly the only available method of obtaining illustrations which could be printed on the letter-press in conjunction with type was that of wood-engraving. At the present time a number of comparatively new processes are in operation, in which the engrav- ing is done almost automatically by the adoption of chemical pro- cesses and the well-known principles of photography. Engravings of this kind are called in the trade process blocks, or sometimes ztnco- types, owing to the metal of which they are formed. There is space here for only the barest possible account of the processes.

In the first method, which is sometimes called typo-etehing, the drawing is made with ordinary lithographic ink on stone, or on paper and transferred to stone. It is then re-transferred to a plate of polished zinc by the ordinary lithographic process. Zine is employed on account of its cheapness and its ready solubility in the acids used for etching. It has properties similar to those of the lithographic stone in taking up the ink and the water. The transfer is made to adhere to the plate by being passed through a lithographic press ; the paper is then stripped off; and the whole of the ink is left on the plate, which is inked up as a litho stone with a view to render the

lines as solid and strong as possible to resist the acid. The covering of the lines is strengthened by dust- ing powdered asphalt or some other suitable material over the plate, which is warmed just sufficiently to incorporate the asphalt with the ink. The plate is next placed in a bath of acid (its back and other parts, where the acid is not required to act, being protected by varnish), in order that the unprotected parts, or those which are to form the whites of the finished picture, may be dissolved away. In order to prevent the acid eating not only straight down into the plate but on the sides of the furrows it forms, and thus undermining them, an ingenious device has been adopted. As soon as the etching has proceeded to a very slight depth, the plate is removed from the bath, washed, and heated. The ink and other protective medium are thus melted and run down the sides of the little furrows formed by the acids and thereby protect them from further action. Inking and dusting with resinous material are repeated, and etching resumed, until the depressions of the block have been brought to the proper depth. The etching is carried on in troughs to which a rocking motion is given, so that the acid flows to and fro in waves over the surface, and little bubbles of gas, &e., are carried away. Where large spaces of white occur, the metal is cleared away by a drill; after the block has been mounted type high, it is ready for the printer.

This process is only available for the production of “ line blocks,” #.e., those in which the original drawing is done in lines or dots, as for an ordinary woodcut. The highest achievement of process blocks has been the production of tone blocks, which may be made direct from oil-paintings, water-colours, photographs, draw- ings in chalk, wash, pencil, &c., or indeed from anything from which a photographic negative can be taken. The exact nature of the processes is a trade secret, but the rationale is given in Mr Truman Wood’s Modern Methods of Illustrating Books (London, 1887), to which we are indebted for the following details, The problem is to translate, as it were, the light and shade of the negative into solid outlines of black and white. The shades must be lines of various breadths or of various distances apart, or spots or grain of various degrees of fineness or closeness. In a surface- block any part that touches the paper prints, and any part that does not touch the paper does not leave any mark at all. The photographic image is continuous: there are no outlines in it, the picture being formed of graduated tints or shades, ranging from the white of the paper up to the

darkest colour that the process employed can give. To make a block for letter-press printing the graduated tints of the photograph have to be broken up into stipple or grain, and it must be a stipple closest in the shadows, gradually becoming more open through the range of the intermediate tones, and vanishing altogether in the highest lights. To describe the ingenious methods adopted to secure this end would involve an account of several photographic operations which would be out of place here. In one process, perfected by Meisenbach of Munich in 1882, grained negatives are produced by placing a transparent screen, on which a suitable grain is imprinted, in contact with the negative or the positive to be copied, and then photographing the two together. The negative is transferred to a plate of suitable material, which is graved or etched in the usual manner, to form a typographic block. Another device is to print from the original negative upon a piece of silk, the threads of which break up the picture into a regular grain. The positive on the silk is then photographed and a printing block made. These blocks require from their very low relief delicate and careful printing, but are made to give excellent results.

A process of typographic etching has been invented by Messrs Dawson, in which the design is drawn with an etching needle on a brass plate covered with a wax etching ground, in the same manner as for an ordinary etching. The metal is therefore bared at the lines, which are separated by ridges and spaces of wax. These spaces are

strengthened by the addition of melted wax, which runs up to the edges of the lines, but does not run over on to them as might be expected, filling them up. The supply is continued until the spaces between the lines, representing the whites of the finished print, have been raised to a height sufficient to give the necessary relief, when an electrotype is taken. This electrotype forms the printing surface. ;

Shanks’s process is a device for producing pictures simply by the Shanks’s use of mechanism, and is an application of the cidograph. The process plate to be drawn upon is moved under the drawing implement. which is a

rapidly revolving cutter, and the plate on its carrier is mounted on the end of a series of Icvers in the same way as the slide rest of a lathe, so as to have motion in two directions, one at right angles to the other, and consequently by a combination of the two to have motion in any direction in the same plane. If a plate of a suitable substance, such as hardened plaster of Paris, be mounted on the carrier, and the bracing point at the other end of the lever be moved over the lines of a drawing, the cutter will plough a little furrow, which will follow these lines. When the plate is finished, a stcreotype is takcn from it and forms the print- ing surface. The lines of the casts are remarkably strong owing to the conformation of the furrow of the mould, and they can be printed on fast rotary machines. The weather charts given in some newspapers are produced by this process. A block with the recurring outlines being made, plates are moulded from it, so that the details alone have to be separately cut upon future plates. Mr Shanks's method is remarkably simnple and expeditious, and the results are economical and trustworthy.

Press-Work and Presses,

The characteristic of printing, as already pointed out, is that the pigment—the ink—with which the printing surface of the type is coated is transferred to the paper or other material by pressure. The manner in which this pressure is exerted gives rise to two classes of machinery,—those in which the platen and the cylinder respectively are employed. After the paper is placed on the type, in the one case a flat plate of iron moves parallel to the forme and comes in contact with it, causing the impression on the paper, while in the other case a cylinder revolves over the surface, which travels in gearing with the cylinder.

Space does not permit of any sketch, howeyer slight, of the origin and progress of type-printing machinery. We can only refer to what may be regarded as representative appliances in present use. In America all kinds of apparatus for printing are called ‘‘ presses”; in England, however, an appliance of a more automatic character than the hand-press is usually called “a machine.” As the hand-press is now almost obsolete, this distinction will probably be abandoned, and the shorter and more expressive word ‘‘press” be applied to all. Venturing to adopt this suggestion, we may

say that of platen presses there are the hand-press, the treadle platen press, and the steam or other power- driven press,

Fig. 10 is a view of the Albion press. It is wholly of iron and Hand- steel. Although this press is nearly superseded, it is desirable press. to point out its component parts, as they indicate the gencral principles on which all typographic machinery is based. The flat plane on which the type is laid is called the bed of the press; the other flat plane which moves vertically and presses the paper on the type is the platen. These are the two essential parts of the press. The platen is perfectly smooth and level on its under surface, in order to give the whole of the type forme an equable pressure. It is mounted in a strong iron frame, with a cross- piece or head. The platen is propelled by a piston, which moves up and down. The power is gained by bringing an inclined bar of steel perpendicular to the direct line of pressure, and in doing so the piston is forced down. This steel bar is the chd7/, shaped like an elbow. At one end is a bar or handle which, on being pulled towards the operator, straightens the chill or brings it into the vertical position. At the sides are guide-plates fixed into the frame, to preserve the parallclism of the platen, for the slightest vibration or lateral movement would prevent a clear sharp im- pression being taken. ‘There are appropriate appliances, such as a helical spring, fixed on the head of the press, whereby the platen raises itself when the pressure is not required. In order to bring the forme readily under the platen, and to withdraw it so that it may be inked and the sheet to be printed placed in position, the table is mounted on a carriage, that runs on two rails by turning a handle connected with two endless bands. The paper is fixed to certain marks on the tympan, a kind of metal frame hinged on to the carriage, when it is in asloping position. This ensures the paper being printed in the exact place required, The tympan, over which calico or parchment is stretched, is double, and contains within it a pad of paper or a piece of blanket, to moderate the force of the impression of the platen. To it is hinged another metal frame, the frisket, which is covered with paper, cut to correspond with the shape of the type forme on the press. The ink is applied with a cylinder or roller, which revolves in an iron frame, and 1s

PRACTICAL. |

eovered about an inch thick with a composition of glue and treacle or of glycerin or other substance. The ink is spread out with a %, palette knife or similar appliance on a table

Viz? adjoining the press, and by repeatedly re- le volving the roller over it, it becomes coated AK with an extremely thin film of ink.

The roller is then moved over the surface of the forme on the press, until sufficient ink has been trans- ferred to it. This is called rolling, and is a very important part of ptess-work, for if inefficiently per- tormed there will be too much ink on

gf} = ee

a mit

7 .

rms , the impres-

sion, or even blotches, which _.. we called monks, or the __-_. print will be too pale or “~~*2= grey in places, such im*~~ *—= perfections being called [| —— friars. The sheet of* —= ff paper to be printed is = —— ~~ next laid on the tym- ~~” pan, to pins Serving as guides. The frisket is folded down on the tympan, which is in turn folded down on the forme with the right hand, while with the left the handle is turned and the press carriage brought under the platen. The bar is pulled by the right hand, the handle turned the reverse way with the left hand, the carriage brought out again, the tympan raised, the frisket opened, and the printed sheet removed, the tympan being ready to receive another white sheet. The frisket serves, among other things, to keep the edges and parts of the sheet not required to be printed from being discoloured by eontact with the ink or the gh of the forme, and to aid in steadying the sheet when the tympan is depressed and in the removal of the sheet when it is raised. Such is a bare outline of the method of printing at a hand-press,—one necessarily imperfect from a technical point of view, but sufficient to indicate the essentials of the operation.

Another press which has been much used is the Columbian,—a name given to it by its inventor, Clymer, an American. The power is gained by an ingenious combination of levers, Two of these are connected by a rod with the bar handle, which is in itself a lever. The platen is attached to the head by a strong iron bolt, the descent being made steady and regular by vertical guides. It is counterbalanced by a powerful lever or beam, having an adjust- able weight shaped like an eagle, which raises it automatically. In the bar handle is a screw stop by means of which the length of the lever rod can be adjusted and its pressure, or the pull, per- fectly regulated.

Nine distinct processes have thus to be gone through in order to print one side of a sheet of paper ata hand-press :—(1) inking the roller, (2) inking the forme, (3) laying the sheet on the tympan, (4) folding down the tympan, (5) running in the forme under the platen, (6) taking the impression by depressing the platen, and then immediately afterwards allowing it to raise itself by means of the counterpoise or spring, (7) running out the forme, (8) lifting the tympan and frisket, and (9) removing the sheet. The object of successive improvers of the printing press has been to render the apparatus more automatic, or to substitute for it a “machine” that will reduce these nine operations to the minimum. In modern machines this has been effected to the extent of rendering necessary only three of them—(1) laying on or “feeding” the sheets, (2) applying the motive power, (3) taking off or delivering the sheets ; and rotary machines both feed and deliver theinselves auto- matically. Nearly all eylinder machines have a delivery apparatus, and quite recently an appliance for the automatie feeding to them of single sheets of paper has been invented.

With respect to the platen press we notice first that which is capable of being driven by a rotating shaft or wheel. It should be observed that the adoption of the rotatory principle was essential to the acceleration of speed. This was recognized by the projector of the machine? press, William Nicholson, and by Frederick Koenig, who first brought the invention into use and constructed a practical

Fic. 10.—Albion press.

1 The best account of its invention is contained in a series of articles by Mr William Blades in the Printers’ Register, 1883-84, and Th. Goebel’s

Friedrich Koenig und die Erfindung der Schnellpresse (Stuttgart, 1883). This last has heen translated into French by Paul Schmidt, F. Koenig et Vinvention de la Presse Mécanique (Paris, 1885).

1vPoGgch A-P HY

405, ,

press. The essential arrangements of every machine are four, their respective objects being (1) to feed in the paper, (2) to ink the forme, (3) to print the sheet, and (4) to deliver or take it off.

The treadle platen press is the simplest of machine presses capable Treadle power is not platen The type press,

of being worked by a wheel. When other motive available it is driven by a treadle, like that of a lathe. forme is usually secured by clamps on an almost vertical bed (fig. 11), and the platen rocks backwards and forwards, being thus brought in contact with the type ; Cae on the bed. Just before the impression is taken, the two surfaces are mo- mentarily parallel. The inking is effected by small composition rollers, ad- justed in a roller carrier swinging on a pivot. The rollers receive ink from a ‘fountain’ or duct of ink at the top of the machine, below which is an arrangement, such as a revolving disk, for dis- tributing the ink, The a constant motion of the 1G. 11.—Minerva press. rollers and of the revolving ink disk is equivalent to the manual movements of the operator who “rolls” at the hand-press, The rollers are carried by self-acting appliances over the face of the forme, and return to the ink table to be replenished with ink, after which the impression takes place. The sheet to be printed is placed in proper position on the platen, which is covered with paper or parchment, and is secured there during the move- ment of the platen by movable fingers called grippers. The platen on advancing brings the paper in contact with the type forme; after the printing it returns to its original position, when the sheet is removed and another sheet adjusted ready for being printed. The treadle platen press is only adapted for work on paper of small size, up to half sheet demy, but within this limit it is greatly superior to the hand-press. If sufficiently strong and well built, it gives a far more powerful impression, and it occupies about a sixth of the space. Its great merit, however, is its

superior speed. The hand-press, when worked by two men, one rolling the types and one pulling the handle of the press, produces only about 250 impressions per hour. The treadle press is worked by a boy, who has only to depress the treadle with his foot, and lay on and take off the sheets with his hands, and he can work at the rate of more than 1000 per hour. ‘The treadle press is also superior to the hand-press in the uniformity of its results, since the automatie inking ensures a greater regularity in the colour of the impressions than with the old hand-inking process. The ordinary or ‘‘double ” similar to the hand-press,

as double demy, and it had a perpendicular motion, being guided in grooves and worked by a connecting rod fixed to a cross beam and crank, which acquired its motion from the main shaft. In other respects the machine differed from the hand-press in having two type beds or coffins and two inking tables arranged at the ends of the carriage, which travelled backwards and forwards, being worked by a drum underneath. The paper to be printed was laid to marks on the frisket, and this was hinged on the tympan, which in turn was fastened to the end of the coffin by hinges or joints. The frisket and tympan were opened by running up bars at suitable positions. After a newly printed sheet was removed, another was placed on the frisket, which as the carriage moved ran down the bars and closed on the sheet, which then received its impression. This arrangement was dangerous to the boys who had to lay on the sheets.

Formerly it was thought that the very finest printing could not be done by a cylinder impressing a forme in the progress of its re- ciprocating motion, for that was liable to slur or blur the im- pression. Hence platen presses were employed for the best work. Of recent years engineers have brought the cylinder press to such perfection that there is not the slightest danger, under the super- intendence of a capable man, of any slur. Working quite as well as the platen press, the cylinder press is enormously quicker and more productive ; it requires less driving power ; and much better inking is obtained, which is all-important for fine woodcut print- ing. Accordingly, for even the best illustrated book-work, the platen power-press is now almost entirely superseded by the cylinder.

Cylinder machines are of two kinds,—(1) presses in which the type is on a flat plane and (2) those in which the type, or more eorrectly the impressing surface, is cylindrical. The first are called cylinder presses, the second—a development of the first—the rotary web presses.

The simplest kind of mechanical press is called the single-

XX, — 86

platen press was, in principle, very Double It was about 13 feet long. The platen, platen in the centre, was massive, as the machine printed sheets as large press.

Single- cylinder press.

Advan- tages of single- cylinder maehine over hand- presses.

706

cylinder or one-sided machine, which has been recently brought to the highest state of perfection by Mr Samuel Bremner. It is generally used for commercial and fine book-work on one side of the paper. There are different varieties of cylinder machines, distinguished by trade-marks or the names of their makers; but the general principles, apart from details, are practically identical. There isa strong cast-iron frame, with bearings to carry the cylinder, which runs across the machine transversely, nearly in the centre. The cylinder revolves by gearing connected with a main’ shaft, which also

works the other moving

parts. This shaft is turned

by a wheel for hand or steam power. The table

for 4

og

alice s! A : seme hey ‘ GAGE. rth

S— —

WW

W 3B

TW [2

pe DZ

Frc. 12.—Extra-colour Bremner machine, with sheet-flyers.

carrying the type is also provided with a flat inking board of wood or iron, used for distributing the ink. It travels backwards and forwards, that is, with a reciprocating motion, At one end of the machine is the feeding-board, on which the pile of paper to be printed is placed. The layer-on places each sheet against metal marks, con- sisting of rectangular pieces of steel or brass mounted on a bar under- neath, which rises and falls according as the sheet is being laid to and taken away from them, When placed against these marks, en- suring correct “lay,” the sheet is seized by grippers or light metal claws fixed on a bar inside the cylinder. These clutch the sheet and carry it forward round the cylinder, which in its revolution brings it forcibly in contact with the type forme moving forward underneath, when the impression is effected. Immediately after the grippers release their hold, and the sheets are removed singly by an attendant called a taker-off, or by a mechanical automatic arrangement called a flyer, and deposited on the taking-off board. At the end of the machine farthest from the laying-on board is fixed a trough, which contains the ink ; it is fitted with the duct roller of cast-iron, which revolves by means of a band or ratchet- wheel and pawl. A flat bar or knife with a thin edge is set up against the metal roller lengthways by adjusting screws, which regulate the passage of the ink, and permit a thin film to pass the knife. A composition roller, called a vibrator, is fixed underneath, which takes off the ink that has already been deposited on the duct roller and leaves a ridge or strip of it on the iting slab. As the carriage returns, this strip of ink is distributed on the inking table by rollers placed diagonally across the machine. The diagonal position gives them a

waving motion ; hence they are called wavers. The inking of the forme is done by another set of rollers called inkers, placed near the impression cylinder. The inking rollers receive their ink from what is distributed on the table and coat the type while it is passing underneath them.

Thus the nine operations of the hand-press requisite to print one impression are greatly reduced. The bed carrying the type to and fro from the point of impression moves mechanically, superseding the running in and out of the carriage by the rounce and handle of the hand-press. The inking table, although independent, forms part of the type table, and some of the rollers distribute and others ink, this again being done mechanically and without a second operator. The platen and the tympan, as well as the levers by which the impression is given, are in effect combined in the cylinder, which rotates by gearing, the pressure being applied during the motion of the table itself. The laying-on of the sheet

upon the tympan and folding it down on the forme are superseded by the presentation of the paper to the grippers ; and the taking-off of the sheet after raising the tympan is superseded by removing it when released by the grippers and laying it on the adjacent table, — both immeasurably easier operations and done much more rapidly, Indeed both laying-on and taking-off may be done automatically, as is explained below. The result is that, while two men are re- quired to print a sheet of book-work on one side of the paper at the speed of 250 an hour at the hand-press, ma- chines of this class worked by one operator print about 1200

O-

this com-

ness of the cylin- YY, 7; Aer machine , tj over that of Yj Z/ the press. By Yj Vj Ze’ the latter, the Y yj largest sheet prac-

fj tically that could be double

square inches; single-cylinder machines are now made to print 7’ eight sheet double crown, the Mi ~superficies of whiclt is 4800 square f¢” inches, These sheets being afterwards cut up into double crown sheets, the pro- ductiveness of the machine to the press would be, per hour, about 8000 to 250.

As already mentioned, a self-acting feeding apparatus has been invented for supplying single sheets to cylinder machines. The pile of paper is laid on a feeding board or table, between gauges. A pneumatic tube takes up one sheet at a time; it is then run down tapes to a point at which india-rubber fingers bring it to the side lay of the machine, and it is printed with perfect accuracy of register. Once started, the machine works automatically, and the services of both layer-on and taker-off are dispensed with.

\per hour. Even –

We may now describe that class of machines by which the paper Perfee!-

is printed on both sides, or perfected, during one passage through ing

the machine. has two impression cylinders, having a continuous rotary motion towards each other. The frame is necessarily long, usually about 15 feet, and the width of the machine about 5 feet, these dimensions depending upon the size of the sheet to be printed. The table or carriage is double, containing two beds for the two formes of type, to impress the two sides of the paper, and two distributing tables for the ink. At each end is a complete roller apparatus, consisting of duct, duct roller, vibrator, and wavers. Close to the large cylinders on each side are the inking rollers. The table has a reciprocating motion, as in a single-cylinder machine. The dis- tinctive feature is the ingenious manner in which the sheets are oa ei first on one side and then on the other. This is effected

y carrying them over cylinders and drums by means of tapes. The pile of sheets stands on a high table placed at one end. The sheet is fed into the apparatus and led round an entry drum; thence it is carried round the large right-hand impressing cylinder, and underneath this, on the table, which is moving at the same speed as the cylinder, is the inner forme properly inked. The paper thus receives an impression on one side. It is next led up to the

right-hand drum, which it passes over, the printed side of the sheet being then downwards. Continuing, it is brought under the second or left-hand drum and on to the left-hand impression cylinder, which it passes with the printed side still downwards, or next to the cylinder, exposing the other side to the type of the outer forme on the table underneath. The drums have thus re- versed the position of the paper: the side which was outside when passing the first forme is inside when passing: the second forme, which accordingly prints the sheet on the opposite or blank side. The sheet is finally run out by the tapes and delivered in the space between the large eylinders, seized by a taking-off boy, and deposited

The Applegath and Cowper or ordinary machine presses,

PRACTICAL. |

on a table or taking-off board. This press is known as the drop- bar perfecting machine, owing to a peculiarity of the arrangement by which the paper is conveyed into the tapes. In front of the feeding table is a rod or bar of steel, along which are fitted several metal disks or bosses about half an inch thicker than the bar itself, These can be shifted, by means of small screws, to any position along the rod to suit the size of the sheet to be printed.

: the end, which works round a wheel attached \ to a cam with a dip. Every time the << pulley drops into the dip, the bar de- scends upon the paper, which is laid to marks at the front; and the) bar, possessing a rotary mo- tion from the tapes, runs) the sheet between a roller

To this bar is fixed a short arm, with a pulley at |

¥ Fes O.G FAP AY

707

and a small drum on to the inner forme cylinder, as already stated. Other kinds of machines are distinguished as the web, having a web or a series of broad tapes which lie on the laying-on board and are fastened to a small drum underneath it. The drum has a series of small cogs, and when it is

forced forward it moves the web or tapes in the same direction. The shcet, having been laid to a back mark on the tapes, is propelled between two revolving rollers and thus taken into the machine, LE

There are several distinct types of per- fecting presses in use, but we can only notice one or two. In the Anglo- French machine, which was in- vented in England but im- J proved in France, grippers are used instead of tapes and

| |

the intermediate drums for conveying the sheet from one cylinder to the other. The cylinders are on a level, but alternately rise and iall, allowing the sheet to clear the forme. Quite recently a single- eylinder perfecting press has been invented. The cylinder is double the usual size and has two printing surfaces and a double set of grippers. Two sheets are printed at each revolution, the first being the white paper and the second the partly printed shect which has immediately preceded it. The sheet is fed in as to an ordinary single side press, printed on one side, taken off, reversed, again gripped, and perfected, when it is automatically delivered on the table.

It has been mentioned that 250 sheets or a token per hour, printed on one side only, re- present the work of two men at the hand-press, Two youths at a perfecting machine will ()_ complete from 1200 to . 2000 copies per hour, _—*” €) equal to 4000im- _---

—.

| book – work, | Marinoni

lex single-cylinder machine,

one side only,—an increase of about sixteenfold. This, however, does not represent the whole of the superiority of these machines. Sheets much larger than double crown (20 × 80 inches) can hardly be worked at a press ; the machine perfects a sheet nearly double this size—50 × 40 or four royal, so that the proportionate product of the machine to the press is about as 82 to 1.

Perfecting machines are not so much used for book-work as formerly. The single-cylinder machine has been brought to such perfection, and is so superior in its inking arrangements, that printers prefer it. In America nearly all machines are one-sided. For newspapers of limited circulation, however, the perfectin machine is well adapted. Complete copies of a journal are aanducen as soon as the machine is started; extra copies can be worked off while news- agents are waiting ; and a number of sheets need not be printed off on one side to be completed when a sudden demand arises.

Fig. 13 shows a new form of French perfecting machine for printing

the coms” (+5

Fia. 14.—Walter machine.

bined perfecting and duplex single-cylinder machine. The improve- ment in this machine over the perfecting two-cylinder machine de- seribed above consists in the alteration of some mechanical parts, so that the same machine can be used for printing sheets either on both sides or on one side only. It therefore serves the purpose of two single-cylinder machines or of one perfecting machine, the change from one to the other being very simple.

The rotary press differs essentially from the cylinder machine. In the former the printing surface and the impressing surface both rotate continuously, and the paper, —not cut up into single sheets, but carried between the two cylinders in a roll or web, like a ribbon,

—receives successively an impression on each side, after which it is cut up into sheets of the proper size and folded as it is run out, the sheets being deposited on a table ready for removal.

As representative of this class of machines we may take the Walter Walter press, whose mechanical arrangement is shown in fig. press.

14. The paper to be printed from, a continuous web about 8000 yards in length, is wound on a small roller at P. It is passed over a tension roller, and then over the damping cylinders W, W, and thoroughly wetted on both

sides. The damping cylinders are hollow, and contain sponges from which the water is distributed by centrifugal force, the outside of the cylinder being covered with

Printing from webs of paper.

Roller composi- tion.

blankets. The paper next passes on to the printing cylinders T, T’, on which the printing surface—not composed of movable types but of stereo plates—is fixed, and to the impression cylinders I, 7’. The printing cylinders contain each the plate in curvilinear shape, constituting the forme for one side of the paper. The web is led between the printing and the impression cylinders, as shown by the dotted line. After being printed on one side by JZ, it travels round J and receives an impression on the other side from 7’, thus being “‘perfected.” It then passes on to the cutting cylinders K, K, one of which has a serrated knife, which enters the paper, and on the application of tension divides the web, causing the peculiar saw-like edge seen in copies of journals printed on rotary machines. The paper is next carried in over tapes to the point where the completé severance takes place. Soon after they encounter a pendulous frame, which delivers them in two piles on to the tables x, , whence they are removed. There is an ink supply trough a, which is connected with the distributing rollers by a revolving metal roller 6. The distributing rollers of metal are marked f, g, h, 7, and the rollers which ink the forme, made of the ordinary composition, are marked k, k.

The average rate of speed of the Walter press is 12,000 per hour, the sheets being printed on both sides. In this apparatus every- thing is automatic: there is self-feeding and self-delivery, the web of paper at one end being transformed into properly printed single shects at the other. The machine requires only one man to super- intend its general working, including the replacing of the web when printed and the removal of the successive piles of sheets. In respect of speed, if the perfecting machine is to the hand-press as 32 to 1, the rotary will be to the hand-press as 96 to 1. The Walter press, requiring a space of only about 14 feet by 5, is not more remarkable for its speed and economy than for its simplicity of construction and its

compactness. And the same remark applies to several other machines, such as the Victory, the Hoe, and the Prestonian, which have since come into use. ‘Their general appear- ance is that of a collection of small cylinders or rollers, through which the paper seems to fly at railway speed, issuing forth in two descending torrents of sheets accurately cut into lengths. Without such machinery the prodigious issues of some of the morning journals would not be possible. One daily paper averages a circu- lation of more than a quarter of a million. This enormous number of sheets are printed in about four hours, owing to the type matter being stereotyped and placed on several presses.

Printing from webs of paper instead of single sheets will probably be adopted in the future for all newspapers and even books of large circulation. Hand-feeding is limited by the ability of the operator to lay the sheets on the feeding-board with the necessary accuracy. One chief obstacle to the more general adoption of rotary printing is the expense of stereotyping the type formes. Although a machine has been constructed in which movable types can be placed round the periphery of an impressing cylinder, it cannot compete with the Walter and other presses using stereo plates, The problem of printing directly from flat formes of ordinary types, as well as from stereotypes, with paper supplicd in the roll, is one that may be commended to engineers. The saving in stereotyping in many cases would be very considerable ; but, even where this is not an object, the readiness and ease with which the type could be manipulated would ensure for such an apparatus admission into offices where the large rotarics of the present day are inadmissible. It would also enable illustrated journals to be printed from the web. The pictures introduced into some of our daily journals are very rude when compared with those in periodicals printed on flat- bed machines. This is owing partly to the distortion that arises when the cast from a flat block is accommodated to a curved sur- face, partly to the fact that stereotyping does not give the fine and delicate reproduction that electrotyping supplies, and partly to the imperfect inking powers of the machines. Quite recently a plan has been patented whereby curved electrotypes of pictures can be fastened to blank or depressed portions of an ordinary curved stereo plate ; but the method is not always practicable. With a flat-bed machine the forme to be printed from might be of a com- posite kind,—partly movable types, partly stereotype, and partly electrotype. One

difficulty of constructing a web printing machine with a flat bed is that of turning the sheet so that it may be printed almost simultaneously on both sides. It would have to be reversed by the continued rotary movement of the cylinder. This, however, is quite within the limits of practicability, and experiments are now being madc to devise a machine with this feature.

For about three centuries after the invention of printing the formes were inked by leather balls. When machine presses were introduced, their earliest inventor tried to use cylinders covered with leather ; but the plan was most unsatisfactory, until a subse- quent inventor adopted a composition of glue and treacle, which was cast into cylinders having an inner ‘‘stock” of metal or wood. For about half a century this composition was used exclusively for both hand and machine presses. Since then glycerin has been in- trodueed for roller making. Hansard’s recipe, in use when the 8th edition of the present work was issued, was—glue 4 parts,

eee OG ae ae ie

[PRACTICAL.

treacle 12 parts, Paris white 1 part. Buta much better composi- tion is now formed of glue 10 parts, sugar 10 parts, and glycerin 12 parts. The glycerin has the property of always keeping the roller moist and soft, while the tendency of glue and treacle is to dry and harden.

Printing ink has peculiar qualities, It is required to change from Qualiti the soft adhesive state in which it is applied to the type to that of of prix a perfectly hard and dry substance after being transferred to the ing ink, paper. This change of condition must be under control, and when i air is excluded the ink should keep in good order any length of time. During its application to the type its solidification should be as slow as possible, and unaccompanied by the emission of any unpleasant or deleterious odour. It ought not to affect the rollers, and, having been applied to the paper, its action should be confined to a very slight penetration, just sufficient to prevent its detach- ment without injuring the surface of the paper. It must dry into a hard, inodorous, and unalterable solid. The ingredients of ink are burnt linseed or other oil, resin, and occasionally soap, with various colouring matters ; that for black ink is usually lamp black, but charcoal and

other cheaper materials are occasionally introduced. Ink is removed from types and blocks by detergents, such as potash and pearl ash ; benzine is also well adapted for the purpose.

Colour Printing. _ The apparatus previously described is intended for monochrome Printing printing, whatever be the shade of the ink. When two colours or in two more have to be printed in one composition, there must be a colons, separate type forme or separate engraving, and a separate printing, for each. Many attempts have been made to print several colow's simultaneously by dividing the trough or manipulating the rollers. All these have been more or less unsuccessful, with the exception of a press invented by Mr W. Conisbee, which prints from type formes in two colours. In construction it is somewhat similar to the ordinary single-cylinder machine, but is provided with two sets of inking apparatus, including ductor, wavers, and inkers, each of which acts totally independent of the rest. The cylinder is placed in the centre of the machine and makes two continuous revolutions, giving an impression for each colour. There are two type formes, each containing only the lines to be worked in one of the colours. These are in two beds adjoining one another, and, the circumference of the cylinder being equal to the length of one bed, one colour is printed by the first revolution and the other by the second. The sheet is thus printed twice without being released from the grippers, whereby perfect register is ensured. 'he speed is slow, averaging 300 to 400 complete iinpressions per hour.

The method by which the beautiful coloured supplements issued Chromo occasionally with illustrated newspapers are printed may be slightly typo- referred to. A copy of the artist's painting is first of all made, on graphy. a scale regulated by the size of the reproduction. This being sup- plied to the engraver, an outline or key block is made and proofs pulled. It is now necessary to determine the tones of colour to be used,—a process demanding great experience. The key block will, if printed first, afford a guide for the registration of the subse- quent printings ; sometimes, however, that is reserved for a later stage. The colours on which the subsequent printings are done must be of a transparent nature. The blocks are sometimes pro- duced by the typographic etching proccss, which gives a softness, delicacy, and variety unattainable by the graver. The blending of

the colours is the most delicate task the printer has to under- take. A large picture is often printed in ten or more workings, some of them in their turn intensifying and bringing previous colour workings into stronger relief, others giving shape and form to the picture. Almost to the end of the process, however, the picture will want vitality ; its outlines will be hard and bare, or vague and undefined, according to the sequence of the colours. Another working may give grey tones where wanted, and may increase the depth and transparency of various parts. A deep flesh working may have a marked effect on the development ; and, near the close of the series, if the entire colouring is found to be too warm, it may be corrected by over-printing very nearly the whole subject. Chromo-typography has undoubtedly made great strides during the past twenty years, its best results being shown in the coloured prints for illustrated journals. For the production of pictures for commercial and artistic purposes chromo-lithography Chromo- is generally resorted to ou account of its relative economy. In litho- lithography for typographic purposes the line has to be eut and the graphy. space on both sides removed so as to leave the line alone to be charged with the ink, or the white space has to be etched away with an acid. The printing of isolated points too is easily effected from a stone, whercas most minute labour is necessary to engrave them. Typographic etching has here, however, been of great assistance.

The differences of printing surface caused by the colours are met and overcome by the lithographic stone with great facility, even when the spaces are largest and most uneven ; it is quite the con- trary in regard to typography, whcrein the work has to be charged with ink to a greater extent according to its size, and the quantity

of ink requisite varies with the fineness of the strokes and of their distance apart. Owing to this we see in most letter-press poly- chromatic prints a deficiency of transparency, of half-tints, of depth of ground, and of general harmony. Even if it were possible to make chromo-typography as easy as clromo-lithography, there would still be the obstacle of its very much greater cost, owing to the expense of the engraving and of the casts from the key block. In chromo-lithography the designer can repeat the designs for

the different stones by a process that costs almost nothing. Also in the process of multiplying the blocks the deviation in the register of the successive colours is practically unavoidable. In lithography the surface to be printed is nearly level; hence the sheet is not shifted and twisted or stretched in places, as it is in typography, owing to the alternate closeness and absence of contact between the sheets and the raised and depressed surface of the block. Whatever success the letter-press metliod has attained of late is owing to the invention of electrotyping and process blocks, and to the improve- ment of machinery. For to print these pictures enormous strength and rigidity, and the most perfect arrangements for securing register, are absolutely essential.

Recent Changes.

We will now give a cursory glance at the changes that have been effected during the last twenty-five ycars in the processes and the products of the art of printing. That these have been of a most drastie kind may be gathered from a comparison of the appliances figured and described in the 8th or the previous edi- tions of the Lncyclopedia Britannica with those referred to above. The hand-press has been almost completely superseded by the machine press. Cylindrical impression has displaced platen impres- sion, and the finest book-work and woodcut work are done on a cylinder press. In book-work, indeed, other significant changes have taken place. Whereas formerly it was deemed essential that the paper should be damped before printing, in order to get a delicate and perfect impression, some of the finest books and periodicals are now printed on dry paper, highly calendered, even the illustrated journals and some of the evening papers being so worked. Then, it was thought: necessary for the safety of the type to interpose a thick soft blanket between it and the pressing surface, whether cylinder or platen; now, it is found equally safe, and far more conducive to a good impression, to make the packing as thin and hard as possible. Then, fine woodcuts were ‘‘brought up” by the use of many ‘‘overlays” and “underlays” to correct inequalities in the surface of the blocks and emphasize some of the parts; now, although the art of ‘‘making ready” has been brought to great

TO eA iT Y

and Baskerville. Yet as a matter of fact their best faces have been reproduced with perfect success by modern founders. From a mechanical point of view the impression given by the best machine presses to-day is undoubtedly superior to that of the hand-presses ofthe 17th and 18th centuries. If modern books suffer in any respect on comparison with those of former times, which are so highly prized by bibliophiles, it is owing to their want of general artistic ensemble, and not to any deficiency in mechanical execution. The: artistic taste of English printers has, however, been greatly raised during the last few years, and a very interesting movement is goin g on which must produce important results in the future. In 1880

Mr Andrew W. Ther of London organized the Printers' Specimen Printers' Exchange, a scheme intended to promote the technical education Speci- of the working printer. Each contributor to the exchange furnishes men Ex- periodically a certain fixed number of typographical specimens, all change.

alike, which are collated into sets, and again distributed to the members, each of whom gets a volume, consisting of one copy of the work of each of his fellow-contributors. By this plan they become acquainted with the progress made by their brethren, and good taste and good work are fostered and mutually encouraged. The eighth quarto volume, issued in 1887, contains nearly 400 fine specimens of typography by as many different hands. It forms also the best criterion of the character of the jobbing work done at the present day, not only in England but abroad, for the scheme is of an international character.

jobbing work. Much of this improvement is due to the superior material with which the printer is furnished, and especially to the great variety of ornamental types which have been introduced. The specimen books of the principal type-founders are splendid volumes, containing several thousand different faces. The best work of German printers is noteworthy for its studied neatness and attractiveness, tasteful and harmonious arrangement of colour and tint, a characteristic and conscientious attention to details of finish, exact register, and beauty of impression, American work excels in originality of design, brilliancy of colour, and perfect finish. English

printers are closely following the best points of each ot these schools of typography. There is a distinct leaning at present to the German style, but with little slavish imitation. The dis- tinctness of English typography is maintained, while the beautiful German combination borders, produced with such profusion of late, are judiciously utilized, often in conjunction with American type. In the arrangement of colours English printers prefer the quiet harmonious tints of the Germans to the bold striking contrasts of the Americans.

OL The results of the revival in Artistic artistie printing during the last decade are especially noticeable in printing.

perfection, the fewcr and thinner the overlays employed the better. And it may not be irrclevant to point out that the printing of wood- cuts has improved in the same degree as the engraving of them.

The vast extent of the operations of the printing fraternity Division at the present day is in remarkable contrast to those of the 15th of century, when the making of books was an art like the sculpture labour.

inting ;

Perhaps, however, the most remarkable change is that made in newspaper printing. The highcst achievement mentioned in the article "' Printing" in the 8th edition of this work was the six- cylinder Hoe machine, The makers of that apparatus subsequently contrived machines of eight and ten cylinders. But they have now becn wholly superseded by the rotary presses on the Walter principle. The hand feeding-in of single sheets is entirely done away with, and all newspapers of considerable circulation are printed from long reels of paper, uncut, as originally made at the paper-mill. The maxi- mui number of copies which a machine of this class would print with ten feeding attendants and four taking away attendants would be 8000 an hour. For folding the 8000 printed copies five folding machines and at least two attendants would be required to keep pace with the printing machines. Thus nineteen men were required to print and fold 8000 copies per hour with the best machines as late as 1870. With a rotary machine doing the same or a larger quantity of work only two men are required. The cost for print- ing and folding 1000 copies by the Hoe machine was estimated at Is.

4d., while with the rotary it is only about 2d. Hence the saving of wages to a newspaper issuing 200,000 copies a day on 313 working days would be nearly £3700 ina year. This, in connexion with im- provements in paper, or rather the discovery of cheaper materials, bringing the price of ‘‘ news” down to about 2d. per Ibh—one quarter of its price a very few years ago—accounts for much of th® enter- prise of modern journalism. For some time after the abolition of the paper duty there was a loss on the circulation of a large-sized penny journal; now there is a considerable gain. Lately rotary presses for small jobbing work have been constructed; and_ before long the rotary principle will probably be rendered available for illustrated periodicals and fine book-work, printed from webs or reels of paper instead of single sheets. Great improvements have

. also been made in type-founding, and the Roman and Italic founts

now used by English printcrs are equal to those of any country in the world. It is sometimes said that English éditions de luxe are not equal to those of the French, and that this is owing to the inferiority of the founders. This is, however, not quite true: some of the best French books are printed from English types or from types cut in the English manner. It is also the fashion to compare modern printed books with those of the Elzevirs

of statues or the designing of buildings. Now, printing isa manu- facture in which large capital and the greatest division of labour are essential. The old printers were almost entirely independent of other craftsmen. From the casting of the type to the mixing of the ink they did nearly everything for themselves. Gradually the different departments of the art were constituted separate and re- cognized trades. The type-founder was probably the first to seccde from the concern; then printers delegated to others the making of presses ; afterwards the ink and the rollers found separate and distinct manufacturers ; and there arose a class of persons who,

though belonging to other trades, made printing appliances a

specialty, such as printers’ smiths, printers’ joiners, and printers’ engineers. Subdivision again has taken place in regard to the. operations which chiefly appertain to printing. The same mau was formerly able to set up and print off the types, to fold the sheets perhaps, and even to make them up into

books. The opera- tive printer has now become either a pressman or a compositor.

If he is of the first denomination, he may be classed according as he works at press or machine. If he is a machinist, he may super- intend or be a “minder,” or he may be a layer-on or a taker-off of the sheets. Ifheisa minder, he may understand only book machines or only news machines; he may know all about platens and little about cylinders; or of cylinders he may know only one kind. En- tircly novel machines create a new class of artisans. There are men perfectly compctent to manage a Walter press who are ignorant how to work two-colour or fine book-work machines. In the eompositor’s department division of labour is carried out to a still minuter degree.

An old-fashioned printer would set up indiffcrently a placard, a title-page, ora book. At the present day we have jobbing hands,

book hands, and news hands, the word ‘‘hand”’ suggesting the factory-like nature of the business. There are jobbing hands who confine themselves to posters, and know little about general work even in this department. Book hands comprise those who set up the titles and those who set up the body of the work. Of these latter again, while one man composes, another, the “maker-up,” arranges the pages. Even the art of fitting up the furniture or “dressing the chase” is given to the ‘‘quoin-drawer overseer.” News hands include advertisement hands and general hands. Some men work by day, others altogether by night; some do general

Old style printing.

Depart- ments of a print-

ingestab- lishment,

book-work composition ; others set up head-lines ; others make up the galleys ; others ‘‘ prove” them.

Old Style Printing.

Within the last few years there has been an interesting revival of the old style of book printing, It owes its origin to Mr Whit- tingham of the Chiswick Press, who in 1848 was desirous of printing in appropriate type a work of fiction the diction of which was supposed to be that of the reign of Charles II. As the original “old face” matrices of the first Caslon had been preserved, a fount was cast from them, and on getting a proof with good ink, on good paper, from a modern press the impression was found to be far superior to specimens printed from the original fount. Sinee then the demand for old-faced characters has steadily inereased, and all founders now supply imitations of the old types. Comparing the old face and the modern characters, the latter are more regular in size, lining, setting, and eolour,—using these words in the technical sense of the founder; they have finer strokes and serifs, and produce in the page a more regular and sparkling general effect. At the same time it may be eonceded that legibility has been to a certain extent sacrifieed to beauty and general effect. About 1882 an eminent French printer made a number of experiments to ascertain what it is that constitutes legibility in type, and found that people read with less fatigue according as the letters—(a) are rounder, (0) are more equal in thickness, (c) have shorter upstrokes, (d) are dissimilar to each other, and © are well proportioned to their own body. Drawings of letters from old books were visible and legible at a distanee at which modern letters could not be distinguished. The revival has also brought about the re-introduction of antique head-pieces and tail-pieces, vignettes, and initial letters, which have been reproduced from old books by photography and typo- ctehing, For this kind of printing white paper has given place to toned, of a straw tint, which is often more agreeable to the eyes than the excessively bleached paper which was hitherto the fashion. Also hand-made instead of machine-made paper has to a large extent eome into vogue. Its characteristic is the “deekle edge”, which distinguishes it from the clean-cut edge of machine papers, and is highly prized by some bibliophiles. When extreme verisimili- tude is required, this kind of printing is done on the blank leaves of real old books, some of which have been ruthlessly destroyed for this modern craze. On the whole, however, the revival of old style printing has been beneficial: it las encouraged printers to study the more artistic attributes of the productions

of the great printers of the past, and has educated the public taste by presenting them with examples of the best kind of book-making.

Printing Establishment.

A large book-printing establishment contains many distinct de- partments, some of which have not been previously referred to and may here be summarily mentioned. The reading department, some- times called the closet, consists of a number of small apartments, each furnished with a desk, a couple of stools, and a shelf for books of referenee, and having for its occupants the reader and his reading-boy. here is also the warehouse, where all the printed and wiprinted sheets (or ‘‘white paper” as it is called, whatever its colour) are stored. Adjacent to this are folding, cutting, hot and cold pressing, drying, and other branches, each employing separate classes of artisans. Another department is the machine- room, where, arranged in long rows with an avenue between, are the various printing machines. The men in this part of the estab- lishment wear cotton vestments, covering all their other apparel, and caps, invariably made of paper, something like clerical birettas. The machine overseer has his box and keeps an account of the produce of each machine. Under him are the persons whose business it is to cut out overlays for the cut or illustrated formes. These men are in their way artists, for to them is attributable much of the beauty and perfeetion of working of each block that goes through their hands. They have by them three or four prints or ‘‘ pulls” of the block, and their tools eonsist of scissors, paste, a sharp knife or two, and perhaps a razor-like blade set in a wooden handle. Their work is to deepen the shadows, raise the lights, lower the edges, and perform a hundred other offices for a block. Standing sentry over each machine is the machine minder; under him are the takers-off and layers-on. The engine-room and boiler-house are close by, and higher up may be the hand-press-room,—provided these appliances are used. Here are the pressmen and their appren- tices. There is the storekeeper’s department, fitted up with shelves, racks, and drawers, for the orderly storage of type and materials. The plate-safe or plate-room is the repository of the stereo and electro plates, each plate being kept wrapped up in paper, with a distinctive index number marked thereon. There are also rooms for casting rollers, stereotyping rooms, drying rooms for paper, hydraulic press- ing rooms, sinks for washing formes, and lifts for conveying them

TYR. See Adstr, vol. i, p. 211.

TYRE, the ancient 4y, Greek T¥pos, the most famous | of Sur, with about 5000 inhabitants, built round the har-

from one department to another. There will possibly be several composing-rooms, sueh as the ’stab, where all the men are paid on established weekly wages, the piece room, where they are paid by results, and the apprentiees’ room. There may be rooms where particular jobs are done, especially if weckly periodicals are turned out, and the names of these designate the rooms. At the end of each room is the overseer. It is also a eommon practice for a Compos. number of men to form themselves into a kind of business partner- tors’ ship called a companionship or ’shtp. All the transactions of the partner. eompositor may be with his own clicker,—the workman who is ships, selected to keep the accounts of the partnership. From him the compositor receives his portion of copy and the necessary direc-

tions, and to him he gives the matter when it is eomposed. At

the end of the week he “‘ writes his bill,” delivers it to the clicker,

and from the latter receives at pay time the wages he has earned,

The clieker gets the matter proved or ‘‘ pulled” by the proof:- puller, who usually does nothing else but pull proofs. He will

then send the proof with the eopy to the overseer, and the overseer

sends it to the reading department to be corrected. The proof,

when corrected, is returned through the overseer (who retains the

copy) to the elicker, and he gives it to the compositor who set it

up. When the type is corrected a revise is pulled, whieh goes through the same hands to the overseer again ; and then it is de- spatched to the author, editor, or publisher. In a well-ordered eomposing-room strict silenee is enjoined upon the workmen, . Among the industrial pursuits there is none more monotonous and |

more exacting, none demanding more patience, sustained industry, and power of endurance than the compositor’s art. In a large newspaper office the quantity of types picked up in a few hours 1s marvellous. No better illustration of this could be given than the fact that several recent issues of the 7’imes have consisted of three sheets or twenty-four pages, each page comprising six columns. In one of these issues 84% of the 144 columns were filled with ad- vertisements, 2559 in number, set in extremely small type; the remaining 594 columns contained articles, reviews, letters, reports, and paragraphs. The total length of the column aggregate was 264 feet (62 more than the height of the London Monument). If the matter comprised in the paper, instead of being broken up into columns, had been set in one coutinuous line it would have reached one mile 950 yards. The number of separate types used in printing this issue was calculated at over two millions, and the quan of | in

printed matter was reekoned to be equivalent to that containe two octavo volumes of 480 pages each. The literary and mechanical staff of a first-rate London daily newspaper, excluding casual re- porters and unattached writers on various subjects, aggregates about 300 persons.

Bibliography.—On the practice of the art and its auxiliary processes, see South- ward, Dictionary of Typography (84 ed., London, 1875, 8vo ; with the Literary Almanack by William Blades), and Practical Printing: a Handbook of the Art ‘ of Typography (3d ed., London, 1887, 2 vols., 8vo). This last is the fullest work on the subject in the English language, embracing composition, press work, stereotyping, and electrotyping, and the warehouse department of a printing office. Gould’s Letterpress Printer (2d ed., Middlesborough, 1880, 12mo) has a short introduction by Southward, giving a sketeh of the origin and progress of the different typographical processes and appliances from the beginning. See also F. J. FE. Wilson, Typographic Printing Machines and Machine Printing (3. ed., London, 1883, 8vo); List of Technical Terms relating to Printing Machinery (London, 1882, $vo); Noble, Machine Printing (London, 1883, 8vo) and Principles and Practice of Colowr Printing (London, 1881, 8vo); and Wilson, Stereotyping and Electrotyping (London, 1880, $vo). This last contains a history of stereo- typing and electrotyping by Southward. The best works in French are— Lefevre, Guide Pratique du Compositeur et del Imprimeur (Paris, 1855-72, 8vo, two parts; includes machine work, stereotyping, and electrotyping); Claye, Manuel del Apprenti Compostteur (3d ed., 12mo, Paris, 1883); and Monet, Les Machines et Appareils Typographiques, swivi des Procédés d’Impression (Paris, 1879, 8v0). The best German work, and one which from its completeness supersedes all others, is Waldow’s Illustrierte Encyklopddie der graphischen Kiinste (Leipsic, 1884, lar. 8vo), containing 2798 articles and 581 illustrations, with a list of Ger- man books on typography, &c.

Periodicals.—No trade or interest in the world has, perhaps, so many repre: sentatives in the press as printing, The journals which record its progress and describe its products are wnrivalled in their excellent mechanical attri- butes, some equalling the highest class of book-work printing and using paper of the most luxurious description. Their literary character is usually worthy of their mechanical excellence, and they comprise an immense

collection of facts and speculations on the subjects involved. They also attract: a class of writers who in time become specialists and do the most valuable work in historical investigation. The Printers' Register (monthly), begun in 1863, the oldest of the English printing trade journals, contains several valuable contributions by Mr Williain Blades, the biograplier of Caxton, suel as "' Numismata Typo- graphiea," "Bibliotheca Typographica," 'Books and their Enemies," "The Inventor of the Steam Printing Press," and ''Early Type Specimen Books." The Paper and Printing Trades Journal (quarterly), begun in 1872, is printed in old style fashion, and reproduces in tone as well as in manner some of the best examples of the French and Italian schools in head and tail pieces, vignettes, and ornamental initials. In France appear L'Imprimerie (semi- monthly) and the Bulletin deV Imprimerie; in Germany, Archiv fur Buchadrucker- kunst (monthly) and Journal fiir Buchdruckerkunst; in Italy L' Arte della Stampa. The United States has the Inland Printer (Chieago) and the American Bookmaker (New York). The fullest list of such journals, past and present, is Louis Mohr's Die pertodische Fachpresse der Typographie (Strasburg, 1879). There is also an extended list, with historical annotations, in Bigmore an Wyman's Bibliography of Printing. (J. SO.)

of Phcenician cities, is now represented by the petty town

bour at the north end of a peninsula, which till the time of Alexander's siege was an island. The mole which he con- structed to reach the island city has been widened by de- posits of sand, so that the ancient island is now connected with the mainland by a tongue of land a quarter of a mile broad. The greatest length of the former island, from north to south, is about 2 of a mile and its area about 142 acres, a small surface for so important a town. The re- searches of 'Renan seem to have completely refuted the once popular idea that a great part of the original island has disappeared by natural convulsions, though he believes that the remains of a line of submerged wall at the south end indicate that about 15 acres more were once reclaimed from the sea and have been again lost. Confined to this narrow site—on which, moreover, place was found for the great temple of Melkarth with its courts and for all the necessities of a vast trade, for docks

and warehouses, and for the great purple factories which in the Roman time were the chief source of wealth and made the town an unpleasant place of residence (Strabo, xvi. 2, 23 ; Pliny, v. 76)—Tyre was very closely built ; Strabo tells us that the many-storied houses were loftier than those of Rome. In the Roman period the population overflowed its bounds and occupied a strip of the opposite mainland, including the ancient Paletyrus. Pliny gives to the whole city, con- tinental and insular, a compass of 19 Roman miles ; but this account must be received with caution. In Strabo's time the island was still the city, and Paletyrus on the mainland was 30 stadia off, while modern research indicates an extensive line of suburbs rather than one mainland city that can be definitely identified with Paletyrus. The ancient history of Tyre has been dealt with in tho article Pu@nicia ; the topography is still obscure owing to the paucity of Phoenician remains. The present harbour is certainly the Sidonian port, though it is not so large as it once was ; the other ancient harbour (the Egyptian port) has disappeared, and is supposed by Renan to have lain on the other side of the island, and to be now absorbed in the isthmus. The most important ruins are those of the cathedral, with its magnificent monolith columns of rose- coloured granite, now prostrate. The present building is assigned by De Vogué to the second half of the 12th century, but the columns must be older and may have be- longed to the 4th-century church of Paulinus (Euseb., ZH. #., x. 4). The water supply of ancient Tyre came from the powerful springs of Ras al-'Ain on the mainland, one hour south of the city, where there are still remarkable reservoirs, in connexion with which curious revivals of Adonis worship have been observed by Volney and other travellers, Tyre was still an important city and almost impregnable fortress under the Arab empire. From 1124 to 1291 it was a stronghold of the crusaders, and Saladin himself besieged it in vain. After the fall of Acre the Christians deserted the place, which was then destroyed by the Moslems. 'The present town has arisen since the Metawila occupied the district in 1766.

TYROL, a province of Austria, with the title of " county," lies between 10° 10' and 13° E, long. and 45° 40' and 47° 45' N. lat., and is conterminous on the north-west with the Austrian province of Vorarlberg, on the north with Bavaria, on the east with Salzburg and Carinthia, on the south-east and south-west with Italy, and on the west with Switzer- land, The last-named

country forms in the lower Engadine an angle penetrating deeply into Tyrol. The country is entirely mountainous, being traversed by the main chain of the Alps. It may be roughly divided into the valley systems of the Lech and the Inn to the north of the chain and of the Etsch or Adige (Vintschgau) and the upper Drave (Puster valley) to the south (see Aps). Its area is 10,316 square miles ; its population in 1880 was 805,176,

wil

inclusive of military, showing an increase of nearly 4 per cent. since 1869. Of these 432,062 spoke German, 360,975 Italian or some Romance dialect, and the re- mainder some form of Slavonic; 565,468 persons were able to read and write, 56,728 to read only, leaving about 223 per cent. of the total population, including children, wholly illiterate. Education is strictly compulsory ; but the schools are for the most part closed during the summer months, when all available hands are required in the fields and on the mountain pastures. Agriculture and forestry occupy about two-thirds of the entire population. Every householder owns a piece of cultivable land in the valley, while his goats, sheep, or cattle are driven with those of his neighbours to the mountain pastures (Alpen, Almen) which belong to the commune. Each commune has a president chosen by an elected committee of householders. The man selected cannot decline, but is bound to serve his term of office. The tenure of property is for the most part of the nature of absolute ownership. In 1880 100,393 persons of both sexes were returned as proprietors, 10,283 as tenants. The chief products are milk, butter, and cheese, Of grain-crops maize, which is largely grown in the Inn valley and Vintschgau, holds the first place. Wheat is grown in the lower valleys, barley and rye in the higher, the latter in favourable spots to a height of over 5000 feet. Potatoes are found above 6000 feet. In the Etsch valley, or district about Meran and Botzen, red and white wine of excellent quality is produced (in 1884 about 6,500,000 gallons). Of late years the cultivation of fruit has much developed, especially in south Tyrol. Silk is also produced (in 1885 1268 tons of cocoons). Game is still plentiful in the remoter valleys. In every district there are a certain number of licensed hunters, the prin- cipal game being red deer, chamois, hares, blackcock, ptarmigan, &c. Mining occupies about one-fifth of the population. At Hall near Innsbruck are important salt works, and at Brixlegg in the same valley copper and lead

are smelted. Iron is worked at Fulpmes in the Stubai valley and at Prad in the Vintschgau. “Zine is found at the head of the Passeir valley. In the Middle Ages gold and silver were found in sufficient quantities to make it worth while to extract them. About 4340 square miles of the country are covered with forest, chiefly pine, fir, and larch, which, however, is felled in a recklessly wasteful way. The capital of the county is IyysBrucx (q.0.).

The general average of comfort in Tyrol is high, and the cost of living is very moderate. The pcasant and his family are clothed in stuffs spun and woven at home, from the wool and flax produced in their own neighbourhood. The people are for the most part somewhat reserved in manner, but courteous and hospitable. ‘The savage fights which used to be a favourite pastime among the younger men are now almost, or quite, a thing of the past. In some valleys there is a good deal of musical talent ; and companies of Tyrolese singers, particularly from the Ziller valley, travel about all over Germany. The zither is a favourite instrument, especially in the southern valleys ; in the northern the guitar is more fre- quent. The religion is almost exclusively Roman Catholic ; but in Innsbruck there are some hundreds of Protestants. The priests belong chiefly to the peasant class, and receive their education at Brixen and the university of Innsbruck. This contains about 600 students in the various faculties and possesses a library of some 60,000 volumes. There is a diet, or landtag, with its seat at Inns- bruck, consisting of thirty-four representatives of the peasants, thirteen of the citizens, four of the prelates, ten of the nobles, three of the chambers of commerce at Innsbruck, Botzen, and Roveredo, and one of the university of Innsbruck. To the impcrial reichs- rath Tyrol sends cighteen members. Tyrol is garrisoned by troops recruited exclusively in Tyrol and Vorarlberg, and never, except in time of war, employed outside these provinces, Besides this there are the landwehr and the landsturm or militia,

History.—The country corresponding to modern Tyrol first ap- pears in history when the Rhetians were subdued by Drusus and Tiberius. This nation, by some held to have been cognate with the Etruscans, occupied the valleys from the source of the Rhine to that of the Drave. To the north of them were the Vindelici, and to the east the Norici; the former were apparently separated

of Ulster, is bounded N. and W. by Donegal, N.E. by Londonderry, E. by Lough Neagh and Armagh, and §, by Monaghan and Fermanagh. Its greatest length from

from thein by the ridges north of the Inn, the latter by the water- shed between the Etsch and the Drave. Pliny (. A, ili. 24) gives the names of all the tribes. After their subjection by Rome

these races became Romanized and shared the fortunes of the empire. Their position on and about the roads by which the central Alps are most easily crossed laid them especially open to inroads, and before the end of the 3d eentury the Alemanni had traversed the country. In the course of the next tliree centuries this people settled in the north-western valleys. But the peopling of the greater part of the province by Teutons was effected by the Baiu- varii, who were by the year 600 established throughout nearly the entire remainder of German Tyrol, some of the Romanized Rheetians probably being left, mixed with a few Alemannic stragglers, in the upper Vintschgau, while the Lombards pressed up from the southward and took possession of the district around Trent. The ‘Alemanni and Baiuvarii, governed immediately by their own dukes, owned a kind of allegiance to the kings of the Franks, and ulti- mately became in the time of Pippin and Charles incorporated in the Frankish monarchy. The country was then divided for ad- ministrative purposes into counties (comitatus, Grafschaften), under counts, whose rank, at first merely official, in course of time became, with their office, hereditary. The most powerful among them appear to have been those of the Vintschgau, where a fertile soil and a climate less rigorous than that of the northern valleys allowed more development of wealth. In the 12th century the eounts of Tirol begin to be conspicuous. This was a small district near Meran, taking its name from the ancient castle of Tirol, known in the later Roman time as Teriolis. These, in the course of the next century, acquired the lordship over nearly all the territory now contained in the province of Tyrol south of the main chain of the Alps, besides the advocacy (Sehirmvogtet) of the wealthy sees of Brixen and Trent. Meantime the valley of the Inn and those adjoining it had

come under the dominion of the counts of Andechs, a Bavarian family, who were also titular counts of Meran. The last of these died without issue in 1248. His wife's sister, Adelaide, married to Meinhard, eount of Gorz, was left in sole possession of nearly the whole of the province. Their son Meinhard II. (1257-1295) was connected with some of the most powerful houses in Germany ; and, being a man of great ability and equal un- scrupulousness, he succeeded in acquiring the few outlying portions of territory and castles still belonging to the smaller nobles, and thus consolidated Tyrol within the limits by which it has ever since been bounded. Carinthia and Styria also formed part of his domains; but their connexion with Tyrol has never been other than a personal one. Meinhard II. was succeeded in turn by his sons Otho and Henry. The latter (1810-1835), a weak and ex- travagant prince, scems to have done much towards organizing the government of the country. His elder daughter Margaret, known in Tyrolese history and legend as Die Maultasche, ‘‘ the Pocket-mouth," the heiress of his territories, took as her second husband (in 1342) Louis of Brandenburg. Their son Meinhard IIL, who succeeded to the county on his father's death in 1861, died in 1363. Margaret thereupon made over all her possessions to the house of Hapsburg, and since that time Tyrol has formed part of the hereditary dominions of the archdukes of Austria (see AUSTRIA). The fidelity of the ‘‘yrolese to their eounts has for many centuries been proverbial. The Brenner has more than once offered them a secure line of retreat and the mountains a rampart of defence. Maximilian I. (1498-1519) had an especial affection for Tyrol. He conferred on the province its present title of Die gefirstete Graf- schaft; he profited on more than one occasion by the refuge it afforded ; he spent much of his time within it; and at his death he directed that a sumptuous monument to himself should be erected in the Franciscans' church at Innsbruck. 'Tyrol has more than once been the scene of sharp fighting. In 1499 the men of Gran- biinden or the Grisons (see SWITZERLAND) invaded the country and defeated the Tyrolese in the neighbourhood of Mals. In 1708 Max Emmanuel, elector of Bavaria, penetrated the upper Inn valley, but was driven back. During the wars of the French Revolution French and Austrian armies met more than once within the limits of the province. By the treaty of Pressburg, 1805, the province was transferred to Bavaria. On the renewal of war between Boua- parte and Austria in 1809 the people rose and expelled the Bavari- ans, and afterwards, under the leadership of Andrew

Hofer, an innkeeper of the Passeir valley, repeatedly defeated the French, Bavarian, and Saxon forces. Innsbruck was more than once taken and retaken; and on 12th August Hofer, after defeating Marshal Lefebvre, was installed in the capital ascommandant. But the ill- success of the Austrian arms elsewhere prevented any support from being sent, and by the treaty of Schonbrunn in October the Tyrolese were again given up to their new rulers. Hofer, being captured through treachery, was shot at Mantua, 20th February 1810. On the fall of Bonaparte, Tyrol reverted to the house of Hapsburg.

See A. Jiiger, Die Verfassung Tirols, Innsbruck, 1881-85 ; Egger, Die Tiroler

und Vorarlberger, Innsbruck, 1872-79; Steub, Dret Sommer tn Tirol, Stuttgart, 1871 (2d ed.). (A. J.B.)

TYRONE, an inland county of Ireland, in the province

north to south is 46 miles and from east to west 60. The total area in 1881 was 806,658 acres or about 1260 square miles. The surface is for the most part hilly, rising into mountains towards the north and south, but eastwards towards Lough Neagh it declines into a level plain. Run- ning along the north-eastern boundary with Londonderry

are the ridges of the Sperrin Mountains (Sawell 2236 feet

and Meenard 2064 feet). Farther south there are a range of lower hills and Mullaghearn, to the north of Omagh (1890 feet). South of Clogher a range of hills (1265 feet) forms the boundary between Tyrone and Monaghan. On each side of the Mourne river near Omagh rise the two pictur- esque hills Bessy Bell and Mary Gray. The Foyle forms

a small portion of the western boundary of the county,

and receives the Mourne, which flows northward by Omagh and Newtown Stewart. The principal tributaries of the Mourne are the Derg, from Lough Derg, and the Owen- killew, flowing westward from Fir Mountain, The Black- water, which is navigable by boats to Moy, rises near Five- Mile

Town, and forms part of the south-eastern boundary of the county with Monaghan and Armagh, With the ex- ception of Lough Neagh, bounding the county on the east, the lakes are small, also few in number. Lough Fea is picturesquely situated in the north-west, and there are several small lakes near Newtown Stewart. The Ulster Canal runs along the southern boundary of the county from Lough Neagh to Caledon, The substratum of the northern mountains is mica slate interspersed with primary lme- stone. Yellow sandstone appears in the north-west, in the centre towards Omagh, and in the south-west, where it plunges into Fermanagh. The greater portion of the central area of the county is occupied by Old Red Sand- stone. The Tyrone coal-field (6 miles long by 1 to 2 broad) extends between Lough Neagh and Dungannon, all the measures being represented. ‘The coal-field is much broken by faults and has been worked chiefly near the surface, and generally in an unskilful manner ; the principal pits are near Dungannon and at Coal Island. The coal is bituminous. There are also indications of copper, iron, and lead.

Agriculture.—The hilly portions of the county are unsuitable for tillage ; but in the lower districts the soil is remarkably fertile, and agriculture is generally practised after improved methods, the county in this respect being in advance of most parts of Treland. The excellent pasturage of the hilly districts affords sustenance to a large number of young cattle. The total number of holdings in 1885 was 27,958, of which 16,469 or nearly two-thirds were each between 5 and 30 acres in extent (8865 between 5 and 15 and 8104 between 15 and 30). Only 48 were above 500 acres; 642 were be-tween 100 and 500 acres, 2378 between 50 and 100, 3937 between 30 and 50, 2578 between 1 and 5, and 1921 did not exceed 1 acre. There were 237,528 acres under crops, including meadow and clover (255,281 acres in 1876), 818,550 acres under grass, 1765 fallow, 9378 woods, 72,071 bog and marsh, 109,539 barren mountain land, and 30,112 water, roads, fences, &c. ‘The area under corn crops decreased between 1876 and 1885 from 115,788 acres to 105,348,— oats from 114,223 aeres to 104,040, and wheat from 1166 to 1018. The areas under the other corn crops are very small and fluctuate eonsiderably. The area under green crops between 1876 and 1885 decreased from 64,971 to 59,387 acres,—potatoes from 44,001 to 40,649, turnips from 17,157 to 15,531, mangel wurzel from 750 to 487, and other green crops from 38063 to 2670. Flax (28,901 acres in 1876) covered

16,864 acres in 1885. The area under meadow and clover in 1876 was 50,671, and in 1885 56,484, but there has been no increase since 1878. ‘The number of horses decreased be- tween 1876 and 1885 from 25,088 to 23,185, of mules from 71 to 49, of asses from 1124 to 921, of cattle from 176,841 to 168,072, of sheep from 45,274 to 44,434, and of pigs from 49,012 to 39,530. On the other hand, the number of goats increased from 7950 to 8984, and of poultry from 674,826 to 737,859.

According to the latest landowner’s Return (1876), the eounty was divided among 2787 proprietors owning 775,285 acres at a tot. annual value of £426,224, the average value per acre being nearly

Average number of emigrants annually was 3085.

TY R—TY T

lis. Of the proprietors 1070 owned less than 1 acre each, the total The estimated extent The following possessed over 10,000 acres each—duke of Abercorn 47,615 acres, earl of Castlestuart

distributed amongst them being 272 acres, of waste land was 4000 acres.

32,615, earl of Caledon 29,236, commissioners of church tempor-

alities 28,002, Sir John M. Stewart 27,906, Arthur W. Cole Hamilton 16,683, representatives of Sir William M‘Mahon 16,326, Sir William

Verner 16, 043, earl of Belmore 14,359, Thomas Arthur Hope 13, 996,

Lord Dorchester 12,608, Michael Smith 10,968, Louisa Elizabeth

De Bille 10,455, and Thomas R. Browne 10,125. Communication.—Besides Lough Neagh and. the Ulster Canal,

Tyrone has the river Foyle, which is navigable for small craft to a point opposite St Johnstone, and thence by artificial cutting to S

trabane, and the Blackwater, which is navigable for boats to Moy. The Great Northern Railway intersects the county by Dungannon, Pomeroy, Omagh,

Newtown Stewart, and Strabane.

Manufactures.—The manufacture of linens and coarse woollens

(including blankets) is carried on. Brown earthenware, chemicals, whisky, soap, and candles are also made. There are a few breweries and distilleries, and several flour and meal mills. of enterprise the coal and iron might aid in the development of a considerable manufacturing industry.

Administration and Population.—The county comprises 8 haro- nies, 46 parishes, and 2164 townlands. Formerly it returned two

members to parliament, the borough of Dungannon also returning one; but in 1885 Dungannon was disfranchised and the county

arranged in four divisions—east, mid, north, and south—each returning one member. It is in the north-western circuit, and as- sizes are held at Omagh and quarter-sessions at Clogher, Dungan- non, Omagh, and Strabane. There are fourteen petty sessions districts within the county and portions of four others. is in the Belfast military district.

From 312,956 in 1841 the population had decreased by 1861 to 238,500, by 1871 to 215,766, and by 1881 to 197,719 (96,466 males and 101,253 females). In 1881 there were 109,793 Roman Catholics (119,937 in 1871), 44,256 Protestant Episcopalians (49,201 in 1871), 38,564 Presbyterians (42,156 in 1871), 3597 Methodists (3115 in 1871), and 1509 of other denominations (1857 in 1871). The nuinber of persons in the county who could read and write in 1881 was 98,764, who could read only 38,788, the remainder (60,172) being wholly illiterate. Twenty-two persons could speak Irish only and 9796 Irish and English. For the seven years ending 1885 the The population of the principal towns in 1881 was—Strabane 4196, Omagh (the county town) 4138, Dungannon 4084, and Cookstown 3870.

History and Antiquities.—Anciently Tyrone was included in the portion of Ulster made ‘‘sword-land” by the Scots. It became a principality of one of the sons of Niall of the Nine Hostages, and from his name—Eogain—was called Tir Hogain, gradually altered to Tyrone. From Eogain were descended the O’Neals or O’Neills and their numerous septs. The family

had their chief seat at Dun- gannon until the reign of Elizabeth, when it was burned by Hugh O'Neill to prevent it falling into the hands of Lord Mountjoy. The earldom of Tyrone had been conferred on Con Bacagh O'Neill by Henry VIII., but he was driven into the Pale by one of his sons Shan, who with the general consent of the people was then pro- claimed chief. From this time he maintained a contest with English authority, but his last remaining forces were completely defeated near the river Foyle in May 1567. During the insurrection of 1641 Charlemont Fort and Dungannon were captured by Sir Phelim O'Neill, and in 1645 the Parliamentary forces under General Munro were signally defeated by Owen Roe O'Neill at Benburb. At the Revolution the county was for a long time in the possession of the forces of James II. Dungannon was the scene of the famous volunteer convention in 1782. Raths are scattered over every dis- trict of the county. There is a large cromlech near Newtown Stewart, another at Tarnlaght near Coagh, and another a mile above Castlederg. At Kilmeillie near Dungannon are two circles of stones. The monastic remains are of comparatively little interest. There are still some ruins of the ancient castle of the O'Neills, near Benburb, and among other ruined old castles mention niay be made of those of Newtown Stewart, Dungannon, Strabane, and Ballygawley.

TYRTAUS, Greek elegiac poet, lived at Sparta about the middle of the 7th century B.c. According to the legend current in later times, he was a native of the Attic deme of Aphidnez, and was invited to Sparta, on the suggestion of the Delphic oracle, to assist the Spartans m the Second Messenian War. It is difficult, if not im- Possible, to determine the element of truth in this story. Herodotus at least either did not know, or disbelieved, the tradition, which meets us first in Plato (Laws, i. 629A), to the effect that, although Tyrtzus was by birth an

Athenian, he had the Spartan citizenship conferred upon

But for the lack

The county

him (see Herod., ix. 35). From Plato down to Pausanias we can trace the gradual growth and expansion of the legend. Ephorus is the first to call Tyrtzeus a lame poet ; by later generations he is represented as a lame school. master. Basing his inference on the ground that Tyrteeus speaks of himself as a citizen of Sparta (Fr. 2 v. 3), Strabo (viii. 4, 10) was inclined to reject the story of his Athenian origin, regarding the elegies in question as spurious. On the whole, perhaps, the conjecture of Busolt (Gr. Gesch., p. 166) comes nearest to the truth: the entire legend may well have been concocted during the 5th century in connexion with the expedition sent to the assistance of Sparta in her struggle with the revolted Helots at Ithome. It is possible, as Busolt suggests, that Tyrteeus was in reality a native of Aphidna in Laconia. However this may be, it is certain from the fragments of his poems that he flourished during the Second Messenian War (circ. 650 B.C.)—a period of remarkable musical and poetical activity at Sparta (see TERPANDER)—that he not only wrote poetry but took part in the actual service of the field, and that he endeavoured to compose the internal dissensions of Sparta. by inspiring the citizens with a patriotic love for their fatherland and its institutions.

We possess in all about twelve fragments of Tyrtzus's poetry, varying in length from one to forty-four lines. They are preserved by Strabo, Lycurgus, Stobzeus, and others. We may divide them into two varieties, accord- ing to the metre and dialect in which they are composed. The first class consists of elegies in the Ionic dialect, written partly in praise of the Spartan constitution and King Theopompus (Evvoyla), partly to stimulate the Spartan soldiers to deeds of heroism in the field ('Yrojcas —the title is, however, later than Tyrteus). The interest of the fragments preserved from the Kvvouia is mainly historical : they form our only trustworthy authority for the events of the First Messenian War (Fr. 5, 6, 7). The "Yzro6jxas possess considerable poetic merit, in spite of the occasional monotony of their versification. Addressed toa nation of warriors, they paint in vivid colours the beauty of bravery and the shame of cowardice; there are also lines in them which reveal the soldier as well as the poet, ¢.g., fr. 10, 31-32. One striking feature is the genuinely Greek feeling for plastic beauty, showing itself in the beautiful picture of the youthful form lying dead upon the battle-field (Fr. 10, 27-30, and 12, 23-34; see also Symonds's Greck Poets, i. p. 74). The popularity of these elegies in the Spartan army was

such that, according to Athenzeus (xiv. 630 F), it became the custom for the soldiers to sing them round the camp fires at night, the polemarch rewarding the best singer with a piece of flesh. Of the second class of Tyrtzeus's poems, marching songs, written in the anapestic measure and the Dorian dialect, the re- mains are too scanty to allow of our pronouncing a judg- ment on their poetic merit.

See Bergk, Poctw Lyrici Greci, vol. ii. pp. 8-22, Leipsic, 1882. Fragment 10 (reOvduevae yap Kaddv, &e.) has been translated into English verse by Campbell.

TYTLER. The surname of three Scottish writers, principally on historical subjects.

I, ALEXANDER Fraser Tyrnmr (1747-1813), Lord Woodhouselee, Scottish judge, was the eldest son of William Tytler (see below), and was born at Edinburgh on 15th October 1747. After passing through the High School, he was sent in 1763 to a school at Kensington taught by Dr Elphinston, the translator of Martial's Epigrams. He returned to Edinburgh in 1765, skilled in Latin versifica- tion, and with a competent knowledge of Italian, and a taste for drawing and natural history. He was called to the bar in 1770, His first work, a supplement to the Dictionary of Decisions, undertaken on the suggestion of

XXIIT. — go

714

Lord Kames, was published in 1778, and a continuation appeared in 1796. In 1780 Tytler was appointed con- joint professor of universal history in the university of Edinburgh, becoming sole professor in 1786. In 1782 he published Outlines of his course of lectures, afterwards extended and republished under the title of Elements of General History. The Elements has passed through many editions, and has been translated into several European languages as well as into Hindustani. The lectures them- selves were published in 1834 in Murray's Family Inbrary. In 1790 Tytler was appointed judge-advocate of Scotland, and while holding this office he wrote a Treatise on the Law of Courts-Martial. In 1801 he was raised to the

bench, taking his seat (1802) in the court of session as Lord Wood-houselee. He died at Edinburgh on 5th January 1813.

Besides the works already mentioned, he was the author of several papers in the Mirror, the Lounger, and the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh ; he also wrote Life and Writings of Dr John Gregory ; Essay on the Principles of Translation, 1790 ; a disserta- tion on Final Causes, prefixed to his edition of Derham's Physico- Theology, 1799; a political pamphlet entitled Jreland profiting by Example, 1799; an Essay on Laura and Petrarch ; and The Life and Writings of Henry Home, Lord Kames, 1807.

9. Patrick Fraser Tytiur (1791-1849), as the son of Lord Woodhouselee and grandson of William Tytler, may be said to have inherited a taste for literary and his- torical pursuits. He was born at Edinburgh on 30th August 1791, and was educated chiefly at the High School and university, being called to the bar in 1813. His earliest literary effort appears to have been a chapter or two contributed to Alison's Zravels in France (1815); and his first independent essays were papers in Blackwood's Magazine. Inheriting the family talent for music, and with a facility in throwing off humorous little poems and songs, he made several contributions to Thomson's Select Melodies of Scotland, 1824. In 1819 he published the Life of James Crichton of Cluny, commonly called the Admirable Crichton, a second edition appearing in 1823. This was followed by a Memoir of Sir Thomas Craig of Riccarton, 1823 ; an Essay on the Revival of Greek Lntera- ture in Italy, and a Life of John Wicklif, published anonymously, in 1826. The History of Scotland was un- dertaken at the suggestion of Sir Walter Scott, and occupied Tytler for nearly twenty years, in the course of which he removed to London for convenience of research. The first volume appeared in 1828, and the ninth and last in 1843. The original investigations on which the work was founded gave it an authority which no previous history of Scotland possessed, and the clear and graphic style made it inter- esting and popular. The last few years of his life were spent in physical prostration and mental depression, and he died at Great Malvern on 24th December 1849.

During the progress of his History a large amount of other work came from his pen, as the following list shows :—Lives of Scottish Worthics, for

Murray’s Family Library, 8 vols., 1831-33 ; Histori- cal View of the Progress of Discovery in America, 1832, and Life of Sir Walter Raleigh, 1838, for the Edinburgh Cabinet Library ; Life of Henry VILL, 1887 ; England under the Reigns of Edward Vi. and Mary, from original letters, 2 vols., 1839 ; article “ Scotland” in the seventh edition of the Encyclopxzdia Britannica (aftcrwards published separately as a school history) ; Motes on The Darnicy Jewel, 1843; on the Portraits of Mary Queen of Scots, 1845 (privately printed) ; and Memoirs of the War carried on in Scotland and Ireland, 1689-91, by General Mackay, edited in conjunction with Hog and Urquhart, and presented to the Bannatyne and Maitland Clubs in 1883.

3. Wintiam Tyrier (1711-1792), of Woodhouselee, writer on historical and antiquarian subjects, was the son of Alexander Tytler, writer in Edinburgh, and was born in that city on 12th October 1711. He was educated at the High School and the university, and, having adopted his father’s profession, was in 1744 admitted into the society of Writers to the Signet. While successfully practising as a lawyer, he found time to devote attention to historical

investigation. In 1759 he published an Inquiry, Eistori- cal and Critical, into the Evidence against Mary Queen of Scots, and an Examination of the Histories of Dr Robertson and Mr Hume with respect to that Evidence. This work, which warmly defended the character of the queen, met with great success. Four editions, the later ones con- siderably enlarged, were published in the author’s lifetime ; and it was translated into French. In 1783 he published the Poetical Remains of James the First, King of Scotland, to which he added a dissertation on the life and writings of the royal author. He wrote an essay on “Scottish Music,” which was appended to Arnot’s History of Edin- burgh. His “ Dissertation on the Marriage of Queen Mary | to the Earl of Bothwell” and “ Observations on the Vision, | a Poem,” appeared in the Z’ransactions of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland (1791-92). A paper in the Lounger, on “ Defects of Modern Female Education,” and an Account of Fashionable Amusements in Edinburgh in the Seventeenth Century complete the list of his works. He died at Edin- burgh on 12th September 1792.

TYUMEN, a district town of West Siberia, in the government of Tobolsk, is situated at a point where the chief highway from Russia across the Urals touches the | first navigable river (the Tura) of Siberia. A railway passing through Ekaterinburg and the principal iron- .

|

:

works on the eastern slopes of the middle Urals connects Tyumefi with Perm, the terminus of steamboat traffic on the Kama and Volga. The Tura being a tributary of the Tobol, which joins the Irtish, a tributary of the Ob, Tyumefi has regular steam communication with Omsk and Semipalatinsk by the Irtish (steamers penetrating as b far as Lake Zaisan in Dzungaria); with Tomsk, Barnaul, 7 and Biysk, in the Altai, by the Ob and the Tom ; with Irbit—the seat of the great Siberian fair—by the Tura and the Nitsa; and by the Tobol, the Irtish, and the Ob with the Arctic Ocean and the fisheries of the lower Ob. Tyumefi stands also at the western extremity of the Siberian highway which goes wa Omsk, Tomsk, and Krasnoyarsk to Irkutsk. In summer the Tura sometimes falls so low that steamers have to stop 90 miles off, pass- | engers and goods being taken thence to Tyumen in lighter vessels. The town is well built, and stands on both banks of the Tura, which is here spanned by a bridge. The portion on the low left bank is inhabited by the poorest class and is often inundated ; the best houses are on the high right bank. The streets are unpaved, but the houses (principally wooden) are for the most part inclosed by gardens. The people, who are famed throughout Siberia for their good looks, have always been renowned for their industrial skill. Woollen cloth, linen, belts, and especially boots and gloves, are manufactured to a large amount (70,000 pairs of boots and 300,000 pairs of gloves annually). Tyumeii carpets, although made in the simplest way and with the plainest tools, have a wide renown in Russia and Siberia, and recently have appeared in the markets of western Europe as of Oriental origin, All kinds of metal wares are made in small workshops. Sheepskins and various kinds of cloth are extensively manufactured, and the leather prepared at the tanneries (100 in number) is extensively sold all over Siberia, the Kirghiz steppe, and Bokhara. An establishment has recently been opened for the construction of barges, and a paper-mill, the

first im Siberia, was opened in 1886. The trade of Tyumen is ex- ceeded only by that of Irkutsk and of Tomsk. In addition to its primary schools Tyumefi has a “real” school. The population, which is of a fluctuating character in summer, is differently estimated at 13,000, 14,500, and 18,000. TZARSKOYE SELO. See TsaRSKOYE SELO. TZETZES, JoANNES, a voluminous Byzantine writer of the 12th century. See Grexce, vol. xi. p. 140 sg.

-

715

U

U holds the twenty-first place in our alphabet. The

corresponding place in the Greek alphabets was occupied by Y (with some slight variations of form). The form in the Italian alphabets was generally V, These three are only modifications of one original; but they are independent symbols with us, though Y does not represent

any sound otherwise unrepresented. It will be most con- venient to describe the three forms once for all.

With T we reach the end of the original Phcenician The remaining symbols —no fewer than six with

alphabet. u’, four in the completed Latin alphabet—are accretions, either modifications of old symbols for greater exactness or old symbols themselves which had fallen out of their proper place and were added again. needed to represent the important vowel sound u. We have already seen that the Greeks employed the Phcenician symbols for the breaths which they did not want as symbols for the vowels which they did want.

for u. But vau was already employed for w, which was

a living sound in early Greek ; the form used was F (the

so-called digamma), the origin of our F. What then was the origin of the symbol for x ? find the two forms Y and V, e.., in inscriptions of Thera. Now the Moabite form of vau is Y, which resembles the Y more than F. It is difficult to see why the presumably oldest Phoenician form should appear, not in the sixth place of the Greek alphabet, but at the end, where it must have been an arbitrary addition; and, although the Y form could be derived from F (middle steps are found), it is not easy to get F from Y. We may suppose that the two symbols, F and Y, were obtained by the Greeks from independent Pheenician alphabets, the first being kept by those Greeks who required a symbol for w, and did not at first need any special sign to distinguish (which in the earliest Greek times known to us had the value of German ui) from 0; while the others took the form Y to express the modified «, and probably never really adopted the F, except as a numeral; it does not appear even in the very old Abu Simbel inscription written by the Ionian mercen- aries of Psammitichus. It is noteworthy that in that in- scription both the forms Y and V appear, whereas in those of Thera and Melos we have sometimes the one sometimes the other, but not both in the same inscription, and a study of the writing leads to the conclusion that the Y was felt to be the true (z.c., the older) form, but that V was used more frequently for the sake of simplicity.

At Rome the single form V denoted both the vowel x and also the consonantal w, F retained its place as sixth in the alphabet, but with the value of J, which was un- known to the Greeks; a peculiar form, C, in which the middle stroke has gone to the bottom, seems to have been affected by its neighbour E; this is found in Etruscan, Umbrian, and Samnite inscriptions ; it has, however, the value of w; while a curious symbol 8 appears at the end of the Etruscan alphabet, and is also used in the Eugubine tables, with the value of f; the origin of this is uncertain. It may be a rounded form of the second symbol in the digraph FH (i.e. FH) by which the sound F is indicated in a very old inscription (see Rhein. Mus., xlii. Beit this is so, the Latin alphabet has the first member of the digraph, the Etruscan has the second. Next, the symbol Y was added (together with Z) in the Ist century B.C. to Tepresent more exactly, in borrowed words, the sound of Greek upsilon.

The first new symbol was

Thus we should have expected that the Phoenician vau would have been used

In the earliest Greek we

Lastly, the form U was differentiated from V. It is the uncial form, and so belongs to the general transition from the pointed to the rounded character which conduced to greater convenience of writing. Examples of it may be seen in the article on PALHOGRAPHY ; see the specimen of Latin uncial of the 5th or 6th century (vol. xviii. p. 153), and the half-uncial of the Lindisfarne Gospels, about 700 A.D. (¢hid., p. 159). It was clearly a matter of convenience to have separate symbols to represent sounds so distinct as wand v; but the application of the two symbols seems to have been due to chance rather than design. The form V remained in use at the beginning of words, whereas w, which was the uncial and cursive form, naturally was used rather in the middle; by degrees the initial form was ap- propriated to consonants,—perhaps, as Dr Taylor suggests (Alphabet, ii. 189), because the consonant is commoner at the beginning of words, or for some other reason, while the medial form was connected with vowels.

The sound which U denotes is produced by “ rounding ” the lips to the furthest extent consistent with a clear vowel-sound, and by raising the back of the tongue higher than for any other rounded sound. It has two varieties (like all other vowels) according as the position of the tongue is more or less tense, producing thereby a narrower or a wider aperture for the voice to pass through ; whence the sounds are technically called “narrow” and “wide” respectively. The narrow sound is heard in English only when the vowel is long, as in “ book,” “ rule,” but in northern English (Scotch) “book” may be heard short, The wide sound is heard in “ full,” “good.” The digraph 00 is commonly used for the w sound, and attests the fact that the original sound of 6 has frequently passed into a, as in “ good,” “ food,” é&c., written ‘* gode,” “fode” in Middle English ; sometimes, however, the oo has come by analogy into words where is the original sound, as in “room,” M.E. “roum,” O.E. “ram.” Original has com- monly passed into the aw sound, spelt in English ow or ow, as in “how,” “house,” ‘ mouse,” “bower,” for O.E. alias”? “his,” “mis,” “bir.” According to Mr A. J. Ellis, words derived from the French had in Chaucer’s time the sound of

French uw; and Sir John Cheke's statement "cum duke, tuke, lute, rebuke, Sux, tux, Ave, peBv« dicimus, Grecum v sonaremus," seems strong for the same practice in the 16th century. In the 17th century the modern pro- nunciation of was 7u in "muse," "duke," " mute," " pure" had come in. Hence also we may explain the substitution of u for yin some genuine English words, as " busy " (orig. bysig). At the same time begins the corruption of u to the (so-called) 2 sound in "but," "shut," é&e.; this is not aw sound at all, but the neutral vowel as heard indiffer- ently in "but," "sun," "son," "blood"; it is often con- founded by writers with the true % heard in " pull" and in the northern pronunciation of "but," "shut." For the history of the German " modified" w (spelt «i, but origin- ally we) see under Y,

UBEDA, a town of Spain, head of an administrative subdivision in the province of Jaen, stands on a gentle Slope about 5 miles from the right bank of the Guadal- quivir, and about 22 miles to the east of the Menjibar station on the railway from Madrid to Cordova. Under the Moorish rule it was a place of considerable conse- quence, its population being said to have at one time numbered 70,000. Some portions of the old walls, with towers and gates, still remain, but none of the public buildings are of great age, the oldest church, that of San

Salvador, dating from 1540-56. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 18,149.

UDAIPUR [Ooprvrors], or MEwAr, a native state in Rajputana, India, with an area of 12,670 square miles. It extends from 23° 49' to 25° 58' N. lat., and from To 1 to 75° 52′ E. long, and is bounded on the N. by the British territory of Ajmere; on the E. by the native states of Bundi, Gwalior, Tonk, and Partabgarh ; on the 8, by Banswara, Dungarpur, and Mahi Kantha ; and on the W. by the Aravalli Mountains, separating it from Marwar and Sirohi. The greater part of the country is level plain. A section of the Aravalli Mountains extends over the south- western and southern portions, and is rich in minerals, but the mines have been long closed. The general inclination of the country is from south-west to north-east, the Banas and its numerous feeders flowing from the base of the Aravalli range. There are

many lakes and tanks in the state, the finest of which is the Dhebar or J aisamand, with an area of nearly 21 square miles; it is considered to be the largest sheet of artificial water in the world. There are only two metal roads in the state; the Nimach State Railway passes through the north-eastern part.

In 1881 the population, exclusive of 51,076 Bhils, was 1,448,144 (males 772,685, females 670,459); Hindus numbered 1,321,521, Mohammedans 43,322, Jains 78,171, and Christians 130. The only town with over 10,000 inhabitants is Udaipur, the eapital (38,214). This city is picturesquely situated on a lake 2000 feet above sea- level, and faces wooded hills. It contains the royal palace, which is a noble pile of granite and marble, built on the crest of a rocky ridge overlooking the lake, city, and valley. There are no manu- factures of any importance in the state, and the crops as a rule only suffice for local wants. The principal imports are salt, piece goods, groceries, metals, medicines, sugar, ivory, and tobacco ; and the exports are mostly confined to turmeric, gur, cotton, indigo, til, opium, and cattle. The total income of Udaipur in 1885-86 was £259,624. The state was taken under the protection of the British Government in 1817, and it pays an annual tribute of £20,000. The family of the raja of Udaipur ranks highest in dignity among the Rajput chiefs of India.

UDAL (Danish ode) is a kind of right still existing in Orkney and Shetland, and supposed to be a relic of the old allodial mode of landholding existing antecedently to the growth of feudalism in Scotland. The udal tenant holds without charter by uninterrupted possession on payment to the crown, the kirk, or a grantee from the crown of a tribute called scat (Danish shat), or without such payment, the latter right being more strictly the udal right. Udal lands descend to all the children equally. They are con- vertible into feus at the option of the udallers.

UDALL, Nicwotas (b. 1505-d. 15561), author of the earliest extant regular English comedy. Udall was a typ- ical man of the Renaissance in England, a schoolmaster by profession, a classical scholar, a translator of Terence and Erasmus, and a writer of pageants and interludes. He was high in favour at court, wrote verses for the city pageant exhibited at Anne Boleyn’s coronation in 1533, and was honoured by Mary in 1554 as one that had

“heretofore showed and mindeth hereafter to show his diligence in setting forth of dialogues and interludes before us for our regal disport and recreation.” The severity of his discipline at Eton, where he was headmaster, has been immortalized by the quaint lines of one of his pupils, Thomas Tusser. The exact history of the production of his comedy Ralph Royster Doyster is not known. A printed copy wanting the title-page came to light in 1818, and we know that it was licensed to be printed in 1566. Itisa distinct advance in construction on the Merry Interludes of John Heywood, but it is not a comedy in the strict

English sense, being, like the interludes, essentially farcical

; 1 The date of Udall’s death is sometimes erroneously given as 1564, in which year his play of Hzekias was performed at Cambridge before Queen Elizabeth. He was buried at St Margaret’s, Westminster, on 23d December 1556 (see memoir in Cooper’s edition of Royster Doyster).

U DA—

ves

in motive, character, and incident. Although an imitation of the Latin comedy, it is far from being a servile imita- tion, and abounds in fresh fun and cleverness. It has been twice reprinted,—by the Shakespeare Society (with a memoir by Mr Cooper) and in Arber’s Reprints.

UDINE, a town of Italy, in the province of Udine, ina wide plain near the foot of the Carnic Alps, on the Roja, 84 miles by rail north-east from Venice and 49 miles north-west from Trieste. It is enclosed by an imposing wall of con- siderable antiquity, some 4 or 5 miles in circumference, and fortified with towers. In the centre, on an eminence, | stands the old castle, at one time the residence of the patriarchs of Aquileia, and now used as a prison. Grouped | around this is the old part of the town, with narrow crooked streets, some of which are lined with arcades. The cathedral, which is a Romanesque building with fine pillars, and an hexagonal tower bearing 14th-century sculp- tures, contains some interesting examples of native art (by Giovanni Martini da Udine and others). The church of S Maria della Purity has frescos by Tiepolo. On the principal square stands the town-hall,

built in 1457 in the Venetian-Gothic style, and skilfully restored since a fire in 1876 ; opposite is a clock tower resembling that of the Piazza di San Marco at Venice. The archiepiscopal palace and Museo Civico, as well as the municipal buildings, have some valuable paintings. Several of the palaces of the nobility have striking architectural features, and the town is adorned by many beautiful public walks. The leading industry of Udine is silk-spinning, but it also possesses manufactures of linen, cotton, hats, and paper, tanneries, and sugar refineries, and has a considerable trade. The population in 1881 was 23,254.

Udine is the Vedéaum of Pliny ; it was then a municipium, but quite an inconsiderable place compared with Forum Julii (Cividale) 11 miles to the east, or Aquileia 22 miles to south-south-east. In the Middle Ages it became a flourishing and populous city ; in 1238 the patriarch Berthold made it the capital of FRivL1 (9.2.), | and in 1420 it became Venetian.

UEBERWEG, Frizepricu (1826-1871), best known by | his History of Philosophy, was born on the 22d January) 1826 at Leichlingen, in Rhenish Prussia, where his father | was Lutheran pastor. His mother, left early a widow, devoted her scanty means to the education of her only son. Ueberweg passed through the gymnasium at Elber- feld, and studied at the universities of Gottingen and Berlin. In 1852 he qualified himself at Bonn as privat- docent in philosophy. His System of Logie, published in | 1857 (English translation 1871), and his essay On the . Authenticity and the Order of the Platonic Writings, crowned by the Imperial Academy of Vienna (published 1861), con- tributed to draw attention to him as at once a scholar and a thinker. In 1862 he was called to Konigsberg as extra-ordinary professor, and in 1867 he was advanced to the ordinary grade. He married in 1863, and on the 9th June 1871 he died prematurely.

The chief work of his later years was his compendious History of Philosophy, which is unmatched for fulness of information con)- bined with conciseness, accuracy, and impartiality of treatment. The first part appeared in 1862, An English translation, in two volumes, was published in 1872, and has gone through several editions. Ucberweg translated, in 1869, Berkeley’s Principles of Human Knowledge, with notes, for Kirchmann’s Philosophische Bibliothek. In philosophy Ueberweg was strongly opposed

to the subjectivistic tendency of the Kantian system, maintaining 1m particular the objectivity of space and time, which involved him 1m a somewhat violent controversy with several opponents. His own mode of thought he preferred to describe as an ideal realism, which refused to reduce reality to thought, but asserted a parallelism be- tween the forms of existence and the forms of knowledge. Beneke and Schleiermacher seem to have exercised most influence upot the development of his thought. A short memoir, by his friend F. A. Lange (author of the History of Materialism), gives some account of what may be called personal opinions in philosophy an theology, which did not find expression in Ueberweg's published writings.

_

—__ I OE

CrrA=—T GCA AT

UFA, a government of south-eastern Russia, on the western slope of the Urals, has Vyatka and Perm on the N., Orenburg on the E. and §., Samara and Kazaji on the W., and comprises an area of 47,112 square miles. In virtue alike of its physical characters and of its population, which belongs chiefly to the Ural-Altaic stock, it forms an intermediate link between Europe and Asia, and it was only recently separated from the government of Orenburg, which is now limited to the eastern slopes of the Urals. Several craggy and densely wooded ridges, running from south-west to north-east parallel to the main chain of the southern Urals, occupy its eastern part. They are separ- ated by broad and long longitudinal valleys, and rise to altitudes of from 2500 to 3500 feet above the sea; their highest peaks—Iremel (5040 feet), Nurgush, Urenga, and Taganai (3950 feet)—are above the limits of tree-vegeta- tion, but in no case reach those of perpetual snow. The high longitudinal valleys of the Urals are the seat of an important mining industry. Southward Ufa extends over the slopes of the Obshchiy Syrt plateau, the angular space between the latter and the Urals being occupied by elevated plains (from 1000 to 1500 feet), deeply grooved by the river valleys and sometimes described as the " Ufa plateau." It slopes gently towards the depression of the Kama ; and its undulating surface, especially its broad valleys (500 to 600 feet above the sea), covered as they

are with a fertile soil, are being rapidly colonized by Russian settlers. Towards the Kama the fertility of the soil increases, and the black- earth regions of Menzelinsk and Birsk may be described as granaries for that part of Russia.

The geological structure of Ufa is very varied. The main ridge of the Urals consists of gneisses and various crystalline slates rest- lng upon granites and syenites ; next comes a broad strip of lime- stones and sandstones, the fossil fauna of which is intermediate in its lowest parts between the Upper Silurian and the Lower Devonian. These form the highest ridges of Ufa. Farther west the Devonian deposits are followed by Lower and Upper Carbon- iferous and “ Artinsk schists,” which, together with Permian de- posits, cover western Ufa. Quaternary deposits are extensively developed in all the valleys, most of which were occupied by lakes during the Lacustrine period. Ufa has not the mineral resources of Perm; only traces of gold have been found in its valleys, and silver ores arc absent; but its wealth in iron (Devonian) and copper (Permian) seems likely to have great mining importance in the future. The district of Ztatoust is celebrated for its granite, epidote, nephrite, and a variety of decorative stones and minerals. Coal is spread over a wide area, but only in Jayers too thin to make work- ing remunerative. Fire-clay, kaolin, and sandstone for making gtindstones are obtained to some extent; naphtha, sulphur, and saltpetre have been observed in several places.

Ufa belongs almost entirely to the drainage area of the Byetaya, a great tributary of the Kama, which rises in Orenburg, flows south and west till it pierces a mountain chain at Bugutchan, and then runs north and north-west, watering the high plains and receiving a number of important tributaries, among which the Sim, the Tanyp, and the Ufa are also navigable. The banks of the Byetaya are thickly peopled, and it is an important channel for trade ; but it sometimes reaches so low an ebb in summer that steamers cannot proceed beyond Birsk. The Kama flows for 120 miles along the western border of the government. Marshes lie along its course, so that its banks are but thinly inhabited. Forests cover nearly half the area, but the plains on the left of the Byetaya are comparatively thinly wooded. The climate of Ufa is very continental. The average temperature at Ufa is 37° F., and the winter is extremely cold (Janu- ary 5°°5 F., July 68° F.); at the Ztatoust observatory

(1340 feet) the average temperature is only 32°-2 (January 2°; July 61°‘8). Even In the hilly tracts of Ztatoust the annual rainfall is only 19 inches. The rivers are frozen 158 days at Ufa, and 202 about Ztatoust.

The population of Ufa is now rapidly increasing (1,798,260 in 1882, as against 1,291,020 in 1865). Only one-third of the whole is Russian, the remainder being chiefly Bashkirs (50 per cent., in- cluding Mescheriaks and Tepters), Tartars (8°4 per cent.), Tchere- misses, Tchuvashes, Mordvinians, and Votiaks. In the south the Bashkirs, Tartars, and other Ural-Altaians constitute two-thirds of the population. Among the Russians two distinct elements must be distinguished,—some 100,000 peasants, who formerly were mining serfs, and now support themselves chiefly by work in or for the mines, and nearly 620,000 agriculturists, for the most part more Tecent immigrants. The latter carry on agricultureon an extensive

scale, and export large quantities of corn. The Bashkirs are chiefly cattle-breeders, but of late they have been driven more and more to tillage, owing to the appropriation by speculators of their exten- sive pasture-lands. Bee-keeping is largely carried on, and hunting is still an important source of income to the Bashkirs. In the north-east the trade in timber and the manufacture of various wooden wares are largely engaged in by the peasantry. The mining industry is advancing, notwithstanding many obstacles (see vol. xxi, p. 85); the iron-works of Ztatoust especially have a wide reputation. Flour-mills, distilleries, and tanneries eome next in importance. The exports of corn, linseed, timber, wooden wares, metals, tallow, hides, and eattle are considerable, and trade is active, especially at the fairs of Menzelinsk, Ufa, and Ztatoust.

There are six administrative districts, the chief towns of which (with populations in 1884) are—Ufa (25,660), Belebei (4200), Birsk (8000), Menzelinsk (6100), Sterlitamak (8940), and Ztatoust (18,990). The loading places Tehetny and Berozovka on the Kama, and several iron and copper works (Satkinsk, Yurezafi, Katav-Ivanovsk, about 6000 inhabitants each) ought also to be mentioned.

UFA, capital of the above government, is situated at the confluence of the Ufa with the Byetaya, on high crags intersected by ravines, which are covered with gardens and orchards. The better part of the town contains a

few stone buildings connected with the administration, two cathe- drals, and a few churches; the remainder is a scattered aggregation of small wooden houses. There are two class- ical gymnasiums for boys and girls, a theological seminary, and several lower schools. The town has a few good hospi- tals. The manufactures are insignificant in Ufa itself, but there are several iron and copper works of importance within the district. Owing to the fertility of the neigh- bouring regions, and the position of the town at the junc- tion of two important rivers, the Ufa merchants carry ona brisk export trade. The population has rapidly increased of late, reaching 25,660 in 1884.

Ufa was founded in 1574, when a fort was built on the Byetaya, three other forts being erected about the same time at Birsk, Menzelinsk, and Berezovka, to connect Ufa with the Russian settle- ments on the Kama. The wooden krem] of Ufa, protected by wooden towers and an outer earthen wall, had to sustain the attacks of the revolted Bashkirs and Russian serfs in 1662 and at later dates; and in 1778 Tchika, one of the chiefs of the Pugatcheff revolt, besieged it for four months.

UGANDA, a country of eastern Central Africa, to the north-west of the Victoria Nyanza. It has an area of about 34,000 square miles, extending from 1° N. lat. to the Kitangule river, and from 31° E. long. to the Nile. The country bordering the lake and to the north-west is moun- tainous, the mountains being arranged in low parallel chains. The hills, covered with splendid timber and abun- dant underwood, rise to a height of 400 feet above their valleys, through which sluggish streams flow to the lake. Farther north the country becomes a plain, and the eastern portion of Uganda, between Rubaga and the Nile, consists of undulating country, varied by deep narrow valleys. The geological formation of the country is volcanic or metamor- phic ; two or three feet of rich black alluvial soil form the upper strata, covering a bed of red sandy clay, often 30 feet thick. In some places porcelain earth is found, as well as large masses of mica. Ironstone is present in con- siderable quantities, but as yet no other metals have been discovered. The climate is mild, and the temperature re- markably uniform throughout the year ; the thermometric range is from 50° to 90° F.; but the mean annual variation is only 20°. The annual rainfall is 50 inches, the greatest amount of rain occurring in March, April, May, and

Sep- tember, October, and November, when rain falls nearly every day, thunderstorms being frequent.

The population of Uganda is about five millions. The men are tall and well-built, and have good features and dark chocolate-coloured skin, with woolly hair. The women in their youth are good- looking. The country is divided into three provinces—Uddu in the south, Singo in the west, and Changwe in the east, to which must be added about 400 islands in the lake. The government of the country is feudal, the king being nominally supreme. Succession to the throne is hereditary, but the successor is usually a minor

chosen by three hereditary chiefs, who with the young king's mother carry on the government until he isof age. The reigning family in Uganda is descended from the Wahuma tribe; the late king Mtesa professed to trace back his descent to Kintu (or Ham), the founder of the dynasty. The country is ruled by the king, three hereditary chiefs, and a council of minor chiefs, —two hereditary chiefs and a certain proportion of the others being continually in residence at Rubaga, the capital of the country. The laws are strict, and the administration of justice is conducted in an orderly manner. There is no real taxation, but the people are compelled to render feudal service to all their superiors. The Waganda may be divided into four classes, the lowest class being the slave popu- lation, consisting of prisoners taken in war and their descendants ; next come the "bachopi" or peasants, who form the mass of the population; the third class are the " batongoli," or chiefs, who are recruited from the bachopi, but whose honours are not hereditary ; they receive their rank for distinguished bravery in the field or for services rendered to the state, and they are the governros of the villages. The highest class is that of the ''bakungu," a superior grade of chiefs, all belonging to the '' luchiko" or state council, and being governors of large districts of land. The three great hereditary chiefs belong to this class, and they are supreme governors of the three great districts into which Uganda is divided. The Waganda are very warlike; all adult males are compelled to serve in the army when required, and the military organization, having its head- quarters at the capital, ramifies throughout the whole land. Gazie is very plentiful : elephants, buffaloes, zebras, rhinoceroses, wild boars,

twelve species of antelopes, lions, leopards, jackals, foxes, hyenas, hares, chimpanzees, and several species of monkeys inhabit the forest. Snakes are numerous; hippopotami, crocodiles, and otters abound in the lake and in the Nile, as also many water-rats. The principal birds are parrots, guinea-fowl, owls, vultures, adju- tants, goatsuckers, kites, eagles, ducks, geese, storks, cranes, herons, gulls, scarlet flamingos, darters, the sacred and glossy ibis, and brilliantly coloured honey-birds. The principal insects are mos- quitos, fleas, locusts, white and driver ants, and butterflies of many species. The domestic animals are cows, goats, and a few sheep and dogs, The Waganda live chiefly npon a vegetable diet, the banana forming the staple food; it grows everywhere, and requires little or no cultivation. The sweet potato is the chief vegetable cultivated, but coffee, sugar-cane, cassava, maize, sesame, millet, tullabone, several species of beans, and two or three kinds of pump- kins are grown toa small extent. The principal fruits are the mpafu and a species of amomum. Strangers have introduced wheat, rice, guavas, papaws, pomegranates, tomatoes, onions, and radishes. Wine is made from the banana tree, and is a staple drink. Butter and cheese are also made. A good deal of manufacture is carried on, for the people are ingenious and clever workmen, and their work is tasteful, neat, and exact. Two kinds of pottery, a coarse and a fine variety, are manufactured in considerable quantities. The basket work is extremely good, and the metal work far superior to any seen among the neighbouring tribes. The manufacture of bark-cloths, in which most of the people are clothed, is very ex- tensively carried on, and their wood-work and boat-building are of very superior quality, Tanning, dyeing, and bead-work employ numbers of the people. There is not very much home trade in Uganda; it is limited to the barter of native manufactures. Several times a year caravans arrive from Zanzibar, bringing calico, guns, powder, files, knives, &c. The standard value of any article is reckoned by 100 cowries or an arm’s length of calico and beads ; hoes, salt, and fish are also employed as mediums of exchange. The language spoken in Uganda belongs to the great Bantu family, and is very rich in words. It has ten classes of nouns, the noun being the most important part of speech. Grammatical inflexions are formed by prefixes; the inflexions of verbs, adjectives, and pronouns vary according to the class of the governing noun. Adjectives agree with the substantive in number and case, and always follow the noun. There are personal, possessive, relative, demonstrative, and interrogative pronouns, and several forms of verbs. The

Waganda arc very good arithmeticians. The root of all multiples is ten; tallies are used as aids to the memory. The people are very musical ; their voices are clear and melodious, and of considerable range. They have a great variety of tunes,— orchestral, dance, and vocal music having distinct characteristics. Their musical instruments consist of harmonicons, rattles, drums, horns, whistles, flutes, and harps. The Waganda have no images or outward symbols of their gods; and they think that the world is ruled by spirits or demons, to whom Katonga, the great creator, has deputed his power. They worship Mukasa, the god of the lake ; Naduala, the god of small-pox ; Chiwuka and Nenda, the gods of war; and several of the former monarchs of Uganda, who are be- lieved to be demi-gods. A thunder spirit isalsoinvoked. The gods of war are supposed to inhabit certain trees, and offerings are made to them before entering the war-path; like offerings are also made to the god of the lake before commencing a voyage upon its waters.

The Waganda are courteous, cleanly, given to hospitality, but drunken, and to a certain extent indolent. Their standard of

morality, even judged by that of the surrounding tribes, is not high. Human life is little respected; they are untruthful and in- decent. Unless moved by passion, they are not cruel; passionate, they are not revengeful. Children are well treated, as are the aged men. On account of the extensive prevalence of polygamy, women occupy a somewhat low social grade.

Uganda was first visited by Speke and Grant in 1860, and the country has since been visited by numerous Europeans, chiefly missionaries. The Church Missionary Society and the Roman Catholics have mission stations in the country. In 1886 some forty of their converts were burnt at the stake, and in the same year Bishop Hannington was murdered on the borders of the country by the orders of King Mwanga.

See Speke’s Journal, Grant’s Walk across Africa, Stanley’s Through the Dark Continent, and Wilson and Felkin’s Uganda and the Egyptian Soudan. Also a monograph ‘On the Waganda Tribe,” by R. W. Felkin, in Proc. Roy.

Soc. Ed., vol. xiii., and an Outline Grammar of the Luganda Language, by C. T. Wilson.

UGLITCH, a district town of Russia, in the government of Yaroslavl, is situated on the upper Volga, principally on its right bank, 67 miles to the west of the capital of. the province. Its historical remains are mostly associated with the prince Dmitri (see vol. xxi. p. 93). The wooden house he occupied, a church of St Demetrius “on the Blood” erected at the spot where he was killed, and a kiosk on the site of the convent where his mother was forcibly conse- crated a nun,—all commemorate this chapter in the history of the rule of the boiars at Moscow at the beginning of the 17th century. An old cathedral, erected in the 13th cen- tury but subsequently restored, and containing the grave of Prince Roman, recalls a still earlier period of municipal independence. Uglitch has now become a commercial and industrial city with 11,930 inhabitants (1883), and has an important trade, being one of the chief loading places on the upper Volga. Its industries comprise the sewing of sacks for corn and flour (about one million every year) and the knitting of woollen socks; and it has a paper-mill, distilleries, copper works, and linen factories. Corn, paper, sausages (with which the name of Uglitch has long been associated), candles, &c., are shipped at the town.

Uglitch is one of the oldest towns of Russia; its local annals go as far as back as the 9th century. Until the 14th century it main- tained its independence as a separate principality, which extended over eastern Tver, and elected its own princes. In 1329 the sons of Prince Roman the Saint renounced their independence in favour of Moscow, and fifty years later the Uglitch princes finally sold their rights to the great prince of Moscow. The Tartars plundered the town during their invasions of 1237, 1293, and 1408, as also did the Lithuanians at a later date.

UGOLINO. See GuEeRARDESCA and PIsa.

UGRIANS. See FINLAND, vol. ix. p. 219.

UHLAND, Joann Lupwie(1787-1862), German poet, was born at Tiibingen, on April 26, 1787. He studied at the university of his native place, taking jurisprudence as his special subject, but also devoting much time to litera-

ture. Having graduated as a doctor of laws in 1810, he went for some months to Paris ; and from 1812 to 1814 he worked at his profession in Stuttgart, in the bureau of the minister of justice. He had begun his career as a poet in 1807 and 1808 by contributing ballads and lyrics to Seckendorf's Musenalmanach; and in 1812 and 1813 he wrote poems for the Poetischer Almanach and for the Deutscher Dichterwald. In 1815 he collected his poems in a volume entitled Gedichte, which almost immediately secured a wide circle of readers, and gives him his place in German literature. To every new edition he added some fresh poems ; and the sixtieth edition, published in 1879, included a number of pieces found among his papers. He wrote two dramatic works—Zrnst, Herzog von Schwaben and Ludwig der Baier—the former published in 1817, the latter in 1819. These, however, are unimportant in com- parison with his Gedichte. In some respects Uhland must be classed with the writers of the romantic school, for, like them, he found in the Middle Ages the subjects which appealed most strongly to his imagination. But his style has a precision, suppleness, and grace which sharply dis-

tinguish his most characteristic writings from those of the romantic poets. His best lyrics have the charm which belongs to the unaffected expression of delicate senti- ment; and in almost all his ballads he displays a remark-

able power of giving picturesque form to his conceptions of

character. He was a man of pure and noble impulse, and it was in presenting scenes which awaken love, or admira- tion, or pity that he did the fullest justice to his powers. Uhland's poetic sympathy with some characteristics of the

age of chivalry did not prevent him from sharing the best

aspirations of his own time. He wrote manly poems in

defence of freedom, and in the states assembly of Wiirtem-

berg he played a distinguished part as one of the most vigorous and consistent of the liberal members. In 1829 he was made a professor, at Tiibingen university, of German literature and the German language, but he resigned this appointment in 1833, when it was found to be incom- patible with his political duties. In 1848 he became a member of the Frankfort parliament, in which he sat as one of the most respected members of the liberal party.

Uhland was not only a poet and politician ; he was also an ardent student of the history of literature. In 1812 he published an interesting essay on Das altfranzisische Epos : and ten years afterwards this was followed by an admirable work on Walther von der Vogelweide. He was also the author of an elaborate study of Der Mythus von Thér nach nordischen Quellen (1836), and he formed a valuable col- lection of Alte hoch- und niederdeutsche Volkslieder, which appeared in 1844-45. He died on November 13, 1862. After his death his prose works were reprinted, with some additions, under the general title Uhland's Schriften zur Geschichte der Dichtung und Sage (1865-73), and an edition of his poems and dramas, in three volumes, was issued in 1863.

See Liebert, Ludwig Uhland, eine Skizze (1863); Mayer, Ludwig Uhland, seine Freunde und Zeitgenossen (1867); and Ludwig Uhiand's Leben, aus dessen Nachlass und aus eigener Erfahrung zusammengestellt von seiner Witwe (1874).

UJIJI, a town in eastern Central Africa, of considerable importance, also known by the name of KAVELE, is situated on the eastern shores of Lake Tanganyika, in 4° 55' §. lat. and 30° 5' E. long. It is the chief town on that lake, and is the centre of a brisk trade in ivory. Formerly it was a great slave-market. The town is of a straggling character, Arab houses of sun-dried bricks being mingled with native huts. The population, which fluctuates considerably, is very mixed, being composed of Arabs and the representa- tives of numerous Central African tribes, Ujiji has been visited by various European travellers, who have made it their headquarters, and it was here that Stanley found Livingstone, on October 28, 1871. Opinions vary as to the salubrity of its climate, but the balance of testimony appears to prove that during the greater part of the year it is very unhealthy.

UJJAIN, or Ooszty, a town in the native state of Gwalior, central India, situated on the right bank of the Sipra, in 23° 11’ 10” N. lat. and 75° 51′ 45” E. long., 1698 feet above sea-level. In ancient times Ujjain was the great and famous capital of Malwa, one of the seven sacred cities of the Hindus, and the spot which marked the first meridian of Hindu geographers. Though much decayed, it is still a large and populous city, with considerable commerce. ‘The modern city is surrounded on all sides by an almost uninterrupted belt of groves and gardens. Tn 1881 the population of the town numbered 32,932. Its trade consists chiefly in the export of opium and the mport of European goods, especially cotton fabrics.

_UKRAINE (“frontier ”), the name formerly given toa district of European Russia, now comprising the govern- ments of Kyarkorr, Kizrr, Poporra, and Potrava (q.v.).

a9

ULCER. See Surcery, vol. xxii. p. 683.

ULFILAS (311-381), the apostle of Christianity to the Gothic race, and, through his translation of the Scriptures into Gothic, the father of Teutonic literature, was born among the Goths of the trans-Danubian provinces in the year 311.1 There is a tradition that his ancestors were Christian captives from Sadagolthina in Cappadocia, who had been carried off to the lands beyond the Danube in the Gothic raid of 267; but the evidence on which this rests is inadequate. An authoritative record of the outlines of his hfe has only been discovered within the last fifty years, in a writing of Auxentius, his pupil and companion.

At an early age Ulfilas was sent, either as an envoy or as a hostage for his tribe, to Constantinople, pro- bably on the occasion of the treaty arranged in 332. During the preceding century Christianity had been planted sporadically among the Goths beyond the Danube, through the agency in part of Christian captives, many of whom belonged to the order of clergy, and in part of merchants and traders. Ulfilas may therefore have been a convert to Christianity when he reached Constantinople. But it was here probably that he came into contact with the Arian doctrines which gave the form to his later teaching, and here that he acquired that command over the

Greek and Latin tongues which equipped him for his labours as a translator. For some time before 341 he worked as a “lector” or reader of the Scriptures, probably among his own countrymen in Constantinople, or among those attached as faderati to the imperial armies in Asia Minor. From this work he was called to return as missionary bishop to his own country, being ordained by Eusebius of Nicomedia and “the bishops who were with him” in 341. This ordination of Ulfilas as missionary bishop by the chiefs of the semi-Arian party is at once an indication of their determination to extend their influence by active missionary enterprise and evidence that Ulfilas was now, if he had not been before, a declared adherent of the Arian or semi-Arian party. He was now thirty years of age, and his work as “bishop among the Goths” covered the re- maining forty years of his life. For seven of these years he wrought among the Visigoths beyond the Danube, till the success which attended his labours, and the growing numbers of his flock, drew down the persecution of the still pagan chief of the tribe. This “sacrilegus judex” has been identified with Athanaric, a later persecutor, probably without sufficient ground. The persecution was so severe that, to save his flock from extinction or dispersion, Ulfilas decided to withdraw both himself and his people from its range. With the consent of the emperor Constantius, he led them across the Danube, “a great body of the faith- ful,” and settled in Moesia at the foot of the range of Hemus, and near the site of the modern Tirnova (348). Here they developed into a peace-loving pastoral people.

The life of Ulfilas during the following thirty-three years is marked only by one recorded incident, his visit to Constantinople in 360, to attend the council convened by the Arian or Homoian party. His work and influence were not, however, confined to his own immediate flock, but radiated by means of his writings (homilies and treatises), and through the disciples he despatched as missionaries, among all the tribes of the Gothic stock beyond the Danube. By this time probably he had made some pro- gress with his version of the Scriptures, and copies of parts of it would begin to circulate. Thus the church beyond the Danube, which had not been extinguished on Ulfilas’s withdrawal, began to grow once more in numbers and importance, and once more had to undergo the fires of persecution. Catholic missionaries had not been wanting in the meanwhile, and in the indiscriminate persecution by

1 Krafft gives 318 as the date, Waitz 318.

Athanaric between 370 and 375 Catholics and Arians stood and fell side by side, The religious quarrel either accentuated, or was accentuated by, political differences, and the rival chiefs, Athanaric and Frithigern, appeared as champions of Paganism and Christianity respectively. Then followed the negotiations with the emperor Valens, the general adhesion of the Visigoths under Frithigern to Arian Christianity, the crossing of the Danube by himself and a host of his followers, and the troubles which culminated in the battle of Adrianople and the death of Valens (378). The part played by Ulfilas in these troub- lous times cannot be ascertained with certainty. It may have been he who, as a "presbyter Christiani ritus " conducted negotiations with Valens before the battle of Adri- anople ; but that he headed a previous embassy asking for leave for the Visigoths to settle on Roman soil, and that he then, for political motives, professed himself a convert to the Arian creed, favoured by the emperor, and drew with him the whole body of his countrymen,—these and other similar stories of the orthodox church historians appear to be without foundation. The death of Valens, followed by the succession and the early conversion to Catholicism of Theodosius, dealt a fatal blow to the Arian party within the empire. Ulfilas lived long enough to see what the end must be. Hardships as well as years must have com- bined to make him an old man, when in 381 he was sent for to Constantinople. 'The emperor had summoned him, for what purpose cannot be clearly ascertained. A split seems to have taken place among the Arians at Constan- tinople. Party riots were too familiar there, and a fierce dispute over a theological dogma, however abstruse, placed the peace of the city, if not the security of the palace, in jeopardy. Ulfilas was summoned to meet the innovators, and either by argument or by influence to induce them to surrender the opinion which caused the dispute. His pupil Auxentius describes how, "in the name of God," he set out upon his way, hoping to prevent the teaching of these new heretics from reaching 'the churches of Christ by Christ committed to his charge." No sooner had he reached Constantinople than he fell sick, "having pondered much about the council," and before he had put his hand to the task which had brought him

he died, probably in January 381. A few days later there died, also in Constantinople, his old enemy and persecutor, Athanaric.

The Arianism of Ulfilas was a fact of pregnant consequence for his people, and indirectly for the empire. It had been his lifelong faith, as we learn from the opening words of his own testament— ‘* Ego Ulfilas semper sic credidi.” If, as seems probable from the circumstances of his ordination, he was a Semi-Arian and a follower of Eusebius in 341, at a later period of his life he departed from this position, and vigorously opposed the teaching of his former leader. Ie appears to have joined the Homoian party, which took shape and acquired influence before the council of Constantinople in 360, where he adhered with the rest of the council to the creed of Ariminum, with the addendum that in future the terms tirdcracis and ovcta should be excluded from Christological definitions. Thus we learn from Auxentius that he condemned Homoousians and Homoiousians alike, adopting for himself the Homoian formula, ‘¢filium similem esse patri suo.” This Arian form of Christianity was imparted by Ulfilas and his disciples to most of the tribes of the Gothic stock, and persisted among them, in spite of the persecution, hatred, and political disasters it involved, for two centuries.

The other legacy bequeathed by Ulfilas was of less questionable value. His version of the Scriptures (see GorHic LANGUAGE, vol. x. p. 852) is his greatest monument as a way-breaker and a scholar. By it he became the first to raise a barbarian tongue to the dignity of a literary language; and the skill, knowledge, and adaptive ability it displays make it the crowning testimony of his powers as well as of his devotion to his work.

The personal qualities of the man may be inferred from his pupil’s description of him as ‘‘of most upright conversation, truly a con- fessor of Christ, a teacher of piety, and a preacher of truth,—a man whom I am not competent to praise according to his merit, yet altogether keep silent I dare not.”

Literature.—Waitz, Das Leben des Ulfilas, 1840; Krafft, Kirchengeschichte der Deutschen Volker, Abth. i., 1854; Id., article ‘‘Ulfilas,” in Herzog’s Realencykio-

piidie, vol. xvi., 1885; Id., De Fontibus Ulfilz Arianismt; Bessell. Das Leben des Ulfilas, 1860; C. A. Scott, Uifilas, Apostle of the Goths, 1885. See also ‘ Gothic Language” under GoTHs. (C. A. 8)

ULM, an ancient and important commercial town in

Wiirtemberg, and an imperial fortress of the first class, is situated on the left bank of the Danube, in a fertile plain at the foot of the Swabian Alps, 45 miles to the south-east of Stuttgart and 63 miles to the north-west of Munich. The town, quaintly built with narrow and confined streets, still preserves the dignified and old-fashioned appearance of an ancient imperial town, and contains many medieval buildings, both of historic and of artistic interest. Among these, besides numerous handsome private houses, are the town-house, of the 16th century, in the Transition style from late Gothic to Renaissance; the Kornhaus and market-buildings; the Ehingerhaus or N eubronnerhaus, now containing the industrial museum; the “new build- ing,” erected in 1603 on the site of a palace of Charle- magne; and the commandery of the Teutonic order, built in 1712-18 on the site of a habitation of the order dating from the 13th century. By far the most important and conspicuous building in Ulm, however, is the magnificent early Gothic cathedral, next to the cathedral of Cologne the largest church in Germany, and capable of containing

30,000 people. Begun in 1377, and carried on at inter- vals till the 16th century, the building was long left un-

finished ; but in 1844 the work of restoration and com- pletion was undertaken, and has steadily progressed ever since.

Ulm cathedral has double aisles and a pentagonal apsidal choir, but no transepts. Its length (outside measurement) is 464 feet, its breadth 159 feet ; the nave is 136 feet high and 474 wide; the aisles, which are covered with rich net-vaulting, are 68 feet in height. The massive and richly decorated square tower in the centre of the west fagade, for centuries terminated by a temporary spire, is now being completed according to the original plans, by the addition of an octagonal story and a tall open spire, which is to be carried up to the height of 534 feet, The towers of the choir have also been rebuilt in the course of the present restoration ; they are 282 feet high. The

interior, which is unusually well lighted, pro- duces an impression of much dignity from the great height of the nave, the absence of obtrusive decoration, and the massive manner in which the walls and piers are treated. It contains some fine stained glass, the largest organ im Germany (1856), and a number of interesting old paint- ings and carvings by Syrlin, Engelberger, and other masters of the Swabian school. The cathedral belongs to the Pro- testant Church. Trinity Church dates from 1617-21 ; and there are also a Roman Catholic church and a modern synagogue in the town. The Danube, joined by the Mller just above the town and by the Blau just below, becomes navigable at this point, so that Ulm occupies the import- ant commercial position of a terminal river-port. The trade, especially in wood and grain, has an upward tend- ency ; and the Ulm market for leather and cloth is also rising in importance. Ulm is famous for its vegetables (especially asparagus), barley, beer, pipe-bowls, and sweet cakes (Ulmer Ziickerbrot). Bleaching, brewing, and brass- founding are carried on, as well as a large miscellany of manufactures, including hats, metal goods, agricultural implements, tobacco and cigars, cement, paper, and chem- icals. The population in 1886 was 33,611.

The various routes which converge at Ulm have made it at all times a strategic point of great importance, and it has long been a fortress of the first rank. In 1844-59 the German Confederation carefully fortified it with walls, ramparts, and ditches, and in 1876 the new German empire added a very comprehensive outer girdle of detached forts, culminating in the powerful citadel of Wilhelms- burg. The defensive works embrace also the Bavarian town of Neu-Ulm (7823 inhabitants), on the opposite bank of the Danube, united with the older city by two stone bridges. Ulm is thus the basis of operations for the German army behind the Black Forest,

and can easily shelter a force of 100,000 men; its pcace garrison is 5600.

Ulm is mentioned as early as the year 854. It subsequently became a free imperial city, and the leading town in Swabia. In the 15th century it attained the summit of its prosperity, and ruled over a district of many square miles, with a population, rural and urban, of about 60,000. ‘Towards the end of the Middle Ages it frequently appears at the head of various Swabian leagues.

In 1530 it adopted the Augsburg Confession. In 1803 it passed to Bavaria, and in 1810 to Wiirtemberg. In 1805 General Mack, with 33,000 Austrians, capitulated to Napoleon at Ulm. Ulm is remarkable in the history of German literature as the spot where the ‘‘meisterstinger” lingered longest, preserving, without text and without notes, the traditional lore of their craft. In 1830 there were twelve ‘‘ meistersinger” alive at Ulm; but in 1839 the four survivors formally made over their insignia and guild property to a modern singing society, and closed the record of ‘‘ Meister- gesang” in Germany. ‘The last formal ineeting of the N uremberg “meister” took place in 1770.

ULPIANUS, Domirius, Roman jurist, was of Tyrian ancestry, but the time and place of his birth are unknown. He made his first appearance in public life as assessor in the auditorium of Papinian and member of the council of Septimius Severus ; under Caracalla he was master of the requests. Elagabalus deprived lim of his functions and banished him from Rome, but on the accession of Alex- ander (222) he was at once recalled and reinstated, and finally became the emperor’s chief adviser and prefectus pretorio. His curtailment of the privileges granted to the pretorian guard by Elagabalus provoked their enmity, and several times he only narrowly escaped their vengeance ; ultimately, in 228, he was murdered in the palace, in the course of a riot between the soldiers and the mob.

Ulpian’s period of literary activity extended from about 211 to 222 A.p. His works include 4d Sabinum, a commentary on the jus civile in over fifty books; Ad Edictum, a commentary on the Hdict, in eighty-three books; collections of Opinions, Responses, and Disputations ; books of Rules and Institutions; treatises on the functions of the different magistrates,—one of them, the De Officio Proconsulis Libri X., being a comprehensive exposition of the criminal law; monographs on various statutes, on testamentary trusts, and a variety of other works. His writings altogether have supplied to Justinian’s Digest about a third of its contents, and his commentary on the Edict alone about a fifth. As an author he is characterized by doctrinal exposition of a high order, judiciousness of criticism, and lucidity of arrangement, style, and language. Dontitii Ulpiani Fragmenta, consisting of twenty-nine titles, were first edited by Tilius (Paris, 1549). There are modern editions by Hugo (Berlin, 1834) and

Boécking (Bonn, 18386), the latter containing fragments of the first book of the Znstitutiones discovered by Endlicher at Vienna in 1835.

ULRICI, Hermann (1806-1884), one of the most active philosophical writers in Germany since Hegel's death, was born at Pforten, Prussia, on March 23, 1806. Educated for the law, he gave up his profession upon the death of his father in 1829, and after four years of further study, devoted to literature, philosophy, and science, qualified as a university lecturer. In 1834 he was called to a professorship at Halle, where he remained till his death on the 11th January 1884. His first works were in the domain of literary criticism. His treatise On Shake- speare's Dramatic Art (1839) has been translated into English. In 1841 he published a work Ueber Princip u. Methode der Hegelschen Philosophie, in which he subjected Hegel's system to a severe criticism. The critical attack was continued in the Grundprincip der Philosophie (1845-6), which at the same time expounds his own Speculative position; to this must be added as comple- mentary his System der Logik (1852). His later works, dealing with perennial problems of philosophy, have found a more extended circle of readers. Such are Glauben und Wissen (1858), Gott und die Natur (1862, 3d ed. 1875), Gott wnd der Mensch (2 vols., 1866-73, 2d ed. 1874). From 1847 onward Ulrici was associated with the younger Vichte in the editorship of the Zeuschrift fiir Philosophie.

His philosophical standpoint may be characterized as a reaction fom the pantheistic tendency of Hegel's idealistic rationalism

towards a more pronouncedly theistic position. The Hegelian identity of being and thought is also abandoned and the truth of realism acknowledged, an attempt being made to exhibit idealism and realism as respectively incomplete but mutually complementary systems. Ulrici's later works, while expressing the same views, are largely occupied in proving the existence of God and the soul from the basis of scientific conceptions, and in opposition to the materialistic current of thought then popular in Germany.

ULSTER. See Iretanp,

ULTRAMARINE, a magnificent blue pigment, which occurs in nature as a proximate component of Lapis La- ZULI. Lapis lazuli has long been known asa precious stone, and highly valued as such, and as early at least as the 11th century the art of extracting a blue pigment from it was practised. From the beginning of the 16th century this pigment began to be imported into Europe from " over the sea," as azurrum ultramarinum. To extract it, the stone, after having been powdered coarsely, is heated to redness and thrown into cold water to facilitate its con- version into a very fine powder, which is next treated with dilute acetic acid to remove the carbonate of lime which is present in almost all specimens. The insoluble blue residue is mixed up into a "dough" with a composition of resin, pitch, and linseed oil, and this dough is then kneaded under water, which is renewed as long as it runs off with a blue colour. The blue liquor, when allowed to stand, deposits a fine precipitate, which is collected, washed, dried, and sold as ultramarine. As the yield amounts to only 2 to 3 per cent. of the mineral used, it is not surprising to learn that the pigment used to be weighed up with gold. It was valued chiefly on account of its brilliancy of tone and its inertness in opposition to sunlight, oil, and slaked lime (in fresco-painting),

Lapis lazuli has the composition of a double silicate of lime and soda combined with sulphates and sulphides of the metals named. Of the many analyses made (compare Lavts LaZULI) we quote the following, carried out by Schultz in Rammelsberg's laboratory :— combined sulphur (not SO,), 3°16; combined sulphuric acid, SOs, 5°67; silica, 43°26; alumina, 20°22; oxide of iron, calculated as Fe,O3, 4°20; lime, 14°78; soda, 8°76.

In 1814 Tassacr observed the spontaneous formation of a blue compound, very similar to ultramarine, if not identical with it, ina soda-furnace at St Gobain, which caused the "Société pour |'En- couragement d' Industrie" to offer a prize for the artificial production of the precious colour. The problem was solved almost simultane- ously by Guimet and by Christian Gmelin, then professor of chem- istry in Tiibingen ; but while Guimet kept his process a secret (it has indeed never become kuown) Gmelin published his, and thus became the originator of an industry which flourishes to this day chieflyin Germany. There are very few ultramarine works in other countries, and none, as far as we know, in Great Britain. The raw materials used in the manufacture are—(1) iron-frce kaolin, or some other kind of

pure clay, which should contain its silica and alumina as nearly as possible in the proportion of 2Si0,: Al,O, demanded by the formula assigned to ideal kaolin (a deficit of silica, how- ever, it appears can be made up for by addition of the calculated weight of finely divided silica); (2) anhydrous sulphate of soda; (8) anhydrous carbonate of soda; (4) sulphur (in the state of powder) ; and (5) powdered charcoal or relatively ash-frec coal, or colophony in lumps. The numerous modes of manufacture may be viewed as modifications or combiuations of three processes.

(1) In the Nuremberg process the soda is used as sulphate, or partly as such and partly as carbonate. The following recipe gives an idea of the proportions in which the materials are used :—kaolin (calculated as anhydrous matter) 100 parts ; calcined sulphate of soda 88 to 100 (or 41 of sulphate and 41 of carbonate) ; charcoal uae powdered sulphur 13. These ingredients are mixcd most inti- matcly ; they are then rammed tight into fire-clay crucibles and kept at a nearly white heat for 7 to 10 hours, access of air being prevented as far as possible. The product obtained is a greyish or yellowish green mass, which is soaked in and washed with water 2 the porous residue is ground very fine in mills, again washed, dried, and again ground in the dry state and passed through sieves. The product at this stage has a green colour, and is sometimes sold as ‘‘green ultramarine,” although it has not a high standing amongst green pigments. For its conversion into blue ultramarine it is heated with sulphur in the presence of air to a relatively low tem- perature. Of the various apparatus used for this important stage of the manufacture, the easiest to describe is a large muffle, heated from the outside. On its floor the green ultramarine is spread out to a depth of 24 to 3 inches, and heated (with closed doors) to a

temperature at which sulphur powder when thrown in catches fire spontaneously. This temperature being maintained, a shovelful of sulphur is thrown in and allowed to burn off while the mass is being constantly agitated with iron rakers. Another dose of sul- phur is then added, and so on until a sample taken out is found to have come up to the highest attainable brilliancy and depth of blue. The product is then lixiviated with water,

which removes a deal of sulphate of soda formed in the process ; it is then ground up very fine, and finally subjected to elutriation to produce a graduated series of ultramarines of different degrees of fineness. In some works the process of sulphuration is divided into two or more periods, after each of which the product is washed, dried, and ground before being returned to the muffle to produce a higher degree of homogeneity.

(2) In the carbonate of soda process the soda is used solely, or at least principally, in the carbonate form. The following is one of many recipes :— kaolin (calculated as anhydrous matter) 100 ; car- bonate of soda 100; charcoal 12; sulphur 60. The mixture is heated in a reverberatory furnace to form in the first instance a white mass, which is so porous that it readily passes, by oxidation, into green and partly even into blue ultramarine. Green ultra- marine, saleable as such, cannot be produced in this manner. The half-blue product is finished by sulphuration pretty much as ex- plained above for the Nuremberg process. Well-made soda-ash ultramarine has a richer colour than tle Nuremberg variety.

(3) Siliea ultramarine is soda-ash ultramarine in whose prepara- tion a quantity of finely divided silica, equal to 5 to 10 per cent. of the weight of the kaolin, has been added. It is distinguished by a reddish tinge, which is the more fully developed the greater the proportion of added silica. It is more highly proof against the action of alum solution than non-siliceous ultramarine is.

Since 1873 the Nuremberg works have been producing four varieties of magnificently violet ultramarine. The mode of manu- facture has not transpired. Atthe Paris Exhibition in 1867 a mag- nificent block of ultramarine exhibited by the Kaiserslautern works attracted attention. In its manufacture the roasting (blueing) pro- cess is said to have been continued for three weeks.

Artificial, like natural, ultramarine has a magnificently blue eolour, which is not affected by light nor by contact with oil or lime as used in painting. Hydrochloric acid at once bleaches it with liberation of sulphuretted hydrogen gas and milk of sulphur. The natural pigment is proof against dilute acetic acid and solution of alum; the artificial pigment is even alum-proof only in a higher or lower relative sense. Hence there is room for

progress in one direction at least. The composition of the pigment is quite similar to that of lapis lazuli; but the constitution of both is still a chem- ical enigma. It is remarkable that even a small addition of zinc- white (oxide of zinc) to the reddish varieties especially causes a considerable diminution in the intensity of the colour, while dilu- tion with artificial precipitated sulphate of lime (“annalin ”) or sulphate of baryta (“blanc fix”) acts pretty much as one would expect. Ultramarine being very cheap (it sells at 7d. to 10d. per fb), it is largely used for wall painting, the printing of paper hangings and calico, &c., and also as a corrective for the yellowish tinge often present in things meant to be white, such as linen, paper, &c. Large quantities are used in the manufacture of paper, and especially for producing that kind of pale blue writing paper which is so popular in Great Britain. Only the very finest ultramarine can be used for paper tinging, because the least admixture of coarse particles becomes visible in the paper as dark spots or stains.

ULUGH BEG, Mirza MonamMMep BEN SHAH Rok (1394-1449), astronomer, grandson of Timur (q.v.), suc- ceeded his father as prince of Samarkand in 1447, after having for years taken part in the government, and was murdered in 1449 by his eldest son. He occupied himself with astronomical pursuits, and erected an observatory at Samarkand, from which were issued tables of the sun, moon, and planets, with an interesting introduction, which throws much light on the trigonometry and astronomical methods then in use (Prolégoménes des Tables Astronomi- ques d’Ouloug Beg, ed. by Sédillot, Paris, 1847, and trans- lated by the same, 1853). The serious errors which he found in the Arabian star catalogues (which were simply copied from Ptolemy, adding the effect of precession to the longitudes) induced him to redetermine the positions of 992 fixed stars, to which he added 27 stars from Al Sifi’s catalogue, which were too far south to be observed at Samarkand. This catalogue, the first original one since Ptolemy, was edited by Th. Hyde at Oxford in 1665 (Tabule Longitudinis et Latitudinis Stellarum Fixarum ex Observatione Ulugbeight), and in 1843 by Baily in vol. xiii. of the Memoirs of the Royal Astronomical Society.

ULVERSTON, a market-town in the north-west of Lan- cashire, England, is picturesquely situated near Morecambe Bay, on the borders of the Lake district, 9 miles north- east of Barrow-in-Furness, and 256 north-west of London. The town bears small evidence of its great antiquity. The principal streets branch from the market-place, and the houses built of stone are generally rough-cast and whitened. A rivulet flows through the town. The church of St Mary, founded in 1111, retains the south door of the original build- ing in the Transition style, but the greater portion of the structure is Perpendicular, of the time of Henry VIII. It consists of chancel, nave, aisles, south porch, and embattled western tower, and contains an altar-tomb with recum- bent figure of Walter Sandys of Conishead, dated 1588. After the destruction of Furness Abbey, Ulverston suc- ceeded Dalton as the most important town in Furness, but the rapid rise of Barrow within recent years has relegated it to quite a secondary place. Formerly it had a consider- able trade in linens, checks, and ginghams, but this has greatly fallen off. It possesses, however, large iron and steel works (North Lonsdale Iron and Steel Company), a large chemical work, an extensive paper manufactory, a bolt manufactory, breweries, tanyards, and wooden hoop manufactories. The population of the urban sanitary dis- trict (area 3120 acres) in 1871 was 7607, and in 1881 it was 10,008.

Early in the 12th century the lordship of Ulverston came into the possession of Stephen, earl of Boulogne, afterwards king of England, by whom it was presented to the monks of Furness Abbey as part of the endowment. In 1196 the ville of Ulverston was granted by the abbot of Furness to William de Lancaster, first baron of Kendal. In 1280 it obtained the charter of a market. The town became escheated to the abbot of Furness as chief lord in 1842, but this escheatment was suspended by Edward II. in favour of John de Coupland, who captured David II. of Scotland at the battle of Durham. After his death it reverted to the abbey. It is now in the possession of the family of Buccleuch.

ULWAR, an alternative form of ALWaR (q.v.).

ULYSSES. See OpyssEvs.

UMAN, a district town of Russia, in the south of the government of Kieff, is now a small industrial and trading town, with 15,400 inhabitants, many of

whom are Jews, who carry on an active trade in the export of corn, spirits, &e. It has a remarkable park (290 acres), planted in 1796 by the orders of Count Potocki, in connexion with which a gardening school is maintained.

Umait was founded towards the beginning of the 17th century as a fort against the raids of the Tartars. The Cossacks of the Ukraine, who kept it, revolted against their Polish rulers about 1665, and had to sustain a fierce siege. In 1674 it was plundered and most of its inhabitants murdered by the Ukrainians and Turks, during the wars for the hetmanship, In 1712 its last inhabitants were transferred by Peter I. to the left bank of the Dnieper. But by the end of the 18th century, when it again became the property of the Potockis, it was repeopled and became one of the busiest trading towns of Little Russia. In 1768, when the Cossacks re- volted anew against their Polish serf proprietors, they took Uman and murdered most of its inhabitants.

UMBALLA, an alternative form of AMBALA (¢.2.).

UMBER. See PIGMENTs.

UMBRELLA now means a portable protector from rain, while the name parasol is given to the generally sinaller, lighter, and more fanciful article carried by ladies asasun-shade. But primarily the umbrella (ombrella, Ital. dim. from Lat. umbra, shade) was a sun-shade alone,—its original home having been in hot brilliant climates. In Eastern countries from the earliest times the umbrella was one of the insignia of royalty and power. On the sculptured remains of ancient Nineveh and Egypt there are representations of kings and sometimes of lesser potentates going in procession with an umbrella carried over their heads; and throughout Asia the umbrella had, and still has, something of the same significance. The Mahratta princes of India had among their titles “lord of

—

the umbrella.” In 1855 the king of Burmah in addressing the governor-general of India termed himself “the monarch who reigns over the great

umbrella-wearing chiefs of the Eastern countries.” The baldachins erected over ecclesi- astical chairs, altars, aud portals, and the canopies of thrones and pulpits, &c., are in their origin closely related to umbrellas, and have the same symbolic significance. In each of the basilican churches of Rome there still hangs a large umbrella.

Among the Greeks and Romans the umbrella (cxids, oxddeov, umbraculum, umbella) was used by ladies, while the carrying of it by men was regarded as a sign of effeminacy. Probably in these southern climes it never went out of use, and we find from allusions by Montaigne that in his day its employment as a sun-shade was quite common in Italy. The umbrella was not unknown in England in the 17th century, and was already used as a rain protector. Michael Drayton, writing about the be- ginning of the 17th century, says, speaking of doves :—

“And, like umbrellas, with their feathers Shield you in all sorts of weathers.”

Although it was the practice to keep an umbrella in the coffee-houses early in the 18th century, its use cannot have been very familiar, for in 1752 Colonel Wolfe, writing from Paris, mentions the carrying of them there asa defence against both rain and sun, and wonders that they are not introduced into England. The traveller Jonas Hanway, who died in 1786, is credited with having been the first Englishman who habitually carried an umbrella. That practice he began thirty years before his death; at first he was singular, and his habit was derided, but he lived to see his example commonly followed.

The umbrella as at first used, based on its Eastern prototype, was a heavy ungainly article which did not hold well together, and no little ingenuity has been exercised to bring it into the elegant, compact, and strong form which is now quite common. The early umbrella had a long handle, with ribs of whalebone or cane, very rarely of metal, and stretchers of cane. The jointing of the ribs and stretchers to the stick and to each other was very rough and imperfect. The covering material consisted of oiled silk or cotton, heavy in substance, and liable to stick together in the folds. Gingham soon came to be substituted for the oiled cloth, and in 1848 William Sangster patented the use of alpaca as an umbrella covering material, One of the most notable

inventions for com- bining lightness, strength, and elasticity in the ribs of umbrellas was the “Paragon” rib patented by Samuel Fox in 1852. It is formed of a thin strip of steel rolled into a U or trough section, a form which gives great strength for the weight of metal. The use of such ribs, combined with the notched rings and runners which give a separate hinge and joint to each rib and stretcher, and with the thin but tough covering materials now in use, has principally contributed to the strength, lightness, and elegance which ordinary umbrellas now present. Umbrella silk is principally made at Lyons and Crefeld ; but much of it is so loaded in dyeing that it cuts readily at the folds. Textures of pure silk or of silk and alpaca mixed have better wear-resisting properties.

UMBRIA (OpBprxy, “OnBprxot, OtuBpo., UmBri). The early Greeks applied the name ‘Opp. to all central and northern Italy. Herodotus (iv. 49) speaks of it somewhat vaguely, as if it extended up to the Alps. The Umbrians probably extended across central Italy from sea to sea down as faras Latium. Pliny (iii. 13, 19) tells us that the Umbri were considered the most ancient nation of Italy (antiquissima gens Italie), by which he probably means, of the Italian stock. The Greek writers included under the name of Umbria the district known in later times as Picenum. Pseudo-Scylax makes Umbria march with Samnium, and describes Ancona as acity of Umbria. The Umbrians seem to have found the Siculi and Liburni in occupation of the land into which they advanced, the former holding the parts lying towards the interior, the latter people the district along the Adriatic. The Umbrians Were one of the chief peoples of that branch of the Indo- European family which had entered Italy from the north

| Picentes issued from the Sabine region.

and driven out and absorbed the older inhabitants. They were more closely connected with the Samnites and Oscans than with the Latin stock, as is shown by their language. Their possession of the fertile regions of upper Italy exposed them to the constant assaults of fresh bodies of invaders, pressing on over the Alps, and perhaps likewise from the seaboard. Their force was extended over a wide area, and thus too weak to withstand the attacks from various sides to which they were exposed. Thus their extensive

terri- tory was gradually reduced by the successive encroachments of other peoples. First came the Etruscans, who according to Herodotus (i. 94) were Lydians, who established them- selves in the land of the Umbrians. From which side of Italy they made their invasion, whether from the mouth of the Po or from the western coast of what later became Etruria, or whether from both, we have no means of de- termining. That the Umbrians did not yield without a struggle we cannot doubt. It was only after three hun- dred of their towns had been captured by the Etruscans that they succumbed. Nevertheless they still retained considerable influence in upper Italy, which, according to Strabo (v. 216), continued down to the time of the Roman conquest. For he says that there was a large Umbrian element in the Roman colonies in the region of the Po, as also some Etruscan. For, according to him, the Umbrians and Etruscans lived in a continual rivalry for the pre-eminence, so that if the one people made an expedition northwards, the other determined not to be outdone. So when the Etruscans had marched against the barbarians who dwelt near the Po, and had soon again been expelled owing to their effeminacy, the Umbrians in turn marched against the conquerors of the Etruscans. In consequence of this alternating struggle for these regions they planted many colonies, some Etruscan, others Uinbrian. Most of the colonies were Umbrian because the Umbrians lay closer to the disputed territory. Thus, even though they lost the sovereignty, the Umbrian race probably continued to form a considerable portion of the population of a wide extent of country. At all events, at the time of the Gaulish inroad the Etruscans seem to be in possession of the mouth of the Po. At this time, therefore, Umbria asa state con- sisted of the region bounded on the W. by the Tiber, on the 8. by the Sabines, on the E. by Picenum and the Adriatic, while on the N. it extended close up to the south-ern or Spinetic mouth of the Po. Scylax describes the Etruscans as extending from the Tyrrhenian Sea to the Adriatic, and represents them as in possession of the ancient Greek town of Spina. How much farther south the Etruscan sway had once reached we cannot determine, but that they had once held this region, as far as Ravenna at least, is rendered probable by the tradition that Ravenna had been founded by a colony of Thessalians who, not brooking the insulting treatment which they received from the Etruscans, gladly admitted some Umbrians, who thus became the possessors of the city. When the great Gaulish inroad took place at the beginning of the 4th cen- tury B.c. Etruscans and Umbrians alike suffered

severely. Some of the Celtic tribes crossed the Po and formed permanent settlements. The Ananes settled in the Apennines, the Boii between the former and the Adriatic; next came the Lingones; and finally the Senones occupied the seaboard of the Adriatic as far as the Rubicon. This region in Roman times was known as the Ager Gallicus (Polybius, ii. 16). But it was not only in the north and west that the Umbrians had been driven back. The early Greeks had included under the name of Umbria the dis- trict along the Adriatic, afterwards known as Picenum. This consisted of a fertile region, extending from beyond Ancona to the river Matrino. It is not improbable that the Tradition alleged

that the Picentes, led by the woodpecker (picus) of Mars, marched forth to occupy what is now the March of Ancona. But it was probably only aftera long struggle that this conquest was effected, for from another tradition we learn that the Sabines, after carrying on war against the Umbrians for a long time, at length vowed a sacred spring, and dedicated all the produce of the year to the gods. Then at length they became victorious (Strabo, v. 250). Thus, by the advance of the Gauls from the north and the Picentes from the south, the Umbrians were shut off from the seaboard, and confined to the district known as Umbria in historical times. of Italy, Umbria consisted of the region bounded by the Ager Gallicus on the N., by Etruria (the Tiber) on the W., by Picenum on the E., and by the Sabines on the S. The Umbrians kept a desperate hold of this district, which lies between the two arms of the Apennines. This position indicates of itself that they had been driven before stronger foes. Henceforward they play but an insignificant part in Italian history. This is explained by the physical formation of their country. It is an extremely mountain- ous region, with a few small plains between, which were noted for their fertility. Hence arose a number of small but thriving communities, none of which had the capacity of developing into a leading state such as Rome became for the Latins. Their want of seaports likewise excluded them from trade, the mouths of all the rivers which flowed from their country being in the hands of their enemies.

Of the Umbrians’ political and municipal organization little is known. In addition to the city (fofa) they seem to have had a larger territorial division

in the tribws (trifu, acc.) as we gather from Livy (xxxi. 2, per Umbriam quam tribum Sapiniam vocant ; of. xxxiii. 87) and from the Eugubine Tables (trifor Tarsinates, vi. B. 54). From the fertility of their land their communities were very prosperous. The olive and vine flourished in their valleys ; they grew spelt abundantly; and the boars of Umbria were famous. Ancient authors describe the Umbrians as leading effeminate lives, and as elosely resembling their Etrusean enemies in their habits (Theopompus, fragm. 142; Pseudo-Scymnus, 366-8). It is almost certain that each race influenced and modified the other to a large extent. Mommsen has pointed out that the names of many towns in Etruria are Umbrian, a fact which shows how persistent even after conquest was their influence in that region. On the other hand, we have conclusive proof of strong Etruscan influences in Umbria. For instance, they undoubtedly borrowed their alphabet and the art of writing from the Etruscans. Their writing runs from right to left. The alphabet consists of nineteen letters. It has no separate symbols for O, G, Q; the aspirates ¢ and x are wanting; on the other hand, it possesses forms for Z and V, and has likewise the Etruscan f(8), It also has a symbol d peculiar to itself for expressing the sound of palatal & when followed by either e or 7. It is also very probable that they borrowed the art of coining money from Etruria. Two towns are known to have issued coins, which consist entirely of bronze, and belong almost entirely to the series of #s grave. The most important is that of Tuder (Todi), which must have been a place of some note. It was a strong fortress on the left bank of the Tiber on the confines of Etruria. Iguvium (Gubbio), which struck coins after the standard of Tudcr, was a strong place likewise on the western or Etruscan side of the Apennines. The fact that it is only in towns on the side next Etruria that a coinage is found indicates that it was from the Etruscans they borrowed the art. The Umbrians counted their day from noon to noon. But whether they borrowed this likewise from the Etruscans we do not know (Pliny, ii. 77). In their measuring of land they employed the vorsus, a measure common to them and the Oscans (Frontinus, De Limit., p. 30), 34 of which went to the Roman jugerwm. When the Romans undertook the conquest of Italy, the most feeble resistance of all was offered to them by the Umbrians. In the great struggle between the Samnite confederacy and Rome Umbria played an insignificant part. It is probable that all through the Second Samnite War their sympathies were altogether on the side of their Samnite kinsmen, and that some assistance was afforded by individual communities. It is not

unlikely therefore that it was with a view to keep the Umbrians in check that the Romans planted a colony at Nequinum on the Nar, whose inhabitants were known as Nartes Interamnates, and who are included with the Etruscans, Iapydes, and Tadinates in the list of persons who were forbidden to be present at the sacred rites of Iguvium. At length in 308 z.c. the Umbrians made a vigorous effort to aid the Samnites, which, had

When Rome began the consolidating .

it taken place earlier in the war, might have had the most import- ant influence on the issue of the struggle. As it was, it came too late; the Etruscans had already laid down their arms. The Umbrians, who threatened to march on Rome, were intereepted by Rullianus with the Roman army from Samnium on the upper Tiber, a step which the Samnites now broken could not prevent ; aud this was sufficient to disperse the Umbrian levies. When the Third Samnite War broke out, the Umbrians took no active part in its operations ; but how their sympathies lay is evident from their affording a ready passage to the Samnite army under Gellius | Egnatius on its mareh to Ktruria, 296 B.c. When the battle of Sentinum (295) finally crushed the Samunites and Etruscans, Um- bria remained in the hands of the Romans. MHenceforward the process of Latinizing went on steadily, for by the 1st century B.c. we find them employing the Latin alphabet in copies of the ancient) sacerdotal ritual of Iguvium (sce EvcuBINE TaBLes). We know that the Oscan language only finally expired in the 1st century of our era, and there is no reason for believing that the Umbrian had disappeared much earlier. When the Romans conquered the Senones, 280 B.c., the Ager Gallicus was restored to Umbria, and both together formed under the eimpire the sixth region of Italy.

Strabo (v. 227) regards Ravenna as the boundary of Umbria. The Via Flaminia passed up through it from Ocriculum to Arim- inum, along which lay the important towns of Narnia (Narni) Carsule (Carsigliano), Mevania (Bevagna), Forum Flaminii, Nu- ceria, and Forum Sempronii. To the east lay Interamna (Terni), the probable birthplace of Tacitus, Spoletium (Spoleto), and the most important town of Camerinum on the side of the Apennines | towards Picenum, On the side towards Etruria lay Tuder (Todi),

Iguvium, which occupied a very advautageous position close to the } main pass through the Apenuines, Ameria (Amelia), and Hispellum | (Spello); on the Clitumnus (Clitunno) was Assisium (Assisi), the

birthplace of Propertius, whilst far to the north lay Sarsina, the |

birthplace of Plautus. For the pee of the country in the time of Augustus, see vol. xiii, Plate V.

See Bréal, Les Tables Eugubines, 1875; Biicheler, Umbrica, 1883; Kirchhoff, Griech. Alphabet, 4th cd., 1887 ; Head, Historia Numorum, 1887. (W. RI.)

UMMERAPOORA, another form of AMARAPURA (¢.0.).

UNAO, a British district in the Lucknow division of Oudh, India, under the jurisdiction of the lieutenant . governor of the North-Western Provinces. The area of | the district is 1768 square miles, and it is bounded on the N. by Hardoi, E. by Lucknow, 8. by Rai Bareli, and | W. by the Ganges. Unao is very flat, and has no features | of particular interest. Rich and fertile tracts, studded with groves, alternate with stretches of waste land and | plains of barren wsar, the whole being intersected with small streams, the water from which is extensively used | for irrigation. The Ganges is the only navigable river in the district. The temperature varies from about 75° to 103° in the hot weather, and from 46° to 79° in the cold season. The average annual rainfall is about 34 inches.

In 1881 the population was 899,069 (males 461,167, females 437,902); of these 880,342 were Hindus, 68,677 Mohammedans, and 49 Christians. Unao, the capital and administrative head- quarters, 9 miles north-east of Cawnpore, had 9509 inhabitants. The cultivated area of Unao amounted in 1885-86 to 598,131 acres, and 289,356 acres were returned as cultivable. The principal crops are rice, wheat, and other food grains, cotton, sugar-cane, and in- digo. The cultivation is mainly dependent on irrigation, The principal exports are grain of all kinds, gur, ghi, tobacco, and a little indigo and saltpetre; and the chief imports are piece goods, salt, iron, cotton, spices, &e. The gross revenue of the district in 1885-86 amounted to £188,088, the land yielding £144,914. During the mutiny of 1857-58 Unao

was the scene of several severe engagements between General Havelock's little army and the rebels. On the death of Raja Jasa Sinh, one of the leading rebels, and the capture of his two sons, the whole family estates were confiscated, and the villages either restored to their former owners or given to other landholders for their loyalty.

UNDULATORY THEORY. See Optics and WAVE THEORY.

UNGVAR, chief town of the county Ung, in the north- east of Hungary, stands on the river Ung. It is the seat of the bishop of Munkacs, and has a fine Greek cathedral, an episcopal seminary, a lyceum, a gymnasium, and also a teachers' college, a county hall, and an interesting ancient castle. The town and district produce good wine in large quantity, and abound in mineral springs. There is a good trade in timber and china clay. The population in 1886 was 13,460.

UNI—UNI

UNICORN, an animal with one horn. The name is applicable and has sometimes been applied to the rhinoceros, which is, for example, the Sumatran unicorn of Marco Polo. But the figure usually associated with the name is the well-known heraldic one of an animal with the form of a horse or ass, save that a long straight horn with spiral twistings, like the tusk of the narwhal, projects from its forehead. The belief in the existence of a one-horned animal of this kind goes back to Aristotle (Part. An., iii. p. 663), who names as one-horned "the oryx and the Indian ass." Later descriptions of the Indian unicorn, e.g, that of Ailian (Wat. An., xvi. 20), are plainly influenced to some extent by accounts of the rhinoceros, but the authority of Aristotle determined the general form ascribed to the animal. The twisted horn, of which A®lian already speaks, seems to have been got by referring to Aristotle's unicorn actual specimens taken from the narwhal; see Yule's Marco Polo, ii. 273. The ancient and medieval lore of the subject may be seen in Bochart, Hierozoicon, iii. 26. The familiar legend that the unicorn could be taken only by the aid of a virgin obtained currency through the Physiologus (see vol. xix. p. 7). The English Bible, following the Septuagint (jovdxepws), renders the Hebrew réém (ON) by "unicorn." But two horns are ascribed to the réém in Deut. xxxiii. 17, and the Hebrew word reappears in Arabic as the name of the larger ante- lopes, probably the

Antilope leucoryx, while in Assyrian the rimu appears to be the wild ox. There are recent fossil remains in the Lebanon both of Bos primigenius and Bison wrus, though both have been long extinct in Palestine.

UNITARIANISM. The term Unitarianism in its widest sense includes certain lines of the great religious and theo- logical movement or revolution of the Reformation in the 16th century, when this is regarded as the commencement of the process of the humanization of theology and ethics on the basis of the autonomy of the human mind. In another sense the term stands for a set of theological opinions, more or less variable, and yet in their general drift con- nected, some of them as old as Christianity, and one section of which only is. indicated by the term when used aS synonymous with Antitrinitarianism. But there is another meaning of the term, a still narrower one, and to Unitarianism in this sense this article must be confined. We must limit ourselves to a brief account of Unitarianism as it appears in ecclesiastical organizations in separation from the orthodox churches. This treatment of the sub- ject is of course incomplete, and would be misleading were the incompleteness not expressly announced. For a marked feature of the late history of the Unitarian churches is the growing tendency they exhibit of working out to their logical results some of the wider principles of the Reformation to which they ultimately owe their origin, rather than the design of formulating and propagating systems of theology. To not a few modern Unitarian leaders the bond which connects them with a specifically Unitarian organization is the spirit and tendency of the larger movement for which it happens to provide freer play than the orthodox churches, while they repudiate the im- putation of belonging to a dogmatic sect. Modern Uni- tarians have also, both in Europe and America, emphati- cally and successfully resisted the inclination of some of their number to lay down, though in the most general terms, a creed of Unitarianism. Indeed, in opposing this inclination, it might sometimes seem as if the only essen- tial article of Unitarianism were the maintenance of free inquiry in religion,—an impression, however, which a care- ful study of the history of Unitarian thought would remove. In the same way such a study would show that Unitarian churches are in agreement on many points of doctrine with early and recent theologians of all churches and sects.

This brief sketch of Unitarianism, as it has appeared in organized religious societies, takes us into but a few countries, and covers but a limited space of time. Poland, Transylvania, England, and America are the only countries in which Unitarian congregations have existed in any numbers or for any length of time. Elsewhere, either the law of the land has rendered their existence impossible, or they have been unnecessary in consequence of the substan- tial adoption by the existing churches of their principles and doctrines. The former was the case in Italy, Switzer- land, Germany, and England in the 16th and 17th centuries, the latter to a certain extent in England in the 18th cen- tury, still more in Germany in the 18th and 19th centuries, and in Holland in the present century, as also to a large extent in France in the Reformed Church.

Poland (1565-1658).—The Unitarians, under the names of Arians, Samosatenians, Pinczowians, were formed into aseparate church in 1565 by their exclusion as Antitrinitarians from the synods of the Trinitarian Protestants. Very early in the progress of the Reforma- tion in Poland individuals had arrived at heterodox opinions on baptism and the Trinity, very much under the influence of the heterodox Italian refugees in Switzerland, some of whom visited Poland (Lelio Sozzini, 1551 and 1558 ; Paul Alciati, 1561; G. V. Geutile, 1561; Biandrata, 1555). Gonesius and Gregory Pauli were the first to openly preach Antitrinitarian doctrine. After their separation from the orthodox, the Polish Unitarians developed divergent views as to the nature of Christ, as to the lawfulness of paying divine worship to Him, as to the subjects of baptism (infants or adults), and as to a relation of Christians to the state. On the first point some were Arians and others Humanitarians, while those who claimed divine worship for Christ were called Adorantes and those of the opposite view Nonadorantes, An epoch in the history of the party was made by the arrival of Fausto Sozzini at Cracow in 1579 (see Socinus). He succeeded in converting the great majority of the churches to his views and in silencing the dissentients. Henceforth the Polish Unitarians adopted the Socinian practice of paying worship to Christ, the Socinian view of the necessity of baptism and of the Christian’s duty towards the state. They rapidly became a numerous and powerfal body in Poland, distin- guished by the rank of their adherents, the ability and learning of their scholars, the excellence of their schools, and the superiority and wide circulation of their theological

literature. Racow, the theological centre of the Socinians, with its school and printing presses, obtained a world-wide fame. It was there that the Kacovian Catechism was published (1605 in the Polish language, 1608 in German, and 1609 in Latin). But before the death of Fausto Sozzini (1604) the situation of the Unitarians became more difficult, and in 1611 the Jesuits obtained their first open triumph over them. In the rapid course of the Catholic reaction, which was not resisted by the orthodox Protestants as long as the Socinian heretics only suffered, the church and school at Lublin, the most important place next to Racow, were first put down (1627), and Racow, with its church, school, and printing-press suffered the same fate in 1688. The final blow to the whole body followed in 1658, when all adherents of ‘‘the Arian and Anabaptist sect” were commanded to quit the kingdom within two years. A few renounced their faith, but the large majority fled into Transylvania, Prussia, Silesia, Holland, and England.

Transylvania (1568-1887).—Next to Poland Transylvania was the most important seat of Unitarianism. It was there the name was first used by the sect as its own designation, and it is thcre only that the sect lias had a continuous existence down to our own time, It is generally considered that the Italian refugee Biandrata was the founder of Transylvanian Unitarianism, but the present repre- sentatives of the body claim for it a nobler and domestic origin. Biandrata attended John Sigismund asa physician in 1568, and under his influence Unitarianism made rapid progress. In 1568 its professors, favoured by the king and many magnates, after separating from the orthodox church, constituted themselves a distinct body under the distinguished man Francis David, who is now regarded as the apostle of true Transylvanian Unitarianisin. Their principal centre was Klausenburg (Kolozsvar), where they had a large church, a college, aud a printing-press. But the same conflict between a more radical and a more conservative tendency which appeared amongst the Unitarians of Poland greatly disturbed the churches of Transylvania, particularly with regard to thie worship of Christ. On the side of the Adorantes was Biandrata, and on that of the Nonadorantes David. The party of David succumbed to force and fraud, and he himself died in prison a martyr to his convictions. Gradually the Socinian view prevailed, though in 1618 an old order to worship Christ required reinforcement. In the latter half of the 18th century the more

logical view of David entirely disappeared. Under the Austrian dynasty the Unitarians

were often exposed to great trials, until Joseph II. secured to them their rights and privileges. An official confession of faith of the year 1787 remains, with some modifications, essentially Socinian. But of late years the Transylvanian Unitarians have been in close relation with their co-rcligionists in England and America, some of the ministers having been educated at Manchester New College, and in consequence their theology is beconting essentially modern. The number of members was 32,000 in 1789, in 1847 40,000, dis- tributed in 104 parishes with 120 pastors. Their present number is 58,589 in 106 parishes, Their chicf centres are Kolozsvar, Thorda, and Keresztur, where they have excellent schools.

England (1778-1887).—For two and a half centuries previous to the rise of organized Unitarianism in England, opinions commonly called *by this name found numerous individual advocates and some martyrs. John Bidle (1615-62) published catechisms of Unitarian doctrine, translated Socinian works, and publicly discussed and preached an English form of Socinianism. But the severity of the law against Autitrinitarians, coupled with the gradual growth of free opinion in the Established Church and amongst the Presby- terian congregations, made the formation of separate Unitarian churches impossible, and, as was felt, less necessary for another hundred years. The adoption of a completely Humanitarian view of Christ’s person by a few solitary individuals (Lardner 17380, Priestley 1767, Lindsey 1778), assisted by the awakened earnest- ness of the time, led to their formation. Lindsey resigned a valu- able living in Yorkshire, and gathered the first professedly Uni- tarian church in London. Other clergymen followed his example, and amongst the Presbyterians several ministers, like Joseph Priestley, exchanged their Arian for Humanitarian views. This process went on with deep permanent effects in some of the Dissent- ing academies. In the year 1791 was formed the Unitarian Book Society for the distribution of literature, and several provincial asso- ciations originated about the sametime. In1806 the Unitarian Fund Society was established, with the object of promoting Unitarian Christianity by

direct mission work. In 1818 arose another society for protecting the civil rights of Unitarians. These various societies were consolidated in 1825 under the name of the British and Foreign Unitarian Association, which has now its headquarters in the building formerly used as Lindsey's chapel and residence in Essex Street, London. Early in this century nearly the whole of the old Presbyterian congregations, which, unlike those of the Baptists and Independents, had undogmatic trust-deeds, passed through the stages of Arminianism and various forms of Arianism into Socinianism in its peculiar English and mainly Priestleian form. The penal laws against Antitrinitarianism, which had long been obsolete, were repealcd in 1818, and in 1844 the right of Uni- tarians to the chapels which they held in succession from their Presbyterian forefathers was legally secured to them by the Dis- senters' Chapels Act without altering their undogmatic trust-deeds. Though these congregations, popularly known as Unitarian, on principle declined to restrict the progress of thought by imposing on either their ministers or members any dogmatic statements of belief, the generality of them adopted with some modifications the theological system of Priestley, which wasa combination of Locke's philosophy with the crudest rationalistic supernaturalism. With the rise of a more spiritual philosophy in Germany, which bore fruit in England and America before the close of the second decade of the century, the theology of English Unitarianism underwent a radical change, very much in the first instance under the influence of Dr Channing's writings. Without at all sacrificing its critical and rational bent, a decper emotional and spiritual element was introduced into it, which gradually, at the cost of some years of internal conflict, dispossessed the purely external and super- naturalistic Socinian and Priestleian legacy. English Unitarian theology was thereby brought into close sympathy with modern scientifie theology in Germany and elsewhere. This great and saving transformation was mainly due directly to James Martineau, J. J. Tayler, and J. H. Thom, aided by the writings of Channing and then of Theodore Parker. One consequence of the greater sub- stantial agreement of the present theology of the larger number of the Unitarian churches with the scientific theology of the century is that not a few representatives of these churches disclaim the name Unitarian as one tending to perpetuate divisions which have really no right to continued existence. The main reason for continued separation from the larger liberal churches, whether Established or Dissenting, earnestly urged by many

Unitarians of this class, is the use in those churches of theological formularies which modern theo- logy regards as of historic interest only. The number of congrega- tions in England and Wales generally described as Unitarian is about 300, nearly half of which date from between 1662 and 1750, and nearly all of which have undogmatic trust-deeds. Their consti- tution is purely congregational. For the education of their ministers they have Manchester New College, London (strictly undenomin- ational), the Unitarian Home Missionary Board, Manchester, and Carmarthen College, supported and managed by the Presbyterian Board in London, but practically Independent and Unitarian. The organs of the body are The Inquirer, The Christian Life, The Uni-

tarian Herald (weeklies), and The Christian Reformer (monthly). In Scotland there are 7 Unitarian congregations and 2 Universalist, the latter being, as in America, Unitarian in doctrine. In Ireland the number is about 40, being nearly all Presbyterian in constitu- tion. They are much stronger in the north than in the south of Ireland. In the north Antitrinitarian views began to spread about 1750; but the first congregation at Dublin traces its Unitarianism back to Thomas Emlyn, who wasimprisoned for his Arian opinions in 1702 at the instigation of orthodox Dissenters.

United States (1815-1887).—In the United States Unitarianism had no organized existence previous to 1815, and as in England at the present time the name has always covered great diffcrences of opinion within a common outline of belief or common drift of religious thought. Historical American Unitarianism represents ‘the liberal wing of the Congregational body.” Of tlic existing 370 churches 120 or more were originally the parish churches founded by the Puritan Congregationalists, which, like the Presbyterian congregations in England, passed gradually from Calvinism through Arminianism to Unitarianism, of which Harvard College became the spiritual centre. In 1812 there was but one church in America professedly Unitarian (that of King’s Chapel, Boston), though the ministers of Boston generally held Unitarian views. In 1815 Belsham’s account of the ‘‘State of the Unitarian Churches in America” (in his Life of Lindsey, London, 1812) led to a controversy, the issue of which was the distinct avowal of Unitarian

principles on the part of the liberal clergy of New England. Dr Channing came forward as the prophet and champion of American Unuitar- ianism, though the older he grew the more emphatically he re- pudiated sectarianism in every form. The Congregational body was thereby split into two sections, one of which styled themselves Unitarian Congregationalists. In 1825 the American Unitarian Association was formed, mainly for the diffusion of Unitarian literature and the support of poor congregations. At that time the Unitarian churches numbered about 122. Twenty years later they were some 280, while now they are about 870. The theological ‘ colleges of the body are the Divinity School of Harvard University, which is, like Manchester New College, undenominational, and the Theological School of Meadville. As in England so in America the theology of Unitarians has passed through marked changes, which have been attended by conflicts more or less acute. From 1815 to about 1836 a Biblical, semi-rationalistic seimi-super-

| | |

naturalistic theology prevailed, in the heart of which Channing’s elevated ethical ideas were fermenting and slowly preparing a new birth. From 1836 forces such as Biblical criticism, Carlyle and Emerson’s ‘‘transcendentalism,” and Theodore Parker’s ‘absolute religion” opened the era of modern theology, bringing American Unitarianism into living touch with the philosophy and theology of Germany. An effort in 1865 to bring the right and left wings of the body into a closer confederation with a more pronounced profession of Christianity led to the formation of a Free Religious Association on the broad basis of the love of truth and goodness. In the Western States the same controversy as to the basis of reli- gious association has been raging for more than ten years. In May . 1886 a resolution was passed by the Western Unitarian Conference by a majority of more than three-fourths adopting a purely ethical and non-theological basis. This led to a split in the body, and the formation of a new Western Association on a distinctly Christian platform. The left wing of American Unitarians show greater sym- pathy with recent scientific speculation and less fear of pantheistic theories than is the case with English Unitarians. The organs of the body are The Unitarian Review (Boston), The Christian Register (Boston), and The Unitarian (Chicago).

Literature.—On Unitarianism in general, see Fock, Der Socinianismus, Kiel, 1847; Wallace, Antitrinitarian Biography, London, 1850; Unitarianism exhibited in its Actual Condition, edited by J. R. Beard, London, 1846. On Socinianism and Unitarianism in Poland and Transylvania: the above works; the historical sketch of Thomas Rees in his translation of the Racovian Catechism, London, 1818; J. J. Tayler in Theological Review, Jan. 1869; Report of an Oficial Visit to Transylvania, by Alexander Gordon, London, 1879. On Unitarianism in England: Wallace's and Beard's works; J. J. Tayler, A Retrospect of the Religious Life of England, London, 1845, 3d ed., 1876; James Martineau, The Three Stages of Unitarian Theology, London, 1869; Bonet-Maury, Larly Sources of English Unitarian Christianity, English trans., London, 1884; Unitarian Christianity, Ten Lectures on the Posttive Aspects of Unitarian Thought and Doctrine, with preface by Rev. J. Martineau, D.D., London, 1831. On Unitarianism 10 America: Fock ; Beard; J. H. Allen, Our Liberal Movement in Theology, 2d ed., Boston, 1883; Zhe Year-Book of the Unitarian Congregational Churches for 1887, Boston, 1886; Count Goblet d'Alviella, The Contemporary Evolution of Religious — Thought in England, America, and India, English trans., 1885. (J. F. 8.)

UNITAS FRATRUM. See Moravian BRETHREN.

UNITED BRETHREN IN CHRIST, a body of Pro- testant Christians in the United States of America, which in 1886 included 4332 organized churches (4078 in 1877), 185,103 members (143,881 in 1877), 1378 itinerant ministers, 890 local preachers, 3169 Sunday schools, with 98,547 teachers and 179,729 scholars. The total value of church property held by the denomination was $3,345,064; the sum raised for salaries, church building expenses, col-

leges, missions, and the like madea total of $842,700. The organization of the church is Episcopal (six bishops, two of them missionary), but its polity combines features of the Methodist, Congregational, and Presbyterian systems. The creed may be described as Arminian. The members are

prohibited from joining secret societies, and from using alcohol or engaging in its manufacture or sale. In con- nexion with the denomination are a theological institution (39 students), ten colleges, and nine academies or semin- aries of a higher grade, with 62 professors, 64 other teachers, and 2486 students. There are 49 annual conferences, 46 of them in the United States. Two missions in the Sherbro country in West Africa have 6 American missionaries, 9 churches, and 2631 members; in Germany there are 10 German missionaries, with 20 churches and 615 members.

The denomination originated in the labours of P. W. Otterbein (1726-1813), a native of Germany, who came as a missionary to Lancaster, Pa., in 1752, and settled at Baltimore in 1774. He became associated with Martin Boehm, a Mennonite preacher, and also co-operated with the Methodist preachers when they came to Pennsylvania. The first annual conference was held in 1800.

UNITED KINGDOM, Tues, or Great Brrrarmn anp TRELAND is the official title, adopted in 1801, now applied to England, Scotland, and Ireland (see Great Brrvatn). The total area is returned as 77,657,065 acres, or 121,339

Population M.P.s| : Population|M.P.s Counties. in 1881. | 1885. Counties, in 1881, | 1885, Berwick…... pRoceBoeendHo 35,392] 1 ENGLAND. ne 17,657| 1 vonce cop gnoN009900 149,473 | 3 || Caithness……. 38,865} 2 Miicesteressevens| elssoa & | Clackmanniis….ccss 25,680} 1 Buckingham……., 176,323} 3 || Dumbarton……. 75,333 | 1 Cambridge…....se.ceee 185,594 | 4 || Dumfries…….....0.08 76,140 | 2 CHEStEr,,.....0000-..004, 644,087 | 18 || Edinburgh……. 389,164} 6 BUGUINVAl ccc.y.resces00e2-| 880,686 | 7 || Bein. .cccssccccssccccoeeere 43,788 | 2 Cumberland……. PAO GAIA GUN AMC recs tcc.cs1 sos 171,931 | 4 461,914| 9 OW AT aeissscsccsseseancens 266,360] 4 soc cDOHOROABOOHEED 603,595 | 13 || Haddington……. 38,502} 1 Benoa retivsssieesis 191,028; 4 IMVORNCSE.s iic..ssssrecee 90,454 | 2 0oddac0SAGBADCEOERG 867,258 | 16 || Kincardine…….....00… 84,464) 1 BRGSAGE || TL UT KGIMMOSS. ..,..05e000se0sones 6,697 | — ee ee 572,433 | 11 |) Kirkeudbright…….....J 42,197} 1 598;470)| 12 |] Lanark… scoseccseessneese 904,412 | 13 121,062] 3 |] Linlithgow……..... woes

43,510) 1 203/069 | 4 | Natt. .iscce.. 000 eines 10,455 | — Gu veresecvaees 59,491 | 2 || Orkney and Shetland. 61,749] 1 BREMMeressssssssesesceee revclmomt(OGr! WO) WN BAGDICS:....cccrcccsscer se 13,822} 1 HEATIGASLCT.....0010000006 3,454,441 | 57 || Perth sesacsecsceeee| 129,007 | 38 cates 821,258 | 6 || Renfrew…....ceesssess 263,374) 4 Pircess ss | 469,919) 11 78,547 | 1 Ree ae 2,920,485 | 47 58,442] 2 reo oe7)|| “4 25,564 | — Mis che 444,749 | 10 112,443] 3 Northampton…..... 272,555 | 7 eo 23,370] 1 Northumberland …... 434,086 | 8 WHRHOWIN 0c. scccsccseees 38,611} 1 Nottingham 391,815 | 7 | Oxford…..... ee 4 3,785,573 | 70

434; 1

2487014 5 IRELAND, soccer 469,109 | 10 421,943] 8 scconnec ee 981,013 | 17 163,177 | 3 Mc. ss viscs 356,893 | 8 46,568] 1 “00G NOOO ANOBGOBENO) 1,486,899 | 22 129,476} 2 Ra ee ctiescsscseas 490,505} 9 141,457} 2 Gascesecsscosees 737,339 | 14 495,607 | 9 64,191) 2 206,035 | 4 coc CeRHOSHagHOOROSDODC 258,965} 6 272,107 | 5 nose. 380,283! 8 418,910] 6 LOM sce sstcets ass 2,886,564 | 52 84,879} 2 ———— 242,005] 4 24,613,926 | 460 201,039} 4 75,804} 2 WALES. 99,531 | 3 BSUCIGSO Vis cs…-casadass ees 51,416; 1 72,852 | 8 BECOME i osss.sc0ecues 57,746} 1 90,372 | 2 MORTOIOEN .c..0ccseeeessnee 70,270) 1 180,632} 3 Carmarthen.,..... 124,864 | 3 164,991] 3 Pe. 119,849 3 || Longford…....., 61,009| 2 Russesne 111,740 | 3 ILC CTD ondierigoerncagoancean 77,684 | 2 cneobenonono URIS TA NZ: WICMBMOcdccecsss.cc-e0e-| 24ona2)| 4 BUMPS TO) HMA icc cresnssss.0000c0 87,469 | 2 52,038] 1 MORAGA. 2:01: o0scn00s 102,748 | 2 Coy)! 2 WEGQUMEGIIS .....¢6-....000000 73,124) 2 91,824 | 2 ROsCOMMON….....068 132,490 | 2 BEACON ests censecersciss Zero LOH) We SIMEON... ..00040eescecevee oe 11,578) 2 ——_———_|—— _ Tipperary…..... 199,612) 4 1,360,513 | 30 || Tyrone…....scccseesees 197,719 | 4 —_———_|——— Waterford ….....00 112,768] 3 England and Wales… 25,974,439 1490 || Westmeath….....000 71,798 | 2 ACOSO BRS erpsensoorocce 123,854} 2 SCOTLAND, WHCKIOW vo, cssccosarconese 70,386 | 2 267,990| 4 aaitaea aah | 76,468 | 1 5,174,836 | 101 217,519 | 4 ——_____|__ 62,736 | 1 UnitEp Kinapom…...|384,884,848/ 661

square miles,—England and Wales embracing 37,370,041 acres (whereof Wales 4,721,633), Scotland 19,467,077, and Ireland 20,819,947. The accompanying table gives the population of the counties according to the census of 1881, and their parliamentary representation as determined by the Redistribution Act of 1885. Inthe enumeration of the Scottish members of parliament, groups of burghs are included in the counties containing the burghs whence they are respectively named, while it is to be observed that Kinross county is united with Clackmannan, Nairn with Elgin, and Selkirk with Peebles. The addition of the nine university representatives (England, 5; Scotland, 2 ; Ireland, 2) brings the total membership of the House of Commons to 670.

For the Islands in the British Seas the figures are as follows :—Isle of Man-—141,263 acres, population 53,558 ; Channel Islands—48,322 acres, population 87,702.

UNITED PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH, Tux, in point

| of numbers the third of the Presbyterian organizations of

Scotland, was formed in 1847 by the union of the United Secession and Relief Churches (see below). The doctrinal standards are those of the other Presbyterian churches of Scotland, and the formula employed at the ordination of ministers is similar to that of the Established and Free Churches ; but adherence to the doctrinal standards is professed in view of the Declaratory Act of 1879, accord- ing to which signatories “are not required to approve of anything in the standards of the church which teaches or is supposed to teach compulsory or persecuting and intol- erant principles in religion,” and are allowed freedom of opinion on all points which, in the judgment of the church, do not enter into the substance of the faith. The denomina- tion in 1887 consisted of 32 presbyteries and 564 congrega- tions (518 in 1847), with a total membership of 182,063 (175,066 in 1878; 178,195 in 1883), thus representing about 14 per cent. of the population of Scotland. The number of baptisms in 1886 was 9894; there were 887 Sunday schools, with 11,994 teachers and 97,535 scholars, besides 788 advanced Bible classes, with 30,535 scholars. The total income

of the church in 1886 was £373,545 (average for ten years from 1877 to 1886, £375,660) ; of this total £237,300 was ordinary congregational income, and £136,245 missionary and benevolent income. The average stipend paid to each minister was £259, 16s. 10d. There is a divinity hall in Edinburgh with 4 professors and (session 1887-88) 114 students. The term of study is three years. The United Presbyterian Church has missions in Jamaica (a synod with four presbyteries), Trinidad, Kaffraria, Old Calabar, India, China, Japan, and Spain. The mission staff consists of 60 ordained Europeans, 22 ordained natives, 8 medical missionaries, 3 European evangelists, and 19 female missionaries. Under these are 502 native evangelists, teachers, and other helpers. In 1886 the membership of the native congregations was 13,214 (10,215 in 1881). In Jamaica there is a theological in- stitution. At the end of 1875 the denomination had 620 congregations, with 190,242 members, but in June 1876 98 of its congregations in England, with 20,207 members, were incorporated with the English Presbyterian Church. History.—(1) United Secession Church.—The general causes which led to the first great secession from the Church of Scotland as by law established in 1688 have already been briefly. indicated under PRESBYTERIANISM (see vol. xix. p. 685; compare also Scortanp, CHURCH oF, vol. xxi. p. 536 sg.). Its immediate occasion rose out of an Act of Assembly of 1732 which abolished the last remnant of popular election by enacting that, in cases where patrons might neglect or decline to exercise their right of presentation, the minister was to be chosen, not by the congregation, but only by the elders and Protestant

heritors. The Actitself had been passed by the Assembly, although the presbyteries to which it had been previously submitted as an overture had disapproved of it by a large majority ; and in accordance with a previous Act (1730), which had taken away even the right of complaint, the protests of the dissentient majority were refused. In the following October Ebenezer ErsKINE (g.v.), minister of Stirling, who happened to be moderator of the synod of Perth and Stirling, preached a synod sermon, in the course of which he took occasion to refer to the Act in question as in his opinion unscriptural and unconstitutional. Some of his expressions were objected to by members of synod because “ tending to disquiet the peace of the church

and impugning several Acts of Assembly and proceedings of church judicatories," and after long and keen debate it was resolved that he should be censured for them. This judgment, on appeal, was affirmed by the Assembly in May 1733, whereupon Erskine protested to the effect that he held himself still at liberty to teach the same truths and to testify against the same or similar evils on every proper occasion, This protest, in which he was joined by William Wilson, Alexander Moncrieff, and James Fisher, ministers at Perth, Abernethy, and Kinclaven respectively, was regarded by the Assembly as contumacious, and the commission of Assembly was ordered to procure its re- tractation or to proceed to higher censures. In November accordingly the protesting ministers were severed from 'their charges, their churches declared vacant, and all min- isters of the church prohibited from employing them in any ministerial function. They replied by protesting that they still adhered to the principles of the church, though now obliged to "make a secession from the prevailing party in ecclesiastical courts," maintaining their continued right to discharge all the duties of the ministerial and pastoral office "according to the word of God, the Con- fession of Faith, and the constitution of the church," and appealing to the "first free, faithful, and reforming General Assembly of the Church of Scotland." In De- cember 1733 they formally constituted themselves into a presbytery, but for some time their meetings were devoted almost entirely to prayer and religious conference. In 1734 they published their first '" testimony," with a state- ment of the grounds of their secession, which made pro- minent reference to the doctrinal laxity of previous General Assemblies. In 1736 they proceeded to exercise " judicial powers" as a church court, published a " judicial testi- mony," and began to organize churches in various parts of the country. Having been joined by four other min- isters, including the well-known Ralph Erskine, they appointed Mr Wilson professor of divinity. For these acts proceedings were again instituted against them in the Assembly, with the result that, having disowned the authority of that body in an "act of declinature," they were in 1740 all deposed and ordered to be ejected from their churches. Meanwhile the members of the '' Associate Presbytery " and its adherents steadily increased, until in 1745 there were forty-five congregations under its jurisdic- tion, and it was reconstituted into an "' Associate Synod." A violent controversy arose the same year respecting the religious clause of the oath taken by burgesses in Edin- burgh, Glasgow, and Perth ("I profess

and allow with my heart the true religion presently professed within this realm and authorized by the laws thereof”), and resulted in April 1747 in a “breach,” when two bodies were formed, each claiming to be the “‘ Associate Synod”; those who condemned the swearing of the burgess oath as sinful came to be popularly known as “ Antiburghers,” while the other party, who contended that abstinence from

1 The passing of the Act was certainly unconstitutional ; it was rescinded in 1734, ‘‘ because not made according to former Acts.”

it should not be made a term of communion, were desig- nated ‘“‘ Burghers.” The Antiburghers not only refused to hold further friendly conference with the others, but ultimately went so far as to pass sentences of deposition and the greater excommunication on the Erskines and other ministers who held the opposing view.

The Associate (Antiburgher) Synod held its first meeting in Edinburgh in the house of Adam Grp (¢.v.) on April 10, 1747. It grew with considerable rapidity, and in 1788 had ninety-four settled charges in Great Britain and nineteen in Ireland, besides a presbytery in America. For purposes of organization it was formed in that year into four provincial synods, and took the name of “The General Associate Synod.” The ‘new light ” controversies as to the province of the civil magistrate in matters of religion led to the publication of a revised testimony in the “ voluntary” sense in 1804, and in consequence M‘Crie, the historian of Knox, with three other brethren, withdrew to form the Constitutional Associate Presbytery.

The Associate (Burgher) Synod held its first meeting at Stirling on June 16, 1747. The number of congrega- tions under its charge rapidly increased, and within thirty years there were presbyteries in connexion with it in Jreland and North America, as well as throughout Scotland. In 1782 the American presbyteries took the designation of the Associate Reformed Church in America. About the year 1795 the “voluntary” controversy respecting the power of the civil magistrate in matters of religion arose within this synod also, and a large majority was found to have adopted “new light” views. This led in 1799 to the secession of the ‘“ Associate

Presbytery," which in 1805 took the designation of the Associate Synod or Original Burgher Synod.?

In 1820 the General Associate or Antiburgher Synod (to the number of 129 congregations®) united with the 154 congregations of the Associate or Burgher Synod. The body thus constituted, ‘‘The United Secession Church," had increased by 1847 to 400 congregations, the whole of which united in that year with the Relief Synod to form the United Presbyterian Church.

(2) Relief Church.—The Presbytery of Relief was con- stituted in 1761 by three ministers of the Church of Scotland, one of whom was Thomas GILLESPIE (q.v.), who had been deposed by the Assembly in 1752 for refusing to take part in the intrusion of unacceptable ministers. The number of congregations under its charge increased with considerable rapidity, and a Relief Synod was formed in 1773, which in 1847 had under its jurisdiction 136 congregations ; of these 118 united with the United Secession Church in that year. The Relief Church issued no distinctive ‘‘ testimonies," and a certain breadth of view was shown in the formal declaration of their terms of communion, first made in 1773, which allowed occasional communion with those of the Episcopal and Independent persuasion who are " visible saints." A Relief theological hall was instituted in 1824. .

See M‘Kerrow, History of the United Secession Chureh, 1841; Struthers, History of the Relief Church, 1848 ; Mackelvie, Annals and Statisties of the United Presbyterian Church, 1873.

UNITED PROVINCES. See Hotuanp.

2 The majority of this synod joined the Church of Scotland in 1839. The small minority which still retained the name joined the Original Seceders (see next note) in 1842, the resultant body assuming the designation of United Original Seceders. A small majority (twenty- seven ministers in all) of the Synod of United Original Seceders joined the Free Church in 1852. A synod of this name still exists, having under its jurisdiction four presbyteries, with twenty-nine charges (of which two are in Ireland).

3 A dissentient remnant (eight congregations) of the General Asso- ciate Synod united with the Constitutional Associate Presbytery in 1827, the resultant body being called the Associate Synod of Original Seceders.

DRITED STATES

PART I.—HISTORY AND CONSTITUTION.

Copyright, 1558, by Alexander Fohnston.

out under Christopher Newport. He found a fine river, Settle. which he named after the king, and on its banks, within ment of

I. COLONIZATION : 1607-1750.

plate, HOUGH the voyages of the Cabots (1497-98) along fie ae 5 VII. the coast of North America were the ground the present State of Virginia, he planted the settlement of re ‘arly _ which the English finally adopted as a basis for their claims | Jamestown’ (13th May 1607). Misgovernment, dissen- i“ on that continent, no very effective steps were taken to | Sion, mismanagement, and starvation were almost too much “xplora- reduce the continent to possession until after 1606. Martin | for the infant colony, and several times the colonists were jons. Frobisher (1576) failed in an attempt to explore Labrador. | ©” the point of giving it up and going home. Twelve Sir Humphrey Gilbert (1578) failed in a similar attempt | Ye@%8 were required to put Virginia on a sound footing. of Vir- on the continent ; and in a second effort (1583) he was By that time the liberal element in the London Company 8’nia; lost ina storm at sea on his return. In 1584 his half. | bad got control of it, and granted the colonists a repre- brother Raleigh

took up the work under commission from | Se2tative government. The year in which this house of Queen Elizabeth. He sent two small vessels under Amidas | burgesses met (1619) was the year in which African slaves and Barlow. They explored the south-central coast of | Were introduced into the colony from a Dutch vessel. what is now the United States, and returned with such 4. Separatists from the Church of England began the flattering reports that the courtly Raleigh at once named | ™ore northerly settlements. Driven from England, they the country Virginia, in honour of the queen, and sent out found refuge in Holland. Thence returning for the moment a colony. It was starved out in a year (1585). He sent to England, a company of 102 of them set sail for America another to the same place, Roanoke Island (1587), but it | 17 the “ Mayflower,” landing (December 21, 1620) at had disappeared when it was searched for three years after. Plymouth, in the south-eastern part of the present State of Ply- Gosnold (1602) found a shorter route across the Atlantic, of Massachusetts, The rigours of a new and cold country, mouth; and spent a winter on an island off the present coast of combined with poverty and the payment of interest at 45 Massachusetts ; but his men refused to stay longer. These | Per cent., made the early years of the Plymouth colony a are the official records of English explorations up to 1606; | esperate struggle for existence, but it survived. It had ’ but it is pretty certain that fishing and trading voyages, of | 2° special charter, but a licence from the Plymouth Com- which no record was kept, were more common than has | P@?Y- Other little towns were founded to the north of been supposed, and that they kept alive a knowledge of this settlement, and in 1629 these were all embraced in a the country. charter given by Charles I. to the Governor and Company ondon 2, In 1606 James I. formed two companies by a single of Massachusetts Bay. This was a Puritan venture, com- of Massa- ie charter. To one, the London Company, he granted the — of men of higher social grade than the Plymouth a bm. North-American coast between 34° and 38° N. lat.; to | Separatists, and was meant to furnish a refuge for those “*Y> who dreaded the ecclesiastical policy of the crown. The

Anies,

,

| | |

the other, the Plymouth Company, whose membership was more in the west of England, he granted the coast between 41° and 45° N. lat. The intervening coast, between lat. 38° and 41°, or between the Rappahannock and Hudson rivers, was to be common to both, but neither was to plant a settlement within 100 miles of a previous settlement of the other. Each was to be governed by a council appointed by the king, and these councils were to appoint colonial councils of thirteen, with really absolute powers. Neither company did much in colonization: the London Company gave up its charter in 1624, and the Plymouth Company, after a complete change of constitu- tion in 1620, surrendered its charter in 1635. But the London Company at least began the work of colonization, and the Plymouth Company parcelled out its grant to actual colonists. Above all, the charter of the two com- panies had granted the principle to which the colonists always appealed as the foundation of English colonization in North America, as the condition on which immigrants had entered it, irrevocable unless by mutual consent of crown and subjects: ‘Also we do, for us, our heirs and successors, declare by these presents that all and every the persons, being our subjects, which shall go and inhabit within the said colony and plantation, and every their children and posterity, which shall happen to be born within any of the limits thereof, shall have and enjoy all liberties, franchises, and immunities of free denizens and natural subjects within any of our other dominions, to all intents and purposes as if they had been abiding and born within this our realm of England, or in any other of our dominions.”

3. The London Company was first in the field. A ship- load of the adventurers then swarming in London was sent

next year the company took the bold step of transferring its organization to America, so as to be out of the imme- diate notice of the crown and its agents. Eleven vessels took more than a thousand colonists over, and the real colony of Massachusetts was begun.

5. The charter of the London Company was surrendered to the crown, as has been said, in 1624; and the king thereafter disposed of the territory

which had been granted to it as he pleased. was carved out of it for Lord Baltimore. territory to the south of the present State of Virginia was

cut off from it and called Carolina, covering the present of Caro- In 1729 lina;

States of North and South Carolina and Georgia. Carolina was divided into North and South Carolina ; and in 1732 the last of the colonies, Georgia, was organized, of

Five distinct colonies were thus formed out of the original Georgia ;

London Company's grant.

6. When the Plymouth Company finally surrendered its charter in 1635, it had made one ineffectual attempt at colonization (1607) near the mouth of the Kennebec river, in Maine, and one complete colony, Massachusetts Bay, had arisen within its territory. Another colony, that of Plymouth, existed by licence. Massachusetts settlers, without even a licence, were pouring into the vacant

1 The former settlement of Jamestown is nowin James City county, Va., about 32 miles from the mouth of the James river. It was at first the capital of the colony, but began to decline when Williamsburgh was made the capital. Its death-blow was received when it was burned in 1676, during Bacon's rebellion. It was not rebuilt, and has now almost disappeared, " Nothing remains but the ruins of a church tower covered with ivy, and some old tombstones. The river encroaches year by year, and the ground occupied by the original huts

is already submerged." XXIII. — g2

In 1632 the new colony of Maryland of Mary- In 1663 the land;

territory to the south of Massachusetts, there to form the colonies of Connecticut and Rhode Island, afterwards chartered by the crown, 1662 and

1663. A few fishing villages to the north of Massachusetts, established under the grant of John Mason, were the nucleus of the colony of New Hampshire. The present States of Vermont and Maine were not yet organized. Out of the original Ply- mouth Company's grant were thus formed the colonies of Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island, and New Hampshire. The name New England was commonly applied to the whole territory from the beginning, having been first used by Captain John Smith in 1614.

7, Nine of the "old thirteen" colonies are thus ac- counted for. The remaining four fell in the territory between the two main grants, which was to be common to both companies, but was in fact never appropriated by either. The Spaniard had settled contentedly far to the south ; and the Frenchman, still bound by too many of the ancient ecclesiastical influences to contest supremacy with the Spaniard, had settled as far to the north as pos- sible, in Canada. England had been so far released from ecclesiastical influences by the spread of the Reformation as to be prepared to contest supremacy with Spaniard, Frenchman, or any one else ; but her lingering desires to avoid open conflict at any cheap rate had tended to fix her settlements on the very choicest part of the coast, in the middle latitudes,—a fact which was to colour the whole future history of the continent. The concurrent claims of the two English companies in the central zone seem to have deterred both of them from any attempt to interfere with the development of a colony there by the only other people of western Europe which was prepared to grasp at such an opportunity. The Dutch (1609) sent out Henry Hudson, an Englishman in their service, and he made the first close exploration of this central region. Dutch merchants thereupon set up a trading post at Manhadoes (the present city of New York), where a government under the Dutch West India Company was organized in 1621, when the Dutch states-general had granted the territory toit. The territory was named New Netherland, and the town at the mouth of the Hudson river New Amsterdam. Sweden sent a colony to Dela- ware Bay in 1638; but the attempt was never thoroughly backed, and in 1655 it was surrendered to the Dutch.

8. By the time of the Restoration in England, the northern and southern English colonies had developed so far that the existence of this alien

element between them had come to be arecognized annoyance and danger. From the Hudson river to Maine, from the Savannah river to Delaware Bay, all was English. Roads had been roughly marked out ; ships were sailing along the respective coasts as if at home; colonial governments were beginning to lean upon one another for support ; but between the two was a territory which might at any moment turn to hostility. There was an evidently growing disposition in New England to attempt the conquest of it unaided. When England and Holland found themselves at war (1664), the opportunity arrived for a blow at Holland's colonial possessions. An English army and fleet under Colonel Nichols touched at Boston, and, proceeding thence to New Amsterdam, took possession of the whole central territory. It had been granted by the king to his brother, the duke of York, and the province and city were now named New York in honour of the new proprietor. The duke, the same year, granted a part of his territory to Berkeley and

of Con- necticut and. Rhode Island ;

of New Hamp- shire.

The

Dutch settle- ments,

The colony of New York ;

fN aay. result. In 1681 the great parallelogram west of New

of Penn- Jersey was granted to Penn and called Pennsylvania. In sylvania; the following year Penn bought from the duke of York the little piece of territory which remained united to Penn-

Carteret, and the new colony of New Jersey was the >

STATES

sylvania until the revolution, then becoming the State of of Dele. Delaware. The central territory thus furnished four of Ware. the "old thirteen"

colonies, New England four, and the southern portion five.

9. If there was any governing idea in the organization The of the colonial governments, it was of the rudest kind ; ©lonial | and in fact each was allowed to be so largely modified by — circumstances that, with a general similarity, there was r the widest possible divergence. A general division of The the colonial governments is into charter, proprietary, and charter | royal governments. The charter governments were Mas- ogee sachusetts, Connecticut, and Rhode Island. In these the colonial governments had charters from the crown, giving the people, or freemen, the right to choose their own governors and other magistrates, to make their own laws, and to interpret and enforce them. Only Connecticut and Rhode Island kept their charters intact. The Massa- chusetts charter was cancelled by the crown judges (1684) under a quo warranto ; and in 1691 a new charter was granted. As it reserved to the crown the appointment of the governor, with an absolute veto on laws and after 1726 on the election of the speaker of the lower house, Massachusetts was thus taken out of the class of purely charter colonies and put into that of a semi-royal colony. | The proprietary colonies were New Hampshire, New York, The pr | New Jersey, Pennsylvania (including Delaware), Mary- prietary | land, Carolina, and Georgia. These were granted to pro- aise prietors, who, as inducements to settlers, granted govern- mental privileges almost as liberal as those of the charter colonies. Only Pennsylvania, Delaware, and Maryland remained proprietary colonies down to the revolution, and in these the governor had a charter right of veto on legis- lation. Virginia became a royal colony in 1620, and New Theryal) York as soon as its proprietor became king ; and other colonies. @ proprietors, becoming tired of continual quarrels with the | colonists, gradually surrendered their grants to the crown. New Hampshire, New York, New Jersey, North and South Carolina, and Georgia had thus become royal colonies before the revolution. In the royal colonies, commonly called provinces, the governors were appointed by the crown, and had an absolute veto on legislation, There were thus at last three proprietary, seven royal, one semi- royal, and two charter colonies. |

10, The two charter colonies were simple representative Reprs | democracies, having the power to legislate without even a practical appeal to the crown, and having no royal gover- > | nor or agent witbin their

borders. Their systems were the high-water mark to which the desires and claims of the other colonies gradually approached. Massachusetts and the proprietary colonies were very nearly on a level with them ; and the royal or proprietary governor's veto power was rather an annoyance than a fundamental differ- ence. But in all the colonies representative governments had forced their way, and had very early taken a bi- cameral shape. In the charter colonies and Massachusetts the lower house was chosen by the towns and the upper house from the people at large, and the two houses made up the "assembly." In Pennsylvania and Delaware there was but one house. In the royal colonies and in Mary- land the lower house alone was elected by the people ; the upper house, or council, was chosen by the crown through the governor; and the assent of all three elements was essential to legislation. In the final revolution the charter colonies did not change their governments at all; they already had what they wanted. The revolution was con- summated in the other colonies by the assumption of power by the lower or popular house, usually known as the "assembly," the governor or council, or both, being ousted.

rz. All these governmental organizations take a pro

[HISTORY,

Town and parish,

southern colonies.

1607-1750.] UNITED

minent place in American history, and had a strong influ- ence on the ultimate development of the United States ; and yet they touched the life of the people at compara- tively few points. A more marked and important distinc- tion is in the local organizations of the northern and All the southern colonies began as proprietary governments. Settlers went there as indi-

er AT ES 731

never arrived at any distinct system ; at the best, their system was a conglomerate. Much the same result has been reached in the new Western States, organized under the care of the Federal Government, where the New Eng- land immigration has brought with it a demand for local self-government which has resulted in a compromise between the two systems of town units and county units.

14. Ecclesiastical divisions were at first as strong as Hcclesi-

viduals connected only with the colony. ‘T’o the individual : civil diversities. The New England colonies were Congre- @stical

“e aie: ae the colony was the great political factor ; his only other i

‘The town system.

*he ‘hiddle olonies,

connexion was with his parish, to which the colony allowed few political functions ; and, where political power touched him at all, it was through the colony. In time it became necessary to allow political powers to the parish or county, but they were really more judicial than political. ‘The southern county was a modified English shire, with the towns left out.” The whole tendency shows the character of the immigration in this part of the country, from Eng- lish districts outside of the influence of the towns.

12. In New England local organization was quite different. A good example is the town of Dorchester. Organized (March 20, 1630) in Plymouth, England, when its people were on the point of embarkation for America, it took the shape of a distinct town and church before they went on shipboard. Its civil and ecclesiastical organization were complete before they landed in Massachusetts Bay and came under the jurisdiction of a chartered company. Its people governed themselves, in their town government, in all but a few points, in which the colony asserted superi- ority. As the colony’s claims increased, the town’s dis- satisfaction increased. In 1635 the town migrated ina body, with its civil and ecclesiastical organization still intact, into the vacant territory of Connecticut, and there became the town of Windsor. Here, uniting with other towns, which had migrated in a similar fashion, it

formed the new Commonwealth of Connecticut, in which the local liberty of the towns was fully secured in the frame of government. Rhode Island was formed in the same way, by separate towns ; Vermont afterwards in the same way ; and the towns of the parent colony of Massachusetts learned to claim a larger liberty than had been possible at first. Thus, all through New England, the local town organizations came to monopolize almost all ordinary governmental powers; and the counties to which the towns belonged were judicial, not political, units, marking merely the jurisdiction of the sheriff. In the annual town meetings, and in special meetings from time to time, the freemen exercised without any formal grant the powers of self-taxation, of expenditure of taxation, of trial by jury, and of a complete local government. Further, the lower houses of their colonial legislatures were made up of gene- rally equal representations from the towns, while the upper houses were chosen from the colony at large. In this was the germ of the subsequent development of the United States senate, in which the States are equally represented, and of the house of representatives, representing the people numerically (§§ 104, 105, 109, 110).

13. The two opposite systems of the north and south found a field for conflict in the organization of the central territory after its acquisition (§ 8). The crown agents were strongly disposed to follow the more centralized system of the southern colonies, though Penn, having Organized counties and restricted his legislature to a single house, based it on the counties. In New York and New Jersey the Dutch system of “ patroonships” had left a simulacrum of local independence, and a stronger tendency in the same direction came in through immigration from New England. To encourage this immigration, the New Jersey proprietors gave town powers to many of them; and some of the New Jersey towns were merely trans- planted New England towns. But the middle colonies

SS SS ee ee

gational, and these churches were established and sup- ported by law, except in Rhode Island, where the Baptists were numerically superior. In the royal colonies generally there was a steady disposition to establish the Church of England, and it was more or less successful. In language there were striking dissimilarities, due to a most hetero- geneous immigration. It

was said that every language of Europe could be found in the colony of Pennsylvania. But, after all, this diversity had no indications of persist-

ence ; the immigration in each case had been too small to Immigra- Very little of the wonderful increase of tion.

support itself. American population between 1607 and 1750 was due to immigration ; most of it had come from natural increase. After the first outflow from Old to New England, in 1630-31, emigration was checked at first by the changing circumstances of the struggle between the people and the king, and, when the struggle was over, by the better-known difficulties of life in the colonies. Franklin, in 1751, when he estimated that there were “near a million English souls” in the colonies, thought that scarce eighty thousand had been brought over by sea. No matter how diverse the small immigration might have been on its arrival, there was a steady pressure on its descendants to turn them into Englishmen ; and it was very successful. When White- field, the revivalist, visited America about 1740, he found the population sufficiently homogeneous for his preaching to take effect, all the way from Georgia to New England. The same tendency shows itself in the complete freedom of intercolonial migration. Men went from one colony to another, or held estates, or took inheritances in different colonies, without the slightest notion that they were under any essentially diverse political conditions. The whole coast, from Nova Scotia to the Spanish possessions in Florida, was one in all essential circumstances ; and there was only the need of some sudden shock to crystallize it into a real political unity. Hardly anything in history is more impressive than this mustering of Englishmen on the Atlantic coast of North America, their organization of natural and simple governments, and their preparations for the final march of 38000 miles westward, unless it be the utter ignorance of the home Government and people that any such process was going on.

15. This ignorance had one singular effect in completing Demo- the difference between the new and the old country. An Cracy.

odd belief that European plants and animals degenerated in size and quality on transplantation to the western con- tinent was persistent at the time even among learned men in Europe, and Jefferson felt bound to take great pains to combat it so late as the end of the 18th century. That passage in

Thackeray's Virginians, where the head of the elder Virginian branch of the family returns to England, to be treated with contempt and indifference by the younger branch which had remained at home, indicates the state of mind among the influential classes in England which bent them against any admission of Americans to the honours or privileges of the English higher classes. A few titles were given; entails were maintained in the southern colonies; but there were no such systematic efforts as are necessary to maintain an aristocratic class. This may have been gratifying to the ruling class in England ; but it was in reality an unconsciously system-

Social con- ditions.

Educa- tion.

+

732 UR 2? FD

atic effort to develop democracy in the English colonies in North America. In combination with the free represen- tative institutions which had taken root there, it was very successful, and, when the final struggle between the English ruling class and the colonists took shape, the former had singularly few friends or allies in the colonies. What the results might have been if efforts had been made to build up a titled class in the colonies, with entailed revenues and hereditary privileges in the upper houses of the colonial legislatures, is not easy to imagine ; but the prejudices of the privileged classes at home eliminated this factor from the problem. Every influence conduced to make the American commonwealths representative demo- cracies; and the reservation of crown influence in the functions of the governors or the appointment of the council was merely a dam which was sure to be broken down as development increased.

16. Social circumstances had all the features of life in a new country, aggravated by the difficulties of inter-com- munication at that time. In the southern and middle colonies there was a rude abundance, so that, however much the waut of luxuries might be felt, there was no lack of the necessaries of life. The growth of tobacco, indigo, and rice in the southern colonies was so large a source of wealth that luxury in that part of the

country had taken a more pronounced form than in the others. The southern planter, trained in English schools and universities and admitted to the English bar, was more like an English gentleman in a condition of temporary retirement than an American colonist. The settler of the middle colonies was the ordinary agriculturist. The hardships of colonial life were the special lot of the New England colonist. For some reason—perhaps because the forests retained the snow on the ground—the New England winters were more severe than they are now. The rudely built house, with its enormous chimney attracting draughts of outer air from every point, was a poor protection against the cold. Travel, difficult enough at the best, became impossible in winter, unless the snow rose so high as to blot out the roads and permit the traveller to drive his sledge across country. Medical and surgical attendance was scarce in summer, and hardly dreamed of in winter. The religious feeling of the people was against amusements of all kinds, except going to funerals, an occasional dinner, and the restricted enjoyments of courtship. It was a point of honour or of religious feeling to exclude luxury from church equipment : stoves were not known in Connecticut churches until the beginning of this century, and yet new- born infants were taken to church for baptism in the bitterest weather}

17. Wealth in the southern colonies was sufficient to give the better classes there an education of a very high order ; and they in turn, by virtue of their political and social leadership, imparted something of their acquisitions to those below them. In the middle colonies commercial pursuits and those interests which go to make men of affairs had something of the same influence on special classes. In New England education was more general, even though it had no such advantages for special classes as at the south. The first immigration into New England contained an unusually large proportion of English uni- versity men, particularly among the ministers. These

1 An extract from a New England diary of 1716 will give some notion of social circumstances at that comparatively late period. ‘‘Lord’s Day, Jany. 15. An extraordinary cold Storm of wind and Snow. Blows much as coming home at Noon and so holds on. Bread was frozen at the Lord’s table; Mr Pemberton administered. Came not out to afternoon exercise. Though ‘twas so cold, yet John Tuckerman was baptised. At six a-clock my ink freezes so

that I can hardly write by a good fire in my wive’s chamber. Yet was very comfortable at meeting. Laus Deo.”

Sl AT ps

fixed the mould into which their descendants have been run, and New England’s influence in the United States has been due largely to them. The town system added to their influence. Owing to it the ebbing and flowing of population through New England was not blind or unor- ganized. Every little town was a skeleton battalion, to be filled up by subsequent increase and immigration ; and the ministers and other professional men made a multitude of successors for themselves, with all their own ideas. Con- sidering the execrable quality of school and college in- struction in New England, as elsewhere at the time, it is very remarkable that, as the original supply of university- bred leaders died off, there was a full crop of American- bred men quite prepared to take their places and carry on their work. Here were Harvard and Yale, the two lead- ing colleges of the country, which in 1760 had six :— Harvard College, in Massachusetts (founded in 1636); William and Mary College, in Virginia (1692); Yale College, in Connecticut (1700) ; Princeton College, in New Jersey (1746); Pennsylvania University (1749); and King’s, now Columbia, College, in New York (1754).

[uIsToRY.

18. Shipwrights had been sent to Virginia at an early Com- date ; but shipbuilding never made great head in the meme.

southern colonies, in spite of the fact that they had all the materials for it in abundance. At a later period ships were built, and it was not uncommon for planters to have their private docks on their own plantations, where their ships were freiglited for-Europe. But such building was individual : each planter built only for himself. The first vessel built by Europeans in this part of the continent was constructed by Adrian Block at New Amsterdam (1614). Many small vessels were built at the mouth of the Hudson river under Dutch and English domination, but New York’s commercial supremacy did not fairly begin until after the revolution. Perhaps the hardships of life in New England made its people prefer water to land ; at

any rate they took to shipbuilding early and carried it on diligently and successfully. Plymouth built a little vessel before the settlement was five years old, and Massachusetts another, the “ Blessing of the Bay” (1631). Before 1650 New England vessels had begun the general foreign trade, from port to port, which combined exportation with a foreign coasting trade and mercantile business, the form in which New England commercial enterprise was to show itself most strongly. Before 1724 English ship-carpenters complained of the competition of the Americans, and in 1760 the colonies were building new ships at the rate of about 20,000 tons a year, most of them being sold in England.

19. The earliest manufactures in the colonies were natur- Manu-

ally those of the simplest kind, the products of sawmills,

grist-mills, and tanneries, and home-made cloth. The saiting

search for ores, however, had been a prime cause of immi- gration with many of the settlers, and they turned almost at once to mining and metallurgy. Most of their efforts failed, in spite of “‘ premiums,” bounties, and monopolies for terms of years granted by the colonial legislatures. To this the production of iron was an exception. It was produced, from the beginning of the 18th century, m western Massachusetts and Connecticut, in eastern New York, in northern New Jersey, and in eastern Pennsyl- vania. All these districts were about on a level, until the adaptation of the furnaces to the use of anthracite coal drove the New England and New York districts, which had depended on wood as fuel, almost out of competition (§ 210). Until that time iron production was a leading New England industry. Not only were the various pro- ducts of iron exported largely ; the manufacture of nails, and of other articles which could be made by an industrious agricultural population in winter and stormy weather, was

uN Peep

a “home industry” on which New Englanders depended for much of their support.

20. The colonial system of England differed in no respect from that of other European nations of the time : probably none of them could have conceived any other as possible. The colonies were to be depdts for the distri- bution of home products on a new soil; whenever they assumed any other functions they were to be checked, The attempts of the Americans to engage in commerce

maintenance of the connexion between the colonies and the mother country, after the interested classes in the colonies should become numerous and their interests large. Unluckily for the connexion, the arrival at this point was just the time when the attempt was first made to enforce the Acts with vigour (§ 38).

22. English imports from the North-American colonies The amounted to £395,000 in 1700, £574,000 in 1730, and American £761,000 in 1760; the exports to the colonies in the same ™2tket-

with other nations, their shipbuilding, and their growing manufactures were, in appearance, deductions from the general market of English producers, and the home Gov- ernment felt itself bound to interfere. Virginia claimed, by charter-right, the power to trade freely with foreign nations ; and Virginia was notoriously on the side of the Stuarts against the Parliament. In 1651 parliament passed the Navigation Act, forbidding the carrying of colonial produce to England unless in English or colonial vessels, with an English captain and crew. By the Act of 1661 the reach of the system was extended. Sugar, tobacco, indigo, and other “enumerated articles,” grown or manufactured in the colonies, were not to be shipped to any country but England. All that was necessary to make this part of the work complete was to add to the “enumerated articles,” from time to time, any which should become important colonial products. The cap-stone was placed on the

system in 1663, when the exportation of European products to the colonies was forbidden unless in vessels owned and loaded as in the preceding Acts and loaded in England. Virginia's commerce withered at once under the enforcement of the system. New England, allowed to evade the system by Cromwell for political reasons, continued to evade it thereafter by smuggling and bold seamanship. i

21. In 1699, on complaint of English manufacturers that the colonists were cutting them out of their foreign wool markets, parliament enacted that no wool or woollen manufactures should be shipped from any of the colonies, under penalty of forfeiture of ship and cargo. This was the first fruits of the appointment of the Board of Trade and Plantations three years before. From this time until the revolution, this body was never idle ; but, as its work was almost confined to schemes for checking or destroying the trade and manufactures of the plantations, it cannot be said to have done them any great service. It was con- tinually spurring on colonial governors to turn their people to the production of naval stores, or to any occupation which would divert them from manufactures ; and the governors, between fear of the legislatures which paid their salaries and of the Board which was watching them narrowly, had evidently no easy position. At intervals the Board heard the complaints of English manufacturers, and framed remedial bills for parliament. From 1718 the manufacture of iron was considered particularly obnoxious ; and, so late as 1766, Pitt himself asserted the right and duty of parliament to "bind the trade and confine the manufactures " of the colonies, and to do all but tax them without representation. In 1719 parliament passed its first prohibition of iron manufactures in the colonies ; and in 1750 it forbade under penalties the maintaining of iron- mills, slitting or rolling mills, plating-forges, and steel- furnaces in the colonies. At the same time, but as a favour to English manufacturers, it allowed the importa- tion of American bar-iron into England, as it was cheaper and better than the Swedish. Before this, in 1731, parlia- ment had forbidden the manufacture or exportation of hats in or from the colonies, and even their transportation from one colony toanother. All these Acts, and others of a kin- dred nature, were persistently evaded or defied; but the con- stant training in this direction was not a good one for the

years were £344,000, £537,000, and £2,612,000. In spite of parliamentary exactions and interferences, a great and entirely new market had been opened to English trade. The difference between the year 1606, when there was not an English settler on the North American continent, and 1760, when there were a million and a half with a great and growing commerce, is remarkable. It is still more remarkable when one considers that this population was already nearly one-fourth of that of England and Wales. Its growth, however, steadily increased the difficulties of maintaining the English system of control, which consisted mainly in the interference of the governors with legislation proposed by the assemblies. As the numbers and material interests of the subjects increased, the necessities for governmental interference increased with them, and yet the power of the subjects to coerce the governors increased as well. Only time was needed to bring the divergence to a point where change of policy must have disruption as its only alternative.

23. Merely material prosperity,

the colonies. In spite of attempts in almost every colony to establish some form of religious belief on a government foundation, religious freedom had really come to prevail to an extent very uncommon elsewhere at the time. Even in New England, where the theory of the state as an isolated opportunity for the practice of a particular form of worship had been held most strongly, persecution was directed chiefly against the Quakers, and that mainly on semi-political grounds, because of their determination to annoy congregations in their worship or to outrage some feeling of propriety. As soon as it came to be realized that the easiest method to deprive them of the power of annoyance was to ignore them, that method was adopted ; indeed, two of the New England colonies took hardly any other method from the beginning.

24. In political work the colonies had been very suc- Political They had built up thirteen distinct political freedom.

cessful. units, representative democracies so simple and natural in their political structure that time has hardly changed the essential nature of the American State governments. In so doing, the Americans were really laying the foundations of the future national structure, for there is hardly a suc-

cessful feature in the present national government which was not derived or directly copied from the original colonial growths ; while the absolutely new features, such as the electoral system (§ 119), introduced into the national system by way of experiment, have almost as generally proved failures, and have been diverted from their original purposes or have become obsolete,

Il, THE STRUGGLE FOR EXPANSION: 1750-63.

25. The English settlements along the Atlantic had covered the narrow strip of coast territory quite thoroughly before it was possible to think of expansion westward.

Since about 1605 Canada had been undisputedly in the The Their traders and missionaries had French in entered the present western United States ; Marquette and Canada

hands of the French.

Joliet (1673) and La Salle (1682) had explored the upper Mississippi river, and others, following their track, had explored most of the Mississippi valley and had built forts

the development of Religious wealth and comfort, was very far from the whole work of freedom.

Weak- ness of the French system.

Inter- colonial wars.

734 UWNete dD

in various parts of it. About 1700 the French opened ground at the mouth of the Mississippi; D'Iberville (1702) founded Mobile and the French Mississippi Com- pany (1718) founded the city of New Orleans. Consistent design, foiled at last only by failure of material, marks the proceedings of the French commanders in America for the next thirty years. New Orleans and Quebec were the extremities of a line of well-placed forts which were

to secure the whole Mississippi valley, and to confine the English settlements for ever to the strip of land along the coast bounded on the west by the Appalachian or Alleghany range of mountains, which is parallel to the coast and has but one important break in its barrier, the opening through which the Hudson river flows. The practical genius of the French plans is shown by the fact that so many of these old forts have since become the sites of great and flourishing western cities: Natchez, Vin- cennes, Peoria, Fort Wayne, Toledo, Detroit, Ogdensburgh, and Montreal either are built on or are so near to the old forts as to testify to the skill and foresight against which the English colonies had tocontend. To this whole territory, extending from the mouth of the Mississippi to that of the St Lawrence, covering even the western part of the present State of New York, the name of New France was given. The English possessions, extending in hardly any place more than a hundred miles from the ocean, except where the Dutch had long ago planted the outpost of Fort Orange, or Albany, on the upper Hudson, were generally restricted to the immediate neighbourhood of the coast, to which the early population had naturally clung as its base of supplies.

26. The French difficulties were even greater than those of the English. The French people had never had that love of emigration which had given the English colonies their first great impetus. Even where the French settled they showed more of a disposition to coalesce with the native population than to form a homogeneous people. The French were commonly far stronger with the Indians than were the English ; but, at the end of a hundred and fifty years, when the English colonists numbered a million and a quarter, all animated by the same political purposes, the population of all New France was only about 100,000, and it is doubtful whether there were 7500 in the whole Mississippi valley. The whole French system, wisely as it was designed, was subject to constant and fatal inter- ference from a corrupt court. Its own organization was hampered by attempts to introduce the feudal features of home social life. A way was thus opened to exactions from every agent of the court, to which the people sub- mitted with hereditary patience, but which were fatal to all healthy development. Perhaps worst of all was the natural and inevitable formation of the French line of claims. Trending westward from Quebec to meet the northward line of forts from New Orleans, it was bent at the junction of the two parts, about Detroit, and its most important part lay right athwart the path of

advancing English migration. The English wave was thus to strike the weaker French line in flank and at its weakest point, so that the final issue could not in any event have been doubtful. The French and Indian war probably only hastened the result.

27. There had been wars between the French and the English colonies since the accession of William and Mary, mostly accessory to wars between the mother countries. The colonies had taken part in the wars ended by the peace of Ryswick (1697), the peace of Utrecht (1713), and the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle (1748). ‘The alliance of the French and Indians made all these struggles wretched experiences for the English. The province of Canada became a prison-pen, where captives were held to ran-

som or adopted into savage tribes. Outlying settlements were broken up, or forced to expend a large part of their energy in watchful self-defence ; and it required all the persistence of the English colonies to continue their steady forward movement. Nevertheless they even undertook offensive operations. They captured Port Royal in 1690, but it was given up to the French in 1697, They cap- tured it again in 1710, and this time it was kept, with most of Acadia, which was now to be known as Nova Scotia, In 1745 the colonies took the strongest French fortress, Louisburgh, on Cape Breton Island, with very little assistance from the home Government. Their land ex- peditions against Montreal and Quebec were unsuccessful, the reason for failure being usually defective transport.

28. In the treaties which closed these wars, the interests The “as. of the colonies met with little consideration. The most iento.” notable instance of this was the 12th article of the treaty of Utrecht, by which an English company was secured the exclusive right to carry African slaves into American ports. Originally meant to obtain the Spanish trade in negroes, the company had influence enough to commit the crown to a steady support of the African slave-trade in its own colonies. Again and again the English legislatures in North America attempted to stop the slave-trade, and were pre- vented by the royal veto. ‘This will serve to explain a passage in Jefferson’s first draft of the American Declara- tion of Independence, as follows :—‘ He [the king] has waged cruel war against human nature

itself… ... Determined to keep open a market where men should be bought and sold, he has prostituted his negative for sup- pressing every legislative attempt to prohibit or to restrain this execrable commerce.”

29. All parties seem to have felt that the peace of Aix- la-Chapelle was but a truce at the best ; and the French court seems to have come at last to some comprehension of its extensive opportunities and duties in North America. With its tardy sympathy, its agents on the new continent began the erection of barriers against the great wave of English westward migration which was just appearing over the crest of the Alleghanies. It was too late, how- ever, for the English colonies were really able to sustain themselves against the French colonies and court together. Their surveyors (1747) had crossed the crests of the moun- tains, and had brought back appetizing accounts of the quality of the lands which lay beyond. The Ohio Com- The Ohio | pany (1749), formed partly of Virginian speculators and Company. | partly of Englishmen, had obtained a grant of 500,000 acres of land in the western part of Pennsylvania (then supposed to be a part of Virginia), with a monopoly of the Indian trade. As the grant was completely on the western side of the Alleghanies, and was the first English intrusion into the Ohio valley, it behoved the French to meet the step with prompt action. Their agents traversed the Ohio country, making treaties with the Indians and burying lead plates inscribed with the lilies of France and a state- ment of the French claims. The erection of the Ohio Company’s first fort (1752) brought on the crisis. The main line of French forts was too far away to be any check upon it. The French leaders therefore began to push a branch line eastward into the disputed territory. Their first work (1753) was put up at Presque Isle (now Erie), about 100 miles north of the Ohio Company’s fort. The citadel of the disputed territory had been begun on the spot where Pittsburgh now stands, where the Allegheny and Monon- gahela unite to form the Ohio river. Governor Dinwiddie, of Virginia, had obtained the right to erect the fort by treaty with the Indians. From Presque Isle the French began running a line of forts south, through the present “oil district ” of Pennsylvania, towards the headquarters of the English.

[HISTORY.

ee

UNITED

30. Washington was then a land-surveyor, barely of age; but he was the agent whom Dinwiddie selected to carry an ultimatum to the French at Presque Isle. After a perilous winter passage through the wilderness, he found that the French had no intention of evacuating their posi- tions, and returned. Virginia at once (J anuary 1754) voted money and men to maintain the western claims of the colonies ; and Washington was sent with 400 provincial troops to secure the half-built fort at the head of the Ohio. The French were also pushing for that place. They won in the race, drove away the English workmen, and finished Fort Du Quesne, named after their governor. Washington, compelled to stop and fortify his position, won the first skirmish of the war with the French advanced guard, but was forced to surrender on terms (July 4, 1754). The usual incidents of a general Indian warfare followed for

1750-1763.]

STATES 735

33. It is evident now that the French and Indian war was the prelude to the American revolution. It trained the officers and men for the final struggle. It released the colonies from the pressure of the French in Canada so suddenly that the consciousness of their own strength came at the same instant with the removal of the ancient barrier to it. It united the colonies for the first time ; few things are more significant of the development of the colonies than the outburst of plans for colonial union between 1748 and 1755, the most promising, though it finally failed, being that of Franklin (1754) at the Albany con- ference of Indian commissioners from the various colonies. The practical union of the colonies, however, was so evident that it might have been foreseen that they would now unite instinctively against any common enemy, even the mother country.

34. The war, too, while it obtained its main object in the The con-

| the rest of the year.

The 31. Both Governments began to ship regular troops to | view of the colonies—an unlimited western expansion,— dered French America, though there was no formal declaration of war brought the seeds of enmity between them and the crown, ‘tory. — until 1756. The year 1755 was marked by the surprise | The claims of the English on the continent, as has been

war, and defeat of Braddock, a gallant and opinionated British said, were based on the voyages of the Cabots. Under

-eace of France.

. aris,

officer who commanded an expedition against Fort Du Quesne, by the complete conquest of Nova Scotia, and by the defeat of the French, under their principal officer, Dieskau, at Lake George, in New York, by a force of pro- vincial troops under Sir William Johnson. In 1756 the greatest of French Canadian governors, Montcalm, arrived ; and the tide of war went steadily against the English. The officers sent out by the home Government were incom- petent, and they generally declined to draw on the colonists for advice. Montcalm found them an easy prey ; and his lines were steadily maintained at the point where they had been when Washington surrendered at Fort Necessity. Pitt’s entrance to the Newcastle ministry (June 1757) changed all this. For the first time the colonies found a man who showed a sympathy with them and a willingness to use them. Their legislatures were summoned into counsel as to the conduct of the war; and their alacrity in response was an augury of a change in its fortune. Incompetent officers were weeded out, with little regard to family or court influence. The whole force of the colonies was gathered up, and in 1758 was launched at the French. All western New York was cleared of the enemy at a blow; Fort Du Quesne was taken and renamed Fort Pitt ; Louisburgh, which had been restored to France at Aix-la-Chapelle, was again taken; and the only failure of the year was the dreadful butchery of the English in assaulting the walls of Ticonderoga. Louisburgh made an excellent point of attack against Quebec, and Montcalm was forced to draw off nearly all his troops elsewhere for the defence of his principal post. The year 1759 was therefore begun by the capture of Ticonderoga and almost all the French posts within

the present United States, and was crowned by Wolfe's capture of the towering walls of Quebec. In 1760, while George II. lay dying, the conquest of Canada was completed, and the dream of a great French empire in North America disappeared for ever.

32. The war continued through the first three years of |

George III., and the colonies took part in the capture of Havana after Spain had entered the struggle as an ally of The peace of Paris, which put an end to the war, restored Havana to Spain, in exchange for Florida, which now became English. France retired from North America, giving to Spain all her claims west of the Mississippi and that small portion east of the Mississippi which surrounds New Orleans, and to England the remainder of the continent east of the Mississippi. Spain retained for her territory the name of Louisiana, originally given by the French. The rest of the continent was now " the English colonies of North America,"

them the crown had granted in the charters of Massa- chusetts, Connecticut, Virginia, North and South Carolina, and Georgia a western extension at first to the Pacific Ocean and finally to the Mississippi. This was what the colonies had fought for; and yet at the end of the war (1763) a royal proclamation was issued forbidding present land sales west of the Alleghanies and practically reserving the conquered territory as a crown domain. In this, if in nothing else, lay the seeds of the coming revolution, as it afterwards almost disrupted the rising Union. The war had welded the thirteen colonies into one people, though they hardly dreamed of it yet; they had an underlying consciousness that this western territory belonged to the new people, not to the crown or to the separate colonies which had charter claims to it; and they would have resisted the claims of the crown as promptly as they after- wards resisted the claims of the individual colonies.

35. Finally, the war broke the feeling of dependence Effects of on the mother country. Poorly armed, equipped, and dis- the war.

ciplined, the colonial or " provincial " troops had certainly shown fighting qualities of no mean order. Colonists would not have been disposed, under any circumstances, to underrate the military qualities of their own men, but their self-glorification found a larger material because of the frequently

poor quality of the officers who were sent through family and court influence to represent Great Britain in the colonies. The bitter words in which Junius refers to British military organization in after years were certainly even more applicable in 1750; and the incom- petency of many of the British officers is almost incompre- hensible. Its effects were increased by an utter indiffer- ence to the advice of colonial leaders which, in a new and unknown country, was certain to place British soldiers again and again in positions where they appeared to great disadvantage alongside of their colonial allies or rivals. The provincial who had stood his ground, firing from behind trees and stumps, while the regulars ran past him in headlong retreat, came home with a sense of his own innate superiority which was sure to bring its results. Braddock's defeat was the prologue to Bunker Hill. The results were strengthened by the fact that most of the war was fought either in New England, the most democratic of the colonies, or by New England men. Their leaders had always been sought for by annual popular elections and re-elections, the promotion of approved men, and the retention of men of poorer quality in lower grades of office. To them the aristocratic influences which gave place and power to such men as Loudoun and "' Mrs Nabbycrombie " were simply ridiculous, and marked only an essential

English sympa- thies of the col- onists.

Change of Eng- lish policy.

difference between themselves and their English brethren which was to the disadvantage of the latter, even though it occasionally evolved a man like Howe or Pitt. Taking all the influences together, it is plain that the French and Indian war not only brought into being a tangible union of the colonies, but broke many of the cords which had held the colonies to the mother country.

Ill. THE STRUGGLE FOR UNION: 1763-75.

36. It is generally believed that the abandonment of North America by France was the result of profound policy, —that she foresaw that her

retirement would be followed by the independence of the English colonies, and that Great Britain's temporary aggrandizement would result in a more profound abasement. Vergennes and Choiseul both stated the case in just this way in 1763; and yet it may be doubted whether this was not rather an excuse for yielding to necessity than a political motive. At all events, it is certain that the peace, even with its release of the colonies from French pressure, was not enough to secure colonial union. For this it was necessary that the home Government should go on and release the colonists from their controlling feeling that they were rather Englishmen than Americans.

37. This feeling was not an easy one to eradicate, for it was based in blood, training, and sympathies of every nature. It would not have been easy to distinguish the American from the Englishman; it would, indeed, have been less easy than now, when the full effects of a great stream of immigration have begun to appear. American portraits of the time show typical English faces. Wherever life was relieved of the privations involved in colonial struggle, the person at once reverted to the type which was then the result of corresponding conditions in England. The traditions of American officers were English ; their methods were English ; even the attitude which they took towards the private soldiers of their armies was that which was characteristic of the English officer of the time. In the South the men who led and formed public opinion had almost all been trained in England and were ingrained with English sympathies and even prejudices. In the North the acute general intellect had long ago settled upon the " common rights of Englishmen" as the bulwark behind which they could best resist any attempt on their liberties. The pride of the colonists in their position as Englishmen found a medium of expression in enthusiasm for 'the young king"; and it would be hard to imagine a more loyal appendage of the crown than. its English colonies in North America in 1760.

38. Unfortunately, the peace of Paris did not result merely in freeing the colonies from dependence on the mother country ; it had the more important effect of free- ing the mother country from fear of France, and of thus encouraging it to open a controversy with the colonies which had not been ventured on before. Quebec had hardly fallen and given the home Government promise of success when the work was begun (1761). The Board of Trade began to revive those regulations of colonial trade which

had been practically obsolete in New England ; and its customs officers applied to the Massachusetts courts for “writs of assistance ” to enable them to enforce the regula- tions. Instant resistance was offered to the attempt to burden the colonies with these writs, which governed all men, were returnable nowhere, gave the officers absolute power, and opened every man’s house and property to their entrance. The argument of the crown advocates based the power of issuing such writs on parliament’s extension of the English revenue system to the colonies, backed by a statute of Charles II. permitting writs of assistance ; to refuse to grant the writs was therefore to impeach the

STATES

power of parliament to legislate for the colonies. The counter-argument of James Otis was the key-note of the revolution. It declared in terms that no Act of Parliament could establish such a writ, that it would be a nullity even if it were expressed in the very terms which the customs officers claimed, and that “an Act of Parliament against the constitution was void.”

[HISTORY.

39. Perhaps Otis meant by “ the constitution ” merely The the fundamental relations between the mother country and English theory of, to the final irreconcilable difference as to these relations. aie

the colonies, for this claim was the first step on the way

The English theory of the connexion had been completely put into shape by 1760, with very little objection from the colonists, whose attention had not yet been strongly drawn to the subject. It held that even the two charter colonies, and a fortiori still more such a royal province as New York, were merely corporations, erected by the king, but subject to all the English laws relating to such corpora- tions. The king was their visitor, to inquire into and correct their misbehaviours ; his courts, on guo warranto, could dissolve them ; and parliament had the same omni- potent power over them which it had over any other civil corporation,—to check, amend, punish, or dissolve them. These propositions must have seemed unquestionable to the English legal mind in 1763. Their weak point, the assumption that

parliament had power to control a cor- poration extra quatuor maria, had been covered by a new development of the English theory during the century. Parliament, originally a merely English body, had grown in its powers and claims until now the common use of the phrase “imperial parliament ” connoted claims to which the “four seas” were no longer a limitation, in law or fact. Parliament was to give the law to the whole empire. Hitherto this had been developed as a purely legal theory ; it was now first attempted to be put into practice when the enforcement of the Navigation Acts was begun in 1761. The first objections offered by the colonists were easily shown to be illogical and inconsistent with this legal theory of the relations between the home country and the colonies, but this only drove the colonists higher, step by step, in their objections,—from objections to taxation by parliament into objections to legislation by parliament, —until they had developed, about 1775, a theory of their own, logical enough in itself, but so inconsistent with the English theory that war was the consequence of their collision.

40. Passing over the intermediate steps, the form which the colonial theory finally took amounted to this. The introduction of the idea of an “ imperial parliament ” was itself a revolution, which could not bind the colonists, or change the conditions under which they had settled the new country. ‘Their relations, originally and properly, had been with the crown alone, and they had had nothing to do with parliament. The crown had seen fit to con- stitute new dominions for itself beyond the seas, with forms of government which were irrepealable compacts between it and the people whom it had thus induced to settle the new territory, and not mere civil corporations. It would follow, then, that the king was no longer king merely of Great ‘Britain and Ireland; he had at least thirteen kingdoms beyond seas, and a parliament in each of them. For the British parliament to interfere with the special concerns of Massachusetts was as flagrant a wrong as it would have been for the parliament of Massachusetts to interfere with the affairs of Great Britain ; and Massa- chusetts had a right to expect her king to protect her from such a wrong. The subject of Massachusetts knew the king only as king of Massachusetts, and the parliament of Great Britain not at all. It needed many years of suc cessful but suicidal logic on the part of their opponents to

The colonist theory.

1763-1775. | UNITED

force the Americans to this point ; they even continued to petition parliament until 1774; but after that time they were no further inconsistent, and held that the king was the only bond of union between the parts of the empire. When he wanted money from his American dominions, he was to get it, as he had always got it, by applying to the assembly of the colony, through the governor, for a grant. In the new seats of the race, as in the old, an Englishman was to be taxed only by his own representatives. In other words, each of the English colonies claimed, in its own field and for its own citizens, the exact principles of

“English liberty” which had been established in England

as the relations of the English subject to the crown. Each colony was to be governed by its own laws, just as in Jersey and Guernsey, in Scotland before the Union, or in Hanover in 1763, with appeal to the king in council, not to English courts or to the House of Lords. For the British parliament, or still more the British citizen, to talk of “our sovereignty ” over the colonies was a derogation from the king’s sovereignty, the only sovereignty which the colonies knew. ‘‘I am quite sick of ‘our sovereignty,’” wrote Franklin in 1769. The case of the colonies was evidently that of Ireland also; and Franklin notes the fact that several members of colonial assemblies had been admitted to the privileges of the Irish parliament, on the ground that they were members of ‘“ American parlia- ments,” ‘To this statement of their case the Americans adhered with progressive closeness from 1763 until the end. In their final Declaration of Independence it will be found that it is a declaration of their independence of the king only ; they do not then admit that the British parliament had ever had any authority over them; and that body is only mentioned in one place, in one of the counts of the indictment of the king, for having given his assent to certain “acts of pretended legislation,” passed by “a jurisdiction foreign to our constitutions and unacknow- ledged by our laws,” that is to say, by the British parlia- ment.

41. Two irreconcilable theories were thus presented.

0- Between them were two courses, either of which the

colonies were willing to accept. Under their theory there was no “imperial parliament.” They were willing to have one constituted, even if it were only a development of the British parliament through admission of colonial representatives ; but the time for this passed before the parties could debate it. On the other hand, the colonies were willing to abandon to the wealthier British parlia- ment, which sustained so much larger a proportion of the cost of the standing army and navy, the privilege of regulating external trade for the general good. So late as 1774 the Continental Congress, while maintaining the sole right of the colonial assemblies to levy internal taxation and make local laws, declared their willingness to yield to the British parliament the power to make such regulations of external trade as were bona fide meant to benefit trade, and not to raise a revenue from Americans without their Own consent. ‘This solution could have been only tem- porary at best, and war cut off any discussion of it.

42. The work of quiet revolution was begun in March 1763, in the closing hours of the Bute ministry, Charles Townshend being first lord of trade and administrator of the colonies. It was decided to make a point of having all the American judges and other officials hold office dur- ing the king’s pleasure, and to make their salaries inde- pendent of the colonial assemblies. The army estimates Were increased by an American standing force of twenty regiments, to be paid for by Great Britain for the first year, and thereafter out of a revenue to be raised in America by Act of Parliament. Bute’s purposes were Political,—the diminution of democracy in America. The

et aT hs 137

Wilkes uproar drove lim out of power before he could develop his plans; but his successor, Grenville, followed them out for financial reasons, and in February 1765 the The Stamp Act “was passed through both Houses with less Stamp opposition than a turnpike bill.” ancl:

43. For the past two years the colonists had had other The Navi- things to think of. Under Grenville the Acts in restraint gation of colonial trade (S§ 20, 21), which had been allowed to L@¥s- become practically obsolete,

were put into force with unsparing rigour. The numbers of the customs officers were increased ; their duties were more plainly declared ; naval officers were encouraged to take the oaths of customs officers and share in the plunder of the commerce which had grown up between America and the West Indian Islands and other parts of the world. Search was con- stant; confiscation usually followed search ; and appeal was even more costly than confiscation. In the confusion arising from the efforts of American commerce to escape its new enemies, it was not wonderful that other ques- tions were allowed to go by default. But the mutterings of resistance were heard. The Massachusetts assembly protested against any schemes to create a standing army in America, to make officers independent of the assemblies, or to raise a revenue without consent of the assemblies, and appointed a committee to secure the united action of all the colonies. This was the first movement in the struggle for union. Its importance was hidden from the ministry by the official class in the colonies, whose mem- bers— the governors, judges, and other crown officials— continued to urge a persistence in the new policy, and to represent the Adamses, Otis, and the other colonial leaders as animated by a perverse desire to destroy the unity of the empire.

44. The revenue to be raised by the Stamp Act was to come from the sale of stamps and stamped paper for marriage licences, commercial transactions, suits at law, transfers of real estate, inheritances, publications, and some minor sources of revenue. With it was another startling provision,—a command to the colonial assemblies to furnish the royal troops in America with fuel, candles, vinegar, bedding, cooking utensils, and potables, and per- mission to billet the troops in inns, alehouses, barns, and vacant houses. The colonies were thus to be taxed with- out their consent ; the revenue derived therefrom was to be devoted to the support of a standing army; and that army was in turn to be used for the maintenance of the scheme of taxation. Yet no one in England seems to have dreamed of American resistance to it ; and Grenville was able to say in 1770 that he “did not foresee tlie opposition to the measure, and would have staked his life for obedience.”

45. The news of the passage of the Stamp Act caused Resist- all America to hum with the signs of resistance, but for- ance to cible resistance was at first

repudiated everywhere. It ee took the shape, really more significant, of declarations by “““ the colonial assemblies, the lower or popular houses of the legislatures. The Virginia assembly, under the lead of Patrick Henry and the younger members, took the first step (May 1765), by a declaration of colonial rights cover- ing the right of each colony to make its own laws and impose and expend its own taxation. The Massachusetts assembly followed with the formal proposal of an American. Congress, to be composed of representatives of all the colonies. South Carolina seconded the call; and the first step on the road to union was taken.

46. Outside of these formal steps there were signs of a less formal popular resistance. Even peaceable resistance was pro tanto a suspension of royal and parliamentary authority in the colonies; and it was probably inevitable

that the colonial assemblies should succeed to the power

XXIII — 93

“Sons of Lib- erty.”

Stamp- Act Con- gress.

Repeal of the Stamp Act.

Town- shend’s Acts,

738 vw re?

during the interregnum before the organization of a real national power. But a temporary chaos was as inevitable ; and the form it took was the formation, particularly in the North, of popular organizations known as “Sons of Liberty,” the name being taken from a chance allusion in one of Barré’s speeches in the House of Commons. ‘These, backed frequently by the town organizations, forced the stamp officers to resign, and destroyed the stamps wherever they could be found. The Connecticut stamp-officer, as he rode into Hartford on his white horse to deposit his resig- nation, with a thousand armed farmers riding after him, said that he felt “like death on the pale horse, with all hell following him.” Newspapers and pamphlets rang

every possible change on Coke's dictum that " an Act of Parliament contrary to Magna Charta was void," and with warnings to stamp-officers that they would be considered enemies to the liberties of America if they attempted to carry out their duties. When the day broke on which the Act was to go into operation (November 1, 1765), America had neither stamps nor stamp-officers with which to fulfil its provisions.

47. The proposed Congress, commonly called the "Stamp- Act Congress," met at New York (October 7, 1765),— New Hampshire, Virginia, North Carolina, and Georgia being acquiescent but not represented. It petitioned the king, the House of Commons, and the House of Lords to recognize fully "the several governments formed in the said colonies, with full powers of legislation, agreeably to the principles of the English constitution." It also put forth a declaration of colonial rights, acknowledging allegiance to the crown, and claiming "all the inherent rights and privileges of natural-born subjects within the kingdom of Great Britain," including the right of petition, of trial by jury, of taxation by representatives, and of granting supplies to the crown, and protesting against the Stamp Act and the various Acts in restraint of trade. The action of this congress was thus purely declaratory ; there was no attempt to legislate; and the importance of the meeting was in its demonstration of the possibility of union and of one road to it.

48. In the meantime the Grenville ministry had fallen (July 1765), and the Rockingham ministry (March 1766) repealed the Stamp Act. The repeal was supported by Pitt, and Whigs who agreed with him, on the distinction that taxation by parliament without colonial representation was in violation of the essential principles of the British constitution, but that the power of parliament to legis- late in every other point for all parts of the empire must be maintained (§ 21). Nevertheless, the repeal was pre- ceded by a declaration of the power "of the king in parliament to bind the colonies and people of America in all cases whatsoever."

49. The colonists received the repeal with an outburst of rejoicing loyalty. They cared little for Pitt's distinction of powers, or even for the declaratory Act: it seemed to them merely the honours of war with which the ministry was to be allowed to retire. It really meant much more. The ruling interest

in the home Government, disordered for the moment by its sudden discovery of the strength and union of the colonies, had drawn back, but not for ever. All through the year an undercurrent of irritation against the colonies is evident; and, when (June 1767) Townshend, the chancellor of the exchequer, had wrested the lead from the other members of the Grafton ministry, he passed through both Houses the bill for taxing imports into the colonies, to go into effect on 20th November follow- ing. It laid duties on glass, paper, painters' colours, lead, and tea. As the proceeds were for the exchequer, they were to be distributed by the crown; and there was no secret that the design was to provide salaries for the crown

sf APES

servants in North America. About the same time other Acts established a board of customs at Boston, legalized the "writs of assistance," and suspended the New York assembly until it should obey the Billeting Act. Town- shend died soon after, leaving his system as a legacy to his successor, Lord North.

50. The New York assembly granted the necessary money, said nothing as to its use, and escaped further molestation. Beyond this the Acts accomplished nothing. Their advocates had urged that the colonies admitted the power of parliament to control external commerce, and that the new taxes were an exercise of such control. If they desired a purely technical triumph they had it, for their logic was sound, and the taxes remained on the statute-book. But, as the colonies ceased to import the taxed articles, by popular agreement and enforcement, the taxes amounted to little. The irritations caused by the enforcement of the Navigation Acts only increased in bitterness ; and the official class in the colonies, on whom must for ever rest the responsibility for nine-tenths of the difficulties which followed, lost no chance of representing every pamphlet, newspaper letter, or public meeting as incipient rebellion. A popular outburst in Boston (June 1768), following the seizure of John Hancock's sloop "Liberty," was thus used to give that town an unenvi- able reputation for disorder and violence. Colonial offi- cials everywhere openly or secretly urged the strongest measures ; and all the while the colonists, with the cautious tenacity of their race, were acting so guardedly that the British attorney-general was

compelled to say, “ Look into the papers and see how well these Americans are versed in the crown law; I doubt whether they have been guilty of an overt act of treason, but Iam sure they have come within a hair’s-breadth of it.”

st. The colonial officials, hoping for salaries inde- pendent of the assemblies, began to show a disposition to govern without those bodies. When the Massachusetts assembly refused by a large vote to withdraw its circular letter to the other assemblies urging united petition to the king alone, as an umpire between themselves and the British parliament, for redress of grievances, the assembly was prorogued, and did not reassemble for a year. Asa gentle hint of a possible mode of re-establishing popular government, delegates from the towns met in convention at Boston (September 1768), renewed the protests against the Acts of the ministry, and provided for the maintenance of public order. In the following December and January parliament passed a vote of censure on this proceeding, and advised that those who had taken part in it should be sent to England for trial on the charge of treason. ‘This They passed

Boston. Instead of a rebellious population they foun their most formidable opponents in minute law points, which were made to beset them at every turn, The Billeting Act required the ordinary barracks to be filled first: the council would assign no quarters in town until the barracks outside were filled. The assembly was not in session to authorize anything further, and the governor did not dare to summon it. The troops, who had marched into the town as into a captured place, with sixteen rounds of ammunition per man, were presently without a place in which to cook their dinners, urtil their commander hired houses out of the army chest. It was natural that

Non-in- ry portation — agree- ment,

he should denounce ‘this country, where every man studies law.” HExasperating and exasperated, the troops lived on in Boston until (March 1770) a street brawl between soldiers and citizens resulted in the death of

five of the latter and the injury of six more. Still the town kept its temper. The captain who had given the order to fire was seized by the civil authorities, subjected to the

under the new regulations were ordered home again by popular meetings in the American ports, and their captains generally obeyed. At Boston the governor refused to clear the vessels for Europe; and, after prolonged discussion, some fifty persons, disguised as Indians, went on board the vessels and threw the tea into the harbour in the presence of a great crowd of lookers-on (December 16, 17 73).

56. It was not possible that the term American should The new suddenly supplant that of Englishman ; but the successive national steps by which the change was accomplished are easily feeling. perceptible. Using one of the old English political phrases, the supporters of colonial privileges had begun about 1768 to adopt the name of “ American Whigs.” Its increas- ing substitution for that of Englishmen was significant. Within a few years the terms “ continental,” or “ the continent,” began to take on a new meaning, referring to a union of the colonies at which men hardly ventured to hint clearly. It meant a good deal, then, when men said

ordinary trial for murder, defended by John Adams and Quincy, two Massachusetts leaders, at the hazard of their own popularity, and acquitted for lack of evidence. But, while according a fair trial to the soldiers, the colonial leaders at last represented so plainly to the crown officials the imminence of an outbreak that the troops were re-) moved from the town to a fort in the harbour. he 53. The most significant point in the history of the plonial four years 1770-73 is the manner in which the ordinary ove colonial governments continued to go to pieces. When

a the assemblies met they would do nothing but denounce

colony was left without any government for which there was popular respect. This was about the state of affairs which the crown officials had desired ; but, now that it had come, they were not at all prompt in their use of it, Divorced from regular government, the people put out still stronger

efforts to enforce the non-importation agreements which had kept down the revenues from the tax laws of

very truly that “the whole continent ” applauded the ‘‘ Boston tea-party.” It was the first spoken word of the new national spirit. Nothing was less understood in Eng- land ; the outbreak left America in general, and Boston in particular, hardly a friend there. The burning of the revenue schooner “ Gaspee” in Narragansett Bay (June 1772) had seemed to the ministry almost an act of overt rebellion ; this was rebellion itself,

| the Acts of the ministry ; when they were prorogued the

1767. About 1773 a further development appeared. As soon as the assemblies met for their annual sessions, and

57- In March and April 1774, on receipt of full intelli- The “In- gence of the proceedings at Boston, the ministry passed a, tolerable

cts,”

before the governors could find excuse for proroguing them, they appointed “committees of correspondence,” to main- tain unity of action with the other colonies, Thus, even after prorogation, there was still in existence for the rest of the year a semi-official representation of the colony. This was nearly the last step on the way to colonial union,

54. The whites had already crossed the Alleghanies, In 1768 parties from North Carolina entered Tennessee ; and in 1769 Boone (p. 788) and a party of Virginians entered Kentucky. The settlement of Tennessee was hastened by difficulties with Tryon, the governor of North Carolina, Tryon was one of the worst of the crown officials ; and his government had been a scandal, even for those times. The people, denied justice and defrauded of legislative power, rose in hasty insurrection and were defeated, Tryon used his victory so savagely as to drive an increasing stream of settlers over the mountains into Tennessee. The centres of western settlement, however, were but few. There was one at Pittsburgh, another at Detroit, another near the Ulinois-Indiana boundary, another in Kentucky, another hear the present city of Nashville, Tennessee ; but none of these, except, perhaps, Detroit, was more

than a hunting or trading camp. Some efforts had been made to erect crown colonies, or to settle grants to companies, in the western territory, but they came to nothing. The settle- ments still clung to the coast.

55. In April 1770, encouraged by some symptoms of a failure of the non-importation agreements, the ministry had taken off all the taxes of 17 67, retaining only that upon tea—threepence per pound. The general popular agreement was still strong enough to prevent the importa- tion of this single luxury ; and it was found in 1772 that the tax produced but about £80 a year, at an expense of two or three hundred thousand for collection. Besides, the East India Company had been accumulating a stock of teas, in anticipation of an American market, of which the tea-tax had deprived it. In May 1773 the ministry took a fresh step: the tax was to be retained, but the Company was to be allowed a drawback of the entire duty, 780 that the colonists, while really paying the tax and Yielding the underlying principle, would get their tea cheaper than any other people. The first cargoes of tea

series of Acts which made open struggle only a question of time. The Boston Port Act shut up the town of Boston against all commerce until the destroyed tea was paid for and the town returned to loyalty. The Massachusetts Act changed the charter of that colony: the crown was now to appoint governor, council, and sheriffs; the sheriffs were to select juries ; and town meetings, unless by per- mission of the governor, were forbidden. Gage, the British commander-in-chief in the colonies, was made governor under the Act, and four regiments were given him as a support. Any magistrates, officers, or soldiers indicted under colonial laws were to be sent for trial to Nova Scotia or Great Britain. The billeting of soldiers in the town of Boston was legalized. The Quebec Act ex- tended the boundaries of the province of Canada over the whole territory lying north of the Ohio and east of the Mississippi. Here the ministry rested.

58. The news of these Acts of Parliament crystallized Union.

every element of union in the colonies. The attack on the charter of Massachusetts Bay was undoubtedly the most effective. The charters of Connecticut and Rhode Island were the freest of the colonies; but that of Massachusetts was certainly next to them. If Massachusetts was not safe against such an attack, no colony was safe. The nuinistry had forced an

issue on the very point on which the colonial and imperial theories were irreconcilable. The Boston Port Act furnished a grievance so concrete as to obviate the necessity of much argument on other points. The Quebec Act, with its attempt to cut off the northern colonies from the western expansion to which they all looked hopefully, was bad enough in itself, but it brought up with it the element of religious suspicion. For years the distinctively Puritan element had dreaded an attempt to establish the Church of England in the colonies 3 and the inclination of American Episcopalians to look to the home Government for relief against unjust local restric- tions had not helped to decrease the feeling. The Puritan element could see little real difference between Episcopacy and Catholicism ; and, when it was found that the Quebec Act practically established the Roman Catholic system in the new territory, the old dread revived to give the agita- tion a hidden but strong motive,

First Conti- nental Con- gress,

Its ulti- matum.

740 C©NaT ea yD

59. The necessity of another Congress was universally felt. On the suggestion of Virginia and the call of Massachusetts, it met at Philadelphia (September 59, 1774). All the colonies but Georgia were represented ; and Georgia was so certainly in sympathy with the meet- ing that this is commonly known as the First Continental Congress, the first really national body in American history. Its action was still mainly deliberative. It adopted addresses to the king, and to the people of the colonies, of Quebec, and of Great Britain, and passed a declaration of colonial rights, summing up the various Acts of Parliament which were held to be in violation of these rights. But its tone was changed, though its lan- guage was still studiously controlled and dignified. It was significant that, for the first time, the two Houses of parliament were ignored in the matter of petitioning : it was at last seen to be an awkward concession even to memorialize parliament. The tone of a sovereign about to take his seat is perceptible in the letter of Congress to the colonies which had not yet sent delegates. And at least two steps were taken which, if not an assumption of sovereign powers, were evidently on the road to it. The first was the preparation of Articles of

Association, to be signed by the people everywhere, and to be enforced by committees of safety chosen by the people of cities and towns. These articles bound the signers to stop the importation of all goods from, and the exportation of all goods to, Great Britain and Ireland, the use of such goods, and the slave trade. The manner of the enforce- ment of the articles was evidently an incipient suspension of all authority proceeding from the mother country and the substitution of a general popular authority for it. The other step was a resolution, adopted October 8, as follows :—‘ That this Congress approve the opposition of the inhabitants of the Massachusetts Bay to the execution of the late Acts of Parliament ; and, if the same shall be attempted to be carried into execution by force, in such case all America ought to support them in their opposi- tion.” This was simply an ultimatum: in the opinion of Congress, the ministry could take no further step except that of attempting to enforce its Acts, and the colonies would resist such an attempt as an act of war. Before the next Congress met the conditions had been fulfilled. The agents of the ministry had applied force ; Massachu- setts had resisted by force ; and the new Congress found itself the representative of a nation at war, still acknowledg- ing the king, but resisting the operations of his armies. Having summoned a new Congress to meet at Philadelphia on the 10th of May following, and having cleared the way for its action, the First Continental Congress adjourned.

60. It is an unpleasant task to record the successive steps by which two peoples, so exactly similar to one another in every characteristic, so far removed from one another, and so ignorant of one another’s feelings, advanced alternately to a point where open collision was inevitable. From the standpoint of ‘no taxation without representa- tion,” which Pitt and his school of Whigs had approved, the colonists had now been driven by the suicidal logic of their opponents to the far more consistent position of “no legislation without representation,” which the Pitt school had never been willing to grant, and which was radically inconsistent with the British “imperial” theory. ither the previous legislation of parliament was to remain a dead letter, or it must be executed by force; and that meant war. Massachusetts was already on the brink of that event. Gage, the new governor, had refused to meet the assembly ; he had fortified himself in Boston, and was sending out spies as if into hostile territory. All regular

government was suspended or remanded to the towns ; and the people were organized into ‘‘ minute men,”

STATES

pledged to move at a minute’s notice. The first hostile movement of Gage would be the signal for the struggle. War, in fact, had come to be a possibility in the thoughts of every one. The new governor of Canada, Carleton, was sent out with instructions to levy the people and Indians of that province, in order that they might be marched against rebels in any province of North America. Governor Tryon’s defeat of the insurgent people of North Carolina at the Alemance (§ 54) furnished a tempting precedent to Governor Gage in Massachusetts. There was strong pressure upon him to induce him to followit. The king’s speech at the opening of parliament (November 29, 1774) spoke of the prevalent “resistance and disobedience to the law” in Massachusetts ; the ministry urged Gage to arrest the colonial leaders, even though hostilities should follow ; the two Houses of Parliament presented a joint address to the king, declaring Massachusetts to be in rebellion, and offering all the resources of the empire to suppress the rebellion ; and the king, in reply, announced his intention of acting as parliament wished.

61. The inevitable collision was narrowly escaped in February 1775. to search for powder; but the day was Sunday, and a conflict was prevented by the ministers. Another expe- dition (April 19) was more momentous. It set out for Concord, a little village some 20 miles from Boston, to seize a stock of powder which was reported to be gathered there. At daybreak the troops marched into the village of Lexington, on their road. They found some minute men who had been hastily summoned, for intelligence had been sent out from Boston that the expedition was coming. There was a hurried order from an officer that the militia should disperse, then a volley from his men and a few answering shots, and the first blood of the American revolution had been shed. The troops went on to Concord and destroyed the stores there. But by this time the whole country was up. Messengers

[HISTORY.

and their mustering made the return to Boston more dangerous than the advance had been. When the troops began their return march the continuous fire from fences, trees, and barns along the route soon converted the retreat into arout. The opportune arrival of a rescuing party from Boston saved the whole force from surrender, but the pursuit was kept up until the expedition took refuge under the guns of the war-vessels at the water-side. The next morning the isthmus which connected the town of Boston with the mainland was blockaded ; the siege of Boston was formed ; and the revolution had begun.

62. The news of Lexington and Concord fights set the continent in a flame, but every feature of the outburst showed the still thoroughly English characteristics of the people. For nine long years they had been schooling themselves to patience ; and, as their impatience became more difficult to control, it was shown most strongly m their increasingly scrupulous care to insist upon the letter of the law. Even in the first open conflict the colonists were careful to base their case on their legal right to use “the king’s highway”; and Congress carefully collected and published depositions going to show that the troops had violated this right and had fired first. There was every thing in the affairs of Lexington and Concord to arouse an intense popular excitement : the mustering of undiscip- lined farmers against regular troops, the stern sense of duty which moved it, the presence and encouragement of the ministers, the sudden desolation of homes which had never known war before, were things which stirred every pulse in the colonies when they were told. But there was no need of waiting for such stories. When the dam burst, the force which had been stored up for nine years took

Gage sent a water expedition to Salem tonant

were riding in every direction, arousing the minute men He

Lexing.

Concord, |

Popular | govern- ments.

:

| |

Second Contin- ental

Congress,

ailure f the rst ‘ational _ystem,

1774-1775.] Uae T ED

everything away before it. The news was hurried by express along the roads to the southward; men left the plough in the furrow when they heard it, and rode off to Boston ; town committees of safety collected money and provisions and sent them to the same point; and before the end of the month the mainland around Boston harbour was occupied by a shifting mass of undisciplined half-armed soldiers, sufficient to keep the British troops cooped up within the peninsula on which the town was built.

63. The overturning of the royal governments in North America followed rapidly, as the news of the fights at Lexington and Concord spread abroad. In one colony after another the lower houses of the colonial legislatures, taking the name of “provincial congresses,” met and assumed the reins of government; the officers of militia and subordinate magistrates accepted commissions from them ; and the colonial officials, to whose advice so much of the course of events had been due, fled to England or to the nearest depdt of royal troops. On the day (May 10, 1775) when the stronghold of Ticonderoga, the key of the gateway to Canada, was taken by surprise by an American force under Allen (p. 787), giving the besiegers of Boston a welcome supply of weapons and ammunition, the Second Continental Congress met at Philadelphia. It came, under new circumstances, to redeem the pledge which its predecessor had given that all the colonies would support Massachusetts in resisting force by force. It was thus the representative of a united people, or of nothing. The struggle for union had been so far successful.

64. This fact of union has coloured the whole sub- sequent history of the country. The Articles of Associa- tion had really preceded it by a substitution of general popular government, however clumsy in form, for the previously recognized governments; in so far the authority of the various colonies was also suspended, and @ general national organization took their place. It was soon found that the colonial organizations had too much innate strength to be got rid of in this summary fashion ; they held their own, and, as soon as imminent danger had disappeared, they succeeded in tearing so much power from the Continental Congress as to endanger the uational existence itself. But, when the Second Conti- nental Congress met, it met (as Von Holst maintains) as a purely revolutionary body, limited by no law, and by nothing else but by its success in war and the support which it was to receive from the people, without regard to colony governments. With the energy and recklessness of a French revolutionary body it might have blotted out the distinctions between colonies, and established a centralized government, to be modified in time by circum- stances. In fact, it took no such direction. It began its course by recommendations to the new colonial govern- ments ; it relied on them for executive acts; and, as soon as the new colonies were fairly under way, they seized on the power of naming and recalling the delegates to the Congress. From that time the decadence of the Congress was rapid ; the national idea became dimmer; and the assertions of complete sovereignty by the political units became more pronounced. This failure of the Second Congress to appropriate the universal national powers Which were within its grasp is responsible for two opposite effects. On the one hand, it built up a basis for the future assertion of the notion of State sovereignty, necessarily including the right of secession. On the other, it maintained the peculiar feature of the American Union, its large State liberty, its dislike of centralization, and its feeling that the national power isa valuable but dangerous instrument of development. The effort to find a com- promise between the two forces makes up the record of

subsequent national politics, ending in the present asser- tion of the largest possible measure of State rights, but under the guarantee of the national power, not of the State’s own sovereignty.

65. The conversion of the former colonies into ‘ States” followed The State Since that time the States system,

hard upon the outbreak of war (§ 72). have really been the peculiar feature of the American system. The circumstances just mentioned put them into a position in which they held all real powers of government; and they are still the residuary legatees of all such powers as have not been taken from them by the national power or by thcir State constitutions, In 1775 they differed very materially in their organization, but there has becn a constant tendency to approach a general type, as States have adopted innovations which have proved successful in other States. All have now governors, legislatures of two houses, and State judiciaries. The governor, except in a few States, has a limited veto on legislation, and has a pardoning power. The State legislature is supreme in all subjects relating to the jurisdiction of the State, with two exceptions: the constitution of the United States imposes certain limitations on them (§ 116), and there is an evident tendeney in the later State constitutions to prohibit the legislatures from ‘‘special legislation,” and to provide that, in specified subjects, they shall pass only “general laws,” applicable to the whole State and all citizens alike. With these exceptions, it is difficult to imagine a more complete autonomy than is possesscd by the States of the American Union. The main restriction upon their action is in its results upon their welfare. They may even repudiate their debts, and there is no power which can make them pay; but, even in respect to this, the results upon the eredit of a repudiating State have been enough to check others in any action of the kind. They control the organization of the State into counties, towns, and cities; they touch the life and interests of the citizen in a far larger degree than does the Federal Govern. ment; and, in many points, such as that of taxation, their powers are co-ordinate with those of the Federal Governinent, so that the two departments of the Ameriean Governmental system operate on the same subjects. The admission of new States (§ 97) has raised the number of the original thirteen States to thirty-eight (in 1887), and the powers of the new States are exactly those of the old ones.

66. The “ force resolution ” of the First Congress (§ 59) shows that the national existence of the United States, in a purely political sense, dates from the fulfilment of the conditions of the force resolution—that is, from

the first shot fired at Lexington, From that instant the fact of union was consummated in the support given to Massachu- setts by the other commonwealths ; and George III. was king no longer of thirteen separate kingdoms, but of one, The fact that he did not recognize the union did not alter the fact of union ; that was to be decided by events. This success of the struggle for union gave the United States a date for the political, as distinguished from the legal, existence of the nation (April 19, 177 5).

IV. THE STRUGGLE FOR INDEPENDENCE: 1775-83.

67. The Second Congress adopted the “army” around Boston as “the American continental army”; rules and articles of war were formulated for it ; and Ward, Charles Lee (a British soldier of fortune), Schuyler (p. 790), and Putnam were named as major-generals, with eight brig- adiers, and Gates as adjutant-general. Union, though ac- complished, was still weak. Sectional interests, feelings, and prejudices were strong; and the efforts of the delegates to accommodate them had, as one result, the appearance of

Washington on the historical stage which he was to fill so Washing- completely. He had been of special service on the military ton,

committee of Congress; and the Massachusetts members ——the Adamses and others—saw in him the man whose appointment as commander-in-chief would be most accept- able to all the sections, and would “cement and secure the union of these colonies,” as John Adams wrote in a private letter. He was chosen unanimously and commis- sioned, and set out for Boston. But another collision, the battle of Bunker Hill, had taken place on the date of his commission (June 17).

68. In one of the irregular surgings of the colonial force Bunker around Boston, it took possession of Breed’s (now known Hill.

as Bunker) Hill, some 75 feet high, commanding Boston, and separated from it by a sheet of water. The British officers might have landed men so as to take the line of entrenchinents in the rear, or might have raked it from

’ end to end from the water. They chose to send 2500 men

Canada,

Paper currency.

Drift towards indepen- dence,

over in boats, and charge straight up the hill. The all- important question was whether the “ embattled farmers ” within the works would stand fire. Not a shot from the line of entrenchments returned the scattering fire of the advancing column until the latter was within a hundred feet ; then a sheet of flame ran along the line, and, when the smoke cleared away, the charging troops were retreat- ing down the hill. The officers moved the men again to the assault, with exactly the same result. At the third assault the ammunition of the farmers was exhausted ; but they retreated fighting stubbornly with gun-stocks, and even with stones. “ The success,” wrote Gage to the ministry, “ has cost us dear ; the trials we have had show the rebels are not the despicable rabble too many have supposed them to be.” He had lost 1100 out of 2500 men. A serious American loss was that of Warren, a Boston leader of high promise.

69. While Washington was endeavouring to form an army out of the heterogeneous matcrial around Boston, another American force was attempting to drive the British out of Canada. On the last day of the year 1775, in an assault on Quebec, one of the leaders, Montgomery (p. 790), was killed, and another, Benedict Arnold, was wounded. Shortly afterwards the American force was driven back into the northern part of New York, near the Canada line, where it held its ground. Congress began in June the issue of bills of credit, or “ continental currency,” as a substitute for taxation —a most unhappy stcp. The bills soon began to depreciate. Congress insisted on holding them to be legal tender; but it had not seized, as it might have done, the power of taxation, in order to provide for the redemption of the bills; and its recommendation to com- mittees of safety to treat as enemies of their country those who should refuse to receive the bills at their face value never accomplished its object. Successive emissions of paper enabled Congress to support the army for a few years, aud even to begin the organization of a navy. Privateers and public armed vessels had been sent

out by the several colonies; the first American fleet, of eight vessels, sailed in February 1776, but its cruise accom- plished little.

70, All this time Congress had been protesting its horror of the idea of independence; and the colonial congresses had instructed their delegates not to counten- ance any such project. The last petition to the king was adopted by Congress in July 1775, and sent to London by the hands of Richard Penn. It besought the king to consider the complaints of the colonists, and to obtain the repeal of the Acts which they had found intolerable. The news of the battle of Bunker Hill had preceded Penn ; the king refused to answer the petition; but by a pro- clamation (August 23, 1775) he announced the existence of open rebellion in the colonies, and called on all good subjects to give any information of those persons in Great Britain who were aiding and abetting the rebellion. This was but the first of a series of attacks on that strong sentiment in Great Britain which felt the cause of the colonies to be the old cause of English liberty. At the opening of the struggle this sentiment was intense : officers resigned their commissions rather than serve in America ; the great cities took open ground in favour of the colonies ; and some of the English middle classes wore mourning for the dead at Lexington. As the war increased in its intensity this sentiment necessarily decreased ; but, even while parlianient was supporting the war by votes of

more than two to one, the ministry was constantly ham- pered by the notorious consciousness that the real heart of England was not in it. Even when 25,000 men were voted at the king’s wish, provision had to be made to obtain them from Germany. Privilege and officialism were against the colonies; the popular heart and conscience were either ignorant or in favour of them.

71. Butin America everything spoke of war. Howe, who had succeeded Gage, passed a very bad winter. His men were often short of supplies ; their quarters were uncom- fortable; and their efforts to better their positicn were a severe infliction upon the inhabitants. Along the coast the commanders of British ships acted everywhere as if on the borders of an enemy’s country; Gloucester, Bristol, Falmouth, and other defenceless towns were

cannonaded ; and the flag of the king tended more and more to appear that of an enemy. On the first day of the new year the distinctive standard of the thirteen united colonies was raised at Washington's headquarters. It introduced the stripes of the present flag, but retained the crosses of St George and St Andrew ona blue ground in the corner, the whole implying the surviving acknowledgment of the royal power, with the appearance of a new nation. When inde- pendence had eliminated the royal element, the crosses were replaced (1777) by stars, as at present. Congress had been compelled to go so far in national action as to threaten reprisals for the threats of special punishment by the ministry. The first step towards the ultimate applica- tion for admission to the family of nations was really taken in November 1775, when Franklin, Jay, and three other delegates were appointed a committee to maintain inter- course with friends of the colonies " in Great Britain, Ire- land, and elsewhere"; the main importance of the appoint- ment was in the last two words. The end of the year left independence in the air, though hardly spoken of.

[HIsToRY.,

72. Thomas Paine turned the scale (January 9, 1776) Paine,

by the publication of his pamphlet Common Sense. His argument was that independence was the only consistent line to pursue ; that " it must come to that some time or other"; that it would only be more difficult the more it was delayed ; and that independence was the surest road to union. Written in simple language, it was read every- where; and the open movement to independence dates from its publication. In the meantime events were urging Congress on. Washington in March seized and fortified Dorchester Heights, to the south of Boston and command- ing it. Before the British could move upon the works,

they had been made so strong that the garrison evacuated Evacua- the place (March 17, 1776), sailing away to Halifax on the ee For the moment the British had hardly an organ-*°*™

fleet. ized force within the thirteen colonies ; Charles Lee had just seized New York city and harbour ; and the ministry seemed not only hostile, but impotent. The spirit of Con- gress rose with success. It had already ordered

(November 25, 1775), on receipt of news of instructions to British war-vessels to attack American seaport towns “as in the case of actual rebellion,” that British war-vessels or trans- ports should be open to capture ; now (March 23, 1776) it declared all British vessels lawful prize. It then went on (April 6) to open all American ports to the vessels of all other nations than Great Britain, still forbidding the slave trade. It had even opened communication with the French court, which, using the name of a fictitious firm in Paris, was shipping money, arms, and supplies to the colonies. All these were acts of an independent power; and colony after colony, changing the colonial into State forms of government, was instructing its delegates to vote for independence. In May some of the colonies. had become too impatient to wait longer, for it was evident that the king had finally ranged himself against the new

ee

VENT TP oD

American nation. Virginia spoke in most emphatic tones ; and one of her delegates, Richard Henry Lee, moved a resolution in Congress for independence, seconded by John

eT ATES 743

commander there, and driving him into Brooklyn (August Battle 27). The British hesitated to attack the American works of Long therc, so that Washington was able to draw off the defeated Island.

1775-1777.]

| |

Adams (June 7, 1776). A committee to draw up a declara- tion in conformity with the resolution was chosen, consist- ing of Thomas Jefferson of Virginia, John Adams, Franklin, Roger Sherman of Connecticut, and Robert R. Livingston of New York ; but the resolution was not adopted until July 2, as follows :—“ Resolved that these united colonies are and of right ought to be free and independent States ; that they are

absolved from all allegiance to the British crown; and that all political connexion between them and the state of Great Britain is and ought to be totally dissolved.”

force, and the British followed slowly to the New York side ofthe river. Through September and October Washington retreated northwards, fighting stubbornly, until he reached the strong defensive positions where the mountains begin to make a figure in the landscape north of New York city. Here he faced about, and prepared to give battle from behind fortifications. Again Howe hesitated, and then turned back to occupy New York.

76. Howe was cut off from the water-way to Canada by Washington’s fortification of the highlands, but his leu- tenant, Cornwallis, secured a lodgment by surprise on the

| Declara- 73. Jefferson had come from Virginia with the reputa- | other side of the Hudson, and thus drew Washington tion of tion of a very ready and able writer ; and the committee, | across the river to oppose him. Forced to retreat through Washing- Indepen- hy common consent, left the preparation of the first draft | New J ersey, pursued by the British, Washington at least ton’s lene, of the Declaration of Independence to him. He wrote it | used up the month of December in the retreat, But affairs 7°. almost at one heat ; and, though parts of it were rejected | were in a desperate plight. His army had been driven) or modified by Congress, the whole instrument, as it was | across the Delaware ; the British held all New Jersey, and adopted by that body (July 4, 1776), must stand as | were Only waiting for the river to freeze over to “catch Jefferson’s own work. John Adams was its champion on | Washington and end the war ”; Philadelphia was in a the floor of Congress, for Jefferson was not a public speaker, | panic, and Congress had taken refuge in Baltimore, leaving —and the coincidence of the deaths of these two men, just | Washington with almost dictatorial powers ; hosts of half- | fifty years afterwards (July 4, 1826), was a remarkable one. | hearted people were taking British protections and return- The language of the Declaration, like that of all the Ameri- ing to their allegiance ; and the time was one which “ tried can state-papers of the time, was strong and direct, Ignor- | men’s souls.” Washington’s soul was proof against all ing parliament, it took every act of oppression which had | tests; and in the

midst of his discouragements he had been aimed at the colonies as the act and deed of the king ; | already planned that which was to be the turning-point it concluded that “a prince whose character is thus marked | of the war. The advanced post of the British was one of by every act which may define a tyrant is unfit to be the Hessians, under Rahl, at Trenton, on the Delaware. Seiz- Battles of ruler of a free people ”; and it announced the independence | ing all the boats on the river, and choosing the night of Trenton of the United States in the terms of the resolution already | Christmas, on the probability that the Hessians would be stated. The date of its adoption is, by the decision of the drunk, he crossed the river, assaulted the town with the Supreme Court, the date of the legal existence of the | bayonet, and captured the garrison. Taking his prisoners United States in matters of municipal law. to Philadelphia, he recrossed the river on the last day of 74. Meanwhile clouds were gathering about the young | the year, and reoccupied Trenton. Cornwallis brought republic. A British expedition was beaten off from Charles. almost all his available forces towards that place ; and ton (June 28) ; but two days afterwards a stronger force, | Washington’s diminishing army was in greater danger under Howe, landed on Staten Island, just below New | than before. Leaving hiscamp-fires burning, he abandoned York city. The ministry, abandoning New England, had | his position by night, swept around the sleeping British and Attack decided to transfer the war to the middle colonies. Here forces, met, fought, and captured at Princeton (January 3, Prinee- m the was the originally alien element among the colonies (§7), | 1777) a detachment on its march to Trenton, and threat- “°™ * though the ministry was disappointed in it ; here was the | ened the British base of supplies at New Brunswick. It

commercial element, which had sometimes been willing to prefer profit to patriotism; above all, the Hudson gave a safe path for British frigates, so that the British forces might control at the same time the road into Canada and the moat which should cut off New England from the other colonies, Most of the reasons which made the open- ing of the Mississippi a severe blow to the Confederacy in 1863 applied to the capture of New York city and the operations in the Hudson river in 1776.

75. Washington had hurried to New York city as soon as Boston had surrendered, but his preparations were not far advanced when Howe

appeared (June 30). He and his brother, Admiral Lord Howe, the commander of the fleet, had high hopes of receiving the confidence of both parties to the struggle, by reason of their hereditary connexion with the crown and the liking of the colonies for their elder brother, killed at Ticonderoga ; and they brought conciliatory proposals and the consent of the Ministry to an unofficial exchange of prisoners. The country was now committed to independence, and in August Howe began offensive operations. Washington's force numbered 27,000, about four-fifths of them having never seen action ; and about one-third of his army had been placed on Long Island. Howe had 31,000 trained soldiers, largely Hessians; and he debarked 20,000 of them on Long Island, beating Putnam (p. 790), the American

was only a threat; but it served its purpose of drawing Cornwallis off from Philadelphia.

77. New Jersey is crossed from south-west to north- cast by a spur of the Alleghanies. Thus far opcrations had been confined to the flat country to the south ; Wash- ington now swept on to the northern or mountainous part, and the day after Princeton fixed his headquarters at Morristown, where they really remained almost all through the rest of the war. He was aided by the unwillingness of the British to attack entrenchments. His long line across New Jersey was everywhere strong; the British could now reach Philadelphia only by passing in front of his line and risking a flank attack ; and they at once drew in their outposts to New Brunswick. With the exception of the occupation of Newport by the British, and attacks on minor outlying places, as Danbury, there was a short breathing space.

78. Kalb, Kosciusko, Conway, and other foreign officers were already serving in the American army; Pulaski (p.790), Steuben (p. 790), and others were soon to come. Some of the minor foreign acquisitions of this sort were selfish, conceited, and troublesome; the most unselfish and devoted was the young Marquis de la Fayette, who came this year with a shipload of supplies as his gift to the republic.

Franklin made his appearance at the French court Franklin.

(Deceniber 7, 1776) as one of the American envoys, and

Bur- goyne’s expedi- tion,

Saratoga,

Treaty with France,

Capture of Phil- adelphia

Valley Forge,

soon took the lead in negotiations. Shrewd, sensible, far- sighted, and prompt, never missing or misusing an oppor- tunity, he soon succeeded in committing the French Government, in all but the name, as an ally of the United States; and, though his success with other European courts was small, he opened the way for the general commercial treaties which followed the war. His unoffi- cial influence was a more important factor in his work. Carefully maintaining the character of a plain American burgher, he seemed to the French the veritable man of nature for whom they had been longing. The pithy sense and homely wit which had given force to his Poor Richard’s Almanac had impressed even his unemotional countrymen strongly; his new audience took them as almost inspired. He, and his country with him, became the fashion ; and it became easier for the Government to cover its own supplies to the insurgents by an appearance of embarrassment in dealing with the enthusiasm of its subjects. The foreign aid, however, did the Americans areal harm. Congress, relying upon it, grew more and more into the character of a mere agent of the States for issuing paper and borrowing money ; and the taxing func- tion, which should have been forced upon it from the beginning, fell more positively into the hands of the States. As the national character of Congress dwindled, the State jealousies and ambitions of its delegates increased ; little cliques had their favourite officers,—Gates, Charles Lee, Conway, or some other soldier of fortune ; and Washing- ton, neglected and harassed by turns, must have found it difficult to face Howe with half his number of men, foil the various competitors for his own position, and maintain his invariably respectful tone towards Congress.

79. In July 1777 Burgoyne, with an army of British, Germans, and Indians, attempted the Hudson river route from the north, and forced his way nearly to Albany. The utter defeat of a detachment at Bennington (August 16) by the farmers of Vermont and New Hampshire under Stark, the atrocities of the Indians before they deserted Burgoyne's standard, and the end of the harvest brought abundant reinforcements to Gates, whom Congress had put in command. He gained the battle of Bemis Heights (Oct. 7), and ten days afterwards forced Burgoyne to surrender near Saratoga. The news of this success brought to Franklin (Feb. 6, 1778) the desire of his heart in a treaty of alliance, offensive and defensive, between the United States and France, and this was followed in the next month by war between Great Britain and France and an ineffectual proposal for reconciliation from Great Britain to the United States, covering colonial representa- tion in parliament and everything short of independence.

80. Meantime Howe had taken the water-route to Phil- adelphia, by way of the ocean and Chesapeake Bay, and had

' captured the city (September 25,1777) ; but Washington

had at least made his army capable of fighting two battles, those of Chad's Ford on the Brandywine (September 11) and Germantown in the outskirts of Philadelphia (October 4), both: stubbornly contested. Taking up winter-quarters at Valley. Forge, about 20 miles from Philadelphia, he watched Howe vigilantly, and struggled manfully with the responsibilities of supreme command, which the fugitive Congress had again left to him, with the misery and almost despair of his own men, and with the final intrigues of those who now wished to supersede him by the appointment of Gates. In June 1778 the news of the treaty with France, and of the departure of a French fleet and army for America, compelled Clinton, who had succeeded Howe, to set out for New York, in order to reunite his two main armies. Washington broke camp at once, followed him across New Jersey, and overtook the rear at Monmouth, or Freehold (June 29). An indecisive battle enabled the

STtATes

British to gain New York city; Washington formed his line Battle from Morristown around the north of the city, so as to be of Mon. able to interpose between Clinton and Philadelphia or New ™outh. England ; and these positions were maintained until the Yorktown campaign began in 1781. Beyond skirmishes, there were no more important events in the North, except some unsuccessful attempts to recover Newport with French assistance, the capture of Stony Point by Wayne (July 15, 1779), and the treason of the American commander of West Point, Benedict Arnold (p. 787), with the execu- tion of the British adjutant-general, Major John André, whom the Americans had captured within their lines while he was carrying on the negotiations (September 1780). 81. Midsummer 1778 marks the beginning of the end. 33,000 men, the high-water mark of the British army in the United States, had maintained a footing at but two places, New York city and Newport ; the ministry, in a war which had no real popular momentum, found German mercenaries an expensive resource; and the Germans were very apt to desert in America. An extraordinary number of leading men in England, while they would not hamper the nation in its struggle, made no scruple of expressing their practical neutrality or their high regard for various American leaders. France was now in the war, and Spain and Holland were soon to be the allies of France. The difficulties of supplying the British army were now aggravated by the presence of French fleets in American waters. English commerce had been decimated by American privateers; and Franklin was gathering vessels in France, in one of which (the “Richard”) Paul Jones was to fight with the “Serapis” one of the most — desperate naval battles on record (September 23, 1779). Perhaps hopeless of success in the northern and middle Attack States, the ministry decided to begin operations in theo the south, where it was believed that the slave population would be a fatal source of weakness to the Americans. 82. Late in 1778 a British expedition from New York captured Savannah, and rapidly took possession of the thinly populated State of Georgia. An attempt to retake Savannah in the following year cost the Americans the life of Pulaski. Evacuating Newport, and leaving only troops enough to hold New York city, Clinton sailed southward and captured Charleston (May 12, 1780). Capture Thence his forces swept over South Carolina until they had reduced it to a submission broken by continual out- a bursts of partisan warfare undcr Sumter (p. 790), Marion, and other leaders. This work finished, Clinton returned to New York,

leaving Cornwallis in command in the south. As soon as the summer heats had passed away Gates entered the State from the north with a militia army, and was badly beaten at Camden (August 16) by an inferior Camden British force. Even North Carolina now needed defence, and the work was assigned to Greene, one of the best of the American officers developed by the war. The com- mander of his light troops, Morgan, met his British rival, Tarleton, at the Cowpens (January 17), and inflicted Cowpens. upon the latter the first defeat he had met in the south. 4 This event brought Cornwallis up to the pursuit of the i victor. Morgan and Greene retreated all the way across North Carolina, followed by Cornwallis, and then, having raised fresh troops in Virginia, they turned and gave battle at Guilford Court House (March 15, 1781). Guilford | Greene was beaten, as was usually the case with him, but Court he inflicted so heavy a loss in return that Cornwallis retired to the coast at Wilmington to repair damages. Greene, energetic as well as cautious, passed on to the south, and gave battle to Rawdon, whom Cornwallis had -. left in command in South Carolina, at Hobkirk's HLill Moblin (April 25), and was beaten again. But Rawdon's loss a. was so severe that he drew in his lines toward Charleston.

[HISTORY.

House.

>a TH S 745

86. In the winter of 1778-79 George Rogers Clark, a The Kentucky leader, acting under the authority of the State novth- of Virginia, had led a force of backwoodsmen into the ¥¢s* country north of the Ohio river, captured the British posts in it, and made the soil American up to the latitude of Detroit. The treaty of peace acknowledged the conquest, and even more than this. It settled the northern boundary of the United States, so far as the longitude of the Mississippi river, nearly as it now runs; the Mississippi as the western boundary down to 31° N. lat., thence east on that line to the present northern boundary of Florida, and east on that to the Atlantic. Great Britain restored the Floridas to Spain, so that the new nation had Great

en7=1783. | UNITED

Eutaw Greene followed, and at Eutaw Springs (September 8)

Springs. fought the last pitched battle in the South. He was beaten again, but Rawdon again fell back, and thereafter did all that man could do in holding the two cities of Charleston and Savannah. Greene had won no battle, but he had saved the South.

83. Arnold, now a general in the British service (§ 80), had been sent, early in the year, to make a lodgment in Virginia. It seems to have been believed by the British authorities that the three southernmost States were then secure, and that Virginia could be carved out next. La

Fayette was sent to oppose Arnold, but the latter was soon relieved, and in June Cornwallis himself entered the State.

born:

wallisin He had not been willing to serve with Arnold. Directed | Britain as a neighbour on the north, and Spain on the Virgm to select a suitable position for a permanent post on the | south and west. Some disposition had been shown to | Chesapeake, he had chosen Yorktown, where, with the | exclude the Americans from the fishing ground off New-) troops already in Virginia, he fortified his army. The | foundland, but it was abandoned. ‘The United States by) general ground was that of M‘Clellan’s campaign of 1862 | the treaty entered the family of nations with recognized) ($ 285) and Grant’s of 1864-65 (§ 296). boundaries, and all the territory within these boundaries 84. Washington, reinforced by a lately arrived force of | could be recognized by other nations only as the property | 6000 excellent French troops (July 1780) under Rocham- | of the United States, But, so far as internal arrange- beau, was still watching Clinton at New York. The news | ments were concerned, a great question remained to be) that De Grasse’s French fleet, on its way to the American | settled. There were thirteen organized States, covering) coast, would enter the Chesapeake, where Cornwallis had | but a part of this territory ; a part of them claimed to be) left himself open to the chances of such an event, led | sole proprietors of the western territory outside of the Washington to conceive the campaign which captured | present State limits ; and it remained to be seen whether Cornwallis and ended the war. He began elaborate pre- | they would make

good their claim, or the other States parations for an attack on New York, so that Clinton | would compel them to divide, or the new national power actually called upon Cornwallis for aid. Moving down | would compel as clear an internal as an international the Hudson, he kept Clinton in ignorance of any move- | recognition of its claim (§ 89). ment to the south as long as possible, and then changed 87. The American army was now disbanded, its officers the line of march to one through New J ersey. The | receiving a grudging recognition of their claims and the allied armies passed through Philadelphia, were hurried privates hardly anything. Poverty was to blame for down the Chesapeake, and drove Cornwallis within his | much of this, and the popular suspicion of military power “ork entrenchments at Yorktown. De Grasse had arrived | for the rest. Washington’s influence was strong enough own. August 30, had defeated the British fleet, and was master | to keep the dissatisfied army from any open revolt, though

that step was seriously proposed. The organization of tlie hereditary order of the Cincinnati by the officers brought The Cin- about a more emphatic expression of public dislike, and cinnati. the hereditary feature was abandoned. But, wherever the officers and men went, they carried a personal disgust with the existing frame of government which could not but produce its effect in time. Their miseries had been largely due to it. The politicians who controlled the State legislatures had managed to seize the reins of government and reduce Congress, the only body with pretensions to a national character, to the position of a

of the Chesapeake waters. After three weeks’ siege Corn- wallis, having exhausted a soldier’s resources, surrendered

his army of 8000 men (October 19, 1781). 85. The country at large had really been at peace for along time. Everywhere, except in the immediate neigh- ‘ bourhood of the British forces, the people were work- | ing almost with forgetfulness that they had ever been English colonists; and, where the enemy had to be reckoned with, they were looked upon much as the early settlers looked on bears or Indians, as an unpleasant but inevitable item in the debit side of their accounts. Their

legislatures were making their laws ; their governors, or “presidents,” were the representatives whom their States acknowledged ; nothing but an American court had the power to touch a particle of the judicial interests of the American people; the American flag was recognized on the ocean; independence was a fact, and the ministry received from the English people so emphatic a call to acknowledge it that it yielded so far as to propose a defensive war. The House of Commons (March 4, 1782) voted to regard as enemies to the king and country all who should advise the further prosecution of the war ; the Rockingham ministry succeeded to power, to be followed shortly by the Shelburne ministry ; and Rodney’s victory over De Grasse gave the new ministries very much the same cover for an unsuccessful peace as Jackson’s victory at New Orleans afforded the United States in 1815 (§$ 181). Franklin, John Adams, and J ay, the American negotiators, concluded the preliminary treaty of peace, by which Great Britain acknowledged the independence of the United States (Nov. 30, 1782) ; hostilities ceased ; and the definitive treaty of peace was concluded (Sept. 3, 1783). A number of American loyalists (usually called Tories) accompanied the departing armies.

purely advisory body. The soldiery knew instinctively that the lack of power to feed them and clothe them, the payment of their scanty wages in paper worth two per cent. of its face value, were due to the impotence of Congress and the too great power of the States, that the nation presented the “awful spectacle,” as Hamilton called it, of “a nation without a national government”; and the commonest toast in the army was “ Here’s a hoop to the barrel,”—a stronger national government to bind the States together. The struggle for the establishment of this national government is the next step in the development of the United States, but to reach it naturally it will be necessary to go back into the midst of the struggle for independence.

V. THE STRUGGLE FOR NATIONAL GOVERNMENT :

1777-89,

88. The fact that the Continental Congress was really

a revolutionary body, not limited in its powers by any

fundamental law imposed by the underlying popular

sovereignty, but answering most closely to the British

parliament, has already been noted (§ 64). This state of

affairs was repugnant to all the instincts and prejudices XXIII. — 94

Articles of Con- federa- tion.

The western territory.

Tts rela- tions to the Union.

of the American people, and of the delegates who repre- sented them. Just at the time of the Declaration of Independence Congress set about preparing a “form of confederation,” which should express exactly the relative powers of the State and national Governments. Its work was finished November 15, 1777, and recommended to the States foradoption. Unluckily, before the work had been finished, the State legislatures had succeeded in establish-

ing their power to appoint and recall at pleasure the

delegates to Congress, so that Congress had come to be the mere creature of the State legislatures. The “ Articles of Confederation,” adopted in 1777, were thus calculated for the meridian of the State legislatures which were to pass upon them. The new government was to be merely ‘a firm league of friendship” between sovereign States, which were to retain every power not “expressly” delegated to Congress ; there was to be but one house of Congress, in which each State was to have an equal vote, with no national cxecutive or judiciary ; and Congress, while keep- ing the power to borrow money, was to have no power to levy taxes, or to provide in any way for payment of the money borrowed—only to make recommendations to the States or requisitions on the States, which they pledged their public faith to obey. The States were forbidden to make treaties, war, or peace, to grant titles of nobility, to keep vessels of war or soldiers, or to lay imposts which

should conflict with treaties already proposed to France or Spain. Important measures required the votes of nine of the thirteen States, and amendments the votes of all. Congress had hardly more than an advisory power at the best. It had no power to prevent or punish offences against its own laws, or even to perform effectively the duties enjoined upon it by the Articles of Confederation. It alone could declare war, but it had no power to compel the enlistment, arming, or support of an army. It alone could fix the needed amount of revenue, but the taxes could only be collected by the States at their own pleasure. It alone could decide disputes between the States, but it had no power to compel either disputant to respect or obey its decisions. It alone could make treaties with foreign nations, but it had no power to prevent individual States from violating them. Even commerce, foreign and domestic, was to be regulated entirely by the States, and it was not long before State selfishness began to show itself in the regulation of duties on imports. In everything the States were to be sovereign, and their crea- ture, the Federal Government, was to have only strength enough to bind the States into nominal unity, and only life enough to assure it of its own practical impotence.

89. Most of the States signed the Articles at once; New Jersey, Delaware, and Maryland held out against ratifying them for from two to four years. The secret of their resistance was in the claims to the western territory already mentioned (§§ 34, 86). The three recalcitrant States had always had fixed western boundaries, and had no legal claim to a share in the western territory; the Articles, while providing for the decision of disputes between individual States, were careful to provide also that “no State shall be deprived of territory for the benefit of the United States”; and this meant that those States whose charters carried them to the Pacific Ocean, while admitting the national authority to limit their claims by the Mississippi river, were to divide up the western territory among them. New Jersey and Delaware gave up the struggle in 1778 and 1779; but Maryland would not and did not yield until her claims were satisfied.

go. Dr H. B. Adams has shown that the whole question of real nationality for the United States was bound up in this western territory ; that even a “league government” could not continue long to govern a great and growing

territory like this without developing into a real national government, even without a change of strict law; and that the Maryland leaders were working under a complete consciousness of these facts. It is creditable, however, to the change which the struggle for union had wrought in the people that it was not until very late in this struggle that Virginia, the most omnivorous westcrn claimant, proposed to have the Articles go into effect without Mary- land, and still more creditable that her proposal hardly received notice from the other States. They were already conscious that the thirteen were really one.

g1. The solution of the difficulty was found in 1780. New The western boundary of the State of New York had York's always been very much in the air. Her main claim to "#™ her present extensive territory lay in the assertions that the western part had once belonged to the Six Nations of Indians, and that the Dutch, conquering the Six Nations, the English, conquering the Dutch, and New York, conquering the English, had succeeded to these rights. But the Six Nations had exercised an undefined suzer- ainty gver all the Indian tribes from Tennessee to Mich- ilimackinac, covering all the territory in dispute. New York proposed, if Congress would confirm her present western boundary, to transfer to Congress her western claims by conquest, superior to any mere charter claims ; and Congress approved the offer as " expressly calculated to accelerate the federal alliance." On March 1, 1781, the New York delegates formally completed the deed of transfer to the United States ; on the same day the Mary- land delegates signed the Articles ; and by this action of the last State the Articles of Confederation came into force as the first attempt to frame a national government.

92. The long struggle had given time for careful con- sideration of the Articles. Maryland's persistent criticism had prepared men to find defects in them. Conventions of New England States, pamphlets, and private corre- spondence had found flaws in the new plan of government ; but a public trial of it was a necessary preliminary to getting rid of it. The efforts of the individual States to maintain the war, the disposition of each State to magnify its own share in the result, the popular jealousy of a superior

power, transferred now from parliament to the central Government, and inflamed by the politicians who saw their quickest road to dignity in the State govern- ments, were enough to ensure the Articles some lease of life. A real national government had to be extorted through the “ grinding necessities of a reluctant people.”

93. Congress and its committees had already begun to declare that it was impossible to carry on a government efficiently under the Articles. Its expostulations were to be continued for several years before they were heard.

In the meantime it did not neglect the great subject which concerned the essence of nationality—the western territory. Virginia had made a first offer to cede her claims, but it was not accepted. A committee of Congress now made a report (1782) maintaining the validity of the rights which New York had transferred to Congress ; and in the next year Virginia made an acceptable offer. Her Tem deed was accepted (March 1, 1784); the other claimant tout States followed ; and Congress, which was not authorized a by the Articles to hold or govern territory, became the sovereign of a tract of some 430,000 square miles, nearly equal to the areas of France, Spain, and Portugal com- bined, covering all the country between the Atlantic tier of States and the Mississippi river, from the British possessions nearly to the Gulf of Mexico. ;

94. In this territory Congress had now on its hands the Peel same question of colonial government in which the British (ver: parliament had so signally failed. The manner in which vent Congress dealt with it has made the United States the

[nIsToRy,

—— —<—

! ;

]

he Ordi- nee of

vay t PE

country that it is. The leading feature of its plan was the erection, as rapidly as possible, of States, similar in powers to the original States. The power of Congress

1777-1787, |

over the territories was to be theoretically absolute, but |

it was to be exerted in encouraging the development of thorough self-government, and in granting it as fast as the settlers should become capable of exercising it. Copied in succeeding Acts for the organization of Territories, and still controlling the spirit of such Acts, the Ordinance of 1787 (July 13, 1787) is the foundation of almost every- thing which makes the modern American system peculiar.

95. The preliminary plan of Congress was reported by a comn- mittee (April 23, 1784) of which Jefferson was chairman. It pro- vided for the erection of seventcen States, north and south of the Ohio, with some odd names, such as Sylvania, Assenisipia, Metro- potamia, Polypotaimia, and Pelisipia. These States were for ever to bea part of the United States, and to have republican govern- ments, and the Ordinance creating them was to be a compact between the Federal Government and each State, unalterable unless by mutual consent. ‘‘After the year 1800 there shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in any of the said States, other than in the punishment of crimes wherecf the party shall have been duly convicted.” This provision, which represented Jefferson’s feeling on the subject, was lost for want of seven States in its favour.

96. The final plan of 1787 was reported by a committee of which Nathan Dane, of Massachusctts, was chairman. The prohibition of slavery was madc perpetual, and a fugitive slave clause was added (§ 124). The Ordinance ‘covered only the territory north of the Ohio, and provided for not less than three nor more than five States. Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, and Wisconsin have been the resultant States. The inhabitants

were to be secured in the cqual division of real and personal property of intestates to the next of kin in equal degree. At first Congress was to appoint the governor, secretary, judges, and militia generals, and the governor aud judges were to make laws subject to the veto of Con- gress. When the population reached 5000 the inhabitants were to have an assembly of their own, to consist of the governor, a legislative council of five, selected by Congress from ten nomina- tions by the lower house, and a lower house of representatives of one delegate for every 500 inhabitants. This assembly was to choose a delegate to sit, but not to vote, in Congress, and was to inake laws uot repugnant to "the articles of fundamental com- pact," which were as follows:—the new States or Territories were to maintain freedom of worship, the benefits of the writ of habeas corpus, trial by jury, proportionate representation, bail, moderate fines and punishments, and the preservation of liberty, property, and private contracts; they were to encourage public education and keep faith with the Indians; they were to remain for ever a part of the United States; and they were not to interfere with the disposal of the soil by the United States, or to tax the lands of the United States, or to tax any citizen of the United States for the use of the Mississippi or St Lawrence rivers. These articles were to be unalterable unless by mutual consent of a State and the United States. The transformation of the Territory, with its quite limited government, into a State, with all the powers of an original State, was proinised by Congress as soon as the population should reach 60,000.

97. The constitution, which was adopted almost immediately afterwards, provided merely that " Congress shall have power to dispose of, and make all needful rules and regulations respecting, the territory or other property belonging to the United States," and that 'new States may be admitted by the Congress into the Union." Opinions have varied as to the force of the Ordinance of 1787. The Southern school of writers have naturally been inclined to consider it wltra vires and void; and they adduce the fact that the new Congress under the constitution thought it necessary to re-enact the Ordinance. The opposite school have inclincd to hold the Ordinance as still in force. Even as to the territorial provision of the constitution, opinions have varied. The Dred Scott decision held that it applicd only to the territory then in possession of the United States, and that territory

subscquently acquired, by con- quest or purchase, was not to be governed by Congress with absolute power, but subject to constitutional limitations.

98. In the interval of the settlement of the territorial question, the affairs of the “league of friendship” known as the United States had been going from bad to worse, culminating in 1786. The public debt amounted in 1783 to about $42,000,000, of which $8,000,000 was owed abroad—in Holland, France, and Spain. Congress had no power to levy taxes for the payment of interest or principal ; it could only make requisitions on the States.

prATDTs T47

In the four years ending in 1786 requisitions had been made for $10,000,000, and the receipts from them had amounted to but one-fourth of what had been called for. Even the interest on the debt was falling into arrears, and the first instalment of the principal fell due in 1787. To pay this, and subsequent annual instalments of $1,000,000, was quite impossible. Robert Morris, the financier of the revolution, resigned in 1783, “rather than be the minister of injustice,” hoping thus to force upon the States the necessity of granting taxing powers to Congress. Wash- ington, on retiring from the command-in-chief, wrote a circular letter to the governors of all the States, urging the necessity of granting to Congress some power to provide a national revenue. Congress (April 18, 1783) appealed to the States for power to levy specific duties on certain enumerated articles, and 5 per cent. on others. It was believed that with these duties and the requisi- tions, which were now to be met by internal taxation, $2,500,000 per annum could be raised. Some of the States ratified the proposal; others ratified it with modifications ; others rejected it, or changed their votes ; and it never received the necessary ratification of all the States. The obedience to the requisitions grew more lax. Some of the States paid them ; others pleaded poverty, and allowed more or less of them to run into arrears ; others offered to pay in their own depreciated paper currency ; and others indignantly refused to pay in any currency until the delinquent States should pay all their obligations. In1786 a committee of Congress reported that any further reliance on requisitions would be “ dishonourable to the understand- ings of those who entertain such confidence.”

99. In the States the case was even worse. Some of them had been seduced into issuing paper currency in such profusion that they were almost bankrupt. Great Britain, in the treaty of peace, had recognized the independence of the individual States, naming them in order ; and her Government followed the same system in all its intercourse with its late colonies, Its restrictive system was maintained, and the States, vying with each other for commerce, could adopt no system of counteracting measures. Every possible burden was thus shifted to American commerce; and Congress could do nothing, for, though it asked for the power to regulate commerce for fifteen years, the States refused it. The decisions of the various State courts began to conflict, and there was no power to reconcile them or to prevent the conse- quences of the divergence. Several States, towards the end of this period, began to prepare or adopt systems of protection of domestic productions or manufactures, aimed at preventing competition by neighbouring States. The Tennessee settlers were in insurrection against the authority of North Carolina ; and the Kentucky settlers were appa- rently disposed to cut loose from Virginia, if not from the United States. Poverty, with the rigid execution of pro- cess for debt, drove the farmers of western Massachusetts into an insurrection which the State had much difficulty in suppressing; and Congress was so incompetent to aid Massachusetts that it was driven to the expedient of imagining an Indian war in that direction, in order to transfer troops thither. Congress itself was in danger of disappearance from the scene. The necessity for the votes of nine of the thirteen States for the passage of important measures made the absence of a State's dele- gation quite as effective as a negative vote. In order to save the expense of a delegation, the States began to neglect the election of them, unless they had some object to obtain by their attendance. It was necessary for Con- gress to make repeated and urgent appeals in order to obtain a quorum for the ratification of the treaty of peace with Great Britain. In 1784 Congress even broke up in

Diffi-

culties of

the con- federa- tion ;

of the States ;

of Con- gress,

Proposals for a conven- tion,

Conven- tion of

1786.

Conven- tion of

1787.

disgust, and the French minister reported to his Govern- ment—‘ There is now in America no general government, —neither Congress, nor president, nor head of any one administrative department.” Everywhere there were symp- toms of a dissolution of the Union.

100. Congress was evidently incompetent to frame a new plan of national government; its members were too dependent on their States, and would be recalled if they took part in framing anything stronger than the Articles. The idea of a convention of the States, independent of Congress, was in the minds and mouths of many; Thomas Paine had suggested it as long ago as his Common Sense pamphlet: ‘Let a continental conference be held, to frame a continental charter, drawing the line of business and jurisdiction between members of Congress and mem- bers of assembly.” To a people as fond of law and the forms of law as the Americans there was a difficulty in the way. The Articles had provided that no change should be made in them but by the assent of every State legislature. If the work of such a convention was to be subject to this rule, its success would be no greater than that of Congress; if its plan was to be put into force on the ratification of less than the whole number of States, the step would be more or less revolutionary. In the end the latter course was taken, though not until every other expedient had failed; but the act of taking it showed the underlying consciousness that union, independence, and nationality were now inextricably complicated, and that the thirteen had become one in some senses.

ror. The country drifted into a convention by a round. about way. The navigation of Chesapeake Bay needed regulation; and the States of Maryland and Virginia, having plenary power in the matter, appointed delegates to arrange such rules. ‘The delegates met (1785) at Washing- ton’s house, Mount Vernon; and Maryland, in adopting their report, proposed a meeting of commissioners from all the States to frame commercial regulations for the whole. Virginia acceded at once, and named Annapolis, in Mary- land, as the place. The convention met (1786), but only five States were represented, and their delegates adjourned, after recommending another convention at Philadelphia in May 1787.

102. Congress had failed in its last resort—a proposal that the States should grant it the impost power alone ; New York’s veto had put an end to this last hope. Con- fessing its helplessness, Congress approved the call for a second convention; twelve of the States (all but Rhode Island) chose delegates ; and the convention met at Phil- adelphia (May 14, 1787), with an abler body of men than had been seen in Congress since the first two Continental Congresses. Among others, Virginia sent Washington, Madison, Edmund Randolph, George Mason (p. 789), and George Wythe; Pennsylvania Franklin, Robert and Gouverneur Morris, and James Wilson ; Massachusetts Rufus King, Gerry, and Strong; Connecticut William S. Johnson, Sherman, and Ellsworth ; New York Hamilton ; New Jersey Paterson; and South Carolina the two Pinck- neys (p. 790) and Rutledge! With hardly an exception

1 The following were some of the members of the convention not elsewhere noticed. OLIVER ELLSWORTH was born at Windsor, Conn., April 29, 1745, and died at his birthplace Nov. 96, 1807. He graduated at Princeton College in 1766, became a lawyer, and judge of the superior court of his State, and in 1796 was appointed chief- justice of the United States Supreme Court. He was sent on a mission to France in 1799, and resigned his place as chief-justice in 1800,—ELBRIDGE GERRY was born at Marblehead, Mass., July 17, 1744, and died at Washington, Nov. 23, 1814. He graduated at Harvard College in 1762, was a memher of the Continental Congress, 1776-1780 and 1783-1785, and of the Congress under the constitu- tion, 1789-1793. He was elected vice-president by the Democratic

party in 1812, and died in office. —Rurus Kina was born at Scar- borough, Mass. (now Maine), March 24, 1755, and died at Jamaica,

the fifty-five delegates were clear-headed, moderate men, with positive views of their own, and firm purpose, but with a willingness to compromise.

103. Washington was chosen to preside, and the con- vention began the formation of a new constitution, instead of proposing changes in the old one. Two parties were formed at once. The Virginia delegates offered a plan, proposing a Congress of two houses, having power to legislate on national subjects, and to compel the States to fulfil their obligations. This is often spoken of as a “ national plan,” but very improperly. It was a “ large State ” plan, proposed by those States which had or hoped for a large population. It meant to base representation in both houses on population, so that the large States could control both of them, and it left the appointment of the president or other executive and the Federal judges to Congress,—so that the whole administration of the new government would fall under large-State control. On be- half of the “small States” Paterson of New Jersey brought in another plan. It continued the old Confederation, with its single house and equal State vote, but added the power to regulate commerce and raise a revenue, and to compel the States to obey requisitions. The State representation was fortunate. New Hampshire’s delegates did not attend until after those of New York (then classed as a small State) had retired from the convention in anger at its evi- dent drift towards the “large-State” plan. The large States had a general majority of six to five, but the constant dropping off of one or more votes, on minor features, from their side to that of the small States prevented the hasty adoption of any radical measures. Nevertheless, the final collision could not be evaded ; the basis of the two plans was in the question of one or two houses, of equal or pro- portionate State votes, of large-State supremacy or of State equality. In July the large States began to show a disposi- tion to force their plan through, and the small States began to threaten a concerted withdrawal from the convention.

104. The Connecticut delegates, ance in the convention, had favoured a compromise. had been trained under the New England system, in which the assemblies were made up of two houses, one repre-

[mIsToRY,

N.Y., April 29, 1827. He graduated at Harvard College in 1777, and served as a Massachusetts member of the Continental Congress from 1784 to 1786. Removing to New York, he was elected United States senator from that State, serving in 1789-96, and was minister to Great Britain from 1796 to 1803. From 1804 to 1812 he was the Federalist candidate for the vice-presidency.—EDMUND RaNDOLPH was born in Virginia, Aug. 10, 1753, and died in Frederick county, Va., Sept. 12, 1813. THe became a lawyer, and, though the son of a leading royalist, entered the American revolutionary army as Washington's aide-de-camp. He served as governor of his State, and as attorney-general and secretary of state under Washington, re- signing in 1795 because of the discovery that he was in correspond- ence with the French minister.—JOHN RUTLEDGE was born at Charleston, 8.C., in 1789, and died July 23, 1800. He studied law at the Temple (London), served in the Continental Congress, 1774, was governor of his State from 1779 to 1782, and afterwards was chief justice —RoceR SHERMAN was born at Newton, Mass., April 19, 1721, and died at New Haven, Conn., July 23, 1793. He was a shoemaker, who, removing to New Milford, Comn., studied law, and served as judge of a State conrt from 1765 to 1789, as member of the house of representatives from 1789 to 1791, and as United States senator from 1791 to 1793.—Jamzs Witson was born near St Andrews, Scotland, about 1742, and died at Edenton, N.C., Aug. 28, 1798. Emigrating to the United States in 1766, he studied law, served in the Continental Congress (1775-78, 1782-83, and 1785- 87), and was one of the justices of the United States Supreme Court from 1789 until his death. Wilson's reputation as an able lawyer has been growing of late, and hardly auy member of the convention ranks higher than he for profound insight into the real nature of the govern- ment and constitution of the United States. —GEORGE WYTHE was born in Elizabeth county, Va., in 1726, and died at Richmond, Va., June 8, 1806. He was educated at William1 and Mary College, studied law, and was a member of the Virginia legislature

from 1758, and of the Continental Congress in 1775. He was chancellor of his State from 1778 until 1798.

from their first appear- The com — They promise,

The Vir. ginia plan,

The New Jersey plan,

a ne

$e

‘he

vork of he con- ention,

CUN@iPTfiEeyD

senting the people of the whole State, according to popula- tion, and the other giving an equal representation to the towns. They proposed that the new Congress should be made up of two houses, one representing the States in pro- portion to their population, the other giving an equal vote to each State. At a dead-lock, the convention referred the proposition to a committee, and it reported in favour of the Connecticut compromise. Connecticut had been voting in the large-State list, and the votes of her delegates could not be spared from their slender majority ; now another of the large States, North Carolina, came over to Con- necticut’s proposal, and it was adopted. Thus the first great struggle of the convention resulted in a compromise, which took shape in the peculiar feature of the constitu- tion, the senate.

105. The little States were still anxious, in every new question, to throw as much power as possible into the hands of their special representative, the senate ; and that body thus obtained its power to act as an executive council as a restraint on the president in appointments aid treaties. This was the only survival of the first alignment of parties; but new divisions arose on almost every proposal introduced. The election of the president was given

at various times to Congress and to electors chosen by the State legislatures ; and the final mode of choice, by electors chosen by the States, was settled only two weeks before the end of the convention, the office of vice-president coming in with it. The opponents and supporters of the slave trade compromised by agreeing not to prohibit it for twenty years. Another compromise included three-fifths of the slaves in enumerating popula- tion for representation. This was the provision which gave the slave-holders abnormal power as the number of slaves increased ; for a district in the "black belt" of the South, while three-fifths of its slaves were enumerated, really gave representation to its few whites only.

106. Any explanation of the system introduced by the constitu- tion must start with the historical fact that, while the national government was practically suspended, from 1776 until 1789, the only power to which political privileges had been given by the people was the States, and that the State legislatures were, when the convention met, politically omnipotent, with the exception of the few limitations imposed on them by the early State constitu- tions, which were not at all so searching or severe as those of more recent years. 'The general rule, then, is that the Federal Govern- ment has only the powers granted to it by the Federal constitution, while the State has all governmental powers not forbidden to it by the State or the Federal constitution. But the phrase defining the Federal Government's powers is no longer '' expressly granted," as in the Articles of Confederation, but merely '' granted," so that powers necessary to the execution of granted powers belong to the Federal Government, even though not directly named in the con- stitution. 'This question of the interpretation, or " construction," of the constitution is at the bottom of real national politics in the United States: the minimizing parties have sought to hold the Federal Government to a strict construction of granted powers, While their opponents have sought to widen those powers by a broad construction of them. The strict-construction parties, when they have come into power, have regularly adopted the practice of their opponents, so that construction has pretty steadily broadened ; the power to ''regulate commerce between the States" is now interpreted so as to include the power of Congress to regulate the fares and contracts of railways engaged in inter-State commerce (§ 327), which would have been deemcd preposterous in 1787.

107. Popular sovereignty, then, is the basis of the American system. But it does not, as does the English system, choose its legislative body and leave unlimitcd powers to it. It makes its “constitution” the permanent medium of its orders or prohibitions to all branches of the Federal Government and to inany branches of the State Governments: they must do what the constitution directs and leave undone what it forbids. The people, therefore, are continually laying their commands on their Governments; and they have instituted a system of Federal courts to ensure obedience to their commands. An English court must obey the Act of Parliament ; the American court is bound and sworn to obey the Constitution first, and the Act of Congress or of the State legisla- ture only so far as it is warranted by the constitution. But the American court does not deal directly with the Act in question ;

it deals with individuals who have a suit before it. One of these individuals relies on an Act of Congress or of a State legislature ; the Act thus comes before the court for examination ; and it sup- ports the Act or disregardsit as ‘‘ unconstitutional,” or in violation of the constitution, If the eourt is oneof high rank or reputation, or one to which a decision may be appcaled, as the United States Supreme Court, other courts follow the preccdent, and the law falls to the ground. The court does not come into direct conflict with the legislative body ; and, where a decision would be apt to pro- duce such a conflict, the practice has been for the court to regard the matter as a ‘‘ political question” and refuse to consider it.

108. The preamble states that “we, the people of the United The States,” establish aud ordain the constitution. vents have shown preamble. that it was the people of the whole United States that established the constitution, but the people of 1787 secm to have inclined to the belief that it was the people of each State for itself. This belief was never changed in the South; and in 1861 the people of that section believed that the ordinances of secession were merely a repeal of the enacting clause by the power which had passed it, the people of the State.

109. The original constitution was in seven articles. The first

related to the organization and powers of Congress, which consists of a senate and house of representatives, Representatives are to The be inhabitants of the State for which they are chosen, to be twenty- house of five years old at least, and are to serve two years. Each house of represen- represcntatives thus lasts for two years, and this period is usually tatives. known as ‘‘a Congress”; the fifticth Congress will expire March 4, 1889, having completed the first century of the constitution. Repre- sentatives are assigned to the States in proportion to population, and this fact forced the provision for a decennial ecnsus, the first appearance of such a provision in modern national history. The first census was taken in 1790. Apportionment of representatives from 1883 until 1893 is governed by the census of 1880; by Act of Congress the number 154,825 is the divisor into a State’s popula- tion which fixes the number of the State’s representatives, the whole number of representatives being 325, with eight delegates from the Territories, having seats and the right to debate but not to vote. The house elects its speaker and other officers, and has the power of impeachment.

110, The legislature of each State elects two senators, to serve The

for six years ; and no State can ever be deprived of its equal share senate. of representation except by its own consent. The senators are divided into three classes, the term of one class expiring every two years, Six years are therefore necessary to completely ehange the composition of the senate, and it is eonsidercd a continuous body. Senators are to be at least thirty years old, and must be inhabit- ants of the States from which they are chosen and citizens of the United States for at least nine years previous to their election. The vice-president presides over the senate, having no vote unless in case of an equal division. But the legislative provision (con- tinuing until 1887) that the death or disability of the president and vice-president devolved the office of president on the presiding officer pro tempore of the senate made that officer one of great possible importance, and the vice-president regularly retired just before the end of a session, so that a pro tempore officer might be selected (§ 117).

111. All officers of the United States are open to impeachment Impeach- by the house of representatives, the impeachment to be tried by ment. the

senate, and the penalty to be no more than removal and dis- qualification to serve further under the United States. When the president is tried, the chief justice of the Supreme Court presides,

112. The members of both houses are privileged from arrest and Both from being questioned elsewhcre for words spoken in debate. Each houses. house passes on the election of its own members; but an Act of Congress may control the Acts of the State legislature as to time, place, and manner of elections, except as to the place of choosing senators, in which the legislature remains supreme. Congress has exercised the power by passing a general election lay. The two houses cannot adjourn to another place, or for more than three days, nnless by common consent. Their members are paid by the United States, and must not be office-holders or receive any office ereated or increased in pay during their term of service in Con-

Tess. : 113. When a bill passes both houses it goes to the president, Veto If he signs it becomes law. If he holds it without signing for power, ten days (Sundays excepted) it becomes law, unless the final adjournment of Congress comes in the ten days. All bills passed in the last ten days of a Congress are therefore at the mercy of the president: he can prevent them from becoming laws by simply retaining them. If the president decides to veto a bill he returns it, with a statement of his objections, to the house in which it originated. It can then only become law by the vote of two-thirds of both houses,

114. The powers of Congress are fully stated. “lay and eollect taxes, duties, pay the debts and provide for welfare of the United States,”

The first is to Powers imposts, and excises, [in order] to of Con- the common defence and general gress, The words in brackets are not in

750 owt? ED

the original, but they are included in construction by all respect- able authorities, as essential to its meaning; any other construc- tion would give Congress absolute power over whatever it thought to be for “the common defence or general welfare.” Duties, &c., are to be uniform throughout the United States. Other powers are—to borrow money; to regulate foreign and

domestic commerce; to make rules for naturalization, and bankruptcy laws; to coin money, regulate the value of forcign coins, and fix the standard of weights and measures; to punish the counterfeiting of Federal securities and current coin; to establish post-offices and post-roais ; to establish patent and copyright systems; to establish courts inferior to the supreme court; to punish offences on the high scas or against international law; to declare war, graut letters of marque and reprisal, and make rules for captures; to raise and support armies, no appropriation to be for more than two years; to provide and maintain a navy; to make articles of war; to use the militia of the States in executing Federal laws, suppressing insurrections, and repelling invasions; to provide for organizing, arming, and disciplining this militia, leaving the States to appoint the officers and carry out the system ; to establish a national capital or Federal district (the District of Columbia, containing the city of Washington), and to exercise exclusive powers of legislation over it, and over sites for forts, dockyards, &c., bought by permission of the States; and, finally, ‘“‘to make all laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into execution the foregoing powers, and all other powers vested by this constitution in the Government of the United States, or in any department or office thereof.” This last power has been the subject of most debate. It was urged that, unless an Act of Congress was strictly “ necessary ” for the execution of one of the granted powers, it was invalid. The Supreme Court has held that the Act need not be “ absolutely necessary,” or even ‘‘ very necessary,”—that it is enough if it is “necessary.” As the decision of the necessity is with the legis- lative body, the word opens a wide sweep for construction; but it has always furnished a barricade which the opponents of a bill have often found very strong. Powers 115. The real sovereignty which made the constitution shows forbidden itself in a double series of prohibitions—on the Federal Govern- tothe imentand on the States. The Federal Government shall not sus- Federal pend the privilege of tlie writ of habeas corpus except in case of Govern- rebellion or invasion, when the public safety requires it. Since ment; the Civil War the Supreme Court has decided that the writ itself can never be suspended while the courts are open, that the Federal Government may suspend the privilege of the writ as to classes of persons directly interested in the war, but that the writ,is still to issue and the court to decide whether the applicant comes within the excepted classes or not. Congress must not pass any bill of attainder or ex post facto law, tax exports, give

commercial prefer- ence to the ports of one State over those of another, lay direct taxes except in proportion to census population, or grant any title of nobility. Money is to be taken from the treasury only in con- sequence of appropriations made by law. And no person in the service of the United States may accept any gift or title from a foreign power without consent of Congress.

116. The States are absolutely forbidden to make treaties of any kind, to grant lettcrs of marque and reprisal, to coin money, to emit bills of credit, to make anything but silver a legal tender, to grant any title of nobility, to pass any bill of attainder, ex post Jacto law, or law impairing the obligation of contracts. It follows from the last clause that States cannot pass bankruptcy laws. The States are forbidden, except by consent of Congress, to lay any duties on imports or exports, except inspection charges, to be paid into the Federal treasury; to lay any tonnage duties; to keep troops (a word which does not cover militia) or ships in peace; to make any agreement with another State or with a foreign power; or to engage in war unless actually invaded.

117. The president is to be a native citizen, at least thirty-five years old, and at least fourteen years a resident within the United States. He is paid by the United States; and his salary is not to be increased or diminished by Congress during his term: the Act inust apply to the successors of the president who signs the Act. He is sworn to execute his office faithfully, and to “preserve, pro- tect, and defend the constitution of the United States.” In case of his death, resignation, or inability (by impeachment or otherwise) the vice-president succeeds him; and, in case of the inability of both, the members of the cabinet succeed in a prescribed order, according to the Presidential Succession Act of 1886. The president has the veto power already described, sends messages to Congress on the state of the Union or on special subjects, convenes either house or both on extraordinary occasions, reeeives foreign envoys, commissions officers of the United States, and oversees the execu- tion of the laws passed by Congress. He makes treaties; but uo treaty is valid unless passed by the senate by a two-thirds vote of those present. He appoints ministers and consuls, judges, and all other officers whose appointment Congress has not vested in other

officers; but presidential appointments must be confirmed by the senate, though the president may make temporary appointments

to the States,

The pre- sident and his powers.

SsPratie

during the recess of the senate, to hold until the end of their next session. He is commander-in-clief of the army and navy, and has power of pardon or reprieve for offences against Federal laws, except in case of impeachment. And he may call upon heads of departments for an opinion in writing on any subject relating to his departinent.

118, The last clause has evolved the ‘‘cabinct,” a term not The

known in the constitution. When Congress has by law organized eabinet, a department, its leading officer is called its secretary. here are now (1887) seven departinents,—those of state, of the treasury, of war, of the navy, of the post-office, of the interior, aud of justice; and departments of agriculture and of labour have been proposed, The secretaries are selected by the president and are confirmed by the senate, but are not responsible to any one but the president. Nor is he bound by their individual opinions, or even by an unanimous opinion from one of their periodical meetings. They are his advisers ouly.

119. The people have no direct voice in the choice of president The elec.

aud vice-president : they choose electors, each State having as toral many electors as it has senators and representatives together ; system, and the electors choose the president and vice-president, meeting at their State capitals for that purpose, and sending separate certificates of their choice of president and of vice-president to the presiding officer of the senate at Washington. ‘Ihe electors are to be chosen in such manner as the legislature of each State shall direct ; and this plenary power of the legislatures was the source of the unhappy disputed election of 1876-77. By Acts of Congress, the electors are to be chosen on the Tuesday after the first Mon- day of

November; they meet in thcir States and vote on the first Wednesday of December ; and Congress mects on the second Wednesday of February to witness the counting of the electoral votes. The electors are legally State officers ; and the action of their States in regard to them was evidently intended to be final. Until 1887 Congress refused to provide for necessary proof of the State's action, and claimed the power to provide from time to time for emergencies. Such emergencies were constantly occurring; and Congress, which was ineant to be merely a witness of the count by the presiding officer of the senate, had seized, before 1876, a general supervisory power over the electors and their votes. This illegitimate function of Congress broke down in 1876-77, for several Southern States sent different sets of certificates ; the two houses of Congress were controlled by opposite parties, and could agree on nothing ; and an extra-constitutional machine, the "electoral commission,' was improvised to tide over the difficulty. Now provision is made by the Electoral Count Act of 1887 for the State's certification of its votes ; and the certificate which comes in legal form is not to be rejected but by a vote of both houses, If there is no majority of electoral votes for any person for vice- president, the senate, by a majority of its members, chooses from the two names highest on the list. If there is no majority for president, the house of representatives chooses one from the three names highest on the list, each State having one vote.

120. The electors were meant to exercise a perfect freedom of Powers choice, and there are instances in early years of electors voting for of the personal friends of the opposite party. It was originally provided electors. that each elector was to name two persons, without specifying which was to be president or vice-president. When the votes were counted, the highest name on the list, if it had a majority of all the votes, obtained the presidency, and the next highest became vice-president. It has been said that the convention cut out the office of president according to the measure of George Washington, and there was no difficulty while he served : each elector cast one of his votcs for Washington, and he was chosen unanimously; the struggle was for the second office. When he went out of office im 1796 the parties began to name candidates in advance for the two offices; the electors began to feel bound to vote for their party candidates; and the individuality of the electors disappeared at ouce. In the election of

1800 the electors of the successful party voted together like a well-drilled army, and the result was that the two candidates of the successful party had an equal vote. The defeated party controlled the house of representatives, and their efforts to choose Burr president instead of Jefferson exasperated the nil Democrats and sealed the fate of the old system. An amendment The : to the constitution was adopted in 1804, changing the method of amend- the electors in voting, so that each should vote separately for the ment, two offices and thus prevent any tie vote from this cause. ;

121. The constitution provides for one Supreme Court, having ns , original jurisdiction in cases affecting foreign ministers and con- Fe Al suls, and those to which a State shall be a party, and appellate coum. jurisdiction from such subordinate courts as Congress should from time to time establish. Al] judges were to hold office during good behaviour (§ 237), and their salarics were not to be diminished during their continuance in office. Criminal trials were to be by jury, except in impeachments, and were to be held within the State in which the offence had been committed, or in places assigned by law for the trial of offences committed outside the jurisdiction of any State. The whole jurisdiction of Federal courts, covermg both

[HISTORY,

Organi ‘ation f the

adiciary.

| | |

:

$ power rer indi- ‘duals,

;

| |

;

izitive ninals

oe TT hp

the original and the appellate jurisdiction of the Supreme Court, was clearly stated. Iederal courts were to deal with all cases in law or equity arising under the constitution or the laws or treaties made under it; with all cases affecting public ministers and consnis, or admiralty or maritime law; with suits by or against the United States; and with suits by one State against another, by a State against citizens of another State, by a citizen of one State against a citizen of another, by a citizen of a State against citizens of his own State when the question was one of a grant of land from different States, by a State or its citizens against foreigners, or by a foreigner against an American. As the section first stood, it was open to the construction of giving the power to the citizen of one State to sue another State, and the Supreme Court so construed it in 1793-94. The States at once took the alarm ; and the 11th amendment, forbidding suit against a State under this section except by another State, was ratified in 1798.

122. As soon as the new Government was organized in 1789, a Judiciary Act was passed, organizing the whole system of inferior Federal courts. Subsequent development has not changed the essential nature of this first Act. The Supreme Court now consists

1787.]

of a chief justice and eight associate justices; there are nine circuit

courts, each consisting of a Supreme Court justice and a cireuit judge ; and fifty-six district courts, each with a district judge. Kach circuit comprises several States; and the Supreme Court justices, in addition to their circuit work, meet in bank annually at Washington. The districts cover each a State ora part of a State. Appeal lies from the district to the circuit court when the matter involved is of a value greater than $500, and from the circuit to the Supreme Court when $5000 or more is involved. There are also Territorial courts; but these are under the absolute power of Congress over the Territories, and are not covered by the constitutional provisions as to courts. Consular courts, held abroad, fall under the treaty power.

123. The Constitution's leading difference from the Confederation is that it gives the national Government power over individuals, The Federal courts are the principal agent in securing this essential power ; without them, the constitution might easily have been as dismal a failure as the Confederation. It has also been a most important agent in securing to the national Government its sup- remacy over the States, From this point of view the most im- portant provision of the constitution is the grant of jurisdiction to Federal courts in cases involving the construction of the constitu- tion or of laws or treaties made under it. The 25th section'of the Judiciary Act permitted any Supreme Court justice to grant a writ of error to a State court in a case in a Federal law or treaty had been denied, or in which a State law objected to as in violation of the Federal constitution had been maintained. In such cases, the defeated party had the right to carry the ‘‘ Federal question" to the Federal courts. It was not until 1816 that the Federal courts undertook to exercise this power; it raised a storm of opposition, but it was maintained, and has made the constitution what it professed to be—* the supreme law of the land." As a subsidiary feature in the judiciary system, treason was restricted to the act of levying war against the United States, or of adhering to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort ; the evidence of it to confession in open court, or to the testimony of two witnesses to an overt act ; and any forfeiture in the punishment to a life effect only. The States, however, have always asserted their power to punish for treason against them individually. It has never been fully maintained in practice; but the theory had its effect in the secession period.

124. The States were bound to give credit to the public records of other States, to accord citizenship to the citizens of other States, to return criminals fleeing from other States, aud to return "persons held to service or labour" under the laws of another State. This last was the "fugitive slave" provision of the constitution, which becanie so important after 1850 (§ 228).

125. The Federal Government was to guarantee a republican form of government to each of the States, and to protect each of them against invasion, or, on application of the legislature or governor, against domestic violence. The ‘‘ guarantee clause "' teally substituted State rights under the guarantee of the Federal Government for the notion of State sovereignty

under the guaran- tee of the State itself. A still Stronger case of this was in the 5th article of the constitution, stating the manner of amendment.

he convention of 1787, it must be borne in mind, was working under a system of government which provided expressly that it Was not to be altered in the least unless by consent of all the States. The constitution provided that it was to go into force, so far as the ratifying States were concerned, as soon as nine of the thirteen States should ratify it, and that any future ainendment, When passed by two-thirds of both houses and ratified by the legislatures or conventions of three-fourths of the States, should become a part of the constitution. By application of the legis- latures of two-thirds of the States, a new convention, like that Which framed the constitution, might take the place of the two houses of Congress in proposing amendments. A system under

which the constitutionality of

which a State submits its whole future destiny to an unliniited power of decision in three-fourths of its associate States can hardly be called one of State sovereignty.

126. The debts of the Confederation, and its engagements, were Supreme made binding on the new Government; the constitution, and law of laws and treaties to be made under it, were declared to be “the the land. supreme law of the land”; judges of State courts were to be bound thereby, ‘‘anything in the constitution or laws of any State to the contrary notwithstanding” ; all the legislative, execu- tive, and judicial officers of the United States and of cach and every State were to be bound by oath or affirmation to support the constitution of the United States; but religious tests were for- bidden.

127. Ten amendments were adopted so soon after the ratification The first

of the constitution that they may fairly be considered a part of ten the original instrument. They were due toa general desire that amend- a ‘bill of rights” of some kind should be added to it; but they ments, did not alter any of the articles of the constitution. They forbade any establishment of

religion by Congress, or any abridgment of freedom of worship, of the press, or of speech, or of the popular right to assemble and petition the Government for redress of grievances; the billeting of soldiers; unreasonable searches or seizures, or general warrants; trials for infamous crimes except through a grand jury's action; subjecting a person for the same offence to be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb ; compelling him to witness against himself in criminal cases ; the taking of life, liberty, or property without due process of law or without com- pensation for property; and the demand of excessive bail, or the imposition of excessive fines or of cruel or unusual punishments, They asserted the right of the people to keep and bear arms, to a jury trial from the vicinage in criminal cases or in cases involy- ing more than $20, to a copy of the indictment, to the testimony against the prisoner, to compulsory process on his behalf, and to counsel for him, And they stated expressly the general principle already given, that the Federal Government is restricted to granted powers, while those not mentioned are reserved "to the States respectively or to the people."

128. The omission of the word " thereof "

mentioned seems significant. The system of the United States reignty, is almost the only national system, in active and successful opera- tion, as to which the exact location of the sovereignty is still a mooted question. The contention of the Cathoun school—that the separate States were sovereign before and after the adoption of the constitution, that each State adopted it by its own power, main- tained it by its own power, aud could put an end to it by its own power, that the Union was purely voluntary, and that the whole people, or the people of all the other States, had no right to inaintain or enforce the Union against any State—has been ended by the Civil War. But that did not decide the location of the sovereignty. The prevalent opinion is still that first formulated by Madison :—that the States were sovereign before 1789; that they then gave up a part of their sovereignty to the Federal Government ; that the Union and the constitution were the work of the States, not of the whole people ; and that reserved powers are reserved to the people of the States, not to the whole people. The use of this bald phrase "reserved to the people," not to the people of the several States, in the 10th amendment, secms to argue an underlying consciousness, even in 1789, that the whole people of the United States was already a political power quite

distinct from the States, or the people of the States; and the tendency of later opinion is in thisdirection. It must be admitted that the whole people has never acted in asingle capacity ; but the restriction to State lines seems to be a self-imposed limitation by the national people, which it might remove, as in 1789, if an emergency should make it necessary. The Civil War amend- ments are considered below (§ 305-309).

129. By whatever sovercignty the constitution was framed and Details imposed, it was meant only as a scheme in outline, to be filled up of the afterwards, and from time to time, by legislation. The idea is system. most plainly carried out in the Federal justiciary: the constitution only directs that there shall be a Supreme Court, and marks out the general jurisdiction of all the courts, leaving Congress, under the restriction of the president's veto power, to build up the system of courts which shall best carry out the design of the constitution.

But the same idea is visible in every department, and it has carried the constitution safely through a century which has radi- cally altered every other civilized government. It has combined elasticity with the limitations necessary to make democratic government successful over a vast territory, having infinitely diverse interests, and needing, more than almost anything else, positive opportunities for sober second thought by the people. A sudden revolution of popular thought or fecling is enongh to change the house of representatives from top to bottom ; it must continue for several years before it can make a radical change in the senate, and for ycars longer before it can carry this change through the judiciary, which holds for life ; and all these changes must take place before the full effects upon the laws or constitution

after the clause last The sove-

Submis- sion to Congress.

Federal. ists and Anti- federal- ists.

Ratifiea- tion.

Inaugu- ration,

Fall of the Con- federa- tion.

We Cowie? fe Pp

are aecomplished. But the minor ehanges which are essential to an accommodation with the growth and development of a great nation are reached in the meantime easily and naturally in the course of legislation, to which the skeleton outline of the con- stitution lends itself kindly. The members of the convention of 1787 showed their wisdom most plainly in not trying to do too much ; if they had done more they would have done far less.

130. The convention adjourned 17th September Si, having adopted the constitution. Its last step was a resolution that the constitution be sent to the Congress of the Confederation, with the recommendation that it be submitted to conventions elected by the people of each State for ratification or rejection; that, if nine States should ratify it, Congress should appoint days for the popular election of electors, for the choice of president and vice-president by the electors, and for the meeting of senators and representatives to be chosen under the new plan of government; and that then the new Congress and president should " without delay, proceed to execute this constitution." Congress, having received the report of the convention, resolved that it be sent to the several legisla- tures, to be submitted to conventions ; and this was all the approval the constitution ever received from Congress. Both Congress and the convention were careful not to open the dangerous question, How was a government which was not to be changed but by the legislatures of all the States to be entirely supplanted by a different system through the approval of conventions in three-fourths of them? They left such questions to be opened, if at all, in the less public forum of the legislatures.

131. Before the end of the year Delaware, Pennsy]- vania, and New Jersey had ratified ; and Georgia, Con- necticut, and Massachusetts followed during the first two months of 1788. Thus far the only strong opposition had been in Massachusetts, a "large State." In it the struggle began between Federalists and Antifederalists, between the friends and the opponents of the constitution, with its introduction of a strong Federal power; and it raged in the conventions, legislatures, newspapers, and pamphlets. The best

of the last was 7’he Federalist, written mainly by Hamilton, with the assistance of Madi- son and Jay, explaining the new constitution and defend- ing it. As it was written before the constitution went into force, it speaks much for the ability of its writers that it has passed into a standard text-book of American constitutional law.

132. The seventh and eighth States—Maryland and South Carolina—ratified in April and May 1788; and, while the conventions of Virginia and New York were still wrangling over the great question, the ninth State, New Hampshire, ratified, and the constitution passed out of theory into fact. This left the other States in an unpleasant position. The Antifederalists of the Virginia and New York conventions offered conditional ratifications of all sorts; but the Federalists stubbornly refused to con- sider them, and at last, by very slender majorities, these two States ratified. North Carolina refused to ratify the constitution, and Rhode Island refused even to consider it (§ 145). Congress named the first Wednesday of January 1789 as the day for the choice of electors, the first Wednesday in February for the choice of president and vice-president, and the first Wednesday in March for the inauguration of the new Government at New York city. The last date fell on the 4th of March, which has been the limit of each president’s term since that time.

133. When the votes of the electors were counted before Congress, it was found that Washington had been unan- imously elected president, and that John Adams, stand- ing next on the list, was vice-president. Long before the inauguration the Congress of the Confederation had expired of mere inanition ; its attendance simply ran down

ST APES

until (October 21, 1788) its record ceased, and the United States got on without any national Government for nearly six months. The struggle for nationality had been suc- cessful, and the old order faded out of existence.

134. The first census (1790) followed so closely upon the inauguration of the constitution that the country may fairly be said to have had a population of nearly four millions in 1789. Something over half a million of these

were slaves, of African birth or blood. Slavery of this Slavery sort had taken root in all the colonies, its original estab- in the

lishment being everywhere by custom, not by law. the custom had been sufficiently established statutes came in to regulate a relation already existing. Indented servants came only for a term of years, and then were free. Slaves were not voluntary immigrants: they had come as chattels, not as persons, and had no standing in law, and the law fastened their condition on their children. But it is not true, as the Dred Scott decision held long afterwards (§ 249), that the belief that slaves were chattels simply, things not persons, held good at the time of the adoption of the constitution. Times had changed some- what. The peculiar language of the constitution itself, describing slaves as “persons held to service or labour, under the laws of any State,” puts the general feeling exactly: they were persons from whom the laws of some of the States withheld personal rights for the time. In accordance with this feeling most of the Northern States

were on the high road towards abolition of slavery. Ver- Abolition mont had never allowed it. In Massachusetts it wasmthe

swept out by a summary court decision that it was irre- concilable with the new State constitution. Other States soon began systems of gradual abolition, which finally extinguished slavery north of Virginia, but so gradually that there were still 18 apprentices for life in New Jersey in 1860, the last remnants of the former slave system. In the new States north of the Ohio slavery was prohib- ited by the Ordinance of 1787 (§ 96), and the prohibition was maintained in spite of many attempts to get rid of it and introduce slavery.

135. The sentiment of thinking men in the South was exactly the same, or in some cases more bitter from their personal entanglement with the system. Jefferson’s lan- guage as to slavery is irreconcilable with the chattel notion ; no abolitionist agitator ever used warmer language than he as to the evils of slavery; and the expression, “our brethren,” used by him of the slaves, is conclusive. Washington, Mason, and other Southern men were as warm against slavery as Jefferson, and societies for the abolition of slavery were

very common in the South. No thinking man could face with equanimity the future pro- blem of holding a separate race of millions in slavery. Like most slave laws, the laws of the Southern States were harsh: rights were almost absolutely withheld from the slave, and punishments of the severest kind were legal ; but the execution of the system was milder than its legal possibilities might lead one to imagine. The country was as yet so completely agricultural, and agriculture felt so few of the effects of large production and foreign com- merce, that Southern slavery kept all the patriarchal features possible to such a system.

136. Indeed, the whole country was almost exclusively Agricul: agricultural, and, in spite of every effort to ENCOULALE vorce, manufactures by State bounties and colonial protection, anqmanv- they formed the meagrest element in the national produc: factures.

tion. Connecticut, which now teems with manufactures, was just beginning the production of tinware and clocks ; Rhode Island and Massachusetts were just beginning to work in cotton from models of jennies and Arkwright machinery surreptitiously obtained from England after several failures and in evasion of penal Acts of Parlia-

Feeling in the South.

7 United When ges

orth,

Te; com:

1787-1789.] CN re ED

ment ; and other States, beyond local manufactures of paper, glass, and iron, were almost entirely agricultural, or were engaged in industries directly dependent on agri- culture. Commerce was dependent on agriculture for exports; and manufactured imports were enough to drown out every other form of industry.

137. There were but four cities in the United States

having a population of more than 10,000,—Philadelphia

(42,000), New York (33,000), Boston (18,000), and Balti- more (13,000). The population of the city of New York and its dependencies is now more than half as large as that of the whole United States in 1789; the State of New York or of Pennsylvania has now more inhabitants than the United States in 1790; and the new States of Ohio and Illinois, which had hardly any white inhabitants in 1789, do not fall far behind. Imports have swollen from $23,000,000 to $650,000,000, exports from $20,000,000 to $700,000,000, since 1790. The revenues of the new Government in 1790 were $4,000,000; they have now grown to $300,000,000 or more. The expenditures of the Government, excluding interest on the public debt, were but $1,000,000 in 1790, where now they are $200,000,000 or upwards per annum. It is not easy for the modern American to realize the poverty and weakness of his country at the inauguration of the new system of government, however he may realize the simplicity of the daily life of its people. Even the few large cities were but larger col-

inodels ; history was annalistic, if anything; and the drama hardly existed. In two points the Americans were strong, and had done good work. Such men as Jonathan Edwards had excelled in various departments of theology, and American preaching had reached a high degree of quality and influence; and, in the line of politics, the American state-papers rank among the very best of their kind. Having a very clear perception of their political purposes, and having been restricted in study and reading to the great masters of pure and vigorous English, and particularly to the English translators of the Bible, the American leaders came to their work with an English style which could hardly have been improved. The writings of Franklin, Washington, the Adamses, Hamilton, J efferson, Madison, Jay, and others show the secret of their strength in every page. Much the same reasons, with the influ- ences of democracy, brought oratory, as represented by Patrick Henry, Fisher Ames, John Randolph, and others, to a point not very far below the mark afterwards reached by Daniel Webster. The effect of these facts on the sub- sequent development of the country is not often estimated at its full value. All through an immigration of every language

and dialect under heaven the English language has been protected in its supremacy by the necessity of going back to the “fathers of the republic” for the first, and often the complete, statement of principles in every great political struggle, social problem, or lawsuit.

140. The cession of the “north-west territory” by Limits of Virginia and New York had been followed up by similar settle- cessions by Massachusetts (1785), Connecticut (1786), and ™e2t

lections of the wooden houses, with few comforts, which composed the villages ; the only advantage of their in-

habitants over those of the villages was in the closer proximity to their neighbours; and but a little over 3 per cent. of the population had this advantage, against about 25 per cent. in 1880.

138. Outside the cities communication was slow. One stage a week was enough for the connexion between the great cities; and communication elsewhere depended on private conveyance. The great rivers by which the con- tinent is penetrated in every direction were with difficulty ascended by sailing vessels or boats ; and the real measure of communication was thus the daily speed of a man or a horse on roads bad beyond present conception. The western settlements were just beginning to make the question more serious. Enterprising land companies were the moving force which had impelled the passage of the Ordinance of 1787 ; and the first column of their settlers was pouring into Ohio and forming connexion with their predecessors in Kentucky and Tennessee. Marietta and Cincinnati (at first a Government fort, and named after the society of the Cincinnati) had been founded. But the intending settlers were obliged to make the journey down the Ohio river from Pittsburgh in bullet-proof flat-boats, for protection against the Indians, and the return trip depended on the use of oars. For more than twenty years these flat-boats were the chief means of river commerce in the west ; and, in the longer trips, as to New Orleans, the boats were generally broken up at the end and sold for lumber, the crew making the trip home on foot or on horseback. John Fitch and others were already experimenting on what was soon to be the steamboat (§ 167); but the statesman of 1789, looking at the task of keeping under one Govern- ment a country of such distances, with such difficulties of communication, may be

pardoned for having felt anxiety as to the future. To almost all thinking men of the time the constitution was an experiment, and the unity of the new nation a subject for very serious doubt.

139. The comparative isolation of the people every- where, the lack of books, the poverty of the schools and hewspapers, were all influences which worked strongly against any pronounced literary development, Poems, essays, and paintings were feeble imitations of European

South Carolina (1787). North Carolina did not cede Tennessee until late in 1789, nor Georgia her western claims until 1802. Settlement in all these regions was hardly advanced beyond what it had been at the outbreak of the revolution. The centres of western settlement, in Tennessee and Kentucky, had merely become more firmly established, and a new one, in Ohio, had just been begun. The whole western limits of settlement of the old thirteen States had moved much nearer their present boundaries – and the acquisition of the western title, with the liberal policy of organization and government which had been begun, was to have its first clear effects during the first decade of the new Government. Almost the only obstacle to its earlier success had been the doubts as to the attitude which the Spanish authorities, at New Orleans and Madrid,

would take towards the new settlements. They had already The Mis- asserted a claim that the Mississippi was an exclusively sissippi Spanish stream from its mouth up to the Yazoo, and that ™Y*-

no American boat should be allowed to sail on it. To the western settler the Alleghanies and bad roads were enough to cut him off from any other way to a market than down the Mississippi ; and it was not easy to restrain him from a forcible defiance of the Spanish claim. The Northern States were willing to allow the Spanish claim in return for a commercial treaty; the Southern States and the western settlers protested angrily; and once more the spectre of dissolution appeared, not to be laid again until the new Government had made a treaty with Spain in 1795, securing common navigation of the Mississippi.

141. All contemporary authorities agree that a marked Social change had come over the people since 1775, and few of condi-

them seem to think the change one for the better. Many attribute it to the looseness of manners and morals intro- duced by the French and British soldiers; others to the general effects of war ; a few, Tories all, to the demoraliz- ing effects of rebellion. The successful establishment of nationality would be enough to explain most of it ; and if we remember that the new nation had secured its title to a vast western territory, of unknown but rich capaci- ties, which it was now moving to reduce to possession by

MAITL = 9s

754 Uaigat ®

emigration, it would seem far more strange if the social conditions had not been somewhat disturbed.

VI. THE DEVELOPMENT OF DEMOCRACY: 1789-1801.

142. All the tendencies of political institutions in the United States had certainly been towards democracy ; but it cannot be‘ said that the leading men were hearty or unanimous in their agreement with this tendency. Not a few of them were pronounced republicans even before 1775, but the mass of them had no great objections to a monarchical form of government until the war-spirit had converted them. The Declaration of Independence had been directed rather against the king than against a king. Even after popular sovereignty had pronounced against a king, class spirit was for some time a fair substitute for aristocracy. The obstacles to communication, which com- pelled the mass of the people to live a very isolated exist- ence, gave abnormal prominence and influence to those who, by ability or wealth, could overcome these obstacles ; and common feeling made these a class, with many symptoms of strong class feelings. As often happens, democracy at least thought of a Cesar when it appre- hended class control. The discontented officers of the revolutionary armies offered to make Washington king, though he put the offer by without even considering it. The suggestion of a return to monarchy in some form, as a possible road out of the confusion of the Confederation, occurs in the correspondence of some of the leading men. And while the convention of 1787 was holding its secret sessions a rumour went out that it had decided to offer a crown to an

English prince. in the 143. The State constitutions were democratic, except States; for property or other restrictions on the right of suffrage,

or provisions carefully designed to keep the control of at

least one house of the State legislature ‘‘in the hands of inthe property.” The Federal constitution was so drawn that it constitu- would have lent itself kindly either to class control or to tion. democracy. The electoral system of choosing the president and vice-president was altogether anti-democratic, though democracy has conquered it: not an elector, since 1796, has disobeyed the purely moral claim of his party to con- trol his choice ($§ 119, 120). Since the senate was to be chosen by the State legislatures, ‘‘ property,” if it could retain its influence in those bodies, could control at least one house of Congress. The question whether the con- stitution was to have a democratic or an anti-democratic interpretation was to be settled in the next twelve years.

144. The States were a strong factor in the final settlement, from the fact that the constitution had left to them the control of the elective franchise : they were to make its conditions what each of them saw fit. Religious tests for the right of suffrage had been quite common in the colonies; property tests were almost uni- versal, The former disappeared shortly after the revolution ; the latter survived in some of the States far into the constitutional

Infiu- period. But the desire to attract immigration was always a strong ence of impelling force to induce States, especially frontier States, to make immigra- the acquisition of full citizenship and political rights as easy and

Demo- cracy in the United States ;

tion. rapid as possible. This force was not so strong at first as it was after the great stream of immigration began about 1848 (§ 286), but it was enough to tend constantly to the development of democracy ; and it could not but react on the national develop- ment. In later times, when State laws allow the immigrant to vote even before the period assigned by Federal laws allows him to become a naturalized citizen, there have been demands

for the modification of the ultra State democracy ; but no such danger was apprehended in the first decade. |

Organi: 145. The Antifederalists had been a political party, but

zation a party with but one principle. The absolute failure of

Oh that principle deprived the party of all cohesion ; and the

Govern. Federalists controlled the first two Congresses almost en-

ment, tirely. Their pronounced ability was shown in their organ-

izing measures, which stilt govern the American system very largely. The departments of state, of the treasury, of war,

STATES

of justice, and of the post-office were rapidly and success- fully organized ; Acts were passed for the regulation of sea- men, commerce, tonnage duties, lighthouses, intercourse with the Indians, Territories, and the militia ; a national capital was selected ; a national bank was chartered ; the national debt was funded, and the State debts were assumed as part of it. The first four years of the new system showed that the States had now to deal with a very different power from the impotent Congress of the Confederation. The new power was even able to exert a pressure upon the two States which had not yet ratified the constitution, though, in accordance with the universal American prejudice, the pressure was made as gentle as possible. As a first step, the higher duties imposed on imports from foreign countries were expressly directed to apply to imports from North Carolina and Rhode Island. North Carolina having called a second convention, her case was left to the course of nature ; and the second convention ratified the consti-

tution (November 21, 1789). The Rhode Island legis- | lature wrote to ask that their State might not be con- sidered altogether foreigners, made their duties agree with . those of the new Government, and reserved the proceeds | for “continental” purposes. Still no further steps were | taken. A bill was therefore introduced, directing the president to suspend commercial

intercourse with Rhode | Island, and to demand from her her share of the con- | tinental debt. This was passed by the senate, and waited ‘ but two steps further to become law. Unofficial news- f\

[HIstory.

paper proposals to divide up the little State between her two nearest neighbours were stopped by her ratification | (May 29, 1790). All the ‘“‘old thirteen” were thus Compl — united under the constitution ; and yet, so strong is the tion of American prejudice for the autonomy of the States that a ysien. | these last two were allowed to enter in the full conviction

that they did so in the exercise of sovereign freedom of choice. Their entrance, however, was no more involuntary

than that of others. If there had been real freedom of choice, nine States would never have ratified : the votes of Pennsylvania, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Virginia,

and New York were only secured by the pressure of powerful minorities in their own States, backed by the almost unanimous votes of the others.

146. Protection was begun in the first Tariff Act, whose Hamil- object, said its preamble, was the protection of domestic toa manufactures. The duties, however, ranged only from a 74 to 10 per cent., averaging about 84 per cent. The — system, too, had rather a political than an economic basis. Until 1789 the States had controlled the imposition of duties. The separate State feeling was a factor so strong that secession was a possibility which every statesman had to take into account. Hamilton’s object, in introducing the system, seems to have been to create a class of manu- facturers, running through all the States, but dependent for prosperity on the new Federal Government and its tariff. ‘This would be a force which would make strongly for national government, and against any attempt ab secession, or against the tendency to revert in practice to the old system of control by State legislatures, even though it based the national idea on a conscious tendency towards the development of classes. The same feeling seems to have been at the bottom of his establishment of a national bank, his

assumption of State debts, and most of the general scheme which his influence forced upon the Federal party. ,

147. In forming his cabinet, Washington had paid ae attention to the opposing elements which had united fem? the temporary purpose of ratifying the constitution. The national element was represented by Hamilton, secretary of the treasury, and Knox (p. 789), secretary of war; the par- ticularist element (using the term to indicate support of

Fu it was not familiar, nor of assured permanency.

01,

1789-1798.] VNITEYN

the States, not of a State) by Jefferson, secretary of state, and Edmund Randolph, attorney-general. It was not long before the drift of opinion in cabinet meetings showed an irreconcilable divergence, on almost every subject, between these two elements, and Hamilton and Jefferson became the representatives of the two opposite tendencies which have together made up the sum of public American history. At the end of 1792 matters were in train for the general recognition of the existence of two parties, whose struggles were to decide the course of the constitution's develop- ment. 'The occasion came in the opening of the following year, when the new nation was first brought into contact with the French Revolution.

148. The controlling tendency of Jeffcrson and his school was to the maintenance of individual rights at the highest possible point, as the Hamilton school was always ready to assert the national power to restrict individual rights for the general good. Other points of difference are rather symptomatic than essential. The Jefferson school supported the States, not out of love for the States, but out of a belief that the States were the best bulwarks for individual rights. When the French Revolution began its usual course in America by agitation for the " rights of man," it met a sympathetic audience in the Jefferson party and a cold and unsympathetic hearing from the Hamilton school of Federalists. The latter were far more interested in securing the full recognition of the power and rights of the nation than in securing the individual against imaginary dangers, as they thought them.

For ten years, therefore, the surface marks of distinction between the two parties were to be connected with the course of events in Europe ; but the essence of distinction was not in the surface marks.

149. The new Government was not yet four years old ; The only national Governments of which Americans had had previous experience were the British Government and the Confedera- tion: in the former they had had no share, and the latter had had no power. The only places in which they had had long-continued, full, and familiar experience of self- government were their State Governments: these were the only governmental forms which were then distinctly associated in their minds with the general notion of republican government. The governing principle of the Hamilton school, that the construction or interpretation of the terms of the constitution was to be such as to broaden the powers of the Federal Government, necessarily involved a corresponding trenching on the powers of the States ($106). It was natural, then, that the Jefferson school should look on every feature of the Hamilton programme as “anti-republican,” meaning, probably, at first no more than opposed to the State system, as hitherto known, though, with the growth of political bitterness, the term Soon came to imply something of monarchical and, more particularly, of English tendencies. The disposition of the Jefferson school to claim for themselves a certain peculiar title to the position of “ republicans” soon developed into the appearance of the first Republican party, about 1793.

150. Many of the Federalists were shrewd and active business men, who naturally took prompt advantage of the opportunities which the new system offered. The Republicans therefore believed and asserted that the whole Hamilton programme was dictated by selfish or class interest ; and they added this to the accusation of mon- archical tendencies. These charges, with the fundamental differences of mental constitution, exasperated by the passion which differences as to thie French Revolution Seemed to carry with them everywhere, made the political history of this decade a very unpleasant record. The Provision for establishing the national capital on the

fares 799

Potomac (1790) was declared to have been carried by a The corrupt bargain ; and accusations of corruption were re- national newed at every

opportunity. In 1793 a French agent, piel: Genet, appeared to claim the assistance of the United neal States for the French republic. Washington decided to ; issuc a proclamation of neutrality, the first act of the kind in American history. It was the first indication, also, of the policy which has made the course of every president, with the exception of Polk (§ 223), a determined leaning to peace, even when the other branches of the Government have been intent on war. The proclamation of 1793 brought about the first distinctly party feeling ; and The it was intensified by Washington's charge that popular Whisky opposition in western Pennsylvania (1794) to the new eal excise law had been fomented by the extreme French °° party. Their name, Deniocrat, was applied by the Federalists to the whole Republican party as a term of contempt, but it was not accepted by the party for some twenty years; then the compound title '" Democratic- Republican" became, as it still is, the official title of the party. There was no party opposition, however, to the Admis- re-election of Washington in 1792, or to the admission of of P Vermont (1791), Kentucky (1792), and Tennessee (1796) Kentnely as new States. sales. 151. The British Government had accredited no imin- nessee. ister to the United States, and it refused to make any commercial treaty or to give up the forts in the western territory of the United States, through which its agents still exercised a commanding influence over the Indians. In the course of its war with France, the neutral American vessels, without the protection of a national navy, fared badly. A treaty negotiated by Chief-Justice Jay (1794) Jay's settled these difficulties for the following ten years. But, treaty. as it engaged the United States against any intervention in the war on behalf of France, and as it granted some unfamiliar privileges to Great Britain, particularly that of extradition, the Republicans made it very unpopular, and the first personal attacks on Washington's popularity grew out of it. In spite of occasional Republican successes, the Federalists retained a general control of national affairs ; they elected John Adams president in 1796, though Election Jefferson was chosen vice-president with him; and the of 1796. national policy of the Federalists kept the country out of – entangling alliances with any of the European belligerents. To the Republicans, and to the French republic, this last point of policy was only a practical intervention against France and against the rights of man. 152. At the end of Washington's administration the French Directory, following up its successes in Germany and Italy and its exactions from conquered powers, broke off relations with the United

States, demanding the abro- gation of Jay’s treaty and a more pronounced sympathy with France. Adams sent three envoys to endeavour to The re-establish the former relations; they were met by official “X. Y. Z.” or unofficial demands for “ money, a great deal of money,” Mission. as a prerequisite to peace. They refused ; their letters home were published ; and the Federalists at last had the oppor- tunity of riding the whirlwind of an intense popular desire for war with France. Intercourse with France was sus- pended by Congress (1798); the treaties with France were declared at an end; American frigates were authorized to capture French vessels guilty of depredations on Ame- rican commerce, and the president was authorized to issue letters of marque and reprisal ; and an American army was formed, Washington being called from his retirement ‘ at Mount Vernon to command it. The war never went Quasi-war beyond a few sea-fights, in which the little American navy ae did itself credit, and Napoleon, seizing power the next “°° year, renewed the peace which should never have been broken. But the quasi-war had internal consequences to

the young republic which surpassed in interest all its foreign difficulties : it brought on the crisis which settled

the development of the United States towards democracy.

153. The reaction in Great Britain against the indefinite

“rights of man” had led parliament to pass an alien

law, a sedition law suspending the writ of habeas corpus,

and an Act giving wide and scarcely defined powers to magistrates for the dispersion of meetings to petition for

Error of redress of grievances. The Federalists were in control the Fede- of a Congress of limited powers ; but they were strongly ralists. tempted by sympathies and antipathies of every sort to form their programme on the model furnished from England. The measures which they actually passed were

based only on that construction of. the constitution which

is at the bottom of all American politics ; they only tended

to force the constitution into an anti-democratic direction.

But it was the fixed belief of their opponents that they

meant to go farther,—to forget the limitations imposed by

the ten-years'-old constitution, and to secure their own control by some wholesale measure of political persecution.

The 154. Three alien laws were passed. 'The first raised the Alienand number of years necessary for naturalization from five to Feuilen fourteen. The third permitted the arrest of subjects of "ws: any foreign power with which the United States should be at war. The second, which is usually known as the Alien Law, was limited to a term of two years; it permitted the president to arrest or order out of the country any alien whom he should consider dangerous to the country. As many of the Republican editors and local leaders were aliens, this law really put the whole Republican organization in the power of the president elected by their op- ponents. The Sedition Law made it a crime, punishable by fine and imprisonment, to publish or print any false, scandalous, and malicious writings against the Government of the United States, either house of Congress, or the president, with intent to defame them, or to bring them into contempt or disrepute, or to excite against them the hatred of the good people of the United States, or to stir up sedition or opposition to any lawful Act of Congress or of the president, or to aid the designs of any foreign power against the United States. In its first form the bill was even more loose and sweeping than this and

alarmed the opposition thoroughly.

155. Almost all the ability of the country was in the Federalist ranks; the Republicans had but two first-rate men—Jefferson and Madison. In the sudden issue thus forced between individual rights and national power, Jefferson and Madison could find but one bulwark for the individual—the power of the States; and their use of it gave their party a permanent list to

State sovereignty from which it did not recover for years. They objected to the Alien Law on the grounds that aliens were under the jurisdiction of the State, not of the Federal Government ; that the jurisdiction over them had not been transferred to the Federal Government by the constitution, and that the assumption of it by Congress was a violation of the constitution's reservation of powers to the States ; and, further, because the constitution reserved to every ‘‘ per- son,” not to every citizen, the right to a jury trial (§ 127). They objected to the Sedition Law on the grounds that the constitution had specified exactly the four crimes for whose punishinent Congress was to provide ; that criminal libel was not one of them ; and that amendment I. forbade

The Republi- can oppo- sition.

Congress to pass any law restricting freedom of speech.

or of the press. The Federalists asserted a common-law power in Federal judges to punish for libel, and pointed to a provision in the Sedition Law permitting the truth to be given in evidence, as an improvement on the common law, instead of a restriction on individual liberty.

156. The Republican objections might have been made

STATES

in court, on the first trial. But the Republican leaders

had strong doubts of the impartiality of the Federal judges,

who were Federalists. They resolved to intrench the party

in the State legislatures. The Virginia legislature in Virging | 1798 passed a series of resolutions prepared by Madison, and Ken. | and the Kentucky legislature in the same year passed ae series prepared by Jefferson. Neglected or rejected by —. the other States, they were passed again by their legisla-

tures in 1799, and were for a long time the documentary

basis of the Democratic party (§ 320). The leading idea expressed in both was that the constitution was a ‘“ com- pact” between tlie States, and that the powers (the States) which had made the compact had reserved the power to restrain the creature of the compact, the Federal Government, whenever it undertook to assume powers not granted to it. Madison’s idea seems to have been that

the restraint was to be imposed by a second convention of

the States. Jefferson’s idea is more doubtful ; if it meant

that the restraint should be imposed by any State which should feel aggrieved, his scheme was merely Calhoun's

idea of nullification (§ 206); but there are some indica- tions that he agreed with Madison.

157. The first Congress of Adams's term of office ended in 1799. Its successor, elected in the heat of the war excitement, kept the Federalist policy up to its first pitch.

Out of Congress the execution of the objectionable laws Effects of had taken the shape of political persecution. Men were the law. arrested, tried, and punished for writings which the people

had been accustomed to consider quite within legitimate political methods. Some of the charges were petty, and some ridiculous. The Republican leaders made every trial

as public as possible, and gained votes constantly, so that

the Federalists began to be shy of the very powers which

they had sought. Every new election was a storm-signal

for the Federal party; and the danger was increased by

the appearance of schism in their own ranks.

158. Hamilton was now a private citizen of New York ; Fedemalis but he had the confidence of his party more largely than schism. its nominal head, the president, and he maintained close and confidential relations with the cabinet which Adams had taken unchanged from Washington. The Hamilton Hf faction saw no way of preserving and consolidating the ' newly acquired powers of the Federal Government but by keeping up and increasing the war feeling against France ; Adams had the instinctive leaning of an American pre- sident towards peace. Amid cries of wrath and despair from his party he accepted the first overtures of the new Napoleonic Government, sent envoys to negotiate a peace, and ordered them to depart

for France when they delayed too long. Then, discovering flat treachery in his cabinet, he dismissed it and blurted out a public expression of his feeling that Hamilton and his adherents were “a British faction.” Hamilton retorted with a circular letter to his party friends, denouncing the president ; the Republicans intercepted it and gave it a wider circulation than its author had intended ; and the Hamilton faction triedSo to arrange the electoral vote that Pinckney should be ot chosen president in 1800 and Adams should be shelved of 1°: into the vice-presidency. Even so, the Federal party barely missed success. As things turned out, the result depended on the electoral vote of New York ; and Aaron Burr (p. 788), who had introduced the drill and machinery of a modern American political party there, had made the State Republican and secured a majority for the Republican candidates. ‘There was an effort by the Federalists 10 disappoint the Republicans by making Burr president ; but Jefferson obtained that office, Burr becoming VI¢& president for four years (§ 120).

159. The “revolution of 1800” development of the United States.

[HISTORY,

| |

decided the future The new dominant

‘Revolu-

in of

100. 4

- left the grass growing in the streets. – between the cities was still as bad as could be.

ere. iD

party entered upon its career weighted with the theory of State sovereignty ; and a civil war was necessary before this dogma, put to use again in the service of slavery, could be banished from the American system. But the

democratic development never was checked. From that time the interpretation of the Federal constitution has gene- rally favoured individual rights at the expense of govern- mental power. As the Republicans obtained control of the States they altered the State constitutions so as to cut out all the arrangements that favoured property or class interests, and reduced political power to the dead level of manhood suffrage. In most of the States outside of New England this process was completed before 1815 : but New England tenacity was proof against the advanc- ing revolution until about 1820. For twenty years after its downfall of 1800 the Federal party maintained its hopeless struggle, and then it faded away into nothing, leaving as its permanent memorial the excellent organiza- tion of the Federal Government, which its successful rival hardly changed. Its two successors—the Whig and the second Republican party—have been broad-constructionist parties, like the Federal party, but they have admitted democracy as well; the Whig party adopted popular methods at least, and the Republican party grew into a theory of individual rights even higher than Jefferson's, —the emancipation of enslaved labour. –

160. The disputed election of 1800 was decided in the new capital city of Washington, to which the Government had just been removed. Its streets and parks existed only on paper. The Capitol had been begun; the White House was unfinished, and its audience room was used by Mrs Adams as a drying room for clothes ; and the Congressmen could hardly find lodgings. The inconveniences were only an exaggeration of the condition of other American cities. Their sanitary conditions were so bad that yellow fever from time to time reduced them almost to depopulation. Again and again, during this decade, the fever visited Philadelphia and New York, drove out the people, and The communication The traveller was subject to every danger or annoyance that bad roads, bad carriages, bad horses, bad inns, and bad police protection could combine to inflict upon him. But the rising spirit of migration seemed to urge the people to conquer these difficulties. The first attempts were made to introduce turnpike roads and canals ; and proposals were advanced for greater improvements. The war with natural obstacles had fairly begun, though it had little prospect of success until steam was brought into use as the ally of man.

161. About this time the term “the West” appears. It meant then the western part of New York State, the new territory north of the Ohio, and Kentucky and Tennessee. In settling land boundaries New York had transferred to Massachusetts, whose claims crossed her territory, the right to a large tract of land in central New York. The sale of this had carried population consider- ably west of the Hudson. After several American expedi- tions against the Ohio Indians had been defeated, another under General Anthony Wayne (1794) had compelled them to give up all the territory now in the State of Ohio. Set- tlement received a new impetus with increased security, and the new state of affairs added to the population of Ken- tucky, whose growth had been seriously checked by period- ical attacks from the Indians across the Ohio. Between 1790 and 1800 the population of Ohio had risen from almost nothing to 45,000, that of Tennessee from 36,000 to 106,000, and that of Kentucky from 74,000 to 221,000, —the last-named State now exceeding five of the “old thirteen ” in population. The difficulties of the western

emigrant, however, were still enormous. He obtained land of his own, fertile land and plenty of it, but little else. The produce of the soil had to be consumed at home, or near it; ready money was scarce and distant products scarcer ; and comforts, except the very rudest substitutes of home manufacture, were unobtainable. The new life bore most hardly upon women ; and, if the record of woman’s share in the work of American colonization could be fully made up, the price paid for the final success would seem very great.

162. The number of post-offices rose during these ten Post- years from 75 to 903, the miles of post-routes from 1900 ofiice.

to 21,000, and the revenue from $38,000 to $231,000. These figures seem small in comparison with the 55,000 post-offices, 375,000 miles of post-routes, and $45,000,000 of revenue of 1887, but the comparison with the figures of 1790 shows a development in which the new constitution, with its increased security, must have been a factor.

163. The power of Congress to regulate patents was Patents.

already bearing fruit. Until 1789 this power was in the hands of the States, and the privileges of the inventor were restricted to the territory of the patenting State. Now he had a vast and growing territory within which all the profits of the invention were his own, and that development began by which human invention has been urged to its highest point, as a factor in the struggle against natural forces. Twenty patents were issucd in 1793, and 22,000 ninety years afterwards ; but one of the inventions of 1793, Whitney's cotton gin, has affected the history of the United States more than most of its wars or treaties.

164. When the constitution was adopted it was not Cotton.

known that the cultivation of cotton could be made. pro- fitable in the Southern States. The "roller gin" could clean only a half dozen pounds a day by slave labour. In 1784 eight bags of cotton, landed in Liverpool from an American ship, were seized on the ground that so much cotton could not be the produce of the United States. Eli Whitney, a Connecticut school-teacher residing in Georgia, invented the saw-gin, by which the cotton was dragged through parallel wires with openings too narrow to allow the seeds to pass ; and one slave could now clean a thousand pounds a day. The exports of cotton leaped from 189,000 pounds in 1791 to 21,000,000 pounds in 1801, and doubled in three years more. The influence of this one Mvention, combined with the wonderful series of British inventions which had paved the way for it, can hardly be estimated in its commercial aspects. Its political influences were even wider, but more unhappy. The intro-

| duction of the commercial element into the slave system

of the South robbed it at once of the patriarchal features which had made it tolerable; but, at the same time, it developed in slave-holders a new disposition to uphold and defend a system of slave labour as a " positive good." The abolition societies of the South began to dwindle as soon as the results of Whitney's invention began to be manifest.

165. The development of a class whose profits were Slavery merely the extorted natural wages of the black labourer and demo- was certain ; and its

political power was as certain, though SY:

it never showed itself clearly until after 1830. And this class was to have a peculiarly distorting effect on the political history of the United States. Aristocratic in every sense but one, it was ultra-Democratic (in a purely party sense) in its devotion to State sovereignty, for the legal basis of the slave system was in the laws of the several States. In time, the aristocratic element got con- trol of the party which had originally looked to State rights as a bulwark of individual rights; and the party was finally committed to the employment of its original

Demo- cracy and nation- ality.

Louis- iana,

The steam- boat.

Centre of popu- lation,

The Oregon country,

Election of 1804,

doctrine for an entirely different purpose,—the suppression of the black labourer’s wages.

VII. DEMOCRACY AND NATIONALITY : 1801-29.

166. When Jefferson took office in 1801 he succeeded to a task larger than he imagined. His party, ignoring the natural forces which tied the States together even against their wills, insisted that the legal basis of the bond was in the power of any State to withdraw at will. This was no nationality ; and foreign nations naturally refused to take the American national coin at any higher valuation than that at which it was current inits own country. The urgent necessity was for a reconciliation between democracy and nationality ; and this was the work of this period. An underlying sense of all this has led Democratic leaders to call the war of 1812-15 the “second war

for independ- ence”; but the result was as much independence of past ideas as of Great Britain.

167. The first force in the new direction was the acquisition of Louisiana (§ 32) in 1803. Napoleon had acquired it from Spain, and, fearing an attack upon it by Great Britain, offered it to the United States for $15,000,000. Jefferson and his party were eager to accept the offer; but the constitution gave the Federal Government no power to buy and hold territory, and the party was based on a strict construction of the constitu- tion. Possession of power forced the strict-construction party to broaden its ideas, and Louisiana was bought, though Jefferson quieted his conscience by talking for a time of a futile proposal to amend the constitution so as to grant the necessary power. The acquisition of the western Mississippi basin more than doubled the area of the United States, and gave them control of all the great river-systems of central North America. The difficulties of using these rivers were removed almost immediately by Fulton’s utilization of steam in navigation (1807). Within four years steamboats were at work on Western waters ; and thereafter the increase of steam navigation and that of population stimulated one another. Population crossed the Mississippi ; constantly increasing eddies filled up the vacant places to the east of the great river; and all sections of the country advanced as they had never advanced before. The “centre of population” has been carefully ascertained by the census authorities for each decade, and it represents the westward movement of population very closely. During this period it advanced from about the middle of the State of Maryland to its extreme western limit; that is, the centre of population was in 1830 nearly at the place which had been the western limit of population in 1770.

168. Jefferson also laid the basis for a further acquisi- tion in the future by sending an expedition under Lewis and Clarke to explore the territory north of the then Spanish territory of California and west of the Rocky Mountains —the “Oregon country” as it was afterwards called (§§ 221, 224). The explorations of this party (1804), with Captain Gray’s discovery of the Columbia river (1792), made the best part of the claims of the United States to the country forty years later.

169. Jefferson was re-elected in 1804, serving until 1809; his party now controlled almost all the States outside of New England, and could elect almost any one whom it chose to the presidency. Imitating Washington in refusing a third term of office, Jefferson established the precedent, which has not since been violated, restricting a president to two terms, though the constitution contains no such restriction. The great success of his presidency had been the acquisition of Louisiana, which was a viola- tion of his party principles; but all his minor successes were, like this, recognitions of the national sovereignty

which he disliked so much. After a short and brilliant naval war the Barbary pirates were reduced to submission (1805). And the authority of the nation was asserted for the first time in internal affairs. The long-continued control of New Orleans by Spain, and the persistent intrigues of the Spanish authorities, looking towards a separation of the whole western country from the United States, had been ended by the annexation of Louisiana, and they will probably remain for ever hidden in the secret history of the early West. They had left behind a dan- gerous ignorance of Federal power and control, of which Burr took advantage (1807). Organizing an expedition in Kentucky and Tennessee, probably for the conquest of the Spanish colony of Mexico, he was arrested on the lower Mississippi and brought back to Virginia. He was ae- quitted ; but the incident opened up a vaster view of the national authority than democracy had yet been able to take. It had been said, forty years before, that Great Britain had long arms, but that 3000 miles was too far to extend them; it was something to know now that the arms of the Federal Government were long enough to reach from Washington city to the Mississippi.

170. All the success of Jefferson was confined to his first four years ; all his heavy failures were in his second term, in which he and his party as persistently refused to recognize or assert the inherent power of the nation in international affairs. The Jay treaty expired in 1804 by limitation, and American commerce was thereafter left to the course of events, without any restriction of treaty obligations, since Jefferson refused to accept the only treaty which the British Government was willing to make. All the

difficulties which followed may be summed up ina few words: the British Government was then the repre- sentative of the ancient system of restriction of commerce, and had a powerful navy to enforce its ideas; the Ame- rican Government was endeavouring to force into inter- national recognition the present system of neutral rights and unrestricted commerce, but its suspicious democracy refused to give it a navy sufficient to command respect for its ideas. Indeed, the American Government did not want the navy; it apparently expected to gain its objects with- out the exhibition of anything but moral force.

[HISTORY,

171. Great Britain was now at war, from time to time, Neutral In time of commerce,

with almost every other nation of Europe. peace European nations followed generally the old restric- tive principle of allowing another nation, like the United States, no commercial access to their colonies; but, when they were at war with Great Britain, whose navy controlled the ocean, they were very willing to allow the neutral American merchantmen to carry away their surplus colonial produce. Great Britain had insisted for fifty years that the neutral nation, in such cases, was really intervening in the war as an ally of her enemy ; but she had so far modified her claim as to admit that “ tranship- ment,” or breaking bulk, in the United States was enough to qualify the commerce for recognition, no matter whither it was directed after transhipment. The neutral nation thus gained a double freight, and grew rich in the trafiie; the belligerent nations no longer had commerce afloat for British vessels to capture ; and the “frauds of the neutral flags” became a standing subject of complaint among British merchants and naval officers. About 1805 British prize courts began to disregard transhipment and to condemn American vessels which had made the voyage from a European colony to the mother country by way of the United States. This was really a restriction of American commerce to purely American productions, or to commerce with Great Britain direct, with the payment of duties in British ports.

172. The question of expatriation, too, furnished a good

Difficul- ties with — Great

Britain,

UNITED

xpatria- many burning grievances. Great Britain maintained the old German rule of perpetual allegiance, though she had modified it by allowing the right of emigration. The United States, founded by immigration, was anxious to establish what Great Britain was not disposed to grant,

> FAW hs 759

Law (1809) for the embargo ; it prohibited intercourse Non-in- with Great Britain and France and their dependencies, tercourse leaving other foreign commerce open; but Madison, 4:

Jefferson’s successor in 1808-09, assumed in the presi- Election dency a burden which was not enviable. New England of 1808.

1801-1812.]

on.

apress- jent.

/

| | | | |

c.ncil,

(lers in

the right of the subject to divest himself of allegiance by naturalization under a foreign jurisdiction. Four facts thus tended to break off friendly relations—(1) Great Britain’s claim to allegiance over American naturalized subjects ; (2) her claim to the belligerent right of search of neutral vessels ; (3) her claim of right to impress for her vessels of war her subjects who

were seamen wherever found ; and (4) the difficulty of distinguishing native-born Americans from British subjects, even if the right to impress naturalized American subjects were granted. British naval officers even undertook to throw the onus proband, upon Aniericans—to consider all who spoke the English language as British subjects, unless they could produce proof that they were native-born Americans, The American sailor who lost his papers was thus open to impressment. The American Government in 1810 pub- lished the cases of such impressments since 1803, as numbering over 4000, about one-third of the cases result- Ing in the discharge of the impressed man ; but no one could say how many cases had never been brought to the atten- tion of a Government which never did anything more than remonstrate about them.

173. In May 1806 the British Government, by orders in council, declared a blockade of the whole continent of Europe from Brest to the Elbe, about 800 miles. In November, after the battle of Jena, N: apoleon answered by the “ Berlin decree,” in which he assumed to blockade the British Isles, thus beginning his “continental system.”

174. The Democratic party of the United States was almost exclusively agricultural, and had little knowledge of or sympathy with commercial interests ; it had little confidence in the American navy; it was pledged to the reduction of national expenses and the debt, and did not wish to take on its shoulders the responsibility for a navy ; and, as the section of country most affected by the orders in council, New England, was Federalist, and made up the active and irreconcilable opposition, a tinge of political feeling could not but colour the decisions of the dominant party. Various ridiculous proposals were considered as Substitutes for a necessarily naval war ; and perhaps the most ridiculous was adopted. Since the use of non-inter- course agreements as revolutionary weapons against Great Britain (§ 50), an overweening coufidence in such measures

ad sprung up, and one of them was now resorted to—the

” embargo (1807), forbidding foreign commerce altogether.

twas expected to starve Great Britain into a change of policy ; and its effects may be seen by comparing the $20,000,000 exports of 1790, $49,000,000

of 1807, and $9,000,000 of 1808. It does not seem to have struck those who passed the measure that the agricultural dis- tricts also might find the change unpleasant ; but that was the result, and their complaints reinforced those of New England, and closed Jefferson's second term in a cloud of recognized misfortune. The pressure had been slightly relieved by the substitution of the Non-intercourse

was in a ferment, and was even suspected of designs to resist the restrictive system by force (§ 180) ; and the administration did not feel secure enough in its position to face the future with confidence.

175. The Non-intercourse Law was to be abandoned as to either belligerent which should abandon its attacks on neutral commerce, and maintained against the other. In 1810 Napoleon officially informed the American Govern- ment that he had abandoned his system. He continued to enforce it in fact; but his official fiction served its purpose of limiting the non-intercourse for the future to Great Britain, and thus straining relations between that country and the United States still further. The elections of 1811-12 resulted everywhere in the defeat of "sub- mission men" and in the choice of new members who were determined to resort to war against Great Britain ; France had not been able to offer such concrete cases of injury as her enemy, and there was no general disposition to include her in the war. Clay, Calhoun, Crawford, and other new men seized the lead in the two houses of Congress, and forced Madison to agree to a declaration of war as a con- dition of his re-election in 1812. declaration of June 18, 1812. alists always called it "Mr Madison's war," dent was about the most unwilling participant in it.

176. The national democracy meant to attack Great Britain in Canada, partly to gratify its Western constitu- ency, who had been harassed by Indian attacks, asserted to have been instigated from Canada. Premonitions of

Success were drawn from the battle of Tippecanoe, in which Tippe- Harrison had defeated the north-western league of Indians canoe.

formed by Tecumseh (1811). Between the solidly settled Atlantic States and the Canadian frontier was a wide

stretch of unsettled or thinly settled country, which was Theatre Ohio had been ad- of the mitted as a State in 1802, and Louisiana was admitted ¥#

itself a formidable obstacle to war.

in 1812; but their admission had been due to the desire to grant them self-government rather than to their full development in population and resources. Cincinnati was a little settlement of 2500 inhabitants; the fringe of settled country ran not very far north of it 3 and all beyond was a wilderness of which little was known to the authorities. The case was much the same with western New York; the army which was to cross the Niagara river must journey almost all the way from Albany through a country far more thinly peopled than the far western Territories are in 1887. The difficulties of trans- port gave opportunities for peculation ; and a barrel of flour sometimes reached the frontier army with its cost multiplied seven or eight fold. When a navy was to be built on the lakes, the ropes, anchors, guns, and all material had to be carried overland for a distance about equal to the length of England ; and even then sailors had to be brought to man the navy, and the vessels were built of green timber: one vessel was launched nine weeks after ler timber was cut, It would have been far less costly, as events proved, to have entered at once upon a naval war ; but the crusade against Canada had been proclaimed all through Kentucky and the West, and their people were determined to wipe out their old scores before the conclusion of the war.

177. The war opened with disaster—Hull’s surrender Disasters of Detroit ; and disaster attended it for two years. Polit- by land.

ical appointments to positions in the regular army were numerous, and such officers were worse than useless, The men were not fitly trained or supplied. The war depart-

War was begun by the Election The New England Feder- of 1812. but the presi- War with

Chippewa and + Lundy’s Lane.

Washing- ton burnt.

State of the Navy.

Naval successes.

760 Unik ment showed no great knowledge, and poverty put its little knowledge out of service. Several futile attempts at in- vasion were followed by defeat or abortion, until the pol- itical officers were weeded out at the end of the year 1818, and Brown, Scott, Ripley, and others who had fought their way up were put in command. Then for the first time the men were drilled and brought into effective con- dition ; and two successful battles in 1814—Chippewa and Lundy's Lane—threw some glory on the end of the war. So weak were the preparations even for defence that a British expedition in 1814 met no effective resistance when it landed and burned Washington, It was defeated, however, in an attempt to take Baltimore.

178. The American navy at the outbreak of the war numbered half a dozen frigates and about the same number of smaller vessels. This was but a puny adver- sary for the thousand sail of the British navy, which had captured or shut up in port all the other navies of Europe. But the small number of American vessels, with the super- abundance of trained officers, gave them one great advan- tage: the training and discipline of the men, and the equipment of the vessels, had been brought to the very highest point. Captains who could command a vessel but for a short time, yielding her then to another officer wlio was to take his sea service in rotation, were all ambitious to make their mark during their term. 'The art of handling and fighting the old broadside sailing frigate " had been carried in the little American navy to a point which unvarying success and a tendency to fleet-combats had now made far less common among British captains!

179. The first year of the war saw five ship-duels, in all of which the American frigates either captured or sunk their adversaries. Four others followed in 1813, in two of which the British vessels came off victorious. The attention of the British Government had by that time been fully diverted to the North-American coast ; its blockading fleets made it very difficult for the larger American vessels to get to sea ; and there were but seven other ship-combats, in only one of which the American vessel was taken. Most of the work was done by three frigates, the 'Constitu- tion," the

‘‘ Essex,” and the “ United States.” There was fighting also on the Great Lakes between improvised fleets

1 The naval officers who came most prominently to notice in the war were Hull and Lawrence (see p. 789) and the following: -STEPHEN Decatur was born at Sinnepuxent, Md., Jan. 5, 1779, and died at Washington (shot in a duel), March 22, 1820. He distinguished himself in the first Algerine war, 1803-4, by his capture of the British frigate “ Macedonian,” while in command of the “ United States,” and in the brief war which brought about the final submission of the Algerines in 1815.—THomas MAcDoNOUGH was born in New- castle county, Del., Dec. 28, 1788, and died at sea, Nov. 16, 1825. He was commodore of the American fleet on Lake Champlain, in its victory over the British fleet.—OLiver HazarD PERRY was born at South Kingston, R.I., Aug. 23, 1785, and died on the island of Trinidad, Aug. 23, 1819. His great achievement was his victory over the British fleet, 1813, laconically announced in the despatcli: “We have met the enemy, and they are ours.” —Davip PORTER was born at Boston, Mass., Feb. 1, 1780. After service in a merchant- man, he entered the navy in 1798, served in the Algerine war and elsewhere, and in 1812 was in command of the “Essex.” His most brilliant service was his cruise in the Pacific in 1813-14, in which he swept that ocean of British whalers, and was finally captured in the neutral harbour of Valparaiso by two British vessels, after the most desperate naval combat of the war. He resigned in 1826, after a difficnlty with the navy department, and took command of the Mexican navy. He died near Constantinople, March 28, 1843, while serving as minister to Turkey. See D. D. Porter’s Memoir of David Porter (1876), and Irving’s Spanish Papers, vol. ii.i—Joun Ropaurs was born in Harford county, Md., in 1771. He entered the navy in 1798 as a lientenant, rose to a captaincy, commanded the Mediter- ranean fleet in 1805, and the frigate “ President” during the encounter with the “Little Belt” in 1811. He was in command of the fleet at New York in 1812, and hurried it to sea, lest his Government should forbid it to leave port. He commanded the fleet in another cruise the same year, but only individual captures were made. He died at Philadelphia, Aug. 1, 1838.

STATES

of small vessels. Perry captured the British fleet on Lake Victories | Erie (1813) and Macdonough the British fleet on Lake om the Champlain (1814). The former victory led to the end of ’% the war in the West. Harrison, the American commander

in that section, shipped his army across the lake in Perry’s fleet, and routed the British and Canadian army at the Thames.

180. The home dislike to the war had increased steadily Reeling with the evidence of incompetent management by the in New administration. The Federalists, who had always desired England a navy, pointed to the naval successes as the best proof of the folly with which the war lad been undertaken and managed. New England Federalists complained that the Federal Government utterly neglected the defence of their ia coast, and that Southern influence was far too strong in |

[HisTory,

national affairs. They showed at every opportunity a dis- position to adopt the furthest stretch of State sovereignty, as stated in the Kentucky resolutions; and every such development urged the national democracy unconsciously further on the road to nationality. When the New England States sent delegates to meet at Hartford and consider Hartfoni their grievances and the best remedies—a step perfectly conven. proper on the Democratic theory of a “voluntary Union ” 40 —treason was suspected, and a readiness to suppress it by force was plainly shown. The recommendations of the convention came to nothing ; but the attitude of the domi-

nant party towards it is one of the symptoms of the manner

in which the trials of actual war were steadily reconciling democracy and nationality. The object which Hamilton

had sought by high tariffs and the development of national classes had been attained by more natural and healthy means.

181. In April 1814 the first abdication of Napoleon took place, and Great Britain was able to give more attention to her American antagonist. The main attack was to be made on Louisiana, the weakest and most distant portion of the Union. A fleet and army were sent thither, and, after much delay, landed below the city.

The nearest settled country was Tennessee ; and between

it and New Orleans was a wilderness four hundred miles New long. Andrew Jackson had become the most prominent Orleans citizen of Tennessee, and he was ordered to the defence of New Orleans. His popularity and energy brought riflemen down the river and put them into position. ‘The British assault was marred by hopeless blunders, and the gallantry

of the men only made their slaughter and repulse more com- plete (January 8, 1815). Peace had been made at Ghent Peace fifteen days before the battle was fought, but the news of the battle and the peace reached Washington almost to gether, the former going far to make the latter tolerable. ;

182. Though the land war had gone almost uniformly Its tem: against the United States, and the American naval suc- cesses had been just enough to irritate the English mind, and though the British negotiators had nothing to dread and everything to demand, the treaty was quite satisfactory to the United States. It is true that it said not a word about the questions of impressment, search, and neutral rights, the grounds of the war; Great Britain did not abandon her position on any of them. But everybody knew that circumstances had changed. The new naval power whose frigates alone in the past twenty years had shown their ability to fight English frigates on equal terms was not likely to be troubled in future with the question of impressment ; and in fact, while not renouncing the right, the British Government no longer attempted 10 enforce it. The navy, it must be confessed, was the force which had at last given the United States a recognized and cordial acceptance in the family of nations; 1t had solved the problem of the reconciliation of democracy and nationality. From this time the dominant party shows al

Nt 7 ep

increasing disposition to exalt and maintain the national element of the American system.

183. The remainder of this period is one of the barren- est in American history. The opposition of the Federal party to the war completed the measure of its unpopular- ity, and it had only a perfunctory existence for a few years longer. There was but one real party, and the political struggles within it tended to take the shape of

1812-1825. |

> fF Ath § 761

1818-19, but the iron duties were less satisfactory. In English manufacture the substitution of coke for charcoal in iron production led to continual decrease in price. As the price went down the specific duties were continually in- creasing the absolute amount of protection. Thus spared the necessity for improvements in production, the American manufacturers felt English competition more keenly as the years went by, and called for more protection.

187. Monroe succeeded Madison as president in 1817, “Era of and, re-elected with hardly any opposition in 1820, he good served until 1825. So complete was the supremacy of the feeling.

purely personal politics. Scandal, intrigue, and personal criticism became the most marked characteristics of Ame- rican politics until the dominant party broke at the end

of the period, and real party conflict was renewed. But the seeds of the final disruption are visible from the peace of 1814. The old-fashioned Republicans looked with intense suspicion on the new form of Republicanism generated by the war, a type which instinctively bent its energies toward the further development of national power. Clay was the natural leader of the new demo- cracy ; but John Quincy Adams and others of Federalist antecedents or leanings took to the new doctrines kindly ; and even Calhoun, Orawford (p. 788), and others of the Southern interest were

at first strongly inclined to support them. One of the first effects was the revival of protec- tion and of a national bank.

184. The charter of the national bank (§ 146) had expired in 1811, and the dominant party had refused to recharter it. The attempt to carry on the war by loans

Republican party that this is often called “the era of good feeling.” It came to an end when a successor to Monroe was to be elected ; the two sections of the dominant party then had their first opportunity for open struggle. During Monroe’s two terms of office the nationalizing party devel- oped the policy on which it proposed to manage national affairs. This was largely the product of the continually swelling western movement of population. The influence of the steamboat was felt more and more every year, and the want of a similar improvement in land transport was correspondingly evident. The attention drawn to western New York by the war had filled that part of the State with a new population. The Southern Indians had been com- pletely overthrown by Jackson during the war of 1812, and forced to cede their lands; all the territory west of

Georgia was thus opened up to settlement. The admission Admis.

of the new States of Indiana (1816), Mississippi (1817), sion of Illinois (1818), Alabama (1819), Maine (1820), and Mis- Indiana, souri (1821)—all but Maine the product and evidence of sippi, Western growth—were the immediate results of the de- Illinois, velopment consequent upon the war. All the territory Alabama, east of the Mississippi, except the northern part of the ee

north-west territory, was now formed into self-governing Missouri.

resulted in almost a bankruptcy and in a complete inability to act efficiently. As soon as peace gave time for con- sideration, a second bank was chartered for twenty years, with a capital of $35,000,000, four-fifths of, which might be in Government stock. It was to have the custody of the Government revenues, but the secretary of the treasury could divert the revenues to other custodians, giving his

reasons for such action to Congress. This clause, meant to cover cases in which the Bank of the United States had no branch at a place where money was needed, was after- wards put to use for a very different purpose (§ 204).

185. Protection was advocated again on national grounds, but not quite on those which had moved Hamil- ton (§ 146). The additional receipts were now to be expended for fortifications and other national defences, and for national roads and canals, the latter to be con- sidered solely as military measures, with an incidental benefit to the people. Business distress among the people gave additional force to the proposal. The war and block- ade had been an active form of protection, under which American manufactures had sprung up in great abundance. As soon as peace was made English manufacturers poured their products into the United States, and drove their American rivals out of business or reduced them to desperate straits. Their cries to Congress for relief had a double effect. They gave the spur to the nationalizing advocates of protection, and, as most of the manufacturers were in New England or New York, they developed in the citadel of Federalism a class which looked for help to a Republican Congress, and was therefore bound to oppose the Federal party. This was the main force which brought New England into the Republican fold before 1825. An in-

» Crease in the number of spindles from 80,000 in 1811 to

500,000 in 1815, and in cotton consumption from 500 bales in 1800 to 90,000 in 1815, the rise of manufactur- ing towns, and the rapid development of the mechanical tendencies of a people who had been hitherto almost exclusively agricultural, were influences which were to be reckoned with in the politics of a democratic country.

186. The tariff of 1816 imposed a duty of about 25 per cent. on imports of cotton and woollen goods, and specific duties on iron imports. The ad valorem duties carried most of the manufacturers through the financial crisis of

States; the State system had already crossed the Missis- sippi; and all that was needed for further development was the locomotive engine. The four millions of 1790 had grown into thirteen millions in 1830; and there was a steady increase of one-third in each decade.

188. The urgent demand of Western settlers for some road to a market led to a variety of schemes to facilitate intercourse between the East and the West, —the most successful being that completed in New York in 1825, the Erie Canal.

to the Atlantic coast. When the traveller has passed up the Hudson through that range he sees before him a vast champaign country extending westward to the Great Lakes, and perfectly adapted by nature for a canal. Such a canal, to turn Western traffic into the lake rivers and through the lakes, the canal, and the Hudson to New York city, was begun by the State through the influence of De Witt Clinton, was derisively called “Clinton’s big ditch” until its completion, and laid the foundations for the great com- mercial prosperity of New York State and city. Long before it was finished the evident certainty of its success had seduced other States into far less successful enterprises of the kind and had established as a nationalizing policy the combination of high tariffs and expenditures for internal

improvements which was long known as the “ American The – system.” The tariffs of duties on imports were to be carried ‘ Ameri- limit mn

as high as revenue results would approve; within this the duties were to be defined for purposes of protection ; and the superabundant revenues were to be expendcd for the improvement of roads, rivers, and harbours, and for every enterprise which would tend to aid the people in their efforts to subdue the continent. Protection was now to be for national benefit, not for the benefit of classes. Western farmers were to have manufacturing towns at their doors, as markets for the surplus which had hitherto XXIII. — 96

The Hudson river forms the great Erie natural breach in the barrier range which runs parallel Canal.

762 vXaA TED

been rotting on their farms; competition among manu- facturers was to keep down prices; migration to all the new advantages of the West was to be made easy at national expeuse ; and Henry Clay’s eloquence was to commend the whole policy to the people. The old Demo- cracy, particularly in the South, insisted that the whole scheme really had its basis in benefits

to classes, that its communistic features were not such as the constitution meant to cover by its grant of power to Congress to levy taxation for the general welfare, and that any such legisla- tion would be unconstitutional. The dissatisfaction in the

Tariffs of South rose higher when the tariffs were increased in 1824

1824 and

828.

The Monroe doctrine.

The colonial clause.

The north- west bound- ary.

and 1828. The proportion of customs revenue to dutiable imports rose to 37 per cent. in 1825 and to 44 per cent. in 1829; and the ratio to aggregate imports to 33 per cent. in 1825 and 37 per cent. in 1829. As yet, however, the Southern dissatisfaction showed itself only in resolu- tions of State legislatures.

189. In the sudden development of the new nation circumstances had conspired to give social forces an abnormally materialistic cast, and this had strongly in- fluenced the expression of the national life. Its literature and its art had amounted to little, for the American people were still engaged in the fiercest of warfare against natural difficulties, which absorbed all their energies.

190. In international relations the action of the Gov- ernment was strong, quiet, and self-respecting. Its first weighty action took place in 1823. It had become pretty evident that the Holy Alliance, in addition to its interven- tions in Europe to suppress popular risings, meant to aid Spain in bringing her revolted South-American colonies to obedience. Great Britain had been drifting steadily away from the Alliance, aud Canning, the new secretary, deter- mined to call in the weight of the trans-Atlantic power as a check upon it. A hint to the American minister was followed by a few pregnant

passages in President Monroe’s annual message in December. Stating the friendly rela- tions of the United States with the new South-American republics, he went on to say, “ We could not view an interposition for oppressing them (the South-American states), or controlling in any other manner their destiny by any European power, in any other light than as a manifestation of an unfriendly disposition towards the United States.” Ii both the United States and Great Britain were to take this ground the fate of a fleet sent by the Alliance across the Atlantic was not in much doubt, and the project was at once given up. The “ Monroe doctrine,” however, has remained the rule of foreign intercourse for all American parties. Added to the already established refusal of the United States to become en- tangled in any European wars or alliances, it has separated the two continents, to their common advantage.

rg. It was supposed at the time that Spain might transfer her colonial claims to some stronger power ; and Mr Monroe therefore went on to say that ‘the American continents should no longer be subjects for any new Euro- pean colonial settlement.” The meaning of this was well understood at the time; and, when its condition failed, the statement lost its force. It has been supposed that it bound the United States to resist any further establish- ment of European colonies in the Americas. Such a réle of universal arbiter has always been repudiated by the United States, —though its sympathies, more or less active, must always go with any American republic which falls into collision with any such colonizing scheme.

192. By a treaty with Russia (1825) that power gave up all claims on the Pacific coast south of the present limits of Alaska. The northern boundary of the United States had been settled by the treaty of 1783; and, after the acquisition of Louisiana, a convention with Great

Ta rae

Britain settled the boundary on the line of 49° N. lat. as far west as the Rocky Mountains (1818). West of these mountains the so-called Oregon country (§ 168), on whose limits the two powers could not agree, was to be held in common possession for ten years. This common possession was prolonged by another convention (1827) indefinitely, with the privilege to

either power to terminate it on giving twelve months’ notice. This arrangement lasted until 1846 (§ 224).

193. Monroe’s terms of office came to an end in 1825, He had originally been an extreme Democrat, who could hardly speak of Washington with patience ; he had slowly changed into a very moderate Republican, whose tendencies were eagerly claimed by the few remaining Federalists as identical with their own. The nationalizing faction of the dominant party had scored almost all the successes of the administration, and the divergence between it and the opposing faction was steadily becoming more apparent. | All the candidates for the presidency in 1824—Andrew Blection — Jackson, a private citizen of Tennessee ; William H. Craw. of 182. | ford, Monroe’s secretary of the treasury ; Jolin Quincy Adams, lis secretary of state; and Henry Clay, the speaker of the house of representatives—claimed to be Republicans alike ; but the personal nature of the struggle was shown by the tendency of their supporters to call themselves ‘ Adams men” or “ Jackson men,” rather than by any real party title. Calhoun was supported by all parties for the vice-presidency, and was elected without difficulty. The choice of a president was more doubtful.

194. None of the four candidates had anything like a Party party organization behind him. Adams and Clay repre- diver sented the nationalizing element, as Crawford and Jackson 8™ did not; but there the likeness among them stopped. The strongest forces behind Adams were the new manu- facturing and commercial interests of the East ; belund Clay were the desires of the West for internal improve ments at public expense as a set-off to the benefits which the seaboard States had already received from the Govern- ment; and the two elements were soon to be united into the National Republican or Whig party. Crawford was the representative of the old Democratic party, with all its Southern influences and leanings. Jackson was the personification of the new democracy,—not very cultured, perhaps, but honest, and hating every shade of class con- trol instinctively. As he became better known the whole force of the new drift of things turned in his direction; ‘hurrah for Jackson” undoubtedly often represented tend- encies which the speaker would have found it hard to express otherwise. Crawford was taken out of the race, just after this election, by physical failure, and Adams by the revival of ancient quarrels with the Federalists of New

England ; and the future was to be with Clay or with Jackson. But in 1824 the question of success among the four was not an easy one to decide. The electors gave no one a majority ; and the house of representatives gave the presidency to Adams (§§ 119, 120).

195. Adams's election in 1824 was due to the fact that i ' Clay's friends in the house—unable to vote for him, as he an was the lowest in the electoral vote, and only three names tration were open to choice in the house—very naturally gave their votes to Adams. As Adams appointed Clay to the leading position in his cabinet, the defeated party at once raised the cry of " bargain and intrigue," one of the most effective in a democracy, and it was kept up throughout Adams's four years of office. Jackson had received the largest number of electoral votes, though not a majority ; and the hazy notion that he had been injured because of his devotion to the people increased his popularity. Though demagogues made use of it for selfish purposes, this feeling was an honest one, and Adams had nothing to oppose to it.

[HIsToRY,

,

ual Zave it up until slavery was ended.

CL ep

He tried vigorously to uphold the " American system," and succeeded in passing the tariff of 1828; he tried to maintain the influence of the United States on both the American continents ; but he remained as unpopular as his rival grew popular. In 1828 Adams was easily displaced

1824-1829.]

» by Jackson. Calhoun was re-elected vice-president.

196. Jackson's inauguration in 1829 closes this period, as it ends the time during which a disruption of the Union

by the peaceable withdrawal of any State was even pos-

sible. The party which had made State sovereignty its bulwark in 1798 was now in control of the Government again; but Jackson's proclamation in his first term, in which he warned South Carolina that "disunion by armed force is treason," aud that blood must flow if the laws were resisted, speaks a very different tone from the speculations of Jefferson on possible future divisions of the United States. Aud even the sudden attempt of South Carolina to exercise independent action (§ 206), which would have been looked upon as almost a right forty years before, shows that some interest dependent upon State sovereignty had taken alarm at the evident drift of events, and was anxious to lodge a claim to the right before it should slip from its fingers for ever. Nullification was but the first skirmish between the two hostile forces of slavery and democracy.

197. When the vast territory of Louisiana was acquired in 1803 the new owner found slavery already established there by custom recognized by French and Spanish law. Congress tacitly ratified existing law by taking no action ; slavery continued legal, and spread further through the territory ; and the State of Louisiana entered as a slave State in 1812. The next State to be carved out of the territory was Missouri, admitted in 1821.

_ the following arrangement, known as the Missouri com- _ Promise of 1820 :—Missouri was to enter as a slave State ;

slavery was for ever prohibited throughout the rest of the Louisiana purchase north of lat. 36° 30', the main southern boundary of Missouri; and, though nothing was said of the territory south of the compromise line, it was under- stood that any State formed out of it was to be a slave State, if it so wished (§ 249). Arkansas entered under this provision in 1836.

198. The question of slavery was thus set at rest for the present, though a few agitators were roused to more zealous Opposition to the essence of slavery itself. In the next decade these agitators succeeded only in the conversion of a few recruits, but these recruits were the ones who took up the work at the opening of the next period and never It is plain now, how- ever, that North and South had already drifted so far apart as to form two sections, and that, as things stood, their drift for the future could only be

further apart, in spite of the feeble tie furnished by the Missouri compromise. It became evident, during the next forty years, that the wants and desires of these two sections were so divergent that it was impossible for one Government to inake satis-

Missouri's application hung'

pra Tt fs 763

factory laws for both. The moving cause was not removed in 1820; one of its effects was got out of the way for the time, but others were soon to take its place.

199. The vast flood of human beings which had been The pouring westward for years had now pretty well occupied settled the territory east of the Mississippi, while, on the west side 2″ of that stream, it still showed a disposition to hold to the river valleys. The settled area had increased from 240,000 square miles in 1790 to 633,000 square miles in 1830, with an average of 20-3 persons to the square mile. There was still a great deal of Indian territory in the Southern States of Georgia, Alabama, and Mississippi, and in Florida, for the southern Indians were among the finest of their race; they had become semi-civilized, and were formidable antagonists to the encroaching white race. The States interested had begun preparations for their forcible removal, in public defiance of the attempts of the Federal Government to protect the Indians (1827); but the re moval was not conipleted until 1835. In the N orth, Wis- consin and Michigan, with the northern halves of Illinois and Indiana, were still very thinly settled, but everything indicated early increase of population. The first lake The steamboat, the " Walk-in-the-Water," had appeared at De- steam- troit in 1818, and the opening of the Erie Canal added to oat: the number of such vessels. Lake Erie had seven in 1896 : and in 1830, while the only important lake town, Detroit, was hardly yet more than a frontier fort, a daily line of steamers was running to it from Buffalo, carrying the in- creasing stream of emigrants to the Western territory.

200. The land system of the United States had much 'the to do with the early development of the West. From the land first settlement, the universally recognized rule had been *Ystem. that of absolute individual

property in land, with itg corollary of. unrestricted competitive or “rack” rents : and this rule was accepted fully in the national land system, whose basis was reported by Jefferson, as chairman of a committee of the Confederation Congress (1785). The public lands were to be divided into hundreds of ten miles square, each containing one hundred mile-square plots. The hundred was called a “ township,” and was afterward reduced to six miles square, of thirty-six mile-square plots of 640 acres each. From time to time principal meridians aud east and west base lines have been run, and townships have been determined by their relations to these lines, The sections (plots) have been subdivided, but the transfer describes each parcel from the survey map, as in the case of “the south-west quarter of section 20, township 80, north, range | east of the third principal meridian.” The price fixed in 1790 as a minimum was $2 per acre; it has tended to decrease, and no effort has ever been made to gain a revenue from it. When the nation acquired its Western territory it secured its title to the soil, and always made it a fundamental condition of the admission of a new State that it should not tax United States lands. To com- pensate the new States for the freedom of unsold public lands from taxation, one township in each thirty-six was reserved to them for educational purposes ; and the excel- lent public school systems of the Western States have been founded on this provision. The cost of obtaining a quarter section (160 acres), under the still later homestead system of granting lands to actual settlers, has come to be only about $26; the interest on this, at 6 per cent., represents an annual rent of one cent per acre,—making this, says F. A. Walker, as nearly as possible the “no-rent land” of the econoinists.

201. The bulk of the early westward migration was of Immigra- home production ; the great immigration from Europe did tion. not begin until about 1847 (§ 236). The West as well as the East thus had its institutions fixed before being called upon to absorb an enormous foreign element.

New political methods,

The

new organi- zation of parties.

Bank of the United States.

The Whig party.

764 UNITED

VIII. INDUSTRIAL DEVELOPMENT AND

DIVERGENCE : 1829-50.

SECTIONAL

202. The eight years after 1829 have been called “ the reign of Andrew Jackson”; his popularity, his long struggle for the presidency, and his feeling of his official ownership of the subordinate offices gave to his administration at least an appearance of Cesarism. But it was a strictly constitu- tional Ceesarism ; the restraints of written law were never violated, though the methods adopted within the law were new to national politics. Since about 1800 State politics in New York and Pennsylvania had been noted for the systematic use of the offices and for the merciless manner in which the office-holder was compelled to work for the party which kept him in place. The presence of New York and Pennsylvania politicians in Jackson’s cabinet taught him to use the same system. Removals, except for cause, had been almost unknown before; but under Jackson men were removed almost exclusively for the purpose of in- stalling some more serviceable party tool; and a clean sweep was made in the civil service. Other parties adopted the system, and it has remained the rule ata change of admin- istration until comparatively recent years (§ 323).

203. The ‘system brought with it a semi-military re- organization of parties. Hitherto nominations for the more important offices had been made mainly by legislative caucuses; candidates for president and vice-president were nominated by caucuses of Congressmen, and candidates for the higher State offices by caucuses of the State legis- latures. Late in the preceding period “conventions ” of delegates from the members of the party in the State occur in New York and Pennsylvania; and in 1831-32 this became the rule for presidential nominations. It rapidly developed into systematic State, county, and city “conventions ” ; and the result was the appearance of that complete political machinery, the American political party, with its local organizations, and its delegates to county, State, and national conventions.

The Democratic machi- nery was the first to appear, in Jackson's second term (1833-37). Its workers were paid in offices, or hopes of office, so that it was said to be built on the " cohesive power of public plunder"; but its success was immediate and brilliant. The opposing party, the Whig party, had no chance of victory in 1836; and its complete overthrow drove its leaders into the organization of a similar machin- ery of their own, which scored its first success in 1840. Since that time these strange bodies, unknown to the law, have governed the country by turns ; and their enormous growth has steadily made the organization of a third piece of such machinery more difficult or hopeless.

204. The Bank of the United States had hardly been heard of in politics until the new Democratic organization came into hostile contact with it. A semi-official demand upon it for a political appointment was met by a refusal ; and the party managers called Jackson's attention to an institution which he could not but dislike the more he considered it. His first message spoke of it in unfriendly terms, and every succeeding message brought a more open attack. The old party of Adams and Clay had by this time taken the name of Whigs, probably from the notion that they were struggling against 'the reign of Andrew Jackson," and they adopted the cause of the bank with eagerness. The bank charter did not expire until 1836, but in 1832 Clay brought up a bill for a new charter. It was passed and vetoed (§ 113); and the Whigs went into the presidential election of that year on the veto. They were beaten; Jackson was re-elected ; and the bank party could never again get a majority in the house of repre- sentatives for the charter. The insistence of the president on the poit that the charter was a "monopoly" bore

| obtain a majority in the senate.

S fA dT Be

weight with the people.

[HIsToRy,

But the president could not He determined to take a step which would give him an initiative, and which hig opponents could not induce both houses to

unite in over-

riding or punishing. Taking advantage of the provision Remoya) that the secretary of the treasury might order the public ofthe | funds to be deposited elsewhere than in the bank or itg “posits |

branches (§ 184), he directed the secretary to deposit all the public funds elsewhere. Thus deprived of its great source of dividends, the bank fell into difficulties, became a State bank after 1836, and then went into bankruptcy.

205. All the political conflicts of Jackson’s terms of office were close and bitter. Loose in his ideas before 1829, Jackson shows a steady tendency to adopt the strictest construction of the powers of the Federal Govern- ment, except in such official perquisites as the offices. He

grew into strong opposition to all traces of the “ American Oppo system,” and vetoed bills for internal improvements unspar- ton to ingly ; and his feeling of dislike to all forms of protection a is as evident, though he took more care not to make it too aot | There are many reasons for believing that his drift ten”

public. was the work of a strong school of leaders—Van Buren, Benton (p. 788), Livingston, Taney (p. 790), Woodbury (p. 790), Cass, Marcy (p. 789), and others—who developed the policy of the party, and controlled it until the great changes of parties about 1850 took their power from them. At all events, some persistent influence made the Demo- cratic party of 1830-50 the most consistent and successful party which had thus far appeared in the United States.

206. Calhoun and Jackson were of the same stock—Calhom | Scottish-Irish, —much alike in appearance and characteris-ad | tics, the former representing the trained and educated logic Jackson

of the race, the latter its instincts and passions. Jackson was led to break off his friendly relations with Calhoun in 1830, and he had been led to do so more easily because of the appearance of the doctrine of nullification, which was generally attributed, correctly enough, to the authorship of Calhoun. Asserting, as the Republican party of 1798 had done, the

sovereign powers of each State, Calhoun held that, as a means of avoiding secession and violent struggle upon every occasion of the passage of an Act of Congress which should seem unconstitutional to any State,

the State might properly suspend or “nullify” the opera- Null tion of the law within its jurisdiction, in order to protect eaten,

its citizens against oppression. Webster, of Massachusetts, and Hayne, of South Carolina, debated the question m the senate in 1830, and the supporters of each claimed a virtual victory for their leader. The passage of the Tariff Act of 1832, which organized and systematized the pro- tective system, forced the Calhoun party into action. A State convention in South Carolina declared the Tariff Act null and not law or binding on the people of the State, and made ready to enforce the declaration.

207. But the time was past when the power of a single State could withdraw it from the Union. The president issued a proclamation, warning the people of South Carolina against any attempt to carry out the ordinance of nullift cation ; he ordered a naval force to take possession of Charleston harbour to collect the duties under the Act; he called upon Congress for additional executive powers, and Congress passed what nullifiers called the “ bloody bill,” putting the land and naval forces at the disposal of the president for the collection of duties against ‘unlaw- ful combinations ;” and he is said to have announced, privately and profanely, his intention of making Calhoun the first victim of any open conflict. Affairs looked 80 threatening that an unofficial meeting of “leading nulli- fiers” agreed to suspend the operation of the ordinance until Congress should adjourn ; whence it derived the right to suspend has never been stated.

—=— =

Tariff of

| | |

833,

ilways

1840,

1829-1840.] eh 1 ep

208. The president had already asked Congress to reduce the duties ; and many Democratic members of Con- gress, who had yielded to the popular clamour for Pro- tection, were very glad to use “ the crisis” as an excuse for now voting against it. A compromise Tariff Act, scaling down all duties over 20 per cent. by one-tenth of the surplus each year, so as to bring duties to a uniform rate of 20 per cent. in 1843, was introduced by Clay and be- came law. Calhoun and his followers claimed this as all that the nullification ordinance had aimed at; and the ordinance was formally repealed. But nullification had received its death-blow ; even those Southern leaders who maintained the right of secession refused to recognize the

right of a State to remain in the Union while nullifying

its laws; and, when protection was reintroduced by the tariff of 1842, nullification was hardly thought of.

209. All the internal conditions of the United States were completely altered by the introduction of railways. For twenty years past the Americans had been pushing in every direction which offered a hope of the means of recon- ciling vast territory with enormous population. Stephen- son’s invention of the locomotive came just in time, and Jackson’s two terms of office marked the outburst of modern American life. English engines were brought over in 1829; and served as models for a year or two; and then the lighter forms of locomotives, better suited to American conditions, were introduced. The miles of railroad were 23 in 1830, 1098 in 1835, nearly 2000 in 1840, and there- after they about doubled every five years until 1860.

210. A railway map of 1840 shows a fragmentary system, designed mainly to fill the gaps left by the means of communication in use in 1830. One or two short lines

run back into the country from Savannah and Charleston ;

another runs north along the coast from Wilmington to Baltimore ; several lines connect New York with Washing- ton and other points ; and short lines elsewhere mark the Openings which needed to be filled at once—a number in New England and the middle States, three in Ohio and Michigan, and three in Louisiana. Year after year new inventions came in to increase and aid this development.

- The anthracite coal of the middle States had been known

since 1790 (§ 19), but no means had been devised to put the refractory agent to work. It was now successfully applied to railroads (1836), and to the manufacture of iron (1837). Hitherto wood had been the best fuel for iron- making ; now the States which relied on wood were driven out of competition, and production was restricted to the States in which nature had placed coal alongside of iron. Steam navigation across the Atlantic was established in 1838. The telegraph came next, Morse's line being erected in 1844. The spread of the railway system brought with it, as a natural development, the rise of the American system of express companies, whose first phases of indi- vidual enterprise appeared in 1839. No similar period in American history is so extraordinary for material devel- Opment as the decade 1830-40. At its beginning the country was an overgrown type of colonial life ; at its end American life had been shifted to entirely new lines, which it has since followed. Modern American history had burst in with the explosiveness of an Arctic summer.

211. If the steamboat had aided Western development, the railway made it a freshet. Cities and States grew as if the oxygen of their surroundings had been suddenly increased. The steamboat influenced the railway, and the Tailway gave the steamboat new powers. Vacant places In the States east of the Mississippi were filling up; the long lines of emigrant waggons gave way to the new and better methods of transport; and new grades of land were made accessible. Chicago was but a frontier fort in 1832 ; within a half-dozen years it was a flourishing

town, with eight steamers connecting it with Buffalo, and dawning ideas of its future development of railway con- nexions. The maps change from

decade to decade, as map-

makers hasten to insert new cities which have sprung up.

Two new States, Arkansas and Michigan, were admitted Admis- (1836 and 1837).. The population of Ohio leaps from sion of 900,000 to 1,500,000, that of Michigan from 30,000 to “hee 212,000, and that of the country from 13,000,000 to Michigan. 17,000,000, between 1830 and 1840.

212. With the change of material surroundings and pos- Social sibilities came a steady amelioration of social conditions condi- and a development of social ideals. Such features of the %™* past as imprisonment for debt and the cruel indifference of old methods of dealing with crime began to disappear ; the time was past when a State could use an abandoned copper-mine as its State prison. The domestic use of gas and anthracite coal, the introduction of expensive aque- ducts for pure water, and the changing life of the people forced changes in the interior and exterior of American dwellings. Wood was still the common building material; imitations of Greek architecture still retained their vogue ; but the interiors were models of comfort in comparison with the houses even of 1810. In the “new” regions this was not yet the case, and here social restraints were still so few that society seemed to be reduced almost to its

primitive elements. Western steamers reeked with gamb-

ling, swindling, duelling, and every variety of vice. Public law was almost suspended in some regions ; and organized associations of counterfeiters and horse-thieves terrorized whole sections of country. But this state of affairs was altogether temporary, as well as limited in its area ; the older and more densely settled States had been well prepared for the change and had never lost command of the social forces, and the process of settling down went on, even in the newer States, with far more rapidity than could reason-ably have been expected. Those who took part in the movements of population in 1830-40 had been trained under the rigid forms of the previous American life; and these soon re-asserted themselves. The rebound was over before 1847, and the Western States were then as well pre- pared to receive and digest the great immigration which followed as the older States would have been in 1830,

213. A distinct American literature dates from this Litera- period. Most of the publications in the United States ture. were still cheap reprints of foreign works ; but native pro- ductions no longer followed foreign models with servility. Between 1830 and 1840 Whittier, Longfellow, Holmes,

Poe, Hawthorne, Emerson, Bancroft, and Prescott joined

the advance-guard of American writers—Bryant, Dana, Halleck, Drake, Irving, and Cooper; and even those writers who had already made their place in literature showed the influence of new conditions by their growing tendency to look less to foreign models and methods than before 1830. Populareducation was improved. The new States had from the first endeavoured to secure the best possible system of common schools. The attempt came naturally from the political instincts of the class from which the migration came; but the system which resulted

was to be of incalculable service during the years to come.

Their absolute democracy and their universal use of the Common English language have made the common schools most school successful machines for converting the raw material of system. immigration into American citizens. This supreme benefit

is the basis of the system and the reason for its existence

and development, but its incidental benefit of educating

the people has been beyond calculation. It was an odd News- symptom of the general change that American newspapers papers. took a new form during these ten years. The old “ blanket- sheet” newspaper, cumbrous to handle and slow in all its

ways, met its first rival in the type of newspaper which

appeared first in New York city, in the Sun, the Herald, and the Tribune (1833, 1835, and 1841). Swift and energetic in gathering news, and fearless,

sometimes reck-

STATES

216. The Democratic theory denied the power of Con- The gress to make anything but gold or silver legal tender, “specie There have been “ paper-money heresies” in the party ; “war”

[HIsToRY.

less, in stating it, they brought into American life, with very much that is evil, a great preponderance of good.

but there were none such among the new school of Demo- cratic leaders which came in in 1829; they were ‘‘ hard-

Land 214. The chaos into which a part of Amierican society | money men.” In 1836 Jackson’s secretary of the treasury sales. had been thrown had a marked effect on the financial | ordered land agents to take nothing in payment for lands institutions of the country, which went to pieces before it | except gold or silver. In the following spring the full fora time. It had not been meant to make the public | effects of the order became evident; they fell on the lands of the United States a source of revenue so much | administration of Van Buren, Jackson’s successor. Van as a source of development. ‘The sales had touched their | Buren had been Jackson’s secretary of state, the repre- high-water mark during the speculative year 1819, when | sentative man of the new Democratic school, and, in the receipts from them had amounted to $3,274,000 ; in other | opinion of the opposition, the evil genius of the Jackson years they seldom went above $2,000,000. When the rail- | administration ; and it seemed to the Whigs poetic justice road set the stream of migration moving faster than ever, | that he should bear the weight of his predecessor’s errors. and cities began to grow like mushrooms, it was natural | The “specie circular” turned the tide of paper back to the Epeal: that speculation in land should feel the effects. Sales | Hast, and, when it was presented for payment most of the

rose to $3,200,000 in 1831, to $4,000,000 in 1833, to $5,000,000 in 1834, to $15,000,000 in 1835, and to $25,000,000 in 1836. In 1835 the president

announced to Congress that the public debt was extinguished, and that some way of dealing with the surplus should be found. Calhoun's proposal, that after the year 1836 all revenue above $5,000,000 should be divided among the States as a loan, was adopted, though only one such loan was made. The States had already taken a hand in the general speculation by beginning works of public improvement. Foreign, particularly English, capital was abundant ; and States which had been accustomed to think a dozen times over a tax of a hundred thousand dollars now began to negotiate loans of millions of dollars and to appropriate the proceeds to the digging of canals and the construction of railroads. Their enterprises were badly conceived and badly managed, and only added to the confusion when the crash came. If the Federal Government and the States felt that they were rich, the imaginations of individuals ran riot. Every one wanted to buy; prices rose, and every one was growing rich on paper. The assessed value of real estate in New York city in 1832 was $104,000,000; in 1836 it had grown to $253,000,000. In Mobile the assessed value rose from $1,000,000 to $27,000,000. Fictitious values were the rule everywhere.

215. When Jackson (1833) ordered the Government revenues to be deposited elsewhere than in the Bank of the United States (§ 204), there was no Government agent to receive them. 'The secretary of the treasury selected banks at various points in which the revenue should be deposited by the collecting officers ; but these banks were organized under charters from their States, as were all banks except that of the United States. The theory of the dominant party denied the constitutional power of Congress to charter a bank, and the States had not yet learned how to deal with such institutions. Their grants of bank charters had been based on ignorance, intrigue, favouritism, or corruption, and the banks were utterly

Corpora- unregulated. The democratic feeling was that the privilege

tions.

of forming banking corporations should be open to all citizens, and it soon became so. Moreover it was not until after the crash that New York began the system of com- pelling such deposits as would really secure circulation, which was long afterward further developed into the pre- sent national bank system. In most of the States banks could be freely organized with or

without tangible capital, and their notes could be sent to the West for the purchase of Government lands, which needed to be held but a month or two to gain a handsome profit. “ Wild-cat banks” sprang up all over the country ; and the “pet banks,” as those chosen for the deposit of Government revenues were called by their rivals, went into speculation as eagerly as the banks which hardly pretended to have capital.

banks suspended specie payment with hardly a struggle, There was no longer a thought of buying; every one wanted to sell ; and prices ran down with a rapidity even more startling than that with which they had risen. Failures, to an extent and on a scale unprecedented in the United States, made up the “panic of 1837.” Many of the States had left their bonds in the hands of their agents, and, on the failure of the latter, found that the bonds had been hypothecated or disposed of, so that the States got no return from them except a debt which was to them enormous. Saddled suddenly with such a burden, and unable even to pay interest, many of the States “repudiated” their obligations; and repudiation was made successful by the fact that a State cannot be sued except by its own consent (§ 65). Even the Federal Government felt the strain, for its revenues were locked up in suspended banks. A little more than a year after Congress had authorized the distribution of its surplus revenues among the States Van Buren was forced to call it into special session to provide some relief for the Government itself.

217. Van Buren held manfully to the strictest con- struction of the powers of the Federal Government. insisted that the panic would best right itself without Government interference, and, after a four years’ struggle, he succeeded in making the “ sub-treasury scheme” law (1840). It cut off all connexion of the Government with banks, putting collecting and disbursing officers under bonds to hold money safely and to transfer it under orders from the treasury, and restricting payments to or by the United States to gold and silver. Its passage had been preceded by another commercial crisis (1839), more limited in its field, but more discouraging to the people. It is true that Jackson, in dealing with the finances, had ‘simply smashed things,” leaving his successor to repair damages ; but it is far from certain that this was not the best way available at the time. The wisest scheme of financial reform would have had small chance of success with the land-

jobbers in Congress ; and Van Buren’s firm- ness found the way out of the chaos.

218. Van Buren’s firmness was unpopular ; Whig party now adopted methods which were popular, somewhat demagogical. It nominated Harrison in 1840; it contrasted his homely frontier virtues with Van Buren’s “ostentatious indifference to the misfortunes of the people ” and with the supposed luxury of his life in the White House; and, after the first of the modern “ caDr paigns” of mass meetings and processions, Harrison was elected. He died soon after his inauguration (1841), and the vice-president, Tyler, became president. Tyler was of the extreme Calhoun school, which had shown some disposl- tion to grant to Van Buren a support which it had refused to Jackson ; and the Whigs had nominated Tyler to retain his faction with them. Now he was the nominal leader of

Panic of —

1837.

Repudia- tion.

He:

Sub- treasury scheme,

and the Election if of 1840.

1833-1848.] UNITED

the party, while his politics were opposite to theirs, and the real leader of the party, Clay, was ready to force a quarrel upon him. The quarrel took place; the Whig majority in Congress was not large enough to pass any measures over Tyler’s veto; and the first two years of his administration were passed in barren conflict with his party. The “sub-treasury” law was repealed (1841) ; Caniff of the tariff of 1842 introduced a modified protection ; and 842, there the Whigs were forced to stop. Their dissensions) made Democratic success comparatively easy, and Tyler . had the support of a Democratic house behind him during

the last two years of his term.

219. The success of the Democratic machinery, and the reflex of its temporary check in 1840, with the influences brought to bear on it by the returning Calhoun faction, were such as to take the control of the party out of the hands of the leaders who had formed it. They had had high regard for political principle, even though they were willing to use doubtful methods for its propagation ; these methods had now brought out new men, who looked mainly to success, and to close connexion with the con- trolling political element of the South as the easiest means of attaining success. When the Democratic con- vention of 1844 met it was expected to renominate Van Buren. A majority of the delegates had been sent there for that purpose, but many of them would have been glad to be prevented from doing so. They allowed a resolution to be passed making a two-thirds vote necessary for nomination ; Van Buren was unable to command so many votes; and, when his name was withdrawn, Polk was nominated. The Whigs nominated Clay. boli- 220. The beginning of the abolitionist movement in the United States, the establishment of the Liberator (1831) it ®2d of the American Anti-Slavery Society (1833), and the subsequent divisions in it, are given elsewhere (see Lincy. Grit., vol. x. pp. 86, 87). Up to that time “abolition ” had meant gradual abolition; it was a wish rather than a purpose. Garrison called for immediate abolition. The basis of the American system was in the reserved rights of the States, and slavery rested on their will, which was not likely to be changed. But the cry was kept up. The mission of the abolitionists was to force the people to think of the question ; and, in spite of riots, assaults, and per- secution of every kind, they fulfilled it manfully. It was inevitable that, as the Northern people were brought un- willingly to think of the question, they should look with hew eyes on many of its phases; while in the South many who might dislike slavery were disposed to resist the interferences with State rights which the new proposal involved. In truth, slavery was more and more out of harmony with the hew economic conditions which were rapidly taking com- plete control of the North and West, but had hardly been felt in the South. Thus the two sections, North and South, were more and more disposed to take opposite views of everything in which slavery was involved, and it had a faculty of involving itself in almost everything. The Status of slavery in the Territories had been settled in 1820 (§ 197); that of slavery in the States had

been settled by the constitution; but even in minor questions the intru- sive element had to be reckoned with. The abolitionists Sent their documents through the mails, and the South wished the Federal Government to interfere and stop the practice. The abolitionists persisted in petitioning Con- gress for the passage of various measures which Congress regarded as utterly unconstitutional ; and the disposition of Congress to deny or regulate the right of petition in such matters excited the indignation of Northern men who had no sympathy with abolition. But the first occasion on which the views of the two sections came into flat con- trast was on the question of the annexation of Texas,

PTrATES 167

221, ‘The United States had had a vague claim to Texas Texas, until 1819, when the claim was surrendered to Spain in part compensation for Florida. On the revolt of Mexico,

Texas became a part of that republic. It was colonized by Americans, mainly Southerners and slave-holders, and seceded from Mexico in 1835, defeating the Mexican armies and establishing its independence. Southern poli- ticians desired its annexation to the United States for many reasons. Its people were kindred to them ; its soil would widen the area of slavery ; and its territory, it was hoped, could be divided into several States, to reinforce the Southern column in the senate. People in the North were either indifferent or hostile to the proposal ; Van Buren had declared against it, and his action was the secret reason for his defeat in the Democratic convention. On the other hand, there were indications that the joint Oregon. occupation of the Oregon country (§ 192) could not last much longer. American immigration into it had begun, while the Hudson’s Bay Company, the English tenant of the soil, was the natural enemy of immigration. To carry the sentiment of both sections, the two points were coupled ; and the Democratic convention declared for the reannexation of Texas and the reoccupation of Oregon.

222. One of the cardinal methods of the political abolitionists was to nominate candidates of their own against a doubtful friend, even though this secured the election of an open enemy. Clay’s efforts to guard his Liberty condemnation of the Texas annexation project were just Party. enough to

push the Liberty party, the political aboli- tionists, into voting for candidates of their own in New York ; on a close vote their loss was enough to throw the electoral votes of that State to Polk, and its votes decided the result. Polk was elected (November 1844); and Texas Election was annexed to the United States in the following spring. of 1844. At the next meeting of Congress (1845) Texas was Admis- admitted as a State. sion of

223. West of Texas the northern prolongation of Te: Mexico ran right athwart the westward movement of American population; and, though the movement had not yet reached the barrier, the Polk administration desired further acquisitions from Mexico. The western boundary of Texas was undefined ; a strip of territory claimed by Texas was settled exclusively by Mexicans; but the Polk administration directed Taylor, the American commander in Texas, to cross the Nueces river and seize the disputed territory. Collisions with Mexican troops followed ; they were beaten in the battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma, and were chased across the Rio Grande. Taylor followed, took the city of Monterey, and established him- self far within northern Mexico,

224. On the news of the first bloodshed Congress War with declared war against Mexico, over the opposition of the Mexico. Whigs.

Slavery in the new terri- tory.

“Squatter

sove- reignty.”

Wilmot proviso.

Free Soil party.

Election of 1848.

Admis- sion of Cali-

fornia.

500,000 square miles to the area of the United States ; Texas itself made up some 375,000 square miles more. The settlement of the north-west boundary between Oregon and British Columbia (§ 221), giving its own share to each country (1846), with the Texas and Mexican cessions, gave the United States the complete territorial form retained until the annexation of Alaska in 1867.

225. In the new territory slavery had been forbidden under Mexican law; and its annexation brought up the question of its status under American law. He who re- members the historical fact that slavery had never been more than a custom, ultimately recognized and protected by State law, will not have much difficulty in deciding about the propriety of forcing such a custom by law upon any part of a territory. But, if slavery was to be ex- cluded from the new territory, the States which should ultimately be formed out of it would enter as free States, inclined to take an anti-slavery view of doubtful questions; and the influence of the South in the senate would be decreased. For the first time the South appears as a dis- tinct imperium in imperio in the territorial difficulties which began in 1848.

226. The first appearance of these difficulties brought out in the Democratic party a solution which was so closely in line with the prejudices of the party, and apparently so likely to meet all the wishes of the South, that it bade fair to carry the party through the crisis without the loss of its Southern vote. This was “squatter sovereignty,” the notion that it would be best for Congress to leave the people of each territory to settle the question of the exist- ence of slavery for themselves. cratic ground for the party would have been that which it at first seemed likely to take—the ‘ Wilmot proviso,” a condition proposed to be added to the Act authorizing acquisitions of territory, providing that slavery should be forbidden in all territory to be acquired under the Act. In the end apparent expediency carried the dominant party off to “squatter sovereignty,” and the Democratic adherents of the Wilmot proviso, with the Liberty party and the anti-slavery Whigs, united in 1848 under the name of the Free Soil party. The Whigs had no solution to offer ; their entire programme, from this time to their downfall as a party, consisted in a persistent effort to evade or ignore all difficulties connected with slavery.

227. Taylor, after the battle of Buena Vista, resigned and came home, considering himself ill-used by the ad- ministration. He refused to commit himself to any party ; and the Whigs were forced to accept hii as their candidate in 1848. The Democrats nominated Cass ; and the Free Soil party, or “ Free-Soilers,” nominated Van Buren. By the vote of the last-named party the Democratic candidate cost New York and the election, and Taylor was elected president. Taking office in 1849, he had on his shoulders the whole burden of the territorial difficulties, aggravated by the discovery of gold in California and the sudden rise of population there. Congress was so split into factions that it could for a long time agree upon nothing ; thieves and outlaws were too strong for the semi-military govern- ment of California ; and the people of that Territory, with the approval of the president, proceeded to form a con- stitution and apply for admission as a State. They had so framed their constitution as to forbid slavery; and this was really the application of the Wilmot proviso to the richest part of the new territory, and the South felt that it had been robbed of the cream of what it alone had fought cheerfully to obtain.

228. The admission of California was not secured until September 1850, just after Taylor’s sudden death, and then only by the addition of a bonus to Texas, the division of the rest of the Mexican cession into the Territories of

The broader and demo- .

STATES

Utah and New Mexico without mention of slavery, and the passage of a Fugitive Slave Law. The slave trade, but not slavery, was forbidden in the District of Columbia. The whole was generally known as the compromise of 1850, Compr. Two of its features need notice. As has been said, slavery mise of was not mentioned in the Act; and the status of slavery 180. in the Territories was thus left uncertain. Congress can veto any legislation of a Territorial legislature, but, in fact, the two houses of Congress were hardly ever able to unite on anything after 1850, and both these Territories

did establish slavery before 1860, without a Congressional veto. The advantage here was with the South. The other point, the Fugitive Slave Law, was a special demand a |

[uIstorRy,

of the South. The constitution contained clauses directing Slave that fugitive criminals and slaves should be delivered up, on requisition, by the State to which they had fled (§ 124).

In the case of criminals the delivery was directed to be made by the executive of the State to which they had fled ;

in the case of slaves no delivering authority was specified, \ and an Act of Congress in 1793 had imposed the duty on ! Federal judges or on local State magistrates. Some of the States had passed “personal liberty laws,” forbidding or Personal limiting the action of their magistrates in such cases ; and liberty the Act of 1850 transferred the decision of such cases to #™* United States commissioners, with the assistance of United States marshals. It imposed penalties on rescues, and denied a jury trial. All the ill-effects of the law were not

felt until a year or two of its operation had passed (§ 244).

229. The question of slavery had taken up so much time in Congress that its other legislation was compara- tively limited. The rates of postage were reduced to five and ten cents for distances less and greater than 300 miles (1845); and the naval school at Annapolis was established the same year. The military school at West Point had been established in 1794. When the Democratic party had obtained complete control of the government, it re-established the ‘sub-treasury,” or independent treasury (1846), which is still the basis of the treasury system. In ‘anf the same year, after an exhaustive report by Robert J. Uo Walker, Polk’s secretary of the treasury, the tariff of 1846 was passed ; it reduced duties, and cut out all forms of protection. With the exception of a slight additional re- duction of duties in 1857, this remained in force until 1861,

230. Five States were admitted during the last ten Adms years of this period,—Florida (1845), Texas (1845), lowa CA (1846), Wisconsin (1848), and California (1850). The early entrance of Iowa, Wisconsin, and Florida had been and Wis- due largely to Indian wars, —the Black Hawk war in Iowa consin and Wisconsin (1832), and the Seminole war in Florida (1835-

37), after each of which the defeated Indians were compelled to cede lands as the price of peace. The ex- tinction of Indian titles in northern Michigan brought about the discovery of the great copper fields of that region, whose existence had been suspected long before it

— a enn eee

could be proved. Elsewhere settlement followed the lines already marked out, except in the new possessions on the , Pacific coast, whose full possibilities were not yet known,

Railroads in the Eastern States were beginning to show ed something of a connected system; in the South they had be hardly changed since 1840; in the West they had only § been prolonged on their original lines. The telegraph, which was to make man master of even the longest and most complicated systems, was brought into use in 1844 ; but it is not until the census of 1860 that its effects are seen in the fully connected network of railroads which then covers the whole North and West (§ 273).

231. The sudden development of wealth in the country ae gave an impetus to the spirit of invention. Goodyear s “* method of vulcanizing rubber (1839) had come into usé M‘Cormick had made an invention whose results have

1845-1850. | UN PT ED

been hardly less than that of the locomotive in their im- portance to the United States. He had patented a reap- ing-machine in 1834, and this, further improved and supplemented by other inventions, had brought into play the whole system of agricultural machinery whose exist- ence was scarcely known elsewhere until the London “World’s Fair” of 1851 brought it into notice. It was agricultural machinery that made Western farms profitable and enabled the railroads to fill the West so rapidly (§ 278). A successful sewing-machine came in 1846; the power- loom and the surgical use of anzesthetics in the same year ; and the rotary press for printing in 1847.

232. All the conditions of life were changing so rapidly that it was natural that the minds of men should change with them or become unsettled. This was the era of new sects, of communities, of fantastic proposals of every kind, of transcendentalism in literature, religion, and politics. Not the most fantastic or benevolent, but certainly the most successful, of these was the sect of Mormons, or Latter-day Saints. They settled in the new Territory of Utah in 1847, calling their capital Salt Lake City, and spreading thence through the neighbouring Territories. There they have become a menace to the American sys- tem ; their numbers are so great that it is against American instincts to deprive them of self-government and keep them under a Congressional despotism ; while their poly- gamy and submission to their hierarchy make it impossible to erect them into a State which shall have complete con- trol of marriage and divorce.

233. The material development of the United States since 1830 had been extraordinary, but every year made it more evident that the South was not sharing in it. It is plain now that the fault was in the labour system of the South : her only labourers were slaves, and a slave who was fit for anything better than field labour was prima Jacie a dangerous man. The process of divergence had as yet gone only far enough to awaken intelligent men in the South to the fact of its existence, and to stir them to efforts as hopeless as they were earnest, to find some artificial Stimulus for Southern industries. In the next ten years the process was to show its effects on the national field, –

IX, TENDENCIES TO DISUNION: 1850-61,

234. The abolitionists had never ceased to din the iniquity of slavery into the ears of the American people. ‘Calhoun, Webster, and Clay, with nearly all the other political leaders of 1850, had united in deploring the wickedness of these fanatics, who were persistently stirring Up a question which was steadily widening the distance between the sections. They mistook the symptom for the disease. Slavery itself had put the South out of harmony with its surroundings, and still more out of harmony with the inevitable lines of the country’s development. Even in 1850, though they hardly yet knew it, the two sections had drifted so far apart that they were practically two different countries. 235. The case of the South was one of

arrested develop- .» Ment. The South remained very much as in 1790 ; while other parts of the country had developed, it had stood still. The remnants of colonial feeling, of class influence, which advancing democracy had wiped out elsewhere, retained all their force here, aggravated by the effects of an essentially aristocratic system of employment. The ruling class had to maintain a military control over the labouring class, and @ class influence over the poorer whites. It had even Secured in the constitution provision for its political power in the representation given to three-fifths of the slaves, The twenty additional members of the house of represen- _ ‘latives were not simply a gain to the South; they were still more a gain to the “black districts,” where whites

were few, and the slave-holder controlled the district. Slave-owners and slave-holders together, there were but 350,000 of them ; but they had common interests, the intelligence to see them, and the courage to contend for them. The first step of a rising man was to buy slaves ; and this was enough to enroll him in the dominant class. From it were drawn the representatives and senators in Congress, the governors, and all the holders of offices over which the “slave power,” as it came to be called, had control. Not only was the South inert; its ruling class, its ablest and best men, were united in defence of tendencies which were alien and hostile to those of the rest of the country.

236. Immigration into the United States was not an Immigra~ important factor in its development until about 1847, tion. The immigrants, so late as 1820, numbered but 8000 per annum ; their number did not touch 100,000 until 1842, and then it fell for a year or two almost to half that number, In 1847 it rose again to 235,000, in 1849 to 300,000, and in 1850 to 428,000; all told, more than two and a quarter million persons from abroad settled in the United States between 1847 and 1854. Taking the lowest estimates—$80 each for the actual amount of money brought in by immigrants, and $800 each for their in- dustrial value to the country,—the wealth-increasing in- fluence of such a stream of immigration may be calculated. Its political effects were even greater, and were all in the same direction. Leaving out the dregs of the immigra- tion, which settled down in the seaboard cities, its

best part was a powerful nationalizing force. It had not come to any particular State, but to the United States 3 it had none of the traditional prejudices in favour of a State, but a strong feeling for the whole country ; and the new feel- ings which it brought in must have had their weight not only on the gross mass of the people, but on the views of former leaders. And all the influences of this enormous immigration were confined to the North and West, whose divergence from the South thus received a new impetus. The immigration avoided slave soil as if by instinct. So late as 1880 the census reports that the Southern States, except Florida, Louisiana, and Texas, are “ practically with- out any foreign element”; but it was only in 1850-60 that this differentiating circumstance began to show itself plainly. And, as the sections began to differ further in aims and policy, the North began to gain heavily in ability to ensure its success,

237. Texas was the last slave State ever admitted ; and, The sec- as it refused to be divided, the South had no further tious in increase of numbers in the senate. Until 1850 the ad- Congress mission of a free State had been so promptly balanced by the admission of a slave State that the senators of the two sections had remained about equal in number ; in 1860 the free States had 36 senators and the slave States only 30. As the representation in the house had changed from 35 free State and 30 slave State members in 1790 to 147 free State and 90 slave State in 1860, and as the electors are the sum of the numbers of senators and representatives, it is evident that political power had passed away from the South in 1850. If at any time the free States should unite they could control the house of representatives and the senate, elect the president and vice-president, dictate the appointment of judges and other Federal officers, and make the laws what they pleased. If pressed to it, they could even control the interpretation of the laws by the Supreme Court. No Federal judge could be removed except by impeachment (§ 121), but an Act of Congress could at any time increase the number of judges to any extent, and the appointment of the additional judges could reverse the opinion of the court. All the interests of the South depended on the one question whether the free States would unite or not.

Ten- 238. In circumstances so critical a cautious quiescence | tive duty of protecting it. This, if it should become the

eo and avoidance of public attention was the only safe course | general Southern position, was certain to destroy the notion

eee for the “slave power,” but that course had become im- | of squatter sovereignty (§ 226), and thus to split the Demo- possible. The numbers interested had become too large | cratic party, which was alinost the last national ligament to be subject to complete discipline ; all could not be held | that now held the two fragments of the Union together, in cautious reserve ; and, when an advanced proposal came 242. The social disintegration was as rapid. Northern Social from any quarter of the slave-holding lines, the whole army | men travelling in the South were naturally looked upon ‘ivex. was shortly forced up to the advanced position. Every | with increasing suspicion, and were made to feel that they movement of the mass was necessarily aggressive ; and | were on a soil alien in sympathies. Some of the worst aggression meant final collision. If collision came, it must | phases of democracy were called into play in the South; be on some question of the rights of the States ; and on | and, in some sections, law openly yielded supremacy to such a question the whole South would move as one man. | popular passion in the cases of suspected abolitionists, Everything thus tended to disunion. Southern conventions, on all sorts of subjects, became

Sec- 239. The Protestant churches of the United States had | common ; and in these meetings, permeated by a dawning

tarian reflected in their organization the spirit of the political | sense of Southern nationality, hardly any proposition look-

divi- institutions under which they lived. Acting as purely vol- | ing to Southern independence of the North was met with

sioo- _untary associations, they had been organized into govern- | disfavour. In State elections a distinctly disunion element ments by delegates, much like the “conventions” which | appeared ; and, though it was defeated, the majority did had been evolved in the political parties (§ 203). The | not deny the right of secession, only its expediency. omnipresent slavery question

intruded into these bodies, 243. Calhoun, in his last and greatest speech, called Progms _ and split them. The Baptist Church was thus divided into | attention to the manner in which one tie after another was “tis a Northern and a Southern branch in 1845, and the equally | snapping. But he ignored the real peril of the situation ™™ powerful Methodist Church met the same fate the following | —its dangerous facts: that the South was steadily grow- year. Two of the four great Protestant bodies were thus no | ing weaker in comparison with the North, and more unable longer national ; it was only by the most careful manage- | to secure a wider area for the slave system ; that it was ment that the integrity of the Presbyterian Church was | therefore being steadily forced into demanding active Con- maintained until 1861, when it also yielded ; and only the | gressional protection for slavery in the Territories; that Episcopal and Roman Catholic Churches retained their | the North would never submit to this ; and that the South national character. If the process of disruption did not | must submit to the will of the majority or bring about a extend to other sects, it was because they were already | collision by attempting to secede. i mainly Northern or mainly Southern. 244. Anti-slavery feeling in the North was stimulated Fugitive °

Party 240. The political parties showed the same tendency. | by the manner in which the Fugitive Slave Law (§ 228) Slave

changes. Each began to shrivel up in one section or the other. The | was enforced immediately after 1850. The chase after ‘7 notion of “squatter sovereignty,” attractive at first to the | fugitive slaves was prosecuted in many cases with circum- Western democracy, and not repudiated by the South, | stances of revolting brutality, and features of the slave enabled the Democratic party to pass the crisis of 1850 | system which had been tacitly looked upon as fictitious without losing much of its Northern vote, while Southern | were brought home to the heart of the free States. The Whigs began to drift in, making the party continually more | added feeling showed its force when the Kansas-Nebraska Kansas pro-slavery. This could not continue long without begin- | Act was passed by Congress (1854). It organized the two a ning to decrease its Northern vote, but this effect did not | new Territories of Kansas and Nebraska. Both of them” * become plainly visible until after 1852. The efforts of the | were for ever free soil by the terms of the Missouri com- Whig party to ignore the great question

alienated its anti- | promise (§ 197). But the success of the notion of squatter slavery members in the North, while they did not satisfy | sovereignty in holding the Democratic party together while its Southern members. The Whig losses were not at first | destroying the Whig party had intoxicated Douglas and heavy, but, as the electoral vote of each State is deter- | other Northern Democrats ; and they now applied the doc mined by the barest plurality of the popular vote, they | trine to these Territories. They did not desire “to vote were enough to defeat the party almost everywhere in | slavery up or down,” but left the decision to the people of

Election the presidential election of 1852. The Whigs nominated | the two Territories.

of 1852. Scott and the Democrats Pierce; and Pierce carried all 245. This was the grossest political blunder in American but four of the thirty-one States, and was elected. This | history. The status of slavery had been settled, by the revelation of hopeless weakness was the downfall of the | constitution or by the compromises of 1820 and 1850, on Whig party ; it maintained its organization for four years | every square foot of American soil; right or wrong, the longer, but the life had gone out of it. The future was | settlement was made. The Kansas-Nebraska Act took a with the Free Soil party, though it had polled but few | great mass of territory out of the settlement and flung it votes in 1852. into the arena as a prize for which the sections were to

Changes 241. During the administration of Taylor (and Vice- | struggle; and the struggle always tended to force, as the

ae President Fillmore, who succeeded him) Clay, Webster, | only arbiter. The first result of the Act was to throw

770 UNITED

Calhoun, Polk, and Taylor were removed by death, and there was a steady drift of other political leaders out of public life. New men were pushing in everywhere, and in both sections they showed the prevailing tendency to dis- union. ‘The best of them were unprecedentedly radical. Sumner, Seward, and Chase came into the senate, bringing the first accession of

recognized force and ability to the anti-slavery feeling in that body. The new Southern men, such as Davis, and the Democratic recruits from the Southern Whig party, such as Stephens, were ready to take the ground on which Calhoun had always insisted— that Congress was bound not merely to the negative duty of not attacking slavery in the Territories, but to the posi-

parties into chaos, An American or “ Know-Nothing” ” ih party, a secret oath-bound organization, pledged to oppose the influence or power of foreign-born citizens, had been party.” formed to take the place of the defunct Whig party. It had been quite successful in State elections for a time, and was now beginning to have larger aspirations. It, like the Whig party, intended to ignore slavery, but, after a few years of life, the questions complicated with slavery entered its organization and divided it also. Even m 1854 many of its leaders in the North were forced to take position against the Kansas-Nebraska Act, while hosts of others joined in the opposition without any party organization. No American party ever rose so swiftly as

. this latter ; with no other party name than the awkward

title of “‘ Anti-Nebraska men,” it carried the Congressional elections of 1854 at the North, forced many of the former Know-Nothing leaders into union with it, and controlled the house of representatives of the Congress which met in 1855. The Democratic party, which had been practically the only party since 1852, had now to face the latest and strongest of its broad-constructionist opponents, one which with the nationalizing features of the Federal and Whig parties combined democratic feelings and methods, and, above all, had a democratic purpose at bottom. It acknowledged, at first, no purpose aimed at slavery, only an intention to exclude slavery from the Territories ; but, under such principles, it was the only party which was potentially an anti-slavery party, the only party to which the enslaved labourer of the South could look with the faintest hope of aid in reaching

the status of a man. The new party had grasped the function which belonged of right to its great opponent, and it seized with it its opponent's original title. The name Democrat had quite taken the place of that first used—Republican (§ 150), but the latter had never passed out of popular remembrance and liking at the North. The new party took quick and skilful advantage of this by assuming the old name, and early in 1856 the two great parties of the next thirty years— the Democratic and Republican parties—were drawn up against one another.

246. The foreign relations of the United States during Pierce's term of office were overshadowed by the domestic difficulties, but were of importance. In the Koszta case (1853) national protection had been afforded on foreign soil to a person who had only taken the preliminary steps to naturalization. Japan had been opened to American intercourse and commerce (1854). But the question of slavery was more and more thrusting itself even into for- eign relations. A great Southern republic, to be founded at first by the slave States, but to take in gradually the whole territory around the Gulf of Mexico and include the West Indies, was soon to be a pretty general ambition among slave-holders, and its first phases appeared during Pierce's administration. Efforts were begun to obtain Cuba from Spain; and the three leading American ministers abroad, meeting at Ostend, united in declaring the possession of Cuba to be essential to the well-being of the United States (1854). 'Filibustering " expeditions against Cuba or the smaller South American states, intended so to revolutionize them as to lay a basis for an application to be annexed to the United States, became common, and taxed the energies of the Federal Government for their prevention. All these, however, yielded in interest and importance to the affairs in Kansas.

247. Nebraska was then supposed to bea desert, and attention was directed almost exclusively to Kansas. No sooner had its organization left the matter of slavery to be decided by its "' people" than the anti-slavery people of the North and West felt it to be their duty to see that the "people" of the Territory should be anti-slavery in sympathy. Emigrant associations were formed, and these shipped men and families to Kansas, arming them for their protection in the new country. Southern newspapers called for similar measures in the South, but the call was less effective. Southern men without

slaves, settling a new State, were uncomfortably apt to prohibit slavery, as in California. Only slave-holders were trusty pro- Slavery men; and such were not likely to take slaves to Kansas, and risk their ownership on the result of the struggle. But for the people of Missonri, Kansas would have been free soil at once. Lying across the direct road to Kansas, the Missouri settlers blockaded the way of free- State settlers, crossed into Kansas, and voted profusely at

jurisdiction over its own affairs.

SrA Hs en

the first Territorial election. Their votes chose a Terri- torial legislature which gave a complete code of slave laws

to the Territory. Passing to the north of Missouri the “free-State settlers” entered Kansas to find that their opponents had secured the first position. This bronght

out the fundamental difference between a Territory—under

the absolute control of Congress and only privileged in certain branches of legislation—and a State with complete Finding themselves cut

off from control of the former, the free-State settlers determined to attempt to substitute the latter. They organized a State government (1855), and applied for Free- admission by Congress. Such irregular erections of States State had been known before ; and, though they were confessedly a aa not binding until confirmed by Congress, the Democratic , party had always been tender with them, and prone to seek a compromise with them. A symptom of the process which had been making the Democratic party pro-slavery

was seen in the attitude which the Democratic adminis- tration now took towards the inchoate State of Kansas. Never thinking of compromise, it pounced on the new organization, scattered it, arrested its leaders, and ex- pressed a hesitating desire to try them for treason (1856). Nevertheless, the free-State settlers gave no further obed- ience to the Territorial government,

as the pro-slavery settlers refused to recognize the pseudo-State government,

and the struggle passed into a real civil war, the two powers mustering considerable armies, fighting battles, capturing towns, and paroling prisoners. The struggle was really over in 1857, and the South was beaten. It could not compete with the resources and enthusiasm of

the other section; its settlers were not unanimous, as their Opponents were ; and the anti-slavery settlers were in a great majority. There were, however, all sorts of obstacles

yet to be overcome before the new State of Kansas was recognized by Congress, after the withdrawal of the senators of the seceding States (1861).

248. In the heat of the Kansas struggle came the Election presidential election of 1856. The Democrats nominated of 1856. Buchanan, declaring, as usual, for the strictest limitation of the powers of the Federal Government on a number of points specified, and reaffirming the principle of the Kansas-Nebraska Act—the settlement of slavery by the people of the Territory. The remnant of the Whig party, including the Know-Nothings of the North and those Southern men who wished no further discussion of slavery, nominated the president who had gone out of office in 1853, Fillmore. The Republican party nominated Fre- mont; the bulk of its manifesto was taken up with pro- tests against attempts to introduce slavery into the Terri- tories ; but it showed its broad-construction tendencies by declaring for appropriations of public moneys for internal improvements. The Democrats were successful in electing Buchanan ; but the position of the party was quite different from the triumph with which it had come out of the elec- tion of 1852. It was no longer master of twenty-seven of the thirty-one States ; all New England and New York, all the North-West but Indiana and Illinois, all the free States but five, had gone against it; its candidate no longer had a majority of the popular vote, but was chosen by a majority of the electoral votes ; and it had before it a party with nearly as many popular votes as its own, the control of most of the strongest section of the Union, and an enthusiasm which was more dangerous still. For the first time in the history of the country a distinctly anti- slavery candidate had obtained an electoral vote, and had even come near obtaining the

presidency. Fillmore had carried but one State, Maryland ; Buchanan had carried the rest of the South, with a few States in the North, and Fremont the rest of the North and none of the South,

The Dred Scott decision.

Admis- sion of Minne- sota and Oregon.

John Brown's raid.

If things had gone so far that the two sections were to be constituted into opposing political parties, it was evident that the end was near.

249. Oddly enough, the constitutionality of the com- promise of 1820 (§ 197) had never happened to come before the Supreme Court for consideration. In 1856-57 it came up for the first time. One Dred Scott, a Missouri slave who had been taken to the Territory covered by the compromise, and had therefore sued for his freedom, was sold to a citizen of another State. Scott then transferred his suit from the State to the Federal courts, under the power given to them to try suits between citizens of different States, and the case came by appeal to the Supreme Court. Its decision was announced at the begin- ning of Buchanan's administration. It put Scott out of court on the ground that a slave, or the descendant of slaves, could not be a citizen of the United States or have any standing in Federal courts. The opinion of the chief- justice went on to attack the validity of the Missouri com- promise, for the reasons that one of the constitutional functions of Congress was the protection of property ; that slaves had been recognized as property by the constitution ; and that Congress was bound to protect, not to prohibit, slavery in the Territories. The mass of the Northern people held that slaves were looked on by the constitution, not as property, but as "persons held to service or labour" by State laws ; that the constitutional function of Con- gress was the protection of liberty as well as property ; and that Congress was thus bound to prohibit, not to pro- tect, slavery in the Territories. Another step in the road to disunion was thus taken, as the only peaceful interpreter of the constitution was pushed out of the way The North flouted the decision of

the Supreme Court, and the storm of angry dissent which it aroused did the disunionists good service at the South. From this time the leading news- papers in the South maintained that the radical Southern view first advanced by Calhoun, and but slowly accepted by other Southern leaders, as to the duty of Congress to protect slavery in the Territories, had been confirmed by the Supreme Court ; that the Northern Republicans had rejected it ; and that even the squatter sovereignty theory of Northern Democrats could no longer be submitted to by the South.

250. The population of the United States in 1860 was over 31,000,000, an increase of more than 8,000,000 in ten years. As the decennial increases of population became larger, so did the divergence of the sections in population, and still more in wealth and resources. Two more free States came in during this period—Minnesota (1858) and Oregon (1859),—and Kansas was clamouring loudly for the same privilege. The free and slave States, which had been almost equal in population in 1790, stood now as 19 to 12. And of the 12,000,000 in slave States, the 4,000,000 slaves and the 250,000 free blacks were not so much a factor of strength as a possible source of weak- ness and danger. No serious slave rising had ever taken place in the South ; but the sudden flaming out of John Brown's insurrection (1859), and the alarm which it car- ried through the South, were tokens of a danger which added a new horror to the chances of civil war. It was not wonderful that men, in the hope of finding some com- promise by which to avoid such a catastrophe, should be willing to give up everything but principle and even to trench sharply upon principle itself, nor that offers of com- promise should urge Southern leaders farther into the fatal belief that "the North would not fight."

251. Northern Democrats, under the lead of Douglas, had been forced already almost to the point of revolt by the determination of Southern senators to prevent the admission of Kansas as a free State, if not to secure her

admission as a slave State. When the Democratic con- Division vention of 1860 met at Charleston, the last strand of the of the last national political organization parted ; the Democratic Demo- party itself was split at last by

the slavery question, = The Southern delegates demanded a declaration in favour? of the duty of Congress to protect slavery in the Territories,

It was all that the Douglas Democrats could then do to maintain themselves in a few Northern States; such a declaration meant political suicide everywhere, and they voted it down. The convention divided into two bodies, The Southern body adjourned to Richmond, and the Northern and border State convention to Baltimore, Here the Northern delegates, by seating some delegates friendly to Douglas, provoked a further secession of border State delegates, who, in company with the Rich- mond body, nominated Breckinridge (p. 788) and Lane for president and vice-president. The remainder of the origi-

nal convention nominated Douglas and H. V. Johnson.

252. The remnant of the old Whig and Know-Nothing Constita. parties, now calling itself the Constitutional Union party, tional met at Baltimore and nominated Bell (p. 788) and Everett, Uniou The Republican convention met at Chicago. Its “plat- i: = form” of 1856 had been somewhat broad constructionist in al | its nature and leanings, but a strong Democratic element party, in the party had prevented it from going too far in this direction. The election of 1856 had shown that, with the votes of Pennsylvania and Illinois, the party would then have been successful, and the Democratic element was now ready to take almost anything which would secure the votes of these States. This state of affairs will go to explain the nomination of Lincoln, of Illinois, for president, with Hamlin, a former Democrat, for vice-president, and the declaration of the platform in favour of a protective tariff. The mass of the platform was still devoted to the necessity of excluding slavery from the Territories. To sum up: the Bell party wished to have no discussion The of slavery; the Douglas Democrats rested on squatter Pav sovereignty and the compromise of 1850, but would ac slavery cept the decision of the Supreme Court ; the Republicans in the demanded that Congress should legislate for the prohibition Tem of slavery in the Territories ; and the Southern Demoerats demanded that Congress should legislate for the protection of slavery in the Territories.

253. No candidate received a majority of the popular Bectio vote, Lincoln standing first and Douglas second. But of 18) Lincoln and Hamlin had a

clear majority of the electoral vote, and so were elected, Breckinridge and Lane coming next. It is worthy of mention that, up to the last hours of Lincoln's first term of office, Congress would always have contained a majority opposed to him but for the absence of the members from the seceding States. The interests of the South and even of slavery were thus safe enough under an anti-slavery president. But the drift of events was too plain. Nullification had come and gone, and the nation feared it no longer. Even secession by a single State was now almost out of the question; the letters of Southern governors in 1860, in consultation on the state of affairs, agree that no State would secede without assur- ances of support by others. If this crisis were allowed to slip by without action, even a sectional secession would soon be impossible. If secession were a right, it must be asserted now or never.

254. Some assurance of united action must have bee obtained, for South Carolina ventured into secession. The democratic revolution which, since 1829, had com- pelled the legislatures to give the choice of presidential electors (§ 119) to the people of the States had not affected South Carolina; her electors were still chosen by the legislature. That body, on the election day of November, 1860, having chosen the State's electors,

remained in session until the telegraph had brought assurances that Lincoln had secured a sufficient number of electors to ensure his election ; it then summoned a State convention and adjourned. The State convention, which is a legislative body chosen for a special purpose, met December 20, and unanimously passed an "ordinance of secession," repealing the Acts by which the State had ratified the constitution and its amendments (§ 108), and dissolving "the Union now subsisting between South Carolina and

other States, under the name of the United States of America." The convention took all steps neces- sary to make the State ready for war, and adjourned. Similar ordinances were passed by conventions in Missis- sippi (January 9, 1861), Florida (January 10), Alabama (January 11), Georgia (January 18), Louisiana (January 23), and Texas (February 1).

255. The opposition in the South did not deny the right

ment to secede, but the expediency of its exercise. SeCes-

was to elect delegates to the State conventions who would vote not tosecede. They were beaten, says A. H. Stephens, by the cry that the States "could make better terms out of the Union than in it." That is, the States were to withdraw individually, suspend the functions of the

Federal Government within their jurisdiction for the

time, consider maturely any proposals for guarantees for their rights in the Union, and return as soon as satis- factory guarantees should be given. A second point to

be noted is the difference between the notions of a State

convention prevalent in the North and in the South. The Northern State convention was generally considered as a preliminary body, whose action was not complete or valid until ratified by a popular vote. The Southern State convention was looked upon as the incarnation of the sovereignty of the State, and its action was not supposed to need a popular ratification. When the conventions of the seceding States had adopted the ordinances of secession, they proceeded to other business. Theyappointed delegates, who met at Montgomery, the capital of Alabama, February

Their effort

SrAarnts 773

257. The border States were in two tiers—North The Carolina, Tennessee, and Arkansas next to the seceding a States, and Delaware, Maryland,

Virginia, Kentucky, and °”** Missouri next to the free States. None of these were willing to secede. There was, however, one force which might draw them into secession. A State which did not wish to secede, but believed in State sovereignty and the abstract right of secession, would be inclined to take up arms to resist any attempt by the Federal Government to coerce a seceding State. In this way, in the following Spring, the original seven seceding States were reinforced by four of the border States (§ 267), making their final number eleven.

258. In the North and West surprisingly little atten- Feeling tion was given to the systematic course of procedure © the along the Gulf. The people of those sections were very Nom. busy; they had heard much of this talk before, and looked upon it as a kind of stage-thunder, the inevitable accompaniment of recent presidential elections ; and they expected the difficulty to be settled in some way. Re- publican politicians, with the exception of a few, were inclined to refrain from public declarations of intention. Some of them, such as Seward, showed a disposition to let the “erring sisters ” depart in peace, expecting to make the loss good by accessions from Canada.

nothing, except to admit Kansas as a free State and adopt Admis- the protective Morrill tariff (§ 276); even after its mem- oe of bers from the seceding States had withdrawn, those who #”-

4, formed a provisional constitution for the “Confederate States,” chose a provisional president and vice-president (Jefferson Davis and A. H. Stephens), and established

The permanent constitution, adopted in March, was copied from that of the United States, with variations meant to Maintain State sovereignty, to give the cabinet seats in Congress, to prevent the grant of bounties or any pro- tective features in the tariff or the maintenance of internal improvements at general expense, and to “recognize and protect” “the institution of negro slavery, as it now exists in the Confederate States.”

256. Under what claim of constitutional right all this was done passes comprehension. That a State convention should have the final power of decision on the question which it was summoned to consider is quite as

radical doctrine as has yet been heard of ; that a State conven- tion, summoned to consider the one question of secession, should go on, with no appeal to any further popular authority or mandate, to send delegates to meet those of other States and forma new national government, which could only exist by warring on the United States, is a novel feature in American constitutional law. It was revolution or nothing. Only in Texas, where the call of the State convention was so irregular that a popular vote could hardly be escaped, was any popular vote allowed. Elsewhere, the functions of the voter ceased when he voted for delegates to the State convention; he could only look on helplessly while that body went on to constitute him a citizen of a new nation of which he had not dreamed when he voted.

Wl. 9 . an army, treasury, and other executive departments. The | remained made no preparations for conflict, and, at their a president and vice-president were inaugurated February 18. | adjournment in March 1861, left the Federal Government 1861.

naked and helpless before its enemies.

259. The only sign of life in the body politic, the half-awakened word of warning from the democracy of the North and West, was its choice of governors of States. A remarkable group of men, soon to be known as the “war governors,’—Washburn of Maine, Fairbanks The of Vermont, Goodwin of New Hampshire, Andrew (p. 787) “ war of Massachusetts, Sprague of Rhode Island, Buckingham ce (p. 788) of Connecticut, Morgan (p. 790) of New York “°™™ Olden of New Jersey, Curtin of Pennsylvania, Dennison of Ohio, Morton (p. 790) of Indiana, Yates of Illinois, Blair of Michigan, Randall of Wisconsin, Kirkwood of Towa, and Ramsey of Minnesota,—held the executive powers of the Northern States in 1861-62. Someof these governors, such as Andrew and Buckingham, as they saw the struggle come nearer, went so far as to order the pur- chase of warlike material for their States on their private responsibility, and their action saved days of time. And at all times they were admirably prompt, methodical, clear- sighted, and intensely devoted to their one duty.

260. The little army of the United States had been almost put out of consideration ; wherever its detachments could be found in the South they were surrounded and forced to surrender and to be transferred to the North.

After secession, and in some of the States even before iit, the forts, arsenals, mints, custom-houses, ship-yards, and public property of the United States had been seized by

Seizure

property.

Position of the remain- ing forts.

Slavery and dis- union,

Embar- rassments of the Govern- ment.

Surrender of Fort Sumter. Rising

in the North,

authority of the State, and these were held until trans- ferred to the new Confederate States organization. In the first two months of 1861 the authority of the United States was paralysed in seven States, and in at least seven more its future authority seemed of very doubtful duration.

261. Only a few forts, of all the magnificent structures with which the nation had dotted the Southern coast, remained to it—the forts near Key West, Fortress Monroe at the mouth of Chesapeake Bay, Fort Pickens at Pen- sacola, and Fort Sumter in Charleston harbour. Both the last-named were beleaguered by hostile batteries, but the administration of President Buchanan, intent on main- taining the peace until the new administration should come in, instructed their commanding officers to refrain from any acts tending to open conflict. The Federal officers, therefore, were obliged to look idly on while every preparation was made for their destruction, and even while a vessel bearing supplies for Fort Sumter was driven back by the batteries between it and the sea.

262. The divergence between the two sections of the country had thus passed into disunion, and was soon to pass into open hostility. The legal

recognition of the custom of slavery, acting upon and reacted upon by every step in their economic development and every difference in their natural characteristics, surroundings, and institu- tions, had carried North and South further and faster apart, until the elements of a distinct nationality had appeared in the latter. Slavery had had somewhat the same effect on the South that democracy had had on the colonies. In the latter case the aristocracy of the mother country had made a very feeble struggle to maintain the unity of its empire. It remained to be seen, in the Amer- ican case, whether democracy would do better.

X, THE CIVIL WAR: 1861-65.

263. Secession had taken away many of the men who had for years managed the Federal Government, and who understood its workings. Lincoln's party was in power for the first time ; his officers were new to the routine of Fed- eral administration; and the circumstances with which they were called upon to deal were such as to daunt any spirit. The Government had become so nearly bankrupt in the closing days of Buchanan's administration that it had only escaped by paying double interest, and that by the special favour of the New York banks, which obtained in return the appointment of Dix as secretary of the treasury. The army had been almost broken up by captures of men and material and by resignations of competent and trusted officers. The navy had come to such a pass that, in February 1861, a house cominittee reported that only two vessels, one of twenty, the other of two guns, were avail- able for the defence of the entire Atlantic coast. And, to complicate all difficulties, a horde of clamorous office- seekers crowded Washington.

264. Before many weeks of Lincoln's administration had passed, the starting of an expedition to provision Fort Sumter brought on an attack by the batteries around the fort, and, after a bombardment of 36 hours, the fort sur- rendered (April 14, 1861). It is not necessary to rehearse the familiar story of the outburst of feeling which followed this event and the proclamation of President Lincoln call- ing for volunteers, the mustering of men, the eagerness of States, cities, and villages to hurry volunteers forward and to supply money to their own Government in its need. The 75,000

volunteers called for were supplied three or four times over, and those who were refused felt the refusal as a personal deprivation.

265. There had been some belief in the South that the North-West would take no part in the impending conflict,

STATES

and that its people could be persuaded to keep up friendly The relations with the new nationality until the final treaty of North. peace should establish all the fragments of the late Union We upon an international basis. In the spring months of 1861 Douglas, who had long been denounced as the tool

of the Southern slave-holders, was spending the closing days of life in expressing the determination of the North- West that it would never submit to have “a line of custom-houses” between it and the ocean. The batteries which Confederate authority was erecting on the banks of

the Mississippi were fuel to the flame. ar-off California, which had been considered neutral by all parties, pro- nounced as unequivocally for the national authority.

266. The shock of arms put an end to opposition in the “Folly. South as well. The peculiar isolation of life in the South ing the precluded the more ignorant voter from any comparisons tat.” of the power of his State with any other; to him it was alniost inconceivable that his State should own or have a superior. The better educated men, of wider experience, had been trained to think State sovereignty the founda tion of civil liberty, and, when their State spoke, they felt bound to “follow their State.” The president of the Confederate States issued his call for men, and it was also more than met. On both sides of the line armed men were hurrying to a meeting.

267. Lincoln’s call for troops met with an angry recep- tion wherever the doctrine of State sovereignty had a foot- ‘ hold. The governors of the border States (§ 257) gene- The boner rally returned it with a refusal to furnish any troops. Two Sits! States, North Carolina and Arkansas, seceded and joined the Confederate States. In two others, Virginia and Tennessee, the State

politicians formed “ military leagues” with the Confederacy, allowing Confederate troops to take possession of the States, and then submitted the question of secession to “popular vote.” The secession of these States was thus accomplished, and Riclimond became the Confederate capital. The same process was attempted in Missouri, but failed, and the State remained loyal. The politician class in Maryland and Kentucky took the extra-ordinary course of attempting to maintain neutrality ; but the growing power of the Federal Government soon enabled the people of the two States to resume control of their governments and give consistent support to the Union. Kentucky, however, had troops in the Confederate armies ; and one of her citizens, the late vice-president, John O. Breckinridge, left his place in the senate and became an officer in the Confederate service. Delaware cast her lot from the first with the Union.

268. The first blood of the war was shed in the streets Giml of Baltimore, when a mob attempted to stop Massachusetts troops on their way to Washington (April 19). For a time there was difficulty in getting troops through Mary- land because of the active hostility of a part of its people, but this was overcome, and the national capital was made secure. The Confederate lines had been pushed up to Manassas Junction, about 30 miles from Washington, When Congress, called into special session by the president | for July 4, came together, the outline of the Confederate States had been fixed. Their line of defence held the left bank of the Potomac from Fortress Monroe nearly to Washington ; thence, at a distance of some 30 miles from the river, to Harper’s Ferry ; thence through the mountams of western Virginia and the southern part of Kentucky, crossing the Mississippi a little below Cairo; thence through southern Missouri to the eastern border of Kansas; and thence south-west through the Indian Terr tory and along the northern boundary of Texas to the Rio Grande. The length of the line, including also the Atlantic and Gulf coasts, has been estimated at 11,000 miles. The territory within it comprised about 800,000

[HIstorRy,

=

_____ _— —___.

square miles, with a population of over 9,000,000 and great natural resources. Its cotton was almost essential to the manufactories of the world; in exchange for it every munition of war could be procured; and it was hardly possible to blockade a coast over 3000 miles in

- length, on which the blockading force had but one

port of refuge, and that about the middle of the line. Nevertheless President Lincoln issued his proclamation announcing the blockade of the Southern coast, a procla- mation from President Davis appearing with it, offering letters of marque and reprisal against the commerce of the United States to private vessels. The news brought out proclamations of neutrality from Great Britain and France, and, according to subsequent decisions of the Supreme Court, made the struggle a civil war, though the minority held that this did not occur legally until the Act of Con- gress of July 13, 1861, authorizing the president, in case of insurrection, to shut up ports and suspend commercial intercourse with the inhabitants of the revolted district,

269. The president found himself compelled to assume powers never granted to the executive authority, trusting to the subsequent action of Congress to validate his action, He had to raise and support armies and navies; he even had to authorize seizures of necessary property, of rail- road and telegraph lines, arrests of suspected persons, and the suspension of the writ of habeas corpus in certain districts. Congress supported him, and proceeded in 1863 to give the president power to suspend the writ anywhere in the United States, which he proceeded to do (§ 115). The Supreme Court, after the war, decided that no branch of the Government had power .to suspend the writ in districts where the courts were open,—that the privilege of the writ might be suspended as to persons properly involved in the war, but that the writ was still to issue, the court deciding whether the person came within the classes to whom the suspension applied. ‘This decision, however, did not come until “arbitrary arrests,” as they were called, had been a feature of the entire war. A similar suspension of the writ took place in the Con- federate States.

270. When Congress met (July 4, 1861), the absence of Southern members had made it heavily Republican. It decided to consider no business but that connected with the war, authorized a loan and the raising of 500,000 volunteers, and made confiscation of property a penalty of rebellion. While it was in session the first serious

. battle of the war—Bull Run, or Manassas—took place

(July 21), and resulted in the defeat of the Federal army. Both armies were as yet so ill-trained that the victors gained nothing from their success. In the west the battle of Wilson's Creek, near Springfield, Mo, (August 10), was either a drawn battle or a Confederate victory; but here also the victors rather lost than gained ground after it. The captures of Fort Hatteras, N.C. (August 29), and Port Royal, S.C. (November 7), gave the blockading fleets two important harbours of refuge. The over-zealous action of a naval officer in taking the Confederate envoys Mason and Slidell out of a British mail-steamer sailing between two neutral ports almost brought about acollision between the United States and Great Britain in November, But the American precedents were all against the United States (§ 172), and the envoys were given up.

271. General M'Clellan (p. 789), in the early months of the war, had led a force of Western troops across the

'Ohio river, entered western Virginia, and beaten the

Confederate armies in several battles. After the battle of Bull Run he was called to Washington and put in command of all the armies on the retirement of Scott. His genius for organization, and the unbounded confidence of the people in him, enabled him to form the troops at

and near Washington into the first great army of the war ~—the army of the Potomac. It was held, however, too much in idleness to suit the eagerness of the people and the administration; and the dissatisfaction grew louder as the winter of 1861-62 passed away without any forward movement (§ 284).

272. If the army was idle, Congress was not. The broad-construction tendencies of the party showed them- selves more plainly as the war grew more serious; there Was an increasing disposition to cut every knot by legisla- tion, with less regard to the constitutionality of the legis- lation. A paper currency, commonly known as "' green- Paper backs," was adopted and made legal tender (February 25, currency. 1862). The first symptoms of a disposition to attack slavery appeared: slavery was prohibited in the District Slavery. of Columbia and the Territories; the army was forbidden to surrender escaped slaves to their owners; and slaves of insurgents were ordered to be confiscated. In addition to a Homestead Act, giving public lands to actual settlers at reduced rates (§ 200), Congress began a further develop- ment of the system of granting public lands to railway corporations.

273. The railway system of the United States was but Railways twenty years old in 1850 (§ 230), but it had begun to in 1850.

assume some consistency. 'The day of short and discon-

nected lines had passed, and the connexions which were to develop into railway systems had appeared. Consoli- dation of smaller companies had begun; the all-rail route across the State of New York was made up of more than a dozen original companies at its consolidation in 1853. The Erie Railway was formed in 1851; and another western route—the Pennsylvania —was formed in 1854. These were at least the germs of great trunk lines (§ 312). The cost of American railways has been only from one-half to one-fourth of the cost of European railways; but an invest- ment ina far western railway in 1850-60 was an extra- hazardous risk. Not only did social conditions make any form of business hazardous; the new railway often had to enter a territory bare of population, and there create its own towns, farms, and traffic. Whether it could do so was so doubtful as to make additional inducements to capital necessary. The means attempted by Congress in 1850, in the case of the Illinois Central Railroad, was to grant Land * public lands to the corporation, reserving to the United stants. States the alternate sections. The expectation was that the railway, for the purpose of building up traffic, would sell lands to actual settlers at low rates, and that the value of the reserved lands would thus be increased. At first grants were made to

the States for the benefit of the cor- porations ; the Act of 1862 made the grant directly to the corporation,

274. The vital military and political necessity of an The immediate railway connexion with the Pacific coast was Pacific hardly open to doubt in 1862; but the necessity hardly T#lways. justified the terms which were offered and taken. The Union Pacific Railroad was incorporated; the United States Government was to issue to it bonds, on the completion of each 40 miles, to the amount of $16,000 per mile, to bea first mortgage ; through Utah and N evada, the aid was to be doubled, and for some 300 miles of mountain building to be trebled; and, in addition to this, alternate sections of land were granted. The land-grant system, thus begun, was carried on in the cases of a large number of other roads, the largest single grants being those of 47,000,000 acres to the Northern Pacific (1864) and of 42,000,000 to the Atlantic and Pacific line (1866).

275. Specie payments had been suspended almost every- Prices in where towards the end of 1861; but the price of gold was Paper. but 102°5 at the beginning of 1862. About May its price in paper currency began to rise. It touched 170 during

Tariff and

internal revenue taxation.

Bonds,

Paper issues in the South.

Manufac- tures.

the next year, and 285 in 1864; but the real price prob- ably never went much above 250. As gold rose, specie disappeared. Other articles felt the influence in currency prices. Mr D. A. Wells, in 1866, estimated that prices and rents had risen 90 per cent. since 1861, while wages had not risen more than 60 per cent.

276. The duties on imports were driven higher than the Morrill tariff had ever contemplated (§ 258). The average rates, which had been 18 per cent. on dutiable articles and 12 per cent. on the aggregate in 1860-61, rose, before the end of the war, tc nearly 50 per cent. on dutiable articles and 35 per cent. on the aggregate. Domestic manu- factures sprang into new life under such hothouse en- couragement ; every one who had spare wealth converted it into manufacturing capital. The probability of such a result had been the means of getting votes for an increased tariff ; free-traders had voted for it as well as protection- ists. For the tariff was only a means of getting capital into positions in which taxation could be applied to it, and the “internal revenue” taxation was merciless beyond precedent. The annual increase of wealth from capital was then about $550,000,000 ; the internal revenue taxa- tion on it rose in 1866 to $310,000,000, or nearly 60 per cent. Even after the war the taxation was kept up un- flinchingly until the reduction of the national debt had brought it to a point where it was evidently at the mercy of time (§ 322).

277. The stress of all this upon the poor must have been great, but it was relieved in part by the bond-system on which the war was conducted (§ 322). While the armies and navies were shooting off large blocks of the crops of 1880 or 1890, work and wages were abundant for all who were competent for them. It is true, then, that the poor paid most of the cost of the war ; it is also true that the poor had shared in that anticipation of the future which had been forced on the country, and that, when the drafts on the future came to be redeemed, it was done mainly by taxation on luxuries. The destruction of a Northern railroad meant more work for Northern iron mills and their workmen. The destruction of a Southern road was an unmitigated injury ; it had to be made good at once, by paper issues; the South could make no drafts on the future, by bond issues, for the blockade had put cotton out of the game, and Southern bonds were hardly sale- able. Every expense had to be met by paper issues; each issue forced prices higher; every rise in prices called for an increased issue of paper, with increased effects for evil. A Rebel War-Clerk’s Diary gives the following as the prices in the Richmond market for May 1864 :— “ Boots, $200; coats, $350; pantaloons, $100; shoes, $125 ; flour, $275 per barrel; meal, $60 to $80 per bushel ; bacon, $9 per pound ; no beef in market ; chickens, $30 per pair; shad, $20; potatoes, $25 per bushel ; turnip greens, $4 per peck; white

beans, $4 per quart or $120 per bushel ; butter, $15 per pound ; lard same ; wood, $50 per cord.” How the rise in salaries and wages, always far slower than other prices, could meet such prices as these, one must be left to imagine. It can only be said that most of the burden was really sustained by the women of the South.

278. The complete lack of manufactures told heavily against the South from the beginning. As men were drawn from agriculture in the North and West, the in- creased demand for labour was shaded off into an increased demand for agricultural machinery (§ 231); every in- creased percentage of power in reaping-machines liberated so many men for service at the front. The reaping- machines of the South—the slaves—were incapable of any such improvement, and, besides, required the presence of a portion of the possible fighting-men at home to watch

s Ta TEs

them. There is an evident significance in the exemption from military duty in the Confederate States of “one agriculturist on such farm, where there is no white male adult not liable to duty, employing 15 able-bodied slaves between ten and fifty years of age.” But, to the honour of the enslaved race, no insurrection took place.

279. The pressing need for men in the army made the o Confederate Congress utterly unable to withstand the rate growth of executive power. Its bills were prepared by 8 the cabinet, and the action of Congress was quite per-™%” functory. The suspension of the writ of habeas corpus, and the vast powers granted to President Davis, or assumed by him under the plea of military necessity, with the absence of a watchful and well-informed public opinion, made the Confederate Government by degrees almost a despotism. It was not until the closing months of the war that the expiring Confederate Congress mustered up courage enough to oppose the president’s will. The organ- ized and even radical opposition to the war in the North, the meddlesomeness of Congress and its ‘ committees on the conduct of the war,” were no doubt unpleasant to Lincoln ; but they carried the country through the crisis without the effects visible in the South.

280. Another act of Federal legislation—the National Nation Bank Act—should be mentioned here, as it was closely banking” connected with the sale of bonds (February 25, 1863), 5¥#™ The banks were to be organized, and, on depositing United States bonds at Washington, were to be permitted to issue notes up to 90 per cent. of the value of the bonds deposited. As the redemption of the notes is thus assured, they circu- late without question all over the United States. Bya subsequent Act the remaining State bank circulation was taxed out of existence. The national banks are still in operation; but the disappearance of United States bonds threatens their continuance.)

281. At the beginning of 1862 the lines of demarcation Admisin between the two powers had become plainly marked. Th western part of Virginia had separated itself from the a parent State, and was admittetl asa State (1863) under the name of West Virginia. It was certain that Delaware, Maryland, Kentucky, and Missouri had been saved to the Union, and that the battle was to be fought out in the territory to the south of them, In the west Grant (p. 788), commanding a part of Buell’s general forces, moved up the Tennessee river and broke the centre of the long Confederate line by the capture of Forts Henry and Fors Donelson (February 1862). The collapse of the Con- federate line opened the way for the occupation of almost all western Tennessee, including its capital, and the theatre of war was moved far forward to the southern boundary of the State, an advance of fully 200 miles into the heart of the Confederacy. It had been shown already that the successful officers were to be those from West Point ; but even they were getting their first experience in the handling of large masses of men. Grant and Sherman owed a part of that experience to the military genius of the Confederate commander, Albert 8. Johnston, whose sudden attack on their army at Pittsburgh Landing (April 6) brought Te the first great battle of the war. The Federal forces held Lanainé out stubbornly until the arrival of Buell’s advance guard relieved the pressure, and the Confederates were driven back to Corinth, with the heavy loss of their commander, who had been mortally wounded. Steady advances brought et the Union armies to Corinth, an important railroad centre, Corinth |

[wisToRY.

it

in June; and the Mississippi was opened up as far as Memphis by these successes of the armies and by the hard fighting of the gunboats at Island Number Ten and other places. At the northern boundary of the State of Mississippi the Union advance stopped for the time, but what had been gained was held. ;

1

UN TF i

282. At the same time the Mississippi was opened in part from below. A great naval expedition under Far- ragut and Porter, with a land force under Butler, sailing from Fort Monroe, came to the mouth of the Mississippi. Farragut ran past the forts above the mouth of the river, sank the ironclads which met him, and captured New ans. Orleans (April 25). The land forces then took possession

1861-1863.]

obstacles and Confederate vessels as far as Port Hudson

on bluffs too high for a naval attack.

283. The energy of the combatants had already brought ironclad vessels to the test which they had not yet met elsewhere, that of actual combat. Western ingenuity had produced a simple and excellent type of river ironclad by cutting down river steamers and plating them with railroad or other iron. The type needed for the rougher Eastern waters was different, and the Confederates converted the frigate “ Merrimac,” captured at Norfolk, into an ironclad

ni- of a more sea-going type. The battle between her and “ the “Monitor” (March 8), in Hampton Roads, was inde- » cisive; but the “ Merrimac” was driven back to N orfolk, the blockade and the cities of the Atlantic coast, which had seemed to be at its mercy, were saved, and the day of wooden war-vessels was seen to be over. Before the end of the following year there

were 75 ironclads in the United States navy ; the number of vessels had increased to 588, with 4443 guns and 35,000 men.

284. The hundred miles between Washington and Rich- mond are crossed by numberless streams, flowing south- east, and offering strong defensive positions, of which the Confederates had taken advantage. M‘Clellan (§ 271) therefore wished to move his army to Fort Monroe and attack Itichmond from that point, on the ground of Corn- wallis’s campaign of 1781. He believed that such a movement would force the Confederate armies away from Washington to meet him. The administration, believing that such a movement would only open the way for the enemy to capture Washington—a more valuable prize than Richmond—gave directions that a part of M‘Olellan’s force, under M‘Dowell, should take the overland route as far as Fredericksburgh, while the rest, under M‘Clellan, Were moving up the peninsula towards Richmond; and that, as the enemy withdrew to meet the latter, a junction of the two divisions should take place, so as to carry out MClellan’s plans without uncovering Washington. Buta month was spent in besieging Yorktown; when the attempt was made to form the junction with M‘Dowell it involved the separation of the two wings by the little river Chick- ahominy ; and in May the spring rains turned the little stream into a wide river, and the army was divided. Joseph E. Johnston, the Confederate commander, at once attacked the weaker wing at Seven Pines and Fair Oaks, but was beaten, and was himself wounded and com- pelled to leave the service fora time. This event gave his place to Robert E. Lee, whose only military service in the war up to this time had been a failure in western Virginia. He was now to begin, in conjunction with Thomas J. (“Stonewall”) Jackson, a series of brilliant campaigns.

285. From Staunton, 100 miles west of Richmond, the Shenandoah valley extends north-east to the Potomac, Whence there is an easy march of 75 miles south-east to Washington. Jackson struck the Union forces in the valley, drove them to the Potomac, and excited such alarm in Washington that M‘Dowell’s troops were hastily withdrawn from Fredericksburgh. Having thus spoiled M‘Clellan’s plan of junction, and taken some 40,000 men from him, Jackson hurried to Richmond. Lee met him on the north side of the Chickahominy, and the two armies

Hen- yr

i

of it and the forts, while the fleet cleared the river of

and Vicksburgh, where the Confederate works were situated

STATES 777

attacked M‘Clellan’s right wing at Gaines’s Mill, and cut

the connexion between it and its base of supplies on the

York river (June 26). Unable to reunite his Wings and regain his base, M‘Clellan was forced to draw his right

wing south, and attempt to establish another base on the James river, Lee and Jackson followed hard on his retreat, and the ‘‘seven days’ battles” were the most The desperate of the war up to this time, the principal battles “seven being those of Savage’s Station (June 29), Glendale (June vce ‘ 30), and Malvern Hill (July 1). The last ended the series, ; for M‘Clellan had reached the James, and his army had

fixed itself in a position from which it could not be driven.

286. Pope had succeeded M‘Dowell, and Jackson at- Pope’s tacked and beat him on the battle ground of Bull Run cam- (August 29), driving his army towards Washington, P&8”- M‘Clellan was at once recalled to defend the capital. As he withdrew from the peninsula, Lee joined Jackson, and the whole Confederate army, passing to the north-west of Washington, began the first invasion of the North. As it passed through the mountains of north-western Maryland, the army of the Potomac, which had been brought up through Maryland in pursuit, reached its rear, and forced it to turn and fight the battle of Antietam, or Sharps- Antietam. burgh, September 17. Both sides claimed the victory, but Lee was compelled to recross the Potomac to his former position. M‘Clellan was blamed for the slowness of his pursuit and was removed, Burnside (p. 788) becom- ing his successor. The only

great event of his term of command was his attempt to storm the heights behind Fredericksburgh (December 13) and the terrible slaughter Freder- of his defeat. Hooker was then put in his place. The icks- year 1862 thus closed with the opposing armies in about “8b the same positions as at the beginning of the war.

287. At the beginning of the war the people and leaders of the North had not desired to interfere with slavery, but circumstances had been too strong for them. Lincoln had declared that he meant to save the Union as he best could,—by preserving slavery, by destroying it, or by destroying part and preserving part of it. Just after the battle of Antietam he issued his proclamation calling on The the revolted States to return to their allegiance before the Emanci- following January 1, otherwise their slaves would be ee declared freemen. No State returned, and the threatened cnet declaration was issued January 1, 1863. As president Lincoln could issue no such declaration 3 as commander-in-

chief of the armies and navies of the United States he

could issue directions only as to the territory within his lines ; but the Emancipation Proclamation applied only to territory outside of his lines. It has therefore been debated whether the proclamation was in reality of any force, It may fairly be taken as an announcement of the policy which was to guide the army, and as a declaration of freedom taking effect as the lines advanced, At all events, this was its exact effect. Its international import- ance was far greater. The locking up of the world’s source of cotton-supply had been a general calamity, and the Confederate Government and people had steadily expected that the English and French Governments, or at least one of them, would intervene in the war for the purpose of raising the blockade and releasing the Southern cotton: The conversion of the struggle into a crusade against slavery made intervention impossible for Govern- ments whose peoples had now a controlling influence on their policy and intelligence enough to understand the issue which had now been made.

288. Confederate agents in England were numerous and Confede. active. Taking advantage of every loophole inthe British rate Foreign Enlistment Act, they built and sent to sea the Privat- “Alabama” and “ Florida,” which

for a time almost drove °”* American commerce from the ocean. Whenever they were

XXIII. — 98

Mur- frees- boro’.

Vicks- burgh.

Port Hudson, Opening of the Missis- sippi.

Chicka- mauga.

778 UN LTED

closely pursued by United States vessels they took refuge in neutral ports until a safe opportunity occurred to put to sea again. Another, the “Georgia,” was added in 1863. All three were destroyed in 1864,—the “ Florida” by a violation of Brazilian neutrality, the “ Georgia ” after an attempt to transfer her to neutral owners, and the “‘ Alabama ” after a brief sea-fight with the ‘‘ Kearsarge,” off Cherbourg (June 19). Confederate attempts to have iron- clads equipped in England and France were unsuccessful.

289. In the west (§ 281) Bragg (p. 788), now in com- mand of the Confederate forces, turned the right of the Union line in southern Tennessee, and began an invasion of Kentucky about the time when Lee was beginning his invasion of the North. Carrying off much booty, he retired into Tennessee. Towards the end of the year Rosecrans moved forward from Nashville to attack him. The armies met at Murfreesboro’, and fought a drawn battle during the last day of the year 1862 and the first two days of January 1863. The western armies were now in four parts,—that of Rosecrans near Murfreesboro’, that of Grant near Corinth, that of Schofield in Missouri and Arkansas, and that of Banks in Louisiana. The com- plete opening of the Mississippi being the great object, the burden of the work fell to Grant, who was nearest the river. Vicksburgh was the objective point, and Grant at first attempted to take it from the opposite or western bank of the river. Failing here, he moved south to a favourable

point for crossing, and used the river fleet to transfer his army to the eastern bank. He was now on the Vicksburgh side of the river. J. E. Johnston was north-east of him, at Jackson, with a weaker army ; the bulk of the Confederate forces was at or near Vicksburgh, under Pemberton. Johnston wanted no siege of Vicks- burgh ; Pemberton wanted no junction with Johnston, which might cost him the glory of defeating Grant ; and Grant solved their difficulty for them. Moving north-east he struck Johnston's army near Jackson, beat it, and drove it out of any possibility of junction. He then turned westward, fighting several sharp battles as he went, and late in May he had Pemberton shut up in Vicksburgh. His lines were maintained for six weeks, and then (July 4, 1863) the finest Confederate army in the west sur- rendered. Port Hudson surrendered to Banks five days later: the Mississippi was opened from end to end, and the Confederacy was cleft in twain. From this time com- munication between the two parts of the Confederate States became increasingly more difficult, and the transfer of supplies from the rich country west of the Mississippi was almost at an end. There was little further fighting to the west of the great river, except an intermittent guerilla warfare and the defeat of Banks's expedition against north- western Louisiana early in 1864. When the war ceased in the east, the isolated western half of the Confederacy fell with it.

290. While Grant was besieging Vicksburgh, Rose- crans had begun to move from the eastern end of the Union line in Tennessee against Bragg at Chattanooga. He drove Bragg through the place, and a dozen miles beyond it, into Georgia. Here the Confederate army took position behind Chickamauga creek, and inflicted a complete defeat upon the pursuing Union forces (September 19-20, 1863). Thomas covered the rear stubbornly, and secured a safe retreat into Chattanooga, but the posses- sion of the mountains around the place enabled Bragg to cut off almost all roads of further retreat and establish a siege of Chattanooga. Bragg was so confident of success that he detached a part of his army, under Longstreet, to besiege Knoxville, in eastern Tennessee. Grant was ordered to take command at Chattanooga, and went thither, taking Sherman and others of the officers who

had taken part in his Vicksburgh campaign. He soon opened new routes of communication to the rear, supplied and reinforced his army, and began to prepare for the storming of the mountains before him. His assaults on Lookout Mountain and Missionary Ridge (November 23- took: | 25) were among the most dramatic and successful of the Moun i” 1 war. Bragg was driven out of all his positions and back Mis | to Dalton, where Davis was compelled by the complaints Se 1 of his people to remove him, and appoint J. E. Johnston ~ his successor. Longstreet broke up the siege of Knox- ville, and made good his retreat across the mountains into Virginia to join Lee.

291. The army of the Potomac, under Hooker, kept its place near Fredericksburgh (§ 286) until May 1863. Hooker then began a movement across the Rapidan to- wards Richmond, and was defeated in the battle of Chancellorsville (May 2-3). The victorious army suffered Chane). | the severest of losses in the death of Jackson, but this did lowil not check Lee’s preparations for a second invasion of the North, which began the next month. As his army moved northwards, very nearly on the route which it had followed the year before, the army of the Potomac held a parallel course through Maryland and into Pennsylvania. The Confederate forces penetrated farther than in 1862; their advance came almost to Harrisburgh, and threw the neighbouring Northern cities into great alarm ; but the pursuing army, now under Meade (p. 790), met Lee at Gettysburgh (July 1-3) and defeated him. The Con- Getty federate army, assaulting its enemy in very strong posi- hugh — tions, suffered losses which were almost irreparable, and it was never again quite the same army as before Gettys- burgh. Some Northern critics were inclined to think that Lee’s former successes had really been due to Jackson’s genius, and that he had lost his power in losing Jackson. The campaign of 1864 was to prove the contrary. The customary retreat brought the two armies back to very neatly the same positions which they had occupied at the beginning of the war, the Rappahannock flowing between them. Here they remained until the following spring. __

292. The turning-point of the war was evidently in the The ar early days of July 1863, when the victories of Vicksburgh e and Gettysburgh came together. :

[usTory,

The national Govern- 5 ment had at the beginning cut the Confederate States down to a much smaller area than might well have been ex- pected ; its armies had pushed the besieging lines far into the hostile territory, and had held the ground which they had gained; and the war itself had developed a class of generals who cared. less for the conquest of territory than for attacking and destroying the opposing armies. The great drafts on the future which the credit of the Federal Government enabled the North to make gave it also a startling appearance of prosperity ; so far from feeling the war, it was driving production of every kind to a higher pitch that ever before. The cities began to show greater evidences of wealth, and new rich men appeared, many of them being the “shoddy aristocracy,” who had acquired wealth by mis-serving the Government, but more being able men who had grasped the sudden opportunities offered by the changes of affairs.

293. The war had not merely developed improved weapons and munitions of war; it had also spurred the people on to a more careful attention to the welfare of the soldiers, the fighting men drawn from their own number, The Sanitary Commission, the Christian Commission, and other voluntary associations for the physical and moral care of soldiers received and disbursed very large sums. The national Government was paying an average amount of $2,000,000 per day for the prosecution of the wal and, in spite of the severest taxation, the debt grew to $500,000,000 in June 1862, to twice that amount a yeat

1863-1864.] UNI PF Dp

later, to $1,700,000,000 in June 1864, and reached its maximum August 31, 1865,—$2,845,907,626. But this lavish expenditure was directed with energy and judg- ment. The blockading fleets were kept in perfect order and with every condition of success. The railroad and telegraph were brought into systematic use for the first time in modern warfare. Late in 1863 Stanton, the secretary of war, moved two corps of 23,000 men from Washington to Chattanooga, 1200 miles, in seven days. A year later he moved another corps, 15,000 strong, from Tennessee to Washington in eleven days, and within a month had collected vessels and transferred it to North Carolina. Towards the end of the war, when the capacity of the

railroad for war purposes had been fully learned, these sudden transfers of troops by the Federal Covern- ment almost neutralized the Confederate advantage of interior lines.

294. On the other hand, the Federal armies now held almost all the great Southern through lines of railroad, except the Georgia lines and those which supplied Lee from the South (§ 296). The want of the Southern people was merely growing in degree, not in kind. The yp: conscription, sweeping from the first, had become omni- | vorous ; towards the end of the war every man between

seventeen and fifty-five was legally liable to service, and in

practice the only limit was physical incapacity. In 1863

the Federal Government also was driven to conscription. . The first attempts to carry it out resulted in forcible

resistance in several places, the worst being the “draft riots” in New York (July), when the city was in the hands of the mob for several days. All the resistance was put down ; but exemptions and substitute purchases were so freely permitted that the draft in the North had little effect except as a stimulus to the States in filling their quotas of volunteers by voting bounties. md 295. Harly in 1864 Grant (§ 290) was made lieutenant- P general, with the command of all the armies. He went to Washington to meet Lee, leaving Sherman to face Johnston at Dalton. Events had thus brought the two ablest of the Confederate generals opposite the two men who were the best product of the war on the Northern side. It remained to be seen whether Lee, with his army of northern Virginia, could resist the methods by which Grant and Sherman had won almost all the great table-land which occupies the heart of the country east of the Mississippi. And it remained to be seen, also, whether the reputation which Grant had won at a distance from the political atmosphere of Washington would not wither in his new position. It was necessary for him to take the overland route to Richmond, or meet M‘Clellan’s fate. He did not hesitate. Early in May 1864, with about twice as many men (125,000) as Lee, he entered the “Wilderness” on the other side of the Rapidan. At the | same time he sent 30,000 men, under Butler, up the | James river; but this part of his plan

proved of com- , paratively little service. | 296. Two weeks’ hard fighting in the Wilderness and | at Spotsylvania Court House (May 5-18), and four days “more at North Anna (May 23-27), with flank move- ments as a means of forcing Lee out of positions too Strong to be taken from the front, brought the army of the Potomac to Cold Harbor, in the immediate defences of Richmond. One assault, bloodily repulsed, showed that there was no thoroughfare in this direction. Lee ad so diligently prepared that his position became stronger as he was driven into greater concentration; and Grant began to move along the eastern face of the line of Con- federate fortifications, striking at them as he passed them, but finding no weak spot. As he crossed the James river aud reached Petersburgh, he came at last into dangerous

proximity to the railroads which brought Lee’s supplies Peters- from the South—the Weldon Railroad, running directly burgh. south, the Danville Railroad, running south-west, and the Southside Railroad, running west. At this end of his line, therefore, Lee kept the best part.of his troops, and resisted with increasing stubbornness Grant’s efforts to carry his lines farther to the south-west or to reach the railroads. Resorting to the plan which had been so effective with M‘Clellan, he sent Early ona raid up the Shenandoah Valley, to threaten Washington (J uly). But Early was not Jackson, and he returned with no more success than the frightening of the authorities at Wash- ington. Grant put Sheridan in command in the valley, and he beat Marly at Cedar Creek (October), scattering his army for the remainder of the war. In August Grant succeeded in seizing a few miles of the Weldon Railroad ; but Lee brought his supplies in waggons round that portion held by Grant. Late in the year this was stopped by the destruction of some twenty miles of the road. Here Grant was himself stopped for the time. Lee had so taken advantage of every defensive position that Grant could not reach the nearer of the other two rail- roads without an advance of 15 miles, or the further one without a circuit of about 40 miles. The two armies remained locked until the following spring. Grant, how- ever, was operating still more successfully elsewhere through Sherman.

297. Sherman (§ 295) had moved on the same day as Grant (May 5). Jobnston's retreat was skilfully con-John- ducted ; every position was held to the last moment; and Ston's . it was not until the middle of July that Sherman had "t+: forced him back to his strongest lines of defence—those around Atlanta. 'The Confederate forces could not re- treat much beyond Atlanta, for the great central table- land here begins to fall into the plains which stretch to the Atlantic. Sherman had now been brought so far from his base that the two armies were much more nearly on an equality than in May; and Johnston was preparing for the decisive battle when Davis made Sher- man's way clear. A feature in Davis's conduct of the war had been his extraordinary tendency to favouritism.

He had been forced to take Johnston as commander in Georgia ; and the widespread alarm caused by Johnston's inexplicable persistence in retreating gave him the excuse he desired. He removed Johnston (July 17), naming Hood (p. 789), a "fighting general," as his successor. Before the end of the month Hood had made three furious attacks on Sherman and been beaten in all of them. Moving around Atlanta, as Grant was doing around Peters- Atlanta. burgh, Sherman cut the supplying railroads, and at last was able to telegraph to Washington (September 2), "Atlanta is ours, and fairly won."

298. Hood, by the direct command of Davis, then adopted a course which led to the downfall of the Confed- eracy in the following spring. Moving from between Sherman and the open country, he set out for Tennessee, expecting to draw Sherman after him. Sherman sent Thomas (p. 790) to Nashville, called out the resources of the North-West to support him, and left Hood to his march and his fate. Hood reached Nashville ; but in Nashville. the middle of December Thomas burst out upon him, routed his army, and pursued it so vigorously that it never again reunited. One of the two great armies of the Confederacy had disappeared; and Sherman, with one of the finest armies of the war, an army of 60,000 picked veteran troops, stood on the edge of the Georgia mountains, without an organized force between him and the back of Lee's army in Virginia.

299. In the meantime the presidential election of 1864 Election had taken place, resulting in the re-election of Lincoln, of 1864.

with Andrew Johnson as vice-president. The Demo- cratic convention had declared that, after four years of failure to restore the Union by war, during which the constitution had been violated in all its parts under the plea of military necessity, a cessation of hostilities ought to be obtained, and had nominated M‘Clellan (p. 789) and Pendleton. Farragut’s victory in Mobile Bay (August 5), by which he sealed up the last port, except Wilming- ton, of the blockade-runners, and the evidently staggering condition of the Confederate resistance in the east and the west, were the sharpest commentaries on the Demo- cratic platform ; and its candidates carried only three of

Admis- the twenty-five States which took part in the election. sion of The thirty-sixth State—Nevada—had been admitted in Nevada. 1864.

Sherman’s 300. Sherman began (November 16, 1864) the execu- march —_ tion of his own plan,—to ‘“‘send back his wounded, make cae a wreck of the railroad, and, with his effective army, move andthe through Georgia, smashing things to the sea.” He had

Carolinas. been drawing supplies from a point 500 miles distant, over a single railroad. He now destroyed the railroad and the telegraph, cut off his communication with the North, and moved towards the Atlantic coast. The sea was reached on December 12, and Savannah was taken on the 20th. He had threatened so many points, and kept the enemy in so much doubt as to his objects, that there had hardly been men enough in his front at any one time to make a skirmish line. On January 15, 1865, the army moved north from Savannah, through Columbia, to Fayetteville, N.C. The march had forced the evacuation of Charleston and the other coast cities, and their garri- sons had been put by Davis under command of Johnston as a last hope. Wilmington, which had been captured by a land and sea force on the day when Sherman left Savannah, was an opening for communication with Wash- ington; and it would have been possible for Sherman, with Wilmington as a base, to crush Johnston at once. All that he cared to do was to hold Johnston where he was while Grant should begin his final attack on Lee. 301. During the opening days of March 1865 Sheridan, with a body of cavalry, moved from the Shenandoah Valley along the James river to a

junction with Grant (§ 296). On the way he had ruined the canal and railroad communication directly west from Richmond, and had reduced Lee to dependence on the two railroads running south-west. Grant resumed his attempts to work his lines farther round to the south of Petersburgh; and, with each successful advance, Lee was compelled to lengthen his thin line of men. Sheridan was put in command on the extreme left; he pushed forward to Five Forks, de- stroyed the Southside Railroad (April 1), and held his ground. Giving Lee time to lengthen his line to meet this new danger, Grant gave the signal for a general advance the next day. It was successful everywhere ; Petersburgh was taken, and Richmond the next day ; Davis and the other political leaders fled to North Carolina; and Lee retreated westward, hoping to join Surrender Johnston. The pursuit was too hot, and he surrendered of Lee. (April 9). All the terms of surrender named by Grant were generous: no private property was to be surrendered ; the men were even to retain their horses, ‘‘ because they would need them for the spring ploughing and farm- work”; and both officers and men were to be dismissed on parole, not to be disturbed by the United States Government so long as they preserved their parole and did not violate the laws. It should be stated, also, to Grant’s honour that, when the politicians afterwards undertook to repudiate some of the terms of surrender, he personally intervened and used the power of his own name to force an exact fulfilment. Johnston surrendered on much the

Five Forks.

STATES

same terms (April 26), after an unsuccessful effort at a $p broader settlement. All organized resistance had now o% Join ceased ; Union cavalry were ranging the South, picking up Ston, Government property or arresting leaders ; but it was not until May that the last detached parties of Confederates, particularly beyond the Mississippi, gave up the contest, 302. Just after Lee’s surrender President Lincoln died Deat by assassination (April 15), the theatrical crime of a half. lina, | crazed enthusiast. Even this event did not impel the American people to any vindictive use of their success for the punishment of individuals. In the heat of the war, in 1862, Congress had so changed the criminal law that the punishment of treason

and rebellion should no longer be death alone, but death or fine and imprisonment, Even this modified punishment was not inflicted. There was no hanging for treason ; some of the leaders were im- prisoned for a time, but were never brought to trial. The leader and president of the Confederate States is living (1887) quietly at his home in Mississippi; and the vice-president, before his death, had returned to the Congress of the United States as an efficient and respected member, 303. The armies of the Confederacy are supposed to __ have been at their strongest (700,000) at the beginning of The 1863 ; and it is doubtful whether they contained 200,000 ppasi men in March 1865. The dissatisfaction of the Southern “” people at the manner in which Davis had managed the war seems to have been profound; and it was only con- verted into hero-worship by the ill-advised action of the Federal Government in arresting and imprisoning him. Desertion had become so common in 1864, and the attempts of the Confederate Government to force the people into the ranks had become so arbitrary, that the bottom of the Confederacy, the democratic elements which had given it all the success it had ever obtained, had dropped out of it before Sherman moved northward from Savannah ; in some parts the people had really taken up arms against the conscripting officers. On the contrary, the numbers of the Federal armies increased steadily until March 1865, when they were a few hundreds over a million. As soon as organized resistance ceased, the disbanding of the men began; they were sent home at the rate of about 300,000 a month, about 50,000 being retained in service as a standing army. ‘The debt reached its maximum Coto August 31, 1865, amounting to $2,845,907,626.56. Some the – $800,000,000 of revenue had also been spent mainly on the war; States, cities, counties, and towns had spent their own taxation and accumulated their own debts for war purposes ; the payments for pensions will probably amount to $1,500,000,000 in the end; the expenses of the Con- federacy can never be known; the property destroyed by the Federal armies and by Confederate armies can hardly be estimated ; and the money value ($2,000,000,000) of the slaves in the South was wiped out by the war. Altogether, while the cost of the war cannot be exactly calculated, $8,000,000,000 is a moderate estimate.] 304. In return for such an expenditure, and the death ~~— | of probably 300,000 men on each side, the abiding gam” | was incalculable. The rich section, which had been kept back in the general development by a single institution, and had been a clog on the advance of the whole county, had been dragged up to a~~

~~level with the rest of the county. Free labour was soon to show itself far superior to slave labour in the South ; and the South was to reap the largest material gain from the destruction of the Civil War (§ 314). The persistent policy of paying the debt 1m~~ mediately resulted in the higher taxation falling on the richer North and West ; and the new wealth of the South will for ever escape the severe taxation which the other sections have been compelled to feel. As a result of the struggle the moral stigma of slavery was removed. 2

[HISTORY,

CN 1 fed

power of the nation, never before asserted openly, had made a place for itself; and yet the continuing power of the States saved the national power from a development into centralized tyranny. And the new power of the nation, guaranteeing the restriction of government to a single nation in central North America, gave security against any introduction of international relations, inter- national armament, international wars, and continual war taxation into the territory occupied by the United States. An approach for four years to the international policy of Europe had given security against its future necessity. Finally, democracy in America had certainly shown its ability to maintain the unity of its empire,

1864-1868.]

XI, THE RECONSTRUCTED NATION: 1865-87,

305. The Federal Government had begun the war with an honest expression of its determination not to interfere with slavery ; the progress of the war had forced it into passing the 13th amendment in 1865, abolishing slavery in the United States for ever. In much the same way circum- stances were driving it into interference with what had always been regarded as the rights of the States. In the latter case the process was certain to find an obstacle in Lincoln’s successor, Johnson. He had been elected, like Tyler, to the comparatively unimportant office of vice- president in order to gain the votes of War Democrats ; and now the dominant party found itself with a president opposed to its fundamental views of the powers of the Federal

Government. The case was worse for Johnson, since the war had built up a new party. Until 1861 the Republican party had been a mixture of a strong Whig element and a weak Democratic element ; now it was a real party, and demanded complete loyalty from its leaders, not skilful compromises between its two elements. Just as in the cases of Seward, Sumner, Trumbull, and very many of its original leaders, the party was now ready to repudiate its leaders if they did not come up to its ideas.

306. The universal idea in 1861 had been that the States were to be forced to return with all their rights unimpaired. This original notion was seriously limited

‘ by the Emancipation Proclamation of 1862-63 3 as soon

as the president opened a door, by demanding a recogni- tion of the abolition of slavery as a condition precedent to

_ the return of a State, the way was just as open for the

_ he had a clear field before him, meet until December.

) had passed the

imposition of whatever conditions Congress as well should think essential to an abiding peace. But Congress was not called on to face the difficulty for some time. President Lincoln went on to reorganize civil government in Virginia, Tennessee, Arkansas, and Louisiana, by giving amnesty to such voters as would swear to support the Government of the United States and the abolition of slavery, and recognizing the State officers elected by such voters, When Johnson succeeded to the presidency in April 1865 for Congress was not to Before that time he had re- governments of the seceding States; they

13th amendment (§ 125); and they were ready to apply for readmission to Congress. Tennessee Was readmitted in 1866 by Congress; but the other seceding States were refused recognition for a time.

307. It was not possible that slave-owners should pass

organized the

_ at one step from the position of absolute masters to that

of political equality with their late slaves. Their State legislation assumed at once a very paternal character, Every means was taken, in the passage of contract and Vagrant laws, and enactments of that nature, to force the freedmen to work; and the legislation seemed to the Northern people a re-establishment of slavery under a hew name. Johnson had a very unhappy disposition for such a state of affairs; he had strong convictions, great

STATES Feil

stubbornness, and a hasty, almost reckless, habit of speech. Quarrel As soon as it became clear that Congress did not intend between to readmit the Southern States at once he began (February a 1866) to denounce Congress in public speeches as “NO president, Congress” so long as it consisted of representatives from

but part of the States. The quarrel grew rapidly more

bitter ; the Congressional elections of 1866 made it cer-

tain that the Republicans would have a two-thirds majority

in both houses through the rest of Johnson’s term of office ;

and the majority passed over the veto (§ 113) every bill

which Johnson vetoed. Thus were passed the Freedmen’s

Bureau Bill (1866) for the protection of the emancipated negroes, the Act for the admission of Nebraska, with equal Admis- suffrage for blacks and whites (1867), the Tenure of Office sion of Bill, making the assent of the senate necessary to removals, Nebraska, which had always been regarded as within the absolute

power of the president (1867), and the Reconstruction Acts

(1867). The increasing bitterness of the quarrel between

the president and the majority in Congress led to the im- Impeach-
peachment of the president in 1868 for removing Stanton, ment of the
secretary of war, without the assent of the senate s bat ia a on trial by the
senate a two-thirds majority for conviction °°” could not be obtained, and
Johnson served out his term.

308. The Reconstruction Acts divided the seceding States into military
districts, each under command of a general officer, who was to leave to the
State Governments then in existence such powers as he should not consider
to be used to deprive the negroes of their rights. The State Governments of
the seceding States were to be considered provisional only, until
conventions, elected without the exclusion of the negroes, but with the
exclusion of the leading Confederates, should form new or “ reconstructed”

State Governments, on a basis of manhood suffrage, and

their legislatures should ratify the 14th amendment to The 14th the
constitution (§ 125). This amendment, passed by amend- Congress in 1866,
was in five sections, but had three main ™t- divisions. (1) All persons born
or naturalized in the United States were declared citizens of the United
States

and of their States, and the States were forbidden to abridge the “ privileges
or immunities” of such citizens.

This was to override the Dred Scott decision (§ 249).

(2) The representation of the States in Congress was to

be reduced in proportion to the number of persons whom

they should exclude from the elective franchise. This

was to induce the States to adopt negro suffrage. On

the other hand, specified classes of Confederate office- holders were excluded from office until Congress should remove their disabilities. (3) The war debts of the Confederacy and the seceding States were declared void

for ever, and the war debt of the United States was guaranteed. Congress was given power to enforce all

these provisions by “ appropriate legislation.”

309. The presidential election of 1868 sealed the process Election of reconstruction. The Democrats opposed it, and nomin- of 1868. ated Seymour (p. 790) and Blair; the Republicans endorsed it, and nominated Grant (p. 788) and Colfax (p. 788). Virginia, Mississippi, and Texas were the only States of the late Confederacy which were excluded from this elec- tion ; all the rest had been reconstructed, and readmitted by Congress in June 1868; and the Republican candidates carried twenty-six of the thirty- four voting States, and were elected. The legislatures of the reconstructed States, representing mainly the negroes freed by the war, were devoted supporters of the new order of things ; and their ratifications secured the necessary three-fourths of the States to make the 14th amendment a part of the con- stitution (1868). Congress went on to propose a 15th The 15th amendment, forbidding the United States, or any State, 2mend- to limit or take away the right of suffrage by reason of “°™ race, colour, or previous condition of servitude. This was

Mexico.

Alaska. Treaty

of Wash-

ington.

The ©Vir- ginius” case,

The Chinese.

“ Dyna- miters.”

The

ratified by the necessary number of States, and became a part of the constitution (1870). Ratification of it was imposed as an additional condition on Virginia, Missis- sippi, and Texas, which had rejected the original terms of readmission. They accepted it, and were readmitted (1870). It was not until January 30, 1871, that all the States were once more represented in Congress.

310. The foreign affairs of the United States during this period took on a new appearance. The country’s promptness in disarming at the end of the war put it under no disadvantage in dealing with other nations ; power and pacific intentions were united in the act. The successful completion of the Atlantic cable (1866) gave a celerity and directness to diplomacy which was well suited to American methods. The tone of American complaint at the continued presence of French soldiers in Mexico grew more emphatic as the success of the war became assured; and, at the end of the war, significant movements of troops to the Mexican frontier led the French emperor to withdraw his support of Maximilian. Alaska was purchased from Russia in 1867. The treaty of Washington (1871) provided for the settlement by arbitration of the “Alabama” disputes, of the north- western boundary, and of the claims of Canada for damages for use of the shore by American fishermen. The capture by a Spanish man-of-war of the ‘“ Virginius,” a vessel claiming American nationality, and the execution of a part of her

crew (1873), threatened to interrupt friendly relations with Spain ; but the rupture was averted by proof that the vessel's papers were false. Chinese immigration had grown largely on the Pacific coast. There were riotous attacks on the Chinese by worthless white men ; and many others did not feel that they were a desirable political addition to the population of the United States. A treaty with China was obtained (1880), by which the limitation of Chinese immigration was allowed. So, also, the raising of money in the United States to assist the destruction of private and public buildings in England by some of the more desperate of the Irish people (1885) gave England reason for discontent. But the American Government had no power in the premises. The matter was under the exclusive jurisdiction of the State Governments ; and, as soon as these began to apply the common law to the case, the "dynamite subscriptions" disappeared. Further difficulties made their appearance as to the Canadian fisheries (1886-87). When American fishing-vessels bought ice or bait in Canadian ports, the

Canadian Canadian Government seized and condemned them, on the

fisheries.

Gold.

Silver.

Petrol. eum.

Coal.

Natural gas.

Manu- factures.

ground that such purchases were acts "preparatory to fishing in Canadian waters." Retaliatory measures were suggested, but no full retaliatory system has been adopted, nor has the dispute yet been settled (1887).

311. The prosperity of the United States knew no cessation. It had been found that gold was not confined to California. In 1858 it had been discovered in Color- ado, at Pike's Peak. It has since been found in most of the Pacific States and Territories. Silver, a metal hardly known hitherto in the United States, was discovered in Nevada (1858) ; and this metal also has been found to be widely scattered over the Pacific coast. Petroleum was found in north-western Pennsylvania (1859), and the enormous drain of this oil from the earth still continues without apparently affecting the reservoir. The coal-fields of the country began to be understood clearly. Taylor, in 1848, thought that the coal-area of the United States amounted to 133,000 square miles; it was estimated in 1883 at over 200,000 square miles. Natural gas has since come into use, and has made production of many kinds cleaner, more effective, and cheaper. Manufactures and every variety of production have increased with cumulative

SPATE S

rapidity. In 1860 the largest flouring-mill in the United States was in Oswego, N.Y., the next two in Richmond, Va., and the fourth in New York city; and the capacity of the largest was only 300,000 barrels a year. In 1887 the flour production of Minneapolis, almost unknown in 1860, is 100,000 barrels a week or 5,000,000 barrels a year. The absolute free trade which prevails between the States has resulted in a constant shifting of centres of production, a natural arrival at the best conditions of pro- duction, and an increasing development. Mulhall, perhaps safer as a foreign authority, gives the total manufactures of the United States as £682,000,000 in 1870 and £888,000,000 in 1880, Great Britain coming next with £642,000,000 in 1870 and £758,000,000 in 1880. He

[nIstToRy,

estimates the accumulated wealth of Great Britain at Wealth,

£8,310,000,000 in 1870 and £8,960,000,000 in 1880, an increase of £650,000,000, and that of the United States at £6,320,000,000 in 1870 and £7,880,000,000 in 1880, an increase of £1,560,000,000. If he had followed the American census returns his value for 1880 would have been 25 per cent. larger. In 1870 the United States stood

_third in wealth ; in 1880 they had passed France in the

race, and stood at least second. The country whose popu- lation has been developed within 280 years does already one-third of the world's mining, one-fourth of its manu- facturing, and one-fifth of its agriculture; and at least one-sixth of the world's wealth is already concentrated in the strip of territory in central North America which is the home of the United States.

312. Of the 290,000 niles of railroad in the world, probably 135,000 are in the United States. Of the 600,000 miles of telegraph lines, more than a fourth are in the United States ; and the American telephone lines are probably still longer in the aggregate. The new

development of the American railways began in 1869, Railways

when Vanderbilt consolidated the Hudson River and New York Central Railroads and formed a trunk line to the west. It was undoubtedly hastened by the completion of the Central Pacific line in that year, and it has resulted in a universal tendency to consolidation of railways and the evolution of "systems," under combined managements (§ 273). The coincident introduction of Bessemer steel rails, the steady increase of weight carried by trains, and concentrated competition have reduced railway freight rates through the whole of this period. The average rates per ton per mile were 1:7 cents in New York in 1870 and 0°8 in 1880, 2:4 cents in Ohio in 1870 and 0°9 in 1880. The persistent effects of such a process on the industries of so large a country can hardly be described.

313. The extraordinary stimulus given to a new terri: el tory, if it has any basis for production, by the introduction ™

of a new railway, is also quite beyond description. Most ™ of the Western railways have had to build up their own traffic ; the railway has been built, and the sales of lands have afterward brought into existence the towns and even States which are to support it. Nebraska was described in the Government reports of 1854 as a desert country, hopelessly unfitted for agriculture, and the maps of the time put it down as a part of the "Great American Desert." It is now one of the leading agricultural States of the Union, with a population of a million ; and Dakota is waiting only for the

legal form of admission to become a State. The profits of railway construction, the oppo tunities for skilful management in the development of territory, and the spice of gambling which permeated the whole were great temptations to Americans to embark in the business. The miles of railway constructed pet annum, which had been from 1000 to 3000 (averagmg about 1500 miles) for the period 1859-68, rose to 4619 miles in 1869, to 6070 miles in 1870, and to 7379 miles

7

“5 Of

tress fe

1868-1876.] UNIT ese Dp

in 1871. Masses of labourers were brought into situations from which they could not easily escape ; and masses of capital were locked up in railways which were finally un- productive, and resulted only in total loss. The result

wncial was the financial crisis of 1873, from which the country

has hardly yet fully recovered.

314. For the first time in the history of the United States, the South has taken a normal part in all this development (§ 304), though it was not until about 1885 that Southern progress was fully understood by the rest of the country. Staggering under a load of poverty and discouragement which might have appalled any people, with the addition of social problems which no other country has solved with any great satisfaction, the Southern people began to feel for the first time the healthy atmosphere of free labour. The former slave is a free labourer, and the white man has gone to work; white labour produced 10 per cent. of the cotton crop of 1860 and 55 per cent. of that of 1886. The last eighteen slave- labour crops of cotton amounted to 51,000,000 bales ; the first eighteen free-labour crops amounted to 75,000,000 bales, And the latter figures are deceptive from the fact that, in their period, the South had turned a large percentage of its labour and capital into industries which had not been possible, only longed for, under

the slave system. Cotton- seeds were waste under slavery: 600,000 tons of them were crushed in 1886, giving an entirely new production of $12,000,000 per annum of cotton-seed oil. Southern railways, which had made but a meagre comparison with those of the North and West in 1860, began to assume something of the network appearance of the latter ; they too began to concentrate into “systems,” to reduce rates and improve service, and to develop new territory. Southern manufactures began to affect Northern markets : cotton-mills in the South began to reap the advantages of their immediate contiguity to their raw material, Pennsylvania ironmasters were startled as their product was undersold in the Philadelphia markets by Southern iron; and the great mineral fields of Tennessee and northern Georgia, Alabama, and Mississippi, over which Sherman’s and Hood’s men had so lately been tramping and fighting, were brought into notice and development. Wonderful as the general progress of the United States has been during this period, the share of the new South under free labour has been one of the most remarkable phases in it,

315. The population rose from 31,443,321 in 1860 to

~ $8,558,371 in 1870 and 50,155,783 in 1880. At the

normal rate of increase up to 1860—one-third for each ten years—the increase from 1860 to 1870 should have been about ten and a half millions, instead of seven millions. The difference represents the physical influences of the civil war. This influence was shown most plainly in the Southern States, notably in South Carolina and Alabama, Which had hardly any increase, and a real decrease in adult Males. It should also be noticed that natural checks on

the increase of population are plainly perceptible in the

Atlantic States in 1880, and were probably in operation, to a less extent, in 1860-70, though they were made in- distinguishable by the war. The increase in 1870-80 at the former normal rate should have been a little over a million more than it was. The tendency will be more evident in future, but it ought to be allowed for in

1860-70,

316. The material prosperity of the country brought its own disadvantages. The sudden development of wealth gave the country for the first time a distinct wealthy

fic) Class, not engaged in production of any kind, and very often having none of the characteristics of the people who

are the real strength of the country. The inevitable

extravagance of Government management, aggravated by

a period of civil war, when the people were disposed to

excuse almost any error of detail for which good motives could be shown, had its reflex influence on the people, as well as on the Governments of the nation, the States, and the cities. An era of legal tender paper currency (§ 272), legally unvarying in value, but showing its effects in the constant shiftings of price in every other thing, brought uncertainty as to every article, price, and transaction, The people had learned that “unhappy lesson —that there is an easier way to make a dollar than by working for it” ; and it was not long before speculation among the people called out its correlative of dishonesty among Government officials. Money was lavished on the navy ; in expendi- tures on that branch of the service the United States stood third or fourth among the nations, while the effec- tive results were discouraging, “ Rings” of politicians obtained control of the larger cities. The “Tweed ring ” in New York city was overthrown in 1872; but New York was not the only city of corruption : Philadelphia, Chicago, and almost every city large enough to have fat opportunities for fraud and to deprive universal suffrage of the general acquaintance of neighbours, each fell under control of its “ring,” and was plundered without mercy. Corruption even attacked the judiciary; for the first time American judges were found who were willing to prosti- tute their positions, and the members of the “ Erie ring ” were able to hold their ill-gotten railroads because they owned the necessary judges. A “ whisky ring” of distil-

- Rings,”

| lers and Government employees (1874) assumed national

proportions, and robbed the Government of a large per- centage of its internal taxation on spirits. The “star- ‘Star- routes,” in which the contracts for mail transportation routes.” were altered at the discretion of the contractor and the Government after the competition for the contracts had

been decided, gave rise to as great scandals through the connivance of Government agents with dishonest con- tractors. No one who lived in this period will wonder at

the pessimistic tone of the public speeches which marked

the hundredth year of the republic (187 6),

317. The republic had life and vigour in it, and its people showed no disposition to despair before the mass of corruption which confronted them. The newspapers attacked the star-route contractors, and drove the Govern- ment into an attack upon the ring, which broke it up.

The efforts of private individuals, backed by newspapers,

broke up the Tweed ring, banished or imprisoned its members, expelled the corrupt judges from the bench,

and carried destruction into the widespread whisky ring,

Local rings were attacked in city after city, were broken

up and revived again, but always found the struggle for existence more and more desperate. The people have shown themselves almost vindictive in driving out of public life any who have been proved dishonest : when

the ‘Credit Mobilier,” the construction company of the “ Credit Central Pacific Railroad, was shown to have bribed or Mobilier.” influenced members of Congress to vote for it, there is ground for believing that the punishment was distributed

more widely than justice demanded ; and it has come to

be recognized as a decided disadvantage for a public man

to be known as shrewd rather than honest.

318. The completion of reconstruction in 1870, and the The re- adoption of the 15th amendment (8 125), made negro con- suffrage the law of the land, even in the Southern States. in

. overn- The Southern whites were the tax-payers ; the NEZTOES ment, were the majority; and the negro legislatures proved hopelessly corrupt. In one or two States the whites recovered control of their States by hiring their negroes to remain at home on election day, or by threatening them with discharge for voting. Failing in this line of action

in other States, the whites fell into a steady tendency towards violence. A widespread secret society, the ‘“ Ku- “Ku- Klux-Klan,” beginning with the effort to overawe the Klux. negro population by whipping and arson, was rapidly Klan.” driven into political murders. The reconstructed Govern- ments resisted as best they could. They tried to use the force of the State against the offenders ; but the best part of the force of the State was the white element, which was most deeply involved in the resistance to the legal Govern- ment. On the application of the legislature of a State, or of the governor if the legislature cannot be summoned, the president may send Federal troops to suppress rebellion (§ 125). The reconstructed Governments called on Pre- sident Grant for such aid, and received it. But the whites were the stronger race, struggling for property, and know- ing well the letter of the law. They refused to resist the smallest atom of Federal authority: a large force of them, mainly old Confederates and excellent fighting men, who had seized the city of New Orleans and overturned the reconstructed Government (1874), retired quietly before a detachment of United States troops, and allowed the State Government to be restored. The little United States army in the South was kept busy. Wherever it appeared, resist- ance ceased at once, breaking out at the same time else- where. The whites had to gain but a single victory ; as soon as they secured a majority in a State legislature they so arranged the election laws and machinery that a negro majority was thenceforth impossible. The legislatures and

governors, with nearly all the local officers, were then Democrats ; calls for Federal troops ceased at once ; and the Republicans of the North, the dominant party of the nation, were reduced to the necessity of seeing their Southern vote disappear, without the ability to do any- thing to check the process. As the election of 1876 drew near, the reconstructed Governments of all the seceding States, except Florida, South Carolina, and Louisiana, had become Democratic. Civil 319. Congress, which was controlled by the Republicans, Rights had not been idle. The Civil Rights Act (1870) provided ae that fines and damages should be imposed for any attempt to violate or evade the 15th amendment or for con- spiracy to deprive the negroes of the right of suffrage. Election The Election Act (1870) exercised for the first time the Act. right to alter or amend State laws as to Federal elections which the constitution had given to Congress. This was strengthened by another Act in the following year. The Force Force Act (1871) went farther than the instincts of the Act. American people could follow Congress. It provided that any conspiracy or combination strong enough to deprive the negroes of the benefits of the 14th amendment should be evidence of a “denial by the State of the equal protection of the laws” to all its citizens; that the president should be empowered to use the army, navy, and militia to suppress such combinations; that, when any combination should appear in arms, the act should be a rebellion against the United States; and that, in such case, the president should have power to suspend the writ of habeas corpus in the rebellious territory (§ 305).

320. It was plain that the Southern whites meant to govern their States with little present regard to the last two amendments, and that it was impossible to defeat their purpose without cutting up the State system in the South by the roots. Even in 1872 a strong element of the Republican party thought that the party policy had gone too near the latter course. It held a convention of

Liberal its own, under the name of the Liberal Republican party, Re- and nominated Greeley and Brown. The Democratic party, anxious to save local government and State rights in the South, but completely discredited by its opposition to the war, accepted the Liberal Republican platform and

STA Pins [a1story,

nominations. Its action was in one sense a failure ; Greeley had been one of the bitterest and angriest criticg of the Democratic party, and so many of the Democrats refused to vote for him that his defeat was hardly ever doubtful. The Republicans renominated Grant, with Election | Henry Wilson for vice-president ; and they received the of 1g votes of 286 of the 349 electors, and were elected. Tho action of the Democratic party in adopting the Liberal Republican platform, and thus tacitly abandoning its oppo- sition to reconstruction, brought it back into the lines of political conflict and made it a viable party.

321. The election of 1876 was the first really contested Blection | election since 1860. The Democrats nominated Tilden of 18%, and Hendricks (p. 789) and the Republicans Hayes and Wheeler (p. 790). The platforms showed no distinct grounds of party struggle, except that of the ins and the outs. The election turned on the votes of the Southern States in which the reconstructed Governments still held their own or claimed to do so; and the extra-constitutional device of an electoral commission resulted in a decision in favour of Hayes and Wheeler. As a part of the result, some arrangement had been made for the settlement of the Southern difficulties, for Grant immediately withdrew the troops from Florida, South Carolina, and Louisiana, and the reconstructed Governments of those States surrendered without a struggle. All the Southern States were now Democratic ; the negroes had every right but that of voting ; and even this was permitted to a sufficient extent to throw a veil over the well-understood general state of affairs. Colorado, the thirty-eighth State (and the last, Admis. up to 1887), was admitted in 1876 and took part in this sao! election. Colorado,

322. The Hayes administration was a welcome period of calm. The main subject of public interest was mone tary, and much of it was due to the change of conditions during and since the war. In order to sell bonds during the war it had been necessary, not only to make the interest very high (in some cases 7°3 per cent.), but to sell them for the Government’s own depreciated paper. The Act of 1869, to restore the public credit, pledged the faith of the United States that the bonds should be paid in coin.

This had seemed very inequitable to some, but was acquiesced in. When the price of silver had fallen, in Demo | July 1876, to 47d., a ratio for gold and

silver of 20:1, ie) and it was found that an Act of 1873 had dropped the” ” silver dollar from the coinage, the people jumped to the conclusion that this was a trick of the bondholders to secure a further advantage in the payment of their bonds

in the more valuable metal only. It was useless to urge that for forty years before 1873 the silver dollar had been token money, and that its average coinage had been only about $150,000 a year; the current was too strong to be resisted, and Congress passed (1878) an Act to restore

the silver dollar to the coinage, to compel the coinage of

at least $2,000,000 in silver per month, and to make the silver dollar legal tender to any amount. The Act 1s still (1887) in force, in spite of the recommendations of successive presidents and secretaries of the treasury for

its repeal. The operation of refunding had been begun te under the Act of July 14, 1870, authorizing the issue of™

5, 44, and 4 per cent. bonds, to take the place of those at higher interest which should be payable. This first refund-

ing operation was completed in the year of the resumption

of specie payments (1879). The issues were $500,000,000

at 5 per cent., $185,000,000 at 44, and $710,345,950 at

4, reducing the annual interest charge from $81,639,684

to $61,738,838. One secret of the success of the Govern ment and its high credit was the persistence of the people

in urging the payment of the national debt. The work

was begun as soon as the war was ended ; before all the

» commissioners,

soldiers had been sent home $30,000,000 of the debt had been paid, and hardly a month has passed since with- out some reduction of the total amount. Between 1865 and 1880 the debt fell from $2,850,000,000 to about $2,000,000,000 ; and, as it decreased, the ability of the Government to borrow at lower interest increased. About $200,000,000 of 6 per cent. bonds fell due in 1881, and the secretary of the treasury (Windom) took the respon- sibility of allowing the holders of them to exchange them for 33 per cent. bonds, redeemable at the pleasure of the Government. ‘This privilege was extended to about $300,000,000 of other bonds, giving a saving of $10,000,000 interest. The 44 per cent. bonds of 1870-71 ($250,000,000) are not redeemable until 1891, and the 4 boads ($738,000,000) until 1907. Roughly stated, the whole debt, deducting cash in the treasury, is under $1,400,000,000, about $1,100,000,000 being interest- bearing, the remainder non-interest-bearing, paper currency of different kinds.

323. In 1880 the Republicans nominated Carfield

° (p. 788) and Arthur (p. 787), and the Democrats Hancock

(p. 789) and English. Again there was no great distinction between the party principles advocated. The Democrats, naturally a free-trade party, were not at all ready to fight a battle on that issue; and the Republicans, turning the contest to the point on which their opponents were divided, succeeded in electing their candidates. They were in- augurated in 1881; and the scramble for office which had marked each new administration since 1829 followed ($202). ‘The power of the senate to confirm the president’s nominations had brought about a practice by which the appointments in each State were left to the suggestion of the administration senators from that State. The senators from New York, feeling aggrieved at certain appointments in their State, and desiring the prestige of a re-election by their legislature, resigned. Unfortunately for them the legislature took them at their word, and began to ballot for their successors. Their efforts to be re-elected, the

caucuses and charges of treachery or corruption, and the

newspaper cohiments made up a disgraceful scene. In the midst of it a disappointed applicant for office shot the president (July 2), and he died two months later. Vice- President Arthur succeeded him (§ 117), and had an un-eventful administration. The death of President Garfield called general attention to the abominations of the system under which each party, while in office, had paid its party expenses by the use of minor offices for its adherents. The president's power of appointment could not be con-

, tolled; but the Pendleton Act (1883) permitted the _ president to make appointments to designated classes of

offices on the recommendation of a board of civil service President Arthur executed the law faith- fully, but its principle could hardly be considered estab-

lished until it had been put through the test of a Demo-

cratic administration; and this consideration undoubt-

| edly had its influence on the next election (1884). The

' Republicans nominated Blaine and Logan, and the Demo- erats Cleveland and Hendricks. A small majority for the Democratic candidates in the State of New York gave them its electoral votes and decided the election in their favour, They were inaugurated (1885), and for the first time in more than fifty years no general change of office- holders took place. 'The Pendleton Act was obeyed ; and its principle was applied to very many of the offices not legally covered by it. There have been, however, very many survivals of the old system of appointment, and each of them has been met by a general popular disapproval] Which is the best proof of the change of public sentiment. At least, both parties are committed to the principle of Civil service reform. 'There is a growing desire to increase

the number of offices to which it is to be applied; and the principle is making its way into the administration of States aud cities.

324. At home and abroad there is not a cloud on the political future of the United States in 1887. The economic conditions are not so flattering ; and there are indications that a new era of struggle is opening before the country, and that it must meet even greater difficulties in the immediate future. The seeds of these may perhaps be found in the way in which the institutions of the country have met the new economic conditions which caine in with the railway in 1830.

325. Corporations had existed in the United States Corpora.

before 1830, but the conditions, without the railway or tions in telegraph, were not such as to give them pronounced ad- es F vantages over the individual. All this was changed under Saree the new régime; the corporation soon began to show its superiority. In the United States at present there are many kinds of business in which, if the individual is not very highly endowed, it is better for him to take service with a corporation. Individual success is growing more rare ; and even the successful individual is usually suc- ceeded by a corporation of some sort. In the United States, as in England, the new era came into a country which had always been decided in its leanings to indi- vidual freedom; and the country could see no new de- parture in recognizing fully an individual freedom of incorporation (§ 215). Instead of the old system, under Freedom which each incorporation was a distinct legislative act, of Lap general provisions were rapidly adopted by the several aaa States, providing forms by which any group of persons could incorporate themselves for any purpose. ‘The first Act of the kind was passed in Connecticut in 1837, and the principle of the English Limited Liability Act of 1855 was taken directly from it. The change was first embodied in New York in its constitution of 1846, as follows:—* Cor- porations may be formed under general laws, but shall not be created by special Act, except for municipal purposes and in cases where, in the judgment of the legislature, the objects of the corporation cannot be attained under general laws.” The general laws were for @ long time merely directions to the corporators as to the form of the certificate and the place where it was to be deposited. The New York provision was only a development of the principle of a statute of 1811 applying to nianufacturing, but it is an instance of what was taking place all over the country.

326. The consequent freedom of corporations was also Dart- influenced by the law, as expounded by the Supreme Court mouth of the United States in the “ Dartmouth College case ” ae (1819), whose principle has always been the object of vigorous but unsuccessful criticism. The States are pro- hibited by the constitution from passing any laws which shall alter the obligation of contracts. This decision held that a charter was a contract between the State and the corporation created by it, and therefore unalterable except by consent of the corporation. The States were careful thereafter to insert in all charters a clause giving the State the right to alter the charter ; but the decision has tended to give judges a bias in favour of the corporations in all fairly doubtful cases. Corporations in the United States thus grew luxuriantly, guarded by the constitution, and very little trenched upon by the States.

327. American corporations have usually been well managed, and very much of the extraordinary develop- ment of the wealth of the United States has been due to them. But a corporation which holds $400,000,000 of Corporate property, owns niore than one State legislature, and has a power. heavy lien on several others, is not an easy creature to con-

—

trol or limit. Wars of rates between rival corporations

= 95

Inter- State

Com-

merce Act.

Corpora- tions

as em- ployers,

Con- centra- tion of popula- tion,

Popular feeling towards corpora- tions.

claiming great stretches of territory as “their own,” into which other corporations must not intrude, are startling things to any people. The rise of a corporation, built upon the ruins of countless individual business concerns, and showing that it can reduce railway corporations to an obedience which they refuse to the State, is too suggestive of an wmperium im tmperio to be pleasant to a democracy. The States, to which the whole subject legitimately belongs, coufess their inability to deal with it by leaving Congress to pass the Inter-State Commerce Act (1887), intended to stop the encroachments of railway corporations on indi- vidual rights (§ 106); but the success of even this measure is still quite doubtful.

328. Still more unhappy have been some of the effects of the new régime on the relations between employers and employed. The substitution of a corporation for an indi- vidual as an employer could not but affect such relations unhappily, at least for a time ; but the freedom and power of the corporate employers straincd the relations farther than was at all necessary. The first clumsy attempts to control the corporations, by limiting the percentage of their profits, led to the artifice of “ watering,” or unneces- sarily increasing, their stock. In good years the nominal dividends were thus kept down to an apparently normal percentage. When bad years, or increasing competition, began to cut down the dividends, the managers were often forced to attack the wages, or increase the duties, of their employees. The “bad years” began to be more numerous and constant after the financial crisis of 1873 had set in ; and the first serious effects appeared in the “ railroad strikes of 1877.”

329. For many years past, the drift of population had been towards an urban life. Taking the town of 8000 inhabitants as the lower limit of urban population, we find that 3°3 per cent. of the population was to be classed as urban in 1790, and that the percentage had risen to 22°5 in 1880. If towns of 4000 inhabitants had been taken as the lower limit, the urban population in 1880 would have been 13,000,000, or more than 25 per cent. It may be thought that the policy of protection, of abnormal stimula- tion of manufactures, had something to do with this tend- ency ; but it is noteworthy that the increase during the generally free-trade period of 1840-

60, from 8:5 to 16:1, was the greatest of any twenty years, unless we take the period 1850-70, half free-trade and half protective, when the percentage rose from 12°5 to 20°9. Whatever may have been the cause, the tendency is indubitable, and its effects in increasing the facility of organization among the employees of corporations, whose fields of operation are generally urban, are as easily to be seen.

330. Some of the corporations were controlled by men who were believed, in some cases on the best of evidence, to have gained their control by the defects of American corporation law, particularly by the privilege of the majority of stock-holders to use the whole stock almost at their discretion, even for the wrecking of the road and its repurchase on terms ruinous to the minority's interests. Disrespect for " property rights " thus acquired was apt to extend to other corporate property, acquired legitimately : in the railroad strikes of 1877, there were cases in which citizens usually law-abiding watched with hardly-concealed satisfaction the destruction of such property as belonged to corporations. Further, the neutral position of the United States had brought about the transfer of consider- able English and other foreign capital to the United States to be invested, under corporate privileges, in cattle-ranges or other industries connected with Western agriculture. The American managers of these corporations, feeling little responsibility to any power except their foreign employers, permitted themselves to take liberties with individual

SrATELSs

settlers and their rights which arrayed a large part of the agricultural population of the West against corporate pro- perty. Finally, the differential rates made in private, even secret, contracts, by railway corporations all over the country, had gathered up passions of all sorts against the a corporate ‘‘ monopolies." The anchor of agricultural con- servatism, usually a safe reliance in the United States, had | ceased to be of service in this matter. An order, the il ‘“‘ Patrons of Husbandry," said to number 1,500,000 mem- Tits bers in 1874, had been formed with the avowed object of of Hus. checking the common corporate enemy ; and, though itg baudry," ’ prominence was short-lived, its influence reniained.,

331. The growing power of corporations, and that ataany

time when the democracy had just shown its strength most ecouomic | forcibly and to its own satisfaction ; the evident tendency of iene ; the corporations, especially in the protected industries and in transportation, to further combinations, such as “pools” and ‘‘ trusts”; the consequent partial disappearance of that compctition which had seemed to be a restriction on the , power of the corporations over the individual ; the power and disposition of corporations to cut wages down when- ‘ ever dividends made it necessary to do so; the half-under- stood, but heartily dreaded, weapon known as the “ black list,” by which combinations of employers, especially of corporations, drove employecs inclined to “agitation” out of employment; the general misgivings as to the wisdom or honesty of the State legislatures, in which the power over corporations was vested; the unhappy influences of the increase of urban population over the jury system ; the complicated systems of appeals which had grown up in American law, with their opportunities for delay or per- version of justice by wealthy and determined corporations; the altered character of American labour, which was now largely made up of a mass of immigration hardly yet fully digested, and more apt than American labour had once been to seek help in something else than individual effort, —all these influences made up a mass of explosives which became seriously dangerous after 1880. It was no longer so easy for the individual to defend himself against cor- porate ageression ; if it had been, the American working man was no longer so apt to trust to an individual de- fence; and labourers began to turn to combinations against corporations, though these combinations were even more prompt and successful in attacking individual employers than in attacking corporations.

332. The trade unions, which retained most of the con- Trale servative influences of their generally beneficiary nature, ™™ were not radical enough ; and a local Philadelphia society, the “Knights of Labour,” was developed into a national “Kuighi organization, following the usual American system of local * “assemblies,” with delegates to State and national conven tions, With but 52,000 members in 1883, it claimed 630,000 in October 1886, and 1,000,000 at the beginning of 1887. Its general object was the union of all classes and kinds of labour into one organization, so that, “an injury to one being the concern of all,” the oppression 0 even the humblest and weakest individual might be answered

by the sympathetic action of more important and, if necessary, of all classes of labour. The “ boycott, a an imported idea, was its most successful weapon: the firm Pe} or corporation which oppressed its employces was to be brought to terms by a refusal of all members of the national organization to buy its productions, or to deal with any one who bought or soldthem. Such ascheme was directly subversive of all social protection or security ; and yet It had gone on for nearly two years before it came plainly “a to public notice (January 1886). Boycotts increased in ail number ; local assemblies, intoxicated by their i pesttlts. success, went beyond the control of the well-intentone head of the order; the passive obedience on the part 0

[tusvory,

= ee — w=

—Ce hss aS SS

Faro

1870-1887.] UnivrTEepDp

the members, which was a necessary feature of the system, evolved a class of local dictators, or “ rings,” which were irresponsible as well as tyrannical ; and the business of the country was very seriously threatened all through the years 1886 and 1887.

333. Law has begun to pronounce distinctly against both the black list and the boycott, as well as against the systems based upon them. There can be no doubt of the cruel tyranny which the new system of labour organization tends to erect not only over its enemies, the class of em- ployers and those working men who are not of the order, but over its own members. But the demonstration of the illegality and tyranny does not alter the conditions of the problem, of which it is but a single phase. How are the English common law, its statutory development, and its jury system, to exist when a great mass of the population is discontented, distrustful, and under the dominion of a secret public opinion, and when the way does not seem to be open for a removal of their discontents except by the serious curtailment of the

corporate system which has been so powerful an agent in American development and

wealth? The great American republic, then, seems to be entering upon a new era, in which it must meet and solve a new problem—the reconciliation of democracy with the modern conditions of production.

The works treating of the various phases of the history of the United States , arc so numerous that only the names of the leading authorities can be given: — _ The histories of the United States by Bancroft (to 1783), Pitkin (to 1797), Ramsay) (to 1814), Hildreth (to 1820), Bradford (to 1840), Tucker (to 1840), Spenser (to

1857), Bryant and Gay, Schouler, Von Holst, Higginson; M‘Master, History of the American People; Gilman, istory of the American People; Winsor, Narrative and Critical History ; Williams, Statesman’s Manual; H. H. Bancroft, History of the Pacific Coast; The American Commonwealth Series ; Force, Tracts relating to _ the Colonies, and American Archives; Poore, Federal and State Constitutions ; , Mlazard, Wistorical Collections; Neill, English Colonization in America; Dodge, | English Colonies in America; Doyle, English Colonies in America; Burke, English , Settlements in America; Holmes, Annals of America; Graham, History of the United States; Marshall, ZZistory of the Colonies; Palfrey, History of New England; Parkman’s Works; Gordon, Zistory of the Independence of the United States; Winsor, Reader’s Landbook of the Revolution; Carrington, Battles of the Revolution, Ludlow, War of American Independence; Frothingham, Rise of the Republic; Story, Commentaries; Chalmers, Annals of the Colonies, and Revolt of | the Colonies ; Scott, Constitutional Liberty in the Colontes ; Journals of Congress, L7h-89; Annals of Congress, 1789-182) ; Register of Debates in Congress, 1824-87 + | Congressional Globe, 1833-72; Congressional Record, 1872-87; American State , Papers (to 1815); Benton, Abridged Debates of Congress (to 1850); United States Statutes at Large; Revised Statutes of the United States ; Niles, Weekly Register, 1811-36; Tribune Almanac, 1838-87; Appleton, Annual Cyclopedia, 1861-86; Spofford, American Almanac, 1878-87 ; M‘Pherson, Political Manuals; Greeley, Political Text-Book, 1860; Cluskey, Political Cyclopedia, 1860; Hamilton, Republic of the United States; Renton, Thirty Years’ View ;

Young, American Statesman; Johnston istory of American Politics; Stanwood, History of Presidential Elections; Porter, Constitutional ITistory; Story, Commentaries on the Constitution; Kent, Commentaries on American Law; Wharton, Commen- taries; Duer, Constitutional Jurisprudence; Brownson, American Republic; Mulford, Zhe Nation; The Federalist ; Jameson, Constitutional Convention ; “Centz,” Republic of Republics; Tucker, Blackstone’s Commentaries; Curtis, Ifistory of the Constitution; Bancroft, History of the Constitution; Elliot, Debates; Cooley, Constitutional Limitations, Taxation, and Constitutional Law; Sedgwick, | Statutory and Constitutional Law; Bump, Notes of Constitutional Decisions; Wilson, Congressional Government ; Fiske, American Political Ideas 5 M‘Crary, Filection Laws; Rorer, Inter-State Law; Lamphere, American Government ; Counting the Electoral Vote, 1787-1876; M‘Knight, Zlectoral System; Dillon, Municipal Corporations ; Morse, Citizenship ; Lalor, Political Cyclopedia; Bur- net, Settlement of the North-West Territory, 1847; Flint, Geography and ITistory ofthe Mississippi Valley, 1828; Histories of the various States; Bishop, Z/éstory lof American Manufactures ; Seybert, Statistical Annals; Pitkin, Statistical View, es; De Bow, Jndustrial Record of the South and West, 1852; Eighty Years’ Progress of the United States, 1861; First Century of the Republic, 1876; Com~ pendium of the Census, for 1850, 1860, 1870, and 1880: Walker, Statistical Atlas, 1874; Scribner’s Statistical Atlas, 1884; Reports of the Bureau of Statistics, 1}1866-87 ; Lyman, Diplomacy of the United States; Trescot, Diplomacy of the Revolution, and Diplomatie Mistory, 1797-1801; Baker, Diplomatic History, 1861-65; Reports of the Secretary of the Treasury; Cooper, Z/istory of the Navy jXto 1853); Emmons, [story of the Navy (to 1853); Preble, History of the American Bian Roosevelt, Naval ITistory of the War of 1812; Boynton, J/istory of the if

avy, 1861-65; Porter, Naval THistory of the Civil War; Williams, ZZistory of ve Negro Race; Wilson, Rise and Fall of the Slave Power ; Goodell, Slavery and Anti-Slavery ; Hurd, Law of Freedom and Bondage; Hammond and others, The WPro-Slavery Argument; Stephens, War between the States; Blaine, Tiventy Years iin Congress; Official Records of the Civil War; Rebellion Record; Personal arratives of Grant, Sherman, M‘Clellan, J. E. Johnston, Hood, and Beauregard ; Lieports of the Committee on the Conduct of the War; Scribner, Campaigns of the Civil War; Battles and

Leaders of the Civil War; Comte de Paris, History of “the Civil War in America; Grecley, American Conflict ; Draper, History of the

ivil War; Pollard, Lost Cause; Davis, Rise and Fall of the Confederate Govern- | ent; American State Papers on Finance (to 1828); Bolles, Financial History of the United States; Sumner, History of American Currency; Gouge, Paper Money in the United States; Spalding, Legal Tender Paper Money; Knox, United | States Notes; H. C. Adams, Public Debis; Gibbons, Public Debt of the United \States; Reports of the Secretary of the Treasury; Wells, Internal Revenue Com- \mission Report, 1866; Taussig, Protection to Young Industries, and History of the Present Tariff, 1860-83; Young, Tariff Legislation of the United States, (870; Hadley, Railroad Transportation; Poor, Ratiroad Manual; Adams, Rail- \podds: their Origin and Problems; Hudson, Railways and the Republic; Ely, Labour Movement in America; Reports of the Bureaus of Statistics of the varions | States. ;

Lhe Presidents and Vice-Presidents of the United States.

Terms. Presidents. Vice-Presidents. 1789-93 | 1. George Washington, Va. 1. John Adams, Mass. 1793-97 George Washington. John Adams. 1797-1801} 2. John Adams, Mass. 2. Thomas Jefferson, Va. 1801-05 | 3, Thomas J efferson, Va. 3, Aaron Burr, N.Y. 1805-09 Thomas Jefferson. 4. George Clinton, N.Y. 1809-13 | 4. James Madison, Va. George Clinton (d. 1812). 1813-17 James Madison. 5. Elbridge Gerry, Mass. (d. 1814). 1817-21 | 5, James Monroe, Va. 6. Daniel D. Tompkins, N.Y. 1821-25 James Monroe, Daniel D, Tompkins. 1825-29 | 6. John Quincy Adams, Mass, 7. John Caldwell Calhoun, 8.C. 1829-33 | 7, Andrew Jackson, Tenn. John C, Calhcun, (res. 1832). 1833-37 Andrew Jackson. 8. Martin Van Buren, N.Y, - | 1837-41 | 8. Martin Van Buren, N.Y. 9. Richard Mentor Johnson, Ky. 1841-45 | 9. William Henry Harrison, O. | 10. John Tyler, Va. (d. 1841). 10. John Tyler. 1845-49 | 11. James Knox Polk, Tenn. 11. George Miffiln Dallas, Pa.

1849-53 | 12. Zachary Taylor, La. (d. 1850),) 12. Millard Fillmore, N.Y. 13. Millard Fillmore,

1853-57 | 14. Franklin Pierce, N.H. 13. William Rufus King, Ala. (d, 1853).

1857-61 | 15. James Buchanan, Pa. 14. John Cabell Breckinridge, Ky.

1861-65 | 16. Abraham Lincoln, 111. 15. Tlannibal Hamlin, Me.

1865-69 Abraham Lincoln (d. 1865). 16. Andrew Johnson, Tenn, 17. Andrew Johnson. 1869-73 | 18, Ulysses Simpson Grant, Tl. | 17. Schuyler Colfax, Ind. 1873~77 Ulysses 8. Grant. 18, Henry Wilson, Mass, (d. 1875). 1877-81 | 19. Rutherford Birchard Hayes, 0,] 19. William Almon Wheeler, N.Y. 1881-85 | 20. J: ae iss Garfield, O. } 20. Chester Alan Arthur, N.Y. 21. Chester Alan Arthur, 1885-89 | 22. Grover Cleveland, N.Y. 21. Thomas Andrews Hendricks, Ind. (d. 1885).

The following paragraphs contain a series of biographical notes on American public men, furnishing details of interest which could not without inconvenience have been incorporated in the foregoing continuous history.

ALLEN, ETHAN, was born in Roxbury, Conn,, Jan. 10, 1737. He removed about 1766 to Vermont, where he became a leader of the Vermonters, or “Green Mountain Boys,” in their struggle against New York. In 1775 he was the leader of the party which surprised Ticonderoga. He was captured in 1775, sent to England, and not exchanged until 1778. He died at Burlington, Vt., Feb. 12, 1789. He had published a number of somewhat eccentric pamphlets, either personal or attacks on Christianity. — See Spark’s American Biography, vol. i.

ANDREW, JOHN ALBION (1818-1867), governor of Massachusetts from 1861 to 1866, was born at Windham, Me., May 31, 1818. He became a graduate of Bowdoin College in 1837, and was admitted to the bar in Boston in 1840. He entered political life as a Whig, and the intensity of his anti-slavery convictions stood in his way until 1859, when he was sent to the State legislature. In 1860 he was elected governor. Foreseeing the coming struggle, he organized and equipped the militia of the State, and urged the other New England governors to do likewise. Lincoln’s call for troops was received at Boston, April 15; Andrew had volunteers in motion the next morning; on the afternoon of the 16th three regiments were ready; the Massachusetts Sixth left Boston on the 17th, fought its way through

Balti- more on the 19th, and reached Washington the same day. All through the war, Andrew's devotion to his duties was indefatigable, and it is to his influ- ence that Massachusetts owes her place of pre-eminence in that great struggle. He died suddenly of apoplexy, October 30, 1867. P. W. Chandler has written a memoir of Andrew, and A. 8. Brown a sketch of his official life.

ARNOLD, BENEDICT, was born at Norwich, Conn., Jan. 3, 1740. His dis- position was unruly in his boyhood. When the revolutionary war broke out, he entered the army, and soon became a coloncl. He was sent with a detachment through the Maine wilderness to assist Montgomery, and was severely wounded in the assault on Quebec in December, 1775. He was discontented because his promotion was slow, and still more because he had not sufficient opportunity for pecuniary advantage. Distinguishing himself at Bemis Heights and Stillwater, though then under arrest, he asked and obtained command of the post of West Point, the key to the Hudson river, He offered to betray this post to Clinton, but the negotiations were detected, and Clinton's agent, André, was captured and hanged as a spy, while Arnold escaped to the British lines. He was given a rank in the British army cor- responding to that which he had abandoned, and commanded two plunder- ing expeditions. It was not easy to induce other British officers to serve with him, and he went to England, where he seems not to have fared much better. He died in London, June 14,1801. His Life, in Spark's American Biography, gives the usual American estimate of him ; but a more apologetic biography, by a descendant, has recently been published.

ARTHUR, CHESTER ALAN (1830-1886), president from 1881 to 1885, was born in Fairfield, Vt., October 5, 1830, his father being a Baptist minister who had immigrated from Ireland. After graduating at Union College in 1848, he was a teacher for several years, and was admitted to the bar in New York in 1853. He rapidly obtained repute as a lawyer, particularly by his management of the cases of fugitive slaves; and, as quartermaster-general of the State of New York during the first two years of the civil war, charged with the duty of arming, equipping, and transporting the troops of the State, he obtained a reputation even higher. He became an active political leader in the Republican organization of New York city, and was appointed collector of the port by President Grant in 1871. Refusing to

abstain from active political work, he was removed in 1878 by President Hayes ; and in 1880, when, Garfield had been nominated by the Republican convention, Arthur was nominated for the vice-presidency, in order to propitiate the supporters of Grant. He was elected with Garfield in November and inaugurated in the following March, and became president when Garfield died (Sept. 19). He proved an exception to the rule that vice-presidents succeeding to the office of president have been failures. To him belongs the credit of a quiet, dignified, and successful administration of public affairs, and, above all, the inception of the reform of the civil service system. He carried out the Pendleton Act for that purpose with honest goodwill, and gave it an impetus which it is not likely ever to lose. He quieted the growing ill-feeling between his country and others as to South American affairs. The presence of British representatives at the hundredth anniversary of the surrender of a British army at Yorktown had a certain awkwardness, until the presideut's tact and good feeling relieved the pressure

by ordering that the eeremonies should close with a general salute to the British fiag, as a special mark of American respect for the queen. He fiuished his term with the high respect of all parties, and in the Republican convention of 1884 was the leading competitor for the nomination, which finally fell to Blaine. He died in New York city, November 18, 1886.

BELL, JOHN, was born near Nashville, Tenn., Feb. 15, 1797, and died near the same place, Sept. 10, 1869, He graduated at Nashville in 1814, became a lawyer, and served in the house of representatives, 1829-41, and in the senate, 1847-59, acting as seeretary of war from March to October 1841. He was nominated for the presidency in 1860, and was defeated.

BENTON, THOMAS HART (1782-1858), was born near Hillsborough, N.C., March 14, 1782. Removing to Tennessee in 1799, he studied law, was admitted to the bar, and entered the lifc of a frontier lawyer and politician. Andrew Jackson, then the leading flgure of Nashville, made him his aide-de- camp, and obtained for him the command of a Tennessee reginient, Quarrels and a street-fight in 1813, in which Jackson was nearly killed, made Tennessee an unpleasant residence for Benton, and, after two years of

service as lieutenant-colonel of a Uuited States regiment, he settled iu St Louis, Mo. From 1821 to 1851 he served as United States senator from Missouri. During all this period he was one of the most prominent members of the senate. He became a recognized leader of the Democratic party, and on the entrance of Jackson into national politics, he became one of his warmest supporters. Benton's knowledge of Spanish land-law made him an authority on all sub- jects into which that question entered; and his sympathy with the feelings of the Western settlers made him their mouth-piece on all such matters as the proposed annexation of Oregon. His pronounced aversion to all forms of paper currency procured him the popular name 'Old Bullion," in which he took great satisfaction. Benton was always a pronounced Union man, and, when the slavery struggle had gone far enough to make the thought of dis- union a political possibility, his supremacy in Missouri was over. Ife was defeated, after forty ballots, in the attempt to return to the senate for a new term in 1851. He served in the house of representatives, 1853-55, but was defeated in the next election as well as in the election for governor in 1856. He died at Washington, April 10, 1858. He has left two works of political value, Thirty Years in the United States Senate (2 vols.), and a most nseful Abridgment of the Debates in Congress from 1789 until 1850 (16 vols.).—See Roosevelt's Life of Benton, in the American Statesmen Series.

BooNE, DANIEL, born in Bucks county, Pa., Feb. 11, 1735, emigrated to North Carolina, penetrated the wilderness of Kentucky and began the settlement of that region, and died in Missouri, Sept. 20, 1820. Unlettered, but of strong native intelligence, simple houesty, courage, and coolness, he has become the type of his class.

BRAGG, BRAXTON (c. 1815-1876), American officer and general in the Con- federate service, was born in Warren County, N.C.,about1815. He graduated at West Point in 1837, served in Florida and elsewhere fcr several years, and so distinguished himself in the Mexican war, particularly at Buena Vista, as to reach the rank of lieuteuant-colonel by brevet. He resigned and retired to private life in 1856, but entered the Confederate service at the outbreak of the civil war with the rank of brigadier-general. He com- manded at Pensacola, but was transferred to the west in 1862, soon reaching the full grade of general in command of the department of

Mississippi. Just after Lee had begun his first attempt to invade the North in the east, Bragg began a similar attempt in the west. Passing to the east of the Union line in southern Teunessee, he moved northward into Kentucky, threatening Cincinnati, and remaining in Kentucky from Angust until October. The battle of Perryville (Oct. 8) forced hin to retreat into Tennessee, bnt he carried off enormous trains of captured property and booty. Returning late in the year towards Nashville, he met Rosecrans in the battle of Murfrees- boro or Stone River (Dec. 31, 1862-Jan. 2, 1863). It was very nearly a drawn battle, but Rosecrans held the ground, and slowly gained possession of the important point of Chattanooga during 1863. Following Bragg beyond it into Georgia, he was met and beaten in the battle of Chickamauga (Sept. 19-20, 1863), and Bragg, pursuing in his turn, formed the siege of Chat- tanooga, Grant replaced Rosecrans, and beat Bragg in the battles of Look- out Mountain and Missionary Ridge (Nov. 23-25, 1863), relieving the Union army. Bragg was then succeeded by Johnston, and took little further active part in the war. The Confederate president, Davis, retained Bragg at Rich- mond as military adviser. He died at Galveston, Texas, Sept. 27, 1876.

BRECKINRIDGE, JOHN CABELL (1821-1875), vice-president of the United States from 1857 to 1861, was born near Lexington, Ky., Jan. 21, 1821. He was admitted to the bar, served as major in the Mexican war, aud was a Democratic member of the house of representatives from 1851 to 1855. He was elected vice-president in 1856 by the Democrats. In 1860 he was nomin- ated for the presidency by the Southern wing of the Democratic party, but was defeated. Elected United States senator, he took his seat at the special session of July 4, 1861, left it (Aug. 6) to enter the Confederate army, and was expelled from the senate Dec. 4. He served at Murfreesboro and Chicka- mauga, and in the east, and in 1865 became the Confederate secretary of war. For a time he was in Europe, but returned in 1868, and died May 17, 1875.

BUCKINGHAM, WILLIAM ALFRED (1804-1875), governor of Connecticut, was born in Lebanon, Conn., May 28, 1804. In 1858 he was elected governor, and served until 1866. He refused further re-election, and retired to private life until 1869, when the Republicans of his State sent him to the United States senate, where he remained until 1875, the year of his

death. His energy and foresight, as the ‘‘war governor” of his State, did for Con- necticut what Andrew’s did for Massachusetts.

BURNSIDE, AMBROSE EVERETT (1824-1881), general in the Federal army, was born at Liberty, Ind., May 23, 1824. After graduating at West Point in 1847, he served in the Mexican war and on frontier duty until 1853, when he resigned. For five years he was engaged in the mannfacture of fire-arms in Rhode Island, and for the next three years in the management of the Illinois Central Railway Company. He entered the civil war as colonel of Rhode Island volunteers, was giveu eommand of the land forces operating on the North Carolina coast, at Roanoke Island and elsewhere, and as major-general commanded the ninth corps of the army of the Potomac in the Antietam campaign. His management of the left wing in the final battle has been severely criticized by M‘Clellan, on the ground of his slowness. When M‘Clellan was relieved of the eommand of the army in November 1862, Buruside was made his successor. He undertook to follow the direct road to Richmond, aeross the Rappahannoek and through Fredericks-burgh. Ile had hardly reached Falmouth, opposite Fredericksburgh, when Lee had begun his lines of defence ou the hills behind Fredericksburgh. Burnside’s army crossed the river Dec. 10-11, and Lee made the assault De-cember 13. Franklin on the left broke through the Confederate lines, but could not hold his ground; Suniner and Hooker led their men to the most dreadful slaughter of the war. On the night of the 15th of December the Union forces were withdrawn across the river, and Burnside resigned his command late in the following month, being sneceeded by Hooker, Burn-side served iu the west during the year 1863, and commanded the ninth corps under Grant during the final Virginia campaigns. Re-entering civil life, he served as governor of Rhode Island, 1866-69, and as United States senator, froni 1875 until his death in Rhode Island, September 13, 1881.

STATA

BuRR, AARON (1756-1836), vice-president of the United States from 1g91 to 1805, was born at Newark, N.J., Feh. 6, 1756, being the son of Rey. Aaron Burr, president of Princeton College, and grandson of Rey. Jonathan Edwards. He graduated at Princeton in 1772, served as au officer in the revolutionary army, becoming lieutenant-eolonel, and in 1779 resigned and

studied law. He began practice in New York, where the leading lawyers were disfranchised or under a clond by reason of Toryism, and was successful almost at ouce, his leading competitor being Hamilton. He was a Re- publican United States senator, 1791-97, and introduced into the Republican party of his State that semi-military organization which now marks al} successful parties. Presidential electors were then generally chosen by State legislatures, and Burr's skilful management obtained a legislature in 1800 with a Republican majority. The Republican leaders at Washington at once named lim as the candidate to be voted for with Jefferson. All the Republican electors voted for the two, giving them a majority of the elec. toral votes, 73 each. But this, as the constitution then stood (§ 120), elected neither ; the house of representatives was to choose between them. The house had a Federalist majority, and was disposed to make Burr president in order to baulk Jefferson and his party. It was not until the 36th ballot that Jefferson was chosen, and Burr never recovered his party's confidence, He was not re-nominated in 1804; and in the same year he shot his great rival, Hamilton, in a duel near New York city. In 1807 he was tried foran expedition against Mexico, but was acquitted. For some years he lived abroad, but in 1812 he returned to New York city and resumed the practice of law. He died on Staten Island, N.Y., Sept. 14, 1836. Burt's great ability, his influence over young men and over women, the immorality of his private life, the misfortnues of his career and the stoical patience with which he bore them, have made him a remarkable figure in American history. He is buried at Prineeton, N.J.—See Parton's Life of Burr, Knapp's Life of Burr, Davis's Memoir of Burr, and Private Journal of Burr.

COLFAX, SCHUYLER, vice-president of the Uuited States from 1869 to 1873, was born in New York city, March 23, 1823. At the age of thirteen he removed to South Bend, Ind., studied law, became a newspaper editor, and entered political life as a Whig, afterwards a Republican. Defeated iu the Congressional election of 1851, he was successful at the next, and served in the house of representatives from 1855 to 1869. He was speaker of the house from 1863 to 1869. In 1868 he was nominated by the Republicans for the office of vice-president, and was elected, serving until 1873. He died Jan. 13, 1885. See Martin's Life of Colfax (1868).

CRAWFORD, WILLIAM HARRIS, American statesman, was born in Amherst county, Va., Feb. 24, 1772, but removed to Georgia while still a boy. He was admitted to the bar, served in the State legislature, 1803-7, in the United States senate, 1807-13, as minister to Frauce, 1813-15, as secretary of war, 1815-16, and as secretary of the treasury, 1816-25. He was one of the leading aspirants to the presidency in 1816, but. Monroe obtained the nomination by a small majority. As the end of Monroc's second term approached, it was thought that Crawford would certainly be his successor. In 1823 he was stricken with paralysis; but his friends endeavoured to concecal his condition, and pressed him for the caucus nomination in 1824. Ile obtained it, but it did him little service. Indeed, the struggle really put an end to the Congressional caucus as a uominating body. On his defeat he retired from natioual politics, serving as State judge in his own State from red uutil be died at Elberton, Ga., Sept. 15, 1834. See J. B. Cobb's Miscel-

anies, p. 131.

GARFIELD, JAMES ABRAM (1831-1881), president of the United States in 1881, was born at Orange, O., Nov. 19. 1831. His father died in 1833, leaving Garfield's mother to support four children, of whom the future president was the youngest. Ile learned the trade of a carpenter, earning some little additional money by working as a wood-chopper and as a driver on the canal. At the age of eighteen, he entered a village seminary, working at his trade and at odd jobs for hisown support. After preparing himself for college, he carried himself in like manner through Williams College, graduating in 1856. He then became a professor iu, and, after one year, presldent of, Hiram College, 0., where he remained until 1861. During this period he studied law, and was admitted to the bar. Ile had also become a recognized leader of the Republican party of the State, being elected to the State scnate for 1860-61. Entering the army as colonel of an Ohio regiment in 1861, he served in Kentucky and Tennessee, soon becoming brigadier-general and chief of staff to General Rosecrans. At Chickamauga he particularly distinguished himself, riding to Thomas's head-quarters after the retreat of the rest of the army, and taking part in the gallant stand made by 'the Rock of Chickamauga." For his services he was promoted to the rank of major-general. Ie resigned in December 1863, to take his seat in the house of representatives, to which he had been elected by his district in

northern Ohio. This seat he never really left. Ife was re-elected steadily for the remainder of his life, his last term closing with the date of his inauguration as president. Just before this last event in his career, he was elected United States senator by the legislature of Ohio, but never took his seat. From his entrance to Congress in 1863 he was one of the most prominent Republican members ; and in 1875, when the Republicans became for the first time since 1860 a minority in the lower House, he became their recognized leader there. In the Repnblican conventiou of 1880 he was ulti- mately nominated by 399 votes out of 756, and in November he was elected by an electoral vote of 214 to 155 for Hancock. He had always protested against the system which made the advice of administration senators the controlling faetor in appointments to office; and yet, from the moment 0 his inauguration, he found himself entangled in a conflict about appoint: ments with the senators from New York. In the midst of the newspaper excitemeut on this subject, a disappointed office-seeker shot the president In the Baltimore and Potomac railway station, July 2, 1881. After lingering through a Washington summer, he was removed (Sept. 6) to Long Branch, where he died on Sept. 19. 4 sted

GRANT, ULYSSES SIMPSON (1822-1885), lieutenant-general in the Unite States army and president of the United States from 1869 to 1877, was a at Point Pleasant, O., April 27, 1822. He had but a slight education in lus early youth, but graduated at West Point in 1843. Hc served in the Mexican war with credit, and in routine service until 1854, when he resigned, haviu® then the rank of captain. His attempts to engage in farming near St ae and in the leather trade at Galena, Ill., were not successful; and, when aid civil war broke out, he was the last man whom his brother officers WO ie have picked out as the coming hero of the war. With some difficulty obtained a commission as colonel of an Illinois regiment, but was soon hs vanced to the rank of brigadier-general, having his head-quarters at Be Ill. From this point he made incursions into the hostile territory, – a serious affair being at Belmont, Mo., Nov. 7, 1861, which was at best a ren battle. The Confederate line rau through southern Kentucky, an bie penetrated by the Tennessee river, of whosc mouth Grant had Done Estimating the opportunity correctly, he obtained permission, with mt “ difficulty, to attempt to secure eontrol of the whole Tcnnessee river. SS officer Foote, with seven gunboats and a number of transports,

Convey – Grant’s force up the river and captured Fort Henry, which comman a point where the Confederate line crossed the Tcnnessce river (Feb. 6,

(HISTORY,

See ee y= wp a ee eee ee eee

2c2ownoccne

ose>

UNITED

A distance of but seven miles separated the rifie-pits around this fort from those of Fort Donelson, which commanded the point where the Confederate line crossed the Cumberland river. Marching overlaud with about 15,000 men, Grant invested Fort Donelson, and began the first Federal siege of the war. Uhe surrender of the fort (Feb. 16) broke up the Confederate line and forced it back into southern Tennessee. Grant was more popular with the general public than with his superiors, and his experience with them was so unpleasant that he asked to be relieved. Matters were patched up, and he was allowed to push southward. Here the battle of Pittsburgh Landiug, in which Grant seems to have been taken by surprise, intensified the doubts his superiors had of his capacity, and he was for some time under a cloud, Halleck assuming command himself, and really rctiring Grant for some months, A fully counterbalancing result of the battle was the establish- inent of perfect sympatly between Grant and Sherman, who had shared its dangers and what odium had come out of it. Grant himself has written that, in the Mexican war, his scrvice “‘save no indication that he would ever be equal to the command of a brigade,” and that in 1861 he “had never looked at a copy of tactics since his graduation.” His training for supreme command was now completed, and it had qualified him for the defence of Corinth, to which all his subsequent successes may be directly traced. Left there almost in isolation, and exposed to the attacks of all the forecs which the Confederates chose to bring against him, his suc- cessful battles of Iuka (Sept. 19, 1862) and Corinth (Oct. 3-5) left him master of the route along the Mississippi. In January 1863 Grant and Sherman succeeded in taking

the west bank of the Mississippi to a point opposite Vicksburgh. Failing to reduce the city from this point, Grant crossed the river below Vicksburgh in April, and began the remarkable campaign which ended with the surrender of Pemberton. It showed that he had strategic ability as well as fighting power, and that he was able to discern the characteristics of his opponents and to calculate on their prob- able errors, and it gave him an official as well as a popular respect which he never lost. Followed by the victories of Lookout Mountain and Mis- sionary Ridge, it made him the acknowledged leader of the United States armies, and his appointment as licutenant-general and commander-in-chief was a foregone conclusion. When Grant assumed command in Virginia in March 1864, Lee's unaccustomed tendency to maintain a strict defensive showed his underlying consciousness that he had before him at last a man who was ready and willing to answer an attack by a counter-attack. Grant's military ability had now reached its highest developments: he handled his 120,000 men with as complete control as he had shown with his 15,000 at Donelson. It is not probable that anything but the vigour and intensity of Grant's operations could have met successfully the problem offered to any commander by Lee behind intrenchments arranged by himself and manned by the army of northern Virginia, or could have reduced that army to the condition which it presented in the winter of 1864-65. The end of the war and the death of President Lincoln left Grant the foremost man of the North and West, and it was really inevitable that he should be elected president in 1868. From the moment of Lee's surrender the people had shown a disposition to put upon his shoulders any work which called for prompt completion. The Republican leaders relied on him to hold all that had becn secured by the war until the Congressioual plan of reconstruction should be fully carried out, and he did the work as probably no other man could have done it. His public life is really the history of the country for the eight years after 1869, and its errors were largely the result of the intrusion of some of his best personal qualities into it. The rule in the civil service still was that of appointment by favour of the political leaders of the dominant party; Grant, bewildered by the constant aud tremend- ous pressure for appointments, undoubtedly selected some men who were no credit to his administration ; when the appointment had been made, his own bitter experience of unjust criticism led him to look with suspicion on any accusation against those whom he had appointed ; and his military habits of unquestioning

obedience gave him a tendency to expect the same thing from men in politics, and to regard independence as a sort of treason, disqualifying the man guilty of it for any useful criticism, His second term was therefore filled with scandals which are likely to overshadow the solid and enduring achievements of his first. Retiring to private life, he found needed rest in a tour of the world; he was, however, a candidate for the

| Republican nomination for the presidency in 1880, and engaged in business in which he had no experience, and in which he lost his all. Attacked by an incurable disease, he spent his last few months of life in the prepara- tion of his autobiography, knowing that its sale would be so large as to put his family out of reach of pecuniary distress. Ie died at Mount M‘Gregor, N.Y., July 23, 1885.

HANCOCK, WINFIELD Soot? (1824-1886), American officer, was born in Montgomery county, Pa., Feb. 14, 1824. He graduated at West Point in 1844, served with credit in Scott’s campaign in Mexico and on frontier duty until 1861, when he held the rank of captain. Having been appointed briga-

) dier-general of volunteers in 1861, he served in the army of the Potomac)) throughout its existence. For distinguished service on the peninsula and at } South Mountain and Antietam, he was given a division and the rank of major-general, and in 1863 he was placed in command of the second corps for his services at Fredericksburgh aud Chancellorsville. His crowning glory was won at Gettysburgh. Reynolds fell on the first day, and Hancock was sent forward by Meade to arrange the line until the commander could arrive. On the second and third days Hancock commanded the left centre, on Cemctery Ridge, where, just in the moment of victory, he was severely |} wounded, He received the thanks of Congress, and returned to the com- mand of his corps early in 1864, in time to take part in Grant’s campaigns of jthat year. He distinguished himself again and again at the Wilderuess, at Spotsylvania, and in the Cold Harbor and Petersburgh operations. At the jend of the war he commanded various departments, having been made a major-general in the regular army. From September 1867 to March 1868 he commanded the department of the Gulf, under the Reconstruction Acts; and certain orders issued by him, particularly those of Nov. 29 and Dec. 5, 1867, declaring that the military power was meant only to uphold, not to

control, the civil powcr, and declining to exercise arbitrary powers, were so satis- factory to the Democratic party that in 1880 it nominated him for the presi- jdency. He was defeated by Garfield, but retained his position as senior)niajor-general of the army, and the warm regard of the country. Ife died at Governor's Island, N.Y., Feb. 9, 1886. . : .) HENDRICKS, THOMAS ANDREWS (1819-1885), vice-president of the United States in 1885, was born in Muskingum county, O., Sept. 7, 1819. He re- jMoved with his father to Shelby county, Ind., in 1822, graduated at Hanover |College iu 1841, and was admitted to the bar in 1843. He was a member of the State legislature in 1848-49, a Democratic member of the house of Fepresentatives, 1851-55, and commissioner of the land office, 1855-59. He served as United States senator, 1863-69, and as governor of Indiana, 1873-77. In 1876 he was nominated for the office of vice-president by the Democrats, but was defcated. In 1876, 1880, and 1884 he was a prominent candidate for the nomination for the presidency ; and in 1884, when Cleve- jland was nominated, he consented to take the nomination for ithe vice- 'Presidency, and was elected. Te died at Indianapolis, Ind., Nov. 25, 1885.

HISTORY. |

ela Te Ss 789

Hoop, Joun BELu (1831-1879), American officer in the Confederate ser- vice, was born at Owingsville, Ky., June 29, 1831. He graduated at West Point in 1853, and continued to serve in the United States army until 1861, when he entered the Confederate service.

He commanded a corps during Johnston's retreat before Sherman, in the early months of 1864; and, when Davis had decided_on removing J ohnston, Hood was appointed to the command of the army. He accepted reluctantly, and his position was not a pleasant one. He succeeded a general in whom the army had confidence; he was to reverse that general's policy, and he was to carry out a plan of campaign which had been prepared for him by the Confederate president. His obedieuce was paiufully accurate. He assumed the offensive as soon as he took command, fought several severe battles, and soon found himself under necessity of evacuating Atlanta (Sept. 2, 1864), Sherman had outflanked him; and the Confederate administration came to the desperate resolution of ordering him to move west and then

north into Tennessee. He was checked at Franklin, where he lost many of his best officers; and in the final battle of N: ashville (Dec. 15) his army was completely beaten, and almost lost its organization. The command of its remnants was transferred to General Richard Taylor, and Hood retired from active service. He died of yellow fever at New Orleans, Aug. 30, 1879.

HULL, Isaac (1775-1848), naval officer, was born at Derby, Conn., March 9, 1775. In 1798 he became lieutenant in the new navy created by Congress during the difficulties with France. He served with credit in the West Indies and Mediterranean, and, on the outbreak of war in 1812, was captain of the frigate ‘‘ Constitution.” By skilful seamanship he escaped the close pursuit of five British vessels, and on Aug. 19 he captured the British frigate “ Guerriere” off Newfoundland, after a conflict in which the ‘“Guerriere” was So severely cut up that Hull was forced to burn her, A gold medal was given him by Congress. He died at Philadelphia, Feb. 13, 1843.

KNox, Henry, major-general in the American revolutionary army, was born at Boston, July 25, 1750. Beginning life as a bookseller, he com- manded an independent company in Boston, and was made an engineer and artillery officer by Washington at the opening of the revolution. Under his charge the artillery arm of the service came to be of essential value. He was made sccretary of war in 1785, and Washington, on becoming president in 1789, gave him the same office under the new Government. He resigned in 1794, and retired to private life in Maine, He died at Thomaston, Me., Oct. 25, 1806.—See Drake’s Life of Knox (1874).

LAWRENCE, JAMES (1781-1813), captain in the United States navy, was born at Burlington, N.J., Oct. 1, 1781, and entered the navy asa midshipman in 1798. He commanded the “ Hornet” in the capture of the ‘‘ Peacock,” Feb.(24, 1818. Placed in command of the frigate ‘‘ Chesapeake,” he accepted the challenge of Captain Broke of the “Shannon” to a single battle, off Boston harbour. The “Chesapeake” was captured, and Lawrence, mortally wounded, died June 6, 1813.—See Irving’s Spanish Papers, vol. ii.

M‘CLELLAN, GEORGE BRINTON (1826-1885), general in the United States army, was born at Philadelphia, Dec. 3, 1826. He graduated at West Point in 1846, served in the Mexican war with such ability as to win the

brevet of captain, and attained full rank as captain in 1855. His services until 1857 were mainly scientific, with the exception of a military report on the organization of European armies in 1856, the result of a commission from the Government to follow the progress of the Crimean War, Iu 1857 he resigned aud entered the service of a Western railway, becoming its president. At the outbreak of the civil war he was eugaged by Ohio as major-general commanding her volunteers, and was soon given the samc rank inthe United States army by President Lincoln. It fell to M‘Clellan to cross into West Virginia and begin the campaign there, which he did during the early summer, the campaign ending with the surrendcr of the Confederate forces at Rich Mountain and the expulsion of the opposing armies from his department, on July 14, 1861. This sudden and brilliant success, followed almost immediately by the collapse of the Manassas campaign against Richmond, brought M‘Clellan into notice as the most likely leader to restore public confidence in the army of the Potomac. He was called to Washington, given command of the army, and, when Scott retired, was made commander of all the armies until March 1862, whew his command was reduced again to the army of the Potomac. The winter of 1861-62 was spent in organizing his new army, and in the spring he was at last almost forced, by public outcry and the impatience of the administra-tion, to attempt the task of wielding the weapon which he had created, Following what seems now the most feasible method of attack on Richmond, M‘Clellan appears to have begun with little confidence in the administration, and it was not long before the administration lost confidence in him. His campaign on the peninsula is historical; but the time involved should be taken carefully into account in estimating M‘Clellan’s abilities. It was on Sept. 2 that he was recalled and given command of ‘all the troops for the defeuce of the capital.” He found the armies iu almost complete confusion ; he organized and united them, marched them through Maryland to its northern border, attacked Lee’s rear so vigorously at South Mountain as to force him to turn and fight, and defeated him after a two days’ battle ; and all this work was done in fifteen days, Sept. 2-17. He was removed, how- ever, Nov. 7, 1862, for slowness in pursuing Lee, and Burnside became his successor. M‘Clellan was nominated for the presidency in 1864, and had much difficulty in reconciling the peace platform of his party with his own feelings. Defeated by Lincoln, he retired to private business as a civil engineer, in which he was very successful. He was elected governor of

New Jersey in 1877, serving 1878-81. He died at Orange Mountain, N.J., Oct. 29, 1885. The literature in attack and defence of his military reputation is voluminous ; for his own version of his career see M‘Clellan’s Own Story.

Marcy, WILLIAM LEARNED (1786-1857), was born at Sturbridge, Mass., Dec. 12, 1786, He graduated at Brown University in 1808, was admitted to the bar in 1810, and began practice at Troy, N.Y. He soon became a leading Democratic politician, and one of the “ Albany regency” which was supposed to control the action of the party in New York State. He was United States senator in 1881-32, and during his term he incidentally made usc of the phrase so frequently afterwards heard, ‘To the victor beloug the spoils.” He resigned to become governor of New York, 1833-39. Ie was secretary of war uuder Polk, 1845-49, and secretary of state under Pierce, 1853-57. As secretary of state he conducted with success the Koszta case in 1854, involving a collision with Austria on the subject of the right of expatria- tion. All his political leanings were to that branch of the Democratic party in New York which made the strength of the new Republican party in 1856, and he would have been its natural leader if he had followed his own convictious on the Kansas-Nebraska bill, He hesitated, and other men took his place. He died at Ballston Spa, N.Y., July 4, 1857,—See Jenkins’s Governors of New York. ;

MASON, GEORGE (1726-1792), member of the Federal convention of 1787, was born in Fairfax county, Va., in 1726. He served in the Virginia conven-

tion in 1775, and drafted its Declaration of Rights and Plan of Government. His most conspicuous service was in the Federal convention of 1787, of which he wasamember. Hetook part in most of the debates, and exerted a strong influence on the decision of almost every question before the convention. Some of his strongest utterances were on the subject of slavery, and his language on one occasion (Aug. 22) might have served as a model to an anti- slavery orator of later times. We was dissatisfied with the constitution, and opposed its ratification. He died Oct. 7, 1792.

MEADE, GHORGE GORDON (1815-1872), general in the United States army, was born in Cadiz, Spain, where his father was an agent of the United States navy, Dec. 30, 1815. He graduatcd at West Point in 1835, and, after serving but one year in the army, resigned to begin practice as a civil engineer. He was frequently employed by the Government, and re-entered its inilitary service in 1842. He served with distinction on the stafis of Taylor and Scott in the Mexican war, and in scientific work. At the outbreak of the civil war he was placed in command of a brigade of volunteers, soon rising to the command of a division, and joining his fortunes permanently to those of the army of the Potomac. He led his division through the seven days' battles, being severely wounded at Glendale, through the Antietam campaign, and at Fredericksburgh, where he particularly distinguished himself. At Chancellorsville he commanded the 5th corps; and when Hooker resigned the command of the army, and while the army itself was in hasty movement northward to check Lee's invasion of the North in 1863, Meade was appointed to the command. He accepted it with the greatest reluctance, and altogether from a sense of duty. He had inclined to fight on the line of Pipe Creek, to the south of Gettysburgh; but Reynolds fell into collision with Lee's advance at Gettysburgh, other corps hurried to support, and Gettysburgh became historical. When Grant assumed general command in 1864, Meade continued to command the army of the Potomac under him, and mutual good-feeling enabled them to maintain this delicate relation without friction, and with the best results. At the close of the war, being major-general in the regular army, he commanded the military division of the Atlantic until his death at Philadelphia, Nov. 6, 1872.

MONTGOMERY, RICHARD, was born near Raphoe, Ireland, Dec. 2, 17386, and died in the assault on Quebec, Dec. 31,1775. He served in the British army from 1754 to 1772, when he retired, emigrated to America, and settled in New York, marrying the daughter of R. R. Livingston. He was appointed a brigadier-general in the American army in 1775, and, for his services in Canada, was made a major-general the same year.

MORGAN, EDWIN DENNISON, governor of New York, was born at Wash- ington, Mass., Feb. 8, 1811. After a successful career as a merchant in Hartford, Conn., aud New York city, he served in the New York State senate, 1850-53, and was chairman of the Republican National Committee,

1856-64, Elected governor of New York in 1858, he served through the year 1862, supervising the raising and equipment of about 220,000 soldiers. Ie was United States senator, 1863-69. lle died Feb. 14, 1883.

MORTON, OLIVER PERRY (1823-1877), one of the leaders of the Republican party, was born in Wayne county, Ind., Aug. 4, 1823. He was admitted to the bar in 1847, and was elected a circuit judge in 1852. He had been a Democrat, but becamea Republican in 1855, and was the Republican candidate for the governorship in 1856. Ile was defeated, and in 1860 was nominated for the office of lieutenant-governor, with the understanding that the governorship candidatc was to be sent to the United States senate, if possible. This arrangement took effect, and Morton was left to fill the office of governor throughout the civil war. Ile was aetive and successful in raising troops for the support of the Federal Government, and bold, almost to recklessness, in his means of action. He knew, or at least believed, that his political opponents in the State were determined to support the Confederacy by refusing to supply any more troops to the Federal Government; and the mecting of a hostile legislature in 1863 brought matters toa head. The Re- publicans left the legislature, thus leaving their opponents without a quorum; the governor ordered money for war expenses to be borrowed on the credit of the State; the Democratic attorney-general and the State Supreme Court held that this was illegal, but the indomitable governor borrowed the moncy on his personal responsibility, and managed the State government without a legislature. The borrowed money was afterwards repaid by the State. In 1866 he was elected to the United States senate, and remained till his death, taking a prominent part in every debate, and exercising a strong influence on the party policy. He introduced the resolution for the repeal of the twenty-second joint rule, which had governed the count of the electoral votes since 1865, He died at Indianapolis, Nov. 1, 1877.

PINCKNEY, CHARLES (1758-1822), American statesman, was born at Charleston, 8.C., March 9, 1758. He was admitted to the bar in 1779, was a delegate to the Continental Congress, 1777-78 and 1784-87 ; a delegate to the Federal convention of 1787; governor of South Carolina, 1789-92 and 1796-98; United States senator (Democrat), 1797-1801; minister to Spain, 1803-5; governor of South Carolina, 1806-8; member of the State legisla-

ture, 1810-14; and member of the house of representatives, 1819-21. He died at Charleston, Feb. 25, 1822.

PINCKNEY, CIIARLES COTESWORTH (1746-1825), born at Charleston, 8.C., Feb. 25, 1746, and died at the same place, Aug. 16, 1825. He was educated at Oxford and the Middle Temple, served with distinction in the American revolutionary army, was one of the envoys to France in 1797, and was the Federalist candidate for the presidency in 1804 and 1808.

PULASKI, CASIMIR, Count, born in Lithuania, March 4, 1747, joined in the insurrection of 1769, escaped to Turkey in 1772, and was induced by Franklin to emigrate to America in 1777. He served in the battles of Brandywine and Germantown, receiving the rank of brigadier-general for his gallantry, and was placed in command of the cavalry. Forming a separate corps, known as Pulaski's legion, he went to the South, where he commanded the cavalry in the assault on Savannah. He was mortally wounded, and died Oct. 11, 1780.—See Spark's Life of Pulaski.

PUTNAM, ISRAEL, was born at Salem, Mass., Jan. 7, 1718, removing to Pomfret, Conn., in 1739, Courage, strong will, and knowledge of men rather than of books soon made him a leader among his neighbours ; and his shoot- ing of a wolf by torch-light in a cavern in which she had sought refuge has almost become a nursery story. In the French and Indian war he became one of the most renowned of the ''rangers" or partisan soldiers, who fought the Indians with their own weapons; and at the end of the war he had reached the rank of lieutenant-colonel of the Connecticut troops. At the outbreak of the revolutionary war, one of the four major-generals' commis- sions was given to Putnam. He was an active leader at Bunker Hill, commanded at New York, and in the battle of Long Island, and was put in eharge of the Iludson river defences in 1777, being the first to see the strategic importance of West Point. Ie died at Brooklyn, Conn., May 19, 1790.—See Lives by Cutler, Tumphreys, and Peabody.

SCHUYLER, Puitip, American gencral, was born at Albany, N.Y., Nov. 20, 1733. He was of an old and wealthy Dutch family, and in early manhood became a leader in the affairs of the colony of New York. He reached the rank of major in the French and Indian war, and at the beginning of the

revolutionary struggle was made one of the American major-generals. He took part in the expedition against Canada in 1775, but ill-health compelled

him to retire. He took the leading part in preparing to mect Burgoyne's expedition in 1778; but troops had to be called in from other States, and he was subjected to jealousies which thwarted him at every step. Nevertheless his arraugements were so complete that he had really checkmated Burgoyne before Congress superseded him in the command by the appointment of Gates who reaped all the glory which should have accrued to Schuyler, Retiring from the army, he served for three years in the Continental Congress, and in the United States senate, 1789-91 and 1797-98. He died at Albany, Nov, 18, 1804,—See his Life and Times, by Lossing.

SEYMOUR, HORATIO, governor of New York, was born at Pompey, N.Y, May 31,1810. Ile was admitted to the bar in 1832, but never practised law, having a large private property. He soon became a leader of the Democratic party of the State, serving three terms in the State legislature after 1842, one of them as speaker. He was elected governor in 1852. Tn 1862 he was nominated again, and his success alarmed the national administration with a fear that the great State of New York would now be lukewarm or unfriendly. He proved to be one of the best of the 'war govelnors," active, zealous, and prompt in raising and forwarding men and supporting the war, though he was accused of adopting temporizing mea- sures with the draft mob in New York city in July 1863, He was nomin- ated for the presidency in 1868, but was defeated by Grant, and then retired from public life. He died at Utica, N.Y., Feb. 17, 1886.—See Croly's Life of Seymour and M'Cabe's Life of Seymour (1868).

STEUBEN, FRIEDRICH WILHELM AUGUST IIEINRICH FERDINAND, BARON VON, was born at Magdeburg, Prussia, Nov. 15, 1730, Entering the army at fourteen, he rose to be adjutant-general and staff-officer to Frederick the Great. After his retirement from active service, Deane induced him to go to America, where he was made major-general and inspector-general, He rendered eminent service by giving the army its first systematic drill. In this department he was the most important accession which the American army received from Europe. THe settled as a

farmer on land in what is now Steuben county, N.Y., given him by the State, and died there Nov. 28, 1794. —See his Life by Kapp, Bowen's Life in Spark's American Biography, and Greene's German Element in the War of American Independence.

SUMTER, THOMAS, was born in Virginia in 1734, and died near Camden, S.C., June 1, 1882. He removed to South Carolina when a boy, and entered the American army as lientenant-colouel in 1776. When the British had apparently overrun the State he kept up the struggle, retreating, when hard pressed, to the swamps of the interior. IIe was made brigadier- general, and thanked by Congress. IIe was a representative for South Carolina from 1789 to 1793 and from 1797 to 1801, United States scnator from 1801 to 1810, and minister to Brazil from 1810 to 1811.

TANEY, ROGER BROOKE, chief justice, was born in Calvert county, Md., March 17,1777. He graduated at Dickinson Collegein 1795, and was admitted to the bar in Maryland in 1799. Like many other Federalists, he became a supporter of Jackson about 1824, and was called by him to the office of secretary of the treasury in 1888. The charter of the Bank of the United States contained a clause, allowing the secretary of the treasury to ordcr the revenues to be deposited in other places than the bank, giving his reasons therefor to Congress. This clause was meant to cover the case of places where there was no branch bank; Jackson wanted to useit to cover a refusal to deposit any of the revenues in any of the branch banks or in the mother bank. Tauey gave the necessary orders, and the bank was deprived of the further use of the revenues, The senate refused to confirm Taney in his position, but his real work in this office had been done. 'Tancy succeeded Marshall as chief justice of the Supreme Court. The leading incidents of his career were his opinion in the Dred Scott case,'and his attempt in 1861 to maintain the writ of habeas corpus against President Lincoln's suspension of it (the Merryman casc). His life has been written by Tyler, and is in Van Santvoord's Lives of the Chief Justices.

THOMAS, GEORGE HENRY (1816-1870), general in the United States army, was born in Southampton county, Va., July 31, 1816. He graduated at West Point in 1840, and served on frontier duty and in the Mexican war. Tlis fellow officers in the South unhesitatingly entered the Confederate

service in 1861; but he declared for the Federal cause. He was sent at first into his native State, and then to the West, where he soon rose to the command of a division in the army of the Cumberland, with the rank of major-general. His victory of Mill Spring (Jan. 19-20, 1862) was the first encouraging event in the war in the West. He led his division in the advance on Nashville, and in all the campaigns leading up to the occupation of Corinth, of which place he was given command. He was now really second in command of the army of the Ohio, and distinguished himself at the battles of Perryville and Murfreesboro, but his reputation was fully made at Chickamauga. When the right of the army had been routed and was in full retreat on Chattanooga, Thomas, who had sustained the brunt of the attack of the first day, held his ground all through the second day against the whole Coufederate army, retreated with persistent and stubborn fighting, covered the rest of the army and saved it from destruction, and gave so much time for fortification that Chattanooga was found by Bragg to be too strong for anything but a siege. From this time Thomas was in command of the army of the Cumberland, and held the eentre at the storming of Missionary Ridge and in the cam- paigns up to the capture of Atlanta. When Hood undertook to transfer the war to Tennessee, Sherman left Thomas to oppose him, Thomas gathered up all his forces at Nashville, and inflicted a eheck on the advancing Con- federates at Franklin (Nov. 30), but continued his preparations for a final battle near Nashville. His numbers were equal to those of Hood, but he persisted in refusing battle until he had prepared cavalry and imade every arrangement for pursuit. Public clamour against Thomas's delay had become so loud that Grant had started from Virginia to assume command himself when Thomas attacked ood (Dec. 15), routed him, and kept up so merciless a pursuit that the Confederate army was scattered almost beyond recovery. In 1869 he was transferred to the division of the Pacific, where he died at San Francisco, March 28, 1870. His uname has come more and more to be synonymous with all that Americans regard as best in the character of a military leader.—See Van Horne's History of the Army of the Cumberland,

WIEELER, WILLIAM ALMON, vice-president of the United States from 1877 to 1881, was born at Malone, N.Y., June 30, 1819. He was admitted Ms the bar in 1848, served several terms in the State legislature and as prey of the State constitutional convention of 1867, and was a member of the

house of representatives from 1861 to 1877. Ife was nominated for the BAS: presidency in 1876 by the Republicans, and was elected, after a contes before the electoral commission. He died at Malone, June 4, 1887. .

Woopsury, LEVI, was born at Francistown, N.H., Dec. 22, 1789, and pe admitted to the bar in New Hampshire in 1812. He became a leader i the Democratic party of his State, was appointed to the supreme one of the State in 1816, was elected governor in 1823, and speaker of the 8 es house of representatives in 1825, and served in the United States sena ‘ from 1825 to 1881. Te was secretary of the navy iu 1831, and page “a the treasury from 1834 to 1841. Again elected to the United State oa 1841, he served until 1845, when he was appointed an associate juste Me United States Supreme Court. He died at Portsmouth, N.H., Sept. 7, nies j See Demoeratie Review, vols. ii. and xii. (A. d.

we

tT. jud- edge of the vast indentation made in the continent by the Gulf of sand Mexico marks the southern boundary between the meridians of

uni)? ED

PHYSICAL FEATURES. |

PLaTES 791

PART IL—PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS.

Copyright, 1888, by Fosiah D, Whitney.

PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY AND GroLocy.

The area of the United States extends, throughout nearly its whole breadth, from the Atlantic to the Pacific. The northern

83° and 97°. From the edge of this gulf the boundary between the United States and Mexico is partly artificial. Its most essential feature is the Rio Grande, which separates the two countries from 31° 47’ N. lat. to its mouth. The boundary between the United States and Canada is to a large extent

natural; though artificial in the north-east (see map), it follows the St Lawrence and the Great Lakes from the 45th parallel to the point where the Rainy

_ Lake river enters Lake Superior, and thence passes up that river

to a point on the west side of the Lake of the Woods, whence it goes along the 49th parallel to the Georgia Gulf. The country, as thus limited, excluding Alaska, comprises an area, according to the most recent determinations of the Census Bureau, of 8,025,600 square miles. This total includes 55,600 square miles of water surface (coast waters, bays, gulfs, sounds, &e., 17,200; rivers and smaller streams, 14,500; lakes! and ponds, 23,900). The area of Alaska is given in the Census Report of 1880 as 531,409 square miles,—a rough approximation, differing greatly from that given in the 1886 Report of the commissioner of the General Land Office. The total area possessed by the United States is therefore, approxi- mately, 3,557,000 square imiles.

The longitude of the most easterly point is about 67° W.; that of the most westerly nearly 125°. The parallels of 29° and 49° N. roughly designate the position of the country in reference to lati- tude. The extreme southern end of Florida, however, extends as far south as 25° N., while the northern extremity of Maine only teaches toa little beyond 47° N., the large triangular area between the St Lawrence and the Great Lakes, belonging to Canada, being all south of the 49th parallel.

As compared with the western coast of Europe, ncither side of America possesses a deeply indented coast-line. On the Pacific side there is only one important bay (that of San Francisco) between San Diego and Puget Sound. “At San Francisco and San Diego there are commodious harbours, but within the limits of the United States there are no others on the Pacific coast, unless we except that furnished on the extreme north by Puget Sound, and that offered by the mouth of the Columbia river, the bar of which is somewhat for- midable except for steamers under the management of skilful pilots.

The eastern coast north of the 85th parallel is a considerably broken one. That of Maine may almost be described as a “ fiord coast,”” so numerous

are the indentations, which are, however, of moderate depths, but which are large enough to afford excellent and commodious harbours, of which that of Portland may be taken asthe type. There is an indentation of considerable size formed by the arm of Cape Cod projecting almost at right angles, and enclosing Massachusetts Bay, at the bottom of which lies the com- modious, but not specially accessible, harbour of Boston. The situation of the city of New York makes it by far the most import- ant centre of foreign and domestic commerce in the United States. This superiority is due in part to the excellence of its harbour, and in part to its being the terminus of the great natural line of com- munication between the East and the West, a position which wonld seem to belong by right to some point on or near the mouth of the St Lawrence, which is the outlet of the Great Lakes, but from which this river is shut out by its north-easterly trend, which carrics it into a region beyond that of successful cultivation and populous settlements, and where navigation is suspended during a considerable portion of the ycar by the freezing of the river.

Long Island, about 120 miles in length, and extending along the southern coast of Connecticut, is the only island of any con- siderable size on the whole Atlantic coast. Smaller ones—Martha's Vineyard, Nantucket, Block Island, and others—lic adjacent to Long Island on the cast, and form, as it were, its prolongation in that direction, while thcre are indentations of considerable depth on the coast of the mainland opposite these islands.

South of New York there are two indentations of importance— Delaware Bay and Chesapeake Bay,—the former being, as it were, the expanded mouth of the river of the same name, the other being in somewhat similar relations to two large rivers, the Susquchanna aud the Potomac. Philadelphia and Baltimore are the cities that command the advantages for commerce which these two bays offer.

The Gulf of Mexico is of large dimensions, and of great import- ance as affecting the accessibility of the interior, and still more as influencing the climate of the country. The peninsula of Florida, extending 5 degrees south of the mainland, and forming the eastern

oundary of the Gulf, is in a considerable part of its surface so low and swampy as to be practically uninhabitable. a ee

1 Under this head no portion of the Great Lakes is included.

The drainage areas of the country, as given by the United States Drainage census of 1880 are—Atlantic and Gulf, 2,178,210 sq. m.; Great areas,

Basin, 228,150; Pacific slope, 619,240. ‘The drainage into the Atlantic and Gulf is distributed as follows :—New England coast, 61,830 sq. m.; Middle Atlantic coast, 83,020; South Atlantic coast, 182,040 ; Great Lakes, 175,340; Gulf of Mexico, 1,725,980 (the Mississippi-Missouri basin being estimated at 1,240,039).

_ The explanation of this overwhelming preponderance of drainage into the Gulf of Mexico at once becomes evident when we notice the general relief of the country and the positions of the various watersheds, If the level of the occan were raised 1000 feet, a broad water-way across the American continent would be opened. There would be a great mass of land on the western side, which would comprehend nearly the whole of Mexico, and which, within the limnits of the United States, would have a breadth from east to west of from 1500 to 2000 miles. North of the United States boundary line the breadth of this mass of land would diminish rapidly in Width as higher latitudes were reached, but its dimensions would still be on a grand scale, although deeply intersected with inlets occupying the positions of the lower portions of the present streams of that region. A similar rise of 500 feet in the ocean would not divide the continent into two decidedly distinct and widely separ- ated parts, but would isolate New England from the land adjacent on the north and west, by opening a channel through the Hudson River and Lake Champlain depressions, would carry the Atlantic coast-line more than 100 miles inland of its present position, and would open a deep bay in what is now the Mississippi valley, the ramifying arms of which would extend north nearly to Chicago, to Cincinnati on the Ohio, to Burlington, Iowa, on the Mississippi, and nearly to Jefferson City, on the Missouri. A rise of sea-level of 2000 feet would not materially change, as to position and size, the great land-mass on the western side of the continent already spoken of. That area would be slightly narrowed on the east, and would have its western edge more deeply indented, with the addi- tion of groups of islands, so that its character would, south of the Columbia, be something like what it is at the present

time north of that river. On the eastern side of the continent, however, the most striking changes would be effected. All the present coherent land-mass east of the 97th meridian would have disappeared, and in place of it we should have various groups of islands, one of the most important of which would extend from the north line of Georgia north-east into Pennsylvania and New J ersey, where it would ter- minate in finger-like projections, forming north-easterly and south- westerly trending archipelagos, with various outliers in north-eastern New York, Vermont, and New Hampshire, the highest points of which would rise from 8000 to 4000 feet above the surrounding waters. The distance of these islands from the western mainland would be from 1000 to 1500 miles. Another group of islands north of the United States boundary would extend in a curving line parallel to and north of the St Lawrence and the Great Lakes.

The all-important fact in the topography of the North American General continent in general, and of the United States in particular, is the topo- existence of a central comparatively low and level region, declining graphy.

gently from a watershed in close proximity to the Great Lakes on the north towards the Gulf of Mexico on the south.

One may ascend the Mississippi to its junction with the Ohio, at Cairo—a distance of 1100 miles from the Gulf of Mexico,—and the elevation attained will be only about 300 feet, an average ascent of about 4 inches to the mile. A journey of almost 1000 miles farther, to Pittsburgh, at the junction of the Allegheny and Monon- gahela rivers, will only give a total rise of 700 fect above the sca- level. The head of the Mississippi is in a region entirely destitute of mountains, comprising an almost level area, covered in large part by lakes and swamps, and only about 1500 feet in elevation. In ascending the Mississippi to St Louis, a distance of 1250 miles, we have reached an elevation of about 400 feet, and at St Paul, 658 miles above the mouth of the Missouri, one of a little less than 700 feet. If we follow up the Missouri to the western line of the State of the same name, where the river flows from the north, we have the choice, if we wish to kcep on directly west, of following either of its great branches from that direction —the Platte and the Kansas. Up cither of these we may travel for fully 500 miles, rising so gradually that the difference of elevation from day to day is

hardly perceptible, the country preserving all the characteristics of a plain, although declining gently to the east.

We have, therefore, in the central region of the United States a nearly level area, which, roughly speaking, may be taken at 1250 miles square, which has a very gentle downward slope from east and west to the centre, and from very nearly its northern ex- tremity to the Gulf of Mexico, its southern boundary, while its northern edge, with a part of the adjacent region, is occupied by five great bodies of fresh water, communicating by short narrow river-like contractions of the water areas, and all together occupy-

General eharaeter.

Break

of the Hudson and Mohawk.

792 a i ae a

ing an area of about 92,000 square miles. This central valley is not entirely devoid of mountains; but these higher areas are so small in extent, as compared with the entire area of the great valley, as to be of extremely subordinate importance. Meanwhile we turn to a consideration of the higher regions east and west of the great valley.

Neither on the eastern nor on the western side of the eontinent are these of the nature of simple mountain chains. On the contrary, both eastern and western highlands are complicated in their oro- graphie structure, broken into portions, each having a character of its own, and generally—but not always—preserving a certain parallelism with each other, broken longitudinally or in the direc- tion of the prevailing trend of the elevated mass, and separated by valleys and tablelands of very varying dimensions. The western mass, which is much the larger, is also very much tlie more com- plicated of the two. It is not only made up of a great number of parts more or less distinctly separated from each other, but it even encloses a large area of plains, valleys, and mountain ranges which have no drainage to the sea. This greatly predominating complexity of the western elevated region is the result of complicated geologi- cal conditions, to which are

added climatic pcculiarities of a striking character. The eastern elevated side of the continent is now gene- rally called the Appalachian region, the western the Cordilleran.

The Appalachian Systen.

The Appalachian ranges all belong to an ancient system of uplift or disturbance, and have not been invaded by volcanic inaterials of recent date, presenting in both these respects a most marked contrast to the Cordilleran system. There are volcanic rocks along portions of the eastern slope of the Appalachians ; but these eruptive dikes and overflows are not of Tertiary and post-Tertiary but of Mesozoic age.

The name Appalachian is used as designating the entire complex of ranges, valleys, and tablelands in and upon whieh is situated the watershed from which on the north and east the streams descend to the Atlantic, either directly or through the Great Lakes, and on the west and south-west to the Gulf of Mexico, either as tributaries to the Mississippi or flowing directly to the Gulf. As thus defined, the Appalachian region, system, or complex of ranges extends from the promontory of Gaspé, in a mean direction of north-east and south-west, to Alabama, a distance of about 1300 miles, where it disappears under the much more recent geological formations which form a broad belt along the Gulf of Mexico and extend far up the Mississippi valley.}

While the Appalachian system, as a whole, is so nearly continu- ous, as a feature of the topography of the country, that it seems necessary to include it all under one general designation, yet dif- ferent portions are extremely unlike each other in some of those features which are generally looked upon as essential to the unity of a mountain system.

One very marked and important break at least in the system is that ocenpied by the Hudson river, and extending up the Mohawk valley to the west, to a eonnexion with the Great Lakes, and up the Champlain valley to the north, to a connexion with the St Lawrence river direct. A rise of 152 feet in the sea-level would isolate from the rest of the continent all of New England and that part of Canada lying to the south-east of the St Lawrence, as far as the extremity of Gaspé. A further rise of 278 feet would open a waterway

from the Atlantie to the Great Lakes, and leave the mass of the Adirondacks as an island lying adjacent to New England on the east and the Appalachian land-mass on the south. We seek in vain for any other break in the Appalachian system as complete as this, and, when we compare the portions of the system lying on each side of this line of division, we recognize the fact that there are essential points in which they differ from each other, and that these differences are greater than any pre- sented by the various portions of the system in its extension to the south-west of the Hudson river break. This north-eastern division of the Appalachians may therefore properly first have its more important topographical and geological features indicated.

Beginning with the division west of Lake Champlain and north

1 The first person to describe topographically the Appalachian system asa whole was Guyot, who, in 1861, published the results of scyeral years' work among these mountains, giving the heights of numerous points obtained by the aid of the barometer, accompanied by gencralizations in regard to the orography of the region, and a map (1: 6,000,000), which was first published in Petermann's Mitthetlungen (1860). The various geological surveys carried on by the States included in the Appalachian region have furnished a large mass of material both geographical and geological in regard to portions of the range; but, since this work has not, as a rule, been based on accurate topographical maps, most of it is rather of the nature of a reconnaissance than of a finished survey. The State of New Jerscy is, however, publishing a map based on an accurate triangula- tion, but on a small scale (1: 63,360). The first and second geological surveys of Pennsylvania have also done much to extend our knowledge of the topography of the most complicated and interesting portion of the whole Appalachian region, but as we go either south or north from this central region we find the data Icss and Iess eompletc, and in regard to the extreme south-western portion of the Appalachian range we are little if at all in advance of Guyot. What is most lacking at present is an accurate map of that portion of the system which lies to the south of the region embraced within the State of Pennsylvania.

ST AT Bese [puystoar,

of the Mohawk valley—the Adirondack region or mountains, — Adiron-
we find, on cxamination, that this region is not only to a eertain dacks
extent isolated topographically from the rest of the Appalachian ranges, but
that it belongs to a geologically older system.2 The rocks are all eruptive in
the central portion of the mass, and chiefly gabbro and granitic or gneissoid
in character. On the exterior especially on the eastern edge, are deposits of
limestone, which are generally believed by geologists to be sedimentary
beds, highly metamorphosed, but which, in the opinion of the present writer

are more probably of the nature of chemical precipitates.

The drainage of this region is radial from a central point, but

the slope on the east is shorter than on any of the other sides, From
‘Tahawas or Mount Marcy (5344 feet) the drainage is to the north-east by
the Au Sable to Lake Champlain, by the : Raquette to the St Lawrence, and
by the branches forming the ‘| head waters of the Hudson to the south. The
dominating line of elevations runs nearly east and west, with high spurs and
narrow ridges on the north, of which Whiteface Mountain (4871 feet) is one
of the most conspicuous. The region is one of numerous lakes | and lake-
like expansions of the rivers, so that, with short portages, ‘? a large part of it
can be visited by boat or canoe. The lake region proper of the Adirondacks
lies at an elevation of from 1500 to 2000 feet:—Lake Silver, 1983 feet;
Placid, 1950; Saranac (Upper), 1606, (Lower), 1557 ; Smith’s, 1788 ;
Tupper’s, 1504 ; Long, 1584 ; Raquette, 1765; Sandford, 1685; Cranberry,
1570. here are indications of the Appalachian trend in the north-east south-
west direction of several of the larger lakes ; but many others trend nearly
north and south. The number of the lakes is the result of the impermeability
of the rock, the general uniformity in height of the region, and the broken
character of the surface, which is very irregularly covered by large masses
of rolled detritus. The work of water is everywhere distinctly visible, and
that of ice hardly perceptible.

The mountainous region east of the Hudson in New England New

is the portion of the system most irregular in topographical England
features. Two groups of elevations, however, are quite well topo- marked,
and have distinctive namcs—the Green and the White graphy. Mountains.

These are separated by the Connecticut river, which has a nearly north and south eourse parallel to the range of the Green Mountains. Nowhere in this latter range is there a continuous uplift forming a long ridge or crest, but there is a gentle swell of the surface on which here and there rise elongated groups of considerably higher summits. In the extreme south- western corner of Massachusetts rises Bald Peak (2624 feet), and in the north-western corner Graylock or Saddle Mountain (3505 feet). Still farther north, in Vermont, are the culminating points of the Green Mountain range :—Eqninox, 3872 feet ; Pico, 3935 ; Camel's Hump, 4077 ; Killington, 4221; and Mansfield, 4389 fect. As- cutney, a quite isolated point, near the Connecticut river, has an altitude of 3163 feet.

The Connecticut river makes a very complete separation, in all but the extreme northern portion of its course, between the Green Mountain system and the highlands to the east, which have no col- lective name, but are in a measure the continuation of the White Mountain range. In Massachusetts this swell of land—for more it can hardly be called—has an elevation of about 1000 feet, the valleys being rarely sunk more than 200 or 300 feet below the general level of the gently undulating higher lands. Occasionally there is a higher point, like Wachusett (2018 feet) or Monadnock (3169 feet). From Monadnock the region east of the Connecticut broadens very much, the coast-line trending rapidly eastward. The eountry becomes more and more mountainous, but still without continuous ranges. The mountains are grouped around various central points, of which the most important are Moosilauke or Moosehillock (4790 feet), Lafayette (5290), and Washington (6290 feet). The last-named is the highest point in the Appalachian system north of North Carolina, and rises nearly 500 feet above all the adjacent summits. :

Farther cast, in Maine, and in the neighbouring portions of Canada, the topography has been little worked out in detail. So far as known, in Maine the irregularity of the range is still greater than it is farther to the south-west. There is in this part of New England no coast-region, but a gradual rise from the seashore towards the interior for about 140 miles, to the divide between the waters running into the Atlantic directly and those tributary to the St Lawrence or forming the head of the St John. _ This divide, which has a general direction of pretty nearly east and west, is at an altt- tude of

about 1800 feet at the western edge of Maine, and declines to about 600 feet on its eastern boundary. The southern slope 18 a very gradual one to the sea, and though broken and rocky is a diversified by any marked ridges or long elevations. The high points rise sometimes nearly isolated, and sometimes 1n ee having little of the ridge character. Ktaadn (Katahdin) 1s we Having ‘tiie ol the ndge character, Se

Se Oo of & ese oOo ee mC

ret mm

2 The Adirondack region—or Adirondack Wilderness, as it is often outa been more or less completely covered by a topographical survey ma – aa authority of the State of New York ; it was begun in 1872, but the final reswits, in the form of a map, have not yet been published.

UNPTED

dominating peak (5215 feet), and it rises in such isolation as to look in the distance like a volcanic cone. That part of Maine lying south of the watcrshed is drained by streams running nearly south- ward. Like the Adirondack Wilderness, it is a district of numerous lakes, as might be expected, since it has no rapid descent in any direction, is underlain by impermeable rocks, and has a consider- able rainfall.

The general uniformity of character in the New England portion of the Appalachian system will be evident from what has been here stated. This region is marked by comparatively low swells of ground, on which rise groups of higher points, rather irregularly distributed, nowhere reaching the limit of perpetual snow, and nowhere presenting great obstacles to internal communication.

The geological structure of this north-eastern prolongation of the Appalachian system has been as yet only imperfectly made

. out, a circumstance due in part to the extreme searcity of fossil remains, and in part also to the fact that the various sedimentary beds have been so metamorphosed as to be distinguishable only with great difficulty from the

associated eruptive formations, while even the latter have frequently been themselves so much changed by chemical action, since their appearance at the surface, that it is only by the microscope that their real nature can be made out.

With the exception of a narrow belt of Mesozoic rocks in the Connecticut valley and a small basin of similar age in Woodbury and Southbury, Connecticut, and also with the exception of a very limited set of deposits of late Tertiary age on the eastern boundary of Lake Champlain and on the Atlantic coast, there are, so far as known, no rocks in New England more recent than the Paleozoic. Tertiary and Cretaceous formations are, however, found covering small areas on some of the islands adjacent to the coast. Along the western sides of Vermont and Massachusetts the rocks are clearly proved by their fossils to be of Lower Silurian age, and their structure has been made out in part. There are faults and synclinals,—limestones and chloritic and talcose slates being the predominating rocks. ‘The dips are chiefly to the eastward, and

_ the rocks are of more recent age as we go east from Lake Champlain,

_ on the east side of which is a large development of the Potsdam

_ sandstone. In and near the Connecticut valley, to the east of the

| region just noticed, fossils have been found (at Bernardston, Mass.)

i of late Upper Silurian age (Helderberg of the New York Survey). _ The stratigraphical relations of these rocks, however, remain

_ obscure. The same may be said of nearly or quite all of New

_ Hampshire, of eastern Massachusetts, and of a large part of Maine,

_ At one point in New Hampshire (Littleton) fossils have been

_ obtained of the same age as those discovered at Bernardston. In

_ northern Maine, traversing the State in a wide belt running north-

east and south-west, rocks occur of Upper Silurian and Lower

_ Devonian age, well characterized by fossils, a part of this belt

_ being clearly identical in age with the Oriskany sandstone of the

| New York Survey. The stratigraphical relations of these rocks are still obscure ; and south of this fossiliferous belt is a wide arca in which no fossils have yet been found. At one point in Massachusetts | (Braintree, near Boston) more than fifty years ago fossils of the lowest Silurian age (Priniordial) were found, and there are other

) indications that the rocks near the coast of New England, from

Cape Cod north, are very low down in the fossiliferous series ;

‘) but in Massachusetts, as well as in New Hampshire and Maine,

there is a wide arca between the Devonian and Upper Silurian

FEATURES. |

» which the stratigraphical relations are still very obscure.

To the west and south-west of the Hudson river, in New York, *| the intricacy and obscurity of the orographic structure and geological lage of the Appalachian system begin to be cleared up; but it is) not until we reach Pennsylvania that the characteristic features of this range are fully developed. (1) The first of these is, along its | south-eastern edge, as we cross the system from south-east to ‘4 north-west, at right angles to its trend, a series of elevations, at ‘ first comparatively unimportant and more or less detached from jeach other, but gradually, in going in a south-westerly direction, becoming more and more prominent and continuous, until, towards) the extreme southerly end of the system, it forms the most imposing connected mass of high plateaus and still higher ridges anywhere exhibited in tho Appalachian region. This south-easterly division Jof the system has no single distinguishing appellation. It is) called in Pennsylvania the South Mountains, in Virginia the Blue “Ridge; and in

North Carolina and Tennessee it has various names applied to its different portions. (2) The second important feature is the Appalachian region proper of the First Pennsylvania Survey, ‘a region of wave-like folds or corrugations, not so metamorphosed jbut that the geological sequence can be distinctly made out, in which orographic disturbances and a peculiar erosion have de- ‘veloped an interesting and intricate topography. (3) The third ‘Yegion, in crossing the chain from south-east to north-west, is ‘that of plateaus, bounded on the south-east by an escarpment to Which the name of Alleghany has been most frequently given, and iby which that portion of the system which lies in Pennsylvania is

he Ase

rocks of the Conncctcut valley and northern central Maine, of the geological age of which nothing is definitely known, and of

sfatTus 793

still almost universally known. These are the three most prominent divisions of the system south-west of the Hudson, and between tho first and second there is a pretty well marked depression which is a very conspicuous feature of the topography in Virginia and Tennessee (in Pennsylvania the Kittatinny, in Virginia the Great V alley, and farther south the valley of East Tennessee). .

We next come to consider the region occupied by south-castern New

New York and northern New Jersey. The Green Mountains are Jersey generally considered as being prolonged south-westwardly in the and Hudson river highlands and the highland range of New Jersey. southern This latter range in New Jersey occupies a belt of country some- New what over 20 miles in width on the New York line, but narrows York. down to less than half that on the Delaware. It includes no long unbroken ridges, the one which comes nearest to having this character being the Green Pond range, about 12 miles long; nor are the subordinate ridges of which it is composed in a line with each other or with their axes parallel to the direction of the main range. The highest point is Rutherford’s Hill (1488 feet). The Kittatinny valley mentioned above is distinctly marked in New

Jersey, where it also bears the same name. It is bounded on the north-west by a range called the Shawangunk in New York, the Blue Mountains in New J ersey, and the Kittatinny in Pennsylvania, It lies on the extreme north-western edge of New Jersey, and forms an almost unbroken straight line for about 40 miles within this State, from the Delaware Water Gan to the New York line. The straightness of this ridge and its moat level crest, from 1200 to 1800 feet in height, mark it as belonging to the peculiar topographical belt of the Appalachian system which occupies central Pennsylvania, This belt is distinctly recognizable still farther east, in the vicinity of Catskill and east of the mountains of that name, where there is a miniature group of hills, called the Little Moun- tains, only a mile or two in width, and but a few hundred feet in height, which are made up of rocks of the same geological age as those in the central division of the Pennsylvania Appalachians, and with the same characteristic structure.

The plateau region occupies a large portion of the State of New New York. Its northern edge extends along the south side of the York Mohawk river, forming a distinctly marked escarpment (the plateau. Helderberg Mountains). Farther west, in central New York, only a few miles from the central depression through which pass the Erie Canal and the great lines of railroad connecting Albany with the west, are various heights rising 1000 feet above the surround- ing plateau, and from 1600 to 2000 feet above the sea (Fenner Hill, in Madison county, 1862 feet ; Ripley Hill, in Onondaga, 1968 ; Niles, in Cayuga, 1623; Milo Hill, in Yates, 1848; and East Hill, in Oswego, 2300). This plateau, with its extension to the south- west into Pennsylvania, forms the highlands in which rise the various branches of the Susquehanna, which traverses the entire Appalachian system, in a general direction from north-west to south-east,

In south-eastern New York there is a remarkable group of The mountains, very conspicuous from the Hudson, and appareutly Catskills, quite isolated as seen from the eastern side, but which, as ap- proached from the west, are recognized as being in intimate con- nexion with the plateau region of central New York. ‘This group is known as the Catskills, of which there are two divisions,—the northern, or Catskills proper, aud the southern. The Catskills proper are a massive plateau, enclosed between the Esopus and Catskill creeks—affluents of the Hudson running in a south- easterly

direction, nearly parallel with each other, and at a distance of about 25 miles apart. The mountain mass thus enclosed con- sists essentially of two border chains running parallel with the two streams, and from 10 to 15 miles apart. The highest point of the north-eastern border is the Black Dome, 4002 feet ; that of the south-eastern range, Hunter Mountain, 4038 feet. The southern group, lying south of the Esopus, the drainage of which on the west and sonth-west is into the Delaware river, includes Slide Mountain, the highest point of the entire Catskill group (4205 feet).

The Catskill range is, like the plateau region generally, of the Devonian and Lower Carboniferous formations, The upper 500 fect of the Slide Mountain is occupicd by a cap of the Carboniferous conglomerate, the equivalent of the millstone grit, and the nearest approach to the Coal-measures in any part of New York.

From New Jersey southward the Appalachian system is very Appa- easily separated into those divisions which have already been indi- Jachians cated. Its eastern border—the Atlantic slope—is an area of land in rising gradually from the sea towards the interior, to the foot of Pennsyl- the Appalachian ranges, broadening out as we follow it southward, vania and at the same time acquiring a greater elevation before the and mountains are reached. This gently rising area is hardly percept- south- ible in New England, but it occupies a considerable portion of the ward. Atlantic States from New Jersey south to Florida. Its altitude Atlantic at the eastern base of the mountains is, in Pennsylvania, only slope. from 100 to 800 feet, — Lancuster and Harrisburg, which are ou its western border, being respectively 350 and 320 feet. On James river, in Virginia, it is about 500 feet high (Lynchburg, 529 feet), but at the source of the Catawba it has risen to 1200 feet. This

XT, — Too

794 UG tr DS

region of comparatively low elevation is geologically, and also to a eertain extent topographically, made up of two quite distinct portions. The part nearest the eoast is almost flat, or with the gentlest possible slope seaward, and unbroken by any elevations worthy of notice. Beyond this belt, to the

west and north-west, is another, itself almost a plain, but more undulating, rising more rapidly westward, so as to form almost a tableland at the base of the mountains, and itself diversified, in its western portion, by elevations whicli in places rise high enough to be called mountains. The belt nearest the shore consists of Tertiary and Cretaceous rocks having a very gentle dip seaward. These are first met with, as we proceed southward, on Raritan Bay, where the belt occupied by them is from 20 to 25 miles wide, but on reaching Philadelphia it is found to have acquired a breadth of more than 50. The stratified mass in New Jersey consists of a great number of alter- nations of sands, marls, and clays, from a third to half the width of the belt being occupied on the surface by the Cretaceous, and the more eastern portion being of Tertiary age. Trenton, near the western edge of this belt, is only 33 feet above the sea-level. These newer formations are of special interest on account of their fossils, and because of their great economic value. This level belt of uewer rocks maintains its width through Delaware and Virginia, and attains a width of more than 100 miles in North Carolina and Georgia. Between New Jersey and North Carolina it is deeply intersected by bays, the heads of which approximately mark a change from rocks of recent age to those much lower down in the series, which make up the western portion of the Atlantic slope. This change is also most distinctly marked by an interruption to the navigability of the rivers, and it also manifests itself in thie position of the eities of the Atlantic slope, most of which to the south of New York (Trenton, Philadelphia, Baltimore, Washington, Richmond, Petersburg, Raleigh, Columbia, Augusta, Milledgeville, and Montgomery) are not on the Atlantic itself, but on or very near this geological break. From Virginia southward the coast is very little indented, and most of the large towns are at a consider- able distance from it. In North Carolina the slope of the coast belt—here 100 miles wide —is hardly more than 1 or 2 feet to the mile. It is occupied by nearly horizontal strata of Tertiary, over- lain in considerable part by detrital accumulations of still later age, the whole consisting of loose sands, clays, marls, and gravels irregularly piled one above another. Nearly the same may be said of the continuation of this belt through Sonth Carolina and Georgia. In the former State Columbia (between 200 and 300 feet above the sea) marks its western border. In Georgia, at the gencral level of the country, nearly the whole belt is Tertiary ; but the underlying Cretaceous is revealed in various places where the rivers have cut deeper than usual. The heights

of the cities are as follows :— Augusta, 1380-180 feet ; Milledgeville, 810; Macon, 334 feet.

The second or upper belt of the Atlantic slope is in Iarge part made up of rocks which aro destitute of fossils, and in regard to which it has not yet been clearly made out whether they are really stratified beds older than the lowest Silurian (Azoic or Archeean of Dana), or whether they are highly altered rocks of Paleozoic age. Over most of its area it has very distinctly the character of a plain. In Pennsylvania it is highly cultivated and densely peopled, a ‘‘eountry of rolling hills and gently-sloping vales, with occasional rocky dells of no great depths, and nowhere more than 600 or 700 feet above the sea-level.” It is bordered on the north-west, for a portion of its extent, by a low range of elevations, knowu as the South Mountains, and generally eonsidered to be the northern prolongation of the Blue Ridgo of Virginia and the States farther south. The South Mountains enter Pennsylvania at the Delaware, forming a region of irregularly grouped ridges, which occupy a breadth of somewhat less than 10 miles, and which do not rise to an elevation of more than 400 to 500 fcet above the valleys. These hills are made up of massive varicties of gneiss, sandstones, — recognized by tho Pennsylvania Survey as being of Potsdam age,—and Lower Silurian limestones. The vallcys resting on this latter rock are covered with a highly fertile soil. In Virginia the upper belt of the Atlantie slope broadens out and becomes more and more complicated in its topography. In an official report! this region is divided into three portions, called the Middle, Pied- mont, and Blue Ridge divisions of the State. The Middle division is said to extend westward from the sea to the foot of the low broken ranges which, under the names of Kitoctin, or Kittoctan, Bull Run, Yew, Clark’s, South-West, Carter’s, Green, Findlay’s, Buffalo, Chandler’s, Smith’s, &c., Mountains and Hills, extend across the State south-west from Fairfax county on the Potomac to Pittsylvania county on the North Carolina line. These broken ranges, which preserve a general parallelism with the Appalachian ranges proper, and form, as it were, the outliers of this system, are designated by Major Hotchkiss the Atlantic Coast range. This middle country is described as a moderately undulating plain, from 25 to 100 miles wide, and rising from the south-eastern border, where it is from 150 to 200 feet above the sea, to an altitude of from 300

“1 Hotchkiss, Virginia, a Geographical and Political Summary, based on infor- mation obtained during the Geologieal Survey by Prof. W. B. Rogers in 1835-41.

STATES

to 500 feet along its north-western edge. It is a succession of Jow north-east and south-west trending ridges, the valleys between them being sometimes narrow and deep, but the ridges themselves not very prominent. The rocks are inetamorphic slates and gneiss, with numerous eruptive masses in the form of dikes, and with many quartz veins, some of which contain considerable gold, although mining has not, on the whole, been successful. The Piedmont division forms a belt of from 20 to 30 miles in Width, and may properly be considered as being the foothill border of the Blue Ridge itself. There is a marked tendency to the formation of a continuous valley between the broken ridges already noticed as forming the so-called Coast range and the Blue Ridge proper. In this valley lie Culpeper (400-500 feet), Fairfax (382), Charlottes. ville (450), Lynchburg (650), and other towns. This foothill region is described as exceedingly intricate. The coast range is succeeded, in the west, by numberless valleys of all imaginable forms, which extend across to, and far into, the Blue Ridge, to which, in point of fact, they topographically belong. Portions of the Picdmont country, however, form quite extensive plains,

[PHYSICAL

The Blue Ridge with its belt of foot-hills—the Piedmont region The — forms a conspicuous feature of the topography of Virginia and the Blne The Potomac breaks through it at Harper’s Ridge,

States farther south. Ferry, at an elevation of 242 feet, the mountains adjacent rising about 1200 feet higher. The passes, locally known as ‘‘ gaps,” are numerous, and several of them are traversed by railroads, The James river intersects the Blue Ridge 706 fect above the sea. The elevation of this range is considerable, even in its northern portion, —Mount Marshall, near Front Royal and Manassas Gap, being about 3370 feet. The height as well as the breadth of the range increases rapidly as the southern line of Virginia is approached,— the Peaks of Otter, in Bedford county, near

Buford’s Gap, rising to 4000 feet, and Balsam Mountain, just at the North Carolina line, to 5700 feet. Here the Blue Ridge has already begun to expand into that wide and high platean, occupying the western portion of North Carolina, in which are found the highest points of the entire Appalachian system. This elevated region is formed bya broadening out and bifurcation of the Blue Ridge, which begins near Christiansburg (2012 feet), opposite the point where the New river changes its course from a direction parallel with that of the Appalachian ranges to one at right angles to this, and breaks through that part of the system which lies north-west of the Great Valley, flowing in that direction to the Ohio. This plateau rises in North Carolina to an average height of 2500 feet, while portions of it are over 3500. It is about 150 miles in length, with a width varying from 15 to 50 miles and averaging abont 30, and reaches its highest altitude (3500-4000 fect) at its narrowest part. The plateau is bordered by broken ranges; that on the sonthiaa still continues to be called Blue Ridge; the more or less continuous line of elevations in the south-west has various names—Unaka, Smoky, Bald, and Iron being among the number. Between these exterior ridges run various spurs, with many points over 6000 feet, the culminating one being the Black Dome (6707 fect). The northern portion of this high region is drained by the head waters of the New river, but the principal drainage of the most elevated part is to the north-west, from the plateau, through gaps in the western ridges, to the Tennessee.

The geology of the Blue Ridge division of the Appalachian system is obscure and difficult. Most of the rocks are highly crystalline, but whether of Palaeozoic or Azoic age is as yet undecided. These erystalline rocks are more or less intersected by ancient eruptive masses, the range andextentof which are uncertain. Flanking the Blue Ridge on the west side, and involved in the disturbances of the strata by which it has been built up, are sandstones and lime- stones which in Pennsylvania have been recognized as being of Lower Silurian age. These limestones seem to become more arell-aceous farther south, and also to become unfossiliferous. It may be assumed, however, that the range in general is made up of rocks not newer than Lower Silurian.

To the west and north-west of the Blue Ridge division of the The Appalachian system lies the Great Valley.

it from the mountain district lying adjacent to it on that side bya very regular natural wall. The entire length of the valley in that State is about 165 miles, and its width between 10 and 11 miles. Throughout its whole extent it presents a gently undulating surface, approximating to a level plain, with here and there a belt of low hills. In Virginia the Great Valley is a very important feature, having a length of a little over 300 miles, and a quite uniform width of about 20. The mountains on its north-west side (the Kittatinny) are known by a variety of names, their northern portion being designated on some maps as the Great North Mountains. ‘ small portion of this valley is also included within the limits : West Virginia. The drainage of the Great Valley is complicate : The north-eastern portion is the beautiful and fertile valley ee 1 140 miles in length) of the Shenandoah, drained by two par ie branches of that river,—a well-marked double range, 50 piiles A 3 length, dividing the Great Valley longitudinally. Through thi

Its north-western Great limit in Pennsylvania is the Kittatinny Monntain, which separates Valley.

FEATURES. | yt i h Dp

range the northern branch of the Shenandoah breaks, turning at right angles to its former course and uniting with the southern branch at Manassas Gap, below which, towards the Potomac, the valley is but slightly broken by hills. South of that portion of the Great Valley drained by the Shenandoah is a region about 50 miles in length, in which are the head waters of the James. The various branches of this river, coming from north-west and south, unite at the western base of the Blue Ridge, and there break through it. The remaining portion of the valley belongs partly to the Roanoke and partly to the New or Kanawha and to the Holston. The rise of the Great Valley to the south-west is very marked, the point where the Shenandoah enters the Potomac being only 240 feet above the sea, while the head of the New river is in a region ranging from 2500 to 3000 feet. According to the official report, “the aspect of this region is singularly pleasant. The great width of the valley, the singular colouring and wavy but bold outline of the Blue Ridge, the long uniform lines of the Kittatinny Moun- tains and the high knobs that rise up behind them in the distance, the detached ranges that often extend for many miles in this valley, like huge lines of fortifications—

all these for the outline, filled up with park-like forests, well-cultivated farms, well-built towns, and threaded by bright and abounding rivers, make this a charming and inviting region.” The next division of the Appalachians, which may be called the iniddle belt, is perhaps the most interesting and peculiar although – not the most persistent portion of the system. It is not until | Pennsylvania is reached that it becomes important. Its character of this division is thus indicated by H. D. Rogers in the report of the First Geological Survey of that State:— It is a complex chain of long, narrow, very level mountain ridges, separated by long, narrow, parallel valleys. These ridges sometimes end abruptly in swelling knobs and sometimes taper off in long slender points. Their slopes are singularly uniform, beiug in many cases unvaried by ravine or gully for many milcs; in other instances they are treuched at equal intervals with great regularity. Their crests are for the most part sharp, and they preserve an extraordinarily equable elevation, being only here and there interrupted by notches or gaps, which sometimes desccnd to the water-level, so as to give passage to the rivers. The whole range is the combined result of an clevation of the strata in long, slender, parallel ridges, wave- like in form, and of excessive erosion of them by water; and the present configuration of the surface is one which demonstrates that a remarkable, and as yct little understood, series of geological events has been concerned in their formation. The ridges, which are but remnants of the eroded strata, are variously arranged in | groups with long narrow crests, some of which preserve a remark- | able straightness for great distances, while others bend with a pro- » longed and regular swecp. In many instances two narrow contigu- } ous parallel mountain crests unite at their extremities, and enclose)) 2 narrow oval valley, which with its sharp mountain sides bears) not unfrequently a marked resemblance to a long slender sharp- pointed canoc.” The system of ranges thus described crosses north- | western Maryland, and is largely developed in Virginia, with char- acters in many respects resembling those which it displays farther horth. It is a region of long, narrow, parallel valleys, separatcd by narrow, straight, and quite elevated ridges, of which no one rises greatly above the others. The number of these diminishes as we proceed in a south-westerly direction, and the belt narrows in | proportion. The drainage on the extreme eastern border is into | the Great Valley. The interior valleys in the northern half of the) belt are traversed by streams flowing into the Potomae; the southern) half is mostly draincd by branches of New river, In

some cases the waters flow towards a central depression in the valley, and then break through the enclosing range. The rocks are Silurian, | Devonian, and Lower Carboniferous. In its north-eastern exten- sion this division includes the anthracite region of Pennsylvania. The ridges by which the Appalachian belt proper is traversed are | the result of a series of flexures of the strata, along numerous axes | of clevation and depression, not complicatcd in Pennsylvania by) extensive dislocations of the crust, or faults, eithcr longitudinal or transverse, but gradually becoming so as we proceed towards the south-west. It is a curious fact that, in following in a south- westerly direction the Appalachian belt proper, we find that it disappears or merges in the Great Valley, which in Tennessce occu- pies the entire space between the Blue Ridge and the Alleghany (plateau, there called the Cumberland tableland, and is fully 40 Mniles in width. The rocks which underlie the Great Valley are of ithe same geological age as those of which the Appalachian belt is) composed farther north, but more closely coinpressed together, and }complicated by great longitudinal faults, the whole area being a comparatively depressed one, and not broken by marked ridges. |The true Appalachian belt is therefore limited ‘to Pennsylvania, Virginia, and a very narrow space in Maryland, and here the system has its greatcst width and most intricate and interesting topo- | graphical features, but not its highest elevations, which occnr north and south of this portion, in regions of greater and more irregular | disturbance, complicated by metamorphic changes and irregular

STATAHS

intrusions of eruptive material on a grand scale

195

, Making the task

of unravelling the geological structure extremely difficult.

The most western member of the Appalachian system

—is ; geology is most easily mad and, while its eastern border is an important topographical fe 1t mierges so gradually in the great central or Mi

plateau—is the one of which the

that any definition of its limits in that direction

The position and elevation of this plateau region in New York have been already indicated. Farther south this tableland occupies the western portion of Pennsylvania, nearly all West Virginia, a part of Kentucky and also of Tennessee, in which latter State it is called the Cumberland tableland, or the Cumberland Mountains, Since it here presents itsclf exceptionally with abrupt edges on the west, as well as on the east, but it is narrowed down to a width of not more than 30 or 40 miles in the northern portion of the State] The bold escarpment with Which the plateau faces the east in Pennsylvania is known as ny Virginia, but with A}lech much less distinctness, It is from this tableland that the waters Moun. crossing the cntire tains. the New river the ream heads on the € opposite direc-

and of much less in the southern. tle Alleghany Mountains, It is continued in of the Susquehanna descend to the Atlantic,

Appalachian system in its course, while with condition of things is reversed, since this st

eastern edge of the range and flows across it in th

tion from that of the Susquehanna,

Since the dip of the strata in southern New York and western occupy The Coal-measures

Pennsylvania is generally to the southward, 1 the surface as we proceed in that direction.

is quite impossible,

newer rocks

appear soon after the line of division of these two States is passed,

and it is largely with rocks of this age that the tableland is covered In fact the Appa- almost continuous mass of coal-bearing strata, extending from northern Pennsylvania to Alabama. A part of this field, however, notably in Ohio, reaches

through the whole of its southern extension. lachian coalfield, as it is called, presents an

far beyond the topographical limits of the Appalachian region.

The Appalachian tableland is, even in Pennsylvania, not entircly

destitute of marked topographical features, The axes which char- acterize the system farther east are not wanting, but the strata are

raised and depressed by gentle undulations, and not broken by

precipitous ridges. Much intricacy is given to

the topography, in

a small way, by the streams cutting down into the soft rocks, Before leaving the Appalachian region it will be desirable to add Mesozoic a few words on the belt of Mesozoic rocks occurring on the Atlantic belt of the

slope, which, although not forming a prominent to feature, are of much geological and paleontological interest. chians,

This belt consists chiefly of sandstones of reddish-brown colour, with which are associated shales, and occasionally, especially in the lower portion, coarser materials—conglomerates,—which are

sometimes well rounded by water, but in places in character. These rocks are first seen, on the

almost breccia-like north-east, in New

Brunswick, in Nova Scotia, and on Prince Edward Island. In New England they are limited to the valley of the Connecticut

river, with a small parallel area a little to the towns of Southbury and Woodbury, Connecticut

west of this in the . The Connecticut

valley Mesozoic area is about 150 miles in length, with a maximum breadth of about 14, The largest belt, however, is that extending from the west side of the Hudson river, along the south-eastern side of the South Mountains and Blue Ridge, through New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Maryland, to about the centre of Virginia, having a maximum width of about 30 miles and a length of some- what over 300. There are other smaller areas of the same rock in Virginia and in North Carolina,—that of the last-named State

extending a short distance into South Carolina this sandstone is a considerable amount of ig

. Associated with neous rock, which

occurs in the form of dikes and overflows, which, as the sandstone has been worn away by erosive agencies, occasionally stand out

quite conspicuously, although nowhere reaching an elevation of

more than a few hundred feet. Some well-known and much visited localities, such as Mount Tom and Mount Holyoke in Massa-

chusetts, the Hanging Hills and East and West

Rocks in Connecti-

cut, and the Palisades in New York, are of this character. The fossils which the sandstones contain are not humerous, but are of niuch interest, and the geological age assigned to this formation by most paleontologists is the Triassic. In several localities, how-

ever, great numbers of footprints of animals

occur, which were

long considered to be those of birds, but are now known to belong —in considerable part, at least—to the Reptilia, some of which had certain features allying them to birds. The paucity of fossil

remains, other than footprints, found in these the working out of their true relations a mat

rocks has rendered ter of considerable

difficulty. The latest investigations of Prof. Fontaine show that the Mesozoic areas of Virginia are separable into two quite distinct groups, an older and a newer, the floras of the two being quite different. It is in the older Mesozoic of Virginia, and in the most easterly arca, near Richmond, that the coal occurs which was the first worked in the United States. The stratigraphical relations of the Mesozoic sandstones are difficult of comprehension, and have

been the occasion of much discussion,

—the The Ap-

e out, palachian [ature, plateau,

ssissippi valley,

any

pographical Appala-

The Cordilleran System.

For convenient description, this system may be divided into the following six regions:—I. the Rocky Mountains; II. the Great Basin and the Basin ranges; III. the Northern or Columbian

lateau; IV. the Southern or Colorado plateau; V. the Sierra Re and Cascade ranges; VI. the Pacific Coast ranges.

I. The Rocky Mountains form the eastern border of the Cordil- leran region, —a border made up of many subordinate ranges. They may be divided into two parts—the north and south trending por- tion, and the north-west and south-east trending portion. Between these two subdivisions there is a marked orographic break, in the form of a high plateau region, over which the Union Pacific Rail- road passes at an clevation of about 8000 feet. On the north of this plateau are the Sweetwater and the much higher Wind River Mountains, which latter form the culminating region of the con- tinent, since in them head the three great river-systems of the country,—the Missouri, the Columbia, and the Colorado.

(A) The southern or north and south trending division is about 600 miles in length from north to south, and about 300 in breadth. Its eastern edge is extremely well marked, the ranges rising abruptly from a very gently sloping plateau. Looking at this division in the most general way, we find on its eastern edge a double range of mountains, quite distinctly marked in Colorado, or between the parallels of 36° and 41°, where they enclose a system of high plateau-like valleys, known as the North, Middle, South, and San Luis Parks, which have an elevation of from 6000 to 10,000 feet, the enclosing ranges rising 3000 to 4000 feet higher. These so- called parks are drained by the head waters of the Platte, Colorado, and Arkansas, with the exception of the San Luis Park or Valley, in which lies the upper course of the Rio Grande, whence it finds its way southward, through New Mexico, having a pretty well marked and lofty range on its eastern side, and more broken ones on the west, the two representing the Front and Park ranges of Colorado.

Tho Front or Colorado range proper, beginning as a junction at the south of the Medicine Bow range and the Laramie Hills, which are low inconspicuous ranges closing in the plateau above noticed as separating the two divisions of the Rocky Mountain system, is a broad, lofty mass, continuous from about 41° N. lat. as far as Pike’s Peak, about lat. 38° 45’, when it runs ont into the plain. The best known points in the Rocky Mountains—Long’s Peak (14,271 feet) and Pike’s Peak (14,147 feet)—are in this range; both are visible from the plains, and are conspicuous landmarks. Gray’s Peak (14,341 feet) is the highest point in this range; but, although on the continental divide, it is too far west to be visible from the

plains. This divide, which separates the Atlantic waters from those of the Pacific, follows the Front range as far as Gray's Peak, where it is deflected westward for 20 miles to the Sawatch range, which it follows for about 75 miles. In this deflexion the divide passes between Middle and South Parks, the lowest pass in this part being that called the Tennessee (10,418 feet), which leads from the head of the Arkansas to the Grand river branch of the Colorado.

The Sawatch range is one of the highest and best-marked chains in the Rocky Mountains. It lies west of the head of the Arkansas; and its dominating peaks, along the whole range, exceed 14,000 feet. 'Tle most northerly of these, the mountain of the Holy Cross (14,176 feet), was so named on account of the existence on its eastern flank of a large snow-field lying in two ravines which intersect each other at right angles, in the form of a cross, and which in summer is conspicuously visible from a great distance. The highest point is Mount Harvard (14,375 feet), and the passes range froin 12,000 to 13,000 fect. The continental divide follows the Sawatch range to its southern end, in lat. 38° 20', and then runs in a south-westerly direction for about 75 miles, over a high region without any distinctly marked range. Here it turns, and, running south-easterly, follows the crest of the San Juan range, which at many points rises above 13,000 feet. This range forms the western border of the San Luis Park, and, from its north- western end, in going either north, north-west, or west the explorer finds a very elevated and exceediugly broken country, which finally merges in the plateau or ''mesa" region of western Colorado. Uncompahgre Peak (14,285 feet), a magnificent isolated summit of volcanic materials, is the culminating point.

West of the Sawatch range is that of the Elk Mountains, a vol- canic mass of sharp pinnacles, the culminating point of which— Castle Peak—is over 14,000 feet. Between the Elk Mountains and the Uncompahgre rise the various branches which unite to form the Gunnison river.

The entire western portion of Colorado is a high plateau region of sedimentary rocks, of late geological age, cut deeply into by numerous streams, giving rise to cafions or ravines alternating with mesas or plateaus, the whole forming a labyrinthine succession of depressions and elevations.

The mesas are sometimes so nearly eroded away that the remaining portion of the flat surfacc is hardly wide enough for a bridle path, while at other times there is a broad area of nearly level surface, bordered on each side by tre- mendous precipices. The small valleys on the streams, where there

The Rocky Mts.

Southern division,

Colorado range.

Sawatch range,

San Juan range,

Elk Mts.

Plateau region,

5srfrAawrrs

is an area of level land large enough to be a feature in the topo- graphy, are called “‘parks” or “holes.” The area occupied by these, in Colorado, west of the continental divide, is extremely small as compared with the whole area of the region.

When the ‘‘ Parks” are spoken of in describing the Rocky The Mountains, it is usually the more conspicuous ones—the North, Parks» Middle, South, and San Luis Parks—that are intended. The 7 North Park is a tolerably level area, about 40 miles by 20, and quite walled in by high ranges rising at points above 12,000 feet, This park is a favourite resort for hunters. In it rises the North Fork of the Platte. Middle Park, which is drained by the branches of Grand river (not to be confounded with the Rio Grande), is much moro broken by elevations than North Park. The continental divide surrounds it on every side excepting the west. There are but few points in this park under 7000 feet. South Park is about 40 miles in length and 15 to 20 in breadth; it is more nearly level than the North or the Middle Park, and has a higher elevation than either (about 10,000 feet at its northern end, and

declining gradually southward to about 8000). The San Luis Park, or Valley, is much larger than the more northern parks, and is closed in by high mountain ranges. On its north-eastern side it has as a boundary the Sangre de Cristo range, of which the culmin- Sangre ating point is Blanca Peak, the highest point in the Rocky de Mountains (14,4638 feet). The Sangre de Cristo range is almost a Cristo continuation of the Sawatch, having the saine trend and similar range, geological characters, the two being separated by the broad depres. sion known as Poncho Pass (about 9000 feet). The north-western portion of the San Luis Valley is closed in by the Garita Hills, which are a part of the great irregular volcanic mass continued north-westerly by the Uncompahgre and south-westerly by the San Juan range. The San Luis Valley is traversed by the Rio Grande, which enters it from the west, rising in the above- mentioned volcanic region. In the northern and wider portion of the valley the mountain streams sink or are lost by evaporation before reaching the Rio Grande, and most of this portion of the valley is sandy, and unfit for cultivation except where it can be artificially irrigated.

Proceeding westward from the San Juan range, in lat. 38°, we soon enter the plateau region which extends to the Colorado. This plateau region is bounded on the north-east by the volcanic masses of the San Juan, Uncompahgre, and Elk Mountains, at the western base of which spread the great tables or mesas of Cretaceons and Tertiary rocks, often capped by volcanic materials, and which thus already begin to exhibit the characteristic features of the plateau region. Here the principal branches of Grand river and of the Gunnison have their sources. The Grand itself rises in the Front range on the western slope of Long’s Peak, while the Gunnison heads near Mount Harvard, the two uniting near the western boundary of Colorado, near 39° N. lat.

Directly west of North Park, and separated from it by the mass Uintah of the Park range, and also by a broad belt of high mesa country, range, is the Uintah range, remarkable as having an east and west trend, and thus forming a sort of connecting link between the eastern edge of the Rocky Mountain system and its western border, of which the Wahsatch range is the most strongly marked division. Starting from the eastern side of the Wahsatch, where it inos- culates with it, it runs east for a distance of 150

miles, when it sinks and becomes lost in the Tertiary and Cretaceous mesas lying west of the Park range. It has the Bridger basin on the north—a continuation of the Laramie Plains,—the two together forming an important member of the orographic break between the north and south divisions of the Rocky Mountain system already indicated. The Bridger basin is underlain by rocks of Eocene age, and has an elevation of 6000 to 7000 feet, Fort Bridger itself being 6,753 feet above the sea. South of the Uintah range 1s the Uintah Valley, also underlain by Tertiary rocks, and forming the north-westernmost division of the Colorado plateau region.

The Uintah range itself is of very simple geological structure, being a low flattened anticlinal, complicated by one or more faults on the northern edge. The Tertiary and Cretaceous strata have been so much eroded away on the higher portion of the flattened arch that the chief rock exposed in the body of the range is the underlying Carboniferous. The highest points, as given by the Fortieth Parallel Survey, are Gilbcrt's Peak (18,687), Tokewanna (18,458), and Wilson's Peak (13,235 feet). The southern slope of this range is drained by the affluents of Green river, which unites with the Grand, about 175 miles farther south, to form the Colorado. Pentel

The Wahsatch range is one of the most conspicuous of the _ Rocky Mountain system, and, as it borders the Great Basin on its rang? eastern side, it may properly be considered as forming the western limit of the Rocky Mountain southern division of the Cordilleran system. This range has a nearly north and south trend, ate with a bold escarpment to a height of nearly 12,000 feet in t portion of the range just east of Salt Lake City, but al gradually towards the north and not being recognizable as ze 18- tinct range beyond Bear river. This streain rises on the nort ae slope of the Uintah range, in nearly the same latitude as that 0

[PHYSICAL

UNITED

Salt Lake City, then flows northward for more than 100 miles, to lat, 42° 40', when it turns and follows an almost exactly opposite course, finding its way round the north end of the Wahsatch range and emptying into Great Salt Lake. In the loop thus made by Bear river is the Bear River range, in

which North Logan Peak rises to 10,004 feet, and others are of nearly equal altitude. ‘The whole of the Wahsatch region—the range of that name as well as the parallel ranges and spurs on the east—is one of difficult and complicated topography. It forms the connexion between the north and south divisions of the Rocky Mountains, and connects by spurs and irregular lines of elevation with the Wind River range, the range of the Tetons, and.the Snake River Mountains,

Although Bear river runs for more than a hundred miles in a northerly direction before crossing the Wahsatch range, the Weber river, which rises in the Uintah range, within three or four miles of the head of Bear river, runs with a pretty direct north-westerly eourse across that range, breaking through it where it is from 8000 to 9000 fect in elevation, and affording an easy route for the railroad from the Bridger and Green river basin to Salt Lake.

(B) The northern division of the Rocky Mountains has been much less fully explored than the southern. It also is made up of a large number of ranges, having a general though by no means uniform north-west south-east trend. Asa whole, this division is lower and less impressive from the grandeur of the masses than the southern ; and as we advance north-westerly we find more monotony in the scenery, more uniformity in the height of the rauges, and an almost entire absence of dominating peaks, Striking exceptions to this condition are offered by the Wind River range and the Yellow- stone geyser region.

The Northern Pacific Railroad, by which access is had from the east to this portion of the Cordilleras, strikes across the plains . from the western eud of Lake Superior, directly west to the Missouri, which it crosses in 101° W. long., at Bismarck, near the centre of Dakota. From this crossing it runs in almost a straight line to the Yellowstone river, which it follows for a distance of 340 miles. It then crosses to the Missouri at Gallatin, and follows that stream to near Helena, a distance of about 100 miles, From here the ascent of the main divide of the Rocky Mountains is made by way of Mullan’s Pass, the summit being crossed by a tunnel 3850 feet long, at an elevation of 5548 feet. Thence the line follows Hell-Gate river, the Missoula, and Clarke’s Fork, to Lake Pend d’Oreilles (2059 feet), which it

curves round on the north, and then strikes directly south-west to the junction of Snake river with the main Columbia.

The Rocky Mountains, in their north-western portion in Montana and Idaho, are more irregular in their development than they are farther south. There is, however, a similar tendency in both regions to the formation of those mountain-encircled valleys which are so generally known in this region as “ parks,” although not infrequently called ‘* prairies.” These parks are mostly destitute of timber, excepting the cotton-woods along the banks of the streams. The mountains are more or less covered with coniferous trees, not of great size, but sufficiently large for ordinary building purposes. As the ranges themselves are lower than in Colorado and in the southern division generally, so the high enclosed valleys are also proportionally lower. Portions of them have a soil suitable for cultivation; other portions are covered with bunch grass and well adapted for grazing. There is considerable uncertainty in the nomenclature of the various individual ranges. The namo Bitter Root is most frequently given to an important range, which ina portion of its course forms the main divide between the Missouri and the Columbia, but which, farther to the north-west, separates the waters tributary to the Snake from those which unite to form the Clarke’s Fork. The Lapwai and Ceur d’Altne ranges lie west and north-west of the Bitter Root Mountains, and unite the Rocky Mountains with the Blue Mountains, an important, but little-known group of ranges occupying a considerable portion of the region lying west of Snake river. Thereare also various groups of mountains, more or less isolated in position, and lying to the east of the main range of the Rocky Mountains in this portion of their extension. The Crazy Mountains form an isolated group immediately north of the Yellowstone river. They occupy an area about 40 miles long and 15 wide; the highest point is Crazy Peak (11,178 feet), and there are numerous others approaching 11,000 feet. The mass is formed by immense outbursts of volcanic rocks through horizontally lying strata eonsisting of sandstones and Shales of Cretaceous age. The Judith Mountains form another more or less isolated group farther north-east, in 109°-110° W. long. To the south-east, again, are the Big Horn Mountains, an extensive range forming an advance guard, as it were, of the main chain, between 43° and 46° N. lat. Still farther east, and in entire isolation from the main range, is the large and important group known as the Black Hills,

in 103° to 105° W. long., embracing a region which has lately become of considerable importance on account of its mineral wealth. This group covers an area of an irregularly oval shape, about 120 miles in length and from 40 to 50 in width; the average elevation is from 2000 to 3000 feet above

the surrounding country; but the highest point—Mount Harney —reaches 9700 feet. Deadwood, the principal mining settlement, has an elevation of 4630 feet. The geological structure of this Tange 1s comparatively simple, and typical of that of a very con- siderable portion of the Rocky Mountains, especially of the ranges of the northern division. The central or axial mass is of an oval form, about 70 miles in length by 40 broad, and is made up of crystalline rocks,—granitic, gneissoid, and schistose in character. The sedimentary rocks rest upon it unconformably, folded like a mantle around its base, and everywhere dipping from it, at a higher angle near the axial mass, and at a lesser one as we recede from it. The lowest fossiliferous rock is the Potsdam sandstone, from 200 to 300 feet in thickness. On this rests couformably a series of beds of Carboniferous age, 600 to 700 feet in thickness, and this group is succeeded by the series of deep-red sandy gyp- siferous strata, the “Red Beds” of the Rocky Mountain geologists, a very conspicuous feature of the geology through a large portion of this region, and the more so because often eroded into peculiar fantastic and picturesque forms. These beds are considered to be of Triassic age. In the Black Hills their total thickness varies from 300 to 400 feet. Above the Red Beds lies the Jurassic, which here has a quite uniform character, and is made up of grey or ash-coloured marls, marly limestones, and soft sandstones. ‘The thickness of this group in the central region of the Black Hills is about 200 feet, increasing to the north, and attaining in Belle Fourche Valley a maximum of 600 feet. In the Wind River range the Jurassic is more largely developed, and farther to the south and south-west, through the Rocky Mountains and in the ranges south of the Great Basin, it is still thicker. Above the Triassic and Jurassic, and conformable with them, are the various members of the Cretaceous series, so largely developed in this

region, varying in lithological character, the upper 600 feet composed of soft, easily eroded materials, and containing many characteristic Cretaceous fossils. The position of these various groups of strata, some quite hard and others very soft, wrapped coucentrically around the axial mass, and cut through by a radial drainage, has given rise to an interesting topography, easily understood from its simplicity, and little obscured by any covering of forest vegetation. A remarkable feature of the landscape, on the western bank of the Belle Fourche, is the Bear Lodge, or Devil's Tower, 'a great rectangular obelisk of trachyte, with a columnar structure, giving ita vertically striated appearance," rising 625 feet from its base, the summit being entirely inaccessible,

II. The Great Basin is the name now given to aregion embracing The an area of about 225,000 square miles, and having no drainage Creat to the sea. Its shape is roughly triangular, the apex of the triangle Basin, being near the mouth of the Colorado river, and its base extending in an irregular line, approximately east and west in direction, from near the north-eastern corner of California to a point on the northern slope of the Uintah range, where, as already mentioned, Bear river has its source. The length of the east side of the triangle thus designated is approximately 600 miles. From the northern side or base the drainage is into Snake river; on the south-eastern side rise various branches of the Colorado; and the south-western is very distinctly marked, for the greater part of its length, by the crest of the Sierra Nevada.

The Great Basin is an elevated plateau, traversed by numerous Its topo-ranges of mountains, having a general north and south trend, and graphy. a very considerable elevation above the intervening valleys, While there isa marked tendency in these ranges to isolation from each other, and to separation by deep and persistent valleys, there is still so much inosculation of one range with another, and so much irregularity in their development, that it is extremely difficult to define their number or to group them. Starting from the crest of the Sierra Nevada, at a point west of Pyramid Lake, and going in a direction a little north of east to Salt Lake, the traveller would cross about twenty mountain chains, mostly very distinctly marked, and separated by deep valleys of from 4 to 20 miles in width. The height of the plateau from which these chains rise is greatest in its central portion,

and it declines east and west and also towards the south, where considerable areas are actually below the level of the sea. The most important centres towards which the drainage con- verges are Salt Lake, about 4250 feet above the sea, and the sink of the Humboldt and Carson, very nearly at the same elevation. The head of the Humboldt river is near Cedar Pass (6263 feet), about 100 miles west of Salt Lake. This river therefore marks a distinct line of depression near the northern edge of the Great Basin, and in going south from this we rise iu the various valleys to heights of from 5000 to 7000 feet. The Humboldt Sink not only receives the surplus drainage of the northern portion of the Basin, but is on the same level, and after a wet season in aetual continuous con- nexion, with the Carson Sink, into which quite an extensive portion of the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevada is drained. Throughout the Great Basin the valleys between the ranges are themselves usually sinks, the lower portion being frequently occupied by bodies of water which vary in size according to the atmospheric precipita- tion of the preceding winter, and in many cases are hardly more

than saline incrustations resting upon a more or less muddy bottom. In general the valleys are nearly bare of vegetation in their lower portions; higher up they are covered with a growth of desert shrubs. There are, in occasional favoured localities, small sedge- grass meadows. There is a rapid falling off in elevation of the Basin region towards its south-western corner, and here portions are helow the sea-level, Death Valley, the sink of the Armagosa river, is one of these depressed regions, and along the line of the Southern Pacific Railroad is another depression, a little over 60 miles in length, the lowest portion of which is 263 feet below the level of the sea. Of the ranges traversing the Great Basin, with a trend approximately north and south, some are short and inconspicuous, while others maintain an almost unbroken crest for 100 miles or more. Their parallelism in certain portions of the Basin is very striking. The loftiest range is that called the East

Humboldt—or more frequently simply the Humboldt; this rises about the middle of the Basin, its southern end being in 115° 80’ W. long., and runs north-north-east for about 100 miles to near the head of the Hun- boldt river. At the north end of this range is Mount Bonpland (11,821 feet), the culminating point of the Basin ranges. The Pah-Ute range, about 150 miles west of the Humboldt, is another very persistent line of elevations, although rather irregular in trend, and not very high. The West Humboldt range is also a conspicu- ous one near the western side of the Basin; its culminating point is Star Peak (9925 feet). The mountain ranges of the Basin are characterized by the almost entire absenee of forest vegetation, trees being abundant only in their higher portions in the deeply hidden cafious. The rocks are everywhere exposed along the ridges and flanks. The valleys are deeply filled with detrital materials, which rise sometimes along the flanks of the ranges to a very considerable height, with a steep but gradually diminishing slope, indicating the former greater energy of erosive agencies.

The Great Basin is an interesting field for the geologist. The most important feature is the entire absence of the marine Creta- ceous and Tertiary formations, which play such an important part in the Rocky Mountain division. With the exception of the late freshwater Tertiary of the Humboldt river and some of the areas farther west, and of the post-Pliocene detrital accumulations of the valleys, there is nothing more recent than Jurassic, and very little of this, the most recent really important fossiliferous formation being the Alpine Trias. The stratigraphical relations of the forma- tions, especially with reference to the building-up of these ranges, are mostly simple, as in the Appalachian and Jura ranges, or even simpler still. Some ranges are simple monoclinals, others anti- clinals, and others again synclinals, or a combination of two or more of these forms of structure. They are rarely or never closely compressed and only moderately faulted. The striking peculiarities of Appalachian erosion, due in large part to the repetitions of hard and soft strata, are not to be found as important elements in the Great Basin topography. The Basin ranges differ, however, in a marked degree from those of the Appalachian and Jura in the almost constant presence, and sometimes overwhelming importance, of the volcanic masses throughout the whole region. In some instances these formations make up the whole range; or, at least, the whole interior skeleton of older rocks, if such exist, is concealed by them; in other cases the

eruptive matcrials have been poured forth along the base of the uplift, and there form great plateau- like masses; or they have issued from the summit of the range and spread themselves there in sheets, or flowed down the flanks of the central mass. In this respect the Basin ranges maintain a unity with the other portions of the Cordilleran system, throughout which the exhibition of the results of volcanic energy during the later geological periods is everywhere manifested on a scale perhaps unequalled elsewhere.

III. The Northern or Columbian plateau embraces the region en- elosed between the northern extension of the Rocky Mountains on the east and the Cascade range on the west. It is the basin of the Columbia river, which drains it by means of two principal branches, one of which retains the name Columbia to its source beyond the boundary of the United States, while the other, originally named the Lewis, is now almost universally known as the Snake river. The Columbia itself forks near the boundary line, the main river coming down from the north, and being joined by Clarke's Fork from the south-east. The Columbia and the Snake, after uniting, flow westward for about 100 iiles, before breaking through the Cascade range. This area is the portion of the United States of which we have the least topographical knowledge, and therefore only its more striking features can be indicated. The north- westerly trend of the northern division of the Rocky Mountains reduces the width of the Cordilleran system as we go north, since the Cascade range remains unchanged in its direction from the southern line of Oregon to the northern boundary of the country. The area between the two systems is more or less completely filled with mountains of which little is definitely known. Of these there are two principal groups, the Blue and Salmon River ranges, of which the former lies in the angle made by the Snake in its north- erly course before reaching the Columbia, while the latter forms an

intricate mass, extending from the westernmost ridge of the Rocky Mountain system westward towards the Snake.

The Columbia river riscs only 100 miles north of the boundary Columb; line, but runs nearly 200 miles farther in a north-westerly direction river . before turning to go south again in a course nearly parallel to that it had

before. The Okanagan joins it about 70 miles south of the boundary line and from here the course of the Columbia ig southerly, parallel with the Cascade range for about 160 iniles to the Great Bend, when the river takes a nearly westerly direc. tion, which it keeps until, after having passed through the range it reaches the Pacific. All the region lying north and west of the river and between that and the Cascade range is mountainous, ‘ The topography is very irregular, but there is a general tendeney to a north and south trend, which is still more marked in the region between the Columbia and Clarke’s Fork. Here the ranges on each side of the north-flowing Colville rise to from 5000 to 7000 feet in height.

South of the Columbia is a vast area, extending to the edge of The the Great Basin, and enclosed between the Rocky and Cascade Voleanic Mountains, of which the main feature is that a very large portion platean is deeply covered by volcanic formations, which here extend over a larger continuous area than anywhere else in the world, with the possible exception of the Deccan in India. This volcanic plateau- like region extends northward into British Columbia and south to near the line of the Central Pacifie Railroad in Nevada, from which its dark and frowning walls are visible; it extends up Snake river valley to the base of the Rocky Mountains, and south-west, through California, into the valley of the Sacramento. Along the Columbia river it unites with the great voleanic mass on which Hood, Adams, and St Helens are built up, and still farther north it merges in the eruptive accumulations which reach their greatest elevation and grandeur in Mount Rainier. These lava masses lie in nearly horizontal beds of varying thickness, interesting in their geological relations, but extremely monotonous from the scenographic point of view. They are often cut deeply into by the streams which in some places have sunk their beds below the general level of the country to the depth of more than 500 fect. ‘These are not infre- quently precipitated over the edges of the volcanic masses in cataracts, which sometimes are extremely picturesque. ‘The falls of the Pelouse river are striking, but those of the Snake river known as the Shoshone Falls are by far the finest, and among the waterfalls of the United States perhaps come next to Niagara in grandeur. On the volcanic plateau are occasional cones, occurring singly or in groups, but much the larger portion of the overflows seem to have taken place in the form of massive eruptions, by which wide areas were covered very uniformly with lava, and

on these nearly horizontal masses the cones have been built up during the dying out of the eruptive agencies. ‘he volcanic rocks cover an area, about the Columbia and its branches, east of the Cascade range, which may be safely estimated at fully 100,000 square miles,—perhaps at considerably more. A large portion of this area was once occupied by bodies of fresh water, the deposits from which, in the form of sands and clays, have been exposed by erosion in various places, and are found to be rich in remains of land and aquatic animals, mostly of late Tertiary age. A considerable number of lakes still oceupy portions of the surface, and an exten- sive group of these, some of which are of large size, although shal- low, occupies a corner of Oregon, and an adjacent part of California, east of the Cascade range. Much of the surfaee is dry and barren.

The valleys along the river courses are in many places well adapted for cultivation; but these fertile arcas are of comparatively small extent. The mountain ranges around the bases and over the lower portions of which the volcanic materials have been deposited appear to resemble, lithologically and geologically, the rocks of the Sierra Nevada. In the Owyhee Mountains there is a central core of granite, on whieh rest metamorphic slates and sandstones, forming a belt 20 miles wide on the south-western side of the range, and half as much on the other side. In the granitic axis are numerous veins of quartz, carrying free gold and ores of silver, With the exception of occasional hot springs, volcanic activity seems to be extinct, or at least to have been for some time dormaut. There seems to have been, about the close of the Tertiary epoch, a period of extraordinary volcanic activity throughout the Sierra Nevada and Cascade ranges, and over a vast extent of country to the east, It docs not appear, however, that there has been during the post- Tertiary times any eruption of fluid lava which would harden into solid rock on cooling. : ong

IV. Enclosed between the ranges of the Rocky Mountains on the e : . east and the Sierra Nevada on the west there are—as has been seell p — numerons high plateau-like districts, the beds of old fre region. lakes, some of which were of large dimensions. The strata deposite at the bottom of these lakes have been cut into by erosive agencies numerous places, so that the geological structure stands fully Te- vealed, while the wealth of organic

remains which they eoutain has niade these old lake-beds wonderfully attractive to paleontologists.

The drainage, desiccation, and subsequent erosion of these areas have giveu rise to a remarkable type of scenery, to which the name

ee eee Ses ee

_———— ot et OOS

ser or

tr

= = &

URd rE Dp

Mauvaises Terres was applied by the fur-hunters. These Bad Lands, which lie south and south-west of the Missouri and along its tributaries coming in from that direction, may be considered as the precursors and representatives of lands which, from the agricultural and business point of view, are bad enough, but which to the geologist and lover of the picturesque are in the highest degree good, and which are perhaps, on the whole, more striking than anything which the continent elsewhere exhibits. The essential features of their unique and striking type of scenery (of which the Grand Cafion of the Colorado is the grandest and most complete example) are these :—a heavy mass of stratified materials, several thousand feet in thickness, and covering many thousand square miles, has been cut into and eroded away, SO as to give rise to a labyrinthine series of gorges, or ‘ cations,” having a depth of from 1000 to 5000 feet, the walls of which are almost always extremely precipitous and in places perpendicular, and are by no ineans flat surfaces, but are worn and sculptured into forms almost always peculiar and striking, and often fantastic in the highest degree, And to a variety and complexity of form which seem to find a parallel nowhere on the earth is added the attraction of colour, the various groups of strata forming the cation walls presenting a gay adornment of tints of red, yellow, purple, brown, and grey, the depth and brilliancy of which surpass belief.

The region in which these wonderfully picturesque forms of landscape occur lies to the south and east of the Great Basin, between Great Salt Lake and the Colorado, to the west of the Green river branch of that river, extending west, with a gradual dis- appewance of its characteristic features, to near the border line of California. The Uintah Mountains may with convenience, although somewhat arbitrarily, be taken as the northern limit But, in point of fact, the characteristic type of scenery begins to be developed in Colorado, where the Book or Roan plateau, which rises to a height of 9000 feet, is deeply cut into by the White river in the north and the Grand river in the south.

The south-westernmost portion of the region, or that portion which includes the Grand Cafion and its branches, has a length from north-east to south-west of about 180 miles and a breadth in the opposite direction of about 125 miles. On the west it has as its boundary a grand escarpment which marks the change from ‘‘the calm repose of the strata with horizontal surfaces to the turmoil of flexed beds and jagged mountain crests” exhibited in the Sicrra and the adjacent ranges on the south-east, in the deserts of southern California. The transition from one type of geological structure to the other on that side is said to be so abrupt that one “might almost hurl a stone from one region to the other.” On the north the Grand Cafion receives the drainage of fonr distinct plateaus, the Sheavwits, Uinkaret, Kanab, and Kaibab, east of which lies a fifth (the Paria), which drains into Marble Cafion,—the prelude to the Grand Cation. ‘The Paria plateau differs from the others in that it lies at a lower level and is covered mainly by Triassic rocks, while the others present an almost unbroken expanse of Carbonifcrous strata. The southern boundary of the Grand Cafion district is a continuation of the western. The same great escarpment which overlooks the Sierra to the west stretches southward across the Colorado, preserving the same features for 80 or 40 miles. Slowly changing its course, it follows a south-eastcrly course through eastern Arizona, where its edge is known as the Mogollon Mountains. Passing this line to the south-west, the country descends at once from the horizontal platform into a lower country having apparently similar geological features to those presented in the Sierra country to the west. The following are some of the more interesting facts connected with the form and structure of the plateaus making up the Grand Cafion district on the north of the Colorado. The Sheavwits has on its

western side the so-called ‘‘ Great Wash,” a broad and deep valley to the north of the Colorado, The great escarpment of this plateau) isa fault or break, along the course of which the country to the | east has been raised several thousand feet. The Uinkaret plateau, which adjoins the Sheavwits on the east, is separated from it geo- logically by another great fault, the Hurricane Ledge, which marks | arise of the region to the east to the amount of 1600 or 1800 Teer, and which is prolonged far to the north. On this plateau are humerous cones and fiows of basaltic lava, some of which appear to be of very recent origin. Under some of these are beds of Permian age, lying over the Carboniferous, and preserved from crosion by the harder eruptive material with which they are capped. Another short fault separates the Uinkaret from the Kanab plateau on the east. The Kanab is the broadest of the four plateaus, and has a | grand side cafion cutting deeply into it, and running to the Color-) ado. The Kaibab plateau comes next on the east. Flat on the summit, and terminated by lofty battlements upon its eastern and Western sides, this is much higher than the other plateaus to the west, being from 7500 to 9300 feet above the sea-level. Its surface) is covered in part with forests, grassy parks intervening which in summer are gay with flowers of rare beauty and luxuriance. The | total length of this plateau is about 90 miles, and its maximum Width about 35. It is a block of ground raised by displacement

FEATURES. |

a labyrinth of cafions;”

great masses of strata by faulting.

STATES

between two great faults, tude is the Paria plateau,

799

Farther east and at a much lower alti- “‘a terrace of Triassic strata scored with i d ‘ and farther north-east, again, is the Kaiparowits, which is nearly equal to the Kaibab both in size and

altitude; this is composed of strata of Lower and Middle Cretaceous age.

Still farther north is a succession of plateans, separated from each other by lines of dislocation, which, however, gradually close and become less conspicuous in this direction, the topographical features of the region being dependent chiefly for their existence on simple erosion, with the frequent occurrence of curious volcanic formations, and not so much on bodily uplift and depression of On the southern side of the Colorado is another vast expanse of plateau land, underlain by nearly horizontal strata, which, with one unimportant exception, are not deeply scored with cafons as is the region to the north, “ Low mesas, gently rolling, and usually clad with an ample growth of pine, pifion, and cedar, broad and shallow valleys, yellow with

sand or grey with sage, repeat themselves over the entire areca.

The altitude is greater than that of the platcaus north of the Colorado, except the Kaibab, being on an average not far from 7000 to 7500 feet. From such commanding points as give an

overlook of this region one lonely butte is always visible, and even conspicuous, miles south of the Kaibab division of the Grand Cafion, and is named the Red Butte.

by reason of its isolation. It stands about 20

It consists of Permian strata lying like a cameo upon the general platform of Carboniferous beds. The

nearest remnant of similar beds is many miles away. The butte

Owes its preservation to a mantle of basalt which came to the surface near the centre of its summit, . . . Fifty or sixty miles south of the river rise the San Francisco Mountains. They are all

volcanoes, and four of them are of large dimensions ; the largest—

San Francisco Mountain, nearly 13,000 feet high—might be classed among the largest volcanic piles of the west. Around these four masses are scattered many cones, and the lavas which emanate from them have sheeted over a large area." The length of the Grand Cafion of the Colorado, following the meanderings of the river along the middle of its water-surface, is about 220 miles, Where the cajion is narrowest it is five miles across from the edge of one wall to the edge of the other. The general depth is 2000 feet ; but in the centre is a portion 3000 feet deeper, having a width about eqnal to its depth. The Kaibab division, or that part which has the plateau of that name on the north, is the most stupendous portion of the Cafion, a thousand fect deeper than any other, and far more diversified and complex in its structure.

The peculiar interest of the topography of this region is due in part to the manner in which great blocks of strata have been raised or depressed between long faults, which have given rise to differences of level amounting to thousands of feet, and in part to the extraordinary amount of erosion which the region has undergone, first over its whole surface where not protected by overlying masses of harder volcanic material, and, later, in the channels of the streams, which channels have been gradually grow- ing narrower with the lapse of time, the streams diminishing in volume, until during the present epoch they have either shrunk to nothing or have become absolntely insignificant in comparison with what they were in later Tertiary times. In fact, we have in this region the best possible illustration of the progress and effect of that stupendous desiccation of the climate which has long been manifesting itself all over the world, and of which the results may easily be traced far back in geological history. The eontrast between the plateau region south and south-east of the Great Basin and that lying to the north—between the region of the Colorado and that of the Columbia—is a most striking one. In the north the volcanic outflows have filled the depressions in the corrugated and folded strata, covering over the whole of the lower portions of the region, from which the older mountain ranges project like islands from the great congealed sea of lava. The rivers could not subsequently cnt very deep into these overflows, because the material is so hard and the general level of the region solow. In the Colorado region, on the other hand, the strata have not been crumpled, folded, and metamorphosed, but raised en masse to a high elevation, and not hardened

so as effectually to resist erosion ; and, possessing just enough variety of lithological character to prevent uniformity of wearing away and give complexity to the resulting forms, they have, under the simple influence of eroding agencies, assumed the wonderful condition in which we now behold them. Here, too, volcanic agencies have been active; but the molten material has been poured out from orifices at a great elevation, and has built up cones, some of which are of nearly as grand dimensions as the mightiest of the Sierra Nevada and Cascade range ; but the valleys and lower regions have not been filled up by them, nor have there been in the southern plateau region any such enormous overflows as those which characterize the northern volcanic district.

V. The Sierra Nevada may without hesitation be called the most Sierra important and interesting member of the Cordilleran system, not Nevada. only as a long and elevated mountain chain,—on the whole the

most conspicuous within the limits of the United States, —but also for its minerals, its climate, its peculiar geological features, its remarkable forests, its scencry, and the eomparative density of the population along its western flank. Its importance and interest are still farther enhanced if (as on the whole seems a reasonable thing to do) we consider the Cascade range as being a continuation. The Sierra Nevada proper forms the western edge of the widest and highest portion of the Cordilleras, or that portion which lies east of the State of California. It is especially conspicuous from the western side, because on this side it falls nearly to the level of the sea, while on the other side it sinks only to the general plateau level. It does not, however, border the Pacifie directly, since there is, all along its course, a lower system of mountains, rising directly froin the coast—the so-called Coast ranges. With these the Sierra Nevada and the Cascade range are so inosculated in ccrtain portions of their extent that a topographical separation of them is impossible, but for a considerable distance both the Sierra and the Cascade range are distinctly separated from the Coast ranges by broad low valleys, the most extensive of these being the Great Valley of California (for which, as well as for the more important features of the Californian Sierra, the reader is referred to Ency. Brit., vol. iv. pp. 696-8), The Sierra

Nevada has been already shown to be made up of acore of eruptive granite flanked by rocks of Mesozoic age; the development of these Mesozoic rocks increases towards the north, and in the region lying along the western declivity of the chain, in the central portions of the State, forms the auriferous belt of the Sierra. The gold-produeing detrital deposits, formerly so extensively worked, are gravels of Tertiary age covered more or less completely by volcanic materials, which not nnfrequently attain a thickness of several hundred feet. As in other portions of the Cordilleran region, the presence of eruptive rocks of Tertiary and post-Tertiary age is a fact of great importance. ‘The volcanic materials in question are seen in places in large masses on almost the very highest portion of the Sierra, in its southern extension, in a region where there is very little of this material lower down on the flanks of the range, and where there are no slates and no mining or washing for gold of any importance. Just south of the Mount Whitney group, where the Sierra rapidly falls off in height between the two ranges of which the system is here comprised, there is a region—the valley of the Kern river—in which occur several volcanic cones, which have a very recent look, but which are not known to have been in eruption since the advent of the whites. This region, however, for several years in succession — from 1870 onwards, and perhaps from an earlier date—appears, on good evidence, to have been repeatedly and violently disturbed by earthquakes ; and this seems also to have been the portion of the Sierra which was most affected by the great earthquake of March 26, 1872. Midway in Owen’s Valley, on the east side of the Sierra, beginning about 380 miles north of Lone Pine, where this earth- quake was most disastrous in its effects, there is a region of volcanic cones and lava-flows, by which the river is crowded over against the Inyo range, at the foot of which it has only just room to flow. These cones are seemingly as perfect as they ever were; and the flows of basalt have spread themselves out over the sage-brush slope in a manner indicative of a very recent date for their out- breaking. Yet all seem now to be entirely dormant. Even solfataric action is almost (if not quite) exclusively manifested at the present time at or near the summits of the highest volcanic cones of the Sierra and the Cascade range. Farther north more and more volcanic materials cover the western flank of the range; and from abont 39° 30’ N. lat. much the larger portion of the older rocks is overlain and concealed by modern eruptive materials, through which the streams have worn channels, often of great depth, from the sides of which

access is given to the auriferous gravels occupying the bottoms of the channels of the old Tertiary but now buried river-systems. In Lassen's Peak, in 40° 30' N. lat., we have the first exhibition of the isolated volcanie cone rising high above the adjacent country, which makes so prominent a feature of the range farther north in California and through Oregon and Washington Territory. This volcanic mass is 10,537 feet in height, and there are abundant signs of recent volcanic activity on and near it. There are, in this vieinity, several localities where hot springs occur, and where the rock has been so softened by solfataric action as to have given rise to mud lakes, in which jets of hot water and mud are sometimes thrown to a height of scveral feet. One of these places, about 8 miles from the summit of the peak, is 5976 feet above the sea, and there is here a pool of hot water 600 feet long by 800 broad, in the midst of which miniature mud volcanoes are being constantly formed. There are no such striking indica- tions of dormant volcanic activity as are seen in the vicinity of Lassen's Peak anywhere to the southward along the crest and flanks of the Sierra. Neither is it known that there has been anything which could be properly called an eruption, whether of lava or ashes, since the region was first visited by the whites, either from Lassen's Peak or from the much grander volcano to which the name of Shasta is given. At Lassen's Peak a great change takes place in the character of the range, which is here broken through

Ss Tf A Pass

transverscly by a great fault, to the south of which we have the high ranges and deep cafions often cut down through the volcanic strata, and sunk deeply into the underlying metamorphic rocks while to the north is a great depression, comparatively level, and exclusively oceupicd by volcanic rocks, which stretch off to the north and north-east, in almost unbroken continuance, for many hundred miles, forming a portion of the northern plateau region already described. Seventy miles north-west of Lassen's Peak rises Mount Shasta (14,440 feet), standing in remarkable isolation on a base between 10,000 and 11,000 feet lower than its summit. There are indications of former volcanic activity near the summit, but they are not so marked as those on and near Lassen's Peak. There is a flat area about 400 feet below the summit, on one side of which are several orifices from which

steam and sulphurous gases were constantly escaping at the time of the present writer’s ascent of the mountain (1862).

[Pitystcar

North of Mount Shasta the mountain mass now called the Cascade

Cascade range maintains characters similar to those which it has between Lassen’s Peak and Shasta for a distance of fully 500 miles, or until we have passed the northern boundary of the United States. The principal continuous ridge is comparatively low, and on it at irregular intervals rise great volcanic cones, differing con- sidcrably from each other in elevation, but all mueh higher than the surrounding plateau-like base on which they are built up. Unfortunately no portion of the Cascade range has as yet been topographically surveyed. From Mount Shasta northwards there are several prominent peaks, which are apparently volcanic, but which have not the conical form, while others exhibit this peculiar feature in a high degree of perfection. Mount Pitt (9718 fect) is a well-defined cone, about 75 miles north of Shasta. Mount Jefferson, about 150 miles still farther north, is of a similar character; and betwcen Pitt and Jefferson are various prominent peaks, especially the highly picturesque group of five sharp points, known as the Three Sisters, only three of them being visible from the Willamette Valley. All through this portion of the range evidences of comparatively recent volcanic action are present, in the form of regular craters and outflows of lava. Somewhat less than 100 miles north of Mount Jefferson is the grand break made in the Cascade range by the Columbia river, whieh has cut entirely through the volcanic mass, down almost to the level of the sea,— the Dalles, on the eastern side of the range, having an elevation of only about 100 feet. At the Dalles—so named on account of the great, broad, flat plates or sheets of lava which are there well exhibited on and near the river—is the beginning, in this direction, of the volcanic plateau of the Columbia, Near this point rise three of the best-defined volcanic cones of the range, two—Mount Adams and Mount St Helens—on the north side of the river, and one— Mount Hood—on the south. The last-named has been found by barometric measurement to be 11,225 feet; the other two seem to be of nearly equal height (about 10,500 feet). Mount Rainier (14,444 feet)—about 75 miles north of the Columbia river—is rivalled in

the whole of the Cascade range by Shasta only. The views of Rainier from Puget Sound are magnificent. It is much less accessible than Shasta, as it lies in the midst of a dense forest, far from roads; it is also very much more deeply covered with snow and ice. Still farther north than Rainier, and near the boundary line of the United States, is Mount Baker (10,755 fect), a prominent object in the grand panoramic view from Victona, Vancouver Island. While evidences of comparatively recent vol- canic action are so conspicuous all along the range from Lassen's Pcak north to Mount Baker, it is not easy to reconcile the con- flicting evidence with regard to the present condition of the eruptive agencies. 'The present writer, during several years of exploration, found no evidence whatever of any recent outflow of melted lava, such as would harden into a solid rock on cooling, in any part of the Sierra Nevada or the Cascade range. The eruptive rocks of these ranges are mainly andesites; but the last outflow of molten rock appears to have been basaltic m character. This is certainly true for the Sierra Nevada, and prob- ably so for the Cascade range. Under the basalt we find, in the buried sedimentary strata, abundant remains of vegetation, Pro- nounced by competent authority to be Pliocene in age, witha few species intermingled which have a decidedly Miocene character. The animal remains fonnd under the basaltic lava are all of extinct species, with the single exception of man, whose bones or handi- work have been repeatedly taken from strata occupymg this geological position. The age of the sedimentary beds under the basalt is therefore Tertiary, from the combined evidence of both plants and animals. There is no evidence that fragmental lava— ashes, cinders, and the like—has been emitted from any one 0 the voleanic cones of the Sierra Nevada since the region became known to the whites; but there is abundant evidence to this effect 4 regard to some of the high points in the Cascade range. hee Baker seems to have furnished the most unquestionable proof 0 activity in recent times. The first known eruption of this ve appears to have taken place in 1843. In at least thi instances Mount Baker has been seen in eruption by men 0 ius

range,

——— — Oe ee a

UNITED

‘ questionable authority,—in 1854, 1858, and 1870. Smoke and steam are said to have been frequently seen rising from the summit of St Helens. It is not easy to reconcile the statements which have been made in regard to the activity of Mount Hood. Eruptions of this mountain have been reported as having taken place; but the present writer in 1867 made inquiries of persons having it in full view, without being able to procure satisfactory evidence of any activity similar to that of Baker and St Helens, at least within the preceding twenty or thirty years. There is no evidence of any similar activity of Mount Rainier; but, according to Stevens and Van Trump, who were the first to reach the summit of this mighty cone, jets of steam issue from the crater at the summit in sufficient quantity to keep a party warm.

VI. To the west of the Sierra Nevada and the Cascade range is another chain of mountains, which, although greatly inferior to these in some important respects, is still of very considerable interest—the Coast ranges of California and Oregon. They differ in being newer geologically, of less elevation, less extensively and regularly broken through by granitic axial masses, and less covered by voleanie overflows. The upheaval of the Sierra took place at the close of the Jurassic epoch, whereas that of the Coast ranges was the result of agencies operating during the later portion of the Tertiary, and continuing down to a very reeent date—namely, into the post-Pliocene. The greater part of these ranges south of the Bay of San Franciseo is of Miocene age, although even there extensive areas of Cretaceous rocks exist, and especially on the eastern side of this mountain belt, in the so-called Monte Diablo range. Farther north, beyond the bay, rocks of this age become more and more predominant, the areas of Tertiary being comparatively narrow and unimportant. A remarkable feature of

the geology of the Coast ranges is the extent to whieh these

newer formations have been metamorphosed, so that by some observers these altered rocks have been described as belonging to the very oldest part of the geological series, The prevalence of serpentines and obscure serpentinoid rocks in great masses in these altered portions is also a faet of much geologieal interest. These altered rocks, and especially such of them as have becn more or less silicified, are the home of the ore of quicksilver, mines of which

Metal have been opened and extensively worked at numerous

points both sonth and north of the Bay of San Francisco, Chromic

iron is also associated with these magnesian rocks, and ata few points is present in considerable quantity. Gold has been washed at humerous points in southern California, with some success,

_ An important member of the Miocene series south of the Bay of

San Francisco is the bituminous slate, which in plaecs is several

| thonsand feet in thickness, and often contains a large quantity

| of bituminous matter, which, at some localities, especially near

Santa Barbara and Los Angeles, has oozed out upon the surfaec and

given rise to areas of semi-liquid material, called ‘brea ” by the

Mexican Spanish, which has oceasionally hardened and formed

large deposits of asphalt. Many attempts have been made to bore

into these bituminous rocks for petroleum, but these efforts have | never been successful enough to furnish even the home market with

a supply of oil suitable for illuminating purposes. Coal is found

at numerous points in the Coast ranges, both in California and in

) Oregon, and of both Crctaccous and Mioeene age. The most im-

jPortant imines are those in Washington Territory, near Seattle :

jand there is also a valuable and quite extensive coal-field on Van- jcouver Island, near Nanaimo, also in the Cretaccous. The most important and best-developed portion of the Coast ranges is that

} opposite or to the west of the valleys of the San Joaquin and Sacra-

mento rivers. Both south and north of the extremities of these

valleys the masses of the Coast and Sierra mountains coalesce, or be- jcome topographically so united that any distinction other than geo- jlogical is impossible. This uniting of the two ranges whieh takes | place in northern California is continued through southern Oregon,

where the topography is quite as complicated and difficult as in | those parts of California where the two ranges come together.

‘But in the last-named State the structure of the Coast ranges has

been pretty well worked out by the California State Geological

Survey, although the maps unfortunately remain unpublished,

while in Oregon almost nothing has been done in this direction.

Where best developed—in California—the Coast ranges have a

jlength of fully 400 miles, anda breadth varying from 40 to 70

according to the varying position of the coast-line. The mass of

mountains covering this area is made up of numerous subranges, some of which are very distinct and well-marked, while others are much less so. These all along the north-west and south-east

trending portion of the coast, or from Point Conception (34° 15’

‘N. lat.) to Cape Mendocino, run nearly in the same direction as

that coast. Their altitude above the intervening valley, in the

Wicinity of the Bay of San Francisco, varies from a few hundred

‘to 3000 or 4000 feet. Prominent points near that bay are Monte

Diablo (3856 feet), Mount Hamilton (4440), Mount Helena (43438),

and Mount Bache (3790). As we go north and south from the region

of the Bay of San Francisco, we find the heights of the dominating peaks increasing. Mount Balley, about 150 miles north of San

Francisco, has an elevation of 6357 feet. About the same distance south of that city is San Carlos Peak (nearly 5000 feet). Portions of the range south of the Bay of San Francisco are of extremely recent date, as great masses of rock of Pliocene age, hundreds of feet in thickness, are seen to be turned up atahigh angle. The ranges along that portion of the coast whieh has an east and west trend, on Santa Barbara Channel, have themselves the same trend, and are high and precipitous. Of these the Santa Ifiez is the most conspicuous, having along its crest points nearly or quite 4000 feet high. The Santa Monica, another east and west trending range, farther cast and south, is remarkable as being made up of Miocene stratified rock, and having a ecntral well-defined linear axial mass of intrusive granite, driven through it like a wedge, by which the range has been raised toa high angle near the eruptive rock, where it 1s extensively shattered and metamorphosed, and from which, in each direction transverse to the chain, it gradually and rapidly recovers its normal character and nearly horizontal position. Farther south along the coast the ranges are much broken, and central dominating points rise to very considerable elevations. The San Bernardino and San Jacinto Mountains are two of these elevated central masses, each rising to about 11,000 feet. The precise relations of these high masses to the Coast ranges and Sierra cannot as yet be stated. The region of the Coast ranges in California 1s one of very unequal attractiveness. Portions are rough and for- bidding, being covered by a dense thorny undergrowth, locally known as ‘chaparral ” ; other portions are in the highest degree fertile and picturesque, and have a remarkably mild and uniform climate. The slopes and hills near the coast, or open to the west

winds, have a fairly sufficient rainfall. The interior ranges, especially the portions of them west of the San Joaquin valley,

are very dry, and over large areas so much go as to be unfit for cultivation.

Geology of the Mississippi Valley.

The area enclosed between the Appalachians and the Cordilleras, extending to upwards of 1,500,000 square miles, the drainage basin of the Great Lakes and St Lawrence on the north and of the grand Missouri-Mississippi river-system on the south, cannot here be discussed in detail from the topographical point of view. The gencral features do not present the diversity seen in the regions already considered. All that can be done here is to indicate the salient points of the geology.

The belt of Tertiary and Cretaceous rocks already mentioned ag forming the Atlantic slope extends, with very similar characters, curving broadly around the southern end of the Appalachians, and continuing along the Gulf and up the Mississippi valley, to about the junction of that river with the Ohio. About half of Alabama and Arkansas, all Mississippi and Louisiana, parts of Tennessee aud Kentueky, and a very small corner of Missouri are underlain by these newer formations. Nearly the whole of Texas is similarly situated with respect to its geology. In the northern central por- tion of the last-mentioned State the marly and gypsiferous red sandstones of Triassic age cover a large area, bordered on the south- east by a little-known coal-field, of Carboniferous age, with a very small pateh of Azoie or Archean rocks at its southern termination, almost exactly in the centre of the State. Tracing the geological formations northward from Texas into New Mexico and along the eastern flank of the Rocky Mountains, we find the belt of Cretaceous and Tertiary covering a very large area, extending as far east from the mountains as the eentre of Kansas, and covering nearly all Nebraska and Dakota, the north-western corner of Towa, and the western half of Minnesota. The Triassic belt mentioncd as ocenr- ring in Texas occupies a broad area in the Indian Territory and the southern eentral part of Kansas. It is also quite extensively ex- posed along the streams of New Mexico, forming the border of the Llano Estacado or Staked Plain. The Cretaceous and Tertiary rocks of the west have nowhere anything like the economical importance which they have in New Jersey; but from a

paleonto- logical point of view they are of interest, and, especially in the lower Mississippi valley, have been studied with care and in con- siderable detail by the State geologists. Included within this border of more recent rocks, and comprising the whole of the North- Eastern Central group of States (see below), as well as the western portion of the North-Western Central, and smaller portions of the South-Eastern and South-Western Central groups, isa region under- lain almost exclusively by Paleozoie rocks, covered with post- Tertiary and recent detrital formations, the intermediate members of the geological series being entirely wanting. These Paleozoie strata include very extensive and complete representations of both the Lower and Upper Silurian series, and also of the Carboniferous, including both the upper and lower members.of this division of tho Paleozoic. As we leave the Alleghany escarpment in going west- ward we find the disturbances of the strata becoming less and less marked, what flexures there are being exceedingly broad, so that over large areas the rocks seem to lie in an almost undisturbed horizontal position, The geographical distribution of the areas underlain by the Coal-measures in this region is indicated below

2SS0UL == ren

Missis- sippi valley.

802 UNITED

(p. 812). Calcareous and calcareo-magnesian formations are espe- cially prominent over this great area of nearly undisturbed strata. As we proceed westwards from the Appalachian belt we find the purely detrital and siliceous rocks diminishing and the calcareous gaining in importance and thickness. Thus the millstone grit, which on its eastern edge is in places more than 1000 feet thick, is found in parts of the Mississippi valley to have diminished to a few feet, or even in places to have disappeared altogether. With this diminution of coarser detrital and siliceous material comes in a wealth of organic forms, and the rocks of the region in question have been most fruitful of material for the paleontologist. Towards the western and north-western portions of the Paleozoic area there oceur several marked breaks in the uniformity of the geological character of the region. These are due to the appearance at the sur- face of rocks older than the lowest Silurian

—rocks, indeed, which, up to the present time, in spite of forty ycars of diligent search, have not been found to exhibit any traces of life. For this reason these rocks, whieh unconformably underlie the Lower Silurian, and are in sucha position as to prove beyond a doubt that they assumed that position before the deposition of the lowcst known fossiliferous rocks, were called Azoic by Fostcr and Whitney, but are now more generally known as Archean, a name substituted by Dana. The Azoic areas of central Texas, northern Texas, and eentral Arkan- sas are comparatively small, and have been but little studied in detail, since, thus far, they have not been shown to be of much economical value. The Azoic area in south-eastern Missouri is also of small dimensions, but economically important, since iron ores, large in quantity and of great purity, occur here, at the well-known Iron Mountain, Pilot Knob, and other localities. Far more im- portant than those already mentioned, however, is the Azoic area of northern Wisconsin and north-western Minnesota, which is in direct counexion with the great Azoic district of so much import- ance in Canada as forming the mass of the Laurentian mountains, The region in Wisconsin forming the divide between the waters flowing into Lake Superior and those uniting with the Mississippi is one of Azoic rocks, and from this a long spur extends south-westerly through Minnesota and north-easterly to Lake Superior. It is in this region and in this formation that the iron mincs occur which are of so much importance to the country (see p. 814), the principal mines lying about 1500 feet above the sea or 900 feet above Lake Superior. To the north-west of this Azoic area, on the borders of the lake, is the very important copper region (p. 816). The coppcr-bearing range, which rises in places to an elevation of us much as 2000 feet above the sea-level, is made up of old volcanic masses interstratified with sandstones and conglomerates of Lower Silurian age. The so-called trappean range runs from the extremity of Keweenaw Point south-westerly along and near the shore of the lake, and finally disappears some distance beyond its western end ; but the portion of the range which is of importance for its copper mines is in Michigan and on or near Keweenaw Point. The detrital formations which cover most of the surface of the Paleozoic area, the boundaries of which have here been indicated, arc of varied eharacter. Over much of the country the principal detrital material present is that which has been left behind by the slow wasting away, under the influence of the rain and other atmospheric ageneies, of the calcareous rocks which there occur. This kind of material

forms the bulk of the soil in the higher portions of the region lying near the Ohio and its junction with the Mississippi, and north-west to Minnesota. The river-bottoms grow wider as we proceed in the direction of the drainage towards the Gulf of Mexico, but the thickuess of alluvial soil overlying the Tertiary and Cretaceous does not scem, in general, to be very great. The material liberated by the decomposition of the rock has been so fine that most of it has been easily carried away where the volume of water in the rivers was considerable. Coarser detritus occurs near the mountain ranges, especially those on the east, where strata made up in large part of pebbles or even boulders of quartzose or othcr indecomposable rocks form a considerable portion of the underlying formations. Animportant feature in the surface geology of the northern portion of the eentral area as well as of the extreme north-eastern portion of the United States, or that comprised within New England, New York, the northern part of Pennsylvania, and the region adjacent to and south of the Great Lakes, is the presence of a large amount of coarse detrital material in the form of boulders, gravcl, and sand, which has been, in large part, brought from the north, and which is mixed very unequally in different regions with the material resulting from the disaggregation, decomposition, and abrasion of the closely adjacent or underlying rocks. The origin and mode of distribution of this so-called “northern drift” has long been a fruitful subject of discussion among American geologists. By far the larger number of those who, in latcr years, have dis- cussed the problem have becn inclined to ascribe the origin of the drift almost entirely to glacial causes. It is assumed that the northern portion of the continent was, during the so-called “ glacial epoch,” covered deeply with ice, and that all, or nearly all, that we see at the present time upon the surface of the region thus covered is the result either of this icy envelope or of the floods

produced by its melting. The present writer believes the pheno. mena to be much more complicated and difficult of explanation than is generally supposed, but contents himself with simply stat. ing what is the current belief among American geologists.

POLITICAL AND NATURAL SUBDIVISIONS.

As politically organized at present the area included within the limits of the United States is divided into forty-nine subdivisions including Alaska. There are thirty-eight States, eight Territories, and three subdivisions, neither States nor Territories, cach of which stands in a peculiar relation to the general Government—namely the District of Columbia, the Indian Territory, and Alaska,

In the following table of the Statcs and Territories the names are followed by their customary abbreviations. The dates are those of admission into the Union as States; in thc case of the thirteen original States (printed in small capitals), they are the dates when those States ratified the constitution. The names of the Territories are printed in italics,

TABLE I,—

[PHYSICAL FEATURES,

| gS itori wa y 2 i) | 1 States and Territories. oe earns Junc 1, | June 1, so FRc kos} = é Gm | Bae Ae 1870, 1880. BR ess Alabama (Ala.).....s0+++./ 1819} 52,250] 996,992 | 1,262,505 | 266] 945 ANTZOU ON (AMT) «acco ce sseeseunees 113,020 9,658 40,440 | 318-7 04 Arkansas (APK.).....cc00 s0000 1836) 53,850) 484,471] 802,525] 65°6) 151 Califounial(Cal.)...0.s00ccers. 1850} 158,360 560,247 864,694) 54°38) 55 Colonadol(Cols instr 1875| 103,925! 89,864] 194,327) 387‘4| 149 Connecticut (Conn. or Ct.)| 1788 4,990 587,454 622,700] 15°8 | 1285 PD ANT AN OURNE Jononn: 887 compe. 149,100; 14,181] 185,177] 853°2] 09 DELAWARE (Del,),..... 000008 1787 2,050 125,015 146,608; 17:2) 748 District of Columbia (D.C.) 70 131,700 177,624 | 34-8)2960°4 Toone) (CES inpesnapeecbomnoceoe 1845] 58,680} 187,748 | 269,498] 43:5] 50 GEORGIA (Ga.) .vsseeeersseeeesee/ 1788] 59,475 | 1,184,109 | 1,542,180] 30°2| 261 BLUM OU CLO) seve siniicorernensantantente 84,800 14,999 32,610 | 117°4 04 DOV ccoptS) (AND) Ronenesageepeeanenon 1818 56,650 | 2,589,891 | 3,077,871] 21:1} 550 Indiana (Ind.)..... ...[1816| 86,350] 1,680,687 | 1,978,801! 17-7] 551 Indian Territory 64,690 a60 tae oe Pes Towa (Ia.).....+ 1846} 56,025 | 1,194,020 | 1,624,615 | 360] 293 Kansas (Kan.).... 1861 82,080 364,399 996,096 | 173‘3 | 12:2 Kentucky (Ky.)..... ‘1791| 40,400] 1,321,011 | 1,648,690] 24:8] 412 Louisiana (La.).....26. 1812) 48,720 726,915 939,946 | 29°3| 20:7 Maine (Me.)...cccessceeseeee)

1820) 38,040 626,915 648,986 | 3:5! 217 MARYLAND (M@,)..... ....., 1788] 12,210 780,894 934,943 | 19°7| 948 MaAssAcHousETTs (Mass.).....| 1788 8,315 | 1,457,351 | 1,783,085 | 22°83 | 2218 Michigan (Mich.).....«..|1887| 58,915 | 1,184,059 | 1,636,937! 38-2| 28% Minnesota (Minn.).....| 1858) 83,365 439,706 780,773 | 775| 98 Mississippi (Miss.)....., 1817} 46,810 827,922 | 1,131,597 | 36°6| 24-4 Missouri (Mo.)....0.s004- esee+-/ 1821} 69,415 | 1,721,295 | 2,168,380} 25°9| 815 Montana (MON.)...100.cceee0e 146,080] 20,595, 39,159 90-1) 03 Nebraska (Neb.) ....++...00+6++| 1867| 76,855 122,993 452,402 | 2678) a9 Nevada (NeV.)...-+.+ Gaowedeoc 1864} 110,700 42,491 62,266 | 46%5| 06 New HampsuireE (N. H.)....| 1788 9,305 318,300 346,991} 9°0| 385 NEW JERSEY (N. Jd.).-e0eese.|1787| 7,815 | 906,096 | 1,181,116 | 24-8 | 1517 New Mexico (N. M.).. 122,580 91,874 | 119,565| 301} 10 New York (N. Y.)....00 ..|1788} 49,170 | 4,882,759 | 5,082,871 | 15°9 | 1067 Nortu Carouina (N. C.)...1 1789} 52,250 | 1,071,361 | 1,899,750 , 80°6| 28°8 OHIGI.....006 ‘eeesss- (G9) MIGROBO 90,923 | 174,768| 92:2; 18 PENNSYLVANIA (Pa.)..+0+e+00ee|1787| 45,215 | 3,521,951 | 4,282,891 | 21:6) 952 Ruope Istanp (RK. I.).....] 1790 1,250| 217,353) 276,581| 27:2) 2649 Soutn Carouina (S. C.)...../1788} 80,570! 705,606} 995,577) 410] 330 Tennessee (TeENMN.).....01.000 1796| 42,050} 1,258,520 | 1,542,359) 22:5] 3860 TOX.”>MORASI -..~~esceerssesne ..| 1845} 265,780 818,579 | 1,591,749 | 94:4 61 (OaDE (AGES oecenooonce : 84,970} 86,786 | 143,968] 65:8) 17 Vermont (Vii)ussssecessseeees| 1791} 9,865] 330,551] 332,286] 0:5] 36:4 VIRGINUA (WiA.))0…~~—c0-ecccee 1788) 42,450] 1,225,163 | 1,512,565 | 28-4) 377 Washington (Wash.).....+. 69,180} 23,955} 75,116 | 2185) V4 West Virginia (W. Va.)..... 1862| 24,780] 442,014] 618,457} 39°90) 257 Wisconsin (Wi8.).....sseeeeees 1847| 56,040 | 1,054,670 | 1,815,497 | 24-7] 242 Wyoming (WY.).csseessscoees 97,890 9,118 20,789 | 127-9} 02 United States……..... 3,019,140 |38,558,371 |50,155,783 | 80°08 | 17°29 ALASKA. sceoersesccraensescecnsens 531,409 33,426

1 The total area (excluding Alaska) fs 3,025,600 square miles,—made up by the addition of unorganized territory (5740), Delaware Bay (620), and Raritan Bay, é&c. (100). The last column shows the population per square mile of the land surface, which amounts in all to 2,970,000 square miles.

As long as the population of the country was limited to the Atlantic and Gulf coasts there was no difficulty in classifying the divisions geographically; the Northern, Middle, Southern Atlantic, and Gulf States constituted a natural grouping. The almost wn- known and at that time not easily accessible region beyond them to the west was known as "'the West," and by this term unt more than a quarter of the present century had elapsed the valley of the Mississippi and its tributaries on the east was designated. It was not until about the middle of the century that a still farther " West" began to be taken into consideration.

Early in the history of the country the six north-eastern pees (Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Connecticut) received the still current designation of England. And till after the Civil War there was the division 0 the States into Southern or Northern, according as slavery was oF was not permitted. e he

The suggestion was made by Mr Gannett, geographer 0 = census of 1880, ‘‘ to divide the country into three great divisions,

Plate xX. lo Temyra-

Ls

ith >

Nea inp

the Atlantic region, the region of the Great Valley, and the Western or Cordilleran region.” The region of the Great Valley he calls the Central region, and this is again subdivided into two parts— the Northern Central and the Southern Central —by the Ohio river and the southern boundary of Missouri and Kansas. The Atlantic division is also subdivided, by a line following the south boundary of Pennsylvania and New Jersey, into the North Atlantic and South Atlantic divisions. The Western or Cordilleran division is limited on the east by the eastern boundaries of Montana, Wyoming, Colorado, and New Mexico. A farther subdivision will be found convenient at times, the Northern Central region being divided into two parts (the North-Eastern and the North-Western) by the

SUBDIVISIONS. |

STATES 803

Mississippi, and the Southern Central also into two parts (the South-Eastern and South-Western) by the same river. The Western or Cordilleran division may be naturally divided into the Roeky Mountain, the Plateau, and the Pacific Coast regions. Adopting the scheme thus suggested, we have the following grouping of all the States and Territories of the United States (Table IT.), the only differences between this scheme and that of Mr Gannett, besides those already indicated, being that the Atlantie States are divided into three subdivisions—the Northern, Middle, and Southern, —and that West Virginia is placed with the Central States because its drainage is

to the Ohio and in its physical characters it is allied to the North-Eastern Central group :1—

eee ae See

Area, Population. Division, Subdivision. States and Territories. Gross =i Land liom Area, $8 | Surface. | Number. 2 é Fie) E & Square | .& | Square we 1S 748 Miles. | 2% | Miles. oy |ag7 a : Northern Atlantic…... -.| New England States, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, 168,765 5-6 162,065 | 14,507,407 | 28-9 89‘5 Atlantic…... Middle Atlantic…..... Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, District of Columbia…..... 57,400 19 52,005 2,771,740 Epis 53°3 Southern Atlantic…..... North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, Florida…....ce0e00. 200,975 6°6 191,970 4,207,000 84 21’°9 427,140 | 14:1 406,040 | 21,486,147 | 49-8 53°8 North-Eastern Central…) West Virginia, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin| 273,795 “) 269,195 | 11,825,125 | 93°5 43°9 enti North-Western Central…] Minnesota, Dakota, Iowa, Nebraska, Kansas, Missouri…... «| 616,840 | 1771 509,000 6,157,443 | 12°3 12°1 “’”””) | South-Eastern Central…) Kentucky, Tennessee, Alabama, DUISSISSID Dl sno sresvecnersoeaeeene 181,510 6 179,630 5,585,151 111 31:1 4 Es : Arkansas, Louisiana, Texas, Indian Territory (includin F . A Ey, South-Western Central { « unorganized ELMIROMVW es tavsevseseseeceeteccoecgeseacs i a8 re) | aes 480,585 8,412,362 o- oe 1,410,925 | 46°6 | 1,388,410 | 26,980,081 | 53-7 | 19-3 Rocky Mountain…..., Montana, Idaho, Wyoming, Colorado, New Mexico …..... 555,275 | 18:4 558,280 406,450 8 0-7 Cordilleran Plateau…... cnonenco6 core || WGA y NG@WAda WATIZONG ..1scercessscateesesccosssescessonscrres .| 308,690 | 10:2 304,850 246,669 oh) 0°8 Pacific Coast Washington Territory, Oregon, California…..... 323,570 | 10°7 317,420 | 1,114,578 2:2 3°5 1,187,585 | 39°3 | 1,175,550 1,767,697 85 15

CLIMATE.

From the Atlantic seaboard west to near the base of the Rocky Mountains the lines of equal mean temperature have a consider- able degree of regularity, running approximately east and west. When, on the other hand, we reach the borders of the Cordilleran region we find the isothermal lines suddenly deflected from their normal course, and in passing across the

mountain and plateau belt we find them irregular, often concentric over large areas and through great ranges of temperature, according as the altitude, width, and general trend of each separate range or system of ranges make their influence felt. Hence there are three distinct climatic divisions of the United States:—(1) the eastern region, from the Atlantic to the foot of the high plateaus at the base of the Roeky Mountains; (2) the plateau and mountain region of the Cordilleras; (3) a narrow strip on the Pacific coast, lying west of the Sierra Nevada and the Cascade range. These three divisions are of very unequal size and importanee. The first embraces about three-fifths of the entire country, and contains fully nineteen- twentieths of its population ; the second is also much larger than the third, containing not much less than a million square miles, but is very sparsely peopled. The third is more densely peopled than the second, but small in area, although its limits are not capable of being accurately defined. These three divisions will here be designated the Eastern, Cordilleran, and Pacific.

In the Eastern division the passage from one type of climate to another is gradual and uniform, though rapid. The difference in climate between the eastern and western coast of the Atlantic was long ago noticed and commented on. It was George Forster who first controverted the prevailing idea that the New World in general was colder than the Old, and recognized the analogy between the climates of the eastern coasts of the Atlantic and Pacific. Humboldt afterwards investigated the facts and pub- lished a tabular statement, which, as enlarged by Hann, is here presented (Table IIT.) :—

Mean Temperature of the A er ee enCes Latitude. Sronp Coldest |Warmest| Year. eat. | Month. | Month, Nain, Labrador……. 57 12 25°16 3°82 51°08 21° Aberdeen, Scotland…..... 57 12 46°76 37°22 57°74 . St John’s, Newfoundland…) 47 36 40°10 22°46 59°54 1355 Brest, France…....0.6.+. 48 24 53°60 | 42°44 64°76 Halifax, Nova Sco 44 42 43°34 22°64 64°40 7 BOTA CHIUX.....0…. 44 48 55°04 42°44 69°08 New York.. 40 42 51:08 | 28°94 75°56 10°6 Naples…..... 40 48 61°70 48°20 17-18 Norfolk, Virg 30 36 50 59°18 | 40°28 78°62 } 4-3 San Fernando, § 36 30 63°50 | 52°70 76°10

eoeeee ! |

From the above table it will be seen that the difference between the mean annual temperaturo of places in high latitudes on the opposite sides of the Atlantic is very large; and that it diminishes

as we go south. About lat. 30° the two sides of the Atlantic have nearly the same mean temperature, the difference in climate being very great, but chiefly dependent on differences in the amount of precipitation. Nearly the whole area of the United States is in- cluded between the annual isothermals of 44° and 68°—a difference of 24°, the corresponding difference of latitude being about 15°. The average change of temperature is, therefore, 1°°6 for each degree of latitude,—the most rapid change of temperature with the latitude known in any region of anything like cqual extent. The causes of the rapid increase of temperature in going south along the Atlantie seaboard are the position of the Gulf of Mexico, the high temperature of its waters, and the increasing predominanee of south-westerly winds. From these eircumstanees the southern portion of the Atlantic coast of the United States is decidedly warmer than the regions corresponding to it in latitude on the west side of the Pacific, while farther north places in the same latitude on the west sides of the two oceans have approximately the same temperature. This similarity of temperature on the corre- sponding sides of the Atlantic and Pacific is the result of causes now easily understood, the chief being the position of the mass of the land with reference to the dircetion of the prevailing winds. From the Atlantic coast to the eastern base of the Cordilleras the isothermal curves for the year are nearly parallel, and have a general east and west course, being only interrupted in this regularity and deflected to a certain moderate extent in passing across the Appalachian chain, which nowhere rises high enough to give a ehanee for permanent accumulation of snow. These curves, of course, are roughly parallel to the coast-line of the Gulf of Mexico, which over a breadth of fourteen degrees of longitude does not vary much from an east and west direction. The region over which a higher mean annual temperature than 68° F. prevails includes nearly the whole of Florida and _a narrow strip along the Gulf, which widens rapidly in Texas, where the trend of the coast-line suddenly becomes nearly north and south. The extreme south end of Florida, which just touches 35°, has a mean temperature of over 72°, the isothermal of 76° being nearly on that parallel. The isothermal of 64°, which meets the Atlantic eoast near the borders of North and South

Carolina, keeps nearly on the parallel of 34° as far west as about 100° W. long., where it is rapidly deflected southward, in con- formity with the direction of the other isothermals, by the gradually inereasing elevation of the country when the plateau region is en- countered. The isothermal of 60° is nearly parallel to that of 64°, except that it manifests the influence of the high southern extremity of the Appalachians, and is in consequence considerably deflected to the south between the meridians of 83° and 87°. The

1 The name Cordilleran is preferred for the Western division, because thereby any confusion is avoided which might arise from the fact that the people of the eastern States are still more or less inclined to call any portion of the region lying to their west by that name. No grouping in which all the States and Territories are included can be entirely satisfactory; but in that here suggested they are, while geographically connected, in most respects pretty closely allied to each other by their physical, climatic, and agricultural characters:

of the Cordil- Jeran

isothermal of 52° is, to the west of the Appalachians, nearly coincident in position with the Ohio river as far as Cincinnati, and thence follows an undulating course, with a nearly westerly general direction, through Indiana, Illinois, northern Missouri, and along the northern boundary of Kansas to the border of Colorado, where it is suddenly deflected and: runs with a nearly southerly course for a distance of fully 500 miles along the eastern base of the Rocky Mountains. Those portions of the country which lie between the isothermals of 44° and 52° are New England, with the exception of Maine and the northern part of New Hamp- shireand Vermont; New York, excluding the extreme north-eastern eorner (the Adirondack region); the Appalachian plateau region on the borders of New York and Pennsylvania; nearly all Ohio; two-thirds of Indiana and Illinois; nearly all Michigan and Iowa; southern Wisconsin; south-eastern Minnesota; nearly all Nebraska; and the southern half of Dakota. The isothermal of 40° passes through the centre of Maine, euts off the extreme northern end of New Hampshire and Vermont, then passes out of the United States, re-entering at

the west end of Lake Superior, passing through the centre of Minnesota, making a large loop to the south in eastern Dakota and then trending north-westwardly until it passes beyond the boundary line of the United States in 107° W. long,

Within the Cordilleran region, or west of the 105th meridian, the position of the isothermals is largely dependent on that of the mountain ranges, which rise high enough profoundly to influence

division ; the climate, though it is only at a few points, especially round the

of the Pacifie

summits of the lofty volcanic cones near the Paeific coast, that they reach the region of perpetual snow. This deficiency of lasting aceumulations of snow, however, is in very considerable part due to the smallness of the precipitation. Observations of temperature on the higher ranges are extremely deficient. On Mr Schott's temperature chart (Plate IX.) the isothermal of 44°, which, as already mentioned, east of the Cordilleran region nearly coincides with the northern boundary of the country, encloses within a great southerly-reaching loop the whole of the higher portion of the Rocky Mountains, extending as far south as the 34th parallel, or to about the position in latitude of the isothermal of 60° in the eastern division of the country. The crest of the Sierra Nevada, Cascade, and Blue Mountain ranges is also within the curve of 44°. The highest portion of the Rocky Mountains, as far south as 39° N. lat., is laid down as having a mean temperature lower than 36° F. The whole of the Great Basin and the Columbian plateau is indicated as having a considerably higher temperature than the dominating system of ranges which enclose it on the east and west. Con- siderable bodies of snow remain on the summits of the ranges during a large part of the year, at least as far south as 39° N. lat. In the plateau region of Arizona, Utah, and Nevada the decline of the ranges, the generally lessening elevation of the region, and the facility of access which the topographical conditions allow to the heated air from the south give a high temperature, and the isothermals form irregularly concentric loops extending from the head of the Gulf of California northwards. The isothermal of 52° reaches as far north as Virginia City, in lat. 39°, and that of 72° extends to Fort Mohave, in lat. 35°.

In strong contrast with the Eastern division, we find in the region bordering on the Pacific a very marked tendency to a parallelism of

division, the isothermals with the trend of the coast; consequently, a very

moderate change in the mean annual temperature may be met with over a large range of latitude. The character of the isothermals here is greatly modified by the position of the two parallel ranges, the Coast Mountains and the Sierra Nevada, which enclose valleys of great extent but of low altitude. In general the temperature of the Pacific coast-belt is much more uniform and higher than that of the Atlantic side of the United States. The isothermal of 60° runs nearly parallel with the coast, and not far distant from it, from the southern line of California north through nearly three degrees of latitude. The isothermal of 52° approaches San Francisco in lat. 37° 48’, and keeps near the coast to as far north as lat. 47°. A higher mean temperature than 48° prevails over the region adjacent to Puget Sound, at the northern boundary of the country, in lat. 49°, while the mean temperature of the northern part of Maine, between the parallels of 45° and 47°, is below 40°. Thus it may be said with truth that near the Pacific coast we have a difference of only 12° in mean temperature in a range of over sixteen degrees of latitude. And if we pass from the immediate vicinity of the coast in lat. 35° into the San Joaquin and Sacramento valleys, we may range over five degrees of latitude and keep in a region of which the mean temperature is not below 60° and nowhere much higher. The causes of this are the proximity of the great area of water from which the prevailing winds blow, the imodification which the temperature of this ocean undergocs near the American coast by the Asiatic coast current and the northern or Arctic coast current, and the position of the mountain ranges near the coast. Uniformity of climate along the edges of the land is still further aided by the peculiar nature of the eurrents along this coast. The influence of the warm Asiatic current—the Kuro-Siwo—is dis- tinctly felt in raising the temperature as far south as the northern

border of California, while farther south the cold Arctic current which apparently emerges from under the warm current, makeg its cooling

presenee felt along the coast nearly or quite as far as the southern boundary of the country.

The isothermals for the summer months (June, July, and August) Summer are much more irregular than those of the year, especially in the igo. Eastern division. The powerful heating influence of the Gulf of thermals Mexico, swept over in summer by southerly winds, makes itself extremely apparent in the summer isothermals, whieh bend to the north-west in a most remarkable manner, that of 72° reaching ag far as the centre of Dakota, or beyond lat. 45°. A mean summer temperature of 80° and upwards prevails over Florida, a consider. able portion of the Gulf States, and nearly all Texas. The belt adjacent to the Ohio, extending north as far as the Great Lakes, south along the Appalachian tableland into Tennessee and the north-western corner of Georgia, and west through lowa, Nebraska, and northern Kansas, lies between the summer isothermals of 68° and 76°. The summer isothermals along the Pacitic eoast are much less considerably changed in position and character from their mean annual character than they are on the Atlantic side, for reasons which have been already given, while the irregularity and com. plexity of the summer curves in the Cordilleran region generally would be very distinctly noticed if the data were at hand and could be exhibited with some detail, An extraordinarily high temperature prevails in summer in the southern portion of the a Great Basin and in the Arizona plateau region, the isothermal of 88° surrounding with its northerly-reaching loop a large area in the lower valley of the Colorado river and extending north as far as lat. 85°. The winter (December, January, February) isothermals Winter in the Eastern division have more of the regularity of the annual iso- curves than have those of the summer. The winter isothermal of thermals, 52° coincides very nearly with the mean annual curve of 68°, keeping near and closely parallel to the Gulf of Mexico. The winter isothermal of 32° runs from Cape Cod across Long Island to New York city, and across New Jersey, thence making a large loop to the south so as to surround the Appalachians, and, after ascending northerly again on the west side of that range to near the Ohio, passing through Indiana, Ilinois, Missouri, and Kansas, thence descending in a south-westerly direction and sweeping around the Rocky Mountains, and through the centre of the Great Basin in a very irregular course. On the

Pacific coast the form of / the winter curves closely resembles that of the yearly isothermal,

The winter curve of 52° very closely coincides with that of 60° for

the year, and the winter eurve of 40° runs from near San Francisco,

closely parallel to the coast and at a little distance from it, as far

as Cape Flattery, or through a distance of over ten degrees of i latitude.

The irregular, non-periodic fluctuations of the temperature are Irregular of great interest, and without knowing what these are one would fluctua- form a very false idea of the real character of the climate. It does tions of lot appear that these fluctuations greatly affect the general salubrity tempera- of the country, but they have a marked effect on the character of ture the vegetation, as well as on the methods of cultivation. The occasional occurrence of very low temperatures in low southerly latitudes where the mean winter temperature is quite high is one of the most striking phenomena in the climate. Savannah, as Hann remarks, has a mean winter tempcrature the same as that of | London and Cadiz, although this latter city lies 44° farther north. . But the vegetation of the two regions is essentially different, beeause frosts do not occur in that part of the Spanish peninsula.

Orange trees are liable to become entirely frozen everywhere in the ‘ United States except in southern Florida; this is not the case in

Spain. The cotton plant is a perennial in the south of Spain, while,

on the other hand, the stem and branches are killed every year by

frost in the United States, so that the fields have to be annually replanted.

The following table (IV.), from data arranged by Hann, gives an idea of the range of temperature in various parts of the country :—

ae Mean Monthly Range, Mean Yearly

Winter. | Summer, po

Choe) °) ° Cl Fort Sully 44 39 103°5 90°1 —25°2 108°7 Fort Snelling. 44 53 93-2 70°3 — 95 93°0 St Lonis…..... 88 37 90-3 73-2 — 58 99°7 New York 40 42 790 ale 0-7 93°0 Macon…..... 83 46 80:2 59°7 18°38 97-2 Charleston…. seal) eo a 734 52-3 94-1 927 New Orleans…....., 30 0 78°6 556 232 96°2

The region of lowest winter temperature is that along the eastern border of the Rocky Mountains in the northern portion of the country, where the temperature not unfrequently sinks so low as to freeze mercury. The lowest temperatures observed in this region, as given by Schott, are—at Fort Sanders, in Wyoming, – 50°; Fort Ellis, Montana, —53°. A temperature low enough to freeze mercury is occasionally observed in Wisconsin and Miehigan, and on the borders of Canada and New York. The hottest region

ind

j example, in July 1885 the thermometer at West Las | Colorado, rose on the 15th to 105°-2 \17th, to 96°-6

UeNeal a ep

is that along the lower portion of the Colorado and Gila rivers in Arizona and the adjacent part of California.

An excellent illustrative example of the suddenness and severity of the ‘‘cold waves” which occasionally pass over the country is afforded by the facts gathered by the Signal Service in regard to an occurrence of this kind in January 1886.

The barometer was high from the Rocky Mountain region to the Pacific coast on the 2d, and from that date to the 5th a slow north-easterly movement of this high area was observed; after the 5th there was an apparent increase of this high area from the region of the Saskatchewan valley and Manitoba, On the afternoon of the 6th the observers in Wyoming, Colorado, Nebraska, Kansas, and Missouri were warned of the approach of a “cold wave,” accompanicd by a “norther,” and of a probable fall of temperature of 20° to 25° in the next twenty- fonr hours, The centre of greatest barometric pressure remained north of Dakota from the 6th to

the 12th, but the cold wave had reached the Gulf coast and Florida before that date, causing in many places a lower temperature than has been observed in many years, and in some a lower one than had ever before been known. In Kansas many persons were frozen to death, and the loss of stock was very great; at Dodge City the wind blew with a velocity of 40 miles an hour, the thermometer averaging during the day 10° below zero. In Mahaska county, Iowa, from the 7th to the 11th twenty persons perished with the cold, and much. stock was lost. Similar reports came trom other parts of Towa. In Memphis, Tennessee, the thermometer fell to 8° below zero. In Nashville, from the 9th to the 10th, the cold was the severest on record, In New Orleans the cold wave struck the city at 3 a.m. on the 8th, and the thermometer stood at 15°°2 on tho morning of the 9th. At Indianola, Texas, the coldest weather experienced for several years occurred from tlie 8th to the 13th; on the 12th snow fell to the depth of 3 inches, At Galveston the cold was the greatest ever known, the mereury falling to 11°, being a fall of 54° in Jess than eighteen hours. A heavy snowstorm set in on the morning of the 12th, covering the ground to the depth of 6 inches, and causing much loss and suffering, At Mobile, Alabama, the minimum on the morning of the 9th was 11°, and at Montgomery, 5°-4. In Florida the cold was very severe ; ponds were frozcn over, and much fruit frozen on the trees, At Atlanta, Georgia, the mercury fell to 2°-4 below zero.

It appears from Prof. Loomis's working over of the records of the Signal Service that throughout the greater part of the United States there is oecasionally observed a difference of as much as 40° between the maximum and minimum of the same day, and that there are a few places where such ehanges are remarkably frequent. These places seem to be all west of the 95th meridian, and at or near the base of the Rocky Mountains. Thus, in 1874 there were thirty-eight stations at whieh a difference of 40° on the same day between the maximum and minimum temperature was observed. At Colorado Springs (5935 feet) this happened fifty-six times, at Denver (5135 fect) forty-five times, and at Cheyenne thirty-three times; at seventeen stations it happened only onee. At Denver, 15th January 1875, the thermometer fell 48° in one hour; and an observer "who is pronounced perfectly reliable" reported a fall in temperature at that place of 36° in five minutes, These changes of temperature felt at Denver were the

concomitants of a considerable storm, which came from the north-west, and whose centre passed about 250 miles east of that plaee.

The occasional occurrenee of ‘hot waves” which sweep over large areas of country, raising the temperature much above its normal height, is one of the most striking and most disagreeable features of the climate of the country, and especially of its northern and north-eastern portions. There is rarely a year in which one or more of these abnormal occurrences are not observed ; and, although

| they do not usually last more than two or threc days, they are

sometimes prolonged for a month or more, in a succession of heated periods with little or no interval between them. Thus, for Animas, ; at Albany, N.Y., on the ; at New London, Conn., on the 18th, to 92°°4; jin New York city, on the 21st, to 95°-9 ; in Baltimore, Md., on the 20th and 21st, to 98°3 and 98°‘7 ; at Dubuque, Iowa, on the 20th, outdoor work was suspended on account of the intense heat. Again, a little later, in Dayton, Washington Territory, on the 28th of the same month, the temperature rose to 102°°6 3 at Milwaukee, Wis., on the 28th, to 92°-8 ; at Fort Sully, Dakota, on the 29th, to 104°°5; at Yankton, Dakota, on the 30th, to 100°°7; at Dubuque, Iowa, on the 30th, to 97°1; at Des Moines, Iowa, on the 30th, to 100°1. All through the country many eases of sun- stroke oceurred, eighteen fatal cases having been recorded in Balti- more during the week ending with the 25th.

The prevailing winds, as in other regions lying in the latitude of the return trades, are westerly. The extreme southern part of the country is just on the border line where the influence of the \causes by which the trade-winds are originated cease to be felt. In the autumn, however, in the southern Atlantie States there is some ‘@pproach to the conditions of the trade-wind region. At that

yseason the winds in Florida and along the northern edge of the

| 11 summer is very great;

STATES

Gulf are deeidedly north-easterly as far as 33° south the Florida Keys and the northern certain extent, to the trade-wind region. Along the whole extent of the Atlantie coast region westerly winds predominate during the entire year, but they are ehiefly south-westerly in summer and north-westerly in winter. In the following ‘table (V.) the direction of the summer and winter winds is given in percentages of the total amount, for the distriets

named :-— Sa ee

805

N. lat. Farther Bahamas belong, to a

rt mre ey

Summer, Winter.

‘i | Me

Py ted] EY EL leet deg zl =

FI eA Pd a

Ne walitiplandine.sc1sccecsnece sts a 5/10) 8 |10/12/24‘14/16] 9 i 4|7/7|14.15/33

Middle Atlantic States—New York | |

to North-east VLC UTS on 8 }10) 6 |11/14/19/16)15] 9l19! 5 6 | 7 }14‘19/28 Sonth Atlantic States—South-east

Virginia to Georgia…..ccccceccseess.. 7 (12) 8 j12117 2611 8/13/13) 716 |17 18/14 4

In the region between the Mississippi and the Appalachians, south- ward as far as the Cumberland range and north to Lakes Michigan and Huron, south-westerly and westerly winds prevail during both summer and winter.

There is an extensive region in the south- west of the United States, embracing an area equal to about one- third of the whole country, in which the winds of summer are chiefly southerly, varying between south-east and south-west, while in the winter they are mostly north and north-west. This region extends from the extreme south-east of California, through Arizona, New Mexico, southern Utah, Texas, Arkansas, eastern Colorado, eastern Wyoming, Kansas, and Nebraska, to Missouri. Farther north, in Wisconsin, Minnesota, and northern Miehigan, south winds prevail in the summer, but in winter there is no such marked predominance of northerly and north-westerly winds as in the region to the south-west. The influence of Lake Superior is clearly indicated in northern Wisconsin, where the prevailing winds in summer are from the lake and in winter from the land. On the Pacific coast the winds have a decidedly westerly character; but in the winter this preponderance is much less marked than in summer, On the coast of Washington Territory south-east is the prevailing direction, these winds being probably the south-west winds of the Pacific coast deflected by the mountains which le close upon the ocean. In the interior of Washington Territory south-west is the prevailing direction in both summer and winter, On the California coast the winds are very strong and steady from the north-west in the summer, but more to the south-west in winter. In summer the intensely heated plateau to the east draws the air from the Pacific, which blows with violence through every depression in the coast ranges towards the heated land-mass. There is no “ wind-gap” in the Coast ranges from the Columbia river to Santa Barbara so deeply and widely cut as that of the Golden Gate at San Francisco, At this point the cool winds from the sea find entrance to the Great Valley of the Sacramento and San Joaquin, and the mass of air thus set in motion spreads itself out fan-like after passing through the Gate, so that the prevailing winds in those valleys are in summer always from the Bay of San

Francisco towards the mountains. The hotter the weather in the interior the more violent is the wind at San Francisco, But this condition is limited to the daytime. At night the rapid cooling of the higher plateau ehecks or stops altogether the indraught of air, and an almost entire ealm prevails at San Franeisco, while the cool air flows in a gentle breeze down the slopes of the mountains,

in a reverse direction from that which it had during the daytime.

In the winter the westerly direction of the winds in this region is still greatly predominant, but the prevailing westerly current of air is not intensified in its motion as it is during the summer. Over the plateau and mountain region ineluded between the Sierra Nevada and the Rocky Mountains the surface winds are irregular, being governed by the topography of the eountry; but the upper eurrents are, in general, from the west. In the southern part of this region, in the valley of the Gila and the lower Colorado, there is a large area which is intensely heated in summer, and towards which the winds blow from the lower region to the south, and especially from the Gulf of California. Here the predominance of southerly winds but the mountain ranges to the west have so declined in height in this southern region that westerly winds are nearly or quite as common as northerly ones. Farther cast and north-east, as has been seen, the preponderance of northerly winds in winter is very great.

In reference to precipitation the territory of the United States Rainfall,

may be divided into two nearly equal portions by the meridian of 100°, the region to the east of that meridian being one of sufficient and pretty regularly distributed rainfall, while that to the west is irregularly and insufficiently supplied, with the exception of a narrow belt on the Pacific eoast, over a part of which the precipita- tion is irregular, but fairly sufficient, while another portion is very abundantly supplied with moisture.

Regions of less than 20 inches of precipitation must be essentially

806 lie als fla

pastoral, or, where the amount falls considerably lower, unin- habitable or even deserts. For regions where the precipitation is between 20 and 25 inches cultivatiou of the soil may be on the whole possible, but will be liable to serious drawbacks, since the smaller the rainfall the greater the liability to a series of years when it will fall below the mean, with partial or total failure of the crops and consequent suffering. Of course, in regions favour- ably situated for artificial irrigation much may be accomplished in the way of making up for deficient precipitation. If in the light of these

preliminary remarks we consult Mr Schott's rainfall charts of the United States we find that the whole of the Eastern division of the country is well supplied with moisture. 'The isohyetal of 26 inches, which may be taken as approximately the dividing line between a sufficiently and an insufficiently watered area, crosses the northern boundary to the north-west of Lake Superior, runs south-westerly to the 97th meridian, which it strikes in about the latitude of St Paul (45°), and runs thence very nearly south, with a slight westerly inclination, so that when it reaches the northern border of Texas it has advanced westward as far as the 99th merid- ian, near which it remains through four degrees of latitude, to the parallel of 31°, when it again advances about four degrees to the westward, and then runs south-easterly to the Gulf of Mexico, near the mouth of the Rio Grande. As thus indicated, the isohyetal line of 26 inches leaves to the east, or in the moister region, a large part of Minnesota, the eastern edge of Nebraska, rather less than half of Kansas, most of the Indian Territory, and about half of Texas. The line of 20 inches crosses the northern boundary of the country at about the 97th meridian, and runs south with moderate undulations, gaining a little in westing, so that in the centre of Texas, on the 31st parallel, it is in about longitude 102°, Thence its course is south-easterly to the Gulf, in a course nearly parallel to the isohyetal of 26 inches, and at a very short dis- tance from it. The isohyetal curve of 32 inches, or that marking the western limit of abundant precipitation, is in general pretty nearly parallel to that of 26 inches, and not far distant from it, so that in general it may be said that we pass from a region where precipitation is abundant to one where it is decidedly insufficient in traversing a belt of country having an average width in longi- tude of about three degrees. The only important exception is that towards the north the distance between the isohyctal lines widens rapidly, that of 32 inches having an almost easterly course along the southern shore of Lake Superior and the northern of Huron. Moreover, there is in the lines of 26 and 32 inches a marked loop running to the south-east, so that alinost the whole of Minnesota is brought within the area over which the precipitation ranges between 20 and 82 inches, considerably the larger portion having over 26 inches. The position of the curve of 32 inches is such that asmall part of eastern Wisconsiu, a portion of eastern Michigan, and a small irregularly shaped belt in New York south of Lake Ontario lie in a region of Iess than that amount of rainfall.

The regions of largest precipitation are those bordering on the Gulf of Mexico and the Atlantic. Along the Gulf the rainfall between the meridians of 85° and 92° exceeds 56 inches in amount, and the curve of 56 inches extends northward so as to embrace a portion of Arkansas, Tennessee, Georgia, and South Carolina. There is no part of the Atlantic coast, except the extreme end of Florida, where the precipitation is as large as 56 inches, At various points the average is above 50, asin eastern North Carolina, the line of 44 inches running nearly parallel to the coast, and not far from it, as far south as lat. 37°, when it bends westwardly. The greater part of the Eastern division of the United States thus enjoys a sufficient but not over-abundant amount of precipitation, namely, that coming within the limits of 832 and 44 inches. Small areas in several of the States, however, have somewhat over 44 inches of rainfall. In the region of sufficieut and in places abuudant rainfall thus designated there is, on the whole, no such thing as a clearly-defined rainy season. Along the Atlantic sea-coast from Portland to Washington, through the Hudson river valley, Ver- mont, northern and western New York, in the Ohio valley from western Pennsylvania to Missouri, south to Arkansas and down the Mississippi to its mouth, the rainfall is pretty uniformly dis- tributed throughout the year. There are, however, local peculiarities in the distribution. Thus, in the Atlantic sea-coast region, as far south as Washington, there are three nearly equal maxima, about the middle of May, August, and December. In the region adjacent to the Hudson river valley through to western New York two maxiina are indicated, one early in July and one about the middle of October, while there is one principal minimum, early in February. In the Ohio river valley, west to Missouri, there is one principal maximum and one principal minimum, the former early in June, the latter early in February. In the lower Mississippi valley and in that of the Red River there is one principal maximum and one principal minimum, the former early in December, the latter about the iniddle of October; there is also a secondary maximum in July, and a sccondary minimum in June. In the Mississippi delta and along the Gulf coast eastward in Alabama and Mississippi there are two maxima, the principal one about the end of July, the

sT He Tas

secondary one early in December, while there are a principal minimum early in October and a secondary one towards the end of April. Along the upper Mississippi, in central Minnesota and part of Wisconsin, there is a decided tendency to a condition of summer precipitation and winter drought; there are two maxima a principal one about the end of Juue and asecondary one about the middle of September, and a principal minimum about the begin- ning of February. This is a similar condition of precipitation to that prevailing in the Hudson river valley and westward, except that in the upper Mississippi region the range is much larger, Again, on the Atlantic coast from Virginia south to Florida there is also a strongly-marked prevalence of summer rains, there bein

one maximum of very large range late in July or early in August, with two small adjacent minima about the middle of April and late in October, There are also subordinate maxima in March and December.

On the Pacific coast the increase in the amount of precipitation as we go northward is a very marked feature of the climate. Thus at San Diego the mean of the series from 1850 to 1874 is given at 9°31 inches; that of San Fraucisco, for nearly the same years, at 21°49; that of Astoria at 77°61. Along the coast of California, as well as in the interior of that State in the valley and on the western slope of the Sierra Nevada, there is an alinost entire absence of rain during the summer months, and a strongly marked maximum in December. Farther north, with the great increase in the total annual amount of precipitation already noted, there is also an increase in the rainfall of the summer, which amounts in the extreme north-western corner of Washington Territory to 10 or 12 inches during the three summer months. A large portion of the precipitation in the higher region of the Sierra Nevada is in the form of snow, of which the amount in different years appears to be very variable. Indeed the same thing may be said of pre-cipitation in general on the coast of California, The largest amount of rainfall at San Francisco during the years 1851 to 1874 is given by Mr Schott as 36:02 inches, the smallest 11°73. All through the Cordilleras, from the summit of the Sierra Nevada cast to the Rocky Mountains, the statistics of the precipitation are meagre, and have bceeu very irregularly taken. The amount in gencral is quite small. No doubt the precipitation on the higher portions of the Cordilleran mountaiu ranges is considerably

higher than it is in the valleys, as is indicated by the records kept by the Signal Service at the station on the suminit of Pike's Peak (14,184 feet), the average for 1874-80 being 31°65 inches. In the Cor- dilleran region generally the fact that the precipitation is larger on the mountain ranges than it is in the valleys, and that it is chiefly in the form of snow, is a matter of great importance. When the ranges are lofty and wide enough to collect and store away a large supply of snow, this by its melting furnishes water enough to irrigate the slopes and valleys, so that they can be cultivated; when, on the other hand, the ridges are low, they, as well as the valleys at their bases, are absolutely sterile.

[PHYSICAL FEATURES,

Those abnormal disturbances of the atmosphere which are accom- Storms.

panied by rain and wind may be classed under two heads, —ordinary storms, and those of destructive violence, or tornadoes. The former extend over wide areas, and are ordinarily attended by no evil results ; the latter are limited to comparatively narrow belts, and are often very destructive. The ordinary storms of the United States begin with the formation of areas of low barometer, which are first heard of in the far west or south-west, and move towards the east or north-east with a velocity averaging for the entire year, as shown by Loomis's investigation of the Signal Service Records for the years 1872-84, 28°4 miles per hour, the velocity being greatest in February and least in August, the former velocity 50 per cent. greater than the latter, and the velocity varying also very greatly for the same month in different years, the average velocity for the entire year being about two-thirds greater than it is in Europe. The direction in which these storm centres advance in the remote western stations—as, for instance, Bismarck, long. 100° 38"; Fort Sully, long. 100° 36'; Breckenridge, long. 96° 17'—is towards a point considerably south of east, but at the more easteru stations it 1s a little north of east. In general, probably about half the storms of the country advance from the extreme north-west in great curved lines beginning with a south-easterly direction, and passing out of the country in a direction a little north of east, or, in general, following a track nearly parallel in position to the Great Lakes and the St Lawrence. The remainder of the storms of the Atlantic coast region begin in the south-west and travel

north-east, or begin m the south and follow the coast-line pretty closely. In general the area of rainfall attendant on the advance of the centre of low barometer is in advance of the progress of that centre nearly in the direction of its average progress. The diameter of the rain area 38 variable, often much over 1000 miles. Iu the case of the great ram storms happening between the years 1878 and 1877, as investigated by Loomis, there were found to be, in many cases, quite a large number of independent rain centres prevailing simultaneously within the general rain area. In one case there were as many 4 eight of these, and there were only nine cases in which there Wa .

1 Os ed ha Je 8)

not more than one area in which the rainfall exceeded half an inch. The average distance of the principal rain centres from the eentre of low pressure was about 400 miles.

The occurrence of tornadoes in the United States is a matter of importance on account of their frequency and their destructiveness, and much has been published in regard to them. A large amount of information will be found in a publication of the Signal Serviee, prepared by Mr J. P. Finley, and issued in 1882, These storms are not limited to any one month or season; but they are most frequent in snmmer, especially in the months of June, April, July, and May, aud least so in the months of December and January. Of 600 tabulated by Mr Finley, oecurring from 1794 to 1881, 112 were in June, 97 in April, 90 in July, 81 in May, and only 9 in December and 7 in January, They are most frequent in the after- noon, between noon and six o’clock; the hour in which the greatest number oecurred was that from 5 to 6 P.M. The course of more than half of the 600 (310) was from south-west to north-east, and only 38 moved in the opposite direction. Only 46 had a course directed from the castern side of the meridian towards the western. The width of the path of destruction varied from 40 to 10,000 feet, the average being 1085 feet. The velocity of progression of the storm-cloud, in 130 cases in which this item is given, varied from 12 to 60 miles per hour, the average being 30 miles. The time consumed by the tornado in passing any given point varied from 10 seconds to 30 minutes, the average of 50

occurrences being 6°52 minutes. The velocity of the wind within the cloud vortex was

CLIMATE. |

5 TA TE § 807

| expected. The portions of the United States where altitude is fatal to the growth of forest vegetation are insignificant as com- pared with the area of the whole country. The Appalachian ranges—which originally were densely forested from extreme north- east to extreme south-west, and which still eontinue to be so over a considerable portion of their extent—only rise at a very few points high enough to cause the forests to disappear. This is the ease particularly with Mount Washington and the higher adjacent peaks, and with the summits of the most elevated part of the system in North Carolina. The Adirondacks are densely wooded, even almost to the highest summits. In the most elevated mountain-chains making up the Cordilleran system, want of moisture appears to co-operate with elevation in thinning out the forests on their flanks and causing them to disappear entirely on the highest ranges. The timber line on the most elevated peaks of Colorado reaches from 11,000 to about 11,500 feet, —the summits themselves rising from 2000 to 3000 feet higher. The Sicrra Nevada is bare of forests in its highest portions. The high region about Mount Whitney is, where not snow-eovered, nothing but an entirely bare mass of granite domes and needles, In the central part of the Sierra, in the vicinity of the Yosemite valley, forest vegetation is extremely scanty above 9000 feet, and the upper 3000 feet of the highest peaks is entirely bare of trees. If large areas of the United States are destitute of trees, and other regions but very poorly supplied, the chief cause of this is want of sufficient moisture.

variously estimated at from 70 to 800 miles an hour. The whirling motion of the cloud was invariably from right to left. Of 600 tornadoes investigated, 134 were reported as being ‘ unusually de-

In briefly indicating the nature and distribution of the forests of Appala- the United States, we may begin with the Appalaehian region, chian which here must be taken as embracing also the eountry to the forests,

structive.” Of these 64 oecurred within the States of Kansas, Illinois, Iowa, and Missouri, and this region, lying adjaeent to the Mississippi river, seems to be that in which the conditions are most favourable to the development of these phenomena. There are also two areas—one in Georgia and one in New York—where tornadoes are more frequent than they are elsewhere in the eastern States, Of the destructiveness of these tornadoes some idea inay be formed from the statement that in many of them)nildings and everything else projecting from the surface are levelled to the ground, frag- ments of the materials thus uptorn being carried often to great distances, In the tornado of April 18, 1880, the effeets of which Were felt along a path more than a hundred miles in length through I}linois and Missonri, in one town over whieh it passed, 65 persons were killed, over 200 wounded, and more than 200 buildings were demolished. The loss of property in two counties of Missouri was over a million dollars,

The series of destructive storms which took place on the 19th of February 1884 is probably the most remarkable occurrence of this kind which has taken place in the United States since the country was settled by the whites. The loss of property was not less than $3,000,000 to $4,000,000, while 800 persons lost their lives, and about 2500 were wounded. From 10,000 to 15,000 were rendered homeless, as many as 10,000 buildings having been destroyed. Great quantities of live stock also perished. A central area of barometric depression moved between 7 A.M. of the 18th and 7 A.M. of the 19th from Fort Keogh to the vicinity of Chicago ; at the same hour on the 20thit was about 150 miles north-west of Montreal. Onthe 19th, at 7 a.M., another extremely elongated area of barometric depression had been formed, extend- ing almost north and south across the whole United States, and having its eentre near Davenport, Iowa. Towards this centre the winds blew from north and south, the isotherms indicating very great contrasts of temperatnre between the areas of northerly and southerly winds, this condition of things being an invariable precursor of tornado development. The two centres of barometric disturbance were, as is commonly the case in occurrences of this kind, widely separated. At 3 p.m. of the 19th the centre of the north and south trending barometric depression was near Indian- apolis, the contrasts of temperature remaining extreme, and violent winds developing themselves at various points south of Indianapolis, especially along the Ohio river from Cairo to Louisville, in the vicinity of Nashville,

andin northern Alabama. At 11 p.m. of the same day the barometric trough had diminished somewhat in intensity, and the entire area of disturbance was | passing rapidly off to the north-eastward. Between 3 p.m. and | sundown the area devastated was chiefly in eastern Alabama and northern Georgia. Before 11 p.m. the destructive storms in North and South Carolina had reaehed their maximum violence; those in southern Virginia were most destruetive about midnight. The Signal Service charts for the day indicate about thirty distinet areas of violent tornadoes, most of them between the eastern border of Alabama and the southern boundary of Virginia.

VEGETATION.

No portion of the United States attains so high a latitude that the forest growth should be necessarily dwarfed by the cold, or dis- appear altogether. The northern boundary is, however, practic- ally nearly the limit beyond which valuable timber eaunot be

west and south-west, ineluding the valleys of the Mississippi and Missouri, as far west as the western boundary of the State of Missouri, or about the 95th meridian, to the east of which lies, coincident with the region of gencrally abundant and every- where sufficient rainfall, that portion of the United States which is almost everywhere densely forested, and the only portion whieh is so, with the exception of a comparatively narrow strip on the Pacific coast. Ineluded within this densely-forested region of thie Appalachian system and Mississippi valley there is quite a large area destitute of continuous forests,—the so-called “ prairie region ” (see below). The portion of the United States first settled by Europeans was, almost without exception, a densely-forested region, over which the aboriginal inhabitants roamed, withont having

interfered to any perceptible extent with the natural forest growth of the country. Their numbers were small, and their habitations were, almost without exeeption, either on or near the shores of the ocean and its bays and indentations, or along the river bottoms, in such places as were naturally grassed and not forested. This densely-forested region extends throughout the whole length of the Atlantic coast from Maine to Florida, west through the region of the Great Lakes to beyond Lake Superior, and to the south-west through Louisiana and for some distance into Texas. It differs from the

densely-forested region of the Paeific in that it is essenti- ally a region of deciduous or hardwood forests, while the latter is essentially one of coniferous trees; it differs from the forested region of the Rocky Mountains in that the latter is not only essentially a region of eoniferous trees, but one where the forests do not by any means occupy all the area, neither do they approach in density or economie importance those of the eastern division of the country. Again, the forests of the east embrace a great variety of species, which, as a rule, are very much intermingled, and do not, unless quite exceptionally, oecupy areas chiefly devoted to one species; while, on the other hand, the forests of the west— including both Rocky Mountain and Pacific coast divisions— exhibit a small number of species, considering the vast area em- braced in the region; and these species are, in quite a number of instances, extraordinarily limited in their range, although there are eases in which one or two species have almost exelusive posses- sion of very extensive regions. The eastern forested recion, while continuous from north-east to south, south-west, and west, is of course marked by changes in the species corresponding with the changes in temperature between the extreme north-east and the extreme south. These changes, however, are almost without exception gradually made, and we pass almost impereeptibly from a northern to a southern forest. This condition is, in a measure, the consequence of the breadth and high elevation of the Appa- lachian system in its southern extension, along which elevated belt the northern aspect of the arboreal vegetation is prolonged into a region almost semi-tropical.

The following hardwood trees may be mentioned as being the most prominent and important in the forests of the eastern division of the country. The sugar-maple (Acer saccharinum), called also the hard and rock maple, ranges as far south as northern Alabama, but is of the most economical importance in New England and the region of the Great Lakes, Ou the southern shore of Lake Superior, in the higher portions of the country, on and near the divide between the waters flowing into the lake and those which descend to the Mississippi, the forest, over large areas, is almost exclusively

made up of this species, the “ bird’s-eye” variety—formerly much prized for cabinet work—being there abundant. The other species of maple of less importance are the soft maple (A. dasycarpum), having a wide range, and attaining its greatest development in the valley of the lower Ohio, and the red maple (4. rubrum), also ranging from New Brunswick westward to the Lake of the Woods and south to Texas, and being largest and most abundant in the central portion of the Mississippi valley. The oaks range over the entire eastern forested region from Maine to Florida, and west nearly as far as arboreal vegetation extends. The number of species is large. The white oak (%. alba) ranges over nearly the whole forest region of the cast, reaching its greatest development along the western portiou of the Appalachian belt, and in the valley of the Ohio and its tributaries. The burr oak (Q. macrocarpa) has almost as wide a range as the white oak, extending farther west and north-west than any oak of the Atlantic forests ; it forms, with the scarlet oak (Q. coccinea), the principal growth of the “ oak- openings” in the prairie region. The red oak (Q. rubra) has also a wide range ; it extends farther to the north than any other species. The jack oak or black jack (Q. ntg7a) is a small trce of little value except for fuel, but widely disseminated in the west and south-west of the eastern forest region, and forming with the post oak (Q. obtustloba) the growth of the so-called ‘‘ cross timbers”’ of Texas. The live oak (. vircns) is an evergreen tree of considerable value, chiefly developed along the Gulf coast and through western ‘Yexas into the mountains of northern Mexico. The chestnut oak (Q. Prinus) ranges through the Appalachian region, from Lake Champlain to northern Alabama, and west to central Kentucky and Tennessee. Its bark is used in preference to that of the other North American oaksin tanning. The ash is represented by several species. ‘The white ash (Fraxinus americana) is of special value, and its range is very extensive, namely, east and west from Nova Scotia to Minnesota, and south-west to the extreme border of Texas. This species has its greatest development in the bottom lands of the lower Ohio valley. Towards the west and south-west it diminishes in size and importance, and is replaced to a considerable extent by the green ash (& viridis). The range of the red ash (F, pubescens) is nearly as large as that of the white ash, except that it docs not extend quite so far to the south-west. Its wood is less

valuable. The chestnut (Castanea vesea, var. americana) is an im- portant tree, with a wide range. The American chestnut is smaller and sweeter than the European. The species ranges from southern Maine west to Indiana, and south along the Appalachians to northern Alabama, attaining its greatest development along the flanks of the momntains in North Carolina. The birch is repre- sented in the eastern forest region by several species. The white, canoe, or paper birch (Betula papyracea) reaches a higher latitude than any other tree of the American deciduons forest. It ranges south to the mountainous region of northern Pennsylvania, and west to British Columbia. The yellow or grey birch (B. lutea) is one of the largest and most valuable trees of the New England forest, ranging south along the higher portion of the Appalachians to North Carolina, and west to southern Minnesota. There are in the region several species belonging to the two genera of the Jug- landacex, Juglans and Carya, which have a wide range, and are of importance both for their wood and for their fruit, and which also are among the most attractive ornaments of the forest. Prominent among these are the hickory (Carya alba), the butternut (Juglans cinerea), the black walnut (J. nigra), and the pecan (C. olivex- Jformis). The pecan does not occur to the north-west of Indiana, has its greatest development in the rich bottom lands of Arkansas, and is the largest and most important tree of western Texas. The butternut occurs in New England, but is by no means an abundant tree in that region; farther west, especially in the valley of the Ohio, it attains its maximum development. The black walnut is hardly known in New England, unless on its extreme western border ; but south-westward along the Appalachians and west to the Mississippi it is a tree of great value and importance. It attains its inaximum development on the western slope of the southern portion of the Appalachian range and thence to Arkansas. Hardly any other wood is cver used for gunstocks. The American elm (U. americana) has a wide range, extending from southern Newfoundland to Texas and west to central Nebraska. This species is especially the tree of the river bottoms, and specimens occur- ring isolated in natural meadows often attain great size. The rock or white elm (U. racemosa) is a tree hardly occurring in New England, but largely developed in the region of the Great Lakes, west to north-eastern Jowa, and south to central Kentucky. Its wood is considerably denser than that of U. americana. The beech (Fagus ferruginea) occurs through nearly the whole of the eastern forest region, ranging from Nova Scotia south and south-west to

Florida and Texas, and west to Missouri. The linden, lime, bass- wood, or white-wood (Zilia americana) is a tree of wide range, occurring more and more abundantly as we go west from New England through the region south of the Great Lakes into the Ohio valley, and found south along the Appalachians to Georgia. It has its maximum development towards the west and south-west

Ss TA THe

in the rich bottom-lands. The tulip tree (Lirdodendron tulipifera) called also yellow poplar and white-wood, is one of the largest and most beautiful trees of the eastern forest region. It is rare in New England, but has its maximum development from New Jersey south along the slopes of the Appalachians to Tennessee and North Carolina, and west in the Ohio valley. The genus Magnolia ig represented by several species, two of which are of importance, especially for the great beauty of the tree and its flowers. These —M. glauca and A. grandifiora—like the other species of the magnolia, are pretty closely limited to the Atlantic coast and Gulf region, and the lower portion of the Mississippi valley. J. glauea, which has a variety of names, among which those of swect bay and white laurel are most common, is found over a small area on Cape Ann in Massachusetts, and in no other place in New England,— its range being from New Jersey southward, chiefly along the coast to Florida, and west to Arkansas and Texas. JL grandiflora, called the big laurel or the bull bay, an evergreen, and one of the finest trees of the region, is pretty closely limited to the southern and south-western coast, ranging from North Carolina south to Tampa Bay, westward to south-western Arkansas, and along the Texas coast to the valley of the Brazos. There are two trees known familiarly as the locust which are of considerable im- portance. One is the Lobinia Pseudacacia, commonly called cither simply the locust or the yellow locust ; the other is leditschia triacanthos, to which the popular names honcy locust, acacia, sweet locust, and black locust are given. The former occurs naturally in the Appalachians from Pennsylvania to Georgia, reaching its maximum development on the western slopes of the mountains of West Virginia, but has been introduced and cultivated over the whole region east of the Rocky Mountains, wherever trees can be made to grow. This tree, however, over an

extensive portion of the region where it was formerly cultivated has been exterminated by the attacks of the ‘‘locust borer” (Cyllene picta), The other locust, the three-thorned acacia, ranges from Pennsylvania, along the western flanks of the Appalachians, south as far as Florida, south-west through northern Alabama and Mississippi to Texas, and west from Pennsylvania through southern Michigan to eastern Kansas. It is the characteristic tree of the ‘‘ barrens” of middle Kentucky and Tennessee, and attains its maximum development in the lower Ohio bottom-lands. It is widely cultivated through- out the region east of the Appalachians for shade and ornament, and for hedges. There are certain trees and shrubs in the eastern forest region of little or no economical importance, but which, espe- cially when in flower, are highly ornamental. Of these only a few can be mentioned: the mountain ash (Pyrus americana), ranging over nearly the whole region, and much cultivated as an ornamental tree on account of the beauty of its fruit, of dark reddish or scarlet colour, and remaining long upon the branches ; the sumach (Rhus glabra), a handsome shrub, from 4 to 10 feet in height and very striking both for foliage and fruit, and a very characteristic feature of the New England landscape, as seen along the borders of the forests and by the sides of country roads; the mountain laurel (Kalmta latifolia), covering extensive areas of half-cleared forests in the hilly regions and very conspicuous at the flowering season, June and July, one of the most beautiful of all the character- istie native American shrubs; the dog-wood or cornel (Cornus alternifolia), a beautiful shrub, rising occasionally to sufficient height to be called a tree, ranging from the St Lawrence to Alabama, and in certain regions, especially in parts of New Jersey and Pennsylvania, very conspicuous at the time of its flowering, the landscape from a distance looking as if it had been snowed upon. The red-bud (Cercis canadensis), a small tree, is a con- spicuous feature of the forest in the extreme south-west, especially in southern Arkansas, the Indian Territory, and eastern Texas. Although the forest vegetation of the eastern region is essentially deciduous in character,

coniferous trees are widely spread over the whole country from Maine to the southern border of Georgia. — The genus Pinus is by far the inost widely distributed and most inter- esting of the conifers. First in value is the white pine (P. Strobus), a northern tree, having its maximum development in the region of the Great Lakes, ranging fron: Maine west to Lake Superior, and south-west along the Appalachians to Georgia, and attaining height greater than that of any other species in the eastern forest region, namely, somewhat less than half that of the tallest trees in the Pacific coast belt. The most important pineries of the eastern States are in Maine, where this species occurs scattered through the deciduous forests, and where the most easily accessible trees of large size have already been pretty well thinned out; Michigan and Wisconsin are the chief pine-producing States of the western and north-western region. Saginaw Bay, on Lake Huron, may perhaps be designated as the headquarters of the north- western pine lumber industry. The somewhat less valuable oo ern pine (P. palustris), called also hard, yellow, long-leaved, a Georgia pine, is, in contrast with the white pine, decidedly a south- ern species, ranging from southern Virginia south to Florida, an south-west through the Gulf States to the valley of the Red River in Louisiana and that of the Trinity in Texas. It occurs over CX

[PHYSICAL FEATURES,

—— oes ee eS a Ff

> Ss

=,

VEGETATION, |

Utell Tp

ing the so-called “ pine barren ” zone of the southern Atlantic States, of especial importance in North and South Carolina and Georgia The wood of this tree is heavy, hard, and tough, almost all the tar, pitch, rosin, the United States. Another important pine, P. mitis, the yellow, short-leaved, or bull pine, ranges from Staten Island south to western Florida, through the Gulf

States and Tennessee to east- ern Texas, and west of the Mississippi into Kansas and Missouri, reaching its greatest development in western Louisiana, southern Arkansas, and eastern Texas. It is an important tree in the south- west, and west of the Mississippi, and among the yellow pines only inferior in value to P. palustris. Another important conifer, next to Pinus palustris the most characteristic tree of the south-eastern coast timber belt, is the cypress (Zaxodiwm distiehwm), which ranges | from Delaware south along the coast to Florida, and south-west to

It furnishes

States, and also extending up the Mississippi to southern Illinois and Indiana, The cypress isa marked feature in the swamp country which extends along the coast from Virginia through North and South Carolina, of which the Great Dismal Swamp, on the borders of Virginia and North Carolina, may be taken as the type. These swamps are locally known through the region where they occur as ‘‘dismals ” or ‘‘pocosins.” The largest continuous area of swamp in North Carolina lies between Albemarle and Pamlico Sounds, covering an area of nearly 8000 square miles. The prevalent growth of the best swamp lands is the black gum (Nyssa sylvatica), tulip tree or poplar,” cypress, ash, and maple, the proportion of cypress increasing as the soil becomes more peaty. These so-called swamps —in large part at least—differ essentially from what is usually called a swamp, being considerably elevated above the adjacent streams; thcy are, in fact, immense accumulations of decaying vegetation, often peaty in character with more or less fine sand intermingled, and with a very considerable variety of forest vegetation. Portions of these swampy areas have been successfully drained and brought under cultivation ; other portions have resisted all attempts of the kind, although there has been a _ large amount of money expended in endeavouring to reclaim them. , Besides the pines, there are to be mentioned here the spruces, firs, larches, and cedars, which together form a marked zone of vegetation | decidedly northern in character, extending through the northern part of New England, through Canada to the Upper Lakes, and far } to the north and north-west, where it unites with the forest belt of | the Rocky Mountains, in almost the extreme northerly extension of this range within the United States. The northern forms of | coniferous trees also occur in the highest portion of the

Appalachians as far south as North Carolina, and are found along the most ele- vated ridges of the Rocky Mountain range, from the extreme north through to Arizona and New Mexico, and along the culminating portion of the Sierra Nevada nearly to the southern border of California. One of the most characteristic of these northern trees is the balsam fir (Abies balsamea), which ranges from Labrador | north-west to the base of the Rocky Mountains, occurring in central | Michigan, along the north shore of Lake Superior, and in the more elevated and damper portions of the Appalachians south to Virginia. } This is the tree which produces the "Canada balsam." There are two species of spruce which have about the same range as the | Species last mentioned, the black spruce (Picea nigra) and the white jspruce (P. alba). The hemlock (Abies canadensis) is another very) characteristic tree of the northern forests, where perhaps more than any other tree it sometimes occurs in "groves" or over areas of jconsiderable size to the almost entire exclusion of other species. It is met with along the higher Appalachian ranges, south as far as jAlabama ; and, although it is much more abundant at the north than at the south, the largest specimens of it are said to be found in \the high mountains of North Carolina. The bark of this tree is the principal material used in the northern States in tanning. The | larch (Larix americana), much more commonly called the tamarack i

or hackmatack, is another very characteristic northern species, jalthough, like most of the others, ranging to a considerable distance jsouth along the higher regions of the Appalachians. Swampy jareas, over which water stands during a considerable part of the summer, are often covered with a sparse growth of this species, to the almost entire exclusion of other trees. These swamps, which are

specially common in portions of the upper peninsula of Michigan, are usually known as tamarack swamps. The white cedar or arbor vite (Thuja occidentalis) is a very common specics in the north, and is much cultivated as a hedge and ornamental tree. Large swampy areas in the north, especially in the region south jof Lake Superior, are covered with a gnarled and tangled growth of this species, and are called by the English-speaking population "cedar swamps," and by the French voyagewrs *' savanes. " Tn the arthest north-westcrn regions of the United States, as, for instance, on

Isle Royale and the adjacent shore and islands of Lake Superior, the dwarfed and tangled growth of the characteristic northern conifers makes travelling difficult and vexatious. It is sometimes, ur long stretches, almost impossible to get over the ground except

tensive areas almost entirely unmingled with other species, oceupy-

and spirits of turpentine used in

Texas, forming extensive forests in the southern Atlantic and Gulf

by crawling on hands and knees. The white cedar (Chamecyparis spheroidea, more commonly known as Cupressus thyoides) is a trec pretty closely limited to the Atlantic and Gulf coast region, having its maximum development in the southern Atlantic States. It is one of the characteristic trees of the southern swampy belt.

we begin with the narrow, but in part densely Pacific coast. two regions are separated over several degrees of latitude by the intervening region of the Great Basin, where forests are extremely scantily distributed, there are many points of resemblance between them, especially in their northern extension, In the size and density of growth of some of the species, and in the grandcur of the forest scenery generally, portions of the Pacific coast belt surpass anything else that the country has to offer. This region of dense forest growth begins ou the western slope of the Sierra Nevada, at the southern extremity of the range, continuing north along that slope into Oregon and Washington Territory, where, in the region adjacent to Puget Sound, the forests are most remarkable for their density, as well as for the size and elevation of the individual trees. The most widely distributed and most valuable of the trees of this belt is the Douglas fir (Pseudotsuga Douglasii), which ranges from British Columbia south through the Coast mountains, and along the western slope of the Sierra Nevada to Arizona, and south-east along the Rocky Mountains through Montana, Wyoming, and Colorado, but not through the Great Basin. It often forms exten- sive forests, especially in the northern region, where it attains its maximuin development. Its wood is extensively used on the Pacific coast, the

headquarters from which it is supplied being the region adjacent to Puget Sound, where it grows to twice or three times the height it has in the Rocky Mountains, The yellow pine (Pinus ponderosa) ranges from British Columbia south along the Cascades and Sierra Nevada to Mexico, and occurs, irregularly distributed, along the Rocky Mountains from Montana, where it is quite abundant, to Arizona. For size and height this species, as well as the Douglas fir, is remarkable. Its wood is variable in character, but is largely used where a better quality cannot be obtained. The sugar pine (P. Lambertiana) occurs in abundance on the western flanks of the Cascades and the Sierra Nevada, and is especially well developed in the central portion of the latter. It is one of the most conspicuous of the species which make up the grand forests of that part of the Sierra which lies at an altitude of from 2000 to 7000 fect above the sea. The digger pine (P. Sabiniana) is the characteristic tree of the foot-hills of the Sierra Nevada. It is remarkable for the large size of its cones, the seeds of which were formerly an important article of food for the abori- gines. A characteristic tree of the Californian Coast ranges, similar in many respects to P. Sabiniana, and also having large and beautiful cones, with very long, sharp, recurved points, is P. Coultert, The wood of these two species is of little value except for fuel. Other Coast range pines of interest are—the Monterey pine (P. insignis), a trec peculiar to the sea coast, from Pescadero south to San Simeon Bay, and the Obispo pine (P. muricata), limited to the Coast ranges, from Mendocino south to San Luis Obispo. The pines of the high mountain region are—P. monticola, occurring in the Sierra Nevada at an altitude of from 7000 to 10,000 feet, and common in the northern part of the Rocky Mountains, as well as in the Cascade range, and in portions of the mountainous region of Idaho, where it is an important and valuable tree, and is sometimes called the white pine; P. flexilis, a tree occurring in limited numbers in the highest parts of the southern High Sierra of California, and here and there south along the higher portions of the Rocky Mountain ranges and also in the Great Basin, from Montana south to Arizona; P. albicaulis, by some considered a varicty of P. flexilis, by others a distinct species, and having a similar range with that species; P. Balfowriana, and . aristata, a variety of P. Balfouriana, found about Mount Shasta, at from 5000 to 8000 feet in altitude, and around the base of Mount Whitney, also occurring in the very highest portions of the Rocky Mountains, and in parts of the Great Basin south to Arizona ; P. Jeffreyi, by some considered a variety of P. ponderosa,

reaching its maximum development in the Sierra Nevada, and occurring throughout the whole length of that range at high clevations ; P. contorta and P. Murrayana (the latter often con- founded with the former, and by most botanists considered as a variety of it), a common species on the High Sierra at from 8000 to 9000 feet in altitude, extending into Oregon and through the Rocky Mountains south to northern Arizona. Two trees, limited in their occurrence to California, and of great interest on account of their size and beauty, belong to the genus Sequwota,—the red- wood (8. sempervirens) and the big tree (S. gigantea). The red- wood occurs quite close to the coast, in a narrow almost uninter- rupted belt, from a point in the Santa Lucia range about fifty miles south of Monterey to very near the north line of the State. North of Russian river this trce forms an almost unbroken forest, extremely grand in character, individual trees rising to nearly 300

OXIDUL, = ioe

Passing to the consideration of the western or Cordilleran side, Forest forested, belt of the belt of In this connexion notice will be taken of the dis- the Paci- tribution of the forests of the Rocky Mountains ; for, although the fic coast.

feet in height. The big tree occurs on the western slope of the Sierra in somewhat isolated groves or patches always intermingled with other trees, and not forming forests by itself as the redwood does. Its range is from 36° to a little beyond 38° N. lat., there

[PHYSICAL FEATURES,

poorly-timbered region of the Rocky Mountains is an extensive Forest, area, including the northern and southern plateaus and the Great of th ‘ Basin, which practically is nearly destitute of trees. The coniferous on species occurring in the Rocky Mountains are found here and Basin,

being nine groves, the largest of which is about thirty miles north- north- east of Visalia, on the tributaries of King’s and Kaweah tivers. The groves

in Mariposa and Calaveras counties are those inost visited by tourists, and in the latter is the tallest of thesc trees, and the tallest tree on the American continent, so far as known (825 feet). Another conifer of much interest from its beauty and its very limited range is the Monterey cypress (Cup- ressus macrocarpa), a species occurring only on Cypress Point, near Monterey. The Port Orford cedar (Chamezxcyparis Law- soniana), a strictly Pacific Coast species, ranging from Coos Bay in Oregon into northern California, is a large and valuable tree, with an odoriferous, highly resinous wood. The white cedar of the Pacific coast (Liboccdrus decurrens, called by some botanists Thuja

there along the moister tracts of the higher ranges in the Great Basin, especially in its eastern and higher portion, but by far the larger part of the slopes and nearly all the valleys are treeless being chiefly occupied by the well-known “sage-brush” (Arte. misia tridentata), which covers many thousands of square miles especially in Nevada and Utah. ‘T’wo trees are, however, very characteristic of the Great Basin, especially of its western portion —the juniper (Juniperus occidentalis) and the pition or nut pine (Pinus monophylia). These two species, usually much dwarfed in size and scrubby in appearance, are almost the only trees of western and central Nevada, where they occur hidden away in the cations, Everywhere in a wide sweep adjacent to the mining districts all this vegetation has been completely cleared away.

giganica) is also a Pacific Coast species, ranging from the Santiam river in Oregon south through the Coast ranges as far as Mount San Bernardino, The Thuja gigantca proper, or red or canoe cedar, is another Pacific Coast range tree; but, unlike the two species last mentioned, it extends its range into the northern

An order of plants peculiarly American, and characterizing in a Vegeta. most marked manner the hot dry region adjacent to the lower tion of Colorado, is that of the Cactacew. The cactus ranges from the the extreme north of the plateau region to the extreme south, but its Southern most abundant and striking development takes place in southern Plateau,

Rocky Mountain region. It is a large tree, which has its maxi- nium development in the Coast ranges of Washington Territory and Oregon.

The deciduous trees of the Sierra Nevada and the Cascade range, as well as of the Pacific Coast ranges from California north to the boundary line, are of comparatively little importance. There are several species of oak, but of little value,—among them being the Coast live oak (Q. agrifolia), the largest and most generally dis- tributed oak in the south-western part of California; the black oak (Q. Kelloggii), ranging along the coast mountains of Oregon, and the most characteristic hardwood tree of the western slope of the Sierra ; and the chestnut oak (Q. denstflora), occurring in the Coast ranges from Oregon to central California. An evergreen tree, very characteristic of the coast ranges of Oregon and Cali- fornia, and very ornamental, is the California laurel (Umbellularia californica), of which the wood is hard and strong, and of a very pleasing light-brown mottled colour. The tree called the mad- rona or madrofio (Arbutus Mcnzicstt) occurs from British Columbia south through the Coast ranges to the Santa Lucia Mountains, and is a very characteristic tree of the region, with its red bark and beautiful glossy foliage. The wood is used in the manufacture of gunpowder, and the bark to some extent in tanning,

In the area included between the two heavily-timbered regions described above, or between the summit of the Sierra Nevada and Cascade range and the western border of the great eastern forest region, the paucity of rainfall corresponds to paucity or almost entire absence of forests over much the larger portion. “We may here distinguish, first, the Rocky Mountain region; then the Great Basin and the plateaus north and south of it; then the ‘‘Plains,” or the nearly level country lying east of the base of the Rocky Mountains; and, finally, the ‘‘ Prairie” region, or that portion of the scantily timbered area which for the most part lies enclosed within the eastern forested belt, and where other causes than the absence of moisture have operated to bring about the growth of a peculiar vegetation.

Nevada, southern California, and in general the region adjacent tothe Mexican boundary line. The so-called prickly pear (Opuntia) is the cactus family which has the widest range, being found from the upper Missouri through the Great Basin to Arizona. It has many species, that which ranges farthest nogth being O. missouri- ensis. The genera Mamillaria, Echinocactus, and Ccrcus are found in various localities in the Great Basin, as well as in southern California, in portions of which region, as well as in

lower Oali- fornia and Arizona, there are large areas where various kinds of cactus form almost the exclusive vegetation, often rising to such a height as to be properly called trees; the loftiest of all is the singularly striking Cereus gigantews. Mingled with them are yuccas (called the ‘‘Spanish bayonet”), mezquites (Algarobia glandulosa), and the creosote bush (Larrca mexicana), which are among the most abundant and characteristic plants of this region.

The vast area extending east from the base of the Rocky Mountains “The

to near the 95th meridian is the district universally known as “the Plains.”

Plains,” and one not at all to be confounded with the ‘ Prairies,” which are almost entirely included within a region of dense forests, and over which the partial absence of trees is due to a cause entirely different from that which has made the plains the home of the grasses and not of trees. The transition from the forested region of the east to the region of the plains is, almost without excep- tion, coincident with the diminution in the precipitation, whic as we proceed westward goes on rapidly, and, on the whole, pretty regularly. Thus Dakota, between 97° and 104° W. long,, is practically destitute of timber, except in its river bottoms and the small territory between the north and south forks of the Cheyenne, the region of the Black Hills. In Minnesota, which lies east of 97°, only the north-eastern portion, especially that adjacent to Lake Superior, is heavily timbered. The south-western corner of the State, embracing about one-third of its area, and the area west of the 96th meridian, are classed in the census report as having less than two cords of wood to the acre. Nebraska and Kansas, still farther south, are almost destitute of forests. In

Forests The Rocky Mountain belt is not destitute of forests, but these | Nebraska only a narrow strip along the Missouri, near the meti- of the are very irregularly scattered over the surface, and the species are | dian of 96°, is given as having from one to two cords of wood per Rocky few in number, chiefly belonging to coniferous genera, and of little | acre. The heavy forest growth of the Mississippi basin just reaches Moun- economic value. The species of conifers have been already men- | the extreme south-eastern corner of Kansas. North of this, and tains. tioned, and their range indicated

in speaking of the forests of the | along the eastern border of the State, there is a belt of from thirty

Sierra Nevada and Cascade range. Few forests in the Rocky Mountains at all compare in density or in the size of the individual trees with those of the Sierra and the Cascade range. What trees there are usually grow most densely in the moist places at the foot of the ranges, where the streams debouch from them, in the ravines and gorges, and on the lower slopes. By far the most common deciduous tree throughout this region is the aspen (Populus tremutoides), often called cottonwood and sometimes poplar, which most commonly springs up, forming dense thickets, throughout the Rocky Mountains, wherever the coniferous forest has becn burned off. It ranges from Newfoundland to Arizona, and is the most widely distributed of North American trees, and highly character- istic of northern and elevated regions. In various portions of the Rocky Mountains there are scattered oaks. The scrub oak (Q. undulata, var. Gambelii) occurs in some quantity on the mountains of southern New Mexico and Arizona, and is also found in Colo- rado and along the Wahsatch range. The black oak (Q. Emoryi), the white oak (Q. grisca), and a few other species are found here and there in the southern part of the Rocky Mountains, as also in Arizona, and ranging south into Mexico. The most denscly forested portions of the Rocky Mountains are the extreme north- ern in north-western Montana, the north-west corner of Wyo- ming, the higher part of Colorado, the eastern slope of the range in New Mexico, and the higher portions of Arizona. –

Enclosed between the deusely-forested Pacifie belt and the

to a hundred miles in width in which there is valuable timber on the borders of the streams. West of 97° W. long, the trees are confined to the immediate banks of the large streams, and are small and of little value. West of 99° we find the typical vegeta- tion of the plains, with only a few small stunted willows and cottonwoods scattered at wide intervals along the streams. The yearly isohyetal of 26 inches forms a limit beyond which arboreal vegetation is almost entirely absent, while in going east there 1s little of value until we reach the belt in which the rainfall is over 32 inches. The same may be said of the Indian Territory an Texas, the bending of the isohyetal curves to the west as we approac the Gulf of Mexico being,

however, as might be expected, accom- panied bya corresponding extension of the forest belt in that direc- tion. Thus, in Texas, the limit of what may be designated as the well-timbered region lies between 96° and 97°, while the line marking the entire disappearance of the forests may be placed somewhere between 99° and 100°, and pretty closely adjacent to the isohyetal of 26 inches. F icie

The French word * prairie," a meadow or grassy plain, Was aoa employed by Hennepin about 1680, in his excellent deseription regio". of the prairies of Illinois. The word has become current m the Mississippi valley, and still farther west. In the nt portion of the Rocky Mountains the sinall grassy areas adjacent to the streams and surrounded by mountains are called " Mie while farther south they are known as "parks," the still smate

Rey TD

areas being frequently denominated "holes." In general, how- ever, the term prairie is used to designate tracts of land nearly or quite destitute of forests, or over which the trees are, as a general rule, limited to the '' bluffs"—the more or less precipitous slopes which separate the upland, or prairie proper, from the river bottom —which treeless areas occur in the midst of a well-forested country. Illinois is par excellence the Prairie State, and may be considered the centre of the prairie region, the adjacent States, on all sides, having more or less prairic and also areas of dense forest.

All through the prairie region the precipitation is abundant and pretty equally distributed through the year. The vicinity of Chicago, a typical prairie region, comes within the isohyetal of 44 inches and upwards, and the same is true of a part of the treeless region of Iowa. Large areas in the more southern States— Arkansas, Alabama, Mississippi, and Louisiana—are also prairies, portions of which are entirely destitute of forests, while others have small ''clumps"' of trees sparsely scattered over their surface. This is in a region of the largest rainfall, that of 56 inches and upwards. The cause of the absence of trees on the prairies is the physical character of the soil, and especially its exceeding fineness, which is prejudicial to the growth of anything but a superficial vegetation, the smallness of the particles of soil being am insuper- able barrier to the necessary access of air to the roots of a deeply- rooted vegetation. Wherever in the midst of the extraordinarily fine

soil of the prairies coarse or gravelly patches exist, there dense forests occur. ‘Ihe theory that fineness of soil is fatal to tree growth finds its most remarkable support in the fact that in south- castern Russia the limits of the “black earth” and the treeless region are almost exactly identical, and not at all in harmony with the position of the isolyetal lines. The black soil of Russia is an earth of exceeding fineness—so fine indeed that it is with the greatest difficulty that the air can penetrate it so as to oxidize the organic matter which it contains, —the essential cause (in the opinion of the present writer) of its dark colour. The peculiar mode of decay of the organic matter in such fine soils seems analogous to that by which vegetation has been turned into coal or lignite when so buried under detrital material as to greatly impede the access of the air. It is now easy to see why plains are likelicr than mountain slopes to be treeless, it being towards the plains that the finer particles of the material which is abraded from the higher regions are being constantly carried. The more distant the region from the mountains and the broader its area the more likely it is that a considerable portion of it will be covered with fine detritus, whether this be of subaerial origin or deposited at the bottom of the sca. The exceedingly fine soil of the typical prairie region consists, in large part, of the residual matcrial left after the removal, by percolation of the rain and other atmospheric agencies, of the calcareous portion of the undisturbed stratified deposits, chicfly of Paleozoic age, which underlie so large a portion of the Mississippi valley. he finer portions of the formations of more recent age in the Gulf States os also, over considerable areas, remained treeless. There are in various parts of the country beds of lakes which have disappeared in consequence of their very slow filling up with fine sediment, and these are not occupied by the forest, although surrounded by the densest arboreal growth.

The principal use of the forests of the United Statcs is for fuel ; and there is no part of the settled portion of the country where the consumption for this purpose is not of some importance. In the middle and northern Atlantic States coal is the chicf fuel in the cities and large towns, and the almost exclusive fuel of the larger cities on important lines of comniunication, but supple- mented, to a greater or less extent, by wood. But in the country, on the farms, and in the small towns wood is almost exclusively used, except on the coal-fields or in their immediate vicinity. In the coal-producing States of Illinois and Iowa, where forests are limited to certain areas, and in

Nebraska and Kansas, which have coal of inferior quality and where forests are still scarcer than they are in Illinois and Iowa, coal is the dominating fuel. The same is the case in certain parts of Missouri. In all the States south of Virginia and Kentucky wood is almost the exclusive fuel, except in a few of the very largest towns. Wood is also almost exclusively the material of which houses and barns are built over the whole United States, the exceptions being the larger cities (chiefly of brick, with some stone), the business portions of the towns of second rank, and occasional important buildings in towns of the third rank. The other uses of wood are obvious. The following figures given by the census of 1880 relate to the } manufacture of sawn lumber :—establishments, 25,708 ; capital, | $181,186,122; average hands employed, 147,956; feet of lumber } produced, 18,091,356,000; laths, 1,761,788,000; shingles, 5,555,046,000 ; staves, 1,248,226,000; sets headings, 146,523,000; | feet of bobbin and spool stock, 34,076,000 ; total value of specified products, $2380,685,061; value of other products, $2, 682, 668 ; | total value, $233,367,729. The consumption of wood for domestic | fuel is given in 1880 as amounting to 140,537,439 cords, with an estimated value of $306,950,040, and the total consumption of wood as fuel as 145,778,137 cords, valued at $321, 962,373.

VEGETATION, |

pTrATES

Minera Rrsovrons.

S11

In 1619 the crection of ‘‘works” for smelting the ores of iron Histori- was begun at Falling Creek, near J amestown, Va., and iron appears cal to have becn made in 1620 ; but the enterprise was stopped by a sketch of In 1648 the busi- early ness of smelting and manufacturing iron was again begun at Lynn, mining.

general massacre of the settlers in that region.

Mass., where it was successfully carried on, at least up to 1671, furnishing most of the iron used in the colony. From the middle of the 17th century the smelting of this metal began to be of im- portance in the vicinity of Massachusetts Bay, and by the close of the century there had been a large number of iron-works established in that colony, which, for a century after its settlement, was the chief seat of the iron manufacturé in America, the bog ores, taken from the bottoms of the ponds, being chiefly employed. Early in the 18th century the industry began to extend itself over New England, and into New York and New J ersey, the German bloom- ery or forge being employed for reducing the ore directly to bar iron, and by the middle of that century it had taken a pretty firm hold in the Atlantic States. About 1789 there were fourteen fur- naces and thirty-four forges in operation in Pennsylvania, Before the separation of the colonies from the mother country took place the mannfacture of iron had been extended through all of them, with the possible exception of Georgia. As early as 1718 iron (both pig and bar) began to be sent to Great Britain, the only country to which the export was permitted, the annual amount betwcen 1730 and 1775 varying ordinarily between 2000 and 3000 tons, but im one year (1771) rising to between 7000 and 8000 tons.

So far as known, the first metal, other than iron, mined by the whites within the territory of the United States was eopper.? The first company began work about 1709, at Simsbury, Conn. The ore obtained there and in New Jersey seems to have been mostly shipped to England.

The first mining excitement of the United States dates back to the discovery of gold by the whites in the southern States, along the eastern border of the Appalachian range, in Virginia, and in North and South Carolina. “The existence of gold in that region had been long known to the aboriginal inhabitants, but no atten- tion was paid to this by the whites, until about the beginning of the present century, when nuggets were found, one of which weighed 28 1b, From 1824 the search for gold continued, and by 1829 the business had become important, and was attended with no little excitement. In 1838 and 1834 the amount annually obtained had risen to fully a million of dollars. A rapid devclop- ment of the lead mines of the West, both in Missouri and on the upper Mississippi in the region where Iowa, Wisconsin, and Illinois adjoin one another, took place during the first quarter of the

present century, and as early as 1826 or 1827 the amount of this metal obtained had risen to nearly 10,000 tons a year. By this time the make of iron had also become important, the production for 1828 being estimated at 130,000 tons.

In 1820 the first cargo of anthracite coal was shipped to Phil- adelphia. From 1880 the increase in the production was very rapid, and in 1841 the annual shipments from the Pennsylvania anthracite region had nearly reached 1,000,000 tons, the output of iron at that time being estimated at about 300,000 tons. The develop- ment of the coal and iron interests, and the increasing importance of the gold product of the Appalachian auriferous belt, and also of the lead product of the Mississippi valley, led to a more gcneral and decided interest in geology and mining; and about 1830 geo- logical surveys of several of the Atlantic States were begun, and more systematic explorations for the ores of the metals, as well as for coal, were carried on over all parts of the country then open to settlement. An important step was taken in 1844, when a cession of the region on the south shore of Lake Superior was obtaincd from the Chippeway Indians. Here explorations for copper im- mediately commenced, and for the first time in the United States the business of mining for the metals began to be developed on an extensive scale, with suitable appliances, and with financial success,

1 Throughout this article, by ‘“‘ton” is understood the ton of 2240 ib, unless the contrary is expressly stated.

2 This metal had also been extensively mined in the Lake Superior region long before the first visit of the English.

Mining indus- tries about

1850.

Coal.

An event of still greater importance took place almost immediately after the value of the copper region in question had been fully ascertained. This was the demonstration of the fact that gold existed in large quantities along the western slope of the Sierra

Nevada of California, a region which had just come into the |

possession of the United States. The discovery led to extraordinary excitement throughout the older States, and to an immigration from all parts of the world on an unprecedented scale. The pro- duction of this precious metal rose almost at once to figures far surpassing anything definitely known in history. In five years from the discovery of gold at Coloma on the American river, the yield from the auriferous belt of the Sierra Nevada had risen to an amount estimated at between sixty-five and seventy millions of dollars a year, or five times as much as the total production of this etal throughout the world at the beginning of the century. This rapid development led to a great mining excitement in the eastern States, asa result of which new veins and deposits of various metals were discovered, and many which had been previously worked to a limited extent and then abandoned were again taken up. This ex- citement was at its height in 1852 and 1858, but soon slackened as it began to be shown by the results of actual working that, while “indications ” of the valuable ores of the metals are very abundant in the Appalachian belt, the localities where these ores occur in sufficient abundance to be profitably worked are comparatively few.

The following details show the development of the mineral re- sources of the country at the middle of the present century. In

1850 the shipments of anthracite amounted to nearly 3,500,000 |

tons ; those of Cumberland or semi-bituininous coal were about 200,000 tons. The yearly production of pig iron had risen to between 500,000 and 600,000 tons. The annual yield of gold in the Appalachian belt had fallen off to about $500,000 in value, that of California had risen to $36,000,000, and was rapidly approach- ing the epoch of its culmination (1851-1853). No silver was ob- tained in the country, except what was separated from the native gold, that mined in California containing usually from 8 to 10 per

cent. of the less valuable metal. The ore of mercury had been dis- covered in California before the epoch of the gold excitement, and at New Almaden, about 100 miles south of San Francisco, was being extensively and successfully worked, the yield of this metal in the year 1850-51 being nearly 2,000,000 Ib. At this time the copper mines of Lake Superior were being successfully developed, and nearly 600 tons of metallic copper were produced in 1850. At many points in the Appalachian belt attempts had been made to work niines of copper and lead, but with no cousiderable success. About the middle of the century extensive works were erected at Newark for the manufacture of the oxide of zinc for paint ; about 1100 tons were produced in 1852, The extent and value of the deposits of zinc ore in the Saucon valley, Pennsylvania, had also just become known in 1850. The lead production of the Missouri mines had for some years been nearly stationary, or had declined slightly from its former importance; while that of the upper Mississippi region had, in the years just previous to 1850, risen to from 20,000 to 25,000 tons a year, but was gradually declining, having in 1850 sunk to a little less than 18,000 tons.

Coal.—Coal exists in the United States in large quantity in each of its important varieties,—hard coal, or anthracite ; soft or bi- tuminous coal ; and lignite, or brown coal. Semi-bituminous coal, which stands midway between hard and soft coal, is also an article of importance, being especially well adapted for blacksmiths' use, and also for ocean-going steamers. Geologically, the anthracite, semi-bituminous, and bituminous coals nearly all belong to the same formation, the Carboniferous par excellence. All the coal of the Appalachian region and Central Valley is of this geological age, excepting the small field near Richmond, Va., and two in North Carolina, the Deep River and Dan River fields, which are of Mesozoic age. That of Richmond was the first coal-field worked in the United States; but it is no longer of any importance. The North Carolina Mesozoic areas have never been developed to any extent. All the Cordilleran coal and that at the eastern base of the Roeky Mountains is either Tertiary or belongs to the very uppermost portion of the Cretaceous. Some of it is decidedly lignite, and is so called by the people who use it; but most of it, although of so receut geological age, is called coal, and, in point of fact, does not differ essentially from Paleozoic coal in external appearance. The area underlain by the Coal-measures in the United States is very large.

The areas of the various coal-fields are, in round numbers, as follows :— Rhode Island, 500 square miles ; Appalachian, 59,000 ; Central (Illinois, Indiana, Kentucky), 47,000; Western (Missouri, Towa, Kansas, Arkansas, Texas), 78,000; Michigan, 6700 ; total, 191,200. Of these fields the Appalachian is, and is likely long to remain, by far the most valuable. Those of Rhode Island and Michigan are practically of very little importance. Different portions of the fields are of very different value, as respects quality and quantity of coal, and portions of them do not contain coal-beds of sufficient thickness or of good enough quality to be worked with profit.

oT 2 I iiss

[STATISTICs,

The following table (V1.) shows the amount of coal produced in the several States and Territories (not including the local and colliery consumption), and the value at the mines in 1885 ;—

Tons, Value, Tons. Pennsylvania— $ 3 Anthracite….| 32,265,42] | 72,274,544 || Colorado…....| 1,210,769! 3,051,590 Bituminous ..| 23,214,285 | 24,700,000 || Wyoming…..... 720,828! 2,491 984 TMM OISieesersscere 11,456,493 |, New Mexico….. 271,442 918,606 ODIO, scseteessacccs 8,206,988 || Utah….....- 190,286 426,000 Maryland…..... 3,209,891 || California…..... 63,942 214,845 Missouri…..... 3,850,000 || Oregon…..... 44,643 195.000 West Virginia.. 3,369,062|| Washington.,...| 389,510 950,615 Indianga:....+....< 2hST 250)! MOXAS),.. cccseenee 133,928 300,000 TOW, dacsseeneseses 4,819,230 |} Arkansas…....| 183,928 225,000 Kentucky…..... 2,094,400 || Montana…..... 97,179 302,540 Tennessee;..... 1,100,000 || Dakota…..... 23,214 91,000 Virginia. . 666,792 || Idaho…..... 893 4,000 Kansas… 1,410,438 || Indian Terri- Michigan. 75,000 Os epecoonodendn 446,429 750,000 Alabama. .| 2,225,000} 2,990,000 — —— Georgia…..... 133,929 180,000 TOtalsiewccres 95,832,705 152,915,268 eee |

The amount consumed for local and colliery use would increase the total five or six per cent. Including all the coal thus consumed, the figures for the four years ending 1885 stand as follows, the value at the mine being added

for each year, except that for 1885 the value of the ‘‘commercial coal” only is given:— 1882, 92,219,454 tons, $146,632,581 ; 1883, 102,867,969 tons, $159,494,855 ; 1884, 106,906,295 tons, $148,768,578; 1885, 99,069,216 tons, $152,915, 268.

The Appalachian coal-field does not occupy any portion of the State of New York, but extends from near its southern boundary south-west into Georgia and Alabama:— Pennsylvania, 12,302 square miles; Maryland, 550; Ohio, 10,000; West Virginia, 16,000; Virginia, 1000; Kentucky, 8983; Tennessee, 5100; Georgia, 170 ; Alabama, 55380; total, 59,635 square miles.

Pennsylvania, to which State the anthracite of the country is practically limited, produces more than half the eoal raised in the United States, and about one-eighth of the total yield of the world, the increase during the past five years having been astonishingly rapid. Ohio stands next in importance among the States so situated as to have a portion of this field within their borders,—its yield, however, being only one-eighth of that of Pennsylvania, Mary- land produces about one-third as much as Ohio. The production of the remaining States over which the Appalachian field extends is small as compared with the extent of their areas underlain by coal. In Kentucky and Alabama, however, some progress has been made within the past few years. About three-quarters of the coal mined in the United States is from the Appalachian field. Next in importance to the Appalachian is the Central coal-field, from which Illinois draws its supplies of fuel. The yield of that State is somewhat less than a fifth of that of Pennsylvania, while Indiana produces about one-fifth as much as Illinois. The eoal of the Central field is decidedly inferior to that of the Appalachian, since it contains on the average considerably more ash and more water. The quality of the coal of the Western field is somewhat variable, but on the whole inferior to that of the Illinois field. The region over which it is spread is, however, not well supplied with forests ; and hence the amount annually raised is considerable (nearly 4,000,000 tons for Iowa and 2,500,000 for Missonri). The southern extension of this field through Arkansas and Texas has, as yet, been very little explored or developed. The coal-producing areas of the Cordilleran region are all of comparatively small size, and no one of them is capable of furnishing a large supply for any considerable number of years; but taken

together they are of great value, not only for local consumption, but for supplying the Mexican plateau. The Cordilleran coal (some call it lignite) is all newer than the Carboniferous ; and it is not known that there is any coal at all, either in the Roeky Mountains or farther west, m that portion of the geological series which is the paleontological equivalent of the true ‘‘Carboniferous.” A large part of the Cordilleran coal has a geologieal position close upon the line between the Cretaceous and Tertiary. By some paleontologists it is referred to the one, by some to the other. The quality of this newer coal is very variable: in some localities it is quite good, but 1m general it is decidedly inferior to the average coal of true Carboniferous age ; some portions are distinctly lignitic in character.

While the amount of coal in the United States is large, it is not by any means so much larger than that of England as it has been always inferred to be from the simple consideration of the compara- tive dimensions of the areas over which coal is known to exist the two countries. In the Central and Western fields the a of beds is small, and they are never of great thickness; norls! known how far the total area embraced within the limits usually assigned as that of these fields was really originally underlam continuously by coal-seams, or how much of these seams has Me. removed by erosion. It is only in regard to the anthracite fields that even an approximate statement of the total remaiming ava” able quantity of coal can be made, Mr P. W. Sheafer, a mmmg

UNL? Dp

engineer of long experience in that region, has made a statement that the anthracite fields originally contained about 25,000,000, 000 tons of coal. Mr Ashburner, the assistant in charge of the State survey of the anthracite coal district, has stated that, up to 1st January 1883, the total production of that district had amounted to 509,333,695 tons. He also estimates that two-thirds of the coal actually attacked had been lost in the mining. Making allowance for increased consumption and other considerations, it would appear that 200 years must be taken as the maximum time during which the anthracite fields will hold out, while it is prob- able that they will be practically exhansted considerably earlier. As regards the quantity of available coal in any portion of the bituminons coal-fields of the country,

the only estimate we have is that of Prof. Lesley, who (February 1886) estimates the amount of available coal in the Pittsburgh seam at 5,000,000,000 tons, but confesses that any exact calculation is impossible. If the consumption remains at the figure at whieh it stood in 1884 (11,000,000 tons), this quantity will last about 450 years. Petrolewm.—The oil-produeing districts of present or past im- portance are nearly all in Pennsylvania; but there are small pro- ductive areas in the adjacent portions of New York. (1) The Allegany district, including the Richburg and several small outly- ing pools in Allegany county, New York, has a productive area of 31 square miles, and up to January 1885 produced 15,000,000 barrels. (2) The Bradford district, embracing the oil-pools in central and northern M‘Kean county, Pa., and southern Cattaraugus county, N.Y., has a productive area of 138 square miles, 121 of which are included in the Bradford field proper. The geological position of the oil-bearing strata is indicated by the fact that the uppermost oil-sand is, at Bradford, 1775 feet below the bottom of the lower member of the millstone grit, or Pottsville conglomerate, which in western Pennsylvania is one of the most persistent and best-recognized geological horizons, and is there known as the Olean conglomerate. This district had up to January 1885 pro- duced 109,000,000 barrels of oil. (3)The Warren district lies in eastern Warren and north-eastern Forest counties, Pa. ; it has an area of 35 square miles, and up to January 1885 had produced 12,000,000 barrels. The oils from different subdivisions of this district vary considerably in colour and gravity, although gener- ally spoken of as “amber oils.” They come from “sands” (sand rocks) of varying geological horizons, from 1100 to 1850 feet below the Olean conglomerate. (4) The Venango distriet—the scene of all the earlier oil developments—has an area of 65 square miles, and includes forty distinct and well-recognized oil-pools, the largest of which lies between Oil City on the south and Pleasantville on the north, and covers an area of 28 square miles. The production of this district up to January 1885 had been about 55,000,000 barrels. The oil of the Venango district comes from three principal sand beds, of which the uppermost one lics about 450 feet below the base of the Olean conglomerate. They arc all contained within an interval of 350 feet. The oils are generally green, but frequently black, and sometimes amber. The pebbles of the sand rocks are water-worn, sometimes as large as hazel-nuts, loosely cemented together and bedded in fine sand ; but the sands are not so regular or homogeneous as in the Bradford and

Allegany fields; conse- quently, the risk of obtaining unproductive holes and variable wells has always been greater in the Venango than in the Bradford and Allegany districts. (5) The Butler district includes the oil-pools in Butler and Clarion counties and in south-eastern Venango eounty. The area is 84 square miles, and up to January 1885 the production had been about 69,000,000 barrels. The oil here comes from the same group of sand rocks as in the Venango district. (6) The Beaver district includes the two principal oil-pools known as Slippery Rock and Sinith's Ferry, having an area of about 16 square miles, with a production of 1,000,000 barrels up to J anuary 1885, In both the oil-pools of the Beaver district heavy oil is obtained from the representative of the Pottsville conglomerate, and amber oi] from the Berea grit, a member of the Sub-Carbonifer- ous series. The geological position of all the other oil-fields is con- sidered by the geologists of the Pennsylvania Survey as Devonian. The total area of the productive oil areas is given by Messrs Carll and Ashburner at 369 square miles, and the general boundaries of the oil-regions of Pennsylvania are now regarded as established. That production is declining is shown by the following figures. In July 1888 the number of producing wells was 17,100, and the average daily product per well was 3°8 barrels ; in 1884 the corre- sponding figures were 21,844 and 3:0, and in 1885 they were 22,524 and 2°5. Since July 1882, when the maximum average daily pro- duction for any one month was realized (105,102 barrels), there has been an irregular but steady decline. In 1884 the shipments of petroleum were more than 1,000,000 barrels in excess of the pro- duction. At the end of August 1884 the stock of oil on hand had reached its maximum, 39,084,561 barrels; in September 1885 it had declined to 35,348,771 barrels. The price of petroleum had "1 'The substance of the following paragraph is mainly derived from a paper

read by Mr C. A. Ashburner, of the Pennsylvania Geological Survey, at a meet- ing of the American Institute of Mining Engineers in September 1885.

not, up to July 1885, been influenced by this condition of things crude oil being at that time worth 92% cents a barrel, 134 cents less than the average price for 1884, The extraordinary fluctuations in the price of petroleam during 1880 to 1886 are shown by the following figures :—in 1880 it ranged from 1242 to 70% cents per barre] for crude oi] ; in 1881 from 1004 to 72; in 1882 from 135 to 494 ; in 1883 from 125 to 842%; in 1884 from 115# to 51; in 1885 from 1118 to 68 ; in 1886 from 924 to 59%. These figures, however have but little reference to changed conditions of production. The fluctuations are simply the result of a colossal system of gambling, the magnitude of which may be inferred from the statement that the “clearances” on the ‘consolidated stock and petroleum ex- change” for 1886 amounted to about 2,275,000,000 barrels. The daily average exports of petroleum for that year are given at about 44,300 barrels. The tendency to lower prices in 1886 was due in part to the remarkable yield of the oil-wells at Baku, on the Caspian a in part to diseoveries, supposed to be of importance, in Ohio,

Natural Gas.—The use of natural gas for illumination, and even Natural for metallurgical purposes, has lately become a matter of importance. gas,

The existence of outflows or springs of gas in the region west of the Alleghany range has been long known, and the gas obtained from wells or bore-holes was used for illumination in Fredonia, N.Y., as early as 1821. One well after another was bored for this purpose at that place, until, in 1880, the supply had reached the amount of 110,000 cubic feet per month. The following figures, reported by T. P. Roberts, show the estimated value of the coal displaced by natural gas in the region where this source of heat and light was in use for the years mentioned :— 1882. Pittsburgh region, $75,000; elsewhere, $140,000; total, $215,000

1883, . 200,000; 275,000; ,, 475,000

1884, a0 1,100,000; of 360,000; ,, 1,460,000 Gas seems to be a general concomitant of the oil all through the petroleum region, but for a long time the outflow of gas from the oil-wells was looked upon as a nuisance. According to Mr Ash- burner,” the amount of gas at present flowing from the explored sands of Pennsylvania is probably two or three times greater than is required to meet all present demands. The same aut ority gives an

account of the development of the natural gas resources of Ohio. Their amount is not yet ascertained with any degree of certainty, but it seems likely to be large. All the gas comes from the Paleozoic strata, from the Upper Coal-measures down to the Trenton lime- stone,—the most prolific gas-bearing rocks being the Berea grit in the Sub-Carboniferous and the Trenton limestone of Lower Silurian age. Natural gas has been obtained in numerous localities in New York, but nowhere in considerable quantity except in the vicinity of the Allegany oil-district, in the county of that name. Portions

of West Virginia, especially the Kanawha valley, give promise of being regions of large production.

Iron and Stecl.—The following table (VII.) will convey an idea Iron. of the condition of the iron industry at the date of the last census, and of the progress made during the ten preceding years :—

No. of Amount of Weight of Establish- Capital ere 2 Products ments. invested. ee in Tons,

1870 1880

Increase per cent……..

808 1005

24°38

$121,772,074 230,971,884

89°68

$207,208,696 296,557,685

43°12

3,245,720 6,486,730

98°76

The ‘ weight of products,” as given above, includes the products of all the various processes or operations ; hence there is evidently a certain amount of duplication (rolled iron, for instance, being mainly produced from pig). The following table (VIII.) gives the production in each branch of the steel and iron industries :—

1870. 1880.

Pig iron and castings from furnace ….| 1,832,876 tons. 3,375,901 tons. All products of iron rolling mills…... 1,287,347 ,, 2,101,114 ,, Bessemer steel finished products …... 17,324 ,, 794,550 ,, Open-hearth steel finished products…. Ome §3,163 ,, Crucible steel finished products …... 25,061 ,, 62,784 ,, Blister and other steel …..... 2,040 ,, 4,424 ,, Products of forges and bloomeries …. DGI935) 4) 64,784 ,,

The distribution of the iron industry is extremely irregular. West of the Mississippi, with the exception of the angle between that river and the Missouri adjacent to St Louis, the amount of iron made is very small. The percentage of total production in 1880 was distributed as follows :— Pennsylvania, 50; Ohio, 13; New York, 8; Illinois, 6 ; New Jersey, 3; Wisconsin, W. Virginia, Michigan, and Massachusetts, each nearly 2; Missouri, Kentucky, and Maryland, between 1°5 and 2; Indiana and Tennessee, about 1; all the other States and Territories, an aggregate of about 4 per cent. New England now makes but little pig iron, and the South scarcely any rolled iron; the West has largely embarked in the manufacture of steel by the Bessemer process, while New York has not a single Bessemer establishment ; New York manufactures chiefly

2 Paper read before the American Institute of Mining Engineers, Oct. 1886.

from ore, and Pennsylvania from pig and scrap iron; Michigan is the leading producer of charcoal pig iron, and now makes no other kind; only five States make Bessemer steel; and two States, Penn- sylvania and New Jersey, produce nearly all the crucible steel.

The census year 1880 was one of exceptional prosperity for the iron and steel industries of the country. The production of pig iron and of Bessemer steel ingots and rails since 1880 is shown in the following table (IX.), from the statistics collected by the American Iron and Steel Association :—

1884. | 1885, 4,097,868 4,024,526]5,688,929 1,375,317 1,519,426|2.269,190

996,465 959.470)1,562/409

1886.

1881. 1882,

1883,

ISS fe NREFS| epanonoeneonaueneoo 4,144,253 4,623,323 4,595,510, Bessemer steel ingots../1,374,2 47 1,514,687 1,477,345 Bessemer steel] rails. ...|1,187,769 1,284,066)1,148,709

The total number of completed Bessemer steel works at the close of 1886 was 33, with 69 converters. Pennsylvania in that year made 59 per cent. of the ingots produced, Illinois 21, and other States 20. In the following table (X.) the amount of steel of all kinds produced is given (in tons) for the years stated :—

Bessemer {Open-Hearth| Crucible All other Total. Steel Ingots. | Steel Ingots, | Steel Ingots, Steel. 1870 37,500 ea9 31,250 70,089

1875 335, 283 8,080 35,179 11, 256 389,799

1880 | 1,074,261 | 100,850 64,664 7,558 NU Bye 1885 | 1,519,430 | 138,875 | 57,599 | 1,514 | 1,711,919 1886 | 2,269,190 | 218,973 (lel 2,366 2,562,502

By far the largest production of iron ore in the United States is from the rocks which lie below the Lower Silurian—the Azoic series of Foster and Whitney and the Archean of Dana. In this formation the ore occurs in immense quantity—in what may without exaggeration be called mountain

masses, which in many cases exhibit all the evidences of an eruptive origin, as in the case of the Iron Mountain of Missouri, or in some of the localities in the Marquette and Menomineo regions of Lake Superior. At the first-ineutioned locality the ore is intimately associated with an undoubted eruptive rock, with which it is intermingled in such a manner as to show that the two—ore and rovkk—inust have had one and the samo origin. A similar condition of things is revealed on Lake Superior, where the ore oceurs in repeated interlaminations between sheets of unquestionably eruptive material. The ores thus occurring are hematite or specular ore and magnetite, with some hydrated oxide, or limonite, the result of the action of water on the previously formed hematite. They are in general extraordinarily free from deleterious ingredients, especially phosphorus and sulphur, although usually containing a small amount of silica. The purity of these ores is a strong indication of their origin differing from that of ordinary sedimentary deposits. Many of the analyses of Lake Superior ore show the presence of only a few hundredths of one per cent. of phosphorus. The most important district in which these ores occur is the south shore of Lake Superior, and the most im- portant port of shipment is Marquette, a considerable amount being also shipped from Escanaba on Lake Michigan. From 1856 to 1886 the total shipments of iron ore from the region amounted to 31,030,160 tons. A district known as the Vermilion Lake iron district, in whieh the ore has similar characters, and where the quantity is believed to be very large, has been recently opened in Minnesota, on the north shore of Lake Superior. The Iron Mountain region, a little less than a hundred miles south of Saint Louis, although small, is of considerable importance. A very large portion of the Lake Superior ores goes to the Appalachian coal-field to be smelted ; and this was formerly the case with the Iron Moun- tain ore, but the latter is now used in nearer localities. There is a very important and apparently inexhaustible deposit in Lebanon county, Pennsylvania ; the ore is chiefly magnetite, and its mode of occurrence in close connexion with an eruptive rock is to the present writer strong, if not absolutely convincing, evidence of its igneous origin. There are important deposits of iron ore, on the eastern border of New York, especially in the Adirondacks, and along the Hudson River. The geological position in which a por- tion of these ores occurs is certainly the same as that of the ores of Lake Superior—namely, the Azoic. That is the character of the Adirondack ores, which have long been and still are extensively worked. The loealities

are chiefly in Clinton, Essex, and Franklin counties. Inthe last-named county are the very extensive Chateau- gay mines, The ores of this region are chiefly magnetite, but they often contain too much phosphorus to be used in the manufacture of steel. There are important oceurrences of magnetic ore near New York city and also near the Hudson river, in Orange, Roek- land, Putnam, and Columbia counties. Some of these ores are adapted to the manufacture of Bessemer stecl. The mode of occur- rence of the ores in southern New York and northern New Jersey is peculiar; they are not so distinctly eruptive as are the ores of Missouri and Lake Superior. One authority regards the New Jersey ores as unquestionably of sedimentary origin. This New Jersey

SfrawtTts

district is not in a flourishing condition at present, since the ores as a rule, are not adapted to the manufacture of Bessemer steel. Similar ores oceur at many points, and often in large quantity, in the Azoie or erystalline belt of the Appalachian system, in the States lying farther south than New Jersey. In Mitchell county, North Carolina, is a deposit known as the Cranberry Bank, of which the quality is excellent, and the quantity is believed to be very great. Up to the present time, however, but little of this ore has been shipped. Next to the Azoic ores in importance, but decidedly in- ferior in quality, are those of the Clinton group, a member of the Upper Silurian series. The ore occurring in this geological position is known by various names, the most common ones being fossil or dyestone ore. It isa red hematite, not crystalline like the specular variety of the peroxide, but usually in a more or less granular or concretionary form, that of flattened grains resembling flax seed being a common mode of oceurrence, whence the name “ flax-seed ore.” This deposit occurs at many points along the outcrop of the Clinton group all the way around from Wisconsin, through Canada and New York, into Pennsylvania, and down the eastern slope of the Appalachian range to Georgia, and is said to be the most extensive deposit of iron ore in the world yet discovered. ‘The fossil ore, though large in quantity, contains too much phosphorus to be used for making steel in the ordinary method; but, being in places favourably situated with regard to fuel, and yielding as it doesa satisfactory quality of cast iron, it is quite extensively mined at various points. Next to the Clinton ore in importance

comes the brown hematite ore (limonite), which occurs in numerous localities, but of which the most extensive deposits are those occurring in the Lower Silurian limestones of the Appalachian system, and especially along the line of the Great Valley. Some of the ores are of excellent quality, notably those of Litchfield county, Connecticut, in the so-called Salisbury district. The iron made in charcoal furnaces in this region is considered as being of the highest value for articles in whieh strength and toughness are essential. Carbonate of iron, in the form of spathie iron, is of rare occurrence. The argillaceous carbonates (clay ironstone) are also of comparatively little import- ance, although used to some extent, especially as mixed with other ores, in western Pennsylvania and Ohio. ‘The coal-fields west of the Appalachians are very poorly supplied with iron ores. Black- band ore is also of somewhat rare and limited occurrence in the United States.

In spite of the abundance of iron ore in the United States and the existence of a heavy protective duty (75 cents per ton), a large quantity of ore is imported from abroad—chiefly from Spain, Elba, Algiers, and Cuba (1,039,433 tons valued at $1,912,437 in 1886). Almost all this was used in Pennsylvania, and chiefly in the manufacture of Bessemer pig iron and spiegeleisen. Up to 1884, at least, no pig iron suitable for the manufacture of Bessemer steel by any process now in use in the United States had ever been made south of the Potomae or south of Wheeling. Neither has iron suitable for crucible steel been made in the United States which can compete with that of Sweden.

The annexed table (XI.), published by Mr Swank, shows the pro- duction of iron ore in tons in the leading ore-producing districts for the years 1884, 1885, and 1886 :—

(STATISTICS,

1885, 1886,

3,258,174 304,396 379,776 688, 054 500,501 214,800

Lake Superior (Miehigan and Wisconsin)..... Vermilion Lake (Minnesota).

Missouri

Cornwall (Pennsylvania).

New Jerscy

2,231,064 225,484 169,162 508,964 330,000 143,278

9,455,924 24

Port Henry (New York)

Other Lake Champlain mines (New York)

Hudson River Ore and Iron Company (New Dov) Ea.capesenncos5

Tilly Foster (New York).

Forest of Dean (New York)

Salisbury region (Connecticut)...

Cranberry (North Carolina)

Tennessee Coal, Iron, and Railroad Com- pany’s Inman mines (Tennessee).....

235,799

90,000 35,964 20,370 25,000

3,998

55,000

70,757

Gold and Silver.—The washing of the high or Tertiary gravels Gold and by the hydraulic process and the working of mines in the solid rock silver

did not, on the whole, compensate for the diminished yield of the ordinary placer and river diggings, so that the produce of gold m California continued to fall off, and by 1860 had decreased to about half what it had been ten years before. Discoveries in other Cordilleran Territories, notably in Montana and Idaho, made up, however, in part for the deficiency of California, so that in 1860 the total amount of gold produced in the United States was estimated at not less than $45,000,000. In the latter part of the decade 1850-59 the Territories adjacent to California on the east, north, and south were overrun by thousands of miners from the Sierra Nevada gold-fields, and within a few years an extraordinary num- ber of discoveries were made, some of which proved to be of great

MINERALS. |

UNTPED

importanee.

of that name).

Lord, run from $304,752,171°54 to $306,181, 251°05.

ores contains about an equal amount in valne of silver and gold.

The mines on this lode thus added to the bullion stock of the world $100,000,000 more in eighteen years than the whole Freiberg

district in Saxony had furnished in a little over 700 years (1168-

1875).

in part and of a segregated vein in part. The gangue is quartz,

very irregularly distributed in bodies often of great size, and for

the most part nearly or quite barren of ore. The metalliferous portions of the lode, ‘‘bonanzas,” as they are here generally called, are usually of great size, but extremely irregular in their position. Their number has been about twenty, most of them lying near the surface ; but the last important one

discovered was struck at a little over 1000 feet below the surface. to Mr Church—about 700 feet in length, by 500 deep, and 90 wide ; the average yield $93‘55 per ton ; and the total value of the bullion obtained from it $104,007,653. The mines on this lode have been

worked to a greater depth than any mines in the world extending

over an equal amount of ground. Up to October 1886 work was still being carried on at several points below the depth of 3000 feet. The lower levels, below that of the Sutro tunnel, which intersects the lode at a point about 2000 feet below its outcrop, are now aban- doned. Weseines are still going on, however, above the great adit level, where there yet remain considerable bodies of low grade ore, which can perhaps be extracted with moderate profit, since more economical methods have been introduced both in Inining and milling, The yield of the Comstock lode at present, although small as compared with that of its prosperous years, is still much larger than that of all the mines in the Freiberg district of Saxony.

The success of the Comstock lode workings led to the active exploration of the whole adjacent region, with the result that a great number of localities were discovered where auriferous and argentiferous ores occur, and some of these have been extensively wrought and have produced largely. In very few, however, do the ore deposits bear the distinguishing characters of true or fissure veins. Special mention may be made of the Meadow Valley and Raymond and Ely mines in Lincoln county. The first-named mine is in Pioche, 273 miles south of Palisadé station on the Central Pacific Railroad ; the enclosing rock is quartzite of Lower Silurian age, the veins varying in width, but averaging from 2 to 2% feet, the ore being carbonate of lead near the surface with chloride of silver, passing into sulphurets, as usual, in going down. At the end of 1873 this mine was 1100 feet deep, and a large body of ore had been struck yielding $300 in value of silver per ton. The cul-

minating years of the prosperity of these mines were 1872 and 1878, |

and the yield of the Ely district for those years respectively was $5,321,007 and $3,735,596. The Eureka district in the central part of Nevada is of importance on aceount of the magnitude of its yield, and because mining

and smelting operations have been carried on uninterruptedly since 1869, thus affording great facilities for scientific investigations. Its ores are chiefly galena, accom- panied by the various oxidized combinations resulting from its de- eomposition. Similar orcs of zinc are also present, but in mueh smaller quantity. These ores are rich in gold and silver (average—15 per cent. lead, 0°079 silver, and 0:00248 gold). The rocks in which they occur are chiefly limestones, and of Lower Silurian age; the deposits are very irregular in form. Tn many of their features they closely resemble the so-called pipe-veins of the North of Eng- land lead mines. Much of the ore has beeome deeomposed, and has been subjected, since decomposition, to a rearrangement by water, analogous to stratification. The total yield of the Eureka district from 1869 to 1883 is stated at about $60,000,000 in value of gold and silver, and about 225,000 tons of lead. According to

j present indications, this district is approaching exliaustion.

The most powerful impulse to mining operations, and the immediate cause of a somewhat lengthy period of wild excite- ment and speculation was the discovery and successful opening of the Comstock lode in 1859, in the western part of what is now the State of Nevada, but was then part of the Territory of Utah, and known as the ‘‘ Washoe Country ” (from a small tribe of Indians The locality of the lode, where there soon grew up a large town called Virginia City, is about 20 miles cast of the boundary of California, and nearly due east of the northern end of Lake Tahoe. As early as August 1860 two mills were at work stamp- ing and amalgamating the ore from the lode ; mining had begun on a large scale; and many ingenious metallurgists were en- deavouring to ascertain experimentally how the somewhat com- plex metalliferous combinations there occurring could be best and most economically treated. So far as quantity of bullion produeed is concerned, these operations were eminently successful. The various estimates of the total yield of the lode from the time of its discovery to 30th June 1880, collected and published by Mr Eliot The total production to the end of 1886 may be estimated as having been not far from $320,000,000. The bullion obtained from the nilling of the

The lode is an ore channel of great dimensions, included within volcanic rocks of Tertiary age, which themselves have broken through pre-existing

strata of Triassie age. It exhibits some of the features of a fissure vein, combined with those of a contact deposit

Its dimensions were—according

oT £8 815

Utah has important mines resembling to a considerable extent those at Eureka. he Hornsilver mine at Frisco, in southern Utah, is a large contact deposit, 30 to 50 feet wide, between dolomitic limestone and an eruptive rock called rhyolite or trachyte. The ores are sulphate of lead with some carbonate, associated with heavy spar, which occurs chiefly near the wall of eruptive rock. This mine has paid $4,000,000 in dividends, but none since 1884, The Little Cottonwood district, at a height of over 10,000 feet in the Wahsatch range, shows a record of about 3500 *‘locations” made within an area 24 miles square. It includes the famous Emina mine, where a large body of ore oecurred occupying an egg- shaped cavity in the Carboniferous limestone, which yielded largely (over $2, 500,000) ; but it was soon worked out. ~The Flagstaff mine in the same cajion, a “ pipe-vein” or deposit occupying several regular cave-like openings in the limestone, seems also to have been nearly or quite worked out. One of the largest and most pro- ductive mines in the country, and the most important one in Utah, is the Ontario, in the Uintah district, Summit county. The vein seems to be, in the lower levels at least, a contact mass between walls of quartzite and highly deeomposed eruptive rock (called porphyry), and it varies in width from a few inches to 15 feet. It was discovered in 1872, has been worked by a company with $15,000,000 capital since 1877, and up to February 1887 had paid $8,075,000 in dividends. The Silver Reef district in Washington county is a region of remarkable interest, where sandstones of Triassic age have been broken through and invaded by eruptive masses (andesites and trachytes), and where the ore, according to Prof. Reyer, occurs in flat masses and impregnations between the strata, adjacent to the cruptive rock, and is especially largely developed in contact with the remains of plants with which the rock is filled. The ores are carbonate of copper with chloride of silver, passing into the sulphuret at depths. According to the same authority, these mines produced a few years ago over a million of dollars a year; but they have much fallen off of late. The census report of 1880 gives

the total product of the district up to Ist June 1880 at a little over $8,250,000,

The metalliferous deposits of Colorado are important from their magnitude and variety.! Of the actual precious metal production, by far the largest portion is derived from pyrites and galena and their decomposition products. The telluride ores of Boulder county and the auriferous pyrites of Gilpin county, with a few individual deposits in the southern portion of the State, constitute the source from which it is derived, With these exceptions its mineral deposits may be considered as essentially silver-bearing. The principal souree of silver is argentiferous galena and its decom- position products, while argentiferous grey copper or freibergite is, next to this, the most important silver-bearing mineral. The sulphides of silver also occur, and in some cases bismuth is found in sufficient quantity to constitute an ore. As yet, so far as known, no copper is extracted except as an adjunct in the reduction of silver-bearing copper ores. Placer deposits are generally confined to the valley bottoms among high mountain ridges ; their present yield is relatively inconsiderable. Before the silver ores of Lead- ville were discovered, mining in Colorado was principally confined

, to approximately vertical veins in the Archean rocks of the

Front range or in the eruptive rocks of the San Juan region ; but since the limestone deposits of the Mosquito range have proved so exceptionally rich attention has been more and more turned to the ores in sedimentary rocks, and many new districts have been discovered, but none to rival that of Leadville. The Leadville ores are flat sheets, of the kind often designated in the Cordilleran mining regions as ‘‘blanket deposits,” and appear to be contact deposits between the Carboniferous limestone and the overlying felsite, with additional or incidental ore accumulations in the lime. stone in irregular cavities. According to reports locally published the product of the Leadville ‘‘smelters” or smelting works in 1886 was—lead, 51,925,546 th; silver, 4,569,013 oz.; gold, 22,504 oz.; total value, $7,515,148. From the mode of occurrence of the Leadville deposits it seems probable that they will within a few years become practically exhausted. The area over which the blue limestone of Emmons (dolomite of Rolker) has been found in places productive is, however, very large, having been estimated at

225,000,000 square feet. The Montana deposits, which up to 1880 are reported to have yielded fully $50,000,000, seem now to have been pretty much worked out. The workings from which the ores are now chicfly obtained appear to be of the class of segregated veins, The ores consist largely of auriferous pyrites in a gangue of quartz, oxidized in their upper portions and there easily manipulated, but in depth passing into the more refractory sul- phurets. Unlike the ores described as occurring in Colorado and Utah, they are accompanied by copper rather than by lead, and they are also rather manganiferous than ferriferous. Much yet remains to be done before their nature and value can be fully understood ; and the same may be said of the adjacent Territory of Idaho, tle auriferous gravels of which resemble those of Montana, and have been next to those of California and Montana in inport- 1 See Census Report for 1880 (1885).

Mercury.

Tin.

Copper.

ance (total yield to date estimated at $30,000,000). The deep gravels of Boisé basin seem to be exceptional, and to resemble the deep or high gravels of California. A very large portion of the mines (other than placer) of Idaho appear to be of the fissure class, and to be enclosed in a country rock of granite, resembling in many respects the veins of the vicinity of Austin in Nevada. In Arizona, which ranks along with Idaho in the production of the precious metals, and is next to Michigan and Montana as a producer of copper, the mode of occurrence of the metalliferous deposits is com- plicated and varied, and is still very imperfectly known. They appear to be largely of the nature of contact deposits, dependent on the presence of some ancient or modern eruptive mass. The famous Tombstone district, in Pima county, has been a productive one, but seems at present to be declining.

TaBLE XII.—Gold and Silver Production of the Different States and Territories for 1885 (in Thousands of Dollars).

Gold. | Silver. | Total. Gold. | Silver.| Total. Alaska srsces+> 300 2 302 || North Carolina 152 3 155 AMI7OM A eercce sss. 880 | 3,800] 4,680 }) Oregon…..... 800 10 810 California…... 12,700 | 3,500 | 15,200 |) South Carolina 43 noe 43 Colorado…....| 4,200 | 15,800 | 20,000 || Utah…..... 180} 6,750] 6,930 Dakota…...00 3,200 100] 8,300 || Washington … 120 70 190 Georgia…..... 136 500 136 || Other States GEV semesneneon0 1,800 | 3,500| 5,300 || and Territories 90 5 95 Montana,,..... 3,300 | 10,060 | 13,860 _——— ee Nevada…....| 8,100 | 6,000} 9,100 Total…....] 31,801 | 51,600 | 83,401 New Mexico…| 800] 3,000} 3,800

The production of gold in the United States for each of the seven years 1880-86 inclusive is estimated (in nuillions of dollars) as— 36, 34.7, 32.5, 30, 30.8, 31.8, 35. Similarly the coining value of the silver produced during the same years is returned as—329.2, 43, 46.8, 46.2, 48.8, 51.6, 51. The commercial value of silver has, however, of late been considerably less than the coining value— 42, 42.5, and 39.4 in 1884-85-86.

All the quicksilver produced in the United States comes from California, although small quantities of the ores of this metal have been obtained at various points in Colorado, and also in New Mexico. A little mercury has also been produced in Oregon. The Californian mines are all in the Coast ranges, in rocks of Cretaceous age. Small veins of quartz containing a little cinnabar have been found in the Sierra Nevada; but this ore is not known to exist anywhere in that range in workable quantity. The mer- curial ores of the Coast ranges occur in very irregular deposits, in the form of strings and bunches, disseminated through a highly metamorphosed silicious rock. The first locality where this metal was successfully mined was New Almaden, about 100 miles south of San Francisco. Another locality—New Idria—about 100 miles still farther south, has also been productive, but in a less degree. Mercury ores have also been mined at several points north of San Francisco, in the neighbourhood of Clear Lake, where they occur, not only in metamorphic Cretaceous strata resembling those of New Almaden, but also in recent volcanic rocks, where gold has sometimes been found in intimate association with the cinna- bar. The New Almaden mine has been productive since 1850, but the yield has varied greatly from year to year, partly on account of the irregularity of the mode of occurrence, and partly on account of interference on the part of the United States based on a

question of title to the property. The most productive year was 1876, when the number of flasks (of 764 Tb) obtained was 47,194. The number produced in 1880 was 23,465, and in 1886 18,000. The total pro- duce of the Californian mines was 59,926 flasks in 1880, 60,851 in 1881, 52,732 in 1882, 46,725 in 1883, 31,913 in 1884, 32,073 in 1885, and 29,981 in 1886. No new discoveries of localities of im- portance have been made during the past few years, and the mines now worked in California are all in a depressed condition.

Tin has been discovered in numerous localities, and various attempts have been made to open mines—in Maine, New Hamp- shire, Virginia, Alabama —but hitherto the amount of the metal produced has been quite insignificant. The region from which most has been expected is the Black Hills of Dakota, about 20 miles south-west of Rapid City. The occurrence of the tin ore and the associated minerals at the mine to which the name of Etta has been given is very similar to that of the ores in the Erzgebirge. The cassiterite is disseminated through a granitic or granitoid rock in irregular bunches, strings, and even masses, associated with the usual minerals. There has not hitherto been any production of commercial importance from this source.

The present sources of copper are almost exclusively the Lake Superior region, and the Territories of Montana and Arizona. The mines of Lake Superior are the only important mines in the world in which the metal is exclusively obtained in the native state. The mode of occurrence of the copper varies, however, considerably in different portions of the mining district, which extends from Point Keweenaw along the southern shore of the lake to a little beyond the Ontonagon river. The most productive mines at pre- sent are those in the vicinity of Portage Lake, about half-way

between the eastern and western extremities of the cupriferous range. The rock in which the metal occurs is an old basalt, much metamorphosed from its original condition, and in the form uiow generally called melaphyre. This belt, commonly known in the region as the ‘‘ trap range,” is a volcanic material, interbedded in numerous alternating layers with sandstone and conglomerate, equivalent geologically to the Potsdam sandstone of the New

York Survey or the Primordial of Barrande. The metal occurs along nearly the whole extent of Keweenaw Point in veins crossing the formation, and having all the characters of true fissure veins, the gangue being a mixture of quartz and calcite with various zeolitic minerals. Copper in large masses has been found in various mines on Lake Superior, but in none of such great dimensions as at the Minnesota mine, near the Ontonagon river. The largest masg discovered here weighed about 500 tons. Its length was 46 feet, its breadth 184, and its maximum thickness 8§. While a consider- able amount of copper has been obtained on Lake Superior in large masses, and lumps too small to be shipped separately, and therefore put in barrels and called ‘‘ barrel-work,” much the larger portion occurs in small grains, scales, and strings, disseminated through the rock. For crushing rock of this character a new form of stamp known as the Ball stamp was invented, one head of which is cap- able of crushing from 220 to 250 tons of rock in twenty-four hours, The most interesting mine on Lake Superior, and indeed the largest and most important—not being an open-work—in the world, is that of the Calumet and Heela Company. The mode of occurrence of the copper, which is all in the metallic form, and like that of the other Lake Superior mines almost chemically pure, is peculiar, The cupriferous mass is a bed of eruptive material, interstratified with other masses of similar origin, but itself a conglomerate made up chiefly of more or less rounded pebbles of eruptive rock—rhyo- lite, trachyte, and basalt—cemented together by native copper. The Calumet and Hecla mines, which form one connected work, have been opened over a length of about 1# miles, and to a depth, on the inclination of the metalliferous bed, which is about 39°, of about 3300 feet. The number of men employed is about 2800, and the production for 1886 was 22,552 tons (the total amount since 1866 being 201,529 tons).

The copper mines of Montana are chiefly in the vicinity of Butte City. The really important operations seem to be pretty closely limited to an area only 23 miles long by 1 mile wide, within which are three important silver mines, as well as the copper mines which make the district so famous. There are two great classes of mineral occurrences, —cupriferous veins, carrying more or less silver, and silver veins, with a manganese gangue, which carry little or no copper. These two groups have certain features in common. They all occur in granite, and are all accompanied by zones of decomposed country rock, which run parallel to and usually form the walls

of all the large copper veins that have been opened to any great depths, and which are called porphyry dikes by the miners, but are really granite altered by the chemical changes which have accompanied the formation of the lode. They all pitch vertically or nearly so, and lack entirely the well-defined walls and the selvages which are characteristic of fissure veins. The cupriferous veins appear on the surface as wide bands of quartzose rock, much de- composed and stained with gossan. The surface ore always carries silver, is almost entirely in a free-milling condition, and generally in paying quantity. Nearly all the lodes at present worked for copper were at first worked for silver, and this condition continued until the water-line was reached, when the base ores—mainly the ordinary sulphuretted combinations of copper and of copper and iron, especially copper glance or vitreous copper and erubescite or variegated, peacock, and horseflesh ore—set in. The veins are of great size, being often thirty feet wide for several hundred feet in length. The average width of pay ore in the copper veins 1s stated to be not less than 7 feet ; the Anaconda—the widest of any yet opened—averages over 12 feet of profitable ore, and in many places widens to 30 or 40 feet for a great distance, showing no diminution in richness at the depth of 800 feet. In a part of these veins—as, for instance, the Anaconda and Liquidation—the ore 1s copper glance ina gangue of quartz and decomposed feldspathic rock ; while another type of veins, represented most perfectly by the Parrot vein, has nearly its entire metallic contents in the form of erubescite. This last-mentioned vein is also of great importance for its silver. The veins of the manganese-silver group lie al within a small area, but are of much interest and value. The gangue is quartz, heavily charged with its various oxidized com- binations of manganese, all more or less argentiferous, the ame of silver ranging from three or four to several hundred ounces 0 that metal per ton. In these manganese veins the transition from decomposed oxidized combinations to the hard silicate and carbonate of that metal at the water-line is as sudden and striking a8 ttt from oxidized to sulphurettcd ores in the previously-mentione class of veins. An exceptional occurrence in this district 1s that 0 the Gagnon mine, of which the gangue is chiefly quartz, and the ore argentiferous zinc blende. ; f

There has of late years been a falling off in the production ©

[STATISTICS,

copper in Arizona, but this appears to be due to unfavourable situation with reference to a market rather than to exhaustion. The Santa Rita mines, in New Mexico, near the Arizona line, were the first worked in that region, but are at present idle. The original workings were for metallic copper, occurring near the contact of a bed of limestone with an eruptive rock resembling felsite, the whole deposit being one of irregular character. Near the junction of the felsite and the limestone there is a series of parallel veins, in which the copper occurs in the form of carbonates and oxides. The Clifton district has been the scene of continuous mining opera- tions sinee 1872, and is at present the largest producer of copper in the south-west. Its cupriferous deposits have been divided into three classes,—those occurring in limestone, those associated with porphyry, and those in the granite. The ores of the first class are the red oxide in a gangue of compact hematite and the carbon- ates ina gangue of brown manganese ore. ‘The ores of the second and third class are oxides and oxysulphides, changing into copper glance at a trifling depth, and into yellow sulphurets in the deepest workings. The deposits are irregular, in some respects resembling contact deposits, and in others the metalliferous occurrenees in the North of England lead mines. They are called by many mining geologists “‘pockets”; but other authorities consider them true veins. The most productive mine of the district—the Longfellow —is described as being an almost vertical fissure in stratified lime- stone, at or near its junction with a dike of felsite.

MINERALS. |

TasiE XIII.—Copper Production of United States (in Tons) from 1882 to 1886.

1882, 1883, 1884, 1885, 1886,

Lake Superior……..... 25,438 | 26,653 | 30,961 | 32,209 | 35,593 Montana……..c0006..- 4,043 | 10,658 | 19,238 | 30,267 | 25.719 JASOVA010 pa 8,029 | 11,010 | 11,935 | 10,187 |} 6,989 Other localities……...] 2,957 | 8,258] 2,574] 1,488] 1,340 Total domestie copper | 40,467 | 51,574 | 64,708 | 74,051 | 69,641 From imported ores.. 446 7261

1,276] 2,271] 2,000 Total…..... | 40,918 | 52,300 | 65,984 | 76,322 | 71,641

Zinc has become within the past few years an important article of production. The ores are found in very numerous localities, usually in connexion with those of lead, both in the Appalachian range and throughout the comparatively undisturbed Paleozoie regions of the Mississippi valley. The Illinois zinc furnaces are at Peru, La Salle, and Collinsville ; those of Missouri mostly at Caron- delet near St Louis, but there is one at Rich Hill and one at Joplin. Those of Kansas are at Pittsburg, with the exception of one at Weir City. There is also a small establishment at White River in Arkansas. There are also zinc works at Bergen Point, N.J., and

at Bethlchem, Pa., and one small establishment in Tennessee. TaBLE XIV. —Total Zinc Production (in Tons) from 1881 to 1885.

1881. 1882. 1883, 1884.

a

00 eee

SATIS! s sc1 esc scsawoiewees 4,464! 6,576! 8,500} 7,017

IMSSSOUTI 5 ..0..0.00200 ..| 2,455] 2,282] 5,116] 4,670

Other States …..... 5,087 | 4,770] 7,018 re 30,145 | 38,423 | $4,413 | 36,327

The lead production was for many years, as already mentioned, limited to two districts near the Mississippi,j—one, the so-called ‘‘Upper Mines,” covering an area of 3000 to 4000 square miles included within the States of Wisconsin, Iowa, and Illinois; the other, the ‘‘ Lower Mines,” in south-eastern Missouri. The yield of the Upper Mines reached its culminating point about 1845; and in 1852 it had fallen off to about 15,000 tons. That of the Missouri

|) mines also fell off, so far as the south-eastern district was eoncerned,

but the loss was more than compensated by discoveries of ore in

) south-western Missouri, and later in the adjacent State of Kansas,) The production ofall these districts (the lead of which contains but a | trace of silver) for the years 1880-1884 is given by Mr E. A. Caswell | as follows : —24,700 tons in 1880, 27,470 in 1881, 25,900 in 1882,

19,300 in 1888, and 17,567 in 1884. A considerable portion of the

| recently renewed activity in the Missouri imines is duc to the in-

| creased utilization of the zinc ores associated with the galena. The numerous lead mines opened and worked in various States in the | Appalachian region, from Maine to North Carolina, have nearly | all proved unsuccessful. Yet, on the whole, the country has largely increased its product—a result due, chiefly, to the dis- j covery and successful working of various lead ores containing silver in sufficient quantity to pay for separation, in several of the Cordilleran States and Territories. The total yield was 87,340 tons

| in 1880, 104,540 in 1881, 118,650 in 1882, 128,515 in 1883, 124,908

sa) es 817

ie 115,546 in 1885, distributed in 1883-84 as follows (Table

1883. | 1884. 1883, | 1884,

PO Fee 2,100] 5,350

Wisse svassaent seers sy 1,350} 2,400 Colorado….....40+.4| 68,000 | 56,400 | California…..... 1500 1,420 Montana….....000006 4,500 6,250 || Mississippi Valley… 19,300 17,567 Tdah0….sseceecersereees| 5,350] 6,700 Wihpiniiinecscrss. sce 190 220

To the non-metallic mineral substauces mined or quarried in the United States, apart from coal and petroleum, which have been already considered, only very brief reference can here be made, The value of the lime and building-stone used in the country in 1885 was, for each of these articles, at

least as great as that of the petroleum. Coal alone constitutes nearly seven-tenths of the valuc of the non-metallic minerals mined, and coal, petroleum, building- stone, and lime together make up almost nineteen-twentieths of the same total. Other important articles are—salt (value $4,825,345 in 1885), cement ($3,492,500), phosphate-roek ($2,846,064), and limestone for flux in iron manufacture ($1,694,656).

The utilization of the brine springs of New York and Virginia Salt. was begun towards the end of the last century, and has become ex- tensively developed. To this development has been addcd that of similar saline resources in Ohio and Michigan. Previous to this, however, some salt had been made by the evaporation of sea-water at points along the coast, and especially in the neighbourhood of Massachusetts Bay ; and the ceusus of 1880 showed still six estab- lishments of this kind in existence, producing nearly 10,000 bushels of salt per annum. In California the evaporation of sea-water has attained some importance (884,443 bushels in 1880), the climatic conditions being much more favourable than along the northern Atlantic. A very small amount of salt was also made on the Florida coast. There are various lakes and partially or wholly dried-up beds of former lakes in the Cordilleran region, which are capable of furnishing a large quantity of salt, and some of these have bcen worked toa limited extent foruse in metallurgy. By far the larger portion of the salt manufactured in the United States comes from the evaporation of brine, obtained by boring. The produce of the four brine-producing States (in bushels of 56 Ib) is given as follows in the census report for 1880 :—Michigan, 12,425,885 ; New York, 8,748,203 ; West Virginia, 8,105,833; Ohio, 2,650,301; total, 26,929,722; total production of all the States, 29,800,298. The New York salt region is in the centre of the State, near Syracuse. The brine is obtained in a detrital deposit, varying in size from the coarsest gravel to the finest sand, which fills depressions in the Onondaga or Salina shales, to the depth in places of 300 or 400 feet. These shales are of Upper Silurian age. No rock-salt has been struck by boring ; but farther west, at various points in New York, Canada, and Michigan, the presenee of large bodies of salt has been proved by the aid of the diamond drill. As yet, howevcr, this source of supply has only been utilized to a limited extent. The salt of Michigan comes from several distinct geological horizons. The uppermost one is in the Coal-measures, the next lower in the Lower Carboniferous, and the

lowest in the Onondaga or Salina salt group, the salt-bearing formation of New York. ‘It is only in the last-named formation that rock-salt has been found in Michigan, namely, at Bay City, on Saginaw Bay, where, at a depth of 2085 feet, a bed of salt 115 feet in thiekness was bored through. In the Saginaw valley salt can be produced more cheaply than any- where else in the country; the business of salt-making is asso- eiated with that of sawing lumber, and the refuse of the saw-mills feeds the fires under the salt-pans.

The following table (XVI.) shows the value of the metallic pro- ducts of the United States for the years 1882, 1883, 1884, and 1885, as reported by the chief of the Division of Mining Statistics of the United States Geological Survey :—

Renton Se iyecrc $106, 336,429 | $91,910,200 $73,761,624 $64,712,400 AD er 46,800,000 46,200,000 48,800,000 51,600,000 Gold 32,500,000 | 30,000,000} 80,800,000} — 31,801,000 (GCiopo TO ein aconaanneo 16,038,091 18,064,807 18,106,162 18,292,999 MSCS asi over ates ator nce ars 12,624,550 12,322,719 10,537,042 10,469,431 ZAIN. rRO HIG Go oree 3,646, 620 3,311,106 3,422,707 3,539,856 NIGUONAA sa dpoonnad 1,487,042 1,253,632 936,327 979,189 INTOWO] . escicis aene oe 309,777 52,920 48,412 191,753 PANIOMMOMY). 6.0 en eas 12,000 AG ae ac JEPhoNthel AnaaeenoEs 600 600 450 187 Aluminium …..... a0 875 1,350 2,550 $219,755,109 | $203,116,859 | $186,414,074 | $181,589,365

The value of the iron is the spot value; that of the gold and silver the coining value; that of the copper, lead, and zinc the value at New York; and that of the mercury the value at San Francisco.

The total values of the mineral produets of the United States for the same years are returned on the same authority as amount: ing respectively to $235,461,580, $249,049,889, $226,800,674, and $246, 931,991. (J. D. W.) Sal, == 103

818 UNITAD

PART III.—POLITICAL GEOGRAPHY AND STATISTICS. Copyright, 1888, by Francis A. Walker.

POPULATION,

STATES

[sratistics,

only proportionally to the increase within, the figures for 1869 would have found Watson’s estimate wrong by several millions,

Growth The population of the English colonies in North America was at The ten years from 1860 to 1870 witnessed the introduction a of the no time definitely ascertained. In his History of the Constitution, | new force operating to bring down the rate of national increase, popula- Mr G,. T. Curtis presents a table showing the estimated numbers namely, the war of secession. The superintendent of the ninth tion, in the several States as that used by the “ Federal Convention” of census, 1870, presented a computation of the effects of this cause, — 1787. By this the aggregate population is put at 2,781,000. By first, through direct losses, by wounds or disease, either in actual the first census of the United States, however, taken in 1790, the service of the army or navy, or in a brief term following discharge; population was ascertained to be then 3,929,214. The second census, secondly, through the retardation of the rate of increase in the in 1800, showed a population of 5,308,483 ; and the third, that | gojoured element, due to the privations, exposures, and excesses oe 1810, showed another prodigious advance, the register reading | attendant upon emancipation; thirdly, through the check given to weer 7,239,881, An important prediction in the history of population immigration by the existence of war, the fear of conscription, and predic- ig that of Elkanah Watson, of New York, who in 1815 under- | tne apprehension abroad of results prejudicial to the national tions, took to project the population of the United States from 1820 to welfare. The aggregate effect of all these causes was estimated 1900. The following are his figures for the period 1820 to 1850 | ag a Joss to the population of 1870 of 1,765,000. Finally, the tem- (Table I.), in comparison with the actual results of the successive porary reduction of the birth-rate, consequent upon the withdrawal enumerations : — of perhaps one-fourth of the natural militia (males of 18 to 44 years) = ee tole eo during two-fifths of the decade, may. be estimated at perhaps three. =” oe 2 Se : quarters of a million. From these computations it woul appear

NVIGHHOMI:...ccccsssveee 9,625,734 12,833, 645 17,116,526 23,185,368 that, had the war of 1861-65 not broken out, the population of 1870 The census ……..... 9,633,822 12,866,020 17,069,453 23,191,876 would still, in spite of accessions from abroad and of the quickened WaueGitwetior….. — 8,088 | 32,375 47,073 ~6,508 fecundity of the newly arrived elements, have shown a large de- ficiency from the numbers estimated by Watson. No similar series of statistical predictions ever attained such a The tenth census put it beyond doubt that economic and soeial degree of verification, or commanded equal interest or admiration. | forces had been at work, reducing the rate of multiplication, The But qnite as remarkable as the fulfilments of the earlier estimates | a8certained population of 1880 was 50,155,783, against the estimated have been the failures in the later ones, as shown by the corre- | 56,450,241. Yet no war had intervened; the industries of the iA fi 0 to 1900 (Table 11.):— land had flourished ; the advance in accumulated wealth had been sponding figures for 1860 to 1900 (a) ei pean ; beyond all precedent ; immigration had increased to 2,944,695 for 1860, 1870, 1880, 1890. 1900, the decade. It is hazardous to speak of the future ; but the most s LO SI t…....| 81.758.804 | 49,908.499 | 5G ano 941 | 77 Deaonalinnaesaar| | reasonable computation which can at present be made qaaammme Ae a aaah Oo Bede 50185783 TAREE) OUR | omulation 310,503 |-3,770,061 |+6,294,458 The achievement of independence found the people of the United Geo- ; States owning the entire country between the Gulf and the Great graphical Condi- Watson’s estimates came so true during the earlier decades be- Lakes, excepting only Florida, as far to the west as the Mississippi; process tions of cause of the remarkable steadiness of the conditions then controlling | but the actual settlements were, with a few minor exceptions, con- of

increase. population. In 1790 there were about 600,000 white families in the United States. Speaking broadly, there were few very rich, and, except from the effects of intemperance or the premature death

fined to a narrow strip of territory along the Atlantic shore. The national depth of settlement, from the coast inland, varied greatly, ranging growth,

from what would be involved in the mere occupation of the shore See Plate Food was abundant.

of the breadwinner, there were few very poor. Both social traditions dnd the religious beliefs of the people en- couraged fecundity. The conntry enjoyed domestic tranquillity. All this while, too, the land was but partially settled. Mechanical labour was scarce, and even upon the farm it was difficult to com- mand hired service, almost the only farm labourers down to 1850, in the north, being young men who went out to work for a few years to get a little ready money to marry upon. The conditions recited are such as would allow population to expand withont re- striction. ‘Fhe change that was inevitable came between 1840 and 1850. That the veduction in the birth-rate coincided with a canse which was regarded as certain to qnicken the increase of population, namely, the introduction of a vast body of fresh peasant blood from Europe, affords another instance in proof that, even in this matter of population, moral are far more potent than physical causes.

The accessions between 1840 and 1850 from Ireland and Germany were enormous, the total immigration rising to 1,713,251 against 599,125 during the decade preceding, and against only 143,439 from 1820 to 1830. And these people came in condition to breed with unpreccdented rapidity, under the stimulus of an abundance, in regard to food, shelter, and clothing, such as the most fortunate of then had never known. Yet, in spite of these accessions, the population of the country realized a slightly smaller proportion of gain than when the foreign arrivals were almost insignificant.

The change which produced this falling off from the traditional rate of increase, namely, about 8 per cent. per annum, was that from the simplicity of the early times to comparative luxury, involving arise in the standard of living, the multiplication of artificial neces- sities, the extension of a paid domestic service, the introduction of women into factory labour. Fora time the retardation of the normal rate of increase among the native population was concealed from view by the extraordinary immigration. During the decade 1850 to 1860 the foreign arrivals rose to the enormous total of 2,579, 580, till it came about that almost one-seventh of the popula- tion of the country consisted of persons born abroad. And among this class no influence was yet exerted in restriction of population. Yet in spite of the arrival of 4,292,831 foreigners between 1840 and 1860, of whom 38,500,000 survived at the latter date, having had three (perhaps four) million children born to them on the soil, the census returns of 1860 showed

a falling off from Watson’s predic- tion of 310,508. At the time that prediction was made (1815) the arrivals at ports of the United States had averaged about 5000 perannum. Had the reinforcement from the outside been enhanced

for fishing purposes to a body of agricultural occupation extending VII. back to the base of the great Atlantic chain.

If we trace the western boundary of the body of continuous settlemeut at that time, we find, beginning at the north-east, sparse settlements extending along the entire seaboard to the New Hampshire line. The southern two-thirds of New Hampshire and nearly all Vermont were thinly covered by population. Reaching New York, the line of population treated off from the Hudson, north of the Mohawk, the westward tide flowing through a broad gap between the Adirondacks and the Catskills, which constitutes the northernmost of four main paths along which migration has historically taken place. Spreading over central New York, population had already covered the valley of the Mohawk and the region of the interior lakes. In Pennsylvania population had spread north-westward, occupying uot only the Atlantic plain but also, with sparse scttlements, the region traversed by the numerous parallel ridges of the eastern portion of the Appalachians. We omit, for the moment, consideration of the settlements around the junction of the Allegheny and the Monongahela rivers, represent: ing an overflow through the second of the four great channels of population,—that, namely, which crosses southern Pennsylvania, western Maryland, and northern Virginia, parallel to and along the course of the upper Potomac. Omitting then this, which we may term the Pittsburgh group, we find, in Virginia, that sparse settle- ments had in 1790 extended westward beyond the Blue Ridge, and into what is now West Virginia, on the western slope of the Alle-ghany Mountains, while another narrow tougue of population had penetrated south-westwards, down to the head of the Tennessee tiver, in the great Appalachian valley, having found out the third of the four main channels alluded to. In New Carolina settlement was still limited by the base of the Appalachians. Georgia was as yet, owing to the presence of Indian tribes, only occupied to the depth of about two counties along the Savannah river. The re- servations of the Red Men still prevented population from moving westward along the fourth of the great natural

paths alluded to,— namely, that around the southern end of the Appalachian chain.

In the preceding rapid survey of the new nation four groups have been omittcd,—the first, the Pittsburgh group, in south western Pennsylvania ; the second, the smallest, in West Me upon the Ohio and Kanawha rivers; the third, and by far ns largest, in northern Kentucky, upon the Ohio river, cae about 11,000 square miles; and the fourth upon the Cumberland river, in Tennessee. ‘The existence of these outlying groups ©

_ Detroit, and a small area in the

j the south. In Georgia the settlements have spread westward, across } the entire breadth of the

POPULATION. | UNGItED population in 1790 bore witness courage of the American pioneer,

what was then an almost unbroken wilderness,

Green Bay. The entire settled area at the first to have been 239,935 square miles, which, with an aggregate popu- lation of 3,929,214, would yield an average density of 16°4 persons to the square mile. The centre of population, as that phrase is commonly understood, rested east of Baltimore.

The census of 1800 showed a total settled arca computed at 305,708 square miles, including all outlying tracts. As the popu- lation had risen to 5,308,483, the average density of settlment had become 17°4. The centre of population had moved 41 miles west, along the 39th parallel of latitude.

The map of 1810 shows a vast change, owing to the acquisition of Louisiana from France ; the settled area was 407,945 square miles, which, with an ascertained population of 7,239,881, gave an average of 17°7 persons to the square mile. It is remarkable that the Ameri- can people, in nearly doubling their numbers between 1790 and 1810, only increased the average density of settlement from 16°4 to 17:7. At the latter date we find the hills of western New York now almost entirely covered with population,

which has spread along the southern shore of Lake Erie, well over into Ohio, effecting a

junction with the previously existing body of settlement about the forks of the Ohio. The occupation of that river has become com- plete from its source to its mouth, with the exception of small | gaps below the entrance of the Tennessee. The early Kentucky settlements have expanded in every direction, until almost the

extended southwards to the Tennessee, in what is now northern Alabama. In Georgia settlement is still held back by the presence of the Creek and Cherokee Indians, although a treaty with the _ former tribe in 1802 has opened up portions of the State, which have been eagerly occupied. In Ohio the movements of popula- tion northward from the river of that name and westward from Pennsylvania have carried forward the line of settlement, until it comprises two-thirds of the State. Michigan and Indiana, still Terri- tories, remain virgin soil, with the exception of a little strip around south- western part of Indiana, St | Louis has been transferred, by the purchase of Louisiana, from a

foreign jurisdiction to that of the United States, and has become an important centre of population, settlements having spread from it northward to above the mouth of the Missouri, and southward, along the Mississippi, to the mouth of the Ohio. ’ At the mouth of the Arkansas is found a similar body of population, Looking | still farther south, settlements are observed in the newly organized | Territory of Orleans, extending across the Mississippi to its left bank, and reaching up to the site of Vicksburg.

In 1820, at the fourth census, the population had become 9,633,822; the area of settlement had mache 588,717 square miles, yielding | an average density of 18°9. The effect of the westward movement

during the decade had been to move the centre of population 50 miles, still on the 39th parallel. } In 1830 the area of settlement was 632,717 square miles, yielding, | with an aggregate population of 12,866,020, an average density of

20°3. The centre of population had passed westward only 30 miles, the energies of the people having been given largely to filling up the already included arcas. The most noticeable changes are in

State, where they have struck against the barrier of the diminished Creek reservation. Stopped at this point, they have moved downwards into the south-west corner of the State, jand over the boundary line into Florida, recently acquired from Spain. No general advanee is to be noted in Mississippi, owing jto the continued presence of the Choctaw and Chickasaw nations. |The Alabama group has widened and deepened, until perhaps two- |thirds of the State is covered. In Mississippi the chief growth has been through a broad belt, up the river of the same name, reaching jto the present site of Kansas City. Population has progressed north- jward in Hlinois, until more than half the State is covered ; while jIndiana and Ohio have greatly reduced their vacant areas. | The settled area of 1840 was 807,292 square miles; the popu- Jiation was 17,069,458, the average density 21‘1. The centre of population had moved 55 miles, almost exactly due west. The jmost marked changes during the ten years had been in Georgia, jAlabama, and Mississippi, whence the Indian tribes—Cherokees, (Creeks, Chickasaws, and Choctaws—had been removed _to the indian Territory. Now, at last, we see population taking the southernmost of the four western routes of migration, —that round jthe lower end of the Appalachian chain. In northern Nlinois, the ac and Fox and Pottawatamie tribes having been removed to the (Indian Territory, their country has been promptly taken up; and jwe now find settlements carried over the whole extent of Indiana and Illinois, and northwards across Michigan and Wisconsin, as far ps the 43d parallel. Population has passed the Mississippi into

to the daring and even reckless

In addition there were in 1790 a score or more of small posts or incipient settlements, mainly of French origin, scattered over

Among these were Detroit, Vincennes, Kaskaskia, Prairie Du Chien, Machinac, and

census is computed |

entire State is covered, while that body of popnlation has been |

PPTATES

Towa Territory, and occupies a broad belt up and down that stream. In Missouri the settlements have spread northwards from the Mis- souri river nearly to the boundary of the State, and in the opposite direction until they cover most ‘of the southern portion, making connexion with the settlements in Arkansas. Population has largely increased in Florida; but the southern portion of the State remains unoccupied, owing to the hostility of the Seminole Indians,

Between 1840 and 1850 the limits of the United States had been 1850. greatly extended by the annexation of Texas and the territory ceeded by Mexico in the treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, these aequisitions embracing an area larger than the original area of the United States as defined by the treaty of 1783. The frontier of population now rests on the Missouri through a great north and south extent; and this date thus marks the natural division of the history of popula- tion in the United States into two parts. The map of 1850 does indeed show a few settlements on the uewly acquired Pacific coast, sparsely covering perhaps 30,000 square miles, with mining camps from a few weeks to a year old, comprising in all about 100,000 souls. But these small and distant groups may, in a survey like the present, be disregarded. In this great journcy of the English race to the Missouri we have scen the population increase from 3,929,214 to 28,191,876; the settled area has increased from 239,985 square miles to 979,249. The territory of the United States has grown, through purchase and war, from 827,844 to 2,980,961 square miles. The original thirteen States have become thirty. The centre of population has moved westward, during sixty years, over the space of 276 miles, notwithstanding the deepening of agricultural settlement in the older portions of the country and the growth of large commercial towns upon the seaboard, which have raised the average density to 23°7 persons to the square mile,

In 1860 the population of the Pacific coast settlements (about 1860. 100,000 in 1850) had risen to about 620,000, covering sparsely about 100,000 square miles. In the east the great fact observed is the extension of settlement, for the first time, beyond the line of the Missouri. The

movement up the slope of the great plains has begun. Into Kansas and N ebraska, especially the former, settlers are pouring rapidly, under the influence of the fierce struggle which is being waged to determine the political character of those Territories. Population has reached even beyond the 97th meridian. In the south Texas has filled up still more rapidly, its extreme settlements reaching to the 100th meridian. The small groups about St Paul, in Minnesota, have spread in all directions, after forming a broad band of union with the main body of population, down the line of the Mississippi. In Iowa population has crept steadly north-westward, along the course of the drainage, until the State is nearly covered. Following up the Missouri, settlers have crossed into the south-eastern corner of the present Ferritory of Dakota. In Wisconsin the settlements have moved at least one degree farther north. In the upper peninsula of Michigan the little settlements which appeared in 1850, in the upper region around Keweenaw Point, have extended and inereased in density as that mining region has developed in importance.

The hitherto unsettled regions in southern Missouri, north-eastern Arkansas, and north-western Mississippi have become sparsely covered. The entire occupied area of 1860 is 1,194,754 square miles ; the population is 31,443,321, and the average density 26°5. The centre has moved 81 miles westward since 1850. ;

The year 1870 found the nation undivided, with an aggregate 1870. population of 38,558,371, occupying 1,272,239 squate miles, the average density being 30°3. The new Cordilleran and Pacific coast settlements, beyond the 100th meridian, comprising about 1,000,000 souls, occupying abont 120,000 square miles, have arranged them- selves, rudely, in three longitudinal belts. The most eastern of these lies in central Colorado, New Mexico, and Wyoming, and along the eastern base of the Rocky Mountains. Population was first largely attracted thither in 1859 and 1860 by the discovery of mineral deposits, and has been retained there by the richness of the soil and the abundance of water for irrigation. The second belt is that of Utah, settled by the Mormons. This community differs radically in character from other Rocky Mountain settle- ments, being essentially agricultural, the mining industries having been discountenanced as tending to fill their “ Promised Land” with Gentile adventurers. The settlements here in 1870

extended from southern Idaho southward, through central Utah, into northern Arizona. With the exception of the two considerable towns of Ogden and Salt Lake, they consisted mainly of scattered hamlets and small villages, around whieh were grouped the farms of the several communities. The third belt is that in the Pacific States and Territories, extending from Washington Territory southward to southern California, and eastward to the systems of “Sinks,” so called, in western Nevada. This highly complicated body of popu- lation owes its existence to the mining industry. Beginning in 1849, it has grown through successive mineral discoveries, althongh more than one of its chief seats in earlier days have long since become deserted camps, more dreary even than before the white man came. Latterly the value of this region to the agriculturist has been recog- nized, and the occupations of the inhabitants are undergoing a

marked change. These three longitudinal belts comprised nine- tenths of the population of 1870 which was west of the gencral frontier line. The remainder were scattered about in the valleys and on the mountains of Montana, Idaho, and Arizona, in military posts, in isolated mining camps, and on cattle ranches.

In the east the traditional westward movement proceeded at less than its usual rate during 1860-70. Whereas the centre of popu- lation moved 81 miles in 1850-60, it accomplished a journey of only 42 iniles in the succeeding decade. In part this was due to the dis- couragement of pioneer enterprise by the state of war, portions of the frontier being involved in Indian hostilities, or becoming the scene of guerilla atrocities, all the way from Minnesota to Arizona; in part, to the absorption into the army of the restless portion of

From the latter table it appears that nearly one-fifth of the inhabitants of the country lived below 100 feet, z.¢., along the imme. diate seaboard and in the swampy alluvial regions of the south: more than two-fifths lived below

500 feet, more than three-fourths below 1000 fect, while 97 per cent. lived below 2000 feet. Within the area below 500 feet is included nearly all that part of the population which is engaged in manufacturing, in the foreign com. merce of the country, and in the culture of cotton, rice, and sugar, The interval between the 500 and the 1500 contours comprises the greater part of the prairie region and the grain-producing States of the north-west. The mean elevation of the surface of the United States is roughly computed at 2600 fect. The mean elevation of the actual population of 1880 is estimated at 700 feet. ‘

[STATISTICS,

At the date of the census of 1880 there were 6,679,943 persons Natiyit residing in the United States who had been born in foreign lands, of the y while at the samc time there were 9,593,106 born in the United popula.

the population which had been wont to lead the race in opening up newregions. In larger part, however, it was due to the prodigious growth, under the artificial encouragement afforded by war, of the

manufacturing industries of the east. Nevertheless, in southern Minnesota population had gonc to the boundary of the State, and had poured up the Big Sioux river in south-eastern Dakota; Iowa had become entirely occupied; through Kansas and Nebraska popu- lation had moved westward, following, in general, the courses of the larger streams and of the newly constructed Pacific railroads.

States who were living in other States than those of their birth, Generally speaking, the migrations of natives of the country have been, if not as usual directly along parallels of latitude, at least within the immediate zones of the individuals thus seeking new homes. Historically the statistics of the foreign elements are very incomplete. For only four censuses (1850-80) has the place

1880. The tenth census (1880) disclosed a population of 50,155,783. | of birth been returned in the enumeration of inhabitants. From The first thing which strikes one is the vast extent of territory | 1850 backwards to 1820 we have only tables compiled from the brought under occupation for the first

time. The settled area has | passenger lists of vessels bringing in emigrants, data notoriously risen sharply to 1,569,570 square miles, so that, with nearly twelve | imperfect. Prior to 1820 there are only scraps of evidence. The millions added to the population, the average density of settlement | following tables (V., VI.) show the arrivals at United States ports has only increased from 30‘3 to 32. The settlements in the Cordil- | from 1820 to 1850 by decades, and the total population and total leran regions and on the Pacific show enormous accessions of occu- | number of persons of foreign birth, with the proportions subsisting pied territory. In the east we note changes which are far greater in | between the two, at each of the four censuses taken since this class absolute importance, though less conspicuous in comparison with | of statistics began to be collected :— the extent of previously existing settlement. In Kansas and Ne- braska a broad tide has spread westward over the plains, annexing Total. G From 3 ite i Other vast tracts before unoccupied. At several points the pioneer line | |. _ —S aa aie a 3 pi has reached the boundary of the Humid Region, so that further 1820-30 151,000 8,000 82,000 61,000 extension must hereafter be governed by the supply of water in the 1830-40 ri 152,000 283,000 164,000 streams, Hence we already see the principal river marked by long rene pee? oo 100s ai ribbon-like bands of population. In Minnesota and east Dakota the building of railroads and the remarkable wheat-producing capa- Total Persons of | Per Cent. bilities of the region have caused a rapid ro gs of popula- Population. | Foreign Birth. of Foreign. tion. Besides the agricultural region of east Dak ota, we note the a 23,191,876 2,244,602 er formation of a body of settlement in the Black Hills, in the south- 1860 31,443,321 4,138,697 13°16 west corner, the result of important discoveries of gold deposits. 1870 38,558,371 5,567,229 14°44 In Wisconsin the unsettled area has rapidly decreased as railroad 1880 50,155,783 6,679,943 13°32 construction has advanced. In the upper peninsula of Michigan ; ae the copper and iron interests, and the railroads which subscrve them, The foreign-born have settled mainly between the 38th and 45th have peopled a large extent of territory. In the lower peninsula not degrees of latitude; more than two-thirds of them are found between only have settlements surrounded the head of the peninsula, but | the 39th and 43d degrees, ‘ there remains only a small body of unsettled lands in the interior, The following table (VII.) shows the proportion per 10,000 of the vast pine forests having been swept away by the activity of the | the natives of the foreign countries

named :— lumbering industry. In the south Texas has made great strides, into | Wee 1870, | 1880 through the extension of railroads and the development of the cattle — a | c a : and sheep interest. The unscttled area in the peninsula of Florida | | Born in England and Wales…..... 1,375 1,154 1,124 1,117 has decreased decidedly, while the vacant spaces heretofore seen ” A lagi ae 3,893 3,333 ae along the upper coast of Florida and Louisiana have disappeared. a es ate os an 4

5 : 5 ” EEN agonbeconongopaceooenn 2,601 3,083 8,037 2,944 The centre of population moved 58 miles westward between 1870 MEER e eres: 241 266 209 160 and 1880, making the total journcy 457 miles since 1790. nein eo, ee . pa bi . oe

. ’ OR : = a” weden and Norway…... 8 5 The following tables (I1J., IV.) show the distribution of popu All other foreigners…....ssssveeeees 446 563 724 | 1,114 lation by drainage basins and according to altitude :— Le et re

Popula- The occupations most affected by foreigners will appear from the

tion by — Aveaiin at lane following table (VIII.), in which the units represent thousands:—

drainage ae Square Miles, Total. |Per Sq. Mile. Manu- basins. xt… ee ey eS SS ae Engaged ; Personal : ing.

New England coast…...scssceceseeeee 61,830 3,788,334 61°2 Persons born in in all | In Agri- | or Pro- ne wee

Middle Atlantic coast …....ssceeese 83,020 9,240,897 111°3 Occupa- | culture, | fessional | ““jison, | and Mining

South Atlantic couSt…..cscssssceeee 132040 4,114,563 31°2 tions. Service. “| Industries.

GIGStRIAKeS es. cccostcsssessssscnetsss eset 175,340 5,684,147 32°4 — Sees anneeee a —

GUlEOT BICKICOR ensessssessesseessercess 1,725,980 25,884,117 14°9 United States……... 13,897 6,858 3,076 1,352 ge

Total Atlantic …scssssesssessees 2,178,210 | 48,717,293 224 ae ell ae ote ae a 984 Great 18} 1G 0\ppapconicioqsacoopocnsenanennc 228,150 227,107 1:0 Great Britain… ..... 467 104 80 5G 226 PACT C OCGA iiseratenecscissrseess tease 619,240 1,211,383 19 Sweden and Norway 206 92 53 16 & Touallnes deeammmnteny.oc\aster 3,025,600 | 50,155,788 16°6 pn Nes Se US B < In the following table (IX.) a few of the more important single

Popula- Heiwenent Per Cent, of | poration | Per Cent. of | | occupations are selected for a further comparison :—

tion ac- Ghneneeet in Population | Total Popula- es aan Population

eording Feet of the Group. | tion within C below each Sweden stich

2 : : ontour. ; ; ; Great Britis to alti- the Group. Contour, Germany. | Ircland. Britain. | 5y a America. a | a —_—— —— i orway. tude. 0-100 9,152,296 18°25 9,152,296 18°25 ———— ———— ee ae 100-500 10,776,284 21-48 19,928,580 39-73 Agricultural labourers,..... 48 24 15 23 21 500-1000 19,024,320 37°93 38,952,900 77°66 Farmers and planters…..... 233 108 83 68 51 1000-1500 7,904,780 15-76 46,857,680 93°42 Boot and shoe makers…..... 28 17 7 3 8 1500-2000 1,878,715 3°75 48,736,395 97°17 Textile operatives…..... 9 39 32 i 44 2000-3000 664,923 1:38 49,401,318 98°50 Domestic servants…....+000. 43 122 19 19 22 3000-4000 128,544 26 49,529,862 98°76 | In iron and steel works….. 9 17 10 1 2 4000-5000 167,236 “33. 49,697,098 99-09 Labouneties…....-..ceeasents 114 225 31 28 50 5000-6000 271,317 “54 49,968,415 99°63 MOORS osiec. acuestesasnenss settee 10 25 47 5 6000-8000 109,497 22 50,077,912 99°85 Railroad employés…....00.- 10 33 7) J 77,871 15 50,155,783 100 | Traders and dealers…..... 60 32 17 2 7

8000 and over

Cw ? ED

The question of the degrec to which forcign elements have con- tributed to the remarkable growth of population in the United States has formed the subject of much discussion. In 1870 an important step towards the obtaining of adequate statistical data for the solution of the problem was made by ascertaining, in addition to the number of persons born abroad, the number having a foreign- born father or mother, or both. From this count it appeared that, while there were (1) 5,567,229 persons resident in the United States who were born in other countries, there were (2) 10,521,283 who had a foreign father, (3) 10,105,627 who had a foreign mother, (4) 9,734,845 who had both parents foreign, and (5) 10,892,015 who had one or both parents foreign.! Another and important step was taken in 1880, when the eensus offiee obtained the means of determining the number of persons one or both of whose parents had been born in eacli speeified foreign country. From this enumeration it appeared that, while there were then in the United States (1) 6,679,943 persons who had themselves been born abroad, there were (2) 14,349,310 who had a foreign father, (8) 18,585,080 who had a foreign mother, (4) 18,011,646 who had both parents foreign, and (5) 14,922,744 who had one or both parents foreign, In addition to the above were found 33,252 persons, themselves born abroad, but of parents native to the United Statcs. This would make the total number of persons born abroad, and of per- sons of foreign parentage, 14,955,996. This aggregate was dis- tributed as follows among the chief nationalities (Table X.) :—

POPULATION. |

Persons having Irish fathers…….....ccccccccsesesescceeee . 4,529,523 ®) GOMMARE jo cssesecnssecences 4,883 842 Es BES A cveessschsesssovs 2,039,808 = Seandinavian fathers 635,405 es British Ameriean fathers 939,247

7 fathers born in other foreign eountries than those SRECIM ECM sectssncns cs: mies smietemeinnsese a aceecetee eye 1,321,485 ” native fathers and foreign motherS……..sccceecesseese,.,, 573,434 Foreign persons, having both parents native…..... 33,252 HOCH es cencsscsvess reese BSCOOOLDOUNCRaCADEOCDHAD 14,955,996 Persons having Wishimothers.s.i.:.....sccsscsssesssevensessesessesecssesesseeesecs 4,448,421 “6 GETING Re cia; svesisaviarssosvvssicaveert

qodoobadgonanonbosdenanoon 4,557,629 An ESM ao este nec velevoerdatisicciciiccccssscrcs 1,790,200 9 DCATMUVAVAOTIMOGNCHS....0css.00.sescecesseseesevavsoetessoceccecs, 631,309 “ British Ameriean mothers…..... Sodo0ospadHHOCHARedAOHEDHaN 931,408

Ae mothers born in foreign countries other than those BDECIN CU. sttesceeaiserrsisssesrenste nif 1,226,118 a native mothers and foreign fathe1 seco 1,887,664 Foreign persons, having both parents native ….c0.cccccscccccceecee, 83,252 MTobalteevsss««: Maresh reeaetnsuvavocivastaiveesuiect 14,955,996

Comparing these results with the total number of persons from each specified foreign country resident in the United States, we find that, for cvery 1000 persons living in the United States who were born in Ireland, there were in 1880 2442 who had an Irish father, 2387 who had an Irish mother; for every 1000 persons born in Germany there were 2483 who had a German father, 2306 who had a German mother ; for every 1000 persons born in Great Britain there were 2223 who had a British father, 1941 who had a British mother ; for every 1000 persons born in Sweden or Norway there were 1690 who had a Swedish or Norwegian father, 1671 who had a Swedish or Norwegian mother ; for every 1000 persons born in British America there were 1810 who had a British American father, 1292 who had a British American mother.

These ratios do not accurately represent the comparative fecundity of the foreign pone unless reference be had to the periods of time during which the scveral elements have respectively formed an important part of the population of the United States. The fact that for every 1000 persons born in Ireland there were in 1880 2442 persons (including of course the 1000 mentioned), who had an Irish father, while for every 1000 British Americans there were only 1310 who had a British American father, would seem to indicate that the Ivish are vastly more prolifie than the British Amcricans. The disproportion is, however, mainly due to the fact that the Irish residents have lived in the country for a very much longer period of time than the British Americans. Thus, of every 10,000 foreigners

} in the United States in 1850, 4285 were Irish, while only 658 were

British Americans. In 1880, out of every 10,000 foreigners, only 2776 were Irish, 1074 were British Americans. Again, it will have

} been noted that, in every case mentioned, there are more of persons

having a foreign father than of persons having a foreign mother. This is true regarding eaeh nationality, not only for the country, but for each State, and is due to the fact that immigration is pre- dominantly of males.

The first census (1790) showed the number of coloured persons to

i be 757,208, the coloured element thus constituting a larger propor- | tion of the population than ever after, i.¢., 19°3 per cent.

By 1800 the coloured element had increased absolutely to 1,002,087, being

| a gain per cent. of 32°32, but had declined relatively to 18°9 per

1 The reader will understand that these sums are not to be added together, as has been done in some statistical publications, yielding an aggrcgate somewhat

) larger than the entire population of the United States at the time. No.1 is

ineluded in No. 4, which is itself ineluded in both Nos. 2 and 3, whieh are in turn

|) included in No. 5, whieh is the ontside statement of that portion of the population } whose members were either themselves born abroad, or who had either a father } or mother born abroad.

cent, of the entire population. By 1810 it had reached 1,377,808, a gain of 37°05 per ccnt. upon its own numbers in 1790; it had also advanced towards its former share of the population, being 19 percent. of the whole. By 1820 the number had risen to 1,771,656, a gain of 28°58 per cent. in ten years ; the share of this element in the total population had sunk to 18°4 percent. By 1830 the number had increased to 2,328,642, a gain of 31°44

per cent.; the ratio to the total population had sunk to 18-2, By 1840 the total numbers had risen to 2,878,648, a gain of 23-4 per cent. (16°8 per cent. of the whole population). In 1850 the number was 3,638,808 (13°3 of whole population), a gain of 26°62 per cent. in ten years. Ou the threshold of the civil war in 1860 the number had risen to 4,441,830 (14°1 per cent. of whole population), being a gain of 22°06 per cent. in ten years. The enumeration of the eoloured population in 1870 was subsequently proved to have been partial and inaccurate in many parts of several Southern States. The number returned was only 4,880,009 (12°7 per cent. of total popula-tion), a gain of only 9°86 per cent. in ten years. In 1880 the number was 6,580,798 (13°1 of the whole), an increase of 34°85 per cent. over 1870.

The following table (XI.) summarizes the facts of gain per cent. within the eoloured population by ten-, twenty-, and thirty-year periods, from 1790 to 1880:—

Gormared Per Cent, Inerease per Cent, Population of Total * | Population. | 10 Years. | 20 Years, 30 Years, 1790 757,208 19°3 500 000 1800 1,002,037 18-9 32°32 et 200 1810 1,377,808 19 37°05 81:96 ee 1820 1,771,656 18-4 28°58 76°8 13397 1830 2,328,642 18-2 31°44 69°01 182°39 1840 2,873,648 16°8 23°4 62:2 108°56 185 3,638,808 13°3 26°62 56°26 10539 1860 4,441,830 14:1 22°06 54°57 90°74 1870 4,880,009 12:7 9°86 34°11 69°82

1880 6,580,793 13°1 34°85 48°15 80°85

The coloured people, all but an inconsiderable fraction, live

between the 29th and 40th degrees of latitude. In this respect, the foreign and the coloured elements are largely complementary. Only between the 38th and 40th parallels are both elements found in considerable numbers. In longitude the coloured are much more widely spread than are the foreigners. Again, the temperature and rainfall groups which contain one of these elements largely seldom embrace any eonsiderable portion of the other. Thus, it appears that, while more than 87 per cent. of the foreign-born live in regions having a mean annual temperature of 40° to 55° F., more than 98 per cent. of the coloured reside in regions having a mean annual temperature of 50° to 70°. In the region having a rainfall of about 60 inches

annually, the coloured form no less than 43 per cent. of the total, and in the next grade 36°5 per cent., while in the region having a rainfall of 50 to 55 inches more than half the in- habitants are coloured. Where the rainfall is less than 45 inches the eoloured population falls below the average, in some cases very far below. Not less than 85 per cent. of the coloured are found within regions between 40 and 60 inches. The foreign population, on the other hand, is chiefly grouped in regions between 30 and 50 inches, those regions containing nearly 85 per cent. of the foreign-born. Further, only 14°10 per cent. of the foreign popula- tion live in the regions raised 100 to 500 feet above the sea, while within those regions are found not less than 4495 per cent. of the coloured population.

The question of the future of the coloured race in the United States mainly depends on the answer to a prior question, whether the fact of the concentration in so great a degree of this element upon the lands at once very hot and very moist, which has actually taken place, is due to the superior attractions of cotton-planting in the past and even in the present, or represents also the special physiologieal aptitudes of the race. The enormous apparent increase in this element during 1870 to 1880 led some persons to project a line of ascent which would, in a few generations, cause the continent to be peopled almost entirely by members of the African race. Such predictions are as idle as were those of the speedy extinction of the coloured population after the disparaging but erroneous results of the census of 1870 were published. Inas- much as twenty-year periods have, from the beginning, shown a steady suecessive decline in the rate of increase among the coloured population (see Table XI.), it would seem that some positive reason should be shown for anticipating any higher rate for the future than that of 54°57 for 1840-60. Such a rate of increase among the eoloured people would steadily reduce the share of that element in the population of the country, bringing its numbers up to about ten millions in 1900 out of a not improbable population of eighty millions. Whether there is really room, economically speaking, for so large a coloured population, considering the limited area of the lands, already fairly well occupied, within which alone that race has any marked advantage over the whites by reason of their physiological adaptation to the climate, and considering the

Occupa- tions

of the people.

industrial advantages which the white race enjoy wherever the climate conditions are equally favourable, may be gravely doubted.

The growth of city populations during the ninety years embraced by the ten successive censuses of the United States has been little less remarkable than the inercase of population throughout the country as a whole. The following table (XII.) gives the aggregate for cities of 8000 inhabitants and upwards from 1790 to 1880 :—

Population of Population of Urban Population in

United States. Cities. each 100 of the Total. 1790 3,929,214 131,472 3°3

1800 5,308, 483 210,873 39 1810 7,239,881 356,920 4:9 1820 9,633, 822 475,135 49

1830 12,866,020 864,509 6°7 1840 17,069,453 1,453,994 8°5 1850 23,191,876 2,897,586 12°5

1860 31,443, 321 5,072,256 16‘1 1870 88,558,371 8,071,875 20-9

1880 50,155,783 11,318,547 22°5

In 1880 there were 286 cities with over 8000 inhabitants, and the following twenty exceeded 100,000:—New York, N.Y., 1,206,299 ; Philadelphia, Pa., 847,170 ; Brooklyn, N.Y., 566,668 ; Chicago, Ill., 503,185; Boston, Mass., 362,889; St Louis, Mo., 850,518 ; Baltimore, Md., 332,318 ; Cincinnati, O., 255,189 ; San Francisco, Cal., 233,959 ; New Orleans, La., 216,090; Cleveland, O., 160,146 ; Pittsburgh, Pa., 156,389; Buffalo, N.Y., 155,184; Washington, D.C., 147,293 ; Newark, N.J., 136,508 ; Louisville, Ky., 123,758 ; Jersey City, N.J., 120,722 ; Detroit, Mich., 116,340; Milwaukee, Wis., 115,587; Providence, R.I., 104,857.

The urban population of the United States is predominantly sustained by manufactures and mechanical industry rather than by commerce. Taking for the purposes of this analysis the fifty largest cities, we have an ageregate of 3,083,172 workers, of whom 32 per cent. are engaged in personal and professional services, 24 per cent. in trade and transportation, 48 per cent. in manufactures and mechanical industry, the remaining 1 per cent. being em- ployed in agriculture, as nurserymen, florists, market gardeners, &c. Of the total body of workers reported 77 per cent. are males, 23 females. Again, 34 per cent. are under 16 years of age, 3 per cent. are over 60, 984 per cent. are between 16 and 60.

The proportion of workers to population varies greatly in American cities, according to the industries pursued, according to the constituents of the population, according to age and sex, and according to certain social causes affecting the employment of women and young children.

The American census took no account of the occupations of the people till 1850, when the occupations of the free male inhabitants over 15 years of age were ascertained. In 1860 the statistics were made to include the gainful occupations of free women as well, but the exclusion of the entire slave population from the account, together with defects of classification due to the inherent difficulties of the work, make it impossible to institute satisfactory comparisons with statistics subsequently obtained. At the ninth and tenth cen- suses (1870 and 1880) special efforts directed to this end, aided by the great progress made of recent years in industrial organization and by the abolition of slavery, resulted in statistical accounts which afford a fair view of the occupations of the people at those dates.

The census of 1870 gave the number of people pursuing gainful occupations as 12,505,923, being 32°43 per cent. of the total popu- lation, 44°3 per cent. of the total population above ten years of age. 34°68 per cent. of the entire population, 47°31 per cent. of the population above ten years of age. This incrcase means a larger engagement of women and children in labour outside the family. The division of the grand total of 1880 among the four principal groups of occupations, with the further distinction of sex, appears in the following table (XIII.):—

Persons

Classes. Occupied. Males. Females.

AGTIGUIENTO, siete eat. Dinca cceedeetecetenesaxss 7,670,493 7,075,983 594,510 Personal and professional services…..... | 4,074,238 2,712,943 | 1,361,295 Trade and transportation …....sccc0sseeeee 1,810,256 1,750,892 59,364 Manufacturing, mechanical, and mining| 3,837,112 3,205,124 631,988 Ali occupations….....00006 17,392,099 | 14,744,942 | 2,647,157

le A A IN AE ee | il I a) Of these, 825,187 males and 293,169 females were from 10 to 15 years of age, 12,986,111 males and 2,288,115 females from 16 to 59, and 933,644 males and 70,873 females 60 and upwards.

It appears that 7,670,493 persons were in 1880 employed in agri- culture, constituting 44°1 per cent. of the whole number, against 47°3 in 1870, —a slight relative decline in this class during the de- cade. 4,225,945 persons reported themselves as farmers or planters. This agrees well with the number of farms and plantations returned on the agricultural schedule, 7.¢., 4,008,907. 3,323,876 persons report themselves as farm labourers, while about 120,000 are re- turned as apiarists, dairymen, florists, gardeners, nurserymen,

In 1880 the corresponding number was 17,892,099, being |

STATES

stock-drovers, turpentine farmers, &c. Agriculture still remains the predominant industry of the United States, employing nearly half the working population, and, since a greater number of persons are dependent upon the average farmer or farm labourer than upon the average factory operative or domestic servant, furnishing sub- sistence to considerably more than half the people.

The number of persons engaged in mechanical labour and in manufacturing and mining pursuits in 1880 was 8,837,112,—99 per cent. of the total, against 21°6 per cent. in 1870.

The number of persons engaged in trade and transportation wag in 1880 1,810,256, being 10°4 per cent. of the total. Between 1860 and 1870, with an increase in population of 22°8 per cent, the class engaged in trade and transportation gained 44 per cent., a result fairly attributable to the profits of middle-men, and the multiplication of stores, shops, and stands of every description, consequent upon the circulation of an irredeemable and fluctuating currency.

The last grand group of occupations to be mentioned is that characterized by the rendering of personal or professional services, This group in 1880 embraced 4,074,238 men, women, and children, or 23:4 of all connected with gainful avocations, against 214 per ceut. in 1870. The occupations within this group exhibit a wide range of character. We have at the one end the teacher, the Government official, the artist, the clergyman, the physician : at the other, the barber, the boot-black, the household drudge. The most important class of this group is that known as labourers, without further designation. This class, in the successive census

(STATISTICS,

‘reports, has always been large, doubtless too large for the facts of

the case, since it seems probable that no inconsiderable share of these labourers are connected with agriculture or trade or some branch of manufacturing industry with sufficient definiteness to

justify their being returned under one or other of those groups.

The number reported under this title in 1850 was 909,786; in 1860, 969,301 ; in 1870, 1,031,666 ; in 1880, 1,859,228,

The number of domestic servants in 1880 was 1,075,655, against 975,784 in 1870. It might have been expected that the general increase of luxury and refinement during the preceding decade must have caused a large proportional increase in domestic service. Yet we find the number of domestic servants to have increased but 10 per cent., while population has grown 30 per cent. The only fact indicated by the table of occupations which serves at all to account for this failure of domestic service to keep

pace with population is that the number of bakers has increased more than 50 per cent. during the decade, while the number of laundrymen and laundresses has grown from 60,906 to 121,942, showing that some part at least of the work formerly done in private houses is now done in shops, Yet we cannot fail to be struck with the fact that, while there was in 1870 1 servant to 7°76 families, 1880 found no more than 1 servant to 9°24 families.

The geographical distribution of domestic service throughout the United States is very irregular, the proportion between families and servants ranging from 2°5 families to 1 servant in the District of Columbia up to 24°8 families to 1 servant in Arkansas. The largest proportion of domestic servants is found in a group in the central Atlantic region,—Maryland, Delaware, Virginia, and the District of Columbia, where slavery formerly prevailed more as a social and political than as an industrial institution. Thus Maryland has 1 servant to 4°9 families, Delaware 1 to 5°83, Virginia 1 to 5°7.

In 1870 the number of families returned was 7,579,368, the Families number of persons to a family being 5°09; the number of dwell- and ings was 7,042,833, with 5°47 persons to a dwelling. In 1880 the dwellings. total number of families returned was 9,945,916, the number of persons to a family being 5°04; the number of dwellings was 8,955,812, with 5°6 persons to a dwelling. In 1880 the number of persons to a family ranged from 3°94 in Montana to 5°64 in West Virginia ; the number of persons to a dwelling ranged from 4°24 in Idaho to 6°68 in Rhode Island. Examination of the tables relating to the 100 largest cities in 1880 shows that the number of persons to a family ranges from 4:23 in Memphis to 599 in Denver. In general, the Southern cities rule low in this respect. The range as to the number of persons to a dwelling, among the cities of the United States, is much greater than in the case of persons to a family. Memphis has but 4°68 persons to a dwelling; New York has as many as 16°37. The othér instances of a low proportion are Lancaster, Pa., 5°02; Davenport, Jowa, 5°04 ; Camden, N.J., 5°05; Sacramento, 5°07. The other instances of a high proportion are Hoboken, 11°50; Holyoke, Mass., 10°52; Brooklyn and Cincinnati, 9°11; Manchester, N.H., 9°09; pile cester, 8:79 ; Fall River, 8°75; Jersey City, 8°59 ; Lawrence, 8 5; Boston, 826 ; Chicago, 8°24; Troy,

8°16; St Louis, 8°15. The other large cities show the following proportions :—Philadelphia, 5°79 ; New Orleans, 5°95 ; Baltimore, 6°54 ; San Francisco, a The remarkably low proportion, considering the population, whic obtains in Philadelphia is due to the admirable manner 1n W oe that city has been built up, largely under the system of groun rents, little known in other cities.

Ct

UNITED

AGRICULTURE.

AGRICULTURE. |

the American

their economic superiority has been most strikingly manifest. ten years from 1790, the mean

cleared of primeval forest ; improving the whole extent of previous towns and cities at a score of favoured points.

extended itself over 98,000 square miles of absolutely new territory,

of the older territory,

between 1840 and 1850, 215,000 square miles. sion, indeed, checked the westward flow of population, caused no refluence ;

and here and there by railroads, and dotted over with dwellings. That whieh has allowed this great work to be done

and fortunately has been,

secondly, the character of

the cultivators of the soil

tuted a peasantr

been the same i

the agricultural class.

ind of men, precisely out of the same homes,

mercial pursuits. Switzerland and Scotland have, in a degree,

other considerable

and manufactures,

factures in the United States,

far exceeded in the hurried “ in the housing of women, children, and live

ready reconnaissances which determined the

the capabilities of the soil; in the | exigencies of primitive agriculture.) that the chief manufacture of the United States, _ the manufacture of four million farms, # The people of the United States,

tinent containing an almost limitless | fertility, having at the start but little accumulated capital and

comprising 540,000,000 acres. finding themselves on a con-

the land in the earliest stages of occupation as practically of no | value, and to regard labour as of high value. In pursuance of this | view they have freely sacrificed the land, so far as was necessary, in order to save labour, systematically cropping the fields on the principle of obtaining the largest results with the least expendi- | ture, limiting improvements to what was demanded for immediate | uses, and caring little about returning to the soil an equivalent | for the properties taken from it in the harvests of successive) years. But, so far as the Northern Statcs are concerned, the |, cnoruious profits of this alleged wasteful cultivation have in the main been applied, not to personal consumption, but to permanent improvements,—not indeed

to improvements of the land, but to “what were still more needed in the situation, namely, improve- ‘Inents upon the land. The first-fruits of a virgin soil have been ,expended in forms which have vastly enhanced the productive | power of the country. The land, doubtless, as one factor of that productive power, became temporarily less efficient than it would have been under a conservative European treatment ; but the joint ‘product of the three factors—land, labour, and eapital—was for the time enormously increased. Under this regimen the fertility \ of the land of course in time necessarily declined, sooner or later according to the nature of the crops grown and to the degree of /Original strength in the soil. Resort was then had to new fields }farther west. The granary of the continent moved first to western |New York, thence into the Ohio valley, and then, again, to the banks of the Mississippi. The north and south line dividing the “Wheat product of the United States into two equal parts was in ‘1850 drawn along the 82d meridian. In 1860 that line was drawn

Agricuiture has been the chief and most characteristic work of people, that in which they have achieved the greatest results in proportion to the resources at command, that in which i In population of the period being 4,500,000, 65,000 square miles were for the first time brought within the limits of settlement, crossed with roads and bridges, covered with dwellings, both public and private, much of it also and this in addition to keeping up and settlements, and building In the next decade, the mean number of inhabitants being about 6,500,000, population

——an area eight times as large as Holland. Between‘1810 and 1820, besides increasing the density of population on almost every league besides increasing their manufacturing capital twofold, in spite of a three years’ war, the people of the United States advanced their frontier to occupy 101,000 square miles, the mean population being 8,250,000. Between 1820 and 1830 124,000 square miles were brought within the frontiers and made the seat of habita- tion and cultivation; between 1830 and 1840, 175,000 square miles ; The war of seces- though it but between 1870 and 1880 territory embrac- ing 297,000 square miles was reclaimed from the wilderness and the desert, was divided into farms, crossed everywhere by roads

so rapidly first, the popular tenure of the soil, and, At no time have north of the Potomac and Ohio consti- in the ordinary sense of that term. They have

generally with the same early training, as those who filled the learned professions or who were engaged in manufacturing or com-

approached the United States in this particular; but there is no country where as much mental activity and alertness has been applied to the cultivation of the soil as to trade

But even the causes which have been adduced would have failed to produce such effects but for the exceptional inventive ingenuity of the American, The mechanical genius which has entered into manu- the engineering skill which has guided the construction of the greatest works of the continent, have been improvements” of the pioneer farm ; stock and gathered | crops against the storms of the first few winters ; In the rough and “lay of the land” and preparation for the thousand

It is no exaggeration to say thus far, has been

extent of land of fair average

| urgent occasions for the economty of labour, have elected to regard

along the 85th, in 1870 along the 88th, in 1880 along the 89th. Meanwhile one portion of the inhabitants.of the earlier settlements joined in the movement across the face of the continent. As the grain centre passed on to the west they followed it, too restless by character and habit to find pleasure in the work of stable commun- ities. A second portion of the inhabitants became engaged in raising, upon limited areas, small crops, garden vegetables, and orchard fruits, and in producing butter, milk, poultry, and eggs, for the supply of the eities and manufacturing towns which had been built up out of the abundant profits of the primitive agricul- ture. Still another portion of the agricultural population gradually became occupied in the more carcful and intense culture of the cereal crops upon the better lands, the less eligible fields being allowed to spring up in brush and wood.

Deep ploughing and thorough drainage were resorted to; fertilizers were employed to bring up and to keep up the soil; and thus began the scrious sys- tematic agriculture of the older States. Something continued to be done in wheat, but not much. New York raised 18 million bushels in 1850; thirty years later she raised the same amount. Pennsylvania raised 154 million bushels in 1850 ; in 1880 she raised 194 million bushels. More is done in Indian corn (maize), that most prolific cereal, the backboue of American agriculture ; still more is done relatively in buckwheat, barley, and rye. Pennsyl- vania, though the tenth State in wheat production, stands first in rye, second in buckwheat, third in oats. New York is only thir- teenth in wheat, but first in buckwheat, second in barley, third in rye. We do not, however, reach the full significanee of the situation until we account for the fourth portion of the former agrieultural population, in noting how naturally and fortunately commereial and manufacturing cities spring up on the sites whieh have been pre- pared for them by the lavish expenditure of the enormous profits of a primitive agriculture upon permanently useful improvements of a constructive character. ‘These towns are the gifts of agriculture,

The agricultural returns for 1880 showed a total of 4,008,907 farms, comprising 536,081,835 acres, of which 284,771,042 were improved and 251,310,793 unimproved. The improved lands were made up of 223,067,144 acres of tilled lands, including fallow or grasses in rotation, and 61,703,898 acres of permanent meadows, pastures, and orchards. The unimproved land comprises 190,255,744 acres of woodland and forest. The unimproved land in farms was, in 1860, 59°9 per cent. of the total land in farms; in 1870, 58-7; in 1880, 46°9. It will be seen that the farms of 1880 comprise little more than one-third the total area of the country. The remainder consists of large fertile tracts, which will, in the near future, be embraced in farms; of extensive districts, along the frontier, occupied by the grazing interest; of water surfaces, rivers, lakes, ponds, and swamps; of barren tracts along the shore, and of the area of innumerable rugged hills and vast mountain chains ; and, lastly and chiefly, of the great arid plains beyond the 100th meridian,

The value of farms, including farm buildings, returned in 1880 was $10,197,096,776; the value of farming implements and machinery,

$406,520,055; of live stock on farms, $1,500, 384,707. The live stock on farms comprised horses, 10,357,488; mules and asses, 1,812,808; working oxen, 993,841; milch cows, 12,448,120; other cattle, 22,488,550; sheep, exclusive of spring lambs, 35,192,074; swine, 47,681,700. ‘The foregoing numbers relate only to live stoek upon farms. The report of the special agent appointed in 1880 to canvass the grazing interest, outside the limits of defined farms, estimated the number of ranch and range animals as follows :—cattle, 8,750,000; sheep, 7,000,000; swine,

2,091,000.

The acreage and yield of the cereal grains reported in 1880 (crop Cereals. of 1879) were as follows :—wheat, 35,480,333 acres, 459,483,137 bushels; Indian corn, 62,368,504 acres, 1,754,591, 676 bushels ; oats, 16,144,593 acres, 407,858,999 bushels; barley, 1,997,727 acres, 43,997,495 bushels; rye, 1,842,233 acres, 19,831,595 bushels ; buckwheat, 848,389 aeres, 11,817,327 bushels.

Of wheat fourteen States produced over 10,000,000 bushels each, six States over 30,000,000. The chief producing States, with their respective erops in round millions of bushels, were Illinois, 51; Indiana, 47; Ohio, 46; Michigan, 35; Minnesota, 34; Iowa, a1; California, 29. 303 million bushels were produecd in regions having a mean annual temperature of between 45° and 50° F., 51 millions between 40° and 45°, 59 millions between 55° and 60°. The general average yield per acre was 13 bushels. a

Of Indian corn twenty States produced over 20 million bushels

each, six over 100 millions. The chief producing States, with their respective crops in round millions of bushels, were Illinois, 326 ; Iowa, 275 ; Missouri, 202 ; Indiaua, 115 ; Ohio, 112 ; Kansas, 106. 1300 million bushels were produeed in regions having a mean annual temperature between 45° and 55°, 229 millions between 55° and 60°, 118 millions between 60° and 65°, The average yield per acre was 28 bushels.

Of oats ten States produced over 10 million bushels each ; five produced over 30 millions. The chief producing States, with their respective crops in round millions of bushels, were Illinois, 63;

Statisties of farms,

Hay.

Dairy

produce,

Hops,

Potatoes,

Wool,

Hemp and flax.

Cotton.

Rice.

Sugar.

Tobacco.

Other agri- cultural produce.

824 UHI THD

Iowa, 51 ; New York, 38 ; Pennsylvania, 34 ; Wisconsin, 33. The average yield per acre was 25 bushels. Of barley five States pro- duced over 2 million bushels, as follows :—California, 124 ; New York, 8; Wisconsin, 5 ; Iowa, 4 ; Minnesota, 8. The average yield per acre was 22 bushels. Of rye four States, namely, Pennsyl- vania, Illinois, New York, Wisconsin, produced between 34 and 2 million bushels each. The average yield per acre was 11 bushels. Of buckwheat 70 per cent. of the crop was produced by the two States of New York (4% millions) and Pennsylvania (34 millions). The average per acre was 14 bushels.

The harvested hay crop, as reported in 1880, amounted to 35,150,711 tons from 30,631,054 acres. Thirteen States show more than one nuillion acres mown, with a yield ranging from 0°8385 ton per acre in Missouri to 1°554 tons in Minnesota. As we pass southward, tlie importance of the grass crop diminishes until we reach large and populous States in which but ten or twenty thousand acres or less are mown.

The statistics of dairy products, taking those both of the home dairy and of the butter or cheese factory, as returned in 1880, show 806,672,071 Ib of butter made, 248,157,850 ib of cheese, 217,922,090 gallons of milk sold otherwise than to cheese and butter factories.

The production of hops is mainly in two States,—New York, which in 1880 cultivated 39,072 acres in this crop, nearly all in four counties, and Wisconsin, which cultivated 4489 acres. The total area in hops was 46,800 acres, with a yield of 26,546,378 tb.

The potato crop comprised 169,458,539 bushels of Irish, grown mainly in Northern States, and 33,388,693 bushels of sweet, grown mainly in the South, although the profitable cultivation of this crop extends as far north as New Jersey.

The statistics of the wool crop in a census of the United States are necessarily defective, requiring to be supplemented by informa- tion from the outside. This is due to the great amount of wool obtained from the pelts of slaughtered sheep, to the large number of animals upon ranches and ranges along the frontier, beyond the limits of defined farms, and, thirdly, to the fact that in some regions, notably California and Texas, two clips are made each year. The gross figures for 1880, after making allowance on these accounts, were 240,681,751 ib.

The production of hemp in the census year was but 5025 tons ; the products of the flax culture were stated at 7,170,951 bushels of seed, 421,098 tons of straw, 1,565,546 Ib of the fibre. It is in cotton, however, that the United States make their chief contribu- tion to the fibres of the commercial world. In 1879 5,755,359 bales were raised on 14,480,019 acres. The following table (XIV.) shows the distribution, geographically, of this most important crop :—

States. Acres, Bales. States. Acres. Bales. Alabama… .| 2,830,086 | 699,654 || Mississippi ….. 2,106,215 | 963,111 Arkansas . | 1,042,976 | 608,256 Missouri ….. 82,116 20,318 Florida …. | 245,595 54,997 North Carolina] 893,153 | 389,598 GOON RAs Sicscnsses 2,617,138 | 814,441 South Carolina | 1,364,249 | 522,548 Indian Territory 35,000 17,000 Tennessee …... 722,562 | 330,621 Krematteky. in… ccrs 2,667 1,367 TGRAS I cccsccenesss: 2,178,435 | 805,284 Louisiana…..... 864,787 | 508,569 Virginia ®..... 45,040 19,595

The other characteristic crops of the Southern States are rice, tobacco, and sugar. Of rice there was raised in 1879 110,181,378 tb, of which South Carolina produced upwards of 52 millions, Louisi- ana and Georgia producing, in about equal proportion, nearly all the remainder. The area cultivated for the sugar-cane was 227,776 acres, from which the crop was 178,872 hhds. of sugar and 16,578, 273 gallons of molasses. Of the sugar Louisiana produced 171,706 hhids.; Texas, 4951; Florida, 1273 ; Georgia, 601 ; South Carolina, 229; Alabama, 94; Mississippi, 18. In addition to the cane sugar of the far South, there were produced in the Middle and Northern States 12,792 Ib of sorghum sugar and 28,444,202 gallons of sor- ghum molasses ; while in the far North were produced 36,576,061 ib of maple sugar and 1,796,048 gallons of maple molasses. The chief sorghum-producing States are Missouri, Tennessee, Kentucky, Illinois, and Iowa. The chief maple-sugar States are Vermont, New York, Michigan, Ohio, Pennsylvania, and New Hampshire. The area sown in tobacco was 638,841 acres, the crop 472,661,157 tb. Fifteen States raised over 2 million pounds each; ten raised above 10 million each. The chief tobacco States were Kentucky, 171,120,784 tb; Virginia, 79,988,868; Pennsylvania, 36,943,272 ; Ohio, 34,735,235; Tennessee, 29,865,052; North Carolina, 26,986,213; Maryland, 26,082,147. The States next in order are Connecticut, Missouri, and Wisconsin.

In addition to the crops which have been mentioned, there were reported 102,272,135 barnyard fowls and 23,235,187 other fowls, producing 456,910,916 dozens of eggs; 25,748,208 tb of honey and 1,105,685 ib of wax ; $50,876,154 of orchard products, $21,761,250 of market-garden products, $95,774,735 of forest products; 29,480,106 Tb of broom corn ; 6,514,977 bushels of pease ; and 8,075,050 bushels of beans.

Since the census of 1880 the United States department of agriculture has published annually estimates of the successive

STATES [sratistics,

crops down to 1886. These estimates take the latest census figures for their basis, the percentages of increase or decrease being care. fully computed with reference to the statements of several thousands of local reporters. The following table (XV.) represents the estimated annual production of the cereal crops for the six or seven years quoted :—

Deer Area Planted, Crop, Average Yi Grain. in Acres. in Bushels. Enshioa ve

Indian corn (1880-86) .....| 68,435,634 1,639, 655,363 24

Wheat (1880-86) .....ce00 37,098,548 447,742,370 1211 Oats (1880-86).....cccessccees 19,940,322 533,012,913 26:7 Rye (1880-85) .....sssec00 00s 2,095,438 25,610,067 Joep Barley (1880-85).....c0.0se0s 2,300,021 50,829,950 PaneyL Buckwheat (1880—85)..... 858,313 11,089,007 12-9

2 Te a a

No statistics are available regarding the tenure of non-agricultural Tenure land ; but, of the 4,008,907 farms reported, 2,984,306 were culti- of farm vated by their owners, 322,857 by tenants for a fixed money rental, lands 702,244 by tenants paying a share of the produce as rent. Itthus appears that, of each 10,000 farms, 7444 were cultivated by owners, 804 were rented for fixed nioney payments, and 1752 were rented for a share of the produce.

The following table (XVI.) exhibits the distribution of the farms Size of of 1880 according to size, with the further distinction of the kind of farms tenure under which they were cultivated :— j

$e

i Rented for Rented for

ee >Y | Fixed Money | Shares of

‘ Rental. Produce,

2,601 875 876 85,456 22,904 26,529 122,411 41,522 90,816 460,486 97,399 223,689 804,522 69.663 158,625 1,416,618 84,645 194,720 66,447 3,956 5,569 25,765 1,393 1,420

|

MANUFACTURES.

Down to the revolution, the very beginnings of manufactures were prohibited in the American colonics by the policy of the mother country.

The history of American manufactures begins with the history of the United States. The natural resources of the country for the purposes of manufacture, whether in field, forest, or mine, were various and abundant in a high degree. The supply of coal was the marvel of the world, while the whole Atlantic coast was dotted over with immense water powers. Iron ores of the greatest variety, and often of high purity, were widely spread. The native woods were remarkable for their beauty, strength, and elasticity, A wealth of building stones, slates, and marbles underlay the sur- face, from New England to Tennessee and Alabama. Among fibres the soil had a high degree of adaptation to the production of those two which are the chief staples of textile manufacture. Indeed, in the cultivation of cotton this country has from the first been prac- tically beyond the competition of any other.

Yet during the first years after 1790, although nearly every branch of mill and factory industry had been undertaken, the United States at the best attained only respectable standing among the manufacturing nations of the second rank, As yet the Amer- ican people, as has been explained in a previous section, were em- ploying their thoughts and energies, their resources, their capital, in reaping the first-fruits of a virgin soil. While capital applied to the soil in England was yielding 3 per cent., intercst upon purely agricultural loans ranged from 8 to 15 per cent. in Indiana, Illinois, Wisconsin, and Iowa. While the English agricultural labourer was receiving from 9 to 18 shillings a week, the American farm hand was receiving from a dollar and a quarter to two dollars a day, according to the season of the year. At the same time hundreds of thousands of persons taking up farms in the new States, and paying such interest for capital and such wages for labour, saw their lands rise continuously in valuc through the growth of population and the intensification of settlement. Ina word, it has been the competition of the farm with the shop that from 1790 down to the present time has hindered the development of manufactures.

No attempt was made, either at the first or second census, to ob- tain the statistics of manufactures. In 1810 Congress provided for areport of all manufacturing establishments ; but it was found that this work had been so imperfectly done that no summary for the United States, or for any State, was possible. It is interesting to note that cotton cloth was set down at 80

cents a yard, pig iron at $66 a ton, bar iron at $151 a ton, while the average product of the grist mills was valued at 75 cents a bushel, and the average PI duct of the saw mill at $7.80 per 1000 feet. In 1820 and again » 1840 renewed attempts were made to obtain the statistics of manu factures, but the results were worthy of little consideration. –

In 1850, among extensive changes introduced into the a system, provision was made on an ample scale for statistics

ae ha Dp

manufactures ; and it is accordingly from that date that official information on this subject may be said to begin. The results then obtained were as follows (Table XVII.) :—

STATISTICS. |

Number of establishments ….....ceccccceceseees 123,025 Cayital employed ss.ccrcctc..os1cceessecsseeeeeeeeee $533, 245,351 Hands employed— INIA GS ie ecsessnecereeteceseenetontereereens 731,137 IN EMNAIE SMe es cose eee SRE SCHOD RUC COLE 2255922 TOfal ee eee 957,059 NWASOSIP AIAG rc ecisceverscccame eer cee $236,755,464 (BOSEOR MMECIIAIS!, «5.0:

These statistics were intended to include the production, not of factories merely, but of mechanic shops of every kind. It was found, however, that the returns did not generally embrace the products of artisans working singly at their trades. The mining industries were included in the returns of manufactures.

Between 1850 aud 1860 the capital employed had inercased to $1,009,855,715 ; the uumber of establishments was 140,433 ; the hands employed were—males 1,040,349, females 270,897, total 1,311,246 ; the wages paid were $378,878,966 ; the cost of mate- rials $1,031,605,092 ; the value of products $1, 885,861,676.

The decade 1860-70 was marked by a stupendous advance in mechanical enterprises. The totals are (Table XVIII.) :—

Number of establishments…….....ccccccssssecees 252,148 GUTLAnestrncscaticttes es yernernedevis crscvteseesnnete se $2,118, 208,769 Hands employed— INRIES IA DOVE IG! oc. ssvnsssessaeecce 1,615,595 Females above 16.,..... SgAgabogrenn 823,770 Children and youtlis…..... 114,628 TOGA Sse secsscs sees 2,053,996 WAIRIOSE DA Ui acce.s cssiesecsssssseuobeusscosasvsaasaales »» $775,584,343 COBUOMMAUCIIBIS!:..cccasscsssvicssocerarvinarevestecses $2,488, 427,242 VAIUG OF PNAGUCtS:...0506..cieserseess prncoononodoseage $4,232,325, 442

In addition to the foregoing statistics, it was ascertained that there were employed in manufactures 40,191 stcam engines, of 1,215,711 aggregate horse-power, and 51,018 water wheels, of 1,130,431 aggregate horse-power.

In preparation of the tenth census (1880) the provisions for the collection of statistics of manufactures were greatly extended and improved. The totals are as follows (Table XIX.) :—

Number of establislhments…....ccccscccesseceeee 253,852 CAP Ineyeceerssetetassecress sass +. $2,790, 272,606 Hands employed— Males above 16…... 2,025,335 Females above 16…. 531,639 Children and youths . 181,921 SOLEMN icacesedss+s —_— 2,738,895 Wit CORD e Cemerr scm restric erie tr eeiessedinsceise sens $947 953,795 COstHOMmat ella sive sscessscscccsceocssecesesescs ee $3, 396,823,549

Viale Of produchs…....ceerceorerrrssserrseess $5,969,979, 191 The geographical distribution of the manufactures of 1880 1s shown in the following table (XX.), the amounts being reduced to percentages :—

\ { Estab- | Capital | Mands | ,, | Area. lish- In- Em- mane Ria ments, } vested. | ployed. | “#!¢- NOKfhrAtantic …..../ 56 44°87 61:94 62°23 64°33 59°64 South Atlantie …..... | 9°4 10°16 5°89 7°59 4:99 5:26 Northern Central…....’ 25‘3 84°33 25°78 24°39 24°86 28°94 Southern Central…..... I 92023 55 3°75 3°85 HEE 3:47 Western (Cordilleran) .. 39°4 3°09 2°64 1:94 2°71 | 2°69

The first ten cities, in order of the number of persons employed in manufactures, were New York, 227,352; Philadelphia, 185,527, Chicago, 79,414 ; Boston, 59,213 ; Baltimore, 56,338 ; Cincinnati, 54,517; Brooklyn, 47,587; St Louis, 41,823; Pittsburgh, 36.930; San Francisco, 28,442.

RAILROADS.

The following figures show the construction of railroads in the United States, by decades :—1830-40, 2265 miles; 1840-50, 5046;

1850-60, 20,110; 1860-70, 16,090 ; 1870-80, 41,454 ; 1880-85,

44,002,—giving a total of 128,967 miles.

Poor’s Railroad Manual gives the cost of the railroads cou- structed down to 1885 as $7,037,627,350, including equipment ; capital stock, $3,817,697,832 ; bonded debt, $3,765,727,066 ; earnings for 1885—from passengers, $200,883,911; from freight, $519,690,992 ; from all sources, $765,310,419; net earnings, $266,488,998 ; interest paid on bonds, $179,681,323; dividends paid on stock, $77,672,105.

TELEGRAPHS.

The aggregate extent of telegraphic lines in the United States open for public business in 1887 excecded 170,000 miles, besides railway, Government, private, and telephone lines, of which the extent is not known. By far the greater part of this business in the United States is in the hauds of the Western Union Tele- graph Company, the main featurcs of whose operations, at certain successive dates, are shown in the following table (XXI.):—

{ory ry ‘ STioA a” ges 825 | Miles of | Milesof | No. of cor Mae Line, | Wire. | Offices, “Messages Sent,| “*°°epts. | oe | ee 1867 46,270 85,291 2,565 5,879,282 | $6,568,925

183 54,109 112,191 3,972 9,157,646 7,138,738 1875 72,833 179,496 6,565 17,158,710 9,564,575

1880 85,645 233,524 9,077 29,216,509 | 12,782,895 1885 147,500 462,283 14,184 42,096,583 | 17,706,834 1886 151,832 489,607 15,142 43,289,807 | 16,298,638 1887 156,814 524,641 15,658 47,394,530 | 17,191,910 The average toll per message was 36°3 cents in 1887. Since

the construction of this table, the purchase of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad telegraph lines has brought the mileage of the Western Union to about 162,000, with over 580,000 miles of wire.

PosTAL SERVICE.

The following table (XXII.), from the latest annual report of the postmaster-general, exhibits the growth of the postal services :— C—O

Fiseal No. of Miles of Revenue of Expenditure

Years, Post-Offices. Post Routes. Department. | during the Year.

1790 75 – 1,875 $37,935 $32,140 1805 903 20,817 280,804 213,994 1810 2,300 36,406 551,684 495,969 1820 4,500 72,492 1,111,927 1,160,926 1830 8,450 115,176 1,850,583 1,932,708 1840 13,468 155,739 4,543,522 4,718,236 1850 18,417 178,672 5,499,985 5,212,953 1860 28,498 240,594 8,518,067 19,170,610 1870 28,492 931,232 19,772,221 23,998,838 1880 42,989 343,888 33,315,479 36,542,804 1885 51,252 365,251 42 560,843 50,046,235 1886 53,614 378,586 43,948,423 51,004,744

Forrign COMMERCE.

The full official statistics of the foreign commerce of the United States only begin with 1820. Prior to that date considerable statis- tical material relating to Teen

trade and navigation was collected by Dr Seybert. Domestic | Produets of | Per cent,

Table XXIII. exhibits the Merchan- | Domestic | of Agr. valme of exports of domes: dise. Agriculture.| Products. So oe mpd cae: countries during each tent 33 ,524, 0985, : year from 1830 to 1860, | 1819 | Wiese | 92.4007 | sa.

together with the part | isso | 316/242‘423 | 256,560,972 | 81-12 borne therein by the pro- | 1870 | 455,208,341 361,188,483 79°34 ducts of domestic agricul- | 1880 | 823,946,353 | 685,961,091 | 83-25

ture. The table shows strikingly the constancy with which the exports of agricultural pro- duce have maintained their share in the total exports during 60 years. The following table (X XIV.) shows the value of all imports into the United States at intervals of five years from 1835 to 1880 :—

Value of Imports. | Value of Imports,

1835 $149,895,742 1860 $362,160,254 1840 107,141,519 1865 248,555,652 1845 117,254,564 1870 462,377,587 1850 178,138, 318 1875 595,861,248

1855 261,468, 520 1880 | 760,989,046

In 1884, 1885, and 1886 respectively the total exports of merchandise amounted to $740,513,609, $742,189,755, and $679, 524,830, and the imports to $667,697,698, $577,527,329, and $635,436,136. The same years the exports of gold and silver amounted to $67,133,383, $42,231,525, and $72,463,410, and the imports to $37,426,262, $43,242,323, and $38,593, 656.

The following table (X XV.) gives the value, in round millions of dollars, of leading exports of domestic agriculture during each fifth year since 1860 : —

Provisions, a including attle, “taw.” | Stuffs, | ‘Tobueco, | Meats and | Sheep, and : a Dairy llogs. ‘ Products. 1860 192 24 16 17 1 |

1865 7 54 42 54 0 : 1870 227 72 21 31 1 1875 191 111 25 8&3 2 1880 212 288 16 132 15 1885 202 160 22 107 14

Table XXVI., p. 826, exhibits the value, in dollars, of the im- ports from, and exports to, each of the principal foreign countrics in 1886.

The following are the eleven principal exporting cities, with the value of the goods going out through them in 1886, and percentage of total United States exports:—New York, 314 millions of dollars (49°26 per cent.); New Orleans, 83 (12°15); Boston, 54 (7°96); Bal- timore, 36 (5°27); Philadelphia, 34 (4°97); San Francisco, 30 (4°45); Savannah, 20 (2:99); Charleston, 18 (2°6); Galveston, 17 (2°5);

XXITT. — 104

826

UN

ie

TABLE XXVIJ.—Exports and Imports.

Exports Per from U.S. | cent. of to each Total Country. |Exports.
844,927,973 51°79 60,923,857 9°15

40,006,096 6-01

31,953,124 4°80 25,376,353 3°81 22,613,399 3°40

14,536,664 2-18

13,048,846 1°96

13,047,762 1:96

10,981,915 1°65

9,705,335 1-47 7,518,277 113

6,856, 077 1°03 6,480,738 ‘97 5,294, 798 ‘79 4,350,141 “65

4,331,770 “65

4,306,205 “65

4,044,384 61

| 8,125,130 47 | 8,115,899 “47

341,982 | “05

1,950,267 29 2,442,171 37 2,695,488 “40

1,110,545 ‘17

Foreign Country. Great Britain and Ireland ….. ses Germanys escseeseeres Saseheteensssensieces PMANGON scccssevessesicescccsvas

VGStUlLdGterascrscndscscccess stesso eres BelPiams:

fo) 2 TiN aesBende sa cepencoeeds DEBSCROSCACBNS British Possessions in Australasia

RISSTAIMNLULOPCsiccsscsrccesss-sseeeve (COTTE), “eransanon 2608000 me

United States of Colombia……..... British East Indies Argentine Republic ….00….0+0000… IROVDUNBAL, .. saacaseassesesexesres Hong Kong UAUBAT ee cceccecseres Hawaiian Islands… “ee ae DWAGZGLIAINGL....ssceccctsscrccsesoveacates Spanish Possessions Philippine Islands).....+... PAUISIUIMs cverescontscnsumemiesectsersiesces Centra] American States…..... eb WIETIOZAUICL OY cs scesesclcasanveceessscetaces UU AY sss: -.csceoene sadsdssecarssccetees

Per Imports

cent. of | into U.S. Total from each

Imports,| Country. 24°28 | 154,254,054 10°88 | 69,154,997 9°98 | 63,417,430 5°91 | 37,496,338 11°18 | 71,053,146 1°44 9,178,513 1°34 8,523,846 2°65 | 16,870,636

‘93 | 5,930,209

‘61 | 3,859,360 50 | 3,183,153 2-99 | 18,972,963 1°68 | 10,687,972 6°59 | 41,907,532 ‘47 | 3,008,921 271 | 17,247,825

‘79 | 5,022,346

22) 1,844,167

17 | 1,072,459

2°34 | 14,885,573 1°54 | 9,805,707 2:26 | 14,353,981

1°51} 9,566,912

6,603,058

‘98 | 5,915,413 ‘91 | 5,791,621 78. | 4,995,948

Norfolk, 12 (1°71); Huron, Mich., 8 (1°22 per cent.).

It thus

appears that, of the aggregate exports from the United States, all but 7°92 per cent. (about 54 millions of dollars) go out from these

eleven ports.

By far the greater part of the exports of New Orleans,

Savannah, Charleston, Galveston, and Norfolk consists of cotton. It is the shipment of this staple from Southern ports which in- creascs the number of important exporting cities.

On the other hand, all but 8°48 per cent. of the imports, amounting to 54 millions, were in 1886 received at seven ports as follows:— New York, 419 millions of dollars (65°9 per cent. of imports into United States); Boston, 58 (9°2); San Francisco, 37 (5°8); Phila- delphia, 37 (5°76); Baltimore, 12 (1°84); Chicago, 10 (1°6); New Orleans, 8 (1°28 per cent.).

The following table (XX VII.) exhibits the division of the imports of 1886 into two classes as free or dutiable, with the amount of duty collected on each of five principal groups of articles:—

Classes,

(A) Articles of food and live animals… (B) Articles in a erude condition which enter into the various pro- cesses of domestic LMGHISETYrwesssoeannens (C) Articles wholly oF partially manu- factured for use as materfals in the manufacturing and mechanical arts…. (D) Articles = manu- factured ready for consumption…..... (E) Articles of volun- tary use, luxuries,

Value,

Ad valo- rein rate Per cent.

Duty. on aire a ing Free of duty.} Dutiable. able. eye \Per cent.

$83,752,308 |$112,483,925 | $61,064,744 } 54-26 32°42 102,488,364 | 41,613,658 | 12,863,115 | 30°91 6°83 10,689,156 | 67,855,317 | 20,115,152 | 29°64 10°68 12,446,211 | 113,824,644 | 55,653,853 | 48°90 29°54 2,204,725 | 78,030,511 | 38,682,533 | 49°58 20°53 $211,530,759 |$418,778,055 |$188,379,397 | 45°55 |100-00

SHIPPING.

Shipbuilding was one of the earliest arts developed in the American colonies, and was prosecuted in the United States with the highest success until iron steamers began to drive out wooden sailing vessels. The following table (XX VIII.) exhibits the tonnage of the merchant marine of the country at ten-year intervals from

1790 to 1880:—

Total.

478,377

972,492 1,424.783 1,280,167 1,191,776 2,180,764 8,535,454 5,353,808 4,246,507

Date. Sailing Vessels, | Steamers.

1790 478,377

1800 972,492

1810 1,424,783

1820 1,280,167 a0

1830 1,127,304 64,472

1840 1.978425 202,339

1850 3,009,507 525,947

1860 4,485,931 867,987

1870 8.171,412 1,075.095 2,856,476 1,211,558

| 1880

4,068,034

st A2Tns

The decline in the American shipping interest since its maximum in 1860 is greater than would appear from the foregoing table, since the aggregate is kept up by the large lake, river, and coast fleets engaged in the coasting trade, which is by law confined to American vessels, The decline in registered tonnage, 4.¢., that engaged in ocean traffic, since 1860 is shown by the followin figures :—1860, 2,546,237 tons; 1865, 1,602,583 ; 1870, 1,516,800 ;

1875, 1,553,827; 1880, 1,352,810.

The decline above noted was due in the first instance to the war of 1861-65. About that time occurred the world-wide substitution of iron steamers for wooden sailing ves-_ ——-——_-—____

[sTATIstics,

sels or wooden steamers. In the new in- ane Foreign | dustry the American people have never oes. | achieved any marked success, while the | 18¢0 507 955 | law precludes the registering as Ameri- | 1865 | 167 437 can of vessels built abroad. Hence it is ee be ne that the American merchant marine | jg99/ 9209 1309 never recovered from the losses sustained | 1885 298 1108

between 1861 and 1865, and that the ————-—__ commerce of the country is carried on in an increasing proportion by foreign vessels. The latter fact is shown strikingly in the accompanying table (X XIX.) of exports and imports, in millions of dollars, carried in American and foreign vessels respectively.

In addition to the goods carried in vessels, about 57 million

dollars' worth were in 1885 carried in cars and other land vehicles,

BANKING AND CURRENCY.

Mention has already been made (see above p. 775, § 272) of the issue of legal tender paper money, by the national Government, in 1862, and (p. 776, § 280) of the establishment of the national banking system of 1868. Specie payments were resumed on January 1, 1879. The following statement (Table XXX.), pre- pared at the office of the United States treasurer, exhibits the classification of the circulating medium of the United States on June 30, 1887, stating separately the amount of each class which is in the United States treasury, in the national banks, and in

circulation:— In Circulation. Total.

In Treasury. In National

Banks,

Gold coin and $ $ 3 $

bullion…….! 277,979,653.61 | 98,187,439.47 | 278,403,241.92| 654,520,335 Gold certificates..} 30,261,380 54,274,940 86,950,497 121,486,817 Silver certificates 8,425,183 8,535,479 138,582,538 145,543,150 Silver dollars and d

bullion….,.....) 221,897,045.77 6,343,213 49,205,508.23 | 277,445,767 Subsidiary silver.| 26,963,9384.20| 2,813,138.80 45,770,726 75,647 709 National bank

NNOEEB). .+r00rrcesene 2,362.585 25,420,212 251,484,991 279,217,788 Legaltendernotes| 28,783,796.79| 74,482,342 243,414,877.21 | 346,681,016 Certificates of de-

posit, currency 310,000 8,770,000 ond 9,080,000 Fractional cur-

rericy, estimated 2,366 564,266 6,377,284 6,943,916 Compound inte-

ss NOtES….060- wes aa 192,880 192,880 One and two year

notes of 1868…) e 65,605 65,605 Old demand notes a 57,130 57,180 State bank circu-

IAGO, Sees cesstss 98,697 98,697

591,985,894.37 274,341,030,27 | 1,050,553,975.36 |1,916,880,900

It needs to be stated that, in order to obtain the uet circulating medium, the amounts given in the foregoing table should be reduced by the total amount of gold, silver, or currency certificates, inasmuch as the funds which these certificates represent are 1n- cluded in the aggregate. These deductions would leave the net amount $1,640,770,933. To obtain the amount actually in the hands of the people, it would also be necessary to deduct the quantities of the other elements held by the treasury and by the national banks. The following table (XXXI.) exhibits the coinage of the United States by successive periods from 1793 to

1887 :— i

SS

ee

Fiscal Years. Gold. Silver. | Minor. Tattle Average, 1793-1800 $101,429 $144,045 $7,939 i », 1801-1810 $25,074 856,917 15,125 aoe » 1811-1820 816,651 597,081 19,116 beard », 1821-1830 190,309 1,678,105 15,141 Wwe et » 1881-1840 | 1,875,649 2,730,996 34,282 pre » 1841-1850 | 8,923,982 2,236,813 38,068 Lae » 1851-1860 | 33,023,709 4,658,218 124,961 Le », 1861-1870 | 29,240,955 1,318,860 847,324 ae ae » 1871-1880 | 39,927,730 | 15,459,036 238,553 aE ri Actual, 1881 78,733,864 | 27,649,967 405,110 | 10 pete ” 1882 89,418,448 | 27,783,389 644,758 we Py 1883 35,936,928 | 28,835,470 1,428,307 6250922 – 1884 27,932,824 | 28,773,388 1,174,710 pa i ~ 1885 24,861,124 | 28,848,960 527,557 aoe A) F 1886 34,077,380 | 30,022,348 17,378 ee aeal me ms 1887 22,393,279 | 34,366,484 943,651 57.703, pal

Net fe D

The following table (XXXII.) exhibits the resources and lia- bilities of the national banks, expressed in millions of dollars, on dates near the 1st of October of the years 1878, 1882, and 1886 :—

Sm ic Sh ha

STATISTICS. |

Oct. 1, Oct. 3, Oct. 7, Resources and Liabilities. 1878. 1882, 1886.

2053 2269 2852

Banks. Banks, Banks, Resources, ILGHTS oneabatioootada ee HCeGULSH Hore oeactevierien 834-1 1243°2 14510 Bonds for Circulation…….....cscssecccsecc, 347°6 857°6 258°5 Other United States Bonds …..... 94°7 37°4 32°4 Other Stocks, Bonds, &C….csecescecccccsce, 36°9 66°2 81°8 Due from other Banks …….....600000006….., 138‘9 198-9 241°4 ARSAIPESIATC (rscsste, t.. cnet e 46°7 46°5 54:1 TLE Cler, code a stcaetierrcc ir sau tene 30°7 102°9 156°4

Legal Tender Notes ..,...sscceeeseccecscecccs., 64:4 63°2 62°8 National Bank Notes …..cccccccccesceesceeces., 16°9 20°7 22°7 Clearing House Exchanges ….....060…., 82:4 208°4 95°5 United States Certificates of Deposit…... Ouuy. 8:7 5°9 Due from the United States Treasury 16°5 17:2 14:0 Other Regoueester nes cceeee eens .oce. 24°9 28°9 37°4 Totals,..... 1767°3 2399°8 2513°9 Liabilities,

Capital Stock…..... Wie esusisenceenees 466-2 483°1 548-2 SUP MUN ccancsaosesssseseeses ene 116°9 132°0 157°2 Undivided Profits….....060.0..6 40°9 61:2 66°5 Cincilatlontersssssscosteesreere ek 301°9 315-0 228°7 Due toMDepowitorsie..,..cs:-/00esersc oe 668°4 1134°9 1189°8 Due to other Banks ….....ccccce0seeeeeeseeec,, 165-1 259°9 308°6 CONES GOLD UAB IER eorenoneenaesceasenucepiocetcee 7:9 1367 14:9 Totals….....) 2165°8 2399°8 2513°9

reports for 1886 (Table XXXIII.).

Resources, Loans on Real Estate

63°5

IRURAS LOCK va ceesecsaseoteseitee set cece 39°0 EUQHIBESEWTO Me araaenacysvesecessaccers ce 31:0 Other Investments ….....cscececees 79°0 PESIOMIB OS sicceacsarvstreiaiisieiecannyss cil Due from Baiiks,.....00cccecassee 43°7 WAS Heese stesceieasssececccheveeeceees 19°8

Total…... 1260°8 Totaly… 1260°8

I NTERIOR POLITICAL ORGANIZATION.

The United States is, as has been seen, divided into thirty-eight States, eight Territories, and the District of Columbia. Each State and Territory isin turn divided into more or fewer counties, except only in the case of Louisiana, where primary divisions of the State are called parishes, the functions and relations of the parish being, however, substantially the same as those of the counties of the surrounding States. The number of organized countics in 1880 was 2444. The number of unorganized eounties upon the frontier, laid

out upon the map but not yet sufficiently filled by population to justify the completion of their political organization, was 161. The number of organized counties in the several States has a wide range,—from 3 in Delaware, 5in Rhode Island, 8 in Connecticut, 10 in New Hampshire, to 114 in Missouri, 117 in Kentucky, 137 in Georgia, 160 in Texas, B = The political function of the county differs widely among the

several States. In general, it may be said that in the north-east, Where the counties are few, the county bears but a slight relation to the affairs of the people. It is the unit of real estate record. | Courts are, indeed, held at the county seat, but judges who have equal jurisdiction in other counties there administer laws which run equally over the entire State. The commissioners of the | county have authority over certain main roads, This said, all is said. The county means almost nothing to the citizen. It is the | so-called “town” (7.e., township) which in this region has the | power to deal directly with schools, which administers poor relief, } which builds and keeps in repair most of the roads and bridges, | Which has the charge of the public peace, which holds nearly all | the authority which, by the laws of the State, is vested anywhere for promoting the general welfare. These ‘‘small elemental republics,” as President Jefferson called them, absorb a large j part of the political interest of the people ; their names are the | objects of much affection and pride to their inhabitants; their

boundaries can only be changed by the legislature of the State, jand this is only done from important considerations of public eonvenience, and that too, generally, with their own consent.

On the other hand, in the South and extreme West, where the number of counties is very large, the county exercises or controls the exercise of nearly all the powers, excepting in the case of cities and incorporated towns, which by the laws of the State are eonceded to any political agency. The geographical subdivisions

er 21s 827

of the county become here of comparatively little, sometimes of very little, importance. In soine States their boundaries may be changed by county judges or county commissioners, for trivial, perhaps for purely temporary

reasons. In some States these sub- divisions of the county are little more than voting districts. In other States they are convenient units of political administration,

Midway, both geographically and politically, between the two groups which have been indicated, are many States, originally settled largely by emigrants from New England and New York, in which the political powers conceded by the constitution and laws of the several States are divided, not very unequally, between the county and the township. The county, as a whole, here takes charge of a very much larger range of publie interest than in the north-east. On the other hand, the township has much of the political power and dignity which belongs to the New England town. The aggregate number of such subdivisions of counties in all the States and Territories, so far as ascertained, is 26,682.

Law and usage differ very widely among the American States Tncorpo-

regarding the incorporation of cities, towns, and villages. In rated Massachusetts no town is incorporated of less than 10,000 towns inhabitants. In the West and South, villages of two and three and hundred inhabitants are sometimes incorporated. In some cases, cities. when a township acquires sufficient population it is made a city, embracing the entire area, including perhaps a large rural region. In other cases, only the closely occupied district is embraced within the municipal limits, and the township continues to maintain its political existence. In the latter class of cases it sometimes happens that the inhabitants of the borough or village are members of the township for certain purposes, though not for others ; at other times the township and the borough, or in- corporated village, become as distinct as if they were two town- ships or two boroughs. The number of incorporated cities in the United States is 969, of incorporated towns and villages 4,613, of boroughs 582. In two cases, New York and Philadelphia, a city makes up anentire county. In two cases, St Louis and Baltimore, a large city forms no part of a county. The District of Columbia has no county organization, while the eity of Washington, contained therein, has no municipal eharter.

TAXATION,

The taxing powers within the United States are as follows :—

A. The national Government, whose revenue powers are only limited by—(a) the provision of the constitution elich prohibits all duties on exports, and (b) the provision that all direct taxes must be levied in proportion to popnlation, —a provision which deprives direct taxes of nearly all their efficiency for revenue purposes ;

B. The several States, whose revenue powers are only limited by -—(a) restrictions in their respective constitutions, and (b) the gencral principle that those powers must not be exercised in such a way as to contravene laws of the United States, or to destroy sources of the national revenue, although a State may prohibit within its borders the sale of liquors, from which the United States treasury derives a considerable part of its reccipts.

C. Within each State, powers of taxation, to a determinate or to an indeterniinate extent, as the case may be, are by the consti- tution and laws of the State conferred, almost always for strictly defined purposes, (1) upon counties, (2) upon cities, boroughs, and incorporated villages, and (3) in nearly all the States, though in widely varying degrees, upon the primary geographical divisions of counties, such as the “town” of New England and the “ town- ship” of the Middle and Western States.

The revenues of the several States, and of the counties, cities, townships, &c.,are generally derived from direct taxes upon property, real and personal, although in some States licences and fees and taxes on franchises and incomes bear a not inconsiderable part. The revenues of the United States are, and have historically been, mainly derived from two species of indirect taxes, viz., customs duties on imports and excise duties on articles as produced or consumed within the country, notably liquors and tobacco. At three several periods, viz., 1800-02, 1814-17, and 1863-71, direct taxes have contributed considerable amounts to the national revenue. At times the proceeds of the sales of publie lands have formed an important element of the receipts of the general Govern- ment ; but in the main it has been the accepted policy to sell lands to actual settlers at rates so low as to be inconsistent with the object of revenue. Indeed, under the homestead law, large portions of the publie domain have been given away to settlers, while even larger amounts have been alienated in aid of schools, publie

improvements, &c. A detailed table, prepared by Prof. A. B. Hart, shows that up to 1884 192,584,116 acres had been sold, 162,230,099 had been granted to States and corporations for inter- nal improvements, and 325,901,100 had been granted (167, 483,506 to individuals and 158,417,594 to States) for other pur poses, — making a total of 680,715,315 acres.

At the tenth census (1880) an effort was made to obtain statisties covering the amounts raised, in one year, under all the taxing powers authorized and exercised in the United States. The diffi-

Reeeipts and ex- pendi- ture from

1791;

in 1886.

culty lay wholly in obtaining the facts relating to revenues collected by counties and by taxing agencies below the county. The aggregate results, as ascertained for 1879, were as follows (Table XXXIV.) :—

Receipts into the U.S. treasury (ordinary revenue)..... $272 ,322,137 Receipts into the State (or Territorial) treasnries…..... 52,019,955 Receipts into the county treasurics 69,606,571 Reccipts into the treasuries of cities, boroughs, or in- corporated villages, and of townships and other sub-divisions of counties…..... Jeabecthopooapoornencocncrmnsticos

Total…... $584,980, 614 The aggregate receipts into the United States treasury, beginning in 1791, have been (in millions of dollars) as follows:— from customs, 5642 ; from internal revenue, 3449; from direct taxes, 28; from public lands, 241; from bank dividends, 10; miscellaneous, 568; total, 9938. The net ordinary expenditures of the United States Government from 1791 to 1886 have been as follows (in millions of dollars):—war, 4563 ; navy, 1106; Indians, 230 ; pensions, 900 ; miscellaneous, 1938; total, 8737. The foregoing is exclusive of payments on accouut of the principal or interest of the public debt. The net ordinary receipts into the treasury for

1886 (the fiscal year ends June 30) were as follows :—from customs, $192,905,023 ; froin internal revenue, $116,805,937 ; from direct taxes, $108,240 ; from public lands, $5,630,999 ; miscellaneous, $20,989,528 ; total, $336,439,727. Of the receipts from internal revenue in 1886 $69,000,000 in round numbers were from spirits, $20,000,000 from fermented hquors, 28,000,000 from tobacco. The net ordinary ex- enditnres for 1886 were as follows :—war, $34,324,153; navy, 13,907,888 ; Indians, $6,099,158 ; pensions, $63,404,864 ; miis- cellaneons, 74,166,929 ; total, $191,902,992. The foregoing state- ment is exclusive of payments on account of principal or interest of the public debt.

191,031,951

Pusuic Dest.

The Goverument set out, in 1790, with a revolutionary debt of about 75 millions of dollars. This debt continued without important change until 1806, when a reduction began, continuing until 1812, when the debt was about 45 millions. The then ensuing war with England carried the debt up to 127 millions in 1816. This was reduced to 96 millions in 1819, to 84 millions in 1825, and to 24 millions in 1832, and in the three years following was extin- guished. The crisis of 1837, and the financial difficulties ensuing, created indebtedness, fluctuating in amount, which at the begin- ning of the war with Mexico was about 16 millions. At the con- clusion of peace the debt had risen to 63 millions, near which point it remained autil about 1852, from which time successive reductions brought it down to 28 millions in 1857. The financial crisis of that year cansed an increase, which continued until the imminence of the civil war, when it rose from 65 millions in 1860 to 91 millions in 1861, to 514 in 1862, to 1120 in 1863, to 1816 in 1864, to 2681 in June and its maximnm (2845 millions) in August 1865.

Of the outstanding principal of the debt in 1886, 158 millions bore interest at 3 per cent., 738 millions at 4 per cent., 250 millions at 44 per cent., making the interest-bearing debt 1146 millions. The debe bearing no interest amounted to 629 millions, making the aggregate 1775 millions. The cash in the treasury on the Ist of July of that year reached 493 millions,

leaving the total debt, less cash in the treasury, 1282 millions. The annual interest-charge was at this date 454 millions.

At the tenth census (1880) an effort was made to ascertain the indebtedness of all States, Territories, counties, cities, towns, townships, &c., with the following result (in millions of dollars) :— total funded debt, 1118; floating debt, 84; gross debt, 1202; sink- ing fund, 145; net debt, 1057, The total net debt was made up as follows (in millions of dollars):—debts of States and Territories, 234; debts of counties, 124; debts of townships, 32; debts of school districts, 17; debts of cities and towns, 649,

PENSIONS.

The number of pensioners on the rolls, June 30, 1887, with the amounts due the several classes, at existing rates per year, will be found in the following table (XXXV.) :—

f Number. | Amount. Wants IvehS¢ Lice onnenorarnocseeuccice|| 294,445 $36,063,345 ye BREN clay y Cusseta 85,010 13,313,455 Nav Nan yalidete os. scccssseetoc snes | 3,281 429,288 NAVY... .corcesvoovee \ Widows, ON… 1,973 405,288 5 MUL VAMONSephenesadscedsves’ess! 069 103,392 Waerormlele is s:2. Widows, &.s.-scsccscce 11/831 1,703,664 rere sas ISAO Bacenicoococonnacoscn 7,503 720,288 ‘Wea avatin BeaICS Myra ova, MC. cc ..-0 sco. “805 85,920

406,007 $52,824,640

Civit SERVICE.

It is impossible to make even an approximation to the number of persons in the civil service within the United States, including the officers of States, connties, cities, towns, &c. There is no com-

Sf 2°) ee

plete and exact statement available even as to those who are in the civil service of the national Government. An attempt has been made, for the present purpose, to reach an approximation to that number. This has beeu

done by counting the names on 1200 pages of the blue-book of 1885, under the several heads there mentioned. Such a process involves a liability to minor errors, in addition to whatever duplications or omissions may occur in the printed lists, The results are offered merely as an approximation to facts, Legislative branch, 427; executive branch, 114,852; judicial branch, 2876; total, 118,155. The executive branch includes— executive, 22; state department, 467; war department, 9050; navy department, 1637; interior departinent, 6115; treasury depart- ment, 14,505; post-office department, 79,110; department of agriculture, 203; national museum, 154; Fish Commission, 118: Government printing office, 2238; government of the District of Colnmbia, 1200; miscellancous, 33.

[STATISTICS,

ARMY.

The following table (XXXVI.) exhibits the personnel of the army on January 1, 1887 :—

Officers. Hood | Professors Cadets,

Genenalloficeshs.:cccsssssecnsooetessce 10 an wo Adjutant-general's department…. 17 cas F Inspector-general's department… 7 Judge-advocate -general's dept…. 8 Quartermaster's department…..... 61 Subsistence department….....e0. 26 58 Medical department….....sc0000 195 140 PAY GepATtMON t,o… sscscestcoevsrsere 48 500 ! Corps Of ENZINCELS,.....000.c0cccere 109 450 Ordnance departmenNt….....0006 59 400 | Sipmal COnPSiiiscssecsccssssessasseatsnees 17 470 FOStiChADIWINStecs.ccseecssecossreececes 30 pe | Ten regiments of cavalry….....06+ 432 7,970 | Five regiments of artillery. ..... 2380 2,650 : | Twenty-five regiments of infantry| 877 12.625 60 aa MalitaryqaCademyaeeserssssccesere: sna ano 7 344 Non-commissioned staff un-

attached to regiments…..... 800 | Enlisted men unattached to regi-

MIVEMUS Sv atonoasesevedscwostersanensee ses 265 Indian scouts……... m pan 200 eee tp General scrvicc clerks and mes- | |

SUMMONS Tcsaearesecerseresstessoactescents sve 70 i {

Total regular army…... 2176 25,640 or aa

Organized and equipped militia,

USB Bis. oss douse: ssseceneuevectessosancees 6535 75,175

Navy.

The following table (XXXVII.) exhibits the personnel of the navy on January 1, 1887 :—

Commissioned officers, line ….....008 750 Commissioned officers, staff — Mcdical department 163 Pay department 111 Engineers…..... 228 Other staff officer 64 CAGES. covssscsscecccntes 243 Non-commissioned officer: » =185 FnSted MENTANd DOVS)...s+s0necses:encscenesstoeeranenemm 8250 Marine Corps. Commissioncd officers .. SosEadondoceC 73 AUIMSUCUMIMEN yc ocesssescoseevscsscesedecssucacnstntsaeet teeta 1500

The following table (XXXVIIL) exhibits the number of vessels constituting the navy of the United States, according to class and condition, on January 1, 1887 :—

In In Building or Commission. Ordinary. Repairing. First-rate armoured ….....ss0ec0s 1 a 2 Second-rate unarmoured.,..... 10 ans Third-rate armoured …....0.. 000 il 2 5 Third-rate unarmoured…..... 17 Pc | 5 Fourth-rate armoured ,.....0.000« ae 1 oe Fourth-rate unarmoured …..... 4 a 1 TUS Ts sseiesev:vesrsascecccacaresassees ll ay ove SHINE) VESBEISisesccowcnsseeseresse ts 12 and | ee TO. cisccathaeee 56 | 14 | 13

‘Yen are unserviceable ; 3 of these are used as receiving ships, the others condemned and authorized to be sold.

EDUCATION.

The institution, control, and maintenance of public schools are in the hands of the several States, although the United States Government has made liberal grants of lands, in aid of ae instruction, to the States formed out of the public domain, ani also for the endowment of colleges of agriculture and the meehame arts, to all the States. ; f

The following table (XX XIX.) presents the leading a a the public school statistics at four dates between 1876 and 1886:

eit D> § fF APT HES

7 Aegere Daily TABLE XLI.—Religtous Denominations.

| . Number of Public School Enrolinent, 7 – ; a b Attendance. . EGCHEIR: Expenditure. Denomination. Ministers. Members. 1876 8,363,738 4,066,848 249,283 $84,005,333 i — = or Monks. 1880 9,781,521 5,805,342 282) 644 “80,032,838 Nee, ; ee eMREO | 3,286,168 1885 11,169,923 6,900,625 319,549 110,884,657 Pe me eile ou es ~ OC = oF 5 HODGCObDSSqnonaon . 2,208 ue Ta89, 207 Freee Xe 528,060 peeled Primitive Methodist…..... 38 2465 : 5 5 : Free Metliodist. ..... 25 2,08 _ The so-called public schools, although differing widely as to effi- Fs cuit Musicven pe 433 17737 ciency between new States and old States, between rich States and | | Congregationalist Methodist… 20,000 poor States, all conform closely to a traditional type, except so far | | PYotestant Methodist…....eee- 2,146 119,110 as differences arise according as schools are in sparsely or in densely Episcopal 18,979 3,112,520 settled districts through the opportunity for grading the pupils | | Union American M.Evsssecssscoss-ose. 91 3,500 which exists in the latter case. As regards, however, schools giving yet dew ML. By. seeeeseee 530 84,495 instruction higher than or other than that given in the ordinary | | 47j020 M-E. Zion Pe Bee public school, the greatest and most confusing differences exist as | | Methodist Episcopal South…cc,| 8.644 828,035 tu designation, organization, and schemes of instruction. Methodist Episcopal …....0000-0.| 11,042 1,698,336 The following table (XL.) presents the results of the compila- eee oe | tions of the statistics of schools of the various classes by the United | | six Principle.es.ces+ssecsosesesesseceeosee- 17 fe ellis 746 “ae | States Bureau of Education :— Seventh-Day ….. 103 8,576 ae Sk eee Anti-Mission ….. 622 41,660 Schools.| Teachers.} Pupils. Free-Will…....

1,294 74,851 = 2 ere Bc. | Reena | alec Fenie Baptistivesseccssss ccccndncotctnct ene 16,680 2,302,272 IBNOUIMAUSCHOOISPee ss cccvesc-cccsheconicsserecses ys ane 153 1394 40,325 Commercial und business colleges… é 239 1040 47,176 PRESBYTERIAN— 7,897 885,468 KAN GSTB ALTON SH .<....0.s.0000e-0nve tote Peal 407 945 | 21,640 Reformed..... ne 32 5,876 Institutions for secondary instruction. ... 1440 7566 | 151,050 United..... vl 647 81,226 INE PAMALOMYESCHOOISs....0.02026 essccatrsncsesensesssee reall 197 1434 21,031 Cumberland..... 6 1,366 98,068 | Institutions for superior instruction of women..... 204 2123 | 27,143 Presbyterian South.... 1,014 119,583 | Universities and COlleges....csscscescsssssssssseceecccevese 8345 4720 67,642 IPTESDYACILAM terserecescss essa caatavorceso cc / 4,853 580,720 | Schools of science ..... “anne i 90 974 16,532 | Schools of theology ....ssssccssseceeeees 142 803 6,344 Lutheran..... borrrenoortee 3,025 569,389 PSCHOOION lA sereteetce. cs ctteeicrmemcesca| 49 283 3,054 Christian (Disciples of Chris 2,658 556,941 | Schools of medicine, of dentistry, and of pharmacy} 175 2829 16,407 Congregational . 3,574 384,800 | Training schools fOr NUrses,.....ssseccccsesssvvcseseccevces 29 139 837 | Institutions for deaf and GUMD.....sccseceeesereseeses 61 596 7411 | EPIscoPaL— 3,215 | 336,669 Institutions for the Dlind.....0006 29 623 2,412 Reformed Episcopal....,.....see 66 10,451 | Schools for feebic-minded children... 16 636 2.942 Protestant Episcopal.....0....— 3,149 326,218 PPLRCLOTINSCHOOIB rece. sconeAOC emS ne tiGihanssaseenanssteestisr te st 2,178 155,579 D = eli was = Reformed, in United States……..... 755 154,008 United Evangelical…..... nobor 425 144,666 RELIGION. Evangelical Association….....00+- 1,343 99,710 The census has since 1850 attempted to obtain the number of Fe ioe ala 107 as 11,100 pines church edifices, with the aggregate number of sittings, belonging | | Seventh Day… 138 14,738 to each principal sect or denomination. The results have not been | | SCCONd..esssesesceceeeses 501 63,500 highly satisfactory, either as to accuracy or as to classification. At | | phe prethren (Dunkarrds) ..ccsssssseess 1,589 88,669 the census of 1880 the attempt to collect the statistics of churches | | Reformed. i rica… ‘ ‘ eformed, in Americu..,.... A 515 77,269 proved an almost total failure. It seems best, therefore, to AOU MOI || PHUICNSrerecccceseeeees 878 74,313 the present purpose, the . oe (Table XLI.) presented by the repre- se all ap ae an sentatives of the various denominations, as they have been

revised | | Gnurch of God (Winebrennarian).... 492 90.176 and digested by a competent authority, the Rev. Dr W. H. Dupuy, | | Unitarian.cccsciessssseeesseeenene 382 19,784 only adding the remark that no statement of this kind can be made eo Dee ia ; a4 mm . . EWISIl.covecccvecssercescceveesoes r 2 b to meet the views of all persons interested. The statement of Di New Jerusalem (Swedenborgian).... 92 5,538

Dupuy does not include the Roman Catholic Church, whose author- ities claim from six and a half to seven millions of adherents.

Abolition, 752, 763, 767,

769,

Acadia, 734.

Adams, Pres. John, 739,

741, 743, 745, 752, 755-6.

Adams, Pres. John Quin- cy, 761-2.

Adirondacks, 792.

Arthur, Pres, Chester A.,

785, 787.

Articles of Association,

740.

Articles of Confederation,

746.

Asiento, the, 734.

Assembly, 730, 737, 739,

INDEX.

Bragg, B., 778, 788,

Brandywine, battle of, 744.

Breckinridge, J. C., 772,

774, 788,

Brown, John, 772.

Buchanan, Pres, James, fale

Buckingham, W, A., 773,

Chancellorsville, 778,

Chandler, Zachariah, 773.

Charleston, 743-5, 764. Charter governments,730. Chase, Salmon P., 770. Chattanooga, 778. Chesapeake Bay, 746, 748. Chicago, 765,

Coloured race, 821. Columbia college, 732, Columbian plateau, 798. Commerce, 732, 747, 750,

7538, 825,

Concord, battle of, 740, Confederate States, 773-4. Confederation, Articles of,

(F. A. W.)

Credit Mobilier, 783,

Cuba, 771.

Currency, continental, 742; State, 747; Fed- eral, 775, 783.

Dakota, 782.

Dane, Nathan, 747,

Dartmouth College case,

Agricultural machinery, 747. 788, Chickamauga, 778. 746, s 785. 769, 776. Atlanta, 779. Buena Vista, 767. Chineseimmigration,782, | Congregational Church, | Davis, Jefferson, 770, Agriculture, $23, Bad lands, 799, Bull Run, battle of, 775, | Chippewa, battle of, 760. 731, 829, 773, 779-80,

Alabama, 761,

) “Alabama,” the, 777, 782. Alaska, 782.

Albany, 754.

) Alien laws, 756.

} Alleghany Mountains,

j 734, 795.

} Allen, Ethan, 741, 787,

) American party, 770. “American system,” 761,

764,

André, John, 744. Andrew, J, A., 773, 787. Annapolis, 748, 768. Antietam, battle of, 777.

| Antifederalists, 752. ** Anti-Nebraska,” 771.

| Appalachian mountain

system, 792.

Area, 791, 802, 819. Arizona, 767.

) Arkansas, 765,

Army, 828.

Arnold, Benedict, 742,

744-5, 787.

Baltimore, 753, 760, 774. Bank of the United States, 754, 761, 764,

Bankruptcy, 750. Banks, 766, 776, 826. Baptists, 731, 770, 829. Barbary pirates, 758. Bell, John, 772, 788. Bemis Heights, 744, Bennington, battle of, 744. Benton, T, H., 764, 788. Berlin decree, 759. Billeting Act, 737. Black Hawk war, 768, Black list, the, 786. Blockade, the, 775, 779. Blue Ridge, 794. Board of trade, British,

733, 736,

Bonds, 776, 785. Boone, Daniel, 739, 788. Boston, 738, 740, 742, 753. Boston Port Act, 739. Boycott, the, 786.

| Braddock, Edward, 735,

Bunker Hill, 741.

Burgoyne, John, 744.

Burnside, A, E., 777, 788.

Burr, Aaron, 756, 758, 788.

Cabinet, 750.

Cabots, the, 729, 735,

Calhoun, Jolin C., 759,

762, 764-5, 770.

California, 758, 768.

Camden, battle of, 744.

Canada, 733-5, 742, 759,

782.

Canals, 757.

Caiions, 799.

Carleton, Sir Guy, 740.

Carolina, 729,

Cascade range, S00.

Cass, Lewis, 764, 768,

Catskills, 798.

Cattle, 823,

Caucus, 764,

Cedar Creek, 779,

Census, 749, 819.

Champlain, Lake, battle of, 760.

Cincinnati, 753, 759.

Cincinnati, society of the,

745,

Cities, 753, 757, 765, 786,

822, 827,

Civil Rights Act, 784.

Civil service, 764, 785,828,

Civil War, 774-81.

Clark, G. R., 745.

Clay, Henry, 759, 762,770.

Cleveland, Pres, Grover,

785,

Ciimate, 803.

Clinton, De Witt, 761.

Clinton, Sir Henry, 744-5,

Coal, 765, 782, 812,

Coast, 791.

Cold Harbor, 779.

Colfax, Schuyler, 781, 788.

Colleges, 731.

Colonial rights, 736-8.

Colonies, revolt of, 741.

Colonization, 729 sq,

Colorado, 784,

Colorado plateau, 798.

Congress, Continental,

737, 740-1, 743-7.

Congress, Stamp Act, 738. Congress of the United States, 749-52, Connecticut, 730,731, 748, Conscription, 779. Constitution, 749-52, 754,

755.

Contracts, 750, Convention of 1787, 748, Conventions, party, 764; State, 773, Copper, 768, 816. Copyright, 750. Cordilleran system, 796, Cornwallis, Lord, 743-5, Corporations, 766, 785-6. Cotton, 752, 757, 761, 783,

$24, *

Counties, 731, 827, Courts, Federal, 749-51, Cowpens, battle of, 744. Crawford, Wm. Il., 759,

761, 788,

Debt, public, 747,751, 766,

778, 780, 785-6, 828,

Decatur, Stephen, 760, Declaration of Independ- ence, 734,737, 748, 754. Delaware, 730, 746. Democracy, 731, 754, 758,

765, 770, 774, 787,

Democratie party, 755,

757, 764, 771-2, 784-5.

Departments, 750, Deposits, removal of, 766. Detroit, 734, 739, 759,

763.

District of Columbia, 750,

768.

Dorchester, Mass., 731. Douglas, Stephen A,,

770, 772, 774.

Drainage areas, 791, 820, Dred Scott case, 747, 752,

772, 782,

Dutch settlements, 730. Duties, 750, 754, 761, 776. | Education, 732, 828.

830

Edwards, Jonathan, 753, Election laws, 749, 784. Elective franehise, 754,

781,

Electoral system, 749-50,

754, 772,

Ellsworth, Oliver, 748. Emancipation, 777. Embargo, the, 759. England, Chureh of, 731,

739, 770.

Entails, 731. Erie, Lake, battle of, 760. Erie Canal, 761, 763. Eutaw Springs, 745, Excise, 749, 755, 783. Expenditure, national,

828,

Exploration, 729. Exports, 733, 750, 753, 825. Express eompanies, 765. Fair Oaks, battle of, 777. Families, 828, Farms, 823. Farragut, D. G., 777, 780. Federal Government, 733,

745-52.

Federal party, 752, 757,

761.

Federal questions, 751. Vilibustering, 771. Fillmore, Pres. Millard,

770-1,

Fisheries, 745, 782. Five Forks, battle of, 780. Flag of U.S., 742 Florida, 731, 735,

767-8.

Force Act, the, 784. Foreign-born, 820. Forests, 807, Fort Du Quesne, 735, Fort Hatteras, 775. Fort Necessity, 735. Fort Sumter, 774, France, 730, 733-6, 742,

744, 755, 782.

Franklin, Benjamin, 742,

743, 745.

Fredericksburgh, 777. Freedmen's Bureau Act,

781,

Free Soil party, 768, Free trade, 768, 785. Fremont, J. C., 771. French and Indian war,

734,

Fugitive slave laws, 747, e 751, 768, 770. Gage, Thomas, 739-42, Gaines's Mill, 777. Garfield, Pres, Jas. A.,

785, 788,

Garrison, Wm, L., 767. “ Gaspee,” the, 739. Gates, Moratio, 741, 744. Genet, E. C., 755. Geography, 791. Geology, 792 sq. Georgia, 729, 744. Germantown, 744. Gerry, Elbridge, 74S. Gettysburgh, 778, Ghent, treaty of, 760. Gold, 768, 782, 814, Gosnold, Barth., 729, Governments, _ eolonial,

730, 739.

Grain, 823-4, Grant, Pres. Ulysses S.,

776, 778-81, 784.

Grasse, Comte de, 745, Great Basin, 797, Great Britain, 736 s9.,

755, 758-60, 762, 782,

Great Valley, 794. Greeley, Horacc, 784, Grcenbacks, 775, Grenville, George, 737. Guadalupe Hidalgo, treaty of, 767. Guilford, battle of, 744. Habeas corpus, 750, 775,

776, 784,

Hamilton, A., 752, 754-6.

745,

UNITED

Hamlin, I., 772. Hancock, John, 738. Haneock, W. S., 785, 789. llarrison, Pres, Wm, H.,

759, 766.

Hartford convention, 760. llarvard eollege, 732, Hayes, Pres, R, B., 734. Ifayne, Robt. Y., 764, Hendricks, T, A., 784-5,

789.

Henry, Patriek, 737. Mobkirk’s Hill, 744. Ifolland, 730, 744, lIomestead system, 763. Hood, J. B., 779, 789. Hooker, Joseph, 777. House of

representatives,

749,

lowe, Earl, 743. Howe, Viscount, 743. Howe, Sir Win,, 742-4. Hudson, Henry, 730. Hudson river, 761, Hudson's Bay Co., 767. lull, Wm., 759, 789. Illinois, 747, 753, 761. Immigration, 731, 754,

759, 763, 765, 769, 782, 820-1.

Impeachment, 749-50, Imports, 733, 753, 825, Impressment, 759-60, Independence, 742, 745, Indiana, 747, 761. Indigo, 732, Inter-State Commerce Act, 749, 786, Inventions, 765, 768, 823. lowa, 768. Treland, 737, 782. lron, 732-3, 761, 765,

783, 813,

Jron-clad vessels, 777, 828. Jackson, Pres, Andrew,

760, 762, 764-6,

Jackson, T, J., 777-8. Jamestown, 729, Japan, 771. Jay, John, 742, 745, 752,

755,

Jay treaty, 755, 758. Jefferson, Pres. Thomas,

748,747,752, 755-6, 758,

Jolinson, Pres. Andrew,

780-1,

Johnson, Sir Wm., 735. Johnston, A. S., 776. Johnston, Jos, E., 777-8,

780,

Jones, Paul, 744, Judiciary, 749-51, 769. Kansas, 770-1, 773. Kansas—Nebraska

770.

Kentucky, 739, 755, 757. Kentucky resolutions,756. King, Rufus, 748, Knights of Labour, 786. Know-nothing party, 770. Knox, Henry, 754, 789. Kosciusko, Thaddeus,743, Koszta case, 771, Ku Klux Klan, 784, Labour difficulties, 786. La Fayette, Marquis de,

743, 746.

Land system, 763, 766, Lawrence, J., 760, 789. Lead, 817. Lee, Charles, 741-2, Lee, Robt. E., 777, 780. Legal tender, 750, 766. Legislatures, 730, 741,

746, 749,

Lewis and Clarke, 758, Lexington, battle of, 738. Liberal party, 767-8. Liberal Republiean party,

784,

Lincoln, Pres, Abraham,

772, 774-5, 779-80.

Literature, 753, 762, 765.

Live stock, 823, Livingston, Edward, 764.

Act,

Locomotive engine, 765. London Company, 729. Long Island, battle of,

745,

Lookout Mountain, 778, Louisburgh, 734-5. Louisiana, 735, 758-60. Lundy’s Lane, 760, M‘Clellan, G. B., 775

777, 780, 789.

Macdonough, T., 760. Madison, Pres. James,

748, 752, 759,

Maine, 729, 761, Manassas, battle of, 775. Manufactures, 732-3, 752,

761, 776, 782, 824.

Marcy, W. L., 764, 789. Marion, Francis, 744. Maryland, 729, 730, 746,

748, 752.

Mason, George, 748, 789. Massachusetts, 729-31,

737, 739-40, 747,

“« Mayflower,” the, 729, Meade, G. G., 778, 790, Mercury, 816. Message, president’s, 750, Methodists, 770, 829, Mexico, 758, 767-8, 782. Michigan, 747, 765, 768, Milan decree, 759, Militia, 750, Minerals, 811. Mining, 782. Minnesota, 772. Missionary Ridge, 778. Mississippi, 761. Mississippi river, 733,

753, 758, 774, 776, 778.

Mississippi valley, 801, Missouri, 761, 763, 771. Missouri eompromise,763, ee Mobile, 734. Mobile Bay, 780. Monmouth, 744. Monroe, Pres,

761-2.

Montgomery, R., 742,790. Morgan, Daniel, 744. Morgan, E. D,, 773, 790. Mormons, 769, Morrill tariff, 773, 776. Morris, Robert, 747-8, Morton, O. P., 773, 790. Murfreesboro, 778. Nashville, battle of, 779, National banks, 776. National republican party, 762, Nativity of population,

820.

Naturalization, 750, 756,

759,

Natural gas, 782, 813. Navigation Jaws, 733,

737-8,

Navy, 742, 755, 758-60,

7174, 777, 783, 828,

Nebraska, 770-1 78I-2,

Nevada, 780, 782.

New Amsterdam, 730,

New England, 729 35,

748, 757, 759-61, 792,

New France, 734,

New Hampshire, 730, 748.

New Jersey, 730-1, 743,

746, 748,

New Mexico, 767-8,

New Orleans, 734, 760,

777, 784.

Newport, 743-4.

Newport, Christopher,

129,

Newspapers, 765, 783.

New York, 730-1, 738,

746, 748, 753, 759, 761,

New York city, 730, 732,

743-4, 753, 761, 779.

Non-importation agree- ment, 738,

Nou-intcreourse law, 759.

d

James,

’ North Carolina, 730, 744,

749, 752, 754,

se Fa Tas

North West, the, 745,

747, 753, 774,

Nova Scotia, 735,

Occupations, 822.

Ohio, 747, 753, 759,

Ohio Company, 734.

Orders in council, 759.

Ordinance of 1787, 747,

762-5,

Ordinance of Seecssion,

749, 773.

Oregon, 772,

Oregon country,

758, 762, 767-8,

Ostend manifesto, 771.

Otis, James, 736,

Pacific Coast ranges, 801.

Paine, Thomas, 742, 748.

Panic of 1837, 766; of

1873, 783, 786.

Parish, 731, 827.

Parks, 796,

Parliament, British, 733,

736-40,

Patents, 750, 757.

Patrons of Husbandry,

786,

Patroons, 731,

Pendleton Act, 785.

Peninsular _ eampaign,

777,

Penn, Wm., 730.

Pennsylvania, 730, 731,

Pennsylvania university,

732.

Pensions, 780, 828.

Perry, O, 11., 760,

Personal Tiberty laws,

768,

Petersburgh, 779-80,

Petroleum, 782, 813.

Philadelphia, 744, 753.

Physical geography, 791,

Pierce, Pres, Franklin,

770.

Pinckney, C., 748, 790,

Pinckney, C. C., 748, 790.

Pitt, Wm., 733, 735, 738,

Pittsburgh, 734, 739,

Pittsburgh Landing, 776.

Plains, 810.

Plymouth, Mass,, 729.

Plymouth Company, 729,

Polk, Pres, Jas, K., 755,

767,

Polygamy, 769.

Pope, Jolin, 777.

Population, 783, 802, 818.

Porter, David, 760.

Port Hudson, 777-8.

Port Royal, N.S., 734.

Port Royal, $.C., 775.

Post-office, 757, 768, 825,

Potato erops, 824,

Prairies, 816.

Presbyterians, 770, 829,

President, 745, 749-50,

758,

Presidents, list of, 787.

Presque Isle, 734,

Princeton, battle of, 743,

Princeton college, 732,

Proprietary governments,
730.
Protection, 747, 754, 761,
764, 768, 772-3, 776,
Public lands, 763, 827,
Pulaski, Count, 743-4,
790.
Puritans, 729, 739,
Putnam, Israel, 743, 790.
Quakers, 733,
Quebee, 735, 742,
tuilways, 765, 768, 775,
782, 825.
Rainfall, 805,
Raleigh, Sir Walter, 729,
Randolph, E., 748, 755.
Rawdon, Lord, 744,
Reconstruction, 781-3,
Refunding, 784,
Religion, 829,

Representatives, 749,

Republiean party (of

1793), 755, 757,

the,

Republiean party (of

1856), 771, 774, 781, 785.

Repudiation, 741, 766.

Requisitions, 747.

Revenue, 776, 827,

Revolution, American,

730, 741, 7465.

thode Island, 730, 731

748, 752, 754.

Rice, 732, 824,

Richmond, 774, 779-80,

“ Rings,” 783,

Roads, 753, 757.

Rocky Mountains, 758,

796.

Rodgers, John, 760,

Roman Catholics, 770

829,

Rosecrans, William S.,

778.

Royal governments, 730,

Russia, 762,

Rutledge, John, 748.

Salt, 817,

Saratoga, surrender at,

744,

Savannah, 744, 780.

Schools, 763, 765, 828-9,

Schuyler, Philip, 741, 790.

Scott, Winfield, 760, 767,

770, 775.

Search, right of, 759-60.

Secession, 741, 749, 772-3.

a

b)

| Sedition law, 756.

Seminole war, 768,

Senate, 749, 769,

Seven days’ battles, 777.

Seven Pines, 777.

Seward, Wm.H.,770, 773.

Seymour, Iforatio,781,790.

Sharpsburgh, 777,

Shenandoah valley, 777,

779, 794-5,

Sheridan, P, 11., 779-80.

Sherman, Roger, 748,

Sherman, W. T., 779-80.

Shipping, 732, 826,

Sierra Nevada, 799,

Silver, 782, 784, 814,

Sinks, 797-8,

Six Nations, 746.

Slave representation, 749,

769.

Slavery, 729, 747,

757, 763, 768-9, 775, 777, 781,

Slave trade, 740, 749,

“Sons of Liberty,” 738.

Sonth America, 762,

South Carolina, 730, 737,

744, 752, 764, 772,

Spain, 730, 735, 753, 758,

762,

Specie circular, 766.

Squatter sovereignty,768,

Stamp Act, 737, 738.

Stark, John, 744,

Star routes, 783.

States, 733, 741, 747, 749- 50, 754, 827; table of,

802.

State sovereignty, 741,

746, 751, 756-7, 763, 774,

Steam navigation, 753,

758, 763, 765, 826,

Stephens, A. H., 770, 773.

Steuben, Baron von, 743,

790.

Stony Point, 744,

Storms, 807. :

Sub-treasury law, 766-8.

Suffrage, right of, 754,

781,

752

fee

7) 2

Sugar, 824,

Sumner, Charles, 770.

Sumter, Thomas, 744,

730.

Supreme Court, 751,

Sweden, 730.

Taney, R. B., 764, 790.

Taxation, British,737-40.

Taxation, United States,

741, 747, 749-50, 776, 780, 827,

Taylor, Pres, Zachary 767-8, i Tea-tax, 739, Tecumseh, 759, Telegraph, 765, 768, 782,

825.

Telephone, 782, Temperature, 803. Tennessee, 739, 754, 757, Tenure of Office Act, 781, Territories, 747, 749, 768, 827; table of, 802, Texas, 767. Thames, battle of, 760, Theology, 753. Thomas, Geo, iG. 173-9,

790,

Ticonderoga, 735, 741. Tilden, S. J,, 784, Tin, 816, Tippecanoe, 759, Titles, 731, 750, Tobacco, 732, 824, Tornadoes, 807, Towns, 731, 738, 827. Townshend, Charles, 737,

738,

Townships, 763, 827. Trade unions, 786, Treason, 751, 780, Treaties, 750, ‘Trent ” case, 775, Trenton, battle of, 743, Tyler, Pres. John, 766, Union, plans of, 735; drift towards, 738; accomplished, 741, 751, 754, 758; attacked, 770; maintained, 781, United States, date of political origin of, 741; of legal origin, 743, Utah, 767-9, Valley Forge, 744. Van Buren, Pres, Martin,

764, 766-8,

Vegetation, 807, Vermont, 731, 755, Veto power, 741, 749. Vice-president, 750. Vicksburgh, 777-8. Virginia, 729-30, 733,

737, 745-6, 748.

Virginia resolutions, 756, Walker, Robt, J., 768. Ward, Artemas, 741. Washington, Pres. Geo.,

735, 741-5, 747, 748, 752-5,

Washington city, 750,

755, 757, 760,

Wayne, Ant,, 744, 757. Wealth, national, 782. Webster, Daniel,753, 764,

770,

West, the, 757, 769. West Point, 744, 768. West Virginia, 776, Wheeler, W, A., 784, 790. Whig party, 757, 762,

764,

Whisky insurrection, 750, Whisky ring, 783, Whitefield, Rev. George,

731,

Whitney, Eli, 757. Wilderness, buttles of the, 779, William and Mary College, 722. Wilmington, 780. Wilmot proviso, 768. Wilson, James, 758. Wilson's Creek, 779. Winds, 805. Wisconsin, 747, 768. Woodbury, Levi, 764

790,

Wool, 824. Wythe, George, 748. X.Y.Z, inission, 755. Yale College, 732. Yellow fever, 757. Yorktown, 745, 777. Zine, 817.

:

United States of America, especially in the New States, which has for its distinguishing tenet the of the final salvation of all souls from

Boston (notably in The Salvation 1784); Dr Joseph Huntington, of Coventry,

John Murray, Elhanan Winchester, Caleb Rich, specially, Hosea Ballou. 'the father of Universalism in America," (on a theory quite peculiar; Murray, a Methodist in England and Ireland, tinguished convert.

ance, he preached at Good Luck, New J ersey,

Gloucester, Massachusetts,

‘pducation,

ig‘discipulorum”), In the course of ihe latter part of the 14th century,

f teachers and scholars

i Diided as a place of instruction) instruction for all.2 udii” and “universitatis collegium” » be met with in official documents.

| It is necessary, however, to bear in mind, on the one hnd, that a university often had a vigorous virtual exist- &ce long before it obtained that legal recognition which en- Hled it, technically, to take rank as a “studium generale,” Ad, on the other hand, that hostels, halls, and colleges, Higether with complete courses in all the recognized Hanches of learning, were by no means necessarily in- Ived in the earliest conception of a university. The Hiversity, in its earliest stage of development, appears to jve been simply a scholastic guild,—a spontaneous com- pation, that is to say, of teachers or scholars, or of jth combined, and formed probably on the analogy of the des guilds, and the guilds of aliens in foreign cities, which, ithe course of the 13th and 14th centuries, are to be find springing up in most of the great European centres. je design of these organizations, in the first instance, was It is the design of the present article to exhibit the universities in Mir historical development, each being brought under notice, as far dpracticable, in the order of its original foundation. In the alpha-

Mical enumeration in the table at the end, the date of foundation

us Serves to indicate approximately the place where any university

igirst referred to.

Denifle, Die Universitdten des Mittelalters, i. 39.

UNI—UNI

UNIVERSALIST CHURCH, a religious body in the England doctrine sin through Christ. The pioneers of Universalism in America were Dr George De Benneville, who taught from 1741 principally in Pennsylvania; Dr

Charles Chauncy, of the First Church, of All Men, published in Conn. (whose Calvinism Improved was published after his death in 1796); and, very Murray is, however, regarded as In 1750 James Relly had avowed himself a Universalist, basing his belief who had preached as was Relly's most dis- In 1770 he came to America, and, under circumstances so strange that most Universalists regard them as providential, overcoming a deep reluct- and organ- ized a society, "The Independent Christian Church," at Hosea Ballou—a convert from

epoch-making, A Treatise on Atonement. The number of ministers increased, and societies were formed. These in due time became the constituents of larger organizations, tilla " New England convention" saw occasion, in 1803, to adopt a "profession of faith," which in three short articles avowed belief in the Bible ag making known in a Divine revelation the nature of God, the mission of Christ, the final holiness of all souls, and the necessity of good works. In 1866 a general convention, composed of delegates from the State conventions, was incorporated. It has jurisdic- tion throughout the United States and Canada. It has a " Murray fund" of about $135,000. Under the auspices of the Universalist Church are the "woman's centenary association," the ' Universalist historical society," several organized charities, four colleges, three theological schools, and five academies,—the total value of the schools, includ- ing endowments, being hardly less than 3 million dollars, It publishes eight periodicals. The Year Book for 1887 gives the following summary :—1 general convention; 22 State conventions; 945 parishes, 38,429 families; 696 churches, 35,550 members; 634 Sunday schools, 51,871 members; 789 church edifices; value above indebtedness,

$7,493,927 ; 673 clergymen in fellowship and 120 licensed lay preachers.

USBTVERSITIES:

HE mediaeval Latin term universitas (from which the

English word " university " is derived) was originally »mployed to denote any community or corporation re- garded under its collective aspect. When

used in its y- modern sense, as denoting a body devoted to learning and it required the addition of other words in order jo complete the definition,—the most frequent form of ex- pression being “universitas magistrorum et scholarium” (or time, probably towards the term began to be (ised by itself, with the exclusive meaning of a community whose corporate existence had peen recognized and sanctioned by civil or ecclesiastical juthority or by both. But the more ancient and custom- ry designation of the university in medizval times (re- was ‘‘studium generale ” br sometimes “ studium ” alone), a term implying a centre The expressions “ universitas are also occasionally

little more than that of securing mutual protection,—for the craftsman, in the pursuit of his special calling,—for the alien, as lacking the rights and privileges inherited by the citizen. And so the university, composed as it was to a great extent of students from foreign countries, was a combination formed for the protection of its members from the extortion of the townsmen and the other annoyances incident in medieval times to residence in a foreign state. It was a first stage of development in connexion with these primary organizations, when the chancellor of the cathedral, or some other authority, began, as we shall shortly see, to confer on their masters the right of teach- ing at any similar centre that either already existed or might afterwards be formed throughout Europe,—“‘facultas ubique docendi.” It was a still further development when it began to be recognized that, without a licence from either pope, emperor, or king, no “studium generale” could be formed possessing this right of conferring degrees, which originally meant nothing more than licences to teach.

In order, however, clearly to understand the conditions Chief under which the earliest universities came into existence, facts it is necessary to take account, not only of their organiza- i i

; : cl : – history of tion, but also of their studies, and to recognize the main learning influences which, from the 6th to the 12th century, served before to modify both the theory and the practice of education, the uni- In the former century, the schools of the Roman empire, V¢ersity which had down to that time kept alive the traditions of ° pagan education, had been almost entirely swept away by

the barbaric invasions. The latter century marks the

period when the institutions which supplied their place—

the episcopal schools attached to the cathedrals and the monastic schools—attained to their highest degree of influ-

ence and reputation. Between these and the schools of

the empire there existed an essential difference, in that the

theory of education by which they were pervaded was in complete contrast to the simply secular theory of the schools of paganism. The cathedral school taught only

what was supposed to be necessary for the education of

the priest; the monastic school tauglit only what was

supposed to be in harmony with the aims of the monk. But between the pagan system and the Christian system

by which it had been superseded there yet existed some-

Revival Under the rule of the Merovingian dynasty even these | tion of that island, that Salerno acquired its reputation, intime scanty traditions of learning declined throughout the | [t was by a band of these invaders that Bertharius, abbot e eon Frankish dominions; but in England the designs of | of Monte Cassino, and the author of certain medical reer Gregory the Great, as carried out by Thcodorus, Bede, | treatises, was massacred along with his monks in the year and Alcuin, resulted in a great revival of education and | 883. The Saracens were famed for their medical skill letters. The influence of this revival extended in the 8th | and, by tlieir translations of Galen and Hippocrates, did and 9th centuries to Frankland, where Charles the Great, | much to advance the study ; and, according to Jourdain,’ advised and aided by Alcuin, effected a memorable refor- | there were translations from the Arabic into Latin long mation, which included both the monastic and the cathe- | before the time of Constantine the African, but these dral schools;

while the school attached to the imperial | versions have perished. In the course of the 11th century, court, known as the Palace School, also became a famous | under the teaching of Constantine the African (d. 1087), centre of learned intercourse and instruction. the celebrity of Salerno became diffused all over Europe. Its con- But the activity thus generated, and the interest in | Ordericus Vitalis, who wrote in the first half of the 12th nexion Jearning which it served for a time to diffuse, well nigh | century, spcaks of it as then long famous. In 1231 it eee unl- died out amid the anarchy which characterizes the 10th | was constituted by the emperor Frederick II. the only ersity of : ; : cee ¢ Ba : Paris, century in Latin Christendom, and it is at least question- | school of medicine in the kingdom of Naples. doubtful, able whether any real connexion can be shown to have It was at a considerable interval after the rise of the Teaching existed between this earlier revival and that remarkable | school at Salerno, about the year 1113, that Irmerius com-% _ movement in which the university of Paris had its origin. | menced at Bologna his lectures on the civil law. This pees On the whole, however, a clearly traced, although imper- | instruction, again, was of a kind which the monastic and pologia, fectly continuous, succession of distinguished teachers has | cathedral schools could not supply, and it also met a new inclined the majority of those who have studied this ob- | and pressing want. The states of Lombardy were at this scure period to conclude that a certain tradition of learn- | time rising rapidly in population and in wealth ; and the ing, handed down from the famous school over which | greater complexity of their political relations, their increas- Alcuin presided at the great abbey of St Martin at Tours, | ing manufactures and commerce, called for a more definite continued to survive, and became the nucleus of the teach- | application of the principles embodied in the codes that General ing in which the university took its rise. Dut, in order | had been handed down by Theodosius and Justinian. But causes of adequately to explain the remarkable development and | the distinctly secular character of this new study, and its la novel character which that teaching assumed in the course | intimate connexion with the claims and prerogatives of the universi. Of the 12th and 13th centuries, it is necessary to take } Western emperor, aroused at first the susceptibilities of the ties. account of the operation of certain more general causes to | Roman see, and for a time Bologna and its civilians were which the origin of the great majority of the earlier uni- | regarded by the church with distrust and even with alarm. versities may in common

unhesitatingly be referred. These | These sentiments were not, however, of long duration. In causes are—(1) the introduction of new subjects of study, | the year 1151 the appearance of the Decretum of Gratian, Decrelum as embodied in a new or revived literature ; (2) the adop- | largely compiled from spurious documents, invested the ae tion of new methods of teaching which were rendered | studies of the canonist with fresh importance ; and canon necessary by the new studies ; (3) the growing tendency | numerous decrees of past and almost forgotten pontifis now law. to organization which accompanied the development and | claimed to take their stand side by side with the enact- consolidation of the European nationalities. ments contained in the Corpus Juris Civilis. They con- That the earlier universities took their rise to a great | stituted, in fact, the main basis of those new pretensions extent in endeavours to obtain and provide instruction of | asserted with so much success by the popedom in the a kind beyond the range of the monastic and cathedral | course of the 12th and 13th centuries. It was necessary, schools appears to be very generally admitted, and this | accordingly, that the Decretwm should be known and general fact has its value in assisting us to arrive at a | studied beyond the walls of the monastery or the episcopal conclusion with respect to the origin of the first European | palace, and that its pages should receive authoritative ex- Rise of university,—that of Salerno in Italy, which became | position at some common centre of instruction. Such a uni- known as a school of medicine as early as the 9th century. | centre was to be found in Bologna. The needs of the she The circumstances of its rise are extremely obscure, and | secular student and of the ecclesiastical student were thus

thing that was common to both: the latter, even in the narrow and meagre instruction which it imparted, could not altogether dispense with the ancient text-books, simply because there were no others in existence. Certain treatises of Aristotle, of Porphyry, of Martianus Capella, and of Boetius continued consequently to be used and studied; and in the slender outlines of pagan learning thus still kept in view, and in the exposition which they necessitated, we recognize the main cause which prevented the thought and literature of classic antiquity from falling altogether into oblivion.

whether it was monastic or secular in its origin has been much disputed. One writer! derives its origin from an independent tradition of classical learning which continued to exist in Italy down to the 10th century. Another writer? maintains that it had its commencement in the teaching at the famous Benedictine monastery of Monte Cassino, where the study of medicine was undoubtedly

pursued. But various facts may be urged in contraven-

1De Renzi, Storia Documentata della Scuola Medica di Salerno, ed. 1857, p. 145. 2 Puccinotti, Storia della Medicina, i. 317-326.

tion of such a theory. The school at Salerno, so far as its history can be traced, appears to have been entirely a secular community ; it was distinguished also by its catholic spirit, and, at a time when Jews were the object of religious persecution throughout Europe, members of this nationality were to be found both as teachers and learners at Salerno. Situated, moreover, as it was on the seq. coast, its communication with the neighbouring island of Sicily was easy and frequent ; and it would accordingly seem far more probable that it was owing to the new knowledge gained from the Saracens, after their occupa-

brought for a time into accord, and from the days of Irnerius down to the close of the 13th century we have satisfactory evidence that Bologna was generally recognized as the chief school both of the civil and the canon law. It has indeed been asserted that university degrees were instituted there as early as the pontificate of Bugentus III. (1145-53), but the statement rests on no 60% authority, and is in every way improbable. There 18, however, another tradition which is in better harmony

3 Sur 0_Age et U Origine des Traductions Latines, &¢., P.- 225. + Denifle, Die Universitdten, &c., i. 48.

with the known facts. When Barbarossa marched his forces into Italy on his memorable expedition of 1155,

ns and reasserted those imperial claims which had so long alr eo Jain dormant, the professors of the civil law and their are n scholars, but more especially the foreign students, gathered Hs ‘ts round the Western representative of the Roman Ceesars, Wat |

1, 22d besought his intervention in their favour in their ‘relations with the citizens of Bologna. A large proportion of the students were probably from Germany ; and it did not escape Frederick’s penetration that the civilian might prove an invaluable ally in the assertion of hig imperial pretensions. He received the suppliants graciously, and, finding that their grievances were real, especially against the landlords in whose houses they were domiciled, he granted the foreign students substantial protection, by conferring on them certain special immunities and privi- leges (November 1158).!_ These privileges were embodied in the celebrated Authentica, Habita, in the Corpus Juris Civilis of the empire (bk. iv. tit. 13), and were eventually extended so as to include all the other universities of Italy. In them we may discern the precedent for that state pro- tection of the university which, however essential at one time for the security and freedom of the teacher and the taught, has been far from proving an unmixed benefit, — the influence which the civil power has thus been able to exert being too often wielded for the suppression of that very liberty of thought and inquiry from which the earlier universities derived in no small measure their importance _ and their fame. But, though there was a flourishin _ is to be observed that Bologna did not possess a university so early as 1158. Its first university was not constituted until the close of the 12th century. The “universities ” ivl- at Bologna were, as Denifle has shown, really student guilds,

j* formed under influences quite distinct from the protecting

“clauses of the Authentica, and suggested, as already noted, by the precedent of those foreign guilds which, in the course of the 12th century, began to rise throughout western Europe. They had their origin in the absolute necessity, under which residents in a foreign city found | themselves, of obtaining by combination that protection | and those rights

which they could not claim as citizens. | These societies were modelled, Denifle considers, not on the trade guilds which rose in Bologna in the 13th century, | but on the Teutonic guilds which arose nearly a century | earlier in north-western Europe, being essentially ‘“ spon- | taneous confederations of aliens on a foreign soil.” Ori- ginally, they did not include the native student element. | The power resulting from this principle of combination, when superadded to the privileges conferred by Barbarossa, or 4 S2Ve to the students of Bologna a superiority of which tse {) they were not slow to avail themselves. Under the leader- amy Ship of their rector, they extorted from the citizens con- iHes.)) cessions which raised them from the condition of an op- | pressed to that of a specially privileged class. The same principle, when put in force against the professors, reduced |the latter to a position of humble deference to the very |body whom they were called upon to instruct, and im- jparted to the entire university that essentially democratic character by which it was afterwards distinguished. It is jnot surprising that such advantages should have led to an imitation and extension of the principle by which they jwere obtained. Denifle considers that the “ universities ” jat Bologna were at one time certainly more than four in

1 See Savigny, Gesch. d. rim. Rechts, iii. 152, 491-492. See also Giesebrecht, Gesch. d. Kaiserzeit (ed. 1880), v. 51-52. The story is preserved in a recently discovered metrical composition descriptive of jthe history of Frederick I.; see Sitzwngsberichte d. Bairisch. Akad. d. Wissenschaft, Phil.-Hist. Klasse, 1879, ii. 285. Its authenticity is

jcalled in question by Denifle, but it would seem to be quite in har- jmony with the known facts.

g school of study, it

DSi ris

number, and we know that the Italian students alone were subdivided into two,—the Tuscans and the Lombards. In Other the centres formed by secession from the parent body a similar like subdivision took place. At Vercelli there Were four ‘oummumt: ‘‘ universitates,” composed respectively of Italians, Eng- a bs lish, Provengals, and Germans ; at Padua there were similar divisions into Italians, French (t.e., Lrancigens,

comprising both English and Normans), Provengals (in- cluding Spaniards and Catalans). When accordingly we learn from Odofred that in the time of the eminent jurist

Azo, who lectured at Bologna about 1200, the number of

the students there amounted to some ten thousand, of whom the majority were foreigners, it seems reasonable to conclude that the number of these confederations of students (“societates scholarium ”) at Bologna was yet greater.

It is certain that they were not formed simultaneously,

but, similarly to the free guilds, one after the other,—the

last in order being that of the Tuscans, which was com- posed of students from Tuscany, the Campagna, and Rome. Nor are we, again, to look upon them as in any

way the outcome of those democratic principles which found favour in Bologna, but rather as originating in the traditional home associations of the foreign students, fostered, however, by the peculiar conditions of their university life. As the Tuscan division (the one least in sympathy, in most respects, with Teutonic institutions)

was the last formed, so, Denifle conjectures, the German ‘university ” may have introduced the conception which

was successively adopted by the other nationalities,

In marked resemblance to the guilds, these confederations The were presided over by a common head,—the “rector schola- rector, rium,” an obvious imitation of the “rector societatum” or

“artium” of the guild, but to be carefully distinguished from the “rector scholarum,” or director of the studies, with whose function the former officer had, at this time, nothing incommon. Like the guilds, again, the

different nations were represented by their '"consiliarii," a deliberative assembly with whom the rector habitually took counsel.

While recognizing the essentially democratic character of Mature the constitution of these communities, it is to be remem- age of the bered that the students, unlike the majority at Paris and students. later universities, were mostly at this time of mature years. As the civil law and the canon law were at first the only branches of study, the class whom they attracted were often men already filling office in some department of the church or state, —archdeacons, the heads of schools, canons of cathedrals, and like functionaries forming a con- siderable element in the aggregate. It has been observed, indeed, that the permission accorded them by Frederick I. of choosing, in all cases of dispute, their own tribunal, thus constituting them, to a great extent, sui juris, seems to presuppose a certain maturity of judgment among those on whom this discretionary power was bestowed,

With the middle of the 13th century, these various con- Amalga- federations became blended, for the first time, into one or mation of other of the two great divisions alreadyreferred to,—those of aes the Ultramontani and the Citramontani, Johannesde Varanis aD being rector of the former and Pantaleon de Venetiis of the into two latter. Innocent IV., in according his sanction to the new divisions. statutes of the university in 1253, refers to them as drawn up by the "rectores et universitas scholarium Bononien- sium." With the commencement of the 16th century, the two corporations were combined under one rector.

About the year 1200 were formed the two faculties of Faculties medicine and philosophy (or the arts"), the former being instituted. érivium (t.e., grammar, logic, and rhetoric) and the quadrivium (t.e., arithmetic, geometry, music, and astronomy), as handed down from

the schools of the Roman empire. See J. B. Mullinger, Zistory of the University of Cambridge, i. 24-27. XXIII. — 105

833

Account of the ulliver- sity by Anglicus,

The earliest colleges,

Origin of univer- sity of Paris.

Study of logic.

Teaching

0

Abelard.

834

somewhat the earlier. It was developed, as that of the civil law had been developed, by a succession of able teachers, among whom Thaddeus Alderottus was especially eminent. The faculty of arts, down to the 14th century, scarcely attained to equal eminence. The teaching of theology remained for a long time exclusively in the hands of the Dominicans ; and it was not until the year 1860 that Innocent VI. recognized the university as a “studium generale” in this branch,—in other words, as a place of theological education for all students, with the power of conferring degrees of universal validity.

In the year 1371 the cardinal legate, Anglicus, compiled, as chief director of ecclesiastical affairs in the city, an account of the university, which he presented to Urban V. The information it supplies is, however, defective, owing to the fact that only the professors who were in receipt of salaries from the municipality are mentioned. Of these there were twelve of civil law and six of canon law ; three of medicine, three of practical medicine, and one of sur- gery ; two of logic, and one each of astrology, rhetoric, and notarial practice. The professors of theology, who, as members of the religious orders, received no state remunera- tion, are unmentioned.

Colleges existed at Bologna at a very early date, but it is not until the 14th century that we find them possessing any organization. They were designed solely for neces- sitous students, not being natives of Bologna. A separate house, with a certain fund for the maintenance of a speci- fied number of

scholars, was all that was originally con- templated. Such was the character of that founded by Zoen, bishop of Avignon, in February 1256 (O.S.), the same month and year, it is to be noted, in which the Sor- bonne was founded in Paris. It was designed for the maintenance of eight scholars from the province of Avignon, under the supervision of three canons of the church, main- taining themselves in the university. Each scholar was to receive 24 Bolognese lire annually for five years. The college of Brescia was founded in 1326 by William of Brescia, archdeacon of Bologna, for poor foreign students without distinction as to nationality. The Spanish college, founded in 1364, for twenty-four Spanish scholars and two chaplains, is noted by Denifle as the one college founded in medieval times which still exists on the Continent.

Of the general fact that the carly universities rose in response to new wants the commencement of the uni- versity of Paris supplies us with a further illustration. The study of logic, which, prior to the 12th century, was founded exclusively on one or two meagre compends, received about the year 1100, on two occasions, a power- ful stimulus,—in the first instance, from the memorable controversy between Lanfranc and Berengar; in the second, from the no less famous controversy between Anselm and Roscellinus. intelligent apprehension of spiritual truth depended on a correct use of prescribed methods of argumentation. Dialectic was looked upon as “ the science of sciences” ; and, when, somewhere in the first decade of the 12th century, William of Champeaux opened in Paris a school for the more advanced study of dialectic as an art, his teaching was attended with marked success. Among his pupils was Abelard, in whose hands the study made-a yet more notable advance ; so that, by the middle of the cen- tury, we find John of Salisbury, on returning from the French capital to England, relating with astonishment, not unmingled with contempt, how all learned Paris had gone well nigh mad in its pursuit and practice of the new dialectic.

Abelard taught in the first instance at the cathedral school at Notre Dame, and subsequently at the schools on the Montagne Sainte-Geneviéve, of which he was the

A belief sprang up that an.

UNIVER SL Pies

founder, and where he imparted to logic its new develop. ment. But in 1147 the secular canons of Ste Genevidye gave place to canons regular from St Victor; and hence. forth the school on the former foundation was merely a school for the teaching of theology, and was attended only by the members of the house! The schools out of which the university arose were those attached to the cathedral on the [le de la Cité, and presided over by the chancellor, —a dignitary who must be carefully distinguished from the later chancellor of the university. For a long time the teachers lived in separate houses on the island, and it was only by degrees that they combined themselves into q society, and that special buildings were constructed for their class-work. But the flame which Abelard's teaching had kindled was not destined to expire. Among his

pupils was Peter Lombard, who was bishop of Paris in Lomban's 1159, and widely known to posterity as the compiler of Sendonces

the famous volume of the Sentences. The design of this work was to place before the student, in as strictly logical a form as practicable, the views (sententiz) of the fathers and all the great doctors of the church upon the chief and most difficult points in the Christian belief. Conceived with the purpose of allaying and preventing, it really stimulated, controversy. The logicians seized upon it asa great storehouse of indisputable major premises, on which they argued with renewed energy and with endless ingenuity of dialectical refinement; and upon this new compendium of theological doctrine, which became the text-book of the Middle Ages, the schoolmen, in their successive treatises super Sententias, expended a consider- able share of that subtlety and labour which still excite the astonishment of the student of metaphysical literature.

It is in these prominent features in the history of these Riso of

early universities—the development of new methods of = early uni: versitics,

instruction concurrently with the appearance of new material for their application—that we find the most probable solution of the question as to

how the university, as distinguished from the older cathedral or monastic schools, was first formed. Ina similar manner, it seems probable, the majority of the earlier universities of Italy— Reggio, Modena, Vicenza, Padua, and Vercelli—arose, for they had their origin independently alike of the civil and the papal authority. Instances, it is true, occur, which cannot be referred to this spontaneous mode of growth. The university of Naples, for example, was founded solely by the fiat of the emperor Frederick II. in the year 1224; and, if we may rely upon the documents cited by Denitle, Innocent IV. about the year 1245 founded in connexion with the curia a "'studium generale,"? which was attached to the papal court, and followed it when removed from Rome, very much as the Palace School of Charles the Great ac companied that monarch on his progresses.

As the university of Paris became the model, not only es Cea

sul tion of for the great majority of those of central Europe as well are. as for Oxford and Cambridge, some account of its early sity of Such an account Paris.

for the universities of France north of the Loire, but als

organization will here be indispensable. is rendered still further necessary by the fact that the recent and almost exhaustive researches of Denitle, the Dominican father, have led him to conclusions which on some important points run altogether counter to those sane tioned by the high authority of Savigny. i

The original university, as already stated, took 1ts rise entirely out of the movement carried on by teachers on the

1The view of Thurot (De U'Organisation de 0 Enseignement dans l Université de Paris, pp. 4-7) that the university arose out of a com bination of these several schools is rejected by Denifle (see Die Uni- versitdten, &e., i, 6538-694). z

2 Where the words studiwm generale are placed within quotation they oceur in the original charter of foundation of th versity referred to.

marks of e uni-

-

ce, alike with the chancellor, the bishop, and the cathedral elo Chapter of Paris, by all of whom it was regarded as a tpt. centre of insubordination and doctrinal licence. Had it || |jnot been, indeed, for the papal aid, the university would bi |i probably not have survived the contest; but with that vd | powerful assistance it came to be regarded as the great n| |) Transalpine centre of orthodox theological teaching. 10 Successive pontifis, down to the great schism of 1378, if {|made it one of the foremost points of their policy to ij [jcultivate friendly and confidential relations with the hq jauthorities of the university of Paris, and systematically to | |jdiscourage the formation of theological faculties at other ir} fycentres. In 1231 Gregory IX., in the bull Parens Scien- 4 |tarum, gave full recognition to the right of the several { faculties to regulate and modify the constitution of the 1¢ entire university, —a formal sanction which, in Denifle's iy Opinion, rendered the bull in question the Magna Charta hq jjof the university. Sr:

n In comparing the relative antiquity of the universities ,, fpf Paris and Bologna, it is difficult to give an unqualified si| [Pecision. The university of masters at the former was a| |probably slightly anterior to the university of students at [phe latter; but there is good reason for believing that s, aris, in reducing its traditional customs to statutory form,

» (24) the new

. of the Seine and placing themselves under the jurisdiction of the abbot of the monastery of Ste Geneviéve ; and in

whose duty it should be to confer " licentia docendi" on those candidates who were desirous of opening schools in that district. But it was around the bestowal of this licence by the chancellor of Notre Dame, on the fle de la Cité, that the university of Paris grew up. It is in this licence that the whole significance of the master of arts degree is contained ; for what is technically known as admission to that degree was really nothing more nor less than receiving the chancellor's permission to "incept," and by " inception " was implied the master's formal entrance upon, and commencement

of, the functions of a duly licensed teacher, and his recognition as such by his brothers in the profes- | sion. The previous stage of his academic eareer, that of w bachelordom, had been one of apprenticeship for the mastership ; and his emancipation from this state was symbolized by placing the magisterial cap (biretta) upon his head, a ceremony which, in imitation of the old Roman ceremony of manumission, was performed by his former instructor, “under whom” he was said to incept. He then gave a formal inaugural lecture, and, after this proof of magisterial capacity, was welcomed into the society of his professional brethren with set speeches, and took his seat in his master’s chair.

This community of teachers of recognized fitness did not

ity in itself suffice to constitute a university, but some time “| between the years 1150 and 1170, the period when the

Sentences of Peter Lombard were given to the world, the university of Paris came formally into being. Its first written statutes were not, however, compiled until about the ycar 1208, and it was not until long after that date that it possessed a “rector.” Its earliest recognition as a legal corporation belongs to about the year 1211, when a brief of Innocent III. empowered it to elect a proctor to be its representative at the papal court. By this permis- | Sion it obtained the right to sue or to be sued ina court | of justice as a corporate body.

| This papal recognition was, however, very far from im- 3] plying the episcopal recognition, and the earlier history of community exhibits it as in continual conflict

met y ERSETIES

island, who taught by virtue of the licence conferred by HS the chancellor of the cathedral. the 13th century, it is true, we find masters withdrawing themselves from his authority by repairing to the left bank

In the second decade of

1255 this dignitary is to be found appointing a chancellor

largely availed itself of the precedents afforded by the already existing code of the Transalpine centre, while its rectorship, proctorships, and four " nations" are all clearly distinct adaptations of the corresponding divisions at Bologna. These nations, which included both professors The and scholars, were—(1) the French nation, composed, in ‘‘nations," addition to the native element, of Spaniards, Italians, and Greeks ; (2) the Picard nation, representing the students from the north-east and from the Netherlands 3 (2) the Norman nation ; (4) the English nation, comprising, besides students from the provinces under English rule, those from England, Ireland, Scotland, and Germany. These several nations first came into existence some time before the year 1219, and all belonged to the faculty of arts; but the fully developed university was divided into four faculties,—three " superior," viz., those of theo- logy, canon law, and medicine, and one " inferior," that of arts. The head of each faculty was the dean ; the head of each nation was the proctor. The rector, who in the first instance was head of the faculty of arts, by whom he was elected, was eventually head of the whole university. Hach of the nations and each of the superior faculties, while subject to the general authority which he represented, was, like a royal colony, in a great measure self-governed, and made statutes which were binding simply on its own members. Congregations of the faculty of arts were pre- sided over by the rector, who discharged the same function when general congregations of the whole academic com- munity were convened. In the former the votes on any question were taken by nations, in the latter by faculties and nations. Only "regents," that is, masters actually engaged in teaching, had any right to be present or to vote in congregations, Neither the entire university nor the separate faculties had thus, it will be seen, originally a common head, and it was not until the middle of the 14th century that the rector became the head of the collective university, by the incorporation under him, first, of the students of the canon law and of medicine (which took Place about the end of the 13th century), and, secondly, of the theologians, which took place about half a century later.

Apart from the broad differences in their organization, Parig and the very conception of learning, it will be observed, was Bologna different at Bologna from what it was at Paris. In the eee former it was entirely

professional,—designed, that is to °°” say, to prepare the student for a definite and practical career in after life; in the latter it was sought to provide a general mental training, and to attract the learner to studies which were speculative rather than practical. In the sequel, the less mercenary spirit in which Paris culti- vated knowledge added immensely to her influence and reputation, ‘The university became known as the great school where theology was studied in its most scientific spirit; and the decisions of its great doctors upon those abstruse questions which absorbed so much of the highest intellectual activity of the Middle Ages were regarded as almost final. The popes themselves, although averse from Papal _ theological controversies, deemed it expedient to cultivate Bal in friendly relations with a centre of such importance for the ie ie | purpose of securing their influence in a yet wider field. overs Down therefore to the time of the great schism (1378), sities, they at once conciliated the university of Paris and con- sulted what they deemed to be the interests of the Roman see, by discouraging the creation of faculties of theology elsewhere. The apparent exceptions to this policy are easily explained: the four faculties of theology which they sanctioned in Italy—-Pisa (1343), Florence (1349), Bologna (1362), and Padua (1363)—were designed to benefit the Italian monasteries, by saving the monks the expense and

| dangers of a long journey beyond the Alps; while that at

Founda- tion of univer- sities of Reggio and Modena,

Viceriza,

Padua,

Naples,

Toulouse (1229) took its rise under circumstances entirely exceptional, being designed asa bulwark against the heresy of the Albigenses. The popes, on the other hand, favoured the creation of new faculties of law, and especially of the canon law, as the latter represented the source from which Rome derived her most warmly contested powers and pre- rogatives. The

effects of this twofold policy were suffici- ently intelligible: the withholding of each charter which it was sought to obtain for a new school of theology only served to augment the numbers that flocked to Paris; the bestowal of each new charter for a faculty of law served in like manner to divert a certain proportionate number from Bologna. These facts enable us to understand how it is that, in the 13th and 14th centuries, we find, even in France, a larger number of universities created after the model of Bologna than after that of Paris.

In their earliest stage, however, the importance of these new institutions was but imperfectly discerned alike by the civil and the ecclesiastical power, and the first four uni- versities of Italy, after Bologna, rose into existence, like Bologna itself, without a charter from either pope or em- peror. Of these the first were those of Reggio and Modena, both of which are to be found mentioned as schools of civil law before the close of the 12th century. The latter, throughout the 13th century, appears to have been resorted to by teachers of sufficient eminence to form a flourishing school, composed of students not only from the city itself, but also froma considerable distance. Both of them would seem to have been formed independently of Bologna, but the university of Vicenza was probably the outcome of a migration of the students from the former city, which took place in the year 1204. In the course of the century Vicenza attained to considerable prosperity ; its students were divided into four nations, each with its own rector ; and in 1264 it included in its professoriate teachers, not only of the civil law, but also of medicine, grammar, and dialectic. The university of Padua was founded in 1222 as the direct result of the migration of a considerable number of students from Bologna. Some writers, indeed, have inferred that the ‘‘studium” in the latter city was transferred in its entirety, but the continued residence of a certain proportion in Bologna is proved by the fact that two years later we find them appealing to Honorius III. in a dispute with the civic authorities. In the year 1228 the students of Padua were compelled by circumstances to transfer their residence to Vercelli, and the latter city guaranteed them, besides other privileges, the night to rent no less than five hundred lodging-houses at a fixed rental for a period ofeight years. At first Padua was a school only of the civil and canon law; and during the oppressive tyranny of Ezzelin (1237-1260) the uni- versity maintained its existence with some difficulty. But in the latter part of the century it

incorporated the faculties of grammar, rhetoric, and medicine, and became known as one of the most flourishing schools of Italy, and a great centre of the Dominicans, at that time among the most active promoters of learning.

The university of Naples was founded by the emperor Frederick I. in the year 1225, as a school of theology, jurisprudence, the arts, and medicine,—his design being that his subjects in the kingdom of Naples should find in the capital adequate instruction in every branch of learn- ing, and “not be compelled in the pursuit of knowledge to have recourse to foreign nations or to beg in other lands.” In the year 1231, however, he decreed that the faculty of medicine should cease to exist, and that the study should be pursued nowhere in the kingdom but at Salerno. The university never attained to much eminence, and after the death of Frederick came for a time altogether to an end, but was restored in 1258 by King Manfred. In 1266 its

faculty of medicine was reconstituted, and from 1279-74 Thomas Aquinas was one of its teachers of theology. The commencement of the university of Vercelli belongs to Vercej about the year 1228 ; it probably included, like Naples, : all the faculties, but would seem to have been regarded

with little favour by the Roman see, and by the year 1379

had ceased to exist, although mention of colleges of law

and medicine is to be found after that date. The two universities of Piacenza and Pavia stand in close con- Piaceng nexion with each other. The former is noted by Denifle ag the earliest in Italy which was founded by virtue of a papal charter (6th February 1248), although the scheme remained for a long time inoperative. At length, in the

year 1398, the university was reconstituted by Giovanni Galeazzo Visconti, duke of Milan, who in the same year caused the university of Pavia to be transferred thither, Piacenza now became the scene of a sudden but short lived academic prosperity. We are told of no less than twenty-seven professors of the civil law,—among them the celebrated Baldus ; of twenty-two professors of medicine;

of professors of philosophy, astrology, grammar, and rhetoric; and of lecturers on Seneca and Dante. The faculty

of theology would appear, however, never to have been duly constituted, and but onelecturer in this faculty is mentioned.

With the death of Galeazzo in 1402, this precarious activity

came suddenly to an end; and in 1404 the university had ceased to exist. Its history is, indeed, unintelligible, un- | less taken in conjunction with that of Pavia. Even before Pavia, Irnerius taught at Bologna, Pavia had been widely known

as a seat of legal studies, and more especially of the Lom-

bard law, although the evidence is wanting which would

serve to establish a direct connexion between this early

school and the university which was founded there in

1361, by virtue of the charter granted by the emperor

Charles IV. The new “studium” included faculties of jurisprudence, philosophy, medicine, and the arts, and its students were formally taken under the imperial protec-

tion, and endowed with privileges identical with those

which had been granted to Paris, Bologna, Oxford, Orleans,

and Montpellier ; but its existence in Pavia was suddenly suspended by the removal, above noted, of its students to Piacenza. It shared again in the decline which overtook

the university of Piacenza after the death of Giovanni Galeazzo, and during the period from 1404 to 1412 it altogether ceased to exist. But in October 1412 the

lectures were recommenced, and the university entered

upon the most brilliant period of its existence. Its pro-

fessors throughout the 15th century were men of distin-

guished ability, attracted by munificent salaries such as

but few other universities could offer, while in the number

of students who resorted thither from other countries, and

more especially for the study of the civil law, Pavia had no

rival in Italy but Padua. Arezzo appears to have been Aremo, known as a centre of the same study so early as 1215, and

its earliest statutes are assigned to the year 1255. By

that time it had become a school of arts and medicine also ;

but for a considerable period after it was almost entirely deserted, and is almost unmentioned until the year 1938,

when it acquired new importance by the accession of

several eminent jurists from Bologna. In May 1355 it

received its charter as a studium generale from Charles iy,

After the year 1373 the school gradually dwindled, al-

though it did not become altogether extinct until ara

the year 1470. The university of Rome (which Is to be Rome, carefully distinguished from the school attached to –

curia) owed its foundation (1303) to Boniface VIIL, ‘.

was especially designed by that pontiff for the benefit 0

the poor foreign students sojourning in the capital. : originally included all the faculties; but in 1318 John XXII. decreed that it should possess the power of confer-

UNTV ERS 3 Ws

ring degrees only in the canon and civil law. The uni- versity maintained its existence throughout the period of the residence of the popes at Avignon (see PoPEDoM), and

under the patronage of Leo X. could boast in 1514 of no

less than eighty professors. This imposing array would

seem, however, to be but a fallacious test of the prosperity of the academic community, the professors, owing to the imperfect manner in which they were protected in their privileges, were in the receipt of such insufficient fees that they were compelled to com- bine other employments with that of lecturing in order to support themselves. An appeal addressed to Leo X. in the year 1513 represents the number of students as so small as to be sometimes exceeded by that of the lecturers (“ut quandoque plures sint qui legant quam qui audiant ”), Scarcely any of the universities in Italy in the 14th

» century attracted a larger concourse than that of Perugia,

where the study chiefly cultivated was that of the civil law. The university received its charter as a studium generale from Clement V. in the year 1308, but had already in 1306 been formally recognized by the civic authorities, by whom it was commended to the special care and protection of the ‘podesta.” Incommon with the rest of the Italian universities, it suffered severely from the great plague of 1348-49; but in 1355 it received new privileges from the emperor, and in 1362 its first college, dedicated to Gregory the Great, was founded by the bishop of Perugia. The university of Treviso, which received its charter from Frederick the Fair in 1318, was of little celebrity and but short duration. It is doubtful, indeed, whether it

continued to exist after the city became subject to the republic of Venice in the year 1339; but in 1409 the Venetian senate issued a decree that no subjects of the republic should resort for study to any city in its dominions save that of Padua, and from this date the studium at Treviso must be held to have been no longer in existence. The circumstances of the rise of the university

#, of Florence are unknown, but the earliest evidence of } academic instruction belongs to the year 1320. | persion of the university of Bologna, in the March and April

The dis-

_ of the following year, afforded a favourable opportunity for

| the creation of a studium generale, but the necessary | measures were taken somewhat tardily, and in the mean-

time the greater number of the Bolognese students had | betaken themselves to Siena. The charter of foundation

) for Florence was accordingly not granted until 31st May

1349, when Clement VI. decreed that there should be in-

} stituted a studium generale in theology, jurisprudence,

medicine, and every other recognized faculty of learning,

the teachers to be professors who had obtained the degree

of doctor or master either at Bologna or Paris, or ‘some

other studium generale of celebrity.” On 2d January | 1364 the university also obtained the grant of imperial | privileges from Charles IV. On 14th February 1388 it j adopted a body of statutes which are still extant, and j afford an interesting study in connexion with the uni- | versity history of the period. The university now entered | upon that brilliant period in its history which was destined jto so summary an extinction. “It is almost touching,”

jsays Denifle, “to note how untiringly Florence exerted herself at this period to attract as teachers to her schools |the great masters of the sciences and learning.” In the jyear 1472, however, under the influence of Lorenzo de’ Medici, it was decided that Florence was not a convenient seat for a university, and its students were removed to Pisa. The commencement of the university of Siena belongs to about the year 1241, but its charter was first granted by the emperor Charles IV., at the petition of the citizens, in the year 1357. It was founded asa studium generale in jurisprudence, the arts, and medicine. The

for it is stated that many of

imperial charter was confirmed by Gregory XII. in 1408, and the various bulls relating to the university which he subsequently issued afford a good illustration of the con- ditions of academic life in these times. Residence on the part of the students appears to have been sometimes dis. pensed with. The bishop of Siena was nominated chan- cellor of the university, just as, says the bull, he had been appointed to that office by the imperial authority. The graduates were to be admitted to the same privileges as those of Bologna or Paris; and a faculty of theology was added to the curriculum of studies, The university of Ferrara owes its foundation to the house of Este, —Alberto, marquis of Este, having obtained from Boniface IX. in 1391 a charter couched in terms precisely similar to those of the charter for Pisa. In the first half of the 15th century the university was adorned by the presence of several distinguished humanists, but its fortunes were singularly chequered, and it would appear for a certain period to have been altogether extinct. It was, however, restored, and became in the latter part of the century one of the most celebrated of the universities of Italy. In the year 1474 its circle of studies comprised all the existing faculties, and it numbered no less than fifty-one profes- sors or lecturers. In later times Ferrara has been noted chiefly as a school of medicine.

Of the universities modelled on that of Paris, Oxford Oxford,

would appear to have been the earliest, and the manner of its development was probably similar. Certain schools, opened within the precincts of the

dissolved nunnery of St Frideswyde and of Oseney abbey, are supposed to have been the nucleus round which the university grew up. In the year 1133 one Robert Pullen, a theologian of considerable eminence (but whether an Englishman or a Breton is un- certain), arrived from Paris, and delivered lectures on the Bible. He was followed a few years later by Vacarius, a native of Lombardy, who as a student at Bologna had inherited the tradition of the teaching of Imerius. Al- though both the pope and King Stephen regarded the civil law at this time with considerable distrust, Vacarius maintained his ground, and the study became one of the recognized faculties at Oxford. Towards the close of the 12th century Giraldus Cambrensis describes the town as a place ‘‘ where the clergy in England chiefly flourished and excelled in clerkly lore.” In one respect, indced, Oxford was more favoured than even Paris, for the town auth- orities could not pretend to assert any right of interference with the university such as that to which the French monarch and the court frequently laid claim. In the 13th century mention first occurs of university “chests,” especi- ally the Frideswyde chest, which were benefactions de- signed as funds for the assistance of poor students. Halls, or places of licensed residence for students, also began to be established. In the year 1257, when the bishop of Lincoln, as diocesan, had trenched too closely on the liberties of the community, the deputies from Oxford, when preferring their appeal to the king at St Albans, could venture to speak of the university as ‘ schola secunda ecclesize,” or second only to Paris. Its numbers about this time were probably some three thousand; but it was essenti- ally a fluctuating body, and whenever plague or tumult led to a temporary dispersion a serious diminution in its numerical strength generally ensued for some time after. Against such vicissitudes the foundation of colleges proved the most effectual remedy. Of these the three earliest were University College, founded in 1249 by William of Durham ; Balliol College, founded about 1263 by John Balliol, the father of the king of Scotland of the same name ; and Merton College, founded in 1264. The last- named is especially notable as associated with a new con- ception of university education, namely, that of collegiate

Cam- bridge,

discipline for the secular clergy, instead of for any one of the religious orders, for whose sole benefit all similar foundations had hitherto been designed. The statutes given to the society by Walter de Merton are not less noteworthy, as characterized not only by breadth of con- ception, but also by a careful and discriminating attention to detail, which led to their adoption as the model for later colleges, not only at Oxford but at Cambridge. Of the service rendered by these foundations to the university at large we have significant proof in the fact that, although representing only a small numerical minority in the academic community at large, their members soon ob- tained a considerable preponderance in the administration of affairs.

The university of Cambridge, although it rose into existence somewhat later than Oxford, may reasonably be held to have had its origin in the same century. There was probably a certain amount of educational work carried on by the canons of the church of St Giles, which gradually developed into the instruction belonging to a regular studium. In the year 1112 the canons crossed the river and took up their residence in the new priory in Barnwell, and their work of instruction acquired addi- tional importance. Then, as early as the year 1224, the Franciscans established themselves in the town, and, some- what less than half a century later, were followed by the Dominicans. At both the English universities, as at Paris, the Mendicants and other religious orders were admitted to degrees, a privilege which, until the year 1337, was extended to them at no other university. Their interest in and influence at these three centres was con- sequently proportionably great. In the years 1231 and 1233 certain royal and papal letters afford satisfactory proof that by that time the university of Cambridge was already an organized body with a chancellor at its head; and in 1229 and 1231 its numbers were largely augmented by migrations from Paris and from Oxford. Cambridge, however, in its turn suffered from emigration ; while in the year 1261, and again in 1322, the records of the uni- versity were wantonly burnt by the townsmen. Through- out the 13th century, indeed, the university was still only a very slightly and imperfectly organized community. Its endowments were of the most slender kind; it had no systematic code for the government of its members; the supervision of the students was very imperfectly provided for. An important step in the direction of reform in this last respect was, however, made in the year 1276,

when an ordimance was passed requiring that every one who claimed to be recognized as a scholar should have a fixed master within fifteen days after his entry into the uni- versity. But the feature which most served to give per- manence and cohesion to the entire community was, as at Oxford, the institution of colleges. The earliest of these was Peterhouse, first founded as a separate institution by Hugh Balsham, bishop of Ely, in the year 1286, with a code which was little more than a transcript of that given by Walter de Merton to his scholars at Oxford. About forty years later was founded Michaelhouse, and at nearly the same time (1326) Edward II. instituted his foundation of “king’s scholars,” afterwards forming the community of King’s Hall. Both these societies in the 16th century were merged in Trinity College. To those sueceeded Pem- broke Hall (1347) and Gonville Hall (1348). All these colleges, although by no means conceived in a spirit of hostility to either the monastic or the Mendicant orders, were expressly designed for the benefit of the secular clergy. The foundation of Trinity Hall (1350) by Bishop Bateman, on the other hand, as a school of civil and canon law was probably designed to further ultramontane in- terests. That of Corpus Christi (1352), the outcome of

the liberality of a guild of Cambridge townsmen, was con. ceived with the combined object of providing a house of education for the clergy, and at the same time securing the regular performance of masses for the benefit of the souls of departed members of the guild. But both Trinity Hall and Corpus Christi College, as well as Clare Hall, founded in 1359, were to a great extent indebted for their origin to the ravages caused among the clergy by the great plague of 1349.

Turning to France, or rather to the territory included Mont within the boundaries of modern France, we find Mont- Pellier, pellier a recognized school of medical science as early ag the 12th century. William VIIL, lord of Montpellier, in the year 1181 proclaimed it a school of free resort, where any teacher of medical science, from whatever country, might give instruction. Before the end of the century it possessed also a faculty of jurisprudence, a branch of learn- | ing for which it afterwards became famed. The university } of medicine and that of law continued, however, to be totally | distinct bodies with different constitutions. Petrarch was sent by his father to Montpellier to study the civil law.

On 26th October 1289 Montpellier was raised by Nicholas ‘ IV. to the rank of a “studium generale,” a mark of favour which, in a region where papal influence was so potent, resulted in a considerable accession of prosperity. The university also now included a faculty of arts; and there is satisfactory evidence of the existence of a faculty of theology before the close of the 14th century, although not formally recognized by the pope before the year 1421. In the course of the same century several colleges for poor students were also founded. The university of Toulouse Toulous, is to be noted as the first founded in any country by virtue of a papal charter. It took its rise in the efforts of Rome for the suppression of the Albigensian heresy, and its foundation formed one of the articles of the conditions of peace imposed by Louis IX. on Count Raymond of Toulouse. In the year 1233 it first acquired its full | privileges as a “‘studium generale” by virtue of a charter given by Gregory IX. This pontiff watched over the uni- versity with especial solicitude, and through his exertions it soon became a noted centre of theological and especially of Dominican teaching. As aschool of arts, jurisprudence, and medicine, although faculties of each existed, it never attained to any reputation. The university of Orleans Orleans, had a virtual existence as a studium generale as early as the first half of the 13th century, but in the year 1305 Clement V. endowed it with new privileges, and gave its teachers permission to form themselves into a corporation. The schools of Orleans had an existence, it is said, as early as the 6th century, and subsequently supplied the nucleus for the foundation of a university at Blois; but of this university no records now exist.) Orleans, in its organiza- tion, was modelled mainly on Paris, but its studies were complementary rather than in rivalry to the older univer- sity. The absorbing character of the study of the civil law, and the mercenary spirit in which it was pursued, had led the authorities at Paris to refuse to recognize it as & faculty. The study found a home at Orleans, where 1t was cultivated with an energy which attracted numerous students. In January 1235 we find the bishop of Orleans soliciting the advice of Gregory IX. as to the expediency of countenancing a study which was prohibited in Pans. Gregory decided that the lectures might be continued ; but he ordered that no beneficed ecclesiastic should be allowed to devote himself to so eminently secular a branch of learning. Orleans subsequently incorporated a faculty of arts, but its reputation from this period was always that of a school of legal studies, and in the 14th century its reputation in this respect was surpassed by no other unt-

1 See Ch. Desmaze, L’ Université de Puris (1200-1875).

3] vers famed for its classical learning ;

jgno tthe legal faculties, and 190 scholars. ig

jversity in Europe. Prior to the 13th century it had been and Angers, which received jits charter at the same time, also once enjoyed a like reputation, which, in a similar manner, it exchanged for \that of a school for civilians and canonists. The roll of ‘the university forwarded in 1378 to Clement VII. con- tains the names of 8 professors utriusque juris, 2 of civil and 2 of canon law, 72 licentiates, 284 bachelors of both The university of Avignon was first recognized as a “studium generale” by Boniface VIII. in the year 1303, with power to grant degrees in jurisprudence, arts, and medicine. Its numbers declined somewhat during the residence of the popes, owing to the counter attractions of the “studium” at-

hf tached to the curia ; but after the return of the papal Tt! court to Rome it became one of the most frequented uni- “| [i versities in France, and possessed at one time no less than “lors,jseven colleges. The university of Cahors enjoyed the advantage of being regarded with especial favour by John J) § XXII. In June 1332 he conferred upon it privileges n| identical with those already granted to the university of i} #Toulouse. In the following October, again following the { precedent established at Toulouse, he appointed the schol- ‘| jasticus of the cathedral chancellor of the university. In vd | November of the same year a bull, couched in terms 0) almost identical with those of the Magna Charta of Paris, t} assimilated the constitution of Cahors to that of the oldest 4 |university. The two schools in France which, down to the close of the 14th century, most closely resembled Paris €| |were Orleans and Cahors. The civil immunities and pri- g | vileges of the latter university were not, however, acquired il] | until the year 1367, when Edward III. of England, in his ij capacity as duke of Aquitaine, not only exempted the 1 «scholars from the payment of all taxes and imposts, but i] © Jbestowed upon them the peculiar privilege known as prive- uj \Weguem fort. Cahors also received a licence for faculties of 1) theology and medicine, but, like Orleans, it was chiefly mobléknown asa school of jurisprudence, It was asa “studium a] generale” in the same three faculties that Grenoble, in the ‘| [year 1339, received its charter from

Benedict XII. The rq university never attained to much importance, and its al Annals are for the most part involved in obscurity. At ¢ {the commencement of the 16th century it had ceased alto- ie ether to exist, was reorganized by Francis of Bourbon in 2) 1542, and in 1565 was united to the university of Valence. dig: {Phe university of Perpignan, founded, according to Denifle, ly fin 1379 by Clement VII. (although tradition had pre- is] fWiously ascribed its origin to Pedro IV. of Aragon), and qs, [fhat of Orange, founded in 1365 by Charles IV., were uni- i] |Wersities only by name and constitution, their names rarely 4] |hppearing in contemporary chronicles, while their very td |pxistence becomes at times a matter for reasonable doubt.

opciagl To some of the earlier Spanish universities—such as

alencia, founded about the year 1214 by Alfonso VIII. ; Huesca, founded in 1354 by Pedro IV.; and Lerida, jounded in 1300 by James I[.—the same description is tpplicable ; and their insignificance is probably indicated by the fact that they entirely failed to attract foreign tudents. Valladolid, founded in 1346 by Pope Clement VI., attained, however, to some celebrity ; and the foreign eachers and students frequenting the university became so lumerous that in 1373 King Henry II. caused an enact- ent to be passed for securing to them the same privileges)s those already accorded to the native element. But the jotal number of the students in 1403 was only 116, and rrammar and logic, along with jurisprudence (which was he principal study), constituted the sole curriculum. Vhatever reputation, indeed, was enjoyed by Spain for jearly five centuries after the commencement of the uni- ersity era, centred mainly in Salamanca, to which Seville,

erik si kee Ss

in the south, stood in the relation of a kind of subsidiary Sala- school, having been founded in 1254 by Alfongo tlie ™c Wise, simply for the study of Latin and of the Semitic oe languages, especially Arabic. Salamanca was founded in 1243 by Ferdinand IIT. of Castile as a “studium generale” in the three faculties of jurisprudence, the arts, and medi- cine. – Ferdinand extended his special protection to the students, granting them numerous

privileges and im- munities. Under his son Alfonso (above named) the university acquired a further development, and eventually included all the faculties save that of theology. But the main stress of its activity, as was the case with all the earlier Spanish universities, excepting only Palencia and Seville, until the commencement of the 15th century, was laid on the civil and the canon law. But, notwithstanding the favour with which Salamanca was regarded alike by the kings of Castile and by the Roman see, the provision for the payment of its professors was at first so inadequate and precarious that in 1298 they by common consent suspended their lectures, in consequence of their scanty remuneration. A permanent remedy for this difficulty was thereupon provided, by the appropriation of a certain portion of the ecclesiastical revenues of the diocese for the purpose of augmenting the professors' salaries. The earliest of the numerous colleges founded at Salamanca was that of St Bartholomew, long noted for its ancient library and valuable collection of manuscripts, which now form part of the royal library in Madrid.

The one university possessed by Portugal had its seat Coimbra,

in medizeval times alternately in Lisbon and in Coimbra, until, in the year 1537, it was permanently attached to the latter city. Its formal foundation took place in 1309, when it received from King Diniz a charter, the provisions of which were mainly taken from those of the charter given to Salamanca. In 1772 the university was entircly reconstituted.

Of the German universities, Prague, which existed as a Prague, "'studium " in the 18th century, was the earliest, and was at first frequented mainly by students from Styria and Austria, countries at that time ruled by the king of Bohemia. On 26th January 1347, at the request of Charles IV., Pope Clement VI. promulgated a bull auth. orizing the foundation of a "studium generale" in all the faculties. In the following year Charles himself issued a charter for the foundation, This document, which, if ori- ginal in character, would have been of much interest, has but few distinctive features of its own, its provisions being throughout adapted from those contained in the charters given by Frederick IJ. for the university of Naples and by Conrad for Salerno,—almost the only important feature of difference being that Charles bestows on the students of Prague all the civil privileges and

immunities which were enjoyed by the teachers of Paris and Bologna. Charles had himself been a student in Paris, and the organization of his new foundation was modelled on that university, a like division into four “nations” (although with different names) constituting one of the most marked features of imitation. The numerous students—and none of the medizeval universities attracted in their earlier history a larger concourse—were drawn from a gradually widening area, which at length included, not only all parts of Ger- many, but also England, France, Lombardy, Hungary, and Poland. Contemporary writers, with the exaggeration characteristic of medisval credulity, even speak of thirty thousand students as present in the university at one time, —a statement for which Denifle proposes to substitute two thousand as a more probable estimate. It is certain, however, that Prague, prior to the foundation of Leipsic, was one of the most frequented centres of learning in Europe, and Paris suffered a considerable diminution in

Craeow,

Vienna,

Fiinf- kirchen,

Ofen,

her numbers owing to the counter attractions of the great studium of Slavonia.

The university of Cracow in Poland was founded in May 1364, by virtue of a charter given by King Casimir the Great, who bestowed on it the same privileges as those possessed by the universities of Bologna and Padua. In the following September Urban V., in consideration of the remoteness of the city from other centres of education, constituted it a “studium generale” in all the faculties save that of theology. It is, however, doubtful whether these designs were carried into actual realization, for it is certain that, for a long time after the death of Casimir, there was no university whatever. Its real commencement must accordingly be considered to belong to the year 1400,

when it was reconstituted, and the papal sanction was given for the incorporation of a faculty of theology. From this time its growth and prosperity were continuous; and with the year 1416 it had so far “acquired a European reputation as to venture upon forwarding an expression of its views in connexion with the deliberations of the council of Constance. Towards the close of the 15th century the university is said to have been in high repute as a school of both astronomical and humanistic studies.

The Avignonese popes appear to have regarded the establishment of new faculties of theology with especial jealousy; and when, in 1364, Duke Rudolph IV. founded the university of Vienna, with the design of constituting it a “studium generale” in all the faculties, Urban V. refused his assent to the foundation of a theological school. Owing to the sudden death of Duke Rudolph, the university languished for the next twenty years, but after the ac- cession of Duke Albert IIJ., who may be regarded as its real founder, it acquired additional privileges, and its prosperity became marked and continuous. Like Prague, Vienna was for a long time distinguished by the compara- tively little attention bestowed by its teachers on the study of the civil law.

No country in the 14th century was looked upon with greater disfavour at Rome than Hungary. It was stig- matized as the land of heresy and schism. When, accord- ingly, in 1367 King Louis applied to Urban V. for his sanction of the scheme of founding a university at Fiinf- kirchen, although theological learning was in special need of encouragement in those regions, Urban would not con- sent to the foundation of a faculty of theology; he even made it a condition of his sanction for a “studium generale ” that King Louis should first undertake to provide for the payment of the professors. We hear but little concerning the university after its foundation, and it is doubtful whether it survived for any length of time the close of the century, having been about that period absorbed in all probability in the university of Ofen. The foundation of this university is also involved in considerable obscurity, and its original charter is lost. We only know that it was granted by Boniface IX., at the request of King Sigis- mund, in the year 1389. In the first half of the 15th century it ceased for a long period to exist, but was revived, or rather founded afresh, by King Mathias Cor- vinus, an eminent patron of learning, in the last quarter of the century. “The extreme east of

civilized continental Europe in medieval times," observes Denifle, "can be compared, so far as university education is concerned, only with the extreme west and the extreme south. In Hun- gary, as in Portugal and in Naples, there was constant fluctuation, but the west and the south, although troubled by yet greater commotions than Hungary, bore better fruit. Among all the countries possessed of universities in medi- ceval times, Hungary occupies the lowest place—a state of affairs of which, however, the proximity of the Turk must be looked upon as a main cause."

UN TVER Ss FD Tes

October 1385) from Urban VI. as a "studium generale" berg, in all the recognized faculties save that of the civil law,—

the form and substance of the document being almost iden-

tical with those of the charter granted to Vienna, granted at the request of the elector who conferred on the teachers and students, at the same time, the same civil privileges as those which belonged to the university of Paris. invested with the power of bestowing resident, the licences being conferred by the provost of the cathedral at Worms. the organizer and teacher, of the university was Marsilins of Inghen, to whose ability and energy Heidelberg was indebted for no little of its early reputation and success,

The university of Heidelberg received its charter (23d Heide.

\ It was palatine, Rupert i

In this case the functionary degrees was non-

But the real founder, as he was also

The omission of the civil law from the studies licensed in the original charter would seem to show that the pontif's compliance with the elector's request was merely formal, and Heidelberg, like Cologne, included the civil law among its faculties almost from its first creation. No mediayal university achieved a more rapid and permanent success, Regarded with favour alike by the civil and ecclesiastical potentates, its early annals were

singularly free from crises like those which characterize the history of many of the : medizval universities. The number of those admitted to degrees from the commencement of the first session (19th October 1386 to 16th December 1387) amounted to 579.1 Owing to the labours of the Dominicans, Cologne had Cologne, gained a reputation as a seat of learning long before the founding of its university; and it was through the ad- vocacy of some leading members of the Mendicant orders that, at the desire of the city council, its charter as a ‘‘studium generale ” (21st May 1388) was obtained from Urban VI. It was organized on the model of the uni- versity of Paris, as a school of theology and canon law, and “any other recognized faculty,”—the civil law being incorporated asa faculty soon after the promulgation of the charter. In common with the other early universities of Germany—Prague, Vienna, and Heidelberg—Cologne owed nothing to imperial patronage, while it would appear to have been, from the first, the object of special favour with Rome. This circumstance serves to account for its distinctly ultramontane sympathies in medieval times and even far into the 16th century. In a report transmitted to Gregory XITI. in 1577, the university expressly derives both its first origin and its privileges from the Holy See, and professes to owe no allegiance save to the Roman pontiff. Erfurt, no less noted as a centre of Franciscan Erfurt. than was Cologne of Dominican influence, received its charter (16th September 1379) from the anti-pope Clement VIL. as a ‘“‘studium generale” in all the faculties, Ten years later (4th May 1389) it was founded afresh by Urban VI., without any recognition of the act of his pretended predecessor. In the 15th century the number of its students was larger than that at any other German unl- versity—a fact attributable partly to the reputation it had acquired as a school of jurisprudence, and partly to the ardour with which the philosophic controversies of the time were debated in its midst. The collegiate system is to be noted as a feature common to all these early German universities ; and, in nearly all, the professors were partly remunerated by the appropra- tion of certain prebends, appertaining to some neighbouring church, to their maintenance. Pations Throughout the 15th century the relations of the Roman Hs a pontiffs to the universities continued much the pe popes to although the independent attitude assumed at the the unis councils of Constance and Basel by the deputies from the yersities

- The statistics of Hautz (Gesch. d. Univ, Heidelberg, i. Hee are corrected by Denifle (Die Entstehung der Universitdten, p. :

UM IVE R SLIT LES

universities, and especially by those from Paris, could not fail to excite their apprehensions. ‘Their bulls for each new foundation begin again to indicate a certain jealousy with respect to the appropriation of prebends by the founders. Where such appropriations are made, and more particularly in France, a formal sanction of the transfer generally finds a place in the bull authorizing the founda- tion ; while sometimes the founder or founders are them- selves enjoined to provide the endowments requisite for the establishment and support of the university. In this manner the control of the pontiff over each newly-created seat of learning assumed a more real character, from the fact that his assent was accompanied by conditions which rendered it no longer a mere formality. The imperial intervention, on the other hand, was rarely invoked in Germany,—Greifswald, Freiburg, and Tiibingen being the only instances in which the emperor’s confirmation of the foundation was solicited! But whatever influence the Roman see may have gained by increasing intervention was more than counteracted by those other tendencies which came into operation in the second half of the century. These were of a twofold character :—the first directly modi- fying the studies themselves, as the results of the discovery of printing and the new spirit awakened by the teach- ing of the humanists; the second affecting the external conditions, such as the multiplication of schools, and the growing demand for skilled physicians and learned civilians, —circumstances which afforded increased employment for the services of men of academic training. In northern Germany and in the Netherlands, the growing wealth and | prosperity of the different states especially favoured the ‘ formation of new centres of learning. In the flourishing , duchy of Brabant the university of Louvain (1426) was to a great extent controlled by the municipality; and their patronage, although ultimately attended with detrimental results, long enabled Louvain to outbid all the other uni- versities of Europe in the munificence with which she rewarded her professors. In the course of the next cen- tury the “Belgian Athens,” as she is styled by Lipsius, ranked second only to Paris in numbers and reputation. | In its numerous separate foundations and general organiza- | tion—it -

possessed no less than twenty-eight colleges—it | closely resembled the English universities; while its active) press afforded facilities to the author and the controversialist of which both Cambridge and Oxford were at that time) almost destitute. It embraced all the faculties, and no) degrees in Europe stood so high as guarantees of general | acquirements. Erasmus records it as a common saying, | that “no one could graduate at Louvain without know- ledge, manners, and age.” Sir William Hamilton speaks of the examination at Louvain for a degree in artsas “the best example upon record of the true mode of such ex- amination, and, until recent times, in fact, the only ex- ample in the history of universities worthy of consideration) at all.” He has translated from Vernuleus the order and | method of this examination.? In 1788 the faculties of | jurisprudence, medicine, and philosophy were removed to | Brussels, and in 1797 the French suspended the university altogether. When Belgium was formed into an indepen- | dent state in 1831, the university was refounded as a sRoman Catholic foundation. | The circumstances of the foundation of the university | of Leipsic are especially noteworthy, it having been the j result of the migration of almost the entire German j element from the university of Prague. This element comprised (1) Bavarians, (2) Saxons, (3) Poles (this last- named division being drawn from a wide area, which in- cluded Meissen, Lusatia, Silesia, and Prussia), and, being

1 Meiners, Gesch. d. hohen Schulen, i. 370. 2 Dissertations and Discussions, Append. iii.

represented by three votes in the assemblies of the uni- versity, while the Bohemians possessed but one, had ac- quired a preponderance in the direction of affairs which the latter could no longer submit to. Religious differ- ences, again, evoked mainly by the preaching of John Huss, further intensified the existing disagreements ; and eventually, in the year 1409, King Wenceslaus, at the prayer of his Bohemian subjects, issued a decree which: exactly reversed the previous distribution of votes, —three votes being assigned to the Bohemian nation and only one to all the rest. The Germans took deep umbrage, and seceded to Leipsic, where, a bull having been obtained from Alexander V. (9th September 1409), a new “ studium

generale” was founded by the landgrave of Thuringia and the margraves of Meissen. ‘The members were divided into four nations—composed of natives of Meissen, Saxony, Bavaria, and Poland. Two colleges were founded, a greater and a smaller, but designed, not for poor students, but for masters of arts,—twelve being admitted on the former and eight on the latter foundation. of northern Germany was that of Rostock, founded by the dukes John and Albert of Mecklenburg, the scheme receiving the sanction of Martin V. ina bull dated 13th February 1419 as that of a “studium generale ” in all the faculties excepting theology. ‘The faculty of theology was added in the year 1432. Two colleges were also founded, with the same design and on the same scale as at Leipsic.

No little illustration is afforded by the circumstances attending the foundation of the French universities of the struggle that was going on between the crown and the

Roman see. The earliest foundation in the 15th century Poitiers,

was that of Poitiers. It was instituted by Charles VIT. in 1431, almost immediately after his accession, with tlie special design of creating a centre of learning less favour- able to English interests than Paris had at that time shown herself to be. Eugenius IV. could not refuse his sanction to the scheme, but he endeavoured partially to defeat Charles’s design by conferring on the new “ studium generale ” only the same privileges as those possessed by Toulouse, and thus placing it at a disadvantage in com- parison with Paris. Charles rejoined by an extraordinary exercise of his own prerogative, conferring on Poitiers all the privileges collectively possessed by Paris, Toulouse, Montpellier, Angers, and Orleans, and at the same time placing the university under special royal protection. foundation of the university of Caen, in the diocese of Bayeux, was attended by conditions almost exactly the reverse of those which belonged to the foundation of that at Poitiers. It was founded under English auspices during the short period of the supremacy of the English arms in Normandy in the 15th century. Its charter (May 1437) was given by Eugenius IV., and the bishop of Bayeux was appointed its changellor. The university of Paris had by this time completely forfeited the favour of Eugenius by its attitude at the council of Basel, and Eugenius inserted in the charter for Caen a clause of an entirely

novel char- acter, requiring all those admitted to degrees to take an oath of fidelity to the see of Rome, and to bind themselves to attempt nothing prejudicial to her interests. ‘To this proviso the pragmatic sanction of Bourges was the reply given by Charles in the following year. On 18th May 1442 we find King Henry VI. writing to Eugenius, and dwelling with satisfaction on the rapid progress of the new university, to which, he says, students had flocked from all quarters, and were still daily arriving.* On 30th October 1452 its charter was given afresh by Charles in terms which left the original charter unrecognized ; both teachers and learners were made subject to the civil authorities of the city, while all privileges conferred in the former charter 3 Bekynton’s Correspondence, i. 128.

OID, == HOG

The first university Rostock,

The Caen,

Bordeaux, Valence, Nantes,

Bourges,

842

in cases of legal disputes were abolished. From this time the university of Caen was distinguished by its loyal spirit and firm resistance to ultramontane pretensions ; and, although swept away at the French Revolution, it was afterwards restored, owing to the sense of the services it had thus once rendered to the national cause.!_ No especi- ally notable circumstances characterize the foundation of the university of Bordeaux (1441) or that of Valence (1452), but that of Nantes, which received its charter from Pius II. in 1463, is distinguished by the fact that it did not receive the ratification of the king of France, and the conditions under which its earlier traditions were formed thus closely resemble those of Poitiers. It seems also to have been regarded with particular favour by Pius IL, a pontiff who was at once a ripe scholar and a writer upon education. He gave to Nantes a notable body of privi- leges, which not only represent an embodiment of all the various privileges granted to universities prior to that

date, but afterwards became, with their copious and somewhat tautological phraseology, the accepted model for the great majority of university charters, whether issued by the pope or by the emperor, or by the civil authority. The bishop of Nantes was appointed head of the university, and was charged with the special protection of its privileges against all interference from whatever quarter.2 The bull for the foundation of the university of Bourges was given in 1465 by Paul II. at the request of Louis XI. and his brother,

It confers on the community the same privileges as those

Greifs- wald,

Freiburg,

Basel,

enjoyed by the other universities of France. The royal sanction was given at the petition of the citizens; but, from reasons which do not appear, they deemed it neces- sary further to petition that their charter might also be registered and enrolled by the parlement of Paris.

In Germany, the first of the universities representing the new influences above referred to is that of Greifswald. A wealthy burgomaster, who had graduated as a master of arts at Rostock, was the chief mover; and, his proposal being cordially seconded by the city council, the duke of the province, and certain abbots of neighbouring monas- teries, the necessary bull was obtained from Calixtus ITI, (29th May 1456). The first session was commenced in October of the same year. Three colleges were at the same time founded,—two for masters of arts, as at Leipsic and Rostock, and a third for jurists. The chairs in the different faculties were distributed as follows : theology 3, jurisprudence 5, medicine 1, arts 4,—the number of jurists showing that the study of the civil law still obtained a certain preponderance. The university of Freiburg was founded by the archduke Albert, brother of the emperor Frederick II.,—the papal bull being given 20th April 1455, and the imperial ratification in the following year. The first session was opened in 1460, under the presidency of Matthew Hummel, a privy councillor, and the original numbers soon received considerable

additions by secessions from Vienna and from Heidelberg. The endowment was further augmented by an annual allowance from the city council, and by certain canonries and livings attached to neighbouring parishes. In the same year, and probably in a spirit of direct rivalry, was opened the university of Basel. The cathedral school in that ancient city, together with others attached to the monasteries, afforded a suffi- cient nucleus for a "studium," and Pius IL, who, as Aineas Sylvius, had been a resident in the city, was easily prevailed upon to grant the charter (12th November 1459). In the character of its endowments, and in the relative importance attached to the study of the civil law, Basel much resembled Greifswald, but its success throughout the 15th century was marred by the languid character of the

1 De la Rue, Essais Hist. sur la Ville de Caen, ii. 187-40. 2 Meiners, i. 368,

UNIVERSITI"VG

support afforded it by the civic authorities. Before he had signed the bull for the foundation of the university of Basel, Pius IL, at the request of duke William of Bavaria had issued another bull for the foundation of a university at Ingolstadt (7th April 1459), 1472 that the work of teaching was actually commenced stadt, there. Some long-existing prebends, founded by former dukes of Bavaria, were appropriated to the endowment and the chairs in the different faculties were distributed ae follows :— theology 2, jurisprudence 3, medicine 1, arts 6, —arts in conjunction with theology thus obtaining the preponderance. As at Caen, twenty-two years before, an oath of fidelity to the Roman pontiff was imposed on every student admitted to a degree? That this proviso was not subsequently abolished, as at Caen, is a feature in the history of the university of Ingolstadt which was attended

by important results. Nowhere did the Reformation meet with more stubborn resistance, and it was at Ingolstadt that the Counter-Reformation was commenced, In 1556 the Jesuits made their first settlement in the university,

The next two universities took their rise in the archi. Treves,

episcopal seats of Treves and Mainz That at Treves received its charter as early as 1450; but the first academ. ical session did not commence until 1473. Here the ecclesiastical influences appear to have been unfavourable to the project. The archbishop demanded 2000 florins as the price of his sanction. The cathedral chapter threw difficulties in the way of the appropriation of certain livings and canonries to the university endowment ; and so obstinate was their resistance that in 1655 they succeeded in altogether rescinding the gift on payment of a very inadequate sum. It was not until 1722 that the assembly of deputies, by a formal grant, relieved the university

from the difficulties in which it had become involved. The Maing,

university of Mainz, on the other hand, was almost en- tirely indebted to the archbishop Diether for its founda- tion. It was at his petition that Sixtus IV. granted the charter, 23d November 1476 ; and Diether, being himself an enthusiastic humanist, thereupon circulated a letter, couched in elegant Latinity, addressed to students through- out his diocese, inviting them to repair to the new centre, and dilating on the advantages of academic studies and of learning. The rise of these two universities, however, neither of which attained to much distinction, represents little more than the incorporation of certain already exist- ing institutions into a homogeneous whole, the power of conferring degrees being superadded. But the university Tiibin- of Tiibingen, founded by charter of Sixtus IV. (9th 8% November 1476), represents an entirely new creation. Its real founder was Mathilda, the mother of Count Eber- hard of Witirtemberg, who appropriated five livings and eight prebends to the endowment. Of the chairs, 3 were for theology, 3 for the canon and 2 for the civil law, 2 for medicine, and 4 for arts. The general financial condition of this university in the year 1541-42, and the sources from whence its revenues were derived, have been illustrated by Hoffmann in a short paper which shows the fluctuating character of the resources of a university in those days,—liable to be affected, as they were, both by the seasons and the markets.4

Nearly contemporaneous with these foundations were ll those of Upsala (1477) and Copenhagen (1479), which, oa although lying without the

political boundaries of Germany, pagen, reflected her influence. The charter for Copenhagen was given by Sixtus IV. as early as 1475. The students

3 Paulsen, in speaking of this proviso as one “ die weder vorher noch nachher sonst vorkommt,” would consequently seem to be not quite accurate, See Die Griindung der deutschen Universititen, p. 277.

- Ockonomischer Zustand der Universitét Tiibingen gegen de Mitie des 16ten Jahrhunderts, 1845.

But it was not until Ingol.

| dictis fiat et constituatur. _ attracted to itself a larger share of the attention of Europe

1 scholastic era were overthrown. © founded in Gerniany prior to the Reformation was that of | Frankfort-on-the-Oder.

jllepburn, the prior of the monastery of St Andrews; and

college to the Blessed Virgin Mary of the Assumption, and

attracted to this new centre were mainly from within the radius of the university of Cologne, and its statutes werelittle more than a transcript of those of the latter foundation. The electorates of Wittenberg and Brandenburg were now the only two considerable German territories which did not possess a studium generale, and the university founded at Wittenberg by Maximilian I. (6th July 1502) is notable as the first established in Germany by virtue of an imperial as distinguished from a papal decree. Its charter is, however, drawn up with the traditional phrase- ology of the pontifical bulls, and is evidently not conceived in any spirit of antagonism to Rome. Wittenberg is con- stituted a “ studium generale” in all the four faculties, — the right to confer degrees in theology and canon law having been sanctioned by the papal legate some months before, 2d February 1502. The endowment of the uni- versity with church revenues duly received the papal sanction,—a bull of Alexander VI. authorizing the appro- priation of twelve canonries attached to the castle church,

_ as wellas of eleven prebends in outlying districts—wut sic

per omnem modum unum corpus ex studio et collegio pre- No university in Germany

at its commencement. And it was its distinguishing merit that it was the first academic centre north the Alps where the antiquated methods and barbarous Latinity of the The last university

The design, first conceived by the elector John of Brandenburg, was carried into execu-

tion by his son Joachim, at whose request Pope Julius IT. , issued a bull for the foundation, 15th March 1506. imperial charter, identical in its contents with the papal ‘ bull, followed on 26th October. , an endowment of canonries and livings similar to that of _ Wittenberg, and some houses in the city were assigned for

An

The university received

its use by the elector.

The first university in Scotland was that of St Andrews, jfounded in 1411 by Henry Wardlaw, bishop of that see, and modelled chiefly on the constitution of the university jof Paris. It acquired all its three colleges—St Salvator’s, |St Leonard’s, and St Mary’s—before the Reformation,— \the first having been founded in 1456 by Bishop James Kennedy ; the second in 1512 by the youthful archbishop Alexander Stuart (natural son of James IV.) and John

jthe third, also in 1512, by the Beatons, who in the year 1537 procured a bull from Pope Paul III. dedicating the

adding further endowments. The most ancient of the universities of Scotland, with its three colleges, was thus jreared in an atmosphere of medieval theology, and un- jdoubtedly designed as a bulwark against heresy

and pchism. But “by a strange irony of fate,” it has been fobserved, “two of these colleges became, almost from the first, the foremost agents in working the overthrow of that rhurch which they were founded to defend.” St Leonard’s fnore especially, like St John’s or Queens’ at Cambridge, became a noted centre of intellectual life and Reformation principles. That he “had drunk at St Leonard’s well” became a current expression for implying that a theologian had imbibed the doctrines of Protestantism. The univer- ity of Glasgow was founded as a “ studium generale” in 1453, and possessed two colleges. Prior to the Reforma- tion it acquired but little celebrity ; its discipline was lax, and the number of the students but small, while the in- struction was not only inefficient but irregularly given; no unds were provided for the maintenance of regular lectures n the higher faculties; and there was no adequate execu- tive power for the maintenance of discipline. The uni-

versity of Aberdeen, which was founded in 1494, at first Aberdeen. possessed only one college,—namely, King’s. Marischal College, founded in 1593 by George Keith, fifth Earl Marischal, was constituted by its founder independent of

the university in Old Aberdeen, being itself both a col-

lege and a university, with the power of conferring degrees. Bishop Elphinstone, the founder both of the university and

of King’s College (1505), had been educated at Glasgow,

and had subsequently both studied and taught at Paris

and at Orleans. To the wider experience which he had

thus gained we may probably attribute the fact that the constitution of the university of Aberdeen was free from

the glaring defects which then characterized that of the university of Glasgow.! But in all the medieval uni- versities of Germany, England, and Scotland, modelled as

they were on a common type, the absence of adequate discipline was, in a greater or legs degree, a common defect. In connexion with this feature we may note the coniparatively small percentage of matriculated students proceeding to the degrees of B.A. and M.A. when com-

pared with later times. Of this disparity the following Degrees table, exhibiting the relative numbers in the university of taken at Leipsic for every ten years from the year 1427 to 1552, Leipsic. probably affords a fair average illustration,—the remark-

able fluctuations probably depending quite as much upon

the comparative healthiness of the period (in respect of freedom from epidemic) and the abundance of the harvests

as upon any other cause :—

F ‘cent:

Years. ae Years. BA. | M.A ia

7 B.A’s. | M.A’s, 1427-1480 | 787 || 1429-1482 | 151 | 98 || 20-4 | 3°8 1437-1440 | 715 || 1489-1442 | 199] 50 || 27°3 | 6-9 1447-1450 | 808 || 1449-1452 | 274 | (50) || 33°99 |... 1457-1460 | 1,447 || 1459-1462 | 559 | 81 || 38°6 | 5:6 1467-1470 | 1,187 || 1469-1472 | 410} 61 || 36-0 | 5+4 1477-1480 | 1,163 || 1479-1482 | 458 | 49 || 39-4 | 4:9 1487-1490 | 1,858 || 1489-1492 | 714] 62 |i 88-4 | 3-4 1497-1500 | 1,288 || 1499-1502 | 497] 59 || 38:5 | 4:6 1507-1510 | 1,948 || 1509-1512 | 510] 65 || 261 | 3-4 1517-1520 | 1,445 || 1519-1522 | 247| 35 || 17-0 | 2-4 1527-1530 | 419 || 1529-1582 | 77 | 38 || 18-4 | 7-9 1537-1540 | 686 || 1589-1542 | 122] 97 [1173 | 3-9 1547-1550 | 1,818 || 1549-1552 | 200! 72 || 15-2] 5:5 14,969 4418 | 672 || 29°5 | 45

The German universities in these times seem to have General admitted for the most part their inferiority in learning to es of older and more favoured

centres ; and their consciousness aoe of the fact is shown by the efforts which they made to ypiver. attract instructors from Italy, and by the frequent resort sities. of the more ambitious students to schools like Paris, Bologna, Padua, and Pavia. That they took their rise in any spirit of systematic opposition to the Roman see (as Meiners and others have contended), or that their orga- nization was something external to and independent of the church, is sufficiently disproved by the foregoing evidence. Generally speaking, they were eminently conservative bodies, and the new learning of the humanists and the new methods of instruction that now began to demand attention were alike for a long period unable to gain ad- mission within academic circles. Reformers such as Hegius,

John Wessel, and Rudolphus Agricola carried on their work at places like Deventer remote from university in- fluences. That there was a considerable amount of mental activity going on in the universities themselves is not to be denied ; but it was mostly of that unprofitable kind which, while giving rise to endless controversy, turned upon questions in connexion with which the implied postulates and the terminology employed rendered all scientific investi-

1 Fastt Aberdonenses, Pref. p. xvi.

gation hopeless. At almost every university— Leipsic, Greifswald, and Prague (after 1209) being the principal exceptions—the so-called Realists and Nominalists repre- sented two great parties occupied with an internecine struggle. At Paris, owing to the overwhelming strength of the theologians, the Nominalists were indeed under a kind of ban; but at Heidelberg they had altogether ex- pelled their antagonists. It was much the same at Vienna and at Erfurt,—the latter, from the ready reception which it gave to new speculation, being styled by its enemies “novorum omuium portus.” At Basel, under the leadership of the eminent Johannes a Lapide, the Realists with diffi- culty maintained their ground. Freiburg, Tiibingen, and Ingolstadt, in the hope of diminishing controversy, arrived at a kind of compromise, each party having its own pro- fessor, and representing a distinct “nation.” At Mainz the

were scarcely less perceptible, as they found expression in connexion with the Counter-Reformation. In Germany the Thirty Years' War was attended by consequences which were felt long after the 17th century. In France the Revolution of 1789 resulted in the actual uprooting of the university system.

The influences of the New Learning, and the special character which it assumed as it made its way in Germany in connexion with the labours of scholars like Erasmus, John Reuchlin, Ulrich von Hutten, and Melanchthon, augured well for the future. It was free from the frivol- ities, the pedantry, the immoralities, and the scepticism which characterized so large a proportion of the correspond. ing culture in Italy. It gave promise of resulting at once in a critical and enlightened study of the masterpieces of classical antiquity, and in a reverent and yet rational inter-

pretation of the Scriptures and the fathers. The fierce Per- bigotry and the ceaseless controversies evoked by the pro- Bicious

authorities adopted a manual of logic which was essentially an embodiment of Nominalistic principles.

Abandon- In Italy, almost without exception, it was decided that | mulgation of Lutheran or Calvinistic doctrine dispelled, er : aie. these controversies were endless, and that their effects were | however, this hopeful prospect, and converted what might eats. studies Pernicious. It was resolved, accordingly, to expel logic, | otherwise have become the tranquil abodes of the Muses ism, in Italy, and allow its place to be filled by rhetoric. It was by | into gloomy fortresses of sectarianism. Of the manner in virtue of this decision, which was of a tacit rather than a | which it affected the highest culture, the observation of formal character, that the expounders of the new learning | Henke in his Life of Calixtus (i. 8), that for a century in the 15th century, men like Emmanuel Chrysoloras, | after the Reformation the history of Lutheran theology Guarino, Leonardo Bruni, Bessarion, Argyropulos, and | becomes almost identified with that of the German uni- Valla, carried into effect that important revolution in | versities, may serve as an illustration. academic studies which constitutes a new era in university

The first Protestant university was that of Marburg, Marbury, learning, and largely helped to pave the way for the Re- | founded by Philip the Magnanimous, landgrave of Hesse, formation.! This discouragement of the controversial | 30th May 1527. Expressly designed as a bulwark of spirit, continued as it was in relation to theological ques- | Lutheranism, it was mainly built up out of the confiscation tions after the Reformation, obtained for the Italian uni- | of the property of the religious orders in the Hessian versities a fortunate immunity from dissensions like those | capital. The house of the Dominicans, who had fled on which, as we shall shortly see, distracted the centres of | the first rumour of spoliation, was converted into lecture- High re- learning in Germany. The professorial body also attained | rooms for the faculty of jurisprudence. The church and putation to an almost unrivalled reputation. It was exceptionally | convent of the order known as the “ Kugelherrn” was — select, only those who were in receipt of salaries being | appropriated to the theological faculty. The friary of the — permitted, as a rule, to lecture; it was also famed for its | Barefooted Friars was shared between the faculties of ability, the institution of concurrent chairs proving an excel- | medicine and philosophy. The university, which was the lent stiniulus. These chairs were of two kinds —“‘ordinary” | object of the margrave’s peculiar care, rapidly rose to and “‘extraordinary,”—the former being the more liberally | celebrity ; it was resorted to by students from remote endowed and fewer in number. For each subject of im- | countries, even from Greece, and its professors were of portance there were thus always two and sometimes three | distinguished ability. How much, however, of this popu- rival chairs, and a powerful and continuous emulation | larity depended on its theological associations is to be seem was thus maintained among the teachers. ‘From the | in the fact that after the year 1605, when, by the decree integrity of their patrons, and the lofty standard by which | of Count Maurice, its formulary of faith was changed from they were judged,” says Sir W. Hamilton, “the call to a | Lutheran to Calvinistic, its numbers greatly declined. Paduan or Pisan chair was deemed the highest of all | This dictation of the temporal power now becomes one of literary honours. The status of professor was in Italy | the most notable features in academic history in Protestant elevated to a dignity which in other countries it has never | Germany. ‘The universities, having repudiated the papal reached ; and not a few of the most illustrious teachers in | authority, while that of the episcopal order was at an end, the Italian

seminaries were of the proudest nobility of the | now began to pay especial court to the temporal ruler, and land. While the universities of other countries had fallen | sought in every way to conciliate his goodwill, representing from Christian and cosmopolite to sectarian and local | with peculiar distinctness the theory,—cajus regio, ejus relt- schools, it is the peculiar glory of the Italian that, under | gio. This tendency was further strengthened by the fact the enlightened liberality of their patrons, they still con- | that their colleges, bursaries, and other similar foundations tinued to assert their European universality. Creed and | were no longer derived from or supported by ecclesiastical country were in them no bar,—the latter not even a reason | institutions, but were mainly dependent on the civil power. of preference. Foreigners of every nation are to be found The Lutheran university of Kénigsberg was founded 17th ainong their professors; and the most learned man in | August 1544 by Albert IIL, margrave of Brandenburg; Scotland (Dempster) sought in a Pisan chair that theatre | and the first duke of Prussia, and his wife Dorothea, 4 for his abilities which he could not find at home.”2 Danish princess. In this instance, the religious character Events The Reformation represents the great boundary line in | of the foundation not having been determined at the i ee the history of the medizval universities, and also, for a | mencement, the papal and the imperial sanction were Pe fy long time after, the main influence in the history of those | applied for, although not accorded. King Sigismund 0 inuni- new foundations which subsequently arose in Protestant | Poland, however, which kingdom exercised at that ie versity countries. Even in Catholic countries its secondary effects | protectorate over the Prussian duchy, ultimately gave the history, necessary charter (29th September 1561), at the same ume

1 For an excellent account of this movement, see Georg Voigt, Die Wiederbelebung des classischen Alterthwms, 2d ed. » 2 vols., 1880. * Hamilton, Discussions, 2d ed., p. 373.

ordaining that all students who graduated as masters ‘a the faculty of philosophy should rank as nobles of te

Very hi Ws 1? PEs

Polish kingdom. When Prussia was raised to the rank of a kingdom (1701) the university was made a royal founda- tion, and the "'collegium Fridericianum," which was then erected, received corresponding privileges. In 1862 the university buildings were rebuilt, and the number of the students is now nearly one thousand.

The Lutheran university of Jena had its origin in a gymnasium founded by John Frederick the Magnanimous, elector of Saxony, during his imprisonment, for the express purpose of promoting Evangelical doctrines and repairing the loss of Wittenberg, where the Philippists had gained the ascendency. Its charter, which the emperor Charles V. refused to grant, and which was obtained with some difficulty from his brother, Ferdinand I., eventually en- abled the authorities to open the university, 2d February 1558. Distinguished for its vehement assertion of Luth- eran doctrine, its hostility to the teaching of Wittenberg was hardly less pronounced than that with which both centres regard Roman Catholicism. For a long time it was chiefly noted as a school of medicine, and in the 17th and 18th centuries it was in bad repute for the lawlessness of its students, among whom duelling prevailed to a scan- dalous extent. The beauty of its situation and the emin- ence of its professoriate have, however, generally attracted a considerable proportion of students from other countries, Its numbers in 1885 were 566.

The Lutheran university of Helmstidt, founded by Duke Julius (of the house of Brunswick-Wolfenbtittel), and designated after him in its official records as " Acade- mia Julia," received its charter, 8th May 1575, from the emperor Maximilian II. No university in the 16th cen- tury commenced under more favourable auspices. It was munificently endowed by the founder and by his son; and its " Convictorium," or college for poor students, expended in the course of thirty years no less than 100,000 thalers, an extraordinary expenditure for an institution of such a character in those days. Beautifully and conveniently situated in what had now become the well-peopled region between the Weser and the lower Elbe, and distinguished by its comparatively temperate maintenance of the Luth- eran tenets, it attracted a considerable concourse of _ students, especially from the upper classes, not a few being of princely rank. Throughout its history, until suppressed in 1809, Helmstidt enjoyed the special and powerful patronage of the dukes of Saxony.

The “Gymnasium Augidianum” of Nuremberg, founded in 1526, and removed in 1575 to Altdorf, represents the origin of the university of Altdorf. A charter was granted in 1578 by the emperor Rudolph IL, and the university was formally opened in 1580. It was at first, however, empowered only to grant degrees in arts ; but in 1623 the emperor Ferdinand II. added the permission to create) doctors of law and medicine, and also to confer crowns on poets ; and. in 1697 its faculties were completed by the | permission given by the emperor Leopold I. to create | doctors of theology. Like Louvain, Altdorf was nominally | ruled by the municipality, but in the latter university this | power of control remained practically inoperative, and the consequent freedom enjoyed by the community from evils like those which brought about the decline of Louvain is thus described by Hamilton :—“ The decline | of that great and wealthy seminary (Louvain) was mainly | determined by its vicious patronage, both as vested in the | university and in the town. Altdorf, on the other hand, | was about the poorest university in Germany, and long one of the most eminent. Its whole endowment never rose above £800 a year; and, till the period of its declension, the professors of Altdorf make at least as distinguished a figure in the history of philosophy as those of all the eight universities of the British empire together. On looking

closely into its constitution the anomaly is at once solved. The patrician senate of Nuremberg were too intelligent and patriotic to attempt the exercise of such a function. The nomination of professors, though formally ratified by the senate, was virtually made by a board of four curators; and what is worthy of remark, as long as curatorial patronage was a singularity in Germany, Altdorf maintained its rela- tive pre-eminence, losing it only when a similar mean was adopted in the more favoured universities of the empire.”!

The conversion of Marburg into a school of Calvinistic Giessen,

doctrine gave occasion to the foundation of the universities of Giessen and of Rinteln. Of these the former, founded by the margrave of Darmstadt, Louis V., as a kind of refuge for the Lutheran professors from Marburg, received its charter from the emperor Rudolph IL, 19th May 1607. When,

however, the margraves of Darmstadt acquired possession of Marburg in 1625, the university was trans- ferred thither; in 1650 it was moved back again to Giessen. The number of matriculated students at the com- mencement of the century was about 250; in 1887 it was 484, In common with the other universities of Germany, but with a facility which obtained for it a specially unenvi- able reputation, Giessen was for a long time wont to confer the degree of doctor in absentia in the different faculties without requiring adequate credentials. This practice, however, which drew forth an emphatic protest from the eminent historian Mommsen, has within the last few years

been entirely abandoned. ‘he university of Rinteln was Rintel.

founded 17th July 1621 by the emperor Ferdinand II. Almost immediately after its foundation it became the prey of contending parties in the Thirty Years’ War, and its early development was thus materially hindered. It never, however, attained to much distinction, and in 1819 it was

suppressed, The university of Strasburg was founded in Stras- 1621 on the basis of an already existing academy, to which burg.

the celebrated John Sturm stood, during the latter part of his life, in the relation of ‘rector perpetuus,” and of which we are told that in 1578 it included more than a thousand scholars, among whom were 200 of the nobility, 24 counts and barons, and three princes. It also attracted students from all parts of Europe, and especially from Portugal, Poland, Denmark, France, and England. The method of Sturin’s teaching became the basis of that of the Jesuits, and through them of the public school instruction in Eng- land. In 1621 Ferdinand II. conferred on this academy full privileges as a university; in the language of the charter, ‘‘in omnibus facultatibus, doctores, licentiatos, magistros, et baccalaureos, atque insuper poctas laureatos creandi et promovendi.”? In 1681 Strasburg became French, and remained so until 1870.

The university of Dorpat (now Russian) was founded Dorpat.

by Gustavus Adolphus in 1632, and reconstituted by the emperor Alexander I. in 1802. A special interest attaches to this university from the fact that it

has for a long time been the scene of the contending influences of Teutonism and Slavonianism, Situated in Livonia, which at the time of its foundation represented a kind of debateable land between Russia and Poland, its gradual monopoly by the former country has not been without resistance and pro- tests on the part of that Teutonic element which was at one time the more potent in its midst. The study of the Slavonic languages has here received considerable stimulus, and by a decree in May 1887 the use of the Russian lan- guage having been made obligatory in all places of instruc- tion through the Baltic provinces, Russian has now taken the place of German as the language of the lecture-room. Dorpat possesses a fine library of over 80,000 volumes, and is also noted for its admirable botanical collection. The

1 Discussions, &c., 2d ed., pp. 888-9. 2 Promulg. Acad, Privil., &c., Strasburg, 1628.

Prague.

Bam- berg.

Inns- bruck.

Breslau.

The Jesuits in the uni- versity.

Russian minister has also recently instituted a professor- ship of the comparative grammar of the Slavonic dialects (now filled by J. Baudouin de Courtenay). The general influence of the university has been rapidly extending during the last few years far beyond the Baltic provinces. The number of students, which in 1879 was 1106, in 1886 was 1751.1 A like contest between contending nation- alities has recently met with a final solution at Prague, where a Czech university has been established on an inde- pendent basis, the German university having commenced its separate career in the winter session of 1882-83. The German foundation retains its endowments, but the state subvention is divided between the two.

The repudiation on the part of the Protestant univer- sities of both papal and episcopal authority evoked a counter-demonstration among those centres which still adhered to Catholicism, while their theological intolerance gave rise to a great reaction, under the influence of which the medixval Catholic universities were reinvigorated and reorganized (although strictly on the traditional lines), while new and important centres were created. It was on the tide of this reaction, aided by their own skill and sagacity, that the Jesuits were borne to that commanding position which made them for a time the arbiters of educa- tion in Europe. The earliest university whose charter represented this reaction was that of Bamberg, founded by the prince-bishop Melchior Otto, after whom it was named ‘Academia Ottoniana.” It was opened Ist September 1648, and received both from the emperor Frederick III. and Pope Innocent X. all the civil and ecclesiastical privi- leges of a medixval foundation. At first, however, it com- prised only the faculties of arts and of thedlogy; to these was added in 1729 that of jurisprudence, and in 1764 that of medicine. In this latter faculty Dr Ignatius Dollinger (the father of the historian) was for a long time a distin- guished professor. The university of Innsbruck was founded in 1672 by the emperor Leopold I, from whom it received its name of “Academia Leopoldina.” In the following century, under the patronage of the empress Maria Theresa, it made considerable progress, and received from her its ancient library and bookshelves in 1745. In 1782 the university underwent a somewhat singular change, being reduced by the emperor Joseph II. from the status of a university to that of a lyceum, although retain- ing in the theological faculty the right of conferring de- grees. In 1791 it was restored to its privileges by the emperor Leopold II., and since that time the faculties of philosophy, law, and medicine have been represented in nearly equal proportions. In 1886 the number of profes- sors was 74, and of students 869. The foundation of the university of Breslau was contemplated as early as the year 1505, when Ladislaus, king of Hungary, gave his sanction to the project, but Pope Julius II., in the assumed interests of Cracow, withheld his assent. Nearly two centuries later, in 1702, under singularly altered conditions, the Jesuits prevailed upon the emperor Leopold I. to found a university without soliciting the papal sanction. When Frederick the Great conquered Silesia in 1741, he took both the university and the Jesuits in Breslau under his protection, and when in 1774 the order was suppressed by Clement XIV. he established them as priests in the Royal Scholastic

Institute, at the same time giving new statutes to the university. In 1811 the university was considerably augmented by the incorporation of that at Frankfort-on- the-Oder. At the present time it possesses both a Catholic and a Lutheran faculty. Its medical faculty is in high repute. The total number of students in 1887 was 1347.

In no country was the influence of the Jesuits on the

1 See Die deutsche Universitat Dorpat im Lichte der Geschichte,

1882

universities more marked than in France. The civil wars in that country during the thirty years which preceded the close of the 16th century told with disastrous effects upon

the condition of the university of Paris, and with the com. Condition

mencement of the 17th century its collegiate life seemed of the at an end, and its forty colleges stood absolutely deserted, ™%-

To this state of affairs the obstinate conservatism of the Pane of

academic authorities not a little contributed. The statutes by which the university was still governed were those which had been given by the cardinal D'Estouteville, the papal legate, in 1452, and remained entirely unmodified by the influences of the Renaissance. In 1579 the edict of Blois promulgated a scheme of organization for all the universities of the realm (at that time twenty-one in number),—a measure which, though productive of unity of teaching, did nothing towards the advancement of the studies themselves. The eminent lawyers of France, un- able to find chairs in Paris, distributed themselves among the chief towns of the provinces. The Jesuits did not fail to profit by this immobility and excessive conservatism on the part of the university, and during the second half of the 16th century and the whole of the 17th they had con- trived to gain almost a complete monopoly of both the higher and the lower education of provincial France,

Their schools arose at Toulouse and Bordeaux, at Auch, Colleges

Agen, Rhodez, Périgueux, Limoges, Le Puy, Aubenas, o the

) een Béziers, Tournon, in the colleges of Flanders and Lorraine, — 4 4 D

Douai and Pont-’-Mousson,—places beyond the jurisdic- tion of the parlement of Paris or even of the crown of France. Their banishment from Paris itself had been by the decree of the parlement alone, and had never been confirmed by the crown. “ Lyons,” says Pattison, “ loudly demanded a Jesuit college, and even the Huguenot Les- diguiéres, almost king in Dauphiné, was preparing to erect one at Grenoble. Amiens, Rheims, Rouen, Dijon, and Bourges were only waiting a favourable opportunity to introduce the Jesuits within their walls.”2 The university was rescued from the fate which secmed to threaten it only by the excellent statutes given by Richer in 1598, and by the discerning protection extended to it by Henry IV. The ‘college of Edinburgh” was founded by charter Edin- of James VI., dated 14th April 1582. This document bul contains no reference to a studium generale, nor is there ground for supposing that the foundation of a university was at that time contemplated. In marked contrast to the three older centres in Scotland, the college rose compara- tively untrammelled by the traditions of medizevalism, and its creation was not effected without some jealousy and opposition on the part of its predecessors. Its first course of instruction was commenced in the Kirk of Field, under the direction of Robert Rollock, who had been educated at St Andrews under Andrew Melville, the eminent Coven- anter. ‘He began to teach,” says Craufurd, “in the lower hall of the great lodging, there being a great con- course of students allured with the great worth of the man; but diverse of them being not ripe enough in the Latin tongue, were in November next put under the charge of Mr Duncan Narne,... who, upon Mr Rollock’s recom- mendation, was chosen second master of the college.”* In 1585 both Rollock and Nairne subscribed the National Cov- enant, and a like subscription was from that time required from all who were admitted to degrees in the college. Disastrous as were the effects of the Thirty Years’ War Results upon the external condition of the German universities, Thi resulting in not a few instances in the total dispersion of ye the students and the burning of the buildings and libraries, War. they were less detrimental and less

permanent than those which were discernible in the tone and temper of these

2 Life of Casaubon, p. 181. 3 Craufurd, List. of the Univ. of Edinburgh, pp. 19-28.

communities, A formal pedantry and unintelligent method

of study, combined with a passionate dogmatism in matters of religious belief, and a rude contempt for the amenities of | social intercourse, became the leading characteristics, and

lasted throughout the 17th century. But in the year 1693 the foundation of the university of Halle opened up a career to two very eminent men, whose influence, widely different as was its character, may be compared for its effects with that of Luther and Melanchthon, and served to modify the whole current of German philosophy and Ger- man theology. Halle has indeed been described as “the first real modern university.” It was really indebted for its origin to a spirit of rivalry between the conservatism of Saxony and the progressive tendencies of the house of Brandenburg, but the occasion of its rise was the removal of the ducal court from Halle to Magdeburg. The arch- bishopric of the latter city having passed into the posses- sion of Brandenburg in 1680 was changed into a dukedom, and the city itself was selected as the ducal residence. This change left unoccupied some commodious buildings in Halle, which it was decided to utilize for purposes of education. A ‘ Ritterschule” for the sons of the nobility was opened, and in the course of a few years it was decided to found a university. Saxony endeavoured to thwart the Scheme, urging the proximity of Leipsic ; but her opposi- tion was overruled by the emperor Leopold I., who granted (19th October 1693) the requisite charter, and in the following year the work of the university commenced. Frankfort-on-the-Oder had by this time become a centre of the Reformed party, and the primary object in founding a university in Halle was to create a centre for the ‘Lutheran party, but its character, under the influence of

4

Mnencaits two most notable teachers, Christian Thomasius and A.

F| |)H. Francke, soon expanded beyond the limits of this con- iq”, ception to assume a highly original form. Thomasius and Mckaarancke had both been driven from Leipsic owing to the ay fisfavour with which their liberal and progressive tend- ey jencies were there regarded by the academic authorities, 0 nd on many points the two teachers were in agreement. y hey both regarded with contempt alike the scholastic 09 {philosophy and the scholastic theology; they both desired fo see the rule of the civil power superseding that of the | |pcclesiastical power in the seats of learning ; they were ! poth opposed to the ascendency of classical studies as ex- d jpounded by the humanists—Francke regarding the Greek R jtnd Roman pagan writers with the old traditional dislike, nj |ts immoral, while Thomasius looked upon them with con- 4 ©«Fempt, as antiquated and representing only a standpoint hI hich had been long left behind; both again agreed as to lq fhe desirability of including the elements of modern culture ie} (fn the education of the young. But here their agreement | jfeased. It was the aim of Thomasius, as far as possible, | Jo Secularize education, and to introduce among his country- q en French habits and French modes of thought; his own e tire was gay and fashionable, and he was in the habit i} (ff taking his seat in the professorial chair adorned with ¢ (fold chain and rings, and with his dagger by his side. c}_ [francke, who became the leader of the Pietists, regarded ij (Hl this with even greater aversion than he did the lifeless] + rthodoxy traditional in the universities, and was shocked 8 the worldly tone and disregard for sacred things which | fharacterized his brother professor. Both, however, com- iq panded a considerable following among the students. 1g ffhomasius was professor in the faculty of jurisprudence, g) «fvancke in that of theology. And it was a common pre- = fiction in those days with respect to a student who pro- ij ffesed to pursue his academic career at Halle, that he would i} [pfallibly become either an atheist or a Pietist. But the »] |prvices renderetl by Thomasius to learning were genuine la d lasting. He was the first to set the example, soon

Cir eh Sr rre s

847

after followed by all the universities of Germany, of lectur- ing in the vernacular instead of in the customary Latin; and the discourse in which he

first departed from the traditional method was devoted to the consideration of how far the- German nation might with advantage imitate the French in matters of social life and intercourse. His more general views, as a disciple of the Cartesian philosophy and founder of the modern Rationalismus, exposed him to incessant attacks ; but by the establishment of a monthly journal (at that time an original idea) he obtained a channel for ex- pounding his views and refuting his antagonists which gave him a great advantage. On the influence of Francke, as the founder of that Pietistic school with which the re- putation of Halle afterwards became especially identified, it is unnecessary here to dilate.) J. C, Wolf, who followed Thomasius as an assertor of the new culture, was driven from Halle by the accusations of the Pietists, who declared that his teaching was fraught with atheistical principles. In 1740, however, he was recalled by Frederick IT., and reinstated in high office with every mark of consideration and respect. Throughout the whole of the 18th century Halle was the leader of academic thought and culture in Protestant Germany, although sharing that leadership,

after the middle of the century, with Gottingen. The uni- Gottin- versity of Gottingen (named after its founder " Georgia gen.

Augusta") was endowed with the amplest privileges as a university by George IL. of England, elector of Hanover, 7th December 1736. The imperial sanction of the scheme had been given three years before (13th January 1733), and the university was formally opened 17th September 1737. The king himself assumed the office of " rector magni- ficentissimus," and the liberality of the royal endowments (doubling those of Halle), and the not less liberal character of the spirit that pervaded its organization, soon raised it to a foremost place among the schools of Germany. Halle had just expelled Wolf; and Géttingen, modelled on the same lines as Halle, but rejecting its Pietism and dis- claiming its intolerance, appealed with remarkable success to the most enlightened feeling of the time. It included all the faculties, and two of its first professors—Mosheim, tlre eminent theologian, from Helmstidt, and Bohmer, the no less distinguished jurist, from Halle—together with Gesner, the man of letters, at once established its repu- tation. Much of its early success was also due to the supervision of its chief curator (there were two), —Baron Miinchausen, himself a man of considerable attainments, who by

his sagacious superintendence did much to pro- mote the general efficiency of the whole professoriate. Not least among its attractions was also its splendid library, located in an ancient monastery, and now containing over 200,000 volumes and 5000 MSS. In addition to its general influence as a distinguished seat of learning, Gottingen may claim to have been mainly instrumental in diffusing a more adequate conception of the importance of the study of history. Before the latter half of the 18th century the mode of treatment adopted by university lecturers was singularly wanting in breadth of view. Pro- fane history was held of but little account, excepting so far as it served to illustrate ecclesiastical and sacred history, while this, again, was invariably treated in the narrow spirit of the polemic, intent mainly on the defence of his own confession, according as he represented the Lutheran or the Reformed Church. The labours of the professors at Gottingen, especially Putter, Gatterer, Schlézer, and Spittler, combined with those of Mascov at Leipsic, did much towards promoting both a more catholic treatment and a wider scope. Not less beneficial was the example set at Gottingen of securing the appointment of its protes- sors by a less prejudiced and partial body than a university 1 See Paulsen, Gesch, des gelehrten Unterrichts, &c., pp. 348-358.

board is only too likely to become. ‘ ‘The great Miin- chausen,’ says an illustrious professor of that seminary, ‘allowed our university the right of presentation, of desig- nation, or of recommendation, as little as the right of free election; for he was taught by experience that, although

cal demeanour of their members towards the unassociated students gave rise to a general combination of the latter for the purposes of self-defence and organized resistance. At all the great German universities both these forms of aggo- ciation are to be found existing at the present day.

the faculties of universities may know the individuals best qualified to supply their vacant chairs, they are seldom or never disposed to propose for appointment the worthiest within their knowledge.’” The system of

patronage adopted at Gottingen was, in fact, identical with that which had already been instituted in the universities of the Nether-

The political storms which marked the close of the last Extin and the commencement of the present century gave the tion of death-blow to not a few of the ancient universities of Ger. Seman many. Mainz and Cologne ceased to exist ‘in 1799. Mer Bamberg, Dillingen, and Duisberg in 1804; Rinteln and oe Ilelmstadt in 1809 ; Salzburg in 1810; Erfurt in 1816, 1798.

Erlangen. lands by Douza (see infra, p. 850). The university of | Altdorf was united to Erlangen in 1807, Franktort-on. 1816. Erlangen, a Lutheran centre, was founded by Frederick, | the-Oder to Breslau in 1809, and Wittenberg to Halle in margrave of Baireuth. Its charter was granted by the | 1815. The university of Ingolstadt was first moved in emperor Charles VII., 21st February 1743, and the uni- | 1802 to Landshut, and from thence in 1826 to Munich, Munich, versity was formally constituted, 4th November. From | where it was united to the academy of sciences which was its special guardian, Alexander, the last margrave of Ans- | founded in the Bavarian capital in 1759. Of those of the bach, it was styled “Academia Alexandrina.” In 1791, | above centres which altogether ceased to exist but few, Ansbach and Baireuth having passed into the possession of | however, were much missed or regretted,—that at Mainz, Prussia, Erlangen became subject to the Prussian Govern- | which had numbered some six hundred students, being the ment. The number of the students, which at the com- | one notable exception. ‘The others had for the most part mencement of the century was under 300, was 880 in 1887, | fallen into a perfunctory and lifeless mode of teaching, and,

The On comparison with the great English universities, the | with wasted or diminished revenues and declining numbers,

eee universities of Germany must be pronounced inferior both | had long ceased worthily to represent the functions of a

man uni, 22 point of discipline and of moral control over the | university. Whatever loss may have attended their sup-

versities Students. The superiority of the former in these respects | pression has been far more than compensated by the com- is partly to be attributed to the more systematic care which | activity and influence of the three great German univer- pared. they took, from a very early date, for the supervision of | sities which have risen in the present century. Munich

each student, by requiring that within a certain specified time after his entry into the university he should be regis- tered as a pupil of some master of arts, who was respon- sible for his conduct, and represented him generally in his relations to the academic authorities. Marburg in its earliest statutes (those of 1529) endeavoured to establish a similar rule, but without success.2 The development of the collegiate system at Oxford and Cambridge materially assisted the carrying out of this discipline. Although again, as in the German universities, feuds were not unfre- quent, especially those between “north” and “south” (the natives of the northern and southern counties), the fact that in elections to fellowships and scholarships only a certain proportion were allowed to be taken from either of these divisions acted as a considerable check upon the possibility of any one college representing either element exclusively. In the German universities, on the other hand, the ancient division into nations, which died out with the 15th century, was revived under another form by the institution of national colleges, which largely served to foster the spirit of rivalry and contention. The denioral- ization induced by the Thirty Years’ War and the increase of duelling intensified these tendencies, which, together with the tyranny of the older over the younger students, known as “ Pennalismus,” were evils against which the authorities contended, but ineffectually, by various ordin- ances. The institution of ‘‘ Burschenthum,” having for its design the encouragement of good fellowship and social feel- ing irrespective of nationality, served only asa partial check upon these excesses, which again received fresh stimulus by the rival institution of ‘‘Landsmannschaften,” or societies of the same nationality. The latter proved singularly pro- vocative of duelling, while the arrogant and even tyranni-

‘ Hamilton, Discussions, p. 381.

2 “Volumns neminem in hanc nostram Academiam admitti, aut per rectorem in album recipi, qui non habeat privatium atque domesticum

prieceptorem, qui ejus discipulum agnoscat, ad cujus judicium quisque pro sua ingenii capacitate atque Marte lecturas et publicas et privatas audiat, a cujus latere aut raro aut nunquam discedat."' Koch expressly compares this provision with the discipline of Oxford and Cambridge, which, down to the commencement of the present century, was very much of the same character (Koch. Gesch. des academischen Pédago- giums in Marburg, p. 11).

has become a distinguished centre of study in all the faculties; and its numbers, allowing for the two great wars, have been continuously on the increase. The number of its professors in 1887 was over ninety, and that of its students at the commencement of the session 1886-87 3209.

The university of Berlin, known as the Royal Friedrich Berlin, Wilhelm university, was founded in 1809, immediately after the peace of Tilsit, when Prussia had been reduced to the level of a third-rate power. Under the guiding influence of Wilhelm von Humboldt, however, the prin- ciples which were adopted in connexion with the new seat of learning not only raised it to a foremost place among the universities of Europe, but also largely conduced to the regeneration of Germany.

The university of Bonn, founded in 1818, and known Bonn. as the Rhenish Friedrich Wilhelm university, has 88 pro- fessors and 1125 students. Equally distinguished as @ school of philosophy and a school of theology, it is notable for the manner in which it combines the opposed schools of theological doctrine,—that of the Evangelical (or Luth- eran) Church and that of the Roman Catholic Church here standing side by side, and both adorned by eminent names. This combination (which also exists at Tubingen and at Breslau) has been attended with complete guccess and (according to Dr Déllinger) with unmistakable advant- ages. When tried, however, a generation before, at Erfurt and at Heidelberg, its failure was not less conspicuous, and Erfurt was ruined by the experiment.

Owen hs fT Les

Dr Conrad, professor of political science at Halle, has recently made the statistics relating to the German uni- versities the subject of a careful investigation and analysis, which offer some interesting results. The total cost of the universities of the German empire is shown to be much smaller

than the total revenues of the English universities and colleges, although the number both of professors and students is much larger, and although 42 per cent. of the total expenditure is upon establishments, such as hospitals, museums, and so forth, But in Germany 72 per cent. of the cost of the universities is defrayed by the state, the students paying, in the shape of fees, only 9-3 per cent. To a great extent, however, the German universities are to be looked upon as professional schools, giving an education which directly fits a man to earn his bread as a clergyman, a lawyer, a judge, a physician, a schoolmaster, a chemist, an engineer, or an agriculturist. Notwith- standing the rapid growth in the numbers of the students, the growth of the professoriate has fully kept pace with it. In 1880 there were 1809 teachers at work in the German universities, more than half of whom (967) were full professors (‘ordinarii”),—the proportion of teachers to students being 1 to 11. This is a much higher propor- tion than that of Oxford and Cambridge, although in them there is a large staff of college lecturers, which is practic- ally more important than the university staff. It is higher again than the proportion of the Scottish universities, where there are only some 105 professors to between 5000 and 6000 students, a proportion of 1 to between 50 and 60 students. The increase in Germany has taken place partly by adding on fresh teachers for the old subjects, such as Latin and Greek, but still more by founding new chairs for new subjects, such as Oriental and Romance languages, geography, and archeology, and by subdividing departments which have been recently developed, such as those con- nected with political economy, political science, physiology, and biology. Owing to the great development of natural science, the faculty of philosophy has at some centres in- creased to such an extent as to equal in numbers all the other faculties put together. This inconvenience has been

differently met at different universities. In those of Switzerland, no further remedy has been devised than that of appointing separate syndicates or boards of management for the two main divisions,—the philosophico-historic and the mathematical and natural-scientific ; at Dorpat, Tiibin- gen, and Strasburg, on the other hand, these divisions have been represented by the formation of two distinct faculties; while Tiibingen, Munich, and Wiirzburg have created, in addition, a third faculty under which are grouped the several subjects of political economy, statis- tics, and finance.

The following table (taken from Conrad) exhibits the average of

Averages

the total number of matriculated students at the German universi- of

ties for every five years from 1831 to 1884; it brings the tendency to form large centres very forcibly before the view. The three largest centres—Berlin, Leipsic, Munich—even in the first quinquennium

students at Ger- man uni-

appear as absorbing no less than 85 per cent. of the students, and versities.

in the last as many as 42 per cent. At the same time, there has lately been a no less notable increase among the centres of second magnitude. A quarter of a century ago only two universities had

more than a thousand students ; at present there are nine.

1972 | 2218 957 | 927

768

Greifswald… K6nigsberg.. IBOUMMI. sees eee Miinster…....

Wiirzburg…. Erlangen…...

eercee Peewee

Strasburg …./

The following table, taken from Ascherson’s Deutscher Univer-

Table

sitdts-Kalender, 1887, supplies the most recent statistics respecting of pro-
both the teaching and the student bodies in the different faculties fessors

of the German-speaking universities on the Continent.

STUDENTS.

Privat- | ,, ‘ Theology. Juris- Universities, , Extra- docenten, | Teachers “___.| prudence, | Medicine, ee Total of Ordinary Honorary : of F Politieal | S z hilology, |atrieulated Prat ordinary Prof rs,.| Assistant it ,, Total. Bevan . Politica urgery: | Mathema. |Matriculate TOFESSOTS.! b-ofegsors.|£ 1O!CS8OFS-| Teachers, | Languages, ‘ Catholic.| Economy, |Pharmacy.| ~,! Students. 2 &e. gelical. Pra ties, &. &e. Forestry. GERMAN Exeme— 7 — _ { ICCTA DbS GSBperinrsocberonnd Mecaeacrs ae 75 83 7 124 if 296 794 aps 1282 1297 1984 5357 BOnM: 6560s Waneenasiariawer 57 31 a PT) 5 122 22 86 226 292 395 1121 BBreSlaWiscsssssssescascers 57 33 3 31 7 131 166 165 221) 362 433 1347 IBGIAMICOM ses csclersvasce 39 7 I 9 5 61 386 Are 11s 267 109 880 HV CMOUUG Noe sseccseertecies 36 15 1 24 4 80 400 116 147 428 305 996 Giessen….. Seseiuvsieere’s 38 9 ele 9 3 59 94 rein 125 138 127 484 GOfDINBEN..ccc.cecsc00e. 65 iy 2 21 6 121 289 a8 145 233 424 1041 Grcliswald.cssccs.ce.0s 41 23 one 13 5 82 306 cae 55 441 121 923 WOU Gerecasssemescecsscces 50 30 1 18 11 110 598 ee 115 315 499 1527 Heidelberg…... 43 28 6 20 2 106 ie a3 193 202 305 1723 saeeceesaes 35 24 8 15 5 87 126 awe 80 210 191 607 41 11 mae 20 6 78 55 tee 2) a aa ae IGGIUGSD OTR ..cs.ceseeoe 44 24 nfo 19 7 94 235 are 112 7] Léipate ie 67 38 12 58 5 180 672 see 738 781 1040 3231 Marburg…... 44 15 are Jere 6 82 189 one 74 271 366 894 MUUCH ccc ccverersescesa cous 75 15 5 65 5 165 ma 146 1136 1350 544 3176 MIUISLO TS asicscccacessssbels 22 10 1 4 3 40 eee 312 boc ere 163 475 NROSUMGHashercasucs ses stccneetcess 4g) 3 wae 5 2 39 87 B00 35 100

105 327 LLANE rea citacesainnesssossesss 59 20 1 HG) 3 102 89 add 195 233 331 848 SULIT ies cc vessunistscsersseses 52 16 tee ‘ 17 8 93 354 160 348 235 150 1247 WiMIZUIL Oise sce sccutnnanes sane 38 10 1 19 é 7a Age 179 218 935 179 1511 SWITZERLAND — : BARE leente asics ovetehce sss theneeeaee 37 13 es 29 4 83 95 o0e 43 131 85 354 Bern 41 6 4 36 a 87 44 8 164 446 96 oe Geneva.., 41 ves ane 29 ie 70 ? dis : . 3 ; Lausanne… 22 23 ; i 2 : re : i 4 v O aa lRaaecrr 25 3 ‘ ‘ : : i ee Air OKC: 38 13 nie ‘ 40 Or 41 56 241 143 481 rr ote) — Be 42 5 a 16 10 73 235 264 868 367 1734 AUSTRIA AND HuNGARY— | WZENMOWIGZ i se ceaiusssss-acotes 26 6 6 ey 41 60 123 ae 30 ae irc sssscsvciniane 50 17 43 4 114 86 489 548 70 1198 Tnnsbruck….. 41 11 1 19 wl 74 ae oe a ha ih 9 Cracow . sare) 89 14 i a a : aa é : : i 5 = ct 33 33 4 147 12 301 204 1911 2318 460 4893 XXL — qo7

and students.

Fluctua- tions of numbers.

Univer- sities of United Pro- vinces,

Leyden.

Franeker.

-

850 UNIVERSTV Is

In 1878 a comparison of the numbers of the students in the different faculties in the Prussian universities with those for the year 1867 showed a remarkable diminution in the faculty of theology, amounting in Lutheran centres to more than one-half, and in Catholic centres to nearly three-fourths. In jurisprudence there was an increase of nearly two-fifths, in medicine a decline of a third, and in philosophy an increase of one-fourth. During the last few years, however, the faculties of theology have made some progress towards regaining their former numbers.

The universities of the United Provinces, like those of Protestant Germany, were founded by the state as schools for the maintenance of the principles of the Reformation and the education of the clergy, and afforded in the 16th and 17th centuries a grateful refuge to not a few of those Huguenot or Port-Royalist scholars whom persecution compelled to flee beyond the boundaries of France, as well as to the Puritan clergy who were driven from England. The earliest, that of Leyden, founded in 1575, commemo- rated the gallant and successful resistance of the citizens to the Spanish fleet under Requesens. Throughout the 17th century Leyden was distinguished by its learning, the ability of its professors, and the shelter it afforded to the more liberal thought associated at that period with Arminianism. Much of its early success was owing to the wise provisions and the influence of the celebrated James Douza :—‘ Douza’s principles,” says Hamilton, “ were those which ought to regulate the practice of all academical patrons; and they were those of his successors. He knew that at the rate learning was seen prized by the state in the academy would it be valued by the nation at large. .... He knew that professors wrought more even by example and influence than by teaching, that it was theirs to pitch high or low the standard of learning in a country, and that, as it proved easy or arduous to come up with them, they awoke either a restless endeavour after an even loftier attainment, or lulled into a self-satisfied conceit.” Douza was, for Leyden and the Dutch, what Miinchausen afterwards was for Géttingen and the German universities. “ But with this difference : Leyden was the model on which the younger universities of the republic were constructed ; Gottingen the model on which the older universities of the empire were reformed. Both Miin- chausen and Douza proposed a high ideal for the schools founded under their auspices ; and both, as first curators, laboured with paramount influence in realizing this ideal for the same long period of thirty-two years. Under their patronage Leyden and Gottingen took the highest place among the universities of Europe ; and both have only lost their relative supremacy by the application in other semin- aries of the same measures which had at first determined their superiority.” The appointment of the professors at Leyden was vested in three (afterwards five) curators, one of whom was selected from the body of the nobles, while the other two were appointed by the states of the pro- vince, —the office being held for nine years, and eventually for life. With these was associated the mayor of Leyden for the time being. The university of Franeker was founded in 1585

on a somewhat less liberal basis than Leyden, the professors being required to declare their assent to the rule of faith embodied in the Heidelberg Catechism and the confession of the “ Belgian Church.” Its four faculties were those of theology, jurisprudence, medicine, and “the three languages and the liberal arts.” } For a period of twelve years (circ. 1610-1622) the reputa- tion of the university was enhanced by the able teaching of William Ames (“Amesius”), a Puritan divine and moralist who had been driven by Bancroft from Cambridge and from England. His fame and ability are said to have

1 Statute et Leges, Franeker, 1647, p. 3.

attracted to Franeker students from Hungary, Poland, and Russia.

With like organization were founded—in 1600 the uni- Harder. versity of Harderwijk, in 1614 that of Groningen, and wijk, in 1634 that of Utrecht. The restoration of the House “tonin- of Orange, and establishment of the kingdom of the Sie h Netherlands (23d March 1815), was followed by important _ changes in connexion with the whole kingdom. The unj-

| versities of Franeker and Harderwijk were suppressed,

while their place was taken by the newly-founded centres

at Ghent (1816) and Liége (1816). A uniform constitu. Ghent, tion was given both to the Dutch and Belgian universities, Liege, It was also provided that there should be attached to each

a board of curators, consisting of five persons, “ distin- guished by their love of literature and science and by their rank in society.” These curators were to be nomin- ated by the king, and at least three of them chosen from

the province in which the university was situated, while

the other two were to be chosen from adjacent provinces, After the redivision of the kingdom in 1831, Ghent and Liége were constituted state universities, and each received

a subsidy from the Government (see Betcrum). The uni- Brussels. versity of Brussels, on the other hand, founded in 1834, is

an independent institution, supported by the liberal party; while the reconstituted university at Louvain represents

the party of Roman Catholicism, and is almost exclusively a theological school for the education of the Catholic clergy. The universities of Belgiuni are, however, somewhat hetero- geneous bodies, and present in their organization a singu-

lar combination of French and German institutions. Jn Amster- Holland, the foundation of the university of Amsterdam 4m. (1877) has more than repaired the loss of Franeker and Harderwijk, and the progress of this new centre during

the ten years of its existence has been remarkably rapid,

so that it bids fair to rival, if not to outstrip, both Utrecht

and Leyden. The higher education of women has made some progress in the Netherlands ; and in 1882-83 there were eighteen women studying at Amsterdam, eleven at Groningen, four at Leyden, and seven at Utrecht.

In Sweden the university of Lund, founded in 1668 and Univer. modelled on the same plan as its predecessor at Upsala, ie has adhered to its antiquated constitution with remarkable | 4 tenacity. At both these universities the medieval division Norway, into “nations” is still in force among the students, the Lund. number at Upsala being no less than thirteen. The pro- Ups fessoriate at both centres is much below the modern — requirements in point of numbers. The university of od Christiania in Norway, founded in 1811, and the Swedish ™”™ universities are strongly Lutheran in character ; and all alike are closely associated with the ecclesiastical institu- tions of the Scandinavian kingdoms. The same observa- tion applies to Copenhagen,—where, however, the labours of Rask and Madvig have done much to sustain the repu-__ tation of the university for learning. The university of Kiel Kiel (1665), on the other hand, has

come much more under Teutonic influences, and is now a distinguished centre of scientific teaching.

In France the fortunes of academic learning were even aa less happy than in Germany. The university of Paris was… distracted, throughout the 17th century, by theological trom the dissensions,—in the first instance owing to the struggi¢ 17th that ensued after the Jesuits had effected a footing at the century. Collége de Clermont, and subsequently by the strife occasioned by the teaching of the Jansenists. Its studies, discipline, and numbers alike suffered. Towards the close of the century a certain revival took place, and a succes sion of illustrious names—Pourchot, Rollin, Grenan, Coffin, Demontempuys, Crevier, Lebeau—appear 00 one roll of its teachers. But this improvement was soon inter- rupted by the controversies excited by the promulgation

of the bull Unigenitus in 1713, condemning the tenets of Quesnel, when Rollin himself, although a man of singu- larly pacific disposition, deemed it his duty to head the opposition to Clement XI. and the French episcopate. At last, in 1762, the parlement of Paris issued a decree (August 6) placing the colleges of the Jesuits at the dis- posal of the university, and this was immediately followed by another for the expulsion of the order from Paris. Concurrently with this measure the prospects of the uni- versity assumed a more favourable character, the curri- culum of its studies was extended, and both history and natural science began to be cultivated with a certain success. These better prospects were, however, soon ob- secured by the outbreak of the Revolution; and on the 15th September 1793 the universities and colleges

. throughout France, together with the faculties of theology,

medicine, jurisprudence, and arts, were abolished by a decree of the Convention. The Collége de France, when restored in 1831, was reconstituted mainly as a school of adult instruction, for the most part of a popular character, and entirely dissociated from the university. It now numbers thirty-nine chairs, among which is one of the Slavonic languages

and literature. The university of France (which succeeded to that of Paris) is at present

little more than an abstract term, signifying the whole of

the professional body under state control, and comprising various faculties at different centres—Paris, Montpellier, Nancy, &c., together with twenty-seven academical rector- ates. Each of these rectors presides over a local “ conseil d’enseignement,” in conjunction with which he elects the professors of lycées and the communal schoolmasters, whose formal appointment is then made by the minister of public instruction. There are ecclesiastics in some of the conseils d’enseignement, but the rectors are all laymen who have graduated in one of the faculties. The great schools have also in no small measure supplemented the work of the universities by their advance in the direction of scientific instruction. Among the number the “Ecole Pratique des Hautes Etudes” in Paris (31st July 1868) and the “ Ecole Polytechnique,” which traces its origin as far back as the year 1794, are especially distinguished. The course of instruction at the former is divided into five sections—(1) mathematics, (2) physics and chemistry, (3) natural history and physiology, (4) history and philology, (5) economic science. At the latter the instruction is conceived solely with regard to the application of scientific principles to all branches of the public service, but more especially the miilitary and mercantile. In 1875 the National Assembly passed an Act which enabled the Roman Catholic body to establish free universities of their own, and to confer degrees which should be of the same validity

qd as those of the state university. At Lille and Angers such

centres have been already organized. The university of Strasburg, which in the latter part of the last century had been distinguished by an intellectual activity which became associated with the names of Goethe, Herder, and others, was also swept away by the Revolution. It was, however, restored Ist May 1872, after the city had reverted to Ger- many, and was remodelled entirely on German principles. Since then its success has been marked and continuous. In Switzerland all the higher education is supported mainly by the German and Protestant cantons. The four universities of Basel, Bern, Zurich, and Geneva have an aggregate of some 1400 or 1500 students, and

all possess faculties of philosophy, jurisprudence, theology, and medi- cine. Basel is, however, the chief centre for theology, as

‘ is Bern for jurisprudence and Zurich for philosophy. At

Geneva the famous academy of the 16th and 17th cen- turies, long distinguished as a centre of Calvinistic teaching, is now represented by a university (first formed in 1876),

where the instruction is given (mainly in the French lan-

guage) by a staff of forty-one professors, and where there is a rising school of science. Switzerland almost takes the lead in connexion with female education on the Continent, and in 1882-83 there were 52 women at the university of Geneva, 36 at Bern, and 24 at Zurich.

In Spain the universities at present existing are those of Barcelona, Granada, Madrid (transferred in 1837 from Alcala), Oviedo, Salamanca, Santiago, Seville, Valencia, Valladolid, and Zaragoza. They are all, with the exception perhaps of Madrid, in a lamentably depressed condition, and mainly under the influence of French ideas and modelled on French examples. But in Portugal, Coimbra, which narrowly escaped suppression in the 16th century as a sus- pected centre of political disaffection, is now a flourishing school. Its instruction is given gratis ; but, as all members of the higher courts of judicature and administration in the realm are required to have graduated at the university, it is at the same time one of the most aristocratic schools in Europe. There are five faculties, viz., theology, jurispru- dence, medicine, mathematics, and philosophy. Of these, that of law is by far the most flourishing, the number of students in this faculty nearly equalling the aggregate of all the rest. There is a valuable library, largely composed of collections formerly belonging to suppressed convents. Asa school of theology Coimbra is distinctly anti-ultramontane, and the progressive spirit of the university is shown by the fact that the rector has been instructed by the govern- ment to devise a scheme for the admission of women.

In Italy the universities are numerically much in excess of the requirements of the population, there being no less

| than sixteen state universities and four free universities,

Very few of these possess theological faculties, and in no country are theological studies less valued. Education for the church is almost entirely given at the numerous “seminaries,” where it is of an almost entirely elementary character. In 1875 a laudable effort was made by Bonghi, the minister of education, to introduce reforms and to assimilate the universities in their organization and methods to the German type. His plans were, however, to a great extent reversed by his successor, Coppino.

Univer- sities of Spain and Portugal,

of Italy,

In Austria the universities, being modelled on the same of _ : ; ; re iall t rthy Austria- system as that of Prussia, present no especially noteworthy 4

features. Vienna is chiefly distinguished for its school of medicine, which enjoyed in the last century a reputation almost unrivalled m Europe. The other faculties were, however, suffered to languish, and throughout the first half of the present century the whole university was in an extremely depressed state. From this condition it was in a great measure restored by the exertions of Count Thun. The number of the matriculated students in 1887 was 4893, and that of the professors 138; among the latter the names of Zschokke, Maassen, Sickel, Jellinek, and Biidinger are some of the most widely known. versity of Olmtitz, founded in 1581, was formerly in pos- session of what is now the imperial library, and contained also a valuable collection of Slavonic works which were carried off by the Swedes and ultimately dispersed. It was suppressed in 1853, and is now represented only by a

Hungary.

Vienna.

The uni- Olmiitz.

theological faculty. The university of Graz, the capital of Graz.

Styria, was founded in 1586, and is now one of the most flourishing centres, containing some 1200 students. university of Salzburg, founded in 1623, was suppressed in

The Salzburg.

1810 ; that of Lemberg, founded in 1784 by the emperor Lemberg.

Joseph IT., was removed in 1805 to Cracow and united to that university. In 1816 it was opened on an inde- pendent basis. In the bombardment of the town in 1848 the university buildings were burnt down, and the site was changed to what was formerly a Jesuit convent. The fine library and natural history museum were at the same time

Czer- nowitz.

Budapest.

Klausen- burg.

Agram,

De- breczin.

Russian univer- sities. Helsing- fors.

Moscow.

Kieff.

Kazan.

Khar- koff.

St Peters- burg. Odessa.

almost entirely destroyed. The university at the present time numbers over a thousand students. The most recent foundation is that of Czernowitz, founded in 1875, and numbering about 300 students. The universities of the Hungarian kingdom are three in number :—Budapest, originally founded at Tyrnau in 1635, now possessing four faculties—theology, jurisprudence, medicine, and philo- sophy (number of professors in 1885 180, students 3117); Kolozsvar (Klausenburg), now the chief Magyar centre, founded in 1872 and also comprising four faculties, but where mathematics and natural science supply the place of theology (number of professors in 1877 64, students 391); Zagrab (Agram), the Slovack university, in Croatia, founded in 1869 but not opened until 1874, with three faculties, viz., jurisprudence, theology, and philosophy. The chief centre of Protestant education is the college at Debreczin, founded in 1531, which in past times was not unfrequently subsidized from England. It now numbers over 2000 students, and possesses a fine library.

Russia possesses, besides Dorpat (supra, p. 845), seven other universities. (1) Helsingfors, in Finland, was origin- ally established by Queen Christina in Abo (1640), and removed in 1826 to Heisingfors, where the original char- ter, signed by the celebrated Oxenstierna, is still preserved. It has four faculties, 38 professors, and 700 students. (2) Moscow is really the oldest Russian university, having been founded in 1755; it includes the faculties of history, physics, jurisprudence, and medicine; the professors are 69 in number, the students about 1660. (3) The uni- versity of St Vladimir at Kieff, originally founded at Vilna in 1803, was removed from thence to Kieff in 1833; the students number about 900, and the library contains 107,000 volumes. (4) Kazan (1804) includes the same faculties as Moscow ; the students are about 450 in num- ber, and it has a library containing 80,000 volumes. (5) Kharkoff (1804) numbers 600 students, and its library 95,000 volumes. (6) St Petersburg (1819) includes the four faculties of history, physics, jurisprudence, and Orien- tal languages, and numbers 1500 students. (7) Odessa, founded in 1865, represents the university of New

Russia. Generally speaking, the universities of Russia are not frequented by the aristocratic classes; they are largely subsidized by the Government, and the annual fees payable by students are less than £7 ahead. In 1863 the statutes of all the universities were remodelled ; and since that time there has been a tendency to impress upon them a more national character, as distinguished from mere imita- tion of those in Germany.

The university of Athens (founded 22d May 1837) is modelled on the university systems of northern Germany, on a plan originally devised by Professor Brandis. It includes four faculties, viz., theology, jurisprudence, medi- cine, and philosophy. The professors (ordinary and extra- ordinary) are upwards of 60 in number, the students about 1500. There is also a school of pharmacy, chemistry, and anatomy, and a library of 130,000 volumes, witli: 800 manuscripts.

The history of the two English universities during the 16th and following centuries has presented, for the most part, features which contrast strongly with those of the Continental seats of learning. Both suffered severely from confiscation of their lands and revenues during the period of the Reformation, but otherwise have generally enjoyed a remarkable immunity from the worst consequences of civil and political strife and actual warfare. Both long remained centres chiefly of theological teaching, but their intimate connexion at once with the state and with the Church of England, as “by law established,” and the modifications introduced into their constitutions, prevented their becoming arenas of fierce polemical contentions like

UNITV ERSITiag =

those which distracted the Protestant universities of Germany.

The influence of the Renaissance, and the teaching of Influence Erasmus, who resided for some time at both universities, of the exercised a notable effect alike at Oxford and at Renais- Cambridge. The names of Colet, Grocyn, and Linacre illustrate this influence at the former centre ; those of Bishop Fisher, Sir John Cheke, and Sir Thomas Smith at the latter. The labours of Erasmus at Cambridge, ag the author of a new Latin version of the New Testament, with the design of placing in the hands of students a

text free from the errors of the Vulgate, were productive of important effects, and the university became a centre of The Reformation doctrine some years before the Writings of Reforma. Luther became known in England. The foundation of nes at Christ's College (1505) and St John's College (1511), yar through the influence of Fisher with the countess of ° Richmond, also materially aided the general progress of learning at Cambridge. The Royal Injunctions of 1535, embodying the views and designs of Thomas Cromwell, mark the downfall of the old scholastic methods of study at both universities; and the foundation of Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1546 (partly by an amalgamation of two older societies), represents the earliest conception of such an institution in England in complete inde. pendence of Roman Catholic traditions. Trinity (1554) and St John's (1555) at Oxford, on the other hand, founded during the reactionary reign of Mary, serve rather as examples of a transitional period.

In the reign of Elizabeth Cambridge became the centre Puritan of another great movement—that of the earlier Puritanism, 'm4 St John's and Queens' being the strongholds of the party bait led by Cartwright, Walter Travers, and others, Whitaker, the eminent master of St John's, although he sympathized to some extent with these views, strove to keep their expression within limits compatible with conformity to the Church of England. But the movement continued to gather strength; and Emmanuel College, founded in 1584, owed much of its early prosperity to the fact that it was a known school of Puritan doctrine. Most of the Puritans objected to the discipline enforced by the uni- versity and ordinary college statutes—especially the wear- ing of the cap and the surplice and the conferring of degrees in divinity. The Anglican party, headed by such Eliza- men as Whitgift and Bancroft, resorted in defence to eae repressive policy, of which subscription to the Acts of 6 1570, Supremacy and Uniformity, and the Elizabethan statutes of 1570 (investing the "caput" with larger powers, and thereby creating a more oligarchical form of government), were the most notable results. Oxford, although the Puritans were there headed by Leicester, the chancellor, devised at the same time a similar scheme, the rigid dis- cipline of which was further developed in the Laudianor Caroline statutes of 1636. It was under these respective ne codes—the Elizabethan statutes of 1570 and the Laudian ns statutes of 1636—that the two universities were governed until the introduction of the new codes of 1858.

During the Commonwealth the Puritan occupation and adminis tration, at either university, were accompanied by little injury to the colleges, and were far less prejudicial to learn- ing than the Royalist writers of the Restoration would lead us to suppose. William Dell, who was master of Caius College from 1649 to 1660, advocated the formation of schools of higher instruction in the large towns, a proposal which was then looked upon as one of but faintly masked hostility to the older centres. rhe Gatu-

During the 17th century Cambridge became the centre as of another movement, a reflex of the influence of _ the elyteist Cartesian philosophy, which attracted for a time consider movement, able attention. Its leaders, known as the Cambridge

——.

Devel R St TT hs

Platonists, among whom Henry More, Cudworth, and Whichcote were especially conspicuous, were men of high character and great learning, although too much under the influence of an ill-restrained enthusiasm and purely speculative doctrines. The spread of the Baconian philo- sophy, and the example of a succession of eminent scientific thinkers, among whom were Isaac Barrow, master of Trinity (1673-77), the two Lucasian profes. sors, Isaac Newton (prof. 1669-1702) and his successor William Whiston (prof. 1702-11), and Roger Cotes (Plumian prof. 1707-16), began to render the exact sciences more and more an object of study, and the insti- tution of the tripos examinations in the course of the first half of the 18th century established the reputation of Cambridge as a school of mathematical science. At Oxford, where no similar development took place, and where the statutable requirements with respect to study and exercises were suffered to fall into neglect, the de- generacy of the whole community as a school of academic culture is attested by evidence too emphatic to be gain- said. The nioral tone at both universities was at this time singularly low ; and the rise of Methodism, as associated with the names of the two Wesleys and Whitefield at Oxford and that of Berridge at Cambridge, operated with greater effect upon the nation at large than on either of the two centres where it had its origin. With the advance of the present century, however, a perceptible change took place, The labours of Simeon at Cambridge, in

connexion with the Evangelical party, and the far more celebrated movement known as Tractarianism, at Oxford, exercised considerable influence in developing a more thoughtful spirit at either university. At both centres, also, the range of studies was extended: written examinations took the place of the often merely formal viva voce ceremonies; at Cambridge classics were raised in 1824 to the dignity of a new tripos. The number of the students at both universities was largely augmented. Further schemes of improvement were put forward and discussed. And in 1850 it was decided by the Government to appoint com- missioners to inquire what additional reforms might advantageously be introduced. Their recommendations were not all carried into effect, but the main results were as follows :—‘ The professoriate was considerably increased, reorganized, and re-endowed, by means of contributions from colleges. The colleges were emancipated from their medieval statutes, were invested with new constitutions, and acquired new legislative powers. The fellowships were almost universally thrown open to merit, and the effect of this was not merely to provide ample rewards for the highest academical attainments, but to place the governing power within colleges in the hands of able men, likely to promote further improvements. The number and value of scholarships was largely augmented, and many, though not all, of the restrictions upon them were abolished. The great mass of vexatious and obsolete oaths was swept away; and, though candidates for the M.A. degree and persons elected to fellowships were still required to make the old subscriptions and declarations, it was enacted that no religious test should be imposed at matriculation or on taking a bachelor’s degree.”

In 1869 a statute was enacted at Cambridge admitting

| students as members of the university without making it | imperative that they should be entered at any hall or | college, but simply be resident either with their parents or | in duly licensed lodgings.

The entire abolition of tests followed next, After several rejections in parliament it was eventually carried as a Government measure, and passed the House of Lords in 1871.

In 1877 the reports of two new commissions were Reforms followed by further changes, the chief features of which of 1877. were the diversion of a certain proportion of the revenues of the colleges to the uses of the university, especially with a view to the encouragement of studies in natural science ; the enforcement of general and uniform regulations with respect to the salaries, selection, and duties of professors, lecturers, and examiners ; the abolition (with a few excep- tions) of all clerical restrictions on headships or fellow- ships ; and the limitation of fellowships to a uniform amount.

That these successive and fundamental changes have, on Increase the whole, been in unison with the national wishes and in requirements may fairly be inferred from the remarkable numbers. increase in numbers during the last quarter of a century, and especially at Cambridge, where the number of under graduates, which in 1862 was 1526, was in 1887 no less than 2979. In the academic year 1862-63 the number of matriculations was 448, and in 1886-87 1009.

Scarcely less influential, as a means of recovering for Local the two universities a truly national character, has been ¢xamina- the work which both have been carrying on and aiding ¥ons and by the institution of local examinations and of university epee! extension lectures. Of these two schemes, the former was lectures, initiated by both Oxford and Cambridge in the year 1858; the latter had its origin at Cambridge, having been sug- gested by the success attending a course of lectures to women delivered by Mr (now Professor) James Stuart, in 1867, in Liverpool, Manchester, Sheffield, and Leeds. By the former the standard of education throughout the country has been raised, both in public and in private schools. By the latter, instruction of the character and method which characterize university teaching has been brought within the reach of students of all classes and ages throughout the land.

So long ago as the year 1640 an endeavour had been Durham. made to bring about the foundation of a northern uni- versity for the benefit of the counties remote from Oxford and Cambridge. Manchester and York both petitioned to be made the seat of the new centre. Cromwell, however, rejected both petitions, and decided in favour of Durham.

Here he founded the university of Durham (1657), endow- ing it with the sequestered revenues of the dean and chapter of the cathedral, and entitling the society “The Mentor or Provost, Fellows, and Scholars of the College of Durham, of the foundation of Oliver, &ec.” This scheme was cancelled at the Restoration, and not revived until the present century; but on the 4th July 1832 a bill for the foundation of a university at Durham received the royal assent, the dean and chapter being thereby empowered to appropriate an estate at South Shields for the establish- ment and maintenance of a university for the advancement of learning. The foundation was to be directly connected with the cathedral church, the bishop of the diocese being appointed visitor, and the dean and chapter governors ; while the direct control was vested in a warden, a senate, and a convocation. A college, modelled on the plan of those at the older universities, and designated University Col- lege, Durham, was founded in 1837, Bishop Hatfield’s Hall in 1846, and Bishop Cosin’s Hall (which no longer exists) in 1851. The university includes all the faculties, and in 1865 there was added to the faculty of arts a school of physical science, including pure and applied mathematics, chemistry, geology, mining, engineering, &c. In 1871 the corporation of the university, in conjunction with some of the leading landed proprietors in the adjacent counties, gave further extension to this design by the foundation of a college of physical science at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, designed to teach scientific principles in their application to engineering, mining, manufactures, and agriculture.

Univer- sity of London,

King’s College.

Uni- versity College.

Victoria,

854 UBIVERSAITIiese

Students who had passed the required examinations were made admissible as associates in physical science of the university. There is also a medical college which stands in similar relations to Durham, of which university

Cod- rington College, Barbados, and Fourah Bay College, Sierra Leone, are likewise affiliated colleges,

The university of London had its origin in a movement initiated in the year 1825 by Thomas Campbell, the poet, in conjunction with Henry (afterwards Lord) Brougham, Mr (afterwards Sir) Jsaac Lyon Goldsmid, Joseph Hume, and some influential Dissenters, most of them connected with the congregation of Dr Cox of Hackney. The scheme was originally suggested by the fact that Dissenters were practically excluded from the older universities ; but the conception, as it took shape, was distinctly non-theological. The first council, appointed December 1825, comprised names representative of nearly all the religious denomin- ations, including (besides those above mentioned) Zachary Macaulay, George Grote, James Mill, William Tooke, Lord Dudley and Ward, Dr Olinthus Gregory, Lord Lans-downe, Lord John Russell, and the duke of Norfolk. On llth February 1826 the deed of settlement was drawn up ; and in the course of the year seven acres, constituting the site of University College, were purchased, the found- ation stone of the new buildings being laid by the duke of Sussex 30th April 1827. The course of instruction was designed to include " languages, mathematics, physics, the mental and the moral sciences, together with the laws of England, history, and political economy, and the various branches of knowledge which are the objects of medical education." In October 1828 the college was opened as the university of London. But in the mean- time a certain section of the supporters of the movement, while satisfied as to the essential soundness of the primary design as a development of national education, entertained considerable scruples as to the propriety of altogether dis- sociating such an institution from the national church. This feeling found expression in the foundation and in-corporation of King's College (14th August 1829), opened Sth October 1831, and designed to combine with the original plan instruction in "the doctrines and duties of Christi- anity, as the same are inculcated by the United Church of England and Ireland." This new phase of the movement was so far successful that in 1836 it was deemed expedient to dissociate the university of London from University College as a " teaching body," and to limit its action simply to the institution of examinations and the conferring of degrees,—the college itself receiving a new charter, and being thenceforth designated as University College, London, while the rival

institution was also incorporated with the university, and was thenceforth known as King's College, London. In the charter now given to the uni- versity it was stated that the king 'deems it to be the duty of his royal office to hold forth to all classes and denominations of his faithful subjects, without any dis- tinction whatsoever, an encouragement for pursuing a regular and liberal course of education." The charters of the university of London and of University College, London, were signed on the same day, 28th November 1836. In 1869 both the colleges gave their adhesion to the move- ment for the higher education of women which had been initiated elsewhere, and in 1880 ladies were for the first time admitted to degrees.

The Victoria University took its origin in the institution known as the Owens College, Manchester,—so called after a wealthy citizen of that name to whom it owed its founda- tion. The college was founded 12th March 1851, for the purpose of affording to students who were unable, on the ground of expense, to resort to Oxford or Cambridge an education of an equally high class with that given at those

centres. The institution was, from the first, unsectarian in character. In July 1877 a memorial was presented to the privy council praying for the grant of a charter to the college, conferring on it the rank of a university, to be called the " university of Manchester." The localization implied in this title having met with opposition from the Yorkshire College at Leeds, it was resolved that the uni- versity should be called the "Victoria University." – Under this name the foundation received its charter 20th April 1880. " The characteristic features of the Victoria Uni- versity, as compared with other British universities, are these :—(a) it does not, like London, confer its degrees on candidates who have passed certain examinations only, but it also requires attendance on prescribed courses of academic study in a college of the university; (0) the constitution of the university contemplates its (ultimately) becoming a federation of colleges; but these colleges will not be situated, like those of Oxford and Cambridge, in one town, but wherever a college of adequate efficiency and stability shall have arisen. University College, Liverpool, and the Yorkshire College, Leeds, having fulfilled these requirements, have become affiliated with the university. The university, like the older bodies in England and Scot- land, is at once a teaching and an examining body, and there is an intimate rapport between

the teaching and the examining functions. To give it a general or national character, the governing body consists partly of persons nominated by the crown and partly of representatives of the governing and teaching bodies of the colleges and of the graduates of the university. External examiners are appointed, who conduct the examinations in conjunetion with examiners representing the teaching body. The grad- uates of the university meet its teachers in convocation to discuss the affairs of the university. Convocation will elect future chancellors, and a certain number of representatives on the court" (Thompson, The Owens College, &c., p. 548). Like the Johns Hopkins University in America, the Vic- toria University has instituted certain fellowships (styled the Berkeley fellowships) for the encouragement of research,

In Scotland the chief change to be noted in connexion Changes with the university of St Andrews is the appropriation in FG 1579 of the two colleges of St Salvator and St Leonard to 5¢ gy the faculty of philosophy, and that of St Mary to theology. Andrews, In 1747 an Act of Parliament was obtained for the union Glasgow, of the two former colleges into one. Glasgow, in the year <—- 1577, received a new charter, and its history from that date down to the Restoration was one of almost continuous progress. The restoration of Episcopacy, however, in volved the alienation of a considerable portion of its revenues, and the consequent suspension of several of its chairs. In 1864 the old university buildings were sold, and, a Government grant having been obtained, together with private subscriptions, the present new buildings were erected from the joint fund. The faculties now recognized at Glasgow are those of arts, theology, jurisprudence, and medicine. At Aberdeen an amalgamation, similar to that at St Andrews, took place, by virtne of the Universities Act of 1858, of the two universities of King's College and Marischal College. In conjunction with Glasgow, this unt versity returns a member to parliament. The peculiar a constitution of the college at Edinburgh, as defined by 1s sty of charter (the government being vested entirely in the lord py… provost, magistrates, and council, as patrons and guardians), purgh. involved the senate in frequent collisions with the towa council. The latter, being a strictly representative body, included elements with which the senate of the university sometimes found it difficult to work harmoniously, and 1s disposition to dictate was strongly resented by the dis- tinguished

metaphysician and professor Sir William Hamilton. On the other hand, the council sometimes

Vey HRs ory, ES

exercised a beneficial discretion by appointing professors of ability whom the senate might have regarded as ineligible on the ground of their religious tenets. The Disruption of 1843 emancipated the lay professors from subscription to the Established Church of Scotland, and resulted in many of the important changes which were subsequently introduced in the Universities Act of 1858. On the 28th October 1859 the town council, notwithstanding that their powers were already terminated by the provisions of the Act, availed themselves of a technical right to appoint a principal,—their choice falling upon Sir David Brewster. The great landmark in the history of the Scottish as in that of the English universities is represented by the remodel- ling of the several constitutions of these bodies in the year 1858. The commissioners of 1858-62 left the university of Edinburgh in the possession of constitutional autonomy, with its studies and degrees regulated by ordinances. The students also received the rectorial franchise, but were not, as at Glasgow and Aberdeen, divided into nations, In arts the B.A. degree was abolished, the M.A. representing the only degree in this faculty, as at the other Scottish universities. The course of study was divided into three departments :—(1) classics; (2) mathematics, including natural philosophy ; (3) mental science and English liter- ature. In each department it was required that there should be an additional examiner besides the professor, so that the candidates should not be entirely examined by their own teachers. It was also provided that, instead of one examination for the degree at the end of a student’s course, examinations in each of the departments might be passed separately. In the twenty years beginning with 1863, 1400 M.A. degrees have been conferred, as against 250 in the twenty years preceding. In the faculty of medicine, the

original single degree of doctor of medicine gave place to

three classes—bachelor of medicine (M.B.), master in sur- gery (C.M.), and doctor of medicine (M.D.). In 1866 it was further laid down that theses should no longer be de- manded from candidates for the lower degrees of M.B. and C.M., and, on the other hand, that the degree of M.D. should not

be conferred on persons not showing any evidence of medical study after leaving the university, but that a thesis should be invariably required. Since the enactment of these ordinances the number of the medical students has increased from about 500 to over 1700. In the faculty of law the title of the degree was to be LL.B., and it was to be conferred only on those who had already graduated as M.A. But the minor degree, that of “bachelor of law” (B.L.), might be conferred if the candidate had attended one course of lectures in the faculty of arts, and passed a preliminary examination in (1) Latin, (2) Greek, French or German, and (3) any two of the three subjects—logic, moral philosophy, and mathematics. The chair of public law, which had fallen into abeyance in 1832, was recon- stituted, and the chair of universal civil history was con- verted into a professorship of history and constitutional law. ‘The degree of doctor of laws was left, as before, a purely honorary degree. Chairs of Sanskrit, engineering, geology, commercial and political economy, education, fine art, and the Celtic languages have also been founded. By the Representation of the People (Scotland) Act, 1868, the universities of Edinburgh and St Andrews were empowered to return jointly a member to the House of Commons.

A parliamentary return for the ten years ending 30th

Y March 1883 showed that the sums voted annually by

parliament or chargeable on the consolidated fund to the four universities had amounted during that period to £65,821 for Aberdeen, £85,906 for Edinburgh, £66,182 for Glasgow, and £38,111 for St Andrews. In addition to these sums Edinburgh had received £80,000 and Glas- gow £20,000 in the form of special grants in aid:

855

Trinity College, Dublin, was founded in 1591, under the auspices of Sir John Perrot, the Irish viceroy. A royal charter nominated a provost and a minimum number of three fellows and three scholars as a body corporate, empowered to establish among themselves “ whatever laws of either of the universities of Cambridge or Oxford they may judge to be apt and suitable ; and especially that no other persons should teach or profess the liberal arts in Ireland without the queen’s special licence.” The first five provosts of

Trinity College were all Cambridge men, and under the influence of Archbishop Loftus, the first provost, and his successors, the foundation received a strongly Puritan bias. Prior to the year 1873 the pro- vostship, fellowships, and foundation scholarships could be held only by members of the Church of Ireland ; but all such restrictions were abolished by Act 36 Vict. c. 2iL, whereby the requirement of subscription to any article or formulary of faith was finally abrogated. As at present constituted, the ordinary government is in the hands of the provost and senior fellows in conjunction with the visitors and council,—the supreme authority being the crown, except so far as limited by Act of Parliament.

The first departure in Ireland from the exclusive system of education formerly represented by the foundation at Dublin, dates from the creation of the Queen's University, incorporated by royal charter 3d September 1850. By this charter the general legislation of the university, together with its government and administration, was vested in the university senate. In 1864 the charter of 1850 was superseded by a supplementary charter, and the university reconstituted "in order to render more complete and satisfactory the courses of education to be followed by students in the colleges "; and finally, in 1880, by virtue of the Act of Parliament known as the University Education (Ireland) Act, 1879, the Queen's University gave place to the Royal University of Ireland, which was practically a reconstitution of the former foundation, the dissolution of the Queen's University being decreed so soon as the newly constituted body should be in a position to confer degrees ; at the same time all graduates of the Queen's University were recognized as graduates of the new university with corresponding degrees, and all matriculated students of the former as entitled to the same status in the latter, The university confers degrees in arts (B.A., M.A, D.Litt.), science, engineering, music, medicine, surgery, obstetrics, and law. The preliminary pass examinations in arts are held at annually selected centres, —those chosen in 1885 being Dublin, Belfast, Carlow, Cork, Galway, Limerick, and Londonderry. All honour examinations and all exam- inations in other faculties are held in Dublin. The Queen's

Trinity College, Dublin,

Queen's Univer- sity.

Royal Univer- sity of Ireland.

Colleges

Colleges at Belfast, Cork, and Galway were founded in 4t Belfast,

December 1845, under an Act of Parliament “to enable Her Majesty to endow new colleges for the advancement of learning in Ireland,” and were subsequently incorporated as colleges of the university. Their professors were at the same time constituted professors in the university, and conducted the examinations. But in the reconstruction of 1880 the chief share in the conduct of the examinations and advising the senate with respect to them was vested in a board of fellows, elected by the senate in equal numbers from the non-denominational colleges and the purely Catholic institutions. The colleges retain, however, their independence, being in no way subject to the control of the university senate except in the regulations with respect to the requirements for degrees and other aca- demic distinctions. On the other hand, the obligation formerly imposed of a preliminary course of study at one or other of the colleges before admission to degrees was abolished at the foundation of the Royal University, the examinations being now open, like those of the university

Cork, and Galway.

Colleges in

St David’s,

Aberyst- with,

South Wales,

North Wales.

Calcutta. Bombay. Madras.

Punjab univer- sity.

Sydney.

of London, to all matriculated students on payment of certain fees.

There is at present no university of Wales, although the bestowal of a royal charter before long is confidently anticipated. The oldest college, that of St David's at Lampeter, possesses the right of conferring degrees. It was founded in 1822 for the purpose of educating clergy- men in the principles of the Established Church of England and Wales, mainly for the supply of the Welsh dioceses. The number of the professors in 1887 was 8, and the number of the students 120. The next college in order of foundation is Aberystwith. It was founded 9th October 1872, but possesses no charter, and is mainly supported by the Dissenting bodies. The staff of professors numbers 13, and the students number 150. The University College of South Wales and Monmouthshire at Cardiff was founded in 1883. The number of professors in 1887 was 9, lecturers 4, demonstrators 2 ; number of students 140, The University College of North Wales at Bangor received its charter 4th June 1885, its object being to " provide instruction in all the branches of a liberal education except theology." Its staff consists of a principal, 8 professors or lecturers, and 2 demonstrators; the number of the students is 127. There is also a hall of residence for women students. At each of these three last-named colleges students proceeding to degrees have to go through either a London, Edinburgh, Glasgow, or Dublin course of study, but at Edinburgh, Glasgow, and Dublin a certain proportion of the term of residence ordinarily required is remitted in their favour.

In India, the three older universities all date from 1857,—that of Calcutta having been incorporated January 24, Bombay July 18, Madras September 5, in that year. At these three universities the instruction is mainly in English. "A university in India is a body for examining candidates for degrees, and for conferring degrees. It has the power of prescribing text-books, standards of instruction, and rules of procedure, but is not an institution for teaching. Its governance and management are vested in a body of fellows, some of whom are ex officio, being the chief European functionaries of the state. The remainder are appointed by the Government, being generally chosen as representative men in respect of emincnt learning, scientific attainment, official position, social status, or personal

worth. Being a mixed body of Europeans and natives, they thus comprise all that is best and wisest in that division of the empire to which the university belongs, and fairly represent most of the phases of thought and philosophic tendencies observable in the country. The fellows in their corporate capacity form the senate. The affairs of the university are conducted by the syndicate, consisting of a limited number of members elected from among the fellows. The faculties comprise arts and philosophy, law, medicine, and civil engineering. A degree in natural and physical science has more recently been added" (Sir R. Temple, India in 1880, p. 145), The Punjab university was incorporated in 1883,—the Punjab University College, prior to that date, having conferred titles only and not degrees, The main object of this universityis the encouragement of the study of the Oriental languages and literature, and the rendering accessible to native students the results of European scientific teaching through the medium of their own vernacular. The Oriental faculty is here the oldest, and the degree of B.O.L. (bachelor of Oriental literature) is given as the result of its examinations. At the Oriental College the instruction is given wholly in the native languages. In 1887 the senate at Cambridge (mainly on the representations of Mr C. P. Ilbert, formerly vice-chancellor of the university of Calcutta) adopted resolutions whereby some forty-nine collegiate institutions already affiliated to the latter body were affiliated to the university of Cam- bridge, their students thus becoming entitled to the remission of one year in the ordinary statutable requirements with respect to residence at Cambridge. It is at these institutions, and the colleges of the first or second grade in the other presidencies, that the instruction is given.

In Australia, the university of Sydney was incorporated by an Act of the colonial legislature which received the royal assent 9th December 1851, and on 27th February 1858 a royal charter was granted conferring on graduates of the university the same rank, style, and precedence as are enjoyed by graduates of universitics within the United Kingdom. Sydney is also one of the institutions

associated with the university of London from which certificates of

having received a due conrse of instruction may be received with

U NAV Bees Ties

a view to adinission to degrees. There are four faculties, viz., arts, law, medicine, and science. The design of the university is to supply the means of a liberal education to all orders and dcnomina-tions, without any distinction whatever. An Act for the purpose of facilitating the erection of colleges in connexion with different religious bodies was, however, passed by the legislature during the session of 1884, and since that time colleges representing the) Episcopalian, Presbyterian, and Roman Catholic Churches have been founded. In 1885 the total number of students attendin lectures in the university was 206. The university of Melbourne, Mel-in the colony of Victoria, was incorporated and endowed by royal bourne, Act 22d January 1853. This Act was amended 7th June 1881, Here also no religious tests are imposed on admission to any degree or election to any office. The council is empowered, after due examination, to confer degrees in all the faculties (exceptin divinity) which can be couferred in any ulliversity within the British dominions. It is also authorized to affiliate colleges; and i Trinity College (Church of England) was accordingly founded in 1870 and Ormond College (Presbyterian) in 1879. ‘The founding of a university for Queensland is at the present time in contemplation.

The university of Adelaide in South Australia (founded mainly Adelaide, by the exertions and munificence of Sir Walter Watson Hughes) was incorporated by an Act of the colonial legislature in 1874, in which year it was further endowed by Sir Thomas Elder. In 188} letters patent were granted by the English crown whereby degrees conferred by the university were constituted of equal validity with those of any university of the United Kingdom. The faculties in the university are those of arts, medicine, law, science, and music, The number of matriculations since the foundation amounted in 1886 to 284, the number of undergraduates in that year being 90, The university of New Zealand, founded in 1870, and reconstituted New in 1874 and 1875, is empowered by royal charter to grant the Zealand. several degrees of bachelor and master of arts, and bachelor and doctor in law, medicine, and music. Women are admitted to degrees. To this the Auckland University College, Nelson College, Canterbury College, and the university of Otago stand in the relation of affiliated institutions. This last-named institution was Otago. founded in 1869 by an order of the provincial council, with the power of conferring degrees in arts, medicine, and law, and received as an endowment 100,000 acres of pastoral land. It was opened in 1871 with a staff of three professors, all in the faculty of arts, In

1872 the provincial council further subsidized it by a grant of a second 100,000 acres of land, and the university was now enabled j to make considerable additions to the staff of professors and lecturers, to establish a lectureship in law, and to lay the foundations of a medical school. In 1874 an agreement was made between the university of New Zealand and that of Otago, whereby the functions of the former were restricted to the examination of candidates for matriculation, for scholarships, and for degrees; while the latter bound itself to become affiliated to the university of New Zealand, to hold in abeyance its power of granting degrees, and to waive the claim which it had advanced to a royal charter. As the result of this arrangement, the university of Otago became possessed of 10,000 acres of land which had been set apart for university purposes in the former province of Southland, In 1877 a school of mines was established in connexion with the university, In Canada the M‘Gill College and University at Montreal was Montreal, founded by royal charter in 1821 (amended in 1852) on the foundation of the Honourable James M‘Gill, who died at Montreal 19th December 1813. A number of colleges and schools throughout the province stand in the relation of affiliated institutions, The university is Protestant but undenominational. It includes the

faculties of arts, applied sciences, medicine, and law. In 1885 the ‘ total number of students, including women, was 526. The unl- Toronto. versity of Toronto was originally established by royal charter in 1827, under the title of King’s College, with certain religious restrictions, resembling those at that time in force at the English Universities, but in 1834 these restrictions were abolished, and in 1849 the designation of the university was changed into that of the university of Toronto. In 1873 further amendments were made in the constitution of the university. The chancellor was made elective for a period of three years by convocation, which was at the same time reorganized so as to include all graduates m law, medicine, and surgery, all masters of arts, and bachclors of arts of three years standing, all doctors of science, and bachelors of science of threc years standing. The powers of the senate were also extended to all branches of literature, science, and the arts, to granting certificates of proficiency to women, and to affiliating colleges. The work of instruction is performed by University College, which is maintained out of the endowment of the provincial university, and governed by a council composed of the residents and the professors. Its several chairs include classical literature,

logic and rhetoric, mathematics and natural philosophy, chemistry

and experimental philosophy, history and English lita

mineralogy and geology, metaphysics and ethics, meteorology am

natural history, and lectureships on Oriental literature, German,

and French. Other universities and colleges with power to confer

Ns ER See is

degrees are the Victoria University at Cobourg (1836), supported by the Methodist Church of Canada; Queen's University, Kingston (1841), representing the Presbyterian body; and the university of Trinity College, Toronto, founded in 1851 on the suppression of the faculty of divinity in King's College. Lennoxville is a centre for uni- versity instruction in conformity with Church of England principles. In Africa, an Act for the incorporation of the university of the Cape of Good Hope received the royal assent 26th June 1873, the council being empowered to grant degrees in arts, law, and medicine.

In the United States of America university education has received a great extension, without, however, exercising in Europe that reflex influence discernible in so many other relations. The report of the commissioners of education for 1883-84 gives a list of no less than 370 degree-giving universities or colleges ; but of these a large proportion are sectarian, others represent only a single faculty, and nearly nine-tenths have been founded within the last thirty- five years. Although a higher education has unquestion- ably been thus very widely diffused, the undue multiplica- tion of centres has, in some provinces, lowered the standard of attainment and led to a consequent depreciation in the value of university degrees. This tendency it was sought to counteract in the State of Ohio, some twenty-five years ago, by an organization of the different colleges. The in- struction given is, in most cases, almost gratuitous, the charge to each student being less than 30 dollars a year. This cheapening of a higher education is not, however, attended with quite the same results as in Germany (where lads with little aptitude for a professional career are thus attracted to the

professions), the rapidly increasing popula- tion and the wider scope for mechanical or agricultural pursuits probably exercising a beneficial counteracting influence. The distinguishing characteristics which belong to these numerous centres are described by the president of the Johns Hopkins University, in an address delivered at Harvard in 1886, as suggestive of four different classes of colleges,—(1) those which proceed from the original historic colleges, (2) those established in the name of the State, (3) those avowedly ecclesiastical, (4) those founded

by private benefactions. To the first class belong Harvard College and Yale College with their offshoots. Of these

two, the former was founded in 1638 at Cambridge, Mas-

sachusetts, by a former fellow of Emmanuel College at Cambridge in England, and represented the Puritan tenets for which the parent society was at that time noted ; the latter was founded in 1701 by the combined action of a few of the ministers of the State, a charter being given in the same year by the colonial legislature. It was for a long time chiefly supported by the Congregationalists, but 1s now unsectarian. The total number of students at Harvard in 1882 was 988, at Yale 692. The university of Pennsylvania was founded in 1751 by Thomas .Penn and Richard Penn, on the lines of a scheme drawn up by Benjamin Franklin, and was from the first placed on a basis comprising all denominations. It is distinguished by the liberality with which it has opened its courses of instruc- tion to the inhabitants of the city generally ; the degree of Ph.D. is conferred on all comers after due examina- tion. At Haverford and Lafayette Colleges, and also at the Lehigh university, “advanced degrees” are offered “only for higher study, prolonged beyond the collegiate course,” instead of being conferred as a matter of routine after a certain term of years. The Johns Hopkins Uni- versity, also an unsectarian body, was founded at Baltimore in 1867, and is already a school of established reputation, and especially resorted to by those designing to follow the profession of teachers. It is also distinguished by the possession of fellowships, to be held only by students in- tending to pursue some especial line of original research. Other steadily growing centres are Columbia College in New York, founded in 1754; the

Cornell University, also unsectarian, recently enriched by the acquisition of a con- siderable endowment ; Brown’s University in Providence ; and those of Princeton, Michigan, Virginia, and California. At Amherst College, where the number of students in 1882 was 339, the experiment has recently been made of par- tially dispensing with examinations during the course of

Preparatory Department.) Collegiate Department. | Income from | Receiptsin | Volumes in ca a

States and Territories. No. of Productive 1883 from College | ninaimee : Colleges. No. of No. of No, of No. of Funds, | Tuition Fees. | Libraries, {74 O78 an Instructors. | Students. | Instructors.| Students. Apparatus.

ee ee a eee ee [ee a Se ae — = => a AV@DAINER sc..scess. asoe coonnacie cobaceonc 4 1 169 46 332 $24,000 AGO 16,500 $300,000 PAMIGANGEIS ccs: scccssancccscorcsteescuvecsc 5 18 665 21 230 750 $5,320 2,820 109,000 OBUIAONM He rencscscccceceqacseteasvarsaacses 11 33 1,211 135 933 109,500 46,200 53,100 1,921,000 COWMHGOS...5..5+0sss0s-sses9s a eee oe 3 10 295 26 86 4,422 2,007 9,800 340,000 Connecticut… 3 a me 76 958 84,991 119,398 173,000 1,409,630 Delaware……....5. 1 tae . 6 58 4,980 mee 3,000 30,000

JOEY FIG) seniepoodoo: odbocnoncensocnocostandaed 1 a6 ase non A 200 p00 oon op0

GEOnGIGy. :cssccnsecs 6 6 176 55 459 17,500 500 10,800 380,000 Mlinois……..... 29 83 2,795 232 1,998 98,724 139,477 145,649 2,501,000 Indiana…..... 15 31 1,577 131 1,615 52,217 23,350 80,594 1,120,000 GW Alsccaescseemorcacssievestereecsss: saea 19 37 2,369 188 1,266 59,455 75,736 61,581 1,378,000 IKSHIIGASS, vcscaseetscscarsesatecsseveaces see’s 8 30 1,304 78 459 18,650 16,166 33,300 500,000 IMGTID UGG ates cnnentnemectats tase casvar, 15 27 835 114 1,182 56,825 64,292 49,290 920,500 MAOUISIEGAyecersatectertecesscreescsesseacss 10 26 1,418 86 372 14,556 38,601 38,078 707,000 MENNIC. caecasaceecs es 3 ee ees 35 339 45,883 21,450 61,050 813,500 MIAGVIAM ese hes cicadseserssisestevesoeevss 10 29 393 118 821 228,734 48,275 74,400 819,500 Massachusetts …. q Hon 209 168 2,010 364,592 162,438 312,551 2,261,027 Michigan…..... 9 29 1,604 117 1,029 84,825 76,586 80,865

1,380,984 Minnesota…. 5 7 449 73 499 51,064 33,422 26,037 820,765 Mississippi 8: 5 500 24 241 1,200 7,976 10,800 480,000 Missouri… 20 34 1,742 180 2,057 81,773 124,359 94,707 2,794,000 Nebraska…...0.00 5 20 750 46 127 3,360 6,864 17,087 267,000 New Hampsliire …....-ccseccsscceoeee 1 wee ane 15 232 30,000 14,000 55,000 100,000 INOW CVICY:..ciesnseccsvenaredenan ss 4 2 68 76 602 71,500 16,410 68,000 810,000 INIGWHRLCOTK, 3 csctcestaiiese sceasecaresioe 29 76 2,289 446 3,641 619,811 544,580 274,334 7,859,163 North Carolina… 9 18 373 66 758 20,750 20,500 38,600 640,500 OUMO Me cess eves. 33 106 4,002 327 2,601 170,713 110,368 169,052 2,899,234 OBGOH scree: vas 6 9 589 34 283 19,200 16,100 10,330 279,950 Pennsylvania…... 26 59 1,828 295 2,195 344,574 137,533 185,718 4,338,099 Rhode Island…... 1 . =i 17 270 40,157 33,756 53,522 1,250,000 South Carolina… 9 17 478 46 371 19,600 10,530 21,000 320,000 Tennesseeé….....04. 20 34 1,712 151 1,284 89,090 53,293 60,334 1,568,749 TIES ASI ccs.) IDETCOUAMI se saccccosceecdsuscicacees coe! P4 6 32 7 100 S06 ae 132 35,000 District of Columbia…….....-es000.. 5 1 59 63 442 60,642 10,589 44,000 1,200,000 italien, secits © erent ero eos 1 9 259 _ oie ve 6,530 2,913 70,000 WA HEIUIBL ON jcc ceIMM eon once aceeetcrsescevs ss 370 829 82,755 3,815 32,767 $3,018,624 $2,105,565 2,541,782 $46,339,301

XXIII. — 108

Harvard College.

ale College.

Univer- sity of Pennsyl- vania.

Johns Hopkins Univer- sity.

Amherst College.

858

study, where the students give evidence of having made satisfactory progress. Considerable modifications have also taken place in the courses of study, nearly all the colleges having now adopted the system of “ parallel

courses,” and the principle of selection between these. Female education has received in America an extension which it has attained in no other country, and one of the colleges (that of Wel- lesley) numbers several hundred students. Since the war of 1861 a greatly increased attention has been given throughout the universities to physical training and athletic exercises, and excellent gymnasia, constructed on German models, have been erected.

The accompanying table (p. 857), prepared by the council of education for the year 1883-84, shows the distribution of these centres in the different States, together with their numbers, revenues, libraries, and the estimated value of their endowments.

Authorities.—On the earlier history and organization of the medizyal univer- sities, the student should eonsult F. C. von Savigny, Gesch. d. rémischen Rechts im Mittelalter, 7 vols., 1826-51; for the university of Paris, Du Boulay, Historia Universitatis Parisiensis, 6 vols., Paris, 1665, Crevier, Hist, de I Université de Paris, 7 vols., Paris, 1761, and C. Jourdain, Hist. de l’Université de Paris au XVIIme et au XVI Time Siecle, Paris, 1862: of these the work of Du Boulay (Bu- lus) is one of great research and labour, but wanting in critical judgment, while that of Crevier is little more than a readable outline drawn from the former. The views of Du Boulay have been challenged on many Important points by P. H, Denifie in the first volume of his Die Universitdten des Mittelalters bis 1400 (1885), and more particularly on those relating to the organization of the early universi-

ties. The work of Meiners, Gesch. d. Entstehung u. Entwickelung der hohen Schui unsers Erdtheils, 4 vols. (1802-5), must be regarded as almost superseded oo seneral history, and the same may be said of Hnber’s work on the English universities, Die englischen Universitdten (Cassel, 1839-40), translated by Fw Newman, 3 vols. (1845). Much uscful criticism on both the English anq the Continental universities will be found in Sir W. Hamilton’s Discussions, &e, 1853 For the German universities, the works of Zarneke, Die deutschen Universitéten im Mittelalter (Leipsic, 1857), and

Paulsen, Gesch, d. gelehrten Unterrichts auf den deutschen Schulen und Universitdten (Leipsie, 1885), will be found the most trust- worthy,—the former for the medieval, the latter for the modern period. Tothese may be added two articles by Paulsen in vol. xlv. of Von Sybel's Mistorische Zeit-schrift :—(1) * Griindung " and (2) Organisation u. Lebensordnungen d. deutschen Universititen im Mittelalter"; Tholuck, Das akademische Leben des 17 Jahrhun. derts, 2 vols, (Halle, 1853-54); Von Raumer, Gesch. d. Padagogth, vol. iv. (4th ed. 1872); Dolch, Gesch. d. deutschen Studententhums (1858); Sybel, Die deutschen Universitdten (2d ed., 1874); and Dr J. Conrad, Zhe German Universities for the last Fifty Years, translated by Hutehinson, with preface by James Bryce, M.P. (Glasgow, 1885), For Oxford, there are the laborious colleetions by Anthony Wood,—History and Antiquities of the University and of the Colleges and Hails of Oxford, edited with continuation by Rev. J. Guteh, 5 vols, (1786-96), and Atheng and Fasti Oxonienses, edited by Dr P. Bliss, 4 vols. (1813-20); also the publications of the Oxford Historical Soclety; A Jistory of the Oniversity of Oxford from the Earliest Times to 1530,by H. C, Maxwell Lyte (1886); and Statutes ofthe University of Oxford compiled in 1636 under Authority of Archbishop Laud, ed. Griffiths (Oxford, 1888). For Cambridge, the researches of C. H. Cooper, sreatly surpassing those of Wood in thoroughness and impartiality, are comprised in three series. (1) Annals of Cambridge, 4 vols, (1842-52); (2) Athenx Cantabrigien ses, 1500-1609 2 vols. (1858-61); (8) Memorials of Cambridge, 3 vols. (new ed., 1884). The Archi. tectural Mistory of the University of Cambridge and of the Colleges, by the late Robert Willis, edited and continued by J. Willis Clark, 4 vols. (1886), is a work of admirable thoroughness and completeness. To these may be added Cambridge in the Seventeenth Century; Lives of Nicholas Ferrar and Matthew Robinson, by Prof. John E. B. Mayor, 2 vols. (1855, 1856); and Baker's J/istory of the College of St John the Evangelist, Cambridge, edited by Mayor, 2 vols, (1869); also J, B, Mullinger, History of the University of Cambridge from the Earltest Times to Accession of Charles J,, 2 vols. (1873-85). For both universities see the Documents issued by the Oxford and Cambridge Commissions of 1858; also the Wood, Hearne, Tanner, and Rawlinson MSS., and the Cottonian, Harleian, Lansdowne (espe-

INDEX.

| tae (1494), 843, 854.| Cape of Good Hope (1873), Glasgow (1453), 843, 854, bo (1640), 852, 857, Guttingen (1736), 847. Adelaide (1874), 856. Christiania (1811), 850, Graz (1586), 851.

Agram (1869), 852. Coimbra (1309), 839, 851. | Greifswald (1456), 842. Alcala (1499), 851. Cologne (1388), 840, Grenoble (1339), 839. Altdorf (1578), 845. Columbia College, U.S. | Groningen (1614), 850, American universities,857. | (1754), 857, Tlalle (1693), 847, Amsterdam (1877), 850. Copenhagen (1479), 842. | Harderwijk (1600), 850, Angers (1305), 839. Cornell, U.S. (1865), 857. | Harvard College (1638), Athens (1837), 852. Craeow (1364), 840, 857,

Arezzo (circ. 1215), 836. Czernowitz (1875), 852, Heidelberg (1885), 840, Avignon (1303), 839. Debreezin College (1531), | Helmstidt (1575), 845, Bamberg (1648), 846. 852. Helsingfors (1640), 852. Basel (1459), &42, 851. Dorpat (1632), 845. Huesca (1354), 839. Berlin (1809), 848, Durham (1882), 853, Ingolstadt (1459), 842. Bern (1834), 851. Edinburgh (1582), 846, 854. | Innsbruck (1692), 846. Bologna (12th eent.), 832. | Erfurt (1375), 840. lreland, Royal University Bombay (1857), 856. Erlangen (1743), 848. of (1880), 855,

Bonn (1818), 848, Ferrara (1391), 837. Jena (1558), 845. Bordeaux (1441), 842. Florence (1320), 837.

Bourges (1465), 842. France (1794), 851. Breslau (1702), 846. Franeker (1585), 850, Brussels (1834), 850, Frankfort – on – the – Oder Budapest (1635), 852. (1506), 843,

Caen (1437), 841, Freiburg (1455), 842, Cahors (1332), 839. Fiinfkirchen (1367), 840, Caleutta (1857), 856. Geneva (1876), 851. Ghent (1816), 850,

Cambridge (12th cent.), 838, 852. Giessen (1607), 845,

Kazan (1804), 852. Kharkoff (1804), 852. Kieff (1803), 852.

Kiel (1665), 850. Klausenburg (1872), 852. Kolozsvar (1872), 852. Konigsberg (1544), 844, Leipsic (1409), 841. Lemberg (1784), 851.

London (1826), 854, Louvain (1426), 841. Lund (1668), 850.

M‘Gill, Canada (1821), 856 Madras (1857), 856. Madrid (1837), 851, Mainz (1476), 842, Marburg (1527), 844. Melbourne (1853), 856. Modena (12th cent.), 836. Montpellier (1289), 838. Montreal (1821), 856. Moscow (1755), 852, Munich (1826), 848, Nantes (1463), 842, Naples (1225), 836,

New Zealand (1870), 856. Odessa (1865), 852,

Ofen (1389). 840.

Olmiitz (1581), 851. Orange (1365), 839, Orleans (13th cent.), 838. Otago (1869), 856.

Oxford (12th eent.), 837,

Johns llopkins (1867), 857.

Padua (1222), 836.

cially Kennett and Strype), Baker, and Cole collections, (J. B. M.) Lerida (1300), 839. Palencia (1214), 839. Siena (1357), 837, Leyden (1575), 850. Paris (12th cent.), 834, 846, | Strasburg (1621), 845, 851. Liége (1816), 850. 850, Sydney (1851), 856,

Pavia (1361), 836. Pennsylvania (1751), 857, Perpignan (1379), 839, Perugia (1308), 837. Piacenza (1248), 836, Poitiers (1431), 841. Prague (1347), 839, 846. Princeton (1746), 857. Punjab (1883), 856, Queen’s University, lre- land (1850), 855. Queen’s University, King- ston (1841), 857. Reggio (12th cent.), 836 Itinteln (1621), 845, Rome (1303), 836. tostock (1419), 841. St Andrews (1411), 843,

854.

ot,

St David’s College, Lam-

peter (1822), 856, St Petersburg (1819), 852. Salamanca (1243), 839. Salerno (9th eent.), 832, Salzburg (1623), 851, Seville (1254), 839,

Toronto (1827), 856, Toulouse (1233), 838. Treves (1450), 842. Treviso (1318), 837, Trinity College, Dublin

(1591), 855.

Trinity College, Toronto’

(1851), 857,

Tiibingen (1476), 842, Upsala (1477), 842, 850, Utrecht (1634), 850, Valence (1452), 842, Valladolid (1346), 839, Vereelli (circ. 1228), 836, Vicenza (1204), 836. Victoria, Manchester

(1880), 854.

Victoria, Canada (1836),

856.

Vienna (1364), 840, 851. Vilna (1803), $52, Wales, colleges in, 856. Wittenberg (1502), 843. Yale College (1701), 857. Zagrab (1869), 852. Ziirich (1832), 851.

853.

UNTERWALDEN is one of the Forest cantons of Switzerland, ranking as sixth in the Confederation. It is composed of two valleys through which run two streams both called the Aa, and which are called Obwald and Nidwald from their position with regard to the great forest of the Kernwald in which they are situated. In old documents the inhabitants are always described as “homines intramontani,” whether “ vallis superioris ” (Obwald) or “vallis inferioris ” (Nidwald). The total area of Obwald is 183-3 square miles, 154°2 of which are classed as productive (forests 37-6), while of the remainder 3°8 are covered by glaciers and 4°3 by lakes. The area of Nidwald is 112-1 square miles, 841 being productive (forests 27°7) ; of the

rest the cantonal bit of the Lake of Lucerne covers 12-8. The highest point in the canton is the Titlis (10,627 feet) in Obwald.

The census of 1880 returned the population of Obwald as 15,356, an increase of 941 on 1870, and that of Nidwald as 11,992, an increase of 291. In both the women have a small majority over the men. The native tongue of practically the whole population is German (15,254 in Obwald, 11,869 in Nidwald), and they are nearly all Roman Catholics (15,078 in Obwald, 11,901 in

Nidwald). Till 1814 the canton was in the diocese of Constance ; since that time it has (like Uri) formed legally part of no diocese, though it is provisionally administered by the bishop of Chur. The capital of Obwald is Sarnen (4039 inhabitants), Kerns (2500) being the only other place which is more than a village; that of Nidwald is Stanz (2210). The population is purely agricultural and pastoral. In Obwald the forests are remarkable, im Nidwald the fiery energy of the inhabitants. In educa- tional matters the standard is not very high, but is being gradually raised. At the head of the Nidwald valley (but legally in Obwald) stands the great Benedictine monastery of Engelberg, founded in 1121. There are no railways, but one is being made from Lucerne through Obwald over the Briinig Pass to Meyringen in Bern.

Historically Obwald was part of the Aargau, and Nidwald of the Ziirichgau. In both there were many great landowners (speci: ally the abbey of Murbach and the Hapsburgs) and few free men : while the fact that the Hapsburgs were counts of the Aargau an the Ziirichgau further delayed the development of political freedom. Both took part in the risings of 1245-47, and in 1248 Sarnen ye threatened by the pope with excommunication for opposing 1! hereditary lord, the count of Hapsburg. The alleged cruelties a mitted by the Hapsburgs do not, however, appear in history 0

\

] official members being chosen every year, the ordinary every 4 or 3 j years respectively. The existing constitution of Obwald is that of | 1867 ; that of Nidwald is dated 1850, and was amended in 1877-78.

} lands” are still in the hands of the old guilds, and ‘‘ gemeinden ” j consist of natives, not merely residents, though in Obwald these

| contribute to the expenses of the new “political communes ” of | residents, while in Nidwald the latter have to raise special taxes.

| only half the share of those who are married.

jthe N. and E. by the Nile, on the W. by the Albert

ae =

Justinger’s Chronicle, 1420 (see TELL). On April 16, 1291, Rudolph the future emperor bought from Murbach all its estates in Unter- walden and thus ruled this district as the chief landowner, as count, and as emperor. On Ist August 1291 Nidwald formed the ‘ Eyer- lasting League” with Uri and Schwyz (this being the first known case in which its common seal is used), Obwald joining a little later on. In 1304 the two valleys were joined together under the same imperial bailiff, and in 1809 Henry VII. confirmed to them all the liberties granted by his predecessor—though none are known to have been granted. However, this placed Unterwalden on an equal political footing-with Uri and Schwyz; and as such it took part in Morgarten fight (also driving back an invasion over the Briinig Pass) and in the renewal of the Everlasting League at Brunnen (1315), as well as at Sempach (1386), and in driving back the Gugler or English freebooters (1875). For physical reasons, it was difficult for Unterwalden to enlarge its territories, Yet in 1368 it acquired Alpnach, and in 1378 Hergiswyl. So too Obwald shared with Uri in the conquest of the Val Leventina (1403), and in the purchase of Bellinzona (1419), as well as in the loss of both (1426). It was Nidwald that, with Schwyz and Uri, finally won (1500) and ruled (till 1798) Bellinzona, Riviera, and Val Blegno; while both shared in conquests of Aargau (1415), Thurgau (1460), and Locarno, &c. (1512), and in the temporary occupation of the Val d’Ossola (1410-14 to 1417-22). In the Burgundian war Unter- walden, like the other Forest cantons, long hung back through jealousy of Bern, but came to the rescue in time of need. In 1481 it was at Stanz that the Confederates nearly broke up the League for various reasons, and it was only by the intervention then of the holy hermit Nicholas von der Fliie (of Sachseln in Obwald) that peace was restored, and

the great federal agreement known as the compact of Stanz concluded. Like the other Forest cantons, Unterwalden clung to the old faith at the time of the Reformation, being a member of the ‘‘Christliche Vereinigung” (1529) and of the Golden League (1586).

In 1798 Unterwalden resisted the Helvetic republic, but, having formed part of the short-lived Tellgau, became a district of the eanton of the Waldstitten. Obwald submitted at an early date, but Nidwald, refusing to accept the oath of fidelity to the con- stitution mainly on religious grounds, rose in desperate revolt (September 1798), and was only put down by the arrival of 15,000 armed men and by the storming of Stanz. In 1803 its independ- ence as a canton was restored, but in 1815 Nidwald refused to accept the new constitution, and federal troops had to be employed to- put down its resistance, the punishment inflicted being the transfer to Obwald of the jurisdiction over the abbey lands of Engelberg (since 1421 ‘* protected ” by both valleys), which in 1798 had fallen to the lot of Nidwald. Since that time the history of Untcrwalden has been like that of the other Forest cantons. It was amember of the ‘‘ League of Sarnen”’ (1832), to oppose the re- forming wishes of other cantons, and of the ‘‘Sonderbund ” (1843) ; it was defcated in the war of 1847 ; and it voted against the acceptance of the federal constitution both in 1848 and in 1874, It forms at present two half cantons, each sending one representative to the federal ‘‘assembly of states.” In local matters the two valleys are independent. In each the supreme authority is the “landsgemeinde” (meeting on the last Sunday in April), composed of all male citizens of twenty (Obwald) or eighteen (Nid- wald) years of age, while the cantonal council, which drafts measures and sanctions the expenditure of sums below certain fixed small amounts, is composed in Obwald of 80 members (including the executive council) elected by the people for 4 years, and in Nidwald of 48 (besides the executive council) chosen in the same way for 6 years. The exccutive council is in both cases elected by the ‘* lands- emeinde”; in Obwald it consists of 3 officials and 4 ordinary mem- od and in Nidwald of 6 officials and 5 ordinary members, —the

It is very remarkable that in both valleys the old “common

In Engelberg (which still retains some independence) the poor are greatly favoured in the division of the common lands and their proceeds, and uninarried persons (or widowers and widows) receive

See J. Businger, Die Geschichten des Volkes von Unterwalden, 2 vols., 1827-28,

UNYORO, a kingdom of Central Africa, bounded on

Nyanza, and on the S.E. by the kingdom of Uganda. Its area is about 1600 square miles. The country is very fertile, well-watered, and thickly wooded; for the most part itis hilly in character, especially on the borders of | the Albert Lake and in the neighbourhood of Massindiand |

U PP 859

Kiroto, where the mountains have an altitude of from 5000 to 6000 feet.. The population is about 1,500,000. The Wanyoro are of a dark reddish-brown colour, and are fully clothed, but are not so fine in physique, nor so high in intellectual development as their neighbours the Waganda, to whom, however, they appear to be very nearly related. The reigning family in Unyoro belongs to the Wahuma tribe, and is probably the oldest reigning Wahuma family in this part of Africa, The country is governed on the feudal system. Numerous tribes to the east and north of the Nile, and also on the western side of the Albert Nyanza, pay a small tribute to the Wanyoro. The latter possess large herds of cattle, and are very good herdsmen. The land, too, is cultivated to a considerable extent,—bananas, sweet potatoes, and dhurra being grown in large quantities. Coffee and tobacco are cultivated to a small extent. The people are very superstitious, and the numerous medicine men and women reap a rich harvest from their credulity. The Wanyoro huts are dome-shaped, small, and extremely filthy and full of vermin, although the people themselves are cleanly. Polygamy is universal, even the poorest man possessing two or three wives, Not- withstanding this, the people are fairly moral; but Unyoro is remarkable amongst Central African tribes for the exist- ence of a definite class of courtesans. The Wanyoro are moderately skilful workmen, and their iron-work, pottery, and wood-work are both neat and tasteful. The only article they export is salt,

which is obtained in considerable quantities at Kibiro on the shores of Lake Albert.

See Baker's Albert Nyanza, Felkin and Wilson's Uganda and the Egyptian Soudan, and various papers in Petermann's Mitthetl- wngen by Emin Pasha.

UPANISHADS. See Sansxnrit, vol. xxi. p. 280, and BRAHMANISM.

UPAS, a Javanese word meaning poison, and specially applied by the Malays and people of western Java to the poison derived from the gum of the anchar tree (Antiaris toxicaria), one of the Artocarpex, which was commonly used in Celebes to envenom the bamboo darts of the natives. The name of the upas tree has become famous from the mendacious account (professedly by one Foersch, who was a surgeon at Samarang in 1773) published in the London Magazine, December 1783, and popularized by Erasmus Darwin in " Loves of the Plants" (Botanic Garden, pt. ii.). The tree was said to destroy all animal life within a radius of 15 miles or more. The poison was fetched by condemned malefactors, of whom scarcely two out of twenty returned. All this is pure fable, and in good part not even traditional fable, but mere invention.

For a scientific account of the Antiauris, see Horsfield's Plantz Javaniee Lartores (1838-52) and Blume's Rwmphia (Brussels, 1836), and for the legend Yule, Anglo-Indian Glossary, p. 726 sq.

UPPER SIND FRONTIER, a district of British India, forming the northernmost portion of the province of Sind, in the Bombay presidency. It comprises an area of 2139 square miles, and lies between 27° 56' and 28° 27' N. lat. and between 68° and 69° 44' E. long. It is bounded on the N. and W. by the Derajat districts of the Punjab and the territory of Khelat, on the S. by Shikarpur district, and on the E. by the Indus. In the north-east the country is hilly; the remainder consists of a narrow strip of level plain, one half being covered with jungle and subject to inundation, from which it is protected by artificial embankments. The land is watered by canals from the Indus, of which the chief is the Begari (85 miles in length), navigable throughout by large boats, and the Desert Canal, which irrigates the country west of Kashmor,

The district contains several thriving timber plantations.

The wild animals comprise an occasional tiger and hyenas ;

wild hogs and jackals abound ; foxes are occasionally met

with ; and antelopes, hog-deer, and a species of sdémbhar deer are found in the dense jungle tracts adjoining the Indus. The climate is remarkable for its dryness and for its extraordinary variations of temperature. The average annual rainfall at Jacobabad is less than 5 inches. There are numerous roads of all descriptions, and the Frontier Military Railway from Sukkur wa Jacobabad to Sibi crosses the district.

The census of 1881 returned the population as 124,181 (males 70,166, females 54,015), —Hindus numbering 9894, Mohammedans 109,183, and Christians 230. The chief town is Jacobabad, with a population of 7365. In 1885-86 the cultivated area was esti- mated at 361,415 acres, of which 137,149 were cropped, and of these again 8163 were cropped more than once. The principal crops are wheat, joar, bajra, rice, barley, mustard-seed, and a little cotton and gram. Salt, lacquered work, leathern jars, embroidered shoes, woollen carpets, and saddle-bags are the principal manu- factures. The internal trade is principally in grain, the greater part of which is sent to the Punjab, and the transit trade from Central Asia into Sind crosses the district, bringing wool and woollen goods, fruits, carpets, and horses.

UPSALA, a city of Sweden, the seat of its oldest university and residence of the archbishop of Sweden, is situated on the small river Fyris, 42 miles north of Stock- holm. In spite of its position in a vast and fertile plain, Upsala was a rather insignificant little town till the open- ing of railway communication in 1866. The population, which in 1840 was only 5100, had at the end of 1885 increased to more than 20,000 (with students, scholars, and others, 23,000). The industries of the place are still unimportant, but its trade by sea (navigation being open for six or seven months of the year) and by rail is some- what livelier. Upsala owes its fame to its university, which was founded in 1477. In 1624 Gustavus Adolphus endowed it with 300

farms, the revenue of which formed its entire income for more than two hundred years. Parliament now contributes nearly the half of its whole revenue (393,300 crowns, or about £21,800, in 1885). The professors numbered 58 in 1887, with 61 “docents ” and assistant teachers, and there were 1928 students. The last-named are divided into 13 “nations” (based on the old ecclesiastical division of the country), almost every one of which possesses a house of its own, with a hall, reading- rooms, and library. About £7200 is distributed yearly in ‘‘stipendia” or scholarships. The new university house, above the cathedral, on the site of the former archbishop’s castle, is in the Renaissance style, and was built in 1879-87. It has a great hall capable of holding 2000 persons, eleven lecture-rooms, &. The vestibule, lighted from above by three large cupolas, and surrounded by open galleries, is particularly fine. The library building (called Carolina Rediviva, in remembrance of the Carolina which formerly existed near the cathedral) was erected in 1819-41, The library, which has a right to a copy of every book printed in Sweden, at present (1887) contains 250,000 volumes and 11,000 MSS., among which is the famous Codex Argenteus of Ulfilas’s translation of the Gospels. The “ Gustavianum,” built by order of Gustavus Adolphus for a university house, is now wholly occupied by the zoological institution. The botanical garden (which

formerly belonged to the castle) was presented by Gustavus IIT. to the university in 1787,—the former garden (in the northern part of the city), where Rudbeck and Linnaeus worked, and where the residence of the latter is still to be seen, having been found too small and inconvenient, The medical faculty possesses a hospital and anatomical, chemical, and pathologico-physiological institutions ; and about a mile from the town there is a magnificent lunatic asylum. The astronomical and meteorological institu. tions, as well as those of chemistry and physics, have also special buildings, all of recent date. The Royal Society of Sciences, established in 1710 by Eric Benzelius, the younger, occupies a house of its own, and has a valuable library. Of the buildings the cathedral, founded in the latter part of the 13th century and completed in 1435, is the most remarkable. The material is brick, but the proportions are uncommonly noble and harmonious ; the length is 390 feet, and the height inside 88. It has suffered

considerably from repeated fires, but since 1886 an extensive restoration has been going on. The castle, on the summit of a long ridge above the town, was founded in 1548 by Gustavus I., but not finished till a century later, when it was often used as a royal residence. It was destroyed by fire in 1702, and for more than forty years remained a ruin. At present only a small part of it is habitable, and that part is chiefly used by the provincial government, and as a residence of the governor. Apart from the cathedral and a few insignificant houses, there are no remains from the medizeval period, the city formerly having consisted almost entirely of wooden houses.

The name of Upsala originally belonged to a place nearly 2 miles to the north of the present city, which is still called Old Upsala, This Upsala, mentioned as early as the 9th century, was famous throughout Scandinavia for its splendid heathen temple, which, gleaming with gold, made it the centre of Svithiod, then divided into a great number of kingdoms ; three huge grave mounds or barrows still commemorate old times. In the same place the first cathedral of the bishops of Upsala was also erected (about 1100). On the destruction of this building by fire, the inconvenient situation caused the removal in 1273 of the archiepiscopal see to the present city, then called Ostra Aros,! but within a comparatively short time it came to be generally called Upsala. During the Middle Ages the cathedral and the see of the archbishop made Upsala a kind of ecclesiastical capital. There the kings were crowned, after the election had taken place at the Mora stones, 10 miles south-east of Upsala. As early as the 14th century, however, Stockholm became the proper residence of the king. To 1567 Erik XIV. murdered in the castle five of the most eminent men of the kingdom, three of them belonging to the family of Sture. In 1593 was held the great synod which marks the final victory of Protestantism in Sweden ; in the same year the university was restored by Charles IX. In the castle Christina, daughter of Gustavus Adolphus, resigned her crown to Charles X. in 1654. Tn 1702 nearly the whole city, with the castle and the cathedral, was burnt down. Among the teachers of the university who have carried its name beyond the boundaries of their own country, the following (besides Linnaeus) deserve to be mentioned -—Olof Rudbeck the elder, the author of the Atlantica (1630-1702) ; Torbern Bergman (1735-1784), the celebrated chemist ; and Erik Gustaf Geijer (1783-1847), the historian.

1The name first occurs in Snorro Sturluson in connexion with the events of the year 1018 ; it signifies ‘‘ the mouth of the eastern river.”’

END OF VOLUME TWENTY-THIRD.

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL & CO. AND R. & R. CLARK, EDINBURGH.

(6

ae VOL. XXII. PLAL ES. ‘0 Pag, BANKS STRAIT ae she Bi

“pp RINcAROONA ‘S|

1 ,

a Black Rock * is

Dolomieu or Fortesque B,

Hipp olite Rocks

Scale ep sush Miles 4 OX Ae a ESB SF Metistone so

. & A. K. Jobnston.

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION

“NOIWIGS HININ “VOINNVLINS WIG¥dIOTIAING

mosuyo(ye

OL abog

a ee ee i edols idcassissyyOl‘6‘8 Kaun (| ada addsesissyy oyp yo ob pny °z —1 | sessoumy ng yo Aeyyny wimsay “9 sno.epu0gmo-ang WSO [OLEUPD *S mnowfaioqroy ERT Pum OU > onydioumpyy MOOT PUN)- L8 TUN * & | “ m waddy C— | 28ssemel ong yo Aoyoy umsnz 7,

UDMAIUY) FUDUNNS KOT FT) PLAST UrpunoTy *T spourg Seam Ly 0} souszayay

on Be:

G4aSS INN GAL io dew 4194S Teotpoloeny

WoWuIYysSE A. UIOAT G 3SAAQ

speoqrey —~—~ = sumoy, Ayun0g ©

paoyurey

: / = SSS s zy r oor os oF of Oz OL a) | SeTYY BWMeIG Jo afeog ‘Gi Ateeywog eg TPIMueety mol 99 839M apnysu0e 7] Leg se 62 06

‘W ALF Td AHS

uo;(?s . = SESE

Peeen sy P Cy i Peet ed x > — 3 4°43 o A LepyuD

qin Bi = puense sh ae al SN3Hd31$ ornare b i

: a

Wiggs

2

(

‘

Ri ee

Papo, A

4 5 i

Spey Nu OY P| iin,

en

a. oar SF a a MS yy ify I n BA

_—-—.-

xf ov

HEIWS dvaq

int: yyy Tnys® ff

JIATY ULI,

Odvy

, ws Cy wats, ce Ny, = 1 i gah Yin mM , S

oo

ZOL

€oL

TW ALVTd Sasa

TNIXX “TOA

NOILIG3 HININ “WOINNVLIINS VIGVdOIDAING “uA STOP YY eM

204g Ab0g

“SIE JO sTe9g : _SesvUrEye Wy

, AUOLIVUAL NVIGNI onag | pue 1 $0: iv Ss

SVXZL apis.

AS

vf a 1 ase nw/? &

a

83 ; A anvisi 27~ waHOoViVW 7 233)

LT SI 6L WOFSUTYSEM 02 UOTE = 4SOM TT epmyisu0’T 2S be 6% | ees St SSS —— =~ SSS et | = | “doy sab.) BY} SV aTDIG BUDS oe SPeorney © sumoy Apam09g O F : oot oo OF =f or_io I | (doy ae eee} | – “SV SS Ee

\ we ety

%

40 LHYVd NYSLSIM

Wy eg : |

“| NOLSSATIVI 2 26 fia WOSA[eD Z

or)

N om === a ——[—[——S———— Po

2 £

aS ty

= 2) ae

3 = ws : St vs L

pees 4 TE i baa a

‘YSHOISTHOS

“NOIMLIGS HININ “VOINNVLINS WIG¥dOT9AING

‘$‘O°u ‘neqteys Amey Aqumeag «= +z eg abog

in igei ae SPIO 104 asnoy ysey ‘ BuqTEtS) \ » SPPWO vaary 10 apoyo OT sspg ~~ tena OR a OI

prs], Jo emg ~~ UREpreyyD

MMI Pia

ae

€ NO’WIG3 HININ “VOINNVLINS -VIGHdO19AIN9 “MOIS TyOS HY eM

” #LS avg

uae) Jo Way spuscoeT

DssTpayy® | y, (oot) tarEpe 4 ae

FOND P,

4 nats “ psunry} bi wl SE

E

> 4 4 PT TEM ae y Yo 7 “g – (neezelz jae Pag

4

ay jo nese } “Ft

nap L § 2IIgey Ta war . Agat0Si¥oavinaa) 4 | VaarIs iO gTA9~. OO Ee av a eae (aren) apopoye fu Rug) SF 7 5 fax RS RORS Oe Z res

SINOL GNV T’lOdI@L TUXX “TOA

‘A WLP Td . SINO.L GNWYVY TIOdIML FIX. FOA

VOL. XXII.

42

38

34} | | | Scale of English Miles 50 100 00 i 30 bc Railways thus =~ : i

Al

Oo

> >Magn: Re rig, Ie

a

30

TURKISH EMPIRE

IN 1750

10

Page 653 ENCYGLOPADIA BRITANK

PLATE VI.

alli te i), SY ,

Wt

CNL ¢ =r 0%)

NinqQh NU. NINTH EDITION Wk AK Johuston

aYDP SLY] ID SUOIS2AAP 101407219], PUD 99DI¥ wnaeacnennee OLS U2 sang payugQ 24) fo vaLv POT,

“aN! Ota 2.

SEEN “SINVUD IVNIDINO

Terr” HSIN dS

a 7s “ yy jyy iy My

rr

: eet oo)

WA ALF TMI

SHLVILIS CALLIN “MIXX TOA

; NOILIG3 HININ VOINNVLIES VIG¥dOISAING moEqo SY V eM

“suog Saiaumiag saployy fq ‘gogr‘mbrstidoy

(Sug stauguiog sanwnyg fq ‘gest ‘3ybruhdog—‘smyay pousumg SLOUQLIIS ULOUgT) SdVW TVOINOLSIH—SHLVIS a GLINA

_ O88T U2 SartojDLia1 PuD saynys 94) fo snuopunog S3LVLS JAvTS || ~~~ O88T U2 592.0092.1193 pu saynys 94) Jo saLUDpUunog FDP UY} 1D SUOISLALP JOLLOJLLLAT, PUD 290] | P 8247 1D SUOISIAY JOLLOPLLIAT, PUD DIY — O98T Ut 807919 payrugQ ay} Jo vaLM 70707

~ OS8T U2 saMIg payun ay] fo DAL 70701

tse on “Faeavs mo NY

[——~ peer wp sorsonnsicn pum sopogs an fo snunpunng = OD QI == ——— ap $Y} 1D SuOLsLALp POLLONLAL PUD IDIg

‘OS8T U2 89210721192 PUD sa9D48 94) fo sruDpunog O Cc Q if ewe ONBT Us sagnIg pajnupn 247 fo DaLD 1070,

~ DP 814} 7D SuOLsLALp JmLONLIAT, PUD DIG || =” OBST U2 829g papugQ 2y2 Jo Daun DIO

+ o, re tes \%, To A3n Bn fr

_UNITED st}!

VOL. XXTH.

rc

45||_

130

35

Lot asd

° 100

STAJBARBARAY. RS)

Scale of Statute Miles.

Note_The contour lines represent the elevation? of the land above the sea-level approximately

RITU San “4 PER ALE

400

Xe Paz,

300

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, y HE

200

Viz, SOOTY. 1000%b. 2000 fu. 20004». 40004b. B000fe.&. 10000 fe. =—
————e —=—!2 = meme — mel

43 38 :

Copyright, 1888, by Charles Scribner’s Sons.

Page 791

Quese

‘ TDEseaTi. *

¥ Cevobseat Bay cs

Ra Sapte

SeraOMERY |)

fit.

=

Jacob Wells, delt.

H epi. NIMH EDITION.

faa 4 in “5 # tee i «

=<

ad – ‘ A a 28 ‘

- + . .

’ – >

- – . . ~

. LLOHOG “VY saTUVHD fq YD UWodgy SALVLS aa.inn SHL 30

LUVHO FUNLVUusdWNaL

TVONNVY NVAW

“

09

“ “ “ « a “‘9q%q Fh pue gg

Ate Io saaIng deeMjoq ornzeieduie, & Jo vary ez Wier ; { q > “uoTeurldxg a3 ° nO Z v

grat, a « ° * q A .

.-

ALT ALVTd

SHLVLS GAULINO INN TOA

‘NOHLIG] HININ “WOINNYLIYS VIG ¥d OIIAING

509 abog

60L city i ata

ae Saad aes = 5 : ei ie \ a ‘unouy Aypoafiadiur ZI PUD OT ee

sopnpiuo) usenjag uornjrdroetg—“g NT

LLOBOG “VY SUTAVHD fq 2DYQ WoL

SALV1S G3LINN 3HL 40 LOiVHO TIVANIVYE

TIVONNV NVGW

‘uoeyidieig enuue ue ZutAey seoly

“uoneueldxg

/}

“ee i ae ‘ Ite 0 ys hee, i 2 FS ee 7 JT ES Sat : = — eae * 7 ae Se rT by LA Re “he ae | oa OGRE Fite.

Te1o2 82

| lh

= 5

SS saerets eS

ene er fo ears

eee eres Ss e-e~

=

porerer epee a

. eee eS a ed – serene

- es seeere reso seaea see

SoS,

—= PA, St = – . y . = t= wtuatata = = – : ae eteisi sitet PO a Fe Pe z : = = : = . Siianetecs : . wee Se = Fe =

Soe

= Ss

Se eer as Sie BSS SSS

Oe eee eed a

Vol 24 (URA-ZYM)

Britannica 9th

3 :

Z f

;

i

:

Thao on Litem ne

Sesies tremens Sriretesee Seri iets = enonor’

citsos tries

Riceseretres : E 2 Ms pansges ree eae :

4 . : cos at Set pan tet ? ;

acream anh eter

seine a ase = Meena eee cttth spies rceiewiae ieetel Se

rt ay

precstt teres

rice as

feces

aststiihs

S

tr:

National Library of Scotland

TTT

B000640596

Encyclopedia Britannica.—Vol. XXIV.

4

&:

URAL-ALTAIC LANGUAGES. Prof. A. H. Keane. URUGUAY. Josrpry GREEN. USURY. Prof. J. S. Nrcmouson, D.Sc. UTAH. HENRY GANNETT. VACCINATION. Ciras.CrEeiguton, M.D. VALENTINUS. Prof. A. Harnack, D.D. VALUE. Prof. J. S. NicHotson. VAMPIRE. Surgeon-Major G. E. DoBson. VANDALS. THomas Hopexin, D.C.L. VAN DYCK. Henri Hymans. VARIABLE. Prof. B. WinLiamson.

VARIATION AND SELECTION, Prof.

PATRICK GEDDES. VARIATIONS, CALCULUS OF. Prof. B. WILLIAMSON. VARRO. J. S. Rep, Litt. D. VASCULAR SYSTEM. Prof. J. G. M‘Kernpricx, M.D. VATICAN COUNCIL. Rev. Dr. R. F. LITTLEDALE. VEDANTA. Principal A. E. Gouau. VEGA. ALFRED MoreEt-Fario. VEGETABLE KINGDOM. Prof.SypNey H. Vings, D.Sc. VELAZQUEZ. J. F. Wuirs, LL.D. VENICE. CHARLES YRIARTE and Prof. J. H. MIDDLETON. VENTILATION. Prof. J. A. Ewrna. VERMONT. Profs. G. H. Perxins and J. E. Goopricu. VERONESE. W. M. Rossarrt. VERTEBRATA. Prof. E. Ray LAnxKuzs- TER, LL.D. VESICAL DISEASES. Prof. Curenr. VESUVIUS. ArcHipaALp Geixiz, LL.D. VETERINARY SCIENCE. GEORGE Fiemine, C.B., LL.D. VETO. Prof. A. v. ORELLI. VICO. Prof. P. Vituari. VICTORIA. ALEx. SUTHERLAND. VILLANI. Il Conte Uaco Bauzant. VINE. M. T. Masters, M.D. VINE Diskaszes. SHIPLEY. VIOLIN. E. J. Paynes. VIPER. St Grorce Mivart, Ph.D., M.D. VIRGIL. Prof. W. Y. Szrxuar, LL.D.

PRINCIPAL CONTENTS.

VIRGINIA. Major J. Horcuxtss. VITRIFIED FORTS. Rev. R. Munro. VLACHS. A. J. Evans. VOICE. Prof. J. G. M‘Kenprick. VOLGA. P. A. KrovorxIne. VOLTAIRE. Grorce SAINTSBURY. VOLUNTEERS. General. Sir W. M. M‘Munrpo. VOW. W. Ropertson Smitu, LL.D. VULTURE. Prof. ALFRED NEWTON. WAGES. Prof. J. Saretp NicHoLson. WAGNER, W. S. Rocxsrro. WALDENSES. Rev. Prof. M. CREIGHTON. WALLACK. A. F. Hurcutson. WALLENSTEIN. James Sime. WALPOLE. W. P. Courtney. WAR. Col. J. F. Maurics, R.A. Nava Stratecy. Capt. C. C. PENROSE FitzGERA.p, R.N. WARBURTON. R. Garnett, LL.D. WASHINGTON, GEORGE. Prof. ALEX. JOHNSTON. WASPS. Artuur E. SHIPLey. WATCH. Lord GrimTrHorps, LL.D. WATER-SUPPLY. Prof. L. F. Vernon- Harcourt. WATT. Prof. J. A. Ew1na. WAVE. Prof. P. G. Tart. WAVETHEORY. Lord Rayterau, D.C.L. WEAVING. JAmzEs PATon. WEBER. W.S. Rocxstrro. WEBSTER, DANIEL. Prof, JOHNSTON. WEBSTER, JOHN. A. C. SwInBURNE. WEIGHTS AND MEASURES. W. M. FLINDERS PETRIE. WELLINGTON. OC. A. Fyrrs. WESTERN AUSTRALIA. J. Bonwicx. WEST INDIES. Joun Guyn. WEST VIRGINIA. Joun E. Kenna. WHALE. Prof. W. H. Frower, C.B. WHALE FISHERIES. RospEert GRAY. WHEAT. M. T. Masters, M.D. Wuiat Pests. ARTHUR E. SHIPLEY. WHIST. HeEnry Jones. WIELAND. James Srmz. WILKIE. J. M. Gray.

ALEX,

WILL. JAMES WILLIAMS. WILLIAM I.~~IV. G. W. ProTHERO. WILSON, JOHN. GEorGE SAINTSBURE WINDMILL. Prof. W. C. Unwin. WINE. Prof. W. Ditrmar and H. J. NEWMAN. WISCONSIN. President T. C. CHAMBER~~ LIN and Prof. F. J. Turner. WITCHCRAFT. JAMES WILLIAMS. WOLSEY. T. W. CAMERON. WOMEN, LAW RELATING TO. JamEs WILLIAMS. WOOD-CARVING. Prof. MipDLETON. WOOL. JAMES PATON. WORDSWORTH. Prof. W. Minro. WORM. VF. E. Bepparp. WRESTLING AND BOXING, Brick woop. WRIT. James WILLIAMS. WURTEMBERG. Finpiay MurrHeap. WYCHERLEY. THEODORE WATTS. WYCLIFFE. R. LANE Poots, Ph.D. WYOMING. HENRY GANNETT. XAVIER. Rev. Dr LITTLEDALE. XENOPHON. Rev. W. J. BropRiss. YACHTING. E. D. Brickwoop. YELLOW FEVER. . C. CreiguTon, M.D. YEMEN. Prof. D. H.

Mi.urr. YUCATAN. Prof. A. H. KEANgE, ZACHARIAE. JoHN MACDONELL. ZAMBESI. Prof. Henry Drummonp. ZANZIBAR. Prof. A. H. KEAnz, ZEBRA. Prof. W. H. Frowsr. ZECHARIAH. Prof. J. WELLHAUSEN. ZEND-AVESTA. Prof. K. GELDNER. ZENO. Henry Jackson, Litt.D. ZEPHANIAH. W.R. Smitu, LL.D. ZEUS. ANDREW LANG, LL.D. ZINC. Prof. W. DITTMAR. ZODIAC. Miss A. M. CLERKE. ZODIACAL LIGHT. Prof. C. M. Smiru. ZOOLOGY. Prof. E. RAy LANKESTER. ZOROASTER. Prof. K. GELDNER. ZULULAND. Francis C. CoLenso and Prof. A. H. KBANE. ZURICH. Rev. W. A. B. Coouipe@r. ZWINGLI. Prof. T. M. Linpsay, D.D.

E.

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA

NINTH EDITION

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA DICTIONARY

ARTS, SCIENCES, AND GENERAL LITERATURE

NINTH EDITION

VOLUME XXIV

EDINBURGH: ADAM AND CHARLES BLACK

MDCCCLXXXVIII

[All Rights reserved. | Vas 6 CA Te ~~

{rs we YBUtL.

ENCYCLOPAIDIA

BRITANNICA.

URAL-ALTAIC LANGUAGES

RAL-ALTAIC LANGUAGES. The Ural-Altaic, Finno-Tatar, or “Turanian” languages constitute one

of the primary linguistic families (see PHILoLocy, vol. xviii. p. 779) of the eastern hemisphere, occupying a vast domain, which extends with few interruptions from the Balkan Peninsula, Hungary, and Lapland eastwards to the Pacific Ocean, and from the Arctic Ocean southwards to China proper, Tibet, and the Mediterranean. It thus comprises nearly the whole of Asiatic and a considerable section of European Russia, the northern half of the Chinese empire, a large part of north Persia, by far the greater part of Asia Minor, and extensive tracts in European Turkey, Austria, and Scandinavia, with an area of not less than 10,000,000 square miles and a total population of over 40,000,000. Philologists recognize six well – marked branches, which, with their main subdivisions and four outlying doubtful or extinct members of the family, may be tabulated as under :— {2 wrak and Yeniset, White Sea to the Yenisei. { zen between lower Yenisei and Khatanga rivers. Kamasin, upper Yenisei. — Finland, parts of Norway, Lakes Onega and

Lad oga. Lapp, ese and Scandinavian Lapland. Esthonian and Livonian, south side of Gulf of Finland. Mordvinian and Tcheremissian, middle Volga. Permian, Votyak, and Siryenian, between the Vyatka

and Petchora rivers. { Ostiak, middle and upper Obi and its eastern affluents.

SAMOYEDIC.

Beto.

Ill.

Uaric. Vogul, east slopes of the Ural Mountains.

Magyar, central and south-eastern Hungary.

Uigur or Hast Turki, including Uigur proper of Kashgar, Kulja, and Yarkand ; Jagatat of Bokhara, Ferghana, Khiva; Kara- -Kalpak, south-

eastern side of Aral Sea ; Turkoman (Turkmenian), west Turk- estan, nor th Persia, and Asia Minor.

Seljuk or West Turki or Osmanli, Asia Minor and the Balkan Peninsula ; Tchuvash, south-west of Kazan and about Simbirsk.

Kipchak (Kapchak): Coman, extinct, formerly current throughout the Kipchak empire from the Altai Mountains to the Black Sea; Kazan Tatar, middle Volga; Kirghiz, West Siberian steppes, lower Volga, the Pamir, and west slopes of the Altai, Thian – Shan, and Kuen-Lun Mountains ; Nogai with Kumuk, Bessarabia, Crimea, Volga delta, Daghestan, Terek valley.

Yakut, middle and lower Lena and northern slopes of the Sayan Mountains.

Tei {

Siberian Tatar: Teleut, Koibal, Soyot, Kotta, Bash-

a kir, Mescheryak, and “other corrupt Turki dialects caging spoken by Tatarized Finn populations from the

Altai to the Urals. Sharra or East Mongolian, Mongolia; Kalmuck, Vv. Dzungaria and lower Volga, thence to lower Don ; Moncotic. Buriat or Siberian Mongolian, east and west of Lake Baikal.-

VI Tungus proper, from the middle Yenisei to the TuNGust0 Pacific ; Lamut, westeru coast of the sea of Okhotsk ; : Manchu, Manchuria. VII. JAPANESE, Japan and Riu-Kiu (Lew-Chew) Islands ; doubtful. VIII. CornAN, Corea; doubtful.

IX. and X. Accap and Erruscan; both doubtful and extinct. In its morphology Ural-Altaic belongs to the agglutinat- ing order of speech, differing from other languages of this order chiefly in the exclusive use of suffixes attached to the unmodified root, and partly blended with it by the principle of progressive vowel harmony, in virtue of which the vowels of all the suffixes are assimilated to that of the root. Thus the typical formula is R+R+R+R, &e.,, where R is the root, always placed first, and R, R, R… the successive postfixed relational elements, whose vowels conform by certain

subtle laws of euphony to that of the root, which never changes. These suffixes differ also from the case and verbal endings of true inflecting languages (Aryan, Semitic) in their slighter fusion with the root, with which they are rather mechanically united (agglutin- ated) than chemically fused into a term in which root and relational element are no longer separable. Hence it is that the roots, which in Aryan are generally obscured, blurred, often even changed past the possibility of identi- fication, in Ural-Altaic are always in evidence, unaffected by the addition of any number of formative particles, and controlling the whole formation of the word. For ee the infinitive element mak of the Osmanli yazmak= write becomes mek in sev-mek=to love (vowel ae, and shifts its place in sev-cl-mek=to be loved (imperfect fusion with the root), while the root itself remains un- changed as to form and position in sev-csh-il-mek=to be impelled to love, or in any other possible combination with suffixed elements," The facility with which particles are in this way tacked on produces an exuberance, especially of verbal forms, which in Osmanli, Finnish, Magyar, Tungus, and Mordvinian may be said to run riot. This

is particularly the case when the numerous modal forms become further complicated by incorporating the direct pronominal object, as in the Magyar varjak=they await him, and the Mordvinian palasa=I embrace him. Thus arise endless verbal combinations, reckoned in Turki at nearly 30,000, and past counting in the Ugrian group.

Another marked peculiarity of the Ural-Altaic, at least as compared with the inflecting orders of speech, is weak subjectivity, the subject or agent being slightly, the object of the action strongly accentuated, so that "it was done by him" becomes "it was done with him, through him, or in his place" (apud eum). From this feature, which seems to be characteristic of all the branches, there follow some important consequences, such as a great pre-ponderance of locative forms in the declension,—the nomi- native, and often even the possessive, being expressed by no special suffix. Hence also the object normally precedes the subject, while the idea of possession (to have) is almost everywhere replaced by that of being (to be), so that, even

in the highly developed Osmanli, “I have no money” becomes ‘“‘money-to-me not-is” (Akchehim yok- dir). In fact the verb is not clearly differentiated from the noun, so that the conjugation is mainly participial, being effected by agglutinating pronominal, modal, tem- poral, negative, passive, causative, reciprocal, reflexive, and other suffixes to nominal roots or gerunds: I write = writing-to-me-is. Owing to this confusion of noun and verb, the same suffixes are readily attached indifferently to both, as in the Osmanli jén =soul, jén-ler = souls, and ydzdr = he will write, ydedr-ler = they will write. So also, by assimilation, the Yakut hotérdér katollér =the birds fly (from root £é¢= flying), where Aétél stands for kotor, and dor for lér, the Osmanli ler, or suffix of plurality.

But, notwithstanding this wealth of nominal or verbal forms, there is a great dearth of general relational elements, such as the relative pronoun, grammatical gender, degrees of comparison, conjunctions, and even postpositions. Byrne’s remark, made in reference to Tungus, that “there is a great scarcity of elements of relation, very few con- junctions, and no true postpositions, except those which are given in the declension of the noun,”! is mainly true of the whole family, in which nouns constantly do duty for formative suffixes. Thus nearly all the Ostiak post- positions are nouns which take the possessive suffix and govern other nouns in the genitive, precisely as in the Hindi: Gdmi-hitérdf (men) gaya =man-of-direction (in) I went=I went towards the man, where the so-called postposition ¢dérdf, being a feminine noun = direction, requires the preceding possessive particle to be also feminine (7 for ke),

As there are thus only two classes of words,—the roots, which always remain roots, and the suffixes, which always remain suffixes,—it follows that there can be no true com- position or word-building, but only derivation. Even the numerous Magyar nominal and adjectival compounds are not true compounds, but merely two words in juxta- position, unconnected by vowel harmony and liable to be separated in construction by intervening particles. Thus in aran-sinit = gold-colour = golden, the first part aran receives the particle of comparison, the second remaining unchanged, as if we were to say “gold-er-colour” for “more golden”; and ata/i=relative becomes ata-mfi-a =my relative, with intrusion of the pronominal m =my.

But, while these salient features are common, or nearly common, to all, it is not to be supposed that the various groups otherwise present any very close uniformity of structure or vocabulary. Excluding the doubtful members, the relationship between the several branches is far less intimate than between the various divisions of the Semitic

‘ Gen, Prin. of Struct. of Lang., i. p. 891, London, 1885.

and even of the Aryan family, so that, great as is, for instance, the gap between English and Sanskrit, that be- tween Lapp and Manchu is still greater.

After the labours of Castrén, Csink, Gabelentz, Schmidt, Boht- lingk, Zenker, Almqvist, Radloff, Munkaesi-Berat, and especialh Winkler, their genetic affinity can no longer be seriously doubted. But the order of their genetic descent from a presumed common organic Ural-Altaic language is a question presenting even greater difficulties than the analogous Aryan pe The reason is, not only because these groups are spread over a far wider range, but because the dispersion from a common centre took place at a time when the organic speech was still in a very low state of development. Hence the various groups, starting with little more than a common first germ, sufficient, however, to give a uniform direction to their subsequent evolution, have largely diverged from each other during their independent development since the remotest prehistoric times, Hehce also, while the Aryan as now known to us Tepresents a, descending line of evolution from the synthetic to the analytic state, the Ural-Altaic represents on the contrary an upward growth, ranging from the crudest syntactical arrangements in Manchu to a highly agglutinating but not true inflecting state in Finnish.? No doubt ateaeht also, like its congeners, had formerly possessive affixes and personal elements, lost er) through Chinese influ- ences ; but it can never have possessed the surprisingly rich and even superabundant relational forms so characteristic of Magyar, Finn, Osmanli, and other western branches. As regards the mutual relations of all the groups, little more can now be said than that they fall naturally into two main divisions—Mongolo-Turkic and Finno-Ugro-Samoyedo-Tungusic—according to the several methods of employing the auxiliary elements. Certainly Turkic lies much closer to Mongolic than it does to Samoyedic and Tungusic, while

Finno-Ugric seems to occupy an intermediate position between Turkic and Samoyedic, agreeing chiefly in its roots with the former, in its suffixes with the latter. Finno-Ugric must have separated much earlier, Mongolic much later, from the common connexion, and the latter, which has still more than half its roots and numer- ous forms in common with Turkic, appears on the whole to be the most typical member of the family. Hence many Turkic forms and words can be explained only by reference to Mongolic, which has at the same time numerous relations to Finno-Ugric and Samoyedic that have been lost in Turkic and Tungusic. It may therefore be concluded that the Finno-Ugric migrations to the north and west and the Tungusic to the east had been completed while the Turkic and Mongolic tribes were still dwelling side by side on the Altai steppes, the probable cradle of the Ural-Altaic peoples.

How profoundly the several groups differ one from the other even in their structure is evident from the fact that such assumed universal features as unchangeable roots and vowel harmony are subject to numerous exceptions, often spread over wide areas. Not only is assimilation of final consonants very common, as in the Osmanli bulun-mak for the Uigur bulul-mak, but the root vowel itself is frequently subject to wmlaut through the influence of suffixed vowels, as in the Aryan family. Thus in the Surgut dialect of Ostiak the long vowels of nominal stems become modified before the possessive suffix, @ and 2 to% and 6 to % (Castrén). It is still more remarkable to find that the eastern (Yenisei) Ostiak has even developed verbal forms analogous to the Teutonic strong conjugation, the presents tabag’, abbatag’an, and datpag’ becoming in the past tobaq’, abbatog‘an, and datpiyag’ respectively ; so also taig, torg, and targ, present, past, and imperative, are highly sug- gestive of Teutonic inflexion, but more probably are due to Tibetan influences, In the same dialects many nouns form their plurals either by modifying the root vowel, in combination with a suffixed element, or by modification alone, the suffix having disappeared, as in the English foot—feet, goose—geese. So also vowel harmony, highly developed in Finnish, Magyar, and Osmanli, and of which two distinct forms occur in Yakutic, scarcely exists at all in Tchere- missian, Votyak, and the Revel dialect of Esthonian, while in Mord- vinian and Siryenian, not the whole word, but the final vowels alone are harmonized. The unassimilated Uiguric dilur-tm answers to the Osmanli kilwr-um, while in

Manchu the concordance is neglected, especially when two consonants intervene between the root and the suffixed yowels. But too much weight should not be attached to the phenomenon of vowel harmony, which is of com- paratively recent origin, as shown in the oldest Magyar texts of the 12th century, which abound in such discordances as haldl-nek,

2 “ Meine Ansichten werden sich im Fortgange ergeben, so namentlich dass ich nicht entfernt die finnischen Sprachen fiir flexivische halten kann” (H. Winkler, Uralaliaische Volker, i. p. 54). Yet even true inflexion can scarcely be denied at least to some of the so-called Yenisei Ostiak dialects, such as Kotta and others still surviving about the middle Yenisei and on its affluents, the Agul and Kan (Castrén, Yen., Osijak., und Kott. Sprachlehre, 1858, Preface, pp. v-viii). These, how- ever, may be regarded as aberrant members of the family, and on the whole it is true that the Ural-Altaic system nowhere quite reaches the stage of true inflexion.

tiseta-seg, for the modern haldl-nak, tiszta-sag. It clearly did not exist in the organic Ural-Altaic speech, but was independently developed by the different branches on different lines after the dispersion, its origin being due to the natural tendency to merge root and suffix in one harmonious whole. The principle being thus of a purely psychological character, and necessarily an after- growth, it is not surprising to find no traces of it in the oldest and even in the later Accad texts, as seen by comparing the old tdi bar-mun-sib with the more recent t97 mun-sib-bar.

This progressive vocalic harmony has been compared to a sort of progressive wmlaut, in which the suffixed vowels are brought by assimilation into harmony with those of the root. All vowels are broadly divided into two categories, the guttural or hard and the palatal or weak, the principle requiring that, if the root vowel be hard, the suffixed must also be hard, and vice versa. But in some of the groups there is an intermediate class of ‘‘ neutral” vowels, which do not require to be harmonized, being indifferent to either category. In accordance with these general principles the vowels

in some of the leading members of the Altaic family are thus classified by L. Adam—1

Gutturals. | Palatals. | Neutrals.

HEME NDT NIWA etre araya seve cartes eleiees, dsrvielesters ti, 6, 4 e, i BEI GVCUMi ts aie eteveisials) oteiays lo-cisisyeres siaveis s1a.6ve Lien Oeme = e, i OTCVATIAN cscvcs scenes cece ss sea vs a,i Bo MilATEG, oA `honooos adecdsooboOGnoGd 6, a a, i, e os Ciguazimlll, cagpamdodos SoounmOnoGbAce oC U, 0, a,` ibi., @), Gy ol 5G VEO WGOIIAIY ierasteiereroc eenwnersere alesse U, 0, a ti, 6,4 i LW: pogtop res Onn a ano nOrOnoonpodh WG Oy usr O seal e, i PMIABCMU icici selec s eile eve ea siece creas bars 6, 0, & e 1B4,

A close analogy to this law is presented by the Irish rule of ‘broad to broad” and ‘‘slender to slender,” according to which under certain conditions a broad (a, 0, w) must be followed in the next syllable by a broad, and a slender (e, 7) bya slender. Obvious parallelisms are also such forms in Latin as annus, perennis, ars, iners, lego, diligo, where, however, the root vowel is modified by the affix, not the affix by the root. But such instances suffice to show that the harmonic principle is not peculiar to the Ural-Altaic, but only more systematically developed in that than in most other linguistic families.

This is not the place to discuss the vexed question of the relation of the Babylonian Accad and Sumirian, or of the Etruscan, with the Ural-Altaic linguistic stock. It must therefore suffice to state in a general way that, according to the latest views, both of those long extinct languages were really branches either of the Finno- Ugric or of the Turko-Mongolic division of that family. In reply to the objection that Sumirian was a prefix language, it is pointed out that Neo-Sumirian, extinct some 1600 years before the Christian era, had already become postfixing, so that the nin-gar of the oldest answers to the garra-bi of the later texts, from root gar=to make. Nevertheless the point is far from settled, as may be judged from the fact that such specialists as Dr Zimmern and Dr Hommel are still at issue on the fundamental question of the Ural-Altaic affinities of Accad and Sumirian. he position of Etruscan is much the same, the main outcome of recent controversy being that this primitive Italian language can scarcely

have been a member of the Aryan, whatever its relationship to the Finno-Ta- taric family.

Regarding the Japanese and Corean languages, it may be re- marked that Winkler agrees with Boller in unhesitatingly includ- ing the former, while doubtfully excluding the latter from this connexion. On the other hand, W. G. Aston (Journ. Roy. Asiat. Soc., August 1879) considers that both are as nearly related to one another as English and Sanskrit. The probability therefore is that Japanese and Corean are aberrant branches of the Ural-Altaic family, and that they separated at long intervals from the parent stock and at such remotc periods that their affinities can no longer be clearly traced.

Bibliography.—Besides the references given above, the chief general treatises on Ural-Altaic philology are—Kellgren, Die Grundztige der finnischen Sprachen mit Riicksicht auf die Ural-Altaischen Sprachstimme, Berlin, 1847; Castrén, Ueber die Ursitze des finnischen Volkes, Helsingfors, 1849 ; Id., Syrjaen. Gram., Samojed. Gram., and numerous other comparative grammars, dictionaries, and general treatises, chiefly on the Finno-Ugric and Samoyedic groups; W. Thomsen, Ueber den Hinfluss der germanischen Sprachen auf die Finnisch-Luppischen (Germ. trans. by Sievers, Halle, 1870—a classical work); Abel Rémusat, Recherches sur les Langues Tartares, Paris, 1820; L. Adam, Gram. de la Langue Mandchoue, Paris, 1872, and Gram. de la L. Tongouse, Paris, 1874; Bohtlingk, Die Sprache der Jakuten, St Petersburg, 1851; Radloff, Volksliteratur der ttirkischen Stdmme Sud-Sibiriens, St Petersburg, 1872, and ‘‘Remarks on the Codex Comanicus,” Bull. St Petersb. Acad. Sc., xxxi., No.1; Zenker, Gram. der tiirkischen-tatarischen Sprachen ; Schmidt, Mongol. Gram.; Gabelentz, Gram. Mandchoue, Altenburg, 1833; Csink, Hung. Gram., London, 1853; and Vambéry, Das Tirkenvolk, Leipsic, 1885, and Uigurische Sprach-Monumente u. das Kudatki Bilik, Inns- bruck, 1870. For further particulars relating to the affinities and characteristics of the various branches, and of their associated members, see the articles FINLAND (vol. ix. p. 219), Huncary (vol. xii. p. 374), Russa (vol. xxi. p. 79), Turks (vol. xxiii. p. 661), Moncoxs (vol. xvi. p. 750), and SIBERIA (vol. xxii. Pp. 8). (A. H. K.)

a en a Oe ee

- De C Harmonie des Voyelles dans les Langues Ouralo-Altaiques, Paris, 1874,

URAL MOUNTAINS. The girdle of mountains which extends from the Arctic Ocean southwards nearly to the Caspian Sea, and is now regarded as separating Europe from Asia, was anciently the subject of various myths. Even the Slavonians, who in the 11th century frequently visited the region of the Urals for trade with the Ugrians (which people at that time lived there), described them as mountains reaching to the sky, intersected by terrible pre- cipices, and as being inhabited by a population of cave-dwellers. Although crossed by a continuous stream of Russian colonizers from the 16th century onwards, the Ural Mountains still retained something of their mythical character in Western literature, and in the 18th century they received from geographers the high-sounding designa- tion of montes dicti angulus terre. The Russians describe them either as Kameii (stone) merely or by the appropriate name of Poyas (girdle), while the name of Urals (Uraty) —derived either from the Ostiak wrr (chain of mountains) or from the Turkish aral-tau or uwral-tau—has with them become a generic name for extensive mountain chains. (See plate IT. vol. xxi. and plate I. vol. xxii.).

Notwithstanding numerous scientific expeditions by which the exploration of various parts of the range began to be undertaken from the earlier portion of the 19th century, and notwithstanding partial accurate surveys and levellings and numerous geological researches made within the last thirty years, the real structure of the Urals, both oro- graphical and geological, remains still imperfectly known. Even on maps otherwise good they are still very often represented as an unbroken chain, at least 1200 miles in length, running north and south from the Arctic Ocean to the sources of the river Ural. But every fresh addition to our knowledge has made it increasingly apparent that their real structure is much more complicated; and in view of recent explorations it becomes plain that the Urals con- sist of a series of several separate upheavals, some having a north-western direction and some a north-eastern, which reach their maximum heights along a zone which lies nearly north and south. They have thus some resemblance to the

mountain-chains of Central Asia and Siberia, —which also have north-eastern and north-western directions, but are grouped in zones which, roughly speaking, lie west and east,—although in both cases chains running either along meridians or along parallels are, wherever they exist at all, only rare exceptions.

The composite nature of the Urals is best seen at the northern and southern extremities of the system, where the upheavals assume the character of distinct chains of mountains. The Pai-hoi Mountains are a ridge which, beginning at the head of Kara Bay, runs north-west, and is continued in the Island of Vaigatch and the southern island of Nova Zembla; and the Northern Urals, which join the Pai-hoi chain at the head of Kara Bay, run north- east and south-west as far south as 64° N. lat. In their middle portion the architecture of the Urals is complicated by the plateaus of middle Russia. The southern parts do not consist, as Humboldt supposed, of ramifications from main meridional chain, but of a series of parallel ranges running distinctly from north-east to south-west, as is plainly seen in the excellent maps recently published by the Russian Geological Committee.2 The structure of the separate parts of the Ural complexus is explained in some detail below.

I. The Pai-hoi or coast ridge (Samoyedic “ stony ridge”) is quite independent of the Urals proper, from which it is separated by a marshy tundra, some 80 miles wide. It hasa distinct north-north-

westerly and north-westerly trend along the shores of the Kara Sea ; and, although it is cut by the Ugrian Strait, there is no doubt

2 Carte Géologique Générale de la Russie d’ Europe, sheet 139; and “Description Orographique,” by A. Karpinsky and Th. Tchernycheff, in Mémoires du Comité Géologique, vol. iii. No. 2, 1886.

that it is continued in Vaigatch Island and Nova ZEMBLA (¢.2.). Its dome-shaped summits, which attain a height of about 1000 feet above the tundra (Vozaipai, 1312 feet), are completely bare of trees, and its stony crags are separated by broad marshy tundras. It is uninhabited. eeer.

II, The Obdorsk or Northern Urals, which begin within a few miles of the head of Kara Bay (Konstantinoff Kameii, in 68 380 N. lat., 1490 feet), and extend in a south-western direction as far as the 64th parallel, form a distinct ridge of mountains, stony and craggy, sloping steeply towards the south-east and gently to- wards the marshes of Russia, Its highest elevations are on the 66th and 67th parallels (8600 to 4870 feet). Sometimes the main chain has on the west two or three secondary ones, formed by the upheaval of sedimentary rocks, and it is towards the southern ex- tremity of one of those that the highest peaks of the Urals occur (Sablya, 5407 feet, in 64° 47’ N. lat., and Teplos-iz, 5540 feet, in 68° 55’). Dense coniferous forests, consisting chiefly of fir, pine, and larch, cover the slopes of the mountains and the narrow valleys ; but, as the less hospitable latitudes are spproached, every species except the larch gradually disappears and the upper limit of vegeta- tion (2400 feet in the south) rapidly descends till it reaches the very base of the mountains towards the Arctic Circle, and forest vegetation disappears altogether about 65° lat. (67° in the plains of Russia and Siberia), These inhospitable hill-tracts, rising from the wide tundras which stretch for hundreds of miles to the west and east of the Urals, are quite uninhabited, save for a few hunters, who visit them in the summer in pursuit of the reindeer which here seek refuge from the mosquitoes of the lowlands.

ILI. Although usually reckoned to the Northern Urals, the section between the 64th and 61st parallels has again a wholly distinct character. It is represented on the maps asa girdle of chains, 20 to 35 miles in width, running north and south, and separated by long valleys. From the broad plateaus, or parmas, which stretch to- wards the north-west, it might be conjectured, however, that the structure is more complicated ; and the recent researches by MM, Fedoroff and Ivanoff have, in fact, shown that what is described as the main chain (or, more correctly, the main water-parting) of the Urals is a succession of plateaus stretching in a north-westerly direction,’ with broad, flat, marshy valleys, and rising here and there into isolated dome-shaped flat summits, mostly under 3000 feet (Yang-tuny, 62° 43’ N. lat., 4166 feet). The whole region, except the mountain summits, is densely clothed with coniferous forests, birch appearing only occasionally in the south, and even the Scotch pine only in a few valleys. This part of the range is also uninhabited.

IV. The Middle Urals, between 61° and 55°30’ N. lat., and about 80 miles in breadth, are the best known, as they contain the richest iron, copper, and gold mines (Bogostovsk, Gorobia- godatsk, and Ekaterinburg Urals), The Deneshkin Kamei in the north (4288 feet) and the Tara-tash in the south (2800 feet) may be considered as marking the limits of this section. Here the oro- graphical structure is still more complicated, and the necessity of distinguishing the separate upheavals becomes still more apparent, In the north (61st to 60th parallel) there is a succession of chains with a distinct north-eastern trend ; and it still remains an open question whether, for two degrees farther south, the whole of the

ogostovsk Urals (5185 feet in the Konjakoff Kamei, and from 3000 to 4000 feet in several other summits) do not consist of chains having the same direction. Farther south a broad swelling, which crosses northern Russia from the Kanin peninsula in the north to the sources of the river Petchora in the south-east, joins the Urals, and is continued into Asia by the plateau of the Tura and Isset rivers. To the south of the Katchkanar (2891 feet), ¢.e., from the 58th to the 56th parallel, therefore, the Urals assume the ap- pearance of broad swellings from 1000 to 2000 feet in height, deeply ravined and with gentle slopes. These low and tieinel bree plateaus, the higher parts of which can be reached from Russia on a very gentle gradient, have been utilized for centuries as the chief highway to Siberia. They have none of the aspects of an alpine tract ; and the traveller to Siberia cannot but experience a feeling of disappointment as his horses, still Tunning at full speed, reach the marble column, inscribed “ Europe” on one side and “ Asia” on the other, which marks the water-parting (1180 feet) between the Russian and Siberian rivers. The eastern slope is steeper, but even there Ekaterinburg is only 350 feet below the water-parting. The valleys have a decidedly south-eastern direction, and such is also the course of the railway from Perm to Tyumefi, as soon as it reaches the Siberian slope. The plateau- like swellings of this division terminate farther south in a depression, about 70 miles broad, stretching from north-west to south-east, where the water- parting has a height of only a few hundred feet. The Middle Urals are still densely forested, notwithstanding the immense quantities of timber and fuel which are constantly being taken from them. The vegetation is much more varied than in the north (birch, oak, lime, and maple), a rich undergrowth of

bushes growing to- gether with the conifers, and the banks of the rivers being adorned

1 See map in the Izvestia of the Russ. Geogr, Soe., vol. xxii., 1886.

with the wild cherry (Prunus padus), poplar, willow, and alder. The valleys and lower slopes are covered with a thick sheet of rich humus and have become the site of large and wealthy villages. The mines also have given rise to a considerable population. The southern parts of the Middle Urals may be estimated to have a total agricultural and mining population of nearly 1,500,000.

V. The Southern Urals (from 55° 30’ to 51° N. lat.) are now well known both orographically and geologically ;? and it appears that, instead of consisting of three chains of mountains radiating from Mount Yurma, as was formerly supposed, they consist of a series of three parallel chains running north-east and south-west, and therefore constitute a quite independent part of the Ural com- plexus, The Ural-tau proper is a low sinuous chain extending due south-west and hardly exceeding 2200 to 2800 feet in height. Tt slopes gently towards the north-west and abruptly towards the south-east, where several short and low chains (Ilmefi, Irenty, &.) rise in the basins of the Mias and the Ui. In the west a chain separated from the Ural-tau by a longitudinal valley accompanics it throughout its entire length, This, although pierced by the rivers which rise in the longitudinal valley just mentioned (Ai, upper Byetaya), nevertheless rises to a much greater height than the Ural-tau. Its wild stony ridge has an altitude of 3375 feet in the Yurma, and 3950 feet in the Taganai; while the Urenga and Tremel Mountains exceed 3500 feet, and the peaks bearing these names reach 4018 and 5040 feet respectively. Farther west, another series of chains, parallel to the above, is described under various names (Zurat-kul, Zigatga, Nary); they reach nearly the same altitudes (Zigatga and Yaman-tau, 4880 and 5400 feet respect- ively). A number of other chains, also parallel and ranging from 2000 to 3000 feet, accompany them in the west. The whole system has thus the character of a swelling nearly 65 miles wide, inter- sected by a series of parallel chains, the results of as many foldings of the sedimentary rocks, which have undergone extensive denuda- tion. Some of the chains are exceedingly craggy, and most of them are covered with

masses of angular débris, sometimes concealed under thick sheets of marshy mosses. The gorges by which the rivers pierce the Devonian limestones on their way towards the lower terraces are most picturesque in the west, where the Urals assume an alpine character. The forests are no longer continuous ; the gentle slopes of the hilly tracts are dotted with woods, mostly of deciduous trees, while the hollows contain rich pasture grounds. The thick layers of sedimentary rock which are lifted en masse on the western slope cover a wide area farther to the west in the shape of a plateau Sig already assumes the features of a steppe (sce Ura). The whole region, formerly the abode of Bashkirs, is rapidly being colonized by Russians.

Farther south, between the 58d and_ 51st parallels, the Ural-tau, still composed of crystalline rocks (diorite, serpentine, granite), continues in the same direction, but is covered as we advance by horizontal Cretaceous deposits and, cxcept when deeply trenched by rivers, assumes the appearance of a plateau which hardly reaches 1500 feet. It is continued farther south-west (towards the Volga) under the name of Obschiy Syrt. A narrow longitudinal valley watered by the Sakmara (right-hand tributary of the Ural) separates the Ural-tau and the Guberlinsk Mountains (as the preceding tract is called) from the Irendyk chain, about 20 miles in width, which reaches 2300 feet in its higher parts. It is cut by the Ural river at Orsk and extends farther south-west towards the sources of the Tlek ; while in the east a wide granitic plateau, with only a few remainders of its former Devonian and Carboniferous covering, some 130 miles broad and nearly 1000 feet high, lies about the sources of the Siberian rivers, and is known by such local names as Kara- Edyr-tau, Djabik-Karagai, and the like.

VI. Asarule the Urals are not shown on maps to the south of the great bend of the Ural river, where quite independent ranges of hills, or flat swellings, are represented (Jaman-tau, Mugojar Hills). It appears, however, from recent exploration? that the Mugojar Hills may safely be regarded as a farther continuation of the upheavals which constitute the Urals. The Cretaceous plateau north of the Ural river is continued to the south of it; it again assumes a mountainous character in the Jaman-tau (50° N. lat.) and joins the Mugojar Hills, which consist of diorites and crystalline slates and reach their maximum in the Airuk Mountain (about 1000 feet). A range of

heights connects the Mugojar Hills with the Ust-Urt plateau (see TRANSCASPIAN REGION). It is hardly necessary to say that these plateaus and flat hills to the south of the river Ural have all the characters of the Ciscaspian and Transcaspian steppes.

Geology.—W hatever the variety of the orographically independent systems of mountains and plateaus embodied under the general name of Urals, a certain “ geotectonic” similarity may be observed in all of them. Denudation has been active on so grand a scale that entire strata of sedimentary deposits have been removed from their original positions and scattered in the form of débris to distances of more than 100 miles on both sides of the Urals, so as

2 Carte Géologique, sheet 139, ut sup. 3 P. Nazaroff, in Bull. de la Soc, des Naturalistes de Moscou, 1886, No. 4.

considerably to reduce their former height. But, if this agency be taken into account, the Urals seem to come under the category of what the Germans call asymmetric Faltengebirge, and thus exhibit a great resemblance to the western Alps. A broad strip of granites, syenites, diorites, and porphyries, with their subordinate gneisses and crystalline slates, belonging to the Laurentian and Huronian systems, constitutes the main axis of upheaval, and this axis is invariably situated in the eastern part of the mountain region. The asymmetry thus resulting is the more pronounced as the Azoic rocks are mostly covered directly by Tertiary and Quaternary deposits on their Siberian slope ; while towards the west they are covered with vast layers of Silurian, Devonian, Carboniferous, Permian, and Triassic rocks, which are manifoldly folded so as to constitute a series of chains parallel to the main axis and mostly lifted to much greater heights than the older Azoic rocks.

The crystalline rocks which must have constituted the primary ridges mostly appear in the shape of plateaus, water- and glacier- worn, with undulating surfaces; and the hills which rise above the plateaus are mostly dome-shaped and are seldom marked by the craggy characters which are met with in the limestone and sandstone mountains of the subsequent

formations. Masses of angular débris and great blocks cover both the plateaus and the mountains ; and only a very few traces of the sediments which may have partially covered the Azoic crystalline rocks are sporadically met with. But, as a rule, they have remained a continent since the Huronian epoch. As for the Primary and Secondary deposits of the western slope, they are represented by Silurian, Dercuian Carboniferous, Permio-Carboniferous, Permian, and Triassic deposits, attaining great thicknesses and following one another in succession so as to appear on the surface as strips lying parallel to the Urals. The strip occupied by the Silurian quartzites, limestones, and slates is narrow, even in its northern portion. Farther south it disappears, and the deposits which formerly were assigned to the Sifarian period are now considered to be mostly Devonian. These latter, mostly littoral in character and much resembling those of the Eifel and Belgium, occupy wide areas to the west of the main axis of the Urals. Their lower parts are much metamorphosed. The Car- boniferous deposits,—coal-bearing in the Middle and Southern Urals, —although appearing at the surface only as a narrow strip in the west Urals, occupy an extensive area, but are concealed by the largely developed Permian deposits, and that series of sediments which must be considered as intermediate between the Carboniferous and the Permian. These latter, described as ‘‘ Permo-Carbon ” by Russian and German geologists, are largely developed in the west Urals. Their fossils belong to a fauna intermediate between the Carboniferous and the Permian, which was formerly known as that of Artinsk ; but since two more series of the same intermediate character have been described the whole has been brought under the general name of Permio-Carboniferous deposits. The Permian de- posits cover a wide zone all along the western slope of the Urals from north to south, and are most important on account of their copper ores, salt-beds, and salt-springs. They are also covered with variegated marls which are almost quite destitute of fossil organ- isms, so that their age is not yet quite settled. Some Russian geologists continue to consider them as Permian, while the ma- jority of recent explorers assign them to the Triassic age.

The glaciation of the Urals is still a debated question. Even those geologists who now acknowledge that the Scandinavian ice- sheet covered middle Russia hesitate to admit the existence of an ice-cap covering the Middle and Southern Urals,—the want of polished and striated rocks being the chief

argument for the nega- tive. But, if the disintegrated state of the rocks which are best fitted to maintain glacial polishing and striation, their thick coverings of débris, and the action of lichens and mosses in obliterating the traces of glaciation be taken into account, as also the prevalence of erratic blocks, and the character of the deposits filling up the valleys, it must be regarded as most probable that the Urals, too, must soon be included within the limits of former glaciation (as has been already done by a few explorers, such as Polyakoff). The Lacustrine (Post-Glacial) deposits are widely spread all over the slopes of the Urals. Immense marshes, which have recently emerged, in the north, and numberless lakes in the south, which are but small in comparison with their size at a recent period, as also Lacustrine deposits in the valleys, all go to show that during the Lacustrine period the Urals were as much dotted with lakes as Finland is at the present time.

Climatic, Geo-Botanical, and Geo- Zoological Importance.—The importance of the Urals as a climatic and geo-botanical boundary can no longer be regarded as very great. Most European species of plants freely cross the Urals into Siberia, and several Siberian species travel across them into northern Russia. But, being a zone of hilly tracts extending from north to south in a meridional direction, the Ural Mountains necessarily exercise a powerful in- fluence in driving a colder northern climate, as well as a northern flora and fauna, farther towards the south along their axis. The harshness of the climate at the meteorological stations of Bogo- stovsk, Ziatoust, and Ekaterinburg is not owing merely to their

elevation a few hundred feet above sea-level. Even if reduced to sea-level, the average temperatures of the Ural meteorological stations are such as to produce a local deflexion of the isotherms towards the south. The same is true with regard to the limits of distribution of vegetable and animal species. It has been already stated that the northern limits of tree-vegetation descend to- wards more southern latitudes on the Northern Urals and in the vicinity of the chain. The same is true with regard to many other species of plants. In like manner several Arctic species of animals come much farther south than they might otherwise have done: the reindeer, for instance, is met with as far south as the 52d parallel. The Southern Urals introduce amidst the Ciscaspian steppes the forest vegetation, flora, and fauna of middle Russia.

In the distribution of the races of mankind the Urals have also played an important part. To the present day the Northern Urals are the abodes of Finnish stems (Samoyedes, Zyrians, Voguls, and Permians) who have been driven from their former homes by Slavonian colonization, while the steppes on the slopes of the Southern Urals have continued to be inhabited by the Turkish stems of the Bashkirs. The Middle Urals were also in the 9th century the abode of the Ugrians, and their land, Biarmia (now Perm), was well known to the Byzantine historians for its mineral wealth,—there being at that time a lively intercourse between the Ugrians and the Greeks. Compelled to abandon their abodes, they moved south on the Ural slopes towards the land of the Khazars, and through the prairies of south-eastern and southern Russia (the AeBedla of Constantine Porphyrogenitus) towards the Danube and to their present seat—Hungary,—leaving but a very few memorials in the Northern and Middle Urals.1_ At present the Urals, especially the Middle and the Southern, are being more and more colonized by Great Russian immigrants, while the Finnish stems are rapidly melting away.

Metallurgy and Mining.—The mineral wealth of the Urals was known to the Greeks in the 9th century, and afterwards to the Novgorodians, who penetrated there in the 11th century for trade with the Ugrians. When the colonies of Novgorod (Vyatka, Perm) fell under the rule of Moscow, the Russian czars soon understood the importance of the Ural mines, and Ivan III. sent out German engineers to explore that region. In 1558 the whole of the present government of Perm was given by the rulers of Moscow to the brothers Strogonoff, who began to establish salt-works and mines for iron and copper. Peter I. gave a new impulse to the mining industry by founding several iron-works, and from 1745, when gold was first discovered, the Russian colonization of the Urals took a new departure. The colonization was, however, of a double character, being partly free—chiefly by Nonconformists in search of religious freedom in the wildernesses of the Urals—and partly compulsory,—the Government sending peasant settlers who became serfs to the iron and copper works, and were bound to supply them with ores and wood for fuel. Until 1861 all work at the mines was done by serfs belonging either to private persons (the Strogonoffs, Demidoffs, and others) or to the crown. At present (1888) only a few works, maintained for supplying the army, belong to the crown.

Gold is found both in veins and in alluvial or diluvial deposits, and is extracted from both ; but the former yield only a moderate quantity annually (2180 to 2780 tb in 1882-84). The gold from the Ural mines constitutes nearly one-fifth of the total amount obtained throughout the Russian empire. Platinum is found either in connexion with gold dust or separately, the platinum mines of the Urals being the only ones worked in Russia. Osmium, iridium, and nickel are found at several places, but their industrial import- ance is small. Silver is also met with at several places, but only 2383 Ib were extracted during the years 1875 to 1884. The copper mines, chiefly in Perm, but partly also in Ufa, are very important, nearly two-thirds of the total amount of the metal mined in Russia being obtained from eight works in the Urals. The average amount of gold, platinum, and copper annually yielded by the Ural mines is given in the following table : —

Gold. |Platinum.| Copper. | Gold. | Platinum.| Copper.

Ib Ib ewts. ib tb 1860-64 | 11,296

Iron is widely diffused and is extracted in the governments of Perm, Ufa, and Orenburg, the chief works being in Perm. Of the 198 blast furnaces in the Russian empire 108 are in the Urals, and they supply nearly two-thirds of all the pig-iron produced in Russia. Oue-half of the iron and one-sixth of the steel obtained both from home and foreign pig-iron in the empire are prepared in the Urals; and, while the St Petersburg and Polish steel works, which prepare steel (chiefly for rails) from imported iron, show great fluctuations in their production, the Ural works have a steady

1 Comp. Moravia and the Madiars, by K. J. Groth; Zabyelin's History of

Russian Life and the polemics on the subject in Izvestia of the Russ. Geogr. Soc., xix., 1883,

increase. The average yearly production of iron in the Urals is best seen from the following :—

Pig-Iron. Tron. Steel.

ewts. ewts. ewts.

1875-80 6,623,000 3,406,000 259,600 1881-83 6,378,000 8,517,000 612,800 1884 6,740,000 3,874,000 763,340

| eee are | aah PER eo

Owing to the immense extent of forest, the coal mining industry is but of recent origin in the Urals. Only six pits were at work in Perm in 1884; and of recent years from 3,000,000 to 4,000,000 ewts. have been annually extracted (about 5 per cent. of the coal raised in the Russian empire). Finally, salt was raised in Perm, Orenburg, and Uralsk to the amount of 9,422,000 cwts. in 1884.

The precious (amethyst, topaz, emerald, tourmaline, &c.) and ornamental (malachite, carsovite, &c.) stones of the Urals are familiar in all European museums, and are féund in most beautiful varieties. The crown works at Ekaterinburg supply admirable works of art, while a numerous population at Ekaterinburg and in the neigh- pouring villages support themselves by searching for precious and ornamental stones and preparing them for export. Of the 830,750 workmen engaged in 1884 in mining and metallurgical industries throughout the Russian empire 183,914 were employed in the Urals, as well as nearly one-half of the motive power (steam- engines and water-wheels) used at the mining and metallurgical works of Russia, Poland, and Finland. The exports from the Urals are made chiefly by means of the rivers, which are navigable in their upper parts only during the spring. There is not as ae any railway connecting the Urals with Russia. The line of Siberian railway which now connects the iron-works of the eastcrn slope with the Kama at Perm has certainly increased the exports; but they are still so small in comparison with the expense of the line that the railway is worked at a loss, the deficiency being made good from the imperial budget, and the whole mining and metal- Turgical industry of the Urals is still maintained by means of high protective duties imposed on foreign metals and mctallic wares.

Several wealthy towns have grown up in the Ural valleys in con- nexion with mining industry and administration, HEKATERINBURG (q.v.) and Nignu-TacuHItsk (q.v.) both had more than 30,000 in- habitants in 1885, while ZLaTousrt (g.v.), Neviansk, Neiviusk, and Kyshtym in Perm, Votkinsk and Izhevsk in Vyatka, had from 21,000 to 12,500 inhabitants. The Revdinsk, Bogostovsk, Turinsk, Shaitanovsk, Gorobtagodat, Artinsk, Nijne-Saldinsk, Usolie, and Sysertsk mining towns in Perm, Katav-Ivanovsk, Kusinsk, and Satkinsk in Ufa, Byetoryetsk, Tirlansk, and Avzyano-Petrovsk have populations from 5000 to 10,000.

_ Bibliography.—1. The following general works may be mentioned as of chief importance :—Hermann, Versuch einer miner. Beschr. des Ural Eragebirges, 1789 ; Humboldt, Fragments, 1831; Hofmann and Helmersen, Geogn. Unters. des Siid- Uralgebirges, 1831 ; Kupffer, Voyage, 1833; L. von Buch, Beitr. zur Bestinvm. der Gebirgsform. in Russland, 1840; Eversmann, Orenburg Region (Russian), 1840 ; Schurowsky, Urals (Russian), 1841; Helmersen, Reise, 18413 Rose, Reise, 1842 ; Murchison, Geol. of Russia, 1845 (with Ozerskiy's Appendix to Russ. transla- tion); Keyserling and Krusenstern, Wiss. Beobachtwngen, 1846; Leonhardt, Geologie des Hur. Russland, 1848; Hofmann, Nordl. Ural, 1853-56; Meglitzky and Antipoff, Bergbaw im Ural, 1861; Ludwig, Ueberblick und Beobacht. in Russ- land, 1862; Moller, Geological Map of the Urals, 1869; Ruprecht, Verbr. der Pflanzen in nordl, Ural; Panaeff, Climatology of the Urals (Russian), 1882 ; Carte Géologique de la Russie d' Hwrope (139), 1886. For further bibliographical information see " Ural," " Perm," "Orenburg," &c., in the Geographical Dic- tionary (Russian) by P. Semenoff. 2. Monographs dealing with separate parts of the Urals occur in great numbers in the Gornyt Journal, the Verhandl. der Russ. Miner. Ges., the publications of the Russ. Geogr. Soc., the Ural, Kazan, and Moscow Societies of Naturalists, and in the Izvestia and Memoirs of the

Russ. Geological Coinmittee. See also the yearly Ind. by M. M those of the Kieff Society of Naturalists. a —o. CR

URALSK, a province of south-eastern Russia, lying to the north of the Caspian Sea, with an area of 141,174 square miles. It is bounded by Astrakhan on the west, Samara and Orenburg on the north, Turgai and the

Sea of Aral on the east, and the Transcaspian Region on the south. It is geographically situated mostly within the boundaries of Asia, 7.¢., to the east of the Ural river, and both its physical features and its inhabitants are, 'to a very large extent, Asiatic. Administratively, it belongs to the " Kirghiz provinces," or governor-generalship of the steppes. Apart from a narrow strip of land in the north where the slopes of the Obschiy Syrt, covered with a fertile black earth and stretches of forest, descend towards the Ural river, and the gentle slopes of the Mugojar Hills in the north-east, Uralsk consists of dry steppes and deserts, which fall with an imperceptible gradient towards the Caspian. Most of the province is below sea-level, the zero-altitude line running from Kamyshin on the Volga to the south of the town of Uralsk. consists for the most part of sandy clay, sands containing

The steppe-land.

shells of molluscs now living in the Caspian, salt clay, and shifting sands. It is also dotted with numerous salt lakes, partly remains of old lagoons of the Caspian. To the south-east Uralsk extends over the northern part of the Ust-Urt plateau. Red sandstones (Permian ?) and chalk are met with only in the north, the remainder of the province being covered with Post-Pliocene Caspian de- posits, which conceal the underlying rocks.

Uralsk is watered by the Ural, which rises in Orenburg at a height of 2100 feet above sea-level, but soon descends to the lowlands, where it flows south, west, and south, entering the Caspian after a course of 800 miles. Its chief tributaries, the Sakmara, the Or, and the Ilek, are in the north ; along its lower course the Great and Little Uzetis and many small streams on the left bank fail to join the main river, being lost in lakes before reaching it. The Emba, which has its course in the north of the Ust-Urt plateau, reaches the Caspian by a series of shallow lagoons, which were navi- gable in the 18th century.

The climate is influenced by the Central Asian steppes.

The character of the vegetation can be easily inferred from the above. The prairies and forest tracts of the north soon disappear, their place being taken by the vegetation of the south Russian steppes. This has, however, to struggle with the much poorer vegetation, Central Asian in character, of the

sandy regions to the west of the lower Ural, and the saliniferous vegetation of the clayey deserts of the Emba. The Ust-Urt has herbaceous steppes, where the want of irrigation and rain destroys all vegetation by the end of summer. Wide belts of rushes grow along the banks of the rivers and on the shores of the Caspian.

The population of the province, 525,380 in 1888, is made up of three different elements,—Ural Cossacks, who constitute about one-fifth, and numbered nearly 90,000 in 1879, some 15,000 Russian peasants, and Kirghiz. Of these 405,000 are still nomads. The Kirghiz are almost entirely dependent on cattle-breeding, and before the outbreak of the murrain of 1879 were reckoned to have 429,500 horses, 221,800 head of cattle, 1,411,000 sheep, and 175,000 camels. From that epidemic the Russians lost two-thirds of their horses and one-third of their other stock, whilst the Khirgiz lost more than three-fourths of both horses and cattle. The Ural Cossacks, descendauts of those independent communities of free settlers and Raskolniks who are so often mentioned in Russian history under the name of Yaik Cossacks, owing to their unwilling- ness to submit to the rule of the czars, are fine representatives of the Great Russian race, though not without some admixture of Tartar and Kalmuck blood. Their chief occupations are cattle- breeding and fishing, the latter a most important source of income. The rich fisheries in the Ural and the Caspian are the property of the community as a whole (the voisko), and are subdivided according to the needs and working powers of the separate villages.! They give employment to about 7000 Cossacks and 2000 hired labourers. There are also fisherics in the Emba. Walrus-hunting is also engaged in. Agriculture was first introduced between 1830 and 1840; but now more than 300,000 ewts. of wheat are exported annually. Nearly 130,000 cwts. of salt are obtained from the lakes every year. The manufactures of the province, which possesses a few steam flour-mills and a number of tanneries and tallow-melting works, are unimportant. 'Trade by barter is extensively carried on with the Kirghiz. Fish, corn, cattle, hides, tallow, and the like are exported, while manufactured wares are imported to the value of about £1,500,000 per annum. :

Uralsk is divided into four districts, the chief towns of which are— Uralsk (20,680 inhabitants in 1879), Kalmykoff (1510), Gurieff at the mouth of the

Ural (4880), and Temirsk, a small port, now the administrative centre of the district of Embinsk. Several villages have populations of from 2000 to 5000 each.

History.—In the first half of the 16th century Uralsk was occu- pied by the Nogai horde, a remnant of the Golden Horde, which retired there after the fall of Astrakhan and Kazan; the khans resided at Saraitchik on the Ural. At the same time the lower parts of the Ural were occupied by Russian runaway serfs and free Cossacks who did not recognize the authority of Moscow. They took Saraitchik in 1560 and formed an independent com- munity, like the sitch of the Zaporog Cossacks. The Moscow princes, recognizing the importance of these military settlements,

' See Haxthausen's Russia for a description of the Cossack com- munity ; comp. also the more recent works of Ryabinin and Khoroshkhin and many separate monographs in Russian periodicals ; also Baer's Kaspische Studien and Danilevsky on the fishing.

tried to win their allegiance by the grant of various privileges. But, when they attempted to bring them under the centralized rule of the empire and prosecuted them for nonconformity, the Cossacks revolted, first under Razin, and afterwards under Puga- tcheff. After the latter rising, the name of Ural was officially given to the Yaik river and the Yaik Cossacks. The disbanding of their artillery, the planting of Russian garrisons within the domains of the voisko, and the interference of Russian officials in their intcrior organization during the 19th century occasioned a series of smaller outbreaks, the latest of which, in 1874, against the new law of military service, resulted in the deportation of 2500 Cossacks, with their families, to Turkestan.

URALSK, capital of the above province, is situated on the upper Ural, at its confluence with the Tchagan, 1095 miles south-east from Moscow. The town is well built, with regular streets; among its prominent buildings are the theatre, the club, and two gymnasiums; and it is beautified by numerous gardens. The scientific society issues publica- tions of great value. There is

a very brisk trade in fish, cattle, hides, tallow, grain (exported), and in manufactured goods (imported). The population in 1879 was 20,680.

URANIUM, the name of a rather rare metallic element, already briefly referred to under CHEMIsTRyY (vol. v. p. 542). The credit of its discovery as an element must be assigned to Klaproth, who in 1789 isolated from pitch-blende a yellow oxide which, while obviously metallic, was foreign to all the known metals. He accordingly viewed it as the oxide of a new metal, which he named uranium, after the newly discovered planet of Herschel. From the yellow oxide he obtained, by reduction with charcoal at a high temperature, what he took to be metallic uranium. Ber- zelius about 1823 found that the yellow oxide, when treated with excess of sulphuric acid, united with it into a sulphate, not unlike the ferric salt Fe,O,.3SO, in its character. Hence he concluded that the uranium salt is Ur, 03.3803, where Ur,O., according to his analysis, re- presents 864 parts of yellow oxide, if Fe,0,=160 or O=16. Like Fe,0O,, the yellow oxide lost 48 parts of oxygen per Ur, O,= 864 parts as water, while Ur,=816 parts of metal remained.! These results were universally adopted until Péligot in 1840 discovered that Berzelius's (and Klaproth's) metal contains oxygen, and that his (Ur,) O, really is (Us04).O,=3U,0,, where U=120 is one atomic weight of real uranium. Péligot's results, though called in question by Berzelius, have been amply confirmed by all subsequent investigators; only now, on theoretical grounds, first set forth by Mendeljeff, we have come to double Péligot's atomic weight, so that through- out this article U signifies 240 parts of uranium, while UO, stands as the formula of the yellow oxide, and UO, as that of Berzelius's metal.

The only practically available raw material for the extraction of uranium is pitch-blende (Germ. and Fr. Uranpecherz), which occurs associated with lead and silver ores, chiefly in Joachimsthal and at Przibram in Bohemia, at Schneeberg in Saxony, and at Redruth in Cornwall, forming greenish or brownish black masses clustering together like grapes. Its hardness is 55. The specific gravity varies from 6°4 to 8, the mineral almost invariably presenting itself in intimate intermixture with a host of foreign metallic compounds, such as sulphides, arsenides, &c. Pure pitch-blende is U,0,, which ely good specimens forms some 80 per cent. or more of the whole,

In the chemical treatment of the ore, it is expedient to begin by removing at least part of the arsenic and sulphur of the admixtures by roasting, and then to wash away the light oxides with water or dissolve them away with hydrochloric acid. In one of the many processes proposed the purified ore is disintegrated with hot nitric acid, to produce nitrates, which are then converted into sulphates by evaporation with oil of vitriol. The sulphates are treated with water, which dissolves the uranium and other soluble salts, while silica, sulphate of lead, &., remain; these are removed by filtration. From the solution the arsenic, copper, &c., are precipitated by sulphuretted hydrogen as sulphides, which are filtered off. The filtrate contains the uranium as uranous and the iron as ferrous salt. These are oxidized by means of chlorine or some other oxidizing

+ We substitute for Berzelius's actual numbers the corresponding values calculated from our present constants. |

agent, and precipitated conjointly by excess of ammonia. The pre- cipitate, after having been collected and washed, is digested with a warm concentrated solution of carbonate of ammonia, which dissolves the uranium as a yellow solution of uranate of ammonia, while the hydrated oxide of iron, the alumina, &c., remain. These are filtered off hot, and the filtrate is allowed to cool, when crystals of the uranate separate out. The mother liquor includes generally more or less of nickel, cobalt, zinc, and other heavy metals, which, as Wohler showed, can be removed as insoluble sulphides by the addition of sulphide of ammonium; uranium, under the circum- stances, is not precipitated by sulphide of ammonium. The filtrate, on being boiled down, yields a second crop of uranate of ammonia. This uranate when ignited in a platinum crucible leaves a green oxide of the composition U,Og, 2.¢., artificial pitch-blende, which serves as a starting point for the preparation of uranium compounds. The green oxide, as a rule, requires to be further purified. One method for this purpose is to convert it into a solution of the nitrate UO,(NO;)., and from it to precipitate the metal as oxalate by the addition of oxalic acid (Péligot). The latter (UO,. C20.) ylelds a purer oxide, UO,, or, in the presence of air, U,O,, on ignition,

Metallic uranium, as shown by Péligot, can be obtained by the reduction of a mixture of dry chloride of potassium and dry uranous chloride, UCl,, with sodium at a red heat (for details see handbooks of chemistry). The metal, which is easily separated from the slag by treatment with water, remains as a dark heavy powder or in white compact globules, according to the temperature at which it was produced. According to Zimmermann, to whom we owe a recent investigation on the matter, pure compact uranium is | a white malleable metal, which is pretty hard, though "softer than steel." Its specific gravity has the high value 18°7; its specific heat is 0°02765, corresponding to U=240. The fusing point, from Zimmermann's statements on its preparation, seems to lie at bright redness. The compact metal when exposed to the air tarnishes only very slowly. The powdery metal when heated in air to 150° or 170° C. catches fire and burns brilliantly into U,0,. Dilute sulphuric acid attacks it but slowly ; hydrochloric acid, especially if strong, dissolves it readily, with the formation, more immediately, of a hyacinth-coloured solution of U,Clg, which, however, readily absorbs oxygen from the air, with the formation of a green solution of UCl, which in its turn gradually passes into one of yellow uranyl salt, UO,,.Cl,.

Uranous Compounds.—The oxide UO, (Berzelius's metal) is pre- pared by heating the green oxide U,0, in hydrogen. It dissolves in hot oil of vitriol; the mass, when treated with water, dissolves ; from the solution green crystals, U(SO,).+8H,0, are obtainable. The anhydrous chloride UCl, was prepared for the first time by Péligot by heating an intimate mixture of the green oxide and charcoal to redness in a current of dry chlorine; it is obtained as sublimate of black-green metallic-looking octahedra. The chloride is very hygroscopic. Uranous salts pass into uranic (uranyl) com- pounds under the same circumstances under which ferrous salts become ferric, only they do so far more readily.

Uranic Compounds.—By keeping the nitrate UO(NO,), at a temperature of 250° for a sufficient time the oxide UO, is obtained as a chamois-yellow solid, insoluble in water, but soluble in acids, with the formation of uranyl salts, UO,.Cl,, &c. The oxide, in other words, behaves to acids as if it were the monoxide of a radical (UO,) uranyl. The sulphate (UO,)SO,+8 or 3°5H,0O is de- posited from a syrupy solution in yellow crystals. The nitrate (UO,)(NO;).+6H,O forms large yellow crystals easily soluble in

water. This salt is used in photography, also in analysis as a characteristic precipitant for phosphoric acid. If a solution of a uranyl salt is mixed with one of ammonia, or potash, or soda, the uranium is precipitated in the form of a uranate, U,O,R.0, of the respective alkali. Uranate of soda, forming yellow crystals of the coinposition Na,U,O,+6H,0, is made industrially, being used for the production of yellow uranium glass in porcelain painting. The Joachimsthal works in 1875 produced 70 cwts. of this " oxide," representing a value of £8500.

Analysis,—A borax bead dissolves uranium oxides in the re- ducing flame with a green, in the oxidizing flame with a yellow, colour. Solutions of uranyl] salts (nitrate, &c.) behave to reagents as follows: sulphuretted hydrogen produces green uranous salt with precipitation of sulphur; sulphide of ammonium in neutral solutions gives a black precipitate of UO,S, which settles slowly and, while being washed in the filter, breaks up partially into hydrated UO, and sulphur ; ammonia gives a yellow precipitate of uranate of ammonia, characteristically soluble in hot carbonate of amnionia solution ; prussiate of potash gives a brown precipitate which in appearance is not unlike the precipitate produced by the same reagent in cupric salts. (W. D.)

URANUS (ie. Heaven) is in Greek mythology the husband of Gea (Earth) and father of Cronus (Saturn) and other deities. See MytHonocy, vol. xvii. p. 155, and SATURN.

8 Um BAN

URBAN, St, first pope of that name, was bishop of Rome from 222 to 230. He had been preceded by Calixtus and was followed by Pontianus, He is mentioned by Eusebius (H. £., vi. 23), and is named in an inscription in the cceme- terium Callisti, but of his life nothing is known. The Roman Breviary (25th May) speaks of his numerous con- verts, among whom were Valerianus, husband of St Cecilia, and his brother Tiburtius, and states that he suffered martyrdom, and was buried in the ccemeterium Pretextati.

URBAN IL. (Eudes or Odo), pope from 1088 to 1099, was born of knightly rank, at Lagery (near Chatillon-sur- Marne), and was educated for the church, He had already become archdeacon of Rheims when, under the

influence of St Bruno, his teacher, he resigned his preferment and entered the cloister at Cluny, where he rose to be prior. In 1078 Gregory VII. summoned him to Italy, and made him cardinal-bishop of Ostia. He was one of the most prominent and energetic supporters of Hildebrand- ism, especially as legate in Germany in 1084, and was among the few whom Gregory nominated as possible suc- cessors. Desiderius of Monte Casino (Victor III.) was chosen in the first instance to the difficult post, but at the next vacancy Odo was elected by acclamation (March 1088) at a small meeting of cardinals and other prelates held in Terracina. He frankly took up the policy of his great predecessor, but while pursuing it with equal determination showed greater flexibility and diplomatic finesse. At the outset he had to reckon with the presence of the powerful antipope Clement III. in Rome; but a series of well-attended synods held in Rome, Amalfi, Bene- vento, and Troia supported him in renewed declarations against simony, lay investiture, and clerical marriages, and a continued policy of opposition to Henry IV. In accordance with this last policy, the martiage of the countess Matilda with Guelph of Bavaria was promoted, Prince Conrad was helped in his rebellion against his father and crowned king of the Romans at Milan in 1093, and the empress (Adelaide or Praxedes) encouraged in her dis- graceful charges against her husband. In a protracted struggle also with Philip I. of France, whom he had ex-communicated, Urban II. finally proved victorious. But the most prominent feature in his pontificate, a feature indeed which marks an epoch in the history of Latin Christianity, is his connexion with the first crusade (see Crusapus, vol. vi. pp. 623-624), which united Christendom under the headship of the pope into one vast warlike confederacy (comp. Porrepom, vol. xix. p. 499). The crusading movement first took shape at Piacenza, where in March 1095 Urban received an embassy from the emperor Alexius I, asking help against the infidel, and where a great council met, attended by numerous Italian, Bur- gundian, and French bishops and by so vast a concourse of monks and laymen that the public meetings had to be held in the open air outside the city. The still more enthusiastic council of Clermont was held in November of the same year. Urban IL. died on 29th J uly 1099, four- teen days after the fall of Jerusalem, but before the tidings of that great event had reached Italy ; his successor was

. Paschal IT,

URBAN IIL. (Uberto Crivelli), pope from 1185 to 1187 was by birth a Milanese, and was made cardinal and arch. bishop of Milan by Lucius IIL, whom he succeeded (25th November 1185). He vigorously took up his predecessor's quarrels with the emperor Frederick L., including the standing dispute about the succession to the territories of the countess Matilda. Even after his elevation to the popedom he continued to hold the archbishopric of Milan, and in this capacity refused to crown as king of Italy Frederick's son Henry, who had married Constantia, -the heiress of the kingdom of Sicily. While Henry in the

south co-operated with the rebel senate of Rome, Fred- erick in the north blocked the passes of the Alps and cut off all communication between the pope, then living in Verona, and his German adherents. Urban now resolved on excommunicating Frederick, but the Veronese protested against such a proceeding being resorted to within their walls ; he accordingly withdrew to Ferrara, but died (19th October) before he could give effect to his intention. His successor was Gregory VIII.

URBAN IV. (Jacques Pantaléon), pope from 1261 to 1264, was the son of a cobbler in Troyes, studied theology and common law in Paris, became bishop of Verdun, was employed in various missions by Innocent IV., and was made patriarch of Jerusalem by Alexander IV. He was at Viterbo seeking help for the oppressed Christians in the East when the last-named pope died, and after a three months' vacancy he was chosen to succeed him (29th August 1261). As pope he endeavoured, but without success, to stir up a new crusade on behalf of his former diocese of Jerusalem. In domestic matters the chief prob- lems of his pontificate arose out of the competing claims for the crown of the Two Sicilies. Before the arrival of Charles of Anjou, the candidate whom he favoured, Urban died at Perugia on 2nd October 1264, His successor was Clement IV. The festival of Corpus Christi was instituted by Urban IV. in 1264.

URBAN V. (Guillaume de Grimoald), pope from 1362 to 1370, was a native of Grisac in Languedoc. He became a Benedictine and a doctor in canon law, teaching at Montpellier and Avignon. He held the office of abbot of St Victor in Marseilles ; and at Avignon, on his way back from Naples, whither he had been sent as papal legate, he was elected pope (28th October 1362)

in succession to Innocent VI. As pope he was a severe disciplinarian, discountenanced the pomp and luxury of the cardinals, introduced considerable reforms in the administration of justice, and liberally patronized learning. His pontificate witnessed one of the last flickers of crusading zeal in the expedition of Peter of Lusignan, king of Cyprus, who took Alexandria (11th October 1365), but soon afterwards abandoned it. The great feature of Urban V.'s reign was the effort to restore the papacy to Italy, and to suppress its powerful rivals for the temporal sovereignty there. In 1363 he excommunicated Bernabo Visconti, and ordered a crusade to be preached throughout Italy against him and his kindred, the robbers of the church's estate ; but in the following year he found it necessary to purchase peace by removing his ban and making other humiliating conces- sions. Continued troubles in Italy caused him to set out for Rome, which he reached on 16th October 1367 ; but, though he was greeted by the clergy and people with joy, and had the satisfaction of being attended by the emperor in St Peter's and of placing the crown upon the head of the empress, it soon became clear that by changing the seat of his government he had not increased its power. Unable any longer to resist the urgency of the French cardinals, he took ship again at Corneto on 5th September 1370, and, arriving at Avignon on the 24th of the same month, died on 19th December. He was succeeded by Gregory XI.

URBAN VI. (Bartolommeo Prignani), pope from 1378 to 1389, was a native of Naples, born in 1318. A devout monk and learned casuist, he became archbishop of Bari in 1377, and, on the death of Gregory XI. the Roman populace clamorously demanding an Italian pope, was unanimously chosen (8th April 1378) by the French car- dinals under this pressure to be his successor. The arro- gant and imperious temper of the new pope, intoxicated by his unexpected fortune, showed itself in ways so in- tolerable that five months afterwards the majority of the

cardinals met at Fondi, and, repudiating their previous action, proceeded to elect Robert of Geneva (20th Septem- ber), who assumed the title of Clement VII. Thus began the great schism which divided Christendom for nearly forty years (see Popepom, vol. xix. p. 502). The measures of Urban

were not without vigour, but at the same time were characterized by such a want of prudence and self- control as has given rise to the not improbable assertion that he actually was, at times at least, a lunatic. Clement VII. was, of course, excommunicated, and designated the Antichrist ; twenty-six new cardinals were created in a single day, and, by an arbitrary alienation of the estates and property of the church, funds were raised for open war. The castle of St Angelo was besieged and taken, and the antipope put to flight, while Charles of Durazzo was in- vested in the sovereignty of Naples, forfeited by Queen Joanna. In 1384, however, Charles began to resist the papal pretensions, and Urban was shut up in Nocera, from the walls of which he daily fulminated his anathemas against his besiegers; he afterwards succeeded in making his escape to Genoa, and, on the death of Charles, set himself at the head of his troops, apparently with the in- tention of seizing Naples for his nephew if not for himself. To raise funds he proclaimed a jubilee, though only thirty- three years had elapsed since that celebrated under Clement VL., but before the celebration he died at Rome of injuries caused by a fall from his mule, on 15th October 1389. His successor was Boniface IX.

URBAN VII. (Giovanni Battista Castagna), pope for twelve days in September 1590, was of Genoese origin, and was born in Rome in 1521. He was chosen successor of Sixtus V. on 15th September 1590, but died (27th September) before consecration. He was succeeded by Gregory XIV.

URBAN VIII. (Maffeo Barberini), pope from 1623 to 1644, belonged to a Florentine family which had been greatly enriched by commerce, and was born in 1568. Through the influence of an uncle, who had become apo- stolic protonotary, he, while still a young man, received various promotions from Sixtus V. and Gregory XIV. By Clement VIII. he was himself made protonotary and nuncio to the French court ; Paul V. also employed him in a similar capacity, afterwards raising him to the car- dinalate, and giving him the legation of Bologna, On 6th August 1623 he was chosen successor to Gregory XV. The period of his pontificate, covering as it did twenty- one years of the Thirty Years' War, was an eventful one, and the ultimate result of that great struggle was largely determined by Urban's policy, which was aimed less at the restoration of Catholicism in Europe than at such an ad- justment of the balance of parties as might best favour his own

independence and strength as a temporal power in Italy (see PopEpom, vol. xix. p. 506). In 1626 the duchy of Urbino was incorporated into the papal dominions, and in 1627, when the direct male line of the Gonzagas in Mantua became extinct, he favoured the succession of the duke of Nevers against the claims of the Hapsburgs, whose preponderance he dreaded. He was the last pope to extend the papal territory, and Castelfranco on the Man- tuan frontier was fortified by him. In Rome he greatly strengthened the castle of St Angelo, removing, for the purpose of making cannons, the massive tubular girders of bronze from the portico of the Pantheon ("quod non fecerunt barbari, fecerunt Barberini"), establishing also an arsenal in the Vatican, as well as a manufactory of arms at Tivoli, and fortifying the harbour of Civita Vecchia. It was during the pontificate of Urban that Galileo was summoned to Rome to make his great recanta- tion in 1633; on the other hand, the Poussins and Claude Lorraine were patronized by him, and it was he who

brought Athanasius Kircher to Rome, and who employed Bernini to build the Palazzo Barberini, the college of the Propaganda, the Fontana del Tritone, and other prominent structures in the city. He was the last to practise nepo- tism on a grand scale: various members of his house were enormously enriched by him, so that it seemed to contem- poraries as if he aimed at establishing a Barberini dynasty. He canonized many saints, among whom the most con- spicuous are Ignatius Loyola, Francis Xavier, Al. Gonzaga, and Filippo Neri. Urban VIII. was a clever writer of Latin verse, and a collection of Scriptural paraphrases as well as original hymns of his composition has been fre- quently reprinted. His death (29th July 1644) is said to have been hastened by chagrin at the result of a war he had undertaken against the duke of Parma, He was suc- ceeded by Innocent X.

URBANA, a city of the United States, the county seat of Champaign county, Ohio. It lies 95 miles nearly due north of Cincinnati, in the midst of a rich agricultural region. It has railroad communication by means of three lines, the New York, Lake Erie, and Western, the Pitts- burgh, Cincinnati, and St Louis, and the Indiana, Bloom- ington, and Western. It has some manufactures, particu- larly of agricultural tools, machines, and railway rolling stock, and is the site of a Swedenborgian or New Church college.

The population in 1880 was 6252, an increase of 46 per cent. since 1870. Urbana was laid out in 1808, when the county was organized.

URBINO, a medizval walled city of Italy, on the site of the Roman Urbinum Hortense, in the Marches of Ancona, stands in a commanding position on a spur of the Tuscan Apennines, near the valley of the Metaurus, about 20 miles from the Adriatic. It grew up, chiefly in the 14th century, around the stronghold of the Montefeltro family. Federigo da Montefeltro, lord of Urbino from 1444 to 1482, was one of the most successful condottieri chiefs of his time, and not only a man of great military and political ability, but also an enthusiastic patron of art and literature, on which he lavished immense sums of money. Federigo much strengthened his position, first by his own marriage with Battista, one of the powerful Sforza family, and secondly by marrying his daughter to Giovanni della Rovere, the favourite nephew of Pope Sixtus IV., who in return conferred upon Federigo the title of duke. Federigo's only son Guidubaldo, who succeeded his father, married in 1489 a very gifted lady, Elizabeth Gonzaga, of the ruling family in Mantua. In 1497 he was expelled from Urbino by Cesar Borgia, son of Alexander VI., but regained his dukedom in 1508, after Ceesar's death. Guidubaldo was the last duke of the Montefeltro line; at his death in 1508 he bequeathed his coronet to Francesco Maria della Rovere, nephew of Julius II., and for about a century Urbino was ruled by its second dynasty of the Della Rovere family. In 1626 the last descendant of Francesco, called Francesco Maria II., when old and childless abdicated in favour of Pope Urban VIII., after which time Urbino, with its subject towns of Pesaro, Fano, Fossombrone, Gubbio, Castel Durante, Cagli,and about 300 small villages, became part of the Papal States until the suppression of the temporal power in 1870.

During the reigns of Federigo and Guidubaldo, Urbino was one of the foremost centres of activity in art and litera- ture in Italy, and was known as the Italian Athens. In 1468 Federigo gave orders to a Dalmatian architect, Luciano da Laurana, to build him a magnificent fortified palace ; it was finished and enlarged by the Florentine Baccio Pintelli during Guidubaldo's reign. Rich friezes, sculptured architraves of doors and windows, and other decorations in marble, painting, and wood-work were exe- cuted by the sculptor Ambrogino di Milano, and by Fran-

cesco di Giorgio Martini of Siena (1439-1506), whom Vasari wrongly states to have been the principal architect of the palace. Federigo adorned his palace with fine series of paintings by Piero della Francesca, Melozzo da Forli, Paolo Uccello, and Raphael's father, Giovanni Santi; and, in addition to the crowd of able Italian artists whom he invited to his court, Flemish painters, such as Justus of Ghent, visited and worked in this hospitable city! The rich wood-work in the palace, decorated with tarsia, or wood mosaic, was executed by Gondolo Tedesco; the rooms were filled with magnificent furniture, costly gold and silver plate, and works of art of all kinds. Literature was no less encouraged under the patronage of Federigo: it was at his court that Piero della Francesca wrote his celebrated work on the science of perspective, Francesco di Giorgio his Trattato @Architettura (published by Saluzzo, Turin, 1841), and Giovanni Santi his poetical account of the chief artists of his time, among whom, probably from jealousy, he has omitted to mention either Justus of Ghent or Francesco di Giorgio, the latter a man of extraordi- narily versatile talents, who was much employed by the duke to design fortifications and military engines, to paint wall decorations, and to carve sculptured ornaments.? Though stripped of its art treasures and dismantled of its decorations, the ducal palace still exists in a good state of preservation : it is a very picturesque, massive building of irregular plan, suited to its uneven site, and stands up very nobly on the hill, dominating all the rest of the city.? The refined magnificence of Guidubaldo's court is elo- quently described by Baldassare CastTiGLIoNE (g.v.) in his Cortegiano. When Henry VII. of England conferred the order of the Garter on Guidubaldo, Count Castiglione was sent to England with a letter of thanks and with the small picture, now in the Louvre, of St George and the Dragon, painted by Raphael# in 1504, as a present to the English king. This painting was among Charles I.'s collection which was sold by order of the Commonwealth in 1649. Throughout the whole of the 16th century the state of Urbino was one of the chief centres for the production of majolica (see Porrery, vol. xix. p. 625 sq.), especially the towns of Gubbio and Castel Durante. Most of the finest pieces of Urbino ware were made specially for the dukes, who covered their

sideboards with the rich storied piatte di pompa, of which fine specimens have recently sold for from £2000 to £3000.5 Among the distinguished names which have been associated with Urbino are those of the Ferrarese painter and friend of Raphael, Timoteo della Vite, who spent most of his life there, and Bramante, the greatest architect of his age.® The Milanese sculptor, Ambrogino, who worked so much for Federigo, married a lady of Urbino, and was the progenitor of the Baroccio family, among whom were many able mathematicians and painters. Federigo Baroccio, Ambrogino's grandson, was a very popular painter, some of whose works still exist in the cathedral and elsewhere in Urbino. This city was

also the birthplace of Pope Clement XL, of several cardinals

1 The works of art from the palace of Urbino were scattered in the 17th century. Two paintings of the Sciences, part of a series executed for Federigo, are now in the National Gallery, London, where they are doubtfully attributed to Melozzo da Forli. Another by Justus of Ghent is in the royal collection at Windsor.

2 The very high esteem felt for Francesco's personal character and genius by the duke is shown in a letter which Federigo wrote to the commune of Siena; see Ricci, Storia d' Architettura, vol. ii. p. 538. His life is given by Vasari, part i.

3 See Arnold, Der herzogliche Palast von Urbino, Leipsic, 1857 ; and Baldi, Descrizione del Palazzo Ducale di Urbino, Rome, 1724.

4 For Raphael's birth in Urbino, and his subsequent connexion with that town, see RAPHAEL.

5 The Bargello at Florence and the South Kensington Museum possess the finest collections of Urbino ware.

§ Much information about Urbino and its crowd of artists is given by Pungileoni, Elogio Storico di Giov. Santi, Urbino, 1822.

of the Albano family, and of Bernardino Baldi, Fabretti,

and other able scholars. :

The modern city of Urbino, with a population of 5087 in 1880, is the seat of an archbishop, and still possesses a small university, but is not a thriving place. The cathedral, a building of no special interest, stands in the great piazza opposite the ducal palace, which is now used for municipal purposes and contains the city archives. In the sacristy there is a very beautiful miniature-like painting of the Scourging of Christ, by Piero della Francesca. One of the finest paintings by this artist is a large altar-piece of the Madonna enthroned between angels and saints, now in the Brera at Milan; it contains a very noble kneeling figure of Federigo in full armour, showing his strange profile disfigured by a bullet, which carried away part of the bridge of his nose. It was origin- ally a votive retable given by the duke to the monastic church of San Bernardino, about a mile outside the walls of Urbino, where Federigo and Guidubaldo were buried. The modest house where Raphael was born and spent his boyhood is still preserved. It is now the property of a society of artists, and so is safe from destruc- tion. Its rooms form a sort of museum of engravings and other records of Raphael's works, together with a picture of the Madonna by his father, Giovanni Santi, formerly thought to be by Raphael himself. The Institute of the Fine Arts in the Marches contains a small but interesting collection of pictures, including works by Giovanni Santi, Justus of Ghent, Timoteo della Vite, and other 15th-century artists. The picture of the Holy Communion by Justus is specially valuable from its containing fine portraits of the Montefeltro family and members of the ducal court. On the walls of the chapel of the guild or confraternity of San Giovanni are some valuable early frescos, painted by Lorenzo da San Severino and his brother, of the Florentine school, about 1416. An in- teresting collection of Roman inscriptions, arranged by the paleo- grapher Fabretti, is still preserved on the wpper walls of a court in the ducal palace. In the church of S. Spirito are two paintings by Luca Signorelli, the Crucifixion and the Day of Pentecost, origin- ally intended for a processional banner. The theatre, decorated by Girolamo Genga, is one of the earliest in Italy; in it was per- formed the first Italian comedy, the Calandria of Cardinal Bibbiena, the friend of Leo X. and Raphael. The magnificent library formed by the Montefeltro and Della Rovere dukes has been removed to Rome.

In addition to works quoted above, see Dennistoun, Memoirs of the Dukes of Urbino, London, 1851; Card. di San Clemente, Memorte concernenti la Citta di Urbino, Rome, 1724; and Sismondi, Histoire des Républiques Italiennes, Paris, 1807-8. An interesting view of Urbino, in the first half of the 16th century,

occurs among the pen drawings in the MSS. Arte del Vusajo, by the potter Piccolpasso, now in the South Kensington Museum. QV. H. }

UREA is known chiefly as a component of urine. Re- ferring to the article Nurririon (vol. xvii. pp. 682-685) for its physiological relations, we consider it here only as a chemical substance. Urea, CO(NH,),, was discovered by H. M. Rouelle in 1773; Fourcroy and Vauquelin in 1799 published the first exact investigation on it. In 1828 Wéhler showed that it can be obtained by the union in aqueous solutions of cyanic acid with ammonia, and thus for the first time effected what was then considered an impossibility, namely,'the artificial preparation of an organic compound from mineral matter. For the extrac- tion of urea from urine the latter is concentrated by evaporation (more or less, according to its original strength), and then, after cooling, mixed with a large excess of pure? nitric acid of 1°4 specific gravity. On standing in the cold most of the urea separates out as a crystalline nitrate, CO.N,H,.HNO,, which is collected over glass wool and washed with nitric acid. To convert it into urea, it is treated with water and carbonate of baryta, which acts upon the HNO, as if it were present as such, the urea be- ing liberated. The mixed solution of urea and the nitrate is evaporated to a small volume and allowed to stand, when the bulk of the barytic nitrate crystallizes out. The rest is removed by evaporating the mother liquor to dry- ness over a water-bath and extracting the urea with strong alcohol. To obtain fine crystals, the filtered alcoholic solu- tion is evaporated to dryness, the residual urea dissolved in a very little hot water, and the solution allowed to cool

7 This word points chiefly to the absence of nitrous acid, which, if

present, decomposes its equivalent of urea into nitrogen, water, and carbonic acid, thus :— CO(NH,),+2HO. NO=CO(OH), 2N2 2H,0.

Nitrous Carbonic Nitro- yw, Oise acid. acid. gen. eo

slowly, when part of the urea crystallizes out in long colour- less columns, not unlike those of nitrate of potash. Wohler's synthetical method for preparative purposes usually assumes the following form. Powdered prussiate of potash (see Prussic AciD) is dehydrated by heating, the anhydrous salt mixed with half its weight of anhydrous binoxide of manganese, and the mixture heated in a flat iron pan until the deflagration, which soon sets in, is completed. The residue now consists of oxides of iron and manganese and of cyanate of potash, NCO.K, formed from the cyanide of potassium of the prussiate by oxidation. The cyanate of potash is extracted by means of the least sufficient quantity of cold water (hot water decomposes the salt, with the formation of ammonia and carbonate of potash), and the solution is mixed at once with the calculated weight of sulphate of ammonia, 1(NH,),SO, for 2NCO.K. The two salts decompose each other into sulphate of potash and cyanate of ammonia ; the latter, however, passes spon- taneously and almost instantaneously into urea :— mee ; Sie CO(N He)>. anate O Seonie. Reve

The sulphate of potash is eliminated exactly as the nitrate of baryta

is in the urine method. That urea is not cyanate of ammonia itself

is proved, first by the fact that real cyanate of ammonia (pre-

arable by the union of anhydrous cyanic acid with ammonia gas) is a different substance, and secondly by its not yielding any ammonia when dissolved in cold caustic potash ley. Urea behaves to certain strong acids like a feeble basis, uniting (CON)H, parts)

with HNO, parts of nitric, }H2S0, of sulphuric, and $C,0,H, of

oxalic acid into crystalline salts. As shown by its formula, urea is the amide of carbonic acid: 7.¢., it is CO(OH):- 20H +2NH,, and consequently an anhydride of carbonate of ammonia, CO(O. NH,).. An aqueous solution of urea, when heated to 200° in a sealed-up tube, breaks up into carbonic acid and ammonia; and dry car- bonate of ammonia, when kept at a certain temperature, suffers partial conversion into urea and water.

Of the many methods for the quantitative determination of the urea in urine, the simplest is to treat a measured volume with excess of solution of hypobromite of soda (a solution of bromine in caustic soda ley) and to measure the volume of nitrogen evolved. By theory CON,H,+3NaBrO=3NaBr+CO,+2H20 (the CO, is absorbed by the excess of alkali); but in practice, according to Dupre, through unknown causes only 91 per cent. of the nitrogen is actually evolved, which must be remembered in the calculation of the result.

*URGA, a city of Mongolia and the administrative centre of the Northern and Eastern Khalkha tribes, is situated in 48° 20' N. lat. and 107° 30' E. long., on the Tola river. The Chinese and Mongolian towns which make up Hure, as the Mongols call Urga, stand on the high road from Peking to Kiachta (Kiakhta), about 700 miles from the Chinese capital and 165 from Kiachta, and are separated from each other by an interval of 2 or 3 miles. The Chinese town is the great trading quarter, and there the wealth of the district is collected. The houses in this part are more substantially built than in the Mongol town, and the streets have a well-to-do appearance. The population is estimated at about 5000, and the law which prohibits Chinamen from bringing their wives and families into the place tends to check increase. The population of the Mongol quarter is reckoned at about 10,000, though on the occasions of the religious festivals the numbers are much larger. Although trade is not altogether excluded, the raison d'étre of the town is that it is the residence of the metropolitan of the Khalkha tribes, who ranks third in degree of veneration among the dignitaries of the Lamaist Church. This "resplendently divine lama" resides in a sacred quarter on the western side of the town, and acts as the spiritual colleague of the Chinese lieutenant-general, who controls all mundane matters at Urga itself, and who is also especially charged with the control of the frontier town of Kiachta and the trade conducted there with the Russians. Until quite lately bricks of tea formed the only circulating medium for the retail trade at Urga, but Chinese brass cash are now beginning to pass current in the markets. The temples in the Mongol quarter are numerous and impos- ing in appearance, and in one is a gilt image of Maitreya Bodhisattva, 33 feet in height and weighing 125 tons, By the Chinese Urga is called K*ulun.*

Il

URI) one of the Forest Cantons of Switzerland, ranks as fourth in the Confederation. It comprises the upper

basin of the Reuss from its source to the Lake of Lucerne,

the southern arm of which is also within the canton. Its total area is 415°4 square miles ; of these 184°4 are classed as productive, 40°3 are covered with forests, 44°3 consist of glaciers, and 7°7 of the lake. The highest point in the canton is the Galenstock (11,802 feet). The population in 1880 amounted to 23,694 (men having a majority of 3000 over women), showing an increase of 7649, or 39°4 per cent., since 1870, owing to the St Gotthard Railway. German is the native tongue of 18,024 persons, Italian of 5313. The canton has always been very strongly Roman Catholic (23,149 in 1880). It was included up to 1814 in the diocese of Constance (except the valley of Urseren, which was in that of Chur), and since then has formed part of no diocese, but is provisionally administered by the bishop of Chur. In Uri the limits of the ecclesiastical parishes are the same as those of the civil communes. The capital is Altdorf (2901 inhabitants). Gdschenen (2990) and Wasen (2744) have increased since the opening of the St Gotthard Railway (1880), which runs through the greater part of the canton. The inhabitants are occupied in agricultural and pastoral pursuits, and are very saving and industrious. The main valley is fertile, but the side glens are very wild. Education is still very backward and largely in the hands of the priests; but an improvement was made in 1885, The main characteristics of the people are extreme conservatism and a passionate attachment to their religion.

Uri is first mentioned in history in 732 as the place to which Eto, abbot of Reichenau, was banished. For the early history of the canton, see SWITZERLAND, vol. xxii. pp. 783-787. In 1410 a perpetnal alliance was made with the upper valley of Urseren or Val Orsera, the latter being allowed its own headman and assembly, and courts under those of Uri, with which it was not fully incor- porated till 1808. In 1440 Uri alone won the Val Leventina for good, the title being confirmed by a treaty of 1466 with the duke of Milan and by the bloody fight of Giornico (1478). At the Reformation, Uri clung to the old faith (see SwITzERLAND, vol. xxii. pp. 790-

791). In 1798 on the formation of the Helvetic republic Uri lost all its Italian possessions. In September 1799 Suwaroff and the Russian army, having crossed the St Gotthard to Altdorf, were forced by the French to pass over into Schwyz, instead of sailing down the lake to Lucerne. In 1803 Uri became an independ- ent canton again, with Urseren, but without the Val Leventina. It tried hard to bring back the old state of things in 1814-15, and opposed all attempts at reform, joining the League of Sarnen in 1832 to maintain the pact of 1815, opposing the proposed revision of the pact, and being one of the members of the Sonderbund in 1843. Despite defeat in the war of 1847, Uri voted against the federal constitution of 1848, and by a crushing majority against that of 1874. The existing constitution of Uri is that framed in 1850 and amended in 1851, 1872, 1879, and 1881. The " landes- gemeinde," composed of all male citizens of twenty years of age, meets annually on 1st May, and is the supreme legislative assembly. There is a subordinate legislative assembly (landrath), consisting of the landammann or headman and his deputy, 4 of the members of the executive, and 70 elected members (1 for every 300 of the population), which drafts bills and passes laws provisionally in case of necessity. The executive consists of 9 members—the landam- mann, his deputy, and the treasurer, with 6 elected members. By an immemorial custom 7 men of 7 different families, bearing dif- ferent names, can cause an extraordinary meeting of the assembly of their "'gemeinde" to be summoned, or call on the landrath to

do the same in the case of the " landesgemeinde." See K. F. Lusser's Gesch. des Kantons Uri (1862).

URIC ACID, as explained fully in the article NUTRI- TION (vol. xvii. p. 683), is one of the penultimate products of the tissue waste in the human body. While the bulk of the nitrogen of the albuminoids passes off through the bladder as Urza (q.v.), a small portion of it stops at the uric acid stage. Human urine contains only a fraction of a per cent. of the acid, chiefly as soda salt ; abundance of "sen Esp As al A ES

1 The name is probably connected with the same obscure root as Urseren and Reuss, and is popularly derived from Urochs, " wild bull, a bull's head having been for ages borne on the cantonal shield.

uric acid is met with in the excrement of serpents and birds, with whom it is the principal nitrogenous product of tissue waste. For the preparation of uric acid (C,H,N,O3), GUANO (q.v.) is boiled repeatedly with a solution of borax in 120 parts of water. The filtered solution is acidified with hydrochloric acid, when impure uric acid separates out as a brown precipitate, which is washed with cold water. For its purification it is dissolved in hot dilute caustic potash or soda ley, the solution filtered, and the filtrate saturated with carbonic acid. An almost insoluble acid urate of alkali separates out, which is collected on a filter, washed, and decomposed by adding it in instalments to hot dilute hydrochloric acid. Uric acid separates out as a white precipitate, which is filtered off, washed, and dried, to be re-purified by a repetition of the alkali process or otherwise. Pure uric acid forms a snow-white micro- crystalline powder, devoid of smell or taste, soluble in 1800 parts of boiling and in 14,000 parts of cold water, but insoluble in alcohol and in ether. When heated it suffers complete decomposition.

For its detection in urine, the urine is mixed with excess of hydrochloric acid, and allowed to stand, when the uric acid separates out, generally coloured reddish by impurities. To identify the pre- cipitate, it is dissolved in a few drops of nitric acid on a watch-glass, and the solution cautiously evaporated to dryness. The residue, if exposed to ammonia gas as it comes off from the stopper of a liquor ammoniz bottle, assumes the intense purple colour of "murexide."'

Urates.—Uric acid dissolves in excess of caustic potash ley as dipotassic salt, C;H,K,N,03, soluble in 44 parts of cold water, with the formation of a strongly alkaline solution. On the saturation of the solution with carbonic acid one-half of the potash is elimi- nated as bicarbonate, and a neutral salt, C;H,KN,03, comes down as a precipitate, soluble in 800 parts of cold water. Soda and the alkaline earths behave similarly. But more interesting than its salts are the numerous derivatives obtainable from it, chiefly by the action of oxidizing agents. Most of these were discovered and investigated by Liebig and Wohler in a classical research published in 1838, From 1861 to 1863 Adolf Bayer supplemented their work by important new discoveries.

He showed that all those meta- morphoses of uric acid fallin naturally with the assumption that the molecule of uric acid consists of two urea rests— (NH)(CO)(NH)— united each by its two nitrogen affinities with a tricarbon group, (C,0), by carbon affinities of the latter. To give an example of the practical meaning of the theory, —if uric acid is oxidized cautiously with nitric acid, one of the urea rests by uniting with the 2H of an H,0 is split off as urea, while the rest unites with the oxygen of the H2O and other 0+ HO into alloxan, —

(HN) -(CO.C(OH),. CO)— (NH), = ee

the ureid of mesoxalic acid, HO-(CO.C(OH),.CO)-OH. On the application of more energetic oxidizing agents, that one urea rest still survives, but the tricarbon nucleus burns down into C,0,, the radical of oxalic acid, with formation of parabanic acid,

(HN) ~~(C,0,)~~(NH), a C0

the ureid of oxalic acid, HO(C,0,)OH.

URINE. See Urza and Uric Acip; also Nutrition, vol. xvii. pp. 682-684.

URMIA, or UrumtAu, a town of Persia, in the province of Azerbijan (Adarbaijan), lies 112 miles south-west of Tabriz and 10 from the west side of Lake Urmia, in the midst of an extremely fertile, highly cultivated, and densely peopled plain. Within the enclosures, consisting of a wall and deep ditch that can be flooded, there is a mixed Mohammedan and Christian population of from 25,000 to 30,000, while the surrounding district is studded with over 300 populous villages. Some of the streets are broader than is usual in Oriental towns and several are traversed by running water; but, beyond a busy bazaar and two or three old mosques, there is nothing of any interest. ‘The chief industries are weaving, dyeing, and especially tillage, abundant crops of rice, melons, cotton, and excellent tobacco being raised in the neighbourhood. Urmia has for many years been the centre of an American mission, which has had considerable success, especially amongst the so-called ‘“ Chaldean ” or Nestorian Christians. °

According to an old tradition, Urmia was the birthplace of Zoroaster.

The lake, which takes its name from the town, and which is also known as the Daria-cha, or " Little Sea," is a completely landlocked basin, filling a shallow depression at the east foot of the Kurdish Highlands, but still about 5000 feet above sea-level. It is 90 miles long north and south, 30 miles broad, and 250 round, with a total area of 1600 square miles, but a mean depth of not more than 10-or 12 feet (45 in the deepest part sounded by Monteith), so that the whole volume is at least six times less than that of the much smaller lake of Geneva. There are as many as fifty-six islands, grouped chiefly towards the south, the largest 5 miles by 2, the smallest mere rocks, and none permanently inhabited, although they are tilled or used for grazing horses and sheep in winter. Although fed by numerous streams, the lake is intensely saline, more so even than the Dead Sea, and is consequently inhabited by no fish or other aquatic fauna, except a peculiar species of small crustacean, which affords abundant food to numerous swans and other wild-fowl. The salt, which forms extensive incrustations some inches thick round about the shelving north-eastern and southern shores, appears to be de- rived from Tertiary beds (Dr E. Tietze), and the geological formation appears to resemble that of Lake Niris in southern Persia (Blanford). The whole lacustrine basin, including the farthest sources of its in- fluents, has an area of about 20,000 square miles, and the flooded part stood formerly at a much higher level than at present, as is shown by the watermarks on the encircling heights, and by the Shahi peninsula in the north-east, which at one time was certainly an island. In recent years the evaporation has on the whole balanced the inflow, although the lake is now said to be slightly rising, owing to the larger discharge from the Jaghatu and Tatau, which were formerly to a great extent absorbed in irrigating the southern Miandab plain. Near the Selmas river and at the village of Dihkergan in the south-east occur the famous " marble springs," yielding the pink, yellow, and white " marble of Tabriz," used for ornamenting many public buildings throughout western Asia. –

URQUHART, or Urcuarp,! Sir Tuomas (c. 1605- 1660), one of the most original and raciest translators from any foreign language into English, was the son of Sir Thomas Urquhart of Cromarty, the representative of a very ancient family, and of Christian, daughter of the fourth Lord

Elphinstone. His birth-year is uncertain, but it is guessed at 1605, and his birthplace was the old mansion-house of Cromarty. Not much is known of his youth, or indeed of any part of his life; but he was certainly well educated, travelled over Europe, succeeded to a con- siderable, though much embarrassed inheritance, and got together a remarkable library, which, however, fell into the hands of his creditors. All his later life was disturbed by pecuniary and political difficulties. He was an enthu- siastic Royalist ; and, so far as religious matters went, his principles may be judged from his favourite signature, "C. P.," for Christianus Presbyteromastix. He took part in the "Trot of Turriff" in 1639, and was rewarded by being knighted on 7th April 1641 by the king's own hand at Whitehall. He took occasion by this visit to London to see through the press his first work, a collection of Epi- grams of no great merit. Four years later, in 1645, he produced a tract called 7rissotetras, a treatise on logarithms, adjusted to a kind of memoria technica, like that of the scholastic logic. In 1649 he was proclaimed a rebel and traitor at the Cross of Edinburgh ; but this does not seem to have done him much harm, and, though he took part in the march to Worcester, and was there wounded and taken prisoner, his always embarrassed affairs do not seem to have been much worsened thereby. He published in rapid succession during 1652 and 1653 a series of tracts with quaint titles and quainter contents. Pantochrono- chanon (sic) is an almost unbelievable genealogy of the house of Urquhart up to Adam, with the names extem- porized for the earlier ages in a kind of gibberish, which seems to be after the pattern of the giants and heathens in the Amadis. Ecskubalauron, supposed to be a treatise on the virtues of a jewel found in the streets of Worcester, is in reality a rather elaborate treatise on the virtues of the Scottish character, as shown in the Admirable Crichton

1 So spelt on the title page of his first work.

and others. Finally, Logopandecteision handles the sub- ject of a universal language. These original works of Urquhart's, as far as intrinsic literary merits go, are not of much account; but they show perhaps better than any- thing else that singular mixture of patriotism, generosity, shrewdness, humour, with prejudice, almost insane family pride, crotchet, pedantry, and

apparent insensibility to some kinds of the ridiculous which was the dominant characteristic of a certain part of the Scottish nation, and which has furnished Sir Walter Scott with some of his most matchless studies and touches. The 7'ranslation of Rabelais, which Urquhart produced in 16538, is a very different work from the literary point of view, entering into and reproducing the author's spirit with wonderful success, and, though by no means technically faithful, far excelling in value all merely faithful versions. Next to nothing is known of Urquhart after its date ; it is said that he sought a refuge, like other cavaliers, on the Con- tinent, and died (1660) of a fit of laughing, brought on by joy at hearing of the Restoration.

His original Works, with such scanty particulars of his life as are known, and with reproductions of two original and curious frontis- pieces, which represent him as a handsome and dandified wearer of full cavalier costume, were published in a stately quarto volume by the Maitland Club (Edinburgh, 1834). The Rabelais has been repeatedly reprinted, and with Motteux's additions forms the sub- stance of Gargantua and Pantagruel in Bohn's Extra Series.

URSINUS, Zacwarras (1534-1583), German theo- logian, and one of the authors of the Hevdelberg Catechism (see vol. v. p. 219), was a native of Breslau, and became a disciple of Melanchthon at Wittenberg. He afterwards studied divinity at Geneva under Calvin and Hebrew at Paris under Mercier. In 1561 he was appointed professor in the Collegium Sapientis at Heidelberg, where in 1563 at the instance of the elector-palatine, Frederick III., he drew up the Catechism in cooperation with Kaspar Olevian. The death of the elector in 1577 led to the removal of Ursinus, who from 1578 till his death in 1583 occupied a professorial chair at Neustadt-an-der-Haardt. His Works were published in 1587-89, and a more complete edition by his son and two of his pupils, Pareus and Reuterus, in 1612.

URSULA, 81, and her companions, virgins and martyrs, are commemorated by the Roman Church on 21st October. The Breviary gives no legend; but in current works, such as Butler's Lives of the Saints, it is to the effect that " these holy martyrs seem . . . to have met a glorious death in defence of their virginity from the army of the Huns… . They came originally from Britain,

and Ursula was the conductor and encourager of the holy troop." The scene of the martyrdom is placed near the lower Rhine.

The date has been assigned by different writers to 238, c. 283, and c. 451. The story, however, is unknown both to Jerome and to Gregory of Tours—and this though the latter gives a somewhat detailed description of the Cologne church dedicated to that Theban legion with which the tradition of the martyred virgins was very early associated. The story of their fate is not entered under 21st October in the martyrology of Bede (0b. ¢. 735), of Ado (c. 858), of Usuard (ante 877), Notker Balbulus (896), or Hrabanus Maurus (845); but a 9th-century life of St Cunibert (ob. 663) associates a prominent incident in the life of this saint with the basilica of the sacred virgins at Cologne (Surius, vi. 275, ed. 1575). Not only does Archbishop Wichfrid attest a grant to the church of the sacred virgins outside the walls of Cologne (in 927), but he was a large donor in his own person. Still earlier a Cologne martyrology, written, as Binterim plausibly urges, between 889 and 891, has the following entry under 21st October: "xi. virg. Ursule Sencie Gregorie Pinose Marthe Saule Britule Satnine Rabacie Saturie Paladie." Much shorter entries are found in two of the old martyrologies printed in Migne (cxxxviii. 1207, 1275). A more definite allusion to the legend may be found (¢. 847) in Wandelbert's metrical martyrology (21st October) :

'¢ Tune numerosa simul Rheni per littora fulgent Christi virgineis erecta tropsa maniplis

Agrippinze urbi, quarum furor impius olim Millia mactavit ductricibus inclyta sanctis."

The full legend first makes its appearance in a festival discourse (sermo) for 21st October, written, as internal evidence seems to show, between 731 and 839. This sermo does not mention St Ursula, but makes Pinnosa or Vinnosa the leader of these spiritual "amazons," who, to avoid Maximian's persecution, left their island home of Britain, following their bridegroom Christ towards that East whence their faith had come a hundred years before. The con- current traditions of Britain, Batavia (where many chapels still preserved their memory), and Cologne are called in evidence to prove the same origin. The legend was already very old and the festival 'nobis

omni tempore celeberrima " ; but, as all written documents had disappeared since the burning of the early church erected over the sacred bones, the preacher could only appeal to the continuous and careful memory of the society to which he belonged (nostrates). Even in his time there were sceptics who pointed dubiously to the full-grown bones of " widows "' and of men among the so-called virgin relics. But to a priori reasoners who mocked at the notion of gather- ing so large a band of virgins in one place there was a triumphant answer ready: if Christ, while yet a man on earth, could summon 'twelve legions of angels" to his aid, surely we could allow that a meagre band of "'less than 12,000 virgins might follow the stain- less lamb" in heaven. The author of the sermo pointedly rejects the two theories that connected the holy virgius with the Theban band and brought them as pilgrims from the East to the West ; but he adds that even in his days there still existed an inscription in the church, showing how it had been restored from: its foundations by a certain "Clematius, vir consularis, ex partibus Orientis."

Two or threc centuries later the Passio XI. MM. SS. Virginum, based apparently on the revelations made to Helentrude, a nun of Heerse near Paderborn, gives a wonderful increase of detail, The narrative in its present form may date somewhere between 900 and 1100, while Helentrude apparently flourished before 1050. Ac- cording to her account, the son of a powerful pagan king demands in marriage Ursula, the beautiful daughter of Deonotus, a king "in partibus Britanni." Ursula is warned by a dream to demand a respite of three years, during which time her companions are to be 11,000 virgins collected from both kingdoms. After vigorous exercise in all kinds of manly sports to the admiration of the popu- lace, they are carried off by a sudden breeze in eleven triremes to Thiel in Guelderland on the Waal. Thence they sail up the Rhine by wit of Cologne to Basel, at which place they make fast their vessels and proceed on foot to Rome. Returning, they re-enter their ships at Basel, but are slaughtered by the Huns when they reach Cologne. Their relics are then collected and buried "sicnt hodie illic est cernere," in a spot where "to this day" no meaner sepulture is permitted. Then follows the usual allusion to Clematius ; the date is expressly fixed at 288; and the whole revelation is seem- ingly ascribed to St Cordula, one of the eleven thousand, who, after escaping death on the first day by hiding in one of the vessels, on the morrow gave

herself up to death of her own accord. Towards the beginning of the 12th century Sigebert of Gembloux (ob. 1112) gives a brief réswmé of the same story. He is the first to introduce the name of Attila, and dates the occurrence 453.

Passing over the visions and exhumations of the first half of the 12th century, we come to the singular revelations of St Elizabeth of Schénau. These revelations, delivered in Latin, German, or a mixed jargon of both languages, were turned into simple Latin by Elizabeth's brother Egbert, from whose words it would seem that in 1156 an old burial ground had lately been laid open near Cologne. The cemetery was naturally associated with the legend of St Ursula; and, this identification once accepted, it is not un- likely that, when more careful investigation revealed male skeletous and tombstones bearing the names of men, other and more definite epitaphs were invented to reconcile the old traditions with the facts of such a damaging discovery. Hence perhaps the barefaced imposture: "Cyriacus, papa Romanus, qui cum gaudio suscepit sanctas virgines et cum eis Coloniam reversus martyrium suscepit." One or two circumstantial forgeries of this kind would form the basis of a scheme for explaining not a few other problems of the case, such as the plain inscription " Jacobus," whom St Elizabeth promptly transformed into a supposititious British archbishop of Antioch, brother to the equally imaginary British Pope Cyriacus. For these epitaphs, with others of a humbler kind, were brought before St Elizabeth to be identified in her ecstatic converse with St Verena, her cousin St Ursula, and others. Elizabeth herself at times distrusted her own revelations: there was no Cyriac in the list of the popes; Antherus, who was said to be his successor (235-236), died more than two centuries before Attila, to whom common report assigned the massacre ; and it was hardly credible that James of Antioch could cut eleven thousand epitaphs in less than three days. Every doubt, however, was met by the invention of a new and still more improbable detail. According to St Verena, the virgins suffered when Maximus and " Africanus " were principes at Rome (? 387-388).

In 1183 the mantle of St Elizabeth fell upon Hermann Joseph, a Premonstratensian canon at Steinfeld. He had to solve a more difficult problem than St Elizabeth's ; for the skeletons of little

ee

Plate I,

Bound- aries,

14

children, ranging in age from two months to seven years, had now been found buried with the sacred virgins. But even such a diffi- culty Hermann explains away as readily as he does the fact of his having changed St Elizabeth's name for the royal bridegroom from /Stherius to Holofernes: the prince in question had two names, and the little children were brothers, sisters, or more distant relatives of the eleven thousand. Hermann's revelations are mainly taken up with an attempt to show the mutual relationship of nearly all the characters he introduces, The names are a most extraordi- nary mixture. Among British bishops we have Michael William, James, and Columbanus. Sovereign princes,—an Oliver, a Clovis, and a Pippin,—start out in every page, till the writer finds it neces- sary to apologize for the number of his kings and his own blunders. But, for all this, Hermann exposes his own doubts when he tells that often, as he was preparing to write, he heard a voice bidding him lay down the pen, "for whatever you write will be an unmixed lie." Hermann makes St Ursula a native of Brittany, and so approxi- mates to the version of the story given by Geofirey of Monmouth (Historia Britonum), according to whom Maximian, after fleeing from Rome, and acquiring Britain by marriage, proceeds to conquer Brittany and settle it with men from the island opposite. For these settlers he has to find British wives, and to this end collects 11,000 noble and 60,000 plebeian virgins, who are wrecked on their passage across, Certain of the vessels being driven upon "bar- barous islands," their passengers are slain by Guanius and Melga, 'kings of the Huns and Picts," whom Gratian had called in to his aid against Maximian, In this version St Ursula is a daughter of Dionotus, king of Cornwall. Hermann alludes more than once to the Historia Britonwm, and even to King Arthur.

The legend of St Ursula is perhaps the most curious instance of the development of an ecclesiastical myth. We know, however, too little about its earlier stages to justify any serious attempt at estimating what amount of historic truth underlies it, and it is doubtful whether many of the efforts in

this direction do not make a larger demand on human credulity than the legend itself. Even in the earliest form known to us this legend is probably the com-

lex growth of centuries, and any claim to the discovery of the Fost germ can hardly approve itself to the historic sense. These remarks apply especially to that venerable rationalization which evolves the whole legend from a misreading of Undecimilla into undecim millia, A more modern theory makes St Ursula the Christianized representative of the old Teutonic goddess Freya, who, in Thuringia, under the name of Horsel, welcomed the souls of dead maidens. Not a few singular coincidences seem to point in the same direction, especially the two virgins, " Martha and Sanla," whom Usuard states to have suffered " cum aliis pluribus" on 20th October, whence they were probably transferred to 21st October. It is curious to note that ae and many of the ear- liest martyrologies extant have on 21st October the entry " Dasius Zoticus, Gaius cwm duodecim militibus." Even in copies of Jerome this is transformed into millibus ; and it is perhaps not impossible that to this misreading we may indirectly owe the " thousands" in the Ursula legend. So far as is known to the present writer, the two entries are mutually exclusive in all the early martyr- ologies mentioned in this article, and in those printed in Migne, exxxvil, The earlier "Dasius" entry seems to disappear steadily, though slowly, as the Ursula legend works its way into current

martyrologies.

See Crombach, Vita et Martyriwm S. Ursula, Cologne, 1647, and the Bolland- ist Acta Sanctorum, 2lst October. The rationalization of the story is to be found in Oscar Schade's Die Sage von der heiligen Ursula, Hanover, 1854, of which there is a short résumé in Baring-Gould's Lives of the Saints. Schade's results seem to be now generally accepted. (T. A. A.)

URSULINES, a religious order founded at Brescia by Angela de Merici! in 1537, primarily for the education of girls. It was approved in 1544 by Paul IIL, and in 1572 Gregory XIIL., at the instance of Charles Borromeo, made enclosure obligatory and declared it a religious order under the rule of St Augustine. In the following century it was powerfully encouraged and supported by St Francis de Sales ; and towards the beginning of the 18th

century, the period of its greatest prosperity, the order embraced some 20 congregations, with 350 convents and from 15,000 to 20,000 nuns. It still has some importance and possesses about 36 convents in Germany and Austria alone.

URUGUAY. The republic of Uruguay, officially known as the ORIENTAL REPUBLIC oF THE Uruauay, and long locally called the Banpa OrtenTaL (meaning the land on the eastern side of the large river from which the country takes its modern name), is the smallest independent state in South America. It runs conterminous with the south- ern border of the empire of Brazil and lies between 30°

1 Born 1470, died 1540, canonized 1807.

and 35° §. lat. and 53° 25' and 57° 42' W. long. ; its area is 73,185 square miles, The country is in some sense a peninsula, having a seaboard on the Atlantic Ocean of 120 miles, a shore line to the south on the river Plate of 235 miles, and another of 270 miles along the Uruguay on the west. The boundaries separating it from Rio Grande do Sul, a province of Brazil, are Lake Mirim, the rivers Chuy, Yaguaron, and Cuareim, and a cuchilla or low range of hills called Santa Ana, The extent of the northern frontier from the Cuareim to the bar of the Chuy on the coast of the Atlantic is 450 miles. west to north-east by the river Negro and its affluent the Yi. The Uruguay (see Puate River, vol. xix. p. 187) is navigable all the year by steamers from the island of Martin Garcia at the mouth to Salto (200 miles). Above this place the navigation is interrupted by rapids. The ordinary volume of water in the Uruguay averages 11 millions of cubic feet per minute. The Negro, of which the principal port is the city of Mercedes, is the only important and to any practical extent navigable inland river. Others are navigable for short distances and by steamers of light draught. Besides the rivers mentioned, the chief streams are the Santa Lucia, which falls into the Plate a little west of Montevideo; the Queguay in Paysandi; and the Cebollati, rising in the sierras in Minas and flowing into Lake Mirim. These rivers as well as the Uruguay are fed by innumerable smaller streams or "arroyos," many of which have the importance and sometimes the names of rivers, such as the Arapey in Salto, the Dayman in Pay- sandu, the Yaguary (an affluent of the

Negro) in Tacua- rembé, the Arroyo Grande between the departments of Soriano and San José, and the San José (an affluent of

the Santa Lucia). None of the sierras or mountains in Moun- Uruguay exceed (or perhaps even attain) a height of tains.

2000 feet ; but, contrasting in their tawny colour with the grassy undulating plains, they loom up high and are often picturesque. They are ramifications of a range which, breaking away from the Andes in about 20° 8. lat., reaches the frontier of Uruguay in 32°. Here the chain divides, forming the Cuchilla de Haedo on the north and west and the Cuchilla Grande on the south and east. In the departments of Minas and Maldonado the second range takes the name of the Ghost Mountains. No accurate geological survey has yet been made, but it is known that the hills in the north are chiefly gneiss and granite and in other parts porphyry and sandstone. The hilly districts in the north and east contain minerals of many kinds, in- cluding gold, lead, copper, agate, amethyst, alabaster, and marble, The limestone, granite, and marble quarries have some commercial value ; but so far little progress has been made in the working of metallic veins. For the gold mines, see below.

The seat of government is the city of MonrEvipEo (q.v.) at the entrance of the river Plate. The harbour and roadstead of that port form the only good natural refuge for shipping for hundreds of miles south of Rio de Janeiro.

Uruguay has a healthy climate. Endemic diseases are unknown Climate.

and epidemics are rare. According to the tables of mortality for 1882, out of a total of 9640 deaths 45 were of persons over 100 years of age. In the interior, away from the sea and the shores of the great rivers, the temperature frequently rises in summer as high as 86° Fahr. and in winter falls as low as 35°°6 Fahr. In the dis- tricts bordering on the coast the thermometer seldom falls below 37°; and only for a few moments and at long intervals has it becn known to rise as high as 105°. The annual rainfall is stated to be more than twice that of Paris (19°68 inches). This arises not from the frequency of rain but from the greater quantity which falls in a given time. Observations made during the years 1842 to 1852 inclusive showed that there were in Montevideo in the summer season—November,

December, and January—70‘1 fine days, 14:1 cloudy, and 6°1 wet; in winter—May, June, and July—there were 54°83 fine, 27°1 cloudy, and 10°6 wet days.

Uruguay is intersected nearly from Rivers,

Flora.

Fauna.

Popula- tion.

UR UGuU AY

The pastoral wealth of Uruguay as of the neighbouring Argen- tine Republic is due to the fertilizing constituents of “pampa mud,” geologically associated with gigantic antediluvian animals, whose fossil remains are found abundantly in those regions. The country is rich in hard woods, suitable for cabinet work and certain building purposes. The principal trees are the alder, aloe, palm, poplar, acacia, willow, and eucalyptus (recently introduced). The “«montes,” by which are understood plantations as well as native thickets, produce amongst other woods the algarrobo, a poor imita- tion of oak ; the guayabo, a substitute for boxwood ; the quebracho, of which the red kind is compared to sandalwood; and the urunday, black and white, not unlike rosewood. Indigenous palms grow in the valleys of the Sierra José Ignacio, also to some extent in the departments of Minas, Maldonado, and Paysandu. The myrtle, rosemary, mimosa, and the scarlet-flowered ceibo are amongst the plants commonly seen. The valleys within the hill ranges are fragrant with aromatic shrubs. In the plains below the swards are gay with the scarlet and white verbena and other wild flowers of brilliant hues. The country abounds in medicinal plants. The sarsaparilla even colours the water of the Rio Negro and gives to it its name —the “black river.”

Amongst the wild animals the tiger or ounce—called in the Guarani language the “ja-gua” or “ big dog”—and the puma are found on the frontier of Brazil and on the wooded islets and banks of the larger rivers. The tapir, fox, deer, wild cat, wild dog, carpincho or water hog, and a few

small rodents nearly complete the list of quadrupeds. A little armadillo, the mulita, must be mentioned as the living representative of the antediluvian giants, the mylodon, mastodon, megatherium, &c. The ostrich—ZRhea americana—roams everywhere in the plains ; and there are a few specimens of the vulture tribe, a native crow (lean, tall, and ruffed), partridges, and quails. Parakeets are plentiful in the "montes," and the lagoons swarm with waterfowl of all descriptions. The most esteemed is the "pato real," a large duck. Of the birds of bright plumage the humming bird and the cardinal—the scarlet, the yellow, and the white—are the most attractive. The fish of the lagoons and streams are coarse, and some of them primitive in type ; but two or three kinds, found generally in the large rivers, are much prized. The varieties of fish on the sea coast are many and excellent ; 130 species are known. More than 2000 species of insects have been classified. The scorpion is rarely seen; but large and venomous spiders are common. The principal reptiles are a lizard, a tortoise, the "vivora de la cruz," a dangerous viper, so called from marks like a cross on its head, and the rattlesnake, this last in Maldonado and the stony lands of Las Minas.

At the commencement of the 19th century the population of Montevideo and the surrounding territory was estimated by Azara at 30,000, one-half of these being given to the city of Montevideo. This total seenis not to have included what remained of the in- digenous inhabitants in the north and west, though the Indian population of the Jesuit missions before these were destroyed, about the year 1767, was known to be very numerous. But the aborigines have now completely disappeared. They have been supplanted by half-breeds, from whom the class known as gauchos are mostly re- eruited. The gauchos are now being supplanted by European im- migrants and their progeny. In 1829, the epoch of the declaration of independence, the population is stated to have numbered 74,000, and in 1852, after the great war, 131,969. In 1860 the number had risen to 221,300 and in 1878 to 450,000. Comparatively recent esti- mates place it between 450,000 and 700,000, the latest official estimate being 551,768 ; but no formal census has yet been taken. In the eighteen departments of the state the proportion of foreigners is 25°41 per cent. of the population (in the department of Monte- video 42°29 per cent. and in the others 24°66 per cent.), consisting of 39,780 Spaniards, 36,303 Italians, 20,178 Brazilians, 15,546

Argentinians, 14,375 French (principally Basques), 2772 English, 2125 Germans, and 9148 of other nations. The density of the population in the metropolitan department is 365 inhabitants per square mile; in the whole republic it is 4°83, in the agricultural department of Cauelones 27°37, and in the remote departments of Tacuarembé and Rivera about 16. In respect of numbers the males have a slight preponderance over the females. Of the child- ren 20°23 per cent. are illegitimate, in the inetropolitan depart- ment 7°73 and in the rural departments 23°24. Illegitimate births have recently decreased, a fact which may be explained by the insti- tution of civil marriage and by the appointment of registrars in the remote country districts. Marriages take place at the rate of 6°8 per 1000. The death-rate is only 16°5 per 1000.

15

Salto and Artigas. The principal inland town is San José. he chief ports, besides Montevideo, are Salto, Paysandu, Fray Bentos, Mercedes, Colonia, and Maldonado.

More than two centuries ago the Banda Oriental was looked upon Agricul- by the Spanish colonies on the opposite banks of the Plate and ture and Uruguay as a station for the breeding of live stock and the cutting industry.

of timber and firewood. And at this day, in spite of the thriving foreign trade of Montevideo, it still partakes largely of this char- acter. It boasts of 20,000,000 sheep—perhaps 14,000,000 would be nearer the mark—and 8,000,000 head of cattle. The country being in general pastoral, sheep and cattle grazing is the main occupation of the people; the sheep flourish best in the southern and western departments, whilst the principal cattle districts are towards the north and east. More than two-thirds of the public wealth, estimated variously between £80,000,000 and £120,000,000, consist of land, live stock, and rural properties. Ninety-six per cent. of the exports of the country consists of live stock and their produce—wool, hides, horns, hair, sheepskins, tallow, grease, bones, bone-ash, and jerked beef. More than half the fixed property and eommercial capital is in the hands of foreigners. At Fray Bentos, in the department of Rio Negro, is the Liebig factory of extract of meat; at Colonia there is a branch of the River Plate Frozen Meat Company. But, apart from these, and some breweries, flour-

mills, tanneries, establishments in Montevideo for the making of boots and shoes and clothing, and a few local industries, unnaturally fostered by high import duties, there are no manufactures to speak of. Agriculture is still in a promising infancy. Latterly it has made great strides ; yet the export of agricultural produce appears to be relatively insignificant. At intervals during the last twenty years agricultural settlements (colonies) have been established with great success in different departments, but principally in Colonia, where the settlers are mostly Italians and Swiss. These prosperous colonies have already in Colonia outgrown the space originally allotted ; but owing to the irregular and illegal appropriation of the public lands there is no more land to bestow on settlers, native or foreign, except at the exorbitant rates demanded by privatc owners and speculators,

At Cufiapirt in Tacuarembé gold was accidentally discovered in Minerals.

1842. The mines have been worked at intervals since 1867, but, partly owing to difficulties of communication, with indifferent suc- cess. But gold-mining seems to have lately assumed a more hope- ful aspect, ope to the employment of improved and economical machinery introduced by a French company. The metals of Uruguay are found in two quite distinct systems of hills. The Cufiapiru mines are in the Santa Ana range, the auriferous quartz being found in thin layers embedded in rocks of red porphyry. The formation of the system in general resembles that of the gold – producing regions in Brazil, California, and Australia. The Pan de Azucar (Sugar-Loaf Mountain), near the south coast of Maldonado, forms the extremity of a second system, which has its origin as far north as Pernambuco in Brazil ; as developed in Uruguay it is Huronian, limestone and slate being superposed on the gneiss and granite. The metals of this system are principally silver, lead, copper, and an argentiferous lead, which in earlier times the Spaniards mistook for silver. Two copper mines at the foot of the Pan de Azucar are now in active operation.

Since the beginning of the 19th century the value of the exports Com- and imports has increased twenty-fold, and with some relapses has merce.

more than doubled in the last twenty years. In 1881 the total value was £8,116,680, and in 1885 £10,750,747. The value of the exports is always a little in excess of that of the imports. Within the last ten years the number of

vessels entering the port of Montevideo has increased only about 10 per cent., whereas the total tonnage has increased 100 per cent., owing to the large ocean steamers which trade with the port or make it a place of call. A few ycars ago the imports from Great Britain amounted to about a third of the whole, and the exports to the same country to about one-fourth of the whole. But much of the produce from the river F.ate countries in general which formerly was shipped to England or to Antwerp now goes direct to France or to Hamburg and Bremen.

Telegraph lines, with a total length of 661 miles, exist in most Commu- Submarine cables communicate with Buenos nication.

of the departments. : Ayres and the ports of Brazil, and thence with Europe. The rail- ways are comprehended in three main systems, the central, north- western, and eastern; their combined length barely reaches 300 miles. There are no public roads in the country ; but communica- tion in the more inhabited parts is easily effected over the nearly level grassy plains.

The system of national education is gratuitous and compulsory. Educa- The number of school children is over 30,000, about 5-4 per cent. of tion. the total population. The teaching at the national schools is irre- spective of religious creed or denomination, In higher education much has yet to be accomplished. There is a school of arts and trades in the capital. The university of Montevideo, founded in 1838, numbers about 1300 students. The state religion 1s Roman Catholic ; but all sects enjoy complete toleration, unless a decided non-toleration of the Jesuits be regarded as an exception to the rule.

Adminis- The country is divided into eighteen departments, of which that trative of Montevideo is the smallest, although it contains one-fourth of divisions, the total population. Adjoining this is Canelones; and in a northerly direction are those of Florida, Durazno, Tacuarembo, and Rivera, the last-named bordering on Brazil. To the eastward on the Atlantic are Maldonado and Rocha, and north and west of these Minas, Treinta y Tres, and Cerro Largo. To the west, along the Plate and Uruguay, are San José, Colonia, Soriano, Rio Negro, and Paysandu ; and farther north towards the Brazilian frontier are

Govern- ment.

Army and navy.

Finance.

History.

The legislative power of the state rests with the general assembly, consisting of two chambers, one of senators (18) and one of repre- sentatives (51). The deputies of the lower house are elected annually and directly by the people, one deputy for every 3000 of the population, or any fraction not less than 2000. One senator is named for each department. The executive power is exercised by the president of the republic, who is elected by the general assembly. The judicial power is vested in a superior court, com- posed of two courts of appeal, which temporarily supply the place of a supreme court of justice, not yet created. ;

The permanent army on a peace footing consists of 3260 men. The national guard numbers about 20,000. On an emergency the Government could put into the field 30,000 men. The regular troops are well armed and accoutred after the European fashion. The navy consists of a few small steamers and gunboats.

The estimated revenue for 1886-87 was £2,775,362 (about two- thirds from custom dues, the rest from taxes on property and from stamps, trade licences, &c.). Of the estimated expenditure about two-fifths are devoted to the payment of the interest on the public debt, which in 1883 amounted to £11,127,000. On ist July 1886 the debt was officially stated to be £14,718, 089. :

The history of Uruguay dates from 1512, when Juan Diaz de Solis entered the Parand-guazti or "sealike" estuary of the Plate and landed about 70 miles east of the present city of Montevideo. Uruguay at that time was inhabited by Indians, of whom the dominant tribe was called Charrtas, a people described as physically strong and well-formed, and endowed with a

natural nobility of character. Their habits were simple, and they were disfigured neither by the worst crimes nor by the primitive superstitions of savages. They are said to have revealed no vestiges of religion. The Charrias are generally classified as a yellow-skinned race, of the same family as the Pampa Indians; but they are also repre- sented as tanned almost black by the sun and air, without any admixture of red or yellow in their complexions. Almost beard- less, and with thin eyebrows, they had on their heads thick, black, lustrous hair, which neither fell off nor turned grey until the possessors reached the age of eighty. They lived principally upon fish, venison, and honey. In the Guarani language "Charrua" means turbulent, and by their enemies the Charruas were accounted as such, and even ferocious, although admitted to be generous to their captives. They were a curiously taciturn and reticent race. Their weapons were the bow and arrow and stones.

Solis, on his second visit, 1515-16, was slain by the Charruas in Colonia. Eleven years later Ramon, the lieutenant of Sebastian Cabot, was defeated by the same tribe. In 1603 they destroyed ina pitched battle a veteran force of Spaniards under Saavedra. During the next fifty years three unsuccessful attempts were made by the Spaniards to subdue this courageous people. The real conquest of

ruguay was commenced under Philip III. by the Jesuit missions. It was gradually consummated by the military and commercial settlements of the Portuguese, and subsequently by the Spaniards, who established themselves formally in Montevideo under General Zavala in 1729, and finally demolished the rival Portuguese settle- ment in Colonia in 1777. From 1750 Montevideo enjoyed a pro- vincial government independent of that of Buenos Ayres. 'The American rebellion, the French Revolution, and the British invasions of Montevideo and Buenos Ayres (1806-7) under Generals Auchmuty and Whitelock all contributed to the final extinction of the Spanish power on the river Plate. During the war of independence Monte- video was taken in 1814 by the Buenos-Ayrean general Alvear. A long struggle for dominion in Uruguay between Brazil and the revolutionary Government of Buenos Ayres was concluded in 1828, through the mediation of Great Britain, Uruguay being declared a free and independent state. The republic was formally con- stituted in 1830. Subsequently Juan Manuel

Rosas, dictator of Buenos Ayres, interfered in the intestine quarrels of Uruguay ; and Montevideo was besieged by his forces, allied with the native par- tizans of General Oribe, for nine years (1842-51). From the era of its independence to about 1870 the history of Uruguay is a long record of foreign invasions and intrigues, financial ruin, and politi- cal folly and crime,

See Album de la Republica Oriental del Ur i and M. de Pena (isalevideo, 1882) ; aitnete. ees tor se ee years, official documents and reports published by the Government of ruguay; Bauza, La Dominacion Espafiola en el Uruguay (Montevideo, 1880); G. EB. Bor- doni, La Repubblica dell' Uruguay (Milan, 1885); M. G. and E. T. Mulhall Handbook of the River Plate (London, 1885); The Republic of Uruguay (London,

1883); an official and statistical pamphlet by Lomba:; Re i Palgrave (1885 and 1887). "ines aa u aie

URUMIAH. See Urmta.

USBEGS. See Boxuara, Kutva, Moneors, TurKe- STAN, and TURKS.

USHANT (Fr. Ouessant), the most westerly of the islands off the coast of France, 26 miles west-north-west from Brest, belongs administratively to the department of Finistere. It is about 44 miles in length, and almost

entirely granitic, with steep and rugged coasts, accessible only at a few points. The island affords pasturage to a few sheep and horses, and contains some small villages, the chief being St Michel. The inhabitants are princi- pally pilots and fishermen. The total population in 1886 was 2307.

USHER, James (1580-1656), prelate and scholar, was born in the parish of St Nicholas, Dublin, on 4th January 1580. He was the eldest son of Arnold Usher, one of the six clerks in Chancery, and descended from the house of Nevill, one of whose scions, accompanying John Planta- genet to Ireland in the capacity of usher in 1185, adopted his official title as a surname. James Usher was sent to a school in Dublin opened by two political agents of James VI. of Scotland, who adopted this manner of averting the suspicions of Elizabeth's Government from their real object, which was to secure a

party for James in Ireland in the event of the queen's death. In 1593 Usher matriculated as one of the first students at the newly-founded university of Dublin, whose charter had been obtained in 1592 by his uncle Henry Usher, arch- bishop of Armagh. He proved a diligent student, devoting much attention to controversial theology, graduated as M.A. in 1600, and became a fellow of Trinity College. On the death of his father in 1598 he resigned the family estate to his younger brother, reserving only a small rent-charge upon it for his own maintenance, and prepared to enter into holy orders. When he was but nineteen he accepted a challenge put forth by Henry Fitz-simons, a learned Jesuit, then a prisoner in Dublin, in- viting discussion of Bellarmine's arguments in defence of Roman Catholicism, and acquitted himself with much dis- tinction. In 1600 he was appointed proctor of his college and catechetical lecturer in the university, though still a layman, and was ordained deacon and priest on the same day, in 1601, while still under the canonical age, by his uncle the primate. In 1606 he became regius professor of divinity and also chancellor of St Patrick's cathedral, Dublin. He was a frequent visiter to England to purchase books for his college library, and upon similar errands, making on these occasions the acquaintance of the most eminent scholars in London, Oxford, and Cambridge, such as Camden, Selden, Sir Thomas Bodley, and Sir Robert Cotton. He took his degree of D.D. in 1612, and in the following year published his first printed work, though not his first literary composition,—Gravissime Questionis de Christianarum Ecclesiarum, in Occidentis presertim partibus, ab Apostolicis temporibus ad nostram usque xtatem, continua successione et statu, Historica Haplicatio, wherein he took up the history of the Western Church from the point where Jewel had left off in his Apology for the Church of England, and carried it on from the 6th till past the middle of the 13th century, but never completed it. In this same year he married Phoebe, daughter of Dr Luke Chaloner, a wealthy heiress. In 1615 he took part in an attempt of the Irish clergy to impose a Calvinistic confession, em- bodying the Lambeth Articles of 1595, upon the Irish Church, and was delated to King James in consequence. But on his next visit to England in 1619 he brought with him an attestation to his orthodoxy and high professional standing, signed by the lord deputy and the members of the privy council, which, together with his own demeanour in a private conference with the king, so influenced the latter that he nominated Usher to the vacant see of Meath, of which he was consecrated bishop in 1620. In

1622 he published a controversial Discourse of the Religion anciently Professed by the Irish and British, designed to show that they were in agreement with the Church of England and opposed to the Church of Rome on the points in debate between those churches, In 1623 he was made a privy

councillor for Ireland, and in the same year was summoned to England by the king that he might more readily carry on a work he had already begun upon the antiquity of the British churches. While he was detained on this business the archbishop of Armagh died in January 1624, and the king at once nominated Usher to the vacant primacy; but severe illness and other causes impeded his return to Ireland until August 1626.

For many years Archbishop Usher was actively em- ployed both in the government of his diocese and in the publication of several learned works, amongst which may be specified Hmmanuel (a treatise upon the Incarnation), published in 1638, and Britannicarum Ecelesiarum Anti- quitates, in 1639. In 1634 he took part in the convocation which drafted the code of canons that formed the basis of Irish ecclesiastical law till the disestablishment of the Irish Church in 1869, and defeated the attempt of Bram- hall, then bishop of Derry and later his own successor in Armagh, to conform the Irish Church exactly to the doctrinal standards of the English. He put the matter on the ground of preserving the independence of the Trish Church, but the real motive at work was to maintain the Calvinistic element introduced in 1615. In 1640 he paid another visit to England on one of his usual scholarly errands, meaning to return when it was accomplished. But the rebellion of 1641 broke out while he was still at Oxford, and he never saw his native country again. He published a collection of tracts at Oxford in that year, inclusive of a defence of Episcopacy and of the doctrine of non-resistance. One blot on his memory is that, being one of the five prelates whom Charles I. consulted whether he could conscientiously assent to the Act of attainder against the earl of Strafford after having pledged his word to him for his safety, Usher joined in the casuistical advice given by all except Juxon, who alone told the king that his pledged word could not be lawfully broken. All Usher's property in Ireland was lost to him through the

rebellion, except his books and some plate and furniture, but he was assigned the temporalities of the vacant see of Carlisle for his support. In 1643 he was offered a seat in the As- sembly of Divines at Westminster, but declined it publicly in terms which drew upon him the anger of the House of Commons, and an order for the confiscation of his library was averted only by the interposition of Selden. He quitted Oxford in 1645 and went into Wales, where he remained till 1646, when he returned to London, and was in 1647 elected preacher to the Society of Lincoln's Inn, an office he continued to hold till a little before his death. During his residence in Wales a hyper-Calvinistic work entitled A Body of Divinity; or the Sum and Substance of the Christian Religion, was published under his name by Downham ; and, though he repudiated the authorship in a letter to the editor, stating that the manuscript from which it was printed was merely a commonplace-book into which he had transcribed the opinions of Cartwright and other English divines, often disapproving of them and finding them dissonant from his own judgment, yet it has been persistently cited ever since as Usher's genuine work, and as lending his authority to positions which he had long abandoned, if he ever maintained them. In 1648 he had a conference with Charles I. in the Isle of Wight, assisting him in the abortive negotiations with Parliament on the question of Episcopacy. In 1650-54 he published the work which at the time and for more than a century after- wards was accounted his most important production, the Annales Veteris et Novi Testamentt, in which he propounded a scheme of Biblical chronology which held its ground until disproved by very recent advances in scholarship, and whose dates were inserted by some unknown authority in the margin of reference editions of the authorized ver-

sion. He was to some extent favoured by Cromwell after he became lord protector, who seems to have promised Usher a pension and a grant for twenty-one years of the lands belonging to the see of Armagh; but there is no proof that either was actually carried out. In 1655 Usher published his last work, De Graca LXX. Interpretum Ver- sione Syntagma. He died on 20th March 1656, in Lady Peterborough's house at Reigate in Surrey. His body was buried in Westminster abbey, in the chapel of St Erasmus. 'To one daughter who survived him he left his library, and she sold it to the officers

and soldiers of Cromwell's army in Ireland, who deposited it in Dublin castle, whence it was removed at the Restoration and given, according to Usher's original purpose, by direction of Charles II. to the library of Trinity College, of which it still forms a part.

Usher's works are very numerous, and were first collected by Elrington and Todd, Dublin, 1847, in 17 vols. (BR. By L.)

USKUP, Usxus, or Skopiiz, a town of European Turkey, capital of the sanjak of the same name and of the vilayet of Kossova, on the upper Vardar river, about 160 miles north-west of Saloniki. It occupies a pictur- esque and important strategic position near the southern foot of the Skhar-dagh (Scodrus), which connects the Balkan range in the east with the Bosnian and Albanian highlands in the west, and forms the water-parting be- tween the streams flowing north to the Danube and those going south to the Aigean. Here also converge the ethno- logical domains of the Albanians and Slavs (Servians, Bosnians, and Bulgarians), so that the population, estimated at 28,000, is of a somewhat mixed character. Uskup has some flourishing industries, such as leather and metal-work, weaving and dyeing, and is the centre of a rich agri- cultural district growing large quantities of fruits and cereals. It is the residence of the provincial governor, the seat of a Greek archbishop, and one of the chief stations on the main line of railway which runs from Saloniki up the Vardar valley to Bosnia. It communicates with the Simnitza valley and with Prisren by practicable roads running north and north-west over the encircling ranges.

Uskup retains in a slightly modified form the ancient name of Skupi (Skopi), a city of Peonia (north Macedonia), forming a northern outpost of Greek and Roman culture towards Dardania and Dacia Aureliani.

USURY. An ancient legal conception, it has been said, corresponds not to one but to several modern concep- tions; and the proposition is equally true when economic is substituted for legal. Until quite recent times the term "usury" covered a number of essentially different social phenomena. "Thou shalt not lend upon usury to thy brother, usury of money, usury of victuals, usury of any- thing that is lent upon usury. Unto a stranger thou mayest lend upon usury ; but unto thy brother thou shalt not lend upon usury, that the Lord thy God may bless thee" (Deut. xxiii. 19, 20). In this sentence we

find in- terest of all kinds blended together, and the natural economic tendencies directly counteracted by the moral and religious law. At the present day, "usury," if used in the old sense of the term, would embrace a multitude of modes of receiving interest upon capital to which not the slightest moral taint is attached. The man who does not in some shape or other lend his capital upon "usury " is, in the modern world, generally considered as lacking in his duty to himself or his family. The change in the moral attitude towards usury is perhaps best, ex- pressed by saying that in ancient times so much of the lend- ing at interest was associated with cruelty and hardship that all lending was branded as immoral (or all interest was usury in the moral sense), whilst at present so little lending

takes place, comparatively, except on commercial principles, XXIV. — 3

that all lending is regarded as free from an immoral taint. This change in the attitude of common-sense morality in respect to "anything that is lent upon usury" is one of the most peculiar and instructive features in the economic progress of society.

"Tt is worthy of remark," says Grote (History of Greece, vol. iii. p. 144), 'that the first borrowers must have been for the most part men driven to this neces- sity by the pressure of want and contracting debt as a desperate resource without any fair prospect of ability to pay; debt and famine run together in the mind of the poet Hesiod. The borrower is in this unhappy state rather a distressed man soliciting aid than a solvent man capable of making and fulfilling a contract ; and if he cannot find a friend to make a free gift to him in the former character he would not under the latter character obtain a loan from a stranger except by the promise of exorbitant interest and by the fullest eventual power over his person which he is in a position to grant." This remark, though suggested by the state of society in ancient Greece, is largely appli- cable throughout the world until the close of the early Middle Ages. Borrowers were not induced to borrow as a rule with the view of employing the capital so obtained at a greater profit, but they were compelled of necessity to borrow as a last resort. The conditions of ancient usury find a graphic illustration in the account of the building of the second temple at Jerusalem (Neh. v. 1-12). The reasons for borrowing

are famine and tribute. Some said, '"“We have mortgaged our lands, vineyards, and houses, that we might buy corn, because of the dearth ;” others said, 'We have borrowed money for the king's tribute, and that upon our lands and vineyards . . . and, lo, we bring into bondage our sons and our daughters to be servants, . neither is it in our power to redeem them, for other men have our lands and vineyards.” In ancient Greece we find similar examples of the evil effects of usury, and a law of bankruptcy resting on slavery. In Athens about the time of Solon's legislation (594 B.c.) the bulk of the population, who had originally been small proprietors or metayers, became gradually indebted to the rich to such an extent that they were practically slaves. Those who still kept their property nominally were in the position of Irish cottiers: they owed more than they could pay, and stone pillars erected on their land showed the amount of the debts and the names of the lenders. Usury had given all the power of the state toa small plutocracy. The remedy which Solon adopted was of a kind that we are accustomed to consider as purely modern. In the first place, it is true that according to ancient practice he proclaimed a general setsachtheia, or shaking off of burdens: he cancelled all the debts made on the security of the land or the person of the debtor. This measure alone would, however, have been of little service, had he not at the same time enacted that henceforth no loans could be made on the bodily security of the debtor, and the creditor was confined to a share of the property. The consequence of this simple but effective reform was that Athens was never again disturbed by the agitation of insolvent debtors. Solon left the rate of interest to be determined by free contract, and sometimes the rate was exceedingly high, but none of the evils so generally prevalent in antiquity were experienced.

When we turn to Rome, we find exactly the same diffi- culties arising, but they were never successfully met. As in Athens in early times, the mass of the people were yeomen, living on their own small estates, and in time they became hopelessly in debt. Accordingly the legislation of the XII. Tables, about 500 3B.c., was intended to strike at the evil by providing a maximum rate of interest. Un-

fortunately, however, no alteration was made in the law.

of debt, and the attempt to regulate the rate of interest

utterly failed. In the course of two or three centuries the small free farmers were utterly destroyed. By the pressure of war and taxes they were all driven into debt, and debt ended practically, if not technically, in slavery. It would be difficult to over-estimate the importance of the influence of usury on the social and economic history of the Roman republic. In the provinces the evils of the system reached a much greater height. In 84 B.c. the war tax imposed by Sulla on the province of Asia was at first advanced by Roman capitalists, and rose within fourteen years to six times its original amount. It is interesting to observe that the old law of debt was not really abolished until the dictatorship of Julius Cesar, who practically adopted the legislation of Solon more than five centuries before ; but it was too late then to save the middle class. About this time the rate of interest on first-class security in the city of Rome was only about 4 per cent., whilst in the provinces from 25 to 50 per cent. were rates often exacted. Justinian made the accumulation of arrears (anatocismus) illegal and fixed the rate at 6 per cent., except for mercantile loans, in which the rate received was 8 per cent. On the whole it was truly said of usury during the republic and early years of the empire: "Sed vetus urbi fenebre malum et seditionum discordiarumque creberrima causa." Even when it came to be authorized by Roman law under certain restrictions, it was still looked upon as a pernicious crime. 'Cicero mentions that Cato, being asked what he thought of usury, made no other answer to the question than by asking the person who spoke to him what he thought of murder."

It was only natural, considering the evils produced by usury in ancient Greece and Rome, that philosophers should have tried to give an a priori explanation of these abuses. The opinion of Aristotle on the barrenness of money be- came proverbial, and was quoted with approval throughout the Middle Ages. This condemnation by the moralists was enforced by the fathers of the church on the conversion of the empire to Christianity. They held usury up to detestation, and practically made no distinction between interest on equitable moderate terms and what we now term usurious exactions! The consequence of the con- demnation of usury by the church

was to throw all the dealing in money in the early Middle Ages into the hands of the Jews. A full account of the mode in which this traffic was conducted in England is given by Madox in chapter vil. of his History of the Exchequer (London, 1711). The Jews were considered as deriving all their privileges from the hand of the king, and every privilege was dearly bought. There can be no doubt that they were subjected to most arbitrary exactions. At the same time, however, their dealings were nominally under the supervision of the Jews' exchequer, and a number of regulations were enforced, partly with the view of protecting borrowers and partly that the king might know how much his Jews could afford to pay. It was probably mainly on account of this money- lending that the Jews were so heartily detested and liable to such gross ill-treatment by the people. A curious illustration of this popular animosity is found in the insertion of a clause in the charters granted by Henry III. to Newcastle and Derby, forbidding any Jew to reside in either place. Ultimately in 1290 the Jews were expelled in a body from the kingdom under circumstances of great barbarity, and were not allowed to return until the time of Cromwell. Before the expulsion of the Jews, however, in spite of canonical opposition, Christians had begun to take interest openly; and one of the most interesting ex- amples of the adaptation of the dogmas of the Church of

1 For a popular account of the reasons given in support of the

Canonical objections to usury, and of the modifications and exceptions admitted in some quarters, see W. Cunningham's Usury.

a eS a lll IZtU(gQGtrvurnCGPrurrrcrcccca a LL

Plate II,

U TA—

Rome to the social and economic environment is found in the growth of the recognized exceptions to usury. In this respect the canonical writers derived much assistance from the later Roman law. Without entering into technicalities, it may be said generally that an attempt was made to distinguish between usury, in the modern sense of unjust exaction, and interest on capital. Unfortunately, however, the modifications which were

really admitted were not openly and avowedly made by a direct change in the statutes, but for the most part they were effected (as so many early reforms) under the cover of ingenious legal fictions. One of the most curious and instructive results of this treatment has been well brought out by Walter Ross in the introduction to his Lectures on the Law of Scotland (1793). He shows, in a very remarkable manner and at considerable length, that "'to the devices fallen upon to defeat those laws (i.e., against usury) the greatest part of the deeds now in use both in England and Scotland owe their original forms" (vol. i. p. 4). One of the consequences of this indirect method of reforming the law was that in some cases the evil was much exaggerated. "The judges," says Ross, "could not award interest for the money; that would have been contrary to law, a moral evil, and an oppression of the debtor; but, upon the idea of damages and the failure of the debtor in per- formance, they unmercifully decreed for double the sum borrowed." He may well remark that imagination itself is incapable of conceiving a higher degree of inconsist- ency in the affairs of men (compare Blackstone, vol. iii. pp. 484, 435).

In the limits assigned to this article it is impossible to enter further into the history of the question, but an attempt may be made to summarize the principal results so far as they bear upon the old controversy, which has again been revived in some quarters, as to the proper relation of law to usury and interest. (1) The opinion of Bentham that the attempt directly to suppress usury (in the modern sense) will only increase the evil is abundantly verified. Mere prohibition under penalties will practically lead to an additional charge as security against risk. The evils must be partly met by the general principles applicable to all contracts (the fitness of the contracting parties, &c.) and partly by provisions for bankruptcy. Peculiar forms of the evil, such as mortgaging to excessive amounts in countries largely occupied by peasant proprietors, may be met by particular measures, as, for example, by forbidding the accumulation of arrears. (2) The attempt to control interest in the commercial sense is both useless and harm- ful. It is certain to be met by fictitious devices which at the best will cause needless inconvenience to the contract- ing parties ; restraints will be placed on the natural flow of capital, and industry will suffer. (3) In the progress of society borrowing for commercial purposes has gradually become of overwhelming importance compared with borrow- ing for

purposes of necessity, as in earlier times. By far the greater part of the interest now paid in the civilized world is, in the language of the English economists, only a fair reward for risk of loss and for management of capital, and a necessary stimulus to saving.

For information upon the modern legislation affecting the subject, see INTEREST and PLEDGE.

On the increasing share of the products of industry given to labour compared with capital, compare Leroy-Beaulieu's Réparti- tion des Richesses (1880), and E. Atkinson's Distribution of Products (1885) and Margin of Profits. (J. S. Nt.)

UTAH, a Territory of the United States, bounded on the N. by Idaho and Wyoming, on the E. by Colorado, on the S. by Arizona, and on the W. by Nevada. The eastern boundary coincides with 109° and the western with 114° W. long. The southern boundary is the 37th

re 19

parallel of latitude ; the northern is on the 42d parallel between the meridians of 114° and 111°, while east of the latter meridian it follows the 41st parallel. The area of Utah is 84,970 square miles.

The surface is greatly diversified, containing high moun- Physical Near the features.

tains, broad arid valleys, and desert plateaus. middle of the northern boundary the Wahsatch Mountains enter the Territory, and they extend southward along its middle line, finally degenerating into plateaus whose eleva- tion diminishes southward. This is the principal moun- tain range of the Territory, and its position marks the highest land, from which, as a watershed, the streams flow off eastward and westward, the former to the Colorado of the West, the latter to sink in the Great Basin. East- ward from the Wahsatch, along the northern boundary of Utah, stretches a broad, massive range, known as the Uintah. These mountains are exceptional in that their trend is east and west, 7.e., nearly at right angles to the other uplifts of the Rocky Mountain system. South of this range and east of the

Wahsatch is a region of pla- teaus, horizontal or but slightly inclined, and receding step by step from the high mountains. In this region all the streams flow in cafions carved in the nearly horizontal sandstones and limestones, to depths ranging from a few hundreds to several thousands of feet. West of the Wah- satch stretches the Great Basin, a region having no outlet to the sea. Its surface presents an alternation of broad desert valleys and narrow abrupt mountain ranges, rising sharply from the valleys. The mean elevation of the Terri- tory is 6100 feet. The lowest portion is near the southern border, where it is less than 3000 feet above the sea; but, on the other hand, many mountain summits exceed 13,000 feet in height. Of the principal peaks may be mentioned Mount Nebo (11,680 feet) in the Wahsatch Range, and Gilberts Peak (13,987), La Motte (12,892), and Burro (12,834) in the Uintah Range. The principal stream of eastern Utah is the Colorado of the West. This is formed by the junction of Green river, which rises in the Wind River Mountains of Wyoming, and the Grand, whose sources are in the snow-fields upon Long's Peak in Colorado. The Green and the Colorado receive numerous branches from the Uintah and Wahsatch Ranges, among them the Uintah, Price, Fremont, San Rafael, and Virgin. With the exception of the first-named, all these streams have their courses far below the general surface, in the characteristic cafions of this strange region. In western Utah the climate is very arid, and, consequently, there are few living streams. The Great Basin, of which this region forms a part, consists of a large number of basins, differing greatly in magnitude. In each of these the waters from the surrounding mountains sink or collect in a lake, which, having no outlet, rises or falls with the excess of supply or evaporation. The largest of these basins is that of Great Salt Lake, which stretches along the western base of the Wahsatch Range. The lowest part of this valley is occupied by the lake, into which drain the rivers from the western slope of the mountains, the chief being the Bear, Weber, and Ogden, while the Provo, Spanish Fork, and American Fork contribute to it through Utah Lake and the river Jordan. In former geologic times Great Salt Lake had an extent vastly greater than at present, as is evidenced by the well-marked shore-lines upon the moun- tains around and within its basin. These shore lines have an altitude nearly 1000 feet higher than the present level of the lake. This higher stage, which has been named Lake Bonneville, was reduced to its present stage primarily by the formation of an outlet at the northern end of Cache valley, by which its waters flowed off through Snake

and Columbia rivers to the Pacific, and secondarily by the excess of evaporation over supply. Since the settlement

Geology.

Fauna and flora.

Popula- tion.

20

of the country, the surface of the lake rose, so that from an area of 1700 square miles in 1849 it had expanded in 1870 to about 2360. But in more recent years it has been slowly receding. Together with these general move- ments, slight oscillations with the changes of season are constantly going on. As Great Salt Lake has no outlet save evaporation, its water contains a large amount of saline matter in solution. The proportion varies inversely with the varying height of the water in the lake, ranging from 14°8 to 22°4 per cent. by weight. The only other bodies of water of considerable magnitude are Bear and Utah Lakes, both fresh and both tributary to Great Salt Lake. Besides the tributaries to Great Salt Lake, the only other stream of importance west of the Wahsatch is the Sevier, which, rising in the plateaus south of the Wahsatch, passes by a circuitous route into the deserts to the west, where it sinks. Formerly it flowed into Sevier Lake, whence its waters were evaporated, but the extensive use of the river for irrigation has caused the lake to disappear.

The Wahsatch Range is in general terms a great mono- clinal uplift, although in detail it is a complicated system of uplifts and faults. The general dip of the beds is to- wards the east, while the fractured edges face the Great Basin. The core of the range is composed of Archzan rocks, while sedimentary beds, as high as the Jurassic, are found upon its eastern flank. The Uintah Range is a broad anticlinal, surmounted by rocks of the Carboniferous age, with more recent formations lying upon its north and south flanks. The rocks of the plateau region are almost entirely sedimentary and lie horizontally, or nearly so. The ranges of the Great Basin are of diversified character, a large proportion of them being monoclinal uplifts, expos- ing the Archean rocks, with sedimentaries tilted

upon their slopes. The valleys have in all cases-a floor of Quaternary deposits, which effectually cover the rock formations that underlie them.

The animal and vegetable life presents variety corre- sponding with that of the topography. Upon the moun- tains and high plateaus are forests of Conifer, with groves of aspen skirting them at their lower limit. Here are found bears of different species, the mule deer, and occa- sionally the elk (wapiti) and the antelope. Upon the lower plateaus and in the desert valleys of the Great Basin life is not. abundant. Pifion pine and cedar, Artemisia, cacti, and yucca characterize the vegetation; while of animals there are few except the coyote, prairie dog, rattle- snake, and scorpion.

The settled portion of Utah lies mainly along the western base of the Wahsatch and in the valleys of that range, particularly in the northern part of the Territory. There are also considerable settlements near the southern bound- ary, in the valleys of the Virgin river. The population numbered 143,963 in 1880, showing an increase of 65:8 per cent. since 1870. The population is at present (1888) probably not far from 175,000. In 1850 the total was only 11,380; in 1860 it had risen to 40,273, and in 1870 to 86,786. Probably four-fifths of the population are adherents of the 'Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints" or Mormons, as they are popularly designated (see Mormonism). This proportion is steadily diminish- ing as the mining industries, the manufactures, and trans- portation increase, thus bringing in a constantly-increasing "Gentile" element. Of the aggregate population males are decidedly in excess of females: in 1880 there were 100 of the former to 93 of the latter, showing that poly- gamy was not generally practised. The proportion of foreign-born inhabitants is exceptionally large: in 1880 there were 44 foreign-born to 100 natives, 7.e., nearly one- third of the population were immigrants. Of this foreign

element there came from England, 19,654; Denmark, 7791; Sweden, 3750; Scotland, 3201; Wales, 2390; Ireland, 1321; Norway, 1214; Switzerland, 1040; Ger- many, 885. Thus England supplies nearly one-half and Denmark nearly one-fifth, while Germany and Ireland, which furnish the great bulk of the immigrants to the United States at large, are but feebly represented among the Mormons.

Utah is divided into twenty-four counties, enumerated, with their population in 1880, in the subjoined table.

County. Pop. County Pop. County. Pop. Beaver …..... SOLS a MANE ee snes « 8,085 || Sevier …..... 4,457 Box Elder ….| 6,761 |} Millard…..... 8,727 || Summit 4,921 @ache …. 2,562 |} Morgan …... 1,783 |) Tooele…..... 4,497 Davis … p27) leet Witte? on. wc. 1,651 || Uintah …... 799 Emery …..... btsi6}" ||| JRE gaanoons 15263) ||| Uitahy so… .... 17,978 Garfield] ..... Be Salt Lake ….| 31,977 || Wahsateh ….] 2,927 1 (O04 Saeeereprecr es 4,013 |} San Juan…... 204 || Washington ..| 4,235 UPD a sce evayetecaren 8,474 || San Pete …... 11,557 || Weber…..... 12,344

The principal cities, with their populations in 1880, are, —Salt Lake City, the capital of the Territory, 20,768 ; Ogden, in the Salt Lake valley, at the confluence of the Ogden and Weber rivers, 6069; Provo, in the valley of Utah Lake, 3432; and Logan, in Cache valley, 3396. There are numerous other smaller places, making a large aggregate of city and village population. This is a result of the policy of the Mormon Church, which has favoured the grouping of the farming population in villages.

As everywhere throughout the western United States, with the altitude above the sea there is a gradation of climate with respect to aridity. Upon the higher mountains there is sufficient rainfall for the needs of vegetation. But upon the low country the precipitation is slight, so that irrigation is almost universally practised by the agricul- turist. The annual rainfall at Salt Lake City, which is very favourably situated, being south-east of Great Salt Lake and at the immediate base of the Wahsatch Moun- tains, is about 30 inches. In all other habitable parts of the Territory it is less, being not greater than 10 inches in the southern and western portions. Temperature, also, has a wide range in different parts of the Territory. The mean annual temperature at Salt Lake City, which may serve as an average of the habitable parts of Utah, is about 45°, The range of temperature between summer and winter and between day and night is very great, and the changes of temperature are often startling in their magni- tude and abruptness.

The principal industries of Utah are agriculture and mining. Industry.

At Salt Lake City and Ogden some manufacturing is done, and in the remote parts of the Territory cattle and sheep raising is carried on toa limited extent. Agriculture is confined mainly to the Mormons, while mining enterprise is carried on almost ex- clusively by Gentiles. In 1880 the area of land in farms was 655,524 acres, or 1:2 per cent. of the total area of the Territory. A little over two-thirds of this was classed as improved, and nearly all the available water in the Territory was used to cultivate it. The average size of the farms was 69 acres, which was less than in any other State or Territory. The total value of the annual agri- cultural produce was valued at $3,337,410. The number of manu- facturing establishments was 640 and the value of the product $4,324,992. The principal mineral products are silver and lead, which are found associated in the same ores. The mines are situated almost entirely in the Wahsatch Range, east and south- east of Salt Lake City. During 1885 silver to the value of $6,750,000 and 28,000 tons of lead were mined. Of the latter metal Utah, next to Colorado, produces the largest quantity of any State or Territory of the Union. Utah is well supplied with railroads.

of these two lines being at Ogden. the Union Pacific runs northward to Montana and another south- ward to Salt Lake City and thence to the southern part of the Territory. The Denver and Rio Grande Western connects Salt Lake City with Pueblo, in Colorado. In addition to these, there are

1 Formed since the census of 1880 was taken.

The Union and Central Com- Pacific Railroads cross it near the northern boundary, the junction munica- From this place a branch of tion.

numerous short branches in the mountains, making a total length of 876 miles in operation at the close of 1885, Adminis- 'The executive is administered by a governor and a secretary, ap- tration. pointed by the president of the United States, and by a treasurer, nominated by the governor. There is a legislature, the members of which are chosen by the people. The judiciary consists of a chief justice and two associate justices, together with a United States district attorney and a marshal, all appointed by the pre- sident of the United States. The Territory has no debt. The taxable property was assessed in 1885 at $34,821,957. The rate of taxation

was $1°20 per $100. One-fourth of the sum raised is for the support of common schools. Recent While in some respects the influence of the Mormon Church Jegisla- upon its communicants is for good, in promoting industry, eco- tion. nomy, and sobriety, there are other features of it which are not only objectionable but dangerous. Polygamy is but an incident of the system, and the only objectionable one which can be success- fully combated. The all-powerful influence of the church in things temporal as well as in things spiritual is a dangerous feature, and one which can only be corrected by slow-moving social influences. For many years Congress has been trying to frame legislation which would destroy polygamy in Utah, but until recently the action of the courts was frustrated and the laws nullified by the power of the Mormon Church. ll elective offices were filled by Mormons. Juries were necessarily made up mainly of Mormons, whose obliga- tions to the church were superior to any Gentile oath. The Ed- munds Bill, passed in 1882, was the first efficient piece of legisla- tion. This measure declared all elective offices vacant, and consti- tuted a commission to oversee elections and appoint the judges and other officers of election. It disfranchised all polygamists. It annulled the action of the Territorial legislature in extending the ballot to women. It disqualified from service on juries all who accepted the dogmas of the Mormon Church regarding polygamy. Under the operation of this Act the leading polygamists have either been sent to jail or have gone into hiding. A bill of a still more drastic nature was passed by Congress in 1887. It annulled all Acts of the Territorial legislature designed in the remotest degree for the protection of polygamy. It provided that in trials for poly- gamy the wife may be a competent witness, that every marriage ceremony shall be made a matter of public record, and that all illegitimate children shall be disinherited. It annulled all Acts of the legislature incorporating and continuing the charters of the Mormon Church and of the Perpetual Emigration Fund Co., and confiscated their property, with the exception of the church build- ings and parsonages, devoting it to the support of common schools in the Territory. History. The area of Utah was acquired by the United States from Mexico in 1848, under the provisions of the treaty of Guadelupe Hidalgo. It was organized as a Territory in 1850, and at that time it com- prised all the country lying between the eastern boundary of Cali- fornia and the western border of the Great Plains. The subsequent creation of Nevada, Colorado, and Wyoming reduced it to its present limits. In 1847 the Mormons, under

*the leadership of Brigham Young, had commenced to make settlements in Salt Lake valley, and they: rapidly extended themselves over the fertile valleys of the Territory. Prior to the advent of railroads very few Gentiles settled in Utah ; but in recent years, as this once remote region has become easily accessible, the Gentile element has greatly increased. For further details of the history of the Territory, see (H. G**

Mormons,

UTICA (Irvxn), an ancient Pheenician colony in Africa near the mouth of the Bagradas (Majerda), about 20 miles north-west of Carthage. The site, which is still covered with ruins, including those of a vast amphitheatre, lies on a hill which is now 8 or 10 miles from the coast, but in ancient times a bay ran close up to the city, and the remains of quays can still be traced. Founded 1101 3.c. (see vol. xviii. p. 806), Utica was nearly three centuries older than Carthage. The two cities were generally allies ; but Utica, jealous of its neighbour, sometimes acted inde- pendently, and in the Third Punic War it made a separate peace with Rome, and reaped the fruits of the destruction of the greater Punic city, becoming the emporium of Roman trade and the capital of the province, till Carthage was re- built by Cesar in 44 8.c, It was here that the younger Cato killed himself, Utica received the Roman civitas from Augustus, was made a colony by Hadrian, and received the jus Italicum from Septimius Severus, The city was finally destroyed by the Arabs.

The name of Utica is probably Pheenician, and is generally taken to stand for NP'ny, the "old" city, perhaps as distinguished from Carthage, the 'new city." Olshausen, however, suggests the form

PAAY ('colony "). The ruins at Bu Shatir were identified with Utica by Shaw. For plansand a reconstruction, see Daux, Emporia Phéniciens, and atlas to Tissot, Géog. Prov. Rom. d' Afrique (1888).

UTICA, a city of Oneida county, New York, United States, about 180 miles north-north-west from New York City, is situated on the south bank of the Mohawk, about 400 feet above sea-level. The site of the city hasa gentle

slope towards the river. The surrounding country is thickly settled, the principal industries being the manu- facture of cotton, woollen, and iron goods, the production of butter and cheese, and the raising of hops. Utica is the chief market for cheese in the United States, The city is touched by five railroads, the New York Central and Hudson River ; New York, Ontario, and Western ; Rome, Watertown, and Ogdensburg ; Delaware, Lackawanna, and Western ; and New York, West Shore, and Buffalo; and by the Erie Canal. The city is irregularly built. Of the manufacturing industries, which are varied, the most im- portant is that of clothing, and next to it is that of boots and shoes. One of the State lunatic asylums is in Utica. The population of the city in 1880 was 33,914, an increase in ten years of less than 12 per cent., and in 1887 it was estimated at 40,000.

The first settlement at Utica was made near the middle of the 18th

century. In 1798 the village was incorporated, and it received a city charter in 1832.

UTILITARIANISM. See Eruics, vol. viii. pp. 605-7.

UTRECHT, a province of Holland, bounded north by North Holland and the Zuyder Zee, east by Guelderland, south by Guelderland and South Holland, and west by South Holland, has an area of 534 square miles and a population (1886) of 212,454. It belongs chiefly to the basin of the Rhine: the Neder Rijn, which skirts its southern border, after sending off the Kromme Rijn at Wijk, becomes the Lek, and the Kromme Rijn, in its turn, after sending off the Vecht at Utrecht to the Zuyder Zee, assumes the name of the Oude Rijn. The north- eastern portion of the province is drained by the Hem, which falls into the Zuyder Zee. In the west the province is flat and in many places below sea-level ; towards the east, where the Veluwe begins, it is more undulating, and at Zeist reaches a height of 164 feet. The more produc- tive region is in the west; towards the east the soil be- comes sandy and heath-clad. Nearly half (46°5 per cent.) of the total area is under grass; the chief agricultural pro- ducts are corn (buckwheat) and tobacco; bee-keeping is extensively carried on in the east, and there is a bee market at Veenendaal. The province is traversed by rail- ways to Amstertlam, Rotterdam, Leyden, and The Hague, Bois-le-duc, Arnheim, Zutphen, and Zwolle, all converging in Utrecht; it is also amply provided with navigable

water-ways. Of the total population 62 per cent. are re- tumed as Protestant, 37 per cent. as Roman Catholic, and las Jewish. Besides Urrecurt (see below), the capital, only one other town, Amersfoort, has a population exceed- ing 5000 (15,178 in 1887); but in density of population Utrecht ranks third among the provinces of Holland.

UTRECHT, capital of the above province, 22 miles by rail south-south-east from Amsterdam, 38 north-east from Rotterdam, and 35 nearly west from Arnheim, is situated at the point where the Kromme Rijn bifurcates into the Vecht and the Oude Rijn. The town is traversed by two canals or arms of the river, which are crossed by numerous bridges ; it is surrounded by strong forts and strategically covers Amsterdam, though its old ramparts were de- molished in 1830 and have given place to shady promen- ades. The streets are more regular, the squares more spacious, and the canals fewer than in most Dutch towns. Of its twenty churches the most important is the old cathedral of St Martin, a large Gothic building erected in 1254-67, on the site of the original structure founded by

St Willibrord about 720 and completed by Bishop Adelbold about 1015. Only the choir, transept, and western tower (338 feet) now remain, the nave having been blown down by a violent hurricane (1st August 1674) ; the interior (30 feet

Si SCT NG

Plan of Utrecht.

wide and 115 feet in height) has been clumsily fitted up with pews and galleries for Protestant worship, so that the effect of its eighteen slender columns is almost entirely lost. On the south side are fine Gothic cloisters, adjoining which are the plain buildings of the university, founded in 1634 (with 41 professors and nearly 600 students) ; con- nected with the university are a valuable library (150,000 volumes), a museum of natural history, physical and chemical laboratories, a botanic garden, and an observa- tory. The town-hall (built in 1830) and the Museum Kunstliefde have small collections of pictures and other objects of art, and the

archiepiscopal museum, opened in 1872, also contains excellent examples of the sacred art of the Netherlands. Among other buildings of interest may be mentioned the royal mint, and the Paushuizen (“ pope’s house”), built by Adrian Floriszoon Boeyens, afterwards Pope Adrian VI., a native of Utrecht, in 1517. Utrecht has excellent schools and several literary and scientific societies, besides barracks, a large military hospital, and a veterinary school. The most important industrial estab- lishments are cigar-factories, manufactories of chemicals and earthenware, and brass-foundries. There is an active trade in the produce of the manufactures, and also in corn, cattle, butter, and cheese. To the east of the town is the Maliebaan or Mall, a triple avenue of trees about half a mile in length. The population of Utrecht in 1876 was 66,106, and in 1887 it was 79,166.

Utrecht (“Oude Trecht” or “old ford”), the Trajectum ad Rhe- num of the Itinerary of Antoninus, was known as Wiltaburg by the Frisians and Franks. Dagobert, king of the East Franks, built a chapel here in 630, and under St Willibrord Utrecht in 696 be- came an episcopal see. The bishops rose to great power during the Middle Ages, and the city was frequently an imperial residence. Conrad II. (1039) and Henry V. (1125) both died at Utrecht, and their hearts were buried in the crypt of the cathedral. The city was handed over to Charles V. by Bishop Henry in 1527. The first confederation of the Dutch provinces was formed in Utrecht in 1579. The celebrated peace of Utrecht between France and Great Britain, Savoy, Portugal, Prussia, and the states of Holland was concluded here on 11th April 1718. Utrecht has since 1728 been the headquarters of the JANSENISTs (q.v.).

UTRERA, a town of Spain, in the province of Seville,

18 miles to the south-south-east of that city, on the rail- way to Jerez and Cadiz, at the junction for Moron and Osuna, lies about 8 miles from the left bank of the Guadal- quivir, in a pleasant valley between two gentle undulations of the foot-hills of the southern sierra. It has no buildings of special interest ; the principal church, which is large and prominent, is Gothic in style and dates chiefly from the 15th century, but some of its most conspicuous features belong to the 17th. The place enjoys considerable pro-

sperity, due mainly to the fertility of the surrounding dis- trict, which produces large quantities of corn, and also fruit of various sorts, oil, and wine. The uncultivated " dehesas " skirting the Guadalquivir support large numbers of sheep and brood mares, and are famous throughout Spain for the bulls they send to the bull-ring. Many of the inhabitants are enterprising landowners or large farmers, and pursue highly enlightened methods of agriculture. An important fair is held at Utrera in September. The population with- in the municipal limits in 1877 was 15,093.

Utrera was of some importance during the Mohammedan period and has the remains of a Moorish castle. It was taken by St Ferdinand, but did not finally become subject to the sovereigns of Castile until the reign of Alphonso XI. (1340).

UXBRIDGE, an ancient borough and market town of Middlesex, England, is pleasantly situated on the Colne and Frayswater, on the Grand Junction Canal, and on a branch of the Great Western Railway, 154 miles west of London. The principal street is spacious and contains a number of good shops, but the streets leading off it are narrow and tortuous. The suburbs have of late greatly increased. The Colne is crossed by a brick bridge of five arches, The principal public buildings are the church of St Margaret in the Perpendicular style, consisting of nave, aisles, and low embattled tower, the town-hall (1836), and the cottage hospital. There are a large number of charities, On the banks of the Colne are several flour-mills. The town possesses several breweries and an iron-foundry. By the Grand Junction Canal, near which there are several saw-mills, a considerable trade is carried on in timber, slates, and coal. The town is governed bya local board of eighteen members. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 496 acres) was 7497 in 1871 and 7669 in

1881.

Uxbridge was one of the small boroughs originated by Alfred the Great. It is not mentioned in Domesday. For a long period it was of considerable importance as a frontier town, and latterly possessed a regular garrison. At Uxbridge negotiations were begun, on 80th January 1645, between the commissioners of Charles I. and the Parliament, but were broken off on 22d February. In 1647 the Parliamentary forces had for some time their

headquarters in the town. It remained a garrison town until 1689. It obtained the grant of a market from Henry II. Until the close of the 17th century it was governed by bailiffs.

UZ. The "land of Uz" (y4y pax) is best known as the scene of the story of Job. Job seems to be represented as living in the country east of Palestine and not far from Edom, to which his friend Eliphaz the Temanite belonged. In Lam. iv, 21 the Edomites appear as in possession of the land of Uz, while in Gen. xxxvi. 28 Uz is one of the pre-Edomite inhabitants of Seir. On the other hand, in Gen. x. 23 and xxii. 21 Uz (or Huz) is Aramean. Fin- ally in Jer, xxv. 20 "the kings of the land of Uz" appear in a clause, absent from the LXX., which seems to be a gloss on the preceding clause, and so to refer to Arabs. Medieval tradition places the home of Job in the Hauran (see Wetzstein in Delitzsch, Z ob), but it is doubtful whether all the Biblical references can apply to one district. The Septuagint forms from Uz the adjective Avoiris, which points to a pronunciation Aus = Arabic Aud, the name of a god whose worship was widely spread and might there- fore be readily borne by tribes or attached to districts in several regions.

23

V

is our twenty-second letter ; it represents the voiced V labio-dental to which F corresponds as the voiceless sound. It has been shown under U that these two symbols were originally one, and that their differentia- tion took place for convenience of writing only. But it was afterwards put to a good use, although not quite the natural one. It would have been better, while retaining wu for the vowel, to have used » for the corresponding labial consonant, which is actually denoted by w. The difference of u and w is simply that of vowel and con-

then had the w-sound there would have been no difficulty in producing the same sound in Teutonic words.

In the Roman system of numerals V stands for five. The reason is uncertain. The old view that it represents half ten (X), as D (500) represents half a thousand (M, originally ©), has no very high degree of probability. It is

perhaps as likely that L, IT., III., ITIL, denoted the uplifted fingers used in counting, and that V denoted the whole hand with the thumb on one side and the four fingers together on the other,

sonant: for ~ there is a sufficient opening of the lips to allow the voice to pass through without friction ; but for w the aperture is so much closed, by bringing together

*VACCINATION (from Lat. vacca, a cow), the name Rela- given in France to the Jennerian practice of cowpoxing, tions of shortly after the practice began in England C1G@8), "Wie *mell-*

pox, cow-

either the inner edges of the lips (as in England) or the outer edges (as in some parts of Germany), that there is an audible amount of friction as the voice passes. The organs employed are the lips only in each case, whereas for v the upper teeth and the lower lip are the factors of the sound.

The symbol v does not occur in the oldest of our texts : it is represented by f, as in "heofon," " ofer," "hlaford " (lord). The f generally is voiced when medial, but voice- less when initial. This absence of two symbols for the corresponding pairs of fricative consonants has been noted already in the use of d (or p) for both th and dh (see under T); salso did duty, as it often does still, for both s and z In Middle English « appears commonly for » The introduction of v into English writing is due to French scribes ; as a matter of fact almost all the words which begin with v are of French origin,

*It is tolerably certain that in Latin v represented the labial and not the labio-dental consonant. The arguments in favour of this view are singly not very important, but they are fairly numerous. The interchange of the w and vsounds, as in " genua" and "genva," "solvo" and *soluo," &c., is most easily explained on the hypothesis that »=w ; so are the loss of v, as in "audi(v)i," "ama(ve)ram," é&c., and the retention of o after » in words like "cervos" (whereas in other combinations o sank to a), because " cer-woos" would have been a more inconvenient combination than "cervoos." Again, the name of the letter should have been "ev," not "ve," like all other fricative sounds, "ef," "el," "es," dc.; but in explosives "be," "de," " pe,"*

“te,” with the vowel following. There is no reason why this should not have been the case if v were really our 2, a labio-dental ; but if it was w the name “ew” was prac- tically impossible, because the w would have been inaudible ; therefore it went over to the other class of names. To these arguments may be added others drawn from trans- literation. Mr A. J. Ellis (Z. £. P., ii. p. 518) agrees that Latin » cannot have been our labio-dental, but he thinks it probable that it was the South-German w, which differs from the North-German w (our 2, labio-dental) in the manner described above, with some other points of difference. His chief ground is that it is hard to imagine w producing v except through an intermediate labial of the North-German kind. There is something in this argu- ment. In any case the difference between these two w-sounds is slight compared with the difference between either of them and the labio-dental v. At what time the labial passed into the labio-dental of the Romance lan- guages is uncertain. We can fix limits of time before Which the change must have taken place: eg., it must have been before the time when the Romanized Gauls, trying to pronounce the Teutonic w in “ “werra,” “ward,” &c., produced “ guerra,” “guard,” &c. If their v had

procedure was based almost exactly on the earlier practice of inoculating the smallpox, the matter being inserted under the skin of the arm by a lancet point ; also the continuance of the same stock from arm to arm through a series of cases was an idea taken from some of the more adroit variolators. To replace smallpox inoculation by cowpox inoculation under certain specified circumstances was Jenner’s tentative project. The history of the intro- duction of cowpoxing, given in the article Jenner (vol. xlil. p. 623), is here supplemented from the point of view of historical criticism.

It is right to say that the views expressed in the present article diverge in many points from the opinions generally received among medical men, and must be re- garded not as the exposition of established and undisputed doctrine, but as the outcome of an independent and laborious research.

Jenner’s originality consisted in boldly designating cow- Jenner.

pox as variole vaccine or smallpox of the cow, and in tracing cowpox itself back to the grease of the horse’s hocks. The latter contention was at length set aside by practical men as a crude fancy; the former designation is just

as arbitrary and untenable. It was elaborately shown by Pearson in 1802, and has often been confirmed by subsequent writers, that the vesicle of inoculated cow- pox, even while it remains a vesicle, is quite unlike a single pustule of smallpox. But it is only for the vesicular stage of cowpox that there is even an allegation of likeness to variola ; the vesicle of natural or unmodified cowpox is only the stage of the disease before it becomes an ulcer, either inflammatory or indurated. Inoculated horse grease has the same vesicular stage ; and so also has the venereal pox when it is inoculated experimentally on the skin. These three very different infections have the same kind of vesicle, in every case unlike a smallpox pustule, and the same natural termination in a phagedenic or indurated sore.

Jenner's originality in starting vaccination in practice is for the most part misunderstood. When he published his Inquiry in June 1798, he had twice succeeded in raising vaccine vesicles by experiment,—the first time in 1796 with matter from a milker's accidental sore, and the second time in March 1798 with matter direct from the cow. The first experiment was not carried beyond one remove from the cow; the second was carried to the fifth remove, when the succession failed. A third ex- periment, in the summer of 1798, failed from the outset ; and his fourth and last experiment, in November-December 1798, led to nothing but extensive phagedenic ulceration in two cases out of six vaccinated.

1 See Ricord, Traité Complet, 1851, plate i. figs. 6 and 7 and ii. 7,

8, and 9; also H. Lee, Med. Chir. Trans., xliv. p. 2388, 2d plate, fig, 2,

Histori- cal sources of vac- cine lymph.

In this posture of affairs Woodville of the inoculation hospital, London, succeeded in January 1799 in starting a succession of arm-to-arm vaccinations from a London cow, which were exceptionally free from the ulcerative termination. From that source Jenner himself was sup- plied with lymph in February, while more than two hundred practitioners both at home and abroad were sup- plied some three weeks later. There was a quarrel with Woodville in due course, and an attempt to set up an authentic

Jennerian lymph independent of the London stock. But the merits of this claim (which otherwise rests on the vague evidence of Marshall) may be judged of by the fact that Ring's application to Jenner in Sep- tember 1799 for genuine lymph was answered by the latter with a supply of matter which was none other than Wood- ville's own stock, after six months' use in the country. Woodville's stock was used all over the world down to 1836. By that time there were numerous complaints that the lymph was degenerating, and a widespread feeling that it was necessary to 'go back to the cow." Apart from the numerous original cases of cowpox alleged to have been found in Wiirtemberg, the first new authentic source was the Passy cow of 1836. From the accidental vesicles on the milker's hand Bousquet, the director of vaccination in Paris, started a new stock, which partly superseded Woodville's lymph hitherto in use in France. In 1838 Estlin of Bristol, after several years' vain en- deavours, heard of original cowpox in Jenner's own parish of Berkeley (Gloucestershire), where the disease was so far forgotten that the milkers were for several days un- aware that the vesicles on their hands had been contracted from cows. Estlin's new geniture is one of the most fully recorded in the history of vaccination. In the same year, and the two following years (1838-41), Ceely of Aylesbury found some half-dozen distinct occurrences of cowpox in the dairy-farms of his district, and cultivated lymph from them. His account of the natural history of cowpox in the cow, and of the effects of primary lymph when inocu- lated on the human arm, is by far the most comprehensive and candid that has ever been given ; without it we should hardly have understood the real nature of cowpox. Bous- quet, Estlin, and Ceely are the chief writers who have authentically described the establishment of new stocks of cowpox lymph since Woodville's original report of 1799. There are numerous other references, less detailed, to original cowpox in the cow, and to vaccinations therefrom, in England, on the Continent, and in the United States ; some of these came to light in the inquiry of the Epidemio- logical Society in 1852. One of the best-known cases of comparatively recent times is the Beaugency cow of 1866, which has been the source of much of the calf-lymph of the Dutch, Belgian, and other vaccine "farms." Another French case occurred in the Gironde in November 1881, and is described in the Bulletin of the Academy of Medi- cine (p. 17, 1882). In England the editors of the Veter- inarian inserted a notice in the number for August 1879, making a request to their readers for lymph "from vesicles on the

teats of cows in cases of so-called natural cowpox." The only answer to it hitherto has been an intimation in June 1880 that there was a case of cowpox at Halstead in Essex, which was visited by Ceely and others and pro- nounced by the former to be of the nature of eczema. In 1876 the disease was found at a farm near Reykjavik in Iceland, where it had never been seen before; it was of the old type, producing sores on the milkers' hands, and causing much alarm by its unfamiliar character.!

1 Cowpox of the original ulcerating type still occurs, but is now hardly recognized as such. The inquiry into an outbreak of scarlet fever in December 1885, traced to a dairy at Hendon (Middlesex), elicited the fact that the inculpated cows, as well as seventy or eighty

The so-called calf lymph is as remote from the cow as Calf ordinary humanized lymph; it differs from the latter lymph. merely in the circumstance that the calf (on its shaven belly) becomes the vaccinifer, instead of the child, and that the cycle of the disease is very much abbreviated or contracted in the calf: the vesicles are distended with lymph about the fourth or fifth day, instead of the seventh or eighth, and are almost unattended by areolar redness and constitutional disturbance, the animal being able to support fifty to a hundred or more vesicles without the smallest inconvenience. On the child's arm the vesicles after calf-lymph are slower in development than in the

calf, and are attended by areola, &c.

Under the influence of theory, "vaccine" lymph has been got Anoma- from two sources that have absolutely nothing to do with cowpox ; lous and, oddly enough, the matter from these sources has been so sources managed as to produce correct vesicles on the child's arm. One of vac- soune is the grease of the horse's hocks and the other is smallpox cine. itself.

._ The grease of the horse was known to produce vesicles and sub- Grease sequent ulcers on the hands almost indistinguishable from those of of the accidental cowpox. There was also the tradition (which breaks horse. down when tested by facts) that accidental infection with the grease protected from smallpox. Jenner held that all " genuine" cowpox came from horse- grease ; and, after he had raised vaccine vesicles on the arms of children by

*matter from the cow's teats, he proceeded to try whether he could not raise the same kind of vesicle experi- mentally by matter once removed from the horse's hocks. The experiment succeeded, just as the accident had done. The vesicle (represented in plate 2 of the Znquiry) ulcerated, and the boy died of what is vaguely termed a "fever" in one place and a "con- tagious fever" in another. The same kind of inconsequent logic suggested the experiment of inoculating the matter of horse-grease upon the skin of the cow's teats, the object being to prove the identity of cowpox with the grease. That too succeeded in the hands of Loy of Whitby, Loy also inoculated children with the same matter, and raised vesicles on their arms, which were, of course, the same as the accidental vesicles (compared to the blister raised by a burn). Sacco of Milan actually used the equine matter on a large scale, instead of cowpox matter; and De Carro of Vienna '*equinated"" many persons in that city with lymph sent him by Sacco. Baron prints a memorandum of Jenner, dated 23d July 1818, relating to "equine virus which I have been using from arm to arm for these two months past, without observing the smallest deviation in the progress and appearance of the pustules from those produced by vaccine," and a second note, dated 17th May 1817, in which Jenner says he "took matter from Jane King (equine direct) for the National Vaccine Establishment. The pustules beautifully correct." This is not the place to enter upon the pathology of horse- grease; and, as a matter of fact, equination has not eh much practised on the whole. According to Jenner's own data, it was an occasional constitutional disease of the horse's hocks in wet seasons, which was communicable to the hands of men in the form of large whitish vesicles, ending in corroding and painful open sores (see the case reported to him by Fewster, op. cit., ed. 1800, p. 96).*

The other anomalous source of " vaccine" is human smallpox. Human Jenner having succeeded in passing off his doctrine that cowpox is small- smallpox of the cow, it occurred to some persons about forty years pox. after to prove the doctrine by experiment, the proof being to variolate the cow on the udder. This was accomplished in 1838, after much trouble, by Thiele in Kazan (Russia), who inoculated several thousands of persons with the variolous matter " passed through the system of the cow." Within a few months of that experiment, the same thing was attempted by Ceely of Aylesbury, who succeeded, after many failures, in raising a large variolous

pock, not ou the udder of the cow, but on the mucous membrane of the vulva. The first experiment with the matter of this pock was undesigned ; his assistant pricked his hand with the lancet which had just been dipped into the large pustule, and in due course had an attack of smallpox. Ceely persevered with his experiments (having meanwhile variolated another heifer at five places on the vulva), and in due time so "managed" his matter as to produce vesicles on the human arm (without general eruption on the skin), which were regarded at Cheltenham and other places as

at two other farms, were affected with what the dairymen called "cowpox"' (see Cameron, Trans. Epid. Soc., April 1886). A similar outbreak in November 1887, involving 160 cows and 7 milkers at four farms in Wiltshire, was clearly proved by Crookshank to be the his- torical cowpox of Jenner and Ceely, by the evidence of identity in the sores on the cows' teats and in the sores or vesicles on the milkers' hands or faces, and by the production of correct vaccine vesicles in calves inoculated with lymph from a vesicle on the face of a milker (Brit. Med. Journ., 17th December 1887 and 21st January 1888).

Natural history of cow- pox.

Its ori- gination,

YRCCILNATION

on the whole better than the cowpox vesicle of the period. But the real practical application of this idea was reserved for Badcock, a dispensing chemist at Brighton. It does not appear that any authentic or fully detailed account of Badcock's experiments has been published ;4 but he thus summarized the results some forty years later (Pall Mall Gazette, Jan, 23, 1880):—" By careful and repeated experiments I produced, by the inoculation of the cow with smallpox, a benign lymph of a non-infectious and highly protective character. My lymph has now been in use at Brighton for forty years, and is at the present time the principal stock of lymph employed there, being that exclusively used by the public vaccinators." At Boston, U.S., the same kind of lymph was raised and put in use in 1852. But at Attleborough, Mass., the same experiment had in 1836 led to disaster. Smallpox was inoculated on a cow's udder, and the product used to

vaccinate about fifty persons. The result was an epidemic of smallpox, a panic, and the suspension of business." On the face of it this method was simply variolating the cow (on a mucous membrane if the hairless or shaven skin failed) and inoculating the human subject with that curiously disguised smallpox matter. However, it was thought necessary to hold an experimental inquiry upon it, and in 1865 a commission of the Lyons Society of Medicine reported that, "in vaccinating according to the method of Thiele and Ceely, we are merely practis- ing the old inoculation, rendered uniformly benign, it may be, by the care taken to inoculate only the first product (U'accident primitif), but preserving for certain all its risks in respect to contagion." ? A negative result was come to by Klein in 1879, in an inquiry for the Local Government Board, wherein he had Ceely's cooperation. In 1879 the Irish Local Government Board prevented the use of similar variolous lymph by threatening to prosecute under the Act making the inoculation of smallpox penal. Notwithstanding the common sense of the case, and these experimental proofs, the official view taken by the medical department in 1857, that Thiele, Ceely, and Badcock had established the correctness of Jenner's doctrine of variole vaccine, is still held very tenaciously by the profession. It is too simple and attractive to be soon given up; but perhaps the best way to get rid of it is to state in plain terms what cowpox itself really is,

Although there is no difficulty in drawing up a complete natural history of cowpox, thanks to the laborious and exact studies of Ceely, yet the attention has been so much diverted to side issues that the facts to be stated in this section will come before most readers with the aspect of novelty. The other original authorities besides Ceely are Jenner himself, Pearson (who collected information by circular in the months following Jenner's Inquiry), Bous- quet (1836), Estlin (1838), and Crookshank (1888). The Wiirtemberg inquiry, published by Hering (Stuttgart, 1839), is made up of very indifferently authenticated or incomplete statements, which have not the same value as the rest, and are at variance with them on the most essential points.

Cowpox as an infective disease arises in cow-houses here and there, and at wide intervals of time, out of a common physiological or constitutional eruption of some particular cow, usually a heifer in her first milk, very often

in the spring season or at some other crisis of the year or of the animal's life-history. It never arises except in milch cows ; lt occurs nowhere in the cow but on the teats, or, by in- fection, on adjoining parts of the udder. All the characters by which we know it distinctively as cowpox are associated with the fact of milking, or with the inevitable traction on teats that are the subject of an otherwise unimportant eruption. The primary disorder, as Ceely describes it, is an eruption of a few pimples, the size of a vetch or larger, hard and solid at first, but at length slightly vesiculated on the summit. It is only rarely that a series of events ensues on this basis which constitute cowpox as we know it ; they ensue In some one animal out of many in the same byre, and years may elapse before the event happens again. The pumples on the teats are made to bleed by what Ceely calls "the merciless manipulations of the milkers " ; the blood forms crusts, which are dislodged every six hours; and indurated ulcers form on the sites of the original pimples. eee ee ee eee

; See Hodgson, Brit. Med. Journ., 26th November 1881. ; Bost. Med. and Surg. Journ., 1860, p. 77. Vaccine et Variole, Paris, 1865, p. 101.

25

The process being thus made inveterate owing to the in- Its in- cessant interference of the milker's hands, it becomes com- fective

municable to the other cows. The milkers can usually point out some one cow in which the disease began; and it spreads slowly through a byre, taking sometimes as long as three months to go.the round of all the animals. An animal already infected at one or more places on its teats may become infected at other places on the teats and body of the udder, either by the traction of milking or by the contact of parts when the cow is lying down.

The ulcers heal sometimes slowly, sometimes more quickly ; they may heal under crusts, or as open sores; induration and rounding of the edges are distinctive, along with much thickening of the base. The scars are also in- durated, rounded and elevated at the edges, and smooth or puckered on the surface; they are often as large as a walnut. It is not easy to see a vesicular stage of the disease even in the cows infected from the initial spontane- ous case; and Ceely had for the most part to be content with the coagulated

matter of crusts to vaccinate with. The process is, in fact, bound up from first to last in the most intimate and essential manner with the operation of milking. Cowpox "undisturbed by the milker's hands" has no existence in the originating cow ; it is the persistent irritation that makes it a pox. It is communicable, also, to the hands of the milkers themselves, and by their filthy hands to their faces. Jenner mentions a good many such cases ; Pearson has collected several ; and Ceely gives three

in very full detail. As in the inoculated venereal pox, the se a ° e

infection proceeds for a time under the skin, making bluish-white vesicle; it eats away the tissues round the margin, where the fluid makes the skin bulge out into the characteristic tumid ring. After the fourteenth day the vesicle will have become an eschar, the average size of a sixpenny piece, which comes away and leaves a sore. The open sore is a regular part of the infection in the milker's hand. Various regions of the face get infected by contact from the hands: Jenner mentions the case of "a poor girl who produced an ulceration on her lip by frequently holding her finger to her mouth to cool the raging of a cowpox sore by blowing upon it"; another of Jenner's cases had the sore on the wing of the nose; one of Ceely's cases had an ulcer on the teniple three-quarters of an inch long; in a case observed by Crookshank there was a very large vesicle and subsequent sore over the left cheek-bone. The local infection is accompanied by constitutional disturbance, more or less severe, including head- ache, pains in tite loins, vomiting, and sometimes delirium. The axillary glands become painful, usually about the fourth day, and remain hard for some time. Eruptions occurred, but there is very little said about them.

As might have been expected, the effects of experimental Human- e ac- ized cow-

infection with cowpox matter were the same as th

cidental. They are spoken of as the effects of " primary ®°™

lymph," that is to say, lymph direct from the cow's teats or from the milker's sore hand, or in the earlier removes from these sources. Jenner's experience of primary lymph was very much the same as Bousquet's, Estlin's, and

Ceely's forty years later. Woodville's, on the other hand, was exceptionally reassuring ; had it not been so, it 1s not likely that cowpoxing on the large scale would ever have survived the initial discouragements entailed by the use of primary lymph. The process on the child's arm was on the whole the same as on the milker's hand, allowing for the more deliberate mode of inoculation and for different texture of*

the skin. The vesicle grew to a great size up to the four- ee ee eee eee

4 But Addington (On the Inoculation of the Cowpox, ap 1801), who got his lymph from Woodville, was not equally fortunate ; of eleven cases at the beginning of his series five ended in ulceration ; after that the cases all ended in a "dry scab.

teenth day, and often became an ulcer, either excavated under the crust or absolutely open. Estlin did not entirely get rid of ulceration until after the twenty-ninth remove from the cow. The constitutional disturbance was often severe in infants: axillary tenderness and swelling were somewhat constant, and eruptions were especially frequent about the second to the fourth week, including macular roseola, lichen, and pemphigoid bulle. At each successive remove from the cow the cycle of the process became more contracted, and the constitutional disturbance, cxteris pari- bus, became less. Bousquet gives a plate which shows by parallel series of figures the differences between the vesicles of the old lymph (Woodville's, nearly forty years old) and the lymph from the Passy cow. The new lymph induced a process more protracted at every stage: the vesicle con- tinued to enlarge at the periphery for several days after the common vaccine vesicle of the period would have ceased to extend. It was not at its maximum until about the end of the second week, and it then became an eschar and a sore. Bousquet confesses that he first understood "les frayeurs de Jenner" when he saw the ulcerative and other effects of primary lymph. After a certain number of removes from the cow the cycle became so contracted that the vesicle was full at the eighth or ninth day; the abbreviation of its life-history enabled it to heal without ulcerating. It thus becomes the ordinary vaccine

vesicle as we know it, which heals under a scab, and leaves the peculiar punctated scar of subcrustaceous repair. The abbreviation or mitigation is effected by taking lymph from each successive vaccinifer at as early a period as it can be got, until the golden mean of safe vaccination, namely, maturity at the eighth day, is reached. That corresponds to Jenner's rule of taking the matter for vacci- nation before the areola appears ; if the vesicle be emptied after that period, the lymph from it is apt to cause ulcera- tion, or, as Ceely puts it, we have "all the inconveniences of primary lymph." It is thus clear that humanized cow- pox might be easily cultivated back to its original type ;

VACCINATION

no means of knowing whether the same has been the case among the population at large. In Table I. the column of deaths from erysipelas in general, among infants of the first year in England and Wales, is given side by side with the column of deaths from

Erysipelas after Vacci- nation.

Erysipelas after Vacci- | Erysipelas. nation.

Erysipelas.

a

0 5 0 0 5 2 2 3

if

*1 0 9 3 8 * 9*

e

erysipelas after vaccination. The post-vaccinal inflammation some- times takes the form of phlegmon; but there is no separate entry for that as a special sequel of vaccination. Many of the alleged deaths from erysipelas after vaccination have been the subject of coroner's inquests ; the verdict is often an open one, and even such cases as those near Gainsborough in

1876 and at Norwich in 1882 ~ were found to have been returned (all but one) by the certifying medical practitioners as due to erysipelas merely. It may be assumed that "after vaccination" is not certified unless the case has left no doubt in the minds of the jury or of the certifying medical attendant. The increase in the first column from 0 in 1855 to 32 in 1880 is probably in appearance only, and due to more correct diagnosis.

(2) It is only within the last few years that jaundice has been Jaundice, —

recognized as a post-vaccinal effect ; and at present there is only one accepted instance of it on the large scale. This was the epi- demic among re-vaccinated adults in a large shipyard at Bremen from October 1883 to April 1884. Owing to an alarm of smallpox, 1289 workmen were re-vaccinated between the 13th August and 1st September with the same humanized lymph preserved in glycerin ; of these 191 had jaundice at various intervals down to the month of April following. Circumstantial evidence (agreement and difference) clearly traced the epidemic to the vaccination.? In future an outlook will be kept for this effect of vaccination ; at Uae it has no intelligible theory. It may be noted that the ymph which caused the Bremen epidemic was mixed with glycerin.

(8) The eruptions that follow vaccination are proper to cowpox Skin infection. Although little is said about them in the accidental erup- infection of milkers, they were very common in the practice of tions. Estlin, Ceely, and others with primary lymph. The eruption is

and, as a matter of fact, it has sometimes been so culti- vated back by misadventure, with serious consequences to the vaccinated.

Risks of 'The risks of vaccination may be divided into the risks | 2 kind of exanthem, or "secondary" of the local infection, and vaccina- inherent in the cowpox infection and the risks contingent ey rcinanly apres Welorogheeccend Week: ane n ts em: cee ie =) monest forms is a patchy rose-rash, or macular roseola, not easily

to the puncture of the skin. Of the latter nothing special requires to be said; the former will be discussed under the five heads of (1) erysipelas, (2)

jaundice, (3) skin eruptions, (4) vaccinal ulcers, and (5) so-called vaccinal syphilis.

*(1) A slight degree of erysipelas was recognized by Jenner him- self, and even postulated by him, as part of the natural history of cowpox in man; and it is so recognized by the more unbiased writers of recent date.! The usual time for it corresponds to the appearance of the arcola (eighth or ninth day), that efflorescence round the pock being normally a slight erysipelas. It may start, however, from the puncture or scratch in the skin, after a day or two's interval; but that form of it (the "early erysipelas" of German writers) is much rarer than the erysipelas of the areola, or "' late erysipelas." Primary lymph, or lymph in the first removes, is most apt to excite an extensive and spreading areolar redness. In the ordinary course of vaccination remote from the cow the intensity of the superficial redness and deep infiltration would seem to de- pend mostly on the child's constitution, or on whatever concurrence of circumstances serves to recall the " inconveniences of primary lymph." The registrar-general's tables of mortality for England and Wales have contained an entry of "erysipelas after vaccina- tion" from 1855 down to 1881, when the entry was changed to '**cowpox and other effects of vaccination," the numbers at the same time nearly doubling. The fatal cases of erysipelas in infants under one year referred to vaccination are but a small fraction of the whole mortality from erysipelas at that age, a mortality which is far greater than at any other period of life. It is quite certain that in foundling hospitals, such as that of St Petersburg, the erysipelas of vaccination has been the starting-point of disastrous epidemics of erysipelas affecting the inmates generally. There is*

1 Bohn, Handbuch der Vaccination, Leipsic, 1875, p. 174.

distinguishable from the macular roseola of syphilis. Another form is lichen or dry papules, apt to scale ; it may also occur as a vesicular eruption, and in the form of pemphigoid bull or blebs. In one of Ceely's cases the eruption extended to the whole mucous membrane of the mouth aud throat. A peculiarity of the exanthem is that it may come and go several times before it finally disap- pears; and, like other skin eruptions, specific or non-specific, it may become inveterate. The widespread belief that much of the eczema of childhood dates from vaccination is not by any means to be

dismissed as a mere fancy. The skin-disorders that followed vaccination in the first years of the practice were declared by Birch and others to be new in type. At present the vaccinal eruption, especially on the scalp, is sometimes distinguished by the size and form of the crusts, and by scars remaining for a time.

(4) Ulceration of the vaccine vesicle, or of the site of it, is one Vaccinal It is a return to the native ulcers.

of the commoner forms of " bad arm." or untamed characters of cowpox on the cow's teats, or on the milker's hands or face, or in the child's arm after experimental inoculation with primary lymph. It crops out not unfrequently in everyday practice, and is probably dependent for the most part on the lateness at which the lymph was taken for vaccination, or on retardation of the process in the vaccinifer, or on emptying the latter's vesicles too much ; however, it may result from picking the scab or otherwise dislodging it. The ulceration usually proceeds to some depth in the form of a crater under the crust, and is attended with induration and rounding of the edges and induration of the base. According to Bohn (op. cit., p. 166), it may alarm practitioners by its resemblance to syphilis. In other cases the crust is wanting and the ulceration has the distinct type of phagedena. The de-

2 Cowpox and other effects of vaccination. 3 See Liirman, Berl. klin. Wochenschrift, 1885, p. 20. 4 Parrot, La Syphilis Héréditaire, 1886, p. 33.

struction of tissue in either case may be very extensive, going "down to the bone" and having as much as an inch or more of super- ficial area. Healing is frequently an affair of weeks, and may be aided by mercurial treatment. There are no statistics of this sequel of vaccination; but the frequency or infrequency of it may be learned in conversation with any intelligent chemist whose shop is resorted to by the poor, or with a medical practitioner of average experience. ; :

(5) It has been proved by many experiments, undesigned or

yphilis. otherwise, in Paris (1831 and 1839), Vienna (1854), and elsewhere,

that an infant with congenital syphilis develops correct vaccinal vesicles, provided its skin be clear of eruption and the lymph have been taken at the usual time ; also that the lymph taken from the correct vesicles of a syphilitic child produces correct vesicles in its turn, but does not produce syphilis in the vaccinated child. The congenital taint is, in fact, irrelevant to the course of cowpox in- fection. So far as experiment and casual experience can prove anything, that has been proved; the recent attempt to disprove it by an officer of the Local Government Board (Report for 1882, p- 46) is vitiated by fallacies, and has no value against the over- whelming testimony collected thirty or forty years ago. What, then, isthe meaning of the numerous outbreaks of syphilis in groups of children or adults vaccinated or re-vaccinated with lymph from one source ?

A careful examination of these cases shows that syphilis at the source of the vaccine matter was in all cases an after-thought, that

_ in most of the cases there was no evidence for it, and that in the

remaining cases the evidence was so far-fetched as to be unlikely (apart from the known & priori improbability), or that the traces of constitutional infection found in the vaccinifer were subsequent to vaccination, and therefore capable of being explained as an effect concurrent with the more obvious symptoms in those vaccinated therefrom. The effects, however, were very much the same as in the venereal pox. The vaccine vesicle either became an indurated or phagedenic sore, as described in the foregoing section on vaccinal ulcers, or the scar opened into an indurated sore after the usual sub- ernstaceous healing was complete, or became indurated without opening. The axillary and cervical glands were often indurated, In most of the epidemics there were a certain number of cases in which the effects were purely local, or confined to one only of the seats of puncture ; if these had not occurred along with others in a group, they would have been counted as ordinary vaccinal ulcers. But there were often secondary symptoms as well, including the roseolar, lichenous, or (rarely) pemphigoid eruption, and not unfrequently condylomata circa anwm et genitalia. In some epidemics (but not in all) there were, in a small minority of the cases, mucous patches on the tonsils, tongue, or lips, tending to ulcerate; and in some of the Italian outbreaks the infection spread among the mothers and

other members of the households in the form of specific sores of the nipples, with or without constitutional symptoms. Affections of the bones and viscera do not seem to have followed ; fatalities were not very common.

It will be hard to persuade medical authorities that these second- ary effects arc not the result exclusively of the venereal pox. The evidence, however, docs not allow us to assume any other specific infection than that of cowpox, which, as we know, has its proper secondary exanthem in the form of macular roseola, lichen, or pemphigus ; the eruption has even been known to affect the mouth and throat. The evidence from epidemics of vaccinal sore arms teaches us that condylomata, mucous patches of the tonsils, tongue, and lips, and even iritis, are also possible, although far from in- variable, among the "secondaries" of the primary vaccinal ulcer. The most general fact that comes out in these epidemics is that the lymph was taken late from the vaccinifer, or that the vesicles of the vaccinifer were drained dry to vaccinate a large number, or that the same vaccinifer was used for arm-to-arm inoculation on two successive days. It is not difficult to see how, in those cir- cumstances, the abbreviated cycle of humanized cowpox may be departed from and the native or untamed characters of cowpox infection reverted to. Cowpox, indeed, is parallel with the venereal

Torre de' Busi near Bergamo, 1862 mClis)s i >

on both sides in the Civil War), dE Cones: Coot Or ne troona of Health, Baton Rouge, 1884). Argenta near Ferrara, 1866 (Gamberini, in Gaz des Hépitaux, 1870, p. 505). Morbihan (neighbourhood of Vannes and Auray), 1866 (Depaul, Bull. de V Acad. de Méd., xxxii., 1866-67, p. 201; Bodelio, ibid. p. 1033). Cardaillac (Lot), 1866 (Bull. del' Acad. de Méd., 28th February 1867). Schleinitz (Styria), 1870 (Kochevar, Allgem. Wiener Med. Ztg., 1870, Nos. 21 and 24; abstract in Arch. fir Dermatologie und Syph., 1870). London (two series

1871 (Hutchinson, Med. Chir. Trans., liv., 1871). Switzerland, 1878 (Bull. de 2 Soc. dela Suisse Romande). Algiers, 1880-81 VJourn. @ Hygiene, 25th August 1881), Lyck (Hast Prussia), June 1878 (Pincus, Vierteljhschr. f. gericht. Med., 1879 Dp: 193), Aspri¢res (Aveyron), March 1885 (P. Brouardel, Rapport, Paris, 1886).

Attention was drawn to these cases because they occurred in groups varying in number from 10 to 100 or more, which made considerable stir, especially in country districts. It is unlikely that all cases have been reported. In the third Report of the clinical hospital of Manchester, Whitehead states the results of his inquiries on post-vaccinal illness in children. Setting aside most of the cases of illness vaguely alleged by the mothers to have been the con- sequence of vaccination, he admits as truly post-vaccinal 34 cases of syphilis or pseudo-syphilis ; of these he enumerates only 14 in his table of 63 cases of children's syphilis of all kinds, the other 20 cases being omitted, it would appear, not because there was any doubt of their being post-vaccinal, but because they were not of the perfect type of infantine syphilis. Such was the experience of a competent observer at asingle hospital during a period of 20 months. White- head's Report was published in 1859 ; but, when Hutchinson pub- lished his first series of London cases in 1871, the subject was con- sidered to be quite new. Here again it was the concurrence of some ten cases in a group that helped the reluctant assent of the profession. The first gronp of London cases had hardly begun to be talked of when one of Hutchinson's colleagues was led by two cases of skin disease at a hospital to follow up the traccs of another group, the very existence of which was unsuspected by the public vaccinator or general practitioners in whose district the eleven patients with vaccinal ulcers and occasional secondaries resided.

In the registrar-general's tables of mortality for England and Wales about one-half of the deaths from " cowpox and other effects of vaccination," or nearly thirty per annum, may be put down to effects of vaccination other than erysipelas ; but there is nothing to show that these were fatal cases of vaccinal ulcers with constitu- tional symptoms or marasmus. On the other hand, the table of deaths from syphilis shows an enormous and steady increase in the number of deaths of infants under the age of one. In the first year of compulsory vaccination (1854) the deaths suddenly increased by one-half, and the increase has gone on steadily since then (see Table II.) The interpretation of the fact is by no means easy or free

Infantine Death-Rate from Syphilis (England and Wales).

*Infants | aul Other Infants | an Other One Year. | "A8°S: One Year, | ASe**

1847 255 810 1868 1364 522 11852 880 . 243 1869 1361 498 11853 880 242 1870 1422 436 11854 591 873 1871 1317 425 1855 579 868 1872 1410 421 1856 579 300 1873 1376 467

1857 656 801 | 1874 1484 513 1858 684 322] 1875 1554 580

1859 778 811 1876 1580 554 1860 767 800 187 1550 524

1861 798 879 | 1878 1647 535 1862 867 878 j 1879 1493 536 1863 983 403 i 1880 1588 571

1864 1089 461 1881 1540 557 1865 1155 492 1882 1666 561 1866 1180 482 1883 1813 500 1867 1241 407 ‘ 1884 1733 547

from fallacies. There are doubtless other and better reasons for the increase besides vaccination ; and it is significant that the tables for Scotland show the mortality to be chiefly in the first three months of life, whereas the statutory limit for vaccination in that country is six months.

In the polemical writings of anti-vaccinists, such diseases Other as scrofula, tubercle, hooping-cough, diarrhoea, and other ate ? common causes of infantine mortality are alleged to have miter increased owing to vaccination. There is little or no ¢ion,

pox, both in the circumstances of its becoming an infective ulcera- tion {indurated or suppurating) and in its secondary or constitu- tional manifestations as an infection in man. But the “bad” lymph has hardly ever been used beyond the second remove ; and there the parallel fails.

a= —

The following is a list of the so-called syphilitic epidemics after vaccination, including those that have been considered spurious, because they were either anomalous in type from the point of view of syphilitic infection or had no obvious causal connexion with that disease.

Udine, 1814 (see Viennois, in Syph. Vaccinale, p. 221). Cremona, 1821 (see Depaul, “‘ Projet de Rapport,” in Syph. Vace.). Grumello, 1841(ibid.).

Coblenz, 1849 (W egeler, in Preuss. Vereins-Ztg., 1850, No. 14; abstract in Schmidt's Jahro., Vol. Ixvii., 1852, p. 62). Upper Franconia (the Hiibner case), 1852 (Intelligenzbl. der Bayr, Aerate, 1854; Bohn, loc. cit.). Lupara (Italian prov. Molise), 1856 (see Depaul, Joc. cit.). Dispon near Pesth, 1855-57 (Oester. Zeitschr. fiir prakt. Heilk., 1862; Bohn, Joc. cit., p. 322). Rivalta (Piedmont), 1861 (Pacchiotti, Sisilide Trasmessa per Mezzo della Vaccinazione in Rivalta presso Acqui, Turin, 1862).

reason, in theory or in experience, to suspect that tuber- culous or scrofulous infection is ever communicated by vaccine lymph. As regards the above and other infantine maladies, vaccination may predispose the child to fall into them, in so far as it produces, or ought in theory to pro- duce, a considerable constitutional disturbance and pre- sumably a loss, for a brief period, of the natural power to

eee Oe ee

1 The proportion assigned to the first year of life is calculated from the specimen table for 1852 (females only) and from the tables of London mortality.

Small- pox.

Influence of vacci- nation upon smallpox.

28

resist the various noxious influences by which the age of infancy, especially among the poor, is beset.

The value of cowpox as a protection against smallpox may now be judged of apart from the fanciful doctrine of variole vaccine by Which it was originally recommended. It has been put toa test extending over eighty years; and in some circumstances it has been possible to apply the logical methods of agreement and differ- ence with a good deal of cogency. The besetting fallacy of all vaccination logic is that of post hoc ergo propter hoc; and the only way to escape it is to hold intelligent views of the history, the natural history, and the epidemiology of smallpox. This will ne- cessitate a brief excursus.

Smallpox, which is really a tropical skin disease of the nature of lichen turned pustular, or of ecthyma, must be judged according to what we know of foreign pestilences in general. Perhaps we are safest to take a line through the behaviour of the plague. Plague in western Europe had the start of smallpox by a good many years, if we speak only of prevalence on the large scale. "Throughout the 16th century," says Hirsch, "the plague was a permanent form of disease on the continent of Europe. . . . During the first two- thirds of the 17th century we still meet with it over an equally wide area and equally often. But in the last thirty years of that century the plague was observed to be retreating gradually from the soil of Europe." It was not only in London after the fire of 1666 but also in Denmark and Sweden, in Italy, in Holland and Belgium, in Switzerland, in France, in

western Germany, and in Spain that the years 1660-1680 saw the last of plague ; it lingered only in the Levant, in Poland, and in other parts of north-eastern Europe, with occasional epidemic visits, such as those of Messina and Mar- seilles. Now it has left the Levant and Egypt, has abandoned even Mesopotamia and Arabia, and retreated to a few poor villages on the Perso-Armenian frontier. Or, take the example of leprosy, which owed its existence rather to the widespread or national con- currence of the same causes in various countries than to the travel- ling of an infection: Italy had it first and lost it first, and nearly every other country in Europe saw its rise, its general prevalence, its decline, and its extinction, the northern countries keeping it longest. Again, typhus fever was a standing disease so long as Europe was the theatre of protracted wars and all their consequences ; but, like other infections, typhus gradually declined and has almost disappeared since the conditions on which it depended ceased.

Leaving these parallels and coming to the facts of smallpox itself, it rose to prominence in western Europe in the 16th century, and in England in the 17th.1 From the early part of the 18th century a remission was noted; but the latter half of that century saw a considerable extension of the area of the disease, for which the practice of inoculation has been blamed. It isa mistake to suppose that smallpox has shown a tendency towards a universal infection ; for all its chances it has kept within moderate limits of age and place, and extended only by repeated provocation. Thus, Hirsch says of the western hemisphere, "A still more terrible source for America was the importation of Negro slaves, so much so that in after years, particularly in South America and the West Indies, not only the first appearances of smallpox, but every fresh outbreak of it, could be traced to importation from Africa,"—the African continent being then, as now and always, one of its principal native seats. In Europe it has been peculiarly a disease of infancy and of the most crowded parts of cities. It has had victims among the upper classes, just as cholera has had ; but, like that disease, its habitat is among the crowded poor; and it would have touched the well- to-do-classes less in former times if there had always been Byecous west-end quarters in cities or the modern "passion for clean linen," personal ablutions, and fresh air. Tenement houses and ill- ventilated courts or alleys have been the natural harbourage of smallpox ; in proportion as these have been demolished the

disease has disappeared or been circumscribed in its area. It is fallacious to estimate its prevalence now in ratio of the whole population ; for a just comparison of one period with another, we have to take into account, not the death-rate per million living, but the death-rate per million still living under the old-world conditions. From the earliest period of its history in Europe, the disease has had its seasons of quickening or revival, with long intervals of quiescence ; only in the most crowded parts of Western cities has it ever been endemic from year to year. These epidemic outbursts have varied much in intensity and in area, the conditions of variation being mostly unknown. In that respect, it need hardly be said, small- pox is like other epidemic diseases.

During the early years of the 19th century there was a marked remission of the epidemic outbursts of the disease in most parts of Europe. The amount of vaccination during those years was in-

1 The first known use of the term "' small pocks" is in Holinshed's Chronicle (1577), an epidemic of pestis in 1365 being so rendered, although it was prob- ably the ordinary bubo-plague of the period. The pox of Elizabethan writers was the French pox or great pox (syphilis), which overran Europe as an epi- demic in 1494. Its prominent character at its first appearance was the loath-

some affection of the skin (especially the face); hence when variola came on the scene it was called the lesser pox, or smallpox.

considerable ; in particular it hardly touched the poor. Thus, at the time of the Norwich epidemic of 1819, it was estimatcd (by Cross) that only one-fourth of the inhabitants were vaccinated, and these almost exclusively the well-to-do. At the same time the practice of inoculating smallpox, which was with good reason blamed for keeping the contagion generally diffused and active among the non-inoculated, began to be discontinued and soon ceased altogether. Undoubtedly there was a marked decline in smallpox during the first fifteen years of the century, but the as- sociated circumstances are as complex as the fact itself is simple. We have to bear in mind the old law of periodic exacerbation and dormancy, the cessation of a

practice (inoculation) which almost certainly interfered with the natural tendency of smallpox as a foreign pestilence to die out, and the unusual prevalence of typhus fever (on the Continent), and other displacing or substitutive factors in the death-rate. To what extent vaccination was a factor will have to be decided by the experience of a period when the practice was much more generally in vogue. For that purposc we may here restrict the inquiry to England and Wales, premising that the experience of other European countries where vaccination has been cqually practised is not different.

The following table (III.) begins with the year 1847; the re- gistration reports go back to 1838, but there is a break in the tables for five years near the beginning.

Deaths from Smallpox from 1847 to 1884, with the numbers among Children under five.

Children Children Total of All Other |] + Total of ~~ | All Other Year. All Ages. ae Ages. Year, All Ages. mee Ages.

1847 4227 3114 1113 1866 8029 1662 1367 1848 6903 4782 2121 1867 25138 1370 1148 1849 4644 8146 1498 1868 2052 1234 818 1850 4665 8265 1400 1869 1565 892 673 1851 6997 4869 2128 1870 2620 1245 1375

21852 7820 6076 22, 1871 | 23126 7770 15356

1853 3151 2164 987 1872 19094 5758 13336 1854 2808 1659 1149 1878 2364 587 1777 1855 2525 1323 1202 1874 2162 548 1619

1856 BAT 1299 978 1875 950 271 679

1857 3936 2835 1601 1876 2408 612 1796 1858 6460 3585 2875 1877 4278 1056 3222 1859 3848 2247 1601 1878 1856 472 1884 1860 2749 1544 1205 1879 536 130 406 1861 1320 723 597 1880 648 170 478 1862 1628 981 697 1881 3098 740 2358 1863 5964 8267 2697 1882 13817 275 1042

1864, 768i, 429), 8390 1883 957 226 731

1865 6411 8262 8149 1884 2234 508 1781

In the first years of the table the deaths from smallpox of children under five were to those of all other ages in the ratio of 3 to 1 or of 5 to 2 (at Norwich in 1819 there were 530 deaths, of which half were in infants under two, and all the rest save ten were in children under ten years) ; the disproportion lessened gradually, until about 1864 it was nearly 4 to 8; in 1870 the proportion was nearly equal; and from that time onward the preponderance leaves the age of infancy and childhood, so that in 1884 the deaths under five were three times fewer than those at all other ages. The great epidemic of 1871-72 brought out that remarkable change of incidence most decidedly. Taking the mortality of 1871 as an instance, the signi- ficance of the changed incidence on the periods of life is that the 7770 deaths under the age of five would, in pre-compulsion times, have had a complement of no more than 2500 deaths in the later periods of life, or that the actual mortality of 15,356 above the age of five would have had a complement of some 40,000 or 45,000 deaths below that age. (In British India in 1884 of 333,000 deaths 72 per cent. were of children under 12 in Bengal, and 64 per cent. in Madras.) Apart from the changed incidence of smallpox, Table III. shows merely the caprices of the disease as an epidemic. After every epidemic outburst the disease declines and sometimes looks as if it were about to die out altogether. The alarm attending cach severe epidemic has induced the legislature to make the vac- cination law more stringent and vaccinators to insert more of the virus, so that the periodic subsidence has corresponded to, and has seemed to be owing to, the better enforcement of the practice ; but there have always been alternating periods of quiescence and ex- acerbation, irrespective of any prophylactic. Moreover, smallpox being a foreign contagious skin disease lurking in congenial haunts, it would be quite according to precedent that it should one day cease absolutely in a community where sanitary progress had ad- vanced so far as to take the ground from under the feet of the pestilence ; such absolute cessation would have no more necessary connexion with almost universal vaccination than the alternating quiescence and recrudescence of epidemics have been connected with each new Act of Parliament. The epidemic of 1871-72 was one of the worst in the whole history of European smallpox ; and it may be that it was one of the last flickers of a slowly expiring flame. The universal practice of cowpoxing, however, is based upon the

2 The Italic numerals indicate the periodic maxima.

Va2CcinNnaAvYTiION

assumption that this contagious skin disease imported from the tropics is a thing that Europe must reckon with for an indefinite

an pestilence never stays unless it finds quarters suited to its existence, and that it may even take its departure capriciously, as in the case of the plague, after it has had a certain career, or on being displaced by some congener such as typhus. Vaccination is considered to have turned smallpox in great part aside from the early years of life and thrown it more than ever upon the later ages, While measles and other maladics proper to childhood have at the same time increased."

Itsutility Thus far as regards the utility of vaccination to the state; we to the in- have now to consider its utility to the individual. Do the vacci-*

dividual. nated escape in an epidemic? or, if they do not escape an attack of

Death- rates among vacci- nated

and un-

vacel- nated,

smallpox, do they escape death from it? In answer to the first question, apart from the familiar negative experience of everyone, we have the statistics of smallpox hospitals, which relate to the poorer class and probably do full justice to the fact of non-vaccina- tion, inasmuch as the unvaccinated residue is mostly to be found in those slums and tenements of the poor where smallpox (now as always) is apt to linger. At the Eastern Metropolitan Hospital (Homerton) from its opening early in 1871 to the end of 1878 there were 6533 admissions for smallpox, of which 4283 had vaccination marks, 793 had no marks although vaccinated, and 1477 were un- vaccinated, giving a proportion of 0°29 unvaccinated. In the epidemic hospitals of Liverpool, Glasgow, and Dublin the proportion was 0°25 during the same period. For some of the German states the proportion of

unvaccinated cases comes out a good deal less than one-fourth ; thus, in Bavaria in 1871 of 30,742 cases 29,429 were in vaccinated persons, or 95°7 per ccnt., and 1313 in the un- yaccinated, or 4°3 per cent. In some of the small local outbreaks of recent years the victims have been nearly all vaccinated (¢.g., at Bromley in 1881, a total of 43 cases, including sixteen confluent, all vaccinated).? In the army and navy, where vaccination and re-vaccination are absolutely without exception, the proportion is accordingly 0. It would thus appear that the rather excessive pro- portion of cases among the small residue of unvaccinated in the civil population must have other associated circumstances besides non-vaccination ; and these are not far to seek.

The next question is the death-rate among the vaccinated and unvaccinated respectively. The total death-rate from smallpox in modern times is almost the same as it was in the 18th century ; large ageregates collected by Jurin and others in pre-vaccination times show a mortality of 18°8 per cent., and corresponding aggregates in English and American hospitals, mostly since 1870, show a mortality of 18°5 per cent. It has, however, to be borne in mind that the division into discrete, confluent, and malignant smallpox is an old one; that a mild type was quite common in the 17th and 18th centuries, and was now and then characteristic of whole epidemics, just as in the case of scarlatina ; and that the vaccinated are at present liable to be attacked by the confluent and malignant disease as well as by the discrete. But are the vaccinated liable to the fatal forms of smallpox in the same proportion as the un- vaccinated? Itis only since 1879 that the registrar-general's tables for England and Wales have attempted to supply data bearing on this; and it will be seen from the following sstnects (Tables IV.- VII.) that the data are still far from being sufficient :—

Table IV.— Deaths from Smallpox, showing the Numbers of the Unvaecinated.

Total | Unvac- |Vacci-| Not Deaths. | cinated. nated.|stated.

*Total | Unvac-|Vacci-| Not *| Deaths. | cinated.|nated./stated.*

325 176 162 78 595 493

Year.

188 245 1378

231 282 1068

117 121 652

1317 957 2234

816 717

3098 1146

q | Total F 3 | Total cf g § in| Unvac-|Vacci-| Not a «| Unvac- |Vacci-| Not on cinated.|nated.|stated.|| = Be cinated.|nated.|stated.

i)

171 43 14 133 90

57 || 1882

1883 1884

887 821 1336

143 66 678 111 35 282 239

Total | Unvac-|Vacci-| Not Total | Unvac- Vacei- Not

Deaths. | cinated.|nated.|stated. Year. Deaths. | cinated. a ee stated. 319 144 14 161 1883 126 32 i 93 129 43 2 84 1884 254 118 | i

Year,

1881 1882

1 See Farr, Reg. Gen. Report for 1867, p. 213: ‘To operate on mortality, pro- tection against every one of the fatal zymotic diseases is required ; otherwise the suppression of one disease-element opens the way to another” (p. 219). He quotes Watt (1813) to show that the decrease of smallpox mortality among infants in Glasgow from 1783 to 1812 was balanced by a great increase in the infantine deaths from measles. See also Guy, Journ. Statist. Soc., 1882, p. 430.

; Majer, Vierteljahrschrift fiir gericht. Med. 5 Beall, BLY

Nicolson, Lancet, 27th August 1881.

On the other hand, the teaching of epidemiology is that a |

20

Table (VII.),—Same for the Provinees(Metropolitan Deaths deducted),

Total – = Total | Unvac- |Vacci-| Not = 2. [10 ~~| Vacci~~ Deaths J S nvac-| Vacci Previnead cinated.‘nated./stated. i Deaths in cinated.| nated. istated.

Provinces.

1883 1884

108 146

These figures may be made to prove anything, according to the bias of the individual ; the column of “not stated”? commands the situation. The official figures for Bavaria in 1871 are more pre- cise: among the 29,429 cases of smallpox in vaccinated persons there were 3994 deaths, while among the 1313 unvaccinated cases there were 790 deaths; of the latter no fewer than 743 deaths were of infants in their first year. The mortality among both the vacci- nated and the unvaccinated is always excessive for infancy. Feeble health, as well as non-vaccination, is a factor in the very excessive smallpox mortality at that tender age.*

The returns from spccial smallpox hospitals make out a very small dcath-rate (6 per cent.) among the vaccinated and a very large death-rate (40 to

60 per cent.) among the unvaccinated. The result is doubtful gua vaccination, for the reason that in pre-vacci- nation times the death-rate (18°8 per cent.) was almost the samc as it is now in the vaccinated and unvaccinated together (18°5). At the Homerton Hospital from 1871 to 1878 there were admitted 793 cases in which "vaccination is stated to have been performed, but without any evidence of its performance"; the deaths in that important contingent were 216, or 27°2 per cent., but they are not permitted to swell the mortality among the "' vaccinated."° Again, the explanatory remarks of the medical officer for Birkenhead in 1877 reveal to us the rather surprising fact that his column of "unvaccinated" contained, not only cases that were admittedly not vaccinated, but also those that were " without the faintest mark"; of the 72 cases in that column no fewer than 58 died. His column of "unknown" contained 80 per cent. of patients who protested that they had been vaccinated (28 deaths in 220 cases or 12°7 per cent.). Those who passed muster as veritably vaccinated were 233, of whom 12 died (5:1 per cent.). With reference to this question of the marks, it has to be said that cowpox scars may be temporary, that their '"'goodness" or "badness" depends chiefly on the texture of the individual's skin and the thickness or thinness of the original crust, and that the aspect of the scar, or even its total absence some years or even months after, may be altogether misleading as to the size and correctness in other respects of the vaccine vesicle, and of the degree of constitutional disturbance that attended it. This was candidly recognized by Ceely,® and will not be seriously disputed by anyone who knows something of cowpox and of how it has been mitigated, and of the various ways in which the tissues of individuals may react to an inoculated infection. In confluent cases the marks on the arm would be less easily seen.

The following statistical table (VIII.) shows death from smallpox to be comparatively rare where the marks are many and " good."

Table VIII., showing the Number and Kind of Arm Marks in 379 Fatal Cases of Smallpox at Homerton Hospital, 1871-80 (Gayton).

Adiissions. | Deaths. Mortality per cent.

Vaccinal Marks. | Under 10 | Over 10| Under 10 | Over 10; Under 10 | Over 10 Years. Years. Years. Years. | Years. Years.

AVBOOd . 0 cece case 56 247 0 4 : oi 44 388 0 2 if 00 DIGOOM a eects eine 41 528 1 19 t 24 RE OOM efetelreverees 43 422 1 20 4imperfect …. 91 317 3 17 \ 3-0 8 imperfect …. 107 545 3 43 2imperfect ….| 142 930 17 92 \ 12°5 Daimpertect 7.1. 138 $20 18 129 in

The practice of re-vaccination was first recommended in England Re-vac- It cination.

by G. Gregory, and in Germany for the army by Heim (1829). has been more or less the law in Prussia since 1835 :7 " re-vaccina- tion of school pupils at the age of twelve is an integral part of the vaccination law." Notwithstanding the fact that Prussia was the best re-vaccinated country in Europe, its mortality from smallpox in the epidemic of 1871 was higher (69,889) than in any other northern state. The efficacy of re-vaccination is sometimes sought to be proved by the immunity of nurses in smallpox hospitals. fhe experiment of not re-vaccinating the nurses was tried at the small- pox hospital of the South Dublin Union in 1871-72 ; 29 out of the 36 attendants had not been re-vaccinated, and these all escaped smallpox as well as the other seven.® But nurses are not rarely chosen from among those who have had smallpox, and cases of smallpox in re-vaccinated nurses are not unknown.? The evidence as to re-vaccination on a large scale comes from the army. Accord- ing to a competent statistician (A. Vogt), the death-rate from small-

4 Majer, op. cit. 5 Parliamentary Return, 24th February 1880.

6 Trans. Prov. Med. and Surg. Assoc., viii., 1840. ;

7 Horn's Medicinal-Wesen in Preussen, ed. Eulenberg, Berlin, 1873-74, pp. 160 and 215. 8 Med. Press and Circ., 27th March 1872.

9 Sweeting, Rep. Fulham Hosp., 1881.

pox in the German army, iu which all recruits are re-vaccinated, was 60 per cent. more than among the civil population of the same age; it was ten times greater among the infantry than among the cavalry, and sixty times more

among the Hessians than among the Wiirtembergers. The Bavarian contingent, which was re-vaccinated without exception, had five times the death-rate from smallpox in the epidemic of 1870-71 that the Bavarian civil population of the ae ages had, although re-vaccination is not obligatory among the atter.

The susceptibility to cowpox infection diminishes with age ; among the pupils of twelve years in Prussian schools it fails in about one-fourth of the attempts, and at later periods of life the proportion of failures is still greater.

It is often alleged that the unvaccinated are so much inflammable material in the midst of the community, and that smallpox begins among them and gathers force so that it sweeps even the vaccinated before it. Inquiry into the facts has shown that at Cologne in 1870 the first unvaccinated person attacked by smallpox was the 174th in order of time, at Bonn the same year the 42d, and at Liegnitz in 1871 the 225th.

State-supported facilities for vaccination began in England in 1808 with the National Vaccine Establishment. In 1840 vaccination fees were made payable out of the rates. The first compulsory Act was passed in 1853, the guardians of the poor being intrusted with the carrying out of the law; in 1854 the public vaccinations under one year of age were 408,824, as against an average of 180,960 for several years before. In 1867 a new Act was passed, rather to re- move some technical difficulties than to enlarge the scope of the former Act ; and in 1871 the Act was passed which compelled the boards of guardians to appoint vaccination officers. The guardians also appoint a public vaccinator, who must be duly qualified to practise medicine, and whose duty it is to vaccinate (for a fee of one shilling and sixpence) any child resident within his district brought to him for that purpose, to examine the same a week after, to give a certificate, and to certify to the vaccination officer the fact of vaccination or of insusceptibility. The Local Government Board awards a considerable sum in premiums for totals of successful vaccination, at a higher scale of one shilling for each case, and a lower scale of sixpence. The vaccination officer sees that all infants are vaccinated, either publicly or privately, before they are three months old (in Scotland six months), unless there is

reason for post- poning the operation. He acts also as registrar of vaccinations. Parents refusing to obey the summons taken out by the vaccination officer are liable to a penalty of twenty shillings for each offence. In 1880 the president of the Local Government Board brought in a bill to repeal the part of the Act relating to cumulative penalties ; but the bill was withdrawn owing to protests from the medical pro- fession. In a number of populous unions of England a majority of the guardians are decided not to prosecute under the Vaccination Act; in other unions prosecutions are not unfrequent, the convic- tions having amounted in 1885 to upwards of two thousand, and having usually led to distraint of goods (rarely to imprisonment) in default of paying the fine. In England about two-thirds of all infants are vaccinated at the public expense.

Vaccination was made compulsory in Bavaria in 1807, and subse- quently in the following countries :—Denmark (1810), Sweden (1814), Wiirtemberg, Hesse, and other German states (1818), Prussia (1835), Roumania (1874), Hungary (1876), and Servia (1881). It is compulsory by cantonal law in ten out of the twenty-two Swiss cantons; an attempt to pass a federal compulsory law was defeated by a plebiscite in 1881.

In the following countries there is no compulsory law, but Govern- mental facilities and compulsion on various classes more or less directly under Governmental control, such as soldiers, state em- ployés, apprentices, school pupils, &c.:—France, Italy, Spain, Por- tugal, Belgium, Norway, Austria, Turkey.

In only a few States or cities of the American Union is there a vaccination statute; in Canada there is none. Vaccination has been compulsory in South Australia since 1872, in Victoria since 1874, and in Western Australia since 1878. In Tasmania a com- pulsory Act was passed in 1882. In New South Wales there is no compulsion, but free facilities for vaccination. Compulsion was adopted at Calcutta in 1880 and since then at eighty other towns of Bengal, at Madras in 1884, and at Bombay and elsewhere in the presidency a few years earlier.

Re-vaccination was made compulsory in Denmark in 1871 and in Roumania in 1874; in Holland it was enacted for all school pupils in 1872. The various laws and administrative orders which had been for many years

in force as to vaccination and re-vaccination in the several German states were consolidated in an imperial statute of 1874.

Authorities.—Jenner, Inquiry, London, 1798, and Further Observations, 1799 ; G. Pearson, Inquiry concerning the History of Cowpox, London, 1798 ; Woodville, Reports of a Series of Inoculations for the Variole Vaccine or Cowpox, London, 1799; Baron, Life of Edward Jewner, M.D., 2 vols., London, 1838; Bousquet, Sur le Cow-pox, découvert & Passy, Paris, 1836; Estlin, in Lond. Med. Gazette,

1838-39 ; Ceely, Trans. Prov. Med. and Surg. Assoc., viii. (1840) and x, (1842); Hering, Ueber Kuhpocken an Kiihen, Stuttgart, 1839; Viennois and others, in

Syphilis Vaccinale, Paris, 1865; Bohn, Handbuch der Vaccination, Leipsic, 1875 ; EB. C. Seaton, Handbook of Vaccination, London, 1868; Reports on Sanitary Measures in India, 1884-85; W. White, Story of a Great Delusion, London, 1885; M'Vail, Vaccination Vindicated, London, 1887; Lotz, Pocken und Vaccination, 2d ed., Basel, 1880; G. Fr. Kolb, Der heutige Stand der Impffrage, Leipsic, 1879 ; A. Vogt, Der alte u. d. neue Impfglaube, Bern, 1881; and Creighton, Natural History of Cowpox and Vaccinal Syphilis, London, 1887. (C. C.)

VAOZ (Germ. Waitzen), a market town in Hungary, on the left bank of the Danube, 20 miles north of Buda-Pesth. It gives its name toa Roman Catholic bishopric (established by Stephen, first king of Hungary, in 1000) and various schools, convents, and charities connected therewith, and has a state deaf and dumb institute and a central Government prison. The cathedral, a magnificent structure, is an imi- tation of St Peter's at Rome, with medizval relics and pictures. The majority of the inhabitants are engaged in agriculture and cattle-breeding ; but exportation of grapes from the neighbouring hilly district is also largely carried on. Vacz is a station on the Austrian-Hungarian railway system. The population, mostly Magyars by nationality, was 13,199 in 1880, and in 1887 was estimated to number nearly 17,000.

VAGA, Perino Dex (1500-1547), a painter of the Roman school, whose true name was PERINO (or PreRo) Buonac- corsi. He was born in Florence on 28th June 1500. His father ruined himself by gambling, and became a soldier in the invading army of Charles VIII. His mother dying when he was but two months old, he was suckled by a she-goat ; but shortly afterwards he was taken up by his father's second wife. Perino was first apprenticed to a druggist, but soon passed into the hands of a mediocre painter, Andrea da Ceri, and, when eleven years of age, of Ridolfo Ghirlandajo. Perino rapidly surpassed his fellow-pupils, applying himself especially to the study of Michelangelo's great cartoon. Another mediocre painter, Vaga from Toscanella, undertook to settle the boy in Rome, but first set him to work in Toscanella. Perino, when he at last reached Rome, was utterly poor, and with no clear prospect beyond journey-work for trading decorators. He, however, studied with great severity and spirit from Michelangelo and the antique, and was eventually entrusted with some of the subordinate work undertaken by Raphael in the Vatican. He assisted Gio- vanni da Udine in the stucco and arabesque decorations of the loggie of the Vatican, and executed some of those small but finely composed Scriptural subjects which go by the name of " Raphael's Bible"—Raphael himself furnish- ing the designs. Perino's examples are Abraham about to Sacrifice Isaac, Jacob Wrestling with the Angel, Joseph and his Brethren, the Hebrews Crossing the Jordan, the Fall and Capture of Jericho, Joshua Commanding the Sun to Stand Still, the Birth of Christ, His Baptism, and the Last Supper. Some of these are in bronze-tint, while others are in full colour. He also painted, after Raphael's drawings, the figures of the planets in the great hall of the Appartamenti Borgia. Perino exhibited very uncommon faculty in these works and was soon regarded as second only to Giulio Romano among the great painter's assist- ants. To Raphael himself he was always exceedingly respectful and attentive, and the master loved him almost as a son. He executed many other works about Rome, always displaying a certain mixture of the Florentine with the Roman style.

After Raphael's death in 1520 a troublous period ensued for Perino, with a plague which ravaged Rome in 1523, and again with the sack of that city in 1527. Then he accepted an invitation to Genoa, where he was employed in decorating the Doria palace, and rapidly founded a quasi-Roman school of art in the Ligurian city. He ornamented the palace in a style similar to that

of Giulio Romano in the Mantuan Palazzo del Té, and frescoed his- torical and mythological subjects in the apartments, fanci-

ful and graceful arabesque-work, sculptural and architec- tural details—in short, whatever came to hand. Among the principal works are the War between the Gods and Giants, Horatius Cocles Defending the Bridge, and the Fortitude of Mutius Scevola. The most important work of all, the Shipwreck of Aineas, is no longer extant. Perino was particularly good in the technique and colouring of fresco, and his stucco-work was no less highly prized than his pictures ; his Genoese paintings are, however, very in- ferior to those of Raphael in finish, as in other higher qualities, and his style in the nude tends rather towards Michelangelo. The Doria work is moreover extremely unequal. From Genoa Perino twice visited Pisa, and began some painting in the cathedral. Finally he returned to Rome, where Paul III. allowed him a regular salary till the painter's death. He retouched many of the works of Raphael, and laboured hard on his own account, under- taking all sorts of jobs, important or trivial. Working for any price, he made large gains, but fell into mechanical negligence. Perino was engaged in the general decoration of the Sala Reale, begun by Paul III., when his health, undermined by constant work and as constant irregulari- ties, gave way, and he fell down dead on 19th October 1547. He is buried in the Pantheon.

Perino, though his character and habits of life were not such as to inspire respect, seems to have been generally liked in a ccrtain way; he was, however, jealous of rivals, particularly of Titian when in Rome, and grudging in the instruction of his pupils. He produced some excellent portraits, and his smaller oil pictures com- bine with the manner of Raphael something of that of Andrea del Sarto. Many of his works were engraved, even in his own lifetime. Daniele da Volterra, Girolamo Sieiniutite da Sermoneta, Luzio

Romano, and Marcello Venusti (Mantovano) were among his prin- cipal assistants.

VAIR, GuittaumE pu (1556-1621), one of the fathers of French prose, and at the same time one of the most brilliant ornaments of the great school of French lawyers in the 16th and 17th centuries, was born at Paris on 7th March 1556. Du Vair was in orders, and, though during the greater part of his life he exercised only legal func- tions, he in 1617 accepted the see of Lisieux and died bishop thereof. His reputation, however, is that of a lawyer, a statesman, and a man of letters. He was fora considerable time a member (councillor) of the parlement of Paris, and it was in this capacity that he pronounced his most famous politico-legal discourse, an argument nominally for the Salic Law, but in reality directed against the alienation of the crown of France to the Spanish infanta, which was advocated by the extreme Leaguers. It was also during his tenure of the same post that he published (in 1595) a Traité de VEloquence Frangaise, which both advocates and exhibits a great improvement on the ordinary prose style of the day. In 1599 he be- came first president of the parlement of Provence (Aix), and in order not to give up this position he refused the see of Marseilles. In 1616 he received the highest pro- motion open to a French lawyer and became keeper of the seals. His death took place at Tonneins (Lot-et-Garonne) on 3d August 1621. Both as speaker and writer he holds a very high rank, and his character was equal to his abilities. Like other political lawyers of the time, Du Vair busied himself not a little in the study of philosophy (of a Christian stoical cast) and in that of classical an- tiquity, translating Cicero, Demosthenes, and Epictetus, and writing various treatises, on which Charron, a general plagiarist, is held to have drawn freely. Du Vair's works were published in folio at Paris in 1641.

_ VALAIS (Germ., Wallis), one of the Swiss cantons, rank- Ing as twentieth in the Confederation. Its name has been explained to mean the ' Welsh land," as the Teutons called all non-Teutonic lands ; but it is far more probably derived from "vallis," for Valais is simply the "Vallis Pcenina,"

ou.

or valley of the Rhone, from its source to the gorge of St Maurice, together with some villages south of the Simplon Pass, and Monthey, Val d'Illiez, and Bouveret beyond St Maurice, on the left bank of the river. The total area of the canton is 2026°3 square miles, which is exceeded only by that of

Grisons (Graubiinden) and of Bern. Of this 930°4 square miles are classed as productive, forests cover- ing 243-2 and vineyards 9 ; of the remainder 375:1 square miles consist of snow and ice. The highest point of the canton is Monte Rosa (15,217 feet), and within its borders rises the Dom (14,942 feet), the loftiest peak entirely in Swiss territory. The population in 1880 was 100,216 (males predominating), an increase of 3329 since 1870. French is the native tongue of 67,214 and German of 31,962, the former dwelling (roughly speaking) west and the latter east of a line drawn north and south across the valley of the Rhone between Sierre and Leuk. The bulk (99,316) of the inhabitants are staunch Roman Catholics. The canton forms the diocese of Sion (founded in 4th cen- tury), which before 1513 was in the ecclesiastical province of Moutiers-en-Tarentaise (Savoy), and since then has been immediately dependent on the pope. In the canton there are three famous houses of Austin canons regular—St Maurice (founded as a Benedictine monastery, as distinct from the see, in 515 by Sigismund of Burgundy), the hos- pice on the Great St Bernard (first mentioned. in 1125), and that on the Simplon Pass (first mentioned in 1235). Ecclesiastical affairs are managed without any control or interference on the part of the state, though the cantonal legislative assembly selects as bishop one of four candi- dates nominated by the chapter of Sion. The only town of any size is the capital, Sion or Sitten (4871 inhabitants in 1880). 'The population are mainly engaged in agricul- tural pursuits, and great efforts have been made to improve matters lately, while the Rhone has been embanked to prevent disastrous floods. Much wine (¢g., Muscat and Vin du Glacier) and a vast quantity of grapes are exported. Education is compulsory and free, but very backward. A railway runs from Brieg to Bouveret. The mineral waters of Leukerbad and Saxon are well known, and in summer the canton is a favourite haunt of tourists.

The Vallis Poenina was won by the Romans after a great fight at Octodurus (Martigny) in 57 B.c., and was so thoroughly Roman- ized that the Celtic aboriginal inhabitants and the Teutonic Bur- gundian invaders (5th cent.) became Romance ~~*speaking peoples. According to a tradition which can be traced back to the middle of the 8th century, the "Theban legion' was martyred at St Maurice about 285. Valais formed part of the kingdom of Transjurane Burgundy (888), which fell to the empire in 1082, and later of the duchy of Burgundia Minor, which was held from the emperors by the*~~

~~house of Zaringen (extinct 1218). In 999 Rudolph III. of Burgundy gave all temporal rights and_privileges to the bishop of Sion, who was later styled “ prefect and count of the Valais,” and is still a prince of the Holy Roman empire; the pretended donation of Charlemagne is not genuine. The bishops had much to do in keeping back the Ziringen, and later the counts of Savoy. The latter, however, succeeded in winning most of the land west of Sion, while in the upper part of the valley there were many feudal lords (such as the lords of Raron and the counts of Visp). About the middle of the 13th century we find independent communities or “tithings” (“dizains ” or “zehnten”) growing up. In the same century the upper part of the valley was colonized by Germans from Hasli (Bern), who thoroughly Teutonized it, though many Romance local names still remain. In 1854 the liberties of the seven “tithings” (Sion, Sierre, Leuk, Raron, Visp, Brieg, and Conches) were confirmed by the emperor CharlesIV. A little later the influence of Savoy became predominant, and the count secured to his family the bishopric of Sion, of which he was already the suzerain. His progress was resisted by the tithings, which in 1388 utterly defeated the forces of the bishop, the count, and the nobles at Visp, this being a victory of the Teutonic over the Romance ele~~ ment in the land. From 1384 the Morge stream (a little below Sion) was recognized as the boundary between Savoyard or Lower Valais and episcopal or Upper Valais. For the connexion of the latter with the Val d’Ossola, see SWITZERLAND, vol. xxil. p. 785. By the election of Walther von Supersax of Conches as bishop in 1457 the Teutonic element finally won the supremacy. On the out-

break of the Burgundian War the bishop of Sion and the tithings made a treaty with Bern. In November of the same year (1475) they seized all Lower Valais up to Martigny, and in 1476 (March), after the victory of Granson, won St Maurice, Evian, Thonon, and Monthey. The last three districts were given up in 1477, but won again in 1536, though finally by the treaty of 1569 Monthey, Val d’‘Illiez, and Bouveret alone were permanently annexed to Valais. These conquered districts (or Lower Valais) were always ruled as subject lands by the bishop and tithings of Upper Valais. In 1533 a close alliance was made with the Catholic cantons; but by 1551 the Protestants had won so much ground that toleration was pro-

claimed by the local assembly. In 1586 Upper Valais became a member of the Golden League, and finally in 1603-4 the four tithings of Conches, Brieg, Visp, and Raron carried the day in favour of the old faith against those of Leuk, Sierre, and Sion. In 1790-91 Lower Valais rose in revolt ; but it was not finally freed till 1798, when the whole of Valais became part of the Rhodanic, and then one of the cantons of the Helvetic, Republic. Such prolonged and fierce re- sistance was, however, offered to French rule by the inhabitants that in 1802 Bonaparte declared Valais an independent republic, yet in 1810, for strategic reasons, he incorporated it with France as the ' department of the Simplon," and it was not freed till the Austrians came in 1813. In 1815 a local assembly was created, in which each of the seven tithings of Upper and each of the six of Lower Valais (though the latter had nearly double the population of the former) elected four members, the bishop being given four votes. In 1832 Valais joined the League of Sarnen to maintain the Federal Pact of 1815. In 1838-40 it was convulsed by a struggle between the Con- servative and Radical parties, the split into two half cantons being only prevented by the arrival of Federal troops. The constitution was revised in 1839 and 1844; the local assembly was to be elected according to population, and the bishop was given a seat instead of his four votes. In 1843 Valais was one of the Sonderbund, and in 1844 civil war raged, many Liberals being slain at the bridge of Trient (May 1844). The introduction of the Jesuits embittered matters,*

and Valais was the last canton to submit in the Sonderbund War |

(1847); it contented itself, however, with voting steadily against the acceptance of the Federal constitutions of 1848 and 1874. By the constitution of 1847 all ecclesiastical immunities were swept away, and the bishop lost his seat in the assembly. That constitu- tion was revised in 1852, and the present one is dated 1875. There is now a legislative assembly of 101 members, elected for four years by all male citizens of twenty years, in the proportion of one mem- ber to 1000 inhabitants, and an exccutive council of five members, holding office for four years, and chosen by the legislative assembly, though in a certain proportion to the different districts of the canton (two for the upper part, one for Sion, two for the lower part). The 'financial referendum" exists, by which when a capital expendi- ture of £2400, or au annual one of £800 for three years, is to be incurred, or it is

proposed to raise the property tax higher than 1% per cent., the proposal must be submitted to and approved by a popular vote.

ee Furrer, Gesch. von Wallis (3 vols., 1852-54); Gingins La Sarra, Développe-

ment de U' Indépendance du Haut Valais et Conquéte du Bas Valais (1844); and J. Gremaud, Documents Relatifs & U Histotre du Valais (1875 sq.). (W. A.B. C.)

VALDEPENAS, a town of Spain, in the province of Ciudad Real, on the railway line from Madrid to Cordova, is situated in the midst of a district thickly clothed with vineyards at the foot of the northern slope of the Sierra Morena. It is a straggling place and its only industry is that of wine-making (see Wiz). The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 13,876.

VALDES, Juan De (c. 1500-1541), Spanish religious writer, born about 1500 at Cuenca in Castile, was the younger of twin sons of Fernando de Valdes, hereditary regidor of Cuenca. Juan has often been confounded with his twin-brother Alphonso, who was in the suite of Charles V. in 1520, acted as his Latin secretary from 1524, and died in 1532 at Vienna. It has been conjectured that Juan studied at the university of Alcala. We first meet him as the anonymous author of a politico-religious Didlogo de Mercurio y Caron, apparently written in 1528 and published then or soon after. As this Didlogo reflected strongly on the corruptions of the Roman Church, Valdes got into difficulties with the Spanish Inquisition, and left Spain for Naples in 1530. He removed in 1531 to Rome. On 12th January 1533 he writes from Bologna, where he was in attendance upon the pope, Clement VII.; his criticisms of papal policy had been condoned, inasmuch ag in his Didlogo he had defended the validity of the marriage of Catherine of Aragon to Henry VIII. But in the autumn

of 1533 he returned to Naples, and seems never to have left it again. His name has been Italianized into Valdesso and Val d'Esso. It has frequently been asserted that he was appointed by Charles V. as secretary to the

viceroy at Naples, Don Pedro de Toledo; but of this there is no evi- dence, and it seems a " harmonizing " conjecture, based on the confusion between Alphonso and Juan. Curione (writ- ing in 1544) calls him '"'cavalliere di Cesare," but there is no proof of his having ever held an official appointment. At his house on the Chiaja he was the centre of a very distinguished circle, literary and religious, and the influ- ence of his conversations and his writings, chiefly circulated in manuscript, stimulated the desire for a spiritual refor- mation of the church. The first-fruit of his cultured leisure at Naples was a philological treatise, Didlogo de la Lengua (written 1533) ; but, though his friends urged him to seek distinction by his humanistic studies, his bent was towards the spiritual problems of Biblical interpretation and the deep things of the devout life. Vermigli (Peter Martyr) and Marcantonio Flaminio were leading spirits in the coterie of Valdes, which included Vittoria Colonna and her sister-in-law Giulia Gonzaga. On Ochino, whom he furnished with themes for sermons, his influence was very great. Carnesecchi, who had known Valdes at Rome as "'a modest and wellbred courtier," found him at Naples in 1540 "wholly intent upon the study of Holy Scripture," portions of which he translated from the Hebrew and Greek into Spanish, with comments and suggestive pre- faces. To his teaching Carnesecchi ascribes his own com- plete adoption of the Evangelical doctrine of justification by faith, and at the same time his estrangement from the policy of the Lutheran schism. Valdes died at Naples in May 1541.

The death of Valdes scattered his band of associates. Ochino and Vermigli abandoned the hope of a regenerated Catholicism, and left Italy. By degrees some of Valdes's writings were translated into Italian and published. They exhibit great originality and penetration, combined with a delicate vein of semi-mystical spiritu- ality, and retain a large measure of that personal charm which is attributed to their author in all contemporary notices. Llorente finds traces in Valdes of the influence of Tauler's writings; any such influence must have been at second hand. Valdes was in re- lations with Fra Benedetto of Mantua, the anonymous author of Del Benefizio di Gest Cristo Crocefisso, which was revised by Flaminio (reprinted by Dr Babington, Cambridge, 1855). The suggestion that Valdes was unsound on the doctrine of the Trinity was first made in 1567 by the Transylvanian bishop, Francis David (see Socrnus, vol. xxii. p. 230); it has been adopted

by Sand (1684), Wallace (1850), and other anti-Trinitarian writcrs, and is counte- nanced by Bayle. Some colour has been given to this view by iso- lated expressions in his writings, and by the subsequent course of Ochino, whose orthodoxy seems, however, to have been unjustly suspected, from the speculative insight with which he presented objections, But Valdes, though he never treats of the Trinity, even when commenting upon Matt. xxviii. 19, reserving it in his Latte Spirituale as a topic for advanced Christians, explicitly affirms the consubstantiality of the Son, whom lie unites in doxologies with the Father and the Holy Spirit (Opusc., p. 145). His interest centred in matters of practical rather than of speculative theology: his great aim was the promotion of a healthy and personal piety.

The following is a list of his writings.

(1) Didlogo de Mercurio y Caron, 8vo (no date or place of print- ing; 1528?). An Italian translation, by Nicolo Franco, was printed at Venice without date, and reprinted at the same place in 1545. Both with the original and the translation is generally found a Did- logo on the sack of Rome in 1527, by Alphonso de Valdes, printed at the same time. Both are ascribed to Juan in the reprint Dos Didlogos of 1850. (2) Didlogo de la Lengua, written in 1533, first printed at Madrid, 1737, reprinted 1860 and 1873. (3) Qual Maniera si devrebbe tenere a informare … gli Figliuoli de Christiani delle Cose della Religione (no date or place of printing ; before 1545, as it was made use of by the Italian translator of Calvin's catechism, 1545). No Spanish originalis known. It was reproduced as Latte Spirituale, Basel, 1549, and Paris, 1550. A Latin version, by Pier- paolo Vergerio, was published in 1554 and again in 1557; it has been translated into German twice, into Polish, into English by J. T. Betts, 1882, and into Spanish by Ed. Boehmer, in Revista Cristiana, Madrid, February 1882 (also separately published). (4) Zrataditos, first published at Bonn, 1881, from a manuscript in the Palatine Library

at Vienna. An Italian translation, 1 Cinque Tratatelli Evangelict, was published at Rome, 1545, reprinted 1869. An English trans- lation, by J. T. Betts, is in XVII. Opuseules, 1882. (5) Alfabeto Christiano, Venice, 1545, an Italian translation of an unpublished and lost Spanish original. An English

version, by B. B. Wiffen, was published in 1861. (6) Qiento 7 Diez Congideragiones ; the ori- ginal is said to have been published, and all copies suppressed by the Spanish Inquisition ; thirty-nine of the Congideragiones werc published with the Jrataditos from a Vienna manuscript. An Italian translation, by Celio Secondo Curione, Le Cento et Dieci Divine Considerationi, was published at Basel, 1550, 8vo. A French translation, by Claude de Kerquifinen, was published at Lyons, 1563, 8vo, aud Paris, 1565, 8vo. The English translation by Nicholas Ferrar was published at Oxford, 1638, 4to, at the instance of George Herbert ; it was reprinted at Cambridge, 1646 ; a new translation, by J. T. Betts, was issued in 1865. A translation into Spanish from the Italian, by Luis Usdz i Rio, was published in 1855. (7) Seven Doetrinal Letters, printed with the Z'rataditos, from a Vienna manu- script, and translated by J. T. Betts in the XVII. Opuseules. (8) Comentario Breve .. . sobrela Epistola de San Pablo a los Romanos, Venice, 1556; translation and commentary, edited by Juan Perez de Pineda, reprinted 1856 ; English version, by J. T. Betts, 1883. (9) Comentario Breve . . . sobre la Primera Epistola de San Pablo a los Corintios, Venice, 1557 ; translation and commentary, edited, reprinted, and translated as No. 8. (10) El Hvangelio de San Mateo, translation and commentary, first published in 1881, from a Vienna manuscript ; English version, by J. T. Betts, 1883. (11) El Salterio, translation of the Psalms from Hebrew into Spanish, published with the Z'rataditos, from a Vienna manuscript. (12) At Vienna is an unpublished commentary in Spanish on Psalms i.-xli. (13) Sand mentions a commentary on St John's Gospel, which is not known to exist.

The notices of Valdes in Sand (Biblioth. Antitrinitar., 1684, p. 2), Bayle, and Wallace (Antitrin. Biog., 1850, ii. 8) are very inadequate. The revival of interest in him is due to M'Crie, Hist. Ref. in Italy, 1827, and Hist. Ref. in Spain, 1829. But the full knowledge of his life and teachings was first opened up by Benjamin B. Wiffen, whose Life of Valdes was prefixed in 1865 to the new translation of the Considerations. Since then important discoveries have been made in the Aulie Library, Vienna, by Dr Edward Boehmer ; compare his Span. Reformers of Two Centuries, 1874, and Lives of the Twin Brothers, J. and A. de Valdes, pre- fixed to Biblioth. Wiffeniana, 1882, also separately, with introd. by J. T. Betts. For an interesting sketch of Valdes, see Benrath's Bernardino Ochino, 1875. Respecting his

theological standpoint, compare Bonet-Maury, Early Sources of Eng. Unit. Christiantty, trans. by Hall, 1884. (A. GO

VALDO. See WALDo.

VALENCE, a town of France, chef-lieu of the depart- ment of Dréme and an episcopal see, is situated on the left bank of the Rhone, 65 miles south of Lyons on the railway to Marseilles. The river is here crossed by a fine suspension bridge. The cathedral of St Apollinaris (origin- ally of St Stephen) was rebuilt in the 11th century in the Auvergnesque variety of the Romanesque style, and consecrated in 1095 by Urban II. It was greatly injured in the Wars of Religion, but restored in 1604. The porch was rebuilt in 1861 ; above it rises a stone tower (187 feet). The church contains the monument of Pius VI. (bust by Canova), who died at Valence in 1799. A curious house (Les Tétes) of the 16th century has a sculptured front with heads of Homer, Hippocrates, Aristotle, Pythagoras, &c. The antique "little seminary" is occupied by a gallery of pictures, a museum of natural history, a library (25,000 volumes), and a collection of antiquities. Valence possesses a botanic garden, a champ de Mars, artillery barracks, and a departmental prison, worked on the solitary system. The chief industries are the spinning and weaving of silk, oil-pressing, distilling, metal-founding, and the manufacture of macaroni. A considerable trade is carried on in the pro- duct of this industry and in wine and agricultural produce. The population in 1881 was 21,941 (commune 25,402) and in 1886 22,453 (commune 24,761).

Valentia colonia Julia, Valentia Segalawunorum urbs, or eivitas Valentinorwm, was the capital of the Segalauni, and the seat of a celebrated school prior to the Roman conquest, a colony under Augustus, and an important town of Viennensis Prima under Valentinian. It was ravaged by the Alani and other barbarians, and fell successively under the power of the Burgundians, the Franks, the sovereigns of Arles, the emperors of Germany, the dukes of Valentinois, the counts of Toulouse, and its own bishops. The inhabitants rose unsuccessfully against these last in 1229, but obtained protection with the help of the dauphin in 1345. In 1450 they had their rights and privileges confirmed by Louis XI. and put on an equal footing

with those of the rest of Dauphiné. In the 16th century Protestantism spread freely under Bishop

Jean de Montluc, and Valence became the capital of the Protestants of the province in 1568. The town was fortified by Francis I. It had become the seat of a celebrated university in 1454; but the revocation of the Edict of Nantes struck a fatal blow at its industry, commerce, and population. Valence was the birthplace of General Championnet aud of President Bonjean (shot by the Commune of Paris in 1871); the family of Montalivet had its origin here. VALENCIA, a province of Spain, one of the three into which the former "kingdom " of Valencia is now divided, has an area of 4352 square miles and a population (1877) of 679,030, being thus, next to Barcelona, the most popu- lous province in the kingdom. It is bounded on the N. by Teruel and Castellon de la Plana, on the E. by the Mediterranean, on the S. by Alicante, and on the W. by Albacete and Cuenca. The surface is very much diversi- fied ; along the coast it is for the most part low and level, the fertile "vegas" of Valencia, Jativa, and Gandia in many places rising very little above sea-level ; to the west of these is a series of tablelands of a mean elevation of about 1000 feet, which in turn rise into the mountains that form the eastern boundary of the tableland of New Castile, and attain within the province a maximum eleva- tion of nearly 4000 feet. The principal rivers are the Guadalaviar or Turia and the Jucar. The former enters the province in the extreme north-west, flows south-east, and falls into the sea below the town of Valencia ; it receives numerous tributaries of little importance, and it dispenses fertility by numerous 'acequias," mostly of Moorish origin, throughout the whole of the lower part of its course. The Jucar is joined on the left at Cofrentes ("'Confluentes") by the Cabriel, a stream nearly as con- siderable as itself, and lower down by the Magro ; its chief right-hand tributary is the Albayda. Both the Jucar and the Albayda, like the Turia, supply an extensive irrigation. Almost every kind of geological formation from the Silurian to the Quaternary is represented in Valencia: the vegas are Quaternary ; nearly three-fourths of the entire pro- vince belong to the Cretaceous; large areas, especially to the west, in the district of Requena and Utiel, are of the Tertiary period ; in the north the Jurassic is prominent

; and Triassic is found along many of the river-valleys. The coast is skirted by considerable stretches of sand dune, and by a series of these the lagoon of Albufera (21,000 acres) is separated from the Mediterranean. The vegas enjoy an exceptionally fine, almost sub-tropical climate. In their low-lying portions rice is the favourite crop ; elsewhere wheat, maize, and all kinds of fruit are abundantly grown; the mulberry is cultivated for silk; and wine and oil are produced. Esparto grass is grown in the less fertile areas. The tablelands produce according to their elevation and exposure figs, almonds, olives, and vines. The pastures of the higher grounds sustain numer- ous sheep and goats; but cattle and horses are relatively few in Valencia. The hillsides are somewhat bare of

timber. The mineral resources of the province are little developed. The fishing industry on the coast is con- siderable. The manufactures include those of silk, glass,

pottery, and leather; there are also iron foundries, dis- tilleries, and soap manufactories. The coast railway from Tarragona to Encina passes through Valencia, whence another line has been carried along the Cuenca road as far as to Utiel (544 miles). The province is divided into twenty-one partidos judiciales and has 275 ayuntamientos. There are six "'cities"—Valencia (see below), Gandia (7604 inhabitants in 1877), Jativa (14,534), Requena (13,527), Sagunto (6287), and Alcira (16,146). VALENCIA, capital of the above province, is situated in the beautiful " huerta" of Valencia, on the right bank of the Guadalaviar or Turia, 3 miles above its mouth, and 304 miles by rail east-south-east from Madrid. Until 1871 it was enclosed by a wall, built in 1356 by Pedro IV.; two ay. — 5

picturesque gateways with machicolated towers still remain. | elegant Gothic hall (1482). The citadel, on the north- The river, reduced, except in time of flood, to a scanty | east of the town, was built by Charles Y. as a protection stream by the demands made upon it for purposes of irri- | against Barbarossa, the sea-rover ; in the south-west of the gation, is crossed by five bridges, of which the longest has | town is the former College of Saint Augustine, now used thirteen arches. The streets are for the most part narrow, | as a model prison, adjoining which is a large hospital.

crooked, and somewhat gloomy, but in the more modern | Outside the walls are a botanic garden, a large bull-ring, quarters there are some broad and handsome thoroughfares. | and various shady promenades, including the beautiful The cathedral (La Seo), begun in 1262, was afterwards "Glorieta," and, on the north side of the river, the alameda, (1459) lengthened in its original Gothic style, but in such | leading to the port of El Grao. The principal manufacture a way as to spoil its proportions, and in the 18th century | is silk, and the town is also celebrated for its coloured it was further injured by Pseudo-Classic additions. It | tiles or "azulejos." Linen and woollen fabrics, hats, possesses some fine examples of the sculpture and metal- | leather, paper, cigars, glass, and pottery are also manu- work of the 15th century, as well as of the Valencian school | factured, and there are foundries and printing-works. Corn, of painting. The campanile (El Miguelete), an isolated | rice, silk, saffron, oranges, raisins, almonds, figs, and other octagonal Gothic tower, 162 feet in height, commands an | fruits are extensively exported, and iron, hardware, timber,

uel

The port is at El Grao (Villanueva del Grao; population 4433 in 1877), 3 miles distant, where a commodious harbour with a mini- mum depth of 20 feet has been ~| constructed. The works were be- =] gun in 1792. The population of SJ Valencia in 1877 was 143,856,

Xj and in 1888 about 170,000 (esti-

— (136 B.c.). It sided with Sertorius (c. 77 B.c.), and was accordingly severely punished by Pompey, but must have \| recovered speedily, being mentioned by 3 Pliny (iii. 4) as a colony in the region of the Edetani, and spoken of by Mela as an important place. It was taken from the Goths by the Moors in 714, and from the Moors by the Cid (see vol. v. p. 774) in 1094, from whom it is soinetimes called Valencia del Cid. The Moors recovered. possession in 1101, but were compelled finally to relinquish it in 1238, when Jayme I. of Aragon (" El Conquistador") added it to his domi- nions. In the 16th and 17th ceuturics it became the seat of a considerable school of painting, of which Juanes (1506-79) may be regarded as the founder, and to which belonged also < rhage de Ribalta (1550-1628), Juan : e Ribalta (1597-1628), José Ribera is Fe oh, TERE (1588-1656), Pedro Orrente

(1560-1644), extensive view of the town and surrounding country. Near | and J. G. Espinosa (1600-1680). In the beginning of the 17th the cathedral is the episcopal palace ; its large and valuable ceutury Valencia and its surrounding district suffered greatly from

: – 1: og BOR the expulsion of the Moors, its most industrious and enterprisin library, oe ies ane “aa er at pe a ffeved greatly cultivators, In the War of Succession Valencia sided emphatio- during the French occupation in 2. Besides the cathe- | ally with the house of Austria, for which it was punished by being dral, Valencia has fourteen parish churches and numerous | deprived of many of its ancient privileges. In 1808 an abortive other ecclesiastical buildings, none of them of great archi- | attempt to capture it was.made by the French; they succeeded, tectural beauty or interest ; the church of St Nicholas (of however, in/ T1612, and hold Gua dune 203"

Moorish origin) has, however, good specimens of Juanes VALENCIA, a town in the United States of Venezuela, as well as frescos by Dinis Vidal; and Ribalta can be studied | capital of the state of Carabobo, situated amidst savannas in the chapel of the Colegio de Corpus or del Patriarcha. | and tropical plantations, 1800 feet above sea-level, in the The university buildings, dating from the 16th century, are | valley between the two chains of the Maritime Andes. It large but uninteresting ; the library (about 42,000 volumes) | is about 3 or 4 miles distant from the Lagoon of Tacarigua suffered severely in 1812, and, like the other appointments | or Lake of Valencia (about 45 miles in length and from of the university, falls considerably short of modern require- | 10 to 13 in width). The town is connected by cart-roads ments. ‘There is a collection of pictures (about 1000) in | with Cardcas and other places in the interior, as well as the city gallery, but only a few,—almost entirely of the local | with its port, Puerto Cabello. A railway across the school,—are of any importance. Among other public build- | northern chain of the Maritime Andes, with a total length ings may be mentioned the court-house, a Doric edifice, | of 334 miles, was nearly completed between Valencia and dating from the time of Ferdinand the Catholic, and having | its seaport in the end of 1887. The town is well built, curious frescos (1592) in its “chamber of deputies”; the | with straight streets cutting one another at right angles. custom-house (1758),

now a cigar manufactory, employing | The plaza or chief square, which is adorned with an early some 3500 women; and the silk exchange, a large and | Spanish church, commands a magnificent view of the

;

Za : =. L

al 7

if vr

<

mie bi

a6 eS EN and colonial produce are imported. –

VAL—VAL

Maritime Andes. There are several manufactories, among them a weaving factory and one for the making of machinery and agricultural implements. An iron aque- duct supplies the town with drinking water. Among the educational institutions are a college of science and a normal school. The climate is said to be healthy. The highest temperature is equal to 85° Fahr., the lowest 68°, the mean 76°°5. The population in 1883 was 36,145.

VALENCIENNES, a town of France and a first-class fortress, in the department of Nord, is 157 miles north- north-east of Paris on the railway to Brussels, at the point where the river Rhonelle joins the Scheldt. The latter here divides into two branches, one of which flows through the town, while the other, canalized, fills the trenches of the citadel and skirts the fortifications. Valenciennes is the centre of a rich coal-field, which has called into exist- ence numerous foundries, forges, rolling-mills, wire-works, and machine shops. There is also an extensive beetroot cultivation, with attendant sugar-works and distilleries. Cambrics and lawns are manufactured and calico-printing is carried on, though little of the famous lace is now made. There are a court of first instance, a chamber of

commerce, a conseil de prud'hommes, a chamber of agri- culture, and a sugar exchange. The town-hall, rebuilt after the old plan in 1867-68, and surmounted by a square campanile, contains examples of the three Watteaus, Van Dyck, Velazquez, Rubens (the Stoning of St Stephen), as well as numerous productions of the native school of fine arts (founded in 1782). There are also collections of medals and seals and a fine specimen of old Valenciennes tapestry. The library, formed at the Revolution from the libraries of the religious houses of Valenciennes, St Ainand, and the neighbourhood, contains 25,000 printed volumes and 980 MSS., the latter including valuable works in early Romance. Valenciennes also contains several interesting private collections, and has associations for the promotion of agriculture, science, art, music, &c. The church of Notre Dame du Cordon, of the 13th-century style, was consecrated in 1864. The church of St Géry has a grace- ful modern tower; but only a few pillars remain of the old building of 1225. The crooked and ill-paved streets contain some houses of the 15th and 16th centuries. Statues of Watteau and Froissart adorn the town. Of the six gates three have some architectural pretensions. The population in 1881 was 23,291 (commune 27,607) and in 1886 22,919 (commune 27,575).

Valenciennes, so named because founded or restored by the emperor Valentinian I., was a residence of Clovis, and it was hither that Charlemagne summoned his first assembly of states in 771. The Normans were repulsed from its fortifications in 881. Valen- ciennes by turns belonged to Hainault and was independent, till taken by Baldwin of Flanders in 1003. It cspoused the cause of Jean d'Avesnes in 1353, and was unsuccessfully besieged by the Flemings. In the 16th century Valenciennes becamc the strong- hold of Protestantism in Hainault, but was conqucred by the Spaniards, who committed all sorts of excesses. In 1656 the Spaniards under Condé made a suecessful defence against the French under Turcnne; but in 1677 Louis XIV. took the town after an eight days' siege, and Vauban constructed the citadel. Valeneicnnes has since always belonged to France. In 1798, after forty-three days' bombardment, the garrison, reduced to 3000 men, surrendered to the allied forces numbering some 140,000 or 150,000 men, with 400 eannon. In 1815 it defended itself succcssfully. Among the natives of Valenciennes may be mentioned Isabella of Hainault, wife of Philip Augustus of France, Baldwin IX. of Flanders (emperor of

Constantinople), Jeanne of Flanders, Henry VII. of Luxemburg (empcror of Germany), Froissart, the painters Watteau (3), Pater, and Abel de Pujol, the sculptors De Crauck, Durez, Saly, Carpeaux, and Lemaire, the soldiers Jacques de Lalaing and Charles dc Lannoy (viceroy of Naples), and the navigator Lemaire.

VALENS, empetor of the East from 364 to 378, owed his elevation in the thirty-sixth year of his age to his brother Valentinian, who chose him to be his associate in the empire, of which a formal division into East and West

was now once for all definitively arranged (see VALENTIN- tan I). Valens had been attached to Julian's bodyguard, but he was not much of a soldier, though his father, Gra- tian of Pannonia, had risen from the ranks to a high posi- tion. A revolt headed by Procopius in the second year of his reign, and backed up by the public opinion of Con- stantinople and the sympathy of the Gothic princes and chiefs on the Danube, seemed so alarming that he thought of negotiation; but in the following year the revolt collapsed at the prompt action of a loyal and able veteran officer. In the year 366 Valens at one stroke reduced the taxes of the empire by one-fourth, a very popular measure, though one of questionable policy in the face of the threaten- ing attitude of the Goths on the lower Danube. Before venturing on a campaign against them, Valens received baptism from Eudoxus, the bishop of Constantinople and the leader of the Arian party. After some small successes over the Goths, won by his generals, Valens concluded a peace with them, which lasted six years, on a general understanding that the Danube was to be the boundiry between Goths and Romans. On his return to Constanti- nople in 369-370 Valens began to persecute his orthodox and Catholic subjects. Yet he can hardly have been a hearty and willing persecutor, or he would not have suffered the orthodox Basil to remain bishop of Ceesarea in Cappa- docia, nor can he have been a thoroughgoing religious fanatic, or he would not have restrained many of his sub- jects from burying themselves in monasteries to escape the duties of citizens. Indeed he had not the strength of will or force of character to have been either the one or the other.

In the years 371 to 377 Valens was in Asia Minor, most of the time at the Syrian Antioch. The late war with Persia under the emperors Julian and Jovian had not been satisfactorily concluded: the question as to the possession or the protectorate of Armenia was still in suspense. Valens, though anxious to avoid an Eastern war, because of danger nearer home from the restlessness of the Goths, was compelled to take the field against Sapor, who had invaded and occupied Armenia. It seems that Valens! crossed the Euphrates in 373, and in Meso- potamia his troops drove back the king of Persia to the farther bank of the Tigris. But the Roman success was by no means decisive, and no definite understanding as to boundaries was come to with Persia. Valens returned to Antioch, where in the winter of 373 a young man of high rank, Theodorus by name, was made to believe by a pack of fortune-tellers and magicians that the emperor's suc- cessor would be a man whose name began with " Theod." Theodorus was put to death, with many others whose name began with the same fatal letters; and this led to a vindictive persecution throughout the province of Asia of all who professed or practised magic and necromancy. The age was a very superstitious and inquisitive one, and Valens certainly shared its weakness. Between 374 and 377 we read of grievous complaints of injustice and extor- tion perpetrated under legal forms, the result probably of the recent panic, and pointing to an increasing weakness and timidity at headquarters. Although preparations were made for following up the war with Persia and securing the frontier, a truce was patched up, rather to the disad- vantage of the empire, Armenia and the adjacent country being half conquered and annexed by Sapor. The armies of Rome, in fact, were wanted in another quarter. The Huns, of whom we now hear for the first time, were be- ginning in 376 to press the Goths from the north, and the latter asked leave of the emperor to cross the Danube into Roman territory. This they were allowed to do, on the condition that they came unarmed, and their children were

1 Ami. Marc., xxix. 1; the narrative is brief and not very clear.

transported to Asia as hostages. The conditions, how- ever, were not strictly enforced, and the whole affair was treacherously mismanaged by the imperial generals, who for their own profit forced the new settlers to buy

food at famine prices. Accordingly the enraged Goths, under their chief Frithigern, streamed across the Balkans into Thrace and the country round Adrianople, plundering, burning, and slaughtering as they went. They were driven back for a time, but returned in the spring of 378 in greater force, with Huns and Alans to fight with them against the empire; and again, after one or two repulses, they pene- trated to the neighbourhood of Adrianople. Valens, who had now returned to Constantinople, left the capital in May 378 with a strong and well-officered army. Without awaiting the arrival of his nephew Gratian, emperor of the West, who had just won a great victory over one of the barbarous tribes of Germany in Alsace, Valens attacked the enemy at once, although his troops had to go into action heated and fatigued by a long march on a sultry August day. The battle was decided mainly by the cavalry of the Alans and Sarmatians, the Roman infantry being outnumbered, outmanceuvred, and finally so hemmed in that the men could scarcely draw their swords. The slaughter went on for hours, till the imperial army was destroyed. Valens either perished on the field or, as some said, in a cottage fired by the enemy. From the battle of Adrianople the Goths permanently established themselves south of the Danube.

Ammianus Marcellinus, a contemporary writer, is our chief authority for the reigns of Valens and Valentinian. See also Gibbon's

sketch of the period in the 26th and 27th chapters of his Decline and Fall and Hodgkin's Italy and her Invaders.

VALENTINE, or VALENTINUS, the name of a consider- able number of saints,! three of whom may be particularized. 1. VALENTINUS, presbyter and martyr, according to the authorized Roman legend (see lesson for second nocturn, 14th February, in the diocese of Tortosa), was arrested and thrown into chains at the instance of the emperor Claudius (Gothicus), and handed over to Calphurnius, who employed

one Asterius to try to win him back to idolatry. Valentine

miraculously healed the blind daughter of Asterius, who accordingly believed and was baptized, with all his house. The saint after long imprisonment was beaten with clubs and finally beheaded on the Flaminian Way (14th Feb- ruary). 2. VALENTINUS of Interamna (Terni), bishop and

martyr, miraculously healed Cheremon, the deformed son of Craton, a Greek rhetorician living in Rome, who along with various other prominent persons was accordingly converted. This Valentine, who also is commemorated on 14th February, is invoked, especially in Italy and Germany (St Velten), in cases of epilepsy and cognate disorders. 3. VALENTINUS, who is spoken of as the apostle of Rheetia, and venerated in Passau as its first bishop, flourished during the first half of the fifth century.

For the peculiar observances that used to be connected with St Valentine's Eve and Day in England, Scotland, and also (it is said) in some parts of France, and to which allusion is so frequently made by English writers from Shakespeare onwards, such works as Brand's Popular Antiquities, Hone's Every-Day Book, or Chambers's Book of Days may be consulted. Their appropriateness to the spring season is, in a general way, perhaps, obvious enough ; and, as for the name, it has been suggested that there is at least a similarity in sound between Valentine and galentin (Fr. dim. from galant).

VALENTINIAN I., emperor of the West from 364 to 375. He had been an officer of the guard under Julian and Jovian, and had risen high in the imperial service. With a fine robust frame, he possessed great courage and great military capacity. He was chosen emperor in his forty-third year by the officers of the army at Nica in Bithynia early in 364, and shortly afterwards named his brother VALENS (¢.v.) colleague with him in the empire.

1 The Heiligenlexieon of Stadler-Ginal enumerates fifty-two.

The two brothers, after passing through the. chief cities of the neighbouring district, arranged the partition of the empire at Naissus (Nissa) in Upper Meesia. As emperor of the West, Valentinian took Italy, Illyricum, Spain, the Gauls, Britain, and Africa, leaving to Valens the eastern half of the Balkan Peninsula, Greece, Egypt, Syria, and Asia Minor as far as Persia. During the short reign of Valentinian there were wars in Africa, in Germany, and in Britain, and Rome came into collision with barbarian peoples of whom we now hear for the first time,—Burgundians, Saxons, Alemanni. The cmperor's chief work was guard- ing the frontiers and establishing military positions. Milan was at first his headquarters for settling the affairs of northern Italy ; next year (365) he was at Paris, and then at Rheims, to

direct the operations of his generals against the Alemanni. This people were driven back to the Ger- man bank of the Rhine, and checked for a while by a chain of military posts and fortresses, though at the close of 367 they swooped down on Moguntiacum (Mainz) and plundered the city. In that same year Valentinian was at Amiens, and there, before his assembled troops, he gave the title of Augustus to his son Gratian, eight years of age. The next three years he spent at Treves, organizing the defence of the Rhine frontier against the Alemanni and Saxons, and personally superintending the construction of numerous forts. Treves was, in fact, his headquarters dur- ing most of his reign. His general administration seems to have been thoroughly honest and able, in some respects beneficent. If he was hard and exacting in the matter of taxes, he spent them in the defence and improvement of his dominions, not in idle show or luxury. Though him- self a plain and almost illiterate soldier, he was a founder of schools, and he also provided medical attendance for the poor of Rome, by appointing a physician for each of the fourteen districts of the city. He was a Christian, an orthodox Catholic, and in his life perfectly pure; but he permitted absolute religious freedom to all his subjects. Against all abuses, both civil and ecclesiastical, he steadily set his face, even against the increasing wealth and worldli- ness of the clergy. Valentinian was in many ways a good and able ruler at a particularly difficult time. The great blot on his memory is his cruelty, which at times was frightful, and showed itself in its full fierceness in the punishment of persons accused of witchcraft, soothsaying, or magical practices. In 374 the Quadi, a German tribe in what is now Moravia and Hungary, resenting the erec- tion of Roman forts to the north of the Danube in what they considered to be their own territory, crossed the river and laid waste the province of Pannonia, Valentinian's native land. The emperor in the April of the following year entered Illyricum with a powerful army, and gave audience to an embassy from the Quadi at Bregetio on the Danube, somewhere near Pressburg. Their defence threw him into a paroxysm of rage, in which he suddenly fell down, apparently in a fit of apoplexy, and died in a few hours. His two sons, Gratian and Valentinian II, were jointly his successors.

VALENTINIAN IL., an infant of four years of age, with his half-brother Gratian, a lad of about seventeen, became the emperors of the West on the death of their father, Valentinian I.,in 375. They made Milan their home;

and the empire was nominally divided between them, Gratian taking the trans-Alpine provinces, whilst Italy, Ilyricum in part, and Africa were to be under the rule of Valen- tinian IT., or rather of his mother, Justina. Justina was an Arian, and the imperial court at Milan pitted itself against the Catholics, under the famous Ambrose, bishop of that city. But so great was his popularity that the court was decidedly worsted in the contest, and the em- peror's authority materially shaken. In 387 Maximus,

who had commanded a Roman army in Britain, and had in 383 (the year of Gratian's death) made himself master of the northern provinces, crossed the Alps into the valley of the Po and threatened Milan. The emperor and his mother fled to Thessalonica, to Theodosius, the emperor of the East and husband of Galla, Valentinian's sister. At their entreaty he marched into Italy with an army, de- cisively defeated Maximus, and set Valentinian once more on the throne (388). He also converted the lad to orthodox Catholicism. Four years later Valentinian was dead. A barbarian warrior, a Frank named Arbogast, who had fought for Gratian and Theodosius, so presumed on his services that Valentinian was provoked into giving him a letter of dismissal. But Arbogast tore the letter up before the emperor's face and openly defied him. Soon after- wards Valentinian was slain, no doubt by Arbogast's order, at Vienne in Gaul, while taking part in some athletic sports. Eugenius, a humble dependent of the barbarian, succeeded to the empire of the West, a disgrace noted by the poet Claudian (De Tertio Consulatu Honorii, |xvi.).

VALENTINIAN IIL, emperor of the West from 425 to 455, the son of Constantius and Placidia, daughter of the great Theodosius, was declared Czesar at Thessalonica under the auspices of Theodosius IT., and again the follow- ing year at Rome, in the seventh year of his age. His reign of thirty years was a period of great and terrible events associated with the names of Attila, Genseric, and Aetius, the "last of the Romans." This period is marked by the dismemberment of the Western empire, the con- quest of the province of Africa by the Vandals in 439, the final abandonment of Britain in 446, the loss of great portions of Spain and Gaul, in which the barbarians had established themselves, and the ravaging of Sicily and of

the western coasts of the Mediterranean by the fleets of Genseric. As a set-off against these calamities there was the great victory of Aetius over Attila in 451 in the neighbourhood of Chalons. (See Roms, vol. xx. p. 781.) The burden of taxation became more and more intolerable as the power of Rome decreased, although there were a partial remission of taxes in 450 and a cancelling of arrears in consequence of the general impoverishment of Rome's subjects. Ravenna was Valentinian's usual residence ; but he fled to Rome in 452 on the approach of Attila, who, after ravaging the north of Italy, died in the following year. In 454 Aetius, between whose son and a daughter of the emperor a marriage had been arranged, was treacherously murdered by Valentinian. Next year, however, the crime was avenged by the assassination of the emperor as he was looking on at some games in the Campus Martius. He was a contemptible creature, cowardly, self-indulgent, without spirit, and without ability. With Valentinian III. the family of Theodosius became extinct.

Our chief original sources for the reign of Valentinian ITI. are Jordanes, Prosper's Chronieles, written in the 6th century and end- ing with the year 455, and the poet Sidonius Apollinaris. See also

Gibbon's history of the period (Deeline and Fall, c. xxxili.-xxxv.) and Hodgkin's Jtaly and her Invaders (1880).

VALENTINUS AND VALENTINIANS. Valentinus was the most important Christian theologian before Origen. Clement and Origen both were his pupils. In his school all those problems were started which afterwards engrossed the Greek fathers, and a large proportion of the solutions given by him and his followers subsequently became, though in a modified form, accepted doctrines. The dog- matic of Origen lies at the foundation of the orthodox dogmatic of the church, and it in its turn had its prototype in that of the Valentinian school. Valentinus was the first man in Christendom who for other than merely apologetic purposes sought to fuse together the results of Greek philosophy with the substance of the Gospel, combined the exalted ethic of the Platonic and Neopythagorean schools

with the preaching of the evangelical pulpit, and treated the manifestation of Jesus as the keystone in the great structure of thought which Greek science had reared. His theology is, so to speak, the central pier of the bridge con- necting the Jewish with the Christian Alexandrians. He may perhaps be regarded as superior to Philo in sober- mindedness and in acuteness, and as having excelled Origen at once in delicacy of religious and moral perception and in vigour of language, though he was far behind him in learning and in extent of knowledge.! His success as a: teacher was brilliant. Tertullian tells us that among all the Christian "collegia" that of Valentinus was the most crowded,? and the numerous branches into which his scholars soon divided are evidence of the wealth of his influence. Even his enemies have praised his "ingenium et eloquium" (Adv. Valent., 4). Tertullian, Clement, Origen, Jerome, and Adamantius agree in testifying that he was a man of singular gifts. The few extant fragments of his writings fully confirm this: there is not one of them that is not marked by originality and depth. And his disciples, although they have partly deteriorated his teachings by undisciplined fancies and inappropriate mytho- logizing, have, every one of them, something particular and valuable to say. Their influence did not cease until in the catechetical school of Alexandria the church found teachers of her own who were at once scientific theologians and de- fenders of the church of orthodoxy.

Valentinus.—Of Valentinus himself almost nothing is known. That he was an Egyptian by birth and received his education in Alexandria is probable but not certain.? He came to Rome under Hyginus about 138, flourished under Pius (140-155), and was still there in the time of Anicetus (c. 155-166). This we learn from Irenus (iii. 4, 3), who lets us see that his main activity was in Rome. He further tells us that Polycarp during his sojourn in that city was the means of converting some Valentinians. Tertullian supplements (De Prescr., 30) Irenzeus with the information that Valentinus originally attached himself in Rome to the main body of the church, but "ob inquietam semper curiositatem qua fratres quoque vitiabat," after having been twice temporarily suspended from communion, he was ultimately cut off. This statement shows that the Roman Church did not, to begin with, possess the standards by which to try Valentinus. The sections of the Shepherd of Hermas which treat of the Gnostics represent them as still continuing to exist within the church, although their dangerous character was already

known. It was not, then, until the bishopric of Anicetus that the Roman Church suc- ceeded in ridding itself of the Valentinian collegia. It seems very doubtful whether there is any good foundation for Tertullian's further allegation (Adv. Valent., 4) that Valentinus was ambitious of obtaining the episcopate of Rome and that his failure in this caused him to break with the church. Hippolytus will have it (see Epiphanius and Philaster) that Valentinus afterwards went to Cyprus as a declared heretic. We are not in a position to control this statement ; but the words of Ireneeus would almost lead to the conclusion that he died in Rome. At any rate there is no reason to suppose that he was alive much later than 160. 'Tertullian, in spite of a disposition to bring him down to as recent a period as possible, does not seem to think of him as living in the time of Marcus Aurelius. But in the school of Valentinus it was asserted that their master had been a pupil of Theodas, a yv@pipos TlavAov ;4 in that case he must have been a very old man in 160.

1 Jerome nevertheless calls him "doctissimus" (Comm. in Osee, ii. 10).

2 Tert., Adv. Valent. ; cf. Origen, Hom., ii. 5, and Comm., xiv. p. 40, " robustissima secta."'

3 Epiph., Wer., 31; Mur. Fragm., fin.

4 Clem., Strom., vii. 17, 106.

Valentinus was the author of several epistles, three frag- ments of which have been preserved by Clement ;! one of these was addressed to a certain Agathopus. He also com- posed homilies (one entitled On Friends), of which we possess four fragments.? An expression of Tertullian's(Adv. Valent., 2) seems to imply that Valentinus was also the author of a treatise entitled Sophia. Perhaps this is the source from which Irenzus's systematic account of the Valentinian doctrine (i. 11, 1) was indirectly taken. Ter- tullian speaks of Psalms of Valentinus (De Car., xvii. 20) ; the author of the Muratorian Fragment seems also to refer to these; and in the Philosophumena of Hippolytus (vi. 37) a considerable fragment from them is given. The

“gospel” of Valentinus is spoken of below.

Sources, —All that we possess of Valentinus and his disciples are the fragments preserved by their opponents, the fathers of the chureh. We cannot therefore put implicit confidence in all that they tell us, or accept as of primary importance in the doctrine of the Valentinians all that they represent as such. The extant frag- ments of the writings of Valentinus himself, as well as of those of his scholars (Ptolemzus, Heracleon, Theodotus, and others), fortu- nately enable us to set their theology in a more worthy light than does the fantastic “system” which Ireneus has given. Of the four ancient treatises against the Valentinians known to Tertullian we possess but one, that of Irenzus, those of Justin, Miltiades, and Proculus being lost. The loss of Justin is most to be regretted, for he was a contemporary, and wrote his Syntagma probably in Rome at the time when Valentinus was actually labouring there. In Rome some sixty years later the author of the Muratorian Frag- ment also took notice of him. Proculus wrote a special polemie against him, while Miltiades wrote in the same sense in Asia Minor and Ireneus in Gaul about 180. Tertullian’s Adversus Valen- tinianos was composed in Carthage some twenty years later, and Clement engaged in a work of a similar nature alinost simultane- ously at Alexandria. Against the Marcionite Church the fathers were equally energetic, Marcion and Valentinus during the period between 150 and 280 passing for the most dangerous herctics. Our oldest and at the same time fullest source is the work of Irenzus, which rests upon a tract of Ptolemeus and probably makes use of the Syntagma® of Justin. In all probability he had read nothing of Valentinus himself. Tertullian’s Adversus Valentinianos is largely taken from Ireneus, but contains some things that are original and of very great value: he had either himself read some Valen- tinian works, or had at least obtained authentic information as to their contents. Our best sources for Valentinus himself are the Stromata and Eclogues of Clement of Alexandria, who had read much of Valentinus and something of Heracleon, and gives cxtracts from both. His Excerpta ca Theodoto are also invaluable. Hip- polytus in both his works against heretics has transcribed Irenwus ; yet in his Phélosophwmena he has followed a new source in describ- ing the Valentinian system. Origen made a careful study of Heracleon’s Commentary on John’s Gospel, and in his own Com- mentary he frequently refers to it both approvingly and

otherwise. The numerous fragments he has preserved have very great value for the historian. Lastly, Ireneus and Hippolytus have been tran- scribed by Epiphanius, who also has preserved various matters of importanee, particularly the letter of Ptolemeus to Flora.

Valentinians.—The school of Valentinus soon divided into two main branches, that of Italy and that of Asia Minor. Both in turn subdivided into various sections; but the Asiatic branch on the whole preserved most faithfully the teaching of the master. His influence spread even beyond the limits of the schools. Tatian, for example, in his later period indubitably derived much from Valen- tinus, and the fathers of the Alexandrian school were very largely indebted to him. Even in the time of Epiphanius Valentinians still existed in some districts of Egypt. The Italian branch had as heads of its schools Secundus, another master of uncertain name (Colarbasus? Epiphanius? see Iren., i. 11, 3), Ptolemeus, Herac- leon, Theotimus, and Alexander. Secundus modified the master's doetrine of the eons and introduced a dualism into it. The anony- mous scholar shows tokens of Pythagorean influence. But the most important, exceeding in the extent of their influence even the master himself, were Ptolemzus and Heracleon. The former made into hypostases the eons which Valentinus himsclf had regarded as impersonal powers of the one Godhead. He is the systematic and Biblical theologian par excellence of the Valentinian school, con- spicuous for a powerful if also undisciplined phantasy ; and in his letter to Flora he shows how thorough has been his study of the pa SO ES a ee as*

1 Strom., ii. 8, 36; ii, 20, 114; iii, 7, 59.

2 Strom., iv. 13, 91; iv., 18, 92; vi. 6,52; Hippol., Philos., vi. 42.

3 His use of this work, however, is not beyond all question, and it is impossible to tell the nature and amount of his indebtedness,

4 See Hippol., Philos., vi. 85; Tert., Adv. Valent., 4.

VA DET Yes

Old Testament, and how penetrating, how carefully considered, and how pointed his criticism of it. Heracleon, mentioned also by Ireneeus, earned distinction by his Commentary (dmopyjpuara) on the Gospel according to John, for it is probably the first scientifie com- mentary that Christendom produced. Clement (Strom., iv. 9, 73) calls him the most eminent teacher of the Valentinian school. He appears to have shown much greater sobriety than Ptolemeus, whose speculations recall those of the later Neoplatonists in a most striking manner, just as we find Valentinianism generally to have anticipated, not only the later scientific theology of the Catholic Church, but also Neoplatonism. Of Theotimus all that we know is Tertullian's remark (Adv. Valent., 4): 'multum circa imagines legis operatus est." 'Tertullian is also our sole informant about Alexander (De Carne, 17-20). He seems to have busied himself specially with the Christological problem, and to have written under the title of SyJlogismi a treatise into which quotations from Valentinus's Psalms were introduced as authorities.

The names mentioned as those of leaders of the Asiatic school are Axionicus, Theodotus, and above all Bardesanes ; we also have some fragments of Valentinian writings belonging to the East, but of which the origin is otherwise unknown.> Axionicus at Antioch as was the master's most faithful disciple. Clement of Alexandria has preserved excerpts of a very inconsecutive character and in a very corrupt text from a systematic work, and some commentaries of Theodotus (Ex rv Oeodérov xal ris dvaroixis Kadoupévys didac- kadlas kara rovs Ovadevrivov xpébvous émirouat), These excerpts, which constitute one of the most important sources for Gnosticism generally, have not hitherto received the attention they deserve. Zahn (Horsehungen, iii, p. 128 sg.) has tried to make out that Theodotus is identical with Theodas, Valentinus's master. But from the excerpts it seems hardly probable that they should be the work of a man who must have written at latest under the emperor Trajan. Bardesanes, though originally influenced by Valentinus, ultimately took up peculiar and independent ground of his own, and through him Valentinus exercised a great influence npon the Syrian Church, which continued until the 4th century (see Syriac LITERATURE, vol. xxii. p. 827). In Asia Minor the Valentinian eollegia continued until past the middle of the 4th century (see Epp. Juliani). The church fathers bring into connexion with Valentinus the Magian Marcus, as to whose doctrine we are very adequately informed by

Irenzus, but it is questionable whether he can really be reckoned as one of the disciples of that master.

Teaching of Valentinus.—Valentinus made his appearance at a time when the Christian communities were still destitute of any fixed doctrinal system: they were still associations pledged to a holy life on the ground of their faith in the one spiritual God and in His Son Jesus Christ, closely held together by the bonds of brotherly love, and strictly separated from the world and from them that are without by the consciousness of having received the Holy Ghost. But an enormous volume of facts, of sayings, and of thoughts had by this time become current within the church, material drawn from the Old Testament, from the Gospel history, from the Pauline epistles, from other early Christian writings, and from the Hellenistic and apocalyptic literature of the Jews. How this material was to be arranged, how it was to be kept within bounds, and with what degree of authority it was to be invested were questions still unsettled. But one thing was certain—Paul had declared it, and every Christian apostle, prophet, and teacher had repeated it—that the Christian faith guaranteed knowledge supreme and complete, and led on from truth to truth. Another thing was sure—that all human wisdom was but folly in presence of this new "divine" wisdom, which was inclusive of all human knowledge. The means, moreover, by which every saying, every fact was to be turncd into a profound thought had for long been known and in use in the Christian communities, —that of allegory. But as yet there was no settled principle fixing the manner in which the allegorical method was to be applied, or determining what were the ruling thoughts of Scripture. The attitude of Christian teachers towards the Jewish wisdom was as indeterminate as it was towards Greek philosophy. The Pauline theology was intelligible only to a very few, and the Old Testament was as it were a veritable sphinx. It was understood to be a superhuman book, but it was also understood that much of its contents, if taken literally, was valueless. In what sense was it to be under- stood? How much of it was to be taken literally and how much spiritually? Was everything to be taken spiritually ? According to what principle was it on this assumption to be interpreted ? Was the whole of it the revealed word of the Most High, or were various authors to be recognized? Might it possibly be that part of it was divine, part heroical, part genial, part natural, part false, and part devilish? Or was it perhaps true that no part of the book proceeded from the Most High

God, that nothing was pneu- matic, but all psychical or carnal? And, if the Old Testament was

ee Oe eee 5 See Epiph., Her., iii. 5, 6; Method., Iepi avrefoveiov; Adamant., De recta in Deum fide. 6 Hippol., Philos., iv. 85; Adv. Valent., 4.

VY Ade Geen US

to be allegorized, must not the narratives and the sayings of the Gospels be also treated in the same way? Was not allegory here also the pathway to the thought? If the opening chapters of Genesis and the histories of the patriarehs and of the people of Israel were a profound philosophical poem, why should not also the life of Jesus Christ be only the veil of a cosmie mystery? All these questions had within the period from 60 to 130 exercised, not indeed the great mass of believers, for these were uneducated, but thinking Christians; and the more the Christian preaching enlarged its scope, the more Christians came into contact with Syrian, Samaritan, Egyptian, and Greek wisdom, and the more they found themselves ealled upon to make eomparisons and to bring into clearness that which is peculiar to and distinetive of Christianity, it was inevitable that these questions should stir the minds of educated Christians all the more intensely. Upon the one basis of faith in Jesus Christ aceordingly there were about the year 130 a great variety of groups, differing from one another in doctrine, worship, organization, and the like,? but differing also in their attitude to Christianity at large, some keeping themselves aloof from it beeause they regarded it as wholly perverted, others being driven out from it, others again, while remaining within the main body, yet forming special schools, or "mystery" unions, and soon. In Syria, as also in other portions of the Roman empire, the gospel was associated with Semitie "cultus wisdom" and with the abstruse speculations of a physical science still in its ehildhood ; the entire Old Testament was rejeeted and an attitude of opposition assumed towards fellow-members in the great Christian union. These developments, however, could reekon on only a relatively small degree of encouragement within the Greco-Roman world. The barbaric elements they contained were too conspicuous, and on the other hand they were too far removed from Jewish-Christian tradi- tion and from Christian common sense. But the attractiveness must have been very great

when, on the basis of Christian tradition and the mysterious traditions of Oriental peoples, a system was set up with the aids of Greek philosophical science for a school of 'knowing ones' or " Gnostics," and a cultus organized for a eom- munity of the "initiated." This was what Basilides and Valentinus achieved. 'The importance of Valentinus lies in the faets, firstly, that he recognized the relationship (for sueh a relationship really existed) between the theogonie-eosmogonic myth-wisdom of western Asia and the Neopythagorean, Platonie, and Philonie philosophy ; secondly, that he touched all this rich and varied material which he had appropriated with the mmagie wand of the Platonic eoncep- tion of the universe, and thus transmuted the whole into entities of a purely spiritual character ; and thirdly, that he gave a decisive part to the appearance of Jesus Christ in that great drama which the history oF the higher and the lower cosmos presented to his mind. In all this he had no design of setting up a new "confes- sion," and still less any notion (as Mareion had) of utterly remodel- ling Christianity. He was prevented from eherishing any such ideas by his conviction that men were divided by the inalterable eonstitution of their natures into three elasses,—the " pneumatie," men of the spirit, genial natures, in whom sparks of the divinity are found ; the " psychical," moral men, who can if they choose be ethically good; and "hylie" or carnal, hopelessly chained to that whieh is perceived by the senses. The ordinary members of Christendom at large he held to be "psychical," and esteemed them as such. But he did not regard their Christianity as the Christianity, rather only as its exoterie form. Alongside of the exoteric there had all along, aceording to him, existed an esoteric. The apostles did not say out everything to everybody, but on the contrary communicated to the "spiritual ones" a secret doctrine into whieh only select persons might be initiated, and that not until after long and eareful probation. This secret teaching included a special dogmatic, a special ethie, and a special worship. But it was hot out of all connexion with the Christianity that was publiely taught. We ean observe in the history of the Valentinian schools the zeal with which they strove to adapt themselves to the Chris- tianity publicly professed, and to follow it in all its developments. The Valentinians always, so far as they possibly conld, accepted such things as the development of the canon (agitated for by them- selves) within the church at large, the building up of a tradition, the symbols framed, and the like ; to this Ireneus, Tertullian, and the Alexandrians all bear witness. In this they present the

strongest possible contrast to Marcion and his church, who from the outset took np an attitude of the utmost hostility to the main body of Christians. Hence they expressly even eontroverted Mareionitism, as the letter of Ptolemeus to Flora and the polemic of Bardesanes against the Mareionite Prepon show. If sueh was the unvarying attitude of Valcntinus's scholars, it is fair to attribute it also to Valentinus himself. In his day indeed the dogmatie, ethieal, and legal advanees of Christendom at large were still in their most rudimentary stage, but what there was of them must have been valued by him even then as the exoterie form of Christianity, to which he superadded his own Gnostie esoterie form. In this respect he was the forerunner of Clement and Origen, who likewise 1 See Harnack, Dogmengesch., i. p. 171 sq.

39

distinguish Gnostic from common Christianity, and very probably learned the distinetion from Valentinus and his scholars. But his connexion with both was of a still more intimate eharaeter. They are related not only by virtue of the faet that they all regarded the gospel as the religion of the perfect Hellenically-eultured spiritual man, but also by the large-hearted disposition they cherished, and the settled purpose they manifested, to appropriate everything noble and great in the history of humanity, to rank it according to its proper value, and to find a place for it in the edifice of Christian philosophy. And it is very interesting to notice that they completely set aside the Greek and Roman mythologies, regard- ing them as worthless and devilish. The formal peeuliarity of the Valentinian Gnosis is that it placcs all moral and intelleetual ideas, possessions, and entities in a deseending seheme of genetic develop- ment. With Valentinus himself they figure as "motus et affectus " of the Godhead, the ultimate cause of all things, the alone Good ; by his scholars they are hypostatized. This descending develop- ment (self-revelation) of the Godhead takes plaee with a holy rhythm. At this point the Pythagorean speeulations about num- bers on the one hand and the aneient Semitie astrological wisdom on the other seemed important to Valentinus; but everything is made spiritual: even the old Semitie antithesis of " male" and "female" is adopted, but with an altered meaning.? The whole inner development of the primal eause (8v@os) into the pleroma, the cosinos of perfection, is designed to explain

how it was that this world of appearanee, of mixture, and of sin arose. Valentinus was a striet monotheist, but at the same time he diseerned in the present world the mingling of irreconeilable elements. The prob- lem then was how, while aeknowledging the absolute perfection, goodness, and causality of God, to reconeile with this the existence of the actual pneumatico-psychico-hylic world, and at the same time to show the possibility of redemption in the case of those who are capable of it. Valentinus solved this problem by assum- ing that the self-unfolding of the Godhead is at the same time to be thought of as a dissipation of energy. God alone is dyévvyros. The powers emanating from Him (voids, ddjOea, Adyos, fw, &vOpwiros =ideal man, éxxAnoia, and so on) are yervyrd. Henee, although duoovora with the Godhead, they have nevertheless a limitation attaching to them. They are eopies of the Godhead in a deseend- ing line ; but the copy is never of equal value with the pattern. The thirtieth and last zon, Sophia,' has the element of imperfection in the strongest degree. This belongs to it in the form of "passion" (7dG0s), the passionate desire after full knowledge of and fusion with the primal God. This passion for the pleroma, having sedueed the zon into overstepping its proper bounds, is accordingly sepa- rated from it and removed out of oneness with it; it thns falls into nothingness, the xévwua, but gives the impulse to the making of this world. This world is the outward shaping of nothingness, of appearance, through eonnexion with the fallen wisdom. It isa feeble eopy of the pleroma without any abiding hold, but it ineludes pneumatie portions, though these have fallen very low. It was fashioned by the demiurge, an intermediate being brought forth by the fallen wisdom. The demiurge is psychical, and thus has no feeling and no understanding for the pneumatie which adhered to the elements of the world he framed. But over against the sensuous powers included in this world, so far as it is derived from nothingness, the demiurge is the representative of order, righteous- ness, freedom for better things, and the men who have reeeived something of his spirit are those earnest moral natures who strive against their passions and aim at justitia civilis. Far above these stand the pneumatie ones, who, like their mother, have the strong passion of genius towards that which is highest, and in this posses- sion, in knowledge and in the desire for knowledge, are raised far above the antithesis of the hylie (the devil) and the psyehie (the demiurge). They earry within them an indestruetible and divine element which is unintelligible to their very maker, but they are

placed in a world which is foreign to them; they are as men im- prisoned and fettered. Here it is that the Christian idea of redemp- tion eomes in. Jesus Christ appears. The declarations about Him in the Valentinian school were exceedingly various. We can find traces in them of all the contemporary and later Christologies of the Christian Chureh, even of the Adoptian. What they all had in common was (1) the idea that Jesus Christ made manifest was an exceedingly eomplex Being, in whom two or three natures, or even a greater number, had to be distinguished (compare Origen's Christology) ; (2) the conviction that the highest element in the Redeemer was not one of the zons which had somehow parted with some of its potential energy, but was the perfect self-manifestation of the Good, the Supreme God Himself; (3) the conception that

2 The earliest opponents of the Valentinians distinguished them sharply from the "Gnostics." They rightly perceived that the Semitic and mytho- logical element was for the Valentinians merely the material, which they filled with the spirit of Hellenism. Some of the heads of schools, however, dealt with this material in a highly fantastic fashion, and accordingly the church fathers say with justice that "inolescentes doctrine Valentinianorum in silvas jam exoleverunt Gnosticorum" (Tert., Adv. Valent., 39). ms f

3 The number 30 comes from astronomy: at bottom the zons of Valentinus are 293, the number of days in the lunar month.

AO

the physical nature of Jesus Christ was no actual corporeity, but either something psychical or something pneumatical. This Jesus Christ then delivers all who are pneumatic in the world by com- municating knowledge. By full knowledge of God, of the world, and of themselves they are raised above the world, enter upon their undying divine life, and finally are brought by Christ into the pleroma. But psychical persons also are redeemed by Him. They who hitherto have been brought up according to the laws of the Old Testament, that is, of the demiurge, now receive the perfect law ; Jesus moreover by His death procured for them the forgive- ness of sins. They are now therefore in a position to lead a perfect moral life, and after death, if they have made a right use of their freedom, shall be brought to an abode of bliss. The Valentinian ethic shows a fine combination of

spiritual freedom with the element of asceticism. Their thesis, that primarily it is not the outward act but the intention that is important, was misunderstood by the fathers of the church as if they had given permission to pneu- matic persons to live in licence, to deny the faith under persecution, and the like. But there is no foundation for this. The fragments we possess from writings of Valentinus and his school show rather that they were second to no Christian body in moral earnestness. The Valentinians appear to have joined in the religious worship of the main body of the church so long as they were tolerated within it. But along with this they celebrated their own inysteries, in which only the initiated might take part.

In the foregoing sketch only the broad gencral outlines of the Valentinian theology have been indicated. In all the schools, and even with Valentinus himself, it was much richer and more com- plicated than has been indicated. But all was strictly wrought out, and even the apparently abstruse served always for the ex- pression of a weighty thought. Very manifold and various were in particular the doctrines about the fallen wisdom (Sophia) and about its relations to the world and the demiurge ; very various also were the views of Jesus and of Christ and of their relation to the pleroma of the zons. Finally their representations about "'Horos" differed widely. "As a harlot daily changes her attire," says Tertullian in his malicious way, "so do the Valentinians change their opinions." But none of these differences affected the oneness of the general view. That the history of redemption con- stitutes along with the history of nature and of the world one grand drama, that it is for scientific cosmology to explain how it is that the "mixtures" have come to pass, and that it is for scientific soteriology to show how the "separations" have been brought about, as to these inatters all were at one. Equally were they at one in their view of Christ as the absolute revelation of God, and in the persuasion that the creator of the world is identical with the God of the Old Testament, and is an "intermediate" Being. But the various Valentinian schools were above all united in their attitude towards

the Scriptures. They were Biblical theologians: that is to say, .

they started from the conviction that complete wisdom lay only in the words of Jesus Christ, or, in other words, in the Gospels. They accordingly sought

to base their systems throughout on the words of the Lord, applying to these the allegorical method. Ina secondary degree they availcd themselves also of the writings of the apostles. Their dogmatic claimed—as afterwards did that of Origen—to be evangelical and apostolic ; but, since they interpreted the New Testament after the same mcthod as that which Philo applied to the Old, it was as a rule Platonic thought that they introduced into the plain and simple words of Jesus, and thus the fathers of the church were not without justification in calling them "sectatores Platonis" (Tert., De Prescr., 30). As their method of exegesis supplied them with the means of everywhere finding the sense that suited them, it is highly improbable that they were at the trouble to prepare any new scriptures. The fathers do not as a rule charge them with either fabrication or falsification, but only with perversion of the Word through wrong interpretations. Nor did they dispute or reject the Roman creed; they simply, by a peculiar interpretation, put their own meaning upon it; yet at the same time they had alongside of it their own "regula fidei." It is hardly probable that they possessed an " evangelinm veritatis" of their own, but it is not impossible. They subjected the Old Testament to an admirable religious criticism. Ptolemeus distinguished in the law (1) what the demiurge had said, (2) what came from Moses, (3) what the later teachers of the law had added. Amongst those portions which were regarded as having proceeded from the demiurge himself, he again distinguished three groups :—(a) the Decalogue, which is of perpetual obligation, and which only required to be completed by Christ (in the sermon on the mount); (0) those commands which were given only for a season on account of the shortcomings of the people, and which were abolished by Christ ; (c) the ceremonial law, which had a typical meaning that was fulfilled by Christ. They denied that anything in the Old Testament came from the supreme God, the God of goodness and love. ;

From the fragments of Valentinus and of Heracleon and Theo- dotus the student can learn how these Valentinians anticipated the ecclesiastical speculations of subsequent centuries. The follow-

ing points may be mentioned in this connexion :——(1) the specula- tion as to dmooveros, duovos, érepovoros, ayevvyTos, and yevynrés, by which they

prepared the way for the Unitarian problem in its scientific shape ; (2) their speculation about ‘ Jesus” and “Christ” and about His various natures, by which they opened the way for later Christology ; (8) their scientific allegorical treatment of the New Testament Scriptures and their undertaking to found their whole system upon the sacred writings of Christianity, thus antici- pating Origen’s dogmatic ; (4) their distinction of the perficienda, abroganda, and implenda in the Old Testament, which paved the way for the doctrine of Ireneus and Tertullian in reference to the law ; (5) their doctrine of baptism ; (6) their doctrine of the Lord’s Supper ; (7) their doctrine of purification after death, in which they anticipated the later dogma of purgatory (Origen, Augustine, Gregory I.) ; (8) their twofold ethic (for psychical and for pneumatic persons ; see Clement and Origen, as also the monachism of the Catholic Church) ; (9) and finally the view destined later_to play so large a part within the church, that the soul of the Christian Gnostic is the bride of Christ.

Literature.—The fragments have been collected by Grabe (Spicilegiwm, ii, 430 sq.) and Hilgenfeld (Ztschr. f. wiss. Theol., 1880, p. 280; 1881, p. 214; 1883, p. 356). The system is set forth more or less in the works on Gnosticism by Neander, Matter, Baur, Lipsius, Hilgenfeld, Mansel, and Moller. See also Heinrici, Die Valent. Gnosis u. d. heil. Schrift (1871), and Rossel, Ges. Schriften (1847). (A. HA.)

VALENTINUS, pope for thirty or forty days in 827, in succession to Eugenius II. (824-827), was a Roman by birth, and, according to the Liber Pontificalis, was first made a deacon by Paschal I. (817-824). Nothing further is known of his history. His successor was Gregory IV.

(827-844).

VALERIAN, a genus of herbaceous perennial plants of the natural order Valerianacex. Two species—Valeri- ana officinalis, L. (see vol. iv. pl. VIIL), and V. diowca, L., —are indigenous in England, while a third, V. pyrenazca, L., is naturalized in some parts of Scotland and the west of England. The valerians have opposite leaves and small flowers, usually of a white or reddish tint, and arranged in terminal cymes. The limb of the calyx is remarkable for being at first inrolled and afterwards expanding in the form of pappus. The genus comprises about 150 species. In medicine the root of

V. officinalis is intended when valerian is mentioned. The plant grows throughout Europe from Spain to the Crimea, and from Iceland through northern Europe and Asia to the coasts of Manchuria. Several varieties of the plant are known, those growing in hilly situations being considered the most valuable for medicinal purposes. Valerian is cultivated in England (in several villages near Chesterfield in Derbyshire), but to a much greater extent in Prussian Saxony (in the neigh- bourhood of Cdélleda, north of Weimar), in Holland, and in the United States (Vermont, New Hampshire, and New York).

The dried root or rhizome consists of a short central erect portion, about the thickness of the little finger, surrounded by numerous rootlets about 75 of an inch in diameter, the whole being of a dull brown colour. When first taken from the ground it has no dis- tinctive smell ; but on drying it acquires a powerful odour of valeri- anicacid. This odour, now regarded as intolerable, was in the 16th century considered to be fragrant, the root being placed among clothes as a perfume (Turner, Herbal, part iii., 1568, p. 76), just as V. celtica and some Himalayan species of the genus are still used in the East (see SPIKENARD). By the poorer classes in the north of England it was esteemed of snch medicinal value that "no broth, pottage, or physical meat" was considered of any value without it (Gerard, Herball, 1636, p. 1078).

Valerian owes its medicinal properties to a volatile oil, which is contained in the dried root to the extent of one or, more rarely, two per cent., plants growing on dry or stony soil yielding the largest quantity. The oil is a complex body, consisting of a terpene, CypHyg 3 an alcohol, Cy)H,,0, isomeric with borneol, and compounds of the alcohol with formic, acetic, and valerianic acids; and an ether having the formula C,,H,,O. The valerianic acid occurring in the oil is not the normal acid, but iso-valerianic acid. The other con- stituents of the root are malic acid, resin, sugar, &c. Valerian is employed in medicine as a stimulant and antispasmodic in various forms of hysteria, and in chorea and hooping-cough ; it is also stated to possess anthelmintic properties. The red valerian of

cottage gardens is Centranthus ruber, also belonging to the Valert- ~

anacez ; but Greek valerian is Polemonium cerulewm, belonging to the natural order Polemoniaccw. Cats are nearly as fond of the

smell of this plant as of the true valerian, and will frequently roll on the plant and injure it.

VALERIANUS, Pusiius Licintus, Roman emperor from 253 to 260, was a man of ancient family and is first mentioned in the year 238 as princeps senatus. Some thirteen years later, when Decius restored the censorship and added to the office legislative and executive powers so extensive that it embraced the best part of the civil authority of the emperor, Valerian was chosen censor by the senate, to whom the appointment was committed. The death of Decius cut short this novel experiment in government, but Valerian retained the confidence of Gallus, who sent him to fetch troops to quell the rebellion of Aimilianus. The soldiers in Rheetia, however, proclaimed Valerian emperor ; and marching slowly towards Rome he found both his rivals dead. Valerian was already an elderly man—he is said to have been seventy years old at his death—and had scarcely the vigour to confront with success the enemies that threatened every frontier of the empire, but he applied himself to his heavy task with diligence and goodwill. Taking his son Gallienus as col- league, and leaving the wars in Europe to his direction, under which matters went from bad to worse and the whole West fell into disorder, Valerian chose for his own part the war in the East, where Antioch had fallen into the hands of a Persian vassal and Armenia was occupied by Shaptr, while in 258 the Goths ravaged Asia Minor. Valerian recovered Antioch, fought in Mesopotamia with mixed success, and finally was taken captive (see PERsIA, vol, xviii. p. 608). His ultimate fate is unknown.

VALERIUS, Pustius, surnamed Pusticona, the col- league of Brutus in the consulship in the first year of the Roman republic. According to the legend represented by Livy and Plutarch (see Romz), he was a member of one of the noblest Roman families, being son of Volusus, a de- scendant of a Sabine of that name who had settled in Rome along with King Tatius. He was one of those who witnessed the death of Lucretia, and joined in the oath to avenge her wrongs. He took a prominent part in the expulsion of the

Tarquins, and though not originally chosen as the colleague of Brutus he soon afterwards took the place of Tarquinius Collatinus. On the death of Brutus, which left him alone in the consulship, the people began to fear that he was aiming at kingly power. To calm their apprehensions, he discontinued the building of a house which he had begun on the top of the Velian Hill, overlooking the Forum, and also gave orders that the fasces should henceforward be lowered whenever he appeared before the people. He introduced various laws further to protect the liberties of the citizens, one of these enacting that whosoever should attempt to make himself a king might be slain by any man at any time, and another providing an appeal to the people on behalf of any citizen condemned by a magistrate. For these ser- vices the surname of Publicola or Poplicola was conferred on himself and on his descendants for ever. He was thrice re-elected to the consulship, and during his fourth term of office lie received the honour of a triumph for his victory over the Sabines. He died in the following year (503 B.c.), and was buried at the public expense, the matrons mourn- ing him for ten months.

VALERIUS FLACCUS. See Fraccus.

VALERIUS MAXIMUS, Latin writer, author of a collection of historical anecdotes, published his work in the reign of Tiberius. Prefixed to many MSS. of the collection is a life of the author, but it is a late and worthless compilation, and the only trustworthy in- formation concerning his career is drawn from a few passing allusions in the book itself. The family of Valerius was poor and undistinguished; for the great Valerii

Al

Maximi who are conspicuous in the annals of the early Roman republic cannot be traced lower than the Punic Wars. Valerius himself professes to have owed everything to Sextus Pompeius, who was descended from a_ paternal uncle of the great Pompey. This Pompeius was a kind of minor Meecenas, and the centre of a literary circle to which Ovid belonged; he was also the intimate of the most literary prince of the imperial family, Germanicus. He took Valerius with him when he went to Asia as proconsul, Although Valerius does not state that his profession was that of a teacher of rhetoric, the fact is betrayed by every page of his writings. In his

proeemium he plainly intimates that he is putting forth a kind of commonplace book of historical anecdotes for use in the schools of rhetoric, where the pupils were severely trained in the art of embellishing speeches by references to history. The title for the work in the MSS. is " Books of Memorable Deeds and Utterances." No ancient reader would have expected accuracy in such a book, and the indignation ex- pressed by many modern scholars at its glaring historical errors has been much misplaced. The stories are very loosely and irregularly arranged in nine books, each book being divided into sections, and each section bearing as its title the topic, most commonly some virtue or vice, or some merit or demerit, which the stories in the section are in- tended to illustrate. Most of the tales are from Roman history, but each section has an appendix consisting of extracts from the annals of other peoples, principally the Greeks. The exposition exhibits strongly the two cur- rents of feeling which are intermingled by almost every Roman writer of the empire,—the feeling that the Romarts of the writer's own day are degenerate creatures when confronted with their own republican predecessors, and the feeling that, however degenerate, the latter-day Romans still tower above the other peoples of the world, and in particular may take much comfort to themselves from their moral superiority to the Greeks.

The range of authorities from whom the collection is drawn is un- doubtedly narrow. It has even been maintained that Valerius used four authors only,—Cicero, Livy, Sallust, and Pompeius Trogus; there are, however, clear traces of others, as of Varro, Asinius Pollio, and Herodotus. By far the largest part of the material comes from Cicero and Livy, though each is only mentioned once by name. Valerius was neither a well-read nor an able man. His treat- ment of his material was careless and unintelligent in the extreme ; but for all that he did not miss his aim. Even though in one tale Tanaquil be made the wife of Ancus Martius, and in another Aischy- lus be mistaken for Pericles, though the Scipios and the Catos be mingled in confusion, though conflicting versions of the same occurrence be given, and the most startling anachronisms presented, yet the excerpts are none the less apt illustrations, from the rhetori- cian's point of view, of the circumstance or quality they were meant to illustrate. Scholars have long since ceased to corrupt the text of Valerius, as Pighius did, to save his character for historical accuracy, nor do they now, with Perizonius, distort his meaning for the pleasure of

adding to the list of his sins. What, then, are his claims to the attention of modern students? In the first place, the existing literary remains of the time in which he wrote are ex- tremely scanty, and mere scarcity confers value on many articles. which are in themselves poor. And cven on the historical side we owe something to Valerius. He often used sources now lost to us, and where he touches on his own time he affords us some glimpses of the much debatcd and very imperfectly recorded reign of Tiberius. His attitude towards the imperial household has often been mis- understood, and he has been represented as a mean flatterer of the same type with Martial. But, if the references to the imperial administration be carefully scanned, they will be seen to be extra- vagant neither in kind nor in number. Few will now grudge to Tiberius, when his whole action as a ruler is taken into account, such a title as "salutaris princeps," which seemed to a former generation a specimen of shameless adulation. The few allusions to Cwsar's murderers and to Augustus hardly pass beyond the conventional style of the writer's day. The only passage which can fairly be called fulsome is a rhetorical pean over the death of Sejanus. But it is asa chapter in the history of the Latin language that the work of Valerius chiefly deserves study. Without it our view of the transition of classical into silver Latin would be much more imper- fect than it is. Erasmus declared that Valerius is no more like

Cicero than a mule is like a man, which is only another way of saying that he had in excess the faults of his age. The entire life, thought, and literature of the first century and a half of the empire were steeped in the influences of rhetoric, enthroned in the seat of education. In Valerius are presented to us, ina rude and palpable form, all the rhetorical tendencies of the age, unsobered by the sanity of Quintilian and unrefined by the taste and subtlety of Tacitus. Here we have the loathing for direct and simple state- ment and the pursuit of novelty at any price. Every device which can put a gloss of newness on the language is eagerly adopted. The barrier between the diction of poetry aud that of prose is broken down ; the uses of words are strained ; monstrous metaphors are in- vented ; there are startling contrasts, dark innuendoes, and highly coloured epithets ; the most

unnatural variations are played upon the artificial scale of grammatical and rhetorical figures of speech. It is a most instructive lesson in the history of Latin to set side by side and compare minutely with each other a passage of Valerius and its counterpart in Cicero or Livy.

In the MSS, of Valerius a tenth book is given, which consists of the so-called 'liber de prenominibus," the work of some grammarian of a much later date. The collection of Valerius was much used for school purposes, and its popu- larity in the Middle Ages is attested by the large number of MSS. in which it has been preserved. Like other school books it was epitomated. One com- plete epitome, probably of the 4th or 5th century, bearing the name of Julius Paris, has come down to us; also a portion of another by Januarius Nepo- tianus. The best edition of Valerius with explanatory matter is that by C. Kempf (Berlin, 1854); the best text is that by C. Halm (Leipsic, 1865).

VALETTA, or Vatuetta. See Matra, vol. xv. pp. 340- 341. The population was 24,854 in 1881, and was esti- mated at 26,700 in 1888.

VALLA, Lorenzo (c. 1406-1457), one of the most salient personalities of the earlier Italian Renaissance, was born at Rome, of parents derived from Piacenza, possibly in the year 1406-07, or perhaps somewhat earlier. He was educated in the humanistic schools of Rome, according to the customs of that age, learning grammar from some humble dominie and afterwards attending the classes of eminent professors. Valla mentions Leonardo of Arezzo as his chief master in Latin and Giovanni Aurispa in Greek. He wished to establish himself as apostolic secre- tary in the Eternal City. But for some reason or other this office was refused him. At the age of twenty-four he went to Piacenza on family affairs, and from this city pro- ceeded to Pavia, where he obtained a professorship of elo- quence. Like all the scholars of that time, Valla wandered from university to university, accepting short engagements and airing his talents as a lecturer in many cities. It appears that he professed the New Learning in Milan and Genoa as well as Pavia. Somewhere, and at some uncer- tain date during this period, he came into relations with Alphonso of Aragon, who conquered the kingdom of Naples. Valla did not, however, follow this prince's for- tunes in the early days of their acquaintance. We find him once more in Rome in

1443 during the pontificate of Eugenius IV. At this period of his career Valla won the highest reputation by his dialogue De Voluptate and his treatise on the Elegances of the Latin Language. In the former work he contrasted the principles of the Stoics with the tenets of Epicurus, openly proclaiming his sym- pathy with those who claimed the right of free indulgence for man's natural and sensuous appetites. It was a re- markable utterance, since the paganism of the Renaissance here found, for the first time, deliberate expression in a work of scholarly and philosophical value. The Hlegantiz was no less original, though in a different sphere of thought. This work subjected the forms of Latin grammar, the rules of Latin style and rhetoric, to critical investigation. It placed the practice of composition upon a foundation of analysis and inductive reasoning. But there was a third essay composed by Valla during the pontificate of Hugenius which displayed the same originality and a like critical acumen. 'This bore the title of a Treatise on the Donation of Constantine; and in it Valla proved that the claims founded by the Roman see upon that supposed grant re- posed on forged documents and legendary fables. It was not published until 1440, when Valla had been already three years resident at Alphonso's court in Naples.

VAL—VAL

There was every reason why the king of Naples should be interested in a man of Valla's stamp. He wished to attract scholars of the highest ability to his capital, and he was always on bad terms with the papacy. Valla com- bined the qualities of an elegant humanist, an acute critic, a freethinker, and a venomous pamphleteer who had committed himself to a destructive polemic against the temporalities of Rome. Accordingly the king made him his private secretary, encouraged him to open a school of rhetoric in Naples, and defended him against the attacks of friars and inquisitors. From Naples Valla continued his war of pamphlets against the church. He proved that the letter of Christ to Abgarus was a forgery, ridiculed the Latinity of the Vulgate, questioned the authenticity of the Apostles' Creed, and accused St Augustine of heresy. It is a singular note of that period in Italy that, on the death of Eugenius IV., his successor, Nicholas V., invited Valla to Rome, not to arraign him before the bar of the Inquisition, not to punish him for his insolent criticism, but in order to confer upon him the post of apostolic secretary, with substantial pecuniary appointments. This

entrance of Valla into the Roman curia has been justly called 'the triumph of humanism over orthodoxy and tradition." Nicholas had no other object than that of fixing one of the chief scholars of the age near his own person. He allowed Valla to open a school of eloquence in Rome, and he paid him munificently for translating Thucydides into Latin. Thus, for the sake of his erudition and stylistic talents, the supreme pontiff rewarded a man whose chief titles to fame are the stringent criticism with which he assailed the temporalities of the church, and the frank candour with which he defended a pagan theory of human conduct.

All the biographical notices of Valla are loaded with long accounts of his literary quarrels. Intolerant of rivalry, inordinately vain, and greedily self-seeking as the scholars of that epoch were, they indulged in the fiercest internecine warfare among themselves. The bulky folios of their works contain hundreds of invectives which may be ranked among the most obscene, the most wearisome, and the most disgraceful products of the human intellect. Valla won a regrettable celebrity by the uumber and the virulence of his enmities. Bartolomeo Fazio, Georgios Trapezuntios, and Poggio felt the stabbing sharpness of his pen. It must, however, be admitted that these antagonists gave back quite as good as they got. It is almost impossible to form a just estimate of Valla's private life and character through the dust-clouds of abuse and dirt which these con- troversies stirred up around his memory. He died at Naples in the year 1457. Posterity honours in him not so much the stylist and the scholar as the initiator of a bold critical method, applied to language, historical docu- ments, and ethical opinions.

The collected edition of Valla's Works is that of Basel, 1465. For detailed accounts of his life and work, consult Tiraboschi ; Voigt's Wiederbelebung des Alterthwms; and Symonds's Renaissance in Italy (vols. ii. and v.).

VALLADOLID, a province of Spain, one of the eight into which Old Castile is now divided, is bounded on the N. by Leon and Palencia, on the E. by Burgos, on the S. by Segovia, Avila, and Salamanca, and on the W. by Zamora. The area is 3043 square miles and the popula- tion in 1877 was 247,458. The province belongs entirely to the basin of the Douro, which traverses it from east to west, and within its limits receives the Pisuerga

(with the Esgueva) on the right, and the Duraton, Adaja (with the Eresma), and Zapardiel on the left. The country watered by these rivers is for the most part flat and exceedingly fertile, the only part that can be called in any sense hilly being in the north-west, where the low Montes de Torozos

occur. For the excellence and abundance of its grain crops Valladolid shares with La Mancha the title of granary of the peninsula. Besides the ordinary cereals and pulses, the province produces hemp, flax, various fruits, red and white wine, oil, and madder. The Montes de Torozos are well clad with oak and other timber. The pastures are extensive and large numbers of horses, mules, and sheep, as well as some cattle, are reared, while honey, wax, and silk are also produced. The woollen fabrics of Valladolid were once highly esteemed, but this industry has now greatly declined. Some trade is carried on, facilitated by the Canal of Castile, which connects Valladolid, on the Pisu- erga, with Alar del Rey, in Palencia, also on that river. The province is traversed by the national highways from Madrid to Santander, Leon, and Corufia, and the Calatayud and Salamanca roads may also be regarded as trunk lines. It is also traversed from north to south by the northern railway, which has a branch from Valladolid to Rioseco. There are 11 partidos judiciales and 237 ayuntamientos. The most important places besides Valladolid, the capital (see below), are Medina de Rioseco (4776 inhabitants in 1877) and Medina del Campo (5296).

VALLADOLID, capital of the above province, on the left bank of the Pisuerga, at its confluence with the Esgueva, which traverses the town by two channels, is situated (about 2250 feet above sea-level) 150 miles by rail to the north-west of Madrid. The site is in a small valley enclosed by steep and broken, though not very high, ground. The town, which was formerly surrounded by walls and entered by four principal gates, contains some fine streets and squares, especially the so-called Plaza Mayor, but on the whole it has a dull and deserted aspect, though of late years its industrial and commercial activity has somewhat revived. The granite cathedral, begun in 1585, would, if carried out according to the original design of Herrera, be a magnificent specimen of the Graeco-Roman style of that architect ; only the

nave, however, was ever completed, and the tower (one of four in the plan) fell in 1841. The interior is well proportioned, but bare. The tower and nave of the church of Sta Maria la Antigua date from about 1200. The church of San Pablo is later (1286) ; its chief feature of interest is a beautiful flam- boyant portal, and formerly it had exquisite cloisters. Adjoining is San Gregorio (15th century) with a fine Plateresque facade. San Benito, dating from the end of the 14th century, is an elegant Gothic building with a lofty roof finely groined. 'The college of Santa Cruz, a Classical building founded in 1479, now houses a collection of pictures and sculptures of little value, except for some ex- amples of Rubens and of the work of Berruguete. The university was founded in 1346; but the present Rococo building dates from the decadence of architecture in Spain. Among other public buildings of Valladolid may be men- tioned the royal palace, built in the beginning of the 17th century, and the court-house and town-hall; several ex-convents are now used as barracks. Along the banks of the rivers are several public walks adorned with trees and fountains. The principal industries are the manu- facture of linen, silk, and woollen fabrics, pottery, gold and silver work, leather, and paper. There is a considerable trade in the abundant agricultural produce of the vicinity. The population in 1877 was 52,206.

Valladolid is usually identified with the ancient Pintia of Ptolemy, described in the tinerary as a town of the Vaccei on the road from Asturica to Cesaraugusta. The present name is usually, but rather obseurely, explained as equivalent to Beled Walid, "the land of Walid." The town was recovered from the Moors in the 10th century, but is first named in a public document by Sancho II. of Leon in 1072. The cortes of Castile frequently met here in the following centuries, and in the beginning of the 15th century John

II. made it his principal residence. After the removal of the capital to Madrid by Philip II. in 1560 it began rapidly to decay.

A3

In December 1808 it was taken and sacked by the Freneh, and in the January following Bonaparte resided here for some days, and caused the destruction of many fine buildings and works of art. Columbus died (1506) and Philip II. was born (1527) at Valladolid.

VALLADOLID, a city of the state of Michoacan de Ocampo, in Mexico. See Morutia.

VALLADOLID, a town in the state of Yucatan, Mexico, lying towards the centre of the northern plateau, on the river Bolina, about 90 miles south-east of Merida, with which it is about to be connected by a railway. Valla-dolid, which with the suburban district has a population (1885) of 18,470, mostly Indians and half-castes, is situ- ated in the healthiest and best cultivated part of Yucatan, and is accordingly much frequented by invalids. The town is well built, with regular streets, and low but substantial houses, generally fronted by a garden plot and shady trees. Ainongst its buildings are seven fine churches, a large Jesuit college, a town-hall, a hospital, and a well- constructed aqueduct. But like everything else in Yucatan the place presents a general appearance of decay, although there is a considerable local cotton industry. Some miles to the east lie the remarkable ruins of Chichen-Itza, covering a space of nearly two miles in circumference. Amongst these remains are several sonatos, or tanks, from 65 to 200 feet in diameter and 50 to 110 feet deep, with steep rocky sides, in which water is still stored.

Valladolid is one of the oldest Spanish settlements in Yucatan, having been originally founded by Francesco de Montejo at a place called Chauachaa in 1543. But it was removed the next year to Zaqui, about 15 miles from the sea, with easy access to the port of El Cuyo, and soon after to its present position.

VALLE, Pierro DELLA (1586-1652), to whom we owe one of the best books of Eastern travel, came of a noble Roman family which had produced two cardinals, and was born, on 11th April 1586, in the family palace built by Cardinal Andrea. His early life was divided between the pursuits of literature and arms. He saw active service against the Moors of Barbary, but also became a member of the Roman Academy of the Umorist, and acquired some reputation as a versifier and rhetorician. To the latter quality we owe some tedious passages in his Z'ravels ; but that book gives also sufficient evidence of solid and useful learning in the classical authors, which served him well, particularly in the first part of his wanderings. The idea of travelling in the East was suggested by a disap- pointment in love, as an alternative to suicide, and was ripened to a fixed purpose by a visit to the learned Mario Schipano, professor of medicine in Naples, to whom the record of Pietro's travels was addressed in the form of very elaborate letters, based on a full diary. Before leaving Naples he took a vow of pilgrimage to the Holy Land, and, sailing from Venice on 8th June 1614, reached Con- stantinople, where he remained for more than a year, and acquired a good knowledge of Turkish and a little Arabic. On 25th September 1615 he sailed for Alexandria with a suite of nine persons, for he travelled always as a noble- man of distinction, and with every advantage due to his rank. From Alexandria he went on to Cairo, and, after an excursion to Mount Sinai, left Cairo for the Holy Land on 8th March 1616, in time to assist at the Easter cele- brations at Jerusalem. Having sedulously visited the holy sites, he journeyed by Damascus to Aleppo, and thence to Baghdad, where he married a Syrian Christian named Maani, a native of Mardin. He now desired to visit Persia; but, as that country was then at war with Turkey, he had to leave Baghdad by stealth (4th January 1617). Accom- panied by his wife, who was the courageous and constant companion of his Persian journeys until her death in con- sequence of a miscarriage (80th December 1621), he pro- ceeded by Hamadan to

Ispahan, and joined Shah Abbas in a campaign in northern Persia, in the summer of 1618.

Here he was well received at court and treated as the shah's guest. On his return to Ispahan he was occupied with political schemes hostile to the Turk, the alliance of Persia with the Cossacks and the king of Poland, and also with a project for the foundation of a Catholic colony in Persia ; at the same time he diligently continued his Oriental studies and observations. He now began to think of returning by India rather than adventure himself again in Turkey; but the state of his health, and the war between Persia and the Portuguese at Ormuz, created difficulties. In October 1621 he started from Ispahan, and, visiting Perse- polis and Shiraz, made his way to the coast ; but, after long delay and many troubles—his wife dying at Mina—he was forced to return to Shiraz, after the capture of Ormuz, and it was not till January 1623 that he found passage for Surat on the English ship '"' Whale." In India he remained till November 1624, his headquarters being Surat and Goa. He was at Muscat in January 1625, and at Bussorah in March. In May he started by the desert route for Aleppo, and, after a short stay there and a visit to Antioch, took ship at Alexandretta on a French vessel. Touching at Cyprus and doing quarantine at Malta, he reached Rome on 28th March 1626, and he was received with much honour, not only by literary circles, but by Pope Urban VIII., who appointed him a gentleman of his bedchamber. The rest of his life was uneventful; he married as second wife a Georgian orphan of noble family, Mariuccia (Tinatin de Ziba), whom his first wife had adopted as a child, and who had accompanied him in all his journeys. By her he had fourteen sons. He died at Rome on 21st April 1652.

In Pietro della Valle's lifetime there were printed (1) a Funeral Oration on his Wife Maani, whose remains he brought with him to Rome and buried there (1627); (2) an Account of Shah Abbas, printed at Venice in 1628, but not published ; (3) the first part of the letters describing his Travels (Turkey, 1650). The Travels in Persia (2 parts) were published by his sons in 1658, and the third part (India) in 1663. An English translation appeared in 1665 (fol.). Of the Italian text the edition of Brighton, 1843 (2 vols. 8vo), is more

esteemed than the other reprints. It contains a sketch of the author's life by Gio. P. Bellori (1622). Della Valle's story is often prolix, with a tendency to the rhetorical. He has no turn for incident, an absolute want of humour, and little real literary faculty of any kind ; but he is clear and exact, well informed, and very in- structive, so that his work still possesses high value.

VALLEJO, a city of Solano county, California, United States, is situated on the shore of San Pablo Bay, near the western end of the Straits of Carquinez. It has an ex- cellent harbour, and railroad communication by a branch of the Central Pacific Railroad. The city contains large flour-mills ; the population in 1880 was 5987. Vallejo, which takes its name from the Mexican general M. G. Vallejo, who took the country from the Indians in 1835, was in 1854 the capital of the State of California.

VALLOMBROSA, OrpeER oF. See Monacuism, vol. xvi. p. 708.

VALLS, a town of Spain, in the province of Tarragona, 11 miles to the north of that town, on a height near the Francoli. It is an old town and its walls and towers still remain. The usual Catalonian industries of wool and cotton spinning and weaving, as well as dyeing, distilling, paper-making, and tanning are carried on with considerable activity. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 13,250.

VALPARAISO, a city of Chili, the chief town of the province of the same name, and one of the principal com- mercial ports on the west coast of South America, is situated on a fine bay of the South Pacific Ocean, in 33° 0' 2" S, lat. and 71° 41' 15" W. long., 70 miles north-west of Santiago, with which there is communication by a cir- cuitous railway of 115 miles. The city lies at the south part of the bay, which is 2} miles wide, semicircular in

form, and well sheltered, except towards the north. There is good anchorage in the roadstead. There are two float- ing docks, capable of accommodating vessels of from 1400 to 3000 tons. The city is situated at the base of a range of barren hills, varying from 1000 to 1400 feet in height,

which have a narrow strip of low land between them and the sea; on this and on sites formed by cutting away the cliffs most of the houses are built. Further space is afforded by the deep dells or water- courses between the hills. These open towards the sea, and are on both sides covered with houses. Much of the fore- shore has been raised by earthquakes. The erection of an extensive embankment was begun in 1885. The older por- tion (Puerto) of the city, in which are the principal public and commercial buildings, is separated from the newer por- tion, called the Almendral, by a projecting point. The city is defended by a chain of forts, begun in 1866. The prin- cipal public buildings are the Government palace, the cus- tom house, the large bonded Government warehouses, the hospital, the city hall, and two theatres. The educational institutions include a theological seminary, a naval academy, and a lyceum; the last-named had 415 students in 1884 and 481 in 1885. The commercial enterprise of the city is largely dependent on the foreign merchants, especially Englishmen, Americans, and Germans. It is the com- mercial capital of Chili, and the principal residence of the foreign consuls. The principal industrial establishments are the Government railway shops, a large foundry and machine shops, coach-building and wheel-wright works, and a very large sugar refinery, the raw material for which is obtained from Peru. The population (97,737 in 1875) was 95,000 in 1885, of whom about a tenth were foreigners.

The number of vessels in the foreign trade that entered the port in 1885 was 587 of 582,066 tons, the number that cleared 348 of 373,551 tons. More than half of the tonnage was British,—Chilian, German, and French following in the order named. In the coasting trade the number of vessels that entered in 1885 was 781 of 434,486 tons, the number that cleared 1050 of 640,138 tons. About nine- tenths of the tonnage was British and Chilian, the latter having a

slight advantage. The following table shows the value of the import and export trade during five years, 1881 to 1885 :—

ice By “ful

Year. Imports. Exports. Total.

£& s. a £& a5 10. £& 8. d,

1881 7,487,545 8 2 7,891,783 0 0 15,329,328 8 2 1882 8,563,650 17 4 10,713,669 6 8 19,277,320 4 0 1883 9,673,618 13 6 11,441,571 7 4 21,115,190 0 10 1884 9,414,841 1 0 9,441,757 1 8 18,856,598 2 8 1885 6,620,326,18 2 8,324,446 17 8 14,944,773 15 10

The foreign trade is chiefly with Great Britain, France, Germany, and the United States, the value of the exports to these countries in 1885 being £1,356,583, £110,312, £262,065, and £15,424 respect- ively, and of the imports £1,787,310, £911,080, £900,066, and £318,629 respectively. The principal exports are metals (nitrate, bar copper, silver produce, copper and silver regulus, and gold and silver specie), wheat, barley, flour, wool, nuts, hay, beans, honey, iodine, coal, hides, and guano ; and the imports include iron, steel, wire, nails, machines and tools, sugar, rice, cashmeres, prints, shawls, wines, and beer.

Valparaiso was founded in 1536 by the Spanish officer Juan de Saavedra, who named it after his birthplace near Cuenca in Spain. In 1578 the city was captured by Drake, the exact date of his ap- pearance before it being 5th December ; and it was again taken by Hawkins's expedition in 1596. In 1600 it was sacked by the Dutch corsair, Van Noort. It was visited by severe earthquakes in 1730 and 1822, and by earthquake shocks in 1839 and 1873. It suffered from fire in November 1858; and on 31st March 1866 it was bom- barded by the Spanish fleet under Admiral Nunez, when a large part of the town was laid in ruins.

VAL—VAL

VALS, or Vats-Lis-Barns, a village of France, in the department of Ardéche, with a population of 2186 in 1886, is noted chiefly for its alkaline waters, which are similar to those of Vichy (see vol. xvi. p. 435). Within the com- mune, which in 1886 had a population of 3911, paper is manufactured to a small extent, and some silk is spun.

VALTELLINA, or VALTELLINE, the upper valley of the Adda, in the extreme north of Italy (province of Sondrio), derives its name from Teglio, the former capital, not far from Tirano (Val di Teglio, Val Teglina; Germ., Veltlin), and has a length, from Bormio to the Lake of Como, of about 68 miles. The chief town is Sondrio (4014 inhabit- ants in 1881), other

important places being Tirano (3119) and Morbegno (3240). Near Bormio (Germ., Worms) there are some frequented mineral springs (sulphur and lime), known in Pliny's time, and efficacious in diseases of the skin. There are several other baths in the side valleys, such as Santa Caterina (chalybeate), Masino, and Le Prese (sulphur). The highest points in the ranges enclosing the valley are the Piz Zupo (13,121 feet) in the Bernina group and the Konigsspitze (12,645 feet) in the Ortler district ; the Monte della Disgrazia (12,074 feet) is the highest peak comprised entirely within the water-basin of the valley. Three well-marked Alpine passes are traversed by good carriage-roads—the Stelvio Pass or Stilfserjoch (9046 feet, the highest carriage-road in Europe) from Bormio to Meran in the Adige valley, the Bernina Pass (7628 feet) from Tirano to Samaden in the Upper Engadine, and the Aprica Pass (4049 feet) from Tirano to the Val Camonica and the Lake of Iseo. The main valley is traversed from end to end by a magnificent carriage-road constructed by the Austrian Government in 1820-25. A railway from Colico, on the Lake of Como, to Sondrio (27 miles) was opened in 1884, and is being pushed on towards Tirano. The population is wholly Italian-speaking and Roman Catholic, the valley being in the diocese of Como. The shrine of the Madonna of Tirano (founded 1520) annually attracts a large number of pilgrims. The valley, particu- larly in its lower portion, is extremely fertile ; and of late years vigorous measures have been taken to prevent the damage caused by the frequent inundations of the Adda. Chestnuts, vines, mulberry trees, and fig trees abound; and there are many picturesquely-situated churches, castles, and villages. The chief articles exported are wine and honey. The wine is largely consumed in north Italy and Switzer- land, the best varieties being Grumello, Sassella, and Montagna. About 20,000 ib weight of honey is annually sent abroad. Politically the whole valley belongs to the kingdom of Italy, except the side valley of Poschiavo (Puschlav), which belongs to the Swiss canton of the Grisons (Graubiinden).

The political history of Valtellina is made up of the histories of three districts,—(1) the "free community" of Poschiavo (first mentioned as such in 1200-01); (2) the county of Bormio (first mentioned as a county in 1347); and (3) Valtellina proper, ex- tending from the defile of the Serra di Morignone on the east to the Lake of Como on the west. After the defcat of the Lombards (774) these three districts were given by Charlemagne to the

abbey of St Denis near Paris, which never seems to have exercised its rights. In 824 Lothair I., confirming an earlier donation made by Charlemagne, gave the churches of Poschiavo and Bormio to the bishop of Como. Bormio was in 1205 won by the men of Como, who in 1006 had reccived one-half of Valtellina from the emperor, and by 1114 they were masters of the entire valley. They retained Bormio till 1800, when it freed itself; but in 1336 it belonged to the bishop of Chur. In 1335 the Visconti, lords (later dukes) of Milan, became lords of Como, and therefore of Valtellina.

In 1350 they seized on Bormio and Poschiavo, the latter being won back by the bishop of Chur in 1394, and again lost to the

Milanese, including Poschiavo, Bormio, and Valtellina. Relying on this donation, the men of the Three Leagues of Rhetia (best known by the name of one, Graubiinden) invaded the valley in 1486-87, Poschiavo becoming in 1486 permanently a member (nota subject land) of the Gotteshausbund. This donation served too as the excuse for seizing, in 1512, on Bormio and Valtellina, which were harshly ruled as 'subject bailiwicks." Under the governor at Sondrio there were four " podestas" for the three divisions of Valtellina (Morbegno and Traona, Sondrio, and Tirano), besides one at Teglio and one at Bormio. Mastino Visconti's donation was solemnly confirmed in 1516 by the emperor Maximilian I. In 1530 the bishop of Chur was forced to sell to the Three Leagues for a small sum his title to these two districts. At the time of the Reformation Poschiavo became Protestant. The other two districts clung to the old faith and came under the influence of Carlo Bor- romeo, who, when founding in 1579 his "Collegium Helveticum " at Milan for Swiss students for the priesthood, reserved for Val- tellina six out of the forty-two places. Valtellina was extremely iniportant to the Hapsburgs as affording the direct route between their possessions of the Milanese and Tyrol. Hence a great struggle, into which religious questions and bribery largely entered, took place between Austria and Spain on one side and France and Venice on the other. In 1603 Fuentes, the Spanish governor of the Milanese, built a fortress (of which traces still remain) close to the Lake of Como and at the entrance to the valley, in order to

overawe it. The religious conflicts in Graubiinden led to reprisals in the "sub- ject land" of Valtellina. In 1620 (19th July—4th August) the Spanish and Romanist faction (headed by the Planta family) massacred a great number of Protestants in the valley, 350 to 600 according to different accounts (Veltliner Mord). For the next twenty years the valley was the scene of great strife, being held by the Spaniards (1620, 1621-23, 1629-31, 1637-39), by the French (1624-26, 1635-37), and by the pope (1623, 1627). At length George Jenatsch, a former pastor, who had been the active and unscrupulous leader of the Protestant party, became a Romanist (1635) in order to frec the land from the French by aid of the Spaniards (1637), who finally (1639) gave it back to its old masters on condition that the Protestants were excluded from the valley. In this way the local struggles of Valtellina came to be mixed up with the Thirty Years' War. In 1797 Bormio and Valtellina were annexed to the Cisalpine republic, in 1805 to the kingdom of Italy (of which Napoleon was king), and in 1815 (despite the remon- strances of the Rhetian leagues) to the kingdom of Loimbardo-Venetia, held by the emperor of Austria. In 1859 they became, like the rest of Lombardy, part of the kingdom of unitcd Italy. Poschiavo followed the fortunes of the "Gotteshausbund." It became (after 1798) part of the canton Rhetia of the Helvetic republic, and in 1803 of the canton of the Graubiinden or Grisons, which was then first received a full member of the Swiss Con- federation.

See G. Leonhardi, Das Veltlin and Das Poschiavinothal (1859); Romegialli, Storia della Valtellina (1834-39, 5 vols.); C. von Moor, Geschichte von Curratien 1870-74); P. C. von Planta, Die currdtischen Herrschaften in der Feudalzeit 1881); Coxe, Travels in Switzerland, &c. (4th ed., 1801; Letters 74-78); Henne-Am Rhyn, Geschichte des Schweizervolkes (1865); L. von Ranke, History of the Popes, bk. vii.; and H. Reinhardt, '"' Das Veltliner Mord," in Geschichis- freund (vol. xl., 1885).

VALUE. In most departments of economic theory it is convenient to use as the basis of the exposition the opinions of J. S. Mill, not only because he has embodied in his treatise in a remarkable manner nearly everything of importance from the theoretical standpoint in the work of his predecessors, but also because most of the recent advances in economic science have been made by way of criticism or development of his views. This

observation is especially true of the theory of value. In this subject Mill had digested the mass of previous learning with such effect that he commences his treatment with the remark : "Happily there is nothing in the laws of value which remains for the present or any future writer to clear up ; the theory of the subject is complete. The only difficulty to be overcome is that of so stating it as to solve by anticipation the chief perplexities which occur in applying it." Curiously enough this part of economic theory was the first to receive at the hands of Jevons and others serious modification, the nature and need for which can, however, only be properly understood after a preliminary examina- tion of the old orthodox position.

Visconti in 1435, As early as 1860 the men of Rhetia made in- cursions into Valtellina under the pretext that it had formed part of ancient Rhetia. This idea was confirmed in 1404, when, in return for kind treatment received during his exile, Mastino Vis- conti (son of Barnabo) gave to the bishop of Chur his share of the

As regards the question of definition, Mill starts with Value in the distinction somewhat loosely drawn by Adam Smith =, ca between value in use and value in exchange. When we cae. say that a thing possesses a certain value in use, we say 10

Price.

46

more words than are necessary that it is useful: that is to say, value in use is an awkward phrase for utility. The conception of utility (see WEALTH) is the most fundamental in economics. It is held by Mill to mean the capacity to satisfy a desire or serve a purpose, and thus " useful," the corresponding adjective, is as fitly applied to ices as to steam-engines. But utility is obviously much wider than value, and Mill proceeds to say that by value in political economy we should always understand exchange value. This language seems familiar and definite, but on analysis it is clear that exchange implies two terms at least. If we say that a thing can be exchanged, we imply that it can be exchanged for something else, and when we speak of the exchange value of a thing we must directly or indirectly refer to the value of some other thing or things. In practice in modern

societies this other thing is standard money: an Englishman who talks of the exchange value of anything means the number of pounds sterling (or parts thereof) which it will fetch in the market or be appraised at by a fair arbitrator. On this view then the value of a thing is its price; but a very little experience in the theory or history of economics will show that it is often desirable, and sometimes necessary, to contrast value with price. "At the same time and place," says Adam Smith, "money is the exact measure of the real exchangeable value of all commodities. It is so, however, at the same time and place only." If, however, the exchange value of a thing is not its price, what is it? According to Mill, "The value of a thing is its general power of purchasing, the command which its possession gives over purchasable commodities in general." But what, we may well ask with Mill, is meant by command over commodities in general? Are we to understand the complete national inventory of wealth, or the total of things consumed in a given time by a nation? Obviously such conceptions are extremely vague and possibly unworkable. If, however, we make a selection on any representative principle, this selection will be more or less arbitrary. Mill is to some extent aware of these difficulties, although he never sub- jected them to a rigorous analysis; and he points to the obvious fact that a coat, for example, may exchange for less bread this year than last, but for more glass or iron, and so on through the whole range of commodities it may obtain more of some and less of others. But in this case are we to say that the value of the coat has risen or fallen ? On what principles are we to strike an average? The attempt to answer these questions in a satisfactory manner is at present engaging the attention of economists more than any other problem in the pure theory. Mill, how- ever, instead of attempting to solve the problem, frankly assumed that it is impossible to say except in one simple case. If, owing to some improvement in manufacture, the coat exchanges for less of all other things, we should certainly say that its value had fallen. This line of argu- ment leads to the position: "The idea of general exchange value originates in the fact that there really are causes which tend to alter the value of a thing in exchange for things generally, that is, for all things that are not them- selves acted upon by causes of similar tendency." There can be no doubt as to the truth of the latter part of this statement, especially if we substitute for one commodity groups of commodities. But it is doubtful if the idea of general exchange value arises from a consideration of the causes of value; and recent writers have

constantly emphas- ized the distinction between any change and the causes of the change. Following out the idea in the last sentence quoted, Mill goes on to say that any change in the value of one thing compared with things in general may be due either to causes affecting the one thing or the large group of all other things, and that in order to investigate the

VALU E

former it is convenient to assume that all commodities but the one in question remain invariable in their relative values. On this assumption any one of them may be taken as representing all the rest, and thus the money value of the thing will represent its general purchasing power. That is to say, if for the sake of simplicity we assume that the prices of all other things remain constant, but that one thing falls or rises in price, the fall or rise in price in this thing will indicate the extent of the change in its value compared with things in general, There can be no doubt that, in discussing any practical problem as to the changes in the relative value of any particular thing, it is desirable to take the changes in price as the basis, and much confusion and cumbrousness of expression would have been avoided in the theory of the subject if, to adapt a phrase of Cournot's, money had by Mill and others been used to oil the wheels of thought, just as in practice it is used to oil the wheels of trade.

|

theory of value becomes essentially an examination of the sites for

causes which determine the values of particular commodi- ties relatively to a standard which is assumed to be fixed. Now in order that anything may possess value in this sense, that it may exchange for any portion of standard money or its representatives, it is evident on the first analysis that two conditions must be satisfied. First, the thing must have some utility ; and secondly, there must be some difficulty in its attainment. As regards utility, Mill apparently regards it simply as a kind of entrance examination which every commodity must pass to enter the list of valuables, whilst the place in the list is deter- mined by variations in the degree of the difficulty of attainment.

value,

Later writers, however (more particularly Finaland

Jevons), have given much more prominence to utility, total and have drawn a careful distinction between final and "lity.

total utility. This distinction is useful in throwing light on the advantages of, and motives for, exchanging com- modities. Suppose that on a desert island A possesses all the food, so many measures—(say) pecks—of corn, and B all the drinking water, so many measures—(say) pints. Then A, taking into account present and future needs, might ascribe to the possession of each portion of his stock so much utility. The utility of the first few pecks of corn might be regarded as practically infinite; but, if his stock were abundant, and a speedy rescue prabable, the utility ascribed to successive portions would be less and less. In the same way B might make an estimate of the utility of successive measures of the drinking water. Now, if we regard only otal utilities from the point of view of each, both are infinite. If an exchange were made of the total stocks of both men, the position of neither would be improved. But, if A sets aside (say) half his stock, then it may well happen that he could advantageously exchange the rest against part of B's drinking water. In precisely the same way B might set aside so much of his stock for his own consumption, and then the utility of the remain- ing portion would be much less than the utility he would gain if he obtained in exchange A's surplus. Thus, if the two men exchange their remainders, both will gain in utility ; in the case supposed they will make an enormous gain. For simplicity we have supposed each stock to be divided into two portions, but nothing has been said of the principles of the division. It is, however, clear that A can advantageously go on exchanging a measure of corn for a measure of water so long as by doing so he makes a gain of utility. Conversely B can advantageously offer water so long as he gains greater utility from the corn received in exchange. The utility of the last portion of corn retained by A (or of water by B) is the final utility of the stock retained, and similarly the utility of the last

By this method of abstraction the treatment of the Requi-

Y AL UE

*measure obtained in exchange may be called the final utility of*the stock purchased. A will have done his best if these utilities are just equal. For at this point, if he were to offer (at the same rate of exchange) more corn, it is clear that he would lose more utility than he would gain. Mutatis mutandis, the same reasoning applies to B; and thus the rate of exchange will be so adjusted as to bring about this equality of final utilities on both sides.) It follows that, if A gains on the last portion received just as much utility as he loses on the portion parted with, on all the other portions received he will have gained more than he lost. The total of these gains over successive portions has been called by Prof. Marshall consumer's rent.*

However useful this theory of final utility may be in throwing light on the fundamental nature of value, and on the advantages of exchange, it is obviously too abstract to be applied to the explanation of the relative values of the endless series of commodities and services which constitute a nation's stock of valuables at any time. For this pur- pose we must resort to the law of supply and demand, which requires a very careful statement owing to the ambiguities of popular language. Mill has succeeded in getting rid of most of these ambiguities, but he has hardly given due emphasis to the fundamental character of the law. He argues, after the brief consideration allotted to the element of utility, that the other preliminary condition necessary for value—difficulty of attainment—is not always the same kind of difficulty, and he arrives at three distinct laws of value, according to three forms or degrees of this difficulty. (1) In the first place the difficulty may consist in an absolute limitation of the supply, and in this case the corresponding law is said to be the law of supply and demand. Even on Mill's view the class of commodities which comes under this heading is both large and im- portant, for it includes not only the favourite examples of old pictures, china, &c., but also land, and especially building sites in large cities. Again, it is pointed out that, although comparatively few commodities may be absolutely limited, almost all commodities may be so locally and temporarily, which is really only another way of saying that the law of supply and demand governs all market values ; for it is obvious that the supply actually forthcoming or obtainable in a specified time in any market is limited,—a point which may be well illustrated by the extreme case of a "corner." Again, under certain circum- stances the supply may be artificially limited, as in the case of monopolies, a typical example being

the destruction by the Dutch of some of their spice, in order that the limited quantity might sell for a total higher price. Besides all these important instances of the operation of the law of supply and demand, Mill is compelled also to bring under the same law the wages of labour, the values of the staples of international trade, and some other peculiar cases of value. In fact, step by step he is almost forced to the conclusion, now generally accepted, that the law of supply and demand is the fundamental law of value, of which the other laws are only particular cases. At the outset, however, he appears to consider the two others as of co-ordinate importance. (2) When the diffi- culty of attainment consists not in the absolute limitation but simply in the fact that the article requires labour and capital to produce it, the normal or natural value is said to be determined by the cost of production. (3) In the last case taken by Mill it is supposed that an article can be increased in quantity, but only at an increasing cost, and in this case the corresponding law of value is the cost of production of that portion which is obtained under the most unfavourable circumstances. These three laws of

‘ F or a full account of the theory of which only the principles are here indicated, see J evons, Theory of Pol. Kcon., London, 1871.

value may now be examined critically and their mutual relations discussed, for the last two, if not properly of co- ordinate importance with the first, are at any rate wide generalizations,

In order to understand the law of supply and demand, it is best to take separately the general law of demand and the general law of supply, and then effect a combination. Demand must be defined as the quantity of any article demanded at some particular price, it being assumed of course that the bidder of the price can meet his engage- ments, or, as is sometimes said, that the demand is an effectual demand. It is quite clear that by demand we cannot simply mean desire to possess, because in a sense every one desires everything, and the less the means of payment so much greater in general is the desire. Again, it is obviously necessary to insert the qualifying clause “at some particular price,” because, as a rule, with a change in price a different quantity will be demanded. It is, indeed, this variation of quantity

demanded, according to variation in price, which gives rise to the statement of the general law of demand, namely: As the price of any article falls, other things remaining the same, the quantity demanded increases, and, conversely, as the price rises the quantity demanded decreases. A very good example of this law is found in the effects of the remission of taxes. The repeal of a tax leads to a fall in price and the fall in price is accompanied by increased consumption. Conversely, it has often been found that to increase the amount of a tax does not increase the revenue from it, because the demand for the article falls off. The precise connexion between the price and the quantity demanded differs in different cases, and, strictly speaking, is probably never the same for any two commodities. At the same time, however, com- modities may be placed in large classes according to the general character of the variation. The variation of quantity demanded according to price will ultimately rest on the principle of jinal utility explained above. A person with a limited amount of money to spend will hit the economic mark in the centre if the final utilities of his several purchases are equal. This is a rather technical way of saying that a prudent man will not spend a penny more on any particular thing if the penny spent upon some new object would give him a little greater satisfaction. Reverting to the variations of demand according to price, a contrast will at once be observed between necessaries and luxuries. However much the price rises, so long as people have the means they must consume a certain amount of necessaries, but, however much the price falls, the limit of consumption of bread, for example, must soon be reached. On the other hand, a great fall in price of many luxuries may cause an enormous increase in the demand, whilst a great rise may almost destroy the demand. A great deal of light might be thrown on many interesting problems in the progress of a nation and of its various component classes, if the laws of demand, or the statistics of consump- tion according to price, were obtainable.

Turning to the element of supply, this term in a similar way may be defined as the quantity offered for sale at some particular price, and the general law of supply may be stated thus: As the price rises, other things remaining the same, the quantity offered tends to increase, and, con- versely, as the price falls the quantity offered tends to diminish. Expressed in this manner, supply appears to be exactly analogous to demand, and the analogy seems to hold good even when we push the analysis up to the utility to the seller as

compared with the utility to its buyer. For, as the price rises, the seller will obtain greater utility, and will thus retain less for his own use or will be in- duced to produce more. On closer inspection, however, the law of supply is found to be not so simple as the law

Law of

supply and de- mand.

Law of

demand.

Law of supply.

of demand. It would only be so if the seller had simply to compare the relative advantages of exchanging his com- modity and of retaining it for his own use, without any further reference to the conditions of, or the motives for, production. In most commodities, however, the determin- ing influence is not the comparative utility of consumption by the owner on the one hand or of the consumption of something else obtained by exchange on the other, but it is rather a comparison of the trouble of producing with the advantage of selling the article when produced. Of course, if we are considering finished products in any market the case is more simple; but even here the question of the relative advantages of present sale and reservation for a future market or distant place must be determined, and then the element of cost of production will again be brought back.

Before considering the relation of cost of production to supply, it will be convenient to combine the laws of supply and demand, taking the former in its simplest aspect, and to state the general law of supply and demand as govern- ing value. Excluding the simple case of the barter of two commodities on which the rate of exchange will be determined as explained above in reference to final utility, and meaning by demand the quantity demanded in a market at a certain price, and by supply the quantity there and then offered at a certain price, the general law

yao U i

case of a steamer which has a practical monopoly and is not controlled by Government. The owner will not send out the steamer at all unless the passengers and cargo pay the expenses; but, if there is a great demand, he will raise the price so as to secure a maximum profit. In general, however, any increase in the quantity of the article pro- duced (or the service rendered) will be accompanied by an increase in the necessary outlays, and this increase may be greater or less per unit. In these cases the caleu- lation of the maximum profit is a matter of great difficulty. Take, for example, the case of a railway which has a monopoly in a certain tract of country. The manager may aim at keeping down expenses and charging high rates, being contented with a moderate traffic; or he may lower his charges and incur additional expense to increase the gross income. It is worthy of remark that in many cases the monopolist has a choice of two methods which give practically equally good results, one starting with low and the other with high prices. But it is clear that the mass of the general public or the great body of consumers have an interest in low prices being adopted, whilst, on the other hand, the tendency is usually for the monopolist to charge higher prices than are really profitable in a maximum degree. The simplicity of the method of high prices is always attractive and often deceptive. Accord- ingly, even on these very general grounds, the interference

Equation may be stated thus: In any market the price of any article | of Government with monopolies may be defended as being en will be so adjusted that the quantity demanded will ex- | in the interests of the public and not against the interests and 2ctly equal the quantity offered at that price. The force | of the monopolists. The case of the parliamentary third-

by which the adjustment is made is, in general, competi-

class tickets furnishes an instructive example. At first

supply. ©. , ; as : tion. Thus, if the price were above the point indicated | the railways made their parliamentary trains as slow and by the law, there would be a lessened demand and the | inconvenient ‘as possible, whereas now there is hardly a competition of sellers would tend to lower the price. Con- | train which does not carry passengers at parliamentary versely, if

the price were lower the competition caused by | rates without compulsion. In a similar way many cases the increased demand would tend to raise it. The law as | of Governmental interference with landowners may be thus stated corresponds to what Mill calls the equation | justified, for very often there is a tacit combination on between demand and supply. He was induced to adopt | the part of a few great landowners to act on certain this phrase in place of the more popular expression, the | customs.! As a rule, however, in modern commercial Compet) | ratio of demand to supply, on the ground of its greater | countries monopolies are an exception. Any one, for ex- tion accuracy. And, if the term ratio is to be taken strictly, | ample, can prosecute any trade or manufacture if he can V2! no doubt Mill's criticism is perfectly just. At the same | provide the requisite skill, labour, and capital, and even time the equation must be stated very carefully to avoid | as regards land,—at any rate in the greater part of England falling into the truism suggested by Cairnes, namely, that | and Scotland,—there is from the point of view of cultiva- in any market the quantity bought at any price is equal | tion no real monopoly. But, when competition arises, to the quantity sold at that price. The point is that in | exceptional profit ceases, and thus a new principle for accordance with the general principles of supply and de- determining values comes into play. If the producer of mand the quantities offered and demanded vary with the any article is obtaining more than the usual rate of profit price. And, however inaccurate the literal use of the term | he at once provokes competition, and thus even the dread ratio may be, it has the advantage of suggesting a change | of this possible competition may keep down prices. This of price according to changes in demand and supply. is often expressed by saying that the potential supply affects ee ' It er be — at this point to consider the principles | prices almost as much as the actual supply. It thus be- ee eR Oly values are regulated. The simplest | comes obvious that, as regards freely produced commodities

case is when one individual possesses the whole stock and the cost of production is so small that it may be neglected. Take the case, for example, of some natural well having a unique character for the mineral waters it supplies. The monopolist will, in the first place, have to discover the law of demand for his article. If he fixes a very high price, he may only occasionally sell a pint to a king or a millionaire, whilst, if he fixes a very

low price, he may sell to every peasant and yet get a very poor return. He will in fact, have to work out a problem in mathematics, and

the production of which may be extended indefinitely at the same or at a decreasing cost, the value tends to con- form to the minimum cost of production, and that any other value is consequently unstable. It will be observed, how- ever, that cost of production only determines values by operating through the actual or potential supply, and thus that the law of demand and supply is fundamental. Once a thing is made, the actual cost of production has no influ- ence on its value, except as indicating the conditions of future possible supply.

must so adjust his price that the quantity sold multiplied by the price per unit will be a maximum. The same kind of difficulty is found in the case in which the expenses of production, although considerable, are practically fixed or only increase slightly in proportion to the quantity fur- nished. The minimum price will be given by the expenses of production, whilst the actual price will tend to be such F as to yield the maximum profit. Take, for example, the

*At this point it becomes necessary to analyse and explain Cost of the nature of cost of production. In the last resort it will produc: be found that nothing can be produced without labour, "™ and in a modern society capital must be added. Thus the component elements of production are labour and capital * The general theory of monopolies is admirably treated by the*

rench mathematician and economist Cournot, Revue Sommaire des Doctrines Economiques, Paris, 1877.

of pro- duction,

Wages and values,

VALUE

acting by natural forces upon raw material. But, since both the forces and the produce of nature require labour and capital for their exploitation, the elements that must be considered primary and fundamental in the case of

com- modities that can be indefinitely increased are labour and capital. Capital, again, is itself a product of labour, and it is also wealth set aside by the owner for future use instead of for present consumption. Accordingly, in order that a thing may be continuously produced, labour must obtain a sufficient reward for toil and capital a sufficient reward for "abstinence," or for preservation and accumu- lation of wealth. Thus the ultimate elements in the real cost of production are the toil and trouble and irksomeness of labour and of saving. But this toil and trouble will not be submitted to unless in any particular case the fair reward of industrial competition is forthcoming. However much pleasure a good workman may take in his work or a prudent man in his savings, in the industrial world as at present constituted both labour and capital will be attracted towards the point of highest reward (compare WAGES) ; and, accordingly, it is a necessary condition of the produc- tion of any article that the price obtained will yield the average rate of wages and profit obtainable for that species

Expenses of work. Now these rates of wages and profit can be

expressed in terms of money, and may be designated, following Prof. Marshall, the expenses of production as distinguished from the real cost. The real cost of produc- tion would on analysis consist of a confused unworkable mass of "efforts and abstinences," and the relation of these mental strains to their material rewards is the problem of wages and profits. But for the purpose of relative values it is not necessary to push the analysis so far, and thus, if we regard the capitalist as the producer, we may look on the elements of production as consisting of wages and profits. And this is quite in accordance with customary thought and language : every one who asks for the details of the cost of a thing expects to have a statement of the wages and profits directly involved, and of the material, which again directly involves wages and profits. So far, then, as freely produced commodities are concerned, the general law is that they tend to sell at such a priceas will yield on the average the ordinary rate of wages and profits which by industrial competition the occupation can command, It is at this point that the difficulty emerges as to the precise nature of the connexion between the prices of commodities and the money wages and profits of producers. Are we to consider that the former are deter- mined by the latter,

or the latter by the former? If, for example, commodity A sells for twice as much as com- modity B, are we to say that this is because wages are higher in the former case, or are the wages higher because the price is higher? The answer to this question is given in the theory of Wacxs (q.v.). It is sufficient to state here that, in discussing relative values, we may assume that industrial competition has established certain relative rates of wages and profits in various employments, and that any prices of articles which yielded more than these rates, whilst in other cases no corresponding rise took place, would be unstable. Thus, in discussing the normal values of freely produced commodities, we have to consider the quantity of labour and the rates of wages and the quantity of capital and the rate of profits, the normal rates of these wages and profits being given.

The use of the term "normal" requires some explanation. The word norma properly refers to the square used by masons and carpenters, &c., and thus a thing may be said to be in its normal position when no change will be made: that is to say, the normal position is the stable position, or it is the position to which the workman will try to adjust his work. And, similarly, by the use of normal as

applied to wages and profits, we mean the stable rate or the rate towards which they are attracted. It is thus quite possible that the normal rate may differ from the average rate or the rate obtained over a term of years, For it may easily happen that as regards wages, for example, a high rate for a short period may lead to such an increase in that kind of production that for a much longer period the rate will fall below the normal. The normal rate seems to refer to the actual conditions of industry, the rate which can be obtained for a given amount of exertion, taking the average of employments at the time, rather than to the particular rate obtained for some class of work over a period of years.

With these explanations the proposition holds good that the normal values of freely produced commodities tend to be equal to their cost, or rather expenses, of production, and any price which yields a greater or less return to labour and capital is unstable.

If all commodities were produced directly by the ex- Elements

penditure of labour, and in such a way that capital need not be considered, as in the simple natural state of society taken by Ricardo, then the only element to consider in value would be the quantity of labour. And in a society of a more developed character, in which wages are paid, if we consider that the rate of wages is uniform, and that profits may be disregarded in comparison with wages, the quantity of labour is the most important considera- tion, and a fall in the relative value of any article can only take place through some economy of labour. But, as we approach more nearly to the actual constitution of modern industrial societies, we find serious differences in the rates of wages in different employments, the use of fixed capital becomes of greater importance, and in some cases the lapse of time necessary for the completion of the commodity is considerable. Thus interest and profits, as well as the differential rates of wages, have to be taken into account just as much as the quantity of labour, and it is generally convenient to consider also the established differences in various returns to capital under different conditions (risk, irregularity, &c.). Indirectly, of course, since all capital in the ordinary sense is the result of labour, the quantity of labour is always of primary importance ; but, in considering the proximate causes of relative values, it is best to consider capital and labour as independent factors. It follows, then, that, in order to compare the relative values of two commodities, A and B, freely produced in a modern industrial society, we must take into account, first of all, the relative wages and rela- tive profits, and the relative amounts of labour and capital employed. If the producers of A are skilled workmen, and if the return to the capital is uncertain, whilst in the case of B the labour is unskilled and profit steady, then the value of A will be higher than that of B, supposing each produced by the same amount of capital and the same quantity of labour. Obviously, too, any change in the relative wages and profits will affect the relative values. If the commodities considered are not capable of division into similar parts (such as yards of cloth or silk), but must be considered in their entirety (e.g., ships and houses), then we must take into account also the different quantities of labour and capital required for their completion, as well as the relative rates of wages and profits. As regards changes of value in this case, it will be observed that, if the proportions are different in which labour and capital are employed in the production of two

commodities, then any change in the general rates of wages and profits will affect relative values. By making various suppositions as. to changes in the different elements of the expenses of production, a great many cases may be obtained, as is done, for example, by Mill (Pol. Zeon., bk. iii. ch. iv.). All the

cases enumerated and others may, however, be deduced from a general formula. Let #, represent the total ex-

ag ,penses of production of commodity A. Let @, be the

penses 0 produc- tion,

Changes in re- lative values.

Value and rent.

quantity of fixed capital employed, and let 7, be the rate of wear and tear per annum, so that the loss is Q,/”. Let P, be the rate of profits per cent per annum which must be obtained on the whole capital. Let Q, be the number of labourers, and w, the rate of wages per annum. Let ¢, represent the time taken for production reckoned in years (¢, may be less than unity, thus ¢/@, would be weeks). Then the total expenses of production are

ee {a yt) + G-m(14+53)} Gs

This simply means that the commodity must return in the normal case profits on the fixed capital with repair of waste, and also the wages expended (the amount depend- ing on the number of labourers and the rate of wages), with profit on the circulating capital over all the time necessary to complete production. In some cases, it may be observed, it would be necessary to take ¢ differently for the fixed capital and the labour or circulating capital. Then, in a similar way £,, the expenses of production of B, may be expressed :

= Fouad zs) } £,= { (seh ts.) + Oa-or(d +ic8 tg.

Thus the relative values of A and B will be found by comparing the aggregate of these several elements ex- pressed on the right hand sides of the equations. It will now be evident on what a number of variable elements relative values must depend, even when we consider that the commodities can be indefinitely increased by the proper expenditure of capital and employment of labour. With the progress of invention and the develop- ment of industrial competition, constant changes are taking place in the various elements, and in the somewhat complicated formula given certain practical elements have been eliminated. Even if we suppose, for the sake of simplicity, that P, and P, are equal, as also w, and w, and t, and ¢,,—that is, if we suppose a uniform rate of wages and profits, and the same amount of time required,—still any change in these general rates will affect relative values, owing to the different proportions in which fixed and circulating capital may be employed in the two cases, Thus, for example, we arrive at Mill's statement: " All commodities in the production of which machinery bears a large part, especially if the machinery is very durable, are lowered in their relative value when profits fall." And it will be found on trial that by making various supposi- tions as to the identity of certain of the elements, or as to their disappearance, many other causes of changes in rela- tive values may be deduced. Two important practical conclusions of a general character may be drawn from this analysis. (1) Relative values are liable to constant dis- turbances, and accordingly, since relative prices tend to be adjusted to relative values, relative prices must be con- stantly changing. (2) It is extremely difficult to measure changes in the value of the monetary standard, or move- ments in the general level of prices, or variations in the purchasing power of money incomes.

These difficulties are further increased by the importance of the group of commodities which can only be increased (the arts of production remaining the same) at an increas- ing cost, and which are placed by Mill under a third law of value. The most important examples of this law are agricultural and mining produce. In order to make the principles on which this law depends clear and intelligible, it is necessary to proceed at first by the abstract method so well described by Cairnes (Logical Method of Pol. Econ., 2d ed., London, 1885). Assume then that there is an

isolated country and that its agricultural produce consists of corn. Then at any given stage of the growth of wealth and population the amount of corn may be increased (the art of agriculture remaining stationary) either by taking into cultivation inferior lands or else by cultivating with greater care and expense the lands already in cultivation. But in either case what is known as the law of diminishing return would come into play, and the additional supply could only be obtained at an additional cost. It may be assumed that at any stage of development the cultivation would be carried to such a point as to give just the ordinary return to capital on the last "dose" of capital expended. Further it cannot be carried, for no farmer will work at a continuous loss; and competition will insure that it is carried so far, for, if this last application of capital yields ordinary profit, the former "doses" must yield more, that is to say, rent as well as profit. It thus becomes manifest that, under the conditions supposed, the extent to which "the margin of cultivation " will extend depends upon the price of the produce, and in the normal case—The price must be equal to the expenses of production of that part which is produced under the most unfavourable circum- stances. This then is the third law of value, from which the economic theory of rent is an immediate deduction. For, if the last dose obtains just a sufficient return, the former doses must yield more, and the sum of these extra profits is rent. It thus appears, also, that rent depends upon price and not price upon rent.!

The pure theory of rent is arrived at by making certain Qualif hypotheses and abstractions, and accordingly it must not cations be applied to particular practical cases without further a Sy consideration, The theory certainly indicates the effect of of a very important causes, but requires in practice a certain amount of qualification. (1) The essence of the theory is that the return to each dose of capital applied can be separated, and that the application of capital will cease when the last dose yields only ordinary profits; and no doubt it is roughly true to say that a farmer will discover on trial at what point he should cease applying capital, and that this will depend upon the price of the produce. At the same time, however, it is quite possible that a farmer who owns the land which he tills may find it ad- vantageous to carry cultivation toa further pitch than if he only rented his land. For he will apply his own labour and capital at a less return on his own land. There can be little doubt that very many important improvements

made by landowners have yielded less than the ordinary rate of profit, just as peasant proprietors obtain a poor return by way of wages for their own labour. A land- owner cultivating his own land has the whole margin of economic rent to fall back upon, but a farmer has to pay his rent as a first charge. Thus it is possible, provided always that the land is cultivated in both cases with the same skill, that food would be cheaper if all the land were cultivated by the owner and not by tenants farming for a profit, and thus the fact that the American farmers pay no rent may account partially for the lower prices at which they sell their corn. (2) Again, the pure theory takes no account of the size of the portions into which the land is divided, nor of the kind of crops which are grown. But, when most of the land of a country is rented, both of these factors have to be considered, and it may be more convenient to the landowner to let the land with certain restrictions, which again indirectly operate on the price. (3) It has been well observed by Passy ? that the principal Se ee

1 An excellent account of the economic theory of rent, in which recent criticisms from different points of view (e.g., by P. Leroy-

Beaulieu, Henry George &c.) are examined, is Land and its Rent, b Francis A. Walker, London, 1884, i ual

? Systemes de Culture en France.

|

;

:

rogress nd ent.

Value of nining produce.

Precious metals,

VALUE

effect of various land laws is to increase or diminish the amount of the gross produce, which in Ricardian phrase- ology would mean to extend or contract the margin of cultivation. It thus appears that it is not always true to say that the payment of rent makes no real difference to the general public, and that it is simply a necessary method of equalizing farmers' profits. At the same time, however, with the necessary qualifications, there is no doubt that price determines rent and not rent price, especially when prices are affected by foreign competition. Recently in Great Britain a striking example has been afforded both of the abandonment of inferior lands (the contraction of the margin) and of a heavy fall in rent under the influence of falling prices.

The hypothetical history implied in Ricardo's theory as to the effects of the progress of society upon the value of agricultural produce also requires some criticism, such as that given by the historian of agriculture and prices, Thorold Rogers. The theory assumes that in the first place population increases, and thus there is a greater demand for food, and that therefore the margin of culti- vation extends and the price rises, and rent rises also. But, as Rogers observes, history shows that agricultural improvements of all kinds have first of all increased the amount of food, and thus allowed of an increase in popula- tion. It is worth noticing that in our own times an in- creasing population in rural districts (¢.g., the Highlands of Scotland and the west of Ireland) may indirectly tend to lower or destroy rents through minute subdivision. Ricardo's theory, however, accounts very well for the rise in the ground-rents of towns and cities, and it is there far more than in the rural districts that the unearned incre- ment is to be found.

The value of mining produce is determined generally in the same way as that of agricultural produce; but similar qualifications must be introduced. The theory is that both extensively and intensively the produce of mines is subject to the law of diminishing return, that the margin recedes as the price falls and extends as it rises, and that thus the price is determined by the most costly portion which it just pays to bring to market. And no doubt the main facts of the theory are correct; and recently the mines of Great Britain no less than its lands have illustrated the retrogression of the margin and the fall in rents. The principal point to observe is that mines are gradually quite exhausted.1_ In general the produce of mines is, like that of

land, consumed in a comparatively short time, and thus the value is subject to fluctuations according to the con- ditions of the annual demand and supply.

The peculiar durability of the precious metals, however, makes them in this respect differ widely from most mining produce. It is of course undeniable that (supposing coin- age free) the value of standard coins will be equal to the value of the same amount of bullion, and, conversely, that the bullion will be equal in value to the same amount of coins. The older economists argued that the precious metals had their value determined by their cost of pro-

'duction under the most unfavourable circumstances, and

then argued that in consequence the value of money (or coins) tended to be governed by the cost of production of bullion. If, however, it ig remembered that the annual production does not probably amount to two per cent. of the quantity in the hands of man, that cost of production can only operate through actual or potential supply, and that in the case of money the increase must be real to affect prices, it will be readily seen that the value of bullion is determined by the general level of prices (or

alta Marshall's Economics of Industry, London, 1879, bk. ii. chap.

depends upon the value of the bullion. At the same time, however, it is true that, if prices become very high, —in other words, if the value of money, and thus of bullion, becomes very low,—then a check is placed upon production from the mines, and, conversely, with falling prices or a rise in the value of the precious metals mining for them is extended and encouraged. But the difference in the annual supply due to this influence will be small under present or similar conditions, On the whole, this case of the precious metals furnishes perhaps the best example of the way in which the cost of production can only act through the law of supply and demand.

There is one other part of the general theory of value Law

which requires some notice.

needed to suit this case. sum of the values must be equal to the joint expenses of production, and the relative values inter se are deter- mined by demand and supply. Thus the Australian sheep-farmers will extend their sheep-farms so long as for wool and mutton together they obtain a fair profit, but the amount contributed by each portion will be determined by the relative demand. It is interesting to observe that in the progress of society the value of the meat has risen as compared with that of the hides and the wool. The same principle determines the kind of produce which will be raised from land, though the application is rather more difficult owing to rotation of crops, &c.

Much discussion has taken place recently on the question Theory whether a distinct theory of international values is required. of inter-

In the limits assigned to this article it is only possible to indicate the principal points in dispute. The 'orthodox " theory, as held by Ricardo, Mill, and Cairnes, has been attacked by Cournot, Prof. Sidgwick, and others, and has been re-stated with admirable clearness and much original power by Prof. Bastable.2 The best way to answer the question seems to be to make clear the assumptions on which the values of commodities produced within any "nation" are determined, and then to consider whether any change must be made when we bring in other nations. We are at once met with the difficulty, What is a " nation"? The orthodox answer' appears to be that within any nation (for which the term 'economic area" might per- haps be advantageously substituted) there is effective industrial and commercial competition. This appears to imply no more than is contained in the principle noticed above, that relative values tend to be equal to the normal expenses of production (commercial competition), and that the expenses tend to be proportioned to the real cost (industrial competition). The question then arises, Do

these conditions not exist in international trade? The Com- answer appears to be, first, that commercial competition parative certainly holds good; for as soon as a trade is estab- St

lished the commodities will sell at the same prices in both countries (allowance being made for cost of carriage). It would plainly be absurd to say that the value of Man- chester goods is determined by their expenses of produc- tion if they are consumed in England, but by something else if they are sent to India. If then there is any differ- ence between domestic and international values, it must arise owing to the absence of effective industrial competi- tion; that is to say, in the same country (or economic area) the real cost determines the expenses of production on account of the supposed perfect mobility of labour and capital, but between different economic areas these agents of production do not pass with sufficient readiness to secure a similar correspondence. It thus follows that a country may import articles which it could produce at less real 2 Theory of International Trade.

Recip- rocal de- mand.

Foreign ex- changes,

52

cost, provided that it pays for these imports with exports which cost even less. A very striking example of this doctrine of comparative cost, as it is termed, is furnished by Victoria after the great gold discoveries. All kinds of produce were imported and paid for with gold, because there was less real cost involved in obtaining the gold to pay for imports than in making the articles. _Accord- ing to this theory every country will devote its labour and capital to its most productive uses; and, if by some new imports a domestic industry is checked or abolished, it is argued that the labour and capital will be devoted to increasing the exports so as to pay for the new imports. It must clearly be assumed as axiomatic that in the absence of loans, tributes, &c., imports can in the long run only be paid for by exports, and also that those articles will be ex- ported which can be produced at the least comparative real cost. This theory then may be held to explain in a satis- factory manner the origin and development of international trade; but the question of values is still undetermined. Consistently with exports paying for imports many differ- ent rates of exchange are possible, and the particular rate actually adopted is said to depend entirely on reciprocal demand. And in an extreme case, in which new countries trade solely in

articles of which each has a monopoly, this answer would seem to be correct; but, when we consider that under present conditions trading countries have many articles in common, and that a slight margin of profit suffices to expand or diminish an export trade, this answer seems too vague and unreal. The most probable solution seems to be that the rates of exchange will be so adjusted as to give to the exporters the ordinary rate of profits current in their respective countries. In general it is clear that the rate will be determined independently of the foreign trade, or at least that the foreign trade is only one factor to be considered. It is said, for example, that the annual value of the agricultural produce of the United Kingdom exceeds the total amount of the exports. If the rate of profit falls, a trade which before was impossible becomes possible. The opinion may be hazarded that the best way of explaining the general theory of international values would be to start with the foreign exchanges; but such an investigation is too technical and difficult for this place. (J. 8. N.)

VAMPIRE, a term, apparently of Servian origin (wampir), originally applied in eastern Europe to blood- sucking ghosts, but in modern usage transferred to one or more species of blood-sucking bats inhabiting South America.

In the first-mentioned meaning a vampire is usually supposed to be the soul of a dead man which quits the buried body by night to suck the blood of living persons. Hence, when the vampire's grave is opened, his corpse is found to be fresh and rosy from the blood which he has thus absorbed. To put a stop to his ravages, a stake is driven through the corpse, or the head cut off, or the heart torn out and the body burned, or boiling water and vinegar are poured on the grave. The persons who turn vampires are generally wizards, witches, suicides, and persons who have come to a violent end or have been cursed by their parents or by the church. But any one may become a vampire if an animal (especially a cat) leaps over his corpse or a bird flies over it. Sometimes the vampire is thought to be the soul of a living man which leaves his body in sleep, to go in the form of a straw or fluff of down and suck the blood of other sleepers. The belief in vampires chiefly prevails in Slavonic lands, as in Russia (especially White Russia and the Ukraine), Poland, and Servia, and among the Czechs of Bohemia and the other Slavonic races of Austria. It became specially

prevalent in Hungary be- tween the years 1730 and 1735, whence all Europe was

filled with reports of the exploits of vampires. Several treatises were written on the subject, among which may be mentioned Ranft's De Masticatione Mortuorum in Tumulis (1734) and Calmet's Dissertation on the Vampires of Hungary, translated into English in 1750. It is prob- able that this superstition gained much ground from the reports of those who had examined the bodies of persons who had been buried alive though believed to be dead, and was based on the twisted position of the corpse, the marks of blood on the shroud and on the face and hands,—results of the frenzied struggle in the coffin before life became extinct. The belief in vampirism has also taken root among the Albanians and modern Greeks, but here it may be due to Slavonic influence.

Two species of blood-sucking bats (the only species known)—Desmodus rufus and Diphylla ecaudata—repre- senting two genera (see Mammazia, vol. xv. p. 415), inhabit the tropical and part of the subtropical regions of the New World, and are restricted to South and Central America. They appear to be confined chiefly to the forest- clad parts, and their attacks on men and other warm- blooded animals were noticed by some of the earliest writers. Thus Peter Martyr (Anghiera), who wrote soon after the conquest of South America, says that in the Isthmus of Darien there were bats which sucked the blood of men and cattle when asleep to such a degree as to even kill them. Condamine, a writer of the 18th century, remarks that at Borja (Ecuador) and in other places they had entirely destroyed the cattle introduced by the mis- sionaries. Sir Robert Schomburgk relates that at Wicki, on the river Berbice, no fowls could be kept on account of the ravages of these creatures, which attacked their combs, causing them to appear white from loss of blood. The present writer, when in South and Central America, had many accounts given him as to the attacks of the vam- pires, and it was agreed upon by most of his informants that these bats when attacking horses showed a decided preference for those of a grey colour. It is interesting to speculate how far the vampire bats may have been instru- mental—when they were, perhaps, more abundant—in causing the

destruction of the horse, which had disappeared from America previous to the discovery of that continent.

Although these bats were known thus early to Europeans, the species to which they belonged were not determined until about fifty years ago, several of the large frugivorous species having been wrongly set down as blood-suckers, and named accordingly. Thus the name Vampyrus was suggested to Geoffroy and adopted by Spix, who also con- sidered that the long-tongued bats of the group Glosso- phage were addicted to blood, and accordingly described Glossophaga soricina as a very cruel blood-sucker (sangut- suga crudelissima), believing that the long brush-tipped tongue was used to increase the flow of blood. Vampyrus spectrum, L., a large bat inhabiting Brazil, of sufficiently forbidding aspect, which was long considered by naturalists to be thoroughly sanguivorous in its habits, and named accordingly by Geoffroy, has been shown by the observa- tions of modern travellers to be mainly frugivorous, and is considered by the inhabitants of the countries in which it is found to be perfectly harmless. Waterton believed Artibeus planirostris, a common bat in British Guiana, usually found in the roofs of houses, and now known to be frugivorous, to be the veritable vampire ; but neither he nor any of the naturalists that preceded him had suc- ceeded in detecting any bat in the act of drawing blood. It fell to the lot of Charles Darwin to determine one of the blood-sucking species at least, and the following is his account of the circumstances under which the discovery of the sanguivorous habits of Desmodus rufus was made :— "The vampire bat is often the cause of much trouble by

biting the horses on their withers. The injury is generally not so much owing to the loss of blood as to the in- flammation which the pressure of the saddle afterwards produces. The whole circumstance has lately been doubted in England; I was therefore fortunate in being present when one was actually caught ona horse's back. We were bivouacking late one evening near Coquimbo, in Chili, when my servant, noticing that one of the horses was very restive, went to see what was the matter, and, fancying he

could detect something, suddenly put his hand on the beast's withers, and secured the vampire" (Naturalist's Voyage Round the World, p. 22).

Desmodus rufus, Weid, the common blood-sucking bat, is widely spread over the tropical and subtropical parts of Central and South America from Oaxaca to southern Brazil and Chili, It isa comparatively small bat, a little =~ 3 larger than the common noctule, the head and body about 3 inches in length, the forearm 24, with a remarkably long and strong thumb ; it is destitute of a tail, and has a Z very peculiar physiognomy, well re- 7 presented in fig. 1. The body is covered with rather short fur of a reddish brown colour but varying in shade, the extremities of the hairs sometimes ashy. The teeth are peculiar and characteristic, admirably adapted for the purposes for which they are employed. The upper front teeth (incisors), of which there are only two, are enor- a mously enlarged (see fig. 2), and in Wd shape obliquely triangular like small guillotines. The canines, though smaller than the incisors, are large and sharp ; but the back teeth, so w well developed in all – other bats, are very |. small and reduced in AN, number to two above AS. and three below, on ry each side, with later- ally compressed crowns pe parrogin rising but slightly Fia. 2.—-Teeth of D. rufus. above the level of the gum, their longitudinally disposed cutting edges (in the upper jaw) being continuous with the base of the canine and with each other. The lower front teeth (incisors) are small, bifid, in pairs, and are separated from the canines, with a space in front. The lower back tceth are narrow, like those in the upper jaw, but the anterior tooth is slightly larger than the others, and separated by a sinall space from the canines. Behind the lower incisors the jaw is deeply hollowed out to receive the extremities of the large upper incisors.

With this peculiar dentition there is associated as remarkable a departure from the general type in the form of the digestive ap-

aratus. The exceedingly narrow cesophagus opens at right angles into a narrow, intestine-like stomach, which almost immediately terminates on the right, without a distinct pylorus, in the duodenum, but on the left forms a greatly elongated caecum, bent and folded upon itself, which appears at first sight like part of the intestines. This, the cardiac extremity of the stomach, is, for a short distance to the left of the entrance of the esophagus,

still very narrow, but soon increases in size, till near its termination it attains a diameter

uite three times that of the short pyloric portion. The length of this cardiac diverticulum of the stomach appears to vary from 2 to 6 inches, the size in each specimen probably depending on the amount of food obtained by the animal before it was captured.

The only other known species of blood-sucking bat, Diphylla ecaudata, Spix, inhabits Brazil, and appears to be much less abun- dant than Desmodus rufus, from which it is distinguished by its slightly smaller size, by the absence of a groove in the front of the lower lip, by the non-development of the interfemoral membrane in the centre, and by the presence of a short calcaneum (absent in D. rufus), but more particularly by the presence of an additional rudimentary back tooth (? molar) above and below, and by the very peculiar form of the lower incisors, which are much expanded in the direction of the jaws and pectinated, forming a semicircular row touching each other, the outer incisors being wider than the inner ones, with six notches, the inner incisors with three each.

Thus constituted, these bats present, in this extraordinary differ- entiation of the manducatory and digestive apparatus, a departure from the type of other species of the family (Phyllostomide) to which they belong unparalleled in any of the other orders of Mammalia, standing apart from all other mammals as being fitted only for a diet of blood, and capable of sustaining life upon that alone.

Fia. 1.—Head of Desmodus rufus, Weid.

Travellers describe the wounds inflicted by the large sharp-edged in- cisors as being similar to those caused by a razor when shaving: a portion of the skin is shaved off and, a large number of severed capillary vessels being thus exposed, a constant flow of blood is maintained. From this source the blood is drawn through the ex- ceedingly narrow gullet—too narrow for anything solid to pass—into the intestine-like stomach, whence it is, probably, gradually drawn off during the slow process of digestion, while

the animal, sated with food, is hanging in a state of torpidity from the roof of its cave or from the inner sides of a hollow tree. (G. E. D.) VAN, a city of Asiatic Turkey, capital of a vilayet, is situated two miles to the east of the lake to which it gives its name, in 38° 30' N. lat. and 43° 18' E. long. It lies on the ill-defined borderland between Armenia and Kurd- istan, in an extremely fertile plain some 40 miles in circuit, which is described as one of the gardens of the East, whence the local saying: "Van in this world, heaven in the next." Its low flat-roofed houses are grouped irregularly at the southern base of a nummulitic limestone eminence, somewhat resembling a camel's back, which rises 100 feet sheer above the plain and is crowned by the so-called citadel, the fortifications of which are mostly in a dilapidated state. But it is naturally a position of great strength and of considerable strategic importance, standing at the junction of two military routes, which here diverge westwards through Mush and Kharput to Asia Minor and southwards to Mosul and Mesopotamia, besides commanding the approaches to the Persian frontier at Kotur and Bayezid. The town itself, which contains four mosques, two large churches, an Armenian bazaar, baths, and caravanserais, is enclosed within a double line of crenellated walls and ditches on the three sides not protected by the rock; and beyond these enclosures lies the suburban district of Baghlar, or the "'Gardens." The

| population, estimated at from 30,000 to 35,000, are Turks, _ except about 2000 Armenians and a few hundred Mo-

hammedan and Nestorian Kurds. Besides trade and agriculture, the inhabitants are engaged in a few indus- tries, such as the making of coarse cotton chintzes, a highly prized goat-hair waterproof moire antique, a thick woollen cloth called shayak, and an excellent soap, pre- pared from the saline efflorescences of Lakes Van and Erchek, which consist in about equal proportions of the

carbonate and sulphate of soda. ;

Armenian tradition derives the name of Van from an Armenian king who reigned a little before Alexander the Great, and speaks of an older city founded by Semiramis (Shemiramagerd). This is of course fable; but the Vannic inscriptions (vol. xiii. p. 116) show that the region was the seat of an

Armenian kingdom, whose native name was Biaina, as early as the 9th century B.c. In the isolated rock towering above the plain there are numerous galleries, flights of steps, crypts, and cuneiform rock inscriptions, one of which is trilingual, like that of Behistin, and like it relates the deeds of Xerxes, son of Darius. Others are in the Haikan or Old Armenian language ; while for others scattered over the district a solution has been sought by Prof. Sayce with doubtful success in the present language of Georgia.

The vilayet of Van, one of the finest but also one of the least developed regions of Asiatic Turkey, lies on the Persian frontier between Erzerum (north) and Baghdad (south). It has an area of 15,000 square miles, with a population

of over 1,000,000. Lake Van.

Lake Van, called Arsissa Palus by the ancients, and also Thos- pitis, from its Armenian name Tosp, is 80 miles long and 30 broad, with a total area of 1500 square miles. Although of smaller extent than Lake Urmia, it contains a much larger volume of water owing to its much greater depth, which is at least 80 feet near Van and still more along the south side. The lake stands about 5400 feet above sea-level on the south Armenian platcau, which is en- circled by the lofty ranges that bifurcate west and south from Ararat and culminate in the Sipan-Dagh (12,000 feet) on the north side of the lake. These mountains are clad with dense forests of beech, chestnut, ash, and walnut, while the broad fertile belt be- tween their base and the lake is planted with melon gardens and orchards of plums, peaches, apricots, figs, and pomegranates, festooned with a vine which yields a palatable wine.

5A. VAN—VAN

Lake Van, which is too brackish to be drinkable for man or beast, is inhabited by a species of blay or bleak, which abound especially about the mouths of the influents, and coine to the surface when the spring floods spread over the heavier saline layers. This lake is a completely land-locked basin, or at least has no visible ontlet. But the natives speak of underground channels through which it communicates south-westwards with the head-waters of the Tigris, attributing to the occasional obstruction of these

chanuels the great oscillations of level that have undoubtedly occurred in past and recent times. In the 17th century and again about 1840 the water rose from 10 to 12 feet, and is even now (1888) rising. Lake Erchek perhaps marks its extreme eastern limit in former times. Lake Van is also indirectly connected with the Euphrates through the little Lake of Nazik, which lies west of the Sipan-Dagh, on the water-parting between the lacustrian and fluvial basins, and which bya rare phenomenon sends emissaries to both. The narrow part of Lake Van, which runs for nearly 40 miles towards the north-east, and gives the lake somewhat the appearance of a frying- pan, is very shallow, aud was once, according to tradition, a fertile plain. The lake is not regularly navigated. Scattered along the south-east shore are a few picturesque islets, one of which, Aktamar, is the seat of an Armenian patriarch.

VANADIUM, a rare element discovered in 1830 by Sefstrém, when analysing a kind of iron obtained from the ores of Taberg in Sweden. Berzelius, in the course of an extensive investigation on vanadium, came to the conclu- sion that it is analogous to chromium, forming like it an acid trioxide, VanO,, in which "Van" signifies 134°41 parts of a radical analogous to the Cr=52 parts of chromium in chromic acid, CrO,. He succeeded in isolat- ing this radical, and, as it exhibited semi-metallic proper- ties, he had no doubt that it was the element vanadium itself. His results were universally adopted as correct until Roscoe (in 1867) found that Berzelius's vanadium is an oxide containing O,=32 parts of oxygen per Van, whence it followed that the presumed trioxide, VanO,, is really a pentoxide, V,O;, where V, = 2 × 51:2 = 2 atoms of the real element. Our present knowledge of vanadium is based chiefly upon his investigations. Of vanadium minerals, which are all very rare, we name two only,— mottramite, (Pb,Cu),(VO,).+ 2(Pb,Cu)(OH),, and vanadinite, 3Pb, (VO,).+PbCl,. This last is amorphous with apatite, which previous to Roscoe's discovery was difficult to explain. See Curmisrry, vol. v. p. 539.

Traces of vanadium arc found in certain iron ores and in many other minerals. Roscoe utilized a kind of sandstone from Alderley Edge and Mottram in Cheshire which contains a small admixture of mottramite. Another suitable material is the "Bohnerz" of Steinlade and Haverloh, essentially a hydrated ferric oxide. For the extraction of vanadium from this

latter mineral Wohler recom- mends the following method. The finely powdered mineral is mixed with one-third of its weight of nitre and the mixture kept at a dull red heat foran hour. The ignited mass is powdered and lixiviated with water, which extracts the potash salts of the oxides V,O,,CrO,, MoO;, As,O;,P20;, and SiO,. The filtered solution is almost neu- tralized with nitric acid, but not completely, or else some of the V,0; would be reduced by the nitrous acid to lower oxides; and the vanadic and most of the other acids named are precipitated as baryta salts by addition of chloride of barium. From the washed precipitate the acids are liberated by boiling dilute sulphuric acid, and the sulphate of baryta is filtered off. The solution is neutralized with ammonia, concentrated by evaporation, and, after cooling, kept in contact with a solid piece of sal-ammoniac more than sufficient to saturate the solution with this salt. Meta-vanadate of ammonia, V,0;(NH4).0, being characteristically insoluble in sal-ammoniac solution, separates out as a yellowish crystalline precipitate. This is collected, washed with sal-ammoniac solution and after that with alcohol, and purified by re-crystallization or otherwise. The pure salt when heated to dull redness leaves the pentoxide, V.O; (vanadic acid), as a red liquid, which freezes into a red-brown crystalline mass of sp. gr. 3°35 (J. J. Watts). It dissolves in about 1000 parts of water, forming a yellow solution which reddens litmus. The pentoxide, though capable of uniting with strong acids, ¢.g., with sulphuric into a salt, V.0,(SO,)3, behaves on the whole as an acid oxide analogous in its combining habits to phosphoric (see Puos- PHORUS, Vol. xviii. p. 818, and CuEmisTRy, vol. v. p- 540). Solu- tions of vanadates are easily recognized : on addition of mineral acid they assume the yellow colour characteristic of the pentoxide, and if the mixture is then kept in contact with zinc it passes through all shades of (intense) green till it ultimately assumes a lavender

1 Calculated from our present constants.

colour. The solution then contains a chloride corresponding to the oxide V,O, (Berzelius's metal). It absorbs atmospheric oxygen with an extraordinary degree of avidity, assuming, in the absence of free acid, a dark brown colour. An acidified vanadate solution, if shaken with peroxide of hydrogen and ether, furnishes a dark red reduction product, which passes into the ethereal layer. One part of vanadic acid in 40,000 parts of water

can thus be rendered distinctly visible (Werther). Ifa mixture of the pentoxide and charcoal is heated in dry chlorine, it is converted into an oxychloride, VOC], (tri- chloride of Berzelius), which distils over and may be purified by re-distillation over sodium. It is a canary-yellow mobile liquid, freezing below —15° C. and boiling at 126°:7 C., and its sp. gr. at 14°C, is 1:841. Water decomposes it with formation of hydrochloric acid and pentoxide V,O,;. If the vapour of this chloride is passed over red-hot charcoal in a current of chlorine, the tetrachloride VCl, is produced as a dark brown liquid, boiling at about 154°C. A mixture of the vapour of this chloride with hydrogen, when passed through a dull-red-hot tube, yields (more or less of 'sesqui-" chloride, V.Cl,, and) the dichloride VCl,, which, if pure, forms apple-green, niica-like, hexagonal plates. From this dichloride Roscoe for the first timc prepared the true metal by heating it to redness in hydrogen gas, a simple enough method in theory, but in practice one of the most difficult of operations, becanse the dichloride is very difficult to prepare and highly hygroscopic, and because the metal is extremely prone to take up oxygen. Even the purest product which Roscoe succeeded in obtaining contained an appreciable admixture of oxide. Vanadium is a light grey powder, which under the microscope appears crystalline and ex- hibits a silvery lustre, sp. gr. =5°5. Of its chemical properties the nost remarkable is that it combines directly with nitrogen gas, Ne, into a bronze-coloured nitride, VN.

Rare and expensive as vanadium is, it has found a practical application in the production of aniline black. The black is produced from aniline by the action of chloric acid, aided by the presence of some oxygen carrier. Sulphide of copper is usually employed ; but, as Lightfoot found, a mere trace of vanadic acid (or vanadate of ammonia) acts more energetically than any other available agent. According to Witz, 1 part of vanadic acid suffices for 67,000 parts of aniline salt. ;

VANBRUGH, Sir Jonn (1666 21-1726), dramatist and architect, was the son of a wealthy sugar-baker in Cheshire and grandson of a Protestant refugee of Ghent. From a passage in one of his letters to Tonson it might be sup- posed that he was born in the Bastille, though in what year is uncertain, probably in 1666. He was educated in France, but what he learnt there, whether architecture or merely that art of good-fellowship which he

found to be the true Aladdin's lamp of social life, is a question that will be variously answered by those who, like Sir Joshua Reynolds, admire Blenheim and Castle Howard, and those who, like the wits of Vanbrugh's time, scoff at them. This, however, is certain, that after his return from the Continent to England what he did was, not to pursue architecture, but to work, with a gusto and a success that are humor- ous and exhilarating, the " Aladdin's lamp" above men- tioned, His first step towards becoming a power in society was, of course, to enter the army. Perhaps, however, had he begun life in any other way his advance would have been just as rapid. For, strong as are social conditions, character is stronger still, and Vanbrugh's equipment—wit, tempered by good humour, a genuine feeling of comrade- ship, an exceedingly fine presence (according to Noble's description), and a winsome face (according to Kneller's portrait)—would, under any circumstances, have been ir- resistible. One of the points of difference between the dialogue in Vanbrugh's comedies and the dialogue in the comedies of Congreve is this: we feel that the characters in the Relapse and the Confederacy talk as Vanbrugh must

'have talked ; we feel that the characters in the Old Bachelor

and the Way of the World talk, not as Congreve talked, but as Congreve wrote. We feel that, while such dazzling sword-play as Congreve's would in society have chilled, even as it illumined the air, talk so hearty, good-humoured, frank, and daring as that we get in Vanbrugh's plays would have made the fortune of any man of fashion, made \t as certainly at a Roman supper party in the time of Augustus as at a London drinking-bout in the days of

Va & B UeG

Queen Anne. It is no wonder then that he was a favourite, no wonder that the two best haters of the time, Swift and Pope, tried in vain to hate the "man of wit and honour," Vanbrugh. During the martial period of his life, Van- brugh wrote the first sketches of the elapse and the Pro- voked Wife. These he showed to Sir Thomas Skipworth, one of the shareholders of Drury Lane, and with fortunate results.

In 1695 he was offered—whether through the court interest which he had secured or whether because he really had acquired a knowledge of architecture in France is not known—the post of secretary to the commission for en- dowing Greenwich Hospital. He accepted the post, and by way of fulfilling his functions as an architect turned his attention to the amours of " Lord Foppington." His Relapse or Virtue in Danger, a sequel to Colley Cibber's Love's Last Shift, was produced at Drury Lane in 1697. When a comic dramatist of the school of Wycherley con- fesses that the fine gentleman of his play, '" drinking his mistresses' health in Nantes brandy from six in the morn- ing to the time he waddled on upon the stage in the evening, had toasted himself up to such a pitch of vigour " that something too outrageous even for such an audience seemed imminent, we may assume that he has enjoyed a satisfactory first night. The success was so triumphant that Montague, afterwards Lord Halifax, asked at once for the Provoked Wife for the theatre in Lincoln's Inn Fields, and—Skipworth waiving, for the advantage of Vanbrugh, his own claim upon the play—it was produced at that theatre in the following year. All that could be said in answer to those who condemned it on account of its un- blushing libertinism was that Sir John Brute is sufficiently brutal to drive any woman into rebellion, and that since the glorious days of the Restoration a wife's rebellion and a wife's adultery were synonymous terms. The play was a complete triumph.

And now, having succeeded as a man of fashion, as an architectural commissioner, and as a comic dramatist of the school of Wycherley, Vanbrugh turned his attention to morals. Though sop—produced at Drury Lane in the same year as the Provoked Wife—was an adaptation of Boursault's dramatic sermon on the same subject, it was an improvement on the French play. As usual with Vanbrugh, who never did things by halves, he surpassed the Frenchman on that very point where the Frenchman had been pronounced unsurpassable. Just as in the Re- lapse, when he aspired to be merry, his merriment had en- tirely surpassed that of Cibber's play, of which his own was meant to be a sequel, and just as afterwards, when in Castle Howard and Blenheim he aspired to rival in mass- iveness the " thick rotundity of the earth," he laid on her a structure only a "few tons lighter than herself," so now, when he aspired to surpass the Frenchman in gravity, he achieved a kind of dulness compared with which the owl- like

dulness of Boursault was as the wit of Voltaire. Ina word, the humour of the piece lies in the fact that it was written by the author of the Melapse and the Provoked Wife. The play ran during a week only. Vanbrugh, accepting the failure with his usual good-temper, seems then to have turned his attention completely to archi- tecture ; for the adaptation in 1700 of the Pilgrim of Beaumont and Fletcher, and the production in 1702 of A False Friend, could hardly have engaged his serious efforts at all, so perfunctory are they and so inferior to all that he had done before.

Castle Howard in Yorkshire, which he had built for the earl of Carlisle, was a great success so far as pleasing his patron went, who as a reward gave him yet another open- ing in life by presenting him,—the most ignorant man perhaps in England of heraldry, judging from the fun he

niade of the appointment,—with the tabard of Clarencieux king-at-arms. But, if the dangerous moment in every man's life is when he has just scored a brilliant success, it is especially so with genial glowing natures like Vanbrugh's. It seems to have been the success of Castle Howard that caused him to entertain the rash project of building a theatre, from his own design, for the acting of his own plays. The joyous courage with which, having persuaded thirty people in the fashionable world to aid him in finding the money, and Congreve to aid him in finding the plays, he began to build in perfect unconsciousness of the danger before him is the only passage in his life which may be called pathetic, save of course his struggle with the "wicked woman of Marlborough." No doubt any archi- tect who builds a theatre is always in danger of letting his ideas run riot in the wide field of experiment, but he who builds a theatre for his own plays seems doomed by the malice aforethought of fate. The magnitude of Van- brugh's architectural ideas grew as the work went on, and with the ideas the structure grew till a theatre meant for the delicate bijouterie work of polite comedy seemed grow- ing to the proportions of the Roman Colosseum. Whether Congreve endeavoured to put a check upon his friend's architectural and authorial fervour does not appear. But it must be remembered that not only Vanbrugh's plays but his own were to be acted there, and that, although Congreve was a man of great sagacity, no man,

not even he who pretended to set his gentility above his genius, is sagacious when confronted by the surpassing excellence of his own poems and plays.

When at length the time came to test the acoustics of the pile, it was found to be sadly defective. What changes were made to rectify the errors of structure does not appear. The theatre was opened to the public with an Italian opera, which was followed by three of Moliére's comedies, and these by the Confederacy, Vanbrugh's masterpiece on the whole, though perhaps its finest scenes are not equal to the finest scenes in the Relapse.

Vanbrugh at last withdrew from the disastrous specula- tion ; Congreve had already withdrawn. But a man to whom fortune had been so kind as she had been to Van- brugh could hardly be depressed by any of her passing frowns. Queen Anne at once sent him abroad on an important state errand, and afterwards he was commis- sioned to build Blenheim. Upon the merits and demerits of this famous "hollowed quarry" there has been much conflict of opinion. As to the sarcasms by Swift, Walpole, Evans, and the rest, they are as nothing when set against Sir Joshua Reynolds's defence of Vanbrugh and his style. For in England the general sense for architecture seems to be even rarer than the general sense for poetry and painting. The truth is that Vanbrugh imported largely into architecture what in all the plastic arts should be allowed to fructify but sparsely, namely, literary ideas, and even these literary ideas of his seem to lack that fusion which we see in the works of the great masters. Hence, impressive as are the parts, they do not form an impressive whole. Blenheim, however, was a source of great sorrow to the kindly dramatist. Though Parliament had voted for the building of it, no provision had been made for the supplies. The queen while she lived paid them, and then Vanbrugh was left to the meanness of the duke of Marlborough and afterwards to the insolence of the "wicked woman," who did her best to embitter his life. Besides Castle Howard and Blenheim, he built many other country mansions, such as Grimsthorpe and Duncombe Hall in Yorkshire, Eastbury in Dorsetshire, Seaton-Delaval in Northumberland, King's Weston near Bristol, Oulton Hall in Cheshire, &c.

About the end of 1710 Vanbrugh married Henrietta

Maria, daughter of Colonel Yarborough of Haslington, and four years afterwards, at the accession of George I. he was knighted. He afterwards wrote again for the stage, and the unfinished fragment left at his death, which took place on 26th March 1726 at his house in Scotland Yard, London, shows that his powers remained to the last as fine as ever.

In order to find and fix Vanbrugh's place among English comic dramatists, an examination of the very basis of the comedy of repartee inaugurated by Etheredge would be necessary, and, of course, such an examination would be impossible here. It is chiefly as a humorist, however, that he demands attention. .

Given the humorous temperament—the temperament which impels a man to get his enjoyment by watching the harlequinade of life, and contrasting it with his own ideal standard of good sense, which the harlequinade seems to him to mock and challenge —given this temperament, then the quality of its humorous growths depends of course on the quality of the intellectual forces by means of which the temiperament gains expression. Hence it is very likely that in original endowment of humour, as distinguished from wit, Vanbrugh was superior to Congreve. And this is saying a great deal: for, while Congreve's wit has always been made much of, it has, since Maeaulay's time, been the fashion among critics to do less than justice to his humour,—a humour which, in such scenes as that in Love for Love whcre Sir Sampson Legend dis- courses upon the human appetites and functions, moves beyond the humour of convention and passes into natural humour. It is, however, in spontaneity, in a kind of lawless merrimeut, almost Aristophanic in its verve, that Vanbrugh's humour seems so deep and so fine, seems indeed to spring from a fountain deeper and finer and rarer than Congreve's. A comedy of wit, like every other drama, is a story told by action and dialogue, but to tell a story lucidly and rapidly by means of repartee is exceedingly difficult, not but that it is easy enough to producc repartee. But in comic dialogue the difficulty is to move rapidly and yet keep up the brilliant ball-throwing demanded in this form, and without lucidity and rapidity no drama, whether of repartee or of character, can live. Ktheredge, the father of the comedy of repartee, has at length had justice done to him by Mr Gosse. Not only could Etheredge tell a story by means of repartee alone: he could produce a tableau too ; so could

Congreve, and so also could Vanbrugh, but often—far too often—Vanbrugh's tableau is reached, not by fair means, as in the tableau of Congreve, but by a surrendering of probability, by a sacrifice of artistic fusion, by an inartistic mingling of comedy and farce, such as Congreve never indulges in. Jeremy Collier was perfectly right therefore in his strictures upon the farcical improbabilities of the Relapse. So farcical indeed are the tableaux in that play that the broader portions of it were (as Mr Swinburne discovered) adapted by Voltaire and acted at Sceaux as a farce. Had we space here to contrast the Relapse with the Way of the World, we should very likely come upon a distinction between comedy and faree such as has never yet been drawn. We should find that farce is not comedy with a broadened grin—Thalia with her girdle loose and run wild—as the critics seem to assume. We should find that the difference between the two is not one of degree at all, but rather one of kind, and that mere breadth of fun has nothing to do with the question. No doubt the fun of comedy may be as broad as that of farce, as is shown indeed by the celebrated Dogberry scenes in Much Ado about Nothing aud by the scene in Love for Love between Sir Sampson Legend and his son, alluded to above; but here, as in every other de- partment of art, all depends upon the quality of the imaginative belief that the artist seeks to arrest and seeure. Of comedy the breath of life is dramatic illusion. Of farce the breath of life is inock illusion. Comedy, whether broad or genteel, pretends that its mimicry is real. Farce, whether broad or genteel, makes no such pretence, but by a thousand tricks, which it keeps up between itself and the audience, says, " My acting is all sham, and you know it." Now, while Vanbrugh was apt too often to forget this the fundamental dilference between comedy and faree, Congreve never forgot it, Wycherley rarely. Not that there should be in any literary form any arbitrary laws. There is no arbitrary law de- claring that comedy shall not be mingled with farce, and yet the fact is that in vital drama they cannot be so mingled. The very laws of their existence are in conflict with each other, so much so that where one lives the other must die, as we see in the draina of our own day. The fact seems to be that probability of incident, logical sequence of cause and effect, are as necessary to comedy as they are to tragedy, while farce would stiflein such anair. Rather it would be poisoned by it, just as comedy is poisoned by what farce flourishes on, that is to say, inconsequence of reasoning — topsy-turvy logic. Born in the fairy country of topsy-turvy, the logic of farce would be

illogical if it were not upside-down. So with coincidence, with improbable accumulation of convenient events, — farce can no more exist without these than comedy can exist with

Yaw V & W

them. Hence we affirm that Jeremy Collier's strictures on the farcical adulterations of the Relapse pierce more deeply into Van- brugh's art than do the criticisms of Leigh Hunt and Hazlitt. In other words, perhaps the same lack of fusion which mars Van- brugh's architectural ideas mars also his comedy. CI Wid)

VAN BUREN, Martin (1782-1862), eighth president of the United States, was the son of a small farmer, and was born 5th December 1782 at Kinderhook, Columbia, New York State, on the banks of the Hudson. He was educated at the village school, and, entering on the study of law at the age of fourteen, was called to the bar in 1803. Possess- ing in addition to his other abilities a peculiar power of winning personal trust and influence, his rise both in his profession and political reputation was rapid. In 1808 he was chosen surrogate of Columbia county, and in 1812 a member of the State legislature. From 1815 to 1819 he was attorney-general of the State, and during this period came to be recognized as the ruling spirit of the new Demo- cratic school known as the Albany regency. In 1821 he was chosen to the United States senate and the same year was elected a member of the convention for revising the State constitution, in which, though advocating an extension of the franchise, he opposed universal suffrage. In 1828 he was appointed governor of New York State. From March 1829 to April 1831 he was secretary of state in the administration of President Jackson, of whom he was the chief political adviser. During the recess he was appointed minister to England; but, on the ground that he had previously shown a too submissive attitude towards that country, and also a tendency to be influenced in his foreign predilections by home politics, the senate refused to ratify the appointment. In the following year he was, however, chosen vice-president of the United States, and in 1837 he succeeded Jackson as president. He entered upon office at the time of a severe commercial crisis (see UNITED Srates), and, although the methods he adopted to deal with it were in themselves admirable, the financial strain

which existed during his term of office weakened for a time the influence of his party. Besides the establishment of the independent treasury system, Van Buren's name isassociated with the pre-emption law giving settlers on public lands the preference in their purchase. On the expiry of his term of office he was again, in 1840, nominated for the presidency, but lost by a large majority. In 1844 a major- ity of the delegates to the Democratic convention were pledged to support him, but on account of his opposition to the annexation of Texas they allowed a motion to be introduced making a two-thirds vote necessary for nomina- tion. This he failed to obtain and his name was with- drawn. In 1848 he was nominated by the anti-slavery section of his party, but the split caused the defeat of both Democratic candidates. The remainder of his life was spent chiefly in retirement on his estate at Kinderhook. In 1853-55 he went on a European tour. He died at Kinderhook, 24th July 1862. His Inquiry into the Origin and Course of Political Parties in the United States was published by his sons in 1867.

See W. Allen Butler, Martin Van Buren, Lawyer, Statesman, and Man, New York, 1862.

VANCOUVER, George (c. 1758-1798), English navi- gator, was born about 1758. He entered the navy at the age of thirteen, and accompanied Cook in his second (1772-74) and third (1776-79) voyages of discovery. After serving for several years on the Jamaica station, Vancouver was appointed to command an expedition to the north-west coast of America, the object being to take over from the Spaniards their territory in that region, and to explore the coast from 30° N. lat. round to Cook's Inlet (or river as it was then called), with a view to the discovery of an eastward passage to the great lakes in the British dominions. The special point which he had to

ascertain was whether the Strait of Juan de Fuca really was a strait. Vancouver, accompanied by Lieutenant Broughton, left Falmouth on Ist April 1791, and, after spending some weeks at the Cape, made for the coast of Australia, where a very careful survey of the south-west coast was made, especially of King George's Sound, the value of which as a harbour Vancouver pointed out. He next made for Dusky Bay, New Zealand. After a short stay, he proceeded north-east, discovered the little island of Oparo

(27° 36’S. lat. and 144° 12’ W. long.) by the way, and on 30th December reached Tahiti, where he was again joined by Lieutenant Broughton, who meanwhile had discovered Chatham Island. After staying about three weeks at Tahiti and several weeks at the Sandwich Islands, Vancouver on 18th April 1792 sighted the west coast of North America (California, then known as New Albion) in 39° 27’ N. lat. Here he proceeded to examine the coast up to 52° 18’ N. lat. with minute care, surveying all inlets and navigating the passage through Juan de Fuca which separates the Island of Vancouver from the main- land. Most of February and March 1793 was spent again at the Sandwich Islands, with the natives of which Van- couver had much intercourse, and in the affairs of which he took much interest. In April he resumed his explora- tion of the coast, which he examined and surveyed as far north as 56° N. lat. Part of the autumn was spent in visiting the Spanish settlements in New California, and surveying the coast and coast region as far south as 35° N. lat. From January to the beginning of March Van- couver’s headquarters were again at the Sandwich Islands, the cession of which to Great Britain he accepted, though the cession seems never to have been officially ratified. Quitting the Sandwich Islands again about the middle of March 1784, Vancouver made direct for Cook’s Inlet by Tchernigoff Island and Kodiak Island. Cook’s Inlet was carefully explored and the fact established that it was not ariver. The coast eastwards and southwards was surveyed as far as the limit of the former voyages. After spending some time about Nootka and visiting some parts of the coast, Vancouver set out homewards in the middle of October 1794. Several points were examined and sur- veyed on the west coast of America on the way south- wards, including Cape St Lucas, the southern point of Lower California. After touching at Cocos Island and making a somewhat careful examination of the Galapagos Islands, Vancouver continued his voyage by way of Cape Horn, finally entering the mouth of the Shannon on 13th September 1795. He immediately set about the prepara- tion of the narrative of his voyage, but died at Petersham in Surrey, 10th May 1798, before he had quite completed his task. Under the care of his brother the narrative was published in 1798 (3 vols. 4to), with a folio volume of magnificent maps and plates.

Vancouver’s work on the west and north-west coast of America was of the highest character, and has formed the basis of all sub- Sequent surveys. His

zeal led him to take an active share in all operations, aud the hardships he thus suffered tended no doubt to

shorten his life. Hewasa man of great tact, humanity, generosity, and uprightness of character.

VANCOUVER ISLAND, which is included in the territory of British Columbia, lies in a north-west and south-east direction parallel with the coast. From Wash- ington Territory (U.S.) on the south it is separated by Juan de Fuca Strait, which leads into the Gulf of Georgia and Johnstone's Strait on the east of the island, Queen Charlotte Sound entering this last from the north-west. These channels vary from 5 to 80 miles in width. The island extends from 48° 20' to 51° N. lat. and from 123° to 128° 30' W. long. Its length is about 250 miles and its breadth varies from 10 to 70. The area is estimated at from 12,000 to 16,000 square miles; but the island has

never been completely surveyed. The coast-line generally is precipitous. The west coast is much broken by bays and fringed with numerous reefs and islands, which render navigation somewhat dangerous. Barclay Sound on the south-west, Nootka Sound behind Nootka Island on the west, and Quatseenough Sound on the north-west send branches into the heart of the island. The east coast is much less broken, though the channel separating it from the mainland is studded with islands. Vancouver generally is mountainous, with peaks rising from 6000 to 9000 feet. There are some level areas on the south-east coast, while in the interior a few narrow well-watered valleys are suitable for agriculture. Short streams run down both coasts, and the island is dotted with lakes,—Buttle and Dickson in the centre, Cowichan in the south, and Niin- kish in the north. The mountains, much broken, run generally along the length of the island, the highest peaks (estimated at 9000 feet) being south-east of Nootka Sound, while farther to the north are Victoria Peak (7484 feet) and Mount Alston (6500 feet). To the south of Buttle Lake, Mount Albert Edward rises to 6968 feet. The mountains in the south of the island are generally lower.

The island is essentially a mountain range composed of nietamorphic and trappean rocks, fringed by a belt of Carboniferous limestones and other

sedimentary deposits. Among the metamorphic and erupted rocks are gneiss and killas or clayslate, permeated by quartz veins, quartz and hornblende rocks, compact bituminous slate, highly crys- talline felspathic traps, and semi-crystalline concretionary limestone. Among the sedimentary rocks are sandstones and stratified limestones, fine and coarse grits, conglom- erates, and fossiliferous limestones, shales, &c., associated with seams of coal. The country is strewn with erratic boulders and other marks of Glacial action. So far as is known at present the chief mineral resource is coal, which is worked in large quantities at Nanaimo on the east coast, and in quality is reputed the best on the whole Pacific coast. While limited areas in the south-east of the island and in the inland valleys are well adapted to agriculture (about 300,000 acres in all), and while farming is carried on to some extent, the country is too mountainous ever to develop agriculture on any large scale. The mountains are, however, covered with forests, mainly the Douglas pine, yielding splendid supplies of timber. These forests, with its coal and its fisheries, may be regarded as the chief resources of the island. The climate of Vancouver, especially in the south, is wonderfully mild for the latitude, as mild as that of Great Britain, with drier summers. The mean temperature of December at Victoria, in the south of the island, is about 38° Fahr., while that of July is 53°. A rainfall of 35°87 inches in the year has been recorded at Esquimault. In the northern parts and in the west the climate gets much more severe, and there the rainfall is greater than on the south and east coasts. Cereals of all kinds, all fruits of the temperate zone, pulse, and vegetables flourish on the patches suited to agricul- ture, while cattle and sheep can be easily reared in small numbers. The population of the island in 1881 was 9991, of whom 5925 lived in the city of Victoria. In 1887 the population was estimated at 25,000 (19,000 whites and Chinese, and 6000 Indians).

The capital of the island is Victoria (qg.v.). Three and a half miles to the west of Victoria is the town of Esquimault at the head of Parry Bay. There has been a British Admiralty station here for many years, the harbour having an average depth of from 6 to 8 fathoms. There are Government offices, two churches, a public school, and various other buildings. The Canadian Government has constructed a dry dock, 450 feet long, 26 feet deep, and 65 feet wide at the entrance. The completion of the Canadian

Pacific Rail- way renders Esquimault of increasing importance. Seventy-three miles north of Victoria and counected with it by railway is the town

of Nanaimo, the centre of the coal mining industry ; the average output of coal in the five years ending 1887 was 250,000 tons per annum. 'The mines employ about 1100 men. There are a good harbour and wharves. The population in 1887 was estimated at 4000. There are smaller communities in the island, mainly in the south corner. Sixty miles north-west of Nanaimo is Comox, the chief centre of the lumber industry. On the mainland, opposite Nanaimo, on a peninsula to the south of Burrard's Inlet, a city named Vancouver has recently been formed (incorporated 1886) at the terminus of the Canadian Pacific Railway.

History.—Vancouver Island was discovered by Juan de Fuca in 1592. In 1778 Captain Cook roughly surveyed the coast, this work being extended by Captain Vancouver, who surveyed the Strait of Juan de Fuca and the Gulf of Georgia. The first settlement on the island was made by the Hudson's Bay Company on the site of Victoria in 1843. Six years later Vancouver Island was constituted a colony. Its union with British Columbia was effected in 1866.

VANDALS. The Vandals, one of the leading Teutonic nations that overthrew the Roman empire, were of the Low German stock and closely allied to the Goths. We first hear of them in the time of Pliny and Tacitus as occupy- ing a district nearly corresponding to Brandenburg and Pomerania. From thence, in the 2d century, they pressed southwards to the confines of Bohemia, where they gave their name to the mountains now called the Riesengebirge. After a century of hostile and desultory operations against the Roman empire, having been signally defeated by Aurelian (271), they made peace with Rome, one of the conditions being that they should supply 2000 /aderate to the imperial army. Sixty years later they sustained a great defeat from the Goths under their king Geberich, after which they humbly sought and obtained permission from Constantine to settle as Roman subjects within the province of Pannonia. Here they remained seventy

years, and during this period they probably made some advances in civilization and became Christians of the Arian type. In 406, when the empire under Honorius was falling into ruin, they crossed the Rhine and entered Gaul. Stilicho, the chief adviser of Honorius, who was a man of Vandal extraction, was accused by his enemies of having invited them into the empire, but this is probably a groundless calumny. Franks, in which they were defeated with the loss of 2000 men, and their king Godigisclus was slain. In 409 his son Gunderic led them across the Pyrenees. They appear to have settled in Spain in two detachments. One, the Asdingian Vandals, occupied Galicia, the other, the Sil- ingian, Andalusia. 'Twenty years of bloody and purpose- less warfare with the armies of the empire and with their fellow-barbarians, the Goths and the Suevi, followed. The Silingian Vandals were well-nigh exterminated, but their Asdingian brethren (with whom were now associated the remains of a Turanian people, the Alans, who had been utterly defeated by the Goths) marched across Spain and took possession of Andalusia.

In 428 or 429 the whole nation set sail for Africa, upon an invitation received by their king from Bonifacius, count of Africa, who had fallen into disgrace with the court of Ravenna. Gunderic was now dead and supreme power was in the hands of his bastard brother, who is generally known in history as Genseric, though the more correct form of his name is Gaiseric. This man, short of stature and with limping gait, but with a great natural capacity for war and dominion, reckless of human life and unrestrained by conscience or pity, was for fifty years the hero of the Vandal race and the terror of Constantinople and Rome. In the month of May 428 (?) he assembled all his people on the shore of Andalusia, and numbering the males among them from the graybeard down to the newborn infant found them to amount to 80,000 souls. The passage was effected in the ships of Bonifacius, who, however, soon re- turning to his old loyalty, besought his new allies to depart from Africa. They, of course, refused, and Bonifacius

In Gaul they fought a great battle with the.

turned against them, too late, however, to repair the mis- chief which he had caused. Notwithstanding his opposi- tion the progress of the Vandals was rapid, and by May 430 only three cities of Roman Africa—Carthage, Hippo,

and Cirta—remained untaken. The long siege of Hippo (May 430 to July 431), memorable for the last illness and death of St Augustine, which occurred during its progress, ended unsuccessfully for the Vandals. At length (30th January 435) peace was made between the emperor Valentinian III. and Genseric. The emperor was to retain Carth- age and the small but rich proconsular province in which it was situated, while Hippo and the other six provinces of Africa were abandoned to the Vandal. Genseric ob-

*served this treaty no longer than suited his purpose. On_*

the 19th of October 439, without any declaration of war, he suddenly attacked Carthage and took it. The Vandal occupation of this great city, the third among the cities of the Roman empire, lasted for ninety-four years. Gen- seric seems to have counted the years of his sovereignty from the date of its capture. Though most of the remain- ing years of Genseric's life were passed in war, plunder rather than territorial conquest seems to have been the object of his expeditions. He made, in fact, of Carthage a pirate's stronghold, from whence he issued forth, like the Barbary pirates of a later day, to attack, as he himself said, "the dwellings of the men with whom God is angry," leaving the question who those men might be to the decision of the elements. Almost alone among the Teutonic invaders of the empire he set himself to form a powerful fleet, and was probably for thirty years the leading mari- time power in the Mediterranean. Genseric's celebrated expedition against Rome (455), undertaken in response to the call of Eudoxia, widow of Valentinian, was only the greatest of his marauding exploits. He took the city without difficulty, and for fourteen days, in a calm and business-like manner, emptied it of all its movable wealth. The sacred vessels of the Jewish temple, brought to Rome by Titus, are said to have been among the spoils carried to Carthage by the conqueror. Eudoxia and her two daughters were also carried into captivity. One of the princesses, Eudocia, was married to Huneric, eldest son of Genseric ; her mother and sister, after long and tedious negotiations, were sent to Constantinople.

There does not seem to be in the story of the capture of Rome by the Vandals any justification for the charge of wilful and objectless destruction of public buildings which is implied in the word "vandalism." It is probable that this

charge grew out of the fierce persecution which was carried on by Genseric and his son against the Catholic Christians, and which is the darkest stain on their charac- ters. This persecution is described with great vividness, and no doubt with some exaggeration, by the nearly con- temporary Victor Vitensis. Churches were burned; bishops and priests were forced by cruel and revolting tortures to reveal the hiding-places of the sacred vessels; the rich provincials who were employed about the court, and who still adhered to the Catholic faith, were racked and beaten, and put to death. The bishops were almost universally banished, and the congregations were forbidden to elect their successors, so that the greater part of the churches of Africa remained '"' widowed" for a whole generation. In 475, at the very close of Genseric's life, by a treaty concluded with the Eastern emperor, the bishops were permitted to return. There was then a short lull in the persecution ; but on the death of Genseric (477) and the accession of Huneric (a bitter Arian, made more rancorous by the orthodoxy of his wife Eudocia) it broke out again with greater violence than ever, the ferocity of Huneric being more thoroughly stupid and brutal than the calcu- lating cruelty of his father.

VAN—VAWN

On the death of Huneric (484) he was succeeded by his cousin Gunthamund, Genseric having established seniority among his own descendants as the law of succession to his throne. Gunthamund (484-496) and his brother Thrasa- mund (496-523), though Arians, abated some of the rigour of the persecution, and maintained the external credit of the monarchy. Internally, however, it was rapidly declining, the once chaste and hardy Vandals being demoralized by the fervid climate of Africa and the sinful delights of their new capital, and falling ever lower into sloth, effeminacy, and vice. On the death of Thrasamund, Hilderic (523- 531), the son of Huneric and Eudocia, at length succeeded to the throne. He adhered to the creed of his mother rather than to-that of his father; and, in spite of a solemn oath sworn to his predecessor that he would not restore the Catholic churches to their owners, he at once pro- ceeded to do so and to recall the bishops. Hilderic, elderly, Catholic, and timid, was very unpopular with his subjects, and after a reign of eight years he was thrust into prison by his warlike cousin Gelimer (531-534).

The wrongs of Hilderic, a Catholic, and with the blood of Theodosius in his veins, afforded to Justinian a long- coveted pretext for overthrowing the Vandal dominion, the latent weakness of which was probably known to the statesmen of Constantinople. A great expedition under the command of Belisarius (in whose train was the his- torian Procopius) sailed from the Bosphorus in June 533, and after touching at Catana in Sicily finally reached Africa in the beginning of September. Gelimer, who was strangely ignorant of the plans of Justinian, had sent his brother Tzazo with some of his best troops to quell a re- bellion in Sardinia (that island as well as the Balearic Isles forming part of the Vandal dominions), and the land- ing of Belisarius was entirely unopposed. He marched rapidly towards Carthage and on the 13th of September was confronted by Gelimer at Ad Decimum, 10 miles from Carthage. The battle did not reflect any great credit either on Byzantine or Vandal generalship. It was in fact a series of blunders on both sides, but Belisarius made the fewest and victory remained with him. On the 14th of September 533 the imperial general entered Carthage and ate the feast prepared in Gelimer's palace for its lord. Belisarius, however, was too late to save the life of Hilderic, who had been slain by his rival's orders as soon as the news came of the landing of the imperial army. Still Gelimer with many of the Vandal warriors was at liberty. On the return of Tzazo from Sardinia a force was collected considerably larger than the imperial army, and Gelimer met Belisarius in battle at a place about twenty miles from Carthage, called Tricamarum (December 533). This battle was far more stubbornly contested than that of Ad Deci- mum, but it ended in the utter rout of the Vandals and the flight of Gelimer. He took refuge in a mountain fortress called Pappua on the Numidian frontier, and there, after enduring great hardships in the squalid dwellings of the Moors, surrendered to his pursuers in March 534. The well-known stories of his laughter when he was in- troduced to Belisarius, and his chant, '"'Vanitas vanitatum," when he walked before the triumphal car of his conqueror through the streets of Constantinople, probably point to an intellect disordered by his reverses and hardships. The Vandals who were carried captive to Constantinople were enlisted in five squadrons of cavalry and sent to serve against the Parthians under the title " Justiniani Vandali." Four hundred escaped to Africa and took part in a mutiny of the imperial troops which was with difficulty quelled by Belisarius (536). After this the Vandals disappear from history. The overthrow of their kingdom

undoubtedly rendered easier the spread of Saracen conquest along the northern shore of Africa in the following century. In this

as in many other fields Justinian sowed that Mohammed might reap.

Authorities.—Procopius, De Bello Vandatlico, a first-rate authority for contemporary events, must be used with caution for those which happened two or three generations before him. Consult especially i. 5 for the land settlement of Genseric, and also Victor Vitensis and Possidius (Vita Augustint) for the persecution of the Catholics. The chroniclers Idatius, Prosper, Victor Tunnunensis supply some facts. The Chronicon of Isidore adds little to our knowledge and is absurdly wrong in its chronology. Of modern treatises that of Papencordt (Gesch. d. Vandal. Herrschaft in Afrika) is the most complete. Consult also Dahn (Kénige der Germanen, part I.), Gibbon (chaps. xxxiii. aud xli.), and Hodgkin (Ltaly and her In- vaders, vols. ii. and iii.). (i)

VAN DER HELST. See Hetsr.

VANDEVELDE, Aprtan (1639-1672), animal and land- scape painter, a brother of William Vandevelde (see below), the marine painter, was born at Amsterdam in 1639. He was trained in the studio of Jan Wynants, the landscape painter, where he made the acquaintance of Philip Wouwer- man, who is believed to have aided him in his studies of animals, and to have exercised a powerful and beneficial influence upon his art. Having made exceptionally rapid progress, he was soon employed by his master to introduce figures into his landscape compositions, and he rendered a similar service to Hobbema, Ruysdael, Verboom, and other contemporary artists. His favourite subjects are scenes of open pasture land, with sheep, cattle, and goats, which he executed with adntirable dexterity, with much precision of touch and truth of draughtsmanship, and with clear silvery colouring. He painted a few small but ex- cellent winter scenes with skaters, and several religious subjects, such as the Descent from the Cross, for the Roman Catholic church in Amsterdam. In addition to his paintings, of which nearly two hundred have been cata- logued, he executed about twenty etchings, several of which appear from their dates to have been done

in his fourteenth year. They are simple but pleasing in tonality, and are distinguished by great directness of method, and by delicacy and certainty of touch. Adrian Vandevelde died at Amsterdam in January 1672.

VANDEVELDE, Witt1am (1633-1707), the younger, marine painter, a son of William Vandevelde, the elder, also a painter of sea-pieces, was born at Amsterdam im 1633. He was instructed by his father, and afterwards by Simon de Vlieger, a marine painter of repute at the time, and had achieved great celebrity by his art before he came to London. In 1674 he was engaged by Charles IL., at a salary of £100, to aid his father in "taking and making draughts of sea-fights," his part .of the work being to reproduce in colour the drawings of the elder Vandevelde. He was also patronized by the duke of York and by various members of the nobility. He died in London on 6th April 1707.

It seems probable that most of Vandevelde's finest works were executed before his residence in England, for they represent views off the coast of Holland, with Dutch shipping. His best produc- tions are delicate, spirited, and finished in handling, and correct in the drawing of the vessels and their rigging. The numerous figures are tellingly introduced, and the artist is successful in his renderings of sea, whether in calm or storm. His later productions are less carefully finished, and less pure and transparent in colour. Vandevelde was a most prolific artist : in addition to his paintings, of which Smith catalogues about three hundred and thirty, he executed an immense number of drawings, sketches, and studies, which are prized by collectors.

VAN DIEMEN'S LAND. See Tasmania.

VAN DYCK, Sir AntHony (1599-1641), painter, was born in Antwerp on 22d March 1599. Though the name of Van Dyck is frequently met with in the list of Antwerp painters, Anthony's pedigree cannot be traced beyond his grandparents, who were silk mercers of some standing. He was the seventh of twelve children of Francis Van Dyck, an Antwerp tradesman in good circumstances, and

|

not, as has been asserted, a painter on glass at Bois-le-Duc. His mother, Maria Cupers, who died when he was scarcely eight years of age, seems to have attained a certain degree of excellence in art needlework. Of the boy's early educa- tion nothing is known. He was little over ten when he was apprenticed to Henry Van Balen, the painter of many delicate little pictures, also an occasional collaborator of Rubens, and the master of Snyders. From a document discovered some twenty years ago in the state paper office at Brussels, relating to a lawsuit between a picture dealer and an Antwerp churchman, which arose out of the sale, in 1660, of a series of Apostles' heads ascribed to Van Dyck, it appears that, as far back as 1615, Van Dyck had worked independently, with pupils of his own, and that his pictures were greatly valued by artists and amateurs.' Before he was nineteen (February 1618) Van Dyck became a full member of the Antwerp guild of painters; and some idea of his ability at the time may be gained from the excellent portraits of an old lady and gentleman, ascribed till quite recently to Rubens, in the Dresden gallery (Nos. 854 and 855). Dated 1618, they were originally entered as works of Van Dyck, and, as Prof. Woermann observes, are undoubtedly the same as those spoken of by Mols in his MS. annotations on Walpole's Anecdotes, now in the library at Brussels. But the same admiration cannot be accorded to the earliest religious composition known to have been painted by him—Christ Falling under the Cross, in St Paul's at Antwerp. This picture, of some ten life-size figures, still preserved in the place for which it was originally destined, distinctly proves that from the outset of his career Van Dyck's power of conception was vastly inferior to his refined taste as a portrait painter. At first sight it would seem also that with him, as with most other Flemish painters of the period, every concep- tion, whether sacred or profane, needed to be cast in the mould of Rubens. It would be too much, however, to assert that Van Dyck at this timie stood under the guid- ance of that master; their association indeed does not seem to have begun until 1619, and Bellori (1672), who got his information from Sir Kenelm Digby, Van Dyck's bosom friend, tells us that he was first employed in making drawings (probably also chiaroscuros) for the use of the great master's engravers, and that among works of the kind one of the first was the Battle of the Amazons (1619).

In 1620 we know that Van Dyck was working with Rubens, for on 20th March, in making arrangements with the Antwerp Jesuits for the decoration of their church, the great master is allowed to avail himself of his pupil's assistance, and obtains for him the promise of a picture. This proof of Van Dyck's personal reputation is fully con- firmed (17th July) by a correspondent of the earl of Arundel, who speaks of Van Dyck as a young man of one and twenty whose works are scarcely less esteemed than those of his master, and adds that, his relations being people of considerable wealth, he could hardly be expected to leave his home. Van Dyck was, however, thus persuaded, for on 28th November Sir Toby Mathew mentions the artist's departure to Sir Dudley Carleton, adding that he is in receipt of an annual pension of £100 from the king. There is evidence of Van Dyck's presence in London till the end of February 1621. He is first mentioned in the order-books of the Exchequer on the 17th of that month as receiving a reward of £100 "for special service by him performed for His Majesty," anid on the 28th, " Antonio van Dyck, gent., His Majesties servant, is allowed to travaile 8 months, he havinge obtayneid his Maties leave in that behalf, as was signified by the E. of Arundell." What Van Dyck did in London is not known. Among his

oes irate Raa cease eet es Tae ee OR 1 Prof. Woermann has identified several of the Apostles' heads here spoken of with some paintings in the gallery at Dresden.

numerous paintings still preserved in English houses one only is admitted as belonging to the period of this first visit, a full-length portrait of James I. in the royal collec- tion. That he was at the time a portrait painter of the rarest merit may easily be seen from his own likeness of himself when still quite young and beardless, in the National Gallery (London), in the Pinakothek at Munich, and in the private collections of the duke of Grafton and Sir Richard Wallace. In this last admirable specimen the young painter has represented himself in the character of Paris. Early paintings by Van Dyck are certainly not scarce in British galleries; and at Dulwich there is his admirable Samson and Delilah, wrongly ascribed to Rubens.

Van Dyck is supposed to have profited by his leave of absence to visit Paris and The Hague; but it is much niore probable that the eight months were

spent in Ant- werp, where Rubens was greatly in need of his assistance for the church of the Jesuits. After this Van Dyck most probably returned to London and remained there till the end of 1622, when his father died. The precise date of his departure for Italy—perhaps at the beginning and cer- tainly in the course of 1623—has not been ascertained. But he is known to have left with Rubens a considerable number of paintings, most of which have been identified in Madrid, Berlin, Dresden, &c., and show that study, as well as advice, had long since made the painter acquainted, through Rubens, with those principles of picturesque ex- pression which he was now about to see exemplified so splendidly in the works of the Venetian and Genoese schools. His previous acquaintance with many excellent examples of Titian, Tintoretto, and others in Rubens's own collection can alone account for the remarkably glowing tints of Van Dyck's earliest paintings. In fact, such works as the Martyrdom of St Peter (Brussels), the Crown- ing with Thorns (Berlin), the Betrayal of Christ (Madrid and Lord Methuen), St Martin Dividing his Cloak (Windsor Castle),—a magnificent production, generally ascribed to Rubens, but easily identified through Van Dyck's admir- able sketch at Dorchester House,—aincontestably prove that, in point of colouring, Venice at this moment stood higher in his predilection than Antwerp.

It is unnecessary to dwell on a number of tales con- nected with Van Dyck's early life, all of which have on closer examination proved to be apocryphal; but one story has been too frequently told to be altogether ignored. At the very outset of his Italian journey the inflammable youth was captivated by the beauty of a country girl, and for tle love of her painted the altar-piece still to be seen in the church at Saventhem near Brussels, in which he himself is supposed to be represented on a grey horse, given by Rubens to his pupil. It is now known, however, that the picture was commissioned by a gentleman living at Saventhem (to the charms of whose daughter Van Dyck in reality seems not to have been altogether insensible), and a closer study makes it almost certain that it was executed after, not before, his Italian journey. On a re- duced scale, and with the omission of two or three figures, the St Martin at Saventhem is a reproduction of the picture at Windsor Castle.

No master from beyond the Alps ever took up a higher position than Van Dyck among the most celebrated repre- sentatives of Italian art. Study, as a matter of course, had been one of his principal objects. No doubt can be entertained as to the great influence exerted by the works of Titian and Paul Veronese in the development of his genius ; still the individuality of the painter remains a striking feature of what may be termed his Italian works, especially portraits. Their peculiar character seems to originate even more in the stateliness of the personages

—S ©

Yan DYCK

he was fortunate enough to have as sitters than in any desire to follow individual predilection or prevailing fashion. As in later years Van Dyck gives us a striking picture of the higher classes in England, so at this stage he makes us acquainted with Italian beauty and style ; and at no other period is his talent more advantageously shown than in some of the glorious portraits he painted at Rome, at Florence, and above all at Genoa. At Rome he resided with Cardinal Guido Bentivoglio, who had been papal nuncio in Flanders from 1607 to 1617. For this patron were painted several works of very great import- ance, the most renowned being the prelate's own portrait, now in the Pitti Palace at Florence. Another work was a Crucifixion, representing Christ dying on the cross with uplifted eyes. Most probably the picture spoken of by Bellori ought to be identified with the admirable edition now in the gallery at Naples, catalogued as "Scuola di Van Dyck," unsurpassed by any of those at Antwerp, Paris, Vienna, Rome, or elsewhere. Besides these he painted religious subjects and portraits, several of which are reckoned among his finest examples, such as the portrait of Francis Duquesnoy, the famous sculptor, belonging to the king of the Belgians, and those of Sir Robert Shirley and his wife, in Persian attire, now at Petworth.

Bellori tells us of Van Dyck's prepossessing appearance, of his elegance and distinction, altogether so different from the habits of his compatriots in Rome, who formed a jovial '"oang," as they termed their association. Van Dyck seems to have kept out of their way, and incurred in consequence such annoyance as made his stay in Rome much shorter than it would otherwise

have been. In the company of Lady Arundel, who tried to persuade him to return to England, he travelled to Turin, and perhaps produced some of the paintings now in the royal gallery there, such as the spirited portrait of Thomas of Savoy on his splendid black charger. But he was eager to reach Genoa, where Rubens had worked with great success some twenty years before, and where his Antwerp friends, Luke and Cornelis de Wael, for many years resident in Italy, now were. Van Dyck remained their guest for several months, and their portraits, now in the Pinacoteca Capitolina at Rome (en- graved by W. Hollar from the monochrome at Cassel), may be supposed to have been one of his first Genoese pro- ductions. Though several of the palaces of the "superb " city no longer retain their treasures, and among the speci- mens of Van Dyck's genius still left too many have been greatly injured by cleaning and retouching, Genoa can still boast of a good number of his most attractive productions, portraits of the beautiful ladies and haughty cavaliers of the noble houses of Doria, Brignole Sale, Pallavicini, Balbi, Cattaneo, Spinola, Lommelini, and Grimaldi. It would scarcely be possible to speak too highly of such works as the portrait of the lady in white satin and the Durazzo children at the Durazzo Palace, the Balbi children at Panshanger, the Marchesa Balbi at Dorchester House, the equally beautiful portraits of the Lommelini and of the knight in black armour, buff jacket, and boots in the hational gallery at Edinburgh, or the Marchesa Brignole Sala at Warwick Castle. Van Dyck's "Genoese manner" 1S a current expression, and indeed his Genoese ~~*portraits are remarkable for their richness of tonality and what might be called royal splendour, perhaps never before at*~~ *tained in works of the kind. This we may suppose to have had its origin, not only in his recent study of Titian (Van Dyck having, it is said, first spent some time at Venice), but also in decorative necessities, —the size of the Palatial galleries and the rich hues of the Genoese velvets, on which these portraits were to find their place, obliging the painter to find a most uncommon strength of contrast. It must also be acknowledged that the beauty and distinc-*

tion of Van Dyck's models are greatly enhanced by a splendour of costume entirely different from the dulness then prevalent almost everywhere else. In Italy, more- over, he found the reality of those gorgeous backgrounds, —

flowing draperies, beautiful gardens, ornamental pillars, marble terraces and balustrades,—which elsewhere must be regarded as fictions merely. Here, finally, he was for the first time called upon to paint some of his grandest equestrian portraits, and the often-recurring grey steed with flowing mane (an admirable study of which belongs to Lord Brownlow) was first employed for the portrait of Antonio Giulio Brignole (still at Genoa) and for another picture which we may suppose to represent the same personage at Stafford House. As with Rubens, Titian seems to have been paramount in Van Dyck's regard. Copies in great number we know he possessed of the master's best works, and several little sketches in the British Museum bear proof of his devout study of the great Venetian. Some of Van Dyck's earlier paintings, religious and mythological,—the Tribute Money (Brignole Palace), Holy Family (Turin), Virgin and Saints (Louvre), Virgin (Grosvenor House), Martyrdom of St Lawrence (8S. Maria dell' Orto, Venice), Bacchanal (Lord Belper), engraved at Genoa as early as 1628, St Sebastian (Edinburgh),—are certainly Titianesque in the extreme. Still the master's individuality is not obliterated, and the gallery at Parma has a Virgin with the Infant Asleep which may be termed a marvel of realistic simplicity.

Van Dyck is said to have sailed from Genoa to Palermo and there to have painted several persons of rank, includ- ing the viceroy, Emmanuel Philibert of Savoy. While in Sicily he became acquainted with the painter Sofonisba Anguisciola (or Angussola), who was then over ninety years of age and blind ; and he was wont to say he had received more valuable information from a blind woman than from many a seeing man. No important works of Van Dyck are now to be found in Sicily. _Bellori tells us that a plague broke out and compelled him to leave abruptly, taking with him an unfinished picture of St Rosalia, destined for a confraternity of that name, and which was completed in Genoa. The composition was repeated in Antwerp for the Bachelors' Brotherhood, a picture now in Vienna. Van Dyck most probably re- mained in Genoa till 1627, and here in all likelihood he met and painted the sculptor George Petel, whose portrait is now in Munich, and who was frequently employed by Rubens ; the De Jodes, father and son, the celebrated en- gravers, who are represented together in a masterly por- trait in the Capitol at Rome, the companion picture to the brothers De Wael; and Nicholas Laniere, musician-in-chief to

Charles I., a painting spoken of in Van der Dort's cata- logue as "done beyond the seas." lLaniere was in Italy precisely at this time and it was through his portrait (now at Windsor Castle), Walpole assures us, that Van Dyck attracted the notice of Charles I.

Embarking for Marseilles) Van Dyck is said to have stopped at Aix with Peiresc, the famous scholar and friend of Rubens, and thence to have gone to Paris, where most probably he painted the beautiful portrait of Langlois the print-seller (belonging to Mr W. Garnett), a work still influ- enced by Italian reminiscences, and had the opportunity of meeting Callot, Simon Vouet, and Dupuy, the king's librarian,—all of whose portraits were engraved from his drawings in Antwerp. According to some authors, he also worked in Holland before returning to his native town ; but the supposition rests entirely on two portraits in the museum at The Hague, dated 1627 and 1628, and repre- senting a lady and gentleman, with the Sheffield arms. The lady is easily identified by a well-known print by Clouwet as Anne Wake. The Wake family resided in

Antwerp, and both portraits may have been painted there. There is no recorded proof of Van Dyck's return to Ant- werp before 6th March 1628. One of his sisters had died in a convent the year before, and he now made a will in favour of Susan and Isabella, two other sisters, also nuns. That Van Dyck was in Antwerp on 18th May is proved by a letter from Lord Carlisle to Buckingham (Sainsbury, CIII.), but it is stated in Bullart's Académie, published in 1682, that he returned again to London in 1629, without, however, attracting the king's attention. It is very likely that Lady Arundel's endeavours to get him back to Eng- land were now successful, and that the beautiful portrait of Lord Thomas, at Stafford House, belongs to this period.

Great as may have been the strength of Italian re- miniscence, from the moment Van Dyck again trod Flemish soil the influence of Rubens became predominant, and we can scarcely doubt that a competition speedily arose be- tween master and pupil. At this period churches and convents: were numerous and richly endowed; and the number of pictures, stained glass windows, and elaborate carvings in Belgian churches before the French conquest was enormous. Hardly fifty years had elapsed since these buildings had been stripped of their artistic treasures, and the devout were now eager once more to adorn them with productions of the greatest painters. Hence Van Dyck's share could be very copious without in any degree interfering with the vast undertakings assigned to Rubens. The latter

was also absent for many months in 1629 and 1630, so that Van Dyck was for a time the first master in the Netherlands. Among the earliest works after his return to Antwerp we find the Crucifixion, given to the Doniinican nuns, in accordance with the wish expressed by the painter's dying father, and now in the Antwerp museum. 'The figures are life-size, and at the foot of the cross, besides a weeping angel, are St Catherine of Siena and St Dominic. Neither in type nor in general effect does it suggest the master's immediately preceding works. As a new feature we observe a kind of elegance, not entirely free from mannerism, which is often conspicuous with Van Dyck even when the technical excellence com- mands our warmest admiration. Inspiration, as Waagen observes, was far more limited with Van Dyck than with Rubens. His truly delicate nature led him to restrain his conceptions within the bounds of an academic evenness, generally more pleasing to the uninitiated than the strength of expression which sometimes imparts a sort of violence to the works of Rubens. To Van Dyck's second—more justly speaking third—manner belong some of his best religious works. The Crucifixion in the cathedral at Mechlin is termed by Sir Joshua Reynolds one of the finest pictures in the world. Other Crucifixions are in St Michael's at Ghent (sketches in Lord Brownlow's collection and the Brussels museum) and in the church at Termonde. Still finer are the two works painted for the Antwerp Jesuits and now at Vienna,—the Blessed Herman Joseph Kneeling before the Virgin and St Rosalia Crowned by the Infant Saviour. To this period likewise belong the cele- brated Elevation of the Cross at Courtrai and the St Augustine in Ecstasy, in the church of the Jesuits at Antwerp ; the general effect of this last, it must be ac- knowledged with Reynolds, is inferior to the beautiful engraving by De Jode, and also to the earl of North- brook's magnificent sketch. At Dulwich we find the first idea of the composition, with many interesting differences. It may be a matter of individual preference to pronounce Van Dyck's Flemish portraits superior to those of an earlier period; but nobody can fail to admit that, tech- nically speaking, they indicate a further step towards per- fection. The darkness of the Genoese portraits has vanished ; broad daylight now freely illuminates the

model, and such works as the portraits of Cornelius Van der Geest (National Gallery, London) and Ambrogio Spinola (Rev. W. H. Wayne) are perhaps as close to material ex- cellence as any painting could be. The full-

length like- nesses of Philip Le Roy (1630) and his wife (1631) (at Manchester House) and of Mary Louisa of Tassis (Prince Liechtenstein, Vienna) are not only the finest examples of the master's talent, but deserve to rank among the most beautiful portraits ever painted. The Snyders at Castle Howard is regarded by Waagen as not inferior to the most celebrated Raphaels, Titians, or Holbeins; and of almost equal excellence are the Wife of Colin de Nole in the Munich gallery, the Lady and her Daughter at the Louvre, and the Lady in Black at Cassel.

Rapidly rising to honour and wealth, Van Dyck shared with Rubens the official title of court painter, and his numerous portraits of the Infanta in her monastic garb (Paris, Vienna, Turin, Parma, &c.) bear testimony to the great favour in which he stood with her. When Mary de' Medici, after her flight from France, took up her re- sidence in Brussels (1631), she honoured Van Dyck, as well as Rubens, with repeated visits, and several times called upon him to paint her likeness, as well as those of Gaston of Orleans and his wife Margaret of Lorraine, and several of the personages of their court. From Gerbier's letters we learn that Van Dyck at this time was con- templating another journey to England, and was very anxious to be commissioned by the infanta and the queen of France to take over their portraits as presents for the king and royal family. He soon travelled to The Hague to paint the prince and princess of Orange and their son. Quite at the beginning of 1632 Constantine Huygens, who was then living at The Hague, inscribes in his diary, "'Pingor a Van Dyckio." When, towards the end of March, Van Dyck sailed for England, he took all these portraits with him, as we learn from an account of the 8th of August 1632 (Carpenter's Pictorial Notices). Dutch authors speak of a visit paid by Van Dyck to Frans Hals at Haarlem, and of a portrait of the latter through which the Antwerp master was at once recognized by his Dutcli colleague. An engraving of a portrait of Hals after Van Dyck seems to confirm the story.

In undertaking this new journey to London, Van Dyck was assured of success, for Gerbier's letters show that the king had personally desired his presence. As early as March 1629 Endymion Porter, one of the gentlemen of the king's bedchamber, had been commissioned to order a picture from Van Dyck, Rinaldo and Armida, The composition is well known through De Balliu's first-rate engraving, and the canvas, now belonging to the duke of

Newcastle, may be looked upon as one of the master's finest creations. Rubens was in London at the time the picture arrived, and to him we may in a great measure attribute the realization of Van Dyck's plans and the ex- ceptional favours bestowed upon him almost from the day of his arrival in London. Besides the title of painter in ordinary, and the grant of an annual pension of £200, he received the honour of knighthood after a residence of less than three months at court (5th July 1632). Van Dyck rapidly achieved popularity among the higher classes, and, as Walpole says, his works are so frequent in England that to most Englishmen it is difficult to avoid thinking of him as their countryman.

His refined nature is strikingly illustrated in his ad- mirable interpretation of English beauty and style. And, if Van Dyck be compared to Mytens and Cornelius Janssen, the most distinguished painters employed by the English court immediately before him, few artists, whether in Eng- land or elsewhere, have more richly endowed their models with distinction of feature and elegance in bearing. To

him may be applied what Opie says of Titian, "that he combines resemblance with dignity, costume with taste, and art with simplicity." We are particularly struck with the thorough and immediate identification of his talent with local tastes and exigencies. Charles I. and Henrietta Maria, although pictured by several other painters, are known to posterity exclusively through Van Dyck, not from a greater closeness of resemblance to the original, but from a particular power of expression and bearing, which, once seen, it is impossible to forget. Lodged at the expense of the crown, with a summer residence at Eltham Palace, Van Dyck was frequently honoured with the visits of the king at his studio at Blackfriars. Portraits now followed each other with a rapidity scarcely credible to those unacquainted with the artist's method. In fact, his mode of living and his love of pleasure sufficiently explain his great need of money. During the first year of his _ presence in England he painted the king and queen a dozen times. The first of these noble portraits is the admirable full length of Charles I, with the queen and their two eldest children, at Windsor Castle. The style he adopted in England is generally termed his third manner ; we

might better say his fourth, as he already had a very particular style before he set out on his Italian journey. De Piles gives us some account of Van Dyck's methods at this period of his career. He began with a small sketch on grey paper with black and white chalks, or a mono- chrome in oils. This study was passed on to assistants in order to be copied on the required scale. When the clothes were sufficiently advanced by the pupils from those sent by the model, as well as the background and acces- sories, the master was enabled in a few sittings of an hour each to complete the work. Van Dyck excelled in paint- ing the hands ; he is said to have kept special models for this part of his work. It need hardly be said that a system of this kind, although employed by Rubens for his larger creations, was exceedingly ill adapted to portrait painting. In Van Dyck's later productions we too often detect marks of haste, as if the pencil were becoming a mere implement of trade.

Nearly the whole of 1634 and 1635 were spent by Van Dyck in the Netherlands.1 The archduchess died on 1st December 1633, and Van Dyck naturally wished to get his official title renewed by her successor, Ferdinand of Austria, brother of Philip IV. That Van Dyck's residence in Antwerp was only to be temporary is shown by the power given to his sister Susan for the administration of his affairs in Belgium (14th April 1634). On the arrival of the new governor Van Dyck was immediately called upon to paint his likeness, a picture now in the Madrid gallery, where the same personage is also represented by Rubens and Velazquez. Several other portraits of Fer- dinand, either in his cardinal's robes or in military dress, by Van Dyck, occur elsewhere. One on horseback was exhibited at the Grosvenor Gallery, London, in 1887 as the duke of Alva (the property of Mr S. Kynaston Main- waring). Van Dyck was greatly in demand at this time, and his prices were correspondingly high, as the Antwerp municipality found when they asked for a portrait of the late infanta to decorate one of the triumphal arches for the reception of the new governor. The most important of Van Dyck's works, at any rate as a portrait painter, belong to this period. The picture representing in life size the members of the Brussels corporation, which was destroyed by fire during the siege of 1695, is spoken of with intense admiration by several writers. Bullart, for instance, is very enthusiastic about its fine colour and life- like qualities. Among the religious paintings of undis-

‘ 1 Tt is not generally known that his brother, an Antwerp priest, had been called over by the queen to act as her chaplain.

puted excellence belonging to the same period are the Adoration of the Shepherds in the church at Termonde, and the Deposition, where the body of Christ rests upon the, lap of the Virgin, in the Antwerp museum. Among the portraits are the admirable full length of Scaglia, the king’s frequent agent in the Netherlands (at Dorchester House ; a replica in the museum at Antwerp), the eques- trian portrait of Albert of Arenberg (Arenberg Palace at Brussels), and a portrait of the same nobleman on foot, in the black velvet Spanish dress with golden chamberlain’s key (long said to be Rubens) at Althorpe, the full length of Helena Fourment, Rubens’s second wife (at St Peters- burg), the beautiful duchess of Havre, Mary Clara de Croy, signed and dated 1634 (Mr Ayscough Fawkes), and other members of the same family (at Munich), Thomas of Savoy (at Berlin), an admirable half length of a lady in black (in the Belvedere at Vienna), and above all the grandiose picture in which John of Nassau is represented at full length, with his wife and children (at Panshanger). Several portraits of Brussels and Antwerp magistrates must also be mentioned, the most important being John Van Mer- straeten, a Brussels lawyer (at Cassel).

After being chosen honorary president of the Antwerp guild of St Luke, Van Dyck returned to London before the end of 1635. In spite of the vast number of his later portraits, some of them deserve to be ranked among the most celebrated of his productions. The royal children in the gallery at Turin (1635), the portraits of Charles I. in the Louvre and in the National Gallery, London, the picture of the Pembroke family at Wilton House, Sir George and Sir Francis Villiers, and the earls of Bristol and Bedford, at Althorpe, as well as those of Francis Russell, fourth earl of Bedford, and Anne Carr, his consort, at Woburn Abbey (1636), all belong to the years immediately follow- ing the master’s return from the Netherlands.

He now married Lady Mary Ruthven, daughter of Sir Patrick Ruthven and grand-daughter of the earl of Gowrie. There are several portraits of her by her husband, the most important being in the Munich gallery, in which she is represented in white satin, playing on the violoncello. She is also said to

figure as the Virgin in a picture belonging to Lord Lyttelton. There is a capital engraving of her by Bolswert. In another picture, said to be Mary Ruthven (belonging to Mr J. C. Herford), an exceedingly handsome lady is represented as Herminia Putting on Clarinda's Armour. There can be no doubt as to the model having been Margaret Lemon, a celebrated beauty, whose portrait was engraved by W. Hollar and J. Morin and painted by Van Dyck at Hampton Court. "She was," says M. Law, in his excellent catalogue of this gallery, "the most beauti- ful and celebrated, though far from being the only mistress of Van Dyck. The great artist, in fact, loved beauty in every form, and found the seduction of female charms altogether irresistible. She lived with him at his house at Blackfriars." The precise date of Van Dyck's marriage has not been ascertained. It was probably towards the end of 1639. The union is said to have been promoted by the artist's friends in order to save him from the con- sequence of his pernicious way of living. Margaret Lemon resented the event most cruelly, and tried to maim Van Dyck's right hand.

Van Dyck found few occasions in England to paint any- thing but portraits. He seems to have been decidedly underrated by the king and queen as an imaginative painter. At the very time of his employment on the beautiful por- traits of Henrietta Maria, destined to serve as models for Bernini's bust, Gerbier was secretly negotiating with Jordaens, by order of Charles, for the decoration of the queen's apartments at Greenwich (1639). There exists at Belvoir Castle a sketch by Van Dyck representing a

procession of the knights of the Garter, a really grandiose composition, engraved by Cooper. We know from Bellori that Van Dyck had suggested through his friend Sir Kenelm Digby, for the banqueting room at Whitehall, a series of decorations illustrating the history of the order of the Garter, and that the king had been much pleased with the idea. The plan, however, failed through the ex- cessively high price asked by the painter, and perhaps also because the king had thought of having the work done in tapestry. Van Dyck's pension was five years in arrear, and, instead of £560, he received finally, besides his pen- sion, only £200.

When the news of Rubens's death reached London (June 1640) Van Dyck contemplated a return to his native country, and a letter from Ferdinand of Austria to Philip IV. speaks of his intended journey to Antwerp on St Luke's Day (18th October). Rubens had left unfinished a series of paintings commanded by the king of Spain, and from correspondence published by Professor Justi we learn that Van Dyck had been thought of to give them the finishing touch. But he absolutely refused to finish them, It was then agreed that he should paint an independent canvas destined to complete the series. Van Dyck was delighted with this order, and Ferdinand tells his brother that he returned to London in great haste "to make pre- parations for his change of residence ; possibly," adds the letter, "he may still change his mind, for he is stark mad." Whether Van Dyck found it possible to work during his short stay in the Netherlands is a matter of doubt. In the museum at The Hague are six medallion portraits of Constantine Huygens and his children, dated 1640. They have till lately been ascribed to Van Dyck, but are now said to be by Adrian Hannemann, a Dutchman, and one of his ablest assistants. In any case they are of small importance. Most authors suppose that Van Dyck's prin- cipal object in travelling to the Continent was to be en- trusted with the decoration of one of the galleries of the Louvre, There may be some truth in this, for Mariette speaks of a letter he saw, written by Claude Vignon, the French painter, in January 1641, asking Langlois for an introduction to Van Dyck, who was then in Paris. Unfor- tunately the great painter was thwarted in his aspirations. His health was beginning to fail. After his return to London he was frequently obliged to interrupt his work ; and a letter written (13th August) from Richmond by Lady Anne Roxburgh to Baron W. van Brederode at The Hague states that the portraits of the Princess Mary had been greatly delayed through Van Dyck's illness, and that the prince's (William II. of Orange) would be ready in eight days. "As Van Dyck intends leaving England in the course of ten or twelve days at latest," she adds, "he will take the paintings himself to the princess of Orange." These portraits, now in the museum at Amsterdam, are the last Van Dyck painted in England. They are considered to be inferior ; and the last edition of the catalogue terms them copies. But of works dated 1639 the portrait of Lady Pembroke, in the gallery at Darmstadt, is a really fine specimen ; and to the same year belongs a full-length por- trait of Arthur Goodwin at Chatsworth. The twin portrait of Thomas Carew and Thomas Killigrew, in the royal collec- tion, dated 1638, is certainly most delicate,

but very weak in tone and slight in handling. Van Dyck sailed in September, and probably spent some time with his Antwerp friends, In October he reached Paris, and succeeded in obtaining some important work, when, on 16th N ovember, he was compelled to resign his commissions on account of the state of his health. Scarcely three weeks later (9th December 1641) he died at his residence at Blackfriars. Van Dyck was buried in old St Paul's, where a Latin inscription was placed on his tomb by Charles I.

An elegy in Cowley's Miscellanies speaks, not only of the painter's talent, but of his amiable disposition. We may perhaps point to the coincidence that a Mrs Cowley is in Van Dyck's will (of 1st December) nanied guardian of his child, Justiniana Anna, born only eight days before her father's death. The painter had in the Nether- lands an illegitimate daughter, Maria Theresia, who was entrusted to his sister, and to whom he bequeathed £4000. The name of her mother is not known. Not long after her husband's death Lady Van Dyck became the second wife of Sir Richard Pryse of Gogerddan in Cardiganshire. She was dead in 1645. Justiniana Van Dyck, who was married when scarcely twelve years old to Sir John Stepney of Prendergast, was also something of an artist: she painted a Crucifixion, with four angels receiving Christ's blood in chalices. A similar subject had been painted by Van Dyck, as Bellori tells us, for the duke of Northumberland. After the Restoration a pension of £200 for life was granted to Justiniana Van Dyck, who died before 1690.

Van Dyck is one of the most brilliant figures in the history of art. That he should, in the same subjects chosen by Rubens, have attained the same degree of expression was scarcely possible. Rubens was exceptional precisely through the sweep and power of his ima- gination ; but Van Dyck, applying the same principles to portrait painting, was no less exceptional. Titian, Raphael, Rembrandt, Velazquez, and Frans Hals are not, on the whole, superior to him in this branch. They often delight us with their technical excel- lence or penetrating study of individuality, but their conception remains entirely different from that of Van Dyck. With him as with Rubens physiognomical interpretation is so intimately con- nected with

picturesque necessity that his portraits scarcely ever fail to leave an indelible impression on the mind. Burnet observes that with Van Dyck the union of the figure and the background seems to have been a principle, not only in respect of light and shade, but also of colour. Thus the shapes of his lights are ex- tended or doubled by means of a curtain in the background, &c. Hence Van Dyck, quite unlike the Dutch, is not what may be termed an intimate portraitist. In his eyes a prince, a warrior, a statesman, an artist belong to the world and to posterity, and in the realization of this idea he attains a degree of excellence seldom if ever attained before him. His works may be found lacking in solidity or displaying an unnecessary amount of motion in attitude, but these defects are easily compensated by a sense of proportion, an elegance in outline, a variety of conception united in his best works to the most able technic.

Properly speaking, Van Dyck cannot be said to have formed a school, He was followed to London by some of his earlier colla- borators, and there soon met a considerable number of others. Jan van Reyn, David Beek, Adrian Hannemann, Mathew Merian, John Bockhorst (Lang Jan), Remy van Leemput, and Peter Thys were foremost among foreigners, Henry Stone and William Dobson among Englishmen. 'To their assistance the master owed much; but they are also responsible for the vast number of constantly-recurring copies which go by his name. It often requires a very discriminating eye to distinguish some of these copies from the original paintings. Nevertheless after Van Dyck's death many of his coadjutors produced works of undeniable merit. No school more strikingly reflects the influence of Van Dyck than the British school. Stone and Dobson were, properly speaking, the most for- tunate of his continuators; and there is little doubt that such masters as Reynolds, Gainsborough, Lawrence, and Raeburn owe a large measure of their superiority to their study of his works.

Though Van Dyck's reputation greatly suffered through the numerous copies he allowed his pupils to take from his works, the case is otherwise with engraving: Vorsterman, Pontius, Peter de Jode, P. Balliu, and 8. Bolswert were seldom more fortunate than when under his guidance. De Jode's St Augustine, Bolswert's Ecce Homo and Crucifixion, Vorsterman's Deposition, and especially Pontius's Herman Joseph rank among the

masterpieces of the art of engraving. Wan Dyck was himself an incomparable etcher, and with the needle arrived at a degree of excellence scarcely inferior to that exhibited in his paintings. Such prints as the portraits of Vorsterman, John de Wael, Snyders, Josse de Momper, Adam van Noort, and above all his own effigy, bear witness to his prodigious knowledge of design. Pript collectors pay extravagant prices for a first proof taken from the plates engraved by Van Dyck himself, Mr Sackville Bale's copy of the portrait of Wawerius fetched £600. Van Dyck also employed some of the best engravers of his time for the production of a gallery of illustrious heads, men and women, of different countries. Whether all were taken from life is ques- tionable. Gustavus Adolphus and Wallenstein he can hardly have met. Du Breucq, the architect, he never knew. But all the sketches and drawings were done by himself, and are often met with in public and private galleries. The engravings are some- times very beautiful and in their first states very rare. Published successively by Martin van der Enden, Giles Héendrickx, and John Meyssens, the collection originally consisted of sixteen warriors and statesmen, twelve scholars, and fifty-two artists. Hendrickx raised the number to ninety-nine, and used asa frontispiece the

alll

VAN—VAN

portrait of Van Dyck, with the following inscription :—Icones principum, wirorum doctorum, etc., etc., numero centum ab Antonio Van Dyck pictore ad vivwm expresse etusg. sumtibus xrt incise, 1645. Seventeen editions were published, the last in 1759, with 124 plates. Many of the plates are now the property of the French Government, and belong to the Chalcographie Nationale in Paris. Literature.—See W. Hookham Carpenter, Pictorial Notices, consisting of a Memoir of Sir Anthony Van Dyck, with a descriptive catalogue of the etchings exe- cuted by him (London, 1844); John Smith, A Catalogue Raisonné of the Works of the most Eminent Dutch, Flemish, and French Painters, part iii. (London, 1841) ; J. Guiffrey, Antoine Vian Dyck, sa Vie et son Giuvre (Paris, 1882); A. Michiels, Ant. Van Dyck et ses Eléves (Paris, 1881); Ign. von Szwykowski, A. Van Dyck's Pildnisse bekannter Personen (Leipsic, 1858); Fr. Wibiral, L'Iconographie d'A. Van Dyck

d'apres les Recherches d. H. Weber (Leipsic, 1877); Carl Lemcke, A. Van Dyck (in Robert Dohme's Kunst und Kiinstler, vol. i., Leipsic, 1877); Alfr. Woltmann and K. Woermann, Gesch. der Malerei, vol. iii. (Leipsic, 1886); Max Rooses, Geschiedenis der Antwerpsche Schilderschool (Ghent, 1879); F. J. Van den Branden, Gesch, der Antw. Schilderschool (Antwerp, 1883); Percy Rendall Head, Van Dyck (London, 1887); F. G. Stephens, Catalogue of the Exhibition of the Works of Sir A. Van Dyck (London, 1887). (H. H.)

VANE, Sir Henry (1612-1662), the younger, was the son of Sir Henry Vane and Frances Darcy. His father, of an ancient family in Durham, was secretary of state and comptroller of the household under Charles]. Henry was born in 1612 at Hadlow in Kent; and after an education at Westminster, where he was noted for his high and reckless spirits, and at Magdalen, Oxford, where he neither matriculated nor took his degree, he was sent to France and Geneva. Here he no doubt acquired the strongly Puritan views for which he had been prepared by a re- markable change of mind when quite a boy. In spite of the personal efforts of Laud, who made the attempt at the king's request, he refused to give them up, and fell especially under the influence of Pym. In 1635 he emi- grated to Massachusetts, where he was elected governor in 1636, though only twenty-four years of age. After two years of office, during which he showed striking adminis- trative ability, he was defeated by Winthrop, the former governor, chiefly on account of the protection he had given to Mrs Hutchinson in the religious controversies which she raised.

Vane returned to England in August 1637. Being elected to the Short Parliament for Kingston-upon-Hull, he speedily became a leader of the Independents and a marked man. In order to secure him for the court he was made joint-treasurer of the navy with Sir W. Russell, and was knighted. In November 1640 he was again elected for Hull to the Long Parliament. Accidentally finding among his father's papers some notes of Strafford's advice to the king after the dissolution of the Short Parliament, in which Strafford justified the use of force, he handed them to Pym, and on 10th April 1641 was examined upon them by the House; this disclosure was largely instrumental in bringing about Strafford's down- fall. He carried up the impeachment of Laud from the Commons, was a strong supporter, when on the com- mittee of religion, of the "Root and Branch" bill, and in June

1641 put forward a scheme of church government by which commissioners, half lay and half cleric, were to assume ecclesiastical jurisdiction in each diocese. He was, in fact, foremost in all the doings of the Long Parliament. When war broke out he surrendered his oflice of treasurer of the navy, but was replaced in it by the Parliament. Hereupon he gave a rare example of dis- interestedness by relinquishing all the profits of the office, stated at £30,000 a year, stipulating only that. £1000 should be paid toa deputy. In August 1642 he was on the committee of defence. In 1643 he was the leading man among the commissioners sent to treat for a league with the Scots. Vane, who was bitterly opposed to the tyranny of the Presbyterian system, was successful in two mportant points. The aim of the Scots was chiefly the propagation of their discipline in England and Wales, and for this they wanted only a "covenant." The English desired a political "league." Vane succeeded in getting the bond termed the Solemn League and Covenant,

and further in substituting the expression "according to the word of God and the example of the best Reformed churches" for the latter phrase alone. In the Westminster Assembly, too, he joined Cromwell in insisting upon full religious liberty, and in opposing the view that the taking of the Covenant should be necessary for ordination. In 1644 he was charged by Essex with holding communica- tion with the court, but explained that he had done so in order to acquire information of the Royalist plans, and was fully acquitted by the House of Lords. He was on the committee of two kingdoms, and was engaged in the negotiations with Charles at Uxbridge in 1645. He was, with Cromwell, a prime mover in the Self-Denying Ordin- ance and the New Model, and it was he who suggested the filling up of the vacant seats in parliament. His views of government at this time and throughout his life may be best studied in an important paper, the People's Case Stated, written shortly before his death, 'The power which is directive, and states and ascertains the morality of the rule of obedience, is in the hand of God; but the original, from whence all just power arises, which is magistratical and coercitive, is from the will or free gift of the people, who may either keep the power in them- selves or give up their subjection and will in the hand of another." The king, then, having transgressed the condi- tion, and having

been conquered, the people were free to change their form of government and, if they pleased, resort toa republic. In 1646 Vane was one of the English com- missioners for the preservation of peace with Scotland, and in 1648 was appointed with others to negotiate with Charles at the Isle of Wight. Radical as were his views, he refused all participation in Pride's 'purge "—the point where he first broke with Cromwell—and remained in privacy at Raby Castle in Durham until after the king's death, a measure in which he took no part. In 1649, however, he returned to London and was placed on the council of state, though he refused to take the oath which expressed approbation of the king's execution. He was chairman of the committee appointed to consider the mode of election of future parliaments, and his proposals were brought forward in January 1650. He acknowledged the Commonwealth only so far as he found it "consonant to the principles which have given rise to the law and the monarchy itself in England," and he recognized in a parlia- ment, conforming in other respects to the ancient laws, the supreme authority of the state, whether there were a king at the head of it or not. He wished to reform the franchise on the property basis, to disfranchise some of the existing boroughs, and to give increased representation to the large towns ; the sitting members, however, were to retain their seats. In this he was opposed by Cromwell, who desired an entirely new parliament and the supremacy of the army representation; and Vane stands henceforward as the champion of the doctrine of pure parliamentary govern- ment. His most useful qualities were exhibited, however, when in March 1653 he became the head of the commission for managing the army and navy. It was by his exertions in organization that Blake was fitted out with the fleet with which Van Tromp was defeated and the supremacy of England at sea assured. It was at this time that Milton's sonnet was addressed to him. On 20th April Cromwell forcibly dissolved the Long Parliament, when Vane especi- ally received from the Protector studied insult. He was, however, almost at once invited to rejoin the Government. "He answered the invitation by a letter extracted from the Apocalypse wherein the reign of the saints is men- tioned, which faith he believes will now begin." In his retirement at Raby he now wrote the Retired Man's Medi- tations. In 1656 he proposed in A Healing Question a new form of government, insisting as before upon a Puritan

parliament supreme over the army. This he sent to Crom- well, and so alarmed was the Protector at the interest it excited that Vane was summoned on 12th August to the council in consequence. Refusing to give security not to disturb the public peace, he was on 9th September sent prisoner to Carisbrooke Castle, and there remained until 3lst December. He had previously, according to his opponents, excited the jealousy of the Government by 'going up and down among the Quakers, and endeavour- ing to withdraw them from their submission to the Govern- ment." After the death of Cromwell he stood for Kingston and Bristol successively, and was elected, but the court managers gave the certificate of election to the defeated candidates; finally, however, he was chosen for Whitchurch and took his seat on 27th January 1659, at the head of the small body of forty republicans. He was at once urgent in pressing that, before Richard Cromwell, for whom he had a great contempt, was acknowledged pro- tector, the limitations of his power, and the full security of parliament and subjects, should be settled. Upon Richard's abdication he joined the army leaders in reviv- ing the Rump; and, when the breach occurred between it and the army, he adhered to the latter, accepting a com- mission from them. He was one of the committee of safety and also of the council of state appointed in May ; he was, too, chairman of the army and navy commission, and soon afterwards of another special commission for the navy. In September he was made president of the council. He had, morever, in May, been appointed with Lambert and others to treat with the Dutch ambassador for freeing the commerce of the Baltic. When Monk arrived in London Vane was ordered to his seat in Lincolnshire, having been discharged from the parliament for espousing the cause of the army.

At the Restoration Vane was imprisoned in the Tower by the king's order. After several conferences between the Houses of Parliament it was agreed that he should be excepted from the indemnity bill, but that a petition should be sent to Charles asking that his life might be spared. The petition was granted. During the conferences he had been moved from prison to prison, and was finally placed ina castle in the Scilly Isles. In his captivity he wrote the People's Case Stated, with many other political and religious works of the highest eloquence and beauty. On 7th March 1662, the Convention

*Parliament being no longer in existence, he was taken to London, and on 2d June put upon his trial, which was conducted with a shameless absence of equity. He was refused the assistance of counsel and was not allowed to see the indictment before it was read. In his own behalf he spoke courageously and well, pleading the authority of the Long Parliament for his acts, and maintaining that the House of Commons, ** represent- ing the whole body of the people in case of a difference between the authority, royal and politic, possessed a just power to defend the right of the people, and to authorize the people of England and every one of them to defend them." Charles, however, was determined that he should die, and, in spite of his answer to the petition mentioned above, wrote himself to Clarendon declaring that Vane was "too dangerous a man to let live, if we can honestly put him out of the way." He was therefore sentenced on llth June to death. On the 14th he was taken out to execution, and died with the serenity and courage which had marked his life. (0. A.)*

VANILLA, a flavouring agent largely used in the manufacture of chocolate, in confectionery, and in per- fumery. It consists of the fermented and dried pods of several species of orchids belonging to the genus Vanilla.1 The great bulk of the commercial article is the produce of

1 Span. vainilla, dim. of vaina, a pod.

V. planifolia, Andrews, a native of eastern Mexico, but now largely cultivated in several tropical countries, especi- ally in Réunion, the Seychelles, and Java. The plant has a long fleshy stem and attaches itself by its aerial rootlets to trees, and appears to be little dependent on the soil for nourishment. The leaves are alternate, oval-lanceolate, and fleshy ; and the greenish white flowers form axillary

Vanilla plant. A. Flower, leaf, and aerial rootlets. B. Pod or fruit.

spikes, The fruit is a pod from 6 to 12 inches long, and when mature about half an inch in diameter. The wild plant yields a smaller and less aromatic fruit, distinguished in Mexico as Baynilla 'cimarona, the cultivated vanilla being known as B. corriente. Mexican vanilla is regarded as the best. It is

principally consumed in the United States, which import about 100,000 tb of it annually. Réunion produces about the same quantity, which is sent to Bordeaux, the chief centre of the trade in France, Its odour is said to differ from the Mexican variety in having a suggestion of tonqua bean. Guadaloupe produces about 5000 ib per annum, which is likewise shipped to Bordeaux. Mauritius exported 20,481 tb in 1877. The Seychelles have lately produced large quantities of exceedingly fine quality ; the produce of these islands goes chiefly to the London market. The Java vanilla, grown chiefly in Kra- wang and the Preanger Regencies, is shipped to Holland. The amount exported from the East Indian Archipelago to Holland in 1876 amounted to about 5000%. The best varieties of vanilla pods are of a dark chocolate brown or nearly black colour, and are covered with a crystalline efflorescence technically known as givre, the presence of which is taken as a criterion of quality. The peculiar fragrance of vanilla is due to vanillin, C;H,O,, which forms this efflorescence. Chemically speaking, it is the aldehyde of methyl-protocatechuic acid. It is not naturally present in the fleshy exterior of the pod, but is secreted by hair- like papille lining its three internal angles, and ultimately becomes diffused through the viscid oily liquid surround- ing the seeds. The amountof vanillin varies according to the kind: Mexican vanilla yields 1:69, Bourbon or Réunion 1°9 to 2°48, and Java 2°75 per cent. Besides vanillin, the pods contain vanillic acid (which is odourless), about 11 per cent. of fixed oil, 2°3 per cent. of soft resin, sugar, gum, and oxalate of lime.

Vanillin forms crystalline needles, fusible at 81° C., and soluble in alcohol and ether, hardly soluble in cold, but more so in boiling water. Like other aldehydes, it forms a compound with the alkaline bisulphites, and can by this means be extracted from bodies con- taining it. Vanillin has been found in Siam benzoin and in raw sugar, and has been prepared artificially from coniferin, a substance found in the sapwood of fir-trees, from asafcetida, and from a con- stituent of oil of cloves named eugenol. It is from the last-named

that vanillin is now prepared on a commercial scale, chiefly in Germany. Vanillin does not appear to have any physiological

(il

action on human beings when taken in small doses, as much as 10 to 15 grains having been administered without noxious results. On small animals, however, such as frogs, it appears to act as a eon- yulsive. It has been suggested as a stimulant of an excito-motor character in atonic dyspepsia. The poisonous effects that have on several occasions followed from eating ices flavoured with vanilla are not to be attributed to the vanilla, but probably to the presence of tyrotoxicon (Pharm. Journ. [8], xvii. p. 150), a poison found in milk which has undergone certain putrefactive changes, and producing choleraic effects, or perhaps to the presence of micro- scopic fungi in the vanilla, the plantations being liable to the attack of Bactertwm putredinis. Workmen handling the beans in the Bordeaux factories are subject to itching of the hands and face ; but this is caused by an Acarus which occupies the end of the pod. In some cases, however, symptoms of dizziness, weariness, and malaise, with muscular pains, have been felt, due probably to the absorption of the oily juice by the hands of the workmen. These symptoms have been attributed to the variety of vanilla known as yanillon, but it seems equally probable that they are due to idiosyncrasy.

The method of cultivation and preparation of vanilla for the market varies somewhat in different countries. In Mexico a clear- ing is made in the forest, where a few young trees, 12 or 15 feet apart, are left to serve as a support for the climbing stems of the vanilla plant. Close to each tree two cuttings, 3 to 5 feet in length, are inserted in the soil to the depth of about a foot, the upper part being tied to the tree. The cuttings become rooted in about a month, but do not bear fruit until the third year. They continue to bear for about thirty years. In Réunion, Mauritius, and the Seychelles the young plants are supported by a rude trellis made between the trunks of trees. Although the plants are probably fertilized by insects in their native country, in Réunion and else- where fertilization has to be promoted by hand. Only the finest flowers of each spike are fertilized, or the plants would die of ex- haustion. The pods are cut off separately as they ripen, since, if over-ripe, they are apt to split in drying, and if unripe the product will be of inferior colour and fragrance. The pods take a month to arrive at full size and six months longer to ripen. The exact time for collecting is judged by the crackling of the pod when pinched between the fingers. The

aroma of vanilla is developed by fermentation, and is said not to pre-exist in the ripe fruit.

In Mexico the pods, after they are gathered, are placed in heaps under a shed until they begin to shrivel, and are then submitted to a sweating process. They are next wrapped in a woollen cloth and exposed to the sun during the day, or heated in an oven to 140° Fahr. if the weather is cloudy, and then enclosed in air-tight boxes at night to sweat. In twenty-four to thirty-six hours, accord- ing to size, the pods have acquired a fine chcstnut-brown colour. They are then spread in the sun for about two months to dry, and are subsequently tied up into small packets of uniform length. In Réunion the pods are sorted into lengths and scalded in boiling water, the long pods being immersed ten seconds, those of a medium size fifteen seconds, and the short ones for fully one minute. They are next exposed to the sun between woollen blankets for about a week, until they assume the characteristic brown colour. They are then spread out under zinc-roofed sheds and turned frequently to ensure equal drying. When the beans can be twisted round the finger without cracking, the "smoothing process" is commenced. This consists in passing the beans between the fingers frequently, apparently to distribute equally the unctuous liquid which exudes as the fermentation proceeds, and to which the lustre and suppleness of the bean are due. When dry they are tied up in bundles of uniform length. These are divided' into three commercial Sorts, —(1) those which are nearly black and glossy and which soon become frosted ; (2) those which are lighter in colour, more or less Spotted with grey, and not so glossy ; (3) those which are gathered m an unripe condition and become little, if at all, frosted over with crystals. In Guiana, where an inferior quality is prepared, the beans are placed on ashes and left until they begin to shrivel ; they are then wiped, rubbed over with oil, and, the lower end of the pod having been tied, are hung up in the air to dry.

Other Vorieties.—In Brazil, Peru, and other parts of South America a broad and fleshy vanilla is prepared, which has an inferior odour. It is believed to be obtained from /. pompone, Schiede, which has been found to contain, besides from '4 to °7 per cent. of vanillin, another ingredient, benzaldehyde, by which the odour of vanilla is modified. This variety is often distinguished as vanillon mm commerce. It is destitute of givre. Rio vanilla is collected on

the banks of the Parahyba river in the province of Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, and is obtained from V. palmarum, Lindl. It has been, found to yield 1:03 per cent. of vanillin. It is of inferior Batty, but might be improved if more attention were paid to oe curing process. Guiana vanilla is a coarse variety obtained a EF; guranensis, Splitberger. The pods are short, thick, and Tequently split open, and of inferior fragrance. None of the South-

merican vanillas appear to be used in Great Britain for flavouring purposes, but solely for perfumery. (E. M. H.)

VAN 67

VANINI, Lucinio (1585-1619), philosopher, was born at Taurisano, near Naples, in 1585. He studied philosophy and theology at Rome, and after his return to Naples applied himself to the physical studies which had come into vogue with the Renaissance. Though unmethodically cultivated and destitute of definite results, physical science power- fully affected men's imaginations in this transition period between the break-up of scholasticism and the rise of modern thought, and exercised an important influence upon philosophy. Giordano Bruno is perhaps the most striking instance of this, and Vanini in some respects re- sembles Bruno, though much his inferior both intellectu- ally and morally. Both represent the spirit of revolt against the old, the ferment and unrest of the 16th cen- tury. Vanini resembles Bruno, not only in his wandering life, but also in his anti-Christian bias, and in the tragic death which he suffered at the hands of the constituted authorities. From Naples Vanini proceeded to Padua, where he came under the influence of Pomponatius, whom he styles his divine master. Pomponatius belonged to the Alexandrist school of Aristotelians, and denied the im- mortality of the soul. Vanini speaks of Aristotle as " the god of philosophers, the dictator of human nature, and the sovereign pontiff of the sages," but gives the same naturalistic turn to the Aristotelian doctrine. At Padua, where he appears to have remained for several years, Vanini added law to his other acquirements, and he is at pains to print himself in his books as doctor utriusque juris. He wasalso ordained priest ; but, on leaving Padua, he led a roving life in France, Switzerland, and the Low Countries, supporting himself by giving lessons and using the opportunity, it would seem, for the dissemination of anti-religious views. He was obliged

to flee from Lyons to England in 1614, but was imprisoned in London for some reason for forty-nine days. Being set at liberty, he returned to Italy and made an attempt to teach in Genoa, but the same complaints being made against him drove him once more to France. Here he made a valiant effort to clear himself of suspicion by publishing a book against atheists,—Amphitheatrum diterne Providentie Divino- Magicum, necnon Astrologo-Catholicum, adversus Veteres Philosophos, Atheos, Epicureos, Peripateticos, et Stoicos (1615). It has been said that by the weakness of his answers he designedly gives his opponents the victory under pretence of refuting them; but, though the defini- tions of God are somewhat pantheistic, the book is suffi- ciently orthodox. Yet it cannot be taken as expounding his own views. Vanini expressly tells us so in his second (and only other published) work, and the tone of that work would be sufficient proof without this assurance. Though certified by two doctors of the Sorbonne, the second book undoubtedly preaches a pantheism nearly akin to atheism, and a sensualistic ethics strongly tinged with immorality. The title (De Admirandis Naturx Regine Dezxque Mortalium Arcanis) correctly indicates its general tenor. It was published at Paris in 1616, and was soon afterwards re-examined by the Sorbonne and condemned to the flames. This was the occasion of Vanini's leaving Paris, where he had been staying as chaplain to Marshal de Bassompierre, to whom the book is dedicated. He began to teach in Toulouse, but soon roused the clergy and magistrates against him. He was arrested in Novem- ber 1618, and after a prolonged trial was condemned, as an atheist, to have his tongue cut out, and to be strangled at the stake, his body to be afterwards burned to ashes. This savage sentence was executed on 9th February 1619. During his imprisonment, it is said, he professed the most orthodox Catholicism, but as soon as all hope was gone gave vent to his true feelings in ribald impieties. He appears to have met his fate with courage, mingled perhaps

with bravado. His moral character was loose and vicious, and his writings show him to have been a man of inordinate vanity. Though he possessed unquestionable gifts, neither originality nor profundity can be claimed for him as a thinker. His fate, however, has given him a species of fame.

The best modern account of Vanini is to be found in Cousin's Fragments de Philosophie Cartésienne. His works have been repub- lished by Rousselot.

VANLOO, Cuartes ANDREW (1705-1765), subject painter, a younger brother of John Baptist Vanloo (see below), was born at Nice on 15th February 1705. He received some instruction from his brother, and like him studied in Rome under Luti. Leaving Italy in 1723, he worked in Paris, where he gained the first prize for his- torical painting. After again visiting Italy in 1727, he was employed by the king of Sardinia, for whom he painted a series of subjects illustrative of Tasso. In 1734 he settled in Paris, and in 1735 became a member of the French Academy ; and he was decorated with the order of St Michael and appointed principal painter to the king. By his simplicity of style and correctness of design, the result of his study of the great Italian masters, he did much to purify the modern French school; but the con- temporary praise that was lavished upon his productions now appears undue and excessive. His Marriage of the Virgin is preserved in the Louvre. He died at Paris on 15th July 1765.

VANLOO, Joun Baptist (1684-1745), subject and por- trait painter, was born at Aix in Provence on 14th January 1684. He was instructed in art by his father. Having at an early age executed several pictures for the decoration of the church and public buildings at Aix, he was employed on similar work at Toulon, which he was obliged to leave during the siege of 1707. He was patron- ized by the prince of Carignan, who sent him to Rome, where he studied under Benedetto Luti. Here he was much employed on church pictures, and in particular executed a greatly praised Scourging of Christ for St Maria in Monticelli. At Turin he painted the duke of Savoy and several members of his court. Then, removing to Paris, where he was elected a member of the French Academy, he executed various altar-pieces and restored the works of Primaticcio at Fontainebleau. In 1737 he came to England, where he attracted attention by his por- trait of Colley Cibber and of Owen McSwiny, the theatrical manager ; the latter, like many other of Vanloo's works, was engraved in mezzotint by the younger Faber. He also painted Sir Robert Walpole, whose portrait by Vanloo in his robes as chancellor of the exchequer is in the National Portrait Gallery (London), and the Prince and Princess of Wales. He did not, however, practise long in England, for his health failing he retired to Paris in 1742, and after- wards

to Aix, where he died on 19th December 1745. His likenesses were striking and faithful, but seldom flattering, and his heads are forcible in colouring. The draperies and accessories in his pictures were usually painted by Van Achen, Eccardt, and Root.

VANNES (Breton Gwened), a town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Morbihan and an episcopal see, is situated on a little stream, 10 miles from the Gulf of Morbihan and 84 north-west of Nantes on the railway to Brest. The narrow, steep, and. crooked streets of the old town, which lie on a hill facing the south, are surrounded by fortifications of the 14th, 15th, and 17th centuries, pierced by four gates and flanked by nine towers and five bastions, connected by battlements. Some of the remains are Roman, and in the Constable's Tower Olivier de Clisson was confined in 1387. The modern suburbs, with public buildings, barracks, convents, squares, walks, and the port

surround the old town. The archeological museum con- tains one of the richest collections of prehistoric remains in Europe. There are also a museum of natural history and a library (10,000 volumes). The cathedral of St Peter overlooks the old town; burnt by the Normans in the 10th century, it was rebuilt in the 13th, 15th, and 18th centuries. It has no architectural interest, but contains the relics and tomb of St Vincent FrErRer (¢.v.). The curious round Chapelle du Pardon was built in 1557 in the Italian style. Some interesting old houses, including that of St Vincent Ferrer and that of the parlement of Brittany, the rich private collections of M. de Limur, the huge bar- racks, and three large hospitals should also be mentioned. In 1882 thirty-five vessels (3480 tons) entered and seventy- four (7225 tons) left the port of Vannes, which is access- ible to vessels of 150 tons; those of 800 tons can come to within 2 miles. The population in 1881 was 16,667 (commune 19,284), and had increased by 1886 to 18,127 (commune 20,036).

Vannes (Dariorigum), the capital of the Veneti, was at the head of the Armorican league against Julius Cesar, who in 56 B.c. overcame their fleet and opened up their country by six roads. St Paternus, the first bishop, was consecrated in 465. In the 5th century Vannes was ruled for a time by independent counts, but soon came under the yoke of the Franks. Nominoe,

the lieutenant of Louis the Pious in Brittany, assumed the title of king in 848, and one of his brothers was the founder of a line of counts who distinguished themselves against the Normans in the 9th and 10th centuries. Vannes be- came part of the duchy of Brittany under Geoffrey, who died in 1008, and the estates of Brittany met there for the first time after the death of Arthur of Brittany. In the course of the War of Suc- cession the town was besieged four times in 1342. Duke John IV. built here the castle of L' Hermine and made it his habitual residence. In 1487 the town was for a year in the hands of Charles VIII. of France. In 1532 Brittany was definitively united to France. The estates met at Vannes several times in the 17th and 18th centuries. During the Revolution this town was the scene of highly dramatic episodes, including the execution of some of the prisoners of Quiberon.

VANNUCCI. See Perucino.

VAPOUR. See Evaporation.

VAR, a department of France, formed in 1790 of part of Provence, but reduced in 1860 by the formation of the department of Alpes-Maritimes, so that the Var no longer flows through the department to which it gives its name. Situated between 42° 58' and 43° 55' N. lat. and 5° 39' and 6° 57' E. long., Var is bounded by the Mediterranean on the S., by Alpes-Maritimes on the E., by Basses-Alpes on the N., and by Bouches-du-Rhéne on the W. In the N.W. it touches the department of Vaucluse. The river Verdon on the N. and the Siagne on the N.E. are natural boundaries. The surface of the department is one of the most broken in France; the highest point is in the north- east, where a peak of the Alps rises to 5620 feet and is surrounded by others ranging from 4500 to 5000 feet. These calcareous hills are much fissured and very dry on the higher plateaus, but are rich in springs, which occasion a very beautiful verdure in the valleys. Towards the west rises the St Baume (3700 to 3800 feet), which is connected on the south with the hills above Toulon (2300 feet). The Maures (2550 feet), which extend between the coast from Hyéres to Fréjus, and the valley of the Argens form, geologically speaking, a sort of island in Provence, being composed of granite, gneiss, and schists. To the north of the Argens rises the independent Estérel Range (2020 feet), mostly composed of igneous rocks, with some

schists and porphyry. The principal river is the Argens (71 miles), which drains the larger portion of the depart- ment, traversing it from west to east, and falling into the sea a little south of Fréjus. Its minimum volume is 72,000 cubic feet, even in the driest weather and when most lavishly drawn on for irrigation. Nominally it is navigable for 11 miles, but in point of fact it is used only for floating timber. Draguignan, the chef-lieu of Var, is

situated on the Nartuby, the principal tributary of the Argens. Other streams are, in the north the Verdon, a tributary of the Durance, in the west the Huvaune and Arc, in the south the Gapeau, and in the east the Siagne. The coast-line, which is one of the most beautiful and picturesquely varied in France, runs from west to east between the Gulf of La Ciotat and Cape Comarat, then from south-west to north-east between the Gulfs of St Tropez and La Napoule. The shore is dotted from west to east with the sand-covered remains of the Phoczan city of Tauroentum ; the little ports of Bandol and St Nazaire ; the peninsula of Cape Sicié, 1180 feet high, with its projection Cape Cépet (see TouLon) ; the roads of Toulon ; the roads of Giens, the site of the Gallo-Roman town of Pomponiana ; the peninsula of Giens, formerly an island attached to the mainland by two long spits of sand, between which lies the lagoon of Les Pesquiers with its "salines"; the great anchorage of Hyéres, shut off from the Mediterranean on the south by the hilly and wooded islands of Porquerolles, Port-Cros, and Le Levant; the bold promontories of the Maures Mountains, dividing the coast into lovely bays; Cape Comarat (430 feet), with a lighthouse ; the deep Gulf of St Tropez, with perhaps the best anchorage in all Provence; the Gulf of Fréjus, where owing to the accumulated alluvial deposits of the Argens the site of the Roman port of Forum Julii is now occu- pied by the inland town of St Raphael; the porphyry headlands of the Estérel Range, with the roads of Agay between them; and Cape Roux (1486 feet). The climate is remarkably fine and mild on the coast, where there is complete shelter from the north wind, but is more severe in the mountains. Hyéres and St Raphael are favourite invalid resorts. The average temperature is 58° Fahr. at Toulon, 59° at Hyéres. The annual rainfall is 19 inches at Toulon and 24 in the valley of the Argens.

Of the total area of 1,489,488 acres 379,021 are arable, 529,660 under wood, 185,333 under vineyards, 14,857 are meadows and orchards, 49,606 pasture, and 142,466 uncultivated. The live stock includes 8460 horses (many of Arab blood), 13,230 mules, 5420 asses, 3015 cattle, 105,840 sheep (wool-clip in 1879, 234 tons 4 cwts., valued at £10,000), 19,900 pigs, and 14,815 goats. There were 14,380 beehives (42 tons 10 cwts. of honey and 28 tons 7 ewts. of wax in 1879). In 1884 366 tons 15 ewts. of silk cocoons were produced. The crops in 1884 were 1,485,000 bushels of wheat, 13,200 of meslin, 11,000 of rye, 30,250 of barley, 7150 of maize, 2640 of millet, 125,400 of oats, 4,840,000 of potatoes, 2512 tons of beetroot, and 103,000 tons of different kinds of fodder. The vines, reduced by 60 per cent. since 1875 by the phylloxera, yielded in 1884 over 7,000,000 gallons of wine (average of previous 10 years over 29,000,000 gallons). In 1879 olives occupicd 77,777 acres and yielded 1,384,856 bushels ; four-fifths of the crop was pressed for oil and yielded 5256 tons. Mulberries, strawberries, pears, peaches, plums, figs, almonds, oranges, pomegranates, lemons, jujubes, guavas, and Japanese medlars are grown; and the laurel, palm tree, date tree, eucalyptus, cactus, and sugar cane flourish, An export trade is carried on in flowers, and also in truffles, capers, and onions. The forests are planted with white and evergreen oaks, cork trees, maritime pines, and chestnuts. In the dense, and almost virgin, forest of St Baume are beeches, maples, limes, oaks, elms, yews, and pines, and the flora of the district is botanically most interesting. Var possesses mines of Iron, lead, aluminium, and coal (2846 tons of coal, 2075 tons of lignite in 1885). From 300 to 400 workmen are employed in the Production of salt and chemicals. Hyéres (population 13,170 in 1886) produces annually from 20,000 to 25,000 tons of salt. Marble, plaster, stone, chalk, clay, sandstone, and sand for glass are quarried or dug. There are 200 manufactories of pottery, earthen- ware, and tiles. Toulon (57,635), La Seyne (12,186), St Tropez (3622), and Bandol, where ships are built, are the chief industrial centres, There are silk, woollen (250 spindles, 6 looms), and cotton (350 spindles, 9 looms) mills, hat, cloth, and cork manufactories (1000 workmen), tan-yards, paper-mills (670 tons in 1879), print- ing establishments, tinned food manufactories, soap-works (172 tons), breweries, glass-works, oil-mills—in all 173 establishments. are tunny, anchovy, and sardine fisheries. The department

as 140 miles of railway, 164 of national roads, and 2448 of other Toads. About half the population of 288,577 (1881) were agricul- tural, 46,691 manufacturing, and 30,228 marine. In 1886 the total

population of the department numbered 283,689. Var is divided into 8 arrondissements (Draguignan, the chef-lieu, with 8562 in- habitants in 1886 ; Brignoles, with 4393 inhabitants ; aud TouLon (q.v.), 28 cantons, and 145 communes; it forms the diocese of Fréjus, and belongs to the jurisdiction of the Aix court of appeal and to the district of the Marseilles army corps.

VARASD (Germ. Warasdin), a royal free city of Hungary, in the county of Varasd, in Croatia, lies about 40 miles north-north-east of Zigraéb (Agram), on the river Drave. It was once used as a stronghold, but now only the castle remains fortified. Varasd possesses several churches of interest, a fine new county hall, two gym- nasia, and a real school. It has also tobacco and liqueur factories, and enjoys a brisk trade in wood and fruits, especially plums. The inhabitants numbered 13,701 in

1880.

VARENIUS, Bernuarpvs, or BERNHARD VAREN (1622- 1670), geographer, was born at Hitzacker on the Elbe, in the Liineburg district of Hanover. His early years were spent at Uelzen, where his father was court preacher to the duke of Brunswick. Varenius studied at the gym- nasium of Hanover and at Kénigsberg and Leyden uni- versities, where he devoted himself to medicine, taking his degree in 1649. He then settled at Amsterdam, in- tending to practise medicine. But the recent discoveries of Tasman, Schouten, and other Dutch navigators, and his friendship for Blauw and other geographers, roused in Varenius an interest in geography, and it was in this study that the principal achievements of his life were gained. He died in 1670.

In 1649 he published, through Elzevir, his Descriptio Regni Japoniz, an excellent see which may still be read with profit. In this was included a translation into Latin of Schouten's account of Siam and chapters on the

religions of various peoples. Next year appeared the work by which he is best known, his Geographia Generalis, in which he endeavonred to lay down the general principles of the subject on a wide scientific basis, accord- ing to the knowledge of his day. The work is divided into (1) absolute geography, (2) relative geography, and (3) comparative geography. The first investigates mathematical facts relating to the earth as a whole, its figure, dimensions, motions, their measure- ment, &c. The second part considers the earth as affected by the sun and stars, climates, seasons, the difference of apparent time at different places, variations in the length of the day, &c. The third part treats briefly of the actual divisions of the surface of the earth, their relative positions, globe and map construction, longitude, navigation, &c. Though the subject as treated by Varenius is erude and ill-defined, still, with the materials at his command, he dealt with it on the whole in a really philosophic and scientific spirit ; and it long held its position as the best treatise on scientific geography in existence. The work went through many editions. Sir Isaac Newton introduced several important improvements into the Cambridge edition of 1672; in 1712 Dr Jurin issued an edition with a valuable appendix ; in 1733 the whole work was translated into English by Dugdale; and in 1736 Dugdale's second edition was revised by Shaw. In 1755 a French translation of Shaw's edition appeared in Paris, There was also an Italian edition printed at Naples in 1716.

See a paper on Varenius by H. Blink in Tijdschr. van het Nederl. Aardrijks. Genootschap, ser. ii. pt. iti., 1587.

VARIABLE, Comptex. 1. The solution of a quad- ratic equation involves the extraction of the square root of a quantity which may be negative. In that case the solution is of the form a+ — 6%, which may be written a+b/-—1, or a+7, putting, with Gauss, for brevity, /-—1=i. Analysis was, therefore, at a very early stage compelled to contemplate the possibility that symbols of magnitude may represent combinations of dissimilar con- stituents; but it is only within the 19th century, mamly owing to the initiative of Cauchy and of Gauss, that the whole domain of analysis has been explored from this point of view. A quantity, a+b, consisting of a real part containing a units and an imaginary part containing b units, was called by Gauss a complex number,

and the conception of it includes those of each kind, the real and the purely imaginary as they are found from it by making

*—————— = St (t:*S*

in succession b=0 and a=0. Quantities thus expressed are subject to all the ordinary algebraic rules applicable to real quantities, and in addition to the relation 7?= —1. The occurrence of this symbol 7 in an identity thus singles out two distinct identities: for instance, if the product of ati and a'+12b' be A+7¢B, we have 4=aa'—6b' and B=ab' + ba'; and in this sense Cauchy, as lately as 1844, still maintained that every imaginary equation was only the symbolic representation of two equations between real quantities. If either or both of the real quantities be variable, the quantity is called a complex variable ; adopt- ing the usual notation, it is then written e+iy=2 In order that 2 may vanish, both « and y must do so, as it is not possible for the real part to cancel the imaginary. But either part becoming infinite renders z infinite, and a breach of continuity in the change of the variable z arises when either x or y is discontinuous ; but, as long as both change continuously, z is also a continuous complex variable.

2. As long as a variable is conceived to admit of real values only, the distances from a fixed point, measured along a right line, are sufficient to represent it. These may be taken positively or negatively, and in both direc- tions, through all magnitudes, from a vanishing amount to values large beyond conception, 7.¢., infinite. But, in- asmuch as a complex variable z=«+zy depends on two perfectly independent real variables, « and y, its geometri- cal realization demands a field of two dimensions. When this is assumed to be a plane, to each value z=x2+1y cor- responds a point P of the plane whose rectangular coor- dinates referred to an arbitrarily assumed pair of axes in the plane have the real values x and y. 'Thus to all real quantities in the old sense correspond the points of the axis of abscissze and to pure imaginaries those of the axis of ordinates. The coordinates of the point P may change quite independently, just as the variables # and y do. If the point P be given, the corre- ¥ sponding value of z is known, and also for a given value of z the corresponding point P is known. The continuous varia- tion of zis exhibited by the motion of Pon acurve. The

complex number may also be written in the following form, which is found as early as Kuler. Joining the point P to the origin O, the line OP =p is called the modulus, and the angle XOP= 6 which this line forms with the positive axis of «, or the prime axis, is called the argument (or amplitude) of the complex a + iy. Thus p= + "22+, cos 0=z2/p, sin 0=y/p, and z=x+iy =p(cos +7 sin 0)=pe®, This, again, shows that the variable vanishes only when x=0 and y=0, v.é., When p=0, since no real angle makes cos +7 sin 0=0. In this way the quantity is represented by rotating through the angle from the prime axis a line whose length is p. The value of the radical 22+ is always taken positively ; the difference of sign arises from a reversal of direction and is indicated by the angle in the factor ¢9, When P is given, p is unique and is determined by cos and sin : that is to say, it admits only of a certain value or of those which differ from it by integer multiples of 27. Thus two quantities are equal whose moduli are equal and their directions parallel. The modulus varies continuously with z, and so does the argument, except when z vanishes : that is, when the curve passes through the origin, the argument then undergoes generally a sudden change by 7.

3. Complex numbers form a system complete in them- selves, and any process of calculation on complex numbers always reproduces a complex number. Thus, as any such quantity is represented bya point approached from a given

**) x x Fig. 1.*

VARIABLE

point, the result of calculation also has a point or points to represent it. This is illustrated as follows.

The addition of the quantity z=x+7y to 2'=x'+iy' produces %=a2+a2'+t(y+y'); the point z has the coordinates x+2', y+y': that is, it is the extremity of the diagonal of the parallelogram ineluded by the lines Oz and Oz'. Y If a third quantity 2/=z"iy" were added on, the result would be represented by the diagonal of the parallelogram ineluded by Oz, and Oz'; and so on. Sub- traetion is the addition of a line with opposite sign. The modu- lus of the sum or difference of two quantities is found by as- 0 ' é x

suming p, cos 6, =p eos 6p' cos 0' Fig. 2. and p, sin 0,=p sin 6/' sin 6', whence p;?=p?+ p=k 2pp' cos (9-6). Thus the modulus of the sum is never greater than the sum of the moduli and the modulus of the differenee never less than their difference. The line zz, in fig. 2 is found by subtracting z from 2, and is thus seen to be equal to*

the parallel line Ov. The multiplication of z=pe? by 2 =pe" gives Z=z2'=pp'c9+ ; that is, we have to measure along a line inelined to the prime axis at an angle equal to the sum of the arguments a length representing the product of the moduli; in order to determine this, the unit of length must be introduced. If this be OU measured along the prime axis, Z is constructed by placing on Oz' a triangle z'O0Z similar and similarly placed to UOz. From this we can proceed at once to division ; as an example, when 2-2, Z'~~2 Z1~~% 2? ing 4, 2'), 2', is homothetie with that formed by z, #, 2".

In like manner we might proceed to powers of com- plex quantities with real exponents: eg., every complex number has distinct nth roots included in the form a/2= X/p. e6+2Kr)m ; then to powers with complex expon- ents; to logarithms of complex numbers: for example, every number has infinitely many logarithms to the base e, which differ by multiples of 277, in accordance with the formula log z=log p+i(@+ 2kr) ; and, finally, to powers with com- plex base and complex exponent. All these in turn lead again to complex numbers, and to such only.

4, In dealing with real numbers any definite range of values is represented by the points of a finite right line; but to realize a definite range of complex numbers we must have recourse in general to a "region" of two dimen- sions of the plane bounded by some curve. For instance, all complex numbers whose modulus is less than p and greater than p' occupy a region bounded by two concen- tric circles with radii p and p' round the origin. All those whose moduli are equal to p form a linear region, namely, the circumference of the circle round the origin with that radius. A region of two dimensions is called connected when we can pass from any point within it to any other point within it without crossing the boundary curve. A quantity is said to be unrestrictedly variable in a region when it can assume all numerical values in this region. It is said to be continuously variable

when all values which it assumes always belong to a finite connected region. Thus a variable is said to be unrestrictedly continuous for a certain value when it can take all the values which belong to a finite region, however small, which includes this value. The variable is restrictedly continuous for this value when the values it takes near this one form a region on whose boundary the value itself occurs, or it may be a region of one dimension. It is discontinuous for this value when the point is isolated, and does not belong to any region. When we know two definite values of a real variable, we know all the intermediate values which it must assume in passing from one to the other; but in the case of the complex variable there is an essential difference: it can pass continuously from one given value to another by infinitely numerous series of continuously consecutive values. In geometric terms, with the real variable we can only travel along the axis

the triangle formed by the three points represent-

VARIABLE

of «, with the complex we can travel along any path whatever leading from one point to the other.

5. When the values of one complex variable w=u+1 are determined by the values of another z= + zy, in such a way that for each value of z within a definite region one or more values can be assigned to w by performing a defi- nite set of mathematical operations on z, then w is said to be a function of the complex variable z. Functions are distinguished as one-valued and many-valued according to the number of values of w which belong to one value of z, as algebraic and transcendental according to the form in which the variables appear, and as zmplicit and explicit according as the relation is solved for wor not. The course of the function w will accordingly be illustrated by points in another plane or planes having the rectangular coordi- nates u and v, and its dependence on z will be geometri- cally a transformation from one plane to the other. A yery simple instance is when w= 1/z, where the transforma- tion is equivalent to geometric inversion. If the explicit function w=f(z) is to be unrestrictedly continuous in the region for which it has definite values, there must be a finite connected area, however small, around any admis- sible value of z, to which corresponds a connected region of w: that is, wand v must vary

continuously when w and y do so. Let z be increased by Az=—Axv+zAy and put w+ Aw=(ut Au) i(v Av) =f(2+ Az) ; then in whatever way Av and Ay may converge to zero we must have lim Aw =0 and limAv=0: in other words, w is continuous for a value z when this value can be included in a region such that for every value z+ Az within it the modulus of the difference mod(Aw) = mod[f(z + Az) — f(z)] = VAu? + Av? is less than any assignable small number.

6. We proceed to give somé elementary examples of functions.

Ex. 1. The power with positive integer exponent, w=" is a one- valued (monotrope) function which is continuous for the entire plane, since w=p"cos m0, v=p™sin m0 are continuous functions of p and which do not alter when the argument is increased by multiples of 27. When z becomes infinite so does w, and thus this value z is a singular one (pole) for the function, as contrasted with a regular one, which is such that a function has a finite value continuously changing with z.

Ex. 2. Any rational integer function of the nth degree in 2. S2)= My + az + age? + ... +2" is one-valued and continuous for the entire plane and has no singularity, except for z= o, for which it becomes infinite (pole).

Ex, 8. The power with a rational fractional inden.

w= sft =pP(cos(0-+2bn) isinZ(0 2k),

where & takes all integer values from 0 to g—1. Each value of & determines at each spot the value of a branch of the function, which is therefore a many-valued (polytrope) one. At the points z=0 and z= all branches have the same value. Thus, if p/g>0, at 2=0 the value of wis 0; atz=o its valueis o. These two points are called branch (eritical) points of the function. If we wish to contemplate the values of the function which belong to one branch, so as to have each branch by itself in general a continuous function, we employ the method of Cauchy: that is, we draw from the origin to the point infinity a curve which does not enclose any space, for Instance, the positive part of the axis ofz. Suppose we let p=1, q=2, then w=preX?t+2kr), where L=0 or 1. Taking £=0, the values of the independent variable and of the function along the prime axis for 9=0 are

z=p and w= p?; along the axis of y when §=7/2 they are z=pi and w=pet™ ; along the negative axis of « when 0=7 they are z= — p and w=pie?™'; along the negative axis of y, when §=37/2, z= — pi and w=pte?™; and along the prime axis, on completing a rotation, when 0=27, z=p and w= — ph. Hence, for any value of p, w is continuous all round the circle, but its ultimate value is different from its initial value.

Thus, as will happen in general with many-valued functions along their branching sections, the values be- longing to points alongside of the prime axis having posi- tive ordinates, however small, differ by finite amounts from those for the corresponding points, however near that line, having negative ordinates. The branch of the function

71

so constructed is therefore discontinuous along the prime axis. Accordingly we conceive the plane cut through along this prime axis, and the branch of the function is easily seen to be continuous in the connected surface, which con- sists of the infinite plane so cut through. Riemann per- fected this method of Cauchy and enabled us to keep all the branches simultaneously in view, and thus regard the function as unique and continuous upon all admissible paths without restriction. His process is in the case of a q-valued function to let the variable z move upon qg different plane leaves.

*Thus, as above, when y=1, g=2, taking the case £=1, let us suppose z to move in a second plane; proceeding as before for the points of the primeaxis, we have now0=0,z=p, w=pte™' — ~ ph; and, when 0=2m,z=pand w=pte?™'=pt. Thus, though the rotation has brought w round continuously from the values for small positive ordinates to those for small negative ones, these last differ finitely from the first. Now these final values in the second plane are the same as the initial ones in the first plane ; moreover, the final values in the first leaf are the same as the initial ones in the second ; hence, if the second leaf be cut through os Soe all along the prime axis, as the oe first was, and if we conceive the —~—~————. * leaves to cross one another (as Fig. 3. indicated in profile in fig. 3) all along the cut, we have a connected two-leaved surface, called by Riemanna winding surface of the first order, to each point of which corresponds a definite value of the*

function w=2%, and to each continuous curve in it, whether in the same leaf or passing through both, correspond values of the function which vary continuously ; every closed curve which crosses the branching section either an even number of times or not at all leads finally back to the initial value. This conception can evidently be extended to surfaces with a greater number of leaves corresponding to functions admitting of a greater number of values.

7. In considering infinite series we must explain the con- ception of absolute convergence introduced by Cauchy: an infinite series of real quantities is absolutely convergent when the sum of its positive terms taken apart, and like- wise that of its negative terms taken by themselves, are each finite. When these are not separately finite, a series which converges for some value of the variable is semz-convergent. A complex series 2(u+7v) converges absolutely when the w series and the v series are both absolutely convergent. Hence it can be shown that the necessary and sufficient condition that a complex series may converge absolutely is that the series of the moduli of its terms converges. Such a series presents the same value if the sequence of its terms is rearranged according to any law whatever. Thus an infinite series of ascending powers of z the complex vari- able, dy+a,2+dg27+...4n2”...=f(z), with complex coefficients, 1s absolutely convergent for any value of z for which the series A)+A,p+ A,p?+...Anp”... formed by the moduli of its terms is convergent; and vice versa. In geometric language, if such a series be absolutely conver- gent for the point corresponding to any value of z, it is abso- lutely convergent for all other points equally distant from the origin of coordinates ; these are therefore situated on a circle. Itis also absolutely convergent at all points within this circle, and therefore the region of convergence of this series is always a circle round the origin. The radius of the circle of convergence of a series is the greatest value of p for which the series of moduli converges. It is found by the con-

— F ; , A dition that as increases indefinitely we must have aa <1 n

“.. As the terms of an infinite series of powers

A, : ; are one-valued, the series itself, so long as it converges, is a one-valued function of the complex variable, which does not become infinite

anywhere. It can also be proved that this function is continuous: that is, if z and z+ 6 be values of z for which it converges, then lim[,/(z + 8) — f(z)] =0, when S=0,

8. When a variable quantity depends upon two others in such a way that, if their values are given, its value is

or p<

72

known, it is of course a function of them; but, inasmuch as for real values of « and y, when ~=x+iy) is given, we know both # and y, Cauchy considered any function 7'(2, 7) to be a function of z On the other hand, Riemann considered a function /'(x, y) to be one of z when it contains az and y only in the combination x+7y. In fact, if we have

6 6

df=— ay dy for any indefinitely small increments ae

dx and dy, inasmuch as this may be written Vor. 26r : 1/6f oF df= 5 & = a (dx—idy) + 5 (s-i = (da + idy) and if dF must always be zero as long as d(x+7y) vanishes, éF oF ; Sane then we must have 5 7 a 0. This, which is the con- dition that, when « and y are perfectly unrestricted (and so may each be complex), they may enter only in the com- bination «

; dF 1/6Ff .é6F xe U/OE aeons

in general = = 3 (+4 .) e7 210 4. 3 & —2 =) depends

not only on the value of z but also on the direction 0 of the ow

that is, for each point z, in case the function is monogeneous, there is a derived function with regard to the complex variable, independent of the direction in which this vari- able is supposed to change. If the relation do not hold, there isa different derived for each such direction. When we separate J' into its real and imaginary parts, we may write #=u-+i, and the preceding relation becomes

8 dv .fdv du du dv éu dv

e-ytilets) =0, NCO oy ee ae Sota Sy oy

Hence further a2 gan ° and satya 0:

9. A function of a complex variable which is continuous, one-valued, and has a derived function when the variable moves in a certain region of the plane is called by Cauchy synectic in this region, and by Briot and Bouquet! holo- morphe, to indicate that it is like an integer function, for which this property holds throughout the entire plane. Weierstrass styles it an analytic function. The property that dw/dz is independent of dy/dx furnishes a geometrical relation between the figure which w describes in its plane and that which z describes. In fact, let values w,, w,, ws; correspond to the values z,, 2, 2, then, if <3 — 7 = 1, as already observed, the triangle for the values w is similar and similarly placed to that for the values z; in that case Ws Ws — Wy

—w pS ae C " PUPS ded ae But, if we suppose 2, to close up to z,,

ag — % then w, closes up to w,, and, if z, close up to z,, w, closes up tow. In the limit the equality of these quotients for all directions of variation of z shows that the figure which w describes in its plane is in its infinitely small parts similar to that described by z, and two intersecting curves

SSS

1 The word monodrome is used by Cauchy and monotrope by Briot and Bouquet to indicate the case in which, supposing z has to move in a certain region, all the paths that.lead from an initial point % to any point z within the region lead to one and the same value of w; in other cases w will be polytrope. When w is holomorphe in a region except at a point 2, where it becomes infinite without 1/w ceasing to be holomorphe near this, this point is called a pole or an infinity of w. A rational fraction has the roots of its denominator as poles; and a function otherwise holomorphe having poles is called by these writers méromorphe. Some writers prefer the terms integer and fractional functions.

VARIABLE

in the plane of w cut at the same angle as the correspond- ing curves in the plane of z, provided always that d2/dz is neither zero nor infinity.

10. Let z+ be a complex value within the circle of con- vergence of the series f(z) =dy) . ay2 42 +...an2”..., then we have

Seth) =a) t+ ay(2 th) +a(2+rhPt+...tan(z+h+ ... Now, if we arrange this absolutely convergent series by powers of &, the coefficients are infinite series which can be proved to be the successive derived functions of f(z) ; thus, when a one-valued function f(z) can be expanded ina series of powers of z, the expansion can be made only in a single manner. We have therefore

A” (nr)

*AetM=sO+PFO*BP OF +I OF oo*

which is Taylor’s theorem for a function given by an in- finite series of powers of a complex variable.

11. We proceed to examine at how many points within a circle of convergence of radius # the function /(z) vanishes, 7.¢., has a root. In the first place it can be shown that, if R be finite, the function cannot vanish at infinitely many points in the circle without vanishing identically, that is, being zero everywhere in the circle. Hence we can only have a finite number of roots in any finite portion of the plane, and we may suppose noné of these to lie upon the boundary circle. If the function vanish at any point z,, then, when we take the expansion

a 2-2 z—2,)% Ae) =f +72) = fla) +e) + GH 7”) + be, we have f(z,)=0. We may also have f(z,)=0, f’(z,) =0, &c. Suppose that the first of these which does not vanish is f™(z,), or that the function f(z) vanishes for z= z, to the Z ih 2-2 order a, then oo Ne i JO(a) + eri FON + &e. Now let this quotient be rearranged according to powers of z, and suppose the function to vanish at 2, to the order 6, we can expand by powers of z—z, whence we Fe) | ;

Cae ae ultimately =¢(z),—a series not vanishing anywhere within the region. If j(z) were a ra- tional integer algebraic function, we should find ¢ (z) a constant, and we see thata+ B+...&c. =n: that is, such a function cannot have more than roots in the region of convergence, 7.¢., in the entire plane. Taking logarithms, we have log f(z) = alog(z— z,) + Blog(z—%) +... +log (2). Hence, taking for each logarithm on the right one of its innumerable values, let z move from any point A round the circumference of the boundary circle, keeping its interior on the left. Since z—z, vanishes only once within the circle, namely, for z=z, log(z—2,)=logp+70 will become logp+%(@+ 27) when z returns to A. Similarly log(z—2z,) will differ from its initial value by 2a; and so for the others. But, as ¢(z) does not vanish anywhere in the circle, log¢(z) will return to its original value at A. Hence, if there be v vanishing points or roots within the circle of convergence, the value of log f(z) changes by 2z7v, when z travels all round the circumference. Conversely, if the logarithm alter by 2c7v as z travels round the circle of convergence, the number of roots within the circle is v.

12. This theorem of Cauchy's at once leads to the fundamental theorem of algebra, that every equation of the nth degree f(z) =a) +az+ag?+ ... anz"=0 has n complex roots. For we can take the radius of the circle so great that the value of a,z"" far exceeds that of the other terms ; and, writing f(z) =an2(1/P), the modulus of P can be made as small as we please. Hence log f(z) = log(anz") + log(1+P). Now as we go round the circle log(1 + P) differs as little as we please from log(1) = + 2him, and so, whatever value we begin with, as the corresponding

get

YARAABLE

logarithm varies continuously, the value of log(1 +P) will not have changed by a multiple of 277 when we return to .the point we set out from, But, since the point z=0 is

within the circle, log(anz") = nlog(anz) changes its argu- ment by 2.27¢ in consequence of the circuit. Hence log f(z) changes by 27m: that is, in the circle of conver- gence whose radius is as large as may be required there are always » values for which the rational function Apt m2+a27+ ... +an2

vanishes. Some of these may be coincident ; but in all cases the total number of the orders of the different vanishings is n° 13. If two given points z and Z be joined by any curve of finite length, and if we take as many intermediate points as we please 2),2),...2n-1 upon the curve and form the sum FG 4-40) +14) (22-1) + F(a) (2-22) ++ +S (en -1(F—-2n-1)) then the complex limiting value to which this sum tends as n is increased indefinitely is called the definite integral of the function f(z), formed from z to Z along the path prescribed by the equation of the curve. Having first – examined, after the manner of the theorems regarding real _ integrals, under what conditions this sum has a determinate limiting value, we have next to take into account that a definite complex integral differs essentially from a real one in that the path along which the variable z may travel from one limit to the other is perfectly arbitrary. We have therefore to investigate this problem: When is the integral of a complex function a unique function of its superior limit independent of the path of integration? In order to answer this we must recall an important theorem concern- ing the reduction of a double integral of a function to simple integrals along the boundary curve, which is in fact a case of Green's theorem (see INFINITESIMAL CaALcu-Lus, vol. xiii, p. 58) when confined to two variables, 14. Suppose P and @ are two real functions of « and y which are everywhere within a certain boundary finite and continuous, the theorem is then that the double integral

8Q 6 ih (= – 5) aed taken over the entire region is equal to the simple integral | (Pdx+Qdy) taken along the entire

boundary of the region.

Taking the positive directions of the axes as usual, we define the positive direc- tion along the boundary to be that for which the bounded surface is on the left hand; then, if dy | we have to exclude any portion, ¢9., a circular Space altogether within the external boundary, so that the points within It are to be regarded as not included in the 're- gion, the positive direc- tion of the boundary is that indicated by the arrows in fig. 4. In all the simple integrals the inte- gration must be effected in the positive direction thus explained, 8Q

To integrate va J, exdy with respect to «, let us split

up the region into elements by parallels to the axis of «. Select any one and, reading from left to right, denote the values of Q where the element crosses the boundary at the entrances by Q,, Q., &c., and at the exits by

/ rey QV', Q"; &e.; then [xae- —-Q,+Q'- Q.+Q" — &e., and pe thus sued = [Quay + [ray + [Oxy + [O'dy—Ke

Fig. 4.

Now in each of these integrals y goes through all its values from the least to the greatest, therefore dy is always to be taken positively. But, denoting by dy,, dy,, &c., and by dy', dy", &c., the projections on the axis of y of the ares of the boundary cut by the element as above, when we take the positive direction of the boundary into account, we have dy= —dy,= —dy,=&e. =+dy'=+dy"=&c;

thus SS Se ddy = | Q,dy, + | Q'dy' + | Qody, + ke. = | Ody,

where this is taken along the entire boundary in the positive direction. In like manner, dividing the region into elements parallel to the axis of y, and denoting the values of Pat the entrances, proceeding from below up- wards, by P;, P,, &c., and at the exits by P, P', &., we

P have a; ae a – | P\ dx + | P'dz – | P,dx + &c., where

dx is positive. Hence, as before, taking account of the positive direction of the boundary, dx=+dz,= +dz,

5P = &e.= —dx'= —dx"=&c., and consequently wh > mi

=— | P, dx, – ' Pda! – | Pdx, — &e. = — | Pdx, taking the integral in the positive direction along the entire boundary. Accordingly, putting these both together, we have the tone! 1 sg 6 surface integra, L & i dxdy = | (Pdx + Qdy), taken positively along the entire boundary. 'This proposition may be extended to complex values: when P= 2" +7P" and Q =Q' +7Q"", as the proposition is already proved for real

8Q 6P ay a values, we can put wh & – =) dxdy = vA i – %) dudy

.718Q” 8 P” ‘e¥ = – A dxdy ; then, applying it to each of these,

8Q 6

Vite ca i) daedy =| (Pax + Q’dy) + if Prax + Q”dy) dx Oy

= | (Pdx+Qdy). We assumed that there were no branch-

points within the region, or other points at which P or Q are discontinuous. If there were such, we should have to surround them with actual closed lines, as small as we please, and thus exclude them, introducing these lines as parts of the boundary of the region.

15. We can now let P=f(z), Q=i(z). We see that, if J(2) be an analytic function of z without exception in any

simply connected region, | f(z)dz=0 when taken all round ply g

the boundary of that region. If we take any two paths from z) to Z in this region, since these paths from z through A to 4 and back through B to z include such a region, we have L(~AZBz) =0 or I(~AZ)+1(ZBz)=0. But, as the value of the integral 1(7Bz,)= — I(zBZ) along the same path, the last equation becomes J(z,4Z) =J(z,BZ), or the value with which the integral starting from z arrives at Z is inde- pendent of the path travelled under the conditions sup- posed : it is a function of the upper limit only. The path zBZ is said to be reconcilable with the path zAZ. If the region within which /(z) is an analytic function be

multiply connected, J J(2)dz vanishes when taken positively

all round the boundary. The integral has a definite value along each separate boundary curve. For instance, if within the region we take a closed curve which includes a simply connected region, as a in fig. 5, the integral along this curve vanishes, But for a curve which includes a region along with a boundary curve, as f in fig. 5, the in- tegral has the same value as it

has for this boundary curve. Whence, if a function f(z) which has to be integrated lose the character of an analytic function in isolated places,

XXIV. — 10

74 VARI these must be excluded by surrounding them by curves as near them as we please and taking these curves as part of the boundary ; it can then be integrated in the multiply con- nected region so found. The integral for the boundary of sucha place may vanish or not. If not, the integral function is many-valued and branches at this place. If it vanish, the integral remains one-valued, but the point may still be a singular one for the integral : that is, the integral may at it Fig. 5.

cease to be finite or to be an analytic function.

16. If we know the value of any function and those of all its derived functions at any one point, and if we know that it is an analytic function within a finite connected region,—that is, that it is unique, continuous, and has a determinate first derived,—then Taylor's series for it converges throughout a circle round this point, which is included within the region ; and for each point within the region the function can be developed in a similar series. In other words, every function which is analytic without exception in a connected region can be expanded around each point of the region in a series of ascending positive integer powers. The method in which we show this is due to Cauchy. Let f(z) be an analytic function with- out any exception in a simply connected region (including the boundary) ; then, if t=u+v be any point within the region, the quotient Ae) is likewise an analytic function within the region, only the point z=¢ is a singular one, Surrounding ¢ by a circle whose radius p is as small as we please, we obtain a region bounded by two curves in which the quotient is analytic without exception. Hence, inte- grating the quotient along both boundaries, the sum of both integrals vanishes. In regard to the small circle put z—¢t=pe; therefore we get dz=ipe"d@, and for it

| Oa, -7 | A(t + pe")d@. Now f is continuous near

- 0

z==t, Hence p can' be taken so small that for all values of 6 the difference of f(t) and S(t+ pe") may be less than 6, where the modulus of & is as small as we please. Hence

, far ; . [2 ;

a | S(t + pe®)d6 and 7 | "f(t)d0 = 2enf(t) differ by a quan-

0 0

tity whose modulus is less than that of 278: thus, what-

ever be the value of p, we have 7 | "At + pe)d6 = 2imfi(t). mG ; ° 1 z LO = 2onf(t) =(, or x (t) eee | Aa, when the integral is taken positively along the outer boundary, and so along any curve which includes the point ¢ This is what Cauchy called the residue of the quotient function relative to its infinite ¢ We thus see that, when the values of a function J(z) are given along'a closed curve, and the function is analytic without excep- tion within this curve, the value of J(2) can be found for each internal point by means of a definite integral.

It was assumed that /(z) has throughout a derived.

Hence we have

This can be exhibited as a definite integral. In fact flt+At)—f) 1 dz : ar eeu F(2) st GoD Aiye—d) ; whence, letting

. 1 2)dz . At converge to zero, '(t) = Gn ees , where the integral may be taken along any path round t, provided it remain within the original region. But it follows that through- out this 7"(¢) also is an analytic function, for, as before,

ABLE

ny 21 f fede n nm |_fed f (0-35 /E In like manner f¢ =F aan Thus for all points in the region the function has higher deriveds of all orders, and they are all analytic functions. 17. We can now develop the function /(¢) in a series of powers. Let us select a point a, otherwise arbitrary, such that the

largest possible circle which can be drawn round it without going outside the region may include the point ¢, for which the function is to be expanded. For every point on the circumference of this circle we have

1

mod(¢ —a)

gent series. Now, substituting this in the equation

oo | fa, and taking the circle as curve of inte- ; 1 § (#2 AG gration, we find I) =5 { | FO te (—a) J a) ee +(t-a)? aie ye + &e. \ , which by the equations already

G-

established may also be written /(¢)=/(a) + (¢- a)f'(a)

t—a)?_, t-—a)> ., oD (ay EOD rays… verges unconditionally for all values of ¢ within the circle round @ which does not go outside the original region. This is Taylor's series for a complex function, and this deduction of it shows definitely how far its convergence extends, namely, to all points ¢ which are less distant from a than the nearest point of discontinuity or of ramification. Thus a function whose value, as well as those of all its derived functions, is known for a point is analytic in the neighbourhood of this point only when a finite circle, how- ever small, can be assigned within which this series con- verges. The series arrived at will, in general, not converge for all values of ¢ within the original region in which F(a) was assumed to be analytic. But we can vary the centre a So as to arrive at a circle, and thereby at a development, which embraces any such required point. If ¢ be at a finite distance, however small, from the circle, draw any curve from a to ¢ which shall be always at a finite distance from the boundaries. Let the circle round a meet this curve in the point a' between a and ¢: then by means of the series we can calculate the function f and its deriveds for a point on the curve and within the circle as near as we please to a', and thus take this as the centre of a new development all whose coefficients are known. The new circle of convergence cuts the curve in a point a", which is certainly nearer to 4. The continuation of this process must ultimately lead

to a circle which includes the point é, since the radii cannot diminish below a finite assignable quantity, the path aa'a"...t being always at finite distance from the boundaries. By this process we can also carry on an analytic function that is defined by a series of powers beyond its circle of convergence into a region which does not contain any singular point. Each such series of powers defines the function for a determinate circular region of convergence, and is said to be an element of the function. Different elements of the function are got according to the centre chosen for the expansion, and even the same value of the argument belongs to different elements of the function; but for a unique function the different elements must lead to the same value for the Same argument. 'I'wo or more analytic functions, however defined within given regions, are to be regarded as belong- ing to the same function only when the elements of one function can be derived from those of the others.

18. We conclude with illustrating by a few applica-

This expansion con-

a —

VAR LA BLE

tions to elliptic functions of a complex variable. Calling R(z)=(z—-a)(2-b)(2-e)(2-d), then (2) will be ex- pressed as a unique function by means of a two-leaved Riemann's surface. Its branches take the same valucs at each of the points a, b,c, d. Let the leaves be pierced through and joined transversely along the lines a to 6 and etod (fig. 6). Assume that in the upper leaf ./R(z) at the origin is + and inthe under Y, leafis—&. Every path which, when projected on the upper leaf, goes an odd number of times round an odd number of branch- points leads from one leaf into the other; on the other hand, a path which goes an even num- ber of times round an odd number of branch-points, or which goes round

x

Fig. 6, an even number of branch-points, ends in the leaf in which

it originally began. Now let us investigate what changes

dz —

——— z)d; W. de- TRO and to { RG) z when z scribes part of a vanishing circle round the branch- point a. First, let z=a+pe'®, then dz=iped0, R(z) =pel{a —b+ pe')(a—c + pe'®)(a — d+ pe) = pe#S. Hence EL >») =a yphedte i]*

JRO) apreto} Jé and / R(z). dz = ipiet#"dd VS. But, when p is evanescent, lim /.S= \/[(a—b)(a—c)(a — d)]=T7, and is therefore neither infinitely great nor evanes- cent; integrating therefore between 0) and 0,, we find

= 8 Las en lim Vp. nH ced and lim Via 'e6d0, Since these

6

vanish when p does, and the other factors are not infinite, d eos we see that, when | Rin and | V R(z)dz are taken along

paths surrounding indefinitely closely a single branch- point, both these integrals vanish.

If now we confine our attention to the integral of the first kind, let z go from the origin in the upper leaf along a straight line to near the point a; then the

in value accrue to |

, dz . : ; ' integral ee putting y=me in z=x2+iy=(1+u)z, Zz may be calculated as for a real variable, and it increases ae by | Srey Next let z go round a in a vanishing circle,

the integral gains nothing ; then let z return to the origin along the same line, it'proceeds now in the lower leaf; thus both R(z) and dz have signs opposite, but values equal to, what they had on the outward path. Thus on the whole by travelling this elementary contour (lacet, Schleife) from O to near a, round a, and back to O, the value of the in-

~~. a dz tegral is increased by A = 2 | . 0 J (2) have for the elementary contours or loops round 8, c, d the three incr | ‘oul | c~~

ements B=2/ ———, C= —+s—, and

D=2f —@ ov Lz) ov HH)

| oVR(z)

19. Now, if the loop round a be described twice in suc- Cession, the integral changes by A—A=O and g0 on.

But if, after a is once described, 6 is described once, the change is A—B. If then z go straight to any arbitrary

In like manner we

op

point for which the value of the rectilinear integral is w, the value along the entire path, or along any path recon- cilable with it, is d-—B+w. The two loops round a and 6 may be taken as often as we please before going by the straight course from O to z; thus A — B is a period of the integral, which is accordingly an infinitely many-valued function of z. As there are three independent differences of any four quantities, it would seem as if there should be three periods; but we can show that A—D arises from a combination of d- Band A-C. Im fact, describe round the origin a circle to include all the four points; then let 2 go straight from the origin to a point p on this circle, travel round it positively, and return from p to the origin. The integral has along this path the same value as along the four loops in succession, since between the two paths there is not any singular point and both have the same origin and goal. Thus the value of the integral along this path is 4-B+C-D. But, when z goes round the circle from p, the radical changes sign four times. If loops be described from p round a, 6, c, d, they are recon- cilable with the circumference of the circle. Hence the radical has the same sign when it returns to p as that it set out with; accordingly, since along Op and pO the radical has the same sign, the integrals J(Op) and J(pO) cancel, and the integral along the four loops in succession

has the same value as along the circle alone. To find this value, put z= pe' and it becomes

4 (tet ed 0

Md Sma ~ = But, as

LEDC e2)

the radical is unique along the circumference of the circle, the value of this integral is the same whatever be the value of p, provided it be large enough to include all the singular points. Hence we can let p increase indefinitely and then this has the limiting value zero. Consequently A-B+C-D=0, or A-D=A-C-(A-B); thus the third period is composed from the other two. Hence the periods reduce to. d- Band A-C. It can thus be shown that all values of the integral for all possible paths of inte- gration between O and z are included in the two formule mA —B)+n(A—C)+wandm(A- B)+n(A-C)+A-w.

20. If a new variable z' be introduced, homographically related to z by the equation a+ Bz + yz + dz' =0, it trans-

' dz. forms the integral | JRO into (ad — By) | JR.G The coefficients of £, (z') can be determined so that it may differ only by a constant multiplier from (1 — 2)(1 — £2z?), As & is given by a reciprocal quadratic equation, it is always possible to choose such a value that its modulus may be less than 1. In other words, it is possible by a homographic transformation to convert the quadrilateral a, 6, ¢, d into a parallelogram, the new origin being at the intersection of its diagonals (fig. 7). This leads to Jacobi's form of the integral when & is supposed real. The inte-

1 d: gras along the loops are bere d= 2 f a, 1/k dz as da 5 = 3) ES 7 nae C = 2 a ou. ie i V1 — 2)(1 — h2) I V (1 —2)(1 — #2?)

Pa ra –

I. V(1-2)(1 – 22) Hence A-C= .

A — B is the integral taken consecutively along the loops of a, 6; but for these paths we may substitute the following: proceed straight from O to a near a, then round a back to a, then straight from a to # near 8, next round 6 back to f, then again straight to a, and straight back to O. The integral takes the same value by this path as by the other, since there is no singular point between them and both paths have the same origin and

Buffon.

Kant.

76

goal. Now the radical changes sign as 2 goes round a, and again as it goes round 6; hence it returns to AC with the same sign. Thus Oa is travelled in the

two directions with the root having the same sign; hence J(Oa) and J(«O) cancel. By de- creasing indefinitely the radii of the circles, the circular integrals vanish ; and, as the root is negative along af and positive along fa, the value of A — B reduces to the negative double value of the in- tegral from a to f, that is, from a to 6 for vanishing radii; thus

j 1k .

acetal) aa grals required are now only between the limits 0, 1, and 1/k, so that. they do not cross any singular point. In case & is a positive proper fraction we have in Jacobi's notation A =2K, A—-C=4K, 4-B=2K'; therefore all

, a dz values of the elliptic integral | » VGA By ever be the path taken between the limits 0 and gz, are included in the two formule 4nK + 2mikK'+w and 4nK+ Imi K"+2K-—w. Hence the inverse function z=sinamw is doubly periodic for 4K and 22K', thus—

Fig. 7.

The rectilinear inte-

what-

VARIATION AND SELECTION

T is not proposed in the present article to trace the successive steps by which the general doctrine of the origin of species by descent with modification has come to gain acceptance among naturalists (see EvoLuTion). The present problem is concerned solely with the deter- minant factors of evolution, with searching out the mechanism of the evolutionary process, and of discerning if possible such order as may lie under the apparent flux of change. Yet a brief retrospect of the essential views of successive evolutionists is still necessary, but only in so far as these have been concerned, not simply with the empirical evidence for descent with modification, but with the deeper attempt to explain the rationale of this process, to show how it is that modifications come to arise, persist, and increase at all. In other words, just as there are these two essential aspects of the doctrine of evolution, which must on pain of immediate confusion be clearly kept apart, so it is necessary to distinguish between the corre- sponding sides of its historical development, and, passing beyond the simple hypothesis and evidences of descent, consider the attempts to explain the actual process of

modification.

Theories of Variation.

If we pass over the speculations of the earliest evolu- tionists—De Maillet, Maupertuis, Robinet, Bonnet, &¢.— as too vague for rapid summary, and note that Linnzus was not quite a consistent creationist, since he admitted that many species may be simply fertile hybrids, the his- tory of definite speculation as to the factors of variation may be fairly said to begin with Buffon, whose distinct though covert suggestion of the doctrine of descent with modification was supported by emphatic insistence upon the importance of external conditions. He endeavoured to show how "natures, instincts, and most inward quali- ties" are modified through bodily habits, how new functions seem to arise in response to new conditions, and how changes in climate, food, and other conditions of life bring about direct modifications in organisms exposed to them. Kant, on the other hand,

viewed the evolution of species as related essentially to the mechanical laws of the organ-

VAR—VAR

sin am(4nK + 2miK’ + w) =sinamw

sin am(2(2n + 1)K+ 2mK’ — w) =sinamw. This last shows that sinamw takes the same value for two different values of w within the same period. In fact, in the plane of w mea- sure a series of par- allels (see fig. 8) to the axis of ordinates at distances 4K, and to the prime axis at distances 2K’, then the plane will be di- vided into rect- —4 angles such that in each sinamw_ goes through all its values

2K.

Fig. 8.

and has equal values at corresponding points of differ- ent rectangles: thus, whatever it is at P for w=u+w, it is the same again at P,, P,, and P,; at Q, where w= 2K —u+i(2K’ —v), it has the same value; at /, where w=2K +u+iv, and at S, wherew=4K—u+i(2K’ —»), it

has the equal and opposite negative value. The value of sin am w vanishes at the points marked in fig. 8 by circles and is infinite at those denoted by crosses, (B. W.)

ism itself, although in his latest writings he allowed for the influence of geographical distribution, food, &c., noted the importance of selection in artificial breeding, and even hinted at the notion of struggle for existence, which was soon afterwards more clearly emphasized by Herder (Jdeen Herder! z, Phil. d. Geschichte, 1790) in a striking passage, which | may be briefly quoted in free translation: ‘All is in struggle, each one for himself. . . . Space is too small for 7 the number. . . . Each genus looks after itself as if it a were the only one. . . . In this way the whole was pre- served, . . . Thus were forces cradled, and limbs counted,

and tendencies determined, and the earth came to bear

what it could.”

Erasmus Darwin (Zoonomia, 1794) believed that the Brasm organism has the faculty of improving by its own inherent Darwm activity, that it has the power of attaining new parts attended with new propensities. Yet the strongest and | most active animals are those which propagate and hand | on improvements. Transformations, too, may be produced | in part by the exertions of the organism in consequence of its desires for food, security, and reproduction. Changed | conditions, such as climate, have an indirect influence in changing desires, and thus actions, and so finally struc- | ture; and they may also operate directly. Treviranus Trevir (1802-1831) assumed an indefinite variability of the organ- @0US. | ism, with considerable power of adaptation to surroundings, and even anticipated much recent speculation in his sug- gestion of a possible factor of modification in the union of sexual elements. The well-known theory of Lamarck Lamar (1801-1809) laid special emphasis on function and en- vironment ; for, though the sense of need in association with suitable environment calls out a succession of efforts, and so originates incipient structural modifications, it is | to increased functioning that the increase of these modifi- cations must be ascribed, while similarly disuse explains degeneration. Changed conditions produce new wants, a nutritive and reproductive ; hence changes in climate, or the like, change the organism by changing its habits. Rapid increase is checked by other organisms: the strongest and best-armed for attack devour the weaker, and the less

|

Matthew.

;

[he St-

ilaires.

Von Buch.

Von Baer.

3chlei- len.

Naudin.

1

Herbert

Spencer,

Carus.

YRRBIawrewn

perfect genera are kept down by the more perfect. The less definite view of Goethe included, besides recognition of the conservative or centripetal force of heredity, that of a progressive or centrifugal tendency to adaptation to environment. Oken (1809) similarly regarded all pro- gress from his primeval '" Urschleim" as having been in terms of its interaction with the external conditions of life. In 1813 Wells made his now well-known suggestion of the importance of natural selection in determining the varieties of the human species; and in 1831 Patrick Matthew published his much more developed, yet equally disregarded, statement of the same doctrine in its more general applications. In 1828-30 Geoffroy St-Hilaire, afterwards ably succeeded by his son Isidore, denied inde- finite variation, regarding function as of secondary im- portance, and laying special stress on the direct influence of the environment: for instance, it was not so much the effort to fly as the (supposed) diminished proportion of carbonic acid in the atmosphere which determined the evolution of birds from saurians. The veteran geographer Von Buch naturally inclined to emphasize the influence of geographical isolation (locality, climate, soil, food, é&c.), and laid stress on the restriction of the area of possible sexual union as bearing upon the origin of varieties. The embryologist Von Baer (1834) dwelt especially upon the organismal nature of variation, on the unfolding, as it were, of new structures ; and Schleiden (1838) and other naturalists more or less distinctly advanced similar opinions. In 1844 appeared the Vestiges of Creation, which in its later editions (1853) formulated an hypothesis of progress (1) by rhythmic impulse through grades of organization, (2) by

another impulse tending to modify organic structures in accordance with external circumstances. In 1852 Naudin argued for the formation of new species in nature in a similar way to that of varieties under cultivation, further attaching great importance to an assumed " prin- ciple of finality," apparently a kind of organismal fate. Herbert Spencer, whose weighty arguments for evolution date from 1852, laid special stress upon the modifying influences of environment, this involving changes of function, and so ultimately of structure. Finally, in 1853 Victor Carus argued fora progressive adaptation to chang- ing external conditions. An undefined hypothesis of in- ternal modifiability appears also to have floated before the mind of Owen.

In this succession of variational theories we recognize the repeated general insistence upon every separate factor in the problem,—organism, function, and environment,— the successive authors, in fact, almost falling into as many schools, Yet these are singularly unprogressive : the same hypothesis is stated again and again, but always fails to carry conviction; many employ the merest abstractional explanations, in terms of what is simply the old pre- physiological " vital force" (see BroLocy), or attempt to eut the knot by the more or less open introduction of a deus ex machina. Yiven the more definite and scientific theories of Erasmus Darwin, Lamarck, Geoffroy, and Spencer fail adequately to establish in a sufficient number of concrete cases the supposed potency of environment or function, much less of internal or volitional moods, in de- termining extensive changes; moreover, they are con- stantly confronted by cases in which any one set of changes seems to take place independently of the other. Hence, despite the deep and unanimous conviction of so many biological thinkers as to the origin of species by evolution, the essential problem remained unsolved. Fr, until some explanation, rational and concrete, detailed yet universal, of the origin of species should be reached, the cautious naturalist could not feel justified in accepting as a scientific certainty a doctrine which rested so largely upon unde-

monstrable grounds. Any really new attempt at estab- lishing the doctrine of evolution had thus, not simply to reorganize and strengthen the empirical

evidence, by marshalling beside the generalizations of morphological unity of type the facts of more strictly historic bearing,— distributional, paleontological, and embryological,— but also to meet this deeper theoretic want by showing not only that evolution has taken place but how. Hence the import-

ance and rapid acceptance of the Origin of Species (1859), Charles For it is evident from Darwin.

for which the time was fully ripe. the preceding historical outline that the view still fre- quently promulgated of the exclusive and, as it were, catastrophic importance of this work in the establishment of the doctrine of evolution must be replaced by a more uniformitarian and, so to speak, less creationist view. It should not seriously be supposed that the theory of descent which had been held in one form or another by the leading biological thinkers of that and the two preced- ing generations, with almost the individual exception of Cuvier, had been decisively abandoned by men of science, or that the public which had purchased ten editions of the Vestiges of Creation in as many years, and which took up the first edition of the Origin of Species on the day of publication, could be quite unprepared for the acceptance of the major thesis of both works. Yet that a lull had taken place is also unquestionable, for the failure of wave after wave of speculative effort had produced a widespread feeling of discouragement, and a tendency to concentration upon more concrete and smaller (for the most part Linnzan or Cuvierean) problems alone, since of these the solution was comparatively sure. The dramatic coincidence between Darwin's and Wallace's conclusions! soon helped to gain immediate attention to the new theory; and this was thoroughly developed and retained by the prompt appear- ance of the first and second editions of the Origin of Species. Without entering upon a review of this classic treatise, much less a retrospect of the controversy it pro- voked, it is evident that it was upon almost all sides so much stronger than preceding attempts, its central doctrine so lucid and obvious a statement of the everyday facts of life, its mode of presentation so temperate yet so forcible, its self-criticism so frank and unconcealed, that its marvellous success was owing far more to intrinsic merit than favour- able circumstances. The required re-statement of the evidence for the historic fact of evolution was at last learnedly and

forcibly done, and the salient difficulties in its way, like that of the imperfection of the geological record, admirably met ; yet this portion of the work sinks into comparative ineffectiveness beside the long-sought modal explanation of the process proffered in the theory of natural selection, which was soon seen to throw a new and searching light upon the smallest details of structure, function, and distribution,—in fact, to afford the instru- ment of a new and systematic interpretation of organic nature. Of this doctrine, then, a brief account is needed, and this may be best given by following as closely as pos- sible upon the lines of the magnum opus itself, although the full title of this—The Origin of Species by means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life—is its own best and briefest summary.

THEORY OF NATURAL SELECTION.

After mentioning that his first light upon the origin of Analysis species was derived from his early distributional studies, a Origin Darwin points out that "a naturalist, reflecting on the i iathe

mutual affinities of organic beings, on their embryological relations, their geographical distribution, geological succes- sion, and such other facts, might come to the conclusion that species had not been independently created, but had

1 Journ. and Proc. Linn. Soc., 1858.

Varia- tion under domesti- cation.

descended like varieties from other species. _Nevertheless, such a conclusion, even if well founded, would be unsatis- factory until it could be shown how the innumerable species inhabiting this world have been modified so as to acquire that perfection of structure and co-adaptation which justly excites our admiration." Again, "It is therefore of the highest importance to gain a clear insight into the means of modification and co-adaptation. At the commence- ment of my observations it seemed to me probable that a careful study of domesticated animals and cultivated plants

would offer the best chance of making out this obscure problem. Nor have I been disappointed: in this and all other perplexing cases I have invariably found that our knowledge, imperfect though it be, of variation under domestication affords the best and safest clue." Hence the first chapter is devoted to an account of those ex- tensive studies of variation under domestication which later formed the subject of a separate work.

A comparison between individuals of the same variety of culti- vated plants or animals shows a greater degree of variation than between individuals of any one species or variety in nature. This higher variability of domestic productions is to be ascribed to the less uniform conditions of their upbringing, perhaps in part also to excess of food. Exposure to new conditions must be continued for generations to set up any great variation ; but this, once set up, con- tinues indefinitely. Changed conditions may directly influence the whole organization or certain parts alone, or act indirectly through the reproductive system. With respect to the direct action, the nature of the organization seems more important than that of the conditions, The effect on offspring may be definite: ¢.g., size may depend upon the amount of food, colour upon quality of food, thick- ness of skin and hair upon climate, &c. But indefinite variability is a much commoner result of changed conditions, and has probably played a much more important part in the formation of our domestic races. The reproductive system is peculiarly sensitive to very slight external changes. Many plants and animals will not reproduce in domestication, even though individually vigorous ; others, though weak and sickly, breed freely. Hence we need not be surprised at the reproductive system acting irregularly and producing variations. But that variation is not exclusively associated with sexual repro- duction is demonstrated by the case of plants "sporting" through bud- variations. Such cases, moreover, prove the nature of the organism to be of more importance than the conditions.

Changed habits and use and disuse produce an inherited effect ; witness the lighter wing- and heavier leg-bones of the domestic duck, the enlarged udders of milch-cows, or the drooping (unpricked) ears of domestic mammals, Variations are often definitely correlated : short-beaked pigeons have small feet ; hairless dogs have imperfect teeth ; and blue-eyed white tom-cats are deaf. Hence selection of any one character will probably

modify others indirectly. Although the laws governing inheritance are mostly unknown, probably most, if not all, characters tend to be inherited. The popular statement that domestic varieties, when they run wild, revert to the primitive stock is unsupported by satisfactory evidence ; and, although rever- sions occasionally occur in domestication, there is no sign of any general tendency to the loss of acquired characters. Except in being less uniform than natural species, in often differing more widely in some single part, and in being fertile when crossed, there are no well-marked distinctions between our domestic raccs and the so-called true species of a genus. The many breeds of dogs and cattle may arise from more than one species ; but probably those of horses and fowls, and clearly those of rabbits, ducks, and pigeons, are cach descended from a single species. In this respect the brecds of pigeons are of peculiar importance, since not only carrier and tumbler, runt and barb, pouter and fantail, but at least a score of varieties might be chosen which differ so thoroughly, internally as well as externally, that an crnithologist, treating them as wild birds, would be compelled to grant them specific, and even distinct generic rank. Yet, since all these have indisputably arisen from the wild rock-dove (Columba livia), it is clear that naturalists who admit a unity to such domestic races, which professed breeders have often laughed to scorn, should in turn be cautious before de- riding the unity of wild ones.

How then have domestic races been' produced? By external con- ditions or habits alone? One of their most remarkable features is in exhibiting adaptation, not to their own good, but to man's use or fancy. We know that all the breeds were not produced as per- fect as we now see them, and the key is man's power of accumu- lative selection: nature gives successive variations ; man adds them up, making for himself useful breeds. Skilful breeders speak of the organization as plastic and under control, and have effected ex- tensive modifications within our own generation. Unconscious

selection, which results from every one trying to possess and breed the best individuals, is even more important. 'Tris accumulated change explains why we so often cannot recognize the wild parent stocks of our cultivated. plants, while its absence in countries in- habited by uncivilized man explains why these never yield plants worth immediate culture. Man's power of selection is facilitated by keeping large numbers, in which

variations are more likely to occur. Facility in preventing crosses is also of importance, as of pigeons as coutrasted with cats; some species are, however, less variable than others, e.g., the goose.

Individual differences arise even in the offspring of the same Varia. parents and tend to be inherited ; hence they afford material for tion natural selection to act on and accumulate, precisely as they would under for human selection. (Polymorphic genera—e.g., Rosa, Rubus, nature, | Hieraciwm, &c.—may perhaps owe their protean character to their variations being of no service or disservice, and consequently not being acted on by natural sclection.) In determining whether a form should be ranked as species or variety, the opinion of natural- ists of sound judgment and wide experience is the only guide, yct this lacks unanimity (see SpEcrEs) : for example, of the polymorphic genera of the British flora alone Bentham reckons 112 species but Babington 251. Wallace has shown that no certain criterion can possibly be given by which to define his convenient working cate- gories of Malayan Lepidoptera, &c., viz., variable forms, local forms, sub-species, and representative species. As De Candolle concluded from his monograph on oaks (in which he shows at least two-thirds of his 300 species to be provisional), "so long as a genus is imper- fectly known and its species founded upon a few specimens" they seem clearly limited ; but, "just as we come to know thein better, intermediate forms flow in and doubts as to specific limits augment." The terms variety and species are thus arbitrarily applied to inde- finable groups of more or less closely similar individuals, Common species that range wide and are much diffused are those which vary most. The species of the larger genera in each country vary more frequently than the species of the smaller genera. The species of large genera present strong analogies with varieties, which we can only understand if they originated as such.

The term "struggle for existence" is uscd in a wide sense, in- Struggl ; cluding dependence of one being upon another, and embracing for exis (which is more important), not ouly the life of the individual, but ence, |

success in leaving progeny. From the high (geometrical) rate of increase of all organic beings (slow breeders only requiring a few more years to people a whole district) struggle inevitably follows, either one individual with

another of the same species, or with the individuals of a distinct species, or with the physical conditions of life. Itis the doctrine of Malthus applied with manifold force to the entire animal and vegetable kingdoms, for in this case there can be no artificial increase of food and no prudential restraints from marriage. The checks to increase are most obscure. Eggs or young animals generally suffer most, and plants, mostly as seed- lings, both from germinating on ground already occupied and from animals. The amount of food, of course, gives the extreme limit of numbers, very frequently, however, the attacks of enemies, as of game by vermin. Climate plays an important part, and periodi- cal seasons of extreme cold have destroyed as many as four-fifths of the birds of an observed area. Epidemics, too, may occur. In many a species a large stock of individuals is often essential to its pager atten: Complex and unexpected checks and relations exist etween organic beings which have to struggle together ; witness the profound alteration of the flora and fauna of a heath when planted with Scotch fir, these again being wholly dependent upon the exclusion of cattle. But in several parts of the world insects determine the existence of cattle. Again, red clover depends for fertilization upon the humble-bees, these upon immunity from the attacks of field-mice, and thus indirectly upon the numbers of cats ; hence no bees, no clover, and the more cats, the more clover! The struggle will almost invariably be most severe between the indi- viduals of the same species, for they frequent the same districts, require the same food, and are exposed to the same dangers. In the case of varietics of the same species the struggle will generally be almost equally severe, and we sometimes see the contest soon de- cided (as in the case of varieties of wheat or sweet pea, of the mountain-sheep or medicinal leech). Similarly, the struggle be- tween species of the same genus will generally be more severe than between the species of distinct genera, ¢.g., the replacement of the black rat by the brown or of the large cockroach by the small. The structure of every being is related to that of all the others with which it competes, from which it escapes, or on which it preys ; witness alike the teeth and talons of the tiger, or the legs : and claws of the parasite clinging to his hair. The albumen of a : seedling favours its struggle with plants already growing around it. How will this struggle for existence act in regard to variation ? Natura. Can the principle of selection, so potent in the hands of man, apply selectio. under nature? Most efficiently ; for, when we bear in mind the constant occurrence of variation, with the strength of the

heredi- tary tendency, also how infinitely close and complex are the mutual relations of organic beings to each other and to their physical con-

,

_)iver- sence of char- icter,

Natural selection contro- rersy,

VWARTATION

ditions of life, and consequently what infinitely varied diversities of structure might be of use to each being under changing condi- tions of life, can it be thought improbable, seeing that variations useful to man have undoubtedly occurred, that other variations, useful in some way to each being in the great and complex battle of life, should occur in the course of many generations? And, if such do occur, cau we doubt (remembering that many more indi- viduals are born than can possibly survive) that individuals having any advantage, however slight, over others would have the best chance of surviving and procreating their kind? On the other hand, we may feel sure that any variation in the least degree in- jurious would be inevitably destroyed. This preservation of favour- able and this destruction of injurious variations are called natural selection, or, less mctaphorically, the survival of the fittest. The probable course of natural selection may be understood from the case of a country undergoing change of climate. The proportional numbers of its species will be changed ; some will probably become extinct ; and these changes would seriously affect the others. Im- migration of new forms might occur, with further serious disturb- ance, or, where this is impossible, we should have places in the economy of nature which might be better filled up. In such cases slight modifications which in any way favoured the individuals of any species, by adapting them better to thcir altered conditions, would tend to be preserved, and natural selection would have free scope for the work of improvement. Moreover, changed conditions increase variability. As man produces a great result, what may not natural selection effect? The former acts only for his own good, nature for that of the being itself; man on mere external characters, nature on the whole machinery of life ; man irregularly and imperfectly for a short time, nature by accumulation during whole geological periods. Natural selection

is daily and hourly scrutinizing, throughout the world, the slightest variations, reject- ing those that are bad, preserving and adding up all that are good, silently and insensibly working, whenever and wherever opportunity offers, at the improvement of each organic being in relation to its organic and inorganic conditions of life. It may operate on char- acters which we are apt to consider of very trifling importance, and its accumulation of small variations may set up unexpected cor- relative changes. It may modify the egg, seed, or young as easily as the adult, the structure of young to parent and of parent to young, and in social animals it will adapt the structure of each for the benefit of all. The theory of natural selection is next illus- trated (1) by supposing the formation of swift varieties of wolves, much as greyhounds have been developed by man ; (2) by reference to the excretion of nectar by flowers, its use to insects, the action of these in carrying pollen, its advantage in intercrossing, and the resultant modification and adaptation of flower and insect to each other through the preservation of their advantageous variations. Circumstances favourable for the production of new forms through natural selection are great variability, large numbers of individuals, the complex effects of intercrossing, isolation in confined areas (yet probably still more extension over continental ones, especially if oscillating in level), and considerable lapse of time, although this by itself must not be supposed to do anything (as if the forms of life were undergoing change by some innate law), but merely to afford increased opportunity for variation and environmental change. Extinction, to which rare species are on the way, is caused by natural selection.

The divergence of character brought about by artificial selection in domestic breeds is efficiently paralleled in nature, since the more diversified the offspring of each species, the more they will seize on diverse places in the economy of nature, and so increase in numbers. The greatest amount of life can be supported by great diversification of structure. This divergence of character, with extinction of intermediate forms, explains the difficulties of tax- onomy, which arc then discussed in detail with the aid of a diagram.

1s, of course, takes the form of a genealogical tree, and suggests that of "the great tree of life, which fills with its dead and broken branches the

crust of the earth and covers the surface with its ever-branching and beautiful ramifications.”

The preceding summary of the classical statement of the doctrine of natural selection should be supplemented by teference not only to the original work, to the corrobora- tive labours of its author, and to the able independent treatise (Vatwral Selection) of Wallace, but to the enormous mass of exposition, argument, and illustration accumulated by subsequent writers, commencing with Hooker and Asa Gray, Huxley and Haeckel, but soon becoming too numer- ous even for mention. At the same time the history of the controversy which has arisen out of that statement should also be treated, in so far as it has kept within Cees cae Ss se

- u Tn the later editions of the Origin a brief account of sexual selec- tion is given at this point, vide infra, p. 82.

scientific bounds. The leading objections which have been brought against natural selection, together with the replies to them, should all be summarized, as, for instance, Fleem- ing Jenkin’s important criticism as to the swamping of individual variations by crossing,? Mivart’s vigorous and detailed polemic against natural selection as capable of accounting for the incipient stages of useful structures, &c.,? and so on. But this could not be done to the satis- faction of either party without far exceeding the present limits ; happily, however, two chapters of the Origin of Species (v. and vi.) are generally admitted to have at least made the attempt up to 1872, the date of the final edition, with great candour and fairness, The various constructive efforts to supplement the hypothesis of natural selection by introducing additional factors of evolutionary change should also be mentioned, headed of course by Darwin’s own accessory hypothesis of sexual selection.

We must not, however, leave natural selection without Huxley’s a fuller statement of its services and claims, and this may 2dvocacy-

most appropriately be taken from the recent and, as it were, judicial deliverance of their veteran advocate, Prof. Huxley. He first points out the*

grounds of his agnostic position (up to 1858) with respect to evolution as promul- gated by Lamarck, Chambers, and even Spencer : " Firstly, that up to that time the evidence in favour of transmuta- tion was wholly insufficient ; and, secondly, no suggestion respecting the causes of the transmutation assumed, which had been made, was in any way adequate to explain the phenomena." He then goes on to say—

*'"*The suggestion that new species may result from the selective action of external conditions upon the variations from their specific type which individuals present—and which we call "spontaneous" because we are ignorant of their causation—is as wholly unknown to the historian of scientific ideas as it was to biological specialists before 1858. But that suggestion is the central idca of the Origin of Species, and contains the quintessence of Darwinism… . That which we were looking for, and could not find, was an hypothesis respecting the origin of known organic forms which assumed the operation of no causes but such as could be proved to be actually at work. We wanted, not to pin our faith to that or any other speculation, but to get hold of clear and definite con- ceptions which could be brought face to face with facts and have their validity tested. The Origin provided us with the working hypothesis we sought. . . . The facts of variability, of struggle for existence, of adaptation to conditions were notorious enough, but none of us had suspected that the road to the heart of the species problem lay through them till Darwin and Wallace dispelled the darkness, and the beacon-fire of the Origin guided the be- nighted. . . . The only rational course for those who had no other object than the attainment of truth was to accept " Darwinism " as a working hypothesis and see what could be made of it. Either it would prove its capacity to clucidate the facts of organic life or it would break down under the strain. . . . Whatever may be the ultimate fate of the particular theory put forward by Darwin, I venture to affirm that, so far as my knowledge goes, all the ingenuity and all the learning of hostile critics have not enabled them to adduce a solitary fact of which it can be said, this is irreconcilable with the Darwinian theory."*

Darwin's own case for natural selection has also been Darwin's "The belief in natural selection must at Te4Sons.

tersely put.® present be grounded entirely on general considerations,— (1) on its being a vera causa, from the struggle for exist- ence and the certain geological fact that species do somehow change ; (2) from the analogy of change under domestication by man's selection; (3) and chiefly from this view connecting under an intelligible point of view a host of facts."

Applying to natural selection the accepted tests of a good theory—(1) power of explaining all phenomena and meeting all objections, (2) power of meeting new facts as they occur, (3) applicability as an instrument of research,

2 North British Review, 1867.

3 Genesis of Species, 1871. 7

4 Life of Darwin, vol. ii., "On the Reception of the Origin of Species." 5 Cf., however, op. cit., p. 129, note 4.

6 Letter to Bentham, 1863, in Life of Darwin, iii. p. 25.

Survival of fittest a vera CAUSA.

80 ¥ eer 1A OY

and (4) power of prediction,—it seems difficult for the most sceptical of critics to avoid ranking it very high, while to those who regard it as triumphantly surviving this assay the "law of parsimony " appears to preclude the necessity of seeking any further explanation of evolution.!

As no serious critic wholly denies the fact of a struggle for existence, nor even a certain preponderance among the survivors in any given area of those best fitted for the struggle, however much he may consider the importance

of these facts to have been overstrained in certain direc-

Uni- formi- tarian- ism in natural change.

tions, we are fairly entitled at the outset to regard natural selection, not only as provisionally superseding earlier attempts at solving the problems of geological and geo- graphical distribution, but as adequately,—it might almost seem finally,—explaining them (see BioLocy, DIsTRIBU- tion). This claim at any rate must be allowed even by those who deny the importance of natural selection as a substantial factor in evolution in the other sub-sciences of physiology and morphology, and this not simply because it was as experts in distribution that Darwin and Wallace themselves arrived at their hypothesis, nor because all subsequent workers in that field of science have adopted it, but because no valid objection, or even supplementary hypothesis, has ever, as regards this important department of science, been so much as proposed. 'The survival of the fittest, then, is unquestionably a vera causa, and one of no small importance in the study of nature (in fact, in undisputed possession of at least one entire field), as also in the study of social life, from which both Darwin and Wallace were directly inspired.2 The importance of breed- ing and artificial selection is also undisputed; nor can some small scope for natural selection in the formation of varieties of wild races be denied even by the most grudging of critics who may be versed in the facts of natural history at all. But this amounts to admitting that natural selec- tion, already the undisputed explanation of distributional changes, is at any rate a partial cause in structural and functional ones; while older explanations of these facts, even if not melting into merely abstractional ones, have not succeeded in gaining acceptance.

At this point comes in with ponderous weight the con- ception by which Lyell had for nearly thirty years been preparing the way for Darwin, that of uniformitarianism in natural change. For, although it was perhaps almost as much owing to the unfavourable opinion of Lyell as to the hostility of Cuvier that the doctrine of Lamarck had fallen into such disesteem, and although Lyell himself was accustomed "to keep the name of creation for a natural process which he imagined to be incomprehensible," he was, notwithstanding, as he claimed and as Huxley frankly allows, "strongly disposed to account for the origination of all past and present species of living things by natural causes," and his influence was, therefore, for Huxley, as no doubt for others, "perhaps more potent than any other in keeping alive a sort of pious conviction that evolution after all would turn out true." For, given the principle of Lyell's work,—'the principle that the

past must be ex- plained by the present, unless good cause be shown to the contrary, and the fact that, so far as our knowledge of the past history of life on our globe goes, no other cause can be shown,”—it is evident that “consistent uniformi- tarianism postulates evolution as much in the organic as in the inorganic world. The origin of a new species by

1 Romanes, Scientific Hvidence of Organic Evolution, 1886.

Through reading Malthus, On Population (see Origin, p. 3 sg.). It is worthy of notice also that Herder’s early suggestion (vide supra) was made in his Philosophy of History, Wells’s early statement with respect to the races of man, and Patrick Matthew’s in a treatise for practical purposes, while an early statement of the doctrine, hitherto

apparently overlooked, was made with respect to machines by James Watt (cf Catalogue of Industrial Exhibition, 1851).

other than ordinary agencies would be a vastly greater ‘catastrophe’ than any of those which Lyell successfully eliminated from geological speculation.”

Bearing in mind, then, the lesson of Lyell, that any efficient cause, even though slow or at first sight trifling, can be shown, if acting steadily for vast periods of time, to effect enormous results, the apparent difficulty of adding up varietal differences to specific ones, these to generic, and these again to still larger distinctions, becomes only the inevitable continuation of that summation of individual into varietal differences which no one can deny to be ’ happening around us. Thus the onus proband that species have not arisen in this way comes fairly to be thrown by the advocates of natural selection upon its adversaries. And, as these come individually to realize, through those concrete studies which necessarily underlie all active con- viction on one side or the other, the importance of the masses of concrete evidence which have been steadily accumulating, it is little wonder that their majority should not only have so rapidly dwindled, but actually have changed sides so generally as has been the case. Thus, to cite only a single case,—(1) we are now in actual possession of an unbroken and geologically successive series of fossil horses, perfectly gradated through some forty-five “species” back to a five-toed ancestor; (2) we can trace the con- tinued

evolution of the existing species in the bones, teeth, and finest peculiarities of the specimens around us, as well as the increasing differentiation of well-marked varieties through artificial selection ; (3) we can see that such con- tinuous improvement of skeleton, teeth, &c., as is now and has all along been in progress, must have been profitable

to the animals possessing them in the wild state, just as they now are in the tame (since implying better locomo- tion, digestion, &c.). Hence we soon come to feel a real

difficulty in understanding (1) how the continuous sum- . mation of small individual advantages through varietal characters into specific, and even generic ones, can be doubted, much less denied, and consequently (2) how the general applicability of the theory of natural selection to interpret the gradual process of historic change can any longer be called in question. At this point it is right to notice that several evolu- Varia- tionists have suggested or argued for the progress of tion — sire : : : : along variation along definite lines; but this return upon pre- 4.63. Darwinian standpoints has been energetically and, it must jines — be admitted, on the whole as yet successfully combated. Thus Asa Gray (1861-76) has argued for variation along j definite and useful lines. Néageli (1865) regarded the ac- | quisition of certain characters which appear to be of no service to plants as offering a difficulty to natural selection, and as affording a proof of some innate tendency in plants towards perfection, corresponding to what Kolliker entitles the "law of creation." Mivart (1871) has maintained that variations are definite, and frequently sudden and considerable. With such positions must also be noticed the continuous and increasing insistence of Spencer (1852-86) |

‘

a ee

upon environmental action and functional change, although spontaneous variation is not excluded nor considerable importance to natural selection denied. Butler in Eng- land, and Cope, Hyatt, and other " Neo-Lamarckians" in America, have more fully developed this reaction, for which experimental evidence has been especially sought in Germany by

Semper. And, while Darwin himself long continued an uncompromising opponent of all such heresies, a distinct, though partial, change of opinion was admitted by himself in later years, and has been fully insisted upon both by Mivart and Spencer. While in the Origin of Species up to 1869 variations are spoken of as "accidental" (no doubt only in that sense in which a scientific man may fairly use the word), and there is ample proof of Darwin's origin-

a

"eas for ide- nite aviation.

YAR IT "4 TiO WN

ally even contemptuous attitude towards Lamarck, and of his substantial rejection of the comparative importance of function or environment in determining variations, these views are unquestionably modified in the well-known pero- ration to the Origin of Species. The further diminishing importance of natural selection is admitted in subsequent editions, as Spencer has pointed out, in the preface to the Descent of Man, and indeed elsewhere; while a recent pungent criticism ! cites evidence of a certain measure of ap- parently contradictory and indefinite fluctuation of opinion between increased insistence upon use and disuse on the one hand and upon spontaneous variability on the other. Since, however, Darwin never developed the grounds of this diminishing reliance upon natural selection, which still remains the central theme of his works, and that upon which their originality, as well as their importance to the theory of evolution, essentially depends (of course as dis- tinguished from their services in summing up the concrete

on

tion of testing " whether, besides natural selection and the. direct action of external conditions, together with the correlative results of these two factors, there might not lie concealed in the organism some other transforming power," such as the " perfecting principle " of Nageli or the like. The results of these investigations have tended entirely to confirm the theory of natural selection in its classic form ; moreover, the same

naturalist has since ad- duced weighty arguments against the transmissibility of individual variations,® whether acquired by habit or im- pressed by environment, and thus proportionally weakened the arguments of Spencer and others in favour of the revival of the Lamarckian factors of change. Variation seems therefore to be driven in more and more upon the reproductive function, and thus an ultra-Darwinian in- sistence upon the obscure and as yet wholly indefinite factor of variation is strongly forced upon us, and natural selection seems more than ever to be our only possible clue.

evidence for the fact of evolution and their vast utility in diffusing it), too much weight must not be attached to such isolated expressions of opinion as those referred to above,

Armed, however, with this, we have a consistent means Darwin's of re- investigation of the whole organic world, in the course bio-

; ene : logical of which, not only our existing accumulations, as of tax- ae

the more so as these are nowhere borne out by any general change in the tenor of his works. In the absence of any theory of definite and progressive change, and in the presence of multitudinous variations under domestication and in nature which we can neither analyse, rationalize, nor hardly even classify, we are not only justified but logically compelled to regard variation as spontaneous or indefinite, z.¢., practically indeterminate in direction, and "therefore wnimportant, except as the groundwork for selection to act on." Conversely, variation must be in- definite, else the paramount importance of natural selec- tion must be proportionally impaired as this becomes de- finite (cf, Evotution, vol. viii. p. 751); for we cannot speak of selecting a course from one line of variation, nor even for that matter in the old sense of "variation" at all. Thus, "if it should hereafter be shown that variability is definite and determined in certain directions rather than others" (in short "fated" rather than '" spontaneous "), "the importance of natural selection would not be im- paired," since it would still have to be regarded as a vera causa in the history of species, yet the function ascribed to it would be practically reversed. It would exchange its former supremacy as the supposed determinant among the indefinite possibilities of structure and function for

that of simply accelerating, retarding, or terminating the process of otherwise determined change. It would furnish the brake rather than the steam or rails upon the journey of life ; or, in other words, instead of guiding the ramifica- tions of the tree of life, it would, in Mivart's phrase, do little more than apply the pruning knife to them.2 In fact, its functions would be restricted to those of the third

onomy and of comparative anatomy, acquire a new interest, and all existing lines of research receive a potent stimulus, but the marvellous variety of adaptation comes into in- telligibility and order,—a new teleology thus replacing the old. Of this profound change in the standpoint and interest of modern biology we can form an idea most simply, yet most representatively, by glancing at Darwin's own biological works. Before the Origin of Species we have the slow and laborious production of the substantial, yet conventional and comparatively arid, Zoology of the Beagle and Manual of the Cirripedia, while afterwards the well-known and fascinating new series of zoological and botanical discoveries and generalizations were poured out with remarkable rapidity. The many bold and ingenious applications of the theory of natural selection which we owe to Darwin and his school should here be reviewed seriatim ; but it is impossible to do more than mention some of them, ¢.g., the renascence and development of Sprengel's discovery of the relations of flowers to insects, the elaborate studies on Fertilization in Orchids, the Forms of Flowers, Insectivorous Plants, Climbing Plants, Movement in Plants, &c. Again, the interpretation of the problems presented by bee and ant society led him to grapple with the problems of mind and language, in the Descent of Man and the Hupression of the Emotions; and the systematic application of the conceptions of biological science to those of psychology, sociology, and ethics, which had been com- menced by Comte and continued by Spencer, rapidly passed from its comparative philosophic isolation into wide diffu- sion through the movement of literature and science.®

This passage from the inductive verification of the Applica- theory of natural selection to its deductive application as tion of 3 : : : . natural

an engine of research is conspicuously associated with the i area labours of Haeckel, whose Generelle Morphologie (1866) to bio- and other minor

works have a central historic place amid logical

the first fruit and seed of the new movement in German Science s

Fate, and would no longer, as at present, be supposed to in- clude those of the second. Under these circumstances it is unnecessary to appeal at length to the unanimity with which the later generation of Darwin's exponents (e.g., Lankester, Romanes, Allen, évc.) concur with all preceding

Ones in the necessary proposition, that 'natural selection trusts to the chapter of accidents in the matter of variation." The thesis thus summarized by Lankester thoroughly permeates the Variation of Animals and Plants under Domestication, as may be seen from the brief sum- mary of it given below (p. 82).2 Special reference must, however, be made to the important researches of Weis- mann, since these were devised with the deliberate inten-*

- Butler, Luck or Cunning, London, 1887, chap. xii. ; see also his Evolution, Old and New, London, 1879. 2 "On the Theory of Individuality," in Proc. Roy. Soc., 1886. ; See, however, chapter xxi. of Variation, &c., conclusion. Studies in the Theory of Descent, Eng. ed., London, 1882.

biology, which was henceforward almost completely Dar- winian ; and they have equally strong claims to be con- sidered as the starting-point of those logical and unflinch- ing attempts to view all problems in the light of natural selection which have since become more common. By transcending the limits of ordinary biological specialism independently of Darwin, and dispensing with his initial

- *The reservations with respect to mind and language made by evolutionists so contrasted in many respects as Wallace and Mivart should here be mentioned ; see Mivart's Lessons from Nature, also his ** Limit to Evolution," in Nineteenth Century, 1884.*

6 Die Continuitét d. Keimplasmas, Jena, 1885, and Die Bedeutung ad. sexuellen Fortpflanzung, Jena, 1886.

reservation as to the possible creation of primeval forms and with Wallace's final caveat as to the origin of man, a thoroughly '" monistic" view of biology and its kindred sciences is obtained. The systematic exclusion of the tra- ditional teleology and of that operation of the consciousness of the organism assumed by Lamarck (since indefinite struc- tural variations cannot be associated with, much less de- veloped by, definite psychical ones, and still less by any per- manent psychical bias or character) also necessarily follows ; and along with this goes the conception of the operation of an extra-organismal mind. The struggle for existence is the sole condition of human progress; and the conception of prevalent or predominant altruism, as systematized by past philosophy and tradition, is thus an alloy of senti- mental illusion with baser elements. The doctrine of natural selection is in this way fully developed into a substantially Neo-Lucretian philosophy, and, in justice to the logical clearness of the author to whom we especially owe this systematization, it must be admitted that those who grant his postulates, without endorsing his conclusions, have in all cases either refrained from continuing their development or fallen back upon the insertion of some caveat or deus ex machina at an arbitrary point.

To — In the same way we have this view of all things in

organle struggle applied to the explanation of the internal structure

structure : : :

al and function of the organism itself. Once more to quote

function. Huxley,! 'It is a probable hypothesis that what the world is to organisms in general each organism is to the mole- cules of which it is composed. Multitudes of these, having diverse tendencies, are competing with one another for opportunity to exist and multiply, and the organism as a whole is as much the product of the molecules which are victorious as the fauna or flora of a country is the product of the victorious organic beings in it." This view has more recently been considerably developed by Roux,? and from its logical continuity with the major theory of which it is a corollary is gaining widened acceptance.

With regard to the destructive criticism of the old teleo- logy, which has been led by Haeckel, and aided or ac- quiesced in by other natural selectionists, it is important to note that the obvious proposition has also repeatedly been urged (¢.g., by Huxley and Weismann no less than by their critics, such as Von Hartmann and Lotze), that, just in proportion as our explanation of the origin of organic structures, functions, and adaptations becomes in- creasingly mechanical, so does an increasingly rigorous teleological view of this mechanism reappear. At most, therefore, we should have exchanged an external and mechanical view of teleology for an (at least relatively) internal and dynamical one.

Sexual The later hypotheses accessory to natural selection can here be selection. only very briefly outlined. Partly in course of his inquiries into the descent of man, partly also to account for many remarkable phenomena of sexual differentiation in animals (see Sex), Darwin was led to develop the hypothesis of sexual selection which he had already suggested in the Origin of Spccies. Not merely do indi- viduals struggle for existence, but the males struggle for the females ; thus the more vigorous tend to obtain mates, and so leave most progeny to repeat the struggle. Special weapons are used in the struggle, both offensive, like the cock's spurs or the stag's horns, and defensive, like the lion's mane; and advantageous variations of these tend to be accumulated. But, as the more beautiful or melodious males appear often to obtain the preference of the females, there is also ground for the conception that the esthetic advantages frequent in the male sex have similarly been acquired, the more so as we have common experience of how rapidly artificial selection can accumulate superioritics of plumage or song. After the opera- tion of sexual selection has been traced as far as possible through the animal kingdom, the doctrine is applied to man, with the con- clusion "that of all the causes which have led to the differences in

1 A frank and uncompromising application of this doctrine to the interpretatiou of nature and society will also be found in Huxley's 'Struggle for Existence," in Nineteenth Century, February 1888.

2 Der Kampf d. Theile im Organismus, Leipsic, 1876.

Varaaarivow

extcrnal appearance between the races of man, and to a certain extent between man and the lower animals, sexual selection had been the most efficient." Acceptance of this hypothesis lias been much less general than of natural selection. Criticism has been busy, and this ranges from the serious yet partial dissent of Wallace to fundamental contrast, such as is involved in the theory of the nature and origin of sex suggested in the article Sex, which views the degree of development of the external characters of sex as essen- tially the outward expression of a proportional stage of the evolu. tion of constitutional " maleness" or "femaleness " (i.¢., katabolic and anabolic diathesis respectively). | Under the title of " physiological selection" G. J. Romanes has Physio' lately proposed "an additional suggestion as to the origin of species," logical" of which the more critical than constructive essence may be briefly selectic given in the author's own words: " As a theory of origin of species natural selection has in its way three cardinal difficultics,—(1) the difference between species and varieties in respect of mutual fertility, (2) the swamping effects of free intercrossing upon an individual variation, (3) the inutility to species of so large a proportion of specific distinctions. . . . Natural selection is not, properly speak- |

ing, a theory of the origin of species: it is a theory of the origin— or rather of the cumulative development—of adaptations. When- ever any variation in the highly variable reproductive system occurs, tending to sterility with the parent form, without entailing fertility with the varietal form, a physiological barrier must inter- pose, dividing the species into two parts, free to develop distinct : histories, without mutual intercrossing, or by independent varia- tion. By regarding mutually sterile species as records of variation | in reproductive systems, we are at work, so to speak, on the foun- dation of the matter." :

Laws oF VARIATION.

Even those who attach most importance to the doctrine Origin' of natural selection as affording a rationale of the process Vatia- _ of organic evolution will not seriously dispute that, even "°™ were this explanation completely extended to all the de- tails of plant and animal life, another and deeper explana- tion would still be necessary. That is, the theory of natural selection, being from the external standpoint only —that of the adaptation*

of the organism to survive the pressures of the environment—would all the more urgently stand in need of a complementary internal explanation, which should elucidate the physiological process of change through which the organism has actually been enabled to adapt itself. As a recent writer tersely expresses it, 'The survival of variations is a matter secondary to their origin, and it is becoming realized more and more that this is the point to be explained." How, in short, do we get the variations without which natural selection would have nothing on which to operate? Here we can no longer Darwi remain satisfied with the merely general conception of theory variation as essentially indefinite, with which we have be- come familiar as the postulate (p. 81) of the theory of natural selection, but must add to it a retrospect of the : theories of earlier authors such as has been already out- | lined,—(a) a summary and discussion of the extensive labours of Darwin upon the problems of variation from which this conception of indefiniteness was generalized, followed by (6) an account of subsequent progress. Un- fortunately the voluminousness of this literature makes such a task practically impossible: instead of the enormous wealth of concrete details accumulated with respect to the*

ti, ies =e

Variation of Animals and Plants under Domestication, a reference to the volumes under that title must almost suffice. Some acquaintance with this work is, of course, necessary adequately to appreciate the force of its author's general con- ; clusions ; these may, however, be briefly outlined from the | chapter of the Origin of Species (chap. v.) devoted to the laws of variation, and from those (xxii.-xxvi.) of the larger work which contain an ample yet similar discussion.

'Our ignorance of the laws of variation is profound. Not in one case out of a hundred can we pretend to assign any reason

why this or that part has varied." Changed conditions generally Envir induce mere fluctuating variability in individuals, yet sometimes ment.

3 Journ. Linn. Soc., xix., 1886. For the criticisms of Wallace, Argyll, Meldola, Catchpool, and others, see Nature, vol. xxxiv. 4 Comp. Variation under Domestication, chap. xxi., conclusiou.

Use and (lisuse.

Corre- lated variation,

Varia- bility of homo- logous parts.

~~Mechanj~~ ‘eal pres-

af

sure, &c,

VYVARLATION

direct and definite effects upon the mass. The facts and considera- tions for and against the belief that the conditions of existence act in a potent manner in causing definite modifications of structure are confronted in detail. In some few instances a marked effect has been rapidly produced, e.g., on European men in the United States, European dogs in India, horses in the Falkland Islands, oysters in the Mediterranean, &c. The chemical compounds of some plants and the state of their tissues are readily affected by changed conditions. The production of galls, &c., shows how great changes in structure and colour may result from chemical changes. We almost certainly know that organic beings in a statc of nature may be modified in various definite ways by the conditions to which they have been long exposed ; but it is difficult to distinguish be- tween the definite result of changed conditions and the accumula- tion through natural selection of indefinite variations which have proved serviceable. But, even granting the utmost weight to con- ditions, we can rarely see the precise relation between cause and effect. Moreover, many animals and plants of wide range and great diversity of experience yet remain uniform in character. Again, the degree to which domesticated birds, &c., have varied does not stand in any close relation to the amount of change to which they have been subjected. In fact, we may have similar modifications under different conditions, different modifications nnder similar change of conditions, or no modifications at all. Closely parallel varieties are often produced from distinct races or even species without ascertainable unity of conditions. Bird-varia- tions, too, seem conspicuously independent of circumstances.

All these considerations tend to force on our minds the conviction that what we call the external conditions of life are in many cases quite insignificant in comparison with the organization or constitution of the being which varies. No doubt each variation may have its efficient cause, but it is as hopeless to search for the cause of each as to say why a chill or a poison affects one man differently from another. With respect to acclimatization, although habit does something towards the success of the process, yet the appearance of constitu- tionally different individuals is a far more effective agent.

Increased use adds to the size of muscles, together with the blood-vessels, nerves, bony crests of origin, and even the whole bones ; it also increases glands and strengthens sense-organs. In- creased and intermittent pressure thickens the epidermis ; change of food modifies the coats of the stomach and alters the length of the intestine. Disuse weakens and diminishes all parts of the organization,—lungs and chest, wings and their associated bones, &e, Although in domestieated animals this never goes so far that a mere rudiment is left, it seems often to have occurred in nature, the effects of disuse being aided by economy of growth with inter- crossing. Changed habits may lead to use or disuse of organs, and consequently to their modification ; yet the effects of habit, use, and disuse have often been largely combincd with the natural selec- tion of innate variations and sometimes overmastered by it.

Correlated variation means that the whole organization is so tied together during its growth and development that, when slight variations in any part occur, and are accumulated through natural selection, other parts become modified, apparently irrespective of advantage in the change. Variations of strueture in the young often affect those of the mature animal ; the influence of hard parts, mechanical pressure, the relative position of parts, and the size of the whole body all have important influences. Homologous tissues may exhibit associated variations, e.g., hoofs, hair, and teeth. In most cases the correlation is, however, quite obscure, and may seem to be of no utility to the species, as with various monstrosities and diseases, Colour may be associated with other constitutional pecu- harities. Although correlation is of much importance, we may also falsely attribute to it structures which are simply due to in- heritance or natural selection, or its effects may be

inextricably commingled with those of increased use and of accumulation by natural selection, ¢.g., the gigantic horns of the Irish elk with the changes necessarily associated with the acquircment of them.

Homologous and multiple parts are peculiarly variable, and often tend to cohere. Rudimentary and lowly organized structures are variable. The law of compensation of Gocthe and Geoffroy, "that m order to spend on one side nature is forced to economize on the other," holds true to a certain extent with domestic production, but more doubtfully in nature.

Mechanical pressure and relative position of parts seem to be of Some importance in determining variations ; but such changes are often due to reversion to long-lost characters, which may frequently occur. A part extraordinarily developed in any speeies tends to be highly variable. Specific characters are more variable than generic characters. Distinct species present analogous variations ; but this may arise either from analogous constitution or from re- version. Secondary sexual characters are highly variable. ' What- ever the cause may be of each slight difference between the offspring and their parents—and a cause for each must exist—we have reason to believe that it is the steady accumulation of beneficial differences Which has given rise to all the more important modifications of structure in relation to the habits of each species."

83

The preceding outline of Darwin's main positions (which are in harmony with his essential doctrine of indefinite variability) prepares us for the discussion of more recent research and opinion. But for our present concrete know- ledge of the influence of environment, use and disuse, in- cluding all such researches as those of Semper, or the peculiarly brilliant and luminous investigations of Poulton,? the recent valuable summary of Arthur Thomson? may conveniently be referred to. The corresponding theoretic argument for the definite causation of most variations by these agencies has been recently re-stated by Spencer,# along with his proposed limitation of natural selection. This should be taken along with the testimony of the American Neo-Lamarckian school, among which the learned and suggestive, though too undigested, essays of Cope are especially prominent. The views of Niageli, Mivart, and other advocates of

internal variation here present themselves anew, along with the criticisms and replies to them, as also Weismann's doctrine of variability as being ultimately germinal. But space precludes the survey of this voluminous and unfinished controversy, which, more- over, would not at present yield any general result, since neither the various inductive and deductive arguments, nor the organismal, functional, &c., and environmental explanations which these variously favour, have been as yet exhaustively stated, still less properly confronted, and least of all reconciled, by any author.

It may be more profitable to attempt, though necessarily in barest outline, a fresh re-examination of the entire field. This may be most appropriately introduced, and the initial conception of the present part of the discussion re-stated, by a passage from Weismann, whose substantial acceptance of the doctrine of natural selection has already been noticed (p. 81). "We certainly cannot remain at the purely em- pirical conception of variability and heredity as laid down by Darwin in his admirable work. If the theory of selec- tion is to furnish a method of mechanical explanation, it is essential that its factors should be formulated in a precise mechanical sense, But, as soon as we attempt to do this, it is seen that, in the first enthusiasm over the newly dis- covered principle of selection, the one factor of transform- ation contained in this principle has been unduly pushed into the background to make way for the other more ap- parent and better known factors. The first indispensable factor, and perhaps the most important in any case, in every transformation is the physical nature of the organism itself." Let us briefly summarize, therefore, the main results of a fresh survey of the leading variations presented by plants and animals, z.¢., no longer commencing with the analogy of human selection upon the smallest varietal and specific distinctions, and arguing on Lyell's principle for the cumu- lative origin of the characters of larger groups, but consider- ing these larger differences from the standpoint of general physiology, without any hypothesis at all.

The physiological principle invoked is simply that antithesis be- twecn reproductive functions and individual ones which has been familiar since the dawn of physiology, and which, when reduced to its physical terms, is obviously deducible from the principle of conservation of energy. Instead of the generally received doctrine, summarized above, that of indefinite variation, with progress by means of struggle for existence among

individuals, its systematic application furnishes a detailed re-interpretation of the forms pre- sented by plants and animals comparable to that afforded by the

received hypothesis, but with an essentially altered view of the process and factors of organic evolution as a whole. Briefly stated,

1 Animal Life, Int. Sei. Series, 1881.

2 Proc. Roy. Soc., 1884-88.

3 "A Synthetie Summary of the Influence of Environment," in Trans. Roy. Phys. Soc. Edin., 1887-88.

4 Factors of Organic Evolution, London, 1886 (reprinted from Nine- teenth Century).

5 The Origin of the Fittest, London and New York, 1887.

Results of reeent researeh and opinion.

Proposed fresh theory of varia- tional laws.

Prepon-

deranee of

speeies main- taining ends over indi- vidual struggle and de- velop- ment.

Arrest of

vegeta- tion by repro- duction.

84

the view of evolution thus reachcd is that of definite variation, with progress essentially through the subordination of individual struggle and development to species-maintaining ends. ; y Let us commence with the origin of the flower, which all botanists agree in regarding as a shortened

branch. The apparent explanation of natural selection (from two other alternatives, one lengthened, the other unshortened), although morphologically reasonable, is at once excluded by the physiological one of. inevitable shortening, since the expense of the reproductive functions necessarily checks the vegetative ones, and since we cannot speak of selection where the imaginable alternatives are physically impossible. Similarly, the shortening of the inflorescence from raceme to spike or flower- head, or its hollowing into a fig, with the corresponding reduction in the size of the flowers, receives the same explanation—growth of axis and of appendages checked by reproduction—superseding that current, viz., by mere convenient adaptation to fertilization by insects. The internal structure of the flower is similarly modified, as may be shown in detail n the aig ce from hyposyny through erizyny to epigyny (these being simply stages of the progressive ates of the Pera of the axis), in the reduction of the floral envelopes and stamens and the number of carpels and ovules, and even in the transition from perispermic to endospermic and finally exalbuminous seeds. But these are the most important of floral variations, and furnish the essentially distinguishing charactcrs of the natural orders; hence, when these are seen, instead of being indefinite, to be parallel and definite (z.¢., determined through the continuous checking of vegetation by reproduction along what is thus a single and definite groove of progressive change), the import- ance of natural selection changes wholly from that of selecting and accumulating supposed indefinite variations to that of retarding definite ones after the stage of maximum utility has been in- dependently reached. The same simple conception unlocks in- numerable problems of floral morphology, large and small alike : é.g., it interprets with equal ease the inevitable development of gymnosperm into angiosperm (by continuous subordination of the reproductive carpellary leaf) and the origin of refined minor adapta- tions, like the splitting fruit of the geranium or the cupped stigma of the pansy, not as achievements of natural selection from among fortuitous variations, but as naturally traceable to the checked vege- tation of their respective types of leaf organ, just as in the familiar case of the pinnately-lobed outer sepals of the rose bud. The origin of floral colour as primarily an inevitable consequence of the same principle of vegetative subordination through reproductive pre- ae a was long ago pointed out by Spencer, who unfortunately, 1owever, also accepted without scrutiny the orthodox hypothesis that this incipient floral colour would revert to the

ordinary green vegetation but for the accident of its attractiveness to insects, and consequently must have owed its accumulation simply to the repeated preservation of the offspring of the accidentally brightest coloured ; whereas we uow see that the arrest of vegetative greenness in the flower and the exclusive appearance of those colour- ing matters associated with the imperfect vegetation of spring and autumn are a continuous process of its subordination as a vegeta- tive, and its developinent as a reproductive, apparatus. Adapta- tion to insects thus takes a quite secondary place ; similarly with the leafy arrest and floral coloration of bracts; while a detailed examination of thorny plants practically excludes the hypothesis of mammalian selection altogether, and shows spines to arise as an expression of the diminishing vegetativeness—in fact the ebbing vitality—of a shoot or even of an entire species. Evergreens tend to arise in all orders among the forms of more vegetative habit, and in such forms the amount of flowering is usually diminished rela- tively to the deciduous members of the same group, whilst:such con- stitutional vegetativeness checks the progress of floral evolution. Hence it is that evergreens, and even orders in which they largely occur, are usually less differentiated than their deciduous congeners. The apparently indefinite variations presented by doiesticated plants, e.g., the cabbage tribe, are at once classified and interpreted as so many stages along the same course (from leafy kale, through Brussels sprouts with many leaf buds, to cabbage with apical flower bud, and finally to cauliflower). The importance of this line of evi- dence for the Darwinian view of variation and selection becomes still further reduced, although also broadly settled, when we note that, since the subordination of vegetative to reproductive pre- ponderance gave us the origin of ordinal characters, the converse improvement of individual characters at the expense of reproduc- tive ones (on which domestication usually insists and artificial selec- tion depends) can only give us minor ones, for the most part varietal or specific, if so much. The Lyellian analogy for the ultimate accumulation of varietal differences into ordinal characters has thus been misleading. The preceding transition of both organography aud physiology from empirical to rational carries with it a similar transition from empirical to rational taxonomy as well: the antagon- ism of vegetative and reproductive habit is seen to be also general and constitutional. Just as the liliaceous type ranges on one side towards the characteristically vegetative grass or reproductive orchid, so is it with the main variations of every natural alliance,

be this order, genus, or even species. Thus the Ranunculacex have their grassy and their orchid-like types in meadow-rue and larkspur, yet the species of these very genera show examples of the opposite swing of variation ; again, the two species or varieties of British oak (Q. pedunculata and Q. sessilifiora) are thus, so to speak, the incipient grass and orchid forms of their common ancestor (Y. Hobwr). What we call higher or lower species or orders are thus the leaders or the laggards along one or other of these two lines of variation, the repre- sentatives of some stage of the predominance on one side or other of that oscillating balance between vegetative and reproductive pro- cesses which have long been known as the essential functions of organic life.

The results of a similar survey of the animal world, despite the Working greater intricacy of the problem, are scarcely less definite or com.- of the prehensive, and at once lead to a deeper interpretation of the whole. law in Commencing with an ascending survey, we recognize such essential animal types of Protozoa as the rhizopods, gregarines, and infusors, not as world.

the empirically selected products of spontaneous variation among indefinite possibilities, but simply as the predominatingly ameeboid, encysted, and motile phases of the primeval cell-cycle (see MorPHo- LOGY), these three forms of which are fixed by the properties of proto- plasm itself (see Sx, vol. xxi. pp. 720-724), each particular phase being fixed by the constitutional bias (diathesis) of its type towards anabolism or katabolism (see PaystoLoGy, PRroropLasM). This rationale of variation in ultimate terms, 7.¢., both cellular and proto- plasmic, both morphological and physiological, may be continued through all fields, ¢.g.,embryological or pathological, for some diseases are coming to be interpreted as the progressive variation of some func- tion and organ which only disturbs the general balance in its progress towards a new and higher equilibrium.1 This conception of physio- logical as well as merely structural life-history rationalizes both animal and vegetable taxonomy. Thus the greatest of all steps in morphological progress, that from the Protozoa to the AMetazoa, is not due to the selection of the more individuated and highly adapted forms, but to the union of relatively unindividuated cells into an aggregate in

which each becomes diminishingly competitive and increasingly subordinated to the social whole. Passing to trifling variations, such as the internal deposition of spicules, we interpret these neither as mere accidents, nor as pure advantages for support or defence, but as arising like plant-crystals or gouty deposits as unremoved waste products, accumulating with local or constitu- tional passivity. How the inevitable constitutional preponderance of anabolism or katabolism excludes spontaneous variation and subordinates external selection in the formation of types would become clear could we pass in review the animal kingdom, and note how its various alliances all range from passive to iore active forms. We should compare the coral or sponge at one end of the scale with the similarly passive (and consequently also skeletal) tortoise and glyptodon at the other. We should read in their anabolic diathesis the secret of accumulating size and of inevitable extinction (nay, even unravel the apparent contradictions with re-spect to the influence of the enviroument, as being specially strong upon the passive types, which hence are far richer in species than the corresponding less readily influenced active forms).

Finally, the preponderating importance of the species-maintaining over the individual functions should again be noted in animals as in plants, since the conviction thus becomes inevitable that, in stat- ing the process of evolution essentially in terms of the survival of the fittest in competition, the centre of gravity of the subject has been misplaced. 'The constant primary insistence upon individual competition for food, and the very subordinate recognition of the importance of sexual and social co-operation for well-being, which are characteristic of the prevalent theory (witness their proportion in the preceding summary), are traceable at once to the confusion of putting the nutritive factors "in the first place" because they precede the reproductive in time ; whereas the organisin inevitably enters upon reproduction and so cedes the preponderance—'the first place" —to the other-regarding functions. That increase of reproductive sacrifice which at once makes the mammal and marks its essential stages of further progress (monotreme, marsupial, placental), that increase of parental care, that frequent appearance of sociality and co-operation which even in its rudest forms so surely secures the success of the species attaining it, be it mammal or bird, insect or even worm,—all these phenomena of survival of the truly fittest, through love, sacrifice, and co-operation—need far other promi- nence than

they could possibly receive on the hypothesis of the essential progress of the species through internecine struggle of its individuals at the margin of subsistence. Yet these cases are only the supreme outcomes of that continuous aud definite proccss of variation through individual subordination and species-maintaiu- ing preponderance which we have seen modelling even the vege- table world.

In short, while no more denying the existence of com- petition in nature than the fact of organic progress, we deny the assumed relation of these as cause and effect,

1 Cf. Sutton, General Pathology, London, 1886.

and propose an interpretation in essential respects directly converse, without denying the minor agency of use and dis- use, environment, &c. Hach of the greater steps of progress is definitely associated with an increased measure of sub- ordination of individual competition to reproductive or social ends, and of interspecific competition to co-operative adaptation. The ideal of evolution is thus an Eden ; and, although competition can never be wholly eliminated, and progress must thus be asymptotic, it is much for our pure natural history to see no longer struggle, but love, as "creation's final law." While ceasing to speak of inde- finite variation, we may of course still conveniently retain the rest of the established phraseology, and continue to speak of "natural selection " and of "survival of the fit- test," always provided that, in passing from the explana- tion of the distributional survival of individuals or species

in contest within a given area to the interpretation of the main line of their morphological and physiological progress, we make the transition from the self-regarding to the other-regarding (in ethical language, from the egoistic to the altruistic) sense of these terms which has above been outlined.}

It would be premature to enter upon the extended or deductive application of these considerations, since, pend- ing their acceptance, the preceding

statement of the received doctrine of natural selection from spontaneous variations, with all its logical consequences (pp. 81-82), remains valid. Conversely, it is of course obvious that their adoption would involve the extensive modification of the received doctrine, as well as the complementing of new constructive attempts by a re-examination of earlier views of both the process and the philosophy of evolution." (P. GE.)

VARIATIONS, Caucutus or. 1. It has been observed (Maxima AND Minima, vol. xv. p. 643) that the origin of the calculus of variations may be traced to John Ber- noulli's celebrated problem, published in 1696 in the Acta Eruditorum of Leipsic, under the following form, Datis in plano verticali duobus punctis A et B, assignare mobili M viam AMB per quam gravitate sua descendens, et moveri meipiens a puncto A, brevissimo tempore perveniat ad punctum B. This problem introduced considerations en- tirely different from those hitherto involved in the discus- sion of curves, for in its treatment it is necessary to conceive a curve as changing its form in a continuous manner, that is, as undergoing what is styled deformation. This change of form can be treated analytically as follows.

Suppose y=/(x) to represent the equation of a curve, and let us write Ce) IE) so oncncccsnes onsavenconacs (a), where a is an infinitesimal quantity, and ¥(x) any function of x subject only to the condition of being finite for all values of x within the limits of the problem. Then equation (1) represents a new curve indefinitely close to the curve y=/(x); and by varying the form of (x) we may regard (1) as representative of any continuous curve indefinitely near to the original curve.

2. Again a(x) is the difference of the y ordinates of the two curves for the same value of x; this indefinitely small difference is called the variation of y, and is denoted by dy. It may be regarded as the change in y arising solely from a change in the relation connecting y with x, while "itself remains unaltered. In general, if y be a function of any number of independent variables «,, Ly… Hn, then dy represents any indefinitely small change in y arising solely from a change in the form of the function, while i ts, &e., are unchanged. Thus the variable y may receive two essentially distinct kinds of increment,—one arising from a change in one or more of the variables, the other arising solely from a change in the relation which connects y with

these variables. The former increments are those contemplated and treated of in the ordinary calculus ; the latter are those principally considered in the calculus of variations.

_ We shall follow Strauch, Jellett, Moigno, and the prin- cipal modern writers on the subject, by restricting, in general, the symbol 6 to the latter species of increment. In many problems both kinds of increment have place simultaneously. Thus, if y=/(a,, 2», 23), and if Ay denote the total increment of y, we have

ay by + Fed diy + Hy eae est crane (2) and so on in all cases. dy ad

3. It is readily seen that San da? and in general

Mee 2s, The last equati hareaiee a equation may be written

SD" y= D"8Y ooeccccccccescceccccsaseneees (3),

where D stands for tle symbol of differentiation, ae

4. We shall adopt Newton's notation and write ¥ for d ? he :

a ¥ for = y™ for ra and proceed to consider the

variation of the general expression /=f(x, y, y, ¥,... y),

in which the form of the function f is given, while that of

y in terms of x is indeterminate. Here, considering w as

unchanged, we have

dV, av,

5V=-) dy + apt +++

dy dv_» av av oe dy Saale rt}

i

av n) PO é

Now let

then we have 5V = P5y + P,Diy+ P2D byt… +PrDoy…...0000 (4). 5. Next let us consider the variation of the definite eal . . integral U= | _ Vdx, where V does not contain either of the limits 2, and 2. Here, when the limits are unchanged,

x: we have dU = | ‘3 Vdx,and, when the limits undergo change,

%

Hi, H iy su=0[” vae= | “SV doe + Vidar, — Vollity svescecceees (5).

xO x 6. We shall here bring in a new symbol, called the sign of substitution, which was introduced by Sarrus.2 Thus, if / be any function of x, y, &c., the result of substituting x, for x in Y—the other variables being unchanged—is

represented by ” F in the form of notation adopted by Moigno and Lindeléf.4 “and i Pig represented by / ” Fe Employing this notation, (5) ‘ x

The difference between

Hh nie. ce he (6). xo x 7. We now proceed to transform the last equation, commencing with the case in which V is a function of x, y, and y solely.

x | Here 8U= | “(P3y +P, Ddy)dee + / Vae, x xg Hi ¢ : ay =) ‘(P= 92 Jaya + “Poy / Pdx x alae x0 ×0

Next let V be a function of a, y, y, and #, then

is written

*x xy su= | *(Pby + PyDby + P,D®8y)dee + Vda. xo x0*

1 Geddes, “On Variation in Plants,” “On the Origin of Thorns and Prickles,” and “On the Origin of Evergreens,”’ in Trans. Bot. Soc. Edin., 1886, 1887, 1888. ; ee

2 Geddes, “A Restatement of the Theory of Organic Evolution, Roy. Soc. Edin., 1888.

3 Recherches sur le Calcul des Variations, 1848.

4 Cale. des Var., 1861.

- 86

Hence, observing that d (dP, aA Slade re

@ dP, dP, a we get su=| (2 ——=—+ ?) bydx +/ Vdx § is dx” dx ms

*we x +/ (1- Geet | * P,sy x9 dx Xo*

In general, if 7 be a function of x, y, J, J++. y™, we have .

= =dy — Py

=) dP»

ey Ean 5U=| (Poy+P,Diy+... + PnD”by)du+ / Vide. i x : ; Now let D; denote the differentiation of 5y, and D2 the differentia- tion of P,, Pz, &e.; we may write PmD™ by — (-1Y”8yD” Pm =(Dy” — (-1)“D2”)Pmdy =(D, DMD PO DD, +... Le ene

—1 ad =! aP, oH am—1 a” IE) a mV, OE’m rym Le £(=1)” yt I. at Lg Of at OU s2¢= 1) erg me at m ™m Xu P. ™m Henee / Pm D” sydx=(-1) mn by dae 2 Xo dx 4 #1 m—1 af, Mm yym—2 m—1 a” 7) See ee +(-1 a Ihe 4: i Pm D” dy — ~— D”by + f(r aie, me

x Applying this to the different terms in the value of 6U given above,

eree 2 Ole dae, ae i= er seem. eee a He lye ue bi Ait ae eee +(-1) dat aya ‘a p aP, a oe hal 1 Get a oy

y dP. od” P, \ ds / (7,- G... +(-1)” cit ae

oe ee + / ae / Vee Xo x0

Fete A ee (9). This result may be written vy na eu i (P)syda-+ i Vda XQ x %y + [Paya (LaU+ + (Pn)By- Pf oe(10) Xo . dP, dP dP, &P. , =e ee a ee fo = 2) eo ae where (P)= aa ae ya) =le ag + ies and

so on. 8. This expression consists of three parts,—(1) the de-

x finite integral | ‘(P)bydun, which depends on dy, the change XI)

in the form of the function y; (2) the expression ‘ Vda,

which depends solely on the change in the limiting values

of «; and (3) the quantity / – {(P)8y + (Pp)dy+...3, XL)

which depends on the variations of y, 9, &c., at the limits. It is often convenient to write (10) in the abbreviated

ou =L+ [Mayas ie ee (11). x9

9. The principal applications of the calculus of variations have reference to the determmation of the form of one or more unknown functions contained in a definite integral, in such a manner that the integral shall have a maximum or minimum value. For instance, to determine the form

form

oh of the function y which renders U= i "Vda a@ maximum or . . "0 : a minimum, we have as above 6U=Z + " MByde. Here, x

. . . 0

as in the differential calculus (see InrinrresimaL CAt- cuLus, § 64), for a maximum or minimum value of JU it is readily seen that we must have 5U=0; this leads to

Ly : L=0 and | Méydx=0. Now the latter integral cannot

x0 be zero for all indefinitely small values of Sy unless =0

for all values within the limits of integration. Hence we get the differential equation in y, mar, ory Ree Pao + g++ + (- FH (12).

VY ARI TON Ss

10. We here suppose that there is no restriction on éy, so that for any value of x the increments + dy and — dy are equally compatible with the conditions of the problem. The reasoning consequently will not apply if the conditions render this impossible. For instance, if a curve be re- stricted to lie within a given boundary, then for all points on the boundary the displacements must be inwards, and the opposite displacements are impossible. In this case! the curve satisfying a required maximum or minimum con- dition consists partly of portions of the boundary and partly of portions of a curve satisfying the equation J=0.

11. The equation J/=0 is in general a differential equation of the degree 2x ; aecordingly its solution usually contains 27 arbitrary con- stants. The values of these constants are to be determined by aid of the equations deduced from Z=0 in eombination with the given conditions at the limits. For example, if 7 be a funetion of x, y, .

and y solely, the solution of petits is in general of the form

dx y=f(x, , C). Now, suppose that the limiting points are re- strieted to the eurves ¥)=fo() and y,=/;(x,), then we get at the limits dyy+%dxy=fo'(x)da and dSy,y,dx,=/;'(a)dx, Henee, substituting in L=0 the values of dy) and dy, derived from these equations, we get, sinee dz and dz, are arbitrary, Vo(Pi)ol Zo (o) – Yo) =0 Vy + (PyiA() – 1) =0 We have therefore six equations for the determination of the six quantities x, Yo, 2, Yy 4, and ey. The integration of the equation Af'=0 is mueh simplified in particular cases. dP. (1) Let V be a funetion of x and y solely, then we have = =i),

P, =C > (2) If /be a function of y and y solely, P= 1, also x V)=Py4+- Py

therefore

= y+ yp. Hence, integrating, we get

V=Piy+e where ¢ is an arbitrary constant.

12. For example, let us consider Bernoulli's problem of the eurve of quickest descent under the aetion of gravity. Take the axis of x vertical and that of y horizontal, and suppose the particle to start from the point Xp, Yo with the velocity due to the height " ; then, if v be the velocity at any point, we have v?=2g(z+h-2), also ds se pda

t= —-=—_———_____—"———.. Here, neglecting a constant faetor, we ma y» A/ a w+) h—2% iil 8 , y a/T 4 gd j — write V={ —=2 = ; and by (14) we get Jo = eV 2+h—-2% aya — ay" alles V1+ 7 :

Now, writing @ for 1/c? and assuming «+h —2a=a sin®0, we find dy=tan 6dx=a(1—.e0s20)d0; therefore y=a(6 — sin 6 eos 0) + K, and we infer that the eurve is a cyeloid. (a) If we suppose the upper limit to be fixed and the

lower re- stricted to the curve y,=/;(,), we get from (18) 1+ tan 4f,'(x,)=0 accordingly the curve interseets the bounding eurve orthogonally. (8) Next let the upper limit be restrieted to the eurve y)=/o() ; then sinee V contains 2, we have an additional term in 6U arising from

vy the ehange in xp, viz., day i a a consequently the coefficient of

ago . ; qd V dx, in 6U is —— dat — {V+ (Py)o(fi' 0) – Yo) } » ayo 1 7 j . and we have / F ia Vor (PrydoCfo (20) — Yo) ce vveeeveveves Glo}

0

If we substitute for V its value, we get without diffieulty from this equation 1+ tan 6,f9'(%)=0. Comparing this with (16), we see that the tangents to the bounding eurves at the extremities of the trajectory are parallel (Moigno, op. cit., p. 230). cal 13. More generally, consider the curve for which U= () pds nat nt x9 = HA/1 + 9?dx is a maximum or a minimum, where p is a given XQ

funetion of zandy. Here pee +97, i and we get

dy Vi+# ip = y du dp d y eat Tide ae nae ys S| (——— IS i dy™1 = Vi agp de 7) +H ee =) ; hence, if p be the radius of curvature, we have Li pel: dp dp = cos ta ae we raee canara kitsch (18),

where a, 8 are the angles whieh the normal makes with the co-

1 For a full discussion of such cases, see Todhunter, On the Calculus of Variations, 1871 (Adams prize essay), Cambridge.

| | |

PBIAWION Ss 87

ordinate axes respectively. Jellett remarks? that, if the proposed

integral had been : "< we should then have arrived at the equation

= (8 Bee cs st), and consequently have seen that the two pp dx dy

curves coutained under the cquation p?=f(x,y,%) are such that, if

pds a maximum or a minimuni, the other possesses

the same property with regard to | “

one reuders

14. Next, to find the curve such that the surface generated by its revolution round a given line shall be a minimum. Here,

X —_ neglecting a constant multiplier, we may write U= | yN1+ Pde ; Xo

aecordingly by (15) we have y=cV1+g. This gives ie = = . and hence Et? tog (y de Ses*

¢ or y=5(eerie c Sear) errr. (19),

which represents the common catenary.

15. We now proceed to generalize the results in § 11. If /be a function of 2, y, #,... y™, not containing y explicitly, we have by integration

—1

ae Pa _

de) SS roe osinc (20), Again, if V does not contain x explicitly, < (V)=9P+9P,+...+y@t)P,. Also, from the equa- as ; hence

. a’ P,, 7 dx

where ¢ is an arbitrary constant.

2

tion M=0 we see that P=—1-———2+ a=

d ed? gk mE, Be ~~8P, 495) + 0P,~~ oat. tY¥t MP,-(-1)

=(D,+ D,\yP,)+ (Dy – Dy\(gP2) + sD, ~(- 1) ae), where D, represents the differentiation of y, J, &c., and De that of

P,, P,, &c. Consequently, by integration Va=c+WP)) +H Pet… YP, coccccers (21), a differential equation of the order 2n-2 at the highest. Again, if

V contains neither x nor y explicitly, we may substitute c' for (P,), and consequently we have Vactc'y+y(Py) +... tYP, ceccccccsonee (22). 16. As an example, let us investigate the curve for which the area between the curve, its evolute, and the extreme radii of curva-

Sy 2) "/2\2 ture shall beaminimum. Here U= il pds= i} (1+ 9 a, Hence So Xo y . . b ' Oya) . = a Cy Coy Y (22), since #P,= — V,we have V= Cy + Co, OF p= ; ab Jo A/ + Sv JL OP

therefore " =¢, COs +¢, Sin ¢,where ¢ is the angle made by the

tangent with the axis of z. This leads to

(23)

whieh shows that the curve is a cycloid. Again, (1) if the extreme

dV

Let 4% 9 _aV , Cag a Be, a oni ay en 6U= Piles f (Poy + P,Doy+...+P,»Dsy)dx Xo Xo

Dy dt : Qoz+ Q Db2+...+ QmD"Sz)dx.

Proceeding as in § 7, we find

vy vy xy su= | (Payde+ | (Q)dzdax + Vde Xo Xo

%

' Calculus of Variations, p. 140.

oa + / {(Pydyt(P.)dg+... + P,,dy- DY x

+ [182+ (Q)85+ + OBO} ace (25), Xo

where (LP), (P,), ... have the same meaning as in § 7,and (Q), Q,),... are the corresponding functions for the variable z.

18. The determination of y and z where | Way is

. . . . : % .

maximum or a minimum leads, as in § 8, to the equations (P)=0, (Q)=0, along with the equation at the limits

vy x % / Vie + ” “(Py)By + ...P,Sy%-D} + iy {(Qy)82 + —. Qmnd2™-D} =, % Xo Xo

The mode of treatment is similar to that for a single de. pendent variable.

19. In the discussion of a curve which possesses a maximum or minimum property, if we limit the investiga- tion to all curves of a given length or which satisfy some other condition, we have a distinct class of problems, which originated in the isoperimetrical problems of James Ber- noulli. They were originally styled dsoperimetrical, but are now called problems of relative maxima and minima. Thus, let it be proposed to determine the form of y which renders

La Us | Vde a maximum or a minimum, and which also X

| satisfies the condition U’ = | V’dx = constant, where V and xo

V’ are given functions of x, y, y, &c. It is obvious that, if U is a maximum or a minimum, so also is V+ aU’, where a@ is any arbitrary constant. Accordingly the problem re- duces to the determination of the maximum or minimum

x: value of the integral | ‘(V+aV’)dx, regarding a as a con-

stant, whose value is to be determined by aid of the given value of U’.

20. Another class of problems closely allied to the pre- ceding is that in which the variables are connected by one or more equations of condition: for instance, when y, %, y, &e., 2, 2, &c., are connected by a relation W=0, we investi- gate the maximum or minimum values of

Ua] (VAN W det vecccccccccccescecees (26),

Xo where A is an indeterminate function of x We will illustrate these principles by examples.

21. To find the curve connecting two fixed points such that the surface generated by its revolution round a fixed line shall be given, and the volume of the generated solid shall bea maximum. 'Taking

wy the fixed line as the axis of z, we may write U= 1 (yr +ayV1+y")du. x0

ar ayy" Hence by (15) we have y?+ ayV1+ 7=c+—— VIi+y

a

or y+ Vise" aisiaitetatsletsteletetelslsiccicieaciciels (27):

If the curve meets the fixed axis we have c=0, and the curve is a circle whose centre lies on the axis.

The further integration of (27) depends on elliptic functions ; it can, however, be shown without difficulty, as was proved by De- launey, that the curve is that generated by the focus of an ellipse or hyperbola which rolls on a fixed right line.

22. Asan illustration of the method of § 20 we shall consider again the problem of § 13, taking the arc for independent variable. Let in @, =, then we have the relation #?+ y?—1=0; and we write

3 3)

v= | "ut ANGE +y°-1)} as= | Vas, where V=p+4X(e2+ 92-1). 50 So

Hence for a maximum or minimuin we have

dan ds dy aa) Pee ciNet (28) ; du _ du du_dnr therefore an ay ae or [t=)

x

88

Again, the equation at the limits is

8] 5] / past / NPR O…....---2(80)3 so §

ORR. also at cach limit we have de=déx+ads, dy=dy+yds ; hence (30) 8] Ss] transforms into (w—A)ds + i Mada + ydy)=0, So 8p

Ss] . or cd(s, — So) / Naedart ydy)=0 ….0000-+- (31).

5

0 .

Now if the length of the curve be given, the first term in (31) vanishes ; whereas, if the length be not given, we must have c=0. Consequently in the isoperimetrical problem we have w= +¢, and in the general caseA=p. If we substitute « for \ in (28) we can readily deduce the results already given in § 13. 23. More generally, let » be a function of x, y, %, and y, then we have V=u+4Xa‘7+y2-1). Here we readily deduce v= dV x Le =C+e2 Fis 7] dy and the equation at the limits becomes

1/dV av 3, = ——d ——d)=0. cd(s, +] a = ay y

This shows, as before, that when the length of the curve is not given we have c=0.

24, The criterion for distinguishing between maximum and minimum solutions was investigated by Legendre, Lagrange, and other eminent mathematicians, for whose contributions to the solution of this problem, see Tod- hunter's History of the Calculus of Variations, The full analytical investigation was, however, first given by Jacobi, of whose results we here give a brief discussion.

In this investigation, as in ordinary problems of maxima and minima, it is necessary to take into consideration the squares and the higher powers of our indefinitely small variations. Thus, if

2

U=| Vdzx,the complete variation of Umay be written 65U+ 40 U+

xo &e., where 5U depends on the first powers of dy, 6y, &c., and &'U on their second powers, &c. Again, we will suppose that the limiting values of y and of its first 2 — 1 differential coefficients are fixed, then

%

*sU= ii '3Vde= a * Mbyden, and &°'U= i "aMoyde. The solutions of x ui*

x the problem, as already observed (§ 8), 'are given by the equation M=0. Also for a true maximum it is necessary that 6°U should be constantly negative, and for a minimum that it should be positive. If 6°U=0, or if it change its sign between the limits of integration, the result is in general neither a maximum nor a minimum. As

before, we suppose Va function oF fay WE Poo Y, and wa=p-2i, apd (i = (4-DE tla oa therefore oM= (= . DE+Ds ES .)av = ai Die moe (ett + ees")by (38).

When this is developed, we see that every term, disregarding sign,

2

is of the form D' as dy dy™ the corresponding term, and make /=m-+,r, we readily see that = ty 7m 7" av r dV ws – 1p {D araghs Yaa Hence 64 is reducible to the form 5M=(A)+DA,D+D'A,D'+... D"A,D" oy …(35), provided it can be shown that D'w(-1)'wD" is reducible to an operation of suchaform. Now thisis readily seen, for Du-uD=u, therefore D'u-DuD=Di and DuD-uD°=%D; consequently Dut+uD?=2DuD+iu. In like manner Du-uD = 2DUD + %i and the proposed result can be readily shown by induction. Hence we infer that we may write 6M in the form (35).*

25. We have in the next place to show that the symbolic oper- ator u(4y+DA\D+...D”A,D”)u may be written in the form By DBiD+...+D”B,D”. To establish this, it is sufficient to show that wD” A,D”w can be transformed into the shape in question. By Leibnitz’s theorem we have

D™ésy. Also, if we combine this with

D } D™ oy (34).

Du=ud + rap 43 a – apr ae

and UD = Du-rD a+ = =” pry aes

VARSATIONS

But these may be written

Du=udD” + Loe + LD ar aes!

uD Ss DUuHP LD eee. therefore uD”A,D’u=(D’u-D““L,+...) AUD +1, Da Hence by § 24 we readily see that uD”A,D”u is of the required form. Accordingly we may write wW(Ay+DA\D+...D” AnD \wo=(Byt DBD ... D”B,D”)v(36). If w=dy, we get from (35)

uo0M=(By+ DB\D+... + page) sheen. (the again, if v=1 in (36), we have w(Aypt+DA,D+... +D”AnD”)u= By

Hence, if w, be a solution of (4)+.D4A,D+...+D”4,D”)w=0, that

is, if it be a solution of 64/=0, the corresponding value of By is 0. Consequently we have from (36)

u,5M=D(B,DBD...+ pgp” ypu. If mars this becomes ; 5M=2,D(B, + DB,D+ ... D” BaD”) Daby……(89).

Again, the symbolic operator B,DB,D... 4D” By can be transformed into 2D(C,DC,D... +D”C,410" ee

and soon, Finally we get OM = 2, Da D vein Rye Dep Dinar ove PG VACY varseecee (40), Thus we obtain 2 “nl v= by%D2,D… Den D.. Deg De 6Yyd% wircece (41). Xo

If we integrate by parts, then, since the limiting values of y, y…

1

are fixed, we get 0° U=-— iP (Dz, 5y)(%Dey.. . %D2,6y)dx, and after x

ee : 0, nm successive integrations

: al é”U=(-1)” i Sql Denman. + DIROYOAL veaseeses (42).

9

® n ey Again, from (33) we see that 4,=(-1) ay

find without difficulty

; also from (40) we

Bi 1. nt) a ocseeseres tree (43). Hence we get finally TI Dee Demme eee OUNG vu= | ie ee 2) me Zn—12n—-2 + 0 Ry) e (44), ay es 9 ‘ ” where Q,, = ry From this it follows that the sign of 6°U de- iy 2 pends in general on that of Q,, or < (nB" Accordingly for a maxi- y

mum or minimum solution it is necessary that Q, should have the same sign for all values of « between the limits of integration, da being supposed always positive. The reader will find no difficulty in applying this criterion to any of the examples which we have hitherto given.

26. A new and complete discussion of the criteria for the discrimination of maximum and minimum solutions has been given by Mr Culverwell in Zrans. Roy. Soc., vol. elxxviii. (1887). Owing to want of space we can only make an allusion to this remarkable memoir, which contains an elementary investigation of the criteria for maxima and minima not only in the case of one but for any number of dependent variables, as also for multiple integrals.

27. We now proceed to the application of the calculus of variations to multiple integrals, commencing with the

double integral V= / – Vdxdy, where V is a function of xv Yo

: ; dz dz dz

*tr, Y; * P, % 7, 8, and ¢, in which P=’ tay ne da az Oe;*

s= cea Cage in accordance with the ordinary notation.

Yi 2: Let Vi=] Vay, then U= | ‘Vee; therefore by (6) we have Yo x

tal Oy su= | a7 de | V dee x9 xo

sil) pal 2 V1 ey afl = / / 5 Vdedy + / Voyde + i dx| Viay. Zo” Yo Zo’ Yo % Yo ay

Again 37 = Nbz+ Pop + Qdq + Ror + Sds+ Tot, where N=”,

———

Consequently, by subtraction,

dV dV dV

= i. , i (Noz+ Pip + Q6q + Ror + Sds+ T6t)dady…..... (45). Lov Yo

In the transformation of this expression we shall employ the fol- lowing formule, which are easily established,

Hig Y1 JE at / ‘ ‘“ a= i “ie | udy — ha is ee… 26y, Xo yl 1) Yo to Yo dx

w. vy 1 and / F i. ab daddy = / if 1021 AR ss SORA eg NO (47). aod yo LY a Yo

1 £¥1_ dé Hence we get | i, Po -daily Xo Yo we

Y. 1 /Y1 =- [? jis oe sedady + i “dee i “PBedy — | 7 Polecdy, aod Yo OX x Yo tg yo OF

“1 PV” déz 71 (“dQ (XA /Y1 also / : 0 ag – i a} GY saleberap Qaeda. Lov Yo dy ‘ Xo Yo dy – | wo Yo

0

TN doz Next, to transform i} R-, dedy, we have aod yo 0%”

0′

TV / asx 2 1 yi 2 \ (253+ 2 & anay= [| gel Bae aed aod Yo a x de aod yt dx

al Y1 oo vy Yl tes s Ds ae ay 2 (/ Rela t J yy ae tol yo Ue Axe | also / xy

y

YI aR doz GR Ly 41g dR les We + 2? day | saa ao?) aay

1 1dR 1 MdR dy = af — 62d. -| —— — dzedy. i yy UX Y ae de dx“*

Yo v1 ry 2 i ‘(2 Fhe) ay tw Yo daz dz’*

1 [1 / »ddz_ aR “1 M/dR. _ddz\dy = a R—— —- — 62 \d hs ep eee / a da de Jews [oP (ae # oe) das

Again, in transforming the latter integral it is necessary to observe that y, and y, are functions of x, and accordingly that in

: dbz ad dy dbz that integral we have dx de) – Pa a ; hence

1 (“A ddz dy % M1 /dy doz 1 1 dy d ‘. ge [2(#) — dl -[REL © (ae\a ff ae , zy! Vo we ao tol Yo dx da! te 1/41 d 1/“g og mio [0/8 oyayn ft] wld a ano eY ae qa Seay 1 7Yy -/ | ‘ep (BEY) ae Ol yy dz dx*

*a (4. dy dy/dR. dydR But ma Bat) = ay ,dy/dh dydR da\” dx as de * da dy*

TY i sz v1 (Yig2R 71 (¥1fodéz aR Re raed) =f il Seda i i (2G | ty yy dae y ! 2 yy tu? ela ao yo Ge da a Jee

v1 Yi a +f”) oo a se)) ode Xy

; hence we get

Yo ax? dx dx dy az 1/%1_ (dy \? déz 1 /Y._ dy +f”) n(SY) ay | / aos ee 48). ml yo \da]} dy x yo ae a ey ry 2 Next, to transform ‘i : i oe. Here ty) yo “ily

“a | “1 (ase aS dbz 71 (1d (_déz ght A 8) saya [29a ie yo\ daxdy dx dy y ay yo@@\ dy eae

4 ry dé 7 /Y iz

=/ seu f / po oe tod yy OY XZ! Yo dy dat

1 (Vi bs ry /Y

*also a (ie ay * tay andy = | OB sed aol yo \ de ay dudy tio) yo bt*

’ m”/ doe . dS henee b eee Gee ee by subtraction i; – iw ih S dey bz a = dudy

*PLY doz al Y1 (dS dézdy = S—— dy ~ -—O2 eee Mes hea : Ok dy y ae * dy dx ss –*

. wy y : Finally, to transform i 7 — mo) yy FY

APA se AT ds “1 v1 z lad a9 ap ay) ff al 7a) = ~ % Yo Y yay mod yol\ ty Xp! “Yo

WA/AT dee aT “a1 nay and is & ee =[/ —— 6edx, consequent] a) y\ ty dy” dy? : =a

dady, we have

ef? ute City, dy

V 2B bAsh 1 OW § 89

dV ,, av a i ie 4 ds: FT) i ie doz aT ee pe ge a2! ence 5 Ved pee 5. Vana ae 50). dp' Q dq' = dr' " ds at ane 'h: Yo Y aod yo ey? ay? " tol Yo dy dy (50)

y; Combining the preceding results, we get 5U=8 if ie dady

Xv Yo

*a ry 2 2 : =| '| (27 aE Daag ray * aya)Oeddy Yo*

*~ da dy ' dx * dxdy dy?*

ey Yi dy dy dRdy dR/dy\? dS av . +f) eee hae az ax a G2) Se

1 /¥1 P 2 sy + / (2(¢ ~ 8h 1) eae a! Yo dx dz dy

'1 /y¥ 7 Yi tt f, 'Voyde / : Péedy+ | ["(2-Z-) oF 0 XY Yo ov Yo a y

%! Yo

1 (Yi ay Y/Y ' 4 Rays | / s- nH)a: ee (51).

Xo/ Yo dee Xo" Yo ie! : 28. In many applications the limits of x and y are determined

from a single equation. Thus, suppose the integral U= || Vdady

to express the sum of the elements Vdzdy for all values of a and y which satisfy either g(x, y) >0 or $(z, y) <0, then the limits are given by the equation ¢(x, y)=0. In this case the preceding value of 6U becomes much simplified, for y, y, are determined from the equation' ¢=0; and the extreme values of z are found by eliminat- ing y between the equations ¢=0 and d¢/dy=0. But these are the conditions that ¢=0 should have equal roots in y; we consequently infer that, when either z=, or z=2, we have Yo=Y; Hence we

a Y: observe that i : ie ‘udy =0 and , : / ‘udy=0 for all values of 2, so

that the last four tert in the expr for 6U in (51) disappear in this case.

The methods and results of this and the preceding section can without difficulty be extended to triple and higher multiple integrals.

29. The method of application of the calculus of varia- tions to the determination of maximum or minimum values of multiple definite integrals proceeds on the same prin- ciples as those already considered in § 9 for single integrals.

We shall limit the discussion to a brief consideration of

the double integral U=

of «, y, z, p, and q solely, and the limits are determined, as in § 28, by an equation of the form ¢(x, y)=0. Such problems readily admit of geometrical interpretation.

Here (51) reduces to

y su= |” ‘(w-Z- 3) adady xo Yo dx dy

1 /W ¥ { (2 ~ Paes Vay | ae TE (52). Xo’ Yo dae

Consequently, as in the case of single integrals, for a maximum or minimum value of U we must have

ll Vdedy, in which V is a function

dP dQ_ . ee (53), y and / ‘{ (0-22) ba-+ Voy \ =0 ee: 4 (54), Yo ee

The former is in this case a partial differential equation of the second order, whose solution, whenever it can be obtained, consists of an equation between 2, y, z having two arbitrary functions. The form of these functions in each case is to be determined by aid of (54) combined with the given limiting conditions of the problem. Thus, let us suppose the

upper limit restricted to points in the U qd 1 ! dy 2 v1 / surface z=/,(x, y), and let p 7 dear then a/ = / g' Sy ;

¥1 v1, y and / (62+-q6y)= / Véy. This gives

Y) / {52+ (q—q')8y} =Onceceeceeeeeceeee (55). Substituting in (54), we get "{ 7+ (9-H ~~a)} <0 Petal (56). Again, along the limiting curve we have dz= pdx+qdy and dz=p'dx+q'dy ; hence we get oN ae Substituting in (56), we have along the limiting curve UEP Day — Q)=0 ...~~...ecncassees (57). 1 If the equation @=0 gives for y several values, Yo, Y1) Yo) Y3) Y4)—~» then

yy ¥3 we substitute fi Vdy= ii Vdy+ | Vdy+...,and each integral is to be treated as above. Yo 2

XXIV, — 12

90

A similar equation holds if the lower limit be restricted by another

surface. ; By aid of these equations the arbitrary functions involved in the solution of (53) are determinable. For example, to find the surface

such that ff pa shall be a minimum, dS being an element of the surface and yw a given function of the co-ordinates x, y, 2. Here

ae Hp Hg VapN 1 tpt, P= Vite Ni +p ge

; dP ad p d q tion Noes = =) leads to Hz So) t3(= =) = 1 du dp a

TaN 1+ pg? dz Pde Ydy J? hta = (cos 7 cos pGh + cosy) where 2 and F' are the principal radii of curvature of the surface at the point, and a, 8, y the angles which the normal to the surface makes with the co-ordinate axes, Again, if we suppose the surface limited by two fixed surfaces, the equation V+ P(p' —p)+ QO(q' – g)=9 reduces to Se yy/5 AOL = pene eoeencpoengcoeee (59). This shows that the surface intersects each of its bounding surfaces orthogonally. Asa particular case of (58) we infer that the surface of minimum area is in general such that its principal radii of

cur- yature at every point are equal and of opposite signs. A remark- able investigation of the equation of this surface was given by Bonnet in Liowville's Journal, 1860. Agaiu, in the surface of given area and of maximum volume we have V=z-aV1+7?+9°. The equation V— a e=0 readily leads in this case to z +5=0,

30. The principles and method of the calculus of varia- tions are largely employed in all branches of mathematics, both pure and applied. Want of space prevents our enter- ing into any account of such application. The reader will find the history of this calculus fully detailed in Todhunter's treatise, already mentioned. The most important recent work in English is Mr Carll's Calculus of Variations, New York and London, 1885. (3B. w.)

VARICOSE VEINS. See Sureery, vol. xxii. p. 684.

VARLEY, Cornetius (1781-1873), water-colour painter, a younger brother of John Varley (see below), was born at. Hackney, London, on 21st November 1781. He was educated by his uncle, a philosophical instrument maker, and under him acquired a knowledge of the natural sciences ; but about 1800 he joined his brother in a tour through Wales, and began the study of art. He was soon engaged in teaching drawing. From 1803 till 1859 he was an occasional exhibitor in the Royal Academy ; and he also contributed regularly to the displays of the Water-Colour Society, of which, in 1803, he was one of the founders, and of which he continued a member till 1821. His works, which are not numerous, consist mainly of carefully finished classical subjects, with architec- ture and figures. He published a series of etchings of Boats and other Craft on the River Thames, and during his life as an artist he continued deeply interested in scientific pursuits. For his improvements in the camera lucida, the camera obscura, and the microscope he received the Isis gold medal of the Society of Arts; and at the International Exhibition of 1851 he gained a medal for his invention of the graphic telescope. He died at Hamp- stead on 2nd October 1873.

VARLEY, Joun (1778-1842), water-colour painter, was born at Hackney, London, on 17th August 1778. His father, a man of scientific attainments and tutor in the family of Lord Stanhope, discouraged his leanings towards art, and placed him under a silversmith. But on his parent's

death Varley escaped from this uncongenial em- ployment, and, after working with a portrait painter, en- gaged himself at the age of sixteen to an architectural draughtsman, who took him on a provincial tour to sketch the principal buildings in the towns they visited. His spare hours were employed in sketching from nature, and in the evenings he was permitted, like Turner and Girtin,

Hence the equa-

or

VAR—VAR

to study in the house of Dr Munro. In 1798 he exhibited his first work, a View of Peterborough Cathedral, in the Royal Academy. In 1799 he visited North Wales, and in its wild mountain scenery found the subjects best suited to his brush. He returned to the same district in 1800, and again in 1802, and the impressions then received powerfully influenced the whole course of his art. In 1804 he became a foundation member of the Water-Colour Society, and contributed over forty works to its first ex- hibition. He had married in the previous year ; and, in order to provide for the wants of an increasing family, he was obliged to produce for the dealers much work of a slight and commonplace character. He also taught draw- ing, and some of his pupils, such as John Linnell and William Hunt, afterwards became celebrated. He was a firm believer in astrology, skilful in casting horoscopes ; and some curious instances were related of the truth of his predictions. It was at his house that his friend William Blake sketched his celebrated Visionary Heads. Varley died at London on 17th November 1842.

Varley's landscapes are graceful and solemn in feeling, and simple and broad in treatment, being worked with a full brush and pure fresh transparent tints, usually without any admixture of body- colour. Though his works are rather mannered and conventional, they are well considered and excellent in composition. Some of his earlier water-colours, including his Views of the Thames, were painted upon the spot, and possess greater individuality than his later productions, which are mainly compositions of mountain and lake scenery, produced without direct reference to nature.

Among his literary works are Zodiacal Physiology, 1828 ; Observations on Colour and Sketching from Nature, 1830; A Practical Treatise on Perspective, and Principles of Landscape Design for Young Artists.

VARNA, a fortified town and seaport of Bulgaria, in 43° 12' N. lat. and 27° 56' E. long., about midway between the Danube delta and the Bosphorus, lies on the north side of the Bay of Varna, at the opening of the Pravadi valley, 5 miles wide and skirted by hills on both sides. The town, which covers the slope of one of these hills, facing seawards, comprises Greek, Bulgarian, Turkish, Jewish, and Gipsy quarters, with a total population (1888) of 25,256 (8449 Bulgarians, 7569 Turks, 5423 Greeks). It has many finely built houses and shops. Its principal buildings are the gymnasium, a hospital, the barracks, and several churches and mosques. Amongst the industrial establishments are soap factories, breweries, distilleries, and tanneries. More than 3,740,000 gallons of wine are made annually within the department of Varna. The town is well supplied with good water, and is not unhealthy. Although open to the south and south-east, the bay affords safe anchorage, being sheltered from the north and north-east winds. Through the Pravadi it communicates with Lake Devno, which, if connected, as has been proposed, by a navigable canal with the bay, would form one of the best harbours in the Euxine. Varna is the chief outlet for the grain and agricultural produce of Bulgaria for Constantinople and the west of Europe, the export of grain in 1887 amounting in value to £244,210 (total exports, £349,030) and the total imports to £580,300. It lies 48 miles east of Shumla (Shumna), with which it is connected by the main Bulgarian railway, running thence to the Danube at Rustchuk,—these three fortresses forming with Silistria (on the Danube) the Bul- garian "quadrilateral." The old stone walls of Varna have been destroyed to make room for earth-fortifications.

Varna has been identified with the ancient Milesian colony of Odessus on the coast of Mesia Inferior. It figures largely in the history of more recent times, and close by was fought in 1444 the battle in which Amurath (Murad) II. slew the Hungarian King Ladislaus, and routed his forces commanded by the renowned John Hunyady. Varna was occupied in 1828 by the Russians, in 1854 by the allies, who here organized the invasion of

the Crimea, and in 1877 by the Egyptian troops summoned to the defence of Turkey against the Russians. The following year it was ceded to the principalit of Bulgaria. It has long been the seat of a Greek metropolitan an since 1870 of a Bulgarian bishop.

VAR—VAR

VARNHAGEN VON ENSE, Kart Avcust (1785- 1858), German biographer, was born at Diisseldorf on 21st February 1785. He went to Berlin to study medicine, but devoted his attention chiefly to philosophy and literature, which he afterwards studied more thoroughly at Hamburg, Halle, and Tiibingen. He began his literary career in 1804 as joint-editor with A. von Chamisso of a Musen- almanach. In 1809 he joined the Austrian army, and was wounded at the battle of Wagram. Soon afterwards he accompanied his superior officer, Prince Bentheim, to Paris, where he carried on his studies. In 1812 he joined the Prussian civil service at Berlin, but in the following year resumed his military career, this time as a captain in the Russian army. He accompanied Tettenborn to Hamburg and Paris, and his experiences were recorded in his Geschichte der Hamburger Ereignisse (1813) and his Geschichte der Kriegsziige Tettenborn's (1814). At Paris he entered the diplomatic service of Prussia, and in 1814 acted under Hardenberg at the congress of Vienna. He also accompanied Hardenberg to Paris in 1815. He was resident minister for some time at Carlsruhe, but was recalled in 1819, after which he lived chiefly at Berlin as a privy councillor of legation (Geheimer Legationsrath). He had no fixed official appointment, but was often employed in important political business.

In 1814 he married Rahel Antonie Friederike, originally called Levin, afterwards Robert. She was born in 1771 at Berlin, where she died in 1833. By birth she was a Jewess ; but before her marriage she made profession of Christianity. Although she never wrote anything for publication, she was a woman of remarkable intellectual qualities, and exercised a powerful influence on many men of high ability. Her husband, who was devotedly attached to her, found in her sympathy and encouragement one of the chief sources of his inspiration as a writer. After her death he published a selection from her papers, and after- wards

much of her correspondence was printed. Varn- hagen von Ense never fully recovered from the shock caused by her death. He himself died suddenly in Berlin on 10th October 1858.

He made some reputation as an imaginative and critical writer, but he is famous chiefly as a biographer. He possessed a remark- able power of grouping facts so as to bring out their essential significance, and his style is distinguished for its strength, grace, and purity. Among his principal works are Goethe in den Zeug- nissen der Mitlebenden (1824) ; Biographische Denkmale (five vols., 1824-30); and "Lives" of General von Seydlitz (1834), Sophia Charlotte, queen of Prussia (1837), Field-Marshal Schwerin (1841), Field- Marshal Keith (1844), and General Biilow von Dennewitz (1853). His Denkwiirdigkeiten wnd vermischte Schriften appeared in seven volumes in 1837-46. After his death were published two additional volumes of Denkwiirdigkeiten, some volumes of his corre- spondence with eminent men, his Tagebilcher (14 vols.), Blatter aus der preussischen Geschichte (5 vols.), and Biographische Portrits. His selected writings appeared in nineteen volumes in 1871-76.

VARNISH. A varnish is a fluid preparation which, when spread out in thin layers, dries either by evapora- tion or by chemical action into a hard, transparent, and glossy film. Varnishes are used to communicate lustre and brilliance to many different kinds of dressed surfaces, —metal-work, wood, paint, paper, leather, &c.,—and to protect such surfaces from the influence of air and damp. The chief requisites of a good varnish are that it forms a firmly-adherent layer on the surface over which it is spread, that it dries hard, yet with sufficient elasticity and tenacity not to crack with changes of temperature, that it forms a glossy durable surface, and that it dries quickly. The materials which almost exclusively form the permanent body of varnishes are the drying oils and resinous sub-Stances, the chief of which are the copals, lac, dammar, elemi, amber, sandarac, mastic, and rosin. For certain forms of varnish the drying oils themselves act as the solvent for the resins, but in other cases volatile solvents

all

are employed. The solvents chiefly used are methylated spirit, wood spirit, ether, benzin, and turpentine and other essential oils. Soluble colouring ingredients are also, in some cases, used in varnishes and lacquers, those principally available being gamboge, dragon's blood, aloes, cochineal, turmeric, and coal-tar dyes.

According to the solvents employed, the ordinary kinds of varnish are divided into three classes,—(1) spirit, (2) turpentine, and (3) oil varnishes. Spirit varnishes dry with great rapidity owing to the volatilization of the solvent spirit, leaving a coating of pure resin of great hardness and brilliance, but the film is deficient in tena- city, cracking and scaling readily on exposure. The resin lac, either as grain, shell, or bleached lac, is the basis of most spirit varnishes ; but sandarac is also largely used, and to these are added in varying proportions the softer resins,—elemi, Venice turpentine, Canada balsam, mastic, &c.,—which give elasticity and tenacity to the varnish. The solvent is almost exclusively methylated spirit. The resins are ground and mixed with powdered glass, which prevents the resinous particles from agglutinating, and thus facilitates the solvent action of the spirit. The solu- tion is effected by agitation in closed vessels with the aid of heat, and the varnish when strained off must be kept tightly closed from the air. Spirit varnishes are used principally for cabinet-work and turnery, stationery, gilding, and metal-work. Coloured spirit varnishes and lacquers are largely employed for metal-work, for imita- tion gilding and bronzing, for toys, &c. Turpentine is the solvent principally used for making dammar varnish, the solution being effected by powdering the resin and boiling it with a proportion of spirit of turpentine, after which more turpentine is added in the cold state to bring the preparation to a proper consistency. To increase the tenacity of such dammar varnish some proportion of boiled linseed oil or of oil copal varnish may be added. In place of oil of turpentine other essential oils may be used as solvents, and in practice oil of spike is largely utilized in preparing fine varnishes for oil paintings. Turpentine varnishes are also made in which the principal resinous bodies are sandarac and common rosin; and, moreover, turpentine is largely employed to reduce the consistency aud to improve the drying properties of copal varnishes. The basis or solvent of oil or fatty varnishes consists principally of linseed oil ; but the other drying oils—poppy and walnut, &c.—may also be used.

These oils, without the addition of resins, themselves form varnishes which on exposure in thin layers dry by a process of oxidation into tough glossy films; but the drying proceeds very slowly unless the oils are previously boiled with the red oxide of lead or otherwise treated to increase their power of absorb- ing oxygen (see LinsEED O1L, vol. xiv. p. 677). It is in the form of boiled oil or of oil prepared with driers that these oils are used in varnish-making. Oil varnishes thus differ from the other classes in the circumstance that the principal solvent is not volatile and dissipated on exposure, but in itself forms an essential and permanent ingredient in the preparation. The resin principally used in oil varnishes is copal, and its varieties differ very much in hardness, that is, in the temperature at which they melt and distil. Hard and semi-hard copals can only be made to mix with and dissolve in oils at the temperature at which they distil, which ranges from 230° to 360° C. The copal in varnish-making is melted and brought to the requisite temperature in a copper vessel. Simultaneously the oil is heated to the boiling-point in a separate copper vessel, and at the proper moment a measured quantity of the boiling oil is added to the liquefied resin. They are then boiled together till the mixture becomes perfectly clear, and by a series of alternate additions of oil and

resin at proper temperatures the solution is brought to the desired consistency. After the mixture of oil and resin has sufficiently cooled, oil of turpentine in certain propor- tion is added. The making of copal varnish is attended with great risk of burning, and special precautions have to be observed for the extinction of the fire that frequently bursts out in these highly-heated and most inflammable bodies. Copal varnish is also made by boiling together the requisite proportions of resin and oil under pressure in a closed vessel, and subsequently adding turpentine, or by dissolving the resin and turpentine at the high heat and adding the oil afterwards. Amber varnish is prepared by the same methods as those followed in preparing copal, but, the resin being still more refractory and insoluble, a higher heat is required. A peculiar varnish forms the basis of the celebrated Japanese lacquer. The substance is a resinous exudation, which is obtained by making in- cisions in the bark of the Japanese

urushi or lacquer-tree, Rhus vernicifera. The resinous juice on settling in vats separates into two layers, the upper and thinner of which, on mixture with a drying oil, forms a transparent varnish, having a rich yellow colour, which dries into coatings of remarkable tenacity, durability, and lustre (see JAPANNING, vol. xiii. p. 592).

VARRO, Marcus Trrentivus, Roman polymath and man of letters, lived from 116 to 27 B.c. When he was born, the Gracchan agitation had only just been laid to rest, and the year of his death saw the final and formal establish- ment of the empire. Into the changing life of that stirring time Varro entered deeply, and there was no current in thought, culture, literature, and even politics, with which he was not closely in contact. Few have ever so thoroughly combined the pursuit of scholarship and literature with experience of practical affairs. Dionysius of Halicarnassus well described him as the man of widest experience during his age. Nothing is known of Varro's ancestors but that they were natives of the Sabine country, where Varro himself was born in the town of Reate. Here he imbibed in his earlier years a good measure of the hardy simplicity and strong seriousness which the later Romans attributed to the men of the early republic,—characteristics which were supposed to linger in the Sabine land after they had fled from the rest of Italy. The chief teacher of Varro was L. /lius Stilo, the first systematic student, critic, and teacher of Latin philology and literature, and of the antiqui- ties of Rome and Italy. We know from Cicero that Varro also studied at Athens, especially under the philosopher Antiochus of Ascalon. It was the aim of this teacher to lead back the Academic school from the scepticism of Arcesilaus and Carneades to the tenets of the early Platon- ists, as he understood them. His opponents, however, declared that he identified Platonism with Stoic dogmatism, and that a very slight change in his views would have con- verted him into a Stoic of the Stoics. When Cicero wrote his Posterior Academics, he introduced Varro as an inter- locutor, and made him expound the views of Antiochus. The influence of Antiochus is most plainly to be traced in the extant remains of Varro's writings, and indirectly in works like the De Civitate Dei of Augustine, which owe much to Varro. In spite of controversial statements to the contrary, the differences between Antiocheanism and Stoicism were great and marked, and it is a serious, though a common, error to treat Varro as an adherent

of the Stoic school. The political career of Varro geenis to have been late and slow; but he arrived at the preetor- ship, after having been tribune of the people, questor, and curule edile. In politics and war he followed Pompey's lead ; but it is probable that he was discontented with the course on which his leader entered when the first triumvirate was formed, and he may thus have lost

his chance of rising to the consulate. He actually ridi- culed the coalition in a work entitled the Three-Headed Monster (Tptxdpavov in the Greek of Appian). He did not, however, refuse to join the commission of twenty by whom the great agrarian scheme of Cesar for the resettlement of Capua and Campania was carried into execution (59 B.c.). Despite the difference between them in politics, Varro and Cesar had literary tastes in common, and were friends in private life. Under Pompey Varro saw much active service: he was attached to Pompey as pro-queestor, probably during the war against Sertorius in Spain. We next find him, as legate, in command of a fleet which kept the seas between Delos and Sicily, while Pompey was suppressing the pirates, and he even won the "'naval crown," a coveted reward of personal prowess. A little later he was legate during the last Mithradatic war. In the conflict between Caesar and the Pompeian party Varro was more than once actively engaged. In his Civil War (ii. 17-20) Ceesar tells how Varro, when legate in Spain along with Afranius and Petreius, lost his two legions without striking a blow, because the whole region where he was quartered joined the enemy. Czsar curiously inti- mates that, though Varro did his best for Pompey from a sense of duty, his heart was really with the other leader. Nevertheless he proceeded to Epirus before the battle of Pharsalia, and awaited the result at Dyrrachium in the company of Cicero and Cato. Like Cicero, Varro received harsh treatment from Mark Antony after the Pompeian defeat. Some of his property was actually plundered, but restored at the bidding of Czsar, to whom Varro in grati- tude immediately dedicated one of his most important writings. The dictator employed the scholar in aiding him to collect and arrange great stores of Greek and Latin literature for the vast public library which he intended to found. We have glimpses of Varro at this time in the Letters of Cicero. The two, though alike in political inclinations and in their love for literature, were anti- pathetic in their natures,—the one soft in fibre, and vain, richly abundant in expression,

and subtly sensitive, the other somewhat harsh, severe, and retiring, solid in learn- ing, and no master of literary form. The impression of Varro's personality which Cicero gives is unattractive enough, but probably on the whole true. The formation of the second triumvirate again plunged Varro into danger. Antony took possession anew of the property he had been compelled to surrender, and inserted Varro's name on the list of the proscribed. His friends, however, afforded him protection. He was able to make peace with the triumvirs, but sacrificed his property and much of his beloved library. He was permitted to spend in quiet study and in writing the last fifteen years of his life. He is said to have died (27 B.c.) almost pen in hand.

Varro was not surpassed in the compass of his writings by any ancient, not even by any one of the later Greek philosophers, to some of whom tradition ascribes a fabulous number of separate works. In a passage quoted by Gellius, Varro himself, when over seventy years of age, estimated the number of " books" he had written at 490; but " book" here means, not merely such a work as was not subdivided into portions, but also a portion of a sub- divided work. For example, the Menippean Satires numbered 150, and are all counted separately in Varro's estimate. Jerome made or copied a catalogue of Varro's works which has come down to us in a mutilated form. From this and from other extant matcrials Ritschl has set down the number of the distinct literary works at 74 and the number of separate " books" at about 620. The later years of the author's life were therefore even more fruitful than the earlier. The complete catalogue may be roughly arranged under three heads,—(1) belles lettres, (2) history and antiquities, (3) technical treatises on philosophy, law, grammar, mathematics, philology, and other subjects.

The first of these three classes no doubt mainly belonged to Varro's earlier life. that was very elaborate, and little of a serious character. His genius tended naturally in the direction of burlesque and satite.

In poetry he seems to have attempted nothing»

LSS a II aE I OLLI CC a a I Se a a gig

In belles lettres he showed himself throughout, both in matter and form, the pupil and admirer of Lucilius. He wrote satires in the style of his master, and he may be one of those to whom Horace alludes (Sat., i. 10, 47) as having "'tricd satire in vain." One poetical work probably consisted of short pieces in the style of the more satirical poems of Catullus. It is doubtful whether, as has often been supposed, Varro wrote a philosophical poem somewhat in the style of Lucretius ; if so, it should rather be classed with the prose technical treatises, One curious production was an essay in popular illustrated literature, which was almost unique in ancient times. Its title was Jmagines, and it consisted of 700 prose biographies of Greek and Roman celebrities, with a metrical elogiwm for each, accompanied in each case by a portrait. But the lighter works of Varro have perished almost to the last line, with the exception of numerous fragments of the Menippean Satires. The Menippus whom Varro imitated lived in the first half of the third century B.c., and was born a Pheenician slave. He became a Cynic philosopher, and is a figure familiar to readers of Lucian. He flouted life and all philosophies but the Cynic in light composi- tions, partly in prose and partly in verse. The fragments of Varro's imitations have been frequently collected and edited, most recently by Riese and by Biicheler. The glowing and picturesque account of these fragments given by Mommsen in his History of Rome is known to all students of Roman literature, but few readers could pass from Mommsen's picture to a careful study of the passages themselves without severe disappointment. That the remains exhibit variety and fertility, that there are in them numerous happy strokes of humour and satire, and many felicitous phrases and descriptions, is true, but the art is on the whole heavy, awkward, and forced, and the style rudely archaic and untasteful. The Latin is frequently as rough and uncouth as that of Lucilius. No doubt Varro contemned the Hellenizing innovations by which the hard and rude Latin of his youth was transformed into the polished literary language of the late republican and the Augustan age. The titles of the Aenippean Satires are very diverse. Sometimes personal names are chosen, and they range from the gods and demigods to the slaves, from Hercules to Marcipor. Frequently a popular proverb or catchword in Greek or Latin supplies the designation: thus we have as

titles "I've got You" ("Ex oe); "You don't Know what Evening is to Bring" (Nescis quid vesper serus vehat); " Kuow Thyself" (Tva@ ceavrév). Occasionally the heading indicates that the writer is flying at some social folly, asin "Old Men are Children for the Second Time" (Als watées of yepovres) and in the " Bachelor" (Celebs). In inany satires the philosophers were pounded, as in the " Burial of Menippus" and "Concerning the Sects" (Ilepi aiperéwv). Each composition seems to have been a genuine medley or "lanx-satura": any topic might be introduced which struck the author's fancy at the moment. There are many allusions to persons and events of the day, but political bitterness seems to have been commonly avoided. The whole tone of the writer is that of a "laudator temporis acti," who can but scoff at all that has come into fashion in his own day. From the numerous citations in later authors it is clear that the Menippean Satires were the most popular of Varro's writings. Not very unlike the Menippean Satires were the Libri Logistorici, or satirical and practical expositions, possibly in dialogue form, of some theme most commonly taken from philosophy on its ethical side. A few fragments in this style have come down to us anda number of titles. These are twofold: that is to say, a personal name is followed by words indicating the subject-matter, as Marius, de Fortuna, from which the contents may easily be guessed, and Sisenna, de Historia, most likely a dialogue in which the old annal- ist of the name was the chief speaker, and discoursed of the principles on which history should be written. Among the lighter and more popular works may be mentioned twenty-two books of Orations (probably never spoken), some funeral eulogies (Lawda- tiones), some " exhortations" (Swasiones), conceivably of a political character, and an account of the author's own life.

The second section of Varro's works, those on history and anti- quities, form to the present day the basis on which a large part of our knowledge of the earlier Roman history, and in particular of Roman constitutional history, ultimately rests. These writings Were used as a quarry by the compilers and dilettanti of latcr times, such as Pliny, Plutarch, Gellius, Festus, Macrobius, and by Christian champions like Tertullian, Arnobius, and Augustine, who did not disdain to seek in heathen literature the means of defending their faith, These men have saved for us a few remains from the great wreck made by time. Judging from what has been

casually preserved, if any considerable portion of Varro's labours as anti- quarian and historian were to be now discovered, scholars might find themselves compelled to reconstruct the earlier history of the Roman republic from its very foundations. Varro's greatest pre- decessor in this field of inquiry, the man who turned over the virgin soil, was Cato the Censor. His example, however, seems to have Temained unfruitful till the time of Varro's master, Lucius Alius Stilo Preconinus. From his age to the decay of Roman civilization there were never altogether wanting men devoted to the study of

their nation's past; but none ever pursued the task with the advan- tages of Varro's comprehensive learning, his indefatigable industry, and his reverent, yet discriminating regard for the men and the in- stitutions of the earlier ages. The greatest work of this class was that on Antiguities, divided into forty-one books. Of these the first twenty-five were entitled the Antiquities of Human Things (Antiquitates Rerum Humanarum), while the remaining sixteen were designated the Antiquities of Things Divine (Antiquitates Rerwm Divinarum). The book was the fruit of Varro's later years, in which he gathcred together the material laboriously amassed through the period of an ordinary lifetime. The second division of the work was dedicated to Cesar as supreme pontiff. The design was as far-reaching as that of the Natural History of Pliny. The general heads of the exposition in the secular portion of the book were four,—(1) " who the men are who act (qui agant), (2) the places in which they act (wdt), (3) the times at which they act (quando), (4) the results of their action (guid agant)." In the portion relating to divine affairs there were divisions parallel to these four, with a fifth, which dealt with the gods in whose honour action in divine affairs is taken. Our knowledge of this great book is to a large ex- tent derived from the works of the early Christian writers, and especi- ally from Augustine's De Civitate Dei. These lights of the church, as was natural, directed their attention mainly to the portion which treated of the religion of Rome. A glance at the authorities quoted in such a book as Preller's Rémische Mythologie will suffice to show how largely the imperfect indeed, but nevertheless invaluable, in- formation now attainable concerning the older and un-Hellenized forms of Roman and Italian religious rites depends on the citations by Christian authorities from the Antiquitates Rerum Divinarwm. It isa great

misfortune that no similar series of citations from the secular part of the Antiqwitates has come down to us. Most of the other historical aud antiquarian writings of Varro were special elaborations of topics which he could not treat with sufficient ful- ness and minuteness in the larger book. The treatise on the Genealogy of the Roman People dealt mainly with the relation of Roman chronology to the chronology of Greece and the East. Dates were assigned even to mythological occurrences, because Varro be- lieved in the theory of Euhemerus, that all the beings worshipped as gods had once lived as men. 'To Varro's researches are due the traditional dates assigned to the era of the kings and to that of the early republic. Minor writings of the same class were the De Vita Populi Romani, apparently a kind of history of Roman civilization ; the De Familiis Trojanis, an account of the familics who "came over" with Aneas ; the tia (Atria), an explanation of the origin of Roman customs, on which Plutarch drew largely in his Questiones Romanez ; a Tribuum Liber, used by Festus ; and the constitutional handbook written for the instruction of Pompey when he became consul. Nor must the labour expended by Varro in the study of literary history be forgotten. His activity in this direction, as in others, took a wide range. One of his greatest achievements was to fix the canon of the genuine plays of Plautus. The " Varronian plays" were the twenty which have come down to us, along with one which has been lost.

The third class of treatises, which we have called technical, was also numerous and very varied. Philosophy, grammar, the history and theory of language, rhetoric, law, arithmetic, astronomy, geometry, mensuration, agriculture, naval tactics, were all repre- sented. The only works of this kind which have come dowu to our days are the De Lingua Latina (in part) and the De Re Rustica. The former originally comprised twenty-five books, three of which (the three succeeding the first) are dedicated to a P. Septimius who had served with the author in Spain and the last twenty-one to Cicero. The whole work was divided into three main sections, the first dealing with the origin of Latin words, the second with their inflexions and other modifications, the third with syntax. The books still preserved (somewhat imperfectly) are those from the fifth to the tenth inclusive. The Latin style is harsh, rugged, and far from lucid. As Mommsen remarks, the clauses of the sentences are oftcn arranged on

the thread of the relative pronoun like thrushes onastring. Thearrangement of the subject-matter, while pretending to much precision, is often far from logical. The fifth, sixth, and seventh books give Varro's views on the etymology of Latin words. The principles he applies are those which he had learned from the philosophers of the Stoic school,—Chrysippus, Antipater, and others. The study of language as it existed in Varro's day was thoroughly dominated by Stoic influences. Varro's etymologies could be only a priori guesses, but he was well aware of their character, and very clearly states at the outset of the fifth book the hindrances that barred the way to sound knowledge. He was thoroughly alive to the importance of not arguing merely from the forms and meanings of words as they existed in his day, and was fully conscious that language and its mechanism should be studied historically. The books from the eighth to the tenth in- clusive are devoted to the inflexions of words and their other modifications. These Varro classes all under the head of "de- clinatio," which implies a swerving aside from a type. Thus Herculi from Hereules and manubria from manus are equally re-

garded as examples of declinatio. Varro adopts a compromise be- tween the two opposing schools of grammarians, those who held that nature intended the declinationes of all words of the same class to proceed uniformly (which uniformity was called analogia) and those who deemed that nature aimed at irregularity (anomalia). The matter is treated with considerable confusion of thought. But the facts incidentally cited concerning old Latin, and the state- ments of what had been written and thought about language by Varro's predecessors, are of extreme value to the student of Latin. The other extant prose work, the De Re Rustica, is in three books, each of which is in the form of a dialogue, the circumstances and in the main the interlocutors being different for each. The dramatic introductions and a few of thc interludes are bright and interesting, and the Latin style, though still awkward and unpolished, is far superior to that of the De Lingua Latina.

A complete collection of the remains of Varro is still a desideratum. The fragments of the different treatises have been partially collected in many

separate publications of recent date. The best editions of the De Lingua Latina are those by C. O. Miiller and by L. Spengel (re-cdited by his son in 1885). The most recent and best recension of the De Re Rustica is that of Keil (Leipsic, 1884). Of modern scholars Ritschl has deserved best of Varro. Several papers in his Opuscula treat of the nature of Varro's works which have not come down to us. GJ. 8. R.)

VARRO, Pusiius TERENTIUS, with the cognomen Aractnus, a Roman poet whose life extended from 82 to about 37 B.c. The name Atacinus, given to distinguish him from the more famous Varro of Reate, is drawn from Atax, the name of a small district or river in Narbonensian Gaul, near to which he was born. He was perhaps the first Roman born beyond the Alps who reached to eminence in literature. He seems to have taken at first Ennius and Lucilius as his models, and wrote an epic, entitled Bellum Sequanicum, eulogizing the exploits of Cesar in Gaul and Britain, and also Satires, of which Horace speaks slight- ingly. Jerome has preserved a statement that Varro began to study Greek literature with great avidity in his thirty- fifth year. The last ten years of his life were given up to the imitation of Greek poets of the Alexandrian school. Quintilian (indirectly confirming the judgment of Horace concerning the Satwres) says that Varro made his name as an interpres operts alieni—"'a translator of other men's works," for such is the force of the word interpres. Even in this capacity Quintilian bestows on him restricted praise as 'by no means to be despised." But Quintilian probably much undervalued the Roman imitators of the Alexandrians, Catullus included. From other evidence we may conclude that, though he had not sufficient power to excel in the historical epic or in the serious work of the Roman sativa, Varro yet possessed in considerable measure the lighter gifts which we admire in Catullus. His chief poem of the later period was the Argonautica, modelled, somewhat closely it would seem, on the epic of Apollonius Rhodius. The age was prolific of epics, both historical and mythological, and that of Varro seems to have held a high rank among them. Ovid asks what age will ever be unacquainted with the story of the first ship as told by Varro. In one of Ovid's lists of Roman poets Varro stands between Ennius and Lucretius, while in another he is linked with Virgil. Statius, in his poem on the birthday of Lucan, gives to the epic of Varro an equally distinguished place. Later he published erotic poems,

probably in the elegiac metre. These Propertius seems to have valued highly, for in a well-known passage he ranks the Leucadia celebrated by Varro along with the Lesbia of Catullus, the Quintilia of Calvus, the Lycoris of Gallus, and his own Cynthia. The other titles which have been preserved are the Cosmographia, or Chorographia, a poem on geography, imitated from the Greek of Alexander, an Ephesian, described by Cicero (Att., ii, 22) as a careless man and no good poet; and the Hphemeris, a poem on weather-signs, in hexameters, after Aratus. The Varro whom Quintilian (i. 4, 4) mentions in company with Lucretius as author of a poem on philosophy can hardly have been either Varro of Atax or Varro of Reate. The fragments of Varro Atacinus which remain, about fifty lines

in all, are put together by Riese at the end of his edition of the fragments of the greater Varro's Menippean Satires ; but there is not enough of them to enable us to form a judgment on his style.

VASA, Gustavus. See Gustavus I.

VASARHELY. See HopmMeEz6-VasaRHELy and Maros- VASARHELY.

VASARI, Groreto (1513-1574), a painter and architect, whose main distinction rests on his valuable history of Italian art,1 was born at Arezzo in 1513. At a very early age he became a pupil of Guglielmo da Marsiglia, a very skilful painter of stained glass. At the age of sixteen he went to Florence, where he studied under Michelangelo and Andrea del Sarto, aided by the patronage of the Medici princes. In 1529 he visited Rome and studied the works of Raphael and others of his school. The paintings of Vasari were much admired by the rapidly degenerating taste of the 16th century; but they possess the smallest amount of merit, being in the main feeble parodies of the powerful works of Michelangelo. Vasari was largely employed in Florence, Rome, Naples, Arezzo, and other places. Many of his pictures still exist, the most important being the wall and ceiling paintings in the great hall of the Palazzo Vecchio in Florence, and his frescos on the cupola of the cathedral, which, however, were not completed at the time of his death. As an

architect he was perhaps more successful: the loggia of

the Uffizi by the Arno, and the long passage connecting it with the Pitti Palace, are his chief works. Unhappily he did much to injure the fine medizeval churches of S. Maria Novella and Santa Croce, from both of which he removed the original rood-screen and loft, and remodelled the retro-choir in the degraded taste of his time. Vasari enjoyed a very high repute during his lifetime and amassed a considerable fortune. He built himself in 1547 a fine house in Arezzo, and spent much labour in decorating its walls and vaults with paintings. He was elected one of the municipal council or priori of his native town, and finally rose to the supreme office of gonfaloniere. He died at Florence on 27th June 1574.

Personally Vasari was a man of upright character, free from vanity, and always ready to appreciate the works of others: in spite of the narrow and meretricious taste of his time, he expresses a warm admiration of the works of such men as Cimabue and Giotto, which is very remark- able. As an art historian of his country he must always occupy the highest rank. His great work was first published in 1550, and afterwards partly rewritten and enlarged in 1568, bearing the title Delle Vite de' piu Ec- cellenti Prttori, Scultori, ed Architettort. It was dedicated to Cosimo de' Medici, and was printed at Florence by the Giunti; it is a small quarto illustrated with many good woodcut portraits. This editio princeps of the complete work is usually bound in three volumes, and also contains a very valuable treatise on the technical methods em- ployed in all branches of the arts, entitled Le Tre Arti del Disegno, cioé Architettura, Pittura, e Scoltura.

The best edition of Vasari's works is that published at Florence by Milanesi, 1878-82, which embodies the valuable notes in the earlier edition by Le Monnier. The Lives has been translated into French, German, and English (by Mrs Foster, London, 1850). They are written in a very pleasant style, interspersed with amusing stories, and are in the main trustworthy, except some of the bio-

graphies of early artists.2 With a few exceptions Vasari's Judgment is acute and unbiassed.

VASCO DA GAMA. See Gama, Vasco Da.

1 Vasari gives a sketch of his own biography at the end of his Vite, and adds further details about himself and his family in his lives of Lazzaro Vasari and Francesco Salviati. He was related to the painter Luca Signorelli.

; ? As in most other kindred subjects the tendency of modern criti- cism is to underestimate the historical accuracy of Vasari's work.

oe

2)

s)

Verse bAR SYSTEM

HE term vascular system designates all the arrange- ments in the body connected with the circulation of the blood. A description of the anatomy of the various organs as found in man is given under ANATOMY (vol. i. is 899 sq.), and an account of various modifications of the circulatory apparatus under the headings designating the great groups of the animal kingdom, such as Moxuusca, Crustacea, IcoTHYOLoGY, AMPHIBIA, REPTILES, BrrDs ; and reference may be made to the articles NurTRITIoN and Respiration for details as to the formation, physical and chemical properties, and functions of the blood. The present article is devoted to a consideration of the mechan- ism by which the circulation is carried on in the Mammalia and in man, a branch of physiology which has been more successfully investigated than any other department of the science. HistoricaL SKETCH,

Galen, following Erasistratus and Aristotle, clearly dis- tinguished arteries from veins, and was the first to over- throw the old theory of Erasistratus that the arteries con- tained air. According to him, the vein arose from the liver in two great trunks, the vena porta and vena cava. The first was formed by the union of all the abdominal veins, which absorbed the chyle prepared in the stomach and intestines, and carried it

to the liver, where it was con- verted into blood. The vena cava arose in the liver, divided into two branches, one ascending through the dia- phragm to the heart, furnishing the proper veins of this organ; there it received the vena azygos, and entered the right ventricle, along with a large trunk from the lungs, evidently the pulmonary artery. The vena azygos was the superior vena cava, the great vein which carries the venous blood from the head and upper extremities into the right auricle, The descending branch of the great trunk supposed to originate in the liver was the ziferior vena cava, below the junction of the hepatic vein. he arteries arose from the left side of the heart by two trunks, one having thin walls, the pulmonary veins, the other having thick walls, the aorta. The first was supposed to carry blood to the lungs, and the second to carry blood to the body. 'The heart consisted of two ventricles, communicating by pores in the septum; the lungs were parenchymatous organs communicating with the heart by the pulmonary veins. The blood-making organ, the liver, separates from the blood subtle vapours, the natural spirits, which, carried to the heart, mix with the air introduced by respiration, and thus form the wtal spirits; these, in turn carried to the brain, are elaborated into animal spirits, which are distributed to all parts of the body by the nerves.1 Such were the views of Galen, taught until early in the 16th century.

Jacobus Berengarius of Carpi (ob. 1527) investigated the structure of the valves of the heart. Andreas Vesale or Vesalius (1514-1564) contributed largely to anatomical knowledge, especially to the anatomy of the circulatory organs. He determined the position of the heart in the chest ; he studied its structure, pointing out the fibrous mings at the bases of the ventricles; he showed that its Wall consists of layers of fibres connected with the fibrous mings ; and he described these layers as being of three kinds,—straight or vertical, oblique, and circular or trans- verse. From the disposition of the fibres he reasoned as to the mechanism of the contraction and relaxation of the heart. He Supposed that the relaxation, or diastole, was ee Ws

1 See Burggraeve's Histoire de ? Anatomie, Paris, 1880, in which he

refers to many of the older authors, also to the articles GALEN and ANAToMyY,

accounted for principally by the longitudinal fibres con- tracting so as to draw the apex towards the base, and thus cause the sides to bulge out; whilst the contraction, or systole, was due to contraction of the transverse or oblique fibres. He showed that the pores of Galen, in the septum between the ventricles, did not exist, so that there could be no communication between the right and left sides of the heart, except by the pulmonary circulation. He also investigated minutely the internal structure of the heart, describing the valves, the columne carnex, and the muscult papillares. He described the mechanism of the valves with much accuracy. He had, however, no conception either of a systemic or of a pulmonary circulation. To him the heart was a reservoir from which the blood ebbed and flowed, and there were two kinds of blood, arterial and venous, having different circulations and serving dif- ferent purposes in the body. Vesalius was not only a great anatomist: he was a great teacher ; and his. pupils carried on the work in the spirit of their master. Promi- nent among them was Gabriel Fallopius (1523-1562), who studied the anastomoses of the blood-vessels, without the art of injection, which was invented by Frederick Ruysch (1638-1731) more than a century later. Another pupil

was Columbus (Matthieu Reald Columbo, 0d. 1559), first Colum- a prosector in the anatomical rooms of Vesalius and after- bus.

wards his successor in the chair of anatomy in Padua ; his name has been mentioned as that of one who anticipated Harvey in the discovery of the circulation of the blood. A study of his writings clearly shows that he had no true knowledge of the circulation, but only a glimpse of how the blood passed from the right to the left side of the heart. In his work there is evidently a sketch of the pulmonary circulation, although it is clear that he did not understand the mechanism of the valves, as Vesalius did. As regards the systemic circulation, there is the notion simply of an oscillation of the blood from the heart to the body and from the body to the heart. Further, he upholds the view of Galen, that all the veins

originate in the liver; and he even denies the muscular structure of the heart.2 In

1553 Michael Servetus (1511-1553), a pupil or junior Servetus.

fellow-student of Vesalius, in his Christianismi Restitutio, described accurately the pulmonary circulation.2 Servetus perceived the course of the circulation from the right to the left side of the heart through the lungs, and he also recognized that the change from venous into arterial blood took place in the lungs and not in the left ventricle. Not so much the recognition of the pulmonary circulation, as that had been made previously by Columbus, but the dis- covery of the respiratory changes in the lungs constitutes Servetus's claim to be a pioneer in physiological science.

Andrea Cesalpino (1519-1603), a great naturalist of this Cesal- period, also made important contributions towards the dis- Pm

covery of the circulation, and in Italy he is regarded as the real discoverer. Cesalpinus knew the pulmonary circulation. Further, he was the first to use the term

2 An interesting account of the views of the precursors of Harvey will be found in Willis's edition of the Works of Harvey, published by the Sydenham Society. Comp. also P. Flourens, Histoire de la Dé- couverte de la Circulation du Sang (Paris, 1854), and Prof. R. Owen, Experimental Physiology, its Benefits to Mankind, with an Address on Unveiling the Statue of W. Harvey, at Folkestone, 6th August 1881.

3 The passage is quoted under Anatomy, vol. i. p. 810 n.; comp. also Harvey. See Willis, Servetus and Calvin, London, 1877.

4 A learned and critical series of articles by Sampson Gamgee in the Lancet, in 1876, gives an excellent account of the controversy as to whether Cesalpinus or Harvey was the true discoverer of the circula- tion ; see also the Harveian oration for 1882 by George Johnston (Lancet, July 1882), and Prof. G. M. Humphry, Journ. Anat. and

1 Phys., October 1882.

Discov- ery of circula- tion of blood.

Harvey.

96

“ circulation,” and he went far to demonstrate the systemic circulation. He experimentally proved that, when a vein is tied, it fills below and not above the ligature. The following passage from his Quzstiones Medicz (lib. v., cap.

4, fol. 125), quoted by Gamgee, shows his views :—

“The lungs, therefore, drawing the warm blood from the right ventricle of the heart through a vein like an artery, and returning it by anastomosis to the venal artery (pulmonary vei), which tends towards the left ventricle of the heart, and air, being in the meantime transmitted through the channels of the aspera arteria (trachea and bronchial tubes), which are extended near the venal artery, yet not communicating with the aperture as Galen thought, tempers with a touch only. This circulation of the blood (huic sanguinis cireulationt) from the right ventricle of the heart through the lungs into the left ventricle of the same exactly agrees with what appears from dissection. For there are two receptacles ending in the right ventricle and two in the left. But of the two only one intromits; the other lets out, the membranes (valves) being constituted accordingly.”

Still Cesalpinus clung to the old idea of there being an

efflux and reflux of blood to and from the heart, and he

had confused notions as to the veins conveying nutritive –

matter, whilst the arteries carried the vital spirits to the tissues. He does not even appear to have thought of the heart as a contractive and propulsive organ, and attributed the dilatation to “an effervescence of the spirit,” whilst the contraction,—or, as he termed it, the “collapse,”—was

due to the appropriation by the heart of nutritive matter. Whilst he imagined a communication between the termina- tion of the arteries and the commencement of the veins, he does not appear to have thought of a direct flow of blood from the one to the other. Thus he cannot be re- garded as the true discoverer of the circulation of the blood. More recently Ercolani has put forward claims on behalf of Carlo Ruini as being the true discoverer. Ruini published the first edition of his anatomical writings in 1598, the year William Harvey entered at Padua as a medical student. This claim has been carefully investi- gated by Ganigee, who has come to the conclusion that it cannot be maintained.!

The anatomy of the heart was examined, described, and figured by Bartolomeo Eustacheo (c. 1500-1574) and by Julius Cesar Aranzi or Arantius (c. 1530-1589), whose name is associated with the fibro-cartilaginous thickenings on the free edge of the semilunar valves (corpora Arantiz). Hieronymus Fabricius of Acquapendente (1537-1619), the immediate predecessor and teacher of Harvey, made the important step of describing the valves in the veins; but he thought they had a subsidiary office in connexion with the collateral circulation, supposing that they diverted the blood into branches near the valves ; thus he missed seeing the importance of the anatomical and experimental facts gathered by himself. At the time when Harvey arose the general notions as to the circulation may be briefly summed up as follows: the blood ebbed and flowed to and from the heart in the arteries and veins; from the right side at least a portion of it passed to the left side through the vessels in the lungs, where it was mixed with air; and, lastly, there were two kinds of blood,—the venous, formed originally in the liver, and thence passing to the heart, from which it went out to the periphery by the veins and returned by those to the heart, and the arterial,—contain- ing "spirits" produced by the mixing of the blood and the air in the lungs—sent out from the heart to the body and returning to the heart by the same vessels. The pulmonary circulation was understood so far, but its relation to the systemic circulation was unknown. The action of the heart, also, as a propulsive organ was not recognized. It was not until 1628 that Harvey announced his views to the world by publishing. his treatise De Motu Cordis et Sanguinis (see vol. xi. pp. 503-504). His conclusions are given in the following celebrated passage :—

1 Gamgee, “Third Historical Fragment,” in Lancet, 1876.

VASCUDTAT SY S71 fi

“ And nowI may be allowed to give in brief my view of the circu- lation of the blood, and to propose it for general adoption. Since all things, both argunient and ocular demonstration, show that the blood passes through the lungs and heart by the auricles and ventricles, and is sent for distribution to all parts of the body, where it makes its way into the veins aud pores of the flesh, and then flows by the veins from the circumference on every side to the centre, from lesser to the greater veins, and is by them finally discharged into the vena cava and right auricle of the heart, and this in such a quantity, or in such a flux and reflux, thither by the arteries, hither by the veins, as cannot possibly be supplied by the ingestor, and is much greater than can be required for mere purposes of nutrition, it is absolutely necessary to conclude that the blood in the animal body is impelled in a circle, and is in a state of ceaseless motion, that this is the act or function which the heart performs by means of its pulse, and that it is the sole and only end of the motion and contraction of the heart” (bk. x. ch. : xiv. p. 68).

Opposed by Caspar Hofmann of Nuremberg, Veslingius of Padua, and J. Riolanus the younger, this new theory was supported by Roger Drake, a young Englishman, who | chose it for the subject of a graduation, thesis at Leyden in 1637, by Rolfink of Jena, and especially by Descartes, and quickly gained the ascendant ; and its author had the satisfaction of seeing it confirmed by the discovery of the capillary circulation, and universally adopted. The cir-Capil- | culation in the capillaries between the arteries and the lary — veins was discovered by Marcellus Malpighi (1628-1694) i of Bologna in 1661. He saw it first in the lungs and the mesentery of a frog, and the discovery was announced in i the second of two letters, Hpistola de Pulmonibus, ad- | dressed to Borelli, and dated 1661.2 Malpighi actually showed the capillary circulation to the astonished eyes of | Harvey. Anthony van Leeuwenhoek (1632-1723) in 1673 repeated Malpighi’s observations, and studied the capillary circulation in a bat’s wing, the tail of a tadpole, and the tail of a fish,

William Molyneux studied the circulation | in the lungs of a water newt in 1683.3

The idea that the same blood was propelled through the Transfer body in a circuit suggested that life might be sustained by of blood) renewing the blood in the event of some of it being lost.

About 1660 Lower, a London physician (died 1691), suc-

ceeded in transferring the blood of one animal directly

from its blood-vessels into those of another animal. This

was first done by passing a "quill" or a "'small crooked | pipe of silver or brass" from the carotid artery of one dog to the jugular vein of another. This experiment was | repeated and modified by Sir Edmund King, Coxe, Gayant, | and Denys with such success as to warrant the operation being performed on man, and accordingly it was carried out by Lower and King on 23d November 1667, when | blood from the arteries of a sheep was directly introduced into the veins of a man. It would appear that the operation had previously been performed with success in Paris.

The doctrine of the circulation being accepted, physiolo- Force o! gists next directed their attention to the force of the heart, hee the pressure of the blood in the vessels, its velocity, and ee the phenomena of the pulse wave. Giovanni Alphonso Borelli (1608-1679) investigated the circulation during the Borelli, lifetime of Harvey. He early conceived the design of applying mathematical principles to the explanation of animal functions; and, although he fell into many errors, he must be regarded as the founder of animal mechanics. In his De Motu Animalium (1680-85) he stated his theory | of the circulation in eighty propositions, and in prop. lxxiiL, founding on a supposed relation between the bulk and the strength of muscular fibre ag found in the ventricles,

| erroneously concluded that the force of the heart was

equal to the pressure of a weight of 180,000 ib. He also

2 See his Opera Omnia, vol. i. p. 328. 3 Lowthorp, Abridgement of Trans. Roy. Soc., 5th ed., vol. iii. p. 230. : 4 Ibid., p. 231. 5 'Ibid., p. 226.

Keil. James Keill, a Scottish physician (1673-1719), who in his | underestimate of Keill (16 oz.), and when we know that Account of Animal Secretion, the Quantity of Blood in the | the estimate of Hales, as corroborated by recent investiga- Human Body, and Muscular Motion (1708) attempted to | tions by means of elaborate scientific appliances, is very estimate the velocity of blood in the aorta, and gave it | near the truth, we recognize the far higher service rendered at 52 feet per minute. Then, allowing for the resistance | to science by careful and judicious experiment than by of the vessels, he showed that the velocity diminishes to- speculations, however ingenious. With the exception of wards the smaller vessels, and arrived at the amazing con- | some calculations by Dan Bernoulli in 1748, there was no clusion that in the smallest vessels it travels at the rate of great contribution to hemadynamics till 1808, when two } inch in 278 days,—a good example of the extravagant | remarkable papers appeared from Thomas Young (1773- Thomas errors made by the mathematical physiologists of the 1829). In the first, entitled "Hydraulic Investigations," Young. period. Keill further described the hydraulic phenomena | which appeared in the Phil. Trans., he investigated the of the circulation in papers communicated to the Royal | friction and discharge of fluids running in pipes and the Society and collected in his Lssays on Several Parts of the velocity of rivers, the resistance occasioned by flexures in Animal Giconomy (1717). In these essays, by estimating pipes and rivers, the propagation of an impulse through the quantity of blood thrown out of the heart by each | an elastic tube, and some of the phenomena of pulsations. contraction, and the diameter of the aortic orifice, he cal- | This paper was preparatory to the second, "On the Func- culated the velocity of the blood. He stated (pp. 84, 87) | tions of the Heart and Arteries,"—the Croonian lecture for that the blood sent into the aorta with each contraction | 1808—in which he showed more clearly than had hitherto would form a cylinder 8 inches (2 ounces) in length and | been done (1) that the blood-pressure gradually diminishes be driven along with a velocity of 156 feet per minute. | from the heart to the periphery ; (2) that the velocity of Estimating then the resistances to be overcome in the | the blood becomes less as it passes from the greater to the vessels, he

found the force of the heart to be “little above | smaller vessels ; (3) that the resistance is chiefly in the 16 ounces,”—a remarkable difference from the computation | smaller vessels, and that the elasticity of the coats of the of Borelli, Keill’s method was ingenious, and is of his- great arteries comes into play in overcoming this resistance torical interest as being the first attempt to obtain quan- | in the interval between systoles; and (4) that the con- titative results ; but it failed to obtain true results, because | tractile coats do not act as propulsive agents, but assist in the data on which he based his calculations were inaccurate, regulating the distribution of blood.’

These calculations attracted the attention not only of the The next epoch of physiological investigation is charac- Use of anatomico-physiologists, such as Haller, but also of some | terized by the introduction of instruments for accurate istru- of the physicists of the time, notably of Jurin and D. measurement, and the graphic method of registering pheno- ™™- Bernoulli. Jurin (died 1750) gave the force of the left mena, now so largely used in science. In 1825 appeared ventricle at 9 tb 1 oz. and that of the right ventricle at 6 Ib | E. and W. Weber’s Wellenlehre, and in 1838 E. Weber’s Ad 3oz. He also stated with remarkable clearness, considering | Votat. Anatom. et Physiolog, i., both of which contain an that he reasoned on the subject as a physicist, without exposition of E, H. Weber’s schema of the circulation, a depending on experimental data gathered by himself, the | scheme which presents a true and consistent theory. In influence on the pulse induced by variations in the power | 1826 Poiseuille invented the hemadynamometer.> This of the heart or in the resistance to be overcome.) The | was adapted with a marker to a recording cylinder by experimental investigation of the problem was supplied | Ludwig in 1847, so as to form the instrument named by Hales.*

Yerevan. SYST EM

recognized and figured the spiral arrangement of fibres in the ventricles. The question was further investigated by

by Stephen Hales (1677-17 61), rector of Teddington in Middlesex, who in 1708 devised the method of estimating the force of the heart by inserting a tube into a large artery and observing the height to which the blood was

impelled into it. Hales is the true founder of the modern experimental method in physiology. He observed in a horse that the blood rose in the vertical tube, which he had connected with the crural artery, to the height of 8 feet 3 inches perpendicular above the level of the left ventricle of the heart. But it did not attain its full height at once : it rushed up about half way in an instant, and afterwards gradually at each pulse 12, 8, 6, 4, 2, and sometimes 1 inch. When it was at its full height, it would vise and fall at and after each pulse 2, 3, or 4 inches 3 and sometimes it would fall 12 or 14 inches, and have there for a time the same vibrations up and down at and after each pulse as it had when it was at its full height, to Which it would rise again after forty or fifty pulses? He then estimated the capacity of the left ventricle by a method of employing waxen casts, and, after many such experi- ments and measurements in the horse, ox, sheep, fallow deer, and dog, he calculated that the force of the left Ventricle in man is about equal to that of a column of blood 74 feet high, weighing 514 ib, or, in other words, that the pressure the left ventricle has to overcome is

1 Jones, Abridgement of Phil. Trans., 34 ed. 1749, vol. v. p. 223. See also for an account of the criticisms of D. Bernoulli the elder and others, Haller's Zlementa Physiologiz, vol. i. p. 448, an Hales, Statical Essays, containing Hemastatics, &c., 1738, vol. ii.

oF,

equal to the pressure of that weight. When we contrast the enormous estimate of Borelli (180,000 tb) with the

Volkmann the kymograph. Volkmann devised the hema- dromometer for measuring the velocity of the blood in 1850; for the same purpose Vierordt constructed the heematachometer in 1858 ; Chauveau and Lortet first used their heemadromograph in 1860; and lastly, Ludwig and Dogiel obtained the best results as regards velocity by the "stream-clock" in 1867. As regards the pulse, the first sphygmograph was constructed by Vierordt in 1856 ; and Marey's form, of which there are now many modifications, appeared in 1860. In 1861 Chauveau and Marey ob- tained tracings of the variations of pressure in the heart cavities (see p. 99 below) by an experiment which is of great historical importance. During

the past twenty-five years vast accumulations of facts have been made through the instruments of precision above alluded to, so that the con- ditions of the circulation, as a problem in hydrodynamics, have been thoroughly investigated. Since 1845, when the brothers Weber discovered the inhibitory action of the vagus, and 1858, when Claude Bernard formulated his researches showing the existence of a vaso-motor system of nerves, much knowledge has been acquired as to the relations of the nervous to the circulatory system. The Webers, John Reid, Claude Bernard, and Carl Ludwig may be regarded as masters in physiology equal in stand- ing to those whose researches have been more especially alluded to in this historical sketch. The Webers took the first step towards recognizing the great principle of

3 See Miscellaneous Works, ed. Peacock, 2 vols., London, 1855. 4 See Marey, La Méthode Graph. dans les Sc. Expér., Paris, 1878. ° Magendie's Journal, vol. viii. p. 272.

ah eed poet i to investigate The Action of the Heart. os sone Mehl heres Se . The form, position, and general arrangements of the heart are Physio-

the functions of — ¥R by his classical research on ths described under ANATOMY (vol. i. pp. 899-908), and it is only neces- logical eighth pair of cranial nerves ; Claude Bernard developed sary here to allude to certain points of physiological importance, —_ anatom; the fundamental conception of vaso-motor nerves ; and The substance of the heart is composed of a special variety of Museu):

Ludwig showed how this conception, whilst it certainly | muscular tissue, along with connective tissue, blood-vesscls, (aa phatics, nerves, and ganglia. The muscular fibres are of an ture.

made the hydraulic problems of the circulation infinitely more complicated than they were even to the scientific imagination of Thomas

Young, accounted for some of the phenomena and indicated at all events the solidarity of the arrangements in the living being. Further, Ludwig and his pupils used the evidence supplied by some of the phenomena of the circulation to explain even more ob- scure phenomena of the nervous system, and they taught pharmacologists how to study in a scientific manner the physiological action of drugs.

PuystoLocy, &C., OF CIRCULATION.

Vessels The blood is contained during life in a continuous system of more and or less elastic and contractile vessels. These are (1) the arteries, course of terminating in (2) the capillaries, from which originate (3) the veins, cireula- Whilst a special contractile organ, (4) the tion. heart, is placed at the commencement of the arteries and the termination of the veins (see fig. 1), The heart may be re- garded as a double organ, each half con- sisting of an auricle and a ventricle, the right half containing blood which has been returned from the body to be sent to the lungs, and the left half containing blood which has been returned from the lungs to be distributed to the body. There are thus, in a sense, two circulations,— the one pulmonary, from the right side of the heart, by the pulmonary artery to the lungs, through the capillaries of the lungs, "SNe and back to the left side of the heart by "eq the pulmonary veins, and the other sys-; +» #2 temic, from the left side of the heart, by '.': the aorta, and the arteries which ramify " from it, to the capillaries throughout the tissues, and from thence by the veins to the right side of the heart. Thus the course of the circulation may be traced (1) from right auricle to right ventricle, through the right auriculo-ventricular Fic. 1.—General course of pes ee by Loe tricuspid valve ; poche = —_ = rom right ventriele by the pulmona ipal vessels. H', right artery, through the cailbaries of the nee ete ole' B coer to the pulmonary veins, which open into left auricle ; P, pulmonary the left auricle ; (3) from left auricle to "tery, going to lungs; P', left ventricle, through the left auriculo- tae epg Maney eo ventricular opening, guarded by the mitral , trachea or wind-pipe: valve; (4) from the left ventricle through ?, #', bronchial tubes; a. a, the greater arteries, the medium-sized ar- Tht 4 left carotid arter- teries, and the arterioles into the capil- neck Hobetial pene ep a laries of the tissues and organs; and (5) subclavian), joining to form from thence by the veins, opening into*

escending or upper vena larger and larger trunks, so as ultimately fevatio' Depaul ates 5.2, i y 2 S patic vein; I, superior to constitute the superior and inferior mesenteric artery, going to vene cave, which open into the right mesentery and bowels; L, auricle, the point from which we started. pes penn dey: eels ged , Remembering that the walls of these tubes __V, inferior a cava, aplit: are all more or less elastic, imagine them _ ting into the twoiliac veins, to be distended with blood; there would % (AfterAllen Thomson.) then be a condition of permanent tension, which would be varied if pressure were applied to any part of the system. Such a varia- tion of pressure would produce a movement of the fluid in the direction of less pressure, aud, as the fluid cannot escape, there would be a circulation, which would be carried in the same direc- tion by mechanical arrangements of valves. In the living body the contractions of the heart force blood into the arterial system and increase the pressure in that part of the circulation ; the arteries empty part of their contents into the capillaries, which carry the blood to the veins, so as to tend to an equalization of pressure between the venous and arterial systems. If the pressure in both systems became equal, there would be no circulation ; but, as the veins pour a portion of the blood back again into the heart, this organ on being refilled again contracts, forcing more blood into the arterial system and again raising the pressure there; thus the possibility during life of an equalization of arterial and venous pressure is prevented. In describing more fully the mechanism by which this circulation is maintained we shall consider (1) the action of the heart, and (2) the action of the blood-vessels, arteries, capillaries, and veins,*

irregularly cubical form, faintly striated transversely, from 54> to sy inch in length by zéov to re#yy inch in breadth, destitute of sarcolemma, frequently having bands at the broad ends by which they anastomose, and showing an oval nucleus. A large mass of fibrous tissue and fibro-cartilage (which in some animals, as the ox, is bony) is found at the base of the heart, in the angle between the aortic and two auriculo-ventricular openings ; from it processes pass in various directions, and form the bases of the fibrous or tendinous rings of the auriculo-ventricular and arterial openings, and to these many if not all of the bands of muscular fibre are attached. These bands are arranged in layers. According to Pettigrew (1864), there are seven layers of fibres forming the wall of each ventricle,

—three external, one central, and three intcrnal,—and they are so arranged that the first or outer external layer is continuous with the seventh or inner internal layer, the second with the sixth, and the third with the fifth. Ludwig (1849) gives a simpler arrangement, — (1) an outer longitudinal layer extending from the base, where the fibres are attached to the tendinous structures around the orifices, and passing obliquely towards the apex to enter by a twist into the interior of the ventricle; (2) an inner longi- tudinal layer composed of the same aa of the outer layer, — Fig. 2. some of these becoming continu- pg 9 pi a in ous with the papillary muscles birds: myrea: inca oe na edwin (fig. 2) and others forming an ir- 4, fibre; P, papillary muscle. regular stratum of fibres, which sO Pinna ate! — ae. terminate in the fibrous rings at eee oe ee the base of the ventricle (fig. 3) ; and (3) an intermediate or trans- verse layer, the thickest of the three, formed of fibres passing with less and less obliquity until they are transverse. These arrangements are shown in figs. 4 and 5, and they account for the following physiological phenomena. (1) The auricles contract inde- pendently of the ven- tricles. So long as the rhythmic movement is normal, the auricular

contractions are equal Fic. 4,—View of fibres of sheep's heart dissected at

in number to the ventri- apex to aed ie re .. a par entering

" apex posteriorly at b; ¢, c, fibres entering apex

ana Reta eh anteriorly at d. (Pettigrew, Quain's Anatomy.)

2)

beats of the auricle for one of the ventricle, and at last only the auricles contract. The auricular portion of the right auricle is the last to cease beating; hence it is termed the wltimwm moriens. Sometimes also contractions of the vena cava and pulmonary veins may be noticed after the heart beats have onal, (2) The con- traction of the circular fibres around the orifices of the veins empties these vessels into the auricles ; and no doubt these fibres have also a sphincter-like action during the contraction of the cavities, pre- venting the regurgitation of blood, and thus doing away with the necessity for valves at these orifices. (8) The

double arrangement of fibres around the auricles produces, when the fibres contract, a uniform diminution of the auricular cavity. (4) The spiral arrange- ment of the fibres in the ventricular walls expels the blood with great force, as if it were propelled by wringing or twisting the walls of the cavity.

The valves of the heart are as follows (see ANATOMY, vol. i. p. Valves — 900, fig. 89). (1) The tricuspid guards the right auriculo-ventricular heart.

opening, and consists of three flaps, formed of fibrous tissue (con- taining many clastic fibres) covered with endocardium. These flaps are continuous at their base, forming an annular membrane sur- rounding the auricular opening, and they are kept in position by the chordx tendinew, which are attached to their ventricular sur- faces and free margins. (2) The bicuspid or mitral valve, at the left auriculo-ventricular orifice, consists of two pointed segments or cusps, having the same structure as those of the tricuspid valve. The auriculo-ventricular valves contain striated muscular fibres, radiating from the auricles into the segments of the valve. These probably shorten the valves towards their base and make a larger opening for the passage of the blood into the ventricles. A concentric layer of fibres, found near the base of the segments, has a sphincter-like

VA2CCcULaA® BY STE M

action, approximating the base of the valves (Paladino). Some of the larger chorde tendinex contain striated muscle (Oehl), whilst a delicate muscular network e

exists in the valvule Thebesii (guarding the openings of small veins from the sub-

of the heart the anatomical limits of the organ may be exactly de- fined, and information obtained as to its actual size, as to any alterations in the relation of the lungs to the heart, and as to the presence or absence of fluid in the pericardium. The direct regis- tration of the movements of the

heart has been accomplished by the aid of various recording instruments.
!

The movements of the heart consist of a series of contractions Move-
which succeed each other with a certain rhythm. The period of ments of
contraction is called the systole, and that of relaxation the diastole. heart,
The two auricles contract and relax synchronously, and these move-

stance of the heart into the right auricle) and in the Eus- tachian valve (a
crescentic

fold of membrane in front of ff

:

|

:

Jimen- ions and veight,

{

:

“Modes of oxamin- ingliving heart,

the opening of the inferior f

vena cava) (Landois). The aortic and pulmonary open-

ings are guarded by the sig- {

moid or semilunar valves,

ments are followed by a simultaneous contraction and relaxation of the
ventricles. Thus there is a systole and diastole of the auricles and a systole
and diastole of the ventricles. But in each half of the heart the

contractions and relaxations of the auricle and the contractions and relaxa- 2

each of which consists of three tions of the ventricle are suc- id ?

semicircular flaps, _each flap cessive. Finally, there is a Ae

“pene eee b ie es a ae — hs —

order to the wall of the ar- e heart is entirely in dia-

tery, whilst its free border stole. The whole series of

projects into the interior of movements, from the com-

the vessel. The segments con- mencement of one auricular

sist of fibrous tissue covered systole to the commencement

with endocardium. At the of the onc immediately follow-

middle of the free border there _ ing, is known as the cardiac Vor partial dissection of fibres ent

is a fibro-cartilaginous thick- Fic. 5.—View of

ening called the nodulus or corpus Arantii. From this nodulus numerous tendinous fibres radiate to the attached border of the valve, but along the margin of the valve the membrane is thin and desti- tute of such fibres. These thin parts are called the du- nulex. Opposite each semi- lunar flap there is a bulging of the wall of the vessel, the sinuses of Valsalva. In the aorta these are situated one anteriorly and two posteriorly (right and left). From the anterior arises the right coro- nary artery, and from the left posterior the left coronary artery, —these vessels being for the supply of blood to the substance of the heart (Quain).

in anterior wall of ventricles in a sheep’s heart, showing different degrees of obli- quity of fibres. At the base and apex the superficial fibres are displayed in the in- tervening space; more and more of the

bres have been removed from above downwards, reaching to a greater depth on the left than on the right side. al, al, superficial fibres of right ventricle; 61, 61, superficial fibres of left ventricle ; 2, superficial fibres removed so as to expose those underneath, which have the same direction as the superficial ones over the leftventricle, but a different.direction from those over the right ventricle; at 3 some of these have been removed, but the direc- tion is only slightly different; 4, trans- verse or annular fibres occupying middle of thickness of ventricular walls; 6, 7, internal fibres passing downwards to- wards apex to emerge at the whorl; ¢, c, anterior coronary or interventricular groove, over which the superficial fibres cross; in the remaining part of the groove some of the deep fibres turn back- wards into the septum ; d, pulmonary ar- tery; ¢, aorta, (Allen Thomson, Quain's Anatomy.)

According to Laennec, the size of the heart is about equal to the closed fist of the individual. Its mean weight is about 9 to 10 oz. John Reid's tables give the average weight in the adult male as 11 oz. and in the female as 9 oz. The proportion of the weight of the heart to that of the body is from 1 to 150 to 1 to 170 (Quain). W. Miiller gives the ratio of heart weight to body weight in the child, and until the body weighs 88 fb, as 176 oz. to 2°2 Ib; when the body weight is from 110 to 200 tb the ratio is '141 0z. to 2°2 bb ; and when the weight of the body reaches 220 tb the ratio is as "123 oz. to 2°2 Ib. The volume of the heart, according to Beneke, is as follows :—new-born infant, 1°34 cubic inches ; 15 years of age, 9°15 to 9°76 ; at 20 years, 15°25 ; up to the 50th year, 17°08 cubic inches ; after that there is aslight diminution. There is scarcely any differ- ence between the capacities of the two ventricles, although in the ordinary modes of death the right is always found more capacious than the left, probably because it is distended with blood ; the left ventricle after death is usually empty and more contracted. The wall of the left ventricle is much thicker than that of the right. The specific gravity of heart muscle is 1°069. _The thickness of the left ventricle in the middle is in man '44 inch and in woman '48 ; that of the right is '16 and '14 inch respectively. The circumfer- ence of the tricuspid orifice in man is 4°62 inches and in woman 4°33 ; of the mitral, 4°18 and 3°78 respectively. The circumference of the pulmonary artery is 2°94 inches ; of the aorta 2°77 ;

of the superior vena cava ‘702 to 1:05 inch ; of the inferior vena cava 1°05 to 1°4 ; and the diameter of the pulmonary veins, ‘53 to °62.

_ When the hand is applied to the side, a little to the left of the left nipple, and in the interval between the fifth and sixth ribs, a shock or impulse is felt. If the whole hand be placed flat over the region of the heart, one may notice the presence or absence of the heart- beat, also its situation and extent, and any alterations in its character. In some rare cases, where there is a congenital fissure of the sternum, the finger can be applied to various parts of the heart’s surface, with the integuments and pericardium intervening. This mode of examination may be termed palpation. Again, when the ear is applied, either directly, or indirectly by means of the stethoscope, over the position of the heart, sounds are heard the duration and rhythm of which are of physiological significance. This mode is known as auscultation. By percussing over the region

eyele or period of revolution of the heart. In fig. 6 the systole is represented by the x

curve above the horizontal “—_ eo Sa

lines and the diastole by the ; : curve below them. The auri- Fis. tie sieving movements

cular changes are traced on the upper line au and those of the ventricle on the lower line vent. The length of the lines represents the total duration of a cardiac revolution. The diagram shows that the auricular systole occupies one-fifth of the total time of a revolution of the heart and the ventricular systole two-fifths, that the auricular systole immediately precedes the ven- tricular systole, that the commencement of the ventricular systole coincides with the commencement of the auricular diastole, and that during two-fifths of the total period both auricles and ven- tricles are in a state of diastole. There are thus three periods,— (1) one of auricular systole, one-fifth ; (2) one of ventricular systole, two-fifths ; and (3) one of repose, two-fifths. The impulse of the apex against the wall of the chest, the moment of which is indi- cated by x, occurs at the middle of the time occupied by the ventricular systole.

In 1861 Chauveau and Marey obtained a direct record of the movements of the heart of a horse, determined the duration of the events happening in the heart, and measured the endocardiac pres- sure by an instrument termed a cardiac sound. When the sound was introduced into the right auricle and right ventricle,—the animal being anesthetized,—the tracings shown in fig. 7 were

|_| | es it a Lb iA i || . | Lt a

IN

Fic. 7.—Tracings from the heart of a horse, by Chatveau and Marey. The upper tracing is from the right auricle, the middle from the right —e >, and the lowest from the apex of the heart. The horizontal lines represen

time, and the vertical amount of pressure. The vertical dotted lines mark

coincident points in the three movements. The breadth of one of the small squares represents one-tenth of a second.

obtained. From this diagram we learn the following facts. (1) The auricular contraction is less sudden than the ventricular, as is indicated by the line ab being more oblique than the line ¢' @'. (2) The auricular contraction lasts only for a very short time, as the curve almost immediately begins to descend, whereas the ventricle remains contracted for a considerable time, and then

1 See Marey, La Méthode Graphique, wt supra.

Sketch of

eardiae revolu- tion.

100

slowly relaxes. (3) The time of the contraction of the auricle and that of its relaxation are about equal, but the time of the relaxation of the ventricle is nearly twice as long as that of its contraction ; the movements of the auricle are thus uniform and wave-like, whilst those of the ventricle

have more of a spasmodic character. (4) The auricular movement (ad, a'b', ab", g, 9', g') precedes the ventricular, and the latter coincides with the impulse of the apex against the wall of the chest, as is seen from the second vertical dotted line. (5) The contraction of the auricle, by forcing blood on- wards, affects the pressure for an instant in the ventricle, as is indi- cated by the little elevation immediately before the ventricular con- traction. (6) During the period of contraction of the ventricle there are oscillations of pressure affecting both the auricle and the ventricle ; these are indicated by the little waves d, ¢, f, a', é; oF gil e", and f" ; similar waves are seen ath, 7, h', 7', h", and 7". The letters %, e, k', e', and &", e" represcnt a third set of waves.

With these facts in view, we may now describe the phenomena which happen in a complete cardiac revolution. Suppose the blood to be pouring from the venz cave and the pulmonary veins into the two auricles. At that moment the auricles are passing into a state of complete diastole, and their cavity is increased by the funnel-shaped aperture at the auriculo-ventricular openings formed by the segments of the valves guarding these orifices. The dis- tension of the auricles is due partly to the pressure in the vene cave and pulmonary veins being less than in the interior of the auricles and partly to the aspirating action of the thorax during inspiration, sucking, as it were, the blood from the veins outside the chest to those inside the chest, and thus favouring the flow of blood to the heart. During this time both ventricles are filling with blood, the auriculo-ventricular orifices being open. When the distension of the auricles is complete (which happens before the distension of the ventricles, because the capacity of the auricles is much smaller than that of the ventricles), the auricular systole commences by the contraction and emptying of the auricular ap- pendix towards the general cavity of the auriele, and by the mouths of the veins becoming narrowed by contraction of the circular fibres in their coats. These rhythmic movements are propagated quickly over the auricular walls, causing them to contract simultaneously towards the auriculo-ventricular orifices. The contracting wall forces the blood chiefly in the direction of least resistance, that is, into the ventricle, which at the same time is only partially full of blood, and is passing into a state of complete relaxation. The pressure in the veins, aided by their rhythmic contraction at the commencement of the auricular systole, is sufficient to

prevent the blood from passing backwards, except to a very slight extent; but there is a momentary arrest of the flow in the large venous trunks. Thus the auricles act, not only as passive reservoirs for the blood in its passage from the veins to the auricles, but as rhythmic cavities tending to keep up a mean pressure in the veins, in diminishing by their extensibility the pressure which tends to increase during the ventricular systole, and in increasing the pressure by their contrac- tion at a time when the venous pressure would diminish, that is, towards the close of the ventricular diastole. Both auricles and ven- tricles exercise, during their diastole, a certain aspirating or sucking action, like that seen during the relaxation of a compressed india- rubber bag ; but this force is very feeble in the case of the heart.

The amount of blood discharged into the ventricles (already partially filled during the relaxation of the auricles) by the auricular systole is sufficient to fill their cavities, and consequently the ven- tricular systole immediately follows the contraction of the auricles. During the inflow of blood from auricles to ventricles the auriculo- ventricular valves are floated upwards into a more or less horizontal position, and the assumption of this position is further aided by the contraction of the longitudinal muscular fibres that pass from the auricles into the cusps of the valves. When the ventricular walls contract, the margins of the auriculo-ventricular valves are closely pressed together, and the cusps are kept from being folded backwards into the auricle by the simultaneous contraction of the musculi papillares pulling on the chord tendinex which are affixed to the ventricular aspect of the valves. The close apposition of the cusps is also increased, even along their margins, by the arrange- ment that the chorde tendinee of one papillary muscle always pass to the adjoining edges of twocusps. Thus the valves, tricuspid on the right side and mitral on the left, are tightly closed and the blood cannot regurgitate into the auricles. The blood, thus com- pressed, can only pass into the pulmonary artery from the right ventricle and into the aorta from the left. The positive pressure in the ventricles is at its maximum at the beginning of their con- traction ; during the contraction it diminishes ; and at the close of the systole (Marey), or in the diastole immediately thereafter (Goltz and Gaule), or even, according to Moens, shortly before the systole has reached its height, the pressure may even become negative. Moens

“explains this aspiration as being due to the formation of an empty space in the ventricle caused by the energetic expulsion of the blood through the aorta and pulmonary artery” (Landois and Stirling). As the blood passes from the ventricles into the pul- monary artery and aorta, the segments of the sigmoid valves are

\

YASQCULAR SsYsTtin

forced open and stretched across the dilatations or sinuses behind each cusp, without being actually pressed against the walls of the vessels ; and, as both the pulmonary artery and the aorta contained a certain amount of blood before, the pressure in these vessels is in- creased, and the walls of both yield to a considerable extent. As already stated, the ventricle continues in the contracted state for a brief space of time, and then it relaxes. Simultaneously with the commencement of relaxation, the auriculo-ventricular orifices open, thus permitting the passage of blood from the auricles; and at the same time the elastic walls of the aorta and pulmonary arteries recoil and force a portion of the blood backwards towards the cavities of the ventricles, in which, as they are passing into diastole, the pressure is much less than in the vessels. This blood, however, by filling the sinuses of Valsalva and the crescentic pouches of the sigmoid valves, closes these latter, and thus prevents any blood from passing into the ventricles. From the end of the ventricular con- traction to the moment when the auricles are again full, all the cavities of the heart are in a condition of dilatation and the cavities are filling with blood. This is the period of the pause, during which the heart may be supposed to be in a state of rest.

When one watches an actively beating heart exposed in an anes- thetized animal, the movements are so : tumultuous and rapid that the eye can- not follow them so as to convey to the mind a correct conception of the rapid changes in form. Owing to this our notions of such changes have been de- rived chiefly from an inspection of the heart after death. Recent ingenious in- vestigations by Ludwig and Hesse have shown that the post- mortem form is not the natural shape of the living heart Fra. 8.—

Projection of the base either in diastole or in systole, but such im systole and diastole; RV, as is shown, for example, in fig. 8. ~ seninicls,) 20, See

The apex beat or shock of the heart : is synchronous with. the systole, and is caused normally by the apex of the ventricle pressing more firmly against the chest wall, from which it is separated when the heart is at rest by the thin margin of the lung. At the time of ventricular systole, as already seen, the heart, instead of being an oblique cone having an elliptical base, as in rest, becomes more like a regular cone, having a circular base. When contraction occurs, the apex is carried from below and behind, upwards and forwards, and is forced into the intercostal space, and at the same time the ventricular portion twists on its long axis from left to right, so as to expose partially the left ventricle. It is the twisting motion that gives the shock or impulse, and it is caused chiefly by the contraction of the oblique fibres in the ventricles which lift up the apex; it is also assisted by the slightly spiral arrangement of the aorta and pulmonary artery. Some have supposed that the movement is partly due to the recoil of the ventricles after discharging their blood (like that of an exploded gun), causing the apex to go in the op- posite direction, downwards and outwards; others have held that the discharge of blood into the pulmonary artery and aorta causes an elongation of these vessels, whereby the apex is pushed down- wards and forwards. Both of these mechanisms, however, must have only a slight effect, as the cardiac impulse occurs even when from hemorrhage the pulsating heart is practically empty.

To obtain a tracing of the apex beat an instrument termed the cardiograph is employed, various forms of which are figured in Landois and Stirling's Human Physiology, vol. i. p. 89 sg. Figs.

b

Fig. 9.—Traeing of cardiae pulsations of a healthy man. (Marey.)

9 and 10 are examples of tracings obtained by this instrument. From the latter figure we learn the subjoined information. The time of the pause and the contraction of the auricle are represented by ab, and it is evident that the latter pheno- menon causes the apex of the heart to move towards

the intercostal space. The portion be corresponds to the contraction of the ventricles and is synchronous with the first sound. The curve then rapidly falls as the ventricles relax, and during| the descent there are two eleva-

tions, d and e, synchronous with the

Fig. 10.—Normal eurve from man. (Landois.)

second sound. As already stated, when the ventricles relax, the blood

in the aorta and pulmonary artery, driven backwards by the elastic recoil of the walls of these vessels, closes the semilunar valves.

Change in shape of heart. | |

Apex beat.

Cardio-

graphic tracings.

, ae,

eart's yntrac- on.

4

Te- uency

ulsa- ons,

fos} Im oO Ji wh ad

VARCULAR SYSTEM

This shock is propagated to the apex of the ventricles and thus causes a vibration of the intercostal space. The elevation d is synchronous with the closure of the aortic valves and ¢ with that of the pulmonary valves ; it is also apparent that these valves are not closed at the same moment, but are

separated in time by ‘05 to ‘09 of a second,—an effect due, as already explained, to the greater blood pressure in the aorta than in the pulmonary artery. Finally, ef corresponds to the remaining part of the ventricular diastole.

‘atureot Much discussion has taken place as to whether the contraction

of the heart is to be regarded as a simple contraction, like the “twitch” of a muscle obtained by a single stimulation, or as a tetanic contraction, like cramp, such as is caused by the application of a number of stimuli in rapid succession. It is true that many of the phenomena of a cardiac contraction resemble those of a skeletal muscle: thus, fatigue diminishes the amplitude and in- creases the duration of the contraction ; and the effects of changes of temperature are similar. The period of latent stimulation of a cardiac muscle (one-third of a second) is much longer than that of skeletal muscle (one-hundredth of a second). The systolic contrac- tion, as regards duration, is more like a tetanic spasm than a twitch, being from eight to ten times longer. The electrical phenomena, on the other hand, resemble those of a twitch more than those of tetanus. Thus, when the heart is examined with a sensitive galvano- meter, and with the aid of the appliances described under PHYsIoLocy (vol. xix. p. 24 sq.), there is a “negative variation ” with each beat. The fact appears to be that, just as the heart muscle shows histo- logical characters intermediate between voluntary striated muscle and involuntary non-striated muscle, so it likewise shows physio- logical properties partaking of both.

The time occupied by cardiac movements has been measured by various observers by a study of tracings obtained from the impulse of the apex of the heart against the wall of the chest, as recorded by the cardiograph. If the velocity of the surface on which the tracing is obtained be known, and if a correct interpretation is given of the causes of the various parts of the curve, it is not difficult to determine approximately the time occupied by the phases of a cardiac revolution. Rollett gives the following results in fractions of a second as determined by Landois (Hermann, Handb. d. Physiol. vol. iv. p. 157).

Rate of Heart-Beat per Minute. Events in the Heart. SS ee Ee

55 | 55 | 74-2 | 109-7

brid ico Duration of Phases.

. From beginning of pause to end of auri-

cular contraction

. Contraction of ventricle

. Relaxation of ventricle to closure of semilunar valves

From close of pulmonary valves to be- ginning of pause

. Between Ist and 2d sounds….....

. Between 2d sound and next Ist sound..

- Time from 1 to 4 inclusive (complete

cardiac revolution)

. From closure of aortic valves to closure

of pulmonary valves

584 274

494 079

Dis 5

066

‘194 |

-090

“244 “303 “547

In the adult man cardiac pulsations occur at the rate of 65 to 75 per minute. There is a certain relation between the amount of

fcardiac blood in the circulation and the frequency of heart-beats. Thus,

in the animal series, as the beats of the heart increase in fre- quency the quantity of blood which passes per minute in one kilo- gramme (2°2 ib) of body weight also increases, as is shown in the following table by Vierordt :—

Quantity of Blood per Minute and | Number of Pulsations per Kilogramme of Body Weight. per Minute.

152 grammes

07

101

dupp; then the accent is on lupp (the first sound) when the stetho- scope is over the apex—thus, hipp dupp, lipp dupp—and on dupp (the second sound) when over the base—thus, lupp dupp, lupp dupp. 'There is a pause between the second sound and the next succeeding first sound, and a much shorter pause (almost in- appreciable) between the first and second sounds: thus—

At apex—lupp dw use), lupp du use), lipp dupp.

At ee dape cone ies cee hh neg aenb.

These relations are well seen in fig. 11. Dr Walshe states that, if the cardiac cycle be divided into tenths, the first sound will last four-tenths, the short pause one-tenth, the second sound two-tenths, and the long pause three-tenths. There has been considerable dif- ference of opinion as to the cause of the first sound. Some have supposed it to iar be due to vibrations of the , i auriculo-ventricular valves; |__|}}|/| i others believe that it is iy muscular, and due to the A contraction of the ven- oN i : |

tricles ; not a few have at- ’ hi mi | i tributed it to movements ‘yp E of the blood through the : aortic and pulmonary ori- fices; whilst yet others

have thought that it might F16. 11—Scheme of a cardiac cycle after Gaird-

: nerand Sharpey. The inner circle shows what be the result of a fusion of events occur in the heart, and the outer the these effects. It is cer- relation of the sounds and silences to these tainly not due to the shock

WE INTE

2? on | ly

DIASTOLE < oF

AURICLE& VENTRICLE,

| ih a

events. ;

of the heart against the chest wall, as it has been heard after re- moval of the heart from the chest. The most likely view is that it is a muscular sound, varying in quality from the ordinary sound of a contracting muscle in accordance with the peculiar arrange- ment of the cardiac fibres, and that this sound is modified by the vibrations of the tense auriculo-ventricular valves. The fact that the sound has been heard from an excised heart still pulsating but empty of blood strongly supports this view ; and there is further the pathological evidence that in cases where the muscular walls have been much weakened by fatty changes (as in the advanced stages of typhus, fatty degeneration, &c.) the first sound may dis- appear. No doubt exists as to the cause of the second sound: it is produced by the sudden sharp closure of the sigmoid valves. As already mentioned, the aortic and pulmonary valves do not close absolutely simultaneously.

For practical purposes it is important to bear in mind what is happening in the heart whilst one listens to its sounds. With the first sound we have (1) contraction of the ventricles, (2) closure of the auriculo-ventricular valves, (3) rushing of the blood into the aortic and pulmonary artery, (4) impulse of the apex against the chest, and (5) filling of the auricles. With the second sound we have (1) closure of the semilunar valves from the elastic recoil of the aorta and pulmonary artery, (2) relaxation of the ventricular walls, (3) opening of the auriculo-ventricular valves so as to allow the passage of blood from auricle to ventricle, and (4) diminished pressure of apex against chest wall. With the long pause there are (1) gradual refilling of the ventricle from the auricle and (2) con- traction of the auricle so as to entirely fill the ventricle. The sound of the tricuspid valve is loudest at the junction of the lower right costal cartilage with the sternum, of the mitral at the apex beat, of the semilunar valves at the

aortic orifice in the direction of the aorta, where it is nearest to the surface, at the second right costal cartilage, and of the valves at the pulmonary orifice over the third left costal cartilage, to the left and external to the margin of the sternum.

For an account of the mechanical work performed by the heart, see NUTRITION, vol. xvii. pp. 685-686.

The heart is directly nourished by the blood flowing through its Nutri-cavities in some of the lower Vertebrates, as the frog; but in the tion of

'uantity hearts of larger animals, in which nutritional changes must be heart.

It has been determined, both by direct measurement and by cal-

1 heart,

{blood culation based on the velocity of the blood in the aorta and the

transverse section of the orifice of that vessel, that from a heart of average size each left ventricular systole ejects about 180 grammes (6°35 0z.). This is the figure usually given, but it must be regarded merely as approximative. The amount may vary even in the same individual according to the state of vigour of the muscular walls of the organ,

When the ear is applied over the cardiac region of the chest of a

» healthy man two sounds are heard, the one with greatest intensity

over the apex and the other over the base of the heart. The dull long sound heard over the apex has received several names, such as the first, the long, the inferior, and the systolic sound, whilst that over the base,—clearer, sharper, shorter, higher,—has been called the second, the short, the superior, the diastolic sound. Suppose the heart sounds to be expressed by the syllables Jupp

actively carried on, there is a special arrangement of vessels or cardiac circulation. The coronary arteries originate at the aortic orifice in the

region of the sinus of Valsalva, rather above the upper border of the semilunar valves, so that when the veutricle con- tracts the mouths of these arteries are not covered by the segments of the valves. The branches of the coronary arteries, after dividing and again dividing, penetrate the muscular substance and end in a rich plexus of capillaries, which carry arterial blood to the struc- ture of the heart. From these the radicles of the cardiac veins originate, and these veins carry the blood, now rendered venous, into the right auricle by the larger anterior cardiac veins and by numerous small veins constituting the foramina of Thebesius or the venxz minimex cordis. The coronary vein is dilated before enter- ing the auricle, forming the coronary sinus, and at the junction of the vein with the dilated portion there is a valve consisting of

one or two segments. Other veins enter the coronary sinus, each having a valve. These valves serve two purposes: (1) they inter- rupt the flow of blood during the contraction of the right auricle, preventing regurgitation and venous congestion of the wall of the heart, and (2), as the valves open towards the right auricle, they prevent the backward flow of blood during contraction of the ventricles and favour its onward flow, and thus the stream of blood is accelerated, as in the veins of a contracting muscle. The blood is sent through the cardiac circulation by the systole of the ventricle, and not, as was advocated by Briicke, during its diastole. Heart disease in advanced life, when the coronary arteries are often thickened and their calibre much diminished by sclerosis, may be shown by attacks of palpitation, weakness of the heart, altered rhythm, breathlessness, congestions, pulmonary cedema, hemor- rhage, and faintings,—all due to interference with the normal nutrition of the heart.

In an organ so active as the heart the lymphatic system is neces- sarily largely developed. These vessels, acting like drainage-tubes for carrying away waste products, are found in great numbers beneath both the pericardium and the endocardium, and through- out the muscular tissue. Amongst the muscular fibres there are numerous lacune or spaces lined by endothelial cells, which are the origins of the lymphatics. The lymph is carried into lymphatic glands between the aorta and the trachea, and

ultimately finds its way into the right innominate vein and the thoracic duct.

Persist – It has been known from early times that the heart will continue ence of to beat after its removal from the body. This is more especially cardiac the case with the hearts of cold-blooded animals. The frog's heart

Lymph- atics of heart.

move- may continue to pulsate for two and a half days, whilst that of a ment. rabbit will do so only for a period of from three to thirty minutes. The average duration of the beats of the warm-blooded heart is said to be eleven minutes. The right auricular appendix, which beats longest, has been observed to pulsate in the rabbit fifteen hours after death, in the mouse forty-six, and in the dog ninety- six hours. After the heart has ceased beating, it may again be caused to contract by direct stimulation or by heat. The injection of arterial blood into the coronary vessels will restore excitability in the Mammalian heart after it has ceased to beat (Ludwig). Cardio- If a wide glass tube filled with smoke be inserted into one nostril, pneu- while the other nostril and the mouth are closed, the smoke will matic be seen to move with each pulsation of the heart (Stirling). This move- phenomenon has been studied by Ceradini and Landois. It is ex- ment. plained by the fact that when the heart contracts it occupies less

space in the chest, and consequently, if the glottis be open, air will be drawn into the lungs. The reverse will happen during the diastole.

The heart and lungs being contained in an air-tight cavity, the chest or thorax, it is evident that the increase and decrease in the size of the chest during inspiration and expiration must affect the amount of pressure on the outer surface of the heart, and consc- quently its movements. When an inspiration is made by the descent of the diaphragm and the elevation of the ribs, the lungs expand ; there is then less pressure on the outer surface of the heart and the heart is in a state of distension in diastole. In consequence also of the removal of pressure during inspiration from the great veins entering the chest and reaching the right side of the heart, the flow of venous blood towards the heart is favoured. These effects are

more marked if after a deep expiration the glottis be closed, so as to prevent air entering the lungs, and if then the chest be dilated by a powerful inspiratory effort (J. Miiller). This causes

,a dilatation of the heart, and venous blood flows freely into the right side; this sends it on to the lungs, causing them to become engorged, whilst at the same time the dilated left side of the heart is unable to send out a sufficient amount of blood into the arterial system. The pulse in such conditions may disappear, and there is an intense feeling of distress. On the other hand, expiration in- creases the pressure on the outer surface of the heart and of the great veins ; only a small amount of blood flows into the right side – the heart is contracted ; the systole is small; and the pulse is re- duced in volume. This condition is intensified in what is termed Valsalva's experiment, in which after a deep inspiration the glottis is closed and a powerful expiratory effort is made. When this is done, the flow of venous blood into the heart is interrupted, the veins in the face and neck swell, and the blood is forced out of the compressed lungs into the left side of the heart, which throws it into the arterial circulation. The pulse and heart sounds disappear and there is the risk of syncope or fainting. Both these experi- ments, Miiller's and Valsalva's, are dangerous and should not be often repeated. They are extreme conditions of the normal state of things, in which inspiration favours the flow of blood into the heart and the dilatation of the heart, whilst expiration has the opposite effect ; and they also explain the mechanism by which air may be sucked into the veins from wounds in the neck or armpit. This is most likely to occur during inspiration, and when it does

Innerva- occur speedy death is the result. tion of In treating of the innervation of the heart we have to consider heart. (1) the influence of the great nerves connecting the heart with the

VFASGCU LAR SB YRSTAA

.- 4

central nervous organs, or what may be termed the eatrinsic nervous: mechanism, and (2) the nervous arrangements in the heart itself,

or the intrinsic nervous mechanism. (1) The extrinsic arrange- Ex- ments, consisting of the nerves given off by the cardiac plexuses trinsic, derived partly from the cerebro-spinal and partly from the sympa-

thetic system, have been investigated chiefly in the larger animals,

such as the tortoise, rabbit, and dog, and the general results have . been described under Puystonoey (vol. xix. p. 29 sg.). They may i be briefly summarized as follows: (a) there are fibres in the vagus ‘ nerve exercising a controlling or inhibitory action on the heart, and

these fibres originate in the medulla oblongata; (8) the sympathetic

nerve supplies accelerating fibres to the heart, and these fibres h originate in the cerebro-spinal system. (2) The intrinsic arrange- Intrins! — ments have been investigated more especially in the heart of the |

frog, a view of which is given in figs. 12 and 13. It will be seen

Fie. 12.—Heart of frog from the front. V, single ventricle; Ad, As, right and left auricles ; B, bulbus arteriosus; 1, carotid, 2, aorta, and 3, pulmonary artery ; C, carotid gland. (Ecker.)

Fic. 18.—Heart of frog from behind. sv, sinus venosus opened ; ci, inferior vena cava; csd, ess, right and left superior ven cave ; vp, pulmonary vein ; ‘ Ad and As, right and left auricles; Ap, communication between right and left auricle. (licker.)

that the frog’s heart possesses two auricles, communicating by a

foramen in the septum, and a single ventricle. The venous blood

from the body is poured in the first instance, not into the right auricle, but into a cavity called the sinus venosus, which comniuni- { cates with the right auricle. The left auricle receives the arterial

blood from the lungs by the pulmonary veins. Both auricles empty ;

into the common ventricle, which contains therefore a mixture of

arterial and venous blood, and when the ventricle contracts some

of this blood is again sent to the lungs, whilst the remainder passes

into a dilatation at the commencement of the arterial system, called

the bulbus arteriosus, and thence into the aorta.

After the heart of a decapitated frog has been removed from its Result: body, and so from the influence of the great nervous centres, rhythm- of ex- | ical movements may continue for some time independently of those peri- centres. If the apex of the heart be then cut off, it will remain ment. © motionless, whilst the larger part will still beat rhythmically. Successive slices may be removed from the larger portion without ; affecting rhythmical contraction, until a section is made through | the auriculo-ventricular groove, when the ventricular portion of the heart ceases to beat. If the motionless apex, or the separate por- tions rendered motionless by the above procedure, be mechanically irritated, a single contraction, not a series of rhythmic contractions, follows. When the ventricle is separated from the rest of the heart Experi by a ligature, or by concision at the level of the auriculo-ventricular ment 0 groove, the ventricle stops, but the auricles and the sinus go on Des- — beating. To continue the rhythmic movement of the ventricle, it cartes.)

i

is necessary to have attached to it a small portion of the auricular

part of the heart, especially the lower margin of the septum. It

would, therefore, appear that impulses pass from this auricular por- i tion into the ventricular and cause the latter to pulsate. If the Experi! sinus venosus be separated from the auricles by incision or ligature, ment 0 the veins and the sinus continue to beat, whilst the auricles and Stannit ventricles are arrested in diastole. Suppose another incision be

made through the auriculo-ventricular groove, the ventricle fre-

quently begins to beat, but the auricles remain in diastole. It is

also observed in these circumstances that the ventricle beats more slowly than under normal conditions. Although the rhythmical contractions of the heart are influenced by the nervous arrangements, | it cannot be said that ganglionic nerve cells and nerve fibres are a necessary part of the mechanism. It has been shown by Engel- mann that, if the ventricle of a frog's heart be cut into two or more strips in a zigzag manner, so that the parts still remain connected | with each other by muscular tissue, the strips still beat in a regular progressive mamner, provided one strip is caused to contract. g

The Action of the Blood- Vessels.)

It is evident that a general study of the flow of fluids through Flow tubes ought to precede that of the flow of the blood through the fluids © complicated system of tubes constituting the arteries, capillaries, throug. and veins. In this place, however, it is necessary to allude only tubes. — to those facts in hydraulics which have a special bearing on the phenomena of the circulation (comp. HypROMECHANICS, vol. xii. pp. 440 sg. and 459 sq.). When a stream of water is trans- mitted intermittently by the strokes of a pump through a long

General

FRecvuLaAR SYSTEM

elastic tube, formed, say, of india-rubber, the fluid does not issue from the other end in a series of jets, which would be the case if the tube were rigid, but it flows continuously, because during the pause between the successive strokes the outflow still continues. Consequently a continuous flow is kept up in elastic tubes when the time between two strokes is shorter than the duration of the outflow after the first stroke. If the finger be placed on any part of such a tube, and more especially near the pump, an expansion and relaxation will be felt with each stroke. Further, if the right fore-finger be placed over the tube near the pump, and the left fore-finger over a more distant portion, a stronger impulse will be felt with the right than with the left finger. Thus a wave is transmitted along the tube,

diminishing in amplitude as the dis- tance from the pump increases. We must distinguish between the transmission of this wave (an oscillatory movement or change of form in the column of fluid) and the transmission of the current, that is, the translation of a mass of fluid along the tube. In elastic tubes the current is much slower than the transmission of the wave. The progress of the wave of oscillation may be traced graphically by an apparatus devised by Marey.1 E. H. Weber gives the velocity of waves in elastic tubes at 36°76 feet per second, and Donders states it at 86 to 424 feet. Increase of pressure in the tube appears to lessen the velocity of the wave. The specific gravity of the liquid also affects the velocity: thus the wave is propa- gated four times more slowly in mercury than in water.

The blood-vessels consist, as already stated, $

7%

structure of the arteries, the capillaries, and the x

of blood- veins.

vessels,

Fig. 14.—Capillaries of various size. a, capil- lary much magnified and acted on by nitrate of silver, to show that it is composed of flat- tened cells; 6,a smaller vessel showing the same; c,a small artery or vein showing trans- verse or longitudinal nuclei; d, ultimate

(a) The ultimate or most minute capillaries have the simplest type of structure (fig. 14), consisting of tubes formed of a single layer of transparent, thin, nucleated, endo- thelial cells, joined at their margins. A perfectly fresh capillary does not show the edges of the cells, owing to the uniform re- fractive property of the wall of the tube. The nuclei show an internuclear plexus of fibrils. The cement substance uniting the capillary 'from pia eclls is stained black by a } per cent. solu- maier of sheep's brain. tion of nitrate of silver. Here and there minute dots or slits may be scen, which have been supposed by some to be openings (stomata or stigmata). In the transparent parts of animals, such as the web of , the frog's foot, the mesentery and the lung of the frog, and the tail

coat attaius great thickness and strength. Asa general rule, the smaller arteries show a considerable development of the muscular coat, whilst in the larger it is the elastic coat that attains the pre- ponderance. In many of the larger arteries there are longitudinal muscular fibres at the boundary of the middle and inner coats, Whilst the circular fibres, on contracting, must narrow the calibre of the artery, the longitudinal may tend to keep the vessel open. In the external coat of the larger arteries minute vessels, vasa vasorum, exist for the nourishment of the tissue elements of the arterial wall.

(c) The veins have similar coats to those of an artery, with differ- ences in detail. The elastic layer is less developed in the internal coat ; the middle coat is much thinner and has less elastic tissue, but more connective tissue. Many veins have semilunar folds of the internal coat strengthened with fibrous tissue, forming valves. In some veins (iliac, femoral, umbilical) longitudinal muscular fibres are found in the inner part of the middle coat ; in the inferior vena cava, hepatic veins, and portal veins these longitudinal fibres are external to the circular coat ; in the superior vena cava and upper part of the inferior vena cava the circular coat is wanting ; and the veins of the pia mater, brain and spinal cord, retina, bones, and the venous sinuses of the dura mater and placenta have no muscular tissue (Schafer). Valves exist in the larger veins only, especially in those of the limbs ; they are not found in the veins of the viscera, of the cranium and vertebral canal, or of the bones, nor in the um- bilical vein.

(d) The arterioles and venules are the small vessels, simpler in structure than the larger above described, but containing the same elements, In the smallest veins the elastic layer has disappeared, and the muscular layer is also very thin. Sometimes the muscular layer is represented only by a single layer of contractile cells, and in such minute vessels the outer coat and elastic layer have also disappeared, so that the vessel is merely a tube composed of pave- ment cells with a few elongated fusiform muscular cells twisted around it. Even in the smallest vessels the following differences may be observed between arterioles and venules: "The veins are larger than the corresponding arteries ; they branch at less acute

angles ; their muscular cells are fewer, and their epithelium cells less elongated ; the elastic layer of the inner coat is always less marked, and sooner disappears" (Schiifer).

(ce) The cavernous spaces, as existing in erectile tissues (corpus cavernosum of the penis), consist of the anastomosis of large veins of unequal calibre. The walls and partitions have numerous per- forations ; threads of delicate tissue, covered with epithelium, pass through the cavities ; and the walls are strengthened by eonnective tissue. Similar structures connected with arteries form the carotid gland of the frog and the coccygeal gland of man.

of a fish, the blood may be seen (fig. 15) flowing through the capil- lary network from the arteries into the veins, The current is rapid in the small arteries, less rapid in the veins, and slow in the capillaries, ' It is also fastest in the centre of the vessel and slowest near the YY SS wall, The colourless corpuscles of s Py – blood may be seen to pass from \&# – e centre of the stream to the : : margins, to adhere to the inner 'wo of a fog's foot, as seen with surface of the blood-vessel, and oc- the microscope. The arrows in- casionally to pass through the coats dicate the course of the blood. of the more minute vessels, appear-

The physical properties of blood-vessels are cohesion and elas- Proper- ticity. The cohesion is great and the elasticity is small and perfect. ties of The walls of blood-vessels have the property of contractility, by blood- which alterations take place in the calibre of the vessel, and con- vessels. sequently in the amount of blood supplied to a part.

Arterial Circulation.—The arterial walls are both muscular and Arterial elastic, the muscular coat predominating in the smaller, whilst circula- the elastic coat is strong in the greater arteries. The chief function tion. of the elasticity of the greater vessels is to transmute the unequal movement of the blood in the large arteries, caused by the inter mittent action of the ventricle, into a uniform flow in the capil- laries. Thus, when the ventricle contracts, it propels a certain amount of blood into the elastic aorta, which expands in all direc- tions. On the commencement of the diastole of the ventricle the vis a tergo is removed ; the aorta owing to its elasticity recoils, so

(Schafer.)

ing in the surrounding tissues as migratory cells. Capillaries form networks (fig. 15), which vary much in the size and closeness of the Meshes, according to the degree of activity & of the tissue elements.

as to close, on the one hand, the semilunar valves and, on the other, to force part of its contents into the vessels farther onwards. These, in turn, as they already contain a quantity of blood, expand, recover by an elastic recoil, and transmit the movements with

(6) An artery has three coats,—an inner or elastic, a middle or museular, and an external or areolar (fig. 16). The inner coat Is formed of two layers,—one of pavement epithelium, sometimes called endothelium, and the other composed of fine elastic fibres interlacing, or of a fine membrane per- forated with holes of various sizes (fenes- trated membrane of Henle). In some vessels there is a thin layer of connective tissue between the epithelium and the

diminished intensity. Thus the blood is driven along the vesscls by the action (1) of the ventricular systole, and (2) of the elastic } | recoil of the walls of the vessels occurring during the intervals between the ventricular systole (see p. 104 below). By these actions a series of movements, consisting of expansions and contractions, gradually diminishing in amplitude, pass along the arterial system from the greater to the smaller vessels, the latter becoming, as already pointed out, less and less elastic. These expansions and relaxations of the arterial wall, passing along like a wave, con- stitute the pulse. The pulse therefore represents merely the trans- Pulse. : mission of an undulating movement of the blood, not its pro- elastic layer. The middle coat is formed Ss) gression in the vessels. The undulations of the pulse travel at of a layer of non-striated muscular fibres —SSe7, the rate of 3544 inches per second, about 80 times faster than the circularly disposed around the vessel, pio. 16,—An artery of inter- | Movement of the blood, which in the carotid artery of the horse mixed with numerous elastic fibres con- mediate size. a, a, open- | has been estimated to travel 11:8 inches per second. nected with the perforated membrane of ings of branches and posi- The pulse can be registered graphically by means of a SPHYGMO- Sphyg- the inner coat.

The outer coat consists of Sg Pe oe eee GRAPH (¢.v.). Vierordt constructed the first sphygmograph in mograph. Connective tissue, mixed also with elastic ing transverse nuclei; c,c, | 1855, substituting for a column of fluid a lever placed on the pulse,

which communicated with a system of levers and thus amplified

fibres. In the aorta there isa considerable coat of areolar tissue. : amount of sub-epithelial connective tissue (Schafer), and the elastic | the movement. Of those subsequently devised the best form is that of Marey, invented in 1861. It consists essentially of a long

1 Figured in M'Kendrick's Outlines of Physiology, pp. 338-339.

lever, which is moved near the fulerum by a screw acting on a small horizontal wheel, from whose axis there projects a long, light, wooden lever. The point of the screw rests on a flat disk of steel or ivory, at the end of an elastic spring, which presses the ivory disk or pad on the artery. The lever inscribes the movements on a blackened surface, usually a strip of paper smoked in the flame of a lamp burning turpentine, carried in front of the point of the lever by clock-work. In the instrument as modified by Mahomed, Byrom Bramwell, and others there is an arrangement for adjusting the amount of pressure made on the artery by the ivory pad, so that tracings may be taken at different times from the same artery with different or with the same pressures. The tracings are "fixed ' by passing them through shellac or photographic varnish. Sphyg- The following changes take place in an artery when it pulsates: mograph —(1) it dilates and at the same time lengthens to a small extent ; or pulse (2) the pressure of the blood increases in the artery, and a fecling tracing. .of hardness and resistance is experienced when the artery is com- pressed with the finger. These faets are illustrated in the sphygmo- graphic curve shown diagrammatically in fig. 17. The ascending line ad (line of ascent, up-stroke, or percussion stroke) corresponds to the distension of the ar- tery produeed by the systole of the left ventricle, and the descending line bcd to its elastic recoil ; the length of the line ad represents the total duration of the movement, which is divided into é a two portions by the

perpendicular line be. The Fie. 17.—Diagram of distance ae measures the duration of the disten- a sphygmographic sion of the artery and ed the time of its elastic 'RS: recoil, In a eontinuous tracing the durations of the individual pulsations are equal, and in inverse ratio to the number of pulsa- tions in a unit of time. In a normal pulse the distension and the ; elastic recoil of the vessel succeed each other without interruption, so that there is no period of repose in the artery. When, however, the pressure of blood in the artery falls below a certain point, these characters disappear or arc modified. Fig. 17 shows that the duration of the distension of the artery is only about one-third of that of its contraction. The rapidity and slowness of the pulse depend on the ratio of these periods. 'The pulse is quick when the duration of the arterial distension diminishes, and slow when it increases. The line ab becomes less oblique and more nearly ver- tical, in proportion as the time of the distension is short, quick, and nearly instantaneous. The rapidity of the pulse is increased by quick action of the heart, considerable power of yielding in the arterial walls, easy afflux of blood owing to dilatation of smaller vessels, and nearness to the heart. The term quwiekness has reference to a single pulse-beat, and frequency to the number of beats in a given time, say, one minute. The line bed is always more oblique than ab, and in careful tracings it presents several elevations or notches (see fig. 18). If we refer the _ different portions of the curve to their origin the re- sult is as fol- lows :—-(1) the ' up-stroke corre- Fy, 18.—Sphygmogram of radial artery; pressure 2.0z. Each sponds to the part of the curve between the base of one up-stroke and systole of the the base of the next corresponds to a beat of the heart, lee - wetitidie. 20 that this figure shows five heart-beats and part of a : » sixth; ab, the ascent; b, apex of up-stroke; 6 to h, the opening the aor- descent, with an elevation d, the first tidal or predicrotic tic valves, pour-

wave ; @, aortic notch ; f, a second elevation, the dicrotic ing the blood W8Ve3 92 slight curve, sometimes called the second tidal into the arter-

wave. (Landois and Stirling.) ies, and distending them; (2) the downstroke represents the time during which the blood is flowing out of the arteries at their peri- phery into the capillaries ; (8) the larger wave in the descent, 7.¢., the dicrotic, recoil, or aortic systolic wave, represents the time of the closure of the aortic valves; (4) the predicrotic, first tidal, or second

ventricular systolic wave occurs after the first systolic wave and during the ventricular contraction (Byrom Bramwell). In many

pulse-tracings there are still smaller secondary waves, due to elastic |

vibrations of the wall of the vessel. The three factors causing an arterial pulsation are (1) the more or less energetic contraction of the ventricle, (2) the quantity and pressure of the blood, and (3) the elastic and contractile properties of the arterial wall. If these factors be in any way modified there will be a corresponding modi- fication in the physical characters of the pulse. The character of a pulse-tracing is affected by the amount of pressure applied to the artery. With a light pressure the dicrotie wave is relatively less ; with a moderate pressure (34 to 7 oz.) it is well marked, whilst the curve is lower; and with greater pressure it-is again reduced.

Physio- With 72 to 104 oz. pressure small secondary waves appear before logical the dicrotic. char- The normal pulse-rate in man is about 72 per minute, in woman

acters of about 80 per minute; but in some individuals a state of health is pulse. consistent with a pulse-rate as rapid as 100 or as slow as 50 beats

per minute. The pulse-rate is influenced by the undermentioned factors. (1) Age: a newly-born child, 130 to 140 beats per minute ; 1 year, 120 to 180 ; 2 years, 105; 3 years, 100 ; 4 years, 97 ; 5 years, 94 to 90; 10 years, about 90; 10 to 15 years, 78; 15 to 50 years, 70 ; 60 years, 74; 80 years, 79 ; 80 to 90 years, over 80. (2) Length of body: Czarnecki, Volkmann, and Rameaux have shown that as the height increases the pulse slows. (8) Bodily states: active muscular exercise, increased blood-pressure, active digestion, pain, nervous excitement, extreme debility quicken the pulse. (4) Tem- perature: increase of temperature quickens the pulse. An increase of 1° above 98° Fahr. is assoeiated with an increase of 10 beats per minute: thus, at 98° Fahr. the pulse-rate will be 60 per minute ; at 99°, 70; at 100°, 80; at 101°, 90; at 102°, 100; at 103°, 110; at 104°, 120; at 105°, 180; and at 106°, 140 (Aitken). (5) Posture: the pulse is more

frequent when one stands than when one sits, and still slower when one lies down. (6) Sensory impressions: music is said by Dogiel to quicken the pulse. (7) Pressure: increased barometric pressure slows the pulse. (8) Diurnal rhythm: 3 to 6 A.M., 61 beats; 8 to 11.30 a.M., 74; towards 2 P.M., a decrease ; towards 3 (at dinner-time) another rise, which goes on until 6 to 8 P.M., when it may be 70; towards midnight, 54; a rise again to- wards 2 A.M., when it soon falls again, and afterwards rises, as before, towards 3 A.M. (Landois and Stirling).

Colin gives the following pulse-rates in various animals :—elephant, 25 to 28 beats per minute ; camel, 28 to 32; giraffe, 66; horse, 86 to 403; ox, 45 to 50; tapir, 44; ass, 46 to 50; pig, 70 to 80; lion, 40; lioness, 68; tiger, 74; sheep, 70 to 80; goat, 70 to 80; leopard, 60; wolf (female), 96; hyena, 55; dog, 90 to 100 ; cat, 120 to 140; rabbit, 120 to 150; mouse, 120; goose, 110; pigeon, 136; hen, 140; snake, 24; carp, 20; frog, 80; salamander, 77.

A pulse is said to be strong or weak according to the weight it is Strengt] able to raise. The strength is usually estimated by pressing the of pulse finger on the artery until the pulse-beat beyond the point of pressure ; disappears. The pulse is said to be hard or soft according to the Tension degree of resistance experienced. In feeling the pulse it is import- ant to notice whether the tension is great during the distension of the vessel, or whether it is hard during the intervals between the pulse-beats as well as during the beats themselves. On the other hand, it may be soft in these intervals in consequence of the semi- lunar valves at the aorta not closing perfectly (aortic ineompetence), thus allowing the blood partially to flow back into the ventricle. This softness and the feeling of sudden collapse of the arterial wall are the pulse characteristics of unfilled arteries. A pulse may be Volume large in volume, as where a large amount of blood is thrown into the aorta, owing to hypertrophy of the left ventricle, or it may be small and thready when a small quantity of blood passes into the aorta, either owing to a diminished total amount of blood, or from constriction of the aortic orifice (aortic stenosis), or from disease of the mitral valve allowing the blood to regurgitate into the left auriele, or when the ventricle contracts feebly. ;

The pulse becomes later and later in time as we recede from the Velocit, heart. Czermak estimated the delay as follows :—carotid pulse, of puls< after the cardiac beat, ‘087 second ; radial, ‘159 second ; posterior wave. tibial, ~~193 second. By placing delicate tambours or electromag~~ netic sphygmographs at different points of the circulation and re- cording the movements on a rapidly moving surface, E. H. Weber found the velocity of the pulse-wave to be 30°31 feet per second ; Garrod found it to be from 29°52 to 35°43 feet per second ; Crashey determined it at 27°89 feet per second; and Moens at 27:23. In the arteries of the upper limb it is stated to be 30°84 and in those of the lower limb 31°82 feet per second. The wave-length is ob- tained “ by multiplying the duration of the inflow of blood into the aorta= 08 to ‘09 second by the velocity of the pulse-wave.”

This would give the wave-length at 2°46 feet.

As already pointed out, inspiration favours the flow of blood into Influen the veins and retards the flow in the arteries, whilst expiration has of resp the reverse effect. The tension of the arteries during inspiration ration

is therefore less than in expiration, and this affects the form of the pulse. (1) “‘ The greater distension of the

pulse-curve, as is seen in fig. 19.

Fig. 19.—Sphygmographic tracing showing influence of respiration on pulse. J, during inspiration ; E, during expiration. (Riegel.)

arteries during expiration causes all the parts of the curve occurring during this phase to be higher ; (2) the line of ascent is heightened during expiration, because the expiratory thoracic movement helps to increase the force of the expiratory wave ; (3) owing to increase of the pressure the dicrotic wave must be less during expiration ; and (4) for the same reason the elastic elevations (secondary waves) are more distinct and oceur higher in the curve near its apex” (Landois and Stirling, op. cit.). ‘See also p. 102 above.

_ Non-striated muscle, as has been already stated, exists to a con- Contra: siderable amount in the walls of the smaller arteries, and the calibre tility

© of these vessels may consequently be changed by the activity of the artene: contractile coat. The contractility of vessels may appear under two

forms :—(1) as rhythmical contractions, such as have been seen in the vessels of a rabbit's ear or in a bat's wing, which are inde- pendent both of the pulse and of respiratory movements ; and (2) as persistent contractions, under the influence of the nervous system, whieh play an important part in the distribution of the blood. The amount of contraction of an artery will affect the pressure of the blood in its interior: it will accelerate or retard the rapidity of the blood current ; and it will regulate the supply of blood to the

by exposure to the air for one or two hours (see fig. 20). It consists of the adhesion to the wall of the vessel of the colourless corpuscles and their protrusion through the wall into the surrounding tissues. Hering is of opinion that it is due partly to the filtration of the colloidal matter of the cell under blood-pressure. Diapedesis is of importance as constituting a part of the inflammatory process. The colourless cells become pus corpuscles (Cohenheim) ; see Paru- OLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 865. (18) If a vascular membrane be

capillary area to which the vessel is distributed. By such arrange- | gently _ irritated ments, also, the distribution of blood to various organs is regulated, | whilst under the thus establishing what has been termed a balance of local circula- | microscope, the

tions. For example, if the vessels in one organ remain permanently contracted, whilst those in a neighbouring organ are dilated, more blood will pass to the latter than to the former, and some end of physiological importance may be served. Thus physiological correlations may be established between the cerebral and thyroid eirculations, the gastro-hepatic and the splenic circulations, and

capillaries become first slightly nar- rowed and then di- lated, crowded with corpuscles, whilst @% the blood – stream.”

the distribution of blood in the lower extremities as related to the | becomes __ slower. abdominal organs. By and by the ‘Arterial Ifa stethoscope be placed over a large artery, a murmur, sound, | stream oscillates sounds. or bruit will be heard, caused by the blood rushing through the | and then alto- ~~” vessel narrowed by the pressure of the instrument. The fluid escapes | gether stops. This into a wider portion of the vessel beyond the point of pressure, and | constitutes stastis, Fic. 20.— Small vessels of mesentery of frog, showing the sound is caused by the particles of fluid there being thrown into | a part of the in~~ Seaporeats Ls ne corpuscles. w, w, Serer rapid vibration, not by vibrations of the wall of the vessel. Such | flammatory pro- Woosh 0% pecgtlovatdoagtig to a pn sounds are favoured by a certain degree of elasticity in the walls of | cess, and is fol- corpuscles in various stages of extrusion ; 7, f, extruded the vessel, by diminished peripheral resistance allowing the blood | lowed by exudation corpuscles. (Landois and Stirling.) to flow away freely, and by a considerable difference of the pressure | of the plasma of the blood, along with colourless corpuscles, and 1 in the narrow and wide parts of the tube. They are always heard | more rarely coloured corpuscles. over an aneurism, when the arterial tube is dilated, and when The most important vital property of capillaries is, as already Vital pressure is applied to a large vessel. The placental souffle or bruit mentioned, contractility, by which their calibre may be modified. proper- heard during pregnancy is a sound of this kind, arising from pressure | The protoplasm forming their walls contracts when stimulated. ties of on the widely dilated uterine arteries. In cases of insufficient aortic | Some investigators have supposed the nuclei to be aetive agents in capil- valves a double blowing murmur may be heard, the first being | contraction ; but more probably the cell substance is the seat of larics. due to the rush of blood into the vessel caused by the ventricular change. Oxygen causes the nuclei to swell, whilst carbonic acid contraction, and the second by the flowing back of the blood into | has the opposite effect. Roy and Graham Brown attach mueh im- the heart during diastole. Comp. p. 106 below. portance to the active contractility of the capillaries as regulating

Japillary Capillary Circulation.—The circulation in the capillaries may be | the distribution of blood, now contracting, now relaxing, according

‘irewla- readily studied by placing under the microscope any transparent ion, membrane containing vessels, such as the web of a frog’s foot, the mesentery, lung, or tongue of a frog, the tail of a fish or a tadpole, the wing of a bat, the third eyelid of the pigeon or fowl, the liver of a frog or a newt, the mucous membrane of the inner surface of the human lip, or the conjunctiva of the eyeballs and eyelids. Under

to the needs of the tissues in their vicinity. Elasticity is also a characteristic of the capillary walls.

The arrangement of the capillaries in an organ or tissue is adapted Arrange- to its functional activity. Where there is great functional activity ment of there is a rich plexus of capillaries, and in the converse case the capil- converse is also true. Contrast, for example, the capillary supply laries.

favourable conditions the following phenomena may clearly be noticed. (1) The diameter of the finest capillaries is such as to per- mit the passage of corpuscles in single file only, and it may vary from 3000 10 ¢x,455 Of aninch. (2) The average length is about 2; of an mech. (3) The number varies according to the degree of activity of the tissue, being numerous where nutritive processes are active, as in the liver and muscles. (4) They form networks or anastomoses, the form and arrangement of which are determined by the tissue elements. (5) In the smaller arterioles and venules, and in the capillaries, the current is continuous and there is no pulse. Owing to the elasticity of the larger vessels the intermittent movement of the blood caused by each ventricular contraction is in the capillaries transformed into a continuous flow. (6) In some of the larger vessels the current is more rapid than in others of equal calibre: that is to say, it is more rapid in small arteries than in small veins. (7) The current appears to have a uniform velocity in all ultimate capillaries ofthe same size. (8) Sometimes a slight acceleration of the rapidity, even in the smallest vessels, may be observed to follow each cardiac beat. (9) In a vessel larger than an ultimate capillary, so large as to permit the passage of several coloured corpuscles abreast, these may be seen travelling with

great apparent velocity in the centre of the stream, whilst the colourless corpuscles move more slowly and with a rolling motion next the walls of the tube, in a layer of plasma talled Poiseuille's space. The coloured corpuscles also remain sepa- Yate from each other, and do not exhibit any tendency to adhere together or stick to the walls of the vessels, whereas the colourless corpuscles do both, more especially after the membrane has been ot for some time to the air, so as to excite the early stages of Intammation. Prof. D. J. Hamilton has shown that the nearer a Suspended body approaches the specific gravity of the liquid in which it is immersed the more it tends to keep in the centre of the stream, and he states that the reason why the coloured corpuscles keep the centre and the colourless the sides of the stream is that the specific gravity of the former is the same or slightly greater than the blood plasm, whilst that of the colourless corpuscles is less. (10) If the calibre of an ultimate capillary be marked at the beginning of an observation, and again some time afterwards, it will frequently be noticed that it has become narrower or wider, indicating that contractility is one of the properties of capillaries. (11) The velocity 18 greater in the pulmonary than in the systemic capillaries. (12)

he phenomenon known as diapedesis, or migration of the white blood corpuscles, first described by Waller in 1846, is readily seen m the mesentery of the frog after inflammation has been excited

in cartilage with that of muscle, or that of the grey matter of the nerve centres with that of the white matter (see Paysiouocy, vol. xix. p. 23 sqg.). But, in addition, the distribution of capillaries always corresponds to the intimate structural arrangements of the tissue or organ. So precisely is this the case that a good histologist is able to identify the organ from an injected preparation showing the vessels, although none of the ultimate histological elements of the organ or tissue are to be seen. In muscle, for example, the capillaries exist in the form of elongated meshes; in connective: tissue, such as is found beneath the skin, in an irregular network ; in the papille of the skin, in loops; and to form the glomeruli of the kidney in close reticulations (see NuTRITION, vol. xvii. p. 673, fig. 5).

The movement in the capillaries is due to the force of the heart, Attract- Some have supposed that ive in- it is supplemented by an attractive influence exerted by the tissues fluence (vis a fronte) ; and the statement is supported by the observation oftissues,

as modified by the vessels (vis a tergo).

that, when there is an increased demand for blood owing to active nutritional changes, there is an increase in the amount of blood flowing to the part, such as occurs, for example, in the mammary gland during lactation, and in the growth of the stag's horn. Sueh an attractive influence on the part of the tissues is quite conceivable as a force assisting in the inward flow of blood, acting along with capillarity ; but its amount is infinitesimally small in comparison with the force exerted by the heart. The force of the heart is sufficient to drive the blood through the capillaries into the veins.

When capillaries are examined in a transparent membrane of a Capillary Owing to the pulse,

living animal no pulse-like movement is visible. elasticity of the vessels the pulse-wave has been almost, if not quite, extinguished, and what might have remained of it is destroyed by the great resistance offered by the numerous capillaries. |: If these and the arterioles be widely dilated, a pulse may appear in the veins, as occurs when the vaso-dilator fibres of the chorda tym- pani nerve are stimulated, causing a pulse-like movement in the veins of the sub-maxillary gland (see PuystoLoey, vol. xix. p. 30). By increasing the extra-vascular pressure pulsations may occur in the capillaries (Roy and Graham Brown). 'The well-known throb- bing in the finger when eonstricted by an india-rubber band and the throbbing of inflammatory swellings are examples of pulsation in capillaries.

Venous Circulation.—The walls of the veins are thinner, less Venous They circula-

contain both elastic and contractile tissue, though to a smaller ex- tion.

elastic, and more distensible than the walls of the arteries.

XXIV. — 14

Oeea- sional pulse in veins.

Venous sounds.

Prime factors influen- cing cir- culation,

106

tent than the arteries. Numerous anastomoses exist between veins and even between superficial and deep veins, so that if the flow of blood be obstructed in one direction it readily finds a passage in another. he circulation in the veins depends (1) on inequality of blood-pressure, the pressure being much less in the veins than in the arteries ; (2) on muscular action compressing the veins, and thus, in eonsequence of the valves found in many veins opening towards the heart, forcing on the blood in the direction of that organ ; (8) on the movements of respiration, —inspiration, as already seen, favouring the flow of blood in the great veins towards the heart ; and (4) on the suction-like action of the right auricle, and in the case of the lungs that of the left auricle, drawing the blood towards the heart. During venesection, muscular action increases the flow of blood from the divided vein; hence the use of the barber's pole, which was grasped by the patient during bleeding by the barber-surgeon of old. The flow of blood in veins is continu- ous, or nearly so; when, therefore, a vein is cut, it does not spurt" as an artery does, but it " wells out " in a stream.

There is normally no pulse in veins ; but sometimes a pulse may be observed in the veins of the neck, isochronous with the auricular systole, when there is an obstruction to the passage of blood from the right auricle into the right ventricle. Pulse-tracings (fig. 21) taken in these circumstances are very similar to those of the eardiae impulse. In this tracing the part a represents the right auricular contraction. During the systole of the right ventricle the tricuspid valve closes, and, if it be insufficient,—that is, if it does not close properly,—a positive wave is transmitted along the superior vena cava to the jugular (dc in the pulse-tracing). The closure of the pulmonary is indicated at e. During the

diastole of the right auricle and ventricle the blood flows to the heart and the curve descends, f. It has also been pointed out by Fricdreich that a pulse in the jugular vein does not necessarily mean insufficiency of the tri- cuspid valve but a weakened condition of the valve in the jugular vein itself, as the pulse will not be propagated into the jugular, even in cases of insuffi- ciency of the tricuspid valve, if the jugular valve be perfect. If there is great obstruction at the mitral orifice, a venous pulse may also be observed, which }, is associated with engorgement of the right auricle. || Sometimes a pulse in the veins occurs when there is . such rigidity from atheroma in the walls of the great Fic. 21.—Trac- vessels as to destroy the elastic influence of these ing of venous parts, and at the same time such a degree of dilata- eee ea pe tion of the arterioles and capillaries as to admit of the tricuspid the onward propulsion of the movement caused by valve. (Fried- the heart's contraction. Lastly, a pulse may occur Teh) when the blood-pressure rises and falls suddenly, as in insufficiency of the aortic valves, and when the arterioles are much dilated. Towards the close of life, when the heart is feeble and effusion may be taking place into the pericardium, a venous pulse may be observed.

If a stethoscope be placed at the root of the neck above the collar bones, and on the right side in particular, a whistling, rushing, or blowing sound will be heard. 'This is the bruit de diable, familiar to physicians. If heard without pressure being made by the stetho- scope it is abnormal, as it occurs in eonditions of anemia from almost any cause; but it may be heard in a healthy person when pressure is applied and when the head is turned to the opposite side. It is held to be due to the vibration of the blood in rushing from the contracted portion of the common jugular vein into the more dilated part of this vessel. During the auricular diastole and during inspiration it is more marked, as the blood then flows more rapidly in the veins towards the heart.

Phenomena of General Circulation.

Having described the structure and functions of the organs con- cerned in the circulation,—namely, heart, arteries, eapillaries, and veins,—we are ina position to consider the phenomena of the circula- tion asa whole. Consider the organs of the circulation as a closed system of tubes, over-

filled with blood ; when the tubes are in a state of rest, it is evident that, if the blood be uniformly diffused and under the same pressure, it will remain motionless and 1n equilibrium. When the pressure is changed at any point, as occurs when the left ventricle contracts and throws blood into the arterial system the blood will move from the part where the pressure is higher to where it is lower; in other words, there will be circulation as a consequence of the difference of pressure. When the heart stops beating, the blood continues to flow more and more slowly until the difference of pressure is equalized, and then there is no circulation. Each stroke of the heart throws as much blood into the arteries as flows into the heart from the veins; the orifices of the veins at the heart are more distensible than the beginnings of the arteries, and consequently the arterial pressure rises more rapidly than the venous pressure diminishes, and thus the beating of the heart raises the mean pressure throughout the arterial system. The circulation is therefore influenced by two factors,—(1) the

heart, as regards number, strength, and volume of beats; and (2) the amount of resistance in the arterioles. Modifications of these influences are the pressure and the velocity of the blood.

As the blood is cireulating through the vessels under

sion, the existence of which is shown by the jet of blood whieh spurts in

out on the puncture of an artery, and the amount of which is indi-vegsely,

cated by the height to which the jet is propelled. An instrument for measuring this pressure, termed a kymograph, has been devised by Ludwig. But this apparatus, owing to the inertia of the mass of mercury, —the medium used,—can only register mean_blood- pressure, and the more delicate variations escape notice. Fiek in 1864 attempted to register these smaller fluctuations by means of a curved spring-kymograph, consisting of a hollow spring, which is made to oscillate by variations of pressure communicated to the interior. Small portions of a tracing taken

with the mercurial manometric kymograph of Ludwig are shown in fig. 22. From this

rol | A Tt TT fal ETT ah I Paaee cence eruauNeTe BCE nw CCE CEL

Fic. 22.—Mercurial kymographic tracing from carotid of dog, showing form of curve ona large scale. The figures on the left represent mm. of mercury. (Marey.)

it will be observed that there is (1) an increase and diminution of

blood-pressure with each eardiac beat, as is shown in the smaller

curves, and (2) an increase and diminution produced by respiratory movements, the increase occurring chicfly during inspiration and the decrease chiefly during expiration, as is indicated by the larger waves. It is evident also that all the smaller curves have the same general character, and that they reveal nothing as to varia- tion in pressure during individual beats. To show such variations,

Fick's kymograph must be used, when a tracing will be obtained

in which slight oscillations of pressure in the down-stroke of each

separate beat may be observed. By employing the different forms of kymograph the following conclusions have been arrived at.

(a) Arterial Presswre.—(1) The pressure diminishes from the heart Arterial to the capillaries. (2) It attains its maximum in the ventricle at pressure.

the moment of systole, and its minimum in the auricle at the moment of diastole, at which time also the pressure in the auricles and in the great veins may be negative, that is, below atmospheric pressure. (8) The mean blood-pressure in the large arteries of large mammals and of man is equal to that of a mercurial column 5°5 to 6°38 inches in height. (4) The blood-pressure in various animals has been ascertained to be as follows, the results being expressed in terms of a column of mercury of the

indicated number of inches in height. Carotid of horse, 6°34; carotid of dog, 5°89 (Poiseuille). Carotid of horse, 4°8 to 8°42; carotid of dog, 5°89 ; carotid of goat, 4°64 to 5°31; carotid of rabbit, 3°54; carotid of fowl, 3°46 to 6°73; aorta of frog, '86 to 1°14 ; gill artery of pike, 1°38 to 3°3 (Volkmann). Carotid of dog, 512 to 7°48 (Ludwig). Carotid of calf, 6°97; carotid of sheep, 6°65; carotid of goose, 6°38 ; carotid of stork, 6°34; brachial artery of pigeon, 6°57 ; carotid of cat, 5°9; brachial artery of man during operation, 4°33 to 4°72 (Faivre). Anterior tibial artery of boy, 3°93 to 6°83 (E. Albert). It no doubt varies even in animals of the same species. (5) The arterial pressure at any given point undergoes periodic variations, inereasing at the instant of ventricular systole and diminishing during diastole; they are most marked in the arteries near the heart. (6) These periodic variations may be observed in the intermittent spurting of an artery when it is punctured. (7) It is necessary to distinguish between the mean arterial pressure at any point of an artery and the mean pressure of the blood in the whole arterial system, which can only be obtained by taking the mean of the pressures in many different arteries at various distances from the heart. (8) The mean arterial pressure depends directly on the quantity of blood in the arterial system, and consequently on the total calibre of the system, so that any diminution of calibre, produced mechanically or by nervous influences, will increase the mean arterial pressure. (9) The mean arterial pressure increases with the energy of the beats of the heart. (10) The blood-pressure becomes greater with increased and acceler- ated action of the heart, sometimes with plethora, and after an increase in the amount of blood, such as occurs after a full meal or after transfusion of blood, whilst it becomes smaller during dimin- ished or enfeebled action of the heart, in anemia, and after heemor- rhage or excretions from the blood by the skin, kidneys, or bowels

/(Landois). (11) The pressure is affected by the degree of contrac-

tion or of dilatation of the blood-vessels, according as they are influenced by the nervous system. (12) The pressure is increased in cases of sclerosis or hardening of the arterial walls, in lead poisoning, after injection of ergotin (which contracts the small arterioles) or of digitalis (which acts on the heart), where there is granular or contracted kidney, and in cardiac

hypertrophy with dilatation. And (13) the pressure is diminished in fever, in chlorotic anemia, in phthisis, and by severe hemorrhage.

the influ- Blood- | ence of the action of the heart, it exerts a certain pressure or ten- pressure

Venous

Telocity f blood,

*esults * ex.*

to 'locity,

Capillary pressure. has not been directly measured.

sriment

VTA >ecUV LAR SB YS TEM

(0) Venous Pressure.—(1) In the veins ncar the heart the pressure

pressure, is only one twentieth to one-tenth of that of the corresponding

*arteries. (2) During auricular diastole the pressure in the veins near the heart may become negative (= —°0039 inch of mercury). (3) There are no periodic variations of pressure in the veins as in the arteries, except in the great venous trunks in the neck and near the heart, where there is a diminution of pressure during auricular diastole and an increase during auricular systole. (4) Great activity of the heart diminishes venous, while 1t increases arterial pressure. (5) The pressure increases in the veins according to their distance from the heart: thus, in the external facial vein of the sheep it is equal to a column of mercury '12 inch in height ; in the trachial to a column '16 inch high; in branches of the trachial, °35 inch; in the crural vein, *45 (H. Jacobson). (6)*

. Plethora increases venous pressure, whilst anemia diminishes it.

(7) Inspiration causes in the great veins near the heart an increase in pressure, whilst expiration diminishes it; but the respiratory movements 'do not affect the venous stream in peripheral veins" (Stirling). (7) Changes in the position of the limbs affect venous pressure hydrostatically : thus, elevation of the extremities favours the flow of blood towards the heart ; but, if the heart hangs down- wards, the face becomes turgid, as the outflow by the veins is retarded. (8) Gravity favours the emptying of descending and hinders the emptying of ascending veins, so that the pressure be- comes less in the former and greater in the latter. (9) As already stated, muscular movement by compressing the veins, aided by the mechanism of the valves, favours the flow of blood towards the heart, and thus increases the pressure in these vessels.

(c) Capillary Presswre.—For obvious reasons capillary pressure Von Kries has measured the amount of pressure necessary to occlude the capillarics in an area abounding in these vessels, such as the skin at the root of the nail on the terminal phalanx or on the ear in man, and on the mucous membrane of the gum in rabbits. He found the pressure in the capillaries of the hand, when the hand is raised, to be equal to '95 inch of mercury, when it hangs down, 2°13, in the ear "79, and in the gum 1:26. Roy and Graham Brown also measured the pressure necessary to close the capillaries in the web of the frog's foot, in the tongue and mesentery of the frog, and in the tail of newts and small fishes. It is evident that any condition favouring the afflux of blood to a capillary area will increase the pressure in the capil- laries, such as the dilatation of the small arterioles conveying blood to an area of capillaries, contraction of the venules carrying off the blood from it, or any increase of pressure in the arterioles or in the venules. The arrangement and position of the capil- lary network must affect the pressure : the pressure in the capillaries of the glomeruli of the kidney must, for in- stance, be greater than in those of the skin, as in the former position there is increased resistance owing to the

*double set of capillaries (see Nurnri- Seas ee ce TION, vol. xvii. p. 684). Finally, any *19- 29.—Viagram 8 ig 4 change in the es of Petra iba of pare a ancuae ey e er the wall of 'the capillary itself will laries; 4; veins;*

5, auricle; A to affect the pressure. C, line of presure in great. arter- _ The general facts regarding pressure {f° in" a seas ee in arteries, capillaries, and veins are veins. The dotted lines indicate eed by fig, 23, eyes desing beeper ae

arious attempts have been made 0 (4) ane Clasto'e (ah). oe

. – unl-

by Volkmann, Vierordt, Ludwig and formasfaras theaurcle B, where Dogiel, Hering, and Chauveau and it is negative during auricular Lortet to measure the velocity of the diastole. (Beaunis.) circulation, and special instruments have been invented for that purpose, In 1850 Volkmann constructed the hemadromometer ; this was followed by the hematachometer of Vierordt in 1858 and by the hamadromograph of Chauveau and Lortet in 1867. These instruments are not now much used, having been superseded by the stromuhr (current-clock) or rheometer of Ludwig and Dogiel, which was invented in 1867. This instrument measures the amount of blood which passes through an artery in a given time. It con- sists of two glass bulbs of equal capacity communicating by a tube. One of the bulbs is filled with oil, which is expelled by the blood into the second (empty) bulb. The instrument is then reversed on its socket so that the bulb containing the blood is farthest from the heart, and the former process is repeated. From the time occupied in filling and refilling the velocity of the blood in the artery of supply can be calculated.

he following figures give, in inches per second, the velocities of the blood in different vessels. Carotid of dog, 8°07 to 14:06 ; Carotid of horse, 12°05; maxillary of horse, 9°13; metatarsal of horse, 2:2 (Volkmann). Mean velocity in carotid of dog, 10°28 ; Im carotid of dog at end of diastole, 8°46; at end of systole, 11°69 ;

107

in crural artery of dog at end of diastole, 5°51; at end of systole, 9°41 (Vierordt). During systole in carotid of horse, 9°84; at time of dicrotic wave, 8°66; at end of diastole, 5°9 (Chauveau, Bertolus, Laroyenne). In carotid of rabbits, from 3°7 to 8-9; in carotid of dog, weighing 51-2 tb,

poisoned with morphia, from 13°74 to 28°86 ; in carotid of another dog, weighing 26°69 Ib, from 9°57 to 20°47; in carotid of dog, weighing 7°85 tb, in which the sympathetic nerve had been cut, from 8°03 to 18°35; and in carotid of another dog, weighing 6°97 Ib, poisoned with morphia, from 13°35 to 18-03 (Dogiel). The velocity in the capillaries cannot be directly mea- sured. E. H. Weber gives it at 032 inch per second in capillarics of mammals and °021 in those of the frog. Vierordt gives the velocity in man as '024 to '035 inch per second. Volkmann states that the flow of blood in mammalian capillaries is five hundred times slower than in the aorta. Donders asserts that the velocity of the current in the smaller arterioles is ten times faster than in the capillaries. When the current reaches the veins it is accelcrated in consequence of diminished resistance, but even in the larger venous trunks it is '5 to '75 times less than in the corresponding arteries. The following general conclusions may be drawn. (1) The velocity of the blood is in inverse ratio to the total calibre of the vessels: rapid in the aorta, it diminishes as we recede from it. (2) Each systole is followed by an increase in the velocity of the blood in the larger vessels. (3) In the smaller arteries, capillaries, and smaller veins the velocity is uniform and constant. (4) The velocity increases in the venous system as we approach the heart. (5) In the large arteries the movements of inspiration retard the velocity, whilst those of expiration increase it. (6) In the large veins the movement of respiration, and also the suction action of the auricle during diastole, cause a rhythmic increase and diminution of the velocity. The explanation of these variations in velocity is obvious. As the arteries pass outwards they give off branches, the united calibre of which is, with rare exceptions, greater than that of the parent vessel. Thus, as Kiiss expresses it, the arterial system may be regarded as a cone, the base of which ends in the capillaries, whilst the summit is at the aorta ; and the venous system is a second cone, the base being also at the capillaries and the apex at the right auricle, Vierordt states that the sectional area of the capillaries is to that of the aorta as 800 to 1; but, as the sectional area of the venous orifices at the heart is greater than that of the arterial orifices, the ratio of the sectional area of the capillaries to that of the veins at the heart has been stated as 400 tol. The increased sectional area retards the velocity, and the velocity of the blood-current in sections of the vessels at various points is inversely as their calibre. The velocity of the blood does not depend on the mean blood-

pressure, and, as was pointed out by Ludwig and Dogiel, the velocity in any section of a vessel depends on (1) the vis a tergo (i.e., action of the heart) and (2) the amount of resistance at the periphery.

It is important to distinguish between the rapidity of the blood Duration current and the time oceupied by a blood corpuscle in re a of circu- eft lation.

complete circuit through the heart and vessels, say, from the ventricle to the left ventricle again. Attempts have been made to measure the time, starting from the jugular vein. Hering injected into that vein a few drops of a 2 per cent. solution of ferro-cyanide of potassium, and then examined the blood of the opposite jngnlar every five seconds by testing with perchloride of iron,—the forma- tion of Prussian blue indicating the moment when the ferro-cyanide made its appearance in the blood of the jugular after having made a tour of the circulation. Vierordt modified the method by ex- amining the blood received from the jugular each half second. The duration of the circulation as thus determined for various animals is as follows,—horse, 31°5 seconds ; dog, 167; rabbit, 7°79 ; hedge- hog, 7°61; cat, 6°69; goose, 10°86; duck, 10°64; buzzard, 6°73 ; and common fowl, 5°17 seconds. Vierordt also made the discovery that in most animals the duration of the circulation is equal to the time in which the heart makes about twenty-seven beats. These facts are illustrated in the following table :—

7 Tat Pulse Beats | Number of Pulsations Animal. Weight of body, per Minute. | in the Circulation. 7°83 02, 320 23°7 46°28 ,, 240 26°8 82°13 ,, 189 23°8 50°59 ,, 220 28°5 20:28 tb 96 26°77 83°78 ,, 55 28°8 46°98 oz. 854 30°5 24-44 ,, 282 81°6 46-7 168 | 28°9 99°54 4, wt | 26°0 |

It may also be shown by another method that a volume of blood equal to that in the whole body passes through the heart in about thirty pulsations. Taking the quantity of blood in the body as pea Mrs of the total weight, a man weighing 140 Ib contains 112 tb, or 5292 grammes, of blood, which represent in capacity 5802 cubic centimetres. Each beat of the heart throws 172 cubic centi- metres into the aorta ; therefore the equivalent of the total quantity

Volume of organs.

108

of blood in the body passes through the heart in about 30 pulsa- tions. Taking the pulse beat at 72 per minute, it follows that the duration of the circulation is about 26 seconds. ; It has been satisfactorily proved by Mosso, Von Basch, Dogiel, and Francois Franck that there is a slight change in the volume of any distensible organ with each beat of the heart. Mosso devised the plethysmograph,! an instrument by which the following results have been obtained. (1) The volume of an organ is not fixed, but varies according to the amount of blood contained in it. (2) Its volume changes with each cardiac pulsation, increasing when blood is forced into it and diminishing by the emptying of the capillaries

VYVABCULAR OYSTARM

mercurial column of 1°17 inches, in the cat to one of °69 inch, and in the rabbit °47 inch, or about three times less in the dog, four times less in the rabbit, and five times less in the cat than- the pressure in the aorta. Hering passed simultaneously a tube through the muscular walls of each ventricle of a calf, and the blood rose in the tube in the right ventricle 21 inches and in the left 33-4 inches (quoted by Landois and Stirling). Fick and Badoud found a pres- sure of 3°54 in the pulmonary artery of the dog, whilst the carotid pressure at the same time was 4°17 inches. The ratio of pulmonary to aortic pressure has been stated as 1 to 3 (Beutner and Marey) and as 2 to 5 (Goltz and Gaule).

into the veins. (3) Variations in the volume of one or more organs, say, by compression, or by the application of cold, or by the internal administration of substances which affect the calibre of blood- vessels, such as ergot, cause corresponding variations in the volume of other organs. (4) The pulsatile variations are very similar to the pulse-curve, and there are respiratory undulations correspond- ing to similar variations in blood-pressure tracings. (5) Movements

Next, it is important to note the peculiar physical conditions in Influenc| the chest during respiration. ‘As already shown (p. 102), the lungsofre- |

— are distended in consequence of the positive pressure on their inner spiratio:) | surfaces being greater than the negative pressure on their outer in pul- pleural surfaces. But when the lungs are distended by a full in- monary spiration they exert an elastic force (termed elastic recoil or "' elastic circula- traction') amounting to about 1°18 inches of mercury. Outside the tion,

of the limb cause diminution in volume, as was shown by Glisson in 1677, in consequence of acceleration of the venous current. (6) Mental exercise and sleep cause a diminution in the volume of the limb (Mosso). (7) So delicately attuned is the organism that music has been observed to cause a rise and fall in the tracings (Dogiel).

lungs, in the cavity of the chest, the surface of the heart and vessels is subjected to a pressure which is the difference between atmo- spheric pressure (29°92 inches) and the "elastic traction" (1°18 inches) or 28°74 inches. It is clear that the more the lungs are distended the greater is the elastic traction, and consequently the

Distribu- The blood is distributed throughout the body in varying propor- | less the pressure on the outer surface of the vessels. The thin- tion of tions, according to the requirement of any set of organs at a par- | walled pulmonary veins yield more during a deep inspiration, thus blood. ticular time. When any tissue or organ is active, there is a deter- | diminishing pressure, than the thicker-walled pulmonary artery,

mination of blood towards it, the amount being increased from 30 to 50 per cent.: thus, during digestion the mucous membrane of the stomach and intestinal organs is richly supplied with blood. Increased muscular velocity is always accompanied by increased vascularity ; but, whilst this is the rule, there are organs, such as the heart, the muscles of respiration, and nervous centres like those in the medulla oblongata, in which there is a condition of continuous activity, and in which there is a uniform vascularity. Seeing that the activity of certain organs varies at different times, it follows that, whilst some organs are congested, others are at rest. In the child there appears to be a different distribution of blood from what obtains in the adult. The heart of a child is relatively small up to puberty, while the vessels are relatively large; after puberty the reverse is the case.

Arterial pressure is less in the child than in the adult, whilst the pressure in the pulmonary circulation is larger in the child than in the adult (Beneke). Attempts have been made to estimate the distribution of blood after death. Ranke states that one-fourth of the total blood is in the muscles, one-fourth in the liver, one-fourth in the heart and vessels, and the remaining fourth in the rest of the organs.

Special Forms of Circulation.

whereby the flow of blood from the capillaries of the lung by the pulmonary veins to the left auricle is favoured. On the other hand, expiration by increasing the pressure tends to retard the flow of blood. Further, the velocity of the stream of blood is accelerated in the pulmonary vessels by inspiration and retarded by expiration. As regards the influence of the movements of the lung on the calibre of the pulmonary capillaries and smaller vessels, experi- ment has shown that the blood-vessels of the lungs containing air and distended are wider than those of collapsed lungs. Suppose an elastic bag having minute tubes in its walls to be dilated in a free space, the lumen of these tubes will be diminished ; but, if it be placed in a closed space, as in a wide glass bottle, and if the pres- sure on its outer surface be diminished by removing air from the space between the bag and the side of the bottle, the bag will dis- tend and the lumen of the tubes will be increased. Thus it is evident that inspiration, by increasing the calibre of the pulmonary vessels, draws blood towards the lungs, and the movements of the lungs become an effective force in carrying on the pulmonary circu- lation. The velocity of the blood is greater in the pulmonary than in the systemic capillaries, and greater in the pulmonary veins than in the pulmonary arteries. The great degree of distensi- bility of the pulmonary vessels allows of frequent adjustments

Cranial. The cranial circulation has been already described under PHysIo- | peing made, so that, within limits, as much blood in a given time Loey, vol. xix. pp. 42-48. : se will pass through the pulmonar 'as through the systemic circula- Hepatic. The peculiarity of the portal circulation is that the blood passes | tion," This adjustment, a may be Sidhe t Aurind. For

Pulmon- ary.

through two sets of capillaries. Arterial blood is conveyed to the stomach, spleen, pancreas, and intestines by branches of the abdo- minal aorta. These branches divide and subdivide, terminating in a capillary plexus in the various organs above enumerated. From this plexus the radicles of the various veins spring, and they unite with each other into larger and larger trunks, until by the conflu- ence of the mesenteric veins with the splenic vein the portal vein is formed. The portal vein conveys the blood to the liver, where it divides into smaller and smaller branches constituting a plexus in the lobules of the liver. From this plexus spring the roots of the hepatic vein, which conveys the blood from the liver to the inferior vena cava (see NUTRITION, vol. xvii. p. 678). There are thus in the portal circulation two sets of capillaries,—one in the abdominal viscera and the other in the liver. Ligature of the portal vein causes distension of all the abdominal vessels and a highly congested state of the abdominal viscera, whilst the blood- pressure quickly falls, and the animal dies. So distensible are the abdominal vessels that they can contain nearly all the blood in the body. Blood from such congested vessels has toxic properties (Schiff and Lautenbach). The ventricular systole may send a pulse down 'the valveless inferior vena cava and cause a pulse in the liver. The liver swells with each systole and relaxes with each diastole of the heart.

The pulmonary artery, carrying venous blood, divides and sub- divides, and the smallest branches end in a plexus of capillarics on the walls of the air-cells of the lung. From this plexus the radicles of the pulmonary veins originate ; and finally the four portal veins, two from each lung, carry the arterialized blood to the left auricle. Considering the apparently small extent of the pulmonary as com- pared with the systemic circulation, and the fact that the two ventricles, of about equal capacity, empty themselves simultane- ously, it is clear that the pulmonary circulation presents many points of interest. In the first place, the pressure in the pulmon- ary artery is considerably less than that of the aorta. In 1850 it was determined by Ludwig and Beutner to be in the dog equal to a.

1 Figured in M'Kendrick's Physiology, p. 365, fig. 99.

example, violent muscular exertion hurries the blood along the veins to the right side of the heart, and by the right ventricle the blood is discharged into the pulmonary circulation. If morc arrives than can be transmitted to the left auricle by the pulmonary veins in a given time, the pulmonary capillaries become engorged, breath- ing becomes quick and possibly irregular, the right side of the heart becomes engorged, signs of venous congestion appear in the

flushed face and turgid veins, and perhaps the pulmonary capillaries _

may rupture, causing hemorrhage from the lung. The weaker the muscular structure of the heart the more likely is this to occur. Hence the breathlessness in many cardiac affections, aggravated by muscular exertion, more especially in ascending a stair or hill.

In the mature feetus the fluid brought from the placenta by the Fetal.

umbilical vein is partly conveyed at once to the vena cava ascendens by means of the ductus venosus and partly flows through two trunks that unite with the portal vein, returning the blood from the intes- tines into the substance of the liver, thence to be carried back to the vena cava by the hepatic vein. Having thus been transmitted through the placenta and the liver, the blood that enters the vena cava is purely arterial in character ; but, being mixed in the vessels with the venous blood returned from the trunk and lower extremities, it loses this character in some degree by the time that it reaches the heart. In the right auricle, which it then enters, it would also be mixed with the venous blood brought down from the head and upper extremities by the descending vena cava were it not that a provision exists to impede (if it does not entirely prevent) any further admixture. This consists in the arrangement of the Eusta- chian valve, which directs the arterial current (that flows upwards through the ascending vena cava) into the left side of the heart, through the foramen ovale,—an opening in the septum between the auricles,—whilst it directs the venous current (that is being returned by the superior vena cava) into the right ventricle. When the ventricles contract, the arterial blood contained in the left is pro- pelled into the ascending aorta, and supplies the branches that proceed to the head and upper extremities before it

undergoes any further admixture, whilst the venous blood contained in the right

*“fects pon cir- uation * stimu-*

ting wrious arves.

on-

Spira- TY un- ulations

otor utre,

hE SEs ig gy = = heen

ith vaso-

yentricle is forced into the pulmonary artery, and thence through the ductus arteriosus—branching off from the pulmonary artery before it passes to the two lungs—into the deseending aorta, mingling with the arterial currents which that vessel previously conveyed, and thus supplying the trunk and lower extremities with a mixed fluid. A portion of this is eonveyed by the umbilieal arteries to the placenta, in whieh it undergoes the renovating influence of the maternal blood, and from whieh it is returned in a state of purity. In consequence of this arrangement the head and upper extremities are supplied with pure blood returning from the placenta, whilst the rest of the body receives blood whieh is partly venous. This is probably the explanation of the fact that the head and upper extremities are most developed, and from their weight oecupy the inferior position in the uterus. At birth the eourse of the eireula- tion undergoes ehanges. As soon as the lungs are distended by the first inspiration, a portion of the blood of the pulmonary artery is diverted into them and undergoes aeration ; and, as this portion increases with the full activity of the lungs, the ductus arteriosus gradually shrinks, and its eavity finally beeomes obliterated. At the same time the foramen ovale is elosed by a valvular fold, and thus the direet communieation between the two aurieles is cut off. When these changes have been aceomplished, the eireulation, which was before earried on upon the plan

of that of the higher reptiles, becomes that of the eomplete warm-blooded animal, all the blood which has been returned in a venous state to the right side of the heart being transmitted through the lungs before it ean reach the left side or be propelled from its arterial trunks (Allen Thomson). After birth the umbilical arteries shrink and close up and beeome the lateral ligaments of the bladder, while their upper parts remain as the superior vesical arteries. The umbilical vein becomes the ligamentum teres. The duetus venosus also shrinks and finally is closed. 'The foramen ovale is also closed, and the ductus arteriosus shrivels and becomes the ligamentum arteriosum.

The Innervation of Blood- Vessels.

This has already been described under PuysioLoey (vol. xix. . 30); but there are several points of interest that ean only be thoroughly understood after studying the general eonditions affect- ing, and the mode of measuring, the pressure of the blood. Stimu- lation of the pneumogastrie nerve in the neek slows the rate of the heart-beat, and, if the stimulation be strong, arrests the heart in a state of diastole. Suppose a kymograpli to be eonnected with the carotid in the neek of a rabbit deeply under the influence of chloral so as to be quite unconscious of pain ; if then one of the vagi in the neek be stimulated, the blood-pressure curve at once falls ; and on removing the stimulation it rises to its former height by a few leaps and bounds. Whilst this occurs in the arteries, the venous pressure rises in consequenee of the flow of blood into them from the arteries. But the pressure may be influeneed by another method. As was pointed out by Ludwig and Owsjannikow, a centre exists in the medulla oblongata (vaso-motor eentre) whence influences emanate that tend to keep the vessels in a more or less contracted condition. If this centre be injured, the smaller blood- vessels throughout the body dilate,—in short, they are paralysed,—and receive more blood, and consequently the pressure in the larger vessels at once falls. This vaso-motor centre in turn can be influ- enced by impressions reaching it from the periphery. This was clearly proved by Cyon in 1866, when he discovered the function of the depressor nerve, a small nerve (the superior cardiac) originat- ing in the rabbit from the superior laryngeal and from the pneumo- gastric nerve, but in many animals blended with the pneumogastric nerve. Stimulation of the distal

end of this nerve produces no effeet; but stimulation of the cephalic end eauses a great fall of blood pressure and a diminution in the frequeney of the pulse (see Puysiotocy, vol. xix. p. 29 and fig. 11). Similar depressor filaments exist in the trunk of the vagus below the origin of the Superior eardiac nerve (depressor of Cyon), in the nerves coming from the lungs, in the great auricular nerve, in the tibial, and in all probability in all sensory nerves. Further, it may be influenced by nerve fibres the stimulation of which excites the eentre, causing arise in pressure (pressor nerves). Such filaments have been experi- mentally demonstrated to exist in the superior and inferior laryngeal herves, in the trigeminus, and in the cervieal sympathetie. The vaso- motor centre is therefore under the influence of two antagonistie sets of impulses,—one stimulating it, eausing constriction of the smaller vessels and a rise of arterial pressure, the other inhibiting it, eausing dilatation of the smaller vessels together with a fall of pressure.

But this is not all, On cxamining a blood-pressure tracing it is

-xion of seen that the arterial pressure is influenced by the movements of

Tespiration, the larger waves corresponding to these movements. To aseertain precisely how much of the wave corresponds to inspira- tion and how much to expiration, suppose a blood pressure taken from the carotid artery, whilst at the same time arrangements are made for rceording simultaneously the variations of intra-thoracic pressure. It is then easily seen that, when expiration begins and the expiratory pressure rises the blood pressure rises, while when Mspiration begius both fall. Inspiration removes pressure from the

are WL AaAk, &£ YS fT fh M

109

outer surface of the vessels and thus allows the walls both of the great veins and of the aorta to distend; but the thin-walled veins yield to a greater extent than the thiek-walled aorta. Consequently during inspiration the blood tends to accumulate in the great veins aud in the right side of the heart and less eseapes by the aorta, and the blood

pressure in the aorta falls. On the other hand, during expiration the blood pressure rises, owing to the opposite set of conditions. Roughly speaking therefore, during inspiration blood pressure falls, whilst during expiration it rises. But a eareful ex- amination of the eurves shows that they do not exaetly coincide as to their maxima and minima. Thus the blood pressure rises before the rise of expiratory pressure ; or, in other words, during the first part of inspiration there is a fall of pressure and during the seeond part a rise. This cannot be explaincd by the mechanical movements of the ehest wall, but is caused, partially at all events, by the action of the vaso-motor eentre. During the latter portion of the inspiratory period impulses pass from this eentre, causing eonstriction of the smaller vessels, and eonsequently the rise of arterial pressure observed during this time. Again, an examination of a blood-pressure tracing shows that during the fall of the respira- tory curve the smaller curves are larger and fewer in number than during the rise of the eurve. After section of the vagi this differenee disappears, and it can only therefore be explained by stating that during the first portion of the time of inspiration, and during the fall of arterial pressure, the cardio-inhibitory eentre also acts, slowing the beat of the heart. Another important fact showing that the respiratory undulations cannot be aceounted for by the mechanical movements of the chest wall is that they appear in a blood-pressure traeing taken during artificial respiration. When a canula is inserted into the trachea and air is forced into the chest by a bellows, it is evident that the mechanical conditions are not those of ordinary respiration. When air is forced in, inflating the lungs to eorrespond to inspiration, the intra-thoracic pressure is inereased instead of diminished as in ordinary respiration, and when the air is sucked out to correspond to expiration the intra-thoracie pressure is diminished instead of being inereased as in ordinary expiration; and still the respiratory eurves remain. If artificial respiration be suddenly stopped, the blood pressure quickly rises ; but this does not oeeur to nearly the same extent if the spinal cord be divided. In other words, the rise of blood pressure when arti- fieial respiration is arrested is due to stimulation of the vaso-motor centre in the medulla by the cireulation througli it of blood too highly venous owing to stoppage of the cireulation, as is proved by the fact that, if the influence of the vaso-motor centre be re- moved, the rise of blood pressure does not take place. Finally, if during artificial respiration both

vagi be eut so as to remove the influence of the eardio-inhibitory eentre, and respiration be stopped, the pressure will rise as already deseribed, and in a short time a series of undulations will appear in the blood-pressure tracing known as the Traube-Hering eurves,—a rising and falling of blood pressure not due to the action of the heart, as they eontinue even when a pump is substituted for that organ, nor to the movements of respiration, but to a " waxing and waning" of the activity of the vaso-motor centre itself, contracting and dilating the blood- vessels and thus influencing the peripheral resistance. To sum up, the circulation is affeeted by the nervous system—(1) by the inhibi- tory aetion of the vagi in restraining the aetivity of the heart ; (2) by the aeeelerating action of fibres in the sympathetic, stimulating the activity of the heart ; (3) by the aetion of the intrinsie eardiac ganglia affecting the heart directly ; (4) by the action of the vaso- motor eentre (vaso-eonstrietor nerves) in the medulla, tending to keep up a greater or less degree of constriction of the vessels; (5) by the action of vaso-dilator nerves inhibiting the vessels, allowing them to dilate in a manner similar to the cardio-inhibitory action of fibres in the vagi; (6) by the influence on the vaso-motor centre of impulses coming from the periphery,—pressor fibres stimulating it, depressor fibres inhibiting it; (7) by the diffusion of impulses in the medulla from the respiratory centres ; (8) by the interaction of the vaso-motor, respiratory, and eardio-inhibitory eentres in the medulla ; and (9) by rhythmic changes in the vaso-motor centre itself. See PuysioLocy, vol. xix. p. 28 sq.

Bibliography.—A copious list of works relating to the anatomy of the organs of the cireulation will be found in Quain's Anatomy, edited by Allen Thomson, E. A. Schafer, and George D. Thane, 9th ed., vol. ii. p. 916; and on the physiology of the eireulation in Beaunis's Physiologie Humaine, 2d ed., 1885, and in Landois and Stirling's Text-Book of Human Physiology, 2d ed., vol. i. p. 557. To this last able work, to A. Rollett's elaborate essay, " Physiologie der Blutbewegung," in Hermann's Handbuch der Physiologie, and to Prof. Michael Foster's Text-Book of Physiology, 4th ed., the author is specially indebted in the preparation of this article. As to the action of drugs and poisons on the eireulation, reference is made to Lauder Brunton's Yeat-Book of Pharmacology, &c., 2d ed., 1886. For a brief account of the historical development of our

knowledge of the cireulation, sce abstracts of lectures by the present writer, delivered before the Royal Institution, in British Medical Journal for 1883. (J. G. M.)

VASILKOFF, a district town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Kieff, is situated 22 miles by rail to the south-west of that city. Its 16,600 inhabitants support themselves chiefly by agriculture and the transport of merchandise ; there is also some manufacture of tobacco and soap.

Vasilkoff was founded in the 10th century, but laid waste during the Mongolian invasion. In 1320 it was taken by the Lithuanians, and later on by the Poles, under whom it remained until 1686, when it was annexed to Russia.

VASTO, a fortified town of Italy, in the province of Chieti, stands high on an olive-clad slope, about a inile from the Adriatic and 131 miles south-east from Ancona. Tt is still surrounded by its medizeval walls, and commands fine views extending to the Tremiti Islands and Monte Gargano, The cathedral, with a Gothic facade, has no special interest ; the municipal buildings contain a collec- tion of Roman antiquities and inscriptions. There are manufactures of earthenware, woollen cloth, and silk ; but the inhabitants are chiefly employed in the culture of the olive and in fishing. The population in 1881 was 9761 (commune 13,883).

Vasto, the Histontwm of the ancient geographers, was a flourish- ing municipal town uuder the Roman empire, as is shown by the numerous remains of theatres, baths, and other public edifices. It was, and still is, subject to severe earth tremors.

VATICAN COUNCIL. The Vatican Council is the first and only plenary council of the Latin Church held since the close of the Council of Trent in 1563. But it bears very slight resemblance to that assembly in the cir- cumstances of its origin, objects, and proceedings. The Council of Trent was all but forced upon the Papacy by the demands of the principal Catholic states of Europe, and by the religious and political necessities of the time. It was convened for the purposes of endeavouring to secure the

return of the Lutherans, Calvinists, and other revolted bodies to the Roman Church, and of applying stringent measures of reform to amend the numerous practical abuses and scandals which had mainly caused the revolt. And, while it failed conspicuously in the former of these objects, it did achieve a certain degree of success in the latter, by a variety of disciplinary enactments covering a large range of subjects, and was followed, in point of fact, by a marked improvement in clerical morals and diligence. The Vatican Council, contrariwise, originated with the Papacy alone, and was neither demanded nor desired by Roman Catholic Christendom. Its object was confined to securing the triumph of the hyper-Ultramontane school within the Roman obedience by establishing papal auto- cracy as divine and infallible; and it made no attempt whatever beyond a sterile discussion, not published in its Acts, to deal with any of the abuses and scandals which had either survived the Tridentine reforms or had sprung up since. While the Council of Trent did much to repair the damage done to the personal authority of the popes by the incidents of the " great schism " and the character of the pontifis who sat during the close of the 15th and the beginning of the 16th century, it left several questions concerning the source and extent of papal authority un- decided, which proved a fruitful cause of debate between the Gallican and Ultramontane schools of theology, the former minimizing the papal claims as far as is compatible with acceptance of the tenet of the Petrine privilege, and viewing the Papacy as a constitutional monarchy under strict limitations, the latter holding it to be an autocracy resting on a divine charter, and incapable of restraint on the part of its subjects. But the French Revolution, by breaking up the old Gallican Church, led to the substitu. tion of a largely Ultramontane episcopate in France under the concordat between Pius VII. and Napoleon I., and thereby to the permanent declension of the moderate school, while, on the other hand, a variety of causes brought

the Jesuits, recalled into corporate existence by the same Pius VII. in 1814, after forty years' suppression, again into the same position of chief influence in the Latin Church which they had occupied in the heyday of the counter-Reformation. They have always held steadily to the military

ideas of their founder, and have therefore unceasingly striven to centralize and concentrate ecclesi- astical authority, to remove constitutional limitations upon its exercise, and to make it prompt, unfaltering, and trenchant in action. Clearly, if the Papacy could be con- verted into an absolute monarchy, this end would be attained at a single stroke, because the mere fiat of the supreme pontiff would thenceforward suffice as warrant for all ecclesiastical action, thus dispensing with cumbrous and dilatory machinery of every kind; and his delegated authority would enable any person wielding it to act with similar efficacy and despatch.

With the accession of Pius IX. to the papal chair in 1846 a favourable opportunity for carrying out this pro- gramme presented itself, for, weak in character and wholly unversed in theological learning, while strongly holding the very highest views of his own prerogatives and eagerly receptive of everything which tended to exalt them further, he was exactly the instrument suited for its execution. Two experiments, to test at once how far he was prepared to go, and how far Latin Christendom was prepared to submit in the matter of decrees on faith and morals issuing from himself singly, with no previous conciliar examina- tion or decision, were tried in 1854 by the promulgation of the tenet of the Immaculate Conception and in 1864 by that of the Syllabus of Errors, The former of these met with little resistance, the latter with none, and it was therefore judged safe to proceed with the bolder and more far-reaching scheme which they but foreshadowed. Its success appeared to be almost a foregone conclusion ; for, not only could a compact and docile Italian majority be as surely reckoned on as it was at Trent, but the far larger number of Roman Catholic bishops all over the world had been virtually appointed by Pius IX. during his long pontificate, and that exclusively from the Ultramontane school. Nevertheless there was still a minority important enough to make some caution desirable in the earlier stages of the preliminaries, and the proposal to hold an cecumeni- cal council was first laid privately before the congregation of rites by the pope himself in December 1864, con- temporaneously with the issue of the Syllabus, and im- mediately afterwards before all the cardinals then at Rome, who were desired to give their opinions as to the oppor- tuneness of convoking the council at all and as to the subjects it should discuss if convoked.

Nineteen cardinals approved the proposal; two opposed it; and one remained neutral. In March 1865 a congregation of direction was formed to take further steps towards the desired end, and private communications were made to various bishops and to the nuncios at the different courts, who were asked to send competent theologians to take part in the preliminary congregations. Some communications were also made privately in 1866 to bishops of the Oriental rite. The first directly public intimation of the approaching council was made in June 1867, through a circular letter of Cardinal Caterini to the 500 bishops present in Rome at the 18th centenary festival of the martyrdom of St Peter and St Paul, inviting their reply to a schedule of inquiries. In September 1868 an invitation to attend was despatched to the Oriental bishops not in communion with Rome, and also to "Protestants and non-Catholics." But, as it was intended that no Oriental prelate should be admitted to a seat in the council till he had first made profession of the Roman Catholic system in its entirety, and as Pro- testants were merely to be referred to " experienced men "

Yaw C AN

to convince them of their errors, the insincere invitation niet with no acceptance whatever. The bull of convoca- tion was promulged on 29th June 1869, appointing 8th December 1869 as the day of meeting. A few days before this latter date, 27th November, Pius IX. issued the prief Afultiplices inter, prescribing the mode of conciliar procedure and effectually fettering the council from the outset, so that it had never even the shadow of freedom which ostensibly was allowed to the Tridentine synod. This brief consists of a preamble and ten chapters, containing, amongst much else, the following provisions. Any member desiring to bring forward a proposal had to deliver it privately in writing to a special committee named by the pope (of which there were six for various departments), and it should contain nothing foreign to the traditions of the Roman Church. Unless the committee passed it, no further action could be taken upon it. Strict secrecy as to the proceedings of the council, and even as to the opinions of particular members, was to be observed towards all outsiders. All new decrees and canons were to be discussed in preliminary congregations before the public sessions, drafts being

supplied some days previously, and those who desired to speak to the questions were obliged to give notice at least a day beforehand. Priority of speech was secured for these; if others desired to speak afterwards they had to obtain the permission of the presi- dents, all of whom were cardinals of the court party. If little or no debate arose, the draft decrees were to be officially formulated; if there were division of opinion, the question should be referred to the sub-committee (deputatio) corresponding to each congregation's subject of discussion, which should decide the matter if no further difficulty were raised. All the officers of the council were named directly by the pope, and in no case elected by the council itself, which was thus deprived of several conciliar rights held previously to be inherent and in- defeasible, and which had been exercised even at Trent.

The assemblage of the council was looked on with little favour by a large part of the Roman Catholic world, and in particular two German docunients attested the alarm it aroused. In April 1869 Prince Hohenlohe, Bavarian foreign minister, sent a circular letter to the European courts, warning them of the political dangers likely to ensue; and most of the German bishops, assembled at Fulda in September of that year, sent an address to the pope, anxiously deprecating the definition of papal infalli- bility which had been recommended in the Civilta Cattolica of 6th February 1869, to be made by the sum- Mary process of acclamation. This proposal drew forth two able books in opposition to the dogma,—one which appeared anonymously (Janus) in Germany, and Du Concile Général et de la Paix Religieuse, by Maret, bishop of Sura and dean of theology at the Sorbonne, published in France ; but they did not delay the measures being. taken for its declaration.

The council assembled punctually on the appointed day, 8th December 1869, and owing to the modern facilities of intercommunication it was by far the largest gathering of the kind in history, no fewer than 749 bishops, cardinals, abbots, and generals of orders being present,—a number aiterwards increased to 764,—and including nearly three- fourths of the whole Roman Catholic episcopate. Of these lt has been estimated that the minority opposed to the infallibility dogma amounted to at least 160, while in the Inajority were reckoned 53 bishops zn partibus, who, as having no

real dioceses, and being thus unable to attest the historical belief of their flocks, had properly no right of suffrage upon dogmatic questions in a council, such attestation being the one function dischargeable by bishops assembled in synod when considering articles of belief.

cewncie Ll 11]

To these are to be added about 125 bishops of sees too modern to have any ancient tradition to attest, such as those in North and South America, Australasia, and Oceania, who were thus for conciliar purposes on the same footing of incompetence to speak for any one save them- selves. And, besides these two large groups, there was a third, consisting of about 90 missionary bishops entirely under the control of the Propaganda, and thus not free agents, while their sees were in most cases of very recent origin, so that they also could allege only their personal opinion, having no ancient records to attest. By far the larger number in these groups were on the side of the court majority. The Italian bishops, numbering about 170, and the Spanish, 40 in number, were also infallibilists almost to a man, but included scarcely one theologian in their ranks. And no fewer than 300 of this majority were the personal guests of Pius [X., lodged, boarded, and maintained at his cost, and thus openly retained to do his bidding. The minority consisted chiefly of the German and Austrian bishops, a considerable section of Hungarian, French, and North-American prelates, and many of those Orientals of the Latin Church who occupied dioceses other than mere titular and paper ones. But this minority, though composed mainly of natives of the most highly educated and intellectual countries, and containing almost every bishop of note for ability and theological learning, was by no means so compact and united as were the bishops of the majority ; and there was not even full agree- ment amongst its members as to the grounds for opposing the new dogma, many going no further than its inoppor- tuneness, but not entertaining deeper objections to it. Thus, even apart from its numerical inferiority, the oppo- sition was at a disadvantage in face of the curialists, and lost not a few members to them during the progress of the council. Not only were the efforts to obtain freedom from the fetters of the brief dfultiplices inter vain, but no member of the opposition could secure a

place on any of the commissions or sub-committees, which consisted exclusively of infallibilists.

The matter of most importance in the first congrega- tion, which was held on 10th December 1869, was the publication of a bull, decreeing that, if the pope should die during the council, it should at once be prorogued and take no part in the election of a pontiff, which was to be restricted to the college of cardinals. The session which followed was little more than formal; but two steps towards bringing about the intended result were taken before the next time of assembling. The '"theo- logians" were forbidden to attend any meetings of the bishops, or even to meet among themselves to discuss any conciliar matters, being restricted each to private confer- ence with the particular bishop to whose person he was attached ; and various petitions for the definition of the new dogma were drawn up and signed, one being the result of a letter to the bishops of the council, issued by Archbishop Manning and the conductors of the Civilta Cattolica, and signed by some hundreds, another from the Italian prelates, a third from those of the Franciscan order, and a fourth from the Uniat Armenians, besides several of less note. The opposition issued a counter-memorial with 135 signatures ; but, as it is therein admitted that papal decrees ex cathedra on faith and morals are irreversible, even without the consent of the church being known in any way, and that true obedience to every decree of the see of Rome is due by all Christians, no weight could attach to it as a serious plea for rejecting, or even delaying, the definition. The second session (6th January 1870) was also formal only, so far as the direct transaction of business was concerned ; but by the adoption of a measure causing all the members present to recite the creed of Pius IV.,

containing a clause professing obedience to the pope (this clause being omitted by the pope himself), and then to renew the episcopal oath of feudal submission to the Papacy, powerful pressure was brought to bear upon the weaker of the opposition, who were thus reminded how far they had pledged themselves already, and how un- reasonable it therefore was to haggle about taking but one step in advance on the self-same road. The

time between the second and third sessions was mainly occupied in preparing the drafts (schemata) of constitutions on the faith and on the church, and also with discussions of sundry disciplinary measures (notably as regards clerical immorality) and the preparation of a new catechism ; but none of these last were proceeded with. By the pope's direct command the cardinal-presidents of the congrega- tions issued, on 20th February 1870, rules to check long debates, which drew yet tighter than before the cords that deprived the council of all freedom. Speakers were confined to touching upon such clauses only of any amendment as they had given previous notice of meaning to discuss, and were not allowed to take part otherwise in a debate, while the closure could be applied by the presidents at the demand of any ten members. This latter drastic measure drew out a protest from more than one hundred bishops, who urged that it was destructive of conciliar liberty (already much hampered by the noisy attempts of the infallibilists to stifle free discussion), and that the steps being taken disregarded the note of moral unanimity which should mark the decisions of a general council, thereby exposing the council itself to hostile criticism and even rejection. They pointed out several other serious faults in the new rules, but could obtain no modification of them. The constitution on the faith (usually cited now as Dei Filius), however,—a long and far from clearly worded document, — directed chiefly against modern rationalism, and enforced by 18 canons of anathema, was completed ; it passed the congregation without difficulty, was signed by all the 667 members present, and was published in the third session, 24th April 1870, with papal confirmation, or rather in the unprecedented form of a proclamation by the pope singly, "'the sacred council approving,"—an innovation which was intended to mark it as solely his act, and to settle in this summary manner the long-standing controversy as to the relative superiority of popes and councils. There were few, however, even of the opposition, who cared to contest such a point, and there was nothing of a contentious nature, as regards the two parties in the council, in the constitution itself, so that no debate was raised upon it.

The real struggle was yet to come, namely, over the constitution on the church, into which the new dogma was to be introduced. This constitution (now usually cited as Pastor diternus) asserted the following propositions

:—(1) that a proper primacy of jurisdiction over the whole church was conferred upon St Peter directly and singly, and not mediately through any delegation to him, as chief minister in the church, of a primacy held by the church corporately ; (2) that this Petrine primacy vests by divine institution aud right in the line of Roman pontiffs ; (3) that the pope's Jurisdiction is immediate in all churches—.¢., he is the universal ordinary, the actual bishop of every see (all other bishops being merely his curates and deputies), and is not a remote or merely appellate authority—so that in questions not of faith and morals alone, but of discipline and govern- ment also, all the faithful, of whatever rite or dignity. both pastors and laity, are bound, individually and collect. ively, to submit themselves thereto; (4) that it is unlaw- ful to appeal from the judgments of the Roman pontiffs to an cecumenical council, as though to a higher authority ; and (5) that the Roman pontiff, when he speaks ex cathedra, and defines a doctrine of faith or morals to be held by the

“—

Cre Ue a

universal church, is infallible, and such definitions are accordingly irreformable of themselves, and not from the consent of the church. This document was voted upon in the congregation of 13th July 1870, consisting of 671 members. Of these 451 voted in the affirmative; 88 voted against it; 62 voted placet juxta modum, meaning that they would accept it if it were seriously modified ; and 70 did not vote at all. By the canonical theory of councils such a division of opinion as this voided the decision of the majority, and made it null. For, while a bare majority in a council suffices to pass a mere disciplinary canon, being a variable matter, contrariwise, to enact a dogmatic decree requires practical unanimity, since nothing can be imposed as of faith for which the two attesting notes of universal prevalence and historical continuity cannot be adduced. And, as the dissent of any appreciable number of members denotes that they do not know it as the local tradition of their several dioceses, it thereby destroys the claim to these notes. Not only so; but in view of the character in which bishops appear at councils, as represent- ing their laity, it is clear that the size and population of their several dioceses have to be taken into account when estimating the weight attaching to their individual testi- mony as to the reception of any dogma within their juris- dictions. ‘Tried by this standard, the opposition was very much more important than its muster-roll seems to indicate, for it included the bishops from many of the most populous Roman Catholic dioceses, such as the archbishops of Paris, with 2,000,000 Catholics, Breslau with 1,700,000, Cologne with 1,400,000, Vienna with about the same number, and Cambrai with 1,300,000; whereas 62 bishops of the Papal States, for example, represented no more than 700,000 altogether, apart from the hundred and more titulars, who had no flocks at all. This matter may be summed up thus: every vote cast for the new dogma stood for 142,570 lay folks; but every vote cast against it stood for 492,520. Nor is this all: a council claiming to be cecumenical must speak with the consent of both East and West. But, even if the very large concession be made that the Uniat churches in communion with Rome are in truth the

lawful representatives of the ancient Oriental Church, the fact remains that the number and rank of the Orientals in the minority was such as to make the vote at best only a Latin one. The Melchite and Syrian patriarchs of Antioch, the Chaldee patriarch of Babylon, the Melchite archbishop of Tyre, the Maronite archbishops of Tyre and Sidon, of Beyrout, and of Aleppo, with several others, were in one or other of the three groups of dissentients, and thus nullified the Eastern suffrages in the majority. Immediately after this preliminary voting nearly all the bishops of the minority abruptly quitted Rome, after previously lodging a protest against the proceedings. Their flight was prompted by fears for their personal safety. They were given to under- stand that each of them would have two papers tendered to him for his signature in the ensuing session, one being a profession of adhesion to the infallibility dogma, the other a resignation of his diocese in case he refused such adhesion. And they had good reason to think that the pope, who had declared that he meant to be proclaimed infallible " without limitation " (senza condizone), and had shown open enmity to more than one of their nuniber, would employ direct coercion in the event of continued resistance, bringing his temporal power as sovereign of Rome to bear on the rebels within his territory. Accord- ingly, when the public session was held on 18th July 1870, while 535 bishops voted for the constitution Pastor 4Hternus, only two, those of Ajaccio and of Little Rock, remained to utter their "non-placet." The pope thereupon confirmed the decree, and the proceedings virtually ended.

By one of the most singular of historical coincidences,

on that very day Napoleon III. proclaimed war against Prussia, and entered on that great conflict amongst the immediate results of which were the overthrow of the temporal power of the Papacy and the occupation of Rome by the troops of the king of Italy in two months' time from the last meeting of the council. It was formally prorogued by Pius IX. on 20th October, and is thus technically still in existence; but the prorogation is a virtual dissolution.

The opposition collapsed everywhere after the promulgation of the decree, as even the German bishops, who had been the main- stay of the minority, consented to publish it in their dioceses. This led to the genesis of the Old

Catholic communion (see OLD CATHOLICS) as a refuge for such as were conscientiously unable to accept the new. dogma, but equally unwilling to join any of the Protestant societies. But submission to the dogma is not identical with belief in it, at any rate in the sense wherein Pius 1X. under- stood it and meant it to be received. The majority had, indeed, achieved their " triumph over history ": they had done what warn- ing voices had declared beforehand to be their purpose—annihilated the independence of the episcopate, abrogated the teaching and attesting functions of the dispersive church, and contracted the Roman Catholic creed into the single article of belief in the pope. But they had failed in three matters essential to the ultimate success of their plans. They had not even seemed to make any reply, save that of their snperior voting strength in the council, to the destructive criticism which had established the falsehood and novelty of the infallibility dogma ; they were not able to pass it so as to be canonically or theologically binding ; and they could not secure its unqualified acceptance in its original form. Instead of terminating all controversy, the new dogma (as might have been anticipated by any one familiar either with the laws of the human intellect or the facts of ecclesiastical history) at once became itself a topic of debate, receiving contradictory interpretations, partly due to its vague and clumsy wording, and partly the expression of competing opinions, ranging from the widest to the narrowest view of its scope and force. The "senza condizione"' of Pius IX. proved hopelessly unworkable, and it was soon found necessary to modify the decree so as to make it a not intolerable burden for intelligent consciences. Accordingly, Bishop Fessler of St Pélten, secretary- general of the council, published in 1871, with a brief of approbation from the pope, his treatise Die wahre und falsche Unfehlbarkeit der Pipste, soon reproduced in French and English, which provides that "juxta modum " limitation vainly sought from the tyrannical majority in the council itself. Ostensibly a reply to an anti-infalli- bilist work by the learned canonist Vou Schulte, it is in fact a studious minimizing of the incidence of the dogma, arguing that the occasions when the attribute of papal infallibility has been actually exercised and formulated in ex eathedra decrees have been, and must continue to be, of extremely rare occurrence, and further attenuating the dogma itself, so as to approach in some measure the old Gallican view of the pope's constitutional and limited authority as official spokesman of

the church. In England, where the evidence collected by Pitt in the 18th century, and by the earl of Liverpool in the 19th, when aiming at the abolition of the penal laws, on the opinions held by Roman Catholic theologians as to the prerogatives and attributes of the popes, made their general Tepudiation of papal infallibility familiarly known, the question was even more trenchantly dealt with. For Dr Newman, who had anxiously deprecated the coming definition, speaking of it in a letter to Bishop Ullathorne as a "' great calamity," wantonly forced on by "'an aggressive, insolent faction," explained the manner of his own belief and acceptance of it in a letter to the duke of Norfolk, and that in terms which to less subtle (and, it may be, more practical) intellects are indistinguishable from disbelief and rejection. Not only does he limit the attribute itself, and the occasions of its exercise, within much straiter bounds than those set by Fessler, but he specifies a number of cases wherein he would disobey a papal mandate, and, after saying that each such mandate must be decided on its own merits, adds: "I should look to see what theologians could do for me, what the bishops and clergy around me, what my confessor, what friends whom I revered 5 and if, after all, I could not take their view of the matter, then I must rule myself by my own judgment and my own conscience." That this deliverance is in effect a complete evacuation of the dogma will appear at once by supposing cognate language to be used in the civil sphere by the subject of an absolute temporal sovereign When defining the limits of his allegiance. But the subsequent eleva- tion of its author to the cardinalate proves that his view is regarded as fairly tenable in the Roman Church, and the infallibility dogma 1s thus, for the present at least, dismissed from the domain of practical action to that of speculative theory.

The bibliography of the Vatican Council is very copious, but the following Works will suffice for most students to consult :—Cecconi, Storia del Coneilio Vaticano, Rome, 1873; J. Friedrich, Geschichte des vatikanischen Konzils, Bonn,

VAT—VAU

eS

1877-87; Id., Tagebuch, wihrend des vaticantschen Concils gefiihrt, Nordlin- gen, 1873; Id., Documenta ad Illustrandum Concilium Vaticanum, Nordlin- gen, 1873 ; Quirinus, Romische Briefe vom Concil 1870 (also an English version) 3 Pomponio Leto, Otto Mest a Roma durante il Concilio Vaticano, Florence, 1873 (also an English version); Michelis, Kurze Geschichte des vaticanischen Concils, Constance, 1875; Friedberg, Sammlung der Aktenstticke zum ersten vaticanischen Coneil, Tibingen, 1872; Frommann, Geschichte und Kritik des vaticanischen Concils, Gotha, 1872 ; Pius IX., Discorsi del Sommo Pontefice Pio IX. pronunziati in Vaticano, Rome, 1872-73 ; Frond, Actes et Histoire du Concile Geuménique de Rome, Paris, 1870-73, 8 vols. folio; Arthur, The Pope, the Kings, and the People, Belfast, 1877. Ci On

VATTEL, Emer ve (1714-1767), an eminent jurist, was the son of a Protestant minister, and was born at Couvet, in the principality of Neuchatel, on 25th August 1714. He studied at Basel and Geneva. During his early years his favourite pursuit was philosophy; and, having carefully examined the works of Leibnitz and Wolf, he published in 1741 a defence of Leibnitz's system against Crousaz. In the same year Vattel, who was born a subject of the king of Prussia, repaired to Berlin in the hope of obtaining some public employment from Frederick II., but was disappointed in his expectation. Two years later he proceeded to Dresden, where he experienced a very favour- able reception from Count Briihl, the minister of Saxony. In 1746 he obtained from the elector, Augustus IIIL., the title of councillor of embassy, accompanied with a pension, and was sent to Bern in the capacity of the elector's minister. His diplomatic functions did not occupy his whole time and much of his leisure was devoted to litera- ture and jurisprudence. Among other works he published Loisirs Philosophiques (1747) and Mélanges de Littérature, de Morale, et de Politique (1757). But his reputation chiefly rests on his Droit des Gens, ou Principes de la Loi Naturelle appliqués & la Conduite et aux Affaires des Nations et des Sowverains (Neuchatel, 1758). During the same year he was recalled from Switzerland, to be employed in the cabinet of Dresden, and was soon afterwards honoured with the title of privy councillor. His labours now became so intense as to exhaust his strength, and his health broke down. After a period of rest he returned to Dresden in 1766 ; but his renewed exertions soon produced a relapse, and

he made another excursion to Neuchatel, where he died on 20th December 1767. His last work was entitled Questions de Droit Naturel, ou Observations sur le Traité du Droit de la Nature, par Wolf (Bern, 1762).

Vattel's Droit des Gens, which is founded on the works of Wolf, had in its day a great success, in truth, greater than it deserved. His principal and only merit consists in his having rendered the ideas of that author accessible to the political and diplomatic

world. The Droit des Gens passed through many editions, and was translated into various languages (English in 1760).

VAUBAN, Sepastien Le PREstRE DE (1633-1707), marshal of France, was born in the neighbourhood of Saulieu in Burgundy (now in the department of Céte-d'Or) on 15th May 1633. At an early age he was left an orphan in very poor circumstances, and his boyhood and youth were spent among the peasantry of his native place, thus enabling him to gain that sympathetic insight into the condition of the agricultural classes which he afterwards showed in his economic writings. He owed his early education and his first instruction in the rudiments of mathematics and surveying to a friendly curé, who had taken an interest in him and discerned his abilities. At the age of seventeen he joined the Spanish troops under the prince of Condé, but after about a year's campaigning was taken prisoner by the French. He then became known to Mazarin, who treated him with kindness and enlisted him in the service of the king. In 1653 he first earned repute as an engineer by the share he had in the capture of Sainte-Menehould, and after further distinction at Stenay and Clermont he was given a lieutenancy and re- ceived in 1655 his commission as an "ingénieur du roi." Be- tween that year and the peace of 1659 he took part in numerous successful sieges—especially those of Gravelines, Ypres, and Oudenarde. After the cession of Dunkirk, Fort

Louis, and Mardyke in 1662 he had charge of the work of fortifying them as frontier towns. On the renewal of war in 1667 he saw much service in

Flanders, and gained special distinction in the siege of Lille, of which town he ultimately became governor, the king making him a lieutenant in the guards and bestowing on him a pension. The originality and success of his methods were now fully recognized, and in 1669 he drew up, at the instance of Louvois, his first exposi- tion of the theory of fortification (Mémoire pour Servir d Instruction dans la Conduite des Siéges), which was after- wards published at Leyden (1740). In 1673 Vauban ac- companied Louis XIV. on his Dutch campaign, and directed the more important sieges, afterwards superintending the demolition or reconstruction of the captured places. In the following year his principal achievement was the capture of Maestricht, and in 1677 he had the chief credit for the fall of Valenciennes and Cambrai. In the latter year he was appointed commissary-general of fortifications in succession to Clerville, and thus gained an opportunity, which in the following year he diligently used, for practically reconstruct- ing the entire land-defences of France. In the short war of 1683-84 he gained further distinction by the fall of Luxem- bourg, and during the campaign of 1691-92 the names of Mons and Namur were added to the long list of his successes. In 1686 Vauban had the courage to make a representation to the king in favour of the republication of the Edict of Nantes; and about 1697 he wrote his almost equally bold Projet Pune Dixme Royale, which, however, was not pub- lished until 1707 (see PotrricaL Economy, vol. xix. p. 359). In 1693 he was made a grand cross of the order of St Louis, and in 1703 marshal of France. The close of his life, which was saddened by the consciousness of waning influence and failing health, he devoted largely to the arrangement of the voluminous manuscripts (Jles Oisivetés) which contained his reflexions on such subjects as the art of war, administration and finance, agriculture, commerce, and the like. He died at Paris on 30th March 1707.

For Vauban's work as a military engineer, see FORTIFICATION (vol. ix. pp. 441-446). The Otsivetés long remained unpublished, and of the twelve manuscript volumes containing them several seem to have been hopelessly lost ; the fragmentary remains were published in three volumes at Paris in 1841-48. The Traité de l Attaque des Places, written in 1703, and that De la Défense des Places, written a few months before his death, were published together in 1787. Among the subjects in which Vauban

took a lively interest, and on which he wrote memoirs, may be mentioned the fortification of Paris, the inland navigation of France, its army organization, espe- cially in the artillery service, and the limits of ecclesiastical power

in temporal matters. The introduction of the socket-bayonet into the French army is usually ascribed to Vauban.

VAUCLUSE, a department of France, formed in 1793 out of the county of Venaissin (695 square miles), the principality of Orange (624 square miles), and a part of Provence (5154 square miles), lies between 43° 39' and 44° 26' N. lat. and 4° 38' and 5° 45' E. long., is bounded by Drome on the N., Basses-Alpes on the E., Bouches-du- Rhone (from which it is separated by the Durance) on the S., and Gard and Ardéche (from which it is separated by the Rhone) on the W. It has also an enclave, the canton of Valréas, in the department of Drdme. The western third of Vaucluse belongs to the Rhone valley, and con- sists of the rich and fertile plains of Orange, Carpentras, and Cavaillon, To the east, with a general west-south- west direction and parallel to one another, are the steep barren ranges of Ventoux, Vaucluse, and Lubéron, consist- ing of limestones and sandstones. The first-mentioned, which is the most northerly, has a maximum elevation of 6273 feet; the culminating peak, on which is a meteoro- logical observatory, is isolated and majestic. The Vaucluse chain does not rise above 4075 feet. The most southerly range, that of Lubéron (3691 feet), is rich in palzeonto- logical remains of extant mammals (the lion, gazelle, wild

=

ya U

boar, &c.). The Rhone is joined on the left by the Aygues, the Sorgue (rising in Petrarch's celebrated fountain of Vaucluse, which has given its name to the department), and the impetuous Durance. The Sorgue has an import- ant tributary in the Ouvéze and the Durance in the Coulon (or Calavon). These and other streams feed numerous irrigation canals; their channels are sometimes quite dry in summer. The climate is that of the Mediter- ranean region. The valley of the Rhone suffers from the mistral

(see vol. ix. p. 507); but the other valleys are sheltered by the mountains, and produce the oleander, pomegranate, olive, jujube, fig, and other southern trees and shrubs. The mean annual temperature is 55° Fahr. at Orange and 58° at Avignon; the extremes of tempera- ture are 5° and 105° Fahr. Snow is rare. The south wind, which is frequent in summer, brings rain. The average annual rainfall is 29 inches in the hill region and 22 in

the plains.

Of the total area of 881,610 acres 679,737 are cultivated, —cereals occupying 232,250 acres, market and other gardens 41,085, meadows, pastures, and orchards 89,950, industrial vegetable products 18,998, summer fallows 58,489, vines 24,699, and woods and forests 197,049. The live stock in 1880 included 11,412 horses, 16,602 mules, 4410 asses, 2079 head of cattle, 46,406 pigs, 11,660 goats, and 165,040 shcep of native and 6983 of improved breed. There were 11,701 beehives (104 tons of honey and 28 tons of wax). Amongst wild animals the otter and beaver occur along the bank of the Rhone. The crops in 1884 were returned as follows —2,151,385 bushels of wheat, 7309 of meslin, 39,476 of rye, 60,208 of barley, 1677 of buckwheat, 17,162 of maize, 240,850 of millet, 445,920 of oats, 4,247,600 of potatoes, 21,680 tons of beetroot, and 197 tons of tobacco. In 1880 early vegetables were produced to the value of £384,940, and stone fruit to the value of £13,341. The olive crop amounted to 233,928 bushels (622 tons 17 cwts. of oil). In 1884 4,779,236 gallons of wine were obtained (average for preceding ten years 2,562,384 gallons). In the same year 766 tons of silk cocoons were produced. The phylloxera has reduced the area of the vine- yards from 79,000 to 13,000 or 14,000 acres; American vines are now being introduced. The culture of madder and the mulberry is diminishing, while the Chinese grass-cloth plant, beetroot, sorghum, and millet are grown in increasing quantities. The truffle markets of Carpentras and Apt are important. Lignite and coal (11,382 tons in 1882), iron, and sulphur are mined ; rich deposits of plaster, stone, clay, and ochre are worked ; and there is a large variety of mineral springs. The chief industrial establishments are manu- factories of madder dye, silk-mills (4295 workmen), silk-spinning factories (8365 spindles and 411 workmen), oil-mills, flour-mills, paper-mills (1047

workmen and 2700 tons of paper in 1880), wool-spinning factories (2645 spindles and 369 workmen), confec- tionery establishments, manufactories of pottery, earthenware, bricks, mosaics, tinned provisions, chemicals, candles, soap (2500 tons in 1880), and hats, breweries, puddling works, iron and copper foundries, cabinet workshops, blast furnaces, saw-mills, edge-tool workshops, and nursery gardens. Coarse cloth, carpets, blankets, and ready-made clothes are also produced. Vaucluse has 135 miles of railway, 97 of national roads, and 2380 of other roads. The population increased by 74,670 between 1801 and 1865, but from that date to 1886 it diminished by 24,304, owing to the decay of the madder and wine industries. In 1881 the department had 244,149 inhabitants, and in 1886 241,787. Vaucluse forms the archiepiscopal diocese of Avignon, has its court of appeal at Nimes, and belongs to the Marseilles army corps. It is divided into 4 arrondissements (Avignon, chef-lieu of the department, with 35,355 inhabitants in 1886; Apt, 4293; Carpentras, 8563; and Orange, 6904), 22 cantons, and 150 communes. Cavaillon (5164 inhabitants) is famous for its early vegetables and its fruit. Vaison (1988 inhabitants) is rich in Roman remains, and posscsses an interesting cathedral and a ruined castle of the counts of Toulouse.

VAUD (Germ. Waadt), a canton of Switzerland, ranking as nineteenth in the Confederation, takes its name either from the German Wald (a wood) or, more probably, from Walsch, the term applied by Teutonic to non-Teutonic tribes. It is of very irregular shape, as it owes its exist- ence solely to historical causes. Roughly speaking, it includes the whole north shore of the Lake of Geneva. It stretches on the south-east as far as St Maurice and takes in Chateau d'Oex, while to the north-west the Jura and the Lake of Neuchatel are its boundaries. The dis- trict of Avenches (entirely surrounded by the canton of

Freiburg) and a long narrow tongue running up to Payerne are also within its boundaries. The total area is 1244-3 square miles, larger than that of any other Swiss canton except Graubiinden (Grisons), Bern, and Valais. Of this total 1053°6 square miles are classed as productive, forests occupying 282 and vines 24°8 square miles. This is a larger extent under

vines than in any other canton save Tessin (Ticino), and more than one-fifth of the total wine- growing districts in the whole Confederation. Of the un- productive portion lakes occupy 164:1 and glaciers 4:3 square miles, while towns and buildings cover 57. The highest point is the Diablerets (10,667 feet) in the south- east comer. 'The population in 1880 amounted to 238,730 (an increase of 7030 since 1870), a larger number than in any other canton except Bern and Zurich. Of these 212,164 are French-speaking, 21,692 German-speaking (many persons from the German-speaking cantons coming thither to learn French), and 2518 Italian-speaking. In religion 219,427 are Protestants (Calvinists), divided be- tween the "national church" (19°20) and the "free church" (1:20). The capital is Lausanne (30,179 inhabitants, or with the surrounding districts 37,427), which since 1874 has been the seat of the federal tribunal. It is the largest town in the Confederation after Zurich, Basel, Geneva, and Bern. Other important places are Vevay (7820 in- habitants) and Yverdon (5968).

Agriculture is the main occupation of the people ; the land is much subdivided and very highly cultivated. The vineyards em- ploy 20,000 persons. About one-third of the wine produced is ex- ported, the best-known varieties being Yvorne (white) and Cortaillod (red). There is not much industry, except that of the watch- makers in the Jura; and the commerce is comparatively unim- portant. Many foreigners reside in the canton, particularly on the shores of the Lake of Geneva, from Lausanne to Villeneuve (as formerly Gibbon, Voltaire, and Rousseau). Montreux is a favourite winter residence, and its growth may be judged of from the fact that its inhabitants increascd from 3211 in 1849 to 4379 in 1860, 6659 in 1870, and 8017 in 1880, the increase being specially marked since the opening of the railway in 1861. The railways are 168 miles in length, besides a "ligne régionale" on the high road from Lausanne to Echallens, and the cable railways from Lausanne to Ouchy and from Territet to Glion. In educational matters the canton holds a high place. The academy of Lausanne dates from 1587 ; and there are a very large number of schools and educational establishments at Morges, Lausanne, Vevay, and elsewhere. Pesta- lozzi's celebrated institution flourished at Yverdon from 1805 to 1825. Among the remarkable historical spots in the canton are Avenches (the chief Roman settlement in Helvetia), Granson (scene of the

famous battle in 1476 against Charles the Bold), and the castle of Chillon (where Bonnivard, the prior of St Victor at Geneva, was imprisoned from 1531 to 1536 for defending the freedom of Geneva against the duke of Savoy).

History.—The early history of the main part of the territories comprised in the present canton is identical with that of south-west Switzerland generally. The Romans conquered (58 B.C.) the Celtic Helvetii, and so thoroughly colonized the land that it has remained a Romance-speaking district, despite conquests by the Burgundians (5th century) and Franks (532) and the incursions of the Saracens (10th century). It formed part of the empire of Charlemagne, and of the kingdom of Transjurane Burgundy (888-1032), the memory of "ood queen Bertha," wife of King Rudolph IL., being still held in high honour. On the extinction of the house of Zaringen (1218) the counts of Savoy gradually won the larger part of it, especially in the days of Peter II., "'le petit Charlemagne " (died 1268). The bishop of Lausanne (to which place the see had been transferred from Aventicum by Marius the Chronicler at the end of the 6th cen- tury), however, still maintained the temporal power given to him in 1011 by the king of Burgundy, and in 1270 became a prince of the empire, (We must be careful to distinguish between the present canton of Vaud and the old medieval Pays de Vaud: the districts forming the present canton very nearly correspond to the Pays Rom- and.) In the 15th century Bern began to acquire lands to the south from the dukes of Savoy, and it was out of those conquests that the canton was formed in 1798. In 1475 she seized Aigle, in 1475- (6 (in concert with Freiburg) Echallens and Granson as well as Orbe (the latter held of the duchy of Burgundy). Vaud had been Cccupied by Bern for a time (1475-76), but the final conquest did not take place till 1536, when both Savoyard Vaud and the bishopric of Lausanne were overrun and annexed by Bern (formally ceded in 1564), who added to them (1555) Chateau d'Oex, as her share of

the domains of the debt-laden count of Gruyéres in the division of the spoil she made with Freiburg. In 1565 the liberties of Vaud were, by a special treaty, placed under the guarantee of France. Bern in 1526 sent

Farel, a preacher from Dauphiné, to carry out the Reformation at Aigle, aud after 1536 the new religion was imposed by force of arms and the bishop's residence moved to Freiburg (permanently from 1663). Thus the whole land became Protestant, save the district of Echallens. Vaud was ruled very harshly by bailiffs from Bern. In 1588 a plot of some nobles to hand it over to Savoy was crushed, and in 1723 the enthusiastic idealist Davel lost his life in an attempt to raise it to the rank of a canton. Political feeling was therefore much excited by the out- break of the French Revolution, and a Vaudois, F. C. de la Harpe, an exile and a patriot, persuaded the Directory in Paris to marcli on Vaud in virtue of the rights conferred by the treaty of 1565. The French troops were received enthusiastically, and the 'Le- manic republic" was proclaimed (January 1798), succeeded by the short-lived Rhodanic republic, till in March 1798 the canton of Leman was formed as a district of the Helvetic republic. This corresponded precisely with the present canton minus Avenches and Payerne, which were restored to it in 1808. The new canton was thus made up of the Bernese conquests of 1475, 1475-76, 1536, and 1555. The constitutions of 1808 and 1815 favoured the towns and wealthy men, so that an agitation went on for a radical change, which was effected in the constitution of 1831. Originally acting as a mediator, Vaud finally joined the anti-Jesuit movement (especially after the Radicals came into power in 1845), opposed the Sonderbund, and accepted the new federal constitution of 1848, of which Druey of Vaud was one of the two drafters. From 1839 to 1846 the canton was distracted by religious struggles, owing to the attempt of the Radicals to turn the church into a simple depart- ment of state, a struggle which ended in the splitting off of the "free church." The cantonal feeling in Vaud is very strong, and was the main cause of the failure of the project of revising the federal constitution in 1872, though that of 1874 was accepted. In 1879 Vaud was one of the three cantons which voted (though in vain) against a grant in aid of the St Gotthard Railway. In 1882 the Radicals obtained a great majority, and in 1885 the con- stitution of 1861 was revised. The Government consists of a great council (one member to every 300 electors) for legislative and a council of state of 7 members (chosen by the great council) for executive purposes. 6000 citizens can compel consideration of any project by the legislature (" initiative," first in 1845), and the 7e- Jerendum exists in its "facultative" form, if demanded by 6000 citizens, and also in case of

expenditure of over a million francs. Capital punishment was abolished in 1874. The canton has lately been passing through serious financial difficulties. In 1862 the south-west frontier was slightly altered in consequence of a dispute with France as to the valley of Dappes.

See A. Verdeil, Histoire du Canton de Vaud (2d ed., 4 vols.), and L. Vulliemin, Le Canton du Vaud (3d ed., 1885).

VAUDOIS. See WaALDENSEs.

VAUGHAN, Henry (1621-1693), called " the Silurist," poet and mystic, was born into an ancient Welsh family settled at Skethiog-on-Usk, in the parish of Llansaintfraed, Brecknockshire, in 1621. From 1632 to 1638 he and his twin brother Thomas were privately educated by the rector of Llangattock, and then they proceeded to Jesus College, Oxford. At what time Henry left the university is not known ; but it was evidently after he had studied for some time in London and had been introduced into the society of men of letters that he printed his first volume, Poems, with the Tenth Satire of Juvenal Englished (1646). Of this publication he was afterwards, very needlessly, ashamed. Vaughan presently became a physician and returned to his native country, first for a while practising in the town of Brecon, and then settling down for the remainder of his life in Skethiog. From this place he sent forth his col- lection of sacred poems, Stlex Scintillans, in 1650, of which a second part appeared in 1655, and the secular poems of his Olor Iscanus, prepared for the press in 1647, and pub- lished without his consent by his brother Thomas in 1651. A mystical treatise in prose, The Mount of Olives, followed in 1652, and then two prose translations, Flores Solitudi- nis, 1654, and Hermetical Physick, 1655. The world took little notice of these performances. In 1678 an Oxford friend collected the miscellaneous verses of Vaughan's middle life in a volume entitled Thalia Rediviva. Henry Vaughan died at Skethiog on 23d April 1693, and lies buried in the churchyard of Llansaintfraed.

As a poet Vaughan comes latest in the so-called " metaphysical Hi school of the 17th century. He is the most remote of the disciples of Donne, and follows him mainly as he saw him reflected in George Herbert. He

analyses his experiences, amatory and sacred, with excessive ingenuity, striking out, every now and then, through his extreme intensity of feeling and his close though limited observation of nature, lines and phrases of marvellous felicity. He is of imagina- tion all compact, and is happiest when he abandons himself most completely to his vision. His verse is apt to seem crabbed and untunable in comparison with that of Crashaw, and even of Herbert at his best. "The Retreat," with its Wordsworthian intimations, "The World," mainly because of the magnificence of its opening lines, and "Beyond the Veil" are by far the most popular of Vaughan's poems and represent him at his best. His passion for the Usk, and his desire to immortalize that pastoral river, are pathetically prominent in his writings. His metrical ear was not fine, and he affected, almost more than Herbert himself, tortured and tuneless forms of self-invented stanza.

The earlier works of Henry Vaughan, in prose and verse, were collected in a very limited private edition in four volumes, in 1871, by Dr A. B. Grosart. The Rev. H. F. Lyte edited the sacred poems alone in 1847, up to which time Vaughan was praetically unknown as a poet.

VAUGHAN, Tuomas (1621-1665), "the Rosicrucian," was the twin brother of Henry VAUGHAN (see above). When Thomas left Oxford he went into the church and became rector of his native parish Llansaintfraed until his ejectment, when he settled at Oxford as an alchemist. He died at Albury on 27th February 1665, poisoned by the fumes of a cauldron, Under the pseudonym of Eugenius Philalethes, Thomas Vaughan produced eleven volumes defending and describing the tenets of the Rosi- crucians. The titles of these—among which are Zhe Jan- Mouse, 1650; The Second Wash, 1651; The Lame and Confession of the Fraternity of the Rosy Cross, 1652 ; Aula Lucis, 1652; and Huphrates, 1653—are not more extraordinary than their style. Henry More the Platonist engaged in controversy with Thomas Vaughan, deep calling unto deep in pamphlets.

VAUQUELIN, Louis Niconas (1763-1829), French analytical chemist, was born at Saint-André-d'Hébertot in Normandy on 16th May 1763. His parents, although very poor, sent him to school to fit him for the coveted

post of a gentleman's servant at the chateau. At the age of thirteen or fourteen Vauquelin went to Rouen as laboratory boy with an apothecary. He did not remain long there ; but his interest in chemistry was fairly aroused, and he began to make experiments and take notes. His master, finding him so engaged on one occasion, tore up his note-book and ordered him to keep to his menial work for the future. Vauquelin had spirit enough to resent this treatment: he borrowed six francs from a friend and walked to Paris to seek his fortune. Fora time his prospects were very dark: after getting and losing two situations he became ull, was sent to the public hospital, and when convalescent found himself once more without money or friends, At length, however, he met a humane apothecary, Cheradame, who took him in and treated him with kindness, Vauquelin at once resumed his studies, and devoted every spare minute to learning. Cheradame introduced him to Fourcroy, who had himself worked his way up from poverty, and from this time Vauquelin's fortune was made. Henceforward he devoted his attention to chemical analysis without in- termission or variety until his death, which occurred at his birthplace on 14th November 1829. At first his work appeared as that of his friend and patron, then in their joint names ; but in 1790 he commenced to publish on his own authority, and wrote perhaps more papers than any other chemist has ever done. "Hither together or success- ively Vauquelin held the offices of inspector of mines, professor at the School of Mines and at the Polytechnic School, assayer of gold and silver goods, professor of chemistry in the College of France, member of the Council of Industry and Commerce, commissioner on the pharmacy laws, examiner to the Polytechnic School, and, finally, was

successor to Fourcroy himself; at this last step all the

other candidates retired in his favour.

Vauquelin's life was uneventful ; his nature was quiet and retir- ing ; he never desired to mix with the world ; and even in the tur- moil of the Revolution his interest centred in the laboratory. He was emphatically one who lived for his work alone. He never married. He does not appear to have communicated with his parents after he became wealthy. The one

bright feature in the somewhat colourless character of his later life was the fact that he supported Fourcroy's aged sisters after his old friend died.

As an analyst Vauquelin came at the right time. The theory of chemistry was being built afresh on a basis of experiment; all substances, natural and artificial, were being classified by their com- position ; and it would be hard to mention any mineral or any plant or animal or product of life that Vauquelin did not examine. 'With Fourcroy he drove the piles on which the first theories in pure chemistry were founded ; with Haiiy he put mineralogy ona satisfactory footing ; but he himself was neither chemist nor mineral- ogist. Vauquelin's name is associated with 376 papers: published between 1790 and 18338, and, with the exception of one or two criti- cisms and claims for priority, these were all simple records of patient and laborious analytical operations. He propounded no theories, was guided by no generalizations, and was troubled by no problems save those of his methods. Given a substance, he did his best to find its composition, devising new processes where these seemed necessary, but this was all. Considering the amount of work he did, one is surprised that only two new elements are associated with his name. He detected glucina in beryl when analysing that mineral for Haiiy, and in a red lead ore from Siberia he discovered chromium, although, strange to say, eight years elapsed between his first examination of the ore and his separation of chromic acid. It is even more extraordinary that he never suspected the existence of alkaloids in the vegetable and animal juices he was continually analysing. Cuvier in his éloge argues from this that without the concurrence of a happy chance the greatest perseverance and the most admirable patience often miss the mark ; a more legitimate inference might be that work carried on " for work's ignoble sake" is fruitless in higher results, and that perseverance apart from a definite aim can accomplish little.

VAUVENARGUES, Luc p& Ciarrers, Marquis DE (1715-1747), a moralist and miscellaneous writer of con- siderable originality and power, was born at Aix in Provence on 6th August 1715. His family was poor though noble ; he was very badly educated; and his health was weak. He, however, entered the army early and served for more than ten years, taking part in the Italian campaign of 1736, and in the disastrous

expedition to Bohemia six years later in support of Frederick the Great's designs on Silesia, in which the French were abandoned by their ally. Vauven- argues suffered greatly from the hardships of Belle-Isle's winter retreat, and indeed never recovered from them. He was also much troubled by his poverty, and in a private letter written to a very intimate friend he discusses the possibility of obtaining a loan from a certain rich acquaint- ance by undertaking, first to get his son into his own regiment, or secondly to marry one of his daughters within a short time and with only a reasonable dowry. Nevertheless Vauvenargues was, according to the standard of that time, a most honourable man. Indeed he seems to have pushed honour to the point of naivety, if it be true that, weary of waiting for promotion, he addressed himself, not to any minister, or, more wisely still, to some favourite, but to the king himself. This unsophisticated proceeding had of course no result, and Vauvenargues threw up lis commission, hoping—but unsuccessfully— to obtain a post in the diplomatic service. His ill-luck pursued him: for, having joined his family in Provence, he fell ill with a bad form of smallpox, which still further weakened him. This was in 1744. He had, besides the correspondence above referred to with a certain M. de Saint Vincens, maintained one, still more interesting and likewise only recently known, with the celebrated and eccentric Marquis de Mirabeau, the author of L' Ami des Hommes, the father of the great Mirabeau. He had also, when in garrison at Nancy, begun an exchange of letters with Voltaire, who had a very high opinion of him, and this, with his natural inclinations, determined him to

VEC—

literature. He published in 1746 an Introduction a la Connaissance de V Esprit Humain, with certain Réflexions and Mdazximes appended. He died of lung disease at Paris on 28th May 1747.

The bulk of Vauvenargues's work is very small, but its interest is very considerable. In the Introduction, in the Réflexions, and in the minor fragments it consists, in fact, of detached and somc- what desultory thoughts, in the style wherein the 18th century so much delighted, on questions of moral philosophy and of literary criticism. Sainte-Beuve has

mildly said that as a literary critic Vauvenargues "shows inexperience." It would be truer to say that this part of his work has no value or interest beyond that of curiosity. He had no knowledge of any language but his own, and his literary criticism is limited to a repetition in crude form of the stock ideas of his time. Thus he exaggerates immensely the value of Racine and Boileau, but depreciates Corneille and even Moliére. It is almost sufficient to say that he blames Moliére for choosing "des sujets si bas," and shows an entire ignorance of all French litera- ture before the 17th century, and of all other literature whatsoever, except a certain second-hand acquaintance with the classics. As a writer he stands far highcr. His style is indeed, according to strict Academic judgment, somewhat incorrect, and when he attempts rhetorical flourishes (which is not often) they have usually the artificial and affected character—stilted or namby-pamby— which mars so much 18th-century work. His strength, however, is not really in any way that of a man of letters, but that of a moralist. Even here he is not superior to the weaknesses of his time. In his day the anti-religious or anti-Christian movement of thought was not fully declared, and he did not adopt the complete philosophe attitude ; in his letters, at any rate, he poses somewhat ostentatiously as "neutral" between the religious and the anti- religious schoo]. In some of his maxims about politics there is also traceable the hollow and confused jargon about tyrants and liberty which did so much to bring about, and to embitter when brought about, the struggles of the Revolution. It is in morals proper, in the discussion and application of general principles of conduct, that Vauvenargues shines. No century has ever excelled the 18th in moral theory, whatever may have been its deserts in respect of moral practice, and no 18th-century moralist has excelled Vauven- argues. He is not an exact psychologist, much less a rigorous metaphysician. He has no worked-out or workable theory of inoral obligation or of the moral sense. His terminology is merely popular and loose, and he hardly attempts the co-ordination of his ideas into any system. His real strength is in a department which the French have always cultivated with greater success than any other modern people,—the expression in more or less epigrammatic language of the results of acute observation of human conduct and motives. The chief distinction between Vauvenargues and his great predecessor La Rochefoucauld is that Vauvenargucs, unlike La Rochefoucauld, thinks nobly of man, and is altogether inclined rather to

the Stoic than to the Epicurean theory. He has indeed been called a modern Stoic, and, allowing for the vagueness of all such phrases, there is much to be said for the description.

An edition of the Works of Vauvenargues, slightly enlarged, appeared in the year of his death, and in part or in whole has been frequently reprinted, all editions, however, being superseded by that of M. Gilbert (2 vols., Paris, 1857), which contains the previ- ously unpublished correspondences above referred to and all other attamable matter, including some Dialogues of the Dead, some "characters" in imitation of Theophrastus and La Bruyére, and numerous short pieces of criticism and moralizing. Vauvenargues has been frequently written about, the comments best worth read- ing, besides those contained in Gilbert's edition, being four essays by Sainte-Beuve in Causertes du LInndi, vols. iii. and xiv.

VECELLIO. See Trrtan. _ VEDANTA. The Vedanta is the first and most impress- ive structure of Indian philosophy, the creed of intellectual Hindus, and the basis of the popular Hindu religions. Its earliest germs lie in the Mantra portion of the Veda. The Nasadiyasiikta (Rigveda, x. 129) propounds the genesis of the world from an inscrutable principle, darkness, neither existent nor non-existent, and from "one that breathed Without afflation, other than which there was nothing, beyond it nothing." The genesis of things from a universal soul is taught in the Purushasikta (Rigveda, x. 90). The unreality of the internal and external orders of things, and the sole reality of a supreme spirit, or impersonal self, are set forth in the Upanishads or later portions of the Veda. The teaching of these Upanishads explicated and system- atized, with little or no addition, constitutes the Vedanta. It has innumerable expositors among the Indian school-

men, of whom the most illustrious is Sankaracharya (see SANSKRIT LITERATURE, vol. xxi. p. 290), a philosopher of Kerala or Malabar, who lived, it is supposed, between 650 and 740.

The term “vedanta,” end of the Veda, is a synonym of “upanishad.” Upanishad is said by the Indian scholiasts to denote, in the first place, the knowledge of the imper- sonal self, the science of absolute being, paramdtmajndna, brahmavidyd, in the second place, any treatise imparting that knowledge. The doctrines of the Upanishads con- stitute the jnanakdnda, or gnostic portion of the Veda, as distinguished from the karmakédnda, or ritual portion, comprised in the Samhitas and Brahmanas. ‘They consti- tute also the pardvidya, or superior science, dealing with cessation from volition and action, and leading to extrica- tion from metempsychosis, as distinguished from the apardvidyd, or inferior science, of the Samhitas, Brah- manas, and Vedanhgas, which deals with action, and pro- longs metempsychosis, leading only to higher embodiments in this world or in the paradises of the deities. The Vedanta philosophy is also called Aupanishadi Mimansa, Brahmi Mimansa, Sariraki Mimansa. The Siitras or mnemonic formulas in which the system is developed are the Vedantasiitra, Brahmasiitra, and Sarirakasiitra. They are ascribed to Vyasa or Badarayana. The system is further styled the Uttaramimansa, as an investigation of the later portion of the Veda, as distinguished from the Pirvami- mans& of Jaimini, which is an investigation of the earlier portion of the Veda. The purport of the Parvamimansi is dharmajijndsd, inquiry into sacred prescription; the pur- port of the Uttaramimansa, or Vedanta, is brahmajijnasa, inquiry into the real nature of the soul.

There is, according to the Vedanta, but one substance or reality, ingenerable, immutable, incorruptible, eternal, and this is the supreme spirit, the impersonal self, the spiritual absolute, diman, paramaiman, brahman. The series of bodies and of environments through which the soul appears to pass in its werevowudrwors are illusive, unreal, the figments of a fictitious illusion, mayd, prakrit?, avyakta, avydkrita. The individual soul, jivatman, vijnanadtman, is personal only in fictitious semblance, only so long as it is impli- cated in the series of transmigratory states, and is in truth impersonal, one with the undifferenced self or Brahman. Its apparent and fictitious individuality, and its apparent action and suffering, are the individuality, the action, and the suffering of its illusory ad- juncts, the organism and the faculties. The unity of all souls in the one soul is the highest truth, or, properly speaking, the only truth.

On reaching and realizing this truth the individual soul returns to its isolation or state of pure indetermination. The duality of experience is fictitious and is surmounted by the true intuition, samyagjnana. On the side of this intuition there abides only "the existent, the intelligence, the beatitude."

Indian philosophy, and in particular its earliest form, the philo- sophy of the Upanishads, or Vedanta, is governed throughout by two needs. First, there is the need to give consistency and coher- ence to existing imagery, physical and hyperphysical, to work out a conception of the totality of things. Secondly, there is the need to put a stop to the miseries of metempsychosis. The idea of transmigration, foreign to the Indo-Aryans of the Vedic hymns, appears to have becn taken up by their successors from the lower races with which they intermingled, while retaining their supremacy among them. The Indo-Aryans of the Vedic hymns found life pleasurable and exciting. They prayed to the gods for their hundred years of it, and for an after-life with the whole body. This view of life was replaced by one of horror and aversion, pervading everything Indian with its gloom,—the expectation of care, bereavement, sickness, pain, and death, in body after body, and through eon after zon.

The effort to work out a coherent and complete idea by means of some principle of unity appears in the following passages.

In the Mundaka Upanishad: "Saunaka, the householder, ap- proached Angiras and said, 'Holy sir, by knowing what may all this universe be known?' Angiras replied, 'Two sciences are to be known which they that transmit the Veda propound, a superior and an inferior science. Of these the inferior is the Rigveda, &e. The superior is that by which that undecaying being is attained. That which none can see, none can handle, which is without kindred, without colour, which has neither eyes nor ears, neither hands nor feet, which is imperishable, infinitely diversified, everywhere pre- sent, wholly imperceptible,—that is the immutable, that it is that

sages behold as the source of all.'" In reference to this text the scholiast Anandagiri says, "If we know the principium, the wpa- dana, of things, we shall know all things, inasmuch as all things have pre-existed in and are identical with their causes. Sanka- racharya says: "In daily life things are known to ordinary people, if the unities are known under which those things are contained. For example, individual picces of gold are known under the nature of gold. Thus the question of the text is, what is the one cause or emanatory principle of the diversity of the universe, which known everything else is known ?"

Iu the Chhandogya Upanishad: " His father said to him, ' Sve-

taketu, thou art high-minded, wise in thy own conceit, and proud. —

Tell me, hast thou asked for that instruction by which the unheard is heard, the unthought thought, the unknown known?' He answered, 'How is that instruction given, sir?' His father said, 'Dear sou, as by one lump of clay all that is made of clay becomes known, being a modification of speech only, a change, a name, and the clay being the only reality ; as by one piece of iron all that is nade of iron becomes known, being a modification of speech only, a change, a name, and the iron being the only reality ; as by a pair of scissors all that is made of steel becomes known, being a modifica- tion of speech only, a change, a name, and the steel being the only reality :—such is the method of that instruction.' Svetaketu said, 'Sir, doubtless my teacher knew not that, for, had he known it, how could he have failed to tell me of it? Do thou therefore tell me of it.' His father said, 'Be it so, my dear son. youth, was this in the beginning, one only, without duality. Some indeed have said, non-existent only was this iu the beginning, one only, without duality. From that non-existent the existent pro- ceeded. But how could this be so? how could entity proceed out of non-entity ?'"

In the Svetasvatara Upanishad: " Those that proclaim Brahman say, What is the prineipium? Is it the impersonal self? From what have we proceeded into life? into what do we return? By what are we upheld as we pass through pleasures and pains? Is time the principium? Is the inherent property of things their principium'? Is chance? Are the elements? Or is the individual soul the origin of all things? Or is the sum of these the

principiwm ? Neither is any one of these, nor are all of these, the principium, for it is the impersonal self. It is not the individual self, for that is not independent, being subject to pleasures and to pains."

The most powerful incentive to speculation was the yearning to escape the miseries of transmigration. The soul has to pass through hunger and thirst, sorrow, bereavement, decrepitude, death, in body after body, through age after age. The individual soul has to look forward to continual suffering through a countless series of embodiments. The series is without beginning, and, until the individual learns his impersonal nature, without end. The series of transmigratory spheres is projected and retracted, projected and retracted, from before all time. Periods of evolution and of dis- solution follow each other from and to eternity. Any intervals of pleasure in the series of states through which the soul passes are fugitive and unsatisfying. Even the pleasures of the paradises of the deities are tainted with the fear of their expiry, and with the inequalities amongst the participants. They also are part of the darkness in which everything appears to be involved.

The transmigratory series, or samsdra, is said to consist of agents, actions, aud fruits of action. The fruits of action are the bodies and the environments allotted according to good or evil works. It is described as an unbroken succession of evils,—birth, death, bereavement, and other sorrows,—arising from transition from body to body. The individual soul floats down the stream, "like a gourd upon the waters," through embodiment after embodiment, "from a patch of grass to the first of the divinities," through forms, inorganic and organic, vegetable, animal, human, ultra- human, infernal, and celestial. Each later stage is determined by the good or evil actions of the individual in his earlier embodi- ments, by a blindly, a fatally operating law of retribution, adrishta. It is in conformity to this principle that the opifer adificatorque mundi deus, the Demiurgus, [svara, puts togethcr and rules the transmigratory series through the successive eons. It is this principle that clears the Demiurgus of the charge of cruelty and Injustice on account of the miseries and incqualities of life. In all that it does and suffers the soul is reaping the fruits of its own actions. Its actions proceed from preferences and aversions : its preferences and aversions proceed from

illusion, from its identifying itself with its per se unconscious senses, faculties, and organism. Merit, no less than demerit, prolongs the series, and must be shunned as sin by the aspirant to extrication.

The world, then, was pictured by the Indian sages as a series beginningless and endless, of bodies and environments, through which personal souls—that is, the one soul illusively viewing itself as many—pass. They pass through it for the fruition of their works, bhoga. The material of which it is built up at each period of evolution is the cosmical illusion, ajnana, avidyad, maya brakriti. This is the principle by which soul mistakes itself for not-self, identifies itself with fictitious adjuncts, upddhi, with the

Existent only, fair'

VEDANTA

organs, the faculties, the organism. It is this illusion that gives rise to the unreal world of duality, generable, mutable, corruptible, avidyaparikalpitam dvaitam. It is illusion that projects the manifold of experience, ndndtvapratyupasthapika maya. As the flow of transmigratory experiences is a succession of pleasures, pains, and neutral states, the world-projecting illusion is defined to be pleasure, pain, and indolence in equilibrium, gunatrayasamya. Pleasure, pain, indifference, are the three primordia rerum, the factors of experience, the three strands of the rope that holds the soul in bondage. The world-projecting illusion is further spoken of as the power of the Demiurgus, his all-creative power, " the power of the divine spirit latent in its constituent primordia." Thus Sankaracharya in his Bhashya on the Vedantasiitra says: "Name and form (%.¢., all that is heard and seen), the fictitious products of illusion, and the body of the omniscient Demiurgus, — name and form, inexplicable as entity and as nonentity, the germs of the transmigratory series, —are called the illusion, the power, the productiveness (prakriti) of the Demiurgus." This illusion is 'neither existent nor non-existent, nor both in one, neither to be explained as entity or as nonentity, fictitiously proceeding from an to all eternity." It is the illusory adjunct, wpadhi, of Brahman. The internal and the external order of things are illusorily

superposed (adhyasta, adhydropita) upon the one and only real, the impersonal self, by an illusion that has imagined itself from all eternity.

To illustrate this in the figures of the Vedanta :—" As a spider extends and retracts his threads, as plants grow up upon the earth, as the hairs of the hcad and body spring from the living man, so the world arises from the imperishable." " As from the blazing fire its kindred sparks proceed in thousands, so the diverse creatures proceed from that imperishable principle and into it return." All that presents itself to the soul in life after life, in sphere after sphere, lies in fictitious semblance above the real, like the blueness seen in the sky, though in the sky it has no existence; like the waters of a mirage; like the bubbles on the surface of a river ; like the airy fabric of a day-dream ; like the visions of a dream ; like the silver seen, or seeming to be seen, on the shell of the pearl-oyster ; like the snake seen by the belated traveller in a piece of rope; like the gloom that surrounds the owl amidst the noontide glare. The soul is confined to the body as within a prison. Its doings and sufferings are as unreal as the apparent motion of the trees upon the bank to one sailing down the river. The experience of life after life is the phantasmagory of a waking dream. The unreality, the fictitious nature, of the things of experience is implied everywhere in the Upanishads, and explicated with a profusion of imagery, by the Indian schoolmen.

The contents of this transmigratory series are supplied from the popular religion, the earlier imagery being built up into the new conception. A place is found in it for the deities and their paradises; only these deities and their paradises, up to the Demiurgus himself, the Isvara, and the brahmaloka, the sphere of Brahma, are per se fictitious, unreal, illusory. A sojourn in these paradiscs is promised to the religionist ; assimilation to these deities is promised to those that worship them with knowledge as well as with rites. Every man, the Indian schoolmen say, shall be assimilated to the deity he worships. The highest reward of obedience to sacred prescription and of worship of the deities is continuance in the brahmatoka till the end of an exon, "relative immortality," dpekshikam nityatvam. The only real immortality is extrication from metempsychosis, reunion with the impersonal self, to be reached not by works but by knowledge. They that delight in works, in rites, and the spheres won by

works, wander in darkness, are like the blind led by the blind. Works and worship are, however, necessary to purify the intellect of the aspiraut to extrication. The process of purification may go on through several successive lines. Good works performed without a view to recompense, and as an offering to the Demiurgus, pro- duce that purity of the internal faculties which is requisite to the knowledge that terminates in liberation from metempsychosis. They are thus instrumental to emancipation. Good works are necessary, says Sankaracharya, to the rise of the spiritual intuition ; they are unnecessary when it has once arisen. The qualified aspirant to liberation, the adhikdrin, must renounce all works, the good as well as the evil, for they serve only to prolong the series of his embodiments. It is thus that the popular religion is – taken up and fitted into the Vedanta philosophy. Karmavidyd is preliminary to brahmavidya.

Maya, the inexplicable illusion, self-imagined, has been the unreal adjunct, upadhi, illusorily overspread upon Brahman from all eternity. Brahman in its first connexion with ignorance or illusion is the Demiurgus, I'vara, Paramegvara, the constructive and superintending deity of the Vedantins. Before describing the process of things at a period of evolution, the couception of Brahman, the impersonal self, must be unfolded in the terms of the Vedanta.

Brahman is the one and real that underlies the many and ap- parent. It is ingenerable, immutable, incorruptible. It is the

YEpanT sé

ultimate residuum of abstraction, to be spoken of only under negative predicates, sarvanishedhavadhi. It transcends duality, the world of subject and object, jnatrijneyabhavatirikta. It is one only without internal and external differences. "There is nothing before it, nor after it, nor within it, nor without it." It is ever- lasting, objectless cognition, nityam nirvishayam jnanam. "Of the sight of the seer there is no intermission, for it is imperishable.' lt is no object of the understanding, and it cannot be expounded in language. '"' From it words turn back, with the thinking faculty, not reaching it." And this Brahman, this impersonal self, is I, aham brahmésmi.

The impersonal self, Brahman, is "existent, intelligence, beati- tude," sachchidananda :—existent, as imparting existence and manifestations to everything that is known and seems to be, sat- tasphaurtipradataya ; intelligence, as being self-luminous, as giving light to all things, making to appear all things that do appear, svaprakisaka, sarvavabhasaka ; beatitude, as exempt from all the miseries of metempsychosis, from evil, pain, and sorrow, a beati- tude in which there is no distinction between the bliss and the blissful subject, @nanda and dnandin, a beatitude like the repose of drcamless sleep. It is "ever pure, intelligent, and free," nitya- suddhabuddhamukta :—pure, as free from desire and aversion, and passionless, and as unaffected by illusory limitations, nirwpadhika ; intelligent, as irradiating all things, illuminating the otherwise dark or unconscious modifications of the sensories and intellects of personal spirits, and as illuminating the objects of those modifica- tions ; free, as unaffected by the experiences of those spirits, exempt from implication in the unreal. It is unmodifiable, and therefore neither knows, nor acts, uor suffers. All cognition, action, and passion belong to the unreal world of duality, and are the modifi- cations of the sensory and intellect of personal souls. These modi- fications would be dark, that is unconscious, but for the light of the underlying real self, in which they shine forth. In the absence of that real self the whole transmigratory order would be involved in blindness, tadabhave jagadandhyam prasajycta. It is the wit- ness,—that is, the inner light—of the cognitions of the intellects ofall personal souls, sarvabuddhipratyayasdkshin. It is "the light of lights beyond the darkness." "To it the sun gives no light, nor the moon and the stars, nor the lightning,—how then this fire? That, as it shines, all the world shines after. By the light of that all this world shines forth."

Brahman is said to abide especially within the heart, for it is there that the internal faculties are lodged, and it is by the light of Brahman that they are illumined. It is " the one spirit internal toall sentiencies," ekah sarvabhitantaratma. It is present to them all, as the one sun is mirrored upon many watery surfaces, as the ether one and indivisible in many water-jars. The personal sclf, the jivatman, is said to be resolved into the impersonal Brahman in three states,—in dreamless sleep, in a period of dissolution between two xons, and in emancipation. Dreamlcss sleep is called a "daily dissolution," dainandinah pralayah.

To Brahman alone belongs existence in the strict sense of the term, paramarthiki satta. It is; everything else appears to be. The things of daily life have a conventional existence, sufficient for acting upon, insufficient to the reason, vydvahariki satta. The silver seen upon the shell, the snake seen in the piece of rope, have an apparent existence, pratibhasiki satta. or the sage conven- tional existence is only apparent existence. At the foot of the scale of being stand things impossible or absurd, tuchcha, as the flowers of the sky, the horns of the hare.

Brahman is both the real and the operative cause of the world, the upadana and the nimitia. It is the real cause, inasmuch as the transmigratory series fictitiously overlies it. "Over this the sky, the earth, the welkin, are woven." "Illusion," says Sankar- acharya, "the ageregate of the powers ofall causes and effects, reposes upon Brahman, woven across and across it, as the potentiality of the banyan-tree reposes in the secd of the tree." "A fictitious object," says Anandagiri, "such as the snake seen in a piece of Tope, has a relatively real substratum in the piece of rope; the trausmigratory serics, unreal because phenomenal, has a real sub- Stance beneath it." Brahman is the operative cause of the world, inasmuch as the world-projecting illusion, inert of itself, becomes active by proximity to Brahman, as iron is set in motion by the loadstone, the iron being inert of itself, and the loadstone unmoved and unchanged.

A process of evolution is called a "differentiation under name and form," ndmaripavyakarana. Processes of evolution and of dissolution follow one another from eternity to eternity. Embodi- ments have proceeded from works, and works from embodiments, im a series without beginning, as plants proceed from seeds and seeds from plants. The series must proceed for each individual until he learns his real nature, and becomes re-immersed in the fontal umity. The one, the ultimate spiritual reality, is knowledge. The many is ignorance, the semblance of knowledge, fictitious Cognition, illusion. Ignorance is not mere privation of knowledge : it has a kind of being; it is a false identification of self with not- self, bhavaripam ajhanam, viparitajhanam ajhanam.

119

A process of evolution is as follows :—

(1) Brahman overspread with illusion manifests itself as Ivara, the Demiurgus. The illusion of Isvara is one with the illusion of each and every sentiency, and of all sentiencies, or jivas. It is at once one and many. As one itis the causal body of the Demiurgus; as many it is the beatific cnvolucra of sentiencies, their dnandama- yakosha, The Demiurgus and the sentiencies are one. Their state is a state of dreamless sleep, a state of beatitude. Isvara, the Demiurgus, is the first figment of the cosmical illusion. The Demiurgus allots to transmigrating spirits their several bodies and spheres of fruition, in accordance with the law of retribution, and retracts them into himself at the dissolution of the eon. Know- ledge of the real nature of his soul frees a man from all fear of Isvara.

(2) Brahman overspread with illusion next manifests itself as Hiranyagarbha. As one it manifests itself as Hiranyagarbha ; as many it is the sentieucies or jivas in the state of dreaming sleep, tatjasa. Illusion has two powers,—that with which it envelops the soul, hiding from it its proper nature, the dvaranasgakti, and that with which it projects the seeming bodies and their seeming spheres, the vikshepasakti. The elements, as yet imperceptible, come into being. Out of these the tenuous involucra, the vestures of the spirit in its passage from body to body, are evolved. Out of the imperceptible elements the perceptible are afterwards evolved. The soul clothed upon with a tenuous involucrum, and passing with it from body to body, from sphere to sphere, is the individual soul, the jzvatman. Hiranyagarbha is spirit identifying itself with the as yet imperceptible elements, and with the tenuous involucra. It passes through them as a thread passes through the beads of a necklace, and is called the thread-soul, Sitratman.

(3) Brahman overspread with illusion finally manifests itself as Vaisvanara or Virat. As one it is Vaisvanara, as many it is the sentiencics or jivas in the waking state, visva. Vaigvanara is the Purusha of the Purushasiikta: "A thousand heads has Purusha, a thousand eyes, a thousand feet." Purusha is Brahman, illusorily identifying itself with the perceptible elements, and with the bodies of all transmigrating spirits. Every sentiency, every man, in the waking state, is Brahman illusively identified with this or that visible and tangible organism. The perceptible are evolved out of the imperceptible elements by the process of

quintuplication, punchikarana. Each of the later of the five elements has the pro- perty of the earlier elements in addition to itsown. Ether has the property of sound ; air the properties of sound and tangibility ; fire the properties of sound, tangibility, and colour; water the properties of sound, tangibility, colour, and taste; earth the pro- perties of sound, tangibility, colour, taste, and smell. Of these elements the bodies of transmigrating spirits, and their several spheres of fruition, are composed.

Such is the order of evolution. An evolution is conceived by the Vedantins as an instantaneous process, rapid as a flash of light.

There are, then, three orders of intelligence in three states of ex- perience —(1) the Demiurgus, and the individual soul in the state of dreamless sleep ; (2) Hiranyagarbha, and the individual soul in the state of dreaming sleep; (3) Vaiévanara, and the individual soul in the waking state.

There are for these three orders of bodies—(1) the causal body of the Demiurgus, and the wrapper of bliss; (2) the tenuous in- volucra of transmigrating spirits—(these are made up of three wrappers, laid above the wrapper of bliss, viz., the cognitional wrapper, or the intellect and the organs of sense; the sensorial wrapper, or the common sensory and the organs of action; the respiratory wrapper, or the five vital airs, and the organs of action) ;—(8) the gross involucra, the visible and tangible bodies of transmigrating spirits, or nutrimentitious wrapper. Invested in these five successive wrappers, one above the other, the impersonal self manifests itself in the shape of innumerable sentiencies, as beast, as man, as god. It is present in all, as the one sun reflects itself upon many pools, as the one ether spreads itself through many water-jars. It is at the same time, apart from these illusory adjuncts, untouched with mundane sorrows, as the sun looks down upon the impurities of the earth without defilement.

Out of these successive involucra the individual soul, to extricate itself from metempsychosis, has to extract itself "like the pith out of areed." It extracts itself by returning to its proper nature. And to learn and recover his proper nature, his real self, a mau must purify his intellect, perhaps through several lives, and must put himself under a spiritual preceptor to

whom the Vedantic doc- trine has descended through an unbroken line of authorized expou- ents. Brahman is to be known by traditional exponents, uot by the mere exercise of the intellect. “ Not he that has not ceased from evil, not he that rests not from sensations, not he that is not concentrated, not he whose faculties are not quiescent, can reach that self by the intuition.” ‘This spiritual reality is not to be reached by learning, by memory, by much spiritual study. But if he choose this reality it may be reached by him; to him the self unfolds its own essence.”

The aspiraut to extrication, the mumukshu, must renounce every-

thing in this and in future spheres of fruition. He must become a sannyasin. In the words of the Brihadaranyaka Upanishad : ‘«They that know the breath of the breath, the eye of the eye, the ear of the ear, the thought of the thought, they have seen this fontal spirit, primeval, existing from before all time. It is to be seen with the intellect only. In it there is nought that is manifold. From death to death he goes that looks on this as manifold. It is to be seen in one way only. It is unthinkable, imperishable, un- sullied, beyond illusion. Unborn, infinite, imperishable, is Self. Let the patient Brahman know that and learn wisdom. — Let him not learn many words, for that is a weariness of the voice. This indeed is the great, Unborn Self. This it is that holy mendicants yearn after in setting out upon their wandering life. Yearning after this it was that the ancient sages desired no offspring, saying, ‘What have we to do with children, we to whom this spiritual reality belongs in the real sphere? They arose, and forsook the desire of children, of wealth, and of worldly existence, and set out as holy mendicants.’” The tardy aspirant, mandadhikarin, who seeks for gradual emancipation, kramamukft, is enjoined to mutter and to ponder incessantly upon the mystic syllable Om. This is said to be the nearest image of Brahman, to be identical with all words, and with all things. “They make mistake who leave me out, Me, when they fly, I am the wings; I am the doubter and the doubt, And I the hymn the Brahman sings.”

The spiritual preceptor proceeds by the way of “ illusory super- position, and the sublation of that superposition,” adhyaropaipava- danydyena.

Wlusory superposition is the viewing of the unreal, the fictitious series of souls and their environments, upon the one and only real. The sublation of this superposition is the position of the impersonal self, Brahman, as the sole reality, and the recogni- tion of the falsity of the fictitious illusion and of all its figments. The doctrine of sublation is expounded as follows in Nrisinhasaras- vati's Subodhini: "Sublation is the annulment of the series pro- ceeding from illusion. The states in this series are illusory emana- tions, vivertia, of Brahman, and to annul them is to abide as pure, undifferenced spirit. The apparent snake of the familiar example, seen by the belated wayfarer, illusorily proceeds from, or is fic- titiously produced upon, the piece of rope, without any change of nature taking place in the rope itself. It is sublated when the piece of rope resumes its proper shape. A thing may retain its own nature, and become otherwise than it was, in two manners, viz., by modification, parinéma, and by illusory emanation, v1- vartta. Moditication is when a thing really quits its proper form and takes another shape. Milk, for example, quits its proper form to take the form of curds and whey. Illusory emanation is where a thing, without quitting its proper form, takes another and a fic- titious shape. The piece of rope takes the fictitious appearance of a snake without quitting its proper form: it remains a piece of rope. The transmigratory series is not allowed in the Vedanta to be a modification of Brahman. Brahman, if modified as the milk is modified, would be mutable, and therefore perishable. The doc- trine of illusory emanation is not exposed to this difficulty. The series superposed on Brahman being fictitious, Brahman remains unchanged. A fictitious thing, then, is said to be sublated when only the real thing abides upon which it was imposed. The trans- migratory series is sublated when only the pure intelligence re- mains upon which it was fictitiously outspread."

By eontinuous contemplation the aspirant refunds each entity into the entity from which it emanated, till he passes beyond illu- sion to the fontal unity of undifferenced spiritual existence. He follows the order of dissolution, the inverse of the order of evolution, till he arrives at Brahman. He thus realizes the import of the great text, the mahdvakya, "that art thou," tat tvam asi (Chhan- dogya Upanishad, sixth Prapathaka). Particular souls are one with the universal soul, the Demiurgus, and the universal soul is one with Brahman. This knowledge

is the last and highest of cog- nitions, the final modification of the aspirant's intellect as it melts away into the fontal unity. This is the phalitam brahma, "the resultant impersonal self." The phalitam brahma is a modification of the aspirant's sensorium, his antahkarana, and passes away, that the impersonal self, the supreme spirit, may alone remain. He to whose inner faculties this vision is present has the spiritual intuition. samyagdarsana, He is extricated but alive, jivanmukta, and remains in the body till those merits are exhausted which have led to his present life. Disengaged from metempsychosis, and still in the body, the perfected sage is said to be untouched by merit and demerit, unsoiled by sin, uninjured by anything he does or leaves undone. No evil, the scholiasts say, arises from this freedom, as the purificatory virtues of the aspirant cling to the accomplished scer,—his humility, his sincerity, his tenderness to all, remaining upon him like ornaments even after the rise of the spiritual intui. tion. Finally his body falls away, and his spirit is freed for ever. It abides in itself. It is undifferenced existence, undifferenced intelligence, undifferenced beatitude. This is the consummation of brahmavidya.

VED—VED

The soul has found itself, has loosed itself, not that in verity it was ever lost or bound. From the highest point of view bondage and liberation, implication and extrication, are unreal. The Vedantins compare the individual spirit seeking to regain its im- personal nature to one searching for that which he unwittingly carries about with him, to a man trembling at his own shadow. The soul of the finished sage knows itself, and therefore is itself, In the words of the Mundaka Upanishad: " Burst are his heart's ties, broken his doubts, his merits spent, when he has seen the principle supreme at once and not supreme. In the golden, perfect involucrum is the unsullied Self, without parts, luminous, which they know that know the soul." " As all rivers flowing onwards disappear in the sea, quitting name and form, so the sage extricated from name and form enters into the self-luminous spirit beyond the last of things, beyond illusion." In the words of the Brihadar- anyaka: "He that knows it is no longer sullied by evil deeds, Repressing his scnses, quiescent, free from all desires, ready to suffer all things, his thoughts fixed, he sees within

himself the Self, the universal soul. Imperfection reaches him no more; he passes beyond imperfection. He burns up all his imperfection. He that knows Brahman becomes free from imperfection, free from uncertainty, insphered in Brahman. This same great, unborn, Self is undecaying, undying, imperishable, beyond all fear. Brah- man is beyond all fear. He that knows this becomes the spiritual reality beyond all fear," (A. E. G.)

VEDAS. See BRAHMANISM and SANSKRIT LITERATURE.

VEDDAUHS, or Weppaus, that is, " Hunters," a primi- tive people of Ceylon, probably representing the Yakkos of Sanskrit writers, who appear to have been the true aborigines and the sole inhabitants of the island prior to the Hindu conquest. During the Dutch occupation (1644- 1796) they were met in scattered groups as far north as Jaffna, but are now confined to the south-eastern district, about the wooded Bintenne, Badulla, and Nilgala Hills, and thence to the coast near Batticaloa. They constitute three distinct social groups—the coast people, who are settled and partly civilized, freely intermingling with their Singhalese neighbours ; the wild or rock people, who keep entirely aloof, living exclusively on the produce of the chase; and the willage people, semi-nomad agriculturists, intermediate in every respect between the other two. The Veddahs are thus in a state of transition from the lowest to a relatively high degree of culture; and their physical appearance gives evidence of their intermediate position between the aboriginal and the intruding races of Ceylon. Virchow! finds (1) that the Veddahs and Singhalese have much in common, which is probably due to the inter- mingling of the aborigines with the Hindu immigrants, as is also suggested by historic and anthropological considera- tions ; (2) that both differ very decidedly from the Tamils of north Ceylon and south India ; (3) that the Veddahs show certain analogies with the small dark pre-Dravidian element in this region, which De Quatrefages calls "'Ne- grito," and which Huxley groups with his ' Australoid" division of mankind. The true Veddahs of Bintenne are almost a dwarfish race, averaging about 5 feet (men, 5 feet 2 inches ; women, 4 feet 10 inches), with correspondingly low cranial capacity, narrow high skull like the Papuan (index 70), mesognathous jaw, slightly prominent cheek- bones, straight, but shaggy rather than lank, black hair, and features altogether more Hindu than Negroid,

although of somewhat darker complexion than the ordinary olive- brown Singhalese. They wander about in small family groups, which have not reached the tribal state, being absolutely destitute of any political or communal organi- zation whatsoever. Their dwellings are the caves of the rocks or the forest trees; they clothe themselves with foliage ; and they devour uncooked vermin, reptiles, and whatever other quarry they are able to capture with their rude weapons. It is stated that they can neither count, mark the succession of time, nor distinguish colours; but what is more certain is that they never laugh, in this respect differing from nearly all other races. They also

1 Ueber die Weddas von Ceylon und thre Bexiehungen zu den Nach- barsténmen, Berlin, 1882.

appear to be the only savage people who speak an Aryan language, for their present speech at least seems to be a degraded form of Singhalese, consisting mainly of Sanskrit intermingled with Dravidian elements. This circumstance

has given rise to the theory that the Veddahs are a de-

graded group of Hindu outcastes, whereas they call them-

selves the "sons of kings," and claim to belong to a superior

caste, a claim which, strange to say, appears to be admitted by their neighbours. Their religion has been described as a kind of demon- worship, consisting of rude dances and shouts raised to scare away the evil spirits, whom they con- found with their ancestors. But these "demons" and "spirits" are purely anthropomorphic beings ; of a super-

natural order as understood by more cultured peoples they

have no idea. Owing to an increasingly low birth-rate, the Veddahs are disappearing as a distinct ethnical group ;

even including the Rhodiyas of the western uplands they

numbered only 2284 in 1886 (Ferguson's Directory). But they should not be confounded with these Rhodiyas, who, although true outcastes, are nevertheless a much finer race, tall, well-proportioned, with regular features, and speak a language said to be radically distinct from all the Aryan and Dravidian dialects current in Ceylon. There is, how- ever, in Travancore, on the mainland, a low-caste "Veda" tribe, nearly black, with wavy or frizzly hair, and now speaking a Malayalim (Dravidian) dialect (Jagor), who probably approach nearer than the insular Veddahs to the aboriginal pre-Dravidian '"Negrito" element of southern India and Malaysia.

VEGA CARPIO, Lopr Fetrx pr (1562-1635), Spanish dramatist and poet, was born on 25th November 1562 at Madrid, in a house in the Platerias or jewellers' quarter adjoining the Puerta de Guadalajara. His father and mother, Felix de Vega and Francisca Hernandez, belonged to the lesser provincial nobility, and originally came from the valley of Carriedo in Asturias, where the hamlet of Vega still exists. How they came by the illustrious name of Carpio is not very clear; the family tradition which made them descendants of the famous Bernardo seems insufficiently supported. Lope himself frankly ridiculed the aristocratic pretensions of his parents; but this did not prevent him from invariably signing his comedies at full length as Lope de Vega Carpio. Lope began his studies in the imperial college, the principal establishment of the Jesuits in Madrid, where he was instructed in grammar and rhetoric. His precocity was extraordinary and his memory astounding. At five he read not only Spanish but Latin, and already showed such a passion for poetry that he would give up part of his meals to the older boys in exchange for their services in writing out verses to his dictation. It was not the way of the Jesuits to turn out pedants ; educators of the nobility, their single aim was to make their pupils accomplished men of the World, and accordingly Lope learned with them, besides the ordinary book-lessons, the accomplishments of singing and dancing and fencing. On leaving college —where he had been guilty of an escapade of some sort along with one of his companions—he was placed by his parents, who were far from wealthy, in the service of Don Gerénimo Manrique, bishop of Avila. Such

an arrangement did not at that time involve any sacrifice of dignity : it was almost the only resource open to a multitude of needy gentlemen, hidalgos, who, to avoid entering a trade, which would have compromised their position, found in the palaces of the higher aristocracy, first as pages and afterwards as secre- taries, the wherewithal to pasar la vida, as the phrase ran. Tn the service of Don Gerénimo, Lope appears to have begun the composition of his earlier dramas. But after a while he quitted the bishop's service to enter the university of Alcal4, where for four years he devoted himself to what

was then honoured with the name of philosophy, crammed his brain with names and citations from ancient writers, and acquired the habit of disputing in accordance with the formulz of the schools. It was then that he accumulated the materials for the pedantic dissertations with which the prefaces to his various works are encumbered, in which he so complacently displays everything that he has remembered of his university days. Leaving Alcal4 with the degree of bachelor in arts, Lope became secretary to the duke of Alva. Some time afterwards, about 1584, he married Isabel de Urbina, daughter of a herald-at-arms of Philip II. An incident such as he often afterwards reproduced in his plays soon arose to disturb the union. Some one who had spoken ill of Lope, and had in turn been severely lampooned by the poet, challenged him. In the encounter Lope wounded his opponent ; but he was unable to put himself right with the law and was compelled to take to flight. Perhaps he may have had upon his con- science some other peccadilloes which prejudiced him in the eyes of his judges, as seems to be hinted in Montal- ban's words, " This vexatious affair, and certain other bad turns of fortune, . . . compelled him to leave hig home, his country, and his wife." He retired to Valencia, where he met with an enthusiastic reception from a group of young poets, who were destined afterwards to range them- selves under the banner of the creator of the new comedy. After the lapse of two years Lope returned to Madrid 3 but in 1588 his wife died after giving birth toa daughter, who did not long survive her mother. The death of his wife and daughter were doubtless what now led him to

join the Invincible Armada, in which expedition he had

one of his brothers shot dead by his side. Once more at Madrid, he again entered service, becoming secretary, first to the marquis of Malpica and afterwards to the duke of Lemos. Meanwhile he married a second wife, Juana de Guardio, a Madrilefia, by whom he had two children (Carlos, who died in infancy, and Feliciana Felix) ; but she died, shortly after giving birth to the latter, in 1612. During this wife's lifetime the poet had by a mistress, Maria de Luxan, two other children,—Marcela del Carpio, who became a nun, and Lope Felix del Carpio y Luxan, who chose the profession of arms and perished at sea at the age of fifteen. Widowed a second time, Lope, like many other men of letters of the period, sought a refuge in the church. After a period of initiation, and after hav- ing been for some time affiliated to a tertiary order, he took priest's orders. At this juncture, that is to say, about 1614, he was in the very zenith of his glory. A veritable dictator and pope in the Spanish world of letters, he wielded over all the authors of his nation a sort of magisterial power similar to that which was exercised in France at a later period by Voltaire. At this distance of time we fail to see in Lope anything more than a great dramatic poet, the founder of the Spanish theatre; but to his contemporaries he was a great deal more. His epics, his pastorals, his odes, his sonnets, buried though they now are in oblivion, all placed him in the front rank of authorship. Such was his prestige that he dealt with his noble patrons almost on a footing of equality. The duke of Sesa in particular, his last Mzcenas, was also his per- sonal friend, and the tone of the letters addressed to him by the poet is that of a frank familiarity, modified only by some forms of deference,—a fact sufficiently striking to be worthy of notice at a time when talent, however great, in no way diminished differences of rank, and when the man of letters under the protection of a patron was neither more nor less than a kind of domestic in the house of a grand seigneur. Lope's fame, too, had travelled abroad : foreigners of distinction passing through Madrid made a point of visiting him; papal legates brought him the XXIV. — 16

compliments of their master; in 1627 Urban VIII, a: Barberini, sent him the diploma of doctor of theology in the Collegium Sapientiz and the cross of the order of St John of Jerusalem (whence the poet's titles of Doctor and Frey). Since Lope's correspondence with the duke of Sesa has made us acquainted with the closing period of his life, we may well ask whether his retirement within the church was the result of any genuine vocation, and up to what point his devotion was sincere. It Is difficult to avoid inquiring whether it may not have been due to a mere selfish desire for tranquillity, a desire to protect himself against any further reverse of fortune. This feel- ing may very well have had something to do with his decision ; still it would be unjust to regard Lope as nothing better than a mere hypocrite. Certainly he was far from being an ideal priest; we now know something of the nature of the services which he often rendered to the duke of Sesa, and we know how lightly he held one of his most sacred vows, maintaining for a long period illicit re- lations with Marta de Nevares Santoyo, a married woman, by whom he even had a daughter, who was baptized very publicly at San Sebastian in Madrid (26th August 1617), the son of the duke of Sesa acting as godfather. But, on the other hand, we must not forget his penitence, frequently expressed in touching terms, the sincerity of which ought to be above suspicion: 'Mal haya amor que se quiere oponer al cielo!" He has a claim also to our pity for having been at an advanced age the victim of foolish passion which his extreme mobility of character and his utter want of balance made him unable to resist: "Yo nac{i en dos extremos que son amar y aborrecer; no he tenido medio jamas." His last years were years of severe penance: Montalban tells us that every Friday the poet scourged himself so severely that the walls of his room were sprinkled with his blood. His death, on 27th August 1635, was followed by national mourning. The duke of Sesa, his executor, was chief mourner; the nobility and the church were represented by high digni- taries; the populace crowded the streets. After the funeral came a multitude of funeral orations and of pane- gyrics in prose and verse. Montalban has collected into a volume the tributes of posthumous admiration thus paid by Spanish authors; another collection was printed in Italy under the auspices of Marini.

In the intercourse of everyday life, in his relations with his con- temporaries, Lope was affable and kindly. He sometimes defended himself

when attacked, especially on the subject of his dramatic writings, but always in measured terms and without any pretence that his high position exempted him from criticism by his less successful rivals. Some severe and unjust criticisms on other writers, notably on Cervantes, are quoted against him; but it is only fair to remember that they occur in letters to his intimates and that it is not necessary to regard them as deliberate. It would be just as fair to set him down as an enemy of the secular clergy because in writing to the duke of Sesa he on one occasion expressed himself thus freely about the monks: " Los frailes son los hombres mas discretos del mundo: no van a la guerra, ni pagan millones gozan lo mejor, y danles dineros, . . . ellos hacen hijos y otros los crian, perdone lo descalzo." It would indeed be more just to reproach him with his universal and uniform indulgence, which he extends to all, great and small, good and bad, and 'with his mania for praising in hyperbolical and extravagant terms. He loved all the arts, particularly painting ; his little house in the Calle de Francos was full of pictures. He himself writes to a friend in 1619: " With some garden flowers, half-a-dozen pictures, and a few books, I live without envy, without desire, without fear, and without hope" (dedication of El Alcalde Mayor). But his 'most marked taste was for flowers. He had a small garden, which he himself tended with jealous care ; he sought out rare species and tried to acclimatize in Spain varieties of plants sent by his friends from abroad. In particular he was a tulip-fancier; hence his dedication of Lucinda Perseguida to Manuel Sueiro, a Spaniard resident in Flanders who had supplied him with fine specimens. Tending this garden became the great occupation of his old age ; he watered it with his own hands, and, according to Montalban the chill which led to his death was caught while he was thus engaged.

Cr a

One can easily detect in his writings the traces of this taste. It is not that he had in a higher degree than his contemporaries the feeling for nature, but the form, the colour, the perfume of flowers largely supply him with his figures and metaphors—his flowers of rhetoric, in short. It is to be regretted that this delicate taste of his, a taste very rare in Spain, where flowers and trees have never been greatly cared for, should have contributed rather to augment than to lessen the elaborateness,

pomposity, and affecta- tion of his style. But these faults were shared by all the writers of that age. In his comedies, for example, where he does not pique himself on a fine style and does not attempt to take the Latins or the Italians for his models, his language is, if not nervous and self-restrained, at least limpid and flowing, in this respect contrast- ing very favourably with the florid and laboured style of his epics and prose pastorals. Viewed broadly, and leaving out of account certain theories which in the long run greatly influenced his manner of writing, Lope belouged in literature to what may be called the school of good sense ; he made it his boast that he was a Spaniard pur sang, and steadfastly maintained that a writer's business is to write so as to make himself understood. When brought face to face with the coterie of the précieux and quintessenciés, the 'cultos," and "criticos," and "conceptistas," Lope takes the position of a defender of the language of ordinary life, the good old Castilian tongue. In the dispute which arose between the partisans of the two schools of "cultos" or "culteranos" and "llanos," the dramatist ranged himself on the side of the latter. In the matter of versification he refuses to admit that the long Italian verse has the advantage of the Castilian octosyllabic: "No pienso que cl verso largo Italiano haga ventaja al nuestro, que si en Espafia lo dizen es porque, no sabiendo hazer el suyo, se passan al estrangero como mas largo y licencioso. . . . Qué cosa iguala 4 una redondilla de Garci Sanchez 6 Don Diego de Mendoza?" (Preface to Isidro). Unfortunately the books that he read, his literary connexions, his fear of being unfavourably judged by the Italians, all exercised an influence upon his naturally robust spirit, and, like so many others, he caught the prevalent contagion of mannerism and of empty and pompous phraseology. In his studies at the imperial college and at Alcala Lope had never found his way up to the truest and highest sources of the beautiful; he had never attempted Greek, but had contented himself with Latin, which he chose to regard as the only ancient tongue which a man of letters needed to learn. To his natural son, Lope Felix del Carpio, when enter- ing upon his Latin studies, he wrote, "So you have begun to grapple with the rudiments? It is one of the things which cannot possibly be avoided ; but, for all that, if I could find some one to teach you your own language well, I should be quite satisfied, for I have seen too many of those who, having learned Latin, are ignorant of their native tongue and aflect to despise everything written in the vulgar idiom. What

presumption to forget that the Greeks did not write in Latin or the Latins in Greek! I con- fess I laugh whenever I see men giving themselves out for Latin poets who write in their own language like mere barbarians ; and I conclude that they cannot possibly have been born poets, for the true poet (there is not more than one, they say, in a generation) writes in his own language, and it is therein that he shows his excellence,—witness Petrarch in Italy, Rousard in France, and Garcilaso in Spain. Nevertheless I do not wish to discourage you from learning that queen of languages (Latin), the third in the world in point of antiquity. Try to know it as well as you can, my son, but by no means learn Greek, for I would not have you like those who strut and give themselves airs because they have acquired a smattering of it. Greek tends too much to vanity, and what is the use of learning a language which is known to so few ?" After thus warning his son against the dangers of Greek, Lope adds other counsels which reveal to us his feelings towards his own bygone days. " Have but few books, and those choose with care ; diligently observe the thoughts they contain, and do not let any- thing noteworthy pass without a mark on the margin. Should it be your misfortune to become a maker of verses (which God forbid !) try at least not to make that your chief occupation, nor let it divert you from more important matters, for therein you will spend your time to no profit. The less of verse you make the more you will be esteemed and appreciated. You need only take an example from me. Certainly you will never be able to render more services than I have done to so many patrons, and see to what my diligence — has brought me,—to the smallest of houses, a narrow bed, a poor table, and a patch of garden, the flowers of which dispel my cares and supply mie with ideas." Lope knew only Latin, but this he knew well. Yet, instead of filling himself with the spirit of antiquity, and purifying his taste by contact with its literary masters, he regarded their writings as nothing more than re- pertories of beautiful and out-of-the-way expressions. After the Latins Lope turned by preference to the Italians. Like every other Spanish man of letters of his time, he had been reared ou Italian literature: he knew intimately the works of its great poets of the Renaissance, especially Ariosto and Tasso, as well as Sau- nazaro, the last-named of whom he imitated on several occasions ;

yeached him from that quarter.

he kept a steady watch upon all that was published in Italy, eultivated carefully the eonnexions he had established with Italian writers of repute, and was always flattered by the eulogies which

His principal friend and eorre-

spondent in Italy was the Neapolitan poet, G. B. Marini, one of the worst corrupters of Italian literature (see vol. xiii. p. 511). He puts himself at Marini's feet, calls him antistes Musarwm and Ttaliez decos, sends him his portrait, and humbly begs his in- dulgence for a drama which he has been so bold as to dedicate to him (see dedication to Virtud, Pobreza, y Muger). Lope knew French also, and his works give evidence of an acquaintance with French poetry of the 16th and 17th centuries such as is rare in Spain ; he oceasionally quotes Ronsard and Malherbe, and shows solicitude as to French opinion about his dramatic writings. In a word, his literary culture was chiefly Latin-Italian ; and, if he defends the tradition of the nation, and the pure simplicity of the old Castilian against "los de la nueva poesia," that is to say, the innovators of the school of Gongora, and against the jargon of the "cultos," still he does not wish to be taken for an unin- formed person, for a mere casual litterateur devoid of classical training: he especially emphasizes the fact that he has passed through the university, and is continually accentuating the differ-

ety

ence between the

ingenios cientificos" (those who know Latin)

and "legos ignorantes" (ignorant laymen). With what a sense of superiority, for example, does he mention that Cervantes was not to his mind sufficiently "cientifico" (preface to Las Fortunas de Diana), the fact being that Cervantes had been neither at Alcala

nor at Salamanca !

For a rapid survey of the works of Lope, it is convenient to begin with those which the Spaniards include under the name of Obras Sueltas, the title of the large collection of the poet's non-dramatic works (Madrid, 21 vols. 4to, 1776-79). We shall enumerate the most important of these, as far as possible in the order of publication. The Arcadia (1598), a pastoral romance, composed at the instanee of the duke of Alva, and inspired by Sannazaro, Montemayor, and Cervantes, is one of the poet's feeblest

and most wearisome productions.

Isidro (1599), anarrative of the

hfe of Isidore, patron of Madrid, is ealled a Castilian poem on account of the rhythm in which it is composed,—quintillas of octo- syllabic verse. The Hermosura de Angélica (1602), in three books, isa sort of continuation of the Orlando Furioso, in octaves after the fashion of the original poem. Similar in form is La Dragontea, a fantastic history of the last expedition and the death of Sir Francis Drake, who was sueh a terror to the fleets and the coast of Spain that his name had become a synonym for that of the evil one. Finally the Rimas are a miscellany of short pieces. In 1604 was published the Peregrino en su Patria, a romance in prose and verse, similar in kind to the Zthiopica of Heliodorus; it is a mediocre work, but of great bibliographical interest, on account of its authentic lst of the comedies which Lope recognized as having been written by him up to that date, a list whieh he augmented by 114 new titles in the 1618 edition of the novel. The more Lope composed poetry the more he went to the Italian poets for inspiration, labouring to show that the mechanism of the Italian octave was as familiar to him as that of the national redondilla. Having imitated Ariosto, he proeeeded to imitate Tasso; but his Jerusalem Conquis- tada (1609) has preserved nothing of the art shown in its model, and isa dull and insipid performance. Little need be said about the Pastores de Belen (1612), a sort of pious pastoral, dedicated to his son Carlos, which forms a pendant to his secular Arcadia, or about the incidental pieces which he published in eonnexion with the solemnities of the beatification and canonization of St Isidore in 1620 and 1622. And it is cnough simply to mention La Filomena (1621), La Ciree (1624), and other poems published about the same date, as also

the four prose novels, Las Fortunas de Diana, El Des- dichado por la Honra, La Mas Prudente Venganza, and Guzman el Lravo. The great success of the Novelas Egemplares of Cervantes (1613) had stimulated Lope, who wished to measure himself with the author of Don Quixote on the field of the novel; and, as this literary form had been borrowed from the Italians, he expected to achieve a success as great as that which he supposed to be already his in the fields of pastoral romance and epic poetry. But in this Instanee at least the "cientifico" was eompletely defeated by the "lego": Lope's novels have none of the grace, naturalness, or interest whieh charaeterize those of his rival. The last important work which has to be mentioned before we leave the narrative poetry of Lope is the Lawrel de Apolo (1630). This piece deseribes the coronation of the poets of Spain on Helieon by Apollo. All of them—good, middling, and bad—share in the ceremonial, and 'mong the poets properly so called appear some other men of letters, certain important personages to whom Lope felt under obligations, Which eould not be more satisfactorily paid than in the current coin of verse which he had so readily at his eommand. This work 18 more meritorious as a bibliographical manual of Spanish poetry at that time than as genuine poetry. One other "obra suelta,"

ing a drama, is La Dorotea (1682).

closely akin to Lope's dramatic works, though not properly speak-

Lope describes it as an "action

in prose," but it is rather a "romance in dialogue"'; for, although divided into aets, the narrative has nothing dramatic about it ex- eept its outward form ; and on account of its size and the digres- sions with which it is encumbered it has never suceeeded in finding its way to the stage. It belongs to the class of whieh Celestina is the type, in so far as one of the principal characters, La Gerarda, is a go-between ; but Lope has amplified his model, idealized it, and purged away much of the grossness belonging to the mean sur- roundings of the eharacter of the original Celestina and common to the numerous works of the 16th and 17th centuries to which it gave rise. Of all Lope's productions Dorotea is undoubtedly that which shows most observation and study; the style also is unusually simple and easy. The attempt has sometimes been made to

dis- cover in the adventures of Fernando, one of its heroes, allusions to Lope's early youth ; but there is nothing conclusive in any of the supposed eoincidences between fact and fiction which Fauriel and others after him have sought to establish. Of all this mass of Obras Sueltas, filling more than twenty volumes, very little (leaving Dorotea out of aceount) holds its own in the impartial judgment of posterity. The long epic or narrative poems are quite unreadable, and almost the same must be said of the pastorals and novels. The lyrical element alone retains some vitality. From the Rimas and other eollections of detached pieees one eould compile a pleasing anthology of sonnets, epistles, elegies, and romances, to whieh it would be proper to add the Gatomaquia, a burlesque poem pub- lished along with other metrieal pieces in 1634 by Lope under the pseudonym of Tomé de Burguillos. But here the list would have to stop.

It is, however, to his dramatic writings that Lope owes his very considerable place in literary history. It is very curious to notice how he himself seizes every available oceasion for depreciating the work of the drama, treats the art of comedy-writing as one of the humblest of trades (de pane lwerando), and protests against the supposition that in writing for the stage his aim is glory and not money.! The reason is not far to seek. The Spanish drama, which, if not literally the creation of Lope, at least owes to him its defini- tive form—the three-aet eomedy—was totally regardless of the pre- eepts of the school, the pseudo-Aristotelianism of the doctors of the period. Lope accordingly, who stood in awe of the criticism of the " cientificos," felt bound to let them see that, from the point of view of literary art, he attaehed no value to the "'rustie fruits of his humble vega." In his Arte Nuevo de Hacer Comedias en Este Tienvpo, which was published in 1609 and is the Ars Poetica of the new school, Lope begins by showing that he knows as well as any onc the established rules of poetry, and then exeuses himself for his in- ability to follow them on the ground that the " vulgar" Spaniard eares nothing about them. " Let us then speak to him in the language of fools, since it is he who pays us." Under such condi- tions all that the dramatic poet can do is to plan ingenious plots, so as adroitly to sustain the interest and retard as long as possible the denouement, for nothing is more displeasing to the ordinary public than to be able to divine too soon the solution of the problem set

before them on the boards of the theatre. Such, with a few pieces of advice as to the choice of metres and the costuine of the actors, is the recipe for the new or free comedy, a barbarous kind- of literature, according to Lope, and outside the region of art, yet the only drama possible in Spain.? Another reason, more scrious still, which made it neeessary for him to speak deprecatingly of his dramatic works is the eircumstanee that the vast majority of them were written in haste and to order, precisely like so many feuilleton romances of Alexandre Dumas; they are for the most part comedias de repente, hurriedly conceived at the request of some grandee or of some impresario or manager. The poet does not hesitate to con- fess that "more than a hundred of my comedies have taken only twenty-four hours to pass from my brain to the boards of the theatre." Perez de Montalban, who has a great admiration for this kind of eleverness, tells how, at Toledo, on a certain oceasion, Lope eomposed fiftecn acts in fifteen days—that is to say, five entire comedies, which he read to his friends step by step. with the process of their composition. On another occasion, when pressed by a manager who wanted something for the carnival, Lope took Mon- talban asa eollaborateur ; the two friends parcelled out the eomedy between them, Lope undertaking the first act, Montalban the second, and the third, to save time, was divided between them. In two days they had finished the first two acts, and on the third Mon talban rose at two in the morning and at eleven he had finished. Then he went in search of Lope, who, when questioned as to his progress, replied: "I got up at five, finished the aet, break- fasted, wrote an epistle of fifty tercets, and have now finished watering the garden, and a rather tough business it has been. This is not art; it is handicraft, and one understands why Lope sometimes found it prudent to lay stress on the fact that his come- dies had been written for the ears of spectators, not for readers in ere ee ee ee ee

1 Algunos que piensan que las escribo por opinion ; desengafieles V. M. y digales que por dinero. A

2 Las comedias de Espana no guardanelarte . . . porque con aquel rigor de ninguna manera fueran oidas de los Espafioles.

their studies.1 Nevertheless, he did write some dramas in which the plan is more fully matured and the execution more carefully carried out; still, hurried composition and reckless production are after all among the most distinctive marks of his theatrical works. 'Towards the close of his career Lope somewhat modified the severe and disdainful judgments he had formerly passed upon his dramatic performanees; he seems to have had a presentiment that posterity, in spite of the grave defects of his work in that de- partment, would nevertheless place it much higher than the Jeru- salem Conquistada, La Dragontea, and other works of which he himself thought so much. In his Hgloga & Claudio, which is, so to say, his literary last will and testament, he claims to have becn a creator: "It is to ine that the art (of comedy) owes its beginnings, although I have departed from the strictness of Terence, and do not fora moment pretend to deny the part which belongs to the three or four great geniuses who have watched over the infancy of the drama. To whom are we indebted, Claudio, for so many de- lineations of love and jealousy, so many moving pieces of eloquence, such a copious supply of all the fignres which rhetoric has ever been able to invent? All that is produced to-day is nothing but imita- tion of what art created yesterday. The path,—it is I who have opened it up and made it practicable, and everybody now traverses it with ease. It was I who gave the example which is followed and copied on all hands." We may certainly credit Lope with creative power, with the instinct which enabled him to reprodnce the facts of history or those supplied by the imagination ina multi- tude of dramatic situations with an astonishing cleverness and flexi- bility of expression ; but unfortunately, instead of concentrating his talent upon the production of a limited number of works which he might have brought to perfection, he dissipated it, so to say, and scattered it to the winds.

The catalogue of Lope's comedies has been drawn up by himself; and, in spite of some discrepancies in his figures, it is established that up to 1604 he had composed, in round numbers, as many as 230. In 1609 the figure had risen to 500, in 1618 to 800, in 1620 to 900, im 1625 to 1070, and in 1632 to 1500. Ultimately Montalban in his general survey published in 1636 (Fama Posthuma) set down the total of Lope's dramatic productions at 1800 comedies and 400 autos sacramentales. Of this number there are nearly 608 comedies of which the text is extant, or which are at least

known to us by their titles (from the lists of the Peregrino) ; but the printed or MS. text of only 439 is actually accessible, besides some 40 autos and a few entremeses. Very many of these pieces were printed during Lope's lifetime, either in collections of varios autores or as separate issues by booksellers who bought from the actors in an underhand way the manuscripts of their réles or else caused the unpublished comedy to be written down from memory by persons whom they sent to attend the first representation. Such pieces therefore as do not figure in the collection published under Lope's own direction or under that of his friends cannot be regarded as perfectly authentic, and it would be unfair to hold their author responsible for all the faults and defects they exhibit. On the other hand, there exist in various libraries entire comedies in Lope's own handwriting which have never been printed.

The classification of this enormous mass of dramatic literature is a task of great difficulty, inasmuch as the terms usually employed, such as comedy, tragedy, and the like, do not apply here. There is not explicitness enough in the division current in Spain, which recognizes three categories :—(1) comedias de capa y espada, the subjects of which are drawn from everyday life and in which the persons appear as simple caballeros ; (2) comedias de ruido or de teatro, in which kings and princes are the leading characters and the action is accompanied with a greater display of dramatic maehin- ery ; (3) comedias divinas or de santos. Some other arrangement must be attempted. In the first place Lope's work belongs essenti- ally to the drama of intrigue; be the subject what it may, it is always the plot that determines everything else, not the delinea- tion of manners or of character. Lope in the whole range of his dramatic works has not a single piece comparable to La Verdad Sospechosa of Alarcon, the most finished example in Spanish litera- ture of the comedy of character ; and what is called the comedy of manners is no better represented : only El Rufian Castrucho, El Anzuelo de Fenisa, and one or two others can be named. It is from history, and particularly Spanish history, that he has borrowed more than from any other source. It would in fact be difficult to say what national and patriotic subjects, from the reign of the half fabulous King Pelayo down to the history of his own age, he has not put upon the stage. Sometimes he contents himself with serv- ing up old chronicles afresh or stringing together fragments of

old popular songs, as in El Bastardo Mudarra, with inventing here and there a few secondary characters when the original material is not sufficiently rich and complicated, as in Las Doneellas de Simancas Los Benavides, El Casamicnto en la Muerte, and many others or sometimes even with clothing with complete dramatic action one

1 No las escrivi.. . para que de los oydos del teatro se trasladaran a la censura de los aposentos.

single fact of history, as in one of his most famous plays, La Estrella de Sevilla, in Porfiar hasta Morir, in El Mejor Alcalde el Rey, and others. Even current events as they took place under his eyes furnished him with motives. In an age when people read but little, the theatre was a channel of information and a means of rousing patriotic sentiment. A victory of the Spanish arms in Flanders or the success of hardy adventurers in planting the royal banner of Castile in some virgin land in the West,— events like these promptly gave rise toa comedy. On the basis of any sort of report of battle or conquest Lope improvises a dramatic action, or at least a narrative in dialogue. Thus under the title of La Mayor Victoria de Ale- nania he describes a victory won in the Palatinate by Don Gonzalo de Cordoba, brother of the duke of Sesa, his patron. Such are the principal varieties of historical or heroic comedy. But it is to the class of capa y espada—also called novelesco, because the subjects are almost always love intrigues complicated with affairs of honour— that Lope's most cclebrated plays belong. In these he has most fully displayed his powers of imagination (the subjects being all invented) and his skill in elaborating a plot. Among the plays of this class which are those best known in Europe, and most frequently imitated and translated, may be specially mentioned Los Ramilletes de Madrid, La Boba para los Otros y Discreta para st, El Perro del Hortelane, La Viuda de Valencia, and El Maestro de Danzar. In some of them Lope has sought to set forth some moral maxim, and illustrate its abuse by a living example. Thus, on the theme that "' poverty is no crime," we have the play entitled Las Flores de Don Juan, in which he shows in the history of two brothers the triumph of virtuous poverty over opulent vice; at the same time he attacks

indirectly the institution of primogeniture, which often places in the hands of an unworthy person the honour and substance of a family when the younger members would be much better quali- fied for the trust. Such pieces are, however, rare in Lope's repertory ; in common with all other writers of his order in Spain, with the occasional exception of Alarcon, his sole aim is to amuse and stir his public, not troubling himself about its instruction. The strong point of such writers is and always will be their management of the plot. As has been said by Le Sage, a good judge: 'The Spaniards are our masters in the art of planning and skilfully work- ing outa plot ; they know howto set forth their subject with infinite art and in the most advantageous light." It is not necessary to dwell here upon the other varieties of comedy represented in Lope's works, that is, the comedias divinas, fiestas Qnythological dramas for the most part), entremeses, and autos. In none of them has he produced anything of the highest order, or even comparable to the better performances of his contemporaries and successors.

To sum up, Lope found a poorly organized draina, plays being composed sometimes in four acts, sometimes in three; and, though they were written in verse, the structure of the versification was left far too much to the caprice of the individual writer. The style of drama then in vogue he adopted, because the Spanish public liked it. The narrow framework it afforded he enlarged to an extra- ordinary degree, introducing everything that could possibly furnish material for dramatic situations,—the Bible, ancient mythology, the lives of the saints, ancient history, Spanish history, the legends of the Middle Ages, the writings of the Italian novelists, current events, Spanish life in the 17th century. Before him manners and the conditions of persons and characters had been barely sketched ; with fuller observation and more careful description he created real types, and gave to each social order the language and drapery appropriate to it. The old comedy was awkward and poor in its versification ; he introduced order into the use of all the forms of national poetry, from the old romance couplets to the rarest lyrical combinations borrowed from Italy. Hence he was justified in say- ing that those who should come after him had only to go on along the path which he had opened up. Calderon notably, whose merit has been much exaggerated, especially since the Germans took him under their protection, is merely a pupil and inferior to

his master ; at all events, his indebtedness to tle latter is enormous and has not as yet been adequately recognized.

Bibliography.—For the life of Lope, see Juan Perez de Montalban's Fama Posthuma (4to, Madrid, 1636; reprinted in Bibl. Rivadeneyra); La Barrera, Catdlogo del Téatro Antiguo Espanol; Von Schack, Geschichte der dramatischen Literatur und Kunst in Spanien, vol. ii.; and Ultimos Amores de Lope de Vega Carpio (8vo, Madrid, 1876), an extract by Francisco Asenjo Barbieri from an unpublished biography written by La_ Barrera in connexion with the poet's correspondence with the duke of Sesa. For Lope's literary theories and doctrine of dramatic art, reference may be made to Menéndez-Pelayo, Historia de las Ideas Estéticas en Espafia, and to A. Morel-Fatio, La Comédie Espagnole du XV Ime Siécle (8vo, Paris, 1885). The Obras Sueltas were published by Francisco Cerda Y Rico (1 vols. 4to, Madrid, 1776-79). For the bibliography of the comedies, see La Barrera. The selection of comedies published by Hartzen-

busch in four volumes in the Biblioteca Rivadeneyra is fairly good; but the same cannot be said of its choice of Obras Sueltas. (A. M.-F.)

VEGA, Garcttaso DE LA, See GAaRciLaso.

VEGETABLE KINGDOM2 There is one peculiar factor which enters into the problem of the classification

> The problem of classification being essentially the same in the

animal and vegetable kingdoms, the reader is referred to the general discussion of it in the article ANIMAL KINGDOM.

Yr? cETAaAeELai KINGDOM

of plants and materially adds to its complexity. It is the polymorphism of the individual: that is, the life-history is usually complex, the individual assuming different forms in various stages of its life-history. Thus, in the great majority of plants there is a well-marked alternation of generations, —an alternation, that is, of a sexual form, the gametophyte, with an

asexual form, the sporophyte (see REPRODUCTION, vol. xx. p. 423). And not only so, but in many cases one or other of these generations presents a number of different forms. Hence the true affinities of any individual cannot be regarded as satisfactorily ascer- tained unless its life-history is fully known ; and, since in most cases the various forms are perfectly separate, and often quite dissimilar, there is difficulty in obtaining all the information necessary for determining the true system- atic position of a plant,—a difficulty which has not yet been overcome in very many cases.

Comparatively little light is thrown on the affinities of existing plants by the information which has been accumu- lated with regard to the extinct fossil forms. In no case can the genealogy of an existing plant be traced as in the ease of the horse among animals (see ANIMAL KINGDoM).

The vegetable kingdom is usually divided into the four following sub- kingdoms:—I. Tuattopuyta; II. Bryo- puyTa; III. PreripopHyta; IV. PHANEROGAMIA (SPER- MAPHYTA).

All of these, except some Thallophyta, present a more or less clearly marked alternation of generations. In all cases the more conspicuous form is considered to be "the plant." Thus, in the Thallophyta generally the plant is the gametophyte, the sporophyte being comparatively in- conspicuous and in many cases merely an appendage on the gametophyte ; in the Bryophyta likewise the gameto- phyte is the plant, the sporopliyte being an appendage on the gametophyte. In the Ptertdophyta and in the Phan- erogamia the plant is the sporophyte, the gametophyte being comparatively inconspicuous. In the Pteridophyta the gametophyte is still an independent organism ; but in ascending from the lower to the higher forms it becomes more and more reduced. In the Phanerogamia the game- tophyte is still further reduced and becomes a mere appendage on the sporophyte.

Sus-Kinepom I. 'TTHALLOPHYTA.

This sub-kingdom includes the most lowly organized of plants. They are characterized by the total absence, or the imperfection, of that differentiation of the body into root, stem, and leaf which is so marked a

feature in the higher plants, and by the simplicity of their internal structure, especially by the absence of woody vascular tissue. In those Vhallophyta which present an alternation of generations the gametophyte is generally the more con- Spicuous, constituting the plant. The gametophyte is commonly capable of producing spores, not only sexually, but also asexually.

The sub-kingdom is naturally divided into two main classes, the ALGa& or SEA-WEEDS and the Funai, to which may be added, as a subsidiary group, the LicuEens. It is becoming usual to regard the Algw and Fungi as distinct sub-kingdoms ; but it is preferable, as they have so much im common, to continue to regard them as classes of the sub-kingdom Thallophyta.

Crass I. Atca,—There is so much variety in the form and structure of the Alge (see article ALG#) that no more precise definition of them can be given than that they are Thallophytes which contain chlorophyll (see PuysioLocy, vol. xix. p. 52). Though they characteristically live in water, this is by no means universally the case, for the natural habitat of many of them is damp soil. All Ale contain chlorophyll, but many of them contain other

colouring-matters in addition,—a feature which forms a convenient basis for classification. On this basis the Alge are classified into the four following sub-classes :—

I. Cyanophycee, containing a bluish colouring-matter, phyco-

cyanin, and having a blue-green colour. II. Chlorophycez, green Algz, containing no colouring-matter, except chlorophyll and its derivatives. III. Pheophycez, containing a yellow or brown colouring-matter, phycophxin, and having a brown colour. IV. Rhodophycex, containing a red colouring-matter, phyco- erythrin, and having a red or purple colour.

These four sub-classes are by no means co-extensive. The Cyanophyceex include only very simple forms; the Chlorophycez and the Pheophyceex

include a series of forms from the simplest to the most complex; the /hodo- phycee include only forms which, though their vegetative structure is frequently very simple, are comparatively highly developed as regards their reproductive organs.

Sub-Class I. Cyanophycex, or Blue-Green Algew.—The body may eonsist of a single, more or less nearly spherieal ccll, as in most of the Chroococcaceer (e.g., Glaocapsa), or it may be a inulti- cellular layer one cell thick (c.g., AMcrismopedia), or it may be filamentous, consisting of a single row of cells, as in Rivularia, Nostoc, Oscillaria. When the body is filamentous, it somctimes presents a distinction of base and apex, as in Lttévularia ; and it is frequently branched, the branching being either spurious (cg, Scytonema) or true (e.g., Sirosiphon). In most cases growth and eell-division go on in all the cells of the body, but in the Scyto- nemcex and Sirosiphonex only at the apices. A characteristic feature of the sub-class is the more or less bulky mucilaginous cell-wall which invests the eells and filaments.

Reproduction is mainly effected in a purely vegetative manner. In the unicellular forms each cell-division necessarily leads to the formation of new individuals. In the flattened forms (¢.g., Mcrismo- pedia), when the body reaches a certain limit of size, it simply breaks up into a number of separate portions. In the filamentous forms the body is marked out into segments by inert eells, termed heterocysts, which are quite different in appearance from the living cells of the filament. Eventually these segments, termed hormo- gonia, separate, and, escaping from the mucilaginous matrix, de- velop by growth and cell-division into new individuals. In many cases special reproductive cells, sporcs, are developed. Hach spore is formed from a single cell of the body, which surrounds itself with a thick firm wall ofits own. It is probable that ciliated spores, zoospores, are produced, but the existing observations on this point are inconclusive. There is no evidence of the existence of any form of sexual reproduction in this group.

The Cyanophycce are divided into a number of orders :—

Order 1. Chroococcaccer. Order 4. LRivulariacex.

», 2 Nostocacce. 1», 5. Scytonemex. 3 oO Oscillariacce. », 6. Strosiphonex (Stigonemce).

It is doubtful to what extent these orders really represent dis- tinct forms; for there is some cvidence that ccrtain Cyanophycce assume the different forms characteristic of several of these orders at various stages of their development and under various external conditions: in other words, some, at least, of the Cyanophycexw are polymorphic, and this necessarily renders their classification difficult.

The Cyanophycexw resemble the Schizomycetcs (Fungi) in many respects, as, for instance, in their general structure, in their simple vegetative reproduction and in their spore formation, in the pro- duction of a bulky mucilaginous matrix, and in their polymorphism. On these grounds they are frequently placed along with the Schizo- mycctes in a distinct class under the name Schizophyta. But this arrangement does not seem to secure any special advantage. It is simpler to regard the Cyanophycex and the Schizomycctcs as parallel groups, the one belonging to the Algz, the other to the Fungi.

Sub-Class II. Chlorophyces.—The body may consist of a single cell (e.g., Protococcoidex), or it may be multinucleate aud unseptate (e.g., Siphonex), or septate and therefore multicellular (¢.g., Char- accz). It presents all degrees of morphological differentiation : thus, it may be spherical (as in Hematococcus and in Volvox), or flattened (as in Ulva), or filamentous (as in Spirogyra, Ulothria, &c.), with a differentiation of root and shoot (as in @dogoniwm) ; or it may even present rudimentary differentiation into stem, leaf, and root, as in the Siphonce (e.g., Caulerpa) and Characew. The structure of the body is peculiar in the Hydrodictycxw, being com- posed of a number of originally separate cells; such a body is termed a cenobiwm.

Vegetative multiplication, though not universal, is not uncommon in this sub-class. Reproduction by means of asexually-produced spores is very general, and the spores are commonly ciliated zoo- spores. A sexual process has been observed in members of every order of this sub-class. It consists either in the fusion of similar sexual cells, when it is said to be isogamous ; or a large non-motile

female eell (oosphere) is fertilized by a small motile male cell (antherozoid), when it is said to be oogamous. The isogamous pro- cess usually takes place between free-swimming ciliated cells (plano- gametes) ; but in the group of the Conjugatx it takes plaee between gametes which are not set free into the water and are not ciliated (see REPRopucTION). In those Chlorophyeew in which both sexual and asexual spore-formation oceurs, there is generally a distinction of sexual and asexual forms, so that the life-history presents an alternation of generations. Thus, in Acetabularia the plant is the sporophyte, produciug asexually non-motile spores, whieh on ger- niination give rise to sexual reproductive cells or gametes. Hach of these spores represents a sexual form or gametophyte. Again, in Coleochzte the plant is the gametophytc, producing the sexual organs, the sporophyte being represented by a small flattened plate of cells, developed from the fertilized female cell or oospore, which never produees any sexual organs, but only spores.

The Chlorophyeex may be classified as follows :—

Order 1. Protoeoceoidex.—Unicclluiar plants ; the body frequently spherieal and unattached, but presenting in some forms a distinc- tion of base and apex, and then it is attached by the base. Re- produetion by vegetative division, or by zoospores, or by a sexual process, the sexual cells being similar planogametes. This order may be divided into two families,—the Protococeacex and the Palmellacex, the distinction being that in the latter the ccll- walls are swollen and mucilaginous, so that the cells are held together, whereas in the former the cells are free. Vegetative multiplication by division is universal in the Palmellaeex, but is eommonly wanting in the Protococeacex.

Order 2. Volvoeinex.—Unicellular or multicellular plants ; body free-swimming by means of cilia, either spherical or a flat plate.

a. Isogamous forms: Pandorina, Stephanosphera (spherical), Goniuwm (flattened).

b. Oogamous forms: Volvox, Hudorina, Chlamydomonas (uni- cellular).

Order 3. Hydrodietyex.—Multicellular plants ; body unattached, a net (Hydrodietyon) or a flat plate (Pediastrum), formed by the combination of originally separate cells (a cenobiwm). The sexual process is isogamous.

Order 4. Siphonex.—Unseptate multinucleate plants ; body vesi- cular and unbranched, or filamentous and branched, assuming most various forms, presenting distinction of base and apex, at- tached by base; sometimes (Caulerpa) presenting differentiation Into root, stem, and leaf. The sexual process is isogamous or oogamous.

a. Isogamous forms: Codiex, Dasyeladex, Caulerpcex, Botrydicex. b. Oogamous forms: Vauweheriacex.

Order 5. Confervoidex.—Septate multicellular plants (body uni- eellular in some Desmids) ; cells uni- or multi-nueleate ; body fila- mentous, branched or unbranched, sometimes presenting distinc- tion of root and shoot, and then attached by the root, or a flat plate or hollow tube of cells. The sexual process is isogamous or oogamous.

a. Isogamous forms— a. Gametes not free-swimming or ciliated: Conjugate.

(including Desmidic#, Mesoearpex, Zygnemex),

8. Gametes free-swimming and ciliated.

Body filamentous, unbranched : Ulothricacex,

Body filamentous, branched: Cladophorex, Cheto- phorex.

Body a flat or tubular layer of cells: Ulvacew,

b. Oogamous forms: body filamentous— a. Sexual organs undifferentiated: Sphwroplex. 8. Sexual organs differentiated.

Gdogontew ; body unbranched (exeept Bulbochezte) ; oogonium without trichogyne; sporophyte, a single cell (oospore).

Coleoechxtex ; body branched ; oogonium with tricho-

f gyne ; sporophyte multicellular.

Order 6. Charaecze.—Multicellular plants ; body presenting dif- ferentiation into leaf, stem, and root. There is no asexual produc- tion of spores ; the sexual process is oogamous, the sexual organs being highly differentiated.

The distinction of the genera, and to some extent also that of the orders, is rendered difficult in mally eases by polymorphism. Yor instanee, it has been ascertained that many plants which have been referred to the Protococcoidex are simply forms of some of the Confervoidex, Siphonew, &e. ; and similarly some of the Ulvaeex have Ulothricoid forms. Still, there can be no doubt that each of the above orders includes some autonomous forms.

With regard to the affinities and phylogeny of the orders of Chlorophyece, the Protoeecoidew must be taken as the starting-point from which the other orders have sprung, their evolution having taken place in various directions. Beginning with the simple spherical Protococeacex, the origin of the Volvoeines from these by eell-division can be readily traced through Chlamydomonas, the higher forms being simply motile multicellular Protococeaeex. Closely allied to the Volvoeinew are the Hydrodietyex, The Siphonex

Vv eG fas) ib &

=

Kol N GD Om

can be readily traced back to the simplest Protoeoceaeex through the attached Protoeoccacex, such as Charaeium. The Confervoidese are probably also derived from the Protocoeceacee ; and a certain relationship between some members of this order—the Cladophorex — and the Stphoneex is indicated by the multinucleate cells of the former. Thus, Valonia, which is septate, and therefore really be- longs to the Confervoidex, closely resembles some of the Siphonex in its general habit. The phylogeny of the Charaecx is obseure, but it is probable that they

have sprung from the Confervoidew, possibly from the Cladophorex. It is of interest to note that the large cells of the Charaeex become multinucleate.

Sub-Class III. Pheophycez.—The form of the body is very vari- ous ; it may eonsist of a single cell; when multicellular it may be filamentous and branched, or a flattened expansion, or cylindrical or vesicular, hollow or solid. It presents also various degrees of morphological differcntiation : in some forms it is quite undifferen- tiated ; in others it presents a differentiation of base and apex, and is then attached by the base ; in others it presents indications of differentiation into root, stem, and leaf. Vegetative multipli- cation is common only in the lowest forms ; in the higher it occurs in some cases, and is effected by the abstriction of modified members of the parent, termed gemmzx. The existence of a scxual process has been ascertained in several forms; but in many others further investigation is required to determine its presence or absenee. In those forms in which it occurs it may be either isogamous or oogam- ous ; the isogamous process may take place between free-swimming gametes, or between gametes which are not free-swimming or cili- ated. The life-history of the plants of this group is imperfectly known; but it has been ascertained that in some there is, and in others there is not, an alternation of generations.

The Pheophycex may be classified as follows :—

Order 1. Diatomacee.—Unicellular plants, cither free, or con- nected into filaments or masses by mucilage. Reproduction, vege- tative by division or by means of asexually-produced spores (avwxo- spores); or sexual isogamous by the fusion of non-ciliated gametes. The eell-wall is impregnated with siliea.

Order 2. Syngenetiex.—Body unicellular, the cells being held together by mucilage. Reproduetion by division and by asexually- produced spores. The order includes the two forms, Chromophyton and Hydrurus. The former is distinguished by being unattached and by the motility of its spores, which have a single long cilium. Hydrurus grows attached, and the spores are not motile.

Order 3. Pheosporex.—Multicellular plants; the body is fila- mentous and branched or flattened, always prescnting differentiation of base and apex, and in some cases more or less well-marked dif- ferentiation into root, stem, and leaf, usually attached by the base. Reproduction, vegetative by gemme or by means of asexually-pro- duced zoospores, or by a sexual proeess which is essentially iso- gamous, the gametes being ciliated, but in the higher forms tend- ing to become oogamous. The principal families of the Phwosporex are Hetoearpex, Sphacelariee, Mesogleacee, Desmarestiex, Seyto- siphonex, Cutleriacex, and Laminaricew. The filamentous type of structure obtains in the Letocarpex, Sphaeclariex, Mesogleacex, and Desnarestiex. The filaments may eonsist of single rows of cells (monosiphonous), as in most Hetoecarpex, or of several rows of cells (polysiphonous), as in the Mesogleacex ; or they may be polysiphon- ous with a more or less well-developed cortical layer, as in the Sphaeelartex, in whieh case there is also a large apical cell. The structure of the Desmarestice (e.g., Desmarestia and Arthrocladia) is similar to that of the Sphacelariew, but the growing point is not apical, as in the Sphacelaricx, but interealary, as in the Zeto- earpee. In some of these forms (¢g., Cladostephus among the Sphacelariex) there is an indication of the differentiation of the shoot into stem and leaf. The type of structure obtaining in the Scytosiphonex, Cutleriacee, and Laminariex is that of a flattened expansion of parenchymatous tissue, though in the Laminarice there is a certain degree of histological differentiation, as is indieated by the presence of elongated cells forming struetures resembling the sieve- tubes of the vascular plants. In some of the Seytosiphonex there is a large internal cavity, so that the body presents a cylindri- cal or vesicular form. Vegetative reproduction by gemmez is only known in the Sphaeelariex. Reproduction by means of ascxually- produced spores (zoospores) is known to oecur in the majority of the Pheosporex, but it has not yet been detected in some forms (e.g., Arthrocladia, Seytosiphon, Phyllitis, Colpomenia). The asexual organs are unilocular sporangia. The sexual organs (gamet- angia) are multiloeular. They have been found in all the families except the Laminariex, but not yct in all the genera (¢.g., Aspero- eoceus). The gametangia are all quite similar, except in the Cut- leriaeex and in Tilopteris (a genus allied to Desmarestia), in which also the gametes diffcr in appearance. A sexual process has only been observed in a few speeies of Hetocarpex and Seytostphonee (Eetoearpus silieulosus

and E. pusillus, Giraudia sphaeclarioides, Seytosiphon lomentarius), and in the Cutleriacezw. A full account of the sexual process in these forms is given in the artiele REPro- DUCTION, vol. xx. p. 425.

Order 4. Dietyotacez.—Body multicellular, thalloid, flattened,

ribbon-like, as in Dictyota, Phyeopteris, Dictyopteris, or broader and fan-shaped, as in Taonia, Padina, Zonaria; usually attached by the base, but by root-hairs developed on the under surface in Zonaria. Asexual reproduction by spores, formed four (etraspores) in each unilocular sporangium ; spores not motile. Though a sexual pro- cess has not been observed, there are apparently male and female organs,—antheridia and oogonia. 'The supposed male cells are set free and are not motile ; the supposed female cells are not set free. The sporangia and the sexual organs are borne on distinct indi- yiduals, and in some genera (¢.g., Dictyota, Taonia) the male and female organs are borne on distinct individuals.

Order 5. Fueaeexe.—Body multicellular ; generally differentiated into root and shoot ; shoot usually thalloid, cylindrical, or flattened, but differentiated into stem and leaves in Sargassum. No asexual production of spores. Sexual organs antheridia or oogonia. Male cells numerous, set free, ciliated ; female cells (oospheres) either onc (Pyenophyeus, Himanthalia, Cystoseira, Sargassum), two (Pelvetia), four (Ozothallia), or eight (Fucus) in an oogonium, set free, not motile.

The life-history of the Phxophycez is in most cases imperfectly known. In the Puecacex, since there is no asexual formation of spores, there is no alternation of generations, and there is no indi- cation of any other kind of polymorphism. In those forms in which the sexual and asexual organs are restricted to separate indi- viduals, as in Cladostephus (Sphacelariex), in the Cutleriacex, and in the Dictyotacex, there may be an alternation of generations. In the Cutleriacex it is, in fact, highly probable. In the one genus, Zanardinia, the two generations are similar, differing only in the nature of their reproductive organs. In Cutleria, the other genus, the two generations are dissimilar, the form known as Cut- leria being the gametophyte, whereas the sporophyte appears to be a form which has been regarded as a distinct genus, under the name of Aglaozonia. In some

genera of Dictyotacer (Taonia, Padina, Dietyoptcris) there is a further indication of polymorphism, in that the spore (whether tetraspore or oospore) produces on germination aspherical or cylindrical protonematoid body, from which spring the shoots of the characteristic form.

Since the life-history of the Phxophycex is so imperfectly known, the relations of the various orders cannot be accurately determined. The Diatomacex and the Syngenetice are apparently isolated groups. The families of the Phewosporex form a series leading from the simple isogamous Hetocarpex through the Cutleriacce to the oogamous Fucacew, There are also points of resemblance in the vegetative parts between some of the Scytosiphonex and the Laminaricz.

Sub-Class IV. Rhodophycez. —This sub-class includes the single order Floridex.

Order Floridex.—Multicellular plants; body flattened or fila- mentous ; when filamentous, either monosiphonous or polysiphon- ous, with or without a cortex; thalloid, or with indications of differentiation into stem and leaf. Asexual reproduction, by means of unciliated naked spores, which are usually tetraspores (wanting in Lemanea), produced in unilocular sporangia. Sexual reproduc- tion by means of male and female organs, termed antheridia and procarpia ; the procarpium is generally multicellular, but sometimes unicellular (Bangiacex, Nemalice), is always closed, and generally consists of two parts, the carpogonium or sporogenous portion and the trichogyne or receptive portion. The male cells are non-motile and have a cell-wall (spermatia); there is no differentiated female cellin the procarpium. After fertilization the carpogenous cell (or cells) divides to form the mother-cells of spores, and each mother- cell gives rise to a single naked spore (carpospore), which is not ciliated and is usually non-motile; in the Bangiacex the carpo- spores exhibit amceboid movements for atime. The group of sporo- genous cells formed from the fertilized carpogenous cell (or cells) is termed a cystoearp ; in many cases these cells become surrounded by an investment developed from the adjacent vegetative tissue. The structure of the cystocarp is very simple in the Bangiacex, consisting only of eight spore

mother-cells. The principal orders of the Floridex are Bangiacex, Lemancacex, Nemaliex, Ceranviacex, Corallinex, Rhodomelacex, Cryptonemiacex,, Rhodymeniacexr, Wran- geliaeex, Squamariacee, Spherococeacce.

With regard to the life-history of the Floridex, it is generally considered to present a well-marked alternation of generations, the plant being the gametophyte, the fructification (cystocarp) formed i consequence of fertilization being the sporophyte. Further poly- morphism has been detected in the genera Lemanca and Batracho- spermum. Here the carpospore does not at once give rise to the plant, but toa filamentous or flattened body, which in Batracho- spermum reproduces itself by spores, and' from which the parent form springs as lateral branches. This filamentous form appears to be identical with species of the genus Chantransia ; it is therefore known as the Chantvansia-form.

Mutual Affinities and Phylogeny of Sub-Classes of Algz. Comparison of the four sub-classes shows that, whereas the Chlovophycex and the Phxophycex present two fairly complete series of parallel forms, ranging fron unicellular undifferentiated to multi- cellular more or less highly differentiated organisms, the Cyano-

phycex consist only of comparatively simple forms in which sexual reproduction is unknown, and the Rhedophycex of comparatively complex forms in all of which a sexual process obtains. It has been suggested by Cohn, Berthold, and others that there is a close re- lation between the lowest Rhodophycex (Bangia) and the higher filamentous Cyanophycex (Scytonemex, Sirosiphonce), and that possibly the latter may have been derived from the former. On this view the Cyanophycex and the Rhodophycex, taken together, constitute a series which is on a level with those of the Chloro- phycez and of the Pheophycex. On comparing these three series together, it will be observed that they present a general correspond- ence, in that the main types of form are to be found in all. 'Thus, the Chroococeacex among the Cyanophycex, the

Palmellacex among the Chlorophycex, and the Syngenetice among the Phxophycee are corresponding groups; similarly, the Confervoidew among the Chlorophycee correspond to the Letocarpexr and other filament- ous Phxophycex, and to various forms of Rhodophycex, such as Bangia, Porphyra, Griffithsia, and Callithamnion; and Chara (Chlorophycex) resembles, at least in its vegetative structure, such forms as Cladostephus (Phxophycex) and Polysiphonia (Rhodophy- cew), There are, however, forms belonging to some of the sub- classes which have no representatives in othcrs. Thus the orders Siphonee,, Volvocincx, Hydrodietyce, belonging to the Chloro- phycez, are unrepresented in the other sub-classes, and this is true also of the Fucaeew and the Laminaricee among the Phwophycex. The Conjugate Chlorophycez also form a peculiar group, the only corresponding forms being the Diatomaece (Phxophycex), which present nany points of resemblance to the Desmidiex.

With regard to the phylogeny of the Algz, the possible derivation of the Rhodophycex from the Cyanophyccx has already been pointed out. Assuming this, there are three series of Algzx closely allied in their origin, in each of which evolution has proceeded on more or less divergent lines, thus leading to the devclopment of a number of corresponding forms in the three series. It is not impossible that the Chlorophyeex and the Phxophycex may also have sprung from the Cyanophycex, not, like the Rhodophyccex, from the higher forms, but from the lower. But, if the Cyanophycex be regarded, not as primitive, but as degenerate, forms—and for this view there are good grounds—then the simpler Chlorophycex are probably to be regarded as the forms from which the others have been derived.

Literature of Alge.—Special papers referred to :—Cohn, Bettrdge zur Phystologie der Phycochromaceen, 1867 ; Berthold, " Die Bangiaceen," in Fauna und Flora des Golfes von Neapel, 1882; Zopf, Zur Morphologie der Spalipflanzen, Leipsic, 1882; Hansgirg, Physiologische wnd Algologische Studien, Prague, 1887. Of general works consult—Harvey, Phycologia Britannica; Cooke, British Fresh- water Alg#, London, 1882; Thuret and Bornet, Notes Algologiques, i., ii., 1882-86, and Etudes Phycologiques, 1878; Falkenberg, " Algen," in Schenk's Handbuch der

Botanik, ii., Breslau, 1881-84; Hauck, “ Die Meeresalgen,” in Rabenhorst’s Kryptogamen-Flora, 2d ed., Leipsic, 1885; Goebel, Outlines of

Classificution and Special Morphology, Oxford, 1886. These works contain refer- ences to all the more important isolated papers on the Alga.

Crass IT. Funei1.—In view of the description of these plants given in the article Funeus (q.v.), it is unnecessary to define them here further than as Thallophytes which are devoid of chlorophyll.

The classification followed here differs in detail from that given in the previous article. It is as follows :— Sub-Class 1. Myxomycetes.

» Ll. Schizomycetes. », Ill. Phycomycetes. a. Zygomycctes. Order 1. Chytridiaccey. 9, 2. Mucorini. – 3, o Lutomophthorex. 4 » 4. Ustilaginer. „ LV. Ascomycetes. Order 1. Gymnoascex. Order 2. Pyrenomycetes. Order 3. Discomycetes. » ¥. Atcidiomycetes. Order 1. Uredinex. », VI. Basidiomycetes. Order 1. Tremellini. Order 2. Hymenomycetcs. Order 3. Gasteromycetes.

The chief points of difference between this classification and that given in the article Funcvus, besides the introduction of some addi- tional orders, are the division of the Phycomycetes into Zygomycetes and Oomyeetcs, the removal of the Ustilaginex from the Uredinex to the Phycomycetes, and the inclusion of the Erysiphex and Tuberacex in the Pyrenomyectes, this order being considered as containing all the Ascomyectes which have well-developed, but more or less con1- pletely closed, apothecia (perithecia),—in a word, all Ascomycetes which are neither Gymnoascex nor Discomycetes. The division of the Phycomycetes into Zygomycetes and Oomyeetes is necessary 1n order to distinguish those forms which are isogamous, and in which the sexual process is one of conjugation (see REPRODUCTION), from those which are oogamous, and in which the sexual process is one of fertilization, the former constituting the group Zygomycetes, the latter the group Oomycctcs. The change in position of the Usti-

b. Oomycetes. Order 1. Anceylistex. 2. Peronosporex. 3. Saprolegnicx.

aginez is made in accordance with the views of recent writers, such as De Bary and Brefeld, the Ustilaginex being regarded as sexually degenerate Zygomycctes. ;

A brief description of the newly introduced orders, namely, the

Chytridiacex, the Entomophthorex, the Ancylistex, and the Gymno-

ascex, may be given. The Chytridiacew are extremely simple Fungi, consisting in some forms of a single spherical cell and in others of a small mycelium. The Entomophthorex have a well- developed mycelium, which, unlike that of most Phycomycetes, is septate. The Ancylistex are merely the simplest forms of the Oomycetes. The Gymnoascex are characterized by the simple struc- ture of their fructification, the asci (or, in some cases, the single ascus) not being surrounded by an investment of sterile tissue. This group includes typical forms, such as Gymnoascus and Erem- ascus, as well as aberrant forms, such as Hxoascus, Saccharomyces, &c.

Mutual Affinities and Phylogeny of Sub-Classes of Fungi.

The Myxomycctes and the Schizomycctes are so peculiar that they cannot be connected in any way with the other sub-classes of Fungi. Beginning, then, with the Zygomycetes, there can be no doubt that the Chytridiacce are closely connected with the Jfucorint by such forms as Polyphagus and Zygochytrium, and with the Ancylistce among the Oomycetes. On the other hand, they are connected with the Ustilaginex (especially Protomyces) by Clado- chytrium. The Entomophthorex seem to be most nearly related to the Afucorint. The Ancylistex are closely related to the Perono- sporez (especially Pythium), and these again to the Saprolegniex. Coming now to the Ascomycetes, there is an obvious similarity be- tween the simpler Gymnoascex and the Mucorini. Thus in Hremascus the sexual organs are quite similar, and the sexual process is one of conjugation, as in the Mucorini ; but there is this difference, that the product of the sexual process in Hremascus is an ascus, whereas in the Aucorint it is a zygospore (see REPRODUCTION). Those Ascomycetes which, like Pyronema, have differentiated sexnal organs, show some resemblance to the Oomycetes. The Uredinex appear to be closely connected with the Ascomycetes on the one hand, the ecidium being homologous with the apothecium, and on the other hand with the Tremellint among the Basidiomycctes, through the Tremelloid Uredinex (Leptopucciniex), which have lost thcir ecidia, possessing only asexually-produced spores (teleutospores). The Hymenomycetes and the G'asteromycctes appear to form two parallel series starting from the J'remellini.

In attempting to express these relations in terms of phylogeny, the first question which arises is as to whcther or not the Chytri- diacexe ave to be taken as the primitive forms. It is possible to regard them, not as primitive forms, but as degraded Mucorini, their degradation being due to their aquatic habit; but there are no conclusive grounds for this assumption. Then there is the ques- tion as to the origin of the Ascomycetes. De Bary inclines to the opinion that they are derived from the Oomyectes (especially Perono- spora), on account of the similarity of the sexual organs of such Ascomycetes as Podosphzxra to those of the

Peronosporex. But how, on this view, is the development of Ascomycetes with similar sexual organs to be accounted for? It seems more reasonable to trace the Ascomycetes back through Eremascus to the Mucorini, and to as- sume that the differentiation of the sexual organs arose in the Ascomycetous series. The following scheme expresses the phylogeny of the Fungi as suggested in the foregoing remarks.

ee sc en | ee

| | (Zygochytrium) (Cladochytrium)

(Protomyces) Ustilaginer.

Mucorini | | Entomophthoree.

1

(Eremascus) Ascomycetes

(Ancylistex) Oomycetes,

| fEcidiomycetes (Tremelloid Uredinex)

Basidiomycetes Tremellini

| Hymenomycetes. Gasteronvycetes.

Affinities of Fungi with Alge.

With the exception of the Basidiomycetes, the sub-classes of Fungi present resemblances to various forms of Algez, as might be expected, for the Fungi must have sprung from the Algx. The Myzxomycetes resemble the Hydrodictyce, in that the body (plas- modium) is a coenobium, formed by the aggregation of originally separate cells. The similarity of the Schizomycetes to the Cyano- phycew has been alrcady mentioned (p. 125). The Phycomycetes resemble the Siphonex in their typically unseptate multinucleate structure; but the Aucorini approach the Conjugate Algx, and the Oomycctes the oogamous Siphonex, in the sexual process. The

simpler Chytridiacee closely resemble the Protococcacex in their general form, as also in the production of ciliated zoospores. The Ascomycetes, especially those in which male cells (spermatia) are formed, and probably also the czdiomycetes, resemble the Rhodo- phyceze in many important features. In both groups the female organ contains no distinctly differentiated female cell (oosphere) ; and the effect of fertilization is to cause the female organ to grow into a sporogenous fructification (apothecium, cystocarp), which con- stitutes the asexual generation or sporophyte in the life-history.

With regard to the derivation of the Fungi from the Alga, it appears that there are at least two distinct origins. The Schizomy- cetes doubtless arose from the Cyanophycex ; but, as pointed out above, the Schizomycctes cannot be regarded as having given rise to higher forms of Fungi. These sprang independently from the Algz ; and probably the Chytridiacex were derived from the Proto- coccacee ; and from the Chytridiacex the higher forms were developed as indicated in the above sketch of the phylogeny of the Fungi, the evolution of the Fungi proceeding along much the saine lines as that of the Algz, and thus giving rise to forms which have their representatives in the Alge, and terminating in the Basidiomycctes, which are altogether and peculiarly Fungal. The origin of the Chytridiacex, from the Protococcacez is suggested by the fact that many of the latter are "endophytic": that is, they inhabit the tissues of higher plants; and the Chytridiacex may be regarded as Protococcaceze which have become truly parasitic, and have conse- quently lost their chlorophyll.

Additional Literature to Fungi.cDe Bary and Woronin, Beitrége zur Mor- phologie und Physiologie der Pilze, 4th and 5th series, 1881-82; Brefeld, Un-

tersuchungen, parts v.-vii., 1883-88; De Bary, Comparative Morphology and Biology of the Fungi, Oxford, 1887.

SussipraRy Group, Licuzenses.—As pointed out in the article Funcus, a Lichen is a compound organism consist- ing of a Fungus and an Alga living symbiotically. In that article only those Lichens are considered in

which the Fungus belongs to the Ascomycetes; but Lichens are now known in which the Fungus belongs to the Basidiomycetes.

The Lichens may be classified as follows :—

Ascolichenes (Ascomycetous Lichens).

1. Discolichenes (Discomycetous Lichens),

2. Pyrenolichenes (Pyrenomycetous Lichens). Basidiolichenes (Basidiomycetous Lichens).

1. Hymenolichenes(Hymenomycetous Lichens).

2. Gastcrolichenes (Gasteromycetous Lichens). Literature.—Massee, 'On Gasterolichenes," in Phil. Trans., vol. clxxviil., 1S87.

Sup-Kinepom II. BRYOPHYTA (Muscinez).

The Bryophyta may be characterized as plants which pre- sent a definite alternation of generations, the plant being the gametophyte and the fructification or sporogonium the sporophyte. The sporophyte is not independent, but remains permanently attached to the gametophyte. The shoot of the gametophyte is sometimes thalloid ; but more frequently it is differentiated into stem and leaf. The shoot of the sporophyte is not differentiated into stem and leaf, though there is in some cases an indication of such differentiation. The gametophyte commonly reproduces its like by means of gemme ; the female organ is an arche- gonium. The Bryophyta are divided into two classes— the Hepatica or Liverworts and the Musci or Mossss. (For details see Musciyz2.)

Mutual Affinities and Phylogeny of Mosses and Liverworts.

In consequence of the well-marked alternation of generations in these classes, it is essential to trace their resemblances in both generations.

a. Gametophyte (plant).—-The higher Liverworts (foliose Junger- mannicx) resemble the Mosses in that the shoot is differentiated Into stem and leaf; but there is this general difference, that the shoot of these

Liverworts has dorsi-ventral symmetry, whereas that of the Mosses has radial symmetry. The connecting form is afforded by Haplomitrium, which alone among the foliose Liverworts has radial symmetry.

6. Sporophyte (sporogonium).—The main differences between the Sporogonium of the Liverworts and that of the Mosses are these: the structure of the sporogonium is simpler in the Liverworts than it is in the Mosses ; in the former it usually has no columella and produces elaters, whereas in the latter a columella is always present, and there are no elaters. In the Liverworts the sporogonium re- mains encloscd in the enlarged venter of the archegonium (calyptra) until the spores are ripe, but in most Mosses the developing sporo- gonium bursts the calyptra at an early stage. A connecting form is afforded by the sporogonium of Anthoceros (Liverwort), which has a columella and bears stomata like the sporogonia of the Mosses,

and in which the claters are rudimentary. Sphagnum and Archt- dium among Mosses resemble the Liverworts in that the sporo- goniuin is enelosed in the calyptra until near maturity.

Although there are so many points of resemblance between them, there is no evidenee to show that the Mosses and Liverworts form one continuous series. This might perhaps be assumed if the gametophyte alone were considered ; but it cannot when the sporo- phyte is taken into aceount as well. The more important features in the comparative morphology of the sporophyte are as follows. Taking first the Liverworts, in the Riccice proper (Riccia, Oxymitra) both the epibasal and hypobasal halves of the oospore (fertilized female eell) form sporogenous tissue. In the allied Corsiniex, the Marchantiex, and the Anthocerotez the epibasal half alone gives rise to sporogenous tissue, the hypobasal half forming an organ of absorption and attachment which is the true foot. In the Junger- manniex, likewise, the sporogenous tissue is developed entirely from the epibasal half of the oospore, which also gives rise to the seta or stalk of the sporogonium ; but the hypobasal half is aborted and gives rise to only a rudimentary foot ; in some foliose forms a Salse Joot is formed by a dilatation of the base of the seta. In the Mosses there is not in any family

such a simple sporophyte as that of the Rreciew among the Liverworts; but there are forms which present the same inorphological difference as that whieh in the Liverworts distinguishes the Aarchanticew and the Anthocerotex, on the one hand, from these Jungermanniez, on the other. Thus, among Mosses the Sphagnacex, Andrexacex, and Phascaccey have a true

foot, whereas in the Bryinezx there is a spurious foot at the base of

the seta, as in some Jungermannicz. Taking all the foregoing faets into account, it is clear that the Ricciex are the most prinui- tive of existing Afuscinez, and it is probably from them that the true Mosses, as well as the other Liverworts, have been derived.

The following phylogeny inay be suggested. As regards the Liverworts, there can be no doubt that the Marchantiex are to be traeed back through the Corsinvex to the Ricciex, and it is probable that, as Leitgeb points out, the frondose Jungermannice were de- rived from the Corsiniew through the Riellex. With regard to the Anthocerotez, Leitgeb seems to suggest that they may have been derived through Notothylas from the Jungermanniex ; but in opposi- tion to this must be set the difference between the two groups as regards the morphology of the foot. Probably the Anthocerotce arose independently from the Corsinice. The Mosses are to be traced back to the Anthocerotex, on account of the general similarity in the structure of the sporogonium. The genus Anthoccros shows its special relation to the Sphagnaccz in the development of the Sporogenous cells from the amphithecium, whereas the genus Noto- thylas resembles the other Mosses in that the sporogenous cells are developed from the endothecium. The following scheme will serve to illustrate these remarks.

Rieciex Corsiniex | Riellex. Anthocerotesxe Marchantiex. | | (Anthoceros) (Notothylas) A prance. Andrexacexe BR Phascaces? 2 (| Jungermanniex. us Bryinex.)

The phylogeny of the Auseincx can be traced with exccptional elearness in both generations. With regard to the gametophyte, it must be remembered (see MuscIneE#) that at its first develop- ment from the spore it is a protonema, which is either filamentous, as usually in Mosses,

or a flattened expansion, as generally in Liver- worts, the shoot which bears the sexual organs being a secondary development on the protonema. Both these forms of protonema bear a striking resemblance to various Confervoid Chlorophyccex, and there can be little doubt that it is from this group that the Muscinex have arisen. This view is supported by tlie close resent- blance of the simple sporophyte of Riccia among the Muscinex to that of Coleochzxte among the Confervoid Chlorophycex. There 1S, however, this difference, that in Riccia the cells resulting from the division of the oospore are differentiated into an external sterile layer, forming the wall of the capsule, and an internal mass of sporo- senous cells, whereas in Coleochawte all the cells are sporogenous,

Suz-Kinepom IIT. PTERIDOPHYTA (VASCULAR CRYPTOGAMS).

In these plants the gametophyte is a filamentous or tuberous, or more commonly a membranous, flattened pro- thallium, exhibiting no differentiation into stem and leaf.

he Sexual organs are antheridia and archegonia, as in the luscinee, The Sporophyte becomes quite independent of the gametophyte, constituting the plant. The shoot is

1208

always differentiated into stem and leaf, and the tissues are highly differentiated.

The sub-kingdom is divided into three classes, —FILictna, EQUISETIN2, LYCOPODINA.

Each of these classes includes two series of forms,—the homospor- ous, in which all the spores are alike, and the heterosporous, in which the spores are of two kinds, namely, large spores (macrospores) and small spores (microspores). On germination the spore of the homo- sporous forms gives rise to a well-developed prothallium, which be- comes quite free from the spore, and usually bears both antheridia (male) and archegonia (female). The spores of the heterosporous forms give rise on germination to comparatively ineonspicuous pro- thallia, which remain

connected with the spores, and bear either exclusively male or exclusively female organs. Thus, in the hetero- sporous forms the gametophytc is represented by a male and a female organism, the former being much the smaller. The male prothal- lium is always developed from a microspore, the female prothallium from a macrospore (see REPRODUCTION).

Cuass 1. Fitictna.—The Filicinz are characterized by having relatively large and few leaves. The spore-bearing or fertile leaves (sporophyils) are generally similar to the foliage leaves, and are not aggregated on special shoots, so as to form flowers. The embryo sporophyte has no suspensor; but it has generally (except in Sal- vinia) a primary root.

Series 4. Homosporous Filicinze.—This series consists of the sub-class Filices, which includes the Ferns. It seems to be eertain that all existing Ferns arc homosporous, and apparently all the known fossil forms are homosporous also, though it is not impossible that there may have been heterosporous Fidices. The orders of existing Ferns are arranged in two categories, according to the mode of development of the sporangia.

Lcptosporangiate Filices: the sporangium is developed from a

single epidermal cell :—

Order 1. Hymenophyllacce, Order 4. Gleichenicce. » 2 Cyatheacce. », 95. Scehizwacce. », % Polypodiacez. », 6. Osmundacee.

ELusporangiate Filices: the sporangiuin is developed from a group

of epiderma] cells :—

Order 1. Ophioglossacex. Order 2. Marattiacex. Scries B. Heterosporous Filicine.—As far as is known at

present, this series contains the sub-class Hydropteridex or Rhizo- carpx. In addition to the various peculiarities connected with their

heterospory, its members are characterized by the development of an investment round the clusters of sporangia (sori), the whole forming a

sporoearp. They are all Leptosporangiate.

The Hydropteridex are arranged in two orders, aecording to the structure of the sporocarp.

Order 1. Salviniacex : wall of sporocarp formed as a superficial outgrowth of the sporophyll ; each sporocarp contains a single sorus either of macrosporangia or of microsporangia (Salvinia, Azolla).

Order 2. Marsilcacex: the wall of the sporocarp is formed by a portion of the sporophyll ; each sporoearp contains several sori ; and eaeh sorus includes both macrosporangia and microsporangia (Marsilca, Pilularia).

It is possible that Jsoctes represents the heterosporous euspor- angiate Filices (see infra).

Crass 2. Equisr1iInz.—These plants are characterized by their rudimentary foliage leaves arranged in whorls at the nodes, and by their highly modified sporophylls, which are aggregated together at the ends of shoots, so as to form cone-like flowers. The embryo sporophyte has no suspensor, but a primary root.

Series A. Homosporous Equisetins.— All the existing forms belong to this series and constitute the order Liquisetacex ; they all belong to the genus Equisctum. The gametophyte isa green flattened prothallium, like that most commonly found in the Filices ; but it is much branched, and generally diccious.

Series B. Heterosporous Equisetinee.—There are no existing heterosporous Equisetinz ; it is probable that some fossil plants, such as Annularia and Asterophyllites, represent the extinct hetero- sporous forms.

Crass 3. Lycopopinz.—The Lycopodinz are gencrally charac- terized by their small and numerous foliage leaves, which are not arranged in whorls, though they are almost entirely wanting in Psilotum. The sporophylls are not highly modified, but they are frequently aggregated at the ends of shoots, so as to form cone-like flowers. So far as the

embryology of this class is known at present, the embryo sporophyte has a suspensor, but no primary root.

Serics 4. Homosporous Lycopodine.

Order 1. Lycopodiacex: the sporangia are borne on sporophylls (Lycopodium, Phylloglossum). ;

Order 2. Psilotacez : the sporangia are borne on the stem (Psilo- tum, Tmesipteris).

Serics B. Heterosporous Lycopodine.

Order 1. Selaginellacex (Selaginella). ‘

The existing heterosporous Lycopoding are usually eonsidered to consist of a family, termed the Ligulatx, which includes the two

genera Sclaginclla and Isoctes. This arrangement is not accepted here, for the reason that Selaginella and Isoetes have nothing in common beyond the ligule, and the fact that they are both hetero- sporous vascular cryptogams. It is in fact a question whether or not Tsoctes should be included in the Lycopodine at all; for it has few and large leaves, and the embryo sporophyte has no suspensor, but it has a primary root. This being the case, it 1s impossible to frame any definition of the group Lycopodinz which would apply to all the members, if Isoetes be included in it. In many features Tsoetes resembles the Filicinz, and especially the Zydropteridex. It may be suggested here that Jsoctes is a representative of the hetero- sporcus eusporangiate Filicinw. The only member of the Lyco- podine which Jsoetcs at all resembles is Phylloglossum.

Mutual Afinitics and Phylogeny of Pteridophyta.

Beyond the characteristics which they possess in common, and which have caused them to be collected into one class, there are no special

points of contact between the three sub-classes of the Ptert- dophyta. The classes have each its own well-marked habit ; and it therefore appears probable that they are to be regarded as equiva- lent branches of the Pteridophyta, springing from a common origin, in each of which a differentiation of homosporous and heterosporous forms has taken place. The relation of the homosporous to the heterosporous forms in each class is a point of interest. There is little or nothing to be said on this subject as regards the Zquiseting. But in the Filicine it appears probable that the simpler hetero- sporous forms have sprung from the simpler homosporous forms, that is, the Salviniacee from the Hymenophyllacez ; and in the Lycopodine that Selaginclla has sprung from Lycopodium. As- suming that Isoetcs belongs to the Lycopodinz, its nearest ally would appear to be Phylloglossum ; but this point must remain undecided until the whole life-history, especially the embryogeny, of Phyllo- glosswm is known, and its true systematic position thereby fixed.

Various attempts have been made to trace back the sporophyte of the Pteridophyta to that of the Muscince, the points of contact being the Hymenophyllacce on the one hand and Azthoceros on the other; but these attempts cannot be considered to have been suc- cessful. The differences between the known forms of sporophyte in the two classes are too great to be explained away on any hypo- thesis. The case is different with regard to the gametophyte; there are, in fact, many points of resemblance between the prothallium of the Ptcridophyta and the gametophyte of the Muscince. As Goebel and Bower have pointed out, the prothallium of some species of Trichomancs is a brauched filamentous structure, closely resembling Moss protonema; and in most ferns, as also in Hquisctum and Lycopodium, the prothallium is at first filamentous. The fila- meutous prothallium gives rise to one or more flattened expansions, on which the sexual organs, or at least the archegonia, are devcloped (archegoniophorcs). Thus there are indications in the gameto- phyte of many Pteridophyta of that distinction of protonema and sexual shoot which is so characteristic of the gametophyte of the Muscinex. But this remarkable correspondence in the gameto- phyte does not warrant the conclusion that the Pteridophyta have sprung from the Muscinew. It rather indicates that they are groups having a common origin in the Confervoid Chlorophyccex, but diverging from the first in the relation of

the sporophyte to the gametophyte, so that, whereas in the Muscince the sporophyte remains attached to the gametophyte throughout its whole exist- ence, in the Pteridophyta the sporophyte develops as an independ- ent organism. 'There can be little doubt that in the primitive Ptcridophyta the two generations resembled each other, and that, as evolution proceeded, they became more and more widely dissimilar, the gametophyte losing, the sporophyte gaining, in both morpho- logical and histological differentiation. An indication of this is still afforded by the general resemblance of the sporophyte of Phyllo- glossum to the gametophyte of Lycopodium cernuwm as described by Treub, and of the sporophyte of Lycopodium Philegmaria to its gametophyte (Treub). It will probably be found, when material 1s obtained for investigating it, that the sporophyte and the game- tophyte of Phylloglossum are very similar.

The phylogeny of the Pteridophyta, as suggested in the foregoing remarks, is indicated in the following table :—

(Chlorophycez)

Leptosporangiate

a = Filicine quisetinee omosporous Lycopoding sian lls (Hymenophyllacea) (ior caporous)

(Phylloglossum) — (Lycopodiwm)

: Hydro- (Heterosporous) Hetero- Eusporangiate pleridex sporous. Filicine (Hetero- — (Isoetes ?). Sclaginella. Homosporous sporous). | Heterosporous (Isoetes 2).

Literature of Pteridophyta.—Affinitiesand phylogeny:—Prantl, Untersuchungen zur Morphologie der Gefasskryptogamen, i,-ii., Leipsic, 1875-81; Goebel, Annales du Jardin Botanique de Buitenzorg, vii., 1887; Bower, "On some Normal and Abnormal Developments of the Oophyte of Trichomanes," in Annals of Botany, vol. i., 1888; Id., On the Morphology of Phylloglossum Drummondii, in Phil. Trans., part II., 1885; Treub, " Recherches sur les Lycopodiacées," in Ann. du Jardin Botanique de Buitenzorg, iii.-iv., 1884-86; Id., Annals of Botany, i., 1888: Kny, "Die

Entwickelung der Parkeriaceen," in Nova Actad. k. Leop. Akad., xxxvii., 1875. For general works, see Goebel, Outlines of Classification and Special Morphology, Oxford, 1887; Sadebeck, " Die Gefasskryptogamen," in Schenk's Handbuch der Botanik, i., 1879.

Sus-Kinapom IV. PHANEROGAMIA.

These plants are commonly known as "flowering plants"; but they are more correctly designated '"seed-bearing plants," or Spermaphyta, for the production of a seed is the one feature which distinguishes the members of this sub-kingdom from those of the other sub-kingdoms.

There is a definite alternation of generations in the life- history of these plants, but it is obscured by the extreme reduction which the gametophyte has undergone (see Repropuction). The sporophyte is the plant; a sus-pensor is formed in its embryogeny; and it is hetero- sporous. The sporophylls are aggregated on special shoots, frequently with other floral leaves (bracteoles, perianth leaves), to form flowers. The two kinds of sporangia are in all cases borne on distinct sporophylls. In the micro-sporangium there are numerous fertile sporogenous cells, each of which produces four microspores ; in the macro- sporangium there are generally but few sporogenous cells, of which only one is usually fertile, and this one produces a single macrospore without division. The microspores are set free from the sporangium producing them, whereas the macrospore is not. It is this last peculiarity which determines the formation of the seed.

In the above account of the asexual reproductive organs of the

Phanerogamia, the terms employed are those which are applied in the case of the heterosporous Pteridophyta ; the advantage gained by the use of these terms is that the true homologies of the repro- ductive organs in the two sub-kingdomsare keptin view. The rela- tion between these terms and those more commonly in use is as follows :—stamen=leaf bearing microsporangia (microsporophyl]) ; carpel=leaf bearing macrosporangia (macrosporophyll) ; pollen-sac =microsporangium ; anther=sorus of microsporangia ; ovule (nu- cellus)=macrosporangium ; pollen-grain= microspore ; embryo sac =macrospore. Stamens and carpels are

commonly borne by the same individual and in the same flower; but in many cases they are confined to distinct individuals (dieczous) or to distinct flowers (diclinous) on the same individual. _ Inasinuch as these plants are heterosporous, the sexual generation is represented by male and female gametophytes. The male gameto- phyte, formed by the germination of the microspore (pollen-grain), consists of two or sometimes three or four cells, one of which becomes the male organ (pollen tube=antheridium of other sub- kingdoms), while the rest have nothing to do with reproduction, but constitute the rudimentary vegetative portion of the prothal- lium. The female gametophyte, commonly known as the endo- sperm (=female prothallium), is formed in the interior of the macro- spore or embryo sac, and usually does not come at all into relation with the exterior. From certain cells of this endosperm one or more female organs are formed, which are equivalent to, and in some Phanerogams closely resemble, the archegonia of the Pteridophyta ; each of these female organs possesses, as its essential constituent, the female cell (oosphere, ovum).

The process of fertilization (see REPRODUCTION) depends upon the pollen-grains being brought near to the ovules, so that, when the pollen-grains germinate, the pollen tubes may be able, in the course of their growth, to come into close relation with the female cells which the ovules contain. In many cases the transference of the pollen-grains is effected by the wind ; the plants in which this is the case are characterized by their inconspicuous flowers, and are termed anemophilous. In other cases the transference is effected by means of insects; the plants in which this is the case are termed entomophilous, and are characterized by their conspicuous flowers, in which the perianth leaves are highly developed and brightly coloured, to attract the visits of insects,—an end which is further attained by the secretion of scented volatile oils and of sugary liquid (nectar). It is the conspicuous flowers of these ento- mophilous Phanerogumia which have earned for the whole group the designation of 'flowering plants," which, however, is by no means generally applicable.

The Phanerogamia are divided into two classes,—the GYMNOSPERM and the ANGIOsPERM.

VENohfasbEerk KINGDOM

Crass J. GymnosperM#.—The carpels are sometimes absent, and, when present, they do not form an ovary ; hence the ovules are naked. 'There is no stigma, conse- quently the pollen-grain comes into direct contact with the ovule. The whole of the female prothallium is formed in the embryo sac before fertilization. The female organ is in most cases a fully developed archegonium. The embryo is developed from a portion only of the fertilized female cell or oospore (meroblastic embryogeny) ; frequently several embryos are developed from one oospore (polyembryony). The flowers are dicecious or diclinous.

This elass consists of the following orders :—

Order 1. Cycadacex : characterized generally by the unbranched stem and by the large branched leaves. The order includes nine genera :—Cycas, Dioon, Ceratozamia, Zamia, Macrozamia, Encephal- artos, Stangeria, Bowenia, and Microcycas. The genus Cycas is peculiar, in that the carpels are not borne on special shoots, so as to form flowers, but on the main shoot, in the same way as the foliage leaves. The stamens of Cycas, as also both the stamens and carpels in the other genera, are highly modified sporophylls which are borne on special shoots forming cone-like flowers.

Order 2. Coniferw: characterized by the much-branehed stem and by the very numerous, small, unbranched leaves. The staminal flowers are generally cone-like. This order includes the Pines, Firs, Larehes, Yews, Cypresses, &e., arranged in the following families :—

Series A. Pinoides: the carpellary flowers are eones :— Fam. 1. Abietinex. Fam, 3. Cupressinex. «ok. Araucarien. » 4. Taxodince. Series B. Taxoidez: the carpellary flowers are not cones :— Fam. 1. Taxinex. Fam. 2. Podocarpex.

Order 8. Gnetacex: habit various; the flowers are not cones, and have a perianth. 'This order includes the three genera Ephedra, Gnetum, and Welwitschia. In Gnetum and Welwitschia the female organ (archegonium) is reduced to a single cell, the oosphere.

Mutual Afinitics and Phylogeny of Gymnosperme.

There is but little resemblance between the Cycadacex and the other two orders. Gingko or Salisburia, a remarkable genus whieh is usually placed in the Taxince, though it is in many respects peculiar, resembles the Cycadacex in the strueture of the arehe- gonium, in the fleshy character assumed by the outer portion of the seed-coat, and in the fact that the development of the embryo does not begin until after the seed has been shed. Probably the fossil plants known as the Cordaitacex may be regarded as a group inter- mediate between the Cycadacex and the Conifcre. The Conifcre and the Gnetacex are more closely allied, so much so in fact that the latter have been regarded by various writers as a family of the Conifere. The structure of the flowers in Ephedra is very similar to that in Taxus.

The connexion of the Gymnosperms with the Pleridophyta is un- doubted. The development of the microsporangium in the Gymno- sperms is the same as that of the sporangium of Lycopodium. The development of the macrosporangium presents in most cases the characteristic Phanerogamic features; but in certain cases (Ceratozamia longifolia, Cupressus sempervirens, Callitris quadri- valvis) there is a mass of sporogenous cells, as in the sporangia of the Pteridophyta, though only one of these cells is fertile, and it produces a single macrospore without division. In faet, there is a marked general resemblance in the development of the macrospor- angium between these species and Jsoetes. Another point of importanee is the fact that, although the female prothallium (endosperm) is under ordinary conditions entirely and permanently enelosed in the macrospore (embryo sac)—a feature which is charac- teristic of the Phanerogamia—yct in the Cycadaceex, if the first- formed archegonia are not fertilized, the prothallium resumes its growth and bursts the macrospore, coming to the surface of the ovule and turning green in consequence of exposure to light. Tak- ing into consideration their general habit and the peculiarities in the development of their sporangia, it appears that the Cycadacex find in the Eusporangiate Filices their nearest allies among the Pieridophyta. This suggestion presupposes the existence of hetero- Sporous Husporangiata, although all the known forms are homo- Sporous. But this difficulty will

be met, if, as suggested above, it turns out that Jsoetes really belongs to the Eusporangiate Filices. The Conifere resemble more nearly the Lycopodingw, such as Lyco- podium and Selaginella, in their general habit and in the cone-like form of their flowers. However, the position of the pollen-saes on the under surface of the peltate sporophyll is a feature which connects them with the Hguzsetine ; but, on the other hand, the ligular outgrowth on the upper surface of the macrosporophyll in Araucaria, which in the Abietinew becomes the large ovuliferous scale, is another point of resemblance to Selaginella and Jsoetes. In view of these resemblances to the Lycopodineg and the Equisetine,

fst

it is hardly possible to trace back the Coniferex to either of these groups: it is more probable that they sprang from forms of Pterido- phyta intermediate in character between the Lycopodinw and the Equisetine. The mutual relations and the phylogeny of the threc genera of Gnetacee cannot at present be determined with any de- gree of probability. The one point which affords any clue is the resemblance in general structure between the flowers of Gnetum and those of the Taxinew. The flower of Welwitschia, more than that of any other Gymnosperm, resembles that of an Angiosperm, especially in the fact that the staminal flower contains a rudi- mentary ovule.

Cuass II. AnciospERMa&.—The carpel or carpels form an ovary, in which the ovules are enclosed. A portion of the carpel forms a stigma, which receives the pollen-grains. The pollen-grains germinate on the stigma, and therefore do not come into direct relation with the ovules. A part only of the female prothallium (primary endosperm) is formed before fertilization, the remainder (secondary endo- sperm) after fertilization. The female organ is a reduced archegonium, consisting merely of the female cell (oosphere). The general occurrence of both macrosporophylls and micro- sporophylls in the same flower is a characteristic feature of this group, as is also the whorled arrangement of the floral leaves.

The Angiospermez are divided into two sub-classes,—the J/ono- cotyledons and the Dicotyledons, aceording to the number of the primary leaves or cotyledons of the embryo ; henee, in the former sub-elass the

first leaves are alternate, in the latter opposite. In the Monoeotyledons, with few exceptions, the growing-point of the embryonic stem is lateral; in the Dicotyledons it is always terminal. There are other distinguishing features, such as the parallel vena- tion of the leaves of Monoeotyledons and the retieulate venation in Dieotyledons ; but they are not sufficiently constant to be of much taxonomic value.

The Monocotyledons may be conveniently arranged in the following series :—

Series 1. Nudiflore: usually diclinous or dicecious; perianth wanting or rudimentary. This series includes the Spadiciflorz (Aroids, Palms, Natadex) and the Glumiflorx (Grasses, Sedges).

Series 2. Petaloidex: usually monoclinous ; perianth present, and usually well-developed and eoloured. This series ineludes the Lilies, Orehids, Irises, &e.

The Dicotyledons are usually classified as follows :—

Series 1. Monochlamydex: usually diclinous or dicecious ; perianth absent or simple.

Series 2. Polypetale: usually monoclinous; perianth usually con- sists of calyx and coloured corolla, the petals being free.

Series 83. Gamopetale: usually monoelinous; perianth usually consists of calyx and coloured corolla, the petals being coherent.

Phylogeny of the Angiosperme.

There can be no doubt that the Angiosperme have been derived from the Pteridophyta ; but it is a question whether they have had an independent origin from that group or whether they arc to be traced back to it through the Gymnosperms. In view of the wide gulf which separates the Angiosperms from even the highest Pécri- dophyta, and of the affinities of the Gymnosperms to the Ptert- dophyta on the one hand and to the

Angiosperms on the other, the latter suggestion would appear to be the more probable.

Although the Monoeotyledons and the Dieotyledons have so many features in common, it is probable that they have not had the same origin. The Gymnospermous forms to which the Dieoty- ledons are most nearly allied are the Coniferw, and Gnetum among the Gnetacex. The marked Angiospermous charaeters of Gnetwm, and its general similarity in habit to a Dicotyledonous plant, afford some ground for regarding this genus as the starting-point of the Dicotyledons. But morc probably the Dicotyledons are to be traced back to the Conifere, and the Gnetacex to be regarded as a lateral offshoot of the Coniferz, with an Angiospermous tendency, but not leading on to higher forms. The Gymnosperms which most re- semble the Monocotyledons are the Cycadacex ; and, ifit be assumed that the Angiosperms have sprung from the Gymnosperms, it is to this order of the latter class that the Monocotyledons are to be traced. The Monoeotyledons in which this resemblance is most conspicuous are those, such as the Aroids and Palms, which belong to the scrics Nudifiorz. j

Literature.—On the Phanerogamia, see Goebel, Outlines of Classification and Special Morphology, Oxford, 1887 ; Le Maout and Decaisne, Traité de Botanique (English ed. by Hooker, 1868); and Engler and Prantl, Die Pflanzenfamilien, Leipsic (in course of publication). r

On the phylogeny of plants, see Nigeli, Theorie d. Abstammungslehre, Munich, 1884; and Saporta and Marion, L' Evolution du Régne Végétal (Int. Sci. Serics, vols. xxxix. and lii.), Paris, 1881-85. Descriptions of the numerous natural orders will be found in the various text-books which treat of systematic botany, as well as in the above. (S. H. V.)

VEGETABLE MARROW. See Govurp and Hort1- CULTURE, Vol. xii. p. 283.

VEGETIUS, Fiavius Renartus, the compiler of a treatise on the art of war, dedicated to Valentinian II. (375-392). Nothing is known of his life

save that in MSS. he is called wr 2lustris and also comes. His sources, according to his own statement, were Cato, Cornelius Cel- sus, Frontinus, Paternus, and the imperial constitutions of Augustus, Trajan, and Hadrian. The book, which is a poor compilation, has to be used with great caution. The first edition appeared at Utrecht in 1473; the latest is that of Lang (Leipsic, 1869). The book has been often translated ; an English version through the French was published by Caxton in 1489.

VEGLIA (Slavonic, Ars), an island in the Gulf of Quarnero, Adriatic Sea, belonging to the Austrian district of Istria, is separated from the mainland by the narrow channel of Morlacca or Maltempo and from the island of Cherso on the south-west by that of Mezzo. It is 24 miles long and about 14 miles across at its widest part. The surface is mostly rugged and mountainous; but. the central, southern, and western districts are fertile, produc- ing wine, grain, oil, timber, and various kinds of fruit, besides pasturage for numerous live-stock. Silk, marble, and salt are also produced ; and fishing is carried on along the coast. In 1880 the island contained 18,089 inhabit- ants; the capital is Veglia, a town on the south-west side, with 1580 inhabitants and a good harbour.

VEHMIC COURTS. See Fenmic Courts,

VEIT. See Errvria, vol. viii. p. 634.

VELAZQUEZ, Dizco pz Sizva (1599-1660), the head of the Spanish school of painting and one of the mightiest painters the world has known, was born in Seville early in June 1599, the year in which Van Dyck also first saw the light at Antwerp. His European fame is of comparatively recent origin, dating from the first quarter of the 19th century. Tull then his pictures had lain immured in the palaces and museum of Madrid ; and from want of popular appreciation they had toa large extent escaped the rapacity of the French marshals during the Peninsular War. In 1828 Sir David Wilkie! wrote from Madrid that he felt himself in the presence of a new power in art as he looked at the works of Velazquez, and at the same time found a wonderful affinity between this master and the English school of portrait painters, being specially reminded of the firm square touch of Raeburn. He was struck by the sense of modernness of impression, of direct contact with nature, and of vital force which

pervaded all the work of Velazquez, in landscape as well as in portraiture. Time and criticism have now fully established his reputation as one of the most consummate of painters, and accordingly Mr Ruskin says of him that "everything Velazquez does may be taken as absolutely right by the student." At the present day his marvellous technique and strong individuality have given him a power in European art such as is exercised by no other of the old masters. Acquainted with all the Italian schools, the friend of the foremost painters of his day, he was strong enough to withstand every external influence and to work out for himself the development of his own nature and his own principles of art. A realist of the realists, he painted only what he saw; consequently his imagination seems limited. His religious conceptions are of the earth earthy, although some of his works, such as the Crucifixion and the Scourg- ing, are characterized by an intensity of pathos in which he ranks second to no painter. His men and women seem to breathe ; his horses are full of action and his dogs of life; so quick and close is his grasp of his subject. England was the first nation to recognize his extraordinary

1 See Cunningham's Life, vol. ii.

merit, and it owns by far the largest share of his works outside of Spain.? But Velazquez can only be seen in all his power in the gallery of the Prado at Madrid, where over sixty of his works are preserved, including historical, mythological, and religious subjects, as well as landscapes and portraits. It is hardly creditable to the patriotism of Seville, his native town, that no exaniple of his work is to be seen in the gallery of that city. Seville was then in the height of its prosperity, "the pearl of Spain," carrying on a great trade with the New World, and was also a vigorous centre of literature and art. For more thana hundred years it had fostered a native school of painting which ranked high in the Peninsula, and it reckoned among its citizens many whose names are prominent in Spanish literature.

Velazquez was the son of Rodriguez de Silva, a lawyer in Seville, descended from a noble Portuguese family, and was baptized on 6th June 1599. Following a common Spanish usage, he is known by his mother's name Velaz- quez. There has been considerable diversity of opinion as to his full name, but he was known to his contempo- raries as Diego de Silva Velazquez, and signed his name thus. He was educated, says Palomino, by his parents in the fear of God, and was intended for a learned profession, for which he received a good training in languages and philosophy. But the bent of the boy was towards art, and he was placed under the elder Herrera, a vigorous painter who disregarded the Italian influence of the early Seville school. From his works in Seville we can see that Herrera was a bold and effective painter ; but he was at the same time a man of unruly temper and his pupils could seldom stay long with him. Velazquez remained but one year, long enough, however, to influence his life. It was from Herrera that he learned to use long brushes, or, as Mr J. E. Hodgson, R.A., suggests, brushes with long bristles, by means of which his colours seem to be floated on the canvas by a light fluent touch, the envy and despair of his successors. From Herrera's studio Velazquez betook himself to a very different master, the learned and pedantic Pacheco, the author of a heavy book on painting, and, as we see by his works at Madrid, a dull commonplace painter. Jn this school he remained for five years, studying proportion and perspective, and seeing all that was best in the literary and artistic circles of Seville. Here also—and this may explain much—he fell in love with his master's daughter Juana, whom he married in 1618 with the hearty approval of Pacheco, who praises his hand and heart, claiming at the same time all the credit of having been his master. He must, however, have found Velazquez a wayward pupil; for, instead of looking to Raphael, according to orders, the young painter set himself to copy the commonest things about him,— earthenware jars of the country people, birds, fish, fruit, and flowers of the market-place. To paint well and thoroughly what he saw, to model with his brush, and to colour under the influence of light and shade were for him the vital purpose, the first lesson, in his art. It was with deliberate purpose that Velazquez painted these bodegones (tavern-pieces), as they were called ; for we are told that he said he would rather be the first painter of common things than the second in higher art. Carrying out this idea still further, Velazquez felt that to master the subtlety of the human face he must make

this a special study, and he accordingly engaged a peasant lad to be his servant and model, making innumerable studies in charcoal and chalk, and catching his every expression. We see this model in the laughing Peasant Boy of the

; On the 274 works attributed to Velazquez by Mr Curtis 121 are in the United Kingdom, while France has but 13, Austria-Hungary 12, Russia 7, and Germany about the same number.

YELAGOU EZ

Belvedere Gallery at Vienna. In such work as this, and in his studies by the wayside, Velazquez laid the founda- tion of his subsequent mastéry of expression, of penetra- tion into character, and of rendering the life of his sitter to the quick. He saw the world around him teeming with life and objects of interest to the painter, and he set him- self to render these. His manner is as national as that of Cervantes. He lived and died racy ofthe soil. The posi- tion and reputation of Velazquez were now assured at Seville. There his wife bore him two daughters,—all his family so far as is known. The younger died in infancy, while the elder, Francisca, in due time married Bautista del Mazo, a painter, whose large family is probably that which is represented in the important picture of later years in Vienna, the so-called Family of Velazquez. Mr Curtis, however, is inclined to believe that this picture is by Mazo. In the gallery at Madrid there is at least one portrait of this daughter, painted in these early days at Seville, as also a portrait of Juana his wife, holding a drawing-tablet on her knee. There was formerly in the possession of Lord Dudley another portrait of his wife by Velazquez, painted, perliaps, in the first year of their happy marriage. Of this early Seville manner we have an excellent example in E] Aguador (the Water-Carrier) at Apsley House (London). Firm almost to hardness, it displays close study of nature. One can see in it the youthful struggle to portray the effects of light stealing here and there over the prominent features of the face, groping after the effects which the painter was to master later on. The brushwork is bold and broad, and the out- lines firmly marked. As is usual with Velazquez at this time, the harmony of colours is red, brown, and yellow, reminding one of Ribera. For sacred subjects we may turn to the Adoration of the Magi at Madrid,

dated 1619, and the Adoration of the Shepherds in the London National Gallery, in both of which we have excellent ex- amples of his realism. The peasants offering their gifts of poultry are the hard-featured women of the market-place of Seville, pre-Raphaelite in their uncompromising truth- fulness. Thus also in the St John in the Desert we find his peasant boy transformed into the saint.

But Velazquez was now eager to see more of the world. Madrid, with its fine Titians, held out strong inducements. Accordingly in 1622, fortified with letters of introduction to Fonseca, who held a good position at court, he spent some months there, accompanied only by his servant. Here he painted the portrait of the poet Gongora, a com- mission from Pacheco, which now hangs in the gallery at Madrid. The impression which Velazquez made in the capital must have been very strong, for in the following year he was summoned to return by Olivares, the all- powerful minister of Philip IV., fifty ducats being allowed to defray his expenses. On this occasion he was accom- panied by his father-in-law. Next year (1624) he received from the king three hundred ducats to pay the cost of the removal of his family to Madrid, which became his home for the remainder of his life. Weak and worth- less as a king, Philip had inherited the art-loving propen- sities of his race, and was proud to be considered a poet and a painter. It is one of the best features of his char- acter that he remained for a period of thirty-six years the faithful and attached friend of Velazquez, whose merit he Soon recognized, declaring that no other painter should ever paint his portrait. By his equestrian portrait of the king, painted in 1623, Velazquez secured admission to the royal service with a salary of twenty ducats per month, besides medical attendance, lodgings, and payment for the pictures he might paint. The portrait was exhibited on the steps of San Felipe, and was received with enthusiasm, being vaunted by poets, ainong them Pacheco.

It has un- !

fortunately disappeared, having probably perished in one of the numerous fires which occurred in the royal palaces. The Prado, however, has two portraits (Nos. 1070 and 1071) which are most probably studies

for this picture. In them the harshness of the Seville period has disappeared and the tones are more delicate. The modelling is firm, recalling that of Antonio Moro, the Dutch portrait-painter of Philip IL, who exercised a considerable influence on the Spanish school. In the same year the prince of Wales (afterwards Charles I.) arrived at the court of Spain. We are told that he sat to Velazquez, but the picture has dis- appeared. It was during this period also that he painted the hunting- scenes of which examples are to be found in the collections of Sir Richard Wallace, Lord Clarendon, and others, and which served him in the production of the great Boar Hunt of the London National Gallery, painted, however, in the later years of his life,—a magnificent work in spite of some restorations. It was then too that he painted the groups of Court Gallants in their gay costumes, accompanied, as in the Boar Hunt, by their servants and dogs. The splendid Meeting of Artists (as it is absurdly named) in the Louvre was doubtless executed at a later time from studies taken in these early years, for it displays all the qualities of his finer work, space and air being thrown round the figures, which are touclied with great mastery and ease.

In 1628 Rubens visited Madrid on a diplomatic mission for nine months, and Velazquez was appointed by the king to be his guide among the art treasures of Spain. Rubens was then at the height of his fame, and had undertaken asa commission from Olivares the large pictures which now adorn the great hall in Grosvenor House (London). These months might have been a new turning-point in the career of a weaker man than Velazquez, for Rubens added to his brilliant style as a painter the manner of a fascinating courtier. Rubens had a high opinion of the talent of Velazquez, as is attested by Fuensalida, but he effected no change in the style of the strong Spaniard. He im- pressed him, however, with the desire to see Italy and the works of her mighty painters. In 1627 the king had given for competition among the painters of Spain the subject of the Expulsion of the Moors. Velazquez bore off the palm; but his picture was destroyed in a fire at the palace in 1734. Palomino, however, describes it. Philip ILI. points with his baton to a crowd of men and women driven off under charge of soldiers, while Spain, a majestic female, sits looking calmly on. The triumph of Velazquez was rewarded by his being appointed gentle- man usher. To this was shortly afterwards added a daily allowance

of twelve reals, the same amount as was allowed to the court barbers, and ninety ducats a year for dress, which was also paid to the dwarfs, buffoons, and players about the king's person—truly a curious estimate of talent at the court of Spain. As an extra payment he received (though it was not paid for five years) one hundred ducats for the picture of Bacchus, painted in 1629 (No. 485 of the Madrid gallery). The spirit and aim of this work are better understood from its Spanish name, Los Borrachos or Los Bebedores (the Topers), who are paying mock homage to a half-naked ivy-crowned young man seated on a wine barrel. It is like a story by Cervantes, and is brimful of jovial humour. One can easily see in this picture of national manners how Velazquez had reaped the benefit of his close study of peasant life. The painting is firm and solid, and the light and shade are more deftly handled than in former works. Altogether, this production

1 In 1847 Mr John Snare of Reading exhibited a picture which had come from the sale of Lord Fife in 1809, and which he maintained to be the long lost work. This led to much controversy ; but the claim was rejected by experts and the picture is said to be now in America,

may be taken as the most advanced example of the first style of Velazquez. It is usual to divide his artistic career by his two visits to Italy, his second style following the first visit and his third the second. Roughly speaking, this somewhat arbitrary division may be accepted, though

it will not always apply, for, as is usual in the case of

many great painters, his styles at times overlap each other. Velazquez rarely signed his pictures, and the royal archives only give the dates of his more important works. Internal evidence and history, as regards his portraits, supply to a certain extent the rest.

In 1629 Philip gave Velazquez permission to carry out his desire of visiting Italy, without loss of salary, making him besides a present of 400 ducats, to which Olivares added 200. He sailed from Barcelona in August in the company of the marquis De Spinola, the conqueror of Breda, then

on his way to take command of the Spanish troops at Milan. It was during this voyage that Velazquez must have heard the details of the surrender of Breda from the lips of the victor, and he must have sketched his fine head, known to us also by the portrait by Van Dyck. But the great picture was not painted till many years later, for Spinola had fallen into disfavour at court. In Venice Velazquez made copies of the Crucifixion and the Last Supper of Tintoretto, which he sent to the king, and in Rome he copied Michel- angelo and Raphael, lodging in the Villa Medici till fever compelled him to remove into the city. Here he painted the Forge of Vulcan (No. 1059 of the Madrid gallery), in which Apollo narrates to the astonished Vulcan, a village blacksmith, the news of the infidelity of Venus, while four Cyclops listen to the scandal. The mythological treatment is similar to that of the Bacchus: it is realistic and Spanish to the last degree, giving a picture of the interior of an Andalusian smithy, with Apollo thrown in to make the story tell. The conception is commonplace, yet the im- pression it produces is undoubted from the vividness of the representation and the power of expression. The model- ling of the half-naked figures is excellent. Altogether this picture is much superior to the other work painted at the same time, Joseph's Coat, which now hangs in the Escorial. This work has been much praised—overpraised in the opinion of the present writer—and this opinion is shared by Don Federico de Madrazo, the director of the Madrid museum, who looks on it as one of the weakest of the productions of Velazquez. Both these works are evidently painted from the same models. In looking at these two pictures what strikes one especially is that they betray no trace of the influence of the Italians, Velazquez remained true to himself. At Rome he also painted the two beautiful landscapes of the Gardens of the Medici, now in the Madrid museum, full of sparkle and charm. Landscape as a form of art never had attraction for the Spaniards ; but Velazquez here, and in the silvery land- scapes painted some years later at Aranjuez, shows how great a master he was in this branch of art. After a visit to Naples in 1631, where he worked with his country- man Ribera, and painted a charming portrait of the infanta Maria, sister of Philip, he returned early in the year to Madrid.

He then painted the first of many portraits of the young prince Don Baltasar Carlos, the heir to the throne, digni- fied and lordly even in his

childhood, caracolling in the dress of a field-marshal on his prancing steed. Sir Richard Wallace owns a fine example ; but the finest in the United Kingdom is the well-known picture at Grosvenor House a masterly example of the second manner of Velazquez. The colour is warm and bright, the workmanship solid and fused like enamel, while light and air pervade every corner. The scene is in the riding-school of the palace, the king and queen looking on from a baleony, while

Olivares is in attendance as master of the horse to the prince. Don Baltasar died in 1646 at the age of seventeen, so that judging by his age this picture must have been painted about 1641, two years before the fall of Olivares, This powerful minister was the early and constant patron of the painter. His impassive saturnine face is familiar to us from the many portraits painted by Velazquez, a face which, like his royal master's, seems never to have known a smile, and in which are written pride and disdain. Two must be named of surpassing excellence,—the full length belonging to Mr. Holford (exhibited at Burlington House in 1887), stately and dignified, in which he wears the green cross of Alcantara and holds a wand, the badge of his office as master of the horse ; the other the great equestrian portrait of the Madrid gallery (No. 487), in which he is flatteringly represented as a field-marshal in all his pomp during an action. It is difficult to overpraise the excel- lence of this work, either as regards its dramatic power or its masterly execution. In these portraits Velazquez has well repaid the debt of gratitude which he owed to his first patron, whom he stood by in his fall, thus expos- ing himself to the risk—and it was not a light one—of incurring the anger of the jealous Philip. The king, how- ever, showed no sign of malice towards his favoured painter. Faithful in few things, Philip kept true to Velazquez, whom he visited daily in his studio in the palace, and to whom he stood in many attitudes and costumes, as a huntsman with his dogs, as a warrior in command of his troops, and even on his knees at prayer, wearing ever the same dull uninterested look. His pale face and lack-lustre eye, his fair flowing hair and moustaches curled up to his eyes, and his heavy projecting Austrian lip are known in many a portrait and nowhere more supremely than in the wonderful canvas of the London National Gallery

(No. 745), where he seems to live and breathe. Few portraits in the whole range of art will compare with this work, in which the consummate handling of Velazquez is seen at its best, for it is in his late and most perfect manner.1 From one of the equestrian portraits of the king, painted in 1638, the sculptor Montafias modelled a statue which was cast in bronze by the Florentine sculptor Tacca, and which now stands in the Plaza del Oriente at Madrid, "a solid Velazquez," as it has been well named by Ford. This portrait exists no more ; but there is no lack of others, for Velazquez was in constant and close attendance on Philip, accompanying him in his journeys to Aragon in 1642 and 1644, and was doubtless present with him when he entered Lerida as a conqueror. It was then that he painted the great equestrian portrait (No. 1066 of the Madrid gallery) in which the king is represented as a great commander leading his troops,—a réle which Philip never played ex- cept in a theatrical pageant. All is full of animation except the stolid face of the king. It hangs as a pendant to the great Olivares portrait,—fit rivals of the neighbour- ing Charles V. by Titian, which doubtless fired Velazquez to excel himself, and both remarkable for their silvery tone, and their feeling of open air and harmony combined with brillianey. The light plays on the armour and scarf thrown to the wind, showing how completely Velazquez had mastered the effects he strove to reach in his early days. Of these two great works Sir Richard Wallace possesses small but excellent replicas.

_1 In this and in all his portraits Philip wears the golilla, a stiff linen collar projecting at right angles from the neck. It was invented by the king, who was so proud of it that he celebrated it by a festival, followed by a procession to church to thank God for the blessing (Madame D'Aulnoy, Voyage @ Espagne). The golilla was thus the height of fashion and appears in most of the male portraits of the period. ¢ Tn regard to the wonderful structure of Philip's moustaches, it is said that, to preserve their form, they were encased during the night in perfumed leather covers called bigoteras,

VEER 20 wv tf Z

But, besides the forty portraits of Philip which are known, we have portraits of other members of the royal family, of Philip's first wife,

Isabella of Bourbon, and her children, especially of her eldest son, Don Baltasar Carlos, of whom, besides those already mentioned, there is a beau- tiful full length in a private room at Buckingham Palace. Cavaliers, soldiers, churchmen, and poets of the court, as for example the Quevedo at Apsley House (Burlington House, 1887), sat to the painter and, even if forgotten by history, will live on his canvas. The admirable Pareja of Lord Radnor's collection (Burlington House, 1873) is said to have been taken by Philip for the living man. It has been remarked that the Spaniards have always been chary of committing to canvas the portraits of their beauti- ful women. Queens and infantas may be painted and ex- hibited, but ladies rarely. One wonders who the beautiful woman can be that adorns the gallery of Sir Richard Wal- lace, the splendid brunette so unlike the usual fair-haired female sitters to Velazquez. She belongs to this period of his work, to the ripeness of his middle period. Instinct with life, her bosom seems to heave and the blood to pul- sate through her veins. The touch is firm but free, showing the easy strength of the great master. Rarely has flesh been painted with such a glow, yet with such reserve. This picture was one of the ornaments of the Bethnal Green collection. But, if we have few ladies of the court of Philip, we have in great plenty his buffoons and dwarfs. Even these deformed creatures attract our sympathy as we look at their portraits by Velazquez, who, true to his nature, treats them gently and kindly, as in El] Primo (the Favourite), whose intelligent face and huge folio with ink bottle and pen by his side show him to be a wiser and better-educated man than many of the gallants of the court. El Bobo de Coria, El Niiio de Vallecas, and Pab- lillos, a buffoon evidently acting a part, all belong to this middle period. From these commissioned portraits of the menials of the court it is pleasant to turn to one of the greatest of historical works, the Surrender of Breda, often known as Las Lanzas, from the serried rank of lances breaking the sky, which is believed to have been painted about 1647. It represents the moment when the van- quished Justin of Nassau in front of his Dutch troops is submissively bending as he offers to his conqueror Spinola the keys of the town, which, with courteous grace, the victor refuses to accept, as he lays his hand gently on the shoulder of his defeated foe.1 Behind Spinola stand the Spanish troops bearing their lances aloft, while beyond is along stretch of the Low Country, dotted with fortifica- tions and giving the impression of vast space and distance. The

picture is full of light and air and is perhaps the finest example of the silvery bluish style of Velazquez. In con- ception it is as fine as in execution, and one looks in vain for a trace of "the malicious pencil" which Sir William Stirling-Maxwell discerned in the treatment of Justin and his gallant Dutchmen.

The greatest of the religious paintings by Velazquez belongs also to this middle period, the Christ on the Cross (Madrid gallery, No. 1055). Palomino says it was painted in 1638 for the convent of San Placido. It is a work of tremendous power and of great originality, the moment chosen being that immediately after death. The Saviour's head hangs on his breast and a mass of dark tangled hair conceals part of the face. The beautiful form is projected against a black and hopeless sky from which light has been blotted out. The figure stands absolutely alone without any accessory. The skull and serpent described by Sir William Stirling-Maxwell were added by some pious bungler

1 This gracious attitude is also employed by Velazquez in a picture

: an House (representing the reception of St Francis Borgia by oyola).

at a much later date. The picture was lengthened to suit its place in an oratory; but this addition has since been removed,

Velazquez's son-in-law Mazo had succeeded him as usher in 1634, and he himself had received steady promotion in

'the royal household, receiving a pension of 500 ducats in

1640, increased to 700 in 1648, for portraits painted and to be painted, and being appointed inspector of works in the palace in 1647. Philip now entrusted him with the carrying out of a design on which he had long set his heart, the founding of an academy of art in Spain. Rich in pictures, Spain was weak in statuary, and Velazquez was commissioned to proceed to Italy to make purchases. Ac- companied by his faithful slave Pareja, whom he taught to be a good painter, he sailed from Malaga in 1649,

land- ing at Genoa, and proceeding thence by Milan to Venice, buying Titians, Tintorettos, and Veroneses as he went. A curious conversation which he is said to have had with Salvator Rosa is reported by Boschini,? in which the Spaniard with perfect frankness confesses his want of appreciation of Raphael and his admiration of Titian, "first of all Italian men." It seems a possible story, for Velazquez bought according to his likings and painted in the spirit of his own ideals. At Modena he was received with much favour by the duke, and doubtless here he painted the two splendid portraits which now adorn the Dresden gallery, for these pictures came from the Modena sale of 1746. They presage the advent of the painter's third and latest manner, a noble example of which is the great portrait of Innocent X. in the Doria palace at Rome, to which city Velazquez now proceeded. There he was received with marked favour by the pope, who presented him with a medal and gold chain. Of this portrait, thought by Sir Joshua Reynolds to be the finest picture in Rome, Palomino says that Velazquez took a copy to Spain. There exist several in different galleries, some of them possibly studies for the original or replicas painted for Philip. One of the most remarkable is that in Apsley House, exhibited in Burlington House in 1887. The modelling of the stern impassive face comes near to per- fection, so delicate are the gradations in the full light ; all sharpness of outline has disappeared ; and the features seem moulded by the broad and masterly brushwork. When closely examined, the work seems coarse, yet at the proper distance it gives the very essence of living flesh. The handling is rapid but unerring. Velazquez had now reached the manera abreviada, as the Spaniards call this bolder style. This is but another way of saying that his early and laborious studies and his close observation of nature had given to him in due time, as to all great painters, the power of representing what he saw by simpler means and with more absolute truth. At Rome he painted also a portrait of his servant Pareja, probably the picture of Lord Radnor's collection, which procured his election into the Academy of St Luke. Philip was now wearying for his return ; accordingly, after a visit to Naples, where he saw his old friend Ribera, he returned to Spain by Barcelona in 1651, taking with him many pictures and 300 pieces of statuary, which he afterwards arranged and catalogued for the king. Undraped sculpture was, how- ever, abhorrent to the Spanish Church, and after Philip's death these works gradually disappeared.

Isabella of Bourbon had died in 1644, and the king had married Maria Anna of Austria, whom Velazquez now painted in many attitudes. He was specially chosen by the king to fill the high office of 'aposentador major," which imposed on him the duty of looking after the quarters occupied by the court whether at home or in their journeys —a responsible function, which was no sinecure and inter

2 See Stirling's Velazquez and his Works, p. 161.

fered with the exercise of his art.

highest examples of his style.) Inglés (the Englishman) with his dog, ZZsop, Menippus,

and the Sculptor, all in the Madrid gallery, show his surest To these may be added the charming

and freest manner. portraits of the royal children in the Louvre and Vienna, among the choicest of his works.

Menifias (the Maids of Honour) in the Madrid gallery, painted in 1656, where the little lady holds court, sur-

rounded by her ladies-in-waiting, her dwarfs, and her mas-

tiff, while Velazquez is seen standing at his easel. This is the finest portrait we have of the great painter, and, as etched by St Raymond, it forms the frontispiece of the book by Mr Curtis. It is a face of much dignity, power, and sweetness,—like his life, equable and serene, unruffled by care. Las Meniiias was the picture of which Luca Giordano said that it was the "theology of painting," an- other way of expressing the opinion of Sir Thomas Law- rence, that this work is the philosophy of art, so true is it in rendering the desired effect. The result is there, one knows not by what means, as if by a first intention without labour, absolutely right. The story is told that the king painted the red cross of Santiago on the breast of the painter, as it appears to-day on the canvas. Velazquez did not, however,

receive the honour till 1659, three years after the execution of this work. Even the powerful king of Spain could not make his favourite a belted knight with- out a commission to inquire into the purity of his lineage on both sides of the house! Fortunately the pedigree could bear scrutiny, as for generations the family was found free from all taint of heresy, from all trace of Jewish or Moorish blood, and from contamination by trade or commerce. The difficulty connected with the fact that he was a painter was got over by his being painter to the king and by the declaration that he did not sell his pictures. But for this royal appointment, which enabled him to escape the censorship of the Inquisition, we should never have had his splendid Venus and Cupid, belonging to Mr Morritt of Rokeby Hall (exhibited in Manchester in 1857), painted in his latest manner and worthy of comparison with Titian. There were in truth but two patrons of art in Spain,—the church and the art-loving king and court. Murillo was the artist favoured by the church, while Velazquez was patronized by the crown. One difference, however, deserves to be noted. Murillo, who toiled for a rich and powerful church, left scarcely sufficient means to pay for his burial, while Velazquez lived and died in the enjoyment of good salaries and pensions. Yet on occasions Philip gave commissions for religious pictures to Velazquez, —among others, and belonging to this later period, the Coronation of the Virgin (Madrid), splendid in colour—a harmony of red, blue, and grey—but deficient in religious feeling and dignity. It was painted for the oratory of the queen, doubtless Maria Anna, in the palace at Madrid. Another royal commission for the hermitage of Buen Retiro was the St Anthony the Abbot and St Pau] the Hermit, painted in 1659, the landscape of which excited the warm admiration of Sir David Wilkie. The last of his works which we shall name is Las Hilanderas or the Spinners (Madrid), painted about 1656, representing the interior of the royal tapestry works. The subject is no- thing, the treatment everything. Itis full of light, air, and inovement, splendid in colour, and marvellous in handling. This picture, Raphael Mengs said, seemed to have been painted not by the hand but by the pure force of will.

! The records of this commission have been found among the archives of the order of Santiago by M. Villaamil.

Yet far from indicat-

ing any decline, his works of this period are amongst the The dwarf Don Antonio el

It is one of these in- fantas, Margarita Maria, the eldest daughter of the new queen, that is the subject of the well-known picture Las

VEL—VEL

We see in it the full ripeness of the power of Velazquez, a concentration of all the art-knowledge he had gathered during his long artistic career of more than forty years, In no picture is he greater as a colourist. The scheme is simple,—a harmony of red, bluish green, grey, and black, which are varied and blended with consummate skill.

In 1660 a treaty of peace between France and Spain was to be consummated by the marriage of the infanta Maria Theresa with Louis XIV., and the ceremony was to take place in the Island of Pheasants, a small swampy island in the Bidassoa. Velazquez was charged with the decoration of the Spanish pavilion and with the whole scenic display. In the midst of the grandees of the first two courts in Christendom Velazquez attracted much attention by the nobility of his bearing and the splendour of his costume. On the 26th June he returned to Madrid, and on the 31st July he was stricken with fever. Feeling his end approaching, he signed his will, appointing as his sole executors his wife and his firm friend Fuensalida, keeper of the royal records. He died on the 6th of August 1660, passing away in the full possession of his great powers, and leaving no work behind him to show a trace of decay. He was buried in the Fuensalida vault of the church of San Juan, and within eight days his wife Juana was laid beside him. Unfortunately this church was de-stroyed by the French in 1811, so that his place of interment is now unknown, There was much difficulty in adjusting the tangled accounts outstanding between Velazquez and the treasury, and it was not till 1666, after the death of Philip, that they were finally settled.

Velazquez can hardly be said to have formed a school of painting. Apart from the circumstance that his occupations at court would have prevented

this, his genius was too personal for transmission by teaching. Yet his influence on those immediately connected with him was considerable. In 1642 he befriended young Murillo on his arrival in Madrid, received him into his house, and directed his studies for three years. His son-in-law Mazo painted in his manner, and doubtless many pictures by Mazo are attributed to the master. Carrefio, though never a pupil, was a favourite aud had the good sense to appreciate him and imitate him. His faithful slave Pareja studied his methods and produced work which by the favour of Velazquez procured his manumission from Philip. But the appreciation of the fine talent of Velazquez passed away quickly in Spain, as that country began to fall to pieces.

In addition to the standard works by Palomino, Cean Bermudez, and Pacheco, see the biographical notice by Don Pedro de Madrazo in his Catalogo del Museo del Prado (1872); Velazquez and his Works (1855) and Annals of Artists of Spain (1848), by W. Stirling (afterwards Sir W. Stirling-Maxwell); Ford's Handbook to Spain (1855) and his article in the English Cyclopedia; Velazquez and Murillo, by Charles B. Curtis (1883); the works of W. Burger (T. Thoré); Gesch. d. Malerei, by Woltmann and Woermann ; Sir Edmund Head's Handbook of Spanish Paint- ing (1848); Works of Velazquez (prints), by G. W. Reid (1872); Gaz. d. Beaux Arts, art. Velazquez", by Paul Lefort (second period 1879-82); and Justi, Diego Velazquez u. sein Jahrhundert, 2 vols. , Bonn, 1888. WJ. F. W.)

VELEIA, a town of Liguria, near the frontier of Gallia Cisalpina, on the Apennine slope, about 20 miles to the south of Placentia. The "oppidum Veleiatium " is vaguely mentioned by Pliny as belonging to Liguria, but its exact site remained unknown until 1760, when its remains began to be recovered from under a mass of debris, which showed that the city must have been overwhelmed by a landslip from the neighbouring mountain, Among the buildings that have been brought to light are a basilica, an amphi- theatre, and several temples. Interesting antiquities from Veleia, including the "tabula alimentaria" of Trajan (see vol. xiii. p. 132), are deposited in the museum at Parma. None of the coins hitherto discovered on the site are later than the time of Probus (276-282).

VELEZ-MALAGA, a town of Spain, in the province of Malaga, and 15 miles east-north-east from that town, is finely situated in a fertile valley at the foot of steep mountains (Sierra Tejada), within a mile of the mouth of the small river Velez. Formerly it was a place of con- siderable commercial importance, but its prosperity has much declined in recent years, and it suffered severely in the earthquakes of 1884. It is associated with many

romantic events in the history of the Moorish wars, to which period its old castle belongs. The vegetation of the neighbourhood is most luxuriant, including the aloe, palm, sugar-cane, prickly pear, orange, vine, olive, and sweet potato. The inhabitants are chiefly employed in the various industries connected with the cultivation and export of the products of these. There is also a tunny fishery. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 24,332.

VELIZH, or Wet1z, a district-town of Russia, in the government of Vitebsk, on the Dwina, 53 miles north-east of the city of Vitebsk. It has an active trade in corn and linseed, grown in the neighbouring provinces, and sent by river to Riga in exchange for fish, salt, tobacco, and groceries. The population (16,370 in 1885) has doubled since about 1860.

Velizh is supposed to have been originally founded by the Lithuanians, but it was deserted in the 16th century. In 1536 the

Russians erected here a wooden fort, which, however, was soon taken by the Poles (1580), and it remained in their possession until 1772.

VELLEIUS. See Patercuxus.

VELLETRI, a town of Italy, in the province of Rome, and 26 miles by rail to the south-east of that city, is picturesquely situated on a spur of Monte Artemisio on the southern edge of the Alban Hills and overlooking the Pontine marshes. The streets are steep, narrow, and irre- gular. In the

highest part of the town are the municipal offices, with an important ancient inscription relating to the restoration of the amphitheatre under Valentinian and Valens. Velletri is the seat of the bishop of Ostia ; the cathedral (1660) contains some good sculpture of the school of Sansovino. 'The neighbourhood produces a cele- brated wine, a chief source of wealth to the town. The population in 1881 numbered 13,532.

At the close of the Latin War (336 B.c.) the Volscian Velitre had its walls razed to the ground and its leading inhabitants banished beyond the Tiber, their lands being given to Roman settlers. It became a flourishing municipium, and was the native place of the Octavian family. In the neighbourhood of Velletri Don Carlos, younger son of Philip V. of Spain, in 1734 gained over the Austrians a decisive victory, which ultimately secured him as Charles III. the kingdom of the Two Sicilies.

VELLORE, a town and military cantonment of India, in North Arcot district of the Madras presidency, on the right bank of the river Palar in 12° 55' 17" N. lat. and 79° 10'17" E. long. It has a strongly-built fortress, which

was famous in the palmy days of the Carnatic, and which |

is overlooked by hills in the vicinity. In 1780 it with- Stood a siege for two years by Hyder Ali. After the fall of Seringapatam (1799) Vellore was selected as the resi- dence of the sons of Tippoo Sahib, and to their intrigues has been attributed the revolt of the sepoys at Vellore in 1806. Besides the fortress, the town contains a handsome Vishnuvite temple with some good carving. In 1881 the population was 37,491 (males 17,605, females 19,886). VELVET is a silken textile fabric having a short dense piled surface. It is the type of the numerous forms of piled fabric now made, the processes employed in the manufacture of which are noticed under WEAVING (¢.0.). In all probability the art of velvet-weaving originated in the far East ; and it is not till about the beginning of the I4th century that we find any mention of the textile. Pustian, however, which differs from velvet only in material, 18 spoken of in English ecclesiastical inventories as early as the beginning of the 13th century. The peculiar pro- perties of velvet, the splendid yet softened depth of dye- colour it exhibited, at once marked it out as a fit material for

ecclesiastical vestments, royal and state robes, and sumptuous hangings; and the most magnificent textures of medizval times were Italian velvets. These were in many ways most effectively treated for ornamentation, such as by varying the colour of the pile, by producing

pile of different lengths (pile upon pile, or double pile), and by brocading with plain silk, with uncut pile, or with a ground of gold tissue, &c. The earliest sources of Euro pean artistic velvets were Lucca, Genoa, Florence, and Venice, and to the present day Genoa continues to send out rich velvet textures. Somewhat later the art was taken up by Flemish weavers, and in the 16th century Bruges attained a reputation for velvets not inferior to that of the great Italian cities. The principal seats of the modern manufacture are Crefeld and Lyons; but, at the former centre especially, a large proportion of an inferior texture, having a silken pile on a cotton foundation and known as velveteen, is now made.

VENANTIUS. See Forrunarus.

VENDACE is the name of a British freshwater fish of the genus Coregonus, of which two other species are indi- genous in the fresh waters of the British Islands, viz., the gwyniad and the pollan. The vendace (C. vandesius) is restricted to some lochs in Dumfriesshire, Scotland ; it is, however, very similar to a species (C. albula) which inhabits some of the large and deep lakes of northern Europe. From its general resemblance to a dace the French name of the latter, vandoise, was transferred to it at the period when French was the language of the court and aristocracy of Scotland. So great is the local celebrity of the fish that a story has been invented ascribing to Mary Queen of Scots the merit of having introduced it into the Lochmaben lochs. It is considered a great delicacy, and on favourable days when the shoals rise to the surface, near the edges of the loch, great numbers may be taken. It spawns in November. In length it scarcely exceeds 8 inches.

Authentic accounts of the vendace have been published by Sir William Jardine, in Edinb. Journ. of Nat. and Geog. Science, iii. p.

4, 1830, and by Robert Knox, in rans. Roy. Soc. Edinb., xii. p.

503, 1834.

VENDEE, a maritime department of France, formed in 1790 out of Bas-Poitou, and taking its name from an un- important tributary of the Sévre Niortaise, lies between 46° 16’ and 47° 5’ N. lat. and 0° 32’ and 2° 10’ W. long., and is bounded by Loire-Inférieure and Maine-et-Loire on the N., by Deux-Sévres on the E., by Charente-Inférieure on the §., and by the Atlantic Ocean on the W. for 93 miles. The islands of Yeu (or Dieu) and Noirmoutier are included. The Sévre Nantaise on the N.E. and the Sévre Niortaise on the 8., besides other streams of minor import- ance, form natural boundaries. The department falls into three divisions—woodland, plain, and marsh. The highest point (945 feet) is situated in the woodland, which occu- pies the greater part of Vendée, on the water-parting between the Loire and the rivers of the coast. This region, which, geologically, is composed of granite, gneiss, mica-schist, schist, and lias, abounds in springs, and is fresh and verdant ; the landscape is characterized by open fields surrounded by trees, which supplied ambushes and retreats to the Vendéans in the civil war at the end of the 18th century. The plain of Vendée is bare and treeless, but fertile, though poor in springs; geologically it is com- posed of lias and oolite. The marshes, raised above the sea-level within historic times (four centuries ago), consist of two portions, the Breton marsh in the north and the Poitevin marsh in the south. The region includes salt marshes and cultivated areas artificially drained. Its area is constantly being increased by the alluvium of the rivers and the secular elevation of the coast. The department is drained by the Sevre Nantaise (tributary of the Loire) and the Boulogne (a feeder of Lake Grandlieu in Loire- Inférieure), both draining into the basin of the Loire ; and by the Vie, the Lay (with the Yon), and the Sévre Niortaise (with the Autise and the Vendée), which flow into the The climate is that of the Girondin region,

wero

mild and damp, the temperature rarely rising above (7 or falling below 18° Fahr.; 120 to 150 days of rain give an annual rainfall of 30 inches. The woodland is colder than the plain, and the marsh is damp and unhealthy.

Out of the total area of 1,656,531 acres arable land occupies 1,023,275 acres, grass 290,503, vines 37,467, wood 65,853, and moor, pasture, and uncultivated land 136,432. In 1881 the live stock included 29,790 horses, 4500 mules, 1950 asses, 471,775 cattle, 379,950 sheep (10,000 being of superior breed ; total wool-clip 395 tons), 55,000 pigs, and 1625 goats, There were 10,000 beehives (49 tons of honey and 10 tons of wax). The agricultural products in 1884 were returned as follows :—wheat 7,312,316 bushels, meslin 65,736, rye 218,720, barley 1,218,855, buckwheat 358,985, maize 33,000, millet 129,973, oats 2,815,436, potatoes 3,938,214, beetroot 324,601 tons, wine 15,569,312 gallons, colza seed 7790 tons, hemp seed 551 tons, linseed 991 tons, flax 1786 tons, and fodder 745,792 tons. The forests (oak, chestnut, pine, poplar, hornbeam, maple, ash, beech, and elm) yielded 3,180,000 cubic feet of wood, a third of which was applied to various industrial uses. Apples, pears, peaches, plums, cherries, and walnuts are the principal fruits grown. The salt marshes, 4572 acres in extent and employing 3500 work- men, yielded 2486 tons of salt in 1882. In 1884 18,409 tons of coal were mined. Iron, antimony, lead, "the Vendée diamond" (a kind of quartz), china clay, and slate are obtained ; and granite, gneiss, slate schist, limestone, cement, millstones, and clay are objects of industry. The celebrated beds of sea-shells near St Michel-en-l Herm—2300 feet long, 985 broad, and from 30 to 50 feet in depth—show to what an extent the coast has risen. The wool spinning and weaving industry occupies 12,570 spindles and 520 hand-looms ; cotton, 3100 spindles and 5 looms; linen, 388 spindles and 478 looms (80 being power looms). There are pot- teries, paper-mills, tan-yards, dye-works, a glass- work, manu- factories of hats, boots and shoes, and lampblack, flour-mills, dis- tilleries, tile-works, and shipbuilding-yards, and sardines and tinned foods are prepared,—in all 575 industrial

establishments. The sardine fishery occupies 800 boats and 2000 men, and there are extensive oyster-beds near Sables-d'Olonne. Corn, cattle, mules, fish, salt, wine, honey, wood, glass, and manure are exported ; wine, wood, building material, and coal are among the imports. The shipping places are Bouin and Beauvoir in the Breton marsh, and Noirmoutier, the island of Yeu, St Gilles-sur-Vie, Sables-d'Olonne, I'Aiguillon, and Lugon in the Poitevin marsh. In 1882 a total of 391 vessels (180,688 tons) entered and cleared from all these ports. Vendée has 212 miles of railway, 335 of national and 2966 of other roads, and 82 of navigable rivers and canals. In 1881 the popula- tion was 421,642, and in 1886 484,808,—an increase of 191,382 since 1801. The department forms the diocese of Lucon, has its court of appeal and academy at Poitiers, and is included in the dis- trict of the Nantes army corps. There are three arrondissements (La Roche-sur-Yon, the chef-lieu of the department, with 10,991 inhabitants in1886 ; Fontenay-le-Comte, 9282 ; and Sables-d'Olonne, 10,114), 30 cantons, and 300 communes. Lugon (6285 inhabitants) is connected with the sea by a canal, and has a cathedral of the 11th, 13th, 14th, 16th, and 18th centuries, with an elegant Gothic spire, a cloister of the 15th and 16th centuries, an episcopal palace, and a hospital, with portraits of the bishops of Lugon.

VENDOME, a town of France, chief-lieu of an arron- dissement in the department of Loir-et-Cher, is situated on the river Loir, 109 miles south-west of Paris by the rail- way to Tours, at the junction of the line from Blois to Le Mans. The abbey of the Trinity (12th to 15th cen- tury) has a fine portal in florid Gothic style. A graceful balustrade runs round the building at the spring of the roof, and two rows of flying buttresses, themselves resting on other elegant buttresses, support the nave. The high gallery of the triforium, the rich traceries of the windows, and the modern fonts are worthy of notice. Part of the building is in the Angevin style of the beginning of the 13th century. In the choir are some fine stalls and glass of the 15th and 16th centuries. The steeple, 262 feet high, which stands isolated in front of the church, belongs to the middle of the 12th century, and is one of the finest examples of Transition architecture. The lower part is rectangular and the upper octagonal, with a stone spire. It has been recently restored. The church of La Made- leine (15th century) is surmounted by a stone spire, an indifferent imitation of that of the

abbey. The fine tower of St Martin (16th century) is all that remains of the church of that name. The town-hall occupies the old gate of St George; its river front is composed of two

1

[any © 8

large crenellated and machicolated towers, connected by a pavilion. The ancient hospital of St James afterwards became a college of the Oratorians, in which Mascaron was a professor, but is now a lyceum; the charming chapel, dating from the 15th century, in the most florid Gothic style, is still preserved. Parts of the chateau of the counts of Vendéme are as old as the 11th century. A public promenade leads to the curious vaults under the castle. Venddme is the seat of an archeological and scientific society, possesses a library of 15,000 volumes and 305 MSS., and a museum, mostly archeological, in front of which stands a statue of Ronsard. There are some interesting houses of the 15th and 16th centuries, and near the town are the remains of a Roman theatre. The population in 1881 was 7913 (commune 9420), the corresponding figures for 1886 being 7843 and 9325.

Vendéme (Vindocinum) appears originally to have been a Gallic oppidum, replaced later by a feudal castle, around which the modern town has arisen. Christianity was introduced by St Bien- heuré in the 5th century, and the abbey of the Trinity was founded in 1030. About the end of the 10th century Vendéme became an independent county, and was raised toa duchy in 1515. It long belonged to a branch of the Bourbon family. During the Wars of Religion the town was sacked by the Protestants, by members of the League, and was finally taken by Henry IV. Since then its industrial and commercial importance (tanneries and manufactories of woollen stuffs and gloves) has fallen off. Marshal de Rocham- beau was a native of Vendéme.

VENEERING is the art of attaching thin sheets or leaves of wood, ivory, &c., to the surface of wood or other material of a less costly or less ornamental description. It is thus in connexion with wood, ivory, &c., equivalent to plating in the working of metals. The art is largely practised

in cabinet-work. Veneers are either cut or sawn from solid blocks or planks. The ordinary veneer saw is a circular instrument of large diameter, made up of seg- ments of thin steel bolted on a strong circular iron frame, which gives the requisite stiffness and rigidity to the saw edge. The teeth of the saw are minute and finely set, so as to waste as little as possible of the valuable material as sawdust. With such a saw from 8 to 16 leaves per inch may be cut out of a block of wood and as many as 30 leaves of ivory, one-third of the solid being reduced to sawdust. Veneers are also made from certain straight- grained and pliant woods with cutting tools, either by the process of planing or of turning. For these methods of veneer-making, the wood to be operated on is first reduced to blocks of a size equal to the cutting edges by which they are to be made into veneer, and are then steamed in a closed chamber to soften the fibre. In the plane veneer- cutting machines the block of wood may be stationary and the cutter movable, or vice versa, and the cutting edge is applied obliquely to the block. Immediately in front of the cutter pressure is applied to the block to keep the shaving from splitting up. , With the planing machine from 100 to 150 veneer leaves can be cut from each inch of thickness. By the lathe-turning method continuous strips of veneer are obtained from circular blocks the width of the cutter, and it is possible to reduce the block till a core of about only 9 inches remains. In the cutting, as opposed to the sawing, of veneers there is no waste whatever of the solid material; but cut veneers are not so serviceable, and the most valu- able veneer woods, being hard, cross-fibred, and brittle, cannot be treated otherwise than by sawing. In veneer- ing, the surfaces to be united, after roughening, so as to give grip, are coated with thin glue applied very hot, and then tightly pressed together in a veneering press, with heated cauls or plates of zine applied to their surfaces, these cauls being contoured to the necessary outline when bent veneers are being planted. Should the veneer show any blistering after removal from the press, heat, damp, and local pressure are applied till veneer and wood are

| in

Plate IV.

VEN—VEN

solidly cemented together. The surface is afterwards smoothed, polished, and finished as in dealing with solid cabinet woods.

VENEREAL DISEASES. See PatHotoey, vol. xviii.

_ 404, and Sureery, vol. xxii. p. 20.

VENEZUELA,! a federal republic in South America, lying between about 57° and 73° 30’ W. long: and 1° 40’ and 12° 26’ N. lat. The republic claims that the area of its territory is 632,807 square miles; but the boundaries are not yet definitely fixed, and its area is consequently uncertain. In the south-west it claims large tracts extend- ing to the south of the equator, which are also claimed by Colombia and Ecuador; and in the east it claims from British Guiana the upper valley of the Essequibo, together with all the territory on the left bank of that river below the influx of the Rupununi. Of the total area claimed only about 439,000 square miles are actually under Vene- zuelan administration.

Physical Features.—A branch of the eastern chain of the Andes enters Venezuela in the west about 7° N. lat., and under the name of the Sierra Nevada de Merida proceeds north-eastwards towards Triste Gulf. This branch consists of parallel chains enclosing elevated valleys, in one of which lies the town of Merida at the height of 5400 feet, over- looked by the highest summit of the chain (Picacho de la Sierra, 15,000 feet). The sierra contains the water-parting between the basin of the Orinoco and those of the small rivers on the north-west. Hence it may be considered to terminate where the Rio Claro, the stream on which Bar- quisimeto stands, after rising on its western slopes flows eastwards into the basin of the Orinoco. Beyond the Claro begin two parallel ranges known as the Maritime Andes of Venezuela, which stretch east and west along the coast. The valley between these two ranges is the most densely peopled part of Venezuela. Within it lie the town of Valencia (1800 feet), the Lake of Valencia (1400 feet), and the town of Caracas (3000 feet). Above Caracas the highest peak of the system, Pico de la Silla, rises to 8740 feet. Behind the wide bay between Cape Codera and Cumana there is an interruption in the Maritime Andes ; but both ranges reappear between Cumana and the Gulf of Paria. West of the Maritime Andes low ranges (3500- 5000 feet) trend northwards from the end of the Sierra de Merida

towards the coast, on the east side of the Lake of Maracaibo, while the region on the west of that lake consists of lagoon-studded lowlands. East and south of the Sierra de Merida and the Maritime Andes the Venezuelan territory consists mainly of the basin of the Orinoco. This region is for the greater part of its extent thinly populated and little known. It consists of two portions,—a vast hilly or mountainous area, densely-wooded, in the south-east and south, and level plains in the north-west between the Orinoco and the Apure and the mountains. The latter is known as the llanos of the Orinoco, a region described by Humboldt as a vast "sea of grass," with islands of wood scattered here and there. Since the time of Humboldt, however, the aspect of these plains would seem to have changed very considerably. On the occasion of Appun's visit in 1850 trees seem still to have been comparatively rare; but a different aspect was presented when Dr P. Jonas visited the llanos in 1878. From the Galera, the southernmost range of hills north of the Orinoco basin, the traveller saw a vast plain thickly grown with low trees, among which the chaparro was chiefly represented. Few places were quite destitute of trees, and these of small extent. As far as Calabozo (about one-third of the dis-

' The name means "little Venice," and is a modification of the name of Venecia (Venice), originally bestowed by Alonzo de Ojeda in 1499 on an Indian village composed of pile-dwellings on the shores of the Gulf of Maracaibo, which was called by him the Gulf of Venecia.

lao tance between the hills and the Apure) it was now chaparros (evergreen oaks), now mimosas, which were the prevailing feature of the landscape, though other trees were not rare. But towards the south the open grass-covered spaces in- creased in number and area. To the south of Calabozo woods of considerable extent were seen. This change in the character of the landscape is due to the decline of horse and cattle rearing in the llanos, partly in consequence of political disturbances and partly of a murrain which broke out in 1843 among horses, mules, and asses, and in that and several subsequent years reduced their numbers by several thousands.

Geology.—Geologically the chief mountain ranges of Venezucla are all similar in structure. The nucleus of the Sierra Nevada de Merida is formed of plutonic or metamorphic rocks (granite, syenite, gneiss, crystalline schists, &c.), and this series is continued through- out the northern chain of the Maritime Andes. Stratified rocks belonging to the Cretaceous system are found on both sides of the plutonic nucleus of the former range, and are those chicfly seen in the southern chains of the Maritime Andes. Most of these deposits belong to the upper members of the Cretaceous system ; but the lower members come to the surface in considerable patclies west of the Sierra Nevada de Merida, and in the chains just referred to. Tertiary and Quaternary deposits (generally as conipact marl, sand, shingle, and conglomerate) are spread over nearly all the llanos, as well as round the Gulf of Maracaibo, and in the plains drained to the north by the Unare, between the two sections of the Maritime Andes. 'The hills and mountains east of the Orinoco, accord- ing to Humboldt, Schomburgk, and Codazzi, seem to be mainly composed of granite, syenite, and other crystalline rocks.

Climate.—The climate and vegetation are such as might be ex- pected from the tropical situation of the country. But Venezuela, as well as the rest of tropical South America east of the Andes, is directly exposed to the trade-winds. The temperature is thereby considerably moderated, and no such extremes of heat are to be met with as are experienced in the corresponding latitudes of northern Africa. The more populous parts of Venezuela are, how- ever, hotter than the maritime districts of Guiana, being less directly exposed to the Atlantic breezes. At La Guaira the mean temper- ature of the year is 85° Fahr.; at Caracas, only 10 miles distant but 3000 feet higher, it is 71°2 Fahr.; and the greatest extremes that have been observed at the latter station since 1868 are 83°°4 and 48° Fahr. At both stations the hottest periods are the middle of April and the end of August, when the sun is in the zenith. Everywhere there is a well-marked distinction between a dry and a rainy season, the latter occurring in the English summer months, when the sun is in the northern hemisphere and the force of the trade-wind on the north coast of South America is considerably slackened. At La Guaira the rainy season proper lasts only three months (May to August); but this season lasts longer in the mountains and in the llanos.

Fauna.—The fauna includes among the mammals the rodents and carnivores conimon to the rest of tropical South America. The manatee is met with nearly everywhere on the coast. In all the rivers are to be found caymans, electric eels, rays, and caribs, the last (Pygocentrus piraya, P. nigricans, P. niger, Miill.) consist- ing of several species of savage and voracious fishes armed with two rows of very sharp teeth. Among the venomous serpents arc the striped rattlesnake (Crotalus durissus), Lachesis mutus, an ally of the rattlesnakes, and a rather rare species of Cophias. Among the non-venomous sorts the commonest are the boa constrictor, the anaconda (Euneetes murinus), and the Coluber variabilis. Among birds is a singular form known from its note as the bell-bird (Chasmorhynehus caruneulatus). Coral banks abound on the coast ; like the waters which surround the roots of the mangroves, these teem with marine life, aud are peculiarly rich in beautifully coloured crustaceans. Swarms of locusts sometimes commit great ravages among the fields and plantations.

Flora.—The lower slopes of all the mountains are clad with the richest tropical vegetation. Amidst an endless variety of dicoty- ledonous foliage trees, interlaced by numerous twiners and climbers and adorned with epiphytic orchids, Tillandsiz, aroids, and Lor- anthacex, grow numerous palms and tree-ferns, up to the height of about 3500 feet. From among the forest trees may be singled out for mention the silk-cotton tree (Bombax Ceiba), the mango (Jfangi- fera indiea), the saman (Inga saman),—remarkable, like the last- mentioned, less for its height than for the extent and density of the shade which it casts,—the cow-tree (Brosimum Galaetodendron), and the Attalca speeiosa,—this last being one of the finest orna- ments of the palm tribe, a tree whose stem, 40 feet in height, carries erect on its crown leaves which also grow toa height of 40 feet, with a breadth of 8 feet. The mouths of the Orinoco and many parts of the coast are rendered unhealthy by mangrove swamps, which are no doubt partly to blame for the yearly recurrence of

yellow fever in many of the coast towns. From these swamps, however, La Guaira is free, and there the yellow fever is not a regular visitant. :

Vegetable Products.—The two chief crops grown for food are manioe and maize, the latter being generally ground coarse and baked into a kind of cakes called avepas, which are eaten hot like the Mexican tortillas. Among other vegetable products which take an important place in the Venezuelan dietary are all kinds of tropical fruits, including several kinds of melons and pumpkins, the sugar- cane (the sugar in a little refined condition, known as papelon, being a favourite article of food), the taro, sweet potatoes, various beans (including two species of Phascolus, which grow only high np in the mountains, but are highly prized everywhere), and a species

of hemlock (Coniwm moschatwm), which is eaten like celery. Of

plantation products grown for export by far the most important are coffee and cocoa, next after which come tobacco and cotton. The following table (I.) shows (in thousands of tb) the variations in the export of these products in several years since 1830-31 :—

=)

S S Year. | Coffee. |Cocoa. 3 2 Year. | Coffee. | Cocoa. Oo ° oa is) 1830-31 | 11,684 | 7304 | 103 98 || 1864-65 | 28,497) 8,386 1840-41 | 26,316 | 7770 | 1212 | 2038 || 1874-75} 72,263 10,725 781 || 1885-86 | 86,115 | 11,268

1850-51 | 38,432 |.8259 | 1539

This table clearly shows that coffee is rapidly taking a more and more important place as the leading staple of Venezucla. The only date at which the export of coffee shows a decline as compared with the previous date mentioned is 1864-65, when, it is clear, from a comparison of this column with that under cotton, that a consider- able arca must have been temporarily given up to the cultivation of cotton in consequence of the Civil War in the United States. As regards quantity, Venezuela held the fifth place among the coffee- exporting countries of the world on an average of the ten . years 1872-82." Both coffee and cocoa are grown under the shade of ery- thrinas, the scarlet racemes of which at the flowering season impart a brilliant aspect to the plantations. Besides the products above- mentioned, sugar and indigo at one time figured largely

among the exports of Venezuela; but both of them have now almost disappeared from the list of exports, the former in consequence of the decline in cultivation, the latter because of the increasing consumption of papelon among the inhabitants.

The following table (II.) shows, in thousands of acres, the extent of land under the principal crops in 1875, according to Codazzi, and in 1883 according to official estimates :—

1875. | 1883.

1875. | 1883. |

(Clit ee aCe eee 335°7 | 343-1 |} Manioc…..... 67°9 Shear-Cane. ns sosenenee SELON GO \iCoceas .. sas 60°8 Bananas ….....| 69°2| 92°4|| Tobacco ….. 15°6 Weectables:o2—.0.. yee Ee 97-1 || Various fruits …....) . PALO BWRIZE ecenc en aes Het) |) YANN CORIO ca onencosoueas ae | 14- 49

Live-Stock.—The number of live-stock was officially returned in 1888 as follows :—cattle 2,926,738 ; sheep and goats 3,490,563 : horses 291,603 ; mules 247,708 ; asscs 658,764 ; pigs 976,500.

Minerals, —The principal minerals of Venezuela are gold, copper, phosphates, and coal. The rich auriferous deposits on the banks of the Yuruari lie 100 miles south-west of the principal mouth of the Orinoco. At Aroa in the north-west, about 75 miles west of Puerto Cabello, are rich deposits of copper ore. Phosphates are obtained from the islands of Orchilla and Aves, which lie to the east of the Leeward Islands of the Dutch. A large deposit of bituminous coal, said to be of very good quality, exists about 6 miles south of Barce- lona, and a concession for a railway from this port to the coal- bed has been obtained from the Government. Another extensive deposit of bituminous coal has been found on the banks of the Utare, a small stream which empties itself into the sea about 40 miles east of La Guaira. Good petroleum is refined from deposits worked near Belijoque in the state of Los Andes. Both gold and copper ore are important exports, gold ranking in this respect next atter coffee. The total amount of gold exported from Ciudad Bolivar from 1866 to 31st

December 1886, so far as the export was controlled by the state, was 1,946,383 oz.; but it is estimated that within that time about half a million oz. were smuggled away. During the five years 1882-86 the average annual yield was about £740,000. The field from which this yield is derived is at present one of the most promising in the world, but the frontier disputes between Great Britain and Venezuela interfere with the investment of capital for the development of some portions of it to which both sovernments lay claim. Silver and tin are also met with, but neither has yet attained any commercial importance.

Industry.—Manufacturing industries are in general undeveloped. Artisans from Europe and North America are now settled in all the

- chief towns, and cotton weaving factories have been established.

1 Ranking after Brazil, Java, Ceylon, and Hayti.

VENEZUELA

The manufacturing industries most extensively making of shoes and hats. The latter industry is chiefly in the hands of Germans. A material called jipijapa is very largely used for the making of a kind of hats in imitation of Panama straw hats.

Commerce.—The total value of the imports amounted in the year 1885-86 to £2,498,135, and that of the exports to £3,292,171. The principal exports, besides the plantation products and minerals already mentioned, are hides and skins, coir, and animals; those of minor importance are starch, indigo, sugar, tonqua beans, cinchona, caoutchouc, divi-divi, cocoa-nuts, copaiba balsam, plants, and tim- ber. The principal imports are manufactured articles, drugs, and wine, the last from Spain. Petroleum is imported from the United States, though it is expected that the native supplies will soon meet the home demand. Foreign commerce is chiefly carried on with the United States, Germany, France, and England. There is also a coasting trade of considerable magnitude (value £2,382, 719 in 1883). The chief seaports are La Guaira (14,000 inhabitants) and Puerto Cabello (10,145), which has the finest natural harbour in Venezuela, enclosed by a ring of coral reefs ; the next in

import- ance are Maracaibo (31,921), Ciudad Bolivar (10,861), Carupano (12,389), Puerto Sucre, Puerto Guzman Blanco, La Vela (the port of Coro, opposite the island of Curacao), and Guiria (on the Gulf of Paria). Ciudad Bolivar is 236 miles up the river Orinoco, the navigation of which by any mouth has been free to all nations since the 25th of October 1886.

Communication.—The total length of railways open at the end of 1886 was 144 miles, and 263 miles were then in construction. The length of telegraph lines at the same date was 2595 miles. The railways already in existence or in construction are all short lines connecting the chief seaports with the nearest important in- land towns or seats of mineral production, or lines radiating to the more important towns round Caracas. The principal inland towns, besides CarAcas (q.v.), the capital (popnlation 70,509 in 1883), are Valencia (36,145), Barquisimeto (28,198), Merida (10,747), Cala- bozo, Barinas, Nutrias, and Maturin (14,748).

Population, Area, &e.—The republic is divided into eight states, eight federal territories, the federal district, and two national colonies, the names of which, with their arca in square miles and their population according to an official estimate for Ist January 1886, are given below :—

pursued are the

| Popula- |; tion.

States— Wundariy .<...c. 81,123 19,852 Carabobo 2,985 167,499 CAUTA ee eee 22,565 + Guzman Blanco) 33,890 515,418 Goajinatenc.-2e 3,608 36,500

Gi) Sees 9,297 | 245,489|) Colon …..... 166 137 Los Andes 14,720 317,195 Armisticio …. 7,151 a ATOR ares oe 25,212 245,457 IDE a ee 25,347 S0 INGO Gooaance 36,218 198,260 || Federal District 45 70,078 Bolivar …... 88,701 57,169 || Colonies—

Bermudez 32,248 285,377 Guzinan Blanco 214 1,599

Territories— Bolivarsc.o.: .. 9 Alto Orinoco) 119,780 38.340 La. a ‘Amazonas .. {| 119, , 594,197 {2,198,320

Armisticio, Alto Orinoco, Amazonas, Yuruari, and Delta inelude the disputed tracts of territory. The population of Caura in the preceding table is included in that of the state of Bolivar, the popu- lation of Armisticio and Delta in that of the states of Bolivar, Zamora, and Los Andes, and of the colony of Bolivar in that of the state of Guzman Blanco. The agricultural colonies are under the administration of a governor subordinated to the ministry of progress (del fomento). The pure white population is estimated at only 1 per cent. of the whole, the remainder of the inhabitants be- ing Negroes (originally slaves, now all free), Indians, and mixed races (inulattos and zambos).

Religion, Education, &c.—The Roman Catholic is the religion of the state, but liberty of worship is guaranteed by law. So far as legislative enactment goes, elementary education is now well pro- vided for ; but in the year ending 30th June 1886 the total number of common, municipal, and private schools was 1957, and the num- ber of pupils 99,466. There are also two universities (Cardcas and Merida), 19 federal colleges, and various other public and private institutions for higher education. The standing army consists of about 2800 men, but every male subject between eighteen and forty- five has to be enrolled in the national militia. The monetary system of Venezuela is that of the Latin convention, the franc being represented by the bolivar. The French metric system of weights and measures is likewise the legal system ; but the old weights, the libra =1-014 Ib avoir., the quintal =101-4 tb avoir., and the artoba = 25°35 tb, are also in use.

Finanee.—The revenue, which is chiefly derived from customs duties, amounted in 1885-86 to £1,098,644 and the expenditure to £1,239,400. The public debt, of which the external portion alone amounted in 1878 to nearly £11,000,000, including arrears of in- terest, was reduced in 1881 to a total of £4,000,000 by the issue of new bonds in place of all the old ones, both external and internal. At the end of 1886 the external debt amounted to £2,680,850, bearing interest at 4 per cent.

VE N—

Constitution.—The eonstitution is modelled to some extent on that of the United States. At the head of the executive is a pre- sident, who is assisted by eight ministers and a federal council. The legislative authority is vested in a congress of two houses, — a senate (24 members) and a chamber of deputies (52 members). The members of the chamber of deputies (one for every 35,000 in- habitants, and one more, for an excess of 15,000) are elected every four years directly by the electors of the states and the federal dis- trict, those of the senate by the legislative bodies of the different states (three for each). The congress elects the members of the federal council, in which there is one senator and one deputy for each of the political divisions of the republic, and one deputy for

the federal district. The federal council eleets the president. The | federal council and the president remain in office for two years. History.—The coast of Venezuela was the first part of the American mainland sighted by Columbus, who, during his third voyage in 1498, entered the Gulf of Paria and sailed along the coast of the delta of the Orinoco. In the following year a much greater extent of coast was traced out by Alonzo de Ojeda, who was accompanied by the more celebrated Amerigo Vespucci. In 1550 the territory was erected into the captain-generalcy of Caracas, and it remained under Spanish rule till the early part of the 19th century. During this period Negro slaves were introduced ; but less attention was given by the Spaniards to this region than to other parts of Spanish America, which were known to be rich in the precious metals.

In 1810 Venezuela rose against the Spanish yoke, and on 14th July in the following year the independence of the territory was proclaimed. A war ensued which lasted for upwards of ten years, and the principal events of which are described under BoLIVAR (q.v.), a native of Caracas and the leading spirit of the revolt. It was not till 30th March 1845 that the independence of the republic was recognized by Spain in the treaty of Madrid. At the date of. the battle of Carabobo (1821), by which the power of Spain in this part of the world was broken, Venezuela formed part of the federal state of Colombia, which embraced also the present Colombia and Ecuador ; but a meeting of Venezuelan notables on 26th November 1829 declared for the separation of their country from the eon-

VEN

Pan | Hisrery.

LTHOUGH the numerous marshy islands of the la- goons extending along the north-western shores of the Adriatic between Altinum and Adria are known to have been largely used from the beginning of the 5th century by the inhabitants of Venetia (compare vol. xiii. p. 447)—one of the twenty-nine provinces into which Italy was divided by Constantine—as temporary retreats from successive barbarian invasions, the first permanent settlement on the site of the present city of Venice—the Rivo Alto (Rialto) and its numerous adjacent islets—cannot with certainty be traced further back than to the beginning of the 9th century. The physical conditions with which the earliest inhabitants had to deal were such as might seem singularly mpropitious to the growth of a large and prosperous city. Their untillable and salt-encrusted soil possessed no kind of mineral wealth; the thickets which here and there diversified the surface of the barren marshes produced no serviceable timber ; and even drinkable water was hardly obtainable ; yet it was here that the Venetians by their inventiveness, their energy, their industry, and their genius for commerce succeeded in establishing themselves on a firm soil and maintaining their independence, in making their neighbours their tributaries, in sending their fleets to distant shores, in controlling the destiny of empires, and consolidating a naval power that is unique in the his- tory of the world. cope The Venetian form of government—that of an aristo- mS. cratic republic—had its first beginnings at a very early period. Originally all power had been delegated to Ihagistrates known as tribuni maritimi or maritime tri- bunes ; but in 697, in order to give greater strength to the Supreme power and more unity to the popular representa- tion, a doge or duke was chosen, who had his residence in the little town of Heraclea. The first to bear this title

| Origin of the state.

Doge,

ap ee

federacy. Venezuela passed through the first years of its inde- pendent existence with more quietness than the other members of the confederacy. In 1846 there began a series of civil wars and revolutions, which continued, with but short periods of rest, down to the close of 1870. The chief rival parties in these internal dis- sensions were the Unionists and the Federalists ; the former aimed at securing a strong central Government, while the latter, who were ultimately victorious, desired to obtain a large measure of independence for separate states. It was during these troubles that the emancipation of the slaves took place, under a law of 24th March 1854. On 28th March 1864 a federal constitution was drawn up for the republic. Three years later, however, the civil war broke out again, and matters continued in an unsettled state, till in December 1870 Don Guzman Blanco, who had taken the leading part on the side of the Federalists, was declared provisional president. From that date Blanco acted as dictator till 20th February 1873, when he was elected constitutional president for four years, and it has been chiefly owing to his energy and ability that the confederacy has since proceeded on a course of orderly development. The two flourishing agrieultural colonies already mentioned were founded during his first tenure of office, in 1874. The chief event in recent years has been the re-division of the territory in 1881 into the states and territories whose names are given in the table above.

Bibliography.—See Humboldt, Voyage aux Régions Equinoxiales, Paris, 1804; C.F, Appun, Unter den Tropen, vol, i., Jena, 1871; A. Codazzi, Resumen de la Geografia de Venezuela, Paris, 1841; Dr R. Villavicencio, La Republica de Venezuela bajola Punta de Vista de la Geografia, &c., Caracas, 1880; Dr W. Sievers, ' Reiseberichtc aus Venezuela," in Mitteil. geogr. Gesellsch., Hamburg, 1884; Dr P. Jonas, " Nachrichten aus Venezuela," in Petermann's Mitteilungen, 1878 and 1879; British and U. 8. Consular Reports, &c.; J. M. Spence, The Land of Bolivar, London, 2 vols., 1878. Regarding the geology, see Hermann Karsten, Géologie del Ancienne Colombie Bolivarienne (with a geological map and eight plates), Berlin, 4to, 1886; and a paper on the gold mines of Venezuela by C. Le Neve Foster, in Quart. Journ. Geol. Se., vol. xxv., 1869. Regarding*

the fauna and flora, see A. Ernst, Estudios sobre la Flora y Fauna de Venezuela, Caracas, 1877, 4to. There isa map of Venezuela by A. Codazzi in four sheets, with views and statistical tables, 1876; and a physical and political map accompanies the Statistical Annuary issued by the ministry of — (Caracas, 1887). G.)

ICH

was Paulucio Anafesto; the assembly by which he was elected consisted of the entire body of the inhabitants, not only of the towns on the mainland, which were constantly under fear of renewed barbarian devastations, but also those of the islets of the lagoons. Although all had equal electoral privileges, there were gradations of social rank, the citizens being divided into three classes—the maggiort, the mediocri, and the minori. The new arrangement lasted only forty years, when a general assembly resolved by ac- clamation on the abolition of the ducal power, for which was substituted that of the maestre della milizia, whose term of office was to last only for a year. The inconveni- ences of the new system, however, soon became apparent, and five years later (742) the assembly demanded the restoration of a single popular representative with life tenure, who again bore the title of doge: On this occasion the newly elected doge transferred his residence from Heraclea to Malamocco. The practical risks involved in the new experiment are obvious. In the succession of doges some were almost sure to show themselves unfit for the supreme power, others to disregard the authority of the auxiliary magistrates associated with them for purposes of control, and some even to aim at the establishment of an hereditary tyranny. Consequently the next sixty years witnessed a succession of bloody revolts, in the course of which three doges were put to death, one deposed and exiled, and several others condemned to lose their eyes. Nor was the incapacity or the ambition of individuals the sole cause of such revolutions: new circumstances as they arose sometimes compelled the doges by the very law of their existence to seek support outside the limits of the state, at one time from the Greek empire, whose frontier extended to their very doors, at another time from the Lombards, the latest invaders of Italy, who had permanently established themselves there and were daily acquiring new influence. Foreigners who, in connexion with the interests

War with Pippin.

Founda- tion of the city.

Early doges,

Suppres- sion of Adriatic pirates.

of commerce, had entered into close relations with the Venetians took advantage of these to stir up troubles, and sought to conciliate the doges with a view to the enlarge- ment of their trading privileges or the concession of mono- polies. Between 712 and 810 various struggles arose which called for the intervention in the lagoons of the generals of Pippin and his son Charlemagne. Doge Obe- lerio, a declared partisan of the Franks, allowed a war to break out between the Venetians and the Lombards, in the course of which Pippin seized Grado, the see of the patri- arch, burnt Caorle, Jesolo, and Heraclea, encamped in Albiola, and, forcing his way into the lagoon, threatened Malamocco itself (see map, p. 157 below). Peace was afterwards concluded, and the danger to which the last refuge of the fugitives from the mainland had been exposed led to their increased security. For, whether from the instinct of self-preservation or from a growing conscious- ness of the idea of fatherland, these fishermen became drawn together more closely than ever for purposes of common defence, and found theniselves possessed of a power hitherto unsuspected, so that they were able to com- pel their enemies to respect their independence and enter into commercial relations with them. The year 810 was one of the most important in the annals of Venice: it was then that the people finally abandoned the mainland in order to make the Rivo Alto with its surrounding islets the permanent seat of their government. The same year witnessed the beginnings of the basilica of St Mark. Angelo Partecipazio, who had proposed the migration to the Rialto, was chosen doge, and the town of Venice may be said to have been then founded.

From 811 to 1026 there was a succession of eighteen doges, of whom no fewer than fifteen were selected out of three leading families, political

power thus plainly tend- ing to become hereditary. It was no uncommon thing, however, for the people again to dismiss those whom they had thus placed in power. Murder, exile, cruel punish- ments, closed the career of more than one of the doges who had been called to the supreme authority by a unani- mous vote ; whole familics connected with rulers who had been deposed or put to death were compelled to quit the islands, and sought the help of the emperor Otho IL. That emperor was preparing an expedition against Venice at the very moment of his death ; and now once more the Venetians found safety in the very greatness of the danger which had threatened them, for the peril itself indicated to them the future at which they ought to aim if they would live and rule.

From the necessities of its geographical position the new state was bound to become a maritime power and to look to the East. Towards the end of the 10th century the doge Pietro Orseolo by a vigorous effort cleared the sea of pirates, who dwelt on the eastern coast of the Adri- atic and seriously harassed the Venetian commerce, and pursued them into the recesses of Quarnero and the islands of Istria. On 20th May 998, having advanced as far as Dalmatia, he came upon them in their apparently inac- cessible retreats, and inflicted upon thema great slaughter. Having thus given full security to trade, he constituted himself protector of the sea from Trieste to Albania, re- ceiving in consequence the title of duke of Dalmatia. Tt was to symbolize this dominion that Venice instituted the superb ceremonial of the espousals of the doge with the Adriatic, which was annually obsérved on Ascension Day.

Period of The republic began henceforward to undertake the bus}.

crusades.

ness of transporting to the East the successive armies of crusaders, to whom she lent on hire the fleets which were built in her arsenals; and these bold enterprises, at once religious, commercial, and military, procured for her in exchange important stations on the east of the Adriatic

VENICE

| and in the islands, as well as colonies and factories advan-

[HISTORY,

tageous for her commerce. The whole littoral from Trieste to Albania became in this way a sort of prolongation of the Venetian coast. The Byzantine emperors could hardly fail to become jealous of this great though pacific influence, and of the wealth thus created under their eyes and at their expense; and in the spring of 1171 Manuel I. ordered the sequestration of all Venetian goods and of all Venetians who had settled within the empire. Such a high-handed act at once called forth an outburst of enthu- siasm, and the doge, Vitale Michieli IL, sent out against Constantinople an imposing fleet to avenge the cause of the Venetian colonists. An outbreak of plague, however, on board the fleet compelled him to return to port; in so doing he brought the scourge to the town itself,—a dis- aster which led to his death at the hands of the infuriated populace. Even this catastrophe was not without its uses, for it led to the introduction of reforms fitted to give greater internal stability to the state.

Under Sebastiano Ziani, Michieli's successor, the con-Consti- |

stitution underwent a further modification.

The citizens, tution of

already divided into quarters (sestiert), nominated twelve 'estate

electors, who in their turn made choice of forty picked citizens in each of the divisions of the city. The 480 thus chosen constituted the great council, a body possessing at once deliberative and executive functions. Before this period certain intimate councillors, two of them perma- nent, had been summoned to act as advisers of the doge in matters of importance; but now their number was in- creased and they were requested (hence the name pregato) to assist the head of the state in all circumstances. The two permanent councillors of the doge, increased to six and conjoined with the supreme magistrates on whom the administration of justice had always devolved, formed the lesser council,

which afterwards came to be known as La Signoria. If we add, finally, to the powers already enu- merated the council of ten, which was instituted later, and also take into account the increasing body of secretaries and the magistracies which were gradually created as need arose, we shall have an adequate conception of the per- fected instrument of government by which the republic was controlled from the 13th century until its fall. While the political organization was thus rapidly developing, the change which was also passing over its democratic spirit must not be overlooked : the simple citizen gradually lost his privileges, and the increasing restrictions laid upon freedom ultimately made the government essentially aris- tocratic. Towards the end of the 13th century (1297) the important measure known as the "Shutting of the Great Council" (compare vol. xvii. p. 527), and subsequently the inscription in the Golden Book of the names of all branches of the noble houses, for ever shut against plebeians every avenue to power. For a long time before this the right of electing the doge had been restricted to certain care- fully-selected citizens,—a constitutional change of capital importance, which had caused much discontent and raised such a ferment in the mind of the masses that the first doge who was thus chosen, realizing the danger of the situation, refused to accept the dignity. The number of the electors was consequently increased and the election made subject to a number of ballots intended to safeguard the integrity of the vote; but it remained none the less true that to the people had been left nothing more than the illusory right of approving by acclamation in the basilica of St Mark each new doge after his election. The aristocracy, as it felt its growing force, proceeded to en- large its powers, and did not fail to guard them down to the fall of Venice by constantly increased restrictions. It was not long, it is true, before the danger attaching to so great a power separated from the living forces of the nation

was perceived, and there came to be instituted special kinds of magistrates, such as the "'correctors of the ducal engage- ment," whose function was to revise the charter to which he was to swear, and who

steadily exercised it in the way of restricting his freedom in such a manner that about the 16th century his lot was little better than that of a prisoner of state. Then there were the " examiners of the deceased doge," instituted in 1501,—posthumous judges whose ver- dicts on each departed doge on behalf of posterity still

HISTORY. |

Lc & 143

enamels, tapestries, silks, served as models to the deft artisans, who drew from them new inspiration and, re-dis- covering the secrets of the smith's and potter's and glass- blower's art, reproduced the artistic triumphs of their Oriental masters. Nor were letters neglected: rich and ancient manuscripts were brought from Greece ; a friendly asylum was offered to exiled men of genius and learning ; and freedom of thought and intellectual independence be- gan to be exercised.

If Venice in the course of its history was able at one Com- period or another to show its superiority in every field of mercial activity, if at the same time it was able to show enduring = am stability in its institutions and a wealth and political power tians.

further conspired to neutralize the dangers arising from . personal power.

eriodof The history of Venice was officially written by contem- _geatest porary chroniclers. The records they have left are of course

yrosper- ty.

t

Boi 'vith the last,

exceedingly valuable; but, as they were subjected to a rigorous censorship, the element of criticism is quite ab- sent. Modern investigators, viewing the events from the outside, have been much more successful in forming a true judgment upon them and in tracing effects to

their actual causes. 'Those Venetians who, since the fall of their re- public, have endeavoured to investigate its annals in an independent spirit have come to the conclusion that it was between the 12th and the 15th century that the state reached its highest prosperity and power. In point of fact, the republic had at the beginning of the 13th century become so powerful that the Byzantine empire fell into its hands through the conquest of Constantinople by the doge Enrico Dandolo (1204). The Venetians even sought to raise a Latin empire upon its ruins, but the attempt was frustrated by the jealousy of the rival republic of Genoa, which re-established the Greeks in 1261. The period be- tween 1172, the date of the election of Sebastiano Ziani, and 1300, that of the election of Pietro Gradenigo, is one of the most brilliant in the history of Venice. The union that prevailed among all the citizens, the common effort of all classes, the military energy of the Government, the supple flexibility of its policy, had given them Constanti- nople ; and the peace which they made with Palzologus on his restoration to the Byzantine throne brought them many splendid advantages. It was in virtue of these successes and in the midst of the internal peace which they had secured that Pietro Gradenigo proposed the "Shutting of the Great Council," a measure the importance of which can be traced throughout the subsequent history of the state. Its effect was to exclude from political power all who had not been members of that assembly during the previous four years ; in a word, it constituted an heredi- tary legislature. Grave as the measure was, alternately accepted, rejected, modified, and never unopposed, it was finally carried. The new body enacted new laws and pro- vided adininistrative heads for the ten departments of government,—justice, legislation, worship, finance, com- merce, education, war, marine, public health, and city ad- ministration. The powerful and wealthy republic now found the honour of its alliance sought by emperors and popes ; the standard of St Mark was a familiar sight all over the Mediterranean ; and ultimately Venice entered the "European concert." Now, too, she began to show that devotion to architecture and the fine arts generally of which the basilica of St Mark's and the ducal palace are the most striking monuments.

Grown wealthy by commerce, and having acquired by the force of arms considerable territory on the east of the Adriatic, the Venetians now cast their eyes towards Asia. Their adventurous travellers had penetrated to

the central tegions of that continent, and Marco Polo on his return dazzled the populace by his wondrous tales and excited the cupidity of the merchants with visions of the riches of the East. New commercial enterprises were entered on; samples of Oriental industry with all their splendour of colour and delicacy of pattern were brought home: glass,

quite out of proportion to the smallness of its territory and the number of its subjects, it owed these in the first instance to its genius for commerce and to its maritime ascendency. This commercial genius led in the first place to the de- velopment of Venetian shipping, the growth of the arsenals, and large advances in the art of naval construction, and ultimately resulted in indisputable naval supremacy. The beginning of its fortune was in the salt trade, of which it had the monopoly throughout central Europe. Besides working the sources of salt which they had within their own territory, the Venetians rented those of their neigh- bours the Bolognese, and found access to the rock-salt deposits of Austria and Hungary; and in every instance where a treaty was made with a foreign power a clause was introduced reserving to Venice, whether as victor or as vanquished, the exclusive privilege of supplying this

commodity. The arsenal of Venice, which still exists, was The ar-

its palladium ; the high organization of this establishment, the technical skill of its workmen, the specially selected body of the "'arsenalotti," to whom the republic entrusted the duty of guarding the senate and great council, and its admirable discipline were for centuries the envy of other European powers. The enemies of the republic frequently made special efforts to destroy it by espionage and treach- ery. At the most critical period in its history, when it was engaged in its great struggle with the Turks towards the end of the 16th century, the arsenal regularly sent forth a fully equipped galley each morning for a hundred successive days. The power or decadence of the republic at each period may be measured by the extent of its build- ing-yards and by the number of its workmen and seamen. Where an ambassador had once seen an imposing force of 200 galleys all fully equipped for sea, another two centuries later saw only 20 ships of war, 16 galleys, and 2 galeasses. At the acme of its prosperity the arsenal employed 16,000 workmen ; buta little more than a century

afterwards, even at a time of war, that number had fallen to 2000, still further diminished in peace to 500.

senal.

The 14th century is remarkable for a series of con- Conspi-

spiracies, which the official historians have attributed to tacies of

but which no doubt had ee een ury.

mere turbulence and malignity, their main cause much deeper, in the position to which the masses had been brought by the political changes of preceding centuries. The conspiracy of Marino Bocconio in 1300, that of Bajamonte Tiepolo ten years later, a third in 1328, and finally that associated with the name of Marino Faliero (1355), without actually imperilling the existence of the state, compelled the great council to take measures against the recurrence of such movements, and

resulted in the creation of the "council of the ten," that Council

powerful and mysterious body the significance of which of ter.

still continues to exercise the ingenuity of the modern historian. Of these four conspiracies the first three were certainly aimed at the restoration of popular rights ; the fourth, on the other hand, arose out of an ambitious attempt to seize personal power. The legend of Marino Faliero is well known (see FaLiERo). It would be difficult

to describe exactly the functions of the council of the ten. Appointed merely provisionally in 1300 at the time of the conspiracy, to act as an inquisition, it was made a perma- nent body in 1335. Twenty years later the importance of the process against Marino Faliero led to an increase in the number of its members (/a zonta), and thencefor- ward the ten, under the presidency of the doge (Ww con- siglio), took cognizance of all matters, and their action extended over every department of government.

It isa mistake to suppose that the council was merely an exten- sion of the power of the aristocracy. It acted, on the contrary, as a check on the encroachments of the latter ; and, if it occasionally fell into culpable excesses, if some- times it employed what might be called "stage" machin- ery, allying itself with informers; rewarding traitors, sur- rounding its deliberations with an air of mystery only too favourable to private revenge and too threatening to public security, and in fact becoming at one time plainly the instrument of tyranny, nevertheless its constant watchful- ness over the interests of the state was not without advan- tages and compensations.

As invariably happens, the threatenings of danger from without gave pause to internal sedition and served to unite more closely together the aristocracy, the people, and the middle classes. The Genoese could but ill endure the supremacy of their rivals in the Adriatic. Leaving out of account a few years of truce, from 1298, the year of the defeat of the Venetians by their rivals at Curzola, to 1379, when after various changes of fortune the complete destruc- tion of their fleet by the Genoese at Pola allowed the latter to force a passage to the very heart of the lagoons, the struggle between the two maritime republics had gone on uninterruptedly. Never had Venice been nearer total destruction than after the disaster at Pola, but never also had the patriotism of her citizens expressed itself more clearly and unmistakably. The community of interest be- tween all classes was fully realized: old men, women, and children flew to arms ; all classes liberally contributed to the replenishment of the empty treasury; the precious things that had been brought from the East found their way into the melting pot, and even the altars were stripped. Doge Andrea Contarini, an old man of eighty, claimed the honour of leading an improvised fleet against the enemy, and Victor Pisani, a distinguished captain who had fallen under the suspicions of the ten, was brought up from his dungeon amid the acclamations of the whole people, who sacrificed every resentment to the ardour of their patriot- ism. Along with Carlo Zeno, just returned from the wars in the East, he gave spirit to the combatants, and drove the Genoese from Chioggia (on which they had seized). Venice was saved, and, grateful for the services rendered by certain families of the middle class who had ably assisted Pisani and

Zeno, the great council added to its numbers thirty new members selected from those who had most distinguished themselves in the struggle.

Con- The large extension of its territory on the mainland in yeaa ae the 14th century marks an important stage in the history a of Venice. From being essentially a naval power, the republic now began to be an important continental one 5 and henceforward down to the 17th century it threw its sword into the balance on every occasion on which Italy was made the battle-ground of Europe. The fall of the Lombard kingdom, the struggles of the Ghibellines and Guelphs, and the personal exploits of the condottieri al] urged Venice to take her part in the great movement, to widen her sphere of action, while fortifying herself against the dangers of her immediate neighbourhood, and to issue from her lagoons and establish herself as a state on terra Jirma. Venice made herself mistress of Vicenza, Feltre,

Contest with Genoa.

and Bassano in 1388 ; and with the help of Carmagnola, |

Ym N Wen

[HISTORY,

Gattamelata, and afterwards Alviano and Colleoni, Padua and Verona were added in 1405, Udine and Friuli in 1420, Brescia in 1426, Bergamo in 1427, Crema in 1449, Rovigo in 1484, and Cremona in 1499, and podestas were set over each of these provinces.

Meanwhile a new danger was arising to Venice out of Danger| the Turkish advance in Europe. The republic was com- from il pelled to live continually, so to speak, on the qui vive, Tks. | perpetually on the defensive. Mohammed IL. became master of Constantinople in 1453; in the following year the Venetians attempted to exorcise the plague by means of a commercial treaty ; but not many years passed before hostilities broke out. The Turks were destined to become the hereditary and implacable enemies of the republic, and their attitude of hostility to cease only with the fall of the latter. And, except for one united effort

towards the end of the 16th century by Spain, Venice, and the pope, which resulted in the victory of Lepanto (1571), the banner of St Mark was almost invariably unsupported in its contest with the crescent. At Negropont (1470), Smyrna, and Scutari (1474) Erizzo, Mocenigo, and Loredano valiantly main- tained the honour of their flag; but after a struggle of several years the Venetian possessions in the archipelago were lost and the proud city was compelled to cede Scutari (1479), Negropont, and Modone. Nor was this all; the geographical discoveries of the Portuguese and the Span- | iards were about to inflict an irreparable blow on the mari- time supremacy of Venice. Although the bold feats of Columbus and Vasco da Gama deeply stirred her enthu- siasm, yet times had changed. New cares and new duties called her attention elsewhere; Venice could no longer concentrate all her energies upon her navy; having now become a territorial power, she had to watch her frontiers i on every side, threatened by troublesome neighbours, now | by the Malatestas, now by the Estes, the Bentivoglios, and ; the Borgias.

Having entered into treaty relations with Florence, Conti- | Milan, and the Vatican, she found herself continually in-2ental volved in ceaseless struggles, which demanded the presence struggl: of her mercenaries now in the plains of Lombardy, now in the Romagna, sometimes even in the kingdom of Naples. At the close of the 15th century, after a forty years' dispute over the fragments of the Lombard kingdom, which had fallen into the hands of the condottieri, the Italians saw the Alps twice crossed by the French and their country turned into a European battlefield. The efforts of the Venetians to extend their possessions on terra firma along |

ee

the Italian shore of the Adriatic and inwards towards Bergamo provoked the Italian captains who had founded hereditary dynasties to unite with the pope and the king I of France in opposing their further progress. Thus arose | ; the League of Cambrai, which brought the republic to the League — verge of extinction. Defeated at Gera D'Adda (Agnadello) Cambra in 1509, she was compelled to withdraw her armies, uot

only from the recently conquered territories, but also from , those in which she had been established for more than a 7 century, and she had

even to release her own subjects from { their oath of allegiance. She had passed through no such peril since the day of Chioggia in the struggle with Genoa, | for she was now face to face with three formidable enemies, —the king of France, the emperor Maximilian, and the pope,—not to speak of numerous petty powers, her Mantuan and Ferrarese neighbours, who hoped for a share in the spoil. At this juncture the senate displayed all its adroit suppleness and all its energy ; it recognized how necessary it was on such an occasion to show pliancy, to temporize, and be humble. A new league, formed against the very power which had initiated the first, proved the salvation of Venice: the king of France fell under the suspicion of his allies, who accordingly turned against him. The battle

Var with

7e 'urks.

'attle of Venieri to be its admiral.

HISTORY. |

of Ravenna in 1512 and that of Marignano in 1515 changed the whole aspect of affairs ; new combinations were formed ; and the treaty of Noyon restored to the republic all the continental territory she had lost.

Nevertheless the commonwealth was not allowed to rest, but was compelled henceforth to live constantly on the defensive, on the one hand against the Turks, who were a standing menace, and on the other, watching every move- ment and enterprise of the Italian princes, who would not suffer her to remain neutral in their incessant conflicts. Neither under Pius V. nor under Philip II. was the com- bined assistance of the pope and the Catholic king of much assistance to Venice against Islam. From the peace of Noyon (1516) to the year 1571, the date of the battle of Lepanto, the republic was never able for a single moment to lay down her arms, but was constantly driven to renewed efforts, which could not fail to exhaust her more and more. One by one she lost all her colonies: at one time it was Corfu, at another the islands of the Aigean, at another Nauplia and Malvasia. Her podestas, proveditori, and ambassadors in their several departments displayed an energy and a

patriotism to which there are few parallels in history: the names of Bragadin and of Marc Antonio Barbaro remain as abiding examples of disinterestedness and patriotic self-sacrifice. Born for the service of the state, her nobles were held bound to devote their energies to the republic from early manhood, and to give her the benefit of their strength and experience to their latest breath. About 1570 the Turks threatened the fleets of the Christian powers which ventured into the Adriatic ; and the pirates of the Barbary coasts boarded the Christian galleys and carried their crews into captivity, where they were held at heavy ransom. The Spaniards, whose sway then extended to the African coast of the Mediterranean, were determined to put an end to these incursions; the popes for their part were always ready to do battle with the infidel and to league themselves against the enemies of Christendom ; and Venice, who saw her colonial pos- sessions falling from her one by one, could not refuse an alliance which seemed to promise the possibility of strik- ing a grand blow by which her supremacy might be re- stored. On 13th May 1571 the treaty of alliance between the three powers was signed ; the league against the Otto- mans was to be perpetual, and its avowed object was to destroy their influence. Philip II. agreed to pay half the expenses of the expedition ; the republic supplied galleys to the pope ; Spain contributed her fleets and demanded in return the chief command of the expedition. The total naval force numbered no less than 300 vessels, while the troops embarked were reckoned at 50,000 foot soldiers and 5000 horse. Don John of Austria represented Spain in the command ; the papal forces were entrusted to Mare Antonio Colonna ; while the Venetian senate nominated Sebastian The result of the battle of

"panto. Lepanto, 7th October 1571 (see vol. xiii. p. 717), was ap-

parently the complete destruction of Turkey's naval forces, But the mutual jealousies of the allied powers served to counteract the effects of the victory, and the peace which followed, instead of being advantageous to the victors, turned out much to their prejudice. The action at Lepanto had taken place in the beginning of winter ; it was impos- sible, therefore, to undertake anything further before the

- Spring of the following year (1572), and each of the powers

believed its fleets secure in the ports where they had taken

vanced through the archipelago and devastated the Venetian colonies. The Spaniards at Messina awaited the decision of Philip IL. before they could set sail; the knights of Malta and the duke of Savoy, less hesitating, consented to join the Venetian galleys, and to go to meet the Moslems, whom they encountered at Cerigo. A battle of doubtful issue was about to be engaged in, when a message from Don John announced the co-operation of the Spanish fleet, but at Corfu, whither the Venetian admiral was requested to repair in order to concert a new plan of attack. The Venetians did not feel certain enough of success to warrant them in commencing hostilities without their ally, and, sailing for Corfu, they once more entrusted the supreme direction of affairs to Don John. But it is easy to under- stand how disastrous in their results such vacillation and hesitancy must necessarily be. It was not till the end of August that the allied forces, once more brought together to the nuniber of more than 250 vessels, set sail in search of the Turkish fleet. The latter, being lighter, gave way before the enemy, and, avoiding a pitched battle, did not give opportunity even for a skirmish or the capture of a stray prize. Meanwhile the winter was approaching ; navigation was becoming dangerous; the Spaniards were indisposed for action; and Don John, alleging the gravity of his responsibilities, returned to his anchorage at Messina. Thus a whole year had been lost, giving to the enemy daily opportunities of recuperation, Every day new differ- ences and mutual recriminations arose among the allies, and at length the idea of a peace with the Turks began to be broached in the councils of the republic. Such a pro- posal, however unlooked for, was suggested by considera- tions of the most practical kind, and by a just appreciation of the resources of the Ottoman empire; and the resulting negotiations, which were secretly conducted, led to a treaty being signed on 15th March 1573. By that treaty twenty years of peace were guaranteed to the republic; but it reversed the position of parties, and the vanquished of Lepanto now figured as victors. The Turks in fact were audaciously exacting, but their negotiations were ably con-

ducted and were completely successful. The one place which they had lost, Sopoto, was restored to them, and Venice also consented to the definitive cession of Cyprus, which had temporarily fallen into her hands before Lepanto. Nor was this all: it was not forgotten that Venice was tributary to the sultan ; her dues were doubled and a war indemnity of 300,000 ducats was stipulated for. On the other hand, the commercial privileges hitherto enjoyed by the republic were confirmed, and the freedom of the seas was guaranteed,

The epoch of Lepanto is, however, the most brilliant in Venetian history as regards the efflorescence of the arts and of literature ; it was at this time that the artistic glory of the city was seemingly most brilliant and most developed, and exercised the greatest attraction for strangers. More closely viewed, the 15th century had attained in Venicc and the subject cities of the mainland a higher degree of culture ; architecture, painting, sculpture, and the minor arts were inspired by a sentiment deeper, more sincere, more elevated both in form and in idea; but the artists who arose between the middle of the 15th and the closc of the 16th century had a natural disposition, with a touch of the sensual, better corresponding with the tastes of the people and with its artistic ideal, which aroused a greater enthusiasm and made their names more famous.

In literature and art Venice was the link between Italy Arts and and Greece. Its Eastern colonists learned the Greek ae tongue ; and the fall of the Greek empire brought to them “”~ its banished men of science and letters, who taught in their university and introduced to the Venetians the works of the ancients. Guarino of Verona opened to them Xeno-

tefuge, when, on the following May, the tidings reached Venice that the Turkish fleet which had been supposed annihilated was once more afloat. Don John had wintered at Messina; Colonna had returned to Civita Vecchia; while the Venetian fleet had cast anchor off Corfu. Before the Scattered allies could reunite sixty Turkish galleys ad-

Condi- tion at end of 16th century.

phon, Strabo, Lucian, Orpheus, Arrian, Dio, Procopius, Diodorus of Sicily, and Plato. At the same time they made Oriental architecture their own, impressing on it the stamp of their special needs and national genius. The Arabs gave them the manufacture of gunpowder and glass, and taught them decorative art; and from Persia they learned to weave costly tissues; while their plastic arts retained a reflexion of the sunny lands which, for geo- graphical reasons, were the source of their riches and the chief object of their preoccupation. 'The architecture, the painting, and the sculpture of Venice are separately treated (see below). Nor must it be forgotten that the city wel- comed from the first the art of printing, and stamped it with its own individuality. Venice, more than any other town, has the credit of having rescued from oblivion, by editions and translations, the masterpieces of Greek litera- ture. The work of the elder Aldus in this direction from 1495 to 1515 has been spoken of in the article ManuTiIUs (q.v.). The literary talent of Venice did not shine in works of imagination ; but on the utilitarian side it was really great and original. In Venice history was written to order, and so is open to suspicion. In poetry, if we may cite Pietro Bembo, Molza, Berni, Lodovico Dolce, Doni, Niccolo Franco, Rucellai, Sperone Speroni, and L. Aretino, whom lis contemporaries called 7 Divino, as all Venetians or refugees claiming the greater freedom of thought which Venice then afforded, we must yet admit the lack of a name of world-wide significance, a Dante or a Moliére. But the library of St Mark's shows the respect of the republic for letters; the building that housed the MS. collections bequeathed by Petrarch and Cardinal Bessarion is, perhaps, the most perfect model of 16th-century architecture ; and the librarian of the Marciana was, in virtue of his office, so high a personage that he had a title to be voted on by the senate and the great council for the ducal crown.

Such was Venice at the close of the 16th century, when some clearness of vision was still needed to foretell the approaching decay. She still had colonies, but their pre- servation became more difficult with the declining resources of the state. The customs were less productive, and the senate vainly sought to improve them by instituting at this period the "consuls of the merchants," the " provisors of commerce," the five "experts in

exchanges." Manners, too, were degenerating into indolence and luxury, and the courtesans of Venice were more famous than those of Rome. The proveditori alle pompe were designed to check the dilapidations of young patricians on the wealth their ancestors had gained by trade, and the like wastefulness of plain citizens, who consoled themselves for their exclusion from public charges and honours by squandering in idle profusion the money gained by trading commissions and illicit pursuits.

If the old senators who had known austerer times were privately exercised by the perils approaching the state, they were careful in public to conceal its weakness and dazzle strangers by the splendour of their pomps and receptions, and the Oriental gorgeousness of their palaces, churches, and processions, as was seen in the magnificent fétes given in 1574 to Henry III. on his way to assume the throne of France! They desired to make the king an ally as well as a guest, and some time later favourably entertained his proposal for a loan of 100,000 crowns of gold. In 1575 the city was visited by the plague, the almost inevitable consequence of such constant communi- cation with the East. Forty thousand Venetians fell, and the scourge passed on to the mainland, which it ravaged for four months. Next year the doge Mocenigo died, and the election fell to the old sea-lion Sebastian Venieri, the

1 The commemorative inscription can still be read on the threshold of the Hall of Giants.

hero of Lepanto, who already reckoned three '" most serene princes" in his family. He ruled but two years, and his last days were marred by the conflagration of the ducal palace. His successor was Nicolo da Ponte, a greybeard — of eighty-eight years, whose age showed that in the doge the Venetians sought rather the symbol than the reality) of authority. Yet he reigned for seven years, full of 4 peace and useful public works: the ducal palace rose from

its ruins; the procurazie or offices for the guardians of | noble orphans were completed ; Palladio fulfilled the vow

of the senate on the occasion of the late plague by erect-

ing the marble bridge of the Rialto to replace the old i wooden structure, and began the church of the Redeemer ; and Corfu and the Friulian frontier were fortified.

The peace of Italy had been mainly due to the religious wars of France; but the senate had wisely sought and if maintained the friendship of Henry III., and after his |

:

death in 1589 had been sagacious enough to be the first of European powers to recognize Henry of Navarre, thus securing a vigorous ally against Spain, which had turned } against the republic since the battle of Lepanto. The | French alliance proved durable ; Henry IV. mediated be-

tween Venice and the duke of Savoy, and on his marriage | with Mary de' Medici his name was inscribed in the Book : of Gold. ' The doge Pasquale Cicogna, elected in 1585, was suc- Rivalr ceeded in 1595 by Marino Grimani, whose rule was marked betwee by grave dissensions between the senate and the Vatican. ., The house of Este came to an end in 1597, Pope Clement pope. F VIII. declaring Cesar d'Este, the nephew of Alphonso IL.,

duke of Ferrara, incapable of succeeding him. But Venice supported his claims and was ready to enforce them by

war, when he ceded Ferrara to the pope, contenting him-

self with the dukedom of Modena and Reggio. This solution brought the Vatican into a permanent rivalry with Venice,—a grave matter, since at the beginning of the century Cesar Borgia had seized the Romagna in the name of Alexander VI, and Julius II. had occupied Bologna, so that the Estates of the Church bordered on those of the republic. There were other causes of dis- sension also: Venice had never been on cordial terms with the Papacy; the recognition of Henry of Navarre had given umbrage at Rome ; and, though peace was made for a time, the quarrel recommenced, and in 1606 Paul V. launched an interdict at the republic. Venice affected the greatest formal respect for the holy see; the legate sat

by the side of the doge and took precedence of princes as well as ambassadors ; but under all the forms of respect the ex- travagant pretensions of the popes were constantly repelled with inflexible firmness and energy. The ambassadors of Venice at Rome were always chosen from the most ex- perienced and active men of affairs, and, though the pope had nearer relations with Venice than any other friendly sovereign, churchmen were constantly excluded from all political and civil posts in the republic. A man, it was held, could not serve two masters. Nay, in all discussions bearing on relations with Rome, whether in the senate or the great council, the usher's call "Fuori i Papalisti" ex- cluded from the deliberations, not only patricians whose ties of family or interest bound them to the sacred see, but all who even held what would now be called ultramontane opinions. The Venetian clergy made no contribution to public burdens ; the tithes required in time of war could be raised ouly by a special papal brief, and this privilege the senate claimed the right to suppress. To this Sixtus V. had consented ; but his successor was less complaisant. In face of the new pretensions of the Vatican the Venetians multiplied restrictive measures against the clergy, and the conflict grew hotter on both sides, till Paul V. laid the republic under the interdict,—a step that still struck terror

intonations. The hostile Spaniards were not without their share in this measure. But the supple Venetians made no appeal to temporal arms: they left the negotiation of the difficulty to theologians, and Paolo Sarpi made peace be- tween Rome and the senate.

possessions. At this crisis the senate called Francesco Moro- Morosini to the command of the fleet, a post in which he sini's covered himself with glory by his bold offensive operations he a in the Peloponnesus. For fourteen years the contest was cam-

bravely maintained on both sides, but the fortune of war paigns.

Scarcely was this trouble appeased when the Uskok pirates of the Adriatic coast and the Quarnero Islands recommenced their hostilities, and for ten years (1607-17) no merchant fleet could sail eastward without a convoy. The pirates were supported by Austria, which coveted Istria and Dalmatia, and the conflict was ended in 1617 by the Next

was against the Turks. The Venetians occupied the Morea and laid siege to Athens, Morosini bombarding the Parthe- non, which had been made a powder magazine. The cam- paigns, renewed every spring, were marked by a series of victories: Prevesa, Navarino, Modone, Argos, Lepanto, Corinth, all added glory to the name of Morosini 'il Pelo-

Conflict treaty of Madrid between Venice and that power. ponesiaco." He failed, however, in his attack on Negro- with year the Spanish conspiracy, originated by the Spanish | pont, after he had been raised (1688) to the dignity of Spall. ambassador, the marquis of Bedmar, broke out in the city | doge. Coraro, who followed him in the command of the itself, but was detected in time by the vigilance of the ten. | fleet, died suddenly ; and then Domenico Mocenigo, the new

The Spaniards meant to seize the arsenal by the help of | commander, formed the bold project of retaking Crete,

. some of the most influential senators. In 1622 Antonio | and was already before the port of Canea when the news Foscarini was disgraced because he was suspected of | of a Turkish attack on the Morea—really no more than a plotting with the Spanish ambassador ; the Catholic king | feeble diversion—induced him to raise the siege and lose

carried on his intrigues everywhere. But the republic on | his opportunity. The error cost him dear: he was removed

its part was not inactive and had stirred up against Spain | from his command, and the old doge Morosini again took

a formidable enemy, the duke of Savoy, to whom in one | the field in spite of his seventy-five years, but soon suc-

year (1617) it lent more than a million crowns of gold. | cumbed to fatigue (1694), when Sylvester Valieri succeeded

From 1627 to 1631 the two enemies were again face to | to the ducal throne. The war continued under the leader-

face in the war of the Mantuan succession ; but this time | ship of Antonio Zeno. Scio was taken and lost again; re-

it was the duke of Savoy who made a peace to which | verses followed on victories ; and the stern senate removed

Venice merely assented. the captain and the proveditori. But the peace of Carlowitz

Lossof Peace was unbroken from 1631 to 1645. But in the | (1699) between Austria and the Porte brought with it the

. Se latter year the Turks suddenly fell on the island of Crete; | end of the war between Venice and the sultan, and the

and for twenty-four years the whole forces of the republic, and every thought of the people and the nobles, were con- centrated on the preservation of this colony, which had been purchased from the marquis of Montferrat at the date of the fifth crusade, and in course of time had become a place of the first importance both as a trading station and a naval port. Surprised by the suddenness of the attack, the senate appealed to Europe for aid, and the Vatican, Florence, Naples, and the knights of Malta came to their succour ; but after an alliance of thirty-seven days all the helpers regained their ships and left the Venetians to con- front the enemy alone. The struggle was valiantly main- tained and cost Venice, between 1645 and 1669, no less than 4,392,000 ducats. The siege of Candia alone lasted twenty-two years, and for three successive years the combats were continual. At length, on 6th September 1669, the Turks were masters of the island. Europe had looked on impassively at a struggle which, disastrous as was the issue, bore the highest testimony to the valour and patriotism of the generals of the republic. Biagio Giuliani, Tommaso Morosini, Jacopo Riva, Alvisio and Lazaro Mocenigo,

Giuseppe Dolfin, and Lorenzo Marcello surpassed one another in exploits worthy of the heroes of antiquity. Between May and September 1667 thirty-two assaults were delivered and repulsed before Candia, and seventeen sorties were made by the besieged. The glory of such a resist- ance did not compensate for the disaster, which reduced the public treasure of Venice from 6,000,000 sequins to 500,000. (See also Greece, vol. xi. p. 121.)

The troubles excited all over Europe by the ambition of Louis XIV. gave an interval of rest and recovery to the re- public, which knew how to preserve its neutrality ; and the years from 1674 to 1684 were a period of profound peace. But the enmity of the Turk still counted on the visible weakness of his rival, and imposed on her humiliations which her isolation and the exhaustion of her finances com- pelled her to submit to. Venice was only saved by the diversion produced by the siege of Vienna and the inter- vention of John Sobieski; but even then their repulse in central Europe sent back the Turks more determined than ever to be done with Venice and strip her of her whole

Turks, whose humiliation dates from this epoch, were com- pelled, besides their concessions to Austria, Poland, and Russia, to recognize the authority of Venice in the Morea and in Dalmatia as far as the Bosnian frontier.

The first thirteen years of the 18th century, when almost The 18th all Europe was involved in the War of the Spanish Succes- ¢e2tury.

sion, were a time of repose for Venice, which remained neu- tral; but hardly was the peace of Utrecht concluded when the Turks resumed the offensive against the republic, which now had no allies. One after the other the islands and colonies ceded by the peace of Carlowitz were retaken ; the Morea again became Turkish ; Dalmatia was saved only by the interposition of Austria, which had need of the friendship of Venice to checkmate the projects of Philip of Spain against the Italian duchies. But soon the emperor found it necessary, in view of the struggle with Spain, to come to terms with the sultan; and his allies, the Venetians, were included in the peace of Passarowitz signed between Austria and Turkey on 21st July 1718. From this mo- ment Venice ceased to have any influence on

European politics: she had no more wars, if she still had enemies, signed no more treaties, and, in a word, had abdicated her place in Europe. Not even the dispute of 1731 as to the succession to the duchy of Parma, which brought France, Austria, Spain, and Savoy into conflict at her very doors, stirred her to action ; she was indeed no longer a useful ally. Her navy had fallen behind the times ; her commerce had been in decadence since the way to the East by the Cape of Good Hope was opened ; she could scarcely repulse the Barbary pirates from her shores ; and she had to treat with Algiers, Tunis, and Morocco to put an end to their inroads, daily repeated from 1760 to 1774. Yet, the Tunisians failing in their engagements, she decided on a war with them, which was closed by a fresh treaty.

The government meanwhile went on in the old form, Consti-

The successive doges were still tied by the restrictive laws which made them crowned prisoners ; but rivalries sprang up between the great powers of the state: the senate attacked the institution of the saviz, the ministers dele- gated to each branch of the administration, and in turn the magistrates known as the guarantie proposed to reform

Napole- onic period.

Farly state.

Bridges.

148 VENICE [are

the senate, while, lastly, the council of ten was threatened by the great council. In the midst of these reforms, which were calculated to make a great change in the institutions of Venice, the French Revolution broke out. Ludovico Manin had just become doge (1788), but was a mere cipher in the councils of the state. No heed was paid to the information supplied by the ambassadors of Venice at the court of France; nothing was foreseen, nothing decided on, for neither senate nor council understood the vast sweep of the new movement in Europe. Soon the Venetians were called on to recognize the French republic ; they refused, but did not join

the coalition against it. When Bonaparte was at the gates of Mantua, they at length decided to treat with him; but it was too late. Mantua capitulated on 2d February 1797; the Venetian envoys presented themselves before Bonaparte on 25th March; and on 18th April the Austrians signed the peace of Leoben, which left Venice without an ally at the feet of the victori- ous invaders of Italy. On 8th May the great council decided to offer no resistance to the French; the doge abdicated on the 12th ; and Napoleon entered the city on the 16th, and proclaimed the end of the republic. On 17th October following Bonaparte, by the treaty of Campo Formio, abandoned the territory of Venice to Austria. Venice was buffeted to and fro between France and Austria from 1798 to 1814, when the new coalition assigned her to Austria. Till 1866 Venice remained Austrian, save for a few hours in the insurrections of 1848-49 ; but her people never acknowledged the rights of those who had bought and sold them like a flock of sheep. The war between Austria and the allied Prussians and Italians in 1866 gave Venice her freedom, and the unity of Italy was at length accomplished under the sceptre of the house of Savoy (see ITALY, vol. xiii. p. 490), (er)

Part IJ.—Arr.

Architecture.

For some centuries Venice must have consisted mainly of a few groups of wooden huts scattered among the many small grassy islets that lay off the coast of Venetia. At first the main occupa- tions of the inhabitants were fishing and preparing salt by evapora- tion. But, as they grew richer, especially through the possession of large numbers of coasting vessels, in which they transported the merchandise or troops of foreign races at what were frequently very remunerative rates,! they became exposed to the inroads of Dal- matian pirates ; and strongly defended castle-like houses began to be built in stone or brick, with towers at the angles and battlements all along the walls. Though no example exists ‘of these early Venctian castles, a very interesting survival of their general form is still to be traced in the 11th and 12th century palaces, of which a considerable number are yet to be secn (see fig. 5 below). As the city increased in size and importance, great changes were made in the form of the islands on

which it stands and in the network of salt-water channels which divided the smaller islands from one another. In the 13th and 14th centuries many decrees of the great council provided for the deepening of existing canals, for filling up others, for draining marshes and forming dry ground by bring- ing shiploads of soil from neighbouring islands, and for driving piles to form securer ground for building. The shallow salt lagoons which surround the islands of Venice form a long band, 4 to 8 miles wide, once reaching to the Roman cities of Ravenna on the south and Aquileia on the north.2 These waters, averaging only 1 to 4 feet in depth, are separated from the deep sea by a series of long, sandy island bars. Those which form the natural breakwater to Venice are called Malamocco and Lido.

The early bridges of Venice were wooden structures ; even that over the Rialto was of no more durable material till the present bridge was builtin 1591. Many were mere planks nailed on boats. One of the earliest built in stone was that by the south-east angle of the ducal palace, called the Ponte della Paglia, which was founded in 1360. Its name ("the bridge of straw ") appears to be

1 There are many curious analogies between Venice in the early part of its career and the Phoenician city of Tyre in the Sth and 7th centuries B.c.. in the position of the two citics, their mercantile habits, their custom of acting as carriers for other races, and their both being in their habits of life and in their artistic productions links between the East and West.

2 Vitruvius (i. 4) speaks of the lagoon cities of Aquileia, Altinum, and Ra- venna as being healthy sites in spite of their position. Aquileia and Altinum which were wealthy cities, were both destroyed by Attila. '

due to the fact that it was built with money from the tax on straw,® large quantities of which were used to thatch the early houses of Venice. Till about the middle of the 19th century the Rialto was the only bridge across the Grand Canal.*

According to tradition, the first church built in Venice was §. Early Giacomo del Rialto (founded in 482).4 The legendary history of churche| the founding of some other early churches is given in the Chronicle | of

Andrea Dandolo, written ¢. 1350. In the 5th century St Magnus, bishop of Altinum, who included in his see the Rialto and adjacent islands, had the following series of visions. (1) St Peter appeared and bade him found a church on that island where he should find oxen. and sheep grazing ; and on the little island of Olivolo, at the extreme east of Venice, he accordingly built the church of S. Pietro di Castello, which from 1091 till 1807 was the cathedral church of the Venetian patriarch. (2) The church of S. Raffaello in dorso- duro was founded in obedience to the archangel, who bade St Magnus build a church at the place where he should see a large |

(

flock of birds. (3) St Salvador was founded at the place where Christ told the bishop hé would see a red cloud rest. (4) S. Maria Formosa was erected at the command of the Virgin, at the place i where St Magnus saw a white cloud resting. (5) S. Giovanni in iW Bragola (or Bragora) and S. Zaccaria were built in obedience to the ;

Baptist, who told the bishop to raise churches to himself and his father. (6) The twelve apostles ordered a church to be built at i the place where Bishop Magnus should sce a flight of twelve im cranes. (7) S. Giustina, in the last vision, bade the bishop build |

a church in her honour at the place where he should see vines }

laden with grapes. Other early churches were those of S. Gemini- i ano and St Theodore, both on the island of Rialto (see below, "St : Mark's church"). j

Architectural Styles.—Owing to its isolated position on the verge Archite' of Italy, and its constant intercourse with the eastern shores and tural © islands of the Mediterranean, Venetian architecture was an inde- styles. — pendent development, though with many Oriental characteristics, having a character of its own quite unlike the styles employed in other Western countries. It was a very complex growth, in which the most diverse styles were absorbed and blended together ina very beautiful way. The various strands which, woven, as it were, together, combined to form

the magnificent web of Venetian archi- | tecture were chiefly these,—(1) the Byzantine, itself a most complex mixture of older styles, blended together and vivified with new life in the hands of the skilful builders and craftsmen of Justinian's time ; (2) the Moslem as developed in the gorgeous mosques and palaces of Persia, Syria, and Egypt; (3) the Gothic of northern Europe, and especially of France, with a secondary strain of Floren- tine influence, which, however, was more marked in the sculpture than in the architecture.

In the 11th and 12th centuries the Byzantine style was univer- Byzan- sally employed by the Venetians. The arches of this period are tine. semicircular, usually much stilted. The sculptured ornament is of very great beauty, and is applicd freely round arches, along string-courses, and in panels, with which the external facades were often thickly studded. According to the peculiar Venetian system of decoration, the walls were built in solid brick-work and then covered with thin slabs of rich and costly marbles. The columns, ; with their capitals and bases, were, as a rule, the only places where solid blocks were placed. This constant method of facing with thin slabs necessitated the use of special forms of mouldings and carv- ings, and thus, except in the solid capitals, no deep cutting could i be employed ; therefore the mouldings of this period consist of f small rolls, cavettos, or flutings contrived to enrich the surface with | the least amount of cutting into the thin marble. In the same way the sculptured bands are shallow in treatment, but full of the most vigorous grace, combined with the utmost spirit, in every line and curve, and rich, with an extreme delicacy, in all the details. Flowing scroll-work of semi-conventional foliage, mingled with ' grotesque animals, birds, or dragons, is most commonly uscd. As i purely decorative sculpture, nothing could surpass the beauty of i these early bands and panels. The round or arch-shaped or rect- angular sculptured panels, used to stud the facades like rows of jewels, are of peculiar beauty and interest. Many of the designs are derived from the far East, and appear to be of Sasanian origin ; favourite motives are eagles or dragons devouring hares or other animats, and peacocks treated in a conventionally decorative way, with their spreading tails forming a halo-like background to the body of the bird. Many of these panels are derived from the very ancient Assyrian subject of the sacred tree between two guardian beasts or birds; a

common variety of this has two peacocks face to face drinking from a eup placed on a tall, pillar-like object, which i recalls that on the lion-gate of Mycene. Many of these reliefs { closely resemble the sculptured screens and altars of the 6th cen- —— ee SO eee en ee eee

3 In the same way old London Bridge was paid for by the wool duty.

4 The word " Rialto" appears to have been applied, first to this deep channel

of salt water, and secondly to the large adjacent island, that on which St Mark's and the ducal palace are built.

5 See E. A. Freeman, Subject and Neighbour Lands of Venice.

§ See sections of mouldings illustrated by Mr Ruskin in Stones of Venice, MOL tik, jE, eS

a nN

ea

Moslem.

Early Renais- sance,

_ Classic.

: :

Founda- tions.

ART. |

tury in Ravenna, and are probably of the same date, though used to decorate buildings not earlier than the 12th century. The church of St Mark, especially, is a rich storehouse of these examples of early sculpture. Others of exactly similar style, which exist in the churches of Thessalonica and other Eastern cities, bear witness to the unity of early

Byzantine art and its wide geographical range until the downfall of the Eastern empire. One striking feature in Venetian architecture of all dates down to the 15th century is the constant use of the dentil moulding. This consists of a simple series of notchings, at once the easiest and the most effective way of enriching the thin facing-slabs when their edges were allowed to appear, as, for example, in those which lined the soffits of arches.

The influence of Moslem art is seen in the occasional use of the horse-shoe arch, in the very common ogee form which was almost universal in Venice from the 13th to the 15th century, and still more clearly in the fantastic rows of battlements, formed of thin pointed slabs of marble set on edge, which crowned the walls of nearly all the chief palaces of Venice in the 14th and the 15th century.

The 13th century was the time of transition from the round arched Byzantine style to the pointed arch with tracery, which in some cases was derived directly from the Gothic of northern countries. This is seen especially in the two great churches of the Dominican and Franciscan friars, SS. Giovanni e Paolo and 8S. Maria Gloriosa dei Frari. These two stately churches resemble those built by the friars in other places in Italy,1 and have little of the dis- tinctively Venetian character of the contemporary domestic build- ings. In the 14th and 15th centuries one peculiarity of Venetian

Gothic is the way in which tracery is used to fill rectangular and |

not arched openings. The result of this is that the tracery itself has to support the mass of wall above it, whereas in the Gothic of other countries the tracery is merely, as it were, a pierced screen filling in a constructional arch, which carries the whole weight of the superimposed wall and roof. Hence the Venetian tracery, of which that in the upper story of the ducal palace is a typical ex- ample, is much thicker and heavier in construction.

In the latter part of the 15th century Venetian architecture began to lose its distinctively local character, though very beautiful ex- "Spe of Early

Renaissance were built by the Lombardi family and other architects, largely under the influence of Fra Giocondo (see VERONA).

In the 16th century, under the later development of the Renais- sance, the Pseudo-Classic style was paramount in Venice, and Sanso- vino, Palladio, and others designed many costly buildings which had nothing specially Venetian in their style. This magnificent but dull and scholastic form of architecture reached its highest development in Venice, where it was later in degenerating into tasteless decadence than was generally the case elsewhere. Even in the 17th century good models of the Revived Classic style were built, especially by Longhena (see p. 155 below). After that the eee stion of architecture and sculpture took place with great rapidity.

The periods of these styles may be roughly tabulated thus :—(i.) Byzantine, 7th to end of 13th century ; (ii.) Gothic, middle of 13th toc. 1460; (iii.) Early Renaissance, c. 1450-1520 ; (iv.) Classic, ¢. 1520-1620 ; (v.) Extreme Decadence, c. 1600 downwards.

Materials and Methods of Construction.—In spite of its position on a number of small sandy islands in the lagoons, Venice was built upon firm and solid foundations, so that very few houses have suffered seriously from settlement. At a depth of 10 to 16 feet there is a firm bed of very stiff clay, and below this a bed of sand and gravel, and then a thin layer of peat. Recent borings for Artesian wells to a depth of about 1500 feet have shown a regular succession of these beds—clay, gravel, and peat—repeated again and again as far down as the borings have reached. The process implied in this geological formation seems still very slowly to be going on, and the present level of the square of St Mark has been raised artificially about 20 inches above the old brick paving shown in Gentile Bellini's picture of 1496. A good example of the old method of forming foundations is shown in that of the great cam- panile of St Mark, c. 900 (see fig. 1). Here the builders dug down. to the bed of stiff clay, and over the whole area of the footings of the tower drove in piles of white poplar, 10 to 11 inches in diameter, nearly touching one another. On the top of these a level platform was formed by two layers of oak trees (Quercus robur), each roughly squared, the upper layer being laid crosswise upon the lowcr one. The oak and poplar both grew along the shores close to

Venice ; in later times, when the Venetian territory was extended, the red larch (Pinus Larix) of Cadore and the Euganean Hills was largely used, as, for example, in the foundations of the ducal palace. In 1885 the foundations of the campanile were examined, and both the oak and the poplar were found to be perfectly sound." On the wooden platform massive footings are laid, consisting of five courses

1 Comp. 8S. Maria Novella and 8. Croce in Florence and 8. Maria sopra Minerva In Rome. 7

2 An interesting account of this and other foundations in Venice is given by Giacomo Boni in the Archivio Veneto, ser. ii., vol. xxix., pt. fi., 1885.

of large blocks of trachyte and other granitic or porphyritic rocks from the Euganean Hills. Above these are six courses of similar stone arranged in step-like offsets, forming a base or plinth to the

i ait

CAMPANILE.

DUCAL PALACE.

A i

MODERN LEVEL

Ed, AUN c PA WEAN

Fig. 1.—Two methods of forming foundations, one with piles, the other with wider footings and no piles, as exemplified in the campanile and the ducal palace. A. 10-inch piles of white poplar, close driven into the stiff clay. B,B. Double layers of oak planks, the same in both. C. Rough footings of campanile, made of trachyte and other voleanic stones. D. Similar footings under pillars of ducal palace. E. Stylobate of three steps,

under lower loggia of palace, now hidden by raised level of modern pavement. F. One of the Istrian stone pillars of the palace. G. Paving of loggia, now flush with that outside.

tower ; owing to the raising of the pavement level only two and a half of these offsets are now visible. Another way of forming foundations, which was used in rather later times, was to omit the piles altogether and build footings with a wider spread. Fig. 1, which also shows the foundations of the ducal palace, dating from the 14th century, is a typical example of this second method, in which the oak platform is laid immediately on the stiff clay. The use of trachyte for foundations was soon superseded by that of Istrian limestone, a very beautiful cream-coloured stone, extremely fine and close in texture and capable of receiving a very high polish. Though not crystalline in grain, and, technically speaking, not a true marble, this Istrian stone has for most architectural purposes all the beauty of the finest white marble, and receives from age a beautiful golden-russet patina, very much like that assumed by Pentelic marble. From the 11th century onwards it was used very largely for plinths, angle quoins, string-courses, window tracery, and other decorative purposes. It occurs, for example, in all the magnificent series of arcades in the ducal palace. Its extreme fine- ness of grain allows it to be worked with an ivory-like delicacy and minuteness of detail.

Throughout the Middle Ages the main walling of Venetian build- Main ings was always of fine brick, usually a rich red in colour, made and walls.

fired in the kilns of Murano. In spite of its beautiful colour the brick-work was seldom left visible, the whole wall-surface being lined with thin slabs of marble in the more magnificent buildings, or else coated with stucco, on which diapers and other decorative patterns were painted.

Before 1405 the mortar used in Venice was made of the white Mortar.

lime from the Istrian limestone, which possessed no hydraulic qualities, and was consequently very perishable. But after that year, when the Venetians conquered Padua, they were able to get supplies of a strong

hydraulic dark lime from Albettone, which formed a very durable cement or mortar, able to resist salt water and the destructive sea air.

One of the chief glorics of Venice depends on its extensive use of Marbles.

the most beautiful and costly marbles and porphyries, which give a wealth of magnificent colour such as is to be seen in no other city in the world. In early times none of these seem to have been obtained direct from the quarries, but from older buildings, either of Roman or early Byzantine date. Immense quantities of rich marbles were brought from the ruined cities of Heraclea, Ravenna, Altinum, and especially Aquileia. Under the Roman empire Aquileia contained great numbers of magnificent buildings, deco- rated with marbles and porphyries from Greece, Numidia, Egypt, and Arabia. The gorgeous churches and palaces of the Byzantine emperors, enriched with rare marbles stolen from Greek and Roman buildings of classic times, were in their turn stripped of their costly columns and wall-linings by the victorious Venetians. Thus Venice became a magnificent storehouse in which were heaped the rich treasures accumulated throughout many previous centuries by various peoples. The principal varieties used in the palaces of Venice are—the red porphyry of Egypt and the green ee ee ee*

3 Early in the 15th century the Venetians began to work the rich quarries

of red marble near Verona; but with this exception the decorative marbles

seem to have been taken from older buildings elsewhere.

porphyry of Mount Taygetus, red and grey Egyptian granites, the beautiful lapis Atracius (verde antico), Oriental alabaster from Numidia and Arabia, the Phrygian pavonazzetto with its purple mottlings, cipollino from Carystus, and, in great quantities, the alabaster-like Proeonnesian marble with bluish and amber-coloured striations.! Till the 14th or 15th century the white marbles used in Veniee were from Greek quarries—Parian or Pentelic—being all (like the coloured marbles) stolen from older buildings, while in later times the native marble of Carrara was

imported. Large quantities of red Verona marble were used to form moulded frames round panels of white sculptured marble. The greater part of these costly marbles seems to have been imported in the form of columns, immense numbers of which were sawn up lengthways into long thin slabs for use as wall-facings. Other columns, usually those of the most precious marbles, were sawn across, and thus the roundels were produced which stud like jewels the facades of many of the palaces (see fig. 6). Thin slices sawn from the same column were reversed and placed side by side, so that the natural mottlings formed a regular sort of pattern. Very rich and complicated designs were produced by placing four slabs together to form one large pattern, repeating from one centre. The whole interior of St Mark's is decorated in this magnificent way, very large areas being covered with the same pattern reeurring againand again. Thus no attempt was made to disguise the fact that the marble was only a thin surface deeoration of no constructional importance. The fact that many slabs had been cut from one block was frankly acknowledged by the formation of these "eut and reversed " patterns, nor is there any attempt to conceal the bronze clamps which hold the slabs in their places.

Gold and The facades of the chief palaces of Venice down to the end of

colour decora- tion.

Frescos,

St Mark's,

the 15th century were wholly covered with these magnificently eoloured marbles. But that was not all; a still greater splendour of effeet was given by the lavish use of gold and colour, especially the costly ultramarine blue. Very frequently the whole of the sculpture, whether on capitals, archivolts, or frieze-like bands, was thickly covered with gold leaf, the flat grounds being coloured a deep ultramarine so as to throw the reliefs into brilliant prominence. The less magnificent palaces were decorated ina simpler way. The brick surfaces between the windows and other arches were covered with fine hard stucco, made, like that of the ancient Romans, of a mixture of lime and marble dust. The whole of this was then decorated with minute diapers or other geometrical ornament in two or

three earth colours, especially red, yellow, and brown ochres. Very few examples of this form of decoration still remain, owing to the corrosive action of the sea air. One notable example, dating from the 14th or 15th century, has a rich pattern formed by a series of adjacent quatrefoils, with half-figures of cherubs in the intermedi- ate spaces, covering the whole flat surface of the wall. A few faded patches are now all that is left.

With the early years of the 16th century and the later develop- ment of the Renaissance totally different methods of architectural decoration superseded the use of precious marbles and delicate repeated ornament in colour. The Pseudo-Classic buildings of Sansovino, Palladio, and their schools were either built of white stone or marble, quite unrelieved by colour, or else stuccoed facades were treated simply as a ground on which to paint large frescos with figure subjects, not designed with any sense of the true prin- eiples of architectural decoration. These frescos, which covered the otherwise unornamental facades of many of the 16th-century palaces, were often the work of the greatest painters, from Giorgione to Tintoretto; but the pictures, though no doubt beautiful in themselves, were obviously quite out of place on the facade of a house: the colossal groups dwarfed the building they were painted on, and were far inferior in decorative effect to the simpler patterns of earlier times. These, too, have mostly perished: on the fondaco? of the Germans, once covered with frescos painted jointly by Titian and Giorgione, only traces of two figures now remain. 'One of the best-preserved series of these exterior frescos is that inside the cloister of S. Stefano, painted by Pordenone, which has naturally suffered less than the very exposed facades on the Grand Canal.

Church of St Mark.—This church stands quite alone among the buildings of the world in respect of its unequalled richness of material and decoration, and also from the fact that it has been constructed with the spoils of countless other buildings, and there- fore forms a muscum of sculpture of the most varied kind, nearly every century from the 4th down to the latest Renaissance being represented in some carved panel or capital, if not more largely.

1 The splendid columns of St Mark' i / ini ; speaks Ste being of avalon Pie oe ee pe 45 we described by varions carly Byzantine writers.

According to Vitruvius (ii. 8),

the magnificent palaces of Croesus of Lydia and Mausolus of i were chiefly adorned with Proconnesian mie ee

2 The word fondaco, of Arab provenance, from the Greek Tavdoxetov applied to several of the largest Venetian palaces, denotes the mercantile head- quarters of a foreign trading nation. The fondachi of the Turks and of the Germans still exist, though much modernized. An analogous establishment was the hellenium of the trading Greeks at Naucratis in the Egyptian delta remains of which have recently been discovered by Mr Flinders Petrie (sec Pro- ceedings of the Egypt. Explor. Soc., 1886).

VENAW SE

During the early years of Venetian history the site of the present Site,

[ART,

church and square of St Mark was a large grassy field,with rows of trees, divided by a canal (which no longer exists), and containing two churehes. One of these, dedicated to St Theodore, the old patron saint of Venice, stood on the site of the present ehurch of St Mark. The other, that of S. Geminiano, was a little to the north- west of the great campanile. Fig. 3 (below) shows its position, and also the site on which it was rebuilt by Sebastiano Ziani (1178-79), when he pulled down the original church in order to extend the square westwards. In the 16th century it was again rebuilt by Cristoforo del Legname and Sansovino, and was destroyed in 1805 by Napoleon I., to make room for a new block to unite the two palaces of the procurators. The grassy campo where these churches stood was the property of the abbey of S. Zaccaria. At its eastern extremity a small palace was built for the doge about 810, when Venice first became the chief ducal place of residence under Angelo Partecipazio.

According to the chief early chronicles, the body of St Mark was Original secretly brought away from Alexandria and carried to Venice in chapel,

828, the church where he was buried having been pulled down by the Moslems in order to build with its materials a palace at ' Babylon," as old Cairo was then called. After the arrival of his relics, St Mark became the patron saint of Venice in place of St Theodore, and his bones were laid in the "confessio" of the small private chapel of the ducal palace. This chapel, however, soon lost its private character and became the chief church of Venice,*

though not the cathedral church of the patriarch. The small ducal Older chapel of St Mark was burnt in 976, together with the rest of the church.

palace, during the insurrection against Doge Candiano IV.: it was rebuilt on a larger scale by his successor, Pietro Orscolo, and the c A N A CS

25

ET PE on™

y)

SIG

.

a =U i rion y ; DY YO LD % Yn MLM Ut

|_| Ll

Fig. 2.—Plan of St Mark s; the black shows its older form, the shading its later development. 1. High altar, containing body of St Mark. 2. North apsidal chapel of St Peter. 3. South chapelofStClement. 4. 15th-century sacristy. 5. Rood-screen. 6. North ambo and patriarch's throne. 7. South ambo, 8. Altar of S. Maria dei Mascoli. 9. Altar of St Leonard. 10. Chapel of S. Isidore, added in 1353-55. 11. Chapel of St John the Evangelist. 12. Ante-room to treasury. 13. Treasury, formerly a tower of ducal palace. 14.

Baptistery. 15. Chapel of Cardinal Zeno. 16. Western atrium. 17. Northern atriuin. 18. North door. 19, Altar against a pier of the nave. 20. Porta della Carta. 21. Loggia of ducal palace. 22. Doge's ante-room. 23. Grand staircase of palace. 24. 16th-century part of ducal palace. 25. Canal, Rio del Palazzo.

following doges, the work being carried on for about a century. An inscription now lost recorded its completion in 1071, but it was not consecrated till 1085, in the reign of Vitale Faliero (1084- 1096), when it was dedicated ' to God, the glorious Virgin Annun-*

3 There is much analogy between the relationship of the church of St Mark to the ducal palace and that of the abbey church to the royal palace at West- minster: both were originally built in connexion with royal palaces and both Possessed special privileges as "royal peculiars."

=

Se

SE eee

- Decora- tion.

|

|

.

|

screen.

ART. |

protector St Mark." The form of the church as then completed was quite different from its present aspect, both in extent of plan and in absence of rich decoration. Fig. 2 shows the size of the older church, which was

originally of the simple basilica form with three eastern apses and no transepts.! One very interest- ing relic of the old ducal palace still exists, namely, the lower part of one of its towers, with walls 11 feet thick ; this was made into the treasury of St Mark when the church was enlarged so as to include it in its plan, at the west corner of the south transept. Recent processes of " restoration" have sliown the external design of this early church, which was of plain red brick, undecorated by marble or mosaics, and only relieved by very simple blank arcading, with round arches, not unlike those on some early Norman build- ings in England.?

By degrees the church was enlarged: first of all transepts were added, then the baptistery on the south and the atrium extending along the west and north of the nave, about 1150-1200. Next chapels were added north and south of the two transepts : that of St Isidore was built and finished in 1354 by Andrea Dandolo. In the 15th century the sacristy at the east end was added, the altar of St Peter in the north apse being removed to make a passage to it; another way to the sacristy for the use of the clergy was cut through the massive wall of the main apse. During the long period from its dedication in 1085 till the overthrow of the Venetian re- public by Napoleon every doge's reign saw some addition to the rich decorations of the churcli—mosaics, sculpture, wall linings, or columns of precious marbles. By degrees the whole walls inside and outside were completely faced either with glass mosaics on gold grounds or with precious coloured marbles and porphyries, plain white marble being only used for sculpture, and then thickly covered with gold. It is impossible here to give an adequate notion of the splendour of the whole effect ; nothing short of the eloquence of Mr Ruskin can do justice to the subject. Unfortunately the whole wall surface of the interior is so stained and caked with dirt that much of the gorgeous effect of the marbles is lost.

The general scheme of decoration is the following. The whole of the domes and vaults, and the upper part of the walls down to the Icvel of the floor of the triforium, are completely covered with mosaics of brilliant glass tessere, the ground bcing in most cases of gold. Below this every inch of the surface of the walls and arches is covered with richly coloured marbles, porphyries, and alabaster, relieved by pure white marble, sculptured in panels, string courses, and the like. The various marbles are

arranged in broad upright bands, alternating so that one colour enhances the effect of that next to it. For example, the nave wall in the north aisle is faced thus,—(1) verde antico, (2) Proconnesian, (3) red broc- catello of Verona, (4) Proconnesian, (5) magnificent Oriental ala- baster, (6) Proconnesian, and (7) verde antico; below these is a narrow baud of red Verona marble, and then a plinth-moulding of Athenian white marble, which rests on the seat of panelled red marble that runs all round the interior of the nave and transepts. The large columns between the brick piers, six in the nave and eight in the transepts (see fig. 2), are monoliths of fine Proconnesian marble, veined with greyish blue and amber, and the great brick piers are faced with thin slabs of the same material. This facing and most of that throughout the church are made of ancient columns sawn into slices,

The eastern crypt or confessio extends under the whole of the choir behind the rood-screen, and has three apscs like the upper church. The body of St Mark was originally placed here, but is now within the high altar of the upper church. Below the nave is an older crypt, the existence of which has only recently been discovered ; it is not accessible, having been filled in with earth and rubbish at a very early period.

The choir, which is raised about 4 feet above the nave, is sepa- rated from it by a marble rood-screen, formed of ancient columns, bearing a straight architrave surmounted by fourteen statues, viz., St Mark, the Blessed Virgin Mary, and the twelve apostles. It extends across the aisles, forming a north apsidal chapel of St Peter and a southern one to St Clement. The rood-screen is signed

ciate, and to the

Se G. Jackson, in his work on Dalmatia and Istria (Oxford, 1887), vol. ili., gives an interesting account and valuable illustrations of the early churches at Parenzo, Grado, and Aquileia, which in their sculptured capitals, mosaics, and other details closely resembled the early portions of St Mark's. Large quantities of the sculpture and rich marbles used in Venice were brought from Grado, Aquileia, and other cities in the same district, the buildings of which were to a great extent the prototypes of those built in Venice before the 13th century. In later times the flood of

influence passed in the opposite direction, and during the 14th and 15th centuries an immense number of palaces and churches were built in the Venetian style, by architects from Venice, all along the eastern shores of the Adriatic. The result is that in these Istrian cities examples are to be seen of what appears to be the architecture of Venice during its whole course of development from the 12th to the 15th century.

_~ The exterior of the churcli of St Demetrius at Thessalonica is covered with simple brick arcading, very like that which still exists in many places behind the marble lining of St Mark's.

3 The first edition of the Stones of Venice, together with an unfinished series of folio plates, most of them exquisitely drawn by Mr Ruskin himself, was published in 1852; a carefully executed reprint of both was issued in 1886. This ed ee noblest monographs on any architectural subject that has ever

written.

as the work of the Venetians Jacobello and Pietro Paolo, sons of Antonio delle Masegne, 1394-97. The rood itself is of silver, dated 1394 and signed "Jacobus Magistri Marci Benato de Venetiis." The workmanship both of the silver crucifix and of the fourteen statues is of no great excellence. In front of the screen stand two very large ambones or pulpits, one of porphyry and the other of verde antico. In the northern ambo is a lofty patriarch's throne under a metal domed canopy, curiously like a pulpit in a Moslem mosque. There are fine marble baldacchini, supported on columns of precious marbles, over the high altar, two in the transepts, and one on the north side of the nave. No less than five hundred columns of porphyry and costly marbles are used to decorate the church, especially on the west front. Some of those inside the atrium have no constructional use, but are only set against the wall for the sake of their beauty and value.

A whole volume might be written on the sculptured capitals, Columns panels, screens, and other features of the church. A great part of and these are the spoils of other churches, especially from the East ; capitals.

much of the sculpture, as, ¢.g., the parapets along the triforium gallery, dates from the 6th century or even earlier. In the richly carved capitals every style from the 4th to the 12th century is represented, many of them being marvels of delicacy combined with extreme spirit of execution. Some of the larger caps are partially covered with a rich basket-work pattern completely under-cut with great technical skill ; others have vine or acanthus foliage treated with vigorous realism ; anda large number have the revived Byzan- tine treatment of the elassic Corinthian or Ionic capitals, with variations showing the richest power of invention and originality. In addition to the elaborate sculpture, some of the capitals are de- corated with inlaid patterns ; and many of the mouldings, such as the capping of the triforium screen, are also ornamented in the same way. This use of inlay is almost peculiar to St Mark's, as is also the method of enriching sculptured relicfs with backgrounds of brilliant gold and coloured glass mosaics, producing an effect of extraordinary magnificence.*

The extcrior is no less magnificent than the inside, the whole Exterior.

facades being covered with sculpture, mosaic, or slabs of rich marble. The west facade especially is a marvel of lavish expenditure both of labour and of costly material. The design consists of two main stages, the lower one being formed by the atrium, a 12th-century addition, in front of the older facade. Each stage is divided into five great arches, decorated with richly sculptured archivolts and with tympana filled in with mosaic pictures. Only one of the original mosaics now exists on this front ; all the rest have been destroyed and replaced by others of very inferior style in the 17th and 18th centuries. The one original mosaic is over the northern-most of the four doorways into the western atrium; its datc is about or soon after 1220. It is of great decorative beauty, and its subject—the translation into the church of the body of St Mark— is of great interest from its careful representation of the west fagade of the church as it was at the beginning of the 13th century. It shows the original form of the

upper part of the fagade before the addition in the 14th century of the large ogee gables with elaborate crockets, alternating with statucs, and intermediate pinnacled canopies placed between the five great arches of the upper story. It also shows the marble screen-work which once filled the great central west window, the whole of which is now missing, only the columns which supported it being left.° Similar filling-in still exists in some of the large side windows. The lower or atrium story is enriched with a wonderful collection of columns of precious marbles and porphyries arranged in two tiers. The sculptured archivolts, with foliage mixed with figures or subjects in relief, are of great beauty and variety. They are all carved in fine white Athenian marble, and were once gilt, as appears to have been the case with nearly all the sculptured ornaments of St Mark's. This extensive use of gold is clearly shown in Gentile Bellini's picture. The top of the atrium forms a wide upper gallery communicating with the interior at the triforium level. In the centre of this gallery stand the four colossal bronze horses, from some Graco- Roman triumphal quadriga, which were brought to Venice after the conquest of Constantinople by Enrico Dandolo in 1204.7

The roofs, including the five great external domes over the nave, choir, transepts, and crossing, are all covered with thick sheets of lead. Thc internal domes, like the rest of the vaults, are of brick, the external domes being of wood. The drums on which the outer domes rest are bound round with strong iron bands, which were 2 ee a ee eee

4 The church of St Demetrius at Thessalonica contains many sculptured panels and other decorations exactly similar in style to those of St Mark's ; and other churches in Thessalonica and Trebizond have mosaic pavilg and glass wall-mosaics closely resembling those in St Mark's. Even the plan of the Venetian basilica is Oriental in origin. ;

5 The most notable examples are over the doorways of the western atrium.

6 This tracery, or rather screen-work, was removed before 1496, when Gentile Bellini painted his picture of the Piazza and West Front of St Mark's. This very interesting picture shows the lost mosaics, the subjects of which appear to have been the same as those now existing.

7 These bronze horses were carried off to Paris, with many other art treasures, by Napoleon in 1797; they were restored to their place in 1815 by Francis of Austria, as is recorded in a large inscription on the arch below them.

Roofs.

Mosaics.

Pave- ment.

Retable or Pala d@'Oro.

152

added by Jac. Sansovino in the 16th century. The round-headed windows in the drums were once filled in with pierced screen-work of marble, some examples of which still exist in the western atrium, —an interesting relic of the method of filling windows employed at a time when glass was but little used. '

The mosaics in the interior are among the finest and, from their variety of date, the most interesting series in the world ; those dating from the 12th and 13th centuries are of special beauty. The earliest appear to be those on the five great domes, probably executed before 1150. On the nave dome the subject is the Descent of the Holy Spirit: tongues of fire radiate upon colossal figures of the apostles, and below them, on the drum of the dome, isa second series of figures representing the various nations of the world who were converted through the inspired teaching of the apostles. On the dome over the crossing is the Ascension of Christ, with bands of large figures of the Apostles, and below them the Virtues. On the choir dome are a half figure of Christ and a series of the Prophets. In the main apse is Christ in Majesty. The transept domes have series of Saints and Doctors of the Church. All have explanatory inscriptions. The whole of the rest of the vaults and the upper portion of the walls are covered with mosaic pictures, of which a mere catalogue would occupy many pages. In the atrium the sub- jects are taken from the Old Testament; these date from ¢. 1200- 1300. In the baptistery? are the life of St John the Baptist

and scenes from the life of Christ; on the first dome (westwards) is Christ in Majesty over a series of baptismal scenes and the Greek Doctors ; on the second dome, Christ surrounded by Angels. On the barrel vault of the chapel of St Isidore is a very beautiful series of mosaics, with scenes from the saint's life and other subjects, exe- cuted in 1355, soon after the completion of the chapel. In the sacristy is a fine series of 15th-century mosaics, and in other parts of the church there are mosaics of still later date, some of them from cartoons by Tintoretto and other Venetian painters of the decadence. These later mosaics are not designed with any real sense of the special necessities of mosaic work, and are all very in- ferior in decorative effect to the simple Byzantine style from the 12th to the 14th century.

Most of the existing mosaics of the earlier periods have suffered very seriously from " restoration," a process which is still going on, with most fatal results to the interest and real value of the mosaics, The exterior marble facing and much of the sculpture have within recent years been completcly renewed in the most tasteless way,— the fine slabs of rich Oriental marbles having been largely replaced by cheap greyish Carrara marble of the worst quality, quite devoid of the fine colours and rich veinings of the original slabs. The same fate now threatens the magniticent mosaic pavement of St Mark's, the surface of which has sunk into a succession of wavy hollows, owing to the settlement of the vaulting of the crypt below on which the nave paving rests.2 The original part of the mosaic floor probably dates from about the middle of the 12th century. The nave pavement of the cathedral at Murano, which is exactly similar in style, materials, and workmanship, has an inscription dated 1140. The pavement of St Mark's consists partly of opus Alexandrinum of red and green porphyry mixed with some marble, and partly of tesselated work, made both of glass and of marble tessere. The two methods are obviously of the same date, as in some cases both processes are used in the same design. The opus Alexandrinum is very similar in style to that in some of the basilicas of Thessalonica, and also those in Rome, most of which are of about the same date, the 12th century. The designs executed in mosaic tesseree are of several different styles, some being taken from the mosaics of Roman classical times, while others, with large panels of peacocks on each side of a vase, eagles or lions devouring their prey, and

the like, are copied from Byzantine reliefs of much earlier date than the 12th century. The originals of many of these are to be seen in the sculptured roundels which stud the facades of Byzantine palaces in Venice. A great part of the pavement of St Mark's has been repaired and renewed at various times, from the 14th century down to the present time ; consequently a great variety of styles and materials occurs mixed with the original parts. The pave- ment in the north aisle was renewed in the most clumsy and spiritless fashion about twenty years ago, and it is much to be feared that a similar fate awaits the rest of these priceless mosaics,

One of the great glories of St Mark's is the most magnificent gold retable in the world, most sumptuously decorated with jewels and enamels, usually known as the Pala d'Oro, It was originally (according to the Venetian chronicles) ordered in Constantinople by Doge Pietro Orseolo I. in 976 ; and an inscription in enamelled letters added in 1345 records that it was brought to Venice and

2 There is no ground whatever for the notion that the wavy surface of the Its lines of depression simply follow loose filling-in of which allows more

3 It is interesting to note that a 6th or 7th century marble relief with the

; p facing of the t St Mark, has been copied exactly in one of the Inosaics of the south a. _

VENICE

[aRt,

again repaired and enlarged by Doge Pietro Ziani; and finally in 1345 Andrea Dandolo reset the enamels in new framework, and added some minute gold canopies and other decoration of Gothic style. In the 19th century it was thoroughly repaired and the stolen gems replaced by new ones, easily distinguishable from the original jewels by being cut in facets, not "en cabochon" after the old fashion. This marvellous retable is made up of an immense number of microscopically minute gold cloisonné enamel pictures, of the utmost splendour in colour and detail. The enamels are partly translucent, allowing the brilliant gold backing to

shine through the coloured enamel. The subjects are Christ in Majesty, figures of Archangels and Angels, and a very large number of single figures of Prophets and Saints, as well as many scenes from the life of Christ and of St Mark. No description can do justice to the splendour of effect produced by this gleaming mass of gold, jewels, and enamels; the delicacy of workmanship of the latter is only equalled by two Textus covers, also in gold cloisonné, now pre- served in the treasury of St Mark, which also possesses a magni- ficent collection of church plate of all sorts, such as large chalices and patens in crystal and agate, reliquaries, candlesticks, altar frontals, and other kinds of church furniture, all of the most precious materials and workmanship. Two silver frontals of the 14th century, now used for the high altar of St Mark, originally belonged to the cathedral of Venice, S. Pietro di Castello.

ee

F ORICINAL | PIAZZA OR os

CAMPO DI STtT.MARKS

“ALB RARIA VECCHIA PIAZZETTA

e silis RIVA DEGLI

MOLO

was bounded on the west by the canal B, with the 6th-century church of 8.

Geminiano, C, on its west bank. The first enlargement of the square was

effected by Doge Sebastiano Ziani in 1176, when he filled up the canal and

rebuilt the church on a new site at D, thus nearly doubling the size of the

square. Lastly, the square was extended southwards in the 16th century,

when the new palace of the procurators, K, was built by Scamozzi. Gentile

Bellini's picture shows a line of houses along FF, reaching up to the great campanile, A. Napoleon I. in 1805-10 pulled down the church of 8. Gemi-niano and built a new block at the west end of the square, L. The dates of the various parts of the existing ducal palace are indicated on the plan ; the i rebuilding was carried on in the following order, P, Q) B.S; 1, Ui, Ve i Z is the treasury of St Mark, which was originally one of the towers belonging | {

:

?.

-

{

SCHIAVONI a

Fic. 3.—Square of St Mark and surrounding buildings. The original campo F ij to the old ducal palace; E, site of old houses; G, clock-tower; H, old palace of procurators; J, old library; M, two columns; N, Ponte della Paglia; O, Bridge of Sighs; W, Giants' Staircase; X, sacristy of St Mark; Y, Piazzetta.

The Ducal Palace.—The original doge's palace, probably a small Ducal strongly fortified castle, was built early in the 9th century, soon palace. after the transference of the seat of government from the island of Malamocco to that of Rialto. In the early troublous period of Early

Venetian history the ducal palace was frequently destroyed and re-
history. | built. It was burnt in 976, and again in 1106; by 1116 it had been rebuilt. At the end of the 12th century Sebastiano Ziani (1173-79) restored and enlarged it. Of his work the only fragments now in existence are some richly sculptured bands in relief, built in at intervals along the 14th-century Rio fagade, by the south- east angle of the palace (see P on fig. 3). The present magnificent palace was a slow growth extending over nearly three centuries, the older building of Ziani being gradually pulled down as room was required for the new work. :

The existing palace was begun in 1300-1 by Doge Pietro Gradenigo,
Present | who built the facade (P on fig. 3) along the Rio, in which are in-
palace. | serted the 12th-century friezes of Ziani. About 1309 the arcaded F facade along the sea front was begun at the south-east angle by the Ponte della Paglia (N on fig. 3), and the design which was then adopted was accurately followed along the whole external facade, the building of which occupied about acentury anda half. Towards the end of the 14th century the facade had been carried along the Piazzetta side as far as the tenth capital (counting from the south-

4 At the end of the 18th century the rich treasures of St Mark's were sacked

by the French, and much was then dispersed and lost, including many antique engraved gems and cameos from the Pala d'Oro.

4 /

| Fagades.

;

west angle), which is carved with baskets of different kinds of fruit (R on fig. 3). At this point the work seems to have remained sta- tionary for some years, and a considerable portion of Ziani's palace was still in existence; this was called the old palace to distinguish it from the 14th-century new palace. The Venetian council had decreed that a fine of 1000 gold ducats should be imnposed on any of its members who proposed that

the remaining part of the old palace should be rebuilt ; in spite of this, in 1422, Doge Tomaso Mocenigo did propose and carried a resolution that the new palace should be extended over the site of Ziani's building. The doge paid the fine, and it was spent as a contribution towards the re-building, which was begun in 1424; in a few years the remainder of the external facade was completed up to the north-west angle, by the church of St Mark (S on fig. 3). The magnificent gateway which unites the palace to the church, called the Porta della Carta! (T on fig. 8), was added in 1439-42 ; it was the work of the sculptor Bartolomeo Bon and his son. Soon after the great balconied windows, which break the regularity of both fronts of the palace, were inserted in the npper story. The internal block in the great court joining the Porta della Carta to the Rio front was built by Doge Cristoforo Moro about 1462. In 1479 a fire consumed part of the 14th-century buildings along the Rio, and this part was then rebuilt, mostly between 1480 and 1550. On the southern part of this block are the arms of Doge Agostino Barbarigo, 1482 (U on fig. 3).

ae two main facades, those towards the sea and the Piazzetta, consist of a repetition of the same design, that which was begun in the early years of the 14th century. The name of the architect who began the work and thus fixed the design of the whole is not certainly known, but it must have been a man of an earlier genera- tion than that of Filippo Calendario, who is often stated to have been the chief architect of the older portion. Calendario was an accomplice in the conspiracy of Marino Faliero and was executed together with the doge in 1855. It appears probable that a Vene- tian architect and sculptor named Pictro Baseggio was the chief master-builder in the first half of the 14th century.? The design of these facades is very striking, and uulike that of any other building in the world. It consists of two stories with open colonnades, form- ——— ing a long loggia on the ground and first floors, with seventeen arches on the sea front (see fig. 4) GREAT COUNCIL and eighteen on the other facade. HALL. Above this is a lofty third story, pierced with a few large windows, with pointed arches once filled with tracery, which is now lost. The columns of the middle story support heavy tracery of the char- acteristic Venetian form, which was copied with more or less modification in a very large num- ber of private palaces built in Venice during the 14th and 15th de cole centuries. The ground story has pig, 4 section through sea-front of

boldly moulded pointed arches, ducal palace (see P, Q in fig. 3). the spandrels of which were in- Lower loggia towards sea. B. Upper tended to be decorated with geo- Jsgla, towards sen… D. Loss metrical patterns in thin pieccs apartmentsofdoge. F. Offices. G. of marble inlay. Only two of Modern level of pavement which mete were, however, completed. hides the old stylobate of three The main walls are wholly of ie i daa dls brick ; but none was left visible. The whole surface of the upper story is faced with small blocks of fine Istrian and red Verona marbles, arranged so as to make a large diaper pattern, with, in the centre of each lozenge, a cross made of verde antico and other costly marbles. The colonnades, string-courses, and other decorative features are built in solid Istrian stone. Very beautiful sculpture, executed with an ivory-like minuteness of finish, is used to decorate the whole building with wonderful profusion. At cach of the three free angles is a large group immediately over the lower column. At the south-east angle is the Drunkenuess of Noah, at the south-west the Fall of Man, and at the north-west the Judgment of Solomon. Over each at a much higher level is a colossal figure of an archangel,—Raphael, Michael, and Gabriel. The sculpture of all the capitals, especially of those on the thirty- SIX lower columns, is very beautiful and elaborate, a great variety of subjects being introduced among the decorative foliage, such as the virtues, vices, months of the year, age of man, occupations, sclences, animals, nations of the world, and the like.2 On the whole the sculpture of the 14th-century part is finer than that of the later

: So named because public decrees and other papers were affixed to it. The edict for further rebuilding in 1422 names Baseggio as being the original designer of the 14th-century portion of the palace. _ 3° An excellent account of these sculptured capitals is given by Mr Ruskin In his Stones of Venice, vol. ii. A treatise on the same subject was written by Didron and Burges, L'I conographie du Palais Ducale, Paris, 1857, but the authors failed to recognize the true dates of the different parts of the palace.

part near St Mark's. In many cases the 15th-century sculptors have simply copied the older capitals. A strong Florentine influence is apparent

in all this sculpture, a great part of which was probably the work of Florentines. Unhappily within recent years about half the old capitals have been removed and replaced by copies, which in some cases are not even accurate reproductions of the originals. A very wholesale and needless "restoration"' is still in progress, not only of the sculpture, but also of the columus, arches, and traceries, which in many cases have been wholly renewed without any excuse whatever.*

The great internal court is surrounded with arcading of very Internal similar style ; even in the 16th-century portion the same main out- court. line has been followed, though the detail is different. From the interior of the court access is given to the upper loggia by a very beautiful staircase of early Renaissance style, built in the middle of the 15th century by the Venetian architect Antonio Ricci. Two colossal statues of Neptune and Mars at the top of these stairs were executed by Fran. Sansovino in 1554 —hence the name 'giants' staircase"; they are very clumsy and badly designed. Owing to a fire which gutted a great part of the palace in 1574, the in- ternal appearance of the rooms was completely changed, and the fine series of early Paduan and Venetian paintings which decorated the walls of the chief rooms was lost.> At present the magnificent council chambers for the different legislative bodies of the Venetian republic and the state apartments of the doges are richly decor- ated with gilt carving and panelling in the style of the Later Renais- sance. On the walls of the chief council chambers are a magnificent series of oil paintings by Tintoretto and other less able Venetians, — among them Tintoretto's masterpiece—Bacchus and Ariadne— and his enormons picture of Paradise, the largest oil painting in the world. All have suffered much from restoration. Some of the scenes of important Veuetian naval victories are of great historical interest, though of little merit as works of art.

In the 16th century the state prisons, which till then were on State the ground floor of the ducal palace, were removed to a new building prisons. on the opposite side of the narrow canal on the east of the Rio del Palazzo (see fig. 3). A bridge, usually known as the Bridge of Sighs, was built to connect the two buildings. This bridge and the new prisons ® were designed by a Venetian, who also built the Rialto bridge in 1588-91, and hence was nicknamed Antonio da Ponte.

Owing to the raising of the level of the Piazzetta and the Riva degli Schiavoni, the ducal palace has lost its stylobate, consisting of three steps, the level of the pavement outside being now the same as that of the lower loggia of the palace ; and thus a serious injury has been done to the architectural beauty of the facades (see figs. 1 and 4). As the columns of the lower story have no bases, a stylobate is specially needed. we

By the side of the sea in the Piazzetta, on to which the west Piazzetta facade of the ducal palace faces, stand two ancient columns of columns, Egyptian granite, one red and the other grey (see M, fig. 3). These great monoliths were brought as trophies to Venice by Doge Domenico Michieli in 1126, after his victories in Syria. In 1180 they were set up with their present fine capitals and bases by a Lombard engineer, Niccolo de' Barattieri. The grey column is surmounted by a fine bronze lion? of Byzantine style, cast in Venice for Doge Ziani about 1178; and in 13829 a inarble statue of St Theodore, standing upon a crocodile, was placed on the other column.$

The great campanile (see A, fig. 3) of St Mark in the square at the Campa- west of the church was founded about 900 by Doge Pietro Tribuno nile, and finished in 1181 or soon after. It is a very massive square tower of brick, 325 feet high by 42 square, on a stone base, simply decorated with slight pilasters. The ascent to the top is made bya series of inclined planes instead of stairs. The upper part, an open lantern with a pyramidal roof, was added in the 16th century ; on the apex is a fine colossal statue of an angel, formed of plates of gilt bronze on a wooden core,—a work of the end of the 15th century.

Other Churches.—The ancient cathedral church of S. Pietro di Cathe- Castello was wholly rebuilt during the latter part of the 16th ccn- dral tury, probably from designs by Palladio, It is a well-proportioned church. but uninteresting structure of the usual Pseudo-Classical Palladian style; it is now seldom used.

After St Mark's the two finest churches in Venice are those of Churches the Dominican and Franciscan friars, SS. Giovanni e Paolo and S. of SS. Maria Gloriosa dei Frari. Both are built on the same plan as that Giovanni of other important friars' churches, such as S, Maria Novella

and e Paolo S. Croce in Florence, with a large nave, aisles, transepts, and two and the

—— Frari.

4 According to Zanotti, the capital at the north-west angle was signed “ Duo Soci Florentini”’; but this inscription is not now visible.

5 Considerable remains of these paintings by Altichiero and other 15th-cen- tury masters still exist, though completely hidden by the later pictures on canvas. Meo

6 Many distinguished prisoners have suffered from violent heat in the piombt or roof cells, and from damp and cold in the pozzi or cellars, of these prisons.

7 This lion, carried off to Paris, together with the four bronze horses and other Venetian spoils, by Napoleon I., was sent back ina very fragmentary con- dition; the lion’s tail, the wings, and the book under its paws were added after its return to Venice in 1816. Originally the wings were much larger, and there was no book. 8 See Ruskin, St Mark’s Rest, chap. il.

or more chapels opening from the east of each transept. In the Venetian examples the choir and all the transept ehapels have apsidal terminations. Both churches are built of brick, with rich marble traceried windows, and simple vaulting throughout. The details of the interior are plain, but the scale is large and the general design very noble and effective, showing a strong infusion of northern Gothie influence, which is one of the characteristics of the friars’ churches throughout Italy. The Dominican church of SS. Giovanni e Paolo was used as the chief burial place of the doges and other chief members of the Venetian republic ;1 it was built about the middle of the 13th century. There is no foundation for Vasari’s statement that Niccola Pisano was the architect of this or of any other building in Venice, although the influence of the Pisano school of

sculpture was certainly very strong during the 14th cen- tury. The magnificent collection of tombs in this ehurch, of all dates from the 13th century downwards, is one of the finest in the world. Some of the recumbent effigies of the 14th century, and the reliefs and statuettes on the sarcophagi, are works of very great beauty, distinctly Florentine in character. The later monuments of the 16th and 17th centuries are in many cases very large, costly, and pretentious, of the worst possible taste, in striking contrast to the quiet simplicity of the 14th-century tombs. A remarkable feature in the Franciscan ehureh is its fine marble rood-screen of the 14th century, one of the very few which still exist in Italy; it is surmounted by two ambones or pulpits. The choir stalls, which extend rather more than one bay westwards of the erossing, are richly decorated with reliefs and tarsia work, executed in the later years of the 15th century. This church is the largest in Venice, even exceeding St Mark's in size ; it also contains a number of fine tombs, some of them with large equestrian statues of Venetian generals. The tomb of Doge Francesco Dandolo in this church, now mutilated and removed from its place, is a very noble example of 14th-century sculpture. The sacristy, on the south of the south transept, still possesses over its altar one of Giovanni Bellini's finest pictures, signed and dated 1485, representing the Madonna En- throned between Standing Figures of Saints, a picture of most ex- traordinary beauty and perfect preservation, in its original riehly carved retable-frame.? This church, though very similar in style, was built about half a century later than that of the Dominicans, and was not completed till after 1300.

Church The influence of the chief orders of friars in the style of ecclesi-

of 8.Stef- astical architecture is strongly shown in many other ehurehes, such

ano, &c. as that of S. Stefano, especially in the frequent use of the apse as a termination both for ehoirs and side ehapels. This church, built about 1360 by a monastery of Austin friars, has a rich west front, decorated with very delicate terra-cotta ornaments. 'The eastern apse extends over a small canal and is supported on a wide bridge- like arch. Of the same type are the church of 8. Gregorio and that of S. Maria della Carita, both now

desecrated. S. Gregorio has a very beautiful cloister, dated 1342, the columus of which support, not a series of arches, but flat wooden lintels. On the capital of each columu rests a moulded wooden corbel to diminish the bear- ing of the lintel ; this is a very characteristic Venetian mode of con- struction, used, not only for cloisters, but also for ground floors of houses, upper loggias, and other places, especially during the 14th and 15th centuries.4

8. Gia- One of the most interesting early ehurches is that of 8. Giacomo

como _—dall' Orio, built in the early part of the 13th ceutury, with a com-

dal!' plicated many-eolumned plan, the aisles being carried along the

Orio. transepts ag well as the nave. The roof isa very good example of the wooden coved type, of which the finest are at VERONA (q.v.). One of the columns in the south transept is a monolith of the precious verde antico, of wonderful size and beauty, probably brought from some Byzantine church.

8. Maria _ Venice contains some very beautiful ecclesiastical] architecture of

dei Mir- the Early Renaissance, about 1450 to 1500, with very delicate and acoli. refined detail, such as was designed by Fra Giocondo of Verona and various members of the Venetian Lombardo family. The most perfect example of this style is the little ehurch of §. Maria dei Miracoli, so called because it was built to contain a miraculous picture of the Madonna. Very rich and varied marbles were used in its construction, and it is lavishly decorated with seulpture of wonderful refinement and beauty of detail ; it was built in 1481-89 from the designs of Pietro Lombardo. The court of the guild of St John the Evangelist is another fine example of the same style LaterRe- In the 16th eentury and even later some very stately churches naissance of the Later Renaissance style were built in Venice by Jaeopo churches. Sansovino, Andrea Palladio, and their school. One of Sansovino's® best works, the church of S. Geminiano, was destroyed at the 1 Andrea Dandolo, whose tomb is in the baptistery, date

1355, was th $ bu Meda i St Mark's, which up to that time had been the usual — It was founded about 1234, but not i 3 Mr Ruskin, Shrine of the Slaves, p. eae on of fie ae heey

in the world, the second being another Madouna b Gian. Bellini i

of 8. Zaccaria in Venice. =pid iy pring gia 4 A fine loggia of this class exists in the ducal palace. o ening on

loggia of the Piazzetta facade. P ca Ait sane el ® For others of his works in Venice, see SANSOVINO.

VENICE

-

[ART,

beginning of the 19th century in order to complete the west side of the square of St Mark (see fig. 3). The large church of S. Giorgio Maggiore, on an island opposite the ducal palace, was built by Palladio, and is a good example of the faults and merits of his style. S. Maria della Salute, built by Baldassare Longhena in 1632, as a thank-offering of the Venetian senate for the cessation of the great plague in 1630, is one of the most eonspicuons ehurches in Venice owing to its magnificent site near the mouth of the Grand Canal. Though dull and heavy in detail, it has a well-designed dome, and the general mass of the building is very skilfully arranged. Most of the 17th and 18th century churches in Venice are in the worst possible taste, and extravagantly pretentious in style. A large number still possess fine campauili,—lofty square brick towers, in general form not unlike the 12th-century campanili of Rome. These in Venice range from the 11th to the 16th century, those of the 14th century being specially beautiful.

Palaces.—In the beauty and interest of its domestic architecture Palaces, Venice ranks before any other city in the world. Fine examples of all dates from the 12th eentury downwards still exist, and many even of the earlier palaces are still externally in a very perfect state of preservation. The most

notable specimens of 12th-century 12thcen) Byzantine palaces are those of Loredano (now municipal offices), tury By Farsetti, and Da Mosto, all on the Grand Canal. The Jondaco of zantine © the Turks (now the Correr Museum) was once the finest of this date, palaces. but it has been ruined first by neglect and then by wholesale restora- tion. The general design of these Byzantine palaces appears to have been very similar in all cases; fig. 5 shows a typical example.

TOWER. ® e

TOWER. oe @ el CANAL. | CANAL. J.HM,

Fic. 5.—Typical facade and plan of a 12th-century Byzantine palace, with a tower at each end. No perfect example now exists, owing to the rebuilding of the upper stories with central part equal in height to the ends; but in many cases traces of this arrangement can be distinguished.7

The canal facade usually had a tower at each end, with a row of arches in the centre opening into a long vestibule or porch, behind which was a large hall. Along the first floor a long range of window arches extended from end to end, forming a continuous arcade ; in the fondaco of the Turks this upper range consisted of no less than twenty-six arches. Very beautiful sculpture was used to decorate all these arches, which were of stilted semicircular form, and also the capitals on which they rested. Mr Ruskin has shown how these round arehes developed into other forms, first a simple pointed ogee, and then a cusped ogee of several different varieties.

In the 13th eentury the introduction of window – tracery led Venetia gradually to the development of a special form of architecture, Gothic usually called Venetian Gothie, which was unrivalled for combined palaces. magnificence of material and design. The design of about the year 1300 adopted for the facade of the ducal palace had a very exten- sive and prolonged influence on the private palaces of Venice. A very large number of these, built in the 14th and first half of the 15th century, still exist and are among the most beautiful and well-preserved examples of medizval architecture which can any- where be seen. The climax of this magnificent style was towards the end of the 14th century, to which date

belongs the wonderful Ca' d'Oro or "golden house," as it is usually called, from the pro- fusion of gilding which once eovered its sculptures and mouldings.

6 A very beautiful fragment of an early palace in the Rio Foscari has been we Mlustrated by Mr Ruskin in his pivie ta Stones of Venice, 1886. Mr Ruskin has shown (in Stones of Venice, vol. ii.) that in these Byzantine palaces there are subtle variations in the width of the arches, forming a regular gradation of sizes, hardly perceptible without actual measurement,

art.] VENICE 155

No words can describe the magnificence of this palace on the Grand Canal, its whole fagade faced with the most costly variegated Oriental marbles, once picked out with gold, vermilion, and ultra- marine, the walls pierced with elaborate traceried windows and enriched with bands and panels of delicate carving,—in combined richness of form and wealth of colour giving an effect of almost dazzling splendour.!

*Pew wT OK fi. i ZAIN *

YING

Fic. 6.—Ca' d'Oro, as originally built.

Some of the 15th-century palaces of Early Renaissance or, as Mr Ruskin calls it, Giocondesque style are scarcely inferior in beauty to those of the Gothic period. Fra Giocondo, the Lombardi, and other architects of this era (1460-1510) still used with great skill and effect the rich Oriental marbles, which were wholly neglected by the architects of the Pseudo-Classic revival. On the Grand Canal the Corner-Spinelli, Trevisan, and Dario Palaces are specially beauti- ful examples of the style; the richest of all is, however, the small Guisetti Palace in the narrow Rio della Fava, faced with purple Phrygian pavonazzetto and other coloured marbles, and lavishly decorated with delicately sculptured pilasters, friezes, and corbels of the most exquisite design and workmanship. This architectural gem is now quite neglected, and used as a mere warehouse.

*Among the 16th-century palaces of later style are many of great size and magnificence, though designed in a somewhat dull and scholastic fashion. The influence of these Venetian buildings on * the 19th-century architecture of Europe generally has been very great. ,**

In most of the Venetian palaces of the Later Renaissance, such as the magnificent Grimani Palace by Sammichele, and in the library of St Mark by Sansovino, the main motive of the facade is taken from the arcading with entablature over engaged columns which was universally used for the theatres and amphitheatres of ancient Rome. In many cases the entire facade of the palace consisted of a series of columns, arches, and cornices, so that no plain wall surface was left at any part of the front, and the whole effect is too laboured and restless, and far less pleasing than the rather earlier examples of the same style, such as the Vendramini Palace on the Grand Canal and the Camerlenghi near the Rialto bridge, finished in 1525, in which some Gothic feeling still survives. One of the noblest palaces of the Later Renaissance is that of Pesaro, on the Grand Canal, built by Longhena, one of the chief Venetian architects of the 17th century, who in this case has followed the style of Sanso- vino or other architects of the previous century, using the Colosseum areade for the two upper stories. In general mass and in the pro- portions of the parts this palace is a work of great merit, far superior to the usually degraded style of the 17th century.

Other Public Buildings.—Much of the splendour of Venice in her days of greatest glory was due to the wealth and religious zeal of the various trade guilds or confraternities, called sewole by the Venetians. The members of each guild were united for both secu- lar and religious purposes ; their meeting places and chapels were often buildings of the greatest architectural magnificence, and were decorated with sculpture and painting by the chief artists of the

1 Signor Giacomo Boni. has given, in Proc. Inst. Brit. Arch. for February 188 i, 2 very interesting account of the decorations of this palace, and of the addition of its elaborate cornice (now destroyed) in 1424 by Bart. Bon, who ag paid 210 gold ducats for his work.

In London the facades of many of the principal public buildings have been copied with but little alteration from Venetian originals, as, ¢.g., the Army and Navy Club in Pall Mall froin Jac. Sansovino's Cornaro Palace (1532), with the omission of the middle story, and the Piccadilly School of Mines from the inner court of the doge's palace.

time. The scwola of St Mark, near the great Dominiean chureh, has a magnificent facade designed in 1485 by Pietro Lombardo. A beautiful series of pictures \ 4

by Vittore Carpaccio was painted for the Slavonian guild, and still exists in their chapel dedicated to St George and St Tryphonius. The scuola of St Rocco pos- sesses a wonderful collection of noble pictures by Tinto- retto, and the other chief guilds, such as those of St Ursula, Della Misericordia, Della Carita, and St John the Evangelist, possessed very beautiful and richly decorated buildings. st Tacha: Z

*One of the most import- ne a Arsenal, ant public buildings of Venice was the arsenal,? including large docks and yards for building ships (see p. 148, above). The en- trance gateway is an ela- t : * borate work, built in 1460 Fic. 7.—The library of St Mark's, begun in by the Lombardi; and in entail front of it stand four ancient marble lions, brought as trophies from the Pireus in 1687.4 The arsenal is still an important naval depét, and contains a museum of historically interesting objects.*

A stately series of public buildings surrounds the square of St Public Mark (see fig. 3). The north side is occupied by the old palace build- of the procurators, designed by Bart. Bon towards the end of the ings 15th century. Near it to the east stands an elaborate clock-tower round St built by Pietro Lombardo in 1496. On the south of the square Mark's is the newer palace of the procurators, designed in 1584 by Scamozzi, Square. now used as part of the royal palace. The west end is occupied by an extension of the public offiees built by Napoleon J. in 1805-10, partly over the site of the church of S. Geminiano. The adjoining Piazzetta is bounded on the east by the ducal palace and on the west by the magnificent library® of St Mark, built by Jacopo Sanso- vino in 1536. The mint oecupies part of the same block. The facade of the library is shown in fig. 7.

In front of the west facade of St Mark's are three large flagstaffs, originally used to display the gorgeous silk and gold banners of the subject kingdoms of the Morea, Cyprus, and Candia. Their elabo- rate bronze sockets were cast in 1505 by the Venetian sculptor, Alessandro Leopardi, who has inserted fine medallion portraits of the reigning doge Lorenzo Loredano.

The academy of fine arts, now in the Della Carita guild-house, Mu-

contaims a very large and valuable collection of pictures of the senms Venetian school. With one exception, Carlo Crivelli, all the chief and gal- Venetians are well represented here, and in many cases far better leries. than in any other collection in the world. Venetian art, in fact, can only be completely studied in Venice. The academy is very rich in elaborately carved retables of the early Venetian painters, works of great decorative splendour, though not equal in drawing or composition to the work of the 14th and early 15th century painters of Florence or Siena. The Vivarini family, the Bellini, with Carpaccio and others of the Bellini school, Cima da Conegliano, Titian, Tintoretto, and Paul Veronese arc all represented by a large number of their finest works. The Correr Museum, now moved from the Correr palace to the fondaco of the Turks, is the property of the city. It contains some fine Venetian pictures, and an inter- esting collection of early majolica and other medieval works of art. The Giovanelli Palace in the Rio S. Felice possesses a fine specimen of Giorgione, the rarest of Venctian masters: it is a noble woody landscape with two figures in the foreground. The portraits by Titian and Tintoretto in the same collection are very fine.

The churches of Venice are still marvellously rich in pictures by the chief Venetian painters of all dates. Almost every church con- tains some notable painting ; and some of them, such as S. Sebas- tiano, 8S. Giovanni in Bragora, and S. Giorgio Maggiore, possess a very great number of important works. Many private palaces con- tain fine collections of pictures ; but great numbers of these were sold to foreign purchasers during the 19th century.

Painting. For an account of Venetian painting the reader is referred to Painting. the separate articles on the various painters and to ScHOOLS

OF PAINTING.

ONS ee eee

3 Dante, Infer., xxi. 7-15, describes the various operations in the arsenal at Venice.

4 On the largest of these lions is cut a runie inscription recording a success- ful attack on the Pireus in the 11th century by a party of Norse warriors of the Varangian guard, under Harold Hardrada, who afterwards (in 1047) became king of Norway (see Arch. Journ., xvi. pp. 188-192). ;

5 This library contains about 65,000 volumes, with 5000 MSS., among which are some very valuable and artistically magnificent codices.

Sculp- ture.

Metal- work,

156

Sculpture.

Till the 14th ceutury Venice continued to adhere to the old Byzantine style of sculpture! which, though often delicate in exe- cution and decorative in effect, slowly lost spirit and vigour, and from continually copying older forms gradually degenerated into a dull and mechanical formalism. Early in that century the influ- ence of Niccola Pisano and his school began to awaken a new artistic life among the archaistic sculptors of Venice ; but the progress of this renaissance was very slow, and in much of the Venetian sculp- ture the degenerate Byzantine formalism survived till nearly the close of the 14th eentury. Other works of the same period were executed with much of the grace and almost realistic beauty for which the eontemporary Florentines were so famous, and thus one may see in Venice, and in Venice only, two reliefs of the same date of which one is several centuries earlier in style than the other. This want of originality was probably partly caused by the immense quantity of older sculptured*

reliefs which was imported to adorn the walls of the churches. In the early part of the 14th century Florentine influence rapidly gained ground, and many sculptors from Florence came to work on the richly carved capitals of the ducal palace and other places, and espeeially produced a large number of very beautiful tombs with recumbent effigies. One very graceful type, the general motive of which was first used by Arnolfo del Cambio (see ORVIETO), was frequently repeated: at the head and foot of the effigy an angel is represented drawing a curtain so as to expose the figure of the dead man.3 The sarcophagus, on whieh the effigy lies, has reliefs of the Virgin and the Angel of the Annunciation, with the Crucifixion or some other sacred subject be- tween. In later times these subjects were usually replaced by allegorical figures of the virtues, and the simple curtain drawn by angels gradually became a large tent-like canopy, of rather clumsy and tasteless form. In most churches the sculptured decoration, apart from that on the tombs, was concentrated on the west facade, the tympanum of the central doorway being often filled with a very fine relief, such as that from the church of the guild Della Miseri- cordia, now in the South Kensington Museum.

In domestic architecture sculpture was but little used after the Byzantine period, the splendour of the facades depending mostly on their rich coloured marbles, and on moulded tracery and string- courses. Nevertheless, even as late as the 15th century it was not uncommon to insert 11th or 12th century pieces of sculpture in hew work ; many examples of this practice are still to be seen. The sculpture of the Early Renaissance is very abundant and extremely delicate and refined, especially that of the Giocondo and Lombardi schools; 8. Maria dei Miracoli contains some of the most beauti- ful examples.

Though not the work of a Venetian, Venice possesses what is perhaps the most magnificent equestrian statue in the world, the colossal bronze portrait of the Venetian commander-in-chief, Barto- lomeo Colleoni (figured in vol. xxi. p. 568, fig. 18),5 which stands in the square at the west end of SS. Giovanni e Paolo. It was modelled by the Florentine VERRoccHIO (q.v.), and was cast after his death by Alessandro Leopardi, who also designed the pedestal ; the whole was completed in 1495.

With the later development of the Renaissance, sculpture rapidly declined ; in domestic arehitecture it was but little used, except for the deep frieze under the top cornice, and with the Palladian school it became still rarer, and very mechanical in style. In the 17th century it was again used in the most lavish way as archi- tectural decoration, but was coarse in execution and violently awkward in outline. As Venice in her best days had produced some of the finest decorative sculpture in the world, so in her ex- treme decadence. an almost unequalled depth of degradation was reached, and this continued till the fall of the republic. The Venetian sculptor Canova was, on the whole, superior to his immediate predecessors, and was one of the leaders of the revival of classic sculpture which flourished during the first half of the 19th century.

Minor Arts.

During the early part of the medieval period the Venetians had no great skill in metal-work. Some of the bronze doors in the west fagade of St Mark's are importations from Byzantium. That on the right, whieh has rude figures of saints inlaid in silver, was brought to Venice in 1204; another with a Latin inscription appears to be native work of about the year 1112; both are very rude in design and execution. The open bronze grills of the west atrium doorways, whieh are signed as the work of a Venetian goldsmith Bertuccius, in 1800, show no increase of technical skill. Nor was the silver-work any better: the large silver rood in St Mark's is a

1 Some of the early doges are buried in seul tured sa i 5 6th centuries brought from elsewhere. 4 eee OnrERC ce

2 As, for example, the reliefs over the doorwa of the cloi Della Carita, both of the 14th century. J eer OTAU CREDA go The tomb of Andrea Dandolo in St Mark's (c. 1350) is one of the earliest in re this motive is used. : he 14th-century tomb of the Florentine ambassador Dueci i i is the first in Venice which has representations of the meee eres bert 5 See Vasari's Life of Verrocchio.

VENICE

[ART,

very coarse piece of work. The silver altar frontals from the old cathedral, now in St Mark's, with sacred subjects and figures of saints repoussé in each panel, made in the 14th century, are no less rude in design and feeble in execution. As in the case of marble sculp- ture, Venice was chiefly dependent on foreign importations for its rich stores of treasures in the precious metals. In the latter part of the 15th century Venetian skill in bronze-work had greatly in- creased. Leopardi, who cast Verrocchio's statue of Colleoni, was a bronze-worker of great eminence ; and in the following century the bronze doors and the font eover® in St Mark's by Jacopo Sansovino are models of technical excellence, though showing some decadence of taste in their design. The great bronze lion on the west fagade of St Mark's, cast by Gaetano Ferrari in the first half of the 19th century, is a really fine work. A great deal of beauti- ful metal-work, especially in copper and bronze, such as large salvers, ewers, and the like, was made during the 15th and 16th centuries, partly by Moslem workmen and partly by native Vene- tians who adopted Oriental designs. A large colony of Moslem craftsmen seem to have settled in Venice, and had much influence on the designs used in many of the minor arts.

Moslem influence was especially strong in the case of woven Textiles

stuffs, for which Venice became very celebrated in the 15th century. Its damasks and other silk stuffs with patterns of extraordinary beauty surpassed in variety and splendour those of the other chief centres of silk weaving, such as Florence and Genoa. Fig. 7 in the article TEXTILES (vol. xxiii. p. 209) gives a beautiful example of 15th-century Venetian silk designed under Oriental influence, In addition to the native stuffs, an immense quantity of costly Oriental carpets, wall-hangings, and other textiles was imported into Venice, partly for its own use, and partly for export throughout western Europe. Thus in wealth of gorgeous stuffs and embroideries Venice surpassed all other cities, and on occasions of festivals or pageants the baleonies, the bridges, the boats, and even the facades of the houses were hung with rich Eastern carpets or patterned textiles in

gold and coloured silk. The glass manufactory of MuRANO (¢.1.), @lass-a smal] island about 14 miles to the north of Venice, was a great w.

source of revenue to the republic ; the glass-workers enjoyed special privileges and great pains were taken to preserve the secrets of the craft. Glass drinking cups and ornamental vessels, some decorated with enamel painting, and "silvered" mirrors were produced in great quantities from the 14th century downwards, and exported to other European countries, where they were sold for high prices. Much beautiful glass-work is still produced in Murano, but the workmen have lost all power of origina] design, and do little but copy the fornis invented in the 15th or 16th century. Like many other arts in Venice, that of glass-making appears to have been imported from Moslem countries, and the influence of Oriental design can be traced in much of the Venetian glass. The art of making stained glass windows was not practised by the Venetians ; almost the only fine glass in Venice is that in a south transept window in the Dominican church, which, though designed by able Venetian painters, is obviously the work of foreigners.

Literature.—(1) General Works.—Sabellieus, De Venetse Urbis Situ, Venice, 1492; Bembo, Hist. Venetw, 1551; Sansovino, Venezia Descritta, Venice, 1604; Daru, Hist. de Ven., Brussels, 1838 ; Galliciolli, Delle Mem. Ven., Venice, 1795; Michieli, Origine delle Feste Ven., Milan, 1829; Zendrini, Le Isole di Ven., Venice, 1829 ; Id., Mem. Stor. sullo Stato delle Lagune, Venice, 1811 ; Fougasses, Generall Historie of the Magnificent State of Venice (Englished by W. Shute), London, 1612; Mutinelli, Annali Urbani di Venezia, Venice, 1841; Cieogna, Inscrizioni Veneziane, Venice, 1824; Filiasi, Memorie Storiche dei Veneti, Padua, 1811; Carrer, Venezia e la sua Storia, Venice, 1838; St Didier, La Ville et la République de Venise, Paris, 1858; Yriarte, Histoire de Venise, Paris, 1878 (Eng. ed., 1880); Anon., Assedio di Venezia nel 1849, Venice, 1855: Foscarini, Letteratura Veneziana, and its continuation by Moschini, Lett. Ven. dal Secolo 18vo, Venice, 1806-8 ; Corner, Notizie Storiche delle Chiese di Venezia, Padua, 1758; Hardy, Report on the Documents in the Archives of Venice, London, 1866; Temanza, Antica Pianta di Venezia, Venice, 1780. Much valuable matter has been published in the Archivio Veneto, which is still in progress. (2) Architecture, Painting, and Sculpture.—

Ruskin, Stones of Venice, reprint 1886, and St Mark's Rest, 1880; Selvatico, Architettura e Scultura in Venezia, 1847; Cicognara, Fabbriche di Venezia, 1815-20; Id., Monumenti di Venezia, 1838-40; Cadorin, Pareri di 15 Architetti, Venice, 1838 ; Diedo and Zanotto, Monumenti di Venezia, Milan, 18389; Fontana, Fabbriche di Venezia ; Temanza, Vite degli Scultori Veneziani, 1778; Perkins, Italian Sculpture, London, 1883, pp. 195-217; Ridolfi, Maraviglie dell' Arte Ven., 1648; Zanetti, Pittura Veneziana, 1771; Boschini, La Carte det Navegar Pittoresco, Venice, 1660, a curious poem in the Venetian dialect about the pictures and painters of Venice. (8) Ducal Palace.—Sansovino, Lettera in- torno al Pal. Ducale, printed in 1829; Bettio, Lettera Discorsiva del Pal. Ducale, Venice, 1837; Zanotto, Il Palazzo Ducale, Venice, 1853-58, a fine well-illustrated work ; Ruskin, op. cit.: Burges and Didron, Iconographie des Chapitaux dw Palais Ducal & Venise, Paris, 1857. (4) St Mark's Basilica. —Meschinello, La Chiesa di S. Marco, 1830 ; Anou., L' Augusta Ducale Basilica, Venice, 1761, usually called " Del Foscarini" from its dedication ; Richter, " Sculpture of St Mark's," in Macmillan's Magazine, June 1880; Kreutz and Ongania, La Basilica di 8. Marco, 1881-86, one of the most magnificent and costly works ever published, consisting of a large series of photographs and chromo-lithographs ; Il Tesoro di S. Marco, 1885, a set of fine chromo-lithographs of the gold, silver, enamel, crystal, and jewelled treasures of St Mark's, also published by Ongania; anc Docwmenti per la Storia della Bas. di S. Marco, IX.-XVTIT, Sec., 1885, a valuable collection of hitherto unpublished MSS. Views of Venice.— Thirty-eight engrav- ings from pictures by Canaletto, entitled Urbis Venetiarum Prospectus, Venice, 1735-51, and its companion, Marieschi, Pros. Urbis Ven., 1743; Carlevariis, Fabriche e Vedute di Ven., 1703; Price, Views of Ven., London, 1848.

6 This is usually attributed to Sansovino ; but, according to Moschini, a docu-

ment among the archives of St Mark's records that it was made by Desiderio of Florence and Tiziano of Padua.

orking) ;

number of 18th-century pictures by the Canaletti and by Guardi represent eanal views. The fine woodcut bird's-eye view of the city in 1497, engraved by Jacobo de' Barbari, is about to be published in facsimile with descriptive text by Giacomo Boni.

Part IJ].—Mopern City.

The modern city stands on 117 islands, separated by 150 canals (rio) and united by 380 bridges; all the main traffic passes along the canals. The usual range of tide-level is about 20 inches; but under exceptional circumstances there is a difference of nearly 6

e

v

RO AS, Ty, oo, NES

c

_ =

lo Pai 02 les FY,

$

VEN—VEN

h G S.Malya Gleriosz) rc i dei ers we " RQ \ \ YY rime emG? a % "ies. z ON = taf s xt, j =) >" ee ;

——

lata della alute

fp eee. ©

157

fect between lowest and highest water. The name "gondola" given to the passenger boats does not occur earlier than the 14th century. As shown in Carpaccio's and Gentile Bellini's pictures (¢. 1500), the goudola of that date was quite unlike the present boat with its heavy black cabin aud absence of any colouring: the older form had au awning of rich stuffs or gold embroideries, supported on a light arched framework open at both ends.1 The peculiar method of rowing with one oar at the stern is the same now as it was in the 15th century, and probably much earlier. Since 1880 "omnibus" steamers have been introduced on the Grand Canal, which has also

Map of the islands of Venice.

been disfigured in the 19th century by the addition of two hideous iron bridges, over one of which passes the railway that connects Venice with the mainland. Before the Venetian republic was sup- pressed by Napoleon I. the population amounted to nearly 200,000 ; in 1830 it had sunk to about 100,000; but since then it has in- ereased, and in 1881 amounted to 132,826 (commune 145,637). The city has grown rapidly in prosperity since its restoration to the kingdom of Italy, and it is now second only to Trieste among the seaports of the Adriatic. The climate is nild but some- what rainy, owing to the water-surrounded site. The principal

VENLO, a frontier town of Holland, in the province of Limburg, on the right bank of the Meuse (here crossed by a bridge), is an important railway junction ; Cologne lies 60 miles to the south-east and Maestricht 43 miles to the south-west. The population, which is somewhat closely packed, was 8494 in 1876 and 10,550 in 1887. None of the public buildings has any special interest attaching to it, The leading industries are distilling, brewing, tanning, spinning, needle-making, and tobacco manufacture. There is considerable trade by river with Rotterdam. Venlo was at one time a place of strength, but the fortifications were dismantled in 1868.

VENTILATION is the process of changing the air of rooms and other closed places so that a certain standard of purity may be preserved notwithstanding the vitiation which the air undergoes from the breath of inhabitants,

manufactures of the city remain what they were in the Middle Ages, namely, gold and silver work, glass, and velvet and silk, to which must now be added cotton, in all of which, as well as in grain, oils, wine and spirits, fruits, drugs, fish, and hides and leather an active trade is carried on. In 1886 the total value of the exports from Venice to foreign countries amounted to £7,239,479 and that of the imports to £8,788,012. During the same year there entered 2595 vessels of 714,642 tons (Italian 1565 vessels of 222,217 tons) and cleared 2597 of 724,740 tons (Italian 1565 vessels of 227,021 tons). (J. H. M.)

the products of combustion of illuminating agents, and other causes. In estimating the amount of air to be supplied, account must be taken of the standard of purity which is aimed at and of the rate at which vitiation occurs.

*Of the various impurities that are found in the air of Carbonic inhabited rooms carbonic acid forms the most ready index acid in The open air of London and other *"*

of the ventilation. large inland towns contains about four parts by volume of this gas in 10,000 of air. In the country and in towns near the sea two or three and a half parts in 10,000 is a more usual proportion. Authorities on ventilation usually take four parts in 10,000 as the standard for pure air, and use the excess over that quantity in estimating the adequacy of the air supply. But they differ as to the proportion

1 The use of black was made compulsory by a sumptuary edict ot the great council in the 16th century.

to which the carbonic acid may be allowed to rise in good Standard ventilation. It is generally admitted that the air in which of people dwell and sleep should not under any circumstances

Gas lights add to the vitiation of the air of rooms at a Vitiation rate which may be roughly estimated by treating one by burn- cubic foot of gas burnt per hour as nearly equivalent to 8 8.

purity.

be allowed to contain more than ten parts in 10,000. This has been accepted as the permissible proportion by Car- nelley, Haldane, and Anderson, after an extensive examin- ation of the air of middle and lower class dwellings.! De

one adult person, so far as the production of carbonic acid is concerned. Thus an ordinary burner, giving a light of about twenty candles and burning four cubic feet of gas per hour, uses the air of three or four men.

Chaumont, judging by the rough and unsatisfactory test The purity of the air of a room depends, of course, to Cubic afforded by the sense of smell, concluded that the air of a room ceased to be good when it contained eight volumes of

carbonic acid in 10,000 of air,? and recommends that six

the number of inmates. The influence of capacity is, ft00ms however, often overrated. Even when the allowance of .

Rate of con- sump- tion of air.

parts in 10,000 be taken as the maximum permissible in good ventilation. Parkes, in his Manual of Hygiene, quotes observations which point to an equally exacting standard as desirable.

The rate at which an adult respires carbonic acid varies widely with his condition of repose, being least in sleep, greater in waking rest, and very much greater in violent exercise. Asa basis on which to calculate the air necessary for proper ventilation we may take the production of carbonic acid by an adult as 0°6 cubic feet per hour.? Hence he will produce per hour, in 6000 cubic feet of air, a pollution amounting to one part of carbonic acid in 10,000 of air. If the excess of carbonic acid were to be

kept down to this figure (1 in 10,000), it would be necessary to supply 6000 cubic feet of fresh air per hour ; if the permissible excess be two parts in 10,000, half this supply of fresh air will suffice; and so on. We therefore have the following relation between (1) the quantity of air supplied per person per hour, (2) the excess of carbonic acid which results, and (3) the total quantity of carbonic acid present, on the assumption that the fresh air that is admitted contains four parts by volume in 10,000 :—

some extent, on the proportion of its cubic capacity to ota

space is very liberal, if no fresh air be supplied, the atmo- sphere of a room quickly falls below the standard of purity specified above ; on the other hand, the space per inmate may be almost indefinitely reduced if sufficient means are provided for systematic ventilation. Large rooms are good, chiefly because of their action as reservoirs of air in those cases (too common in practice) where no sufficient provision is made for continuous ventilation, and where the air is changed mainly by intermittent ventilation, such as occurs when doors or windows are opened. It must be borne in mind, too, that no room is hermetically sealed. In the absence of proper inlets and outlets casual ventilation goes on through every chink and cranny, and even by diffusion through the plaster of the walls. The ventilation given in this way is generally most inade- quate ; but a large room has at least the advantage over a small one that it offers more chances for the casual en- trance of fresh air, as well as a larger wall-surface through which diffusion may occur. It has also the advantage that a greater volume of air may more easily be passed through it than through a small room in a given time, without causing disagreeable draughts. A general idea

mf mate "| of the cubic capacity per inmate, allowed by law or by Air supplied per Carbonic Acid g 3 5 : : Adult per Hour, | (Parts by Volume in 10,000). custom 1n certain cases, is given in the table below :-— | Excess due to Total ER Me te 2. cole wedbsetass eck 1200 cubic feet (and upwards).] Cubic Feet. _ nee. ama Middle class hous@sg,. 1 itsi5 tec 1000 re : : 1000 6 10 eT ne ane Sar eet 600. 1200 5 9 Good secondary schools …..... 500° 1500 4 8 London board schools …..... 130 . 2000 8

fi Workhouse dormitories …..... 300 ig 8000 2 6 London lodging-houses …..... 240s; =. One-roomed houses 6&..... 212

Thus, to preserve the lowest standard of purity tolerated by sanitarians, ventilation must go on at the rate per person of 1000 cubic feet per hour, and 3000 cubic feet per hour are required to preserve the higher standard on which some authorities insist. Parkes advises a supply

of 2000 cubic feet of air per hour for persons in health |

and 3000 or 4000 cubic feet for sick persons, The English Barracks Improvement Commissioners 4 require that the supply be not less than 1200 cubic feet per man per hour. Pettenkofer recommends 2100 cubic feet, and Morin ® con-

To realize the need of provision for ventilation, it is only necessary to compare these figures with those already given for the rate of consumption of air. Taking the lowest permissible degree of purity (10 parts of carbonic acid in 10,000), we see that, if no fresh air were allowed to enter, the dweller in a middle-class house would make the atmosphere of his room unfit for breathing after occupying it for 1 hour, and that the sleeping rooms of the poor would fall below the standard in 13 minutes.

|

siders that the following allowances are not too high :— The atmosphere of roonis is changed partly by diffusion, Ventila-

_ | but chiefly by actual currents of air. The experiments of tion by | i Ns ateoed en ee 2000 to 2400 cubic feet per hour.| | Pettenkofer have shown that air passes to a very sensible es | it ON coe etaaged aa ” ” extent through the substance of brick walls. In houses vcs Do. (unhealthy trades) | 3500 . » built of stone the movement of air through the walls must of air. BMI 6s li athe tee octeocn a 1700 id be insignificant ; but, as regards individual rooms, what es eee bie tc ra aad ¥s is chiefly important in this connexion is the percolation Schools (per child) .....| 400 to 500 through dry plaster, causing an exchange of atmosphere | Do. (per

adult) .....| 800 to 1000 – to occur between the inside of the room and the space

within the lining of the wall, which is generally in com- munication with other parts of the building and with the external air. In order that the atmosphere of a room should be changed by means of air currents, three things are necessary,—(1) an inlet or inlets for the air, (2) an outlet or outlets, and (3) a motive force to produce and maintain the current. One might think it needless to

1 Phil. Trans., 1887, vol. elxxviii, B, p. 61. In school-rooms well ventilated by mechanical means these authors found 13 parts of car- bonie acid in 10,000 of air, which they consider a limit permissible in rooms of that class, though not in dwelling-rooms.

2 Proc. Roy. Soc., 1875, vol. xxiii. Dp: Lei.

8 This estimate is based on the observations of Pettenkofer, Angus Smith, and Parkes.

4 Report, 1861.

5 See Etudes sur la Ventilation, Paris, 1863 ; also Proc, Inst. Mech. Eing., 1867, p. 68.

; 5 ee of 29 measurements by Carnelley, Haldane, and Anderson, oc. Cit.

.

Mechani- quently overlooked.

YN TILA TAON

enumerate such obvious requirements were it not that, in providing appliances which are intended to act as venti- lators, one or other of the three essentials is not unfre- In systems which are distinguished

cal and py the general name of mechanical or artificial ventilation

natural : yentila-

- tion.

special provision is made for driving the air, by fans, or by furnaces, or by other contrivances to be described more fully below. In what is called natural ventilation no special appliance is used to give motive force, but the forces are made use of which are supplied by (1) the wind, 2) the elevated temperature of the room's atmosphere, and (3) the draught of fires used for heating. A careful distinction should be drawn between cases in which these motive forces are skilfully taken advantage of, by the use of proper inlets and outlets, to give the best result attain- able without special appliances for driving the air, and other cases, unfortunately too common in practice, where the ventilation is left to take care of itself. In a fair comparison of a mechanical with the natural system we should exclude examples in which the ventilation is hap- hazard, or in which as near an approach to no ventilation is reached as the conditions of modern architecture will permit.

"Chimney Domestic Ventilation.—The chief agent in domestic ventilation – draught. is the chimney ; when a bright fire is burning in an open grate, it

Other outlets,

rarely happens that any other outlet for foul air from a room need be provided. The column of hot air and burnt gases in the chimney is less heavy, because of its high temperature, than an equal column of air outside ; the pressure at the base is therefore less than the pressure at the same level outside. This supplies a motive force compelling air to enter at the bottom through the grate and through the opening over the grate, and causing a current to ascend. The motive force which the chimney supplies has not only to do work on the column of air within the chimney, in setting it in motion and in overcoming frictional resistance to its flow: it has also to set the air entering the room in motion and to overcome frictional resist- ance at the inlets. In many cases the latter part of the chimney's work is the more considerable of the two. From want of proper inlets air has to be dragged in at a high velocity and against much

resistance, under the doors, between the window sashes, and through a hundred other chinks and crevices for which we have to thank imperfeet carpentry and half-seasoned timber. Under these con- ditions the air enters in small streams or narrow sheets, ill-distri- buted and moving so fast as to form disagreeable draughts, the pressure in the room is kept so low that an opened door or window lets in a deluge of cold air, and the current up the chimney is much redueed. If the attempt is made to stop draughts by applying sand-bags and listing to the crevices at which air streams in, matters only become worse in other respects ; the true remedy of course lies in providing proper inlets! The discharge of air by an ordinary open fire and chimney varies widely, depending on the rate of com- bustion, the height and section and form of the chimney, and the freedom with which air is entering the room. About 10,000 cubic feet per hour is probably a fair average, about enough to keep the air fresh for half-a-dozen persons.?_ Even when no fire is burning the chimney plays an important part in ventilation : the air within an inhabited room being generally warmer than the air outside, it is only necessary that an up-current should be started in order that the ehimney should maintain it, and it will usually be found that a current is, in fact, passing up.®

When a room is occupied for any considerable length of time by more than about half-a-dozen persons, the chimney outlet should be supplemented by others, which usually take the form of gratings in the ceiling or cornices in communication with flues leading to the open air. Frequently these openings are protected from down- draught by light flap valves of oiled silk or sheet mica, opening outwards. To increase the efficiency of the ventilating action of the chimney, Dr Arnott advocated (in 1849) that an opening should

1 The absence of proper inlets for air in a house where several fires are burning involves a danger that is much more serious thau other effects of bad ventilation. When the air which is required to take the place of that discharged by the chimneys can only struggle in through small openings, the pressure within the house falls considerably below that of the outer air, the water traps under basins and closets are liable to be forced, and foul air is drawn in from every leak in soil-pipe or drain. The writer has found a house drawing what seemed to be its main supply of "fresh " air

from the public sewer, through a defective Joint between the soil-pipe and the (untrapped) house-drain.

- *Report of the Barracks Commissioners, 1861.*

: "< observations by De Chaumont, in Parkes's Hygiene, 6th ed., p.

159

be made near the ceiling, into the chimney, guarded by a flap valve of this type, with the object of providing a direct exit for the foul warm air that gathers in the upper region of a room, especially when gas is burnt. To make Arnott's valve of much service it should be larger than the size usually supplied ; even then it has the drawback that, notwithstanding the protection given by the valve, enough back-flow may occur to blacken the wall and ceil- ing with soot near the opening. Ifa valve near the ceiling be pro- vided, it is probably better in most cases to lead its outlet shaft direct to the open air than to lead it into the chimney.

With regard to inlets, a first care must be to avoid such currents Inlets,

of cold air as will give the disagreeable and dangerous sensation of draught. At ordinary temperatures a current of outer air to which the body is exposed will be felt as a draught if its velocity excceds 2, or at most 3, feet per second. The current entering a room may, however, be allowed to move with a speed much greater than this without causing discomfort, provided its direction keeps it from striking directly on the persons of the inmates. To secure this, it should enter, not horizontally nor through gratings on the floor, but vertically through openings high enough to carry the entering stream into the upper atmosphere of the room, where it will mix as completely as possible with warm air before its presence can be felt. A favourite form of inlet — — =

is Sheringham's (see fig. 1). When opened it forms a wedge-shaped projection into the room, and admits air in an upward stream through the open top. It is usually placed near the ceiling ; but a lower place in the wall would be better. Other inlets are made by using hollow perforated blocks of earthenware, called air-bricks, built into the wall; these are

often shaped on the inner side like an inverted louvre-board or venetian blind, with slots that slope so as to give an upward in- clination to the entering stream.

a (|,

Fic. 1.—Sheringham air inlet.

In another and most valuable form of ventilator, the introduction Tobin of which is due to Mr Tobin of Leeds, the fresh air enters verti- tube.

eally upwards. The usual arrangement of Tobin's tube (shown in front elevation and section in fig. 2) :

is a short vertical shaft of metal plate or wood which leads up the wall froni the floor level to a height of 5 or 6 feet. Its lower end communicates with the outer air through an air- brick or built opening in the wall; from its upper end, which is freely open, the current of fresh air rises in a smooth stream, clinging, as it were, to the wall, and scarcely chang- ing its direction until it has passed far above the level of the opening. Various forms of section may be given to the tube: if placed in a corner it will be triangular or segmental; against a flat wall a shallow rect- angular form is most usual; a lining of wood forming a dado may even be made to serve as a Tobin tube b setting it out a little way from the wall. The tube is often furnished with a regulating valve ; but this isa doubtful advantage, as it tempts the inmates to stop the ventilation for no better reason than that the room is cold ; in exceptional circumstances, such as the presence of an invalid, the opening may be stopped or reduced by laying a board over it. Contrivances are occasionally added for cleansing the enter- ing air. A muslin or canvas bag hung in the tube, or a screen stretched diagonally across it, may be used to filter out dust; the same object is served in some degree by forcing the air, as it enters the tube at the bottom, to pass in close contact with the surface of water in a tray, by means of a deflecting plate. These complications have a double drawback : they require frequent attention to keep them in order and by putting resistance in the way of the stream they are apt to reduce the efficiency of the ventilation.4 The air entering by a Tobin tube may be warmed by a coil of hot pipes

within the tube or by a small gas-stove (provided of course with a flue to dis-

Fic. 2.—Tobin tube.

4 Wheu the air is not filtered, and when it has been warmed beforc eutering, the vertical direction of the stream is readily traced by dust which is deposited on the wall in a nearly upright column, spreading slightly fan-wise as it rises. With cold air the deposit of dust is comparatively slight. The difference is due to the fact noticed and ex- plained by Mr John Aitken, that air quickly deposits any suspended particles when it is brought into contact with a surface colder than itself, but retains them in suspension if the surface be warmer than the air (Trans. Roy. Soc. Edin., vol. xxxiii., 1884, p. 239), Another domestic illustration of the same fact is given by the greater dustiness of walls and furniture in a stove-heated room than in a room heated by an open fire.

Ventila- tion by window and door.

Arrange- ments in

barraeks ;

In public

buildings.

. in vertical streams.

160

charge outside the products of combustion) ; or the tube may draw its supply, not directly from the outer atmosphere, but from a hot- air flue or from a room or corridor where the air has been already warmed. The opening should always be about the level of a man's head, but the tube need not extend down to the floor: all that is essential is that it should have sufficient length to let the air issue in a smooth vertical current without eddies (fig. 8). These inlets are at once so simple and effective

*that » no hesitation need be felt in introducing them freely » in the rooms of dwelling-houses. When no special provision is made for them in the walls, the advantage of a current entering vertically may still be in some ga a degree secured by help of certain makeshift contriv- *00 “uD ances. One of these, suggested by Dr Hinkes Bird, is to open one sash of the window a few inches and fill up the opening by a board ; air then enters in a zig-zag course through the space between the sashes. Another plan is to have a permanent vertical slot between the sashes by making the top of the lower sash stand outa little from the bottom of the upper one. Still another plan is to have a light frame of wood or metal or glass made to fit in front of the lower sash when the window is opened, forming virtually a Tobin’s tube in front of the window (see fig. 4, where a portion of the frame is broken away to show the position of the window sash). This last contrivance allows the fresh air as ready access as may be wished;*

Fig. 4.

Fia. 4.—Ventilating inlet fitted to window. Fic. 5.—Ventilating inlet at foot of door. of the current of air when the door is closed

The arrows indieate the direction

and, unlike the others, it is still effective when the blind is drawn down. A Tobin’s tube, however, is better placed against a dead wall than below a window, for the ascending current is liable to be broken by the window recess and by the down-draught which a window causes by its cooling action on the air of the room. The principle of giving entering currents an upward direction is turned to useful account in a simple contrivance (see fig. 5) for preventing the disagreeable cold draught which comes along the floor of a room from the chink beneath the door. The clearance under the door is made a little greater than usual, and a thin piece of wood is set on the inner side as close as possible to the floor and at a dis- tance of half an inch or so from the surface of the door ; the air then enters in a vertical stream.

As an example of the systematic ventilation of dwelling-rooms on a large scale, the following particulars may be quoted of arrange- ments that have been successfully used in English barracks for more than twenty

years. One or more outlet-shafts of wood are carried from the highest part of the room, discharging some feet above the roof under a louvre ; the number and size of these shafts are such as to give about 12 square inches of sectional area per head and the chimney gives about 6 square inches more per head. About half the air enters cold through air-bricks or Sheringham valves at a height of about 9 feet from the floor, and the other half is warmed by passing through flues behind the grate. The inlets taken to- gether give an area of about 11 square inches per head. A fairly — Seager "4 some 1200 cubic feet per head per hour is found

0 take place, and the proportion of carbonic acid ra 10 parts in 10,0001 ° pp aiahaeal

In the natural ventilation of churches, halls, and other large rooms we often find air admitted by gratings in the floor or near it. —an offensive plan, since it fouls the air, besides causing objection- able draughts, unless the temperature is very carefully reculated The inlets should consist, like Tobin's tubes, of upright flues rising toa height of about 6 feet above the floor, from which the air xivodd.

If the air is to be warmed before it enters the supply may be drawn from a chamber warmed by hot-water or steam pipes or by a stove, and the temperature of the room may be regulated by allowing part of the air to come from a hot chamber and part from outside, the two currents mixing in the shaft from which the inlets to the room draw their supply. Ifa basement or

1 De Chaumont, in Parkes's Hygiene, 6th ed., p. 171.

story below the room to be ventilated is available, a good plan is to carry the inlet tubes vertically down through it and warm the air in them, so that the height of the warm column assists the flow. Outlets usually consist of gratings or ee openings at or near the ceiling, preferably at a considerable distance from points vertically above the inlet tubes. One of the chief difficulties in natural ventilation is to guard them against down-draught through the action of the wind. Numberless forms of cowl have

been de- vised with this object, and often with the further intention of turning the wind to useful account by making it assist the up-current

of foul air. Some of these exhaust cowls are of the revolving class : Exhaust a hood or trumpet-shaped mouth, opening horizontally and sup- eowls,

ported about a vertical axis so as to be free to turn, is kept facin

away from the wind by means ofa large vane. To make the wind help the up-current, a horizontal conical tube is fixed within the cowl, pointing towards the wind and discharging through the trumpet-mouth of the cowl, where it exhausts by suction, on the principle of the jet-pump. Revolving cowls are liable to fail by sticking, and, apart from that, when the wind blows in shifting gusts they cannot respond quickly enough to its changes of direc- tion to prevent it from occasionally ppp WIND

blowing down. Fixed cowls are to be preferred ; they are designed in many forms, of which Mr Buchan's may be cited as a good example. Fig. 6 shows this ventilator in horizontal section: aa is the ver- tical exhaust flue through which the foul air rises; near the top this expands into a polygonal chamber, bbbb, with vertical sides, consisting partly of perforated sheet-metal plates ; outside of these are fixed vertical curved guide-plates, c,¢,c,c ; the wind, blowing between these

ree a

~ WIND and the polygonal chamber, sucks Fic. 6.—Sectional plan of Buchan's

air from the centre through the per- se nici cl

forated sides. Perhaps no form of cow] is entirely free from liability to down-draughts. The most complete safeguard is to place in the exhaust flue a set d of flap-valves open- ing only outwards. Fig. 7 shows the ar- rangement of exit- valvesemployed by Mr Buchan; the valves a, a, @ are flaps of oiled silk working on a wood- en grid 6), which is inclined enough to let them hang free of it when no current is passing ; beyond

them is a door closing-valve c, worked by hand by the cord d; and the whole is enclosed in a box, with glass sides ee, through which the action of the valves may be seen. When the outlets are guarded by valves of this type they may discharge through a plain box with louvred sides ; an exhaust cowl, however, may still be used with advantage to assist the ventilation under favourable conditions of the wind.?

The two things that supply motive force in automatic ventila- tion—the difference of temperature between inner and outer air and the wind—are so variable that even the best arrangements of inlets and outlets give a somewhat uncertain result. 'To secure a strictly uniform delivery of air, unaffected by changes of season or of weather, the influence of these irregular motive forces must be as far as possible minimized, and recourse must be had to an artificial method of driving the air.

Fic. 7.—Exit valves in exhaust flue.

Artificial or Mechanical Ventilation.—This finds application on Artificis ' the largest scale in the ventilation of collieries, by methods which ventila-

are fully described under Coat (vol. vi. pp. 70-71) and Mrntne (vol. tion.

xvi. p. 460). Motive force is supplied to the up-cast shaft either by a furnace at the base, which heats the rising column of air, or (in more modern practice) by a centrifugal fan, such as Guibal's, exhausting air from the top. The long galleries and workings through which the air has to be driven oppose so much resistance that the pressure required to move a sufficient volume of air is im-

mensely greater than is ever necessary or desirable in the artificial ventilation of buildings.

A broad distinction may be drawn between what are sometimes Ml In an

called vacuum and plenum methods of artificial ventilation.

the former, as in colliery ventilation, the motive force is applied at plenum

the outlets: air is drawn from the rooms, and the pressure of their method:

atmosphere is less than the pressure outside. In the latter the motive force is applied at the inlets: air is pushed in, and the pres- sure within the room is greater than outside. The plenum method has distinct advantages: it makes the air escape instead of coming

2 For an aecount of tests of various forms of ventilating cowls, see 8. 8. Hellyer, The Plumber and Sanitary Houses, 4th ed., 1887.

- Extrac- _ tion by hot-air . shaft,

Extrac- tion by fans,

Fans in

plenum Ventila- _ tion,

in as a cold draught at every crevice and casual opening to the outer air; it avoids drawing foul and mouldy air from sewers and basement ; and with it, more easily than with the other, one may

uard against the disturbing influence of wind. In the plenum method the air is driven by pumps or by fans; in the vacuum method pumps are rarely if ever used: suction is produced by fans or by heating the column of air in a long vertical shaft through which the discharge takes place. Water jets and steam jets have also been employed to impel the air.

Extraction by a hot-air shaft is a common mode of ventilating hospitals and other public buildings.' Heat is applied by a furnace or stove at the bottom of the shaft, or by coils of hot-water or steam Pipes which should not extend up the shaft farther than can be helped. In the lecture theatre of the Paris art conservatory, ventilated by Morin, where this means of extraction is employed, fresh air enters through the ceiling and foul air is drawn off through the floor from under the seats ; this reversal of the

natural direction of the current is of course only possible when a sufficient external motive force is applied. The House of Commons furnishes another example: there the air, after being warmed and moistened, or cooled by water spray, as the state of the atmosphere may require, is admitted through large gratings in the floor, which are covered by porous matting to prevent draughts ; outlets from the top of the House lead by flues to the Victoria tower, where a furnace maintains the current in an up-cast shaft.2 In theatres and other buildings lighted by clusters of gas jets or sun-lights at the ceiling the lights may be turned to account as effective ventilating agents by letting the foul air escape through shafts placed over them, which they heat at the base. What is known in America as the Ruttan or Smead system of ventilation, successfully applied in many schools there, employs a hot-air shaft to furnish motive power. In warm weather a stove at the base of the shaft is used to heat the column; in cold weather the exhaust air from the rooms is so much warmer than the atmosphere outside that the up-cast shaft acts without additional heating. This is in fact an example in which the classification of systems into natural and artificial breaks down. The supply of fresh air is warmed as it enters by passing through chambers containing tubular metal stoves ; the outlets are at or near the floor level. A curious feature in the arrangements is that the foul air, in passing to the up-cast shaft, is drawn through the privies, where it desiccates all discharges.

Extraction by fans presents no features requiring special remark. A favourite fan for the purpose is the Blackman propeller, the nearly flat form of which allows it to be readily placed in walls and partitions. One of these fans, 4 feet in diameter, when driven at a speed of about 330 revolutions per minute, is said to discharge 15,000 cubic feet of air per minute with an expenditure of one-horse- power. Though this is a good performance, it should be observed that for ventilating purposes, where air has to be driven in large volume with low velocity and under low pressure, fans, while they have the advantage of being less bulky, are less efficicnt than pumps, for they require that the air in passing through them should move much faster than in other parts of its course, and much of the energy of this motion is wasted in eddies. When fans are used to blow air into buildings, they should deliver into a chamber of considerable size, that the air may become nearly still before it passes into

the distributing flues. Loss of power may be avoided to some extent by receiving the air in a channel which gradually enlarges as it leaves the fan.

The plenum method, with fans to drive the air, is exemplified on a large scale in the ventilation of St George's Hall, Liverpool,' where there are four large fans in the basement, driven by a 10- horse-power steam-engine. The building is heated by passing the air through chambers containing coils of hot-water and steam pipes ; after the air is warmed it is moistened by injecting steam, and pro- vision is made for washing it by water-spray before it reaches the fans,

When fans are used, either with suction or with pressure, the amount of the current is not strictly independent of those variable motive forces which are the sole agents in natural ventilation ; the case is analogous to that of an electric circuit in which several sources of electromotive force are at work, assisting or opposing one another. The fan may be the main agent in circulating the air; but differences of temperature, and at times the action of the wind, may make large variations in the resultant effect. The case is different when pumps are used. A certain quantity of air is delivered at each stroke, and the only effect of these irregular forces 1s to make the power required to drive the pump sometimes greater and sometimes less, Provided there are no casual inlets and outlets, the amount of air supplied is known with certainty ; the ventila-

; For examples, see Morin, op. cit., or Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1867, p. 61. The arrangements are similar to those introduced by Dr Reid in the temporary Houses of Parliament, and described in his Treatise on Ventilation and Warming; see also Tomlinson's Warming and Ventilation, p. 265. In ot ere pumps have been added, through which air may be forced into . building ; but the hot shaft is generally used. é See, for example, Morin's account of the ventilation of the Théatre Lyrique, aris. 4 Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1863, p. 194.

tion under these conditions is sometimes described as positive. Positive Good recent examples of positive plenum ventilation are to be plenum found in Dundee University College and in a number of schools ventila-

in Dundee and Aberdeen, where the arrangements have been de- tion. signed by Mr W. Cunningham. Some of these are ordinary double-

acting reciprocating pumps, driven generally by water engines.

The pumps are rectangular wooden boxes, stiffened by iron ribs, and provided at top and bottom with inlet valves, consisting of a number

of short waterproof cloth flaps working against a vertical wooden

grid. The piston, which is also of wood, has a vertical travel; it

is held in place and worked by wire ropes above and below, which

lead over pulleys to the water motor ; and the piston is balanced by

a counterweight on the descending branch of the upper rope. A

piston 5 feet square, with a stroke of 5 feet, works at 20 Gece per

minute and delivers 150,000 cubic feet per hour.

*In other instances, where the volume of air is greater than could easily be dealt with by common pumps, Mr Cunningham uses re- volving pumps of the Root's blower type (shown in transverse vertical section through the revolving y "pistons" in fig. 8). At the Dundee College a battery of five] of these blowers, each discharg- ing over 150,000 cubic feet of § air per hour, is driven easily by a gas engine of two-horse-power. | The rooms are heated by having coils of Perkins's high a pressure hot – water pipes in the main dis- tributing flues. The inlets are flat upright tubes extending up the side walls to a height of nearly 6 * feet, and open at the top. Ample proof of the advantage that results from giving a vertical direction to the entering current is supplied by the success of Mr Cun- ningham's arrange- ments, where this form of inlet is ex- clusively adopted. Al- ternative outlets are generally provided in the end walls, one group near the ceil- ing, another a few i feet from the foot. Fic. 8.—Revolving pump for ventilation.*

They are fitted with

doors which allow one or other to be closed ; the high-level outlets are used in warm weather, when the fresh air that comes in is com- paratively cool ; the low-level ones are used in cold weather, when the fresh air, having been heated before it enters, would tend to rise and pass out too directly if the outlets near the ceiling were open. The outlet shafts communicate with a louvred tower or turrets on the roof. – Each room receives a volume of air equal to its cubic capacity in about 12 minutes, so that the atmosphere is completely changed five times in an hour. The inlets are propor- tioned to do this without allowing the velocity with which air enters to exceed 6 feet per second.

The " Zolus" water-spray ventilator of Kind and Mestern is an Water- example of a mechanical ventilator using a jet of water to impel the spray air. A nozzle at the top of a circular air-shaft delivers a conical venti- sheet of water, which impinges on the sides of the shaft a little way lator. below and carries down with it a considerable stream of air. This ventilator is used either to force air into rooms or to draw it out; in the former case a small gas-stove is often added to heat the supply.

For the ventilation of greenhouses and hot-houses, see vol. xi.

231.

The advantage of ample and systematic ventilation is Organic not to be measured only by the low proportion of carbonic matter acid it secures. Carbonic acid is not the only test of Fy… vitiation; it is not even the most dangerous impurity. organisms Another criterion of the foulness of close air is the amount in air. of oxidizable organic matter it contains; still another,—and a most valuable one,—is the number of micro-organisms, especially of bacteria. The micro-organisms may be de- termined by Hesse's method of slowly passing a given volume of the air to be examined through a tube coated inside with beef jelly; the germs are deposited on the nutrient jelly and each becomes in a few days the centre of a very visible colony. In outside air the number of micro-organisms, as tested in this way, varies greatly; it

is often less than 1 per litre (61 cubic inches) ; in well- ventilated rooms it ranges from 1 to 20; in close school- rooms as many as 600 per litre have been found. The elaborate researches of Carnelley, Haldane, and Anderson! on the air of dwellings and schools illustrate well the value of this test. One of the uses to which they have put 1t has been to compare schools known to be well ventilated (by mechanical means) with schools ventilated at hap- hazard or not ventilated at all. A large number of trials were made in each case; in the mechanically ventilated schoolrooms the average number of micro-organisms was 17 per litre, and in the others 152. Results of great in- terest were obtained by the experiment of stopping the me- chanical ventilators for a few hours or days. Tested by the proportion of carbonic acid, the air of course became very bad; tested by the number of micro-organisms, it remained comparatively pure, the number being, in fact, scarcely greater than when ventilation was going on, and far less than the average in "naturally ventilated " schools. This proves in a striking way the advantage of systematic ventilation. The bad effect of a foul stagnant atmosphere is cumulative. An habitually close room acts as a nursery of micro-organisms, which a casual flushing with fresh air will not remove ; an habitually well-ventilated room is kept in great measure clear of these dangerous inmates, and its atmosphere may be occasionally overtaxed without causing the number of them to be seriously increased. (J. A. E.)

VENTNOR, a watering-place in the south-east of the Isle of Wight, is finely situated in the Undercliff district, at the foot of St Boniface Down (784 feet), 12 miles south- south-west of Ryde and 10 south-south-east of Newport, with both of which there is communication by coach as well as by rail. The town is finely and picturesquely built on a succession of terraces sloping towards the sea, and from its sheltered situation, equable temperature, and com- paratively dry atmosphere is regarded as one of the best resorts in England for consumptive invalids. About fifty years ago it was only a small fishing hamlet; now it ex- tends along the shore for a distance of about 2 miles, in- cluding Bonchurch to the east. It possesses assembly rooms and a literary and scientific institution. An espla- nade was constructed in 1848, and a pier (645 feet in length) in 1872, which

was greatly improved in 1887. There are extensive recreation grounds. The churches are all modern and without special architectural features. The church of St Boniface at Bonchurch is perhaps the oldest in the island. Among the benevolent and charit- able institutions are the royal national hospital for con- sumptives (begun in 1869), the seaside home of the London city mission, the St Catherine's home for consumptives, and the convalescent home of the Royal Hants Hospital. An Act for establishing a market was passed in 1844, The town is governed by a board of eighteen members, established in 1858. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 215 acres) was 4841 in 1871 and 5504 in 1881; but there is a considerable population outside the district.

VENUE (from Lat. vicenetum) denotes in English law the place from which a jury must be brought for the trial of a case. The word occurs early in constitutional docu- ments, for it was for a long time one of the essentials of trial by jury that the jury should belong to the neighbour- hood in which the cause of action arose or the alleged crime was committed (see Jury). The phrase duodecim legales homines de viceneto or its equivalent is found in the Con- stitutions of Clarendon (1164), the Assize of the Forest (1184), and in Glanvill. In civil matters venue became after a time divided into local and transitory, the former where the cause of action could only have arisen in a

1 Phil. Trans., 1887, vol. clxxviii. B, p. 61.

particular county, such as trespass to land, the latter where it might have arisen in any county, such as debt. In the latter case the plaintiff might lay the venue where he pleased, subject to the power of the court or a judge to change it. The law on the subject is now only of anti- quarian interest (unless, perhaps, in certain actions on penal statutes), for it is enacted by the Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883 (Ord. xxxvi. r. 1), that there shall be no local venue for the trial of any action, except where otherwise provided by statute. The plaintiff may name his place of trial; where no place of trial is named the place is to be the county of Middlesex. The court ora judge has discretion to alter the place of trial. In criminal practice venue is still of importance, though not as much so as

formerly since the large powers of amendment of indictments given by recent legislation. 'The venue is named in the margin of an indictment in this form, " Middlesex to wit." By 14 and 15 Vict. c. 100 it is un- necessary to state any venue in the body of an indictment, and no indictment is to be held bad for want of a proper perfect venue.

Numerous Acts provide for, inter alia, the laying of the venue in the case of offences committed partly in one county and partly in another, or on the high seas, or abroad, and of special offences, such as those under the Post Office, Merchant Shipping, Slave Trade, and Foreign Enlistment Acts. The place of trial may be changed by the Queen's Bench Division, chiefly where it is rendered probable that a fair trial could not be had in the county of the venue.

In Scotch law venue is not used as a technical term; but there are statutory provisions for changing the place of trial in both civil and criminal cases.

In the United States venue may generally be changed by the courts ; but in some States it is provided by their constitutions that provision for change of venue is to be made by the legislature.

In other States the passing of local or special laws for change of venue is forbidden.

VENUS. See ApHRODITE.

VERA, Avcusro (1817-1885), the chief representative of Hegelianism in Italian philosophy, was born at Amelia in the province of Perugia on 4th May 1817. He com- pleted his education in Paris, and, after teaching classics for some years in Switzerland, was appointed professor of philosophy in connexion with the university of France. Attaching himself to Hegel's system with the enthusiasm of a disciple, Vera (who wrote fluently both in French and English as well as in Italian) became widely influen- tial in spreading a knowledge of the Hegelian doctrine. Without any marked originality, his writings are distin- guished by the lucidity of their exposition, and by their genuine philosophic spirit. Among his numerous works may be mentioned Introduction & la Philosophie

d'Hégel (1853, 2d ed. 1864); Probleme de la Certitude (1861); Mélanges Philosophiques (1862); Essais de Philosophie Hégélienne (1864); Strauss, ?Ancienne et la Nouvelle For (1873), an attack upon Strauss's last " confession," written from the standpoint of an orthodox Hegelian ; and a com- prehensive work in Italian, Jl Problema dell' Assoluto, be- longing to his later years. His English works are an Inquiry into Speculative and Experimental Science (1856), more recently an Introduction to Speculative Logic and Philosophy, and a translation of Bretschneider's History of Religion and of the Christian Church. Vera also trans- lated a number of Hegel's works into French, with intro- ductions and commentaries, including the Logic, the Philosophy of Nature, the Philosophy of Spirit, and the Philosophy of Religion. In 1860 Vera returned to Italy, where he was made professor of philosophy in the royal academy of Milan. In the following year he was trans- ferred to Naples as professor of philosophy in the university there. His Prolusioni alla Storia della Filosofia and Lezioni sulla Filosofia della Storia connect themselves with the work of his chair, which was specially devoted to the

history of philosophy and the philosophy of history. He held this post till his death, which took place at Naples in the autumn of 1885.

A Life of Vera, in two volumes, has been published by Signor Mariano, a friend and follower.

VERA CRUZ, a fortified town and seaport of Mexico, formerly capital of the state of Vera Cruz, is situated in 19° 11'50" N. lat. and 96° 20' W. long., at the south-west corner of the Gulf of Mexico, on a low and exposed seaboard, partly sandy partly marshy, where the true yellow fever is endemic, prevailing throughout the summer and occasion- ally breaking out even in winter.1 The town, which in 1884 had a population of 16,840, is distant 263 miles by rail from Mexico and 60 from Jalapa, the summer residence of the upper classes. It has few buildings of interest, except a superb cathedral decorated in the Moorish style. Most of the streets, which are laid out at right angles, are paved with cobble-

stones and have a kennel or open cutter in the middle. A characteristic feature of the place are the turkey-buzzards, who do the scavangering, and are consequently protected by law. The open roadstead, although partly protected by the neighbouring islets of Los Sacrificios and San Juan de Ulloa, is greatly exposed to the fierce "nortes" (northers), which sweep over the Gulf at intervals from October to March. A French company, which contracted with the Mexican Government to form a harbour by constructing a breakwater between the islands, has lately suspended operations. Vera Cruz is, however, the largest seaport in the republic. In 1886 over one-half of the exports of Mexico (£3,002,000 altogether) were shipped from this place (£1,625,000 to Great Britain). Of these exports £2,180,000 represented the precious metals, the other chief items being coffee (£207,000), hides and skins (£99,000), mineral ores (£84,000), tobacco (£68,000), broom root (£25,000), and sugar (£12,000). In the same year the imports amounted to £1,941,000 (£498,000 from Great Britain), and 487 vessels of 295,000 tons cleared from Vera Cruz. In 1887 the exports from Vera Cruz amounted to £1,047,000 (coffee £407,000 and minerals £208,000), and the imports to £2,159,000.

The present town of Villa Rica de Vera Cruz (" Rich City of the True Cross"), which lies several miles south of the original town founded by Cortes in 1520, was built by the viceroy Monterey at the end of the 16th century, and received the title and privileges of a city from Philip III. in 1615. :

The state of Vera Cruz has a seaboard of 450 miles on the Gulf of Mexico, with a mean breadth of 55 miles. Its area is 24,700 square miles, and its total population was 640,000 in 1887, nearly all native Mexicans.

VERATRUM. The Greek physicians were acquainted with a poisonous herb which they called white hellebore, and which has been supposed to represent the existing Veratrum. Be this as it may, in modern times the name has been applied to a genus of herbaceous plants closely al- lied in their structure to Colchicum, but differing greatly in general appearance. Veratrum is a tall-growing herb, having a fibrous root-stock, an erect stem, with numerous broad, plicated leaves, placed alternately, and terminal much-branched clusters of greenish or purplish polygam- ous

flowers. Each perfect flower consists of six regular segments, as many stamens, whose anthers open outwardly, and a three-celled superior ovary ; this last ripens into a three-celled, many-seeded capsule. The genus is included in the order Melanthacex, otherwise called Colchicacex, and comprises a small number of species, natives of the tem- perate regions of the northern hemisphere, generally growing in pastures or woods. Some, and presumably all, contain a violently poisonous alkaloid called veratrin ;

1 “

163

but, given in small doses and under careful supervision, some of the preparations yielded by Veratrum are valu- able medicinal agents, their effect being to lower the pulse and the heat of the body. Sabadilla seeds also furnish a drug once in more frequent use than at present. V. album and V. viride are commonly grown in gardens as orna- mental perennials, but their poisonous qualities should be kept in mind, particularly as they bear a considerable re- semblance in foliage to the harmless Gentiana lutea.

VERBENA. The vervain genus gives its name to the natural order (Verbenacex) of which it isa member. The species are herbaceous or somewhat shrubby, erect or procumbent, with opposite or whorled leaves, generally deeply cut. The sessile flowers originate in the axils of bracts, and are aggregated into close spikes. Each flower has a tubular, ribbed calyx, a more or less irregular tubular two-lipped corolla, with two or four (didynamous) stamens springing from the centre of the corolla tube. The anthers are two-celled, with or without a gland-like appendage at the apex. The ovary is entire or four-lobed, and always four-celled, with a single ovule in each cell; the two styles are free at the apex only, being elsewhere undivided. The fruit consists of four hard nuts within the persistent calyx. There are about eighty species known, mostly natives of tropical and subtropical America. V. officinalis, according to Bentham, is also widely dispersed in the temperate and warmer regions of the eastern hemisphere. V. bonariensis occurs in Africa and in Asia, while V. supina is indigenous only in the Mediterranean and Canarian regions. The

vervein or vervain, V. officinalis, a common wild plant on limestone soils in England, was the object of much superstitious veneration on the part of our pagan ancestors, who attributed marvellous properties to it, pro- vided it were gathered in a particular manner and with much complex ceremonial, The plant is now but lightly esteemed, and its medicinal virtues, if it have any, are entirely ignored. The garden verbenas, once so popular for "bedding out," are derivatives from various South- American species, such as V. teucrioides, a native of southern Brazil, and V. chamedrifolia from Uruguay. The range of colours extends from pure white to rose- coloured, carmine, violet, and purple. Striped forms also are cultivated ; but of late years the cultivation of these beautiful flowers has been partially abandoned, owing to the prevalence of some-ill-understood disease, probably of fungous origin, which has debilitated the plants. The lemon-scented verbena of gardens, so much valued for the fragrance of its leaves, was once referred to this genus under the name V. triphylla, subsequently called Aloysza, but now referred by Bentham to the genus Lippia; it differs from Verbena amongst other matters in having two, not four, nuts to the fruit.

VERCELLI, a town of Italy, in the province of Novara, lies 14 miles to the south-west of that town, on the river Sesia (here crossed by a bridge), at its junction with the Canterana. The walls by which Vercelli was formerly surrounded have been demolished, and their place is now occupied by boulevards, from which a fine view of the Alps (especially the Monte Rosa group) is obtained. The streets are for the most part tortuous and narrow ; there is a large market-place (Piazza Cavour) with a statue of Cavour (1861). The cathedral is a large building dating from the 16th century ; its library contains a number of rare ancient MSS., especially the Codex Vercellensis, one of the most important MSS. of the old Latin version of the Gospels, written in the 4th century by Eusebius, bishop of Vercelli. The churches of St Andrew (a Romano- Gothic building dating from 1219-24), St Paul, St Catherine, and St Christopher possess valuable examples of the work of Gaudenzio Ferrari, one of the principal

ornaments of the Vercelli school of painting, which flour- ished in the 15th and 16th centuries, and to which belonged also Giovenoni, Defendente Ferrari, Lanini, and, one may almost add, Bazzi, who was a native of the town. Of the two hospitals of Vercelli one has a museum and bota- nical gardens ; the town also has a lyceum, a gymnasium, a technical school, and a seminary. The leading industry is silk-spinning; and there is an active trade in the products of the surrounding district (silk, hemp, flax, and rice). The population in 1881 was 20,165 (commune, 21,169).

Vercellx was originally the chief city of the Libici, and afterwards became a Roman municipium. In the neighbourhood (near Rotto on the Sesia) are the Raudii Campi where Hannibal won his first victory on Italian soil (218 B.c.), and where in 101 3.c. Marius and Catulus routed the Cimbri. From about 1228 till 1872 Vercelli was the seat of a university (see UNIVERSITIES).

VERD ISLANDS, Care. See Cape Verb Isnanps.

VERDUN, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondisse- ment in the department of Meuse, an episcopal see, and a first-class fortress, is situated on the Meuse, 174 miles east-north-east of Paris by the railway to Metz, at the junction of the line from Lérouville to Sedan by the Meuse. The enceinte is pierced by four gates; that to the north-east consists of two crenellated towers, and is an interesting specimen of the military architecture of the 15th century. On the left bank of the river is the citadel, on the site of the old abbey of St Vannes (10th century), the remaining buildings of which are used as barracks. On all sides the approaches to the place are guarded by an important line of defensive works, including five redoubts and six forts. From afar can be seen the square towers of the cathedral, the exterior of which still recalls the original building of the 11th century. It was burnt in 1047, and reconsecrated in 1147 by Pope Kugenius III. Some interesting buttresses of the 12th century and a crypt of the 11th are worthy of notice. The three naves of the interior have Gothic vaults, sepa- rated by modern arches. The town-hall (17th century) contains a library (22,500 volumes) and a museum of art, archeology, and natural history. One of the public squares

has a statue of General Chevert, a native of Verdun. The town is famous for its confectionery, sugar-plums, and liqueurs. In 1881 the population was 15,682 (commune 16,053), and in 1886 17,282 (commune 17,755).

Verdun (Verodunwm), an important town at the time of the Roman conquest, was made a part of Belgica Prima. It was de- stroyed during the period of the barbarian invasions, and did not recover till towards the end of the 5th century. Clovis seized the town in 502, and it afterwards belonged to the kingdom of Austrasia. In 848 the famous treaty was signed here by the sons of Louis the Pious (see FRANoR, vol. ix. p. 584, and GrRMANY, vol. x. p. 480). In the 10th century Verdun was definitively conquered by Germany aud put under the temporal authority of its bishops. In the 11th century the burghers of the now free and imperial town began a struggle with their bishops, which ended in their obtaining cer- tain rights in the 12th century. In 1553 Henry II. of France took possession of Verdun, which finally became French by the treaty of Westphalia. In 1792, after some hours of bombardment the citizens opened their gates to the Prussians,—a weakness which the Revolutionary Government punished by the execution of some young girls who had offered flowers to the king of Prussia. In 1870 the Prussians, unable to scize the town by a coup de main,

invested and bombarded it three different times, till j i in the beginning of November. sts

VERGILIUS. See Vira.

VERGNIAUD, Pierre Victurnien (1753-1793) French orator and Revolutionist, was born on 31st May 1753 at Limoges. He was the son of a merchant of that town, who lost the greater part of his means by specula- tion, The boy was early sent to the college of the Jesuits at Limoges, and soon achieved distinction. Turgot was then intendant of Limousin. In his presence young Vergniaud on one occasion recited some verses of his own composition. Turgot was struck with the talent they displayed, and by virtue of his patronage Vergniaud,

having gone to Paris, was admitted to the College of Plessis. It is impossible to read the speeches of Vergniaud without being convinced of the solidity of his education, and in particular of the wide range of his knowledge of the classics, and of his acquaintance—familiar and sympathetic—with ancient philosophy and history.

Duputy, president of the parlement of Bordeaux, with whom Vergniaud became acquainted, conceived the greatest admiration and affection for him and appointed him his secretary. Vergniaud was thereafter called to the bar (1782). The influence of Duputy gained for him the beginnings of a practice; but Vergniaud, though capable of extraordinary efforts, too often relapsed into reverie, and was indisposed for study and sustained exertion, even in a cause which he approved. This weakness appears equally in his political and in his professional life: he would refuse practice if his purse were moderately well filled ; he would sit for weeks in the assembly in listless- ness and silence, while the policy he had shaped was being gradually undermined, and then rise, brilliant as ever, but too late to avert the calamities which he foresaw. In 1789 Vergniaud was elected a member of the general council of the department of the Gironde. Being deeply stirred by the best ideas of the Revolutionary epoch, he found a more congenial sphere for the display of his great powers in his new position. About this period he was charged with the defence of a member of the national guard of Brives, which was accused of provoking disorders in the department of La Corréze. Abandoning all reserve, Vergniaud delivered one of the great orations of his life, depicting the misfortunes of the peasantry in language of such combined dignity, pathos, and power that his fame as an orator spread far and wide.

By the self-denying ordinance of the constituent assembly France was deprived of the whole talent and experience of its members in that new body—the legislative assembly— for which they were declared ineligible ; and the election of new men was proceeded with. Vergniaud was chosen a representative of the Gironde in August 1791, and he forth- with proceeded to Paris. The legislative assembly met on Ist October. For a time, according to his habit, he re- frained from speaking ; but on 25th October he ascended the tribune, and he had not spoken long before the whole assembly felt that a new power had arisen which might control

even the destinies of France. This judgment was re-echoed outside, and he was almost imniediately elected president of the assembly for the usual brief term. Be- tween the outbreak of the Revolution and his election to the legislative assembly the political views of Vergniaud had undergone a decided change. At first he had lauded a constitutional monarchy ; but the flight of Louis filled him with distrust of the sovereign, and his views in favour of a republic were rapidly developed. The sentiments and passions which his eloquence aroused were, however, watch- fully utilized by a more extreme party. It happened thus even with his first assembly speech, on the émigrés. His proposal was mainly that a treble annual contribution should be levied on their property ; but the assembly con- fiscated their goods and decreed their deaths. One great blot on his reputation is that step by step he was led on to palliate violence and crime, to the excesses of which his eyes were only opened by the massacres of September, and which ultimately overwhelmed the party of Girondists which he led. The disgrace to his name is indelible that on 19th March 1792, when the perpetrators of the mas- sacre of Avignon had been introduced to the assembly by Collot d'Herbois, Vergniaud spoke indulgently of their crimes and lent the authority of his voice to their amnesty. In language, sometimes turgid, but nearly always of pure and powerful eloquence, he worked at the theme of the

° SOE oes

st. |

VERGNIAUD

émigrés, as it developed into that of the counter-revolution ; and in his occasional appearances in the tribune, as well as in the project of an address to the French people which he presented to the assembly on 27th December 1791, he shook the heart of France, and, especially by his call to arms on 18th January, shaped the policy which culmi- nated in the declaration of war against the king of Bohemia and Hungary on 20th April. This policy in foreign affairs, which he pursued through the winter and spring of 1791-92, he combined with another,—that of fanning the suspicions of the people against the monarchy, which he identified with the counter-revolution, and of forcing on achange of ministry. On 10th

March Vergniaud delivered a powerful oration in which he denounced the intrigues of the court and uttered his famous apostrophe to the Tuileries: "In ancient times fear and terror have often issued from that famous palace, let them re-enter it to-day in the name of the law!" The speech overthrew De Lessart, whose accusation was decreed; and Roland, the nominee of the Girondists, entered the ministry. By the month of June the opposition of Vergniaud (whose voice still commanded the country) to the king rose to fever heat. On 29th May Vergniaud went so far as to support the disbanding of the king's guard. But he appears to have been unaware of the extent of the feelings of animo- sity which he had done much to arouse in the people, probably because he was wholly unconnected with the practices of the party of the Mountain as the instigators of actual violence. This party used Vergniaud, whose lofty and serene ideas they applauded and travestied in action. Then came the riot of the 20th of June and the invasion of the Tuileries. He rushed among the crowd, but was powerless to quell the tumult. _ Continuing for yet a little longer his course of feverous, almost frenzied, opposition to the throne, on 3rd July he electrified France by his bold denunciation of the king, not only as a hypo- crite and a despot, but as a base traitor to the constitution. His speeches breathe the very spirit of the storm, and they were perhaps the greatest single factor in the development of the events of the time. On the 10th of August the Tuileries was stormed, and the royal family took refuge in the assembly. Vergniaud presided. To the request of the king for protection he replied in dignified and respectful language. An extraordinary commission was appointed : Vergniaud wrote and read its recommendations that a national convention be formed, the king be provisionally suspended from office, a governor appointed for his son, and the royal family be consigned to the Luxembourg. Hardly had the great orator attained the object of his aim, the overthrow of Louis as a sovereign, when he became conscious of the awful forces by which he was Surrounded, and his eyes were opened to the infamy of their régime.

The terrible revelation silenced him for a time. But the massacres of September again unchained his eloquence. He denounced the massacres —their inception, their horror, and the future to which they pointed—in language so vivid and powerful that it raised for a time the spirits of the

Girondists, while on the other hand it aroused the fatal Opposition of Robespierre and of his followers within and without the convention.

__ The questions whether Louis XVI. was to be judged, and if so by whom, were the subject of protracted debate in the convention. They were of absorbing interest to Paris, to France, and to Europe ; and upon them the Girondist leader at last, on 31st December 1792, broke silence, delivering one of his greatest orations, probably one of the greatest combinations of sound reasoning, sagacity, and eloquence which has ever been displayed in the annals of French politics. He pronounced in favour of an appeal to

the people. He pictured the consequences of that temper of vengeance which animated the Parisian mob, and was fatally controlling the policy of the convention, and the prostra- tion which would ensue to France after even a successful struggle with a European coalition, which would spring up after the murder of the king. The great effort failed ; and four days afterwards something happened which still further endangered Vergniaud and his whole party. This was the discovery of a note signed by him along with Gaudet and Gensonné and presented to the king two or three weeks before the 10th of August. It contained nothing but sound and patriotic suggestions ; but it was greedily seized upon by the enemies of the Gironde as evidence of treason. On 16th January 1793 the vote began to be taken in the convention upon the punishment of the king. Vergniaud voted early, and voted for death. The action of the great Girondist was and will always remain inscrutable ; but it was followed by a similar verdict from nearly the whole party which he led. On the 17th Ver- gniaud presided at the convention and it fell to him, labouring under the most painful excitement, to announce the fatal result of the voting. Then for many weeks he sank, exhausted, into silence.

When the institution of a revolutionary tribunal was proposed by the Robespierrists, Vergniaud vehemently opposed the project, denouncing the tribunal as a more awful inquisition than that of Venice, and avowing that his party would all die rather than consent to it. Their death by stratagem had already been planned, and on 10th March they had to go

into hiding. On the 13th Vergniaud boldly exposed the conspiracy in the convention, taking occasion to discuss the profanation by the extremists of the name of liberty, and distinguishing between a true and spurious equality, employing with reference to the latter his famous simile of the bed of Procrustes, The antagonism caused by such an attitude had reached a significant point when on 10th April Robespierre himself laid his accusa- tion before the convention. He fastened especially upon Vergniaud's letter to the king and his support of the appeal to the people as a proof that he was a moderate in its then despised sense. Vergniaud made a brilliant extemporaneous reply, and the attack for the moment failed. But now, night after night, Vergniaud and his colleagues found themselves obliged to change their abode, to avoid assassination, a price being even put upon their heads. Still with unfaltering courage they continued their resistance to the dominant faction, till on the 2d of June 1793 things came toa head. The convention was surrounded with an armed mob, who clamoured for the "twenty-two." In the midst of this it was forced to continue its deliberations. The decree of accusation was voted, and the Girondists were proscribed.

Vergniaud was offered a safe retreat. He accepted it only for a day, and then returned to his own dwelling. He was kept under surveillance there for nearly a month, and in the early days of July was imprisoned in La Force. He carried poison with him, but never used it. His tender affection for his relatives abundantly appears from his correspondence, along with his profound attachment to the great ideas of the Revolution, and his noble love of country. On one of the walls of the Carmelite convent, to which for a short time the prisoners were removed, Vergniaud wrote in letters of blood—' Potius mori quam foedari." Early in October the convention brought forward its indictment of the twenty-two Girondists. They were sent for trial to the Revolutionary tribunal, before which they appeared on the 27th of October. The procedure was a travesty of justice. Conscious of innocence, but certain of death, Vergniaud preserved silence, and his example was largely followed by his companions. By the end of

the fourth day of trial it became evident that the demean- our of the prisoners was touching the hearts of the people and making them relent. Then suddenly came the order from the alarmed committee of safety to bring the pro- ceedings to an end. Gensonné demanded to be heard in defence of the prisoners. This was refused ; a verdict of guilty followed, and a sentence of death. Valazé stabbed himself to the heart and fell dead among his comrades.

They were conducted to the conciergerie, which they

entered singing the Marseillaise. Early on the following

morning, 3lst October 1793, they were conveyed to the

scaffold, again singing on the way the national chant, and keeping up the strain till one by one they were guillotined. Vergniaud was executed last. (tT. &)

VERKHNE-URALSK, a district-town of Orenburg, Russia, at the eastern base of the Ural Mountains and on the upper Ural river, 380 miles north-east of Orenburg, is rapidly becoming an important centre of trade with the Bashkirs and Kirghiz in honey, wax, wool, hides, horses, and sheep. The population (10,354 in 1882) has doubled within the last twenty-five years.

VERMIGLI, Prerro Marrire (1500-1562), commonly known as Perer Marryr, a Reforming theologian of the 16th century, came of a good Tuscan family, and was born at Florence on 8th September 1500. In 1516 he entered the house of the Augustinian canons regular at Fiesole, and from 1519 onwards studied at Padua, where he heard lectures on the Aristotelian philosophy and taught himself some Greek. In his twenty-sixth year he was sent out as a preacher, in which capacity he visited various Italian cities,—aniong them Bologna, where a Jewish physician gave him lessons in Hebrew. While prior of St Peter ad Aram in Naples he was introduced to Juan de Valdes's circle, and also became intimate with Bernardino Ochino. At Lucca, whither he had gone to be prior of San Frediano, the "evangelical " tone of his preaching attracted the atten- tion of the Inquisition, and he was compelled to quit Italy (1542).

After short halts at Zurich and Basel he settled in Strasburg as professor of Old Testament exegesis, and in 1547 he removed to England, mainly at Cranmer's in- stance. During the next six years he taught exegesis as a professor in Oxford, conducted public disputations, took part in the adjustment of the Book of Common Prayer, and was generally active in the theological discussions of the time. The accession of Queen Mary in 1558 obliged him to leave England, and he resumed his former duties at Strasburg. From 1555 till his death in the autumn of 1562 he taught in Zurich. He took a prominent part in the abortive conference of Poissy in 1561.

His Oxford lectures on 1st Corinthia i ich i 1551 and those on the Romans in 1558, ee ode meen Sensio doctrine veteris et apostolice de S. Eucharistiz sacramento, and also his Defensio ad R. Smythxi duos libellos de calibatu sacerdo- tum et votis monasticis. The Dialogus de utraque Christi natura dates from 1561 ; and after his death a number of his commentaries on books of the Old Testament were published by his friends. In 1575 Robert Masson, a French preacher in London, published a folio volume of loci communes from Martyr's writings, digested according to the method of Calvin's theological system. This is a work of

great value to students of the Reformation theology. A number

of oe letters by Martyr to prominent theologians are also extant.

— ea ae c,h' Leten der Vater Baprndor der njorvnen Sag ee Hea aa

VERMILION is a brilliant scarlet pigment composed of the sulphide of mercury, HgS. To a small extent it is obtained direct from pure and bright-coloured portions of the native ore CrnNABaR (¢.v.); but it is chiefly an artificial preparation. The process of manufacture, as conducted principally in-Holland, consists in making an intimate mixture of mercury with about one-sixth of its weight of sulphur, and these under the influence of a

gentle heat combine to form the black sulphide of mercury called zthiop's mineral. In successive portions pieces of this compound are thrown into tall earthen pots the lower parts of which are kept at a red heat, and the mass sublimes, depositing a coating of artificial cinnabar on the iron covers and over the upper part of the pots themselves. At the end of the subliming process, the pots are broken, the de- posit of cinnabar is scraped off, ground in a mill, levigated, and when dry it is ready for use as vermilion. The pig- ment is also prepared by the wet method (see Mercury, vol. xvi. p. 34), and it is said that Chinese vermilion owes its superiority to being made in this way. In addition to ' its brilliance, vermilion is a pigment of great intensity and 1 durability, remaining unaffected by acid fumes. Being costly, it is much subject to adulteration ; but the fraudu- | lent additions may easily be detected by volatilization,

which in the case of pure vermilion leaves no residue, i For antimony vermilion, see PicMENTS, vol. xix. p. 87.

VERMONT, one of the New England States of the Plate Vv. American Union, lies between 42° 44' and 45° 0' 43" N, | lat. and 71° 38' and 73° 25' W. long. It is bounded on the N. by the Canadian province of Quebec, on the E. by New Hampshire, from which it is separated by the Con- necticut river, on the S. by Massachusetts, and on the W. by New York, from which it is separated for more than 100 miles by Lake Champlain. The Canadian boundary is 90 miles long; but from this the width of Vermont con- ii tinually grows less towards the southern border, where it is 41 miles. The length is 158 miles. The boundary be- tween Vermont and New York passes through the western side of Lake Champlain, so that three-fourths of the lake and most of its islands belong to the former. The area of the State is 10,212 square miles. |

The surface is greatly diversified, so that the scenery is Physical everywhere attractive and often grand. The Green Moun- features. tains, following a south-westerly trend, divide the State into nearly equal portions. Near Canada there are two ranges, the western being the larger; but near the forty- fourth parallel they unite and continue through western New England as a single range. The highest mountain is Mansfield (4430 feet), and there are five others over 4000 feet and twelve

over 3500 feet. Except upon the loftiest summits, the whole range is densely covered with forests of spruce (Abies nigra), mingled with which are other ever- green and deciduous trees! Many of the streams flowing west unite to form five rivers which enter Lake Champlain. Eleven smaller rivers flow into the Connecticut, which drains about one-third of the area of Vermont. Three streams run north and enter Lake Memphremagog, about one-fifth of which is within the State, and two flow south to join the Hudson river. Mostof the larger streams pass through wide, fertile valleys. Small lakes and ponds are abundant.

The rocks of Vermont are largely metamorphic. Their Geology. age has long been disputed among geologists ; it appears t now, however, to be clearly established that most of them are Palzozoic, although there are a few small areas which he may prove to be Archean. Along Lake Champlain there are many outcrops of unaltered fossiliferous strata, which, from the Lower Cambrian through the Hudson River or Cincinnati formations, lie in a regular conformable series, and upon these rest Quaternary deposits. The strata have a northerly strike and a dip 5°-90° E. They form frequent headlands and cliffs upon the shore of Lake Champlain, where they can be most easily studied. The Cambrian beds, nowhere more than a few miles broad, extend from Canada southwards for about 90 miles, having a total thick- ness of probably not less than 10,000 feet. They consist of limestone, sandstone, shale, slate, quartzite, and conglo-

- *Hence the old French name Verd Mont.*

- Se

Minerals,

VERMONT

merate. The limestone is often arenaceous and dolomitic, sometimes magnesian. 'There are great masses of reddish, silicious limestone, the Red Sandrock of geologists, which, often destitute of fossils, contains here and there species of Ptychoparia, Olenellus, Orthisina, Obolus, Salterella, &c. Included in these beds are thick layers of a beautifully mottled red

and white dolomite, the " Winooski marble," long used for architectural purposes. Similar fossils occur in the "Georgia shales" and elsewhere. Above the Cambrian are smmall patches of Calciferous and Quebec, then larger areas of Chazy, Trenton, Utica, and Hudson River. In the Chazy and Trenton there are extensive quarries upon Isle la Motte, and these formations are finely exhibited in many localities near the lake. The rocks are mostly limestones and shales of a black or dark grey colour, and frequently afford Silurian fossils in great abundance. Within a few miles of Lake Champlain the sedimentary rocks are replaced by schists, quartzites, and other meta- morphic rocks, which continue beyond the mountains to Connecticut river. In the southern part of Vermont there are Lower Helderberg strata, and in the northern, about Lake Memphremagog, Upper Helderberg. These occupy but limited areas and are unconformable with the under- lying rocks. Rev. A. Wing determined the age of the great marble beds of Rutland county to be mostly, if not wholly, of the Chazy epoch. He then extended his obser- vations to the rocks of the Green Mountain mass; and by means of the results thus gained, as well as by his own long-continued independent researches, Prof. J. D. Dana seems to have substantially settled the age of the rocks which compose the mountains as Lower Silurian, and shown that the uplift ending in the range took place after the close of the Hudson River and before the Helderberg period. In the Champlain valley the rocks are traversed by dykes of trap and porphyry, which in some instances have spread over the strata. In the Utica and Hudson River shales there is most beautiful veining: innumerable seams of white calcite, from the finest line to several inches in width, cross and recross the black strata in every direction. In a narrow strip from Canada to Bennington there are Tertiary beds, which are well seen at Brandon. In this formation there are great masses of lignite, containing fossil fruits, also bog iron, manganese, kaolin, and vari- ously and often brightly coloured clays. The entire sur- face of Vermont shows the effects of glaciation. Some of the Silurian ledges are striated and polished most beauti- fully. Drift, boulders, sands, clays occur everywhere ; every stream is bordered by terraces; remains of mam- moth, mastodon, beluga, are found in the drift deposits, as well as Aya, Saxicava, Mytilus, and other marine Mollusca. Sea-beaches over 2000 feet and terraces over 1000 feet above the present sea-level testify to movements of the surface. From the early Cambrian to the late

Quaternary epoch Lake Champlain was an arm of the sea, and for a portion of this time it was connected with the ocean at each end, so that a current flowed from what is now New York Bay to St Lawrence Gulf, converting New England into an island.

Ores of copper, silver, lead, gold, manganese, and iron occur; but, although numerous attempts at mining have been made, very lew have continued or ever been profitable. A large amount of copper Is obtained at the Ely mines, where the ore is chalco-pyrite ; and gold has been found in paying quantity in river gravel, and also in veins, and is still sought in one or two places. The chief mineral wealth of the State isin its quarries. No other State in the Union produces so great a variety or quantity of marble. The annual pro- duction is nearly 2,000,000 cubic feet, and is increasing. Roofing and other slate is obtained in very large quantities and of fine quality. Most excellent granite is quarried in increasing amount, and there are large beds of soap-stone, which are worked. Besides what may be called useful minerals, the State affords a large variety of species, ¢.g., rutile, actinolite, tale, serpentine, which are of interest to the mineralogist. The State has many mineral springs,

some of which have long been places of popular resort. Most of them are sulphurous, some chalybeate, carbonate, or alkaline.

The climate of Vermont, like that of New England generally, is subject to extremes and to sudden changes. In summer the tem- perature varies from 65° to 75° Fahr., sometimes rising to 90°; in winter it ranges from 18° to 50°, sometimes falling to — 10° or rarely —20°. At Burlington the mean annual temperature is 45°. The climate is milder in the Champlain valley than east of the Green Mountains. During the winter there is often much snow, which in the colder parts of the State covers the ground for three months. The average annual rainfall is 33 inches. ‘he air isclear and pure. Notwithstanding the changeable climate, the death-rate is low and the people robust.

Most of the large mammals formerly common,—the panther, wolf, lynx, beaver, otter, moose,—have either disappeared or are very rare ; others,

as the black bear, red deer, mink, and marten, are found only in certain localities. More common are the red fox, raccoon, skunk, porcupine, woodchuck, rabbit, squirrel, and other smaller species. Birds have changed less; but the wild turkey, golden eagle, raven, &c., have become very rare, and the white- headed eagle, large hawks, owls, herons, bitterns, and the like are far from common. The lakes are visited at certain seasons by great numbers of ducks, geese, and other water-fowl. Thrushes, blue- birds, titmicc, sparrows, swallows, warblers, vireos, blackbirds, crows, and woodpeckers are common, as well as many other small birds. In Lake Champlain and the large streams which flow into it are found sturgeon, garpike, muskalonge, bass, pike, pickerel, shad, as well as many smaller species. Trout abound in the moun- tain streams and in some of the ponds. Reptiles and batrachians are not numerous either in species or individuals.

The flora is of great beauty and of unusual botanical interest. Saxtfraga Atizoon, Poa laxa, Arenaria grenlandica, and other alpine plants are found on the higher mountains. Lathyrus mari- timus, Hudsonia tomentosa, and other maritime species recall the time when Lake Champlain was salt. A number of western species find their eastern limit in the Champlain valley, and a greater number of Canadian plants have ended their southward migrations in northern Vermont. Over 1300 species of phanerogams and higher cryptogams grow wild in the State. About 50 of these are found nowhere else in New England, and a few nowhere else in the United States. Ferns grow luxuriantly in many mountain forests and ravines, where 50 species may be collected, including such very rare forms as Asplenium viride, Pellxa gracilis, Woodsia glabella and hyperborea, Aspidium Braunii, &e. Orchids are also abund- ant. Ofthe 108 families found in the State the most numerous are the ranunculus, saxifrage, rose, composite, heath, lily, grass, and sedge. The once prevalent forests are now chiefly confined to the mountains. There are nearly 100 species of trees and large shrubs ; the forests and groves consist chiefly of 11 species of oak, 6 of maple, 17 of willow, 6 of birch, 8 of poplar, 3 of elm, 17 of conifers, besides beech, ash, walnut, butternut, &c. No single species forms so characteristic a feature of the landscape as the American elm, which with great variety of form, always elegant and beautiful, grows singly or in small groups in every

meadow and upon many uplands. The sugar maple is a common and conspicuous tree. (G. H. P.)

The population was estimated in 1777 at 30,000. The first cen- sus taken, in 1791, gave 85,425. The different enumerations from 1800 to 1880 inclusive have been as follows :-—154,465 ; 217,895;

235,966 ; 280,652 ; 291,948 ; 814,120 ; 315,098 ; 330,551; 332,286.

The very slight gain in the decades succeeding 1850 is accounted for by the large emigration from Vermont to the western portions of the country. Of the total population in 1880 291,327 were natives and 40,959 foreign-born. Of the latter class British America furnished the largest contingent, 24,620; Ireland 11,657 ; other parts of Great Britain 3773. The number of coloured was 1057; the excess of males over females 1488. The number gathered in towns of from 4000 to 12,000 inhabitants was 37,800. The largest towns are Rutland, 12,149 (in 1886 two new towns were formed from it); Burlington, 11,365; St Albans, 7193 ; Benning- ton, 6833; Brattleboro, 5880; St Johnsbury, 5800. Montpelier, the capital, has 3219. The average density of population is 36°4 per square mile. The insane numbered 1015 ; idiotic, 803 ; blind, 486 ; paupers, 1564; inmates of prisons and reformatories, 261. The births in 1885 were 6592, or 22°1 per 1000 of population, and the deaths 5858 (average age as reported, 41°95 years ; percentage of deaths to population, 1°61). The number of divorces in 1860 was 94, one to every 23 marriages ; in 1880 the number was 129 (one to 20 marriages); and in 1885 it was 94 (one to 28°7 marriages).

Agriculture is the chief occupation of the State.

Climate.

Fauna.

Flora.

Popula- tion.

The 35,522 Agricul-

farms make up a total of 4,882,588 acres, of which 3,286,461 are im- ture

proved land. The western portion of the State contains the finest tracts of arable land ; the climate as well as the soil of the Champlain valley is especially adapted to fruit-raising, the surface of the lake being but 90 feet above sea-level. The average size of farms in Vermont is 137 acres; the total estimated value of the farms in 1880 was $109,346,010, and of the total products in 1879 $22,082,656. Subjoined are the figures relating to the leading crops :—wheat,

Live Stock.

Fisheries,

Manu- factures,

Com- merce,

Rail-

ways.

Finance.

Religion.

Educa- tion.

168

337,257 bushels, averaging 16°28 bushels per acre; oats, 3,742,282 bushels, averaging 37°6 bushels per acre; Indian corn, 2,014,271 ; potatoes, 4,438,172 bushels ; hay, 1,051,183 tons. The wool clip was 2,551,113 Ib ; and there were 217,033 cows, producing 25,245,826 Tb of butter (12,137,980 Ib in 1850) and 6,121,130 ib of cheese (8,720,834 in 1850). The value of orchard products amounted to $640,942. Of maple sugar Vermont produces more than any other State,—in 1880 11,261,077 tb, or 30°8 per cent. of the whole pro- duction of the United States, besides 128,091 gallons of molasses.

In 1880 the State possessed 75,215 horses, 288 mules and asses, 18, 868 working oxen and 167,204 other cattle (exclusive of milch cows), 489,870 sheep, and 76,384 pigs. Much attention is given to the raising of improved stock. The rearing of fine breeds of sheep for exportation is a lucrative business. :

Lake Champlain abounds in fish of various kinds. Great pains have been taken of late years to stock the numerous ponds and streams of the State with salmon, trout, carp, and bass. Both fish and game are protected by stringent laws, and to some extent by special police supervision. :

In 1880 there were 2874 manufacturing and mechanical establish- ments, the average number of operatives 17,540, and the value pro- duced in 1879 was $31,354,366. Eight firms manufactured cotton, 44 woollen goods, 227 flour and grist-mill products, 56 furniture, 77 leather, 95 tin-ware, copper-ware, &c., 35 agricultural tools, and 688 lumber. The State rates as nineteenth in value ($3,258,816) of lumber products, while Burlington ranks third in importance among the lumber markets of the United States. Eighteen marble quarries produced a value of $1,340,050; there are also granite and slate quarries,—61 quarries in all, with a total production in 1879 of $1,752,333.

Burlington is the only port of entry. The State has 9 steam vessels aggregating 2880 tons, 12 sailing vessels, and 14 unrigged vessels, the total tonnage being 4594. The imports for the year ending 31st December 1887 were $5,959,813 and the exports $1,483,564 ; the value of the pine, spruce, and hemlock lumber im- ported was $1,084,599. Most of this foreign trade is carried on with Canada.

Railroad construction was begun in 1846, and by December 1849 two lines were completed from the Connecticut river to Burlington. In 1853 the working mileage had risen to 493 miles, and in 1886 it was 946 miles, mainly of trunk lines. A State board of three commissioners, appointed by the governor and senate, exercises general supervision.

Bills of credit were issued as early as 1781, and were all faithfully redeemed, The first State bank was chartered in 1806, but closed an unsuccessful career in 1814. In 1818 banks were established at Windsor

and Burlington. In 1841 there were 17 incorporated banking institutions, with a capital of $1,735,000. In October 1887 there were 49 national banks, with an aggregate capital of $7,566,000, a surplus fund of $1,571,864, and $668,329 undivided profits. The circulation was $3,478,100, secured by bonds to the amount of $3,891,000. The loans and discounts amounted to $12,879,765, and the individual deposits to $6,627,090. In 1860 there were 12 institutions for savings, with deposits to the amount of $1,111,532. In June 1887 there were 28 savings banks and trust companies, with $15,587,051 to the credit of 53,810 depositors, and a surplus of $776,113. Deposits pay a state tax of xo percent. The State proper has no debt.

The Congregationalists have 197 churches, members, 22,035 pupils in Sunday schools, and 13,748 families belonging to the congregations. The Baptists have 105 churches 111 ministers, 8623 members, 8922 pupils in Sunday schools. The Methodists have 192 churches, 161 ministers, 16,067 members 18,830 children in Sunday schools. The Episcopalians report 36 ministers in charge of 52 parishes, with 3926 communicants ; num- ber of families, 1789. The Free Baptists and Christians together have 60 churches and 4000 members; the Adventists 35 churches with 1750 members. The Roman Catholics have 39 priests in chaser 79 churches and number about 25,000.

ands were set apart for the support of schools by the propri

of townships as early as 1761. Te pind pigpeIOn es os dates from 1782. 'The origina] educational system of the State contemplated primary schools in every township, a grammar or high school in each county, and one university, Towns were authorized to subdivide into districts of convenient size, each with power to choose its own officers, levy taxes, and maintain a school

In 1870 the towns were authorized' to substitute the town for the district system, but in 1886 only one in nine had made the exchange

In 1886 there were 2557 public schools of all grades, with 71,667 pupils, besides 7247 in private schools. In 1880 the number of persons above ten years unable to read was 12,993, or 4:9 per cent.

the population between 5 and 20 being 99,463. The total revenue for school purposes in 1886 was $621,370. This revenue is derived partly from funds held by the State, but chiefly from town and district taxes. Facilities for advanced instruction are offered by 39 public high schools and 25 incorporated academies, The State has 3 normal schools, founded in 1866, Since 1874 State supervision

186 ministers, 20,271

VER—

Yi R

is exercised through a superintendent elected by the general assem- bly. The State university at Burlington, chartered in 1791, was inaugurated in 1800 ; it provides instruction in arts, engineering, chemistry, agriculture, and medicine, with a teaching staff of 15 in the academic and 26 in the medical faculty ; in 1887 there were 189 students in medicine, 148 in arts and sciences, and in all depart- ments 487. The library contains 35,300 volumes. Middlebury College (Congregational), chartered in 1800, has a teaching staff of 9 with 63 students, and a library of 16,000 vols. Norwich univer- sity (Episcopalian) at Northfield is organized as a military school ; there are 10 instructors and 56 students. The State library contains 18,600 vols., the free public library of Burlington 18,000 vols., that of St Johnsbury 12,000, and that of Lunenburg (free but not public) 14,000. In all 75 libraries were reported in 1880, 42 having over 1000 vols. each.

The governor and chief executive officers are elected by direct Adminis. vote of the male citizens twenty-one years old and upwards who tration.

have resided within the State for one whole year preceding the election. The general assembly, or legislative body, is composed of a senate of 30 members apportioned among the 14 counties accord- ing to population, and a house of representatives consisting of one member from each organized township (244). The sessions of the legislature have been biennial since 1870. The State election occurs in September in the even years. The judiciary is elective through- out, the chief justice and 6 assistant justices of the supreme court being chosen by the senate and

house in joint assembly. The term of service is usually a long one, by virtue of repeated re-elcctions, The assistant judges of county courts are chosen by the freemen of the counties, and justices of the peace by the several towns The county courts hold two terms annually, a justice of the supreme court presiding. A general session of the supreme court is held at the capital in October or November. Probate courts are held in each county, six of the counties being divided each into two probate districts. The State is represented in the Federal Government by two senators and two representatives, aud has four votes in the electoral college. Since 1852 the policy of the State in regard to intoxicating liquors has been that of prohibition.

History.—Vermont first became known to Europeans in 1609, History.

when Champlain explored the lake since known by his name. During the next century the lake and its borders were a thorough- fare for various military expeditions in the Indian and colonial wars, and several points along the lake were occupied, mainly as military posts, by both French and English ; but the first perma- nent settlement was made in 1724 at Fort Dummer in the limits of Brattleboro. In 1760 therc were not more than 300 inhabitants, scattered along the Connecticut river within 50 miles of the south- ern border. Both New Hampshire and New York claimed juris- diction over the territory under royal grants (see vol. xvii. p. 398). By 1763 New Hampshire had chartered 138 townships west of the Connecticut, and between 1765 and 1776 New York had issued grants of land, covering in all 2,418,700 acres, often embracing the same territory as the New Hampshire charters. The claims of New York were always stoutly, and sometimes forcibly, resisted by the great majority of the settlers. In 1776 the Vermonters sought admission to the provincial Congress, but through the influeuce of New York were refused. In January 1777 they proclaimed their independence, framed a State constitution, and again applied for a place in the confederacy. Congress hesitated as before. In 1780 British generals made overtures to the little republic, but with no result beyond a diplomatic intercourse continued until 1783, so managed by the envoys of Vermont as to gain time and save the State from invasion. In 1782 they knocked at the doors of Con- gress again without avail. By July 1789 New York was willing to waive its

pretensions, and Vermont was admitted as the fourteenth State in March 1791. In May 1775 the "Green Mountain boys" under Ethan Allan and Seth Warner had captured Ticonderoga and Crown Point. The battle of Bennington in August 1777 was won by the combined forces of Vermont and New Hampshire. During the whole struggle the State, though unrecognized, contributed its full share of men and means. In the war of 1812-14 Vermont is credited with 5236 soldiers in regular service, exclusive of 2500 volunteers who were under arms at Plattsburgh in September 1814. In the Civil War of 1861-65 the State furnished more than its due quota of troops, 33,288 men from a total population (1860) of 315,098. The present organized force consists of but one regiment, with one battery, 565 men. The unorganized militia numbered 64,162 men in 1880.

The early history of the State may be found in Hiland Hall's and Thompson's Histories. Important documents are given in Vermont State Papers and in

Collections of the Vermont Historical Society. Its part in the war of 1861-65 is told in Benedict's Vermont in the Civil War. (J. E.G.)

VERNET, the name of three eminent French painters. I. Ciaups Josepa Verner (1714-17 89), who was born at Avignon on 14th August 1714, when only fourteen years of age aided his father, a skilful decorative painter,

in the most important parts of his work. But the panels

,

VER—VER

of sedan chairs could not satisfy his ambition and he started for Rome. The sight of the sea at Marseilles and his voyage thence to Civita Vecchia made a deep im- pression on him, and immediately after his arrival he entered the studio of a marine painter, Bernardino Fergioni. Slowly but surely Claude Joseph made his way and attracted notice. With a certain conventionality in de- sign, proper to his day, he allied the results of

constant and honest observation of natural effects of atmosphere, which he rendered with unusual pictorial art. Perhaps no painter of landscapes or sea-pieces has ever made the human figure so completely a part of the scene depicted or so important a factor in his design. 'Others may know better," he said, with just pride, "'how to paint the sky, the earth, the ocean ; no one knows better than I how to paint a picture." For twenty years Vernet lived on in Rome, producing views of seaports, storms, calms, moon- lights, &c., when he was recalled (1753) to Paris, and executed, by royal command, the remarkable series of the seaports of France (Louvre) by which he is best known. On his return he became a member of the academy, but he had previously contributed to the exhibitions of 1746 and following years, and he continued to exhibit, with rare ex- ceptions, down to the date of his death, which took place in his lodgings in the Louvre on 3d December 1789. Amongst the very numerous engravers of his works may be specially cited Le Bas, Cochin, Basan, Duret, Flipart, and Le Veau in France, and in England Vivares.

II. Anrominr CHarLes Horace Verner (1758-1835), commonly called Carxz, the youngest child of the above- named, was born at Bordeaux in 1758, where his father was painting the view from the chateau of La Trompette (Louvre). He showed, at the age of five, an extraordinary passion for drawing horses, but went through the regular academical course as a pupil of Lépicié. Strangely enough, on arriving in Italy after carrying off the great prize (1782) he lost all ambition and interest in his profession, so that his father had to recall him to France to prevent his entering amonastery. In Paris Carle Vernet became himself again and distinguished himself at the exhibition of 1791 by his Triumph of Paulus milius, a work in which he broke with reigning traditions in classical subjects and drew the horse with the forms he had learnt from nature in stables and riding-schools. But the Revolution drew on and Carle Vernet's career for awhile seemed to end in the anguish of his sister's death on the scaffold. When he again began to produce, it was as the man of another era: his drawings of the Italian campaign brought him fresh laurels; his vast canvas, the Battle of Marengo, obtained great success ; and for his Morning of Austerlitz Napoleon bestowed on him the Legion of Honour. His hunting-pieces, races, land- scapes, and work as a lithographer (chiefly under the restoration) had also a great vogue. From Louis XVIII.

he received the order of St Michael. In 1827 he accom- panied his son Horace (see below) to Rome, and died in Paris on his return, 17th November 1835, having pro- duced but little during the last years of his life.

IM. Katie Jean Horace Verner (1789-1863), born in Paris, 30th June 1789, was one of the most characteristic, if not one of the ablest, of the military painters of France. He was just twenty when he exhibited the Taking of an Entrenched Camp—a work which showed no depth of observation, but was distinguished by a good deal of char- acter. His picture of his own studio (the rendezvous of the Liberals under the restoration), in which he represented him- self painting tranquilly, whilst boxing, fencing, drum and horn playing, &c., were going on, in the midst of a medley of visitors, horses, dogs, and models, is one of his best works, and, together with his Defence of the Barrier at Clichy (Louvre), won for him an immense popularity.

169

Enjoying equal favour with the court and with the opposi- tion, he was most improperly appointed director of the school of France at Rome, from 1828 to 1835, and thither he carried the atmosphere of racket in which he habitually lived.1 After his return the whole of the Constantine room at Versailles was decorated by him in the short space of three years. This vast work shows Vernet at his best and at his worst: as a pioture it begins and ends nowhere and the composition is all to pieces; but it has good qualities of faithful and exact representation. He died at Paris on 17th January 1863. The twenty works which were exhibited after his death confirmed his reputation for extraordinary facility ; he had tried every sort of subject, showing affinity for all that was anecdotic rather than dramatic, failing most wherever most was demanded of him, and never reaching either beauty of colour or dignity of line. Vernet was in short a brilliant off-hand sketcher of all he saw, as he said himself, "from his window," and even in this work there was a good deal of affectation of the impromptu.

See Lagrange, Joseph Vernet et la Peinture au XVIII. Siécle ;

C. Blane, Hist. de U' Ecole Frangaise; and T. Sylvestre, Peintres Contemporains.

VERNIER, Prerre (c. 1580-1637), inventor of the instrument which bears his name, was born at Ornans (near Besangon) in Burgundy about 1580. He was for a con- siderable time commandant of the castle in his native town. In 1631 he published at Brussels a treatise entitled Con- struction, usage, et propriétés du quadrant nouveau de mathé- matiques, in which the instrument associated with his name is described (see NAVIGATION, vol. xvii. p. 256, and SURVEY- ING, vol, xxii. p. 718). He died at Ornans in 1637.

The instrument invented by Vernier is frequently called a nonius ; but this is incorrect, as the contrivance described by Pedro Nufiez in his work De crepusculis (1542) is a different one. Nuiiez drew on the plane of a quadrant 44 concentric arcs divided respectively into 89,88, . . . 46 equal parts; and, if the alidade did not coincide with one of the divisions on the principal arc, it would fall more or less accurately on a division line of one of the auxiliary arcs, from which the value of the measured angle could be made out. This instrument was, however, very difficult to make, and was but little used. Vernier proposed to attach toa quadrant divided into half degrees a movable sector of a length equal to 31 half degrees, but divided into 30 equal parts, whereby single minutes could be read off by seeing which division line of the "sector" coincided with a division line of the quadrant. This movable arc was in

m+1

other words divided into parts, and the divisions were gradu-

ated in the direction opposite to that of the graduation of the prin- i

n graduations going in the same direction. The idea had been mentioned by Christopher Clavius (1537-1612) in his Opera mathe- matica, 1612 (vol. ii. p. 5 and iii. p. 10), but he did not propose to attach permanently an arc divided in this way to the alidade ; Ls happy application of the principle at all cvents belongs to

ernier.

VERNON, Epwarp (1684-1757), English admiral, was born in Westminster, on 12th November 1684, and is said to have been descended from the ancient family of Vernon, long resident at Hanbury in Staffordshire. His father, James Vernon, secretary of state from 1697 to 1700, is best remembered by three volumes of his letters to the duke of Shrewsbury, which were published in 1841; and his mother was Mary, daughter of Sir John Buck of Lincolnshire. Edward, their second son, was sent to Westminster school, but his heart longed for the roving life of the sea, and his stay in that "seed-plot of learning" was but brief. Outside its walls he studied, with a view to his future profession, such branches of knowledge as geometry, geography, and the construction of military weapons. He entered the navy in 1701 and from that time until 1707 took part in many expeditions in the Mediterranean and the West Indies. He served with Sir George Rooke at the taking of Gibraltar in July 1704 ;

1 See a letter of Mendelssohn's cited by C. Blanc. XXIV. — 22

It is now usual to divide it into i parts, the two

cipal arc.

and on his return to England Queen Anne acknowledged his gallantry with the present of two hundred guineas. He next went to the West Indies as rear-admiral to Sir Charles Wager, a brave seaman, who afterwards rose to the highest position at the admiralty in the Whig ministry of Walpole, and was pitted against Vernon both in the House of Commons and at the polling-booth. In 1715, and again in 1726, Vernon assisted in the naval operations in the Baltic, supporting Sir John Norris in the first enter- prise, and on the latter serving under his old chief, Sir Charles Wager. During the long supremacy of Walpole little opportunity arose for distinction in warfare, and Vernon's energies found relief in politics, At the general election of 1722 he was returned for both Dunwich in Suf- folk and Penryn in Cornwall, but chose the latter constitu- ency. In the succeeding parliament of 1727 he was again chosen member for Penryn ; but he failed to retain his seat after the dissolution in 1734. At this period the English people regarded the Spaniards as their legitimate enemies, and the ill-feeling of the two countries was fanned both in poetry and in prose. The political antagonists of Walpole charged him with pusillanimity to Spain. With Pulteney and most of his associates this battle-ground was selected rather from expediency than from principle; but Vernon represented the natural instincts of the sea-captain, and with the sailor as with the soldier the motto was "No peace with Spain." In debate he spoke often, and fre- quently with effect, but his language always savoured of extravagance. He pledged himself in 1739 to capture Porto Bello with a squadron of but six ships, and the minister whom he had assailed with his invectives sent him, as vice-admiral of the blue and commander of the fleet in the West Indies, to the enterprise with the force which he had himself called sufficient. Vernon weighed

anchor from Spithead on 23d July 1739 and arrived off

Porto Bello on 20th November. Next day the combat began with a bombardment of an outlying fort which protected the mouth of the harbour, and on 22d November the castle and town surrendered with a loss on the English side of only seven men. The joy of the nation knew no bounds. Vernon's birthday was celebrated in 1740 in London with public illuminations, and 130 medals were struck in his honour. In February 1741 in a bye-election at Portsmouth Vernon was again sent to

parliament. At the general election in the following May he was returned for Ipswich, Rochester, and Penryn, and all but succeeded in winning Westminster.! A larger squadron was placed under Vernon's command at the close of 17 40, and with this force he resolved upon attacking Cartagena. After a fierce struggle the castle, which stood at the harbour's entrance, was gained ; but in the attack upon the city the troops and sailors failed to act in concert, and, with the numbers of his forces thinned by combat and by disease, the British admiral retired to Jamaica. The incidents of this disastrous attempt are described in Smollett's Roderick fandom, chap. xxxi., &c. A similar enterprise in July 1741 against Santiago in Cuba met with a similar reverse and Vernon attributed the defeat to the divided command of the British forces. He landed at Bristol, 6th January 1743, and on 24th January received the freedom of the city of London. When the country dreaded the march of Prince Charles to London, the fleet in the Downs was placed under the command of Vernon ; but his jealous disposition brooked no interference from the Admiralty, and on 1st January 1746 he struck his flag and handed over the command to another. His next act was to describe his grievances in a couple of angry pamphlets, revealing the communications of his official chiefs, and for this indis- cretion he was struck off the list of flag officers (11th 1 Grego's Parliamentary Elections, London, 1886, pp. 95-106,

April 1746). He continued to represent the borough of Ipswich until his death, but with this proceeding his public services practically ceased. He died suddenly at Nacton in Suffolk, 30th October 1757, and was buried in the church of the village.

Vernon's gallantry was unquestioned ; but his valour not infre- quently degenerated into foolhardiness, and he dwelt more often than is usual with British seamen on the merits of his own exploits. His politics were those of the Tory party, and his differences with the Whigs and with his colleagues in the services led to his pub- lishing several pamphlets on his

political conduct. A Memorial of Admiral Vernon from Contemporary Authorities was printed by W. F. Vernon for private circulation in 1861.

VERONA, an important city of northern Italy, in the province of Venetia, situated (45° 26’ 8” N. lat. and 10° 59’ 4” E. long.) in a loop made by the winding of the Adige (ancient Athess). It lies at the junction of the Adige valley railway and that from Mantua with the Milan, Vicenza, and Venice line, 25 miles north of Mantua and 30 south-south-west of Vicenza.

Modern City.—The basilica of 8. Zeno (an early bishop Church of Verona who became its patron saint), which standsofS.

outside the ancient city, is one of the most interesting 2" |

churches in Italy, but has been recently much injured by “restoration.” The church was remodelled in the 12th century, to which period most of the existing structure belongs, including the richly sculptured west front and the open “confessio” or crypt, which occupies the eastern half of the church, raising the choir high above the nave, —a plan adopted in §. Miniato near Florence, the cathe- dral of Parma, at Coire in Switzerland, and elsewhere. This arrangement was probably introduced by the northern invaders of Lombardy. The cloisters of S. Zeno, rebuilt in 1123, are an interesting example of brick and marble construction. Like many other churches in Verona, 8. Zeno is mainly built of mixed brick and stone in alternate bands: four or five courses of fine red brick lie between bands of hard cream-coloured limestone or marble,? form- ing broad stripes of red and white all over the wall. A similarly variegated effect in red and white is produced by building the arches of windows and doors with alternating voussoirs in brick and marble.? The cathedral, consecrated

in 1187 by Pope Urban IIL, stands at the northern ex-Cathe- |

tremity of the ancient city, by the bank of the Adige; dral. it is inferior in size and importance to 8. Zeno, but has

a fine 12th-century west front of equal interest, richly decorated with Lombardic sculpture. The rest of the exterior is built in bands of red and

white, with slightly projecting pilasters along the walls; it has a noble cloister, with two stories of arcading. Its baptistery, re- built early in the 12th century, is a quite separate build- ing, with nave and apse, forming a church dedicated to 8. Giovanni in Fonte. Pope Lucius IIL, who held a council

at Verona in 1184, is buried in the cathedral, under the pavement before the high altar. The Dominican church Church of S. Anastasia is a mine of wealth in early examples of ofS. painting and sculpture, and one of the finest buildings in re Italy of semi-Gothic style. It consists of a nave in six" bays, aisles, transepts, each with two eastern chapels, and

an apse, all vaulted with simple quadripartite brick groin- ing.t It dates from the latter part of the 13th century, and is specially remarkable for its very beautiful and com- plete scheme of coloured decoration, much of which is

2 The neighbourhood of Verona is especially rich in fine limestones and marbles of many different kinds, especially a close-grained cream-coloured marble and a rich mottled red marble, which are largely used, not only in Verona, but also in Venice and other cities of the province. The same quarry produces both kinds, and indeed the same block is sometimes half red and half white. ; ms See Street, Brick and Marble Arch. in Italy, London, 1855, p.

Sq. ; a This type of church was specially adopted by the Dominicans in Ye

| |

| | | | | | |

by Sanmichele, contains paintings by various Veronese Other masters. Though not built till after his death, the church churches, of S. Giorgio in Braida, on the other side of the river, was also designed by Sanmichele, and possesses many good pic- tures of the Veronese school. There are

several other fine churches in Verona, some of early date. One of the 14th century is dedicated to Thomas a Becket of Canterbury.

The strongly fortified castle built by the Della Scala Bridges lords in the 14th century stands on the line of the Roman 2nd wall, close by the river. A very picturesque battlemented ©!

Plan of Verona.

On the walls below are many fine frescos, ranging from c. 1300 to the 15th century, including Pisanello's beautiful painting of St George (mentioned below). This church also contains a large number of fine sculptured tombs of the 14th and 15th centuries, with noble effigies and reliefs of saints and sacred subjects. It is mainly built of red brick, with fine nave columns of red and white marble and an elaborate marble pavement inlaid in many different

bridge leads from it to the other shore, sloping down over three arches of different sizes, the largest next to the castle and the smallest at the other end. There are four other bridges across the Adige; one, the graceful Ponte di Pietra, was designed by Fra Giocondo. The 16th-century lines of fortification enclose a very much larger area than the Roman city, forming a great loop to the west, and also including a considerable space on the left bank of the river. In the latter part of the city, on a steep elevation, stands the castle of St Peter, originally founded by Theodoric, mostly rebuilt by Gian Galeazzo Visconti in 1393, and dismantled by the French in 1801. This and the other fortifications of Verona were rebuilt or repaired by the Austrians, but are no longer kept up as military defences. Verona, which is the chief military centre of the Italian province of Venetia, is now being surrounded with a circle of forts far outside the obsolete city walls.

The early palaces of Verona, before its conquest by Palaces,

Venice, were of very noble and simple design, mostly built of fine red brick, with an inner court, surrounded on the ground floor by open arches like a cloister, as, for example, the Palazzo della Ragione, an assize court, begun in the 12th century. The arches, round or more often

pointed in form, were decorated with moulded terra-cotta enrich- ments, and often with alternating voussoirs of marble. The Scaligeri Palace is a fine example, dating from the 14th century, with, in the cortile, an external staircase leading to an upper loggia, above the usual arcade on the ground floor. It has a very lofty campanile, surmounted by a graceful octagonal upper story. This palace is said to have been mainly built by Can Signorio (Della Scala) about 1370. After the conquest by Venice the domestic build- ings of Verona assumed quite a different type. They became feeble copies of Venetian palaces, in which one form of window, with an ogee arch, framed by the dentil moulding is almost always used. The monotony and utter lifelessness of this form of architecture are shown in the

\ patterns. Its general proportions are specially noble. meaningless way in which details, suited only to the Vene-

'hurch ~The church of S. Fermo Maggiore comes next in interest. tian methods of veneering walls with thin marble slabs, y _ With the exception of the crypt, which is older, the exist- | are copied in the solid marblesof Verona. From the skill

4 .

ing edifice was rebuilt in the 14th century. Its plan is very unusual, consisting of a large nave without aisles, the span being between 45 and 50 feet; it also has two shallow transepts and an apsidal east end. The roof, which is especially magnificent, is the finest example of a class which as a rule is only found in Venetia :! the fram- Ing is concealed by coving or barrel-vaulting in wood, the surface of which is divided into small square panels, all painted and gilt, giving a very rich effect. In this case the 14th and 15th century painted decorations are well preserved. Delicate patterns cover all the framework of the panelling and fill the panels themselves ; at two stages, where there is a check in the line of the coving, rows of half-figures of saints are minutely painted on blue or gold grounds, forming a scheme of indescribably splendid de- coration. A simpler roof of the same class exists at S. Zeno ; it is trefoil-shaped in section, with a tie-beam join- ing the cusps. The church of S. Maria in Organo, rebuilt

- *Or in churches built by Venetian architects in Istria and other subject provinces.*

of Fra Giocondo (see below), Verona was for many years one of the chief centres in which the most refined and graceful forms of the early Renaissance were developed. The town-hall, with its light open loggia of semicircular arches on the ground floor, was designed by Fra Giocondo towards the end of the 15th century; its sculptured en- richments of pilasters and friezes are very graceful, though lacking the vigorous life of the earlier medizval sculptured ornamentation. Verona contains a number of handsome, though somewhat uninteresting, palaces designed by San-michele in the 16th century. The finest are those of the Bevilacqua,? Canossa, and Pompei families. The last of these is now the property of the city, and contains a gallery with some good pictures, especially of the Verona, Padua, and Venice schools. As in Venice, many of the 16th-cen-tury palaces in Verona had stuccoed facades, richly deco- rated with large fresco paintings, often by very able painters. One of these, the house of the painter Niccolo

2 The valuable collection of works of art once preserved in the Bevilacqua Palace has long since been dispersed.

Squares.

Popula- tion, in- dustry,

&

Roman remains,

Painting,

172

Giolfino, still has its frescos in a good state of preservation, and gives a vivid notion of what must once have been the effect of these gorgeous pictured palaces. The episcopal palace contains the ancient and valuable chapter library, of about 12,000 volumes and over 500 MSS., among them

the palimpsest of the Jnstitutiones of Gaius which Niebuhr discovered. The Piazza delle Erbe (fruit market) and the Piazza dei Signori, both in the oldest part of the city, are very picturesque and beautiful, being surrounded by many fine medizeval buildings. In the former of these a copy of the lion of Venice has recently been erected.

Verona had a population of 67,080 in 1871, which by 1881 had increased to 68,741. In spite of its pleasant and healthy site, Verona is in winter liable to be cold and rainy, like other places which lie along the southern spurs of the Alps. The Adige, a rapid but shallow river, shrinks to an insignificant stream during the summer. Verona possesses some silk, linen, and woollen manufactures, and carries on a considerable trade in these goods and in grain, hides, flax, hemp, marble, drugs, &c. Amongst the public institutions of the place may be mentioned the public library (1802), the agricultural academy (1768), the botanical garden, various good schools and colleges (in- cluding a theological seminary, a lyceum, and gymnasia), and numerous hospitals and charitable organizations.

Roman Remains.—The most conspicuous of the existing Roman remains is the great amphitheatre, a building of the 2d or 3d cen- tury, which in general form closely resembled the Colosseum in Rome. Almost the whole of its external arcades, with three tiers of arches, have now disappeared ; it was partly thrown down by an earthquake in 1184, and subsequently used as a stone-quarry to supply building materials. Many of its blocks are still visible in the walls of various medieval buildings. The interior, with seats for about 20,000 people, has been frequently restored, till none of the old seats remain. Traces also exist of extensive baths and of a Roman theatre, the latter outside the most ancient line of walls, close to the left bank of the river. In 1885 portions of a number of fine mosaic pavements, dating from the 3d century, were discovered extending over a very large area under the cloister and other parts of the cathedral, about 5 feet below the present floor level. A large number of different patterns exist in a good state of preservation, elaborate in style, but, like all late Roman mosaics, rather coarsely executed with large tcsserez. The Museo Lapidario contains a fine collection of Roman and Etruscan inscriptions and sculpture, mostly collected and published by Scipione Maffei in the 18th century.

Artistic Importance.—In many respects the resemblance between Verona and Florence is very striking: in both cases we have a strongly fortified city built in a fertile valley, on the banks of a winding river, with suburbs on higher ground, rising close above the main city. In architectural magnificence and in wealth of sculpture and painting Verona almost rivalled the Tuscan city. and, like it, gave birth to a very large number of artists who dis- tinguished themselves in all branches of the fine arts.

Painting in Verona may be divided into four periods. (i.) The first period is characterized by wall paintings of purely native style closely resembling the early Christian pictures in the catacombs of Rome. Examples dating from the 10th to the 11th century have been discovered hidden by whitewash on the oldest parts of the nave walls of the church of S. Zeno. They are a very interestine survival of the almost classical Roman style of painting, and appear to be quite free from the generally prevalent Byzantine influence. (ii.) The Byzantine period seems to have lasted during the 12th and 13th centuries. (iii.) The Giottesque period begins contemporaneously with Altichiero da Zevio and Giacomo degli Avanzi, whose chief works were executed during the second half of the 14th century These two painters were among the ablest of Giotto's followers and adorned Verona and Padua with a number of very beautiful frescos rich in composition, delicate in colour, and remarkable for their highly finished modelling and detail. (iv.) To the fourth period belong several important painters. Pisanello or Vittore Pisano (g.v.), a very charming painter and the greatest medallist of Italy, was probably a pupil of Altichiero.! Most of his frescos in Verona have perished ; but one of great beauty still exists in a very perfect state in the church of S. Anastasia, high up over the arched open- ing into one of the eastern chapels of the south transept. The Scene represents St George and the Princess after the Conquest of the Dragon, with accessory figures, the sea, a mountainous land-

1 There is every reason to' doubt Vasari's statement that Pisanello was a pupil of Andrea del Castagno,

scape, and an elaborately painted city in the background. The only other existing fresco by Pisanello is an Annunciation in §, Fermo Maggiore. For Pisanello's pupils and other painters of sub- sequent date, see SCHOOLS OF PAINTING, vol. xxi. p. 448. Domenico del Riccio, usually nicknamed Brusasorci (1494-1567), was a pro- lific painter whose works are very numerous in Verona. Paolo Cagliari or Paul VERONESE (q.v.), though a native of Verona, belongs rather to the Venetian school.

Verona is specially rich in early examples of decorative sculpture, Sculp- (i.) The first period is that of northern or Lombardic influence, ture. exemplified in the very interesting series of reliefs which cover the western facades of the church of 8. Zeno and the cathedral, dating from the 12th century. These reliefs represent both sacred sub- jects and scenes of war and hunting, mixed with grotesque monsters, such as specially delighted the rude vigorous nature of the Lom- bards; they are all richly decorative in effect, though strange and unskilful in detail. Part of the western bronze doors? of S. Zeno are especially interesting as being among the earliest important examples in Italy of cast bronze reliefs. They represent scenes from the life of S. Zeno, are rudely modelled, and yet very dramatic and sculpturesque in style. Many of the 12th-century reliefs and sculptured capitals in S. Zeno are signed by the sculptor, but these merely constitute lists of names about whom nothing is known.

(ii.) In the 13th century the sculpture seems to have lost the Lom- bard vigour, without acquiring any qualities of superior grace or refinement. The font in the baptistery near the cathedral is au early example of this. Each side of the octagon is covered with a large relief of a Biblical subject, very dull in style and coarse in execution. The font itself is interesting for its early form, one common in the chief baptisteries of northern Italy: like an island in the centre of the great octagonal tank is a lobed marble recep- tacle, in which the officiating priest stood while he immersed the catechumens. A movable wooden bridge must have been used to enable the priest to cross the water in the surrounding tank. _(iii.) The next period is that of Florentine influence. his is exemplified in the magnificently sculptured tombs of the Della Scala lords, designed with steadily growing splendour, from the simple sarco- phagus of Martino I. down to the elaborate ercction over the tomb of the fratricide Can

Signorio, adorned with statuettes of the virtues, to the possession of which he could lay so little claim.4 The recumbent effigies and decorative details of these tombs are very beautiful, but the smaller figures of angels, saints, and virtues are rather clumsy in proportion. The latest tomb, that of Can Signorio, erected during his lifetime (c. 1870), is signed " Boninus de Campigliono Mediolanensis Dioscesis." This sculptor, though of Milanese origin, belongs really to the school of the Florentine Andrea Pisano. One characteristic of the 14th and 15th centuries in Verona was the custom, also followed in other Lombardic cities, of setting large equestrian statues over the tombs of powerful mili- tary leaders, in some cases above the recumbent effigy of the dead man, as if to represent him in full vigour of life as well as in death, That which crowns the canopy over the tomb of Can | Grande is a very noble, though somewhat quaint, work. (iv.) In i the 15th century the influence of Venice became paramount, though this was really only a further development of the Florentine i manner, Venice itself having been directly influenced in the 14th | century by many able sculptors from Florence. . |

The architecture of Verona, like its sculpture, passed through Architec Lombard, Florentine, and Venetian stages. (i.) The church of S. ture. Zeno and the cathedral, both of which were mainly rebuilt in the 12th century, are very noble examples of the Lombardic style, with few single-light windows, and with the walls decorated externally by series of pilasters and by alternating bands of red and white, in stone or brick. The arches of this period are semicircular and rest on round columns and capitals, richly carved with grotesque figures and foliage. Most of the external ornamentation is usually concentrated on the western front, which often hasa lofty arched porch on marble columns, resting on griffins or lions devouring their prey. (ii.) The Florentine period (c. 1250 to 1400) is repre- sented by the church of S, Anastasia, and by many more or less mutilated palaces, with fine courts surrounded by arcades in one or more stories. The arches are mostly pointed, and in other respects the influence of northern Gothic was morc direct in Verona than in Florence. Solidity of mass and simplicity of detail are among the characteristics of this period. (iii.) The Venetian period (c. 1400 to 1480) was one of little originality or vigour, the build- ings of this date being largely rather dull copies of those at Venice. (iv.) The early Renaissance developed into very

exceptional beauty in Verona, mainly through the genius of Fra Giocondo (1435-1514), eee eee

2 They are frequently stated to be of beaten bronze, but they are really castings, apparently by the cire perdue process.

- *Part of these doors are covered with bronze reliefs of scenes from the Bible, which are of still earlier date, and were probably brought to Verona from the Rhine provinces,*

Jey See an eloquent description by Ruskin, Stones of Venice, iii. p. sq.

:

; Jistory.

VE R—

a native of Verona, who was at first a friar in the monastery of §. Maria in Organo. He rose to great celebrity as an architect, and designed many graceful and richly sculptured buildings in Venice, Rome, and even in France ; he used classical forms with great taste and skill, and with much of the freedom of the older medieval architects, and was specially remarkable for his rich and delicate sculptured decorations. The Roman gateway of Gallienus (nien- tioned below) supplied a special form of window, with a circular arch on pilasters, surmounted by a cornice; this was copied by Fra Giocondo, and has been used by countless architects down to the present day without any alteration whatever,1—a remarkable his- tory for a design: it was invented in the 3d century, revived in the 15th, and again copied in the 19th. Another of the leading architects of the next stage of the Renaissance was the Veronese Michele SANMICHELE (g.v.),a great military engineer, and designer of an immense number of magnificent palaces in Verona and other cities of Venetia. His buildings are stately and graceful in pro- portion, but show a tendency towards that dull scholastic classicism which in the hands of Palladio pnt an end to all real life in the art.

History.—Nothing is certainly known of the history of Verona until it became a Roman colony with the title of Augusta, together with the rest of Venetia (Tac., Hist., iii. 8, and Strabo, p. 213). Its fertile surroundings, its central position at the junction of several great roads, and the natural strength of its position, de- fended by a river along two-thirds of its circumference, all com- bined to make Verona one of the richest and most important cities in northern Italy, although its extent within the walls was not large. The existing remains of wall and gates are shown by in- scriptions on them to date from the 3d century ; the ancient fossa still exists as an open canal, so that the old part of the city is wholly surrounded by water. One very handsome gateway inside the Roman city, now called the Porta de' Borsari, was restored in 265 by Gallienus. There are, however, traces of a more ancient circuit wall and gates on the old line. The emperor Constantine, while advancing towards Rome from Gaul, besieged and took Verona (312) ; it was here, too, that Odoacer was defeated (489) by Theodoric the Goth, who built a palace at Verona and frequently resided there. Verona was the birthplace of Catullus.

In the Middle Ages Verona gradually grew in Size and import- ance. In early times it was one of the cliief residences of the Lombard kings ;? and, though, like other cities of northern Italy, it suffered much during the Guelf and Ghibelline struggles, it rose toa foremost position both from the political and the artistic point of view under its rulers of the Scaliger and Della Scala families. The first prominent member of the latter family and founder of his dynasty was Martino I., who ruled over the city from 1260 till his death in 1277. Verona had previously fallen under the power of a less able despot, Ezzelino da Romano, who died in 1259. Alberto della Scala (died in 1301) was succeeded by lis eldest son Bartolomeo, who was confirmed as ruler of Verona by the popular vote, and died in 1804. Alboino, the second son, succeeded his brother, and died in 1311, when the youngest son of Alberto, Can Grande, who since 1308 had been joint- lord of Verona with his brother, succeeded to the undivided power. Can Grande (Francesco della Scala, died in 1829) was the best and most illustrious of his line, and is specially famous as the hospitable patron of DANTE (g.v.). Other princes of this dynasty, which lasted for rather more than a century, were Giovanni (d. 1350), Martino II. (d. 1351), Can Grande II. (d. 1359), and Can Signorio (d. 1375). In 1889 Gian Galeazzo

Visconti, duke of Milan, became by conquest lord of Verona. Soon after his death the city fell by treacherous means into the hands of Francesco II. di Carrara, lord of Padua. In 1404-5, Verona, together with Padua, was finally conquered by Venice, and remained subject to the Venetians till the overthrow of the republic by Napoleon in 1797, who in the same year, after the treaty of Campo Formio, ceded it to the Austrians with the rest of Venetia ; and since that time its political history has been linked to that of Venice.

See the various works by Scipione Maffei (Verona Illustrata, 1728; Museum Veronense, 1749; and La Antica Condizion di Verona, 1719); also Panvinius, Antiquitates Veronx, Padua, 1668; Da Pertico, Descrizione di Verona, 1820; and

for soine of the older buildings Street, Brick and Marble Architecture, London, 1855. (J. H. M.)

_VERONESE, Paoto (1528-1588), the name ordinarily given to Paoto CaLtaRI, or CAaGLiaRt, the latest of the great cycle of painters of the Venetian school, was born in Verona in 1528 according to the best authorities (Zan- ett1 and others), or in 1532 according to Ridolfi. His father, Gabriele Caliari, a sculptor, began to train Paolo to his own profession, The boy, however, showed more propensity to painting, and was therefore transferred to

1 As, for example, in Sir Gilbert Scott's Government offices, White- hall, and many other recent buildings in London.

"~ Verona is the " Bern" of early German legendary history, and of the poems which celebrate the achievements of Charlemagne.

his uncle, the painter Antonio Badile. According to Vasari, he was the pupil of Giovanni Carotto, a painter proficient in architecture and perspective; this statement remains unconfirmed. Paolo, in his early years, applied himself to copying from the engravings of Albert Diirer and the drawings of Parmigiano ; and, having in a singular degree the gifts of

facility, retentiveness, and amenity, he made rapid progress. He did some work in Verona, but found there little outlet for his abilities, the field being pretty well occupied by Ligozzi, Brusasorci, Battista dal Moro, Paolo Farinato, Domenico Riccio, and other artists. Cardinal Ercole Gonzaga took him, when barely past twenty years of age, to Mantua, along with the three last- named painters, to execute in the cathedral a picture of the Temptation of St Anthony; here Caliari was considered to excel his competitors. Returning to Verona, he found himself exposed to some envy and ill-will. Hence he formed an artistic partnership with Battista Zelotti, and they painted together in the territories of Vicenza and Treviso. Finally Paolo went on to Venice. In this city

| his first pictures were executed in 1555 in the sacristy

and church of St Sebastian, an uncle of his being prior of the monastery. The subjects on the vaulting are taken from the history of Esther; and these excited so much admiration that thenceforward Caliari, aged about twenty- eight, ranked almost on a par with Tintoretto, aged about forty-five, or with Titian in his eightieth year, and his life became a series of triumphs. Besides the Esther subjects, these buildings contain his pictures of the Baptism of Christ, the Martyrdom of St Marcus and St Marcellinus, the Martyrdom of St Sebastian, &c. As regards this last-named work, there is a vague tradition that Caliari painted it at a time when he had taken refuge in the monastery, for some reason now unknown. He entered into a com- petition for painting the ceiling of the library of St Mark, and not only obtained the commission but executed it with so much power that his very rivals voted him the golden chain which had been tendered as an honorary distinction. At one time he returned to Verona, and painted the Banquet in the House of Simon the Pharisee, with Jesus and Mary Magdalene, for the refectory of St Mazzaro,—a picture now in Turin. In 1560, however, he was in Venice again, working partly in the St Sebastian buildings and partly in the ducal palace. He visited Rome in 1563, in the suite of Girolamo Grimani, the Venetian ambassador, and acquired enhanced elevation of style by studying the works of Raphael and Michelangelo, and especially the antique. Returning to Venice, he was overwhelmed with commissions, almost transcending the resources even of his own marvellous assiduity, fertility,

and promptitude,— qualities in which no painter perhaps has ever surpassed him. He was compelled to decline an invitation from Philip II. to go to Spain and assist in decorating the Escorial. One of his pictures of this period is the famous Venice, Queen of the Sea, in the ducal palace. He died in Venice on the 20th (or perhaps 19th) of April 1588, and was buried in the church of St Sebastian, a monument being set up to him there by his two sons, Gabriele and Carlo, and his brother, Benedetto, all of them painters. Beyond his magnificent performances as a painter, the known incidents in the life of Paul Veronese are (as will be perceived from the above account) very few. That he was prosperous is certain, and that he was happy is an almost necessary inference from the character of his pictures, on which the joy of living is ineffaceably stamped. He was honoured and loved, being kind, amiable, gener- ous, and an excellent father. His person is well known from the portraits left by himself and others: he was a dark man, rather good-looking than otherwise, somewhat bald in carly middle age, and with nothing to mark an exceptional energy or turn of char- acter. In his works the first quality which strikes one is the palatial

splendour—grand architecture, stately vistas, personages of easy and affable dignity in sumptuous costumes, the crowded assemblies,

the luxury of environment, the air and light, the graceful and abundant poise of action and of limb, the rhythmic movement, the sweet aud lordly variegation of tint. The pictorial inspiration is entirely that of the piercing and comprehensive eye and the magical hand—not of the mind; for Veronese yields none but negative results to the touchstone either of exalted and profound imagina- tion or of searching and constructive common-sense. The humau form and face are given with decorous comeliness, often with beauty. He constantly painted his figures and faces from the life, thns securing range and precision of character ; but of individual apposite expression there is next to none, and of reasoned realistic contact with the professed subject matter—whether in general disposition, in costume and accessory, or in attitude and effort of mind—there is frequently no trace at all. In fact, Paolo Veronese is pre-

eminently a paintcr working pictorially, and in no wise amenable to a literary or rationalizing standard: you can neither exhibit nor vindicate his scenic apparatus by any transcription into words. He enjoys a sight much as Ariosto enjoys a story, and displays it in form and colour with a zest like that of Ariosto for language and verse, As we have already indicated, he was supreme in represent-

ing, without hnddling or confusion, numerous figures in a luminous.

and diffused atmosphere, while in richness of draperies and trans-parency of shadows he surpassed all the other Venetians or Italians. In gifts of this kind Rubens alone could be pitted against him. In the moderation of art combined with its profusion he far excelled Rubens ; for, dazzling as is the first impression of a great work by Veronese, there is in it, in reality, as much of soberness and serenity as of exuberance. By variety and apposition he produces a most brilliant effect of colour ; and yet his hues are seldom bright. He hoards his primary tints and his high lights, like a rich miser who knows how to play the genial host on occasion. A colossal spon- taneity, to which a great result is only a small effort of faculty, is the chief and abiding impression derived from contemplating his works. He very rarely produced small pictures: the spacious was his clement.

Of all Veronese's paintings the one which has obtained the greatest world-wide celebrity is the vast Marriage at Cana, now in the Louvre. It contains about a liundred and twenty figures or heads—those in the foreground being larger than life. ' Several of them are portraits. Among the personages specified (some of them probably without sufficient reason) are the Marquis del Vasto, Queen Eleanor of France, Francis I., Queen Mary of England, Sul- tan Soleyman I., Vittoria Colonna, Charles V., Tiutoretto, Titian, the elder Bassano, Benedetto Caliari, and Paolo Veronese himself (the figure playing the viol). It is impossible to look at this picture without astonishment ; it enlarges one's conception of what pic- torial art means and can do. The only point of view from which it fails is that of the New Testament narrative ; for there is no more relation between the Galilean wedding and Veronese's court- banquet than between a true portrait of Lazarus and a true portrait of Dives. This

stupendous performance was executed for the re- fectory of the monastery of S. Giorgio Maggiore in Venice, the con- tract for it being signed in June 1562 and the picture completed in September 1563. Its price was 324 silver ducats (=£160), along with the artist's living-expenses and a tun of wine. There are five other great banquet-pictures by Caliari, only inferior in scale and excel- lence to this of Cana. One of them is also in the Louvre, a Feast in the House of Simon the Pharisee, painted towards 1570-75 for the refectory of the Servitesin Venice. A different version of the same theme is in the Brera Gallery of Milan. The Feast of Simon the Leper, 1570, was done for the refectory of the monks of St Sebastian, and the Feast of Levi (St Matthew), 1573, now in the Venetian academy, for the refectory of the monks of St John and St Paul. In each instance the price barely excceded the cost of the materials, so different were the conditions under which an artist even of the first celebrity, as Veronese then was, worked in Italy in the 16th century from the conditions prevailing at the present day. The Louvre contains ten other specimens of Veronese notably the Susanna and the Elders, and the Supper at Emmaus. In the London National Gallery are six examples. The most beautiful is St Helena's Vision of the Cross, founded upon an en- graving by Marcantonio after a drawing supposed to be the work of Raphael. Far more famous than this is the Family of Darius at the Feet of Alexander the Great after the Battle of Issus—the captives having mistaken Hephestion for Alexander. It was bought for £13,560, and has even been termed (very unreasonably) the most celebrated of all Veronese's works. The principal figures are portraits of the Pisani family. It is said that Caliari was ac- cidentally detained at the Pisani villa. at Este, and there painted this work, and, on quitting, told the family that he had left behind him an equivalent for his courteous entertainment. Another picture in the National Gallery, Europa and the Bull, is a study for the large painting in the imperial gallery of Vienna, and re- sembles one in the ducal palace of Venice.' The Venetian aca- demy contains fourteen works by Veronese. One of the finest—it is indeed a singular and choice masterpiece—is a comparatively small picture of the Battle of Lepanto, with Christ in heaven

pouring light upon the Christian fleet and darkness on the Turkish. In the Uffizi Gallery of Florence are two specimens of exceptional beauty—the Annunciation and Esther Presenting her- self to Ahasuerus ; for delicacy and charm this latter work yields to nothing that the master produced. In Verona St George and St Julian, in Brescia the Martyrdom of St Afra, and in Padua the Martyrdom of St Justina are works of leading renown. The draw- ings of Veronese are very fine, and he took pleasure at times in engraving on copper.

The brother and sons of Paolo already mentioned, and Battista Zelotti, were his principal assistants and followers. Benedetto Caliari, the brother, who was about ten years younger than Paolo, is reputed to have had a very large share in designing and execut- ing the architectural backgrounds which form so conspicuous a feature in Paolo's compositions. If this is not overstated, it must be allowed that a substantial share in Paolo's fame accrues to Benedetto ; for not only are the backgrounds admirably schemed and limned, but they govern to a large extcnt the invention and distribution of the groups. Of the two sons Carlo (or Carletto), the younger, is the better known. He was born in 1570, and was the favourite of his father, who sent hini to study under Bassano. He produced various noticeable works, and died young in 1596. Gabriele, born in 1568, attended, after Carlo's death, almost en- tirely to commercial affairs; his works in painting are rare. All three were occupied after the death of Paolo in finishing his pictures left uncompleted.

See Ridolfi, Le Meraviglie dell' Arte, &c.; Dal Pozzo, Vite de' Pittori Veronesi, &c.; Zanetti, Della Pittura Veneziana, &c.; and Lanzi. W. M. R

VERONICA,Sz. According to the Bollandists (4th F obo Veronica or Berenice was a pious woman of Jerusalem who, moved with pity as Jesus bore His cross to Golgotha, gave Him her kerchief that He might wipe the drops of agony from His brow. The Lord accepted the offering and after using it handed it back to her, bearing the image of His face miraculously impressed upon it. According to various forms of the legend, Veronica is identified with the niece of Herod the Great, with the woman whom Christ healed of an issue of blood (Mark v. 25 sq.; Matt. ix. 20 sq.), with a

woman who afterwards, along with fifty others, young men and maidens, suffered martyrdom at Antioch, and with the beloved of one Amator, who is described as "famulus S. Virginis Marie et Josephi, et Domini bajulus ac nutricius," who afterwards became an ascetic and died at Roquemadore (Rupes Amatoris) near Bordeaux. Current tradition in the Roman Church has it that Veronica was able to heal Tiberius of a grievous sickness with her napkin, and that the emperor, thus convinced of the divinity of Christ, forth- with sent Pilate into exile. This napkin (sudarium) was in the time of Pope John VII. (705) in the church of S. Maria Maggiore in Rome, but is now in St Peter's, though possession of it is indeed claimed also by Milan and Jaen (Spain). The Bollandist form of the story cannot be traced further back than to about the second quarter of the 15th century; but in a MS. of the 8th century, now in the Vatican, Veronica is said to have painted, or caused to be painted, the portrait of Christ after she had been healed by Him. In the 13th century we find the miraculous picture itself spoken of as 'figura Domini que Veronica dicitur," and this has suggested to archeologists the ques- tion whether the legend of the woman Veronica may not have arisen by confusion out of a totally distinct legend as to a vera icon (eikwv), such as that which, according to Greek tradition, Jesus sent with an autograph letter to Abgarus of Edessa. St Veronica is commemorated on Shrove Tuesday, but her festival is not of obligation.

See Karl Pearson's Die Fronica, ein Beitrag zur Geschichte des Christusbildes in Mittelalter (Strasburg, 1887), which contains a

discussion of the evolution of the story and much interesting matter

wnonE to the hymnological, liturgical, and artistic aspects of the subject.

_VERRES (c. 112-43 B.c.), whose name has been branded with everlasting infamy by the speeches of Cicero, was the bad son of a bad father. The elder Verres was an old hand at Jobbery and bribery, and some of his son's ill-gotten gains found their way into his pocket. He had some sort of connexion with the dictator Sulla, and it was through this probably that he rose to be a senator ; possibly, though

this is very doubtful, he may have belonged to some branch of the Cornelian family, or have been adopted into it. The younger Verres held his first important appointment about 82 B.c. as questor of the consul Carbo in Cisalpine Gaul. This implies that he was then of the democratic party of Marius; but he left it the same year, after having deserted and betrayed Carbo and embezzled the public moneys of which as questor he had the handling. As a reward for his treachery he got out of Sulla a slice of the landed property of some of the proscribed citizens of Beneventum, and Sulla probably screened him in the following year when he was threatened with an action by the treasury officials for his peculations under Carbo. Next year, 80 B.c., he was in Asia on the staff of

Dolabella, governor of Cilicia, where he again acted as.

questor. The governor and his subordinate plundered in concert, till in 78 s.c. Dolabella had to stand his trial at Rome, and was convicted, mainly on the evidence of Verres, who thus secured a pardon for himself. In 74 B.c. he was elected pretor, bribing heavily, it was said, and he had what was termed the city przetorship, which gave him all the powers of an English lord chancellor, with but in- adequate checks on their abuse. Verres, as a creature of Sulla's, in several of his judicial decisions turned them to political ends for the advantage of himself and his party. After his year of pretorship Verres went as governor to Sicily, the richest and most attractive of the Roman pro- vinces, with its treasures of Greek art, its Greek civiliza- tion, and its many noble and beautiful cities. Rome had recognized the claims of Sicily to a kindly and indulgent rule, and the people were for the most part comfortable and contented. But under Verres the island experienced more utter misery and desolation than it had felt amid the horrors of that long and fierce struggle, the First Punic War. The corn-growers, and the revenue collectors or "ublicans," were ruined by exorbitant imposts or by the iniquitous cancelling of contracts; temples and private houses were robbed of their works of art, which to the Sicilian Greek were even dearer than his money; and to all this were added insult and outrage. Men who had the Roman franchise, which was now beginning to be widely diffused, were among the victims of Verres: one was scourged publicly at Messana on an unproved charge. Verres returned to Rome in 70 B.c., with plunder which he boasted would enable

him to live in ease and luxury, even if he had to surrender two-thirds of it to bribe a Roman jury. The prosecution which he antici- pated was commenced the same year by the provincials of Sicily, and was at their request undertaken by Cicero. Verres entrusted his defence to the most eminent of Roman advocates, Hortensius, and he had the sympathy and support of several of the leading Roman nobles. The court before which he was to be tried was composed exclusively of senators, some of whom might be his personal friends. But the presiding judge, the city pretor Acilius Glabrio, was a thoroughly honest man, and his assessors were at least not accessible to bribery. Cicero took care that the evidence should be overwhelming, and he had a host of witnesses in readiness, not only from the il-used towns of Sicily, but from every part of the Greek world. The trial, one of the most memorable in antiquity, began early in the August of 70 B.c., after an unsuccessful attempt by the counsel for Verres to get it adjourned to the following year, when Hortensius would himself be consul and the presiding judge, Metellus, one of his political friends. Cicero opened the case with a comparatively brief speech (Actio Prima in Verrem), following it up with the examination of witnesses and documentary evidence, and convincing Hortensius that his client's cause was hopeless. Before the expiration of the nine days allowed

for the prosecution Verres was on his way to Marseilles ; there he lived in exile to the year 43 3.c., with abundant means of enjoying life in his own way. The story went (Pliny, V. H., xxxiv. 2) that his name was on the pro- scription list of Marcus Antonius, and that in fact he owed his death to the murderer of Cicero.

Verres may not have been quite so black as he is painted by Cicero, on whose speeches we depend entirely for our knowledge of the man, but there can hardly be a doubt that he stood pre-eminent among the worst specimens of Roman provincial governors. It is cruelly unjust to the memory of Warren Hastings to suggest a comparison between him and Verres, though between the two trials, between the charges made, and the general character and circumstances of the proceedings there are points of striking re- semblance. But there is a clearly marked difference. Verres

cared simply for himself; Hastings thought much of the greatness and glory of his country. For one thing indeed we have to thank Verres,—for the detailed description of Sicily and its Greek art treasures which we have in Cicero's famous Verrine orations.

VERROCCHIO, AnpreEa DEL (1435-1488), one of the most distinguished Florentine artists of the 15th century, equally famed as a goldsmith, sculptor, and painter, was born at Florence in 1435. He was the son of Michele di Francesco de' Cioni, and took his name from his master, the goldsmith Giuliano Verrocchi. Except through his works, little is known of his life. As a painter he occupies an important position from the fact that Leonardo da Vinci and Lorenzo di Credi worked for many years in his bottega as pupils and assistants. Only one existing painting can be attributed with absolute certainty to Verrocchio's hand, the celebrated Baptism of Christ, originally painted for the monks of Vallombrosa, and now in the academy of Flor- ence. The figures of Christ and the Baptist are executed with great vigour and refinement of touch, but are rather hard and angular in style. As Vasari says, Verrocchio "ebbe la maniera alquanto dura e crudetta." The two angels are of a much more graceful cast ; the face of one is of especial beauty, and Vasari is probably right in say- ing that this head was painted by the young Leonardo. Other pictures from Verrocchio's bottega probably exist, as, for example, two in the National Gallery of London wrongly attributed to Ant. Pollainolo—Tobias and the Angel (No. 781) and the very lovely Madonna and Angels (No. 296), both very brilliant and jewel-like in colour. One of the angel faces in the latter picture strongly recalls the expres- sion of Leonardo's heads, while the whole scheme of pure glowing colour closely resembles that employed by Di Credi in his graceful but slightly weak pictures of the Madonna and Child. This exquisite painting, one of the gems of the National Gallery, may possibly have been painted from Verrocchio's design by Lorenzo di Credi while he was under the immediate influence of his wonderful fellow-pupil Da Vinci}

In examining Verrocchio's work as a sculptor we are on surer ground. One of his earliest works was the beautiful marble medallion of the Madonna, over the tomb of Leonardo Bruni of Arezzo in the church of Santa Croce at Florence, executed some years after Bruni's death (1443).

In 1472 Verrocchio completed the fine tomb of Giovanni and Piero de' Medici, between the sacristy and the lady chapel of San Lorenzo at Florence. This con- sists of a great porphyry sarcophagus enriclied witli magnificent acanthus foliage in bronze. Above it is a graceful open bronze grill, made like a network of cord- age. In 1474 Verrocchio began the monument to Cardinal Forteguerra at the west end of Pistoia cathedral. The kneeling figure of the cardinal was never completed, and now lies in a room of La Sapienza, but the whole design is shown in what is probably Verrocchio's original clay sketch, now in the South Kensington Museum (see

1 See Crowe and Cavalcaselle, Painting in Italy, London, 1864, ii. p. 400 sq.

fig.). Though this work was designed by Verrocchio, the actual execution of it was entrusted to his assistant, the Florentine Lor- Z —~

enzetto. In 1476 Verrocchio model- led and cast the fine but too real- istic bronze statue of David, now in the Bargello (Flor- ff ence); and in the | following year he | completed one of the reliefs of the magnificent silver jf; altar-frontal of the Florentine baptis- | tery, that repre- | senting the Be- heading of St John. | Verrocchio's other works in the pre- cious metals are now lost, but Va- sari records that he

made many ela- SS _

borate pieces of Clay sketch for the monument of Cardinal plateand jewellery, Forteguerra, showing the kneeling portrait such as morses for of the cardinal, which is not in the actual copes, as well as monument ; a very poor modern figure oc-

i : cupies its place. a series of silver P P

statues of the Apostles for the pope's chapel in the Vatican. Between 1478 and 1483 he was occupied in making the bronze group of the Unbelief of St Thomas, which still stands in one of the external niches of Or San

Michele (Florence). He received 800 florins for these two figures, which are more remarkable for the excellence of their technique than for their sculpturesque beauty. The attitudes are rather rigid, and the faces hard in expression. Verrocchio's chief masterpiece was the colossal bronze equestrian statue of the Venetian general Bartolomeo Colleoni, which stands in the piazza of SS. Giovanni e Paolo at Venice. Verrocchio received the order for this statue in 1479, but had only completed gr

; TENT L ae c

the model when he died in 1488, In #! Ne cs A, | NY anes Cat spite of his request that the casting TNS " ae AW as 4 Bare should be entrusted to his pupil Lorenzo ; Bran rT] E | gel | \x? di Credi, the work was given to Ales- see A a nt

sandro Leopardi by the Venetian senate, P»_ and the statue was gilt and unveiled in |: 1496.1 There appears to be no doubt that the model was completed by Ver- |# rocchio himself, and that nothing more than its reproduction in bronze should be attributed to the much feebler hand oS of Leopardi, who, however, has set his |# own name alone on the belly-band of the js horse—ALEXANDER – LEOPARDVS V. | F. OPUS. This is perhaps the noblest equestrian statue in the world, being in some respects superior to the antique bronze of Marcus Aurelius in Rome and to that of Gattamelata at Padua by Donatello. The horse is designed with wonderful nobility and spirit, and the easy pose of the great general, combining perfect balance with absolute ease and security in the saddle, is a marvel of sculpturesque ability.2 Most remarkable skill is shown by the way in which Verrocchio has exaggerated

1 See Gay, Cart. Inéd., i. p. 367. ? See ScULPTURE, vol. xxi. p. 568, fig. 18.

the strongly marked features of the general, so that nothing of its powerful effect is lost by the lofty position of the head.? According to Vasari, Verrocchio was one of the first sculptors who made a practical use of casts from living and dead subjects. He is said also to have produced

plastic works in terra-cotta, wood, and in wax decorated with colour. Asa sculptor his chief pupil was Francesco di Simone, the son of that Simone whom Vasari wrongly calls a brother of Donatello. Another pupil was Agnolo di Polo (Paolo), who worked chiefly in terra-cotta.

Verrocchio died in Venice in 1488, and was buried in the church of St Ambrogio in Florence. (J. H. M.)

VERSAILLES, a town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Seine-et-Oise and an episcopal see, lies 11 miles west-south-west of Paris, with which it is con- nected by railways on both banks of the Seine and by a tramway. The town owes its existence to the palace (460 feet above the sea) built by Louis XIV. The fresh healthy air and the nearness of the town to Paris have attracted many residents, and the interest attaching to the place draws crowds of visitors. The population in 188] was 48,012; in 1886 it was 49,514 (commune 49,852), including about 10,000 military.

The three avenues of St Cloud, Paris, and Sceaux converge in'

the Place d'Armes. Between them stand the former stables of the palace, now occupied by the artillery and enginecrs. To the south lies the quarter of Satory, the oldest part of Versailles, with the cathedral of St Louis, and to the north the new quarter, with the church of Notre Dame. To the west a gilded iron gate and a stone balustrade shut off the great court of the palace from the Place d'Armes, On either side are allegorical groups, besides statues of the statesmen Suger, Sully, Richelieu, and Colbert, the soldiers Duguesclin, Bayard, Turennc, and Condé, the sailors Duquesne, Tourville, Duguay-Trouin, and Suffren, and the marshals Jourdan, Masséna, Lannes, and Mortier. At the highest point of the court there is an equestrian statue in bronze of Louis XIV., and to the right and left of this stretch the long wings of the palace, while behind it stand the central buildings one behind the other as far as the Marble Court. Here all the lines of construction meet, and here were the rooms of Lonis XIV. To the north the Chapel Court and to the south the Princes Court, with vaulted passages leading to the gardens, separate the side from the central buildings. On the latter is the inscription " A toutes les gloires de la France," which Louis Philippe justified by forming a collec- tion of five thousand works of art (valued at £1,000,000), com- memorating the great

events and persons of French history. The palace chapel (1696-1710), the roof of which can be seen from afar rising above the rest of the building, was the last work of Mansard.

2 Ss | J Wh i

Le ee eee

AnMeES

ae VERT Ng

PLACED

=raS”SHU I J a] <1

Y z Plan of Versailles,

Opposite the altar is the king’s gallery, which communicates with the rooms on the first floor of the palace. The ground-fioor of the north wing on the garden side contains eleven halls of historical pictures from Clovis to Louis XIV., and on the side of the interior courts a gallery of tombs, statues, busts of kings and celebrities of France for the same period. The Halls of the Crusades open off a el ee

? See Selvatico, Arch. e Scult. in Venezia, 1847; Cicognara, Fab- he piu Cospicue di Venezia, 1858; and Milanesi’s ed. of Vasari, iit Dp. sq.

VEHERoAITRLES

this gallery, and are decorated with the arms of crusaders, kings,

rinces, lords, and knights, and with those of the grand-masters and knights of the military religious orders. On the first floor of the north wing on the garden side are ten halls of pictures com- memorating historical events from 1795 to 1855; on the court side is the gallery of sculpture which contains the Joan of Arc of the Princess Marie of Orleans; aud there are seven halls chiefly devoted to French campaigns and generals in Africa, Italy, the Crimea, and Mexico, with some famous

war pictures by Horace Vernet. The second story has a portrait gallery. In the north wing is also the theatre built under Louis XV. by Gabriel, which was first used on the 16th of May 1770 on the marriage of the dauphin (afterwards Louis XVI.) and Marie Antoinette. Here, on 2d October 1789, the celebrated banquet was given to the Gardes du Corps, the toasts at which provoked the riots that drove the royal family from Versailles; and here the national assembly met from 10th March 1871 till the proclamation of the constitution in 1875, and the senate from 8th March 1876 till the return of the two chambers to Paris in 1879. The central build- ings of the palace project into the garden. On the ground floor are the halls of celebrated warriors (once the anteroom of Madame de Pompadour), marshals, constables, and admirals. The Great Dauphin (son of Louis XIV.), the duke and duchess of Berri, the dauphin (son of Louis XV.), Madame de Montespan, Madame de Pompadour, and the daughtcrs of Louis XV. all lived in this part of the palace. The gallery of Louis XIII., decorated with his- torical pictures of his and Louis XIV.'s time, leads to the halls surrounding the Marble Court. One of these contains many plans of battles, and at its door Louis XV. was wounded by Damiens in 1757. The lobbies of the ground floor are full of busts, statues, and tombs of kings and celebrated men. The famous state rooms are on the first floor. On the garden side, facing the north, are a series of seven halls,—among them that of Hercules, till 1710 the upper half of the old chapel, where the dukes of Chartres, Maine, and Burgundy were married, and Bossuet, Massillon, and Bourda- loue preached ; the Hall of Mercury, where the coffin of Louis XIV. stood for eight days after his death ; and the Hall of Apollo, or throne room. To the front of the palace, facing the west, are the Galleries of War and Peace, with allegorical pictures, and the Glass Gallery, built by Mansard in 1678 (240 feet long, 34 wide, and 48 high), having 34 arches, 17 of which are filled with windows looking on the gardens and 17 with large mirrors. The gallery is overloaded with ornament, and the pictures by Lebrun, the trophies and figures of children by Coysevox, and the inscrip- tions attributed to Boileau and Racine all glorify Louis XIV. This gallery was used by him as a throne room on state occasions. Here the king of Prussia was proclaimed emperor of Germany on 16th January 1871. Connected with the Gallery of Peace is the queen's room, occupied successively by Marie Thérese, Marie Lec- zinska, and Marie Antoinette, where the duchess of

Angouléme was born, the duchess of Burgundy died, and Marie Antoinette was almost assassinated on 6th October 1789. The Coronation Hall is so called from David's picture of Napoleon's coronation, which is regarded as the artist's masterpiece. This hall opens on the marble, or queen's, staircase. Behind the Glass Gallery on the side of the court are the rooms of Louis XIV. The Céil de Beuf, named from its oval window, was the anteroom where thie courtiers waited till the king rose. In it is a picture representing Louis XIV. and his family as Olympian deities ; and it leads to the bedroom in which Louis XIV. died, after using it from 1701, and which Louis XV. occupied from 1722 to 1738. To the north of the Marble Court are the "petits appartements" of Louis XV. and to the south those of Marie Antoinette. Among the former is the Porcelain Gallery, where every year under Louis XVI. the best work made at Sévres was displayed. On the second floor of the buildings surrounding the Stags Court Madame du Barry lived, and Lonis XVI. afterwards worked at lockmaking. Marie Thérése and Marie Leczinska had previously used the "petits apparte- ments" of Marie Antoinette, one of the rooms of which is orna- mented with woodwork of her time. In this part of the palace Madame de Maintenon and the duke of Burgundy had rooms, those of the latter being afterwards occupied by Cardinal de Fleury and the duke of Penthiévre. In the south wing of the palace, on the ground floor, are the Imperial Galleries (the first rooms of which were used by the duke and duchess of Bourbon under Louis XIV.) and the rooms occupied by the president of congress when the two legislative bodies meet together at Versailles. A sculpture gallery contains busts of celebrated scholars, artists, generals, and public men from the time of Louis XVI. onwards. In the south Wing is also the room where the chamber of deputies met from 1876 till 1879, and where the congress has since sat to revise the constitution of 1875 and to elect the president of the republic. The first floor is almost entirely occupied by the Battle Gallery (394 feet long and 43 wide), opened in 1836 on the site of rooms used by Monsieur the brother of Louis XIV. and the duke and duchess of Chartres. It is lighted from above, and the walls are hung With pictures of French victories. In the window openings are the

names of soldiers killed while fighting for France, with the names of the battles in which they fell, and there are more than eighty busts of princes, admirals, constables, marshals, and celebrated warriors who met a similar death. Another room is given up to the events of 1830 and the accession of Louis Philippe, and a gal- lery contains the statues and busts of kings and celebrities from Philip VI. to Louis XVI. In the rooms of the second story are portraits (mostly modern), sea-pieces, pictures of royal residences, and some historical pictures of the time of Louis Philippe.

The gardens of Versailles were planned by Le Notre. The best view is obtained from a balcony of the Glass Gallery. The ground falls away on every side from a terrace adorned with ornamental basins, statues, and bronze groups. Westwards from the palace extends a broad avenue, planted with large trees, and having along its centre the grass of the "Tapis Vert"; it is continued by the Grand Canal, 200 feet wide and 1 mile long. On the south two splendid staircases of 103 steps, 66 feet wide, lead past the Orangery to the Swiss Lake, 1312 feet long and 460 wide, beyond which is the wood of Satory. On the north an avenue, with twenty-two groups of three children, each group holding a marble basin, from which a jet of water rises, slopes gently down to the Basin of Neptune, remarkable for its fine sculptures and abundant water. The Orangery (built in 1685 by Mansard) is the finest piece of architecture at Versailles; the central gallery is 508 feet long and 42 wide, and each of the side gallcries is 375 feet long. There are twelve hundred orange-trees, one of which is said to be 465 years old, and three hundred other kinds of trees. The alleys of the parks are ornamented with statues, vases, and regularly-cut yews, and bordered by hedges surrounding the shrubberies. Be- tween the central terrace and the Tapis Vert is the Basin of Latona or the Frogs, with a white marble group of Latona with Apollo and Diana. Beyond the Tapis Vert is the large Basin of Apollo, who is represented in his chariot drawn by four horses ; there are three jets of water, one 60, the others 50 feet in height. The Grand Canal is still used for nautical displays ; under Louis XIV. it was covered with Venetian gondolas and other boats, and the evening entertainments usually ended with a display of fireworks. Around the Tapis Vert are numerous groves, the most remarkable being the Ballroom or Rockery, with a waterfall; the Queen's Shrubbery, the scene of the intrigue of the diamond necklace; that of the Colonnade,

with thirty-two marble columns and a group of Pluto carrying off Proserpine, by Girardon ; the King's Shrubbery, laid out in the English style by Louis Philippe ; the beautiful Grove of Apollo, with a group of that god and the nymphs, by Girardon ; and the Basin of Enceladus, with a jet of water 75 feet high. Among the chief attractions of Versailles are the fountains and waterworks made by Louis XIV. in imitation of those he had seen at Fouquet's chateau of Vaux. Owing to the scarcity of water at Versailles, the works at MARLY-LE-Rot (q.v.) were constructed in order to bring water from the Seine ; but part of the supply thus obtained was diverted to the newly-erected chateau of Marly. Vast sums of money were spent and many lives lost in an attempt to bring water from the Eure, but the work was stopped by the war of 1688. At last the waters of the plateau between Versailles and Rambouillet were collected and led by channels (total length 98 miles) to the gardens, the soil of which covers innumerable pipes, vaults, and aqueducts. The total volume of water annually brought to Versailles is about 175,000,000 cubic feet, of which two-fifths supply the town and the rest the park.

Beyond the present park, but within that of Louis XIV., are the two Trianons. The Grand Trianon was originally crected as a retreat for Louis XIV. in 1670, but in 1687 Mansard built a new palace on its site. Louis XV., after establishing a botanic garden, made Gabriel build in 1766 the small pavilion of the Petit Trianon, where the machinery is still shown by which his supper-table came up through the floor. It was a favourite residence of Marie Antoinette, who had a garden laid out in the English style, and lived an imaginary peasant-life. The Grand Trianon isa one-storied building with two wings, and has been occupied by Monsieur (Louis XIV.'s brother), by the Great Dauphin, the duke of Burgundy, the duchess of Orleans, Napoleon I., and Louis Philippe and his court. The duke and duchess of Orleaus lived in the Petit Trianon. The gardens of the Grand Trianon are in the same style as those of Versailles, and there is a museum with a curious collection of state carriages, old harness, &c.

Apart from the palace, there are no buildings of interest in Versailles, the church of Notre Dame, built by Mansard, the cathedral of St Louis, built by his grandson, the Protestant church, and the English chapel being in no way remarkable. The cele- brated tennis-court is now used as a

museum. The large and sumptuous palace of the prefecture was built during the second empire, and was a residence of the president of the republic from 1871 to 1879. The library consists of 60,000 volumes; and the military hospital formerly accommodated 2000 people in the service of the palace. There are a statue of General Hoche and one of Abbé de |' Epée in the town. A school of horticulture was founded in 1874, attached to an excellent garden, near the Swiss Lake.

XXIV. — 23

La- marck's and Cuvier's classifi- cations,

Essential vertebree.

struc- tures of Verte- brates.

178

Versailles is the seat of a school of artillery and of a school for non-commissioned officers of the artillery and engineers. y History.—Louis XIII. often hunted in the woods of Versailles, and built a small pavilion at the corner of what is now the Rue de La Pompe and the avenue of St Cloud. In 1627 he entrusted Lemercier with the plan of a chateau, and in 1632 bought the land from Frangois de Gondi, first archbishop of Paris, for £2640.. In 1661 Levau made some additions, and in 1682 Louis XIV. took up his residence at Versailles, and gave Mansard orders to erect the great palace in which the original buildings disappeared. Fabulous sums were spent on the palace, gardens, and works of art, the accounts for which were destroyed by the king. Till his time the town was represented by a few houses to the south of the present Place d'Armes ; but land was given to the lords of the court and new houses sprang up, chiefly in the north quarter. Under Louis XY. the parish of St Louis was formed to the south for the increas- ing population, and new streets were built to the north on the meadows of Clagny, where in 1674 Mansard had built at Louis XIYV.'s orders a chateau for Madame de Montespan, which was now pulled down. Under Louis XVI. the town extended to the east and received a niunicipality ; in 1802 it gave its name to a bishopric. In 1783 the peace by which England recognized the independence of the United

States was signed at Versailles. The states-general met here on 5th May 1789, and on 20th June took the solemn oath by which they bound themselves never to separate

VERTEBRATA

ERTEBRATA, the name of a great branch or phylum V of the Animal Kingdom which comprises those ani- mals having bony "vertebre", or pieces of bone jointed so as to forma spinal column. The first recognition of the group is due to Lamarck (1797), who united the four highest classes of Linnzeus's system as "animaux 2 verté- bres," whilst distinguishing the rest of the animal world as "animaux sans vertébres." The same union of the four Linnean classes had been previously made by Batsch in 1788, who, however, proposed for the great division thus constituted the name " Knochenthiere." The significance of Lamarck's classification was materially altered, and the foundation laid of our present attempts to represent by our classifications the pedigree of the animal kingdom, when Cuvier propounded his doctrine of "types," and re- cognized the Vertebrata as one of four great types or plans of structure to be distinguished in the animal world (z).!

The Vertebrata of Lamarck and Cuvier included beasts, birds, reptiles, and fishes, and until recently the group was considered as one of the most sharply limited in the animal kingdom. The progress of anatomical studies very soon rendered it clear that all Vertebrata did not possess bony vertebre ; for, besides the commoner sharks and skates, with their purely cartilaginous skeletons, natu- ralists became acquainted with the structure of fishes, such as the sturgeons and the lampreys, which possess no verte- bree at all, but merely a continuous elastic rod (the noto- chord) in the place of the jointed spinal column. The muscles and their skeletal septa were seen in these fishes to be arranged ina series of segments attached to the sides of this continuous rod ; and hence the structural character of bony vertebree, as distinguishing the Vertebrata, gave place to the character of segmental arrangement of the muscles of the body-wall, such muscles being supported by a skeletal axis which might be itself unsegmented (notochord), or replaced by segmental cartilaginous or bony

The studies of embryologists furnished a sound foundation for this conception by demonstrating that in the embryos of Vertebrata with true vertebre these struc- tures are preceded by an unsegmented continuous noto- chord, The inquiry into the structural characteristics of Vertebrata led further to the recognition of several addi. tional points of structure, the combination of which was present only in the group which had been recognized by Lamarck on superficial grounds. It was found that all 1 These numerals refer to the bibliography at the end of the article.

till they had given France a constitution, and which led to the riots of 5th and 6th October. Napoleon, Louis XVIII, and Charles X. merely kept up Versailles, but Louis Philippe restored its ancient splendour at the cost of £1,000,000. In 1870 and 1871 the town was the headquarters of the German army besieging Paris, After the peace Versailles was the seat of the French national assembly while the commune was triumphant in Paris, and of the two chambers till 1879, being declared the official capital of France, Versailles was the birthplace of Hoche, Abbé de 1'Epée, Philip V. of Spain, Louis XV., Louis XV1., Louis XVIII., Charles X., Count de Maurepas, Prince de Polignac, Marshal Berthier (Prince of Wagram), Houdon the sculptor, Ducis the poet, Callet the mathematician, and Ferdinand de Lesseps. (G. ME.)

VERSECZ, a royal free town in the county of Temes, Hungary, 40 miles south of Temesvar. It is partly for- tified and is the seat of a Greek bishop. Amongst its principal institutions are a high college for girls, a gym- nasium, and a real school. Versecz is one of the principal wine-producing centres in the kingdom, its yearly export amounting to an average of five and a half million gallons, There is also a good trade in rice and silk. The popula- tion numbered 22,329 in 1880.

Vertebrata possess laterally-placed passages leading from the pharynx to the exterior, serving in the aquatic forms as the exits for water taken in by the mouth, and provided with vascular branchial processes, whilst in the embryos of the higher air-breathing classes they appear only as

temporary structures. It was further established that the great mass of nervous tissue lying dorsally above the spinal column, and known as the cerebro-spinal nerve- centre or brain and spinal cord, is in all cases a tube, and originates as part of the dorsal surface of the embryo, which becomes depressed in the form of a long groove and finally closed in by the adhesion of its opposite edges, thus forming a tube or canal. The three structures,—noto- chord, gill-slits, and tubular dorsal nerve-cord,—were more than twenty years ago recognized as characterizing, together with the metameric segmentation of the musculature of the body-wall, all Vertebrata at some one or other period of their existence.

*The establishment by Darwin of the doctrine of organic Question evolution in 1859 led naturalists consciously to make the . se attempt to determine the genetic affinities and the probable aan. . ancestry of the various groups of animals, and enabl Hi them to recognize in the classifications by "type", and other such conceptions of earlier systematists, the uncon- scious striving after genealogical representation of the relationships of organic beings. The question naturally — arose in regard to the Vertebrata, as in regard to other great divisions of the animal kingdom, What were the characters of the earliest forms, the ancestors of those now living? Then came the further questions as to whether any surviving Vertebrata closely resemble the ancestral form, and whether any animals are still in existence which retain the general characters of those primeval forms which were the common ancestors at once of Vertebrates and of other large and equally well-marked phyla or branches of the animal kingdom, such as the Molluscs, the Annulates, &c. This fascinating subject of inquiry received its most important impulse from the embryological investi- gations of the Russian naturalist Kowalewsky, and has been for nearly a quarter of a century the fertile source of speculation and its indispensable accompaniments, new observation and research. Kowalewsky published in 1866 Kowa- | an account of the embryology of the lowest and simplest Js! *) of then recognized Vertebrates, the lancelet (Amphioxus lanceolatus), in which he attempted to trace, cell for cell from the fertilized egg-cell, the origin of the characteristic*

YERTEEBERATA

Vertebrate organs of this animal (2).

This work alone | tadpole.

179

No classification which pretended to set forth

would not have acquired historic importance, although it | the genetic aflinities of animals could henceforth separate KK

is the starting-point of what may be called strict cellular embryology, as compared with the less severely histological works of previous students. But it was accompanied by an account (3) of the development of Ascidia mamillata, one of the so-called Tunicate Molluscs, in which it was demonstrated by Kowalewsky, not only that this supposed Mollusc possesses when first hatched from its egg-envelope a notochord, pharyngeal gill-slits, and a tubular dorsal nerve-cord and brain, but that these three characteristic- ally Vertebrate features of organization originate from the same cell-layers of the embryo, and in essentially the same way as in Amphioxus, whilst the cell-layers themselves originate from the egg-cell in the two animals by precisely

oul

4

ATU py sa wy

ty am 20 Fit Ty

Fig. 1.—Early stages of Ascidia and Amphiovus. a, blastopore; b, neural Toove; ¢, neural folds; d, closed portion of neural tube; e, commencing oral invagination (stomodeum) of Ascidian tadpole; f, right and left cloacal Mvaginations of Ascidian tadpole; g, anterior opening of neural tube of Amphioxus, coincident with the later developed olfactory pit; h, wall of one – the scries of paired outgrowths of archenteron or ccelomic

pouches of ems 7, ectoderm; k, endoderm (of diblastula phase); 2, notochord,

eo from endoderm; m, cavity of gut; , cavity of nerve-tube; 0, wall af nerve-tube, formed by upgrowth and union of neural folds; p, mesoblast of tail of Ascidian tadpole, derived from endoderm; g, lumen of ccelomic pouches of Amphiorus, once continuous with m, but nipped off in the course of development.

A B, C, D. Four stages in development of Ascidia, surface views showing aw cuclosure of neural area. E, F, G. Three similar stages in develop- ae Amphiowus, AA. Vertical antero-posterior median section of A. BB. EE " section of B. DD. Similar section of a stage a little earlier than D. a nad section of E (Amphioxus).. GG. Similar section of embryo repre- a ing. H. Transverse section of diblastula stage of Amphioxus, with ti y open blastopore (earlier than Aor E). I. Transverse (right and left) oat about the middle of F, showing neural area. K. Transverse section or saree of G, showing nerve-tube, notochord, and coelomic pouches or "a astic somites g. L. Transverse section of a much further advanced o lg of Amphioxus, showing nerve-tube, notochord, and gut; the walls

tL coelomic pouches are now converted into muscular tissue and the pouch cavity (q) compressed. (All the figures after Kowalewsky, 77, 78.)

Similar movements of cell division and invagination (see figs. 1 and 2). Kowalewsky's discoveries established once for all that the Ascidian tadpole is identical in three very Special and distinct features of structure with the frog's

Ciki SLITS

Fic. 2.—Diagram illustrating relationship of tadpoles of Frog and Ascidian. The two upper figures represent surface views of the tadpoles ; the two lower ones show in place the chief Vertebrate organs, viz., notochord, gill-slits, nerve-tube, and myelonic eye. (From Lankester's Degeneration.)

the Ascidian from the Vertebrata, and with it the Ascidian brought the whole series of Z'unzcata.

The admission of Z'unicata as a group of Vertebrata was proposed by the present writer as long ago as 1877 (4); but it required the intermediate proposition by Balfour of a group Chordata, to comprise the two divisions Tunicata and Vertebrata, in order to render the final admission of Tunicata to their proper association with the Vertebrata of Cuvier palatable to systematists. As an objection to the simple inclusion of 7'unicata in the great phylum Verte- brata it has been urged that Z'unicata do not possess verte- bree,—a proposition which is equally true of Amphioxus and of some Fishes. Shifting the objection, some writers have maintained that the vertebration of the Vertebrata may be understood as having reference to the segmenta- tion of the muscles of the body-wall, which is exhibited by all Cuvier's Vertebrata without exception, inclusive of Amphioaus, though not by Tunicata. To this it may be replied that the Ascidian tadpole, and more clearly the free-swimming Tunicate Appendicularia (see fig. 9), do ex- hibit a segmentation of the muscles of the hinder part of the body-wall similar to and identical with that of Amphi- oxus, whilst no such strict application of a name in its original descriptive sense is desirable in systematic nomen- clature. All Gastropoda (it has been pointed out) are not gastropodous; all Arthropoda are not arthropodous ; and many Echinoderma are not echinodermous. It is, in the present writer's opinion, better to retain an historic and familiar name for the great branch of the animal pedigree to which it has become necessary to admit forms whose affinities therewith were at one time unsuspected rather than to sacrifice historical significance to a futile striving after etymological accuracy.

The admission of 7'unicata to association with Cuvier's Vertebrata has been followed by a further innovation. The remarkable marine worm Balanoglossus—originally described by Della Chiaje at the end of the 18th century— was shown in 1866 by Kowalewsky (5) to possess a series of pharyngeal gill-slits similar to those of T'unicata and Amphioxus. Later researches by Bateson (6) have de- monstrated that Balanoglossus develops in embryonic life a short notochord, whilst its nerve-cord is, in part at least, tubular, and similar in position and relations to the median

Admis- sion of Tunicata as Verte- brates.

Inclu- sion of alano- glossus in Verte. brate phylum.

epidermal tract by the infolding of which the nerve-tube of Tunicata and the other Vertebrata is formed. Hence it seems impossible to exclude Balanoglossus from a place in the phylum Vertebrata. The possession of pharyngeal gill-slits alone might not justify the association; but, when this is combined with the presence of the notochord, though rudimentary and with a special condition and position of the main nerve-centre, it becomes impossible to ignore Balanoglossus in our conception of the Vertebrate phylum. The recent discoveries of Harmer (7) with regard to Cephalo- discus will hereafter render it necessary to associate that form, and in all probability Rhabdopleura also, with Balano- glossus in the Vertebrate phylum. 'The further conse- quences of such an association in regard especially to the affinities of Polyzoa and of Gephyrea open up a large field of speculation and of consequent embryological and ana- tomical research.

Ances- The Cuvierian Vertebrata, Amphioxus, Tunicata, and

tral form Balanoglossus being thus indisputably connected by a re-
*ee *- markable combination of structural points, which admit of*
“no explanation consistent with the principles of evolutional
morphology except that of the genetic relationship of the
forms thus enumerated, we are at once confronted by those
questions as to the ancestral history of Vertebrata which
have been already mentioned above as stimulated by
Kowalewsky’s discoveries. Undoubtedly Amphioxus is
lower and simpler in structure than any Fish, Tunicata as
low as or lower than Amphioxus, and Balanoglossus, in
some respects, more archaic than either Amphioxus or the
Ascidian tadpole. The first tendency arising from the
discovery of the affinities of these simpler forms with the
Cuvierian Vertebrata was to see in them the representatives
of the ancestors of all Vertebrata. Amphioxus has been
pointed to by authorities in morphology as the living
presentation of our common Vertebrate ancestor ; a similar
position corresponding to an earlier stage of development
has been admitted by no less an authority than Darwin
for the Ascidian. It appears, nevertheless, that all such

simple solutions of the problem of Vertebrate ancestry are without warrant. They arise from a very common tendency of the mind, against which the naturalist has to guard himself,—a tendency which. finds expression in the very widespread notion that the existing anthropoid apes, and more especially the gorilla, must be looked upon as the ancestors of mankind, if once the doctrine of the descent of man from ape-like forefathers is admitted. A little reflexion suffices to show that any given living form, such as the gorilla, cannot possibly be the ancestral form from which man was derived, since ex hypothesi that ancestral form underwent modification and development, and in so doing ceased to exist. The same considerations apply to the question of the ancestry of Vertebrata. Probably no existing low form of Vertebrate closely represents the ancestral form by the modification of which higher forms have been developed. We have no justification for assuming that such low forms do more than present to us a collateral branch of the family, and that collateral branch must, in all probability, have experienced its own special

series of modifications of structure. Not only this, but

in we have no sufficient: ground for assuming that, even in

plicity of TeSPect of the simplicity of their structure, any given

struc. animal forms at present existing exhibit a mere survival

ture. of a corresponding degree of simplicity in their remote

ancestors. Such an assumption was almost universally

made, until a more correct view was pressed on the atten-

tion of naturalists by Dr Anton Dohrn, the founder of the

zoological station of Naples (8). So far from its being

the case that simplicity of organization necessarily implies

the continuous hereditary transmission of a low stage of

structural development from remote ancestors, there are

Argu-

VYVHEVEBRAT A

numerous Instances in which it is certain that the existing simplicity of structure is due to a process of degeneration, and that an existing form of simple structure is thus de- scended from ancestors of far higher complexity of organi- zation than itself. Such are various parasitic worms and Crustacea. The evidence in favour of the occurrence of progressive simplification of structure or degeneration, in place of progressive elaboration, depends (1) upon the com- parison of the adult structure of the degenerate organism with that of its nearest allies, by which it is often rendered clear that the ensemble of the organization of the simpler organism cannot be explained on the hypothesis that it represents an ancestral or archaic condition common to it and its more elaborate

congeners, and (2) on the direct evidence of individual development or life-history. The latter evidence is conclusive, when we find, as in the case of Cirrhipede Crustaceans and of Ascidian Tunicates, that the embryo on its way to the adult condition passes through stages of development presenting a higher degree of or- ganization than that ultimately reached, so that, as in the Cirrhipede larva and the Ascidian tadpole, the young form resembles allied organisms of a higher stage of develop- ment, and subsequently degenerates from the point of progressive elaboration to which it had attained, and be- comes greatly simplified in the final stage of its growth, Conclusive as such evidence is, there is no law of develop- ment which necessitates its preservation. If it be an advantage to the organism, the full force of heredity has play, and what are called the "recapitulative phases" of ancestral development are passed through by the indi- vidual in the course of development from the ego, But with remorseless thoroughness all such hereditary tenden- cies may be removed when such removal is an advantage to the organism, and the development from the ege may proceed directly to the adult degenerate form. Such is the case with many Z'unicata, the young of which never exhibit notochord and tadpole form ; indeed, were it not for the preservation of a few exceptional cases, like that of the Ascidian section of the group, we should have no direct evidence of the degeneration of Tunicata from tad- pole-like ancestry. The general result of the considerations which have Hypo-_ been urged with regard to degeneration is this, that it is thesis of prima facie as legitimate an hypothesis, that any existing – animal has developed by progressive simplification from more elaborate ancestors, as it is that such an animal has developed by a continuous and unbroken progress in elaboration from simpler ancestors; and we are specially called upon to apply the hypothesis of degeneration where the animal under consideration is likely from its mode of life to have undergone that process. Such modes of life, tending to degeneration, are parasitism, sessile or adherent habit, burrowing in the sea-bottom, and diffuse feeding. The animal which pursues living prey, and contends with other organisms for the dominion of the regions of earth and water that are flooded with light and richly supplied with oxygen gas, is the animal which represents the outcome of a longer or shorter period of progressive elaboration. It is worth while noting in parenthesis that in all cases the "whirligig of time" has

probably brought its revenges, and that the ancestry of a form evolved through a long period of progressive elaboration was at an antecedent period subject to simplification and degeneration, whilst in the past records of the present exemplars of the latter process there must certainly have been long stretches of continuous elaboration. | Applying these considerations to the construction of the Genea- | genealogical tree of Vertebrata, we find that the task is by logical i no means simplified. ~

10 0 We cannot with the earliest evolu-) tionists adopt a scale or ladder-like series, placing the :

livisions f Verte- | rate _hylum,

|

**

'harac. ors of

'rani.

'ta.

VERTEBRATA

simplest form on the lowest step; nor can we be satisfied with a treelike arrangement, in which the forms at the ends of the branches are always more elaborate than those nearer the trunk. Our genealogical tree will more strictly conform to that of a parvenu human family, if we take worldly prosperity in the latter case as corresponding to elaboration of structure in the former. The strict family genealogist will include in the successive ramifications of the tree the five sons of the founder of the family, one of whom remained an agricultural labourer, whilst two became brewers and two emigrated. The cousins in the next generation will be set forth in place, the sons of one brewer becoming paupers, whilst those of the other advance to the position of Government employés, and one to the peerage. Thus in successive branchings of py,pynorar the family history there may be alternate pro- sacs suits. gress and

degeneration. And so it must be rp Nasal Sec. — in the genealogical trees constructed by the r. zye.— naturalist: the fact that a branch is later in __

origin will not imply that it is higher in ela- jst post orat ad boration than those below it, and accordingly Fea Se Slit (we must not expect to draw our tree so as to? ~~ ~~} be able to trace all simpler forms to lower = off-sets of the tree. 4th

The structural features of those animals sth po. _ which must be admitted to the Vertebrate ~~gn po. phylum in consequence of possessing noto~~ chord, pharyngeal gill-slits, and dorsal nerve- plate, tubular or unrolled, are such as enable us very readily to group them in four great divisions, which appear to be equally distinct from one another. As to what may be the genetic relations to one another of these four groups we will inquire subsequently; for the present we term these groups "branches." They are as follows :—

Phylum VERTEBRATA. Branch a—Craniata (Cuvierian Vertebrata). b—Cephalochorda (Amphioxus). e—Urochorda (Tunicata). », d—Hemichorda (Balanoglossus).

The Vertebrata thus limited may be defined as Ccelomate Enterozoa (Metazoa) with well-developed ccelom. In all, with the exception of the more degenerate members of Urochorda, an elastic skeletal rod—the notochord—is de- veloped dorsally by an outgrowth of cells forming the wall of the primitive archenteron ; the notochord may or may not persist in adult life. Pharyngeal gill-slits, which may or may not persist in adult life, are developed in all Verte- brates. In all, except in certain Urochorda, the chief nerve- centre has the form of a dorsal, median, elongate tract, derived from the epiblast, which becomes sunk below the surface and invaginated so as to form a tube. In all there 1s a tendency to metameric repetition of parts, which may find its expression in a strongly-marked segmentation of the musculature of the body-wall and its skeleton, or may be recognizable only in a limited degree, as exhibited by the successive gill-slits or successive gonads.

We shall now examine the distinctive features of each of these large groups, and form an estimate of their rela- tions to one another, and of

their probable ancestry, this being the task to which we must limit ourselves in the brief space here afforded.

THE CRANIATA.

The Craniata are Vertebrata in which the tubular cerebro-spinal nerve-mass is swollen anteriorly to form a brain, consisting primarily of three successive vesicles, in connexion with the anterior of which the special nerves of the olfactory organs and of the eyes originate. The notochord, whilst extending posteriorly to the extremity of the body, does not reach quite so far forward anteriorly as the termina- tion of the nerve-tube.

aot

th___D

be

39

181

laterally so as to enclose and protect the brain (hence Craniata). Cartilage is developed in other parts of the body as a skeletal sub- stance, though it may be subsequently replaced in the cranium, as elsewhere, by bone. – The longitudinal muscles of the body-wall are divided by transverse fibrous septa into a series of segments, vary- ing in the adult from ten to one hundred or more in number. Cartilaginous neural arches, corresponding in number and position to the fibrous septa, and resting on the notochord, are developed so as to protect the nerve-cord. Cartilaginous bars also pass out- wards, with a direction at first horizontal and then ventral, from the sides of the notochord into the intermuscular fibrous scpta. Very generally, but not always, a tubular cartilaginous sheath forms round the notochord ; this sheath with rare exceptions be- comes segmented to form a series of vertebral bodies, which lie in the planes of the fibrous intersegmental septa, and, increasing in thickness by encroaching upon the substance of the notochord, finally obliterate it almost entirely.

SKELETAL VASCULAR ARCHES,

4. Pathetic of Eye. 5. Trigeminus.

Poeumogastric. 11. Spinal 3 Accessory. 12. Hypoglossal (Motor of Tongue).

Fre. 3.—Three diagrams showing characteristic disposition of gill-slits, skeletal arches, vascular arches, and furcal nerves in a primitive ideal Craniate. explanation :—pros., prosencephalon ; thal., thalamencephalon ; mes., mesencephalon ; met., met- encephalon ; aud., otocyst or auditory sac; tru. art., truncus arteriosus. (Original.)

The following abbreviations require

The pharyngeal slits follow closely upon the mouth, and in ex- isting Craniata never number more than eight pairs (see fig. 8). They are separated from one another and their apertures strengthened by a series of cartilaginous hoops, the first of which, that between the mouth and the first gill-slit, forms the primitive upper and lower jaw in all but the small and degenerate group Cyclostoma. The gill-slits when functional are generally protected by an opercular fold of the body-wall, which overhangs them and corresponds to the epipleural fold of Amphioxus, the collar of Balanoglossus, and doubtfully to the wall of the atrial chamber of Urochorda, The extension of this fold along the sides of the middle third of the body (between the pharyngeal region and the anus) acquired in ancestral Craniata the function of a continuous right and left lateral fin (see fig. 4). At the same time a continuous median fin, corre-

Fic. 4.—A. Hypothetical primitive Fish, with continuous lateral fins S, S (paired right and left), confluent with median azygos fin (An), the post-anal part of which is marked 8', whilst its dorsal part is marked D. 3B. Actual Fish, showing relation of isolated lateral and median fins to original hypothetical

fins of the upper figure. BrF, left pectoral fin (paired); BF, left pelvic fin (paired); AF, anal (post-anal) azygos fin; SF, caudal azygos fin; RF and

FF, anterior and posterior azygos dorsal fins; An, anus. (From Wiedersheim.)

sponding to the dorsal, caudal, and anal fins of existing Fishes, was developed. In both lateral and median fins a cartilaginous skeleton was developed, consisting of a basal longitudinal bar, supporting a number of rods like the teeth of a comb. The primitive form of fin skeleton is retained in the median fins of some sharks; the primitive lateral fin has in all cases either

entirely disappeared (Cyclostoma) (as has their anterior extension, the operculum, in many cases) or it has become, together with its skeletal elements, concentrated in two regions—forming the pectoral and the pelvic paired appendages or limbs, with their respective irdles.

‘ The cerebro-spinal nerve-centre and the disposition of the nerves issuing from it present a remarkable complexity, and at the same time uniformity, of strncture in all Craniata (see fig. 5). The fore- most of the three prim- sk. =

ary cerebral vesicles _- . A terior outgrowths, the prosencephala, to a “—~¢—-“-\————_3-——.

inedian dorsal out- growth, the OF VH Z ZHHC MH SD HE WT stalk of the at a i i

pineal eye (rudimentary in all exist- 7 ing Craniata), ELE and to a me- dian ventral outgrowth, which is met by an inva- gination

Opt a

of Fic. 5.—Diagrams of Craniate brain. A. Einbryonic eondition

tl id = of neural tube. “G, Cerebral portion; R, spinal cord; I, lee abies se Il, III, three primary cerebral vesicles. B. Longitudinal

of the oral section of adult brain, applicable to any and every Craniate

cavity form- Vertebrate. Bc, Floor of skull; Ch, notochord ; SD, roof of

i itu. Skull; NHI, nasal cavity ; VH, fore-brain, prosencephalon, _ oo or cerebrum ; Ol/, olfactory lobe; Cs, corpus striatum ; 4H, itary ors thalamencephalon, corresponding to primary anterior vesicle, further, to a from which the prosencephalon has grown out as well as Z, pair of latera] the epiphysis or pineal body; I, infundibulum, with attached

hypophysis or pituitary body H; Opt, optic nerve; Tho,

outgrowths, thalainus opticus ; HC, posterior commissure; MH, mesen- which be- cephalon (corpora quadrigemina or optic lobes or mid-brain); come the HH, cerebellum or metencephalon ; NH, medulla oblongata

i or epencephalon (the reference line touches the membranous _ and is roof of the so-called "fourth ventricle" of the brain); Co, optic nerves canal of the spinal cord or myelon. (From Wiedersheim.) and = retin

respectively. The modifications of the hindmost of the three prim- ary vesicles are also extremely definite and persistent throughout the group: its anterior dorsal surface enlarges and becomes the cerebellum (the metencephalon), whilst the cavity of its hinder part (the medulla oblongata or the epencephalon) becomes compara- tively wide, and is covered dorsally by a thin membrane only, in which nervous tissue does not take a part. The intermediate primary cerebral vesicle (the mesencephalon) does not give rise to outgrowths.

In all Craniata nerves are given off from the cerebro-spinal cord or tube with great regularity, one right and left in each success- ive myomere or segment of the body-wall. Each nerve has two roots, a dorsal (sensory) and a ventral (motor). A commissure between cach successive pair of deep or intestinal branches of the spinal nerves forms the so-called sympathetic nerve-cords, one on each side of the vertebral column. Nerves similar to the spinal nerves, but not identical with them, are given off from the brain, and perforate the eranial box right and left. In all Craniata there are ten pairs of nerves which originate thus, and in the higher forms two more pairs (elsewhere spinal) are included amongst those which thus perforate the cranium (spinal accessory and

hypoglossal). The order and character of the cranial nerves are the same in all Craniata. The first (olfactory) and the second (optic) are unlike spinal nerves in both distribution and origin. As we pass back- wards along the series, the cranial nerves are found to resemble more and more the ordinary spinal nerves. Hence it has been inferred that the cranial region consisted at one time of a number of distinct myomeres (as many as nine), which have become fused and modi- fied to form the typical craniate "head." The oculo-motor or 3d nerve indicates the first of these segments, the trochlear or 4th nerve the second, the abducens or 6th the third, the facial and auditory (7th and 8th) the fourth, the glosso-pharyngeal or 9th the fifth, and the vagus or 10th, with certain of its branches supposed to have been originally distinct nerves, the sixth, seventh, eighth and ninth. It is probable that in Craniata the metamerism of the gill-slits does not correspond to the metamerism of the body-wall. 'The mouth and each successive gill-slit are related to a bifurcate branch of a cranial nerve (furcal nerve) in lower Crantata (see fig. 3); these furcal nerves do not correspond, so far as we can at present judge, with cranial myomeres. F

The lateral pair of eyes (as opposed to the rudimentary pineal or parietal cye) present a striking uniformity of origin and structure throughout Craniata. Not only are they uniformly developed from three elements, viz., the retinal cup which grows out from the anterior of the primary cerebral vesicles, the epidermal lens which grows inwards from the surface of the skin, and the connective tissue between these two, but we find that the muscles attached to the eyeball are identical throughout the scries: that is, the superior,

VER TORR AT A

inferior, and internal rectus, and the inferior oblique muscles repre- sent the first cranial myomere, the superior oblique represent the second, and the external rectus represent the third cranial myomere.

The olfactory sacs are paired in all except Cyclostoma, in which they are represented by a single sac which may or may not be archaic in its azygos character. The auditory sacs are paired organs which develop as invaginations from the surface, —the orifice of invagination closing up,

—at the hinder part of the cranial region, They present a gradually increasing complexity of form as we pass from aquatic to terrestrial forms, but are identical in essential struc- ture throughout.

All Craniata, except some Fishes, possess a muscular process on the floor of the oral cavity which may carry teeth, or act as a lick- ing organ, or assist in suction. This is the tongue.

All Craniata, with degradational exceptions, possess an outgrowth, single or paired, of the post-pharyngeal region of the alimentary eanal, which is filled with gas. In many Fishes this becomes shut off from the gut ; in others it remains in communication with the gut by an open duct. In Fishes it functions as a hydrostatic appar- atus. In terrestrial Craniata it is subservient to the gas-exchange of the blood and becomes the lungs.

All Craniata have a large and compact liver ; and a pancreas is also uniformly present, except in Cyclostoma, some bony Fishes, and the lower Amphibia.

All Craniata have a thick-walled muscular heart, which appears first as an "atrium," receiving the great veins, attached to a "ventricle" by which the blood received from the atrium is pro- pelled through a number of arteries, right and left, corresponding in number to the pharyngeal gill-slits between which they pass. A preatrial chamber (the sinus) and an extra-ventricular chamber (the conus) are added to the primitive chambers; but the most important modifications arise in consequence of the development of pulmonary respiration and the gradual separation of the cavities of the heart by median septa into a double series, a right and a left. The plan of the great arteries in all Crandata is in origin the same, and is determined by the primitive existence of a branchial circula- tion in the gill-slits, which is obliterated in higher forms. Simi- larly the plan of the great veins is identical, the primitive posterior vertebral veins of lower Craniata, though persistent in higher members of the group, having their function gradually usurped by the excessive development of the renal vein, and of renal-portal and ultimately of iliac veins.

All Craniata have a lymphatic system or series of channels by which the exudation from the capillary blood-vessels is returned to the vascular

system. It includes in its space-system the ceelom and a variety of irregular and canalicular spaces in the connective tissues. Masses of spongy tissue (adenoid tissue, lymphatic glands) exist, through which the lymph filters, and there acquires corpus- cular elements as well as chemical elaboration. At various points in various Craniata pulsating or simple communications are estab- lished between the lymphatic system and the veins. A special aiid characteristic communication is established in the spleen, an organ which is found in all Craniata, either as a single mass or as scattered masses of spongy tissue in which blood-vessels and lymph- atics unite.

The renal organs of Craniata are primitively a series of nephridia corresponding in number to the myotomes of the mid-region of the body in which they exist. They are connected in the simplest Craniata by a right and a left archinephrie duct, which appear to be in origin lateral grooves of the epidermal surface. This primi- tive renal system has been modified in some lower forms (Cyclostoma and Teleostean Fishes) by the atrophy of its anterior portion. But in all other Craniata it acquires relations to the gonads or ovary and testes, so that an anterior portion of the archinephros and a corresponding longitudinal tract of the duct become separated to serve as oviduct, a middle portion to serve as sperm-duct, while a posterior portion retains exclusively or shares with the middle portion the function of urinary excretion. The male and female gonads are, with the rarest exceptions, developed in distinct indi- viduals, though the rudiments of the suppressed gonad may in some cases (Amphibia) be traceable in either sex.

The group of Craniate Vertebrata thus anatomically described, Sub- | whilst retaining the essential unity indicated, presents an immense divisions | The chief modifications are distinctly of Crant- traceable to and accounted for by mechanical and physiological ata

variety of modifications.

adaptation to a terrestrial and air-breathing life, as opposed to the earlier aquatic and branchial condition. The existing forms of Craniata have beet arrested at several points, in the progress towards the most extreme adaptation to terrestrial conditions, which is presented by those forms that

can not only breath air and live on dry ground but fly habitually in the air. The organs most obviously aifected by this progressive adaptation are the skin, the skeleton, especially of the limbs, the pharyngeal gills, and the air-bladder. This fact will appear most clearly in the subjoined classification of Craniata ; for space does not permit us to pursue further the history of these modifications.

_ Ances-

tral form of Crant- abil.

VERTEBRATA

Classification of CRanraTa.!

Grade A. CYCLOSTOMA. Class I. Myxinoidea. II. Petromyzontia. Grade B. GNATHOSTOMA. Grade a. Branchiata heterodactyla. Class I. Pisces. II. Dipnot. Grade b, Branchiata pentadactyla. Class. Amphibia. Grade c. Pentadactyla lipobranchia. Branch a. Monocondyla. Branch b. Amphicondyla. Class I. Reptilia. Class. Mammalia. If. Aves.

If we now briefly consider what must have been the common ancestral form from which these Craniata have proceeded, making use of such internal evidence as their structure affords, we find that we get no further back than such an animal as would fit the description given above, with the exception that we should be warranted in substituting in the ancestor a pair of continuous lateral fins, with comb-like cartilaginous skeleton, in place of the two pairs of fins, or their total defect, seen in living Craniata. We get no clear suggestion from the study of Craniata themselves as to the meaning of the curious shape of the brain and its outgrowths (though the pineal outgrowth has recently been explained as an eye), nor as to the original genesis of the notochord. We should, however, be justified in representing that region which now cor- responds to the hinder part of the skull and brain as more fully developed and segmented, so as to give a series of separate myotomes and perhaps separate nerves corresponding to the several furcal branches of the vagus ; and we may very well suppose that the num- ber of pharyngeal gill-slits was larger in the

ancestral than in any living form, though it seems improbable that in any true Craniate did each gill-slit correspond to a distinct muscular segment.

An attempt to go further than this has been made by Dr Anton

Dohrn by the method of hypothesis and subsequent corroborative inquiry into facts of minute structure and embryological history. Making use of the principle of degeneration, Dohrn started with the legitimate hypothesis that the branches of Vertebrata other than Craniata—viz., Cephalochorda, Urochorda, and (though at the time he commenced his work their structure was not fully under- stood) Hemichorda—were not to be regarded as permanent records of steps in the evolution of Craniata, but rather as greatly de- generate offshoots from the ancestors of that group, which could throw but little light on the character of their non-degenerate ancestors. A second fundamental assumption which led Dohrn to his position was that the segmentation of the Craniates' body-wall is a primitive and essential feature in their structure, and becomes more and more fully expressed instead of less developed the further we go back in their ancestry. Dolirn, in fact, assumes that what is called metameric segmentation is a phenomenon of structure which has occurred once only in the history of animal form, and that all segmented animals are genetically related and descended from a common segmented ancestor. Assuming this, he pointed to the existing Chetopod Worms as most nearly representing at the present day the common ancestor of segmented animals. They have, as he pointed out, a high organization, little inferior to that of the lowest Craniata; they possess a well-developed ccelom, blood-vessels with red blood, a segmental series of nephridia (modified in some as gonaducts), segmental branchiz, and lateral locomotive organs; not a few develop cartilage as a skeletal sup- iy and many show a concentration and fusion of segments to orm a complex head, which resembles, so far, that of Craniata. The ventral in place of the dorsal position of the nerve-cord led Dohrn to accept De Blainville's conception that the dorsal and ventral surfaces are reversed in Vertebrata, as compared with Annelids, Crustaceans, and Insects, so that the Vertebrate is com- – to an Insect walking with its ventral surface upward. This ed further to the notion that the mouth of the Chetopod or Annelid, which penetrates the nerve-cord, or rather passes between Its two

divaricated lateral constituents in those animals, has in Craniata disappeared, its place being taken by a new mouth de- rived from the modification of a pair of gill-slits. The remnant of the old mouth, which should, if the comparison instituted holds good, lie in Crantata somewhere on the dorsal surface of the cranial Tegion, was sought by Dohrn in some of the peculiar and hitherto unexplained median structures of the brain: at one time the fourth ventricle with its deficient roof was suggested as thus to be explained, whilst subsequently the curious median structures,—the pineal and pituitary bodies,—were called in as possibly thus significant.

Without pursuing further the elaboration of Dohrn's views, it must be at once noted that, whilst the legitimacy of the assumption of degeneration must be admitted, the second assumption, viz., that metameric segmentation is a character bringing all forms showing it into a special genetic continuity, cannot be accepted.

1 The classes here enumerated are described in separate articles, whilst Cyclostoma and Dipnoi are included in the article IcarHyoLoay.

The property of repeating units of structure, so as to build up a courplex of many similar parts united to form one individual, is a very general one in organic forms, and is exhibited in various con- ditions by both animals and plants. Its simplest expression is found in cell-structure and the binary division of cells. It shows itself as affecting larger masses of structure in the arborescent colonies of Calentera, in the radial or antimeric composition of Echinoderms and of Compound Ascidians, and in the linear or metameric segmentation of Worms, Arthropods, and Vertebrates. There is abundant evidence that this property is a general one, which may assert itself at any period in the history of a group of animals, and does not imply special unity of origin in forms which exhibit it. As pointed out in the article Hyprozoa, merogenesis —the name applicable to this phenomenon generally—may take an extreme and complete character, leading to the separation and independence of the units of structure produced ; in that case it may be termed eumerogenesis. Or the process may be very partial, occurring only during a period of

embryonic growth, and subse- quently ceasing, so that later growth obscures or obliterates it altogether (dysmerogenesis). There is no ground for assuming that either one of these extremes is fundamental or original. Any mechanical or nutritional condition may lead to merogenesis in an organism in which the tissues have a certain reproductive capacity, or have not acquired final differentiation ; and it will depend upon the balance of advantage, determined by natural selection, whether the segmentation (supposing the merogenesis to take the linear form) results in the separation of segment-buds, or in the formation of an annulate body, or leaves traces of its occurrence only in certain tissues and organs. The Cestoid Worms present within the range of a single group almost every grade of eumerogenesis and dysmero- genesis (Caryophyllzus, Ligula, Tenia). In the otherwise amero-~ genetic Mollusca, Chiton and the pearly Nautilus show dysmero- genesis in certain organs, whilst the Planarian Worms frequently exhibit eumerogenesis in their bud-segmentation (to be compared with that of the Annelid Ctenodrilus described by Zeppelin, g) and the elongated Nemertines only slight traces of dysmerogenesis.

If we deny Dohrn's assuinption with reference to segmentation, we are no longer led in the direction of the Annelids (Chetopods) in our search for the ancestry of the Craniate Vertebrata.

The fact that the notochord is the forerunner of the segmented vertebral column, and is itself never segmental, instead of being a difficulty, acquires directive significance. The fact that the nerve tube is dorsal, and not ventral, no longer requires the large assump- tion that animals have reversed their habitual carriage, but suggests that the Craniates' ancestor had a dorsal median nerve, which has increased in size and importance so as to become the nerve-tube of existing fornis. The explanation of the curious struc- ture of the brain will have to be found otherwise than in the assump- tion of a perforating pharynx,—an as- sumption which the recent discovery of the true nature of the pineal body has rendered untenable in the latest form advocated by its ingenious author, whose speculations, nevertheless, de- serve the fullest re- cognition as having stimulated inquiry and guided observa- tion.

Balfour (zo) in 1878 refused to a- dopt Dohrn's views, AMPHIOXUS and considered it ryq, 6.—Comparison of nervous systems of a Nemertine, probable that the aprimitive Craniate, and Amphiorus. m, Median dor- dorsal position of sal nerve, which becomes the myelon in the Craniate the nerve-cord in and Amphioxus, acquiring an anterior enlargement in

the former ; 1, lateral nerve (right and left), absent by

Vertebrata could be degeneration in Amphiorus; lg, ganglia of lateral

accounted for, with- nerve, forming a single large lobe on each side in

5 i i ries mn

oe ay Rae NAOR TS Orariaies Ftogte of vague verve of tho Oraniste, of a substitution of a pair of gill-slits for

dr, dorsal roots of nerves given off from myelon or median dorsal nerve; vr, ventral roots of these nerves,

the original mouth,

by assuming that ubrecht.)

here represented as separate nerves; 0, mouth. (After primitively the nerve-cord consisted of two lateral cords, as seen at the present time in the Nemertine Worms, and that these cords have coalesced dorsally in Vertebrata, just as it is clearly demon-

———

roy

Char- acters of Cephalo- chorda.

184

strable that two originally lateral cords have coalesced ventrally to form the Annelid's ventral nerve-chain.

The comparison of the Vertebrates' nervous system with that of the Nemertines had already been made by the present writer, as cited by Hubrecht (zz) in connexion with the latter's discovery of a complete sub-epidermal nerve-tunic in those worms. Hubrecht has more recently on two occasions (72 and 737) developed an in- teresting and important comparison of Nemertine and Vertebrate structure. He has in the first place suggested that the notochord of Vertebrata is nothing more than a modified survival of the pro- boscidean sheath of the Nemertines, whilst the oral invagination of the epidermis, in connexion with the hypophysis cerebri of the Vertebrate, may be a last remnant of the proboscis itself. More conclusively he has drawn attention to the median dorsal nerve of Nemertines as corresponding to the Vertebrate cerebro-spinal nerve- cord, whilst the great lateral nerve-cords of Nemertines, and the lateral ganglia in which they expand anteriorly, are compared to the lateral ganglia of the cephalic region of Craniate Vertebrata and the nerve of the lateral line (see fig. 6). The comparison is strengthened by the existence of a metameric series of transverse nerves in the Nemertine, which correspond in respect of their meta- merism and their connexion with a dorsal median trunk, with the spinal nerves of Craniata. Hubrecht is careful to insist that he does not regard the Nemertines as representing the direct ancestry of Vertebrata ; but he points out that from the primitive condition of an elongate animal, with a plexiform nerve-tunic, it is readily conceivable that a form was developed in which the nervous tissue was concentrated in three cords,~—a median dorsal and two lateral,— and from such a form we can derive the Craniates' condition by excessive development of the median tract and relatively small development of the lateral cords, whilst the Nemertines' condition would be attained by the converse process. The tubular condition of the cerebro-spinal nerve-cord of Vertebrata, it may here be re- marked, is now very generally regarded as being in its origin a purely developmental feature. It was primitively separated from the epidermis by delamination and in-sinking, and the mode of formation by invagination of a canal has been substituted in accord- ance with a general embryological law of growth, which is that bulky structures originating beneath a surface from the cells form- ing that surface take up their position in embryonic growth by in- vagination of the parent surface. The tubular form, having thus started, seems to have been utilized during one phase of Vertebrate evolution for the

respiration of the nervous tissue, by the introduc- tion through an anterior unclosed pore of a current of water, which escaped by the neuranal canal (as in larval Amphioxus).

There is a wide gap between any form presenting an approach to a Nemertine Worm and the most simple Craniate Vertcbrate which can be imagined still provided with the organization characteristic of all Craniata. To pass from such a Worm-like animal to a Craniate, we have to account for and introduce, amongst other new develop- ments, (1) a greatly increased metamerisin, showing itself in the segmentation of the muscles of the body-wall and in the repetition of the nephridia ; (2) the characteristic sense organs; (3) the lateral and median longitudinal folds or continuous fins; (4) the carti- laginous rods and bars of the skeleton ; (5) the gill-slits, even if " —— the notochord to be represented by the proboscidean sheath.

It remains to inquire whether the structure of the other Verte- brata throws light on this long hypothetical passage from the simple Worm phase to the elaborate Craniate, or suggests any other ahcecstry.

THE CEPHALOCHORDA.

_Cephalochorda are Vertebrata in which there is no anterior dilatation of the nerve-tube to form a brain (see fig. 6) and no specialized skeletal brain-case. The notochord extends from one extremity of the elongate body to the other as a tapering uncon- stricted rod, passing anteriorly some distance in front of the nerve-cord. The longitudinal muscles of the body-wall are divided by transverse fibrous septa into a series of segments (sixty-two in Amphioxus lanceolatus), the more anterior of which are in front of the mouth and not in any way fused to form a head or cranial structure. Dense connective tissue (differing but little from car- tilage) forms an unsegmented sheath to the notochord and an unbroken neural canal above it, in which the nerve-cord lies The same tissue forms a series of metamerically repeated fin rays, which support the base of a median fin extending along the entire dorsal surface. The fin is continued ventrally from the caudal ex- tremity as far forward as the anus, but without fin rays. Two lateral up-growths of the body-wall (the epipleura) extend one on either side from the head as far back as the anus. Each of

these is divided into three regions,—(1) an anterior, which forms the preoral hood ; (2) a median, which forms the wall of the great branchial chamber, the two folds meeting one another and coales- eing in the ventral mid-line, excepting where they leave a posterior median aperture, the atriopore ; and (3) the post-atrioporal preanal ventral fin (extending between atriopore and anus), which is formed by the complete coalescence of the two folds behind the atriopore.

VERTEHBRATA

anean

i

urna aw

3

=>

SSS >

Fic. 7.—Amphioxus lanceolatus, Yarrell (Branchiostoma lubricum, Coste). (Original drawings.) (1) Lateral view of adult, to show general form, the myomeres, fin rays, and gonads. A, oral tentacles (28 to 32 in full-grown animals, 20 to 24 in half-grown specimens); B, preoral hood or preoral epi- pleur; C, plicated ventral surface of atrial chamber ; D1, Dl', 26, gonads, twenty-six pairs, coincident with myotomes 10 to 36; E, metapleur or lateral ridge on atrial epipleur; F, atriopore, coincident with myotome 36; Gl, G15, G34, double ventral fin rays, extending from myotomes 37 to 52, but hav- ing no numerical relation to them ; H, position of anus, between myotomes 51 and 52; I, notochord, projecting beyond myotomes; K', K27, K62, myo- tomes or muscular segments of body-wall, 62in number; L100, 1230, 1,253, dor- sal fin rays, about 250 in number, the hard substance of the ray being absent at the extreme ends of the body (these have no constant numerical relation to the myomeres); M, notochord as seen through the transparent myotomes, the thin double-lined spaces being the connective-tissue septa and the broader spaces the

muscular tissue of the myotomes ; N, position of brown funnel of left side (atrio-ccelomic canal) ; O, nerve-tube resting on notochord.

(2) Dissection of Amphioxus. By a horizontal incision on each side of the body a large ventral area has been separated and turned over, as it were on a hinge, to the animal's left side. The perforated pharyngeal region has then been detached from the adherent epipleura or opercular folds (wall of atrial or branchial chamber) by cutting the fluted pharyngo-pleural membrane d, and separated by. a vertical cut from the intestinal region. a, Edge of groove formed by adhesion of median dorsal surface of alimentary canal to sheath of notochord ; b, median dorsal surface of alimentary canal; ¢, left dorsal aorta; cc, single dorsal aorta, formed by union of the two anterior vessels ; ce', same vessel resting on intestine ; d, cut edge of pharyngo-pleural folds of atrial tunic, really the original outer body-wall before the downgrowth of epipleura ; d', atrial tunic (original body-wall) at non-perforate region, cut and turned back so as to expose peri-enteric ccelom and intestine 7; e', Up- standing folds of body-wall (pharyngo-pleural folds) on alternate bars of per- forate region of body; f, atrio-ccelomic canals or brown funnels (collar-pores of Balanoglossus) ; g, cavity of a gonad-sac; m, cut musculature of pody- wall; n, anus; 0, post-atrioporal extension of atrial chamber in form of 4

cecum; p, atriopore; g, hepatic cecum ; 7, intestine; s, celom; ¢, tte a cacsion tebween rae Ae canal and sheath of notochord ; 2, atrial chamber or branchial cavity; w, post-atrioporal portion of intestine; «, canals of metapleura exposed by cutting ; E, probe passing through atrio- pore into atrial or branchial chamber ; FF', probe passed from coelom, where it expands behind the atriopore, into narrower perienteric ccelom of pre-

joporal region. aya) Portion of (2) enlarged to show atrio-ccelomic canals ("' brown funnels"

of Lankester). Lettering as in (2). – hn)

(4) Section taken transversely through preoral region near termination of nerve-tube. a, Olfactory ciliated pit on animal's left side, its wall confluent with substance of nerve-tube ; 0, pigment spot (rudimentary eye) on anterior

termination of nerve-tube; c, first pair of nerves in section; d, fin ray; e,

myotome; f, notochord; g, space round myotome ? artifact or ccelom); h,

subchordal canal (? blood-vessel); 1, a symmetrical epipleura of preoral hood. The originally double character of this part of the ventral fin is indicated by the double series of metameric fin rays whieh support it. It is probable that these "epipleural" folds of Amphioxus correspond to the opercular folds and lateral fins of Craniata. No cartilaginous fin rays are developed in the atrio-pleural (opercular) region of the epipleura ; but a longitudinal unsegmented bar of cartilaginous consistency strengthens its side and bounds a lymph- holding canal (x in fig. 8).

The gill-slits in Amphioxus are very numerous (one hundred or more), and have no numerical relation to the metameres of the muscular body-wall, though the first few which appear in the embryo correspond at the time to successive myomeres, —a relation which they subsequently lose. The sides of the gill-slits are sup- ported by chitinous (?) bars, and each slit is divided into two equal portions by a longitudinal tongue or bar, which grows out from the dorsal margin of the slit soon after its first formation. The number of gill-slits increases continually throughout the life of Amphioxus by the formation of new ones at the posterior border of the pharynx, whilst the myomeres do not increase in number after early embryonic life.

The nerves given off from the dorsal nerve-cord of Amphioxus are of two kinds,—dorsal and ventral. The dorsal nerves correspond in number and position to the myomeres, right and left, except in the most anterior region of the body, where two larger pairs of dorsal nerves are given off from near the extremity of the nerve- cord, and pass forward, supplying the region which lies in front of the termination of the musculature. The ventral nerves are minute, and are given off numerously, right and left, from the nerve-tube throughout its length. The dorsal and ventral nerves of a single myomere appear to correspond, respectively, to the dorsal and ventral roots of a spinal nerve of a Craniate.

There is a single olfactory pit in Amphiowus, which rests upon the left side of the anterior termination of the nerve-cord (see fig. 7, 4). Within

the cavity of the nerve-cord at the same point a patch of brown pigment is present (eye-spot). There are no repre- sentatives of the lateral eyes of Craniata and no otocysts.

There is no representative of the Craniates' swim-bladder in Amphioxus. A single wide diverticulum of the alimentary canal represents the liver of Craniata ; the pancreas is unrepresented.

The vascular system is singularly incomplete: large trunks exist, but few branches and no heart, whilst the blood itself is colourless, and communicates (as in Craniata by the lymphatic ""hearts") with the ccelomic fluid at various points. A contractile ventral trunk runs along the lower face of the slit pharynx, and sends vessels right and left up the successive bars; these vessels unite above, asin Craniata, to form a double "' dorsal aorta," which posteriorly becomes a single vessel. A portal system of veins can be traced in connexion with the hepatic caecum.

No system of lymphatic vessels, nor lymphatic "glands," nor a spleen exist; but the ccelom, and certain other spaces in the connective tissue, contain coagulable lymph, and correspond to the lymph spaces of Oraniata.

There is no series of nephridia, nor a renal organ formed by the coalescence of nephridia, nor are gonaducts present. The "brown funnels," a pair of funnel-shaped tubes discovered by Lankester (74), place the ccelomic space of the opercular (epipleural) down- growths of the body-wall in communication with the space which these folds enclose. They appear to be identical with the "collar- pores" of Balanoglossus, and it is doubtful whether they represent nephridia,

Tn the larval Amphioxus there is developed from the left anterior coelomic pouch a glandular tube and a sense-organ, which are re-Presented in the adult by the structures marked / in fig. 8,B. Quite istinet from the foregoing is a nephridial tube lying on the left " ¢ behind the mouth of the larval Amphioxus. This tube is prob- – the Same thing as the subneural gland of Ascidians and as Be Poscidean gland and pore of Balanoglossus. All are probably a é nature of nephridia. In the adult Amphioxus the nephridial Se e ; In an atrophied condition, though large*

and active in a late Fai, Ve when the olfactory pit opens into the neural canal. matschek (75) describes this condition in " ausgebildete" but not In adult examples.*

& om gonads are distinct ovaries and testes ; they are developed ae inct male and female individuals in corresponding positions,

In that part of the ccelom which is carried downwards in the

; BIGHT Fic. 8.—Transverse sections of Amphioxus. (Original.) A. Section through re-

gion of atrio-ccelomic canals. B. Section in front of mouth; the right and left sides are transposed. a, Cavity surrounding fin ray; a', fin ray; }, muscular tissue of myotome; ¢, nerve-cord; d, notochord ; ¢, left aorta; 7 thickened ridges of epithelium of preoral chamber (Rader organ); g, coiled tube lying in a ceelomic space on right side of preoral hood, apparently an artery; h, cuticle of notochord ; i, connective-tissue sheath of notochord ; x, median ridge of skeletal canal of nerve-cord; 1, skeletal canal protecting nerve-cord ; m, inter-segmental skeletal septum of myotome ; n, subcutaneous skeletal connective tissue; 0, ditto of metapleur (this should be relatively thicker than it is); g, subcutaneous connective tissue of ventral surface of atrial wall (not a canal, as supposed by Stieda and others); 7, epiblastic epi- thelium ; s, gonad-sac containing ova; ¢, pharyngeal bar in section, one of the "tongue" bars alternating with the main bars and devoid of pharyngo- pleural fold and celom; w, so-called " dorsal" ceelom; x, lymphatic space or canal of metapleur; y, sub-pharyngeal vascular trunk; 2, blood-vessel (portal vein) on wall of hepatic cecum; aa, space of atrial or branchial chamber ; 6b, ventral groove of pharynx (anteriorly this takes the form ofa ridge); cc, hyperbranchial groove of pharynx; dd, lumen or space of hepatic cecum; eé, narrow celomic space surrounding hepatic cecum ; //, lining cell-layer of hepatic cecum ; gg, inner face of a pharyngeal bar clothed with hypoblast, the outer face covered with epiblast (represented black); hh, a

main pharyngeal bar with projecting pharyngeal fold (on which the reference line rests) in section, showing ccelomic space beneath the black epiblast ; 72, transverse ventral muscle of epipleura; kk, raphe or plane of fusion of two down-grown epipleura ; JJ, space and nucleated cells on dorsal face of noto- chord ; mm, similar space and cells on its ventral face.

descending right and left outgrowth (epipleura, opercula) of the body-wall, which encloses the atrial or branchial chamber. The gonads are twenty-six pairs in number, corresponding to the 10-36 myomeres. They are devoid of ducts, and discharge their pro- ducts by dehiscence into the atrial chamber, whence they pass to the exterior, either by the atriopore or by entering the pharynx through its slits, when they are ejected by the mouth.

In many respects Amphioxus, the only representative of Cephalo- chorda, bears evidence of being derived from a more highly organized

+4, eee

Relation-

ship of Cephalo-

186

ancestry. Its mode of life (burrowing in the sand in shallow water, whilst its general build is that of a swimming animal) and the nature of its food (diatoms, &e., carried into the pharynx by ciliary

chorda to currents) in themselves suggest such a history. The vascular Craniata system is elaborate in plan yet ineomplete in detail, suggesting an

and the Verte- brate aneestry.

atrophy of its finer branches, which is consistent with the small size of Amphioxus and the general principle that a complex vascular system can

only be developed in an animal which has attained to a certain bulk. The absence of well-developed sense organs and of "cephalization" in an animal which has attained to such elabora- tion of strueture as is shown by the pharynx and atrial ehamber, and whieh has such well-developed museles to the body-wall, is an inconsistency best explicable by degeneration ; so, too, the existence of the elaborata series of fin rays, which are ont of proportion to the mechanical requirements of so small a form.

Degenerate though Amphioxus must be, the ancestor from

VERTEBRA S

tive size. For the same reason no vaseular system develops in the Ascidian tadpole until it has ceased to be locomotive and has entered upon its later development ; but in the larger adult Urochorda a contractile heart and a well-developed vascular system are present.

No undeniable nephridia are present in Larvalia nor in the larval Ascidian, and no structure comparable to the collar pores of Balano- glossus or the atrio-ccelomic funnels of Amphioxus is known in them.

The subneural gland, however, a glandular tube opening anteriorly near the mouth of the pharynx, appears to be identieal with the preoral larval gland of Amphioxus and the proboscis pore and gland of Balanoglossus. It is probably to be regarded as a nephridium, and has been compared by Julin and Van Beneden to the pituitary body of Craniata, with which it corresponds in position and de- velopment.

The gonads of Larvalia are developed in irregular masses on the walls of the ceelom, ovaries and testes in the same individual.

As above indicated, there is a small seetion of Urochorda which Classi- retain in adult life the tadpole-like form and the essential Verte- fication brate organs which are exhibited by the larve only of other Uro- of Uy.) chorda, and by a few only of these. This necessitates a primary chorda.

whieh it started ou its retrogressive eourse was probably a long way behind any living Craniate. There is no reason to suppose that this aneestor had a cranium, or that the muscular segments

Char- acters of Uro- chorda.

and segmental nerves in its eephalic region were fused and welded. - Amphioxus has probably lost, as compared with that ancestor, lateral eyes and otoeysts, nephridia, and, above all, size. The epipleural folds which now form oral hood, branchial opercula, and eoaleseed ventral fin were probably originally less developed lateral ridges, protecting the gill-slits anteriorly and posteriorly, serving by their undulations to assist in locomotion, whilst the median fin and its rays were large and functional.

One of the most eurious features in the structure of Amphioxus is its asymmetry. The anus is on the animal's right side, the nasal pit upon its left ; the myomeres on the two sides of the noto- chord do not eoineide ; and the right and left dorsal spinal nerves do not arise vis-a-vis to one another. There is no eonclusive reason for regarding this as an ancestral feature, although the early larval form is as curiously asymmetrical asthe adult. Amphioxus habitu- ally rests upon the sand, lying upon one side of the body, and it is possible that the distortion is related to this habit, as in the case of the Plenroneetid Fishes.

However we may estimate Amphioxus, we are not led by it, though its muscular metamerism is so well marked, a single step in the direetion of the Annelids, neither are we led direetly, it is trne, in the direetion of Nemertina in eonnexion with those points, as to relationship of notochord with proboseis sheath and nerve-cord with median dorsal nerve, insisted on by Hubrecht. But it will be seen below that, by the agreement of Amphioxus with Balanoglossus in the strueture of the perforatious of the pharynx, in the possession of collar pores, and in the preoral glandular body, we do arrive at an important connexion with Nemertine-like forms.

THE UROCHORDA.

Urochorda are Vertebrata which, with the exception of the group Larvalia (Appendicularia, Fritillaria, Otkopleura), have receded very far indeed

from the eharaeteristic Vertebrate structure, show- ing neither notochord nor nerve-eord, and gill-slits only of the most highly modified and aberrant form ; some, however (certain Ascidians), pass through a larval eondition in which these struc- tures are present in the normal form. It is necessary for the pur- poses of the present article to eonfine our attention to Larvalia and to the larval forms whieh retain ancestral characters. (For a de- scription of the whole group, see the article Tunrcata.) In Uro- chorda thus signalized the notochord never reaches forward into the anterior part of the body, but is confined to the tail (hence U7ro- chorda). The longitudinal museles of the region traversed by the notochord show traces of metameric segmentation, whieh are prob- ably survivals of a more complete development of myomeres in ancestral forms (76). There is no trace in Larvalia of fin rays or other skeletal structure. Corresponding to the opercular folds and epipleura of Craniata and Cephalochorda are ridges of the body-wall, which protect the pharyngeal gill-slits, and may give rise, as in Cephalochorda, to an enelosed atrial chamber with atriopore. The gill-slits in these larval forms are few in number (one or two pairs), but in many of the aberrant Urochorda (by far the majority of the group) they beeome excessively numerous and complicated in strueture, and are supported by a chitinous (7) framework, as in Cephalochorda. It has been suggested that the fenestrated structure of the pharyngeal wall in Tunicata does not represent a series of gill-slits, but a single pair of slits subdivided. This suggestion is worthy of further consideration.

The eerebro-spinal nerve-eord is tubular and presents itself as a dilated cerebral vesicle in front of the notochord, and as a narrower part running along the whole length of the notoehord.

Sense organs are present—a single eye with pigment and lens a single otocyst, and an olfaetory pit (Zarvalia). The mouth is

division of the braneh into two grades. Grade A.—LARVALIA (Appendicularia, Fritillaria, Otkopleura), Grade B.—SACCATA. Class I. —Ascidiw (Simplices, Sociales, Composite, Pyroso- mitdea).

Class II.—Salpiformia (Salpiidea, Doltoltidea).

C

Fic. 9.—Fritillaria (Appendicularia) furcata, one of the Urochorda. (Original drawings.) A. Lateral surface view, showing habitual carriage of "body" at right angles to "tail." B. Organs of body as seen by transparency. C. Lateral view of body with tail in morphological position, showing organs by transparency. D. Surface view of animal from below to show apertures. 4, Otocyst in connexion with brain ; }, olfactory pit; c, dorsal hood ; d, nerve- tube passing from enlarged brain to caudal region, where it forms one true ganglion and aseries of minor enlargements, corresponding to the rudimentary ""myotomes " or ''myomeres" of the tail; e, stomach; f, ovary ; g, testis; fh, notochord (urochord); 7, nerve-tube or myelon in tail; k, fifth myomere of ge ee m, heart; 7, gill-slit; 0, endostyle or hypobranchial groove;

, Mouth.

Urochorda are so extremely aberrant, and show so little more Relatic

than a transient developmental indication of the essential Verte- of Uro brate organs, that we cannot hope to get much positive information chorda from them on the subject of Vertebrate ancestry. Only the minute Verte- Appendicularіz (Larvalia) retain the Vertebrate structure through brate — f life, and they are obviously, on aecount of their minute size, ex- ancest! tremely degenerate. It is possible to make hypotheses as to the

dorsal in position in the Aseidian tadpole, but subterminal in Lar- valia. The pharynx is wide, and is followed by a narrow ceso- phagus, stomach, and intestine, which does not open ventrally but turns upwards to the anus. The Larvalia have a rudimentary heart and no vascular system,—a fact connected with their diminu-

har- ters of 'emi- wrda.

greater or less elaboration of the ancestors of Urochorda, and to maintain even that their ancestry had reached as high a condition as that shown by Craniata ; on the other hand, it does not seem likely that their point of divergence from the main ancestral line leading to Craniata was lower

than, or cven so low as, that at which Amphioxus branched off. The differentiation of trunk and tail by the limitation of the notochord anteriorly is a nearer ap- roach to Craniate structure than that shown by Amphioxus, whilst the definite development of a brain of eonsiderable relative size places Urochorda nearer to the Craniates than is Amphioxus. The metameric myomeres so strongly developed in this last are not absent in Urochorda, as is often maintained, but exist in a rudimentary form, indicating that they had once a fuller develop- ment. THe

HEMICHORDA.

Hemichorda comprise the single genus Balanoglossus—formerly classified by Gegenbaur as Enteropneusta, an independent phylum of the animal kingdom. They are Vertebrata of worm-like form,

hh

Fic. 10.—Balanoglossus, anatomy and development. A. Balanoglossus kowalewskii, Bateson; from the coast of Virginia, U.S.; natural size; a, proboscis; 6, collar; ¢, perforate region ; d, flattened digest-

(Modified from Bateson.)

ive region ; e, cylindrical hind region. B. Diagram of dorsal view, showing certain organs as though the body-wall were transparent. C. Diagram of a vertical antero-posterior section. D. Diagram of a dorsal view to show vessels and nerves by transparency. E. Diagram of a transverse section through the collar. F. Larva of B. kowalewskii; diagram of horizontal sec- tion. G. Vertical longitudinal section of an older larva of thesame. Letter- ing B-G:—a, proboscis; b, collar; f, nerve-tunic of proboscis; g, proboscis pore (ciliated orifice) ; h, notochord (limited to a small tract of modified tissue derived from preoral extension of alimentary canal); 7, dorsal nerve-plate ; k, collar-pore (right and left), opening to exterior from collar ccelom just be- heath the collar; 7, continuation of dorsal nerve-plate as a nerve-cord ; m, pharyngeal perforations (gill-slits) ; »', ccelom of proboscis (anterior azygos Primitive coelomic pouch); »2, collar coelom (right and left middle coelomic pouches of embryo); 3, body ecelom (right and left posterior coelomic pouches of embryo); 0, mouth; p, ventral nerve-tunic of body-wall; g, proboscis gland; r, strands connecting dorsal

nerve-plate with outer wall of collar; s, cavity of pharynx in front of perforate region ; ¢, dilated part (heart) of dorsal Vessel within proboscis-gland ; ¢', dorsal vessel ; u, blood-vessels of body-wall Im section ; w, paired nerves of collar region in transverse section; #, peri-

mal coelom, surrounding dorsal vessel in collar region ; y, digestive region of

t Gn embryo); z, mesoblast. H. Larva of another species of Balanoglossus,

Own as the Tornaria larva of Johann Miller, and resembling an Echinoderm larva. aa, preoral ciliated band of Tornaria ; bb, post-oral ditto ; ec, terminal ditto; dd, mouth; ee, apical plate and sense organ; ff, canal system and pore; 99, gut; hh, anus.

elongate and somewhat flattened from above downwards. In front of the mouth is a long cylindrical proboscis, and behind it a collar, the free margin of which is turned backwards, and corresponds to

the opercular epipleural folds of Cephalochorda and Craniata. This agreement is supported by the existence of a pair. of collar pores opening into the ecelom of the collar, as the " brown funnels" of Amphioxus open into the epipleural ccelom of that animal. A proboscis pore, opening on the left side into the preoral ccelom of the proboscis (paired in B. kupffert), is exactly representative of the similarly placed pore which in the young Amphioxus (according to Hatschek, 75) leads into the tubular organ derived from the left ceelomic chamber of the preoral lobe of that animal. The whole surface of the body is ciliated, as in Nemertines and Echinoderms, and asin no other Vertcbrates. Following the collar is a perforated region of the body,—gill-slits opening from the outer surface into the pharynx. In the young form there is for a time, as in Ap-pendicular iz and the Ascidian tadpole, only one pair of gill-slits, but they subsequently increase in number as the animal grows in length. They resemble in form and structure those of Amphi- oxus. The notochord (/ in

fig. 10) arises at the anterior end of the hypoblast in the young, and grows forward, forming a support for the base of the proboscis. It is limited to this very small region. The cerebro-spinal nerve-cord originates by a delamination of a solid cord of epiblast in the mid-dorsal line of the middle third of the body ; then by invagination of its two ends it extends as a tube both anteriorly and posteriorly. A general network of nerve-fibres (and cells?) exists beneath the epidermis all over the body. The blood-system is peculiar, consisting of an anterior heart and a dorsal and ventral vessel; these are united by a plexus of sub- eutaneous vessels. The musculature of the body-wall is not broken into suceessive myomeres; but, on the other hand, the gonads (ovaries or testes) are sac-like, and, as in Amphioxus, are repeated in a series throughout a great length of the body. In the pharyn- geal region the gonad sacs agree in number with the gill-slits, There are no nephridia (unless proboscis pore and collar pores arc to be so regarded); but the conneetive-tissue cells of the body-cavity are active as excreting agents, as in Echinoderms and in Urochorda, and a large glandular organ in the proboscis attached to the end of the notochord appears to have to do with this function. Not the least remarkable fact about Hemichorda is the nature of their larve. No other Vertebrata present larval forms which indicate the nature of the early ancestral history in what we may call pre-chordal times ; however interesting the Ascidian larva, or the young Amphioxus, and the embryo dog-fish, they do not take us out ofthe Vertebrate area. Some species of Balanoglossus (? B. minutus), however, pass through a banded ciliate larval condition, which was known as Tornaria, and was considered to be an Echinoderm larva allied to Bipinnaria, before its relation to Balanoglossus was discovered. It is not possible to view the Tornaria larva of Balano- glossus as otherwise than identical with Echinoderm larva, and it results that Balanoglossus and the Echinoderms have remote genetic affinities of a special kind.

No classification of Hemichorda is possible beyond an enumcra-. tion of the species :— . Balanoglossus clavigerus (Della Chiaje), Naples. . B. minutus Kowalewsky), Fs . B. kowalewskii (Al. Agassiz), east coast, United States. . B. brooksti (Bateson), . B. salmoneus (Giard), Brittany. . P. robinti (Giard), ve It seems that in Balanoglossus we at though no doubt specialized for its and possibly to some extent degenerate, extent

fallen from an ancestral emin- | dermis, the long Worm-like form, and ~ segmentation of the body-muscles lead Nemertines. The great pro- may well be compared to the larly placed in the Nemertines. The collar is the first commencement of a structure destined to as- sume great import- ance in Cephalo- chorda and Crant- ata, and perhaps pro- tective of a single gill- slit in Balanoglossus before the number of those aper- tures had been extended. Bor- towing, as we may, the nephridia from the Nemertines, and the lateral in addition to the dorsal nerve, we find that Balanoglossus gives the most hopeful hypothetical solution of the pedigree of Vertebrates. Space has not permitted us to go so fully into pros and : ; cons as the speculative nature of the subject requires; but we give the final conclusion to which our consideration of the structure of the four great branches of the Vertebrata leads in the form of the accompanying genealogical tree.

”

Dr OF DO

last find a form which, burrowing sand – life,

ence,

boscis of Balanoglossus

Ss : . os invaginable organ simi-

Species of Hemi- chorda.

Relations of Hemi-

yet has not to any large chorda The eiliated epi- to Verte- the complete absence of brate

us to forms like the ancestry.

Bibliography.—(z) Cuvier, “Sur un Nouveau Rapprochement,” &c., in Am. du, Musée, 1812, vol, xix. p. 73; (2) Kowalewsky, “ Devel. of Amphiozxus,” in Mém. de Acad, Invp., St Petersburg, 7th series, vol. xvi., No. 12, 18663 (3) Id., “ Devel. of Ascidia,” ibid. ; (¢) Lankester (E. Ray), “ Notes on Embryology and Classification,” in Quart. Journ. Micr. Sci., vol. xvii., 1877; (5) Kowa- lewsky, “‘ Balanoglossus,” in Mém. de U Acad. Imp., St Petersburg, vol. x., No. 8, 1866; (6) Bateson, ‘ Balanoglossus,” in Quart. Journ. Mier. Sct., April 1884; ibid., supplement number 1885, ibid., June 1886 ; (7) Harmer, “ Cephalodiscus, in Challenger Reports, vol. xviii.; (8) Dohrn, Ursprung der Wirbelthiere, 1875 ; (9) Zeppelin, ‘* Budding in Ctenodrilus,” in Zeitschr. wiss. Zoologic, vol. xxxix.; (zo) Balfour, Monograph on Development of Elasmobranch Fishes, 1878; (27)*

VERTUE, Guorce (1684-1756), engraver and anti- quary, was born in St Martin’s-in-the-Fields, London, in 1684, At the age of thirteen he was apprenticed to an heraldic engraver, a Frenchman, who failed in three or four years. Vertue then studied drawing at home, and afterwards worked for seven years as an engraver under Michael Vandergucht. He was patronized by Sir Godfrey Kneller, and was one of the first members of the Academy of Painting which that artist instituted in 1711. His plate of Archbishop Tillotson, after Kneller, commissioned by Lord Somers, established his reputation as an engraver; and he was soon in an excellent practice, engraving por- traits after Dahl, Richardson, Jervas, and Gibson. In portraiture alone he executed over five hundred plates. In 1717 he was appointed engraver to the Society of Antiquaries, and his burin was employed upon many interesting statues, tombs, portraits and other subjects of an antiquarian nature. He died on the 24th of July 1756, and was buried in the cloisters of Westminster Abbey.

From the year 1713 Vertue had been indefatigable in his re- searches on all inatters connected with the history of British art, and had accumulated about forty volumes of memoranda on the subject. These were purchased by Horace Walpole, and form the basis of that author’s Anecedotes of Painting in England, where will be found an account of Vertue’s life and a catalogue of his en- gravings. Vertue’s own literary works include On Holbein and Gerard’s Pietwres (1740) ; Medals, Coins, Great Seals,

Impressions, Srom the Hlaboratc Works of Thomas Simon (1758) ; Catalogue and Description of King Charles the First's Capital Collection of Pictures, Limnings, Statues, &c. (1757) ; Catalogue of the Collection of Pietures belonging to King James II., to whieh is added a Catalogue of Pictures and Drawings in the Closet of Queen Caroline (1758) ; Catalogue of the Curious Collection of Pictures of George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham (1758) ; Deseription of the Works of that Ingenious Delineator and Engraver, W. Hollar (1745).

VERUS, M. Auretius. See AURELIUS,Vol. ili. pp. 86-87.

VERVIERS, a town of Belgium, in the province of Liége, is situated on the Vesdre, 154 miles by rail east by south from Liége and 19 miles south-west from Aix-la- Chapelle. It is divided into an upper and a lower town, but has no striking architectural features. The staple commodity is cloth, which is manufactured here and in the immediate environs to the value of £3,200,000 annually. Other manufactures are soap, chemicals, con-fectionery, and machinery; dyeing, tanning, and iron and copper founding are also carried on. The town is a modern one; its manufacturing prosperity, the beginning of which dates from the 18th century, is partly attributed to the waters of the Vesdre, which are said to be peculiarly well adapted to the purposes of the dyer. The population in 1876 was 37,828.

VESALIUS, Anpreas (1514-1564). See ANATOMY, vol. i. pp. 807-8 ; also VascuLar SysrEM, p. 95 above.

VESICAL DISEASES. The urinary bladder is the temporary reservoir of the renal secretion, and as such contains the urine for longer or shorter periods. In recent years diseases of the bladder have come more than formerly within the scope of operative surgery, owing especially to great advances in the methods of examining the inner wall of the bladder both by sight and touch,— sight in virtue of the endoscope, an instrument which Phen intro- duced into the bladder enables a visual examination of the interior to be made; and by touch, as surgeons do not now hesitate to make incisions into the bladder, either

Hubrecht, "Nerve-Tunic of Nemertines," in Quart. Jowrn. Micr. Sci., vol, xx., 1880; (72) and (73) Id., "Comparison of Nemertines and Vertebrates," in Quart. Journ. Micr, Sci., vol. xxiii., 1883, and vol. xxvii., 1887; (74) Lankester (E. Ray), "Brown Funnels of Amphiozus," in Quart. Journ. Micr. Sci., vol. xv. p. 257, 1875; (z5) Hatschek, "Subneural Gland of Amphioxvus and Olfactory Pit," in Zool. Anzeiger, p. 517, 1884; (76) Lankester (E. Ray), " Vertebration of the Tail of Appendicularia," in Quart. Journ. Micr. Science, vol. xxii., 1882; (77) Kowalewsky, " Later Researches on Ascidian Development," in Archiy Siir mikroskopische Anatomie, vol. Vii., 1871; (78) Id., "Later Researches on Amphioxus Development," in Archiv fiir mikroskopische Anatomie, vol. xiii.,

1876. (E. R.L.)

from the perineum or suprapubically, for purely diagnostic purposes, Further, more careful and improved chemical and microscopical examination of the urine enables the surgeon to judge better than formerly what the condition of the bladder is. Diseases of the bladder may be con- veniently divided into two groups,—(1) those which involve recognizable organic structural change, and (2) those which do not necessarily involve obvious organic structural change (Sir H. Thompson). The more import- ant diseases of the first class are inflammation or cystitis, calculi, and neoplastic growths ; but there are also others of less importance, such as hypertrophy, dilatation, and tuberculosis. The diseases of the second group in which no organic structural change can be recognized in the bladder-wall are numerous. In many cases, however, they can scarcely be considered as diseases of the bladder pure and simple, but rather as concomitants or results of other diseases. Moreover, in many cases they give rise sooner or later to diseases which are accompanied by structural changes. Thus "irritable bladder," although at first it may be independent of any such change, soon gives rise to inflammation of the bladder-wall, or cystitis; and many surgeons describe it from the beginning as simple cystitis, while cystitis as described in this article they call catarrhal cystitis. In this division, however, we may describe para- lysis, atony, incontinence of urine, stammering micturition, and retention of urine.

Cystitis. Inflammation of the bladder may be acute or chronic. Acute It is due in most cases to the presence of irritating matters in the cystiti

urine, produced by decomposition of the urine itself or by morbid admixture. The inflammation may result also from traumatic injury, from cold, or in cases of gonorrhea from extension of the inflammation along the urethra into the bladder (through continuity of tissue). Although frequently ushered in by rigors, the chief symptoms of acute inflammation are local: there is pain over the region of the bladder and frequent micturition. The desire to pass water is often incontrollable, even before more than one or two ounces of urine have been secreted. The urine is much changed in its character, being cloudy from the presence of epithelial scales, pus, mucus cells, and often blood. At this stage also it may be ammoniacal, though this usually comes on later, and is probably caused by septic decomposition of the urine due to the entrance or introduction of organisms into the bladder. The quantity of blood varies, but may be so large as to give the urine a distinct reddish tinge. As a rule, the mucous membrane at the neck of the bladder is the first part to become inflamed, but the whole of the mucous membrane may be affected ; resolution, however, usually

takes place before more than a portion has been attacked. Chronic Chronid cystitis is one of the most common affections of the bladder, and cystitis:

its causes are very various. It sometimes remains after an acute attack has passed off, but more commonly it results from long- continued irritation, such as may be produced by a urinary calculus in or by atony of the bladder. 'The symptoms are not so severe as in acute cystitis: the urine contains more mucus, but less pus and blood, and there is much less tendency to frequent micturition, the irritability of the bladder being greatly diminished. Frequently very large i are of mucus are secreted, and the condition is then termed "catarrh of the bladder." Chronic inflammation is not in itself dangerous ; but the patient, so long as it remains, is liable to an attack of acute cystitis, which, superadded to the pre-existing condition of the bladder, may be very serious. An increase in

the fibrous elements of the coats of the ae and hypertrophy of the muscular fibres are a common result of chronic cystitis.

The treatment in both varieties of the disease consists in giving Treat-

rest to the inflamed part and in alleviating the pain.

a quarter of an hour at a time ; and, if the pain be very severe, hot fomentations with tincture of opium should be applied to the peri- neum or hypogastrium, or a hot douche may be used per rectum.

Hot sitz- ment i) baths may be used two or three times daily for ten minutes or cystitis

| | {

— Caleuli.

WHESLEADIEDISEASES

Diluent drinks are given, and tincture of hyoscyamus may be prescribed, as it has a very soothing influence. It may be necessary to give morphia, but generally the pain can be allayed without its use., In chronic cystitis the treatment depends very much on the cause, which must if possible be removed. Thus, if the cystitis is due toa calculus in the bladder, the treatment is to remove the calculus (see below). Very often, however, special remedics are employed to relieve the inflammatory condition, and one of the best is washing out the bladdcr. This is a simple operation, based on the principle of siphon action with a head of water, and is carried out as follows. A catheter is introduced through the urethra into the bladder, and to it the stem of a T-shaped tube is fixed ; to each end of the horizontal part a picce of rubber tnbing is attached, one piece terminating in a vessel which contains an aseptic warm lotion and is placed at a higher level than the bladder, while the other is led into a receptacle placed lower than the bladder. Six or eight ounces of the lotion are allowed to flow into the bladder ; then the flow is checked, and the fluid passes out from the bladder through the other tube. Each tube should have a stop-cock, so that the surgcon can open or close it as he

desires. Occasionally pladder drainage is resorted to, and is carried out on the principle of siphon action.! Internal remedies have to be administered, one of the most valuable being benzoate of soda. The benzoate in its passage through the blood is changed into hippuric acid, and thus tends to render the urine less alkaline. Attention to the diet of the patient is of great importance in both acute and chronic cystitis ; it should be very light, easily digested, and nutritious. Diluents are often of much value, lessening the irritability of the bladder. All wines and stimulants should be avoided.

Caleuli.—Important information, as we have already said, is derived both by the surgeon and physician from a careful examina- tion of the urine, whether this be done chemically or microscopic- ally. Not infrequently on such examination crystals, varying in their chemical and physical characters, are found, and if these be in large amount distinct urinary deposits are got from the urine after it has been kept in a vessel fora time. The cause producing thesc crystals or their presence alone may give rise to disease, as, for instance, oxaluria, a condition in which, in addition to other symptoms, we find oxalate of lime crystals present in the urine. We have here to deal, however, with more than the mere presence of a few crystals disseminated in the urine, viz., with those con- ditions in which an amalgamation of crystals has occurred, giving rise to a concretion of such deposits into a mass, forming a cal- ctlus or stone. When such concretions are so small that they can be passed with the urine through the urethra they are known as gravel ; but when they are prevented by their size from passing along the urethra they are termed calewli, and the patient is said to suffer from stone or calculus. Calculus of the bladder constitutes a most formidable and important disease, and its treatment, either medical or surgical, has probably attracted more attention than that of almost any other disease. Urinary calculi occur in all parts of the world and affect both sexes. They are much more common, however, in some regions than in others. Thus, in India they are very common, while in Great Britain, although many persons suffcr from calculus in Norfolk and the north of Scotland, very few cases occur among people who live on the western side of the island. From the above facts many have attributed the formation of ealeuli to special climatic or geological influences, but it is probable that diet acts as a chief factor in their production. Calculi are

much rarer in females than in males, and this may perhaps be explained by the shortness and more vertical position of the urethra, so that the contents of the bladder can be more easily evacuated, and by the fact that the habits of the female with regard to diet are more regular than those of the male. The cause of the formation of a calculus may be (a) a tendency in the kidneys to precipitate salts to an abnormal degree, the urine being concentrated and small in amount, or (b) some abnormal state of the urine in the bladder, or (c) the presence of a foreign body in the bladder. Probably the last isthe most common causc ; for very frequently, when a section of

139

sided. Some stones are hard ; others are soft. In size and weight they vary very much: we find them as small as a pea and as large as a child's head. The largest stone found in the bladder of a human being is in the Royal College of Surgeons' museum of Eng- land ; and in the Edinburgh university surgical museum there is a stone of very large size. The weight depends not only on the size but also on the composition, and varies from a few grains to the heaviest on record, which weighed 6 tb 8 oz.

Seven different kinds of calculi are described, but only three are Varieties Vesical calculi are classified according to their of cal- composition, and five different forms are very generally recognized ; culi.

very common.

but layers of different salts may be found in the same calculus. (1) The first class embraces wric acid and uratic calculi. Pure uric acid stones are small and hard, and usually vary in colour from a reddish orange to a brown tint. They are frequently rough, but may be smooth. Uratic stones are seldom pure. They frequently form the nucleus of calculi the outer layers of which are phosphatic. (2) Phosphatic and calcareous calculi consist chiefly of calcium phosphate ; stones formed purely of the carbonate of calcium are rare. Thestones of this group are white, soft, and friable, especially those composed of phosphate of lime. They frequently attain to a large size, and most commonly occur in persons whose general health has run down to a low ebb. (8) Oxalate of lime

calculi are excess- ively hard and densc, of a dark brown colour and tuberculated or spinous on their surface; hence they are often called mulberry calculi. This is a form which gives rise to great pain and irrita- tion, so that they are generally removed before they become very large. (4) Cystine and (5) xanthin calculi are rare.

When a stone is present in the bladder, whatever its nature, it Diagnos- acts similarly to any other foreign body, and usually gives rise to a ing for The patient complains of pain in the calculi.

series of definite symptoms. end of the penis at the completion of micturition. Rough or jolting movements give rise to pain in the region of the bladder. Occasionally there is a sudden stoppage of the flow of urinc, which is overcome by a change in position. He suffers from frequency of micturition, just as in any other irritable condition of the bladder. If, in addition to these symptoms, the patient states that at varying intervals he has passed " gravel," the surgeon is almost certain that a calculus is present ; but cven with all these symp- toms there is only one certain diagnostic sign of the presence of a stone, and that is to feel it. This is done by "sounding" the bladder with a sound,—an instrument resembling a bougie, but made of steel and with a shorter curve. It can be easily turned from side to side within the bladder, the whole of which must be systematically examined, and not only enables the surgeon to ascertain the presence of a stone but, when judiciously used, assists him in determining the size, mobility, situation, nnmber, and hard- ness of the calculi. This additional information is of the utmost importance in guiding the surgeon to the best method of treatment. In the child the stone can be occasionally felt by passing one finger into the rectum, laying the other hand above the pubes, and pressing ; the stone lies between the two hands. In other cases the size can be gauged with the lithotrite, by observing the distance to which the blades are separated when the stone is grasped.

The treatment of calculi by other means than operative surgery Treat- has been found to be of very little value. Attempts have been made ment.

to dissolve calculi by internal remedies or by the injection of chemical agents into the bladder; but, although many such methods have been

used, and have for a time in many cases been apparently successful, they have without exception been found in the long run to be practically worthless for removing calculi once actually formed. Further, the improvements in opera- tive means for the removal of calculi have advanced to such a degree that it is probably better fora patient, in our present state of know- ledge, to be treated by some one of them rather than undergo any attempt at their removal by other means. Nevertheless much can be done towards preventing the formation of calculi in those who have a tendency to their formation, by attention to diet and by the intcrnal administration of drugs.

Urinary calculi are removed by one of three methods, —(.) litho- Removal tomy or cutting for stone, (ii.) lithotrity or crushing the stone, of calculi and (iii.) litholapaxy, a modification of lithotrity, and the method by opera- now most commonly adopted. In about nine cases out of every tion. ten the stone may be crushed; but occasionally there are some circumstances which rendcr the operation of lithotomy preferable to lithotrity. Thus, where the urcthra is constricted, as in organic stricture or enlarged prostate, or where the stone is very large or extremely hard, it is right to cut for the stone instcad of making any attempt to crush it. Again, in children lithotomy is safer than lithotrity. ;

Lithotomy.—Cutting for stonc has been very long known and Litho- practised by surgeons; but up to the commencement of the 19th tomy. century it was performed only by a few men, who, bolder than their contemporaries, had specially worked at it and had attained celebrity as skilful lithotomists. Patients went very long distances to be operated on by them, and certain of the older surgcons, as Cheselden, performed a large number of operations with very suc-

a calculus is made, it is found that some form of foreign body has acted as the nucleus round which urinary deposits have become agglutinated. Such foreign bodies may exist in the bladder or may be introduced from without. Occasionally clots of blood have been found as the nucleus ; but one of the commonest is a small uric acid stone, which, having been formed in the kidney, has passed down the ureter into the bladder and there been surrounded by deposits of phosphate of lime, &c. Calculi vary

much in their physical characters and chemical constitution. Most frequently only a single stone is present ; but very large numbers have been Temoved from one bladder. The shape of the stone depends on whether it be movable or fixed, and whether there be only one or more in the bladder. A single stone is usually spherical or ovoid, but may be smooth or tuberculated or spinous, this last point being determined chiefly by the composition of the stone ; when there are a number of stones present they are usually facetcd or many-

fee aatiia cate hen aera eee ee 1 See "The Bladder Drainage," by Prof. Chiene, in Edin. Med. Journ., vol. XXVL, part i., 1880-81.

which go on favourably the patients are much sooner able to per- form their ordinary duties. Fatal terminations, however, do now and again occur, sometimes as a result of injury to the bladder-wall] setting up inflammation, which extends to the kidneys, sometimes from suppression of urine. Those cases in which there has been a fatal result most frequently have been complicated with old-stand- ing kidney disease.

cessful results. The operation is usually performed by an incision from the perineum ; but sometimes it is necessary to adopt the high or suprapubic incision. The former method is termed perineal lithotomy, and, as the incision most commonly made by the surgeon is a lateral one, it is ordinarily spoken of as lateral lithotomy. Lateral lithotomy consists of two distinct stages,—(i.) entting into the bladder and (ii.) removing the stone. The patient is placed on a table and brought under the influence ofan anesthetic. A grooved staff is passed along the urethra into the bladder to act as a guide for the knife, and the patient is then 'tied up in the lithotomy position." An assistant holds the staff in the middle line of the body and the surgeon makes an incision an inch and a half in length deeply into the perinenm, until the knife enters the groove of the staff, and then passes it along the groove, thus making an opening through the bladder-wall. 'The bladder having been thus cut into, a pair of lithotomy forceps is introduced by the perineal wound, and the stone is caught and removed by gently withdrawing the forceps by a rotatory movement. A lithotomy tube is now passed through the wound into the bladder and fixed in position ; the patient is untied and carried back to bed. The operation of litho- ton1y is not a difficult one to perform, nor is it in itself dangerous ; sometimes, however, there is a fatal termination, due commonly to one or other of the following causes—hxmorrhage (either primary or secondary), organic disease of the urinary organs, or blood poisoning. Hemorrhage may be the result of unskilful operating, the incision having been incorrectly made; or one of the larger vessels in this neighbourhood may have had an abnormal distribu- tion, so that, lying in the line of the incision, it was divided and gave rise to the bleeding which proved fatal. If the stone bea very large one, or the perineum very narrow, it is necessary to perform the suprapubic operation. Litho- Litholapaxy.—Lithotrity too can be best described if considered lapaxy. under two

headings,—(i.) the crushing of the stone and (ii.) the removal of the detritus. The two stages are now carried out at "fone sitting," instead of allowing an interval to elapse between them, as was formerly the practice, and the term litholapaxy is used to designate this method. The patient having been anesthetized, the urethra is dilated by the passage of large-sized bougies. Then a few ounces of a warm neutral aseptic fluid are injected into the bladder, and the crushing instrument, the lithotrite, is passed along the urethra into the bladder. The lithotrite has two blades, —a "male" and a "female,'—the latter fenestrated, the former solid with its surface notched ; these blades can be approximated both by a sliding and a screwing movement. The sliding movement is used to grasp the stone; but when the stone is fixed between the blades the screw action is used, as it enables great pressure to be applied evenly, gradually, and continuously. The lithotrite is made of very tough steel, so that even very hard stones may be crushed without any danger of the instrument breaking. It is passed into the bladder with its blades closed; they are then opened and an attempt made to grasp the stone. The stone having been fixed between the blades by the sliding movement, it is then crushed with the screw action, great care being taken not to catch the bladder-wall with the lithotrite. This danger is avoided by raising the point of the lithotrite immediately after grasping the stone and before crushing is begun. The stone breaks into two or more pieces, and these fragments must next be caught and crushed one by one, until they are all reduced to a very small size. If the stone be large and hard, half an hour or longer may be required to crush it sufficiently. When the surgeon fails to catch any more large portions of stone, the presumption is that it has been broken up into small enough pieces ; the lithotrite is then withdtawn and the second stage of the operation must be begun. This consists in removing the detritus by means of an aspirator, the best form of which is that invented and used by Sir Henry Thompson. It consists of an elastic bag connected with a trap. into which fragments of stone will fall and not pass out again on the instrument being used at later periods in the operation. A large catheter, with the eye very near the distal end of the short curve, is passed into the bladder; the aspirator, full of an aseptic fluid, is attached to the catheter, and a few ounces of the fluid are expressed from the aspirator into the bladder by squeezing the india-rubber bag. When the pressure is taken off the bag, it dilates and draws by suction the fluid out of the

bladder, and with it some of the detritus of the crushed stone, which falls into the trap, and is not expelled on the fluid being re-introduced into the bladder, This manceuvre is repeated again and again, until all the fragments and detritus of the stone have been removed. After the operation the patient somctimes suffers from pain and discomfort ; but these are not at all severe unless some fragments have been left in the bladder. If the pain be severe, it can very generally be relieved by hot fomentations or a sitz-bath. The patient must be kept in bed for some days after the operation, and in cases where the stone has been large and the bladder irritable the surgeon should insist on him remaining in bed for at least a week. Judging by statistics, the dangers of the operation, if it be gone about with care, are not nearly so great as those of lithotomy, and certainly in those cases

Neoplastic Growths,—The commonest neoplasms found in the Neo. bladder are vascular fibromata (often called villous cancers) and plastic | epitheliomata ; morc rarely malignant growths occur. The symptoms growths, ‘ produced by tumours vary; but they may cause obstruction to the | flow of urine and chronic cystitis, with more or less severe pain. f The most important signs are the passage of blood and the presence of tumour cells in the urine. Frequently, however, microscopical examination of the urine fails to discover the presence of tumour i cells, The passage of blood may be very intermittent and small in amount ; but this intermittent bleeding is one of the most character- istic signs of the existence of a tumour. When the presence of a tumour is suspected, the sound is passed and an attempt made to feel it. Sometimes it can be felt, but more often doubt remains as to whether a tumour does really exist or not. In such cases the endoscope may be had recourse to; but the information derived from its use is not always satisfactory, and a diagnostic incision must | then be made into the bladder to verify the diagnosis. When such | a diagnostic incision is made, the surgeon must be prepared to remove the tumour, should one be present and capable of removal. Usnally the diagnostic incision is perineal ; but, if the bladder is ! capacious, or if the perineum is deep and narrow, a more complete examination can be made by a suprapubic opening. The treat- ‘ ment of neoplasms is, as a rule, unsatisfactory. Ifthe growth be q pedunculated, it can be removed without great risk to the patient ; more commonly,

however, the tumour cannot be removed, and then | only palliative measures can be adopted, such as allaying the pain i and checking the hemorrhage. Great relief is often given by wash- } ing out the bladder; but this must be done with very great care, a soft flexible catheter being used, if it can be passed into the bladder, in preference to a rigid one.

Hypertrophy and Dilatation.—When there is long- continued Hyper- obstruction to the flow of urine, as in stricture of the urcthra, en- trophy larged prostate, &c., the bladder-wall becomes much thickened, the and dila- muscular fibres increasing both in size and number ; the interstitial tation. fibrous tissue is also inereased. The wall on its inner surface becomes rugose, and the condition is technically known as hypertrophy. | Hypertrophy may be accompanied by dilatation of the bladder,

a condition which the bladder may assume when from any cause the evacuation of its contents is interfered with for a length of time.

Paralysis of the bladder is a want of contractile power in the Paralysis muscular fibres of the bladder-wall. It may result from injuries of whereby the spinal cord is lacerated or pressed upon at or below bladder. the micturitory centre situated in the lumbar region, The result may be either retention or incontinence of urine; sometimes there is at first retention, which later on is followed by incontinence, while in other cases incontinence results in the first place and then reten- tion. Paralysis is also produced in certain nervous diseases, as in locomotor ataxia, and in various cerebral lesions, as in apoplexy.

Atony of the bladder differs from paralysis in being only a Atony of | paresis or partial paralysis. It is due to a want of tone in the bladder. | muscular fibres, and is most frequently the result of habitual over- distension of the bladder, such as may occur in cases of enlarge- ment of the prostate. The patient is unable to empty the bladder, and the condition of atony gets increasingly worse.

In both paralysis and atony the indication is to carefully prevent over- distension of the bladder by the urine being retained too long, and at the same time to treat by appropriate means the cause which has produced or is keeping up the condition.

Incontinence of wrine may occur in the adult or in the child, but Incon- is due to widely different causes in the two cases. In the child it tinence may be simply a bad habit, the child not having been properly of urine. | trained ; but more frequently there seems to be a want of control in the micturitory centre, so that the child passes its water un- wittingly, especially during the night. In adults it is not so much a condition of incontinence in the sense of water being passed against the will, but is rather due to a difficulty in retaining the urine in consequence generally of an over-full bladder,—the water which passes being the overfiow from a too full reservoir. It is usually cansed by an obstruction external to the bladder, e.9., enlarged prostate or stricture of the urethra. Occasionally the presence of a calculus may produce the condition. The treatment differs in the case of the child and of the adult. In the child an attempt must be made to improve the tone of the micturitory centre by the use of belladonna or strychnia internally and of a blister or faradism externally over the lumbar region, and every effort should be made to train the child to pass its water at stated times and regular intervals, In the adult the cause which produces the over- distension must be removed if possible ; but as a rule the patient

has to be provided with a catheter, which he can pass into his bladder and thus thoroughly empty it before it has filled to over-

3tam- mering micturi- tion.

- Reten- tion of urine.

VES—VES

flowing. A soft flexible catheter should be given in preference to a rigid or semi-rigid one. The best form is the red-rubber catheter.

The condition termed by Sir James Paget stammering micturition is frequently seen in young men, morerarely in children and adults. This stammering of the nrinary apparatus is analogous to speech stammering, and occurs chiefly in those who are nervous and easily putout. It would seem to be due to incoordination of the sphincter and detrusor of the bladder, the former not relaxing synchronously with the contraction of

the detrusor, or vice versa, and is sometimes caused by external irritation, such as preputial adhesions. Occa- sionally not a drop of urine can be passed, or a little passes and then a sudden stoppage of the flow occurs, and the more the patient strains the worse lie becomes, until at last there is complete retention of urine. Very usually such errors in micturition can be cured by the removal of irritating causes, if they exist, and in these cases, as well as in those in which no such cause can be discovered, great care should be taken to avoid those difficulties which have given rise to the patient's worst failures. If at any time he should fail to perform the act of micturition, he ought not to strain, but should quietly wait for a little before making any further effort, after which he will often succeed. Regularity in the times of making water is also of much importance.

Retention of urine cannot be called a disease of the bladder, but may be the cause of, or result from, bladder disease. It may occur in paralysis of the bladder, or in conditions where the patient is suffering from an illness which blunts the nervous sensibility, ¢.g., typhoid fever. It is, however, much more commonly due to ob- struction in some part of the urinary passage anterior to the bladder, as in stricture of the urethra or enlargement of the prostate. The patient can usually tell when he last passed any urine; but, even when no such information can be obtained, there are signs which lead the surgeon to a correct diagnosis. Thus, the bladder if much distended can be felt as a rounded swelling above the pubes, and it may even have passed to the level of the umbilicus. Percussion of the hypogastrium gives a dull note. When retention of urine occurs and the bladder is over-distended, it is necessary to evacuate its contents as soon as possible. If there is no obstruction to the flow of urine, the retention being due merely to atony or paralysis of the bladder, a flexible soft catheter is passed into the bladder and the water drawn off. But, when there is an obstruction which cannot be overconie, aspiration of the bladder has to be resorted to, the needle of the aspirator being pushed through the abdominal wall into the bladder. The point of puncture in the abdominal wall is in the middle line just above the symphysis pubis. The bladder has been aspirated in this way very many times in the Same person without any evil result. But in all cases strict anti- septic precautions must be adopted. (J. C.)

VESOUL, a town of France, chef-lieu of the department of Haute-Sadne, is situated 147 miles south-east of Paris by the railway to Miilhausen, at the junction of branch lines to Gray and Besancon, on the river Durgeon, which here receives two tributaries. The isolated conical hill of La Motte (1483 feet), which shelters the town on the north, affords fine views of the Jura and the Vosges Mountains. On the summit is a votive chapel (1854). The chief features of Vesoul are the palace of justice, the church of St George with a fine altar, the promenade with a monu- ment to the gardes mobiles of the department who fell at Belfort in 1870 and 1871, a library of 20,000 volumes, and an archeological museum. The population in 1881 was 9431 (commune 9553), the corresponding figures for 1886 being 9602 and 9733.

Vesoul, which is first mentioned in the 10th century, was origin- ally a fief of the church of Besancon. It afterwards passed to the house of Burgundy, and was fortified. The castle was destroyed mm the 17th century. The town suffered much during the Wars of Religion and the Thirty Years' War. Vesoul belonged temporarily to France after the death of Charles the Bold, was returned to the empire when Charles VIII. broke off his marriage with the daughter of the emperor Maximilian, and again became part of France under Louis XIV. after the peace of Nimeguen.

VESPASIAN. Trrus Fravius VESPASIANUS, the tenth of the twelve Cexsars, was Roman emperor from 70 to 79 Im succession to Vitellius. He was born in the year 9, in the Sabine country near Reate. His father was a tax- collector and money-lender on a small scale ; his mother, however, was a lady of pretty good family, with a brother a senator. She encouraged her son to look up in the world. After having served with the army in Thrace and been a questor in Crete and Cyrene, Vespasian rose to be

edile and pretor, having meanwhile taken to wife the daughter of a Roman knight, Flavia Domitilla, by whom he had two sons, Titus and Domitian, both of whom suc- ceeded him. Having already served in Germany, in the years 43 and 44, in the reign of Claudius, he had the com- mand of a legion in Britain under Aulus Plautius, and saw much hard fighting, reducing to subjection the Isle of Wight and penetrating

very possibly into Devonshire and the neighbourhood of Exeter. He proved himself a thoroughly able soldier, while in his habits he was simple and frugal; in short, says Tacitus (Hist., ii. 5), "but for his avarice he was equal to the generals of old days." In 51 he was for a brief space consul; soon afterwards he went as governor to Africa, where, according to Tacitus (ii. 97), his rule was "infamous and odious," according to Suetonius (Vesp., 4), "upright and highly honourable," though he admits that there was a serious local disturbance in which the governor was pelted with turnips. On leaving Africa there was a story (Suet., Vesp., 4) that he got his livelihood as a dealer of sonie sort,! which, if true, shows that he did not turn his provincial governorship to profit. He went with Nero's suite to Greece, and in 67 was ap- pointed to conduct the war in Judea, which was threaten- ing general commotion throughout the East, owing to a widely spread notion in those parts that from Juda were to come the future rulers of the world. Vespasian, who had a strong vein of superstition, was made to believe that he was himself to fulfil this expectation, and all manner of omens and oracles and portents were applied to him. He also found encouragement in Mucianus, the governor of Syria; and he had a soldiery thoroughly devoted to him, although he was at the same time a strict disciplin- arian and reformer of abuses. Vespasian had, however, plenty of practical good sense, and he knew well how to strike down a foe. All eyes in the East were now upon him ; Mucianus and the Syrian legions were eager to back him up; and on Ist July 69, while he was at Ceesarea, he was proclaimed emperor, first by the army in Egypt, and then by his troops in Judea. The legions of the East at once swore to him the customary oath of allegiance. Nevertheless Vitellius had on his side the veteran legions of Gaul and Germany, Rome's best troops. But the feel- ing in Vespasian's favour quickly gathered strength, and the armies of Mcesia, Pannonia, and [lyricum soon declared for him, and made him in fact master of half of the Roman world. They entered Italy on the north-east under the leadership of Antonius Primus, defeated the army of Vitel- lius at Bedriacum, sacked Cremona, and advanced on Rome, which they entered after furious fighting and a frightful confusion, in which the Capitol was destroyed by fire. The new emperor received the tidings of his rival's defeat and death at Alexandria, whence he at once forwarded supplies of corn to Rome, which were urgently needed, along with an edict or a declaration of

policy, in which he gave assurance of an entire reversal of the laws of Nero, especially those relating to treason. While in Egypt he became more and more imbued with supersti- tion, consulting astrologers and allowing himself to be flattered into a belief that he possessed a divine power which could work miracles. Leaving the war in Judea to his son Titus, he arrived at Rome in 70, where he re- stored the Capitol, rebuilt a great part of the city, enforced discipline in the army, which under Vitellius had become utterly demoralized, and with the co-operation of the senate put the government and the finances on a sound footing. By his own example of simplicity of life, he put to shame the luxury and extravagance of the Roman nobles and initiated in many respects a marked improve- ment in the general tone of society. As censor he raised 1 Ad mangonicos questus descenderat.

192

the character of the senate, removing unfit and unworthy members, and promoting good and able men, among them the excellent Julius Agricola. In 70 a formidable rising in Gaul, headed by Claudius Civilis, was suppressed ; the Jewish War was brought toa close by Titus's capture of Jerusalem, and in the following year, after the joint triumph of Vespasian and Titus, memorable as the first occasion on which a father and his son were thus associ- ated together, the temple of Janus was closed, and the Roman world had rest for the remaining nine years of Vespasian's reign. The peace of Vespasian passed into a proverbial phrase. In 78 Agricola went to Britain, and both extended and consolidated the Roman dominion in that province, pushing his arms into North Wales and the Isle of Anglesey. In the following year Vespasian died, in his 70th year.

The avarice with which both Tacitus (Hist., ii. 5) and Suetonius (Vesp., 16) stigmatize Vespasian seems really to have been an en- lightened economy, which, in the disordered state of the Roman finances, was an absolute necessity. Vespasian could be liberal to impoverished senators and knights, to cities and towns desolated by natural calamity, and especially to men of letters and of the pro- fessor class, several of whom he pensioned with salaries of as much as £800 a year. Quintilian is said to have been the first public teacher who cnjoyed this imperial favour.

Vespasian may be fairly credited with doing his best to improve and elevate the tone of the age by spreading those intellectual tastes with which personally he was not much in sympathy. Pliny's great work, the Natural His- tory, was written during Vespasian's reign, and dedicated to his son Titus, who almost shared the emperor's throne (sce Tirus). Some of the philosophers, pedants in reality, who talked idly of the good old times of the republic, and thus indirectly encouraged conspiracy, provoked him into reviving the obsolete penal laws against this class, but only one, Helvidius Priscus, was put to death, and he had affronted the emperor by studied insults. 'I will not kill a dog that barks at me" were words honestly expressing the temper of Vespasian. Much was spent on public works and the restoring and beautifying of Rome during his reigu, —a new forum, the splendid temple of Peace (symbolizing the sentiment of the age), the public baths, and the vast Colosseum being begun under Vaspasian.

To the last Vespasian was a plain, blunt soldier, with decided strength of character and ability, and with a steady purpose to establish good order and secure the prosperity and welfare of his subjects. In his habits he was punctual and regular, transacting his business early in the morning, and enjoying his siesta after a drive. He had not quite the distinguished bearing looked for in an emperor. He was free in his conversation, and his humour, of which he had a good deal, was apt to take the form of rather coarse jokes. He could jest, it was said, even in his last moments. "' Methinks I am becoming a god," he whispered to those around him. There is something very characteristic in the exclamation he is said to have uttered in his last illness, " An emperor ought to die standing." =

The Histories of Tacitus and the biography of Suetonius are our chief original

sources about Vespasian. Dean Merivale, in his H istory of the Romans under the Empire, gives a very complete account of him (chaps. 57, 59, 60).

VESPERS (officiwm vespertinum) in the Roman Catholic liturgy is that part of the daily office which follows none (nona) and precedes compline (completorium). In it the Pater Noster, Ave Maria, Deus in Adjutorium,

&c., are followed by five psalms and five antiphons, after which come the "little chapter," the hymn and the verse, which vary according to the season, the Magnificat and its antiphon, and the appropriate collect. In its general features the use of this office can be traced back to a very early date both in the Eastern and in the Western Church. Vespers may be said or sung at any time after midday, and In some circumstances even before it.

VESPUCCI, Americo (1451-1512), navigator, was born at Florence on 9th March 1451. His father, Nastugio Ves- pucci, was a notary, and his uncle, to whom he owed his education, was a scholarly Dominican and a friend of Savo- narola. As a student Amerigo showed a preference for natural philosophy, astronomy, and geography. He was placed as a clerk in the great commercial house of the Medici, then the ruling family in Florence. About 1490 he was sent by Lorenzo de' Medici to Spain, and in January 1492 he was at Cadiz, along with an associate,

–

Donato Nicolini, probably as an agent of the Medici, Shortly after this he seems to have entered the service of a Florentine merchant, Juonato Berardi, established at Seville, who had fitted out the second expedition of Columbus in 1493. Berardi had also undertaken to fit out twelve ships for the king of Spain, and on his death in December 1495 Vespucci was commissioned to complete the contract. There is no proof that Vespucci accompanied Columbus on either his first or his second voyage, though there can be no doubt that the two Italians were known to each other. As Ferdinand had recalled the monopoly conceded to Columbus, the new passion for exploring became widespread and adventurers of all kinds were constantly leaving Spain for the West. On the authority of Vespucci himself, he sailed, possibly as astronomer, with one of these adventurous expeditions from Cadiz, on 10th May 1497. After touching at the Canaries, the four vessels are stated to have reached after twenty-seven days "a coast which we thought to be that of a continent"; from Vespucci's account this may have been Campeachy Bay. Thence they doubled Cape Sable and may even have reached Cape Hatteras. Finally,

after sailing about a hundred leagues to an archipelago, the chief island of which was called Iti, they made for Spain and reached Cadiz on 15th October 1498. Still following Vespucci's own statement, he on 16th May 1499 started on a second voyage in a fleet of three ships under Alonzo de Ojeda. They reached the coast of Brazil about Cape St Roque, sailed north to the mouth of the Amazons, round to the Gulf of Maracaibo, and on to San Domingo. The expedi- tion returned to Cadiz on 8th September 1500. Entering the service of Dom Manuel of Portugal, Vespucci took part in a new expedition to the "Land of Parrots" (Brazil), which left Lisbon on 10th May 1501. Cape St Roque was reached on 16th August; Rio Janeiro Bay was dis- covered and named on New Year's Day 1502; and in April the expedition appears to have got as far as South Georgia. It reached Lisbon again on 7th September 1502. Next year, on 10th June, Vespucci started from Lisbon on his fourth expedition, with six ships under Coelho, the object being to reach Malacca by sailing west. At the island of Fernando Noronha Vespucci's ship sepa- rated from the others and sailed to Bahia and then to Cape Frio, where he built a fort. He returned to Lisbon on 18th June 1504. In 1505 he went back-to Spain and re-entered the service of Ferdinand, settling in Seville. According to one account, Vespucci made two other voyages to the isthmus of Panama. In 1508 he was appointed piloto mayor. He died at Seville on 22d February 1512.

If his own account is trustworthy, Vespucci reached the main- land of America eighteen days before Cabot. to the expedition only in a subordinate capacity, and, had it not been that his name has become attached to the New World, it is probable he would scarcely have been heard of. It seems to be credible, however, that in a letter written soon after his return from his third voyage he referred to the newly discovered lands as the "New World." Vespucci's claim to have touched the American mainland before Cabot has been hotly disputed, and the controversial literature on the subject is voluminous. The facts, as accepted by those who admit his claims, or at least his good faith, are these. After his fourth voyage, that is after 1504, he wrote a diary called Le Quattre Giornale. No fragment of the original exists, and it is only known by allusion. He also wrote several letters to his former schoolfellow Soderini, the gonfalier or chief magistrate of Florence. One

of these only remains, and that not in the original, but ina Latin translation printed at the monastery of St Die in the Vosges on 25th April 1507. The statement is that a French translation of Vespucci's original had been given to King René, who was patron- izing the college at St Dié. Waldseemiiller (Hylacomylus) made use of this letter in his Cosmographi# Introductio, published at St Dié in 1507. Here it is that we have the first suggestion of a name for the New World in the words—' A fourth part of the world, which, since Amerigo found it, we may call Amerigé or America";

and again, " now a fourth part has been found by Amerigo Vespucci, and I do not see why we should be prevented from calling it

Yet he was attached —

VES—VES

Amerigé or America." Since Humboldt discussed the subject in his Examen Critique de 0? Histoire de la Géographie du Nowveau Continent, vol. iv. (1837), the general weight of opinion has been that Vespucci did not make the 1497 voyage, and that he had no share in the first discovery of the American continent, but that there is not sufficient evidence to convict him of deliberate falsifica- tion. Varnhagen, however, in his Amerigo Vespucci (Lima, 1845) and many other writers on the subject maintain Vespucci's right to be regarded as a member of the expedition.

The whole question is very thoroughly discussed in vol. ii. of the Narrative and Critical History of America, edited by Justin Winsor (1886), where will be found ample references to all the authorities on the subject. See also Major's Prince Henry the Navigator (1868), and a recent re-examination of the evidence for the first voyage in "Alcune Considerazioni sul Primo Viaggio," by L. Hugues, in the Bolletino of the Italian Geographical Society, 1885.

VESTA (Greek Feoria), the goddess of fire and the domestic hearth. 'The cults of the Greek Hestia and the Latin Vesta, both of which involved the guardianship of an ever-burning sacred fire, are most probably derived from a very early custom, common to a great variety of races, and

practised during many different ages. Among people in a primitive state of development the production of fire is a slow and very laborious process; thus it became the custom for each village to maintain a constant fire for the general use of the community, in order to avoid the troublesome necessity of obtaining a spark by friction in case of the accidental extinction at one time of all the vill- age fires! This fire, the central hearth or Feoriéa of the vill- age (focus publicus), became a sacred symbol of home and family life, and by degrees grew into a religious cult of great sanctity and importance. The form of the primitive house in which the fire was preserved, probably a round hut made of wattled osiers daubed with clay, appears to have survived both in the circular prytaneum of the Greeks and in the Aides Vestze in Rome. 'To watch this fire would naturally be the duty of women, and especially of those who were not burdened with the cares of maternity, and hence may have arisen the Roman order of virgin priestesses, whose chief duty it was to tend the sacred fire. A survival of the prehistoric method of getting a spark appears to have existed in the rule which enacted that, if ever the sacred fire of Vesta did go out, the negligent vestal was to be punished by scourging (Livy, xxviii. 11), and the fire rekindled either by friction of dry sticks? or, in later times, by the sun's rays brought to a focus by a concave mirror (Plut., Vuma, 9). In the prytaneum, which existed in every Greek state, a different form of cult was developed, though the essential point, the sacred fire, was kept up, just asin the Latin worship of Vesta; and in both cases the fire was extinguished annually at the be- ginning of the new year, and solemnly rekindled by one of the primitive and hence sacred methods. In Rome this was done on the first day of March, the Latin New Year's Day (Ovid, Fast., iii. 137 -145). Both among Greek and early Latin races, at the founding of a new colony fire was solemnly sent from the prytaneum or Vesta temple of the mother colony to kindle a similar sacred fire in the new settlement. Thus we find that, according to tradition, the worship of Vesta in Rome was introduced from Alba Longa (Liv., i. 20, and Ov., Fast., iii. 46), which appears to eee ee eee eee

¥ Mr J. G, Frazer, in an interesting paper printed in the Journal of Philology (vol. xiv. pp. 145-172), on "the Worship of Vesta and its Connexion with the Greek Prytaneum,"' has given many examples of a Similar custom still Surviving among various savage races.

e An allusion to the earliest method of obtaining fire by rubbing two sticks together is probably contained in the myth of Prometheus, ao brought fire to mortals hidden in a hollow wand.

Fire obtained in this way, that is " pure elemental fire," was com- Monly thought to possess a special sanctity. Even throughout the Middle Ages in Catholic countries, at Easter, when the new year be- gan, the old pagan rite still survived. On Holy Saturday all lamps in each church were extinguished, and the Paschal candlestick was lighted by the help of flint and steel. From this sacred source the other lights in the church were kindled, and the various households in the parish took a flame to relight their fires and lamps, all of which had been carefully extinguished beforehand.

have been the oldest of the Latin colonies in Latium. This intimate connexion between the Greek prytaneum fire, sacred to Hestia, and that of Vesta in Rome has been ably worked out by Mr J. G. Frazer in the paper quoted above. 'The most generally received Latin legend attri- butes the founding of the Roman temple of Vesta to Numa, who transferred the centre of the cult from Alba, together with the four vestal virgins, its priestesses (Plut., Numa, 10). One of the later kings, either Tarquin I. or Servius Tullius, is said to have increased the number to six (Dion. Hal., iii. 67, and Plut., Wma, 10), and it is not till the last years of the pagan period that we hear of a seventh vestal having been added (see Ambrose, Epis., ed. Pareus, p. 477 ; also Plut., Rom. and Cam.).

The election (captio) of the vestal during the early period of Rome was in the hands of the king, and in those of the pontifex maximus under the republic and empire,' subject, however, to the following conditions (Aul. Gell., i. 12):—(1) the candidate was to be more than six and less than ten years of age; (2) she was to be patrima and matrima, 2.e., having both parents alive; (3) free from physical or mental defects; (4) daughter of a free- born resident in Italy. Certain details of the election were arranged subject to the provisions of the Lex Papia, now unknown. 'The selected child had her hair cut off, and was solemnly admitted by the pontifex maximus, who held her by the hand, and, addressing her by the name

amata, pronounced an ancient formula of initiation, which is given by A. Gellius in his interesting chapter on the subject (i. 12). In early times there were certain rules by which girls could be excused from serving as vestals, but the honour soon became so eagerly sought that these provisions were practically useless. Vows were taken by the vestal for a limited period of thirty years, after which she was free to return to private life and even to marry— a thing very rarely done (Aul. Gell., vi. 7). This period of thirty years was divided into three decades: during the first the vestal learnt her duties; during the second she practised them; and during the third she instructed the young vestals. The special dignity of chief of the vestals, or wrgo vestalis maxima, was reached in order of seniority. The inscriptions on the pedestals of statues of various vestales maxime show that a number of different grades of honour were passed through before reaching the maximatus or highest dignity.> The duties of the vestals, besides the chief one of tending the holy fire (Cic., De Leg., ii. 8), consisted in the daily bringing of water from the sacred spring of Egeria, near the Porta Capena, to be used for the ceremonial sweeping and sprinkling of the Aides Vestee.6 They also offered sacri- fices of salt cakes —muries and mola salsa—and poured on the altar of sacred fire libations of wine and oil, as is represented on the reverses of several first brasses and medallions of the empire (see fig. 1). The vestals were bound to offer daily prayers for the welfare of the Roman state, and more especially in times of danger or calamity (Cic., Pro Font., 21). They were also the guardians of the seven sacred objects on which the stability of the Roman power was supposed to depend :' the chief of these was the Palladium, a rude archaic statue of Pallas, which was said to have been brought by Aineas from the burning 4 From the time of Augustus the emperors themselves held the office of chief pontiff, and with it the privilege of electing the vestals.

> These inscriptions are printed in Middleton, Ancient Rome in 1885, pp. 200-6, and in Arch#xologia, vol. xlix. pp. 414-422.

6 The shrine of Vesta was not a templum in the strict Roman sense, as it was not consecrated by the augurs, its sanctity being far above the necessity of any such ceremony. Other natural springs might be used for the daily sprinkling, but it was forbidden to use water brought in a pipe or

other artificial conduit (Tac., Hist., iv. 53 ; see also Guhl and Koner, Vit. Gr. et Rom., p. 654).

7 See Cancellieri, Le Sette Cose Fatali di Roma Antica, Rome, 1812.

Troy. This sacred object was never shown to profane eyes, but it is represented on the reverse of a coin struck by Antoninus Pius in honour of his deified wife Faustina

Fia. 1.—First brass struck in honour of Diva Faustina by her husband Antoninus Pius, soon after her death. On the reverse is a vestal holding the Palladium and pouring a libation on the altar of the sacred fire.

(see fig. 1). Strict observance of the vow of chastity was

one of the chief obligations of the vestals, and its breach

was horribly punished by burial alive at a place near the

Porta Collina known as the Campus Sceleratus (see Livy,

viii. 15 and 89; Plin., Hp., iv. 11; and Suet., Dom., 8).

Cases of unchastity and its punishment were rare; and,

as the evidence against the vestal was usually that of slaves,

given under torture, it is probable that in many instances an innocent vestal suffered this cruel death. The case described by the younger Pliny (sup. cit.) is one of special pathos, as the vestal appears to have been condemned without any sufficient evidence, simply at the wish of the emperor Domitian. A fanciful reason for this fearful

punishment is given by Ovid, Fast., vi. 459-460.

The privileges of the vestals and their influential position were very remarkable. They were exempt from any patria potestas, except that of the pontifex maximus, their religious father; they could dispose by will of their property, and were in most respects not subject to the Roman laws ('legibus non tenetur," Servius, on Virg., 4n., xi. 204 ; of. Gaius, i. 1380, and Dion Cass., lvi. 10). This involved freedom from taxes, and the right to drive through the streets of Rome in carriages (plostrum and currus arcuatus). Some bronze plates have been found which were once attached to the carriages of vestals ; the inscription on one of them runs thus, Mlave Publicize v.v. maxime inmunis in jugo (see C. I. L., vi. 2146-2148 ; cf. also Pruden., Contr. Symm., ii. 1088). They were preceded by a lictor when appearing on state occasions, and enjoyed other semi-royal honours (Plut., Numa, 10, and Dion Cass., xlvii.19). At theatres and other places of amusement they enjoyed the best seats, except at some of the nude athletic contests, from which they were excluded ; they also took an import- ant part in all the grand religious and state ceremonies, such as when the pontifex maximus offered sacrifice on the occasion of a triumph before the temple of Capitoline Jupiter. They had power to pardon any criminal they met in the street on his way to execution, provided that the meeting were accidental. The vestals alone shared with the emperors the privilege of intramural burial (Serv., Ad din., xi. 206). During life they were richly dowered by the state (Suet., Aug., 31) and had public slaves appointed to serve them (see Tac., Hist., i. 43). They were also the guardians of the emperor's will, and of other important documents of state (Suet., J. Cxs., 83, and Aug., 101; Tac., Ann.,i.8; Plut., Anton.,58; and Appian, Civ.,v.73). Their influence in the appointment to many offices, both religious and secular, appears to have been very great. Many of the statues to the chief vestals which were found in the Atrium Vestz in 1883-84 have pedestals inscribed with a dedication recording that benefits had been conferred on the donor by the vestalis maxima. Lastly, they lived in a style of very great splendour: their house, the Atrium

~ 1 For a description of this, and also of the temple of Vesta and its

Vesta, which stood close by the Aides Vests, was very large and exceptionally magnificent both in decoration and material. The discovery already mentioned of a number of statues of vestales maximee has thrown new light on the dress of the vestals.2 With one or two exceptions the costume of these statues is much the same: they have a long sleeveless tunic =

*or stola, girdled by the zona immediate- ly below the breast. One only wears the diploidion over the upper part of her figure. The outer garment is an ample pallium, wrapped round the body ina great variety of folds, and in some cases brought over the head like a_ hood. All seem to have | long hair, showing | that the process of cutting off the hair | at initiation was not | repeated. One figure (see fig. 2) wears the suffibulum, a rectan- gular piece of white iy, cloth bordered by a | purple stripe, worn | over the head and **

Fic. 2.—Statue of a vestalis maxima wearing omg 2 npr hs the suffibulum ; time of Trajan.

According to Festus (ed. Miiller, p. 348), this sacred gar- ment was worn by the vestals only during the act of sacrificing (see also Varro, De Ling. Lat., vi. 21). This is probably the only existing statue on which this rare garment is represented. In all cases the head is closely bound by vitix, rope-like twists of woollen cloth, the ends of which usually fall in loops on each shoulder (see Ser- vius, Ad 4n., x. 538).

The Regza, or official fanum of the pontifex maximus, was adjacent to the vestal's house :—

- *Hic locus est Vestee, qui Pallada servat et ignem ; Hic fuit antiqui Regia parva Nume." 4*

When Augustus, after his election to the office of pontifex maximus in 12 B.c., moved his place of residence from the Regia to the Palatine, he built a new Aides Vestze near his palace, in the magnificent Area Apollinis. This appears to have been a copy of the older temple of Vesta. No traces of it now exist; but Pirro Ligorio, in the latter part of the 16th century, made some sketches of what then existed of this second temple, to

illustrate his great MS. on Roman antiquities, which is now preserved in the royal library at Turin (see Ovid, Fast., iv. 949-954, and Metam., xv. 864). The original course of the Sacra Via was supposed to have passed close to the temple of Vesta; but excavations made in 1886 have shown that this was not vicissitudes, see Rome, vol. xix. pp. 818-819; Middleton, Ancient Rome in 1885, pp. 181-206 ; and a paper by the same author in Arch@o- logia, vol. xlix. p. 391 Sq.

? These statues appear to have been the work of a privileged class of sculptors, who enjoyed the title of " fictores virginum vestalium,'—

an honour which is recorded in some of the dedicatory inscriptions on the pedestals,

*; * The form of the suffibulum as shown on this statue has a curious ainasladity, to the amice worn by the medizval clergy. Ov., Tris., iii. 29. For the history of the Regia and its existing*

— see Rome, vol. xix. p. 819, and Archeologia, vol. xlix. p. SY.

a |

a ae

{ } | | i

te nee

VES—VES

the case, the supposed line of the road being really blocked by a very early structure. There is reason to believe that this formed part of the original Regia, which was rebuilt during the reign of Augustus in a more magnificent way by Domitius Calvinus, after his Spanish triumph.

The Vestalia, or chief festival in honour of Vesta, was held on 9th June (Ovid, Fast., vi. 249), after which the temple was closed for five days for a ceremonial cleansing.! In private houses the feast was celebrated by a meal of fish, bread, and herbs, eaten, not on the usual triclinium, but by

the domestic hearth, in front of the effigies of the Dii Penates (Ovid, Fast., vi. 309-310). The feast inaugu- rated by Augustus in honour of Vesta Palatina was held on 28th April, the anniversary of its consecration.

With regard to statues of the goddess, though the Greek Hestia was frequently represented in plastic art, yet among the Romans Vesta appears to have been rarely so treated. The Athenian prytaneum contained a statue of Hestia. But there was no effigy in the Roman temple of Vesta, although one is commonly shown on reverses of coins which have a representation of the temple, and it appears to have been commonly thought in Rome that a statue of Vesta did exist inside her shrine,—a mistake which Ovid corrects (Fast., vi. 297-300). No Roman statue now known can be certainly considered to represent Vesta, though a very beautiful standing figure of a female with veiled head (in the Torlonia collection) has, with some probability, had this name given to it.

The worship of Vesta appears to have died out slowly in the 4th century, after the adoption of Christianity as the state religion by Constantine. Zosimus (Hist. Vov., y. 38) tells an interesting story of a visit made to the Atrium Vest at the end of the 4th century by Serena, the wife of the Vandal Stilicho, who took a valuable necklace from one of the statues, in spite of the remon- strances of an aged woman, the last survivor of the vestal virgins. Soon after that time the building appears to have fallen into decay, its valuable marble linings and other ornaments having been stripped from its walls.

Literatwre.—For further information the reader is referred, in addition to the works quoted above, to Lipsius, De Vesta et Vestali- bus Syntagma, printed in Grevius, Thes. Ant. Rom., vol. v.; Cramer, Kleine Schriften, ed. by Ratjen, Leipsic, 1837, p. 89 sg.; Klausen, Aineas und die Penaten, ii. p. 624 sg.; Nardini, Roma Antica, ed. of 1818-20, ii. p. 185 sqg.; Brohm, De Jure Virginum Vestalium, Thorn, 1835; Preuner, Hestia-Vesta, Tiibingen, 1864; Jordan, Vesta und die Laren, Berlin, 1865, and more recent papers ; Maes, Vesta e Vestali, Rome, 1883; Lanciani, Z' Atrio di Vesta, Rome, 1884; and C. F. L., vi. p. 594, No. 2181 sq. (J. H. M.)

VESTMENTS, in ecclesiastical law, are the garments worn during the church service by the officiating clergy. In England and Scotland before

the Reformation the vestments in use were similar to those still worn by the Roman Catholic clergy,—probably modifications of the dress of Roman citizens in their origin (see Cosrumz)— and were either sacrificial, as the chasuble, or non-sacri- ficial, as the surplice. After the Reformation the question of vestments became of comparatively small importance in the Church of Scotland ; but in the Church of England it has in recent years been the cause of much controversy and litigation.

The "ornaments rubric" at the beginning of the Book of Com- mon Prayer, dating from 1662, provides "that such ornaments of the church and of the ministers thereof at all times of their minis- tration shall be retained and be in use as were in this Church of England by the authority of parliament in the second year of the reign of King Edward VI." 'The reference in this rubric is to the vestments enjoined by the first prayer book of Edward VI. (1549). The surplice (with the addition of the hood in cathedrals and colleges, and for preaching) was the priest's dress for the service other than the communion. In the communion the bishop was to Wear, besides a rochet, a surplice or alb, with a cope or vestment

' The solemn decade of the Vestalia began on 5th June and ended on the 15th, when the temple was closed.

195

(also called a chasuble), and to have a pastoral staff borne by him- self or his chaplain. The officiating priest was to wear a white alb, plain, with a vestment or cope, the assisting ministers albs with tunicles. The second prayer book of Edward VI. (1552) enjoined the use of the surplice only. The Act of Uniformity of Elizabeth (1 Eliz. c. 2) provided for the use of the 1549 vestments, "until other order shall be therein taken by the authority of the queen's Majesty, &c." In 1564 the Advertisements of Elizabeth were issued, under which the legal vestments were fixed to be the cope worn by the principal minister, with gospeller and epistoler agreeably, in the ministration of the communion, but at ordinary services and at prayers (other than those during the ministration of the communion) said at the communion table the surplice only. Deans and prebendaries were to wear hoods. The point which the judicial committee of the privy council has been called upon more than once to decide is

whether the Advertisements of Elizabeth— coupled with the Injunctions of 1559 and subsequent visitations— were such taking of "other order" as to supersede the ornaments rubric. It has been held that they were, and the effect of the decisions has been to reduce the legal vestments to the surplice and hood for all ordinary purposes, with the addition of the cope for the administration of the communion on high feast days in cathedral and collegiate churches. The cope was also allowed by the canons of 1603-4. A bishop wears in addition arochet. The chasuble, alb, and tunicle had, as has been said, post-Reformation authority, but the girdle, amice, stole, maniple, dalmatic, and biretta were never legally recognized since that time. The stole, however, is frequently worn, by deacons generally arranged as a scarf over the left shoulder. Much information on the subject will be found in the first Report of the Royal Commission on Ritual, issued in 1867.

VESTRY. See Parisu, vol. xviii. p. 296.

VESUVIUS, the most celebrated volcano in the world, rises from the eastern margin of the Bay of Naples in Italy, in the midst of a region which has been densely populated by a civilized community for more than twenty centuries. Hence it has served as a type for the general

popular conception of a volcano, and its history has sup- plied a large part of the information on which geological theories of volcanic action have been based. The height of the mountain varies from time to time within limits of several hundred feet, according to the effects of successive eruptions, but averages somewhere about 4000 feet above

v/ DIOR Ay

PEYEE

5

00 505

Plan of Vesuvius, together with north-and-south profile.

the sea. Vesuvius consists of two distinct portions. On the northern side a lofty semicircular cliff, reaching a height of 3747 feet, half encircles the present active cone, and descends in long slopes towards the plains below. This precipice, known as Monte Somma, forms the wall of an ancient prehistoric crater of vastly greater size than that of the present volcano. The continuation of the same wall round its southern half has been in great measure obliter- ated by the operations of the modern vent, which has built a younger cone upon it, and is gradually fillmg up the hollow of the prehistoric crater. At the time of its greatest dimensions the volcano was perhaps twice as high as it is now. By a colossal eruption, of which no histori- cal record remains, the upper half of the cone was blown

away. It was around this truncated cone that the early Greek settlers founded their little colonies.

At the beginning of the Christian era, and for many previous centuries, no eruption had been known to take place from themountain, and the volcanic nature of thelocal- ity was perhaps not even suspected by the inhabitants who planted their vineyards along its fertile slopes, and built their numerous villages and towns around its base. The sagacious and observant geographer Strabo, however, de- tected the probable volcanic origin of the cone and drew attention to its cindery and evidently fire-eaten rocks. From his account and other references in classical authors we gather that in the first century of the Christian era, and probably for hundreds of years before that time, the sides of the mountain were richly cultivated, but towards the top the upward growth of vegetation had not concealed the loose ashes which still remained as evidence of the volcanic nature of the place. On this barren summit lay a wide flat depression, surrounded with rugged walls of rock, which were festooned with wild vines. The present crater-wall of Somma is doubtless a relic of that time. It was in this lofty rock-girt hollow that the gladiator Spartacus was besieged by the pretor Claudius Pulcher, and from which he escaped by twisting ropes of vine- branches and descending through an unguarded notch in the crater-rim.

After centuries of quiescence the volcanic energy began again to manifest itself in a succession of earthquakes, which spread alarm far and wide through Campania. For some sixteen years after 63 these convulsions continued, doing much damage to the surrounding towns. At Pompeii, for example, among other devastation, the temple of Isis was shaken into ruins, and, as an inscription records, it was rebuilt from the foundations by the munificence of a private citizen. This preliminary earthquake phase of volcanic excitement was succeeded by a catastrophe which stands out prominently as one of the great calamities of human history. On 24th August 79 the earthquakes, which had been growing more violent, culminated in a tremendous explosion of Vesuvius. A contemporary account of this event has been preserved in two letters of the younger Pliny to the historian Tacitus. From this narrative we can gather a tolerably clear conception of the general characteristics of the eruption :—abundant and increasingly violent earthquakes, followed by an extra- ordinary commotion that accompanied the outburst of the volcano, when chariots would not remain still even on level ground, when houses were shaken so as to threaten destruc- tion to their inhabitants, and when the unsteadiness of the land gave rise to great disturbance of the sea, which in its agitation retreated from the shores and left numerous marine animals uncovered ; the well-known pine-tree-shaped cloud of steam, dust, and stones towering above Vesuvius and spreading out far and wide over the surrounding country ; the constant flashes of lightning marking the highly electrical condition of the column of erupted material ; the showers of light cinders and ashes that fell at a distance from the mountain and the rain of hot pumice and pieces of black or glowing lava around the centre of eruption ; the total darkness for three days produced by the diffusion of the finer volcanic dust through the atmo- sphere ; the fiery glare that overspread the cloud-canopy as each explosion uncovered the glowing surface of the lava column in the chimney of the volcano; and the wide covering of ashes, which like a mantle of snow was found to have been spread over the surrounding country when the darkness cleared away and the catastrophe came to an end. This eruption was attended with great destruc- tion of life and property. Three towns are known to have been destroyed—Herculaneum at the western base of the

volcano, Pompeii on the south-east side, and Stabia, still farther south on the site of the modern Castellamare, The exhumation of Herculaneum and Pompeii in modern times has thrown much light upon the life of Roman citizens in the first century. There is no evidence that any lava was emitted during this eruption. – But the abundant steam given off by the volcano seems to have condensed into copious rain, which, mixing with the light volcanic dust, gave rise to torrents of pasty mud, that flowed down the slopes and overwhelmed houses and villages. Herculaneum is believed to have been destroyed by these " water lavas," and there is reason to suppose that similar materials filled the cellars and lower parts of Pompeii. Comparing the statements of Pliny with the facts still observable in the district, we perceive that this first recorded eruption of Vesuvius belongs to that phase of volcanic action known as the paroxysmal, when, after a longer or shorter period of comparative tranquillity, a voleano rapidly resumes its energy and the partially filled-up crater is cleared out by a succession of tremendous explosions. The great eruption of Krakatoa in the Sunda Strait in 1883 is a recent example of the same stage in the history of a volcano.

For nearly fifteen hundred years after the catastrophe of 79 Vesuvius remained in a condition of feeble activity. Occasional eruptions are mentioned, but none that was of importance, and their details are given with great vague- ness by the authors who allude to them. By the end of the 17th century the mountain had resumed much the same general aspect as it presented before the eruption described by Pliny. Its crater-walls, some 5 miles in circumference, were hung with trees and brushwood, and at their base stretched a wide grassy plain, on which cattle grazed and where the wild boar lurked in the thickets. The central tract was a lower plain, covered with loose ashes and marked by a few pools of hot and saline water. At length, after a series of earthquakes lasting for six months and gradually increasing in violence, the volcano burst into renewed paroxysmal activity on 16th December 1631. Vast clouds of dust and stones, blown out of the crater and funnel of the volcano, were hurled into the air and carried for hundreds of miles, the finer particles falling to the earth even in the Adriatic and at Constantinople. The clouds of steam condensed into copious torrents, which, mingling with the fine ashes, produced muddy streams that swept

far and wide over the plains, reaching even to the foot of the Apennines. Issuing from the flanks of the mountain, several streams of lava flowed down towards the west and south, and reached the sea at twelve or thirteen different points. Though the inhabitants had been warned by the earlier convulsions of the mountain, so swiftly did destruction come upon them that 18,000 are said to have lost their lives.

Since this great convulsion, which emptied the crater, Vesuvius has never again relapsed into a condition of total quiescence. At intervals, varying from a few weeks or months to a few years, it has broken out into eruption, sometimes emitting only steam, dust, and scorie, but fre- quently also streams of lava. The years 1766-67, 1779, 1794, and 1822 were marked by special activity, and the phenomena observed on each of these occasions have been fully described. .

The modern cone of the mountain has been built up by successive discharges of lava and fragmentary materials round a vent of eruption, which lies a little south of the centre of the prehistoric crater. The southern segment of the ancient cone, answering to the semicircular wall of Somma on the north side, has been almost concealed, but 1s still traceable among the younger accumulations. The numerous deep ravines that indented the sides of the pre-

— Re tree

he Greeks,

historic volcano, and which still form so marked a feature on the outer slopes of Somma, have on the south side served as channels to guide the currents of lava from the younger cone. But they are gradually being filled up there and will before long disappear under the sheets of molten rock that from time to time rush into them from above. On one of the ridges between these radiating valleys an obser- vatory for watching the progress of the volcano was estab- lished many years ago by the Neapolitan Government, and is still supported as a national institution. A continuous record of each phase in the volcanic changes has been taken, and some progress has been made in the study of the phenomena of Vesuvius, and in prognosticating the occurrence and probable intensity of

eruptions. A wire- rope railway (opened in the year 1880) carries visitors from the foot of the cone up to within 150 yards of the mouth of the crater.

See Volcanoes, by G. P. Scrope, 1872; Vesuvius, by John Phillips, 1869 ; Der Ausbruch des Vesuv im April 1872, by A. Heim,

1873; Vesuvio ela sua Storia and Pompei e la Regione Sotterrata dal Vesuvio nel' Anno 79, by Prof. Palmieri, Naples, 1879; Studien iiber

Vulkane und Erdbeben, by J. F. Schmidt, 1881; and " The Geology of Monte Somma and Vesuvius," by H. J. Johnstone-Lavis, 1884, in Quart. Journ. Geol. Soc., vol. xl. p. 85. See also GEOLOGY, vol. x. p. 240 sq. , (A. GE.) VESZPREM, the chief town of a county of the same name in Hungary, hes between Lake Balaton and thie forest of Bakony, about 65 miles south-west of Buda- Pesth. Veszprém is the seat of a Roman Catholic bishop, whose cathedral and palace, with the county hall and the gymnasium, form the chief features of the town. Veszprém is a station on the Western Railway system. Its four annual fairs are much frequented from all parts of the trans-Danubian district, and the trade in grain, wine, and home industries generally is considerable. The town is of very ancient origin, and was known to the Romans by the name of Cimbria. The queens of the Arpad dynasty used occasionally to reside here, and even now the queens of Hungary are crowned by the bishop of Veszprém. The place suffered much during the contentions between the Turks and the Hungarians and Austrians in the 16th and 17th centuries. The population numbered 14,800 in 1886.

VETERIAARY SCIENCE

HIS science comprises a knowledge of the conformation | Sarmatians in his professional capacity, and seems to have

and structure of all the domesticated animals, espe- cially the horse ; their physiology and special racial and individual characteristics ; their humane management and utilization ; their protection from, and medical and surgical treatment in, the diseases and injuries to which they are exposed ; their amelioration and improvement ; their relations to the human family with regard to communicable disorders; and the supply of food and other products, more particularly those derived from them for the use of mankind. HIsTory. There is evidence that the Egyptians practised veterin- ary medicine and surgery in very remote times; but it is

ac not until we turn to the Greeks that we obtain any very

definite information with regard to the state of veterinary as well as human medicine in antiquity. The writings of Hippocrates (460-356 B.c.) afford evidence of excellent investigations in comparative pathology. Diocles of Car- istus, who was nearly a contemporary, was one of the first to occupy himself with anatomy, which he studied in animals. Aristotle, too, wrote on physiology and com- parative anatomy, and on the maladies of animals, while many other Greek writers on veterinary medicine are cited or copied from by Varro, Columella, and Galen. And we must not overlook Mago of Carthage (200 B.c.), whose work in twenty-eight books was translated into Greek and was largely used by Varro and Columella.

amet Until after the conquest of Greece the Romans do not

Romans,

appear to have known much of veterinary medicine. Varro (116-28 B.C.) may be considered the first Roman writer who deals with animal medicine in a scientific spirit, m his De Re Rustica, in three books, which is largely derived from Greek writers. Celsus is supposed to have Written on animal medicine ; and Columella (1st century) 18 credited with having utilized those relating to veterinary Science in the sixth and seventh parts of his De Re Rustica, One of the best works of its class of ancient times: it treats, not only of medicine and surgery, but also of sani- tary measures for the suppression of contagious diseases. From the 3d century onwards veterinary science had a literature of its own and regular practitioners,

especially In the service of the Roman armies (mulomedici, veterin- ard), Perhaps the most renowned veterinarian of the

enjoyed a high and well-deserved reputation in his time. He was a keen observer; he distinguished and described a number of diseases which were badly defined by his predecessors, recognized the contagious nature of several maladies, and prescribed isolation for their suppression ; he also made interesting observations on accidents and diseases of horses' limbs, and waged war against certain absurd empirical practices then prevailing in the treatment of disease, indicating rational methods, some of which are still successfully employed in veterinary therapeutics, such as splints for fractures, sutures for wounds, cold water for the reduction of prolapsed vagina, hot baths for tetanus, &c. Not less eminent was Hierocles, the successor of Apsyrtus, whose writings he largely copied, but with improvements and valuable additions, especially in the hygiene and training of horses. Pelagonius again was a writer of empirical tendency, and his treatment of disease in general was most irrational. Publius Vegetius (not to be confounded with Flavius Vegetius Renatus, who wrote on the military art) was a popular author of the end of the 5th century, though less distinguished than Apsyrtus, to whom and to Pelagonius he was to a great extent indebted in the preparation of his Mulomedicina sive Ars Veterinarva. He appears to have been more of a horse-dealer than a veterinary practitioner, and knew next to nothing of anatomy, which seems to have been but little cultivated at that period. He was very superstitious and a believer in the influence of demons and sorcerers; nevertheless he gives some interesting observations derived from his travels. He had also a good idea of aerial infection, recognized the utility of disinfectants, and describes some operations not referred to by previous writers, such as removal of calculi from the bladder through the rectum, couching for cataract, the extirpation of certain glands, and several serious operations on the horse's foot. Though inferior to several works written by his predecessors, the Mulomedicina of Vegetius maintained its popularity through many centuries. Of most of the ancient veterin- ary writers we know little beyond what can be gathered from the citations and extracts in the two great collections of Hippiatrica and Geoponica compiled by order of Con- stantine Porphyrogenitus in the 10th century.

It is unnecessary to dwell here on the progress of the In

Roman empire was Apsyrtus of Bithynia, who in 322 | veterinary art during the Middle Ages. Towards the oa accompanied the expedition of Constantine against the | close of the medizval period the subject was much culti-

vated in the cavalry schools of Italy ; and Spain also had an organized system of good practitioners in the 15th century, who have left many books still extant. Ger- many was far behind, and literature on the subject did not exist until the end of the 15th century, when in 1492

was translated into several languages, and was borrowed from for more than a century by different writers. Sir W. Hope's Compleat Horseman (1696) is a translation from Solleysel by a pupil.

Modern Schools and Colleges.

there was published anonymously at Augsburg a Pferde- arzneibiichlein. In the following century the influence of the Italian writers was becoming manifest, and the works of Fugger and Fayser mark the commencement of a new era. JF ayser's treatises, Von der Gestiiterec and

The most important era in the history of modern veterinary Veterin. science commenced with the institution of veterinary schools, ary France was the first to take the great initiative step in this schools, direction. Buffon had recommended the formation of veterinary schools, but his recommendations were not attended to. Bourgelat, In an advocate at Lyons and a talented hippologist, through his influ- France.

Von der Zucht der Kriegs- und Birger-Pferde (1529-1597), are remarkable for originality and good sense. In Great Britain animal medicine was perhaps in a more advanced condition than in Germany, if we accept the evidence of the Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales

(London, 1841) ; yet it was largely made up of the grossest superstitions.1 Among the Celts the healer of horse diseases and the shoer were held in high esteem, as among the more civilized nations of Europe, and the court farrier enjoyed special privileges.2 The earliest known works in English appeared anonymously towards the conimencement of the 16th cen- tury, namely, Propertees and Medcynes for a Horse and Mascal of Oxen, Horses, Sheepes, Hogges, Dogges. The word 'mascal " shows that the latter work was in its origin Italian. There is no doubt that in the 15th century the increasing taste for horses and horsemanship brought Italian riding-masters and farriers into England; and it is recorded that Henry VIII. brought over two of these men who had been trained by Grisone in the famous Neapolitan school. The knowledge so introduced became popularized, and assumed a concrete form in Blundeville's Foure Chiefest Offices belonging to Horsemanship (1566), which contains many references to horse diseases, and, though mainly a compilation, is yet enriched with original observations. In the 15th century the anatomy of the domesticated animals, formerly almost entirely neglected, began to receive attention. A work on comparative anatomy by Volcher Koyter was issued at Nuremberg in

ence with Bertin, prime minister under Louis XV., was the first to induce the Government to establish a veterinary school and school of equitation at Lyons, in 1761. This school he himself directed for only a few years, during which the great bencfits that had resulted from it justified an extension of its teaching to other parts of France. Bourgelat, therefore, founded (1766) at Alfort, near Paris, a second veterinary school, which soon became, and has re- mained to this day, one of the finest and most advanced veterinary schools in the world. At Lyons he was replaced by the Abbé Rozier, a learned agriculturist, who was killed at the siege of Lyons after a very successful period of school management, during which he had added largely to agricultural and physical knowledge by the publi- cation of his Journal de Physique and Cours d' Agriculture. Twenty years later the Alfort school added to its teaching staff several dis- tinguished professors whose names still adorn the anuals of science, such as Daubenton, who taught rural economy; Vic d'Azyr, who lectured on comparative anatomy ; Fourcroy, who undertook in- struction in chemistry ; and Gilbert, one of its most brilliant pupils, who had

veterinary medicine and surgery for his department. The last-named was also a distinguished agriculturist and published many important treatises on agricultural as well as veterinary sub- jects. The position he had acquired, added to his profound and varied knowledge, made him most useful to France during the period of the Revolution. It is chiefly to him that it is indebted for the celebrated Rambouillet flock of Merino sheep, for the conservation of the Tuileries and Versailles parks, and for the creation of the fine expcrimental agricultural establishment organized in the ancient domain of Sceaux. The Alfort school speedily became the nursery of veterinary science, and the source whence all similar institutions obtained their first teachers and their guidance. A third Govern- inent school was at a later period founded at Toulouse ; and these three schools have produced thousands of thoroughly educated veterinary surgeons and many professors of high scientific repute, among whom may be named Bouley, Chauveau, Colin, Toussaint, St Cyr, Goubaux, Arloing, and Galtier.

1573 ; about the same time a writer in Germany named Copho or Cophon published a book on the anatomy of the pig, in which were many original remarks on the lymphatic

Soon after the Alfort school was commenced a national school In Ga- for Austria was established at Vieuna by order of Maria Theresa ; many, and this, remodelled and reorganized by Joseph IJI., is now the &c.

vessels ; and Jehan Hervard in France produced in 1594 his rather incomplete Hippo-Ostéologie. But by far the most notable work, and one which maintained its popu- larity for a century and a half, was that of Carlo Ruini, a senator of Bologna, published in 1598 in that city, and

largest in the country. Prussia quickly followed suit; and soon Government veterinary schools were founded in almost every other European country, except Great Britain, mostly on a munificent scale. Probably all, but especially those of France and Germany, were established as much with a view to training veterinary surgeons for the army as for the requirements of civil life.

In 1790 St Bel (whose real name was Vial, St Bel being a village In the near Lyons, where was his paternal estate), after studying at the United Lyons school and teaching both at Alfort and Lyons, came to Eng- King- land and published proposals for founding a school in which to in- dom.

entitled Dell? Anatomia e dell' Infirmita del Cavallo, e suot Remedu. Passing through many editions, and trans- lated into French and German, this book was for the most

part original, and a remarkable one for the time in which it was composed, the anatomical portion being especially praiseworthy. English books of the 17th century exhibit a strong tendency towards the improvement of veterinary medicine and surgery, especially as regards the horse. This is even more notable in the writings of the 18th century, among which may be particularized Gibson's Larrier's New Guide (1719), Method of Dieting Horses (1721), and (best of all) his New Treatise on the Diseases of Horses, besides Braken's, Burdon's, Bridge's, and Bartlet's treatises. Veterinary anatomy was greatly ad- vanced by the Anatomy of an Horse (1683) of Snape, farrier to Charles II., illustrated with copperplates, and by the still more complete and original work of Stubbs, the Anatomy of the Horse (1766), which decidedly marked a new era in this line of study. Of foreign works it may suffice to mention that of Solleysel, Veritable Parfait Maréschal (1664), which passed through many editions,

Ea eee eee eee, 1 See Leechdoms, Wortcunning, and Starcraft of Early England, 3 vols. 8vo, London, 1864.

- *See Fleming, Horse-Shoes and Horse-Shoeing, London, 1869.*

struct pupils in veterinary medicine and surgery. The Agricultural Society of Odiham, which had been meditating sending two young men to the Alfort school, elected him an honorary member, aud delegated a committee to consult with him respecting his scheme. Some time afterwards this committee detached themselves from the Odiham Society and formed an institution styled the Veteriuary College of London, of which St Bel was appointed professor. The school was to be commenced and maintained by private subscrip- tion. In March 1792 arrangements

were made for building tem- porary stabling for fifty horses and a forge for shoeing at St Pancras. The college made rapid progress in public estimation, notwith- standing considerable pecuniary embarrassments. As soon as the building was ready for the reception of animal patients, pupils began to be enrolled ; and among the earliest were some who afterwards gained celebrity as veterinarians, as Bloxam, Blaine, R. Lawrence, Field, and Bracy Clark. On the death of St Bel in August 1793 there appears to have been some difficulty in procuring a suitable successor ; but at length, on the recommendation of John Hunter and Cline, two medical men were appointed, Coleman and Moorcroft, the latter then practising as a veterinary surgeon in London. The first taught anatomy and physiology, and Moorcroft, after visiting the French schools, directed the practical portion of the teaching. Unfortunately, neither of these teachers had much experience among animals, nor were they well acquainted with their diseases ; but Coleman had as a student, in conjunction with a fellow-student (afterwards Sir Astley Cooper), performed many experiments on

animals under the direction of Cline. Moorcroft, who remained only a short time at the college, afterwards went to India and during a journey in 1819 was murdered in Tibet.1 Coleman, by his scientific researches and energetic management, in a few years raised the college to a high standard of usefulness ; under his care the progress of the veterinary art was such as to qualify its practitioners to hold commiissions in the army; and he himself was appointed veterinary surgeon-general to the British cavalry. Owing to the lack of funds, the teaching at the college must have been very meagre, and, had it not been for the liberality of several medical men in throwing open the doors of their theatres to its pupils for instruction without fee or reward, their professional knowledge would have been sadly deficient. The board of examiners was for many years chiefly composed of eminent members of the medical profession. Coleman died in 1839, and with him disappeared much of the interest the medical profession of London took in the pro- gress of veterinary medicine. Yet the Royal Veterinary College (first styled "Royal" during the presidentship of the duke of Kent) continued to do good work in a

purely veterinary direction, and received such public financial support that it was soon able to dispense with the small annual grant given to it by the Government. In the early years of the institution the horse was the only animal to which much attention was giveu. But at the instigation of the Royal Agricultural Society of England, which gave £200 per annum for the purpose, an additional professor was appointed to investigate and teach the treatment of the diseases of cattle, sheep, and other animals; outbreaks of disease among these were also to be inquired into by the officers of the college. This help to the institution was withdrawn in 1875, but renewed in 1886. This veterinary school has been the parent of other schools in Great Britain, one of which, the first in Scotland, was founded by Prof. Dick, a student of Coleman's and a man of great persever- ance and ability. Commencing at Edinburgh in 1819-20 with only one student, in three years he gained the patronage of the Highland and Agricultural Society of Scotland, which placed a small sum of money at the disposal of a committee appointed by itself to take charge of a department of veterinary surgery it had formed. This patronage, and very much in the way of material assistance and encouragement, were continued to the time of Dick's death in 1866. During the long period in which he presided over the school, considerable progress was made in diffusing a sound knowledge of veterinary medicine in Scotland and beyond it. For many years his examining board, which gave certificates of pro- ficiency under the auspices of the Highland and Agricultural

Society, was composed of the most distinguished medical men in-

Scotland, such as Goodsir, Syme, Lizars, Ballingall, Simpson, and Knox. By his will Dick vested the college in the lord provost and town council of Edinburgh as trustees, and left a large portion of the fortune he had made to maintain it for the purposes for which it was founded. In recent years another veterinary school has been established in Edinburgh, and one in Glasgow, both of which are doing good service.

In 1844 the Royal College of Veterinary Surgeons (to be care- fully distinguished from the Royal Veterinary College) obtained its charter of incorporation. The functions of this body were, until a recent date, limited almost entirely to examining students taught in the veterinary schools,

and bestowing diplomas of membership on those who successfully passed the examinations conducted by the boards which sat in London and Edinburgh. Soon after the Royal College of Veterinary Surgeons obtained its charter of incor- poration a difference arose between it and Dick, which resulted in the latter seceding altogether from the union that had been estab- lished and forming an independent examining board, the Highland and Agricultural Society granting certificates of proficiency to those students who were deemed competent. This schism operated very injuriously on the progress of veterinary education and on profes- sional advancement, as the competition engendered was of a rather deteriorating nature. After the death of Dick the dualism in veterinary licensing was suppressed: the Highland Society ceased to give certificates and the only mode of admission to the profession was through the Royal College. Since then the subjects taught have been increased in number ; conformably with the requirements of ever-extending science, the period of study has been enlarged so as to be nearly as long as that imposed upon medical students; the teaching is more thorough and practical ; and the examinations are more frequent and searching. Candidates for admission to the Schools must also give evidence of having received a good general education. Also since the suppression of the dual system an Act of Parliament has been obtained protecting the title of the graduates of the Royal College of Veterinary Surgeons, and conferring other advantages, not the least of which is the power granted to the college to remove the names of unworthy members from its register. In some respects the Veterinary Surgeons Act is superior to the Medical Act, while it places the profession on the same level as other learned bodies, and prevents the public being imposed upon

1 See Moorcroft and Trebeck's Travels in Cashmere and Thibet.

by empirics and impostors. The college has instituted a higher degree, that of fellow, which cau only be obtained after the graduate has been five years in practice and by passing a severe examination. Fellows only can be members of council or members of the examin- ing boards. The graduates of the Royal College of Veterinary Surgeons who have been

registered since its foundation in 1844 probably number 4000. In the British army there is a smaller mortality among the animals employed, and less loss from con- tagious diseases than in any other in Europe; this result, as well as the high efficiency of the horses, is largely due to the zeal, intel- ligence, and natural aptitude of the veterinary officers for their special duties. In no other army are they so severely tested, physically and professionally,—more than one-half of their service being foreign; aud in India their skill has to be exercised on elephants, camels, bullocks, cattle, and sheep, in addition to horses. During war the strain on army veterinary surgeons is very heavy; and, while surgeons are protected in the field by the Geneva Red Cross, being considered as non-belligerents, veterinary officers arc regarded as combatants, and therefore run the risk of capture, imprisonment, or death at the hands of the enemy.

in India there are one or more veterinary schools in each presi- dency, in which natives are trained as veterinary surgeons. The need for this will be perceived when it is stated that the loss in India from preventible animal diseases alone amounts to at least £6,000,000 annually.

In the United States of America veterinary science has been an exotic of very slow growth. There are veterinary schools in New York, Minneapolis, and elsewhere, but these, like those in Great Britain, are private institutions. To the Cornell, Pennsylvania, and Harvard universities veterinary schools or chairs have beet attached with competent teachers. Events are at present rapidly compelling the people of the United States to realize the true value and importance of veterinary science. For many years the "lung plague"' has been gradually extending itself westward, and it is now causing heavy losses. Long exempted from the more serious of the contagious diseases of animals which have scourged Europe, the United States are now invaded by all of them except two—cattle plague and the foot-and-mouth disease ; and an exotic disorder of pigs, the swine plague or fever, is threatening to exterminate these animals.

The veterinary literature of this period affords striking evidence of the progress made by the science: excellent text-books, manuals, and treatises on every subject belonging to it are very numerous, and are published in every European language, while there is an abundance of periodical

literature. The education—general and technical—of practitioners of veterinary medicine has, of course, been improving to a corresponding extent. The matriculation test for admission to the best veterinary schools and the fixed period for instruction in them vary but little from those of the medical schools. In Germany the veterinary schools at Berlin and Hanover have been raised to the position of universities.

Objects of the Scrence.

One of the chief objects of the science is the treatment of disease in animals. Veterinary medicine has been far less exposed to the vagaries of theoretical doctrines and systems than human medicine. The explanation may perhaps be that the successful practice of this branch of medicine more clearly than in any other depends upon the careful observation of facts and the rational deductions to be made therefrom. No special doctrines seem, in later times at least, to have been adopted, and the dominating sentiment in regard to disease and its treat- ment has been a medical eclecticism, based on practical experience and anatomico-pathological investigation, rarely indeed on philosophical or abstract theories. In this way veterinary science has become pre-eminently a science of observation. At times indeed it has to some extent been influenced by the doctrines which have controlled the practice of human medicine—such as those of Broussais, Hahnemann, Brown, Rasori, Rademacher, and others— yet this has not been for long: experience of them when tested upon dumb unimaginative animals soon exposed their fallacies and compelled their discontinuance.

Of more moment than the cure of disease is its preven- tion, and this is now considered the most important object in connexion with veterinary science. More especially is this the case with those serious disorders which depend for their existence and extension upon the presence of an infecting agent, and whose ravages for so many centuries

In India.

In the United States,

Treat- ment of disease.

are written largely in the history of civilization. Every advance made in medicine affects the progress of veterinary science, and the recent remarkable discoveries, some of which have been initiated by members of the veterinary profession, or developed by them, must in the end create as great a revolution in veterinary practice as in the medicine of man. In "preventive medicine" the benefits to be derived from the application of the germ theory will be immense ; the sanitary police measures based on this know- ledge are easily framed, and, if carried rigorously into operation, must eventually lead to the extinction of these disastrous disorders.1 The medicine of the lower animals differs from that of man in no particular so much, perhaps, as in the application it makes of utilitarian principles. The life of man is sacred; but in the case of animals, when there are doubts as to complete restoration to health and soundness, monetary considerations generally decide against the adoption of remedial measures. This feature in the medicine of the domesticated animals brings very prominently before us the value of the old adage that "prevention is better than cure." In Great Britain the value of comparative pathology in the relations it bears to human medicine, to the public health and wealth, as well as to agriculture, has been strangely overlooked or ignored; and in consequence but little allowance has been made for the difficulties the practitioner of animal medicine has to contend with. The rare instances in which animals can be seen by the veterinary surgeon in the earliest stages of disease, and when this would prove most amenable to medical treatment; delay, gener- ally due to the inability of those who have the care of animals to perceive these early stages; the fact that animals cannot, except in a negative manner, tell their woes, describe their sensations, or indicate what and where they suffer; the absence of those comforts and conveni- ences of the sick room which cannot be called in to amelio- rate their condition ; the violence or stupor, as well as the structural arrangements and attitude of the sick creatures, which only too frequently render favourable positions for cure impossible ; the slender means generally afforded for carrying out recommendations, together with the often- times intractable nature of

these diseases; and the utili- tarian influences alluded to above,—all these considera- tions, in the great majority of instances, militate against the adoption of curative treatment, or at least greatly increase its difficulties.

For more than forty years most destructive plagues of animals have prevailed almost continuously in the British islands without any attempt, worthy of the name, having been made to check or extirpate them until within a very recent period. Two exotic bovine diseases alone (contagi- ous pleuro-pneumonia or lung plague and foot-and-mouth disease) are estimated to have caused the death, during the first thirty years of their prevalence in the United King- dom, of 5,549,780 cattle, roughly valued at £83,616,854 ; while the invasion of cattle plague in 1865-66 was calcu- lated to have caused a money loss of from £5,000,000 to £8,000,000. The depredations made in South Africa and Australia by the lung plague alone are quite appalling ; and in India the loss brought about by contagious diseases among animals has been stated at not less than £6,000,000 annually. The damage done by tuberculosis—a contagious tlisease of cattle, transmissible-to several kinds of animals, and possibly also to man, by means of the flesh and milk of diseased beasts—cannot be even guessed at; but it must be enormous, when we learn how widely the malady is diffused. But that terrible pest of all ages, the cattle plague, has in its two recent invasions of England been

1 Comp. Fleming, Veterinary Sanitury Science and Police, London,

1875.

promptly suppressed with comparatively trifling loss. The foot-and-mouth disease, which proved such a heavy inflic- tion to British agriculture from its introduction in 1838, has been completely extirpated. Glanders, which annually caused the destruction of large numbers of cavalry horses, | is now unknown in the army, and is rapidly disappearing from civilian stables. Rabies would soon be included in the category of extinct diseases if the indications of veterinary science were followed; and so with the other contagious maladies of animals. As for such diseases as | depend for their development upon germs derived from) the soil or herbage upon

which animals live, and which cannot be directly controlled by veterinary sanitary ’ measures, the system of protective inoculation with culti- vated virus introduced by Pasteur will probably bring about their extinction, or at any rate greatly nutigate their effects. Veterinary science can also offer much assistance in the Rela- study and prevention of the diseases to which mankind tions | are liable. Some grave maladies of the human species 2! Vt, : : : inary are certainly derived from animals, and others may yet be puma! added to the list. In the training of the physician great medi-. benefit would be derived from the study of disease in cine. | animals,—a fact which has been strangely overlooked in q England, as those can testify who understand how closely the health of man may depend upon the health of the creatures he has domesticated and derives subsistence from, and how much more advantageously morbid processes can be studied in animals than in our own species. Although as yet no chair of comparative pathology has been estab- lished in any British university, on the Continent such chairs are now looked upon as an almost indispensable item of every university. Bourgelat, towards the middle of the 18th century, in speaking of the veterinary schools he had been instrumental in forming, urged that “leurs portes soient sans cesse ouvertes 4 ceux qui, chargés par état de la conservation des hommes, auront acquis par le nom qu’ils se seront fait le droit d’interroger la nature, | chercher des analogies, et vérifier des idées dont la con- formation ne peut étre qu’utile 4 l’espéce humaine.” And the benefits to be mutually derived from this association of the two branches of medicine inspired Vicq d’Azyr to — elaborate his Vouveau Plan de la Constitution de la Médecine en France, which he presented to the National Assembly in 1790. His fundamental idea was to make veterinary \ teaching a preliminary (le premier degré) and, as it were, the principle of instruction in human medicine. His pro- posal went so far as to insist upon a veterinary school being annexed to every medical college established in France. This idea was reproduced in the Rapport sur [Instruction Publique which Talleyrand read before the National Assembly in 1790. In this project veterinary teaching was to form part of the National Institution at Paris. | The idea was to initiate students of medicine into aknow- | ledge of diseases by observing those of animals. suffering animal always appears exactly as it is and feels, ‘ without the intervention of

mind obscuring the symptom- atology, the symptonis being really and truly the rigorous expression of its diseased condition. From this point of

ii

The

view, the dumb animal, when it is ill, offers the same

difficulties in diagnosis as does the ailing infant or the

comatose adult. Of the other objects of veterinary science there is only

one to which allusion need here be made: that is the

perfectioning of the domestic animals in everything that

is likely to make them more valuable to man. This is in

an especial manner the province of this science, the know-

ledge of the anatomy, physiology, and other matters con-

nected with these animals by its students being essential

for such improvement.

Nursing.

. Food for a sick horse,

VETERINARY SCIENCE

DISEASES OF DOMESTIC ANIMALS.

Considerations of space forbid a eomplete or detailed description of all the diseases, medical and surgical, to which the domesticated animals are liable. 'This is to be found in the current veterinary text-books. Refcrence will be made here only to the more import- ant disorders of animals which

are of a communicable nature, and which were not included in the article MurnraIn (q.v.).

Diseases of the Horse.

Every horseman should know something of the injuries, lame- nesses, and diseases to which the horse is liable. Unfortunately not very much can be done in this direction by book instruction ; indeed, there is generally too much doctoring and too little nursing of-siek animals. Even in slight and favourable cases of illness re- covery is often retarded by too zealous and injudicious medication ; the objeet to be always kept in view in the treatment of animal patients is to place them in those conditions which allow nature to operate most freely in restoring health. This can best be rendered in the form of nursing, which sick animals greatly appreciate. However indifferent a horse may be to caressing or kind attention during health, when ill he certainly appreciates both, and when in pain will often apparently endeavour to attract notice and seek yelief from those with whom he is familiar. Fresh air and clean- liness, quiet and eomfort, should always be secured, if possible. The stable or loose box should be warm, without being close, and free from draughts. If the weather is cold, and especially if the horse is suffering from inflammation of the air-passages, it may be necessary to keep up the temperature by artificial means ; but great care should be taken that this does not render the air too dry to breathe. The surface of the body can be kept warm by rugs, and the legs by woollen bandages. Yet a sick horse is easily fatigued and annoyed by too mucli clothing, and therefore it is better to resort to artificial heating of the stable than to overload the body or impede moveinent by heavy wrappings. If blankets are used, it is well to place a cotton or linen sheet under them, should the horse have an irritable skin. For bedding, long straw should be employed as little as possible, sinee it hampers movement. Clean old litter, sawdust, or peat-moss litter is the best. If the hoofs arc strong, and the horse likely to be confined for some weeks, it affords relief to take off the shoes. Tying up should be avoided, if possible, unless it is urgently required, the horse being allowed to move about or lie down as he may prefer.

When a sick horse has lost his appetite, he should be tempted to eat by offering him such food as will be enticing to him. It should be given frequently and in small quantities, but should not be foreed on him ; food will often be taken if offered from the hand, when it will not be eaten out of the manger. Whether the animal be fed from a bueket or from a manger, any food that is left should be thrown away, and the receptacle well cleancd out after each meal, As a rule, during sickness a horse requires laxative food, in order to allay fever or inflammatory symptoms, while support-

biscuits, malt liquor, eorn, &c., are often prescribed with this object. Milk may be given skimined or unskimmed ; a little sugar may be mixed with it ; and one or two gallons may be given daily, according to circumstances. One or two eggs may be given beaten up with a little sugar and mixed with milk, three or four times a day, or more frequently ; or they may be boiled hard and powdered, and mixed in the milk. A quart of stout, alc, or porter may be given two or three times a day, or a half to one bottle of port wine daily. Scalded oats, with a little salt added, are very useful when convalescence is nearly completed. As a rule, a sick horse should have as much water as he likes to drink, though it may be necessary in certain cases to restrict the quantity, and to have the chill taken off; but it should never be warmer than 75° to 80°.

As little grooming as possible should be allowed when a horse is very weak ; it should be limited to sponging about the mouth, nostrils, eyes, and forehead with clean water, to which a little vinegar may be added. Rub the legs and ears with the hand, take off the clothing, and shake or change it once a day, and if agreeable rub over the body with a soft cloth. Exercise is of course not re- quired during sickness or injury, and the period at which it is allowed will depend upon circumstanees. Care must be taken that it is not ordered too early, or carried too far at first.

Administration of Medieine.—Much care is required in admin- How to istering medicines in the form of ball or bolus; and practice, as give a well as courage and tact, is needed in order to give it without ball.

danger to the administrator or the animal. The ball should be held between the fingers of the right hand, the tips of the first and fourth being brought together below the second and third, which are placed on the upper side of the ball; the right hand is thus made as small as possible, so as to admit of ready insertion into the mouth. The left hand grasps the horse's tongue, gently pulls it out, and places it on that part of the right side of the lower jaw which is bare of teeth. With the right hand the ball is placed at the root of the tongue. The momeut the right hand is withdrawn, the tongue should be released. This causes the ball to be carried still farther back. The operator then closes the mouth and watehes the left side of the neck, to note the passage of the ball down the gullet. Many horses keep a ball in the mouth a considerable time before they will allow it to go down. A mouthful of water or a handful of food will generally make them swallow it readily. If this does not succeed, the nostrils should be grasped by the hand and held a few moments.

To administer a drink or drench requires as much eare as giving How to a ball, in order to avoid choking the horse, though it is unattended give a with risk to the administrator. Au ordinary glass or stone bottle drink or

ing the strength. The following list comprises the usual laxative food employed :—green grass, green wheat, oats, and barley, Ineerne, earrots, parsnips, gruel, bran mash, linseed aud bran mash,

boiled barley, linseed tea, hay tea, and linseed oil. Green grass, Iueerne, and similar articles of food, if cut when in a wet state, should be dried before being given. Boiled grain should be cooked with very little water, so that it may be floury and comparatively dry when ready ; a little salt should be mixed with it. One gallon of good gruel may be made with a pound of meal and cold water, Which should be stirred till it boils, and afterwards permitted to simmer over a gentle fire till the fluid is quite thick. To make a bran mash, seald a stable bucket, throw out the water, put in three pounds of brau and one ounce of salt, add two and a half pints of boiling water, stir up well, cover over, and allow the mash to stand for fifteen or twenty minutes until it is well cooked. For a bran and linseed mash, boil slowly for two or three hours one pound of linseed, so as to have about a couple of quarts of thiek fluid, to Which two pounds of

bran and one ounce of salt may be added. The whole should be stirred up, covered over, and allowed to steam as before described. 'Ihe thicker the mash the more readily will the horse eat it. Linseed tea is made by boiling one pound of linseed m a couple of gallons of water until the grains are quite soft. It may be economically made by using less water to cook the linseed, and afterwards making up the quantity of water to about a gallon and a half. Hay tea. may be prepared by filling a buckct, after sealding it, with good sweet hay, pouring in as much boiling water as the bueket will hold, covering it over, and allowing it to stand until cold, when the fluid may be strained off and given to the horse. This forms a refreshing drink. Linseed oil, in quantities of from one quarter to half a pint daily, may be mixed with the food; it keeps the bowels in a lax condition, has a good effect on the skin oo alr-passages, and is useful as an artiele of diet. When debility las to be eombated, as in low fever or other weakening diseases, strengthening and other easily digested food must be administercd, though some of the foods already mentioned, such as boiled grain, 'answer this purpose to a certain extent. Milk, eggs, bread and

inay be used, provided there are no sharp points around the mouth ; drench.

but either the usual drenching horn or a tin vessel with a narrow mouth or spout is safer. It is necessary to raise the horse's head, so that the nose may be a little higher than the horizontal line. If the horse is restless, his head must be elevated by a loop of cord inserted into the mouth over the upper jaw, the prong of a stable fork being passed through it, and the handle held steady by an assistant. 'The drink must be given by a person standing on the right side (the assistant being in front or onthe left side of the horse), the side of the mouth being pulled out a little, to forma sack or funnel, into which the medicine is poured, a little at a time, allowing an interval now and again for the horse to swallow. If any of the fluid gets into the windpipe (which it is liable to do if the head is held too high), it will cause coughing, whereupon the head should be instantly lowered. Neither the tongue nor the nostrils should be interfered with. Powders may be given ina little mash or gruel, well stirred up.

If a wide surface is to be fomented (as the chest, abdonien, or Fomenta-
loins), a blanket or other large woollen cloth should be dipped in tions or
water as hot as the hand can comfortably bear it, noderately wrung
bathing.

out, and applied to the part, the heat and moisture being retained by covering it with a waterproof sheet or dry rug. When it has lost some of its heat, it should be removed, dipped in warm water, and again applied. In cases of acute inflammation, it may be neces- sary to have the water a little hotter ; and, to avoid the incon- venience of removing the blanket, or the danger of chill when it is removed, it may be secured round the body by skewers or twine, the hot water being poured on the outside of the top part of the blanket by any convenient vessel. To foment the feet, they should be placed in a bucket or tub (the latter with the bottom resting wholly on the ground) containing warm water ; a quantity of moss litter put in the tub or bueket prevents splashing and retains the

heat longer. . XXIV. — 26

Poultices.

Enemata or elysters.

Glanders.

Acute form.

202

Poultices are used for allaying pain, promoting suppuration, softening horn or other tissues, and bringing on a healthy action in wounds. To be beneficial, they should be large and always kept moist. For applying poultices to the feet, a poultice-shoe, constructed as follows, may be used with advantage. 'Take a cir- cular piece of hard wood, a little longer and broader than a horse- shoe, and about one and a half inches thick. Get one surface of it rounded in a lathe, so that there may be a risc of about three- quarters of an inch in the centre, while the other surface remains flat. Round the circumference of the board nail leather, so as to form a

convenicnt boot for retaining the poultice, similar to the one in ordinary use, except that the part which comes on the ground is rounded. The fact of its being round will enable the horse to whose foot it is applied to ease the affected spot by throwing his weight on the toe, the heel, or on either quarter, as lie chooses. Poultices are usually made with bran, thongh this has the disad- vantage of drying very quickly, to remedy which it may be mixed with hnseed meal or a little linseed oil. Boiled carrots or turnips mashed make a good poultice, as docs linseed meal, when mixed with boiling water (with a little olive oil added) by stirring. A charcoal poultice is sometimes used when there is a bad smell to be got rid of. Itis made by mixing linseed meal with boiling water and stirring until a soft mass is produced ; with this some wood charcoal in powder is mixed, and when ready to be applied some more powder is sprinkled on the surface. It may be noted that, in lieu of these materials for poultices, what is known as spongio- piline can be usefully employed. A piece of sufficient size is steeped in hot water, applied to the part, covered with a large piece of oiled silk or waterproof stuff, and secured there. Even an ordinary sponge, steeped in hot water and covered with any watcrproof material, makes a good poulticing mediuin ; it is well adapted for the throat, near the head, as well as for the space between the branches of the lower jaw. g

Enemata or clysters are given in fevers, inflammation, constipa- tion, &c., to empty the posterior part of the bowels. They are adiministered by a large syringe capable of containing a quart or more of water, with a nozzle about twelve inches in length, with an ox's bladder tied to a pipe, or a large funnel with a long nozzle at aright angle; but the syringe is best. Water alone is usually applied for enemata; it should be about the temperature of the body, not less, but perhaps a degree or two more. To administer an enema, one of the horse's fore-feet should be held up, while the operator pushes the end of the nozzle, smeared with a little lard or oul, very gently and steadily for a few inches into the intestine, and then presses out the water. The amount injected will depend upon the size of the animal; two or three quarts would suffice for an ordinary-sized horse.

Epixootic and Contagious Diseases.—The epizootie diseases affect- ing the horse are not numerous, and may generally be considered as specific, or infectious and contagious, in their nature, cireum- stances of a

favourable kind leading to their extension by propaga- tion of the agent upon which their existence depends. This agent, in some of the maladies, has been proved to be a micro-organism, and there can be little doubt that it is so for all of them.

Glanders is one of the most serious diseases affecting horses, not only because it is incurable, but because it is very contagious. It is known in nearly every part of the world, except in Australasia. The virulent principle of glanders establishes itself most easily among horses kept in foul, badly-ventilated stables, or among such as are overworked, badly fed, or debilitated in any way. Glanders, however, has this in common with other contagious diseases, that it is never spontaneously developed, in the absence of the virulent agent. Carnivorous animals—as lions, tigers, dogs, and cats—have become infected through eating the flesh of glandered horses ; and goats, sheep, swine, and rabbits have been successfully inoculated with the virus. Men who attend on diseased horses are Hable to be infected, especially if they have any sores on the exposed parts of their bodies (see GLANDERS). Though infection through wounds is the readiest way of receiving the disease, the germ or bacillus may also obtain access through the lungs, stomach, and thin mucous membranes, such as that of the eyes, nose, and lips. Glanders is presented in two forms,—one affecting the mucous membranes of the body, more particularly those of the air-passages (glanders proper), and the other attacking the skin and the superficial lymphatic vessels (farcy). Both forms are due to the same virus, and both may be acute or chronic. The acute form is the more quae and virulent, and either destroys life quickly or becomes chronic.

The symptoms of acute glanders are marked by fever and its accompaniments—loss of appetite, hurried pulse and respiration, languor, and disinclination to move. Sometimes the legs or joints are swollen ; but the characteristic symptoms, the classical signs, are a yellow adhesive discharge from one or both nostrils ; there is also a peculiar enlarged nodulatcd condition of one or both lymphatie glands between the branches of the lower jaw, which, though they may be painful, very rarely suppurate ; and on the mucous mem- brane covering the septum of the nose are little yellow pimples or

pustules, running into deep ragged-edged ulcers. The discharge from the nostril adheres to its margin, because of its glutinous nature, and straw and other matters also stick to it, while the obstruction to the respiration causes the animal to snort frequently —a cause of danger to men and animals, as this nasal discharge is virulent. In addition, the lymphatic vessels of the face are often involved and appear as corded lines passing up the cheeks ; they are painful on pressure. In some cases there is a cough. As the disease progresses, the ulcers in the nostrils extend in size and depth and increase in number, often completely perforating the septum, and being sometimes covered with black crusts; the nasal discharge becomes more abundant and tenacious, streaked with blood, and foul smelling, and causes the animal the greatest diffi- eulty in breathing, so that it appears to be on the point of suffoca- tion. Death is due either to this cause or to exhaustion.

Chronic glanders gencrally presents the same symptoms ; but the Chronic

health and be able to perform a certain amount of work. In some cases the ulceration may not be perceptible, and only the peculiar knotty enlarged gland and slight discharge from one nostril be evident. There may be uncertainty in such cases as to whether the disease is glanders, owing to the absence of ulceration; and, to prove whether it is that diseasc, recourse has to be had to inocula- tion of another animal, generally a worthless horse or ass, the latter being the best, as it develops the characteristic symptoms more rapidly and certainly.

In farcy, instead of the symptoms being manifested in the interior Farey.

of the body or head, they show themselves on the skin, where the lymphatic vessels become inflamed and ulcerate. These vessels appear as prominent lines or "cords," hard and painful on manipn- lation, and along their course arise little tumours (the so-called "farcy buds"). These tumours ulcerate, forming sores, from which is discharged a thin glutinous pus. When the skin of the limbs is affected, these are much swollen and the animal moves with pain and difficulty. Rarely large abscesses containing thin pus form on the body. Farey may appear during

glanders or precede it, but it generally terminates in it, though the limbs and body may be eovered with ulcers before this occurs.

Medical treatment of glanders, chronic and acute, and of acute Treat- farcy should not be attempted, as the malady is incurable, while ment, the danger of infection being transmitted to other animals or men &e.

is always real and imminent. Horses which present suspicious symptoms, or those which have been in contact or have stood in the same stable with diseased horses, should be kept apart from others, and their harness, clothing, &c., left with them. Animals which are found to be affected should be immediately destroyed and buried with proper precautions, their harness, clothing, and the utensils employed with them being either destroyed also or thoroughly cleansed, while stables and places which they have fre- quented should be completely disinfected. Forage and litter used by glandered horses ought to be burned or buried.

|

animal is not so seriously ill, and may indeed appear to be in good forni, j

The venereal or coitus disease is a malady which occurs in Arabia Coitus | and continental Europe, and has recently been carried trom France disease.

to the United States of America (Montana and Illinois). In sone of its features it resembles human syphilis, and it is propagated in the same manner. From one to ten days after coitus, or in the stallion not unfrequently after some weeks, there is irritation, swelling, and a livid redness of the external organs of generation (in stallions the penis may shrink), followed by unhealthy ulcers, which appear in successive crops, often at considerable intervals. {In mares these are near the clitoris, which is frequently erected, and the animals rub and switch the tail about, betraying uneasiness. In horses the eruption is on the penis and sheath. In the milder forms there is little constitutional disturbance, and the patients play recover in a period varying from two weeks to two months. In the severe forms the local swelling increases by intcrmittent steps. In the mare the vulva is the seat of a deep violet congestion and exteusive

ulceration ; pustules appear on the perineum, tail, and between the thighs ; the lips of the vulva are parted, exposing the irregular, nodular, puckered, ulcerated, and lardaceous – looking mucous membrane. Ifthe mare happens to be pregnant, abortion occurs, In all cases emaciation sets in; lameness of one or more limbs occurs; great debility is manifested, and this runs on to paralysis, when death ensues after a miserable existence of from four or five months to two yeats. In horses swelling of the sheath may be the only symptom fora long time, even for a year. Then there may follow dark patches of extravasated blood on or swellings of the penis; the testicles may become tumefied ; a dropsical en- gorgement extends forward beneath the abdomen and chest; the lymphatic glands in different parts of the body may be enlarged ; pustules and ulccrs appear on the skin; therc is a discharge from the eyes and nose ; emaciation becomes extreme ; a weak and vacillat- ing movement of the posterior limbs gradually increases, as in the mare, to paralysis; and after from three months to three years death puts an end to loathsomeness and great suffering. This malady appears to be spread only by the act of coition. Itisa purely con- tagious disorder, and cannot be generated by any known agency or

j

| Influ- enza.

Typhoid, gastric, fluenza, and somctimes occurs at the same time in a locality. It

or bilious fever,

VETERINARY SCIENCE

cause. The indications for its suppression and extinction are there- fore obvious. They are (1) to prevent diseased animals coming into actual contact, especially per coitwm, with healthy ones, (2) to destroy the infected, and (3), as an additional precautionary measure, to thoroughly cleanse and disinfect the stables, clothing, utensils, and implements used for the sick horse.

Under influenza several diseases are sometimes included, and in different invasions it may (and doubtless does) assume varying forms. It may be said to bea specific fever of a low or asthenic type, associated with inflammation of the mucous membrane lining the air-passages, and also sometimes with that of other organs. At various times it has prevailed extensively over different parts of the world, more especially during the 18th and 19th centuries. Per- haps one of the most wide-spread outbreaks recorded was that of 1872, on the American continent. It usually radiates from the district in which it first appears. The symptoms have been enu- merated as follows:—sndden attack, marked by extreme debility and stupor, with increased body-temperature, quick weak pulse, rigors, and cold extremities. The head is pendent, the eyelids swollen and half closed, eyes lustreless, and tears often flowing down the face. There is great disinclination to move; the body sways on the animal attempting to walk; and the limb-joints crack. The appetite is lost and the mouth is hot and dry; the bowels are constipated and the urine scanty and high-coloured ; there is nearly always a deep, painful, and harassing cough ; on auscultation of the chest crepitation or harsh blowing sounds are audible; and the membrane lining the eyelids and nose assumes either a bright pink colour or a dull leaden hue. A white, yellowish, or greenish-coloured discharge flows from the nostrils. In a few days the fever and other symptoms subside, and convalescence rapidly sets in. In unfavourable cases the fever increases, as well as the prostration, the breathing becomes laboured, the cough more painful and deep, and auscultation and percussion indicate that the lungs are seriously involved, with perhaps the pleura or the heart. Clots sometimes form in the latter organ, and quickly bring about a fatal termina- tion. When the lungs do not suffer, the bowels may, and with this complication there are, in addition to the stupor and torpor, tension and tenderness of the abdominal walls when pressed upon, mani- festations of colic, great thirst, a coated tongue, yellowness of the membranes of nose and eyes, high-coloured urine, constipation, and dry feces covered with mucus. Sometimes rheumatic swelling and tenderness take place in the muscles and joints of the limbs, which may persist for a long time, often shifting from leg to leg, and involving the sheaths of tendons. At other times acute inflam- mation of the eyes supervenes, or even paralysis.

In this disease good nursing is the chief factor in the treatment.

Comfortable, clean, and airy stables or loose-boxes should be pro-

vided, and the warmth of the body and limbs maintained. Cold and damp, foul air and uncleanliness, are as inimical to health and as antagonistic to recovery as in the case of mankind. In influenza it has been generally found that the less medicine the sick animal receives the more likely it is to recover. Nevertheless it may be necessary to adopt such medical measures as the following. For constipation administer enemata of warm water or give a dose of linseed oil or aloes. For fever give mild febrifuge diuretics (as liquor of acetate of ammonia or spirit of nitrous ether), and, if there is cough or nervous excitement, anodynes (such as extract of bella- donna). When the fever subsides and the prostration is great, it may be necessary to give stimulants (carbonate of ammonia, nitrous ether, aromatic ammonia) and tonics, both vegetable (gentian, quassia, calumba) and mineral (iron, copper, arsenic). Some veter- inary surgeons administer large and frequent doses of quinine from the onset of the disease, and, it is asserted, with excellent effect. If the abdominal organs are chiefly involved, demulcents may supplement the above (linseed boiled to a jelly, to which salt is added, is the most convenient and best), and drugs to allay pain (as opium and hydrocyanic acid). Olive oil is a safe laxative in such cases. When nervous symptoms are manifested, it may be necessary to apply wet cloths and vinegar to the head and neck ; cven blisters to the neck have been recommended. Bromide of potassium has been beneficially employed. To combat inflammation of the throat, chest, or abdomen, counter-irritants may be resorted to, such as mustard, soap liniment, or the ordinary white liniment composed of equal parts of oil of turpentine, liquor ammonie, and olive oil. The food should be soft mashes and gruel of oatmeal, with carrots and green food, and small and frequent quantities of scalded oats in addition when convalescence is established.

Typhoid, gastric, or bilious fever is often confounded with in-

also appears independently in horses when shedding their coat in the autumn, in those kept in a hot, close, and impure atmo- sphere, and in those fed insufficiently or on badly-preserved, musty, or otherwise

improper food, or supplicd with water con- taining an excess of decomposing organic matter. Overwork or hardship predisposes to an attack. This fever seenis to become con- tagious under certain conditions, especially in badly-ventilated in- salubrious stables. Wholesome and well-aired stables are not indeed

always exempt ; but in them the disease is less serions and does not spread so rapidly. It is presumed that this fever is caused by some virulent principle. As "premonitory" indications of the malady, the horse appears dull and listless, and careless of food. Then signs of fever appear, in the form of staring coat, shivering, alternate heat and coldness of the surface, restlessness, a hot dry mouth, and elevation of the internal temperature of the body. 'The visible mucous membranes have a yellow tinge; constipation is present, and with it indications of colicky pain ; the abdomen is distended, tense, and sensitive on pressure ; feces are passed in the shape of a few hard, dark-coloured pellets covered with mucus; the urine is scanty, red in colour, and after standing a short time deposits a heavy sediment. Sometimes there is sore throat, with increased respiration and a nasal discharge. In mild attacks convalescence may occur in from a week to ten days. In serions cases the pulse is small, fecble, and quick; the mouth is very hot and dry, and exhibits yellow, brown, or greenish patches; the abdomen is more tender and the bowels very irritable, diarrhoea of a foetid character often ensuing. Prostration to an extreme degree is a very marked feature in these cases. The head is maintained in a pendent posi- tion ; the eyes become sunken ; the expression is haggard and list- less; while the stupor may be so advanced that pinching or pricking the skin will elicit no indication of sensibility. A fatal termination usually occurs in from ten to twenty days.

The diet must be carefully attended to, and should be soft and easily digested, such as mashes of bran, sliced carrots or turnips, boiled oats or barley, freshly cut grass, and oatmeal gruel. The stable should be kept clean and sweet, fresh air being an important factor in treatment ; the body of the patient must also be made comfortable by clothing. Quiet is necessary. Quinine has been found useful in large and repeated doses; and calomel has becn recommended. A daily dose of Glauber's salt may be given if there is constipation; and, if this is obstinate, enemata of warm water should be administered in addition. A drachm each of chlorate or nitrate of potash and muriate of ammonia may be given three or four times daily with the water drunk ; or in cases of great prostra- tion an

ounce of oil of turpentine, sulphuric ether, sweet spirits of nitre, or carhonate of ammonia may be given as well. If there is much tenderness of the abdomen, hot fomentations continued for a long time, or mustard poultices, or the application of extract of mustard should be resorted to. When convalescence sets in, three or four ounces of tincture of gentian or cinchona may be given twice daily, with muriate of iron and stimulants.

Strangles is a specific contagious and infectious fever peculiar to Strangles,

ungulates, and is more especially incidental to young animals. It is particularly characterized by the formation of abscesses in the lymphatic glands, chiefly those between the branches of the lower jaw (submaxillary). Various causes are ascribed for its production, such as change of young horses from field to stable, from grass to dry feeding, from idleness to hard work, irritation of teething, and change of locality and climate. It is asserted that repeated attacks will occur in the same horse under the influence of the last-named cause. But the chief, if not the sole, cause is infection, —the malady, in some of its features, closely resembling the ‘“‘mumps” of the human species. Languor and feverishness, diminution of appetite, cough, redness of the nasal membrane, with discharge from the eyes and nose, and thirst are among the earliest symptoms. Then there is difficulty in swallowing, coincident with the development of swelling between the branches of the lower jaw, which often causes the water in drinking to be returned through the nose and the masticated food to be dropped from the mouth. The swelling is hot and tender, diffused, and uniformly rounded and smooth ; at first it is hard, with soft, doughy margins; but later it becomes soft in the centre, where an abscess is forming, and soon “points . and bursts, giving exit to a quantity of pus. Relief is now experl- enced by the animal ; the symptoins subside ; and recovery takes place. In some cases the swelling is so great or occurs so close to the larynx that the breathing is interfered with, and even rendered so difficult that suffocation is threatened. In other cases the disease assumes an irregular form, and the swelling, instead of softening in the centre, remains hard for an indefinite time, or 1t may subside and abscesses form in various parts of the body, sometimes 1n vital organs, as the brains, lungs, liver, kidneys, &c., or in the

bronchial or mesenteric glands, where they generally produce serious conse- quences. Not unfrequently a pustular eruption accompanies the other symptoms. The malady may terminate in ten days or be protracted for months, often terminating fatally, especially when the animal is not well nursed and is kept in an unhealthy stable. Good nursing is the chief part of the treatment. The strength should be maintained by soft nutritious food, and the body kept warm and comfortable ; the stable or loose-box must have plenty of fresh air and be kept clean. The swelling may be fomented with warm water and poulticed. The poultice may be a little bag con- taining bran and linseed meal mixed with hot water, and applied warm to the tumefaction, being retained there by a square piece of calico, with holes for the ears and eyes, tied down the middle of the face and behind the ears. If the breathing 1s disturbed and

Horse pox.

Tuber- culosis.

Milk or parturi- ent fever.

204

noisy, the animal may be made to inhale steam from hot water in a bucket or from bran mash. Ifthe breathing becomes very difficult, the windpipe must be opened and a tube inserted. Instead of the swelling being poulticed, a little blistering ointment is sometimes rubbed over it, which promotes suppuration. When the abscess points, it may be lanced, though it is generally better to allow it to open spontaneously. ,

It is very important to distinguish strangles from glanders ; the character of the nasal discharge, the absence of ulcers from the nostrils, and the diffused soft swelling between the branches of the lower jaw establish the distinction between them. oe <

Horsepox, which is somewhat rare, is almost, if not quite, identi- eal with eowpox, being undistinguishable when inoculated on men and cattle. It most frequently attacks the limbs, though it may appear on the face and other parts of the body. There is usually slight fever; then swelling, heat,

and tenderness are manifest in the part which is to be the seat of eruption, usually the heels ; firm nodules form, increasing to one-third or one-half an inch in dia- meter; the hair becomes erect; and the skin, if light-coloured, changes to an intense red. On the ninth to the twelfth day a limpid fluid oozes from the surface and mats the hairs together in yellowish seabs ; when one of these is removed, there is seen a red, raw depression, whereon the scab was fixed. In three or four days the crusts fall off, and the sores heal spontaneously. No medical treatment is needed, cleanliness being requisite to prevent the pocks becoming sloughs. If the inflammation runs high, a weak solution of carbolic acid may be employed.

Bibliography.—Among the numerous modern popular works in English which treat of diseases of the horse, the following may be mentioned :— Robertson, Equine Medieine (uondon, 1883); Williams, Prineiples and Practice of Vi eterinary Medieine (2d ed., London, 1874-79), and Principles and Practice of Veterinary Surgery (2d ed., London, 1872-76); Courtenay, Manual of Veterinary Medicine and Surgery (London, 1886); Fleming, Practical Horse-Keeper (London, 1886) ; Gresswell, Diseases and Disorders of the Horse (Leeds, 1886); Fitzwygram, Horses and Stables (London, 1869); and Law, The Farmer's Veterinary Adviser (London, 1879).

Diseases of Cattle.

The diseases of the bovine species are not so numerous as those of the horse, and some of the more serious have been already alluded to (see MurRAIN). We will notice a few which have not been included among these.

Tubereulosis is a most formidable and widespread disorder of cattle; it is assuming greater proportions every year in those countries in which it is prevalent, in consequence of no steps being taken to check or suppress it. It is infectious and con- tagious, can be conveyed to other specics of animals by ingestion of the flesh and milk, as well as of the tuberculous material, and by inocnlation of these, or inhalation of dried discharges from the lungs ; it ean also be transmitted from the affected animal to the foetus in utero. Its infectious properties and ready communica- bility to

other species render it a scrious danger to mankind, through consumption as food of the flesh and milk of tuberculous eows. 'The disease owes its origin to a bacillus. The structures chiefly involved are the lymphatic glands and tissues, —the charac- teristic tubercles or " grapes" varying in size from that of a millet seed to immense masses weighing many pounds ; they are found in all parts of the body, but generally in the chest and on its lining membrane, as well as in the abdominal cavity. The symptoins resemble somewhat the contagious pleuro-pneumonia of cattle in its chronic form (sec Murrary), though tubercles, sometimes in large numbers, are often found after death in the bodies of cattle which exhibited no sign of illness during life, and which when killed were in excellent condition. When the lungs are involved, there are a peculiar phthisical cough, low fever, wasting and de- bility, aud often enlarged throat glands, less frequently enlarged joints. If the animal is not killed, it perishes in a state of maras- mus, from the difficulty experienced in breathing, or the profuse foetid diarrhoea which ensucs. Medical treatment is of little if any avail. Preventive measures are of the utmost importance. Animals free from the tuberculous taint should alone be bred from, and those discovered to be affected should be at once completely ere: gated, and if convenient destroyed. The milk of tuberculous cows should not be given to any animal as food, not at least unless well boiled. Neither should the flesh be eaten unless well cooked throughout.

Milk or parturient fever is a specific malady which appears after parturition, due to the absorption of septie matter from the interior of the uterus or vagina, producing what is known as " blood-poison- ing" or septicemia. The symptois may be briefly summiarized as follows :—high fever, restlessness, intense injection of the visible mucous membranes, tympanitis, foetid breath, stupor, swollen limbs, sanguinolent and perhaps purulent discharges from the vagina, foul- smelling diarrhoea, coma, and death. In the early stage treatment is generally successful. The uterine cavity should be thoroughly cleaned out by injections of warm water, and any adherent portions of placenta removed by hand. Then a weak solution of Condy's fluid (permanganate of potash) must be injected. Cleanliness is all-important. Diffusible stimulants in large quantity should be

given, with doses of solution of sulphate of quinine, perchloride of iron, oil of turpentine, or carbolic acid.

There is now strong evidence that one form of abortion in cows Abor- is due to infection. Whenever a case of abortion occurs in a shed, tion,

either the cow should be at once removed from the others, if they are pregnant, and cleaning and disinfection immcdiately resorted to; or, better still, the pregnant cows should be quickly moved out of the shed, and every care taken to keep them away from the sick cow and the discharges from it—these and the aborted foetus being burned or otherwise completely destroyed.

Cowpox is a contagious disease of much less frequent occurrence Cowpox, |

now than formerly, probably owing to improved hygienic manhage- ment. In many localities the disease appears in all heifers which have recently calved on certain farms. 'There is usually a slight premonitory fever, which is generally overlooked ; this is succeeded by some diminution in the quantity of the milk, with some in- creased coagulability, and by the appearance of the eruption or "pox" on the udder and teats. In well-observed cases the udder is hot and tender on manipulation for a day or two previous to the development of small palc-red nodules about the size of peas ; these increase in dimensions to from three-fourths to one inch in diameter by the eighth or tenth day, when their contents have become fluid and they present a depressed centre. This fluid, at first clear and limpid, becomes yellowish white as it changes to pus, and soon dries up, leaving a hard, button-shaped black crust, which gradually becomes detached. On the teats, owing to the handling of the milker or to the cow lying on the hard ground or on straw, the vesicles are early ruptured and sores are formed, which often prove troublesome and may cause inflammation of the udder.

Actinomycosis, though affecting man (cf. vol. xviii. p. 270), horses, Actino- pigs, and other creatures, is far more common in the bovine

species. mycosis,

The fungus (Actinomyces) may be found in characteristic nodules in various parts of the body, but it usually invades the bones of the jaws, upper and lower, or the soft parts in the neighbourhood of these, as the tongue, cheeks, face, throat, and glands in its vicinity. About the head the disease appears to commence with slight sores on the gums or mucous membrane of the mouth or with ulcers alongside decaying teeth, and these extend slowly into the tissues. If the jaw is affected, a large rounded tumour grows from it, the dense outer bone becoming absorbed before the increas- ing soft growth within. Soon the whole becomes ulcerated and purulent discharges take place, in which are found the minute, hard, yellow granules which contain the fungus. When the tongue is affected, it becomes enlarged and rigid; hence the designation of " wooden tongue" given to it by the Germans. In the course of time the surface of the organ becomes ulcerated, and yellowish masses or nodules may be seen on the surface. Sometimes the entire face is involved, the lips and nostrils becoming swollen, hard, aud immovable, often rendering respiration difficult. Around the throat there are rounded dense swellings, implicating the glands. When the disease is well-defined and of slight extent, the parts involved may be removed by the knife, wholly or partially. If the latter only, then the remaining affected tissues should be dressed with tincture of iodine or iodized carbolic acid. Chromic acid has also been found useful.

Bibliography.—J. H. Steel, Diseases of the Ox (London, 1881); J. W. Hill, Bovine Medicine and Surgery (London, 1882); G. Armatage, Clater's Cattle Doctor (London, 1870); J. Dobson, On the Diseases of the Ox (London, 1864); W. Youatt, On Cattle (London, 1854); J. Law, The Farmer's Veterinary Adviser (London, 1879); G. Fleming, Tuberculosis from a Sanitary and Pathological Point of View

(London, 1880), and Influence of Heredity and Contagion on the Propagation of Tuberculosis (London, 1883).

Diseases of Sheep.

The contagious diseases of the sheep are comparatively few, and two of the more serious have been deseribed under MuRRAIN.

The formidable disorder of sheep-pox is confined chiefly to the Sheep- It is extremely contagious and fatal, and in pox.

continent of Europe. these and some other characteristics resembles human smallpox. From three to twelve days after being exposed to infection the sheep appears dull and listless, and eats little if anything ; the temperature rises ; there are frequent tremblings ; tears flow from the eyes; and there isa nasal discharge. Red patches appear inside the limbs and under the abdomen; and on them, as well as on other parts where the skin is thin, dark red spots show themselves, which soon become papules, with a deep hard base. These are generally conical, and the apex quickly becomes white from the formation of pus. This eruption is characteristic and unmistakable ; and the vesicles or pustules may remain isolated (discrete pox) or coalesce into large patehes (confluent pox). The latter form of the disease 1s serious. In bad cases the eruption may develop on the eyes and in the respiratory and digestive passages. The course of the disease lasts about three weeks or a month, and the eruption passes through the same stages as that of cowpox. The mortality may extend from 10 per cent. in mild outbreaks to 90 or 95 per cent. In very virulent ones. Diseased animals should be sheltered, and fed on nourishing food, especially gruels of oatmeal, flour, or linsced ; acidulated water may be allowed. If there is sloughing of the skin

:

|

“Swine slagne or ever.

et

Dis- temper.

Tn horse,

or extensive sores, oxide of zine ointment should be applied. But treatment should not be adopted unless there is general infection over a wide extent of country. All diseased animals should be destroyed, as well as those which have been in contact with them, and thorough disinfection resorted to.

Diseases of the Pig.

The pig may become affected with foot-and-mouth disease (see Mvurrain), and it also has its own particular variola. But the dis- ease special to it, and which causes enormous losses, is swine plague. This scourge, known in America as hog cholera, is a specific con- tagious fever, or fevers, for it is extremely probable that two diseases are included under this designation. It is generally very rapid in its course, death ensuing in a very few days ; and when the animal survives recovery is protracted. After a period of three or four days to a fortnight from exposure to infection, the animal exhibits signs of illness by dulness, weakness, shiverings, burying itself under the litter, disinclination to move, staggering gait, great thirst, hot dry snout, sunken eyes, loss of appetite, and_ greatly increased pulse, respiration, and temperature. Red and brown patches appear on the skin ; there is a hacking cough ; nausea is followed by vomiting; pressure on the abdomen causes extreme pain ; diarrhea ensues ; the hind limbs become paralysed ; stupor sets in; and the animal perishes. Treatment should not be at- tempted when there is danger of the infection extending to other pigs. If treatment be used, nursing ought to be the chief element ; sloppy food, in which small doses of carbolic acid and oil of turpen- tine have been mixed, should be given, and these should be followed by tonics when convalescence sets in. To suppress the disease, kill all affected pigs, and if necessary those which have been in contact with them ; burn or bury deeply the carcases and litter ; and disinfect everything likely to have been contaminated by tlie virus.

Diseases of the Dog.

The contagious diseases of the dog are likewise very few, but the one which attracts most attention is common and gencrally serious. This is what is popularly known as distemper. It is peculiar to the canine species, for there is no evidence that it can be conveyed to other animals, though the different families of Car- nivora appear each to be liable to a similar disease. Distemper is a specific fever which most frequently attacks young dogs, its effects being primarily developed in the respiratory passages, though the brain, spinal cord, and abdominal organs may subse- quently be involved. Highly bred and pet dogs suffer more severely than the commoner and hardier kinds. It is a most infectious disease, and there is much evidence to prove that it owes its ex- istence and prevalence solely to its virulence. One attack confers immunity from another. The symptoms are rigors, sneezing, dul- ness, loss of appetite, desire for warmth, and increased temperature, respiration, and pulse. The eyes are red, and the nose, at first dry and harsh, becomes smeared with the discharge which soon begins to flow from the nostrils. Suppuration also begins at the eyes ; vision is more or less impaired by the mucus and pus, and often the cornea becomes ulcerated, and even perforated. There is a cough, which in some cases is so violent as to induce vomiting. Debility rapidly ensues, and emaciation is soon apparent ; diarrhoea in the majority of cases sets in; the body cmits an unpleasant odour ; ulceration of the mouth is noticed ; the nostrils become obstructed by the discharge from them; convulsions generally come on ; signs of bronchitis, pneumonia, jaundice, or other complications manifest themselves ; and in some instances there is a pustular or vesicular eruption on the skin. In fatal cases the animal dics in a state of marasmus. Many which recover are affected with chorea for a long time afterwards. Here, again, good nursing is all-important. Comfort and cleanliness, with plenty of fresh air, must be ensured. Debility being the most serious feature of the disease, the strength should be maintained or restored until the fever has run its course. Light broth, beef tea, or bread and milk, or these alternately, may be allowed as diet. Preparations of quinine, given from the com- mencement of the attack in a little wine, such as sherry, have proved very beneficial. Often a mild laxative is required. Com- plications should be treated as they arise. The disease being ex- tremely infectious, precautions should be adopted with regard to other dogs.

The formidable affliction known as RABIEs (q.v.) has been treated of under that name.

Bibliography.—J. H. Steel, Treatise on the Diseases of the Dog; J. W. Hill, Management and Diseases of the Dog (London, 1878); W. Youatt, The Dog (Lon-

don, 1851); D. Blaine, Canine Pathology (London, 1851); W. Mayhew, Diseases of the Dog (London, 1865). ae , p oii

PRINCIPAL PARASITES OF DomEsTIc ANIMALS.

Perhaps the commonest worm infesting the horse is Ascaris megalocephala or common lumbricoid. The males are from 6 to 8 Inches long, females 7 to 17 inches. It is found in almost every part of the intestinal canal, but generally in the small intestines. The symptoms produced in the horse by this worm are colicky pains,

which occur intermittently, an unhealthy condition of the skin, and staring coat. Although the animal feeds well, it does not im- prove in condition, but is very " tucked up," and the visible mucous membranes are very pale. In some instances pouches are formed in the coats of the intestincs. There are many recipes for the expulsion of lumbricoid ; among the principal remedies is a mixture of emetic tartar, oil of turpentine, and linseed oil; others are san- tonine, sulphate of iron, male fern, &c. Strongylus armatus or palisade worm was at first supposed to consist of two varieties, but it has been proved that these are simply different stages of growth of one parasite. It is a moderate-sized Nematoid worm, having a straight body, with a globular and somewhat flattened head,—males 1 to 14 inches long, females 14 to 2 inches. It is found in the intestines, especially the double colon and cecum. The embryo is developed in the interior of the egg after its expulsion from the host, and is lodged in moist mud, where, according to Cobbold, it changes its first skin in about three weeks, after which it probably enters the body of an intermediate bearer, whence it is conveyed to the alimentary canal of the horse, its ultimate host, in food or water. From the stomach it bores its

way into the blood-vessels, where it again changes its skin and gives rise to aneurisms. After a time it recommences its wanderings, and passes into the large intestines, where it rapidly acquires scxual maturity. It is a duug- feeder. Sometimes it passes into other tissues of the body (kidney, liver, &c.), and occasionally produces fatal results. This parasite is most dangerous to its equine host when it is migrating from one organ to another. It is principally found at the root of the anterior mesenteric artery, but it also gives rise to ancurism in the celiac axis, the post-mesenteric and splenic arteries, and even the aorta. The common lunibricoid, the palisade worm, and the four- spined strongyle (S. tetracanthus) are principally productive of colic. The last-mentioned worm, of which the male and female are about the same size, 4 to 2 inch long, is found in the cecum, colon, and duodenum. It is a true blood-sucker, and its development is very similar to that of 8. armatus, except that, when in the intestines in the trichonemous stage, it pierces the inner coats, encapsules itself, and forms little pill-lhke masses, and then again enters the tissues of the intestines before becoming mature. The symptoms of its presence are loss of condition, more or less constant colicky pains, unhealthy coat, flabby muscles, abdominal distension, diarrhea, foetid and watery faeces, pale mucous membranes, great weakness, more or less frequent cough, and sometimes partial or complete paralysis, dne to the formation of a clot of blood causing thrombosis of one of the principal vessels of the posterior extremities, thus interfering with the circulation of blood in the part supplied by the particular vessel. The treatment by which the common lumbri- coid is expelled will suffice to expel these strongyles, but care must be exercised in administering oil of turpentine, as it very often irri- tates the wounds caused by S. tetracanthus in the coats of the intes- tines. Of course this treatment applies to the mature stage of these worms.

Oxyuris curvula or pin worm is fusiform in shape, with smooth gently curved body (males 14 to 19 inches, females 34 to 43 inches Tong). It is seated in the cecum and colon ; and, although not found in the rectum, it causes great irritation at the anus by the clusters of eggs which are deposited around that part in the form of yellowish crusts. This parasite is best treated by means of a cathartic, followed by sulphate of iron, also carbolic acid in 23 per cent. solution.

The Cestodes of the horse are very insignificant, both as regards their size and the symptoms they create, the two principal being Tzxnia perfoliata and 7'. plicata. The former is the more common, but is only from 1 to 5 inches in length ; it is found in the cecum and colon, and is distinguished from 7. plicata, not only by its length, but also by its rounder head. This last, which has a nearly square head, and is from 6 inches to 8 feet in length, occurs in the small intestines and stomach. Generally a horse may be proved to be infested with tape-worm by finding some of the proglottides in the feces. The best remedy for the removal of Tenia is extract of male fern, with oil of turpentine and linseed oil, given three days in succession. ;

Gastrus cqui or the common bot, though not a true helminth (see INSECTS, vol. xiii. p. 150), is classed with the parasites on account of its larval form living as a parasite. The bot-fly deposits its eggs on the hair of horses in such a position as to enable that animal, when licking itself, to take them into its mouth ; there the warmth and moisture of the tongue, combined with the pressure of licking, cause them to burst, and from each egg a small grub escapes, which sticks to the tongue, and then passes down into the stomach, where it fixes itself to the cuticular lining of the organ by a hook which it has on each side of its mouth. There it under-goes no change (except that of growth, being at this time about 1 inch long) for about nine months, when it detaches itself, passes into the food, and is discharged with the feces.

Of the parasites which infest cattle and sheep mention will only In cattle be made of Fasciola hepatica or common fluke, which gives rise to and the discase called rot, and is more frequently met with in sheep sheep.

In the pig.

206

than in cattle. For a full description of its anatomy and develop- inent, see TREMATODA, Vol. xxili. p. 535.

Strongylus micrurus is the husk-producing worm of cattle. The common earthworm is the intermediate bearer. S. filaria, or the common lung

strongyle of sheep, is distinguished from S. mierwrus by having no papille on its head. The ialcs are 1 inch to 1 inch 2 lines long and the females nearly 3 inches. The development is unknown ; but Cobbold thought that in its larval form the creature infested snails, &c. The symptoms of its presence in the sheep are a dull expression, quickened breathing, feetid breath, foaming at the mouth and nostrils, violent and spasmodic cough, loss of appetite, aud emaciation. Of various specific remedies the most successful is a mixture of oil of turpentine, linseed oil, and sulphuric ether, administered two mornings in succession, followed by a third dose on the fourth morning. This causes coughing, and consequent freeing of the tubes of the larvee and mucus. Good results have been derived from inhalation of chlorine gas, &c., which acts in the same way. The intratracheal injection of oil of turpentine is said to be followed by favourable results. The system should be supported with as much good nourishing food as possible. S. rufescens, or gordian strongyle (males 5 to 6 inches long, females 6 to 7 inches), is very often associated with S. filaria.

The principal Cestode of ruminants is Tania expansa, which, when fully mature, is more frequently found in sheep than in cattle. Its body consists of about one thousand segments, cach more broad than long. It is the longest of all tape- worms, being (according to Cobbold) in sheep from 8 to 30 feet and in oxen from 40 to 100 feet in length. Its maximum width is ? inch ; it is found in the large and small intestines. Cobbold thought its larval form was devcloped in the louse of the ox. The symptoms are emacia- tion, with dysentery, and loss of appetite. Male fern ought to be given in doses according to the size of the animal. For a full account of the development of Cysticereus bovis, the beef measle, see TAPE-WORMS, vol. xxlil. pp. 50-52. C. ov's is supposed by Cobbold to be the larval form of his so-called 7". tenclla of the human subject. Another bladder worm, found only in the mesentery of the sheep, is C. tenuieollis, the larval form of 7. marginata of the dog. An- other important hydatid of ruminants is Cenurus cerebralis, which gives rise to gid ; 1t is generally found in the brain of sheep, cattle, goats, deer, &c., and also in the soft structures of rabbits. It is the larval form of 7. cenwrus of the dog. The symptoms of gid are these. The animal has a rotatory motion; it does not graze freely ; there is paralysis on the opposite side to the vesicle; the

head is elevated or depressed if the hydatid is situated in the centre ; and the animal is easily frightened. Medical treatment is of no avail ; but the hydatid may be removed by a surgical operation.

Frichocephalus afinis, the common whip-worm, somctimes gives rise to severe symptoms in ruminants, particularly in sheep. The males aud females are cach about 2 inches long.

The helminths of the pig, although not very detrimental to the animal itself, are nevertheless of great importance in respect to the Lntozoa of the human subject, being the intermediary bearers of some dangerous human parasites in their immature state. Allusion must be made to Zrichina spiralis (see PARAsirisM, vol. xviii. p. 270). The development of this parasite requires about three weeks after being taken into the stomach, where the capsule is digested ; it then passes into the intestines of the pig, principally the duo- denum, where it takes two days to become mature ; then after about a week the embryos leave the body of the female worm, and immedi- ately commence penetrating the walls of the intestines in order to pass Into some voluntary muscles. About fourteen days elapse from the time they begin their wandering. Each is generally enveloped in a capsule, but two or even four have been found in one capsule. The male is sth, the female 4th inch long, and the larve #,th to goth inch. They have been known to live in their capsules from eighteen months to two years.

Cysticereus cellulose is the larval form of Tenia solium of man (see TAPE-WorMS, vol. xxiii. p. 52). ‘ Measly pork” is caused by the presence in the tissues of the pig of this entozoon, which is bladder-like in form. It has also been discovered in the dog, ape bear, rat, and deer. Other important parasites of the pig are Stephanurus dentatus, or crown-tailed strongyle, and Echinorhyn- chus gigas. This latter is the only thorn-headed or acanthocepha- lous worm infesting the domesticated animals (Cobbold).

The commonest of all parasites infesting the dog is Ascaris mystax |

| parasites, are vomited.

(males 2 to 34 inches, females 3 to 8 inches long).

irregularity of bowels, short cough, and irritation at anus; in the cat, more particularly, large quantities of mucus, with numerous The treatment consists of the adininistra- tion of castor oil, with santonine, according to the size of the animal. Filaria immitis, another Nematode, infests the heart of the dog, and its larve circulate in the blood, giving rise to fits, which often end in death.

Tezxnia scrrata is a modcrate-sized Cestode, from 2 to 3 feet in length ; it is found in about 10 per cent. of all English dogs, most frequently in sporting dogs, especially greyhounds and _ harriers, owing to their eating the intestines of rabbits, &c., in which the larval form (Cystieereus pisiformis) of this parasite dwells. It takes two months to pass through the first stage and one month to pass through the second when it is artificially produced, but much longer when produced naturally (Cobbold). 7. cenwrus gives rise to gid in sheep, as previously stated. It is 18 to 24 inches long, and is principally seen in the small intestines. 7. marginata is the largest Cestode infesting the dog. It varies in length from 5 to 8 feet, and is found in the small intestines of about 30 per cent. of dogs in Great Britain ; its larval form, C. tenwicollis, is found in the mesentery, &c., of sheep. In the treatment of Cestodes extract of male fern has been found the most effectual remedy ; areca nut and a pill consisting of colocynth and jalap, varying according to the size, age, and condition of the dog, have also proved efficacious. Com- paratively small doses of any vermifuge have often been found to give rise to violent symptoms, and all vcrmifuges if taken in large doses produce death ; too much care cannot, therefore, be exercised in adininistering vermifuges to young animals.

Another order of parasites which cause numerous diseases of the Dernato- | skin in the domesticated animals may be classed under two heads, zoa, i

viz., animal parasites or Dermatozoa and vegetable parasites or Dermatophyta. The animal parasites are those which produce scab, itch, mange, &c., in all animals. This class may be again divided into three varieties, viz., Sareoptes, which burrow in the skin; Dermatodeetes, which bite the skin ; and Symbiotes, which simply pierce the epidermis

(Gerlach). All these parasites live on serous fluids, produced by the irritation which they excite. Either one or more of these varieties infest all our domesticated animals: all three varieties have been found on the horse and sheep, the last two on the ox, and one in the pig, dog, and cat respectively. The sarcoptic variety of the horse and dog is easily transmitted to man. To distinguish between the different varieties, it is only necessary to place a few fresh scales in the sun ; if Swreoptes are present, they will soon be found on the under surface, whereas Dermatodeetes are on the upper surface. Again, the Sareoptes are isolated, whereas the Symbiotes and Dermatodectes live in clusters or colonies, Thirdly, the Symbtotes do not burrow, but merely bite the skin, and principally invade the limbs. An effectual cure for those which infest the horse is a mixture of sulphur, hellebore, oil of turpentine, whale oil, and carbolic acid, applied for three successive days, then washed off and applied again. For the dog a very useful remedy is made from creosote, olive oil, solution of potassium, and sulphur, also train oil and spirits of tar. The first is an almost sure cure for cats. A good remedy for destroying lice may be compounded from staphysagria powder, soft soap, and hot water, applied warm to the skin.

Vegetable parasites are of two kinds, namely, Tinea tonsurans, Dermate- or the cominon ringworm, seen in most of our domesticated animals, phyta.

and Favus, or honeycomb ringworm. The latter is seldom seen. 7. tonsurans is due to a cryptogamic parasite, Z''ricophyton, and is lodged in the interior of the roots of the hairs, which after a time lose their elasticity and break off, leaving the fungi in the form of a greyish white bran-like incrustation. In this they differ from Favus, which is yellow and covers the epidermis. It may affect any part of the body, but occurs principally on the head, face, neck, and hindquarters ; it is very prevalent amongst young cattle. Ringworm is very contagious, and may be communicated from one animal to another, and from animals to man. It mostly attacks badly-fed and ill-cared-for animals. The affected parts should be well washed with soft soap and warm water, removing as much as possible of the bran-like scales, and then with Stockholm tar oint-

ment, and finally with either iodine (in tincture or ointment) or carbolic acid (in solution or ointment). (G. FL.)

VETO. By this expression (Lat. veto, "I forbid 2) is understood in public law the constitutional right of the competent authority, or in republics of the whole people in their primary assembly, to protest against a legislative or administrative act, and to prevent wholly, or for the time being, the validation or execution of the same.

It is generally stated that this right was called into existence in the Roman republic by the tribunicia potestas,

because by this authority decisions of the senate, and of the consuls and other magistrates, could be declared in- operative. Such a statement must, however, be qualified by reference to the facts that interdico, interdicimus were the expressions used, and, in general, that in ancient Rome every holder of a magistracy could check a negotiation set on foot by a colleague, his equal in rank, by his opposition and intervention. This was a consequence of the position

It is also found In the in the cat and larger canines. The symptoms are wasting, voracity, dog,

V ii

that each of the colleagues possessed the whole power of the magistracy, and this right of intervention must have come into existence with the introduction of colleagued authorities, z.¢., with the commencement of the republic. In the Roman magistracy a twofold power must be distin- uished,—the positive management of the affairs of the state entrusted to each individual and the power of re- straining the acts of magistrates of equal or inferior rank by his protest. As the tribuni plebis possessed this latter negative competence to a great extent, it is customary to attribute to them the origin of the veto.

In the former kingdom of Poland the precedent first set in 1652 wasestablished by law as a constant right, that in the imperial diet a single deputy by his protest '" Nie pozwalam," ze, "I do not permit it," could

invalidate the decision sanctioned by the other members. The king of France received the right of a suspensory veto at the commencement of the French Revolution, from the national assembly sitting at Versailles in 1789, with regard to the decrees of the latter, which was only to be valid for the time being against the decisions come to and during the following national assembly, but during the period of the third session it was to lose its power if the assembly per- sisted in its resolution. By this means it was endeavoured to diminish the odium of the measure; but, as is well known, the monarchy was soon afterwards entirely abo- lished. Similarly the Spanish constitution of 1812 pre- scribed that the king might twice refuse his sanction to bills laid twice before him by two sessions of the cortes, but if the third session repeated the same he could no longer exercise the power of veto. The same is the case in the Norwegian constitution of 1814.

In the present French republic the president has no veto, except against decisions of the general councillors (conseils générals du departements), just as the prefect pos- sesses the same power against decisions of the communal councillors. The king or queen of England has the right to withhold sanction from a bill passed by both houses of parliament. This royal prerogative has not been exercised since 1692 and may now be considered obsolete. The governor of an English colony has the power of veto against a bill passed by the legislative body of a colony, eg., Canada. In this case the bill is finally lost, just as a bill would be which had been rejected by the colonial council, or as a bill passed by the English houses of parlia- ment would be if the crown were to exert the preroga- tive of refusing the royal assent. The governor may, however, without refusing his assent, reserve the bill for the consideration of the crown. In that case the bill does not come into force until it has either actually or con- structively received the royal assent, which is in effect the assent of the English ministry, and therefore indirectly of the imperial parliament. Thus the colonial liberty of legislation is made legally reconcilable with imperial sove- rei¢nty, and conflicts between colonial and imperial laws are prevented.!

The constitution of the United States of North America contains in art. i., sect. 7, § 2, the following order :—

“ Every bill which shall have passed the House of Representatives and the Senate shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the president of the United States; if he approve, he shall sign it ; if not, he shall return it with his objections to that house in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the objections at large on their journal and proceed to reconsider it. If, after such recon- sideration, two-thirds of that house shall agrec to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other house, by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and, if approved by two-thirds of that house, it shall become a law. Every order, resolution,

or vote to which the concurrence of the Senate and House of Repre- sentatives may be necessary (except on a question of adjournment) ee ae

1A. V. Dicey, Lectures Introductory to the Study of the Law of the Constitution, p. 105 sg., 2d ed., London, 1886.

2.0 207

shall be presented to the president of the United States, and, before the same shall take effect, shall be approved by him, or, being disapproved by him, shall be repassed by two-thirds of the Senate and House of Representatives, according to the rules and limitations prescribed in the case of a bill.” ;

In most States of the Union the governors, in the same manner or to a modified extent, possess the right of pro- testing against the laws and decisions of the legislature. Here therefore we have again a suspensory veto which is frequently exercised. According to the official report for 1886, the president of the United States exercised his right of veto in that year 115 times against bills, resolutions, and orders of the most different kinds. Between 1840 and 1850 the Whigs agitated for the total abolition of the power of veto. Of late an agitation has begun in the opposite direction.”

According to the constitution of the German empire of 1871, the imperial legislation is executed by the federal council and imperial diet ; the emperor is not mentioned. In the federal council the simple majority of votes decides. But in the case of bills concerning the army, the navy, and

certain specially noted taxes, as well as in the case of decisions concerning the alteration of orders for the admini- stration, and arrangements for the execution of the laws of customs and taxes, the proposal of the federal council is only accepted if the Prussian votes are on the side of the majority in favour of the same (art. 7, sect. 3). Prussia presides in the federal council. The state of things is therefore in fact as follows: it is not the German em- peror, but the same monarch as king of Prussia, who has the right of veto against bills and decisions of the federal council, and therefore can prevent the passing of an im- perial law. The superior power of the presidential vote obtains, it is true, its due influence only in one legislative body, but in reality it has the same effect as the veto of the head of the empire.

The Swiss federal constitution grants the president of the Confederation no superior position at all; neither he nor the federal council possesses the power of veto against laws or decisions of the federal assembly. But in some cantons, viz. St Gall (1831), Basel (1832), and Lucerne (1841), the veto was introduced as a right of the people. The citizens had the power to submit to a plebiscite laws which had been debated and accepted by the cantonal council (the legislative authority), and to reject the same. If this plebiscite was not demanded within a certain short specified time, the law came into force. But, if the voting took place, and if the number of persons voting against the law exceeded by one vote half the number of persons entitled to vote in the canton, the law was rejected. The absent voters were considered as having voted in favour of the law. An attempt to introduce the veto in Zurich in 1847 failed. Thurgau and Schaffhausen accepted it later. Meanwhile another arrangement has quite driven it out of the field. For of late years the so-called "referendum," —properly speaking, direct legislation by the people,— has been introduced into most of the Swiss cantons. Formerly in all cantons—with the exception of the small mountainous districts of Uri, Schwyz, Unterwalden, Zug, Glarus, and Appenzell—it was not a pure democracy, but a representative constitution that prevailed: the great coun- cillors or cantonal councillors periodically chosen by the people were the possessors of the sovereign power, and after deliberating twice passed the bills definitively. Now they have only to discuss the bills, which are printed and sent to all voters with

an explanatory message ; then the people on a certain day vote for the acceptance or rejection

2 Riittimann, Das Nordamerikanische Bundes-Staatsrecht verglichen mit den politischen Einrichtungen der Schweiz, i. 244 and 245, Zurich, 1867; D. Webster, Works, ii. 337 and iii. 416, Boston, 1858.

paper, which is placed in an urn under official control. In some cantons important financial resolutions involving large state expenses are also submitted to the decision of the people. In the revised federal constitution of 1874, under certain suppositions which have no further interest for us at present, a facultative referendum (7.e., the possi- bility of demanding a plebiscite under exceptional circum- stances) has been introduced for federal laws. Since that period it has often been employed and has operated like a veto. It is evident that by the compulsory referendum in the cantons the mere veto is rendered superfluous.?

In examining the question as to what position the veto occupies in jurisprudence, we must separate quite different conceptions which are comprised under the same name.

1. The veto may be a mere right of intervention on the part of a magistrate against the order of another official, or against that of an authority of equal or inferior rank. This was the casein ancient Rome. To this class belong also those cases in which, in the present French republic, the president makes his ‘“‘no” valid against decisions of the general councillors, and the prefect does the same against decisions of the communal councillors. The use of the expression here is quite justifiable, and this veto is not confined to bills, but refers particularly to adminis- trative measures. It affords a guarantee against the abuse of an official position.

2. The veto may be a safety-valve against precipitate decisions, and so a preventive measure. This task is ful- filled by the suspensory veto of the president of the North American Union. Similarly, to this class belong the above- mentioned prescriptions of the Spanish and Norwegian

constitutions, and also the veto of the governor of an English colony against decisions of the legislature; for this protest is only intended to prevent a certain want of harmony between the general and the colonial legislation, by calling forth a renewed investigation. This veto is neither an interference with the competence of an authority, nor a division of the legislative power among different factors, but simply a guarantee against precipitancy in the case of a purely legislative measure. The wisdom of establishing this veto power by the constitution is thus manifest.

3. It is wrong to apply the term veto to what is merely the negative side of the sanctioning of the laws, in other words, an act of sovereignty. It would not be in accord- ance with the nature of a constitutional monarchy to de- clare the monarch's consent to a law unnecessary, or make it a compulsory duty; the legislative power is divided between him and the chambers. The sovereign must therefore be perfectly at liberty to say "yes" or "aie." im each single case according to his opinion. If he says the latter, we speak of it as his veto, but this—if he possesses an absolute and not merely a suspensory veto—is not an intervention and not a preventive measure, but the nega- tive side of the exercise of the legislative power, and there- fore an act of sovereignty. That this right belongs fully and entirely to the holder of sovereign power—however he may be called—is self-evident. One chamber can also by protest prevent a bill of the other from coming into force. The "placet of the temporal power for church affairs—when it occurs—also involves in this manner in itself the veto or non placet." Where in pure democracies the people in their assembly have the right of veto or referendum, the exercise of it is also a result of the sovereign rights of legislature.

The peculiar power of veto possessed by the (Prussian)

Y Avy. Orelli, Das Staatsrecht der schweizerischen Etdgenossensehaft, pp. 101 and 105, and Marquardsen, Handbuch des iffentlichen Rechts der Gegenwart in Monographien, vol. iv., Freiburg (in Breisgau),

1885.

VIA—VIA

president of the federal council of Germany lies on the boundary between (2) and (3). (A. v. 0.)

VIAREGGIO, a coast town of Italy, in the province of Lucca, 13 miles by rail north-north-west from Pisa, had in 1881 a population of 10,190 (commune 12,735). The principal industry is fishing, and the place is also a favourite sea-bathing resort.

VIATICUM. This word, which in classical Latinity means "provision for a journey" (Gr. Ta épdéia), is often used by early Christian writers to denote the sacrament of the Eucharist, and sometimes even is applied to baptism. Ultimately it came to be employed in a restricted sense to denote the last communion given to the dying. The 13th canon of the council of Nice is to the effect that "none, even of the lapsed, shall be deprived of the last and most necessary viaticum (éfod/ov)," and that the bishop, on examination, is to give the oblation to all who desire to partake of the Eucharist on the point of death. The same principle still rules the canon law, it being of course under- stood that penitential discipline, which in ordinary cir- cumstances would have been due for their offence, is to be undergone by lapsed persons who have thus received the viaticum, in the event of recovery. In extreme cases it is lawful to administer the viaticum to persons not fasting, The ritual to be observed in its administration does not differ from that laid down in the office for the communion of the sick, except in the words of the formula, which is "accipe, carissime frater (carissima soror), viaticum corporis nostri Jesu Christi, quod te custodiat ab hoste maligno, protegat te, et perducat te ad vitam eternam. Amen."

VIATKA. See VyatKa.

VIAU, or Viaup, THEOPHILE DE (1590-1626), more com- monly called both in his own time and since simply Tuko- PHILE, a poet of unfortunate life and of great but misused powers, was born at Clairac near Agen in 1590. He went to the capital in his twentieth year and ingratiated himself with at least one patron, the ill-fated duke of Montmorency, who was always constant to him. He also became acquainted with most of the literary men of the time, and in 1617 composed and produced with success the tragedy of Pyrame et Thisbé. This piece, written in the extravagant Spanish-Italian manner which was fashionable

in the in- terval between the Pléiade model and the innovations of Corneille, was later the subject of much ridicule, especially directed to the passage in which a sword, reddened with the blood of its master, is said to "' blush for its treason," no very unpardonable conceit in eyes less pedantic than Boileau's. Théophile's prosperity was not lasting. Only two years after the success of Pyrame he was accused of blasphemous and indecent writings, and was exiled to England. Re- turning in 1621 and joining the Roman Church (he had been a Huguenot), he served in two campaigns. But he was, rightly or wrongly, associated with the publication of the Parnasse Satirique, a collection of poems of the same character as those which had formerly got him into trouble, and in 1623 was tried, condemned in his absence to death, arrested, and imprisoned in the conciergerie. At length the sentence of death which hung over him was reduced to banishment, and the influence of Montmorency enabled him to hide himself in Paris till his death on 25th Sep- tember 1626.

For his singular persecution, which, even if the charges had been inuch better established than they are, would have been surprising enough in an age of unusually loose conduct and writing, the machi- nations of the Jesuits are sometimes held responsible. But if Théophile had bitter enemies he had warm friends. Six years after his death Georges de Scudéry edited his work with a Zombeaw (copy of obituary verses), and a challenge in the preface to any one who might be offended by the editor's eulogy of the poet. This was In 1632; the year before had appeared a tragedy entitled Pasi-

phaé, where the awkwardness of the subject is not redeemed by any merit of treatment ; but it is by no means certainly or even prob-

ably Théophile's, and is not included in his works, the standard modern edition of which is that of Alleaume in the Bibliotheque Elzévirienne (Paris, 2 vols., 1856). These works may surprise the reader who only knows Théophile's mishaps and ill-fame ; for, though varied enough, they contain in the certainly authentic part of them nothing discreditable. Besides Pyrame et Thisbé, the chief in point of bulk is a paraphrase, half verse half prose, after the odd fashion of the time, of the Phedo. There are

numerous French and Latin letters, a vigorous Apologie rebutting the accusations against him, a promising fragment of comic prose narrative, and a large col- lection of occasional verses, odes, elegies, stanzas, &c.' These latter, besides being very unequal, are distinguished by the faults of taste and the inelegance of language which marked the first quarter of the century. But there are occasionally bursts of real poetry ; and on the whole Théophile is the superior of all his contemporaries between Regnier and Corneille. In addition to Alleaume's edi- tion, a delightful article in Gautier's Grotesqgues should be con- sulted respecting him.

VIBORG, or Wrsore (Finnish, Vitpurz), capital of a province or lin of the same name in Finland, is situated at the head of the Bay of Viborg in the Gulf of Finland, at the mouth of the Saima Canal and on the railway which connects St Petersburg with Helsingfors. The Saima Canal (37 miles long), a fine engineering work, connects with the sea Lake Saima—the principal lake of Finland, 949 feet above sea-level—and a series of others, including Puruvesi, Orivesi, Héytiinen, and Kallavesi, all of which are navigated by steainers, as far north as Idensalmi in 63° 30' N. lat. Viborg is thus the seaport of Karelia and eastern Savolaks, with the towns of Vilmanstrand (1289 inhabitants in 1880), St Michel (1432), Nyslott (1424), Kuopio (6834), and Idensalmi, with their numerous saw- mills and iron-works. Viborg stands most picturesquely on the glaciated and dome-shaped granite hills surround- ing the bay, which is protected at its entrance by the naval station of Bjork6 and at its head by several forts. The castle of Viborg, built in 1293 by Marshal Torkel Knutson, was the first centre for the spread of Christianity in Karelia, and for establishing the power of Sweden; it is now used as a prison. Its lofty and elegant tower has fallen into decay. The court-house (1839), the town-house, the gymnasium (1641 ; with an excellent library), and the museum are among the principal buildings of the city. There are also a school of navigation and several primary schools, both public and private, a literary and an agricul- tural society, and several benevolent institutions. The population, 14,668 in 1880 and 15,800 in 1884, consists of three elements, — Finnish, Swedish, and Russian (see Frytanp). There is a strong Russian garrison. Several industrial establishments, including a foundry for the con- struction of steam-engines, an iron-work, and_ several candle-works, match-factories, and saw-mills, have risen of late at Viborg

and in its neighbourhood; but the place owes its chief importance to its export trade, in which timber is the chief item. The coasting trade is also considerable.

The environs are most picturesque and are visited by many tourists in the summer. The park of Monrepos (Old Viborg), in a bay dotted with dome-shaped islands, is specially attractive. The scenery of the Saima Canal and of the Finnish lakes with the grand as of Pungaharju ; the Imatra rapids, by which the Vuoksen dis- charges the water of Lake Saima into Lake Ladoga, with the castle of Kexholm at its mouth; Serdobol and Valamo monastery on Lake

Ladoga—all visited from Viborg—attract many tourists from St Petersburg and from other parts of Finland.

VICAR, in ecclesiastical law, is, in the words of Black- stone, "'a curate, deputy, or vicegerent of the appropriator, and therefore called wicarius or vicar." When a benefice had become appropriated before the dissolution of the religious houses to a spiritual corporation, usually with the authority of a licence from the Chancery, the vicar was the person appointed by the appropriators for the cure of souls in the parish. He was at first generally a member of the corporation. After the dissolution in the reign of Henry VIII. these appropriated benefices became —as Indeed they had been in the church in general up to

the Lateran council of 1179—vested in lay impropriators, ! but the legal position of the vicar remained the same. He was not a parson in the proper sense of the word (in fact parson and vicar are often distinguished in old statutes), and his stipend was at the discretion of the impropriator. Where he had the enjoyment of tithes, they were in most cases, apart from prescription, the small as distinguished from the great tithes, that is, such as the impropriator found it most difficult to collect. There was, however, no consistent rule in the matter: what were rectorial tithes in some parishes might be vicarial in others. The position of the vicar, at first so insecure and uncertain, was gradu- ally ameliorated by legislation. 15 Ric. IL. c. 6 provided for the sufficient endowment of the vicarage. 4 Hen.

IV. c. 12 repeated this provision, and in addition enacted that the vicar should be a secular priest, not removable at the caprice of the appropriators, and canonically instituted and inducted. Among numerous other Acts may be noticed 29 Car. II. c. 8, making perpetual temporary augmentations of vicarages, and 3 Geo. LV. c. 72, enabling them to be in certain cases converted into rectories. In Scotland vicarage teinds were the subject of many Acts of the Scottish parliament. Until they became a fixed burden on the land they were payable out of minor and accidental products, were established by usage, and lost by negative prescription. 27 and 28 Vic. c. 33 provided for the commutation of those vicarage teinds of fish which had not up to then been commuted.

Perpetual Curate.—W here a benefice was appropriated ad mensam monachorum or was from any other cause without thé services of a regular vicar, it did not fall within the statutes relating to vicars, and was served by a temporary curate, gencrally a regular ecclesi- astic belonging to the appropriating corporation. After the dis- solution the curate in charge became perpetual, inasmuch as he could not be removed exccpt by the bishop. By 2 and 3 Vict. c. 49 every church or chapel augmented by the governors of Queen Anne's Bounty and having a district is a perpetual curacy ; so, as a rule, are new churches built under the Church Building Acts. By 81 and 82 Vict. c. 117 the incumbent of every parish or new parish for ecclesiastical purposes, not being a rector, 1s to be styled the vicar, and his benefice is to be designated a vicarage. This Act only confers a more honourable name upon the perpctual curate ; it does not in any way alter his legal position.

Vicar-general is the deputy of the archbishop of Canterbury or York. In his court the bishops of the province are confirmed. How far he has any contentious jurisdiction appcars uncertain. In the confirmation of Dr Hampden as bishop of Hereford in 1848 the vicar-general of Canterbury refused to hear objections to the confirmation by the dean and chapter of Hereford, and the Court of Queen's Bench was equally divided as to whether such refusal was good in law. Vicar-choral is a clerk in orders who assists at cathedral services. See further ADVOWSON, BENEFICE, Panis, Parson, QUEEN ANNE'S Bounty, T1TUES.

VICENTE, Git (c. 1470-c. 1536), Portuguese dramatist, with an honourable position also in the history of Spanish literature, was born, most probably in Lisbon, about the year 1470. He wasof good family, and, after studying law at the then university of Lisbon, became attached to the royal court, in what capacity is unknown. In June 1502 he produced and took the leading part in the performance of his first piece, a kind of dramatic pastoral, after the manner of Juan de la Encina, on occasion of the birth of an heir to the throne (John IIL). So successful was this appearance that he soon became the recognized provider of such entertainments at court, during the reign both of Emmanuel and of John. Of his domestic history nothing is known, except that he married a lady named Branca Bezerra, by whom he had a sonand a daughter. His outward circumstances, especially in his later years, if some apparently personal allusions in his works are to be literally interpreted, do not seem to have been prosperous. Almost the only personal incident that has come down to us 1s his successful remonstrance with the clergy of Santarem in

1 Appropriation is the term for the possession of a benefice by a spiritual corporation, impropriation for its possession by a layman.

1531, for having taken the earthquakes of that year as a | botanic garden, and various hospitals. Some remains of

text from which to rouse orthodox fanaticism against the Jews or "Neo-Christians" ; the circumstances are related by Vicente in a letter to the king. The time and place of his death are alike uncertain; most probably it occurred at Evora not much later than 1536.

Vicente published various of his pieces during his lifetime, but the first collected edition of his works, edited by his son Luis, did not appear till 1562. It is in black letter folio, and only one copy, that in the Gottingen university library, is now known to exist. A second edition, "emended by

the Holy Office," appeared in 1585, of which also only a single copy is now extant (in Lisbon). The disfayour with which they were viewed by the Inquisition caused them to fall into unmerited neglect, and they do not appear to have been again reprinted till 1834, when they were carefully edited by Feio and Monteiro (Hamburg, 8 vols.). They number forty-two in all, of which seventeen are written wholly in Portuguese and ten wholly in Spanish, while in the remainder both languages are em- ployed. The principles determining his choice of language are not easy to discover, and indeed he seems to have used either indiffer- ently, perhaps in this accommodating himself to the aptitudes of particular actors. It may be observed, however, that, while in the 14th century it had been fashionable for all court poets in the western half of the peninsula to use Galician or Old Portuguese, the practice had changed in the days of John II. of Castile, when Castilian became the favourite speech. In writing chiefly in Portu- guese Vicente thus reverted to the older practice ; but, on the other hand, it is not surprising that he should have freely used Spanish at a court which stood in such intimate personal relations with that of Castile (of Emmanuel's three wives two were Castilian prin- cesses and the third was a sister of Charles V.), and where he had taken Encina as his avowed model. According to their form the works of Vicente are conveniently divided into—(1) obras de devocao or autos, (2) comedies and tragi-comedies, and (8) farces. The first class includes twelve autos or sacred pieces, intended for performance at Christmas, Epiphany, and other religious festivals. The plots are quaint and conceived entirely in the medieval spirit ; in their working out many touches of poetical feeling and also of sarcastic humour are introduced. There is a vein of pleasing romance in such compositions as his Dom Duardos and Amadis de Gaula, while the genuine mirthfulness of his farces (Inez Pereira and others), as well as their originality, well entitle him to be spoken of by his compatriots as their "father of comedy" and the national Plautus.

Some typical examples of Vicente's works may be read in Bohl von Faber's Teatro Espanol anterior & Lope de Vega (Hamburg, 1832) and in Ochoa's Tesoro del Teatro Espanol (Paris, 1838). An interesting essay, with analyses of many of the plays, occurs in vol. Ixxix. of the Quarterly Review (1846-47); see also mg Wolfs article "'Gil-Vicente" in Ersch and Gruber's Encykl. (sec. i. vol. lxvii.).

VICENZA, a town of Italy, capital of the province of Vicenza, lies at the northern base of the Monti Berici, on both sides of the Bacchiglione, immediately below its con- fluence with the Retrone, and 42 miles by rail to the west of Venice. It is surrounded by somewhat dilapidated walls, about 3 miles in circumference, and entered by six gates. Though many of the streets are narrow and irregu- lar, the town has a number of fine public buildings, many of them the work of Paxuanio (q.v.). Among these are the town-hall, otherwise known as the Basilica, one of the finest works of the Renaissance period, of which Palladio himself said that it might stand comparison with the similar work of antiquity. The prefecture and the Barbarano and Chieregati Palaces are also his work; in the last-named the civic museum is housed. The Olympic theatre is also noteworthy. The cathedral, which is Gothic, dating mainly from the 13th century, consists of a nave with eight chapels on each side; it contains examples of the Montagnas and of Lorenzo da Venezia. Several of the other churches contain noteworthy paintings: thus the Romano-Gothic church of San Lorenzo has Montagnas, S. Corona Montagnas and a G. Bellini, and 8. Stephano one of the most important works of Palma Vecchio. The principal square contains two columns, dating from the Venetian period, and a tall Gothic campanile. Of the Palladian villas in the neighbourhood La Rotonda or Villa Palladiana, 14 miles to the south-east, deserves special mention. Vicenza is the see of a bishop, and contains two

antiquity, including ruins of a theatre and an aqueduct, have been preserved. The most important manufacture is that of silk, which employs a large proportion of the inhabitants. Great numbers of mulberry trees are grown in the neighbourhood. Woollen and linen cloth, leather, earthenware, paper, and articles in gold and silver are also made in Vicenza, and a considerable trade in these articles, as well as in corn and wine, is carried on. The popula- tion of the town in 1881 was 24,331, or, including the suburbs, 27,694.

Vicenza is the Vicentia or Vicetta of the Romans, noticed by Strabo as one of the minor towns of Venetia. It continued to be a municipal town of some importance till the fall of the Western empire, and suffered severely in the invasion of Attila, by whom it was laid waste. It was for some time

during the Middle Ages an independent republic, but was subdued by the Venctians in 1405. Towards the end of the 15th century it became the seat of a school of painting, of which the principal representatives were, besides Bartolomeo Montagna, its founder, Giovanni Speranza and Bene: detto Montagna. Palladio (1518-80) was a native of Vicenza.

VICH, a town of Spain, in the province of Barcelona, 38 miles by rail to the north of that town, lies in a small side valley of the Ter, about 1500 feet above sea-level. It is irregularly built on a hill slope, and has narrow ill-paved streets; there are some quaint old houses in the Plaza Mayor. 'The cathedral, begun about 1040, belongs chiefly to the first half of the 14th century, but with some mis- chievous alterations of the 18th. The interior, with three naves and a transept, is elegant, and the Gothic cloisters (1340) are particularly fine. The industries include tanning and the weaving of linen and woollen fabrics ; and sausages are a speciality of the place. There are mines of copper and coal in the neighbourhood. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 12,478.

Vich, the Ausa of the ancient geographers, was the chief town of the Ausetani; in the Middle Ages it was called Ausona and Vicus Ausonensis, hence Vic de Osona, and simply Vich.

VICHY, a town of France, in the department of Allier, is situated on the right bank of the Allier, 227 miles by

WAI

reir

Plan of Vichy. : rail south-south-east from Paris and 6 south of St Ger-

gymnasia, a seminary, an academy, a public library, a | mains-de-Fossés, where the railway lines to Lyons and

VIC—

Nimes separate. The population in 1881 was 8322, and

in 1886 10,072.

Vichy owes its importance to its mineral waters, which were celebrated in the time of the Romans. Within the town or in its immediate vicinity there are 21 springs, 12 of which are state property (4 of these obtained by boring). The waters of those which are outside the town are brought in by means of aqueducts. The most celebrated and frequented are the Grande Grille, L'Hopital, the Célestins, and Lardy. The most copious of all, the Puits Carré, is reserved for the baths. All these, whether cold or hot (maximum temperature, 113° Fahr.), are largely charged with bicarbonate of soda (see MINERAL WATERS, vol. xvi. p. 435) ; some also are chalybeate and tonic. The waters, which are limpid, have an alkaline taste and emit a slight odour of sulphuretted hydrogen. They are re- commended in cases of stomachic and liver complaint, also for diabetes, gravel, and gout. The thermal establishment, begun in 1787, is capable of supplying 3500 baths a day. The company by which the state baths are farmed also manufactures pastilles, barley-sugar, and digestive choco- late, as well as salts for artificial baths. A considerable trade is carried on in the natural waters. In addition to the principal establishment, Vichy has a hospital bath, the hydropathic establishments of Lardy and Larbaud, and a large military hospital, founded in 1843. Cusset (5356 inhabitants in 1886), chief-lieu of the canton, about 1 mile distant, has similar mineral waters and a bathing establish- ment. Vichy possesses a casino and two public parks. The promenade commands a splendid view of the mountains of Auvergne. At Vichy, Cusset, and in the neighbourhood there are cotton cloth manufactures (tozles de Vichy).

VICKSBURG, a city of the United States and the county seat of Warren county, Mississippi, the largest and most important city in the State, stands on the bluffs, on the east bank of the Mississippi, nearly midway between Memphis and New Orleans. It is situated in the midst of the most fertile cotton region of the country, and is one of the principal inland shipping ports of that staple. Its means of communication, besides the river, embrace three important railroad systems. The city has some manu- facturing industries, particularly of lumber and cotton-seed oil and cake. The population in 1880 was 11,814, showing a slight decrease since 1870

; and in 1888 it was estimated at 18,000. Nearly one-half of the population were coloured.

Prior to the Civil War Vicksburg was an important river port, having in 1860 a population of 4591. Its growth had, however, been slow. During the war it became a very strong strategic point, as It controlled the navigation of the Mississippi, and a contest for its possession was waged for several months with heavy loss of life. Finally General Grant captured it in 1863, and with it the Con- federate army of General Pemberton, numbering 27,000 men. For a few years after the war the city gained rapidly in population and Importance.

VICO, Giovan Barrista (1668-1744), Italian jurist and philosopher, was the son of Antonio Vico, a small bookseller, and was born at Naples on 23rd June 1668. At the age of seven he had a serious fall and severely Injured his head, which produced in him "the melancholy and sour temper suited to men of talent." Afterwards he applied himself to the study of scholastic philosophy. At an early age he entered the university, and made such Yapid progress, especially in jurisprudence, that he is said A have won a suit for his father at the age of sixteen. Nevertheless he preferred the study of history, literature, juridical science, and philosophy. Being appointed teacher of Jurisprudence to the nephews of the bishop of Ischia, cB. Rocca, he accompanied them to the castle of Vatolla, near Cilento, in the province of Salerno. There he passed fine studious years, chiefly devoted to classical reading, Plato and Tacitus being his favourite authors, because

We 'C 211

"'the former described the ideal man and the latter man as he really is." On his return to Naples he found Car- tesianism in the ascendant, and this he disliked. Belong- ing to no particular school or literary sect, he languished in neglect and obscurity, until in 1697 he gained the pro- fessorship of rhetoric at the university, with a scanty stipend of 100 ducats. On this he supported not only himself but his rapidly increasing family; for he had married a poor and illiterate girl, who was only able to put her mark to the nuptial contract. Meanwhile his own studies were pursued with untiring zeal, and he began to write and publish his works.

Two modern authors exercised a weighty influence on his mind—Francis Bacon and Grotius. He was no follower of their ideas, indeed often opposed to them; but he derived from Bacon an increasing stimulus towards the investigation of certain great problems of history and philosophy, while Grotius proved valuable in his study of philosophic jurisprudence. In 1708 he published his De ratione studiorum, in 1710 De antiquissima Italorum sapientia, in 1720 De unwerse juris uno principio et fine uno, and in 1721 De constantia jurisprudentis. On the strength of these works he offered himself as a candidate for the university chair of juris- prudence then vacant, with a yearly stipend of 600 ducats. But he was rejected by the examiners, although all his competitors have remained unknown to fame. Without any sense of discouragement, he returned to his favourite studies, and in 1725 published the first edition of the work that forms the basis of his renown, Principu d'una Scienza Nuova. In 1730 he produced a second edition of the Scienza Nuova, so much altered in style and with so many substantial additions that it was practically a new work. In 1735 Charles III. of Naples marked his recog- nition of Vico's merits by appointing him historiographer- royal, with a yearly stipend of 100 ducats. But the philosopher derived little enjoyment from his new post. Attacked by a cruel malady, mind and memory failed. But during frequent intervals of lucidity he resumed his pen and made new corrections in his great work, of which a third edition appeared in 1744, prefaced by a letter of dedication to Cardinal Trojano Acquaviva. Vico expired on 20th January of the same year. Fate seemed bent on persecuting him to the last. A fierce quarrel arose over his burial between the brotherhood of St Stephen, to which he had belonged, and the university professors, who desired to escort his corpse to the grave. Finally the canons of the cathedral, together with the professors, buried the body in the church of the Gerolimini.

Vico has been generally described as a solitary soul, out of har- mony with the spirit of his time and often directly opposed to it. In fact, though living during the later years of the 17th and the early part of the 18th century, when Locke had already given to the world the germs of the ideas afterwards developed in the philosophy of the Encyclopedists, he followed an entirely opposite line of thought. The writer who was the first to declare that great men are the representatives and personifications of

their times would thus seem to have been the living contradiction of his own theory. Nevertheless a closer inquiry into the social conditions of Vico's time, and of the studies then flourishing, shows him to have been thoroughly in touch with them.

Owing to the historical past of Naples, and its social and economic condition at the end of the 17th century, the only study that really flourished there was that of law; and this soon penetrated from the courts to the university, and was raised to the level ofa science. A great school of jurisprudence was thus formed, including many men of vast learning and great ability, although little known to fame. This school stood apart, as it were, from the rest of the world ; the works of its representatives were inelegant, and often indeed exaggeratedly legal and scholastic in style. Accordingly they attracted little notice in upper Italy and were totally ignored beyond the Alps. But, while outside Naples scarcely anything was known of Marcello Marciano the younger, Domenico Aulisio, Duke Gaetano Argento, Niccolé Capasso, and many others, there were three men who rose to great eminence and attained to an honour- able rank in general literature both in Italy aud abroad. By an

exposition of the political history of the kingdom, based on a study of its laws and institutions and of the legal conflicts between the state and the court of Rome, Pietro Giannone was the first initiator of what has been since known as civil history. Giovan Vincenzo Gravina, the patron and preceptor of Metastasio, and also noted as a literary critic, wrote a history of Roman law, specially distin- guished for its accuracy and elegance. While Gravina studied the successive and varying forms of Roman law and sought to give them an historical explanation, Vico raised the problem toa higher plane, by tracing the origin of law in the human mind and ex- plaining the historical changes of the one by those of the other. Thus he made the original discovery of certain ideas which consti- tute the modern historic method, or rather the psychologico-historic method. This problem he proceeded to develop in various works, until in his Seienza Nuova he arrived at a more complete solution, which may be formulated as follows. If the principle of justice and law be one, eternal,

and immutable, why should there be so many different codes of legislation? These differences are not caused by difference of nationality only, but are to be noted in the history of the same people. 'The clearest, most precise, and most constant conception of law was undoubtedly that of the Romans ; nevertheless Roman jurisprudence underwent so many transforina- tions as apparently to constitute almost different codes. How was so strange a fact to be explained? This question is touched upon in his Orations or Inaugural Addresses (Oraziont 0 Prolusiont) and in his Minor Works (Scritti Minori). Finally he applied himself to its solution in his Universal Law (Diritto Universale), which is divided into two books. The first of these, De uno et wniversi juris principio et fine uno, was subdivided into two parts; so like- wise was the second, with the respective titles of De constantia philologiz and De eonstantia jurisprudentis.

The following is the general idea derived from these researches. Vico held God to be the ruler of the world of nations, but ruling, not as the providence of the Middle Ages by means of continued miracles, but as He rules nature, by means of natural laws. If, therefore, the physicist seeks to discover the laws of nature by study of natural phenomena, so the philosopher must seek the laws of historical change by the investigation of human events and of the human mind. According to Vico, law emanates from the con- science of mankind, in whom God has infused a sentiment of justice, and is therefore in close and continual relation with the human mind, and participates in its changes. This sentiment of justice is at first confused, uncertain, and almost instinctive, is, as it were, a divine and religious inspiration instilled by heaven into the primitive tribes of the earth. It is an unconscious, universal sen- timent, not the personal, conscious, and rational sentiment of the superior few. Hence the law to which it gives birth is enwrapped in religious forms which are likewise visible and palpable, inas- much as primitive man is incapable of abstract, philosophical ideas. This law is not the individual work of any philosophical legislator, for no man was, or could be, a philosopher at that time. It is first displayed in the shape of natural and necessary usages conse- crated by religion. The names of leading legislators, which we so often find recorded in the history of primitive peoples, are symbols and myths, merely serving to mark an historic period or epoch by some definite and personal denomination. For nations, or rather tribes, were

then distinguished by personal names only. The first obscure and confused conception of law gradually becomes clearer and better defined. Its visible and religious forms then give way to abstract formulx, which in their turn are slowly replaced by the rational manifestation of the philosophic principles of law that gains the victory in the final stage of development, designated by Vico as that of civil and human law. This is the period of indi- vidual and philosophic legislators. Thus Roman law has passed through three great periods,—the divine, the heroic, and the human, —which are likewise the three chief periods of the history of Rome with which it is intimately and intrinsically connected. Never- theless, on careful examination of these threc successive stages, it will easily be seen that, in spite of the apparent difference between them, all have a common foundation, source, and purpose. The human and civil philosophic law of the third period is assuredly very different in form from the primitive law; but in substance it is merely the abstract, scientific, and philosophic manifestation of the same sentiment of justice and the same principles which were vaguely felt in primitive times. Hence one development of law may be easily translated into another. Thus in the varied mani- festations of law Vico was able to discover a single and enduring principle (De universi juris uno prineipio et fine uno). On these grounds it has been sought to establish a close relation between Vico and Grotius. The latter clearly distinguished between a posi- tive law differing in different nations and a natural law based on a general and unchanging principle of human nature, and therefore obligatory upon all. But Vico was opposed to Grotius, especially as regards his conception of the origin of society, and therefore of law. Grotius holds that its origin was not divine, but human, and neither collective, spontaneous, nor unconscious, but personal, rational, and conscious. He belicved moreover that natural law

Wat Gr)

and positive law moved on almost constant and immutable parallel lines. But Vico maintained that the one was continually progressing towards the other, positive law showing an increasing tendency to draw nearer to natural and rational law. Hence the conception that law is of necessity a spontaneous birth, not the creation of any individual legislator ; and

hence the idea that it necessarily proceeds by a natural and logical process of cvolution constituting its history. Vico may have derived from Grotius the idea of natural law; but his discovery of the historic evolution of law was first suggested to him by his study of Roman law. He saw that the his- tory of Roman jurisprudence was a continuous progress of the narrow, rigorous, primitive, and almost iron law of the XII. Tables towards the wider, more general, and more humane jus gentium. Having once derived this conception from Roman history, he was easily and indeed necessarily carried on to the next,—that the posi- tive law of all nations, throughout history, is a continual advance, keeping pace with the progress of civilization, towards the philo- sophie and natural law founded on the principles of human nature aud human reason.

As already stated, the Seienza Nwova appeared in three different editions. The divergences between the second and third are of too little moment to be recorded here. But the first and second edi- tions are almost distinct works. In the former the author sets forth the analytical process by which the laws he discovered were deduced from facts. In the second he not only enlarges his matter and gives multiplied applications of his idcas, but also follows the synthetic method, first expounding the laws he had discovered and then proving them by the facts to which they are applied. In this edition the fragmentary and jerky arrangement, the intricate style, and a peculiar and often purely conventional terminology seri- ously checked the diffusion of the work, which accordingly was little studied in Italy and remained almost unknown to the rest of Europe. Its fundamental idea consists in that which Vico, in his peculiar ter- minology, styles " poetical wisdom" (sapienza poetiea) and " occult wisdom " (sapienza riposta), and in the historical process by which the one is merged in the other. He frequently declares that this discovery was the result of the litcrary labours of his whole life.

Vico was the first thinker who asked, Why have we a science of nature, but no science of history? Because our glance can casily be turned outwards and survey the exterior world ; but it is far harder to turn the mind's eye inwards and contemplate the world of the spirit. All our errors in explaining the origin of human society arise from our obstinacy in believing that primitive man was entirely similar to ourselves, who are

civilized, 7.¢., developed by the results of a lengthy process of anterior historic evolution. We must learn to issue from ourselves, transport ourselves back to other times, and become children again in order to comprehend the infancy of the human race. As in children, imagination and the senscs prevailed in those men of the past. They had no abstract ideas; in their minds all was concrete, visible, aud tangible. All the phenomena, forces, and laws of nature, together with mental con- ceptions, were alike personified. To suppose that all mythical stories are fables invented by the philosophers is to write history backwards and confound the instinctive, impersonal, poctic wisdom of the carliest times with the civilized, rational, and abstract occult wisdom of our own day. But how can we explain the formation of this poetic wisdom, which, albeit the work of ignorant men, has so deep and intrinsic a philosophic value? The only possible reply is that already given when treating of the origin of law. Provi- dence has instilled into the heart of man a sentiment of justice and goodness, of beauty, and of truth, that is manifested differently at different times. The ideal truth within us, constituting the inner life that is studied by philosophers, becomes transmuted by the facts of history into assured reality. For Vico psychology and history were the two poles of the new world he discovered. After having extolled the work of God and proclaimed Him the source of all knowledge, he adds that a great truth is continually flashed on us and proved to us by history, namely, " that this world of nations is the work of man, and its explanation therefore only to be found in the mind of man." Thus poetical wisdom, appearing as a spontane- ous emanation of the human conscience, is almost the product of divine inspiration. From this, by the aid of civilization, rcason, and philosophy, there is gradually developed the civil, occult wisdom. The continual, slow, and laborious progress from the one to the other is that which really constitutes history, and man becomes civilized by rendering himself the conscious and independent possessor of all that in poetical wisdom remained impersonal, un- conscious, came as it were from without by divine aflatus.

Vico gives many applications of this fundamental idea. The religion of primitive peoples is no less mythical than thcir history, since they could only conccive of it by means of myths. On these lines he interprets the whole history of primitive Rome. One book of the second cdition of the

Scienza Nuova is devoted to " The Dis- covery of the True Homer." Why all the cities of Greece dispute the honour of being his birthplace is because the Iliad and the Odyssey are not the work of one, but of many popular pocts, and a true creation of the Greek people which is in every city of Greece.

a

=

VIC—VIC

And because the primitive peoples are unconscious and self-ignorant Homer is represented as being blind. In all parts of history in which he was best versed Vico pursues a stricter and more scientific method, and arrives at safer conclusions. This is the casein Roman history, especially in such portions as related to the history of law. Here he sometimes attains, even in details, to divinations of the truth afterwards confirmed by new documents and later research. The aristocratic origin of Rome, the struggle between the patricians and the plebeians, the laws of the XII. Tables, not, as tradition would have it, imported from Greece (but the natural and spon- taneous product of ancient Roman customs), and many other similar theories were discovered by Vico, and expounded with his usual originality, though not always without his usual blunders and ex-aggerations.

Vico may be said to base his considerations on the history of two nations. 'The greater part of his ideas on poetical wisdom were derived from Greece. Nearly all the rest, more especially the trans- ition from poetical to occult wisdom, was derived from Rome. Having once formulated his idea, he made it more general in order to apply it to the history of all nations. From the savage state, through the terror that gives birth to religions, through the crea- tion of families by marriage, through burial rites and piety towards the dead, men approach civilization with the aid of poetic wisdom, and pass through three periods,—the divine, heroic, and human, — in which they have three forms of government, language, literature, jurisprudence, and civilization. The primary government is aristo- eratie. Patrician tyranny rouses the populace to revolt, and then

democratic equality is established under a republic. Democratic excesses cause the rise of an empire, which, becoming corrupt, de- elines into barbarism, and, again emerging from it, retraces the same course. This is the law of cycles, constituting that which is designated by Vico as the "eternal ideal history, or rather course of humanity, invariably followed by all nations." It must not be held to imply that one nation imitates the course pursued by another, nor that the points of resemblance between them are transmitted by tradition from one to the other, but merely that all are subject to one law, inasmuch as this is based on the human nature common to all alike. Thus, while on the one hand the various cyeles traced and retraced by all nations are similar and yet independent, on the other hand, being actually derived from Roman history, they become converted in the Scienza Nuova into a bed of Procrustes, to which the history of all nations has to be fitted by force. And wherever Vico's historical knowledge failed he was led into increased error by this artificial and arbitrary effort.

It has been justly observed by many that this continuous cyclical movement entirely excludes the progress of humanity towards a hetter future. It has been replied that these cycles are similar without being identical, and that, ifone might differ from another, the idea of progress was not necessarily excluded by the law of eyeles. Vico undoubtedly considered the poetic wisdom of the Middle Ages to be different from that of the Greeks and Romans,and Christianity to be very superior to the pagan religion. But he never investigated the question whether, since there is a law of progress- ive evolution in the history of different nations, separately examined, there may not likewise be another law ruling the general history

" of these nations, every one of which must have represented a new

period, as it were, in the history of humanity at large. Therefore,

-although the Scienza Nwova cannot be said absolutely to deny the

law of progress, it must be allowed that Vico not only failed to solve the problem but even shrank from attacking it.

He had no followers or admirers even in Naples, where the ideas of Tanucci, Filangieri, Genovesi, and Galiani prevailed, men who sometimes appear to be more French than Italian. When at last, with the German reaction initiated by Kant against the sense philosophy of the French, an entirely new philosophy arose, and many ideas started by Vico were revived on a more rigorous method, supported by more accurate research and with a wider and firmer grasp of knowledge, the name of the Neapolitan philosopher was forgotten, and no one recognized how much was owed to him. Nevertheless it may be asserted that between the close of the 17th and the early part of the 18th century, when the thought of the world was bent in a totally different direction, Vico was the first to discern and proclaim the course by which, in the present age, historical, moral, and political science was destined to make such great and assured progress.

See Cantoni, G. B. Vico, Studti Critici e Comparativi (Turin, 1867); Flint, Vico (Edinburgh and London, 1884). For editions of Vico's own works, see Opere, ed. Giuseppe Ferrari (Milan, 1834-35, 6 vols.), and Michelet, @uvres Choisies de Vico (Paris, 1835, 2 vols.). Mamiani, Rosmini, Gioberti, and many other Italian philosophers have treated at length of Vico in their works, The

most detailed account of him is Ferrari's essay, "La Mente de Vico," prefacing his edition of the Opere. (P. V.)

VICTOR L., St, bishop of Rome from about 190 to 202, succeeded Eleutherus and was followed by Zephyrinus. His name is chiefly associated with a display of intolerance towards the bishops of Asia Minor for the view they took in the Quartodeciman controversy (see Easter ; also PopE-

Dom, vol. xix. p. 489); he also excommunicated Theodotus of Byzantium on account of his doctrine as to the Person of Christ (see MoNARCHIANISM).

VICTOR IL, one of the series of German popes and the successor of Leo IX., was consecrated in St Peter's, Rome, on 13th April 1055. His father was a Swabian baron, Count Hartwig von Calw, and his own baptismal name was Gebhard. At the instance of Gebhard, bishop of Ratisbon, uncle of the emperor Henry III., he had been appointed while still a young man to the see of Hichstadt ; in this position his great talents soon enabled him to render important services to Henry, whose chief adviser he ultimately became. His nomination to the papacy by Henry at Mainz, in September 1054, was made at the instance of a Roman deputation headed by Hildebrand, whose policy doubtless was to detach from the imperial interest one of its ablest supporters. In June 1055 Victor met the eniperor at Florence, and held a council, which anew condemned clerical marriages, simony, and the aliena- tion of the estates of the church. In the following year he was summoned to Germany to the side of the emperor, and was with him when he died at Botfeld in the Harz on 5th October 1056. As guardian of Henry's infant son, and adviser of the empress Agnes, Victor now wielded enormous power, which he began to use with much tact for the maintenance of peace throughout the empire and for strengthening the papacy against the aggressions of the barons. He died shortly after his return to Italy, at Arezzo, on 28th July 1057. His successor was Stephen IX. (Frederick of Lorraine).

VICTOR IIL. pope from 24th May 1086 to 16th Sep- tember 1087, was the successor of Pope Gregory VII. Son of Landolfo V., prince of Benevento, he was born in 1027; in his thirtieth year he entered the cloister at Monte Cassino, changing his name of Dauferius into De- siderius. He soon became abbot of the monastery, and in 1059 Nicolas IJ. raised him to the cardinalate. He rendered many important services to Gregory VII., who accordingly on his deathbed indicated him to-the cardinals of south Italy as his worthiest successor. He was elected on 24th May 1086, but showed genuine reluctance to accept the embarrassing honour thus thrust upon him, and after his tardy consecration, which did not take place till 9th May 1087, he withdrew at once to Monte Cassino. The countess Matilda soon afterwards induced him to re- turn to Rome; but, owing to the presence of the antipope Clement III. (Guibert of Ravenna), who had powerful partisans, his stay there was short. In August he held at Benevento a synod of some importance, at which

Clement IIL. was excommunicated, lay-investiture forbidden, and a kind of crusade proclaimed against the Saracens in Africa. During the synod Victor fell ill, and betook himself to Monte Cassino, where he died on 16th September 1087. His successor was Urban II.

VICTOR IV. Two antipopes have claimed this name: —(1) Cardinal Gregorio Conti, who was chosen by a party in succession to the antipope Anacletus IT. in 11388, but through the influence of Bernard of Clairvaux was induced two months afterwards to make his submission to Innocent II.; and (2) Cardinal Octavianus, the Ghibelline antipope, elected in 1159, and countenanced by the emperor Freder- ick Barbarossa. He died at Lucca on 20th April 1164.

VICTOR, CLAUDE PERRIN (1764-1841), duke of Belluno, marshal of France, was born at La Marche (Vosges) on 7th December 1764. In 1781] he entered the army as a common soldier, and after ten years' service he received his discharge and settled at Valence. Soon afterwards he joined the local volunteers and in less than a year had risen to the command of a battalion. He greatly distin- guished himself on the Italian frontier, and for his bravery

at the siege of Toulon in 1793 he was raised to the rank of brigadier-general. He afterwards served for some time with the army of the eastern Pyrenees, and in the Italian campaign of 1795-97 he so acquitted himself at Mondovi, Roveredo, Porto Legnago, and many other places that he was promoted to be general of adivision. After the peace of Campo Formio he for some time commanded the forces in the department of La Vendée; but in 1798 he was again in Italy and in the battle of Marengo especially took a very important part. In 1803 he became commander-in- chief of the Batavian army,and after the peace of Amiens he acted for eighteen months as French plenipotentiary at Copenhagen. On the outbreak of hostilities with Prussia he joined the fifth army corps as chief of the general staff ; at the battle of Friedland he commanded the first corps in such a manner that Napoleon made him marshal of the empire on the field. After the peace of Tilsit he became governor of Prussia, and in 1808 he was created duke of Belluno. In the same year he was sent to Spain,

where he took a prominent part in military affairs, until his ap- pointment in 1812 to command the ninth army corps destined to operate in Russia. Here his most important service was in protecting the retreating army at the cross- ing of the Berezina. He took an active part in the wars of 1813-14, till in February of the latter year he had the misfortune to arrive too late at Montereau-sur-Yonne. The result was a scene of violent recrimination and his depriva- tion by the emperor, who transferred his command to Gérard. Thus wounded in his amour propre, Victor now transferred his allegiance to the Bourbon dynasty, and in December 1814 received from Louis XVIII. the command of the second military division. In 1815 he accompanied the king to Ghent, and on the second restoration he was made a peer of France and major-general of the royal guard, In 1821 he was appointed war minister and held this office for two years. After the revolution of 1830 he retired altogether into private life. His death took place at Paris on 3d March 1841.

VICTOR, Szexrus Avretius. A person of this name was made prefect of Pannonia by Julian about 360 (Amm. Marc., xxi. 10), and may be identical with the man who was consul along with Valentinian in 373 and with the prefect of the city of the same name who is mentioned in an inscription of the time of Theodosius. Four small historical works have been ascribed to him on more or less doubtful grounds—(1) Origo Gentis Romani, (2) De Viri- bus Illustribus Romex, (3) De Cexsaribus, (4) De Vita et Moribus Imperatorum Romanorum excerpta ex Libris Sex. Aur. Victoris. The four have generally been published together under the name Historia Romana, but the fourth piece is a réchauffé of the third ; and, though all are late, there is no sufficient reason to think that they are by one hand. The second was first printed at Naples about 1472, in 4to, under the name of Pliny (the younger), and the fourth at Strasburg in 1505. The first edition of all four was that of A. Schottus (8vo, Antwerp, 157 9). The De Cexsaribus, which goes from Augustus to Constantius, and claims to be by a man of mean origin who rose to distinction through letters, may be the work of the Sextus Aurelius Victor known to history.

VICTOR AMADEUS, the name of three dukes of Savoy. See Savoy.

VICTOR EMMANUEL (1820-1878), king of Italy, born at Turin on 14th March 1820, was the son of Charles Albert, prince of Carignano, who in 1831 became king of Sardinia. He was brought up with some severity and as a strict Catholic ; but it was not found possible to interest him in study or intellectual pursuits. In 1842 he was married to Adelaide, daughter of the Austrian grand-duke Rainer, his father at that time desiring to improve his

VICTOR

relations with Austria. The young man took no part in politics, but showed from the first the characteristics of an energetic soldier. After the Austrian occupation of Ferrara in 1847 he was among those who pressed for an immediate declaration of war; and, when a year later hostilities broke out, he threw himself into the struggle heart and soul. At Goito, where he was wounded, his reckless bravery turned the tide of battle ; and in every encounter he was to be seen in the thickest of the fight. During the armistice that followed the defeat of Custozza (25th July) he was engaged in the reorganization of the Sardinian army. The abdication of his father on the evening of the battle of Novara (23d March 1849) made him king of a ruined state. From Radetzky he obtained some mitigation of the hard terms at first demanded by the conqueror, especially in the withdrawal of the Austrian claim that the Sardinian constitution should be abolished. It was the maintenance of this constitution, at a time when reaction swept away every other vestige of repre- sentative government in Italy, that gained for Victor Emmanuel the title of the honest king (re galantuomo) and won for him the confidence of the Italian nation, and ultimately the Italian crown. In the bitter days that followed Novara, the king, calumniated, misunderstood, and charged like his father with treachery, showed a noble forbearance and a self-mastery that could hardly have been expected from his passionate uncultured nature. Though in D'Azeglio and Balbo he had excellent friends and advisers, it was not till 1852 that the accession of CAVOUR (9.v.) to power gave him a man of great. political genius for his guide. From that time the career of Victor Emmanuel became what Cavour made it. While ecclesi- astical reforms, which brought upon the king and minister the execration of the church, laid the foundation for all future social and economical advance,

the alliance of Sar- dinia with England and France in the Crimean War secured for Italy the interest of the Western powers, which Austria by its inaction and its half-measures had forfeited. Meanwhile his mother, his wife, and his brother died within four weeks of each other; and the clericals exulted in this manifestation of an offended Providence. At the end of 1855, while the allied troops were still in the East, Victor Emmanuel visited Paris and London. In 1859 Cavour's object was attained and France united with Sar- dinia against Austria, the king, sorely against his will, giving his daughter Clotilda in marriage to Jerome Napoleon. Victor Emmanuel met Napoleon III. at Genoa on 13th May, and on the 30th fought at the head of a body of Sardinians and Zouaves at the battle of Palestro. After the victory of Magenta (4th June) the allied monarchs entered Milan, where Victor Emmanuel for the first time saw Garibaldi. In the crowning victory of 24th June, while the French were engaged at Solferino, the king with his Italians carried the village of San Martino. The peace of Villafranca left Venetia and the Quadrilateral to Austria. The extraordinary events of the next year united all Italy, with the exception of Rome and of what still remained to Austria, under the patriot king, who was now excommuni- cated by the pope (see Iraty, vol. xiii. p. 490). A scene of great violence had passed between the king and Cavour when the peace of Villafranca was accepted by the former ; but their old friendship was soon restored, and the death of Cavour in 1861 plunged Victor Emmanuel in the deepest grief. The Prussian alliance of 1866 incorporated Venetia with Italy. The personal desire of the king to assist Napoleon III. in the war of 1870 gave way before the wiser counsels of his ministers; and the entry of his troops into Rome after the disasters of the French army and the withdrawal of the French garrison completed Victor Emmanuel's task and the union of Italy. He lived

Plat

Coasts.

Surface,

for eight years more, reigning always as a constitutional king, and preserving amidst the splendours of a great court the simple tastes of his

early life. He died at Rome of a fever on 9th January 1878, and lies entombed in the

Pantheon.

evi. VICTORIA, a British colony occupying the south-eastern

corner of Australia; its western boundary is the 141st meridian ; on the east it runs out toa point at Cape Howe, in 150° E. long., being thus rudely triangular in shape; the river Murray constitutes nearly the whole of the northern boundary, its most northerly point being in 34° S. lat,; the southern boundary is the coast-line of the Southern Ocean and of Bass Strait; the most southerly point is Wilson's Promontory in 39° 8. lat. The greatest length east and west is about 480 miles; the greatest width, in the west, is about 250 miles. The area is offici- ally stated to be 87,884 square miles, –

The coast line may be estimated at about 800 miles, Tt begins at the 141st meridian with bold but not lofty sandstone cliffs, worn into deep caves and capped by grassy undulations, which extend inland to pleasant park-like lands. Capes Bridgewater and Nelson form a peninsula of forest lands, broken by patches of meadow. 'To the east of Cape Nelson lies the moderately sheltered inlet of Portland Bay, consisting of a sweep of sandy beach flanked by bold granite rocks, Then comesa long unbroken stretch of high cliffs, which owing to insetting currents have been the scene of many calamitous wrecks. Cape Otway is the termination of a wild mountain range that here abuts on the coast. Its brown cliffs rise vertically from the water; and the steep slopes above are covered with dense forests of exceedingly tall timber and tree ferns. Eastwards from this cape the line of cliffs gradually diminishes in height to about twenty to forty feet at the entrance to Port Phillip. Next comes Port Phillip Bay, a plan of which is given under MELBouRNE, vol. xv. p. 835, When the tide recedes from this bay through the narrow entrance it often encounters a strong current just outside ; the broken and somewhat dangerous sea thus caused is called "the Rip." East of Port Phillip Bay the shores consist for fifteen miles of a line of sandbanks; but at Cape Schanck they suddenly become high and bold. East of this comes Western Port, a deep inlet more than half occupied by French Island and Phillip Island. Its shores are flat

and uninteresting, in some parts swampy ; but all the land is owned and most of it occupied. The bay is shallow and of little use for navigation. The coast con- finues rocky round Cape Liptrap. Wilson's Promontory 1s a great rounded mass of granite hills, with wild and striking scenery, tree-fern gullies, and gigantic gum-trees, connected with the mainland by a narrow sandy isthmus. At its extremity lie a multitude of rocky islets, with steep granite edges. North of this cape, and opening to the east, lies Corner Inlet, which is dry at low water. The coast now continues low to the extremity of the colony. 'The slight bend northward forms a sort of bight called the Ninety Mile Beach, but it really exceeds that length. It is an unbroken line of sandy shore, backed by low sand hills, on which grows a sparse dwarf vegetation, Behind these hills come a succession of lakes, surrounded by excellent land, and beyond these rise the soft blue outlines of the Mountain masses of the interior. The shores on the ex-treme east are somewhat higher, and occasionally rise in bold points. They terminate in Cape Howe, off which lies Gabo Island, of small extent but containing an import- ant lighthouse and signalling station,

_ The western half of Victoria is level or slightly undulat- Ing, and as a rule tame in its scenery, exhibiting only thinly timbered grassy lands, with all the appearance of open parks, It is here that the merino sheep are de-

VIc—

Ne Ic 215

pastured whose wool secures the highest price in the markets of Europe. The north-west corner of the colony, equally flat, is dry and sometimes sandy, and frequently bare of vegetation, though in one part some seven or eight millions of acres are covered with the dense brushwood known as "mallee scrub." This wide western plain is slightly broken in two places. In the south the wild ranges of Cape Otway are covered over a considerable area with richly luxurious but almost impassable forests, This district has been reserved as a state forest and its coast forms a favourite holiday resort, the scenery being very attractive. The middle of the plain is crossed by a thin line of mountains, known as the Australian Pyrenees, at the western extremity of which there are several irregu- larly placed transverse ranges, the chief being the Gram- pians, the Victoria

Range, and the Sierra Range. Their highest point is Mount Williams (3600 feet). The eastern half of the colony is wholly different. Though there is plenty of level land, it occurs in small patches, and chiefly in the south, in Gippsland, which extends from Corner Inlet to Cape Howe. But a great part of this eastern half is occupied with the complicated mass of ranges known collectively as the Australian Alps. The whole forms a plateau averaging from 1000 to 2000 feet high, with many smaller tablelands ranging from 38000 to 5000 feet in height. The highest peak, Bogong, is 6508 feet in altitude. The ranges are so densely covered with vege- tation that it is extremely difficult to penetrate them; only two tracks, impassable for vehicles, intersect them from north te south. But several thousand square miles of this country are still unexplored. About fifteen peaks over 5000 feet in height have been measured, but there are probably many more. Along the ranges grow the giant trees for which Victoria is famous, The narrow valleys and gullies contain exquisite scenery, the rocky streams being overshadowed by groves of graceful tree-ferns, from amid whose waving fronds rise the tall smooth stems of the white gums. Over ten millions of acres are thus covered with forest-clad mountains too wild for settle- ment, The Australian Alps are connected with the Pyrenees by a long ridge called the Dividing Range (1500 to 3000 feet high).

Victoria is fairly well watered, but its streams are Rivers.

generally too small to admit of navigation. This, how- ever, is not the case with the Murray River (9.v.). Echuca is the chief port of the river traffic, and about 250 vessels enter it every year, bringing down from 80,000 to 120,000 bales of wool from the interior. – In the lower portion of its course the stream occupies only a narrow winding channel in the midst of its old bed, which now seems like a fertile valley hemmed in on either hand by high cliffs of clay or red earth, or sometimes of beds of oyster shells of vast extent. The navigation of the Murray is greatly impeded by "snags," or trees that have stuck fast in the bed of the river and project a little above or below the surface. But the removal of these obstacles is constantly going on, and consequently the navigation is becoming easier. Of the total length of the Murray 670 miles flow conterminous with Victoria. The Murray re- ceives a number of tributaries from the

Victorian side The Mitta Mitta, which rises in the heart of the Australian Alps, is 150 miles long, The Ovens, rising among the same mountains, is slightly shorter. The Goulburn (340 miles) flows almost entirely through well-settled agricul- tural country, and is deep enough to be used in its lower part for navigation, The valley of this river is a fertile grain-producing district. The; Campaspe (150 miles) has too little volume of water to be of use for navigation ; its valley is also agricultural, and along its banks there lie a close succession of thriving townships. The Loddon (over

Lakes.

Climate.

216

200 miles) rises in the Pyrenees. The upper part flows through a plain, to the right agricultural and to the left auriferous, containing nearly forty thriving towns, includ- ing Sandhurst and Castlemaine. In the lower part of the valley the rainfall is small and droughts are frequent, but farmers are steadily pushing out into it, as the land 1s very fertile. Recent legislation has provided for the formation of irrigation trusts in these districts of rich soil but small rainfall. To the west of the Loddon is the Avoca river (140 miles). It is of slight volume, and though it flows to-wards the Murray it loses itself in marshes and salt lagoons before reaching that river.

The rivers which flow southwards into the ocean are numerous. The Snowy river rises in New South Wales and in Victoria flows entirely through wild and almost wholly unoccupied territory. The Tambo (120 miles long), which rises in the heart of the Australian Alps, crosses the Gippsland plains where the land is good, but only a small portion is occupied. The Mitchell river, rising also among the Australian Alps, is navigable to a limited ex- tent. Its lower valley is being rapidly occupied by thriv- ing hop plantations. The Latrobe is a deep clear stream flowing through level country. The Yarra rises in the "Black Spur" of the Australian Alps. Emerging in a deep valley from the ranges, it follows a sinuous course through the undulating plains called the 'Yarra Flats,"

which are wholly enclosed by hills, on whose slopes are some of the best vineyards of Australia; it finds its way out of the Flats between high and precipitous but well- wooded banks, and finally reaches Port Phillip Bay below Melbourne. Owing to its numerous windings its course through that city and its suburbs is at least thirty miles. Nearer to the sea its waterway, formerly available for vessels drawing 16 feet, has now been deepened so as to be available for vessels drawing 20 feet. The Barwon, farther west, is a river of considerable length but little volume, flowing chiefly through pastoral lands. .The Hop- kins and Glenelg (280 miles) both water the splendid pas- toral lands of the west, the lower course of the former passing through the fertile district of Warrnambool, well known throughout Australia as a potato-growing region.

In the west there are Lakes Corangamite and Colac, due north of Cape Otway. The former is intensely salt ; the latter is fresh, having an outlet for its waters. Lakes Tyrrel and Hindmarsh lie in the plains of the north-west. In summer they are dried up, and in winter are again formed by the waters of rivers that have no outlet. In the east are the Gippsland lakes, formed by the waters of the Latrobe, Mitchell, and Tambo being dammed back by the sandhills of the Ninety Mile Beach. They are connected with Bass Strait by a narrow and shifting channel through a shallow bar; the Government of Victoria has done a great deal of late years to deepen the entrance and make it safer. The upper lake is called Lake Wellington ; a narrow passage leads into Lake Victoria, which is joined to a wider expanse called Lake King. These are all fresh- water lakes, and are visited by tourists for the sake of their scenery, which, though monotonous, has a certain

impressiveness. The surrounding country is being rapj di settled and utilized. = y 1s being rapidly

Victoria enjoys an exceptionally fine climate. about one-half of the ie in ae year a sky, with a bracing and dry atmosphere, pleasantly warm but not relaxing. These days are mainly in the autumn and spring. Dur- ing the last twenty years there have been on an average 13] days annually on which rain has fallen more or less (chiefly in winter) but rainy days do not exceed thirty in the year.

y : Th yearly rainfall is about 26 inches. The disagreeable fiutees of the

Victorian climate is the occurrence of north winds i

; 1 s, Which bloy an average about sixty days in the year. In winter they are on and dry, and have a slightly depressing effect. But in summer they are hot and dry, and generally bring with them disagreeable

Roughly speaking, a_ bright cloudless

Vere tom, Tf A

clouds of dust. The winds themselves blow for periods of two or three days at a time, and if the summer has six or eight such periods it becomes relaxing and produces languor. These winds cease with extraordinary suddenness, being replaced in a minute or two by a cool and bracing breeze from the south. The temperature often falls 40° or 50° Fahr. in an hour. The maximum temperature occurs in February, averaging 105°°6 Fahr. in the shade. The mini- muin is in July, when the thermometer registers as low as 30°. The mean for the whole year is 57°°3.. The temperature never falls be- low freezing-point, except for au hour or two before sunrise in the coldest month. Snow has twice been known to fall in Melbourne for a few minutes, in 1849 and 1882. It is common enough, how- ever, on the plateau: Ballarat, which is over 1000 feet high, always has a few snow storms, and the roads to Omeo among the Australian Alps lie under several feet of snow in the winter. The general healthiness of the climate is shown by the fact that the average death-rate for the last five years has been only 14°37 per thousand of the population. The rainfall of the colony varics considerably. On the table-land it averages about 40 inches, at Melbourne 25-44 inches, along the Murray basin 20 inches, and in the " Wim- mera" or north-west corner not more than 15 inches.

Victoria rests throughout on a bed of coarse granite, which is Geology, —

exposed in many te by the denudation of the overlying strata. Above this lies a bed of Silurian rocks, which seems to have at one time extended over the whole areca, and still forms the surface of a great portion of the colony, especially in the north-east. Other Paleozoic strata are

represented by only one small patch of Devonian at Mount Tambo in the Australian Alps, and by small isolated beds of Carboniferous strata along the valley of the Mitchell river. The Mesozoic strata overlie the Silurian along the coast, being represented by beds of Upper New Red Sandstone of considerable thickness. These extend from Cape Otway as far east as Corner Inlet, and sections of them are prominent features where the coasts are rocky. The other Mesozoic strata are absent. Miocene beds occur in patches near Ballarat, near Warrnambool, and in some parts of Gippsland. These are unimportant, however, compared with the Pliocene formations, which cover a very large part of the colony, notably the great plains of the Wimmera and the Murray valley. They also occur in smaller areas over the Silurian rock, either as cappings of prominences, that were left as islands when the waves of Post-Tertiary seas washed away the rest of the beds or else as "leads," 4.e., the beds carved out of Silurian strata by rivers of Mesozoic periods, but filled in during Pliocene times by deposits of debris from the mountains. These have been protected by their sunken position when the great bulk of the Pliocene beds were washed away. It is from these old river beds that the alluvial gold of Victoria is got. This gold was evidently at one time contained in veins of auriferous quartz which were worn down and carried into the streams, There the heavy particles of gold gathered in the hollows, forming those collections ae to miners as pockets. In some parts of Victoria vast sheets of lava overlic the Pliocene beds. These are most prominent in the south-western corner. The district round Warrnambool possesses eighty-three extinct volcanoes, and there were probably many more whose craters have been completely denuded. The volcanoes were of no great height, but from them issued sheets of glowing lava, covering the plains for hundreds of square miles. At Ballarat the mining shafts descend through four beds of basalt divided from one another by deposits of clay. These

represent four distinct outflows of lava in comparatively recent geologic times.

During 1886 665,196 oz. of gold were obtained of the value of Minerals.

£2,660,780. The total yield from 1851 to 1886 was 54,393,182 oz. of the value of about £217,570,000. The number of miners is about 26,000, of

whom nearly 5000 are Chinese. These devote themselves in nearly equal proportions to alluvial mining and quartz mining. But little is now done in the way of merely surface alluvial digging. The shafts are carried down to ae beds of ancient rivers, where the layers of what are called 'wash dirt" vary in thickness from 1 to 1 feet, yielding from 4 to 3 oz. per cubic yard. Quartz mining is rapidly increasing in extent, though the total quantity of gold ob- tained is steadily decreasing and the expense of getting it is increas- ing, for the shafts are becoming of excessive depth. One at Stawell penetrates 2409 feet below the surface ; two others exceed 2000; and there are in all 17 shafts each over 1000 feet in depth. The average yield of this quartz has been of late about 10 dwts. to the ton. About one-third of the area of Victoria is supposed to be auri- ferous, but only 1300 square miles have as yet been worked. Be- sides gold, Victoria produces a little tin, copper, and antimony, and, in still smaller quantities, zinc, lead, cobalt, bismuth, and manga- nese. Iron ore is being smelted, but the industry has not yet reached a paying condition. Great efforts are being made to dis- cover coalfields or to open up those that are known to exist. The total value of the coal raised in the colony up to date (1888) is only

£17,000. A promising 5-foot seam is, however, now being worked in Gippsland.

The native trees belong chiefly to the Myrtacce, being largely Flor.

composed of Lucalypti or gum trees. There are several hundred

aaa aimee

Fauna,

_ulve tock,

\gricul. ure,

Re

YRCPORIA

species, the most notable being Lucalyptus amygdalina, a tree with tall white stem, smooth as a marble column, and without branches for 60 or 70 feet from the ground. It is singularly beautiful when seen. in groves, for these have all the appearance of lofty pillared cathedrals, These trees are among the tallest in the world, averag- ing in some districts about 300 feet. The longest ever measured was found prostrate on the Black Spur; it measured 470 feet in length ; it was 81 feet in girth near the root. Hucalyptus globulus or blue gum has broad green leaves, which yield the eucalyptus oil of the pharmacopeia. ucalyptus rostrata is extensively used in the colony as a timber, being popularly known as red gum or hard wood. It is quite unaffected by weather, and almost indestructible when used as piles for piers or wharves. Smaller species of euca- lyptus form the common "bush." Melaleucas, also of Myrtacea kind, are prominent objects along all the coasts, where they grow densely on the sandhills, forming "ti-tree" scrub. Hucalyptus dumosa is a species which grows only 6 to 12 feet high, but with a straight stem ; the trees grow so close together that it is difficult to penetrate the scrub formed by them. Eleven and a half million acres of the Wimmera district are covered with this "mallce scrub," asitis called. Recent legislation has made this land easy of acquisi- tion, and the whole of it has been taken up on pastoral leases. Five hundred thousand acres have recently been taken up as an irriga- tion colony on Californian principles and laid out in 40-acre farms and orchards. The Leguwminoszx are chiefly represented by acacias, of which the wattle is the commonest. The black wattle is of con- siderable value, its gum being marketable and its bark worth from £5 to £10 a ton for tanning purposes. The golden wattle is a beautiful tree, whose rich yellow blossoms fill the river-valleys in early spring with delicious scent. The Caswarinz or she-oaks are gloomy trees, of little use, but of frequent occurrence. Heaths, grass- trees, and magnificent ferns and fern-trees are also notable features in Victorian forests. But European and subtropical vegetation has been introduced into the colony to such an extent as to have largely altered the characters of the flora in many districts.

The indigenous animals belong almost wholly to the Marsupialia. Kaugaroos are tolerably abundant on the grassy plains, but the process of settlement is causing their extermination. A smaller species of almost identical appearance called the wallaby is still numerous in the forest

lands. Kangaroo rats, opossums, wombats, native bears, bandicoots, and native cats all belong to the same class, The wombat forms extensive burrows in some districts. The native bear is a frugivorous little animal, and very harmless. Bats are numerous, the largest species being the flying fox, very abundant in some districts. Eagles, hawks, turkeys, pigeons, ducks, quail, snipe, and plover are common; but the characteristic denizens of the forest are vast flocks of parrots, parakeets, and cockatoos, with sulphur-coloured or crimson crests. The laughing jackass (giant kingfisher) is heard in all the country parts, and Magpies are numerous everywhere. Snakes are numerous; but less than one-fourth of the species are venomous, and they are all very shy. The deaths from snake-bite do not average 2 per annum. A great change is rapidly taking place in the fauna of the country, owing to cultivation and acclimatization. Dingoes have hearly disappeared, and rabbits, which were introduced only a few years ago, now abound in such nuntbers as to be a positive muisance. Deer are also rapidly becoming numerous. Sparrows and swallows are as common as in England. The trout, which – also been acclimatized, is taking full possession of some of the streams.

Tn 1878 Victoria possessed nearly eleven millions of sheep. Vic- torian sheep give an exceptionally large yield of wool, and their fleeces obtain a higher price (on the average 6s. 2d.) than any other grown in Australia. The colony has one and a quarter millions of cattle, three hundred and eight thousand horses, and about a quarter of a million of pigs.

There were in 1887 about 38,000 farms in the colony, containing over 2,417,157 acres of land actually cultivated; in almost all farms there is much land that is not actually tilled. Every year, however, a larger and larger proportion is brought under the plough, In the year ending March 1887 the crops were as follows :—wheat, 12,100,036 bushels ; oats, 4,256,079 bushels ; barley, 827,852 bushels ; potatoes, 170,661 tons; and hay, 483,049 tons. The aver- age produce per acre of wheat crop was 114 bushels; the average per acre of oats, 23 bushels; of barley, 22 bushels; of potatoes, 34 tons. There are 10,300 acres of vineyards, producing 986,041 gallons of wine, and this industry is fast increasing. The hop plantations in 1887 yielded 5023 cwts. of hops. The following crops are being more or

less experimented with :—arrowroot, beetroot, flax, mangel wurzel, mustard, olives, poppies, oranges, and some other fruits.

nu the same year there were produced 12,008 ewts. of tobacco. Almost every fruit is grown more or less, but the banana and orange cannot be considered commercially successful. Apples, Pears, peaches, grapes, loquats, mulberries, plums, gooseberries, strawberries, melons, apricots, raspberries, cherries, currants, quinces, almonds, figs, walnuts, all grow well and are in common use. Bananas, pine-apples, oranges, and passion fruit are cheap, but

they come from the northern colonies. Tomatoes are plentiful and cheap, being easily grown in all parts of the colony.

The central half of Victoria is well supplied with a close network Com- of railways, whilst several long lines branch out into the less settled munica- districts east and west. A line parallel to the coast, joining Mel- tion. bourne to Bairnsdale, is sufficient for the Gippsland traffic. From Sale a number of short lines are being constructed for the con- venience of the surrounding district. To the west there isa line 270 miles long joining Melbourne to Portland, giving off short branches on both sides. Three lines are being steadily pushed forward to the north-west into the Wimmera district. In 1887 there was a total length of 1880 miles open for traffic, The average cost of the lines now in operation has been £11,748 per mile, but all the more recently constructed lines have not ex- ceeded £5000 per mile. The receipts for the year 1886-87 were £2, 453,078, and the working expenses £1,427,116. All the lines are on a uniform gauge of 5 feet 3 inches, and they all belong to the state, being managcd by a special board of three commissioners. Communication with Sydney, 573 miles distant, is effected by rail in 19 to 25 hours, and with Adelaide in about 20 hours.

The well-settled parts of the colony are excellently supplied with macadamized roads, which are constructed and repaired by shire councils, whose chief function it is to raise revenues, each from its own district, to support the roads in that district. The less settled districts have

tracks on which riding or driving is ex- cellent after fine weather, but not after much rain.

Victoria has 420 telegraph stations, connected by 4096 miles of line. Melbourne is connected with every town or borough in Australia, Tasmania, and New Zealand. It is also joined with London, the length of line being 13,695 miles. The shortest re- corded time for the transmission of a message along this line is 32 minutes ; the avcrage time is about three hours. There are about 1300 telephone wires in use in the colony, chiefly in Melbourne.

In 1886 the colony had 1429 post-offices, through which there passed 38,392,414 letters and post-cards, 17,482,490 newspapers, and 6,926,525 packets.

Victoria is fully committed to the system of " protection to native Trade, industry." In 1886 the value of its manufactures was £13,370,000, of which over £2,250,000 worth was exported. The number of establishments was 2770, and the number of hands employed 45,770. The total value of the exports for 1886 was £11,795,321, the chief items of which were wool, £5,028,061; gold, £4,309,535; live stock, £898,000; wheat, £408, 000 ; flour, £318,000; sugar (brought to Vic- toria to be refined), £266,779 ; tea (brought to Melbourne to be re- exported), £395,000 ; machinery, £184,135. The imports in 1886 amounted to £18,530,575 in value, of which £8,741,275 were from the United Kingdom, £6,567,403 from other British colonies, and £3,221,897 from foreign countries, the United States heading the list with over half a million, chiefly manufactured goods.

In 1886 2307 vessels entered at Victorian ports (chiefly Mel- Shipping. bourne) and 23824 cleared, the tonnages being 1,848,058 and 1,887,329 respectively. Of the vessels that entered 1684 and of those that cleared 1721 were colonial, their respective tonnages being 958,833 and 983,295. Of British vessels there entered 407 (648,026 tons) and cleared 382 (661,833 tons). There is no shipbuilding of importance carried on in Victoria, only 4 small vessels having been built in 1886, with a total tonnage of 420. But there is a brisk trade in repairs, there being several good yards, and the Govern- ment possesses at Williamstown a graving dock which admits vessels 500 feet long, the depth of water being 27 feet.

Eleven banks of issue in Victoria had in 1886 notes to the extent Banks, of £1,399,208in circulation ; their deposits bearing interest amounted to £23,999,791, not bearing interest (current accounts), £7,239,681. The total liabilities amounted to £33,085,989, the assets to £41,170,989, The average rate of annual dividends is 124. There are, besides, six banking companies which do not issue notes, and two distinct systems of savings banks. The ordinary savings banks had in 1886 15 branches with 111,031 depositors, who owned £2,322,959 of deposits. There were 264 branches of the post-office savings banks, with 78,328 depositors, owning £1,266,957. But perhaps the most popular institution for the investment of money among persons of moderate ineans is the building societies, of which 60 were returned in 1886, with 19,907 members, holding £2,910,792 as deposits. These societies act as banks, and members have their current accounts with them. The total sums deposited in banks and building societies in 1888 amounted to forty millions.

Victoria enjoys almost absolute autonomy. The practical govern- Adminis- ment of the country rests with the parliament, consisting of two tration. houses. The legislative council contains 42 members elected by 14 electoral provinces. Each member holds his seat for six years, a third of them retiring every two years but being eligible for re- election. To be eligible for election a candidate must be over thirty years of age and possessed of freehold property to the extent of £100 per annum. The electoral body consists of all citizens over twenty-one years of age, either possessing property of the yearly value of £10 or paying rates on property

of not less than £25 annual value, To these are added all graduates of universities and

XXIV. — 28

Finance.

Educa- tion.

Popula- tion.

History.

Wesleyans.

218

all members of the learned professions. Members of the legislative council receive no payment. They form a sort of court of revision of the work done in the lower house. The legislative assembly consists of 86 members elected by 55 electoral districts; they are paid at the rate of £300 a year. A general election must take place every three years. In all other respects it resembles very closely the British House of Commons. Every man of the full age of twenty-one years who has taken out his elector's right has a vote for the election of a member for the district in which he resides. All voting is by ballot. The governor is appointed by the sovereign of the British empire. He has the power of assent- ing to or rejecting bills sent up to him from parliament, exccpt eight classes, which he is bonnd to refer to the sovereign, who can disallow all bills by signifying disapproval of them within two years of their being passed by the legislature. The governor Is assisted by an executive conncil consisting of the ministers and ex- nlinisters of the crown. The cabinet consists of treasurer, chief secretary, miuister of pnblic instruction, commissioner of trade and customs, minister of mines, postmaster-general, minister of lands, minister of public works, minister of agriculture, solicitor-general, attorney-general, and minister of defence. The civil service of Victoria is under the control of three commissioners, who are ap- pointed for a term of three years by Government, but are then wholly independent. Their

business is to make all appointments, determine all promotions, and watch over the administration of the Civil Service Act. Their existence has effcctually abolished the evils of political patronage. ;

During the financial year 1885-86 the total receipts of the colony from all sources amounted to £6,945,099 and the expenditure to £6,513,539. On 30th June 1887 the public debt amounted to £33,119,164, more than twenty-three millions of which have been borrowed for tle construction of railways.

Victoria possesses a most efficiently organized system of state schools, where the education given is free, secular, and compulsory. The schools number 1826, with 4050 teachers, and 189,637 scholars. The average attendance is 119,488. The state awards each year for competition among boys and girls of the state schools eleven exhibitions of the yearly value of £35 each, tenable for six years, and two hundred of the value of £10 each for three years. The snecessful candidates of the former must go for two years to a college or grammar school and then enter the university of Melbourne ; those of the latter class attend the nearest grammar school. The Roman Catholic Church supports 180 primary schools with 18,000 scholars. Secondary edncation is quite unconnected with the state and wholly unsnpported by it; but the churches and private enterprise provide all that is needed. The Church of Eng- land has large grammar schools in Melbourne and Geelong. The Presbyterians have colleges in Melbourne, Geelong, and Ballarat, and a ladies' college in Melbourne. The Wesleyans have colleges for males and females respectively in Melbourne. The Catholics have also two institutions. Private grammar schools exist in all important towns. The university has four faculties—arts, law, engineering, and medicine—in which in 1886 the students num- bered respectively 166, 61,9, and 212. There are 14 professors and 10 lecturers. About one thousand candidates present themselves every year for matriculation, but only about 160 actually enter the university each year. A considerable number of ladies have matriculated and are pursuing their stndies in the university. In 1886 the number of persons who gradnated was 124 and the total from the beginning of the university (founded in 1853) has been 1169. The compulsory clause has not been in force more than ten years, and it has not yet produced its full result in

raising the general standard of education. At present 94 per cent. of the children between the ages of six and fifteen attend school, but nearly a fonrth of these fail to make up 40 days in the qnarter, Still of persons above fifteen years of age 96 per cent. can read and 92 per cent. can both read and write. These results would be even more favourable but for the presence of 13,000 Chinese in the colony nearly all of whom are returned as illiterate, neither reading nor writing English.

The population in 1886 was 1,003,048 (531, 452 males and 471,591 females), of whom about one-half were born in the colony and rather less than a third in the British Isles. The estimated population at the end of 1887 was 1,035,900. In religion a third are Episco- palians, a fourth Catholics, a sixth Presbyterians, and an eighth

There are now only about 780 of the aborigines left; but they never were humerous. When white men first settled in the colony, there probably were not 15,000; some estimates place them as low as 5000. Those who now remain live on stations maintained by the Government. They are allowed great freedom, with plenty of land to roam over, but each station is under the paternal care of a superintendent. Nevertheless they are steadily diminishing in num bers.

The eastern shore of Victoria was first explored by Surgeon Bass, who in January 1798 rounded Cape Howe from Sydney in a whale- boat. The western half was first examined in 1800-1 by Lieutenant

Ve POR 1 A

Grant, when he discovered Port Phillip. In 1802 Flinders in charge of a British exploring expedition and Baudin at the head of one sent ont by Napoleon did exploring work in the same waters,

The colony was at first known as Port Phillip, settlement being confined to the shores of that inlet. The carliest attempt to colonize this part of Australia was made in 1803, when Collins was sent out with a number of convicts and landed on the sandy peninsula to the east of the entrance to the bay. Bnt, water being scarce, he went across to Tasmania. In 1835 John Bateman and John Pascoe Fawkner brought over from Tasmania

rival pastoral companies. Previous to this the brothers Henty had formed a whaling station at Portland, and had resided there for two years. But, as this was a purely private enterprise, aud not publicly known, the founding of the colony is rightly ascribed to Bateman and Fawkner. Before a year had passed about 200 persons had followed in their wake. At the end of 1839 there were 3000 persons on the banks of the Yarra ; in 1841 these had increased to 11,000, In 1842 the small community began to agitate for separation from New Sonth Wales, and in 1851, when its desires were realized, it numbered 97,000 persons. In this same year (1851) some of the Australian colonies received constitutions which rendered them self-governing, and among these the new colony of Victoria at- tained to the dignity of representative institutions. It was also in this year that the discovery of gold totally altered the character and prospects of Victoria. The discovery was first made in New South Wales in February 1851 by Edward Hargraves ; but a month or two elapsed before it became generally known. So great was the exodus to New South Wales that a committee of leading Melbourne citizens offered a reward for the first discovery of gold in Victoria. Numerous parties scoured the colony, with the result of finding gold at Clunes. Six weeks later the wonderful field of Ballarat was discovered, and attention was drawn to Victoria as a gold-producing country. In 1852 there were 70,000 arrivals in the colony, nearly all men. In 1853 there were 54,000, in 1854 there were 90,000, and so on, the population in 1861 being six times that of 1851. In 1854 the severity with which the licence-fee of thirty shillings a month was exacted from miners, whether successful or not, led to a serious riot. A number of the ringleaders were brought to trial, but the juries acquitted them. In 1860 the ill- fated expedition of Burke and Wills left Melbourne on its bold dash across the continent. In 1863 the colony was thrown into much excitement over a constitutional struggle generally known as the "deadlock." The democratic party wished to introduce the fiscal system of protection to native industry, but, after the bill had passed the lower house, the upper rejected it. It was then tacked to an Appropriation Bill, which the upper house resolntely refused to pass. For a year all supplies were stopped, and the business of the colony was carried on without funds. In 1866 a compromise was effected ; but then the struggle commenced anew. The English Government recalled the governor, Sir Charles Dar- ling, for siding with the democracy ; the lower house,

thinking him ill-used, placed on the estimates a grant of £20,000 for Lady Darling, which the upper house threw out. In 1868 Sir Charles received a lucrative position elsewhere, with £5000 from the colony as arrears of salary. The later history of the colony tells only of quiet, orderly, and unbroken prosperity. (A. SU.)

VICTORIA, capital of British Columbia and the princi- pal town of Vancouver Island, in the south-east corner of which it is finely situated (48° 25' 20" N. lat., 123° 22' 24" W. long.), on a small arm of the sea, its harbour, however, only admitting vessels drawing 18 feet. The city has some fine streets, handsome villas and public buildings, Govern- ment offices, and churches. There are several schools, public and private, a free library, a theatre, a mechanics' institute, and a public park. The water supply is good. The town, which is connected by cable with the mainland, is a favour- ite holiday resort for the Columbians. 'Till 1858 Victoria was a post of the Hudson Bay Company. The city was incorporated in 1862; and, according to the census of 1886, the population was 14,000, including Chinese and Indians, spread over an area of 4 square miles.

VICTORIA, a city of Brazil, capital of the province of Espirito Santo, 270 miles north-east from Rio de J aneiro, in 20° 18″ 8. lat. and 40° 20' W. long. Victoria, which has a white, Negro, and coloured population (1880) of 12,500, stands on the west side of an island at the head of the Bay of Espirito Santo, the entrance of which is defended by five forts, and also rendered difficult of access by several other islets and reefs rising little above high-water mark. The town is regularly laid out and well-built, with some good streets, two or three fine churches, a substantial governor's

—

”

€ q

|

—_”

residence, and a few other conspicuous buildings. The surrounding district grows much rice, sugar, and manioc, which with other produce are here shipped, chiefly for the neighbouring coast towns.

Victoria, originally Espirito Santo, is onc of the oldest Portuguese settlements on the Brazilian coast, having been founded in 1535 by Vasco Fernando Continho at a little distance from its present site, on the south side and nearer to the entrance of the bay. It took the name of Victoria in 1558 to commemorate the crushing defeat inflicted by Fernando de Sa on the allied Indian tribes of the Aimores, Tapininguins, and Goitacazes in that year. The original site is still occupied by a group of houses and buildings commonly known as the Villa Velha or " Old Town," which is separated from Victoria by the Rio Santa Maria flowing to the south-west corner of the bay.

VIDA, Marco Girotamo (c. 1489-1566), one of the most eminent Latin poets and scholars of the age of Leo X., was born at Cremona shortly before the year 1490. He received the name of Marcantonio in baptism, but changed this to Marco Girolamo when he entered the order of the Canonici Regolari Lateranensi. During his early manhood he acquired considerable fame by the composition of two didactic poems in the Latin tongue, on the Game of Chess and on the Silkworm. This reputation induced him to seek the papal court in Rome, which was rapidly becoming the headquarters of polite learning, the place where students might expect advancement through their literary talents. Vida reached Rome in the last years of the pontificate of Julius IT. Leo X., on succeeding to the papal chair (1513), treated him with marked favour, be- stowed on him the priory of St Sylvester at Frascati, and bade him compose a heroic Latin poem on the life of Christ. Such was the origin of the Christiad, Vida's most cele- brated, if not his best, performance. It did not, however, see the light in Leo's lifetime. Between the years 1520 and 1527 Vida produced the second of his masterpieces in Latin hexameters, a didactic poem on the Art of Poetry. Clement VII. raised him to the rank of apostolic proto- notary, and in 1532 conferred on him the bishopric of Alba. It is probable that he took up his residence in this town soon after the death of Clement; and here he spent the greater portion of his remaining years. Vida attended the council of Trent, where he enjoyed the

society of Cardinals Cervini, Pole, and Del Monte, together with his friend the poet Flaminio. A record of their conversations may be studied in Vida's Latin dialogue De Republica. Among his other writings should be mentioned three eloquent ora- tions in defence of Cremona against Pavia, composed upon the occasion of some dispute as to precedency between ao two cities. Vida died at Alba on 27th September

566,

Vida's fame rests almost wholly on his Latin poems. These are more remarkable for their purity and grace of style than for quali- ties of imagination or powerful thinking. His contemporaries Were of opinion that Vida approached more nearly to the ancients M Majesty and gravity of diction than his rivals. Indeed, the Poetica cau still be read with both pleasure and instruction. Though we miss the poetic glow of Poliziano's and Pontano's Latin Compositions, and the exquisite workmanship of Flaminio's lyrics, there isin Vida so facile a command of the Latin language and metre that we might fancy ourselves listening to a writer of the Augustan age. The following lines will give a fair notion of his powers :—

Dii Rome indigetes, Trojz tuqve auctor, Apollo, Unde genus nostrum cceli se tollit ad astra,

Hance saltem anferri tandem prohibete Latinis: Artibus emineat semper studiisque Minerve Italia, et gentes doceat pulcherrima Roma; Quandoquidem armorum penitus fortuna recessit, Tanta Italos inter crevit discordia reges ;

Ipsi nos inter sevos destringimus enses,

Nec patriam pudet externis aperire tyrannis.

This pious prayer was not granted in the age which followed the council of Trent.

Berda's poems were collected and printed at Oxford in 1722, and an enlarged e ition appeared in 1731. For an account of his works, see

Symonds's Renais- Sance in Italy, vol. it.

VIEN, JoszpH Martz (1716-1809), French painter, was not only the master but the forerunner of David, and the

author of the classic movement which, inaugurated under Louis XVI, ran itself out under the first empire. He was born at Montpellier, 18th June 1716. Protected by Comte de Caylus, he entered at an early age the studio of Natoire, and obtained the great prize in 1745. He used his time at Rome in applying to the study of nature and the development of his own powers all that he gleaned from the masterpieces around him; but his tendencies were so foreign to the reigning taste that on his return to Paris he owed his admission to the academy for his picture Deedalus and Icarus (Louvre) solely to the indignant pro- tests of Boucher. When in 1776, at the height of his established reputation, he became director of the school of France at Rome, he took David with him amongst his pupils. After his return, five years later, his fortunes were wrecked by the Revolution ; but he undauntedly set to work, and at the age of eighty (1796) carried off the prize in an open Government competition. Bonaparte acknowledged his merit by making him a senator. He died at Paris on 27th March 1809, leaving behind him several brilliant pupils, amongst whom were Vincent, Regnault, Suvée, Ménageot, Taillasson, and others of high merit ; nor should the name of his wife, Marie Thérése Reboul (1728-1805), herself a member of the academy, be omitted from this list. Their son, Marie Joseph, born in 1761, also distinguished himself as a painter.

VIENNA (Germ. Ween), the capital and largest city of the Austrian-Hungarian empire, is situated on the right bank of the Danube, in 48° 13' N. lat. and 16° 23' E. long., at a height of about 550 feet above the level of the sea. It lies at the base of the last outlying spurs of the eastern Alps (the Wiener Wald), at the beginning of a plain which stretches eastwards to the Carpathians. The main channel of the Danube passes to the north of

Vienna; but an arm of the river, the Danube Canal, passes through the city, dividing it into two unequal parts. Into this

arm, on the east side of Vienna, flows the dirty and gener-

ally insignificant stream called the Wien, which gives its name to the city.! Vienna is the principal residence of the emperor, the see of an archbishop, the seat of the im- perial and Cisleithan (Austrian) ministries, the meeting- place of the Austrian diet, and also the meeting-place, alternately with Buda-Pesth, of the delegations (compare AvsTRIA). Vienna is now officially divided into the fol- lowing ten municipal districts,—the inner town (Innere Stadt) or old city of Vienna, Leopoldstadt, Landstrasse, Wieden, Margarethen, Mariahilf, Neubau, Josefstadt, Alser- grund, and Favoriten. The inner town, which lies almost exactly in the centre of the others, is, unlike the older parts of most European towns, still the most aristocratic quarter, containing the palaces of the emperor and of many of the nobility, the Government offices, many of the embassies and legations, the opera house, and the principal hotels. Leopoldstadt, which is the only district on the left bank of the Danube Canal, is the chief commercial quarter, and is inhabited to a great extent by Jews. Mariahilf, Neubau, and Margarethen are the chief seats of manufacturing industry. Landstrasse may be described as the district of officialism; there too are the British and German embassies. Alsergrund, with the enormous general hospital, the military hospital, and the municipal asylum for the insane, is the medical quarter. The inner city, or Vienna proper, was formerly separated from the other dis- tricts by a circle of fortifications, consisting of a rampart, fosse, and glacis. These, however, were removed in 1858- 1860, and the place of the glacis has been taken by a hand- some boulevard (Ring-Strasse), 2 miles in length and about 150 feet in average width. A series of external

1 Some authorities connect the name of Vienna with Vindobona (see p. 222 below).

works, consisting of a rampart and fosse, were constructed | centuries, but incorporating a few fragments of the original

in 1704 to surround the whole city at that time, including its suburbs; and these are still maintained as the boundary- line for the city imposts, and separate the above-named districts from the as yet unincorporated suburbs. This second girdle of fortifications is known as the Lines (Linien), and a second wide boulevard (Giirtel-Strasse) follows their course round the city.

Near the centre of the inner city, most of the streets in which are narrow and irregular, is the cathedral of St Stephen, the most important medieval building in Vienna, dating in its present form mainly from the 14th and 15th

12th-century edifice. Among its most striking features are the fine and lofty tower (450 feet), rebuilt in 1860-64 ; the extensive catacombs, in which the emperors were for- merly interred ; the sarcophagus (1513) of Frederick III. ; the tomb of Prince Eugene of Savoy; thirty-eight marble altars; and the fine groined ceiling. A little to the south-west of the cathcdral is the Hofburg, or imperial palace, a huge complex of buildings of various epochs and in various styles, enclosing several courtyards. The oldest part of the present edifice dates from the 13th century, and extensive additions are now being made according to

NIENY. t e | : ‘ aS . =f . aoa AREY fa

yylsNn

gy wonuas

7)

a m

Plan of the city of Vienna.

the plans of the architect Fischer von Erlach (1656-1723) In addition to private rooms and state apartments the Hofburg contains a library of 400,000 volumes and 20,000 MSS. ; the imperial treasury, a storehouse of objects of the greatest historical interest and intrinsic value; a cabinet of coins and antiquities ; and other important col- lections. In the old town are the two largest of the Hife extensive blocks of buildings belonging to the great abbe s of Austria, which are common throughout Vienna These are the Schottenhof (once belonging to the "Scot." or Irish Benedictines) and the Mélkerhof, adjoining the open space called the Freiung, each forming a little town of itself As in most Continental towns, the custom of living in flats 1s prevalent in Vienna, where few except the richer nobles occupy an entire house. Of late the so-called "Zins. palaste " ("tenement palaces") have been built on a large and magnificent scale, often profusely adorned without and within with painting and sculpture. Some of the finest of

these, a characteristic feature of Vienna architecture, are also to be seen in the old town. Other notable buildings within the line of the old fortifications are the Gothic Augustine church, containing a fine monument by Canova; the Capuchin church, with the burial vault of the Haps- burgs ; the church of Maria-Stiegen, an interesting Gothic building of the 14th century ; the handsome Greek church, by Hansen ; and the old rathhaus. At the corner of the Graben is the "Stock im Eisen," the stump of a tree, said to be the last survivor of a holy grove round which the original settlement of Vindomina sprang up (see p. 222 below). It is full of nails driven into it by travelling jJourneymen.

_ the number of its large and handsome modern build- ings Vienna can hold its own with any European capital. Most of these are found in or adjoining the Ring-Strasse, which certainly ranks as one of the most imposing achieve- ments of recent street architecture. Opposite the Hof-

VIE

burg, the main body of which is separated from the Ring- Strasse by the Hofgarten and Volksgarten, rise the hand- some monument of the empress Maria Theresa and the imperial museums of art and natural history, two extensive Renaissance edifices with domes, matching each

other in every particular and grouping finely with the new part of the palace. Hans Makart's painted dome in the natural history museum is the largest pictorial canvas in the world. Adjoining the museums to the west is the palace of justice (1881), and this is closely followed by the houses of parlia- ment (1883), in which the Grecian style has been success- fully adapted to modern requirements. Beyond the houses of parliament stands the new rathhaus, an immense and lavishly-decorated Gothic building, erected in 1873-83. It was designed by Friedrich Schmidt, who may be de- scribed as the chief exponent of the modern Gothic tend- ency, as Hansen and Semper, the creators respectively of the parliament house and the museums, are the leaders of the Classical and Renaissance styles which are so strongly represented in Viennese architecture. The central tower and the tapering steeple of the rathhaus are surmounted by a colossal bronze figure of a knight. Opposite the rath- haus, on the inner side of the Ring, is the new court theatre, another specimen of Semper's Renaissance work. To the north stands the new building of the university, a Renaissance structure by Ferstel, rivalling the rathhaus in extent. Near the university, and separated from the Ring by a garden, stands the votive church in Alsergrund, erected to commemorate the emperor's escape from assas- sination in 1853, one of the most elaborate and successful of modern Gothic churches, in which the efforts of the architect (Ferstel) are supported by a profusion of sculp- ture and stained glass windows. The other important buildings of the Ring-Strasse include the magnificent opera house, the sumptuous interior of which vies with that of Paris, the Academy of Art, the industrial museum, and the exchange. On the north side the Ring-Strasse gives place to the spacious Franz Joseph's quay, flanking the Danube Canal. The municipal districts outside the Ring also contain numerous handsome modern buildings, Among the churches may be instanced those of Wieden (St Carlo Borromeo) and Lerchenfeld, the former an 18th- century imitation of St Peter's at Rome, the latter a plain but graceful building in an early medieval Italian style. The secular buildings include several large barracks and hospitals, various institutions connected with the univer- sity, the arsenal (with a collection of weapons), the Belve- dere (see below), and the polytechnic institute, market- halls, &c. In the outlying districts are numerous villas of great taste and elegance.

Vienna is the intellectual as well as the material capital of Austria,—emphatically so in regard to the German part of the empire. Its university, established in 1365, is now attended by nearly 6000 students, and the medical faculty enjoys a world-wide reputation. Besides an adequate supply of elementary and secondary schools, the other educational institutions include a large polytechnic, an agricultural academy, a military school, Roman Catholic and Protestant theological seminaries, a conservatorium of music, a training school for aspirants to a diplomatic career, 4 commercial college, and numerous technical and special Schools, Its scientific institutions are headed by the Academy of Science, The Academy of Art was founded m 1707, Few European capitals possess more valuable art collections than Vienna. The picture gallery in the Belvedere Palace, formerly the residence of Prince Eugene, 8 unsurpassed for its specimens of Rubens, Diirer, and the Venetian masters, The Lower Belvedere, at the other end of the garden, contains the famous Ambras collection of armour, curiosities, and antiquities. The private picture

galleries of Prince Liechtenstein, Count Harrach, and Count Czernin are of great extent and importance y and the collection of drawings and engravings known as the "Albertina," in the palace of the archduke Albert, is familiar to all connoisseurs. The collections of the various museums, &c., which are not unworthy of the handsome buildings in which they are exhibited, and the extensive military collections of the arsenal must also be mentioned.

In 1880 the population of Vienna proper, z.¢., the ten municipal districts, amounted to 705,402, a number which gave it the fourth place among the cities of Europe. In- cluding the suburbs, the total population rose to 1,082,812. The above figures are exclusive of the garrison of 20,700 men. The overwhelming majority of the inhabitants are Roman Catholics; the Jews number about 75,000, and the Protestants 26,500.

Owing to the peculiarities of its situation, the population of Vienna is of a very cosmopolitan and heterogeneous character. The German element is, of course, largely in the ascendant; but there are also large numbers of

Czechs, Hungarians, and Slavs. As a general rule the Viennese are gay, pleasure-loving, and genial, and they possess a bonhomie which differentiates them markedly from the inhabitants of the other great German eapital. The Viennese women are often distinguished by beauty and elegance ; and dress- ing as a fine art is cultivated here with almost as great success as in Paris, Asa rule the Viennese are passionately fond of daneing ; and the city of Strauss, Lanner, and Gungl provides the civilized terpsichorean world with waltzes and polkas. Opera, especially in its lighter form, flourishes, and the actors of Vienna maintain with success a traditional reputation of no mean order. The above description must not be understood to convey a negation of more solid qualities, especially industry, frugality, and sobriety. Its chief place in the history of art Vienna owes to its musicians, among whom are counted Haydn, Mozart, Beethoven, and Schubert. The Viennese school of painting is of modern origin ; but some of its members, for instance, Hans Makart, have acquired a European reputation.

The Prater, a vast expanse (2000 acres) of wood and park on the east side of the city, between the Danube and the Danube Canal, is greatly frequented by all elasses; and here all phases of Viennese life may be studied, from the fashionable eorso in the Haupt-Allee in May down tothe bois- terous and Derby- day-like jollity of a Sunday in the Wur- stel Prater or people's Prater. The great exhibition of 1873 was held in this park, and several of its buildings, in- cluding the large rotunda, have been left standing. Small- er parks are the Hof- garten, the Volks- garten, and the Town Park, all adjoining the Ring-Strasse. The environs of the city of Vienna contain many points of beauty and interest. Among the most popular resorts are the parks and gardens belonging to the imperial chateaux of Schénbrunn and Laxenburg.

The position of the eity on the chief European waterway running from west to east early marked out Vienna as one of the great com- mercial emporia of eastern Europe. The valley of the March, which river here joins the Danube, forms the natural line of communica- tion with the Oder and the Vistula. But the Austrian Government and the corporation of Vienna, by failing to keep the Danube in a proper state for navigation, have let slip the opportunity of making the city the great Danubian

metropolis which its geographical position entitles it to be. An extensive trade is nevertheless carried on from Vienna in grain, partly as a direct importation from Hun- gary and partly in transit between Russia and southern Germany. Other important articles are wine, cattle, colonial wares, and manu- faetured goods of the most varied description. Though not conspieu- ous among eities of its own rank as an industrial centre, Vienna nevertheless carries on a considerable number of manufactures ; and some of its products, such as its bent-wood furniture and meer- schaum pipes, are exported to all parts of Europe. In the number

a va

Environs of Vienna.

222

and variety of its leather and other fancy goods it rivals Paris; and among manufaetures of a more solid character may be instanced machinery, ironwares, carriages, cotton and silk goods, &. The beer of Vienna is also famous. The municipal government of Vienna is entrusted to a gemeinderath of 120 elected members, with an executive and police magistracy. The annual income of this body amounts to about one and a half millions sterling. In the national parliament the city is represented by 10 members. The climate of Vienna is changeable, and rapid falls of tempera- ture are not uncommon. The range between January and June is about 40° Fahr. Violent storms often occur in spring and autumn ; and the heat of summer is accompanied by a plague of dust. Good water is brought by an aqueduct from the Schneeberg, 50 miles to the south-west. The annual death-rate is about twenty- six per thousand. ; ‘

History.—For several centuries Vienna filled an important réle as the most advanced bulwark of Western civilization and Christian- ity against the Turks, for during the whole of the Middle Ages Hungary practically retained its Asiatie character. The story of Vienna begins iu the earliest years of the Christian era, with the seizure of the Celtic settlement of Vindomina by the Romans, who changed its name to Vindobona, and established a fortified camp here to command the Danube and protect the northern frontier of the empire. The fortress grew in importance, and was

afterwards made a municipium ; and here Marcus Aurelius died in 180. On the decline of the Roman empire Vindobona became the prey of successive barbarian invaders. Attila and his Huns were among the temporary occupants of the place (5th century), and in the following century it came into the possession of the Avars, after which its name disappears from history until towards the close of the 8th century, when Charlemagne expelled the Avars and made the district between the Enns and the Wiener Wald the boundary of his empire. In the time of Otho II. (976) this " East Mark" (Ostmark, Oesterreich, Austria) was granted in fief to the Baben- bergers, and in the reign of Frederick Barbarossa (1156) it was ad- vanced to the rank of a duchy. There is no certain record that the site of Vindobona was occupied at the time of the formation of the Ostmark, though many considerations make it probable. It is not likely that the Avars, living in their "ring" encampments, de- stroyed the Roman municipium ; and Bees, the Hungarian name for Vienna to this day, is susceptible of a Slavonic interpretation only, and would seem to indicate that the site had been occupied in Slavonic times. The frequent mention of "Wiene" in the oldest extant version of the Nibelungenlied points in the same direction. Passing over a. doubtful mention of "Vwienni" in the annals of 1030, we find the "civitas" of Vienna mentioned ina document of 1130, and in 1156 it became the capital and residence of Duke Hein- rich Jasomirgott. In 1237 Vienna received a charter of freedom from Frederiek II., confirmed in 1247. In the time of the crusades Vienna increased so rapidly, in consequenee of the traffic that flowed through it, that in the days of Ottocar II. of Bohemia (1251-76), the suecessor of the Babenbergers, it had attained the dimensions of the present inner town. A new era of power and splendour begins in 1276, when it became the capital of the Haps- burg dynasty, after the defeat of Ottocar by Rudolph of Hapsburg. From this time on it has shared the fortunes of the house of Austria. In 1477 Vienna was besieged unsuccessfully by the Hungarians, and in 1485 it was taken by Matthew Corvinus. Of more import- ance were the two sieges by the Turks (1529 and 1683), when the city was saved on the first occasion by the gallant defence of Nicholas von Salm, and on the second by Riidiger von Starhem- berg, who held out until the arrival of the Poles and Germans under John Sobieski of Poland. The suburbs, however, were destroyed on both occasions. In 1805, and again in 1809, Vienna was for a short time occupied by the French. In 1814-15 it was the

meeting- place of the congress which settled the political affairs of Europe after the overthrow of Napoleon. In 1848 the city was for a time in the hands of the revolutionary party ; but it was bombarded by the imperial forces and compelled to surrender on 30th October of the same year, Vienna was not occupied by the Prussians in the war of 1866, but the invaders marched to within sight of its towers. Since then the most important event in its history has been the exhibition of 1873.

fi Se a Pc Bea 8h, etang am Topographie der Siadt Wien (1876); Victor Tissot, Vienne et la Vie V- iennoise (Paris, 1878). @. F. M.) VIENNE, a department of France, formed in 1790 out of Poitou (four-fifths of its present area), Touraine (one- seventh), and Berry, lies between 46° 3' and 47° 10' N. lat. and 0° 6' W. and 1° 12' E. long., and is bounded by Deux-Sevres on the W., Charente on the S., Haute-Vienne on the S.E., Indre on the E., Indre-et-Loire on the N.E. and N., and Maine-et-Loire on the N.W. The river Vienne, which gives its name to the department, with its tributaries

the Creuse (subtributary the Gartempe) on the east and the Clain on the west, flows from south to north, The general slope of the department is in the same direction, the highest point (764 feet) being in the south-east and the lowest (115 feet) at the junction of the Vienne and the Creuse. In the south the Charente, on the north- west the Dive, and in the west some streams belonging to the basin of the Sévre-Niortaise drain small portions of the department. The average temperature is 54° Fahr. The prevailing winds are from the south-west and west. The annual rainfall is 23 inches.

Of the total area of 1,722,478 acres arable land occupies 1,119,675, grass 76,899, vines 90,750, woods 193,322, and heath, pasture, and uncultivated land 146,971. In 1881 the live stock ineluded 22,637 horses, 7176 mules, 9679 asses, 63,052 cattle, 155,212 sheep of native and 47,970 of improved breed, 66,655 pigs, and 21,744 goats. There were also 11,047 beehives (32% tons of honey and as much of wax). The crops in 1884 were—wheat 4,557,146 bushels, meslin 245,641, rye 291,673, barley 1,063,647, oats 4,295,742, buckwheat 27,813, maize 51,529, potatoes 3,455,220, beetroot 54,941 tons, colza seed 668 tons, hemp 328 tons, flax 34 tons, hay 108,955

tons, clover 54,862, lucerne 98,282, sainfoin 53,350, other fodder 10,079 tons, wine 20,288,952 gallons (average for last ten years 21,384,880 gallons). Oak, ash, alder, and birch are the principal forest trees, and among the fruit-trecs are the chestnut, walnut, and almond. Iron and manganese occur, and there are numerous quarries of building and lithographic stones, lime, limestone, mill- stones, marl, and a sort of pebbles which are cut into " Chatel- lerault diamonds." There are sulphur and iron mineral springs. The most important industrial establishments are the national arnis manufactory and the cutlery works at Chatellerault; in other parts of the department are forges, blast furnaces, wool-spinning mills (580 spindles), hemp-spinning mills (4000 spindles, of which only 1500 are in use, and 28 looms), manufactories of serges and coarse cloth, vinegar, candles, leather, tiles, and pottery, paper-works, breweries, distilleries, rope-yards, lime-kilns, and numerous plaster and flour mills. Corn, wine, brandy, vegetables, fruit, chestnuts, fodder, cattle, cutlery, and dressed hides are exportcd ; butcher's meat, colonial produce, and coals are imported. The department has 233 miles of railway, 239 of national and 8704 of other roads, and 32 of waterway (the Vienne from Chatellerault, the Dive below Moncontour, and some miles of the Creuse being navigable). : The population in 1881 was 340,295 and in 1886 342,785, an increase of 101,795 since 1801. Vienne forms part of the diocese of Poitiers, has its eourt of appeal and acadenty at Poitiers, and belongs to the Tours army corps district. The chef-lieu is Poitiers (population 34,628 in 1886), and the department is divided for purposes of ad- ministration into 5 arrondissements (Poitiers ; Chatellerault, popu- lation of town 14,498 in 1886; Civray, 2464; Loudun, 4041; Montmorillon, 4155), 31 cantons, and 300 communes.

VIENNE, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondisse- ment in the department of Isére, historically and in- dustrially the first, and by population the second, city of Dauphiné, is situated on the left bank of the Rhone, at the point where it is jommed by the Gére, 19 miles S. of Lyons by the railway to Marseilles. On the north, east, and south the town is sheltered by low hills. Its site is an immense mass of ancient débris, which is constantly yielding interesting antiquities. Along the Gére are traces of the ramparts of the old Roman city; on Fort Pipet, to the east of the town, are the remains of a theatre and citadel and some vestiges of a pantheon

and an amphi- theatre ; and in the interior of the town are two arches of a theatre and the balustrade of a magnificent staircase. The ancient aqueducts, restored in 1822, still convey the waters of the Gere from a distance of 4 or 5 miles; and there are several pieces of Roman road to be seen in the neighbourhood. The Plan de l'Aiguille, a truncated quad- rangular pyramid 55 feet high, resting on a portico with four arches, used to be pointed out as the tomb of Pontius Pilate (who, according to tradition, died here), but it is now recognized as having been part of the spina of a large circus, the outlines of which have been traced. The temple of Augustus and Livia, a rectangular building of the Corinthian order, was rebuilt at the end of the 2d century, and in the 5th century was converted into a church. The "festival of reason" was celebrated in it at

the Revolution ; and it has only lately been restored, and the houses built against it cleared away. The museum in the town-hall is very rich in antiquities. The cathedral of St Maurice, exhibiting the finest Gothic architecture in Dauphiné, was begun at the end of the 12th century in the Transitional Burgundian style, on the ruins of a church which had been finished in 1107, and it was consecrated by Pope Innocent IV. in 1251. There is neither apse nor transept, and the building (315 feet long, 118 wide, and 89 high) is a singular mixture of the Romanesque and Gothic styles. The best part is the facade, finished in 1533, which rises majestically from a terrace overhanging the Rhone. Parts of the church of St André-le-Bas, which was used as a chapel by the dukes of Burgundy, are as old as the 9th century, and most of it was built in 1152. The church of St Peter, at present (1888) undergoing re- storation, is one of the oldest in France, dating from the 6th century; the porch is in the most primitive Roman- esque style; and the side walls, decorated with two rows of arches resting on marble columns (9th century), are unique in France. The steeple belongs to the 12th cen- tury, and the vaults were rebuilt by Soufflot in the 18th century. Among the many tombs is that of St Mamert. In the square fronting the town-hall is a statue of Ponsard the dramatist, who was born at Vienne. The Gére sup- plies the motive power to numerous factories. About one million yards of cloth are annually produced, and from 8000 to 9000 hides are dressed. The other industrial

establishments include a paper-mill, an iron and copper foundry (400 men), iron-works, foundries, lapidaries' workshops, glass-works, brick-works, and calcining and re- fining furnaces in connexion with the lead and zinc mines in the neighbourhood. Grain is an important article of commerce. A suspension bridge connects Vienne with the right bank of the Rhone, where the village of St Colombe occupies part of the site of the ancient town. Near St Romain-en-Gal is a tower built by Philip of Valois to defend the right, or French, bank, as distinguished from the left, which belonged to the empire. The population in 1881 was 22,740 (commune 26,060), and in 1886 23,011 (commune 25,480).

Vienne was originally the capital of the Allobroges, and was embellished and fortified by Julius Cesar, who made it a colony. Tiberius granted the citizens the Jus Italicum. The ramparts, pierced by five gates, enclosed a lower, middle, and upper town. Vienne was the residence of a pretor, had a senate, consuls, and a garrison of five legions, and was the seat of a celebrated school. A bridge of five arches connected it with the new town on the night bank. Postumus (see vol. xx. p. 776) was proclaimed Cesar here in 259, and Vienne became the capital of a provincial empire, which under himself and his successors, Victorinus aud Tetricus, lasted fourteen years. Christianity was introduced by St Crescens in the 2d century, and St Lupicin is named as the first archbishop. 'The archbishops of Vienne all through the Middle Ages disputed the title of primate of Gaul with those of Lyons. Vienne was conquered by the Burgundians in 438, and sacked by the Lombards in 558 and by the Saracens in 737. It was one of the residences of Boso, king of Burgundy and Provence (879), who died and was buried here. After the fall of the second kingdom of Burgundy, Vienne became the chef-lieu of a county, for which the nobility and clergy disputed, and which was finally seized by the Counts of Albon. In 1349 Humbert II. ceded Vienne with all Dauphiné to France. The town was sacked in 1562 by Baron des Adrets, was claimed by both Roman Catholics and Protestants, but declared for the League in 1590, and was compelled to surrender to the duke of Montmorency, who destroyed the citadel and ram- parts. The archbishopric was suppressed in 1790. Vienne was the birthplace of St Julian (3d century); and pope Calixtus II. (Guy of Burgundy ; 0d. 1124) was one of its archbishops.

VIENNE, Havre, a department of France, formed in 1790 out of Limousin (three-fifths), La Marche (one-fourth), Poitou, and Berry, and formerly known as Haut-Limousin, lies between 45° 26’ and 46° 23’ N. lat. and 0° 38’ and r o4’ E. long., and is bounded by the Indre on the N., Creuse on the E., Corréze on the S.E., Dordogne on the S.W.,

Charente on the W., and Vienne on the N.W. Haute- Vienne belongs to the central plateau of France, and drains partly to the Loire and partly to the Garonne, The highest point (2549 feet) is in the extreme south-east, and belongs to the treeless but well-watered plateau of Mille- vaches, formed of granite, gneiss, and mica. To the north- west of the Millevaches are the Ambazac (2300 feet) and Blond (1690 feet) Hills, both separating the valley of the Vienne from that of the Gartempe, a tributary of the Creuse. The Vienne traverses the department from east to west, passing Eymoutiers, St Léonard, Limoges, and St Junien, and receiving on the right the Maude and the Taurion. The Isle, which flows into the Dordogne, with its tributaries the Auvézére and the Dronne, and the Tar-doire and the Bandiat, tributaries of the Charente, all rise in the south of the department. The altitude and inland position of Haute-Vienne, its geological character, and the northern exposure of its valleys make the winters long and severe; but the climate is milder in the west and

north-west. The annual rainfall at Limoges is 36 inches.

Of the total area of 1,360,000 acres 439,215 are cultivated, 4263 are occupied by vineyards, 75,338 by chestnut trees, and 163,135 by dry underwood. The crops in 1884 were—wheat 1,242,271 bushels, meslin 34,298, rye 2,482,557, barley 13,300, oats 318,026, buckwheat 1,529,368, maize 65,579, potatoes 6,710,728, beetroot 189,000 tons, colza seed 1845 tons, hemp seed 1921, hemp 1200, linseed 93, flax 46, hay 387,192, clover 31,527, lucerne 3153, wine 111,480 gallons (average for preceding ten years 141,020 gallons). The live stock included 8371 horses ofa shapely and powerful breed, 684 mules, 4975 asses, 146,131 cattle, 507,443 sheep of native and 43,593 of improved breed, 104,263 pigs, and 9642 goats. There were 36,601 beehives (1044 tons of honey and 34% tons of wax). The department is on the whole unproductive. The chestnut is here

characteristic, as the apple in Normandy, and with the potato and turnip it forms the chief food of the people. The brooks are fringed by fine meadows, and the hills are covered with heath or forests of beech, hornbeam, oak, birch, and chestnut. he mineral wealth consists of iron, copper, tin, wolfram, antimony, serpentine, fine-grained granite, gneiss, garnets, emeralds, and a kind of por- phyry, which takes a fine polish. There are inexhaustible supplies of china clay, in which an export trade is carried on with Russia and America, 5800 workmen are employed in porcelain manufac- tories, 650 in paper and pasteboard mills (annual product, £100,000), 560 in wool and cotton spinning mills and manufactories of flannel, druggets, woollen cloaks, and carpets, 600 in shoe-making (annual product, £100,000), 600 in manufactories of sabots, 340 in glove manufactories, 376 in tan-yards, 325 in leather-dressing works, 130 in coach-building and wheelwrights' shops, 125 in cabinet work- shops, 325 in printing works, and 100 in distilleries (annual pro- duct, £480,000). In 1878 1153 tons of iron were produced, aud there are forges, foundries, copper-works, and manufactories of agricultural and other implements. Porcelain, china clay, woven goods, boots and shoes, sabots, gloves, leather, cattle, horses, wood, chestnuts, hemp, and paper are exported ; corn, wine, coal, raw materials, and various manufactured articles are imported. 'There are in Haute-Vienne 234 miles of railway, and 284 of national and 3191 of other roads. This department, with that of Corréze, forms the diocesc of Limoges ; it belongs to the district of the Limoges court of appeal and army corps, has its academy at Poitiers, and is divided for purposes of administration into 4 arrondissements (Limoges, population of town 63,707 in 1886; Bellac, 4015; Rochechouart, 1829; and St Yrieix, 3556), 27 cantons, and 203 communes. The population in 1881 was 349,332 and in 1886 363,182, an increase of 117,982 since 1801. Limoges is the chef- lieu. St Yrieix has an early Gothic church of the 12th century, kaolin mines, porcelain manufactories, and tan-yards. St Junien (5454) has an interesting bridge and houses of the 13th century, and numerous manufactories of gloves, paper, porcelain, sabots, and woven goods. St Léonard (3427), the birthplace of Gay-Lussac, possesses a remarkable church of the 11th and 12th centuries, tan- yards, paper-mills, and copper-works. At Chalus (1675) Richard Cceur de Lion died.

VIERZON, a town of France, in the department of Cher, 124 miles by rail to the south of Paris. The Cher and the Yévre unite at the foot of the hill on which lie the communes of Vierzon-Ville (population 10,514 in 1886) and Vierzon-Village (6995); Vierzon-Bourgneuf (1498) is on the left bank of the Cher. The three com. munes together have a population of 19,007. Vierzon has several large manufactories for the production of agri-

cultural machines, also foundries, porcelain and earthen- ware works, and glass-works, A very fine technical school has just been opened.

VIETA, or Vite, FRANcotIs, SEIGNEUR DE LA BIGOTIERE (1540-1603), more generally known as Franciscus VIETA, mathematician, was born in 1540 at Fontenay-le-Comte, in Poitou. According to F. Ritter's investigations,! Vieta was brought up as a Catholic, and died in the same creed ; but there can be no doubt that he belonged to the Hugue- nots for several years. On the completion of his studies in law at Poitiers Vieta began his career as an advocate in his native town. 'This he left about 1567, and some- what later we find him at Rennes as a councillor of the parlement of Brittany. The religious troubles drove him thence, and Rohan, the well-known chief of the Huguenots, took him under his special protection. He recommended him in 1580 as a "maitre des requétes" (master of requests) ; and Henry of Navarre, at the instance of Rohan, addressed two letters to Henry III. of France on 3d March and 26th April 1585, to obtain Vieta's restoration to his former office, but without result. After the accession of Henry of Navarre to the throne of France Vieta filled in 1589 the position of councillor of the parlement at Tours. He afterwards became a royal privy councillor, and re- mained so till his death, which took place suddenly at Paris in February 1603, but in what manner we do not know ; Anderson, the editor of his scientific remains, speaks only of a "praeceps et immaturum autoris fatum."

We know of one important service rendered by Vieta as a royal officer. While at Tours he discovered the key to a Spanish cipher, consisting of more than 500 characters, and thenceforward all the dispatches in that language which fell into the hands of the French could be easily read. His fame now rests, however, entirely upon his achievements in

mathematics. Being a man of wealth, he printed at his own expense the numerous papers which he wrote on various branches of this science, and communicated them to scholars in almost every country of Europe. An evidence of the good use he made of his means, as well as of the kindliness of his character, is furnished by the faet that he entertained as a guest for a whole month a scientific adversary, Adriaan van Roomen, and then paid the expenses of his journey home. Vieta's writings thus became very quickly known ; but, when Franciscus van Schooten issued a general edition of his works in 1646, he failed to make a eomplete collection, although probably nothing of very great value has perished.

_ The form of Vieta's writings is what we may call their weak side. He indulged freely in flourishes ; and in devising technical terms derived from the Greek he seems to have aimed at making them as unintelligible as possible. None of them, in point of fact, has held its ground, and even his proposal to denote unknown quantities by the vowels A, E, I, 0, U, Y, —the consonants IBS ©; ice, being reserved for general known quantities, has not been taken up. In this denotation he followed, perhaps, some older contemporaries, as Ramus, who designated the points in geometrical figures by vowels, making use of consonants, R, s, T, &c., only when those were exhausted. Vieta is wont to be called the father of modern algebra. This does not mean, what is often alleged, that nobody before him had ever thought of choosing symbols different from numerals, such as the letters of the alphabet, to denote the quan- tities of arithmetic, but that he made a general custom of what until his time had been only an exceptional attempt. All that is wanting in his writings, especially in his Lsagoge in artem analyticam (1591), in order to make them look like a modern school algebra, is merely the sign of equality,—a want which is the more striking because Robert Recorde had made use of our present symbol for this purpose since 1557 and Xylander had employed vertical parallel lines since 157 oe On the other hand, Vieta was well skilled in most modern artifices, aiming at a simplification of equations by the sub- stitution of new quantities having a certain connexion with the primitive unknown quantities. Another of his works, Recensio canonica effectionum geometricarum, bears a stamp not less modern being what we now call an algebraic geometry,—in other words, a collection of precepts how to construct algebraic expressions with the

use of rule and compass only. While these writings were generally intelligible, and therefore of the greatest didactic import- ance, the principle of homogencity, first enunciated by Vieta, was so far in advance of his times that most readers seem to have passed it over without adverting to its value. That principle had been made use of by the Greek authors of the elassic age; but of later

1 Bolletino Boncompagni, vol. i. p. 227, note 1, Rome, 1868.

mathematicians only Hero, Diophantus, &c., ventured to regard lines and surfaces as mere numbers that could be joined to give a new number, their sum. It may be that the study of sueh sums, which he found in the works of Diophantus, prompted him to lay it down as a principle that quantities occurring in an equation ought to be homogeneous, all of them lines, or surfaces, or solids, or supersolids,—an equation between niere numbers being inad- missible. During the three centuries that have elapsed between Vieta's days and our own several changes of opinion have taken place on this subject, till the principle has at last proved so far victori- ous that modern mathematicians like to make homogeneous sucli equations as are not so from the beginning, in order to get values of asymmetrical shape. Vieta himself, of course, did not see so far as that ; nevertheless the merit cannot be denied him of having indirectly suggested the thought. Nor are his writings lacking in actual inventions. He conceived methods for the general resolution of equations of the second, third, and fourth degrees different from those of Ferro and Ferrari, with which, however, it is difficult to believe him to have been unacquainted. He devised an approxi- mate numerical solution of equations of the second and third degrees, wherein Leonardo of Pisa must have preceded him, but by a method every vestigc of which is completely lost. He knew the connexion existing between the positive roots of an equation (which, by the way, were alonc thought of as roots) and the coefficients of the different powers of the unknown quantity. He found out the formula for deriving the sine of a multiple angle, knowing that of the simple angle with due regard to the periodicity of sines. This formula must have been known to Vieta in 1593. In that year Adriaan van

Roomen gave out as a problem to all mathema- ticians an equation of the 45th degree, which, being recognized by Vieta as depending on the equation between sin ¢ and sin £ was resolved by him at once, all the twenty-three positive roots of which the said equation was capable being given at the same time. Such was the first encounter of the two scholars. A second took place when Vieta pointed to Apollonius's problem of taction as not yet being mastered, and Adriaan van Roomen gave a solution by the hyperbola. Vieta, however, did not accept it, as there existed a solution by means of the rule and the compass only, which he published himself in his Apollonius Gallus (1600). In this paper

ieta made use of the centre of similitude of two circles. Lastly, he gave an infinite product for the number 7 (see SQUARING THE CIRCLE, vol. xxii. p. 434).

Vieta's collected works were issued under the title of Opera Mathematica by F. van Schooten at Leyden in 1646. CM. CA

VIGEVANO, a town of Italy, in the province of Pavia, on the right bank of the Ticino, 24 miles south-west from Milan and about the same distance north-west from Pavia. It is a medieval walled town, with an arcaded market- place, a cathedral, and a castle of the Sforza family, dating from the 14th century and adorned with a loggia by Bramante. It is a place of some importance in the silk trade, and also produces excellent macaroni. The popu- lation in 1881 was 14,794 (commune, 20,096).

VIGIL, in its ecclesiastical sense, means the day preceding a festival, In the liturgy of the Roman Catholic Church there are special offices for the vigils of the greater feasts, and the vigil is regarded as more or less of a fast day. In the early church there was a widespread practice of celebrating festivals, of martyrs especially, by actual vigils (vgilie or pernoctationes, mavvuxides) in the churches; but this led to such serious evils that the custom had to be discouraged, and now sur- vives, if at all, only in rare, unauthorized, and considerably disguised forms. In some of the stricter religious orders the daily office is recited at various hours of the night as well as during the day; but, if these nocturnal services are spoken of as vigils, it is only in the popular meaning of that word.

VIGILANTIUS, presbyter, celebrated as the author of a work, no longer extant, against superstitious practices, which called forth one of the most violent and scurrilous of Jerome's polemical treatises, was born about 370 at Calagurris in Aquitania (the modern Saint Bertrand de Comminges in the department of Haute-Garonne), where his father kept a "statio" or inn on the great Roman road from Aquitania to Spain. While still a youth his talent became known to Sulpicius Severus, who had estates in that neighbourhood, and in 395 Sulpicius, who probably

baptized him, sent him with letters to Paulinus of Nola, where he met with a friendly reception. On his return to

Severus in Gaul he was ordained ; and, having soon after-

wards inherited means through the death of his father, he set out for Palestine, where he was received with great respect by Jerome at Bethlehem. The stay of Vigilantius lasted for some time ; but, as was almost inevitable, he was dragged into the dispute then raging about Origen, in which he did not see fit wholly to adopt Jerome's attitude. On his return to the West he was the bearer of a letter from Jerome to Paulinus, and at various places where he stopped on the way he appears to have expressed himself about Jerome in a manner that when reported gave great

offence to that father, and provoked him to write a reply

(Zp. 61). Vigilantius now settled for some time in Gaul, and is said by one authority (Gennadius) to have after- wards held a charge in the diocese of Barcelona, About 403, some years after his return from the East, Vigilantius wrote his celebrated work against superstitious practices, in which he argued against relic worship, as also against the vigils in the basilicas of the martyrs, then so common,

the sending of alms to Jerusalem, and the attribution of

special virtue to the unmarried state, especially in the case of the clergy. All that is known of this work is through Jerome's treatise Contra Vigilantium, or, as that con- troversialist would seem to prefer saying,

‘Contra Dormi- tantium.” Notwithstanding Jerome’s exceedingly un- favourable opinion, there is no reason to believe that the tract of Vigilantius was exceptionally illiterate, or that the views it advocated were different from those now held on the subjects with which it deals by most educated men outside the Roman Catholic Church, or even by many within its pale. Soon, however, the great influence of Jerome in the Western Church caused its leaders to espouse all his quarrels, and Vigilantius gradually came to be ranked in popular opinion among heretics. The year of his death is unknown.

VIGILIUS, pope from 537 to 555, succeeded Silverius and was followed by Pelagius I. He was ordained by order of Belisarius while SmLvERIUS (q.v.) was still alive ; his elevation was due to Theodora, who, by an appeal at once to his ambition and, it is said, to his covetousness, had induced him to promise to disallow the council of Chalcedon, in connexion with the “three chapters” con- troversy (see vol. xiii, p. 796). When, however, the time came for the fulfilment of his bargain, Vigilius de- clined to give his assent to the condemnation of that council involved in the imperial edict against the three chapters, and for this act of disobedience he was per- emptorily summoned to Constantinople, which he reached in 547. Shortly after his arrival there he issued a docu- ment known to history as his Judicatum (548), in which he condemned indeed the three chapters, but expressly disavowed any intentions thereby to disparage the council of Chalcedon. After a good deal of trimming (for he desired to stand well with his own clergy, who were strongly orthodox, as well as with the court) he prepared another document, the Constitutum ad I mperatorem, which Was laid before the so-called fifth “ cecumenical ” council in 593, and led to his condemnation by the heterodox majority of that body, some say, even to his banishment. Ulti- mately, however, he was induced to assent to and confirm the decrees of the council, and was allowed after an enforced absence of seven years to set out for Rome. He died, however, before he reached his destination, most probably in the beginning of 555.

VIGNA, Prerro pE LA, or PeTRus DE VINEA (c. 1190- 1249), the emperor Frederick II.’s minister, was born at Capua probably about 1190.

From his own letters he Would seem to have been of obscure parentage, though one

of his correspondents refers to his nobilitas. He was per- haps educated at Bologna; but he certainly studied in a strange city and not at his own expense, though it is not till after his death that we find the story which makes him beg his bread in the streets. His name does not appear affixed to any judicial act before J uly 1225, at which time he was judex magne curiz ; and this continued to be his official title till April 1247, when his style was changed for that of protonotary and logothete. In 1232 he was at Rome on a mission to Gregory IX. , and in 1234-35 he was in England negotiating the marriage of his master with Henry IIT.'s sister Isabella, after which time he seems to have kept up a friendly communication with the king, and on one occasion even begs to be reckoned "as a son and citizen of the realm." In March 1239 he was with Frederick II. at Padua when the news came of the em- peror's excommunication, with reference to which he was ordered to address the people. In 1247 he was at the very height of his power and regarded as the emperor's alter ego. But from this height of prosperity Peter suddenly fell very early in 1249, and all kinds of stories have been invented to explain an event that puzzled his contemporaries as well as succeeding ages. He was thrown into prison and blinded, after which he was led about from place to place as a public example, "the master-councillor of the emperor, who was lord of his law and betrayed him to the pope." His death must have taken place about April 1249. There seems to be some truth in the tale that makes him die a suicide's death at Pisa. It is among the suicides that Dante meets his shade in hell.

Pietro. de la Vigna's writings consist of (1) Letters and (2) a Latin poem on the twelve months of the ycar. A Latin satire dirccted against the Dominicans and Franciscans is also perhaps his. Besides these, many poems in the common speech are attributed to him. It is difficult to pronounce a definite opilion on his relation to the new religion or new church which it was perhaps the ambition of Frederick's most

enthusiastic adherents to inaugurate. The Letters were first printed at Basel in 1566. Sce Huillard-Bréholles, Vie et Correspondance de P. de la Vigne, Paris, 1864.

VIGNOLA. See Baroccnio.

VIGNY, Aurrep px (1799-1863), a French poet of exceptionally refined and original faculty, which was kept from voluminous production by a fastidiousness perhaps verging on affectation, was born at Loches (Indre-et-Loire) on 27th March 1799. Sainte-Beuve, in the rather iL natured essay which he devoted to Vigny after his death, expresses a doubt whether the title of count which the poet bore was very well authenticated, and hints that no very ancient proofs of the nobility of the family were forthcoming ; but it is certain that in the 18th century persons of the name occupied positions which were not open to any but men of noble birth. For generations the ancestors of Alfred de Vigny had been soldiers, and he himself joined the army at the age of sixteen. But the Revolutionary and Napoleonic wars were over, and after twelve years of life in barracks he retired, preserving, however, a very high estimate of the duties and career of the soldier. While still serving he had made his mark by the publication in 1822 of a volume of poems, and in 1826 by another, together with the famous prose romance of Cing-Mars. Sainte-Beuve asserts that the poet antedated some of his most remarkable work. This may or may not be the case; he certainly did not and could not antedate the publication, and it so happens that some of his most celebrated books—Floa, Dolorida, M oise,—appeared before the work of younger members of the Romantic school whose productions strongly resemble these poems. It is quite certain that the other Alfred—Alfred de Musset— felt the influence of his elder namesake, and an impartial critic might discern no insignificant marks of the same effect in the work of Hugo himself. Even Lamartine, XXIV. — 29

?

226

considerably Vigny's elder and his predecessor in poetry, seems rather to have been guided by Vigny than Vigny by him. No one can read Dolorida

or Le Cor without seeing that the author had little to learn from any of his French contemporaries and much to teach them. At the same time Vigny, either from indolence, or from fastidious- ness, or from being a "barren rascal," or from fear of losing the high position which he had gained, hardly attempted anything more in poetry proper during the more than thirty years of his life, and his entire poems, including posthumous fragments, form but one very small pocket volume. Cngq-Mars, which at least equalled the poems in popularity, will hardly stand the judgment of posterity so well. It had in its favour the support of the Royalist party, the immense vogue of the novels of Walter Scott, on which it was evidently modelled, the advantages of an exquisite style, and the taste of the day for the romance as opposed to the novel of analysis. It therefore gained a great name both in France and abroad. But any one who has-read it critically must acknowledge it to be disappointing. The action is said to be dramatic; if it be so, it can only be said that this proves very con- clusively that the action of drama and the action of the novel are two quite different things. To the reader who knows Scott or Dumas the story is singularly uninterest- ing (far less interesting than as told in history); the characters want life; and the book generally stagnates. Alfred de Vigny's admirable French and the quasi-poetical beauty of detached passages alone save it from positive dulness. Its author, though always as a kind of outsider (the phrase constantly applied to him in French literary essays and histories being that he shut himself up in a "tour Wivoire"), attached himself more or less to the Romantic movement of 1830 and the years immediately preceding and following it, and was stimulated by this movement both to drama and to novel-writing. In the year before the revolution of July he produced at the Théatre Francais a translation or rather paraphrase of Othello, and an original piece, Maréchale d'Ancre. In 1832 he published the curious book Stello, and in 1835 he brought out his drama of Chatterton, which shocked French taste even after five years of Romantic education, by the hero's suicide, but had a considerable success. The same year saw the publication of Servitude et Grandeur Militaires, a singular collection of sketches rather than a connected work, in which Vigny's military experience, his idea of the soldier's duties, and his rather poetical views of history were all worked in. The subjects of Chatterton and Othello naturally suggest a certain familiarity with English, and in fact Alfred de Vigny knew English well, lived in England

for some time, and married an English- woman. His father-in-law was, according to French gossip, SO conspicuous an example of insular eccentricity that he never could remember his son-in-law's name or anything about him, except that he was a poet, by which fact and the kindness of casual Frenchmen who went through the list of the chief living poets of their country he was some- times able to discover his daughter's husband's designation. In 1842 Alfred de Vigny was elected to the Academy. whose meetings he frequented with an assiduity rather Surprising In a man of such retired habits and (still accord- ing to Sainte-Beuve) rather troublesome to his colleagues But he produced nothing save a few scraps ; and beyond the work already enumerated, little has to be added except his Journal d'un Poéte and the poems called Les Destinées edited, with a few fragments, by M. Louis Ratisbonne im. mediately after his death. Among his dramatic work however, should be mentioned Quitte pour la Peur and an adaptation of the Merchant of Venice called Shylock. Les Destinées excited no great admiration in France, but they

and for the most part, as has been said, spent in retirement.

deal less.

VIG—VIL

contain some exceedingly beautiful poetry of an austere kind, such as the magnificent speech of Nature in "La Maison du Berger" and the remarkable poem entitled

"Ta Colére de Samson." Vigny died at Paris on 17th

September 1863.

The later life of Alfred de Vigny was almost wholly uneventful, His

reputation, however, is perfectly secure. It may, and probably

will, rest only on his small volume of poems, though it will not be lessened, as far as qualified literary criticism is concerned, should

the reader proceed to the rest of the work. The whole of his non- dramatic verse does not amount to 5000 lines; it may be a good But the range of subject is comparatively wide, and ex- traordinary felicity of execution, not merely in language, but in thought, is evident throughout. Vigny, as may be seen in the speech of Nature referred to above, had the secret,—very uncommon

with French poets,—of attaining solemnity without grandiosity,

by means of an almost classical precision and gravity of form, The defect of volubility, of never leaving off, which mars to some extent his great contemporary Hugo, is never present in him, and he is equally free from the looscness and disorders of form which are sometimes blemishes in Musset, and from the effeminacy of Lamartine, while once more his nobility of thought and plentiful- ness of matter save him from the reproach which has been thought to rest on the technically perfect work of Théophile Gautier. The dramatic work is, perhaps, less likely to interest English than French readers, the local colour of Chatterton being entirely false, the sentiment conventional in the extreme, and the real pathos of the story exchanged for a commonplace devotion on the poet's part to his host's wife. In the same way, the finest passages of Othello simply disappear in Vigny's version. In his remaining works the defect of skill in managing the plot and characters of prose fiction, which has been noticed in Cing-Mars, reappears, together (in the case of the Journal d'un Poéte and elsewhere) with signs of the fastidious and slightly affected temper which was Vigny's chief fault asaman. In his poems proper none of these faults appear, and he is seen wholly at his best. It should be said that of his post- humous work not a little had previously appeared piecemeal in the Revue des Deux Mondes, to which he was an occasional contributor. The prettiest of the complete editions of his works (of which there are several) is to be found in what is called the Petite Bibliotheque Charpentier. (G. SA.)

VIGO, a town of Spain, in the province of Pontevedra, 486 miles by rail north-west from Madrid,is picturesquely situated on the side of a hill (Castelo) which slopes down to the southern shore of the Ria de Vigo. The Ria is the most southerly of the great fjords by which the western coast of

Galicia is so deeply indented ; Bayona at its mouth is 13 miles from the town of Vigo and Puente Sampayo at its head a somewhat shorter distance. Some of the former walls still remain, and there are two old castles on the hill behind the town; the older streets retain their narrow, steep, and tortuous aspect. There are some fisheries at Vigo ; but the manufactures of the place are Insignificant. Its activity is enttrely due to its magnificent anchorage ; it is a regular port of call for several inter- national lines of steamers, and has a very important trade ; the chief imports are cotton and woollen fabrics, sugar, hides, &c., while cattle, sardines, grain, and eggs are ex- ported. The population within the municipal limits in 1877 was 13,416.

Vigo, the ancient Oda (Ptolemy) or Vicus Spacorum, has in modern times been more than once attacked by the English,—by Drake in 1585 and 1589, and by Cobham in 1719. The Plate fleet was destroyed by the duke of Ormond and admirals Rooke and Stanhope in Vigo Bay on 22d October 1702.

_ VILKOMIR, or WILKOMIERZ, a district-town of Russia, in the government of Kovno, 44 miles north-east of the capital of the province, is one of the oldest cities in that part of western Russia. Founded as early as 1025, it suffered much from the attacks of the Teutonic Knights, . as well as from internal wars. It flourished in the 16th century under " Magdeburg law," but soon came upon ad- verse times again during the wars between Poland, Russia, and Sweden. It was annexed to Russia in 1796. Tie Position on the principal highway from St Petersburg to Kovno gave it some trade in flax, but this is now declining. Its population increased from 7300 in 1860 to 16,240 in

1885. Vilkomir has a fine church dating from the 14th

century.

VILLA DE CONTAS, a town of Brazil, in the province of Bahia, 230 miles south-west from the city of Bahia, on the Brumado (Contas-Pequeno), a head-stream of the Rio de Contas (Jussiape), which rises on

the east slope of the neighbouring Serra das Almas, and flows thence to the coast at Barra do Rio Contas. This town, which has a mixed population (1880) of 10,200 whites, Negroes, half- castes, and Indians, lies in a fertile district producing much cotton, sugar, and tobacco. It was founded in 1715 by some enterprising "' Paulistas," who were attracted to the district by the auriferous sands washed down by the head- streams of the Jussiape. It received the title of a town in 1724, and soon afterwards most of the inhabitants re- moved to the present more convenient site five miles lower down the Brumado, on the high road between Bahia and Goyaz. Villa de Contas is the capital of the department of the same name, which was detached in 1833 from the old: department of Jacobina.}

VILLA DO RIO PARDO, a town of Brazil, in the province of Rio Grande do Sul, on the left bank of the Jacuhy at its confluence with the Pardo, about 80 miles due west from Porto Alegre, in 30° S. lat. and 52° W. long. The Jacuhy, chief affluent of the coast lagoon Dos Patos, is navigable by small steamers to this place, which is one of the most flourishing towns in the province, with a total population (1880) of 11,500, including 6000 whites, 4500 Negroes and coloured, and about 1000 civilized Indians. It had its origin in a fort built by the Portuguese at this point in 1751, but was not raised to the rank of a town till1809. There is a large parish church founded in 1769, besides several other churches and three schools, but no note- worthy buildings. The district is fertile and well-watered, and grows an excellent flax, which supplies a number of local hand-looms. A considerable export trade is carried on by the river craft, which here ship maté (Paraguay tea), jerked meat, linen, and other products for the coast towns.

VILLANI, Giovanni (c. 1275-1348), Italian chronicler, was the son of Villano di Stoldo, and was born at Florence in the second half of the 13th century; the precise year is unknown. He was of good burgher extraction, and, following the traditions of his family, applied himself to commerce. During the early years of the 14th century he travelled in Italy, France, and the Netherlands, seeing Men and things with the sagacity alike of the man of business and of the historian. Before leaving Florence, or rather in the interval between one journey and another, he had at least taken some part in that troubled period of civil contentions which Dino

Compagni has described, and which swept Dante Alighieri into banishment. In 1301 Villani saw Charles of Valois ruining his country under the false name of peacemaker, and was witness of all the misery which immediately followed.2, Somewhat later he left Italy, and in September 1304 he visited Flanders. It is not well ascertained when he returned to his native city. He was certainly living there shortly after the emperor Henry VII. had come to Italy in 1312, and prob- ably he had been there for some time before. While still continuing to occupy himself with commerce, he now began to take a prominent part in public affairs. In 1316 and 1317 he was one of the priors, and shared in the crafty tactics whereby Pisa and Lucca were induced to conclude @ peace with Florence, to which they were previously

averse.® In 1317 he also had charge of the mint, and a sli (: Ritter, and with him nearly all other geographers, wrongly make

this place still the capital of Jacobina, although Millet de Saint-Adolphe (ii, Pp. 404) distinctly makes the statement given in the text. : See Villani, Chronicle, bk. viii. ch. 37, 38. Chron., bk. ix. ch. 80.

during his administration of this office he collected its earlier records and had a register made of all the coins struck in Florence up to his day. In 1321 he was again chosen prior; and, the Florentines having just then under- taken the rebuilding of the city walls, he and some other citizens were deputed to look after the work. They were afterwards accused of having diverted the public money to private ends; but Villani clearly established his innocence. He was next sent with the army against Castruccio Castracane, lord of Lucca, and was present at its defeat at Altopascio. In 1328 a terrible famine visited many provinces of Italy, including Tuscany, and Villani was appointed to guard Florence from the worst effects of that distressing period. He has left a record of what was done in a chapter of his Chronicle, which still remains a monument of the economic wisdom in which the medieval Florentines were often so greatly in advance of their age. In 1339, some time after the death of Castruccio, some rich Florentine merchants, and among them Villani, treated for the acquisition of Lucca by Florence for 80,000 florins,*

offering to supply the larger part of that sum out of their own private means; but the negotiations fell through, owing to the discords and jealousies then existing in the Govern- ment (Chron., x. 143). The following year Villani super- intended the making of Andrea Pisano's bronze doors of the baptistery (see vol. xix. p. 122). In the same year he watched over the raising of the campanile of the Badia, erected by Cardinal Giovanni Orsini (Chron., x. 177). In 1341 the acquisition of Lucca was again under treaty, this time with Martino della Scala, for 250,000 florins. Villani was sent with others as a hostage to Ferrara, where he remained for some months (xi. 130, 133, 135). He was present in Florence during the unhappy period that elapsed between the entry of the duke of Athens and his expulsion by the Florentines (xii. 1, 2, 8, 15,16). Involved through no fault of his own in the failure of the commercial com- pany of the Bonaccorsi, which in its turn had been drawn into the failure of the company of the Bardi (1345), Villani towards the end of his life suffered much privation and for some time was kept in prison.2 In 1348 he fell a victim to the plague described by Boccaccio.

The idea of writing the Chroniele was suggested to Villani under the following circumstances. "In the year of Christ 1300 Pope Boniface VIII. made in hononr of Christ's nativity a special and great indulgence. And I, finding myself in that blessed pilgrim- age in the holy city of Rome, seeing her great and ancient remains, and reading the histories and great deeds of the Romans as written by Virgil, Sallust, Lucan, Livy, Valerius, Paulus Orosins, and other masters of history who wrote the exploits and decds, both great and small, of the Romans and also of strangers in the whole world… considering that our city of Florence, the daughter and offspring of Rome, is on the increase and destincd to do great things, as Rome is in her decline, it appeared to me fitting to set down in this volume and new chronicle all the facts and beginnings of the city of Florence, in as far as it has been possible to me to collect and discover them, and to follow the doings of the Florentincs at length . . . and so in the year 1300, on my return from Rome, I began to compile this book, in honour of God and of the blessed John, and in praise of our city of Florence."® Villani's work, written in Italian, makes its appearance, so to say, unexpectedly in the historical literature of Italy, just as the history of Florence, the moment it emerges from the humble and uncertain origin assigned to it by legend,

rises suddenly into a rich and powerful life of thought and action. Nothing but scanty and partly legendary records had preceded Villani's work, which rests in part on them. The Gesta Florentinorum of Sanzanome, starting from these vague origins, begins to be more definite about 1125, at the time of the union of Fiesole with Florence. The Chronica de Origine Civitatis seems to be a compilation, made by various hands and at various times, in which the different legends regarding the city's origin have been gradually collected. The Annales Florentint Primt (1110-1173) and the Annales Florentini Seeundi (1107-1247),

2 (Clondiing 10's, 3% Or PAL whee

5 On Villani's imprisonment, see Massai's biography of Villani, mentioned below.

§ Chron., bk. viii. ch. 36.

together with a list of the consuls and podestas from 1197 to 1267, and another chronicle, formerly attributed, but apparently without good reason, to Brunetto Latini, complete the series of ancient Florentine records. To these must, however, be added a certain quantity of facts which were to be found in various manu- scripts, being used and quoted by the old Florentine and Tuscan writers under the general name of Gesta Florentinorum. Another work which used to be reckoned among the sources of Villani is the Chronicle of the Malespini; but very grave doubts are now entertained as to its authenticity, and many hold that at best it is merely a remodelling, posterior to Villani's time, of old records unknown to us, from which several chroniclers may have drawn, either without citing them at all or only doing so in a vague manner. The Cronaca Fiorentina of Villani goes back to Biblical times and comes down to 1846. The wide universality of the narrative, especially in the times near Villani's own, while it bears witness to the author's extensive travels and to the compre- hensiveness of his mind, makes one also feel that the book was inspired within the walls of the universal city. Whereas Dino Compagni's Chronicle is confined within definite limits of time and place, this of Villani is a general chronicle extending over the whole of

Europe. Dino Compagni feels and lives in the facts of his history ; Villani looks at them and relates them calmly and fairly, with a serenity which makes him seem an outsider, even when he is mixed up in them and is himself their originator. While very important for Italian history in the 14th century, this work is the cornerstone of the early medieval history of Florence. Of contemporary events Villani has a very exact knowledge. Having been a sharer in the public affairs, and in the intellectual and economic life, of his native city, at a time when in both it had no rival in Europe, he depicts what he saw with the vividness natural to a clear mind accustomed to business and to the observa- tion of mankind. He was Guelph, but without passion ; and his book is much more taken up with an inquiry into what is useful and true than with party considerations. He is really a chronicler, not an historian, and has but little method in his narrative, often reporting the things which occurred long ago and far off just as he heard them and without criticism. Every now and then he falls into some inaccuracy ; but such defects as he has are largely com- pensated for by his valuable qualities. He was for half a century eyewitness of his history, and provides abundant information on the constitution of Florence, its customs, industries, commerce, and arts ; and among the chroniclers throughout Europe he is perhaps unequalled for the value of the statistical data he has preserved. As a writer Villani is clear and acute ; and, though his prose has not the force and colouring of Compagni, it has the advantage of greater simplicity, so that taking his work as a whole he may be regarded as the greatest chronicler who has written in Italian. The many difficulties connected with the publication of this most important text have hitherto prevented the preparation of a perfect edition. The Italian Historical Institute, lately founded, has, however, undertaken to reprint on a wider scheme the great collec- tion of Muratori.

Villani's Chronicle was continued by two other writers of the same name. (1) Matrzo Vituani, his brother, of whom nothing is known save that he was twice married, and that he died of the plague in 1363, continued it down to the year of his death. Matteo's work, though inferior to Giovanni's, is nevertheless very valuable. A more prolix writer than his brother and a less acute observer, Matteo is well informed in his facts, and for the years of which he writes is one of the most important sources

of Italian history. (2) Frurppo VILLANI, the son of Matteo flourished in the end of the 14th and the beginning of the 15th century. In his continuation, though showing greater literary ability, he is very inferior as an historian to his predecessors. His most valuable work was a collection of lives of illustrious Florentines. Twice, in 1401 and 1404, he was chosen to explain in public the Die a ae in the Florentine "studio." The year of his death is unknown.

On Giovanni Villani, as well as on Matteo and Filippo, the followin

may be consulted i—Argelati, Bibl. Mediol. (1745); U. Tenheh iy A a of Italy (1883) ; Bellarmin-Labbé, Script. eccl. (1728); Brunet, Manuel (1864) ; Classict Ital. (1802); Fabricius, Bibl. Med. Z», (1735); Gamba, Testi Ital. (1828); Gervinus, Hist. Schrift. (1833); Giovanni e Mira (Ant. di), in Giorn. di Scienze. Xxxi; Graesse, Trésor (1867) ; Hartwig (Otto), 'Giovanni Villani und die Leg: genda di Messer Gianni di Procida," in Sybel, Histor. Zeitschr. (1871); Id

Quellen und Forschungen zur altesten Geschichte der Stadt Florenz (1870); V. Le Clerc, in ist. Litt. France (1862); Lorenz, Deutsch. Geschichtsquellen (1870); Massai (Pietro), in Uom. Ill. Toscani (1771); Melzi, Anon. Ital. (1852); Michaud, Bibl. des Crotsades (1829) ; Milanesi (Gaet.), "' Documenti riguardanti G. Villani e il Palazzo degli Alessi in Siena," in Arch. Stor. Ital. (1856); Moreni, Bibi. Toscana (1805); Muratori, Rer. Ital. Script. ; Negri, Scritt. Fiorent. (1722); Rev. de Paris (1832); and Tiraboschi, Stor. Lett. Ital. (1807). Uz. B.) ;

VILLARS, Cravpr Lovrs HEctTor, 1734), French general, was born at Moulins on 8th May 1653. After spending some time at the college of Juilly he became a page of the grand éeurie, and then entered the army as a volunteer. He first saw service in Holland

DUKE oF (iG53-

under Louis XIV. and later under Condé, Turenne, and Luxembourg in Germany, where in 1674 he obtained the command of a troop of horse.

Hostilities being brought to a close by the peace of Nimeguen in 1678, he was sent as ambassador to the courts of Vienna and Munich, in which capacity he greatly distinguished himself. In 1702 he received the command of an army in order to succour the elector of Bavaria, who had espoused the cause of France in the War of Succession. On 14th October he routed at Friedlingen Louis of Baden, the Austrian com- mander. In the beginning of the following year he captured Kehl and effected a junction with the army of the elector. He then conceived the daring project of marching on Vienna. The united forces defeated the Austrians under Count Styrum at Hochstidt, but his skilfully-conceived project, which had every prospect of success owing to the scattered state of the Austrian forces, had to be abandoned on account of the pusillanimous con- duct of the elector. Villars was next sent to subdue the Camisards, the Protestants of the Cevennes, a task which he completed by a judicious combination of military skill and clemency. In 1705 the north-eastern frontier, which was threatened by Marlborough, was defended by Villars with such skill and ability that Marlborough was com- pletely baffled in his attempts to penetrate into France, and even compelled to retreat. Villars took advantage of this opportunity to march into Alsace, where he captured several towns along with great quantities of war materials belonging to Marlborough and Prince Eugene. These advantages were, however, counterbalanced by Villeroy's defeat at Ramillies. After two short campaigns in 1707-8 Villars was sent (in 1709) to Flanders to oppose Marl- borough and Prince Eugene. He was, however, defeated at Malplaquet and severely wounded. The weak state of his health, the consequence of his wound, prevented him during the next two years from engaging in active service. In 1712 Villars, at the head of an army raised with great difficulty by the French, defeated the Austrians under Albemarle in a brilliant action at Denain, compelled Prince Eugene to raise the siege of Landrecies, and took several fortresses and towns. This brilliant campaign raised again the almost desperate fortunes of France and led to the treaty of Utrecht (1713) and the peace of Rastadt (1714). For many years after this Villars exerted great influence at court, until he was finally supplanted by Fleury. In 1733 the war with Austria again broke out, and in the following year Villars, although over eighty years of age, was sent to take command in Italy. But after some suc- cesses he demanded his recall, either in consequence of his increasing infirmities

or of disgust at the conduct of his ally, the king of Sardinia; he died on his way back to France, at Turin, on 17th June 1734. VILLEFRANCHE DE ROUERGUE, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Aveyron, is situated 390 miles south of Paris by the railway to Toulouse, on the right bank of the Aveyron. One of the three bridges that cross the river belongs to the 13th century, and the narrow, winding streets are full of gabled houses of the 13th and 14th centuries. The church of Notre Dame (1260-1581) has a nave and two fine rose windows of the 14th and 15th centuries. The steeple is represented by an unfinished square tower (190 feet). In the interior the stone pulpit, the rich woodwork of the choir, and tapestry of the 16th century are worthy of notice. Some parts of the Carthusian monastery, now used as a hospital, belong to the 15th and 16th centuries. The little cloister is a masterpicce of the best period of Gothic ; the fine pulpit of the refectory and the Gothic architecture of some of the rooms have been preserved. Rich quarries of phosphates are worked near Villefranche.

The population in 1881 was 8433 (commune 10,366), and in 1886 8092 (commune 9836).

Villefranche, founded about 1252, owes its name to the numerous immunities granted by Alphonse of Poitiers, count of Toulouse. In 1348 it was so flourishing that sumptuary laws were passed. The town fell into the hands of the Black Prince, but was the first place in Guienne to rise against the English. Charles V. granted it new privileges, which were taken away by Louis XI. In 1588 the inhabitants repulsed the League, and afterwards murdered a governor sent by Henry IV. The town was ravaged by the plague in 1463, 1558, and 1628. A revolt excited by the exactions of the intendants was cruelly repressed in 1648. Villefranche was the birthplace of Marshal de Belle-Isle.

VILLEFRANCHE-SUR-SAONE, a commercial and manufacturing town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondisse- ment in the department of Rhone, is situated on the Morgon, near its junction with the Sadne,. 18 miles by rail nearly north of Lyons. The chief industrial establishments are factories of coarse woven goods, cotton, fustian, " molle- tons," prints,

and blankets, tan-yards, puddling-works, spinning-mills, distilleries, foundries, and a saw-mill. The wines of Beaujolais, hemp, cloth, linen, cottons, drapery goods, and cattle are the principal articles of trade. An old Renaissance house is used as the town-hall. The church of Notre Dame des Marais, begun at the end of the 14th and finished in the 16th century, has a tower and spire (rebuilt in 1862), standing to the right of the fagade (15th century), in which are carved wooden doors. Villefranche is the seat of the primary normal school of the department. The popu- lation, 12,032 (commune 13,074) in 1881, was 12,157 (commune 12,518) in 1886.

The town grew up near a tower from which the lords of Beaujeu enforced their rights of toll on the Burgundy and Lyons road. The name arose out of privileges granted by Guichard I. of Beaujeu, which were confirmed and extended by his successors. Under the dukes of Burgundy Villefranche was the capital of Beaujolais, and retained some of its privileges when united to France. Baron des Adrets sacked the town and demolished the ramparts in 1562. A well-known academy was founded here in 1695.

VILLEHARDOUIN, Grorrroy DE (c. 1160-c. 1213), the first vernacular historian of France, and perhaps of modern Europe, who possesses literary merit is rather supposed than known to have been born at the chdteau from which he took his name, near Troyes in Champagne, about the year 1160. Not merely his literary and histori- cal importance, but almost all that is known about him comes from his chronicle of the fifth crusade, or Conquéte de Constantinople. Nothing is positively known of his ancestry, for the supposition (originating with Du Cange) that a certain William, marshal of Champagne between 1163 and 1179, was his father appears to be erroneous. Villehardouin himself, however, undoubtedly held this dignity, and certain minute and perhaps not very trust- worthy indications, chiefly of an heraldic character, have led his most recent biographers to lay it down that he was not born earlier than 1150 or later than 1164. He Introduces himself to us with a certain abruptness, merely Specifying his own name as one of a list of knights of Champagne who with their count, Thibault, took the cross at a tournament held at Escry-sur-Aisne at Advent 1199, the crusade in

contemplation having been started by the preaching of Fulk de Neuilly, who was com- missioned thereto by Pope Innocent III. The next year S1x deputies, two appointed by each of the three allied counts of Flanders, Champagne, and Blois, were despatched to Venice to negotiate for ships. Of these deputies Ville-

ardouin was one and Quesnes de Béthune, the poet, another. They concluded a bargain with the seigniory for transport and provisions at a fixed price. Villehardouin had hardly returned when Thibault fell sick and died ; but this did not prevent, though it somewhat delayed, the enterprise of the crusaders. The management of that enterprise, however, was a difficult one, and cost

Villehardouin another embassy into Italy to prevent if possible some of his fellow-pilgrims from breaking the treaty with the Venetians by embarking at other ports and employing other convoy. He was only in part suc- cessful, and there was great difficulty in raising the charter- money among those who had actually assembled (in 1202) at Venice, the sum collected falling far short of the stipu- lated amount. It is necessary to remember this when the somewhat erratic and irregular character of the operations which followed is judged. The defence that the crusaders were bound to pay their passage-money to the Holy Land in one form or other to the Venetians is perhaps a weak one in any case for the attack on two Christian cities, Zara and Constantinople; it becomes weaker still when it is found that the expedition never went or attempted to go to the Holy Land at all. But the desire to discharge obligations incurred is no doubt respectable in itself, and Villehardouin, as one of the actual negotiators of the bargain, must have felt it with peculiar strength.

The crusaders set sail at last, and Zara, which the Venetians coveted, was taken without much trouble. The question then arose whither the host should go next. Villehardouin does not tell us of any direct part taken by himself in the debates on the question of interfering or not in the disputed succession to the empire of the East,— debates in which the chief ecclesiastics present strongly protested against the diversion of the enterprise from its proper goal. It is quite clear, however, that the marshal

of Champagne, who was one of the leaders and inner counsellors of the expedition throughout, sympathized with the majority, and it is fair to point out that the tempta- tion of chivalrous adventure was probably as great as that of gain. He narrates spiritedly enough the dissensions and discussions in the winter camp of Zara and at Corfu, but is evidently much more at ease when the voyage was again resumed, and, after a fair passage round Grecce, the crusaders at last saw before them the great city of Con- stantinople which they had it in mind to attack. When the assault was decided upon, Villehardouin himself was in the fifth "battle," the leader of which was Mathieu de Montmorency. But, though his account of the siege is full of personal touches, and contains one reference to the number of witnesses whose testimony he took for a certain wonderful fact, he does not tell us anything of his own prowess, After the flight of the usurper Alexius, and when Isaac, whose claims the crusaders were defending, had been taken by the Greeks from prison and placed on the throne, Villehardouin, with Montmorency and two Venetians, formed the embassy sent to arrange terms. He was again similarly distinguished when it became necessary to remonstrate with Alexius, the blind man's son and virtual successor, on the non-keeping of the terms. Indeed Villehardouin's talents as a diplomatist seem to have been held in very high esteem, for later, when the Latin empire had become a fact, he was charged with the delicate business of mediating between the emperor Bald- win and Boniface, marquis of Montferrat, in which task he had at least partial success. He was also appointed mar- shal of " Romanie"—a term very vaguely used, but appa- rently signifying the mainland of the Balkan Peninsula, while his nephew and namesake, afterwards prince of Achaia, took a great part in the Latin conquest of Pelopon- nesus. Villehardouin himself before long received an im- portant command against the Bulgarians. He was left to maintain the siege of Adrianople when Baldwin advanced to attack the relieving force, and with Dandolo had much to do in saving the defeated crusaders from utter destruc- tion, and conducting the retreat, in which he commanded the rear.guard, and brought his troops in safety to the sea at Rodosto, and thence to the capital. As he occupied

the post of honour in this disaster, so he had that (the command of the vanguard) in the expedition which the regent Henry made shortly afterwards to revenge his brother Baldwin's defeat and capture. And, when Henry had succeeded to the crown on the announcement of Bald- win's death, it was Villehardouin who fetched home his bride Agnes of Montferrat, and shortly afterwards com- manded under him in a naval battle with the ships of Theodore Lascaris at the fortress of Cibotus. In the settlement of the Latin empire after the truce with Lascaris Villehardouin received the fief of Messinople (supposed to be Mosynopolis, a little inland from the modern Gulf of Lagos, and not far from the ancient Abdera) from Boniface of Montferrat, with the record of whose death the chronicle

abruptly closes.

In the foregoing account only those particulars which bear directly on Villehardouin himself have been detailed; but the chronicle is as far as possible from being an autobiography, and the displays of the writer's personality, numerous as they are, are quite involuntary, and consist merely in his way of handling the subject, not in the rcfcrences, as brief as his functions as chronicler will admit, to his own proceedings. The chronicle of Villehardouin is justly held to be the very best presentation we possess of the spirit of chivalry, not the designedly exalted and poetized chivalry of the romances, not the self-conscious and deliberate chivalry of the 14th century, but the unsophisticated mode of thinking and acting which brought about the crusades, stimulated the vast literary development of the 12th and 13th centuries, and sent knights-errant, principally though not wholly of French blood, to establish principalities and kingdoms throughout Europe and the nearer East. On the whole, no doubt, it is the more masculine and practical side of this enthusiastic state of mind which Ville- hardouin shows. No woman makes any but the briefest appear- ance in his pages, though in reference to this it must of course be remembered that he was certainly a man past middle life when the events occurred, and perhaps a man approaching old age when he set them down. Despite the strong and graphic touches here and there, exhibiting the impression which the beauty of sea and land, the splendour of Constantinople, the magnitude of the effete but still imposing Greek

power made on him, there is not only an entire absence of dilation on such subjects as a modern would have dilated on (that was to be expected), but an absence likewise of the elaborate and painful description of detail in which contempor- ary trowveres would have indulged. It is curious, for instance, to compare the scanty references to the material marvels of Constan- tinople which Villehardouin saw in their glory, which perished by sack and fire under his very eyes, and which live chiefiy in the melancholy pages of his Greek contemporary Nicetas, with the claborate descriptions of the scarcely greater wonders of fabulous courts at Constantinople itself, at Babylon, and clsewhere to be found in his other contemporaries, the later ehanson de geste writers and the carlier embroiderers of the Arthurian romances and romans daventures. And this latter contrast is all the more striking that Villehardouin agrees with, and not impossibly borrows from, these very writers in many points of style and phraseology. The brief chapters of his work have becn justly compared to the laisses or tirades of a chanson in what may be called the vignetting of the subject of each, in the absence of any attempt to run on the narra- tive in the precise forms, and in poetical rather than prosaic word- order of the sentences. Undoubtedly this half-poetic style (ani- mated as it is and redeemed from any charge of bastardy by the freshness and vigour which pervade it) adds not a little to the charm of the book. Its succession of word pictures, conventional and yet vigorous as the illuminations of a medizval manuscript and in their very conveutionality free from all thought of literary prescntation, must charm all readers. The sober lists of names with whieh it opens ; the account of the embassy, so business-like in its estimates of costs and terms, and suddenly breaking into a fervent description of how the six deputies, "prostrating them- selves on the earth and wecping warm tears, begged the doge and people of Venice to have pity on Jerusalem ;" the story immediately following how the young count Thibault of Champagne, raising himself from a sickbed in his joy at the successful return of his ambassadors, "leva sus et chevauclia, et laz! com grant domages, car onques puls ne chevaucha que cele foiz," compose a most striking overture. Then the history relapses into the business vein and tells of the debates which took place as to the best means of carrying out the vow after the count's decease, the rendezvous, too ill kept at Venice, the plausible suggestion of the Venetians that the balance due to them should be made up by a joint

attack on their enemy the king of Hungary. Villehardouin does not in the least conceal the fact that the pope (“l’apostoilles de Rome,” as he calls him in the very phrase of the chansons) was very angry with this;

VILLA RD OUTWN

for his own part he seems to think of little or nothing but the reparation due to the republic, which had loyally kept its bargain and been defrauded of the price, of the infamy of breaking company on the part of members of a joint association, and perhaps of the unknightliness of not taking up an adventure whenever it presents itsclf. For here again the restoration of the disinherited prince of Constantinople supplicd an excuse quite as plausible as the liquida- tion of the debt to Venice. A famous passage and one short enough to quote is that describing the old blind doge Dandolo, who had ‘Grant ochoison de remanoir (reason for staying at home), car viels hom ere, et si avoit les yaulx en la teste biaus et n’en veoit gote (goutte),”’ and yet was the foremost in fight.

It would be out of place to attempt any further analysis of the Conquéte here. But it is not impertinent, and is at the same time an excuse for what has been already said, to repeat that Villehar- douin’s book, brief as it is, is in reality one of the capital books of literature, not merely for its merit, but because it is the most authentic and the most striking embodiment in contemporary literature of the sentiments which detcrmined the action of a great and important period of history. There are but very few books which hold this position, and Villehardouin’s is one of them. If every other contemporary record of the crusades perished, we should still be able by aid of this to understand and realize what the mental attitude of crusaders, of Teutonic knights, and the rest was, and without this we should lack the earliest, the most undoubtedly genuine, and the most characteristic of all such records. The very inconsistency with which Villehardouin is chargeable, the absence of compunction with which he relates the changing of a sacred rcligious pilgrimage into something by no means unlike a mcre filibustering raid on the great scale, add a charm to the book. For, religious as it is, it is entirely free from the very slightest touch of hypocrisy or indeed of self-consciousness of any kind. The famous description of the crusades, gesta Dei per Francos, was evidently

to Villehardouin a plain matter-of-fact description, and it no more occurred to him to doubt the divine favour being extended to the expeditions against Alexius or Theodore than to doubt that it was shown to expeditions against Saracens and Turks.

- The person of Villehardouin reappears for us once, but once only, in the chronicle of his continuator, Henri de Valenciennes. There is a great gap in style, though none in subject, between the really poetical prose of the first historian of the fifth crusade and the Latin empire and the awkward mannerism (so awkward that it has been taken to represent a "'disrhymed" verse chronicle) of his follower. But the much greater length at which Ville- hardouin appears on this one occasion shows us the restraint which he must have exercised in the passages which deal with himself in his own work. He again led the vanguard in the emperor Henry's expedition against Burilas the Bulgarian, and he is represented by the Valenciennes scribe as encouraging his sovereign to the attack in a long speech. Then he disappears altogether, with the exception of some brief and chiefly diplomatic mentions. Du Cange discovered and quoted a deed of donation by him dated 1207, by which certain properties were devised to the churches of Notre Dame de Foissy and Notre Dame de Troyes, with the reservation of life interests to his daughters Alix and Damerones, and his sisters Emmeline and Haye, all of whom appear to have embraced a monastic life. A letter addressed from the East to Blanche of Champagne is cited, and a papal record of 1212 styles him still "mar- shal of Romania." The next year this title passed to his son Erard ; and 1213 is accordingly given as the date of his death, which, as there is no record or hint of his having returned to France, may be supposed to have happened at Messinople, where also he must have written the Conquéte.

The book appears to have been known in the ages immediately succeeding his own ; and, though there is no contemporary manu- script In existence, there are some half dozen which appear to date from the end of the 13th or the course of the 14th century, while one at least appears to be a copy made from his own work in that spirit of unintelligent faithfulness which is much more valuable to posterity than more intelligent editing. The first printed edi- tion of the book, by a certain Blaise de Vigenére,

dates from 1585, is dedicated to the seigniory of Venice (Villehardouin, it should be said, has been accused of a rather unfair predilection for the Vene- tians), and speaks of either a part or the whole of the memoirs as

having been printed twelve years earlier. Of this earlier copy nothing seems to be known. A better edition, founded on a Nether-

landish MS., appeared at Lyons in 1601. But both these were completely antiquated by the great edition of Du Cange in 1657, wherein that learned writer employed all his knowledge, never since equalled, of the subject, but added a translation, or rather paraphrase, into modern French which is scarcely worthy either of himself or hisauthor. Dom Brial gave a new edition from different MS. sources in 1823, and the book figures with different degrees of dependence on Du Cange and Brial in the collections of Petitot, Buchon, and Michaud and Poujoulat. All these, however, have been superseded for the modern student by the editions of M. Natalis de Wailly (1872 and 1874), in which the text is critically edited from all the available MSS. and a new translation added. The charm of Ville-hardouin can escape no reader ; but few readers will fail to derive some additional pleasure from the two essays which Sainte-Beuve devoted to him thirty years ago, and which may be found reprinted in the ninth volume of the Causeries du Lund. (G. SA.) VILLEINAGE. See CopyHotp and Siavery. VILLEMAIN, Aset Francois (1790-1867), historian of French literature, was born at Paris on 11th June 1790. He was educated at the lycée Louis-le-Grand, and was only twenty when he was appointed to an assistant- mastership at the lycée Charlemagne. This appointment was shortly exchanged for a post at the Ecole Normale. He early devoted himself to the composition of the Academic prize essays which have founded the fortune of so many French men of letters, and in 1812 he gained the prize with an éloge on Montaigne, which was followed by other successful attempts. Huis second successful essay, On Criti- cism, had the honour of being read by the author before the Academy and the allied sovereigns who were then (April 1814) in Paris. Under the restoration he was appointed, first, assistant professor of modern history and then professor of French eloquence at the Sorbonne. Here he began and

continued for about ten years a series of literary lectures which had an extraordinary effect on his younger contemporaries. The secret indeed of Villemain's great popularity and immense influence is only to be understood by exact observation of the time at which he came. He had no very extraordinary gift of style, nor was he a very original thinker. But he had the great advantage of coming just before the Romantic movement, of having a wide and catholic love of literature, and, at the same time, of not being an extremist. All, or almost all, the clever young men of the brilliant generation of 1830 passed under his influence ; and, while he enchanted those of Romantic tendency by his constant reference to, and his frank apprecia- tion of, the beauties of English, German, Italian, and Spanish poetry, he had not the least inclination to decry the classics —either the classics proper of Greece and Rome or the so- called classics of France. In 1819 he published a book on Cromwell, remarkable for a Frenchman of his day, and two years later he was elected to the Academy. The time was more favourable than any previous time had been to literary men with political inclinations, and Villemain was appointed by the restoration Government "chef de l'im- primerie et de la librairie," a post involving a kind of irregular censorship of the press, and afterwards to the oflice of master of requests. Like others, however, Villemain became more and more Liberal, and before the revolution of July he had been deprived of his office and had been elected deputy for Evreux. This secured his fortune under Louis Philippe's reign, and, though he did not long sit in the lower chamber, he received a peerage in 1832. He Was a very important member of the council of public instruction, and was twice minister of that department, while at the same time with his elevation to the upper chamber he was made secretary of the Academy. This combination made him during the whole of the July monarchy one of the chief dispensers of literary patronage In France ; and, though he never drew on himself the Personal ill-will which his friend and colleague Cousin attracted, it was almost inevitable that he should displease many for every one that he gratified. Villemain's literary

position had moreover been somewhat left behind by the course of events, and in politics he was something of a doctrinaire. For more than the last

twenty years of his life he took no open part in public affairs, though his liter- ary activity continued to be considerable, the books which he published being in part workings-up of his brilliant Sorbonne courses. Although he still retained a great name and an important Academic position, his later years are supposed to have been somewhat saddened by the differ- ence of his employments and consideration, as compared with those of his middle age. Villemain, in fact, was a man who had at one time, chiefly by accident and coinci- dence, acquired a position to which he was not quite equal. Some reflexions on him in the "Notes et Pensées" to be found in Sainte-Beuve's Causeries du Lundi, vol. xi., are, as is too often the case in that collection when it refers to contemporaries, harsh. But it is certain that he had little originality of thought or definiteness of literary theory, that he was rather a clever exponent of ideas which happened to be popular than a convinced reasoner, and that he had an undue admiration of success. His death took place at Paris on 8th May 1867.

Villemain's chief work is his Cours de la Littérature Francaise, in 6 volumes, printed soon after he ceased lecturing, and reprinted long afterwards in 1864. It is a very discursive book, containing literary judgments on all sorts of subjects, and illustrating very well the fashion in which Villemain satisfied and stimulated a generation which had just become aware that literature was not limited to the productions of the men of the grand siécle. Alinost all his later works, which are numerous, consist of collections of Academic éloges, lectures, and literary and historical essays. As, however, he began with a substantive historical work so did he end with one, the posthumous History of Gregory VII., on which he had been known to be engaged for many years, and the long delay of which had been the cause of not a few sarcasms. Although a book of merit, it will hardly supplant Villemain's early Academic lectures as his title to remembrance and fame—such fame as is due to a teacher who succeeds in stirring up the literary faculties of men more highly gifted than himself.

VILLENA, a town of Spain, in the province of Alicante, is situated 37 miles by rail to the north-west of that town, on the right bank of the little river Vinalapo. It has narrow winding streets, and is crowned by a

picturesque- looking old castle. The slopes of the surrounding hills are clothed with vines, and there are also some extensive salt lagoons, The annual fair of Villena (29th Sept.—5th Oct.), dealing in the produce of the neighbourhood, is still of considerable importance. The industries (soap-making, weaving, distilling) are not extensive. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 11,424.

VILLENEUVE-SUR-LOT, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Lot-et-Garonne, is built on both sides of the river Lot, 22 miles north of Agen by a line which branches at Penne from the Agen and Périgueux Railway. Large portions of the 13th-century ramparts, altered and surmounted by machicola- tions in the 15th century, still remain, and high square towers rise above the gates to the north-east and south- west. The principal arch of the bridge (13th century) has a span of 118 feet and is 59 feet in height, and was built in the reign of Louis XIII. Arcades of the 13th century surround a square. Important markets of cattle, horses, wines, and Agen plums (£120,000 worth exported annually) are held. Boots and shoes, sausages, tinned foods, and buttons are made, and there are marble works and large mills. The population in 1881 was 9520 (com- mune 14,560) and in 1886 9780 (commune 14,693). Of these 1102 were prisoners at Eysses.

Villeneuve originated in a fortress built in 1264 as a refuge for the inhabitants of Pujols, whose town had been destroyed in the Albigensian War. The English held it from 1279 to 1337, and again in the 15th century. Less than a mile from Villeneuve the former abbey of Eysses, founded about the 7th century, stands on the site of the Roman town of Excisum. It is now used as a

central prison, and accommodates about 1200 prisoners. On the left bank of the Lot, 2 miles south of Villeneuve, are the 138th- century walls of Pujols.

VILLIERS, Gzorce. See BuckincHam, DUKE oF. ©

VILLON, Francis (1431-14611), whose real surname 1s a matter of much dispute, so that he is also called Corbueil, Corbier, De Montcorbier, and Des Loges, though in litera- ture Villon is the sole term used, was born in 1431, and, as it seems, certainly at Paris. The mixture of the real and the ironical in the singular poems called Testaments, which form his chief, if not his only certain, work, make it very unsafe to speak positively as to such details of his life as depend upon them. Yet the Testaments, with some extant documents, are the only trustworthy information that we have, the legends and anecdotes which are told respecting him being for the most part of the most dubious, if not the most certainly apocryphal, character. It appears that he was born of poor folk, that his father died in his youth, but that his mother was alive when her son was thirty years old. The very name Villon was stated, and that by no mean authority, the president Claude Fauchet, to be merely a common and not a proper noun, signifying "cheat" or "rascal"; but this seems to be a mistake. It is, however, certain that Villon was a person of loose life, and that he continued, long after there was any excuse for it in his years, the reckless way of living common among the wilder youth of the university of Paris. He appears to have derived his surname from a friend and benefactor named Guillaume de Villon, an ecclesiastic and a person of some property and position. The poet, either by his assistance or in some other way, became a student, and took the degree of bachelor in 1450 and that of master in 1452. Between this year and 1455 nothing positive is known of him, except that nothing was known against him.

On 4th June 1455 the first important incident of his life that is known occurred. Being in the company of a priest named Giles and a girl named Isabeau, he met a certain Breton, a master of arts, who was also in the company of a priest, Philippe Chermoye or Sermoise or Sermaise. A scuffle ensued ; daggers were drawn; and Sermaise, who is accused of having attacked Villon and drawn the first blood, not only received a dagger thrust in return, but a blow from a stone which struck him down. Sermaise died of his wounds. Villon fled,and was sentenced to banish- ment,—a sentence which was remitted in January 1456, the formal pardon being extant strangely enough in two different documents, in one of which the culprit is de- scribed as " Francois des Loges, autrement dit Villon," in the other as " Francois de Montcorbier." 'That he is also said

to have described himself to the barber-surgeon who dressed his own wounds as Michael Piton is less surprising, -and hardly needs an addition to the list of his aliases. It should, however, be said that the documents relative to this affair confirm the date of his birth, by representing him as twenty-six years old or thereabouts. A year later he was again in trouble. In his first broil "la femme sabeau" is only generally named, and it is impossible to say whether she had anything to do with the quarrel. In the second, Catherine de Vaucelles, of whom we hear not a little in the poems, is the declared cause of a scuftle in which Villon was so severely beaten that to escape ridicule he fled to Angers, where he had an uncle who was a monk. It was before leaving Paris that he composed what is now known as the Petit Testament, of which we shall speak presently, with the rest of his poems, and which, it should be said, shows little or no such mark of profound bitter- ness and regret for wasted life as its in every sense greater successor the Grand Testament. Indeed Villon's serious troubles were only beginning, for hitherto he had been rather injured than guilty. He left Paris for Angers in

the very early spring of 1456-57, and shortly afterwards (in March) the chapel of the College of Navarre was broken open and five hundred gold crowns stolen. The inquiries get on foot discovered a gang of student robbers, one of whom, Guy Tabarie, turned king's evidence and accused Villon, who was then absent, of being the ringleader, and of having gone to Angers, partly at least, to arrange for similar burglaries there. Other crimes were confessed by the accomplice, and Villon was arrested, put to the torture, and condemned to be hanged,—a penalty which was actu- ally inflicted later on two of his gang, and which he com- memorated by anticipation in one of the most famous and remarkable of his poems, the sombre " Ballade des Pendus." He escaped Montfaucon, however, by appealing from the bishop's court, where as a clerk he had been tried, to the parlement of Paris, by which body his sentence was com- muted to banishment—that is, of course, banishment from the capital. Where he went and what he did for the next four years we do not know. It is certain that at one time, and probable that at more times than one, he was in corre- spondence with Charles d'Orléans, and it is likely that he resided,

at any rate for some period, at that prince's court at Blois. He had also something to do with another prince of the blood, Jean of Bourbon, and traces are found of him in Poitou, in Dauphiné, &c. But at his next certain appear- ance he is again in trouble. He tells us that he had spent the summer of 1461 in the bishop's prison (bishops were fatal to Villon) of Meung. His crime is not known; but his enemy, or at least judge, was Thibault d'Aussigny, who held the see of Orleans. Villon owed his release to a general jail delivery at the accession of Louis XI., and became a free man again on 2d October.

It was now that he wrote the Grand Testament, and this, the work which has immortalized him, is the last certain fact which is known of his life. If one could judge from a vague kind of internal evidence, it would seem likely that it is really a testament, and that the poet died soon after- wards. Although he was only thirty at the date of this composition (which is unmistakable, because given in the book itself), there seems to be no kind of aspiration towards a new life, nor even any hankering after the old. Nothing appears to be left him but regret ; his very spirit has been worn out by excesses or sufferings or both. But, however this may be, he disappears from history. Rabelais indeed tells two stories about him which have almost necessarily been dated later. One is a countryside anecdote of a trick supposed to have been played by the poet in his old age at Saint Maixent in Poitou, whither he had retired. The other, a coarse but pointed jest at the expense of England, is told as having been addressed by Villon to King Edward V. during an exile in that country. Now, even if King Edward V. were not evidently out of the question, a pass- age of the story refers to the well-known scholar and man of science, Thomas Linacre, as court physician to the king, and makes Villon mention him, whereas Linacre was only a young scholar, not merely at the time of Edward V.'s supposed murder, but at the extreme date (1489) which can be assigned to Villon's life. For in this year the first edition of the poet's work appeared, obviously not published by himself, and with no sign in it of his having lived later than the date (1461) of the Grand Testament. It would be easy to dismiss these Rabelaisian mentions of Villon as mere humorous inventions, if it were not that the author of Pantagruel was born quite soon enough to have actually seen Villon if he had lived to anything that could be called old age, that he almost certainly must have known men

who had known Villon, and that the poet undoubtedly spent much time in Rabelais's own country on the banks of the lower Loire.

The obscurity, the unhappiness, and the evil repute of Villon's

life would not be in themselves a reason for the minute investiga- tion to which the events of that life have been subjected, and the result of whieh has been summed up here. But his poetical work, scauty as the eertainly genuine part of it is, is of such extraordinary interest, and marks such an epoch in the history of Europcan liter- ature, that he has been at all times an interesting figure, and, like all very interesting figures, has been often praised for qualities quite other than those whieh he really possessed. Boileau's famous verses, in whieh Villon is extolled for having first known how to smooth out the confused art of the old romaneers, are indeed a prodigy of blundering or ignoranee or both. As far as art, or the technical part of poetry goes, Villon made not the slightest advance on his predecessors, nor stood in any way in front of such contemporaries ' as his patron Charles d'Orléans. His two Testaments (so called by the applieation to them of a regular elass-name of medieval poetry) consist of eight-line stanzas of eight-syllabled verses, varied in the ease of the Grand Testament by the insertion of ballades and rondeaux of very great beauty and interest, but not formally differ- ent in any way from poems of the same kind for more than a century past. What really distinguishes Villon is the intenser quality of his poetical feeling and expression, and what is perhaps arrogantly called the modern character of his subjects and thought. Medieval poetry, with rare exceptions, and, with exceptions not quite so rare, classical poetry, are distinguished by their lack of what is now called the personal note. In Villon this note sounds, struck with singular force and skill. Again, the simple joy of living whieh distinguishes both periods—the medieval, despite a common opinion, scarcely Jess than the ancient—has disappeared. Even the riot and rollicking of his earlier days are mentioned with far less relish of remembrance than sense of their vanity. This sense of vanity, indeed, not of the merely religious, but of the purely mundane and even half pagan kind, is Villon's most prominent eharacteristic. It tinges his narrative,

despite its burlesque bequests, all through ; it is the very keynote of his most famous and beautiful piece, the "Ballade des Dames du Temps Jadis," with its refrain " Mais ot sont les neiges d'antan?" aswell as of his most daring piece of realism, the other ballade of "La Grosse Margot," with its burden of hope- less entanglement in shameless vice. It is nowhere more clearly sounded than in the piece which ranks with these two at the head of his work, the " Regrets de la Belle Heaulmiére," in which a woman, once young and beautiful, now old and withered, laments her lost charms. So it is almost throughout his poems, including the grim "Ballade des Pendus," and hardly excluding the very beautiful " Ballade pour sa Mére," with its description of sincere and humble piety. It is in the profound melancholy which the dominance of this note has thrown over Villon's work, and in the suitableness of that melancholy to the temper of all generations since, that his charm and power have consisted, though it is difficult to conceive any time at which his poetical merit could be ignored.

His certainly genuine poems cousist of the two Testaments with their eodicil (the latter containing the " Ballade des Pendus," or more properly " Epitaphe en Forme de Ballade," and some other pieces of a similarly grim humour), a few miscellaneous poems, chiefly ballades, and an extraordinary colleetion (called Le Jargon) of poems Mm argot, the greater part of which is now totally unintelligible, if, which may perhaps be doubted, it ever was otherwise. Besides these, certain poems of no inconsiderable interest are usually printed with Villon's works, though they are certainly, or almost certainly, not his. The chief are "Les Repues Franehes," a curious series of verse stories of eheating tavern-keepers, &c., having some resemblance to those told of George Peele, but of a broader and eoarser humour. These are beyond doubt, if not the poet's work, nearly eontemporary with him, and may have some foundation in faet. Another of these spurious pieces is the extremely amusing monologue of the "' Frane Archier de Bagnolet," in which one of the newly constituted archers or regularly trained and paid soldiery, who were extremely unpopular in France, is made to expose his own poltroonery. The third most important piece of this kind is the 'Dialogue de Mallepaye et de Baillevent," a dramatic conversation between two penniless spendthrifts, which is not without merit. These poems, however,

were never attributed to Villon or printed with his works till far into the 16th eentury.

It has been said that the first dated edition of Villon is of 1489, though some have held one or more than one undated copy to be still earlier. Between the first, whenever it was, and 1542 there Were no less than twenty seven editions, the most famous being that of Clément Marot in 1533, one of whose most honourable distinc- tions is the care he took of his poetieal predeeessors. The Pléiade Movement and the classieizing of the grand siécle put Villon rather out of favour, and he was not again reprinted till early in the 18th century, when he attracted the attention of students of old French like Duchat, La Monnoye, and Prosper Marchand. The first critical edition in the modern sense—that is to say, an edition founded on MSS. (of which there are in Villon's case several, chiefly at Paris and Stockholm)—was that of the Abbé Prompsault in 1832, The next and on the whole the most important was that of the bibliophile Jacob (P. Lacroix) in the Bibliothéque Elzevirienne

(Paris, 1854). Sinee then Villon has been frequently reprinted, very great interest having been shown in him; but not mueh has been done to the text till the recent and uncompleted labours of a Dutch scholar, Dr Bijvanck, who is oeeupied especially on the Stock- holm MS. On the other hand, from the literary and biographical view, Villon has been exhaustively studied of late, especially by MM. Canipaux, Vitu, and Longnon, the researehes of the last-named (Paris, 1877) having probably ascertained everything that there is to know. In England, too, attempts have been made to translate his work, especially by the late D. G. Rossetti, by Mr Swinburne, and by Mr Andrew Lang, while a complete translation has been pro- duced by Mr John Payne. (G, SA.)

VILNA, or Witno, a Lithuanian government of west Russia, has the Polish province of Suwatki on the W., Kovno and Vitebsk on the N. and E., and Minsk and Grodno on the E. and §. Its area is 16,421 square miles. Vilna lies on the broad marshy swelling, dotted with lakes, which separates Potanp (g.v.) from East Prussia and stretches east-north-east towards the Valdai Plateau. Its highest parts are a little more than 1000

feet above sea-level. On its western and eastern boundaries Vilna is deeply trenched by the valleys of the Niemen and the Dwina. Devonian limestones crop out in the north- east. Elsewhere they are concealed by the marine and freshwater limestones and sandstones of the Eocene period, which cover nearly the whole of Vilna; and these in their turn are overlain by thick layers of boulder clay, sands, and lacustrine deposits. The soil is for the most part clayey or sandy, fertile loam appearing only in the depres- sion watered by the Vilia. Numerous lakes and marshes, partly covered with forests, and scarcely passable except when frozen, as well as wet meadow-land, occupy a large area in the central parts of Vilna. The Niemen, which flows along the southern and western borders for more than 200 miles, is the chief artery of trade for the govern- ment, and its importance in this respect is enhanced by its tributary the Vilia, which flows west for more than 200 miles through the central parts of Vilna, receiving many affluents on its course. Among the tributaries of the Niemen is the Berezina, which acquired renown during Napoleon's retreat in 1812; it flows in a marshy valley in the south-east. The Dwina for 50 miles of its course separates Vilna from Vitebsk. The combined traffic on the Niemen and the Dwina was valued at nearly £200,000 in 1883. The climate of the government is only slightly tempered by its proximity to the Baltic Sea (January 21°°8 Fahr. ; July 64°°5); the average temperature at the town of Vilna is only 43°°5. But in winter the thermometer descends very low, the minimum observed during the last sixty years being —30°. The flora and fauna are inter- mediate between those of Poland and middle Russia. The population of Vilna, which amounted to 1,223,260 in 1883, consists chiefly of Lithuanians (35 per cent.) in the west and north and White Russians (45 per cent.) in the south and east. Jews make up 11 per cent. of the popula- tion ; and the Poles, who constitute the landed aristocracy and the artisan classes of the towns, reach 7 per cent. A few Great Russians and Tatars, descendants of Crimean prisoners, must be added to the above. Roman Catholicism is the prevailing creed among the Lithuanians and Poles ; and the White Russians belong for the most part to the Greek and Nonconformist Churches.

In spite of the unfertile soil, sufficient cereals are grown for the needs of the population and to supply the distilleries. 'The average crops of 1882-

1885 were 1,010,000 quarters of rye, 44,000 of wheat, 790,000 of various kinds of grain, and 9,840,000 bushels of potatoes. Apart from finer breeds kept by a few landowncrs, tle cattle of the peasautry belong to inferior varieties. In 1883 there were 203,620 horses, 303,100 horned eattle, 277,800 sheep, and 238,800 pigs. More than one-third of the area is eovered with forests, whence a considerable quantity of timber is exported, partly to Germany, for shipbuilding. A variety of petty trades are carried on in the villages of the forest region,—sledges, cars, wheels, and wooden ware being made by the peasants. Tar,

ay 0

234

itch, and potash are exported. The manufaetures have only boean to ee of late. In 1884 there were 300 establishments employing 3020 men, and giving an annual output valued at £885,100 (as against £200,000 in 1860). An aetive trade in timber, eorn, and flax (exported) and in manufaetured goods (imported) is earried on. Vilna is divided into seven districts, the ehief towns of which (with their populations In 1883) are—\ ilna (see below), Vileika (3905), Disna (8030), Lidy or Lida (7940), Oshmiany (4470), Svieneiany (8510), and Troki (2440).

VILNA, or Winno, capital of the above government, is situated 436 miles to the south-west of St Petersburg, at the junction of the Vilia with the Vileika, and at the intersection of two great railway lines, one from St Peters- burg to Warsaw, the other from Libau to the mouth of the Don. It is an old town, rich in historical associa- tions. Its imperial palace, and the cathedral of St Stanislaus, containing the silver sarcophagus of St Casimir, are fine buildings. The (Greek) cathedral of the Holy Virgin contains the remains of Prince Olgerd (bap- tized in 1377) and his family. The museum of antiquities has valuable historical collections of the region. The ancient castle of the Jagellones is now a mass of ruins. The old university, founded in 1576, was restored by Alexander I., but has been closed since 1832 for political reasons; the only departments which remain in activity are the astronomical observatory and a medical academy. The scientific societies of Vilna, especially the medical and archeological, are well known. In spite of the war of 1812, and the Polish

risings of 1831 and 1863, the popu- lation has of late increased rapidly. In 1883 it numbered 93,760. The inhabitants are chiefly Roman Catholics in religion and Poles by nationality. The Jews are steadily increasing in numbers and now make more than one-third of the population. The town has an important trade in timber (with Prussia), as also in corn.

History.—The territory of Vilna has certainly been oceupied by the Lithuanians sinee the 10th eentury, and probably mueh earlier; their chief fortified town, Vilna, is first mentioned in 1128. A temple to the god Perkunas stood on one of its hills till 1387, when it was destroyed by Jagello, after his baptism. After 1323, when Gedimin abandoned Troki, Vilna became the capital of Lithuania. The formerly independent prineipalities of Minsk and Lidy, as well as the territory of Disna, which belonged to the Polotsk prineipality, were annexed by the Lithuanian princes, and from that time Vilna, whieh was fortified by a stone wall, became the ehief city of the Lithuanian empire. It was united with Poland when its prinee Casimir was elected (1444) to the Polish throne. In 1519 1t had a printing-offiee, and fifty years later the Jesuits founded there a eollege, whieh became later on a university. But the plague of 1588, a fire in 1610, and still more the wars between Russia and Poland, which began in the 17th century, eheeked its further growth. The Russians took Vilna in 1655, and in the following year it was ceded to Russia. The Swedes eaptured it in 1702 and in 1706. The Russians again took possession of it in 1788; and it was finally annexed to Russia in 1795, after the partition of Poland. Its Polish inhabitants took an aetive part in the risings of 1831 and 1863, for which they were severely punished by the Russian Government.

VINCENNES, a town of France, in the department of Seine, 4 miles east of Paris, with which it is connected by a railway and two tramways. The castle, formerly a royal residence, was begun by Louis VII. in 1164, and rebuilt by Philip Augustus, Philip of Valois, and Charles y. Catherine de' Medici added two pavilions, finished in 1614, which Louis XTV. connected by two covered galleries, one of which has been destroyed and the other hidden by casemates. Napoleon altered the castle into a vast maga- zine of war materials. Louis XVIII. added an armoury ; and under Louis Philippe numerous casemates and a new fort on the east side were

constructed. The population of Vincennes, 20,530 in 1881, was 22,237 in 1886.

The old eastle is a rectangle of 1258 feet by 735. The enclosing wall was originally flanked by nine towers, which were cut down to its level between 1808 and 1811, and now serve as bastions, Vincennes 1s at onee a barraeks, a fortress, an arsenal, and a school of artillery and is the seene of most new artillery experiments in France, The donjon is a square tower 170 feet high, with walls 10 feet thick.

The chapel, begun by Charles V. in 1379, eoutinued by Charles VI. and Francis I., and finished by Henry II. in 1552, has been recently restored, In the sacristy is the monument ereeted in 1816 to the memory of the duke of Enghien, who was shot in the castle moat in 1804. Vineennes possesses a military hospital with 642 beds, and a statue of General Daumesnil, erected in 1878. The wood of Vineennes contains various military establishments, an experimental farm, and the redoubts of Gravelle and La Faisanderie. In the latter is the normal sehool of military gymnasties. The wood, whieh now belongs to Paris, was laid out during the second empire in imitation of the Bois de Boulogne. In the Lake of Gravelle the waters of the Marne are colleeted in a reservoir, holding up- wards of 700,000 eubie feet. The Marne flows 130 feet below. On the south border of the wood near Charenton is the asylum of Vineennes (500 beds), founded in 1855 for the benefit of conva- Ieseents from the hospitals.

VINCENNES, a city of the United States, the county seat of Knox county, Indiana, is situated on the east bank of the Wabash, which is navigable to this point. It is the centre of a fertile agricultural district, with extensive under- lying coal deposits, and is an important railroad centre, where seven railroads intersect. These railroads have their workshops here, in which they employ a large number of men. Besides this there are flour-mills, a woollen mill, furniture and cigar factories, and machine-shops. The population in 1880 was 7680, an increase since 1870 of 42 per cent. Vincennes is the seat of a university, char- tered in 1804.

The site of the city was settled in 1702. In 1768 the British beeame its possessors, and it remained a British fort until captured

by Colonel G. R. Clarke in 1779. From 1800 to 1813 it was the capital of Indiana Territory.

VINCENT, or Vincentius, St, deacon and martyr, according to the Roman Srevary, was born of noble parents at Huesca (Osca) in Spain, and was educated by Valerius, bishop of Zaragoza, who in due time ordained him to the diaconate. Under the persecution of Diocletian he was arrested and taken to Valencia. Having stood firm in his profession before Dacianus, the governor, he was subjected to excruciating tortures and thrown into prison, where angels visited him, lighting up his dungeon with celestial light, relieving his pains, loosing his bonds, and mingling their voices with his in psalms of praise. His warders, having seen these wonders through the chinks of the wall, forthwith became Christians. He was afterwards brought out and laid upon a soft mattress that he might regain sufficient strength for new torments ; but, while Dacianus was vainly meditating punishment, the saint gently breathed his last, as a crowd of bystanders kissed his feet and treasured up his blood in napkins. The tyrant exposed the body to wild beasts, but a raven miraculously descended and protected it; it was then thrown into the sea, but could not be hid, and finally received decent burial. The date assigned to his martyr- dom is 304; he is commemorated on 22d January, chiefly in Spain and the patriarchate of Lisbon. Prudentius (403) devotes a hymn to the details of his martyrdom ; Paulinus calls him the glory and ornament of Spain; and in more than one of his discourses St Augustine has cele- brated his praise.

VINCENT, Gxorce (1796-18311), English landscape and marine painter, was born at Norwich in June 1796. He studied art under "Old" Crome, and at the age of fifteen began to contribute to the Norwich exhibition. From 1814 till 1823 he exhibited occasionally at the Royal Academy, and also in the Water-Colour Exhibition and the British Institution. In 1819 he removed from Norwich to London, and he was a contributor to the Suf- folk Street gallery from its foundation in 1824 till 1830. He possessed great artistic abilities; but unfortunately he fell into dissipation, and his

works became slight and hastily executed. Finally he dropped out of sight, and he is believed to have died about 1831. His most im- portant work, a View of Greenwich Hospital, was shown in

Yi ncen

the International Exhibition of 1862. His London from the Surrey Side of Waterloo Bridge is also a fine work,

VINCENT oF BeEavvais, or VINCENTIUS BELLOVA- cENsis (c. 1190-c. 1264), the encyclopzedist of the Middle Ages, was probably a native of Beauvais.1 The exact dates of his birth and death are unknown. A tolerably old tradi- tion, preserved by Louis a Valleoleti (c. 1413), gives the latter as 1264;? but Tholomeeus de Luca, Vincent's younger contemporary (0d. 1321), seems to reckon him as living during the pontificate of Gregory X. (1272-1276). If we assume 1264 as the year of his death, the immense volume of his works forbids us to think he could have been born much later than 1190. Very little is known of his career. A plausible conjecture makes him enter the house of the Dominicans at Paris between 1215 and 1220, from which place a second conjecture carries him to the Dominican monastery founded at Beauvais in 1228-29. There is no evidence to show that the Vincent who was sub-prior of this foundation in 1246 is the encyclopedist ; nor indeed is it likely that a man of such abnormally studious habits could have found time to attend to the daily business routine of a monastic establishment. It is certain, however, that he at one time held the post of "reader" at the monas- tery of Royaumont (Jfons Regalis), not far from Paris, on the Oise, founded by St Louis between 1228 and 1235. St Louis read the books that he compiled, and supplied the funds for procuring copies of such authors as he re- quired for his compilations. Queen Margaret, her son Philip, and her son-in-law Theobald V. of Champagne and Navarre are also named among those who urged him to the composition of his "little works," especially the De Institutione Principum. Though Vincent may well have been summoned to Royaumont even before 1240, there is no actual proof that he lived there before the return of Louis IX. and his wife from the Holy Land, early in the summer of 1254. But it is evident that he must have written his work De Eruditione Filiorum Regalium (where he styles

himself as '" Vincentius Belvacensis, de ordine predicatorum, qualiscumque lector in monasterio de Regali Monte") after this date and yet before January 1260, the approximate date of his T'ractatus Consolatorius. When he wrote the latter work he must have left Royaumont, as he speaks of returning from the funeral of Prince Louis (15th January 1260) "ad nostram domum," a phrase which can hardly be explained otherwise than as referring to his own Dominican house, whether at Beauvais or elsewhere.

The Majus Speculum, the great compendium of all the knowledge of the Middle Ages, as it left the pen of Vincent, seems to have consisted of three parts only, viz., the Speculum Naturale, Doc- trinwle, and Historiale. Such, at least, is Bchard's conclusion, derived from an examination of the earliest extant MSS. All the printed editions, however, consist of four parts, the additional one being entitled Speculum Morale. This has been clearly shown to be the production of a later hand, and is ascribed by Eckard to the Period between 1310 and 1325. In arrangement and style it is quite different from the other three paris, and indeed it is mainly 4 compilation from Thomas Aquinas, Stephen de Bourbon, and two or three other contemporary writers.

The Speculum Naturale tills a bulky folio volume of 848 closely- pnnted double-columned pages. It is divided into thirty-two books and 3718 chapters. It is a vast summary of all the natural history known to western Europe towards the middle of the 13th century. It is, as it were, the great temple of medieval science, Whose floor and walls are inlaid with an enormous mosaic of skil- fully-arranged passages from Latin, Greek, Arabic, and even Hebrew authors. To each « juotation, as he borrows it, Vincent prefixes the name of the book aud author from whom it is taken, distinguishing,

ert, his own remarks by the word "actor." The Speculum eae 18 so constructed that the various subjects are dealt with ' He is sometimes styled Vincentius Burgundus ; but, according to M. Daunon, this appellation cannot be traced back further than the first half of the 15th century. aa Apparently confirmed by the few enigmatical lines preserved by Echard from his epitaph—

f " Pertulit iste necem post annos mille ducentos,

Sexaginta decem sex habe, sex mihi retentos."

235

according to the order of their creation ; it is in fact a gigantic commentary on Genesis i. Thus bk. i. opens with an account of the Trinity and its relation to creation; then follows a similar scries of chapters about angels, their attributes, powers, orders, &c., down to such minute points as their methods of communicating thought, on which matter the author decides, in his own person, that they have a kind of intelligible speech, and that with angels to think and to speak are not the same process. The whole book, in fact, deals with such things as were with God "'in the beginning." Bk. ii. treats of our own world, of light, colour, the four elements, Lucifer, and his fallen angels, thus corresponding in the main with the sensible world and the work of the first day. Bks. iii. and iv. deal with the phenomena of the heavens and of time, which is measured by the motions of the heavenly bodies, with the sky and all its wonders, fire, rain, thunder, dew, winds, &c. Bks. v.~~xiv. treat of the sea and the dry land: they discourse of the seas, the ocean, and the great rivers, agricultural operations, metals, precions stones, plants, herbs, with their seeds, grains, and juices, trees wild and cultivated, their fruits and their saps. Under each species, where possible, Vincent gives a chapter on its use in medicine, and he adopts for the most part an alphabetical arrangement. In bk. vi. c. 7 he incident~~ ally discusses what would become of a stone if it were dropped down a hole, pierced right through the earth, and, curiously enough, de- cides that it would stay in the centre. Bk. xv. deals with as- tronomy—the moon, stars, and the zodiac, the sun, the planets, the seasons, and the calendar. Bks, xvi. and xvii. treat of fowls and fishes, mainly in alphabetical order and with reference to their medical qualities. Bks. xviii.~~xxii. deal in a similar way with domesticated and wild animals, including the dog, serpents, bees, and insects; they also include a general treatise on animal physi~~ ology spread over bks. xxi.-xxii. Bks. xxiii.~~xxviii. discuss the psy~~ chology, physiology, and anatomy of man, the five senses and their organs, sleep, dreams, ecstasy, memory, reason, &c. The remain- ing four books seem more or less supplementary ; the last (xxxii.)

is a summary of geography and history down to the year 1250, when the book seems to have been given to the world, perhaps along with the Speculum Historiale and possibly an earlier form of the Speculum Doctrinatle.

The Speculum Doctrinale, in seventeen books and 2374 chapters, is a summary of all the scholastic knowledge of the age and does not confine itself to natural history. Itis intended to be a practical manual for the student and the official alike; and, to fulfil this object, it treats of the mechanic arts of life as well as the subtlcties of the scholar, the duties of the prince, and the tactics of the general. The first book, after defining philosophy, &c., gives a long Latin vocabulary of some 6000 or 7000 words. Grainmar, logic, rhetoric, and poetry are discussed in bks. ii. and iii., the latter including several well-known fables, such as the Lion and the Mouse. Bk. iv. treats of the virtues, each of which has two chapters of quota- tions allotted to it, one in prose and the other in verse. Jk. v. is of a somewhat similar nature. With bk. vi. we enter on the practi- cal part of the work ; it deals with the ars wconomica, and gives directions for building, gardening, sowing, reaping, rearing cattle, and tending vineyards; it includes also a kind of agricultural almanac for each month in the year. Bks. vii.-ix. have reference to the ars politica: they contain rules for the education of a prince and a summary of the forms, terms, and statutes of canonical, civil, and criminal law. Bk. xi. is devoted to the artes ncchanicz, namely, those of weavers, smiths, armourers, merchants, hunters, and even the general and the sailor. Bks. xii.~~xiv. deal with medicine both in practice and in theory: they contain practical tules for the preservation of health according to the four seasons of the year, and treat of various diseases from fever to gout. Bk. xv. deals with physics and may be regarded as a suminary of thi Speculum Naturale. Bk. xvi. is given up to mathematics, under which head are included music, geometry, astronomy, astrology, weights and measures, and metaphysics. It is noteworthy that in this book Vincent shows a knowledge of the Arabic numerals, though he does not call them by this name. With him the unit is termed "digitus"; when multiplied by ten it becomes the "articulus"; while the combination of the articulus and the digitus is the "numerus compositus." In this chapter (xvi. 9), which is super~~ scribed "actor," he clearly explains how the value of a number increases tenfold

with every place it is moved to the left. He is even acquainted with the later invention of the "cifra" or cipher. The last book (xvii.) treats of theology or (as we should now say) mythology, and winds up with an account of the Holy Scriptures and of the fathers, from Ignatius and Dionysius the Areopagite to Jerome and Gregory the Great, and cven of later writcrs from Isidore and Bede, through Alcuin, Lanfranc, and Anselm, down to Bernard of Clairvaux and the brethren of St Victor.

As the fifteenth book of the Speculum Doctrinale is a summary of the Speculum Naturale, so the Speculum Historiale may be re- garded as the expansion of the last book of the same work. It con- sists of thirty-one books divided into 3793 chapters. The first book opens with the mysteries of God and the angels, and then passes on to the works of the six days and the creation of man. It includes

dissertations on the various vices and virtues, the different arts and sciences, and carries down the history of the world to the sojourn in Egypt. The next eleven books (ii.~~xii.) conduct us through sacred and secular history down to the triumph of Christianity under Constantine. The story of Barlaam and Josaphat occupies a great part of bk. xv.; and bk. xvi. gives an account of Daniel's nine kingdoms, in which account Vincent differs from his professed authority, Sigebert of Gembloux, by reckoning England as the fourth instead of the fifth. In the chapters devoted to the origines of Britain he relies on the Brutus legend, but cannot carry his cata~~ logue of British or English kings further than 735, where he honestly confesses that his authorities fail him. Seven more books bring us to the rise of Mohammed (xxiii.) and the days of Charle- magne (xxiv.). Vincent's Charlemagne is a curious medley of the great emperor of history and the champion of romance. He is at once the gigantic eater of Turpin, the huge warrior eight feet high, who could lift the armed knight standing on his open hand to a

level with his head, the crusading conqueror of Jerusalem in days:

before the crusades, and yet with all this the temperate drinker and admirer of St Augustine, as his character had filtered down through

various channels from the historical pages of Eginhard. Bk. xxv. includes the first crusade, and in the course of bk. xxix., which contains an account of the Tartars, the author enters on what is almost contemporary history, winding up in bk. xxxi. with a short narrative of the crusade of St Louis in 1250. One remarkable

feature of the Speculum Historiale is Vincent's constant habit of

devoting several chapters to sclections from the writings of each great author, whether secular or profane, as he mentions him in the course of his work. The extracts from Cicero and Ovid, Origen and St John, Chrysostom, Augustine, and J erome, are but specimens of a useful custom which reaches its culminating point in bk. XXvill., which is devoted entirely to the writings of St Bernard. One main fault of the Speculum Historiale is the unduly large space devoted to miracles. Four of the medixval historians from whom he quotes most frequently are Sigebert of Gembloux, Hugh of Fleury, Helinand of Froidmont, and William of Malmesbury, whom he uses for Continental as well as for English history.

Vincent has thus hardly any claim to be reckoned as an original writer. But it is difficult to speak too highly of his immense in- dustry in collecting, classifying, and arranging these three huge volumes of 80 books and 9885 chapters. The undertaking to com- bine all human knowledge into a single whole was in itself a colossal one and could only have been born in a mind of no mean order. Indeed more than six centuries passed before the idea was again resuscitated ; and even then it required a group of brilliant French- men to do what the old Dominican had carried out unaided. The number of writers quoted by Vincent is almost incredible: in the Speculum Naturale alone no less than 350 distinct works are cited, and to these must be added at least 100 more for the other two Specula. His reading ranges from Arabian philosophers and natural- ists to Aristotle, Eusebius, Cicero, Seneca, Julius Ceesar (whom he calls Julius Celsus), and even the J ew Peter Alphonso. But Hebrew, Arabic, and Greek he seems to have known solely through one or other of the popular Latin versions.

nd printed, will be found in the istotre chard. The Tractatus Consolatorius pro

writer of this article has bee able to consult d in ini all the information which E Falco Gana ge

so-called first edition of the

ascribed to Mentelin and long celebrated as the earliest work printed burg, has lately been challenged as being only an earlier edition of vices

three genuine Specula (c. 1468-70), with which has been bound up the Speculum

Morale first printed by Mentelin (c. 1473-76), (T. A. A.)

VINCENT oF Lerins, St, an ecclesiastical writer of the Western Church, of whose personal history hardly any- thing is known, except that he was a native of Gaul, pos- sibly brother of St Loup, bishop of Troyes, that he became a monk and priest in the monastery of Lerinum (island of St Honorat opposite Cannes), and that he died in or about 450. From himself we further learn that only after long and sad experience of worldly turmoil did he betake him. self to the haven of a religious life. In 434, three years after the council of Ephesus, he wrote the Commonitorium adversus profanas omnium hereticorum novitates, in which the famous threefold test of orthodoxy is laid down and applied,—" quod ubique, quod semper, quod ab omnibus creditum est." Itis not altogether improbable that Vincent of Lerins was also the author of the Semipelagian treatise against Augustinianism which is dealt with by Prosper of Aquitania in lis Pro Augustini doctrina responstones ad capitula objectionum Vincentianarum.

VIN—VIN

The Commonitorium has becn edited by Baluze (Paris, 1663, 1669, and 1684), and by Kliipfel (Vienna, 1809). It also occurs in vol, 1. of Migne's Patrol. curs. compl. (1846).

VINCENT DE PAUL, Sr (1576-1660), founder of the "Congregation of Priests of the Mission," usually known as LazaRItTES (9.v.), was born on

24th April 1576 at Pouy near Dax (Landes), where his father owned a small farm. It was originally intended to train him for the ordinary pastoral life of the peasants of the Landes, but he soon showed other aptitudes, and after passing through the school at Dax he studied at Toulouse, and was ordained to the priesthood in 1600. Some time afterwards, while on board a felucca off Marseilles, he had the misfortune to be captured by Barbary pirates, who took him to Tunis and sold him asa slave. His third master, who happened to be a renegade Italian, he succeeded in converting, and both managed to make their escape, landing at Aigues-Mortes near Marseilles in June 1607. After short stays at Avignon and Rome, Vincent found his way to Paris, where he became favourably known to Monsieur (afterwards cardinal) de Bérulle, who was then engaged in founding the con- gregation of the French Oratory. At Bérulle's instance he became curate of Clichy near Paris (1611); but this charge he soon exchanged for the post of tutor to the count of Joigny at Folleville, in the diocese of Amiens, where he first developed the idea of those "missions" with which his name is associated. In 1617 he accepted the curacy of Chatillon-lés-Dombes (or sur-Chalaronne), and it was here that he received from the countess of Joigny the means by which he was enabled to found his first "con- frérie." The subsequent history of the priests of the mis- sion will be found in the article Lazarirxs, Among the works of benevolence with which his name is more imme- diately and personally associated are the establishment of a hospital for galley slaves at Marseilles, the institution of two establishments for foundlings at Paris, and the organization of the "Filles de la Charité." He died at Paris on 27th September 1660, and was buried in the church of St Lazare. He was beatified by Benedict XIII. in 1729 and canonized by Clement XII. in 1737, his festival (duplex) being observed on 19th July.

VINCENT FERRER, Sr (1355-1419), a great Spanish Dominican preacher, was born of respectable parentage at Valencia on 23d January 1355. In February 1374 he took the Dominican habit, and after spending some years in teaching, and in completing his theological studies, he was licensed to preach. He graduated as doctor of theo- logy at Lerida in 1374, and his sermons in the cathedral of Valencia from 1385 onwards soon became famous. Cardinal Peter de Luna took him with him to Paris

in 1391; and on his own election to the pontificate as anti- pope Benedict XIII. made Ferrer his confessor and master of the sacred palace. Finding, however, the ecclesiastical atmosphere of Avignon an uncongenial one, he in 1397 resumed his work as a preacher, and Spain, France, Italy, Germany, and Great Britain and Ireland were successively visited by him; and in every case numerous conversions were the result of his eloquence, which is described as having been singularly powerful and moving. In 1412 he was delegated by his native city to take part in the election of a successor to the vacant crown of Aragon ; and in 1416 he received a special invitation to attend the council of Constance, which, however, he does not appear to have accepted. He died at Vannes on 5th April 1419, and was canonized by Calixtus III. in 1455, his festival (duplex) being observed on 5th April.

VINCI. See Leonarpo DA VINCI,

VINDELICIA, or the country of the Vindelici, is a name of the Roman province which was also called Rheetia Secunda. See Rumrra.

VINE. Of the grape vines (Vitis) V. vinifera is the species best known and longest cultivated ; but out of ten species that grow wild in the United States four (V.

rotundifolia, V. Labrusca, V. xstivalis, and V. cordifolia),

according to Engelmann, are cultivated and have given origin to numerous derivatives used for wine-making pur- ~~poses. Some of the American varieties have been intro~~ duced into France and other countries infested with Phyllo- wera, to serve as stocks on which to graft the better kinds of European vines, because their roots, though per- haps equally subject to the attacks of the insects, do not suffer so much injury from them as the European species. American vines should not, however, be introduced for grafting or other purposes into a vine-growing country hitherto free from Phylloxera, but only into those in which the insect has already spread.

Although the genus Vitis comprises, according to Ben- tham and Hooker, more than two hundred species, mostly natives of tropical or subtropical

regions, yet less than half-a-dozen species have any economic value, while the great interest centres in four or five only. Vines have woody climb-

?ing stems, with alternate, palm- ately-lobed, or in some

Vine,

(ii.) Fruit ; reduced. (iii.) Foliage, tendril, and inflorescence ; reduced.

cases (Ampelopsis, Cissus) compound (digitate), leaves, pro-

(i.) Flower after fall of petals ; magnified.

vided at the base with small stipules. Opposite some of these leaves springs a tendril, the nature of which is obvi- ous from the numerous transitional states it offers between the ordinary form of tendril and the inflorescence. The flowers are small, green, and fragrant, and are arranged in dense clusters, Each hasasmall calyx in the form of a shallow rim, sometimes four-lobed or five-lobed, or toothed. Within this is an equal number of petals, which in the true vines cohere by their tips and form a cap or hood, Which is pushed off when the stamens are ripe. In other species (and as a malformation in the vine itself) the petals are free and spreading. Four or five free stamens, placed Opposite the petals, spring from a fleshy ring or disk sur- rounding the ovary, each bearing a two-celled anther. The ovary is surmounted by a sessile stigma and is more or less completely two-celled, with two erect ovules in each cell. This ripens into the berry and seed. Planchon, in his monograph of the Ampelidex (1887), divides the genus Vitis into numerous genera of equal rank. He retains, however, the grape vines under their original name. The cultivated vine has usually hermaphrodite flowers ; but, as it occurs in a wild state, or as an escape from cultivation, the flowers manifest a tendency towards unisexuality : that is, one plant bears flowers with stamens only, or only

the rudiments of the pistil, while on another plant the flowers are bisexual. Exclusively female flowers without stamens do not appear to have been observed. Seedling plants from the cultivated vines often produce unisexual flowers, thus reverting to the feral type. Perhaps the ex- planation of the fact that some of the cultivated varieties are, as gardeners say, "bad setters,"—7.e., do not ripen their fruit owing to imperfect fertilization,—is to be sought in this natural tendency to dicecism.

The conformation of the vine stem has elicited a vast amount of explanatory comment. The most generally accepted explanation is the "'sympodial" one. According to this, the shoot of the vine is a "sympode," consisting of a number of "podia" placed one over the other in longitudinal series. Each podium consists of a portion of the stem bearing one or more leaves, each with an axil- lary bud or buds, and terminating in a tendril or an inflor- escence. In V. Labrusca there is a tendril opposite to each leaf, so that the podium bears only a single leaf. In other species there is a definite arrangement of the leaves, some with and others without tendrils opposite to them, the numerical order remaining constant or nearly so. These arrangements have doubtless some reference to climatic phenomena, continuity of growth being arrested by cold and promoted by warmth. In any case it is obvious that these facts might be turned to practical ends in cultiva- tion. A vine, for instance, that produces bunches of grapes at each joint is preferable to one in which there are several barren joints, asa larger quantity can be grown within a smaller area. The practice of pruning or "stop- ping," as explained under HorTicULtvRE (vol. xii. p. 277), is consciously or unconsciously regulated by the mode of growth. The tendril or inflorescence, according to the views above explained, though in reality terminal, is bent to one side; hence it appears to be lateral and opposite to the leaf. While the tendril is thus diverted from its orginal direct course, the axillary bud of the leaf opposite the tendril begins a new podium, by lengthening into a shoot which assumes the direction the tendril had prior to its deflexion. This new podium, now in a direct line with its predecessor, produces leaves and ends in its turn in a tendril or inflorescence. A third podium succeeds the second, and soon. Other authorities explain the forma- tion of the tendril and its anomalous position opposite to a leaf by supposing

that the end of the stem bifurcates during growth, one division forming the shoot, the other the tendril or inflorescence. It is not possible within the limits at our command to specify the facts and arguments by which these theories are respectively supported. Prac- tically the tendrils assist the plant in its native state to scramble over rocks or trees. As in the case of similar formations generally, they are endowed with a sensitive- ness to touch which enables them to grasp and coil them- selves round any suitable object which comes in their way, and thus to support the plant. The tendrils of the Virginian creeper (Vitis or Ampelopsis hederacea; the Parthenocissus quinquefolia of Planchon) are branched, each branch terminating in a little sucker-like expansion by means of which it adheres firmly to walls or rocks. This is especially noticeable in the Japanese species now so commonly grown against walls under the name of Ampelopsis Veitchit (the Parthenocissus tricuspidata of Planchon). The extremities of these tendrils turn away . from the light, and by this means they are enabled to enter crevices, inside which they expand and fix themselves, just as the lewis or key, used by stone-masons, is fixed into blocks of stone. The anomalous position of the stamens in front of the petals is explained by the abortion or non-development of an outer row of stamens, indica- tions of which are sometimes seen on the hypogynous disk

238 ve

encircling the ovary. The seeds or grape stones are some- what club-shaped, with a narrow neck-like portion beneath, which expands into a rounded and thickened portion above. On the inner or central side of the seed is a ridge bounded on either side by a shallow groove. This ridge indicates the point of union of the "raphe" or seed-stalk with the seed; it serves to distinguish the varieties of V. vinifera from those of other species. In the true vines the neck of the seed is much longer than in the American vines, and the ridge or '"'chalaza" occupies the upper half of the seed, not the middle portion, as in the American kinds. In endeavouring to trace the filiation and affinities of the vine, the characters afforded by the seed are spe- cially valuable, because they have not been wittingly inter- fered with by human agency. Characters derived from the size, colour, or flavour of the berry are of less value for

historical or genealogical purposes than those which are the outcome of purely natural conditions.

The native country of the European vine is considered to be the region south of the Caspian. From this pre-

sumed centre it has spread eastwards into Central Asia'

and westwards to both sides of the Mediterranean, Central Europe, and as far north as Belgium (Planchon). Regel has propounded the notion that the cultivated vine origin- ated as a hybrid between V. vulpina and V. Labrusca, both North-American species ; but he offers little evidence in support of his opinion, which has not received the assent of botanists generally. It is interesting to note that grape stones have been found with mummies in Egyptian tombs of not later age than 3000 years. The seeds, according to Engelmann, have the characteristics of those of V. winifera, but show some very slight variations from the type of seed now prevalent. Among the Greeks in the time of Honier wine was in general use. The cul- tivation of the vine must also have been introduced into Italy at a very early period. In Virgil's time the varieties in cultivation seem to have been exceedingly numerous ; and the varied methods of training and culture now in use in Italy are in many cases identical with those described by Columella and other Roman writers (comp. HortTICULTURE, vol. xli. pp. 223, 277). Grape stones have been found among the remains of Swiss and Italian lake dwellings of the Bronze period, and others in tufaceous volcanic deposits near Montpellier, not long before the historic era.

The vine requires a high summer temperature and a prolonged period in which to ripen its fruit. Where these are forthcoming, it can be profitably cultivated, even though the winter temperature be very low. Tchihatchef mentions that at Erivan in Russian Armenia the mean winter temperature is 7°] C. and falls in January to — 30° C., and at Bokhara the mean temperature of J anuary is 4° C. and the minimum — 22° C., and yet at both places the vine is grown with success. In the Alps it is profit- ably cultivated up to an altitude of 1870 feet, and in the north of Piedmont as high as 3180 feet. At the present time the limit of profitable cultivation in Europe passes from Brittany, lat. 47° 30', to beyond the Rhine by Liége

and through Thuringia to Silesia in lat. 51° 55' (Grise- bach). In former centuries vines were cultivated to the north of this region, as, for instance, in Holland, in Bel- gium largely, and in England, where they might still be grown. Indeed experiments have lately been made in this direction near Cardiff in South Wales. The yield is satisfactory and the wine made, the variety known as Gamay noir, is described as being like still champagne In the Middle Ages, owing to various causes, the better wines of France and Germany could not be obtained in England except at prohibitive prices; but, when this state of things ceased and foreign wine could be imported the English consumers would no longer tolerate the in-

ferior productions of their own vineyards. It is also prob- able that the English mixed sugar or honey with the wine and thus supplied artificially that sweetness which the English sun denied. It is a curious fact that at the present day much or even most of the wine of finest quality is made at or near to the northern limits of possible cultivation with profit. This circumstance is probably explained by the greater care and attention bestowed both on the cultivation of the vine and on the manufacture of the wine in northern countries than in those where the climate is more propitious. The relative inferiority of the wines made at the Cape of Good Hope and in Australia is partly due to variations of climate, the vine not yet having adapted itself to the new conditions, and partly to the deficient skill of the manufacturers. That such inferi- ority may be expected to disappear is suggested by the success of vine-culture in Madeira and the Canary Islands,

The development of other species of Vitis, such as the curious succulent species of the Soudan and other parts of equatorial Africa, or the numerous kinds in India and Cochin China, is of course possible under suitable con- ditions; but it is obvious that an extremely long period must elapse before they can successfully compete with the product of many centuries.

For currants and raisins, both produced by varieties of the grape-vine, see the respective articles.

Apart from their economic value, vines are often culti- vated for purely ornamental purposes, owing to the elegance of their foliage, the rich coloration they assume, the shade they afford, and their hardihood. (M. T. M.)

DisEASES OF VINES.

The organic diseases which affect the vine may be divided into two categories, those caused by insects and those caused by para- sitic fungi.

Diseases Caused by Inseets.—Kaltenbach in 1874 enumerated Insect thirty-two species of insects which injure the vine ; and since then enemies.

others have been added to the list. We here deal only with the most important. Amongst those which attack the leaves and young buds a small beetle, Anomala vitis, one of the Searabzxida, does great harm in some parts of southern Europe by devouring the soft tissue of the leaves. A genus of weevils, Otiorhynchus, contains several species which are injurious to the vine, chiefly by the adult beetle devouring the buds. 0. raweus, hirticornis, picipes, nigritus, ligustiet, and suleatus are all reported from various places as doing much damage ; the larva of the last-mentioned species attacks the roots of the vine, causing the shoots to be small and ultimately bringing about the death of the plant. Fortunately the members of this genus have no wings, so that the damage they cause is to a great extent localized. The same kind of injury is caused by a small Chrysomeleous beetle, Eumolpus vitis. The larvee of several Lepidoptera attack the vine in the same way, destroying the young buds. Amongst these Nania typiea, Agrotis tritict, and A. pronuba may be mentioned. The larva of Tortriz pilleriana in the early spring weaves the young vine leaves to- gether, and, enclosed in this nest, devours the soft tissue at leisure. The imago emerges from the chrysalis in July and shortly after lays its eggs upon the upper surface of the vine leaf. After a few weeks the caterpillars emerge and continue their work of destruction. Lethrus cephalotes, one of the Searabeide, is very injurious in vineyards which have a dry sandy soil. The beetles live in pairs in holes in the ground ; during the summer the beetle bites off the small young shoots and drags them away to its hole, where it is believed they serve as food for the larve. In this way very

serious damage is caused to the vine plants. Rhynchites betuleti, a weevil, also does much damage to the young shoots and leaves. The grapes are attacked by the caterpillar of a moth, Conchylis ambiguella, which lays its egg in the young fruit; and in a similar way the larva of Graptolitha (Conehylis) botrana attacks the flowers and fruit. The larva of the cockchafer, Melolontha vulgaris, also does much damage by biting through and devouring the roots. Cocews vitis is a small scale insect of reddish brown colour, with irregular black spots in the female, which lives in the bark of old or neglected vines and weakens the tree.

By far the most destructive of all insect pests which attack the Phyllo-cultivated vine is Phylloxera vastatriz. This much-dreaded insect vera.

belongs to the family Aphide# or plant lice of the order Hemiptera. The genus contains several species which live upon oak trees. Their proper home is in North America ; but they have been found

VENE

in English vineries since 1863. The symptoms of the disease first appeared in France about the same time, in the neighbourhood of Tarascou. From the department of Gard the infection spread south to the sea, and east, west, and north, till the south-eastern corncr of France was thoroughly infected. Another centre of infection arose a few years later near Bordeaux in Gironde, whence the disease spread till the whole of the southern half of France was more or less severely attacked. The parasite was first discovered in France in the year 1868. The Phyllowera has spread to Corsica; it has appeared here and there amongst the vineyards of the Rhine and Switzerland ; it is found in Spain and Portugal, Austria, Hungary, Italy, and Greece ; and in 1885 its presence was discovered in Australia (Victoria), at the Cape of Good Hope, and in Algeria. Hence it is no exaggeration to say that with very few exceptions its distribution is co-extensive with that of the cultivated grape- vine.

The symptoms of the disease, by means of which an infected spot may be readily recognized, are these. The vines are stunted and bear few leaves, and those small ones. When the disease reaches an advanced stage, the

leaves are dis- coloured, yellow or reddish, with their edges turned back, and_ withered. The grapes are arrested in their

rowth and their skin is wrinkled. f the roots are examined, numerous fusiform swellings are found upon the smaller rootlets. These are at first yellowish in colour and fleshy ; but as they grow older they become rotten and assume a brown or black colour. Ifthe roots on which these swellings occur be examined with a lens, a number of minute insects of a yellowish brown colour are ob- served; these are the root-forms (radicola) of Phyllowera (fig. 1); they

Fig. 1. Fig. 2. Fig. 1.—Root-inhabiting form (radicola) of Phylloxera, with proboscis inserted into tissue of root of vine. Fic. 2.—Phylloxera. Winged female which lives on leaves and buds of vine, and lays parthogenetically eggs of two kinds, one developing into a wingless female, the other into a male.

are about ‘8 mm. long, of an oval outline, and with a swollen body. No distinction between head, thorax, and abdomen can be observed. The Y head bears small red eyes and a pair of three- jointed antenne, the first two joints being short and thick, the third more elon- gated, with the end cut off ob- liguely and slightly hollowed out. Underneath, between the legs, lies the rostrum, Which reaches back to the abdo- men. The insect

Fig. 4. is fixed by this Fic. 3.—a, Male produced from small egg ¢, laid by winged

Fig. 3.

female (fig. 2); b, large egg; c, small egg. ia. 4.—Wingless female produced from large egg (fig. 8, 0), laid by winged female (fig. 2).

rostrum, which is mserted into the root of the vine for the purpose of sucking the sap. The abdomen consists of seven Segments, and these as well as the anterior segments bear four rows of small tubercles on their dorsal surface. These root-dwelling insects are females, which lay parthenogenctic eggs. The insect is fixed by its proboscis, but moves its abdomen about and lays thirty to forty yellow eggs in small clusters. After

the lapse of six, eight, or twelve days, according to the temperature, the larve hatch out of the eggs. These are light yellow in colour and in appearance resemble their mother, but with relatively larger appendages. They move actively

about for a few days and then, having selected a convenient place ou the young roots, insert their proboscis and become stationary. They moult five times, becoming with each change of skin darker in colour ; in about three weeks they become adult and capable of laying parthenogenetic eggs. In this way the insect inereases with appalling rapidity: it has been caleulated that a single mother whieh dies after laying her eggs in March would have over 25,000,000 descendants by October. If, however, the insect were content with this method of reproduction, the disease could be isolated by surrounding the infeeted patches with a deep ditch full of some such substance as coal-tar, which would prevent the insects spreading on to the roots of healthy vines. The fertility of the parthenogenetically-produced insects would also diminish after a certain number of generations had been produced.

As the summer wears on a second form of insect appears amongst the root-dwellers, though hatched from the same eggs as the form described above. These are the nymphs, destined to acquire wings ; their body is more slender in outline, and at first they bear well- marked tubercles. After several moults the rudiments of two pairs of wings appear, and then the insect creeps up to the surface of the earth, and on to the vine. Here it undergoes its fifth and last moult, and appears as a winged female, capable of reproducing parthenogenetically. The winged form has a slender body with distinct head (fig. 2). The eyes are well developed, with numerous facets; the antenne have three joints, the terminal one shaped like that of the root-dwellers. The wings are transparent, with few nervures, and are well adapted for flight. The anterior pair reach far beyond the end of the abdomen; the posterior are narrower and not so long. These winged forms are about 1 mm. long. They fly about from July till October, living upon the sap of the vine, which is sucked up by the rostrum from the leaves or buds. They lay their parthenogenetically-

produced eggs in the angles of the veins of the leaves, in the buds, or, if the season is already far advanced, in the bark. In very damp or cold weather the insect remaius in the ground near the surface, and deposits its eggs there. The eggs are very few in number and of two sizes, small and large (fig. 4, andc). From the larger a female (fig. 8) is hatched in eight or ten days, and simultaneously, for the first time in the life-history of the Phylloxera, a male (fig. 4) appears from the smaller egg. Neither male nor female has wings; the rostrum is replaced by a functionless tubercle; and there is no alimentary canal. The female is larger than the male and differs from it and the other forms in the last joint of the antenne. The life of these sexual forms lasts but a few days, and is entirely taken up with reproduc- tion. The female is fertilized by the male and three or four days later lays a single egg—the winter egg—and then dies. This egg is laid in the crevices of the bark of the vine, and asit is protectively coloured it is almost impossible to find it. Here the winter eggs remain undeveloped during the cold months; but in the following spring, as a rule in the month of April, they give birth to a female insect without wings, which resembles the root-dwelling forms, but has pointed antennz. These forms are termed the stock-mothers ; they creep into the buds of the vine, and, as these develop into the young leaves, insert their proboscis into the upper side. By this means a gall is produced on the under side of the leaf. The gall is cup-shaped, and its outer surface is crumpled and covered with smal] warts and hairs. The opening upon the upper surface of the leaf is protected by similar structures. Within this gall the stock- mother lives and surrounds herself with numerous parthenogenetic- ally-produced eggs,—sometimes as many as two hundred in a single gall; these eggs give birth after six or eight days to a numerous progeny (gallicola), some of which form new galls and multiply in the leaves, whilst others descend to the roots and become the root-dwelling forms already described. The galls and the gall-producing form are much commoner in America than in the Old World.

Scheme of the Various Forms of Phylloxera vastatrix. A. sachin forms, ?

| | Root-infesting forms, 2d generation, ? bi forms, 9

Root-infesting "— 3d generation, ?

Male. &e.

Wingless female.

Winter egg. Stock-mother. |

Gall-producing ? a Q

ditto. A.

The natural enemies of the Phyllowera are few in number : they include some mites,—Hoplophora arctata, Th yroglyphus phylloxere, —and the millepede Polyxenus lagurus, which devours the subter- ranean forms. Innumerable artifices have been proposed to com- bat the terrible discase caused by this minute insect, but none of them seem to be completely successful. Asa rule the means sug-

Oidium.

Perono- spora witicola.

An- thrac- nose,

gested are to render the soil uninhabitable for the root forms by injecting certain chemical poisons. Since the importance of the winter egg in the life-history of the insect was demonstrated by Balbiani, attempts have been made to destroy these eggs by rubbing the branches with a chain-armour glove, or some such contrivance for removing the outer layers of the bark, which should be burnt. Again, certain varieties of American vines, which have the reputa- tion of being Phylloxera proof, have been grafted on European stocks; but this has proved to be only a doubtful success as regards the Phylloxera, whilst the wine made from such vines has un- doubtedly deteriorated. The treatment which has been most suc- cessful is periodically to submerge the vineyard for a period of not less than forty days. Where this plan has been tried, it has been most successful ; unfortunately the majority of vineyards are planted on hill-

sides and other places where this method of treat- ment is impracticable. The root-dwelling forms do not thrive in a sandy soil ; hence vines grown in a district where such soil is found usually escape the disease. ; a Fungoid Discases.—The most destructive form of fungoid disease which attacks the vine is caused by a Pyrenomycetous fungus, Oidium (Erysiphc) Tuckeri. The disease was first noticed in

England in 1845; in 1848 it appeared at Versailles; by 1851 it.

had spread through all the wine-producing countries of Europe, being especially virulent in the lands bordering on the Mediter- ranean; and in the foHowing year it made its appearance in Madeira. There is little doubt that, like the Phylloxera, the Oidiwim is in its origin American. The disease is characterized by the appearance of a white mycelium on the young leaves ; this spreads quickly and attacks the older leaves and branches, and ultimately reaches the grapes. At first these are marked only by small brown spots ; but the spots spread and fuse together, the skin of the grape is destroyed, and the flesh decays, the seed only remaining apparently untouched. The disease spreads by the mycelium growing over the epidermis of the plant. The hyphe composing the mycelium are provided with haustoria, which project into the cells of the affected part. Some of the hyphe which project from the leaf bear conidia, which are constricted off one at a time, and it is by their means that the fungus spreads. The perithecia have not yet been discovered in Europe. But it is not impossible that this stage of the life-history of Ovdiwm exists in the United States in the form of Uncinula spiralis, which causes a widely spread disease amongst the American vines. The Oidiwm is in its turn attacked by a fungus of the same tribe, Cicinnobolus Cesatii, De By, which lives parasitically within the hyphe of its host, and at times even succeeds in destroying it. The means which have proved most efficacious, both as a remedy and a preventative of this disease, is to scatter flower of sulphur over the vines, before the morning dew has evaporated. Another method is to boil one part of lime with three parts of sulphur, and to sprinkle the mixture over the affected plants.

Another fungus which attacks vines, especially those of America, is Peronospora viticola. The mycelium spreads through the green parts of

the plant, attacking the leaves, twigs, and unripe grapes. On the upper side of the leaf, where it is first visible, it forms pale green irregular spots, which become darker in colour. On the under side of the leaf these patches are white and are composed of the spore-bearing hyphe. The leaf ultimately becomes dried up and brittle. The grapes which are attacked cease to grow, turn brown or white, and ultimately dry up and fall off. This disease has been successfully treated with' a spray of copper sulphate and lime, or sulphate of iron ; solutions of these salts prevent the conidia from germinating.

*Anthracnose is the name usually given to a disease which was formerly known as "charbon," *< pech," or "brenner." This disease is caused by the parasitism of Sphaceloma ampclinum, one of the Pyrenomycetous fungi. The fungus assails all the green*

'parts of the vine, and injures the leaves and young shoots as much

as it does the grape itself. The first sign of its presence is the ap- pearance of a minute spot, which is greyish in the centre, with a brown border. This spot increases in size ; in the stalks it assumes an oval shape, with its long axis parallel to the stalk, whilst in the leaves and grapes it is more or less circular in outline. The centre of the spots on the grapes becomes darker as the disease ad- vances, and a red line appears dividing the dark brown border into an outer and an inner rim and giving a very characteristic appear- ance to the diseased plant. The berries do not shrivel up as those do that are affected by the black rot. The mycelium of Sphace- loma grows just beneath the cuticle of the vine, through which it soon bursts, giving rise to a number of minute hyphe, "which bear conidia. These are minute, oval, colourless spores, which serve to spread the disease over the vineyard and from place to place. The complete life-history of this form is at present unknown ; and in- formation as to where the fungus passes the winter, and in what form, would probably afford some useful indications as to the method that should be adopted to combat the disease. Anthracnose has been known in Europe for many years, but has only been ob- served in America since 1881, whither it was probably imported from the Old World. As a preventative to its attacks a solution

(50 per cent.) of iron sulphate has been found very useful, as well as care in planting on well-drained soil that does not lie too low, the disease seldom appearing in dry, well-cxposed vineyards.

The black rot, like the Oidiwm and P. viticola, is American in its Black origin. It has been known and observed there since 1848, but ap- rot. peared for the first time in France in 1885. The disease is caused by a fungus, Physalospora Bidwellii, Sacc. (Phoma uvicola), one of the Pyrenomycctes, and by some authorities it has been considered to be a further stage in the life-history of Sphaceloma. The fungus confines its attacks to the grapes, the leaves and stems being rarely if ever affected. The grapes arc not assailed until nearly full-grown, when a brownish spot appears, which spreads over the whole grape.

The latter at first retains its plumpness, but on the appearance of little black pustules, which first occur on the part first affected,

the grape begins to shrivel. This continues until the grape is \ reduced toa black hard mass, with the folds of skin pressed closely { against the seed. The disease does not spread from grape to grape, so that as a rule only a certain number of grapes in a bunch are destroyed. The hyphx of the mycelium of this fungus are sep- tate, with numerous short branches. The pustules on the surface are due to fructifications, pycnidia, and spermagonia. The presence of conidia has also been recently demonstrated. The fungus passcs the winter in the withered grapes which fall to the ground ; hence every care should be taken to collect these and burn them. The use of the solutions mentioned above may also be recommended as a preventative.

Among the other fungi which infest the vinc may be mentioned Other _ Phyllosticta viticola and Ph. Labruscw, which, when the attack is fungi. severe, cause the destruction of the leaves, the only part they assail. These, like the foregoing, are members of the Pyrenonvycetes. To the same class belongs also Cercospora vitis (Cladosporium viticolum), which has club-shaped spores of a green-brown colour. This also attacks the leaves ; but, unless the season is extremely unfavour- able, it does little harm.

A very disastrous root-disease of the vine is due to the ravages of the fungus Dematophora necatriz, which forms subterranean strings of mycelium—so-called rhizomorphs—the fructification of which is as yet not known ; it forms conidia and sclerotia, however, and presents certain analogies to the Discomycctcs. The diseased roots have been confounded with those attacked by Phylloxcra.

The only mode of combating the malady seems to be to uproot the plants and burn them. Isolation of the diseased areas by means of

trenches has also been practised. This fungus has extended its } ravages considerably in southern France and Switzerland within the last ten years, (A. E. §.)

VINEA. See Viena.

VINEGAR is a dilute form of acetic acid, having a flavour that varies according to the source from which it is obtained. Vinegar has been known from the earliest historical period, and its power of acting on and dissolving mineral substances rendered it an important agent in the hands of the alchemists. They were, however, unac- quainted with pure acetic acid; the most concentrated solution they possessed, called spiritus veneris, was obtained by distillation from cupric acetate (verdigris). The nature of acetous fermentation, and the rationale of the processes by which vinegar is prepared, are explained under Ferr- MENTATION (vol. ix. p. 98); and the acetic acid obtained by the destructive distillation of wood is dealt with under Tar (vol. xxiii. p. 57). Here we have to do only with the various kinds of vinegar used for table, medicinal, and other household purposes. Malt, wine, and beetroot vinegars are made by the slow process, whilst for the quick method dilute brandy or other spirit is most largely employed.

Malt vinegar is the preparation commonly manufactured in the United Kingdom, the high alcoholic duties there excluding the use of spirits in the industry. A fermented wort is prepared, as in brewing, which is run into casks laid on their side, bung-hole upwards, till they are three-fourths filled. These casks have a hole bored in each end near the top, aud between the three holes a con- stant circulation of air is secured over

the surface of the liquid. The casks are disposed in low-roofed vaults, artificially heated, in which free circulation of air is kept up ; but sometimes the process 18 carried on in the open air in what is termed a vinegar field. | According to the temperature (which should be about 70° Fahr.) and other conditions, the acetification of the wort may occupy from i weeks to months. From the casks the vinegar is transferred to large tuns provided with false bottoms, over which a thick layer of stalks and skins of grapes and raisins, &c., termed rapes, is strewn. Through this the vinegar is filtered from one tun into another,

Al

had considerable affinities with this last, and hig work, having the singular advantage of being in some sort foreign criticism, without undergoing the disadvantage which attaches in French eyes to all criticism of French affairs written in a foreign language, has had a great in- fluence on France. Vinet died on 15th May 1847 at

whereby it is cleared from mucilaginous matter and the last traces of alcohol arc thoroughly oxidized. J/ine vinegar is made in France and other vine-cultivating countries from wine lees and inferior wines. The finest vinegar is yielded by white wines, the product being purer, pleasanter, and generally stronger than ordinary malt vinegar. Vinegar is also largely prepared from beet- root, from the juice of other saccharine vegetables and fruits, and from sugar; and indecd all sources of alcohol may be regarded as possible materials for making viuegar. Quick method vinegar is made, principally in Germany, from dilute spirit (about one of proof spirit to six of water), to which are added small proportions of sugar, honey, or malt extract. The standard liquor used by dif- ferent manufacturers varies considerably. The process is also used to some extent in England for converting fermented and clarified malt wort into vinegar. Commercial viuegar varies much in strength. What is termed "proof" vinegar contains 4°6 per cent of real acetic acid ; and, as it requires twenty-four grains of anhy- drous carbonate of soda to neutralize each fluid ounce, it is also known as No, 24. In the same way weaker qualities are known as No. 22, No. 20, &c., these figures

indicating the grains of car- bonate of soda which neutralize a fluid ounce.

Vinegar is extensively consumed in the preparation of pickles and sauces, and as a table condiment, especially with salad vege- tables and fish. For many culinary purposes it is flavoured with aromatic herbs and spices. Aromatic vinegar, made from glacial acetic acid and perfumes, possesses a refreshing stimulating pun- gency, as is familiarly known by its use in vinaigrettes. Marseilles vinegar, or thieves' vinegar, is an aromatic preparation used as a prophylactic and masker of evil odours. Vinegar is also a men- struum for several medicinal agents; and in a concentrated con- dition it is a valuable rubefacient and external stimulant.

VINET, Atexanpre RopoipuHe (1797-1847), a French critic, though not a Frenchman, was born near Lausanne on 17th June 1797. He was educated for and duly entered the ministry of the Protestant Church, the date of his ordi- nation being 1819. He had, however, already acquired an important position as teacher of the French language and literature in the gymnasium at Basel, and during the whole of his life he was more of a critic than of a theologian, though he exercised some influence in the latter capacity, headed a secession from the national church in Vaud, was for a time professor of theology at Lausanne, and advo- cated an extreme toleration in the matter of religious formulas, together with the separation of church and state. As a theologian Vinet would already have been long for- gotten, despite some sermons and treatises which had a certain vogue in his native country, and, being in part translated into English, exercised some influence on English- speaking adherents of Calvinism. His performances as a literary critic, which for the most part represent his aca- demic lectures, are, however, of greater importance. By procuring for Sainte-Beuve an invitation to lecture at Lausanne on Port-Royal, he was the cause of one of the capital works of recent French literary history. But he had less indirect titles to fame in the same department than this, Like all other French writers of repute in Switzerland, he has been accused by French-born censors of that mysterious patavinity which is supposed to attach to Swiss French, and which has been illustrated in such a remarkable fashion by Rousseau, Benjamin Constant, Joseph and Xavier de Maistre, Tépffer, and others. But the persons thus branded were

probably content to write French as well as Livy wrote Latin. Vinet's Chrestomathie Francaise (1829), his Etudes sur la Littérature Francaise au XTX Siecle and his Histoire de la Littérature Fran- guise au XVIII Siecle, together with his Etudes sur Pascal, Etudes sur les Moralistes des XVI ef XVIJeme Stécles, Histoire de la Prédication pendant les kéformes, and other books gave evidence of a wide knowledge of litera- ture, a sober and acute literary judgment, and a very con- siderable faculty of appreciation. On the whole, he belongs to the academic school of critics rather than to the romantic- impressionist school, or to that rarer and better school than either which adjusts its theories to the work which is brought before it, and condemns nothing so long as it is 00d work according to the writer's own standard. He

24]

Clarens (Vaud). A considerable part of his works was not

printed till after his death.

VINNITSA, a district-town of Russia, in the govern-

ment of Podolia, is situated on the Bug, 137 miles to the

north-east of Kamenets-Podolsk, and 29 by rail from the Zhmerinka junction on the railway from Odessa to Lem- berg. It was founded in the 14th century, but nothing now reniains of its two stone forts. Its old Jesuit college is now a gymnasium. Owing to the great fertility of the neighbourhood, there are a number of distilleries ; and the Vinnitsa merchants, mostly Jews, carry on trade in corn and spirits. The population in 1884 was 18,580.

VIOL. See Vioxrn.

VIOLET. The violets comprise a genus of at least one hundred, some say two hundred species, found principally in temperate regions of the northern hemisphere ; a few also occur in mountainous districts of South America, while the genus is not wholly without representatives in Australia. The species are mostly low-growing herbs with alternate leaves

provided with large leafy stipules. The flowers are solitary, or rarely in pairs, at the end of slender axillary flower stalks. The flowers themselves are very irregular in form, with five sepals prolonged at the base, and five petals, the lowest one larger than the others and pro- vided with a spur. The five anthers are remarkable for the petal-like processes which extend beyond the anther cells and form a sort of cone around the style. The ovary is superior, one-celled, with three parietal placentas and numerous ovules. It is surmounted by a single style, which terminates in a dilated or hook-like stigma. The fruit is a capsule bursting loculicidally, i.e., through the centre of each of the three valves. The irregular con- struction of the flower is evidently connected with fertili- zation by insect agency. To reach the honey in the spur of the flower (of the pansy), says Miiller, the insect must thrust its proboscis into the flower close under the globular head of the stigma. This lies in the anterior part of a groove fringed with hairs on the inferior petal. The anthers shed their pollen into this groove, either of them- selves or when the pistil is shaken by the insertion of the bee's proboscis. The proboscis, passing down this groove to the spur, becomes dusted with pollen; as it is drawn back, it presses up the lip-like valve (of the stigma) so that no pollen can enter the stigmatic chamber; but as it enters the next flower it leaves some pollen on the upper surface of the valve, and thus cross-fertilization is effected. It is curious, however, that in the common violet, V. odorata and other species "cleistogamic" flowers occur of a greenish colour, so that they offer no attractions to insect visiters and their form is correspondingly regular. In such flowers self-fertilization is compulsory and very effectual, as seeds in profusion are produced.

Several species of Viola are native to Great Britaiu. V. odorata is highly prized for its fragrance, and in cultivation numerous varieties have originated. The garden pansies or heartseases are derivatives from V. tricolor, a cornfield weed, V. altatca, and V. grandifiora. They are reputed to have been first raised about 1810 by Lady Mary Bennet, with the assistance of her gardener, Mr Richardson, the term pansy or pensée having been long attributed to V. tricoler, The variety and richness of colouring in these flowers are very remarkable. " Bedding violas," which differ from pansies in some slight technical details, have been raised by crossing V. lutea with V. calcarata. The violas are credited with powerful

emetic and diuretic properties, on which account they have been admitted into some of the pharmacopceias; but they are now

very little used. XXIV. — 31

242

Descrip- | VIOLIN, a stringed instrument employed in orchestral tion of and chamber music. The body is a resonant box, composed the in- of belly, back, and six ribs, all shaped out of thin wood oa to various curves, the belly and back being scooped out of solid slabs, and the ribs planed and bent. The whole 1s glued together upon six internal blocks. Pine is used for the belly, maple for the other parts. The external surface is covered with a fine hard varnish of a brown, red, orange, or yellow colour, which renders the box more resonant. To this box is glued a solid neck or handle, slightly in- clined to the plane of the box, and along the whole instru- ment four gut strings are stretched by means of as many pegs and a tailpiece. They are tuned in fifths, thus— and set in vibration with a bow, strung with —= horsehair well rubbed with rosin, which is held = in the right hand, the scale being completed by stopping the strings with the fingers of the left hand, in which the instrument is held, on an ebony finger-board glued to the handle, and projecting over the body of the fiddle. The movable bridge, across which the strings are strained, forms the spring or mechanical centre of the violin, and answers to the reed in wood wind-instruments. It has two feet, of which the treble or right-hand one rests firmly on that part of the belly which is supported by a sound-post resting on the back, thus forming a rigid centre of vibration, while the bass or left-hand foot, resting on the freely-vibrating part of the belly, communicates to it, and through it to the air in the box, the vibrations which the bow excites in the strings. The belly is strengthened, and its vibration regulated and increased, by a longitudinal bar glued inside it exactly under the bass foot of the bridge. Two incisions in the belly, called sound-holes, from their letting out the sound, also facilitate and modify the vibration. The middle pair of ribs on each side have an inward curvature, to afford the bow better access to the strings. The superficial area of the belly is divided by the bridge into two approximately equal parts, for an obvious acoustical reason ;1 but the

upper half is longer and narrower than the lower, which is relatively short and broad. 'This device gives greater length to the vibrating portion of the strings, and hence greater compass to the instrument. It also brings the bowing place on the strings

nearer to the player. Descent The violin, as the name imports, is a modified form of of violin. the viol, an instrument constructed on exactly similar principles, though different in every detail. It dates from the middle of the 16th century; the viol was perfected somewhat earlier. During two centuries the two instru- ments were in use contemporaneously ; but the violii class gradually drove the viols from the field, on the principle which governs the general history of musical instruments. of the "survival of the loudest." The primitive viol is ' modified form of the lute; and the lute is an adaptation of the small lyre of classical antiquity, the name of which (jidicula) survives in both groups of the common names for bowed instruments (fidicula, fidula, fideille, vielle, fidel vedel, fiedel, fiddle ; in the Romance group, vidula, viula, viola, violino, violone, violoncello). The fidicula or lyre consisted of a resonant box, having a yoke (jugum or transtullum) instead of a neck, and one string for each note. Obviously, by substituting for the jugum a handle or neck, and thus enabling the fingers of the left hand to stop the strings at will, the number of strings and the tension on the box could be diminished, the scale of notes increased, and the task of the right hand facilitated. By this improvement the class of instruments denominated lyre developed into the lute class ; and by other improve- ments upon the original basis it developed into the harp.

u In order that the vibrational impulse may be given as nearly as possible at the centre of the mass of air in the resonant box,

Lyre.

y PeOadnl N

The origin of the peculiar mechanism which, when added to the lute, produced the viol, viz., the movable bridge, Viol, sound-post, and bow, is obvious. The bow is a develop- | ment of the plectrum employed for sounding the lyre. The bridge was borrowed from the Greek xavwv, or

monochord. Movable bridges (traywyets, subductaria, ponticulr) were employed to divide the monochord so as to produce the intervals of the various scales.2 The sole use of this in- strument being to train the ear of singers, it may well be supposed that musicians would endeavour to render the tone continuous, the better to support the voice ; and this could be readily done by substituting for the plectrum a common military bow, with the string well rubbed Thebo with rosin,?—a substance largely used by the Greeks and | | Italians. This supposition is confirmed by the fact that | the marine trumpet, the most primitive of bowed instru- ments, is simply a bowed monochord. Although we can point to no pictorial representation of the bow as applied to musical instruments earlier than the 10th or 11th cen- tury, it is reasonable to conclude that the bridge and bow were adapted to the monochord and fidicula during the later empire. A substitute for the bow was afterwards | found in the rosined wheel and handle, doubtless first | applied to the monochord, afterwards perfected in the large j medizval organistrum, and still employed in the smaller vielle or hurdy-gurdy. The bow, however, held and still j holds its ground as the most convenient means of pro- ducing continuous tone from stringed instruments. The substitution of a hank of horse-hair for the single bow-string dates from very early times.

Except the marine trumpet or bowed monochord, we find in Europe no trace of any large bowed instruments | before the appearance of the viol in the 15th century. The geige, crowd, rebec, and fidel, as the small bowed in- Geige, | struments of the Middle Ages were variously called, were ctow', small enough to be rested on the shoulder during perform- 4°. ance, and were usually rather smaller than the modern gaq. | violin. It is not easy to assign each of these names to | any particular form of instrument. They all had in com- mon a resonant box, either circular, oval, or semi-pear- shaped, a handle with a finger-board, a tail-piece, a bridge, and from two to four strings tuned to fourths or fifths. The pegs were set vertically to the handle above the finger- i board, as in the modern guitar. The bow, which was short and clumsy, had a considerable curvature, and the | string a high tension. None of these instruments can have had a deeper compass than a boy's voice. The use of the | fidel in the hands of the troubadours, to accompany the | adult male voice, explains

the attempts which we trace in | the 13th century to lengthen the oval form of the instru-

ment. A contrary curvature, as in the guitar, was then given to the sides of the resonant box, to enable the bow to reach the strings of the enlarged instrument. This may be denominated the troubadour's fiddle.

The invention next to be described formed the turning- Side- point in the history of bowed instruments. In order to ee keep in place the ribs of the troubadour's fiddle, with 4 their troublesome contrary flexures, side-blocks inside the blocks. | instrument were probably used. By cutting these blocks | with an angle towards the outside, dividing each side rib into three smaller ones, and giving the middle one on each side a contrary curve so as to meet the upper and ee Eee ee ee eee

: Meibomius, Auctores Musice Antique, Amsterdam, 1652, p. 89. ; Rosin, manufactured as now from turpentine, was generally used in Italy and Greece in the preparation of wine (Pliny, V.12., xiv. 20, 25), as an ingredient in medicine, and as a cosmetic (Scribonius Largus, Compos., 187 sg.). Violin rosin is called in French colophane and in German colophonium, from the town of Colophon ; and Colo- phonian rosin is described by Pliny as "pree ceteris fulva, si teratur

alba fit, gravior odore," Good violin rosin answers exactly to this description.

Yronrin

lower ribs at an angle on the block, the resonant box was greatly strengthened, its construction became easier, and it became possible to make instruments of indefinitely larger size. Corner-blocks thus converted the fidel into the viol. Single corner-blocks (contrary flexures being still given to the upper ribs) were sometimes used, and often occur later on; but double corner-blocks came at once into general use, and resulted in the construction of the viol in several sizes. The medizval fiddle appears originally to have had a perfectly flat belly like the lute. It must early have been discovered that a belly scooped out to a slight curve offered greater resistance to the pres- sure of the strings transmitted by the bridge. Bellies

thus scooped out probably came into general use with the in- vention of corner-blocks. The back continued to be, and in the viol family has always been, a piece of flat joinery. Theoretically, no doubt, this is right ; for a scooped-out back is false in construction, as there is nothing for the arch of the back to carry. But, as a back thus modelled and forming a duplicate of the belly, as in the violin, produces a much more powerful tone, this consideration has come to be disregarded.

243

sponding voice, and being from the purely musical point of view superfluous. It appeared, however, concurrently with the bass, as soon as the invention of corner-blocks made it possible to construct bowed instruments of a size only limited by the possibility of playing them. As the discant viol is determined in size by the proportions of the bent arm, the tenor viol by the height above the knee of a sitting player, the bass by a relative height when the instrument is held between the knees, instead of supported on them, so the double bass is determined in size by the height of the standing figure, the bottom of the resonant box resting on the ground. In this respect it corresponds with the marine trumpet, which afforded an obvious hint for its construction. Originally it was made for six strings, the tuning being as follows :—

Double Bass In imitation probably of the largest register

Viol of pipes on the improved organs which were –2Z=– then being built, the double bass viol was used "= as sub-bass. For this purpose the three

=

highest strings were probably soon found to be useless, and they must have been very liable to break 3 and, as the pressure of useless strings impairs the resonance of

q

The viol The viol is an instrument, or rather family of instru- | the instrument, they seem to have been gradually dropped. family. iments, of merit and interest, though now superseded by | The three lowest strings are the same as those used for the violin, with the exception of the double bass, which | the modern double bass. still survives as a practical instrument. The following The earliest use of the viols was to double the parts of Develop- are the points in which the viol differs from the violin:- — | vocal concerted music ; they were next employed in ae . The Vi reqs special compositions for the viol trio written in the same "¢ Yio! he Viol has— The Violin has— M h ate fe pees 9 1. A flat back of joiner's work. | 1. A scooped-out back, modelled Compass. | any such works im the form o a like the belly. or "fancies," and preludes with suites in dance form, by 2. Shoulders with a contrary /2. Square shoulders, and a top | the masters of the end of the 16th and 17th centuries, mea in une a al ane like the bottom. exist in manuscript ; a set by Orlando Gibbons, which are 3. iMich Blige iounted < a 3. A low bridge with feet only, | $004 specimens, has been published by the English Musical 4. C-shaped, sometimes "flaming | 4. f-shaped sound-holes. Antiquarian Society. Later, the viols, especially the bass, sword," sound-holes. were employed as solo instruments, the methods of com- 5. A thin broad handle. 5. A thick narrow handle. position and execution being based on those of the lute. 4 ee oo nes, toned bye Hous gieipenimiedigy Nts.) aS lates aunistonieeit fact equally adapted for the bass a Eitan cities ee + Sontateotiers: viol, and vice versa. In the 17th century, when the violin 8. Deep ribs. 8. Shallow ribs. was coming into general use, constructive innovations be- 9. A soft penetrating tone. 9. A ringing brilliant tone. gan which resulted in the abandonment of the trio of pure In the matter of 4 and 7 a few viols, made after the six-stringed viols. Instruments which show these innova- violin had been perfected, and chiefly Italian, follow the | tions are the quinton, the lyre, and the viola d'amore. violin, The modern double bass also follows the violin in | The first-mentioned is of a type intermediate between the these points and in 5. The viol was made in three main | viol and the violin. In the case of the discant and tenor kinds,—discant, tenor, and bass,—answering to the cantus, | viol the lowest string, which was probably found to be of medius, and bassus of vocal music. Each of these three | little use, was abandoned, and the pressure on the bass kinds admitted of some variation in dimensions, especially | side of the belly

thus considerably lightened. The five the bass, of which three distinct sizes ultimately came to | strings were then spread out, as it were, to the compass be made—(1) the largest, called the concert bass viol ; | of the six, so as to retain the fundamental principle of the (2) the division or solo bass viol, usually known by its | outer strings being two octaves apart. This was effected Italian name of viola da gamba; and (3) the lyra or tabla- | by tuning the lower half of the instrument in fifths like ture bass viol. The normal tuning of the viols, as laid | the violin and the upper half in fourths. This innovation down in the earliest books, was adapted from the lute to | altered the tuning of the treble and tenor viols, thus— the bass viol, and repeated in higher intervals in the rest. | One half of the instrument was a ee Diseant Viol. Tenor Viol, Viclada Gamba. The fundamental idea, | therefore a viol, the other half 1 mons 'Tenor Quinton, ; '_ Gass Viol.) ag in the lute, was that | a violin, the middle string form- . ——sS—— —— a= — the outermost strings | ing the division. The tenor ——— = = o~- =s— should be two octaves | viol thus improved was called – = apart—hence the in- | in France the quinte, and the ———— —<—_£_—_- = S — tervals of fourths with | treble corresponding to it the = ———- SS a third in the middle. | quinton. From the numerous specimens which survive it Discant The highest, or discant viol, is obviously not a treble but | must have been a popular instrument, as it is undoubtedly "io an alto instrument, the three viols answering to the three | a substantially excellent one. The relief in the bass, and Inale voices. As a treble instrument, not only for street | the additional pressure caused by the higher tuning in the and dance music, but in orchestras, the rebec or geige did | treble, gave it greater brilliancy, without destroying the duty until the invention of the violin, and long afterwards. | pure, ready, and sympathetic tone which characterizes the The discant viol first became a real treble instrument in viol. While the tendency in the case of the discant and __ the hands of the French makers, who converted it into | tenor was to lighten and brighten them, the reverse process ouble the quinton. The double bass, the largest of the viols, is | took place in that of the bass. The richer and more sonor-

 not a legitimate member of the family, having no corre-

ous tones of the viola da gamba were extended downwards

Sympa- thetic strings.

The violin.

244

by the addition of a string tuned to double bass A, thus— Seven-stringed Marais, a French virtuoso, is usually credited

Gocv. with this improvement ; and this extended com-

-: pass is recognized in the classical viola da gamba eZ. writings of Sebastian Bach and De Caix

= WHervelois. The result, however, was not uni- versally satisfactory, for Abel used the six-stringed instru- ment; and the seven strings never came into general use in England, where the viola da gamba was more generally employed and survived longer than elsewhere.

The want of positive power, which is the weakness of the viol and ultimately drove it from the field, must have been early noticed on a comparison of its delicate tones with the harsher notes of the rebec. Hardly had the viol appeared, when makers cast about for means of augmenting its tone. One way of doing this was by additional strings in unisons, fifths, and octaves, a device which had been already employed in the small fiddles of the Middle Ages, and is identical in principle with the augmentation of diapason tone on the organ by means of other registers. The double or treble strung viol, in various sizes, was known as the lyre (Italian, accordo) ; but this multiplica- tion of strings proceeds on a false principle, for each ad- ditional string diminishes the resonance of the box, and at the same time hardens the tone and increases the task of the player. More ingenious and successful was the in- vention of sympathetic metal strings, usually steel, laid under the finger-board, as close as possible to the belly, and speaking by consonance with the notes produced on the bowed strings. From this resonance by sympathy the viol thus strung acquired the general name of wola damore. The original viola da gamba when so strung came to be called the viola bastarda; the seven-

stringed bass, with an elaborately perfected sympathetic apparatus, was well known in the 18th century by the name of the bordone or

baritone, and was a favourite instrument with musical epi- cures. Instruments made on this principle are found in all sizes; even kits are met with having sympathetic strings (sordino d'amore). Violins with sympathetic strings (usually five) are more rare; the viola d'amore chiefly used was of tenor size and compass. Originally tuned as to its bowed strings like the pure tenor viol, an additional string was given it, and the so-called "harp-way" tuning adopted, thus— viola d'Amore, Violad'Amore, The sympathetic strings were at- "it tuning. sharp tuning. tached to ivory pegs driven in- == —s— to the bottom block, passed a «2— through the mi ms a bridge, or over a low bridge o ——= ~—je— their near as possible —— = to the fstees of the belly, under the fingerboard, and were strained to pitch either by means of additional pegs, or, better, by wrest-pins driven into the sides of the peg box and tuned by a key. Originally Six, seven, or eight sympathetic strings were used which were tuned to the diatonic scale of the piece in per- formance. Later, a chromatic set of twelve strings was employed ; and instruments are met with having a double set (24) of chromatic strings, two for each semitone in the scale. With thirty-one strings to be kept in perfect tune the task of the player must have been arduous indeed : and it is not strange that instruments so elaborate and troublesome were abandoned. Ina moist climate like that of Great Britain it is practically impossible to keep a viola d'amore in playing order, the steel strings being in most of their length covered by the fingerboard and out of reach, while the slightest. rust impairs the resonance, and much rust renders the instrument completely useless, The improvements which were to develop an ultimate bowed Instrument for permanent musical use proceeded in the opposite direction to the lyre and viola d'amore: they

Y¥ieLiIwn

consisted in increasing yet more the resonance of the box, by making it lighter and more symmetrical and by string- ing it more lightly, instead of more heavily. This was really falling back on primitive principles, for the hints were certainly derived from old extant specimens of the crowd and

the geige. Existing pictures prove that the oval and the circular geige were made with nearly flat backs and bellies of correlative pattern ; and it was natural to seek to reproduce their more powerful tone in the viol by giving it shallower ribs and a back modelled like the belly, and by assimilating the top of the instrument, where the handle is added, to the bottom. This change at once transformed the box of the viol into that of the violin, and the transformation was completed by rejecting the lute tuning with its many strings and tuning the instru- ment by fifths, as the geige and rebec had always been tuned. The tenor viol was apparently the first instrument in which the change was made, about the middle of the 16th century, and it was so successful that it was quickly applied to the treble and bass instruments.

The question so often mooted, Who invented the violin ? may therefore be dismissed. The instrument was produced by applying to the viol certain principles borrowed from its smaller predecessors. It would be equally correct to say that it was produced by applying to the geige other princi- ples borrowed from the viol. Tradition indicates one of the Tieffenbriickers, a German family whose members for more than a century were famous lute-makers in Venetia and Lombardy, as the inventor. The earliest instrument of the violin type known to the present writer is a tenor made by Fr. Linaroli of Bergamo, at Venice, in 1563; and the earliest makers whose authentic works have descended to us in considerable numbers are Gaspar da Sald and Maggini, both of Brescia.

An important distinction should be mentioned which High —

divides violins into two classes, known respectively as the eon } {

“high” and the “flat” model. On this subject much has been said and written ; but it has not been discussed scien- tifically, nor has the prevalence of one model over the other at different times and in different places been accounted for. It is understood that, while the flat model, which has now practically driven the high model from the field, yields a tone that is more powerful and travels further, the high model yields a tone which comes out more readily, and is softer and more flute-like, although less capable of light and shade. The high model is less convenient for the player, because when the instrument is rested on the

clavicle the strings are at a greater altitude in relation to the right arm, which accordingly requires to be raised. Hence the high model has become less popular as the art of violin- playing has developed, and is undoubtedly less suitable to the elaborate system now in use. These remarks apply to instruments of pronounced high model; for the distinction is in fact a matter of degree, and is purely mechanical in origin. The flattest models rise about twelve millimetres above the ribs, while the highest do not exceed twenty, and many of the best violins have an elevation between these limits. The object of the rise being to give Just such a degree of resistance to the pressure of the bridge as will set the enclosed air in due vibration, and this de- gree being approximately the same in all violins, the amount of elevation must obviously be relative to the strength and elasticity of the fibres of the belly. The more regular the shape of the box,—that is, the flatter the model, —the more perfect and the more completely blended will be the undulations of the mass of air within, and the more uniformly sonorous and musical the tone ; but owing to the pressure of the strings only strong and elastic wood can be used for this model. Wood of stiff and brittle fibre-must be worked to a higher arch, or if used for the

Sea a ee — er os

violins, |

A eS a Se

avira

pete

Early Italian makers.

German, English, and _ French

makers,

V¥1lOLIN

flat model must be left too thick for perfect vibration. Hence we might expect ta find the flat and the high model employed respectively where different qualities of wood are available, with a corresponding result in the tone. Fine elastic pine is chiefly found on the southern slopes of the Alps; and thereabouts the best viols and violins have always been made. The famous violin-makers carried on their trade at Brescia, Cremona, Mantua, Milan, and Venice, while the Piedmontese Alps and the Apennines furnished material for some makers in Piedmont and at Bologna. High-modelled violins, and flatter instruments of thicker wood and inferior sonority, were chiefly made in Tyrol, Germany, France, and England, where the available mate- rial was less tenacious and elastic.

The early Italian school is chiefly represented by the Brescian makers, Gaspar da Sald, Giovanni Paolo Maggini, Giovita Rodiani, and the two Zanettos (1580-1630). It is, however, misleading to denominate it the Brescian school, for its characteristics are shared by the earliest makers of Cremona and Venice. To eyes familiar with the geometrical curves of the later Cremona school most of the violins of these makers, like the early violins of England and Ger- may, have a rude and uncouth appearance. The height of the model varies; the pattern is attenuated; the f-holes share the general rudeness of design, and are set high in the pattern. Andreas Amati of Cremona, the eldest maker of that name, effected some improvements on this primitive model; but the violin owes most to is sous, Antonio and Geronimo, who were partners. Nicholas, son of Geronimo, and Antonio Stradivari, the pupil of Nicholas, each did something to perfect the model ;. but the substantial im- provements which converted the Brescian violin into the modern instrument were the work of Antonio and Geronimo. These im- provements, which were, in fact, of an artistic rather than a scien- tific nature, consisted in modelling the instrument in all its outlines and surfaces to regular curves. Painting and inlaying had long been employed in the decoration of stringed instruments; but the brothers Amati were the first who applied to the violin the funda- mental law of decorative art, that the decorative and constructive elements should be blended in their inception : in other words, the construction should be itself decorative and the decoration itself constructive. The nature of the instrument suggested the applica- tion of this law, for all extraneous additions to the varnished wood of

which it consists tend todamp the tone. Nicholas Amati (1596- 1684) made some slight improvements in the Cremona model, and Antonio Stradivari (1649-1737) finally settled the typical Cremona pattern, which has been generally followed; for the majority of violins since made, whcther by good or bad makers, are copies of Stradivari. Besides the last-named, the following makers worked generally on the Amati model,—Cappa, Gobetti, the Grancino family, Andreas Guarnieri, and his son Giuseppe, the Ruggieri family, and Serafin of Venice. Balestrieri, the Bergonzi family, Alessandro Gagliano, the earlier members of the Guadagnini family, Montagnana, and Panormo were pupils or followers of Stradivari. Landolfi, Storioni, and Carlo Giuseppe Testore, a pupil of Giovanni Grancino, leaned to the model of Giuseppe Guarnieri del Gest. Some resemblances, especially in the matter of the varnish, are traceable between the works of makers who lived contemporaneously in the same town, ¢.g., in Naples, Milan, and Venice.

The Amati method was adapted to the higher model by Jacob Stainer of Absam, near Hall in Tyrol, whose well-known pattern Was chiefly followed by the makers of England, Tyrol, and Germany, down to the middle of the 18th century. It thenceforward fell into disuse, owing to the superior musical qualities of the Cremona violin and to improved means of communication, which enabled the violin- makers of other countries to procure wood sufficiently soft and tenacious to be worked to the flat modcl. The school of Stainer is Tepresented amongst many others by Albani, Hornsteiner, the Klotz family (who made large numbers of instruments excellent in their kind), Schorn of Salzburg, and Withalm of Nuremberg. The English makers may be divided into three successive groups :—1. an antique English school, having a character of its own (Rayman, Urquhart, Pamphilon, Barak Norman, Duke of Oxford, fac),)) 2 Pa, imitators of Stainer, at the head of whom stands Peter Wamsley (Smith, Barrett, Cross, Hill, Aireton, Norris, &c.); 3. a later school Who leaned to the Cremona model (Banks, Duke of Holborn, Betts, the Forsters, Gilkes, Carter, Fendt, Parker, Harris, Matthew Hardie of Edinburgh, &c.). The early French makers have little merit or interest (Bocquay, Gavinies, Pierray, Guersan, &c.); but the later copyists of the Cremona models (Lupot, Aldric, Chanot the elder, Nicholas, Pique,

Silvestre, Vuillaume, &c.) produced admir- able instruments, some of which rank next in merit to the first-rate makers of Cremona.

_ The tenor violin, in compass a fifth lower than the treble

Violin, appears to have preceded the latter; and -from

245

Basso da

Tenor Violin. Violoncello. Conca €Xisting specimens we —=— ~~ ———— 1 2 ——— know that the bass vio- = Se SS lin, now termed the

— > violoncello, with a tun-

G—=— ing an octave below the tenor, appeared very ———— _ shortly afterwards. A double bass violin, tuned a fourth below the violoncello and usually known as the basso da camera, completed the set of instruments in violin shape ; but from the difficulty attending its manipulation it never came into general use. The celebrated double bass player, Dragonetti, occasionally used the basso da camera, and an English player named Hancock, who dis- pensed with the highest or E string, is still remembered for his performances on this unusual instrument.

The tenor and violoncello are made on the same general model and principles as the violin, but with certain modi- fications. Both are relatively to their pitch made smaller than the violin, because, if they were so constructed as to have the same relation to the pitch and tension of the strings as the violin, they would not only have an over- powering tone but would be unmanageable from their size. This relatively diminished size, both in the dimen- sions of the instrument and in the thickness of the wood and strings, gives to the tenor and violoncello a graver and more sympathetic tone. To some extent this reduced size is compensated by giving them a greater proportional height in the ribs and bridge ; the increase is hardly per- ceptible in the tenor, but is very noticeable in the violon- cello. Correlative to this general diminution in the size of the instrument and the tension of the strings as the bass register is entered,

there is a progressive diminu- tion in the size and tension of the strings of each instrument, the treble string having in all cases the greatest tension and being thickest in proportion, though actually the thinnest. This is partly due to the fact that the ear demands greater brilliancy and force in the higher register ; but it has also a mechanical reason. The treble foot of the bridge is fixed, while the bass foot vibrates freely ; additional stability is given to the rigid side and additional freedom to the bass side by lightening the tension in each string progressively towards the bass. This can be verified by the simple experiment of stringing up a violin with the strings reversed, but without altering the sound-post and bass-bar. Still further to lighten the tension on the bass side, the lowest string of the violin and the two lowest of the tenor and violoncello are spe- cially made of thin gut and covered with fine metal wire. Such strings yield a grave tone with comparatively little tension.

It is obvious that, if the lowest string, or the two lowest strings, are elevated in pitch, the tension will be greater, and the violin will produce a more powerful tone; if the bass string is lowered, the contrary will take place. By adapting the music to this altered tuning (scordatura) some novel effects are produced. The follow-

ing are the principal scordatwre which have been occasionally employed by various players,

] —= = — = = = _————— —s— = Tartini, Biber. Biber Nardini. Barbella, Castrucci. Campagnoli. (Scotch Reels.) | —— = —ho—— —— ae = a z- ss bs = Lolli. De Bériot, De Bériot. Paganini. Baillot. Prume, Mazas, &c.

The violoncello is less amenable to the scordatura than the violin ; the only classical instance is the tuning employed by Bach _—— in his fifth sonata, which consists in lowering the first

—— string by a tone. ane… =: It is commonly said that an old violin is better than

Bach. anewone, Other things being equal, and supposing

Tenor violin and violon- cello.

Scorda- tura.

“Good” the older to be in fair preservation, this is true ;

violins.

Violin bow.

Strings.

246

it is also true that of old violins the best, as a rule, have survived. Good violins, however, have been continuously made, and are still being made, though since the middle of the 18th century the cheapness of the “trade” fiddle, made by the hundred by divided labour, has much circumscribed the business of the higher-class workman. The best workmen of different countries differ little in merit ; but it_ is seldom that any maker out of Italy is successful in varnishing his work so as to impart to it the superior resonance which characterizes the best Italian violins. he varnish, originally merely orna- mental and preservative, has become an essential part of the work, from its intimate connexion with the tone. The secret of making varnish is not lost, as is sometimes stated ; the difficulty consists in applying and drying it with reference to the climate where the operation takes place. In moist climates, oil varnish, which is the best, dries too slowly ; hence the use of spirit varnish, which is more manageable, but has not the effect of permeating the superficial tissues of the wood so as to increase and perpetuate its elasticity. Many well-made modern violins, notably those of some French makers, have proved failures, because they have, under a mistaken belief, been made out of old and dry wood. After a few years pine begins to lose its elasticity; the old makers used wood that was only just sufficiently seasoned, and they preserved its elasticity by applying their varnish at once. eee ;

It is also commonly said that a flat violin is preferable to a high- modelled one. This must be accepted with some modification. Instruments which

are excessively flat should be avoided, for reasons above stated. A moderate height, rather less than the medium, is most favourable to vibration ; what is really essential is that the sound-holes should be in horizontal planes, not in planes inclined at a considerable angle to the transverse section of the instrument. Such sound-holes, as may be proved at once by the ear, have the property of immediately letting out the vibrations of the small mass of air which lies directly under the bridge, and thus rob the great mass of air in the body of the fiddle of the impulse necessary to set it properly in vibration ; hence the tone, though quickly yielded and not feeble to the ear of the player, is found at a short distance to be deficient in force and flexibility. The violins most in request are the larger specimeus of the Amati family, of Stradivari and his best pupils, and of the two cousins Giuseppe Guarnieri,—the instruments of Giuseppe called "del Gest," from his use of the sacred monogram on his tickets, being by some players preferred to those of Stradivari. For old instruments of the best class purchasers must be prepared to pay from £200 to £600, according to their quality and state of preservation. Second-class old Italian instruments, and first-rate specimens of the best school of French copyists, can usually be bought for smaller sums down to £20. The chief seats of the wholesale violin manufacture are Mirecourt in France and Markneukirchen in Saxony.

The violin bow, which is made of Brazil wood, was reduced to its present admirable shape about 1780 by Francois Tourte of Paris (1747-1835), whose bows are still esteemed above all others. A fair Tourte bow is generally worth £10; but a fine one has been sold for £30 ; and one of his best violoncello bows, which are rarities, was recently sold in Paris for £44. Bows, however, which leave little to be desired are made in great numbers by English, French, and German makers. A good bow is of more importance to a player than a good violin ; something may be done with an indiffer- ent instrument, but no one can play with a bad bow.

The best strings have always been made in Italy ; the climate of northern Europe is unsuitable for the manufacture. Good strings are essential to the player, and they should be frequently changed, as they only retain their shape at the place where the bow touches them, and their elasticity, for a limited period.

For further informatio i ringed i : referred to Vidal, Les i ius ees ang eS Pagrenaye ae mann, Gesch. der Bogen-Instrumente (Brunswick, 1882); and the various articles in Grove's Dictionary of Music and Musicians. The best handbook of violin- makers is Hart's Violin (London, 1875-80). The process of violin-making is well described in HE, H. Allen's Violin-Making as it was and ts (London, 1885). A smaller work, which can be recommended, is Maugin's Manuel du Luthier (Paris, 1869). The art of playing the violin has been practically treated at length by Campagnoli, Baillot, Spohr, Ferdinand David, Alard, and many other professors of the various schools; but the only attempt to explain it system- atically with reference to sound scientific theory is contained in an unpre- tending brochure by Karl Courvoisier (Die Violin-Technik, Cologne, 1878),

which it is impossible to praise too highly. See also Musical Inst: is- toric, Rare, and Unique, by A. J. Hipkins (Edinburgh, 1887). Ea pty

VIOLLET-LE-DUC, Evcknse Emmanver (1814-187 9) French architect and writer on archeology, was born at Paris on 27th January 1814. He was a pupil of Achille Leclére, and in 1836-37 spent a year studying Greek and Noman architecture in Sicily and Rome. His chief interest was, however, in the art of the Gothic period, and, like Sir Gilbert Scott in England, he was employed to "restore" some of the chief medieval buildings of France, his earliest works being the abbey church of Vézelay, various churches

yao

VIO

at Poissy, St Michel at Carcassonne, the church of Semur in Cdte-d'Or, and the fine Gothic town-halls of Saint- Antonin and Narbonne, all carried out between 1840 and 1850. From 1845 to 1856 he was occupied on the restoration of Notre Dame in Paris in conjunction with Lassus,! and also with that of the abbey of St Denis. In 1849 he began the restoration of the fortifications of Car- cassonne and of Amiens cathedral; and in later years he re- stored Laon cathedral, the chateau of Pierrefonds, and many other important buildings. He was an intimate friend of Napoleon IIL, and during the siege of Paris (1871) gave

valuable help as an engineer to the beleaguered army.? He held many important offices, both artistic and political, and was for many years inspector-general of the ancient buildings throughout a large part of France. His last work was the general scheme for the Paris exhibition buildings in 1878. He died on 17th September 1879.

As a designer Viollet-le-Duc occupied only a secondary place ; but as a writer on medieval architecture and the kindred arts he takes the highest rank. His two great dictionaries arc the standard works in their class, and are most beautifully illustrated with very skilful drawings by his own hand. Viollet-le-Duc was a man of the most varied and brilliant abilities, endowed with a power of work which has seldom been equalled. He was at once an artist, a man of science, a learned archeologist, and a scholar. His map showing the rock contours aud the glaciers of Mont Blanc is a model of its kind, which combines great artistic beauty with the accuracy of the most skilful engineer. His strong poetical fancy enabled him to reconstruct the life and buildings of the Middle Ages in the most vivid way. His principal literary works were the Dictionnaire de V Architecture Francaise du XI. aw XVI. Siecle, 1853-69 ; Dictionnaire du Mobilier Francais, 1854-75; L' Architec- ture Militaire au Moyen Age, 1854; Habitations Modcrnes, 1874- 1877 ; Histoire d'une Maison, 1873 ; Histoire dwne Forteresse, 1874 ; Histoire de V Habitation Humaine, 1875 ; Le Massif de Mont-Blanc, 1876; LD' Art Russe, 1877; Histoire dun Heétel-de-Ville et dune Cathédrale, 1878 ; La Décoration appliquée aux Edifices, 1879 ; as well as many minor works dealing with separate buildings.

VIOLONCELLO. See Vio1in.

VIOTTI, Giovanni Battista (1753-1824), violinist and musical composer, was born at Fontanetto in Pied- mont, on 23d March 1753. He learned the rudiments of music from his father, a veterinary surgeon and an amateur horn-player; and in 1764 Giovannini taught him the violin for a year. Two years later he was placed by the Marchesa di Voghera under the violinist Pugnani at Turin. In 1780 Viotti, having already made himself a name, travelled through Germany and Poland to Russia, where the empress Catherine honoured him with marks of extra- ordinary favour.

He next appeared in London, in com- pany with Pugnani, and at once achieved a brilliant and lasting reputation. In 1782 he was equally successful in Paris. Two years later he was appointed leader of Prince de Soubise's private orchestra; and in 1788 he undertook the direction of the opera, raising the performances, with Cherubini's assistance, to a very high level. Viotti also joined with Feydeau-de-Brou in constructing the famous Feydeau theatre. In 1790 the Revolution compelled him to fly to England ; but a charge of Revolutionary espionage drove him for a time to Hamburg, whence, however, he returned in 1795, From that time he resided almost uninterruptedly in London until 1818, when he once more settled in Paris, resumed the direction of the opera, and retired in 1822 with a pension. He died in London on 10th March 1824.

Viotti's playing was distinguished by an extreme purity of style, a magnificent tone, and an endless variety of poetical and ima- ginative expression. He was undoubtedly the best violinist of the age, and the best composer for his instrument. Among his works are 29 violin concertos, a series of symphonies concertantes for two violins, 45 duos, 18 trios, and 21 quartetts, and a great number of sonatas, notturnos, and other instrumental works. His school was worthily perpetuated by his pupil Rode.

1 He published in 1867-69 a fine work showing his not very success- ful coloured decoration applied to the chapels of Notre Dame.

" See his Mémoire sur la Défense de Paris, 1871.

|

YirtR

VIPER. The vipers constitute a family (Viperidz) of Old-World, poisonous, viviparous snakes, which have a single movable poison fang on either side of the upper jaw, without any excavation or pit between the eye and the nostril,—thus differing from the Crotalide. They have a post-frontal and a maxillary bone, which latter is swollen and upright, articulating with the pre-frontal by a ginglymus, and short—not reaching the premaxilla. Vipers are mostly more or less thick-bodied and _ short-

tailed, the head being entirely covered above with small scales, except in a single species. The nose is often re- curved, and some scales of the head are elongated so as to form "horns" in several species, The main points in the anatomy! of the group have been already described in the article Reprites, and their zoological relations stated in the article SNAKES.

There is much diversity of opinion as to the classifica- tion of the vipers, and, as Dr Alexander Strauch appears to be the author who has worked out the group with the greatest care and completeness, his classification is here provisionally adopted.

The Viperide thus consist of three genera, which are

distinguished as follows :—

(1) Two rows of sub-caudal scales….....0. { Pe face s.)

(2) One row of sub-caudal scales—

a. Gular scales smooth, body rounded or Echis depressed, tail simple ….....0-. (1 species.)

b. Gular scales strongly keeled, body com- f Atheris pressed, tail prehensile…..... { (3 species.)

The common viper (V. berus) is easily distinguished from the harmless ring-snake by the black and white (or yellow) band behind the head, which is generally con- spicuous in the latter animal. It is also distinguishable (apart from individual varieties) from the snake Coronella, rare in England, by having a dark V-shaped mark on its head and a dark zig-zag line down the back. It is this viper which has the top of the head covered by shields (which may be regular or irregular in outline) instead of small scales only. It is one of the most widely distributed of snakes, being found from northern Spain eastwards to the island of Saghalin, and from the northern boundary of Persia to beyond the Arctic Circle in Scandinavia, though it is not found in Ireland. It inhabits all sorts of situations, though it prefers a dry soil, and it may be met with at an elevation of 9000 feet above the sea. It seeks its prey at night, and

penetrating the burrows of mice will eat their nestlings. Its bite is sometimes fatal to large dogs, and occasionally to weakly children. It brings forth in April and May from five to fourteen young, which are hatched as they are born.

The other European vipers are V. aspis, V. ammodytes, and V. latastii.2 V-. aspis is very like the common viper, save as to the seales on the head and the fact that its snout is somewhat turned up. It inhabits France, Switzerland, and Italy. V. ammodytes 1s asomewhat larger species, with a singular pointed process extend- ing upwards from the snout end. It is found in Egypt, Syria, Asia Minor, Turkey, Greece, southern Austria, and Italy. V, latastii is a species intermediate between V. aspis and V. ammo-dytes. It inhabits Spain, Portugal, Morocco, and Algiers. Thus, of the four European vipers, two are also found in Africa and one in both Africa and Asia. There are three exclusively Indian Vipers,—V. xanthina, V. persica, and V. russcllii. V. xanthina 1s an animal about 24 feet long. As in all the other non-European Vipers, the body scales are strongly keeled. It is found in Asia Minor, Syria, and Persia. V. persica is, as its name implies, a Persian animal. The scales above each eye are so modified as to form a horn. V. russellii is hornless, but very large: it is said to attain a length of more than 6 feet. It is widely distributed, inhabiting India, Burmah, Siam, Ccylon, Sumatra, and Java,

1 For a description of the poison fang, see vol, xx. p. 457; and for a figure of the skull, see vol. xx. p. 452. In collections wherein very many specimens are preserved it is

Possible to find transitional forms between all the four European species,

Two vipers are common to Asia and Africa. Oue of these, V. mauritanica, extends from Algiers to Persia. It maybe nearly 5 feet long. The other species, V. cerastes, is a much smaller snake, never being much more than 20 inches in length. It is remark- able for two long pointed horns (which stand up over either eye), and is widely distributed in North Africa and Arabia. All the other species of the genus Vipera are exclusively African, and only one is found north of the Sahara, Thisis V. avizenne. It

has no horns, and only attains a length of about 16 inches. JV. superciliaris is also a small snake, but it has a large rugose supra- orbital plate. It comes from Mozambique. The puff-adder (V. arictans) is a large thick snake, which may be 4 feet long. Itisa very deadly animal, and is widely distributed over southern and central Africa, extending to both the east and west coast of that continent. It is withont horns. V. nasicornis is a beautifully

¢ eX Fig. 1.— Vipera nasicornis. coloured, large, and bulky snake, which may be upwards of 6 feet long. Two horns project obliquely forwards from just in front of either nostril. It inhabits southern Africa. It is a very venonious animal. V. rhinoceros is another large snake, which comes from both the east and west coasts. It has a pair of horns upstanding between its nostrils, each clothed with but a single shield. cornuta has scaly prominences, which are hardly " horns," and which consist each of a group of four or five large upright distinct scales placed above one of the eyes. It is a small snake, hardly ever more than 20 inches long. It inhabits western, southern, and eastern Africa. V. caudalis is a still smaller snake, which has a single scale extending upwards over either eye. It comes from southern Africa, as also does V. schneidert, which is like the last species, save that it has nothing at all representing horns. V/. inornata is also hornless, though it has the supraorbital region somewhat elevated. It is a very small snake, only about 15 inches long. It is a South-African species, as also are V. atropos and V. atropoides, which are both hornless and are about 2 feet long.

The genus chis consists of but one species (Z. carinata), which has been noticed and figured in the article SNAKES (see vol. xxii. p. 198). It is a viper-like snake, which

3 On one occasion one of these snakes, after giving birth to twenty- one young (which bit and killed mice within five minutes of being born), became very ill-tempered, and when two adult males were placed in her cage she bit one with such violence as to break off one of her fangs, which she left, about three-quarters of an inch in length, sticking in his back. He, however, appeared not to suffer the slightest inconvenience, and was never the worse for it (see Proc. Zool. Soc., 1871, p. 638).

inhabits desert lands or dry plains, and extends from India through Abyssinia and North Africa to Senegal.

Fie. 2.—Atheris burtoni. (Length 12 inches.)

The genus Atherts is made up of several more or less problematical species of snakes, all of which present a great contrast to the other Viperide, in that they have long, slender, and laterally compressed bodies with prehensile

tails—being altogether adapted for arboreal life. Never- theless the head is decidedly viperine, sharply marked off from the neck, broad behind, and heart-shaped when looked at from above. 'These animals are assisted in climbing, not only by their prehensile tails, but also the strongly keeled scales beneath the lower jaw. All the so-called species are inhabitants of tropical Africa,—A. burtoni, A. sqguamigera, and A. chloroechis being found on the west coast. 'Two new species have been lately discovered, .A. anisolepis and A. cxviceps,—both from the Congo.

'The genus Acanthophis is sometimes classed with the vipers, but is here excluded on account of its large, truly colubrine head shields. See Snaxags, vol. xxii. p. 198.

The Viperidx are geographically distributed as follows :—

Palearctic Region.1—V. berus, V. aspis, V. ammodytes, V. latastii, V. xanthina, V. persica, V. mauritanica, V. cerastes, V.

avizenns, EL. carinata. Ethiopian Region.—V. superciliaris, V. arietans, V. nasicornis,

V. rhinoceros, V. cornuta, V. caudalis, .V. schneideri, V. inornata V. atropos, V. atropoides, A. burtoni, A. sqyuanvigera, A. chioroechis. Indian Region.—V. russellii, E. carinata. (ST G. M.)

VIRGIL (P. Vercitius Maro) enjoyed in ancient times an unquestioned supremacy arnong Roman poets. His pre-eminence in poetry was as distinctly recognized as that of Cicero in prose ; and among the Romans, as among all nations who have possessed a great poetical and a great prose literature, the superior power of poetry over that of

+ This region includes Europe, Africa north of the Sahara, and Asia north of the Himalayas.

any other mode of artistic expression to embody and per- # petuate the true ideal of the national imagination and the deepest vein of national sentiment, was fully recognized. The veneration in which his name was held during the long interval between the overthrow of Western civilization and the revival of letters affords testimony of the depth of the impression which he made on the heart and imagin- ation of the ancient world. The traditional belief in his pre-eminence has been on the whole sustained, though not with absolute unanimity, in modern times. By the scholars and men of letters of the 16th, 17th, and 18th centuries it was never seriously questioned. Only during the first half of the present century has his right to be ranked among the great poets of the world been disputed by eminent German and English critics. The. German mind has always been more in sympathy with the art and genius of Greece than of Rome and Italy ; and during the first half of the present century, when English criticism first came under German influence, there was a strong reaction from the habitual deference paid to those writers who had moulded literary taste in the previous century. The estimation of Virgil, as the most consummate repre- sentative of Latin culture, suffered most from this reaction. In the present day the effect of this reaction shows itself only in a juster estimate of Virgil's relative position among the poets of the world. It is no longer a question whether he or Homer was best entitled to hold that " sceptre" among the great poets of antiquity which Lucretius awards to the older poet. It may still be a matter of individual opinion whether Lucretius himself was not a more powerful and original poetical force, whether he does not speak more directly to the heart and imagination of our own time. But it can hardly be questioned, on a survey

of Roman literature, as a continuous expression of the national mind, from the age of Nevius to the age of Claudian, that the position of Virgil is central and com- manding, while that of Lucretius is in a great measure isolated. If we could imagine the place of Virgil in Roman literature vacant, it would be much the same as if we imagined the place of Dante vacant in modern Italian, and that of Goethe in German literature. The serious efforts of the early Roman literature—the efforts of the older epic and tragic poetry—found their fulfilment in him. The revelation of the power and life of Nature, first made to Lucretius, was able to charm the Roman mind, only after it had passed into the mind of Virgil, and been brought nearer to the heart of Romans and Italians by association with the industry most congenial to them. And not only does Virgil absorb and supersede much of what went before him; he anticipates and supersedes much of what came after him. When we have read the Aineid, we add scarcely anything to our sense of the capacities of the Italian genius and of the Latin language by studying the artificial epics of the empire. It is enough to read any ten lines of them along with any ten lines of Virgil to feel how absolute is his superiority. Virgil is the only complete representative of the deepest sentiment and highest mood of his countrymen and of his time. In his pastoral and didactic poems he gives a living voice to the whole charm of Italy, in the dnetd to the whole glory of Rome. He was in the maturity of his powers at the most critical epoch of the national life, one of the most critical epochs in the history of the world. Keeping aloof from the trivial daily life of his con- temporaries, he was moved more profoundly than any of them by the deeper currents of emotion in the sphere of government, religion, morals, and human feeling which were then changing the world; and in uttering the enthusiasm of the hour, and all the new sensibilities that were stirring in his own heart and imagination, he had, in

the words of Sainte-Beuve, 'divined at a decisive hour of the world what the future would love." He was also by universal acknowledgment the greatest literary artist whom Rome produced. It was an essential condition of Roman more than of any other great literature that it was based ou culture and education. Not only the knowledge but the inspiration of

Greek poetry—'spiritus Graie camene "—was the condition of Roman success in poetry. Virgil had not only more learning and culture, but had a more catholic sympathy with the whole range of Greek poetry, from Homer and Hesiod to Theocritus and the Alexandrians, than any one else at any period of Roman literature. Greek studies were in his time pursued with greater ardour, completeness, and thoroughness than at any previous period. The effort of the preceding generation to attain to beauty of form and finish of artistic execution found in him, at the most susceptible period of his life, a ready recipient of its influence. The rude dialect of Latium had been moulded into a powerful and harmonious organ of literary expression by the emotional ardour and vigorous understanding of a long series of orators ; the rough and unhewn structure of the Latin hexameter, first shaped by Ennius to meet the wants of his own spirit and of his high argument, had been smoothed and polished by the congenial labour of Lucretius, and still more perfected by the finer ear and more careful industry of Catullus and his circle; but neither had yet attained their final develop- ment. It was left for Virgil to bring both diction and rhythm to as high a pitch of artistic perfection as has been attained in any literature.

The great work which he accomplished was the result of the steady devotion of his genius, undistracted by pleasure or business, to his appointed task. For the first half of his life he prepared himself to be the great poet of his time

and country with a high ambition and unresting industry,

equalled only by the ambition and industry with which Cicero prepared himself to be the greatest orator and the most accomplished exponent of philosophy among his con- temporaries and countrymen. The second half of his career was a religious consecration of all his powers of heart, mind, and spirit to his high office. He was born on the 19th of October in the year 70 B.c., in a farm on the banks of the Mincio, in the district of Andes, not far from the town of Mantua. He thus belonged to a genera- tion about thirty years younger than that to which Lucretius belonged, and about fifteen years younger than that of Catullus: but both these poets were dead before the younger poet was old enough or sufficiently

known to have come into personal contact with them. But the literary tnpulse which gave birth to their poetry was felt in all its force in his early youth, and especially in the district north of the Po, in which a race of more imaginative suscepti- bility than the people of Latium, who had been the first to receive the discipline and feel the enthusiasm of Greek studies, formed part of the Latin-speaking population.! It was favourable to his development as a national poet that he was born and educated during the interval of com- parative calm between the first and second civil wars, and that he belonged to a generation which, as the result of the social war, first enjoyed the sense of an Italian nationality. Yet it was only after Virgil had grown to manhood that the province to which he belonged obtained the full rights of Roman citizenship. It is remarkable that the two poets whiose imagination seems to have been most powerfully possessed by the spell of Rome,—Ennius and Virgil,—were born outside the pale of Roman citizenship, though be-

4 Cf. Cic., Pro Archia, iti. 5—" Erat Italia tune plena Grecarum artium ac disciplinarum, stndiaque hac et in Latio vehementius tum colebantur quam nunc iisdem in oppidis, et hic Rome propter tran-

quillitatem reipublice non neglegebantur."

longing to races who had acknowledged the sovereignty without deeply or permanently resenting the hostility of Rome.

The scenery familiar to his childhood, which he recalls with affection both in the Hclogues and the G'eorgics, was that of the green banks and slow windings of the Mincio and the rich pastures in its neighbourhood. Like his. friend and contemporary Horace, and unlike the poets of the preceding generation, who were members either of the aristocracy or of the class closely associated with it, he sprung from the class of yeomen, whose state he pronounces the happiest allotted to man and most conducive to virtue and piety. Virgil, as well as Horace, was fortunate in having a father who, though probably uneducated himself, discerned his genius and spared no pains in nourishing it with the highest and richest culture then obtainable in the world. At the age of twelve he was taken for his educa- tion to Cremona, an old Latin colony, and from an expres- sion in one of the minor poems attributed to him, about the authenticity of

which there cannot be any reasonable doubt, it may be inferred that his father accompanied him thither as Horace's father accompanied him to Rome for the same purpose. He assumed the toga virilis on his sixteenth birthday, the day, according to Donatus, on which Lucretius died ; and shortly afterwards he removed to Milan, where he continued engaged in study till he went to Rome two years later. The time of his renioval to Rome must have nearly coincided with the publication of the poem of Lucretius and of the collected poems of Catullus, the first really artistic poems produced in the Latin language. A powerful stimulus must have been given to a youth of genius from a northern province by his arrival in the metropolis of the world at such a crisis in the national literature. The impression produced on_ his imagination on his first coming to Rome may be recalled to memory in the lines he puts into the mouth of Tityrus in the first eclogue,

"'Urbem quam dicunt Romam Melibeee putavi," &c.

After studying under a rhetorician, who was, probably about the same time, the teacher of the future emperor, he proceeded to the study of philosophy under Siron the Epicurean, who, in common with other teachers of that sect, appears to have had the gift of inspiring enthusiasm for his subject and affection for himself. One of the minor poems written about this time in the scazon metre, which had recently been brought to the highest possible perfection by Catullus, tells of his delight at the immediate prospect of entering on the study of philosophy, and of the first stirring of that enthusiasm for philosophical investigation which haunted him through the whole of his life, but never obtained complete realization. At the end of the poem, the real master-passion of his life, the charin of the Muses—'" dulces ante omnia Muse "—reasserts itself.

Our next knowledge of him is derived from allusions to his circuinstances and state of feeling contained in the Lclogues, and belongs to a period nine or ten years later. Of what happened to him in the interval, during which the first civil war took place and Julius Cesar was assassin- ated, we have no indication from ancient testimony or from his own writings. We might conjecture that this was a time of studious leisure passed in his father's house in the country, as the life of Milton was passed after

leaving Cambridge. In 42 s.c., the year of the battle of Philippi, when he was in his 28th year, we find him lead- ing such a life, “ cultivating his woodland Muse,” and enjoying the protection of Asinius Pollio, the governor of the district north of the Po. In the following year the famous confiscations of land for the benefit of the soldiers of the triumvirs took place. Of the impression produced

on Virgil by these confiscations, and of the effect they had on his fortunes, we have a vivid record in the poem which stands first in his collected works. Mantua, in consequence of its vicinity to Cremona, which had been faithful to the cause of the republic, was involved in this calamity; and Virgil's father was driven from the farm which he had acquired by the thrift and industry of his early years. By the influence of his powerful friends, and by personal application to the young Octavianus, already practically master of the Western world, Virgil obtained the resti- tution of his land; but, on attempting to resume posses- sion of it, he was exposed to imminent personal danger, and had to swim across the river to escape from the violence of the soldier to whom it had been allotted. Immediately afterwards he took his father and family with him to the small country house of his old teacher Siron

(" Villula que Sironis eras, et pauper agelle," &c., Catal., x.), which may have become his own by gift or inheritance. Soon afterwards we hear of him living in Rome, enjoying, in addition to the patronage of Pollio, the favour of Mecenas, intimate with Varius, who was at first regarded as the rising poet of the new era, and soon afterwards with Horace, who had just returned from his unfortunate adventure with the army of Brutus. His friendship with Gallus, for whom he indicates a warmer affection and more enthusiastic admiration than for any one else, was formed before his second residence in Rome, in the Cisalpine province, with which Gallus also was connected both by birth and office. The pastoral poems, or " eclogues," as they are usually called, though that name is never given to them by himself, commenced in his native district, were finished and published in Rome, probably in 37 B.c. Soon afterwards he withdrew from habitual residence in Rome, and lived chiefly in Campania, either at Naples or in a country house in the neighbourhood of Nola. He resided also for some time in Sicily; and there is in the fourth Georgic distinct evidence of his familiarity with the neighbourhood of Tarentum. He was one of the companions of Horace in the famous journey to Brundisium ; and it seems not unlikely that, sometime before 23 B.c., he made the

voyage to Athens which forms the subject of the third ode of the first book of the Odes of Horace.

The seven years from 37 to 30 B.c. were devoted to the composition of the Georgics. In the following year he read the poem to Augustus, on his return from Asia. The remaining years of his life were spent on the com- position of the neid. In the course of its composition, in 23 B.c., the year of the death of the young Marcellus, he read three books, the 2nd, 4th, and 6th, to the emperor and the members of the imperial family. In 19 B.c., after the dneid was finished but not finally corrected, he set out for Athens, intending to pass three years in Greece and Asia, and to devote that time to perfecting the workman- ship of the poem. At Athens he met Augustus and was persuaded by him to return with him to Italy. While visiting Megara under a burning sun, he was seized with illness, and, as he continued his voyage without interrup- tion, he grew rapidly worse, and died on the 21st of September, in his fifty-first year, a few days after landing at Brundisium. In his last illness he called for the cases containing his manuscripts, with the intention of burning the Aine. He had previously left directions in his will that his literary executors, Varius and Tucea, should publish nothing of his which had not already been given to the world by himself. This pathetic desire that the work to which he had given so much care, and of which such great expectations were formed, should not survive him has been used as an argument to prove his own

yn G Tf

dissatisfaction with the poem. A passage from a letter of his to Augustus is also quoted, in which he speaks as if he felt that the undertaking of the work had been a mistake. Virgil does not indeed show that sanguine confidence in the result of his labours which Horace expresses on the completion of the three books of lyrical poetry to which he devoted the best years of his life ; but the lines (Zn., ix. 444, &c.),

“ Fortunati ambo si quid mea carmina possunt,” &c., though with less self-assertion, imply a similar assurance that his work would endure as long as the Roman state and empire. The dissatisfaction with his work, increased by the depression of his last illness and the fatigue of the long

tension of mind, heart, and imagination upon it, may more probably be ascribed to his passionate craving for a perfection of workmanship which death prevented him from attaining than to any sense either of the unworthiness of his subject or of his own inadequacy to do justice toit. The commands of Augustus fortunately intervened to prevent the loss of some of the noblest poetry of antiquity and of the most enduring monunient of the greatness and glory of Rome.

He was buried at Naples, where his tomb was long regarded with religious veneration, and visited as a temple. That veneration was a survival of the feeling with which he was regarded in his lifetime, and is greater than what we find attaching to the actual memory of any other ancient poet, though the mystery connected with the personality of Homer excited a greater curiosity. Horace is our most direct witness of the affection which he in- spired among his contemporaries. The qualities by which he gained their love were, according to his testimony, "'candor,"—that sincerity of nature and goodness of heart which, along with "fides" or loyalty, the Romans valued most among the qualities which attach men to one another ; and " pietas,'"—the deep affection for kindred, friends, and country, combined with a reverent spirit, which they prized above all personal qualities. The statement of his biographer, that he was known in Naples by the name " Parthenias," is a testimony to the exceptional purity of his life in an age of licence. These direct testimonies are confirmed by the indirect testimony of his works. Scarcely any poet in any age seems to deserve so high a rank among those whom he himself characterizes as "'pii vates et Phoebo digna locuti." The seclusion of his life and his devotion to his art touched the imagination of his countrymen as the finer qualities of his nature touched the heart of his friends. It had been, from the time of Cicero,! the ambition of the men of finest culture and most original genius in Rome to produce a national literature which might rival that of Greece ; and the feeling that at last a poem was about to appear which would equal or surpass the greatest among all the works of Greek genius found a voice in the lines of Propertius—

"Cedite Romani scriptores, cedite Graii; Nescio quid majus nascitur Iliade."

The feeling which his countrymen and contemporaries entertained towards him seems justified by the personal impression which he produces on modern readers,—an impression of sanctity, as of one who habitually lived in a higher and serener sphere than that of this world. The reverential love inspired by him is something distinct from the affection felt for Horace as a familiar friend, a wise

1 Cf. Tusc. Disp., ii. 2: ' Quamobrem hortor omnes qui facere id possunt, ut hujus quoque generis landem jam languenti Grecie eripiant," &c. These words apply specially to philosophical literature, but other passages in the same and in other works imply that Cicero thought that the Romans had equal aptitudes for other departments of literature ; and the practice of the Augustan poets in each appro- priating to himself a special province of Greek literary art seems to indicate the same ambition.*

counsellor, and genial companion, sharing the ordinary interests and pleasures of life, liable to the same weak- nesses and endeared by the same social charm as those who are best liked in the intercourse of our own day.

Virgil's fame as a poet rests on the three acknowledged works of his early and mature manhood—the pastoral poems or Eclogues, the Georgics, and the neid—all written in that hexameter verse which he received from his immediate predecessors, still lacking something in variety and smoothness of cadence, and which he left to the world, in the words of a poet, who, if any one, is entitled to speak with authority on such a subject,

"The noblest metre ever moulded by the lips of man." But other poems were attributed to him in ancient times, and have been incorporated with his acknowledged works. These are (1) a collection of short poems, under the name "Catalepton," most of them in the style of the short poems of Catullus, and composed in various forms of the iambic metre (chiefly the scazon), and in elegiacs; and (2) some longer poems, the Culex, Ciris, Copa, Moretum, to which sometimes the ina and Dire are added, all with one exception written in hexameters. As the younger Pliny mentions Virgil among the men of grave character by whose authority he justifies

his own occasional indulgence in the composition of slight, playful, and somewhat indecorous verses, it is quite possible that two or three pieces of that kind found in the Catalepton may have been written by Virgil when fresh from the first reading of Catullus. The fifth, written in the couplet most used in the Epodes of Horace, and the most bitter in tone and coarsest in expression, it is im- possible to attribute to him. But there are others among them of which there is no reason to question the authenticity, and which are interesting as an immediate expression of the poet's personal feelings at various periods of his life. Of the longer poems attri- buted to him in ancient times it is clear from internal evidence that the Ciris and Dirx, though belonging to the Augustan age, are not his. The tna has been shown to have been written in the age of Nero. The Moretwm and the Copa are interesting as graphic and sharply defined pictures from common or homely life. But they have nothing in common with the idealizing art of Virgil, and the tone and sentiment of the Copa especially are quite alien from the tone and sentiment of his acknowledged work. But there has been more controversy about the authenticity of the Culex, The ambitious saying, not to apply to it a harsher epithet, attri- buted by his biographer to Lucan, 'et quantum mihi restat ad Culicem," shows that in his time it was believed that Virgil had written a poem of that name. Martial (xiv. 185) writes of a Culex as the undoubted work of Virgil. He believes in it as unhesitatingly as he does in the 'Passer Catulli," and speaks as if it were only the patronage of Meecenas that enabled Virgil to rise to higher themes. Virgil's biographer speaks of the poem as having been written by him at the age of sixteen, though the saying of Lucan seems to imply that he supposed it to have been written when he was ten years older. The poem has no trace of the charm and variety of Virgil's style and rhythm, and is even less like the style and metre of the Eclogues than of his tater poems. On the other hand, there is a techuical correctness and regularity In the metre which was not possible until after the art of V. irgil had made the knack of writing hexameters as attainable by all educated men as the art of Pope made the writing of the heroic couplet; and the writing of such verse seems to have become a regular part of a liberal education. It is to be remembered that in the same soil and under the same air under which the genius of Virgil and Horace expanded to such stately proportions, there was a great undergrowth of minor poets who are the frequent butts of

Horace's good-natured satire. Descriptions of nature to which they were trained by the reading of Lucretius and Virgil, and mythological commonplace, were apparently the chief materials of their verse exercises. The descriptions in the Culex show the care- ful study both of Lucretius and of the Eelogues and Georgics, and, though too diffuse and diluted, are not without a real perception of, and feeling for, Italian nature. But it is very difficult to believe that the poem was ever edited by or acknowledged by Virgil in his life- time, _ Nothing is more alien to his character than such immature ambition, It is difficult also to believe that it is a crude effort of his boyhood, accidentally preserved, and given to the world after his death by an authorized editor. It seems more probable that it is the composition of some young and enthusiastic admirer of Virgil, who, some time after his death, aud, perhaps, after the death of his immediate contemporaries, succeeded in palming off his own imitative concoction as an early composition of the great master. The dedication to the 'revered Octavius," if the person addressed is the " young Augustus," and not the poet and historian mentioned by Horace, and the lines— " Posterius graviore sono tibi musa loquetur Nostra, dabunt cum maturos mihi tempora fructus "»—

seem like not very ingenious artifices to secure acceptance for the Poem, and to represent Virgil as already in boyhood closely con- nected with the future emperor, and conscious of his own genius and

of the great future that awaited both himself and the young friend whom he addresses as "sancte puer."

The pastoral poems or Eelogwes—a word denoting short selected Eelogues.

pieces—were composed between the years 42 and 37 B. c., when Virgil was between the age of twenty-eight and thirty-three. By his invocation to the "Sicelides Muse" and ' Arethusa," by the names " Daphnis"' and " Menalcas," " Thyrsis" and "Corydon," &e., which he gives to his shepherds, by his mention of " Arcadians" and of "Kurotas," and by many other indications, he avows the purpose of eliciting from the strong Latin language the melody which the "Sicilian shepherd" drew out of the 'Doric reed," of peopling the familiar plains and river-banks of his native*

land with the picturesqne figures of the old Greek pastoral, and of express- ing that tender feeling for the beauty of Italian scenes which Theocritus had expressed for the beauty of Sicily. The position of Virgil indicated in the Helogues was not unlike that indicated in the idylls of Theocritus,—that of a youth of genius with all the refinement of a rich culture, but with rustic tastes and habits, living his life among other young poets of his native province, cultivating his art by friendly rivalry with them, and nourishing his genius by communion with the spirit of nature as revealed in the scenes around him and in the melodies of older poets. It was as natural under these circumstances that he should aspire to be the Italian Theocritus as that Horace, with his more social and versatile temperament, and with the more adventurous experience of his youth, should aspire to be the Roman Alceus.

The earliest poems in the series were the second, third, and fifth; and these, along with the seventh, are the most purely Theocritean in character. The first and ninth, which probably were next in order, are much more Italian in sentiment, are much more an ex- pression of the y- oet's own feelings, and have a much more direct reference both to his own circumstances and the circumstances of the time. The first is a true poetical reflex of the distress and confusion which arose out of the new distribution of lands, and blends the poet's own deep love of his home, and of the sights and sounds familar to him from childhood, with his Italian suscepti- bility to the beauty of nature. The ninthis immediately connected in subject with the first. It contains the lines which seem accur- ately to describe the site of Virgil's farm, at the point where the range of hills which accompany the river for some distance from the foot of the Lago di Garda sinks into the plain about 14 or 15 niles above Mantua—

'Qua se subducere colles Incipiunt mollique jugum demittere clivo."

The sixth is addressed to Varus, who succeeded Pollio as governor of the Cisalpine district. Its theme is the creation of the world (according to the Epicurean cosmogony), and the oldest tales of mythology.! The fourth and eighth are both closely associated with the name of Virgil's earliest protector, Pollio. The fourth celebrates the consulship of his patron in 40 B.c., and perhaps also the birth of his son, though it was disputed in

antiquity, and still is disputed, who was meant by the child whose birth was to be coincident with the advent of the uew era, and who, after filling the other great offices of state, was to " rule with his father's virtues the world at peace." The main purpose of the poem, however, is to express, in connexion with pastoral associations, the longing of the world for a new era of peace and happiness, of which the treaty of Brundisium seemed to hold out some definite hopes. There is no trace in this poem of Theocritean influence. The rhythm recalls the stately monotonous movement of the longest poem of Catullus, not the vivacity of the idyllic rhythm. The ideas are derived partly from Greek representations of the Golden Age, and partly, it is sup- posed, from the later Sibylline prophecies, circulated after the burning in the time of Sulla of the old Sibylline books, and pos- sibly tinged with Jewish ideas. Some of the phraseology of the poem led toa belief in the early Christian church that Virgil had been an unconscious instrument of inspired prophecy. The date of the eighth is fixed by a reference to the campaign of Pollio against the Dalmatians in 39 B.c. It is founded on the dapyareurpla of Theocritus, but brings before us, with Italian associations, two love tales of homely Italian life. The tenth reproduces the Daphnis of Theocritus, and is a dirge over the unhappy love of Gallus and Lycoris. As in the other poems, the second and eighth, of which love is the burden, it is to the romantic and fantastic melancholy which the passion assumes in certain natures that Virgil gives a voice. Nothing can be more unreal than the association of such a feeling with an ordinary Jiaison like that of Gallus, the adventurous and ambitious soldier, and Cytheris, the notorious actress and discarded mistress of Antony. But there is no representation in ancient poctry of an_ ideal and chivalrous passion so tender and true as that of the Gallus of Virgil.

There is no important work in Latin literature, with the excep- tion of the comedy of Terence, so imitative as the Helogues. But they are not, like the comedies of Terence, purely exotic as well as imitative. They are rather composite, partly Greek and partly "1 In the Georgics also Virgil attempts to combine science with the poetic fancies which filled its place in older times.

eorgics,

Italian, and, as a vehicle for the expression of feeling, hold an undefined place between the objectivity of the Greek idyll and the subjectivity of the Latin elegy. For the most part, they express the sentiment inspired by the beauty of the world, and the kindred sentiment inspired by the charm of human relationships. Virgil's susceptibility to the beauty of nature was fostered by the sympa- thetic study of Theocritus, but it was also native to himself. The originality of his representation appears in the truth with which it suggests the eharm of Italy—the fresh and tender life of an Italian spring, the grace and delicate hues of the wild flowers, and the quiet beauty of the green pastures and the rich orchards of his native district. The representative character of the poems is en- hanced by the fidelity and grace with which he has expressed the Italian peasant's love of his home and of all things associated with it. But, whatever detraction may have to be made from the originality of the substance and form of these poems, the supreme charm of the medium of diction and rhythm through which the poet's feeling has found utterance is universally recognized. The power of varied harmony is as conspicuous in Virgil's earliest poems as in the maturer and more elaborate workmanship of the Georgics and 4fneid. The Italian language, without sacrifice of the fulness, strength, and majesty of its tones, acquired a more tender grace and more liquid flow, which reappeared long after in the poets of modern Italy, from the gift—the " molle atque facetum "— whieh the Muses of country life bestowed on Virgil.

But these Muses had a more serious and dignified function to fulfil than that of glorifying the picturesque pastime, the "dolco far niente," the "otia dia," of rural life. The Italian imagina- tion formed an ideal of the happiness of a country life nobler than that of passive susceptibility to the sights and sounds of the out- ward world. In the idyllic picture in which Horace enumerates the various delights of the countryman's condition (Zpode 2), while tho pleasures to eye and ear are not wanting, more stress is laid on the labours by which man co-operates with nature, and on the joy with which he contemplates the results of his toil. It was the aim of the more serious Roman writers to invest objects which minister to practical utility with the glory and charm of poetry. Suctonius tells us that

Augustus valued nothing so much in litera- ture as "preeepta et exempla publice vel privatim salubria."' It is stated that Macenas, acting on the principle of employing the poets of the timo in favour of the conservative and restorative poliey of the new government, directed the genius of Virgil to the subject of the Georgics. From a moral, social, and national point of view, no object could be of more consequence in the eyes ofa statesman whose master inherited the policy of the popular leaders than the revival of the great form of national industry, associated with the older and happier memories of Rome, which had fallen into abeyance owing to the long unscttlement of the revolutionary era as well as to other causes. Virgil's previous life and associations made it natural for him to identify himself with this object, while his genius and artistic accomplishment fitted him to enlist the imagination of his countrymen in favour of so great a practieal reform. It would be a most inadequate and false view of his purpose to suppose that, like the Alexandrian poets or the didaetic poets of modern times, he desired merely to maké useful information and practical precepts more attractive by the aid of poetical rhythm and diction. His aim was rather under the form of practical instruction to describe with realistic fidelity, and at the same time to surround with an atmosphere of idealizing oetry, the annual round of labour in which the Italian yeoman's life was passed ; to bring out the intimate relation with the manifold aspects and processes of nature into which man was brought in the course of that life, and to suggest the delight to heart and imagination which he drew from it; to contrast the simplicity, security, and sanctity of such a life with the luxury and lawless passions of the great world; and to associate the ideal of a life of rustic labour with the varied beauties of Italy and the historic glories of Rome. Thus a speculative and religious, an ethical and patriotic, niotive enlarges and supersedes the apparent motive of conveying instruc- tion. This larger conception of the dignity of his subject separates the didactie poem of Virgil from all other didactic, as distinct from philosophic, poems. He has produced in the Georgics a new type of didaetic, asin the Zneid he has produced a new type of epic, poetry

The subject which is unfolded in the four opening lines— ;

- *Quid faciat letas segetes, quo sidere terram Vertere, Maecenas, ulmisque adjungere vites Conveniat ; que cura boum, qui cultus habendo Sit pecori, apibus quanta experientia parcis ”— is treated in four books, varying in length from 514 to 566 lines. The first treats of the tillage of the fields, of the constellations. the rise and setting of which form the farmer’s calendar, and of the signs of the weather, on which the success of his labours largely depends. The second treats of the cultivation of trees, and especially of the vine and olive, two great staples of the national wealth and industry of Italy ; the third of the rearing of herds and flocks and the breeding of horses; the fourth of the tending of bees. The treatment of these homely subjects is relieved by*

Gil

various episodes, introduced at various places, but mainly at the end of the different books, which serve to bring out the intimate connexion of his theme with his national and ethical purpose.

As he had found in Theocritus a model for the form in which his idler fancies were expressed, he turned to an older page in Greek literature for the outline of the form in which his graver interest in rural affairs was to find its outlet; and, though the /Vorks and Days of Hesiod could not supply an adequate mould for the systematic treatment of all the processes of rural industry, and still less for the treatment of the larger ideas to which this systematic treatment of the subject is subsidiary, yet that Virgil considered him as his prototype is shown by the line which concludes one of the cardinal episodes of the poem—

- *Ascreeumque cano Romana per oppida carmen.”*

By the use which he makes of his quaint phraseology Virgil attracts attention to the relation which he wishes to establish between himsclf and Hesiod; and in the religious spirit with which they cach regard man’s labours and condition in the world there is a real affinity between the primitive Beotian bard and the refined artist of the Augustan age. Virgil accepts also the guidance of other models of the decadence of Greek literature, the Alexandrian poets who treated the science of their day—

astronomy, natural history, and geography—in the metre and diction of epic poetry. But, in avail- ing himself of the work of the Alexandrians, Virgil is like a great master making use of mechanical assistants. From the compari- son of passages in the Gcorgics with passages in those authors which suggested them, we learn to appreciate the immeasurable superiority of the poetical language of Rome at the maturity of its development over the exotic diction produced in the decay of Greek creative imaginatiou. But a more powerful influence on the form, ideas, sentiment, and diction of the Gcorgics was exercised by the great philosophical poem of Lucretius, of which Virgil had probably been a diligent student since the time of its first appear- ance, and with which, in the phrase of the English editor of the older poet, his mind was "saturated" when he was engaged in the composition of the Gcorgics. In Virgil we find the spirit of Hesiod in conflict with the spirit of Lucretius. He is at once attracted and repelled by the genius and attitude of the philosophic poct. He is possessed by his imaginative conception of nature, as a living all-pervading power ; he shares with him the Italian love of the beauty of the world, and the pathetic sympathy with animal as well as human life. He recognizes with enthusiasm his contem- plative elevation above the petty interests and passions of life. But he is repelled by his apparent separation from the ordinary beliefs and pleasures, the hopes and fears, of his fellow men. Virgil is in thorough sympathy with the best restorative tendencies—religious, social, and national—of his time; Lucretius was driven into isolation by the anarchic and dissolving forces of his.

So far as any speculative idea underlying the details of the Georgics can be detected, it is one of which the source can be traced to Lucretius—the idea of the struggle of human force with the forces of nature. In Virgil this idea is modified by Italian piety and by the Italian delight in the results of labour. In the general plan of the poem, and the systematic arrangement of his materials, Virgil follows the guidance of Lucretius rather than of any Greek model. The dedication and personal appeals to Maecenas are parallel to those addressed to Memmius. The distinction between a poem addressed to national and one addressed to philosophical sympathies is marked by the prominence assigned in the one poem to Cesar as the supreme personality of the age, in the other to Epicurus as

the supreme master in the realms. of mind. The invocation to the "Di agrestes," to the old gods of mythology and art, to the living Cesar as the latest power added to the pagan Pantheon, is both a parallel and a contrast to the invoeation to the all-pervading prineiple of life, personified as "'Alma Venus." In the systematic treatment of his materials, and the interspersion of episodes dealing with the deeper poetical and human interest of the subject, Virgil adheres to the practice of the older poet. He makes use of his connecting links and formulas, such as "principio," "quod superest," "his animadversis," "nune age," &c. Virgil indeed uses these more sparingly, so as to make the logical mechanism of the poem less rigid, while he still keeps up the liveliness of a personal address. He shows his artistic superiority by passing lightly over details which it is impossible to invest with beauty. All his topies admit of being vitalized by attributing the vivacity of human relationships and sensibility to natural processes, and by association with the joy which the ideal farmer feels in the results of his energy. Much of the argument of Lucretius, on the other hand, is as remote from the geuial presence of nature as from human associations. Virgil makes a much larger use thau Lucretius of ornament borrowed from older poetry, art, seience, and mythology. There is uniformity of chastened excellence in the diction and versi- fication of the Gorgics, contrasting with the imaginative force of isolated expressions and the majesty of isolated lines and passages in Lucretius. The "vivida vis" of imagination is more apparent in the older poet; the artistic perfection of Virgil is even more conspicuous in the Geargics than in the Eclogues or the Avneid.

we

V@nreG io 253

Tho principal episodes of the poem, in which the true dignity and human interest of the subject aro brought out, occur in the first and second books. Other shorter episodes interspersed through the different books add{variety to the didactic disquisition. These episodes, as is the case still more with the episodes of Lucretius, are not detached or isolated ornaments, but give a higher unity to the poem, and are the main ground of its perma- nent hold upon tho world. There is indeed one marked

exception to thisrule. The long episode with which the whole poem ends, — the tale of the shepherd Aristens, with which is connected the more poetical fable of Orpheus and Eurydice, has only the slightest connexion with the general ideas and sentiment of the

oem. Itis altogether at variance with the truthful realism and the Italian feeling which prevade it. If we suppose that Virgil originally thought it necessary to relieve the interest and keep the attention of his readers by appealing to their taste for those mythological tales, which iu an earlier part of the poem he had decried as "omnia jam volgata," it would be difficult to acquit even so great an artist of some forgetfulness of tho requirement of unity of impression in a work of art, cspecially in such a " templum de marmore"' as the Georgics. But we are distinctly told that the conelnding episode, from the middle-till the end of the fourth book, had contained the praises of Gallus, the friend of Virgil's youth, who, about the time when Virgil was finishing the pocm, had gained distinction in the war against Cleopatra, and had in consequence been made the first governor of tho new province of Egypt. It is difficult to see how such a statement could have been invented if it were not true. Such a conclusion might well have been in keeping with the main purpose of the poem. As the first book ends with a dirge over the national fortunes before the outbreak of the war with Antony and Cleopatra, the last book might well havo ended with a hymn of triumph over the successful end of that war, in which the hero of Virgil's youthful enthusiasm played so distinguished a part. After the fall of Gallus, owing to his ambitious failure in his Egyptian administration, and his death in 26 B.c., the poet, according to the story, in obedience to the command of the emperor, substituted for this encomium the beautiful but ir- relevant fable of Orpheus and Eurydice, in which he first dis- played the narrative skill, the pathos, and the magical power of making the mystery of the unseen world present to the imagin- ation, which characterize the neid.

The cardinal episodes of the poem, as it now stands, aro the passages in bk. i. from line 464 to the end, and in bk. ii. from 136 to 176 and from 475 to 542. The first, introduced in connexion with the signs of the weather, recounts the omens which accom- panied the death of Julius Cesar, and shows how the misery of Italy and the neglected state of the fields, for

which the poem secks to find a remedy, are the punishment for the great sin of the previous generation. In the second of these passages tho true key- note of the poem is struck in the invocation to Italy—

‘ Salve, magna parens frugum, Saturnia tellus, Magna virum.,*

The thought of the varied beauties of the land, of the abundance and variety of its products, of its ancient cities and mighty works of man, its brave and hardy races, the great men and great families who had fought for her and saved her in old times, and of him, the greatest among her sons, who was then defending Rome against her enemies in the farthest East, inspires the poet, and gives dignity to the trivial details which seem sometimes to clog his high ambition. But a still higher and more catholic interest is given to the subject in the greatest of the episodes,—the most perfect passage in all Latin poetry,—that from line 458, “O fortu- natos nimium,” to the end. The subject is there glorified by its connexion not only with the national wellbeing but with the highest life and purest happiness of man. Aun ideal is held up to the imagination in which the old realistic delight in the labours of the field blends with the new delight in tho beauty of nature, and 1s associated with that purity and happiness of family life which was an Italian ideal, and with the poetry of thosc religious beliefs and observances which imparted a sense of security, a constantly pring charm, and a bond of social sympathy to the old rustic ife,

The Georgics is not only the most perfect in art, but is tho most native in sentiment and conception of all the works of the ancient Italian genius. It is essentially Italian in idea, in detail, in religious and ethical feeling, in colouring and sentiment, in its Solid and massive composition. Though tho form was borrowed from the Greek, yet we have to remember that it was only by becoming a province of Roman art that the didactic poem acquired dignity and the capacity of treating a great theme. Even where

€ borrows from Greek originals, Virgil, like a conqueror, makes the Greek mind tributary to his national design. The Georgies, the poem of the land, is as essentially Italian as the Odyssey, the poem of tho sea, is essentially Greek. Nature is presented to us as she is revealed in the soft and rich Inxnrianco of Italian land- Scape, not in the clearly defincd forms of

Greek scenery. The ethical and religious ideal upheld is an Italian one. As a work of

art, while showing in the largest degree the receptivity of the Greek feeling for form and symmetry which was the primary con- dition of all Roman success in literature, the poem shows equally the Italian susceptibility to the beauty of the outward world, the dignity and sobriety of the Italian imagination, the firm and enduring structure of all Roman workmanship.

The work which yet remained for Virgil to accomplish was the dneid.

*addition of a great Roman epic to literature. This had been the earliest effort of the national imagination, when it first departed from the mere imitative reproduction of Greek originals. The work which had given the truest expression to the genius of Rome before the time of Virgil had been the Annales of Ennius. This work had becn supplemented by various historical poems but had never been superseded. It satisfied the national imagination as an expression of the national life in its vigorous prime, but it could not satisfy the newly developed sense of art; and the expansion of the national life since the days of Ennius, and the changed con- ditions into which it passed after tho battle of Actium, demanded a new and ampler expression. It had been, as wo learn both from his biographer and from himself— ** Cum canerem reges et preelia"—*

Virgil's earliest ambition to write an heroic poem founded on the traditions of Alba Longa; and he had been repeatedly urged by Augustus to celebrate his exploits. The problem before him was to compose a work of art on a large scale, which should represent a great action of the heroic age, and should at the same time embody the most vital ideas and sentiment of the hour,—which in substance should glorify Rome and the present ruler of Rome, while in form it should follow closely the great models of epic poetry and repro- duce all their sources of interest. It was his ambition to be the Ifomer as he had been the Theocritus and Hesiod of his country.

Various objects had thus to bo combined in a work of art on the model of the Greek epic :—the revival of interest in the heroic fore- time; the

satisfaction of the national and imperial sentiment; the expression of the enthusiasm and of the deeper eurreuts of emotion of the age; the personal celebration of Augustus. A new type of epic poetry had to be created, as a new type of didactic poetry had been realized in the Georgics. It was desirable to select a single heroic action which should belong to the cycle of legendary events celebrated in the Homeric poems, and which should be associated with the whole fortunes of Rome and with the supreme interests of the hour. The only subject which in any way satisfied theso apparently irreconcilable conditions was that of the wanderings of /éncas and of his final settlement in Latium. The story, though not of Roman origin but of a composite growth, had been familiar to the Romans from the beginning of their literature, and had been recognized by official acts of senate and people as associated with the national fortunes. The subject enabled Virgil to tell over again and to give novelty to the tale of the fall of Troy, and to tell a tale of sca-adventure similar to that of the wanderings of Odysseus. But the special applicability of his subject to his purposes was determined by the claim which tho Julii, a patrician family of Alban origin, made to descent from Iulus, the supposed son of /fneas and founder of Alba Longa. The personal, as distinct from the national and artistic, motives of the poem could be satisfied by this subject alone.

The dneid is thus at once the epic of the national life under its new conditions and an imitative epic of human actions, manners, and character. The true keynoto of the poem is struck in the line with which the proem closes—

"« Tantz molis erat Romanam condere gentem."

The idea which underlies the whole action of the poem is that of the great part played by Romo in the history of the world, that part being from of old determined by divine decree, and carried out through the virtuo of her sons. The idea of universal empire is thus the dominant idea of the poem. With this idea that of the unbroken continuity of the national life is intimately associated. The reverence for antiquity, for old customs and the traditions of the past, was a large element in the national sentiment, and has a prominent place in tho 4¥neid. So too has the fecling of local attachment and of the power of local association over the imagina- tion.

This feeling is specially appealed to in the eighth book, which has been called the most purely Roman in the poem. The pocm is also characteristically Roman in the religious belief and observ- ances which it embodics. Behind all tho conventional and artistic machinery of the old Olympic gods there is the Roman apprehen- sion of a great inscrutable power, manifesting itself by arbitrary signs, exacting jealously certain observances, alienated for a tiie by neglect, and again appeased by compliance with its will, working out its own secret purposes through the agency of Roman arms and Roman counsels.

The word by which Virgil recognizes this power is Fatum (or Fata in the plural). The hero of the Wneid 1s an instrnment in their hands, and the living emperor is regarded as fulfilling the same.function in the actual world. The predominauce of this idea gives coherence to the aetion, and establishes its relation to the whole national life. The poem is thus a religious as well as a

national epic, and this explains the large part played in the develop- ment of the aetion by special revelation, omens, prophecies, cere- monial usages, and prayer. But, while the predominant religions idea of the poem is that of a divine purpose carried out regardlessly of human fecling, in other parts of the poem, and especially in that passage of the sixth book in which Virgil tries to formulate his deepest convictions on individual destiny, the agency of fate seems to yield to that of a spiritual dispensation, awarding to men their portions according to their actions. ‘ :

The idealization of Augustus is no expression of servile adulation. It is through the prominence assigned to him that the pocm is truly representative of the critical epoch in human affairs at which it was written. The cardinal fact of that epoch was the substitution of personal rule for the rule of the old commonwealth over the Roman world. Virgil shows the imaginative significance of that fact by revealing the emperor as chosen from of old in the counsels of the supreme ruler of the world to fnlfil the national destiny, as the descendant of gods and of heroes of old poetic renown, as one, moreover, who, in the actual work done by him, as

victor in a great decisive battle between the forces of the Western and the Eastern world, as the organizer of empire and restorer of peacc, order, aud religion, had rendered better service to mankind than any one of the herocs who in an older time had been raised for their great deeds to the company of the gods.

Virgil's true and yet idealizing interpretation of the imperial idea of Rome, in its national, religious, and personal significance, is the basis of the monumental greatness of the d/neid as a represent- ative poem. It is on this representative character and on the excellence of its artistic execution that the claim of the neid to rank as one of the great poems of the world mainly rests. The inferiority of the poem to the J/iad and the Odyssey as a direct representation of human life is so unquestionable that we are in greater danger of underrating than of overrating the real though secondary interest which the poem possesses as an imitative epic of human action, manners, aud character. What are the main sources of human interest in the poem can only be briefly indicated. In the first place, the action is chosen not only as suited to embody the idea of Rome and the dominant sentiment of a great and critical epoch in human affairs, but as having a peculiar nobleness and dignity of its own. It brings before us the spectacle, but restored by the light of a romantic imagination cast upon dim traditions, of the destruction of the city of greatest name in poetry or legend, the supposed seat of a prehistoric empire, of the foundation of the imperial city of the Western seas, in which Rome had encountered her most powerful and dangerous antagonist in the whole course of her long struggle for supremacy, and that of the first rude settle- ment on the hills of Rome itself. The scenes through which the action 'is carried are familiar, yet full of great memories and associ- ations, —Troy and its neighbourhood, the seas and islands of Greece, the coasts of Epirus, familiar to all travellers between Italy and the East, Sicily, the site of Carthage, Campania, Latium, the Tiber, and all the country within sight of Rome. The personages of the action are prominent in poetry and legend, or by their ethnical names stir the sentiment of national enthusiasm,—neas and Anehises, Dido, Acestes, Evander, Turnus. The spheres of activity in which they are engaged are war and sea-adventure, the themes of the oldest and greatest of epie poems. The passion of love, which had played a great part in Attic tragedy

and in the epic and elegiac poets of Alexandria, is a powerful addition to the older sources of interest which Virgil derives from the Homeric poems. The Zncid, like the Alexandrian epic, revives, by a conventional compromise be- tween the present and the remote past, some image of the old romance of Greeee; it creates the romance of 'that Italy for which Camilla the virgin, Euryalus, and Turnus and Nisus died of wounds." It might be said of the manner of life represented in the dineid, that it is no more true to any actual condition of human society than that represented in the Eclogues. But may not the same be said of all idealizing restoration of a remote past in an age of advanced civilization? The life represented in the Gdipus Tyrannus or in King Lear is not the life of the Periclean nor of the Elizabethan age, nor is it conceivable as the real life of a prehistoric age. The truth of such a representation is to be Judged, not by its relation to any actual state of things ever realized in the world, but by its relation to an ideal of the imagination a the ideal conception of how man, endowed with the gifts and graces of a civilized time, but who had not yet lost the youthful buoyancy of a more primitive age, might play his part under circumstances which would afford scope for the passions and activities of a vigorous personality, and for the refined emotions and subtle reflexion of an era of high intellectual and moral cultivation. The verdict of most readers of the 4neid will be that Virgil does not satisfy this condi- tion, as it is satisfied by Sophocles and Shakespeare. Yet there is a considerable attraction in the compromise which Virgil has pro- duced between the life which he knew by experience and that which he saw in the past of his imagination. There isa courtesy dignity, and consideration for the feelings of others in t

lity, ¢ he ma of his chief personages, such as might be exhibited by the abla

_by her "false friend."

You Co TL'

and most commanding natures in an age of chivalry and in an age of culture. The charm of primitive simplicity is present in some passages of the £neid, the spell of luxurious pomp in others. The actual delight of voyaging past beautiful islands, familiar to travellers in the Augustan age,

is enhanced by the suggestion of the adventurous spirit which sent the first explorers abroad in. search of unknown settlements. Where Virgil is least real, and least successfully ideal, and where consequently he is most purely imitative, is in the battle-scenes of the later books. They afford scope, however, to his patriotic desire to do justice to the martial energy of the Italian raees; and some of them have a peculiar beauty from the pathos with which the death of some of the more interesting personages of his story is deseribed.

But the adverse eriticisms of the #neid are chiefly based on Virgil's supposed failure in the crucial test of a great poem of action, the creation of character. And his chief failure is pro- nounced to be in the protagonist of the poem, the " pious Aineas." Is this charge truc? Is Aineas a worthy and interesting hero of a great poem of action? Not, certainly, according to the ideals realized in Aehilles and Odysseus, nor according to the modern ideal of gallant and adventurous heroism. A blameless character, patiently enduring much suffering, cannot arouse the same personal interest as a more energetic and impulsive character, relying on his own resources, and stirred by ordinary human passions. It is well said of Aineas by a French critic—"Sa vertu doit étre une haute et froide impersonalité, qui fasse de lui non un homme mais un instrument des dieux." Virgil wishes to hold up in Aneas an ideal of pious obedience, steadfast endurance, persistent purpose, — a religious ideal belonging to the ages of faith combined with the humane and self-sacrificing qualities belonging to an era of moral enlightenment. The virtues of the natural man—chivalry and daring courage—he represents in Turnus. His own sympathy is with his religious ideal rather than with that which better satisfies modern sentiment, nursed on the traditions of chivalrous romance. Yet that there was in his own imagination, more than in that of any other Roman writer, a ehord responsive to the chivalrons emotion of a later time is seen in the love and pathos which he has thrown into his delineations of Pallas, Lausus, and Camilla. But, with all his sympathies with the "Itala virtus "—the martial virtues of the old Italian racc and the martial prowess of Rome,— he felt that the deepest need of his time was not military glory, but peace, reconciliation, the restoration of law, order, and piety.

Among the personages of the Zed the only one which entitles Virgil to rank among great creators is Dido, an ideal of a true queen and a true woman. She is the sole creation which Roman poetry has added to the great gallery of men and women filled by the imaginative art of different times and peoples. There are the out- lines of a great creation in Mezentius; but Dido alone is a life-like and completed picture. On the episode of which she is the heroine the most passionate human interest is concentrated. It has been objected that Virgil does not really sympathize with his own ereation, that he gives his approval to the cold desertion of her Whether he sympathizes with his own creation or not, he is entirely possessed by it. If he does not eon- demn his hero, he sees in the desertion and death of Dido a great tragie issue in which a noble and generous nature is sacrificed to the larger purpose of the gods. But that Virgil really sympathized with the ereation of his imagination appears, not only in the sym- pathy which she still inspires, but in the part which he assigns to her in that shadowy realm in which he conceives that the "world's great wrongs" are at last righted—

*'*Conjunx ubi pristinus illi Respondet curis, equatque Sychzus amorem."*

Even those who have been insensible to the representative and to the hnman interest of the @Zneid have generally recognized the artistic excellence of the poem. This is conspicuous both in the conception of the action and the arrangement of its successive stages and in the workmanship of details. In variety of interest and finish of execution the first eight books are superior to the last four. Each of the former has a large and distinct sphere of interest, and they each eontribute to the impression of the work as a whole. In the first book we have the interest of the storm, of the prophecy of Jove, and of the building of Carthage ; in the second the spectacle of the destruetion of Troy; in the third the voyage among the islands and coasts of the Mediterranean; in the fourth the tragedy of Dido; in the fifth the rest in the Sicilian bay, at the foot of Mount Eryx; in the sixth the revelation of the spiritual world of Virgil's imagination, and of the souls of those who built up the greatness of Rome in their pre-existent state, in their shadowy dwelling-place ; in the seventh the arrival of the Trojans at the mouth of the Tiber and the gathering of the Italian clans; in the eighth the first sight of the hills of Rome, and the

prophetic representation of the great crises in Roman history, leading up to the greatest of them all, the crowning victory of Actium. Among these books we may infer that Virgil assigned the palm to the second, the fourth, and the sixth, as he selected them to read to Augustus and the members of the imperial family. The interest flags in the last

four; nor is it possible to feel that culminating sympathy with the final eombat between Turnus and Aineas that we feel with the combat between Hector and Achilles. Yet a personal interest is awakened in the adventures and fate of Pallas, Lausus, and Camilla. Virgil may himself have become weary of the succession of battle- seenes—"eadem horrida bella,"—which the requirements of epic poetry rather than the impulses of his own genius or the taste of his readers called upon him to pourtray; and this may partly account for the sense of discouragement which he is supposed to have felt at the end of his labours. There is not only a less varied interest, there is greater inequality of workmanship in the later books, owing to the fact that they had not received their author's final revisal. Yet in them there are many lines and passages of great power, pathos, and beauty. Virgil brought the two great instruments of varied and continuous harmony and of a rich, chastened, and noble style to the highest perfection of which the Latin tongue was eapable. The rhythm and style of the neid is more unequal than the rhythm and style of the Georgics, but is a larger and more varied instrument. The note of his supremacy among all the poetic artists of his country is that subtle fusion of the music and the meaning of language which touches the deepest and most sccret springsofemotion. He touches especially the emotions of reverence and of a yearning for a higher spiritual life, and the sense of noble- ness in human affairs, in great institutions, and great natures; the sense of the sanctity of human affections, of the imaginative spell exercised by the past, of the mystery of the unseen world. This is the seeret of the power which his words have had over some of the deepest and greatest natures both in the ages of faith and in more positive times. No words more subtly and truly express the magic of his style than those in which Dr Newman characterizes 'his single words and phrases, his pathetic half-lines, giving

utterance as the voice of nature herself to that pain and weariness, yet hope of better things, which is the experience of her children in every age.

"The most important of the recent editions of Virgil are those of Heyne and the revised edition by Wagner, that of Forbiger, of Kitbeck, of E. Benoist, and of Conington. Among recent works bearing on the literary criticism of Virgil arc Sainte-Beuve's Etude sur Virgile, M. G. Boissier's La Religion Romaine d' Auguste aur Antonins, Comparctti's Virgilio nel Medio Evo, Vergil und die epische Kunst, by Theodor Pliiss, various works by Prof. Nettleship, and Prof. Sellar's Roman Poets of the Augustan Age. Thc best critical estimate of the genius and art of Virgil in English is that of Mr F. Myers. Among recent translations of the Aineid are those of Conington, Mr W. Morris, and Lord Justice Bowen in verse, and of Conington and Mr J. W. Mackail in prose. CWeevsS:)

VIRGIL, PotyporeE (c. 1470-1555), author of the /is- toma Anglica, otherwise known as P. V. CasTELLENSIS, was a kinsman of Cardinal Hadrian Castellensis, a native of Castro in Etruria. His father's name is said to have been George Virgil; his great-grandfather, Anthony Virgil, "a man well skilled in medicine and astrology," had pro- fessed philosophy at Paris, as did Polydore's own brother and protégé, John Matthew Virgil, at Pavia, in 1517. A third brother was a London merchant in 1511. Polydore is said to have been educated at Bologna, and was probably in the service of Guido Ubaldo, duke of Urbino, before 1498, as in the dedication of his first work, Liber Proverbiorum (April 1498), he styles himself this prince's client. Polydore's second book, De Inventoribus Rerum, is dedicated to Guido's tutor, Ludovicus Odaxius, from Urbino, in August 1499. After being chamberlain to Alexander VI. he came to England in 1501 as deputy col- lector of Peter's pence for the cardinal. As Hadrian's proxy, he was enthroned bishop of Bath and Wells in October 1504. It was at Henry VII.'s instance that he commenced his Historia Anglica—a work which, though seemingly begun as early as 1505, was not completed till August 1533, the date of its dedication to Henry VIII, nor pub- lished till 1534. In May 1514 he and his patron the cardinal are found supporting Wolsey's claims to the cardinalship, but he had lost the great minister's favour before the year was out. A rash letter, reflecting severely on Henry VIII. and Wolsey, was intercepted early in 1515, after

which Polydore was cast into prison and supplanted in his collectorship (March and April). He was not without some powerful supporters, as both Catherine de' Medici and Leo X. wrote to the king on his behalf. From his prison he sent an abject and almost blasphemous letter to the offended minister, begging that the fast approaching Christmas—a time which witnessed the restitution of a World—might see his pardon also. He was set at liberty

before Christmas 1515, though he never regained his col- lectorship. In 1525 he published the first edition of Gildas, dedicating the work to Tunstall, bishop of London. Next year appeared his Liber de Prodigiis, dedicated from London (July) to Francesco Maria, duke of Urbino. Somewhere about 1538 he left England, and remained in Italy for some time. Il-health, he tells us, forbade him on his return to continue his custom of making daily notes on contemporary events. About the end of 1551 he went honie to Urbino, where he appears to have died in 1555. He had been naturalized in October 1510, and had held several clerical appointments in England. In 1508 he was appointed archdeacon of Wells, and in 1513 prebendary of Oxgate in St Paul's Cathedral, both of which offices he held after his return to Urbino.

The first edition of the Historia Anglica (twenty-six books) was printed at Basel in 1534; the twenty-seventh book, dealing with the reign of Henry VIII. down to the birth of Edward VI. (October 1536), was added to the third edition of 1555. Polydore claims to have been very careful in collecting materials for this work, and takes credit for using foreign historians as well as English ; for which reason, he remarks, the English, Scotch, and French will find several things reported in his pages far differently from the way in which they are told in current national story. In his searcli after information he applied to James IV. of Scotland for a list of the Scottish kings and their annals; but not even his friendship for Gavin Douglas could induce him to give credit to the historical notions of this accomplished bishop, who traced the pedigree of the Scots down from the banished son of an Athenian king and Scotta the daughter of the Egyptian tyrant of the Israelites. A similar scepticism made him donbt the

veracity of Geoffrey of Monmouth, and thus called forth Leland's Defensio Gallofridi and Assertio Incomparabilis Arturti. This doubting instinct led to his being accused of many offences against learning, such as that of burning cartloads of MSS. lest his errors should be discovered, of purloining books from libraries and shipping them off by the vesselful to Rome. As a matter of fact, it is of course mainly from the time of Henry VI., where our contemporary records begin to fail so sadly, that Polydore's work is useful. He must have been personally acquainted with many men whose memories could carry them back to the be- ginning of the Wars of the Roses. Dr Brewcr speaks somewhat harshly of him as an authority for the reign of Henry VIII., and indeed his spite against Wolsey is evident; but it is impossible to read his social and geographical accounts of England and Scotland without gratitude for a writer who has preserved so many interest- ing details. Polydore's Adagia (Venice, April 1498) was the first collection of Latin proverbs ever printed; it preceded Erasmus's by two years, and the slight misunderstanding that arose for the moment out of rival claims gave place to a sincere friendship. A second series of Biblical proverbs (553 in number) was dedicated to Wolsey's follower Richard Pace, and is preceded by an interesting letter (June 1519), whieh gives the names of many of Polydore's English friends, from More and Archbishop Warham to Linacre and Tunstall. The De Jnventoribus, treating of the origin of all things whether ecclesiastical or lay (Paris, 1499), originally consisted of only seven books, but was increased to eight in 1521. It was exceedingly popular, and was early translated into French (1521), German (1537), English (1546), and Spanish (1551). All editions, however, except those following the text sanctioned by Gregory XIII. in 1576, are on the Index Expurgatorins. The De Prodigtis also achieved a great popularity, and was soon translated into Italian (1548), English (1546), and Spanish (1550). This treatise takes the form of a Latin dialogue between Polydore and his Cambridge friend Robert Ridley. It takes place in the open air, at Polydore's country house near London. Polydore's duty is to state the problems and supply the historical illustrations; his friend's to explain, rationalize, and depreciate as best he can. Here, as in the Historia Anglica, it is plain that the writer plumes himself specially on the excellence of his Latin, which in Sir Henry Ellis's opinion is purer than that of any of his contemporaries.

VIRGINAL. See Pranororrs, vol. xix. pp. 67, 68.

VIRGINIA, one of the original thirteen States of the Plate North American Union, extends from 36° 31’ to 39° 27’ VIL

N. lat., and from 75° 13’ to 83° 37’ W. long. It is rudely triangular in form,—its southern boundary, the base of the triangle, a nearly east to west line, being 440 miles long, the north-western 565, the northern and north-eastern 230, and the eastern 125 miles. On the S. it is bounded by North Carolina and Tennessee, on the W. and N.W. by Kentucky and West Virginia, on the N. and N.E. by

Physical features.

256

Maryland, and on the E. by the Virginian Sea of the Atlantic Ocean. Its greatest length from east to west 1s 476 miles, its greatest breadth from north to south 192 wiles. It is subdivided into 100 counties. The area is variously stated at about 44,500 and 42,450 square miles ; the latter extent is that given at the census of 1880. Of the 1,512,565 inhabitants of Virginia (1,059,034 of them over ten years of age) in 1880, 494,240 were engaged in gainful occupations,—254,099, or over 50 per cent., in agriculture, 30,418 in trade and transportation, and 63,059 in manufactures and mining and mechanical industries; but now (in 1888) a very much larger proportion of the industrial population is engaged in mining, manufacturing, trade, and transportation, in consequence of the opening of mines, the erection of blast-furnaces, coke ovens, and various manufacturing establishments since 1880.

Physical Features.—Speaking broadly, Virginia may be divided into a lowland and a highland country. Its south-eastern part—over 23,000 square miles, or more than half of the whole—has the aspect of a broadly undulating plain, that, with but few marked variations of relief, rises from the sea-level to from 400 to 800 feet above it. The north-western portion is a region composed of approximately parallel mountain ranges, running entirely across the State from north-east to south-west, separated by nearly parallel valleys,—the whole presenting all the varieties of relief

peculiar to the Appalachian country between the levels of 800 and 5700 feet. To speak more accurately, the State is naturally divided into seven grand divisions or belts, each with marked characteristics of relief and geological structure, and each succeeding the other, somewhat as a more or less ascending stairway, from the sea to the north-west.

1. Tidewater Virginia is the marine plain, of Quaternary and Tertiary structure, 10,850 square miles in area, that extends westward, for nearly 100 miles, from the Atlantic border to 'The Ridge," the granitic escarpment which by its rise determines the tidal limit in the great rivers of the State. This Tidewater plain, rectangular in form, is divided by Chesapeake Bay and the great estuaries of the Potomac, the Rappahannock, the York, and the James rivers, into five large peninsulas, which are subdivided by arms of the bay and tidal branches of the rivers into hundreds of smaller peninsulas, thus giving to the region great wealth of tidal shore outline—fully 2000 miles—so that nearly every square mile of its surface can be reached by tide-borne vessels. The nearly level surface of its north to south trending peninsulas, those of the eastern marine plain, the Quaternary ones, averages about 12 feet above sea-level ; their low-lying semi-insular position and their warm finely comminuted soils make these the highly favoured great market-garden or "trucking" portions of Tidewater. The north-west to south-east trending penin- sulas, those of the western marine plain, the Tertiary ones, have more broken surfaces that vary in altitude from sea- level to about 100 feet, and are disposed in flat watershed ridges and slopes, terraces, and swamps, all deeply trenched by the secondary drainage.

2. Midland Virginia is the triangular area (12,470 square nuiles) which, 25 miles wide along the Potomac and 100 wide along the North Carolina line, extends from the Tidewater escarpment westward to the eastern base of the Atlantic coast range, the broken eastern range of the Appalachian Mountains. The elevation here varies from 100 to 200 feet above sea-level in the east to from 700 to 800 in the west ; once a gently eastwardly sloping plain, mostly underlaid by steeply dipping granitic and other Archean rocks—with included areas of Jura-Trias— striking north-east to south-west, the rivers have deeply

trenched into this, and so given it a greatly broken and _ the sea on the east ;

Vea TN TA

varied relief through a moderate range of altitude; it abounds in stream-valleys. This, with Piedmont and the Blue Ridge, was the first dry land, the oldest portion of Virginia.

3. Piedmont Virginia is the area (6680 square miles) of greatly diversified country, some 250 miles in length and 20 to 30 miles in width, that stretches between the Blue Ridge and the Coast Range mountains, including all of the latter and the eastward spurs and slopes of the former; its valleys, coves, and plains vary in altitude from 300 to 700 feet in the north-east to from 500 to 1000 in the south-west, while its included and bordering mountains range through all gradations from above 4000 feet down to the levels of its valleys. It is cliarmingly varied and picturesque, and adapted to a great variety of productions.

4, Blue Ridge Virginia is the Virginian portion (300 miles in length) of the great mountain chain of that name, with its numerous tablelands— especially the Floyd-Carroll- Grayson plateau (1230 square miles) in the south-west, having an altitude of from 916 to 5700 feet. It is, for most of its length, a chain of two ranges: the eastern, the chief, in which numerous rivers have their origin, is a grand mountain mass, carved from the Archean and eruptive rocks, forming the most striking feature of thousands of square miles of Virginia landscape ; the western is mainly composed of short ridges, formed from the easterly out- crops of the Palzeozoic rocks, flanking the western slopes of the main range.

5. The Valley of Virginia is the Virginian portion (300 miles) of the length of the great limestone or Appa- lachian valley of the Atlantic highlands, one that, made up of numerous subordinate valleys, extends with unbroken continuity from Canada to Alabama, and has for its whole length, with varying local names, the Blue Ridge on its eastern and the Kittatinny or Great North Mountain on its western border. In Virginia this is a plateau-valley,— embracing 7550 square miles,—its greatly varied tillable surface ranging in altitude from about 500 to over 2500

feet and averaging fully 1000. Carved from the lime- stones and limy shales and slates of the Cambrian group into an almost endless variety of valley and upland forms, the higher ones in gracefully rounded outline, all blending into one or more broad valleys, and bounded by grand mountain chains, this is indisputably one of the most desirable regions in the United States.

6. Appalachia (4500 square miles), a region of alter- nating "rich" and " poor" valleys (according as they are carved from the lime-abounding or from the slaty sandstone rocks of the Silurian or the Devonian groups), is Virginia's portion of the Appalachian Mountains region proper, the one that lies between the Great Valley on the east and the great Carboniferous escarpment of the Trans-Appalachia plateau. Its general features are repetitions of long, parallel, straight, and level-crested mountain ranges—many of them over 4000 feet—succeeding one another in echelon, with narrow, trough-like valleys,—ranging from 800 to 2700 feet,—but these are diversified by the occa- sional dying out of some mountain ranges and the conse- quent widening of valleys, and by the widening of ranges into plateaus or their opening into double crests or lovely mountain " coves" and "gardens." It is a noted grazing and timber region.

7. Trans-Appalachia (mainly the 1200 square miles in Buchanan, Dickenson, and Wise counties) is the Virginian portion of the tableland that extends westward from the great Carboniferous escarpment or Alleghany " backbone." It is eroded from the Carboniferous rocks, and so is the great coal-bearing portion of the State.

Climate.—The State lies in the middle Jatitudes. its great mountain chains guard it on the

It is open to Climate. |

VIRGINIA

north and west ; and it has aeeordingly as nearly a climate of means as any of the Atlantic-bordering States ean have. Its position and physical strueture also give great variety to its climate: that of its bordering sea islands and large peninsulas is insular; that of its great Tidewater and

Midland plains is warm temperate ; that of Piedmont and the Great Valley is typically mild temperate; and that of the Blue Ridge plateau and of the high valleys and table- lands of Appalaehia is more uniformly eool temperate than in higher latitudes. Its elimatie range, in the average latitude of 38° N., is from the sea-eoast to 500 miles inland, and from the sea-level to 5700 feet, a range that is equivalent to 19° of latitude, and that gives to Virginia all the adaptations for production embraced between 36° 30' and 59° N. lat. This wide range finds expression in the market-gardens and temperate fruits and trees and the extensive sweet potato, cotton, and peanut fields of Tidewater ; in the large plantations of tobaceo, hard-grained winter wheat, and the dented- seed (the large variety) Indian eorn, and in great forests of pitch- pines, oaks, &e., in Midland and Piedmont, and in the lower 'portions of the Valley and Appalachia; in the productive vineyards and orchards of Piedmont and the adjacent slopes of the Blue Ridge ; in the perennial pasture-lands—the native homes of the rich blue

s—of the higher levels of Piedmont, of the crests and plateaus of the eastern Blue Ridge, of the Great Valley, and of the extensive limestone valleys and ridges of Appalachia; in the large eereal erops and dairy produets of the Valley; in the big eattle farms and ranges of Appalachia, the Blue Ridge, and the more elevated parts of the Valley ; in the flax, buekwheat, Irish potato, cabbage, and other north-country erops that flourish in the Blue Ridge, the higher parts of the Valley, and Appalachia ; and in the north-land balsams and other cold climate trees and vegetation that clothe the higher levels of the Blue Ridge and of Appalachia.

The mean annual temperature zones of Virginia are—60° to 65° in eastern Tidewater ; 55° to 60° in western Tidewater, and most of Midland ; 50° to 55° in the higher parts of Midland, in most of Piedmont, and in the lower parts of the Valley and Appalachia ; 45° to 50° in north-east Piedmont, in most of the Valley, and in the lower valleys of Appalachia ; and 40° to 45° on the Blue Ridge, on and near the high levels of the Valley, and in most of Appa- lachia. The average for the State is near 66°, ranging from 48° in the highlands to 64° in the lowlands—from the mean adapted to grass to that suitable for cotton. The changes of temperature

are great, but not so sudden or so extreme as they are in the regions to the north-east and north-west.

The prevailing winds are from the south quadrants, generally shifting between south and west; next in frequency are those be- tween north and west; high winds are rare, except along the coast. The rainfall is abundant and well distributed throughout the seasons in every part, there being two sourees of supply, one from the Gulf by the south-west and one from the Atlantic by the south-east winds ; the average annual precipitation is from 32 to 44 inches, except in a belt extending north-west from the mouth of Chesapeake Bay towards Staunton, in whieh it is from 44 to 56 inches; there is a gradual decrease in the rainfall from the coast westward. The snowfall is generally light, some winters insignifieant ; and the snow soon melts, save in the elevated regions.

Virginia is noted for the clearness of its skies, the purity of its air, and its freedom from great storms. Its climate is moist without being damp, and so mild as to invite to living much in the open air ; its winters are short, its periods of seedtime and harvest

=

== Jurasso-Cret's. Ht) Jurasso-Triassic WN mid. & tower Carb's ~

Y Silurian S| Z (Up. 8)

2

257

long ; and its healthfulness is attested by the vigour and longevity of its people.

Geology.—The subjoined table of the geological formations found in Virginia, correlated with those of Pennsylvania and New York, and with the general groups and systems of the American geological seale, follows, in the main, the late Prof. William B. Rogers :—

Subdivisions or Formations in Virginia.

Geology.

General Groups. Systoms.

20. MNS SUREE II W VS Eo cise s vSence sanick oraneucmeertes Quaternary. 19¢, Piiocene (Upper Tertiary) .....00ee0° Cainozoic. 19d, Miocene (Middle Tertiary).....s0ssesccscores Tertiary 19a. Eocene (Lower Tertiary).....:..0000ssessescoos 18 and 17. Jurasso-Cretaceous (Upper Mesozoic)..... : 7 17 and 16. Jurasso-Triassic (Lower Mesozoic)..... 5 Mesozoie. Mesozoic. 140 (xiii.). Middle Coal group…..... Upper Car- l4a (xii.). Lower Coal group…..... f bonifcrous.! 136 (xi.). Greenbrier shales and lime- | Middle Car- : stones (Carb. limestone). f boniferous. Carboniferous 13a@(x.), Montgomery grits and coal-) Lower Car- measures (Vespertine)... f boniferous. 12 (ix.), Catskill red sandstone (Upper Devonian) lldanda f Chemung and Portage shales (Middle (viii.). DievOnlaidl) \ccacct-aresssx: ats

Co eee

Primary)

Note.—The first or Arabic numbers and the letters of the above are the numberings of the formations and their subdivisions now generally recognized and used in North America; the Roman numbers in brackets are the equivalent formations as numbered and used by the Rogers Brothers in the Pennsylvania and Virginia reports,

As the aeeompanying geological map shows, Midland, Piedmont, and the Blue Ridge grand divisions, over 20,000 square miles, or about half the land area of the State, are underlain by the Archean or old Primary and metamorphic rocks ; within this Archean area are a dozen or more patches, large and small, of the Jura-Trias (forma- tions 16, 17, and 18) or Mesozoic rocks, some of them with valuable coal-beds, that in later times were deposited in depressions, lake-like basins, in the Archean rocks, The Cambrian (Lower Silurian) areas, the Virginia formations i., ii., and iii., inelude all the Great Valley (limestone) and numerous

limestone valleys of Appalachia, some of them, like that of Clinch river, quite large—in all some 10,000 square miles of surface—having within them detached mountain ranges of more recent forma- tions. The Silurian (Upper Silurian) areas, those where the Virginia formations iv., V., Vi., and vii. outcrop, are

Scaleo w #0 80 #0 50 6oMms

Geological Map of Virginia.

mountain ranges, detached once in the Great Valley, and ranges and chains of them in Appalachia, for these formations, made up

largely of massive sand-rocks, are mountain-builders. The Devo- nian areas, Virginia formations viii. and ix., are principally those of the slaty or poor" valleys of Appalachia, No. viii. being a formation from which stream-valleys are liberally earved, though 1x., chiefly sand-rocks, often holds it up to included or bordering ridges. The Lower and the Middle Carboniferous roeks, Virginia formations x. and xi., outcrop in long and narrow belts or strips of Greenbrier shales and limestones (xi.), and adjacent narrow and

long mountain ranges of Montgomery grits and coal-measures (x.), in south-west portions of the Valley and of Appalachia, and in small mountain areas elsewhere in Appalachia. The Upper Car- boniferous, Virginia formations xii. and xiii., the Lower (xii.) and tho Middlo (xiii.) Coal groups, underlie all the thousand squaro miles of Trans-Appalachia, where the semi-bituminous eoking coals of the Lower Coal group are exposed, above water-level, in their best conditions of purity (high in carbon, low in volatile matter,

1 Formations xiv., xv., and xvi., the Upper Coal group, are not known in the

present limits of Virginia. XXIV. — 33

Minerals.

and very low in ash, sulphur, and phosphorus) for ee purposes, and in beds of remarkable thickness, and where the bi i ininous coals of the Middle Coal group also have a maximum 0 development combined with remarkable purity of composition, adapting them to gas and domestic uses. | Tertiary rocks (19a, 0, ¢) underlie all Tidewater (the new Virginia of geology, though the old one of colonial history),—the Lower or Eocene outeropping, approximately, in a line a little west of ie W. long., the Middle or Miocene between that and a little east of 76° 30' W., and the Upper or Pliocene in the remaining east part, except whicre covered by recent or Quaternary (20) deposits.

Minerals.—The varied and abundant mineral resources of the State are as yet but imperfectly developed. Her medicinal mineral springs are numerous, and many of them well known. Tidewater abounds in fertilizing marls, and in choice brick-clays, sands, and shell-limestones for building. Lime-burning, from oyster shells, isan important industry. Midland abounds in superior granites, which are extensively quarried near Richmond and Petersburg ; in the best of slates for roofing and other purposcs, especially in Albemarle and Buckingham counties ; in Jura-'l'rias brownstones and sand- stones; in trap for Belgian blocks ; in soapstones (steatites), lime- stones, and in brick-, plastic-, and fire-elays. Thick beds of excellent bituminous coal and of natural coke are found in the Jura-Trias of Chesterfield and adjacent counties, which have long been mined, ochre beds are worked in Chesterfield county ; thick beds of magnetic, specular, and limonite iron-ores, and of gold, silver, and copper-bearing rocks, traverse its whole length from north-east to south-west. Its gold belt, from 15 to 20 miles wide, rich in free, quartz, and pyritous-rock gold, traverses the whole western tier of Midland counties, for more than 200 miles, from the Potomac to the Dan ; in this belt, in Louisa county, at the Arminius copper mines, veins of white pyrites, 42 feet, bearing 46 per cent. of sulphur and considerable yellow copper, have becn opened and reduction works erected for a 800 tons daily output ; 12,000 tons of pyrites were shipped in 1886. Manganese, mica, plumbago, titanium, cyanite, garnets, emeralds, quartz, and othcr Archean and Jura-Trias minerals are found at many points. The minerals and metals now

exploited are gold, iron and copper pyrites, manganese, hematites, magnetites, and limonitcs, mica, slates, granites, brown- stones, and trap-rock. Piedmont has extensive beds of magnetic, specular, and limonite iron ore throughout its length; chromic iron ore is found in the north-east ; copper ores abound especially along the west border in spurs of Blue Ridge; manganese deposits have been worked at various points; the same Archean and Jura-Trias building stones and minerals are found here as in Midland, the marbles of Bedford and Loudoun counties of fine quality. Iron ores, Inanganese, slates, and marbles are now exploited. The Blue Ridge abounds in copper and iron ores for its whole length in Virginia ; these as well as pyritous silver, copper, and iron ores, are especially abundant in the Floyd-Carroll-Grayson or south-west plateau, where also aurifcrous quartz is milled; tin mines have been opened in Rockbridge county ; the great Potsdam or primordial iron belt, with its vast deposits of ore, flanks the western base of the Blue Ridge in Virginia for nearly 300 miles, and from the rich deposits of manganese in the same belt two-thirds of the manganese output of the United States in 1886 was mined; glass-sand of the best quality and fire and other clays are abundant, and so are build- Ing sandstones in the western Blue Ridge. Mining operations are now extensively conducted in iron and manganese ores. The Great Valley is all underlain by limestones suitable for ornamental, build- ing, and agricultural purposes ; its cement (hydraulic) and archi-tectural, fuxing, and agricultural limes are noted for their purity ; extensive beds of iron-ore are found among its hills ; marbles, barytes, brick- and fire-clays, and travertine marls are abundant : there are large deposits of lead and zinc ores, especially in the south- west, in Pulaski and Wythe counties, where they accompany the great iron-ore deposits of the Cripple Creek region ; from the Vesper- tine (No, x.) beds of the Lower Carboniferous, in Montgomery and Pulaski counties, from 15,000 to 20,000 tous of semi-anthracite coal are annually mined; ochres are mined in Page and Augusta counties ; iron, manganese, zinc, and lead ores are now mined on quite an extensive scale, and lime-burning is an important industry Appalachian Virginia abounds in very remarkable beds of limonite iron ores, found (often, under large areas, in a more or less stratified condition) in the Hudson river (iii.), Clinton (v.), and Oriskany (vii.) formations of Cambrian and Silurian age ; there are also deposits a magnetic hematites in Craig and Giles counties ; limestones of the Valley

(ii.), Trenton (iii.), and Lower Helderberg (vi.) formations underlying the "rich " valleys and ridges, abound, and furnish the best of materials for building, lime-burning, and blast-furnace fluxing purposes, as well as for beautiful encrinal and other fancy marbles ; in its Vespertine (x.) areas are numerous patches of anthracite and semi-anthracite coals, worked and workable for local use: in the Appalachian portions of Smyth and Washington counties are larce deposits of rock-salt and gypsum ; travertine marls, caves abounding in nitrous carths, and chalybeate, sulphur, alum, hot, warm, and other mineral springs are common; sandstones and slates for

-and sweet chalybeate.

Vig iNPSe

building purposes are plentiful. The iron-ores of Alleghany county

and those of the Appalachian portions of Rockbridge and Botetourt

counties are extensively mined for local blast-furnaces ; marbles and

gypsum are quarried ; considerable salt is manufactured, and semi-

anthracite coal in Pulaski for use in local zine furnaces. Trans-

Appalachia is Virginia's 1000 square miles of the Great Coal Basin

of the Ohio, or the Trans-Appalachian Coal Basin (the one usually,

but improperly, called the Great Appalachian Coal Basin) ; this is

all underlain by thick and casily accessible beds of the best of semi—bituminous and bituminous coals, those of the Lower (xii.) and of the Middle (xiii.) Coal groups of the Carboniferous. Only the semi-

bituminous coking, steam, and domestic coal of this region is now mined for exportation at Pocahontas, Tazewell county, from which 639,751 tons (93,550 of them converted into coke) were shipped in

1886, the traffic having begun with the shipment of 105,805 tons in 1883. From the Flat-top coalfield, including the Pocahontas and some adjacent mincs in West Virginia, 1,314,700 tons of coal were mined in 1887, part of which was made into about 145,000 tons of coke, equal in quality to any made in the United States.

This fuel is remarkably high in fixed carbon and low in ash and sulphur, and therefore admirably adapted for metallurgical purposes,

Twenty mineral springs of Virginia, used medicinally, were reported to the United States Geological Survey in 1886 (Tidewater 1, Mid- land 4, Blue Ridge 2, Valley 5, Appalachia 8); they were reported as chalybeate, alum, white sulphwr, red sulphur, blue sulphur,

warm sulphur, cold sulphur, hot sulphur, lithia, healing, ague,

These and many others not reported are visited as health resorts, and many of them ship to market large quantities of their waters.

Virginia produced—of coal 300,000 tons in 1884, 1,000,000 in 1886, and about 1,250,000 in 1887; of coke 25,340 tons in 1884, about 122,352 tons in 1886; of pig iron, 29,934 tons in 1880, 152,907 in 1883, 156,250 in 1886, and 156,698 in 1887; of rolled iron 40,581 tons, and of cut nails 212,552 kegs of 100 Ib in 1886; of manganesc 3661 tons in 1880 and 20,567 tons in 1886 ; of pyrites 12,000 tons in 1886 ; of ochre 1750 tons in 1886 ; of salt, gypsum, lead, zinc, granite, slates, lime, limestone for blast-furnace flux, cement, brownstone, mineral waters, and iron-ore for export large quantities were produced in 1886, and still larger in 1887, when the mining industries of this State were in a healthy condition of development.

Vegetation.—The variety of vegetation in Virginia is very great, Vegeta- | the range being from a profitable growth of semi-tropical cotton to tion.

semi-arctic pines and balsams. From one-half to two-thirds of the State is now covered by forests of native evergreen and deciduous trees. Hard and soft woods, in nearly equal proportions, form the original forests of Tidewater and Midland,—the plain regions; hard woods predominate in

the high country divisions; the park-like hardwood forests of the Great Valley have grown up since its occupation by white men.

The census report of 1880, in its natural divisions of North American forests, assigns the east maritime plain of Tidewater to the coast-pine division; the north-east portions of Blue Ridge, Valley, and Appalachia to the northern-pine division ; and the rest of the State to that of deciduous trees, The principal timber trees, found in varying abundance in all parts, are white, Spanish, black, chestnut, red, post, and swamp oaks; tulip-peplar and cucumber ; white (or shell), bark, and pignut hickories ; yellow or pitch pine ; red or Virginia cedar; beeeh, elm, black and white walnuts, sycamore, mulberry, locust, sassafras, and gum; sugar, red, and white maples; black, red, and yellow birches; wild cherry, per- simmon, dogwood, ironwood ; white, red, black, and water ashes ; chestnut, and willows. Cypress, juniper, long-leaved pine, holly, sweet gum, and some live oaks are confined mainly to Tidewater and east Midland; white pinc, hemlock, black spruce, rock chestnut oak, and balsams to the mountain regions; the oaks of the Valley are of rare excellence, and the tulip-poplars and oaks of Trans-Appalachia and its borders are of remarkable size; sumachs, millions of pounds of the leaves of which are gathered for their tannin, arc everywhere plentiful. From the sugar-maple consider-able quantities of sugar are made in the Valley and the Appalachias ; the forests of Tidewater, easily reached by vessels, furnish large quantities of fuel and lumber to seaboard markets ; railways reach the other timber regions of the State ; lumbering, charcoal-making, the cutting of railway sleepers, and the collection of tan-bark are Important industrics. Wild fruits and nuts, gooseberries, black- berries, whortleberries, cranberries, strawberries, haws, service- berries, persimmons, plums, crab and thorn apples, cherries, various wild grapes, chestnuts, chinquapins, black and white walnuts, hickory nuts, hazel and becch nuts, acorns, &c., are nearly all found in all parts. Medicinal roots (ginseng, sarsaparilla, snake-root, mandrake, &.) are gathered in large quantities in the Appalachias ; oil from sassafras roots is made in quantities in Midland and Picdmont. All the cultivated fruits of temperate climates flourish ; apples, pears, peaches, grapes, plums, cherries, currants, and other small fruits are everywhere plentifully grown ; the peach, pear, and apple orchards of Midlaud, Piedmont, Blue Ridge, and the Valley

Animals.

VIRGINIA

are noted ; the vineyards of Midland, Piedmont, and Blue Ridge are becoming well known for both grapes and wines in variety; in Tidewater and eastern Midland figs, apricots, nectarines, and other warm-country fruits flourish, and the scuppernong grapes and wines of Tidewater are also worthy of mention. The flora of Virginia includes nearly every species of plant found in the United States east of the Mississippi, excepting only the extreme south, The cleared lands of the State, about two-sevenths of the whole, are devoted to orchards, vineyards, meadows, and pastures, to market and other gardens, and to erops of maize (Indian eorn), wheat, oats, rye, buckwheat, barley, pease, beans, peanuts, round (Irish) and long (sweet) potatoes, turnips, cabbage, clover, flax, hemp, cotton, tobacco, &e. Cereal and root crops are abundantly grown in all parts, as also are tobacco, hay, clover and grass seeds, flax and flaxseed, hops, hemp, and cotton. Nearly half the State, part of Piedmont, and all Blue Ridge, the Valley, and the Appalachias is a natural grass eountry—half of it the habitat of the famous blue grass—-and well adapted to grazing and dairy-farm- ing; the spceial crops of Tidewater are those of inarket-gardens, early vegetables, and round and sweet potatoes in the east, and of peanuts and cotton in the west ; tobacco is a specialty of south- west Midland and Piedmont.

Fauna.-~Tho buffalo and elk, common when white men first settled here, are now extinet ; deer, red and grey foxes, rabbits, hares, ground-hogs or woodchucks, red, grey, and ground squirrels, opossums, polecats, muskrats, martens, minks, weasels, bats, rats, and mice are found everywhere ; otters and beavers, once numerous in all parts, are again becoming common in south Midland and elsewhere ; blaek bears frequent the Appalachian and borders of the adjacent Valley divisions ; wild-cats, eatamounts, and the small wolves are occasionally met in unfrequented portions of the moun- tain regions. Of game or food birds, partridges (quails), pigeons, wood doves, grouse (pheasants), larks, thrushes, snipe, wild turkeys, and several kinds of wild ducks are found in nearly all parts; the coasts, the inland bays, the great estuary rivers, and

the marshes of Tidewater fairly swarm, especially during the colder months, with eanvas-back, mallard, creek, redhead, bald-face, teal, and other wild ducks, and with wild geese, swans, snipe, and other water and water-side fowl; gulls and other sea birds frequent the coast. Song-birds, including mocking-birds, orioles, bobolinks, robins, eatbirds, bluebirds, wrens, tanagers, sparrows, &c., abound ; the English sparrow is domiciled in all the cities and towns ; hum- ming-birds are plentiful. The common birds of prey, eagles, hawks, owls, a vulture (the turkey-buzzard) ; the wading birds (herons, grass snipes, fly-up-the-creeks, &c.) and the various swimming birds are abundant. The common reptiles include land and water tortoises, or turtles and terrapins (some highly prized for food), and harmless snakes, useful in the destruction of vermin, frogs, toads, salamanders, &c.; the poisonous rattlesnakes, copperheads, and moccasins are sometimes encountered, but are not numerous; the comparatively harmless blaek snakes are more common. Of edible saltwater fishes, more than thirty kinds are taken in quantities in Chesapeake Bay waters, including sturgeon, rock-fish, trout, chub, sheepshead, spot, sunfish, bluefish, shad, herring, anchovy, Spanish mackerel, eod, bonito, drum, menhaden, bass, sea-eels, and hog-fish ; while dozens of kinds not used for food are known. The freshwater fishes are perch, pickerel, cat-fish, chub, bass, sueker, fall-fish, salmon, hog-fish, red-horse, red-eye, carp, inullet,.sun-fish, eels, and trout in the mountain streams. Of the abounding crustaceans, edible crabs and lobsters are caught in great numbers in the marine waters, and millions of bushels of oysters, clams, and other shell-fish are annually sent to market.

Government. —The government is entrusted to three departments, each with distinct and separate powers. (1) The legislative authority is vested in a general assembly, composed of a house of delegates of 100 and a senate of 40 members which meets biennially at Richmond ; the members of the house of delegates are elected for two years, those of the senate for four, —half the latter being elected biennially. (2) The executive authority is vested in a §overnor, elected by the people for four years. A lieutenant-governor is elected at the same time, who is president of the senate, and should a vacaney occur during the term of office becomes governor. The other executive officers are a secretary of the com- monwealth, a

treasurer, first and second auditors of public accounts, a superintendent of public printing, a superintendent of tho peni- tentiary, a railroad commissioner, a commissioner of agriculture, a registrar of the land office, and a superintendent of public instruc- tion. (8) The judicial authority is vested—(a) in justices of peace, three in each of the magisterial districts into which the eounties are subdivided ; (b) in judges of county courts ; (c) in judges of the Seventeen circuit courts into which the State is divided, and judges of city eourts; and (d) in a supreme court of appeals of five judges. The right of appeal, with specified limitations, is provided for from each of the above courts to the other, in the order named ; the Supreme court has only appellate jurisdiction save in cases of habeas corpus, mandamus, and prohibition. The justices of the peace, a supervisor, a constable, and an overseer of the poor are elected by

the voters of each magisterial district to serve two years; the general assembly elects the eounty judges for terms of six years,

the circuit judges for terms of eight years, and the judges of the supreme court of appeals for terms of twelve years. An attorney- general for the State is elected at and for the same time as the governor. In the Congress of the United States, Virginia has two senators and ten representatives. Aliens ean acquire and hold any property in Virginia on the same footing as citizens.

Population.—The population of Virginia before the separation Popula-

of West Virginia in 1862 is shown by the following table :— tion.

In- | Persons|| In- | Persons

| Census. | Population.| crease per Census. | Population.) crease per

per cent.) sq. m. percent.) sq. m 1790 747,610 op iit} | 1,211,405 13°7 18°7

| 1800 880,200 alr ety? Seon 1,239,797 2°3 1971 1810 974,600 } 10-7 15-0 | 1,421,661 | 14-6 21°9 1820 | 1,065,116 9-2 16-4 | 1,596,318 12°2 24°6

In 1870 the population of Virginia was 1,225,168, and that of West Virginia 442,014. In 1880, while West Virginia had 618,457 inhabitants (39-9 per cent. increase), Virginia had 1,512,565 (745, 589 inales, 766,976 females), ————_—_____

—an increase of 23°4 per | White. Colonred. = with 37 L PCTSODS | ri dowater …ce-ceseese— 201,578 213,691 o the square mile. MITC. cscs sc0se—sse 198,140 245,151 Theaccompanying table | Piedmont…….+. 148,138 103,620 – shows the distribution of 12 | as Be sk » . BVO ceceasayeses: 5 s4t7 the population in 1880 The Appalachias…... 96,345 9,059 according to the grand divisions. Thero were Virginia…….| 880,858 631,616

in addition 6 Chinese and : 85 Indians. The number of foreign-born, 14,696, does not amount to 1 per cent. of the population.

The original stock of the whites was mainly English, Scottish, and Huguenot Freneh in Tidewater, Midland, and Piedmont, and Scottish (largely Scoto-Ivish from migrating by way of Ireland), German, and English in the remainder of the State—in proportions in the order named.

Virginia has six cities with over 10,000 inhabitants. In 1880 Cities. Richmond, the State capital, had 63,600, Norfolk 21,966, Peters- burg 21,656, Lynchburg 15,959, Alexandria 13,659, and Portsmouth 11,390,—Danville eoming next with 7526.

Education.—The public school system of the State, organized Eduea- in 1870, provides (1) primary and (2) intermediate instruction tion. in the common branches of education, including preparation for college, by graded primary and high schools—the latter eonfined to cities, towns, and large villages—free to all between the ages of five and twenty-one inclusive ; (3) advanced instruction and train- ing in scientific and professional studies, by a military institute, an agricultural and mechanical eollege, inale and female normal schools, and an institution for the deaf-mutes and the blind—all for whites, and by a normal and agricultural institute and normal college for coloured pupils,—tuition free to a selected number from all parts of the State; and (4) higher instruction, in the eom- plete academic, scientific, technical, and

professional schools of the university of Virginia, its academic department tuition free to all young men of Virginia, over eighteen years of age, under restrictions in regard to culture. The State schools eonfer no honorary degrees. Equal provision, but in entirely separate schools, is made by law for white and coloured.

The public free school system is in charge of a board of education.

In 1887 the school population, those between five and twenty- one, numbered 610,271 (345,022 white and 265,249 coloured) ; 7140 schools (5047 white and 2093 coloured) were open, including 458 graded schools ; 7161 teachers (2416 white males, 2889 white females, 1023 eoloured males, and 833 eoloured females) were eniployed ; 325,184 pupils (209,638 white and 115,546 coloured) were cnrolled, and 184,520 (121,571 white and 62,949 coloured) were in average daily attendance. The school districts owned 4365 schoolhouses, and their school property was valued at $1,907,775 ; the expense of the free school system in 1887 was $1,381,690, besides $153,600 spent on permanent improvements. The State makes liberal grants to the military institute, the agri- cultural and mechanical college, the normal and agricultural insti- tute, the three normal schools, and the university.

Private and corporate schools embrace academies and high schools for boys, preparatory for college or university; female eolleges, mainly under denominational control; and the well-known colleges of St John's in Tidewater; Hampden-Sidney, Randolph-Macon, Richmond, and Virginia Medical in Midland ; and Roanoke, Emory and Henry, and Washington and Lee University in the Valley. The eollege of William and Mary (founded in 1693), suspended by reason of losses during the eivil war, is now a normal school.

Prisons.~~—One penitentiary, at Richmond, provides for all con~~ Crime. victed of serious crimes in Virginia; during 1885-86 it received 337 convicts (80 white, 257 coloured) ; its expenses were $98,978, and the labour of the conviets yielded $78,000. Each county

Lunacy.

Pauper- isin.

Deaf- mutes and

blind.

Agri- eulture.

Manu- factures.

260

has a jail for persons committed for petty offences or awaiting trial. : Lunacy, &c.—There are four first-class lunatic asylums, —at Williamsburg, Staunton, and Marion, and (for coloured patients) at Petersburg. In 1885-86 there were 1479 patients in the eae three asylums, for which it eontributed $345,077. The census 0 1880 returned 2411 insane,—1171 males, 1240 females, 1719. white, and 692 coloured. Pauperism is not common in Virginia; in 1870 there were only 3890 paupers, supported by public charity at a cost of $303,081; in 1880 the total number was 3138, 2117 of these being in almshouses, of whom 1027 were coloured. Deaf-mutes and blind are well cared for in a noble institution at Staunton, which trained during 1885-86 78 deaf-mutes and 44 blind, with an annual grant of $35,000. The disabled Confederate soldiers of Virginia are aided by the State ($83,040 in 1885-86). also, near Richmond, a soldiers' home. : , Agriculturc. —More than 50 per eent. of the labonring population was in 1880 engaged in agriculture. According to that year's census the land area was 25,680,000 acres, 19,835,785 of which (0°772 of the whole) were embraced in 118,517 farms, although only 8,510,113 acres of snch area (only two-sevenths of the whole) were under cultivation (leaving 57°1 per cent. of land in farms unimproved), yet the number of farms increased 60°5 per eent. and the acreage in farms 9°3 per cent. from 1870. Seventh-tenths of its farms were cultivated by owners ; over half of the remainder were rented for a share of the crop, and the other part for a fixed money rental. The average size of farms was 167 acres; but there were 53,101 containing from 100 to 500 acres, 5561 with from 500 to 1000 acres, and 1568 containing over 1000 acres each,—so that more than half the farms contained from 100 to over

1000 acres each, or a probable average of 300 acres each, large farms being the rule. The farms and their improvements were valued at $216,028,107, their farming implements at $5,495,114, the live stock at $25,953,315 ; for improvements $1,697,180 and for manures $2,137,283 were spent, and the value of their products was estimated at $45,726,221. The live stock comprised 218,838 horses, 33,598 mules and asses, 54,709 working oxen, 243,061 milch cows, 388,414 other cattle, 497,289 sheep, and 956,451 swine. The wool clip was 1,836,673 Ib; 1,224,469 gallons of milk were sold; 11,470,923 tb of butter and 85,535 of cheese were made; 859 acres of barley yielded 14,223 bushels; 16,463 of buckwheat 136,004 ; 1,768,127 of Indian corn 29,119,761 ; 563,443 of oats 5,333,181; 48,746 of rye 324,431; 901,177 acres of wheat yielded 7,826,174 bushels ; 45,040 acres of cotton 19,595 bales ; the flax crop was 4526 bushels of seed, 16,430 tons of straw, and 66,264 ib of fibre; the sorghum crop was 148 fb of sugar and 564,558 gallons of molasses; from the sugar maple were made 85,693 Ib of sugar and 7518 gallons of molasses ; of hay 286,823 tons were grown on 336,289 acres; 17,806 bushels of elover seed and 41,722 bushels of grass seed were raised ; there were 1,987,010 barn-yard and 660,147 other fowls, and 8,950,629 dozen eggs were produced during the year ; 1,090,451 tb of honey and 53,200 of beeswax were made; on 140,791 acres wero grown 79,988,868 ib of tobacco ; 2,016,766 bushels of Irish potatoes were raised, and on 23,755 acres 1,901,521 bushels of sweet ones ; orchard products were valued at $1,609,663, and market-garden products at $837,609 ; 2,177,770 cords of wood, valued at $3,053,149, were eut; the wool elip was valued $1,836,673; 12 acres of hops yielded 1599 ib and 127,976 Ib of broom eorn were grown; the crop of pease was 77,758 bushels, and that of beans 45,411. Of the 8,510,113 acres of improved land, 1,152,083 were in permanent meadows, pastures orchards, and vineyards, and 7,358,030 were under tillage ; of the 11,325,672 acres unimproved in farms, 9,126,601 were in woodland and forest, and 2,199,071 in old fields, &c. Virginia was one of the twenty States that produced over 20,000,000 bushels of Indian corn' each, ranking thirteenth; it stood second to Kentucky in acreage and quantity of tobaeco grown. The United States com. missioner of agriculture estimates that in 1884 Virginia had 4,071,401 acres in crops, produeing 44,000,000 bushels of cereals 2,061,000 bushels of potatoes, 99,763 ib of tobacco, 366,389 tons of hay, and 18,500 bales of cotton, valued at $39,050,052 ; and had

on its farms 2,127,023 domestic animals, worth $39 608 536. Manufactures.—Though Virginia has great natural advanta es for becoming a leading manufacturing State, in 1870 less than 12 ot cent. of its population was engaged in manufacturing industries In 1880, however, its 5710 establishments had invested $26 968,990, employed 40,184 persons (28,779 men), paid $7,425,261 for w es and $32,883,933 for materials, and produced to' the Wate of $51,780, 992,—a gain of nearly 60 per-cent. in ten years. It is estimated 1 that the value of the products in 1885 was $75 000 000 —a gain of over 44 per cent. in five years. The sales of "products of the manufacturing establishments of Richmond city alone amounted in 1887 to $27,887,340. The pig-iron output in 1887 was worth over $3,000,000. – The more important nianufactures are those of iron, tobacco, leather, coke, cotton, manures paper agricultural implements and machinery, builders' materials. 1 United States Internal Commerce Report for 1886.

There is | | the head of Chesapeake Bay is connceted with Delaware Bay. At

VIRGUNTS

vehicles, lumber, lime, tanning extracts, railway cars and loco- motives, flour and mill products, spelter, salt, distilled spirits, canned fruits, vegetables, &c.

Communication.—The navigable tidal bays, creeks, rivers, Commu- harbours, and roads of Tidewater Virginia furnish more than a nication,

thousand miles of channels for commerce; Richmond, at the head of the tidal waters of the James, 117 miles from Chesapeake Bay, is reached by ocean ships drawing 15 feet of water ; West Point, at York Head, 41 miles from the bay, has 18 feet of depth ; Elizabeth river gives to the fine harbour of Norfolk a channel 25 feet deep ; while Hampton Roads, with its 400 square miles of area, is the largest as well as the most central and commodious landlocked harbour on the Atlantic coast of the United States. Ship eanals connect the great waterways of Virginia with those of North Carolina and beyond to the southward ; and, similarly, northward

the beginning of 1888 there were 35 railway companies working 2540 miles of road, all of standard 4 fect 9 inches gauge, except some 256 miles of narrow-gauge short lines. The Virginia rail- ways earned $13,825,909 in 1885 at an outlay of $8,999,853, the work done being equivalent to 971,477,375 inile-tons. Virginia early took part in the construction of railways, investing many millions in the stocks of the various lines now reaching nearly every part of the State; beginning about 1830, it had 147 miles of railway in 1840, 884 in 1850, 1350 in 1860, 1449 in 1870, 1893 in 1880, 2430 in 1885, and 2540, with some 200 niles more in course of construction, at the beginning of 1888. Eight great through railway lines connect its trade and manufacturing centres with those of other States.

Finance.—For the year ending Scptember 30, 1886, the assessed
Finance.

value of the real estate of Virginia was $257,607,935, and of personal property $83,152,971, or $840,760,906 of taxable valuation; the taxes were $1,029,936 on real estate, $336,366 on personal property, $39,112 on ineomes, $316,293 capitation, $141,755 from railways on a valuation of $34,614,427, $299,343 from liquor and $400,325 from other licences, The receipts of the State were $2,773,487, and its expenses of all kinds $2,755,036; of these $657,610 went to the support of the free public schools and $1,064,097 to the support of the State Government. The rate of taxation is low, and on a low property valuation. The State debt at January 1, 1885, was $28,961,829.

Militia. —In 1880 the natural militia (inale persons from eighteen
Militia.

to forty-four years of age inclusive) was 264,033 (102,426 of them coloured) in a male population of 745,589. The organized militia foree is small. In 1885-86 there were 51 equipped volunteer com-

anies of active militia under the orders of the State,—mainly in its cities and larger towns,—43 of infantry (18 of them coloured), 5 of artillery, and 3 cavalry,—mustering in all 2904 men. The Virginia military fund is about $11,000 a year.

History.—The mound-builders of the Mississippi valley had out- History.

posts, as evidenced by remains of their carth-works, in the mountain passes of Appalachia. At the time of the arrival of the whites the Powhatans held most of Tidewater, the Mannahoacks the north- east and the Monacans the south-west of Midtind and Piedmont ; the Cherokees held the Tennessee basin parts of the Valley and Appalachia, and Algonkin tribes—Shawnees, Delawares, &c.—the rest of those divisions. Many of the place names are still Indian. Cabot probably entered Chesapeake Bay in 1498; when Raleigh's ships, In 1584, brought to England glowing accounts of the Albe- marle Sound region, the whole country was named Virginia in honour of Elizabeth, the virgin queen. The first permanent English settlement in America was made at Jamestown, Virginia, May 13, 1607, by one hundred settlers sent from England by Sir Thomas Gates and Company, who had obtained in April 1606 a charter from James I. to plant two colonics in Virginia,—a southern somewhere between 34° and 41°, and a northern between 38° and 45° N. lat., but at places not less than 100 miles apart. In 1609 the London Company superseded Gates's, which had merely held its settlement and given to the world the romantic adventures of Captain John Smirx (g.v.). King James gave the London Com- pany, by charter, a sea-front of 400 miles,—200 north and 200 south from Point Comfort,—all islands within 100 miles of the coast, and all the country back from this 400 miles of frontage " throughout from sea to sea," and to its eolonists all the rights of natural-born Englishmen ; under this charter Virginia had jurisdic- tion over her imperial colonial territory, and under it holds the fragment of that colony now called Virginia. The colony of the London Company grew and prospered, and in 1619 Governor Yardley organized at James City, the capital, a few miles inland from Jamestown, the first legislative body that met in North America ; in 1621 the London Company granted the colony a liberal constitution, the general form of which Virginia has always pre- served. In August 1619 a Dutch man-of-war sold at Jamestown twenty African negroes, and introduced negro slavery. In 1624 James I. arbitrarily deprived the London Company of its charter, and Virginia became a royal colony, which was, till the revolu- tion, a favourite and generally a loyal royal province governed

by the constitution of 1621, the king appointing the governor and council and the people electing the members of the house of burgesses. In 1698 the capital was transferred to Williams- burg, where, under royal patronage, William and Mary College had been established in 1693. The colony soon occupied most of Tidewater and its Midland border; in 1716 Governor Spotswood crossed the Blue Ridge, and was, so far as known, the first white man to enter the Great Valley, which was soon thereafter occu- pied by large unmbers of Scottish and some German and English settlers. Indian wars followed as settlers moved westward, but in 1744 Virginia purchased from the Indians the right to make settlements to the Ohio, and built a fort where Pittsburgh now stands ; the French captured this in 1754, and the long French and Indian war followed, until the 1763 treaty of Paris ended it and made the Mississippi the western boundary of Virginia. During that war, in 1755, Braddock was defeated; and in 1758 Fort Duquesne, which under the French had taken the place of Pitts- burgh, was captured and renamed Fort Pitt. In 17738 the general

assembly of Virginia resolved for an "inter-colonial committee of

correspondence," and was dissolved by Lord Dunmore, the royal governor. In May 1774 it again met and protested against the

closing of the port of Boston; Dunmore again dissolved it, but the burgesses, the members elected by the people, reassembled and passed resolutions denouncing British taxation and recommending to the other colonies an annual congress of delegates,—leading in this as it had in recommending committees of correspondence. Virginia took a leading part in the subsequent war of independence, but the various steps of her policy necd not be detailed here (see UNITED STATES, and compare also JEFFERSON and WASHINGTON).

The great territory of Virginia, reaching from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, and now divided into five large States, made the other Statcs of the Union apprehensive of her future domination. In 1781, to promote harmony, she offered to cede to the general Government all her territory beyond the Ohio, and in 1784 she made the cession, only stipulating that the territory thus volun- tarily given np should, when peopled, be divided into new States, in which slavery should be for ever prohibited, and that the remainder of her territory—that from the Atlantic to the Ohio—should remain inviolably hers. In 1787 the convention of the States, at Philadelphia, presided over by Washington, adopted the present constitution of the United States, and this Virginia, in convention, ratified in 1788. In the war of 1812-14 with England Virginia bore a conspicnons part, as also in that of 1846-47 with Mexico. The civil war of 1861-65 was more disastrous in its consequences to Virginia than to any other State of the Union; from first to last its territory was overrun, hundreds ~~of battles and minor engagements took place within its borders, and all the destruction incident to gigantic military operations fell upon it ; tens of thousands of its best men were killed in battle; its terri~~ tory was dismembered, and a third part of it cut off, while more than three hundred million dollars' worth of property was destroyed in what remained.

For some time after 1865 Virginia was under Federal military control as " District No. 1"; but on December 8, 1867, a conven- tion, elected by the people, under an Act of the United States Congress, met and framed a new constitution, prohibiting slavery and accepting the results of the war; this was ratified by a popular vote, July 6, 1869, at which time members of a general assembly and State officers were also elected. The chosen governor was Inaugurated Scptember 21, 1869; the general assembly met October 5, 1869, and ratified the fourtcenth and fifteenth amend- ments to the constitution of the United States ; and on J. anuary 26, 1870, Virginia was readmitted to representation in Congress, and released from military control. (J. H.)*

VIRGINIA CITY, the county seat of Storey county, Nevada, U.S., and the largest and most important city of the State, is situated upon the steep rugged eastern slope of Mount Davidson, about 6300 feet above sea-level.

A branch line connects it with the Central Pacific Railroad at Reno. Virginia City is built over the great Comstock lode, the mineral vein which has yielded probably more of the precious metals than any other single deposit in the World (see vol. xxiii. p, 815). With the varying fortunes of this lode the prosperity of Virginia City is intimately connected. It was founded in 1859, and in 1860 its inhabitants numbered 2345. In 1861 it received a city charter. It continued to increase until towards the end of that decade, when the falling off in the receipts from the mines caused a partial exodus from the town, and the census of 1870 showed only 7048 inhabitants. The dis- covery of the "great bonanza" in 1875 produced a return of prosperity, but this was but transient, and before the

next census the city was again on the wane. In 1880 the census showed 10,917 inhabitants,—nearly half of foreign birth, and about 5 per cent. Chinese. Since the last census the population has, in all probability, not increased. The city is laid out rather irregularly, conforming to some extent to the surface of the mountain side. Some streets have been graded, at great expense, as it involved much rock cutting.

VIRGIN ISLANDS, a group of small West India Islands (see West Iypiss), about one hundred in number, for the most part uninhabited, extending eastward from Porto Rico, and lying between 17° and 18° 50' N. lat., and 64° 10' and 65° 30' W. long. Their total area may be estimated at about 465 square miles, and their popu- lation at 67,000. For the most part they are rocky or sandy and barren, but the cultivable portions yield sugar, maize, coffee, cotton, indigo, and tobacco. Guinea grass grows abundantly on the hillsides, and the rich natural grass affords excellent pasturage ; the forests include many useful trees, among which are mahogany and fustic. Fish are very plentiful on the coasts. The westerly portion of the group belongs to Spain, the central to Denmark, and the easterly to Great Britain. The chief of the Spanish islands are Culebra or Snake Island, and Bieques or Crab Island ; they have in all an area of about 150 square miles, with a population of 2600. The Danish Virgin Islands, which include St Tuomas (q.v.), St Croix (¢.v.), and St John, have a total of about 240 square miles, with about 34,000 inhabitants. The

principal of the British portion of the group are Tortola, Anegada, and Virgen Gorda or Spanish Town, and Jost van Dyke (total area 57 square miles, and population 5287 in 1881, of whom more than one- half are in Tortola). They are subject to a lieutenant- governor, under the governor-in-chief of the Leeward Islands, and are governed by an administrative council of six elective and three non-elective members, presided over by the governor for the time being. In 1886 the revenue and expenditure were respectively £1448 and £1676. The customs revenue was £823, and there was no public debt. Inthe same year 1710 vessels entered, of 10,764 tons burden (exclusive of coasting trade), and 1779 vessels cleared, of 8444 tons; the total value of the imports was £3603, and of the exports £4103.

The Virgin Islands were discovered by Columbns on his second voyage, in 1494, and named Las Virgenes, in honour of St Ursula and her companions. In 1666 the English established themselves on Tortola, which has ever since remained in their possession. In the 17th century the Virgin Islands were favourite resorts of the Buccaneers (g.v.). The Danish islands of St Thomas and St Johu were taken by the British in 1801, but restored the following year. In 1807 they surrendered to the British, and continued in their hands till 1815, when they were again restored. The constitution of the British Virgin Islands was amended in 1854.

VISCONTI. See Minay, vol. xvi. p. 293.

VISCOUNT (Latin vice-comes), a titled rank of nobility, the fourth in the order of the British peerage, and con- sequently intervening between the dignities of earl and baron. The first English viscount, as that term now is used and understood, was Jolin, Baron Beaumont, K.G., who, by letters patent dated 12th February 1440, by Henry VI. was created Viscount Beaumont. The title vice-comes, however, existed in England certainly as early as the Domesday survey; aud in those early times it was borne by a county officer, who was deputy to the comes or earl, in accordance with the feudal system, which knew no titles independent of offices. The vice-comes, whose title from the first may fairly be translated "viscount," and who acted in the absence of the earl, may be considered to have been identical with the functionary known by the English term '"'shire-reeve"

or "sheriff," or, as we now should say, "high-sheriff." During the reigns of the Anglo-Norman monarchs this office of wice-comes was

commonly hereditary; after a while it was granted for several successive years to the same personage at the king's pleasure ; and, finally, the modern practice obtained of appointing a new high-sheriff every year. A viscount is " Right Honourable," and is styled "' My Lord. His wife, also " Right Honourable," is a "' Viscountess," and is styled "My Lady." All their sons and daughters are Honourable." The coronet first granted by James I. has on the golden circlet a row of fourteen small pearls set in contact, of which number in representations nine are shown. The scarlet parliamentary robe of a viscount has two and a half doublings of ermine. VISHNU. See Branmanism, vol. iv. p. 207. VISTULA. See Potann, vol. xix. p. 307. VITALIANUS, bishop of Rome from 657 to 672, succeeded Eugenius I. and was followed by Adeodatus. In the monothelite controversy then raging he acted with cautious reserve, refraining at least from express condem- nation of the 7Z'ypus of Constans IT. (see vol. xvi. p. 758). The chief episode in his uneventful pontificate was the visit of Constans to Rome; the pope received him "almost with religious honours," a deference which he requited by stripping all the brazen ornaments of the city—even to the tiles of the Pantheon—-and sending them to Constantinople. Archbishop Theodore was sent to Canterbury by Vitalian. VITEBSK, a government of western Russia, with Livonia and Pskoff on the N., Smolensk on the E, Moghileff, Minsk, and Vilna on the §., and Courland on the W., has an area of 17,440 square miles. Except on its south-eastern and northern borders, where there are low hills, deeply eroded by the rivers, its surface is mostly flat, or slightly undulating, and more than a million of acres are occupied by immense marshes, with as many as 2500 small lakes. The Devonian limestones and red sand- stones of which it is built up are covered with thick layers of Glacial and Lacustrine deposits,—the Glacial boulder- clay, with immense numbers of boulders, covering extensive areas. The rest consists of Lacustrine clays or sands. The soilis thus for the most part unproductive.

The Diina, or West Dwina, rises not far from the north-eastern angle of the government, and flows through it, or along its southern boundary, for 530 miles. From its junction with the Kasplya, é.c., for more than 450 miles, it is navigable; and, through a tributary, the Ulla, it is connected with the Dnieper by the Berezina Canal. The Mezha and Kasplya, tributaries of the Diina, are navigable in spring. The climate is relatively mild, the average yearly temperature at Vitebsk being 40° F. (January, 16°-4; July, 64°°3), '

The population, 1,204,950 in 1884, is chiefly White Russian (61 per eent.) and Lettish (21 per cent.); Jews come next (10 per eent.). The Poles make only about 2°3 per cent. of the population, and there are moreover about 10,000 Germans in the north-west, The Great Russians number only a few thousands. Nearly two- thirds of the inhabitants are Orthodox or Raskolnik, the remainder being Catholics, Jews, or Lutherans.

Agriculture is the chief industry, but the yearly produce rarely suffices for the wants of the population, and corn has to be imported from Smolensk. Rye, oats, and potatoes are the chief crops, occupy- ing abouta third of thearca. Flax is an important crop for export. Cattle-breeding is only moderately prosperous. Manufactures in 1884 oecupied only some 3000 persons, and their aggregate pro- duetion reached only about £788,700 (as against £84,000 in 1860); the most important branches are represented by distillcries, flour. mills, and tanneries. As arule, the White Russian population of the villages is very poor, and great numbers of the peasants are compelled every year to leave their homes in search of work. Of domestic trades, the manufacture of wooden wares, as Well as some boat-building and flax-combing, may be mentioned. The principal exports are flax, linseed, timber, and . hides. There is a brisk water-traffic on the Diina by boats to Riga, Vitebsk loading-places contributing 1,128,500 ewts. (483,000 roubles value) loaded and 630,000 ewts. diseharged in 1883.

Vitebsk is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which with populations in 1885, are Vitebsk (54,680), Drissa (3490), Diina- burg, a fortress on the Diina (69,030), Gorodok (5620), Lepel (6000), Lutsin

(5460), Nevel (7310), Polotsk (19,130), Ryezhitsa (10,150), Sebezh (3820), Surazh (5085), and Velizh (16,370).

VIS—VIT

VITEBSK, capital of the above government, stands on both banks of the Diina, on the railway from Smolensk to Riga, 345 miles west of Moscow. It is an old town, with decaying mansions of the old nobility, and dirty Jewish quarters, half of its 54,680 inhabitants being Jews. Its manufactures are insignificant, and the poorer classes support themselves by gardening, boat-building, and the flax trade, while the merchants carry on an active business with Riga in corn, flax, hemp, tobacco, sugar, and timber.

Vitebsk (Dbesk, Vitbesk, and Vitepcsk) is mentioned for the first time in 1021, when it made part of the Polotsk principality. Eighty years later it became the chief town of a separate princi- pality, and so continued until 1320, when, after having taken an active part in the internal wars of the Russian princes, it came under the dominion of the Lithuanians. In the 16th century it fell to Poland. Under the privileges given to the city by the Polish sovereigns it flourished, but it soon began to suffer from the wars between Russia and Poland, during which it was thriee taken by the Russians and burned. Russia annexed it finally in 1772,

VITELLIUS, Avtus, the ninth of the twelve Cxsars, and Roman emperor during the greater part of 69 a.D., was the son of Lucius Vitellius, who had been consul and governor of Syria under Tiberius, and distinguished for his gross and ridiculous flattery under Caius (Caligula) and Claudius, which the senate, who gave him a public funeral, recognized by a statue with the inscription " Pietatis immobilis erga principem." He was one of the intimate companions of Tiberius at Capree; he had driven chariots in the circus with Caius, had played dice with Claudius, had induced the young Nero to sing at a public entertainment, and had been a censor once and a consul three times. He had been governor of Africa, and had there, according to Suetonius (Vitellius, 5), acquitted him- self creditably. Under Galba, to the general astonishment, he was chosen to command the army of Lower Germany, and here he made himself popular with his subalterns and with the soldiers by an outrageous prodigality and an excessive good

nature, which soon proved quite fatal to order and discipline. Far from being an ambitious or scheming man, he was lazy and self-indulgent, fond of eating and drinking, and he was in fact drifted into empire by the promptings of Cecina and Valens, commanders of two legions on the Rhine. Through these two men a military revolution was speedily accomplished, and early in 69 Vitellius was pro- claimed emperor at Cologne, or, to speak more accurately, emperor of the armies of Upper and Lower Germany. In fact, he was never acknowledged as emperor by the entire Roman world, though at Rome the senate accepted him and decreed to him the usual imperial honours. But after all he was only emperor in name. It was noted as a bad omen that he received the title of supreme pontiff on the anniversary of the day of Allia, 390 3.c., on which Rome was all but utterly overthrown by the Gauls. His advance into Italy at the head of a licentious and ruffianly soldiery was as horrible and calamitous as civil war could possibly be; there was fighting and bloodshed within 7 miles of Rome, and amid riot and massacre and gladiatorial shows and extravagant feasting and a waste of seven millions of money (Tacitus, Zist., ii. 95) the capital of the empire was a scene of horror and infamy such as had never been witnessed in the most savage revolutions of past days. As soon as it was known that the armies of the East, Dalmatia, and Illyricum had declared for Vespasian, Vitellius, finding himself deserted by many of his adherents, was for resigning the title of emperor ; so crestfallen was he, so dull and lethargic, that, to quote Tacitus (ist. aa 63), "had not others remembered he had been an emperor, he would have forgotten it himself." On the entrance into Rome of Vespasian's troops he was dragged out of some miserable hiding-place, and, with his hands tied behind him, insulted unpitied, driven to the fatal Gemonian

—E

ytvy—Vi 263

stairs, and there struck down amid a shower of fierce eager blows. " Yet I was once your emperor," were the last, and, as far as we know, the noblest words of Vitellius. He perished thus miserably in his 57th year.

The Histories of Tacitus and the biography of Suetonius give us in full detail the story of Vitellius. In Merivale's History of the Komans under the Empire (chaps. 56, 57) the period is fully and vividly described.

VITERBO, a city of Italy, capital of a circondario in the province of Rome, lies 1200 feet above sea-level, on the Arcione, at the north-western base of Monte Cimino (3450 feet), on the high road between Florence and Rome, 42 miles north-north-west of the latter city ; a branch line (242 miles) connects it with the Attigliano station on the railway. It is picturesquely surrounded by luxuriant gardens, and enclosed by walls and towers, which date partly from the Lombard period. The streets are paved with large lava blocks, and the town has many handsome edifices, and some elegant fountains; among the latter may be mentioned the Fontana della Rocca by Vignola (1566). The cathedral, a fine basilica, with 13th-century restora- tions, contains the tombs of Popes Alexander IV., Clement IV., and John XXI. In 1271 it was the scene of the murder, on the steps of the high altar, during public worship, of Henry, son of Richard of Cornwall, by Guy de Montfort (see Dante, Jnf., xii. 118). In the sacristy is a Madonna with saints by Lorenzo di Viterbo. The old episcopal palace is a Gothic building of the 13th century, in which numerous conclaves have been held. The church of St Rosa exhibits the embalmed body of that saint, a native of Viterbo, who died in her eighteenth year, after working various miracles and having distin- guished herself by her invectives against Frederick II. (1251). St Francesco contains the tomb of Pope Adrian V., and has an important work by Sebastiano del Piombo; the Gothic cloisters of St Maria della Verita are strikingly beautiful. The town-hall contains some Etrurian sarco- phagi and a few good paintings. The inhabitants of Viterbo (15,279 in 1881) are chiefly dependent on agri- culture ; hemp is a specialty of the district, and tobacco and various grains are largely grown, as well as the olive and vine. There are in the vicinity numerous mineral springs; the warm sulphur spring of Bulicame, about 2 miles off, is alluded to by Dante (Inf, xiv. noe

Viterbo has sometimes, but very doubtfully, been identified with the Fanum Voltumnz, where the general assembly of the Etruscans used to be held. It was fortified by the Lombards, and in the Middle Ages became a

favourite papal residence. Popes Urban IV. (1261), Gregory X. (1271), John XXI. (1276), Nieholas III. (1277), and Martin IV. (1281) were elected here, and it was at Viterbo

that Alexander IV. (1261), Clement IV. (1268), Adrian V. (1276), and John XXI. (1277) died.

VITORIA, a town of Spain, capital of the Basque province of Alava, stands at a height of about 1750 feet above sea-level, on a small hill commanding the plain of Alava, 234 miles by rail north-north-east of Madrid. The oldest part of the town, the Campillo or Villa-Suso, occupies the top of the hill; some of the walls and towers by which it was formally defended still remain, but it is now almost deserted, and chiefly occupied by gardens. Below it is " Vitoria Antigua," with narrow tortuous lanes : on the lower level ground is the modern town, with wide Streets, an arcaded market place, and shady promenades. The cathedral of St Mary in the Campillo dates its founda- tion from 1181, and has some good Gothic arches, but has been considerably spoiled by late additions ; the church of San Miguel also dates from the 12th century, but does not possess any features of special interest. Vitoria, from its favourable position, is an important centre of trade in wine, wool, horses, mules, and hardware ; the chief industries are paper-making, carriage-building, cabinet-making, tanning,

and the manufacture of earthernware. The population within the municipal boundaries in 1877 was 25,039. Though an obscure village seems to have occupied the site from an early period, the existence of Vitoria as a town dates from 1181, when Sancho the Wise of Navarre granted a "'fuero" similar to that of Logrofo, and fortified the place. A decisive victory was here gained by the Anglo-Spanish army under Wellington over the French under Joseph Bonaparte and Jourdan on June 21, 1813. VITRE, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondissement in the department of Ille-et-Vilaine, stands on a hill rising from the left bank of the Vilaine, 24 miles east of Rennes by the railway to Paris. The town has preserved as many features of the Middle Ages as any in France, and viewed from the north its feudal aspect is striking. The streets are formed of confused masses of wooden houses, full of

projections and curves, covered with coarse slate over- grown with moss and lichen, and are bordered by covered galleries on a level with the ground, out of which dark shops open. Most of the curious houses, ornamented with statuettes and sculptures, are older than the first half of the 17th century. Only one vault remains of the original castle, founded towards the end of the 11th century; the rest was rebuilt in the 14th and 15th centuries (the best period of Breton military architecture in Brittany), and all has been recently restored. It is now occupied by a prison, a museum of natural history and painting, and the town library (6000 volumes). In the court is the former collegiate church, some of it older than the 12th century. The church of Notre Dame, formerly a priory of the abbey of St Mélaine of Rennes, dates from the 15th and 16th centuries. An outside stone pulpit is a fine example of 16th-century sculpture. Parts of the ramparts are still standing, and other parts are built into the houses of the town. There is a well-wooded botanical garden, and the remains of a castle destroyed at the Revolution. The chief articles of trade are cloth, hosiery, and thick clothing made of goats' skins. The chateau of Les Rochers, celebrated through Madame de Sévigné, stands 3 miles from the town. The population in 1886 was 8957 (commune 10,447). Vitré was formerly a Breton barony, and belonged in the 10th century to the younger branch of the counts of Rennes. In 1295 it passed to Guy IX. baron of Laval, ou his marriage with the heiress, and afterwards successively belonged to the familics of Rieux, Coligny, and La Trémoille. The town was seized by Charles VIII. in 1488. Protestantism spread under the rule of the houses of Rieux and Coligny; Vitré became a Huguenot stronghold ; and a Protestant church was established, which was not suppressed till the revocation of the edict of Nantcs in 1685. Mercceur, the head of the members of the League in Brittany, besieged the town in vain for five months in 1589, and was forced to withdraw by the army under the Prince de Dombes. 'he estates of Brittany, over which the barons of Vitré and of Léon alternately presided, met here several times, and Madame de Sévigné gives interesting details of such an occasion. Vitré was the birth- place of Pierre Landais, the favourite minister of Francis II., duke of Brittany (hanged in 1485), of his nephew Cardinal Guibé, and of Bertrand d'Argentré, jurist and the historian of Brittany. VITRIFIED FORTS is the name given to certain rude stone enclosures whose walls bear traces of having been subjected to the action

of fire. They are generally situated on elevated hills, which occupy strong and easily defended positions. Their form is irregular, and seems to have been determined rather by the contour of the flat summits which they enclose than by any definite architectural plan. The walls vary in size, some being comparatively small, while a few are upwards of 12 feet high, and are so broad that they present the appearance of huge embank- ments. Weak and exposed parts in the defence are strengthened by double or triple walls, and occasionally vast lines of ramparts, composed of large blocks of unlewn and unvitrified stones, are drawn around the fortified hills at some distance from the vitrified centre. No lime or cement has been found in any of these structures, but all of them present the peculiarity of being more or less con-

solidated by the fusion of the rocks of which they are built. This fusion, which has been caused by the application of intense heat, is not equally complete and regular in the various forts, or even in the walls of the same fort. In some cases the stones are only partially melted and calcined ; in others their adjoining edges are fused so that they are firmly cemented together ; in many instances pieces of rock are enveloped in a glassy enamel-like coating which binds them into a uniform whole; and at times, though rarely, the entire length of the wall presents one solid mass of vitreous substance.

Since John Williams—one of the earliest of British geologists, and author of The Mineral Kingdom—first de- scribed, in 1777, these singular ruins, about fifty examples have been discovered in different parts of Scotland. The most remarkable are Dun Mac Uisneachain, the ancient Beregonium, north of Oban; Tap o' Noth, in Aberdeen- shire; Craig Phadraic and Dun Dhardhail, in Inver- ness; Knockfarrail, near Strathpeffer; Dun Creich, in Sutherland; Findhaven, near Aberlemno; Barryhill, in Perthshire ; Laws, near Dundee; Dun Gall and Burnt Island, in Buteshire; Anwoth, in Kirkcudbright; and Cow- denknowes, in Berwickshire. Dun Mac Uisneachain is the largest in area, being 250 yards long by 50 yards broad. The strongest and most cyclopean is the Tap o' Noth: here the walls are about 8 feet high, and between 20 and 30 feet

thick. In Dun Mac Uisneachain, Barryhill, and Laws the remains of small rectangular huts or dwellings have been found.

For a long time it was supposed that these forts were limited in their range to Scotland; but they are now known to exist in Londonderry and Cavan, in Ireland ; in Upper Lusatia, Bohemia, Silesia, Saxony, and Thuringia ; in the provinces on the upper banks of the Rhine, especi- ally in the neighbourhood of the Nahe; in the Ucker Lake, in Brandenburg, where the walls are formed of burnt and smelted bricks ; and in several places in France, such as Chateauvieux, Peran, La Courbe, Saint Suzanne, Puy de Gaudy, and Thauron. They have not been found in England or Wales ; and Worsaae, Herbst, Rygh, Hilde- brand, and Stephens assert that they do not exist in Denmark or in Scandinavia.

All the examples yet described present a general simi- larity in form and structure. In some of the Continental forts the vitrified walls are supported by masses of unvitrified stone built up on each side. Thisyin ll probability, constituted an essential feature in the Scottish forts. Except on the hypothesis of buttresses of a similar kind, it is impossible to explain the vast quantities of loose stones which are found both inside and outside many of the vitrified walls.

The method by which the fusion of such extensive fortifications was produced has always excited much interest and conjecture. Williams, when he first directed attention to the subject, maintained that the builders of the forts, whoever they were, found out, either during the process of smelting bog-ore, or whilst offering sacrifices, the power of fire in vitrifying stone, and that they im- proved upon this discovery by using it for the purpose of cementing and strengthening their strongholds. This view has been keenly controverted, and other theories have been suggested. It has been held that the vitrified sum- mits were not forts at all, but the craters of extinct vol- canoes (West, Pennant, and Cordiner), an hypothesis long since abandoned as unscientific ; that the vitrified summits are not so much vitrified forts as vitrified sites, and that the vitrescence was produced by beacon fires lighted during times of invasion, or by bonfires kindled on hill tops in religious celebrations (Sir George

Mackenzie, Dr §. Hibbert, and Principal Daniel Wilson); and, lastly, that if

VaTRIPV IED FORTE

they were forts they must have originally been built of wood and stone, and that their present vitrified appearance is not due to design, but to their being set on fire by a besieging enemy (A. Fraser Tytler, Forbes Leslie, Von Cohausen, and Dr Joseph Anderson). The theory of Williams —which has, with modifications, been accepted by all the principal British and Continental authorities, such as MacCulloch, Hugh Miller, Virchow, Schaaffhausen, Thuot, and Montaiglon—is likely to hold the field. It is supported by the following facts :—

(1) The idea of strengthening walls by means of fire is not singular, or confined to a distinct race or area, as is proved by the burnt-earth enclosure of Aztalan, in Wisconsin, and the vitrified stone monuments of the Mississippi valley. (2) Many of the Primary rocks, particularly the schists, gneisses, and traps, which contain large quantitics of potash and soda, can be readily fused in the open air by ineans of wood fires, —the alkali of the wood serving in some measure as a flux. (3) The walls are chiefly vitrified at the weakest points, the naturally inaccessible parts being un- vitrified. (4) When the forts have been placed on materials prac- tically infusible, as on the quartzose conglomerates of the Old Red Sandstone, as at Craig Phadraic, and on the limestones of Dun Mac Uisneachain, pieces of fusible rocks have been seleeted and carried from a considerable distance to the top. (5) The vitrified walls of the Scottish forts are invariably formed of small stones whieh could be casily acted upon by fire, whereas the outer ram- parts, which are not vitrified, are built of large blocks. (6) Many of the Continental forts are so constructed that the fire must have been applied internally, and at the time when the structure was being erected. (7) Daubrée, in an analysis which he made on vitrified materials taken from four French forts, and which he sub- mitted to the Academy of Paris in February 1881, found the presence of natron in such great abundance that he inferred that sca-salt was used to facilitate the original fusion. (8) In Scandi- navia, where there are

hundreds of ordinary forts, and where for centuries a system of signal fires was enforced by law, no trace of vitrifaction has yet been detected.

A great antiquity has been assigned to vitrified forts, but without sufficient proof. Articles of bronze and iron have been found in the Scottish forts, while in Puy de Gaudy a Roman tile has been discovered soldered to a piece of vitrified rock. In a few of the German forts Prof. Virchow found some of the short logs of oak used as fuel in vitrifying the walls, and he concluded from the evenness of their cut surfaces that iron and not stone implements must have been used. These results indicate that these structures are the products of a high civilization, and were possibly in use as late as the early centuries of our era. It has been suggested that they were built as temporary refuges against the invasions of the Norsemen in Europe. There is much in the situation and character of the forts which favours this supposition. This is especially the case with reference to the Scottish forts. Here the vitrified summits are invariably so selected that they not only command what were, as we learn from the sagas, the favourite landing places of the vikings, but are the best natural defences against attacks made from the direction of the sea-coast. In Saxony and Lusatia the forts are known as Schwedenburgen, and in the Highlands of Scotland as the fortresses of the /ecune—designations which also seem to point to an origin dating back to the times of the vikings.

It may be interesting, as throwing light on the influence of high temperature on rocks, to notice some of the forms exhibited by the fused substances. Schistose gneiss is resolved into a kind of green glass ; mica is converted into a grey glassy stone of great hardness; quartz is reduced to the condition of pumice; trap rock becomes glazed like bottle glass; sandstone is transformed into a compact quartzite; and the felspar of granite is changed into coarse porcelain. Some of the materials have assumed, probably during the process of cooling, the prismatic structure, with four or six sides; while others, owing to the iron peroxide being reduced, have become distinctly magnetic.

The following are some of the more important treatises and references :— Williams, An Account of some Remarkable Ancient Ruins; A. Fraser Tytler, Edin. Phil. Trans., vol. ii.; Sir George Mackenzie, Observations on Vitrified Forts; Hibbert, Arch. Scot., vol, iv.; MacCulloch, Highlands and Western Islands, vol. i.; Miller, Rambles of a Geologist, chap. ix.; Wilson, Archexology, and Prehistoric Annals, vol. ii.; J. H. Burton, History of Scotland, vol. i; R. Angus Smith, Loch Etive and the Sons of Uisneach; Anderson, Scotland in Pagan Times; C. MacLagan, The Hill Forts of Ancient Scotland; Thomas Aitken, TZrans. Inverness Scientifie Soe, vol. i.; Charles Proctor, Chemical Analysis of Vitrified Stones from Tap o' Noth and Dunideer (Huntly Field Club); various papers in published Proecedings of Soc. Antig. Scot. and Proceedings of Royal Irish Academy; Leonhard, Archiv fiir Mineralogie, vol. i.; Virchow, Ztschr. fiir Ethnologie, vols. iii. and iv.; Schaaffhausen, Verhandlungen der deutsch. anthrop. Gesellschaft (1881); Kohl, Verhand. d. deutsch. anthrop. Gesell-schaft (1883); Thuot, La Forteressc vitrifice du Puy de Gaudy, ke. ; De Nadaillac, Les Premicrs Hommes, vol. i.; Mémoires de la Soc. Antig. de France, vol. xxxviii.; and Hildebrand, De férhistoriska folken 1 Europa (Stockholm, 1880). (R. MU.)

VITRIOL, a name formerly and sometimes still given to sulphuric acid and to certain sulphates (see SuLPHUR, vol. xxii. p. 636). Oil of vitriol is concentrated sulphuric acid. Blue vitriol is sulphate of copper; green

vitriol, sulphate of iron (copperas, ferrous sulphate); and white vitriol, sulphate of zinc.

VITRUVIUS,! a Roman architect and-engineer, whose full name was Marovus Vitruvius Potxio, the author of a very celebrated work on architecture. Nothing is known about his personal history, except what can be gathered from incidental remarks in his own writings. Owing to the discovery of a number of inscriptions relating to the Gens Vitruvia at Formiz in Campania (Mola di Gaeta), it has been suggested that he was a native of that city, and he has been less reasonably connected with Verona on the strength of an existing arch of the 3d century, which is inscribed with the name of a later architect of the same family name—'"' Lucius Vitruvius Cerdo, a freedman of Lucius." From Vitruvius himself we learn that he was appointed, in the reign of Augustus, together with three others, a superintendent of balistx and other military engines, a post which, he says, he owed to the friendly influence of the emperor's sister, probably Octavia (De Architectura, i. pref.). In another passage (v. 1) he describes a basilica and adjacent xdes Augusti, of which he was the architect. From viii. 3 it has been supposed that he had served in Africa in the time of Julius Cesar, probably as a military engineer, but the words will hardly bear this interpretation. He speaks of himself as being low in stature, and at the time of his writing bowed down by age and ill-health (ii. pref.). He appears to have enjoyed no great reputation as an architect, and, with philosophic contentment, records that he possessed but little fortune. Though a great student of Greek philosophy and science, he was unpractised in literature, and his style is very involved and obscure. To a great extent the theoretical and historical parts of his work are compiled from earlier Greek authors, of whom he gives a list at i. 1 and viii. 3. The practical portions, on the contrary, are evidently the result of his own professional experience, and are written with much sagacity, and in a far clearer style than the more pedantic chapters, in which he gives the somewhat fanciful theories of the Greeks. Some sections of the latter, especially those on the connexion between music and architecture, the scale of harmonic proportions, and the Greek use of bronze vases to reverberate and strengthen the actors' voices in the theatre, are now almost wholly unintelligible.

The De Architectura is divided into ten books, each with @ preface, in which occur most of the personal facts about himself. It is dedicated to Augustus, and that fact is

1 The references in this article follow the divisions into books and chapters adopted in the more recent German editions,

really all that is known with regard to the date at which Vitruvius lived, though many attempts have been made to gather more minute indications from the internal evidence of his writings : for example, the omission of any mention of the Pantheon in Rome has been taken as an argument to show that he wrote before it was built in 27 z.c. This, however, and other arguments of the same kind are obviously of but little weight. Vitruvius's name is men- tioned by Frontinus in his work on the aqueducts of Rome; and most of what Pliny says (7.N., xxxv. and XXXVi.) about methods of wall-painting, the preparation of the stucco surface, and other practical details in building is taken almost word for word from Vitruvius, especially from vi. 1, though without any acknowledgment of the source. From the early Renaissance down to a comparativel 5 recent time the influence of Vitruvius's treatise has been remarkably great. Throughout the period of the classical revival Vitruvius was the chief authority studied by all architects, and in every point his precepts were accepted as final. In some cases a failure to understand his meaning led to curious results ; for example, the mediaeval custom, not uncommon in England, of placing rows of earthenware

jars.under the floor of the stalls in church choirs appears

to have been an attempt to follow out Vitruvius's remarks about the advantages of placing bronze vases round the auditorium of theatres. Bramante, Michelangelo, Palladio, Vignola, and earlier architects were careful students of Vitruvius's work, which through them has largely influenced the architecture of almost all European countries down to the present century, a very remarkable instance of the success and influence of a book being actively redeveloped a very long time—about fifteen centuries—after its author's lifetime. There is no reason to suppose that

the book was either popular or influential among the ancient Romans, and yet in more modern times its influence has been un- bounded. Its archzeological value is very great, as without it we should find it very difficult to understand the uses of the various parts of such houses as those at Pompeii, and many interesting details with regard both to construction and design would have remained unintelligible.

Bk. i, opens with a dedication to Augustus. ©. 1 is on the science of architecture generally, and the many different branches of knowledge with which the trained architect ought to be acquainted, viz., grammar, music, painting, sculpture, medicine, geometry, mathematics, and optics; c. 2 is on the general ee of architectural design ; c. 3 on the considerations which

etermine a design, such as strength, utility, beauty, and tho like ; c. 4 on the nature of different sorts of ground for sites; c. 5 on walls of fortification ; c. 6 on aspects towards the north, south, and other points ; c. 7 on the proper situations of temples dedicated to the various deities. Bk. ii. relates to materials (preface about Dinocrates, architect to Alexander the Great). C. 1 is on the earliest dwellings of man; c. 2 on systems of Thales, Heraclitus, Democritus, &c.; c. 8 on bricks; c. 4 on sand; c. 5 on lime; c. 6 on pozzolana ; c. 7 on kinds of stone for building; c. 8 on methods of constructing walls in stone, brick, concrete, and marble, and on the materials for stucco ; c. 9 on timber, time for felling it, season- ing, &c.; and c. 10 on the fir trees of the Apennines, Bk. iii., on styles, has a preface on ancient Greek writers. C. 1 ison symmetry and proportion ; c. 2 on various forms of Greek temples, ¢.g., in antis, prostyle, peripteral, dipteral, hypathral ;? c. 3 on inter- columniation— pycnostyle, systyle, eustyle, &c.; c. 4 on founda- tions, steps, and stylobates ; c. 5 on the Ionic ordcr, its form and details. Bk. iv., on styles and orders, has a preface to Augustus on the scope of the work. The subjects of its nine chapters are— (1) the Corinthian, Ionic, and Doric orders; (2) the ornaments of capitals, &c.; (3) the Doric order ; (4) proportions of the cella and pronaos ; (5) sites of temples; (6) doorways of temples and their architraves ; (7) the Etruscan or Tuscan order of temples; (8) circu- lar temples ; (9) altars. Bk. v., on public buildings, has

a preface on the theories of Pythagoras, &c. Its twelve chapters treat (1) of fora and basilice, with a description of his own basilica at Fanum ;

2 The excavations made in 1887 have shown that Vitruvius was right in describing the great temple of Olympian Zeus at Athens as being octastyle. The previously almost universal opinion that it was decastyle had led to the needless theory that the passage containing this statement was corrupt.

(2) of the adjuncts of a forum (rarium, prison, and curia); (3) of theatres, their site and construction ; (4) of laws of harmonics ; (5) of the arrangement of tuned bronze vases in theatres for acoustic purposes ; (6) of Roman theatres; (7) of Greek theatres ; (8) of the selection of sites of theatres according to acoustic principles ; (8) of porticus and covered walks ; (9) of baths, their floors, hypocausts, the construction and use of various parts ; (11) of paleestre, xysti, and other Greek buildings for the exercise of athletes ; (12) of har- bours and quays. Bk. vi. is on sites and planning, and the preface treats of various Greek authors. C. 1 is on selection of sites ; c. 2 on the planning of buildings to suit different sites ; c. 3 on private houses, their construction and styles, the names of the different apartments ; c. 4 on the aspects suited for the various rooms ; c. 5 on the various sorts of buildings fitted for special positions; c. 6 on farms and country houses; c. 7 on Greek houses and the names of various parts ; c. 8 on construction of houses in wood, stone, brick, orconcrete. Bk. vii., mostly on methods of decoration, has a preface (as usual) on the opinions of ancient Greek writers, with lists of Greek sculptors, architects, and writers on architecture, and of Roman architects. C. 1 has for its subject pavements and roads, their construction, mosaic floors; c. 2 is on white stucco for walls (opus albarium) ; c. 3 on concrete vaults, gypsum mouldings, stucco prepared for painting; c. 4 on building of hollow walls to keep out the damp, wall decoration by various processes; c. 5 on methods and styles of wall painting, the debased taste of his time ; c. 6 on fine stueeo made of pounded marble,—three coats to receive wall paintings; c. 7 on colours used for mural decoration ; c. 8 on red lead

(miniwm) and mercury, and how to use the latter to extract the gold from worn-out pieces of stuff or embroidery; c. 9 on the preparation of red lead and the method of encaustic painting with hot wax, finished by friction ; ec. 10-14 on artificial colours— black, blue, purple ; c.10 white lead and ostrum, 7.c., murex purple, and imitations of murex dye. Bk. viii. is on hydraulic engineer- ing, and the preface on theories of the ancients. OC. 1 treats of the finding of good water, its quality according to the soil it runs through ; c. 2 of rain-water and rivers—rivers in various countries ; e. 8 of hot springs, mineral waters, with an account of the chief medicinal springs of the world; c. 4 of selection of water by observation and experiment ; c. 5 of instruments for levelling used by aqueduct engineers; c. 6 of construction of aqueducts, pipes of lead, clay, &c., cisterns, fountains, poisoning from lead pipes, hydraulic cement, settling tanks, and other valuable matter on the subject of water-supply. Bk. ix. is on astronomy. The preface treats of Greek sciences, geometry, the discovery of specific gravity by Archimedes, and other valuable discoveries of the Greeks, and of Romans of his time who have vied with the Greeks—Lucretius in his poem De Rerum Natura, Cicero in rhetoric, and Varro in philo- logy, as shown by his De Lingua Latina. The subjects of the eight chapters are (1) the signs of the zodiac and the seven planets; (2) the phases of the moon ; (8) the passage of the sun through the zodiac ; (4) and (5) various constellations; (6) the relation of astrological influences to nature; (7) the mathematical divisions of the gnomon; (8) various kinds of sun-dials and thcir inven- tors. Jk. x. ison machinery, with a preface coneerning a law at ancient Ephesus compelling an architect to complete any public building he had undertaken ; this, he says, would be useful among the Romans of his time.?_ The chapters are—(1) on various machines, such as sealing-ladders, windmills, &c.; (2) on windlasses, axles, pulleys, and cranes for moving heavy weights, such as those used by Chersiphron in building the great temple of Diana at Ephesus, and on the discovery by a shepherd of a quarry of marble required to build the same temple ; (3) on dynamics ; (4) on machines for drawing water ; (5) on wheels for irrigation worked by a river ; (6) on raising water by a revolving spiral tube ; (7) on the machine of Ctesibius for raising water to a height; (8) on a very complicated water engine, the description of which is not intelligible, though Vitruvius remarks that he has tried to make the matter clear : (9) on machines with wheels to register the distance

travelled, either by land or water ; (10) on the construction of seorpiones for hurling stones ; (11) and (12) on baliste# and catapults ; (13) on battering- rams, and other machines for the attack of a fortress: (14) on shields (éestudines) to enable soldiers to fill up the enemy's ditches ; (15) on other kinds of testudines ; (16) on machines for defence, and examples of their use in ancient times. : The first MS. of the De Architectur i i codex on vellum preserved in the Pein eet ce . the first printed edition is that issued in Rome by George Herolt about 1485-86 but without indication of place or date; it is a small folio with thirty-four lines to the page, and has neither signatures, catchwords, nor numbering of the leaves, 1t was edited by J. Sulpicius, and with it is printed Frontinus De Agueductibus : this second work occurs as an addition in many early editions of Vitruvius of which a very large number were printed at various places in Italy within a tew

ycars after the publication of the editio princeps.? On the whole the best editi of Vitruvius's text is that edited by Schneider, Leipsic, 1807, 3 vols. 8vo, with ook

1 Vitruvius names Cieero and Lueretius as " post nostram memoriam nascentes." 2 The architect being at that time also the eontraetor.

3 One of the earliest commentators on Vitruvius was the monk-arehi- teet Fra Gioeondo, a man of extraordinary talent (see VERONA).

notes, but no plates. An immense number of translations have also been pub- lished in most European languages—the first Italian translation at Como in 1521; French, at Paris in 1547; German, at Nuremberg in 1548; and the first English translation in London in 1692. The best English translation is that of Gwilt, 1826, improved edition, 1860. That of Wilkins (1812) is merely a fragment of some of the books, but it is copiously illustrated with engraved plates.

The name of Vitruvius has been given to several liandsome works on modern architecture, such as Campbell, Vitruvius Britannicus, London, 1715-71, a series of illustrations of the chief buildings of the 18th century

in England, including many works of the brothers Adam ; one of these brothers, William Adam, pro- duced a similar work illustrating the buildings which he had designed for Scotland, of which he was a native, under the title of Vitruvius Scoticus, Edin- burgh, 1790. Thurah, Ze Vitruve Danots, Copenhagen, 1746-49, is a similar collection of modern buildings in Denmark.

The biographies of Vitruvius as usually published are very untrustworthy, and contain many statements which rest upon no authority whatever. (J. TE. M.)

VITTORIA, an inland town of Sicily, in the Italian province of Syracuse, about 18 miles by road east-south- east from Terranova, stands in the midst of a rich vine and olive district, which also produces silk, rice, and honey. The population in 1881 was 21,755. Itis quite a modern town,— founded towards the beginning of the 17th century. The principal church (San Giovanni) dates from 1854.

VITUS, Sz, according to the Roman Breviary, while still a very young boy, had been baptized without the knowledge of his father, who, on learning this, spared no effort to bring about his return to paganism. After other severe measures had been tried in vain he was delivered to Valerian to be scourged, but even this had no effect, and he was handed back to his father. Admonished by an angel, Vitus, accompanied by Modestus and Crescentia, by whom he had been brought up, now took refuge abroad, where his fame for sanctity became so great that he was summoned by Diocletian to heal his child, who was grievously vexed with a devil. Successful in this he was urged by the un- grateful emperor to worship the pagan deities, and on his refusal was cast into prison. Along with Modestus and Crescentia he was sentenced to be plunged into a cauldron of molten lead, resin, and pitch, but here their experience was that of the three Hebrew children. Next they were cast before the lion, but the wild beast fawned upon them and licked their feet. Finally they were torn limb from limb. The three are commemorated on June 15. The more extended legend of St Vitus relates that, on one occasion when he had been shut up in a dungeon, his father look- ing through a chink in the door beheld him dancing with seven beautiful angels ; so dazzled was he by the sight that

he became blind, and recovered only through the interces- sion of his son. St Vitus is accordingly the patron saint of dancers and actors, and is invoked against the disease known as Sr Vitus's Danczx (q.v.). He is the patron of Saxony, Bohemia, and Sicily, and throughout Germany ranks as one of the fourteen " Nothhelfer" of the church.

VIVARINI, the surname of a family of painters of Murano (Venice), who produced a great quantity of work in Venice and its neighbourhood in the 15th century, leading on to that phase of the school which is represented by Carpaccio and the Bellinis.

ANTONIO VivaRINI was probably the earliest of this family. He came from the school of Andrea da Murano, and his works show the influence of Gentile da Fabriano. The earliest known date of a picture of his, an altar-piece in the Venetian academy, is 1440; the latest, in the Lateran museum, 1464. He worked in company with a certain " Joannes de Alemania." By some writers Joannes has been regarded as himself a Vivarini, but this appears improbable: no trace of him exists of a date later than 1447. After 1447 Antonio painted either alone or in combination with his younger brother Bartolommeo. The works of Antonio are well drawn for their epoch, with a certain noticeable degree of softness, and with good flesh and other tints. Three of his principal paintings are the Virgin Enthroned with the Four Doctors of the Church, the Coronation of the Virgin, and Sts Peter and Jerome. The first two (in which Joannes co-operated) are in the Venetian academy, the third in the London National Gallery.

BaRTOLOMMEO VIVARINI is known to have worked from 1450 to 1499. He learned oil-painting from Antonello da Messina, and is said to have produced, in 1473, the first oil picture done in Venice. This is in the church of Sts John and Paul,—a large altar-piece in nine divisions, representing Augustine and other saints. Most of his works, liowever, including one in the National Gallery, are in tempera. His outline is always hard, and his colour good ; the figures have much dignified and devout expres- sion. As ""vivarino" means in Italian a goldfinch, he some- times drew a goldfinch as the signature of his pictures.

Luici or ALvisE VIVARINI painted in 1490 and on to 1505. It has sometimes been supposed that, besides the Luigi who was the latest of this pictorial family, there had also been another Luigi who was the earliest, this supposition being founded on the fact that one picture is signed with the name, along with the date 1414. There is good ground, however, for considering this date to be a forgery of a later time. The works of Luigi show an advance on those of his predecessors, his best work being one which he executed for the Scuola di S. Girolamo in Venice, representing the saint caressing his lion, and some monks decamping in terror. The architecture and per- spective in this work are superior. Other works by Luigi are in Treviso and in Milan.

VIVES, Juan Luts (or Lupovicus) (1492-1540), a well- known scholar of the third and fourth decades of the 16th century, was born at Valencia, in Spain, in March 1492. He studied at Paris and Louvain, ultimately becoming professor of humanity at the latter university. At the instance of his friend Erasmus he prepared an edition of Augustine's De Civitate Dei, which was published in 1522 with a dedication to Henry VIII. of England. Soon after- wards he was invited to England and appointed tutor to the Princess Mary, for whose benefit he wrote De Ratione Studii Puerilis Epistole Due. While in England he resided a good deal at Oxford, where he was made doctor of laws and lectured on philosophy. Having openly declared himself against the king's divorce, he lost the royal favour and was thrown into prison, where he re- mained for six months. On his release he went to Spain and afterwards to the Low Countries, finally settling in Bruges, where he married and devoted himself to the com- position of his numerous works, which were chiefly directed against the scholastic philosophy and the preponderant authority of Aristotle. He died on May 6, 1540.

A complete edition of his works was published at Basel in 1555 (2 vols. fol.), and another at Valencia in 1782.

VIZAGAPATAM, a British district of India, in Madras presidency, lying between 17° 14' 30" and 18° 58' N. lat. and 82° 19' and 83° 59' E. long., with an area of 3477 square miles. Including the Jaipur and Vizianagram zamindaries, which are under British administration, the area is 17,380

square miles. Vizagapatam is bounded on the N. by Ganjam district, on the E. by Ganjam and the sea, on the S. by the sea and Godavari district, and on the W. by the Central Provinces. It is a beautiful, picturesque, and hilly country, forming part of the large extent of shore known as the Orissa coast, but for the most part it is unhealthy. The surface of the country is generally undu- lating, rising towards the interior, and crossed by streams, Which are dry except during the rainy season. The main portion is occupied by the Eastern Ghats. The slopes of these mountains are clothed with luxuriant vegetation, amid which rise many tall forest trees, while the bamboo grows profusely in the valleys. The drainage on the east 1s carried by numerous streams direct to the sea, and that to the west flows into the Godavari through the Indravati or through the Sabari and Sillar rivers. To the west of the range is situated the greater portion of the extensive

zamindari of Jéipur, which is for the most part very hilly and jungly. The north and north-west of the district ig also mountainous. In the extreme north a remarkable mass of hills, called the Nimgiris, rise to a height of 4972 feet, and these are separated by valleys of not more than 1200 feet from the neighbouring ranges of Ghats. The plain along the Bay of Bengal is exceedingly rich and fertile. It is described as a vast sheet of cultivation, green with rice fields and gardens of sugar-cane and tobacco. There are great varieties of climate in the dis- trict. Along the coast the air is soft and relaxing, the prevailing winds being south-easterly. The average annual rainfall at Vizagapatam exceeds 40 inches.

The census of 1881 returned the population of the district, exclusive of the agency tracts, at 1,790,468 (males 897,116, femalcs 893,352). Including the Jaipur and Vizianagram dependencies, the total population of the district was 2,485,141 (males 1,254,850, females 1,230,291), of whom 2,460,474 were Hindus, 20, 403 Mohammedans, and 3410 Christians. There arc five towns with populations of more than 10,000, viz.:—Vi1ZAGAPATAM and Viz1A- NAGRAM (9.v.); Anakapalle, 13,341; Bobbili, 14,943; and Salur, 11,856. The chief crops are rice, which is the staple product of the country, and sugar. The cultivation of indigo is also successfully carried on. Thc actual area under cultivation in 1885-86 amounted to 168,559 acres, besides 10,833 acres of forests.

The gross revenue of the district in 1885-86 was £201,699, of which the land yielded £139,200. There are few industries, the principal being cotton cloths and the beautiful fancy wares of Vizagapatam towns. On the dis- solution of the Mughal empire Vizagapatam occupied a portion of the territory known as the Northern Circars, which were ceded to the East India Company by treaty in 1768. On the introduction of the per- manent settlement in 1802 it was formed into a separate collectorate, and since then scveral changes have bcen made in its administration.

VIZAGAPATAM, a municipal and seaport town, the administrative headquarters of the above district, with a population in 1881 of 30,291. It lies on a small bay, the south extremity of which is bounded by a promon- tory known as the Dolphin's Nose, and its northern extremity by the suburb of Waltair. The town or fort, as it is called, is separated from the Dolphin's Nose by a small river, which forms a bar where it enters the sea, but is passable for vessels of 300 tons during spring tides. Vizagapatam is the residence of a Roman Catholic vicar apostolic. It contains some good streets, has a hand- some hall, library, and reading- room, an excellent hospital and dispensary, and maintains a great many schools. The principal exports are grain and sugar, and the principal industries of the town are elk horn and ivory knick- knacks and gold and silver filigree work.

VIZIADRUG, or Guerta, a port in Ratnagiri district, Bombay presidency, India, about 30 miles south of Ratnagiri town and 170 miles south of Bombay city, in 16° 33' 40" N. lat. and 73° 22'10" E. long. It is one of the best harbours on the western coast of India, being without any bar, and may be entered in all weathers ; even to large ships it affords safe shelter during the south- west monsoon. The chief interest of the place centres in its fort, which is one of the strongest Mohammedan fortresses in the Concan, and rises grandly about 100 feet above the river.

About 1698 the pirate chief Angria made Viziadrug the capital of a territory stretching for about 150 miles along the coast, and from 30 to 60 miles inland. The fort surrendcred to the English fleet in 1756, and was given over to the peshwd4. In May 1818 an unsuccessful attempt was made to take Viziadrug, but, the whole of the district of Ratnagiri having

now passed into the hands of the British, the fortress surrendered in June.

VIZIANAGRAM, one of the most ancient and extensive estates or zamindaries in India, included in the Vizaga- patam district of the Madras presidency, with an area of about 3000 square miles, and a population (1881) of 844,168. The chief town, Vizianagram, had in 1881 a population of 22,577.

The zamindari first came under the charge of the English authorities in 1817, with a very heavy debt, but it was restored to

the raja five years afterwards clear of all incumbrances. It again came under their charge in 1827, during a minority, but on the r4ja's coming of age it was again restored with a surplus.

VIZIER (Arabic Waztr), literally the " burden bearer i of the sovereign. The office of vizier, which spread from the Arabs to the Persians, Turks, Mongols, and other Oriental peoples, arose under the first Abbasid caliphs, and took shape under their great ministers the Barmecides (see vol. xvi. p. 591). The vizier stood between sovereign and subjects, representing the former in all matters touch- ing the latter. This withdrawal of the head of the state from direct contact with his people was unknown to the Omayyads, and was certainly an imitation of Persian usage ; it has even been plausibly conjectured that the name is but the Arabic adaptation of a Persian title. It appears, however, in the Koran (xx. 30, xxv. 37), where Aaron is called the waztr of Moses, and these passages are appealed to by Arabic writers as giving divine sanction to the institution. The title of wazir was often given to ministers of a special department, such as the treasury or the police, but the wazir (the grand vizier, as Europeans say) bore the whole burden of the state, and, although his position was absolutely uncertain, depending on the mere will of the sovereign, his power was unlimited. His place was one of dizzy grandeur but of extreme difficulty. He was expected to be able to answer all questions, realize every wish of the caliph, keep the coffers of the state full, and yet find time to cultivate the personal favour of the sovereign by

the display of social gifts. Such were the Barmecide viziers, the brilliant type of which all subse- quent Oriental ministers are more or less imperfect copies. Ultimately under the caliph Radi the grand vizier gave way toa mayor of the palace called the amir al-omard, but the old office and title were continued at the courts of the princes who rose on the decline of the caliphate. In Spain, where the chamberlain (Adjib) was the greatest officer of state, the title of waztr was given to governors of towns, and in this sense the word was the parent of the Spanish alguazil.

VIZZINT, an inland town of Sicily, in the Italian province of Catania, 39 miles E.N.E. of Terranova and 34 miles W.N.W. of Syracuse, is a prosperous country place of 13,966 inhabitants (1881). It has several churches (S. Gregorio, Minori Osservanti, S. Maria de' Greci), with pictures of some artistic or antiquarian interest.

VLACHS. Vlach, otherwise written Wallack, is a general name for all the members of the Latin-speaking race inhabiting eastern Europe. The name is in its origin identical with our "Welsh," " Welshman," and represents a Slavonic adaptation of a generic term applied by the Teutonic races at the time of the migration of peoples to all Roman provincials. It thus finds its analogies in the German name for Italy—Welschland (Walischland), in the Walloons of the Low Countries, the " Wallgau" of Tyrol, &c. An early instance of its application to the Roman population of the Eastern empire is found in the Zraveller's Song, where in a passage which in all probability connects itself with the early trade-route between the Baltic staple of Wollin and Byzantium, the gleeman speaks of Czsar's realm as Walaric = "Welshry." In verse 140 he speaks of the " Rum-walas," and it is to be observed that "Rum " is one of the words by which the Vlachs of eastern Europe still know themselves.

The Slavs, at least in their principal extent, first knew the Roman empire through a Teutonic medium, and adopted their terms Vlach, Voloch, from the Ostro-Gothic equivalent of the Anglo-Saxon "Wealh." The name is thus of foreign origin, the native Vlachs continuing to this day to call

See Lagarde, Armenische Studien, p. 147, and Noldeke's trans- lation of Tabari, pp. 58 n, 444 n.

themselves " Raument," Romeni, or even Lomani; and it is from the native pronunciation of the Roman name that we have the equivalent expression Kowman, a word which must by no means be confined to that part of the Vlach race inhabiting the present kingdom ef Roumania. This Vilach or Rouman race constitutes a distinct division of the Latin family of peoples, widely disseminated throughout eastern Europe, both north and south of the Danube. North of the Danube the Roumans inhabit, besides Walachia and Moldavia, Bessarabia and the adjoining South-Russian districts, a large part of Transylvania and the Hungarian Banat, and extend sporadically from the Bug to the Adriatic. South of the Danube the central glens of Pindus form the principal nucleus of Rouman habitation, but there is besides a considerable colony in the Epirote district of Musakja, in Aitolia and Acarnania, in various districts of Albania, Thessaly, Macedonia, and the Bulgarian principality. In Servia this element is preponderant in the Timok valley, while in Istria it is represented by the Cici, at present largely Slavonized, as are now entirely the kindred Morlachs of Dalmatia.

The centre of gravity of the Vlach or Rouman race is at present unquestionably north of the Danube, and corre- sponds roughly to the limits of Trajan's Dacian province. From this circumstance the popular idea has arisen that the race itself represents the descendants of the Romanized population of Trajan's Dacia, which was assumed to have maintained anunbrokenexistencein Walachia, Transylvania, &ec., beneath the dominion of a succession of invaders. The Vlachs of Pindus, &c., on this hypothesis, were to be regarded as later immigrants from the lands north of the Danube. In 1871 Roesler published, in a collective form, a series of essays, in which he absolutely denied the claim of the Roumanian and Transylvanian Vlachs to be regarded as Dacian autochthones. He laid stress on the statements of Vopiscus and others as implying the total withdrawal of the Roman provincials from Trajan's Dacia by Aurelian, and on the non-mention by historians of a Latin popula- tion in the Jands on the left bank of the lower Danube, during their successive occupation by Goths, Huns, Gepide, Avars, Slavs, Bulgars, and other barbarian races. He found the first trace of a Rouman

settlement north of the Danube in a Transylvanian diploma of 1222. Roesler's thesis has been generally regarded as an entirely new de- parture in critical ethnography. As a matter of fact, his conclusions had to a great extent been already anticipated by Sulzer in his Geschichte des Transalpinischen Daciens, published at Vienna in 1781, and at a still earlier date by the Dalmatian historian Lucius of Traii in his work De Regno Dalmatiz et Croatix, 1666.

The theory of the later immigration of the Roumans into their present abodes north of the Danube, as stated in its most extreme form by Roesler, commanded wide accept- ance, and in Hungary it was politically utilized as a plea for refusing parity of treatment to a race of com- paratively recent intruders. In Roumania itself Roesler's views were resented as an attack on Rouman nationality. Outside Roumania they found a determined opponent in Dr Jung, of Innsbruck, who in his Anfénge der Roméinen upheld the continuity of the Roman provincial stock in Trajan's Dacia, disputing from historic analogies the total withdrawal of the provincials by Aurelian; and the reaction against Roesler was carried still further by T. Lad. Pit (Ueber die Abstammung der Rumiinen, 1880) and Prof. A. D. Xenopol of Jassy (Les Rowmains au Moyen Age, 1885).

On the whole,—as often in controversies,—it may be said that the truth lies between the two extremes. 'Roesler 1s no doubt so far right that at the time of the migration of peoples, and indeed throughout the early Middle Ages, the bulk of the Rouman people lay south of the Danube.

2 jb Et eit.

Pié's view that the population of the Roman provinces of Meesia, &c., were Hellenized rather than Romanized, and that it is to Trajan's Dacia alone that we must look for the Roman source of the Vlach race, conflicts with what we know of the Latinizing of the Balkan lands from inscrip- tions, martyrologies, Procopius's list of Justinian's Illyrian fortresses, and other sources. This Roman element south of the Danube had further received a great increase at the expense of Trajan's colonial foundation to the north when Aurelian established his New Dacia on the Mcesian side of the river. On the other hand, the analogy supplied by the withdrawal of the Roman provincials from Riparian Noricum tells against the

assumption that the official withdrawal of the Roman colonists of Trajan's Dacia by Aurelian entailed the entire evacuation of the Carpathian regions by their Latin-speaking inhabitants. As on the upper Danube the continuity of the Roman population is attested by the Vier Komanisci of early medizeval diplomas and by other traces of a Romanic race still represented by the Ladines of Tyrol, so it is reasonable to suppose a Latin-speaking population continued to exist in the formerly thickly colonized area embracing the present Transylvania and Little Walachia, with adjoining Carpathian regions. Even as late as Justinian's time, the official con- nexion with the old Dacian province was not wholly lost, as is shown by the erection or restoration of certain tétes- de-pont and castella on the left bank of the lower Danube.

We may therefore assume that the Latin race of eastern Europe never wholly lost touch of its former trans- Danubian strongholds. It was, however, on any showing greatly diminished there. The open country, the broad plains of what is now the Roumanian kingdom, and the Banat of Hungary were in barbarian occupation. The centre of gravity of the Roman or Romance element of llyricum had now shifted south of the Danube. By the 6th century a large part of Thrace, Macedonia, and even of Epirus, had become Latin-speaking.

What had occurred in Trajan's Dacia in the 3d century Was consummated in the 6th and 7th throughout the greater part of the South-Illyrian provinces, and the Slavonic and Avar conquests severed the official connexion with eastern Rome. The overthrow of civic life and break-down of provincial organization was complete. The Roman element was uprooted from its fixed seats, and swept hither and thither by the barbarian flood. Nomadism became an essential of independent existence. On the other hand, large masses of homeless provincials were dragged off as captives in the train of their barbarian Conquerors, to be distributed in servile colonies. They were thus in many cases transported by barbarian chiefs—Slav, Avar, and Bulgarian—to trans-Danubian and Pannonian regions. In the Acts of St Demetrius of Thessalonica we actually find an account of such a Roman colony, which, having been carried away from South-Illyrian cities by the Avar khagan, and settled by him in the Sirmian district beyond the Save, revolted after seventy years of

captivity, nade their way once more across the Balkan passes, and finally settled as an independent community in the country Inland from Salonica. Others, no doubt, thus transported northwards never returned. It is certain that the earliest Hungarian historians who describe the Magyar invasion of the 9th century speak of the old inhabitants of the country as Romans, and of the country they occupied as Pascua Romanorum; and the Russian Nestor, writing about 1100, makes the same invaders fight against Slavs and Vlachs (Volochi) in the Carpathian Mountains. So far from the first mention of the Vlachs north of the Danube occurring only in 1222, as Roesler asserts, it appears from & passage of Nicetas of Chonz that they were to be found already in 1164 as far afield as the borders of Galicia.

269

It is nevertheless true that throughout the early Middle Ages the bulk of the Rouman population lay south of the Danube. It was in the Balkan lands that the Rouman race and language took their characteristic mould. It is here that this new Illyrian Romance first rises into historic prominence. Already in the 6th century, as we learn from the place names, such as Sceptecasas, Burgualtu, Clisura, &c., given by Procopius, the Rouman language was assuming, so far as its Latin elements were concerned, its typical form. In the somewhat later campaigns of Commentiolus (587) and Priscus, against the Avars and Slovenes, we find the Latin-speaking soldiery of the Eastern emperor making use of such Romance expressions as " torna, frate!" (turn, brother !), or "sculca" (out of bed) applied to a watch (cf. Rouman "a se culca" = Italian " coricarsi" + ex-(s-) privative). Next we find this warlike Rouman population largely incorporated in the Bulgarian kingdom, and, if we are to judge from the names Paganus and Sabinus, already supplying it with rulers in the 8th century. The blending and close contact during this period of the surviving Latin population with the Slovene settlers of the peninsula impregnated the language with its large Slavonic ingredient; and the considerable Albanian element in Rouman, as well as the still greater element of Rouman in Albanian, is alone sufficient to show that the two languages took their charac- teristic shapes in a contiguous area. The fact that these peculiarities are common to the Roumans north of the

Danube, whose language differs dialectically from that of their southern brothers, shows that it was this southern branch that throughout the early periods of Rouman his- tory was exercising a dominating influence. Migrations, violent transplantation, the intercourse which was kept up between the most outlying members of the race, in its very origin nomadic, at a later period actual colonization en masse and the political influence of the Bulgaro-Vlachian empire, no doubt contributed to propagate these southern linguistic acquisitions throughout that northern area to which the Rouman race was destined almost imperceptibly to shift its centre of gravity.

Byzantium, which had ceased to be Roman, and become Romaic, renewed its acquaintance with the descendants of the Latin provincials of Illyricum through a Slavonic medium, and applied to them the name of " Vlach," which the Slav himself had borrowed from the Goth. The first mention of Vlachs in a Byzantine source is about the year 976, when Cedrenus (ii. 439) relates the murder of the Bulgarian czar Samuel's brother 'by certain Vlach way- farers," at a spot called the Fair Oaks, between Castoria and Prespa. rom this period onwards the Rouman inhabit- ants of the Balkan peninsula are constantly mentioned by this name, and we find a series of political organizations and territorial divisions connected with the name of " Vlachia." Within the limits of the present article it is impossible to give more than a short synopsis of the most important of these, while for a history of the later Rouman princi- palities of Walachia and Moldavia the reader is referred to the article RouMANIA.

1. The Bulgaro-Vilach Empire.—After the overthrow of the older Bulgarian czardom by Basil Bulgaroktonos, the Vlach population of Thrace, Hemus, and the Mesian lands passed once more under Byzantine dominion; and in 1185 a heavy tax, levied in kind on the cattle of these warlike mountain shepherds, stirred the Vlachs to revolt against the emperor Isaac Angelus, and under the leader- ship of two brothers, Peter and Asen, to found a new Bulgaro- Vlachian empire, which ended with Kaliman iI. in 1257. The dominions of these half-Slavonic half-Rouman emperors extended north of the Danube over a great deal of what is now Roumania, and it was during this period that the Vlach population north

of the river seems to have been most largely reinforced. The French traveller Rubruquis speaks of all the country between Don and Danube'as " Asen's land" or " Blakia."

2. Great Walachia (MeydaAn BAaxta).—It is from Anna Com- nena, in the second half of the 11th century, that we first hear of

270

a Vlach settlement, the nucleus of which was the mountainous region of Thessaly. Benjamin of Tudela, in the succeeding century, gives an interesting account of this Great Walachia, which was then completely independent. It embraced the southern and central ranges of Pindus, and extended over part of Macedonia, thus including the region in which the Roman scttlers mentioned in the Acts of St Demetrius had fixed their abode. After the Latin conquest of Constantinople Great Walachia was included in the en- larged despotate of Epirus, but it soon reappears as an independent principality under its old name, which, after passing under the yoke of the Serb emperor Dushan, was finally conquered by the Turks in 1393. Many of their old privileges were still accorded to the in- habitants, and their taxes were limited to an annual tribute to the sultana Valide. Since this period the Megalovlachites have been largely Hellenized, but they are still represented by the flourishing Tzintzar settlements of Pindus, and traces are at present perceptible among them of a national Rouman reaction.

3. Little Walachia (Mixpa BAaxla) was a name applied by Byzantine writers to the Rouman settlemeuts of /tolia and Acarnania, and with it may be included " Upper Walachia" or AvéBaaxa. Its inhabitants are still represented by the Tzintzars of the Aspropotamo and the Karaguni (Black Capes) of Acarnania.

4. The Morlachs (Mavrovlacht) of the West.—These are already mentioned as Nigri Latint by the Presbyter of Dioclea (circ. 1150) in the old Dalmatian littoral and the mountains of what is now Montenegro, Herzegovina, and North Albania. Other colonies extended through a great part of the old Servian interior, where is a region still called Stara Vlaska or "Old Walachia." The great commercial staple of the east

*Adriatic shores, the republic of Ragusa, seems in its origin to have been a Rouman settlement, and many Vlach traces survived in its later dialect. Philippus de Diversis, who described the city as it existed in 1440, says that '*the various officers of the republic do not make use either of Slav or Italian, with which they converse with strangers, but a certain other dialect only partially intelligible to us Latins," and cites words with strong Rouman affinities. In the mountains above Ragusa a number of Vlach tribes are mentioned in the archives of that city, and the original relationship of the Ragusans and the nomadic Alpine representatives of the Roman provincials, who preserved a traditional knowledge of the old lines of communication throughout the peninsula, explains the extraordinary development of the Ragusan commerce. In the 14th century the Mavrovlachi or Morlachs extended themselves towards the Croatian borders, and a large part of maritime Croatia and northern Dalmatia began to be known as " Morlacchia." A " Major Vlachia"' was formed about the triple frontier of Bosnia, Croatia, and Dalmatia, and a 'Little Walachia" as far north as Posega, The Morlachs have now become Slavonized.*

5. Ctct of Istria.—The extreme Rouman offshoot to the north- west is still represented by the Cici of the Val d'Arsa and adjoining Istrian districts. They represent a 15th-century Morlach colony from the Isle of Veglia, and had formerly a wider extension to Trieste and the counties of Gradisca and Gorizia. The Cici are at present rapidly losing their native tongue, which is the last re- maining representative of the old Morlach, and forms a connecting link between the Daco-Roman (or Roumanian) and tho Macedo- Roman (or Tzintzar) dialects,

6. Roumans of Transylvania and Hungary.—As already stated, a large part of the Hungarian plains were, at the coming of the Magyars in the 9th century, known as Pascua Romanorum. At a later period privileged Rouman communities existed at Fogaras where was a Silva Vlachorum, at Marmaros, Deva, Hatzeg Hun- yad, and Lugos, and in the Banat were seven Rouman districts Two of the greatest figures in Hungarian history —John Corvinus of Hunyad, and his son King Matthias—were due to this element Oppressed by the dominant race, which had deprived them of their ancient privileges, the Roumans of Transylvania and the Banat rose

in 1785 under Horia, Closca, and Crischanu. This Rouman "Jacquerie " was suppressed, but Joseph II. declared the peasants free. Since that date the Rouman element in this part of the old Dacian region has largely increased in numbers though it has hitherto failed to secure its political rights, The contiguous dis- trict of the Bukovina, a part of Moldavia annexed to the Haps- burg dominions in 1775, remains under the Austrian Government.

The present numerical strength of the Roumani : mately be given as follows:— eer AAR PEO –

Southern or Tzintzar branch in Pindus, &c….225,000

Roumans of Tirnok district… ..0…..ccccceccce.., 150,000 RSSISMM AF iy sees = 408 asc aedsecccseces,ch 4,500,000 MGPPANIS UIA MOAN pons oo enesevec. cs .oeces 3,500,000 In Bessarabia and South Russia…..... vessess44e600,000

|W | ee SOD0N0cAROCOSO NEES cone eee 8,975,000

In features the Vlachs especially of the Carpathian yall – sent decidedly Roman characteristics, and it z not Bugiciacilt to find types which occur in North Italy and amongst Spaniards aud

VLA—VLA

Provengals, They are usually short and dark. Those of Pindus have sharper-cut features and soine Slovene traits in their physio- gnomy. 'The race has a great natural capacity for trade and manu- facture. The Vlachs excel as builders and artisans, but notably as workers in nietal; their financial enterprise is also remarkable, and some of the principal banking establishments in Vienna are due to members of this race. An extraordinary cxample of their successful enterprise in the Balkan peninsula is supplied by the history of Moschopolis on the Epirote side of Pindus, which was founded by a Vlach colony in the 16th century, and whicli not only became a populous commercial staple but a centre of literary culture. Moschopolis possessed a large public library, flourishing schools, and a printing press, from which issued both Greek and Rouman

books of a religious and scholastic nature. Joannina, since completely Hellenized, was also of Rouman origin. Metzovo (Minciu) is another flourishing Rouman colony in the same region, and, though Moschopolis has fallen a victim to the ravages of the wild Arnauts, a local successor has sprung up in the rising town of Gjurtza, The Roumans make good soldiers, as was seen at Plevna. In their customs and folk-lore both Latin and Slavonic traditions assert themselves as in their language. Of their Roman traditions the Trajan saga, the celebration of the Rosalia and Kalende, the belief in the "striga" (witch), the names of the inonths and days of the week, may be taken as typical examples. Some Roman words connected with the Christian religion, like biserica (basilica) =a church, botez=baptizo, duminica=Sunday, preot (presbyter) = priest, point to a continuous tradition of the Illyrian church, though most of their ecclesiastical terms, like their liturgy and alphabet, were derived from the old Slovene. In most that con- cerns political organization the Slavonic element is also pre- ponderant, though there are words like imparat—imperator, and domn=dominus, which point to the old stock. Many words re- lating to kinship are also Latin, some like vitrig (vitricus) =father- in-law being alone preserved by this branch of the Romance family. Although of the actual vocabulary only about one-fifth is Latin, and two-fifths, or about double the amount, Slavonic (see Cihac, Diction- naire d Etymologie Daco-Romaine), the greater proportion of the words in common use is still Latin. Many words, however, of common and indispensable use, those even connected with ideas nearest to the heart, as for instance the Rouman iubesc=to love, and maic&=a mother, are themselves of Slavonic origin. Alike in the dwellings, customs, and costumes of the Vlach race we en- counter at every turn the dominating influence of the Slav peoples by whom they were surrounded. Thisexternal influence, however, has not by any means affected the strong pride of Roman origin which is the heirlooni of all members of the Rouman race. Hel- lenization itself, hitherto successful among the southern Roumans, has received a check in the Pindus region, while north of the Danube the Rouman race is continually gaining at the expense of its neigh- bours.

VEADIKAVKAZ, a fortified town of Russia, in the province of Terek, is advantageously and picturesquely situated at the northern base of the

Great Caucasus chain, on a raised plain, 2230 feet above the sea-level, where the gorge of the Terek emerges from the mountain tracts. It is the present terminus of the railway from RosrorrF (¢.v.), which is intended ultimately to cross the main ridge. The fortress, formerly but a small redoubt, erected in 1784 at the northern entrance of the pass by which the Caucasus used to be crossed, now stands higher up, and is connected by a bridge with the town proper. Vtadikavkaz is now the capital of the province. It is tidily built, and its popula- tion since it became an entrepét for trade between Russia and Caucasus has rapidly grown (32,340 in 1883). The transport of merchandise is the principal occupation of the place, 400,000 cwts. of goods annually arriving by rail to be forwarded to Tiflis, while 160,000 cwts. are sent from Viadikavkaz northwards.

VLADIMIR, a government of middle Russia, bounded by Moscow and Tver on the W., Yarostav and Kostroma on the N., Nijniy Novgorod on the E., Tamboff and Ryazafi on the S., has an area of 18,864 square miles. It extends over the eastern parts of the central plateau of middle Russia, which has an average elevation of from 800 to 950 feet above the sea, and is grooved by river valleys to a depth ranging from 300 to 450 feet below the

general level, so that the country has a hilly appearance on the banks of the chief rivers. The lacustrine depres- sion of the middle Volga and Oka extends into the eastern parts of the government. The Upper Carboniferous lime- stones, of which it is mostly built up, are covered with Permian sandstones towards the east, and patches of Jurassic clays —denuded remnants of formerly extensive deposits—are scattered over its surface. Cretaceous de- posits are supposed to make their appearance in the south. The whole is covered with a thick sheet of boulder clay, considered as the bottom-moraine of the North-European ice-sheet, and overlaid, in its turn, in the depressions, by extensive Lacustrine clays and sands. The soil is thus for the most part unfertile, save in the district of Yurieff, where are found patches of black earth, which..of late have occasioned a good deal of discussion among Russian geologists. Iron-ore is widely diffused, and china clay and gypsum are met with in several

places. Peat is of common occurrence. As for coal, it is certain that the coal-bearing Lower Carboniferous strata of the Moscow basin would be encountered by boring to a certain depth ; no such explorations, however, have yet been made, as forests still cover extensive tracts in the south-east, and the numerous manufactures of Vladimir suffer from no lack of fuel. The climate resembles that of Moscow, but is a little colder, and still more continental ; the average yearly temperature at Vladimir is 38° F. (January, 16°; July, 66°°5).

The Oka flows through the government for 85 miles, and is navigable throughout. Of its tributaries, the Klyasma is navigable to Kovrotf, and even to Vladimir in summer; and timber is floated on the Teza, Small lakes are numerous; that of Plescheyevo or Pereyastav] (5 miles in length) has historical associations, Peter I. having here acquired in his boyhood his first experiences in navi- gation. Marshes cover more than half a million acres.

The population (1,359,330 in 1883) is thoroughly Great Russian; the Finnish tribes, Muroma and Merya, which formerly inhabited the region, have been absorbed by the Slavonians, as also have the Karelians who are supposed to have formerly inhabited the terri- tory ; the descendants of the few hundred Karelian families, which were settled by Peter I. on the shores of Lake Pereyastavl, still, however, maintain their language. Agriculture is carried on every- where, but is in a prosperous state only on the left bank of the Klyasma, and corn is imported. The culture of flax, both for local manufactures and for export—especially about Melenki—is important ; so also are that of hemp and gardening. Natural pas- tures being by no means deficient, the number of cattle is greater than might be expected in a province so backward in agriculture, The average crops of the ycars 1883-85 were—rye, 1,400,300 quarters; oats, 1,097,000; wheat, 36,400; barley, 63,000; other grains, 250,800; and potatoes, 52,300. In 1883 there were 323,000 cattle, 210,050 horses, and 330,050 sheep.

A distinctive feature of Vladimir is the great variety of petty trades carried on in its villages by peasants who still continue to cultivate their allotments and thus combine manufacture with agriculture. Nearly every village has its own specialty, and, while i some of them almost all the male

population leave their homes and go in numerous artels (see vol. xxi. p. 84) all over Russia as carpenters, masons, iron-roof makers, or as ofent (pedlars or travel- ling merchants), other villages have their specialties in some branch of manufactured produce. Nearl y 30,000 carpenters leave Vladimir every year. Whole villages are engaged in painting sacred pictures or ikons, and there are weekly fairs, where no fewer than 130 cart-loads of planks for such works are bought every week during winter. Although the ikons are sold at a shilling the hundred, the

seregate trade is valued at £150,000 a year; and the Vladimir (or rather Suzdal) pictures spread all over Russia and the Balkan peninsula, In other villages some 1200 men are employed in making sickles, knives, or locks. Wooden vessels, boxes, and baskets, lapti (shoes made of lime-tree bark which are worn in Great Russia, and are produced by the million), wheels and sledges, sieves, combs, woollen stockings and gloves, sheepskins and sheepskin gloves for peasants, felt, all kinds of toys, earthenware, and finally all kinds of Woven fabrics, are so many specialties of separate villages. In 1884 102,500 persons were directly engaged in petty trades, in which indeed Vladimir occupies the first rank in Russia, the annual pro- duction (63,000,000 roubles) being one-third of the total for the whole country, Moscow coming next with 37,300,000 roubles. he manufactures of Vladimir are equally important: out of the aggregato production of the fifty governments of European

Russia (1,329,602,000 roubles in 1884), Vladimir was returned for 88,827,000 roubles, exclusive of numerous minor manufactures not included in the census. In the number of workmen employed in manufactures (102,900) Vladimir is second only to Moscow, and in its production it is second only to Moscow and St Petersburg. The chief industrial establishments are cotton and linen factories, glass, chemical, and iron works, distillerics, and tanneries,

Vladimir is divided into fourteen districts, the chief towns of which (with populations in 1884) are VLADIMIR (q.v.), 18,420 ; Alexandroff, 6915; Ivanovo-Voznesensk, 14,060 ; Kovroff, 8050; Melenki, 6470; Murom (q.v.), 18,680; Pereyastavl Zalyesskiy, 7470; Pokroff, 2700; Suuya (q.v.),

21,480 ; Sudogda, 1880; Suzdal, 6770; Vyazniki, 6015; and Yuriecff Polskiy, 5400. Kirzhatch (3285), Voznesensk (6000), and Gavritovsk (1780) have also muni- cipal institutions, Ivanovo, Gusevsk, Khotui, and several others, though mere villages, are more important than some district towns,

VLADIMIR, capital of the above government, is known in history as Vladimir-on-the-Klyasma, to distinguish it from Vladimir in Volhynia. It is picturesquely situated on the Klyasma and Lybed, 114 miles by rail to the east of Moscow. The Lybed divides it into two parts. Extensive cherry gardens occupy the surrounding slopes, each with its small watch-tower, having cords drawn in all directions to be shaken by the watcher when birds alight. The krem] stands on a hill and contains two very old cathedrals—the Uspenskiy (1150), where all princes of Vladimir have been buried, and the Dmitrievskiy, restored in 1834 in its old style. Several churches date from the 12th century, The "Golden Gate"—a triumphal gate sur- mounted by a church—was built by Andrei Bogolubskiy in 1158. On the whole Vladimir is a decaying place ; its population has only risen to 18,420 in 1884 from 13,865 in 1859. The manufactures are for the most part insignificant, and trade has not the importance it has in some of the district towns.

Vladimir was founded in the 12th century. It first comes into notice in 1151, when Andrei Bogolubskiy secretly left Vyshgorod —the domain of his father in the principality of Kieff—and migrated to the newly settled land of Suzdal, where he became (1157) grand- prince of the principalities of Vladimir, Suzdal, and Rostoff. During the next century Vladimir became the chief town of the Russian settlements in the basin of the Oka, and till 1328 it disputed the superiority with the new mg pond of Moscow (g.v.). In the 14th century it began to fall to decay; and, like Pskoff, it is now one of the less important provincial cities of Russia.

VEADIVOSTOK, the chief naval station of Russia on the Pacific, is situated in 43° 7' N. lat. and 131° 55' E. long., on the Gulf of Peter the Great in the Sea of Japan. This gulf, which has a length of nearly 50 miles, and a width at its entrance of 112 miles, is divided into two large bays—Amur and Usuri—by the hilly peninsula of Muraviofi-Amurskiy,

continued in a group of islands, of which the Kozakevitch or Russkiy (Johanga-tun) is the largest. A narrow strait, which has received the high- sounding name of the Eastern Bosphorus, separates this from the peninsula, and Viadivostok occupies the northern shore of one of its horn-like expansions, which the Russians have called the Golden Horn (Zolotot Rog). The depth of the Eastern Bosphorus ranges from 13 to 20 fathoms, and that of the Golden Horn from 5 to 13, the latter thus affording a spacious harbour, ez —one of the finest, indeed, in the world. The hills are covered with forests of oak, lime, birch, maple, cork, wal- nut, acacia, ash, aspen, pop- ks=-ty lar, elm, apple, pear, and wild cherry, with a rich under- growth of the most varied shrubs. Excellent timber is supplied by oak and cedar forests not far off. The climate, however, is severe, if compared with that of corresponding latitudes in Europe. Though standing in almost the same parallel as Marseilles, Vtadivostok has an average annual temperature of only

32° gras

132) E Creenwich i133"

Environs of Vtadivostok.

272

38°°5 F., and, although the gulf itself never freezes, a thin ice-crust forms along the shores in December, keeping ships ice-bound for from thirty to forty-five days. ;

The settlement of Vtadivostok, though founded only in 1861, had in 1886 12,500 inhabitants, chiefly military ; and for hundreds of miles inland the sole population con- sists of the small military posts by which communication is maintained up the Suifun to Lake Khangka and the Cossack settlements on the Usuri. Vtadivostok is con- nected with headquarters by telegraph.

Since the transference of the navy workshops from Nikolaievsk the place has gained in importance. It has a pro-gymnasium for boys (60 pupils), a club, and a newspaper. The imports of both Russian aed foreign goods

during the last five years have reached an average of from 24 to 8 millions of roubles; but the exports are insignificant. Some 3000 or 4000 Coreans find employment in the Gulf of Peter the Great in gathering the edible seaweed Laminaria saccharina, of which about 70,000 cwts. (£45,000) are sent to China annually. The discovery of gold in the neighbouring alluvial deposits brought togctler some hundreds of Chinese, but the Russian Government compelled them to withdraw. The amonnt of gold is, however, not believed to be remunerative.

The Gulf of Peter the Great was discovered in 1852 by the French corvette "Capricieuse," and named the Golfc d'Anville. Two years later Count Putyatin, on board the frigate ' Pallada," de- scribed the south-western part of the gulf and the Bay of Possiet. In 1855 an English squadron mapped. its middle portion as far as Lefu (Askold) Island, and gave it the name of Victoria Bay. The whole gulf was mapped in 1859 by the Russian ships " America" and "Stryelok," and two years later a Russian post, which after- wards received the namc of Vtadivostok, was established.*

VOGELWEIDE. See WALTER VON DER VOGELWEIDE.

VOGHERA (Vicus Iriz), a town of Italy, in the pro- vince of Pavia, and 19 miles by rail to the south-south- west of that city, on the Staffora, formerly the Iria (a tributary of the Po), here crossed by a fine bridge. The fortifications erected by the Visconti in the Middle Ages have given place to a series of shady promenades. The large church of San Lorenzo dates its foundation from the 11th century, but was remodelled in the baroco style about the beginning of the 17th. fertile and produces much silk, in which, as well as in corn and wine, an active trade is carried on. The popula- tion in 1881 was 10,785.

VOGLER, Grore Josepy (1749-1814), usually known

as Abbé Vogler, organist and composer, was born at |

Wiirzburg, June 15, 1749. His father, a violin maker, while educating him for the church, took every opportunity of encouraging his musical talent, which was so marked that at ten years old he could not only play the

organ well, but had also acquired a fair command of the violin and some other instruments without instruction. In 1769 he prosecuted his higher studies at Bamberg, remov- ing thence in 1771 to Mannheim. Here he composed a ballet for the elector Karl Theodor, who, charmed with his talent, sent him to Bologna, to study under the Padre Martini. Unsatisfied with the method of that learned

theorist, he studied for five months under Valotti, at.

Padua, and afterwards proceeded to Rome, where he was ordained priest in 1773, admitted to the famous academy of Arcadia, made a knight of the Golden Spur, and appointed protonotary and chamberlain to the pope.

On his return to Mannheim in 1775 Vogler was appointed court chaplain and second " maestro di cappella." He now established his first great music school, to which Winter, Ritter, Kraus, Danzi, and Knecht came for in- struction. His pupils were devoted to him, but he made innumerable enemies, for the principles upon which he taught were confessedly opposed to those of all other teachers whatsoever. fingering for the harpsichord, a new form of construction for the organ, and a new system of musical theory founded upon that of Valotti. Mozart condemned the fingering as "miserable." The proposed change in the construction of

The neighbourhood is '

He had invented a new system of |

VOG—VOG

the organ consisted in simplifying the mechanism, intro- ducing free-reeds in place of ordinary reed-stops, and substituting unisonous stops for the great " mixtures" then in vogue! The theoretical system, though pro- fessedly based upon Valotti's principles, was to a great extent empirical, and, like the scheme for revolutioniz- ing the organ, has long been forgotten. Nevertheless, a certain substratum of truth seems to have underlain all his new heresies; and, by virtue of this, in spite of a rage for reform amounting almost to madness, Vogler un- doubtedly exercised a

powerful influence over the progress of musical science, and numbered among his disciples some of the greatest geniuses of the period.

In 1778 the elector removed his court to Munich. Vogler followed him thither in 1780, but, dissatisfied with the reception accorded to his dramatic compositions, soon quitted his post, and travelled for some years in Spain, Greece, Armenia, remote districts of Asia and Africa, and even Greenland, in search of uncorrupted forms of national melody. In 1786 he was appointed " kapellmeister" to the king of Sweden, founded his second music school at Stockholm, and attained extraordinary celebrity by his performances on an instrument called the "orchestrion,"—a species of organ invented by himself. In 1790 he brought this instrument to London, and per- formed upon it with great effect at the Pantheon, for the concert-room of which he also constructed an organ upon his own principles. Gerber alleges that organ pedals were unknown in England until Vogler introduced them, during his residence in London. This assertion is dis- proved by a MS. Concerto, by Handel, now in the Royal Library at Buckingham Palace, dated February 17, 1740, and containing an obbligato pedal part; nevertheless, it is certain that the abbé's pedal-playing excited great attention. His most popular pieces were a fugue on themes from the "Hallelujah Chorus," composed after a visit to the Handel festival at Westminster Abbey, and A Musical Picture for the Organ, by Knecht, containing the imitation of a storm.

From London Vogler proceeded to Rotterdam and the chief towns on the Rhine. At Esslingen he was presented with the "wine of honour" reserved for the use of sovereigns. At Frankfort he attended the coronation of the emperor Leopold II. He then visited Stockholm, and after a long residence there, interrupted by endless wanderings, once more established himself in Germany, where his compositions, both sacred and dramatic, received at last the full credit that was due to them. To trace his journeys from end to end of Europe would be impossible. We hear of him at Berlin in 1800, at Vienna in 1804, and at Munich in 1806. But while at Frankfort in 1807 he received an invitation from Louis I., grand-duke of Hesse- Darmstadt, offering him the appointment ofkapellmeister," with the order of merit, the title of privy councillor, a salary of 3000 florins, a house, a table supplied from the

| duke's own kitchen, and other privileges, which determined _ him to bring his wanderings at last to a close.

At Darmstadt he opened his third and most famous music school, the chief ornaments of which were Gins- bacher, Weber, and Meyerbeer. Giinsbacher had been his pupil at Vienna. Weber had studied under him in 1803, and once more sought his old master's help in 1810, though rather in the way of advice than instruction. Meyerbeer had been first introduced to him by means of a fugue which he criticized very severely, though he saw in it so much talent that he invited the composer to become his pupil. The three young students were inseparable,

_ | An organ built on the ' unisonous system" stood for many years in Wornum's Music Hall, Store Street, London.

VOI—VOTI

One of Vogler's latest exploits was a journey to Frankfort in 1810, to witness the production of Weber's Sylvana. He continued hard at work, genial and pleasant to the last, and died suddenly of apoplexy at Darmstadt, May 6,

1814.

Opinions are strangely divided as to the reality of Vogler's voca- tion. Some have pronounced him a genius, others a charlatan. Mozart was strongly prejudiced against him. hat he was a bril- liant and accomplished performer no one denies. It is certain that he was an excellent, if an eccentric, teacher. But his theories were visionary, and of his numberless compositions not one has survived to the present day.

VOICE is produced by the vibrations of the vocal cords, two ligaments or bands of fibrous elastic tissue situated in the larynx. It is to be distinguished from speech, which is the production of sounds intended to express ideas. Many of the lower animals have voice, but none have the power of speech in the sense in which man possesses that faculty. There may be speech with- out voice, as in whispering, whilst in singing a scale of musical tones we have voice without speech. Regarding speech, see

PHonETIcs and Sprecu-Sounps; also the articles on the various letters of the alphabet.

1, Physiological Anatomy.—The organ of voice, the laryne, is situated in man in the upper and fore part of the neck, where it forms a well-known prominence in the middle line. It opens below into the trachea or windpipe, and above into the cavity of the pharynx, and it consists of a framework of cartilages, connected by elastic mem- branes or ligaments, two of which constitute the true vocal cords. 'These cartilages are movable on each other by the action of various muscles, which thus regulate the position and the tension of the vocal cords. The trachea conveys the blast of air from the lungs during expiration, and the whole apparatus may be compared to an acoustical con- trivance in which the lungs represent the wind chest and the trachea the tube passing from the wind chest to the sounding body contained in the larynx. Suppose two tight bands of any elastic membrane, such as thin sheet india-rubber, stretched over the end of a wide glass tube 80 as to leave a narrow chink between the free borders of the membrane, and that a powerful blast of air is driven through the tube by a bellows. The pressure would so distend the margins of the membrane as to open the aper- ture and allow the air to escape; this would cause a fall of pressure, and the edges of the membrane would spring back by their elasticity to their former position ; again the pressure would increase, and again the edges of the membrane would be distended; and those actions would be so quickly repeated as to cause the edges of the mem- brane to vibrate with sufficient rapidity to produce a musical tone, the pitch of which would depend on the number of vibrations executed in a second of time. The condensation and rarefaction of the air thus produced are the chief cause of the tone, as Von Helmholtz has pointed out, and in this way the larynx resembles the syren in its mode of producing tone (see Acoustics). It is evident also that the intensity or loudness of the tone would be determined by the amplitude of the vibrations of the margins of the membrane, and that its pitch would be affected by any arrangements effecting an increase or de- crease of the tension of the margins of the membrane, The pitch might also be raised by the strength of the current of air, because the great amplitude of the vibra- tions would increase the mean tension of the elastic mem- brane. With tones of medium pitch, the pressure of the air in

the trachea is equal to that of a column of mercury of 160 mm. ; with high pitch, 920 mm. ; and with notes of very high pitch, 945 mm. ; whilst in whispering it may fall as low as that represented by 30 mm. of water. Such 18 a general conception of the mechanism of voice.

“ments, or true vocal cords.

273

The cartilages form the framework of the larynx. They consist of three single pieces (the thyroid, the cricoid, and the cartilage of the epiglottis) and of three pairs (two arytenoids, two cornicula laryngis or cartilages of Santorini, and two cuneiform cartilages

or cartilages of Wrisberg), see figs. 1 and 2, The epiglottis, the

Fig. 1.

Fig. 1.—Cartilages and ligaments of the larynx seen from the front; half natural size. 1, epiglottis; 2, hyoid bone; 3, small cornu of hyoid bone; 4, middle thyro-hyoid ligament; 5, great cornu of hyoid bone; 6, small nodules of cartilage (cartilago triticea); 7, the lateral thyro-hyoid ligament; 8, left lamina or wing of thyroid cartilage ; 9, cricoid cartilage; 10, lower cornu of thyroid cartilage; 11, part of cricoid united to the thyroid by the middle crico- thyroid ligament ; 12, second ring of trachea. (From Krause.)

Fic. 2.—Cartilages and ligament of larynx seen from behind ; half natural size. 1, epiglottis ; 2, lesser cornu of hyoid bone; 3, greater cornu of hyoid ; 4, lateral thyro-hyoid ligament ; 5, cartilago triticea; 6, upper cornu of thyroid ; 7, thyro-epiglottic ligament; 8, cartilages of Santorini; 9, arytenoid carti- lages; 10, left lamina of thyroid; 11, muscular process of arytenoid cartilage ; 12, inferior cornu of thyroid ; 18, first ring of trachea; 14, posterior mem- branous wall of trachea ; 15, lamina of cricoid cartilage. (From Krause.)

Fig. 2.

cornicula laryngis, the cuneiform cartilages, and the apices of the arytenoids are composed of yellow or elastic fibro-cartilage, whilst the cartilage of all the others is of the hyaline variety, resembling that of the costal or rib cartilages. These carti- lages are bound together by ligaments, some of which are seen in figs. 1 and 2, whilst the remainder are represented in fig. 3. The ligaments specially concerned in the production of voico are the inferior thyro-arytenoid liga- These are composed of fine elastic fibres attaclied behind to the anterior projection of the base of the arytenoid cartilages, processus vocalis, 3 in fig. 8, and in front to the middle of the angle be- tween the wings or lamine of the thyroid cartilage. They are practi- ~ cally continuous with the lateral crico- ? thyroid ligaments, 6 in fig. 3.

The cavity of the larynx is divided into an upper and lower portion by the narrow aperture of the glottis or i —. <¥? 4 ibe ayes, chink between the edges of the rae ligne footton: twosthindenataral vocal cords, the rima glottidis. Im- gize, 1, epiglottis; 2, arytenoid mediately above the true vocal cords, cartilage ; 8, processus vocalis between these and the false vocal of rere fee Bests cords, there is on each side a recess or feodent ser tetera pg Hed pouch termed the ventricle of Mor- roid ligament; 7, posterior crico- gagni, aud opening from each ventricle nape mer a i. 1 lee geil there is a still smaller recess, the joyrC eryien' me Coe laryngeal pouch, which passes for the tilage; 10, superior thyro-ary- space of half an inch between the tenoid ligament, or false vocal superior vocal cords inside and the aoe ie middie tnro-leord thyroid cartilage outside, reaching as ligaments 13, hyo-epiglottic liga- high as the upper border of that car- ment; 14, body of hyoid bone; tilage at the side of the epiglottis. 15, smaller cornu of hyoid bone. The ventricles no donbt permit a free (#7°™ Krause.) vibration of the true vocal cords (Quain), The upper aperture of the glottis is triangular, wide in front and narrow behind ; and, when seen from above by means of the laryngoscope, it presents the view represented in fig. 4. The aperture is bounded in front by the epiglottis, e¢, behind by the summits of the arytenoid carti- lages, ar, and on the sides by two folds of mucous membrane, the aryteno-epiglottic folds, a. The rounded elevations corresponding to the cornicula laryngis and cuneiform cartilages, c, and also the cushion of the epiglottis, ¢, are readily seen in the laryngoscopic picture. The glottis, 0,is seen in the form of a long

narrow fissure, bounded by the true vocal cords, ti, whilst above them we have the false vocal cords, ts, and between the true and false cords the open- ing of the ventricle, v. The rima glottidis, between the true vocal cords, in the adult male measures about 23 millimetres, or nearly XXIV. — 35

274

an inch, from before backwards, and from 6 to 12 millimetres across its widest part, according to the degree of dilatation. In females and in males before puberty the antero-posterior diameter is about 17 millimetres and its transverse diameter about 4 millimetres. The vocal cords of the adult male are in length about 15 millimetres, and of the adult female about 11 milli- metres. The larynx is lined with a layer of epithelium, which is closely adherent to underlying structures, more especially over the true vocal cords. The cells of the epithe- + lium, in the greater portion of " tongue: ¢, epighottis; ye, pharyngo- the larynx, are of the columnar epiglottie fold; g, pharyngo ~~*laryngeal ciliated variety, and by the vi*~~ *groove; ae, aryteno-epiglottic fold; ¢, bratory action of the cilia mucus Wileboee om see aa ents: ol 3 is driven upwards, but over the inter- arytenoid fold ; 0, glottis; v, ven. true vocal cords the epithelium tricle; #, inferior or true vocal cord; issquamous. Patches of squa- 4s, superior or false vocal cord. (From mous epithelium are also found Mandl.)*

in the ciliated tract above the glottis, on the under surface of the epiglottis, on the inner surface of the arytenoid cartilages, and on the free border of the upper or false cords. Numerous mucous glands exist in the lining membrane of the larynx, more especially in the epiglottis. In each laryngeal pouch there are sixty to seventy such glands, surrounded by fat.

We are now in a position to understand the action of the muscles of the larynx by which the vocal – cords, forming the rima glottidis, can be tightened or relaxed, and by which they can be approximated or separated. Besides certain extrinsic muscles—sterno-hyoid, omo-hyoid, sterno-thyroid, and thyro-hyoid— which move the larynx as a whole, there are intrinsic muscles which move the cartilages on each other. Some of these are scen in fig. 5. These muscles are (a) the crico-thy- roid, (5) the posterior crico-arytenoid, (c) the lateral crico-arytenoid, (d) the thyro-

*arytenoid, (e) the aryten- oid, and (/) the aryteno-epiglot- tidean. Their actions will be readily understood with the aid of the dia- grams in fig. 6. (1) The crico-thyroid is a short thick triangular muscle, its fibres passing from the cricoid F1¢. 5.—Muscles of the left side of cartilage obliquely upwards and out- *h¢ larynx, seen from within ; two- wards to be inserted into the lower atectte ghana gg Mg Nag Se a*

4 ! gament, seen in profile ; border of the thyroid cartilage and 2, epiglottis; 8, aryteno-epiglot- : os uke bette of its lower horn. Dian ea. a

en the muscle contracts, the cri- ee sa oe coid and thyroid cartilages are ap- a mar tee aks Coe proximated. In this action, how- ever, it is not the thyroid that is

r 4,—Laryngoscopic view of the glottis.

terior crico-arytenoid ; 8, lateral crico-arytenoid ; 9, lower cornu depressed on the cricoid, as is gener- 16, Beco et rie ee ally stated, but, the thyroid being of crico-thyroid muscle ; 11, left fixed in position by the action of the lamina of thyroid cartilage' cut extrinsic muscles, the anterior border — Nye Tt et of the _cricoid is drawn upwards, thyro-arytenoid » 14, thito-api whilst its posterior border, in con- glottic; '15, superior thyro-ary- sequence of a revolution around the enoid ee eee axis uniting the articulations be- "Sent (from Krause.)

tween the lower cornua of the cricoid and the thyroid, is de- pressed, carrying the arytenoid cartilages along with it. Thus the vocal cords are stretched. (2) The thyro-arytenoid has been divided by anatomists into two parts—one, the internal, lying close to the true vocal cord, and the other, external, immediately within the ala of the thyroid cartilage. Many of the fibres of the anterior portion pass from the thyroid cartilage with a slight curve (concavity inwards) to the processus vocalis at the base of the arytenoid cartilage. They are thus parallel with the true vocal cord, and when they contract the arytenoids are drawn forwards, carrying with them the posterior part of the cricoid and relaxing the vocal cords. Thus the thyro-arytenoids are the antagonists of the crico-thyroids. Ludwig 'has pointed out that certain fibres (portio-ary-vocalis) arise from the side of the cord itself and pass obliquely back to the processus vocalis, These

will tighten the parts of the cord in front and relax the parts behind their points of attachment. Some of the fibres of the outer portion run obliquely upwards from the side of the crico-thyroid membrane pass through the antero-posterior fibres of the inner portion of the

muscle, and finally end in the tissue of the false cord. These fibres have been supposed to render the edge of the cord more prominent. Other fibres inserted into the processus vocalis will rotate slightly the arytenoid outwards, whilst a few passing up into the aryteno- epiglottidean folds may assist in depressing the epiglottis (Quain).

Fie, 6.—Diagrams explaining the action of the muscles of the larynx. The dotted lines show the positions taken by the cartilages and the true vocal cords by the action of the muscle, and the arrows show the general direction in which the muscular fibres act. A, Action of crico-thyroid: 1, cricoid cartilage ; 2, arytenoid cartilage; 8, thyroid cartilage ; 4, true vocal cord; 5, thyroid cartilage, new position; 6, true vocal cord, new position. B, Action of arytenoid: 1, section of thyroid; 2, arytenoid; 8, posterior border of epiglottis ; 4, true vocal cord; 5, direction of muscular fibres; 6, arytenoid, new position; 7, true vocal cord, new position. ©, Action of lateral crico-arytenoid; same description as for A and B; 8, posterior border of epiglottis, new position; 9, arytenoid in new position. D, Action of posterior crico-arytenoid ; same description. (From Beaunis and Bouchard.)

(3) The posterior and lateral crico-arytenoid muscles have antagon- istic actions; and may be considered together. The posterior arise from the posterior surface of the cricoid cartilage, and passing up- wards and outwards are attached to the outer angle of the base of the arytenoid. On the other hand, the lateral arise from the upper border of the cricoid as far back as the articular surface for the arytenoid, pass backwards and upwards, and are also in- serted into the outer angle of the base of the arytenoid before the attachment of the posterior crico-arytenoid. Imagine the pyra- midal form of the arytenoid cartilages. To the inner angle of the triangular base are attached, as already described, the true vocal cords ; and to the outer angle the two muscles in question. The . posterior crico-

arytenoids draw the outer angles backwards and in- wards, thus rotating the inner angles, or processus vocalis, outwards, and, when the two muscles act, widening the rima glottidis, This action is opposed by the lateral crico-thyroids, which draw the outer angle forwards and outwards, rotate the inner angles inwards, and thus approximate the cords. (4) The arytenotds pass from the one arytenoid cartilage to the other, and in action these cartilages will be approximated and slightly depressed. (5) The aryteno-epi- glottidean muscles arise near the outer angles of the arytenoid; their fibres pass obliquely upwards, decussate, and are inserted partly into the outer and upper border of the opposite cartilage, partly into the aryteno-epiglottic fold, and partly join the fibres of the thyro-arytenoids. In action they assist in bringing the arytenoids to- gether, whilst they also draw down the epiglottis, and constrict the upper aperture of the larynx. The vocal cords will be also relaxed by the elasticity of the parts.

2. General Physiological Characters.—As already stated, the cntensity or loudness of voice depends on the amplitude of the movement of the vocal cords. Pitch depends on the number of vibrations per second ; and the length, size, and degree of tension of the cords will determine the number of vibrations. The more tense the cords the higher the pitch, and the greater the length of the cords the lower will be the pitch, The range of the human voice is about three octaves, that is from fa, (87 vibrations per second) to sol, (768 vibrations). In men, by the development of the larynx, the cords become more elongated than in women, in the ratio of 3 to 2, so that the male voice is of lower pitch and is usually stronger. At the age of puberty

the larynx grows rapidly, and the voice of a boy " breaks"

in consequence of the lengthening of the cords, generally falling an octave in pitch. A similar change, but very much less in amount, occurs at the same period in the female. At puberty in the female there is an increase of about one-third in the size of the glottis, but it is nearly doubled in the male,-and the adult male larynx is about one-third greater than that of the female. In advanced life the upper notes of the register

are gradually weakened and ultimately disappear, whilst the character of the voice also changes, owing to loss of elasticity caused by ossifica- tion, which first begins about middle life in the thyroid cartilage, then appears in the cricoid, and much later in the arytenoid. Eunuchs retain the voices of childhood ; and by careful training it is possible in normal persons to arrest the development of the larynx so that an adult male can still sing the soprano parts sometimes used in cathedral choirs. The ranges of the different varieties of voice are shown in the following diagram, where the dotted lines give the range of certain remarkable voices, and the figures represent vibrations per second.

dog 2048. Upper note of Luerezia Ajugari.

las fag' 1805. Upper note of Nilson in 10 Flauto Magioo. reg 1152. Ajugari trilled on thismote, do, 1024 ope Oe Pts

~ ;

a4 : gol, __768 : fay F do, _512 si : ae sol. : fag, 341, : ree (288

5 :

*Dog 256. Mid C in [piano : : si 240. | Sop:rano: al, 192. | Mezizo-soprano, : iB Pe me ZOn8OpI secs mig 160. Contralto. * – do, _128. er 2c! ae FS re, ees – 106 Dies i eee i ——_— | oe Farinelli, 8i octaves. fa, _ 87. Bass. : = miy re, doy 64*

81-7

la-) s0l—} ne mi-, Gaspard Forster, 3 octaves.

Seal do-; 32. Beginning of musical tone.

There is thus a range for ordinary voices of nearly two octaves, and certain rare voices may have a range of three and a half octaves. A basso named Gaspard Forster passed from fa_, to la,; the younger of the sisters Sessi had a contralto voice from do, to fa,; the voice of Catalani ranged three and a half octaves; a eunuch singer, Fari- nelli, passed from la, to

re, ; Nilson, in Jd auto Magico, can take fa,; and Mozart states that he heard in Parma in 1770 a singer, Lucrezia Ajugari, range from sol, to dog, which she gave purely, whilst she could execute trills on te;. 'The latter is the most highly pitched voice referred to in musical literature, an octave and a half above the highest ordinary soprano. The range of these voices is shown in dotted lines in the accompanying diagram, and the number of vibrations per second is also noted, taking the middle C of the piano as 256 vibrations per second. Tt will be observed that the lowest note of Gaspard Forster's voice is not much above the pitch at which the perception of musical tone begins, and that from this note to the upper note of Lucrezia Ajugari there is a range of nearly Six octaves, whilst the extreme range of ordinary voices, from the lowest bass to the highest soprano, is a little over

three octaves. It is also interesting to observe in connexion with this that the range of the human ear for the percep- tion of musical tone is from do_, to doy, or from about 32 to 33,768 vibrations per second,—eleven octaves.

The quality of the human voice depends on the same laws that determine the quality, clang-tint, or timbre of the tones produced by any musical instrument. Musical tones are formed by the vibrations of the true vocal cords. These tones may be either pure or mixed, and in both cases they are strengthened by the resonance of the air in the air-passages and in the pharyngeal and oral cavities. If mixed—that is, if the tone is compounded of a number of partials—one or more of these will be strengthened by the cavities above the cords acting as a resonator ; and so strongly may these partials be thus reinforced that the fundamental one may be obscured, and a certain quality or timbre will be communicated to the ear. Further, Von Helmholtz has shown that special forms of the oral cavity reinforce in particular certain partials, and thus give a character to vowel tones,—indeed to such an extent that each vowel tone may be said to have a fixed pitch. This may be proved by putting the mouth in a certain form, keeping the lips open, and bringing various tuning forks sounding feebly in front of the opening. Whena fork is found to which the resonant cavity of the mouth corresponds, then the tone of the fork is intensified, and by thus altering the form and capacity of the oral cavity its pitch in various

conditions may be determined. Thus, according to Von Helmholtz, the pitch corresponding to the vowels may be expressed :—

WOWOW 6.0 2s0.2.0 oe G Al a ot SU ou

Tee aetna na cone fag sidg sidDy sols sids reg dos sols

or or or or or rey fag fag fag fag No. of vibrations..170 470 940 1536 1920 2304 1024 1536 or or or or or

576 341 170 341 170

Koenig has fixed the pitch of the vowels differently, thus :— WOMGL. occas… 4 ao 0 # mes Tiss eee aoe See sidg sibs siby sids side No. of vibrations ..235 470 940 1880 3760 Donders has given a third result, differing from each of the above; and there is little doubt that much will depend on the quality of tone peculiar to different nationalities. By means of Koenig's manometric flames with revolving mirror the varying quality of tone may be illustrated: with a pure tone, the teeth in the flame-picture are equal, like the serrations of a saw, whilst usually the tone is mixed with partials, which show themselves by the unequal serra- tions. It is thus certain that quality of voice depends, not merely on the size, degree of elasticity, and general mobility of the vocal cords, but also on the form of the resonating cavities above, and there can be no doubt that very slight differences in these may produce striking results.

3. Condition of the Larynx in the Various Registers.—In singing, one can readily observe that the tone may appear to come chiefly from the chest, from the throat, or from the head, or it may show the peculiar quality of tone termed falsetto. Authorities differ much in the nomenclature applied to these varieties of the voice. Thus the old Italian music masters spoke of the voce di petto, voce di gola, and voce di testa. Madam Seiler describes five conditions, namely, the first series of tones of the chest register, the second series of tones of the chest register, the first series of tones of the falsetto register, the second series of tones of the falsetto register, and the head register. French writers usually refer to two registers only, the chest and the head; whilst Behnke gives three registers for male voices (lower thick, upper thick, and upper thin), and five for the voices of women and

children (lower thick, upper thick, lower thin, upper thin, and small).1 These

1 See Voice, Song, and Speech, by Lennox Browne and Emil Behnke, 1888, p. 171.

distinctions are of more importance practically than as implying any marked physiological differences in the mechanism of the larynx during the production of the tones in the different registers. By means of the laryn- goscope it is possible to see the condition of the rima glottidis and the cords in passing through all the range

of the voice.

In 1807 Bozzini first showed that it was possible to see into the dark eavities of the body by illumining them with a mirror, and in 1829 Babington first saw the glottis in this way. In 1854 Garcia investigated his own larynx and that of other singers, and three years later Tiirek and especially Czermak perfeeted the construction of the laryngoseope. In 1883 Lennox Browne and Emil Behnke obtained photographs of the glottis in the living man. The laryn- goscope is a small mirror, about the diameter of a shilling, fixed to the end of a long handle at an angle of 125° to 130°. This mirror is gently pushed towards the baek of the throat, and if sufficient light be thrown into the mouth from a lamp, and if the eye of the observer be in the proper position, by angling the small mirror it is not difficult to get a view of the glottis. The light from the lamp is reflected by the mirror down on the glottis, from this it is reflected baek to the mirror, and then by the muror it is finally reflected to the eye of the observer. Usually the observer has in front of his eye a mirror by which a powerful beam of light ean be thrown from a lamp into the mouth and throat. In the eentre of the mirror there is a small hole through which the eye of the observer sees the image in the small mirror at the back of the throat. By placing a second plane mirror in front of the face, an observer ean easily study the mechanism of his own larynx.!

Suppose the picture of the larynx to be examined in the small mirror at the back of the throat, an image will be seen as in fig. 4. During calm breathing, the glottis is lance-shaped, between the yellowish white cords. A deep inspiration causes the glottis to open widely and in favourable circumstances one may look into the trachea. When a sound is to be made, the vocal cords are brought close together, either along their whole length, as in fig. 7,

or only along the ligamentous portion, the space between

Fig. 7.

Fia. 7.—Arrangement of glottis 8; false cord; ri, true vocal cord ; ar, arytenoid cartilages. Fia. 8.—Closure of the ligamentous portion of glottis. cord ; ri, true vocal cord; cartilages ; tenoid fold.

previous to emission of asound. }, epiglottis; (From Mandl.)

¢c, cuneiform medlenln wl ue cee etn tad ian in "(From Mandl.) ' ' r png iad the arytenoids being still open, as in fig. 8. Then when the sound begins the glottis opens (fig. 4), the form of the opening influencing the kind of voice, whilst the degree of tension of the cords will determine the pitch.

During inspiration the edges of the true vocal cords may occasionally be close together, as in sobbing, and it has been pointed out by various observers that during inspiration the false cords are easily separated, even when they touch, and during expiration, owing to dilatation of the ventricles, they come together and may readily close. Thus, from the plane of the cords, the true cords are most easily closed during inspiration and the false cords during expiration. Wyllie clearly showed in 1865 that the false vocal cords play the chief part in closure of the glottis during expiration (#din. Med. Jour., 1866). Lauder Brunton and Cash have confirmed Wyllie's results, and have shown further that the function of the false cords is to close the glottis and thus fix the thorax for muscular effort; and they adduce many facts from comparative

1 A cheap and efficient form of auto-laryngoscope was constructed

by the late Dr David Foulis, and may be had from Mes Ww Hilliard & Son, 65 Renfield Street, Glasgow. ‘alin

b, epiglottis ; rs, false |

VOICE

anatomy in favour of this view, these cords being strongly developed in those animals whose habits render fixation serviceable, whilst, on the other hand, they are absent or weakly developed in animals where fixation is of little or no service (Jour. Anat. and Physiol., vol. xvii.).

During the production of the chest voice, the space between the arytenoid cartilages is open, and between the vocal cords there is an ellipsoidal opening which gradually closes as the pitch of the sound rises (see figs. 9, 10, 11).

Fig. Fig. 10.

Fic. 9.—Chest voice, deep tone. 0, epiglottis; or, glottis; rs, false vocal cord ; ri, true vocal cord ; rap, ary-epiglottidean fold; ar, arytenoid carti-lages. (From Mandl.)

Fic. 10.—Chest voice, medium tone. orl, ligamentous portion of glottis; ore, portion of glottis between arytenoids; remaining description as in fig. 7. (From Mandl.)

During head voice, the opening between the arytenoids is completely closed ; the portion between the vocal cords is

o

| ia. Fic. 11.—Chest voice, high tone; description same as for figs. 7 and 8. Mandl.) Fig. 12.—Head voice, deep tones. glottidean folds; ae, ary-epiglottic folds; rs, false cords ; ri, true vocal cords; g, pharyngo-laryngeal groove; ar, arytenoid cartilages ; c, cuneiform carti-

(From

1, tongue; e, epiglottis ; pe, pharyngo-epl-

lages ; 0, glottis; r, inter-arytenoid folds. (From Mandl.)

open, but in place of being alinost a narrow straight slit as in chest voice, it is wide open so as to allow an escape of more air (see fig. 12). The condition of the cords during falsetto is, according to Miiller, one in which the cords can only vibrate at their margins, and especially in the middle, in consequence of the false cords pressing downwards upon them. O6ertel, on the other hand, states that in falsetto the cords vibrate throughout their length, "but that they form nodal lines parallel to the free borders of the loops or bellies of vibration" (Beaunis). Probably in these circumstances the membranes become much thinner. Oertel also found that during the falsetto voice the epiglottis became erect, the apices of the arytenoids were directed backwards, and the whole larynx became narrower but longer from before backwards. Behnke says that, in the production of the 'small register," the mechanism "consists in the formation of an oval orifice in the front part of the glottis which contracts the more the higher the voice ascends, the vocal ligaments being, in the hinder part, pressed together so tightly that scarcely any trace of a slit remains" (Lennox Brown and Behnke, op. cit.). Illing- worth is of opinion that falsetto (and even the ordinary voice) is produced in the "same way as the mouth is used in whistling" (see Edin. Med. Jour., 1876). This view may be true to some extent as regards falsetto, but it will not hold good for the ordinary voice.

The crico-thyroid muscle is supplied by the superior laryngeal branch of the pneumogastric nerve, and all the other muscles by the inferior or recurrent laryngeal branch

The superior laryngeal is also the Stirling has found ganglionic cells in the course of this nerve. Paralysis of the motor fibres causes aphonia, or loss of voice. If one cord is paralysed the voice may be lost or become falsetto in tone. Sometimes the cords may move in breathing or during coughing, but be motionless during an attempt at the pro- duction of voice. Rarely, incomplete unilateral paralysis of the recurrent nerve, or

the existence of a tumour on each cord, thus making them unequal in length, may cause a double tone, or diphthongia (Tiirck). Hoarseness is caused by roughness or swelling of the cords.

On the history of. the theories of voice production, see Longet's Traité de Physiologie, 1869, vol. ii. p. 733, and Gavarret's Phonation et Audition, 1877, p. 41. An excellent bibliography is given in Beaunis's Physiologie Humaine, 1881, vol. ii. p. 946; also in Quain's Anatomy, 1882, vol. ii. p. 538. (J. G. M.)

VOIRON, a manufacturing town of France, in the de- partment of Isére, stands on the banks of the Morge (a tributary of the Istre) and on the lower slopes of a moun- tain nearly 2500 feet high, 15 miles north-north-west of Grenoble on the Lyons railway. Some 30 or 35 factories, employing from 4000 to 5000 persons, are engaged in the production of a kind of cloth that takes its name from the town (toiles de Voiron), and the industry is carried on in the neighbourhood also, every inhabitant having his loom. Table linen, silk stuffs (2000 looms), and liqueurs are also made, and there are paper-mills, bleachworks, foundries, edge-tool factories, and building sheds. The monks of La Grande Chartreuse have stores at Voiron in connexion with the railway. A fine modern church was built from 1864 to 1873 in the style of the 13th century. The chief attraction of the town lies in the fine views it possesses of the mountains of Grenoble and the valley of the Isére. The population in 1886 was 8575.

VOITURE, Vincenr (1598-1648), the best writer of vers de société that France has yet produced, and one of the most influential preceptors of classical French prose, was born at Amiens in 1598. His father was a well-to-do wine merchant, who had connexions with the court, and itis one of the charges brought against Voiture that he was unnecessarily ashamed of his origin. At any rate he soon obtained a position in society, being appointed by Gaston d'Orléans to various offices in his household, Voiture had been well educated, and had profited both by his education and by the school friendships which it enabled him to make. He was early introduced to the Hétel de Rambouillet, and travelled in the suite of Monsieur, or on missions, a good deal both in and out of France, on one occasion extending his journeyings as far as Ceuta, whence he wrote a

letter of elaborate gallantry to Mademoiselle Paulet. Although a follower of Gaston, he made friends with Richelieu, and was one of the earliest Academicians. He also received appointments and pen- sions from Louis XIII. and Anne of Austria, and became altogether a very prosperous person. During his lifetime he, like most of the literary men of his time who were not either dramatists or serious scholars, published nothing in book form, but his verses and his prose letters were the delight of the coteries, and were copied, handed about, and admired more perhaps than the work of any contemporary. This coterie success has, it would seem, done them more harm than good in the eyes of posterity. When the long and rather wearisome history of the quarrel between the Uranistes and the Jobelins (partisans of the respective Merits of a sonnet of Voiture addressed to a certain Uranie and of another composed by his younger rival Benserade On the subject of Job) is mentioned, the modern reader is apt to suppose that the interest of the affair is merely one of antiquarian gossip. Yet it is difficult to think of any living writer who could surpass, or of any writer living during the last two centuries who could have surpassed, the

of the same nerve. sensory nerve of the larynx,

277

mixture of gallantry and sincerity in the Uranie sonnet, Another famous piece of his of the same kind, "La Belle Matineuse," is less exquisite, but still very admirable, and, generally speaking, Voiture deserves the praise given to him at the head of this article. His prose letters, if less interesting to the present generation, are full of lively wit, and are historically even more important. He ranks with Jean de Balzac as the chief director of the reform in French prose which accompanied that of Malherbe, and preceded that of Corneille, in French verse. Nor is there

any one to whom more than to Voiture (who was for many years almost an arbiter elegantiarum in literary matters)

the escape of French prose from the over-legislation which had such injurious effect on French verse can be ascribed. The fault of the century —a tendency to elaborate and "metaphysical " turns of phrase—affected

him to a certain extent, but in a mild form ; and, on the whole, he was the Frenchman of letters of the old school who has been least

favourably treated by the resurrection of taste for that old school which the present century has seen. It may seem absurd, but is probably just, to ascribe this absence of

enthusiasm in part to the fact that the most unjust censures of the extreme classical school passed harmless by him. Boileau had no abuse for him, and the 18th century read him with pleasure. The militant spirit of Romanticism had therefore nothing to avenge. Voiture lived a careless and Epicurean life for just fifty years,

and died at the outbreak of the Fronde, which killed the society to which he was accustomed, on the 26th of May

1648. His works were first published two years later, and

a characteristic and rather absurd literary quarrel, which

made a great noise at the time, broke out, on the subject of his literary merits, between his friend Costar and a certain Sieur de Griac. The standard modern edition of Voiture is that of Ubicini, 2 vols., Paris, 1855.

VOLCANOES. — See Gronoey, vol. x. pp. 240-254.

VOLE (Germ. Wiihimaus, Fr. Campagnol). This word, little known as it is to the majority of English people, is the proper name for a genus containing three of the com- monest of our English mammals, namely, the water, bank, and field voles,—animals generally called " water-rat," "red field-mouse," and "short-tailed field-mouse " respect- ively. The scientific name for the group is Arvicola, a genus which, with the lemmings and two or three other genera, forms the subfamily Arvicoline of the great Rodent family Muridx, whose proper place in the general system is shown under Mammatta (vol. xv. p. 419).

The voles, as a whole, are distinguished by their squat and heavy shape, their slower and less graceful move- ments, very small eyes, blunt snout,

inconspicuous ears, andshortenedlimbs and tail, in all of which points they are markedly con- trasted with the true rats and mice of the genus Mus, the only animals with which they can be confounded. But by far the : : most important characteristic of the voles lies in their molar teeth, which have been said to form "the perfection of Rodent dentition" from their wonderful specialization and adaptation to the purpose of grinding vegetable substances, These teeth, three in number on each side of each jaw, are rootless, that is to say, they go on grow- ing during the whole life of the animal at the same rate

Molars of Water-Vole (Arvicola amphibius); top view.

that they are worn down by use, just as is the case with the incisors, whose rootless condition is a characteristic of the whole Rodent order. Each tooth consists of a variable number of prismatic pillars formed externally of enamel and internally of the softer dentine, their section, as produced naturally by wear, being as is shown in the woodcut, a figure which may be compared with that given of the true murine dentition under Movs (vol. xvii. p. 5). The general prismatic appearance of the teeth, how- ever, is only due to the bending in at regular distances of the external enamel walls of the tooth, to such an extent that the enamel touches that at the opposite side of the tooth and thus shuts off a greater or less number of dentinal spaces, triangular in section. Owing to the manner of growth of the teeth their general pattern of spaces and angles is but little affected by age and wear, remaining practically the same throughout the life of the animal. On this account the variations in the pattern have been very generally used asa means of characterizing the different genera, subgenera, and species of the group, although their value for this purpose has of late been questioned, and a new classification proposed, entirely ignoring the tooth- characters, and based more upon external peculiarities. Without entering into the characters of the different sub-groups of the voles, it may suffice to say that each of the three species found in Great Britain belongs to a dis- tinct subgenus of Arvicola, and therefore the three together give a fair idea of the extent to which the

subgenera differ from one another. These three species are the following :—

1. The common Water-Vole (Arvicola amphibius) is as large as the house-rat, with which it is so often confused, but possesses of course the bluff-headed appearance and short tail characteristic of the voles. Its fur is long, soft, and thick, of a uniform grizzled brown all over, except when, as is not uncommon, it is wholly black. Its tail is about half the length of its head and body, and its hind feet are unusually long and powerful, although not webbed, and have five rounded pads on their lower surfaces. Its molar teeth (see woodcut) present the following number of prismatic spaces:—in the upper jaw the first, or anterior, has 5, the second 4, and the third 4, of which the last is very irregular in shape, and is sometimes itself divided into two, making 5 in all; in the lower jaw the first has 7 spaces, of which the 3 anterior are generally not fully separated from one another, the second has 5, and the third 8. These numbers for the different teeth are taken as the characters of the subgenus Paludicola of Dr Blasius, by whom this method of subdividing the group was first introduced. The water-vole is one of the commonest English mamunals, and is perhaps the most often actually seen of all, owing to its diurnal instead of nocturnal habits. It frequents rivers and streams, burrowing deeply into their banks, and in this way often causing considerable damage. Its food consists almost wholly of water- weeds, rushes, and other vegetable substances, but, like so many other rodents, it will also eat animal food on occasion, in the shape of insects, mice, or young birds. The female has during the warm season of the year three or four litters, each of from two to seven young. The range of the water-rat extends over the whole of Europe and North Asia, from England to China, but is not found in Ireland, where, curiously, no species of Arvicola is indigenous.

2, The next British species, representing the subgenus Agricola of Dr Blasius, is the common Field-Vole, or short-tailed field-mouse (Arvicola agrestis), about the size of a house-mouse, but with a short stumpy body, and a tail only about one-third the lensth of the head and body combined. Its hind feet have six pads on their inferior surfaces. Its colour is dull grizzled brown above, and greyish-white below. Its molar teeth have respectively 5, 5, and 6 prismatic spaces above, and 9, 5, and 3 below. The

field-vole is one of the commonest of our smaller mammals, and frequents fields, woods, and gardens in enormous numbers, often doing very considerable damage in the latter owing to its fondness for garden produce of all kinds. It is spread over the whole of Great Britain from the Hebrides southwards. Abroad its range extends from 'Finland to North Italy and from France and Spain to Russia.

3. The Bank-Vole (Arvicola glareolus) is of much the size and general appearance of the common field-vole, but may be dis- tinguished by its more or less rusty or rufous-coloured back, its larger ears, and its comparatively longer tail, which attains to about half the length of the head and body. Its molar teeth present characters so different from those of all other voles as to have causcd it to be often looked upon as belonging to an entirely distinct genus, for which the name of Lvotomys is used.

Their chief distinction lies in the fact that, unlike those of all other voles, their pulp-cavities close up in adult life, and they form distinct roots, more resembling those of the ordinary rats and mice. The enamel spaces of these teeth number respec- tively 5, 4, and 5 above, and 7, 3, and 3 below. The habits of this specics are in every way similar to those of the field-vole. Its range in Great Britain cxtends northwards to Morayshire, beyond which it has not yet been observed. Abroad it is found all along the north temperate zone from France to China, and is replaced in North America by a closely allied animal known as Arvicola gappert. It is probable, however, that both these forms, A. gappert and A. glarcolus, are only southern cliinatic offshoots of a still more northern species, the Arvicola rutilus of northern Europe, Siberia, and Arctic America.

The foreign species of vole number about 40, of which about 10 are European, 20 Asiatic, and 10 North American, none being found either in Africa, India (except in the extreme north), Australia, or South America. The group is therefore one peculiarly characteristic of the temperate parts of the northern hemisphere. (0.2)

VOLGA, Tue, the chief river of European Russia, rises See vol. – in the Valdai plateau of Tver in north-western Russia, xxi. and after a winding

course of 2325 miles (1040 in a Plate Il.

straight line) falls into the Caspian at Astrakhan. It is by far the largest river of Europe, those next in length, the Danube and the Ural, being only 1735 and 1478 miles respectively, while the Rhine (825 miles) is shorter even than two of the chief tributaries of the Volga,—the Oka and the Kama. Its drainage area, which includes the whole of middle and eastern as well as part of south- eastern Russia, amounts to 563,300 square miles, thus exceeding the aggregate superficies of Germany, France, and the United Kingdom. A hundred tributaries of the Volga are navigable for an aggregate length of 14,600 miles, a distance greater than the aggregate length of all the railways of England and Wales. The drainage area embraces twenty-one provinces of the Russian empire, or, in other words, nearly the whole of Great Russia proper, and has a population of nearly 40,000,000. The most populous regions of Great Russia are situated within the Volga basin, and cities like Moscow, Nijni-Novgorod, Saratoff, Simbirsk, and Kazaii, as well as many others, are indebted for their growth and present importance to their situation on the Volga or its tributaries. But the real "basin" of the Volga is not limited to its drainage area. By a system of canals which connects the upper Volga with the Neva, the commercial mouth of the Volga has been transferred, so to speak, from the Caspian to the Baltic, thus making St Petersburg, the capital and chief seaport of Russia, the chief port of the Volga basin as well. Other less important canals connect it with the Diina and the White Sea (Riga and Archangel) ; while a railway only 40 miles in length joins the Volga with the Don and the Sea of Azoff, and three great trunk lines bring its lower parts into connexion with the Baltic and western Europe. Traffic on the river and its tributaries is carried on by more than 760 steamers, 20,000 barges and boats, and 50,000 rafts; upwards of 4,000,000 tons of various goods, valued at 500,000,000 roubles (in weight one-half and in value three-fourths of the total merchandise on Russian rivers) are carried. If in addition some 50,000 rafts of timber not included in the preceding statistics are reck- oned, the timber floated in the basin of the Volga exceeds by nearly a million tons the total weight of merchandise carried on the 13,000 miles of Russian railways.

The Volga rises in the extensive marshes covering the western

parts of the Valdai plateau, where the Diina also has its origin. Small streamlets languidly circulate from marsh to marsh, so that

*1 See '*The Volga as a Means of Communication," by Prof. Boguslavskiy, St Petersburg, 1887 (Russian), being vol. ix. of the Sbornik of the Institute of Roads and Communieations. The above length of the Volga is taken from this work, based on recent surveys, and is therefore more aecurate than the length given by M. Strelbitzky (1978 miles) and Gen. Tillo (2108 miles).*

SS

anion

v OE G &

it is very difficult to say which of these ought to be regarded as the real source. Lake Seliger was formerly so considered; but at present that distinction is given to a small spring trickling into a wooden trough from beneath a small chapel in the midst of an extensive marsh to the south of Seliger (57° 10' N. lat.). The honour has also been claimed of late, not without plausibility, for the Runa rivulet.! Recent exact surveys have shown those marshes to be no more than 665 feet above sea-level. The stream first traverses several small lakes, all having the same level, and, after its junction with the Runa, enters Lake Volgo. A dam recently erected a few miles below that lake, with a storage of 350 million cubic yards of water, makes it possible to raise the level of the Volga as far as the Sheksna, thus rendering it navigable, even at low water, from its 65th mile onwards. Unlike most other great rivers, the Volga has thus no "upper course" among thc mountains. From the Valdai plateau, however, its descent is rapid, until at Tver its level is only 420 feet. Before reaching this point it has received numerous small tributaries, so as to be already 300 yards in breadth, with a volume of more than 4000 cubic fect per sccond, and a minimum depth at low water of 19 inches. The T'vertsa is connected by the Vyshniy-Vototchok Canal with the Tsna, a tribu- tary to the Msta and Volkhoff, which flows to Lake Ladoga,—the first of the three systems of canals which, as already remarked, have removed the commercial mouth of the Volga to the Baltic. From Tver the Volga is

regularly navigated, although not without some difficulties on account of the shallows and sandbanks, It flows north-east along a broad vallcy to join the Motoga and the Sheksna, two important tributaries connected by the Tikhvinsk and Mariinsk Canals with the tributaries of Lake Ladoga. Of these two systems the latter is much the more important, and the town of Rybinsk, at the mouth of the Sheksna, has therefore become the chief port of the upper Volga.

From its junction with the Sheksna the Volga flows with a very gentle descent towards the south-east, past Yarostavl and Kostroma, along a broad valley hollowed to a depth of some 150 and 200 feet in the Permian and Jurassic deposits. In fact, its course is through a succession of depressions formerly filled with wide lakes, and connected by links. When the Volga assumes a due south-east direction it is already a large river (8250 cubic feet per second, rising occasionally in high flood to as much as 178,360 cubic feet) ; of its numerous tributaries, the Unzha (365 miles, 330 navigable), from the north, is the most important.

The next great tributary is the Oka, which comes from the south- west after having traversed, on its course of 920 nniles, all the Great Russian provinces of central Russia. It rises in Orel among hills which also send tributaries to the Dnieper and the Don, and receives on the left the Upa, the Jizdra, the Ugra (300 miles), navigable up to Kozelsk, the Moskva, on which steamers ply up to Moscow, the Klyazma (395 miles), on whose banks arose the Middle Russian principality of Suzdal, and on the right the navigable Tsna (255 miles) and Moksha, Every one of these tributaries is connected with some important event in the history of Great Russia, and the drainage area of the Oka is a territory of 97,800 square miles. It has been maintained of late that, of the two rivers which unite at Nijni-Novgorod, the Oka, not the V olga, is the chief ; and the fact is that both in length (818 miles) and in drainage area above the junction (89,500 square miles), as wellas in the aggregate length of its tributaries, the Volga is the inferior. But, on the other hand, the Volga contributes on the whole the largest volume of water, although in flood the Oka here also has the advantage.

At its junction with the Oka the Volga enters the broad lacus- trine depression (see Russta) which must have communicated with the Caspian during the Post-Pliocene period by means of at least a broad strait. Its level at low water is only 190 feet above that of the ocean. Immediately below the junction its breadth ranges from 350 to 1750 yards, and even at the lowest water (in 1873) it had a minimum depth of 5} feet. The valley, which is nearly 7 miles wide, but at several places is narrowed to less than 2 miles, shows evident traces of having originated from a succession of elongated lakes, the shores of which bear numerous traces of the dwellings of prehistoric man from the Stone Age. There are many islands which change thcir appearance and position after each mundation. On the right it is joined by the Sura, which drains a large area and brings a volume of from 2700 to 22,000 cubic feet of water per second, the Vetluga (465 miles long, of which 865 are navigable), from the forest-tracts of Yarostavl, and many smaller tributaries; then it turns south-east and descends to another lacustrine depression, where it receives the Kama below Kazaii, 300 miles below its junction with the Oka, and only 110 feet above the sea. Remains of molluscs still extant in the Caspian occur extensively throughout this depression and up the lower

ama,

The Kama, which brings to the Volga a contribution ranging from 52,500 to 144,400 cubic feet and occasionally reaching even 515,000 cubic feet per second, might again be considered as the

1 Ragozin, The Volga, St Petersburg, 1881, 3 vols, (Russian), summarized in Roskoschny's Die Wolga und thre Zuflisse, Leipsic, 1887.

more important of the tworivers. It rises in Vyatka, takes a wide sweep towards the north and east, and then flows south and south- west to join the Volga after a course of no less than 1120 miles, A great number of important rivers join it:—the Wishera, coming from the depth of the forest region; the Kosva, so important for the export of metallic wares from the Ural works; the T'chusovaya (430 miles), which receives the Sylva and connects the Ekaterinburg mining district with central Russia; and finally the Byetaya (800 miles), which, together with the Ufa, its tributary, waters the fertile lands of the Bashkirs, rapidly being settled now by the Russians, A territory larger than France is thus brought into connexion with the great artery of Russian industrial life.

Along the next 788 miles of its course the Volga—now from 580 to 2600 yards wide—flows south-south-west, with but one great bend at Samara. At this point, where it pierces a range of limestone hills, the course of the river is very pictnresque, fringed as it is by high cliffs which rise about 1000 feet above the lcvel of the water (which is only 54 fect above the sea at Samara). Along the whole of the Samara bend the Volga is accompanied on its right bank by high cliffs, which it is constantly undermining, while wide lowland areas extend on the left or eastern bank, and are intersected by several old beds of the Volga. At SARATOFF (q.v.) the cliffs are being undermined so rapidly that a broad beach now separates the chief channel of the river from the city. Very few streams of any importance join the Volga in this part of its course. Still, at Ekaterinenstadt, a few miles above Saratoff, the volume per second for the two years 1884 and 1885 appears to have becn as much as 384,000 cubic feet. In flood 1,427,000 cubic feet per second has been recorded (Boguslavskiy). In the lower portion of this section the Volga has already passed below sea-leve (58 feet below at Tsaritsyn),

At Tsaritsyn the Volga reaches its extreme south-western limit, where it is separatcd from the Don by an isthmus of only 40 miles in width. The

isthmus is too high to be crossed by means of a canal, but a railway at Duboffka brings the Volga into some sort of connexiou with the Don and the Sea of Azoff. At Tsaritsyn the river takes a sharp turn in a south-easterly direction towards the Caspian; it enters the Caspian steppes, and some 50 miles below Tsaritsyn sends off a branch—the Akhtuba—which accom- panies it for 830 miles before falling into the Caspian. Here the Volga receives no tributaries; its right bank is skirted by low hills, but on the left it spreads freely, joining the Akhtuba by many branches when its waters are high, and flooding the country for from 15 to 35 miles, The width of the main branch ranges from 520 to 3500 yards, and the depth exceeds 80 fect. The delta proper begins 40 miles above 'Aetvalchan, and the branches subdivide so as to reach the sea by as many as 200 separate mouths. Below Astrakhan navigation is difficult, and on the sand-bars at the mouth the maximum depth is only 12 feet in calm weather,—a depth increased or diminished by a few feet according to the force and direction of the wiud.

The figures given above, showing as they do how immensely different in volume is the river at different periods, help to indicato the greatness of the changes which are constantly going on in tho channel and on its banks. Not only does its level occasionally rise in flood as much as 50 feet and cover its low-lying banks for a distance ranging from 5 to 15 miles; even the level of the Caspian is considerably affected by the sudden influx of water brought by the Volga. The amount of suspended matter brought down is of course correspondingly great; and, were it not for the action of the wind in driving back masses of water at the mouth of the Volga and thus filling up lakes where the mud is deposited, the bar at Astrakhan would soon become so silted up as completely to pre- vent navigation. All along its course the Volga wastes its banks with great rapidity; towns and loading ports have constantly to be shifted farther back. The shoals and shallows are continually changing, and maps of the river made for a scries of consecutive years are of the greatest interest to the physical geographer. ;

The question as to the gradual desiccation of the Volga, and its causes, has often been discussed, and in 1838 a committee which included Karl Baer among its members was appointed by the academy of sciences to

investigate the subject ; no positive result has, however, been arrived at, principally on account of the want of regular measurements of the volume of the Volga and its tributaries, —measurements which began to be made on scientific principles only in 1880. Still, it may be regarded as established that during the last thirty years new shallows have appeared in the upper Volga, and the old ones have increased in size ; while if we go back two or three centuries it is indisputable that rivers of the Volga basin which were easily navigable then are now hardly accessible to the smallest craft. The desiccation of the rivers of Russia has been often attributed to the steady destruction of its forests. But it is obvious that there are other general causes at work much more important,—causes to which the larger phenomena of the gencral desiccation of all rivers of the northern hemisphere in the deserts of Siberia and Turkestan, as well as in Russia, must be attributed. The gradual elevation of the whole of northern Russia and Siberia,

and the consequent draining of the marshes (sce N OVGOROD), is one of them; the drying-up of lakes all over the northern hemisphere, a proeess which is going on so rapidly (see Tomsk), in eonsequence of the deepening of the outflows of lakes and the cessation of supply to tho lakes which remained after the glaciation of the northern hemisphere, is another ; and both causes are amply sufficient to explain the known phenomena throughout the historical period. The desiccation of the Russian rivers is only one instanee of the general desiceation of the northern parts of the Old World, of which so many instances have been given under Russta, TURKESTAN, TRANSCASPIAN REGION, and SIBERIA.

Fisherics. —The network of shallow and still Zémans or "cut- offs" in the delta of the Volga and the shallow waters of the northern Caspian, sweetened as these arc by the water of the Volga, the Ural, the Kura, and the Terek, is exceedingly favourable to the breeding of fish, and as a whole constitutes one of the richest fishing grounds of the world. As soon as the ice breaks up in the delta innumerable shoals of roaeli (Leucisews rutilus) and trout (Luciotrutta lewcichthys) rush up the river. They are

followed by the great sturgeon (Acipenser huso), the pike, tho bream, and the

ike perch (Lewcioperca sandra). Later on appears the Caspian

erring (Clupea caspia), which formerly was neglected, but has now become more important than the various species of sturgeon; the sturgeon (A. stellatus) and "'wels" (Silurus glanis, see vol. Xxil p- 67) follow, and finally the sturgeon Acipenser gilldenstddtit, so mueh valued for its caviare. In search of a gravelly spawning- ground the sturgeons go up the river as far as Sarepta (250 miles). The lamprey, now extensively piekled, the sterlet (4. ruthenus), the tench, the gudgeon, and other river species also appear in immense numbers. No less than 15,000 men, partly from central Russia, are engaged in the fisheries of the lower Volga and its delta, while on the waters of the northern Caspian there are as many as 3000 fishing-boats, giving employment to something like 50,000 persons. From the end of June onwards immense trawl-nets, some- times a mile in length, and occasionally taking at one haul as many as 40,000 bream, 150,000 roaeh, and 200,000 herrings, are continually at work, and it is estimated that 3,600,000 cwts. of various fish, of the value of 15,000,000 roubles, are taken annually in the four fishing districts of the Volga, Ural, Terek, and Kura, Seal-hunting is also carried on off the Volga, and every year about 40,000 of the Phoca witulina are killed to the north of the Man- ghishlak peninsula, Fishing is cxtensively carried on along the entire course of the Volga and its tributaries, as also in ine alee of its upper basin.

Ice-Covering.—In winter the numberless tributaries and sub- tributaries of the Volga become so many highways for sledges. The iee lasts from 90 to 160 days aeeording to the climatic condi- tions, and breaks up earlier in its upper course than in some parts lower down. The average date of the break-up is April 11th at Tver, and 14 days later about Kostroma, from whieh point a regular aceeleration is observed (April 16th at Kazaf, April 7th at Tsaritsyn, and Mareh 17th at Astrakhan). Similarly, the average dates of freezing are November 23d at Tver, November 20th about Kostroma, December 7th at Kazafi, 20th at Tsaritsyn, and 17th at Astrakhan. Thus the river is open for an average of 226 days at

Ostashkoff and Tver, 215 days at Kostroma, and 209 at Kineshima; from Nijni-Novgorod, where the average is 224 days, there is a regular increase (235 days at Kazafi, 241 at Samara, 257 at Tsaritsyn, and 275 at Astrakhan), There are, however, great fluctuations, the navigation in some years having lasted only 182 days in the upper course, 169 at Kostroma, and 243 at Tsaritsyn; while within the last eighty years maxima of 260 days in the upper course and 288 in the lower course have been observed. The tributaries are navigable for periods ranging from 180 to 246 days.

Trafic.\—The chief Volga traffic is up river, the amount of merchandise which reaches Astrakhan being nearly fifteen times less than that reaching St Petersburg by the Volga canals. The details of this traffic are highly characteristic of the prescnt economic life of Russia. Ten million cwts. of fish, salt, and naphtha are despatched from Astrakhan; this contingent is soon swelled to 12 millions at Tsaritsyn by the salt bronght by rail from the Baskuntchak salt-lakes. From Tsaritsyn 7 million cwts. of fish salt, and naphtha are despatehed by the first of the three railways whieh traverse Russia from south-east to north-west and connect the lower Volga with the Baltic. Considerable amounts of corn are added to this total on its way towards the north-west: and while salt, fish, and naphtha are discharged for use at various points in middle Russia, the flow of corn continues to swell – portions of it are sent to Moscow from Gryazi and Orel, but the remainder goes north-west, so as to reach Riga to the amount of 9,300,000 cwts., chiefly of corn and flax.

By the Volga itself only 5,100,000 ewts., chiefly of fish, salt, and naphtha, leave Tsaritsyn, but before this ascending traffic reaches Saratoff it has increased to 6,300,000 ewts., chiefly by the addition of corn from the Saratoff steppes. There the current of merchan-

! See Sbornik of the Ministry of Roads and Communications, vols. xi. and xiL,

1885 and 1887: Graphical Maps of the Movement of Goods in 1882 and 1883.

FOLGA

dise divides again; 8 million cwts. of corn, fish, &c., leave the Volga to be carried north-westwards towards Tamboff, while the remainder is carried on farther north, up tho Volga, recciving on the way considerable additions of corn from the fertile tracts of Samara and the steppes of Orenburg, which are connected with Samara by rail. At Samara the flow again divides, and part of it is sent again north-west, via Penza, to Ryazhsk; there the three north-western currents which leave the Volga respectively at Tsaritsyn, Saratoff, and Samara reunite after having taken in eorn from the fertile regions of Tamboff and Ryazafi, so that nearly 20 million ewts. of eorn and other produce leave Ryazhsk to be carried on to Moscow. But the flow of corn ascending the Volga does not diminish, and Samara sends farther north no less than 14 million ewts., chiefly corn. At Kazai the volume of traffic is 16,200,000 ewts. (13 million ewts. of corn). Here a new mass, consisting of 11 million ewts. of corn, 34 of various metals, 4 of salt, and 64 of miscellaneous merchandise, all shipped down the Kama, joins the former, so that the total amount of merchandise forwarded from Kazaii up the Volga reaehes 35 million cwts. The Sura, the Oka, and the Vetluga add their corn, timber, and mannfaetured goods, and the volume reaching Nijni-Novgorod amounts to 38 million ewts. Here the stream divides once more: while manufactured goods brought in to the Nijni-Novgorod fair are dispersed from it all over Russia, nearly 10 million ecwts. of various merchandise (4 million of corn) are sent by rail to Moscow, but the great bulk (28 million cwts.) continues to move up the river, receiving on the way more timber from the Unzha, and sending some corn north- wards to Vologda and Archangel.

When the traffic reaches Rybinsk, we find that it consists of 20 million ewts. of corn and flax, and 54 million of metals, metallic and manufactured goods, hides, leather, and so on. At Rybinsk it again subdivides into three branches; one (6,300,000 ewts., chiefly of eorn) is diseharged and sent by rail to St Petersburg; another (2,800,000 cwts.) continues up the Volga to enter the Vyshniy Vototchok and Tikhvinsk canal-systems; and the third and largest (16 million ewts., almost entirely corn and flax) moves along the Mariinsk system towards Lake Ladoga and St Petersburg. Masses of timber and wood for fuel are added to it from the forest tracts of the lake district, the Syas and the Volkhoff bringing together nearly 17 million cwts., chiefly wood, so that finally

14,000,000 ewts. of corn and flax, 31,300,000 of timber and wood, 16,000,000 of building materials, and 4,000,000 of miscellaneous goods reach St Petersburg, which thus is the real seaport of the Volga basin.

The goods traffic down the river is much less important in weight, but relatively greater in value. Its prominent feature is the amount of wood sent to supply the provinees of Samara, Saratoff, and Astrakhan, as well as the lower Don, which now have very few or no forests. But the 84 million ewts. of wood and timber whieh reach Samara on boats are but a trifle in eomparison with what is floated in the shape of rafts, The down traffic in manufaetured goods is still more important. The great bulk of those exported from St Petersburg is sent to Moscow by rail, and thence distri- buted by rail over central Russia; but part of it is sent by rail to Rybinsk, and thence shipped down the Volga. Moseow sends its goods for the same purpose, partly to Yarostavl, and partly to Nijni- Novgorod (by rail), as also does Vladimir. Nijni-Novgorod distributes the merchandise all over eastern Russia, sends it up the Kama to Siberia, and ships nearly 2 million cwts. down the Volga. This quantity is increased by the additions brought by rail to Samara, Saratoff, and T'saritsyn.

According to official returns the aggregate amount of goods loaded in the basin of the Volga amounts to nearly 4 million tons, valued at 150 million roubles (2 million tons, 100 millions worth, on the Volga proper); trustworthy authorities, however, consider the real value of goods loaded in the basin of the Volga to be not less than 500 million roubles, exclusive of nearly 34 million tons of timber and fuel.

Formerly tens of thousands of " burtaki" were employed in dragging boats up the Volga and its tributaries, but this method of traction has disappeared unless from a few of the tributaries. Horse-power is still extensively resorted to along the three eanal systems. The first large steamers of the Ameriean type were built in 1872. Steamers are now very common; in 1885 as many as 766 were already in use on the Volga and its tributaries, and of these only one-eighth were not built within the Volga basin itself. One-third of them used naphtha as fuel. Of barges and other light vessels an immense variety of types are now in use; during 1885 no fewer than 20,610 vessels were afloat, and during the last thirteen years

the annual average of vessels built on the Volga and its tributaries has been 5080 (4,180,000 roubles). Large numbers of them are broken up after a single voyage.

History.—The Volga was not improbably known to the early Greeks, though it is not mentioned by any of tho writers previous to Ptolemy, who all confounded the Caspian with a gulf of the Arctic Ocean. According to Ptolemy, the Rha is a tributary of an in- terior sea, formed from the confluence of two great rivers, the sources of which are separated by twenty degrees of longitude; but

:

‘

1

VOL—

it is scarcely possible to judge from his statements how far the Slavonians had by that time succeeded in penetrating into the basin of the Volga. The Arabian geographers also throw but little light on the condition of the Volga (which they knew under the names of Itil, Etil, or Atel) during the great migrations of the 3d century, or subsequently under the invasion of the Huns, the growth of the great Khazar empire in the southern steppes, and of that of Bulgaria on the middle Volga. But we know that in the 9th century the Volga basin was occupied by Finnish stems in the north, and by Khazars and various Turkish stems in the south. The Slavonians, driven perhaps to the west, had only the Volkhoff and the Dnieper, while the Mohammedan Bulgarian empire, at the confluence of the Volga with the Kama, was so strong that for some time it was an open question whether Islam or Christianity was to gain the upper hand among the Slavonian idolaters. But, while the Russians were driven from the Black Sea by the Khazars, and later on by a tido of Ugrian migration from the north-east to the south-west (see p. 5 supra), a stream of Slayonians slowly moved towards the north-east, down the Oka, into the bordcrland between the Finnish and Turkish stems, After two centuries of struggle the Russians succecded in coloniz- ing the fertilo valleys of the Oka

basin; in the 12th century they built a series of fortified towns on the Oka and Klyazma, and finally they reached the mouth of the Oka, there founding (in 1222) a new Novgorod—the Novgorod of the Lowlands, now Nijni-Novgorod. The great lacustrine depression of the middle Volga was thus reached. Under the protection of the forts in the north-east, of the forests of Ryazafi in the south, and of the marshes of Novgorod and Tver in the north, the Great-Russian nationality freely developed in the fertile valleys of the Oka, absorbing the feeble Finnish tribes which formerly peopled them; and when the Tartar-Mongolian invasion came it encountered in the Oka basin a dense agricultural population with many fortified and wealthy towns,—a population which the Mongols found they could conquer, indeed, but were unable to drive before them as they had done with so many of the Turkish stems. This invasion only checked but did not stop the further advance of the Russians down the Volga; nay, it partly facilitated it, because it weakened the Bulgarian empire, and, by keeping up on the lower Volga a continual flow and ebb of nomads, prevented the development there of any settled population which might ultimately have op- posed the further advance of the Russians towards the Caspian. Two centuries elapsed before the Russians covered the 300 miles which separate the mouths of the Oka and the Kama, and took possession of Kazafi. But in the meantime a flow of Novgorodian colonization had moved eastward, in the upper portions of the left- bank tributaries of the Volga, and had reached the Urals, thus opening the way to Siberia.

With the capture of Kazat the Russians found the lower Volga open to their boats, and eight years afterwards they were already masters of the mouth of the river at Astrakhan. The Tartars and Turks of the steppes between the Dnieper and the Volga were thus encircled; the Little Russians endeavoured to take possession of the lower Dnieper, and the Great Russians already had a firm foot- ing on the lower Volga. The possession of the latter opened a free passage to the Don, up the little river Kamyshinka (now dried up but then navigable), which gave easy means of crossing the narrow isthmus between the Don and the Volga. Thus the lower Don was colonized. But two centuries more elapsed before the Russians opened for themselves a free passage to the Black Sea and became masters of the Sea of Azoff and the Crimea; the Volga, however, was their route. During these two centuries they fortified the lower river,

settled it, and penetrated also farther eastward into the steppes, towards the upper Ural and thence to the upper parts of the Tobol and the other great Siberian rivers. They penetrated also into the northern parts of the Caucasus isthmus, while another stream of armed colonization moved up the Kama and its numerous tributaries; finding the sources of these close to those of the Ob and Tobol, they crossed the low watersheds of the Urals and spread over northern Siberia, always following the river courses and tak- ing advantage of the portages for penetrating from one basin into the next. The entire growth of Russia towards the east went on from the Volga and its tributaries, and the long line of water com- munication (nearly 1000 miles) which flows from the upper Kama (60° N. lat.) to Astrakhan (46°

became the basis for all further advance of Russia into Asia. Bibliography.—Semenoft's Geographical and Statistical Dictionary, 6 vols., 1863-1885, contains a full bibliography of the Volga and tributaries up to date. See also Baer's Kasptsche Studien, 1837 sq.; Haxthausen's Studien tiber Russland; Baer and Helmersen's Beitrdge; Spiski naselennykh myest of Volga Provinces; V. Ragozin's Volga, 8 vols., 1880-81, with atlas (Russian) ; N. Bogo- luboff, The Volga from Tver to Astrakhan (Russian), 1876; S. Monastyrskiy, Iilustrated Handbook of the Volga (Russian), Kazah, 1884; Niegorodskiy Sbornik (Russian); Reclus's Géographie Universelle, vol. v.; Roskoschny, Die Wolga und thre Zufliisse, Leipsic, 1887, vol. i. (history, ethnography, hydrography, and biography, with rich bibliographical information); N. Boguslavskiy, The Volga as a Means of Communication (Russian), 1887. with detailed profile and maps ; M. Bogdanolf, Birds and Mammals of the Black-Earth Region of the Volga, 1869: Id., " Fauna ot Volga," in Mem. Kazan Natur., 1872; Peretyatkovitch,

4'), between Europe and Asia, and | extends as far south as Astrabad on the Caspian (36° 51' N. lat.), |

VO 281

Volga Region in the 15th and 16th Centuries, 1877; Klopoff, Results of Explora- tion of Volga Corn Trade,1887. For geology, see the publications of the Geological Committeeand Mineral Society (maps of Yarostavl and

lower Volga), and Memoirs of Astrakhan Statistical Committee for fishing. (EAI)

VOLHYNIA, a government of south-western Russia, bounded by the Polish provinces of Lublin and Siedlce on the W., Grodno and Minsk on the N., Kieff on the E., and Podolia and Galicia (Austria) on the S,, has an area of 27,731 square miles. A broad and flat spur of the Carpathians —the Avratynsk plateau—which enters from the west and spreads eastward towards the Dnieper, occupies its southern portion, reaching a maximum elevation of 1200 feet; another branch of the Carpathians in the west of the government ranges between 700 and 900 feet at its highest points. Both are deeply grooved in some places, and the crags give a hilly aspect to the districts where they occur. The remainder of the government, which is quite flat, with an imperceptible slope towards the marshes of Pinsk, is known as the Polyesie (see Minsk). It is covered by impassable marshes (sometimes as much as 400 square miles in extent), sparsely interspersed with forests and traversed by languid streams, with low, almost inaccessible banks, here and there diversified by sandy dunes. The drainage of the Polyesie is, however, being vigorously carried on, and large tracts of meadow land have already been reclaimed by extensive operations recently undertaken by Government. Among the marshes are many small lakes. Volhynia is copiously watered by a number of comparatively unimportant rivers which rise in the Avratynsk Hills and flow northwards towards the Dnieper; the Pripet with the Turia, the Styr, the Goryii, the Slutch, and other smaller tributaries of the Dnieper are navigable by small boats, and considerable quantities of timber and firewood are floated. By the western Bug, which separates Volhynia from Poland, timber is floated and corn and various goods shipped to Prussia.

The geological formation of Volhynia is very simple. The Avratynsk Hills, consisting of granite and various crystalline rocks, are covered with the Chalk, above which in turn are Tertiary sand- stones, sands, and clays containing lignite. The whole is covered by Glacial deposits and Lacustrine clays, reaching a great thickness in the north. Kaolin, pottery clay, and iron ore are the chief mineral] products ; amber also is occasionally found in the Tertiary sands. The climate of Volhynia, notwithstanding the influence of its marshes, is much milder than that of

central Russia within the same latitudes. The vegetation on the southern slopes of the Avratynsk Hills begins to show something of a West-European character ; oaks, maples, and limes prevail, while on the northern slope there arc immense forests of Scotch fir. The forests cover more than one-third of the entire area, and it is reckoned that 2,500,000 acres yield timber for building purposes.

The population of Volhynia in 1884 was 2,096,475, of whom nearly four-fifths were Little Russians (from 70 to 91 per cent. in various districts); there were 30,000 White Russians and somo 10,000 Great Russians. Next in importance to the Russiaus come the Jews, who numbered about 12 per cent. of the population. The Poles are variously estimated at from 120,000 to 170,000, but are certainly under 7 per cent. of the total population. The Germans number about 30,000. Agriculture cannot be said to flourish except on the Avratynsk plateau and its slopes, but is still the chief occupation, and more than one-third of the arca is under crops. The fertile soil of the south produces a surplusage of corn, which is cither used in distilleries or exported; the average crops from 1883 to 1885 were 1,606,000 quarters of rye, 550,000 of wheat, 1,145,000 of oats, 394,000 of barley, and 1,032,000 of potatoes. Hay is exported, but cattle-breeding has been almost stationary since 1850. In 1883 there were 506,500 horses, 655,050 cattle, and 571,500 sheep. Wool is exported. Beet is largely grown for sugar (38,000 acres, producing 4,800,000 cwts., having been under this crop in 1885). The culture of tobacco is rapidly extending (7000 tobacco plantations yielding about 8000 cwts. of tobacco in 1885). In the Polyesie the principal occupations are connected with the export of timber and firewood, the preparation of pitch, tar, potash, and various wooden wares, and boat-building. Tho wild boar, bear, fox, and hare are hunted. ,

The manufactures in 1884 yielded 18,884,000 roubles, as against only 2,856,000 in 1860. The goods principally produced are sugar, spirits, woollen cloth, paper, china, and metal wares. Wool, corn,

hides, and tallow are partly manufactured within the government, and partly exported to Riga and Poland. Volhynia is traversed by a railway from Kieff via Berditcheff to Brest-Lifovsk, with branches to Lublin and to Lemberg. The traffic by this line is eonsiderable, and the Radziviloff custom-house, on the Austrian frontier, is one of the most important in Russia.

Volhynia is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of which are ZHITOMIR (q.v.), which had 54,830 inhabitants in 1884, Dubno (7255), Kovel (18,980), Kremenets (10,560), Lutsk (13,770), Novgrad Volhynskiy (18,590), Ostrog (16,520), Ovrutch (6480), Radziviloff (7350), Rovno (7300), Staro-Konstantinoff (17,980), and Zastavl (10,120).

Volhynia has been inhabited by Slavonians from a remote antiquity. In Nestor's Annals its people are mentioned under the name of Dulebs, and later in the 12th century they were known as Velhynians and Buzhans (dwellers on the Bug). From the 9th century the towns of Volhynia—Vladimir, Ovruteh, Lutsk, and Dubno—were ruled by descendants of Rurik, and the land of Volhynia remained independent until the 14th century, when it fell under Lithuania. In 1659 it was annexed to Poland, and so remained until 1795, when it was taken possession of by Russia.

VOLNEY, Constantin Francois CHASSEB@UF, CoMTE DE (1757-1820), was born at Craon, on February 3, 1757, of a good but not noble family, and educated first at the neighbouring provincial towns of Ancenis and Angers, then at Paris. According to the common and curious habit of the time and country he was at first surnamed Boisgirais, but afterwards assumed the name of Volney. When he was about four and twenty he acquired some reputation by an essay on the chronology of Herodotus, and was introduced into literary and philosophical society. He then did what was at the time not common, common as it has become since. Having inherited a sum of money, he visited the East and spent some four years in Eyypt and Syria, writing the history of his travels when he returned, and publishing it in 1787. He had not merely travelled but had learnt Arabic, and had studied the politics as well as the topography of the countries he visited. Of the former study he gave evidence the year before the Revolu- tion by some Considerations on the war between

Russia and Turkey. He was a member both of the States- General and of the Constituante, and distinguished himself as an ardent reformer. In 1791 appeared the book Les Ruines, by which he is known toa great many people who have never read it. Itis a kind of essay on the philosophy of history written from the philosophe point of view, and of course containing some direct and much oblique manifestation of philosophe antipathy to religion. It is probable, however, that those who, after the lapse of a century, read it under the impression of the strong denunciations of it by some orthodox writers of its own and immediately succeeding times will be not a little surprised. The book, of which the full title is Les Ruines, ou Méditation sur les Révolutions des Empires, purports to contain the discourses of a traveller among the ruins of Palmyra with a very 18th-century genius. Volney was a good deal more than a mere author. He tried to put his politico-economic theories into practice in Corsica, where in 1792 he bought an estate and made an attempt to cultivate colonial produce. He was thrown into prison during the Jacobin triumph, but escaped the guillotine. He was some time professor of history at the newly-founded Ecole Normale, lectured there, and published his lectures. Then he undertook a journey to the United States, the result of which took form in a book (chiefly geographical) published in 1803. Next year he republished and much enlarged his early essay on Herodotus. He was not a partisan of Napoleon, but, being a moderate man, a savant and a Liberal, was impressed into service by the emperor, who made him a count and put him into the senate, of which he was one of the least servile members. The restoration in the same way recruited him against his will, and he became a peer of France. He was a member of

the Institute and latterly of the Academy proper, and, besides his historical, political, and (as the 18th century understood philosophy) philosophical studies, was a philo- logist of some power. He died at Paris on April 25, 1820, and his complete works appeared soon afterwards in 8 volumes.

Volncy has been called the last of the philosophes, and so, if date and cminence together be considered, he was. It may, as in many such cases, be doubted whether his identification with a powerful but one-sided movement was more of service than of disservice to him. No doubt it stimulated his work, but it also cramped and distorted it,—the curious and not wholly intelligible attitude of the whole school towards Christianity showing itself distinctly in him as a prejudicing and narrowing force. He was, however, an accurate observer, a thinker of acuteness and originality if not of great width or depth, and master of his pen in no ordinary degrce. His style suffers from the general defects of 18th-century French prose, in being thin, colourless, and devoid of flavour despite its clearness and brilliancy. But it serves him as a most excellent vehicle both of description and of argument.

VOLO, a town and seaport of Greece, on the east coast of Thessaly, at the head of the gulf to which it gives its name. Volo lies just below the mouth of the little river Orchestus, near the west foot of Mount Pelion, on the southern verge of an undulating and extremely fertile plain, which stretches thence northwards beyond Larissa, and which is skirted on the east by the chain above which tower Pelion, Ossa, and Olympus. The town, which has a mixed population (1884) of 4000, comprises three distinct quarters :—the kastro, enclosed by walls and inhabited chiefly by Turks ; the scala, or port, centre of the trade and shipping ; and the squalid Greeco-Jewisli suburb, which stretches from near the kastro to the coast. Volo, which is regularly visited by the Austrian, French, and Greek steamers plying weekly between the Pirzeus and Constanti- nople, is the only outlet for the produce of northern Greece. The exports (tobacco, hides and skins, fruits, olive oil, raw silk and cocoons, &c.) were valued in 1886 at £31,000, while the imports (cereals, cotton goods, petroleum, sugar, hardware, &c.) amounted to £259,000.

The castle of Volo stands on or close tothe site of Pagase, whence the gulf took the name of Sinus Pagaseeus or Pagasicus, and which was one of the oldest places of whieh mention occurs in the legendary history of Greece. From this port the Argonautic expedi- tion was said to have sailed, and it was already a fiourishing place under the tyrant Jason, who from the neighbouring Phere ruled over all Thessaly. Two miles farther

south stand the ruins of Demetrias, founded (290 B.c.) by Demetrius Poliorcetes, and for some time a favourite residence of the Maccdonian kings. On the opposite side of the little inlet at the head of the gulf rises the hill of Episcopi, on which stood the aneient city of Ioleus. Here Dr Lolling discovered in 1883 some underground sepulchral chambers resembling those of Mycenee and Orchomenus.

VOLOGDA, a government of north-eastern Russia, having Archangel on the N., Tobolsk on the E., Perm, Vyatka, Kostroma, and Yarostavl on the S., Novgorod and Olonetz on the W. 'This immense government, which comprises an area of 155,500 square miles, stretches in a north-easterly direction for 800 miles, from Novgorod to the Urals, including the broad depression drained by the Sukhona from the 8.W. and the Vytchegda from the N.E., head-waters of the Dwina. From the basin of the Volga it is separated by a flat, swampy, and wooded swelling, where the heads of tributaries belonging to both Arctic and Caspian drainage-areas are closely intermingled. The eastern boundary of Vologda follows the main water- parting of the Urals, which has but few points over 3000 feet ; wide parmas, or woody plateaus, fill up the space between the main Urals and the southern spurs of the Timansk Mountains, in the upper basin of the Petchora, and it is above the parmas—especially over those which are nearest to the Urals proper—that the highest summits of the Urals rise in the form of dome-shaped mountains (Tellpdss, 5540 feet above sea-level ; Hoste-pidr, 4955 feet ;

om An

Idjed-kashem, 4225 feet). The Timansk Mountains are a swampy plateau, where the rivers flowing either to the Dwina or to the Petchora take their rise in common marshes ; so that on the Mytva portage boats have to be dragged only a distance of three miles through marshy forests to be transported from one system to the other.

Permian sandstones and cupriferous slates cover most of the territory ; only a few patches of Jurassic clays overlie them ; while in the east, in the Ural parmas, coal-bearing Carboniferous, Devonian, and Silurian slates

and limestones appear, covering the erystalline slates of the main ridge. Vast layers of boulder clay and Lacus- trine deposits cover the whole. Rock-salt and salt springs, iron ore, millstones, and grindstones are the chief mineral produets ; but mining is in its infancy.

Vologda is profusely watered; as many as 4800 rivers and streams have been counted on its maps. The Sukhona, which rises in the south-west and flows north-east past Vologda, Totma, and Velikiy Ustyug, is navigable for 375 miles, After its junction with the Yug (390 miles long), which comes from the south, it bceomes the Dwina, which flows north-west, and receives the Vytehegda, another great river, 740 miles long and navigable for 570 miles, which, how- ever, waters a nearly uninhabited region. The Luza, a tributary of the Yug, is also navigated for more than 250 miles. The Petchora, which flows through eastern Vologda, is an artery for the export of eorn and the import of fish in the Petchora region, otherwise difficult of aecess. The Pinega, the Mezei, and the Vaga, all belonging to the Arctie basin, rise in northern Vologda. In the south-west the Sukhona is connected by means of Lake Kuben- skoye and the canal of Alexander of Wiirtemberg with the upper Volga. Numberless smaller lakes oceur, and marshes cover a con- siderable part of the surface.

The climate is severe, the average yearly temperature being 36° F. at Vologda (Jan., 10°-7; July, 63°°5) and 32°°5 at Ust- Sysolsk (Jan., 4°-8; July, 61°-7).

The flora and the physical aspects present a great variety of characters as the traveller moves north-east down tho Sukhona and up the Vytchegda, towards the parmas of the Petchora. In the south-west the forests are cleared, and the dry slopes of the hills are covered with fields and ineadows; the population is relatively dense, and nearly one-quarter of the area is under erops. 'There is a surplus of grain, which is uscd for distilleries; and apples are extensively cultivated. The flora ismiddle-Russian. Farther to the north-east the climate grows more severe ; but still, until the Dwina is reached, corn suceceds well, and there is no lack of excellent nmieadows on the river-terraces. Flax is cultivated for export ; but only 4 per cent. of the area is tilled, the remainder being covered with thick fir forests, with oceasional woods of deciduous trecs (birch,

aspen, elder). At about the 46th degree of east longitude the larch appears and soon supersedes the fir. Several plants unknown in western Russia make their appcarance (Silene tartarica, Anthyllus vulneraria, Euphorbia palustris, Filago arvensis, Lycopo- dium complanatum, Sanguisorba officinalis) Tho Veratrum is especially characteristic : it sometimes encroaches on the meadows to such an extent as to compcl their abandonment. The region of the upper Mezeii (the Udora) again" has a distinctive character. The winter is so protracted, and the snowfall so copions, that the Zyrians are sometimes compelled to clear away the snow from their barley-fields. But the summer is so hot (a mean of 54° for the three summer months) that barley ripens within forty days after beingsown, The Timansk plateaus are a marked boundary for the middle-Russian flora. Those to the east of them are uninhabitable ; even on the banks of the rivers the climate is so severe, especially on aceount of the icy northern winds, that rye and barley are mostly grown only in orchards. The whole is covered with quite impenetrable forests, growing on a soil permeated with water, Mosquitocs swarm in the forests; birds are rare. The Siberian cedar begins, and the lime-tree disappears. Fir, cedar, pine, and larch chiefly compose the forests, with birch and aspen on their outskirts. "Hunting is the chief oceupation of the Zyrian inhabitants.

The population (1,172, 250 in 1883 as against 960,850 in 1861), Consists chiefly of Great Russians (88 per cent.), aud Zyrians (12 Per cent. ; only 7 per cent. according to Rittich). The Zyrians —4 Finnish stem akin to the Permians—constitute the bulk of the population on the Ural slopes. They formerly inhabited the Kama and Vyatka basins, and call themselves Komi-yurt, or Komi-yas, and m the 14th century the Russians hardly distinguished them from the Permians; but they were compelled to migrate northwards into the basins of the Dwina and Petchora, and even across the Urals, by the religious fanaticism of the earlier Christian missionaries. A portion of them now live in Archangel (about 15,000), and their agstegate numbers are estimated at from 100,000 to 120,000, but the figures are very uncertain, as they arc often hardly distinguishable from the Russians, whose religion and habits they have assumed.

They differ widely fromm the western Finns in having dark eyes and hair; their honesty is proverbial, as also is their industry. They grow corn amidst the forests, after having patiently cleared them, and rear eattle, but are pre-eminently hunters. Their "artels," guided by a primitive compass, penetrate hundreds of miles into the virgin forests, and bring in vast quantities of squirrel furs and feathered game ; they fell timber for export, and gather cedar-nuts, but in doing so are rapidly destroying the cedar-tree.

The chief oceupation of the Russians is agriculture, and the average erops of 1883 to 1885 were rye, 785,000 quarters ; barley, 926,000 ; oats, 925,000; other grains, 197,000; and potatoes, 107,000 quarters. In 1883 they had 229,500 horses, 520,200 cattle, and 392,900 sheep. They also fell timber, prepare tar, pitch, and potash, and manufacture wooden utensils. In the south-west they pursue a variety of domestic trades (spinning, weaving, sewing of plain eloth, &c.). The manufacturing industry is represented by a few ironworks, distilleries, paper-mills, and a variety of small manufactures ; their aggregate production was only £274,500 in 1884. Salt was raised in 1881-84 to the average amount of 65,000 cwts. Flax, linen cloth, linseed, butter, tar, pitch, timber, and furs are the main items of export, the chief centres for trade being Vologda, Verkhovajsk, and Ustyug.

Vologda is divided into ten distriets, the chicf towns (with populations in 1881) being VoLoepa (17,025), Gryazovets (2225), Kadnikoff (1520), Nikolsk (1880), Solvytchegodsk (1820), Totma (3380), Ustyug Velikiy (7980), Ust-Sysolsk (4100), Velsk (1410), and Yarensk (1250). (RaPAn IK)

VOLOGDA, capital of the above government, is situated in its south-western corner, 302 miles to the north-east of Moscow, with which it is connected by rail via Yarostavl. It is an old town, having many relics of the past in its churches, including one which dates from the 12th cen- tury, and the cathedral founded in 1565. The educa- tional institutions are in a better state than in many other provincial towns. Vologda, though a place of only 17,025 inhabitants in 1881, is a considerable commercial centre,—fiax, linseed, oats, hemp, butter, and eggs being bought to a

large amount in the neighbouring districts and in Vyatka, and exported both to St Petersburg and Archangel.

Vologda existed as a place of commeree as early as the 12th cen- tury. It was a colony of Novgorod, and, owing to its advantageous position and the enterprise of the Novgorod merchants, it grcw to be a populous city. It carried on a brisk trade in flax, tallow, and furs, which were sent in from Ustyug Vclikiy,—another important colony of Novgorod; while the Byelo-ozero merchants brought to Vologda and Ustyug corn, leather, and various manufactured goods to be bartered against furs, or to be shipped to Klotmogory, at the mouth of the Dwina. In 1273 it was plundered by the prince of Tver in alliance with the Tartars, but soon recovered. Moscow dis- puted its possession with Novgorod until the 15th century; the Moscow princes intrigued to find support amidst the poorer inhabi-tants against the rieher Novgorod merchants, and four succcs- sive times Vologda had to fight against its metropolis. It was definitely annexed to Moscow in 1447. When Archangel was founded, and opened for foreign trade in 1553, Vologda became the chief depot for goods exported through that channel. They were brought on sledges from Moscow, Yarostavl, and Kostroma; and special yams, or post stations, were maintained to connect Vologda with Moscow. Many foreigners lived at Vologda; Fletcher, the British envoy, stayed there, and the first Russian envoy to Britain came originally from Vologda. Polish bands plundered it in 1613, and the plaguc of 1648 devastated it; but it maintained its com- mereial importance until the foundation of St Petersburg, when Russian foreign trade took another channel.

VOLSCI. See Iraty, vol. xiii. p. 445, and Roms, vol. xx. p. 739-741.

VOLSK, or Votssk, a district town of Russia, in the government of Saratoff, and 90 miles to the north-east of that town, on the right bank of the Volga, was a century ago but a small village (Matykovo); recently, however it has grown to be one of the important towns on the lower Volga, and its population has rapidly increased from 23,500 in 1860 to 36,315 in 1885. It is built in a narrow valley between chalk cliffs, and has a large cathedral and a market; it is surrounded by gardens, the produce of

which is exported to Nijni-Novgorod— gardening being also a distinctive feature of the wealthy and populous neighbouring villages.

284

VOLTA, Atzssanpro (1745-1827), was born at Como on February 18, 1745. In 1774 he was appointed pro- fessor of physics in the gymnasium of Como, and in 1777 he left his native town for the first time to travel through Switzerland, where he formed an intimate friendship with De Saussure. In 1779 a chair of physics was founded in Pavia, and Volta was chosen to occupy it. In 1782 he undertook a journey through France, Germany, Holland, and England, and became acquainted with nearly all the scientific celebrities of that day. In 1791 he received the Copley medal of the Royal Society. In 1801 Napoleon called him to Paris, to show his experiments on contact electricity, and a medal was struck in his honour. He was made a senator of the kingdom of Lombardy. In 1815 the emperor of Austria made him director of the philosophical faculty of Padua. In 1819 he retired, and settled down again in his native town. He died on March

5, 1827.

The first published paper of Volta (De Vi Attractiwa Ignis Electrici) dates from 1769; it contains no new facts, but deserves our attention as showing us the knowledge with which Volta set out on his journey of discoveries, and the theoretical speculations which seem to have given him the first impulse to experimental work. Franklin, who was then justly considered the great authority on these matters, had endeavoured to explain electrical phenomena by the mutual repulsion of the particles of an electrical substance and the attraction between that electrical substance and ordinary mattcr. Volta tried to simplify the theory by assuming an action only between the electrical substance and matter, and he tells us that he cxplained his views in a letter to the Abbé Nollet when he was nineteen years old. The way in which he endeavoured to account for the phenomena of attraction and repulsion and the phenomena of the Leyden jar have no interest for us to-day, but that part of his paper in which he showed the application of his theory to the generation of electricity is of historical importance, for in it we can trace the germ of many future

discoveries. He imagines all bodics in the natural state to contain electricity in such propor- tion that they are in clectrical equilibrium. He believes stint his experimental results obtained by rubbing metals with each other show this. But when bodies are brought into close contact, as, for instance, in friction, adopting the views of Boscovich, according to which attraction and repulsion alternate at small distances, he con- siders that the attractions of electricity and matter 1aay alter and a new electrical equilibrium will establish itself. He asks the question whether during the progress of chemical action, such as solution, mixture of fluids, combustion, in which the particles of matter change their position, there is no disturbance of electrical equi- librium. He expresses his conviction that this is the case, and explains the experimental difficulties which prevent a proof, but expresses a hope that he will succeed in obtaining signs of electrical action during chemical operations. He shows how atmospheric electricity might be accounted for in accordance with these views.

The principal point of interest in his second paper (Novus ac Simplicissimus Electricorum Tentaminum Apparatus) is the attempt to explain electrical insulation by a repulsion between the insulating matter and electricity. The influence of Boscovich in this attempt to explain everything by forces and centres of force is here apparent. Theory thus seems to have given Volta the first impulse to his electrical inquiries; but as he went on with his experimental work the firm establishment of facts took the first place in his mind, and after the first two papers we find hardly anything speculative in his writings.

On June 10, 1775, Volta announced the construction of the electrophorus in a letter to Priestley, asking him, as the historian of electricity, how far the discovery was new.. The remainder of the year seems to have been taken up with improvements in the mechanical construction of the apparatus. A letter to De Saussure in 1778 treats of the electrostatic capacity of conductors. Although we now know that Cavendish had treated the same subject in a much more complete way, the researches of Cavendish have only recently been published, and Volta's experiments are a grcat advance on anything that had been published at the time. The construc- tion of the condenser, and its applications to the study of

electrical phenomena, were first published in the Philosophical Transactions (1782). By means of the delicate apparatus at his disposal he re- turned to the ideas announced in his first paper, and tried to discover signs of electricity during the processes of evaporation and ebulli- tion, aud during changes of temperature ; after repeated failure he at last believed himself to have succeeded in obtaining electrical effects during the evaporation of water. The first successful experi- ments were made in Paris in the presence of Lavoisier and Laplace.

veo rT

We know now thut evaporation by itself does not cause a difference in electric potential, and that Volta's effect was due to friction of the vapour generated against the sides of the vessel ; but this has only been established quite recently.

The results on electrical effects due to evaporation led Volta to the closer investigation of the phenomena of atmospheric electricity, a subject which seems always to have had a special attraction for him. Between 1788 and 1790 he wrote nine letters on Meteorologia Elettrica addressed to Lichtenberg. The first two letters treat of electrical measurements. For the pith ball electroscope he substi- tutes the straw electrometer, in which the angle of divergence of two clectrified straws is measured. Different electrometers of various sensitiveness are carefully graduated and compared with each other. Nor is this all: Volta has never as yet received the credit of havin constructed the first absolute electrometer, and for having conte his other instruments with it, so that it would be possible now to refer all his measurements to absolute units. His electrometer consisted of a balance, one pane of which was a flat round disk. Below this disk was placed a larger parallel plate, conducted away to earth, and stops were arranged so that the disk could not approach the plate nearer than 2 inches. In the unelectrified state the balance was in a state of equilibrium. When the disk is electrified it is attracted towards the plate but kept at its proper distance by the stops; weights are then added in the other plate of the balance until the disk is torn away from the stops.

The remaining letters addressed to Lichtenberg contain obser- vations on atmospheric electricity and on the action of points and flames in

discharging electncity. The reader cannot help fecling low very little more we now know about these matters than Volta did.

It was probably in 1790 that Galvani first madc the observa- tions which have rendcred him celebrated. He was struck by the muscular contractions of a frog which had recently been killed and skinned, and was lying on a table ncar an electrical machine, which was accidentally set to work. In order to see whethcr he could obtain similar contraction from atmospheric electricity, he sus- pended the thigh of a frog by means of a hook from an iron railing, and found the contraction whenever the muscle touched the railing. He tricd to account for the observation by assuming that the nerves and muscles of the animal body formed a kind of Leyden jar, which was discharged whenever an external circuit brought them into electrical contact. Voltaat first agreed to this explanation, but his own experiments soon led him to change his opinion. It is very instructive to read the various letters and essays in which Volta describes his observations and his reasoning which gradually led him up to the construction of the electrical pile. His whole ex- perimental training as well as the speculations of his early youth seemed to force him on in the right path, and in this work, as indeed in his whole carecr, nonc of thc discoveries seems due to chance. The muscle of the frog soon appeared to him to be nothing but a very delicate electrometer, and he made use of it as such. The conductors he divided into two classes. Conductors of the first kind, to which carbon and the metals belong, he showed to become elcctrified by contact, but in such a way that equilibrium is estab- lished in each circuit, so that no current of electricity can be produced by any arrangement containing conductors of this class only. Conductors of the second kind are what we should now call electrolytes. An electric current is produccd whenever a circuit is arranged between two conductors of the first kind and one of the second kind. It is impossible here to enter into the history of this now celebrated contact theory, but, although opinions may differ on the interpretation of some of the experiments, there is not much in Volta's writings on this subject which could be called incorrect even at the present day. Volta's electric pile was first described in a letter to Sir J. Banks, then president of the Royal Society. The letter is dated March 20, 1800, and it was read before the Society on June 26 of the same ycar. The pile consisted of a

number of disks of tin and an equal number of disks of silver or copper. The zinc and tin plates are in contact, and each pair is separated by some porous mattcr which is kept moist. He describes a number of experimental results obtained with this pile, and finally shows that all the effects produced are the same as those which can be obtaincd from electrical machines, and that therefore "galvanism " and "electricity" are identical. Volta lived to see the remarkable development of his science at the hands of Sir Humphry Davy, Oersted, and Ampére, but he was no mathematician, and the subject grew beyond his powers. He recognized this with that frank honesty which is apparent in all his writings, and during the last twenty-five years of his life he published nothing on electrical subjects.

A complete history of Volta's writings ought to take in much which must be omitted here. His investigations on gas analysis, and his very interesting paper on the expansion of gases by heat, deserve, however, to be mentioned. He showed the causes which had led different experimenters to such inconsistent results, and

established independently what is now known as the law of Charles. (ATS?)

, OL T

VOLTAIRE, Francois Marte ARovET DE (1694-1778), whose real name was Francois Marre Anover simply, was born on the 21st of November 1694 at Paris, and was baptized the next day. His father was Francois Arouet, a notary; his mother was Marie Marguerite Daumart (sometimes, but less correctly, spelt D'Aumard, apparently because her family was noble). Both father and mother were of Poitevin extraction, but the Arouets had been for two generations established in Paris, the grandfather being a prosperous tradesman, and the father, as has been said, a still more prosperous notary. The Arouet family are heard of in Poitou as far back as the early 16th century, and appear to have always belonged to the yeoman-tradesman class. Their special home was the town of St Loup. Voltaire was the fifth child of his parents—twin boys (of whom one survived), a girl, Marguerite Catherine, and another boy who died young, having preceded him. Not very much is known of the mother,

who died when Voltaire himself was but seven years old. She seenis, however, to have had delicate health, and she pretty certainly was the chief cause of Voltaire's early introduction to good society, the Abbé de Chateauneuf (his sponsor in more ways than one) having been her friend. The father appears to have been somewhat peremptory in temper, but neither inhospitable nor tyrannical. Marguerite Arouet, of whom her younger brother was very fond, married early; the elder brother Armand was a strong Jansenist, and there never was any kind of sympathy between him and Frangois.

Voltaire appears to have received no very regular education till he was ten years old; but the Abbé de Chateauneuf instructed him pretty early in belles lettres and deism, and he showed when quite a child the unsur- passed faculty for facile verse-making which always distin- guished him, and to which the literary tastes and models of the time lent themselves with especial readiness. But at the age just mentioned he was sent to the Collége Louis-le-Grand, which was under the management of the Jesuits. This was in 1704. He remained there till 1711. It was his whim, as part of his general liberalism, to depreciate the education he received ; but it seems to have been a very sound and good education, which beyond all doubt formed the basis of his extraordinarily wide, though never extraordinarily accurate, collection of knowledge subsequently, and (a more important thing still) disciplined and exercised his literary faculty and judgment. Nor can there be much doubt that the great attention bestowed on acting—the Jesuits kept up the Renaissance practice of turning schools into theatres for the performance of plays both in Latin and in the vernacular—had much to do with Voltaire's lifelong devotion to the stage. It must have been in his very earliest school years that the cele- brated presentation of him by his godfather to Ninon de Lenclos took place, for Ninon died in 1705. She left him two thousand livres " to buy books with." Voltaire's School experience appears to have been much more like that of English schoolboys than like the dreary imprison- ment of which in later days Frenchmen have generally complained. He worked fairly, played fairly, lived com- fortably, made good and lasting friends. Some curious traits are recorded of this life—one being that in the terrible famine year of Malplaquet a hundred francs a year were added to the usual boarding expenses, and yet the boys had to eat pain bis.

His troubles began when, in August 1711, at the age of 17, he came home, and the usual battle began between @ son who desired no profession but literature and a father Who, in those days not quite unreasonably, refused to con- sider literature a profession at all. Fora time Voltaire submitted, and read law at least nominally, doing quite other things besides or instead of that study. The Abbé

de Chateauneuf died before his godson left school, but he had already introduced him to the famous coterie of the Temple, of which the grand prior Venddme was the head, and the poets Chaulieu and La Fare the chief literary stars, and which chiefly existed for purposes of sometimes elegant and sometimes by no means elegant dissipation. It does not appear that Voltaire got into any great scrapes, and the anecdotes recorded of this wild oats time of his are harmless enough. But his father naturally prognosti- cated little good to him from such society, and tried to break him off from it, by sending him first to Caen and then in the suite of the Marquis de Chateauneuf, the abbé's brother, to the Hague. Here, however, he got into what, in the paternal eyes at least, was a far worse scrape than staying out at night or wasting his substance on the purchase of coaches and horses. He meta certain Olympe Dunoyer (" Pimpette"), a girl apparently of respectable character and not bad connexions, but a Protestant, penniless, and daughter of a literary lady whose literary reputation was not spotless. The mother discouraged the affair, and, though Voltaire, with an early display of his afterwards famous cunning, tried to avail himself of the mania for proselytizing which then distinguished France, his father would not hear of the match, and stopped the whole affair by procuring a lettre de cachet, which, however, he did not use. Voltaire, who had been sent home, sub- mitted, and for a time pretended to work in a Parisian lawyer's office. But he again manifested a faculty for get- ting into trouble,—this time in the still more dangerous way of writing libellous poems,—so that his father was glad to send him to stay for nearly a year (1714-1715) with Louis de Caumartin, Marquis de St Ange, in the country. Here he was still supposed to study law, but as usual really devoted himself in part to literary essays, in part to storing up that immense treasure of gossiping history which was afterwards one of

his most unique pos- sessions. Almost exactly at the time of the death of Louis XTV. he returned to Paris, to fall once more into literary and Templar society, and to make the tragedy of Cdipe, which he had already written, privately known. He was now introduced to a less questionable and even more distinguished coterie than Vendéme's, to the famous "court of Sceaux," the circle of the beautiful and am- bitious Duchesse du Maine. It seems, though it is not certainly known, that Voltaire lent himself to the duchess's frantic hatred of the regent Orleans, and helped to com- pose lampoons on that prince. At any rate, in May 1716 he was exiled, first to Tulle, then to Sully. He was allowed to return, but again fell under suspicion of having been concerned in the composition of two violent libels,— one in Latin and one in French,—called from their first words the Puero Regnante and the J'ai vu, was inveigled by a spy named Beauregard into a real or burlesque con- fession, and on May 16, 1717, was arrested and sent to the Bastille. He remained there for eleven months, recast Gidipe, began the Henriade, and determined to alter his name. ver after his exit from the Bastille in April 1718 he was known as Arouet de Voltaire, or simply Voltaire, though legally he never abandoned his patronymic. The origin of the famous name has been much debated, and attempts have been made to show that it actually existed in the Daumart pedigree or in some territorial designation. The balance of opinion has, however, always inclined to the hypothesis of an anagram on the name " Arouet le jeune," or " Arouet 1. j.," « being changed to v and j to ¢ according to the ordinary rules of the game. If it be so, the much despised art of the anagrammatist has the triumph of pro- ducing one of the dozen or score most famous names in literary history.

A further "exile" at Chatenay and elsewhere succeeded

the imprisonment, and though Voltaire was admitted to an audience by the regent and treated graciously it is clear that he was not trusted, and the inconveniences he had suffered for a time induced even his incorrigibly mischievous nature to keep quiet. Mdipe was acted at the Théatre Frangais on 18th November of the year of release, and was very well received, a not dissimilar rivalry between parties to that which not

long before had helped Addison's Cato assisting its success. It had a run of forty-five nights, was acted at court, and brought the author not a little money in profits and presents, besides a gold medal from the regent. Voltaire seems to have begun with these gains his long and (among authors) almost unique series of successful financial speculations. But adversity had by no means done with him. In the spring of next year the production of Lagrange-Chancel's libels, entitled the Philippiques, again brought suspicion on him. He was informally exiled, and spent much time with Marshal Villars, again increasing his store of "reminis- cences." He returned to Paris in the winter, and his second play, A7témire, was produced in February 1720. It was a failure, and though it was recast with some success Voltaire never published it as a whole, and used parts of it up in other work. He again spent much of his time with Villars, listening to the marshal's stories and making harmless love to the duchess. In December 1721 his father died, leaving him property (rather more than four thousand livres a year), which was soon increased by a pension of half the amount from the regent. In return for this, or in hopes of more, he offered himself as a spy— or at anyrate as a secret diplomatist —to Dubois. He had, however, an awkward brush with a fellow-servant in this honourable kind of work, for, meeting his old enemy Beauregard in one of the minister's rooms and making an offensive remark, he was waylaid by Beauregard some time after in a less privileged place and soundly beaten. This unpleasant proceeding was only a preliminary to Voltaire's second and most important experience of ' Black Will with a cudgel," to use Rochester's phrase as to the proper mode of dealing with troublesome men of letters. His visiting espionage, as unkind critics put it —his secret diplomatic mission, as he would have liked to have it put himself— began in the summer of 1722, and he set out for it en bonne fortune,—in company, that is to say, with a certain Madame de Rupelmonde, to whom he as usual made love, though it may perhaps be platonic love only (for Voltaire was not fortunate in this way), taught deism, and served as an amusing travelling companion. He stayed at Cam- bray for some time, where European diplomatists – were still in full session, journeyed to Brussels, where he met and quarrelled with Jean Baptiste Rousseau, went on to the Hague, and then returned. It does not seem that he did anything diplomatically important, but from that day to this French Governments have had an amiable weakness for paying the

travelling expenses of men of letters who feel inclined to see the world. The Henriade had got on considerably during the journey, and, according to his life- long habit, the poet, with the help of his friend Thiériot and others, had been " working the oracle " of puffery after a fashion not particularly creditable, but perhaps recom- mended by a knowledge of mankind. During the late autumn and winter of 1722-23 he abode chiefly in Paris, taking a kind of lodging in the town house of M. de Bernicres, a nobleman of Rouen, and endeavouring to procure a "privilege." for his poem. In this he was dis- appointed, but he had the work printed at Rouen never- theless, and spent the summer of 1723 revising it. In November he caught smallpox and was very seriously ill, so that the book was not given to the world till the spring of 1724 (and then of course, as it had no privilege, appeared

|

AIRE

privately). Almost at the same time, March 4, his third tragedy, Mariamne, appeared, at first with great success, but before the curtain fell complete damnation fell on it, The regent had died shortly before, not to Voltaire's advantage ; for though that rather hardly treated person had little reason to love the poet he had been a generous patron to him. Voltaire had made, however, a useful friend in another grand sergneur, as profligate and nearly as intelligent, the duke of Richelieu, and with him he passed 1724 and the next year chiefly, recasting Mfariammne (which was now successful), writing the comedy of L'Indis- cret, and courting the queen, the ministers, the favourites, and everybody who seemed worth courting. The end of 1725 brought a disastrous close to this period of his life. He was insulted in one way or another by the Chevalier de Rohan, replied with his usual sharpness of tongue, and shortly afterwards, when dining at the Hotel Sully, was called out and bastinadoed by the chevalier's hirelings, Rohan himself looking on. Nobody would take his part, and at last he challenged Rohan, who accepted the chal- lenge, but on the morning appointed for the duel Voltaire was arrested and sent for the second time to the Bastille. This was nearly three months after the outrage. Voltaire had been ostentatiously taking lessons in fencing mean-

while, and it requires some effort to sympathize with him in all the circumstances. He was only kept in confine ment a fortnight, and was then packed off to England in accordance with his own request. In the then state of social matters in France this was probably the best end of the matter, and nobody comes out of it so badly as the duke of Sully, who, by the code of gentlemen of all ages, was clearly bound to take the part of the guest who had been trepanned from his own table, and did not take it. But here also Voltaire took the best means of putting him- self in the wrong and his enemies in the right by cutting Maximilien de Béthune's name out of the Henriade.

No conipetent judges have ever mistaken the importance of Voltaire's visit to England, and the influence it exercised on his future career. In the first place, the ridiculous and discreditable incident of the beating had time to blow over ; in the second (as a previous experience of J. B. Rousseau's, which a good man of business like Voltaire was not likely to forget, had shown), England was a very favourable place for Frenchmen of note to pick up guineas ; in the third, and most important of all, his contact with a people then far more different in every conceivable way from their neighbours than any two peoples of Europe are different now, acted as a sovereign tonic and stimulant on his intellect and literary faculty. Before the English visit Voltaire had been an elegant trifler, an adept in the forms of literature popular in French society, a sort of superior Dorat or Bouffiers of earlier growth. He returned from that visit one of the foremost literary men in Europe, with views, if not profound or accurate, yet wide and acute on all les grands syjets, and with a solid stock of money to make him independent of those great men of his own country who had taught him how dearly their patronage was to be purchased. The visit lasted about three years, from 1726 to 1729; and, as if to make the visitor's luck certain, George I. died and George II. succeeded soon after his arrival. The new king was not fond of " boetry," but Queen Caroline was, and the international jealousy (which, though there was no actual war, was never stronger than then) was pleased at the thought of welcoming a distin- guished exile from French illiberality. The Walpoles, Bubb Dodington, Bolingbroke especially, Sir Everard Falkener, a merchant and a diplomatist, Young, Congreve, Sarah Marlborough, Pope, were among his English friends. Heat least tried to appreciate

Shakespeare, and at least attained to the length of now copying and now reviling him. He

TO LTATR &

was much struck (and it would appear not unfrequently hoaxed) by English manners, was deeply penetrated by English toleration for personal freethought and eccen- tricity, and (though the amount is very variously stated) certainly gained some thousands of pounds from an auth- orized English edition of the Henriade dedicated to the queen. But he visited Paris now and then, without per- mission (at other times he obtained permission to go with- out visiting it), and his mind, like the mind of every exiled Frenchman, was always set thereon. He at last gained full licence to return in the spring of 1729.

He was full of literary projects, and immediately after his return he is said to have increased his fortune im- mensely by a lucky lottery speculation. The /enriade was at last licensed in France; Brutus, a play which he had printed in England, was accepted for performance, but kept back for a time by the author ; and he began the celebrated poem of the Pucelle, the amusement and the torment of great part of his life. But he had great difficulties with two of his chief works which were ready to appear, and did after a fashion appear in 1731,—to wit, Charles XJ. and the Lettres sur les Anglais. With both he took all imaginable pains to avoid offending the censorship; for Voltaire had, more than any other man who ever lived, the ability and the willingness to stoop to conquer. At the end of 1730 Brutus did actually get acted with not incon- siderable but gradually decreasing success. Then in the spring of the next year he went to Rouen to get Charles XII, surreptitiously printed, which he accomplished. In all this nomadic life of his, which had now reached more than "the middle of the way," he had never had a house of his own, nor had he now, though for a rather unusually long time he was half-guest half-boarder with the Comtesse de Fontaine-Martel. In 1732 another tragedy, Eriphile, appeared with the same kind of halting success which had distinguished the appearance of its elder sisters since Gidipe. But at last, on August 13, 1732, he produced Zaire, the best (with MJérope) of all his plays, and one of the ten or twelve best plays of the whole French classical school. Its

motive was borrowed to some extent from Othello, but that matters little. In the following winter the death of his hostess turned him out of a comfortable abode. He still, however, did not set up housekeeping, but took lodgings with an agent of his, one Demoulin, in an out-of-the-way part of Paris, and was, for some time at least, as much occupied with contracts, speculation, and all sorts of means of gaining money as with literature.

It was in the middle of this period, however, in 17 DD, that two important books, the Lettres Phailosophiques sur les Anglais and the Temple du Govt appeared. Both were likely to make bad blood, for the latter was, under the mask of easy verse, a satire on contemporary French literature, especially on J. B. Rousseau, and the former was, in the guise of a criticism or rather panegyric of English ways, an attack on everything established in the church and state of France. It was published with certain " re- marks " on Pascal, more offensive to orthodoxy than itself, and no mercy was shown to it. The book was condemned (June 10, 1734), the copies seized and burnt, a warrant issued against the author, and his dwelling searched. He himself, as usual henceforward, took care to be out of the way of danger, and was safe in the independent duchy of Lorraine with Madame du Chatelet, not having taken, but very shortly about to take, up his abode with that "respectable Emily " at her famous chateau of Cirey.

If the English visit may be regarded as having finished Voltaire's education, the Cirey residence may be justly said to be the first stage of his literary manhood. He had Written important and characteristic work before; but he had always been in a kind of literary Wanderjahre. He

now obtained a settled home for many years, and, taught by his numerous brushes with the authorities, he began and successfully carried out that system of keeping out of personal harm's way, and of at once denying any awkward responsibility, which made him for nearly half a century at once the chief and the most prosperous of European heretics in regard to all established ideas. He was in no great or immediate danger on this particular occasion, especially as he was perfectly ready to deny his

authorship, and he travelled about for some time, visiting the camp at Philippsburg, where some not very important fighting, notable only for being the last campaign of Eugene, was going on. It was not till the summer of 1734 that Cirey, a half-dismantled country house on the borders of Champagne and Lorraine, was fitted up with Voltaire's money and be- came the headquarters of himself, of his hostess, and now and then of her accommodating husband. Many pictures of the life here, some of them not a little malicious, survive. It was not entirely a bed of roses, for the "respectable Emily's" temper was violent, and after a time. she sought lovers who were not so muchi des cérébrauax as Voltaire. But it provided him with a safe and comfortable retreat and with something of the same kind of convenience for literary work which matrimony provides for more commonplace or more scrupulous men of letters. In March 1735 the ban was formally taken off him, and he was at liberty to return to Paris, a liberty of which he availed himself but sparingly now and ever afterwards, finding himself better away from the capital. At Cirey lhe wrote indefatigably and did not neglect business. The principal literary results of his early years here were the play of Alzire (1736) and a long treatise on the Newtonian system which he and Madame du Chatelet—an expert mathematician—wrote together. But as usual Voltaire's extraordinary literary industry was rather shown in a vast amount of fugitive writings than in substantive works, though for the whole space of his Cirey residence he was engaged in writing, adding to, and altering the Pucelle. In the very first days of his sojourn he had thus written a pamphlet with the imposing title of "Treatise on Metaphysics." Of metaphysics 'proper Voltaire neither now nor at any other time understood anything, and the subject, like every other, merely served him as a pretext for laughing at religion with the usual reservation of a tolerably affirmative deism. In March 1736 one of the least creditable events of his life, yet still not wholly discreditable, happened. An avowal of the English Letters was got out of him privately and then used publicly as an engine of extortion. In the same year he received his first letter from Frederick of Prussia, then crown prince only. He was soon again in trouble, this time for the poem of the Mondain, and he at once crossed the frontier and then niade for Brussels. He spent about three months in the Low Countries, and in March 1737 returned to Cirey, and continued writing, making experi- ments in physics (he had at this time a large

laboratory), and busying himself not a little with iron-founding, the chief industry of the district. The best known accounts of Cirey life, those of Madame de Grafigny, date from the winter of 1738-39 ; they are, as has been said, somewhat spiteful but very amusing, depicting the constant quarrels between Madame du Chiatelet and Voltaire, his intense suffering under criticism, his constant dread of the sur- reptitious publication of the Pucelle (which nevertheless he could not keep his hands from writing or his tongue from reciting to his visitors), and so forth. The chief and most galling of his critics at this time was the Abbé Desfontaines, and the chief of Desfontaines's attacks was entitled La Voltairomanie, in reply to a libel of Voltaire's called Le Préservatif. Both combatants had, according to the absurd habit of the time, to disown their works, Desfontaines's

disavowal being formal and procured by the exertion of all Voltaire's own influence both at home and abroad. For he had as little notion of tolerance towards others as of dignity in himself. In April 1739 a journey was made to Brussels, to Paris, and then again to Brussels, which was the headquarters for a considerable time owing to some law affairs of the Du Chatelets. Frederick, now king of Prussia, made not a few efforts to get Voltaire away from Madame du Chatelet, but unsuccessfully, and the king earned the lady's cordial hatred by persistently refusing or omitting to invite her. At last, in September 1740, master and pupil met for the first time at Cleves, an interview followed three months later by a longer visit at Remusberg. Brussels was again the headquarters in 1741, by which time Voltaire had finished the best and the second or third best of his plays, Mérope and Mahomet. Mahomet was played first in the year and at the place just. mentioned ; it did not appear in Paris till August next year, and JMdérope not till 1743. This last was and de- served to be the most successful of its author's whole theatre. It was in this same year that he received the singular diplomatic mission to Frederick which nobody seems to have taken seriously, and after his return the oscillation between Brussels, Cirey, and Paris was resumed, in a manner rather difficult to record in a short biography. During these years Voltaire's production of miscellanies was as constant as usual, but his time allotted to serious work was chiefly given to history and much of the Hssaz sur les Moeurs

and the Siecle de Lows XIV. was now com- posed. He also returned, not too well-advisedly, to the business of courtiership, which he had given up since the death of the regent. He was much employed, owing to Richeliew's influence, in the fétes of the dauphin's marriage, and was rewarded on New Year's day 1745 by the appoint- ment to the post of historiographer-royal, once jointly held by Racine and Boileau. The situation itself and its ac- companying privileges were what Voltaire chiefly aimed at, but there was a salary of two thousand livres attached, and he had the year before come in for three times as much by the death of his brother. In the same year he wrote a poem on Fontenoy, he received medals from the pope, and dedicated J/ahomet to him, and he wrote court divertissements and other things to admiration. But he was not a thoroughly skilful courtier, and one of the best known of Voltairiana is the contempt or at least silence with which Louis XV.—a sensualist but no fool—received the maladroit and almost insolent inquiry Trajan est- u content ? addressed in his hearing to Richelieu at the close of a piece in which the emperor had appeared with a transparent reference to the king. All this assentation had at least one effect. He who had been for years ad- mittedly the first writer in France had been repeatedly passed over in elections to the Academy. He was at last elected in the spring of 1746, and received on May 9. Then the tide began to turn. His favour at court had naturally exasperated his enemies ; it had not secured him any real friends, and even a gentlemanship of the chamber was no solid benefit, except from the money point of view. He did not indeed hold it very long, but was permitted to sell it for a large sum, retaining the rank and privileges. He had various proofs of the instability of his hold on the king during 1747 and in 1748. He once lay in hiding for two months at Sceaux, and afterwards for a time lived chiefly at Lunéville, where Madame du Chatelet had estab- lished herself at the court of King Stanislaus, where she carried on her flirtations with Saint Lambert, and where, in September 1749, she died, not in, but about four days after, childbirth. .

The death of Madame du Chatelet is another turning point in the history of Voltaire. He was now not a young

AIRE

man—indeed he was fifty-five—but he had nearly thirty years more to live, and he had learnt much during what may be called his Cirey cohabitation. On the one hand, he had discovered that it was undesirable that a man should not have a household ; on the other, he had dis- covered that it was still more undesirable that a man should put himself under illegitimate petticoat government. For some time, however, after Madame du Chatelet's death he was in a state of pitiable unsettlement. At first, after removing his goods from Cirey, he hired the greater part of the Chatelet town house and then the whole. He had some idea of settling down in Paris, and might perhaps have done so if mischief had not been the very breath of his nostrils. He could not bring himself to testify in any open and dangerous manner for what he thought to be the truth; he could not bring himself to refrain from attack- ing, by every artifice and covert enginery, what he thought to be falsehood. He went on writing tales like Zadig. He engaged in a foolish and undignified struggle with Crébillon pére (not jils), a dramatist who, in part of one play, Rhadamiste et Zénobie, has struck a note of tragedy in the grand Cornelian strain, which Voltaire could never hope to echo, and who, in most of his other efforts, was and is mainly futile. He used the most extraordinary efforts to make himself more popular than he was, but he could not help being uncomfortable in a city where the court all but threatened, and where the city did more than all but laugh.

All this time Frederick of Prussia had been continuing his invitations, and the "respectable Emily " was no longer in the way. It does not appear that, at any rate at first, Frederick made any real difficulty as to money. Indeed he behaved on the whole very generously. Voltaire left Paris on the 15th June 1751, and reached Berlin on the 10th July.

This Berlin visit might itself be treated, without undue extension, at the length of the present article; but its circumstances may be presumed to be already more or less familiar to most English readers from the two great essays of Macaulay and Carlyle as well as from the /rederick of the latter. It is desirable, if not altogether necessary, to say that these two masters of English were not perhaps the best qualified to relate the story. Both were unjust to Voltaire, and Macaulay was unjust to Frederick as well. It is quite certain that at first the king behaved altogether like a king to his

guest. He pressed him to remain; he gave him (the words are Voltaire's own) one of his orders, twenty thousand francs a year, and four thousand ad- ditional for his niece, Madame Denis, in case she would come and keep house for her uncle. But Voltaire's con- duct was from the first Voltairian. He sent a letter, in which Madame Denis pleaded with him to return, to Frederick—an odd way of ingratiating his niece with that monarch. He insisted on the consent of his own king, which was given without delay and on very liberal terms, —Louis XV., if gossip is to be trusted, pointing out with considerable shrewdness that it was not his fault if Voltaire would put himself constantly in hot water, and still less his fault that there were so few men of letters in Prussia that it suited the king of Prussia to ask them to dinner, and so many in France that it was quite impossible for the king of France to do so. Frenchmen, always touchy on such a point, regarded Voltaire as something of a deserter ; and he was not long before he bitterly repented his deser- tion, though his residence in Prussia actually lasted for nearly three years. It was quite impossible that Voltaire and Frederick should get on together for long. Voltaire was not humble enough to be a mere butt, as many of Frederick's led poets were ; he was not enough of a gentle- man to hold his own place with dignity and discretion ; he

was constantly jealous both of his equals in age and re- putation, such as Maupertuis, and of his juniors and in- feriors, such as Baculard D'Arnaud. He was greedy, restless, and in a way Bohemian. Frederick, though his love of teasing for teasing's sake has been exaggerated by Macaulay, was anything but amiable in disposition, was a martinet of the first water, had a sharp though one-sided idea of justice, and had not the slightest intention of allowing Voltaire to insult or to tyrannize over his other guests and servants. If he is to be blamed in this parti- cular matter, the blame must be chiefly confined to his imprudence in inviting Voltaire at the beginning and to the brutality of his conduct at the end. Within Voltaire there was always a mischievous and ill-behaved child; and he was never more mischievous, more ill-behaved, and more childish than in these years. But, knowing as we do what he was, there is much excuse for him. He tried to get D'Arnaud exiled and succeeded. He got into a quite unnecessary quarrel with Lessing, the most distinguished, or at least the most gifted, German author of the day. He had not been in the country six

months before he engaged in a discreditable, and in Prussia directly illegal, piece of financial gambling with Hirsch, the Dresden Jew. He had the extreme unwisdom and meanness to quarrel with this agent of his about money, and was at least accused of something like downright forgery—that is to say, of altering a paper signed by Hirsch after he had signed it. The king's very well justified disgust at this affair (which came to an open scandal before the tribunals) was so great that he was on the point of ordering Voltaire out of Prussia, and Darget the secretary had no small trouble in arranging the affair (February 1751). Then it was Voltaire's turn to be disgusted with an occupation he had undertaken himself—the occupation of '" buckwash- ing" the king's French verses. However, he succeeded in finishing and printing the Svécle de Lowis XIV., while the Dictionnaire Philosophique is said to have been devised and begun at Potsdam. Lut Voltaire's restless temper was brewing up for another storm. In the early autumn of 1751 La Mettrie, one of the king's parasites, and a man of much more talent than is generally allowed, horrified Voltaire by telling him that the king had in con- versation applied to him, Voltaire, a proverb about " suck- ing the orange and flinging away its skin ;" and about the same time the dispute with Maupertuis, which had more than anything else to do with his exclusion from Prussia, came to a head. No one qiite knows how it began, though it is probably enough to say that Maupertuis and Voltaire had been of old quasi-rivals in the favour of the "divine Emilie," that as president of the Berlin Academy Maupertuis was in a manner Voltaire's literary superior, that he was a man of rough and boorish manners, and that he is said at least to have refused his aid in the Hirsch affair. He also seems to have had something at least to do with a tedious and complicated squabble arising from the work of a certain La Beaumelle, a literary hack of the time, not without ability, who chose to visit Berlin and court Voltaire. The final rupture was provoked by Maupertuis himself, though indirectly, by a dispute into which he got with one Kénig. The king took his pre- sident's part; Voltaire (unluckily for him, but with suffi- cient adroitness to make no open breach) took K6nig's. But Maupertuis must needs write his Letters, and there- upon (1752) appeared one of Voltaire's most famous, though perhaps not one of his most read works, the Diatribe du Doctewr Akakia. Even Voltaire did not venture to publish this lampoon on a great official of a prince so touchy as the king of Prussia without some

permission, and if all tales are true he obtained this by another piece of some- thing like forgery—getting the king to endorse a totally

oO ©

AIRE “989

different pamphlet on its last leaf, and affixing that last leaf to Akakia. Of this Frederick was not aware; but he did get some wind of the Diatribe itself, sent for the author, heard it read to his own great amusement, and either actually burned the MS. or believed that it was burnt. In a few days printed copies appeared. Now Frederick did not like disobedience, but he still less liked being made a fool of, and he put Voltaire under arrest. But again the affair blew over, which is at least a proof that the king was not wanting in long-suffering. He believed that the edition of Akakia confiscated in Prussia was the only one. Alas! Voltaire, according to his usual fashion, had sent copies away; others had been printed abroad; and the thing was irrecoverable. Of course it could not be proved that he had ordered the printing, and all Frederick could do was to have the pamphlet burnt by the hangman. Things were now drawing to a crisis. One day Voltaire sent his orders, &c., back; the next Frederick returned them, but Voltaire had quite made up his mind to fly. A kind of reconciliation occurred in March, aud after some days of good-fellowship Voltaire at last obtained the long-sought leave of absence and left Potsdam on the 26th of the month (1753). It was nearly thrce months afterwards that the famous, ludicrous, and brutal arrest was made at Frankfort, on the persons of him- self and his niece, who had met him meanwhile. There was some faint excuse for Frederick’s wrath. In the first place, after a plea of business in Paris, of the necessity of the waters of Plombiéres, and so forth, it was a little in- congruous that the poet should linger at Leipsic. In the second place, in direct disregard of a promise given to Frederick, a supplement to Akakia appeared, more offen- sive than the main text, and was followed by a paper war of letters with Maupertuis. But the king cooked his spleen and bided his time. From Leipsic, after a month’s stay, Voltaire moved to Gotha, and seemed once more in no hurry to go on, his excuse being the compilation of Annals of the Empire, asked of him by the duchess of Saxe-Weimar. Once more, on May 25, he moved on to

Frankfort, and here the blow fell. Frankfort, nominally a free city, but with a Prussian resident who did very much what he pleased, was not like Gotha and Leipsic. An excuse was provided in the fact that the poet had a copy of some unpublished poems of Frederick's, and as soon as Voltaire arrived the thing was done, at first with courtesy enough. The resident, Freytag, was not a very wise person (though he probably did not, as Voltaire would have it, spell " podsie" " poéshie"); constant references to Frederick were necessary; and the affair was prolonged so that Madame Denis had time to join her uncle. At last Voltaire did the unwisest thing he could have done by trying to steal away. He was followed, arrested, his niece seized separately, and sent to join him in custody; and the two, with the secretary Collini, were kept close prisoners at an inn called the Goat. This situation lasted some time (a time, indeed, since the " ceuvre de poéshie " was at once recovered, rather unintelligible except on the score of Freytag's folly), and was at last put an end to by the city authorities, who probably felt that they were not playing a very creditable part. Voltaire left Frankfort on July (th, travelled safely to Mainz, and thence to Mannheim, Strasburg, and Colmar. The last-named place he reached (after a leisurely journey and many honours at the little courts just mentioned) at the beginning of October, and here he proposed to stay the winter, finish his Annals of the Empire, and look about him.

Voltaire's second stage was now over, and he was about to try what an Englishman would have tried long before —complete independence of hosts and patrons, mistresses and friends. Even now, however, in his sixtieth year, it

required some more external pressure to induce him to take this apparently obvious step. He had been, in the first blush of his Frankfort disaster, refused, or at least not granted, permission even to enter France proper,—a rebuff probably due in about equal parts to a wish not to displease or disoblige Frederick, and a wish to punish Voltaire himself for selecting Prussia as a home. At Colmar he was not safe, especially when in January 1754 a pirated edition of the Essai sur les Meurs, written long

before, appeared. Permission to establish himself in France was now absolutely refused ; and even Madame de Pompadour was powerless, if indeed she cared greatly to exert her power. Nor did an extremely offensive per- formance of Voltaire's—the solemn partaking of the eucharist at Colmar after due confession—at all mollify his enemies. His exclusion from France, however, was chiefly metaphorical, and really meant exclusion from Paris and its neighbourhood. In the summer he went to Plombiéres, and after returning to Colmar for some time journeyed in the beginning of winter to Lyons, and after a month there went, as it may almost be said, " home "— to a home which he had never yet visited, but which was, with slight changes of actual domicile, but with no change of neighbourhood, to shelter him for the rest of his life. His first resting-place, Geneva, was reached in the middle of December ; but Voltaire had no purpose of re- maining in the city, and almost immediately bought a country house just outside the gates, to which he gave the name of Les Délices. This, the first house of his own which he can be said to have possessed, is still standing, though now absorbed in the suburbs. It was pretty, with fine views ; but it had advantages of a non-zsthetic kind for its owner, of which he made no secret. He was here practically at the meeting-point of four distinct jurisdic- tions—Geneva, the canton Vaud, Sardinia, and France, while other cantons were within easy reach. Before finally settling in Ferney he bought other houses dotted about these territories, so as never to be without a refuge close at hand in case of sudden storms. At Les Délices he set up a considerable establishment, which his great wealth (obtained chiefly by speculation in the manner already more than once hinted at) made him able easily to afford. He kept open house for visitors; he had printers close at hand in Geneva ; he fitted up a private theatre in which he could enjoy what was perhaps the greatest pleasure of his whole life—acting in a play of his own, stage-managed by himself. His residence at Geneva brought him into correspondence (at first quite amicable) with the most famous of her citizens, J. J. Rousseau. His Orphelin de la Chine, performed at Paris in 1755, was very well received and the earthquake at Lisbon, which appalled other people,

gave Voltaire an excellent opportunity for ridiculing the |

beliefs of the orthodox, first in verse (1756) and later in the (from a literary point of view) unsurpassable tale of Candide (1759). All was, however, not yet quite smooth with him. Geneva hada law expressly forbidding theatrical performances in any circumstances whatever. Voltaire, as has been said, had infringed this law already as far as private performances went, and he had thought of building a regular theatre, not indeed at Geneva but at Lausanne. In July 1755 a very polite and,,as far as Voltaire was concerned, indirect resolution of the consistory declared that in consequence of these proceedings of the Sieur de Voltaire the pastors should notify their flocks to abstain and that the chief syndic should be informed of the con. sistory's perfect confidence that the edicts would be carried out. Voltaire obeyed this hint as far as Les Délices was concerned, and consoled himself by having the performances in his Lausanne house. But he never was the man to take opposition to his wishes either quietly or without retalia-

tion. He undoubtedly instigated D'Alembert to include a censure of the prohibition in his Lncyclopédie article on "Geneva," a proceeding which provoked fRousseau's celebrated Lettre & D' Alembert sur les Spectacles. As for himself, even still restless, he looked about for a place where he could combine the social liberty of France with the political liberty of Geneva, and he found one. At the end of 1758 he bought the considerable property of Ferney, on the shore of the lake, about four miles from Geneva, and on French soil. At Les Délices (which he sold in 1765) he had become a householder on no small scale ; at Ferney (which he increased by other purchases and leases) he became a complete country gentleman. He set about establishing himself handsomely in his new abode, and though he did not absolutely abandon his other houses he was henceforward known to all Europe as squire of Ferney, hardly less than as author of the Henriade and the Pucelle, of Charles XFI. and Akakia.

From this time forward many of the most celebrated men of Europe visited him there, and large parts of his usual biographies are composed of extracts from their accounts of Ferney. His new occupations by no means quenched his literary activity, but on the contrary stimu- lated it.

He did not make himself a slave to his visitors, but appeared only occasionally and reserved much time for work and for his immense correspondence, which had for a long time once more included Frederick, the two getting on very well when they were not in contact. Above all, he now, being comparatively secure in position, engaged much more strongly in public controversies, and, without wholly abandoning, resorted less to, his old labyrinthine tricks of disavowal, garbled publication, and private libel. The suppression of the Encyclopédie, to which he had been a considerable contributor, and whose conductors were his intimate friends, drew from him a shower of lampoons directed now at "Vinfame" (see infra) generally, now at literary victims, such as Le Franc de Pompignan (who had written one piece of verse so much better than anything serious of Voltaire's that he could not be forgiven), or Palissot (who had boldly gibbeted most of the phalosophes in his play of that name, but had not included Voltaire), now at Fréron, an excellent critic and a dangerous writer, who had attacked Voltaire from the conservative side, and at whom the patriarch of Ferney, as he now began to be called, levelled in return the very inferior farce-lampoon of L' Kcossaise, of the first night of which Fréron himself did an admirably humorous criticism.

How he built a church and got into trouble in so doing at Ferney, how he put " Deo erexit Voltaire" on it (1760- 61) and obtained a relic from the pope for his new build- ing, how he entertained a grand-niece of Corneille, and for her benefit wrote his well-known "commentary" on that poet, are matters of interest, but to be passed over briefly. Here, too, he began that series of interferences on behalf of the oppressed and the ill-treated which, whatever mixture of motives may have prompted it, is certainly an honour to his memory. Volumes and almost libraries have been written on the Calas affair, and it is impossible here to give any account of it or of the only less famous cases of Sirven (very similar to that of Calas, though no life was actually lost), Espinasse (who had been sentenced to the galleys for harbouring a Protestant minister), Lally (the son of the unjustly treated but not blameless Irish-French commander in India), D'Etalonde (the companion of La Barre), Montbailli, and others.

In 1768 he entered, it would seem out of pure wanton- ness, into an indecent controversy with the bishop of the diocese (who, like an honest man, was not particularly well satisfied with his occasional conformity); he had differences with the superior landlord of part of his estate,

VOLT

the president De Brosses ; and he engaged in a long and tedious return match with the republic of Geneva, in which the scoring was alternate and rather bewildering, Geneva playing at one time an insult to Voltaire's friend and patron Catherine of Russia, and Voltaire replying at another by setting up a rival colony of watchmakers at Ferney. The match went on the whole in favour of Voltaire, for during its course a theatre was authorized in the city, and he himself, a kind of exile from it, was applied to to mediate between different classes of the community. But the general events of this Ferney life are somewhat of that happy kind which are no events—the distractions and employments of a man who has nothing serious to occupy himself about.

In this way things went on for many years, and Voltaire, who had been an old man when he established himself at Ferney, became a very old one almost without noticing it. Louis XVI. excited even in his aged breast the hope of re- entering Paris, but he did not at once receive any en- couragement, despite the reforming ministry of Turgot. A much more solid gain to his happiness was the adop- tion, or practical adoption, in 1776 of Reine Philiberte de Varicourt, a young girl of noble but poor family, whom Voltaire rescued from the convent, installed in his house as an adopted daughter, and married to the Marquis de Villette. Her pet name was "Belle et Bonne," and nobody had more to do with the happiness of the last years of the "patriarch" than she had. It is doubtful whether his last and fatal visit to Paris was due to his own wish or to the instigation of his niece, Madame Denis ; but it is fair to say that this lady —a woman of disagreeable temper, especially to her inferiors—appears to have been rather hardly treated by Voltaire's earlier, and sometimes by his later, biographers. The suggestion which has been made that the success of Beaumarchais piqued him has nothing impossible init. At any rate he had, at the end of 1777 and the beginning of 1778, been carefully

finishing a new tragedy—Jréne—for production in the capital; he started on the 5th of February, and five days later arrived at the city which he had not seen for eight and twenty years.

Abundant as is the information respecting the whole, or almost the whole, of his life, it is nowhere more abundant than in respect to these last months. He was received with immense rejoicings, not indeed directly by the court, but by the Academy, by society, and by all the more im- portant foreign visitors. About a fortnight after his arrival age and fatigue made him seriously ill, and a con- fessor was sent for. But he recovered, scoffed at himself as usual, and prepared more eagerly than ever for the first performance of Iréne, on March 16. At the end of the month he was able to go out and attend a performance of it, which has often been described, and was a kind of apotheosis. He was crowned with laurel in his box, amid the plaudits of the audience, and did not for the moment Seem to be the worse for it, enjoying several other triumphs, during one of which he had, in full Academic séance, to embrace Franklin after the French manner. He even began or proceeded with another tragedy, —A gathocle, — and attended several Academic meetings. But such pro- ceedings in the case of a man of eighty-four were impossible. To keep himself up he exceeded even his usual excess in coffee, and about the middle of May he became very ill. For about a fortnight he was alternately better and worse ; but on May 30 the priests were once more sent for,—to wit, his nephew the Abbé Mignot, the Abbé Gaultier, who had officiated on the former occasion, and the parish priest, the curé of St Sulpice. He was, however, ina state of half Insensibility, and petnlantly motioned them away. The

legends set afloat about his dying in a state of terror and despair are certainly false; but it must be regarded as singular and unfortunate that he who had more than once gone out of his way to conform ostentatiously and with his tongue in his cheek should have neglected or missed this last opportunity. The result was a difficulty as to burial which was compromised by hurried interment at the abbey of Scelliéres in Champagne, anticipating the inter- dict of the bishop of the diocese by an

hour or two. On July 10, 1791, the body was transferred to the Pantheon, but it was not to rest there, and during the Hundred Days it was once more, it is said, disentombed, and stowed away in a piece of waste ground. His heart, taken from the body when it was embalmed, and given to Madame Denis and by her to Madame de Villette, was preserved ina silver case, and when it was proposed (in 1864) to restore it to the other remains the sarcophagus at Sainte Genevidve (the Pantheon) was opened and found to be empty.

In person Voltaire was not engaging, even as a young man. His extraordinary thinness is commemorated, among other things, by the very poor but well-known epigram at- tributed to Young, and identifying him at once with "Satan, Death, and Sin." In old age he was a mere skeleton, with a long nose and eyes of preternatural brilliancy peering out of his wig. He never seems to have been addicted to any manly sport, and took little exercise, He was sober enough (for his day and society) in eating and drinking generally ; but drank coffee, as his contem- porary, counterpart, and enemy, Jolnson, drank tea, in a hardened and inveterate manner. It may be presumed with some certainty that his attentions to women were for the most part platonic ; indeed, both on the good and the bad side of him, he was all brain. He appears to have had no great sense of natural beauty, in which point he resembled his generation (though one remarkable story is told of his being deeply affected by Alpine scenery); and, except in his passion for the stage, he does not seem to have cared much for any of the arts. Conversation and literature were, again as in Jolinson's case, the sole gods of his idolatry, As for his moral character, the wholly intellectual cast of mind just referred to makes it difficult to judge that. His beliefs or absence of beliefs emanci- pated him from conventional scruples ; and it must be ad- mitted that he is not a good subject for those who main- tain that a nice morality may exist independently of religion. He was good-natured when not crossed, generous to dependants who made themselves useful to him, and indefatigable in defending the cause of those who were oppressed by the systems with which he was at war. But he was inordinately vain, and totally unscrupulous in gaining money, in attacking an enemy, or in protecting himself when he was threatened with danger. In these three cases he stuck at no lie, found no weapons too foul to use, and regarded

no gain as too dirty to pouch. His peculiar fashion of attacking the popular beliefs of his time has also failed to secure the approval of some who have very little sympathy with those beliefs, of not a few even who go so far as to approve of ridicule and indeed of mere ribaldry being used to wean those who hold things sacred from their belief in them. The only excuse made for the alternate cringing and insult, the alternate abuse and lying, which marked his course in this matter, has been the very weak plea that a nian cannot fight with a system, —a plea which is sufficiently answered by the retort that a great many men have so fought and have won. But this comes so closely to the discussion of Voltaire's works aud intellectual character that it may be dismissed for the present with only one more remark, by no means new, but it would seem constantly requiring repetition. Voltaire's works, and especially his private letters, constantly contain

the word " Vinfame " and the expression in full or abbrevi- ated "'écrasez l'infame." This has been misunderstood in many ways,—the mistake going so far as in some cases to suppose that Voltaire meant Christ by this opprobrious expression. No careful and competent student of his works, whatever that student's sympathies, has ever failed to correct this gross misapprehension. ' L'infame" is not God ; it isnot Christ; itis not Christianity; it is not even Catholicism. Its briefest equivalent may be given as "' persecuting and privileged orthodoxy" in general, and, more particularly, it is the particular system which Voltaire saw around him, of which he had felt the effects in his own exiles and the confiscations of his books, and of which le saw the still worse effects in the hideous sufferings of Calas and La Barre, and in the less hideous but still severe miseries of persons perfectly guiltless, even accord- ing to their tormentors, such as the families of Calas and Sirven.

Vast and various as the work of Voltaire is, no article such as the present could be even approximately complete without some attempt to give an outline of its general contents and character- istics, for its vastness and variety are of the essence of its writer's peculiar quality. The divisions of it have long been recognized, and may be treated in order.

The first of these divisions in order, not the least in bulk, and, though not the first in merit, inferior to none in the amount of congenial labour spent on it, is the theatre of Voltaire. Between fifty and sixty different pieces (including a few which exist only in fragments or sketches) are included in his writings, and they cover the entire stretch of his literary life. It is at first sight remarkablo that Voltaire, whose comic power was undoubtedly far in excess of his tragic, should have written many tragedies of no small excel- lenec in their way but only one fair second-class comedy, Nanine. His other efforts in this latter direction are quite inferior, being cither slight and almost insignificant in scope, or, as in the case of the somewhat famous Heossaise, deriving all their interest from being personal libels. His tragedies, on the other hand, though they can never fully satisfy those who have bcen accustomed to the stronger meat of romantic drama, are works of extraordinary merit in their own way. Although Voltaire had neither the perfect versification of Racine nor the noble poetry of Corneille, he sur- passed the latter certainly, and the former in the opinion of some not incompetent judges, in playing the difficult and artificial game of the French tragedy. Zaire, among those where love is admitted as a principal motive, and Mérope, among those where this motive is excluded and kept in subordination, yield to no plays of their class in such sustaining of interest as is possible on the model, in adaptation of that model to stage effect, and in uniform, if never very transporting or extraordinary, literary merit. Voltaire was an enthusiastic lover of the stage; he was intimately acquainted with its laws; he knew that the public opinion of his time reserved its highest prizes for a capable and successful dramatist ; and he was determined to win those prizes. He therefore set all his wonderful cleverness to the task, going so far as to adopt a little even of that romantic disobedicnce to the strict classical theory which he condemned, and no doubt sincerely, in Shakespeare. The a is that his work in its kind is unlikely ever to be sur- passed,

It is very different with his poems proper, of which there arc two long ones, the enriade and the Pucelle, besides smaller pieces of which it is enough to say that a bare catalogue of them fills fourteen royal octavo columns. The valuc of these is very unequal. The Henriade has by universal consent been relegated to the posi- tion of a school reading book, and perhaps does not hold even that very securely. Constructed and

written in almost slavish imitation of Virgil, employing for medium a very unsuitable vehicle—the alexandrine couplet (as reformed and rendered monotonous for dramatic purposes)—and animated neither by enthusiasm for the subject nor by real understanding thereof, it could not but be an unsatisfactory performance to posterity. The Pucclle, if morally inferior, is from a literary point of view of fay more value. It is desultory to a degree ; it is a base libel on religion and history ; it differs from its model Ariosto in being, not, as Ariosto is. a inixture ofromance and burlesque, butasometinics tedious tissue of burlesque pure and simple; and it is exposed to the objection—often and justly urged—that much of its fun depends simply on the fact that there were and are many pcople who believe enough in Christianity to make its jokes give pain to them, and to make their disgust at such jokes piquant to others. Nevertheless, with all the Pucelle's faults, it is amusing—less so indeed than its author's prose tales but still amusing. The minor poems are as much above the Pucelle as the Pucelle is above the Henriade. 1tis true that therc is nothing,

AIRE

or hardly anything, that properly deserves the name of poetry in them—no passion, no sense of the beauty of nature, only a narrow 'criticism of life," only a conventional and restricted choice of langnage, a cramped and monotonous prosody, and none of that indefinite suggestion which has been rightly said to be of the poctic essence. But there is immense wit, a wonderful command of such mitre and language as the taste of the time allowed to the poet, occasionally a singular if somewhat artificial grace, and a curious felicity of diction and manner on occasions proper to the poet's genius.

~The third division of Voltaire's works in a rational order (though it is usually placed later in the editions) consists of his prose romances or tales. These productions—incomparably the most remarkable and most absolutely good fruit of his genius—were usually, if not always, composed as pamphlets, with a purpose of polemic in religion, politics, or what not. Thus Candide attacks religious and philosophical optimism, L'Homme aux Quarante Eeus certain social and political ways of the time, Zadig

and others the received forms of moral and metaphysical orthodoxy, while some aro ere lampoons on the Bible, the unfailing source of Voltaire's wit. But (as always happens in the case of literary work where the form exactly suits the author's genius) the purpose in all the best of them disappears almost entirely. It is in these works inore than in any others that the peculiar quality of Voltaire—ironie style without exaggeration—appears. That he learned it partly from St Evremond, still more from Anthony Hamilton, partly even from his own enemy Le Sage, is perfectly true, but he gave it perfection and completion. There is no room to analyse it ioe but, if one especial peculiarity can be singled out, it is the extreme restraint and simplicity of the verbal treatment. Voltaire never dwells too long on his point, stays to laugh at what he has said, elucidates or comments on his own jokes, guffaws over them, or exagzerates their form. The famous "pour encourager les antres" (that the shooting of Byng did " encourage tho others" very much is not to the point) is a typical example, and indeed the whole of Candide shows the style at its perfection.

The fourth division of Voltaire's work, as we shall rank it here, his historical work, is the bulkiest of all except his correspond- ence, and some parts of it are or have been among the most read, but it is far from being the best, or even among the best. The universally known small treatises on Charles XII. and Peter the Great are indeed models of clear narrative and ingenious if some- what superficial grasp and arrangement in little of considerable subjects. The so-called Siéele de Louis XIV. and Stécle de Louis XV. (the latter inferior to the former but still valuable) contain a great miscellany of interesting matter, treated by a man of great acuteness and unsurpassed power of writing, who had also had access to much important private information. But even in these books defects are present, which appear much more strongly in the singular olla podrida entitled Essai sur les Meurs, in the Annales de ' Empire, and in the minor historical works of which thcre are many. These defects are an almost total absence of any coinpre- hension of what has since been ealled the philosophy of history, the constant presence of gross prejudice, frequent inaccuracy of detail, and, above all, a complete incapacity to look at anything except from the narrow standpoint of a half pessimist and half self- satisied philosophe of the 18th century. Attempts have been made to

argue that Voltaire's admitted want of catholicity and apprecia- tion was merely the fault of his time; but, while this would be an insufficient plea if granted, it is not the fact. Montesqnieu, to name no other of his contemporaries, had if not a perfect yet a distinct scnse of the necessity of dealing with other times and other manners so as to take to some extent the point of view of the actors; Voltaire had none. And, though he was very far from being an idle man, he cannot be said to have been extraordinarily anxious to secure accuracy of fact.

His work in physies concerns us less than any other here; it is, however, not inconsiderable in bulk, and is said by experts to give proof of aptitude.

To his own age Voltaire was pre-eminently a poet and a philosopher; the unkindness of succeeding ages has somctimes questioned whether he had any title to either name and especially to the latter. His largest philosophical work, at least so-called, is the curious medley entitled Dictionnaire Philosophique, which is compounded of the articles contributed by him to the great Eneyclopédie and of several minor pieces. No one of Voltaire's works shows his anti-religious or at least anti-ecelesiastical animus more strongly. The various title-words of the several articles are ofteu the merest stalking horses, under cover of which to shoot at the Bible or the church, the target being now and then shifted to

_the political institutions of the writer's country, his personal foes,

&c., and the whole being largely seasoned with that acute, rather superficial, common-sense, but also commonplace, ethical and social criticism which the 18th century called philosophy. The book ranks perhaps second only to the novels as showing the character, literary and personal, of Voltaire; and despite its form it is nearly as readable. The minor philosophical works are of no very different

character. In the brief Traité de Metaphysique the author makes his grand effort, but scarcely succeeds in doing more than show that he had no real conception of what metaplysic is. His Philo- sophe Ignorant is a clever skit on the contradictions of philosophers, his Lettres de Memmius

a fair instance of his habit of taking oblique shots at one thing under cover of another and while apparently aiming at a third. And all the minor works commonly called philosophical, though they are voluminous enough, come to little more than the same result.

In general criticism and miscellancous writing Voltaire is not inferior to himself in any of his other functions. Almost all his more substantive works, whether in verse or prose, are preceded by prefaces of one sort or another, which are models of his own light pungent cawserie; and in a vast variety of nondescript pamphlets and writings he shows himself a perfect journalist. In literary criticism pure aud simple his principal work is the Commentaire sur Corneitle, though he wrote a good deal more of the same kind— sometimes (as in his Life and notices of Molitre) independently, sometimes as part of his Stécles. Nowhere, perhaps, except when he is dealing with religion are Voltaire's defects felt more than here. His great acquaintance with stage matters often enabled him to make valuable technical criticism in that department, and his unrivalled acuteness of course served him in literary as in other matters. But he was quite unacquainted with the history of his own language and literature, and more here than anywhere else he showed the extraordinarily limited and conventional spirit which accompanied the revolt of the French 18th century against limits and conventions in theological, ethical, and political inatters.

There remains only the huge division of Voltaire's correspondence, which fills some three thousand pages, double-columned, large, and closely printed, in the compactest editions, which is constantly being augmented by fresh discoveries, and which, according to M. Georges Bengesco, the best living authority, has never been fully or correctly printed, even in some of the parts longest known. In this great mass Voltaire's personality is of course best shown, and perhaps his literary qualities not worst. His immense energy and versatility, his adroit and unhesitating flattery when he chose to flatter, his ruthless sarcasm when he chose to be sarcastic, his rather unscrupulous business faculty, his more than rather un-serupulous resolve to double and twist in any fashion so as to escape his enemies,—all] these things appear throughout the whole mass of letters.

After giving an account of Voltaire's personal character, and a sketch of tho characteristics of tho different sections of his work, his intellectual and literary position in history can be briefly summed up, though the summary is not one to be lightly under- taken. Most judgments of him have been unduly coloured by sympathy with or dislike of what may be briefly called his polemical side. When sympathy and dislike are both carefully discarded or allowed for, he remains certainly one of the most astonishing, if not exactly one of the most admirable, figures of letters. That he never, as Carlyle complains, gave utterance to one great thought is strictly true. That his characteristic is for the most part an almost superhuman cleverness rather than posi- tive genius is also true. But that he was merely a mocker, which Carlyle and others have also said, is not strictly true or fair. In politics proper he seems indeed to have had few or no constructive ideas, and to have been entirely ignorant or quite reckless of the fact that his attacks were destroying a state of things for which as a whole he neither had nor apparently wished to have any substi- tute. In religion he protested stoutly, and no doubt sincerely, that his own attitude was not purely negative ; but here also he seems to have failed altogether to distinguish between pruning and cutting down. Both here and elsewhere his great fault was an inveterate superficiality. But this superficiality was acconipanied by such wonderful acuteness within a certain range, by such an absolutely unsurpassed literary aptitude and sense of style in all the lighter and some of the graver modes of literature, by such untiring energy and versatility in enterprise, that he has no parallel among ready writers anywhere, Not the most elaborate work of Voltaire is of much value for matter; but not the very slightest Work of Voltaire is devoid of value as form. In literary craftsman- ship, at once versatile and accomplished, he has no superior and scarcely a rival.

The bibliography of Voltaire is a very large subject, and it has for years been the special occupation of a Roumanian diplomatist of much erudition and judg- ment, M. Georges Bengeseo, the first volume of whose work was published at Paris in 1882. The latest, and on the whole the best, edition of the works is that completed not long ago by M. Louis Moland in 52 voluines (Paris, Garnier); the handiest and most compact is that issued in 13 volumes royal octavo some fifty years ago by Furne, and kept in print by the house of Didot. Of the earlier editions, though their

bulk is an objection, several are interesting and valuable. Especially may be noticed the so-ealled edition of Kell, in which Voltaire himself, ind later Beaumarchais, were concerned (70 vols., 1785-89); those of Dalibon and Baudouin, each in 97 vols. (from which "the hundred volumes of Voltaire" have become a not infrequent figure of speech); and the excellent edition of Beuchot (1829) in 72 volumes, Editions of separate or selected works are innumerable,

and so are books upon Voltaire, There is no really good detailed life of him, with complete examination of his work, in any language as yet, though the works

Containing materials for such are numerous, and (especially in the case of M. Desnoiresterres) sometimes excellent. In English the essays of Carlyle and Mr John Morley are both in their way inyaluable, and to a great extent correct one another. The principal detailed life in our language is that of an American writer, Mr James Parton, which gives the facts with very considerable detail and fair accuracy, but with no power of criticism. Fresh correspondence of Voltaire is constantly being discovered, sometimes showing that his published works have been considerably garbled, so that an edition definitive from such manuscripts as exist, and containing all the variants of his own constantly altered issues, is likely to be a inatter long delayed. (G. SA.)

VOLTERRA, a town of Italy, in the province of Pisa, 51 miles by rail east-south-east from Leghorn, and 35 by road west-north-west from Siena, stands on a commanding olive-clad eminence about 1600 feet above sea-level, and is surrounded by the massive remains of its ancient walls, some 44 miles in circuit. The most important relic of its Etrurian period is the Porta dell' Arco, an archway of dark grey stone, about 20 feet in height, the corbels of which are adorned with almost obliterated heads, probably representing the guardian deities of the city. Volterra possesses several public buildings of interest, dating from the period of its republican independence in the 13th century. The Palazzo dei Priori, or Palazzo Pubblico (1208-57), is a handsome building, unfortunately some- what modernized in its windows and mouldings ; it con- tains a very valuable

collection of Etruscan antiquities, especially cinerary urns. The cathedral, consecrated in 1120, but enlarged and adorned by Niccolo Pisano in 1254, has a fine pulpit of that period, and on the high altar are sculptures by Mino da Fiesole; in the transept is a remark- ably fine Annunciation by Luca Signorelli. The baptistery also, supposed to date in part from the 7th century, largely belongs to the 13th; the font is by Andrea di Sansovino, and the ciborium by Mino da Fiesole. The citadel, now a house of correction, consists of two portions, the Rocca Vecchia, built in 1343 by Walter de Brienne, duke of Athens, and the Rocca Nuova, built by the Florentines (1472). The inhabitants are chiefly employed in the manufacture of vases and other ornaments from alabaster, of good quality, found in the vicinity of Volterra and near Leghorn. The population in 1881 was 5347 (commune

14,063).

Volaterre (Etrurian Velathri) appears to have been one of the twelve confederate cities of Etruria (see Ernunta, vol. xili. p. 686). It received a military colony under the triumvirate, but is included by Pliny among the municipal towns of Etruria. It was destroyed in the 10th century, and rebuilt under the Othos. In the 12th and 18th centuries it enjoyed free institutions; in the 14th it fell under the power of Florence. Persius the satirist and Daniele da Volterra (see RiccIARELLI) were both natives of the town.

VOLUNTEERS. Although it would be difficult to assign a period when the principle of volunteer organiza- tion for national defence was first adopted in England, it is certain that societies to promote this object existed in various parts of the country in the reign of Henry VIII, who in fact granted a charter in 1537 to the " Fraternity or Guylde of Saint George: Maisters and Rulars of the said Science of Artillary as aforesaid rehearsed for long- bowes Cros-bowes and Hand-Gonnes." This ancient vol- unteer corps is now the Honourable Artillery Company of London, whose muster-rolls have borne the names of many distinguished personages, including John Milton. Al- though the Honourable Artillery Company has always been a distinct volunteer association, it was at one time (notably during the wars of the Commonwealth) a centre of instruc-

tion for the City trained bands, whose officers indeed were required by statute to be members also of tle company. It is an interesting fact in connexion with tliis company that there exists at Boston, U.S., a volunteer corps bear- ing the name of the "Antient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts." This legacy of the pilgrim- fathers was formed in 1638 after its London prototype, and its Puritan origin is still recognized in the ' election sermon" whicli celebrates the anniversary of its formation.

It was not, however, until 1779 that volunteer organiza-

tion became an integral part in national defence. In that

year, Ireland being threatened with invasion by France | é 'hension has to be first communicated to parliament, or if

and Spain, a levy of 40,000 Protestants was made by the gentry in the north. The energy and patriotism thus promptly manifested no doubt averted the impending danger, but not without unexpected results, for the volun- teers then enrolled availed themselves of the opportunity to assert claims on their own account for the extension of civil liberty. The close of the 18th and the early part of the present century saw in Great Britain itself a more com- plete development of the national instinct for self-defence, when the aggressive wars of France, following upon the Revolution of 1789, threatened the safety of the United Kingdom. Between 1794 and 1804 successive Acts of Parliament were passed providing for the administration and discipline of the volunteer force, which, in 1805, when invasion by the first Napoleon was imminent, amounted to 429,165 men (70,000 of whom were Irish). When peace, however, was restored, this force was disbanded, with the exception of the yeomanry or volunteer cavalry, which continues to this day.

After an interval of nearly half a century the warlike attitude of France, under Napoleon III., caused the British once more to arm for the protection of their country. This long interval, however, had been used differently by the respective nations. England, from a questionable

economy, had allowed both army and navy to decline in strength and efficiency; France on the other hand, by the energetic development of her military and naval power, and the early application of steam to ships of war, brought the pos- sibilities of the invasion of England in 1846 within measur- able distance, while a feeling of hostility was fostered and inflamed by her political writers. England at this time was awakened to the gravity of the situation by the publi- cation of a well-known letter from the duke of Wellington, then commander-in-chief, to Sir John Burgoyne, followed by a well-timed pamphlet by General Sir Charles Napier, entitled The Defence of England by Volunteer Corps and Militia. This characteristic sketch of the true principles of defence for a free people became seven years later the basis of the volunteer organization.

In 1857 the French press became more and more menacing. The United States had dismissed the resident British minister, and in consequence reinforcements had to be sent to Canada and New Brunswick. The war going on in China required an army and employed a fleet. The Indian Mutiny taxed the resources of England to the uttermost, while at home (save the actual garrisons) an unsatisfactory reserve of barely 36,000 militia was all that could be counted on. This threatening condition of affairs tended to aggravate, if not to produce, a serious commercial panic. It was then that the volunteer movement began, and by a popular impulse.

A circular letter, dated 12th May 1859, from the secretary for war to the lord-lieutenants of counties in Great Britain, authorized the formation of volunteer corps. The statute under which the general enrolment took place was the same that had governed the organization of the volunteer force in the beginning of the century.? The main provisions of that Act, however, were found inapplicable to the altered conditions under which invasion was now possible (through the application of steam); they failed also to meet the new system entertained of main- taining the volunteer force on a permanent footing in peace. A new Act was therefore passed, the most important provision of which® was that apprehended invasion should constitute a sufficient reason for the sovereign to call out the volunteers for service, in lieu of the old condition

: Life and Letters of Field-Marshal Sir John Burgoyne. 2 44 Geo, III. cap. 54. 3 Volunteer Act, 1863, s. 17.

VOLUNTEERS

which required the actual appearance of the enemy upon the coast. To carry this provision into effect, the appre-

parliament is not sitting declared by the queen in council and notified by proclamation. The volunteers are there- upon bound to serve in Great Britain until released by a proclamation declaring the occasion to have passed. When so called out, they receive pay on the army scale.

The force thus brought into existence is composed of corps of light horse, artillery, engineers, mounted rifles, and rifle volunteers. There exist also in connexion with the Admiralty special volunteer corps for the defence of the coast-line, called '" Royal Naval Artillery Volunteers." The term "corps" possesses no tactical signification. Any body of persons, great or small, whose offer of service the queen has accepted constitutes a "corps." The property belonging to the corps is vested in the command- ing officer, and is administered by a committee of officers under the rules of the corps. These rules are in the first instance agreed on at a general meeting of officers and men, and, having received the queen's approval, become legal, and may be enforced by a magistrate's order. The commanding officer has power to dismiss a man from the corps, and a volunteer not on actual service may ter- minate his engagement on giving fourteen days' notice.

Volunteers, when assembled under arms, whether for actual service or for exercise, are under the command of the commander-in-chief or of general or other field- officers of the regular army appointed to command them, who must be senior in rank to every officer of the volun- teers present. But it isa fundamental law that volunteers are to be led by their own officers. For the purposes of training, a permanent staff of adjutants and sergeant-in- structors is provided from the regular army.

The formation of corps constituted as described was so rapid that in the course of a few months in 1859-60 a force of 119,000 volunteers was

created. For adminis- trative purposes, and for instruction, small corps were erouped in their several counties into 'administrative battalions." This provisional arrangement has since been abolished (a questionable measure), and the small " corps," deprived of much of the status necessary as nuclei of battalions in time of war, are converted into constituent parts or companies of what had been their administrative battalions. These latter are now not only constituted "corps" in the meaning of the Act, but are called ' con- solidated corps," though their constituent parts are widely scattered. Though this arrangement is convenient during peace, confusion would probably result under pressure of apprehended invasion.

On the 7th March 1860 the queen held a levee in London, at which 2500 officers of volunteers were pre- sented. On the 23d June a royal review was held in Hyde Park, when 21,900 volunteers marched past; and at Edinburgh on the 7th August another royal review took place, at which 22,000 volunteers from the northern corps were under arms.

Public confidence was thus restored, but yet more remained to be done. An end had to be put to the ever- recurring panics that paralysed from time to time the commercial system of the country. The Government, which in the beginning had tolerated rather than en- couraged the movement, now followed the lead of public opinion, and decided on maintaining the volunteer force as a part of the regular defensive system of the country. The personnel of the volunteer corps (with a few essential exceptions) thereupon underwent a change. The wealthy and professional classes, who had at first joined the ranks in anticipation of war, cared no longer to bear arms.

| Their places were taken by the artisan class, which added

materially to the number and permanence of the force. But, as contributions and subscriptions now flagged, it becanie evident that public grants would have to be voted for its maintenance. A Royal Commission was therefore appointed in 1862 to inquire into the requirements of the volunteers, as well as to determine the conditions on

which the public grant should be given, and a scale of ordinary and special capitation allowances, subject to regu- lation, was fixed on that commission's recommendation.

It was not to be expected that this so-called mushroom army should escape a certain amount of professional ridi- cule, which the inefficiency of the old volunteers associated with the name. Nor was this tendency unmixed with apprehension in certain quarters that the public grants voted for the force might in some way affect the interests of the regular army. But a generous appreciation and sympathy took the place of adverse criticism, as the earnestness of the volunteers and their devoted loyalty became apparent. Nor were they unsuccessful in their own efforts to keep pace with modern military training, and even to introduce improvements. Lord Elcho, a prominent leader of the volunteer movement, revived in the National Rifle Association the ancient English pastime of practising at the butts. The queen herself fired the first shot (a bull's-eye) at Wimbledon in 1860, and thus inaugurated those great national meetings where many thousands compete annually for prizes, the aggregate value of which has now reached £14,680, with 126,463 entries.

Colonel Harcourt followed Lord Elcho in establishing the National Artillery Association, whose meetings are held annually at the School of Gunnery at Shoeburyness. The volunteers in this arm of the force are more than 40,000 strong, and belong chiefly to the mechanic class. Their aptitude to learn the use of the great modern ordnance which their presence at the School of Gunnery encourages, and their steady discipline when in garrison, have impressed the officers of the Royal Artillery with their value as a reserve for manning the coast defences, as well as for the equipment of field batteries. Special provision has now been made for the latter, on the condition that the batteries are fully horsed by the volunteers, and that three com- plete detachments of men per gun are maintained in training.

The regular attendance of detachments of colonial vol- unteers at these great annual national competitions has exercised for some years past a silent and beneficial influence, by fostering the military sympathy of the

colonies with the mother country as regards the interests of imperial defence. This feeling found practical expres- sion in the expedition to the Soudan in 1885.

A novel and peculiarly national arm was also introduced in 1860 by Colonel Bower, then master of the Hambledon hounds at Droxford, who trained members of the hunt as @ corps of mounted riflemen to occupy ground from point to point across country.

When the number of hunting men in Great Britain is considered, all of whom would be ready to turn out, thus equipped, to harrass the flank of an invader, beyond reach even of his cavalry, some estimate may be formed of the value of this contribution to the plan of defence.

The late Lord Ranelagh, another leader of mark among volunteers, initiated the great Easter volunteer field-days at Brighton and elsewhere. His views, at first opposed, are now officially acted on, and the annual Easter assem- blies have developed into manoeuvres, interesting as well as instructive to all engaged. The Easter holidays afford also opportunity to artillery volunteers to go into garrison in forts, as at Sheerness and other coast works, where means of practising are available. Facilities in camp instruction are also extended to volunteers in summer, an arrangement

which enables the small scattered corps to unite for drill. As many as 100,000 volunteers were in camp in 1887.

Perhaps the most important organization of all, alike for the service of the army and the auxiliary forces, is that known as the "Engineer and Railway Transport Corps," formed by the patriotic exertions of the late Charles Manby, civil engineer, and a lieutenant-colonel in the corps. The term "corps" presents in this case a council of officers composed of the following elements :—(1) eminent civil engineers ; (2) the general managers of the main lines of railway ; (3) the chief employers of labour. These officers have the rank of lieutenant-colonel. There are also other officers of the same classes, subordinate to the above, and not belonging

to the council. The functions of the corps include (a) the arrangement and the carrying into effect of any sudden and general concentration of troops to Oppose invasion, and (0) the rapid execution of works upon the railways and lines of defence by the means at the disposal of the great contractors directed by the civil engineers. The ready labour power of this useful corps is estimated at from 12,000 to 20,000 navvies, with tools, barrows, and commissariat complete. It has already performed important service in tabulating, and printing at great private cost, complete time-tables and special reports for six general concentrations against possible invasion. A special return was also prepared by the corps (the first of its kind) of the entire rolling stock of all the railways in Great Britain. This important work—which is corrected and republished annually—shows where the requisite numbers of carriages of every description can be obtained for the composition of troop trains.

The opinion of military judges has been that the main weakness of the whole volunteer system rests with the officers. But this judgment has undoubtedly been modified of late years by the eagerness displayed by the officers of all ranks to become capable leaders of their men. While advantage is taken of the facilities provided by the Government—such as schools of instruction, temporary attachment to regular and militia regiments, and half- yearly examinations in tactics—officers of volunteers are making progress among themselves by initiating societies in various parts of the country for the study and discussion of military subjects, war games, dc. Individually, some officers have already taken a prominent position as students in the art of war. One of these, Colonel Macdonaid, C.B., commanding the Edinburgh Rifle Volunteers, has originated important improvements in the system of infantry drill, and his modifications have been approved in principle by the adjutant-general. An ambulance service has been organized, and a scheme for battalion transport brought out.

The foregoing organization has not exhausted the re- sources of volunteer national defence. Science and com- mercial wealth combined are now creating an outer line,— the former for the defence of the Humber, Tees, Tyne, Mersey, &c., by means of volunteer marine mining corps, and the latter by the institution of the Naval Volunteer Defence

Association, having for its object the protection of merchant ships, by fitting out in British ports a number of merchant vessels to scrve in time of war as a cordon around the coasts of the kingdom, within which the ship- ping may pass in security.

There is yet another weak point, of equal importance, in the personal equipment of the volunteers, which, as a rule, is deficient for field service. But now that the jurisdiction has been transferred from the lord- lieutenants of counties to the crown, the whole subject of equipment for the field is entrusted to direct and responsible military authority.

The still graver question arises as to the issue of war- like stores in general in the time of national danger. Notwithstanding that such stores are already partially in

296

possession of the services, the issue to the levée en masse (or augmentation of the volunteer forcc) alone will be a matter of extreme difficulty for one arsenal to manage. This difficulty will be best understood by the following statement. The volunteer force in Great Britain at the beginning of the century numbered 359,165. Since then, however, the population has nearly doubled. Therefore, supposing all other conditions to be equal, the number that would now come forward to defend the country would be about 700,000, or 481,800 more than the present peace footing of the volunteer force. One arsenal is not sufficient to sustain the strain that would then be put upon it. Strategically considered also, the situation of that at Woolwich is not such as to justify the accumulation there of all the warlike material the nation would have to depend on. A central arsenal, if not a northern one as well, appears to be a national necessity.

The existence of the volunteer force averts conscription for the country's defence, and it forms, as the first Lord Brougham characterized it, a "national insurance." The cost to the country is trifling compared with the magni- tude of the issues, being in 1885 £767,400 for 218,000 'efficient " volunteers entitled to the public grant, that is £3, 8s. 6d. per volunteer, or barely 6d. per head of the population to be defended. The

value of the volunteer force is not, however, to be estimated by the numbers actually enrolled. It is in fact, in its present form, a great training school of citizen soldiers, through which thousands pass annually into a reserve ready to join in case of need. And every year of its valuable service con- firms the wisdom of Sir Charles Napicr's last words of advice to his countrymen, viz., ' Militia and volunteers are the proper forces to prepare for danger in time of

eace." (M. MM.)

VOLUSENUS, FLoreEntivs (that is, FLoRENcE WILSON or WoLsEy, though in an English letter he writes himself VOLUZENE), a Scottish humanist of the first half of the 16th century, whose elegant Latinity, but still more the thoughtful beauty of his Christian philosophy, claims for him a high place among the scholars of his age. That he was born near Elgin, and studied philosophy at Aberdcen, as is stated in the notice of his life published in 1619 by Thomas Wilson in Adamsoni Poemata Sacra, may be only an inference (though probably a just one) from a passage in the dialogue De Tranquillitate Animi, more than half of which consists of a description of the abode of tran- quillity, based on a dream that, as we arc told, came to the author, when he had been a student of philosophy for four years, after a conversation on the pleasant banks of the Lossie with John Ogilvy, afterwards rector of Cruden. Proceeding to Paris, he became tutor to a nephew (or really a bastard son) of Cardinal Wolsey, and this connexion led to repeated visits to England, where he was well seen by the king, and formed, with men like John Fisher, Stephen Gardiner, and Thomas Cromwell, connexions that were not dissolved by Wolsey's fall, for he was in England as late as 1534. In Paris he knew George Buchanan, who afterwards wrote a graceful epitaph on his friend's death and found patrons in the cardinals Jean de Lorraine (to whom he dedicated in 1531 a Latin exposition of Psalm xv.) and Jean du Bellay. With the latter he started in 1534 for Italy, but, being detained by sore sickness at Avignon, found a new patron in the bishop of the diocese the learned and pious Sadolet, who procured for him the mastership of the school at Carpentras, with a salary of seventy crowns. Volusenus felt himself a little out of place in a grammar school, all his tastes leaning to philo- sophy, and it would seem that from Carpentras he made repeated

visits to Lyons (where Gesner saw him, still a young man, in 1540), probably also to Italy, where he

made many friends, perhaps even to Spain, for Alciat tells us that he had acquired French, Italian, and Spanish "par frequentation des nations."

The authorities for the life of Wilson are well brought together by Irving in the Lives of Scottish Writers (1839) ; with the exeep- tion of two letters in the Bannatyne Miscellany, vol. i., the most important of them had already been eollected in Wishart's edition of the De Tranquitlitate (8vo, Edin., 1751). Irving, however, overlooked Wilson's earliest works, #7. Vol. ad tllustr. Dom, Card. Lotharingorum Ps. xv. Enarratio (4to, Paris, 1531) and £7. Vol. Brit- anni tn Psalmumn nobis 50 Hebrexis vero lad… Stephanum Winto- niensem Episcopum Enar. (4to, Paris, 15382). These show that lis linguistic studies embraced Hebrew as well Greek and Latin. Wilson's reputation, however, rests on the beautiful dialogue already eited, and first printed by Gryphius at Lyons in 1548. From in- ternal evidenee it appears to have becn composed about that time, but the subject had exercised the writer for many years. The dialogue shows us Christian humanism at its best, not yet breaking with the church and somewhat afraid of authority, but open to new light, tolerant and yet believing. Volusenus is a great admirer of Erasmus, but censures in hima lack of purity in his Latin and a certain want of philosophy. Latinity and philosophieal training are his own distinguishing points, but his philosophy is Christian and Biblieal rather than elassical or seholastic. To analyse his argument would here be out of place; the title of the dialogue itself shows that he takes a freak and independent view of the chief good of Christian ethics, and it is sufficient to observe that from this point of view he ultimately reaches a doetrine as to the witness of the Spirit and the assurance of grace which breaks with the traditional Christianity of his time and contains ethical motives akin to, though not identieal with, those of the German Reformation. The verses which oecur in several parts of the dialogue, and the poem which concludes it, give Wilson a place among Scottish poets, but not nearly so high as that which he oecupies among philosophical writers on Christianity.

VONDEL, Joost van per (1587-1679), Dutch poet. See HonnanD, vol. xii. p. 94.

VORAGINE, Jacosus DE (¢. 1230-1298), archbishop of Genoa, is said to have been born at the little village of Varaggio, near Savona, about the year 1230. He entered the order of St Dominic in 1244, and is said to have preached with great success in many parts of Italy, as well as to have taught in the schools of his own fraternity. From the office of prior in 1267 he was raised to be provincial of all Lombardy. This post he held till 1286, when he was removed at the meeting of the order in Paris. He also represented his own province at the councils of Lucca (1288) and Ferrara (1290). On the last occasion he was one of the four delegates charged with signifying Nicholas IV.'s desire for the deposition of Munio de Zamora, who had been master of the order from 1285, and was deprived of his office by a papal bull dated April 12, 1291. In 1288 Nicholas empowered him to absolve the people of Genoa for their offence in aiding the Sicilians against Charles IJ. Early in 1292 the same pope, himself a Franciscan, summoned James to Rome, intending to con- secrate him archbishop of Genoa with his own hands. James reached Rome on Palm Sunday (March 30), but only to find his patron ill of a deadly sickness, from which he died on Good Friday (April 4). The cardinals, how- ever, "proptcr bonorem Communis Janue," determined to carry out this consecration on the Sunday after Easter, and thus, to quote his own words, '"'he returned with joy to his own city, and was reverently received by the people." If we may trust Echard, he was a model bishop, and especially distinguished himself by his efforts to appease the civil discords of Genoa. His death seems to have taken place in June 1298. He was buried in the Dominican church at Genoa. A story, mentioned by Kchard as unworthy of credit, makes Boniface VIII., on the first day of Lent, cast the ashes in the archbishop's eyes instead of on his head, with the words, " Remember

| |

that thou art a Ghibelline, and with thy fellow Ghibellines wilt return to naught."

Jacobus de Voragine has left us a list of his own works. Speak- ing of himself in his Chronicon Januense, he says, “ While he was in his order, and after he had been made archbishop, he wrote many works. For he compiled the legends of the saints (Legendz Sanctorum) in one volume, adding many things from the Historia Tripartita et Scholastica, and from the chronicles of many writers.” The other writings he claims are two. volumes of “ Sermons con- cerning all the Saints”! whose yearly feasts the church celebrates. Of these volumes, he adds, onc is very diffuse, but the other short and concise. Then follow Sermones de Omnibus Evangeliis Domi- nicalibus for every Sunday in the year; Sermones de Omnibus Evangeliis, i.¢., a book of discourses on all the Gospels, from Ash Wednesday to the Tuesday after Easter ; and a treatise called “Marialis, qui totus est de B. Maria compositus,” consisting of about 160 discourses on the attributes, titles, &c., of the Virgin Mary. In the same work the archbishop claims to have written his Chronicon Janwense in the second year of his pontificate (1293), but it extends to 1296 or 1297. To this list Echard adds several other works, such as a defence of the Dominicans, printed at Venice in 1504, and a Summa Virtutum et Vitiorum Guillelmi Peraldi, a Dominican who died about 1250. James is also said to have translated the Old and New Testaments into his own tongue. ‘“‘But,” adds Echard, “if he did so, the version lics so closely hid that there is no recollection of it.”

His two chief works are the Chronicon Januense and the Golden Legend or Lombardica Hystoria. The former is partly printed in Muratori (Scriptores Rer. Ital., ix. 6). It is divided into twelve parts. The first four deal with the mythical history of Genoa from the time of its founder, Janus the first king of Italy, and its enlarger, a second Janus, “citizen of Troy,” till its conversion to Christianity “about twenty-five years ‘after the passion of Christ.” Part v. professes to treat of the beginning, the growth, and the perfection of the city; but of the first period the writer candidly confesses he knows nothing except by hearsay. The second period includes the Genoese crusading exploits in the East, and extends to their victory over the Pisans (c. 1180), while the third reaches down to the days of the author’s archbishopric. The sixth part deals with the constitution of the city, the seventh and eighth with the duties of rulers and citizens, the ninth with those of domestic life. The tenth gives the ecclesiastical history

of Genoa from the time of its first known bishop, St Valentine, "whom we believe to have lived about 530 A.D.," till 1188, when the city was raised to archiepiscopal rank. The eleventh contains the lives of all the bishops in om and includes the chief events during their pontificates ; while the twelfth deals in the same way with the aes not forgetting the writer himself."

The Golden Legend, one of the most popular religious works of the Middle Ages, is a collection of the legendary lives of the greater saints of the medieval church. The preface divides the ecclesias- tical year into four periods corresponding to the various epochs of the world's history, a time of deviation, of renovation, of recon- ciliation, and of pilgrimage. The book itself, however, falls into five scctions:—(a) from Advent to Christmas (cc. 1-5); (6) from Christmas to Septuagesima (6-30); (c) from Septuagesima to Easter (81-58); (d) from Easter Day to the octave of Pentecost (54-76); (¢) from the octave of Pentecost to Advent (77-180). The saints' lives are full of puerile legend, and in not a few cases contain accounts of 13th-century miracles wrought at special places, par- ticularly with reference to the Dominicans. The author is very particular in giving the derivation of proper names, and indeed generally supplies a copious choice of alternatives. He is nearly always careful to assign a yearly date to the saints he treats of, but seldom, if ever, mentions their feast days. As he reaches the great seasons of the year he inserts treatises dealing with their signi- ficancc and interpretation. Thesc we have for Advent, Christmas, Good Friday, Easter, Whitsunday, &. The last chapter but one (181) "De Sancto Pelagio Papa," contains a kind of history of the world from the middle of the 6th century; while the last (182) is a somewhat allegorical disquisition, "' De Dedicatione Ecclesix."

The Golden Legend was translated into French by Jean Belet de Vigny in the 14th century. It was also one of the earliest books to issue from the press. A Latin edition is assigned to about 1469; and a dated one was published at Lyons in 1473. Many other Latin editions were printed before the end of the century. A French translation by Master John Bataillier is dated 1476; Jean de Vigny's appearcd at Paris, 1488; an Italian one by Nic. Manerbi (? Venice, 1475); a Bohemian one at Pilsen,

1475-9, and at Prague, 1495; Caxton's English versions, 1483, 1487, and 1493; and a German onc in 1489. Seycral 15th-century editions

of the Sermons are also known, and the AMariale was printed at Venice in 1497 and at Paris in 1503.

VORARLBERG, the most western division of the Austrian-Hungarian monarchy, is bounded on the N.

*' Printed without name or plaee, 1484, * The adjective "golden" has been transferred from this to other works of the author.*

by Bavaria, on the W. by the Lake of Constance, Liechtenstein, and Switzerland, on the §. by Switzer- land, and on the E. by Tyrol. Though united for administrative purposes with Tyrol, it enjoys a con- stitution of its own, and ranks as a separate member of the empire. It is emphatically an Alpine region, being traversed by various spurs of the Rhetian Alps (Arlberg, Bregenzer Wald, &c.), attaining a height of 6000 to 9000 feet, and even possessing a few small glaciers. The name is derived from the Arlberg Pass (z.e., Adlerberg, or Eagle's Mountain, 5895 ft.), separating it from Tyrol and forming the means of communication between Innsbruck and the Lake of Constance. The pass is now traversed by a railway, the tunnel under the Arlberg itself (opened Oct. 1884), being 64 miles in length. Vorarlberg is watered by numerous small streams, most of them flowing into the Rhine, which is in contact with the west side of the crown- land for a distance of about 20 miles. About one-third of the surface (almost exactly 1000 square miles in extent) is occupied by pasture, upwards of one-sixth by forests, one-seventh by meadows, and only one-twentieth by arable land. In correspondence with these figures, we find that the chief employments of the inhabitants are cattle-rearing, dairy-farming, and forestry.

In 1881 the district contained 61,115 cattle, and cheese is produced in large quantities. Grain is cultivated in the valley- bottoms, but not more than enough is raised to cover the home consumption ; potatoes, fruit, and wine are also produced. The manufacturing industry is also by no means unimportant, occupy- ing nearly 30 per cent. of the population. The chief branch is the spinning and weaving of cotton, which is carried

on with special vigour in the neighbourhood of the towns and larger villages. A characteristic industry is the construction of wooden chalets, which are exported to Switzerland by water. Many of the men spend the summer in Switzerland as masons and labourers, returning to their homes in winter. In 1881 the population numbered 107,373, nearly all of Teutonic stock and the Roman Catholic faith. The chief towns, none of which are large, are Bregenz (4786 inhabit- ants), the capital, and the port of Austria on the Lake of Constance, Bludenz (8150 inhabitants), Feldkirch (3600), and Dornbirn. Vorarlberg belongs to the see of Brixen, the prince- bishop of which is represented by a vicar-general at Feldkirch. The provincial diet consists of twenty-one members, including the vicar-general. The crownland sends two representatives to the imperial parliament.

Vorarlberg is formed out of the old duchies and countships of Bregenz, Feldkirch, Bludenz, Sonnenberg, and Hohenems, all of which had come into the possession of the house of Austria by the 14th century, chiefly by purchase. Prior to 1782 it was counted part of Hither Austria, but since then it has been administratively united with Tyrol. The peace of Pressburg (1805) assigned it to Bavaria, along with northern Tyrol, but it was restored to its old allegiance in 1814.

VORONEZH, a government of southern Russia, is bounded by Tamboff on the N., Saratoff and the Don Cossacks on the E., Kharkoff on the §., and Kursk and Orel on the W., and has an area of 25,448 square miles. It occupies the southern slopes of the Middle-Russian plateau, and its average elevation is from 450 to 700 feet above sea-level. The surface is hilly, and broken by ravines in the west (where two ranges of chalk hills separated by a broad valley run north and south), but flat and low to the east of the Don. Devonian sandstones crop out in the north, but farther south these are covered with chalk. Glacial clays with northern erratics spread as far south as Voronezh, and extensive areas are covered with Lacustrine clays and sands. The soil is very fertile, owing to the large prevalence of the black earth; it becomes, however, sandy towards the east. Voronezh lies on the border between the forest and meadow-region of Middle Russia and the southern steppes; the forests rapidly disappear

as one advances south, and those which in the time of Peter the Great still covered the upper parts of the tributaries of the Don, and were used for

| shipbuilding, are now almost entirely destroyed. Less

than one-tenth of the entire area is under wood, and both timber and firewood have to be imported.

The Don traverses Voronezh from north to south-east, watering it for more than 400 miles; it is an important channel for the export of corn, tallow, and other raw pro- duce, as well as for the import of wood, floated from the north. Its tributary the Voronezh is also navigated, and another large tributary, the Vorona, flows through the eastern part of the government. Many other small streams flowing into the Don intersect the territory, but the influence of the dry steppes begins to make itself felt ; there are no lakes, and marshes persist only in the valleys. The climate is therefore continental, and, although the mean temperature at Voronezh is 42°-7 F., that of January is as low as 8°‘3 and that of July as high as 74°:2.

The population is steadily increasing, and reached 2,532,840 in 1883 as against 1,974,400 in 1860. It is Little Russian in the south-west (from 35 to 40 per cent., according to different estimates), and Great Russian elsewhere. There are also a few German colonies with some 3500 inhabitants, and a few Poles (2000).

Agriculture is the chief oecupation, and corn is exported to a eonsiderable amount. The average crops from 1883 to 1885 reached 3,467,800 quarters of rye, 901,600 of wheat, 958,000 of oats, 1,680,000 of various grains, and 960,100 of potatoes. 17,000 acres were under beet (176,000 cwts. in 1885); tobacco is also largely cultivated, and the crop of 1885 yielded 1,723,000 tb. The sun- flower has also been mueh cultivated of late for oil. ‘The Voronezh horses enjoy a high reputation in Russia, as also do its cattle, and cattle-breeding has advanced during the last thirty years. In

1883 there were 535,500 horses, 649,100 cattle, and 1,348,100 sheep. Bees are kept in many villages, and honey is gathered to the annual amount of more than 10,000 cwts. Market-gardening and fishing are also of importance. The manufactures arc of recent growth; the production reached £2,066,000 in 1884, the chief produets being spirits, oil, sugar, woollens, and tallow. Wheat

and other grains, flonr, flax, tallow and hides, wool, and cattle are the chief items of export.

Voronezh is divided into twelve districts, the chief towns of whieh are Voronczh (56,185 inhabitants in 1885), Biryutch (4435), Bobroff (3660), Bogutehary (4230), Korotoyak (1840), Nijne-Dyevitsk (2635), Novokhopersk (8015), Ostrogozhsk (8610), Pavlovsk (8390), Valuiki (4425), Zadonsk, with a great monastery (9940), and Zem- lyausk (3870). These are mostly mere administrative centres; and several villages, such as Buturlinovka (21,7 00), Katatch (13,000), and Vorontsovka (12,000), have larger populations and more comnierce.

VORONEZH, capital of the above government, is situated on a high bank of the river of the same name, 365 miles by rail to the south of Moscow. It is almost entirely built of wood, and only recently began to re- acquire importance as an entrepdt on the railway which connects Moscow with the Sea of Azoff. It has a military school of cadets, gymnasiums for boys and girls, and a number of schools for elementary education, Its theatre, now rebuilt, has a name in the history of the Russian stage, and the town was also the birthplace of two peasant poets, to whom we owe some of the finest ex- amples of Russian poetry—Koltsoff and Nikitin, A memorial to the former has been erected on a public pro- menade. A few factories for cleansing wool and for the preparation of tallow and oil, as well as some distilleries have arisen of late. The population of the town in- creased from 39,800 in 1860 to 56,185 in 1885. It is now an important entrepdt for corn, flax, tallow, hides sugar, wood, and coal from the Don ; the railway traffic amounts to 24 million ewts., and that of the Razdelnaya Junction, close by, is nearly thrice that amount.

Voronezh was founded in 1586, as a fort against T a site which had been occupied from the 11th centu town, but had been deserted during the 14th

and 15th centuries Four years afterwards it was burned by the Tartars, but again re- built, and soon became an important trading place. Its "wooden fort was rebuilt in 1672. Peter I. recognized its importance, and in 1694 erected on an island of the river a wharf, where a flotilla of sixty-six boats (2546 guns and 17,000 men) was built, under the direction of Dutch shipbuilders, for the eonquest of Azoff, It thus became the basis of further advances towards the Black Sea. The

town was almost completely destroyed by fire in 1703, 1748, and 1773, but was always rebuilt and has steadily developed. ,

artar raids, on ry by a Khazar

VOR—VOS

VORTEX MOTION. See Hypromecuanics, vol. xii. p-. 450 sq.

VOSGES, a mountain range of central Europe, stretching along the west side of the Rhine valley in a north-north- east direction, from Basel to Mainz, for a distance of 150 miles. Since 1871 the southern portion, from the Ballon d'Alsace to Mont Donon, has been the political boundary between France and Germany. 'There is a remarkable similarity between the Vosges and the corresponding range of the Black Forest on the other side of the Rhine: both lie within the same degrees of latitude and have the same geological formation; both are characterized by fine forests on their lower slopes, above which are open pasturages and rounded summits of a uniform altitude; both have a steep fall to the Rhine and a gradual descent on the other side. The Vosges in their southern portion are mainly of granite, with some porphyritic masses, and of a kind of red sand- stone (occasionally 1640 feet in thickness) which on the western versant bears the name of " grés Vosgien."

Orographically the range is divided from south to north into four sections :—the Grandes Vosges (62 miles), extending from Belfort to the valley of the Bruche ; the Central Vosges (31 miles), between the Bruche and the Col de Saverne ; the Lower Vosges (30 miles), between the Col de Saverne and the source of the Lauter; and the Hardt (25 miles). The rounded summits of the Grandes Vosges are called "ballons." The departments of

Vosges and Haute Saéne are divided from Alsace and the territory of Belfort by the Ballon d'Alsace or St Maurice (4100 feet). Thence north-wards the average height of the range is 3000 feet, the highest point of all, the Ballon de Guebwiller (Gebweiler) or Soultz, rising on the east to a height of 4680 feet. 'The Col de Saales, between the Grandes Vosges and the central seetion, is 1900 feet high ; the latter is both lower and narrower than the Grandes Vosges, the Mont Donon aud other chief heights not exceeding 3300 feet. The railway from Paris to Strasburg and the Rhine and Marne Canal traverse the Col de Saverne (1085 feet). No railway crosses the Vosges between Saverne and Belfort, but there are very good carriage roads over the passes of Bussang (2410 feet) from Remiire- mont to Thann, the Schlucht (3746 feet) from Gérardmer to Munster, the Bon Homme (3100 feet) from St Dié to Colmar, and from St Dié to St Marie-aux-Mines (2625 fect). The Lower Vosges are a sandstone plateau ranging from 1000 to 1850 feet high, and are crossed by the railway fron1 Hagenau to Sarreguemines, defended by the fort of Bitche. 'The Hardt, a sterile region, covered with heath and low brushwood, has for its highest point the Donners- berg (Mont Tonnerre), 2264 feet high; it is traversed through deep ravines by the railways from Denx-Ponts to Landau, and from Kaiserslautern to Spires and Worms. Meteorologically, the differ- ence between the eastern and western versants of the range is very marked, the annual rainfall being much higher and the mean temperature being much lower in the latter than in the former. On the eastern slope the vine ripens to a height of 1300 feet; on the other hand, its only rivers are the Ill and other shorter streams, which afford water-power rather by their rapid fall than by their abundance. The Moselle, Meurthe, and Sarre all risc ou the Lorraine side. Moraines, boulders, and polished rocks testify the existence of the glaciers which formerly covered the Vosges. The lakes, surrounded by pines, beeches, and maples, the green meadows where hundreds of cows with tinkling bells peacefully graze, and the fine views of the Rhine valley, Black Forest, and snow-covered Swiss mountains combine to make the district charmingly pictur-esque. The lower heights and buttresses of the main chain on the Alsatian side are covered with numerous castles, generally in ruins, in connexion with which curious legends and interesting historical incidents are told. At several points on the main ridge, especially at St Odile above Ribcauvillé (Rappoltsweiler), are the remains of a wall of unmortared

stone with tenons of wood, 6 to 7 feet thick and 4 to 5 feet high, called the pagan wall (Mur Payen). It was certainly used for local defence in the Middle Ages, and archeolo- gists are divided as to whether it was built for this purpose by the Romans, or before their arrival.

VOSGES, a frontier department of eastern France, was formed in 1790, for the most part of territory previously belonging to Lorraine, with fragments of Franche-Comté, Champagne, and Alsace. The portion belonging to Alsace was ceded to Germany in 1871. Lying between 47° 48' and 48° 32' N. lat., and 5° 22' and 7° 10' E. long., the department is bounded by Alsace-Lorraine on the E. and by the departments of Meurthe-ct-Moselle on the N. , Meuse on the N.W., Haute-Marne on the W. ,and Haute-Sadne on

the 8. The Vosges Mountains form a natural boundary on the E. The highest point is the Hohneck (4482 feet) near the Schlucht. The south of the department is traversed by the Monts Faucilles (2000 feet), which form part of the European watershed, separating the basins of the Rhine and the Rhone. The Moselle and the Meuse, tributaries of the Rhine, have the largest drainage areas in the department ; a small district in the north-west

belongs to the basin of the Seine (Ornain and Marne),

the rest to that of the Rhone. The Moselle rises in the Col de Bussang, and in a N.W. course of 75 miles receives the Moselotte and Vologne on the right; the Mortagne and the Meurthe on the right and the Madon on the left bank also belong to Vosges, though they join the Moselle outside the department. The source of the Sadne is on the south-east slope of the Monts Faucilles, and the Canal de l''list follows the course of the Coney, a tributary of the left bank. The height above the sea, the northward exposure of the valleys, and the impervious subsoil com- bine to make the climate severe ; the average temperature at Epinal (1070 feet) is 49°F. The annual rainfall is 24 inches at Kpinal, 31 at St Dié, and more in the mountains.

Of a total area of 1,452,181 acres, arable land occupies 608,201 eres, grass 199,839, wood 361,526, heath, pasture, and uncultivated land 81,486, and vineyards 12,054. The live stock in 1881 included 31,811 horses (of a small but strong breed), 857 asses and mules, 143,827 cattle, 45,634 sheep, 81,488 pigs, 19,615 goats, more than 17,000 dogs, 500,000 head of poultry; 17,952 beehives yielded 43 tons 7 cwts. of honey and 18 tons 11 cwts. of wax. 872 tons of chcese were made at Gérardmer. The crops in 1884 were—wheat 1,911,470 bushels, meslin 494, 483, rye 710,627, barley 108,262, oats 3,225,755, buckwheat 63,409, potatoes 17,787,404, dry vege- tables 45,974, fodder beetroot 25,060 tons, tobacco 33 tons, hops 79 tons, hemp seed 138 tons, hemp 99 tons, linseed 39 tons, flax 22 tons, hemp, flax, and poppy oils 94 tons, colza seed 206 tons, fodder 457,388 tons, wine 2,869,000 gallons (average of preceding ten years 3,964,441). The department stands first in France for the extent and importance of the woods under forest rule, though only third for the actual area of forest land. The state owns one- third of the forests, private individuals one-fifth, and the communes the rest. Oaks, beeches, hornbeams, birches, aspens, and maples thrive on the plains, beeches and oaks on the higher grounds, and firs, beeches, and pines on the mountains. The annual valuc of timber produced is £280,000, and 9,000,000 fir planks, besides other kiuds, are annually cut in 300 sawmills. Traces of gold are found, and the department contains silver and lead mines, copper ore, iron ore (4530 tons of iron annually), zinc, manganese, cobalt, and antimony. In 1884, 681 tons of coal were mined, and in 1882 1595 tons of peat were dug; 1336 persons are employed in 482 quarries of marble, sandstone, granite, and building and lithographic stones. The department is rich in hot, cold, sulphate, sodic, calcium, iron, bicarbonate, and gascous mineral springs. Those at Plombiéres were known to the Romans, 37,000 hands arc employed In the manufacture of pig and cast iron (for all which wood is the chicf fuel) and wares of iron and steel. The cotton industry (135,000 looms and 423,724 spindles) has been largcly developed since 1871; canvas and linen are woven at Gérardmer (3000 looms). The manufacture of cloth employs 500 workmen, of lace 1000, embroidery by the hand and loom 40,000 workwomen, silk spin- ning 1000 spindles. Wool is spun and hosiery manufactured. Coopers' work (over 300 tons) is exported, as are also sabots. At

pinal several hundred workmen are engaged in the manufacture of images; and musical instruments are made at Mirecourt. 1000 workmen are employed in glass-works, and 1987 in paper-mills (10,000 tons of paper and cardboard). The department contains in all 409 industrial establishments; 200,000 tons of coal are Imported. There are 281 miles of railway, 177 of national roads, and 3096 of other roads. The Eastern Canal connects the Saéne with the Moselle and Meuse. The population in 1881 was 408,862, of whom 189,176 were engaged in agriculture and 181,253 in manu- factures ; the population in 1886 was 413,707. The department forms the diocese of St Dié, has its court of appeal and academy at Nancy, belongs to the district of the corps d'armée of Chalons- sur-Marne, and is divided for administrative purposes into 5 arron- dissements (Epinal, Mirecourt, Neufchatcau, Remiremont, St Dié), 29 cantons, and 530 communes. The chef-lieu is Epinal.

VOSS, Jonann Hernricu (1751-1826), German poet, archeologist, and translator, was born at Sommersdorf in Mecklenburg on the 20th February 1751. In the same year his father, a farmer, removed from Sommersdorf to

Penzlin. From 1766 to 1769 Voss attended school at Neubrandenburg. In the latter year, in consequence of misfortunes which had overtaken his father, he was obliged to accept a tutorship in the family of a private gentleman near Penzlin. He went to Gottingen in 1772, in response to the invitation of Boie, whose attention he had attracted by poems contributed to the Gottingen Musenalmanach. At Gottingen he studied with enthusiasm ancient and modern literature, and became one of the leading members of the famous " Dichterbund." In 1775 Boie made over to him the editing of the Afwsenalmanach, which he con- tinued to issue for many years. He married Boie's sister, Ernestine, in 1777, and in the following year he accepted the position of rector at Ottendorf in Hanover. As the climate of Ottendorf did not suit his health, he resigned this office in 1782, and went as rector to Eutin, where he remained until 1802. He then lived for some time in Jena, but in 1805 he accepted a call toa professorship at Heidelberg. He died at Heidelberg on March 29, 1826.

Voss was a man of a remarkably independent aud vigorous character, and he achieved distinction in several kinds of literary activity. In 1785-95 he published in two volumes a collection of original poems, to which he afterwards made many additions, The best of these works is his idyllic poem " Luise," in which he sought, with much success, to apply the style and methods of classical poetry to the expression of modern German thought and sentiment. In his Mythologische Briefe (2 vols., 1794), in which he attacked the ideas of Heyne, in his Antisymbolik (2 vols., 1824-26), written in opposition to Creuzer, and in other writings he made im- portant contributions to the study of mythology. He was also prominent as an advocate of the right of free judgment in religion, and at the time when some members of the Romantic school were being converted to the Roman Church he produced a strong im- pression by a powerful article, in Sophronizon, on his friend Friedrich von Stolberg's repudiation of Protestantism. It is, however, to his work as a translator that Voss chiefly owes his place in German literature. All his renderings of the works of ancient writers indi cate not only sound scholarship but a thorough mastery of the laws of German diction and rhythm. The most famous of his translations are those of Homer, which were published together, in 4 volumes, in 1793. Of these the onc generally preferred is the translation

of the Odyssey, as originally issued in 1781. He also translated Hesiod, Theocritus, Bion and Moschus, Virgil, Horace, Tibullus, Propertius, and other classical pocts, and he prepared a critical edition of Tibullus. In 1818-29 was published, in 9 volumes, a translation of Shakespeare's plays, which he com- pleted with the help of his sons Heinrich and Abraham, both of whom were scholars and writers of considerable ability.

See Paulus, Lebens- u. Todeskunden tiber J. H. Voss (1826), and Herbst, J. 77. Voss (2 vols., 1872-76).

VOSSIUS, Gzrarpus Jonannes (1577-1649), classical scholar and theologian, was born near Heidelberg in 1577. His father Johannes Vos, a native of the Netherlands, had fled as a Protestant from the persecutions in his own country into the Palatinate, and became pastor in the village near Heidelberg where Gerard was born ; butyas he was a Calvinist, the strict Lutherans of the Palatinate caused him once more to become a wanderer. In 1578 he settled at Leyden as student of theology in the university, and finally as pastor at Dort, where he died in 1586, leaving Gerard an orphan. Here the boy received his education, until he entered the theological college and then the university of Leyden. He there became the lifelong bosom friend of Hugo Grotius, and pursued with great zest the study of the classics, Hebrew, ecclesiastical history, and theology. In 1600 he was made rector of the high school at Dort, where he devoted himself to philology and historical theology. From 1614 to 1619 he filled the office of director of the theological college at Leyden. The moderation of his theological views and his abstention from controversy brought him under the suspicion of heresy, in consequence of which he escaped expulsion from his office only by resignation (1619). The year before he had published his valuable work the Historia Pelagiana, which his enemies considered favoured the views of the Arminians or Remonstrants. But in the year 1622 he

received the appointment of professor of rhetoric and chronology, and subsequently of Greek, in the university. In 1624 the university of Cambridge offered him a professorship, which he declined. Two years afterwards another unsuccessful effort was made to induce him to settle

in England, but he accepted from Archbishop Laud a prebend in Canterbury cathedral of the value of £100 per annum, without residence, coming over to England to be installed in 1629, when he was made LL.D. at Oxford. In 1632 he left Leyden to take the post of professor of history in the newly founded Atheneum at Amsterdam, which he held till his death, March 17, 1649.

He was one of the great scholars of tle world, and his character added lustre to his learning. His works, of which a complete edition appeared at Amsterdam, 1695-1701, in 6 vols. fol., are philological, historical, and theological. He made invalnable con- tributions to the correct study of Latin grammar and of the Greek and Latin historians. He wasamongst the first to treat theo1ogical dogmas and the heathen religions from the historical point of view. His principal works are Historia Pclagiana (1618) ; Htymologicum Lingue Lating (1662); Commentariorum Rhetoricorum Libri VII. (1606); De Historicis Greeis Libri LIT, (1624); De Historicis Latinis Libri II. (1627); De Theologia Gentili (1642); Dissertationcs Tres co Symbolis, Apostolico, Athanasiano, ct Constantinopolitano

See Nicéron, Mémotres pour servir aU Histoire des Hommes Iilustres, vol. xiii., Paris, 1730; Herzog's Realencyklopddie, art, " Vossius."

VOSSIUS, Isaac (1618-1689), son of the preceding, was born at Leyden in 1618, and was carefully educated by his father. After three years spent on a learned tour through England, France, and Italy, which he used in making the acquaintance of the first scholars and the great libraries of those countries, and from which he brought back many valuable MSS., he accepted in 1648 an invitation to the court of the brilliant Queen Christina of Sweden, whom he taught Greek. He declined the offer of the chair of history at Amsterdam vacated by his father's death, and continued for some years in Sweden, with occasional visits to Holland. In 1658 he finally left Sweden. His father's merits and his own learning pro- cured him favour with Louis XIV. of France and in England. In 1670 he came to reside in England, was made LL.D. of Oxford, and in spite of notorious looseness of morals and levity of character received a canonry

at Windsor from Charles IT. in 1673, residing in the castle, where he died in February 1689.

His learning was great, and he rendered valuable services in eonnexion with ancient history, antiquities, chronology, and geography, though they were marred by the admixture of great levity and want of judgment. To him is owing the first Greek text of the six shorter epistles of Ignatius (1646). He pnblished valuable editions of the geographer Scylax (1639), of Justin (1640), of Pomponius Mela (1648), and of Catullus (1684). In his various dissertations on chronology he maintained the greater accuraey of the system of the Septnagint in comparison with that of the Hebrew text, and generally asserted the greater genuineness of the Greek translation as compared with the Massoretic text. He in- herited his father's valuable library, which, to the great sorrow of Evelyn, went after his death back to Holland.

Comp. Nicéron's Mémoires, vol. xiii.

VOTKINSK, an iron-work in the Urals, in the Russian government of Vyatka, 47 miles north of Sarapul, and 8 iniles from the Kama, was founded in 1756. Its popula. tion reached 15,480 in 1885. Together with the Kamsk iron-work, Votkinsk was till lately one of the chief Govern. ment establishments for the construction of steamers for the Caspian flotilla, as well as of locomotives for the Siberian railway, and it has long been renowned for its excellent tarantasses and other smaller iron-wares, as well as for its knitted goods. No large orders having been received from the Government, a number of workmen recently united into an "artel" or co-operative society for the manufacture of agricultural machinery, already known throughout Russia for its excellence and cheapness,

VOUET, Simon (1590-1649), French painter, born at Paris, January 9, 1590, passed many years in Italy, where

he married, and established himself at Rome, enjoying there a high reputation as a portrait painter. Louis XIII. recalled him to France, lodged him in the Louvre with the title of First Painter to the Crown, and

gave him a considerable salary. All royal work for the palaces of the Louvre and the Luxembourg was placed in his hands; the king became his pupil; he formed a large school, and renewed the traditions of that of Fontainebleau. Amongst his scholars was the famous Lebrun (who raised on the foundations laid by his master the tyranny by which he dominated the whole artistic world during the reign of Louis XIV.), Lebrun's rival Errard, Louis Lerambert, the two Testelins, Poerson, and Dorigny. Vouet was an exceedingly skilful painter, especially in decoration, and executed important works of this class for Cardinal Richelieu (Rueil and Palais Royal) and other great nobles. His better easel pictures bear a curious resemblance to those of Sassoferrato, but, being much in demand, he fell into mannerisms, and of the enormous quantity of work produced by himself or with the aid of his pupils little has survived worth study. Almost everything he did was engraved by his sons-in-law Tortebat and Dorigny.

VOW, a solemn undertaking to do something which is held to be acceptable to the Deity. In the antique re ligions mere prayer, without some material expression of homage, was not held to be a complete or normal act oi worship (cf. SacriricE). Supplications, therefore, were generally presented to the Deity in connexion with a sacrifice, or, if the moment of need was one at which a ritual offering could not well be presented, the prayer for help was naturally accompanied by a promise to present a gift at a future time. Thus prayer together with a vow is a sort of imperfect act of worship, which has to be com- pleted by the discharge of the vow at the sanctuary. So in Greek the same word edy7 is equally applicable to the prayer which opened a service of sacrifice and to a vow taken at the commencement of an enterprise or in other time of need. So too the Latin votwm means both "vow" and " desire." In the Old Testament, in like manner, it is generally a sacrifice or gift at the sanctuary which is promised in vows, and the word "vow" (néder) means also '"a votive sacrifice," as distinguished from obligatory sacrifices (piacular offer- ings and stated festal sacrifices; 1 Sam. i. 21).

The vows of which we read in the Old Testament and in classical authors are generally conditional on the fulfil- ment of the petition with which they are coupled. Such vows are made on occasions of special need, or difficulty (Ps. Ixvi. 13 sq.; Pliny, H. W., viii. 21 [57], "tum preecipuus

votorum locus est cum spei nullus est”), as before a peril- ous enterprise (Gen. xxviil. 20; Judg. xi. 30). The pay- ment offered may be a victim for the altar, or any other gift which the ritual of the religion acknowledges as acceptable. But, as vows are generally made on extra- ordinary occasions, the thing promised will often be excep- tional in kind or magnitude. The vow of Jephthah (Judg. xi.) is a case in point, and also illustrates by an extreme example the principle that a vow once taken must be ful- filled at any cost. This principle was so far modified in later times, in Israel, that exceptional vows were by law redeemed at a valuation (Lev. xxvii.). Hannah’s vow, de- voting her unborn son to the service of the sanctuary (1 Sam. i. 11), would have fallen under this law. Moreover, the law provided that the vow of an unmarried daughter or of a wife might be disallowed by the father or husband respectively (Numb. xxx.). On the other hand, a widow or a divorced woman was free to make what vow she pleascd. These provisions are important evidence of the legal posi- tion of woman in Hebrew society, and also, ea silentio, as implying that Hebrew sons (at least after infancy) were not subject to patria potestas of the Roman kind,

:

| |

Of ordinary vows a common type in antiquity was a promise made in peril by sea, sickness, or other straits, to suspend in a temple a picture or other symbol of the danger against which the Divine aid was implored. This usage passed into Christianity and survives in Catholic countries, where votive pictures and models of eyes, hands, &c., cured in answer to prayer, are still seen in churches. At the council of Lestines (743 a.p.) the use of such models was condemned as a pagan practice.

In point of obligation, vows were analogous to oaths (Numb. xxx. 2); their sanction was not human but Divine (Deut. xxiii. 21). Thus slackness or fraud in the fulfil- ment of vows is the mark of an age of declining faith (Mal. i. 14 ; Harith, Moall., 1. 69 Arnold ; Lucian, Jupiter Trag., ¢. 15; of. Eccles. v. 4). Among the Arabs the speedy fulfilment of vows was

favoured by a rule of ab- stinence from certain enjoyments and conveniences (ithraém), which custom imposed till the vow was fulfilled. This appears to have been the ancient practice of other Semitic nations also; among the Hebrews it survives in the Nazarite vow (see Nazanrre), and probably also in the esi or issdér (interdict), which is mentioned along with vows in Numb. xxx., and is described in verse 13 as "an oath of abstinence to afflict the soul,"—words which seem to show that fasting is specially contemplated. As there is no as- cetic tendency in Hebrew religion, in which fasting and similar observances have not positive religious value, but are only expressions of penitent supplication, it seems reason- able tointerpret the oath of abstinence by the aid of the examples in Psalm cxxxii. 2 sg., Acts xxiii. 12 (cf. also 1 Sam. xiv. 24 sg.), and to understand it, like the Arabian thrdm, as an obligation of abstinence till a positive vow was fulfilled. The detail in the Psalm, "I will not enter my house or rest in my bed till," &c., has its parallel in Arabia and in Syrian heathenism (Sir. ii. 185—-where to enter the house from behind is an evasion of the rule ; Lucian, Dea Syr., § 55; cf. Wellhausen, Skizzen, iii. 117). It is to be observed that in Arabia, where there was little or no development of obligatory ritual sacrifices, offerings were usually votive, and vows were often simple and not conditional promises; so too in Deut. xxiii. 23, Lev. vii. HG vows are closely associated with free-will offerings. A purpose of sacrifice formed at a distance from a sanctuary naturally found expression in a vow. Occasions of sacri- fice are not frequent in nomad life and it may be conjec- tured that the earliest vows were simply deferred sacrifices, without the element of bargaining with the Divinity which is prominent in later times. The simple vow presupposes that the sanctuary or the customary day of sacrifice is re- mote; the conditional vow, on the other hand, may often be made at the sanctuary itself, where the Godhead is nearest to man (Gen. xxviii. 20; 1 Sam. i. 11; Zviad, vii. 93).

In Christian times vows to present a material gift (vota realia) have been less important than vows to adopt a certain course of life (vota personalia), a change which naturally followed from the modification of the idea of sacrifice in Christianity (see Sacrirtce). The personal vows recognized by the Catholic church are of various kinds, covering all manner of actions religiously meritorious (e.9-, pilgrimage or crusading);

but the most promitient have been vows of abstinence (fasting, chastity), to which the growth of asceticism gave a positive value. Most important of all is the monastic vow of poverty, chastity, and obedience (see Monacnism). The presupposition of all such vows is that there is a higher life of godliness, which cannot be attained to by Christians at large, and which all are not bound to attempt, although there is merit in consecrating oneself to it. From this point of view it came about in process of time that vows of self-consecration were viewed as neces- sarily perpetual. To fall back from a purpose of higher life

was not at all the same thing as never to have formed such a purpose. Hence, ¢.g., the vow of chastity, which Cyprian still regards as terminable by marriage in the case of virgins who have not strength to persevere in continence, was de- clared to be of perpetual obligation as early as the council of Ancyra (314 a.p.). On the other hand, the church was careful to guard against the rash assumption of vows, by requiring certain formalities in the act, and by the in- stitution of the noviciate, as a period of probation. The power of the pope to dispense from vows, which appears in the Decretals, was of later growth. Protestantism, deny- ing the superior merit of the ascetic life, rejects all per- petual vows, and indeed shows little favour to vows of any kind. (W. RS.

VRANCX, Sepastian, born about 1572, was a painter of the Antwerp school, of very moderate ability. Most of his pictures represent scenes of war, such as the sack of towns, cavalry combats, and the like. Though occasionally vigorous in drawing, his paintings are dull and heavy in tone. The date of his death is uncertain.

VULCAN, the old Roman fire-god, answering to the Greek HEPHzsTUS (¢.v.), with whom he was confounded by the ancients. The etymology of the name is uncertain: it has been proposed to derive it from the root var, "warm"; uwlka in Sanscrit is a firebrand. How closely Vulcan was identified with the fire, regarded as a person, appears from the stories of the birth of Cxculus and Servius Tullius, both of whom were called sons of Vulcan, and were supposed to have been conceived by virgins who had been impregnated by sparks of fire from the hearth. At Rome his temple was in the Campus Martius outside the city walls. But there was also a

place sacred to him in the comitium. It was not a temple, but only a raised area, called the Volcanal. It was said to have been founded by Romulus, and a lotus tree in it was thought to be as old as the city. Statues of persons who or whose statues had been struck by lightning were sometimes set up in the Volcanal. There was a festival of Vulcan called the Volcanalia on August 23d, in which the people threw animals into the fire instead of themselves. On the 7th of June there was a fishermen's festival, with games, held under the superintendence of the "praetor urbanus," and the fish were brought to the Volcanal and sacrificed to the god instead of human victims. Another festival of Vulcan was the Tubilustria, or purification of trumpets, on May 23d, Vulcan being regarded as the father of trumpets. At Ostia there was a festival of Vulcan (Volcanalia) pre- sided over by a "preetor sacris Voleani faciundis," and at Ostia there were also a temple and a pontifex of Vulcan. At Rome there was a "flamen" of Vulcan, who sacrificed to Maia, wife of Vulcan, on the Ist of May. According to others the name of Vulcan's wife was Majesta.

VULCANO. See Lipart Istanps, vol. xiv. p. 682.

VULGATE. See Brete, vol. iii. p. 647.

VULTURE, the name of certain birds whose best- known characteristic is that of feeding upon carcases, and these birds, owing to this obscene habit, are in many hot countries regarded with favour as useful scavengers. The genus Vultur, as instituted by Linnzeus, is now restricted by ornithologists to a single species, V. monachus, of which more presently, the other species included therein by him, or thereto referred by succeeding systematists, being else- where relegated (cf. LAMMERGEYER); but the most im- portant taxonomic change that has been introduced is that by Prof. Huxley (Proc. Zool. Society, 1867, pp. 462-464), who pointed out the complete structural difference between the Vultures of the New World and those of the Old, regarding the former as constituting a distinct Family, Cathartide (which, however, would be more properly named Sarcorkamphidz), while he united the latter with

the ordinary diurnal Birds-of-Prey as Gypaetide. This arrangement seems to overlook the signification of some considerable distinctions, and to the present writer it would appear more reasonable to recognize the existence of a Family Vulturide, confined to the true Vultures of the Ancient Continent, equal in rank to the Falconide, while fully admitting the claim made on behalf of the New-World forms for the same standing.

The American Vulture may be said to include four genera :—(1) Sarcorhamphus, the gigantic Condor, the male distinguished by a large ficshy comb and wattles; (2) Gypagus, the King-Vulture, with its gaudily-coloured head and nasal caruncle; (3) Catharista, containing the so-called Turkey-Buzzard of English-speaking Americans with its allies; and (4) Pseudogryphus, the great Californian Vulture—of very limited range on the western slopes of North America, and threatened with speedy extinction through the use of poison. Though all these birds are structurally so different from the true Vultures of the Old World, in habits the Vulturide and Sarcorhamphide are much alike, and of several of the latter—

King-Vulture (@ypagus papa).

particularly of the Condor and the Turkey-Buzzard—we possess rather elaborate accounts by excellent observers, as Darwin, Alex- ander Wilson, and Mr Gosse—whose works are readily accessible. The true Vultures of the Old World, Vudturide in the restricted sense, are generally divided into five or six genera, of which Neophron has been not unjustifiably separated as forming a dis- tinct Subfamily, Meophronine,—its members, of comparatively small size, differing both in structure and habit considerably from the rest. One of them is the so-called Egyptian Vulture or Pharaoh's Hen, WN. percnopterus, a bird whose delicacy of build and appearance contrast forcibly with its choice of the most filthy kind of food. It is a well-known species in some parts of India,} and thence westward to Africa, where it has an extensive range. It also occurs on the northern shores of the Mediterrancan, and on three occasions has strayed to such a distance from its usual haunts as to have twice suffered capture in England, and once even in Norway. Of the genera composing the other Subfamily, Valturing Space 1s wanting to say much. Gyps numbers seven

or eight local species and races, on more than one of which the English name Griffon has been fastened. The best known is @. Julvus, which by some authors is accounted "British," from an example having been taken in Ireland, though under circumstances which suggest its appear- ance so far from its nearest home in Spain to be due to man's inter- vention. The species, however, has a wider distribution on the European continent (especially towards the north-east) than the Egyptian Vulture, and in Africa nearly reaches the Equator, extend- ing also in Asia to the Himalaya; but both in the Ethiopian and Indian Regions its range inosculates with that of several allied forms or species. Pseudogyps with two forms—one Indian, the

1 Tn the eastern part of the Indian peninsula it is replaced by a smaller race or (according to some authorities) species, NV. gingianus, which has a yellow instead of a black bill.

other African—differs from Gyps by having 12 instead of 14 rectrices. Of the genera Otogyps and Lophogyps nothing here need be said; and then we have Vultur, with, as mentioned before, its sole representative, V. monachus, commonly known as the Cinercous Vulture, a bird which is found from the Straits of Gibraltar to the sea-coast of China.? Almost all these birds inhabit rocky cliffs, on the ledges of which they build their nests,

The question whether Vultures in their search for food are guided by sight of the object or by its scent has long excited much interest, and the advocates of either opinion have warmly contended in its behalf. Without denying to them the olfactory faculty, it seems to be now gene- rally admitted, notwithstanding the assertions to the con- trary of Waterton and a few more, that the sense of sight is in almost every case sufficient to account for the observed facts. It is known that, directly a camel or other beast of burden drops dead, as the caravan to which it belonged is making its way across the desert, Vultures of one sort or another appear, often in considerable numbers, though none had before been observed by the ordinary traveller, and speedily devour the carcase over which they are gathered together. The mode in which communication is effected between

the birds, which are soaring at an immense height, seems at first inexplicable, but Canon Tristram has suggested (Zdis, 1859, p. 280) the following simple solution of the supposed mystery :—

‘The Griffon who first descries his quarry descends from his elevation at once, Another, sweeping the horizon at a still greater distance, observes his neighbour’s movements and follows his course. A third, still further removed, follows the flight of the second ; he is traced by another ; and soa perpctual succession is kept up so long as a morsel of flesh remains over which to consort. I can conceive no other mode of accounting for the number of Vultures which in the course of a few hours will gather over a carcase, when previously the horizon might have been scanned in vain for more than one, or at the most two, in sight.”

The Canon goes on to suppose that in this way may be explained the enormous congregation of Vultures in the Crimea during the siege of Sevastopol, where they had before been scarce:—‘“the habit of watching the movements of their neighbours” may “have collected the whole race from the Caucasus and Asia Minor ”—he might have added the Balkans —“to enjoy so unwonted an abundance.” Doubt may be entertained whether the last supposition be correct, but. none as to the accuracy of the first. (A. N.)

VYATKA, or ViaTKA, a government of north-eastern Russia, with Vologda on the N., Perm on the E., Ufa and Kazafi on the §., and Nijni Novgorod and Kostroma on the W., has an area of 59,124 square miles. It has on its northern boundary the flat water-parting which separates the basins of the Northern Dwina and Volga, and its surface is an undulating plateau of from 800 to 1400 feet above sea- level, deeply grooved by rivers and assuming a hilly aspect on their banks, broken up as they are by ravines. Permian sandstones, marls, and limestones cover it; over these is boulder clay, with extensive forests and marshes. The Kama rises in the north-east, and, after making a wide sweep through Perm, flows along its south-eastern boundary, while the whole of the government is watered by the Vyatka and its numerous tributaries. Both the Kama and the Vyatka are navigable, as also are several of their tributaries; the Izha and Votka, which flow into the latter, have important iron-works on their banks. As

many as 1,700,000 ewts. of corn, iron, hides, leather, tallow, timber, and wooden wares were loaded in 1883 at the landing- places of Vyatka, while the traffic on the Kama is still more important. There are no railways, but the province is traversed by the great highway to Siberia, and two other roads by which goods from the south are transported to

? The geographical range of the various species of Vultures has been

exhaustively treated by Mr Sharpe (Journ. Linn. Society, Zoology, xl. pp. 1-26, pls. i.-ix.).

loading-places on the Vytchegda and the Yug to be shipped farther north to Archangel. Lakes are numerous, and vast marshes are met with everywhere, especially in the north; three-quarters of the area are under forests. The climate is very severe, the average yearly temperature being 36° F. at Vyatka (January, 8°-2; July, 67°:0), and 35° at Slobodskoi (January, 3°°5 ; July, 65°:3).

The population (2,859,000 in 1883, as against 2,170,221 in 1861), though sparse on the average, is somewhat dense in the better-situated valleys. The bulk consists of Great Russians (81 per cent.), but there are also considerable remains of the aboriginal Votiaks (250,000), Tcheremisses (about 150,000), Tartars, Tepters, Permians, and even Bashkirs. Mohammedans number about 100,000, and pagans (Tcheremisses and Votiaks) about 11,000. The Votiaks (Otiaks), a Finnish stem of the Permian group, call themselves Ot, Ut, or Ud, and the Tartars call them Ar, so that it is supposed that they may be akin to the Ars of the Yenisei. They are middle-sized, with fair hair and eyes, oftcn red-haired; and the general structuro of the face and skull is Finnish. By their dialect they belong to tho same branch as the Permians. Thcy are excel- lent agriculturists, very laborious, and excel in bee-keeping.

The soil is fertile, especially in the valleys of the south ; rye, barley, oats, buckwheat, and to some extent wheat are grown. The crops of 1885 were —rye, 4,006,000 quarters ; oats, 3,957,000;

barley, 734,000 ; wheat, 98,000; potatoes, 231,000 quarters. Corn

is exported to the Kama or to the north, as also are flax and hemp. There is no want of natural meadows in the south, and cattle- rearing prospers. The Vyatka horses, a fine breed, though rather small, are well known throughout Russia. There were in 1883 706,600 horses, 925,100 cattle, and 1,446,400 sheep. Attempts are being made to introduce finer breeds of cows and sheep.

Industries are developing steadily, there having been in 1884 684 establishments, which employed 9700 workmen, and showed a yearly return of £1,510,000. They include distilleries (£885,606), iron-works, chemical works, tanneries, soap and glass works, and cotton and paper mills. VOoTKINsK (9.v.) has a considerable ycarly production of agricultural machinery and steam-engincs. The crown manufactory of guns at Izhevsk works up yearly 10,000 cwts. of stecl. Domestic trades give occupation to more than 40,000 persons, and their returns in 1884 reached £706,800. The manu- facture of wooden vessels, window frames, doors, furniture, sledges, and carts supplies a considerable export trade to the steppe pro- vinces of the lower Volga. Domestic weaving produces, it is esti- mated, about 5,400,000 yards of linen every year. Many peasants have nevertheless to leave their homes in search of work, either as "burlaki" for shipping and dragging boats or as porters ; hunting and bird-catching still have some importance in the forest tracts.

Trade is considerable,—iron, copper, tar, pitch, glass, leather, paper, timbcr, and wooden wares, as also corn, hides, flax, linseed, honey, and other raw produce being exported to Nijni Novgorod, Orenburg, and Siberia ; while groceries and various manufactured goods are imported.

Vyatka is one of those few governments of Russia where the semsivo, consisting to a great extent of representatives of the peasantry, has succeeded in creating a series of educational institu- tions without incurring the displeasure of the Government. It distinguishes itself very favourably byits schools, libraries, surgeons, and hospitals in villages, and by its elaborate house-to-house statis. tical descriptions of several districts, and statistical publications. There were in 1884 641 primary and 22 secondary schools.

Vyatka is divided into eleven districts—those of VYATKA (24,480 inhabitants in 1885) ; Elabuga (9750) ; Gtazoff (1945) ; Kotelnitch (4490) ; Matmyzh (3400) ; Nolinsk (3990) ; Ortoff (3880); Sarapul (12,370); Stobodskoi (9225); Urzhum (5100) ; Yaransk (2855). VorkiInsk (9.v.) has 15,480 inhabitants, and Izhevsk has 21,500.

VYATKA, capital of the above government, is situated on the Vyatka river, 653 miles to the north-east of Moscow. It is built mostly of wood, on the steep hills which rise above the river, as well as on their slopes and at their base. Its old walls have been demolished, and its old churches built anew. Two public gardens, a small public library, and the usual educational institutions of a Russian provincial town are all that it can boast of. Its manu- factures are insignificant, but its trade in corn, leather, tallow, candles, soap, wax, paper, and furs (exported), and in all kinds of manufactured and grocery wares (imported), is important. The population in 1885 was 24,480.

Vyatka was foundcd in 1181 by the Novgorodians, under the name of Khtynoff, for the purpose of maintaining their dominion among the Votiaks, Tcheremisses, and Tartars. The squirrel and beaver furs, especially the latter (beaver being then common in the region), and the Vyatka horscs, as also wax and honcy, were the

chief attractions for trade ; and, notwithstanding the dangers then

encountered on the route to Vyatka and Perm, via Vologda, the

Novgorod merchants and wkshuiniki (plundering merchants) will-

ingly visited Vyatka and settled there. The town soon grew around

the fort, and had to be enclosed within new walls. In 1391 it was plundered by the Tartars, and again in 1477. The power of Nov- gorod was decaying, and the Moscow princes, always pursuing the same policy of intrigue, and showing themselves ready to take up the cause of the poorer classes against the richer merchants, made advantageous use of internal struggles, and annexed Khtynoff to Moscow in 1489. It received the name of Vyatka in 1780.

VYAZMA, a district town of Russia, in the govern- ment of Smolensk, and 109 miles by rail to the north-east of that town, was a populous place as early as the llth century, and carried on a lively trade with Narva on the Gulf of Finland. In the 15th century it fell under the dominion of the Lithuanian princes, but was too close to Moscow to remain in their hands, and was retaken by the Russians by the end of the century. The Poles took it again, however, during the outbreak of 1611, and kept it till the peace of 1634. At present it is an important centre for the trade of Smolensk ; corn, hemp, linseed and hemp seed, tallow, and hides are exported to St Petersburg and Riga, while fish, metals, and manufactured goods are supplied to the neighbouring region chiefly by the Vyazma merchants. The population was 13,000 in 1882.

VYERNYT, formerly Atmary, capital of the Russian Central-Asian province of Semiryetchensk, is situated on a plateau at the base of the Trans-Ili Alatau, in 43° 16' N. lat., 47 miles to the south of the Ili river. It was founded in 1854 as a small blockhouse, but from the advantages of its situation—the fertility of the surround- ing country, the ample water-supply from the Atma- tinka river, and of timber and firewood from the valleys of the Alatau—it rapidly increased ; in 1884 the popula- tion numbered 17,545, nearly 3000 of them military. Around the central blocks are several suburbs of wooden and brick houses ; the streets are broad and planted with trees. Most of the houses are surrounded by thick growths of poplar and elm as well as by fruit-gardens, and the streets and squares are refreshed by channels of running water. 'The Little Russian, Kirghiz, and Tarantchi villages which surround the town, and have excellent orchards, amply supply Vyernyi with all necessaries. The Tarantchis proved specially helpful to the young settlement on account of their laborious habits and their acquaintance with the agriculture of the steppes. Situated as it is on the site of the old Atmaty, at the crossing of two roads—froin Kuldja to Tashkend, and from Semipalatinsk to Kashgar —Vyernyi carries on an active trade in wheat, rice, corn, tea, oil, and tobacco. The dislocation of the rocks on the northern slope of the Alatau Mountains is the cause of severe earthquakes, the last of which, on June 9, 1887, destroyed or damaged nearly a thousand stone houses in Vyernyi and its neighbourhood, killing 326 persons. Slighter shocks were felt up till February 1888.

VYSHNIY VOLOTCHOK, a district town of Russia, in the government of Tver, 82 miles by rail to the north-west of that city, owes its importance to its situation in the centre of the Vyshne-Vototsk navigation system, which connects the upper Volga with the Neva. The portage (votok) of less than 17 miles between the Tvertsa, a tribu- tary of the Volga, and the Tsna, which flows into the Msta and the Volkhoff (Lake Ladoga), had long been used for transporting boats from the one basin to the other, and the canal, which was afterwards dug, soon became one of the most important links of connexion between the Volga and the Neva; now, however, the boats prefer the Mariinsk system, and the prosperity of Vyshniy Vototchok is declining. The inhabitants (11,590 in 1884) support themselves chiefly by shipping, and partly by the cotton industry. The trade is still considerable.

W

W is simply double v, so far as the form goes ; but its value, like its name, is double w, and it dates back to a time when ~ and wv had not been fully differentiated, one into a vowel, the other into a consonant (see under U). The oldest form of the letter was wu, sometimes w only; eg., uulfheard, uilfrith, in the Leber Vitx, 9th cen- tury. Later, a peculiar symbol appears, p, called '" wen"; this belonged to the runic alphabet, which the Latin super- seded: it undoubtedly represented the w-sound. It died out about 1300, probably through the influence of French copyists. As early as the 11th century we find wz, later w. The sound denoted by W is a voiced labial, formed by rounding the lips so much that the voice cannot escape without friction. In the nature of the case no hard and fast line can be drawn between it and the vowel « (any more than between 7 and y): it is impossible to say exactly at what point the open position of the lips for « ceases and sufficient closure for a definite consonant begins. We may perhaps mark out three noticeable sounds :—(1) the clear vowel uw; (2) a consonant u, equivalent to a "glide" in the diphthongs "eu," "ou," d&c., 2.¢., a2 sound which is held not long enough to be a vowel as forming a syllable by itself, yet without sufficient friction to make a consonant; (3) the consonant w. The difference between (2) and (3) may be illustrated by the initial sounds of French " oui" and English "' we"; the ow in "oui" is

a consonant u; it does not make a syllable distinct from the following 7, and so it is not a vowel ; yet it is quite distinguishable from the w in "we." It is probable, from some slight indications, principally in Sanskrit, that both (2) and (3) were sounds of the Indo-European language. But. it could hardly be supposed that they would be kept rigorously distinct in the derived languages ; they lie too near together. It has been already pointed out (see article U) that the

representatives of the sound w varied much in the different ,

languages. In Greek we find F and sometimes v (as in evade, &c.); in Latin there was no symbol to distinguish it from the vowel wu. The English varieties are mentioned above. .

For the history of this sound in connexion with the velar & of the original speech see article Q. This sound died out in most of the derived languages, but left traces in Greek—(1) in the symbol koppa, (2) in the phonetic change called " labialism," by which the slight labial of the original sound developed and eventually changed the guttural explosive into a labial, eg., k'ow became zo. Similarly in Italy the Latin gu of "qui," "'quantus," &e., preserved the original symbol and sound, whereas the Oscan and Umbrian agreed with the Greek in labializing.

In English the w-sound has commonly held its own. It has survived in writing, even in the alinost impossible com- bination wr, as in " wrath," "write," " wreck," " wretch," but the sound is lost. In several Old English words the combination cw was exchanged for qu, as was natural under French influence, ¢g., quoth (O.E. cweed), quell (O.E. ewellan), queen (O.E. cwén),

The digraph wh denotes the voiceless sound correspond- ing to the voiced w. In the great majority of cases where it occurs it represents original k",.as in who, what (original base k"a) ; these were originally written hw4, hweet ; so also "while" was "hwil," "wheeze" was "hws" (Lat. ques- tus). In similar combinations with J and r the & has been lost, as in "loud," formerly " hhid " (kAvrés), raven (hrefn), ring (hring); and in hw the & seems to have robbed the w of its voice (a result denoted by the writing wh), and then fallen off here also as an independent sound.

WACE, whom most modern writers without any autho- rity call Ropert, but who simply calls himself " Maistre Wace," was a clerk ("clerc lisant") and trouvére of the 12th century, who was born in Jersey, studied at Caen, and received from Henry II. a prebend at Bayeux with other gifts. Nothing is known certainly of the dates of his birth or death ; but the one is conjecturally put at about 1120 and the other at about 1180. He seems to have been much about the reigning house of Normandy and England: he boasts of the kindness of Henry to him (he knew, he says, three Henrys, the third being Prince Henry, the eldest son of Henry II.), and is said by Layamon to have dedicated his Brut to Eleanor of Aquitaine. This shadowy personality is partly compensated by a consider- able literary work. Wace has left two long romances, the ftoman de Brut and the Roman de Rou, both of which are interesting monuments of Norman French, while the latter is a document of some importance for English his- tory, the writer informing us that he got some direct information from his father, who no doubt was not his only source. The Roman de Brut, the longer of the two, is in octosyllabic couplets of a facile and somewhat undis- tinguished kind. It has generally been regarded as a mere versifying of Geoffrey of Monmouth, a point which turns to some extent of course on the vexed question of Geoffrey's own originals. The Roman de Rou, a chronicle of the Norman dukes, is much more interesting and much more vigorously written. The greater part of it is also in octosyllables, but there is a large insertion of assonanced alexandrines in something like the form of the chansons de geste. Wace is not in mere poetical value a very good example of the trouvéres, but his subjects give him interest, especially for Englishmen.

The first and hitherto the only edition of the Brut is that of Le Roux de Lincy (1838); the Row, after being edited by Pluguet in 1827, has been recently(1877) re-edited by Dr Hugo Andresen.

WACO, a city and the county seat of M'Lennan county, Texas, U.S., is situated on the west bank of the Brazos river, at the mouth of the Bosque, in an agricultural and pastoral region. It contains Waco university (Baptist) and a female college. The population in 1880 was 7295, more than one-third being negroes.

WADAI. See Sovupay, vol. xxii. p. 279.

WADDING, Luxe (1588-1657), ecclesiastical historian, born at Waterford in 1588, emigrated with his parents to Spain in early youth, and from Spain passed to Portugal, to study at the Irish College in Lisbon. While still a student, he entered the order of Cordeliers, or Friars Minim, in 1604, taking the name Michael Angelo of St Romulus, and his early reputation for learning soon ob- tained for him a professorship of theology at Salamanca. Philip III. of Spain was anxious to procure the formal definition of the Immaculate Conception B. V. M., which had been left open by the council of Trent, and sent Diego de Torres, bishop of Cartagena, as ambassador to the pope for that purpose. Torres, being himself a Cordelier, made choice of Wadding to accompany him on his embassy, and the young divine created so favourable an impression at Rome that another chair of theology was bestowed upon him there, and he was made vice-commissary and procurator- general-of his order. He made Rome his headquarters for the remainder of his life, dying there as principal of the Trish College of St Isidore in 1657.

His earliest publication was an account of the embassy in which he had taken part, MpeoBela, sive Legatio Philippi III. et IV.,

Hispaniarum Regum, ad Summos Pontifices Paulum V., Gregorium XV., et Urbanum VIIL., pro definienda Controversia Immaculate

i

Conceptionis Beate Mariex Virginis (Louvain, 1624, fol.). He

contributed, many ycars later, a work to this question himself, Immaculaiz Conceptionis Beatz Marie Opusculum (Rome, 1655, 8vo), now of extreme rarity. He was also author of a treatise on

the Hebrew language and other occasional writings, but his literary reputation rests chicfly upou the important works he published in

connexion with the Franciscan order. The principal of these arc Annales Ordinis Minorum, 8 vols. folio (Lyons and Rome, 1628- 1654), a book of high repute, recast and enlarged by Fonseca, 19 vols, folio (Rome, 1731-1745), and since continued by Michelcsi, 1794, and Melchiori de Ccretto, 1844 ; Scriptores Ordinis Minorum (Rome, 1650), to which is subjoined a reprint of a Syllabus FF, Minorum, a list of the English Franciscans who were put to death in Tudor days, which had become extremely rare, because most of the original impression was sent to England during the legateship of Cardinal Pole, and was seized and destroyed by order of Queen Elizabeth, because of its reflexions upon the character of Henry

VIll.; an edition of the Concordantix Bibliorum Hebraice of

Calasio, 4 vols. folio (Romc, 1621); Opera Omnia Joannis Duns Scoti, 12 vols. in 11, folio (Lyons, 1639); Sti Francisei Assisiatis Opuscula (Antwerp, 1623); and Sti Antonti Paduani Concordantiz Morales (Rome, 1624).

WAFERS, as articles of stationery, consist of thin, brittle, adhesive disks, used for securing papers together, and for forming a basis for impressed official seals. Wafers are made of a thin paste of very fine flour, baked between "wafer irons" over a charcoal fire till the thin stratum of paste becomes dry and brittle, and the flour starch is partly transformed into glutinous adhesive dextrin. The cake is cut into round disks with suitable steel punches. Bright non-poisonous colouring matter is added to the paste for making coloured wafers. Wafers of gelatin are also made.

WAGER. The law of wagers may be divided for purposes of convenience into two great classes, dealing respectively with procedure and with substantive law. In both classes the legal importance of the wager has tended to diminish.

Procedure.—Determination of cases, civil and criminal, by means of wager or analogous forms of procedure is a characteristic feature of archaic law. The legis actio sacramenti at Rome—at first a real, then a fictitious wager—the wager of battle and of law in England, of the highest antiquity in their origin, survived up to a com- paratively late period in the history of both legal systems. The form of the wager survived

long after its reason had been forgotten. The general prevalence of the wager form of proceeding is perhaps to be attributed to the early conception of a judge asa mere referee who decided the dispute submitted to him, not as an executive officer of the state, but as an arbitrator casually called in (see Maine, Ancient Law, c. x.). Wager of battle in England was a mode of trial which was allowed in certain cases, viz., on a writ of right (see Writ), and on appeals of treason and felony (see Apprat). A full account of the judicial combat will be found under Durr and ORDEAL. Wager of law (vadiatio legis) was a right of a defendant in actions of simple contract debt and of detinue. It super- seded the ordeal (itself called Jew in the Assize of Clarendon and other ancient constitutional records). The mode of proceeding in a wager of law was an interesting relic of that system of compurgation—traced by Blackstone to the

osaic law, Ex. xxii. 10—which was employed in many legal systems, especially the Scandinavian, and had probably an appreciable effect on the development of the English Jury (g.v.). It also has some points of re- semblance, perhaps some historical connexion, with the sponsio and the decisory oath of Roman law, and the reference to oath of Scots law (see OatH). The use of the oath instead of the real or feigned combat—real in English law, feigned in Roman law—no doubt represents an advance in legal development. 'The technical term sacra- mentum is the bond of union between the two stages of law. In the wager of law the defendant, with eleven

305

compurgators, appeared in court, and he swore that he did not owe the debt or (in detinue) that he did not de- tain the plaintifi's chattel ; while the compurgators swore that they believed that he spoke the truth. It was an eminently unsatisfactory way of arriving at the merits of a claim, and it is therefore not surprising to find that the policy of the law was in favour of its restriction rather than of its extension. Thus it was not permitted where the defendant was not a person of good character, where the king sued, where the defendant was the executor or administrator of the person alleged to have owed the debt, or In any actions other than

those named, even though the cause of action were the same. No wager of law was allowed in assumpsit, even though the cause of action were a simple debt. This led to the general adoption of as- sumpsit—proceeding originally upon a fictitious averment of a promise by the defendant—as a means of recover- ing debts. Where a penalty was created by statute, it became a common form to insert a proviso that no wager of law was to be allowed in an action for the penalty. Wager of law was finally abolished by 3 and 4 Will IV. c. 42. Another form of the judicial wager in use up to 1845 was the feigned issue by which questions arising in the course of Chancery proceedings were sent for trial by jury in a common law court. The plaintiff averred the laying of a wager of £5 with the defendant that a certain event was as he alleged ; the defendant admitted the wager, but disputed the allegation ; on this issue was

joined. 8 and 9 Vict. c. 109 enabled such questions to be

referred by the Chancery to the common law courts in a direct manner. Substantive Law,—A wager may be defined as"a promise to pay money or transfer property upon the determination or ascertainment of an uncertain event" (Anson, Law of Contract, p. 171). At common law wagers were legally enforceable, subject to certain rules dictated by considera- tions of public policy, eg., that they did not lead to immorality or breach of the peace, or expose a third person to ridicule. Actions or wagers were not favoured by the

judges ; and, though a judge could not refuse to try such

an action, he could, and often did, postpone it until after the decision of more important cases. Parliament gradu- ally intervened to confine the common law within narrower limits, both in commercial and non-commercial wagers, and both by general and temporary enactments. An example of the latter was 7 Anne c. 16, avoiding all wagers and securities relating to the then war with France, The earliest general enactment was 16 Car, IL. c. 7, pro- hibiting the recovery of a sum exceeding £100 lost in games or pastimes, or betting on the sides or hands of the players, and avoiding securities for money so lost. 9 Anne c. 19 avoided securities for such wagers for any amount, even in the hands of bona fide holders for value without notice, and enabled the loser of £10 or upwards to sue for

the money he had lost within three months. The hardship of the Act, as it affects securities in the hands of bona fide holders, was remedied by 5 and 6 Will. IV. c. 41, which enacted that such securities should be taken to be held for illegal consideration. Finally, 8 and 9 Vict. c. 109, § 18, enacted "that all contracts or agreements, whether by parole or in writing, by way of gaming or wagering shall be null and void; and that no suit shall be brought or maintained in any court of law or equity for recovering any sum of money or valuable thing alleged to be won upon any wager, or which shall have been deposited in the hands of any person to abide the event on which any wager shall have been made; provided always that this enactment shall not be deemed to apply to any sub-scription, or contribution, or agreement to subscribe or contribute, for or towards any plate, prize, or sum of XXIV. — 39

Defini- tion.

money to be awarded to the winner or winners of any lawful game, sport, pastime, or exercise."

What is a lawful game depends upon numerous statutes from 38 Hen. VIII. c. 9 downwards, among which may be classed the Lottery Acts (see Lorrrrims). A curions exception is made in some of the statutes in favour of unlawful games if they are played in a royal palace. The mere making of a wager is not now illegal, as it was under the earlier statutes ; it is simply unenforceable. The winner has no legal remedy against the loser or the stake- holder. The loser can recover his stake where it still remains in the stakeholder's hands or has been paid over to the winner aftcr notice from the loser to the stakeholder not to pay it over. He cannot recover where it has been paid over to the winner without notice. The agentin a wagering contract may have legal rights against his principal, though the principal has none against the other party. Agreements between buyers and scllers of stocks and shares to pay or receive differences only (sometimes known as "'time-bargains") are within 8 and 9 Vict. c. 109, but a broker employed to speculate on the understanding that only differences should be paid by his principal may recover indemnity against the principal. Employment of an agent to bet in his own

name may imply an authority to pay the bet if lost, an authority that may become irrevocable after payment to the winner. Though wagers themselves are now void and not illegal, securities for wagers, by the combined effect of 5 and 6 Will. IV. c. 41 and 8 and 9 Vict. c. 109, are still either illegal (as a bet on the result of a game) or void (as a bet on the result of something other than a game, such as a contested clection). This difference is important as affecting the question of burden of proof in actions on securities originally given for wagering purposes. Where the consideration is illegal, the plaintiff must show affirmatively that he gave value, but the mere absence of consideration throws on him no such duty. In commercial matters the most important examples are wagering policies of insurance, that is, policies made by persons having no insurable interest, and made void by statute (sec INSURANCE). Sir John Barnard's Act, 7 Geo II. c. 8 (called "An Act to prevent the infamous practice of stock-jobbing "), prohibited contracts for liberty to accept or refuse any public stocks or securities, and wagers relating to the stocks.

In Scotland the courts refuse to try actions on wagers, as being sponstones ludicre#, unbecoming the dignity of the courts. 9 Anne c. 19 and 5 and 6 Will. IV. c. 41 extend to Scotland, but the weight of judicial opinion is that 8 and 9 Vict. c. 109 does not. In the United Statcs the loser may, by the legislation of some States, recover his money if he sue within a limited time, as he might have done in,England under 9 Anne c. 19.

WAGES. Wages, although one of the most common and familiar terms in economic science, is at the same time one of the most difficult to define accurately. The natural definition is that wages is the "reward for labour," but then we are at once confronted with the difficulty so well stated by Adam Smith :—" The greater part of people understand better what is meant by a quantity of a particular commodity than by a quantity of labour ; the one is a plain palpable object, the other an abstract notion, which, though it can be made sufficiently intelligible, 1s not altogether so natural and obvious." If we regard wages as the reward for a quantity of labour, it is clear that to make the meaning precise we must give a precise meaning to this abstract notion of Adam Smith. From the point of view of the labourer the quantity of labour refers not so much to the work accomplished (e.g., raising so many foot-pounds) as to " all the feelings of

a disagree- able kind, all the bodily inconvenience or mental annoyance connected with the employment of one's thoughts or muscles or both in a particular occupation " (J. 8. Mill). But this analysis seems only to make the task of definition more difficult, for the class of labourers, in this wide sense of the term labour, would include the capitalist who racks his brains in making plans just as much as the navvy who digs with the sweat of his brow. Thus " profits," in the ordinary sense of the term, instead of being contrasted would to a large extent be classified with wages, and in fact the wages of superintendence or of management is one of the recognized elements in the classical analysis of profits. It is, however, only when we refer to the list of " occupations " in any civilized country that we can really form an adequate idea of the variety of classes to which

the term labour, as defined by Mill, may be extended. In the General Report of the census (1881) in England and Wales (published 1883) an analysis is given of the "un- occupied class." After deducting children and young persons under fifteen, persons over sixty-five years of age, who for the most part had been engaged in work of some kind previously, and those between the ages of fifteen and twenty, who might be considered as training for work, there remained 4,641,190 between the ages of twenty and sixty- five without specified occupation. But of these 4,458,908 were " women, of whom by far the greater part were married and engaged in the management of domestic life," and thus the number of males in the working period of life (20-65) of the " unoccupied " class was reduced to 182,282. Thus practically nearly the whole of the efficient male population of the country was engaged in some form of " labour " and in receipt of some form of " wages."

It may be granted that in certain economic inquiries it is extremely useful to bring out the points of resemblance between " workers" at the various stages of the social scale, and it is especially serviceable in showing that the op- position between "employer" and the "employed," and the " classes " and the "' masses," is often exaggerated. At the same time, however, the differences, if not m kind at any rate in degree, are so great that if the analogy is carried very far it becomes misleading. Accordingly it seems natural to adopt as the preliminary definition of "wages"? something equivalent to that of Prof. Walker in his work on the Wages

Question (the best book on the subject as a whole), viz., "the reward of those who are employed in production with a view to the profit of their employers and are paid at stipulated rates." Even as thus restricted the " working or wage-earning classes " represent probably two-thirds of the population of the United King- dom. It may be observed that by extending the meaning of production, as is now done by most economists, to include all kinds of labour, and by substituting benefit for profit, this definition will include all grades of wages.

Having thus limited the class of those who earn Nominal

"wages," the next point is to consider the way in which and real the wages ought to be measured. The most obvious V8 method is to take as the rate of teme-wages the amount of money earned in a certain time, and as the rate of task- wages the amount of money obtained for a given amount of work of a given quality; and in many inquiries this rough mode of measurement is sufficient. But the intro- duction of money as the measure at once makes it necessary to assume that for purposes of comparison the value of the money to the wage-earners may be considered constant. This supposition, however, does not hold good even between different places in the same country at the same time, and still less with variations in time as well as place. To the labourers, however, the amdunt of money they obtain is only a means to an end, and accordingly economists have drawn a sharp distinction between nominal and real wages. " Labour, like commodities," says Adam Smith, 'may be said to have a real anda nominal price. Its real price may be said to consist in the quantity of the necessaries and conveniences of life which are given for it; its nominal price in the quantity of money. The labourer is rich or poor, is well or ill rewarded, in proportion to the real not to the nominal price of his labour."

Prof. Walker (op. cit., p. 12 sg.) has given a full Vario analysis of the principal elements which ought to be a taken into account in estimating the real wages of labour. a They may be classified as follows. (1) Variations in ~ the purchasing power of money may be due in the first place to causes affecting the general level of prices in a country. Such, for

instance, is a debasement of the coinage, of which a good example is furnished in English

—. — — =

history in the reigns of Henry VIII. and Edward VI. Prof. Thorold Rogers has ascribed much of the degra- dation of labour which ensued to this fact; and Lord Macaulay has given a graphic account of the evils suffered by the labouring classes prior to the recoinage of 1696. The issues of inconvertible paper notes in excess have frequently caused a disturbance of real wages, and it is generally asserted that in this case wages as a rule do not rise so quickly as commodities. A general rise in prices due to great discoveries of the precious metals would, if nominal wages remained the same, of course cause a fall in real wages. There are, however, good grounds for suppos- ing that the stimulus given to trade in this case would raise wages at least in proportion ; and certainly the great gold discoveries in Australia and California raised wages in England, as is shown in Tooke's History of Prices, vol. v. p. 284. Similarly it is possible that a general fall in prices, owing to a relative scarcity of the precious metals, may lower the prices of commodities before it lowers the price of labour, in which case there is a rise in real wages. In the controversy as to the possible advantages of bi- metallism this is one of the points most frequently dis- cussed. It is impossible to say a priori whether a rise or fall in general prices, or a change in the value of money, will raise or lower real wages, since the result is effected principally by indirect influences. But, apart from these general movements in prices, we must, in order to find the real value of nominal wages, consider variations in local prices, and in making this estimate we must notice the principal items in the expenditure of the labourers. Much attention has been given recently by statisticians to this subject, with the view of finding a good " index number" for real wages. (2) Varieties in the form of payment require careful attention. Sometimes the payment is only partly in money, especially in agriculture in some places. In many parts of Scotland the labourers receive meal, peats, potatoes, &c. (3) Opportunities for extra earnings are sometimes of much importance, especially if we take as the

wage-earning unit the family and not the individual. At the end of last century Arthur Young, in his celebrated tours, often calls attention to this fact. At the present time, in Northumberland and other counties a "hind" (2.e., agricultural labourer) is more valued if he has a large working family, and the family earnings are relatively large. (4) Regularity of employment is always, especially in modern times, one of the most important points to be considered. Apart from such obvious causes of fluctuation as the nature of the employment, e.g.,in the case of fisher-men, guides, &c., there are various social and industrial causes (for a particular and able investigation of which the reader may consult Prof. Foxwell's essay on the subject). Under the system of production on a large scale for foreign markets, with widely-extended division of labour, it seems impossible to adjust accurately the supply to the demand, and there are in consequence constant fluctuations in the employment of labour. A striking example, happily rare, is furnished by the cotton famine during the American civil war. (5) In forming a scientific conception of real wages we ought to take into account the longer or the shorter duration of the power to labour: thé man whose employment is healthy and who lives more comfortably and longer at the same nominal rate of wages may be held to obtain a higher real wage than his less fortunate com- petitor. It is worth noting, in this respect, that in nearly every special industry there is a liability to some special form of disease: ¢.g., lace-workers often suffer from diseases of the eyes, miners from diseases of the lungs, &e. (For further illustration the reader may consult the excellent works of Mr Bevan on Industrial Classes and Industrial Statistics.) Thus, in attempting to estimate real wages, we

have to consider all the various discomforts involved in the " quantity of labour " as well as all the conveniences which the nominal wages will purchase and all the supple- ments in kind.

In a systematic treatment of the wages question it General

would be natural to examine next the causes which ae determine the general rate of wages im any country at any sy coun. time. This is a problem to which economists have try at given much attention, and is one of great complexity. any time. It is difficult, when we consider the

immense variety of " occupations " in any civilized country and the constant changes which are taking place, even to form an adequate conception of the general rate of wages. At the census in 1881 in the United Kingdom, the commissioners found it necessary to make a small dictionary of the words by which different classes of workers described their callings, and without a special dictionary it would be impossible to classify such as the following : "' blabber," " doctor-maker," "fluker," "egger," "lurer," "toother," é&c., &c. There are thousands of occupations of various kinds, and at first sight it may seem impossible to determine, in a manner sufficiently accurate for any useful purpose, an average or general rate of wages, especially if we attempt to take real and not merely nominal wages. At the same time, how- ever, in estimating the progress of the working-classes, or in comparing their relative positions in different countries, it is necessary to use this conception of a general rate of wages in a practical manner. The difficulties presented are of the same kind as those met with in the determina- tion of the value of money or the general level of prices, and may be overcome to some extent by thesame methods. An "index number" may be formed by taking various kinds of labour as fair samples, and the nominal wages thus obtained may be corrected by a consideration of the elements in the real wages to which they correspond. Care must be taken, however, that the quantity and quality of labour taken at different times and places are the same, just as in the case of commodities similar precautions are necessary. Practically, for example, errors are constantly made by taking the rate of wages for a short time (say an hour), and then, without regard to regularity of employ- ment, constructing the annual rate on this basis; and again, insufficient attention is paid to Adam Smith's pithy caution that " there may be more labour in an hour's hard work than in two hours' easy business." But, however difficult it may be to obtain an accurate measure of the general rate of wages for practical purposes, there can be no doubt as to the value and necessity of the conception in the theory of political economy. For, as soon as it is assumed that industrial competition is the principal economic force in the distribution of the wealth of a com- munity, and this is in reality the fundamental assumption of modern economic science, a distinction must be drawn between the most general causes which affect all wages and the particular causes which lead to differences of wages in different employments. In other words, the actual rate of wages obtained*

in any particular occupation depends partly on causes affecting that group compared with others, and partly on the general conditions which determine the relations between labour, capital, and production over the whole area in which the industrial competition is effective.

Thus the theory of the wages question consists of two Wages-

A : , fund parts, or gives the answers to two questions :—(1) What on are the causes which determine the general rate of wages } a (2) Why are wages in some occupations and at some times and places above or below this general rate ?

With regard to the first question, Adam Smith, as in almost every important economic theory, gives an answer which combines two views which were subsequently

Analysis of the theory.

308

differentiated into antagonism. "'The produce of labour constitutes the natural recompense or wages of labour," is the opening sentence of his chapter on wages. But then he goes on to say that 'this original state of things, in which the labourer enjoyed the whole produce of his own labour, could not last beyond the first introduction of the appropriation of land and the accumulation of stock." And he thus arrives at the conclusion that " the demand for those who live by wages, it is evident, cannot increase but in proportion to the increase of the funds which are destined to the payment of wages." This is the germ of the celebrated wages-fund theory which was carried to an extreme by J. S. Mill and others; and, although Mill abandoned the theory some time before his death, he was unable to eradicate it from his systematic treatise and to reduce it to its proper dimensions. It is important to observe that in the hands of Mill this theory was by no means, as was afterwards maintained by Prof. Cairnes, a mere statement of the problem to be solved. According to Cairnes (Leading Principles of Political Economy, bk. ii.), the wages-fund theory, as given in Mill's Princoples (bk. ii. ch. xi. §1), embraces the following statements :—(1) the wages-fund is a general term used to

express the aggregate of all wages at any given time in possession of the labour- ing population ; (2) the average wage depends on the proportion of this fund to the number of people ; (3) the amount of the fund is determined by the amount of general wealth applied to the direct purchase of labour. These propositions Cairnes easily reduces to mere verbal statements, and he then states that the real difficulty is to determine the causes which govern the demand and supply of labour. But the most superficial glance, as well as the most careful survey, will convince the reader of Mill's chapters on wages that he regarded the theory not as the statement but as the solution of the problem. For he applies it directly to the explanation of movements in wages, to the criticism of popular remedies for low wages, and to the discovery of what he considers to be legiti- mate and possible remedies. In fact, it was principally on account of the application of the theory to concrete facts that it aroused so much opposition, which would have been impossible if it had been a mere statement of the problem.

The wages-fund theory as a real attempt to solve the wages question may be resolved into three propositions, which are very different from the verbal truisms of Cairnes. (1) In any country at any time there is a determinate amount of capital unconditionally destined for the pay- ment of labour. This is the wages-fund. (2) There is also a determinate number of labourers who must work independently of the rate of wages,—that is, whether the rate is high or low. (3) The wages-fund is distributed amongst the labourers solely by means of competition, masters competing with one another for labour, and labourers with one another for work, and thus the average rate of wages depends on the proportion between wage- capital and population. It follows then, according to this view, that wages can only rise either owing to an increase of capital or a diminution of population, and this accounts for the exaggerated importance attached by Mill to the Malthusian theory of population. It also follows from the theory that any restraint of competition in one direction can only cause a rise of wages by a corresponding fall in another quarter, and in this form it was the argument most frequently urged against the action of trade unions. It is worth noting, as showing the vital connexion of the theory with Muiull's principles, that it is practically the foundation of his propositions on capital in his first book, and is also the basis of the

exposition in his fourth book of the effects of the progress of society on the condition of the working-classes.

WACGCHS

It has often been remarked that, in economics as in other sciences, what eventually assumes the form of the development of or supplement to an old theory at first appears as if in direct antagonism to it, and there is reason to think that the criticism of the wages-fund theory was carried to an extreme, and that the essential elements of truth which it contains were overlooked. In many respects the theory may be regarded as a good first approximation to the complete solution of the problem. The causes which it emphasizes too exclusively are after all vere cause, and must always be taken into account. There can be no doubt, for example, that under certain conditions a rapid Increase in the labouring population may cause wages to fall, just as a rapid decline may make them rise. The most striking example of a great improve- ment in the condition of the labouring classes in English economic history is found immediately after the occurrence of the Black Death in the middle of the 14th century. The sudden and extensive thinning of the ranks of labour was manifestly the principal cause of the great improve- ment in the condition of the survivors.

Again, as regards the amount of capital competing for Apparent labour, the reality of the cause admits of no dispute, at any truth of

rate in any modern society. The force of this element is perhaps best seen by taking a particular case and oon that the general wages-fund of the country is divided into a number of smaller wages-funds. Take, for example, the wages of domestic servants when the payment of wages is made simply for the service rendered. We may fairly assume that the richer classes of the community practically put aside so much of their revenue for the payment of the wages of their servants. The aggregate of these sums is the domestic wages-fund. Now, if owing to any cause the amount available for this purpose falls off, whilst the number of those seeking that class of employment remains the same, the natural result would be a fall in wages. It may of course happen in this as in other cases that the result is not so much a direct fall in the rate of wages as a

diminution of employment—but even in this case, if people employ fewer servants, they must do more work. Again, if we were to seek for the reason why the wages of governesses are so low, the essence of the answer would be found in the excessive supply of that kind of labour compared with the funds destined for its support. And similarly through the whole range of employments in which the labour is employed in perishable services and not in material products, the wages-fund theory brings into pro- minence the principal causes governing the rate of wages, namely, the number of people competing, the amount of the fund competed for, and the effectiveness of the com- petition. This view also is in harmony with the general principles of demand and supply. If we regard labour as a commodity and wages as the price paid for it, then we may say that the price will be so adjusted that the quantity demanded will be made equal to the quantity offered at that price,—the agency by which the equation is reached being competition.

But when we turn to other facts for the verification Apparent of the theory we easily discover apparent if not real ae of

contradictions. The case of Ireland after the potato famine affords an instance of a rapidly declining popu- lation without any corresponding rise in wages, whilst in new countries we often find a very rapid increase of population accompanied by an increase in wages. In a similar manner we find that the capital of a country may increase rapidly without wages rising in pro- portion—as, for example, seems to have been the case in England after the great mechanical improvements at the end of last century up to the repeal of the Corn Laws— whilst in new countries where wages are the highest there

WAGES

are generally complaints of the scarcity of capital. But perhaps the most striking conflict of the theory with facts is found in the periodical inflations and depressions of trade. After a commercial crisis, when the shock is over and the necessary liquidation has taken place, we generally find that there is a period during which there is a glut of capital and yet wages are low. The abundance of capital is shown by the low rate of interest and the difficulty of obtaining remunerative investments.

Accordingly this apparent failure of the theory, at least partially, makes it necessary to examine the propositions into which it was resolved more carefully, in order to discover, in the classical economic phraseology, the " disturbing causes." As re- gards the first of these propositions—that there is always a certain amount of capital destined for the employment of labour—it is plain that this destination is not really unconditional. In a modern society whether or not a capitalist will supply capital to labour depends on the rate of profit expected, and this again depends proximately on the course of prices. But the theory as stated can only consider profits and prices as acting in an indirect round- about manner upon wages. If profits are high then more

combine to create a practical monopoly. Again, the end may be attained by leaving the control to Government, or by obeying the unwritten rules of long-established custom. But these methods of satisfying the economic instincts are opposed to competition in the usual sense of the term, and certainly as used in reference to labour. 'Thus on the negative side competition implies that the economic interests of the persons concerned are attained neither by combination, nor by law, nor by custom. Again, it is also assumed, in making competition the principal distributing force of the national income, that every person knows what his real interests are, and that there is perfect mobility of labour both from employment to employment and from place to place. Without these assumptions the wages-fund would not be evenly distributed according to the quantity of labour. It is, however, obvious that, even in the present industrial system, competition is modified considerably by these disturbing agencies ; and in fact the tendency seems to be more and more for combinations of masters on one side and of men on the other to take the place of the competition of individuals.

The attempted verification of the wages-fund theory leads Wages tosomany important modifications that it is not surprising paid +3 to find that in recent times the tendency has been to reject /™0™ the

: : d it altogether. And thus we arrive at the development of Toon

capital can be accumulated and there is a larger wages- fund, and if prices are high there may be some stimulus to trade but the effect on real wages is considered to be

very small. In fact Mill writes it down as a popular delusion that high prices make high wages. And if the high prices are due purely to currency causes the criticism is in the main correct, and in some cases, aS was shown above, high prices may mean low real wages. If, how- ever, we turn to the great classes of employments in which the labour is embodied in a material product, we find on examination that wages vary with prices in a real and not merely in an illusory sense. Suppose, for example, that, owing to a great increase in the foreign demand for our produce, a rise in prices takes place, there will be a corresponding rise in nominal wages, and in all probability a rise in real wages. Such was undoubtedly the case in Great Britain on the conclusion of the Franco- German war.

On the other hand, if prices fall and profits are low, there will so far be a tendency to contract the employment of labour. At the same time, however, to some extent the capital is applied unconditionally,—in other words, with- out obtaining what is considered adequate remuneration, or even at a positive loss. The existence of a certain amount of fixed capital practically implies the constant employment of a certain amount of labour.

Nor is the second proposition perfectly true, namely, that there is always a certain amount of labourers who must work independently of the rate of wages. For the returns of pauperism and other statistics show that there is alwaysa proportion of "floating" labour sometimes em- ployed and sometimes not. Again, although, as Adam Smith says, man is of all luggage the most difficult to be transported, still labour as well as capital may be attracted to foreign fields. The constant succession of strikes resorted to in order to prevent a fall in wages shows that in practice the labourers do not at once accept the " natural " market rate. Still, on the whole, this second proposition is a much more adequate expression of the truth than the first ; for labour cannot afford to lie idle or to emigrate so easily as capital.

The third proposition, that the wages-fund is distributed solely by competition is also found to conflict with facts. Competition may be held to imply in its positive meaning that every individual strives to attain his own economic interests regardless of the interests of others. But in some cases this end may be attained most effectively by means of combination, as, for example, when a number of people

Adam Smith's introductory statement, namely, that the pro- duce of labour constitutes the natural recompense or wages of labour. The most important omission of the wages- fund theory is that it fails to take account of the quantity produced and of the price obtained for the product. If we bring in these elements, we find that there are several other causes to be considered besides capital, popula- tion, and competition. There are, for example, the various factors in the efficiency of labour and capital, in the organiz- ation of industry, and in the general condition of trade. To some extent these elements may be introduced into the old theory, but in reality the point of view is quite different. This is made abundantly clear by considering Mill's treatment of the remedies for low wages. His main con- tention is that population must be rigidly restrained in order that the average rate of wages may bekept up. But, as several American economists have pointed out, in new countries especially every increase in the number of labourers may be accompanied by a more than proportionate increase in the produce and thus in the wages of labour. Again, the older view was that capital must be first accumulated in order afterwards to be divided up into wages, as if apparently agriculture was the normal type of industry, and the workers must have a store to live on until the new crop was grown and secured. But the " produce" theory of wages considers that wages are paid continuously out of a continuous product, although in some cases they may be advanced out of capital or accumulated stores. According to this view wages are paid out of the annual produce of the land, capital, and labour, and not out of the savings of previous years. 'There is a danger, however, of pushing this theory to an untenable extreme, and over- looking altogether the function of capital in determining wages ; and the true solution seems to be found in a com- bination of the "produce" theory with the ''fund" theory.

An industrial society may be regarded, in the first place, as a great productive machine turning out avast variety of products for the consumption of the members of the society. The distribution of these products, so far as it is not modified by other social and moral conditions, depends upon the principle of 'reciprocal demand." In a pre- liminary rough classification we may make three groups— the owners of land and natural agents, the owners of capital or reserved products and instruments, and the owners of labour. To obtain the produce requisite even

Relative wages.

Natural the policy of Europe. causes of

differ- ence.

310

for the necessary wants of the community a combination of these three groups must take place, and the relative reward obtained by each will vary in general according to the demands of the others for itsservices. Thus, if capital, both fixed and circulating, is scanty, whilst labour and land are both abundant, the reward of capital will be high rela- tively to rent and wages. This is well illustrated in the high rate of profits obtained in early societies. According to this view of the question the aggregate amount paid in wages depends partly on the general productiveness of all the productive agents and partly on the relative power of the labourers as compared with the owners of land and capital (the amount taken by Government and individuals for taxes, charity, &c., being omitted). Under a system of perfect industrial competition the general rate of wages would be so adjusted that the demand for labour would be just equal to the supply at that rate.

Tf all labour and capital were perfectly uniform it would not be necessary to carry the analysis further, but as a matter of fact, instead of two great groups of labourers and capitalists, we have a multitude of subdivisions all under the influence of reciprocal demand. Every sub- group tries to obtain as much as possible of the general product, which is practically

always measured in money. The determination of relative wages depends on the con- stitution of these groups and their relations to one another. Under any given social conditions there must be differ- ences of wages in different employments, which may be regarded as permanent until some change occurs in the conditions ; in other words, certain differences of wages are stable or normal, whilst others depend simply on temporary fluctuations in demand and supply. A celebrated chapter in the Wealth of Nations (bk. i. ch. x.) is still the best basis for the investigation of these normal differences,— which, as stated above, is the second principal problem of the wages question. First of all, a broad distinction may be drawn between the natural and artificial causes of dif- ference, or, in Adam Smith's phraseology, between those due to the nature of the employments and those due to In the former division we have (1) the agreeableness or disagreeableness of the employ- ment, illustrated by two classical examples—' honour makes a great part of the reward of all honourable pro- fessions," and " the most detestable of all employments — that of public executioner—is, in proportion to the work done, better paid than any common trade whatever." There is, however, much truth in Mill's criticism, that in many cases the worst paid of all employments are at the same time the most disagreeable, simply because those engaged in them have practically no other choice. (2) The easiness and cheapness or the reverse of learning the business. This factor operates in two ways. A difficult business implies to some extent peculiar natural qualifica- tions, and it also involves the command of a certain amount of capital to subsist on during the process of learning, and thus in both respects the natural supply of labour is limited. (3) The constancy or inconstancy in the employment,—a point already noticed under real wages. (4) The great or small trust reposed in the workmen, an important consideration in all the higher grades of labour, e.g., bankers, lawyers, doctors, &c. (5) The chance of success or the reverse. Here it is to be observed that, owing to the hopefulness of human nature and its in- fluence on the gambling spirit, the chance of success is generally over-estimated, and therefore that the wages in employments where the chance of success is really small are lower than they ought to be. The most striking in- stance is furnished by the labour in gold mines, diamond fields, and the like, and the same cause also operates in many of the professions.

WAGES

All these causes of differences of wages in different employments may be explained by showing the way in which they operate on the demand and supply of labour in the particular group. If the " net advantages," to adopt Prof. Marshall's phraseology, of any group are relatively high, then labour will be directly attracted to that group, and the children born init will be brought up to the same occupation, and thus in both ways the supply of labour will be increased. But the "net advantages" embrace the conditions just enumerated. Again, if the other members of the community require certain forms of labour to a greater extent, there is an increase in the demand and a rise in their price.

Tn addition to these so-called natural causes of difference, Artificial there are those arising from law, custom, or other so-called causes of artificial causes. They may be classified under four head- q

ings. (1) Certain causes artificially restrain industrial competition by limiting the number of any particular group. Up to the close of last century, and in many instances to a much later date, the regulations of guilds and corporations limited the numbers in each trade (cf. Brentano, Guilds and Trade Unions). This they did by making a long apprenticeship compulsory on those wishing to learn the craft, by restricting the number of apprentices to be taken by any master, by exacting certain qualifications as to birth or wealth, by imposing heavy entrance fees, either in money or in the shape of a useless but expensive masterpiece. Some of these regulations were originally passed in the interests of the general public and of those employed in the craft, but in the course of time their effect was, as is stated by Adam Smith, simply to unduly restrain competition. The history of the craft- guilds is full of instructive examples of the principles governing wages. No doubt the regulations tended to raise wages above the natural rate, but as a natural con-sequence industry migrated to places where the oppressive regulations did not exist. In the time of the Tudors the decay of many towns during a period of rapid national progress was largely due to those "fraternities in evil," as Bacon called the guilds. At present one of the best examples of the survival of this species of artificial restriction is the limitation of the

number of teachers qualifying for degrees in certain universities. (2) In some employments, however, law and custom tend unduly to increase the amount of competition. This was to a great extent the case in the church and the scholastic professions owing to the large amount of charitable edu- cation. Adam Smith points out that even in his day a curate was "passing rich on forty pounds a year," whilst many only obtained £20,—below the wages earned by a journeyman shoemaker. In the same way state-aided education of a commercial and technical kind may result in lowering the rates (relatively) of the educated business classes. It is said that one reason why the Germans replace Englishmen in many branches is that, having obtained their education at a low rate, there are more of them qualified, and consequently they accept lower wages. The customary idea that the position of a clerk is more genteel than that of an artisan accounts largely for the excessive competition in the former class, especially now that education is practically universal. (3) In some cases law and custom may impede or promote the circulation of labour. At the time Adam Smith wrote the laws of settlement were still in full operation. "There is nota man of forty who has not felt most cruelly oppressed by this ill-contrived law of settlement." Differences in wages in different parts of the same country and in different occupations are still largely due to impediments in the way of the movement of labour, which might be removed or lessened by the Government making provisions for

iffer- ence

State

regula- tion of wages,

Poor relief in aid of wages.

Ww 2G fs

migration or emigration. (4) On many occasions in the past the law often directly interfered to regulate wages. The Statute of Labourers, passed immediately after the Black Death, was an attempt in this direction, but it appears to have failed, according to the investigations of Prof. Thorold Rogers. The same writer, however, ascribes to the celebrated Statute of

Apprentices (5th of Elizabeth) the degradation of the English labourer for nearly three centuries (Agriculture and Prices, vol. v.). This, he asserts, was due to the wages being fixed by the justices of the peace. It is, however, worth noting that Brentano, who is equally sympathetic with the claims of labour, asserts that so long as this statute was actually enforced, or the customs founded upon it were observed, the condition of the labourers was prosperous, and that the degradation only began when the statute fell into disuse (Origin of Guilds and Trade Unions).

It is impossible in the limits of this article to discuss this particular case, but something must be said as to the power of the state to regulate wages. As far as any direct regulation is concerned, it seems to be only possible within narrow limits. The state might of course insti- tute certain complex sliding-scales for different classes of labour and make them compulsory, but this would rather be an official declaration of the natural market rate than a direct regulation. Any rate which the state of trade and prices would not bear could not be enforced: masters could not be compelled to work at a loss or to keep their capital employed when it might be more advantageously transferred to another place or occupation. Thus the legal rate could not exceed to any considerable extent the market rate. Nor, on the other hand, could a lower rate in general be enforced, especially when the labourers have the right of combination and possess powerful organizations. And even apart from this the competition of capitalists for labour would tend to raise wages above the legal rate, and evasion would be extremely easy.

The best illustration of the failure to raise the rate of wages directly by authority is found in the English poor law system between 1796 and 1834. "In the former year (1796) the decisively fatal step of legalizing out- relief to the able-bodied, and in aid of wages, was taken," and "in February 1834 was published perhaps the most remarkable and startling document to be found in the whole range of English, perhaps indeed of all social, history" (Fowle's Poor Law). The essence of the system was in the justices determining a natural rate of wages, regard being paid to the price of necessaries and the size of the labourer's family, and an amount was given from the rates sufficient to make up the wages received to this natural level. The method of administration was certainly bad, but the

best administration possible could only have kept the system in existence a few years longer. In one parish the poor-rate had swallowed up the whole value of the land, which was going out of cultivation, a fact which has an obvious bearing on land nationalization as a remedy for low wages. The labourers became careless, inefficient, and improvident. Those who were in regular receipt of relief were often better off (in money) than independent labourers. But the most important con- sequence was that the real wages obtained were, in spite of the relief, lower than otherwise they would have been, and a striking proof was given that wages are paid out of the produce of labour. The Report of the Poor Law Commissioners (1834) states emphatically (p. 48) that "the severest sufferers are those for whose benefit the system is supposed to have been introduced and to be perpetuated, the labourers and their families." The inde- pendent labourers suffered directly through the unfair competition of the pauper labour, but, as one of the sub-

reporters stated, in every district the general condition of the independent labourer was strikingly distinguishable from that of the pauper and superior to it, though the independent labourers were commonly maintained upon less money.

But, although the direct intervention of the state, with the view of raising the nominal rates of wages, is, according to theory and experience, worse than useless, still, when we consider real wages in the evident sense of the term, there seems to be an almost indefinite scope for state interference.

The effect of the Factory Acts and similar legislation has Factory been undoubtedly to raise the real wages of the working- !egisla-

classes as a whole, although at first the same arguments were used in opposition to these proposals as in the case of direct relief from the poor-rates. But there is a vital difference in the two cases, because in the former the tendency is to increase whilst in the latter it is to diminish the energy and self-reliance of the workers. An excellent summary of the results of this species of industrial legisla- tion is given by Mr John Morley (Life of Cobden, vol. i. p. 303) :—

‘ We have to-day a complete, minute, and voluminous code for the protection of labour: buildings must be kept pure of effluvia ; dangerous machinery must be fixed; ehildren and young persons must not clean it while in motion; their hours are not only limited but fixed; eontinuous employment must not exeeed a given number of hours, varying with the trade but prescribed by the law in given cases; a statutable number of holidays is imposed; the ehildren must go to school, and the employer must have every week a eertifieate to that effeet; if an aceident happens notice must be sent to the proper authorities; speeial provisions are made for bakehouses, for lace-making, for eollieries, and for a whole seliedulo of other special callings; for the due enforcement and vigilant supervision of this immense host of minute prescriptions there is an immense host of inspectors, eertifying surgeons, and other authorities whose business it is to ‘speed and post o’er land and ocean’ on sullen guardianship of every kind of labour, from that of the woman who plaits straw at her cottage door to the miner who descends into the bowels of the earth and the seaman who conveys the fruits and materials of universal industry to and fro between the remotest parts of the globe.”*

The analysis previously given of real wages shows that logically all these improvements in the conditions of labour, by diminishing the ‘“ quantity of labour ” involved in work, are equivalent to a real rise in wages. Experience has also shown that the state may advantageously interfere in regulating the methods of paying wages. A curious poem, written about the time of Edward IV., on England’s commercial policy (Political Songs and Poems, Rolls Series, vol. ii. p. 282), shows that even in the 15th century the “truck” system was in full operation, to the disadvantage of the labourers. The cloth-makers, in par- ticular, compelled the workers to take half of their wages in merchandise which they estimated at higher than its real value. The writer proposes that the “wyrk folk be paid in good moné,” and that a sufficient ordinance be passed for the purpose, and a law to this effect was enacted in the 4th year of Edward IV. At the present day the Truck Act (1st and 2d William IV.) is in full operation, and has quite recently been extended. Again, the legis- lation directed against the adulteration of all kinds of goods, which also finds its prototypes in the Middle Ages is in its effects equivalent to a rise in real wages.”

tion.

The power of trade unions in regulating wages is in Trade most respects analogous in principle to that of legislation unions

just noticed. Nominal wages can only be affected within – comparatively narrow limits, depending on the condition of trade and the state of prices, whilst in many cases a rise In the rate in some trades or places can only be accomplished by a corresponding depression elsewhere. At the same een le i

1 For a general criticism of the Allowance System, ¢f. Mill's Principles, bk. ii. ch. xi. § 3.

2 On this subject compare Jevons, The State in Relation to Labour.

nd

ages.

Effeets of

machi- nery on wages,

312

time, however, it can hardly be questioned that through the unions nominal wages have on the whole risen at the expense of profits,—that is to say, that combinations of labourers can make better bargains than individuals. But the debatable margin which may make either extra profits or extra wages is itself small (cf. Atkinson on the Distribution of Products), and at present the principal direct effect of trade unions is to make wages fluctuate with prices, a rise at one time being compensated by a fall at another. The unions can, however, look after the interests of their members in many ways which improve their general condition or raise the real rate of wages, and when nominal wages have attained a natural maximum, and some method of arbitration or sliding-scale is in force, this indirect action seems the principal function of trade unions. The

effects of industrial partnership (cf Sedley Taylor's Profit Sharing) and of productive co-operation (cf: Holyoake's History of Co-operation) are at present small in amount (compared with the total industry of any country) though excellent in kind, and there seem to be no signs of the decay of the entrepreneur system.

The industrial revolution which took place about the end of last century, involving radical changes in pro- duction, destroyed the old relations between capital and labour, and perhaps the most interesting part of the history of wages is that covered by the present century. For fifty years after the introduction of production on a large scale, the condition of the working-classes was on the whole deplorable, but during the last fifty years great progress has been made. The principal results may be summed up under the effects of machinery on wages,— taking both words in their widest sense. Machinery affects the condition of the working-classes in many ways. The most obvious mode is the direct substitution of machinery for labour. It is clear that any sudden and extensive adoption of labour-saving machinery may, by throwing the labourers out of employment, lower the rate of wages, and it is easy to understand how riots arose repeatedly owing to this cause. But asa rule the effect of labour-saving machinery in diminishing employment has been greatly exaggerated, because two important practical considerations have been overlooked. In the first place, any radical change made in the methods of production will be only gradually and continuously adopted throughout the industrial world; and in the second place these radical changes, these discontinuous leaps, tend to give place to advances by small cncrements

WAGES

loom weaver, from fifteen to twenty, assisted by a girl of

'twelve, attending to four looms, could weave eighteen

pieces. This is only one example, for, as Porter remarks, it would fill many large volumes to describe the numerous inventions which during the present century imparted facility to manufacturing processes, and in every case we find a continuity in the improvements. This twofold

progressive character of invention operates in favour of the labourer,—in the first place, because in most cases the increased cheapness of the commodity consequent on the use of machinery causes a corresponding extension of the market and the amount produced, and thus there may be no actual diminution of employment even temporarily ; and secondly, if the improvement takes place slowly, there is time for the absorption of the redundant labour in other employments. It is quite clear that on balance the great increase in population in this century has been largely caused, or rather rendered possible, by the increased use of labour-saving machinery. The way in which the working-classes were at first injured by the adoption of machinery was not so much by a diminution in the number of hands required as by a change in the nature of the employment. Skilled labour of a certain kind lost its peculiar value, and children and women were able to do work formerly only done by men. But the principal evils resulted from the wretched conditions under which, before the factory legislation, the work was performed ; and there is good reason to believe that a deterioration of the type of labourer, both moral and physical, was effected. It is, however, a mistake to suppose that on the whole the use of machinery tends to dispense with skill.

On the contrary, everything goes to prove that under the Progress present system of production on a large scale there is on of the the whole far more skill required than formerly,—a fact Wo"kms

which has been well brought out by Mr Giffen in his essay on the progress of the working-classes (Hssays on Finance, vol. ii. p. 365). The two lowest classes of labour, which constituted each about one-third of the whole manual-labour class of the United Kingdom fifty years ago, now constitute only one-eighth each, and the remaining highest-paid class, which was only one-third fifty years ago, is now three-fourths of the whole. Taking this fact into consideration, it is easy to understand the estimate that the money wages of labour have on the whole risen 100 per cent. during this period. There seems every reason to believe that this rise in real wages will continue with every extension of the power of man over nature.

of imvention. We have an instance of a great radical – change in the steam-engine. Watt's patent for "a method of lessening" the consumption of steam and fuel in fire-

For, taking the most general view of the subject, the more Tendeney there is produced or acquired in exchange from other of profits

countries, so much more is there to consume. But this t fall and wages

engines was published on January 5, 17 69, and it may be said that the movement of substituting steam as a motive power is not yet over. Every day we hear of steam being extended to some new employment and to some out-of- the-way district. The history of the power-loom again shows that the adoption of an invention ig comparatively slow. In 1813 there were not more than 2400 power- looms at work in England. In 1820 they increased to 14,150. In 1853 there were 100,000, but the curious thing is that during this time the number of hand-looms had actually increased to some extent (Porter's Progress of the Nation, p. 186). The power-loom also illustrates the gradual continuous growth of improvements. This is clearly shown by Porter.

very improvement in the production and acquisition of wealth facilitates the creation of new capital, and increases the rate of accumulation, and thus there is a greater intensity in the demand of capital for labour, and the rate of profits falls whilst the rate of wages rises.1_ (3. s, Nt.)

Law RELATING To WAGES.

The legislature has often dealt with wages in a manner whieh modern politieal economy would not endorse. The amount was fixed by the Statute of Labourers in 1349, and by many sueceeding statutes (see LazBour). The poliey of these Acts is now obsolete, although the British parliament has never gone as far as the con- stitution of Louisiana, and expressly provided that no law is to fix the price of manual labour. To conspire to effeet an alteration in wages is now no longer an offence. It was formerly punished very sevcrely both at eommon law and under the provisions of various statutes, espeeially 2 and 8 Edw. VI. e. 15. Existing

legislation on the subject of wages deals with the mode of their payment and reeovery, and their protection from attachment and from the

1 For further information on this branch of the subject eompare Atkinson, Distribution of Products and The Margin of Profits; Leroy-Beaulieu, Repartition des Richesses; Nicholson, Effects of

| Machinery on Wages; and Marshall, Economics of Industry.

bankruptcy laws. They must (except in the case of farm servants) be paid in money, and the payment must not be made in a public house (see PAYMENT). The recovery of wages by SEAMEN (q.v.) is the subject of special legislation. In other cases statutory authority is given to county courts and courts of summary jurisdiction to deal with claims for wages. Sce especially the Employers and Workmen Act, 1875. The County Courts Acts enable an infant to sue in a county court for wages not exceeding £50 as though he were of age. Wages are asa rule privileged debts (see PRIVILEGE). By 33 and 34 Vict. c. 30 the wages of a servant, labourer, or work- man cannot be attached by order of a court of record or inferior court. In Scotland wages arc exempt from arrestment on process under the Small Debt Acts and in any case up to 20s. a week by 8 and 9 Vict. c. 39 and 33 and 34 Vict. « 63. The English Bankruptcy Act, 1883, gives priority in the distribution of a bankrupt's estate to wages of clerks, servants, labourers, and workmen up to the extent of £50. The Scottish Bankruptcy Act, 1856 (as amended in 1875), is in similar terms.

WAGNER, RupoteH (1805-1864), anatomist and physiologist, was born in June 1805 at Baireuth, where his father was a professor in the gymnasium. He began the study of medicine at Erlangen in 1820, and finished his curriculum in 1826 at Wiirzburg, where he had attached himself mostly to Schénlein in medicine and to Heusinger in comparative anatomy. Aided by a public stipendium, he spent a year or more studying in the Jardin des Plantes, under the friendly eye of Cuvier, and in making zoological discoveries at Cagliari and other places on the Mediterranean. On his return he set up in medical practice at Augsburg, whither his father had been transferred ; but in a few months he found an opening

for an academical career, on being appointed prosector at Erlangen. In 1832 he became full professor of zoology and comparative anatomy there, and held that office until 1840, when he was called to succeed Blumenbach at Gottingen. At the Hanoverian university he remained till his death in 1864, being much occupied with ad- ministrative work as pro-rector for a number of years, and for nearly the whole of his residence troubled by ill- health (hereditary phthisis). In 1860 he gave over the physiological part of his teaching to a new chair, retaining the zoological, with which his career had begun. While at Frankfurt, on his way to examine the Neanderthal skull at Bonn, he was struck with paralysis, and died at Géot- tingen a few months later (May 1864) in his 59th year.

Wagner's activity as a writer and worker was enormous, and his range extensive, most of his hard work having been done at Erlangen while his health was good. His graduation thesis was on the ambitious subject of "the historical development of cpi- demic and contagious diseases all over the world, with the laws of their diffusion," which showed the influence of Schénlein. His first treatise was Dic Naturgeschichte des Menschen (in 2 vols., Kempten, 1831). Frequent journeys to the Meditcrranean, the Adriatic, and the North Sea gave him abundant materials for re- search on invertebrate anatomy and physiology, which he com- municated first to the Munich academy of sciences, and republished in his Bettrége zur vergleichenden Physiologie des Blutes (Leipsic, 1832-33, with additions in 1888). In 1834-35 he brought out a text-book on the subject of his chair (Lehrbuch der verglcichenden Anatomie, Vcipsic), which recommended itself to students by its clear and concise style. A new edition of it appeared in 1843 under the title of Lchrbuch der Zootomie, of which only the vertebrate section was corrected by himself. The precision of his earlier work is evidenced by his Micrometric Measurements of the Elementary Parts of Man and Animats (Leipsic, 1834). His zoological labours may be said to conclude with the atlas Iconcs Zootomice (Leipsic, 1841). In 1835 he communicated to the Munich academy of sciences his researches on the physiology of generation and develop- ment, iucluding the famous discovery of the germinal vesicle of the human ovum. These were republished under the title Pro- dromus Historie Gencrationis Hominis atque Anmalium (Leipsic, 1836). Asin zoology, his original researches in physiology were followed by a students' text-book,

Lehrbuch der speciellen Physio- togie (Leipsic, 1838), which soon reached a third edition, and was translated into French and English. This was supplemented by an atlas, Lconcs Physiologicw (Leipsic, 1839). To the same period belongs a very interesting but now little known work on medicine proper, of a historical and synthetic scope, Grundriss der Eneyklo- pidie unit Methodologie der medicinischen Wissenschaften nach geschichtlicher Ansicht (Erlangen, 1838), which was translated into

*Danish. About the same time he worked along with Will at a translation of Prichard's Natural History of Man, and editcd various writings of Sommering, with a biography of that anatomist (1844), which he himself fancied most of all his writings. In 1848, after his removal to Gottingen, he began his great Handwérterbuch der Physiologie, mit Ricksicht auf physiologische Pathologie, and brought out the fifth (supplementary) volume in 1852; the only contribu- tions of his own in it were on the sympathetic nerve, nerve-ganglia, aud nerve-endings, and he modestly disclaims all merit except as being the organizer. While resident in Italy for his health from 1845 to 1847, he occupied himself with researches on the electrical organ of the torpedo and on nervous organization generally; these he published in 1853-54 (Newrologische Untersuchungcn, Gottingen), and therewith his physiological period may be said to end. His next period was stormy and controversial. He cntered the lists boldly against the materialism of "Stoff und Kraft," and avowed himself a Christian believer, whereupon he lost the countenance of a number of his old friends and pupils, and was unfeelingly told that he was suffering from an "atrophy of the brain." His quarrel with the materialists began with his oration at the Got- tingen meeting of the Naturforscher-Versammlung in 1854 on '*Menschenschopfung und Seelensubstanz." 'This was followed by a series of '* Physiological Letters" in the Allgcmeinc Zeitung, by an essay on "Glauben und Wissen," and by the most important piece of this series, " Der Kampf um die Seele" (Gttingen, 1857). Having come to the consideration of these philosophical problems late in life, he was at some disadvantage; but he endeavoured to join as he best could in the current of contemporary German thought. He had an exact knowledge of classical German writings, more especially of*

Goethe's, and of the literature connected with him. In what may be called his fourth and last period, Wagner became anthropologist and archeologist, occupied himself with the cabinet of skulls in the Gottingen museum collected by Blumenbach and with the excavation of prehistoric remains, corresponded actively with the anthropological societies of Paris and London, and organized, in co-operation with the veteran Von Baer, a success- ful congress of anthropologists at Gottingen in 1861. His last writings were memoirs on the convolutions of the human brain, on the weight of brains, and on the brains of idiots (1860-62).

See memoir by his eldest son in the Géttinger gelehrte Anzetgen, " Nachrichten" for 1864,

WAGNER, Witnetm Ricuarp (1813-1883), dramatic composer and reformer of the musical drama, was born at Leipsic on May 22, 1813. In 1822 he was sent to the Kreuzschule at Dresden, where he did so well that, four years later, he translated the first 12 books of the Odyssey for amusement. In 1828 he was removed to the Nicolai- schule at Leipsic, where he was less successful. His first music-master was Gottlieb Miiller, who thought him self- willed and eccentric ; and his first important composition was an "Overture in Bb," performed at the Leipsic theatre in 1830. In that year he matriculated at the university, and took lessons in composition from Theodor Weinlig, cantor at the Thomasschule. His '" First Sym- phony" was performed at the Gewandhaus concerts in

'1833, and in the following year he was appointed con-

ductor of the opera at Magdeburg. The post was an unprofitable one, and Wagner's life at this period was very unsettled. He had composed an opera called Die Feen, adapted from Gozzi's La Donna Serpente, and another,

'Das Lnebesverbot, founded on Shakespeare's Measure for

Measure, but these were never performed, and for some considerable time the young composer found it difficult to obtain a hearing.

In 1836 Wagner married Fraulein Wilhelmina Planer, an actress at the theatre at Kinigsberg. He had accepted an engagement there as conductor, but, the lessee becoming bankrupt, the scheme was abandoned in favour of a better appointment at Riga. Accepting this, he remained actively employed until 1839, when he made his first visit to Paris, taking with him an unfinished opera, for which he had himself prepared a libretto, upon the lines of Lord Lytton's novel Rienzi. The venture proved a most unfortunate one. Wagner was unsuccessful in all his attempts to achieve popularity, and Rienzi, destined for the Grand Opera, was relentlessly rejected. He completed it, however, and in 1842 it was produced at the court theatre in Dresden, where, with Madame Schroeder Devrient and Herr Tichatschek

in the principal parts, it achieved an immense success, and undoubtedly laid the foundation of the great composer's fame.

Though, in completing Rienzi, Wagner had put forth all the strength he then possessed, that work was far from representing his preconceived ideal. This he now en- deavoured to embody in Der Fliegende Lolldnder, for which, as before, he composed both the libretto and the music. In this fine work we find the first sign of his determination to sacrifice all considerations of traditional form and symmetrical construction to the dramatic exigencies of the story. It is true, this great principle was but very faintly announced in the new work, and in an evidently tentative form ; but the success of the experi- ment was incontestable, though it took some time to convince the world of the fact. The piece was warnily received at Dresden, January 2, 1843 ; but its success was by no means equal to that of Rienzi. Spohr, however, promptly discovered its merits, and produced it at Cassel some months later, with very favourable results.

Wagner was now fairly launched upon his arduous career. On February 2, 1843, he was formally installed as hofkapellmeister at the Dresden theatre, and he cele- brated the event by at once beginning the composition of a new opera. For the subject of this he selected the legend

of Tannhiauser, collecting his materials from the ancient "'Tannhiuser-Lied,"! the Volksbuch, Tieck's poetical Erzihlung, Hoffmann's story of Der Sdngerkrieg, and the medizval poem on Der Wartburgkrieg. 'This last-named legend introduces the incidental poem of " Loherangrin," and led to the study of Wolfram von Eschenbach's Parzival und Titurel, with strange effect upon Wagner's subsequent inspirations. But for the present he confined himself to the subject in hand; and on October 19, 1845, he produced his Zannhiiuser, with Madame Schroeder Devrient, Fréiulein Johanna Wagner,? Herr Tichatschek, and Herr Mitterwurzer in the principal parts. Notwith- standing this powerful cast, the success of the new work was not brilliant, for it carried still farther the principles embodied in Der Pliegende Holltnder, and these principles were not yet understood either by the public or the critics. But Wagner boldly fought for them, and would probably have gained the victory much sooner than he did had he not taken a fatally prominent part in the political agitations of 1849, after which his position in Dresden became un- tenable. In fact, after the flight of the king, and the subsequent suppression of the riots by troops sent from Berlin, a formal act of accusation was drawn up against him, and he had barely time to escape to Weimar, where Liszt was at that moment engaged in preparing Tannhduser for performance at the court theatre, before the storm burst upon him with a violence that seriously alarmed both his friends and himself.

Without the loss of a moment Liszt procured a passport, and escorted his guest as far as Eisenach. Wagner pro- ceeded in all haste to Paris, and thence to Zurich, where, with few interruptions, he lived in strict retirement until the autumn of 1859. And it was during this period that most of his literary productions—including Oper und Drama, Ueber das Dirigiren, Das Judenthum in der Musik, and other like works—were given to the world.

We have spoken of Wagner's incidental study of the legends of "' Loherangrin" and " Parzival" during the time that he was preparing the libretto of Tannhduser. After the production of that opera he again recurred to the subject, chose Lohengrin as the title for his next opera, and elaborated the conception with his usual minute and affectionate care, carrying out his new principles somewhat

1 Preserved in Uhland's Alte hoch- wu. mieder-deutsche Volkslieder. 2 The composer's nicce.

farther than he had hitherto ventured to do. He had com- pleted the work before he fled from Dresden, but could not get it produced. Hoping against hope, he took the score with him to Paris, and, as he himself tells us, " when ill, miserable, and despairing, I sat brooding over my fate, my eye fell on the score of my Lohengrin, which I had totally forgotten. Suddenly I felt something like compassion that the music should never sound from off the death-pale paper. 'Two words I wrote to Liszt; his answer was tlie news that preparations were being made for the performance of the work, on the grandest scale that the limited means of Weimar would permit. Everything that care and acces- sories could do was done to make the design of the piece understood. Liszt saw what was wanted at once, and did it. Success was his reward; and with this success he now approaches me, saying, ' Behold we have come thus far ; now create us a new work, that we may go farther '."

Lohengrin was, in fact, produced at Weimar, under Liszt's direction, on August 28, 1850. It was a severe trial to Wagner not to be permitted to hear his own work, but he knew that all that could be done for it was done, and he responded to Liszt's appeal for a new creation by meditating upon his famous tetralogy, Der Ring des Nibelungen, the four divisions of which—Das Lheingold, Die Walkiire, Siegfried, and Gétterdimmerung—though each as long as an ordinary opera, are In reality but parts of one colossal whole. At this time, also, he first began to lay out the plan of Tristan und Isolde, and to think over the possibilities of Parsifal.

It is in theso later works, andin Die Meistersinger von Niirnberg, the first sketch for which had been made at Dresden in 1845, that the genius of Wagner reaches its culminating point; and it is in these only that his great plan for the reformation of the musical drama is fully and honestly carried out. In order to understand this plan, we must first inquire what kind of reformation was needed. What were the abuses that demanded redress? What were the causes that had led to the decline of the opera from a higher state of perfection than that which it exhibited in the

middle of the 19th century—if, indeed, it ever did exhibit a higher state of perfection than that? What, in short, had been the history of the musical drama during the two centuries and a half that had elapsed between its first invention and its arrival at the condition in which Wagner found it when he first began to compose for the stage? The story is a very simple one, and may be told in a very few words; but it was not without an immensity of deep thought and earnest consideration that Wagner was able to grapple with the gigantic practical difficulties with which the case was sur- rounded.

Tho possibility of constructing a musical drama on reasonable principles was first seriously discussed during the closing years of the 16th century, at certain réunions of literary and artistic dilettanti, who were accustomed to meet periodically at the palazzo of Giovanni Bardi, Conte di Vernio, in Florence. The principal members of the little society were Ottavio Rinuccini the poet, Vincenzo Galilei the father of the great astronomer, Giulio Caccini, Jacopo Peri, Pietro Strozzi, and the Conte di Vernio himself. All these earnest savants were deeply embued with the principles of the Renaissance, and regarded the traditions of classical antiquity with a reverence which led them to hold the greatest creations of modern art in undisguised contempt. The music of Palestrina and the great composers of the contrapuntal schools they utterly de- spised ; and their one idea was to revive the system of declamation peculiar to Greek tragedy, and by means of that to produce a form of drama which could be consistently sung throughout as the trilogies of Aschylus and Sophocles were sung by the Greeks. So far their aim was identical with Wagner's. The difference lay in the means by which this aim was to be attained. Wagner himself tells us that, while occupied upon Lohengrin, he looked upon his work as "an experiment towards determining whether or not opera was possible." And in other places he speaks of the question whether or not the modern spirit can produce a theatro that shall stand in relation to modern cultnre as the theatre of Athens stood in relation to the culture of ancient Greece. He believed that this might be accomplished by reforming the opera from the stand- point of Beethoven's music. The friends of the Conte di Vernio had hoped to accomplish it by restoring the actual music of the Greek drama. But this was impossible. For Greek music was based upon a system of tonality which, even in the time of Galilei, had been obsolcte for

centurics. The Greek scales and ours differ so widely in their radical construetion that no vocalist accustomed

Wo AGN HR

to the one could by any possibility sing the other. Even Peri and Vincenzo Galilei must have known this. But, pretending to ignore the fact, they made a compromise, and endeavoured to imitate what they fondly conceived to be the Greek method of recitative, in the tonality of the modern scales; aud in this way they struck, not upon the form of which they were in search—for that was irretrievably lost—but a new one, which rapidly developed itself into the kind of music now called recitative. This recitative —the most valuable artistic invention of the 17th century —they used as the basis of their musical drama; and, after the lapse of two centuries and a half, Wagner determined that this, and none other, must be the basis of his. Enriching it with all the beautiful accessories that had been amassed by composer after composer during its long period of progressive development, and notably with other very important accessories of his own invention, he built his drama upon it as completely as the first dramatic music was built upon it by the frequenters of the Palazzo Bardi. And in this great fact lies the secret of his gigantic reform. :

The first Italian opera ever publicly performed was Jacopo Peri's Euridice, composed to a libretto writteu by Ottavio Rinuccini, and produced at Florenco in 1600, in honour of the marriage of Henry IV. of France with Maria de' Medici. This most interesting work, a rare printed copy of whieh is preserved in the British Museum, is entirely in recitative; and the music is so constructed throughout as to aid in the true dramatic expression of the words, at the expense of all attempt at what is now called melody. The operas of Monteverde, Cesti, Cavalli, and all the earlier composers of the 17th century were conceived upon the same principle. But Alessandro Scarlatti (1659-1725), aiming at higher musical per- fection, and willing to sacrifice no small amount of dramatic truth to its exigencies, introduced certain constructive forms—notably that called the "da capo"—which, while adding to the symmetrical beauty of the aria, tended eventually entirely to destroy its dramatic force and its logical

consistency as an exponent of the situation presented upon the stage. Later composers carried this abuse very much farther. Handcl's strong dramatic instinct kept him above the errors of his time; but his contemporaries simned more and more dceply until, for the sake of obtaining popularity, they were ready to fill their operas with unmeaning passages, introduced solely for the purpose of showing off the skill of the favourite vocalists of the period. And so the abuse proceeded from worse to worse until, under Porpora (1686-1766) and Hasse (1699-1783), the opera at Naples and Dresden became a mere concert sung upon the stage without any trace of dramatic propriety whatever. ©

And now arose a reformer whose work will be remembered as long as the musical drama continues to exist. Christoph Willibald Gluck (1714-1785), disgusted with his own want of success while writing in the vicious style of the period, determined to reform it upon true dramatic principles; and in the preface to his Alceste (1767) he set forth those principles with a clearness which cannot possibly be misunderstood. The history of his great reform has already been narrated in detail (see Guuck). A careful comparison of the argument laid down in the preface to Alceste with that set forth in Wagner's Oper wnd Drama will prove the aim of the two reformers to have been absolutely identical. That a less perfect identity should have existed with regard to the means they used for the attainment of their common end was naturally to be expected. At the outset of their career both Gluck and Wagner freely employed all the resources at their command, adding to them afterwards as circumstances permitted. But between the produc- tion of Gluck's latest and Wagner's first masterpiece art had made enormous strides; the advantage, therefore, in this respect was immeasurably on Wagner's side.

In France Gluck's principles were carried out more or less con- scientiously by Méhul, Cherubini, and Spontini. In Germany they bore still richer fruit. Glorified by the genius of Mozart and Beethoven, and accepted without reserve by Weber, Spohr, Marschner, and the most enlightened of their followers in the German romantic school, they were professed, if not fully carried out, bycomposers of every degree. But in Italy they produced no effect whatever. Though Rossini sometimes invested his situa- tions with a certain amount of dramatic colouring, he

never attempted anything farther than this; while Mercadante, Bellini, Donizetti, and their imitators regarded melody, pure and simple, as the highest, if not the only really important, attribute of art. Under their rule the opera once more descended to the level of a concert on the stage. The effect of their example upon the lower class of German composers was fatal, and ended in the production of a form of Singspiel, lacking all the freshness of the Italian Cantilena, and noticeable only for its intolerable vapidity. Not- withstanding the attempts of Halévy and Meyerbeer to perpetuate in France the traditions of a purer epoch, the musical drama sank, under Auber and his imitators, to the level of a string of dance tunes. Tho 19th century had witnessed the birth of abuses as flagrant as those against which Gluck had protested in the 18th. It was Wagner's turn now to effect the desired reform, and he effected it as completely as his predecessor had done—but not in

the same way. Gluck had begun by propounding a theory, and eatried on the good work by eonsistently putting it into practiec. Wagner theorized also; but for his ultimate triumph he was indebted to the power of his own creative genius—to his ceaseless endeavour to realize the preconceived ideal which neither theory nor desire for reform could ever tempt him to forget. "The nature of the subject," he says, "could not induce me, in sketching my scenes, to consider in advance their adaptability to any particular musical form, the kind of musical treatment being, in every ease, suggested by the scenes themselves. J never contemplated on prineiple, and as a deliberate reformer, the destruction of the aria, the duet, or any other operatic form; but the disuse of these forms followed naturally from the character of my subjects." Surely no frame of mind could be more free from prejudice than this.

While exercising this unrestrained freedom of thought and action, Wagner found one particular form more useful to him than any other. Mozart in Don Giovanni, and Weber in Der Frei- schiitz, Ewryanthe, and Oberon, had availed themselves of certain characteristic musical phrases as exponcnts of emotional or scenic complications of peculiar interest, and had emphasized their mean- ing by repeating them at every

recurrence of the dramatic situation, In modern musical terminology a musical phrase of this kind is now called a "leading theme" (" Leitmotif"). Wagner has em- ployed this expedient more freely than any other composer, and in a way peculiarly his own. Not only has he introduced in his later works a leading theme for every one of the dramatis personx, and for every prominent feature in the scenery or action of the play, but in many cases he even indicates the changing moods and passions of his principal characters by distinct phrases, which he coinbines together with a power of part-writing truly marvellous, interweaving them—as in "Siegfried's Trauermarsch," in the Gotterdimmerung—in such sort as to present the whole story of a life and mission in the music of a single scene. Short-sighted critics have dwelt too much upon the technical ingenuity displayed in scenes of tliis description, and too little upon the expression thrown into them by the power of Wagner's genius. A diligent student may acquire sufficient mastery over the art of part-writing to enable him to interweave his themes with any amount of mechanical perfection, yet without a trace of the beauty displayed by Sebastian Bach in the involutions of his counter-subjects, or by Wagner in labyrinthine combinations used, not for the sake of vaunting his scholarship, but as his most potent engines of dramatic expression. The plaintive wail of the "Trauermarsch " appeals to hearers who know nothing at all of its ingenious construction, and tells its tale to them beyond all possibility of misunderstanding. It is at this point that genius steps in ; and the power of Waguer's genius is irresistible.

It was during the period of his exile that Wagner matured his plans and brought his style to its culminating point of perfection ; but it was not until some considerable time after his return that any of the works he then medi- tated were placed upon the stage. In 1855 he accepted an invitation to London, where he conducted the concerts of the Philharmonic Society with great success. In 1857 he completed the libretto of Tristan und Isolde at Venice, taking as the basis of his scheme the Celtic legend modified by Gottfried of Strasburg's mediaeval treatment of the sub- ject (see Gorrrrrep and Romance). But the music was not completed till 1859. In that year Wagner visited Paris for the third time; and after much negotiation, in which he was nobly supported by the Prince and Princess Metternich, Tannhiiuser was accepted at the Grand

Opéra. Magnificent preparations were made for its production. It was rehearsed 164 times, 14 times with the full orchestra; and the scenery, dresses, and stage accessories generally were placed entirely under the composer's direction. More than £8000 was ex- pended upon the venture; and the work was performed for the first time in the French language on March 13, 1861. But, for political reasons, a powerful clique determined to suppress both the piece and its composer. A scandalous riot was inaugurated by the members of the Parisian Jockey Club, who interrupted the performance with howls and dog- whistles ; and so great was the disturbance that after the third representation the opera was withdrawn to reappear no more. Wagner was broken-hearted. But the Princess Met- ternich continued to befriend him, and in 1861 he received through her intercession a pardon for his political offences, with permission to settle in any part of Germany except Saxony. Even this restriction was removed in 1862.

Wagner now settled fora time in Vienna, where Tristan und Isolde was accepted, but abandoned after 57 rehearsals, through the incompetence of the tenor, Herr Ander. Lohengrin was, however, produced on May 15, 1861, when Wagner heard it for the first time. His circumstances were now extremely straitened ; but better times were at hand. In 1863 he published the libretto of Der Ring des Nibelungen. King Louis II. of Bavaria was much struck with it, and in 1864 sent a private secretary to Wagner, who was then at Stuttgart, with an invitation to come to Munich and carry on his work there. The invitation was accepted with joy by the then almost despairing composer. The king gave him an annual grant of 1200 gulden (£120), considerably enlarging it before the end of the year, and placing a comfortable house in the outskirts of the city at his disposal. The master celebrated his good fortune by composing a " Huldigungsmarsch." In the autumn he was formally commissioned to proceed with the tetralogy, and to furnish proposals for the building of a theatre and the foundation of a Bavarian music school. All seemed to promise well, but no sooner did his position

seem assured than a miserable court intrigue was formed.

against him. His political misdemeanours at Dresden were quoted to his discredit and made the excuse for bitter persecutions, and, notwithstanding King Louis's un- diminished favour, the opposition was too strong to be resisted, and Wagner was obliged to retire to Triebschen, near Lucerne, where he spent the next six years in uninter- rupted study.

Der Fliegende Holländer was performed at Munich in 1864; and on June 10, 1865, Z'ristan und Isolde was pro- duced for the first time, with Herr and Frau Schnorr in the principal parts. Die Meistersinger von Niirnberg, first sketched in 1845, was completed in 1867, and first per- formed at Munich under the direction of Herr von Biilow, June 21, 1868. The story, though an original one, is founded on an episode in the life of Hans Sachs, the poet- cordwainer of Nuremberg ; and Wagner has combined its incidents with infinite ingenuity and humour. The success of the opera was very great; but the production of the tetralogy was still impracticable. The scheme for the new theatre, which was to have been designed by the architect Semper, having been abandoned, there was no opera-house in Germany fit for the production of a work designed on so colossal a scale. A project was therefore started for the erection of a suitable building at Baireuth. Wagner laid the first stone of this in 1872, and the edifice was completed, after almost insuperable difficulties, in 1876.

After this Wagner resided permanently at Baireuth, ina house named Wahnfried, in the garden of which he him- self built the tomb in which his remains now rest. His first wife, Wilhelmina (née Planer), having died in 1866, he was united in 1870 to Liszt's daughter Cosima, who had previously been the wife of Herr von Biilow. Meantime Der Ring des Nibelungen was rapidly approaching com- pletion, and on August 13, 1876, the introductory portion, Das Kheingold, was performed at Baireuth for the first time, followed on the 14th by Die Walkiire, on the 16th by Siegfried, and on the 17th by Gétterddmmerung. The success of the work, the story of which is founded on the famous Nibelungenlied, was very great; and the per- formance, directed by Herr Hans Richter, excited extra- ordinary attention, but the expenses attendant upon its production were enormous, and burdened the management with a debt of £7500. A portion of this was raised by performances at the Albert Hall, in

London, at which the composer himself was present, in 1877. The remainder was met by the profits upon performances of the tetralogy — or, as Wagner himself called it, the " Biihnenfestspiel"— at Munich.

W A G—

WAG

Wagner's next, last, and perhaps greatest work was Parsifal, based upon the legend of the Holy Grail, as set forth, not in the legend of the Mort d' Arthur, which fixes the home of the sacred vessel at Glastonbury, but in the poems of Chrestien de Troyes and Wolfram von Eschen- bach, written in the 12th and 13th centuries, and other less-known works (see the article Romance, in which the subject is treated in its various aspects). The libretto was complete before his visit to London in 1877. The music was begun in the following year, and completed at Palermo, January 13, 1882. The first sixteen per- formances took place at Baireuth, in July and August 1882, under Wagner's own directing, and fully realized the expectations that had been formed of them. There can indeed be no doubt that this last work, called by Wagner a " Bithnenweihfestspiel," in allusion to its mystically religious character, forms a fitting crown to his already brilliant reputation. Unhappily, the exertion of directing so many consecutive performances seems to have been too much for the veteran master's already failing strength, for towards the close of 1882 his health began to decline rapidly. He spent the autumn at Venice, in the Palazzo Vendramini, on the Grand Canal, and was well enough on Christmas Eve to conduct his own first symphony (composed in 1833), at a private performance given at the Liceo Marcello. But late in the afternoon of February 13, 1883, he was seized with a sudden attack of faintness, and on that evening he calmly breathed his last.

Wagner was buried at Wahnfried, in the tomb he had himself prepared, on February 18, and a few days after- wards King Louis rode to Baireuth alone, and at dead of night, to pay his last tribute of respect to the master he had so generously befriended.

In private life Wagner was beloved and respected by all who knew him, though in his public character he made himsclf in- numerable enemies, and provoked an inmmense amount of hatred— it must be confessed, not wholly undeserved—by the violent and intemperate character of his writings. Though Mcyerbeer had been extremely kind to hin in Paris, he spoke of him in Oper wnd Drama with the grossest disrespect. His utterly groundless pre- judice against Liszt was ultimately conquered by that great master's beautiful forbearance alone. But these things will be forgotten, while the brightness of his genius will remain the lasting heritage of art. In person he was rathcr below the middle height, erect in carriage, with commanding aspect and remarkable quickness of speech and gesture. 'That his manners were to some extent uncon- ventional there can be no doubt, but those who knew him best deny that there was even the semblance of truth in the absurd stories that were circulated with regard to his extraordinary eccentricities.

Besides the great dramatic works we have mentioned, Wagner composed the choral music for Weber's funeral (Dresden, 1844), Das Liebesmahl der Apostel (Dresden, 1847), Hine Faustovertire (Paris, 1839), Katsermarsch (1871), Siegfried Idyl (1871), and a not very numerous collection of smaller pieces. His literary works, published at Leipsic in 1871, fill nine thick volumes. (W. S. RB.)

WAGTAIL (Wagsterd and Wagstyrt, 15th century, fide Th. Wright, Vol. Vocabularies, ii. pp. 221, 253; Uuagtale, Turner, 1544, p. 53), the little bird that delights us equally by its neat coloration, its slender form, its nimble actions, and its sprightly notes. Since it is so generally dispersed, especially in summer, throughout the British Islands, it seems to need no further description.

The Pied Wagtail of authors, it is the Motacilla luqubris of modern ornithology, or Af. yarrelli of some writers, and has for its very near ally —if indeed it be not considcred mercly a local race or subspecies of—the Jf. alba of Linneus, which has a wide range in Europe, Asia, and Africa, visiting England almost yearly, and chiefly differing from the ordinary British form in its lighter- coloured tints, —the cock especially having a clear grey instead of a black back. Eleven other more or less nearly-allied

species are recognized by Mr Sharpe (Cat. B. Brit. Musewm, x. pp. 456-496), who has laboriously treated the complicated synonymy of this group of birds. Eight of these are natives of Asia, several of them wintering in India, and one, M. ocularis, even occasionally reach- ing the west coast of North America, while the rest are con- fined to Africa. No colours but black, grey, or white enter into the plumage of any of the foregoing ; but in the species peculiar to

Madagascar, M. flaviveniris, as well as in that which it much re- sembles, the so-called Grey Wagtail of Britain, 42. melanope (AL. boarula or sulphurea of some authors), a great part of the lower surface is yellow. The species last mentioned is one of the most graceful of birds, and though having a very wide range in the world at large is curiously local in its distribution in Britain, being almost wholly confined in the breeding-season to the neighbourhood of rocky streams in the west and north, and a line drawn from the Start Point, slightly curving to round the Derbyshire hills, and ending at the mouth of the Tecs, will, it is believed, mark off its breeding-range in England. Then there is a section which by some systematists has beeu raised to the rank of a genus, Budytes, con- taining the Wagtails in which yellow takes a still more prominent part in their coloration. Of these, 8 species, besides several sub- species, are recognized by Mr Sharpe (ut supra, pp. 503-532). One of these is the common Yellow Wagtail of England, Jf. radi (by some mistakenly called Jf, campestris), which, though very gene- rally distributed throughout the country, is much less numerous than the Pied Wagtail, and more addicted to wet meadows; but, just as Jf. lugubris is regarded by some as a local form of the more widely-ranging M. alba, so does Mf, raii hold the same relation to M. flava, the Blue-headed Wagtail, which has a very extensive distribution in the Old World, and even crosses the Pacific to Alaska, presenting also a great number of varieties or races (most of which are treated by Mr Sharpe as real species) differing from each other chiefly, if not solely, in the colour of the head, a character which in this section can hardly be deemed specific, while their geographical range intersects and inosculatcs in a most puzzling manner. Much credit is due to the author just named for the enormous trouble he has taken, after study of a vast

series of speci- mens, to clear up the questions herein involved ; but it will probably be long before ornithologists can agree on many of the disputed points, and it is certain that the last word has by no means been spoken concerning them.

The genus Motacilla (an exact rendering of the English " Wagtail," the Dutch Kwikstaart, the Italian Codatremola and other similar words), which, as originally founded by Linnzus, centained nearly all the "soft-billed" birds of early English ornithologists, was restricted by various authors in succession, following the example set by Scopoli in 1769, until none but the Wagtails remained in it. Most of the rest are now commonly classed as Sylvidzx (cf. WarBLER), while the Wagtails with the Prrrts (¢.v.) constitute the Family Motacillde. (A. N.)

WAHABEES, or WanHdsis. See ArAbta, vol. ii. p.

260.

WAINEWRIGHT, THomas Grirrirus (1794-c. 1852), journalist and subject-painter, was born at Chiswick in October 1794. He was educated by his distant relative Dr Charles Burney, and served as an orderly officer in the guards, and as cornet ina yeomanry regiment. In 1819 he entered on a literary life, and began to write for The Interary Pocket-Book, Blackwood's Magazine, and The Foreign Quarterly Review. He is, however, most definitely identified with Zhe London Magazine, to which, from 1820 to 1823, he contributed some smart but most flippant art and other criticisms, under the signatures of "James Weathercock," "Mr Bonmot," and "Herr Vinkbooms." He was a friend of Charles Lamb,—who thought well of his literary productions, and in a letter to Bernard Barton, styles him the 'kind, light-hearted Wainewright," —and of the other brilliant contributors to the journal. He also practised as an artist, designing illustrations to Chamber- layne's poems, and from 1821 to 1825 exhibiting in the Royal Academy figure pictures, including a Romance from Undine, Paris in the Chamber of Helen, and the Milk Maid's Song. Owing to his extravagant habits, Waine- wright's affairs became deeply involved ; and in 1830 he insured the life of his sister-in-law in various offices for a sum of £18,000. The lady died in the December of the same year, and payment of tlle amount was declined by the companies on the

ground of their having been misrepre- sentation when the insurance was effected. Wainewright now retired to France, but here he was seized by the authorities as a suspected person, and imprisoned for six months. On his being examined there was found upon

“May 24, 1886.

O17

his person a quantity of strychnine, a poison by means of which it was afterwards found he had destroyed, not only his sister-in-law, but also his uncle, his mother-in-law, and a Norfolkshire friend. He returned to London in 1837, but was at once arrested on a charge of forging, thirteen years before, a transfer of stock, and was sentenced to transportation for life. He died of apoplexy in Hobart Town hospital, about the year 1852.

The Essays and Criticisms of Waincwright were published in 1880, with an account of his life, by W. Carew Hazlitt ; and the history

of his crimes suggested to Dickens his story of “ Hunted Down,” and to Bulwer Lytton his novel of Lweretia.

WAITZ, Guore (1813-1886), one of the most distin- guished of modern German historians, was born at Flens- burg, in the duchy of Schleswig, on October 9, 1813. He was educated at the Flensburg gymnasium and the uni- versities of Kiel and Berlin. His strong bent to historical studies and the influence of Ranke early diverted him from his original purpose of studying law, and while still a student he began that series of researches in German medieval history which was to be the occupation of his life. On graduating at Berlin in August 1836, Waitz went to Hanover to assist Pertz in the great national work of publishing the Monumenta German Lirstorica ; and the energy and learning he displayed in that position won him a summons to the chair of history at Kiel in 1842. The young professor soon began to take an interest in politics, and in 1846 entered the provincial diet as representative of his university. His leanings were strongly German, so that he became somewhat obnoxious to the Danish Govern- ment, a fact which made an invitation in 1847 to become professor of history at Géttingen peculiarly acceptable. The political

events of 1848-49, however, delayed his appearance in his new chair. When the German party in the northern duchies rose against the Danish Government, Waitz hastened to place himself at the service of the pro- visional Government. He was sent to Berlin to represent the interests of the duchies there, and during his absence he was elected by Kiel as a delegate to the assembly at Frankfort. Waitz was an adherent of the party who were eager to bring about a union of the German states under a German emperor ; and when the king of Prussia declined the imperial crown the professor withdrew from the assembly in disappointment, and ended his active share in public life. In the autumn of 1849 Waitz began his lectures at Géttingen. His style of speaking was dry and uninteresting ; but the matter of his lectures was so practical and his teaching so sound that students were attracted in crowds to his lecture-room, and the reputation of the Géttingen historical school spread far and wide. At the same time Waitz's pen was not idle, and his industry is to be traced in the list of his works and in the Pro- ceedings of the different historical societies to which he belonged, In 1875 Waitz removed to Berlin to succeed Pertz as principal editor of the Monumenta Germaniz Historica. In spite of advancing years the new editor threw himself into the work with all his former vigour, and took journeys to England, France, and Italy to collate works preserved in these countries. He died at Berlin on He was twice married,—in 1842 to a daughter of Schelling the philosopher, and in 1858 toa daughter of General Von Hartmann.

Waitz is often spoken of as the chief disciple of Ranke, though perhaps in general characteristics and mental attitude he has more affinity with Pertz or Dahlmann. Ife is an industrious and painstaking historian, who, with- out troubling himself about the graces of style, has collected and published an immense quantity of valuable and care- fully sifted material. His special domain was medizeval German history, and he rarely travelled beyond it.

Waitz's chief works are—Deutsehe Verfassungs-Geschichte, 8 vols., Kiel, 1844-78 ; 2d ed., 2 vols. only, 1865-70; Sehlcswig-Holsteins Gesehichtc, 2 vols., Gottingen, 1851-54 (the 3d vol. was never pub- lished); Liibeek

unter Jiirgen Wullenwever und die Ewropiiische Politik, 3 vols., Berlin 1855-56; and Grundziige der Politik, Kiel, 1862. Among his smaller works, which, however, indieate the line of his researches, are the following :—Jahrbiicher des deutsehen Retehs unter Heinrich [., Berlin, 1887, 3d ed., 1885; Ucber das Leben und die Lehre des Uljila, Hanover, 1840; Das alte Reeht der Salischen Franken, Kiel, 1846; and Deutsehe Kaiser von Karl dem Grossen bis Maximilian, Berlin, 1872. In eonjunction with other scholars Waitz took a leading part in the publication of the Forsehungen zur deutschen Geschichte, Munich, 1862 sq., and in the Nordalbingisehe Studien, published in the proceedings of the Sehleswig-Holstein Historical Society, Kiel, 1844-51. It is im- possible here to do more than refer to his numerous and valuable eontributions to the Afonwmenta, and to his numerous papers and criticisms published in periodicals and the proceedings of historical societies. A Bibliographisehe Ucbersicht tiber Waitz's Werke was published by E. Steindorff at Gottingen in 1886.

Obituary notices of Waitz are to be found In the Historische Zeitschrift, new series, vol. xx.; in tho publications for 1886 of tho Berlin Aeademie,der Wissen- sehaften, the Gottingen Gesellschaft der Wissensehaften, and the Hansische Gesehiehtsverein; in the Histortsches Jahrbuch der Gérres Gesellschaft, vol, viiis and in the Revue Historique, vol. xxxi.

WAKEFIELD, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of England, in the West Riding of York- shire, of which division it is the shire-town, is pleasantly situated on the Calder, and on the Lancashire and Yorkshire, Great Northern, and North-Eastern Railway lines, 9 miles south of Leeds and 1754 miles from London. It has water communication (via Goole) with Hull by the Calder, which also communicates with the Lancashire canals. The streets are spacious; and, if the town has a somewhat old-fashioned appearance, and is less regularly built than several of the other large towns in Yorkshire, it enjoys the advantage of an atmosphere less polluted by smoke. The Calder is crossed by a fine bridge of eight arches, on which stands the chantry of St Mary, a beautiful Gothic structure, 30 feet long by 24 feet wide, endowed by Edward IV. in memory of his father Richard, duke of York, killed at the battle of

Wakefield in 1460; it was restored in 1847 at a cost of £3000. The parish church of All Saints, conse- crated by Archbishop William de Melton in 1329, but almost wholly rebuilt in the 15th century, is a beautiful building, partly Early English and partly Perpendicular, consisting of chancel, nave, and tower surmounted by a fine spire rebuilt in 1860-61, the total height being 247 feet. The whole building was restored in 1857-86 from designs of the late Sir Gilbert Scott, at a cost of about £30,000. The other churches are without special interest. The Elizabethan grammar school founded in 1592 was rebuilt in 1829; it is now regulated by a scheme formed by the charity commissioners. Among the principal public buildings of Wakefield are the corn exchange, erected in 1837, enlarged in 1862, and including a public concert- room; the town-hall, in the French Renaissance style, opened in 1880 at a cost of £80,000 ; the large prison for the West Riding of Yorkshire; the West Riding sessions house ; the borough police station (1879); the office of probate (1863); the mechanics' institution, with large library ; the church institute and library; the fine art institution ; and the public baths. The benevolent insti- tutions include the Clayton ~~hospital, built on the pavilion system, opened in 1879 at a cost of £25,000, and the West Riding pauper lunatic asylum, with accommodation for upwards of 1400 patients. Formerly Wakefield was the great emporium of the cloth manufacture in Yorkshire, but it has within the present century been superseded in this respect by Leeds. Foreign weavers of cloth were estab~~ lished at Wakefield by Henry VII.; and Leland, writing in the time of Henry VIII, states that its "whole profit stand- eth by coarse drapery." During the 18th century it became noted for the manufacture of worsted yarn and woollen stuffs. Although its manufacturing importance is now

small in comparison with that of several other Yorkshire towns, it possesses large mills for spinning worsted and carpet yarns, cocoa fibre, and China grass. It has also rag-crushing mills, chemical works, soap-works, and iron- works ; and there are a large number of collieries in the neighbourhood. Wakefield is the chief agricultural town in the West Riding, and has one of the largest corn-markets in the north of England.

It possesses large agricultural implement and machine works, corn and flour mills, malt- works, and breweries.

Wakefield is supposed by some to oceupy the site of a Roman station. In Bones the name oecurs as Wackofield. Originally it consisted of three hamlets—Northgate, Kirkgate, and Westgate. The manor of Wakefield soon after the Conquest was granted to William, third earl of Warren. It formed an extensive baronial liberty extending westwards to the borders of Laneashire and Cheshire. On the death without male issue (30th June 1347) of John, eighth earl'of Warren, it reverted to the erown, and by Edward Il]. it was given to his fifth son, Edward de Langley, whom he ereated earl of Cambridge, and who in the reign of Richard II. was created duke of York. After the battle of Wakefield in 1460 it re- mained in the possession of the erown till the reign of Charles I., who granted it to Henry, earl of Holland. It became the marriage portion of the earl's daughter when she married Sir Gervaise Clifton of Clifton in the eounty of Nottingham. About 1663 Sir Gervaise Clifton sold it to Sir Christopher Clapham, whose heirs in the year 1760 sold it to the duke of Leeds, and it still remains in the possession of that family. Near Wakefield Queen Margaret inflieted a memorable defeat on Riehard, duke of York (31st Decem- ber 1460). The town has possessed a corn-market sinee the time of the Saxons, It obtained a charter for a cattle-market 1st Mareh 1765. It was incorporated by Charles I. in 1626, and was governed by a constable, until it obtained a new charter under the Municipal Act, 11th Mareh 1848. Sinee 1832 it has returned a member of parliament. Under an Improvement Act obtained in 1877, the corporation were empowered to purchase the waterworks belonging to a company which had been formed in 1835. In 1880 an Aet was granted for obtaining a supply from Rishworth Moors, near Halifax, and the works were completed in 1888 at a eost of about £500,000.

WAKEFIELD, Epwarp Gibson (1796-1862), colonial statesman, was born in London, March 20, 1796, of an originally Quaker family. His father, Edward Wakefield, author of Ireland, Statistical and Political, was a surveyor and land agent in extensive practice; his grandmother, Priscilla Wakefield, was a popular author for the young, and one of the first introducers of savings banks. Wakefield was fora short time at

Westminster School, and was brought up to his father's profession, which he relinquished on occasion of his elopement at the age of 20 with Miss Pattle, the orphan daughter of an Indian civil servant. The young lady's relatives ultimately became reconciled to the match, and procured him an appointment as attaché to the British legation at Turin. He resigned this post in 1820, upon the death of his wife, to whom he was fondly attached, and, though making some efforts to connect himself with journalism, spent the years immediately succeeding in idle- ness, residing for the most part in Paris. In 1826 he ap- peared before the public as the hero of a most extraordinary adventure, the abduction of Miss Ellen Turner, daughter of .William Turner, of Shrigley Park, Cheshire. Miss Turner was decoyed from school by means of a forged letter, and made to believe that she could only save her father from ruin by marrying Wakefield, whom she accordingly

Wee het Pol & D

accompanied to Gretna Green, This time the family refused to condone his proceedings ; he was tried with his confederates at Lancaster assizes, March 1827, convicted, and sentenced to three years' imprisonment in Newgate. The marriage, which had not been consummated, was dissolved by a special Act of Parliament. A disgrace which would have blasted the career of most men made Wake- field a practical statesman and a benefactor to his country. Meditating, it is probable, emigration upon his release, he turned his attention while in prison to colonial subjects, and acutely detected the main causes of the slow progress of the Australian colonies in the enormous size of the landed estates, the reckless manner in which land was given away, the absence of all systematic effort at colonization, and the consequent discouragement of immigration and dearth of labour. He proposed to remedy this state of things by the sale of land in small quantities at a sufficient price, and the employment of the proceeds as a fund for promot- ing immigration. 'These views were expressed with extra- ordinary vigour and incisiveness in his Letter from Sydney (1829), published while he was still in prison, but composed with such graphic power that it has been continually quoted as if written on the spot. After his release Wakefield seemed disposed for a while to turn his attention to social questions at home, and produced a tract on the

Punishment of Death, with a terribly graphic picture of the condemned sermon in Newgate, and another on incendiarism in the rural districts, with an equally powerful exhibition of the degraded condition of the agricultural labourer. He soon, however, became entirely engrossed with colonial affairs, and, having impressed Stuart Mill, Colonel Torrens, and other leading economists with the value of his ideas, became a leading though not a conspicuous manager of the South Australian Company, by which the colony of South Australia was ultimately founded. In 1833 he published anonymously Hngland and America, a work primarily in- tended to develop his own colonial theory, which is done in the appendix entitled "'The Art of Colonization." The body of the work, however, is fruitful in seminal ideas, though some statements may be rash, and some conclusions extravagant. It contains the distinct proposal that the transport of letters should be wholly gratuitous—the pre- cursor of subsequent reform—and the prophecy that, under given circumstances, 'the Americans would raise cheaper corn than has ever been raised." In 1836 Wakefield pub- lished the first volume of an edition of Adam Smith, which he did not complete. In 1837 the New Zealand Associa- tion was established, and he became its managing director. Scarcely, however, was this great undertaking fairly com- ienced when he accepted the post of private secretary to Lord Durham on the latter's appointment as special com- missioner to Canada. The Durham Report, the charter of constitutional government in the colonies, though drawn up by Charles Buller, embodied the ideas of Wakefield, and the latter was the means of its being given prematurely to the public through the Z%mes, to prevent its being tampered with by the Government. He acted in the same spirit a few months later, when (about July, 1839), under- standing that the authorities intended to prevent the despatch of emigrants to New Zealand, he hurried them off on his own responsibility, thus compelling the Govern- ment to annex the country just in time to anticipate a similar step on the part of France. For several years Wakefield continued to direct the New Zealand Company, fighting its battles with the colonial office and the missionary interest, and secretly inspiring and guiding many parlia- mentary committees on colonial subjects, especially on the abolition of transportation, The company was by no means a financial success, and many of its proceedings were wholly unscrupulous and indefensible ; its great object, however,

was attained, and New Zealand became the Britain of the south. In 1846 Wakefield, exhausted with labour, was struck down by apoplexy, and spent more than a year in complete retirement, writing during his gradual recovery his Art of Colonization. The management of the company had meanwhile passed into the hands of others, whose sole object was to settle accounts with the Government, and wind up the undertaking. Wakefield seceded, and joined Lord Lyttelton and Mr Godley in establishing the Canterbury settlement as a Church of England colony. A portion of his correspondence on this subject has been published by his son, and is perhaps the most adequate memorial extant of the vigour and sagacity of his intellect. As usual with him, however, he failed to retain the confidence of his coadjutors to the end. In 1853, after the grant of a constitution to New Zealand, he took up his residence in the colony, and immediately began to act a leading part in colonial politics. In 1854 he appeared in the first New Zealand parliament as extra-official adviser of the acting governor, a position which excited great jealousy, and as the mover of a resolution demanding the appointment of a responsible ministry. It was carried unanimously, but difficulties, which will be found detailed in Swainson's Vew Zealand and its Colonization (ch. 12), prevented its being made effective until after the mover's retirement from political life. In December 1854, after a fatiguing address to a public meeting, followed by prolonged exposure to a south-east gale, his constitution entirely broke down. He spent the rest of his life in retirement, dying at Wellington on 16th May 1862.

Wakefield was a man of large views and lofty aims, and in private life displayed the warmth of heart which commonly accompanies these qualities. His main defect was unscrupulousness: he hesitated at nothing necessary to accomplish an object, and the conviction of his untrustworthiness gradually alienated his associates, and left him politically powerless. Excluded from parliament by the fatal error of his youth, he was compelled to resort to in- direct means of working out his plans by influencing public men. But for a tendency to paradox, his intellectual powers were of the highest order, and as a master of nervous idiomatic English he is second to Cobbett alone. After every deduction it remains

true that no contem- porary showed equal genius as a colonial statesman, or in this department rendered equal service to his country.

For an impartial examination of the Wakefield system, sec Leroy-Beaulieu, De la Colonisation chez les Peuples Modernes (8d ed., pp. 562-575 and 696-700). (R. G.

WAKEFIELD, Gitzert (1756-1801), classical scholar, theologian, and politician, was born at Nottingham, February 22, 1756, and was the son of the Rev. George Wakefield, rector of St Nicholas. After being educated at. various private schools, he proceeded at the age of sixteen to Jesus College, Cambridge, where he cultivated his classical studies diligently, but imbibed a thorough distaste for logic and mathematics. He became, however, fellow of his college in 1776, and in 1778 was ordained by the bishop of Peterborough, in a frame of mind which led him afterwards to declare that he regarded his subscription to the Articles as the most disingenuous action of his life. He held, however, curacies for a short time at Stockport and Liverpool, but in 1779, the year of his marriage, quitted the church, and accepted the post of classical tutor at the Nonconformist academy at Warrington. The institution was already on the decline, and Wakefield's pugnacious temper was not likely to contribute to restore it. 'It survived my arrival, he says, "four years." During this short period he published translations of Matthew and the first epistle to the Thessalonians, and treatises on inspiration and baptism,

the latter of which was entirely written in nine days. He apologizes for this precipitancy as the result of 'a con- stitutional ardour which will not suffer me to dwell long on the same subject." However inevitable, this was the source of most of his failures and mistakes. After the dissolution of the academy, he resided successively at Brameote in Nottinghamshire, at Richmond, and at Nottingham, taking pupils and persevering in his theo-logical and classical studies, which were considerably retarded by ill health. His most important production at this time was the Silva Critica, "illustrating the Scriptures by light borrowed from the philology of Greece and Rome." Three parts of this work were printed at the

Cambridge university press, but, the authorities declining to proceed further with it, the author was obliged to com- plete it himself. In 1790 he was appointed professor of classics at the newly-founded Unitarian college at Hackney. Here he speedily became uncomfortable ; his proposals for reform in the course of instruction were unacceptable to his colleagues, and his dislike to the religious services, which he carried to the length of objecting to all social worship, occasioned his resignation in June 1791. The publication of his views on public worship deprived him of all his private pupils, and his time was henceforth devoted to authorship and the education of his children. His next important work was a new translation of the New Testa- ment, retaining as much of the language of the Authorized Version as he deemed consistent with accuracy. This soon reached a second edition. He commenced an edition of Pope, which he was prevented from completing by the competition of Warton, but the notes were published separately. His edition of Lucretius, a work of high pre- tensions and little solid performance, appeared in 1796. It gained for the editor a very exaggerated reputation, but Wakefield suffered himself to be allured from the paths of literature into those of political and religious controversy. After assailing with equal acerbity writers so diverse in their principles as Wilberforce and Thomas Paine, he in January 1798 "employed a few hours" in drawing up a reply to Bishop Watson's Address to the People of Great Britain. These few hours procured him two years' imprisonment in Dorchester jail. He was convicted in February 1799 of having published a seditious libel, an offence which he had assuredly no intention of committing, and his eloquent defence was naturally thrown away upon the same jurymen who had already convicted the printer. The sympathy excited for him, however, led to a subscription, amounting to no less than £5000, and forming a sufficient provision for his family upon his death, which occurred September 9, 1801, shortly after his liberation, from an attack of typhus fever. He had occupied himself while in prison with the preparation of classical lectures and an English- Greek lexicon, and had corresponded on classical subjects with Charles James Fox. 'The letters were subsequently published.

Wakefield was one of the most honest of nen, but also one of the most precipitate, narrow-minded, and _pre- sumptuous. His extreme ardour

and his consciousness of integrity produced an uncharitableness verging on offensive- ness, little in harmony with the many magnanimous and amiable features of his character. Rashness, opinionative- ness, and contentiousness grievously marred in him the character of patriot and scholar, though they could not destroy his claim to be numbered among both.

The priucipal authority for his life is the second edition of his Memoirs, in two volumes (London, 1804). The first volume is autobiographical ; the second, compiled by the editors, Rutt and Wainwright, includes several estimates of his character and per- formances from various sources, the most remarkable being one by Draarr:

WAKIDI. See Tapart.

WAK—WAL

WALACHIA. See Roumania and VLAoHs.

WALAFRID! STRABO (or Strrasus, «¢., " squint- eyed") was born in Germany (808-9), but the exact place is unknown. His taste for literature early displayed itself, and by the age of eighteen he had already achieved a reputation among the learned men of hisage. He was educated at the monastery of Reichenau, near Constance, where he had for his teachers Tatto and Wettin, to whose visions he devotes one of his poems. Later on in life (c. 826-829) he passed to Fulda, where he studied for some time under Hrabanus Maurus before returning to Reichenau, of which monastery he was made abbot in 838. There is a story, based, however, on no good evidence, that Walafrid devoted himself so closely to letters as to neglect the duties of his office, owing to which he was expelled from his house; but, from his own verses, it seems, that the real cause of his flight to Spires was that, notwithstanding the fact that he had been tutor to Charles the Bald, he espoused the side of his elder brother Lothair on the death of Louis the Pious in 840. He was, however, restored to his monastery in 842, and died August 16, 849, on an embassy to his former pupil. His epitaph was written by Hrabanus Maurus, whose elegiacs praise him for being the faithful guardian of his monastery.

Walafrid Strabo's works may be divided into three classes, — theological, historical, and poetical.

1. The first class includes the Glossa Ordinaria,? a large com- mentary on the Bibleand part of the Apocrypha. This is of course to a great extent a compilation from St Jerome, St Augustine, St Isidore, Bede, Hrabanus Maurus, &c. Under the same heading come the exposition of the first twenty Psalms, published by Pez (Anecdota, Nova, iv.), and an epitome of Hrabanus Maurus's com- mentary on Levitieus. An Haxpositio Quatuor Evangeltorum is also ascribed to Walafrid. The treatise De Rebus Eeelesiastieis, dedicated to Regenbert the librarian, gives not only explanations and direc- tions for the erection and embellishment of churches, but also instructions as regards such questions as the method of taking the holy communion and the payment of tithes. Walafrid approves of the use of images and 'pictures in churches, "quia pictura est quedam literatura illiterata." He had himself seen "simple folk and idiots," whom words could hardly bring to a realization of what they were told, so touched by representations of our Lord's passion that the tears ran down their faces. Last among Wala- frid's theological treatises must be mentioned the De Subversione Jerusalem Traetatus.

2. Walafrid's chief historical works are—(a) the Vita Saneti Galli, which, though written nearly two centuries after this saint's death, is still the primary authority for his life, and (6) a much shorter life of St Othmar, abbot of St Gall (d. 759). Both these lives were based ou previous ones written by Abbot Gotzbert of St Gall (from 816-837).

3. Walafrid's poetical works include a short life of St Blaithmaic, a high-born monk of Iona, murdered by the Danes in the first half of the 9th century; a life of St Mammes; and a Liber de Vistonibus Wettini. This last poem, like the two preceding ones written in hexameters, was composcd at the command of " Father" Adalgisus, and based upon the prose narrative of Heto, abbot of Reichenau from: 806 to 822. It is dedicated to Wettin's brother Grimald. At the time he sent it to Grimald Walafrid had, as he himself tells us, hardly passed his eighteenth year, and he begs his corre- spondent to revise his verses, because, "as it is not lawful for a monk to hide anything from his abbot," he fears he may be beaten with deserved

stripes. In this curious vision Wettin saw Charles the Great suffering purgatorial tortures because of his incontinence. The name of the ruler alluded to is not indeed introdueed into the actual text, but " Carolus Imperator" form the initial letters of the passage dealing with this subject. Many of Walafrid's other poems are, or include, short addresses to kings and queens (Lothair, Charles, Louis, Pippin, Judith, &c.) and to friends (Einhard, Grimald, Hrabanus Maurus, Tatto, Ebbo, archbishop of Rheims, Drogo, bishop of Metz, &c.). His most famous poem is the Horiulus, dedicated to Grimald. It is an account of a little garden that he used to tend with his own hands, and is largely made up of

1 In the oldest MSS. this is always spelt " Walahfrid."

2 This commentary was the one in general use during the Middle Ages, when it went by the name of Glossa simply.

3 Walafrid also edited Thetinar's Life of Louis the Pious, prefixing a preface and making a few additions, and divided Einhard's Vita Caroli into chapters, adding an introduction.

descriptions of the various herbs he grows there and their medicinal and other uses. Sage holds the place of honour; then comes rue, the antidote of poisons; and so on through melons, fennel, lilies, poppies, and many other plants, to wind up with the rose, " which in virtue and scent surpasses all other herbs, and may rightly be called the flower of flowers." The curious poein De Imagine Tetrict takes the form of a dialogue.

WALCH, the name of a family of scholars.

I. Jonann Grore Watcu (1693-1775) was born at Meiningen, and studied at Leipsic and Jena under Olearius and Buddeus. From 1716 he was professor at Jena of philosophy, rhetoric, and poetry successively, and after- wards (from 1724) of theology. He married the only daughter of Buddeeus, and in his learned and theological career followed in the footsteps of his father-in-law. His theological position was that of a very

moderate ortho- doxy, which had been influenced greatly 'by the philosophy and controversies of the Deistic period. His university lectures and published works ranged over the wide fields of ecclesiastical history in its various branches, particularly the literature and the controversies of the church, dog- matics, ethics, and pastoral theology.

Of his works the most valuable were Bibliotheca Theologica (1757-64); Bibliotheca Patristica (1770, new ed. 1834); his edition of Luther's works in 24 vols. (1740-52); Historische und theologische Einleitung in dic religidsen Streitigkeiten ausserhalb der Luthcrischen Kirche, 5 vols. (1734-36); and the companion work to this, Streitig- keiten der Evangel. Luth. Kirche (1730-39). His life, with a com- plete list of his writings, which amounted to 287, Leben und Charakter des Kirchenraths J. G. Walch, was published by his son C.W.F. Walch (Jena, 1777). Comp. Gass, Protestantische Dogmaitk, iii, p. 205 sq.

II. Jonann Ernst Immanven Watcu (1725-1778), son of the above, born at Jena in 1725, became professor of philosophy in the university in 1750, and of rhetoric and poetry in 1759. He died in 1778. He was distinguished for his philological, antiquarian, and mineralogical acquire- ments.

See Lebensgeschichts Johann Ernst Im. Walch, Jena, 1780, and Meusel's Lexicon verstorbener deutscher Schriftstcller, vol. xiv.

III. Curistian WitHetm Franz Watcu (1726-1784), younger brother of J. E. I. Walch, was born at Jena December 25, 1726. He was educated at Jena under his father's direction, and as early as 1745-1747 lectured in the university in branches of exegesis, philosophy, and history. He then travelled with his brother J. E. I. Walch for a year through the Continent, making the acquaintance of the learned men of each country. On his return he was made professor of theology in Jena, but in 1753 he accepted an invitation to Gottingen, where he spent his life as pro- fessor of theology. He lectured on dogmatics, church history, ethics, polemics, natural theology, symbolics, the epistles of Paul, Christian antiquities, historical theological literature, ecclesiastical law, and the fathers. His per- manent place amongst learned theologians rests on his works on ecclesiastical history. He here holds the third place in the important trio Semler, Mosheim, Walch. Semler was much his superior in originality

and boldness, and Mosheim in clearness, method, and elegance. But to his wide, deep, and accurate learning, to his conscientious and impartial examination of the facts and the authorities at first hand, and to "his exact quotation of the sources and works illustrating them and careful discussion of the most minute details " all succeeding historians are deeply indebted. His method is critical and pragmatic, ' pursuing everywhere the exact facts and the supposed causes of the outward changes of history," leaving wholly out of sight the deeper moving principles and ideas which influence its course. He speaks of history as consisting of "the accidental changes of accidental matters." But, although he thus failed to reach the modern standard of an historian, the results of his industry and research remain as permanent historical materials.

ool

His principal work was his Entwurf ciner volistandigen Historie der Ketzcreien, Spaltungen, und Religionsstreitigkeiten, bis auf die Reformation, 11 vols., Leipsic, 1762-85. It was a great advance in theological liberality that he defined a heretic on the onc hand as a Christian and on the other as one in fundamental error. He thus claimed for the heretic a place in the church, while he declined to treat as heretical such differences as divided great sections of Christians. Of his other valuable works may be men- tioned Eniwurf einer volistindigen MMistorie der Rémischen Piipste (1756, 2d ed. 1758), Entwurf einer vollstindigen Historie der Kirchenversammlungen (1759), Bibliotheca Symbolica Vetus (1770), Kritische Untersuchung vom Gebrauch der heiligen Schrift unter den alten Christen (1779), occasioned by the controversy between Lessing and Goeze, and to which Lessing began an elaborate reply just before his death.

On C. W. F. Walch as historian see Baur, Hpochen der kirchlichen Geschichtschreibung (1852), p. 145 sq., and Dogmengeschichte, p. 38 sq. (1867, 8d ed.); Gass, Geschichte der Protestantischen Dogmatik, iii. p. 267 sq.; Meusel, Lexicon verstorbener deutscher Schriftsteller, vol. Xiv.

IV. Cart Friepricu Watcu (1734-1799), brother of the last-named, was professor of jurisprudence at Jena, and the author of several valuable

legal works. He died at Jena i 1799. His son Georg Ludwig (1785-1838) was for a time professor in the Kloster gymnasium of Berlin and afterwards in the university of Greifswald. He edited valuable editions of Tacitus's Agricola and Germania.

WALCHEREN. See ZEALAND.

WALDECK-PYRMONT, a small principality in the north-west of Germany, is the eighteenth factor of the German empire in point of area, and the twenty-fourth in point of population. It consists of two separate portions lying about 30 miles apart, viz., the county (grafschaft) of Waldeck, embedded in Prussian territory between the provinces of Westphalia and Hesse-Nassau, and the principality (fiirstenthum) of Pyrmont, farther to the north, between Lippe, Brunswick, and Hanover. Waldeck, with 48,580 inhabitants, comprises an area of 407 square miles, covered for the most part with hills, which culminate in the Hegekopf (2807 feet). The centre is occupied by the plateau of Corbach. The chief rivers are the Eder and Diemel, both of which eventually find their way into the Weser. Pyrmont, only 26 square miles in extent, with 8123 inhabitants, is also mountainous. The Emmer, also belonging to the Weser system, is its chief stream. The united area is thus 433 square miles, or about half the size of Cambridgeshire in England, and the united population in 1885 was 56,703. Agriculture and cattle-rearing are the main resources of the inhabitants in both parts of the principality, but the soil is nowhere very fertile. Only 554 per cent. of the area is occupied by arable land and pasture; forests, one-tenth of which are coniferous, occupy 36 per cent. Rye isthe principal crop; but oats, potatoes, and flax are also grown in considerable quantities. In 1883 the principality contained 5956 horses, 20,249 cattle, 66,704 sheep, 17,735 pigs, and 7332 goats. Iron, slate, and building-stone are worked at various points, and, along with horses, cattle, sheep, pigs, wool, and timber, form the chief exports. A few insignificant manufactures (cigars, liqueurs, earthenware, linen, knitted stockings) are carried on in some of the little towns, but both trade and manufactures are much retarded by the almost com- plete isolation of the country from railways. Wildungen in the extreme south of Waldeck is the terminus of a branch line, and a narrow part of Pyrmont is intersected by an unimportant line.

The capital and the residence of the prince is Arolsen (2442 inhabitants) in Waldeck ; twelve smaller " towns g and about one hundred villages are also situated in the county. The only town in Pyrmont is Bad Pyrmont, with about 1500 inhabitants, at one time a highly fashionable watering-place on account of its chalybeate and saline springs. The annual number of visitors 1s still estimated at 13,000. Wildungen is also a spa of some repute. The

inhabitants to the north of the Eder are of Saxon stock, to the south of Franconian,—a difference which is distinctly marked in dialect, costumes, and manners. Nearly all are Protestants. In 1880, when the population was 56,522, there were 53,995 Protestants, 1576 Roman Catholics, 854 Jews, and 97 others.

Waldeck-Pyrmout has one vote in the federal council and one in the imperial diet. The constitution, dating from 1852, is a reactionary modification of one carried in 1849, which in its turn had been a considerable advance upon one granted in 1816. The single chamber consists of fifteen members (three of whom represent Pyrmont), elected indirectly for three years. In the event of the male line of the present ruling family becoming extinct the female line succeeds in Waldeck, but Pyrmont falls to Prussia. In terms of a treaty concluded in 1868 for ten years and renewed in 1878 for a similar period, the finances and entire government of Waldeck-Pyrmont are managed by Prussia, the little country having found itself unable to support unassisted the military and other burdens involved by its share in the North-German Confederation. The government is conducted in the name of the prince by a Prussian "landes-director," while the state-officials are 'Prussian subjects," and take the oath of allegiance to the king of Prussia. The prince of Waldeck reserves his whole rights as head of the church, and also the right of granting pardons, and in certain circumstances may exercise a veto on proposals to alter or enact laws. Educa- tion, the administration of justice, and similar matters are thus all conducted on the Prussian model; a previous con- vention had already handed over military affairs to Prussia.

The budget for 1886 showed a revenue of £52,530 and an expenditure of £48,680. The public debt was £117,550, paying interest at 4 per cent. The prince issupported by the income derived from crown-lands.

The princes of Waldeck-Pyrmont are descendants of the counts of Schwalenbcrg, the earliest of whom known to history was Wittekind, who died in 1187. His grandson seems to have becn the first count of Waldeck. For many centuries the original pos- sessions of the Schwalenbergs were divided among several collateral lines of counts (Waldeck, Landau, Wildungen, Eisenberg); and about 1428 Hesse obtained a right of superiority over Waldeck, in return for its protection during those troublous times. This right gave rise to important claims on the part of Hesse, which were not finally sct aside until 1847, when the German diet decided that the right had come to an end with the extinction of the empire. In 1685 a pactum primogeniture was made between the two surviv- ing lines, which took effect in 1692, when the Eisenberg branch be- came extinct with the death of George Frederick, who had served with distinction as an imperial field-marshal, and had received the title of prince. Pyrmont had also originally belonged to a branch of the Schwalenberg family ; but it had successively been held by the counts of Lippe (from 1557) and Glcichen (from 1584), before it finally fell back to Waldeck in 1625. From 1692 the lands have remained undivided under the Wildungen line, with the ex- ception of a brief period (1805-1812) when Waldeck and Pyrmont were held by two brothers. Frederick Anthony Ulrich, who suc- ceeded in 1706, was made prince by the emperor Charles VI. In 1807 Waldeck was a member of the Confederation of the Rhine ; and in 1814 it entered the German Confederation. Its first consti- tution was granted in 1816 by Prince George Henry (1813-1845). George Victor, the present prince (1888), succeeded in 1845 at the age of 14, and assumed the government in 1852. The most im- portant incident in the recent history of the principality is the conclusion of the above-mentioned treaty with Prussia, with whom it sided in the war against Austria.

WALDENBURG, an active industrial town in Prussian Silesia, is situated on the Polsnitz, 39 miles south-west of Breslau. It contains a handsome modern town-house and two churches. Among the chief industrial

establishments are a large porcelain and stoneware factory, extensive fire-clay works, glass-works, and a china-painting establish- ment; and there are numerous flax-spinneries and linen- factories in the neighbourhood. Adjoining the town on the south is the village of Oberwaldenburg, with a chateau. Waldenburg lies in the centre of the extensive and pro-

ductive coal-district of the Waldenburger Gebirge, a branch of the Sudetic chain. The town, which received municipal rights in the 16th century, had a population of 12,999 in 1885; in 1816 the population was 1768. There are villages of the same name in Saxony and Wiirtemberg.

WALDENSES, THE, a name given to the members of an heretical sect which arose in tle south of France about 1170. The history of the sects of the Middle Ages is obscure, because the earliest accounts of them come from those who were concerned in their suppression, and were therefore eager to lay upon each of them the worst enormities which could be attributed to any. In later times the apologists of each sect reversed the process, and cleared that in which they were interested at the expense of others. In early times these sectaries produced little literature of their own ; when they produced a literature at the beginning of the 15th century they attempted to claim for it a much earlier origin. Hence there is confusion on every side; it is difficult to distinguish between various sects and to determine their exact opinions or the circum- stances under which they came into being. The polemical conception which has done much to perpetuate this con- fusion is that of the historical continuity of Protestantism from the earliest times. According to this view the church was pure and uncorrupt till the time of Constantine, when Pope Sylvester gained the first temporal possession for the papacy, and so began the system of a rich, powerful, and worldly church, with Rome for its capital. Against this secularized church a body of witnesses silently protested ; they were always persecuted but always survived, till in the 13th century a desperate attempt was made by Innocent ITI. to root them out from their stronghold in southern France. Persecution gave new vitality to their doctrines, which passed on to Wycliffe and Huss, and through these leaders produced the Reformation‘in Germany and England.

This view rests upon a series of suppositions, and is entirely unhistorical. So far as can be discovered the heretical sects of the Middle Ages rested upon a system of Manicheism which was imported into Europe from the East (see Manicuazism). The Manichzan system of dualism, with its severe asceticism, and its individualism, which early passed into antinomianism, was attractive to many minds in the awakening of the 11th century. Its presence in Europe can first be traced in Bulgaria soon after its conversion in 862,! where the struggle between the Eastern and Western churches for the new converts opened a way for the more hardy speculations of a system which had never entirely disappeared, and found a home amongst the Paulicians in Armenia. The name of Cathari, taken by the adherents of this new teaching, sufficiently shows the Oriental origin of their opinions, which spread from Bulgaria amongst the Slavs, and followed the routes of commerce into central Europe. 'The earliest record of their presence there is the condemnation of ten canons of Orleans as Manichees in 1022, and soon after this we find complaints of the prevalence of heresy in northern Italy and in Germany. 'The strongholds of these heretical opinions were the great towns, the centres of civilization, because there the growing sentiment of municipal independence, and the rise of a burgher class through commerce, created a spirit of criticism which was dissatisfied with the worldly lives of the clergy and their undue influence in affairs.

The system of Catharism recognized two classes of adherents, credentes and perfecti. The perfectt only were admitted to its esoteric doctrines and to its superstitious practices. 'To the ordinary men it seemed to be a reform- ing agency, insisting on a high moral standard, and up- holding the words of Scripture against the traditions of an

1 Schmidt, Histoire des Cathares, i. 7.

overgrown and worldly church. Its popular aim and its rationalistic method made men overlook its real contents, which were not put clearly before them. It may be said generally that Catharism formed the abiding background of medizval heresy. Its dualistic system and its anti- social principles were known only to a few, but its anti- ecclesiastical

organization formed a permanent nucleus round which gathered a great deal of political and ecclesi- astical discontent. When this discontent took any in- dependent form of expression, zeal, which was not always accompanied by discretion, brought the movement into collision with the ecclesiastical authorities, by whom it was condemned as heretical. When once it was in conflict with authority it was driven to strengthen its basis by a more pronounced hostility against the system of the church, and generally ended by borrowing something from Catharism. The result was that in the beginning of the 13th century there was a tendency to class all bodies of heretics together: partly their opinions had coalesced ; partly they were assumed to be identical.

Most of these sects were stamped out before the period of the Middle Ages came to a close. The Waldenses, under their more modern name of the Vaudois, have sur- vived to the present day in the valleys of Piedmont, and have been regarded as at once the most ancient and the most evangelical of the medizeval sects. It is, however, by no means easy to determine their original tenets, as in the 13th and 14th centuries they were a body of obscure and unlettered peasants, hiding themselves in a corner, while in the 16th century they were absorbed into the general movement of the Reformation. As regards their antiquity, the attempts to claim for them an earlier origin than the end of the 12th century can no longer be sus- tained. They rested upon the supposed antiquity of a body of Waldensian literature, which modern criticism has shown to have been tampered with. The most important of these documents, a poem in Provengal, "La Nobla Leyczon," contains two lines which claimed for it the date of 1100 :—

Ben ha mil e cent anez compli entierament

Que fo scripta Vora, car sen al derier temp. But it was pointed out! that in the oldest MS. existing in the Cambridge university library the figure 4 had been imperfectly erased before the word "cent," a discovery which harmonized with the results of a criticism of the contents of the poem itself. This discovery did away with the ingenious attempts to account for the name of Waldenses from some other source than from the historical founder of the sect, Peter Waldo or Valdez. To get rid of Waldo, whose date was known, the name Waldenses or Vallenses was derived from

Vallis, because they dwelt in the valleys, or from a supposed Provengal word Vaudes, which meant a sorcerer.

Putting these views aside as unsubstantial, we will con- sider the relation of the Waldenses as they appear in actual history with the sects which preceded them. Already in the 9th century there were several protests against the rigidity and want of spirituality of a purely sacerdotal church. Thus Berengar of Tours (999-1088) upheld the symbolic character of the Eucharist and the superiority of the Bible over tradition. The Paterines in Milan (1045) raised a protest against simony and other abuses of the clergy, and Pope Gregory VII. did not hesitate to enlist their Puritanism on the side of the papacy and make them his allies in imposing clerical celibacy. In 1110 an apos- tate monk in Zeeland, Tanchelm, carried their views still further, and asserted that the sacraments were only valid

through the merits and sanctity of the ministers. In

1 Bradshaw, in Transactions of Cambridge Antiquarian Society, 1842. The text edited by Montet, 4to, 1887.

France, at Embrun, Peter de Bruys founded a sect known as Petrobrusians, who denied infant baptism, the need of consecrated churches, transubstantiation, and masses for the dead. VIL. had carried the church.

It was at this time (1170) that a rich merchant of Lyons, Peter Waldo, sold his goods and gave them to the poor; then he went forth as a preacher of voluntary poverty. His followers, the Waldenses, or poor men of Lyons, were moved by a religious feeling which could find no satisfaction within the actual system of the church, as they saw it before them. Like St Francis, Waldo adopted a life of poverty that he might be free to preach, but with this difference that the Waldenses preached the doctrine of Christ while the Franciscans preached the person of Christ, Waldo reformed teaching while Francis kindled love ; hence the one awakened antagonisms which the

‘other escaped. For Waldo had a translation of the New

Testament made into Provengal, and his preachers not only stirred up men to more holy lives but explained the Scriptures at their will. Such an interference with the ecclesiastical authorities led to difficulties. Pope Alexander III., who had approved of the poverty of the Waldensians, prohibited them from preaching without the permission of the bishops (1179). Waldo answered that he must obey God rather than man. The result of this disobedience was excommunication by Lucius III. in 1184. Thus a reforming movement became heresy through disobedience to authority, and after being condemned embarked on a course of polemical investigation how to justify its own position. Some were readmitted into the Catholic Church, and one, Durandus de Osca (1210), attempted to found an order of Pauperes Catholici, which was the forerunner of the order of St Dominic. Many were swept away in the crusade against the ALBIGENSES (¢.v.). Others made an appeal to Innocent IIL, protesting their orthodoxy. Their appeal was not successful, for they were formally condemned by the Lateran council of 1215.

The earliest definite account given of the Waldensian opinion is that of the inquisitor Sacconi about 1250.? He divides them into two classes, those north of the Alps and those of Lombardy. The first class hold (1) that oaths are forbidden by the gospel, (2) that capital punish- ment is not allowed to the civil power, (3) that any lay- man may consecrate the sacrament of the altar, and (4) that the Roman Church is not the church of Christ. The Lombard sect went farther in (3) and (4), holding that no one in mortal sin could consecrate the sacrament, and that the Roman Church was the scarlet woman of the Apocalypse, whose precepts ought not to be obeyed, especially those appointing fast-days. This account sufficiently shows the difference of the Waldenses from the Cathari: they were opposed to asceticism, and had no official priesthood ; at the same time their objection to oaths and to capital punishment are closely related to the principles “of the Cathari. Their other opinions were forced upon them by their conflict with the authority of the church. When forbidden to preach without the permission of the bishop, they were driven to assert the right of all to preach, with- out distinction of age or sex. This led to the

further step of setting up personal merit rather than ecclesiastical ordination as the ground of the priestly office. From this

2 D'Argentré, Collectio Judiciorum de Novis Erroribus, i. 50, &c.

024

followed again the conclusion that obedience was not due to an unworthy priest, and that his ministrations were invalid.

These opinions were subversive of the system of the medizeval church, and were naturally viewed with great disfavour by its officials ; but it cannot fairly be said that they have much in common with the opinions of the Reformers of the 16th century. The medizval church set forth Christ as present in the orderly community of the faithful; Protestantism aimed at setting the individual in immediate communion with Christ, without the mechanical intervention of the officers of the community; the Wal- denses merely set forward a new criterion of the orderly arrangement of the church, according to which each mem- ber was to sit in judgment on the works of the ministers, and consequently on the validity of their ministerial acts. It was a rude way of expressing a desire for a more spiritual community. The earliest known document pro- ceeding from the Waldensians is an account of a confer- ence held at Bergamo in 1218 between the Ultramontane and the Lombard divisions, in which the Lombards showed a greater opposition to the recognized priesthood than ead their northern brethren.}

As these opinions became more pronounced persecution became more severe, and the breach between the Waldenses and the church widened. The Waldenses withdrew alto- gether from the ministrations of the church, and chose ministers for themselves whose merits were recognized by the body of the faithful. Election took the place of ordination, but even here the Lombards showed their difference from the Ultramontanes, and recognized only two orders, like the Cathari, while the northern body kept the old three orders of bishops, priests, and deacons. Gradually the separation from the church became more complete: the sacraments were regarded as merely sym- bolical; the priests became helpers of the faithful

; ceremonies disappeared ; and a new religious society arose equally unlike the medieval church and the Protestantism of the 16th century.

The spread of these heretical sects led toresolute attempts at their suppression. The crusade against the Albigensians could destroy prosperous cities and hand over lands from a heedless lord to one who was obedient to the church ; but it could not get rid of heresy. The revival of preach- ing, which was the work of the order of St Dominic, did more to combat heresy, especially where its persuasions were enforced by law. The work of inquisition into cases of heresy proceeded slowly in the hands of the bishops, who were too busy with other matters to find much time for sitting in judgment on theological points about which they were imperfectly informed. The greatest blow struck against heresy was the transference of the duty of i inquiry into heresy from the bishops to Dominican inquisitors. The secular power, which shared in the proceeds of the confiscation of those who were found guilty of heresy, was ready to help in carrying out the judgments of the spiritual courts. Everywhere, and especially in the district round Toulouse, heretics were keenly prosecuted, and before the continued zeal of persecution the Waldenses slowly disappeared from the chief centres of population and took refuge in the retired valleys of the Alps. There, in the recesses of Piedmont, where the streams of the Pelice, the Angrogne, the Clusone, and others cleave the sides of the Alps into valleys which converge at Susa, a settlement of the Waldensians was made who gave their name to these valleys of the Vaudois. In the more accessible regions north and south heresy was exposed to a steady process of persecution, and tended to assume shifting forms. Among the valleys it was less easily reached, and retained its old organization and its old con-

1 Preger, Bettrige sur Geschichte der Waldesier.

tents. Little settlements of heretics dispersed throughout Italy and Provence looked to the valleys as a place of refuge, and tacitly regarded them as the centre of their faith. At times attempts were made to suppress the sect of the Vaudois, but the nature of the country which they inhabited, their obscurity, and their isolation made the difficulties of their

suppression greater than the advantages to be gained from it. However, in 1487 Innocent VIII. issued a bull for their extermination, and Alberto de' Capitanei, archdeacon of Cremona, put himself at the head of a crusade against them. Attacked in Dauphiné and Piedmont at the same time, the Vaudois were hard pressed ; but luckily their enemies were encircled by a fog when marching upon their chief refuge in the valley of the Angrogne, and were repulsed with great loss. After this Charles II., duke of Piedmont, interfered to save his territories from further confusion, and promised the Vaudois peace. They were, however, sorely reduced by the onslaught which had been made upon them, and lost their ancient spirit of independence. When the Lutheran movement began they were ready to sympathize with it, and ultimately to adapt their old beliefs to those of the rising Protestantism. Already there were scattered bodies of Waldenses in Germany who had influenced, and afterwards joined, the Hussites and the Bohemian Brethren.

The last step in the development of the Waldensian body was taken in 1530, when two deputies of the Vaudois in Dauphiné and Provence, Georges Morel and Pierre Masson, were sent to confer with the German and Swiss Reformers. A letter addressed to Gicolompadius? gives an account of their practices and beliefs at that time, and shows us a simple and unlettered community, which was the survival of an attempt to form an esoteric reli- gious society within the medieval church. It would appear that its members received the sacraments of baptism and the holy communion from the regular priesthood, at all events sometimes, but maintained a discipline of their own and held services for their own edification. Their ministers were called barba, a Provengal word meaning guide. They were chosen from among labouring men, who at the age of twenty-five might ask the body of ministers to be admitted as candidates. If their character was approved they were taught during the winter months, when work was slack, for a space of three or four years; after that they were sent for two years to serve as menial assistants at a nunnery for women, which curiously enough existed in a recess of the valleys. Then they were admitted to office, after receiving the communion, by the imposition of hands of all ministers present. They went out to preach two by two, and the junior was bound absolutely to obey the senior. Clerical celibacy was their rule, but they admit that it created

grave disorders. The ministers received food and clothing from the contributions of the people, but also worked with their hands; the result of this was that they were very ignorant, and also were grasping after bequests from the dying. The affairs of the church were managed by a general synod held every year. The duties of the barbas were to visit all within their district once a year, hear their confessions, advise and admonish them; in all services the two ministers sat side by side, and one spoke after the other. In point of doctrine they acknow- ledged the seven sacraments, but gave them a symbolical meaning ; they prayed to the Virgin and saints, and admitted auricular confession, but they denied purgatory and the sacrifice of the mass, and did not observe fasts or festivals. After giving this account of themselves they ask for information about several points in a way which shows the exigencies of a rude and isolated society, and finally they say that they have been much disturbed by the

2 Scultetus, Annales, ii. 294, &c.

Lutheran teaching about freewill and predestination, for they had held that men did good works through natural virtue stimulated by God's grace, and they thought of predestination in no other way than as a part of God's foreknowledge.

(Ecolampadius gave them further instruction, especially emphasizing the wrongfulness of their outward submission to the ordinances of the church: "God," he said, "is a jealous God, and does not permit his elect to put themselves under the yoke of Antichrist." The result of this intercourse was an alliance between the Vaudois and the Swiss and German Reformers. A synod was held in 1532 at Chanforans in the valley of the Angrogne, where a new confession of faith was adopted, which recognized the doctrine of election, assimilated the practices of the Vaudois to those of the Swiss congregations, renounced for the future all recognition of the Roman communion, and established their own worship no longer as secret meetings of a faithful few but as public assemblies for the glory of God.

Thus the Vaudois ceased to be relics of the past, and became absorbed in the general movement of Protestantism. This was not, however, a source of quiet or security. In France and Italy alike they were marked out as special objects of persecution, and the Vaudois Church has many records of martyrdom. The most severe trial to which the Vaudois of Piedmont were subjected occurred in 1655. The Congregation de Propaganda Iide established, in 1650, a local council in Turin, which exercised a powerful influence on Duke Charles Emmanuel II., who ordered that the Vaudois should be reduced within the limits of their ancient territory. Fanaticism took advantage of this order; and an army, composed partly of French troops of Louis XIV., partly of Irish soldiers who had fled before Cromwell, entered the Vaudois valleys and spread destruc- tion on every side. They treated the people with horrible barbarity, so that the conscience of Europe was aroused, and England under Cromwell called on the Protestant powers to join in remonstrance to the duke of Savoy and the French king. The pen of Milton was employed for this purpose, and his famous sonnet is but the condensation of his state papers. Sir Samuel Morland was sent on a special mission to Turin, and to him were confided by the Vaudois leaders copies of their religious books, which he brought back to England, and ultimately gave to the university library at Cambridge. Large sums of money were contributed in England and elsewhere, and were sent to the suffering Vaudois.

By this demonstration of opinion peace was made for a time between the Vaudois and their persecutors; but it was a treacherous peace, and left the Vaudois with a hostile garrison established among them. Their worship was prohibited, and their chief pastor, Leger, was obliged to flee, and in his exile at Leyden wrote his Histoire Générale des Eglises Vaudoises (1684). The revocation of the edict of Nantes in 1685 began a new period of persecution, which aimed at entire extermination. This was found so difficult that the remnant of the Vaudois, to the number of 2600, were at last allowed to withdraw to Geneva. But the love of their native valleys was strong among the exiles, and in 1689 one of their pastors, Henri Arnaud, led a band of 800 men to the reconquest of their country. His first attempts against the French were suc- cessful; and the rupture between Victor Amadeus, duke of Savoy, and Louis XIV. brought a sudden change of fortune to the Vaudois, They were recognized once

more as citizens of Savoy, and in the war against France which broke out in 1696 the Vaudois regiment did good service for its duke. The peace of Utrecht saw the greater part of the French territory occupied by the Vaudois annexed to Savoy, and,

though there were frequent threatenings of persecution, the idea of toleration slowly prevailed in the policy of the house of Savoy. The Vaudois, who had undergone all these vicissitudes, were naturally reduced to poverty, and their ministers were partially maintained by a subsidy from England, which was granted by Queen Anne. The 18th century, however, was a time of religious decadence even among the Alpine valleys, and the outbreak of the French Revolution saw the Vaudois made subjects of Trance. This led to a loss of the English subsidy, and they applied to Napoleon for an equivalent. This was granted, and their church was organized by the state. On the restora- tion of the house of Savoy in 1816 English influence was used on behalf of the Vaudois, who received a limited toleration. From that time onwards the Vaudois became the objects of much interest in Protestant countries. Large sums of money were collected to build hospitals and churches among their valleys, and they were looked upon as the possible centre of a Protestant church in Italy. Especially from England did they receive sympathy and help. An English clergyman, Dr Gilly, visited the valleys in 1823, and by his writings on the Vaudois Church attracted considerable attention, so that he was enabled to build a college at La Torre. Moreover, Dr Gilly's book (A Visit to the Valleys of Piedmont), chanc- ing to fall into the hands of an officer who had lost his leg at Waterloo, Colonel Beckwith, suggested an object for the energies of one who was loth at the age of twenty- six to sink into enforced idleness. Beckwith visited the valleys, and was painfully struck by the squalor and ignorance of a people who had so glorious a past. He settled among them, and for thirty-five years devoted himself to promote their welfare. He married a Vaudois peasant girl, lived amongst the people, and established no fewer than 120 schools. Moreover he brought back the Italian language which had been displaced by the French in the services of the Vaudois Church, and in 1849 built a church for them in Turin. He lived in La Torre till his death in 1862, and the

name of the English benefactor is still revered by the simple folk of the valleys whom he did so much to civilize.

According to the: latest official returns the Waldensian Church had, in 1886-87, 43 churches and 38 mission stations throughout Italy. The ordained pastors num- bered 37, evangelists 6, and male and female teachers 56, the total number of salaried agents being 124. The church had 4005 members, and the day schools were attended by 2206 scholars, the Sunday schools by 2482. The total income, about three-fourths of it contributions from the United Kingdom and other Protestant countries of northern Europe, amounted to upwards of £10,000.

The literature on the subject of the Waldensian and other sects is copious. For their rise the most important authorities are to be found in Moneta, Adversus Catharos ct Waldenses ; D'Argentré, Collectio Judiciorum de Novis Erroribus ; Alanus, Adversus Here- ticos ; D'Achery, Spicileyia, vol. i.; Gretser, Opera, vol. x. ; Lim- borch, Historia Inquisitionis, at the end of whichis the Liber Sententiarum of the Inquisition of Toulouse from 1307-1322. Of modern books may be mentioned Schmidt, Histoire des Cathares ; Hahn, Geschichte der new-manichdischen Ketzer ; Dieckhoff, Die Valdensier in Mittelalter; Preger, Bettrige zur Geschichte der Waldesier ; Canti, Gli Erctichi in Halia ; Comba, Storia della Riforma in Italia, and Histoire des Vaudois d'italie ; Tocco, L'Ercsia nel Medio Evo; Montet, Historie litterarte des Vaudois ; Lea, History of the Inquisition of the Middle Ages. Amongst books dealing with the more modern history of the Vaudois specially are Leger, Histoire des 0 Lglises Vaudoises ; Arnaud, Histoire de la Rentrée des Vaudois: Perrin, Histoire des Vaudois ; Monastier, Histoire de ?Eglise Vaudoise ; Musten, L'israel des Alpes ; Gilly, Excursion to the Valleys of Piedmont, and Researches on the Waldensians ; Todd, The Waldensian Manuscripts ; Melia, The Origin, Persceution, and Doctrines of the Waldensians. (M.C.)

WALDO, Vaxpo, or VALDEZ, PETER. See p. 323 supra. WALES. See ENGLAND.

WALKER, a town of Northumberland, England, on the north bank of the river Tyne, 2 miles east of Newcastle- on-Tyne, with which it is connected by railway. Christ Church, in the Perpendicular style, erected in 1848, con- sists of chancel, nave, aisles, and tower with beautiful illuminated clock erected in 1887. The windows of the church are all monumental stained glass. There is a large colliery, in which at one time was a salt spring, which was used in the mdnufacture of soda, begun by permission of the Government in 1795, by a company who may be re- garded as the first producers of mineral alkali and soda in England. Along the banks of the Tyne there are large iron and chemical works, coal staiths, ship- and boat-building establishments, and brick and tile works. The corporation of Newcastle-on-Tyne are lords of the manor. The town is formed of what were formerly the villages of Walker, Low Walker, and Walker Quay. It is governed by a local board of health of twelve members. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1200 acres) in 1871 was 8888, and in 1881 it was 9527.

WALKER, Freperick (1840-1875), subject painter, was born in Marylebone, London, on May 24,1840. While very young he began to draw from the antique in the British Museum, and at the age of sixteen he was placed in the office of Baker, an architect. The occupation proved uncongenial ; at the end of eighteen months he resumed his work from the Elgin marbles at the Museum, attending art classes ; and in March 1858 he was admitted a student of the Royal Academy. He soon turned his attention to designing for the wood-engravers, and served an apprentice- ship of three years with J. W. Whyinper. His earliest book-illustrations appeared in 1860 in Once a Week, a periodical to which he contributed largely, as also to the Cornhill Magazine, where his admirable designs to the works of Thackeray and those of his daughter appeared. These woodcuts are among the most spirited and artistic works of their class, and entitle Walker to rank with Millais at the very head of the draughtsmen of our time who have dealt with scenes of contemporary life. In the intervals of work asa book-illustrator he practised painting in water-colours, his subjects being frequently more con- sidered and refined repetitions in colour of his black-and- white designs. Among the more notable of his productions in water-colour are Spring, a Fishmonger's Shop, the Ferry, and Philip in Church, which gained a

medal in the Paris International Exhibition of 1867. He was elected an associate of the Society of Painters in Water Colours in 1864, and a full member in 1866 ; and in 1871 he became an associate of the Royal Academy. His first oil picture, the Lost Path, was exhibited in the Royal Academy in 1863, where it was followed in 1867 by the Bathers, one of the artist's finest works, in 1868 by the Vagrants, now in the National Gallery, in 1869 by the Old Gate, and in 1870 by the Plough, a powerful and impressive render- ing of ruddy evening light, of which the landscape was studied in Somerset. In 1871 he exhibited his tragic life-sized figure of a Female Prisoner at the Bar, a subject which now exists only in a finished oil study, for the painter afterwards effaced the head, with which he was dissatisfied, and was prevented by death from again completing the picture. The last of his fully successful works was the Harbour of Refuge, shown in 1872, for the Right of Way, exhibited in 1875, bears evident signs of the artist's failing strength. In the end of 1873 he made a journey to Algiers for his health, but, returning in the bitter English spring, he was again prostrated ; and on June 5, 1875, he died of consumption at St Fillan's, Perthshire.

The works of Frederick Walker are thoroughly original and in-

dividual, both in the technique of their colour and execution and in their view of nature and humanity. His colour, especially in his

watcr-colours, is pure, powerful, and full of delicate gradations; he had an admirable sense of design, and the figures of his peasants at their daily toil show a grace and swecping largeness of line which recalls the antique ; while the sentiment of his subjects is unfail- ingly refined and poetic.

WALKER, Sears Coox (1805-1853), astronomer, was born at Wilmington, Massachusetts, U.S., on March 28, 1805. He kept a school at Philadelphia till 1845, when he was appointed assistant at the Washington observatory. Shortly afterwards he took charge of the astronomical department of the United States Coast Survey, where he was among the first to make use of the electric telegraph

‘for the purpose of determining the difference of longitude

between two stations, and he introduced the method of registering transit observations electrically by means of a chronograph. Healso investigated the orbit of the newly discovered planet Neptune. He died at Cincinnati on January 30, 1853.

WALLACE, Str Witi1am, the most popular national hero of Scotland, is believed to have been the second son of Sir Malcolm Wallace of Elderslie and Auchinbothie, in Renfrewshire. The date of his birth is not certainly ascertained, but is usually given as 1270. The only authority for the events of his early life is the metrical history of Blind Harry. That authority cannot be implicitly relied on, though we need not conclude that the minstrel invented the stories he relates. He lived about two centuries later than Wallace, during which a considerable body of legend had probably gathered round the name, and these popular ‘‘gestis” he incorporates in his narrative. At the same time he professes to follow as his “autour” an account that had been written in Latin by John Blair, the personal friend and chaplain of Wallace himself. As Blair’s account has perished, we cannot tell how far the minstrel has faithfully followed his authority, but some comparatively recent discoveries have confirmed the truth of portions of the narrative which had pre- viously been doubted. At best, however, his authority must be regarded with suspicion, except when it is con- firmed by other and more trustworthy evidence.

Only for a period of less than two years in his life— from the beginning of the insurrection in 1297 to the battle of Falkirk—does Wallace come before us in the clearest historical light. With the exception of one or two glimpses of him that we obtain from authentic historical documents, the recorded events of his later as of his earlier life rest on no more certain authority than that of Blind Harry.

In his boyhood, according to the usual accounts, he resided for some time at Dunipace, in Stirlingshire, with an uncle, who is styled “parson” of the place. By this uncle he was partially educated, and from him he imbibed an enthusiastic love of liberty. His education was continued at Dundee, where he made the acquaintance of John Blair. On account of an incident that happened at Dundee—his slaughter of a young Englishman

named Selby, for an insult offered to him—he is said to have been outlawed, and so driven into rebellion against the English. Betaking himself to the wilds of the country, he gradually gathered round him a body of desperate men whom he led in various attacks upon the English. In consequence of the success of these early enterprises his following largely increased, several of the more patriotic nobles—including the steward of Scotland, Sir Andrew Moray, Sir John de Graham, Douglas the Hardy, Wishart, bishop of Glasgow, and others—having joined him. His insurrection now became more open and pronounced, and his enterprises of greater import- ance. An attack was made upon the English justiciar, Ormsby, who was holding his court at Scone. The justiciar himself escaped, but many of his followers

were captured or slain. The burning of the Barns of Ayr, the quarters of English soldiers, in revenge for the treacherous slaughter of his uncle, Sir Ronald Crawford, and other Scottish noblemen, followed. The success of these exploits induced the English king to take measures for staying the insurrection. A large army, under the command of Sir Henry Percy and Sir Robert Clifford, was sent against the insurgents, and came up with them at Irvine. Dissensions broke out among the Scottish leaders, and all Wallace's titled friends left him and made submission to Edward, except the ever faithful Sir Andrew Moray. The treaty of Irvine, by which these Scottish nobles agreed to acknowledge Edward as their sovereign lord, is printed in Rymer's Medera. It is dated 9th July 1297, and is the first public document in which the name of Sir William Wallace occurs. Wallace retired to the north, and although deserted by the barons was soon at the head of a large army. The vigour and success of his operations was such that in a short time he succeeded in recovering almost all the fortresses held by the English to the north of the Forth. He had begun the siege of Dundee when he received information that an English army, led by the earl of Surrey and Cressing- ham the treasurer, was on its march northward. Leaving the citizens of Dundee to continue the siege of the castle, he made a rapid march to Stirling. Encamping in the neighbourhood of the Abbey Craig—on which now stands the national monument to his memory—he watched the passage of the Forth.

After an unsuccessful attempt to bring Wallace to terms, the English commander, on the morning of 11th September 1297, began to cross the bridge. When about one-half of his army had crossed, and while they were still in disorder, they were attacked with such fury by Wallace, that almost all—Cressingham among the number—were slain, or driven into the river and drowned. Those on the south side of the river were seized with panic and fled tumultuously, having first set fire to the bridge. The Scots, however, crossed by a ford, and con- tinued the pursuit of the enemy as far as Berwick. Sir Andrew Moray fell in this battle. The results of it were important. The English were everywhere driven from Scotland. To increase the alarm of the English, as well as to relieve the famine which then prevailed, Wallace organized a great raid into the north of England, in the course of which he devastated the country to the gates of Newcastle. On his return he was elected guardian of the kingdom. In this office he set himself to reorganize the army and to regulate the affairs of the country. His measures were marked by much wisdom and vigour, and for a short time succeeded in securing order, even in the face of the jealousy and opposition of the nobles. Edward was in Flanders when the news of this successful revolt reached him. He hastened home, and at the head of a great army entered Scotland in July 1298. Wallace was obliged to adopt the only plan of campaign which could give any hope of success. He slowly retired before the English monarch, driving off all supplies and wasting the country. The nobles as usual for the most part deserted his standard. Those that remained thwarted his councils by their jealousies. His plan, however, came very near being successful. Edward, compelled by famine, had already given orders for a retreat when he received information of Wallace's position and intentions. The army, then at Kirkliston, was immediately set in motion, and next morning (July 22, 1298) Wallace was brought to battle in the vicinity of Falkirk. After an obstinate fight the Scots were overpowered and defeated with great loss. Among the slain was Sir John de Graham, the bosom friend of Wallace, whose death, as Blind Harry tells, threw the hero into a frenzy of rage and grief. The

account of his distress is one of the finest and most touching passages in the poem. With the remains of his army Wallace found refuge for the night in the Torwood —known to him from his boyish life at Dunipace. He then retreated to the north, burning the town and castle of Stirling on his way. He resigned the office of guardian, and betook himself again to a wandering life and a desultory and predatory warfare against the English. At this point his history again becomes obscure. He is known to have paid a visit to France, with the purpose of obtaining aid for his country from tbe French king. This visit is narrated with many untrustworthy details by Blind Harry; but the fact is established by other and indisputable evidence. When in the winter of 1303-4 Edward received the submission of the Scottish nobles, Wallace was expressly excepted from all terms. And after the capture of Stirling Castle and Sir William Oliphant, and the submission of Sir Simon Fraser, he was left alone, but resolute as ever in refusing allegiance to the English king. A price was set upon his head, and the English governors and captains in Scotland had orders to use every means for his capture. On the 5th August 1305 he was taken—as is generally alleged, through treachery—at Robroyston, near Glasgow, by Sir John Menteith, carried to the castle of Dumbarton, and thence conveyed in fetters and strongly guarded to London. He reached London on the 22d August, and next day was taken to Westminster Hall, where he was impeached as a traitor by Sir Peter Mallorie, the king's justice. To the accusation Wallace made the simple reply that he could not be a traitor to the king of England, for he never was his subject, and never swore fealty to him. He was found guilty and condemned to death. The sentence was executed the same day with circumstances of unusual cruelty.

The cause of national independence was not lost with the life of Wallace. Notwithstanding the cruclty and indignity amid which it terminated, that life was not a failure. It has been an inspiration to his countrymen ever since. The popular ideas regarding his stature, strength, bodily prowess, and undaunted courage are con- firmed by the writcrs nearest his own time—Wyntoun and Fordun, And indeed no man could in that age have secured the personal ascendency which he did without the possession of these qualities. The little we know of his statesmanship during the short period he was in power gives proof of political wisdom. His patriotism was conspicuous and disinterested. He was well skilled in the modes of

warfare that suited the country and the times. That he failed in freeing his country from the yoke of England was due chiefly to the jealousy with which he was regarded by the men of rank and power. But he had a nobler success in inspiring his countrymen with a spirit which made their ultimate conquest impossible. (A. F. H.)

WALLACE, Witt1am (1768-1843), mathematician, was born on September 23, 1768, at Dysart, in Fife- shire, where he received his school education. In 1784 his family removed to Edinburgh, where he himself was set to learn the trade of a bookbinder; but his taste for mathematics had already developed itself, and he made such use of his leisure hours that before the completion of his apprenticeship he had made considerable acquirements in geometry, algebra, and astronomy. He was further assisted in his studies by Professors Robison and Playfair, to whom his abilities had become known. After various changes of situation, dictated mainly by a desire to gain time for study, he became assistant teacher of mathematics in the academy of Perth in 1794, and this post he ex- changed in 1803 for a mathematical mastership in the Royal Military College at Great Marlow (afterwards at Sandhurst). In 1819 he was chosen to succeed Playfair in the chair of mathematics at Edinburgh, and in 1838, when compelled by ill-health to retire, he received a Government pension for life. He died in Edinburgh, after a lingering illness, on April 28, 1843. ;

In his earlier years Wallace was an occasional contributor to Leybourne's Mathematical Repository and to the Gentlemans

Mathematical Companion. Between 1801 and 1810 he contributed the articles " Algebra," "Conic Sections," "Trigonometry," and several others in mathematical and physical science to the fourth edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica, and some of these were re- tained in subsequent cditions from the fifth to the cighth inclusive. He was also the author of the principal mathematical articles in the Edinburgh Encyclopedia, edited by Brewster (1808-80). Sub- joined is a list of his more important papers contributed to the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh :—" Geometrical

Porisms, with Examples of their Applications to the Solution of

Problems" (1796); "A ncw Method of expressing the Coefficients in the Development of the Formula which represents the Mutual Perturbation of two Planets" (1802); " New Serics for the Quadra- ture of the Conic Sections, and the Computation of Logarithms "

(1808); 'Investigation of Formule for finding the Logarithms of

Trigonometrical Quantities from one another" (1823); " Account of the Invention of the Pantograph, and a Description of the Lidograph," the latter being an instrument of his own invention (1881); " Analogous Properties of Elliptic and Hyperbolic Sectors iH (1839); and "Solution of a Functional Equation, with its Applica- tion to the Parallclogram of Forces and the Curve of Equilibration." In 1836 he contributed '"'Two Elementary Solutions of Kepler's Problem by the Angular Calculus" to the Royal Astronomical Society; and for the Cambridge Philosophical Society he wrote a paper on "Geometrical Theorems and Formule, particularly ap- plicable to some Geodetical Problems."

WALLASEY, a town of Cheshire, England, on rising ground near a branch of the Mersey called Wallasey Pool, which bounds it on the S.E., while to the N.W. is the Trish Sea. It is about 2 miles north-west of Birkenhead, of which part of it is practically a suburb, and Wallasey Pool is now occupied by the Great Float, forming an immense dock of about 150 acres. The church of St Hilary, rebuilt in the 18th century, with the exception of the tower bearing date 1536, having been gutted by fire in 1857, the whole, except the tower, was rebuilt in the Early English style. The free grammar school, built and endowed by Major Henry Meols in 1656-57, was re-estab- lished under a scheme of the charity commissioners, and reopened in 1876. On the shore of the Irish Sea is Leasowe Castle, once known as Mock-Beggar Hall, and supposed to have been erected by the earls of Derby in the reign of Elizabeth, in order to witness the races. On the sides of Wallasey Pool are remains of a submarine forest bed, in which various animal skeletons have been found. The population of the urban sanitary district (which includes Liscard and Poulton, with Seacomb, the total area being 3408 acres) in 1871 was 14,944, and in 1881 it was 21,192.

At the Conquest Wallasey formed part of the possessions of Robert de Rhuddlan, and on his decease became part of the fee of Halton. In the reign of Elizabeth it had a small port, to which there belonged three barques and fourteen men. In 1668 the manor was possessed by the earl of Derby, but various parts afterwards became alienated. For a considerable time the horse races held on what was then a common had considerable reputation, but they werc discontinued in 1760. At these races the duke of Monmouth, son of Charles IJ., once rode his own horse and won the plate.

WALLA WALLA, a city and the county seat of Walla Walla county, Washington Territory, United States, is situated in a valley on Mill Creek, a tributary of the Walla Walla, in a fertile agricultural region, devoted mainly to the growth of wheat, fruit, and vegetables. The population, which in 1880 was 3588, was estimated at 5000 in 1888.

WALLENSTEIN (properly Wa.psTEIn), ADALBERT Evusrsius von (1583-1634), duke of Friedland, Sagan, and Mecklenburg, was born on the hereditary estate of his family, Hermanic, in Bohemia, on 15th September 1583. His parents were Protestants, and in early youth he attended the school of the Brothers of the Common Life at Koschumberg. After the death of his parents he was sent by his uncle, Slawata, to the Jesuit college at Olmiitz, where he joined the Roman Catholic Church. In 1599 he went to the university of Altdorf, which he had to leave in consequence of some boyish follies. Afterwards he studied

at Bologna and Padua, and, according to the custom of the young nobles of the time, visited many places in southern and western Europe. While in Padua, he gave much atten- tion to astrology, and during the rest of his life he seems never to have wavered in the conviction that he might trust to the stars for indications as to his destiny.

For some time Wallenstein served in the army of the emperor Rudolph II. in Hungary. In 1606 he returned to Bohemia, and soon afterwards he married a rich widow, Lucretia Nikossie von Landeck, whose lands in Moravia he inherited after her death in 1614. Supporting the arch- duke

Ferdinand in his war with Venice, he became favour- ably known at court, and his influence was increased by his marriage with Isabella Katharina, daughter of Count Harrach, a confidential adviser of the emperor Matthias.

In the disturbances which broke out in Bohemia in 1618 —disturbances which proved to be the beginning of the Thirty Years' War—advances were made to Wallenstein by the revolutionary party ; but he preferred to associate himself with the imperial cause, for which he repeatedly fought with marked success. In 1620 he was made quartermaster-general of the army of the League, com- manded by Tilly. Wallenstein was not present at the battle of the Weissenberg (1620), but soon afterwards he did brilliant service as second in command of the army which opposed Bethlen Gabor in Moravia.

The battle of the Weissenberg placed Bohemia absolutely at the mercy of the emperor Ferdinand; and Wallenstein, who was a man of insatiable ambition, knew how to turn the prevailing confusion to his own advantage. Through no very honourable means he secured the inheritance of the great estates belonging to his mother's family, and the emperor sold to him on easy terms vast tracts of confiscated lands. His possessions he was allowed to form into a territory called Friedland, and he was raised in 1622 to the rank of an imperial count and palsgrave, in 1623 to that of a prince. In 1625 he was made duke of Fried- land. Inthe government of his principality he displayed much vigour and foresight. He not only placed the ad- ministration of justice on a firm basis, but by many wise measures developed agriculture and mining and manufac- turing industries.

The early successes of the emperor Ferdinand in the Thirty Years' War were due chiefly to the army of the League, which he could only indirectly control. When he was threatened with a coalition of the Protestant powers, with Christian IV. of Denmark as his most active enemy, he was anxious to have an army of his own, which should be more devoted than that of the League to the interests of his dynasty. He had not, however, the means of secur- ing the fulfilment of his wish. In these circumstances Wallenstein saw that he might have an opportunity of playing a great part

in the events of the age ; and accord- ingly, early in 1626, he offered to raise an army for the imperial service. After some negotiations the offer was accepted, the understanding being that the troops were to be maintained at the cost of the countries they might occupy. Wallenstein had always been a popular com- mander, and great numbers of recruits flocked to his standard, so that he soon found himself at the head of an army of 30,000 men. With this force he marched north- wards for the purpose of co-operating with Tilly against Christian IV. and Mansfeld. No engagement was fought in 1625; but on April 25, 1626, Wallenstein defeated Mansfeld at the bridge of Dessau, and later in the year Christian IV. was defeated by Tilly at Lutter. Wallenstein pursued Mansfeld into Hungary, where the Protestant general effected a junction with Bethlen Gabor. Before the end of the year Mansfeld died, and Bethlen Gabor came to terms with the emperor.

Wet tNesTHEIN

Having established peace in Hungary, Wallenstein pro- ceeded, in 1627, to clear Silesia of some remnants of Mansfeld's army ; and at this time he bought from the emperor the duchy of Sagan, his outlay in the conduct of the war being taken into account in the conclusion of the bargain. He then joined Tilly in the struggle with Christian TV., and afterwards took possession of the duchy of Mecklenburg, which was granted to him in reward for his services, the hereditary dukes being displaced on the ground that they had helped the Danish king. He failed to capture Stralsund, which he besieged for several months in 1628. This was his first important reverse, and it caused him bitter disappointment, for he had hoped that by obtain- ing free access to the Baltic he might be able to make the emperor as supreme at sea as he seemed to be on land. It was a part of Wallenstein's scheme that he should ob- tain possession of the Hanseatic towns, and through them destroy the naval power of the Scandinavian kingdom, the Netherlands, and England. This plan completely broke down when he was compelled to withdraw his troops from the brave city which he had sworn to take even if it were bound with chains to heaven. Notwithstanding this check, the imperial cause prospered; and early in 1629 Christian IV. was obliged to accept terms of peace. About the same time Ferdinand issued the famous edict of

restitution, which excited deep resentment in every Protestant state in the realm.

Meanwhile Wallenstein had made for himself a host of enemies among the princes of the empire. They regarded him as an upstart, and complained of the incessant exactions of his army. Moreover, it was by no means clear what he intended to do with the great force he had gathered around him. He was sometimes heard to speak ominously of the arrogance of the princes, and it appeared probable that he might try to bring them, Catholics and Protestants alike, into rigid subjection to the crown. Again and again, there- fore, the emperor was advised to dismiss him from his command. Ferdinand was very unwilling to part with one who had served him so well; but the demand was pressed so urgently by the electors in 1630 that he had no alter- native, and in September of that year envoys were sent to Wallenstein to announce his removal. Had the emperor declined to take this course, the princes would probably have combined against him; and the result would have been a civil war even more serious than that which had already brought so many disasters upon the country. This was perfectly understood by Wallenstein, who therefore accepted the emperor's decision calmly, and retired to Gitschin, the capital of his duchy of Friedland.

Some months before the dismissal of Wallenstein, Gustavus Adolphus had landed in Germany, and it soon became obvious that he was by far the most formidable of the enemies with whom the emperor had yet had to con- tend. 'Tully was defeated at Breitenfeld and in the battle of the Lech, where he received a mortal wound; and Gustavus advanced to Munich, while Bohemia was occupied by his allies the Saxons. After the battle of Breitenfeld the emperor entreated Wallenstein to come once more to his aid. Wallenstein at first declined; he had, indeed, been secretly negotiating with Gustavus Adolphus, in the hope that he might thus be able to maintain his hold over his great possessions. In the end, however, he accepted the offers made to him by Ferdinand, and in the spring of 1632 he took the field with an army of more than 40,000 men. This army was placed absolutely under his control, so that he assumed the position of an independent prince rather than of an ordinary subject.

His first aim was to drive the Saxons from Bohemia, —an object which he accomplished without serious diffi- culty. Then he advanced against Gustavus Adolphus, who

attacked him near Nuremberg on the 3d of September, but was driven back. On the 16th of November 1632 a decisive battle was fought at Liitzen, in Saxony. In this battle the imperialists were routed, but Gustavus Adolphus was killed.

To the dismay of Ferdinand, Wallenstein made no use of the opportunity provided for him by the death of the Swedish king, but withdrew to winter quarters in Bohemia. In the campaign of 1633 much astonishment was caused by his apparent unwillingness to attack the enemy. The truth was that he was preparing to desert the emperor. That he sincerely desired to secure for Germany the benefits of peace is probable enough, but it is certain that he was also resolved to make for himself a position of command- ing importance. He entered into negotiations with Saxony, Brandenburg, Sweden, and France; and one of his condi- tions was that the possession of the kingdom of Bohemia should be guaranteed to him. He had vast and somewhat vague schemes for the reorganization of the entire constitu- tional system of the empire, and he himself was to have supreme authority in determining the political destinies of his country.

Irritated by the distrust excited by his proposals, and anxious to make his power felt, he at last assumed the offensive, and in October he defeated the Swedes at Steinau. Soon afterwards he entered Lusatia and took Gorlitz and Bautzen, and despatched a troop of cavalry as far as Berlin. He then resumed the negotiations, and pressed for a full and final acceptance of his plans. In December he retired with his army to Bohemia, fixing lis headquarters at Pilsen.

It had soon been suspected in Vienna that Wallenstein was playing a double part, and the emperor, encouraged by the Spaniards at his court, anxiously sought for means of getting rid of him. Wallenstein was well aware of the designs formed against him, but displayed little energy in his attempts to thwart them. This was due in part, no doubt, to ill health, in

part to the fact that he trusted to the assurances of his astrologer, Seni, with whom he often conferred. He also felt confident that when the time came for his army to decide between him and the emperor the decision would be in his own favour.

His principal officers assembled around him at a banquet on the 12th January 1634, when he submitted to them a declaration to the effect that they would remain true to him. This declaration they signed. More than a month later a second paper was signed ; but on this occasion the officers' expression of loyalty to their general was associated with an equally emphatic expression of loyalty to their emperor. By this time Wallenstein had learned that he had too easily allowed himself to be lulled into a sense of security, and that he needed to act warily. On the 24th of January the emperor had signed a secret patent remov- ing him from his command and requiring the army to obey Count Gallas; and imperial agents had been labouring to undermine Wallenstein's influence. Another patent charging Wallenstein and two of his officers with high treason, and naming the generals who were to assume the supreme command of the army, was signed on the 18th February, and published in Prague.

When Wallenstein heard of the publication of this patent, he realized the full extent of his danger, and on the 23d February, accompanied by several of his most intimate friends, and guarded by about 1000 men, he went from Pilsen to Eger, hoping to obtain the protection of the Protestant general Bernard of Weimar. After the arrival of the party at Eger, Colonel Gordon, the commandant, and Colonels Butler and Leslie agreed to rid the emperor of his enemy. Qn the evening of the 25th February

-Wallenstein's supporters Ilo, Kinsky, Terzky, and Neumann

were received at a banquet by the three colonels, and murdered by several dragoons. Butler, accompanied by Captain Devereux and a number of soldiers, then hurried to the house where Wallenstein was staying, and broke into his room. He had just taken a bath, and was standing in his

shirt ready to go to bed. He was instantly killed by a thrust of Devereux's partisan. The body was taken to the citadel, and laid beside those of his murdered comrades. Wallenstein was buried at Gitschin, but in 1732 the remains were removed to the castle chapel of Minchen- atz.

© Xs direct orders for the murder of Wallenstein had been issued, but it was well understood that tidings of his death would be welcome at court. The murderers were handsomely rewarded for what they had done, and their deed was commended as a necessary act of justice.

Wallenstein was tall, thin, and pale, with reddish hair, and eyes of remarkable brilliancy. He was of a proud and imperious temper, and was seldom seen to laugh. He worked hard, and invariably acted on the motto that if speech is silvern silence is golden. In times of supreme difficulty he listened carefully to the advice of his counsellors, but the final decision was always his own, and he rarely revealed his thoughts until the moment for action arrived. Few generals have surpassed him in the power of quickly organiz- ing great masses of men and of inspiring them with confidence and enthusiasm ; and as a statesman he was distinguished for the boldness of his conceptions and the liberality of his sentiments. All his good qualities were, however, marred by a furious lust for power, in the gratification of which he allowed no scruples to stand in his way.

See Forster, Albrecht von Wallenstein (1834) ; Barthold, Geschichte des grossen deutschen Kriegs (1842-43) ; Aretin, Wallenstein (1846) ; Helbig, Wallenstein und Arnim, 1632-3) (1850), and Kaiser Ferdinand und der Herzog von Friedland, 1633-34, (1853); Hurter, Zur Geschichte Wallensteins (1855); Fiedler, Zur Geschichte Wallensteins (1860); L. von Ranke, Geschichte Wallensteins (3d ed., 1872); Gindely, Geschichte des dreissigjdhrigen Kriegs (1869). SI.)

WALLER, Epmunp (1605-1687), enjoyed in the latter half of his long life a high reputation as a poet, which has been partly fixed by the compliments of Dryden and Pope. Waller is a singular and piquant figure in the history of the 17th century; his relations with Charles I., with the Long Parliament, with Cromwell, with Charles II, his position as a poet, as a courtier, as a privileged water- drinker among the bibulous Restoration wits, form a com- bination that has no parallel. paralleled,

but the run of incidents is unique. He was born at Coleshill, in Hertfordshire, March 3, 1605, and came of distinguished ancestry, landed gentry, with estates in Kent and other counties, and prominent places in the public service from the reign of Henry V. downwards. He inherited a position of difficulty in view of the civil strife that began when he reached manhood; his mother was herself an ardent Royalist, but was connected by blood with Hampden and by marriage with Cromwell. His father died when he was eleven years old. He entered parliament at sixteen, and sat also in the first and in the third parliaments of Charles]. He was thus, as Clarendon put it, nursed in parliament, and this early experience helped him to make a figure afterwards ; but he took no active part at the time, the chief use that he made of his advantages as a courtier and a youth of fashion being to marry a wealthy city heiress. With this addition to the handsome fortune left him by his father, he retired to his estate at Beaconsfield and studied literature. This was about 1632.

When he first began to write verses is a doubtful and disputed point. Clarendon says that he began at an age when most men leave off, and if we put this at thirty there is no published or even probable evidence to the contrary; but, on the other hand, it is argued that he began at the age of eighteen, in 1623, this being the date of the subject of his first poem,—Prince Charles's escape from a storm at St Andero. This earliest date must be increased by at least two years, the whole point of the poem

The character might be,

WAL—WAL

being Charles's marriage with his queen Henrietta, which took place in 1625. The exact date of his beginning acquires some interest from Johnson's dictum that he wrote as smoothly at eighteen as at eighty, "'smoothness" being his established merit; and the difficulty of determining the date arises from his not having "gathered his sticks into a faggot" and published till 1645. The incidents that furnished him with themes for his peculiar artificial and decorative treatment occurred long before,—for example, the duke of Buckingham's death in 1628, the taking of Salle in 1632, the repair of St Paul's in 1633, the death of the earl of Carlisle in 1636, his courtship of Lady Dorothy Sidney —

“Saccharissa ’”—between the death of his first wife in 1634 and Saccharissa’s marriage to another in 1639. But that the poems, as we now have them, were written immediately after the incidents glorified in his verse is an uncertain assumption, considering his elaborating habits, the strongly Royalist tone of his verses on public events, and the express statement of Clarendon, who was likely to have known if copies had been circulated in the society of the court long before they appeared in print. If they were at least retouched by him between the ages of thirty and forty, the wonder of his uniformity of manner from first to last—which, after all, has been somewhat exaggerated —is considerably lessened.

In the struggle between king and parliament, Waller tried at first to mediate, holding the king’s demands un- constitutional, but endeavouring through his advisers to induce him to modify them. He made such a mark as a speaker in the Short Parliament that at the opening of the Long Parliament he was chosen by the Commons to conduct the impeachment of Judge Crawley for his ship- money decision. Thereafter, as the struggle became fiercer, with a view apparently to prevent parliament from pro- ceeding to extremities, he engaged in what was known as Waller’s plot. The object of the plot seems to have been to restrain the extreme Parliamentarians by some public declaration of moderate opinion, but it was complicated with another plot, the object of which was to assist the king with armed force. All Waller’s relations, except his mother, were anti-Royalist, and it is said that his complicity was discovered by domestic treachery. He behaved with the most abject meanness when arrested by order of Pym on May 31, 1643, saved himself by at once turning informer and making disclosures that were at least unreserved, and was let off eventually with a fine of £10,000 and banish- ment. It was from his exile in Paris, in 1645, that he directed his first publication of poems. He lived there in high repute as a wit and a munificent host till 1654, when Cromwell, at the intercession of his anti-Royalist relatives, allowed him to return to England, and try to mend his impaired estate. He celebrated the Protector’s greatness in a lofty panegyric, and Cromwell is said to have relished his pleasant qualities as a companion. It deserves to be noted, as evidence of a real admiration, that he wrote also a lament “ Upon the Death of the Lord Protector,” when the sincerity of his panegyric was less open to question. The poem contains two famous lines of bathos—

Under the tropic is our language spoke

And part of Flanders hath received our yoke. But otherwise it does not fall beneath the poet's steady level.

Upon the Restoration Waller hastened to express his joy, mingled with trembling, "' Upon His Majesty's Happy Return," and found little difficulty in making his peace. He met the king's complaint that his congratulation was inferior to his panegyric on the Protector with the famous retort, " Poets, Sire, succeed better in fiction than in truth." He was soon on such terms with Charles that he applied for the provostship of Eton; the king

agreed, but Clarendon refused, on the ground that he was a layman, and the refusal was sustained by the council. He thus failed in his only application for substantial evidence of the king's favour, but in every other respect the changed state of things made his old age happy and glorious. He entered parliament again, and became, Burnet says, "the delight of the House, and, though old, said the liveliest things of any of them." His witty sayings were circulated through the town, and, as Johnson suspects, good things were fathered on him,—a tribute to his reputation. Although a water-drinker, he was a boon companion with the roystering wits, Dorset saying that "no man in England should sit in his company without drinking, except Ned Waller." Further, surviving all his early contemporaries, he found himself in higher reputa- tion than ever asa poet. His poems now went through several editions, each increased by new productions, though the bulk was never large. He wrote in his formed eulo- gistic fashion on topics of the day, on St James's Park, on Somerset House, the victory over the Dutch, the queen's birthday, the beauties, and other celebrities of the time. He fitted The Maid's Tragedy with a happier ending in rhymed couplets, assisted Dorset and Godolphin in the translation of the Pompey of Corneille, and wound up his career becomingly with Divine Poems, continuing to write to the last. He died in 1687, at the age of eighty-two, and at the height of his poetic reputation. Rymer of the Feedera, the savage critic of Shakespeare, wrote the epitaph for his tomb at Beaconsfield, in which it is recorded that "inter poetas sui

temporis facile princeps, lauream, quam nieruit adolescens, octogenarius haud abdicavit." Fenton, Pope's coadjutor in the translation of the Odyssey, edited and commented on his poems after his death, justifying the pains bestowed by coniparing him to Petrarch and Malherbe.

There can be no doubt that as a panegyrical poet, ready to over- lay any subject, entirely irrespective of its intrinsic worth, with a cleverly woven and tastefully coloured garment of words and images, Waller deserved all the admiration he received, and would be hard to beat in our literature. Fenton showed true discern- ment in urging that his excellence lay in commendation, whether or not he was right in adding that any ill-natured person could be a satirist. And complimentary poetry was so much in fashion when poets were courted and munificently rewarded by politicians that Waller's fame from the Restoration till the time of Walpole, who dispensed with the aid of complimentary poets, is easy to understand. But Mr Gosse's recent contention that Waller must be regarded as the founder of the classical school, and that his influence changed the course of our literature for a century, must pass as a hurried cxaggeration. He was so eminently successful that he influenced minor poets at the close of his life and for a generation afterwards, but his range of subjects as well as his art was extremely limited, and much larger and wider influences were at work. He is an cxample of one of the tendencies, but it is absurd to represent him as a commanding influence, except in a very humble field. He influenced pane- gyvical writing, and, inasmuch as this fell in with and influenced the tendency "to dress nature to advantage," "to raise sentiments above the vulgar pitch" with the borrowed riches of genuinely impassioned poetry, it might be argued that Waller's influence extended beyond his own uarrow circle of aims. But his effect on Dryden or on Pope was infinitesimal. Even on the form of the favourite "classical" couplet Waller's single example cannot be held to have told in any considerable degree. It was already an established form for complimentary verse when he began to write. "Waller was smooth," it is true, but Pope at once qualifies the complimeut with a reference to his want of variety. And Pope is also strictly correct in confining Waller's metrical improve- ments to his post-Restoration verse. When we place Wallcr's later couplets side by side with his earlier, say The Triple Combat or The Divine Poems, with His Majcsty's Escape, or

The Countess of Carlisle in Mourning, or The Death of Lady Rich, we become aware ofa marked change in his metrical scheme, notwithstanding the current opinion to the contrary. It is only in his later couplets that he aims, under French influence, as Pope justly implies, at making each distich complete in itself, varying this only with a stave of four, generally with a break in the third line. His earlier couplets are less monotonous, and were obviously modelled on the Hero and Leander of Marlowe and Chapman. To that noble poem,

dol

indeed, whieh was not known in the days when Waller's rhythm was so admired, he owed a large part of his panegyrical stock-in- trade, as anybody familiar with it can trace, not merely in his "classical " allusions, but also in his diction and his earlier metre. As regards smoothness and balance, there are no couplets in the edition of 1645 that could not be paralleled from the verses of his eontemporaries, George Sandys and Cowley. (W. M.) WALLIS, Joun (1616-1703), an eminent English mathematician, logician, and grammarian, was born on the 23d November 1616 at Ashford, in Kent, of which parish his father was then incumbent. Having been previously instructed in Latin, Greek, and Hebrew, he was in 1632 sent to Emmanuel College, Cambridge, and afterwards was chosen fellow of Queen's College. Having been admitted to holy orders, he left the university in 1641 to act as chaplain to Sir William Darley, and in the follow- ing year accepted a similar appointment from the widow of Sir Horatio Vere. It was about this period that he displayed surprising talents in deciphering the intercepted letters and papers of the Royalists. His adherence to the Parliamentary party was in 1643 rewarded by the living of St Gabriel, Fenchurch Street, London. In 1644 he was appointed one of the scribes or secretaries of the Assembly of Divines at Westminster. During the same year he married Susanna Glyde, and thus vacated his fellowship ; but the death of his mother had left him in possession of a handsome fortune. In 1645 he attended those scientific meetings which led to the establishment of the Royal Society. When the Independents obtained the superiority, Wallis adhered to the Solemn League and Covenant. The living of St Gabriel he exchanged for that of St Martin, Ironmonger Lane ; and, as rector of that parish, he in

1648 subscribed the Remonstrance against putting Charles I. to death. Notwithstanding this act of opposition, he was in June 1649 appointed Savilian professor of geometry at Oxford. In 1654 he there took the degree of D.D., and four years later suc- ceeded Dr Langbaine as keeper of the archives. After the Restoration he was named one of the king's chaplains in ordinary. While complying with the terms of the Act of Uniformity, Wallis seems always to have retained moderate and rational notions of ecclesiastical polity. He died at Oxford on the 28th of October 1703, in the eighty-seventh

year of his age.

The works of Wallis are numerous, and relate to a multiplicity of subjects. His Institutio Loyicw, published in 1687, was very popular, and in his Grammatica Lingua Anglicane we find indiea- tions of an acute and philosophic intellect. The mathematical works are published some of them in a small 4to volume, Oxford, 1657, and a complete collection in three thick folio volumes, Oxford, 1695-93-99. The third volume includes, however, some theological treatiscs, and the first part of it is occupied with editions of treatises on harmonics and other works of Greek geometers, some of them first editions from the MSS., and in general with Latin versions and notes (Ptolemy, Porphyrius, Briennius, Archimedes, Eutocius, Aristarchus, aud Pappus). The second and third volumes include also two collections of letters to and from Brouucker, Frenicle, Leibnitz, Newton, Oldenburg, Schooten, and others; and there is a tract on trigonometry by Caswell. Excluding all these, the mathie- matical works contained in the first and second volumes occupy about 1800 pages. The titles in the order adopted, but with date of publication, are as follows:—" Oratio Inauguralis," on_his appointment (1649) as Savilian professor, 1657; '«Mathesis Uni- versalis, seu Opus Arithmeticum Philologice et Mathematice Tradi- tum, Arithmeticam Numerosam et Speciosam Aliaque Contincns, 1657; "Adversus Meibomium, de Proportionibus Dialogus,' 1657 ; 'De Sectionibus Conicis Nova Methodo Expositis," 1655 ; "Arithmetica Infinitorum, sive Nova Mcthodus Inquirendi in Curvilineorum Quadraturam Aliaque Difficiliora Matheseos Prob- lemata," 1655; "Eclipsis Solaris Observatio Oxonil Habita 2d. Aug. 1654," 1655; "Tractatus Duo, prior de Cyeloide,

posterior de Cissoide et de Curvarum tum Linearum Edéévoe. tum Superficierum TlAarvope," 1659; " Mechanica, sive de Motu Traetatus Geometricus," three parts, 1669-70-71; "De Algebra Tractatus Historieus et Practicus, ejusdem originem et progressus varios ostendens," English, 1685; " De Combinationibus Alternationibus et Partibus Aliquotis Tractatus," English, 1685 ; "De Sectionibus Angularibus Tractatus," English, 1685 ; 'De Angulo Contactus

dor

et Semicirculi Tractatus," 1656; "Hjusdem Tractatus Defensio," 1685; "De Postulato Quinto, et Quinta Definitione, Lib. VI. Euclidis, Disceptatio Geometrica," ?1663; "Cuno-Cuneus, seu Corpus partim Conum partim Cuneum Representans Geometrice Consideratum," English, 1685; "De Gravitate et Gravitatione Disquisitio Geometrica," 1662 (English, 1674); "De Aistu Maris Hypothesis Nova," 1666-69.

The Arithmetica Infinitorum relates chiefly to the quadrature of curves by the so-called method of indivisibles established by Cavalleri, 1629, and cultivated in the interval by him, Fermat, Deseartes, and Roberval. The method is substantially that of the integral calculus; thus, ¢.g., for the curve y=2" to find the area from z=0 to z—1, the base is divided into m equal parts, and the area is obtained as— 4 (1242? . .. £2), = 1 ,0(n-+1) (20-+1),

W 62

which, taking 7 indcfinitcly large, is=4. The case of the general parabola y=a™ (2 a positive integer or fraction), where the area is

, had been previously solved. Wallis made the important

m+ 1 remark that the reciprocal of such a power of x could be regarded

; : il as a power with a negative exponent (a-e" , and he was thus ay

enabled to extend the theorem to certain hyperbolic curves, but the case m a negative value larger than 1 presented a difficulty which he did not

succeed in overcoming. It should be noticed that Wallis, although not using the notation xin the case of a positive or negative fractional valuc, nor indeed in the case of a negative integer value of m, deals continually with such powers, and speaks of the positive or negative integer or fractional value of mas the index of the power. The area of a curve, y=sum of a finite number of terms Az", was at once obtained from that for the case of a single term; and Wallis, after thus establishing the several

results which would now be written he —2'da=1, Ke — x?) dar = b Jy (@ ~~— 2° Pda= gy ae — x82 =+1,4, &c., proposed to himself to interpolate from these the value of ih '(ee — x)tdx, which is the expression for the area (=4z) of a semicirele, diameter=1; making a slight transformation, the actual problem was to find the value of O (~~=), the term halfway between 1 and 2, in the series of*

terms 1, 2, 6, 20, 70,... ; and he thus obtained the remarkable

: 2.4. 45676 8), Ce. « ; , expression T™=9" 3 5 5 7 7 gs together with a succession of

superior and inferior limits for the number x. In the same work Wallis obtained the expression which wonld

\2 now be written ds=dz Ae 1+ (4) for the length of the clement ae

of a curve, thus reducing the problem of rectification to that of quadrature. An application of this formula to an algebraical eurve was first made a few years later by W. Neil; the investiga- tion is reproduced in the " Tractatus de Cissoide, &c." (1659, as above), and Wallis adds the remark that the curve thus rectified is in fact the scmicubical parabola.

The Afathesis Universalis is a more elementary work intended for learners. It eoutains copions disscrtations on fundamental points of algebra, arithmetic, and geometry, and critical remarks.

The De Algebra Tractaius contains (chapters 66-69) the idea of the interpretation of imaginary quantities in geometry. This is given

somewhat as follows: the distance represented by the square root of a negative quantity cannot be measured in the line backwards or forwards, but ean be measured in the same plane above the line, or (as appears elsewhere) at right angles to the line either in the plane, or in the plane at right angles thereto. Con- sidered as a history of algebra, this work is strongly objected to by Montuela on the ground of its unfairness as against the carly Italian algebraists and also Vieta and Descartes, and in favour of Harriot ; but De Morgan, while admitting this, attributes to it eonsiderable merit.

The two treatiscs on the cycloid and on the cissoid, &c., and the Meehanviea contain many results which were then new and valuable. The latter work contains elaborate investigations in regard to the centre of gravity, and it is remarkable also for the employment of the principle of virtual velocities. The cuno-cuneus is a highly interesting surface; it is a ruled quartic surface, the equation of which may be written c?y?=(c— z) (a? — x).*

Among the letters in volume iii., we have one to the editor of the Leipsic Acts, giving the decipherment of two letters in secret characters. he ciphers are different, but on the same prineiple: the characters in each are either single digits or combinations of two or three digits, standing some of them for letters, others for syllables or words,—the number of distinct characters which had to be deciphered being thus very considerable.

For the prolonged conflict between Hobbes and Wallis, see Horses, vol. xii. pp. 86-38. (A. CA.)

WAL—W AL

WALLON, or Wattoon, the collective name of the inhabitants of the south-eastern division of Belgium, who are distinguished from the rest of the population chiefly by their Romance speech and darker complexion. The Wallon domain comprises the four provinces of Hainault, Namur, Liége, and Luxemburg, besides about one-third of Brabant. It forms a nearly regular right-angled triangle, with apex at Maestricht within the Dutch frontier, and base stretching along the French frontier in a south-

easterly direction, from the neighbourhood of Lille to Longwy at the south-west corner of German Luxemburg. It coincides almost exactly with the section of the Meuse basin com- prised within Belgian territory, and has a total area of 6000 square miles, or about one-half of the kingdom, with a population (1886) of 2,780,000, or considerably less than half of the entire Belgian population. But from the following figures it is evident that the Romance is steadily gaining on the Flemish (Teutonic) section and will soon be in a majority. In 1830 the Wallon population numbered 1,360,000 as against 1,860,000 Flemish; in 1866 the corresponding figures were 2,040,000 and 2,406,000; and in 1886 they were 2,780,000 and 3,060,000.

This north-eastern extremity of ancient Gaul, originally inhabited by the Aduatici, Eburones, Tungri, and other Belgic nations, was reduced by Cesar (51 3B.c.), and early brought within the sphere of Roman culture. Hence the Latin langnage was already too firmly established to be supplanted by the Teutonic when the country was occupied in the 5th century by the Franks previous to their conquest of the more central provinces. But about the same time Roman institutions and speech were entirely supplanted in the more open low-lying districts of western Belgium by the same Franks penetrating from the east, and by the roving Saxon and Frisian tribes arriving by sea on the Litus Saxoniewm. Since that time the two elements have remained, without much further change, in close proximity, or separated only by intervening strips of ' marches" or border-lands formed by the uncleared forest formerly known as the Silva Carbonaria.*

The Wallons, allowing for inevitable intermingling, especially towards the German frontier, are thus Romanized Gauls, lineal representatives of the ancient Belge, in a much truer sense than their Flemish neighbours, althongh accepting from them this name of " Wallon," that is, Welsh or Forevgn, just as the Saxon intruders in Britain imposed the same designation on its primitive inhabit- auts. Their Gallic descent is shown specially in their much darker complexion, as clearly established by the anthropological statistics collected by Dr Beddoe.? In other respects the Wallons contrast favourably with the Tcutonic-speaking populations of Belgium. They are physically a stronger race, more bony, angular, and

taller, and also more long-lived and exempt from disease, as shown by the much lower death-rate in the province of Namur (18 per 1000) than in West Flanders (25 per 1000). The cause of this superiority has been attributed by some writers to a greater inherent vitality of the Wallons, but by others with more probability to their greater general comfort, and particularly to the more salubrious climate of their elevated and more hilly territory. In medisval times the Flemings were certainly far superior in wealth, culture, and public spirit. But the great centres of industry have since been shifted from Bruges and Ghent (Flanders) to Liége and Namur, and the Wallons now take the lead in all these respects,—in fact, in every- thing except music, painting, and the fine arts generally.

The Wallon language is a very marked dialect of the Langue d'Oil (Northern French), betraying strong affinities to the neigh- bouring idioms of Picardy and Lorraine, but still distinct from both. Being little cultivated, and possessing no literary standard, it has developed several varieties, the chief of which are—(1) the Liégeois, current throughout the districts bordering on Rhenish Prussia, and largely affected by German influences ; (2) the Namurois of the central districts and the Ardennes, with several local patois ; (8) the Hennuyer of Hainault and the western districts, so named from the town of Hennuyéres, where it is spoken with the greatest purity. But since French has been accepted as the written standard and the official language of the whole kingdom Wallon is gradually receding from the large towns and assuming more and more the character of a purely rural patois. It possesses no literary remains of any consequence, and its earliest extant monument appears to be the " Declaration des Provost, Juret, Eskievin de Valenchienes"' of the year 1256.

1 In Namur, a eentral point of the Wallon domain, the proportion of dark eyes is 47 and of dark hair 57°5 per cent. as compared with 24 and 20 respeetively in Mechlin, a corresponding eentral point in the Flemish domain.

WAL—-WAL

WALLSEND, a town of Northumberland, England, on the north bank of the Tyne and on the Newcastle and Tynemouth Railway, 4 miles east-

north-east of Newcastle. The church of St Peter, erected in 1809 ata cost of £5000, has a tower surmounted by a spire. There are still some remains of the old church of the 11th century in the Transition Norman style. The church of St Luke was erected in 1886 at a cost of £4000. At an early period Wallsend was famous for its coals, but the name has now a general application to coal that does not go through a sieve with meshes 8ths of an inch in size. The colliery, which was opened in 1807, has frequently been the scene of dreadful accidents. There are also ship and boat building yards, engineering works, lead and copper smelting works, cement works, and brick and tile works. The ecclesiastical commissioners are lords of the manor. The town is governed by a local board of twelve members. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1202 acres) in 1871 was 4169, and in 1881 it was 6351.

Wallsend derives its modern name from its position at the extremity of Hapnian's Watt (g.v.); originally it was the Roman station Segedunuwm. It had a quay, of which remains have been discovered, and possessed a magazine of corn and other provisions for the supply of the stations in the interior,

WALNUT (Juglans), a genus of seven or eight species, natives of the temperate regions of the northern hemi- sphere, some even extending into Mexico and the West Indies. They are all trees, usually of large size, with alter- nate, stalked, unequally pinnate leaves, and abounding in an aromatic resinous juice. The scars left by the fallen leaves are unusually large and prominent. The buds are not unlike those of the ash; and it frequently happens that in the axils of the leaves, instead of one, several buds may be formed. The utility of this is seen in seasons when the shoot produced from the first bud is killed by frost; then one of the supplementary buds starts into growth, and thus replaces the injured shoot. The flowers are unisexual and moncecious, the numerous males borne in thick catkins proceeding from the side of last year's shoot. The female. flowers are solitary or few in number, and borne on short terminal spikes of the present season's growth. In the male flower the receptacle is " concrescent " cr inseparate from the bract in whose axil it originates. The receptacle is, in consequence, extended more or less horizontally, so that the flowers appear to be placed on the upper surface

of horizontally-spreading stalks. The perianth consists of five or six oblong greenish lobes, within which is found a tuft, consisting of a large number of stamens, each of which has a very short filament and an oblong two-lobed anther bursting longitudinally, and surmounted by an oblong lobe, which is the projecting end of the connective. There is usually no trace of ovary in the male flowers, though by exception one may occasion- ally be formed.

The female flower consists of a cup-like receptacle, inseparate from the ovary, and bearing at its upper part a bract and two bracteoles, uplifted with the receptacle. Vrom the margin of this latter organ springs a perianth of four short lobes. The one-celled ovary is immersed within the receptacular tube, and is surmounted by a short style with two short ribbon-like stigmatic branches. The solitary ovule springs erect from the base of the ovarian cavity. The fruit is a kind of drupe, the fleshy husk of which is the dilated receptacular tube, while the two-valved stone represents the two carpels. The solitary seed has no perisperm or albumen, but has two large and curiously crumpled cotyledons concealing the plumule, the leaves of which, even at this early stage, show traces of pinne.

The species best known is J. regia, the Common Walnut, a native of the mountains of Greece, of Armenia,

of Afghanistan and the north-west Himalayas, and also found in Japan. Traces of the former existence of this or of a very closely-allied species are found in the Post- Tertiary deposits of Provence and elsewhere, proving the former much wider extension of the species. At the pre- sent day the tree is largely cultivated in most temperate countries for the sake of its timber or for its edible nuts. The timber is specially valued for cabinet work and for gun- stocks, the beauty of its markings rendering it desirable for the first-named purpose, while its strength and elasticity fit it for the second. The leaves and husk of the fruit are resinous and astringent, and are sometimes used medicinally as well as for dyeing purposes. It is stated that sugar is prepared from the sap in a similar manner to that obtained from the maple Acer saccharinum in Canada.

The young fruits are used for pickling. When ripe the seeds are much esteemed as a delicacy, while in France much oil of fine quality is extracted from them by pressure. There are several varieties in cultivation, varying in the degree of hardihood, time of ripening, thickness of shell, size, and other particulars. In the climate of Great Britain a late variety is preferable, as securing the young shoots against injury from frost, to which otherwise they are very subject. The kernel of the large-fruited variety is of very indifferent quality, but its large shells are made use of by the French as trinket-cases.

Among the American species J. nigra, the Black Walnut, is especially noteworthy as a very handsome tree, whose timber is of great value for furniture purposes, but which is now becoming scarce. In Britain it forms a magnificent tree. The White Walnut, J. cinerea, is a smaller tree; its leaves are used medicinally.

Closely allied to the walnuts and sometimes confounded with them are the hickories (see HicKory). See also vol. xii. p. 278.

WALPOLE, Tlorace (1717-1797), who was born on 24th September 1717, was accepted and recognized throughout his life as the youngest of the six children of Sir Robert Walpole by Catherine Shorter, but by some of the scandal-mongers of a later age, Carr, Lord Hervey, the half-brother of the peer who wrote the Memoirs of the Court of George the Second, has been called his father. This parentage has been assigned to him partly through the circumstance that the first wife of Sir Robert Walpole lived for some time estranged from her husband and on terms of friendship with Carr, Lord Hervey, not the least clever or unprincipled member of a family notorious for ability and for laxity of morals, and partly through the antagonism of the qualities shown by Horace Walpole to those of the prime minister, and through their affinity with the talents of the Herveys. If this rumour be correct, no such suspicion ever entered into the mind of Horace Walpole. To his mother he erected a monument, with an inscription couched in terms of sincere affection, in the chapel of Henry VII. in Westminster Abbey, and from the beginning to the end of his life his sarcasms never spared the Newcastles and the Hardwickes, who had shown, as he thouglit, lukewarmness in support of his father's ministry.

About 1728 he was sent to Eton, and in 1735 matriculated at King's College, Cambridge. Two years (1739-41) were spent in the recognized grand tour of France and Italy, in company with Gray the poet, whose acquaintance had been made amid the classic groves of Eton and Cambridge. They stopped a few weeks in Paris, and lingered for three months under the shadow of the magnificent portals of the cathedral of Rheims, on the pretence of learning the French language. Henry Seymour Conway, whose mother was a sister of Lady Walpole, shared their society in the French city, and retained Horace Walpole's warm friendship during life. The other two members of this little circle next proceeded to Florence, where Walpole rested for more than a year in the villa of Horace Mann, the British envoy-extraordinary for forty-six

years to the court of Tuscany. Mann's family had long been on terms of the closest intimacy with his guests, as Robert Mann was concerned in the contract for which Sir Robert Walpole was expelled from the House of Commons in 1712, and the envoy continued the correspondent of Walpole until 1786, for as they never met again their friendship remained unbroken. At Reggio Walpole and Gray parted in resentment. The latter was shy in manners and absorbed in literature, while his more opulent com- panion lived in society, and only dabbled in antiquities for pleasure's sake. Walpole in after years took the blame of these differences on himself, and it is gene- rally believed that the quarrel arose from his laying too much stress on his superiority in position. In 1744 the two friends were nominally reconciled, but the breach was not cemented.

During Walpole's absence he was returned to parliament in 1741 for the Cornish borough of Callington, over which his elder brother, through his marriage with the heiress of the Rolles, exercised supreme influence. He represented three constituencies in succession, Callington 1741-54, the family borough of Castle Rising from 1754 to 1757, and the more important constituency of King's Lynn, for which his father had long sat in parliament, from the latter date until 1768, In that year he retired, probably because his success in political life had not equalled his expectations, but he continued until the end of his days to follow and to

chronicle the acts and the speeches of both Houses of Parliament. Through his father's influence he had ob- tained three lucrative sinecures producing at least £5000 a year, and for many years (1745-84) he enjoyed a share, estimated at about £1500 a year, of a second family per- quisite, the collectorship of customs. The possession of these ample endowments and of a leasehold house in Arlington Street, which was left to him by his father, enabled him, a bachelor all his days, to gratify every expensive luxury and every costly taste. He purchased in 1747 the charmingly situated villa of Strawberry Hill, near Twickenham, on the banks of the Thames, and six years later began a series of alterations in the Gothic style, not completed for nearly a quarter of a century later, under which the original cottage became transformed into a building without parallel in Europe. Some years after this purchase he established a printing-press there for the gratification of his literary tastes, and many of the first editions of his own works were struck off within its walls. At this press were produced in 1753 the clever, if eccentric, designs of Richard Bentley (the youngest child of the great doctor, and for some time a protegé of Horace Walpole) for the poems of Gray; and among the reprints of Straw-berry Hill were the Lafe of Lord Herbert of Cherbury, Memoirs of Grammont, Hentzner's Journey into England, and Lord Whitworth's Account of Russia. The rooms of this whimsical edifice were crowded with curiosities of every description, and the house and its contents were shown, by tickets to admit four persons, between 12 and 3 from May to October, but only one party was admitted on each day, and the owner, although enamoured of notoriety, simulated discontent at this limited intrusion into his privacy. His nephew, the reckless third earl, died in 1791, and Horace succeeded to the peerage, but he never took his place in the House of Lords, and sometimes signed his name as "the uncle of the late earl of Orford." All his life long he was the victim of the gout, but he lived to extreme old age, and died unmarried, in Berkeley Square, London, March 2, 1797, when his body was buried privately at Houghton. The ancient estate of the family descended to the earl of Cholmondeley, whose ancestor had married Horace Walpole's younger sister. All Walpole's printed books and manuscripts were left to Robert Berry

WALPOLE

and his two daughters, Mary and Agnes ; their friendship had been very dear to the declining days of Walpole, who, it has even been said, wished to marry Mary Berry. By his will each of the ladies obtained a pecuniary legacy of £4000, and for their lives the house and garden, formerly the abode of Kitty Clive, which adjoined Strawberry Hill. Strawberry Hill went to Mrs Anne Damer, daughter of his lifelong friend General Conway, for her life, but it was entailed on the countess dowager of Waldegrave and her heirs. Walpole died worth £91,000 in the three per cents, and gave the whole of it away, the chief legacy being £10,000 for his niece the duchess of Gloucester. The collections of Strawberry Hill, which he had spent nearly fifty years in amassing, were dispersed under thie hammer of George Robins in 1842. They are described in a catalogue of that date, and in a series of articles in the Gentleman's Magazme for that year.

The pen was ever in Horace Walpole's hands, and his entire compositions would fill many volumes. His two works of imagination, the romance of the Castle of Otranto and the tragedy of the Mysterious Mother, are now all but forgotten. The former, which purported to be a story translated by William Marshal, gent., from the original Italian of Onuphrio Muralto, canon of the church of St Nicholas at Otranto, was often reprinted in England, and was translated into both French and Italian. By Sir Walter Scott it was lauded to the skies for its power in raising the passions of fear and pity ; from Hazlitt it met with intense condemnation. 'The Mysterious Mother, a tragedy too horrible for representation on any stage, was never intended for performance in public, and only fifty copies of it were printed at Strawberry Hill. By Byron, who, like Horace Walpole, affected extreme liberalism, and like hiin never forgot that he was born within the purple, this tragedy was pronounced "of the highest order." Several of Walpole's antiquarian works merit high praise. The volume of Historic Doubts on the Life and Reign of King Richard the Third, one of the earliest attempts to rehabilitate a character previously stamped with infamy, showed acuteness and rescarch. These doubts provoked several answers, which are criticized in a supplement edited by Dr Hawtrey for the Philobiblon Society. A fare of more lasting reputation, which has retained its vitality for more than a century, is entitled Anecdotes of Painting in England, with some Account

of the Principal Artists; collected by George Vertue, and now digested and published from his original manuscripts by Horace Walpole (4 vols., 1762-71). Its value to art students and to admirers of biographical literature demanded its frequent reproduction, and it had the good fortune to be re-edited with additions by the Rev. James Dallaway in five volumes (1826-28), and then again was revised and edited Aye R.N. Wornum in 1849. A cognate volume, also based on the inaterials of Vertue, is entitled the Catalogue of Engravers Born and Resident in England, which, like its more famous predecessor, often passed through the press. On the Catalogue of Royal and Noble Authors of England Walpole, whose professed liberalism only stopped short of the principles of republicanism, spent many hours of toilsome research, The best edition is that which appeared in five volumes, in 1806, under the competent editorship of Thomas Park, who carefully verified and diligently augmented the labours of the original author. As a senator himself, or as a private person following at a distance the combats at St Stephen's, Walpole recorded in a diary the chief incidents in English politics. For twenty-seven years he studied, a silent spectator for the most part, the characters of the chief personages who trod the stage of politics, and when he quitted the scene he retained the acquaintance of many of the chief actors. If he was sometimes prejudiced, he rarely distorted the acts of those whom he disliked; and_ his prejudices, which lie on the surface, were mainly against those whom he considered the traitors of his father. These diaries extend from 1750 to 1783, and cover a period of momentous im- portance in the annals of the national history. The Memoirs of the Last Ten Veurs of the Reign of George II. was edited by Lord Holland; its successor, Memoirs of the Reign of King George III. , was published under the editorial care of Sir Denis Le Marchant, who poured into his annotations a vast store of information; the last volumes of the series, Jowrnal of the Reign af George ILI. from 1771 to 1783, were edited and illustrated by Doran; and to these works should be added the Reminiscences, which Walpole wrote in 1788 for the gratification of the Misses Berry. These labours would in them- selves have rendered the name of Horace Walpole famous for all time, but his delightful Letters are the crowning glory of his life. His correspondents were numerous and widespread, but the chief of them were Cole the clerical antiquary of Milton, Robert Jephson, an obscure play-writer in mele Mason the poet,

Lord Hertford during his embassy in Paris, the countess of Ossory, Lord Har-

WALPOLE

court, George Montagu, one of his earliest friends, Conway, and Sir Horace Mann. With most of these friends he quarrelled, but the friendship of the last two, in the former casc through genuine liking, and in the latter through his fortunate absence from England, was never interrupted. The Letters were published at different dates, but the standard collection is that by Peter Cunningham (9 vols., 1857-59), and to it should be added the vol- umes of the letters addressed to Walpole by his old friend Madame du Deffand (1810, 4 vols.), and the publication of Dr Doran, Mann and Manners at the Court of Florence, which is founded on the epistles sent in return to Walpole by the envoy-extraordinary. A handsome little volume, Horace Walpole and his World, con- sisting of select passages from his letters, extracted and strung together in a simple narrative by Mr L. B. Seeley, was issued in 1884. Walpole has been called "the best letter-writer in the English language"; and few indeed are the names, possibly none save Swift and Cowper, which can compare with his. In these compositions his very foibles are penned for our amusement, and his love of trifles—for, in the words of another Horace, he was ever "nescio quid meditans nugarum et totus in illis"—minister to our instruction. To these friends he conimunicated every fashionable scandal, every social event, and the details ofevery political struggle in English life. The politicians and the courtiers of his day were more akin to his character than were the chief authors of his age, and the weakness of his intellectual perceptions stands out most prominently in his estimates of such writers as Johnson aud Goldsmith, Gibbon and Hume. On many occasions he displayed great liberality of disposition; and he bitterly deplored for the rest of his days his neglect of the unhappy Chatterton.

Abundant information about Horace Walpole will be found in the Memoirs of him and of his contemporaries cdited by Eliot Warburton, Jesse's George Selwyn and his Contemporaries, and the extracts from the journals and correspondence of Miss Berry; and it would be

unpardonable to omit mention of Macaulay's sketch of Walpole's life and character. (W. P. C.)

WALPOLE, Str Ropert, Eart or Orrorp (1676- 1745), prime minister of England from 1721 to 1742, was the third but eldest surviving son of Robert Walpole, M.P., of Houghton in Norfolk,! by Mary, only daughter and heiress of Sir Jeffery Burwell, of Rougham, in Suffolk. The father, a jolly old squire who revelled in outdoor sport and the pleasures of the table, transmitted to his son the chief traits in his own character. The future statesman was born at Houghton on 26th August 1676, and was sent to Eton and to King's College, Cambridge, where he was admitted as scholar on 22d April 1696. At this time he was destined, as a younger son, for the church, but his two elder brothers died young and he became the heir to an estate producing about £2000 a year, whereupon in May 1698 he resigned his fellowship, and was soon afterwards withdrawn by his father from the university. His education lasted sufficiently long, however, to enable him to gratify the tastes of the county members in parliament with the usual quotations from Horace, though in classical attainments he was excelled by Pulteney, Carteret, and many others of his contem- poraries in politics, On his father's decease the electors of the family borough of Castle Rising returned him in January 1701 to the House of Commons as their repre- sentative, but after two short-lived parliaments he sought the suffrages of the more important constituency of King's Lynn (1702), and was elected as its member at every subsequent dissolution until he left the Lower House. From the first he took a keen interest in the business of the House, and not many months passed away before his shrewdness in counsel and his zeal for the interests of the Whigs were generally recognized. In March 1705, accord- ing to the statement of Archdeacon Coxe, he was appointed one of the council to Prince George of Denmark, the inactive husband of Queen Anne, and then lord high admiral of England. Complaints against the administra- tion of the navy were then loud and frequent (Burton's Queen Anne, ii. 22-31), and the responsibilities of his new position tested his capacity for public life. His abilities proved equal to the occasion, and justified his advancement,

1 The head of a family whose ancestors and descendants are recorded

in an elaborate pedigree published in the Proceedings of the Norfolk and Norwich Archeol. Soc., i. 363-79.

3395

in succession to his life-long rival Henry St John, to the more important position of secretary-at-war (February 1708), an office of recent creation but in time of war of great responsibility, which brought him into immediate contact with the duke of Marlborough and the queen. With this post he held for a short time (1710) the treasurership of the navy, and by the discharge of his official duties and by his skill in debate became admitted to the inmost councils of the ministry. He could not succeed, however, in diverting Godolphin from the great error of that statesman's career, the impeachment of Sacheverell, and when the committee was appointed for elaborating the articles of impeachment Walpole was called upon to act as one of the managers for the House of Commons. On the wreck of the Whig party which ensued upon this fatal mistake, Walpole shared in the general misfortune, but neither cajolery nor menace could induce him to retain office, and he took his place with his friends in opposition. His energies now shone forth with irre- sistible vigour ; both in debate and in the pamphlet press he took up the cause of the ejected ministry, and in revenge for his zeal his political opponents brought against him an accusation of personal corruption. On these charges, now universally acknowledged to have proceeded from party animosity, he was in the spring of 1712 expelled from the House and committed to the Tower. His prison cell now became the rendezvous of the Whigs among the aristocracy, while the populace heard his praises commemorated in the ballads of the streets. The ignominy which the Tories had endeavoured to inflict upon him was turned into augmented reputation. At the dissolution of 1713 the faithful electors of King's Lynn again placed their trust in him, and during this parliament, the last summoned by Queen Anne, he took the leading part in defence of Steele against the attacks of the Tories.

With the accession of George, the Whigs regained their supremacy, and for nearly half a century they retained the control of English politics. The prizes fell to the victors, and Walpole obtained the lucrative if

unimportant post of paymaster-general of the forces in the administration which was formed under the nominal rule of Lord Halifax, but of which Stanhope and Townshend were the guiding spirits. A committee of secrecy was appointed to inquire into the acts of the late ministry, and especially into the peace of Utrecht, and to Walpole was entrusted the place ofchairman. Most of his colleagues in office were members of the House of Lords, and the lead in the Commons quickly became the reward of his talents and assiduity. Halifax died, and after a short interval Walpole was exalted into the conspicuous position of first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer (11th October 1715). Jealousies, however, prevailed among the Whigs, and the German favourites of the new monarch quickly showed their discontent with the heads of the ministry. Townshend was forced into resigning his secretaryship of state for the dignified exile of viceroy of Ireland, but he never crossed the sea to Dublin, and the support which Sunderland and Stanhope, the new advisers of the king, received from him and from Walpole was so grudging that Townshend was dismissed from the lord-lieutenancy (April 1717), and Walpole on the next morning withdrew from the ministry. They plunged into opposition with unflag- ging energy, and in resisting the measure by which it was proposed to limit the royal prerogative in the creation of peerages Walpole exerted all his powers. This display of ability brought about a partial reconciliation of the two parties among the Whigs. To Townshend was given the presidency of the council, and Walpole once again assumed the paymastership of the forces (June 1720). On the financial crash which followed the failure of the South

Sea scheme, the public voice insisted that he should assume a more prominent place in public life. At this crisis in England's fortunes Stanhope and Craggs were seized by death, Aislabie, the chancellor of the exchequer, was committed to the Tower, and Sunderland, though acquitted of corruption, was compelled to resign the lead. Walpole, as first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer (April1721), became with Townshend responsible for the country's government (though for some years they had to contend with the influence of Carteret), and during the rest of the reign of George I. they remained at the head of the

ministry. The hopes of the Jacobites, which revived with these financial troubles, soon drooped in dis- appointment. Atterbury, their boldest leader, was exiled ; Bolingbroke, in dismay at their feebleness, sued for pardon, and was permitted to return to his own country. The troubles which broke out in Ireland over Wood's patent for a copper coinage were allayed through the tact of Carteret, who had been banished as its lord lieutenant by his triumphant rivals. The Continent was still troubled with wars and rumours of wars, but a treaty between England, Prussia, and France was successfully effected at Hanover in 1725. England was kept free from warfare, and in the general prosperity which ensued Walpole basked in the royal favour. His eldest son was raised to the peerage as Baron Walpole (10th June 1723), and he himself became a knight of the Bath in 1725, and was rewarded with the Garter in 1726. Next year the first King George died, and Walpole's enemies fondly believed that he would be driven from office, but their expectations were doomed to disappointment. The confidence which the old king had reposed in him was renewed by his successor, and in the person of Queen Caroline, the discreet ruler of her royal spouse, the second George, the Whig minister found a faithful and life-long friend. For three years he shared power with Townshend, but the jealous Walpole brooked no rival near the throne, and his brother-in-law withdrew from official life to the groves of Norfolk in May 1780. Before and after that event the administration was based on two principles, sound finance at home and freedom from the intrigues and wars which raged abroad. On the Continent congresses and treaties were matters of annual arrangement, and if the work of the plenipotentiaries soon faded it was through their labours that England enjoyed many years of peace. Walpole's influence received a serious blow in 1733. The enormous frauds on the excise duties forced themselves on his attention, and he proposed some arrangements by which the income resulting to the national exchequer from the duties on wine and tobacco might be largely increased. His opponents fastened on these proposals with irresistible force, and so serious an agitation stirred the country that the ministerial measure was dropped amid general rejoicing. Several of his most active antagonists were dismissed from office or deprived of their regiments, but their spirit remained unquenched, and when Walpole met a new House of Commons in 1734 his supporters were far less numerous. The Gin Act of 1736, by which the tax on that drink was raised to au

excessive amount, led to disorders in the suburbs of London; and the imprisonment of two notorious smugglers in the Tolbooth at Edinburgh resulted in those Porteous riots which have been rendered famous in the Heart of Midlothian. These events weakened his influence with large classes in England and Scotland, but his parliamentary supremacy remained unimpaired, and was illustrated in 1737 by his defeat of Sir John Barnard's plan for the reduction of the interest on the national debt, and by his passing of the Playhouse Act, under which the London theatres are still regulated. That year, however, heralded his fall from power. His constant friend Queen Caroline

died, and the prince of Wales, long discontented with his parents and their minister, flung himself into active opposition. Many of the boroughs within the limits of the duchy of Cornwall were obedient to the prince's will, and he quickly attracted to his cause a considerable number of adherents, of whom Pitt and the Grenvilles were the most influential. The leading orators of England thundered against Walpole in the senate, and the press resounded with the taunts of the poet and pamphleteer, illustrious and obscure, who found abundant food for their invectives in the troubles with Spain over its exclusive pretensions to the continent of America and its claim to the right of searching English vessels. The minister long resisted the pressure of the opposition for war, but at the close of 1739 he abandoned his efforts to stem the current, and with a divided cabinet was forced, as the king would not allow him to resign, into hostility with Spain. The Tory minority had seceded from parliament, but at the commencement of the session, in November 1739, they returned to their places with redoubled energigs. The campaign was prosecuted with vigour, but the successes of the troops brought little strength to Walpole's declining popularity, and when parliament was dissolved in April 1741 his influence with his fellow-countrymen had faded away. His enemies were active in opposition, while some of his colleagues were lukewarm in support. In the new House of Commons political parties were almost evenly balanced. Their strength was tried immediately on the opening of parliament. The Bossiney election went against him by six votes; a member of the opposition was elected as chairman of committees by a

majority of four; and the ministry was twice defeated over tlie Westminster election. The voting on the return for Chippenham was accepted as a decisive test of parties, and, as Walpole was beaten on a preliminary point in connexion with the return, he resolved upon resigning his places. On the 9th of February 1742 he was created earl of Orford, and two days later he ceased to be prime minister. A committee of inquiry into the conduct of his ministry for the previous ten years was ultimately granted, but its deliberations ended in nought, and Walpole was allowed to spend the rest of his days in retirement at Houghton. There he died 18th March 1745, and in its parish church he was buried on March 25. With the permanent places, valued at £15,000 per annum, which he had secured for his family, and with his accumulations in office, he had rebuilt the mansion at great expense, and formed a gallery of pictures within its walls at a cost of £40,000, but the collection was sold by his grandson for a much larger sum in 1779 to the empress of Russia, and the estate and house of Houghton, a vast and gloomy edifice described in the Art Journal for March 1887, passed to Lord Cholmondeley, the third earl having married the premier's younger daughter. Walpole was twice married,—in 1700 to Catherine, eldest daughter of John Shorter, who died in 1737, having had issue three sons and two daughters, and in 1738 to Maria, daughter of Thomas Skerret, a lady often mentioned in the letters of Lady Mary Wortley Montague.

Civil wars at home and the protracted struggle with France on the Continent had produced in Englishmen an intense desire for peace, and, in their remembrance of the constant disputcs undcr the previous two sovereigns over the succession to the throne, the

_great majority of them cheerfully consented to the rule of the

electors of Hanover. Walpole knew the disposition of his country- men, and he gratified their tastes by consistently acting both in ecclesiastical and civil affairs on the principle gwieta non movere. He had profited by the lesson of the ill-fated prosecution of Sacheverell, and while he was prime minister the Church of England slept in peace without fear of danger from her enemies. The followers of dissent ranged themsclves behind his banner, but they were fed by promises rather than by actual concessions, and the wisest among them were contented with permission to worship un-

disturbed. His aim ever was to maintain peace abroad and quiet at home, and the chief blot on his ministerial career is that through love of office he allowed himself to be drawn into the war with Spain. In business matters he was methodical; his judgment was sound in financial affairs; and his speeches were marked by clear- ness of expression. Pope, who loved him not, has borne witness to his merits "in the happier hours of social pleasure," but neither in private nor in public life were his manners refined or his estimates of men and women exalted. "All these men have their price" was his estimate of members of the House of Commons, and although he gathered together at Houghton many of the master- pieces of painting he was not a lover either of art or of letters. All the eminent writers of the day were opposed to his rule, and at his fall his jealous spirit had driven into opposition every politician of repute. Great as his faults were, his character was suited to the temperament of the period within which he lived, and during his tenure of office his country advanced in prosperity by leaps and by bounds.

His life is written by Archdeacon Coxe in three ponderous folios, and has more recently been described in one volume by Mr Ewald. (W. P. C.)

WALPURGIS, Warpurea, or Warpurca,! §1, was born in Sussex about the end of the 7th or the beginning of the 8th centnry, and was educated at Winburn, Dorset, where, efter taking the veil, she remained for twenty-

seven years. She then at the instance of her uncle, St Boniface, and her brother, St Wilibald, set out along with some other nuns to found religious houses in Germany. Her first settlement was at Bischofsheim in the diocese of Mainz, and two years later (754) she became abbess of the Benedictine nunnery at Heidenheim, within her brother Wilibald's diocese of Eichstaédt in Bavarfa, where also another brother, Winebald, had at the same time been made head of a monastery. On the death of Winebald in 760 she succeeded him in his charge also, retaining the superintendence of both houses until her death on February 25, 779. Her relics were translated to Eichstadt, where she was laid in a hollow rock, from which exuded a kind of bituminous oil afterwards known as Walpurgis oil, and regarded as of miraculous efficacy against disease. The cave became a place of pilgrimage, and a fine church was built over the spot. She is commemorated at various times, but principally on May 1, her day taking the place of an earlier heathen festival, which was characterized by various rites marking the commencement of summer. In art she is represented with a crozier, and bearing in her hand a flask of balsam.

WALRUS, or Morsz.? In the article Mammatta (vol. xv. p. 442) it was shown that the existing members of the Pinniped division of the order Carnivora are divided into three very distinct groups, the true seals (Phocidz), the sea-bears or eared seals (Otariidx), and the T'richechidz, containing the walrus alone, in some respects intermediate between the other two, but also possessing, especially in its greatly modified dentition, peculiar characters of its own.

Trichechus is the almost universally accepted generic name by which the walrus is known to zoologists, but lately some confusion has been introduced into literature by the revival of the nearly obsolete terms Rosmarus by some authors and Odobenus by others. 7. rosmarus is the name of the species met with in the Arctic seas; that of the North Pacific, if distinct, is 7. obesus. The follow- ing description will apply equally to both. A full-grown male walrus measures from ten to eleven feet from the nose to the end of the very short tail, and is a heavy, bulky animal, especially thick about the shoulders. The head is rounded, the eyes rather small, and there are no external ears. The muzzle is short and broad,

with, on each side, a group of very stiff, bristly whiskers, which become stouter and shorter in old animals. The tail

1 French forms of the name are Gualbourg, Falbourg, Vaubourg, and Avougourg.

2 The former word is a modification of the Scandinavian vallross or hvalros ("whale-horse"), the latter an adaptation of the Russian name for the animal.

scarcely projects beyond the skin. The fore-limbs are free only from the elbow ; the hand is broad, flat, and webbed, the five fingers being of nearly equal length, the first slightly the longest. Each finger has a small, flattened nail, situated on the dorsal surface at a considerable distance from the end. The hind-limbs are enclosed in the skin of the body almost to the heel. The free portion, when expanded, is fan-shaped, the two outer toes (first and fifth) being the longest, especially the latter. Cutaneous flaps project considerably beyond the bones of the toes. The nails of the first and fifth toes are minute and flattened ; those of the second, third, and fourth elongated, sub-compressed, and pointed. The soles of both fore and

hind feet are bare, rough, and warty. The surface of the skin generally is covered with short, adpressed hair of a light, yellowish-brown colour, which, on the under parts of, the body and base of the flippers, passes into dark reddish- browu or chestnut. In old animals the hair becomes more scanty, sometimes almost entirely disappearing, and the skin shows ample evidence of the rough life and pugnacious habits of the animal in the innumerable scars with which it is usually covered. It is everywhere more or less wrinkled, especially over the shoulders, where it is thrown into deep and heavy folds.

One of the most striking external characteristics of the walrus is the pair of tusks which descend almost directly downwards from the upper jaw,

sometimes attaining a length, in old animals, of 20 inches, or even more. In the female they are as long or sometimes longer than in the male, but less massive. In the young of the first year they are not visible. These tusks correspond to the upper canine teeth of other mammals. All the other teeth, including the lower canines, are much alike—small, simple, and one- rooted, and with crowns, rounded at first, but wearing to a flat or concave surface. The complete dentition appears to be 7 3, c 4, pm 4,m $=, total 34. Many of these teeth are, however, lost early, or remain through life in a rudimentary state concealed beneath the gum. The teeth which are usually functionally developed are 73, ¢ q, pm 2=5, total 18. The tusks are formidable weapons of defence, but their principal use seems to be scraping and digging among the sand and shingle for the molluscs and crustaceans on which the walrus feeds. They are said also

‘to aid in climbing up the slippery rocks and ledges of ice

on which so much of the animal’s life is passed. Although this function of the tusks is affirmed by numerous authors, some of whom appear to have had opportunities of actual observation, it is explicitly denied by Malmgren. _ Walruses are more or less gregarious in their habits, being met with generally in companies or herds of various sizes. They are only found near the coast or on large masses of floating ice, and

ERI) = 43

rarely far out in the open sea; and, though often moving from one part of their feeding ground to another, they have no regular seasonal migrations. Their young are born between the months of April and June, usually but one at a time, never more than two. Their strong affection for their young, and their sympathy for each other in times of danger, have been particularly noticed by all who have had the opportunity of observing them in their native haunts, When one of their number is wounded, the whole herd usually join in a concerted and intelligent defence. Although harmless and inoffensive when not molested, they exhibit considerable fierceness when attacked, using their great tusks with tremendous effect either on human enemies who come into too close

quarters or on polar bears, the only other adversary they can meet with in their own natural territory. Their voice is a loud roaring, and can be heard at a great distance ; it is described by Dr Kane as "something between the mooing of a cow and the deepest baying of a mastiff, very round and full, with its bark or detached notes repeated rather quickly seven or nine times in succession,"

The principal food of the walrus consists of bivalved molluscs, epoca, Mya truncata and Samicava rugosa, two species very abundant in the Arctic regions, which it digs up from the mud and sand in which they lie buried at the bottom of the sea by means of its tusks. It crushes and removes the shells by the aid of its grinding teeth and tongue, and swallows only the soft part of the animal. It also feeds on other molluscs, sand-worms, star- fishes, and shrimps. Portions of various kinds of alge or sea-wecds have been found in its stomach, but whether swallowed intention- ally or not is still doubtful.

The commercial products of the walrus are its oil, hide (used to manufacture harness and sole-leather and twisted into tiller ropes), and tusks, The ivory of the latter is, however, inferior in quality to that of the elephant. Its flesh forms an important article of food to the Eskimo and Tchuktchis. Of the coast tribes of the last-named people the walrus forms the chief means of support. "The flesh supplies them with food, the ivory tusks are made into implements used in the chase and for other domestic purposes, as well as affording a valuable article of barter, and the skin furnishes the material for covering their summer habitations, harness for their dog-teams, and lines for their fishing gear " (Scammon).

Geographically the walrus is confined to the northern circum- polar regions of the globe, extending apparently as far north as ex- plorers have penetrated, but its southern range has been much re- stricted of late in consequence of the persecutions of man. On the Atlantic coast of America it was met with in the 16th century as low as the southern coast of Nova Scotia and in the last century was common in the Gulf of St Lawrence and on the shores of Labrador. Jt still inhabits the coast round Hudson's Bay, Davis Straits, and Greenland, where, however, its numbers are daily decreasing. It is not found on the Arctic coast of America between the

97th and 158th meridians. In Europe, occasional stragglers have reached the British Isles, and it was formerly abundant on the coasts of Finmark. Itis rare in Iceland, but Spitzbergen, Nova Zembla, and the western part of the north coast of Siberia are still constant places of resort, in all of which a regular war of extermination is carried on. The North Pacific, including both sides of Behring's Strait, northern Kamchatka, Alaska, and the Pribyloff Islands are also the haunts of numerous walruses, which are isolated from those of the North Atlantic by the long stretches of coast, both of Siberia and North America, in which they do not occur. The Pacific walrus appears to be as large as, if not larger than, that of the Atlantic ; its tusks are longer and more slender, and curved inwards; the whiskers are smaller, and the niuzzle relatively deeper and broader. These and certain other minor diffcrences have in- duced some naturalists to consider it specifically distinct under the name of Trichechus obesus. Its habits appear to be quite similar to those of the Atlantic form. Though formerly found in immense herds, it is rapidly becoming scarce, as the methods of destruction used by the American whalers, who have systematically entered upon its pursuit, are far more certain and deadly than those of the native Tchuktchis, to whom, as mentioned before, the walrus long afforded the principal means of subsistence.

Fossil remains of walruses and closely allied animals have been found in the United States, and in England, Belgium, and France, in deposits of Quaternary and late Tertiary age,

An exhaustive account of this animal, with references to all the authors who have written upon it, will be found in Allen's History of North American Pinni- peds, 1880, (W. H., F.)

WALSALL, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of Staffordshire, England, is situated chiefly on an eminence above a rivulet tributary to the Tame, on various canals and branch railway lines, 8 miles north- north-west of Birmingham and 123 north-west of London. The principal street is spacious and regular, and, although the side streets are generally crooked and mean, the suburbs are for the most part built with regularity and neatness.

The parish church of St Matthew, occupying a prominent position on an eminence, is a handsome modern building in the Transition style. The other five parish churches are also all modern. The schools include the grammar school, founded in 1554 for the education of boys, natives of Walsall, in the classics, the blue coat and national infant schools, and several board schools. The public library, established in 1859, enlarged in 1872, contains about 12,000 volumes; the scientific and art institution was established in 1854, and the literary institute in 1883. Among the principal public buildings are the town-hall in the Italian style, erected in 1866 ; the guild hall (1773), the theatre (formed out of the old agricultural hall in 1881), the drill hall (1866), the temperance hall (1866), the county court-house (1869), and the post-office (1879). The charitable institutions include the corporation alms- houses (1825); Harper's almshouses for six women, founded in the reign of James I. and rebuilt in 1793; the Henry Boy's almshouse, opened in 1887; the memorial cottages at Caldmore, erected in 1868 by private benefaction of two townspeople, for twelve poor couples or widows ; the Walsall cottage hospital (1863); the epidemic hospital (1872); and a number of minor charities. In the vicinity of the town are extensive coal-mines and limestone quarries. Ironstone is also obtained, and brick clay is dug. The town possesses iron and brass foundries, corn mills, and tanneries. One of the staple industries is the manufacture of the various kinds of ironmongery required in the construction of harness and carriages. Locks and keys, bolts, pulleys, and other hardware goods are also largely manufactured. The town is governed by a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen councillors. The area of the municipal borough was extended in 1877 to 6929 acres; the population in 1871 was 46,447 (estimate of that in the extended area 49,018), and in 1881 it was 58,795. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 7478 acres) in 1871 was 49,018, and in 1881 it was 59,402.

In the early part of the 10th century Walsall was fortified by Ethelfleda, daughter of Alfred the Great and countess of Mercia. At the time of the Conquest it was retained by William as a royal demesne for about twenty years, until it was bestowed on Robert, son of Asculpus, who had accompanied the Conqueror to England. Subsequently it was owned by Richard Neville, earl of Warwick, the king-maker, and it was held

successively by Henry VII. and Henry VIII. By the latter it was granted to John Dudley, duke of Northumberland, on whose attainder-and execution in the reign of Mary it was forfeited and came into the possession of the Wilbrahams, from whom it passed by marriage to the Bridgmans. It is spoken of by Camden as "none of the meanest of market towns." Queen Elizabeth visited Walsall in the 28th year of her reign, and made a grant of lands to the town. Walsall was the residence of Henrietta Maria for a short time in 1643, It is a borough by prescription, but received charters from Edward III. and Henry IV., confirming the privileges and immunities con- ferred on it by previous sovereigns. Its oldest charter is that bestowed in the 3d of Charles I., which was confirmed in the 13th of Charles II. It is now governed under the Municipal Act of 1835. It was constituted a parliamentary borough by the Reform Act of 1882, and returns one member to parliament,

WALSH, Witrtam (1663-1709), is included among Johnson's Most Eminent English Poets, but is justly said to be "known more by his familiarity with greater men than by anything done or written by himself." It was he who gave Pope in his boyhood the advice to study correct- ness, The value of his counsel is acknowledged in the Essay on Criticism (1. 729). He was a native of Wor- cestershire, represented his native county in several parlia- ments, and was gentleman of the horse to Queen Anne.

WALSINGHAM, Sir Franects (c. 1536-1590), secre- tary of state under Elizabeth, was descended from an old Norfolk family, and was the third and youngest son of William Walsingham of Scadbury, Chislehurst, Kent, where he was born about 1536. After a good private education he entered King's College, Cambridge, but did

not take a degree. He remained abroad during the reign of Mary, and the knowledge of foreign languages he thus acquired is said to have commended him to the notice of Cecil, Lord Burghley. In the parliament which met in January 1558-59 he was returned for Banbury, and in that which met in January 1562-63 for both Banbury and Lyme Regis; he decided to sit for the latter place. Nothing further is known of his political

history, till in 1568 he wrote to Cecil a letter on the Darnley murder, which shows that he enjoyed the confidence of Cecil and the regent Murray, and was fully convinced of Queen Mary's guilt. In the following year Ridolfi, the papal agent, was confined, under suspicion of conspiracy, in Walsingham's house. In August 1570 Walsingham was selected as special ambassador to France in connexion with the negotiations for the toleration of the Huguenots, and in December took up his residence as permanent ambassador at Paris. On the 19th April 1572 he was successful in obtaining the signature of a treaty of peace between England and France, but the beneficial results of his skilful diplomacy in connexion with the negotiations for the Anjou and Alengon marriages were neutralized by the uncertain and changeable moods of Elizabeth, and finally frustrated by the massacre of St Bartholomew. He took his leave of the king of France on 23d May 1573, and on 20th December of the same year he was made secretary of state. On Ist December 1577 he was knighted, and on 22d April of the following year made chancellor of the order of the garter. In June following, along with Lord Cobham, he was sent to the Netherlands to assist in arranging a pacification of the States, but the extra- ordinary vacillation of Elizabeth rendered his mission a total failure. In July 1581 he was again sent on an embassy to Paris, but his instructions were of a kind both so dishonourable and so foolish that he said he wished rather the queen had sent him to the Tower. In such circumstances he could only endeavour to temper and qualify the policy of Elizabeth in such a manner as to prevent a fatal breach in the relations between the two countries, and in this he was successful. His embassy to Scotland in 1583 to endeavour to persuade James to dismiss the earl of Arran was also, as he prognosticated, a failure. He therefore recommended that the purpose of Elizabeth should be effected by fostering a conspiracy among the Scottish nobles, but the project was not carried out for some time afterwards. In 1584 Walsingham was appointed custos rotulorum of Hants and recorder of Colchester, and in 1585 high steward of Winchester. On 23d November 1586 he was returned member for Surrey, and again on 29th October 1587.

From the first Walsingham, equally with Cecil, Lord Burghley, was strongly hostile to Queen Mary of Scotland. By constant watchfulness and

the skilful use of spies he succeeded in discovering the inmost secrets of her policy and plans. He permitted the Babington conspiracy to develop until letters passed between Babington and Mary which, if they are to be accepted as genuine, proved that the scheme for the assassination of Elizabeth had Mary's fullapproval. Mary and her friends declared that Walsing- ham had counterfeited her ciphers; but that Babington sent her letters informing her of the assassination scheme is beyond denial. Mary's friends, without any proof but her own asseveration, affirm that the letters never reached her, and that Mary's letters in reply, the authenticity of which Babington to the last never doubted, were forged by the agents of Walsingham. 'The asseveration of Mary is, however, robbed of all value by the fact that, in addition to denying the authenticity of the letters, she denied all knowledge of the Babington conspiracy ; for Mendoza, the Spanish ambassador, while the plot was in progress, wrote

to Philip II. that Mary had informed him she was fully acquainted with it. The accusation against Walsingham, that he was an accomplice in bringing Mary to the block on false and forged evidence, cannot therefore be entertained, although there cannot be any doubt that he regarded her execution as a happy deliverance from a position of great political embarrassment. He was one of the commissioners on her trial, and on Mary hinting that the incriminating letters had been written by him, called God to witness that he "had done nothing unbecoming an honest man."

By becoming surety for the debts of Sir Philip Sidney, Walsingham, on account of a flaw in the power of attorney left by Sidney, found himself on Sidney's death un- expectedly involved in pecuniary ruin. But, although one of the ablest and wisest of Elizabeth's councillors, his honesty had frequently ruffled her self-esteem, and she witnessed his embarrassments without deigning to lend him the smallest help. He died at his house in Seething Lane, London, 6th April 1590, in circumstances of so great poverty that his friends buried him in St Paul's at night to save the expense of a public funeral. Walsingham was a Puritan in his religious principles, but was unable to obtain for the Puritans the

consideration from Elizabeth he desired. He established in 1586 a divinity lectureship at Oxford ; he was a general patron of learning ; and he encouraged Sir R. Hakluyt and other navigators in their voyages of discovery. By Spenser he is described as

"The Great Mecenas of this age As well to all that civil acts professe As those that are inspired with martial rage."

A large number of Walsingham's letters and state documents are in the library of the British Museum and State Paper Office. An account of his embassies to France with letters and despatches is contained in the Compleat Ambassador, edited by Sir Dudley Digges, 1655; the "Heads of a Conference between James VI. and Sir Frances Walsingham, September 1853," is published in vol. i. of the Banna- tyne Miscellany ; and his " Journal from December 1570 to Apri] 1583 " is published in vol. vi. of the Camden Miscellany (1871). The Arcana Aulica, or Walsingham's Prudential Maxims for the Statesmanand the Courtier, London, 1655, said to have been translated from the Spanish, was probably translated by another Walsingham than Sir Francis. In Sir Robert Cotton's Cottont Posthuma is a short article en- titled "Sir Francis Walsingham's Anatomizing of Honesty, Ambition, and Fortitude."

WALTHAM, a city in Middlesex county, Massachusetts, United States, like the other so-called cities and towns of New England is in effect a township, containing several bodies of urban population, together with rural districts. It is situated about 9 miles west-north-west from Boston, being in facta suburb of that city, in a country of rounded hills of glacial gravel. Besides the large village of Waltham, there are comprised in the city five others, viz., Bleachery, Chemistry, New Church, Prospectville, and Robert's Crossing. These have absorbed nearly all the population of the city, the rural inhabitants being com- paratively few in number. The population, by the State census of 1885, was 14,609, about one-fourth being of foreign birth. Waltham is known all over the world for its machine-made watches, of which over 1400 are turned out daily. It has also a cotton-mill, a bleachery, and watch-tool manufactories.

The present area of Waltham was settled in 1630 by Puritans. In 1783 the town was incorporated, and in 1884 it received a city charter.

WALTHAM ABBEY, or Watrsam Hoty Cross, a inarket-town of Essex, England, on the borders of Hertford- shire and Middlesex, is situated on the Lea, near the great northern road, and on the Cambridge branch of the Great Eastern Railway, 13 miles north of Liverpool Street station, London. The town lies in a hollow, with streets for the most part crooked and narrow, and although many additions have lately been made it still retains much of the characteristic appearance of an old country town. Of the former magnificent abbey church the only portion of importance now remaining is the nave, forming the present parish church, the two easternmost bays of the nave being converted into the chancel. It is a very fine specimen of

Norman, and in the opinion of Mr Freeman forms part of the original building of Harold, although others assign its date to the time of Henry I. Only the western supports of the ancient tower now remain. A tower corresponding with the present size of the church was erected in 1556 and restored in 1798. On the south side of the church is a lady chapel of about the end of the reign of Edward II. or beginning of that of Edward III., containing some good decorated work. Bishop Hall became curate of Waltham in 1612, and Thomas Fuller was curate from 1648 to 1658. At Waltham Cross on the great northern road, about a mile west of Waltham, is the beautiful cross erected (1291-94) by Edward I. at one of the resting-places of the corpse of Queen Eleanor on its way to burial in Westminster Abbey. It is of Caen stone and is supposed to have been designed by Pietro Cavalini, a Roman sculptor. It is hexagonal in plan, and consists of three stages, de- creasing towards the top, which is finished by a crocketed spirelet and cross. The lower stage is divided into com- partments enclosing the arms of England, Castile and Leon, and Ponthieu. It underwent restoration in 1833, and a scheme for the same object was started in 1885. The old Elizabeth market-house that formerly stood in the market-square of Waltham was taken down in 1852. The town is the seat of a county court for Epping division of Essex, and possesses a court-house erected in 1849. The royal gunpowder factory is in the immediate vicinity; and the town possesses gun-cotton and percussion-cap factories, flour-mills, malt kilns, and breweries. Watercresses are largely grown in

the neighbourhood, and there are exten- sive market-gardens and nurseries, including Paul's famous rose nursery. The area of the urban sanitary district of Waltham Holy Cross, which is identical with the parish of Waltham Abbey and is in the civil county of Essex and registration county of Middlesex, is 11,017 acres. the popu- lation being 5197 in 1871 and 5368 in 1881.

Waltham appears first in history as the hunting seat of the Danish thane Tovi or Tofi, the royal standard-bearer at whose wedding feast Hardicanute died. The great forest on the edge of which it was built was long known as the forest of Waltham, but the only portion of it now remaining is called Epping forest. A wonderful cross which had been found in Tovi's land at Montacute, Somerset, was brought to Waltham, and Tovi built a church for its reception, which was named the Church of the Holy Cross. When the estate after being confiscated to the crown came into the possession of Harold, he pulled down Tovi's church and built a new one of great magnificence, which was consecrated in 1060. He also founded a great secular college, which, though nsually referred to as an abbey, did not, as is pointed out by Mr Freeman, become a religious house till the reign of Henry II. Shortly before the fatal battle of Hastings, Harold made a pilgrimage to Waltham, bringing with him many gifts. His body, which was first buried under a cairn at Hastings, was subsequently brought to Waltham and buried in the place of honour by the high altar. The tomb was destroyed about 1540. The site and property of the abbey were given by Henry VIII. to Sir Anthony Denny, whose grandson, Sir Edward Denny, was created by James I. baron of Waltham, and by Charles I. earl of Norwich. The town obtained a grant of a market from Henry III.

See " Architecture und Early History of Waltham Abbey Church," by E. A. Freeman, and other papers in vol. ii. of Zransactions of the Essex Archzological

Society; Thomas Fuller's History of Waltham Abbey; Stubbs's Foundation of Waltham Abbey; and Freeman's Norman Conquest.

WALTHAMSTOW, a town of Essex, England, now practically a suburb of London, is situated a short dis- tance east of the river Lea, on a branch

of the Great Eastern Railway, 6 miles north of Liverpool Street station. The original village grouped round the church is of com- p3ratively small dimensions, but a large number of houses and villas have been built along the high road, from which diverge a number of streets and "ends." The church of St Mary existed at a very early period, but the present building, chiefly of brick, was erected in 1535 by Sir George Monoux, lord mayor of London, and has under- gone frequent alteration and improvement. Besides other old brasses it contains in the north aisle the effigies in

brass of Sir George Monoux and Anne his wife. Among the other public buildings are the town hall, erected in 1876 at a cost of £4500, the literary institute, founded in 1882, and the working men's club and institute. There are a number of educational institutions, including a school of art connected with the science and art department of South Kensington, the Monoux grammar school, the Forest school, founded in 1834 in connexion with King's College, and the home for orphan boys. The benevolent and charitable institutions include the public dispensary (1873), the Leyton and Walthamstow hospital home for children (1877), Sir George Monoux's almshouses for thirteen poor men (1527), the Collard almshouses for ten married couples (1851), and the Squire almshouses for widows of decayed tradesmen. In the vicinity are the reservoirs of the East London Waterworks Company. On the banks of the Lea there are flour-mills and an oil-mill. The popu- lation of the urban sanitary district (area 4374 acres) in 1871 was 10,692, and in 1881 it was 21,715.

In Domesday the name occurs as Welamestun. In the reign of Edward the Confessor it belonged to Waltheof, son of Siward, earl of Northumberland, who married Judith, niece of the Conqueror, who betrayed him to his death in 1075. The estate subsequently passed to Guy de Beauchamp, earl of Warwick, and on the attainder of Karl Thomas in 1396 reverted to the crown. Afterwards it came into the possession of Edmund Beaufort, duke of Somerset; from the Somerscts it passed to Sir George Rodney, and subsequently it came to the Maynard family. It is

supposed to have been the birthplace of George Gascoigne the poet (d. 1577). Sir William Patten, commissioner of the navy, the friend of Pepys, had his seat at Walthamstow, and was frequently visited there by Pepys.

WALTHER, Bernuarp (1430-1504), astronomer, was born at Nuremberg in 1430. He was a man of large means, which he devoted to scientific pursuits. When REGIoMonTANUS (q.v.) settled at Nuremberg in 1471, Walther built for their common use an observatory and a printing office, from which numerous calendars and ephemerides were issued, which became of great importance for the voyages of discovery. At this, the first German observatory, clocks driven by weights were first used in astronomical observations in 1484. The observations, con- tinued until Walther's death in May 1504, were published by Schoner in 1544, and by Snell in 1618, as an appendix to his edition of Landgrave William's observations.

WALTHER VON DER VOGELWEIDE (¢. 1170- c. 1230), the most illustrious of the German minnesinger, was born in Tyrol between 1165 and 1170. He belonged to a noble family, but had no hereditary possessions. At an early age he seems to have given evidence of an apti- tude for poetry, and his genius was developed under the influence of the older poet Reinmar, whom he soon far surpassed. His earliest patron was the young and brilliant Duke Frederick of Austria, at whose court in Vienna he spent several years. After Duke Frederick's death Walther betook himself to King Philip, at whose coronation in Mainz, on the 8th September 1198, he was present. King Philip appreciated his genius, but nothing is definitely known as to their relations to one another, or as to the causes which brought their connexion to an end. After a short stay at the court of Duke Leonhard of Carinthia Walther went to Eisenach, where poets were always welcomed by the landgrave Hermann. Here he remained until 1211, when the landgrave, in deference to the pope, joined some other princes in an attempt to secure the crown for the prince afterwards known as Frederick II. Walther, who disapproved of this policy, soon after- wards entered the service of the emperor Otho; but, the emperor having proved unfriendly towards him, he associ- ated himself with the cause of Frederick, who greatly pleased him by granting him a

small fief near Wiirzburg, thereby gratifying a wish the poet had often expressed. He might now have led a settled life, but he had so long

been accustomed to go from court to court that it was apparently hard for him to live without the excitement of travel and adventure. In 1217 he was at the court of Duke Leopold of Austria, after whose departure for the Holy Land he appears to have been received first by the duke's uncle, Henry of Medlik, then by Berthold of Andechs, the patriarch of Aquileia. On the return of Duke Leopold Walther again spent some time with him; but in 1220 he joined the retinue of the imperial vicar Engelbert of Cologne and Frederick II.'s son, Henry, to whom he seems to have acted as tutor. In 1224 Walther retired to Wiirzburg, where, although living in privacy, he watched closely the course of public affairs. He may have taken part in the crusade of 1228, but he certainly did not reach Palestine. He died about 1230 at Wiirzburg, where, under a tree in the Laurence garden of the new minster, a stone was long pointed out as that which, according to tradition, marked his grave. A new monu- ment to him was erected at Wirzburg in 1848, and a statue of him was unveiled at Innsbruck in 1877.

Walther von der Vogelweide was a poet not only of exquisite sensibility, but of a frank, independent, and manly character. He lived in a troubled age, when church and state were often in deadly conflict. In this struggle, in which he took keen interest, his sympathy was wholly with the imperial cause, and he did much to influence opinion by the vigour with which he attacked the extravagant pretensions of the papacy. While defending the rights of secular rulers, he did not forget their duties, and many of his verses—considering the period to which they belong—display a remarkably clear and generous conception of the principles of humanity and freedom. In writing of love, the favourite subject of the minnesinger, he had all the brightness, freshness, and gaiety of the best of his contemporaries, and he excelled them in his deli- cate appreciation of the noblest womanly qualities. His love of nature, especially in the season of spring, was an essential element of his intellectual and emotional life, and gives an enduring charm to the poems in which it is incidentally or

indircetly expressed. He was a master of all the forms of verse used in Middle High German, and the perfection of his rhythm and diction, combined with the depth and wide range of his idcas, secures for him an enduring place in the front rank of the lyrical poets of his country.

A critical edition of his poems was issued by Lachmann in 1827, and there have been later editions by Wackernagel, Rieger, and Pfeiffer. There are renderings into modern German by Simrock, Koch, and Wciske. An admirable biography of the poet was written by Uhland (1822). Biographical and critical studies have also been written by Reuss, Rieger, Menzel, and Bése.

WALTON, or WALTON-LE-DALE, a township of Lanca- shire, is situated on the south bank of the Ribble, 14 miles south-east of Preston. The township includes the town of Walton-le-Dale, the villages of Bumber Bridge and Higher Walton, and several hamlets. The Ribble is crossed by a stone bridge of three arches erected in 1782, connecting Walton-le-Dale with Preston. The church of St Leonard, situated on an eminence to the east of the town, was originally erected in the 11th century. The earliest portions of the present building are the chancel and tower, in the Perpendicular style, the nave having been rebuilt in 1798, while the transepts were erected in 1816. The nave was re-pewed in 1855 and the chancel restored in 1864. There are a number of interesting old brasses and monuments. A working men's institute was built in 1881. Cotton-spinning is carried on, and there are market-gardens in the vicinity. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 4683 acres) was 8187 in 1871 and 9286 in 1881.

Walton occupies the site of a Roman station, probably that of Cocctum. The manor was granted by Henry de Lacy about 1130 to Robert Banastre. It afterwards passed by marriage to the Langtons, and about 1592 to the Hoghtons of Hoghton. Walton was the principal scene of the great battle of Preston, fought on the 17th August 1648 between Cromwell and the duke of Hamilton. In 1701 the duke of Norfolk, the earl of Derwentwater, and other Jacobites incorporated the town by the style of the "mayor and corporation of the ancient borough of Walton." In 1715 the pass- age of

the Ribble was bravely defended against the Jacobites by Parson Woods and his parishioners.

WALTON, or Watron-on-THE-HiLL, a township of Lancashire, England, now practically a suburb of Liver-

pool, 3 miles north-east of the central station. It con- sists largely of villas and the better class residences, but a considerable portion of the Parish Church district is occupied by labourers and artisans. The parish church, dedicated to St Mary, was originally founded in 1326, but has all been rebuilt within recent times, the nave in 1742, the chancel in 1810, and the embattled western tower in 1831-32. There are also situated within the township the West Derby union workhouse, erected in 1868 at a cost of £10,000; the borough prison, 1855, £180,000 (which, however, is by a special Act of Parlia- ment included within the borough of Liverpool); and the county police station, 1885, £8000. One of the attrac- tions of Walton is Stanley Park, 100 acres in extent, opened in 1870 at a cost of £200,000. In the neigh- bourhood are also the Liverpool parochial cemetery, the Anfield Park cemetery, and the Kirkdale cemetery. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1907 acres) in 1871 was 6449, and in 1881 it was 18,536.

The parish of Walton originally included Liverpool, which was separated from the mother church in 1699. At Domesday it was held by a Saxon named Winestan, and subsequently it was for some centuries in the possession of a family who took from it their name. The earl of Sefton is now lord of the manor.

WALTON, Brian (1600-1661), bishop of Chester, and editor of the great London Polyglott Bible, was born at Seymour, in the district of Cleveland, Yorkshire, in 1600. He went to Cambridge as a sizar of Magdalene College in 1616, migrated to Peterhouse in 1618, was bachelor in 1619, and master of arts in 1623, After holding a school master- ship and two curacies he was in 1626 made rector of St Martin's Orgar in London (1626), where he took a leading part in the contest between the London clergy and the citizens about the city tithes, and compiled a treatise on the

subject, which is printed in Brewster's Collectanea, 1752. His conduct in this matter displayed his ability, but his zeal for the exaction of ecclesiastical dues was remembered to his hurt in 1641 in the articles brought against him in parliament, which appear to have led to the sequestration of his very considerable preferments.1 He was also charged with Popish practices, but on frivolous grounds, and with aspersing the members of parliament for the city. Up to this time he was perhaps more an active ecclesiastic than an eager student. In 1642 he was ordered into custody as a delinquent ; thereafter he took refuge at Oxford, and ultimately returned to London to the house of Dr Fuller, dean of Ely, whose daughter Jane was luis second wife. In this retirement he planned and executed his great work, a Polyglott Bible which should be completer, cheaper, and provided with a better critical apparatus than any previous work of the kind (see Pory- GLoTT). The proposals for the Polyglott appeared in 1652, and the book itself came out in six great folios in 1657, having been printing for five years. England had at this time a band of Biblical and Oriental scholars of unusual distinction, and Walton could reckon among his active helpers Usher, Lightfoot, and Pococke, Castle, Wheelock, and Patrick Young, Hyde, Thomas Greaves, and others of less note. The great undertaking was supported by liberal subscriptions, and Walton's political opinions did not de- prive him of the help of the Commonwealth ; the paper used was freed from duty, and the interest of Cromwell in the work was acknowledged in the original preface, part of which was afterwards cancelled to make way for more loyal expressions towards that restored monarchy under which Oriental studies in England immediately began to languish. To Walton himself, however, the Reformation

1 He was from January 1635-36 rector of Sandon, in Essex, where his first wife, Anne Claxton, is buried. He appears to have also been

a prebendary of St Paul's, and for a very short time he had held the rectory of St Giles in the Fields.

042

brought no disappointment. He was consecrated bishop of Chester in December 1660. In the following spring he was one of the commissioners

at the Savoy Conference, but took little part in the business. In the autumn of 1661 he paid a short visit to his diocese, and returning to

London he fell sick and died on 29th November.

However much Walton was indebted to his helpers, the Polyglott Bible is a great monument of industry and of capacity for directing a vast undertaking, and the Prolegomena (separately reprinted by Dathe, 1777, and Wrangham, 1825) show judgment as well as learn- iug. The same qualities appear in Walton's Considerator Considered (1659), a reply to Dr John Owen's Considerations, who thought that the accumulation of material for the revision of the received text tended to atheisni. Among Walton's works must also be mentioned an Jntroduetio ad Lectionem Linguarum Orientalium

(1654, 2d ed. 1655), meant to prepare the way for the Polyglott. See Henry J. Todd, Memoirs of the Life and Writings of Walton, London, 1821, in 2 vols., of which the second contains a reprint of Walton's answer to Owen.

WALTON, Izaax (1593-1683), author of Zhe Compleat Angler, hooked a much bigger fish than he angled for when he offered his quaint treatise to the public. There is hardly a name in our literature, even of the first rank, whose immortality is more secure, or whose personality is the subject of a more devoted cult. Not only is he the sacer vates of a considerable sect in the religion of recrea- tion, but multitudes who have never put a worm on a hook—even on a fly-hook—have been caught and securely held by his picture of the delights of the gentle craft and his easy leisurely transcript of his own simple, peaceable, lovable, and amusing character.

A succession of devotees have supplemented by patient inquiry what he tells us of himself. He was born at Stafford in August 1593; 'the register of his baptism gives his father's name as Jervis, and nothing more is known of his parentage. He settled in London as a shopkeeper, and at first had one of the small shops, seven and a half feet by five, in the upper story of Gresham's Royal Burse or Exchange in Cornhill. In 1624 he had a shop in Fleet Street opposite the Temple, and was described as a linen-draper. In 1632 he bought a lease of a house and shop in Chancery Lane, and was described as a "sempster" or milliner.! His first wife, married in

December 1626, was Rachel Floud, a great-great-niece of Archbishop Cranmer." She died in 1640. He married again soon after, his second wife being also of distinguished clerical connexion, Anne Ken—the pastoral "Kenna" of The Angler's Wish —sister of Thomas Ken, afterwards bishop of Bath and Wells. When the civil war broke out, he retired from business. He had bought some land near his birthplace, Stafford, and he went to live there, but, according to Wood, spent most of his time "in the families of the eminent clergymen of England, of whom he was much beloved." His second wife died in 1662, and was buried in Worcester cathedral church, where there is a monument to her memory. One of his daughters married Dr Hawkins, a prebendary of Winchester, in whose house he died in December 1683, at the age of ninety. The last forty years of his long life seem to have been spent in ideal leisure and occupation, the old man travelling here and there, visiting his "eminent clergymen" and other brethren of the angle, compiling the biographies of con- genial spirits, and collecting here a little and there a little for the enlargement of his famous treatise.

The first edition of The Compleat Angler was published in 1653, but the peaccful angler continued to add to its completeness in his leisurely way for a quarter of a century. There wasa second edition in 1656, a third in 1661 (identical with that of 1664), a fourth in 1668, and a fifth in 1676. In this last edition the thirteen chapters of the original have grown to twenty-one, and a second part was added by his loving friend and brother angler

Charles Cotton, who took up "'Venator" where Walton had left him and completed his instruction in fly-fishing and the making of flies. 1 There was more millinery in men's elothes in those days; henee

his location near the fashionable Temple. 2 See Notes and Queries, Nov. 15, 1878.

WAL—-WAN

Walton did not profess to be au expert with the fly; the fly-fishing in his first edition was contributed by Mr Thomas Barker, a retired cook and humorist, who produced a treatise of lis own in 1659; but in the use of the live worm, the grasshopper, and the frog "Piscator" himself could speak

as a master. ‘The famous passage about the frog—often misquoted about the worm— “use him as though you loved him, that is, harm him as little as you may possibly, that he may live the longer ”—appears in the original edition. The additions made as the work grew were not merely to the didactic part; happy quotations, new turns of phrase, songs, poems, and anecdotes were introduced as if the leisurely author, who wrote it as a recreation, had kept it constaritly in his mind and talked it over point by point with his numerous brethren. There were originally ouly two interlocutors in the opening scene, ‘ Pisca- tor’ and “Viator”; but in the second edition, as if in answer to an objection that “ Piscator” had it too much in his own way iu praise of angling, he introduced the falconer, “ Auceps,” changed “Viator” into “ Venator,” and made the new companions each dilate on the joys of his favourite sport.

Although The Compleat Angler was not Walton’s first literary work, his leisurely labours as a biographer seem to have grown out of his devotion to angling. It was probably as an angler that he made the acquaintance of Sir Henry Wotton, but it is clear that Walton, whatever lis education and breeding may have been, must have had more than a love of fishing and a humorous temper to recommend him to the friendship of the accomplished ambas- sador. At any rate, Wotton, who had intcnded to write the life of John Donne, left the task to Walton, who had lamented his pastor’s death in an Elegy in 1638, and now completed and pub- lished the life, much to the satisfaction of the most learned critics, in 1640. Sir Henry Wotton dying in 1639, Walton undertook his life also; it was finished in 1642, and published in 1651. His life of Hooker was published in 1662, George Herbert in 1670, and Bishop Sanderson in 1678. All these subjects were endeared to the biographer by a certain gentleness of disposition and cheerful picty ; three of them at least, Donne, Wotton, and Herbert, were anglers. Their lives were evidently written with loving pains, in the same leisurely fashion as his Angler, and like it are of value less as exact knowledge than as harmonious and complete pictures of character. Walton also rendered affectionate service to the memory of his friends Sir John Skeffington and John Chalkhill, editing with prefatory uotices Skeffington’s Hero of Lorenzo in 1652, and Chalkhill’s Thealma and Clearchus a few months before his owu death in 1683. Two political letters, published in 1680, under the title Love and*

Truth, though conciliatory enough in temper to be Walton's, are ascribed to him on somewhat doubtful authority (see Zouch's Lives, vol. ii. p. 387, ed. 1817).

There are biographies of Walton himself by Sir John Hawkins (prefixed to an edition of the Ang/er, 1760), Dr Zouch (appended to an edition of the Lives, 1796), and Sir Harris Nicolas (prefixed to an edition of the Angler, 1836). There are notices also, with additional scraps of fact, annexed to two great American editions, Bethune's (1847, particularly splendid) and Dowling's (1857). A fac- simile of the original edition of the Angler was issued by Bagster in 1810, another by Elliot Stock in 1876. (W. M.)

WAN-CHOW-FU, a prefectural city in the Chinese province of Ché-keang, and one of the ports opened by treaty to foreign trade, is situated (28° 1' N. lat. and 120° 31' E. long.) on the south bank of the river Gow, about 20 miles from the sea. The site is said to have been chosen by Kwo P'oh (276-324 a.p.), a celebrated antiquary who recognized in the adjacent mountain peaks a correspondence with the stars in the constellation of the Great Bear, from which circumstance the town was first known as the Tow, or Great Bear, city. Subsequently, however, the appearance in its vicinity of a white deer carrying a flower in its mouth was deemed to be so favour- able an omen as to more than justify the change of its name to Luh, or Deer, city. Its present name, which signifies the " mild district," and which is correctly descriptive of the climate, though not of the inhabitants, was given to it during the last dynasty (1368-1644). The walls, which were built in the 10th century, are about 6 miles in circumference, 35 feet in height, and 12 feet broad at the top. The gates, seven in number, were put up in 1598. Wan-chow is about 1563 miles by road from Peking and 600 from Hankow. The country in the neighbourhood of the town is hilly and pretty, while opposite the north-west

3 The existenee of Chalkhill was ealled in question by S. W. Singer in 1820, and the pastoral supposed to be Walton's own. There can be little doubt that the poet is the same person whose tomb is in Win- chester

eathedral, and that Walton was simply mistaken in describing him as "an aequaintant and friend of Edmund Spenser."

Modern changes in the art of war,

An army an organism, not a machine,

WAN—WAR

gate " Conquest Island" forms a picturesque object. The island is, however, more beautiful than healthy. The port, which was opened to foreign trade in 1876, has not justi- fied the great expectations which were formed of its prob- able success as a commercial centre.

In 1886 the imports (excluding treasure) were valued at £118,710, and the exports at £25,751; 44 vessels entered, of which one only was British, and 45 cleared. A noticeable feature in the year's return is the falling off in the quantity of opium imported,—only 25 piculs, 62 per cent. less than the average of the previous three years. The principal item of import is cotton goods, which showed an increase of 12 per cent. over the same average. Kerosene oil, matches, window-glass, sugar, dates, and old iron are among the chief goods imported; while among the exports kittysols or umbrellas, timber, oranges, and tea figure prontinently.

WANDERING JEW. See Jew, Wanperinc.

WANSTEAD, a village of Essex, England, now really a London suburb, is situated on a branch of the Great Eastern Railway (Snaresbrook station), 8 miles by rail north-east of Liverpool Street station. It possesses the

343

usual characteristics of the better-class eastern suburbs of London. Wanstead Park, 184 acres in extent, was opened in 1882. A feature of Wanstead is Eagle Pond or Lake, 10} acres in extent. At Lake House Hood wrote Tylney Hall. The population of the urban sanitary district (area about 1072 acres) is estimated to have been 4311 in 1871; in 1881 it was 5362.

Wanstead is supposed to have been a Roman station. It belonged to the monks of St Peter's, Westminster, and afterwards to the bishop of London, of whom it was held at Domesday by Ralph Fitz Brien. In the reign of Henry VIII. it came into the posses- sion of the crown, and in 1549 it was bestowed by Edward VI. on Lord Rich, whose son sold it in 1577 to Robert, earl of Leicester. The original manor house was rebuilt by Lord Chancellor Rich, who was here visited by Queen Elizabeth in 1561, and for her enter- tainment Sir Philip Sidney wrote a dramatic interlude which was played before the queen at Wanstead garden, and is printcd at the end of the Arcadia. Sir Richard Child, afterwards earl of Tylney, built the splendid mansion of Wanstead House in 1715 (demolished in 1822), in which the prince of Condé and others of the Bourbon family resided during the reign of the first Napoleon.

WAR

HATEVER definition of the word "army" (see Army) be adopted, the fact that it is a body of men organized for the effective employment of arms is the essence of it. Hence the nature of the most effective organization and employment of armies in active warfare at any given period has always turned upon the nature of the arms in use at the time. The laboratory and work- shops of science in recent years have in fact produced and forced on a change in the nature of fighting, of a kind which it is safe to say never entered the mind of any one of the inventors whose skill made it necessary. And yet the change is of such a kind that, though due to the development of very material things, as, for instance, the greater rapidity of fire, the greater range of weapons, and the like, it is much more remarkable in its effect on the spirit of armies and the nature of fighting discipline than in almost any other aspect.

In all periods of war, under all conditions of arms, the moral forces which affect armies have been the great determining factors of victory and defeat. From a date much earlier than the day when Cesar, defeated at Dyr- rachium, gained the empire of the world by so acting as to restore the morale of his army before the great contest at Pharsalia, it has been on this nice feeling of the moral pulse of armies that the skill of great commanders has chiefly depended. In that respect there is nothing new in

the modern conditions of war. But the sequence by which the development of arms has changed the moral pivot of military power in our own times is so remarkable that it deserves to receive a somewhat careful historical statement at the outset of this article. Unless it is under- stood the lessons of modern fighting cannot be learnt ; for there has not yet occurred a modern war in which the principles of modern fighting, as they are now universally understood among the most thoughtful soldiers of all nations, have been deliberately applied to action, after those principles have been realized and worked out in practice during peace time. And yet it is among the first of these principles that for success in our days careful peace practice, adapted to the actual conditions of fighting, must precede the entry on a campaign. When letters from the seat of war in 1866 brought home to Europe the effect which the breech-loader was producing in deter- mining the contest, the first impression was that of simple consternation. It was supposed that Prussia, by the possession of that weapon alone, had made herself mistress of Europe. Gradually it came to be known that the secret

of Prussian power lay, not in her breech-loader alone, but at least as much in her perfect organization. In 1870 her scarcely less startling successes tended for a time to produce an effect almost as blinding upon the eyes of those who watched them. There was a dis- position to assume that whatever had been done in the war by the Prussians was, by the deliberate choice and determination of the best and most successful soldiers in Europe, shown to be the best thing that could be done under the circumstances. The exhaustive statement of facts contained in the Prussian official narrative and in the regi- mental histories, and the evidence of eye-witnesses innumer- able, have, however, gradually made it evident that, valuable as the experiences of the 1870 campaign unquestionably are for soldiers of all nations, the Prussian successes were certainly not due to the carrying out of what are now regarded by the best Prussian officers themselves as the principles of action which ought to determine practice in future wars. But during the course of the war itself the Prussian army, prepared by the soundest peace training to adapt itself to whatever conditions it met with, was continually and progressively modifying its practice under the experience of conditions which it had been impossible fully to anticipate.

It is upon the surface of the facts that the extreme loss of life suddenly oc asioned at particular points by the effectiveness of the fire of the new weapons, both of artillery and infantry, compelled the gradual abandonment of close formations of men, massed together in dense columns or even in closed lines, and the gradual adoption of what are known as "skirmishing" or open order formations. In other words, when the French fire fell upon the solid columns of the advancing Prussians, the column in- stinctively scattered. The officers and non-commissioned officers were often lost in very large proportion, and during the actual course of the fighting, without any preconceived idea on the subject, a method of attack was adopted which proceeded by successive swarms of dispersed men taking advantage of such shelter as the ground permitted. The noise of the rapid breech-loader, and the crash of an artil- lery able to fire much mere frequently than in former campaigns, and, moreover, accumulated in much greater masses than had ever been the case before, made words of command inaudible at a distance. Hence it came to pass that small parties of men, once launched into an infantry fight, were virtually beyond all control on the part of superior officers. All that these could do to influence

Subordi- nation of drill to organiza- tion.

the action was to determine the direction and object of the first attack of each fraction, and then to furnish it with fresh supports at the proper moment, sending them forward in such a way as to cause their blows to be delivered in the most telling direction.

Here then was the great change which had come about, produced, as has been said, by the efficiency of the new weapons, but rendered possible by those changes in the characteristics of the men of whom armies are composed, which had arisen from altogether different circumstances, such as the high educational standard of the Prussian nation, and the introduction into the ranks of highly culti- vated classes. The army, at all events in battle, was and could be no longer a mere mechanical weapon in the hands of its commander. [If this latter could not infuse into it a spirit of hearty willing co-operation and intelligent subor- dination, chaos

and chaos only must ensue. For the very essence of the old forms of fighting in battle, as they had been inherited from the time of Frederick the Great, and, though modified by Napoleon, had yet in this respect re- mained the same, was that battle movements were led up to and prepared for by an elaborate system of drill, so ar- ranged that by the issue of predetermined words of com- mand the officer leading at least a division of an army could decide precisely the formation it was to assume and the movements it was to make in battle. Now, though no doubt many of the prelininary movements could still be accomplished in accordance with the old drill, yet, for at least the very mile and a half over which the issue had actually to be fought out, drill had vanished, as far at all events as the infantry were concerned. All effective move- ments and co-operation depended on perfect organization, and on a training which made every officer and every man know almost instinctively what to do and what decisions to form as each emergency arose. The Germans had in the largest sense perfected their organization, not merely in its form, itself a matter of no small importance, but in its pre- paredness for battle action. This had been done chiefly by keeping and training together much larger units of command than had ever been organically worked together before. By "organic working" we specifically mean such work as leads each nan to know by long habit what the part assigned to him is, and how to contribute his share in bringing about the result desired by his general. In the article ARmy will be found an exhaustive statement of the successive forms which army organization has assumed at different periods of history. With regard to these forms, representing as they do the condition of an army in a state of rest, suffice it to say that the ancient proverb about new wine and old bottles applies perfectly. It would not have been possible for the Germans to have secured a complete correspondence of working, a unity amid great diversity, without having devised a form of organization which assigned to every man an adequate share of work and of responsibility, by bringing a limited number of men at each step under the authority of one, those so placed in authority being themselves at the next stage, in limited number, also under one man's authority. But the very idea of organization implies more than this mere perfection of form. It implies also, as animating the whole body, a spirit developed by careful training, a mutual reliance on the certainty of the adherence of all to known principles of action.

The essential change, then, which appears to have come over inodern war may be stated thus. Under the condi- tions of the past, the general in command of an army relied upon its perfection in drill and in formal manceuvres for enabling him to direct it with success against the weak points of an adversary. Now he must depend instead upon the perfection of its organization and of a training

adapted to make each man ready when required to apply sound principles in every emergency, and, above all, as soon as possible voluntarily to place himself under authority again so as to secure unity of action. To summarize this statement in a single sentence, and employing the word organization in the larger sense explained above, the change consists in the substitution of organization for drill as a means of battle-action. In other words, a living organism must take the place of a mechanical instrument.

It will be seen at once that the perfection aimed at, involving as it does not merely a mechanical learning, by rote and drill-sergeant, of required changes of position, is of a much higher order both for the individual man and for the whole body than was the case under the old con- ditions. On the other hand, it is not possible that the practical performance should so nearly approach the ideal as happened formerly. Hence, great as was the excellence of the Prussian army in 1870 as a whole, yet the more thoroughly that campaign is studied the more manifest will be the mistakes in point of details committed by subordinate actors. It is in the nature of things im- possible that this should ever be otherwise under the con- ditions of war which are now established. When the choice of action in detail is left to so many hands the possibilities of error are multiplied indefinitely.

It is clear from what has been said that a change Applica- of the most complete character has come over the very tion of past principle by which armies are held together. It is by (°RUN

a: 3 o strategy no means surprising, therefore, that a few soldiers should ang tactics. have arrived at the conclusion that, because of the import- ance of this change, all past experience of fighting has ceased to be of any importance to him who would under- stand the principles of war as they

exist to-day. On the other hand, others of far higher authority have declared it to be certain that change has only affected that branch of the art of war which is called tactics, and that the other branch, or strategy, is in no way affected. We are not able to subscribe absolutely to either of these state- ments. But before stating our views it will be convenient to define the terms employed. By strategy we under- stand "the art of rightly directing the masses of troops towards the object of the campaign." Of modern tactics no better definition perhaps has ever been given than that of Sir Edward Hamley. After defining the limits of either subject thus—'" the theatre of war is the province of strategy, the field of battle is the province of tactics," } he describes the manceuvres of a modern battle-field as "the quick orderly change of highly trained and flexible masses of men from one kind of formation to another, or their transference from point to point of a battle-field for purposes which become suddenly feasible in the changing course of action."

It is necessary, in discussing the application of past experience to modern war, to make intelligible the dis- tinction between these two fields of experience, because undoubtedly the changes wrought by time affect the two great parts of the art of war in very different ways and in a very different degree. But in fact there are many parts of the study of tactics which are not strictly included within its province when that is limited to the field of battle. The distinction between the two provinces having been understood as a general idea, it will be seen at once how it has happened that in the varied incidents of warfare it has become necessary to apply the terms " tactics " and "strategy " toother matters. For no army can determine for itself or know beforehand absolutely what will be a field or a day of battle. Hence it is necessary throughout almost the entire course of a campaign to take those pre- cautions and to take into account those considerations

1 Operations of War, 4th ed., pt. ili. ch. i.; pt. vi. ch. i.

|

The art

of war as a study.

which apply properly to the period of actual combat. Thus, though an enemy may in fact be many marches dis- tant, it is necessary to provide against his possible attack, by having some troops always on the alert whilst others are marching with all the ease and security which the pro- tection of these procures for them. It is necessary also in a similar manner to have protection for the repose of an army, and to detail troops for this purpose. All the questions, then, which concern the fixing of "advanced guards" and "rear guards," which protect the front and rear of an advancing army, and the " outposts," which protect an army at rest, are usually included in the study of tactics, though in many instances they may have nothing to do with a battle-field. But again, though the campaign —the large field of war which concerns the marches and movements of armies striving against one another to obtain positions of vantage for the actual combat—is the province of strategy, yet it may well happen that on the actual battle-field itis necessary to take account, not only of those circumstances which will help to secure victory in the fight, but of the effect which victory or defeat will have upon the campaign. All these considerations we necessarily regard as " strategical," even though they occupy our minds ona battle-field.

For it must be emphatically asserted that there does not exist, never has existed, and never, except by pedants, of whom the most careful students of war are more im- patient than other soldiers, has there ever been supposed to exist,an "art of war" which was something other than the methodic study of military history. Those who have most assisted in making the study sufficiently methodic to enable it to be of practical profit in their own profession to soldiers for future use, or to historical students in watching the play of mind between great commanders, have been invariably the most emphatic in denouncing all attempts to formulate a systematic series of "rules of war." Among generals, Mack, the unfortunate Austrian who surrendered at Ulm to Napoleon, and in our own time Count Palikao, who had made himself the laughing- stock of the English staff during the advance on Peking, and who was afterwards responsible for bringing about the catastrophe of Sedan, have been the great sticklers for the "rules of war." At least once Count Palikao, in

China, came without his sword to look on at the success of operations which he had denounced as " contrary to every maxim of war." On the other hand, Sir Edward Hamley, who has done more than any other Englishman to make known to English officers the value of a methodical treatment of the study of campaigns, has most vigorously denounced such talk as this.

"Nothing is more common," he writes ''than to find in writings on military matters reference to the 'rules of war,' and assertions such as that some general 'violated every principle of war,' or that some other general owed his success to 'knowing when to dispense with the rules of war.' It would be difficult to say what thésc rules are, or in what code they are embodied; and an inquirer, who is somewhat puzzled, perhaps, to understand how the highest proficiency can be displayed in a science by defiance of its principles, had better resolve to base his own conclusions upon

fact and reason alone, when he will probably discover that such criticisms have only very vague ideas for their foundation."

Jomini, a very eminent authority in his day, though not a little disposed to somewhat exact definition, and perhaps sometimes to over-pedantic statement, has with very little difference expressed the same view. Clausewitz, probably the most profound of all military students, has even more emphatically declared that the theory of the art of war is valuable, just in so far as it assists to guide a man through the vast labyrinth of military experience, and to prepare his mind to be ready to act for itself under the emergencies of actual war; but, he adds, "it must renounce all preten- sion to accompany him on to the field of battle." Both he

and Jomini agree in asserting that it must have become with him an instinct, almost absorbed into his blood, to be of any value to him. '"' The wise teacher," says Clausewitz, "restricts himself to the work of directing and assisting the mental development of his pupil, and does not try to keep him in leading-strings throughout his career." Thus from all countries those who have come to be accepted as authorities on the study

of war, the very men who, if any, ought to be tempted to magnify their office, have cried aloud against the abuse of such study. It is not from them, but from non-military writers like Macaulay, that the notion of some formal code of the rules of war has been derived. Macaulay's expression about Peterborough winning battles by violating the rules of war cannot be characterized otherwise than as worthless rhetoric, not only unsupported, but absolutely contradicted by fact. So thoroughly reasoned and so entirely worked out on a principle were Peterborough's campaigns that they have in our own day served to guide one of the most brilliant of English soldiers in the conduct of one of his most successful wars. The campaigns by which Colonel Gordon saved China were largely assisted in their conception by his careful study of Peterborough's generalship in Spain.

On the other hand, it is not from writers on war, but from the greatest generals, that the most emphatic state- ments have come as to the paramount importance to a soldier of the careful study of past campaigns. The class- ical instance of the most authoritative dictum on this sub- ject is surrounded by circumstances of dramatic interest. Napoleon in 1813, sitting after dinner surrounded by his marshals, between the first and the second battle of Dres- den, was drawn to speak on this subject by Marmont, the one who, in Napoleon's own judgment and that of others, had himself the most complete knowledge of war as an art. Marmont, observing how difficult it was, during the con- tinued strain of war itself, to improve in its practice, maintaining that rather in peace than in war could war be best studied, said to Napoleon that he thought that Napoleon's own first campaign in Italy was the most brilliant in its conception of any that he had ever fought; so that sixteen years of high command had hardly made his knowledge of war.as an art more perfect. Napoleon at once admitted the truth of this, and in reply said, '"' Yes; Turenne was the only one of us all who constantly improved in the management of his campaigns as he advanced in years." This reply is especially remarkable, because Napoleon was not only the greatest captain of his own age, but he was by far the most careful student that the world has known of the great generals of all ages. It is an unanswerable assertion that only by study of the past experience of war has any great soldier ever prepared him- self for commanding armies.

It must, however, be always a question how far the circumstances of our own time have so changed as to limit the period within which it is worth while to devote very careful study to the wars of the past. On the one hand, the greater number of officers in any army will never find time exhaustively to study all the great campaigns which would be of value if they had really so known them as to acquire the experience, as far as may be, of the various actors in them, and it is therefore of special importance that the most modern experiences at least should be completely known to them. On the other hand, even after all the campaigns which have taken place since breech-loaders and rifle-guns have become the determining factors of battles have been carefully studied, it can hardly be claimed for them that they present a picture approximately complete of all the possibilities of modern war. To any one who tells us that nothing applicable to the wars of the future is now to be learnt from the campaigns of Napoleon, or even from

the events of the Peninsular War, we are prepared to reply by adducing, either from almost any one of Napoleon's most important campaigns or from the Peninsula, specific lessons, for the most part experiences of human nature, and illustrations of the mistakes which men are liable to make, which have in no wise been diminished in value by the changes which have come over the face of war.

As an instance in point, reference may here be made to a recently published study of the campaign of Fredericks- burg during the civil war in America. It deals in a sound and useful manner with both strategy and tactics, and yet it is based entirely on conclusions drawn from a period of war prior to the introduction of the breech- loader. We are disposed to put it forward as a very powerful illustration of the kind of lessons which a careful student may draw from one condition of tactics and apply to another. What is most interesting in the work is perhaps the way in which those lessons are made to apply with exceptional force to the peculiar and special condi- tions involved in breech-loader fighting. It seems impos- sible for any one who has appreciated its excellence not

other source which came to be known as its " base of supply." It began to be the object of generals to manceuvre in such a way as to interfere with the lines by which their opponents were receiving their supplies and to protect their own. In many respects, no doubt, even the Roman armies in the time of Hannibal acted on strategical principles that are applicable in our own time. Yet the change in the conditions under which armies began to live in the field was so great from the moment when, in order to facilitate and hasten their movements, they began to be thus supplied from a particular "base," and along these "lines of com- munication," that the art of handling them in campaigns changed almost as completely as tactics ever changed. New combinations became possible. Skill was turned into a new direction. In other words, strategy, like tactics, changes when its implements or weapons change. If now it be asked whether since the days of N apoleon and Wellington the implements of strategy have not changed almost as completely as those of tactics, it must be answered that the change has been even more complete.

Since 1815 the face of Europe has been more altered Changes in than it had been in five previous centuries. It is now the general covered with a network of railways and telegraphs. The ©ontitions

to perceive that in a similar manner, with the like wise appreciation of those things which are permanent and those

Changes in

things which change, sound deductions may be drawn from even the tactical experiences of the Napoleonic era. N ay, the statement of the most brilliant and successful general in the British army of to-day appears to be indisputable, that a perusal of the words of even Cesar himself will suggest to any thoughtful soldier, who knows something also of modern war, reflexions that he may afterwards recall with advantage as applicable to modern campaigns. That tactics have been first and most directly affected

commerce of the world and its means of intercommunica- tion have developed in a manner that has everywhere revolutionized the conditions of life. The advance of science has operated in a thousand forms upon the circum- stances under which armies exist in the field. The condi- tions of sea transport and of sea warfare are even more completely changed than those of land. Further, it must be remembered that battle-action is itself one of the deter- mining factors of strategy. If, in their general character,

ae by the changes which have recently taken place in the | the nature of battles and the circumstances under which a ee conditions of modern war it is impossible to doubt. The | battles have to be fought change very materially, that in

nature of tactics has been always of a kind more tending to admit of rapid change, and more frequently suggesting to a commander of originality new developments. Napoleon indeed declared that tactics should be changed every ten years. Strategy has always, on the other hand, been as- sumed to possess a more permanent character, All im- portant changes in armament immediately affect tactics. No one now disputes the general character of the tactical changes which have been produced by the introduction of the breech-loader and the development of artillery. In- deed, when we come to describe the broad features of modern tactics, we shall be dealing with matters as to which, except as to a few specific points, it may be said that practically the military world of Europe is agreed ; but we confess that we are not prepared to accept the assumption that tactics only have been changed, and that he who would be ready for future war on the grand scale must not also look for some change in the general char- acter of strategy.

Sir E. Hamley, in his Operations of War, has graphically described how it was that armies lived in the days of Edward III. ; how they depended absolutely upon the food and supplies which they found in the country through which they moved; and how, when they had exhausted that country, and were opposed by an enemy holding a strong position, which they could not venture to assail, they were obliged to fall back simply because they had no arrangements for obtaining supplies regularly from their own land. Now the great strategic movements of armies have

depended always upon this question of food and of warlike supplies in the first instance. It will therefore be evident at once that the character of strategy changed from the moment when a system was devised by which along a regular chain of posts, or "line of communications," an army received its supplies of food, warlike implements, and reinforcements, from either its own country or some

itself involves a further change in the combinations which are open for manceuvres in the field of which the ultimate object is to lead up to battle. Once more, the size of the armies which will enter into the next great campaign in Europe will be so vastly different from those which fought out the great wars of the past that their manoeuvring in campaigns must necessarily be very different from anything that Napoleon undertook. Now, even during the later wars of Napoleon, Jomini was obliged to admit that many of the experiences of the past must be materially modified as armies increased in size. One of the most familiar forms in which Napoleon exercised his strategic skill lay in defeating with his own entire army a fraction of the forces opposed to him, before it could be reinforced by the remainder of the enemy. Thus the element of time essen- tially entered into the question. Even during the great campaign of 1813, when Napoleon, holding a central posi- tion on the Elbe, endeavoured to strike from thence against the masses of the allies formed in a great circle round him at Berlin, in Silesia, and in Bohemia, experience showed that it was by no means easy to crush with sufficient rapidity armies of 120,000 men so as to pre- vent them from being supported in time by others. As the allies gradually closed in on him, and the distances between their different forces diminished, this became continually more and more apparent. In fact, it became clear, if it had been doubtful beforehand, that the ques- tion was altogether a matter of proportion between time, distance, and the resisting power of the several armies concerned. On the other hand, in 1814, when the nature of the country invaded caused a reduction in the size of the armies moving forward separately, Napoleon was able as of old to strike his blows right and left with telling effect.

Now, if it were possible for an army of our day, supplied with all the implements with which modern science has

of war,

WAR

provided it, to meet any army cf equal members, equipped as Napoleon's armies were equipped, the difference in power of the modern army would be such that it would almost be able to deal with its enemy as civilized armies provided with firearms were at first able to deal with savages possessed only of bows and arrows. The artillery of the days of Napoleon would not be able to act at all, for our modern infantry can fire with effect at a distance greater than could Napoleon's big guns. Our artillery would be able to destroy Napoleon's army before either his artillery or infantry could act against us. Thus an army of 50,000 men of our own time must be reckoned as possessing at least the resisting power of 100,000 of the days of Napoleon. It is obvious therefore that the re- lationship between time, distance, and the resisting power of armies has been greatly affected by the change in the character of weapons, and that calculations as to what a superior army can do in a given time to break up the force of an army opposing it, and to be free to deal with an- other army, are greatly modified.

There is another element which has largely to be taken into account in our modern battles. The expenditure of ammunition is, from the rapidity of fire, enormous. Even in the days of Napoleon it was extremely difficult, as his own words after the battle of Ligny show, for a victorious army rapidly to turn upon a second force which had not been engaged, because of the time required for filling up the empty ammunition waggons and the men's cartouches. These difficulties under our conditions of warfare are therefore immeasurably increased.

Again, in order that an army may nowadays be isolated in the way in which Napoleon in 1805 cut off the army of Mack in Ulm and utterly destroyed it, many conditions have to be secured which were not needed then. The telegraph is a formidable enemy to such an operation. The newspapers are a still greater. When MacMahon in 1870 attempted his disastrous march to the relief of Bazaine in Metz, to the success of which secrecy was es- sential, his movements first became known to the Prussian headquarters through French and English journals. Thus the

rapid intercommunication between town and town, capital and capital, which is now extended in all directions over Europe to an extent that makes it extremely difficult to completely prevent news of all kinds from leaking out, is an element that cannot be neglected in any strategical calculations. The change in this respect is strikingly shown by the fact that seven weeks elapsed before the news of Trafalgar reached Naples. Furthermore, distant parts of an army may, under certain conditions, be in point of time much more closely connected than they formerly were because of the facilities afforded by railways and telegraphs. There are a variety of other elements less important individually than as all contributing to the same result, which must not be ignored,—the facilities afforded for the supply of armies by compressed food and compressed forage, the enormously extended area which caters for the feeding of the European populations and the organization of the commerce of the world rendering all which that area yields rapidly available, and, lastly, the continually improving methods of machine transport by road, bicycles, tricycles, &c., making it possible to effect rapid movements without forage at all.

Furthermore, not only have we to deal with new material conditions, but, as already observed, the armies which have to be led under these new circumstances have themselves been profoundly changed, not only in their armament but in the very spirit, discipline, and organization by which they are held together. What is true of the private, of the sergeant, of the captain, in his relations with superiors, is even truer of the leader of the brigade, of the division,

of the army-corps, of the co-operating army. The whole method of the Prussian discipline and organization, as it showed itself in 1870, implied an intelligent independence of action in all ranks that most seriously affected the strategical operations. In fact, in that campaign two very noteworthy points may be observed. From the first battle at Weissenburg up to and including Gravelotte, the peculiar feature of the war was that the German successes at each action— Weissenburg, Worth, Spicheren, Colombey-Nouilly, Mars-la-Tour—were much more important in their

strateg- ical than in their tactical aspect,—much more important, that is to say, in their general influence on the campaign than in the severity of the losses in men and material inflicted on the enemy. The losses in battle were in fact greater on the side of the victors than on that of the van- quished. Yet, secondly, each of these actions, up to but not including Gravelotte, was brought on by the determination of subordinate leaders, and was not designed beforehand either by the king's headquarters or by the headquarters of any one of the three armies. It cannot of course be denied that there was an element of danger in this way of managing a campaign. But the general who attempts to carry out a modern campaign without having realized the nature of this strictly strategical experience is reckoning without his host. Armies now occupy, even when in numbers similar to those of the past, distances vastly greater than was the case in former times. One of two things must happen: either a general must attempt to pre- scribe the action of his subordinate leaders with a rigidity which nowadays will continually prevent them from carry- ing out what would be his wishes could he be on the spot to advise them; or he will find that he has, as best he may, to make his strategical movements fit into events which have not been previously designed by himself. The Prussian headquarters, realizing fully the dangers involved

'In the plan which they, in fact yielding to necessity,

accepted, found no fault with the generals who had in- itiated battles which had proved successful, fearing to do more injury to the spirit of the army than would be com- pensated by any other advantage. Nevertheless the notes of warning thrown out in the official history of the war are clear and unmistakable. Tous it appears that this condi- tion of things is an element in modern war to be foreseen and prepared for, that it represents, not an accident of the 1870 campaign, but an almost inevitable consequence of the present condition of armies. It was their high spirit, their high training, their knowledge of war, which made the German leaders so hard to keep within the leash when they saw the prey before them, and realized that it was a matter of moments whether it could be seized or not. There is nothing like this campaign, in the peculiar mode in which its strategical aspects developed, in all the past history of war.

It would appear, therefore, that it tends to mislead a man who is anxious to consider what combinations are open toa general in the field in our day, to assure him that strategy has undergone no change since the days of Napoleon. No doubta soldier who had never considered how or why Napoleon triumphed over his opponents, and when and why he failed, would have very little chance of solving aright the problems of a modern campaign. The handling of armies is, before all things, in the infinite variety of its elements, a dealing with human nature, under certain peculiar conditions, a play of mind against mind, and only by a study of the masters of the game can some of its experiences be gathered. If the changed conditions under which a modern war now takes place have been realized, then all study of the martial experiences of the past will in its own degree have value. We doubt extremely if any man can fairly appreciate the character of the campaign of

Changes since time of Napoleon.

Merit not necessarily to be esti- mated by success.

348

1866, or the campaign of 1870, who knows nothing of the campaigns of Napoleon. To take, for instance, the earlier of the two, the Prussian strategy in it has been the subject of much dispute ; and those who think that questions of war can be settled by quoting maxims of Napoleon, or of other great generals, find no difficulty in picking out sayings of his that would condemn without excuse the scheme of the Prussian campaign. Certainly we should ourselves be sorry to suggest that it is the one satisfactory model for future guidance under analogous circumstances. To us it seems that its value, as a sample of what may be done in war, depends ona careful comparison of the handling of the Prussian armies, under the conditions in which they had to act, with the mode in which Napoleon and other great generals acted under their own conditions. The point in which the Prussians offended against the received maxims of Napoleon lay in their attempting to pass the Bohemian mountains In two separate armies,—one from Silesia, one from Saxony and Prussia. The Prussian headquarters remained at Berlin in telegraphic connexion with both armies up to the moment when the junction of the two had been so

far effected that they were able to communicate with each other. Now Napoleon in many letters, more especially those addressed to his brother Joseph in Spain, has condemned the attempt to arrange complicated schemes for the co-operation of armies acting from different bases of supply. His reason is that such complicated schemes are rarely worked out as they are intended to be. For our own part we do not believe that the warning from the ast experience on which Napoleon's views were based has ceased to be of practical importance. We think that it ought to be present to the minds of all who are working out the plan of a campaign, and that the simpler, the less complicated, the less dependent on the successful combina- tion of a number of different elements the plan is the more likely is it to be successful. But we think also that the actual circumstances of each case as a whole must be taken into account, and that in the instance of the campaign under consideration the Prussian headquarters were fully justified in the method they adopted. Such an operation indeed would not have been safe or wise in the days of Napoleon (see below); but for the moment our contention is that the nodifications of the art of war which are necessitated by modern conditions extend to all its branches, and that criticism of modern campaigns which is based upon maxims derived from the past, without taking account of those new circumstances, is unsound and untrue. Few things are more unsafe in war than to judge by isolated cases of success alone, as to the soundness of the principles and the capacity of the leaders concerned in bringing about the successful result. 'The importance of military success is, in Britain more especially, apt to be measured much more by the national interest and national excitement which the result occasions than by any careful estimate of the difficulties actually overcome and the capacity for future command exhibited by the triumphant leader. To take illustrations sufficiently distant from our own days :— scarcely any victory, naval or military, has ever excited wilder enthusiasm in England than the capture of Porto Bello by Vernon in 1725; scarcely any disaster, the most disgraceful that ever occurred, caused greater horror and alarm in England than the return of Moore's expedition from Corunna in January 1809. Yet, as subsequent events showed, Vernon was by no means a very able admiral ; and, on the other hand, as all who have really studied the Corunna campaign well know, few have been ever conducted with more conspicuous ability or would

have justified a higher confidence in the general. It is thus of the greatest importance that statesmen at least should not be carried away by the sort of hasty criticism which

WAR

deals in glib phrases, and avoids reasoned examination of facts. The maxims of Napoleon may be as easily kiln- dried and deprived of life as those of Frederick had been by the Prussian army of Jena, which was so sure of defeating the upstart aspirant to military supremacy.

To sum up, then, what has been said on the art of war. There is no royal road to the knowledge of the art of handling armies any more than to that of any other branch of human activity. All that the best summary on that subject can profess to do for a reader is to assist him in undertaking a methodic study for himself of the principles which have guided great commanders, of the experiences of those who have fought in great battles and great campaigns, in endeavouring to put himself in their place so as to see with their eyes, hear with their ears, and realize the passions which influenced them, and the circumstances under which their decisions had to be formed.

It is not to be forgotten that even a commonplace critic may find it easy, when all the facts are fairly laid before him, to judge what ought to have been done in a given emergency. 'La critique est facile, Part est difficile," was the motto which Muffling, the very able representative of the Prussian army at Wellington's headquarters in 1815, chose for the title-page of his studies of war. The historical student has at least one advantage which is always and absolutely denied to the general. He may never, for many reasons, have an altogether correct and a completely true picture of all the circumstances which occurred on a given day, but he has a far more complete one than could possibly be before the general at the moment when he formed his decisions. Still more, he has far better materials for judgment than any of the minor actors who had themselves to decide what they ought to do, within the limitations of the orders they received, on most incomplete knowledge of what others were doing at distant parts of the field, of the positions and designs of the enemy, and of many other facts which may now be known with certainty by any one who

will read what happened. He who would prepare himself in any measure for criticizing aright must put himself in the place of the soldier who has to choose,—must realize the condi- tions of personal danger, of noise, of passion, of incom- plete and constantly misleading information, of disorder, confusion, panic, excitement, under which decisions are to be formed that must be calm and cool though they involve the lives of thousands of men, the fate of nations, and the course of history, and yet must be given then and there, for the lost moment will not return. Then he will perhaps perceive that after all the question whether he would himself have given the right decision, no matter what his previous training may have been, will be more a question of character than of knowledge. Nevertheless he is much more likely to decide aright if he has in his mind some large knowledge of the accumulated experience of the past than if, without anything to guide him, he judges by a so-called "common sense" which has already led him to ignore the earnest advice of those who have been themselves most successful in war. He is still more likely to decide aright, if, after he has acquired some general knowledge of the experience of the past, his judgment has been exercised by considering under assigned conditions what course he would actually choose to adopt. This is the method of peace preparation for war in which the Prussian officers of our day have been most carefully trained. In all their current works on the study of war they insist on the importance of this formation of the judgment and this training of choice as a matter of the utmost importance. All their most important military educational works take the form of "studies" or problems. The use of the war game and the training given by peace-

Conditions of histori- cal study.

Supplies.

Trans-

WAKE

manceuvres, as well as all regimental instruction, are adapted to the same end. STRATEGY.

The character of all military operations, whether those of strategy or tactics, is mainly determined by the nature of the armies engaged in them. An army as it exists in the field owes its constitution largely to those military institutions which have been fully described for each of the armies of our time under ARMy. But an army in the field differs considerably in each case from that which has been described as "the machine in a state of rest." This will be obvious at once if we consider the first question which attracts the attention of a commander about to lead anarmy in war. He has to choose the line of operations along which his army will act. The considerations which determine his choice are mainly connected with the neces- sity he is under of providing at all times for the supply of his army with food, forage, and ammunition, whilst he directs it against the point at which he is to strike.

In order that, for actual fighting purposes and during war, "that vast and complicated machine," an army, may so act "that the whole aggregate force of its numerous parts may be exerted in any direction and on any point required," the necessities of the individual soldier must be so provided for as not to hamper its working. A body of even thirty thousand men occupies a very considerable space, and requires an amount of food that completely disturbs the ordinary peace arrangements of most places at which it arrives in the course of its movements. Hence, apart from the large means of transport, such as a great fleet or ample railway communication, which may be sometimes used to carry a whole army to a given destina- tion, an army requires what is known as "transport" for an altogether different purpose. The food and ammunition must be distributed to the several battalions of soldiers composing the army from the points at which it has been collected, and within the battalions it will often be neces- sary to distribute it by transport to the men. Similarly for the conveyance of the sick and wounded of an army transport is required. In former days the arrangements which were made to provide an army with what was needed in this way were clumsy in the extreme. It will be remembered that during the Peninsular War the Duke of Wellington was necessarily so much occupied with this question of food and supply that he used humorously to say that he did not know that he was much of a general, but he prided himself upon being a first-rate commissariat officer. As long as all armies depended upon the services of country carts

and undisciplined drivers it was always possible to carry on war by these means, An army which, like the British in the Peninsula, fought continuously in the same country for six years, gained an enormous advantage by the gradual training and discipline of its transport drivers and commissariat employés. But now that the great nations of the continent of Europe have adopted a system by which all the population is available for military service, the result is that from the moment of declaration of war a modern army enters upon a eampaign with the whole of its "transport," using the term in the sense we have employed, as definitely a part of the disciplined army as its infantry, its cavalry, or artillery are. It is scarcely possible to exaggerate the importance of this change in facilitating the operations of an army in the field. The British army stands at a very great disadvantage in this respect, from the fact that the population outside the fighting ranks is

1 We are indebted to the Volunteer Tactical Society of Manchester for by far the best essay we have seen in any language on the history and use of the war game—that by Captain Spenser Wilkinson—and for the beginning of a series of translations of exercises in strategy and tactics by some of the ablest German soldiers of the day.

not, like that of Germany or France, ready to take up its place in the departments which cater for supply and transport. This modern perfecting of the efficiency of the interior transport of an army is a new strategical weapon in the hands of a general, to be reckoned among those spoken of in the earlier part of this article. Whether with the British army in an imperfect degree, or in a Con- tinental army more completely, this transport must be understood to be as much a part of a modern army as any of its "arms." When, during a campaign, an infantry battalion is moved by train, it, unless for a very especial emergency, requires to have with it the waggons and carts which form what is called its "regimental transport." Other transport is required to carry the more general stores needed for a brigade, a division, or an army-corps. Thus each unit of an army, if it is to remain in a condition of fighting efficiency, requires to have with it a great number of horses and carts. It is impossible to realize

the nature of the problems involved in the movements of armies unless this condition is kept in mind. For instance, when the British were moving to Ismailia in 1882, it was no uncommon assumption of the critics who at home watched the operations as they went on that within a day or two at the outside the small force, not exceeding about 10,000 men, which at first moved thither from Alexandria, had effected its landing. Had it been a body of 10,000 travellers landing from a variety of ships, to be provided for by the civil arrangements of the country after they had landed, that might not have been an exaggerated estimate of what was possible. But in fact the great ships were carrying not only 10,000 travellers,? but great quantities of stores of all kinds, of ammunition, of railway rolling- stock, of engineer equipment, of waggons and of horses. The landing of these and their passage up a narrow causeway was necessarily a very elaborate and slow operation. The whole scheme of the campaign had to take account of the time which such work would take, and, in fact, as a conse- quence of it, more than half the force to be ultimately employed was left either at Alexandria or at sea, and only arrived at Ismailia many days afterwards, when the landing of the first part had advanced considerably.

The same difficulty in rapidly transferring an army, chiefly because of its attendant departments, affects all strategical movements by railway. The embarking of troops on a railway, and their disembarking from the carriages, 1s an operation of such slowness that for com- paratively short journeys it is actually quicker for troops to march than to move by railway. The miscalculations and mistakes which were made so recently as 1870 by the French army, from failure to understand these facts, led often to the most disastrous consequences. In one instance Gambetta, insisting on sending troops by railway whicli Aurelle de Palladines had wished to march, hampered thie operations of that veteran by the delay which was thus im- posed upon certain portions of thearmy. There is, in fact, between the distance to be moved over and the number of troops to be moved by a line of railway a proportion which determines whether it is a more rapid operation to march or to travel by railway. In a pamphlet published shortly after the war the French emperor attributed his disasters to the general ignorance of his army as to the conditions involved in railway transport.

An army in the field, however, in addition to having Contin- transport present with it for distribution, needs to be uity of

able to replenish its supplies; and, though in fertile countries like France the feeding of the army may be greatly assisted by requisitions or by opening markets, it is impossible to depend for existence on these alone.

2 The entire army employed in Egypt was about 30,000 strong. Only the force which first landed at Ismailia is here spoken of.

Line of commu- nications.

Fresh supplies of ammunition at least must be continually received from a secure source, and the means must be available for feeding the army in case the resources of the country fail. Nowadays, and in most countries, the main line of supply is carried along lines of railway ; but, as these are always liable to be destroyed by a retreating enemy, transport, independent of that which is required merely for distribution, must be provided in the form of waggons, carts, or pack animals sufficient to supply, for at least some days, the entire army.

The source from which an army is supplied is usually spoken of as its "base" or its "base of supply." The direction in which, looking forward, a general proposes to advance, and along which it will be necessary to arrange for supply, is spoken of as his "line of operations." The direction along which the army, having already advanced to some distance from its base, is supplied, is spoken of as its "line of communications." Now, as the line of com- munications may come to be of great length as an army advances, and as the army needs to have its fighting strength available in the front when it is engaged with the enemy, it is clear that the long lines of road or rail- way along which the food and ammunition are moving forward, while parties of sick and wounded men are going backward, become weak points in its condition, which must be jealously guarded, but are difficult adequately to protect throughout their length, without detracting too much from the force in the front. In modern war the effort of the general is directed to maintaining in its full efficiency "the vast and

complicated machine" which he handles, and to breaking up and destroying the efficiency of that to which he is opposed. This is the central fact to be kept in mind. Generals and soldiers, long accus- tomed to look at war from this point of view, frequently embody their whole conception of strategy in a phrase which to a reader, taking it in its simple form, is apt to seem like a mere truism—that the great principle of strategy is to concentrate the largest possible force at the right moment at the decisive point. So stated, strategy may seem to have nothing exceptional in its nature, and to in- volve no study of the nature of the great organizations of men with which it is concerned. But, in fact, this study and this knowledge are presupposed by those who thus explain their art. It is because armies are not mere gatherings of armed men, but have a vitality of their own, that some very heavy blows may be struck against them without affecting a vital point, whilst a more skilfully directed stroke may destroy their whole future power of action. An army then, as it stands in the field, is of this character, that, while the fighting force directly opposed to the enemy is an organism which depends for its vitality upon the trained spirit of order, discipline, and enthusiasm or devotion which holds it together, and on the trained capacity for mutual and effective fighting co-operation which makes it act like one man, it has also, reaching far behind it, a long and weak tail, on the safety of which its very existence depends.

Now, if by employing a large portion, or the whole of |

his own force, against a smaller portion of the enemy's, a general can break up and defeat it, the advantage gained depends on the fact that he has broken up the organic unity of this portion. Even if, as may easily happen, he has lost more men than the enemy during the effort, that very little affects the importance of the result on the future of the campaign. The strength of armies cannot be measured by counting heads within the theatre of war. It depends upon the organized force that the general is able to use and to direct. During the earlier battles of the 1870 campaign, for instance, the Germans lost very many more men than the French, but at Weissenburg they broke

up the organic efficiency of a French division of about 8000 men. At Worth they broke up the organic efficiency of 40,000 men at least. After Worth the French army which had fought there had for the time being ceased to be an effective fighting body at all. Throughout the campaign it never recovered efficiency. The German forces, on the other hand, though they had lost more fight- ing men than the French, had actually increased their own effective power. Their organic unity was retained, and the spirit which inspired it had been incalculably raised by victory. But if a general can in any way interfere with the source from which an enemy is obtaining his supplies of food, ammunition, and fresh men, he can diminish his fighting power as effectually as if he broke up the organic unity in battle. A body of men who are starving can as little be held in the bonds of organization as a body of men who are dispersed. Hence the slightest movement which threatens that long and weak tail already described obliges the general whose line of communications is threatened to take steps for its protection.

At first sight it is not very obvious, since each army pos- sesses lightly movable troops—cavalry, mounted infantry, and the like—why these should not be able to pass round the front of the opposing army, and get at the unguarded parts of the roads and railways along which the supplies are moving. To some extent, during the American civil war, this was actually done by the great leaders of horse- men on either side,—Sheridan and Longstreet. In all probability a similar attempt will be made in future wars by the great bodies of Russian Cossacks, and perhaps by the cavalry of Germany, France, and Austria. But what facilitated the raids of the American cavalry of either army was the fact that they were moving in a country where all the people spoke the same language as themselves, and where they were sure to find sympathizers to supply them with needed information. Under ordinary circumstances the difficulty is that each army faces the other without any approach to complete knowledge of the distribution of the troops opposed to it. The part of the – enemy's line of communication which is nearest to you is also the part nearest to the main body of that enemy's own army. In order to get at some parts of his communications which would be out of reach of support

from the main army, it would be necessary to send the assailing light troops to points several marches in rear. This involves a long détour, an elaborately prepared march, and the risk that the enemy may become aware of what is designed. In fact, to use the forcible illustration which Clausewitz has employed to explain the situation in which the leader of such a raid finds himself, he is like a man entering a dark room full of assailants, never knowing when or whence a blow may be struck against him.

The situation is altogether changed if, instead of the two armies fronting one another directly, one of the two is able to make its movements in such a way that, while it securely covers its own line of communications, its direct march forward threatens to strike the line of communica- tions of the enemy. 'Then the light troops can at once strike the most exposed parts in all security. Under those circumstances the army whose communications are threatened is obliged immediately, for fear of losing its means of existence, to turn to face its opponents. The advantage so gained by the army which has obliged its enemy to conform to its movement is very great. or the choice of position can no longer be made by the assailed army solely with the view to gaining success in battle. It may be obliged to fight in a position tactically dis- advantageous, and if it is defeated the defeat is almost certain to be fatal: for it will be driven away from the means of replenishing supplies. On the other hand, the

Aims of strategy.

STRATEGY. |

army to which it is opposed, if obliged by ill-success in action to retreat, falls securely back upon fresh supplies, and suffers only in proportion to the extent of its actual defeat on the battle-field.

Thus the aims of strategy directed against the actual condition of the armies of our time are twofold,—first, to break up the organic force of the opposing army by dealing in concentrated force with fractions of the enemy, and secondly, to threaten, and if possible to destroy, the enemy's connexion with the sources from which he draws his supplies. Failing either of these opportunities, a superior army may nevertheless endeavour

to force on a decisive action in order to make its superiority tell. In other words, in that case the aim of strategy becomes that of securing a decided tactical advantage. It might be supposed, since these facts are known to all men who are at all likely to be placed in the command of armies in the field, that opportunities would rarely occur for delivering blows of the kind described. In fact, the difficulties in the arrangements for the movement of armies are so great, and

if it is not able to advance and to act offensively when the Opportunity is presented to it. It has been convenient to illustrate these points from the most recent campaign in Europe, but they had been already deduced and were fully understood long before that campaign had been entered on. They illustrate the way in which the experience of the past indicates what will happen in future war. The arrival of Osman Pasha at Plevna was a complete surprise to the Russians. Its disastrous effect for them was largely due to this cause. Apparently the same thing is true of the arrival of the Van forces at Bayazid. Yet, at the time, the existence of the Turkish forces both at Van and Plevna was known in London. The want of information at the Russian headquarters appears therefore to suggest the most extraordinary negligence on the part of the Russian staff. In any case, the vital effect upon a campaign of being able to procure the best information in any way obtainable can hardly be exaggerated. Cavalry being the arm employed to spread round an army in all directions, to gain information and to conceal the movements of the

the difficulties in obtaining information of what is going on in a theatre of war are so serious, that such chances are presented in almost every campaign. Thus in the 1870 campaign the Germans, after first breaking up compara-

army, is on this account often justly called the strategical – arm. In whatever way strategy is employed surprise and Secrecy

concealinent are essential to its success. On this account a lal

tively small fractions of the French army at Weissenburg, Worth, and Spicheren, succeeded in separating one great mass of the French army under Bazaine from the other under MacMahon, and in separately crushing them. In the 1877-78 campaign the Russian army in Asia Minor advanced westwards past Kars against Erzeroum, driving Mouktar Pasha back before it ; but the arrival of a fresh hostile force from the neighbourhood of Van in the south, which, marching northwards upon Bayazid, struck directly upon the line of communications of the Russian army, produced an immediate collapse of the whole movement. The Russian army was obliged to fall back at once. Similarly, in Europe the Russian forces advancing from Tirnova had pushed their advance across the Balkans towards Adrianople, when the arrival of Osman Pasha's army, moving from Widdin upon Plevna at right angles to their line of communications, caused the whole movement to collapse, and obliged the Russians to turn their attention to the force which thus threatened them.

it will continually happen, in selecting a line of operations . or a scheme of campaign, that the most important point of all is to carry out just what an enemy does not expect. Very often successful campaigns, the method of which has been subsequently much criticized, have owed their suc- cess to the fact that, from a nice calculation of time and distance, the successful general has seen that he could carry through an operation dangerous in itself but sure not to be the one expected by his opponent. For the same reason, in all the most brilliant and successful efforts of strategic skill, steps have been taken beforehand to carry out the preliminary movements of an army in such a way as to leave an enemy up to the last moment uncertain in what direction the blow would be struck. Usually also some special effort has been made to induce the enemy to believe that he would be attacked in some very different direction from that intended.

One of the means by which this has been most successfully accomplished is the selection of the point of

Relations This movement of Osman Pasha's illustrates very | concentration prior to the opening of a campaign. The % stra- happily several points in the relation between strategy and | inotives and causes for this '" concentration" require, how- a ee tactics. In the first place,

Osman's move was obviously | ever, some explanation. It is much more easy to feed and

trated.

in its general character, in what we call its strategical aspect, an offensive one directed against the most vital point of the Russian field of campaign, the bridge by which they had passed the Danube at Sistova. The threatening character of the position he took up obliged the Russians in some way to dispose of his force. Very unwisely they engaged in a series of ill-prepared and ill- directed attacks upon him. The result was so completely to shatter their forces that, had Osman advanced, alter his final success, against Sistova, the small Russian remnant between him and the Danube must have been driven into the river, and in all probability all the Russian -forces which had crossed it would have been destroyed. But, as he remained obstinately within his field fortress at Plevna, the Russians in their turn gradually succeeded in cutting off his communications, and in obliging him to surrender that which they could not take. Thus it is clear how a site for an army may be so chosen as, from its strategical character, to induce if not to compel an enemy to attack it. It is also clear that an army fighting in a well-chosen and well-fortified position, acting on the defensive, may inflict serious defeat upon forces superior to it in numbers. Finally, it is clear that such an army will, in the long run, lose all the advantages of its success,

supply an army which is distributed over a considerable area than one which is closely concentrated for the purposes of action. Furthermore, armies when moving along roads occupy a very great length. The head of the column is more or Jess distant from the rear in proportion to the number of troops, waggons, and animals that march by the same road. Hence it follows that the more roads an army can employ in its march the more easy will it be for its several parts to reach a required point at the same moment. Therefore, for facility of supply and for facility of movement, as long as an army is out of reach of an enemy, a considerable dispersion is advisable. But it is vitally necessary to an army entering on a campaign to be able to get all its parts together before there is any possibility of an enemy's attacking it. Otherwise it would be in the position

of exposing some of its fragments to the danger of being separately attacked by superior forces of the enemy, and having their efficiency destroyed before they could be supported. Hence a concentration out of reach of an enemy's concentrated army is the pre- liminary necessity of every campaign.

Though it is nearly always to the advantage of a body of troops which comes in contact with a hostile force inferior to it in fighting power to fight with it and

Detention of a large force by a smallone.

Interior lines.

302

destroy its organic unity, yet a small force may for a time succeed in delaying the movements of one very superior to it. The fighting power of an army depends upon the number of weapons that it is able to bring to bear upon its enemy. Now, as for rapid movement that does not fatigue the men an army is ordinarily obliged to march along roads, it follows that the number of weapons avail- able for fighting in front of the line of march is very small. Hence, though a general may have under his com- mand a very large body of troops, representing a very great amount of power when that power is developed, yet as long as he is simply marching forward he cannot imme- diately use that power at the point which the head of his column has reached. In order to do so he must bring those men who are far away from the front up to a position in which they can use their arms. Such an operation often takes a very long time. The time becomes much longer if, instead of marching on a road through open country or between hedge-rows, he has great mountain precipices on either side of him, so that he cannot easily get his men out of the path in which they are. Or again, if he finds that it is necessary for him to develop the power of his army in order to force his way across a bridge over a river, it may be necessary for him in the first instance to extend his artillery and infantry along the side of the stream nearest him in order to use his weapons; and then, when he wants to resume his march, he may have to bring them back again to the bridge. These are instances of the

delay which is imposed upon armies which have to force their way through ‘ defiles.”

Now, if a small force is employed in delaying a larger one, which it does not intend seriously to engage, its object almost always is to induce the larger one thus to “deploy ” its force from the march to a position for fighting, purposing itself to escape before the enemy seriously attacks it. It may seem at first that, as the small force has itself necessarily to pass from the march formation to the fighting position and to return again to the march, there is no gain of time. But, in fact, if the successive positions be judiciously chosen for the small force, it is extremely difficult for the general commanding the superior army to know what number of enemies he has before him. If, not wishing to delay the movement of his army, he deploys too small a force, the defender may use his whole power to inflict a crushing defeat upon this before it can be supported. If, on the other hand, he deploys a force sufficient to destroy the body opposed to him, this must involve a long delay, and very probably he will find, when he moves to attack, that the defensive force is already gone, or has left only some light troops to make a show up to the last. By such means again and again in war a small force employed in well-chosen ground has been able to hamper the movements of a superior body and to gain time for other operations. The different applications of this detaining power of small bodies are so numerous that hardly any problems either of strategy or tactics are intelligible unless its nature is understood. The essence of it lies in the smaller body not allowing itself to become so engaged as to have its organic unity destroyed by defeat.

The simplest application of this detaining power of small bodies occurs in this way. Suppose, as often happens, that two allied armies, or two parts of the same army, are moving to unite against an enemy. It may happen that by skilful dispositions or the chance of war the general engaged against them is able to interpose between them whilst they are still several marches apart from one another. Suppose now that in a country favourable to such an operation he employs a small portion of his own force to delay the march of oue of his opponents, whilst he

throws the bulk of his forces against the other. In attempting to defeat this body before it can receive support he holds a position of very great advantage. This is the situation which is commonly described by saying that the general in question is acting on "interior lines" against the two armies opposed to him. But it is vitally important to his success in this matter that he shall succeed in defeating one of his opponents whilst the other is still some marches off, otherwise their union against him on the field of battle may, from the very fact of their striking his position from different directions, prove even more disastrous to him than if he had allowed them to unite before he attacked them. Thus when Napoleon, during the Waterloo campaign, had broken in at Charleroi upon the intended point of concentration of the allied armies, he, with Ney opposing Wellington at Quatre-Bras long before the English army was concentrated, and himself able to act with the bulk of his forces against Bliicher at Ligny before the Prussian army was fully con- centrated, was acting in the most perfect way upon interior lines. But, when at Waterloo, whilst he was still engaged with Wellington in his front, Bliicher broke in upon his flank, though the bulk of the French army was still between its opponents, that was a position of disaster. During the 1866 campaign the Prussians crossed the Bohemian mountains in two separate armies,—one from Silesia under the crown prince, one from Saxony and Prussia under Prince Frederick Charles. Had the army under the Austrian commander Benedek been concentrated in Bohemia, so that, whilst one part of his forces detained either the crown prince or Prince Frederick Charles, the main body had been thrown against the other, the general would have gained all the advantages of interior lines. But, when on the field of Sadowa, whilst Benedek was still fiercely engaged against the army of Frederick Charles in front, the crown prince broke upon his flank, though the Austrian army was still in one sense between the two Prussian armies, it was so only in a sense disastrous for it. This event, in which an army attempting to take advantage of the separation of two opponents is crushed between them on the field of battle, is described by German soldiers by the phrase that such an army is taken "tactically between them" ("in der taktischen Mitte ").

The operation of acting on interior lines was the favourite form of Napoleon's strategy. He would have condemned unhesitatingly the attempt to carry out any plan of campaign which involved such a combination as the Prussians attempted in 1866. But in his day armies were not connected by telegraph. In speaking of the con- centration of armies prior to a campaign as necessarily made out of reach of a concentrated enemy there is this reservation to be noted. If two armies acting against a third can so nicely time their union as to strike against the enemy on the field of battle avithin a few hours of one another, they gain all the advantage of getting their enemy "tactically between them." The difficulties, however, of this nice adjustment of time are so great that no prudent commander would deliberately beforehand arrange his general concentration in this way on the field of battle. Nevertheless, the fact that it is sufficient for the armies to have effected their junction so nearly as to be within reach of mutual support on a field of battle consider- ably enlarges the area within which their union can be accomplished. Thus at the beginning of the 1866 campaign the Prussians had fixed the point of junction of their two armies at Gitchin ; but, though it would have been possible for them to have joined their forces on June 30, they did not carry out this actual meeting. They were content with the fact that the two armies were by June 30 in close supporting distance of one another.

Depéts of sup- plies.

STRATEGY. |

They only actually met on the field of battle of Sadowa. The effect of the selection of a point of concentration, as tending to leave an enemy uncertain as to the direction which a general purposes afterwards to take, can hardly be better illustrated than by Napoleon's concentration in the Waterloo campaign. By gathering his army at Philippe- ville, Beaumont, and Solre, he threatened Mons more directly than he threatened Charleroi, and thereby tended to prevent his enemies from concentrating against the point of his intended attack.

There is a peculiarity in the strategical aspect of British campaigns beyond sea against savage tribes which requires a short explanation.

Usually the difficulty lies in trans- porting from the base towards the front a sufficient quantity of provisions without eating them up on the road. Since the animals and men employed in transporting food and ammunition must themselves be fed, it is evident that if we send supplies for a day's journey forward the balance available for feeding the troops will be the amount the transport can carry, less two days' food for themselves, that is one day forward and one day in coming back. Similarly, for a journey of eight days to the front sixteen days' food for the carrying animals and men will have to be deducted. In fact, more than this will be required, because when the journey is extended beyond a certain limit there must be occasional rest days. It is clear that if, as was the case in Abyssinia, in Ashantee, in the movement on Sikukuni's country, and, though with different transport, on the Nile and in Egypt, a march of many days beyond all supplies of food not carried by the transport has to be made, a point will be reached at which the animals begin toeat up all the food they carry. This can only be met by the system of depéting. That is to say, an accumula- tion of large supplies of food is made as far forward on the road as possible, and then from that point it is again pushed forward by one relay of transport whilst others fill it up from behind. But here again another point arises. If the whole army to be employed on the expedition were pushed forward to the front where the supplies are being accumulated, these supplies would be eaten up as fast as they arrived. The fewer the troops in the front the more rapid will be the accumulation. Hence the great secret of a rapid advance in this case is to keep in front only as many troops as are necessary, when well entrenched, to guard the accumulation of supplies. The more completely all others are kept back fron the front the sooner will the expedition achieve the object for which it is employed. These are incidents which repeat themselves on every English expedition, while at the same time complaints are continually being made of the generals during the course of the campaign for the delay involved in their doing the very thing which hastens achievement.

Tactics,

In speaking of the changes which have affected strategy, we declared our belief that the weapons of strategy have changed since the Napoleonic era

even more completely than those of tactics. It now becomes necessary to define the limits of what this statement implies. We have shown how, even in questions of strategy, the spirit of subordination and the nature and kind of co-operation which a minor leader has to give to his commander-in-chief have been affected by the changes in the size of armies, the scope of operations, and the. developed facilities of conimunication and supply. This change, however, of the spirit of organization is, in so far as re-gards strategy, a comparatively secondary matter. Among the few men engaged in the actual command of armies and army corps, it is almost an affair of personal arrange- ment and of mutual understanding how far the sub-

ordinate acts independently, and how far he merely carries out the precise directions of his superior. "Where men are so well known to one another as were, for instance, the leaders of armies and army corps of the Germans during the campaign of 1870, the generals of such great bodies as these could judge from personal knowledge of the characters of those under whom they were acting what degree of latitude to allow themselves in the interpretation of orders. We see the evidence of this everywhere. This personal confidence, this mutual knowledge of one another amoung the higher leaders of arnties, has become an essential instrument of modern war. The general who has men under him whom he does not know and cannot trust suffers now in a degree in which he never suffered before.

But when we come to compare the effect of modern changes on the spirit of strategy, in these matters of discipline, with its effect on tactics, there is no proportion between the two.

Discipline is the very life-blood of an army, and it is on the field of battle, that is, within the province of tactics, that it shows its potency. To interfere in any way with this spirit, as it determines the power of the commander over his men in the presence of the enemy and under the stress of battle, to introduce the least malignant influence into it, is to blood-poison the

army. Therefore, as no army can nowadays hope, in presence of a modern enemy armed with the weapons of to-day, to carry out a system of manceuvres in which discipline can be main- tained with the old facility, and under conditions so favourable to it as those of the past, we must approach the subject with a caution proportioned to its vital importance. Curiously enough it is from an English scientific author, from Mr Darwin, that one of the ablest of recent German writers on war has borrowed the penetrating phrase which sums up the essential element, common to the discipline of the past with that of the present, which it is vital to us not to shake or to impair. The engrained habit of mutual confidence among all ranks of a regiment is the factor in its strength which attracted Mr Darwin's attention as the cause of its incalculable superiority in power over an armed mob. Baron von der Goltz accepts the statement as true, without reserve. When, however, we come to consider what has enabled armies to acquire this engrained habit, we are met by some very curious experiences. In the first place, the instinctive habit of obedience to a word of command, as coming from one who has the right and the duty to give that command, has to be carried into the very limbs of aman. When cultivated men of mature years entered the ranks of the British volunteers during the early stages of the movement, some very amusing protests appeared in print as to the dreary monotony of the mechanical contortions which represent the early phases of recruit drill. A certain pity or sympathy was expressed for the poor soldiers who had to spend their lives in such uninteresting tasks. It would hardly be too much to say that the complaints of these very superior persons showed a want of philosophic acute- ness, which is entirely absent from the minds of the most zealous volunteers of our day. No one understands better than these the fact that in the dull mechanical routine of those incidents of recruit drill is laid the foundation of all military power. The zealous barrister, who at thirty-five always found himself turning by mistake to the right when he was ordered to turn to the left, who found it impossible to supple his limbs in the required "extension motions," was unconsciously illustrat- ing the weakness of the most zealous untrained armed man. With the best of wishes his body was so little under the command of his own mind and will that he could not, much as he wished it, place it at once under

XXIV. — 45

Importance of mechani-

eal drill.

Further training now necessary.

304

the command of anyone else. Much less could he cut out that disturbing element himself so far as to obey in- stinctively, and without a certain element of resisting individuality, the command he received.

Now the capacity to act together under the orders of one man can never be dispensed with under any of the condi- tions of modern war. The instinctive obedience of a rank of soldiers to the order to turn 'Right about," when that order sends them back into the ground where shells are bursting and where bullets are raining, has been a power in fighting too great for us ever willingly to throw it away. Some humorous illustrations of its effect on soldiers, and of the victory-winning power which an even apparently unintelligent submission to this authority of instinct has given, more especially to English soldiers, are mentioned in the article Army (vol. ii. p. 589). In proportion as men understand war they value this effect, and would be unwilling even to diminish at a given moment actual loss of life if that diminution were secured by any sacrifice of this power. An old English battalion trained to the absolute perfection of such mechanical obedience was a splendid fighting instrument. No train- ing, however perfect, to take advantage of ground, to seek cover, to glide on to the weak points of an enemy, will compensate, even in these days, a deficiency in that habit of utter self-abnegation, of entire subordination to the one purpose of united action under assigned orders. But, under the modern conditions of war, the loss inflicted within a given time by the terrible weapons now in the hands of all armies is so great that the very formations under which ona parade ground the armies of the past prepared to move in actual fighting under the orders of their commanders are mechanically as much as morally dissolved. Not even can the voice of the captain or the subaltern be heard, much less that of the lieutenant-

colonel, above the din of breech-loaders and of shrapnel shells. It is not therefore with a light heart, not willingly, not as thinking that a dispersed order of fight is something in itself more powerful or more advantageous than a rigid formation in which ordered and orderly movement is easy, in which force can be concentrated, in which the habits of

discipline can be more certainly maintained, but of dire.

necessity, that the most experienced soldiers of our day have come to the absolute conviction that only by preparing armies for fighting in dispersed order can discipline be maintained at all. The great problem of modern tactics, in so far as it concerns actual fighting, which regulates everything else, is how to maintain the old unity under the new conditions which make it so difficult. Infantry.

This much at least we know, that from the moment that infantry are actually involved in a modern breech- loader fight all manceuvring has ceased to be possible. The natural and the necessary deduction from this is that the only influence which can be exercised upon such a fight by any but very subordinate leaders is to throw into it fresh bodies of men who till then have been retained in close formations. Now the experience of the 1870 battles showed clearly that the effect of fresh bodies thus thrown into a fight is very great indeed. Moreover, that experience showed further that the direction in which the fresh force is thrown into a contest already engaged between two bodies of infantry is vitally important in determining how great the effect of the blow so delivered will be. The tendency of any great fight is to break up into a series of partially independent actions. Therefore it almost always happens that in each of these there are on both sides certain weak points, which present oppor- tunities to a skilful assailant. These arise either from cir-

cumstances of ground or from the inevitable disconnexion produced by isolated action of particular bodies of troops. Skill now consists in taking advantage of these oppor- tunities, in anticipating the conditions under

which they are likely to occur, in preparing to escape from similar dangers, and in pressing home a success, Here then is the way in which the organization spoken of above as the means of battle action makes itself felt. It is impossible now for the commander-in-chief of a great army to be ready at each part of a battle for one of these emergencies. Scarcely can the commander of a division of 10,000 men, or even the commander of 3000, meet all the local incidents that occur. At each stage of the hierarchy there is needed a man who, in proportion to the extent of the opportunity or the danger, is ready to seize or to meet it.

But among the means of doing this which the practical experience of the Prussians taught them is one which tends more and more to be forgotten as the experiences of the great campaign are lost in the distance of the past. As the phases of any battle now succeed one another a time comes when the fight sways forward, and many men are left behind out of the immediate region of the combat. Often these stragglers are more numerous than the men engaged in the actual shooting line. They may be in a wood or for some other reason out of the reach of the enemy's projectiles, or they may at all events not be severely exposed to them. What is wanted is to take advantage of this wasted power and to throw it into the fight. This can only be done effectively by getting the men into closed bodies, and so bringing them again under orders and discipline. This was what the Germans—or,

to speak more accurately, the Prussians, who in all these

respects were head and shoulders over all their German compatriots—habitually did.

The study then of the mode of preparing infantry for the fights of the future does not in these inner circumstances of battle consist in training them for some particular forms of attack nearly so much at least as in the following points :—

1, In aecustoming the men, as soon as from any cause they find themselves thrown out of the actual fighting line and out of the stress of fire, to place themselves instinctively and as quickly as possible under the orders of some officer who can get them into order, and either lead them on or await the moment wheu the services of a formed body of men will become invaluable;

2. In aceustoming officers to seek all opportunities for re-forming dispersed men at the earliest possible moment ;

3. In maintaining such close order as is possible as long as it can be maintained without risking overwhelming loss of life and dire confusion, —hence therefore the breaking up into such small organized bodies as, by taking advantage of ground or other means, inay be able to preserve unity of action longer than would be possible with greater masses ;

4. In keeping up, by the action of the higher ranks of the military hierarchy, the fighting connexion between these bodies, by the judicious employment of fresh force or of reserves that have been made up out of men that have been already engaged ;

5. In providing for the continual replenishment of ammunition elose to the fighting line of at least all those who are not actually engaged in it, and the continually thrusting into the fighting line of men well supplied with ammunition to push forward the line, so that those who have exhausted their ammunition may be resupplied without having to fall back ; and

6. Above all, in practice and training during peace in a mode of action which cannot be simply learnt on a parade-ground by help of drill-sergeant and words of command taught by rote.

We have taken first this question of the change which has taken place in infantry fighting, because it is on the forms of infantry fight that the changes in armament have produced their greatest effect, because the main sub- stance of an army always consists of infantry, and because the changes which have occurred in the use of the other arms, artillery and

cavalry, have been determined by the changes in infantry tactics and arms niore than by any other cause, though the development of artillery armament has also affected them.

et ee

q

] Practical

work,

|

Control drill.

TACTICS. }

Now the danger which faces any British army under present conditions in preparing for modern battle lies in the fact that a long peace following upon the great wars of the end of the last and the beginning of the present century has tended to stereotype forms which were origin- ally based upon the battle-experience of the past. There is a dread of change where change is required, because officers and men have come to look upon the great tradi- tions of the past as sacred. In England men wish to follow in the footsteps of the soldiers who acquired an experience under Wellington such as no men since then have had. It isin its essence a sound and healthy feeling. But there is the greatest danger lest names should be put for facts, lest in the very act of servilely copying forms we should ignore altogether the principle which determined the action of our forefathers. They started from the ex- periences and necessities of the battle-field as these existed in their own day. They based their forms upon those necessities. If we would really imitate them we must in this do as they did. We cannot take their forms based on the battles of their own time, and then work forward from these forms to what we shall do on the battle-field now. We must frankly face the fact that, the character of battles having changed, we must work back from the con- ditions of our present battle-fields to the peace-forms which will prepare our soldiers for them.

Terms under such circumstances become confused. Men talk about the practice of forms in which their life is spent as 'practical work." They look upon all experience gathered from the fields where shells actually burst and where infantry firearms are used to kill as "theoretical." The truth is exactly the opposite. Such merit as the older drill at present has is due to certain theoretical con- siderations which were at one time soundly deduced from practice in the past. The only practical work is that which tends to prepare men, not for the inspection of some general ona parade ground, but for actual war. An army is doing " practical" work in the preparation for its real duty, that of winning battles. It is employed on mis- chievous theoretical work, on false theory, whenever it is doing anything else.

Now this one thing is certain, that, whereas the great fighting formation of the past for British infantry was the line, that formation can be used no longer in actual fighting against troops armed with modern weapons, unless excep- tionally in purely defensive positions, where its trained cohesion is of little importance, because cohesion is in any case easy. All rigid drill is at present based on the assumption that wheels of parts of this line are necessary in order to enable the troops to keep together shoulder to shoulder. What is required is not this, but that we shall obtain by complete organization down to the lowest units a command of fire and a command of groups. Of all the incidents of a modern fight that of which it is the hardest to give any conception to a man who has not seen infantry possessed of the enormous facilities for firing which are supplied by modern arms is the intense absorption in the mere fact of firing, which almost like a catalepsy takes possession of the man who is using his weapon against an enemy, or, as may often happen in close country, against nothing at all. Many of the rifles that were picked up on Majuba Hill were found, at the last moment when the Boers were closing, sighted to 800 yards. It is noted as a quite remarkable instance of presence of mind on the part of a Prussian sergeant during the attack on St Privat, that he personally took care that the men reduced their sights to the proper range as they advanced. Now this illustrates perfectly the kind of trained habit which we need by our modern drill to induce in men in action. We want to educate men so that they do not fire under the conditions

of a catalepsy. Now experience has shown that this can only be done by having men who are not themselves firing trained to look after those who are firing, so that the fire may be regulated, effective, and deliberate. The men themselves must be trained to fire only under orders, and not under the influence of a tendency to fire merely to relieve their feelings. We cannot put better what is in- volved in these necessities than in the following words of Colonel J. H. A. Macdonald of the Queen's Edinburgh Rifle Volunteer Brigade :—

- *How is this to be done? How but by so regularly, consistently, and persistently putting the soldier through the action of firing by orders that it shall be a second nature to fire his rifle only under control of his superior, and not otherwise. What is wanted is the conviction in the mind of every instruetor, from the highest to the lowest, that his men should never leave a parade without having gained something in fire diseipline,—that is, that fire control drill be one of the main points in view as a necessary part of the work to be performed on every occasion when men are being drilled, exercised, or inspeeted, from the moment that they know the rifle exereises until the day when they leave the service. Let some of the time whieh formerly was spent in a perpetual form drill to produee a military machine that had a steadiness in formation which nothing eonld shake be now spent in produeing by a per- petual control drill a firing organism which shall have a steadiness in the use of fire which nothing can shake. The troops that shall be found most in the hands of the commander in the matter of fire will, ceteris paribus, be invincible."*

But in order that we may secure this end it is essential that the organization be carried down to the smallest groups within a company, and our drill must be adapted to deliver such groups as methodically and regularly as possible within the zone of fighting.

It does not appear that any adequate experiments have as yet been made to determine the means by which this can best be done. Experiments

during peace time are in no sense wholly satisfactory. In order that they may be worked out properly they require to be watched at every stage by men who have closely studied the experiences of modern war, and know what has been done by other armies, who have learned from those experiences not slavishly to copy what was done by men who were them-selves experimenting under the dread conditions of actual warfare, but to extract from them sound lessons for future guidance. To quote again from Colonel Macdonald.

'¢ Would it not be wise to do what is done in other departments of military science, and give some faeility for practical and exhaus- tive experiment? In all other departments practical experiment goes merrily and expensively on. Thousands of pounds are spent on a gun which penetrates another inch or two of armour. New and thicker plates are rolled. A new 'Big Will' is built, and again crashes through the armour with its first shot, and perhaps blows off its own muzzle with the second. Treasure-devouring sea monsters are built superseding one another at short intervals. Torpedoes, torpedo boats, and machine guns are subjected to erncial experiments. But from the nature of the material with which experiment has to be conducted in the case of the most important land fighting machine — the infantry—the cireumstances are exactly reversed. Experiment would cost nothing ;_ but, while inventors can experiment in armour metal, gun bnilding, and rifling and explosives, before offering appliances to the Government, there ean be no practical experiment with the only material out of which the infantry machine of war is made without order from authority. It is only by leave of the state, through its officers, that any proposals to improve the working ean be tested, and—as is the case in all inventions—not only tested, but developed and improved by experiment. Almost all suecessful invention is the result of alternate thought and experiment. There is also the further difficulty that the proposers of tactical improvements are not independent men, but servants of the owners of the material. They cannot consistently with discipline proceed as other inventors are able to do. They eannot canvass higher officials, or exert extraneous influence. They may not use the soldiers who happen to be under their control as material for experiment. ;

" Further, even if it be permitted to them to exhibit these ideas

| experimentally, the material with which they must do so is not

dead material, plastic and absolutely passive. They have to test

1Common Sense on Parade, or Drill without Stays (p. 118), by Colonel the Right Hon. J. H. A. Macdonald, C.B., M.P., 1886.

their invention with materials which have been turned into a machine already on a different system, and have therefore a way of working which unconsciously at first militates against the dis- play to the best advantage of the new idea."

These conclusions appear unanswerable. Though, for the reasons which are implied in the very sentences we have quoted, we are not as yet prepared absolutely to advocate any specific system, it appears to us that the method of working which has been suggested by Col. Macdonald promises such valuable results that it ought at least to be fairly tried on a large scale. It has received the warmest possible support from the best infantry sol- diers of the English army—from Lord Wolseley, from Sir Donald Stewart, and many more. It has been approved in principle by many others, who have not had the oppor- tunity of examining its practice. It has been successfully tried and experimented upon so far as peace-trials go, both at home and in the colonies, and has been greatly appreci- ated by those who have tried it. It consists in a method of permanently arranging a company in four ranks, so that from these the successive bodies of firing line supports and reserves may be successively sent forward. It has several important recommendations. It limits the front of a captain's command. By forming groups of eight men of those who stand side by side in the fours it carries organi- zation down to the lowest point, while it tends to bind together, by the principle of comradeship, the supports who successively arrive to the men who are in front. By making this comradeship apply to those who form the two adjacent groups of four of the company when in line, it ought certainly to facilitate the re-formation of the com- pany. At present if one man is lost in the front rank of a company, the whole have to be numbered again in order to enable it to form in a column of fours at all. On Col.

Macdonald's system each group of eight being fixed, the company can be fitted together by the gathering of these groups in any order, so long as all are in their proper places within their own group of eight.

In any case, going back once more to the experience of the past, we are now at a time in these matters very like that which preceded the Peninsular War. The drill which was employed in the Peninsula was in all essentials worked out by Sir John Moore in a series of experiments conducted at the camp of Shorncliffe. No more important results were ever obtained by peace-training for war than those which were deduced from these experimental exercises, If we really reverence the great soldiers of the Peninsula, this is the way in which we shall honour them. We shall not do what they did not. We shall not accept from the traditions of the past forms which are not adapted to actual warfare. We shall not write drill books in the study or the bureau, and force field movements into conformity with them. We shall employ for the work of our great camps of exercise generals who have made an exhaustive study of the present conditions of warfare, and staff-officers who can assist them in their work. We shall experimentally try "those suggestions which have upon them any reasonably good stamp of approval by military men of skill." We shall really and crucially investigate them, "with oppor- tunity afforded to proposers to meet difficulties that may be suggested." "Those proposals which can be defended from serious theoretical objections should be submitted to a few months' experiment in selected regiments, and reported on as to their practical working in the essential points of

WATk

[Tactrcs.

The Russians at. one time adopted and abandoned a system of working by groups of four. So far as we are able to perceive, Colonel Macdonald's system is not open to the objection which led the Russians to abandon their method of fours. They found that, when they had formed their groups under a "father" who became the leader, the men were so much attached to one another that as soon as one was wounded all remained with him, so that every time the enemy wounded one man four were put hors de combat. It is clear, on the one hand, that this is an objection that

would not present itself in mere peace practice at all, so that the necessity for criticism applied at the time from actual experience of fighting shows itself forcibly. On the other hand, it by no means follows that the difficulty would not be overcome by such a closer association of groups as Colonel Macdonald's system ap- pears to promise, and by a trained habit of trusting that the wounded will be properly cared for by the men assigned for that purpose, and a knowledge that the business of all those who are able to continue the fight is to ensure the safety of the wounded by securing victory.

It will be obvious from what we have already said that we do not believe that any army in Europe has as yet solved the question of the most effective mode of deliver- ing infantry within the area of modern fight, and that nevertheless we believe that data now exist from which, with proper experiments, a method might be adopted which would at least give to that army which adopted it incal- culable advantages in the earlier battles of a modern war. The one point that must be thoroughly realized is that the firearm of the present day has become the determining weapon, for the development of the efficiency of which all tactics must prepare the way.

That brings us to another matter of vital importance. As long as the shock tactics of the past were possible, the neat drills of the parade ground were the essence of sol- diering, and therefore, when a few rifle regiments at first, and afterwards the army generally, had liberty to prac- tise shooting, that was looked upon as an accidental and exceptional thing unconnected with the real business of the soldier, and therefore with his everyday life. This unfortunate divorce between the work at the butts and on the manceuvre-ground, once established in the habits of an army, cannot for many years be cured. It exists still. Yet every mancuvre in which careless aiming, careless expenditure of ammunition, and wrongly adjusted sights are permitted is a direct injury to the fighting efficiency of the force which manceuvres. Nothing else can compensate for the evil so done. Good shooting, and movements tending to give to good shooting and good weapons the greatest possible advantage, are next to a healthy morale the essence of modern fight.

Nevertheless, it is the training of the spirit of an army, the bringing home to all ranks of the objects now to be aimed at, that is the difficulty in all these matters. The very strength and power of discipline in its formation and engraining of habits is that which makes an army so hard to deal with when habits have to be changed.

In the present condition of the tactical question it has seemed to us essential to devote so much space and pains to the enforcing of these points that we can only lightly touch on several questions that have been most eagerly discussed in relation to infantry tactics.

The question of long-range fire against reserved fire is Long-range mainly a question between material and moral effect. It and re- seems no doubt a strange thing, when we have enormously °°"¥¢¢ fe. increased the range of modern weapons, that we should throw away that advantage, and allow an enemy without firing a shot at him to pass over a large area of ground where we could inflict loss on him. Undoubtedly, in so

simplicity and uniformity of manceuvre, adaptability to circumstances arising, maintenance of order, retention of unity of commands, rapid recovery of exact tactical form, and fire control. Then let authority take what is best, it may be adopting here one detail and there another."

1 Colonel Macdonald, as aboye, p. 127.

far as we can train picked shots to fire at long ranges, so as to disturb the movements of columns, and to interfere with artillery, it is well worth our while to do so. But with the utmost training that we can give them the mass of men in the ranks of an army never will become good shots at long ranges. Almost all fire, therefore, at long ranges becomes unaimed fire, and an enemy can to a great extent avoid exposing himself on the ground where the fortuitous rain of bullets is falling. Meantime the mere fact of firing having begun puts the troops who are firing almost beyond the reach of orders. Their own excite- ment and the noise together make it most difficult to give them any directions. Sights that have been fixed for the long range are not changed to the short. The fact that, despite all their

efforts, the enemy continues to ad- vance demoralizes them, and despite his losses encourages him. 'These are considerations which are not taken into account in the arguments of those who base their con- clusions merely on the amount of loss which may be in- flicted at very long ranges. Yet, at all events up to 1877, they had in actual fighting proved supreme. It may be the case that a very highly trained army, using long-range volley firing under effective control, might produce such loss upon an enemy approaching that it would make his actual attack upon a position impossible. What is certain is that, up to 1877, there had been no experience in war which proved that such long-ranged fire was as effective as fire carefully reserved for the ranges within which infantry can use their arm with the greatest effect.

Such at all events was the experience of the 1870 cam- paign, and it confirmed the experience of previous wars in certain respects which, as will have been seen from the above account, depend rather on the condition of men's minds than on the efficiency of weapons. Both, however, in the German army and im the French an immense im- pression was produced by the incidents of the attack on Plevna. There is no doubt that there the certainly un- aimed fire of the Turks produced an enormous effect. Skobeleff, when he had at last succeeded in reaching the 'Green Hill" in one of his own most brilliant efforts, found that there were no troops behind the slender line of skirmishers whom he had actually with him. All his reserves had melted away under the storm of bullets. If this experience could be accepted as representing a normal phase of a modern battle, the conclusion would be inevit- able that so long as there are ample supplies of ammuni- tion the effect of long-range fire may be so great as to be decisive. It would be madness altogether to reject such an experience. Where analogous conditions occur no doubt a better regulated long-range fire is too important an element of power to be ignored. But it is necessary to realize what the conditions were. In the first place, the whole attack was one that never ought to have been made. It never would have been made had not the com- manding archduke overriden the advice of all the best soldiers he had, and in mere obstinacy and ignorance dashed his men against a position that ought never to have been so assailed. It was an attempt of a field army against what had almost become a fortress. The Russians were unsupported by any

adequate artillery for its reduc- tion. The ground was unusually open and exposed to the full range of the Turkish fire. The Russians showed here just the same incapacity for taking advantage of ground, so far as the smaller groups were concerned, which they had shown in the Crimea. They huddled together in great masses, more unwieldy than any regular column, but just as much exposed to unaimed fire. There was therefore nothing to show that a properly conducted skirmishing attack might not have found means of reaching the posi- tion which Skobeleff actually secured.

Nevertheless, when all these allowances have been made, and while it seems as important as ever to realize what advantages the sudden effect of reserved fire may secure, the fact remains that under certain very possible condi- tions of fighting an extensive employment of long-range fire may be advisable, and it is therefore right that every army should prepare for such an event.

For instance, in an attack on the forts @arrét with which the French have covered their frontier, it is ex- tremely probable that the Germans, being close to their own magazines, and therefore able to employ a practically unlimited amount of ammunition, will overwhelm these places with long-range infantry as well as with artillery fire. There is no doubt that their infantry has been practised in firing volleys at very long range, and for such purposes it would be certainly comparatively easy to ensure the delivery of actual volleys. It may even be the case that m defensive positions, where the extent of ground open to view is considerable, long-range infantry fire regu- lated by volleys may be attempted. We cannot, however, see how it would be possible to attempt this during an attack unless one special body of troops be assigned for the work of long-range fire, in order to occupy the atten- tion of the enemy while other forces advance to the attack. On the one hand, the discipline of the French army was so loose during the campaign of 1870 that it is quite possible that long-range fire might be much better brought under control than it was by them ; on the other, it is emphatically necessary to assert that the difficulties involved in a free employment of long-range fire are not

merely those of an adequate supply of ammunition, but that those considerations to which we have drawn atten- tion must be taken into account. If an army is sufficiently well in hand for the choice between long-range fire and reserved fire to be in the option of the general who com- mands, then undoubtedly cases will arise when each may be used with advantage. Certainly it would not be a wise or safe thing for an army to enter the field without having ever practised the regulated fire by volleys at long range against an army which had practised it. It is clear that the tendency in that case would be for the unpractised to indulge in much unregulated long-range firing. With an army trained to both methods of action, the general who realizes the risks and advantages of either will be able to exercise a sounder choice than the man who has become an inveterate pleader for either system, and cannot there- fore adapt himself to the cases that arise.

The general question of volley firing as against indivi- Volley

dual shooting is independent of the special use of volleys for very long-range shooting to which we have above re- ferred. It may obviously be possible to ensure the regular delivery of volleys at very long ranges, such as the French are now practising, 3000 yards or more, without its being possible to do so in anything that can properly be called an engaged fight. The effect produced by a well-delivered volley is out of all proportion great as compared with the effect of isolated shots. Moreover, it is a curious fact that apparently men aim better when they fire together than when they fire each by himself one after another. It is constantly found at the butts that the greatest number of shots has been delivered by the " best volley," that is, the one in which all the arms go off most like one. But it is a matter of great doubt whether in war it is practically possible under most circumstances to deliver a volley at all. Captain May, the author of the "tactical retro- spect" on the 1866 campaign, denied that any volleys had been fired in that campaign. The cases of its employment in the 1870 campaign, which are sufficiently established not to fall under such criticism as he applied to the nomi- nal volleys of 1866, are not very numerous. We may

leave the question with the remark that the moral effect produced by a volley is too great for the attempt to use it ever to be willingly thrown away, but that it would be now rash to take for granted that on service the best troops can be depended on to deliver during close fighting accurate volleys, unless it be in small parties. The possi- bility of even the fire of groups is disputed by Von der Goltz. It is obvious that, if he be correct in this respect, all attempt at regulating fire in action is " An effort only and a noble aim, Still to be sought for, never to be won."*

We incline to think that all war experience tends to this conclusion, and it is a reservation which we must therefore append to our cordial agreement with the passages we have quoted from Colonel Macdonald.

Cavalry.

Of all tactical facts, the one which needs most study for practical purposes is the relation of the size of men, on foot, mounted, 'in mass, and in different formations, to the undulations and features of ground. There is nothing which the untrained eye so little realizes as the extent to which concealment and cover for men, even for mounted men, exists on the apparently most level plain. This fact, which is important for both the other arms, is for cavalry vital to its present use. Nothing is more certain than that under the present condition of arms cavalry cannot successfully assail in front either artillery or infantry in any formation in which the artillery or infantry are able to use their arms and can observe the approach of cavalry over long distances.

On the other hand, cavalry striking by sudden surprise on the flank of unprepared infantry or artillery, engaged with other enemies, may produce an effect, great to an extent of which as yet we have no adequate example in modern war. That is the conclusion drawn from their own experiences of the 1870 campaign by the most experi- enced leaders who were employed in it. Count Von Moltke in 1882, and Prince Kraft of Hohenlohe-Ingelfingen in his letters on cavalry published in 1887, have alike pro- nounced decisively on the subject, and it would be easy to show that the whole weight of the best military opinion in all countries except Russia is on the same side.

The practical possibility on most fields of battle of cavalry being thus employed depends on two facts,—on the one hand the extent to which almost all ground presents opportunities to a skilful leader for moving his men unobserved from point to point of a great battle-field, and on the other that absorption in the intense excitement of a modern fight which prevents men from observing what is taking place anywhere beyond the immediate range of their own employment.

It follows from this that the utmost possible skill in the handling of cavalry as a mounted arm will be required if cavalry is to take advantage of such chances as modern fight will present to it. Now, in all periods since the invention of firearms, there has been a tendency, as improvement in weapons has taken place, to attempt to put cavalry on a level in point of firearms with the infantry with which it has had to contend. Invariably, when that rare development of armies, a great cavalry leader, has arisen, he has swept away all attempts of the kind, and has employed his cavalry with their proper weapon, the 'arme blanche," sword or lance.

The reason of this is easy to explain, and the explana- tion is one that shows that the principle is as applicable to the present condition of warfare as to any preceding one. The effective action of cavalry as cavalry depends on ruse, on surprise, on skilful manceuvring, and on the impetuous power and moral effect of the man and horse,

WAR

[ractics.

glued to one another as though they together formed the old ideal of the arm, the centaur. Now, the dash and vigour with which an actual cavalry charge takes place depends on the moral condition of that part of the centaur in whose hands it is the great purpose and effect of high training to place the guiding of the composite animal. Never has it been possible to train a great body of fighting men in two opposite directions at once. Balanced judg- ment, and an appreciation of the powers and uses of each part of the force he has to employ, are the duties of a general, But if a body of infantry, dispersed in scattered groups, or isolated men, are to

repel successfully a body of charging cavalry, they must have acquired sufficient sang-froid to calmly fire at the great and overwhelming avalanche which they see moving down on them. To that end they must have acquired confidence in their weapon, the firearm, and must have learnt to believe that its power is so great that it gives them plenty of time to bring down the mighty-looking horseman before he closes with them. Similarly, if cavalry is successfully to be led by skilful manceuvring into a fight where firearms are creating the most horrible appearance of danger, they must have ac- quired a confidence in the skill of their leaders, in their own power of combined action, and in the effects of their sudden appearance, which will carry them on though leaders fall, and though death and destruction seem to await them. In other words, they must have learnt to despise the firearm when pitted against their own skill in evading its danger and in delivering home their blows. All attempts, therefore, to train cavalry not to employ their skill in manceuvring as the weapon to which they trust, but, on the contrary, to be always ready to jump off their horses and begin firing, tends directly to weaken and destroy the very spirit and quality on which the efficiency of true cavalry depends.

Now, the great leaders to whom we have referred believe absolutely in the possibility of true cavalry properly trained being able to play its part on the field of battle. Prince Kraft's 7th letter on this subject is so admirable in its analysis of past experience that all who would under- stand the subject should study it in its integrity. His conclusion is—' From all that I have stated in this long letter I draw the conclusion that cavalry will, in the future, also be able to play a decisive part in battle if they can be led in such a manner that they can break out round a flank, and can thus, up to the last moment, take advantage of the fire effect of their own line of battle. But to do so will sometimes require from the cavalry that they shall be able to advance as much as four miles, at a rapid pace, before they deliver their charge."!

There is, however, another necessity of modern warfare Mounted which is altogether distinct from the question of supplying ™fantry.

firearms to cavalry in order to make up to them for the increased power of infantry. Powerful as modern infantry is, it is very slow in its movements.

It is very difficult for a general to have it at the very place where he wants it. Hence the idea of mounting infantry and of sending them forward either on horseback or in carts, or where there are numerous roads on bicycles and tricycles, is one that is of the greatest importance. The so-called cavalry of the American civil war were all of this character. Most of them had been accustomed to rifle-shooting from their child- hood and could ride. They had had no opportunity what- ever of acquiring the manceuvring facilities of European cavalry. Probably European cavalry would have been altogether unsuited to the country in which they had to work, The essential condition of the efficiency of mounted

1 Translation in Royal Artillery Institution Proceedings, April

1888, p. 40. See also Die Kavallerie- Division als Schlachtenkérper,

1884.

infantry, which these men in fact were, is that, while they can ride well enough to get over such ground as is required, they waste no time in learning manceuvres which they could not master, but look altogether to fighting with firearms and on foot whenever collision becomes neces- sary. The Boers represented an almost ideal body of this kind. British wars have supplied most valuable bodies of mounted infantry, who have been always picked men, picked shots, and excellent infantry. Asa general prin- ciple, it issafe to say that they ought to be under infantry and not under cavalry officers, as to their immediate com- mand,—though very often indeed they will be a most valuable auxiliary for any cavalry commander, who will in that case of course have the whole body under his orders. In so far as their presence tends to save cavalry from the disastrous necessity which occasionally befalls them of having to employ their men in fighting on foot, their presence with cavalry is always valuable. But, as the time when all their best training is required is when they are actually fighting on foot, it is far better that they should then find themselves under the orders of an officer whose training tends to make him accustomed to handling men on foot, rather than to one all whose

experience ought to have accustomed him to handle men on horseback, and to hate making them jump off their horses.

The difficulty in enforcing these principles lies in the fact that it is only the experience of war on a large scale which brings home to cavalry officers the disastrous con- sequences of injuring their own power by continually try- ing to take up the réle of mounted infantry. They find themselves at peace manceuvres continually put hors de combat, because they have come under the fire of infantry. They can very often get into positions where, if they were infantry and in large numbers, their effect would be most telling. Their rapidity of movement enables them to do this. A narrow deduction from a very incomplete know- ledge of the experiences of cavalry charges during the 1870 campaign led to the conclusion that cavalry could not be employed on a modern battle-field in their proper work. That conclusion is utterly rejected by all those authorities who have had the best means of analysing the experiences on which it was based; yet it remains a tradition which unfortunately affects the minds of many cavalry officers as well as those of many other officers in the army.

It is safe to say, in conclusion on this matter, that the two forces of cavalry and mounted infantry are each of the greatest value, provided they each adhere to their own proper function. As soon as mounted infantry begins to attempt manoeuvres on horseback it necessarily becomes a very inferior cavalry. As soon as cavalry takes to dis- mounting, its equipment, its training, and usually its arms are sure to make it into a very inefficient body. Every year adds to the necessity of high shooting training for infantry, and of every hour of their work being connected with the efficient use of their arm. Every hour devoted by cavalry to shooting which subtracts anything from training in their own proper work, or which leads them to compete with the other arm in that way, weakens them. By no process can they compete with infantry if they measure themselves with them under the conditions favour- able to infantry fighting. Nothing is more fallacious than the notion that because during the latter part of the 1870 campaign the German cavalry often fought on foot the Germans therefore consider that the proper employment of the arm.

Prince Kraft emphatically says—‘ The circumstances of the latter campaigns of this war were so abnormal that no rules for the employment of the arms can be deduced from them.” ‘No cavalry could perform the duty” the German

cavalry here did, of saving their own infantry by acting on the wings against the French infantry, “except in the case where they were engaged with an enemy whose hastily collected and undrilled masses had not the full value of regular troops.”

We may also mention as an illustration of at least the views of the German leaders that during some manceuvres in 1879 a regiment of lancers by sudden surprise charged from behind some rising ground at four battalions of infantry, who did not see the cavalry till these were on their flank at a distance of 200 yards already in full charge. Scarcely a shot was fired before the cavalry were among the infantry. The emperor and Count Von Moltke were present, and the decision was that three battalions were hors de combat. Now, when it is remembered that a cavalry regiment numbers about 400 men and three battalions about 3000, the difference between the effect produced under such circumstances by a body of cavalry and an equivalent body of mounted infantry, who could not have dismounted at most more than 300 men, who would certainly have been destroyed, is too great not to be realized. In this case an instance occurred of what Prince Kraft mentions as a possibility continually illustrated by the experiences of the 1870 campaign. The colonel commanding the lancers, having moved personally to a well- chosen spot, had been quietly observing the movements of the infantry, himself unseen up to the moment when by a signal he gave the order for his regiment to advance at a gallop, and then charge.

Artillery.

Here the first point it is necessary to insist on is that the tendency to a divorce between firing practice and drill manceuvre has been inherited by the artillery from the past as it has been by the infantry. Napoleon's formation for the battle of Austerlitz placed his artillery guns between his infantry brigades and on their flank. The artillery advanced nearly in line with the infantry and rather in advance of it. As long as it was possible for artillery thus to move up to close quarters with the infantry, exact accuracy of fire training was of little importance. The distance was so short that the round shot were bound to produce their effect. But, when the range of both infantry and artillery fire were greatly extended, a change took place which required a change of habitin the artillery, for which the long training of the past had as little prepared them as had been the case with the infantry. The horse artillery, and at a much later date the field batteries, had acquired a mobility which enabled them very rapidly to take up assigned positions. But the habit of thinking that drill movements, irrespective of accuracy of fire, were the busi- ness on which a soldier's mind should be set continued to operate long after all idea of moving artillery cheek by jowl with infantry or cavalry had been abandoned. The practice grounds of artillery for actual shell fire are neces- sarily much fewer and more difficult to select than the ranges for infantry. Hence what we have said of the tendency in infantry manceuvres to separate the effective fire of the ranges and the butts from drill and manceuvres applies with tenfold force to the artillery. Moreover, in the case of the artillery this tendency has been aggravated by a certain fear among generals and their staff officers of interfering in the detail work of a special arm. As long as a battery is seen to manceuvre rapidly, to take up an assigned and telling position, and to fire off a puff of smoke, the superintending general is apt to think that he may assume that all has been done that ought to have been done. ;

Unfortunately, it may happen that the battery which thus appears to have acted in the very smartest possible

way may have all the time been learning to do just what will injure it for war service. Nothing is more note- worthy throughout the 1870 campaign

than the extraordi- nary superiority of the German artillery over the French. There were no doubt certain technical reasons for this ; but by far the most important reasons were these :—(1) the German batteries had been trained habitually so to co- operate that a French battery almost always found itself opposed to a German brigade of six batteries when it came to fighting; and (2) at all their manceuvres the Germans had been training for war, while the French artillery had not. The German artillery had never fired off a gun which had not been properly laid at an assigned object, with the range determined, the nature of the projectile declared, and the fuse to burst the shell so far fixed that, had it been necessary actually to fire in earnest, every man would have gone through an almost exactly similar ex- perience. The French, on the other hand, had piqued themselves on their dashing battery manceuvres, and had been content to fire off a blank cartridge as rapidly as possible, no matter how the gun was laid, or what would have happened about the shell.

The same two schools at this moment exist among British artillery officers. The unfortunate tendency at pre- sent is for the officer commanding a battery who tells his subalterns, " Never mind how you fire; get off a puff of smoke, just to show where you are," to seem much smarter than the man who insists upon every gun being properly laid at an assigned object, and on having every possible condition fulfilled as it would be in war. The general who at a mile's distance sees the two puffs of smoke can- not tell the difference, though, if he rode into the battery which has so promptly puffed off its smoke, he would prob- ably find that one gun was inclined high in air and the next shooting into the ground ten paces in front of the muzzle. It is not too much to say that this latter battery has been in every respect acquiring inefficiency by the day's work. It will be slow when it comes to action, be- cause the men have never been trained to be as quick as the circumstances of action permit, have acquired no prac- tice in rapidity under those conditions. It will have ac- quired no practice in actual shooting except its few annual shots on the practice ground, which are sure with it to have been regarded as a most inconvenient interruption to the show drill and show manceuvres on which it has been employed throughout the year. This is the point of artillery tactics without which everything else is utterly valueless. As

Prince Kraft of Hohenlohe-Ingelfingen puts it, "The artillery must in the first place Att, in the second place Ait, and in the third place Ait."

It depends far more in England upon generals com- manding districts and divisions and on their staffs than upon artillery officers whether this result is attained or not. It is almost impossible for the most zealous artillery officer to keep up the confidence and spirits of his battery and to keep their work to the proper level if on every occasion they find that, because he insists on work being properly done, some other battery which is amusing itself with sham firing gets all the credit of superior smartness. The matter is therefore vital to the efficiency of this arm of the service. The infantry and cavalry will find in action that they rely on the support of a broken reed if the artillery generally has not brought the most efficient technical and practice-ground work into the closest relation with field manceuvring. Given that this has been done in the sense here described, Prince Kraft's next condition may be briefly stated, because its importance will be easily understood. 'It must next be in a condition to come into position at the right moment, and, with this object it must practise itself in getting over distances of many miles, and

even forced marches of a day or so, at rapid pace. If," he adds,! "it can satisfy these claims, it will give us every- thing which is needed as to its fitness for employment in battle."

So far we have spoken of conditions in which the tacti- cal necessities of modern artillery are very similar to those of modern infantry. In the next point the contrast is as sharp as the analogy was close in the former instance. Infantry, as we have seen, once committed to a fight, is be- yond the control of all officers not actually leading them at the time. Artillery under all but the rarest circum- stances can be almost as easily moved from one point to another of a battle-field out of action in which it is fiercely engaged as if it were not employed in firing atall. There- fore the rule is now accepted in all armies that every gun that can be employed should as soon as possible be brought to bear onthe enemy. The shorter

time artillery is limbered up and the longer it is employed in action the more effec- tive is its work. With a very large army Prince Kraft, whose authority on such a subject is probably the highest we have, makes a rather hesitating exception in this sense that ordinarily the commander-in-chief of a very large army will have whole army corps designed for a particular work, usually for striking at the decisive point of a field of battle. With these their own artillery will naturally move. But so far as artillery is available on any part of a field of action, even including that of divisions and army corps kept back from the actual fight, as long as these are stationary, every possible gun will be pushed forward. The altogether overwhelming effect of a concentrated and massed artillery fire is so enormous that whatever tends to increase the number of guns employed tends to give that superiority over the enemy's artillery which it is one of a general's first objects to secure.

Ordinarily a battle will now begin by artillery opening fire at a range which is fixed by the necessity of the attack- ing artillery not exposing itself during the time that it is coming up to the enemy's effective fire with shrapnel shell. 'This is reckoned at about 3800 yards. From that point the artillery, as soon as it has been able sufficiently to occupy the fire of the enemy to make further advance possible, pushes in to a distance of from 2200 yards to 2700 yards. Infantry in the meantime will have been pushed on sufficiently to protect the ground thus to be occupied by the artillery from direct attacks from the enemy. At this point an artillery duel is practically the certain beginning of the regular battle. The artillery will fire at any of the other arms as soon as it is able to bring any effective fire to bear on them. It is no easy matter for infantry to attack other infantry until the artillery has prepared the way for them by a heavy fire. But the artillery will hardly ever be able to do this until it has established such an ascendency over the enemy's artillery that the latter is either silenced or at least tem porarily withdrawn.

No matter how great the mass of artillery that is gathered together, Prince Kraft, basing his conclusions upon the soundest reasoning, condemns altogether the independent fire of individual guns within a battery, and, unless exceptionally for the purpose of ascertaining a range, all salvoes of artillery by batteries or otherwise. Nothing is gained in point of the

number of shell that can be thrown in a given time by firing battery salvoes in- stead of firing steadily gun by gun from the flank of a battery. After a salvo an interval of from 36 to 48 seconds at least is required before another can be fired,

1 We quote from his correspondent's summary of his views, and from the translation given by Major Walford, R.A. These words occur in the 17th letter, Royal Artillery Institution Proceedings, August 1887, p. 187.

Massed artillery fire.

Regulation

battery re,

Supply of ammuni-

TACTICS. |

while with very rapid firing from the flank an interval of from 6 to 8 seconds allows a shell to traverse a range of from 2500 to 3000 yards, so that the effect of each shell can be seen.1 The effect of this is to enable the officer commanding the battery to have his fire under control, and to induce much more careful firing by each gun. Indeed, if a German battery is seen to be firing, not from the flank but irregularly, it may be taken for granted that it is being mastered by the hostile fire, and is out of hand. The duty of each commanding officer of a battery is to be continually watching over the replenishment of his

WaAR

361

culty. The employment of artillery in great masses, never in isolated batteries, is, so far as that arm is concerned, its most important law. So much so is this the case that, even when as many as eighty-four guns were collected together at Worth, the Germans found it answer best to turn all of them at once upon a single French battery, and then upon another, and

so on. Wherever possible, some at least of the guns will take up an enfilading position ; that is, they will fire from flank to flank of the troops they assail, in preference to firing directly at them. It is always advantageous to the fire of artillery to have great depth

tion. ammunition, and therefore as long as possible to draw | rather than great extent to fire at, because range is much upon his waggons for ammunition, keeping the ammunition | more difficult to fix correctly than direction. in his limbers as a last reserve. If this cannot be done, Prince Kraft regards it as doubtful whether artillery the limbers must be filled up as rapidly as possible. If, | can be employed in crossing its fire, the right of a long line however, by misfortune all ammunition is exhausted, the | of guns firing at an enemy's right and the left at the left, artillery must not retire, but must, for the sake of the | which would give to each a certain advantage in the direc- moral effect, remain without firing rather than produce the | tion of their fire. But itis clear that, if the whole of a encouragement to the enemy and discouragement to their | long line of guns be employed, as at Worth, first against own troops of withdrawing without express orders. one object and then against another, many of the batteries

Summary. We shall complete this sketch of the duties of artillery | will not be firing directly to their front, but at an angle,

in action by quoting the following summary from Prince

sometimes a very sharp one, to their own front.

In any case the earlier stages of a modern battle are Normal

Kraft of Hohenlohe-Ingelfingen :— sure to begin with a heavy fire of artillery, following either Course of

On the Offensive.—(a) Artillery, after it has silenced the enemy's

artillery, must not as a rule approach nearer than from 1600 to 1700 a modern

yards to infantry of the enemy which is as yet intact and is not engaged with other troops. () If the enemy's infantry is held in check by another force of artillery, or by infantry, it is not only advisable, but it is the duty of artillery to advance to a range of from 1100 to 1200 yards. (c) At the most decisive moment of the action artillery must not shun the very closest range. (d) As soon as the main attack has proved successful, the artillery must hasten up to secure the captured position by its fire; at such a moment, its proper place, in most cases, is in the line of skirmishers.

On the Defensive.—(a) The normal post for artillery in a defen- sive position (though this may be modified by the character of the ground) is 500 yards in rear of the foremost infantry position, pro- vided always that'the latter lcaves the field of fire of the artillery open. (6) Artillery must never abandon its position, even if the encmy come up to the muzzles of the guns, unless the officer com- manding the troops has given orders for a general retreat. But this does not imply that artillery, acting on the defensive, are for- bidden, if the assailant begins to get the advantage in the artillery duel, to cease firing for a time, and to withdraw their guns under cover, with the object of suddenly coming into action again at the most critical moment. (c) If the order to retreat is given, the only possible moment at which it can be commenced is either when the enemy has not yet advanced to the attack, or when he is preparing a sccond attack after having been repulsed in the first.

Horse Artillery ina Cavalry Action.—(a) Asa rule horse artillery should go in at once to a decisive range for the artillery duel, since the considerations which compel artillery when engaged with infantry to fight at longer ranges lose their force in this case, owing to the speed at which cavalry can move. From this posi- tion it will silence the enemy's artillery, and immediately after- wards, or as soon as it can see them, it will turn its fire on the enemy's cavalry. (%) During the charge of its own cavalry it will fire on that of the enemy, or, if that be not possible, on his artillery. If it has nothing to fire at, it will remain in position with loaded guns (common shell and not shrapnel should be used), in order, in case of the failure of the charge, to give support to its retiring cavalry, and to show them where they are to rally. (c) The horse artillery requires a special escort on that flank of its position

. only on which the cavalry fight is not taking place, and even therc

it requires it merely for the purpose of scouting ; a section will therefore be sufficient. (d) If the charge succeeds, the horse artillery must gallop up to the spot-where it took place, in order to secure its possession with their fire, and to assist in the pursuit.

The Combined Action of the Three Arms.

So far we have spoken of what may properly be called the minor tactics of the three arms, though that name is often applied in quite a different sense. There can be little doubt that it is in that portion of tactics that the complexity and difficulty of the present stage of the question lie. As

regards the larger handling of armies, the tendency of recent'

wars has been rather to simplification than to increased diffi-

1 See the prince's 15th letter, Royal Artillery Institution Proceed- ings, p. 171.

on some slight affairs of outposts or on the cavalry having ascertained the position of the enemy at least approxi- mately. Then may perhaps follow, what we have already suggested as one of the alternatives, a carefully regulated long-range fire of infantry; then probably a gradual development of the infantry of the assailing army in front of the position to be attacked and certain tentative move- ments designed to feel the strength of an enemy's position. Then, as soon as the point to be carried at any cost has been determined on, every effort will be made to distract the enemy's attention from this, to occupy him at other points, and by engaging him all along the line to prevent him from reinforcing the point which it is essential tocarry. At present the attempt will be, when possible, almost certainly to attack a flank. But, as the necessity of this becomes thoroughly realized as it now is on both sides, and a tendency arises towards continual extension of the space occupied in order to meet outflanking movements, it is almost certain that on one side or other the extension will exceed the limits of defensive power, and that then blows will be struck with the object of breaking the too extended line. All the

cavalry not employed in mere reconnoitring duties, or for keeping up the connexion between different parts of the army, will ordinarily be kept under the con- trol of the commander-in-chief until he is able to define the part of the battle in which it can be most effectually used. Then, when he has so far decided its direction, he will be obliged to leave all details to the cavalry leader, who will choose his own time and opportunity for delivering his blow. The local defensive power conferred by the present arms will be used on both sides. The assailant will endeavour by employing it at unimportant parts of his line to gain the advantage of the superiority of force neces- sary for striking at the decisive point. The defendant will naturally employ it to the full. Both on one side and the other, however, the effort will be to keep strong forces of all arms for the decisive period of the action.

So far as Continental warfare is concerned, the enormous development of modern armies makes it very uncertain how far elaborate strokes of tactical skill can ever again be delivered in the way they were by Napoleon,—for instance, at Austerlitz and Dresden. The experience of recent wars supplies us at all events with nothing of the kind. The enormous masses and the enormous extent of ground to be covered almost force a general into the

it to his subordinates to work out the development with such local skill as the circumstances permit. Nevertheless, it would be rash to say that, as incidents of a great campaign, many battles may not be fought, the effect of which on the conduct of the general operations will be very decisive, where comparatively small numbers are engaged. For the conduct of these at least there are many lessons to be gathered from the tactical experiences of earlier wars. Choice of In the taking up of positions it may be assumed gene- position. ally that the conditions to be sought are freedom for manceuvre, free scope for fire both of artillery and infantry, and, as a rule, for that end gentle glacis slopes like those of St Privat and Gravelotte, rather than precipitous heights like that of the Red Hill at Spicheren. There is nothing as to which war experience and popular

assumptions differ more than as to the relative strength of different positions. Asa rule, steep heights give a great deal of cover from fire. Their lower slopes can only be seen from the edge, and that edge cannot be held because it is completely exposed to the enemy's fire from many points below. It is better to have a difficult climb than to be shot by a bullet. It has constantly happened that positions have fallen because the defenders have trusted to physical difficulties of access rather than to the effect of ground upon the use of arms for their defence. Whatever tends to oblige an enemy to debouch on a narrow front against a wide front of fire is most valuable to the defence ; but it is upon considerations like these of the use of arms that the strength of a position must be determined. Similarly, whatever tends to facilitate communication between one part and another of your own troops, and to cause an enemy to separate his, adds greatly to the strength of your position. The element of time also has here, as in the province of strategy, to be always taken into account. Where ground tends to make movements slow and difficult, there it will be safe to economize men by employing small forces, in order to gain time for decisive blows in other directions. Whatever in an enemy's rear will prevent his safe retreat, and therefore either locally or throughout a position will make successful attack decisive, is greatly in favour of the army which, whether at first on the defen- sive or offensive, can attack an enemy in such a position. The application of these principles is almost infinite in its variety. It is impossible here to do more than indicate their general character. Provision The proposition has been advanced that it would be best against to meet the effort of an assailant to outflank a position by outflanking employing detached bodies to manceuvre outside the posi- move- : . . . eee tion, so that when an assailant has committed himself to an outflanking movement, and has moved up his enveloping troops, the detached bodycould fall upon these unexpectedly from their rear. Twice during the 1870 campaign the Germans designed a movement of this kind. In neither case was there an opportunity for putting it to the test. Such a movement successfully executed could hardly fail to have great results. On the other hand, a well-handled cavalry, searching all the country round prior to an action, might not improbably discover the isolated corps placed for the purpose, and in that case it ought not to be difficult for the assailant to keep it apart from the main army and to destroy it. _

_A proposal of a somewhat kindred kind, but involving a different principle, was made by Sir E. Hamley asa de- duction from the 1870 campaign, and was applied in practice by the Russians in Asia in 1877. He suggested that the defensive strength of comparatively small bodies was now so great that a general would be tempted to detach, or to connect with his main body only by a tele- graphic wire, a body of troops, who, passing round an enemy to be attacked, should take up a strong position in

his rear, and should thus become the anvil on which the main assailing army should act as hammier, grinding the enemy between them to powder. This was actually done by the Russians, who in October 1877 destroyed Moukhtar Pasha's army by this very means.

Both these forms of operation—the detached force to the flank and the detached force to the rear—partake of the nature of the attempt of Napoleon to destroy the allied armies, after the battle of Dresden in 1813, by pre- viously detaching Vandamme to intercept their retreat. As a matter of fact, that manceuvre was one of the most disastrous that Napoleon ever attempted, but the disaster was probably due to a failure of Napoleon's own wonted activity arising from illness. The telegraph might then have made a very great difference in the result of the operation. In any case, these suggestions indicate pos- sibilities of action, due to the present condition of arms and of science, which may have much wider application in the hands of skilful commanders. Everything will depend on their execution, and on the skill with which they are met. It may at least be asserted that, with the possibilities of such manceuvres being employed against him, it will ordinarily be extremely rash for a general to commit himself to the actual turning movement by which he wheels up a portion of his army to attack an exposed flank, without having searched the ground with his cavalry far beyond the point which he proposes to assail. This was actually done by the German cavalry under express orders from headquarters, prior to and during the great turning movement at the battle of Gravelotte.

Marches. —The principles regulating the marches of armies which
Marches.

pee battles are determined by the conditions of a modern attle itself. Asa rule nowadays the cavalry of an army will be certainly pushed far forward in advance of the main body. There- fore, with the exception of small parties of horsemen employed as orderlies, for keeping up the connexion between one part of an army and another, and to aid the infantry in the immediate work of local security, the marching body will in ordinary country consist of artillery and infantry. The tendency for every action to begin by artillery fire continually leads more and more to the pushing forward of that arm to the front of the column, only sufficient infantry being placed before it on the road to give pro- tection in case of sudden attack, and to furnish the necessary troops for the defence of the guns at the beginning of an action. The exact order of march will thercfore necessarily vary with the character of the country through which the army moves. In very mountainous districts, in which collision with an enemy may occur at any moment, it may be neccssary to push forward infantry instead of cavalry. In all cases where mountain defiles have to be passed, detached infantry must gain possession of the heights before the main body enters the defile.

Since the great object of all marches is to deliver the army in fighting order on the battle-field, it is necessary that the force should not be disperscd too widely on the march, but it is quite as necessary with large bodies of troops that the march should not be made upon too few roads. An army corps with its attendant waggons occupies in depth about 25 miles on a single road. As under most circumstances a day's march is about 18 or 14 miles, it is clear that, if an army corps were moving in the ordinary road formation on a single road, the rear of the column would scarcely be able to arrive on the same day that the head of the column was first involved in action. Nor is it always possible to place the whole of the fighting force in front and to leave the whole mass of waggons in rear. Ambulances and surgeons at least, as well as ammunition columns, are required at the very moment of battle. Therefore it is advisable to employ as many roads as possible that are within con- venient reach of one another. The difference between the lengths of march that have been- done by troops under favourable and un- favourable conditions is so great that it is impossible to fix any specific length as the march that can under all circumstances be relied on. Good spirits, good roads, high training,

and favourable weather on the one hand, and depression, deep mud, storms, and want of marching condition on the other, are elements that must be taken into account in all such matters. Of the difficulties which a large number of troops marching on a single road encounter a striking illustration is afforded by an incident of the 1866 cam- paign. According to the Austrian official account, the men marched eight abreast in order to diminish the length of road occupied. Yet, though this unusually wide marching front was taken up by

Advanced and rear guards,

Outposts.

Reconnais- sance and intelli- gence,

TACTICS. |

the infantry, and corresponding formations were as far as possible taken by the other arms, the length of the longest column, accord- ing to Von der Goltz, was, when actually on the road, from front to rear 674 miles in length. – In this case about three corps were march- ing together. Hence it is always desirable when possible to allow one road at least to each division. Another striking illustration both of the size of modern armies and of the length occupied by troops on a road is given by Von der Goltz. He calculates that, if the present German army were placed on one road, it would reach from Mainz to the Russian frontier, the whole distance being denscly packed with men, guns, and waggons. Again, he shows that either the present French or German army extended in battle array would occupy the entire length of the common frontier of the countries.

Advaneed and Rear Guards.—The questions involved in the proper use and employment of advanced and rear guards would occupy more space than we can possibly afford for them. In general terms it may be said that, with both advanced and rear guards, artillery (perhaps with machine and quick-firing guns), cavalry, and mounted infantry will play the principal parts. It is tolerably certain, though opinion is much divided on the subject, that the enormous advanced guards employed by the Germans during the 1870 campaign, in which the advanced guard of an army corps

sometimes consisted of about half the whole force, would be for most campaigns a mistake. The tendency of very large advanced guards is, as that campaign showed, to bring on actions prematurcly. Artillery or mounted corps can be easily drawn out of a premature action. Infantry cannot be so withdrawn. Ifthe advanced guard is large enough to give time to tho marching body to form upon suitable ground before it is attacked, it possesses all the strength that is necessary.

The task of a rear guard retiring before a victorious enemy, and covering the retreat of a beaten army, is one of the most delicate of operations. It depends for its proper execution on the full employment of those means for gaining time by forcing an enemy to deploy on unfavourable ground which have been described under the general heading.

Outposts.—The subject of outposts is also one which, for its full explanation, would require a volume to itself. The general prin- ciple on which their use is based is that a slender cordon of men shall so surround an army when at rest that no enemy can approach its quarters unobserved, and that this cordon shall be supported by piquets from which the actual sentries for the cordon are taken, and these again by stronger but less numerous bodies, serving to connect together the different parts, so that, if the enemy attempts to drive in the outposts at any point, he meets with a continually increasing resistance. In this broad indication of the method, the principle is equally applicable to cavalry and to infantry outposts. In general, however, the security of a modern army, when not in actual contact with an enemy preparatory to battle, depends chiefly on the early information gained by cavalry pushed far out beyond the rest of the army. The cavalry will be at a distance of at least one or two days' march in advance and on the flanks scouring the country in all directions.

It is practically certain that during the earlier stages of a campaign the collisions that will occur will be between bodies of cavalry pushed forward from both sides, supported by horse artillery and by such infantry as can be rapidly transported to the front. The circumstances of the collision of the main armies must depend in the first instance upon what happens in these encounters, in which cavalry will be the most important arm. Both

sides will endeavour to use their cavalry to obtain all the information they can and to prevent the enemy from obtaining information of their own movements. At the same time, in the case of two great neighbouring powers like France and Germany, it is probable that attempts will be made by the cavalry on both sides to interfere with the mobilization of the armies across the frontier. These efforts promise to result in contests on a scale and of a kind such as we have never yet seen, and of the nature of which it is difficult to judge from any past experience of war. It seems certain, how- ever, that the body which will gain victory in these encounters will be the most highly trained and numerous cavalry, supported by its sister arm the horse artillery. But the value of a body of mounted infantry, and perhaps a strong force of cyclists, pushed forward to support the cavalry, can hardly be doubted when it is remembered how often defiles will have to be seized, bridges held, and important stations permanently secured. No doubt, when such infantry is not available, cavalry will at times have to be employed on foot for these purposes. So long as such employment is looked on as exceptional and a necessity to be regretted, it need do no harm. In any case no rules must prevent the securing of the actual object for the time being.

Reconnaissanee and Intelligence.—The vital necessity of obtain- ing all possible information of what an enemy is doing makes the reconnaissances continually carried out by cavalry all round an army, and the occasional special reconnaissances conducted by single officers and small parties or strong bodies employed for the purpose, some of the most important operations of war. It is, however,

difficult in brief space to lay down rules for their guidance, because the essence of tho value of such work depends on officers being trained in all parts of the art of war so as to know what to look for and what to report. The principles of such reconnaissance are determined by tho general principles of both strategy and tactics, and are not in themselves independent. Nevertheless, it is very important that it should be realized, by men who are sending in reports from some one point of a Jarge circle,

that information in itself apparently unimportant may be of the greatest value when it is collated with other facts either already known or simultane- ously gathered from other quarters. Thus, for instance, a news- paper advertisement, or a reference to a particular man or officer as not being with his regiment, may give negative evidence of the position of that regiment which may become of great importance. The sifting, therefore, of information should be chiefly left to the department at headquarters which has charge of that work. Spies and deserters will supply evidence the value of which usually depends on the power of the department to check their assertions by a number of minute facts already known. Any information about the enemy or the country which may assist to that end should be carefully gathered and reported. Numerous forms and rules have been drawn up to supply hints as to the kind of informa- tion about roads, rivers, railways, villages, &c., which should be gathered. Lord Wolseley's Pocket-Book and Colonel Harrison's Handbook are the best for these purposes.

Literature—The following books may be recommended as the most recent and most valuable on matters of military'art. (1) On tactics, to which modern military literature has been chiefly devoted, see Prince Kraft of Hohenlohe-Ingelfingen's Letters on cavalry, infantry, and artillery, especially those on the last-named. These are being now translated in the Proceedings of the Royal Artillery Institu- tion. (2) On cavalry tactics two anonymous works by the same writer appeared in Germany in 1884: Die Kavallerte-Division als Schlachtenkérper, and Ueberjdie Bewaffinung, Ausbildung, und Verwendung der Reiteret. The former has been translated into French in the Revue de,Cavalerie of successive months of 1885-86, and we have no hesitation in saying that it is a book that ought to be known to every officer of every arm of the service, but more especially to every cavalry officer. See also Das Volk in Waffen ("The Nation in Arms,"), by Baron von dcr Goltz, which has been completely translated into French under the title of La Nation armée—organisation militaire et grande tactique modernes (1884); parts of it have been translated by Sir Lumley Graham in the Journal of the United Service Institution, No. 138, vol. xxxi. (1887). (8) On infantry tactics the books are legion. They should be read in conjunction with the actual history of the battles on which their conclusions are based, and if possible with a

study of them on the ground on which they were fought. Perhapsthe most important are Von Scherff's Studien zu neuen Infanterie-Takitk (1873), translated by Sir Lumley Graham, New Tactics of Infantry, 1875; Verdy du Vernois's Studien uber Feld- dienst (1886), and his Studien uber Truppen-Fuhrung (1873-75), and the numerous strategical and tactical studies recently published in Germany,—many by Von Gizycki, and in some cases translated as we have noted above by Captain Spenscr Wilkinson, and published by the Manchester Tactical Society. We should also recommend a perusal of Col. the Right Hon. J. H. A. Macdonald's Common Sense on Parade (1886), from which we have given several extracts. (4) On strategy Prince Kraft's ' strategical letters'' have already been alluded to. Sir Edward Hamley's Operations of War (4th ed., 1878) remains without a rival in the English language on questions of strategy. We cannot think that Clausewitz's great book, On War, translated by Col. J. J. Graham, 1873, has:ceased to be of value. Mekler's Taktik, which represents the course for the German war school, has not as yet been translated; it is a most important work. No soldier can read Major Adams's Great Campaigns without advantage. But on these matters we must conclude by expressing our conviction that an exhaustive study of at least a single campaign carried out pretty nearly on the principles laid down, for the pur- poses of the study of general history, by Dr Arnold, in his Lectures on History, but with just such modifications as apply to war study. is almost indispensable to a soldier who would derive much value from those books which examine the whole field of war, and that that cultivation of the judgment of which we have spoken must follow, if any real use is to be made of either one orthe other. (J. F, M*.)*

NAVAL STRATEGY AND TACTICS.

The introduction of steam, armour, the torpedo, and other modern changes must necessarily have produced modifications in naval strategy and tactics since the days of the last great naval war. In the course of the last eighty years wars on land, both in Europe and elsewhere, have been frequent, and soldiers have thus been enabled to keep pace with modern inventions, and to accommodate their strategy and tactics to the ever-changing conditions of the problem. But since 1805, when Great Britain, by her crowning victory of Trafalgar, placed herself in un- disputed

command of the seas, and, having rendered her- self superior to all possible combinations against her, was thus enabled to found unmolested her unrivalled colonial empire, the world has seen no naval war of sufficient magnitude to enable seamen to lay down maxims of strategy and tactics founded on actual experience. it does not follow, however, that we must necessarily give up the problems as insoluble; we are entitled to reason by analogy. The lessons of history, if not followed too slavishly, will act as a useful guide; and when we have made due allowance for the superseding of sail by steam power, and the consequent limits to the mobility of all

fighting ships dependent on their supply of coal, when we have taken into consideration the cutting of the Suez Canal and the possibility of another through Panama, and when we have given due weight to the possession by various nations of certain strategic points on the surface of the globe where coal may be obtained, we shall be able to construct some not altogether imaginary theories of future naval strategy, and shall probably find that the problem, at least as between Great Britain and her maritime rivals, bears a striking family resemblance to that which presented itself in the past. The geographical factors are not greatly altered. Some new naval powers have sprung into existence, and must be taken account of, whilst some of those which figured conspicuously in the beginning of the century have dwindled into insignificance; but the relative interests of the two great maritime rivals, Great Britain and France, are practically unchanged.

to form accurate schemes of combination, and thus the most carefully planned expeditions and enterprises were often frustrated and rendered abortive almost at the moment of consummation by a foul wind or storm. All this is now changed ; the present development of steam- power renders fleets practically independent of wind, and even storms can only slightly affect them. The limit to their range of operations dependent on

their coal supply, with the question of the possibility of replenishing, adds another element of certainty to the data upon which we can form accurate calculations as to the power and mobility of fleets. It has become possible, therefore, to say that naval strategy is no longer the inexact and haphazard busi- ness, depending largely on chance, which it was of old, but an accurate and most interesting science, worthy of the close attention and practical study of the most skilled experts. The two principal objects of the naval strategy of Great

Strategy. Strategy.—The great continental powers of Europe, in | Britain —the command of the narrow seas around her consequence of their land frontiers, have to depend mainly | coasts, and the protection of her mercantile marine—are on their armies to defend their position, and maintain | to a certain extent different, though not actually inde- their independence, and they have all been constrained to | pendent of each other. Thus she might, by providing an adopt a system of forced military service, and to support | overwhelming fleet of iron-clads, and neglecting to build a great standing armies, with prodigious reserves, and vast | sufficiency of fast cruisers, retain undisputed command stores of war material constantly at hand. For them the | of the narrow seas, and yet have her commerce swept off problems with which we are now dealing are questions of | the ocean by an enemy provided with numerous fast, minor importance, and must be held entirely subordinate | far-ranging cruisers; and on the other hand, it would be to their military requirements. Italy is probably the only | useless for her to provide vast numbers of vessels of the one of them which has reason to fear invasion by sea, or | latter class to protect her commerce all over the world, if descents and raids upon her extended coast line; and she | by neglecting her iron-clads she lost command of the has lately been making gigantic efforts to supply herself | narrow seas, and saw her merchant ships captured in sight with a powerful war navy, though she is still far behind | of their ports. It is obvious, therefore, that her only France, the only power from whom she has any cause to | safety depends upon an ample supply of both.

Strategic apprehend attack. To Great Britain alone of the great The naval strategy of the last war may be briefly but Blockadeof

problemsof powers of Europe are the problems of naval strategy of | comprehensively described as a blockade of the enemy's e"emy's

a ante paramount importance. Upon a thorough knowledge and | ports. The question which now exercises the minds of Pt fo ion just appreciation of them, with a sufficient provision of | seamen is whether blockade is at present possible, and if Britain, physical force to secure their successful development in her | so under what conditions; and the conclusion which seems

own interests, depends the existence of the British empire.

The two primary factors which must decide the future naval strategy of Great Britain are the command of the English Channel and the protection of her mercantile marine. Upon the former depends her own safety from invasion, or from partial but disastrous raids upon her open commercial cities and coast towns; and upon the latter depends the no less vital consideration of the uninterrupted supply of food and of raw material for manufacture.

Her naval supremacy in the Mediterranean is of vast importance, for upon it will depend the freedom of her principal route to India and Australia, and also the eventual retention of Malta, Gibraltar, and Cyprus, and of that priceless possession vaguely termed naval prestige, upon which alone she can found a claim to be classed amongst the great powers of Europe. But, notwithstanding the importance to Great Britain of being able to hold her own in the Mediterranean, either with or without allies, in the event of a war with France, or with France and Russia combined, it cannot be considered as vital to the exist- ence of the empire; and it is possible to conceive circum- stances in which she might be driven from that sea, or for strategic reasons be induced temporarily to withdraw her ships, and yet, if she could keep open her alternative trade route by the Cape of Good Hope, and protect her food supplies from America, she might secure time to develop her unrivalled maritime resources, and eventually, notwithstanding the enormous temporary loss of prestige, regain her wonted supremacy on all seas.

The naval strategy of the past was necessarily a some- what inexact and haphazard business. The fact that fleets had to depend entirely for locomotion upon the fickle and uncertain power of wind rendered it impossible

to have been arrived at by the ablest naval strategists of the present day appears to be that a close blockade, carried on under the old system, is, for various reasons, no longer possible. What is now practicable is observation, or watching by a chain of look-out vessels in connexion with a superior fleet, in such a way that the squadron in port would be masked (to use a military term), or in other words, that they would be unable to leave the port with- out the extreme probability of being obliged to meet and engage with a superior force. The distance at which the masking fleet should remain from the blockaded port, and the question whether they should be kept under weigh, or at anchor at some suitable anchorage, are points of detail which come more under the head of tactics, and must be decided in each individual case in accordance with local circumstances, and with such considerations as the prospect of the blockading fleet being or not being subjected to the attacks of torpedo boats and coast de- fenders, which, although not strictly speaking sea-going vessels, are yet capable of exercising potent energies within a certain zone of their port, by selecting the most suitable time and weather for their operations. Such considera- tions render it obvious that the blockading ships must greatly exceed the sea-going force in the port blockaded, as they render themselves liable to all sorts of subsidiary but very effective attacks from comparatively insignificant forces, which, in consequence of their own distance from their base of operations, they would be unable to reply to in a similar manner. If the blockading force is to be kept constantly under weigh, its numbers must be still further increased, as in that case a certain proportion of the ships, variously estimated at from one-sixth to one- third, must be continually absent from their station for

Swift cruisers.

Changes In naval tactics.

AND TACTICS. }

the purpose of replenishing their coal supply, and of making those repairs to machinery which are incidental to steam ships kept constantly under weigh.

The effective blockade of an enemy's ports would of itself provide for the protection of commerce, for if no hostile ships could escape there would be nothing to prey upon the commerce. Such experience, however, as was gained during the American civil war, supported by numerous peace trials and general nautical experience on the subject, tends to show that a perfectly effectual blockade is impossible, as against steamers: some vessels of high speed will certainly find means of escaping on dark nights or during thick weather, so that it becomes necessary for a rich commercial nation, whose merchant ships cover every sea, to make arrangements for providing at least two cruisers of superior speed and greater coal endurance, to look after every one of the hostile raiders which may escape the blockade and endeavour to adopt the tactics of the famous " Alabama." Some half-dozen Confederate cruisers of feeble power and insignificant speed succeeded in driving the merchant flag of the United States off the ocean, and deprived that country of the large share of the carrying trade of the world which it then possessed. A similar disaster to Great Britain in her present unique position would, it is almost superfluous to point out, have far wider consequences. +

Some high political authorities have given it as their opinion that no fleet of fast cruisers which it would be possible to provide would suffice for the protection of Great Britain's commerce in case of war with a maritime power. This may or may not be the case, but it is a view not generally shared by the highest naval authorities, who take into consideration the possession by Great Britain of the principal coaling stations of the world.

A novel but apparently not unpractical proposition has been made by one of the ablest and most thoughtful admirals of the British navy, with a view to prevent the wholesale transfer of the mercantile marine to a neutral flag on the outbreak of war with a maritime power. It is to the effect that the national exchequer should guarantee to make good all war losses, provided owners conformed to a few simple but not too harassing regulations as to routes and times of sailing, to be laid down by the

Admiralty from time to time. It is quite possible that the call on the national purse might be enormous, perhaps a hundred millions sterling during the first six months of the war; but no mulct it would be reasonable to conceive would equal the amount of the indirect national loss which would accrue from the wholesale transfer of the carrying trade of the country to a foreign flag.

The subject is worthy of the attentive consideration of all those who essay to deal with the great questions of naval strategy, as the protection of the mercantile marine of the country from either direct or indirect destruction is one of the principal factors in the problem.

Lactics.—If naval strategy has been modified by the recent inventions and alterations in warlike materials and the motive power of ships, it is certain that the same causes have had a still greater effect upon all preconceived notions of naval tactics.

Weather gauge will no longer be sought for as an advantage. In fact in all cases of attack by surprise, such as an assault by torpedo boats, or other light craft, for the purpose of harassing a fleet, the attacking force would certainly approach from the leeward, by which tactics the smoke from every gun fired by the fleet would act as a screen to hide their movements, and protect them from machine gun fire; for not even the beams of the electric light can penetrate smoke.

A large amount of speculative writing has lately been

indulged in, by both English and French writers, as to the naval tactics of the future. We hear of "ramming tactics," "the end-on attack," "the melée," and various other somewhat vague phrases, used to express the views of theorists as to the probable tactics of a future naval battle ; and, whilst the torpedoist tells us that his weapon (meaning the locomotive torpedo) will certainly decide an action, and forbid ships to approach near enough for ramming, the artillerist laughs to scorn the inaccuracy and

limited range of torpedoes moving in such a dense medium as water, and maintains that his weapon, of far greater accuracy, almost equal destructive power, and immensely greater range, will as of old decide the battle.

It is probable that all three weapons, ram, gun, and torpedo, will play a part in future naval battles, though many thoughtful and practical seamen seem to be coming to the conclusion that the ram will not be deliberately used, except perhaps to give the coup de grace toa ship with her engines already disabled; and this even would appear to be a wanton destruction of a ship which might become a valuable prize, and an inhuman sacrifice of lives no longer capable of exercising any material influence on the battle.

It seems to be thought that ramming when it takes Ram- place in action will be as often accidental as deliberate ; ming.

and indeed the present high speed and great size and weight of iron-clads would probably forbid practical sea- men from adopting that mode of attack. Two ships of from ten to thirteen thousand tons, meeting end-on ata speed of 28 knots an hour (assuming the speed of each to be 14 knots), would certainly produce mutual destruction, with loss of the lives of almost all on board, and it seems difficult to believe that any two men who still retained calm judgment and reason would deliberately adopt such a suicidal method of fighting, if indeed it be possible to steer two large ships at high speed with such accuracy as to cause a direct collision, —a point which many practical seamen doubt.

On the other hand, a ship striking another on the broadside, or at any angle approaching a right angle, would probably cause the destruction of the latter, with but trifling injury to herself, supposing her bows to be properly constructed for ramming; but, in order to place a ship in a situation to strike such a blow (both ships proceeding at speed), she would herself have to assume a very critical position ; that is to say, she would have to expose her broadside, or in other words, she would have to place herself almost as much across the assumed path of her adversary as the adversary was across hers; in which position the miscalculation of a few seconds in time, a knot or two in speed, or even a small touch of the helm

of either ship at the last moment, would turn the would- be rammer into the victim. It is probable therefore that, if ramming takes place in action, it will be more frequently by accident than design.

Much has been made by the advocates of ramming tactics of the incident of the battle at Lissa, where the Austrian wooden ship 'Ferdinand Max" rammed and sank the Italian iron-clad '" Re d'Italia"; but it has been stated on high authority that the brave Tegethoff himself has disclaimed any preconceived design in the matter, further than that he suddenly observed through the smoke a grey object in front of him, which he took to be an enemy, that he ordered his ship's engines to be put "full speed a-head" and his ship to be steered for the object, and that he then found he had rammed and sunk the "ave datalia.""

In some instances modern ships have been designed and built with a view to carrying out some special plan of tactics. Thus in the British navy several ships have been

Tactical forma- tions.

366

built for the " end-on attack," as it is called, a somewhat vague term for expressing the desire of some officers to fight their ships end-on to the enemy,—tactics, however, which can only be consistently carried out if the enemy consents to run away ; otherwise it is evident that, if both ships continue to advance towards each other, they will meet, and if they do not strike and sink each other, they must pass from the "end-on" to the " broadside-on," then " stern-on," and then, unless they mutually agree to run away from each other, they must pass through the "broadside-on " position again before they resume the "end-on" or bow attack.

It would seen therefore to be wise not to construct the ordinary battle ships for any particular method of attack, whilst the whole subject is in such an untried and specula- tive condition, and so much necessarily depends on the tactics of the enemy, but rather to make ships as strong all over, both offensively and defensively, as it is possible to do upon a given displacement and at a certain cost.

The principal tactical formations for modern fleets are— single column in line ahead; two and three columns in line ahead ; the same in line abreast ; quarter line or line

WARANGAL, or WoruneUL, an ancient town in the Nizam's Dominions, or Hyderabad state, situated 86 miles north-east of Hyderabad city, in 17° 58' N. lat. and 79° 40° E. long., and containing in 1881 a population of 3347. It was the ancient capital of the Hindu kingdom of Telingana, founded by the Narapati Andhras, of which now little remains to denote its former grandeur except the four gateways of the temple of Siva. These are still in a state of tolerable preservation.

WARASDIN. See Varasp.

WARBLER, in ornithology, the name bestowed in 1773 by Pennant (Genera of Birds, p. 35) on the birds removed, in 1769, by Scopoli from the Linnean genus Motacilla (cf. WactaiL) to one founded and called by him Sylvia,—the last being a word employed by several of the older writers in an indefinite way,—that is to say, on all the species of AMotacilla which were not Wagtails. "Warbler" has long been used by English technical writers as the equivalent of Sylvia, and consequently generally applied to all members of the Family Sylviide thereon raised, which has since been so much subdivided as to include a vast number of genera, while species almost innumerable have from time to time been referred to it.

Until recently ornithologists had come to agree pretty well as to which forms should be considered to belong to the Family Sylviidzx, —the "American Warblers" (Mniotiltidx), to be presently con- sidered, being therefrom segregated ; but some writers, seeing the difficulty of separating the remainder from the Turdidz (ef. TuRvsH), tried to get over it by proposing to erect an intermediate Family for the WHEATEAR (q.v.) and some similar forms, under the name Saxicolide. In truth the difficulty was thereby doubled, for, if it was before hard to distinguish between Sylviide and Turdidex, it has since become harder to distinguish on the one hand between Sylviidx and Saxicolide, and on the other between Saxicolide and Turdide. The confusion thus caused is chiefly due to the adoption in a more or less modified form of the views put forth by

Sundevall in 1872, and revised by him in 1874 (cf, ORNI- THOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 38). For him, however, it is to be said that

he at least proceeded in a fashion that had long been recognized, :

and gave reasons, whether good or bad, for the system he pro- pounded; but his imitators have omitted so obvious a requirement, and leave to any one who would use their results the task of dis- covering how they have been reached. Hence it has been suggested that some of the alterations introduced since Sundevall's time have been purely arbitrary, if indeed they did not proceed from considerations of personal convenience, or occasionally even through mischance. Still the greatest allowance must be made for those who attempt to reduce to order such a multitudinous assemblage of forms—forms which present an almost endless

1 For this reference, not before precisely given, the writer is in- debted to the Rev. G. M'Arthur.

of bearing ; indented line ; and the group formation. In the last-named, a group of three ships becomes the tactical unit instead of the single ship ; there is a leader with a ship on each quarter at different angles and different distances ; and in this, and also in the indented line formation, the object is to keep the broadsides of the ships open or clear of consorts ; but, in consequence of the more recent battle ships not being built specially with a view to broadside fire, these somewhat complicated formations are not generally popular.

Science_and the ingenuity of inventors are day by day adding fresh weapons of more terribly destructive energy to the already prodigious list of war material, and the attack may be said to keep always well ahead of the defence, so that it becomes more difficult to lay down fixed rules for tactics than for strategy. Much will depend upon the personal genius, nerve, and happy in- spirations of the individual admirals and captains who first find themselves engaged in a modern naval battle ; and national

instincts, and practical experience in handling steam ships at high speed, will count for much towards the issue. (6. @P.&)

*variety of small differentiating characters, pointing in numerous directions—while the essential structure of all is apparently so similar that at present there is no hope of assistance from the anatomist or the morphologist. But the affinity, seeming or real, to the Turdidx does uot offer the only difficulty. The resemblance which some other forms, often placed with the Sylviide, bear to the Timeliide *—the Crateropodid# of some systematists—is equally if not more puzzling. It is admitted by many systematists that the Timeltide form a group that has been made a "refuge for the destitute," a group into which genera and species that were trouble- some to classify have been thrust ; and, as a natural consequence, the limits of such a "Family" or group have scarcely been plausibly defined.? It appears that the so-called Timeliidw lead off to other groups, as the Lantidez (cf. SHRIKE) and what not, and their existence as a separate " Family" can hardly be taken for a certainty. Again, a small group of birds, almost wholly peculiar to the Australian region, have been sometimes separated as A/alurida, and of these more must be said presently. Lastly, there are certain genera that, though formerly included without hesitation among the Sylviidx, have lately been designated " Fly-catchers," on grounds, however, that have not been explained.*

To deal with this theme in satisfactory detail would require far more space than can here be allowed, for the failures of later systematists would have to be shewn by a series of minute criticisms of a kind that would be only acceptable to specialists, and hardly understood by others than experts. All things then considered, it would seem to be best for our present purpose to regard the "Warblers "—without pledging our faith to the recognition of a "Family" Sylviide—from the point of view which obtained before the more recent and perplexing (because ill-defined) opinions were introduced, and that aspect is afforded by the scheme furnished by Canon Tristram to Mr Wallace, and by him adopted in his Geographical Distribution of Animals (ii. pp. 257-260); but our limits will only allow us to touch upona few of the most prominent membcrs in addition to those which have already been or will form the subject of

separate articles. In this sense then the first that may be mentioned arc those forming a group of more or less aquatic habit, usually called Calamoherpingw but more correctly Acrocepha- ling, the commonest of which in England is the well-known Sedge- bird or Sedge-Warbler, Acrocephalus schenobenus, whose chattering song resounds in summer-time from almost every wet ditch in most parts of Britain. As is the case with so many of its allies, the skulking habits of the bird cause it to be far more often heard than seen; but, with a little patience, it may be generally observed flitting about the uppermost twigs of the bushes it frequents, and its mottled back and the yellowish-white streak over its eye serve to distinguish it from its ally the Reed-Wren or Reed-Warbler, 4. streperus, which is clad in a wholly mouse-coloured suit. But this last can also be recognized by its different song, and comparatively

seldom does it stray from the reed-beds which arc its favourite

2 These are exotic birds, having no recognized English name, Those of " Babblers," ' Bush-Babblers," and '" Babbling-Thrushes " have been applied to them by some writers, who consider them to be sufficiently characterized by their short, rounded, and incurved wings.*

3 Cf. Mr Sharpe's meritorious efforts, Cut. B. Brit. Museum, vols. vi, and vii,

WA R—

haunts. In them generally it builds one of the most beautiful of nests, made of the seed-branches of the reed and long grass, wound horizontally round and round so as to include in its substance the living stems of three or four reeds, between which it is suspended at a convenient height above the water, and the structure isso deep that the eggs do not roll out when its props are shaken by the wind. Of very similar habits is the Reed-Thrush or Great Reed- Warbler, A. arundinaccus, a loud-voiced species, abundant on the Continent but very rarely straying to England. Much interest also attaches to the species known as Savi's Warbler, A. luscinioides, which was only recognized as a constant inhabitant of the Fen- district of England a few years before its haunts were destroyed by drainage. The last example known to have been obtained in this country

was killed in 1856. The nest of this species is peculiar, placed on the ground and formed of the blades of a species of Glyceria so skilfully entwined as to be a very permanent structure, and it is a curious fact that its nests were well known to the sedge: cutters of the district which it most frequented, as those of a bird with which they were unacquainted, long before the builder was recognized by naturalists. In coloration the bird somewhat re- sembles a Nightingale (whence its specific name), and its song differs from that of any of those before mentioned, being a long smooth trill, pitched higher but possessing more tone than that of the Grass- hopper- Warbler, 4. nxzvius—the Salicaria locustella of many authors —which is a widely-distributed species throughout the British Isles, not only limited to marshy sites, but affecting also dry soils, in- habiting indifferently many kinds of places where there is tangled and thick herbage, heather, or brushwood. In those parts of England where it was formerly most abundant it was known as the Reeler or Reel-bird, from its song resembling the whirring noise of the reel at one time used by the spinners of wool. The precise determination of this bird—the Grasshopper Lark, as it was long called in books, though its notes if once heard can never be mistaken for those of a grasshopper or cricket, and it has no affinity to the Larks—as an English species is due to the discernment of Gilbert White in 1768. Inits habits itis one of the most retiring of birds, keeping in the closest shelter, so that it may be within a very short distance of an eager naturalist without his being able to see it, —the olive-colour, streaked with dark brown, of its upper plumage helping to make it invisible. The nest is very artfully concealed in the thickest herbage, The foreign forms of Aquatic Warblers are far too numerous to be here mentioned.

In the scheme already mentioned, a Subfamily Drymecing, with 15 genera and nearly 200 species, is recognized. That such a natural group may exist is quite likely, but about its composition and limits much doubt cannot fail to be entertained. If its existence be acknowledged, the remarkable genera Orthotomus with about 12 and Cisticola with some 30 species may be fairly admitted as belonging to it. The former ineludes the Tailor-birds of the Indian region of which all have heard or read, for their habit of sewing together the leaves of plants so as to form a cone in which to build their nests has often been described and the fabric figured.

Jerdon (B. India, ii. p. 166) writes of the common Indian Tailor-bird, O. longicauda, that it " makes its nest of cotton, wool, and various other soft materials," and " draws together one leaf or more, gene- rally two leaves, on each side of the nest, and stitches them together with cotton, either woven by itself, or cotton thread picked up; and, after passing the thread through the leaf, it makes a knot at the end to fix it." Cuistécola, of which one species inhabits the south of Europe, follows the same trade on stems of grass, confining them by stitches above the nest, which assumes a globular form.

In the same group Drymecing is placed by some authors the Australian genus Malurus, to which belong the birds known as 'Superb Warblers," and they are not inaptly so named, since in beauty they surpass any others of their presumed allies. Part of the plumage of the cocks in breeding-dress is generally some shade of intense blue, and is so glossy as to resemble enamel, while black, white, chestnut, or scarlet, as well as green and lilac, are also present in one species or another, so as to heighten the effect. But, as already stated, there are systematists who would raise this genus, which contains some 15 species, to the rank of a distinct Family, though on what grounds it is hard to say.

Of the other Subfamilies, Saxicoline, Sylvtins, and Phylloscopinz, will be conveniently treated under WHEATEAR, WHITETHROAT, and [Willow-] WREN (gq.v.), while the Ruticilling have been already mentioned under NIGHTINGALE, REDBREAST, and REDsTART, and the Accentoring under [Hedge-] SpaRRow.

The birds known as " American Warblers," forming what has now for a long while been almost universally recognized as a distinct Family, Mniotiltide, remain for consideration. They possess but nine instead of ten primaries, and are peculiar to the New World. More than 130 species have been described, and these have been grouped in 20 genera or more, of which members of all but three are at least summer-visitants to North America, AS a whole they are much more brightly coloured than the Sylviidw (Malurus, if it belongs to them, always excepted); for, though the particular genus Mniotilta (from which, as the fortune of nomenclature will

have it, the Family takes its right name)! is one of the most abnormal—its colours being plain black and white, and its habits rather resembling those of a TREE-CREEPER (q.v.)—in other groups chestnut, bluish-grey, and green appear, the last varying from an olive to a saffron tint, and in some groups the yellow predominates to an extent that has gained for its wearers, belonging to the genus Dendreca, the name ot #*Golden" Warblers. In the genus Seto- phaga, the members of which deserve to be called " Fly-catching"' Warblers, the plumage of the males at least presents yellow, orange, scarlet, or crimson. Dr Coues (Key N.-Am. Birds, ed. 2, p. 288), following on the whole the arrangement of Baird, Brewer, and Ridgway (N.~~Anv. Birds, i. p. 178), separates the whole Family (for which he arbitrarily retains the name Sylvicolidx) into three Sub~~ families, Sylvicolinw (= Mniotilting), Icteriine, and Sctophagine, grouping the genera Mniotilta, Parula, and Peucedromus as " Creep- ing Warblers"; Geothlypis, Oporornis, and Siurus as " Ground. Warblers"; Protonoteria, Helminthotherus, and Helininthophila as "Worm-eating Warblers"; Setophaga, Cardellina, and Mytodioctcs as "Fly-catching Warblers"; Jcteria, which perhaps may not belong to the Family, standing alone; and Dendraca as '* Wood- Warblers."

The Afniotiltide contain forms exhibiting quite as many diversc modes of life as do the Sylviidw. Some are exclusively aquatic in their predilections, others affect dry soils, brushwood, forests, and soon. Almost all the genera are essentially migratory, but a large proportion of the species of Dendraca, Setophaga, and cspecially Basileuterus, seem never to leave their Neotropical home; while the genera Leucopeza, Tcretristis, and Microligia, comprising in all but 5 species, are peculiar to the Antilles. The rest are for the most part natives of North America, where a few attain a very high latitude,? penetrating in summer even beyond the Arctic Circle, and thence migrate southward at the end of summer or in the fall of the year, some reaching Peru and Brazil, but a few, as, for instance, Parula pitiayumi and Geothlypis vclata seem to be resident in the country last named,

To return, in conclusion, to the Sylviidz, or true Warblers, it is to be hoped that before long some com- petent ornithologist will take on himself the task, necessary if toilsome and perhaps ungrateful, of revising the work that has lately been done upon them and upon the Turdide, and, setting aside all preconceived notions except that of aiming at the truth, without prejudice fix the limits of the two Families, if Families they be, and at the same time adjust the relations of the hitherto very indefinite group Zrmeliide. aN.)

WARBURTON, Extot BartHotomew Grores (1810- 1852), traveller and novelist, born in 1810 near Tullamore, Ireland, made a hit with his first book, The Crescent and the Cross. It was a book of Eastern travel, in Turkey, Syria, Palestine, and Egypt, and fairly divided public attention with Mr Kinglake's Zothen, which appeared in the same year, 1844, Interest was centred in the East at the time, and Warburton had popular sympathy with him in his eloquent advocacy of the annexation of Egypt; but, apart from this harmony with the tastes of the time, the traveller had so many adventures, told them with such spirit, de- scribed what he saw with such picturesque vigour, and sketched character with such animation and generosity, that the success of the book on its merits was perfectly legitimate. Warburton was an Irishman, with an Irish- man's rhetoric and spirit of adventure, who, after an educa- tion at Cambridge, was called to the Irish bar, tried to settle down on his paternal estate, but very soon abandoned the management of his tenants for a life of nobler excitement. His first success as an author tempted him to try again, but he had unhappily a short career, and did not again equal Zhe Crescent and the Cross. His most substantial work was a Memoir of Prince Rupert, published in 1849, enriched with original documents, and written with eloquent partiality for the subject. This was followed in 1850 by a novel, Reginald Hastings, the scenes of which

1 By some writers the Family is called Sylvicolid%, a practice which contravenes the ordinary usage of nomenclaturists, since the name Sylvicola in ornithology is preoccupied by its employment in con- chology.

2 Seven species have been recorded as wandering to Greenland, and

one, Dendreca virens, is said to have occurred in Europe (Nau- mannia, 1858, p. 425).

368

were laid in the same period of civil war. It was much more commonplace than his travels, and showed no power of construction or felicity in the creation of character. He produced another historical novel, Darien, or The Merchant Prince (1851). The knowledge therein shown of the inhabitants of the isthmus led to his selection by the Atlantic and Pacific Company to explore the country and negotiate a treaty with the Indian tribes. He sailed on this mission in the "Amazon," which perished by fire with nearly all on board on the 4th of January 1852.

His Life of the Earl of Peterborough was published posthumously in 1853. To the Memoirs of Horace Walpole (1851), nominally edited by him, he contributed, as he avowed in the preface, only his advice to the anonymous author and the countenance of his name.

WARBURTON, Witiiam (1698-1779), bishop of Gloucester, was the son of the town-clerk of Newark, where he was born on December 24, 1698. He was educated at Oakham and Newark grammar schools, but, being intended for his father's profession, does not seem to have addicted himself especially to the classics, or to have manifested extraordinary proficiency in any study. He lost his father while a boy, and in 1714 he was articled to Mr Kirke, attorney at Great Markham, in Nottinghamshire, and after serving his time with him returned to Newark with the intention of practising as a solicitor. Whether he ever did seems uncertain, but a very short time afterwards he is found studying Latin and Greek under the master of Newark school, who frequently sat up till late at night with his pupil. In 1723 he was ordained deacon by the archbishop of York, and on March 1, 1727, received priest's orders from the bishop of London. He had occupied the interval in various literary labours, the most important being the notes he contributed to Theobald's edition of Shakespeare, and an anonymous pamphlet on a question which had arisen concerning the jurisdiction of the Court of Chancery. Warburton had undertaken to answer another anonymous pamphlet, which proved to be the composition of no less a person than Mr Yorke, afterwards Lord

Chancellor Hardwicke, and the impression which he made upon his antagonist was evinced by the pains the latter took with his reply. He now re- ceived from Sir Robert Sutter the small living of Griesley, in Nottinghamshire, exchanged next year for that of Brant Broughton, in Lincolnshire, and was made an honorary M.A. of Cambridge. Here for eighteen years he spent his time in intense study, the first result of which was his celebrated treatise on the alliance between church and state, published in 1736. The work was probably intended, and certainly admirably adapted, to afford the ministry of the day an excuse for omitting to redeem their promise to the Dissenters of freeing them from the bondage of the Test and Corporation Acts. To this end the test is represented as the only possible means of reconciling the principle of a religious establishment with that of a free toleration, a piece of logic which, now that religious tests are no longer held a qualification for civil office, would excite most opposition where it originally gained most favour. It fully answered its tenrporary purpose, and equally subserved the author's real end by gaining him credit at court. It would appear that he only missed immediate preferment by the death of Queen Caroline. His next performance, the famous Divine Legation of Moses Demonstrated on the Principles of a Religious Deist, the first part of which was published in 1738, will long preserve his name as the author of the most daring and ingenious of theological paradoxes. The deists had made the absence of any inculcation of the doctrine of a future life an objection to the divine authority of the Mosaic writings. Warburton boldly admits the fact and turns it against the adversary No human legislator, he contends,

would have omitted such a sanction of morality; ergo, the legislation was divine. It may be doubted whether the argument ever convinced any one; and its cogency was not assisted by the multitude of minor paradoxes with which it was interwoven, such as the identification of the scenery of the sixth book of the dmeid with the exhibitions of the Eleusinian mysteries. But the author's extraordinary power, learning, and originality were acknowledged on all hands, though he excited censure and suspicion by a circumstance highly honourable to him, his tenderness to the alleged

heresies of Conyers Middleton. The second volume of the work appeared in 1741.

Warburton's next undertaking, though still theological, brought him into the field of general literature. Either in quest of another paradox, or actually unable to recognize the Spinozistic tendency of Pope's Lssay on Man, he entered upon its defence against Crousaz, in a series of articles contributed to The Republic of Letters. Whether Pope had really understood the tendency of his own work has always been a question, but there is no question that he was glad of an apologist, or that Warburton's jeu d'esprit (for him it was hardly more) in the long run did more for his fortunes than all his erudition. It occasioned a sincere friendship between him and Pope, whom he persuaded to add a fourth book to the Dunciad, and substitute Cibber for Theobald as the hero of the poem. Pope bequeathed him the copyright and the editorship of his works, and contributed even more to his advancement by introducing him to Murray, afterwards Lord Mansfield, who obtained for him the preachership of Lincoln's Inn, and to Ralph Allen, who, says Johnson, "gave him his niece and his estate, and, by consequence, a bishopric." The marriage took place in 1745, and from that time Warburton resided principally at his father-in-law's estate at Prior Park, in Gloucestershire, which he inherited on Allen's death in 1764. In 1747 appeared his edition of Shakespeare, into which, as he expressed it, Pope's previous edition was melted down. He had previously entrusted notes and emendations on Shakespeare to Sir Thomas Hanmer, whose unauthorized use of them led to a warm controversy. Warburton was further kept busy by the attacks on his Divine Legation from all quarters, by a dispute with Bolingbroke respecting Pope's behaviour in the affair of Bolingbroke's Patriot King, and (1750) bya work of more importance in vindication of the alleged miraculous inter- ruption of the rebuilding of the temple of Jerusalem undertaken by Julian. Here again Warburton shows his habitual intrepidity as a controversialist, and places himself upon ground where few at the present day would care to follow him. His defence of revelation was con- tinued in his View of Bolingbroke's Posthumous Writings (1754), universally allowed to be a most masterly per- formance. Warburton's manner of dealing with opponents would be in our day considered both insolent and rancorous, but it did him no disservice in his

own. In 1757 he was made dean of Bristol, and in 1760 bishop of Gloucester.

Mr Abbey characterizes Warburton as an inactive bishop, and the partial Hurd can say no more than that "he per- formed the duties of his office with regularity, but further than this he could not prevail with himself to go." Nor did he ever seek to shine in parliament. He continued, however, active with his pen, so long as the infirmities of age allowed, collecting and publishing his sermons, reprint- ing his principal works with large additions, toiling to complete the Divine Legation, the last book of which appeared after his death, and writing (1762) a vigorous attack on Methodism under the title of The Doctrine of Grace. Of this work his friend and biographer Hurd says, with curious infelicity, "the sect will find a sort of

immortality in this discourse." The reverse has proved true, yet the book ranks among the author's most powerful productions. He also engaged in a keen controversy with Bishop Lowth on the book of Job, which even his admir- ing biographer wishes forgotten. His last important act was to found, in 1768, the Warburtonian lecture, "to prove the truth of revealed religion from the completion of the _ prophecies in the Old and New Testament which relate to the Christian church, especially to the apostacy of Papal Rome." 'On the right determination of the prophecies relating to Antichrist," he said, "one might rest the whole truth of the Christian religion,"—another opinion which finds little support in the 19th century. The principal authority for his latter years is his correspondence with his friend Bishop Hurd, an important contribution to the literary history of the period. After the death of his only son in 1776 he fell into a lethargic languor, which was terminated by death on June 7, 1779.

Warburton was undoubtedly a great man, but his intellect, marred by wilfulness and the passion for paradox, has effected no result in any degrce adequate to its power. He disdained to per- suade unless he could at the same time astonish, and in endeavour- ing to amaze he has failed to convince. None of the propositions with which his name is chiefly connected have found acceptance with posterity, and while abundantly

demonstrating lis own learn- ing he has failed to make any considerable addition to the stock of human knowledge, or to leave any signal mark on the history of opinion. He was rather a gladiator than a warrior, an exhibitor of brilliant fence leading to no definite end. Though always faith- ful to his convictions, he argued for victory rather than truth, and wasted upon advocacy powers which would have produced great results if they had been employed in serious and dispassionate investigation. His rude and arrogant style of controversy deserved and received severe reprehension ; it was at all events free from pettiness and malignity ; and his faults were in general those of an aspiring and magnanimous nature. He was a warm and constant friend, and gave many proofs of gratitude to his bencfactors. As an editor and -critic he displayed much force of mind, but his standard of research was not high, and his literary taste was that of the 18th century. (R. G.)

WARD. See Inrant.

WARD, Epwarp Marruew (1816-1879), history and genre painter, was born at Pimlico, London, in 1816. Among his early boyish efforts in art was a series of clever illustrations to the Rejected Addresses of his uncles Horace and James Smith, which was followed soon afterwards by designs to some of the papers of Washington Irving. In 1830 he gained the silver palette of the Society of Arts ; and in 1835, aided by Wilkie and Chantrey, he entered the schools of the Royal Academy, having in the previous year contributed to its exhibition his portrait of Mr O. Smith, the comedian, in his character of Don Quixote. In 1836 he went to Rome, where in 1838 he gained a silver medal from the Academy of St Luke for his Cimabue and Giotto, which in the following year was exhibited at the Royal Academy. The young artist now turned his thoughts to fresco-painting, which he studied under Cornelius at Munich. in 1843 he forwarded his Boadicea Animating the Britons previous to the Last Battle against the Romans to the competition for the decoration of the Houses of Parliament,—-a work upon which he was after- wards engaged, having in 1853 been directed by the fine art commissioners to execute eight subjects in the corridor of the House of Commons. The success of his Dr Johnson in Lord Chesterfield's Ante-Room—now in the National Gallery, along with the Disgrace of Lord Clarendon (the smaller picture) (1846), the South Sea

Bubble (1847), and James II. receiving the News of the Landing of the Prince of Orange (1850)—secured his election as an associate of the Royal Academy in 1847, and in 1855 he gained full academic honours. Among the more important of his other works may be named Charlotte Corday Led to Execution (1852), the Last Sleep of Argyll (1854), the Emperor of the French Receiving the Order

of the Garter (1859), painted for the queen, the Ante- chamber at Whitehall during the Dying Moments of Charles II. (1861), Dr Johnson's First Interview with John Wilkes (1865), and the Royal Family of France in the Temple, painted in 1851, and usually considered the artist's masterpiece. For several years before his death Ward suffered from ill-health and mental depression, which led to temporary aberration of intellect. He died at Windsor, on January 15, 1879.

Ward's pictures have been extremely popular, and the engrav- ings which reproduce so many of them have had a wide circulation. His works are gencrally interesting in subject; they tell their story with point and clearness, are correct and learned in costume, and full of observation.and character. In purely technical qualities, in lighting, tone, colour, and draughtsmanslup, they are more fre- quently open to exception.

WARD, James (1769-1859), animal painter and engraver, was born in Thames Street, London, on October 23, 1769. At the age of twelve he was bound apprentice with J. Raphael Smith, but he received little attention and learnt nothing from this engraver. He was after- wards instructed for over seven years by his elder brother, William Ward, and he engraved many admirable plates, among which his Mrs Billington, after Reynolds, occupies a very high place. He presented a complete set of his engravings, in their various states, numbering three hundred impressions, to the British Museum. While still a youth he made the acquaintance of George Morland, who afterwards married his sister; and the example of this artist's works induced him to attempt painting. His early productions were rustic subjects in the manner of Morland, which were frequently sold as the work of the more celebrated painter. His Bull-Bait, an animated composi- tion, introducing many figures, attracted much attention in the

Royal Academy of 1797. A commission from Sir John Sinclair, president of the new agricultural society, to paint an Alderney cow led to much similar work, and turned Ward's attention to animal-painting, a department in which he achieved his highest artistic successes, his renderings of cattle being unrivalled in the English school, and worthy to rank with the pictures of the great animal- painters of Holland: His Landscape with Cattle, acquired for the National Gallery at a cost of £1500, was painted in 1820-22 at the suggestion of West, in emulation of the Bull of Paul Potter at The Hague. His Boa Serpent Seizing a Horse was executed in 1822, and his admirable Grey Horse, shown in the Old Masters' Exhibition of 1879, dates from 1828. Ward also produced portraits, and many landscapes like the Gordale Scar and the Harlech Castle in the National Gallery. Sometimes he turned aside into the less fruitful paths of allegory, as in his unsuccessful Pool of Bethesda (1818), and Triumph of the Duke of Wellington (1818). He was a frequent contributor to the Royal Academy and the British Institution, and in 1841 he collected one hundred and forty examples of his art, and exhibited them in lis house in Newman Street. He was elected an Associate of the Royal Academy in 1807, and a full member in 1811, and died at Cheshunt on the 23rd of November, 1859.

Ward compiled an autobiography, of which an abstract was published in the Art Journal in 1849.

WARD, Wituiam (1766-1826), mezzotint-engraver, an elder brother of James Ward (see above), was born in London in 1766. He was the most distinguished pupil of J. Raphael Smith, and executed a great part of many of the plates which bear the name of that excellent engraver. In 1795 he began to exhibit in the Royal Academy, of which in 1814 he was elected an associate engraver. He also held the appointment of mezzotint-engraver to the prince regent and the duke of York. He executed six plates after Reynolds, engraved many of the

works of his brother-in-law, George Morland, and his mezzotints after Andrew Geddes, which include the full- lengths of Sir David Wilkie and of Patrick Brydone, are of great merit. His engravings are full of artistic spirit, and show fine feeling for colour; and they are excellently tender and expressive in their rendering of flesh. He died suddenly at Mornington Place, on December 1, 1826.

WARDHA, or Wurpa, a British district in the chief commissionership of the Central Provinces of India, with an area of 2401 square miles. It lies between 20° 18' and 21° 21' N. lat. and 78° 4' 30" and 79°15' E. long, and forms a triangle with its apex towards the north-west, the base resting on Chanda district ; on the east it is bounded by Nagpur, and on the west the Wardha river separates it from Berar. Wardha is hilly in the north, and intersected by spurs from the Satpura range. The central portion includes the three peaks of Malegdon (1726 feet), Nandgton (1874 feet), and Jaitgarh (2086 feet). From this cluster of hills numerous small streams lead to the Wardha river on the one side, while on the other the Dham, Bor, and Asodé ndld flow down the length of the district in a south-easterly direction. The Wardha, and its affluent the Wana, are the only rivers of any import- ance. To the south the country spreads out in an undulating plain, intersected by watercourses, and broken here and there by isolated hills rising abruptly from the surface. In general the lowlands are well wooded. Leopards, hyzenas, wolves, jackals, and wild hogs abound in the district ; other animals found are the spotted deer, nilgar, wild goat, and antelopes. Among birds are the bustard, partridge, quail, and rock pigeon. There are numerous roads and 65 miles of railway. The district is subject to great variations of climate, and the rainfall at Wardha town averages nearly 40 inches.

The census of 1881 disclosed a population of 387,221 (males 195,564, females 191,657), Hindus numbering 328,523, Moham- medans 14,200, Christians 96, and aboriginals 41,988. The dis- trict contains five towns with a population exceeding 5000. Wardha (5816), the chief town, has wide and regular streets, having been built in 1866. Of the total area 1500 square miles are cultivated; while of the portion lying waste 380 square miles are returned 'as cultivable. The chief crops are cottou, wheat, other food-grains, and oil-seeds. The only manufacture of any

importance is cotton cloth, the greater part of which is exported ,

to Berar and to the districts farther west. Cotton thread, blankets, gunny, and rope are also made, and since the completion of the railway a considerable trade has also sprung up in butter, which finds a ready sale in the Bombay market. But by far the most unportant article exported is

the raw cotton known as ‘ Hingan- ghats,” from the cotton mart of thatname. The principal imports are salt, English piece goods, hardware, and spices. In 1886-87 the gross revenue of the district amounted to £99,955, of which the land yielded £51,494. The history of Wardha forms part of that of Nagpur district, from which it was separated in 1862 for administrative purposes.

WARE, an ancient market-town of Herts, England, is situated in a valley en the north side of the river Lea, and ona branch of the Great Eastern Railway, 2 miles east-north-east of Hertford, and 224 north of London by rail, The principal street is the spacious High Street, running east and west by the river. The houses are chiefly modern, but there are a few of the old timber frame-houses. The Lea, by means of which there is good water communication, is crossed by an iron bridge erected in 1845. The New River Head is half a mile distant, The parish church of St Mary is a large and handsome cruciform building of flint and stone in the Perpendicular style, consisting of chancel (built, it is supposed, by Lady Margaret Beaufort, countess of Richmond, and mother of Henry VIL), lady chapel to the south (about 1380), nave of five bays of the time of Richard II., transepts, aisles, south porch, and embattled tower of the time of Edward III. There is an elaborate font of the time of Henry Is, and a few old brasses and monuments. The church has

undergone restoration in 1848, 1881, and 1885-86. The modern mansion of the Priory, to the west of the town, occupies the site of a priory of the order of St Francis, founded by Margaret, countess of Leicester, sister of Henry III., who was then lady of the manor of Ware. A con- siderable portion of the original building is incorporated in the modern one. Among the modern public buildings are the corn exchange and the town-hall, which includes a literary institute and library. There is a recreation ground 6 acres in extent, and a cemetery of 4 acres. The famous “great bed of Ware” referred to in Shakespeare’s Twelfth Night, which formerly was at the Saracen’s Head; has been removed to Rye House, 2 miles distant. The town possesses breweries and brick-fields, and there is a

large trade in malt. The population of the urban sanitary district (area about 641 acres) in 1871 was 4917, and in 1881 it was 5277.

Roman remains have been discovered at various times in the neighbourhood of Warc, and the Ermine Street crossed the Lea valley just a little above it. At the time of the Domesday survey the town had 180 inhabitants, and belonged to Hugh de Grentemaisnil. In the reign of John it came into the possession of Saier de Quincy, carl of Winchester, who, by forcing the thoroughfare of the bridge by breaking the chain, and thus freeing the bridge of toll, greatly increased the tradeofthe town. The tolls were, however, again imposed. Thcy were granted by Charles I. to William, earl of Salisbury, and they are still collected from non-resident traders, Robert de Quincy in 1254 received for the town the grant of a market and fair from Henry III. In the 15th century it came into the possession of the earl of Warwick, the king-maker, On the death of Richard, duke of Gloucester, it was settled by Henry VII. on his mother, the countess of Richmond. It was then granted to Margaret Plantagenet, countess of Salisbury, on whose execution in 1541 it reverted to the crown. Queen Mary on her accession restored it to Catherine, countess of Huntingdon, granddaughter of the countess of Salisbury, who about 1570 sold it to Thomas Fanshawe, remembrancer in the exchequer. About 1700 the manor was sold to Sir Thomas Byde, a London brewer, in whose family it remained till 1846. Ware is the "town of fame" alluded to by Cowper in his "John Gilpin." William Godwin was for some time minister of the Independent chapel there. William of Ware was the teacher of Duns Scotus. a

WARMINSTER, an ancient market-town of Wiltshire, England, is situated on elevated ground, at the western extremity of Salisbury Plain, near the Somerset border, on the river Wily, and on a branch of the Great Western Railway, 17 miles south-west of Devizes, 21 north-west of Salisbury, and 105 south-south-west of London by rail. It consists chiefly of one street about a mile in length. The parish church of St Denys is an ancient stone struc- ture of various styles, the south porch and tower being of the time of Edward III, the chancel Perpendicular, and the nave of the 18th century. It is now (1888) under- going complete restoration at a cost of £9000, the nave being in process of entire reconstruction. The

town-hall was erected by the marquis of Bath in 1830. Among the benevolent institutions are the free school, established in 1707 by the first Viscount Weymouth, the missionary college of St Boniface (1860), the community of St Denys home (1866) for training young women to assist in mis- sionary work, the Wilts reformatory for boys (1856), the cottage hospital (1866), the almshouses for four aged women (1873), and an orphanage. The town possesses a large silk mill, engineering and agricultural implement works, and malt-works. There isa considerable agricultural trade. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 6370 acres) in 1871 was 5786, and in 1881 it was 5640.

Warminster is probably of ancient British origin, and the neighbourhood is remarkable for the number of its barrows. 'The old Roman road from Old Sarum to Bath skirted Warminster to the north. Camden supposes it to have been the Roman Verlucio, and, although this conjecture is probably wrong, there can be no doubt that it was a Roman station of importance. The barrows within the entrenchments at Battlesbury camp, a little to the east, indicate an earlier than Roman occupation, but the entrenchments were probably themselves the work of the Romans. A great variety

of Roman remains have been found in the neighbourhood of the town. Warminster was a royal manor in the time of Edward the Confessor, and as such was free of taxes and assessments. In Domesday the name occurs as Guerminster. It then possessed 30 burgesses and probably a total population of over 400. It was bound to provide a night's lodging for the king and all his retinue. Its early importance was chiefly owing to its situation at the junction of the roads from Bath, Frome, Salisbury, and Shaftesbury. It remained a royal manor till the reign of Henry II.
WARRANT, in law, is an authority empowering a person to act in a way which would not be lawful without such authority. The term occurs very early in consti- tutional documents : it is found in the Assize of Clarendon and the Assize of the Forest, both in the reign of Henry JI. A warrant must be under the hand and seal of the person issuing it, unless such formalities be dispensed with by statute. Warrants are of several kinds,

and may be conveniently divided into four classes, which may be called the executive, the judicial, the financial, and the private. Executive.—A. warrant under the sign-manual of the king, countersigned by the lord chancellor or a secretary of state, is still in use for some purposes. It is the means of granting ParDon (q.v.) and letters patent (except those for inventions), and of framing certain regulations for the forces. It was by royal warrant (afterwards confirmed by Act of Parliament) that purchase of commissions in the army was abolished in 1871.1 By 18 Hen. VI. c. 1 letters patent are to bear the date of the king's warrant delivered to the lord chancellor. The issue of warrants under the sign-manual has been recently regulated by the Great Seal Act, 1884. Such a warrant must bear a ten- shilling stamp. Royal warrants were at one time in con- siderably more frequent use than they are at present. For instance, in 1602 the censorship of the stage was committed to the poet Daniel by royal warrant (see THEATRE). A false representation that any goods were made by a person holding a royal warrant is now punishable under the Merchandise Marks Act, 1887. The issue of warrants under the hand of a secretary of state is now, with two exceptions, confined to cases in which there is suspicion of treason or treasonable practices, and the warrant must name the person whom it is intended to arrest. The ex- ceptions are the cases of bringing up a prisoner to give evidence under 16 and 17 Vict. c. 30, and warrants issued under the Extradition Act (see Extrapition). By 16 Car. I. c. 10, if any person be imprisoned by warrant of the king in person, of the council board, or any of the privy council, he is entitled to a writ of habeas corpus. By the Habeas Corpus Act, 31 Car. II. c. 2, detention on a legal warrant is good ground for refusing discharge to the prisoner on return to a writ of habeas corpus. General warrants of a secretary of state were decided to be illegal in 1763. A named person may still be committed by a secretary of state's warrant, but his papers cannot be seized (see Press Laws). Power to issue warrants to search for arms and to arrest for treason or treasonable practices in Ireland has been given by various Acts, eg., 44 Vict. cc. 4, 5, and by the Criminal Law and Procedure Act, 1887. The right of a secretary of state or the lord lieutenant in Jreland by warrant to detain or open letters in the post- office still exists, and has been recognized by orders in council and proclamations in the 17th century, and more recently by various Post-Office Acts, such as 9 Anne c. 10, eo Geo. ITI. en62, 7 Will. IV. and 1 Viet. e386. The right was finally

established by the reports of committees of both houses appointed in 1844 on a complaint by Mazzini and others that Sir James Graham, then home secretary, had opened their letters. It was exercised as

1 The warrant officer (so called no doubt from the mode of his appointment) is a distinct rank in both the army and navy. For the warrant officer in the navy, see vol. xvii. p. 298.

recently as 1881 over the letters of persons suspected of treasonable correspondence in Ireland. Committal for breach of privilege of the House of Commons is by war- rant of the speaker. A warrant of a law officer of the crown for sealing letters patent for invention was necessary under the old patent law, but has been superseded by other procedure since the Patents Act, 1883. The lowest form of executive warrant is the warrant of a sheriff to his bailiff in pursuance of a writ.

Judicial.— Warrants of this kind are used in either civil or criminal procedure. The only kind used in both seems to be that issued by a judge of the High Court, who has the same jurisdiction as a secretary of state under 16 and 17 Vict. c. 30. In civil procedure the warrant in a county court corresponds very nearly to the Writ (¢.v.) in the High Court. Examples of county court warrants are those of attachment, delivery, execution, and possession. The warrant of arrest in Admiralty is a form of procedure con- fined to Courts of Admiralty jurisdiction. The most im- portant and frequent use of the warrant is for the appre- hension of an accused person to be brought before a court of summary jurisdiction, either in the first instance or on failure to obey a summons (see SUMMARY JURISDICTION, Summons). Such warrants are usually issued by a justice of the peace ; when issued by the court they are called bench warrants. Where issued by a justice for execu- tion out of his jurisdiction, a warrant must usually be backed by another justice having jurisdiction where it is to be executed. The warrant of a justice may also issue in some non-judicial matters, e.g., for the compul sory supply of carriages under the Army Act, 1881. There are certain warrants which by common law or statute extend much further than ordinary judicial warrants. Those issued under the Fugitive Offenders Act, 1881, if duly

backed, extend throughout the British empire. Warrants of a court having jurisdiction in bankruptcy run throughout the United Kingdom. A judge of the Queen's Bench Division has, both at common law and by statute, authority to issue a warrant in certain cases. Such a warrant is valid throughout England. Execution of the decisions of a court of summary jurisdiction is secured by warrants, part of the process of the court, such as warrants of distress or commitment. A warrant may also issue for the apprehension of a witness whose attendance cannot be otherwise assured. A search warrant may be granted for the purpose of searching suspected premises for stolen goods. Special powers for issuing such warrants are given by the Army, Merchant Shipping, Customs, Pawnbrokers, Stamp, and other Acts. The Criminal Law Amendment Act, 1885, allows the issue of search warrants where it is suspected that a female is unlawfully detained for immoral purposes. As a general rule no one can be arrested with- out warrant. To this rule there are certain exceptions either at common law or by statute. At common law a justice of the peace, a sheriff, a coroner, a constable, and even a private person, may arrest any one without warrant for a treason, felony, or breach of the peace committed, or attempted to be committed, in his presence. A constable (whether a constable at common law or a police constable appointed under the Police Acts) may arrest a person indicted for felony ; a constable or a private person may arrest on reasonable suspicion that he who is arrested has committed a felony. But in the latter case he does so at his peril, for he must prove (what the constable need not) that there has been an actual commission of the crime by some one, as well as a reasonable ground for suspecting the particular person. What is a reasonable ground it is of course impossible to define, but, in the case of a constable, a charge by a person not manifestly unworthy of credit is generally regarded as sufficient. An accused person who

has been bailed may be arrested by his bail, and the police may assist in the arrest. In neither case is a warrant necessary. Nor is it necessary for the apprehension of one against whom the hue and cry is raised (see THEFT). The king cannot arrest in person or by verbal command, as no action would lie against him for wrongful arrest. Statutory powers of

arrest without warrant are given to both constables and private persons by numerous Acts of Parliament, for instance, the Game Act of 9 Geo. IV. c. 69, various Police Acts, the Criminal Law Consolidation Acts of 1861, the Prevention of Crime Act, 1871. The possession of a legal warrant by a peace officer on arrest is of great importance in determining whether the person resisting apprehension is justified or not in so doing. Should the officer attempt to apprehend him on an illegal warrant, or without a warrant in a case where a warrant is necessary, and be killed in the attempt, the killing would probably be held to be manslaughter and not murder. The authorities on this point are, however, conflicting. In an action against a peace officer for arrest on an illegal

warrant, he is, by 24 Geo. II. c. 44, entitled to demand:

perusal and a copy of the warrant. Execution of warrants in border counties of England and Scotland, and backing and execution of warrants issued in one part of the kingdom by justices and officers of another part, are specially pro- vided for by numerous Acts of Parliament. Forms of warrants will be found in the schedule to the rules under the Summary Jurisdiction Act and the appendix to the County Court Rules, 1886.

Financial.—Payment out of the Treasury is generally made upon warrant. Treasury warrants are regulated by many of the Acts dealing with the national debt. Payment of dividends by trading corporations and companies is generally made by means of dividend warrants.

Private. —Warrants issued by private persons are either mercantile or non-mercantile. Mercantile warrants are negotiable instruments giving a right to the delivery of goods, generally those deposited at a dock or warehouse, and by mercantile custom regarded as documents of title to the goods to which they relate. They have been recog- nized by the legislature, especially in the Factors Acts (see Factor). Thus the interpretation clause of one of those Acts, 5 and 6 Vict. c. 39, included under the head of documents of title India warrants, dock warrants, and warehouse keepers' warrants. The forgery of any warrant or endorsement or assignment of any warrant of this kind is by 24 and 25 Vict. c. 98 punishable with a maximum penalty of penal servitude for life. The stamp

on such a warrant is, with certain exceptions, threepence. Among private warrants of a non-mercantile kind those in the most frequent use are warrants of distress, by which a land- lord empowers his agent to distrain for arrears of rent,

Warrant of Attorney to confess judgment is a security for money (now practically obsolete) in the form of a war- rant to a solicitor named by the creditor, empowering him to sign judgment in an action against the debtor for the sum due, with a defeasance, or clause that the warrant shall not be put into force in case of due payment of the money secured. It was often used as a collateral security for the payment of an annuity. The Debtors Act, 1869, contained various provisions for making known to the debtor the extent of the liability incurred by him, among others that the warrant must be executed in the presence of a solicitor named by the debtor, and that it and the defeasance must be written on the same paper. A warrant of attorney must be duly stamped, generally as a Morv- GAGE (q.v.), and must be registered as a judgment in the central office of the Supreme Court.

Quo WarranTo (¢.v.) is a means of determining the right of a person to continue to hold an office,

WAR—WAR

Scotland.—By Art. xxiv. of the Articles of Union royal warrauts were to continue to be kept as before the union. The Secretary for Seotland Act, 1885, enabled the crown by royal warrant to appoint the secretary to be viee-president of the Scotch Education Department. The lord advocate's warrant runs throughout the whole of Seotland. Warrants issued by courts of summary juris- diction agrcc in the main with those in use in England, though their names are not the same (see SUMMARY JURISDICTION). There are numerous statutory provisions as to warrants of other kinds, By I and 2 Vict. ce, 114 warrants for diligence, and to charge the debtor under pain of imprisonment, may be inserted in an extract of deeree ; and in a summons concluding for payment of money a warrant to arrest the movables, debts, and money of the defender may be included. By 31 and 82 Vict. c. 100 a warrant of in- hibition may be inserted in the will of asummons. A crown writ is a warrant for

infeftment (31 and 32 Vict. c. 101). The same Act gives forms of warrants of REGISTRATION (g.v.). The practice as to warrants of citation and commitment in the High Court of Justiciary and the sheriff court now depends chiefly on the Crimiual Procedure Act, 1887, 50 and 51 Vict. c. 85. The medi- tatio fuge warrant is a judicial warrant on which imprisonment may follow until the debtor give eautio judicio sisti. It corresponds to some extent to the writ ne exeat regno of English practice, but it may be issued by a sheriff (1 and 2 Vict. c. 119). A border war- vant for arresting a debtor on the English side of the border is another kind of judicial warrant. The warrant of attorney is not known in Scotland, its place being taken by the clause of registra- tion, which has this advantage over the warrant of attorney that: it is not avoided, as is the warrant, by the death of the persou giving it.

United States.—By the constitutions of the United States and of almost all the States, warrants are uot to issue but upon prob- able cause, supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched and the persons or thing to be seized. These provisions have been held not to mean that there shall be no arrest without warrant, but to confine the right of arrest to circumstances similar to those which justify it in English law. The constitutions of some States forbid general warrants. A warrant is generally necessary for the payment of moncy out of the United States or a State treasury. (J. Wt.)

WARRANTY is etymologically another form of GUARANTEE (q.v.). It is used, however, in a rather different sense. The sense common to both words is that of a collateral contract, under which responsibility for an act is incurred, and for the breach of which an action for damages lies. Warranty generally expresses the responsi- bility of the person doing the act, guarantee the responsi- bility of some other person on his behalf. A warranty may be defined, in the words of Lord Abinger, as "an express or implied statement of something which the party undertakes shall be part of the contract, and, though part of the contract, collateral to the express object of it" (Chanter v. Hopkins, 4 Meeson and Welsby's Reports, 404). It differs from a condition in that a condition forms the basis of the contract and a breach of it discharges from the contract, and from a representation in that the latter does not affect the contract unless made a

part of it expressly or by implication, as in contracts of insurance and other contracts wherreme fide, or unless it be fraudulent. These

_ distinctions are not always accurately maintained. Thus

in 8 and 9 Vict. c. 106, § 4, condition seems to be used for warranty.

Warranty as it affected the law of real estate was, up to halfa century ago, a matter of the highest importance. A warranty ina conveyance was a covenant real annexed to an estate of freehold, and either expressed in a clause of warranty or implied in cases where a feudal relation might exist between feoffor and feoffee. The warranty, as deseribed by Littleton, § 697, was an outgrowth of feudalism, and something very like it is to be found in the Liber Feudorum. At the time of Glanvill the heir was bound to warrant the reasonable donations of his ancestor. Warranty was one of the elements in Bracton's definition of homage, 78), " juris vin- culum quo quis astringitur ad warrantizandum defendendum et acquietandum tenentem suuni in seisina versus omnes." For an express warranty the word warrantizo or warrant was necessary. The word " give" implied a warranty, as did an cxchange and certain kinds of partition. In order to bind heirs a clause of warranty was required. This. was either lineal, collateral, or commencing by disseisin. The differences between the three kinds were very technical, and depended on abstruse and obsolete

learning. They are treated at great length in old works on real property, especially Coke upon Littleton by Butler, 3646. The feoffor or his heirs were bound by voucher to warranty or judg- ment in a writ of warrantia chartz to yield other lands to the feoffee in case of the eviction of the latter. Vouching to warranty was a part of the old fictitious proceedings in a common recovery in use for the purpose of barring an entail before the Fines and Recoveries Act (see ENTAIL). Warranty of this nature, as far as it relates to the conveyance of real estate, though not actually abolished in all possible cases, is now superseded by covenants for title. The more usual of these are now by the Conveyancing Act, 1881, deemed to be implied in conveyances (see REAL ESTATE). For the implied warranties of title and quality sce SALE. Vouch- ing to warranty was at one time

important in the law of personalty as well as of realty. The procedure is fully described in Glanvill. The right of calling on the holder of lost or stolen goods to vouch to warranty (interciare), t.c., to give up the name of the person from whom he received them, under pain of forfeiture, was often granted under the name of thcam as a local franchise (see THEFT). Warranty, as it exists at present in the law of personalty, is either express or implied. There is no general] rule as to what constitutes a warranty. It is not necessary that an express warranty should be in writing, the law being that every affirmation at the time of sale of personal chattels is a warranty, provided that it appears to have been so intended, The principal cases of implied warranty occur in the contracts of sale and INSURANCE (q.v.). There is also an implied warranty in other kinds of contract, e.g., of seaworthi- ness by the shipowner in a contract between him and a charterer for the hire of a ship. In all cases of implicd warranty the warranty may be excluded by the special terms of the contract. For breach of warranty an action may be brought directly, or the breach may be used as ground for a counter claini or for reduction of damages, but the breach will not in the case of a warranty proper entitle the person suffering by it to a rescission of the contract. Thusina sale the property passes although the warranty be broken. In some cases warranties on sale are the subject of statutory enact- ments. By the Merchandise Marks Act, 1887, a vendor is deemed to warrant that the trade mark or trade description on any goods sold is genuinc. The Chain Cables and Anchors Act, 1874, enacts that every contract for the sale of a chain cable shall (in the absence of any stipulation to the contrary) imply a warranty that the cable has been duly tested and stamped. In some other Acts, such as the Bills of Exchange Act, 1882, the term warranty does not occur, but the practical effect is the same.

Scotland.—The term corresponding to warranty in the law of heritable property is " warrandice." Warranty, strictly speaking, seems confined to movables. Warrandice appears early in Scots law, the heir by Regiam Majestatem being bound to warrant the reasonable donations of lis ancestor. Warrandice in the existing law is either real or personal. Real warrandice is that whereby warrandice lands are made over, as indemnity for those conveyed, to assure the person to whom they were conveyed from loss by the appearance of a superior title. Real warrandice is implied

in ex- cambion. Its effect is that the excamber, in case of eviction, may recover possession of his original lands. This is not in accordance with the English law in exchange. Personal warrandice is either express or implied. There is an implied warrandice in every onerous deed, and an absolute warrandice presumes an onerous consideration. Express warrandice is either simple, against the future acts of the vendor, from fact and deed, against acts whether past or future, or absolute, or against all deadly, that is, on any ground existing before the sale. A clause of warrandicc is the Scottish equivalent of the English covenants for title. By 32 and 33 Vict. c. 116 a clause of warrandice in the form given in the schedule to the Act imports absolute warrandice as regards the lands and the title-deeds thereof, and warrandice from fact and deed as regards the rents. For the warranty in the sale of mov- ables see SALE.

United States.—Warranty in conveyances of real estate is ex- pressly abolished by statute in many States. In some States warranty is implied on the transfer and indorsement of negotiable instruments. (J. Wt.)

WARREN, Samuzt (1807-1877), author of Ten Thousand a Year, was born in Denbighshire in 1807. After a curriculum at the university of Edinburgh, of such distinction that he made the acquaintance of " Christopher North" through his undergraduate fame, he began the study of medicine, but soon abandoned it for the English bar. He entered at the Inner Temple in 1828, and was success- ful in his profession. He took silk in 1851, was made recorder of Hull in 1854, represented Medhurst in parliament for three years (1856-59), and was rewarded by his party leaders in 1859 with a mastership in lunacy. Meantime he had made a much more brilliant success in

fiction-writing. Very early in his career, before he was called to the bar, he had begun to write for Blackwood. His Passages from the Diary of a Late Physician appeared in that magazine between August 1830 and October 1831, being collected into two volumes in 1832. A third volume was published in 1838, the contents of which appeared originally in the same magazine between September 1832 and August 1837. These short stories, most of them of a horrible character, with morbid interest shielded under

a moral purpose, were extremely popular, and so realistic that as long as the writer remained anonymous it was customary for doctors to declare that some brother must be making capital of the secrets of his profession. Warren's brief experience as a medical student thus stood him in good stead. But his great success was Z'en Thousand a Year, which ran in Blackwood from October 1839 to August 1841, and was published separately immediately on its conclusion. Critics com- plained of the coarseness of the workmanship, of the banality of the moralizing, the crudeness of the pathos, the farcical extravagance of the humour; but meantime the work established itself as one of the most popular novels of the century. Of the higher qualities of imagination and passion Warren was destitute, but his sketches of character, especially farcical character, —Tittlebat Titmouse, Oily Gammon, Mr Quicksilver (an open caricature of Lord Brougham),—are bold and strong, forcibly imprinted on the memory, and the interest of the story is made to run with a powerful current. For several years Warren was content to be known as the author of Zen Thousand a Year, and many tales were told of his open pride in the achievement. In 1847 he made another venture, but Now and Then was not a success. The Lily and the Bee, a squib on the Crystal Palace, published in 1851, though it had the honour of translation into Italian, was a signal failure. A pessimistic dissertation on Zhe Intellectual and Moral Development of the Age, published in 1853, also fell flat, and thenceforth Warren, after publishing his Works, Critical and Imaginative, in four volumes in 1854, retired on his laurels. He died at London, July 29, 1877.

Besides his novels and other contributions to Blackwood, Warren wrote several legal works of repute—Jntroduction to Law Studies (1835), Extracts from Blackstone (1837), Manual of Parliamentary Law (1852).

His whole attitude towards the subject of insanity in its legal relations was determined by his clear perception and tenacious grasp of the fact that the disease insanity is merely one of the indicia of legal "unsoundness of mind;" he thus reduced medical expertism to its proper proportions, by treating the alienist as a witness and not a judge. The masterly brevity with which he addressed the jury in the Windham inquiry branded as practically irrelevant the mass of the evidence produced at the trial, and

pre- pared the public mind for the third section of the Lunacy Regulation Act of 1862.1 To the doctrine of moral insanity he offered an uncompromising but ineffective and, it must be confessed, an ignorant opposition. It is doubtful whether he understood the meaning, and it is certain that he had never studicd the evidenccs, of the theory which he so severely condemns. A writer who imagined that the cases of Oxford and MacNaughten bore any resemblance to the " observations" of Pinel was hardly qualified to criticize even the less worthy of his disciples. Yet this hostility was not altogether irrational. Exaggerating, indecd mistranslating, the language of Pinel, in whose work moral insanity appears as "manie sans délire," the English alienists had pressed into thcir service cases which were far less closely allied to insanity than to crime, and had claimed, in the name of science, to return the verdict whenever mental incompetence existed or was presumcd. Against these extravagant pretensions the school of Alderson and Rolfe arose in healthy revolt. Ignorant of, or possibly not caring to sift, the residuum of fact which undoubtedly they would have Se eRe ig

1]It is substantially as follows:—Under every commission, the inquiry shall be confined to the question whether or not the alleged lunatie is, at the time of sueh inquiry, of unsound mind, and no evidence as to his acts, demeanour, or state of mind at any time being more than two years before the date of the inquiry shall be receivable in proof of insanity, unless the judge or master shall otherwise direct.

374:

found in the standard literature of "manie sans délire," they believed moral insanity to be nothing more than the immoral and illogical plea with which English alienists had made them familiar, and they sternly refused to recognize it. To the exertions of this school, of which Samuel Warren was a distinguished member, we owe the wise jealousy with which the defence of moral insanity is now regardcd by alienists themselves. See Warren's Miscellanies, vol. ii., " High Treason and Murder—Moral Insanity" (1854); also Lhe Windham Trial, published by Wm. Olliver.

WARRINGTON, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of England, chiefly in Lancashire but partly in Cheshire, is situated

on the Mersey, near the Sankey Canal, and on the London and North-Western main line and several branch lines of other railways, 18 miles west-south-west of Manchester, 20 east of Liver- pool, and 182 from London, The bridge across the Mersey, formerly forming the chief passage over the river from Lancashire to Cheshire, was partly destroyed on the approach of the rebels in 1745, was restored with a watch tower in the middle by parliament in 1747, was replaced by a wooden structure in 1812, and was rebuilt of stone in 1836 at a cost of £6000. The parish church of St Elphin, a cruciform building in the Decorated style, occupies the site of the ancient church, which was taken down about the beginning of the 15th century, the crypt being all of the old structure that now remains. The church now consists of chancel with chapels, nave, aisles, crypt, and embattled central tower and spire rising to the height of 300 feet. It was restored in 1859-67 at a cost of over £15,000. Among the principal modern public buildings are the town-hall, formerly the seat of Colonel Wilson- Patten, now Lord Winmarleigh, purchased in 1872 at a cost of £20,000; the museum and library, erected in 1857, enlarged by the addition of an art gallery and lecture-room in 1876, and again extended in 1881; the market hall (1857); the large covered market shed (1879, enlarged 1885); the public hall (1862); the public baths (1866); the school of art (1883); the infirmary and dis- pensary (1872); the infectious diseases hospital; and the Warrington clergy orphan institution (1697). The educa- tional institutions include a free grammar school, founded by one of the Boteler family in 1526, and a blue coat school.

Warrington, in the period before the introduction of railways, possessed specialadvantages through its connexion with the Mersey and Irwell navigation, and it now enjoys unusual facilities for the transit of heavy goods both by canal and railway, while its situation midway between Manchester and Liverpool, and on the main line of the London and North-Western Railway, forms one of the chief sources of its prosperity. It was referred to by Blome in 1683 as "a very fine and large town which hath a con- siderable market on Wednesday for linen cloth, corn, cattle, provisions, and fish, being much resorted to by the Welshmen." It was among the earliest of the manu- facturing towns of Lancashire,—coarse linens and checks being the manufactures which at first formed its staple goods, and afterwards sailcloth and sacking, Perhaps it is now best known

for its trade in heavy leather, the tanneries in its immediate neighbourhood consuming on an average about 10,000 hides a week. It has also a great variety of important iron manufactures, including iron in bar, hoop, and wire rod, and files and tools and pins. There are, besides, soap factorics, breweries, maltings, cotton mills, and glass-works. The town is divided into five wards, four of which are in Warrington proper, and one in Latchford. The corporation act as the urban sanitary authority. There isa commission of the peace and a police force. The gas supply is managed by the corporation, but the water supply is in the hands of a company. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 3783 acres)

in 1871 was 33,050, and in 1881 it was 45,253. The population of the municipal borough (area 1442 acres) in the same years was 32,144 and 41,452.

Warrington is stated to have been an ancient British and Roman town, but there are no traces of a Roman settlement on the north side of the Mersey. On the south side, however, near Wilderspool there are a considerable varicty of remains, which some identify with the station Condate. At Domesday, Warrington, under the name of Walintune, was at the head of a hundred now merged in West Derby. Its present name first occurs in the 12th century, when Matthew de Vilers gave the church of Warrington to the priory of Thurgarton. Shortly afterwards Warrington came into the family of Pincerna, or Boteler, the progenitors of the Butlers, earls and dukes of Ormonde. Sir William Boteler, who was high sheriff of the county, and governor of the castle of Lancaster, obtained for it, in 1255, from Henry IJI. the grant of a fair of three days' duration. In the 5th of Edward I. (1277) the charter was renewed, and another was obtained in 1285. About 1592 it was bought by the Irelands, and in 1631 it came into the possession of William Booth, father of Sir George Booth, first Lord Delamere. During the civil war it was held, in 1648, for the king by James, Lord Strange, seventh earl of Derby, who fortified it at great expense, and made it a centre for Royalist excursions, but after a siege of five days it surrendered to the Parliamentary troops. After the battle of

Preston in 1648, the remnant of the duke of Hamilton's army under General Baillie rallied at Warrington, and possessed themselves of the bridge, but surrendered on the approach of Cromwell. Henry Booth, second Lord Delamere, was created earl of Warrington on his retirement from the chancellorship of the exchequer in 1690. The town received parliamentary representa- tion in 1832, and was incorporated in 1847. Among persons of eminence connected with Warrington are Dr Aikin, editor of the Dictionary of General Biography, Lucy Aikin, Mrs Barbauld, John Kay, the clockmaker who assisted Arkwright in his mechanical experiments, and Dr Joseph Priestley.

See Warrington in 1165, in Chetham Society's Publieations, vol. xvii; Annals of the Lords of Warrington during the first Five Centuries after the Conquest, tbid., vols. Ixxxvi. and Ixxxvii.; Homage Roll of the Manor of Warrington, 14,91- 1517, in the publications of the Manchester Record Society, 1885; Kendrick, Profiles of Warrington Worthies, 1859.

WARSAW, a government of Russian Poland, occupies a narrow strip of land to the left of the lower Bug and of the Vistula from its junction with the Bug to the Prussian frontier, and is bounded by the Polish govern- ments of Ptock and Eomza on the N., Siedlce on the E, and Radom, Piotrkow, and Kalisz on the S. It has an area of 5623 square miles and in 1885 the population was 971,730, of whom 384,000 were then reckoned as living in the capital. It occupies the great plain of central Poland and Mazovia, and is low and flat, with only.a few hills in the south, and along the course of the Vistula in the north- west, where the terraces on the left bank descend by steep slopes to the river. Terrible inundations often devastate the region adjacent to the confluence of the Vistula with the Narew and Bug, and marshes cover the low-lying grounds. The soil, which consists chiefly either of boulder clay, lacustrine clays, or sandy fluviatile deposits, is not particularly fertile. The Vistula traverses the government from south-east to north-west, and is joined by the Narew and Bug from the right, and by the Bzura from the left. It is an important channel of communication (see PoLanp, vol. xix. p. 307).

The population consists of Poles and Mazurs (Roman Catholics, 76 per cent.), Jews (15 per cent.), and Germans (9 per cent.). The Great and

Little Russians number only a few thousands, and the former are gathercd chiefly in the towns.

Of the 3,256,800 acres registercd, nearly two-thirds of which are arable land, 1,197,000 acres belong to the pcasantry (70,724 house- holds), 257,000 to the crown, and the remainder to 4526 small and 1190 large proprietors; 118,000 acres are under forests. In the west the Germans are rapidly colonizing the country, and it was reckoned in 1885 that no less than 373,000 acres, 7.€., nearly one- eighth of the territory, and a still larger proportion of the arable land, belonged to 4260 foreigners, chiefly Germans. Agriculture is the prevailing occupation, and reaches great perfection on some estates. Beet is extensively grown. Cattle-breeding is also of importance,

Manufactures have developed rapidly of late, especially in Warsaw and its vicinity. In 1885 there were 1575 establishments, employing 35,400 operatives, with an output valued at 54,700,000 roubles. Sugar works occupied a prominent place. In 1886 nine-

teen sugar works and refineries employed 8925 operatives, and produced 6,450,000 ewts. of raw and 8,220,000-of refined sugar. Plated silver, carpets, woollen cloth, machinery, boots and shoes, spirits and beer are among the other items produced.

The government is divided into thirteen districts, the chief towns of which are WaArsAw (g.v.), Btonie (1870 inhabitants), Géra Kalwaria (2630), Gostynin (8870), Grojec (8500), Kutno (18,210), Lowicz (8720), Novo-Minsk (1830), Radziejewo (7680), Radzymin (4200), Skiernewice (3720), Sochaczew (5180), and Wtoclawek (20,660). Novy Dwor (4420), Neszawa (2380), Gombin (8000),

and several others have municipal institutions.

WARSAW (Warszawa), capital of Poland, and chief town of the above government, is beautifully situated on the left bank of the Vistula, 395 miles to the east of

Plan of Warsaw,

towards the river, leaving a broad beach at its base. The suburb of Praga on the right bank of the Vistula, here from 450 to 880 yards broad, is connected with Warsaw by two bridges,—the railway bridge, which passes right under the guns of the Alexandrovsk citadel to the north, and the Alexandrovsk bridge in the centre of the town.

With its population of nearly 450,000, its beautiful river, its ample communications and its commerce, its university and scientific societies, its palaces and numerous places of amusement, Warsaw is one of the most pleasant as well as one of the most animated cities of eastern Europe. In Russia it is excelled in importance by the two Russian capitals only; and doubtless it would have attained even a larger population, and a yet higher place in the world of commerce and intellect, were it not for its sad and chequered history, and the foreign domination of which the traveller is reminded at every step.

Situated in a fertile plain, on a great navigable river, below its junction with the Pilica and Weprz, which water southern Poland, and above its junction with the Narew and Bug, which water a wide region in the east, it became in mediaeval times the chief entrepdt for the trade of those fertile and populous valleys with western Europe. Its position in the territory of Mazovia, which was neither Polish nor Lithuanian, and, so to say, remained neutral between the two rival powers which constituted the united kingdom, it became the capital of both, to the de-

triment of the purely Polish Cracow and the Lithuanian Vilna. And now, connected as it is by six trunk lines with Vienna, south-western Russia, Moscow, St Peters- burg, Dantzic, and Berlin (via Bromberg), it has become one of the most important commercial cities of eastern Europe. The south-western railway connects it with Lodz, the Manchester of Poland, as also with the rich coal fields of Kielce, which supply its steadily growing manu- factures with coal and iron, so that Warsaw and its neigh- bourhood have become a centre for all kinds of manufac- tures, greatly aided in their development by the high technical training and general

superiority of the engineers of the-Polish capital, as well as by the skill, taste, and in- telligence of its artisans. The periodical wholesale depor- tations of Warsaw artisans, who never failed to take an active part in the Polish insurrections, especially in 1794, 1831, and 1863, considerably checked, but could not wholly stop the industrial progress of the town; but the lines of customhouses which surround Poland, and thus limit the Warsaw market, as also the Russian rule, which militates against the progress of Polish science, technology, and art, are so many obstacles to the development of its natural resources. The population of Warsaw has nevertheless grown rapidly of late, having risen from 161,008 in 1860, and 276,000 in 1872, to 436,570 in 1887; of these more than 25,000 are Germans, and one-third are Jews (43,000 in 1860, and 117,300 in 1879). The Russian garrison amounts to nearly 20,000 men.

The streets of Warsaw are very animated, and are adorned with many fine buildings—partly, due to the old Polish nobility's love of display (there are more than 160 palaces, 60 of which have been confiscated by the Russian Government), partly churches and cathedrals (179 Catholic, 6 Greek, and 2 Lutheran, several synagogues, 14 monasteries, and 4 nunneries), and partly public build- ings,—schools, hospitals, scientific societies,—erected at great expense by the muuicipality or by private bodies. Fine public gardens and several monuments further em- bellish the city. The present university, founded as the "Glawnaja Szkota," in 1816, but closed in 1832, was again opened in 1864; it has a remarkable library of more than 350,000 volumes, rich natural history collections, a fine botanic garden, and an observatory well known for its astronomical work. There are 75 professors and nearly 1000 students. The teaching is in Russian, and mostly by Russians, and the close intercourse which used to exist between the university and the educated classes of Poland is becoming a thing of the past. The rich university library, one of the largest in the world, was confiscated in 1794, and transferred to St Petersburg, where it became the nucleus of the present imperial public library ; and, after the insurrection of 1831, it was again ransacked for the same purpose. The medical school, which enjoys high repute in the scientific world, still retains the right of teaching in Polish, and has about 220 students. The same privilege is enjoyed by the school of arts, the academy of agriculture and forestry, and the conservatory of music, all of

which are high-class institutions. There are, besides, six classical gymnasia, two "real" schools, and numerous elementary schools. The museum of the society of fine arts is rich in examples of ancient and modern art. The association of the friends of science and the historical and agricultural societies of Warsaw were once well known, but all were closed after the insurrections, and now they live but a precarious life, the scientific works which continue to be produced in Poland being partly published at Cracow.

The great theatre for Polish drama and the ballet is a fine building which really includes two theatres under the same roof; but the pride of Warsaw is its theatre in the Hazienki gardens, which were laid out in an old bed of

the Vistula by Stanislaus Augustus Poniatowski, and have beautiful shady alleys, artificial ponds, an elegant little palace with ceilings painted by Bacciarelli, several impe- rial villas, and a monument to Sobieski. An artificial ruin on an island makes an open-air theatre, the stage of which is separated from the auditorium by a channel of water, and the decorations of which blend with the parks and the palace behind. Two other public gardens, with alleys of old chestnut trees, are situated in the centre of the city. One of these, the Saski Ogrod, or Saxon garden (17 acres), which has a summer theatre and excellent fountains, and is richly adorned with statues and flowers, is one of the most beautiful in Europe; it is the resort of the Warsaw aristocracy. The Krasinski garden, now some- what less frequented, and many other smaller squares and gardens in the theatres of which Polish and German companies give their summer representations, contribute very inuch to the enlivenment of the streets of Warsaw; while the variety of smart national costumes still worn by the Polish peasantry gives colour and brightness to the crowds which throng them.

Warsaw is semieireular in plan, the diameter, nearly 5 miles in length, lying along the Vistula. The central point of the life of the plaee is the castle (Zamek Krélewski) on Sigismund Square. It was built by the dukes of Mazovia, enlarged by Sigismund III. (whose memorial stands opposite) and Ladislaus IV., and em- bellished by Stanislaus Augustus. At present it

is inhabited by the "governor-general of the provinees on the Vistula," and its pietures and other art treasures have been removed to St Peters- burg. Four main thoroughfares radiate fronit: one, the Krakow- skie Przedmieseie, the best street in Warsaw, runs southward. It is continued by the Nowy Swiat and the Ujazdowska Aleja avenue, whieh leads to the Eazienki gardens. Many fine buildings are found in these two streets:— the ehureh of the Bernardine eonvent; the house of the benevolent society; the Carmelite ehureh, now elosed, where the crown archives of Poland are still kept; the rieh Radziwill palace, now inhabited by the governor-general; the university, Saxon Square, on whieh Nieholas I. ordered the erection of a memorial to the Polish generals who refused to take part in the insurrection of 1831 and were therefore shot by the insurgents ; the Saxon garden behind the square ; the fine palaces of the Potockis, the Oginskis, the Uruskis, &c.; the ehureh of the Holy Cross, ereeted in 1682-96, the richest in Warsaw; the palaee of the Krasinskis, with library and museum; the statuo of Copernicus, by Thorwaldsen, erected in 1822 by national subscrip- tion; the house of the friends of natural history, now a gym- nasium ; the palaee of the Zamojskis, now eonfiscated aud trans- formed into a building for subalterns of the garrison ; the ehureh of St Alexander, ereeted to commemorate the re-establishment of the kingdom of Poland; and the deaf and dumb asylum. The Ujazdowska Aleja avenue, planted with lime-trees and' surrounded by eafés and various places of amusement, is the Champs Elysées of Warsaw. It leads to the Lazienki park, and to the Belvedere palace, now the summer residence of the governor-general, and farther west to the Mokotowski parade ground, which is surrounded on the south and west by the smoky chimneys of the manufaeturing distriet. Another great street, the Marszatkowska, runs parallel to the Ujazdowska from the Saxon garden to this parade ground, on the south-east of whieh are the Russian barracks. The above- mentioned streets are erossed by another series running west and east, the ehief of them being the Senatorska, which begins at Sigismund Square and contains the best shops. The palaee of the archbishops of Gnesen and primates of Poland, confiseated by the Prussian Government, and now used by the ministry of edueation, the bank of Poland, the fine mansion-house burned in 1863 and now rebuilt as police bureau, the small Pod Blachoi palaee, now oeeupied by a ehaneery, the theatre, the old mint, the chief post- offiee, the beautiful

Reformed ehureh, the exchange, the sehool of subaltern officers, and several palaees are grouped in Senators' Street, which is joined from the north by Miodowa Street, in whieh are situated the fine ehureh of the Capuehins, ereeted in 1683 to commemorate the victory of John Sobieski over the Turks, the palace of the arehbishops of Warsaw, and the Russian cathedral.

To the west Senators' Street is eontinued by Electors' Street, where is the very elegant modern ehureh of St Charles Borromco and the Chiodna leading to the suburb of Wola, with a large field where the kings of Poland used to be elected. In Leshno Street, which branelies off from Senators' Street, are the Zelazna Braina, or Iron Gate, in the market-plaee, the gostinyi dvor or bazaar, the arsenal, and the Wielopolski barraeks. The cemeteries, the summer barracks of the troops (Powonzski lager), and the artillery barraeks lie to the north-west.

WARSAW

To the north of Sigismund Square is the old town—Staro Miasto —the Jewish quarter, and farther north still the Alexandrovsk citadel, The old town very mueh reealls old Germany by its narrow streets and old buildings; it has the church of .St John at its entranee, and farther down the cathedral, whieh is the oldest ehureh of Warsaw, having been built in the 18th eentury and re- stored in the 17th. The eitadel, erccted in 1832-35 as a punish- ment for the insurrection of 1831, is of the old type, with six forts too elose to the walls of the fortress to be useful in modern warfare. The railway bridge, built in 1865 and 570 yards long, begins under the walls of the eitadel and is protected on the right bank of the Vistula by the Sliwnieki ¢éte de pont.

The suburb of Praga, on the right bank of the Vistula, is poorly built and often flooded ; but the bloody assaults whieh led to its eapture in 1794 by the Russians under Suwaroff, and in 1831 by Paskevitch, give it a name in history.

Industry and Trade.—Warsaw has of late beeome industrially important, and now has moro than 320 establishments employing nearly 20,000 workmen, and produeing to the amount of nearly 40 million roubles

annually. The leading industries are the produe- tion of plated silver ware, with a wide market throughout Russia, maehinery and engines, ehemicals, musical instruments, especi- ally pianos, carpets, boots, and shoes, largely exported, earriages, woollen cloth, leather wares, spirits, and beer. The trade of Warsaw is considerable. Nearly 14,000,000 ewts. of eoal and 4,800,000 cwts. of miscellaneous goods are imported by rail from the south-west (Kielee, Lodz, and Galicia), and 3,200,000 ewts. of manufaetured goods, corn, flax, &e., are exported in the same direction, Corn and flax are imported to the amount of 7,000,000 ewts. from the south-east and east, and exported to Prussia to the amount of 5,300,000 ewts. by rail and partly down the Vistula, while the total railway traffie is represented by 34,400,000 ewts. of merchandise brought in aud 18,000,000 ewts. sent away. To all this must be added the traffie on the Vistula (about 3,000,000 ewts.). A great proportion of the trade is in the hands of Gernians, espeeially of Jews.

The suburbs of Warsaw are surrounded by villas, palaces, and battlefields. Wilanow, the palace of John Sobieski, now belonging to the Potoekis, was partly built by Turkish prisoners in a fine Italian style, and is now renowned for its historieal portraits and pictures. It is situated to the south of Warsaw, together with many other fine villas (Morysin, Natolin, Krolikarnia, which also has a pieture gallery, &e.). The Marymont, an old country residenee of the wife of John Sobieski, and the Kaskada, much visited by the inhabitants of Warsaw, in the north, the Saska Kempa on the right bank of the Vistula, and the castle of Jabtona down the Vistula are among others that deserve mention.

The events associated with the name of Praga have been already alluded to. Among other battlefields in the neighbourhood of Warsaw is that of Groehowo, where the Polish troops were defeated in 1831 after a gallant fight. Raszyn saw its fields covered with blood in the war of 1809 with Austria ; at Maciejowice, 50 miles up the Vistula, Koseiuszko was wounded and taken by the Russians in 1794; and 20 miles down the river stands the fortress of Modlin, now Novogeorgievsk, fortified by Napoleon, taken in 1813 by the Russians, and the last stronghold of the Poles during the insurrec- tion of 1831.

History.—The history of Warsaw from the 16th century onwards is intimately conneeted with that of PoLanp (g.v.). The preeise date of the foundation of the town is not known. The banks of the Vistula between the Pilica and the Narew must have been inhabited from a very early period, and it is supposed that Conrad, duke of Mazovia, erected a eastle on the present site of Warsaw as early as the 9th century. Casimir the Just is supposed to have fortified it in the 11th century, but Warsaw is not mentioned in annals before 1224. Until 1526 it was the residenee of the dukes of Mazovia, but when their dynasty was extinguished the land of the Mazurs, till then independent, was annexed to Poland. When Poland and Lithuania beeame united, it was chosen as the royal residenee. Sigismund Augustus (Wasa) made it the real eapital of Poland, and from 1572 onwards the eleetion of the kings of Poland took plaee on the field of Wola. From the 17th eentury possession of it was eontinually disputed by the Swedes, the Russians, and the Brandenburgers and the Austrians, Charles Gustavus of Sweden took it in 1655 and kept it for a year; the Poles retook it in July 1656 but lost it again almost immediately. Augustus II, and Augustus III. did mueh for its embellishment, but it had much to suffer during the northern war. Charles XII. took it in 1702, but in the following year peaee was made between the Swedes and Stanislaus Lezezynski, and it beeame free again. The disorderly rule of the Rzee Pospolita opened a large field for Russian intrigue, and in 1764 the Russians took possession of it and seeured the election of Stauislaus Poniatowski, which led in 1773 to the first partition of Poland. In November 1794 the Russians took it again. after the bloody assault on Praga, but next year, in the third partition of Poland, Warsaw was given to Prussia. In November 1806 the town was oeeupied by the troops of Napoleon, and after

the peace of Tilsit was made the capital of the independent duchy of Warsaw; but the Austrians took it on April 21, 1809, and kept it till June 2, when it once more became independent, but only for afew years. The Russians finally took it on February 8, 1818, since which time they have always retained it. On November 29, 1830, Warsaw gave the signal of the great but unsuccessful insurrection which lasted nearly one year ; it was

taken after great bloodshed by Paskevitch, on September 7, 1831. Deportations on a large scale, executions, and confiscation of the domains of the nobility followed, and until 1856 Warsaw remained under severe inilitary rule. In 1862 a series of demonstrations began to be made in Warsaw in favour of the independence of Poland, and after a bloody repression a general insurrection followed in January 1863, the Russians remaining, however, masters of the situation. The Russian Government now decided to take the most stringent measures to erush the powers of the clergy, the landed nobility, and the turbulent Warsaw artisans and educated classes. Executions, banishment to the convict prisons of Siberia, and con- fiscation of estates followed. Deportation to Siberia and the interior of Russia was carried out on an unheard-of scale. Scientific socicties and high schools were closed; monasteries and nunneries were emptied. Hundreds of Russian officials were called in to fill up administrative posts, the schools, and the university; the Russian language was rendered obligatory in official acts, in all legal pro- ceedings, and even, to a great extent, in trade. The very name of Poland was expunged from official writings, and, while the old institutions were abolished, the Russian tribunals and administra- tive institutions were introduced. The serfs were liberated. See POLAND.

Officially, Warsaw is now simply the chief town of the govern- ment of Warsaw, the residerice of the governor-general of the pro- vinces on the Vistula and the commander of the Warsaw military district, and the see of the Roman and Greek archbishops. But it continues to be the heart of the Polish nationality. (P. A. K.)

WART is a papillary excrescence of the surface, most commonly of the skin, but in special circumstances also of the transitional and mucous membranes. The ordinary broad and flat warts of the skin occur mostly upon the hands of children and young persons ; a long pendulous variety occurs about the chin or neck of children who are constitutionally delicate (it used to be thought a mark of scrofula) and on the scalp in adults. Both the broad sessile warts of the fingers or hands and the thin hanging warts of the neck and head are apt to come out in numbers at a time ; a crop of them suddenly appears, to disappear after a time with equal suddenness. Hence the supposed efficacy of charms. A single wart

will sometimes remain when the general eruption has vanished. The liability to crops of warts runs in families, In after life a wart on the hands or fingers is usually brought on by some irritation, often repeated, even if it be slight. A special form has been observed on the hands of those much Occupied with anatomical dissection. Chimney-sweeps and workers in coal-tar, petroleum, &c., are subject to warts, which often become cancerous. Ordinary innocent warts occur singly in later life on the nose or lips or other parts of the face, sometimes on the tongue. Towards old age there are apt to be broad and flattened patches of warts on the back, of a greasy consistence and brownish colour.

A wart consists essentially of a framework or ground- plan of small blood-vessels supported by bands of fibrous tissue, and a more or less thick covering of epidermic scales. When the wart is young, the surface is a rounded and even knob; as it gets rubbed and worn the surface appears cleft into thread-like projecting points. The blood-vessels, whose outgrowth from the surface really makes the wart, may either be in a cluster of parallel loops, in which case we have the comnion broad and sessile wart, or the vessels may branch from a single stem, inaking the dendriform pattern of the long, slim, and pendulous warts of the chin and neck. The same two kinds of pattern occur also in warts of the transitional or mucous surfaces. (For a figure of a dendriform wart, see PatHowoey, vol. xviii. fig. 43, p. 379.) A wart of either pattern is a projection of the system of cutaneous blood-

vessels beyond the surface. It is owing to its vascular ground-plan that a wart is liable to come back after being shaved off ; the vessel or vessels are cut down to tlie level of the skin, but the current of blood is still forced into the stem, and the branches tend to be thrown out beyond the surface as before. This fact has a bearing on the treatment of warts. If they are shaved or snipped off, the blood-vessels of the stem should be destroyed at the same time by caustic, or made to shrivel by an astringent. The same end is served by a gradually tightening ligature (such as a thread of elastic pulled out from an old brace) round tlie base or neck of the wart ; an ordinary thread is apt to cut too deep and may cause suppuration. The

best treatment is to rub an astringent, or acid, or caustic substance into the surface of the wart. Glacial acetic acid may be applied on the end of a glass rod, or by a camel-hair brush, care being taken not to touch the adjoining skin. A solution of perchloride of iron is also effective in the same way. Nitrate of silver is objectionable, owing to the black stains left by it. A simple domestic remedy, often effectual, is the astringent and acrid juice of the common stonecrop (Sedum acre) rubbed into the wart, time after time, from the freshly gathered herb. 'The result of these various applications is that the wart loses its turgor or firmness, shrivels up, and eventually falls off.

A peculiar form of wart, known as verrugas, occurs endemically in certain valleys of the Peruvian Andes, especially in the region of the Cerro de Pasco. Itis believed to have been one of the causes of the excessive mortality from hemorrhages of the skin among the troops of Pizarro. In recent times attention was ealled to it by Dr Archibald Smith in 1842; in 1874, during the making of the Trans-Andean Railway, it caused a considerable loss of life among English navvies and engineers. Strangers of the white race suffer much more severely from it than the acelimatized or the natives. It is sometimes epidemic and peculiarly fatal. Its en- demic seats are certain deep and narrow valleys traversed by a mountain stream or torrent and covered with luxuriant vegetation ; where the valley widens the endemic influence is no longer felt. The warts may be few or many, up to several hundreds; they oeeur on internal mucous membranes as well as on the skin. Their out- break is preceded for some weeks by a feverish state and by pains in the limbs. These symptoms disappear when the warts come out; they are at first reddish spots about the size of a pea, but grow to be rounded or conical excrescences as large as a raspberry or filbert, or pigeon's egg ; after a time the surface becomes ragged or fissured (as in an ordinary wart), especially when rubbed or chafed, and blood begins to ooze, which may amount to consider- able hemorrhage. Death (in about 10 per cent. of cases) is due to loss of blood, or to the protracted ulceration following the fall of the warts. The disease lasts usually several months ; but a feeble state of the system may remain long after the warts are all gone. The excrescences (besides those of the internal membraues) occur in the favourite situations of common warts—the fingers and back of the hand (also the

toes and back of the foot), the face and neck, and among the hair of the head.

See Hirsch, Geographical and Historical Pathology, vol. ii., Engl. trans., 1885.

WARTON. Three authors of this name, a father and two sons, were leaders of reaction against the didactic poetry of Pope's school, and did much to help forward the descriptive and romantic revival. ;

Tuomas Warton (1688-1745), satirized in Terre Filius (February 18, 1721) as "squinting Tom of Maudlin," was vicar of Basingstoke in Hampshire, and professor of poetry at Oxford. He published nothing during his lifetime, but after his death his son Joseph published some of his poetry under the title Poems on Several Occasions, 1748.

JosePH Warton (1722-1800), eldest son of the preced- ing, was born at Dunsford, in Surrey, in 1722, and sent to Winchester school in 1736. Collins was already there, and the school seems to have been at the time quite a nest of singing birds, quickened into unusual ambition by a visit from Pope. Collins and Warton became close friends, read Milton and Spenser together, and wrote verses which they sent to the Gentleman's Magazine, verses of such promise that Johnson formally criticized them. The two friends

went to Oxford together, and took the degree of B.A. in the same year (1743). Warton was far from having the genius of Collins, but he had abundance of poetical enthu- siasm, and they were at one in their impatience under the prevailing taste for moral and ethical poetry. Whoever wishes to understand how early the discontent under Pope's ascendency began should read Warton's The En- thusiast, or The Love of Nature, and remember that it was written by an undergraduate in 1740, while Pope was still alive. Warton sounded a bold note in 1746, in the preface to his Odes on Several Subjects. " As he is convinced," he wrote,

“ that the fashion of moralizing in verses has been carried too far, and as he looks upon invention and imagination to be the chief faculties of a poet, so he will be happy if the following odes may be looked upon as an attempt to bring back poetry into its right channel.” Warton thereafter married, became a country clergyman, a master in Winchester school, eventually for thirty years (1766-96) a much respected headmaster, but all his leisure was given to literature, and he remained constant to his conception of the “right channel” in poetry, though he soon abandoned the idea of setting the world right by his own example. He became an active and prominent man of letters, produced an edition of Virgil, in 1753, with distinguished coadjutors, and a translation of the Hclogues and the G’eorgics, and a preparatory essay by him- self; made the acquaintance of Johnson, and wrote papers on Shakespeare and Homer in The Adventurer ; published the first part of an essay on Pope in 1756, an essay re- garded at the time as revolutionary, by Dictator Johnson at least, because it put Pope in the second rank to Shakespeare, Spenser, and Milton, on the ground that moral and ethical poetry, however excellent, is an inferior species ; held his own against Johnson in the Literary Club ; and, after enduring many jests about the promised second part and the delay in its appearance, published it at last, retracting nothing, in 1782. Of this essay Campbell justly says that “it abounds with criticism of more research than Addison’s, of more amenity than Hurd’s or Warburton’s, and of more insinuating tact than Johnson’s,” Warton’s edition of Pope was the work of his old age ; when pub- lished in 1797, it found a larger number of sympathizers with his criticism of the poetic idol of the 18th century than had welcomed his first essay forty years before in the same vein. The last three years of the critic’s life were spent in preparing an edition of Dryden, which was completed and published by his son in 1811. He died in London in February 1800, at the age of seventy-eight. THomas Warton (1728-1790), the younger brother of

Joseph, at least as active and influential as he in enlarg- ing the poetic ideas of the 18th century, was born at Basingstoke in 1728. He was still more precocious as a poet than his brother—translated one of Martial’s epigrams at nine, aud wrote The Pleasures of M elancholy at seventeen —and he showed exactly the same bent, Milton and Spenser being his favourite poets, though he “did not fail to cultivate his mind with the soft

thrillings of the tragic muse” of Shakespeare. He wrote as follows in 1745 »—

Through Pope’s soft song though all the Graces breathe,

And happiest art adorn his Attic page,

Yet does my mind with sweeter transport glow

As, at the root of mossy trunk reclined,

In magic Spenser’s wildly warbled song

I sce deserted Una, &c.

_In the same poem he shows the delight in Gothic churches and ruined castles which inspired so much of his subsequent work in romantic revival. Most of Warton’s poetry, humorous and serious,—and the humorous mock heroic was better within his powers than serious verse,—was written before the age of twenty-three, when he took his M.A. degree and became a fellow of his college (Trinity,

Oxford). He did not altogether abandon verse; hissonnets, especially, which are the best of his poems, were written later, and during the last six years of his life he was poet- laureate, and one of the happiest in the execution of the delicate duties that have ever held the office. But his main energies were given to omnivorous poetical reading and criticism. He was the first to turn to literary account the medizval treasures of the Bodleian Library. It was through him, in fact, that the medieval spirit which always lingered in Oxford first began to stir after its long inaction, and to claim an influence in themodern world. Warton, like his brother, entered the church, and held, one after another, various livings, but he did not marry. He gave little atten- tion to his clerical duties, and Oxford always remained his home. He was a very easy and convivial as well as a very learned don, with a taste for pothouses and crowds as well as dim aisles and romances in manuscript and black letter. The first proof that he

gave of his extraordinarily wide scholarship was in his Observations on the Poetry of Spenser, published in 1754, when the author was twenty-six. Three years later he was appointed professor of poetry and held the office for ten years, sending round, according to the story, at the beginning of term to inquire whether anybody wished him to lecture. The first volume of his monumental work, The History of English Poetry, appeared twenty years later, in 1774, the second volume in 1778, and the third in 1781. A work of such enormous labour and research could proceed but slowly, and it was no wonder that Warton flagged in the execution of it, and stopped to refresh himself with annotating the minor poems of Milton, pouring out in this delightful work the accumu- lated suggestions of forty years. Specialists may here and there detect errors and imperfections in Warton's History, but its miscellaneous and curious lore must make it always an interesting book, while its breadth and exactness of scholarship must always command wonder and respect. Through this work Warton became the veritable literary father. of Sir Walter Scott; if he could have lived to read the Lay and Jfarmion he would have found realized there what he vaguely desiderated in modern poetry. Among Warton's minor works were a selection of Roman metrical inscriptions (1758); the humorous Oxford Companion to the Gude and Guide to the Companion (1762); The Oxford Sausage (1764); an edition of Theocritus (1770) ; lives of Thomas Pope and Bathurst, college benefactors; a History of the Antiquities of Kiddington Parish, of which he held the living (1781); and an Inquiry into the Authenticity of the Poems attributed to Thomas Rowley (1782). His busy and convivial life was ended by a paralytic stroke in May 1790. (Ww. M.)

WARWICK, a midland county of England, is bounded Plate on the N. by Stafford, on the E. by Leicester and North- VUJ.

ampton, on the §. by Oxford and Gloucester, and on the W. by Worcester. Its greatest length from north to south is 50 miles, and its greatest breadth 33 miles, Its area is 566,458 acres, or about 885 square miles. Camden describes it as being " divided into two parts, the Feldon and, Woodland [or Arden], that is into a plain champain and a woody country; which parts, the Avon, running crookedlie from north-east to south-west, doth, after a sort, sever one from the other."

Surface and Geology.—The surface of the county is of a gently undulating nature. For a description of the scenery and early history the reader is referred to the article SHAKESPEARE, vol. xxi. pp. 738 sg.

The chief elevations are the Edge Hills on the southern border of the county, where they rise in some places to about 800 feet above sea-level. In the same neighbourhood are the Burton Dassett and Farnborough Hills; north- east of these are the Napton and Shuckburgh Hills, and

.

mm Eh Wd CK

south-west of the Edge Hills is Brailes Hill. Some elevated land is found at Corley, Oldbury, Hartshill, &., in the north of the county.

The lofty elevation of the county in general is evidenced by the fact that rivers flow from it in several directions, contributing to each of the three systems of the Severn, Trent, and Thames. The Avon rises in Northampton- shire, and flowing south-west through the county receives on its way the Swift, Sowe, Leam, Itchene, Stour, Alne, and other tributaries, and falls into the Severn at Tewkesbury. It is navigable for barges up to Stratford, and is rich in its associations with Shakespeare. The Tame rises in Staffordshire, and flowing through the northern portion of Warwickshire takes in the Cole, Blythe, Anker, Rea, and other minor streams. A few small rivulets in the south of the county fall into the Cherwell, a tributary of the Thames.

The New Red Sandstone is the principal geological formation of the county, but towards the south the Lias prevails. In the north central district there is a large deposit of gravel, which consists of "small boulders and sea-worn pebbles, and ancient rocks traceable to the parent beds in Yorkshire, Cumberland, and Scotland, and commonly known as the northern drift. Quartz pebbles especially abound in it; granite, gneiss, syenite, porphyry, slate, mica schist, trap, and almost every other variety of the primary rocks may be collected." 'The Lias is near Edge Hill; the strata immediately below it consist of clay and ironstone, rich in iron ore. The Upper Lias crosses the county by Henley-in-Arden, Stratford,

Kineton, Southam, and Rugby. With the exception of one coal- field, small but rich, extending from Tamworth to near Wyken, about 15 miles, the New Red Sandstone and Permian occupy the whole of the central part of the county. In the north Upper Cambrian quartzites and shales are found, together with some volcanic rocks. The Coal- Measures dip under the Lower Permian rocks, and in the southern part of the field underlie the Trias. According to the report of the Coal Commission in 1871, the area of the Warwickshire coal-field is 30 square miles, the thickness of the coal being from 26 to 30 feet. The quantity raised in 1870 was 647,540 tons, and in 1885 it was 1,281,724.

The minerals of the county are limestone, freestone, iron, blue flagstone, marl, and blue clay. The blue flag- stone is found in many places, and ironstone at Bedworth, Oldbury, and Merevale. The limestone quarries are principally at Bearley, Grafton Court, Stretton, Prince- thorpe, Ufton, Harbury, Arlescote, Bidford, Newbold-on- Avon, Stockton, and Southam ; freestone is found largely about Warwick, Leamington, Kenilworth, and Coventry.

Climate and Agricultwre.—The climate is generally mild and healthy. The soil ison the whole good, and consists of various loams, marls, gravels, and clays, well suited for most of the usual crops. It is rich in pasture-land, and dairy farming is increasing. It has excellent orchards and market gardens, and. possesses some of the finest woodlands in England. Nearly all the farm build- Ings are good; and many of the cottages of the labourers are exceedingly picturesque. There are many charming villages in the county. According to the agricultural returns, out of a total area of 566,458 acres there were 496,429 acres under cultivation in 1887, corn crops occupying 105,089 acres, green crops 31,411, rotation grasses 40,783, permanent pasture 308,689, and fallow 10,493 ; of the corn crops much the largest area was under wheat, which occupied 43,728 acres, barley occupying 16,290, oats 26,297, rye 256, beans 14,050, and pease 4418. Of the green crops turnips occupied 16,918 acres, potatoes 4936 acres, while 4198 were under mangolds, 114 under carrots, 971 under cabbage, &., and 4279 under vetches and other green crops.

The number of horses in 1887 was 20,769, cattle 107,555, of which 37,080 were cows and heifers in milk or in calf, sheep 294,442, 172,151 of them one-year-old and above, and pigs 37,099.

According to the Return of Owners of Land, 1878, the total number of proprietors in the county was 51,516, possessing 541,022 acres, with a gross annual rental of £3,318,304, or about £6, 2s. 8d.

per acre all over. Of these owners of land only 4622 had one acre and upwards. Of waste or common land there was 1838 acres.

379

The following possessed over 5000 acres:—Lord Leigh, 14,892 acres ; Lord Willoughby de Broke, 12,621; earl of Aylesford, 12,159 ; marquis of Hertford, 10,282; earl of Craven, 8448 ; earl of Warwick, 8263; Sir N. W. Throckmorton, 7619; duke of Buccleuch, 6881; H. J. Lucy, 5766; W.S. Dugdale, 5689; Sir G. R. Philips, 5897 ; and C. N. Newdegate, 5318.

Manufactures.—The principal seats of mannfacture in the county are BIRMINGHAM and CovENtRY (q9.v.). Suffice it to say here that in Birmingham almost every article of use, from a pin to a steam engine, is produced, and that Coventry has long been famous for its ribbons and watches, and has recently won a well-merited reputation for bicycles and tricycles.

Communication.—The county is well supplied with excellently preserved roads, There are also a great number of canals giving access to the Trent, the Mersey, the Thames, and the Severn. The London and North-Western, the Great Western, the Midland, and various branch railways traverse the county in various directions.

Population and Administration.—The population in 1871 was 634,189, and in 1881 737,339 (357,146 males and 380,193 females). More than half the population is contained in the borough of Birmingham. The county is divided into four hundreds :-— (1) Hemlingford, (2) Knightlow, (8) Barlichway, (4) Kineton. It has one city, Coventry (42,111), which is also a municipal borough ; five other boroughs—Birmingham (400,774),

Leamington (22,979), Stratford-on-Avon (8054), Warwick (11,800), and Sutton Coldfield (7737); and, besides the boroughs, ten market towns, viz., Alcester (2430), Atherstone (4645), Coleshill (2356), Henley in Arden (1119), Kenilworth (4150), Kineton (1053), Nuneaton (8465), Rugby (9891), Solihull (5280), and Southam (1784). It is mostly in the diocese of Worcester. It is in the midland judicial circuit, has one court of quarter sessions, and is divided into fourteen petty and special sessional divisions. The boroughs of Birmingham and Warwick have separate courts of quarter sessions and commissions of the peace, and the city of Coventry and the boroughs of Leamington and Stratford-on-Avon have commissions of the peace.

By the Redistribution Bill of 1885 Warwickshire was for parliamentary purposes divided into four boroughs and four county divisions. 'he boroughs are Birmingham, Aston Manor, Coventry, and Warwick and Leamington united, Birmingham has seven divisions, each returning a member—Bordesley, Central, Kast, Edgbaston, North, South, and West ; the other three boroughs return one member each. The county divisions (Nuneaton, Rugby, Stratford-on-Avon, and Tamworth) each return one member.

History and Antiquities.—Warwickshire was occupied by the British tribes Cornaviiand Dobuni. The Romans named this part of England Flavia Cesariensis, and many evidences of their occupa- tion and works exist in the county. It was crossed by the three great roads—Watling Street, the Fosse Way, and Icknield Street; the last-named gives its name to a street in Birmingham which is on the lines of the old Roman road. The Ridgeway borders a part of Warwickshire on the west. Roman stations or camps were at Mancetter, High Cross, Alcester, Chesterton, and other places ; coins, pottery, and other remains have been found at Warwick, Willoughby, Hampton-in-Arden, Birmingham, and elsewhere. The Teutons followed the Romans, and after suffering many changes Warwickshire became part of Mercia. From 598 to 918 it was the scene of frequent invasions, conquests, and reconquests.

Although Mercia was for the most part peopled by Angles, the Saxons seem to have occupied the portion now known as Warwick- shire in very

considerable numbers; for, if we except Alcester, Mancetter, and a few other places, nearly all the towns and villages have Saxon names. Ofthe three hundred and sixty places in the county mentioned in Domesday nearly all are of Saxon origin. As Verstegan says,

"In Foord, in Ham, in Ley, in Tun, The most of English surnames run."

And these terminations are found in the vast majority of the names of places in Warwickshire. This prevalence of the Saxons here is also confirmed by the fact that Mr Kemble discovered no fewer than thirty-one Mark names in places in Warwickshire. The Danes, although they made inroads into Warwickshire severaltimes, seem to have made no settlements in the county, the only names bearing the Danish suffix by being on the north-east border. In later times the "king-maker"' carl of Warwick made the county memorable by the part he took in the Wars of the Roses. In the civil war under Charles I. "scarcely a place of any note escaped" without a struggle: at Edge Hill the first engagement was fought; Aston Hall was besieged; Birmingham was sacked and burned by Prince Rupert; Coventry endured a sicge; Warwick was the centre of several encounters; and a skirmish took place near Southam.

Few remains of Saxon architecture are to be found in the county, and these are of minor importance. Saxon jewels have been found at Compton-Verney ; a fine burial urn filled with ashes, an iron sword, a spear head, and other relics, at Church Over; in a tumulus or barrow, at Marston, were found two sepulchral urns, one of them containing bones, a fibula, a pin, part of a sword, and two

spear heads. In 1824 an Anglo-Saxon cemetery was discovered on Watling Street, near Bensford Bridge, in which a large number of articles, both of use and ornament, were found. Other burial places have been opened, and similar remains found. Some good examples of Norman work exist in the churches at Kenilworth, Ryton, Stoneleigh, Berkeswell, Wolston, and Beaudesert. Of famous and interesting places may be mentioned the noble structure Warwick Castle; the ruins of Kenilworth Castle and Maxstoke Priory; Maxstoke Castle; Compton Wyniates;

Temple Balsall church ; the "three tall spires" at Coventry, with the beautiful churches of St Michael, Holy Trinity, and St John Baptist ; Ragley Hall, Combe Abbey, Wroxhall Abbey, Newnham Padox, Astley Castle, Arbury Hall, Walton Hall, Guy's Cliff, Baddesley Clinton, Tamworth Castle and church, Packington Hall, and Stoneleigh Abbey.

Among the eminent persons connected with Warwickshire besides William Shakespeare are John Rogcrs the martyr, Michael Drayton, Sir W. Dugdale, Dr Parr, Dr Joseph Priestley, Matthew Boulton, John Baskerville, Walter Savage Landor, and Marian Evans (" George Eliot ").

See Dugdale, Antiquities of Warwickshire, Thomas's edition (2 vols. fol., 1730); Brewer, Description of Warwickshire (8vo, 1810); Murray. Agriculture of War- wickshire (8vo, 1813); Smith, History of Warwickshire (4to, 1830); Langford, Staffordshire and Warwickshire (4 vols. 4to, 1868); Langford, '"'The Saxons in Warwickshire" (Birmingham Archxological Society, 4to, 1881),

WARWICK, the county town of Warwickshire, and a municipal and parliamentary borough, is finely situated on the Avon, on the Warwick and Birmingham and Warwick and Napton Canals, and on a branch of the Great Western Railway, 8 miles north-east of Stratford-on-Avon and 108 north-west of London. The glory of Warwick is still its castle, which has been truly pronounced to be the "'most magnificent of the ancient feudal mansions of the English nobility still used as a residence." Its position is at once commanding and picturesque, standing as it does on a rock overhanging the Avon. Its principal features are Cesar's Tower, 147 feet high, built in the 14th century; the Gateway Tower, in the centre; and Guy's Tower, 128 feet, also of the 14th century. There is a fine collection of pictures. The Great Hall and the family apartments were destroyed by fire in 1871, but have been restored. In the collegiate church of St Mary Warwick possesses one of the most interesting ecclesiastical buildings in the country. We learn from Domesday that a church existed before the Conquest, but of its foundation nothing is really known. It was made collegiate by Roger de New- burgh, the second Norman earl. It was dissolved by Henry VIII. in 1545, by whom it was granted to the burgesses

of the town, with an estate then worth £58, 14s. 4d. to main- tain it, together with the king's school. A great part of the church was destroyed by fire in 1694, and afterwards rebuilt. The glory of this church, however, is the Beau- champ Chapel, founded by Earl Richard Beauchamp by will, and commenced in 1443 and completed 1464. It is one of the finest examples of pure Gothic in the kingdom. In the centre of the chapel is the splendid tomb of the earl. The church of St Nicholas, near the entrance to the castle grounds, is modern, with a tower and spire, and was erected towards the end of the 18th century. St Paul's is new. The priory of St Sepulchre was founded by Henry de Newburgh on the site of an ancient church for a society of canons regular. It is now a private residence. One of the most interesting places in Warwick is the hospital of Robert Dudley, earl of Leicester, one of the most picturesque examples of half- timber buildings in England. It was originally used as the hall of the united guilds of the Holy Trinity, the Blessed Virgin, and St George the Martyr. The earl of Leicester, by an Act of Incorporation obtained in 157 tl, founded the hospital for the reception of twelve poor men possessing not more than £5 a year, and a master. The first master, appointed by the earl himself, was the famous Puritan, Thomas Cartwright. There are numerous charities in the town, the principal being those of Henry VIII, Sir Thomas White, and Thomas Oken. The first

Wak Wick

is derived from the tithes of St Mary, St Nicholas in Warwick, the parish of Budbrooke, and Chaddesley Corbett, Worcestershire, together with the rents of houses and lands in the borough. It produces about £3000 a year, and is used for paying the stipends of the vicar and an assistant minister for St Mary's, the vicars of St Nicholas and Budbrooke, the mayor, the town-clerk, yeoman, serjeant- at-mass, and a beadle; while £460, 10s. is annually given in aid of the king's school. By the charity of Sir Thomas White the sum of £100 is lent, without interest, to young tradesmen for a period of nine years. From the funds left for that purpose by Thomas Oken, allowances are made to the poor. The area of the borough is 5512 acres; the population in 1861 was 10,570, in 1871 10,986, and in 1881 11,800.

A fortress is said to have been erected here as early as the year 50, by P. Octavius Scapula, and it is supposed to have been the presidium Romanorum at which a cohort of Dalmatian horse was stationed. It was destroyed by the Danes in one of their incur- sions into Mercia, and in 915 Alfred's daughter Ethelfleda built the fortress on which the castle now stands. The town is mentioned in Domesday, where we learn that "in the borough the king has in his demesne 113 houses, and the king's barons have 112, from which the king receives Danegeld. The bishop of Worcester has 9 dwellings, the bishop of Chester 7, the abbot of Coventry 36, and four were destroyed to enlarge the castle." In the time of Edward the Confessor the sheriffwick of Warwick, with the borough and royal manors, rendered £65, and " thirty-six sextars of honey, or £24, 6s. instead of honey (pro omnibus que ad mel pertinebant). Now, with the forra of the royal manors and pleas of the county, it pays per annuin £145 by weight, £23 for the custom of dogs, 20s. for a sumpter horse, £10 for a hawk, and 100s. for Queengold. Besides this it renders twenty-four sextars of honey of the larger measure, and from the borough six sextars of honcy, at the sextar for 15d." The celebrated Thurkill (or Turchill) was the last Saxon earl of Warwick.

William the Conqueror began his first northern campaign in 1068, and the first place where his presence is distinctly recorded is Warwick. He erected here one of his strong fortifications on the site of the old one. Not a vestige of it now exists, but, as Mr Freeman writes, "the mound itself still remains, a monument of the wisdom and energy of the mighty daughter of Alfred, while the keep.of William has so utterly perished that its very site can only now be guessed at."

Of the earls of Warwick who may be noticed, of course the legendary Guy, with the numerous traditions relating his wonder- ful achievements, stands first. In proof of his prowess do not his gigantic helmet, his furnace-like pot, and his mighty fork remain in the castle to this day, to testify against all unbelievers? Prominently in history we have Guy de Beauchamp, who came to the title in 1298, and who was called by the favourite Piers Gaveston "the Black Hound of Arden." He was instrumental in taking Piers prisoner, and in leading him to Blacklow Hill, close to Warwick, and there beheading him in 1311. Richard Nevil,

the famous "king-maker" (see below), assumed the title in right of his wife Anne, and was slain at the battle of Barnet, 1471. Then the unfortunate George Plantagenet, duke of Clarence, was created earl by his brother Edward IV., but afterwards perished, it is said, by being drowned in a butt of Malmsey wine. The title has frequently lain dormant. In 1547 it was revived in favour of the Dudleys, when Viscount Lisle was created earl by Edward VI. It became extinct in 1589, and in 1618 was renewed in the person of Robert, Lord Rich, whose eldest son was lord high admiral for the Commonwealth. Again the title became extinct in 1759. The castle had long been in the possession of the Greville family, having been granted to Sir Fulke Greville, Lord Brooke, by James I. when it was in a ruinous condition, and he restored it, at a cost, it is said, of £20,000. Dugdale says he made it "not only a place of great strength, but extraordinary delight, with most pleasant gardens, walks, and thickets, such as this part of Eng- land can hardly parallel; so that now it is the most princely seat that is within the midland parts of this realm." He died from the effects of a wound inflicted by his own servant, September 8, 1628. His successor, Robert Greville, was the son of Fulke's first cousin, and is the Lord Brooke who is famous in the civil war between Charles and the Parliament, and was appointed commander-in-chief of the Parlia- mentary forces of Warwickshire and Staffordshire. He was engaged in the first fight of the war at Edge Hill, and was killed at the siege of Lichfield cathedral, on March 1, 1648. The title of earl of Warwick was bestowed on Francis, eighth Lord Brooke, by George II. in 1746. His son George, who succeeded to the title in 1773, was a great benefactor of the borough, and was lavish in his ex- penditure on the castle.

WARWICK

WARWICK, Ricuarp Nevit, Earu or (c. 1420-1471), was born between 1420 and 1430. He was descended from a family of note in the north of England, that of the Nevils, who enjoyed for many generations the title of earls of Westmorland. His grandmother on the father's side was Joan, daughter of John of Gaunt. He inherited the title of earl of Salisbury from his father, a younger son of Ralph Nevil, and by his marriage with Anne, daughter of Richard Beauchamp, he became earl of Warwick. His

descent from John of Gaunt made him naturally a member of the Lancastrian party, but the marriage of his aunt, Cicely Nevil, to Richard, duke of York, connected him also with the Yorkist house. As first cousin of Edward IV. and second cousin of Henry VI. he was well fitted for the double part which he was destined to play in English history.

When the struggle between the Roses began, he and his father threw in their lot with the Yorkists. The first attempt of the duke of York (in 1450) to assert his claims proved unsuccessful, but three years later the final loss of Guienne, coupled with the king's imbecility, enabled him to renew his efforts. The duke became pro- tector, but the king's recovery drove him from power and forced him to take up arms a second time. He was now joined actively by Warwick and his father, the former of whom raised a body of troops and contributed largely to the Yorkist victory at St Albans (1455). Warwick was rewarded for his services with the governorship of Calais. This important post gave him the control of the narrow seas, and supplied him with a harbour of refuge whither he could safely retire in case of a change of affairs in England. In the latter capacity Calais soon proved useful.

In 1457, when Henry had recovered his senses, Warwick attended a council at Coventry, at which he took an oath of fealty to the king. Next year he attended a great meeting in London, summoned for the purpose of recon- ciling the two parties. He was followed on this occasion by six hundred men clad in his livery, and wearing red coats embroidered with ragged staves, the badge of the house of Warwick. An apparent reconciliation was effected, but Warwick, accused of misconduct in attacking a fleet of North Sea merchant-ships near Calais, took advantage of an affray between his followers and some of the king's men to assert that a plot was laid against his life, and retired to his fortress across the Channel. When in 1459 the duke of York took up arms for the third time, Warwick and his father, the earl of Salisbury, joined him at Ludlow. The confederates were strongly posted, but, being deserted by Sir Andrew Trollop, they lost heart and dispersed, Salisbury and Warwick again taking refuge at Calais. A parliament which met at Coventry now attainted Warwick and his father, with other leaders, of high treason, and Somerset was sent to supersede Warwick in his command. The latter,

however, made a strong resistance, repelled Somerset, and took his ships, after which he sailed to Dublin to concert further measures with the duke of York. The results of this negotiation were seen early in 1460, when the duke of York issued a manifesto to rouse tle people against the Government, and Warwick, landing in Kent, marchedon London. The king retired northward and intrenched himself at Northampton, where he was defeated with much loss by Warwick, and taken prisoner. Warwick returned with his captive to London, and the duke of York at once claimed the crown. After much debate the king was induced to consent toa compromise, by which he was to retain the crown during life, and the duke of York and his heirs were to succeed him. The queen, however, refused to sanction this arrangement, and assembled an army in the north. The

duke of York, marching against her, was defeated and killed at Wakefield (December 1460), and the earl of Salisbury was taken and beheaded shortly after. The Yorkist victory of Mortimer's Cross (1461) did not stop the queen's march on London, and Warwick, attempting to bar her progress, was entirely defeated at the second battle of St Albans. The king fell into the hands of his own party, but Warwick escaped. The Lancastrian triumph was, however, short-lived. The citizens of London, already devoted to the house of York, were exasperated by the excesses of the Lancastrian troops, and when Warwick, with Edward, earl of March, raised another army and marched towards the capital, the queen was forced to retire to the north. Warwick and Edward entered the city, and the latter was proclaimed king under the title of Edward IV. The sanguinary battle of Towton (March 1461), in which the victory was greatly due to the skill and energy of Warwick, secured the crown for Edward, and gave the nation peace for several years.

Honours and emoluments were showered on Warwick. The governorship of Guisnes and Dammes, with the lieutenancy of the marches there, was added to his com- mand at Calais; he became warden of the western marches towards Scotland, constable of Dover, and lord high chamberlain. The revenue derived from these employments was

calculated at 80,000 crowns a year. His brother, John, Lord Montague, was made earl of Northumberland and warden of the eastern marches, and his brother George became archbishop of York and lord chancellor. For some time Warwick did his best to main- tain Edward on his throne. An attempt on the part of the Lancastrians in 1463 to recover their power was put down by the united efforts of the Nevils. Montague defeated Percy at Hedgley Moor and Somerset at Hexham, while Warwick besieged and took Bamborough Castle, which was held by Sir Ralph Grey. Soon afterwards Henry VI. was taken prisoner and was lodged by Warwick in the Tower.

But the power and ambition of Warwick were too great to allow the good understanding between the king-maker and the king to be of long duration. The first difference between them arose on the question of the king's marriage. In 1464 Warwick was employed to treat for peace with France, and was anxious to establish it on the firm basis of a matrimonial alliance. His plans were frustrated by Edward's marriage with Elizabeth Woodville. At this time Warwick is said to have been negotiating for a marriage between the king and Bona of Savoy, niece of Louis XI. According to another authority, the princess proposed was Isabella of Castile. Whatever may be the truth of these reports, it is clear that Edward's marriage was not approved by Warwick, and that on the question of foreign policy they followed divergent aims. The rapid advancement of the queen's family contributed to widen the breach. When in 1467 a marriage was proposed between the king's sister Margaret and Charles of Burgundy, Warwick, true to his policy of reconciling England and France, vigorously opposed the match, and suggested in its stead a marriage with a French prince. For a time Edward seemed willing to yield, and Warwick was sent over to treat with the French king. Hemet him at Rouen, and was received with unusual marks of respect. The result of the conference was that ambassadors were sent by Louis to offer Edward a treaty on favourable terms. But the latter, who had already shown his dis- pleasure by depriving the archbishop of his chancellor- ship, rejected the offer, and Warwick retired in disgust to one of his castles in the north. Shortly afterwards the marriage between Charles and Margaret took place. An apparent reconciliation between Edward and Warwick was

now effected, but its hollowness was shown by the marriage of Isabella, eldest daughter of Warwick, with George, duke of Clarence, a match which Edward strenuously but vainly opposed (1468). A period of intrigue and insurrection followed. A rising in the north, under Robin of Redesdale, was at first defeated by Montague, but the rebels were allowed to make head again. They were soon joined by Warwick and his party, who, if they did not originate, at all events encouraged the rebellion. Edward, whose troops were defeated at Edgecote, fell into Warwick's hands, and was removed to his castle at Middleham. When, however, the Lancastrians took advantage of this state of affairs and rose in arms, they were speedily put down by Warwick. Edward was released and a formal reconciliation followed (1469).

The situation had, however, by this time become in- tolerable. A fresh insurrection broke out in Lincolnshire, and the confessions of the leaders, who were taken by the royal troops, showed that it had been instigated by Clarence and Warwick. The king at once marched against the conspirators, who in vain attempted to collect sufficient forces, and with some difficulty escaped from the country. Warwick made for his old stronghold at Calais, but his lieutenant proved faithless, and turned his guns against him. Thereupon he took refuge at the court of France and resolved to side openly with the Lancastrians. A treaty was made between Warwick and Queen Margaret, which was cemented by the marriage of Prince Edward with Warwick's daughter Anne. This change of front naturally caused a coolness between Warwick and Clarence; but, before the latter could trim his course anew, Warwick, having obtained assistance from Louis XI., landed in the south of England. Edward was taken by surprise, and, unable to make any resistance, fled to Flanders. Warwick at once marched to London, released Henry VI. from captivity, and replaced him on the throne. A general restoration of property and position to the Lancastrians took place. Warwick and his brothers resumed their offices, and Clarence was recognized as successor to the throne in default of heirs-male to Henry VI. (1470).

But this turn of fortune was as brief as it was sudden. The house of Lancaster was finally overthrown by another revolution as capricious and inexplicable as any of those which had already marked this extraordinary conflict. Henry VI. had only been a few months on the throne when Kdward, with the assistance of the duke of Burgundy, landed in Yorkshire, and, gathering troops as he went, marched upon London. He was joined by "false, fleeting, perjured"" Clarence, and admitted into the capital by Warwick's brother the archbishop. On Easter-Day 1471 the forces of the king and the earl met at Barnet, and the former won a complete victory. The earl and his brother Montague were slain. Soon afterwards the battle of Tewkesbury and the death of Prince Edward extinguished the last hopes of the Lancastrian party.

The carecr of the king-makeris chiefly remarkable as illustrating the grandeurs and the evils of feudalism. Warwick's landed property was enormous, comprising, according to the deed by which his widow made it over to Henry VIL, upwards of 110 manors in 21 counties, besides the city of Worcester, the islands of Guern- sey, Jersey, Alderney, and Sark, and various places in Wales. Commynes tells us that at Calais he was so popular that cvery one wore his badge, "no man esteeming himself gallant whose head was not adorned with his ragged staff." Stow (Annals) says that "at his house in London six oxen were usually eaten at a break-fast, and every tavern was full of his meat, for who that had any acquaintance in his family should have as much sodden and roast as he could carry on a long dagger." In a time of civil war and a disputed title to the throne, such a man was naturally too strong for a subject. The restoration of order and the maintenance of the sovereignty of the state rendcred inevitable the disappearance of the class so vigorously represented by the " Last of the Barons."

See Dugdale, Baronage of England; P. de Commynes, Memoirs: Lingard, History of England; Pauli, Geschichte England's. (G. W. P.)

WAS—WAS

WASHINGTON, the seat of government of the United States, forms a part of the District of Columbia, which is under the immediate government of the United States. The city of Washington as a corporation has had no

exist- ence since 1871, when Congress abolished the charters of that city and of Georgetown (also within the District of Columbia), and placed the entire District under one government.

The District of Columbia occupies an area of about 70 square miles, on the north-eastern bank of the Potomac, about 100 miles above its mouth, and at the head of tide and of navigation. Most of its area is a plateau, elevated 300 to 400 feet above the river, and traversed by the Anacostia river and Rock creek. Just above the mouth of the former stream, the bluffs, which form the descent from the plateau, recede from the river, leaving an area of bottom land about 6 square miles in extent between that stream and the Potomac. This bottom land is undulating, much of it being but slightly elevated above the river, while the highest parts are scarcely more than 100 feet above high tide. The city of Washington is built upon this bottom land, while its immediate suburbs extend up the bluffs and over the plateau to the northward. The bluffs return to the river imme- diately above the city, and upon their slopes is built the old city of Georgetown, which is practically con- tinuous with Washington. There are several suburban villages scattered over the district, including Mount Pleasant, Tenallytown, Brightwood, Le Droit Park, and Uniontown.

The climate of Washington is characterized by great humidity, long-continued but not excessive heat in summer, with mild winters. Snow does not often fall, and never lies long on the ground.

Three railroads enter the city, the Baltimore and Ohio and the Pennsylvania, which afford communication with the north and west, and the Richmond and West Point Terminal, which extends southward. Besides its railroad connexions, regular lines of steamers ply to northern and southern ports during most of the year.

The plan of the city is regular and symmetrical. Radiating from the Capitol are three streets, running north, south, and east, and known respectively as North, South, and East Capitol Streets. These, together with a line of public parks running west from the Capitol, divide the city into quarters, known as the north-west, north- east, south-east, and south-west quarters. The streets run in the cardinal directions, the north and south ones being designated by numbers, and the east and west ones by

the letters of the alphabet,—the numbers increasing eastward and westward from the meridian of the Capitol, the letters progressing northward and southward from a parallel through that building. In addition to these streets, there is a system of avenues, which run diagonally to the cardinal directions, and which bear the names of States. The intersections of the streets and avenues have given opportunity for the construction of many small parks in the forms of triangles, circles, quadrilaterals, é&c., which, with the numerous larger parks scattered about the city, add greatly to its beauty and healthfulness. The streets have a total length of 2334 miles. They are wider than in any other city on the globe, the avenues ranging in width from 120 to 160 feet, while the streets range from 80 to 120 feet. The area comprised in the streets, avenues, and public parks is considerably more than half the area of the city. As the width of the streets is in most cases in excess of the demands of travel, a portion of this width has, in the residence streets, been left between the side walks and the houses, and has been improved as a public parking. In some cases, similar parking has been

WASHI

left in the middle of the streets. Of the 233} miles of streets, 30 per cent. are paved with smooth pavements, either asphalt, coal-tar, concrete, or asphalt blocks ; 10 per cent. are paved with granite or trap blocks, and an equal extent with cobble or rubble; 44 per cent. are macadamized, and 14 per cent. are gravelled, while the remainder are unimproved. The paved streets are swept by machinery at frequent intervals, With the exception of the business streets every street is lined with shade trees, which, arching over the pavements, form continuous shade for miles. The trees are mainly elms and maples.

orry. |

The river is crossed by three bridges,—the Long Bridge, by which the city is directly connected with the Virginia shore, the Aqueduct Bridge, so named because it formerly carried the Chesapeake and Ohio Canal, and the Chain Bridge, farther up the river.

The water supply of the District comes from the It is taken out of the river at the head of a

Potomac.

NGTON 383

cataract, known as Great Falls, about 16 miles above the city. It is brought to the distributing reservoir, just above Georgetown, in an aqueduct, passing through a receiving reservoir on the way, and is thence brought to Washington and Georgetown through iron mains. No pumping is done, except to supply the suburbs on the bluffs. The water is excellent, and the supply ample. In order to give a stronger head in certain sections of the city, a tunnel has been constructed to conduct a part of the supply from the distributing reservoir to a third reservoir, north of the middle of the city. The sewer system of the city was not, like its streets, planned in advance, but was suffered to grow up, and is in con- sequence imperfect. There are three main outlet sewers, one emptying into the Potomac just above the Long Bridge, another near the mouth of the Anacostia, while the third, after skirting the city at the base of the blufis, empties into the Anacostia. The houses are generally

&

2

<> Oy s Xx ZEEE

Cen ow

4%

con

Plan of Washington.

connected with the sewers. with gas and electric lights.

The District has an excellent common school system, modelled after that of New England ; it is managed by a board of trustees appointed by the commissioners. Sepa- rate schools are maintained for white and coloured pupils.

The District of Columbia is governed by three com- Inissioners, appointed by the president of the United States. They perform the executive duties, the various departments of the civic government being apportioned among them. Legislation for the District is enacted by Congress. The District has courts of its own, the judges being appointed by the president. The people have no voice in the management of affairs. Thus is presented the singular spectacle of the capital of a great republic governed by an absolute monarchy. Still more singular, perhaps, is the fact that this is the best governed municipality in the United States. The assessed valuation of the District in 1886 was $234,039,436. Of this, nearly

The city is fairly well lighted

one-half, or $113,803,090, was non-taxable, the exemp- tions being as follows :—property of the United States, $105,389,684; property of the District of Columbia, $2,058,772; private property, $6,354,634. The net debt was $21,279,600, and the rate of taxation $1°50 per $100. This enormous indebtedness was incurred in building up a beautiful city from a swampy waste. One-half of the interest upon it, as well as one-half of the current expenses of the District, is borne by the United States. Washing- ton is unique in the fact that it was planned and con- structed solely for the purpose of serving as the seat of government. It is therefore not surprising that it is without commerce or manufactures, excepting such as are required for the support of its inhabitants.

The population of the District by the last census, taken in 1885, was 203,459 (136,271 white and 67,188 coloured, the two races being in about the proportion of two to one). The population comprised within the old corporate limits of Washington was 173,606. The death-

rate of the District in 1886 was—for whites 17-96, for negroes 32°35, and for all inhabitants 22°80 per thousand. The death-rate among the white population is less than in any other American city approaching Washington in size.

The public buildings are scattered widely over the city. The Capitol (see vol. ii. p. 454) stands upon an eminence towards the eastern edge of the thickly settled portion, in the midst of extensive grounds. It consists of a central building, surmounted by a dome, and flanked by two wings, in which are the chambers of the two houses of Congress. The length of the building is 751 feet, while its breadth ranges in different parts from 121 to 324 feet. It covers nearly 34 acres. Its extreme height, from the ground to the top of the statue of Liberty, which stands upon the dome, is 307} feet. The material of the central building is sandstone, that of the wings marble, while the dome is of iron. The entire cost of the building has been $13,000,000. Besides the two houses of Congress, the Capitol is occupied by the United States Supreme Court and the library of Congress. For the latter a separate building is now in process of erection, upon ground just east of the Capitol.

The Treasury is situated 14 miles west of the Capitol, at the corner of 15th Street and Pennsylvania Avenue ; it is built mainly of granite, in the Ionic style, and measures 468 by 264 feet, with a court in the interior. It contains some 500 rooms, and cost $6,000,000. The building occupied by the state, war, and navy departments is just west of the Treasury, separated from it by the president's residence, which is known as the White House. It is

SLI

amc

ee J

p c my pte Po dia aE ifs Pi? 2 Be bo 9 J DL aN A Bie NEG 4 ah 4 AKG

{OVAOVOOM

a Ys

a

ly

AY]

CAW

Washington—Central Portion.

5. Interior Department. 6. Department of Justice. 3. State, War, and Navy | 7. Department of Agriculture.

1. Capitol.

9. int- 2. White House. Government Print

ing Office. 10. Smithsonian Inst. 8. Bureau of Engraving and | 11. National Museum. Printing. 12. City Hall.

built entirely of granite, is 567 feet long by 471 feet wide, and 128 feet in height, and cost $10,000,000. The interior department building is on F Street North, nearly equidistant from the Capitol and Treasury. It occupies two squares of the city, being 453 by 331 feet, with an interior court. It is simple in its proportion, and in the Doric style. It is built in part of freestone, in part of marble, while the interior is-of granite. This building cost $2,700,000. The post-office department building is directly opposite the interior department, and occupies a whole square. The style is Corinthian, and the material is marble. The dimensions are 300 by 204 feet, with an interior court, and its cost was $1,700,000,

Running westward from the Capitol grounds to the river is a line of public reservations, having a breadth of four squares, from B Street North to B Street 'South. Within these extensive grounds are several public structures,—the botanic gardens, the buildings of the Fish Commission, the army medical museum, the national museum, the Smithsonian Institution, the department of

Departments. 4. Treasury.

WASHINGTON

lorry.

agriculture, and the Washington monument. All these are of brick, with the exception of the Smithsonian Institu- tion, which is of brown sandstone, and the monument, which is of marble. This is a plain obelisk, 55 feet square at the base and 555 feet in height. The White House is situated between the Treasury and the building of the state, war, and navy departments, on Pennsylvania Avenue, in the midst of ample grounds. It is of sandstone, 170 feet long by 86 feet wide. Among the other public buildings are the naval observatory, the Government printing office, the navy yard, artillery barracks, marine barracks, naval hospital, the city hall, the bureau of engraving and printing, and the pension office. Outside the former city limits are the Government asylum for the insane, the national college for the deaf and dumb, the reform school, and in the midst of a large and beautiful public park the soldiers' home, a retreat for aged and disabled soldiers.

It was the design of those who laid out the city that its principal growth should be east of the Capitol. Certain causes, however, prevented this result, and sent the wealth and fashion into the north-western quarter. This quarter contains at present more than half the population and over three-quarters of the taxable property of the District. In this section are many thousands of residences of fine and varied architecture, the display of which has been much encouraged by the freedom of the building regulations.

Washington is one of the most cosmopolitan of cities. Its population is not only drawn from all parts of the United States, but every civilized nation has its represent- atives there. Its social life is characterized by a degree of variety and freedom rarely enjoyed elsewhere. It has become in recent years the American centre of scientific thought, and is rapidly gathering men of letters.

Washington was sclected as the site for the federal capital in 1790. The States of Maryland and Virginia had ceded to the

. general Government a tract of land 10 miles square, lying on both

sides of the Potomac, for that purpose. The Virginia portion was subsequently re-ceded to that State. In 1790 Georgetown was a city of considerable importance, but upon the site of Washington there were very few settlers. The plan of the city was drawn by Major l'Enfant, and the city laid out in accordance therewith by Andrew Ellicott. At that time the greater part of the site lying west of the Capitol was a morass, well-nigh impassable. The machinery of the government was moved to Washington in 1800, when it was "a backwoods settlement in the wilderness." It existed principally upon paper, and the magnificence of the plan only served to emphasize the poverty of the execution. In 1814, during the second war with Great Britain, it was captured by the British troops, and the Capitol, together with most of the other public buildings, was burned. In 1839 it was described as a "large straggling village reared in a drained swamp." Indeed, in 1871, although it had attained to considerable size, it was exceed- ingly backward in all municipal improvements. The public build- ings and grounds were neglected. The streets were deep in mud, or clouded with dust; the unbuilt portions were morasses; and the sewerage was worse than useless. In that year Congress abolished the charters of the two cities, and instituted a form of territorial government, with a governor and a legislative assembly. The matter of municipal improvement was placed in the hands of a board of public works, with authority to carry out a comprehensive scheme. The work was commenced and pushed forward with the greatest encrgy, and almost fabulous results were achieved. In a very few years the appearance of the city was revolutionized. The cost of these improvements, was, however, enormous, and it was increased greatly by the rapidity with which the work was done. Much of it, too, was badly executed, so that it has been necessary to replace it. But, in spite of these drawbacks, the fact that Washington is one of the most beautiful and comfortable cities in the world is principally due to the first governor of the District and his board of public works. This government lived too fast to live long, In 1874

Congress abolished the territorial form, and established the present government by three commiissioners.

The following figures illustrate the growth of the District in popu- lation : —1800, 14,093; 1820, 33,039; 1840, 43,712; 1860, 75,080; 1870, 131,700; 1880, 177,624; 1885, 203,459. Washington had 109,199 inhabitants in 1870, and 147,293 in 1880, (2, G,)*

Ly

See vol. xvii, Plate XXIV.

TERRITORY. |

WASHINGTON, a Territory of the United States, is the extreme north-western political subdivision of the Union (except the detached Alaska), and is bounded on the N. by the Canadian province of British Columbia, on the E. by Idaho Territory, on the S. by Oregon, and on the W. by the Pacific Ocean. It lies between 45° 40’ and 49° 0’ N. lat. and 117° 0’ and 124° 44’ W. long., and has a total land area within its boundaries of 66,880 square miles and a water area of 3114 square niles ; its average length from east to west is 330 miles and from north to south is 220 miles. The Territory is divided by the Cascade Mountains into two unequal sections, which have very different climatic and physical characteristics and commercial and business interests. The climate is very mild, on account of the warm oceanic current from Japan which flows south along the coast. The moisture-bearing winds moving inland from the ocean are chilled against the Cascade Mountains, and cause the western section of the Territory to have’a very heavy annual rainfall (about 53 inches), which is quite evenly distributed throughout the year. ‘The summers are cool and pleasant and the winters mild; flowers bloom in the open air every month in the year, and the nights are always cool and refreshing. The climate in the western section is similar to that of Scotland. That of the eastern section is remarkable for clearness and brightness; it is hot and dry in summer, and has a brief and severe winter. The climate is tempered by a remarkable balmy wind, called the Chinook wind, coming over the mountains from the great Japanese current of the Pacific. In the summer it is a cool wind tempering the heat, and in the winter it is a

warm wind, before which snow and ice disappear with marvellous rapidity.

The Cascade range is the local name of the extension through the Territory of the Sierra Nevada, the great and sharply-defined mountain chain which extends at a distance from shore of about 100 miles through the Pacific States and Territories (see vol. xxiii. pp. 800-1). To the north of the Columbia river the range widens out considerably into a region of high grassy mountain plateaus, of deep caiions, heavily timbered slopes, and high peaks of volcanic origin, furnishing mountain scenery of indescribable grandeur. The western slopes are covered with magnificent forests, principally of fir, the trees growing to an immense size. The mountain plateaus are from 3000 to 5000 feet in elevation, untimbered and covered with excellent grass, furnishing a large extent of valuable pasture-land. On the eastern slope the forests are more open, and consist principally of blue and yellow pine, tamarack, fir, and white cedar. The Northern Pacific Railroad reaches the sea by two routes, one of which goes down the Columbia river, and the other crosses the Cascade range by the Yakima Pass in 47° 20' N. lat.; this pass has an elevation

of 3600 feet, and is in a region of beautiful deeply-

embosomed lakes, the high cliff-like banks of which are crowned with splendid evergreen forests. To the north of the Yakima Pass the range becomes higher, and more rough and rugged than it is farther south. There seems to have been a volcanic centre between the Yakima and Wenatchee and about midway between the upper Yakima lakes and the Columbia, the highest peak of which is known as Mount Stuart, from which poured a grand flood of lava to the east and south, forming the elevated range between the Yakima and Wenatchee known as the Wenatchee Mountains, and crossing the present channel of the Columbia and forming Badger Mountain on the east. To the north of the 48th parallel, which is about the line of the Spokane river and the westward-flowing portion of the upper Columbia, the country changes, becoming more independent in its mountain formations,

WASHINGTON

and the eastern jutting ranges of the Cascades meet and join with the earlier rock materials of the western spurs of the Rocky Mountains. Here the great interior basin may be considered as ending, for to the north the Rocky and Cascade ranges approach, and are blended in inextricable confusion. The principal rivers having their sources in the Cascade Mountains on the west are the Nooksack, Skagit, Steilaguamish, Snohomish, Puyallup, and Nisqually flowing into Puget Sound, the Chehalis flowing into Gray's Harbour, and the Cowlitz and Lewis rivers flowing into the Columbia; while on the east are the Methow, Chelan, Wenatchee, Yakima, and Klickitat, flowing into the Columbia, The mountains are well stocked with large game, as deer, bear, mountain sheep, mountain goats, wolves, panthers, foxes, &c., the valleys, plateaus, and lakes with feathered game, and the streams and lakes with trout and salmon.

The western section of the Territory lying between the Cascades and the ocean is the smaller of the two, and is covered with timber throughout nearly its entire extent. The principal natural feature is Puget Sound—one of the most beautiful sheets of salt water in the world, if not in- deed the most beautiful. It isan arm of the sea joining the waters of the Gulf of Georgia and Strait of Juan de Fuca, and stretching about a hundred miles to the south into the heart of the country; it has a great number of bays, coves, inlets, and channels branching off from the main sound, altogether forming a collection of harbours unsurpassed in the world. The total area of the Sound is about 2000 square miles, with a shore-line of about 1600 miles. The water is very deep, in places more than 800 feet, the ordinary depths in the inlets and channels being from 300 to 600 feet. These depths in some places continue right up to the shore, so that vessels of the deepest draught could go and tie up to the trees on the banks as to a wharf. The tides in Puget Sound vary ordinarily from about 9 feet at Port Townsend to 15 feet or more at Olympia and the remote inlets. Along the shores, and for many miles back, the country is covered with the densest growth of very fine timber. The region of the Olympic Mountains lying between Puget Sound and the Pacific has never been explored to any extent, owing to the enormous difficulties of penetrating the forests,

which, besides the standing trees, consist of masses of fallen timber and undergrowth. No rivers or creeks navigable for canoes penetrate any distance into it. There is no doubt that Puget Sound once extended much farther south, and occupied the Willamette valley of Oregon. Its retrogres- sion has left large areas of low-lying land bordering the Sound and between it and the Columbia, which, when brought under cultivation, are found to be remarkably fertile. There are large areas of these low-lying lands covered with water at the highest tides which could be easily reclaimed by dyking ; about 30,000 acres have been so reclaimed, and it is estimated that 150,000 acres besides can be thus improved. There are no good harbours along the Pacific coast of the Territory ; but on the Straits of Juan de Fuca several fine ones exist. Western Waslhing- ton is specially adapted to raising all the grasses, oats, hops, the root-crops, and fruits; whatever requires great heat does not ripen well.

Eastern Washington Territory differs in a very marked manner and in almost every material respect from the western section. South of the 48th parallel and east of the Cascades it is essentially a prairie country, which owes its origin to the great lava flow that covered eastern Oregon and northern California. This lava has disinte- grated in the course of ages, and produced a soil which is unsurpassed in the world for richness. The region lying between the Blue Mountains and the Snake river, known

as the Walla Walla country, and that between the Snake and the Spokane, known as the Palouse and Spokane countries, are noted for their fertility. This is also the case with the regions along the eastern foot-hills of the Cascades known generally as the Yakima and Kittitass countries. In these regions there is sufficient rainfall to enable the agriculturist to raise almost every product of the temperate zone of the finest quality and in the greatest abundance. Besides the cereals, such as wheat, oats, barley, flax, &c., there are grown grapes, apples, cherries, peaches, prunes, potatoes, both white and sweet, tobacco, cotton, broom corn, sorghum, peanuts, egg plants, dc. Over a large part of this eastern section, however, the rainfall is not sufficient, and irrigation must be resorted to. With irrigation

properly conducted it is safe to say that nearly every foot of land now classed as desert will be found to be as productive as the regions more favoured by rain.

That part of eastern Washington Territory north of the Columbia and Spokane rivers is a region of low-timbered mountains and fertile valleys. This is mostly given up to the Indians, there being the two large reservations called the Columbia and Colville reservations stretching from the Cascade Mountains eastward to the southward-flowing portion of the Columbia, and embracing 7880 square miles of land. North of the Spokane river is the Colville country, which is open to settlement, and in which are much good land and large quantities of valuable timber.

The most important feature of eastern Washington is the Columbia river, which enters the Territory from British Columbia at abont 117° 30' W. long., and pursues nearly a southerly course to the "Big Bend," a distance of 110 miles, where it takes a westerly course, which it keeps for 93 miles until it receives the waters of the Okinakanc, where it changes its course again to the south, keeping it for 224 miles, until it unites with its greatest tributary, the Snake river; from this point it keeps a westerly coursc, breaking through the Cascades, and entering the Pacific in lat. 46° 15'. It forms the boundary between Washington Territory and Oregon for this latter part of its course. The lower portion of the Columbia is described under OrEGoN (g.v). The upper part ulay be briefly described as a deeply cafioned river with numerous rapids and falls, which make it unnavigable and in all probability incapable of improvement. The Kettle Falls, near the northern boundary, are the most marked on the river, being about 25 feet at low water. Here each year the Indians from all directions gather on neutral ground to take salmon for their next ycar's subsistence. A salmon chief is elected, whose dutics are to keep order and to divide equitably all the fish taken. 'The fish are taken in baskets as they try to jump the falls, those that fail falling back into the baskets. That part of the Columbia from the northern boundary-line to the "Big Bend" is the most beautiful portion of the river within the Territory, except where it breaks through the Cascades. Throughout this portion there is considerable bottom-land, and this and the neighbouring hills and mountains are well covered with fine open timber, with charming little grassy prairies

scattered here and there. Below the Big Bend the cafion of the Columbia becomes more prominent, the timber recedes fvom the banks, and the channel narrows between basalt rocks, and in places is highly dangerous to anyone who entrusts himsclf upon the waters. The general depth of the cafion is about 2000 feet. Much gold is found in the sand bars and low terraces along the river.

The principal tributaries of the Columbia within the Territory are Clarke's Fork, the outlet of Lake Pend d'Oreille, an unnavigable stream flowing througha deep cafion, which enters the Columbia just above the northern boundary of the Tervitory. The Spokane river, one of the most important tributaries, is the outlet of Lake Coour d'Alenc, which drains a large extent of the Bitter Root Mountains. The Spokane, from the lake to Spokane Falls, a distance of about 30 miles, flows just below the level of a lovely prairie country ; at the falls the river takes a plunge of 156 feet, and from there to the Columbia it flows through a decp cafion. These falls of the Spokane furnish one of the finest, most accessible, and most casily controlled water-powers in the world, and already they are util- ized to a considerable extent for manufacturing purposes. The Okinakane is the next important tributary; it rises in British Columbia and flows southward through Lakes Okinakane and Oso- yoos, and enters the Territory in 119° 30' W. long. Its course lies through a rich and inviting country. At its mouth was one of the most important of the old Hudson's Bay Company's trading posts.

WASHINGTON

(TERRITORY.

The Methow river, Lake Chelan and its outlet, and the Wenatchee are rivers of considerable magnitude, draining the eastern slopes of the Cascades. They are in a mountainous country presenting few attractions to the settler. The Yakima, which also comes from the Cascades, is of far greater importance, as about its headwaters is a large amount of fine agricultural land, and the river itself and its tributaries will ultimately furnish the water for irrigating an enormous extent of very fine land now virtually desert. Already large irrigating canals, having a total length of 325 miles, are pro- jected, and work on them has been commenced.

The largest tributary of the Columbia, the Snake, joins it about 8 miles below the mouth of the Yakima. The Snake is navigable for the whole 150 miles of its course through the Territory, but has some difficult rapids. It flows through a cafion 1000 to 2000 feet deep, which it has cut for itself through the lava deposits.

An area nearly encircled by the Columbia, below the Big Bend, and the Snake, in the last 50 miles of its course, is knowu as the Great Plain of the Columbia. Its southern part is an alkalina nearly waterless desert, the principal vegetation being sage brush; the northern part is somewhat more elevated, and is for the most part a rich rolling grassy country intersected here and there by coules, or deep and almost vertical cuts, through the basalt rock underlying the soil. They indicate the former presence of large streams of water,

Forests.—Very valuable forests exist in every part of western Washington and in the northern part of eastern Washington. The sawmills on Puget Sound have a capacity of 350,000,000 feet per year, and the total capacity of the mills of the Territory is over 650,000,000 feet per year. The principal timber is yellow and red fir, ordinarily known as " Oregon pine," which constitutes the bulk of the forests; white and red cedar, spruce, and larch also abound. White pine of magnificent size grows on the upper benches of the Cascade Mountains; white fir and hemlock are also found. Alder, maple, ash, oak, and cottonwood occur in abundance on the bottom-lands of western Washington, but are not equal to timber of the same names in the east. Bull pine, yellow pine, and tamarack grow on the eastern slopes of the Cascade range, and constitute the bulk of the forests of eastern Washington. They make a fair quality of lumber, but greatly inferior to the products of the western slopes and the Pacific coast regions,

Fisheries. —The salmon fisheries of the Columbia river, Shoal- water Bay, Gray's Harbour, and Puget Sound form one of the leading industries of the Territory. The preservation of salmon in cans was commenced in 1866 on the Columbia river, and the business rapidly increased, so that now the annnal value of the pack is from 2 to 24 million dollars.

Mines and Mining.—The mineral resources of the Tervitory arc very great upon both sides of the Cascade Mountains. There are large tracts of valuable coal-lands between Puget Sound and the Cascades, stretching all the way from Bellingham Bay on the north to the Chehalis valley on the south. The veins at present worked vary from 5 to 12 feet in thickness, and in quality from lignite to bituminous coal, some of which produccs gas and coke of superio excellence. Mines are also worked on the eastern slope of the Cascades about the head of the Yakima river. The present known area of coal-lands in the Territory is about 180,000 acres, and the total shipments for the year ending June 30, 1887, amounted to 525,705 tons. The supply of coal for the Pacific coast is mainly drawn from the beds in Washington Territory and their continua- tion in British Columbia.

There are large deposits of valuable iron ore in the western part of the Territory and in the Snoqualmie Pass. Brown hematite iron ore is found in Skagit county, magnetic ore in King county, and bog iron ore of the best quality in several counties, notably Jeffer- son, King, and Pierce; but these deposits have uot yet been worked to any great extent. There can be no question, however, that the existence of coal, iron, and timber in the near vicinity of Puget Sound must make this a great manufacturing and ship- building centre. Limestone is found in great abundance on San Juan Island, in the Puyallup valley, and in the north-castern part of the Territory. Copper and lead are found in different localitics.

The northern part of eastern Washington abounds in mines of the precious mictals,.and these are now being worked on quite an extensive scale. In the Colville district (between the Columbia, Clarke's Fork, and Spokane rivers) the prevailing country rock is limestone, and the prevailing mineral is argentiferous galena ; at some points grey copper ore is found carrying both silver and lead, and in others silver chlorides are found. The development of these mines has been delayed by lack of railway facilities, but this will be remedied in a short time by lines now projected and incorporated.

The Kettle river district lies to the west of the Columbia, and in regions about the headwaters of the river. The mines are very varied in their character, comprising placer gold, gold quartz, copper, and galena with carbonates. Some of the placer mines have yielded heavily, the gold being coarse and obtained by ground sluicing.

TERRITORY. |

Very valuable quartz ledges, assaying 80 to 2000 ounces of gold per ton, have been discovered in a formation of granite and slate.

The Okinakane district comprises the mines in the vicinity of the Okinakane, Salmon, and the Similkameen rivers and Osoyoos lake. Here the formation is granite, syenitc, and porphyry, and the ores are galena, grey copper, and quartz, carrying sulphurcts and native silver.

The city of Spokane Falls, on the Northern Pacific Railroad, is the distributing point for all these mines, as well as for the Coeur d'Alene mines in northern Idaho.

Shipbuilding.—Shipyards exist at Seattle and Tacoma, and at other points on Puget Sound, at Gray's Harbour and Shoalwater Bay, and on the Columbia river. The vessels constructed are mainly schooners for the lumber-carrying trade; many of them also are provided with auxiliary steam-power. All raw materials for their construction are found in the vicinity. The yellow fir of the northern Pacific ranks next to oak for strength and durability, and constitutes excellent material for

shipbuilding. Vessels of 4854 tons were built during 1886, and the industry is rapidly growing.

Commerce.—The principal articles of export are lumber, coal, wheat, and salmon, and their annual value is from 8 to 10 millions of dollars. In the year from July 1886 to June 1887 the total entrances at Puget Sound were 994 vessels (539,597 tons), and the clearances 988 (514,441 tons).

Railways.—Washington Territory was the last of the political subdivisions of the United States to be reached by railroads, In 1883 the Northern Pacific was completed and direct rail connec- tion secured with the east.

Education.—There are about a thousand common schools in the Territory, under the supervision of a superintendent of public in- struction and a board of education of three persons, all of whom are appointed by the governor. In each county, county superin- tendents and a board of county examiners visit the schools and report to the superintendent of public instruction. There is held each year a territorial teachers' institute, and local teachers' insti- tutes are also held in different sections. These common schools are supported by county taxes and by certain criminal fines. Special taxes are also permitted in counties under certain con- ditions. There are at present about 65,000 children under instruc- tion, at a cost of about $500,000 per annum.

The general Government has set aside for educational purposes one-eighteenth of all the land in the Territory, comprising about 24 million acres. This land, however, does not become available until the Territory becomes a State. All children must attend school at least three months in the year.

There is a university at Seattle, supported by large annual appro- priations of the legislature. It has four departments at present :— literature, science, and the arts; law; medicine; and military in- struction. There are also twenty-four higher institutions of learn- ing scattered throughout the Territory, consisting of colleges, seminaries, and academies, most of which are under sectarian con- trol, and some of which have already a liberal endowment.

Churches. —All the leading Christian sects are well represented in the Territory, their membership and value of church property being about in the order given below :—Mcthodist Episcopal, Roman Catholic, Protestant Episcopal, Congregational, Baptist, Presby- terian, Christian, Lutheran, German Reformed, and Unitarian,

Government.—The administrative affairs of the Territory are in the hands of a governor, secretary, and chief justice, all appointed by the president of the United States, and a treasurer and comp- troller and an upper and lower legislative house elected by the people. The Territory is represented in Congress by a delegate also elected by the people.

Population.—The total population, 75,116 in 1880, was 143,669 (84,470 males, 59,199 females) according to the census taken in 1886 and 1887, classified as follows :—whites, 137,480; blacks, 254; mulattoes, 69; Chinese, 2584; Indian half-breeds, 3288 ; and Kanakas, 44. In addition to these there are about 11,000 Indians. The total population is now (1888) about 175,000. The capital is Olympia, and the chief city Seattle, both on Puget Sound.

Banks.—There are in the Territory 18 national banks, with a capital of $1,430,000, 5 territorial banks, with a capital of $355,000, and also a number of private banks.

History.—The first event in history relating to Washington Territory was the discovery, in 1592, of the Strait of Juan de Fuca by an old Greek pilot of that name in the service of Spain. In 1775 Captain Hecata, a Spanish navigator, discovered the mouth of the Columbia, but was unable to enter theriver. Captain Kendrick, an American navigator, in 1789 sailed into the Strait of Fuca and through the Gulf of Georgia and Queen Charlotte Sound to the Pacific, and was the first to clearly make known the character of these inland waters. On the 11th of May 1792 Captain Gray, of the American ship ' Columbia," sailed into and explored for about 15 miles the great river to which he gave the name of his ship. This first entrance into the Columbia river gave the United States their principal claim to the territory drained by the river, and is thus a very important episode in the history of the Oregon region,*

which formerly comprised the present State of Oregon and the Territories of Washington andIdaho. In October of the same ycar (1792) an Englishman, Lieutenant Broughton, sailed up and ex- amined the Columbia for about 100 miles fromits mouth. The coast soon became quite well known, and the Government of the United States fitted out a number of expeditions to obtain a knowledge of the interior. The most important of these was that of Lewis and Clarke, who were directed to ascend the Missouri, cross the Rocky Mountains, and trace the Columbia from its sources to the sca. They began the ascent of the Missouri in 1804, and spent the winter of 1804-5 at Fort Mandan. In the next season, after incredible hardships and great sufferings, they crossed the Rocky Mountains, and reached the Clearwater river. Here they made boats, and pro- ceeded down it, the Snake river, and the main Columbia, reaching the Pacific in December 1805. They returned by nearly the same route.

The next important erain the history of the Territory was the attempt of J. J. Astor to establish a fur-trading empire on the Columbia and its tributary lands and streams. Two expedition were sent out in 1810 for this purpose, one by land and one by sea. The latter reached the Columbia in 1811, and established a trading post at Astoria near the mouth of the river. The land expedition reached this post in 1812. In the meantime, in hopes of forestall- ing Astor's expeditions, the North-West Fur Company sent a party in 1810 to cross the mountains and reach the mouth of the Columbia beforethem. This expedition experienced great difficulty in crossing the mountains in 52° N. lat., but in the spring of 1811 they reached the Columbia, and went down to its mouth, where they found Astor's sea party already established. This North-West Fur Company's expedition was the first to navigate the upper Columbia, or to traverse any part of the country drained by it. In 1813 the fortunes of war compelled the transfer of the Astor Fur Company to the North-West Fur Company. MHenceforward for many years the history of the Territory is the history of the operations of the great North-West and Hudson's Bay Companies, and of the effort of private parties to get a share in the profits of the fur

trade. A number of trading posts were built, and exploring and trading expeditions sent into all parts of the country. Missionaries began to arrive, and emigrants to drift in by sea and land.

During all the years in which this region was first being cxplored and settled, a dispute had been going on between the United States and Great Britain in regard to its ownership, which at different times waxed so fierce as to threaten war. Finally an arrangement was arrived at, and in 1846 the treaty was signed fixing the boundary- line at the 49th parallel. The Territory of Oregon (comprising Washington, Idaho, and Oregon) was formed in 1848, and General Joseph Lane, the first Territorial governor, arrived in 1849, after which United States courts were established. The present Territory of Washington was established in 1853, and its first governor was Isaac I. Stevens.

The settlement of the Territory has been slow, on account of its remoteness and the fact' that it has had no great mining excitement to attract adventurous settlers. Since the advent of railroads, however, its development has been rapid. (LE Weass)

WASHINGTON, Gurorez (1732-1799), the first president of the United States, was born in Westmoreland county, Virginia, February 22 (Old Style, Feb. 11), 1732. One lawless genealogist has traced his ancestry back to Odin. Another genealogy, since given up with much regret, connected the family with the Washingtons of Northumberland or Durham, England. The ancestry of Washington can be traced no farther back than his great- grandfather, John Washington, who settled in Virginia about 1657. His eldest son, Lawrence, had three children — John, Augustine, and Mildred. Augustine Washington married twice. By the first marriage, with Jane Butler, there were four children, two of whom, Lawrence and Augustine, grew to manhood. By the second marriage, with Mary Ball, in 1730, there were six children—George, Betty, Samuel, John, Augustine, Charles, and Mildred. The father died when George was but twelve years old ; Lawrence inherited the estate now known as Mount Vernon, and George his father's usual residence, nearly opposite Fredericksburgh.

Very little is known of Washington's early life, probably because there was little unusual to tell. The story of the hatchet and the cherry-tree, and similar tales, are quite apocryphal, having been coined by Washington's most popular biographer, Weems. The boy's life was not different from that common to Virginia families in easy circumstances ; hunting, fishing, plantation affairs, and a

little reading made up its substance. His education was but elementary and very defective, except in mathematics, in which he was largely self-taught. Sparks has " edited " the spelling, grammar, and rhetoric of Washington's Writings to such an extent as to destroy their value as evidence. About 1748 we begin to know something of Washington's life. He was then at Mount Vernon with his half-brother Lawrence, who was his guardian. Law- rence was the son-in-law of his neighbour Lord Fairfax, with whom he had served at Carthagena, and had made the acquaintance of Admiral Vernon, from whom Mount Vernon was named, A commission as midshipman was obtained for George through the admiral, but the opposi- tion of the boy's mother put an end to the scheme. As a substitute, the appointment as surveyor of the enormous Fairfax property was given to Washington at the age of sixteen ; and the next three years of his life were spent in this service. He always retained a disposition to speculate in Western lands; many of his later investments were of this kind, and they are treated in Buiterfield's Washing- ton-Crawford Letters. He seems already to have impressed others with a belief in his force of mind and character, for at the age of nineteen, when the first indications of the "French and Indian war" appeared, he was appointed adjutant of the Virginia troops, with the rank of major ; on the death of his half-brother Lawrence in the following year he was executor under the will, and. residuary heir of Mount Vernon; and in 1753, when he had barely attained his majority, the young man was made commander of the northern military district of Virginia by the new leutenant-governor, Dinwiddie. It is at this point in his career that Washington appears in Thackeray's Virginians, but the portrait there drawn of a "shrewd young man" on the lookout for a rich wife is not accepted as life-like by Americans.

At the outbreak of the French and Indian war in 1753-54 Washington was the agent sent by Governor Dinwiddie to warn the French away from their new forts in western Pennsylvania ; the command of the Virginia troops who began hostilities fell to him, and his vigorous defence of Fort Necessity (see Unrrep Stars, vol. xxiii. pp. 7 34-35) made him so prominent a figure that in 1755, at the age of twenty-three, he was commissioned commander-in-chief of "all the Virginia forces. He served in Braddock's campaign, and in the final defeat showed for the first time that fiery energy which always lay hidden beneath his calm and unruffled exterior. He ranged the whole field on horseback, making himself the most conspicuous mark for Indian bullets, and, in spite of what he called the "dastardly behaviour" of the regular troops, brought the little remnant of his Virginians out of action in fair order. In spite of this reckless exposure he was one of the few unwounded officers. For a year or two his task was that of "defending a frontier of more than 350 miles with 700 men ;" but in 1758 he had the pleasure of commanding the advance guard of the expedition which captured Fort Du Quesne and renamed it Fort Pitt. The war in Virginia being then at an end, he resigned his post, married Mrs Custis, a widow, and settled at Mount Vernon.

Washington's life for the next twenty years was merely that of a typical Virginia planter, a consistent member of the Established (Episcopal) Church, a large slaveholder, a strict but considerate master, and a widely trusted man of affairs. His extraordinary escape in Braddock's defeat had led a colonial minister to declare in a sermon his be- lief that the young man had been preserved to be "the saviour of his country." If there was any such impression it soon died away, and Washington gave none of his associates reason to consider him an uncommonly endowed man. His marriage had brought him an increase of about

$100,000 in his estate ; and his diaries show comparatively little reading, a minutely methodical conduct of business, a wide acquaintance with the leading men of the country, but no strong indications of what is usually

considered to be " greatness." As in the case of Lincoln, he was educated into greatness by the increasing weight of his responsibilities and the manner in which he met them. Like others of the dominant caste in Virginia, he was repeatedly elected to the legislature, but he is not known to have made any set speeches in that body, or to have said anything beyond a statement of his opinion and the reasons for it. That he thought a great deal, and took full advantage of his legislative experiences as a political education, is shown by his letter of April 5, 1769, to his neighbour George Mason, communicating the Philadelphia non-importation resolu- tions, which had just reached him. He considers briefly the best peaceable means of resistance to the policy of the ministry, but even at that early date faces frankly and fully the probable final necessity of resisting by force, and endorses it. Without speech-making, he took a promi- nent part in struggles of his legislature against Governor Dunmore, and his position was always a radical one. He even opposed petitions to the king and parliament, on the ground that the question had been put by the ministry on the basis of right, not of expediency, that the ministry could not abandon the right and the colonists could not admit it, and that petitions must be, as they had been, | rejected. 'Shall we," says he in a letter, "after this whine and cry for relief?" In 1774 the Virginia Conven- tion, appointing seven of its members as delegates to the Continental Congress, named Washington as one of them ; and with this appointment his national career begins. Washington's letters during his service in Congress show that he was under no delusions as to the outcome of the taxation struggle, and that he expected war. In one letter he says that if the ministerial policy is persisted in 'more blood will be shed than history has ever yet furnished instances of in the annals of North America." His associates in Congress recognized his military ability at once, and most of the details of work looking towards pre-parations for armed resistance were by common consent left to him. Even in the intervals of his Congressional service he was occupied in urging on the formation, equipment, and training of Virginia troops, and it was generally understood that, in case of war, Virginia would expect him to act as her commander-in-chief. History was not to be cheated in that fashion. The two most powerful colonies were Virginia and Massachusetts. War began in Massachusetts; New England troops poured in almost spoutaneously ; it was necessary to ensure the support of the

colonies to the southward ; and the Virginia colonel who was at the head of all the military committees was just the man whom the New England delegates desired. When Congress, after the fights at Lexington and Concord, resolved to put the colonies into a state of defence, the first practical step was the unanimous selection, on motion of John Adams of Massachusetts, of Washington as commander-in-chief of the armed forces of the United Colonies. Refusing any salary, he accepted the position, asking "every gentleman in the room," however, to remember his declaration that he did not believe himself to be equal to the command, and that he accepted it only as a duty made imperative by the unanimity of the call. He reiterated this belief in private letters even to his wife ; and there seems to be no doubt that, to the day of his death, he was the most determined sceptic as to his fitness for the positions to which he was called in succession. He was commissioned June 19, 1775, and reached Cambridge, Mass., July 2, taking command of the levies there assembled for action against the British

garrison of Boston. The battle of Bunker Hill had already taken place, and Washington's work until the following spring was to bring about some semblance of military discipline, to obtain ammunition and military stores, to correspond with Congress and the colonial governors, to guide military operations in the widely separated parts of a great continent, to create a military system and organization for a people who were entirely unaccustomed to such a thing and impatient under it, and to bend the course of events steadily towards driving the British out of Boston. It is not easy to see how Washing- ton survived the year 1775; the colonial poverty, the exasperating annoyances, the selfishness or stupidity which cropped out again and again from the most patriotic of his coadjutors, were enough to have broken down most men. They completed his training. The change in this one winter is very evident. If he was not a great man when he went to Cambridge, he was a general and a statesman in the best sense when he drove the British out of Boston in March 1776. From that time until his death he was the foremost man of the continent.

The military operations of the remainder of the war are given elsewhere(see UNITED STATES, vol. xxili. pp. 743-745). Washington's retreat through the Jerseys ; the manner in which he turned and struck his pursuers at Trenton and Princeton, and then established himself at Morristown so as to make the way to Philadelphia impassable; the vigour with which he handled his army at Chad's Ford and Germantown; the persistence with which he held the strategic position of Valley Forge through the dreadful winter of 1777-78, in spite of the misery of his men, the clamours of the people, and the impotence of the fugitive Congress,— all went to show that the fibre of his public character had been hardened to its permanent quality. The Valley Forge winter was said to be "the time that tried men's souls: " Washington's had no need to fear the test. It was a serious addition to his burdens that the spirit which culminated in Benedict Arnold chose this moment to make its appearance. Many of the American officers had been affronted by the close personal friendship which had sprung up between La Fayette and Washington, and by the diplomatic deference which the commander- in-chief felt compelled to show to other foreign officers. Some of the latter showed no gratitude. The name of one of them, Conway, an Irish soldier of fortune from the French service, is attached to what was called "' Conway's Cabal." He formed a scheme for replacing Washington in the command by Gates, who had just succeeded in forcing Burgoyne to surrender at Saratoga; and a number of officers and men in civil life were mixed up init. The methods employed were the lowest forms of anonymous slander, and at the first breath of exposure every one con- cerned hurried to cover up his part in it, leaving Conway to shoulder all the responsibility. The treaty of 1778 with France put an end to every such plan. It was a flat absurdity to expect foreign nations to deal with a second. rate man as commander-in-chief while Washington was in existence, and he seems to have had no more trouble of this kind. The prompt and vigorous pursuit of Clinton across the Jerseys towards New York, and the battle of Monmouth, in which the plan of battle was thwarted by Charles Lee, another of the foreign officers, closed the direct military record of Washington until the end of the war. The enemy confined their movements to other parts of the continent, and Washington did little more than watch their headquarters in New York city. It was more than appropriate, however, that he who had been the mainspring of the war, and had borne far more than his share of

its burdens and discouragements, should end it with the campaign of Yorktown, conceived by himself, and

the surrender of Cornwallis. The war was then really over, but the commander-in-chief retained his commission until December 28, 1783, when he returned it to Congress, then in session at Annapolis, Md., and retired to Mount Vernon.

By this time the canonization of Washington had fairly begun. He occupied such a position in the American political system as no man could possibly hold again. He had become a political element, quite apart from the Union, the States, or the people of either. Ina country where communication was still slow and difficult, the general knowledge that Washington favoured anything superseded argument and the necessity of information with very many men. His constant correspondence with the governors of the States gave him a quasi-paternal attitude towards government in general. On resigning his com- mission, for example, he was able to do what no other man could have done with propriety or safety: he addressed a circular letter to the governors of the States, pointing out changes in the existing form of government which he believed to be necessary. His refusal to accept a salary, as general or as president, would have been taken as affectation or impertinence in anyone else; it seemed natural and proper enough in the case of Washington, but it was his peculiar privilege. It is possible that he might have had a crown if he had even been willing. The army, at the end of the war, was justly dissatisfied with its treat- ment. The officers were called to meet at Newburgh, and it was the avowed purpose of the leaders of the movement that the army should march westward, appropriate vacant lands, leave Congress to negotiate for peace without an army, and "mock at their calamity and laugh when their fear cometh." It was the less publicly avowed purpose to make their commander-in-chief king, if he could be per- suaded to aid in establishing a monarchy. Washington put a summary stop to the whole proceeding. Their letter to him detailed the weakness of a republican form of government as they had experienced it,

their desire for ‘“‘a mixed government,” with him at its head, and their belief that “the title of king” would be objectionable to few and of material advantage to the country. His reply was peremptory, andevenangry. He stated in plain terms his abhorrence of the proposal ; he was at a loss to conceive what part of his conduct could have encouraged their ad- dress ; they could not have found “a person to whom their schemes were more disagreeable ;” and he threatened them with exposure unless the affair was stopped at once. His influence, and that alone, secured the quiet disbanding of the discontented army. His influence was as powerful after he had retired to Mount Vernon as before his resigna- tion. He was in constant correspondence with public men in every part of the country. He received from them such a store of suggestions as came to no other man, digested it, and was able from it to speak with what seemed infal- lible wisdom. In the midst of his voluminous correspond- ence, the minute details in his diaries of tree-planting and rotation of crops, and his increasing reading on the political side of history, he found time for a stream of visitors. Among these, in March 1785, were the commissioners from Virginia and Maryland, who met at Alexandria to form a commercial code for Chesapeake Bay, and made an opportunity to visit Mount Vernon. From that moment the current of events, leading into the Annapolis convention of 1786 and the final convention of the next year, shows Washington’s close supervision at every point.

When the Federal Convention met at Philadelphia in May 1787 to frame the present constitution he was present as a delegate from Virginia, though much against his will ; and a unanimous vote at once made him its presiding officer. He took no part in the debates, however, beyond

such suggestive hints as his proposal to amend a restriction of the standing army to 5000 men by forbidding any enemy to invade the United States with more than 3000. He approved the constitution which was decided upon, believ- ing, as he said, “that it was the best constitution which could be obtained at that epoch, and that this or a dissolu- tion awaits our choice, and is the only alternative.” All his influence was given

to secure its ratification, and his influence was probably decisive. When it had been ratified, and the time came to elect a president, there was no more hesitation than if the country had been a theocracy. The office of president had been 'cut to fit the measure of George Washington," and no one thought of any other person for it. The unanimous vote of the electors made him the first president of the United States ; their unani- mous vote re-elected him in 1792-93 ; and, even after he had positively refused to serve for a third term, two electors obstinately voted for him in 1796-97. The public events of his presidency are given elsewhere (see UNITED STATES, vol. xxill. pp. 752-755). One can hardly follow them with- out receiving the conviction that the sudden success of the new system was due mainly to the existence at that time of such a character as Washington. He held the two natural parties apart, and prevented party contest until the new form of government had been firmly established. It seems hardly possible that the final result should have been baulked, even if 'blood and iron" had been necessary to bring it about. It would be unwise to attribute the quiet attainment of the result to the political sense of the American people alone, or to use it as an historical pre- cedent for the voluntary assumption of such a risk again, without the advantage of such a political factor as Washington.

No greater mistake could be made, however, than to think that the influence of the president was fairly appreciated during his term of office. He attempted to balance party against party, to divide his cabinet between them, and to neutralize the effects of parties in that way. The consequence was that the two leading members of the cabinet soon occupied the position, to use the words of one of them, of "two game-cocks in a pit." The unconscious drift of Washington's mind was toward the Federal party ; his letters to La Fayette and Henry, in December 1798 and January 1799, are enough to make that evident. When the Republican party was formed, about 1793, it could not have been expected that its leaders would long submit with patience to the continual interposition of Washington's name and influence between themselves and their opponents; but they maintained a calm exterior. Some of their followers were less discreet. The president's proclamation of neutrality between France and Great Britain excited them to anger ; his support of Jay's treaty with Great Britain roused them to fury. Forged letters, purporting

to show his desire to abandon the revolutionary struggle, were published ; he was accused of drawing more than his salary ; hints of the propriety of a guillotine for his benefit began to appear; some spoke of him as the "stepfather of his country." The attacks embittered the close of his term of service; he declared, in a cabinet meeting in 1793, that "he had never repented but once the having slipped the moment of resigning his office, and that was every moment since." Indeed, the most un- pleasant portions of Jefferson's Ana are those in which, with an air of psychological dissection, he details the storms of passion into which the president was hurried by the news- paper attacks upon him. These attacks, however, came from a very small fraction of the politicians ; the people never wavered in their devotion to the president, and his election would have been unanimous in 1796, as in 1789 and. 1792, if he had been willing to serve.

WABHINGTON

[PRESIDENT.

All accounts agree that Washington was of imposing presence. He measured just 6 feet when prepared for burial ; but his height, in his prime, as given in his orders for clothes from London, was 3 inches more. La Fayette says that his hands were "the largest he ever saw on aman." Custis says that his complexion was " fair, but considerably florid." His weight was about 220 ib. The various and widely-differing portraits of him find exhaustive treatment in the seventh volume of Winsor's Narrative and Critical History of the United States. The editor thinks that " the favourite profile has been unquestionably Houdon's, with Stuart's canvass for the full face, and probably Trumbull's for the figure." Stuart's face, however, gives the popular notion of Washington, though it has always been a subject of curious speculation to some minds how much of the calm and benign expres- sion of the face was due to the shape of Washington's false teeth.

Washington was childless: said the people of his time, he was the father only of his country. Collateral branches of the family have given the Lees, the Custises, and other families a claim to an infusion of the blood ; but no direct descendants of Washington can claim his honours, or disgrace

his name. His estate of Mount Vernon was acquired in 1858 by an association, and has been practically national property ever since.

Retiring from the presidency in 1797, Washington resumed the plantation life which he most loved, the society of his family, and the care of his slaves. He had resolved some time before never to obtain another slave, and 'wished from his soul" that his State could be persuaded to abolish slavery; "it might prevent much future mischief." He was too old, however, to attempt further innovations. In 1798 he was made commander- in-chief of the provisional army raised in expectation of open war with France, and was fretted almost beyond endurance by the quarrels of Federalist politicians about the distribution of commissions. In the midst of his inilitary preparations, he was struck down by sudden illness, which lasted but for a day, and he died at Mount Vernon, December 14, 1799. The third of the series of resolutions introduced in the house of representatives five days after his death, by John Marshall, and passed unanimously, states exactly, ifa trifle rhetorically, the position of. Washington in American history: 'first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen."

Washington's disorder was an cedematous affection of the wind-pipe, contracted by careless exposure during a ride in a snow-storm, and aggravated by neglect afterwards, and by such contemporary remedies as excessive bleeding, gargles of " molasses, vinegar, and butter" and "' vinegar and sage tea," which 'almost suffocated him," and a blister of cantharides on the throat. He died without theatrical adieus ; his last words were only business direc- tions, affectionate remembrances to relatives, and repeated apologies to the physicians and attendants for the trouble he was giving them. Just before he died, says his secre- tary, Mr Lear, he felt his own pulse; his countenance changed ; the attending physician placed his hands over the eyes of the dying man, '"'and he expired without a struggle or a sigh."

Any complete bibliography of books relating to Washington would be voluminous. Lives have been written by Weems, Marshall (1804-7), Ramsay (1807), A. Bancroft (1826), and Irving (1855). See also Sparks's Writings of Washington (1834-87) ; Rush's Domestic Life of Washington

(1857); G. W. P. Custis's Recollections of Washington (1860) ; Baker's Character Portraits of Washington (1887); Science, December 11, 1885 (an attempt to make a composite portrait of Washington); Winsor's Narrative

| and Critical History of the United States (editor's article) ;

Bancroft's United States (final revision) ; Schouler's United States ; M'Master's United States. (A. J.)

WASPS

WASPS. The order Hymenoptera is divided into two sub-orders, the Zerebrantia and the Aculeata. The latter is subdivided into several sub-sections, one of which, the Diploptera (Latreille), includes all the true wasps.

The Diploptera are in their turn divided into three families—(1) the Vespida, (2) the Hwmenidz, and (3) the Masaridx, which together comprise some 1000 different species. They are characterized by their wings, which are present in both sexes and also in the neuters, being longitudinally folded when at rest. The antenne are usually elbowed, and contain twelve or thirteen joints; in some cases they are clavate. A pair of notched faceted eyes are present, and three ocelli in the top of the head. The mouth-parts are arranged for sucking, but have not reached that degree of perfection found amongst the bees. Hence wasps cannot obtain the sugary secretion from deeply- seated nectaries, and their visits to flowers are confined to such as are shallow or widely opened; they particularly frequent the Umbellifere. The maxille are elongated, and compressed, the maxillary palp six-jointed. The labinm bears a tongue which is glandular at the tip; the paraglossze are linear. The labial palp has three or four joints. The thorax is oval, and its sides prolonged backward to the base of the wings. The fore wing has two or three sub-marginal cells. The legs are not provided with any adaptations for collecting pollen. The abdomen is some- times pedunculate, its anterior segment being drawn out into a long stalk, which connects it with the thorax. The females and the neuters are armed with a powerful sting. The

usual colour of these insects is black, relieved to a greater or less degree by spots and patches of yellow or buff.

The Diploptera may be subdivided into two groups in accordance with the habits of life of the insects comprising the section. One of the groups includes the family Vespide, which is composed of social wasps, and includes the hornet (Vespa crabro) and the common wasp (V. vulgaris). The other group contains two smaller families, the Humenide and the Masaridx, the members of which are solitary in their mode of life.

Family I. Vespide.—In addition to their social habits the members of this family are characterized by certain structural features. The anterior wings have three sub- marginal cells. The antenne have thirteen joints in the males and twelve in the females; the claws of the tarsi are simple ; the anterior four tibice have two spines at the tip ; the abdomen is but rarely pedunculated, and the posterior segments are often very contractile.

The members of this family approximate very closely to bees in their social manner of life. The communities are composed of males, females, and neuters or workers. The latter are females in which the ovary remains undeveloped ; they resemble the perfect female in external appearance, but are slightly smaller. Unlike the bees', the wasps' com- munity is annual, existing for one summer only. Most of the members die at the approach of autumn, but a few females which have been fertilized hibernate through the winter, sheltered under stones or in hollow trees. In the spring and with the returning warm weather the female regains her activity and emerges from her hiding-place. She then sets about finding a convenient place for building a nest and establishing a new colony. The common wasp (V. vulgaris) usually selects some burrow or hole in the ground, which, if too small, she may enlarge into a chamber suitable for her purpose. She then commences to build the nest. This is constructed of small fibres of old wood, which the wasp gnaws, and kneads, when mixed with the secretion from the salivary glands, into a sort of papier-maché pulp. Some of this is formed into a hanging pillar attached to the roof of the cavity, and in the lower

ool

free end of this three shallow cup-like cells are hung. In each of these an egg is laid. The foundress of the society then continues to add cells to the comb, and as soon as the grubs appear from the first-laid eggs she has in addition to tend and feed them.

The grubs are apodal, thicker in the middle than at either end ; the mandibles bear three teeth ; the maxille and labium are represented by fleshy tubercles. The body, including the head, consists of fourteen segments, which bear lateral tubercles and spiracles. They have no anus: They are suspended with the head downwards in the cells, and require a good deal of attention, being fed by their mother upon insects which are well chewed before they are given to the larve, or upon honey. At the same time the mother is enlarging and deepening the cells in which they live, building new cells, and lay- ing more eggs, which are usually suspended in the same angle of each cell. The development within the egg takes eight days.

After about a fortnight the grubs cease to feed, and, forming a silky cover to their cells, become pupe. This quiescent stage lasts about ten days, at the end of which period they emerge as the imago or perfect insect. The silky covering of the cell is round or convex outwards ; and to leave the cell the insect either pushes it out, when it opens like a box lid, or gnaws a round hole through it. As soon as the cell is vacated it is cleaned out and another egg deposited. In this way two or three larve occupy successively the same cell during the summer. The first

'wasps that appear in a nest are neuters or workers, and

these at once set to work to enlarge the comb, and feed the larve, &e.

The material which forms the substance of the nest is usually dried wood, worked by the mandibles of the wasp, with the addition of its salivary secretion, into a pulp, which can easily be moulded whilst moist ; it dries into a substance of a papery appearance, but possessing consider- able tenacity. Sometimes paper itself, such as old cart- ridge cases, is used. The combs are arranged horizontally ; each contains a single layer of cells opening downwards. The second comb is suspended from the first by a number of hanging pillars which are built from the point of union of

three cells. The space between two combs is just sufficient to allow the wasps to cross each other. The combs are roughly circular in outline, and increase in size for the first four or five layers, after which they begin to decrease; the whole is covered by a roughly made coating of the same papery substance which composes the combs. This at first forms a cap-shaped protection, but as each comb is built it is continued down until finally it forms a roughly spherical covering for the whole, but not giving any support to the combs, which are independent of it. The covering is pierced by apertures for the passage of the wasps. The cells are hexagonal at their mouths, but above become more rounded in their cross section.

During the first half of the summer only workers are produced, but, as fruit ripens and food becomes more abundant, fully developed females and males appear, the latter from parthenogenetically developed eggs of the later broods of workers. The males and females are larger than the workers, and require larger cells for their development ; these are usually kept apart from one another and from those of the workers. The males may be distinguished by their longer antenne, by the more elongated outline of their body, and by the absence of a sting. ;

In a favourable season, when the weather 1s warm and food plentiful, a nest may contain many thousands of cells full of wasps in various stages of development; and, as each cell is occupied two or three times in the course of a

summer, those authorities who put the number of the members of the community as high as 30,000 are probably not far wrong.

At the approach of autumn the society begins to break up ; the males fertilize the females whilst flying high in the air. They then die, often within a few hours. The workers leave the nest, carrying with them any grubs that remain in the cells, and both soon perish. The nest is entirely deserted. The females which have been fertilized creep into crevices under stones or trees, or hide amongst moss, and hibernate until the warmth of the following spring induces them to leave their hiding-places and set about founding a new community.

There are altogether seven species of Vespa met with in Britain. V. vulgaris, the common or ground wasp, V. rufa, the red wasp, distinguished by its reddish-

The hornet, /. crabro, is the largest species occurring in Great Britain. They have a more distinctly red colour than the common wasp, and a row of red spots upon each side of the abdomen. They occur much more rarely than the common wasp, and appear to be almost confined to the southern half of England. Their nests resemble those described above, but are larger; they are found in hollow trees or deserted ont- houses. Their com- munities are smaller in uumber than those of wasps.

The hornet, where it occurs in any number, does a con- siderable amount of damage to forest trees, by gnawing the bark off the younger branches to obtain material for constructingitsncest. It usually selects the ash or alder, but sometimes attacks the lime, birch, and willow, Like the wasp, it does much damage to fruit, upon the juices of which it lives. On the other hand, the wasp is useful by keeping down the numbers of flies and other insects. It catches these in large numbers, killing them with its jaws and not with its sting. It then tears off the legs and wings, and bears the body back to its nest as food for the larvee. Wasps also act to some extent as flower fertilizers, but in this respect they cannot compare with bees; they visit fewer flowers, and have no adaptations on their limbs for carrying off the pollen.

The genus Vespa is very widely spread; it contains over forty species, distributed all over the world. Some of the largest and handsomest come from eastern Asia. V. mandarina of China and Japan, and V. magnifiea of the East Indies and N epal, measure 2 inches across the wings; V. orientalis, found in Greece, Egypt, and the East, builds its nest of clay.

The only other genus of Vespide which is found in Europe is Polistes, which occurs in the countries bordering the Mediterranean. The colonies of this genus are much smaller than those of Vesna. Each nest consists of a single tier of cells in the form of a round plate, supported in the middle by a single stalk. This comb is sometimes vertical, the cells then being horizontal or slightly

Fie. 2,—Nest of Vespa sylvestris.

WAS

PS

oblique. Some of the members of this genus store up honey, which in the case of a South-American species is poisonous, from the nature of the flowers from which it is gathered. The members of this genus have a slender body; the thorax is more oblong than in the genus Vespa, the palps stouter, and the abdomen more distinctly peduncu- late.

The genus Jschnogaster, from the East

Fic. 3.— Polistes tepidus and nest.

Indies, has many structural features in common with the Eumenide, but the character of its communities, and its nest, which is very small, justify its position amongst the social wasps.

The genus Zcaria, common in Australia and the East Indies, builds very small nests, of two or three rows of cells, hanging on one side from a stalk.

Synwea is a South-American genus, which builds large nests, sometimes 3 feet in length, closely applied to the branch of a tree; they never contain more than one layer of cells, which are horizon- tally placed. The whole nest is built of coarse material, chiefly rity pieces of bark ; and there is only one opening, at the lower end,

Another South-American genus, Chartergus, makes a tough nest, pendant from boughs of trees, and opening to the exterior below by a median aperture. The combs are arranged, somewhat like funnels, inside one another, but with spaces between. The apex of each comb is picrced by a hole for the wasps to pass from one gallery to another.

The nest of Tatwa, which occurs in Mexico and Sonth America, is also pendant, but the combs are horizontal ; the opening from the exterior is at

the side, and the passage from one gallery to another is also lateral.

The external appearance of the nest of Nectarina, found in Brazil and other parts of South America, resembles that of the common wasp, but isrongher. Internally the combs are arranged concentri- cally, more or less parallel with the external covering which affords them support.

The members of the two remaining families, the Eumenidx and the Masaridx, resemble one another in their solitary mode of life; only males and females exist,—no workers or neuters being found.

Family IL Humenide.—Solitary species, with three submarginal cells in the fore wing; antenne with thirteen joints in the male, twelve in the female; abdomen some- times pedunculate, posterior segments contractile. In the foregoing structural features the Zumenidx resemble the Vespidx, but they differ in having bifid claws on their tarsi, and the four anterior tibiz have but one spine at the tip. The mandibles are elongated, and form a kind of rostrum, in this respect approaching the Fossores.

Humenes coarctata is the only British species of this genus. The female is half an inch long, the male somewhat shorter. The abdomen is connected with the thorax by a long peduncle. The colour is black, relieved by spots of yellow. It constructs small spherical cells of mud, which are found attached to stems of plants, very generally to the heath. At first the cell opens to the exterior by means of a round pore ; one egg is deposited in each cell, anda / store of honey as food for the larva when hatched; the cell is then closed with mud. The larva of some species are carnivorous, and then the food supply stored up in the cell con- sists of caterpillars and other insect larvae which have been paralysed by the parent wasp stinging them through the cerebral ganglion; when the larva of the Ewmenes emerges from the egg it scts upon these and devours them.

The genus Odynerus contains a very large number of species, found in all parts of the world. The meinbers of this genus are about the size of a fly, and they differ from Hwmenes in having a sessile abdomen. Some of the species construct their cells in

Fic. 4.—£umenes smitthit.

WAS—WAS

sand heaps, lining them with agglutinated grains of sand; others live in cavities of trees lined with the same material, whilst others build their nests of mud. Like some of the species of Eumenes, they store up paralysed Lepidopterous and Chrysomeleous larve as food for their carnivorous grubs.

Family III. Masaride.—-The members of the third family, the Masaridz, are sharply distinguished by the possession of only two submarginal cells in the fore wing. Their antennz are fre- quently clavate, particularly so in the genus Celonites ; they are twelve-jointed, but as the terminal joints are almost fuse they appear to be composed of only eight joints. The Wings are not so completely folded as in the other two families, and the ab- domen is but slight- ly contractile. The maxille are short and their palps very small, with but three or four joints.

The number of genera comprised in this family is small; none occur in Britain, but in southern Europe some species are found. They make their nest in cavities in the earth, generally in a bank, and construct an irregular gallery leading down to it.

During hot fine summers wasps cause a good deal of loss to market gardeners and fruit growers. During this time of year they live almost exclusively upon the sweet juices of ripe fruit, occasionally carrying off small particles of the flesh. At the same time they have not entirely lost their carnivorous tastes, for they frequently attack the meat in butcher's shops, but render compensation by killing and carrying off to feed their grubs considerable numbers of blow-flies. Wasps also perform an important service in keeping down the numbers of caterpillars. The larvee are almost exclusively carnivorous, living upon insects captured by their parents and reduced by them to a pulp before being given to the young. During the spring the first broods that appear live largely upon honey; and this forms the staple food of the genus Polistes throughout their whole life.

In attempting to rid a district of wasps, unless the nest can be taken, there is little good in killing stray members of the community. On the other hand, the killing of wasps in early spring probably means that the formation of a nest and the production of a society whose members are counted by thousands is in each case prevented.

The number of wasps is kept down by numerous enemies. The most effective of these live in the nests and devour the larve; among them are two species of beetle, Riupiphorus paradoxus and Lebia linearis. Two species of Ichnewmon, a species of Anthomyia, and the larva of a Volucella also infest the nests of wasps and prey upon the grubs. The last-named is also found in beehives. In the tropics some species are attacked by fungi, the hyphe of which protrude between the segments of the abdomen, and give the wasp a very extraordinary appearance. . (A. E, 8.)

WASTE (Vastum) is used in law in several senses, of which four are the most important. (1) Waste of a manor is that part of a manor subject to rights of common, as distinguished from the lord's demesne (see Commons, Manor). (2) Year, day, and waste was a part of the royal prerogative, acknowledged by the statute De Prerogativa ftegis. The king had the profits of freehold lands of those attainted of felony and petit treason and of fugitives for a year and a day with a right of committing waste in sense (3) thereon. After the expiration of a year anda day the lands returned to the lord of the fee. Attainder for felony being

Fic. 5.—Masaris vespiformis.

uow abolished, the right has ceased to exist (see FELONY, Treason). (3) The most usual signification of the word is "any unauthorized act of a tenant for a freehold estate, not of inheritance or for any lesser interest, which tends to the destruction of the tenement, or otherwise to the injury of the inheritance" (Pollock, Law of Torts, p. 285). Waste is either voluntary or permissive. Voluntary waste is by act of commission, as by pulling down a house, cutting down trees, opening new quarries or mines (though not con- tinuing the working of existing ones), or doing anything which may destroy evidence, such as conversion of arable into meadow

land. Permissive waste is by act of omission, such as allowing buildings to fall out of repair. A fermor, by the Statute of Marlbridge, 52 Hen. III. c. 23, may not

{ commit waste without licence in writing from the rever-

sioner. The same statute mentions a form of waste which has long become extinct, viz., exile (exiliwm), or the im- poverishment of villeins or tenants at will on an estate. In case a tenant for life or for any smaller interest holds (as is often the case by the terms of a will or settlement) without impeachment of waste, his rights are considerably greater, and he may use the profits salva rerum substantia

(to use the language of Roman law). For instance, he may

cut timber in a husband-like manner and open mines, but he may not commit what is called equitable waste, that is, pull down or deface the mansion or destroy ornamental timber. Acts of equitable waste were, before 1875, not cognizable in courts of common law, but it is now provided by the Judicature Act, 1873, § 25 (3), that in the absence of special provision to that effect an estate for life without impeachment of waste shall not confer upon the tenant for life any legal right to commit equitable waste. Removal of fixtures, which would be prima facie waste, is recognized by the law to a limited extent (see Fixtures). A copy- holder may not commit waste unless allowed by the cus- tom of the manor (see CopyHoLD). Various remedies for waste have been given to the reversioner at different periods of law. At common law only single damages seem to have been recoverable. This was altered by the legislature, and for some centuries waste was a criminal or quasi-criminal offence. Magna Charta enacted that a guardian committing waste of the lands in his custody should make amends and lose his office. The Statute of Marlbridge made a fermor committing waste liable to grievous amerciament as well as to damages, and followed Magna Charta in forbidding waste by a guardian. The Statute of Gloucester, 6 Edw. I. c. 5, enacted that a writ of waste might be granted against a tenant for life or years or in courtesy or dower, and on being attainted of waste the tenant was to forfeit the land wasted and to pay thrice the amount of the waste. In addition to the writ of waste the writ of estrepement (said to be a

corruption of exstirpamentum) lay to prevent injury to an estate to which the title was disputed. Numerous other acts dealt with remedies for waste. The writ of waste was superseded at common law by the mixed action of waste, itself abolished by 3 and 4 Will. IV. c. 27, and the action of trespass on the case (see Tort, Trespass). The Court of Chancery also established a jurisdiction by suit or injunc- tion, especially to restrain equitable waste. At present proceedings may be taken either by action for damages, or by application for an injunction, or by both combined, and either in the Queen's Bench or Chancery Division. By the Judicature Act, 1873, § 25 (8), the old jurisdiction to grant injunctions to prevent threatened waste is considerably enlarged. The rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, Ord. xvi. r. 37, enable a representative action to be brought for the prevention of waste. In order to obtain damages or an injunction, substantial injury or danger of it must be proved. In England only the High Court (unless by agree- ment of the parties) has jurisdiction in questions of waste, XXIV. — 50

394

but in Ireland the civil bill courts and courts of summary jurisdiction have co-ordinate authority to a limited extent. The law of waste as it affects ecclesiastical benefices will be found under Dizaprpations. (4) Waste of assets or devastavit isa squandering and misapplication of the estate and effects of a deceased person by his executors or ad- ministrators, for which they are answerable out of their own pockets as far as they have or might have had assets of the deceased. The legal liability of the representatives of the deceased is recognized by 30 Car. IL c. 7 and 4 W. and M. e. 24.

In Seots law waste is not used as a technical term, but the respective rights of fiar and liferenter are much the same as in England. The latter, however, has not the right of continuing the working of existing mines unless the deed specially confers it upon him. Interdicts have in strong cases been granted against the sale of ornamental timber.

In the United States, especially in the western States, many acts, such as the felling of timber, are not considered waste which would be waste in

England. In some States waste is a cause of forfeiture; in some it gives a right to treble damages. The writ of estrepement is still in use.

WATCH. Timepieces moved by a spiral spring instead of a weight were made as early as the 16th century, though the law which governs the mechanical theory of springs was first enunciated by Huygens in the 17th century (ut tensio sic vis); this, however, is not invariable.

Fig. 1 shows the general arrangement of a watch or chronometer (both of which are here considered together). The barrel and eee ‘ fusee will be re- he ed cognized at once. The fusee is a sort of grooved hollow-sidedcone; the more rapid swell towards the thick end is re- quired, because one turn of the fusee, when the chain is at that end, takes much more of it off the barrel than at the thin end; and on the assumption that the force of the spring varies as its tension the radius of the cone must increase more rapidly, in order to make the increase of leverage keep pace with the decrease in the force of the spring as it unwinds with an increasing velocity off the thick end of the fusee. The fusee itself is con- nected with the great wheel by a ratchet and click and going ratchet (of which the spring and click are strongly shown in the figure), just as described under Cxocks (vol. vi. p. 22). Something is also required to prevent the watch from being overwound, or the chain strained so as to break. This is done by means of a hooked lever, set on a hinge in the upper frame-plate (which is taken off in this drawing) ; and when the watch is nearly wound up the chain moving upwards reaches this lever, and moves it into such a posi- tion that its hook catches hold of the long tooth projecting from the thin end of the fusee; and thus the winding is stopped without any strain on the chain by the sudden check.

By far the greater number of watches now made both on the Continent and in America have the mechanism known as the going barrel in substitution for the chain and fusee. In the going barrel the mainspring is of great length, and only a few coils of it are brought into action. To the going barrel itself the main wheel is attached, and thus the force of the mainspring is transmitted direct to the escapement. The general adoption of the going barrel

mechanism is due to the introduction of keyless winding, °

which can only be adapted to the fusee watches with diffi- culty, and to the greater cheapness of the arrangement. Moreover, it is found that for three or four coils of a long spring, at a certain degree of winding up, the tension varies very little. best English work, in which absolute uniformity of motion is aimed at; but for ordinary purposes it is not of so much consequence that the same rate from hour to hour should be maintained provided the daily rate is uniform.

In watches without a fusee the apparatus for preventing overwinding is different from that in the old form of watch ; it goes by the name of the Geneva stop, and the principle of it is simple. If two wheels work together, of which one has the spaces between some two or more adjacent teeth filled up, it is evident that that wheel cannot be turned quite round, And it will be the same thing if one of the wheels is only a cylinder with a single tooth in it, and the other has a certain number of notches, not going all round, through which that tooth can pass. If, therefore, a one-toothed wheel of this kind is fixed to the barrel arbor, which is turned by the key, and works into a wheel with only 4 or 5 notches in it and a blank space through which the tooth cannot pass, it will evidently allow the barrel to be wound up the 4 or 5 turns and no more; and as it unwinds it turns the stopping wheel back again with it.

The other parts of a watch do not differ from those of a clock, except in size, and the position in which they are arranged, to bring them within the circle of the dial, until we come to the escapement ; and there a different state of things arises, mainly from the fact that the balance of a watch revolves through sometimes as much as 270°, while a clock pendulum only vibrates through 4° or 5°, The balance being common to all the watch escapements, it will be proper first to describe that, and the conditions to which it is subject. The two equal arms, with equal weights at each end, in fig. 3 of article CLocxs (vol. vi. p. 17) are really a balance just as much as the wheel which is commonly used as the more convenient form. But in that figure there is not to be seen that essential element of a modern balance—the thin spiral spring, opening and closing itself at every vibration. The outer end of this spring is attached to the

*frame by a cock R (fig. 2), and the inner to the balance at S; and the time of vibration depends only on the strength of the spring and the moment of inertia of the balance, and not at all upon the extent or angle of the vibration. And, as the force of a spring varies (ap- proximately) inversely as its length, this * suggests a ready method of regulating the watch; for it is easy to make a pointer or index, or "regulator" PT, turning on a ring fixed to the watch plate, concentri¢ with the balance, and having two pins in it at P, called curb pins, just close enough together to embrace the spring, so that, as the index is moved one way or the other, the length of the spring which is free to vibrate may become shorter or longer. When the regulator has been moved as far as it can go towards fast, suppose, and the watch still loses, the spring has to be shortened at the cock R into which its outer end is pinned ; and, in order that the balance may be capable of alteration, so as still to stand square with the escapement when the spring is inits neutral state, the other end is not actually pinned to the balance, but the cock S is on a small ring which is set on the axis or verge of the balance pretty tight by friction, but capable of being turned by hand. An index-plate like that in fig. 2 enables one to see smaller movements of the index than radial marks.*

The going barrel is not used in the

WATCH

It is almost impossible to move such a regulator little enough, and with sufficient accuracy, for a very small variation of rate. One way of obtaining greater accuracy, and probably the best, is to make the regulator movable by a tangent screw acting on its end, and capable of being turned by the watch key. Another mode of giving a small motion to the regulator is by putting a portion of a wheel with teeth on it, and turning it by a small pinion with the index attached to it, so that the motion of the index exceeds that of the regulator itself as much as the radius of that wheel exceeds the radius of the pinion. Chronometers are regulated in a different way altogether. It is not expedient to alter the effective length of the spring after its length is once fixed. For it has long been ascertained that a spring does not give isochronous vibra- tions at all lengths, but only at certain intervals; and therefore it is necessary In

an accurate timekeeper to use only one of those lengths of the spring which are found to be isochronous for different ares of vibration ; and, that being fixed, the timing of the balance can only be done by altering its moment of inertia, and this is done in chrono- meters by screws with heavy heads in the rim of the balance, set farther in or out as it is wanted to go faster or slower. In marine chronometers, where there is plenty of room for it, the balance-spring is generally made in a cylindrical form, with the coils all of the same diameter, instead of the flat spiral used in watches,—though it does not seem to be quite clear that the cylindrical form is materially better than the other.

The timing of a watch for position, as it is called, is a matter which requires some attention. Ifthe balance is not exactly poised on its axis, it will have a tendency to take one position when the watch is carried vertically, as it always is in the pocket; and the time of vibration will be affected by its disposition thus to act as a pendulum. The watch ought therefore to be tried with XII, IX, VI, and III successively upwards, and if it does not keep the same rate the balance is not properly poised. Marine chronometers, indeed, being set in gumbals (a ring with the two pivots into the box at right angles with the pivots which carry the chronometer), will remain horizontal, though not without some degree of motion under the motion of the ship ; and this gives the balance the further advantage of having its weight resting only on the end of the axis or verge, a position in which there is much less friction than that of a watch carried in the pocket; but there it is not of so much consequence, because the balance is so much lighter than a chronometer balance.

Compensated Balances.—A pendulum requires scarcely any com- pensation except for its own elongation by heat ; but a balancé re- quires compensation, not only for its own expansion, which increases its moment of inertia just like the pendulum, but far more on account of the decrease in the strength of the spring under increased heat. Dent, in a pamphlet on compensation balances, gave the following results of some experiments with a glass balance, which he used for the purpose on account of its less expansibility than a metal one :—at 32° F., 3606 vibrations in an hour ; at 66°, 3598°5 ; and at 100°, 3599. If therefore it had been adjusted to go right (or 3600 times in an hour) at 32°, it would

have lost 74 and 84 seconds an hour, or more than three minutes a-day, for each successive in- crease of 34°, which is about fifteen times as much as a common wire pendulum would lose under the same increase of heat ; and if a metal balance had been used instead of a glass one the difference would have been still greater.

The necessity for this large amount of compensation having arisen from the variation of the elasticity of the spring, the first attempts at correcting it were by acting on the spring itself in the manner of a common regulator. Harrison's compensation consisted of a compound bar of brass and steel soldered together, having one end fixed to the watch-frame and the other carrying two curb pins which embraced the spring, as was described at fig. 2. Asthe brass expands more than the steel, any increasc of heat made the bar bend ; and so, if it was set the right way, it carried the pins along

the spring, so as to shorten it. This contrivance is called a com- pensation curb; and it has often been reinvented, or applied in a

modified form. But there are two objections to it: the motion of the curb pins does not correspond accurately enough to the varia- tions in the force of the spring, and it disturbs the isochronism, which only subsists at certain definite lengths of the spring.

The compensation which was next invented left the spring un- touched, and provided for the variations of temperature by the construction of the balance itself. Fig. 3 shows the plan of the ordinary compensation balance. Each por- tion of the rim of the balance is composed of an inner bar of steel with an outer onc of brass soldered upon it, and carrying the weights 6,0, which are screwed toit. Asthe { temperature increases, the brass expanding must bend the stcel inwards, and so carries the weights farther in, and diminishes the moment of inertia of the balance. The metals are generally soldered together by pouring melted brass round a solid stecl disk, and the whole is afterwards turned and filed away till it leaves only the crossbar in the middle lying flat and the two portions of the rim standing edgeways. The first person who practised this method of

uniting them appears to have been Thomas Earnshaw, who brought the chronometer to the state in which it has remained for the last century, with scarcely any alteration except more com- plete compensation.

The adjustment of a balance for compensation can only be done by trial, and requires a good deal of time. It must be done in- dependently of that for time,—the former by shifting the weights, because the nearer they are to the crossbar the less distance they will move over as the rim bends with them. The timing is done by screws with heavy heads (¢,t, fig. 3), which are just opposite to the ends of the crossbar, and consequently not affected by the bend- ing of the rim. The compensation may be done approximately by the known results of previous experience with similar balances ; and many watches are sold with compensation balances which have never been tried or adjusted, and sometimes with a mere sham compensation balance, not cven cut through.

Secondary Compensation. —When chronometers had been brought to great perfection it was perccived that there was a residuary error, which was due to changes of temperature, but which no adjust- ment of the compensation would correct. Tor, if the compensation was adjusted for two extreme temperatures, such as 32° and 100°, then the chronometer gained at mean temperatures; and, if ad- justed for any two mean temperatures, it would lose for all beyond them. This error was observed, and attempts were made to correct it before anybody had pointed out how it arose: this appears to have been first done in a paper in the Nautical Magazine by E. J. Dent in 1833; and he gave the following illustration of it. The variation of the force of the spring proceeds uniformly in proportion to the temperature, and therefore may be represented by a straight line inclined at some angle to another straight line divided into degrees of temperature. But the inertia of a balance of the common construction cannot be made to vary uniformly according to the temperature, but will vary more rapidly in cold than heat ; and con- sequently its rate of variation can only be represented by a curve, and the curve can only be made to coincide with the straight line representing the rate of variation of the spring in two points, —either two extremes, or two means, or one extreme and one mean point.

The same thing may be shown mathematically, as follows. Let r be the distance of the compensation weights 0, 6, in fig. 3 (which we may assume for convenience to be the whole mass M of the balance) from the centre at some mean temperature, and let dr be their increase of distance due to a decrease of some given number of degrees of heat, under the action of the compensation bars. Then the new moment of inertia will be M (7r?+ 2rdr+ dr'), and the ratio

2 2

2dr, (de ; and the term (=)

Fig. 3.

of the new to the old will be 1 sear atl ers is now too large to be disregarded, as it might be in pendulums,

where the compensation 7 is only required to be about th

d : of the (+) in a balance. It is found that an equal increase

of temperature will produce an equal or rather a less motion (—dr) of the weights towards the centre than from it at any given point; but, calling it only equal, the ratio of the decreased moment of

~ : 2d ars? inertia to the original one will be 1—= + < , so that the

increase and the decrease from the mean amount differ by twice

2 .

(=) ; in other words, the moment of inertia of the balance varies e

less in passing from mean to hot temperature than from mean to cold ; and consequently if it is adjusted for mean and cold it will not have decreased enough at an equal increase from mean to hot, or the chronometer will lose, and if adjusted for the two extremes 1t will gain at mean temperatures. : The correction of this error is ealled the secondary compensation,

We shall give a short deseription of the principal classes of inven- tions for this purpose.

The first that was disclosed was Eiffe's (sometimes called Moly- neux's), communicated to the astronomer-royal in 1835. In one of several methods proposed by him a compensation eurb was used ; and, though, for the reasons given before, this will not answer for the primary compensation, it may for the secondary, where the motion required is very much smaller. In another the primary compensation bar, or a serew in it, was made to reach a spring set within it with a small weight attached at some mean temperature, and, as it bent farther in, it earried this secondary compensation weight along with it. The obvious objeetion to this is that it is discontinuous ; but the whole motion is so small, not more than the thickness of a piece of paper, that this and other compensations on the same principle appear to have been on some oeeasions quite successful. Molyneux took a patent for a secondary compensation exactly the same as this of Eiffe's, then before the astronomer-royal.

Another large elass of balanees, all more or less alike, may be represented by E. J. Dent's, which came next in order of time. He deseribed several forms of his invention ; the following deserip- tion applies to the one he thought the best. In fig. 4 the flat erossbar 77 is itself a eompensation bar which bends upwards under inereased heat ; so that, if the weights v, » were merely set upon up- right stems rising from the ends of the eross- bar, they would approach the axis when that. bar bends upwards. But, instead of the stems: 9 rising from the crossbar, they rise from the two seeondary eompensation pieces stu, in the form of staples, which are set on the crossbar ; and, as these seeondary pieces themselves also bend upwards, they make the weights approach the axis more rapidly as the heat inereases ; Fig. 4. and by a proper adjustment of the height of the weights on the stems the moment of inertia of the balauce can be made to vary in the proper ratio to the variation of the intensity of the spring. The eylindrieal spring stands above the crossbar and between the staples,

Fig. 5 represents Loseby's mercurial compensation balance. Besides the weights D, D, set near the end of the primary compen- sation bars B, B,

there are small bent tubes FE, FE with mereury in them, like a thermometer, the bulbs being at F, F. As the heat increases, not only do the primary weights D, D and the bulbs F, F approach the centre of the bal- ance, but some of the mereury is driven along the tube, thus carry- ing some more of the weight towards the centre, at a ratio in- creasing more rapidly than the temperature. The tubes are sealed at the thin end, with a little air included. The aetion is here equally continuous with Dent's, and the adjustments for primary and secondary compensation are apparently more independent of each other; and this modification of Le Roy's use of mercury for compensated balances (which does not appear to have answered) is certainly very elegant and ingenious. Nevertheless an analysis of the Greenwich lists for seven years of Mr Loseby's trials proved that the advantage of this method over the others was more theo- retical than praetieal ; Dent's eompensation was the most suceessful of all in three years out of the seven, and Loseby's in only one. Loseby's method has never been adopted by any other ehronometer- maker, whereas the principles both of Eiffe's and of Dent's methods have been adopted by several other makers.

A few ehronometers have been made with glass balanee-springs, which have the advantage of requiring very little primary and no secondary compensation, on account of the very small variation in their elasticity, eompared with springs of steel or any other metal.

Dent also invented a very different method of effecting the primary and secondary compensation at onee, and without any additional appendage to the balance or addition to the cost, He called it the prismatic balance, from the shape of the steel rim, of which the section is shown in fig. 6, BC being the brass, and the dark triangle within it the

rae ih

- c

bend more easily from the ke | edge than the other way, and eonsequently the motion is is not quite so great as it ought to be for complete secondary com- pensation for a very wide range of temperature, but it is enough to give the requisite compensation for all ordinary variations of tem-

Fig. 6.

seetion of the steel part of the rim. A prism of cast-steel will greater when it is being eurved by heat than when it is pulled straighter by cold, whieh is exactly what is wanted. The difference

perature, aud chronometers so compensated were found to be also more than usually steady in their rate, for even in the best ehrono meters there appear every now and then quite capricious variations.

Several other forms of secondary compensation have been invented and found sueeessful, all on the same principle of so arranging the eompound bars that the weights move more under any given ehange of temperature in hot weather, or when they are nearest to the axis of the balance, than in eold when they are farthest off. Notices of these may be seen in various volumes of the Horological Journal.

The best chronometers, with all these improvements, eannot be relied on to keep a rate equal to that of a good astronomical clock of the usual kind, though they oceasionally do so for a short time.

Watch Eseapements.—The eseapements in practical use are—(1) the old vertical eseapement, now almost disused ; (2) the lever, very mueh the most common in English watches ; (8) the horizontal or cylinder, which is equally eommon in foreign watehes, though it was of English invention ; (4) the duplex, which used to be more in fashion for first-rate watches than itis now; and (5) the detached or chronometer eseapement, so called because it is always used in marine ehronometers.

The vertieal escapement is simply the original clock eseapement (see Cocks, fig. 3) adapted to the position of the wheels in a watch and the balanee, in the manner exhibited in fig. 7. As it requires considerable thickness in the watch, it is inferior in going to all the others, and no eheaper than the lever eseapement can now be made; and for these reasons it has gone out of use.

The Jdever eseapement, as it is now uni- versally made, was invented late in the last century by Thomas Mudge. Fig. 8 shows its action. The position of the lever with reference to the pallets is immaterial in prin- eiple, and is only a question of convenience in the arrangement ; but it is generally such as we have given it. The prineiple is the same as in the dead-beat eseapement clock (see Cocks, fig. 5), with the advantage that there is no frietion on the dead faces of the pallets beyond what is necessary for locking. The reason why this frietion eannot be avoided with a pendulum is that its are of vibration is so small that the requisite depth of intersection eannot be got between the two eireles deseribed by the end S of the lever and any pin in the pendulum whieh would work into it;

Fig. 7.

Fig. 8.

whereas, in a watch, the pin P, which is set in a cylinder on the verge of the balance, does not generally slip out of the niek in the end of the lever until the

balance has got 15° past its middle position. The pallets are under- eut a little, as it is ealled, ¢.e., the dead faces are so sloped as to give a little recoil the wrong way, or slightly to resist the unlock- ing, beeause otherwise there would be a risk that a shake of the watch would let a tooth escape while the pin is disengaged from the lever. There is also a further provision added for safety. In the eylinder whieh earries the impulse pin P there is a noteh just in front of P, into which the other pin S on the lever fits as they pass; but when the notch has got past the eylinder it would pre- vent the lever from returning, beeause the safety-pin S cannot pass exeept through the notch, which is only in the position for letting it pass at the same time that the impulse-pin is engaged in the lever. The pallets in a lever escapement (except bad and cheap ones) are always jewelled, and the scape-wheel is of brass. The staff of the lever also has jewelled pivot-holes in expensive watehes, and the scape-wheel has in all good ones. The holes for the balanee- pivots are now always jewelled, if nothing else is. The scape-wheel in this and most of the watch escapements generally beats five times in a second, in large chronometers

four times ; and the wheel next to the scape-wheel carries the seconds-hand, Macdowall's single-pin escapement was adapted to watehes exactly as the dead escapement of clocks is turned into the lever escapement of watches.

Fig. 9 is a plan of the horizontal or cylinder escapement, cutting through the eylinder, which is on the verge of the balance, at the level of the tops of the teeth of the escape-wheel; for the trian- gular pieces A, B are not flat projections in the same plane as the teeth, but are raised on short stems above the plane of o the wheel ; and still more of the cylinder than the portion shown at ACD is eut away where the wheel itself has to pass, The author of this eseapement was Graham, and it resembles his dead; escapement in eloeks in principle more than the lever escapement does, though much less in appearance, beeause in this escapement there is the dead frietion of the teeth against the eylinder, first on the outside, as here represented, and then on the inside, as shown by the dotted lines, during the whole vibration of the balance, except that portion which belongs to the impulse. The impulse is given by the oblique outside edges Aa, Bd

on" Ca

Fig. 9.

wae

*of the teeth against the edges A, D of the cylinder alternately. The portion of the cylinder which is cut away at the point of action is about 30° less than the semicircle. The cylinder itself is made either of steel or ruby, and, from the small quantity of it which is left at the level of the wheel, it is evidently a very delicate affair ; and probably this has been the main reason why, although it is an English invention, it has been almost entirely abandoned by the English watchmakers in favour of the lever, which was originally a French invention, though very much improved by Mudge, for before his invention the lever had a rack or portion of a toothed wheel on its end, working into a pinion on the balance verge, and consequently it was affected by the dead friction, and that of this wheel] and pinion besides. This used to be called the rack lever, and Mudge's the de- tached lever ; but, the rack lever being now quite obsolete, the word '**

detached" has become detached from the lever escapement, and confined to the chronometer, to which it is more appropriate, as will be seen presently. The Swiss watches have almost universally the horizontal escapement. It is found that—for some reason which is apparently unknown, as the rule certainly does not hold in cases seemingly analogous—a steel scape-wheel acts better in this escapement than a brass one, although in some other cases steel upon steel, or even upon a ruby, very soon throws off a film of rust, unless they are kept well oiled, while brass and steel, or stone, will act with scarcely any oil at all, and in some cases with none.

The duplex escapement (fig. 10) is probably so called because there is a double set of teeth in the scape-wheel,—the long ones (like those of the lever escapement in shape) for locking only, and short ones (or rather upright pins on the rim of the wheel) for giving the impulse to the pallet P on the verge of the balance. It is a single-beat escapement ; 7.¢., the balance only receives the impulse one way, or at every alternate beat, as in the chrono- meter escapement, and in a few clock escapements which have never come into use. When the balance is turning in the direction marked by the arrow, and arrives at the position in which the dotted tooth } has its point against the triangular notch V, the tooth end slips into the notch, J and, as the verge turns farther round, the Fig. 10. tooth goes on with it till at last it escapes when the tooth has got into the position A ; and by that time the long tooth or pallet which projects from the verge has moved from pto P, and just come in front of the pin T, which stands on the rim of the scape-wheel, and which now begins to push against P, and so gives the impulse until it also escapes when it has arrived at ¢; and the wheel is then stopped by the next tooth B having got into the position 6, with its point resting against the verge, and there is evidently what we have called dead friction between them ; but, as the verge is smaller than the cylinder of the horizontal escapement, and is also made of a jewel, the friction does not seriously affect the motion of the balance. The impulse is also given very directly across the line of centres, and therefore with very little friction, as in the three- legged dead escapement for clocks and in the chronometer escape- ment. A little impulse is also received from the long teeth on the notch ; but the greatest part of that motion is wasted. As the

balance turns back, the nick V goes past the end of the tooth 3, and —

in consequence of its smallness, it passes without visibly affecting the motion of the scape-wheel, though of course it does produce a very slight shake in passing. It is evident that, if it did not pass, the tooth could not get into the nick for the next escape. The objection to this escapement is that it requires very great delicacy of adjustment, and the watch also requires to be worn carefully ; for, if by accident the balance is once stopped from swinging back far enough to carry the nick V past the tooth end, it will stop alto- gether, as it will lose still more of its vibration the next time from receiving no impulse. The performance of this escapement, when well made, and its independence of oil, are nearly equal to those of the detached escapement ; but, as lever watches are now made suffi- ciently good for all but astronomical purposes, for which chrono- meters are used, and they are cheaper both to make and to mend than duplex ones, the manufacture of duplex watches has almost disappeared.

The chronometer or detached escapement is shown at fig. 11, in the form to which it was brought by Earnshaw nearly a century ago, and in which it has remained ever since, with the very slight difference that the pallet P, on which the impulse is given (corre- sponding exactly to the pallet P in the duplex escapement), is now generally set in a radial direction from the verge, whereas Earn- shaw made it sloped backward, or undercut, like the scape-wheel teeth. The early history of escapements on this principle does not seem to be very clear. They appear to have originated in France ; but there is no doubt that they were considerably improved by the first Arnold, who died in 1799. Earnshaw's watches, however, generally beat his in trials.

397

In fig. 11 the small tooth or cam V, on the verge of the balance, is just on the point of unlocking the detent DT from the tooth T of the scape-wheel ; and the tooth A will immediately begin to give the impulse on the pallet P, which, in good chronometers, is always a jewel set in the cylinder ; the tooth V is also a jewel. This part of the action is so evident as to requir no further notice. When the balance returns, the tooth V has to get past the

end of the detent, without disturbing it; for, as soon as it has been unlocked, it falls against the bankine- pin E, and is ready to receive the next tooth B, and must stay there until it is again un- locked. It ends, or rather begins, in a stiffish spring, which is screwed to the block D on = oy the watch frame, so that it moves without any friction of pivots, like a pendulum. The passing is done by means of another spring TV, called the passing spring, which can be pushed away from the body of the detent towards the left, but cannot be pushed the other way without carrying the detent with it. In the back vibration, therefore, as in the duplex escapcment, the balance receives no impulse, and it has to overcome the slight resistance of the passing spring besides ; but it has no other friction, and is entirely detached from the scape-wheel the whole time, except when receiving the impulse. That is also the case in the lever escape- ment; but the impulse in that escapement is given obliquely, and consequently with a good deal of friction ; and, besides, the scape- wheel only acts on the balance through the intervention of the lever, which has the friction of its own pivots and of the impulse pin. The locking-pallet T is undercut a little for safety, and is also a, jewel in the best chronometers ; and the passing spring is of gold, as steel will rust. In the duplex and detached escapements, the timing of the action of the different parts requires great care, t.€., the adjusting them so that each may be ready to act exactly at the right time ; and it is curious that the arrangement which would be geometrically correct, or suitable for a very slow motion of the balance, will not do for the real motion. If the pallet P were really set so as just to point to the tooth A in both escapements at the moment of unlocking (as it has been drawn, because otherwise it would look as if it could not act at all), it would run away some distance before the tooth could catch it, because in the duplex escapement the scape-wheel is then only moving slowly, and in the detached it is not moving at all, and has to start from rest. The pallet P is therefore, in fact, set a little farther back, so that it may arrive at the tooth A just at the time when A is ready for it, without wasting time and force inrunning after it. This, however, seems now to be doubted in practice. The detached escapement has also been made on the duplex plan of having long teeth for the locking and short ones or pins nearer the centre for the impulse ; but the advantages do not appear to be worth the additional trouble, and the force required for unlocking is not sensibly diminished by the arrangement, as the spring D

must in any case be pretty stiff, to provide against the watch being carried in the position in which the weight of the detent helps to unlock it.

An escapement called the lever chronometer has been several times reinvented, which implies that it has never come into genera] use. It is a combination of the lever as to the locking and the chrono- meter as to the impulse. It involves a little drop and therefore waste of force as a tooth of the wheel just escapes at the " passing" beat where no impulse is given. But it should be understood (as it is not by some who write on clock-work) that a single-beat escape- ment involves no more loss of force and the escape of no more teeth than a double one, except the slight drop in the duplex and this lever chronometer or others on the same principle.

There have been several contrivances for remontotre escapements ; but there are defects in all of them ; and there is not the same ad- vantage to be obtained by giving the impulse to a watch-balance by means of some other spring instead of the mainspring as there is in turret-clocks, where the force of the train is liable to very much greater variations than in chronometers or small clocks.

Tourbillon escapements, and a few other things not necessary to notice here, are described in the 7th edition of Sir E. Beckett's (now Lord Grimthorpe) Rudimentary Treatise on Clocks, Watches, and Bells.

Repeaters, Keyless Watehes, &c.—Repcating-watches, 7.e., watches which strike the hours and quarters on pushing in the handle, are now scarcely ever made in England, and with very good reason, for it is almost impossible to crowd into the space of even a large- sized watch the quantity of wheels and other things required for the repeating work without unduly interfering with the going part, and, besides that, the striking work itself is very liable to get out of order. : é

The winding of watches without a key is an object for which there have been several inventions, and it possesses a considerablo advantage, besides the mere convenience of being independent of a key, for, as there is then no occasion to open it, the case may be made to fit more closely, and the air is more completely excluded,

and consequently the watch will go longer without cleaning ; and it also saves the thickness and the cost of a double back to the case. The first plan of the kind was that of pulling out the knob of the handle, which went into the watch, and had a gathering click attached to it which wound up the fusee, or the barrel, by means of a ratchet. But this was not found to answer: it was liable to get out of order; and, moreover, at every time of winding fresh air was pumped into the watch, which soon produced injurious effects. A far better plan is that of combining the two objects of winding and setting the hands by means of the handle, in the manner we shall now describe. In fig, 12 d is a wheel on the barrel, with bevelled teeth, and there is an- other small bevelled wheel on a spindle 6, which ends in a milled head a, within the handle or pendant; these two wheels cannot conveniently be arranged so as to work into each other without the inter- vention of a third between them, which is marked e in the left-hand section. It is easy to see that turn- ing the milled head will wind up the barrel. The same arrangement might of course be applied to the fusee, though it would increase the size; but in fact these watches are made withont one, and the practice is increasing, The winding wheel d is also made with the well-known contrivance of Breguet, known by the name of the " tipsy key" when applied to a common winding key, which enables you to turn the handle the wrong way without doing anything except moving a ratchet-wheel over its click, and consequently without straining the watch in attempting to wind it the wrong way. The same handle and wheels are also made use of to set the hands, thus :—thcre is a small wheel f which turns on a stud at the end of the lever fyh, and as the lever turns on a pivot at g, when its end #, which just projects through the rim of the watch, is pushed on one side, the wheel f will then be thrown into gear with the winding wheel d and the hour pinion in the middle of the watch ; and consequently, if the handle is then turned, it will alter the hands, just as they are usually altered from the back by a key in foreign watches, so that the face need never be opened. Of conrse, while this is doing, you do at the same time wind up the watch a little if the hand has to be turned the way for winding ; but that is of no consequence, except that you cannot put the hands forward immediately after you have completely wound up the watch. There are various other arrangements

for winding and setting by the handle substantially on the same principle. The ring is difficult to fix firmly when flexible on a stud perforated for the winding arbor, as no screw can go through it. 'The ring and the stud should be made in one piece. There is no use in it being hinged, as usnal.

In the chronograph watch there is, in addition to the centre seconds-hand, an independent seconds-hand which, when not in operation, stands at zero. Pressure on the crown-piece acts succes- sively (1) on a starting motion, (2)on a stopping motion, and (8) on a motion which sends the hand back by the shortest path to zero,

Watches are also made with what are called split seconds-hands, —the two hands being in their ordinary state together and appear- ing as one, but when you push in a knob one of them is stopped, while the other goes on ; the time shown by the stopped one is of course the time of the observation. Sometimes this is done by merely connecting the hands by a very slight spiral spring, which will allow itself to be untwisted one or two coils without stopping the watch; and, as it cannot be of any use to stop the seconds- hand longer than a minute, this seems to answer. There is, how- ever, another plan, in which these two hands, or at least the socket of one and the arbor of the other, are connected by a pair of disks set obliquely on the arbor and the socket respectively, so that, whenever the spring which keeps them together is allowed to act, it brings the loose hand up to the hand fixed on the arbor; and it does not signify how long it may be stopped by throwing the disks out of contact. One of the disks is heart-shaped, and is connected with the other by a spring, forming what is called a jumper.

For the use of electrical engineers and others who are bronght within the influence of powerful electrical machinery, it has been found necessary to introduce non-magnetizable watches, At present this is best secured by making the balance of silver or platinum alloy, and the balance spring of gold or palladium. The use of steel in moving parts of the works is carefully avoided, and thus fairly good timekeepers indifferent to magnetic influences are pro- duced.

The introduction of machinery for the manufacture of watch movements has had the effect of greatly cheapening the commoner class of watches,

and yet supplying a fairly satisfactory timekeeper.

Fig. 12.

WAT—-WAT

It is in America that the application of machinery to watclimaking has found its greatest development, and its success has enabled the American manufacturers to obtain considerable foothold in the European market for cheap watches. But watch movements are also now very extensively made by machinery in Birmingham, Coventry, and several Lancashire towns.

Under the auspices of the Royal Society a department has been established at Kew observatory for the testing and certifying of watches in respect of their compensation for variations of tempera- ture, and their uniformity of motion in different positions. Watches which obtain certificates of the first class have also awarded to them merit marks up to 40 for complete absence of variation in daily rate, 40 for absolute frecdom from change of rate in different positions, and 20 for perfect compensation for variations of temperature. The testing establishment has only been insti- tuted for a few years; but its services are being largely-sought by manufacturers of the high class of watches, who have laboured with equal zeal and success to keep the English-made watch un-approached by the product of any other nation. (G.)

WATER,! as everybody knows, is a generic term which includes a great variety of different substances. But when we compare any two species we always find more of agreement than of difference in properties which suggest that all waters consist essentially of the same thing, which is only modified differently in the several varieties by the nature or proportion of impurities. This surmise is confirmed by the results of scientific inquiry. In all ordinary waters, such as are used for primary purposes, the impurities amount to very little by weight— as a rule to less than =},th of 1 per cent.

Of all natural stores of water the ocean is by far the most abundant, and from it all other water may be said to bederived. From the surface of the

ocean a continuous stream of vapour is rising up into the atmosphere to be recondensed in colder regions and precipitated as rain, snow, or sleet, &c. Some 58,ths of these precipitates of course return directly to the ocean; the rest, falling on land, collects into pools, lakes, rivers, &c., or else penetrates into the earth, perhaps to come to light again, or to be brought to light, as springs or wells.

As all the saline components of the ocean are non- volatile, rain-water, in its natural state, can be con- taminated only with atmospheric gases—oxygen, nitrogen, and carbonic acid. So we should presume, and so it is,

'except that these gases, having different rates of solubility,

are not associated in rain-water (or natural water generally) in the proportions characteristic of their source. Thus, for instance, while atmospheric air contains 21 per cent. by volume of oxygen, a solution of air in water contains about 34:0 per cent. of that gas. Besides, rain-water, for the reason stated, contains perceptible traces of ammonia, combined as a rule, at least partly, with nitric acid, which latter is being produced wherever an electric discharge per- vades the atmosphere. 'This electrically-produced nitrate of ammonia forms no doubt the primary source of all organic nitrogen.

Lake waters, as a class, are relatively pure, especially so if the mountain slopes over which the rain collects into a lake are relatively free of soluble components. As an example we may refer to the water of Loch Katrine (Scotland), which is almost chemically pure, apart from small, but perceptible, traces of richly carboniferous matter taken up from the peat of the surrounding hills, which impart to it a faint brownish hue, while really pure water is blue.

twwer water varies very much in composition even in the same bed, as a river in the course of its journey towards the ocean passes from one kind of earth to others; while, compared with spring-waters, relatively poor in dissolved salts, rivers are liable to be contaminated with more or less of suspended matter.

Spring waters, having been filtered through more or

1 Compare CHEMISTRY, vol. v. pp. 483-485, and Sra WaTER.

WATER

less considerable strata of earth, are, as a class, clear of suspended, but rich in dissolved, mineral matter. Of ordinarily occurring minerals only a few are perceptibly soluble in water, and of these carbonate of lime, sulphate of lime, and common salt are most widely diffused. Common salt, however, in its natural occurrence, is very much localized; and so it comes that spring and well waters are contaminated chiefly with carbonate andsulphate of lime. Of these two salts, however, the former is held in solution only by the carbonic acid of the water, as bicarbonate of lime. But a carbonate-of-lime water, if exposed to the atmosphere, even at ordinary temperatures, loses its carbonic acid, and the carbonate of lime crystallizes out. The fantastically shaped "stalactites " which adorn the roofs and sides of certain caverns are produced in this manner.

In the relatively rare cases where a spring water in the course of its migrations meets with a deposit of common salt or other soluble salts, it dissolves more or less of these and becomes a salt-water. Most salt-waters are substan- tially solutions of .common salt (chloride of sodium), associated with only little of salts of potash and magnesia. But there are exceptions; in the so-called " bitter waters" the dissolved matter consists chiefly of sulphate of magnesia and other magnesia salts.

Immense quantities of carbonic acid gas are being con- stantly produced in the interior of the earth, probably by the action, at high temperatures, of steam on the carbonates of lime and magnesia. Some of it collects and is stored up temporarily in cavities, but the bulk streams out into the atmosphere, invisibly as a rule, through what one might call the capillaries of the earth's body; but here and there it unites into veins and arteries and comes forth, it may be, as a mighty carbonic acid spring. Carbonic acid being one and a half times as heavy as atmospheric air, it may collect into pools or even lakes ; the " Dog's Grotto," near Naples, and the " Valley of Death," in Asia Minor, are illustrative examples ; but, carbonic acid being a gas, and consequently diffusible, such lakes can maintain their level only if there is a constant and abundant supply of the gas from below.

A far more frequent occurrence is that a mass of water and a mass of carbonic acid meet within the earth. Asa rule, the pressure on the gas is more than one atmosphere, and the supply of the gas is abundant. The water then takes up considerably more carbonic acid than it would under ordinary atmospheric pressure, and if an outlet be provided, perhaps artificially by a boring, a frothy mass of carbonic-acid water comes forth as a fountain, sometimes of great volume. Such carbonic-acid waters are met with in many parts of the world,—chiefly, however, in Germany. The well-known Apollinaris water is an example. In this connexion we may refer also to the soffiont of Tuscany— jets of steam charged with ammonia or vapour of boric acid, which condense in the air and collect into "lagoons" of (substantially) a very dilute solution of boric acid. Boric acid waters, however, appear to be entirely confined to a limited district in Tuscany to the south of Volterra.

In addition to its natural components, water is liable to be con- taminated through accidental influxes of foreign matter. Thus, for instance, all the Scottish Highland lochs are brown through the presence in them of dissolved peaty matter. Rivers flowing through, or wells sunk in, populous districts may be contaminated with excrementitious matter, discharges from industrial establish- ments, &c. Our instinct rebels against the drinking of a contam- inated water, and it guides us correctly. Not that those organic compounds are in themselves hurtful. An otherwise pure water, contaminated with, say, one ten thousandth of its volume of urine, might be drunk with perfect confidence. Yet the presence of especially nitrogenous organic matter is a serious source of danger, inasmuch as such matter forms the natural food or soil for the

development of micro-organisms, including those kinds of bacteria which are now supposed to propagate infectious diseases. Happily

nature has provided a remedy. The nitrogenous organic matter dissolved in (say) a river speedily suffers disintegration by the action of certain kinds of bacteria, with formation of ammonia and other (harmless) products of simple constitution; and the ammonia, again, is no sooner formed than, by the conjoint action of other bacteria and atmospheric

oxygen, it passes first into (salts of) nitrous and then nitric acid. A water which contains combined nitrogen in the form of nitrates only is, as a rule, safe organically ; if nitrites are present it becomes liable to suspicion; the presence of ammonia is a worse symptom ; and if actual nitrogenous organic matter is found in more than microscopic traces the water is possibly (uot necessarily) a dangerous water to drink.

Wanklyn's method of water analysis is based upon these ideas. Starting with half a litre of the water, he distils it with a small quantity of carbonate of soda, aud in the distillate determines the ammonia colorimetrically with Nessler's reagent (see MERCURY, vol. xvi. p. 84). When all the saline ammonia (the free ammonia) is thus eliminated, alkaline permanganate of potash is added to the residue and the distillation resumed. Part of the nitrogen of the organic matter is eliminated as ammonia ; it is determined in the distillate, by Nessler's reagent, and reported as albwmenoid am- monia. The results are customarily referred to onc million parts of water analysed. To give an idea of the order of quantities here dealt with, let us say that a water yielding 0°1 part of free and 0°1 part of albumenoid ammonia would be condemned by any chemist, as possibly dangerous. The peaty waters of the Scottish Highlands, however, contain much of both amnionias, and yet are drunk by the natives with perfect impunity.

All waters, unless very impure, become safe by boiling, which process kills any bacteria or germs that may be present.

Of the ordinary saline components of waters, soluble magnesia and lime salts are the only ones which are objectionable sanitarily if present in relatively large proportion. Carbonate of lime is harmless ; but, on the other hand, the widely diffused notion that the presence of this component adds to the value of a water as a drinking water is a mistake. The farinaceous part of food alone is sufficient to supply all the lime the body needs; besides, it is questionable whether lime introduced in any other form than that of phosphate is available for the formation of, for instance, bone tissue.

The fitness of a water for washing is determined by its degree of softness. A water which contains lime or maguesia salts decom- poses soap with

formation of insoluble lime or magnesia salts of the fatty acids of the soap used. So much of the soap is simply wasted ; only the surplus can effect any cleansing action. An excellent and easy method for the determination of the hardness of a water has been devised by Clark. A measured volume of the water is placed in a stoppered bottle, and a standard solution of soap is then dropped in from a graduated vessel, until the mixture, by addition of the last drop of soap, has acquired the property of throwing up a peculiar kind of creamy froth when violently shaken, which shows that all the soap-destroying components have been pre- cipitated. The volume of soap required measures the hardness of the water. The soap-solution is referred to a standard by means of a watcr ofa known degree of hardness prepared from a known weight of carbonate of lime by converting it into neutral chloride of cal- cium, dissolving this in water and diluting toa certain volume. A water is said to have '1, 2, 8,... " degrees of hardness,' if it is equivalent in soap-destroying power to a solution of carbonate of lime containing 1, 2,3, ... grains of this salt per imperial gallon.

That part of the hardness of a water which is actually owing to carbonate of lime (or magnesia) can easily be removed in two ways. (1) By boiling, the free carbonic acid gocs off with the steam, and the carbonate of lime, being bereft of its solvent, comes down as a precipitate which can be removed by filtration, or by allowing 1t to settle, and decanting off the clear supernatant liquor. (2) A method of Clark's is to mix the water with just enough of milk of lime to convert the free carbonic acid into carbonate. Both this and the original carbonate of lime are precipitated, and can be removed as in the first case. See p. 409 infra. ; ;

From any uncontaminated natural water pure water is easily pre- pared. The dissolved salts are removed by distillation ; if care be taken that the stcam to be condensed is dry, and if its condensation be effected within a tube made of a suitable metal (platinum or silver are best, but copper or block tin work well enough for ordinary purposes), the distillate can contain no impurities except atmospheric gases, which latter, if necessary, must be removed by boiling the distilled water in a narrow-necked flask until it begins to "bump," and then allowing it to cool in the absence of air. This latter operation ought, strictly speaking, to be performed in a silver or platinum flask, as glass is appreciably attacked by hot water. For

most purposes distilled water, taken as it comes from the con- denser, is sufficiently pure. : e 2

Pure water, being so casily procured in any quantity, 1s used largely as a standard of reference in metrology and in the quantita- tive definition of physical properties. Thus a 'gallon " is defined as the volume at 62° F. of a quantity of water whose uncorrected

400

niass, as determined by weighing in air of 30-inch pressure and 62° F. of temperature, is equal to 10 tb avoirdupois. The kilo- gramme in like mauner is the mass of 1 cubic decimetre of water, neasured at the temperature corresponding to its maximum density (4°C.). The two fixed points of the thermometer correspond —the lower (0° C., or 82° F.) to the temperature at which ice nielts, the upper (100° C. or 212° F.) to that at which the maximum tension of steam, as it rises from boiling water, is equal to 760 mm. or 30- inch mercury pressure. 80 inches being a little more than 760 mm., 212° F. is, strictly speaking, a higher temperature than 100° C., but the difference is very trifling. Specific heats are customarily measured by that of water, which is taken as=1. All other specific heats of liquids or solids (with one solitary exception, formed by a certain strength of aqueous methyl alcohol) are less than 1. The temperate character of insular climates is greatly owing to this property of water. Another physiographically important peculi- arity of water is that it expands on freezing (into ice), while most other liquids do the reverse. 11 volumes of ice fuse into only 10 volumes of water at 0°C.; and the ice-water produced, when brought up gradually to higher and higher temperatures, again exhibits the very exceptional property that it contracts between 0° and 4° C. (by about zg455 of its volume) and then expands again by more aud more per degree of increase of temperature, so that the volume at 100° C. is 1°043 times that at 4°C. Imagine two lakes, one containing ordinary water and another containing a liquid which differs from water only in this that it-has no maxi- mum density. Imagine both to be, say, at 5° C., and cold winter weather to set in. Both lakes become colder, being cooled down by convection until they are at 4° C. The imaginary lake then continues losing heat in the same way ; in the

real lake the colder water floats on the surface and the underlying mass of water can lose heat only by the slow process of conduction. The real lake retains its heat more tenaciously, but for the reason stated will draw a sheet of ice, while the imaginary lake ig still on its way to 0° C. The latter, indeed, if the winter is short, may fail to freeze altogether, while the former does freeze superficially. In either the freezing is a slow process, because for every pound of ice pro- duced 80 pound-centigrade units of heat are set free. Let us now assume that, after even the imaginary lake had drawn a shect of ice, warm weather sets in. In either case a layer of liquid water of 0° C. is formed on the ice, and through it the heat from the air travels, in the imaginary case by slow conduction, in the real case by quick convection. The real ice is the first to disappear, and the upper strata of relatively cold water will soon come up to 4° C, by the prompt effect of convection, while in the case of the imagin- ary lake it takes a far longer time before all the mass has come up to 4° C. by conduction. From 4° C. upwards, heat is taken in at the same rate on both sides.

In former times water was viewed as an "element," and the uotion remained in force after this term (about the time of Boyle) had assumed its present meaning, although cases of decomposition of water were familiar to chemists. In Boyle's time it was already well known that iron, tin, and zine dissolve in aqueous muriatic acid or vitriol with evolution of a stinking inflammable gas. Even Boyle, however, took this gas to be ordinary air contaminated with inflammable stinking oils. This view was held by all chemists until Cavendish, before 1784, showed that the gas referred to, properly purified, is free of smell and constant in its properties, which are widely different from those of air,—the most important point of difference being that the gas when kindled in air burns with evolution of much heat and formation of water. Cavendish, however, did not satisfy himself with merely proving this fact qualitatively ; he determined the quantitative relations, and found that it takes very nearly 1000 volumes of air to burn 423 volumes of "hydrogen" gas ; but 1000 volumes of air, again, according to Cavendish, contain 210 volumes of oxygen; hence, very nearly, 2 volumes of hydrogen take up 1 volume of oxygen to become water. This important discovery was only confirmed by the sub- sequent experiments of Humboldt and Gay-Lussae, which were no more competent than Cavendish's to prove that the surplus of 3 units

(423 volumes instead of 420) of hydrogen was an observa- tional error. (W. D.)

WATERBURY, a city in Newhaven county, Con- necticut, United States, is situated on the N: augatuck river, 77 miles north-east of New York, at the junction of three railroads connecting it with Bridgeport, Hartford, and Meri- den. It was settled by colonists from Hartford in 1677 ; and bore at first the Indian name of Mattatuck. The land, rocky and hilly, was poor for farming, and the inhabitants began to turn to manufacturing pursuits, in a humble way, before 1800. But the growth in population and business was very slow, till the civil war created such a demand for brass and manufactured articles of that metal that the small factories rapidly grew in number and size, and Water-

bury has now become the centre of the brass industry in the United States. Its factories represent an outlay of 10 million dollars, and turn out a great quantity of sheet brass and copper, wire, and tubing, with a multitude of small articles—clocks, watches, lamps, pins, silver-plated ware, &c. The population, which is largely German and Trish, was 17,806 in 1880, and is now (1888) believed to approach 27,000. The city is well lighted by electric lights, and supplied with pure water from a spring-fed reservoir 6 miles distant. A free loan and reference library, founded in 1868, contains 42,000 volumes. Waterbury was incorporated as a city in 1853.

WATERFORD, a maritime county of Ireland, in the province of Munster, is bounded E. by Waterford Harbour, separating it from Wexford, N. by Kilkenny and by Tipperary, W. by Cork, and 8. by the Atlantic. Its greatest length from east to west is 52 miles, and its greatest breadth from north to south is 28 miles. The total area is 461,552 acres, or about 721 square miles. The coast-line is in some parts bold and rocky, and is in- dented by numerous bays and inlets, the principal being Waterford Harbour ; Tramore Bay, with picturesque cliffs and some extensive caves, and noted for its shipwrecks, on account of the rocky character of its bed; Dungarvan Harbour, much frequented for refuge in stormy weather ; and Youghal Harbour, partly separating county Waterford from county Cork. The surface of the county is to a large extent mountainous, especially

towards the west and north- west, consisting chiefly of metamorphosed Lower Silurian rocks, the valleys being occupied by Carboniferous Lime- stone. There is also evidence on an extensive scale of former glacial action. The Knockmealdown Mountains, which attain a height of 2609 feet, form the northern boundary with Tipperary. A wide extent of country between Clonmel and Dungarvan is occupied by the two ranges of the Commeragh and Monavallagh Mountains, reaching in Knockanarian a height of 2478 feet. To the south of Dungarvan there is a lower but very rugged range, called the Drum Hills. The south-eastern division of the county is for the most part level, consisting chiefly of clay slate interrupted by patches of primitive limestone, and also by conglomerate and basalt, forming in some parts of the coast lofty columnar cliffs. Coal and irén were formerly wrought, but the only mineral product now of importance is copper, the mines at Knockmahon ranking next in Ireland to those at Berehaven. Lead mining, for- merly prosecuted with some success, has now practically ceased. Lime is abundant, and coralline sea- sand is ob- tained. Slate is quarried in considerable quantities at Lismore, and there are also quarries of valuable sandstone and of marble. Ochres and clays for the manufacture of earthenware are also obtained. Though Waterford has benefited in its communications by the important rivers in its vicinity, the only large river it can properly claim as belonging to it is the Blackwater. This enters the county to the east of Fermoy, and flows eastward along a trough of Carboniferous Limestone to Cappoquin, where it turns abruptly southwards, to fall into the sea at Youghal Har- bour. At its junction with the Bride below Cappoquin it is navigable for vessels of 100 tons burden. Waterford Harbour may be called the estuary of three important rivers, the Suir, the Nore, and the Barrow, but neither of the last two touches the county. The Suir reaches it at its union with the Nier about 8 miles from Clonmel, and thence forms its northern boundary with Tipperary and Kilkenny. It is navigable for vessels of 800 tons burden to Waterford, for barques and large lighters to Carrick-on-Suir, and for boats of 50 tons to Clonmel.

Agricuiture.—The land is generally better adapted for pasturage than for tillage, although there are considerable tracts of rich soil in

Weal hr OR D

the south-eastern districts. The total number of holdings in 1886 was 10,188, of which 26 were above 500 acres in extent, 1029 between 100 and 500 acres, 1660 between 50 and 100 acres, 2726 between 15 and 50 acres, 2530 between 1 and 15 acres, and 2217 did not exceed lacre. Out of a total of 456,198 acres only 83,968 acres, or 18°4 per cent., were under crops, 235,801 acres, or 51‘7 per cent., were under grass; 330 acres fallow; 19,317 acres, or 4°2 per cent., woods and plantations; 22,791 acres, or 50 per cent., bog and marsh; 76,187 acres, or 16°7 per cent., barren mountain land; and 17,854, or 3°9 per cent., water, roads, fences, &c. Since 1859 the area under crops has decreased nearly a third, the amount in that year being 116,940 acres. Corn crops occupied 59,848 acres in 1859 and only 35,461 in 1886, the areas under wheat in these years being respec- tively 23,671 and 1326 acres, nnder oats 32,526 and 32,795 acres, and under barley, bere, &c., 3651 and 1340 acres. The area under green crops in 1859 was 38,213 acres, and in 1886 it was 24,436 acres, the areas under potatoes in these years being respectively 23,385 and 14,361 acres, under turnips 10,886 and 6171 acres, and under other green crops 4042 and 3904 acres. Horses between 1859 and 1886 diminished from 14,184 to 12,794, of which 9122 were two years old and upwards, but cattle increased from 84,440 to 102,878, of which 39,428 werc milch cows, and sheep from 42,408 to 55,805, while pigs decreased from 55,701 to 44,510. The number of mules in 1886 was 942, of asses 4319, of goats 5510, and of poultry

258, 058.

In 1876, according to the Return of Owners of Land, Waterford was divided among 814 proprietors, possessing 454,937 acres at an annual valuation of £276,642, or an average of about 12s, 2d. per acre. The estimated extent of waste lands was 880 acres. Of the owners 600 possessed one acre and upwards. The number of large estates is exceptionally great. The following possessed upwards of 8000 acres:— marquis of Waterford, 39,884; Lord Stuart de Decies, 30,823 ; duke of Devonshire, 27,484 ; R. A. Chearnley, 18,166 ; Edmond De La Poer, 138,448; John Palisser, 9825; Lord Ashtown, 9435; Sir J. H. Keane, Bart., 8909; and Sir R. J. Musgrave, Bart.,

8282.

Manufactures and Trade.—The woollen manufacture, except for private use, is now practically extinct, but the cotton manufacture is still of some importance. There are also breweries, distilleries, and a large number of flour-mills. Sea-fishing is prosecuted chiefly at Dungarvan. There are valuable salmon fisheries on the Black- water and the Suir.

Railways. —From the city of Waterford the Waterford and Central Jreland line goes northwards by Kilkenny, the Waterford and Limerick by Carrick-on-Suir and Clonmel to Limerick, the Water- ford and Tramore to Tramore, and the Waterford, Dungarvan, and Lismore to Lismore, where it joins a branch of the Great South- Western.

Administration and Population.—From 119,457 in 1812 the population increased by 1841 to 196,187, but by 1861 it diminished to 134,252, by 1871 to 123,310, and by 1881 to 112,768 (males 54,618, females 58,150), or 8°5 per cent. less than in 1871. The total number of emigrants from 1st May 1857 to 31st December 1878 was 67,080, and to 3lst December 1885 it was 79,240. In 1880 the number reached 2675, and in 1885 it was 13833. The county is divided into 8 baronies, with 82 parishes and 1557 town- lands. The principal towns are Waterford (population 29,181), Dungarvan (6306), Tramore (2036), Portlaw (1891), and Lismore (1860). Before the Redistribution Act of 1885 the county returned two members to parliament, the borough of Waterford two, and Dungarvan one,—Clonmel, which is partly in Waterford, also re- turning one. The county now returns two members, for the East and West Divisions respectively, while the county of the city of Waterford returns one member, and Dungarvan and Clonmel have been disfranchised. It is in the Leinster circuit, and assizes are held at Waterford, and quarter sessions at Lismore, Dungarvan, and Waterford. It is in the Cork military district, and there is a brigade depét at Clonmel, and barrack stations at Dungarvan and Waterford. The Catholics formed 94°8 per cent. of the population in 1871 and 95:0 in 1881, the Episcopalians in the same years 4°1 per cent. The proportion of persons who could read and write in 1871 was 35°7 per cent., and in 1881 it was 45°8; in 1881 10°6 per cent. could

read but could not write, and 43°6 could neither read nor writc,—14°3 per cent. being under seven years of age.

History and Antiquities.—In the 9th century the Danes landed in the district, and afterwards made a permancnt settlement there. There are in the county a considerable number of barrows, duns, cromlechs, and similar relics of the ancient inhabitants. At Ard- more there is a round tower 97 feet in height, and near it a huge rath and a large number of circular entrenchments. Waterford was one of the twelve counties into which King John, in 1205, divided that part of Ireland which he nominally anncxed to the English crown. On account of the convenience of the city as a landing place, many subsequent expeditions passed through the county directed against disaffected or rebellious tribes. In 1444 the greater part of it was granted to James, carl of Desmond, and

in 1447 it was bestowed on John Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury, who was created earl of Waterford. The county suffered severely during the Desmond rebellion, in the reign of Elizabeth, as well as in the rebellion of 1641 and during the Cromwellian period. Among the old castles special mention may be made of Lismore, originally erected by John, afterwards king of England, in 1185, but now in great part comparatively modern. The chief ecclesiastical re- mains are those of the chancel and nave of the cathedral of Ardmore, whcre a monastery and oratory were founded by St Declan in the 7th century. The sce of Ardmore was abolished in the 12th century.

WATERFORD, a city, county of a city, municipal and parliamentary borough, and the chief town of the above county, is finely situated on the south bank of the Suir 4 miles above its junction with the Barrow, at the head of the tidal estuary called Waterford Harbour, and on several railway lines, which afford it convenient communication with all parts of Ireland. It is 32 miles west of Wexford, 76 north-east of Cork, and 97 south-south-west of Dublin. The Suir is crossed by a wooden bridge of thirty-nine arches, and 832 feet long, connecting Waterford with the suburb of Ferrybank. The town is built chiefly along the banks of the river, occupying for the most part low and level ground except at its western extremity. The modern Protestant cathedral of the Holy Trinity, generally called Christ Church, a plain structure with a lofty spire, occupies the site of the church built by the Danes in 1096. Near it are the episcopal palace and deanery. There is a handsome Catholic cathedral, erected at a cost of £20,000; and the training seminary for priests called St John's College deserves notice. The principal secular buildings are the town-hall, the county and city courts and prisons, the new custom-house, erected in 1876, at a cost of £9000, the barracks, and the union workhouse. At the extremity of the quay is a large circular tower, called Reginald's Tower, forming at one time a portion of the city walls, and occupy- ing the site of the tower built by Reginald the Dane in 1003. Near the summit one of the balls shot from the cannon of Cromwell while besieging the city is still em- bedded in the wall. There are a number of hospitals and similar benevolent institutions, including the leper house founded in the reign of King John, now possessing an income of £1000 a year, and made use of practically as an infirmary. The town possesses breweries, salt-houses, foundries, and fiour-mills; and there is a large export trade in cattle, sheep, and pigs, and in agricultural pro- duce. The population of the city (area 10,059 acres) in 1871 was 29,979, and in 1881 it was 29,181.

Waterford Harbour is a winding and well-sheltered bay, formed by the estuary of the river Suir, and afterwards by tho joint estuary of the Nore and Barrow. Its length to the sea is about 15 miles. Its entrance is about 24 miles wide, and is well lighted by a fixed bright light on the ancient donjon of Hook Tower (189 feet in height), by a red light on Dunmore

pier, and by two leading lights at Duncannon. The quay, at which vessels of 2000 tons burden can discharge, was enlarged in 1705 by the removal of the city walls, and is about 14 miles in length. At Ferrybank, on the Kilkenny side of the river, there is a shipbuilding yard with patent slip and graving dock. By the Suir there is navigation for barges to Clonmel, by the Barrow for sailing vessels to New Ross and thence for barges to Athy, and by the Nore for barges to Inistiogue. The total number of vessels connected with the port in 1885 was 38, of 5246 tons. The number of British and foreign vessels that entered the port in the same year was 1784 of 530,092 tons, while 1255 of 412,326 tons cleared.

Anciently Waterford was called Cuan-na-groith, the haven of the sun. By early writers it was named Menapia. It is supposcd to have existed in very early times, but first acquired importanco under the Danes, of whom it remaincd one of the principal strong- holds until its capture by Strongbow in 1171. On 18th October 1172 Henry II. landed near Waterford, and he here received the hostages of the people of Munster. It became a cathedral city in 1096. Prince John, afterwards king of England, who had been declared lord of Ireland in 1177, landed at Waterford in 1185. After asccnding the English throne he in 1204 granted it a fair, and in 1206 a charter of incorporation. He landed at Waterford in 1210, in order to establish within his nominal territories in Ireland a more distinct form of government. The city received a new

charter from Henry III. in 1232. Richard II. landed at Waterford in October 1394 and again in 1399. In 1447 it was granted by Henry VI. to John Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury, who was created earl of Waterford. In 1497 it suecessfully resisted an attempt of Perkin Warbeck to eapture it, in recognition of which it received various privileges from Henry VII., who gave it the title of wrbs tintactia. In 1603, after the accession of James I. to the English crown, the city, along with Cork, took a prominent part in opposition to the Government and to the Protestant religion, but on the approach of Mountjoy it formally submitted. From this time, however, the magistrates whom it elected refused to take the oath of supremacy, and, as

by its charter it possessed the right to refuse admission to the king's judges, and therefore to dispenso with the right of holding assizes, a rule was obtained in the Irish chancery for the seizure of its charter, which was carried into effect in 1618. In 1619 an attempt was made to induce Bristol merehants to settle in the city and undertake its government, but no one would respond to the invitation, and in 1626 the charter was restored. The eity was unsuceessfully attacked by Cromwell in 1649, but surrendered to Ireton 10th August 1650. After the battle of the Boyne James IJ. embarked at it for France (July 1690). Shortly afterwards it surrendered to William, who sailed from it to England. It sent two members to parliament from 1874 to 1885, when the number was reduced to one.

WATER-GLASS. See S1uica, vol. xxii. pp. 53, 54.

WATER-HEN. See Moor-Hen.

WATER-LILY, a somewhat vague term, given to almost any floating plant with conspicuous flowers, but applying more especially to the species of Vymphxa and Nuphar. These are aquatic plants with their thick fleshy rootstocks or tubers embedded in the mud, and throwing up to the surface circular shield-like leaves, and leafless flower-stalks, each terminated by a single flower, often of great beauty, and consisting of four or five sepals, and numerous petals gradually passing into the very numerous hypogynous or perigynous stamens without any definite line of demarcation between them. The ovary consists of numerous carpels united together and free, or more or less embedded in the top of the flower-stalk. The ovary has many cavities with a large number of ovules attached to its walls, and is surmounted by a flat stigma of many radiating rowsasin a poppy. The fruit is baccate, and the seeds are remarkable for having their embryo surrounded by an endosperm as well as by a perisperm. The ana- tomical construction of these plants presents many pecu- liarities which have given rise to discussion as to the allocation of the order among the dicotyledons or among the monocotyledons, the general balance of opinion being in favour of the former view. The leaf-stalks and flower-stalks are traversed by longitudinal air-passages, whose disposition varies in different species. The species of Vymphza are found

in every quarter of the globe. Their flowers range from white to rose-coloured, yellow, and blue. Some expand in the evening only, others close soon after noon. Nymphxa alba is common in some parts of Britain, as is also the yellow Nuphar luteum. The seeds and the rhizomes contain an abundance of starch, which renders them serviceable in some places for food,

Under the general head of water-lily are ineluded the lotus of Egypt, Vymphxa Lotus, and the saered lotus of India and China, Nelumbiwm speciosum, formerly a native of the Nile, as shown by Egyptian seulptures and other evidence, but no longer found in that river. The gigantie Victoria regia, a native of tropical South America, also belongs to this group.

WATERLOO, a village of Belgium, in the province of Brabant, 94 miles to the south-south-east of Brussels, was the headquarters of the duke of Wellington from 17th to 19th June 1815, and has given its name throughout the English-speaking world to the famous battle fought in its neighbourhood on June 18, 1815. See Navozzon, vol. XVil. pp. 224-25,

WATERLOO, a city and the county seat of Black Hawk county, Iowa, United States, is situated in a rich farming and stock-raising country, on both sides of the Cedar river, which here furnishes a valuable water power.

WA T—WAT

The population in 1885 was 6479, of whom 1048 were foreign-born. . WATERLOO-WITH-SEAFORTH, a watering-place of Lancashire, England, on the Irish Sea, at the mouth of the Mersey, nearly opposite New Brighton in Cheshire, and on the Liverpool, Crosby, 'and Southport Railway, 4 miles north by west of Liverpool. On account of its facilities for bathing, firm sands, pleasant scenery, and nearness to Liverpool, of which indeed it may now be considered a suburb, it is much frequented during the summer months. It is well and regularly built, and possesses the usual characteristics of a rising watering-place. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 740 acres) was 9118 TielSsSi, WATERPROOF. See Inp1a-Rupser, vol. xii. p. 842. WATERSPOUT. See

Muzrzoronoey, vol, xvi. p. 130. WATER-SUPPLY. An ample supply of pure water is of the utmost importance for the healthiness of towns. When the population of a district is scattered it is possible to supply individual wants by means of streams, springs, or shallow wells ; but when a number of people are con- gregated within the limited area of a town the natural supply of water in this area is liable to be insufficient, and is also in danger of being contaminated by sewage and house refuse. Accordingly, works for the collection, storage, purification, and distribution of water are indis- pensable necessities in towns, for the preservation of health and the promotion of cleanliness. The remains of aqueducts near Rome and at other places (see AquEDUCT) show that important works for providing water were undertaken many centuries ago; and water for irrigation and other purposes has for ages been stored, in the rainy season, in tanks by the natives of India. Artificial pro- visions for the supply of water were, however, entirely neglected in Europe during the Middle Ages, and the colossal works of earlier times were allowed to fall into decay; and most of the present systems of water-supply are of comparatively modern date.

ORIGIN oF SUPPLY.

Rainfall.—All supplies of fresh water come primarily from the clouds, though portions may eventually be drawn from the bowels of the earth. Water when distilled is obtained in its purest form; and the heat of the sun is continually drawing up large quantities of moisture from sea and land, forming clouds which return it as rain to the earth. Some of the rain is quickly evaporated from the surface of the earth, and returned to the clouds ; some sinks into the ground to feed springs and underground stores of water; and some passes into streams and rivers, whence it flows into the sea, from which the greater portion of the rain is derived. The available water-supply of any district, accordingly, principally depends on the rainfall of the locality and the extent of the gathering ground, The rainfall varies greatly in different places, and at different periods of the year (see METEOROLOGY); and, in England alone, the average annual rainfall at the Stye, the wettest part of the lake district in Cumberland, is about eight times the rainfall at Hunstanton, the driest locality in Norfolk. The rainfall, moreover, varies from year to year; and the driest years

must: be taken into con- sideration in estimating the available water-supply.

Evaporation.—The proportion of the rainfall which is actually serviceable for water-supply depends greatly upon the season of the.year in which the rain falls; for evaporation is very active in the hot season, whereas in the cold season its influence is slight. Accordingly, for hydrological purposes, the year may be divided into two seasons in the latitudes of the British Isles,—the warm season, extending from the beginning of May to the

end of October, and the cold season, embracing the other half of the year. Comparatively little effect is produced by variations in the amount of rain in the warm season, except in extreme cases, owing to the large proportion drawn off by evaporation, whereas the rainfall during the cold season is of the utmost importance for replenish- ing the sources of supply which have been drained during the summer, 'The period of the year, therefore, in which the rain falls is of more consequence than the total amount in the year; and a drought is much more likely to result from a dry winter than from a dry summer. Any deficiency in the supply is generally felt towards the close of the warm season, when the reserves of water, furnished by the rains of the preceding cold season, have been reduced to their lowest level by the demands of the suinmer.

Other circumstances also modify the influence of evapor- ation. Rain descending in a heavy continuous fall, by sinking into the ground or escaping into the water- courses, is less exposed to diminution by evaporation than several separate showers of rain, equivalent in total volume, but spread over a longer period. Forests and vegetation shelter the ground from the influence of evaporation ; and thereby, in spite of abstracting some of the moisture for their own requirements, they augment the proportion of available rainfall, The nature and slope of the surface stratum, moreover, notably affect the loss from evaporation. Rain falling on an impermeable stratum is almost wholly evaporated in hot weather, when the surface is flat; but it flows off from a steep slope before evaporation can produce its full effect. Rain readily sinks into a porous

stratum; and when a depth of three or four feet below the surface is reached it is toa great extent withdrawn from the influence of evaporation.

Percolation.—The percolation of rain through porous strata is the origin of springs and subterranean reservoirs of water, from whence so many supplies are derived. Sand, gravel, chalk, and sandstone are very absorbent strata ; whilst the oolites and other limestones are per- meable toa smaller extent. The excess of rainfall over evaporation sinks into the ground till it reaches the level of saturation of the stratum by previous rainfalls, and adds to the underground supply. The water thus intro- duced is prevented from sinking lower down into the earth by encountering an underlying impermeable stratum ; and it is hindered in flowing away to the lowest point of the outcrop of the permeable stratum by friction, which causes the surface of saturation to slope towards its outlet, the inclination varying with the head of water and the resistance offered to, its flow. The amount of percolation depends upon the rainfall, the porosity of the stratum, and the extent of its exposed surface ; and it varies inversely as the evaporation, being greatest in winter and during heavy long-continued rainfalls, and least in the summer and with short showers of rain.

Watercourses.—On impermeable strata, the whole of the rain not removed by evaporation finds its way into the watercourses. The streams, however, draining these strata have a very variable discharge, as they are rapidly swollen after a heavy fall of rain, and soon subside (see River Encrnerrine), whilst in fine summer weather they are liable to be dried up. Accordingly, torrential streams, in their natural condition, are not suitable for water-supply, as they tend to fail when they are most wanted, and owing to their rapid flow they carry along a large quantity of matter in suspension. The flow of streams draining permeable strata is more regular, both on account of the smaller fall generally of the river-bed, and also owing to the rainfall being delayed by percolation in its passage to the river. Some of the rain sinking into

a permeable stratum tends to find an outlet outside the valley in which it falls, but most of it reappears again in the form of springs which feed the river gradually at a lower part of its course; and the loss which may occur is more than compensated for by the greater regularity of flow. In olden times, towns, villages, and monasteries were established on the banks of these streams, owing to the ready, ample, and never-failing water-supply thus ensured.

Sources or SuPPLy.

Tanks.—The simplest method of procuring pure water is to collect the rain as it falls from the clouds; and this method is a necessity where, as in tropical countries, there is an excessive rainfall during one period of the year, followed by a long drought, unless the rain sinks into a permeable stratum whence it can subsequently be drawn. These open tanks, however, excavated in the ground, have to be numerous, and often large in extent, to collect sufficient rain to supply the wants of the surrounding population for several months; and the water in them is subject to loss from evaporation during the dry season.

The collection of rain-water is also advantageous in the rural districts of temperate regions, especially for large institutions and isolated mansions and farms, where, by a simple arrangement of gutters and pipes, a large pro- portion of the rain falling on the sloping roofs can be stored in underground tanks. In large towns, the rain- water is liable to contamination by smoke, dust, and other impurities, and is only serviceable for gardens and water- closets, or where softness is of more consequence than purity.

Springs—A very valuable source of water-supply is provided by springs. These springs appear at the lowest point § of the outcrop of a permeable stratum, where it rests upon an impermeable stratum (fig. 1); and they constitute the outflow of the rain which has percolated

re

———————— ————————

——————— = mpermedore Fig. 1. through that stratum. A spring depends for its supply upon the extent of the underground reservoir furnished by the permeable stratum ; and its discharge is regulated by its level in relation to the line of saturation of the stratum and the resistance offered to its flow. The gathering ground of a spring consists of the portions AB, DS of the permeable stratum drained by it which are actually exposed at the surface, provided the surface slope is not very steep, and also of any impermeable surface strata BOD sloping from a higher level towards the permeable outcrop. The position of the spring is deter- mined by the dip AS of the underlying impermeable stratum and the line of least resistance to the under- ground flow. When the permeable stratum covers the surface, and is of small extent, as when it forms a thin cap toa hill, an outflow only occurs after a fall of rain. Where a permeable stratum, with a limited gathering ground, has a sufficient depression at some point to cause the line of saturation to sink occasionally below the level of the outcrop, the outflowing spring is intermittent ; and the time of the appearance of such springs (or bournes, as they are termed) can be accurately predicted by observing the rise of the water in the neighbouring wells sunk into these permeable strata. A spring is generally clear, and free from organic impurities, as particles in suspension are removed by the natural filtration, and organic matters are

oxidized and eliminated in the passage of the water through the ground. The water, however, collects any soluble gases and salts which exist in the strata through which it flows ; and most springs contain some inorganic compounds in solution, depending upon the nature of the strata and the distance traversed. Occasionally springs are so strongly impregnated with certain substances as to receive specific names, such as sulphuretted, chalybeate, and saline springs; but in such cases they are of more value for medicinal purposes than as sources of water- supply. The abundant springs derived from the chalk, though containing considerable quantities of carbonate of lime, are quite suitable for domestic purposes. Springs from large underground supplies possess the advantage of a fairly constant temperature, as their sources are pro- tected from atmospheric changes ; but underground waters are subject to the rise of temperature,

experienced in descending below the surface of the earth, of 1° F., on the average, for each 52 feet of depth.

Small springs frequently supply little. hamlets 3 and a shallow tank, formed at the spring, into which the water trickles, serves as a reservoir, which is gradually filled, and from which water is readily drawn. Large springs may afford adequate supplies for towns; but before relying upon such a source it is essential to gauge their discharge at the close of the autumn, in a dry year, so as to ascertain their sufficiency under unfavourable conditions. When springs have been selected, it only remains for the engineer to design suitable conduits for conveying the water to the place to be supplied. The fine chalk-water springs of Amwell and Chadwell, in Hertfordshire, have been thus utilized by the New River Company for supplying London, by means of a conduit 40 miles long, completed in 1613 ; and the springs issuing from the Malvern Hills furnish Malvern with a plentiful supply of the purest water.

Springs were naturally much prized in ancient times, when the simplest means of procuring water had to be resorted to ; and ignorance of their real origin led to their being the subject of mythological legends. They were used for the supply of public fountains by the Greeks and Romans (see Founratn), and provided water for some of the Roman aqueducts,

Streams and Rivers.—In olden times, the only other obvious sources of water-supply, besides rain and springs, were the watercourses which carried off the surplus rain- fall. Streams and rivers afford the most ample supply, but they become turbid in flood-time ; and when they have a rapid fall, and drain an impermeable basin, they fail‘in times of drought. These objections have, however, been overcome by settling-tanks, filter-beds, and storage- reservoirs,—so that now the principal supplies are drawn from these sources. The increase, indeed, of population, and especially the introduction of the system of discharg- ing the sewage of towns into the adjacent streams, have polluted many rivers. Fortunately, in process of time, some of the organic impurities are removed by aquatic animals and plants, and some become oxidized and thus rendered innocuous (see WATER), —so that, after a sufficient length of unpolluted flow, the river again becomes suit- able for supply. The

enactments against river-pollution have attacked this evil at its source ; but some rivers, passing through large manufacturing centres, are hopelessly contaminated with refuse products. The best sources of water are found in streams draining uncultivated mountainous districts, where a plentiful rainfall on steep impervious strata affords a very pure though somewhat intermittent supply. The freedom from habitations, the rapid flow of rain off the surface, the absence of organic impurities and of soluble salts, prevent any chance of contamination beyond occasional discoloration by peat.

WATER-SUPPLY

Distance, however, from hilly regions and a considerable population render it frequently necessary to resort to larger rivers, which, passing towns and villages in their

course, become more or less contaminated, and, being fed by springs from permeable strata, contain the salts dis- solved by those springs. London, for instance, draws its principal supplies from the Thames and the Lea 3 and, though microscopical investigations and the reports of the water-examiners are not always reassuring about the qualities of the water thus supplied and the recuperative powers of nature, waters containing some organic matters and certain kinds of micro-organisms do not appear to be injurious, as is evidenced by the general absence of specific diseases in the inhabitants supplied from these sources.

Wells.—There are two distinct kinds of wells, namely, shallow wells, sunk into a superficial permeable stratum 5 and deep wells, sunk through an impermeable stratum into an underlying permeable stratum. Both kinds of wells tap the underground waters which are the sources of springs, and furnish artificial outlets for waters which would either find a natural outlet in springs at the outcrop, or which, owing to a depression of the strata, may not possess a natural outlet at a low enough level ever to drain the lower part of the underground reservoir.

Shallow wells, sunk in the ordinary manner, have long been used for collecting moderate supplies of water, Where a permeable stratum, such as the Bagshot sands, or the gravel covering parts of the London basin,

overlies a watertight stratum such as the London Clay, especially where a slight depression in the impervious stratum towards the centre, or a considerable expanse of the surface stratum, prevents a ready outflow from the per- meable beds. Many parts of London were supplied for a long time in this manner; for the rain percolating the bed of gravel flowed into the wells sunk in it, from whence the water could be drawn up. Indeed, as pointed out by Professor Prestwich, the growth of London was restricted, till the regular establishment of 'waterworks, to those districts possessing a gravel subsoil, in which water could be readily procured, as no such facilities existed where the clay rose to the surface. The sites also of many of the older towns and villages were doubtless determined by similar considerations. Shallow wells are still very useful in supplying scattered populations, but they are exposed to the worst forms of contamination when the houses are near together. Any surface impurities are washed in with the rain ; frequently cesspools are given an outlet into the permeable stratum from which the water-supply is derived ; and pumping in the well, to increase the supply, creates a flow from the contaminated areas to the well. Such utter neglect of sanitary pre-cautions has led to serious outbreaks of illness ; and the sparkling water from some of the old wells in the City of London has proved very deleterious, from the infiltration into them of the decaying matter from graveyards and elsewhere. Shallow wells, in fact, must be resorted to with great caution, and only when an absence of habita- tions, or a thorough inspection of the district drained by the well, affords assurance of freedom fron organic pollution.

Deep wells, passing generally through impervious beds into a permeable water-bearing stratum to a depth at which an adequate supply of water is obtained, are mostly free from organic impurities, partly owing to the protection of the superincumbent impervious stratum, and partly to the filtration any impurities must undergo before reaching the well. The wells are usually formed by sinking a shaft lined with brick for the upper portion, and then carrying down a boring below to the requisite depth. The level of the water in the well depends upon the water-level in the

WATER-

stratum ; and generally the water has to be raised by pumping to the surface. Occasionally, owing to a de- pression of the strata, the top of the well is below the level of the lowest part of the outcrop of the permeable stratum into which the well is sunk, and the water rises in the well directly this stratum is reached, and flows over if the hydrostatic pressure is sufficient to overcome the friction. These latter wells, known as Artesian wells, have been already described (see ARTESIAN WELLS) ; and the methods of boring other deep wells are precisely similar. The most favourable strata for deep wells in England are the Chalk, Oolites, New Red Sandstone, and Lower Greensand. The yield of these wells depends upon the extent of the portion of the underground reservoir which they can drain; and the reservoir depends for its supply, as in the case of springs, on the extent of the stratum exposed at the surface, the drainage it may receive from adjoining impermeable strata, and the amount of rainfall over these areas. As these points can only be roughly estimated, it is impossible to judge of the yield beforehand ; and much depends on the fissures the well may happen to pierce, as the main flow in many rocks takes place along their fissures. It is dis- advantageous to sink a well where the superincumbent impervious stratum is very thick, not merely because of the depth that has to be sunk before reaching water, but also on account of the slow rate of the underground flow at a long distance from the outcrop, and owing to the com- pression of the porous stratum by the mass aboveit. For instance, the deep well on Southampton Common, sunk through 465 feet of impervious beds, has only yielded a small supply of water, though carried 852 feet into the chalk. A well may also prove a failure owing to a fault or an impervious barrier interrupting the underground flow, if it is sunk on the side of the fault or barrier away from which the dip of the stratum inclines. Thus a well sunk at A (fig. 2) will receive the water flowing along

=

—e 4 ————————

SSS

AM

Fig. 2.

the permeable stratum ; whilst an adjacent deeper well at B will yield no water, on account of the interruption of the flow. As there is a limit to the underground waters, only a limited number of wells can be advantageously sunk within a certain area; and a multiplication of wells, such as has occurred in the London basin, permanently lowers the water-level of the underground reservoir, and involves an increased lift in pumping to maintain the supply. Wells drawing their supplies from the same sources as springs reduce the yield of the springs issuing from the strata which they pierce; and when these springs feed rivers the volume of these rivers is thereby somewhat diminished. Wells, however, sunk into strata draining to the sea-coast merely intercept water which otherwise would be absolutely lost. A useful well for small sup- plies is a tube well, which consists of a series of strong wrought-iron pipes, between 1 and 2 inches in diameter, the bottom length being terminated in a point, and per- forated with little holes for a short distance up. The point is driven into the ground by a falling weight, as in pile-driving ; and, as the tube descends, fresh lengths of

oe Poly 405

pipe are screwed on the top. When the perforated pipe reaches a water-bearing stratum, the water enters through the holes and is raised by a pump (compare descriptions and diagrams of tube-wells under PETRoLEuM, vol. xviii. pp. 716-718).

EXTENSION OF SUPPLY.

A supply obtained from wells may be increased by reaching the water flowing through undrained fissures or lying in untouched cavities, either by sinking fresh wells, or by driving headings from the bottom of existing wells in various directions, both of which courses were adopted for extending the Brighton water-supply. Continued pumping sometimes improves the supply when the stratum is well saturated and the drain is not sufficient to lower the water-level permanently. This result is due to the steepening of the gradient of flow towards the well by the depression of the water-level in the well, which increases the velocity of flow,

whereby the channels of access are cleared out and enlarged, so that the water flows more readily and quickly into the well than at the commence- ment. |

The supply from springs and streams can only be increased by storing up the excess of supply in the wet season, to make up for the deficiency in the dry season. This can be accomplished by means of storage reservoirs, which sometimes are found suitably provided by nature in the form of lakes, or may be constructed in mountain valleys by means of dams.

RESERVOIRS.

Lakes as Reservoirs.—A lake is a natural reservoir of water, caused by the influx of a stream into a depression of an impermeable stratum, which is barred to a certain height by a ridge across its outlet, over which the water has to rise before it can flow away (see LaKz). The water of lakes is generally of exceptional purity, owing to its being usually supplied by the drainage from the impervious uncultivated ground of uninhabited mountainous districts, and its general freedom from pollu- tion, and on account of the lake serving as a deep subsiding reservoir for any matters in suspension contained in the inflowing streams, of which the Lake of Geneva in relation to the turbid upper Rhone is a notable instance. Glasgow is supplied with excellent water from Loch Katrine (see Aquepuct, vol. ii. p. 224); it was at one time proposed to supply Edinburgh from St Mary's Loch, and London from Bala Lake ; and works for the conveyance of water from Thirlmere, in Cumberland, to Manchester are in progress. To increase the storage capacity of a lake intended to serve as a reservoir, and avoid injury to vested interests, the ordinary water-level of the lake has to be raised by heightening the barrier at its outlet. By this means the lake is not unduly lowered by the drain upon it during the dry season, and compensation water is pro- vided to supply the water-rights along the stream below. The extent to which the water-level of the lake has to be raised depends upon the area of the lake, the influx into it, and the supply drawn off ; thus Loch Katrine, with an area of 3000 acres, needed only a rise of 4 feet in order that, with a maximum lowering of 7 feet, it might provide a storage of 5687 million gallons for a supply of fifty million gallons per day ; whereas the water-level of Thirlmere, with an

existing area of only 350 acres, requires raising 50 feet to furnish a storage of 8100 million gallons for a similar daily supply. The amount of water that can be collected depends on the catchment area, and the rainfall of the driest years, less the loss from evaporation; and the supply which can be relied upon from any definite gathering ground is given by the

formula Q=62.15 A (4 R-E), where Q is the daily supply in gallons, A is the catchment area in acres,.R is the average annual rainfall and E the loss from evaporation, both in inches! The storage capacity must be regulated by the number of consecutive days, in time of drought, that the supply might have to be drawn from the reservoir without its receiving any accession of water. This period has been variously estimated at from 70 to 300 days according to the locality ; for, owing to the smaller fluctuations in the rainfall and in the periods of drought in very rainy districts, and the less amount of evaporation, a much smaller storage suffices for very wet districts than for very dry ones.

Storage Reservoirs.—Where no natural lake is available for a reservoir, an artificial lake may be formed by con- structing a dam across a narrow gorge of a mountainous valley, thereby impounding, in the winter, the stream draining the valley, and storing up a supply for the following summer. To prevent an escape of the water thus impounded, the reservoir must be formed on an impervious stratum, and all cracks and fissures closed, or the bed and banks must be rendered watertight by a surface layer of impervious material. Occasionally the configuration of the ground and the amount of storage re- quired render it neces- sary to form a series of

near at hand, and where a rock foundation is not easily attainable. All loose material must be removed from the site of the dam; and the puddle trench in the centre must be carried down to a solid impervious bed (fig. 3). Tha embankment must be brought up in thin layers carefully

oa 3 Scale to Figs.3 & 4, 109 FEET Cg fe a os eee

Fig, 3.—Nethertrees Reseryoir Embankment, Paisley.

punned or rolled, the most retentive materials being placed near the middle, and the looser materials towards the outside. 'The inner slope, facing the reservoir, is usually made 3 to 1, and pitched on the surface to protect it from the wash of the waves. The outer slope is formed to the angle of stability of the material employed, generally 2 to 1; and occasionally berms are introduced, diminish- ing the liability to slips (fig. 4). The best puddled clay is used for the central trench; but the remainder of the embankment should not be composed exclusively of clay,

impounding reservoirs — at different levels along a valley, thereby in- creasing the number, eae

Original

SSSSSSSSSSSSSSY

ss

FEE kbs 3S

4

but keeping down the RMU RII ORIN

SGS/ 2 ff~

height of the dams.

For instance, in supplying Manchester from the Long- dendale valley, six large reservoirs, having a total area of 497 acres, and a capacity of 4160

million gallons, were formed in steps by dams from 70 to 100 feet high (see Aquepvuct, vol. ii. p. 224).

ReEsERVoIR Dams,

The capacity of a reservoir depends upon the form and levels of the valley in which it is situated, and the height of the dam retaining it. As, however, the extent of the water surface is considerably increased by raising the water-level, an additional height of dam adds largely to the capacity of a reservoir. Thus Thirlmere, with an existing maximum depth of 108 feet, will have its area increased from 350 to 800 acres by raising the barrier at its outlet 50 feet. Accordingly, dams of considerable height are sometimes erected: as, for instance,the Entwistle embankment of the Bolton waterworks, retaining a reservoir 120 feet deep, the Villar dam, for the supply of Madrid, founded 1584 feet below the water-level of its reservoir (fig. 7), and the Furens dam, near St Etienne, with a height of 164 feet at the water-level (fig. 5); whilst the Gileppe dam, near Verviers, was made 1473 feet high (fig. 6) in preference to four dams of 95 feet.

A reservoir dam is constructed either with earthwork in an embankment sloped on each side, and with a water- tight puddle or concrete trench along the centre, or of masonry. Earthwork embankments have, till within the last three or four years, been exclusively adopted in Great Britain ; whilst masonry dams have been long ago con- structed in Spain, and more recently introduced int France.

Earthen Embankments.—In moist climates, and for moderate heights, embankments of earth are adopted with advantage for reservoir dams, more especially when ample materials can be readily obtained, either by excavations in the reservoir, thus enlarging its capacity, or elsewhere

1 Theory and Practice of Hydro-Mechanics, Inst. C. E., p. 44.

t Culvert TILIF ITAL PIA $4

Fia. 4.—Gladhouse Reservoir Embankment, Edinburgh.

as stiff clay under the influence of the weather, especially on the exposed outer slope, tends to slip. An earthen dam possesses ample stability if it is perfectly solid ; but it may fail from the infiltration of water through it, owing to faulty construction, or from settlement, leading to its overtopping by the water in the reservoir. –

Masonry Dams.—In hot dry countries, an earthen embankment is liable to crack and become somewhat dis- integrated ; and high embankments, owing to their flat side slopes, require a very large amount of material. Accordingly, in Spain, masonry dams have been adopted; and they are preferable to earthen dams when the height exceeds about 80 feet, and where a rock foundation can be secured. The Spanish masonry dam of Puentes (Lorca), 164 feet high, was indeed built upon piles; but it was eventually undermined, and settled; and the outburst of the water from the reservoir on its failure in 1802 caused the loss of 608 lives. Besides a solid rock founda- tion, the conditions of stability of a masonry dam are that the maximum pressure shall not exceed the limit that the masonry can sustain without injury, and that the lines of resultant pressures, with the reservoir empty and full, shall not anywhere pass outside the middle third of the section of the dam, so as to prevent the possibility of tension at the faces. With the reservoir empty, the pres- sures on the dam are merely those due to its weight; and the line of resultant pressures is the locus of the points of intersection of the verticals from the centres of gravities of the several portions of the dam above a series of horizontal lines, with the base lines of those portions (figs. 5 and 8). With the reservoir full, the water exerts a horizontal thrust against the inner face of the dam, equal to the weight of a column of water having the depth of the water resting against the dam, and acting at the centre of pressure, which is at two-thirds of the depth down from the water-level. 'The line of resultant pressures, in this case, is the locus of the points obtained by the intersection of the resultant lines of the pressures of the masonry and

WATER-

the water on the portions of dam, at different distances from the top, with the horizontal base lines of these portions (figs. 5 and 8). The direction and amount of the resultant are readily obtained graphically by the

parallelogram of forces, the point of application being at . the intersection of the vertical from the centre of gravity with the horizontal line one-third up from the base; for, by drawing the horizontal and vertical lines proportionate in length to the water-pressure and weight of the dam respectively, the diagonal represents the resultant of these forces both in magnitude and direction. When the inner face of the dam is battered, the weight of water resting on this face must be added to the weight of the dam when the reservoir is full The resultant pressures neces- sarily increase with the depth; and the maximum pres- sure is at or near the base of the inner face when the reservoir is empty, and of the outer face when the reservoir is full. The top has only to be made wide enough to resist the shock of the waves and floating ice in the reservoir; but the base, having to bear the weight of the dam together with the water-pressure, requires widening out adequately for the safe limit of pressure on the masonry not to be exceeded ; and, as the water-pressure with the full reservoir deflects the resultant towards the outer face, this face is given a considerable batter (fig. 5). All dams have to be raised high enough not to be over- topped by the highest waves in a storm, depending on the size and exposure of the reservoir.

Sections of three of the largest masonry dams erected within the last twenty-five years, namely, Furens, Gileppe, and Villar (figs. 5, 6, and 7), as well as the Vyrnwy rubble concrete dam, now in course of construction (fig. 8), drawn to the same scale, illustrate the forms adopted for these dams. The Furens and Villar dams follow closely the theoretical requirements; whilst the Gileppe and Vyrnwy dams, with their excess of thickness, impose an un- necessary weight on the base, and absorb extra material, without any adequate compensating advantage. Provision, however, was made in the section of the Gileppe dam to admit of its being raised at some future time, and for a roadway along the top, which in Some measure accounts for its excess of width; and the Gileppe and Vyrnwy dams are the first examples of such structures in Belgium and Great Britain.

The Furens dam (fig. 5), constructed in 1859-66, across the Gouffre d'Enfer, for forming -a reservoir with a capacity of 563 million cubic feet,

has a maximum height of 183 feet, and a length along the top of 887 feet; and the maximum pressure on the

a. masonry is 6°1 tons per square foot on the inner face, a few feet above the base, with the reservoir empty; whereas, with the reservoir full, the maximum pressure on the outer face is under 6 tons. No allowance was made for the: arched form of the dam, in plan, towards the re- servoir, which reduces the pressure, due to the head of water, at the lower part where the valley is very contracted, and would have admit- ted of the omis- sion of the pro- jecting outer portion for the bottom 60 feet.

very low limit of pres- sure, in addi- tion to the ex- cess of strength

Scale to Figs. 5, 6,7, and 8. iin

; 7 50 190 FEET

Fie. 5.—Fnrens Reservoir Dam, near St Etienne.

just referred to, was adopted, owing to the unprecedented height and type of the Furens dam. By raising, however, the limit to 6°6 tons per square foot, it was possible to reduce the section of the Ban dam, 188 feet in height at the water-line, making it 110 fect wide at the base, as compared with 1164 feet for the Furens dam at the same depth; whilst with the samo limit applied to a dam of the full height of the Furens dam, the reduction in width

BU PP LY 407

at the base would be from 161 feet to 154 feet.1 Any further raising of the limit of pressure, which might be safely effected, would be of little advantage for dams down toa depth of about 100 feet, as the reduction in width is restricted by the condition of the middle third; but beyond that depth the width is regulated by the pressure.

The Gileppe dam (fig. 6), built in 1869-75, having a maximum height of 154 feet, and a length along the top of 771 feet, retains a reservoir with a capacity of 4233 million cubie feet. The average pressure on the base is

8‘2 tons per square foot; so that, even allowing for tho specific gravity of the masonry being about one-seventh greater at Gileppe than at Furens, the maximum _ pressure on the Gileppe dam

Yp Yj A

YUM Ug YH) WACK ANY, yn

Se

mein JAF. Oke

MMMM UGLY, UN ANY ASU Wi ENON MSG AN

Fic. 6,—Gileppe Reservoir Dam, near Verviers.

is considerably greater than on the Furens dam, in spite of its greater base and the smaller head of water (compare figs. 5 and 6), owing to the excess of material employed in its construction.

The Villar dam (fig. 7), built across the river Lozoya in 1870-78, convex towards the reservoir as at Furens and Gileppe, has a maximum height of 1683 fect, and a length along the top of 546 feet; and it forms a reservoir having a capacity of 702 million cubic feet. It differs very little in height and type from the Furens dam; but the form given to the batter of the outer face is cal- culated to render the pressures more uniform towards the base. é

The Vyrnwy dam (fig. 8), now (1888) in course of construction, across the Vyrnwy in Montgo- meryshire, for form- ing a reservoir, 1100 acres in area, to supply 40 million

allons per day to iverpool, is to sus- Yff tain a maximum

head of water of

UK only 704 feet; but, — AS >

ut

—— ——- —-/58' 6!

‘ i}

i$: 51 3 Fid. 7.—Villar Reservoir Dam, near Madrid.

as it has to be car- ried down about 60 fect below the sur- face, in the centre of the valley, to reach solid rock, its maximum height is about 140 feet, and its length along the top is 1850 feet, The maximum pressure on the inner face with the reservoir ee empty has been estimated at a7 tons

20.0” per square foot, and with the reservoir full at 6°7 tons on the outer face. These pressures are considerably in ex- cess of the maxima pressures ou the Furens dam, though the head of water to be supported is much less, and the width at the base is greater in propor- tion to the depth. The pressures at the base in . the Vyrnwy and Gileppe sy dams show that a super- abundant mass of material in a masonry dam, whilst involving a larger outlay, imposes a greater pres- sure upon the masonry, whereas the stability is ample in the Furens type ;

Fig, 8.—Vyrnwy Reservoir Dam. and the oozing of water through the dam should be provided against by the quality of the materials and workmanship, rather than by an extra thickness of masonry.

1 Annales des Ponts et Chaussées, 4th ser., vol. xii. pl. 127.

408

Accessory Works. Sometimes a small dam isplacedacross the upper end of a reservoir, so as to form a small settling reservoir, in which the inflowing stream can deposit any sediment before passing into the main reservoir.

A waste weir is provided at a suitable place in the dam with its sill slightly lower than the highest proposed water-level in the reservoir, so that the surplus water, when this level is reached, may flow over into the lye-wash. The length of the weir should be made sufficient for the discharge over it to pass off the inflow during a flood, so as to ensure the dam against being overtopped by a rise of water in the reservoir, which would

be fatal to an earthen dam. To provide for a large discharge without a great length of weir, the sill of the weir may be placed somewhat lower, and planks placed temporarily across it to retain the water at its highest level on the approach of the summer.

The water is drawn off from the reservoir, as required for supply, through an outlet culvert passing from a low level in the reservoir into a conduit in the valley below. This culvert was formerly frequently placed through the lowest part of the dam, being readily formed during the construction of the dam, and giving command of all the water in the reservoir. Accidents, however, have often been traced to the unequal settlement of the earthen embankment near the culvert, or to infiltration of water into the embankment, either by escaping from the culvert fractured by settlement, or by finding a passage along the outside line of the culvert or pipes. Thus the bursting of the Dale Dike embankment, 95 feet high, near Sheffield, in 1864, on the occasion of the first filling of the reservoir behind it, having a capacity of 114 million cubic feet, which entailed the loss of 238 lives, was attributed to the unequal settlement and consequent cracking of the puddle wall over the trench in the rock in which the outlet pipes were laid, aggravated in this instance by the defectiveness of the material in the main bank, the rough manner in which the bank. was raised, and the rapid filling of the reservoir. The percolation of the water under pressure along the line of outlet pipes was the cause of the gradual failure of the embankment, 41 feet high, across the Lynde Brook, Worcester, Mass., which burst in 1876 and set free a reservoir with a capacity of 110 million cubic feet.

No possible considerations can justify the burying of outlet pipes at the base of a high embankment, with the valves regulating the discharge at the outer extremity, whereby the water-pressure always acts along the whole length of the pipes, and their inspection is impracticable. In some cases a valve-tower is erected in the centre of the embankment, by which means the water can be shut off from a portion of the pipes. If, however, the outlet pipes are carried under the embankment, they should be laid in the solid ground, and should be commanded along their entire length by a valve-tower placed at the inner toe of the embankment (fig. 4). Nevertheless, it is far safer to carry the outlet pipes in a tunnel

constructed through the side of the valley, beyond one end of the embankment, In the case of masonry dams, the outlet is generally constructed in the solid rock distinct from the dam ; but at Villar the outlet culvert has been carried through the centre of the dam (fig. 7).

CONVEYANCE oF SUPPLY.

A reservoir in a mountain valley is at a sufficient elevation for the water to flow by gravitation to the locality to be supplied ; and it is only necessary to form a conduit by canals, tunnels, aqueducts, and pipes, of adequate size in relation to the gradient, to convey the daily supply required (see HypRomxcuanics). In olden times hills were contoured, and valleys were crossed by

colossal aqueducts, at great expense, to obtain a regular inclination, which was reduced by the circuitous route that had to be taken (see AquEpuct). Now, however, hills are pierced by tunnels; and, by the employment of cast- iron, deep wide valleys can be crossed by inverted siphons following the depressions of the land,—so that a much straighter course is attainable, affording better gradients, and therefore enabling smaller conduits to be adopted, which is of great importance when long distances have to be traversed. Thus the waters of Thirlmere, after being discharged through a tunnel formed under the Kirkstone Pass at the south end of the lake, instead of at the natural outlet to the north, will be conveyed to Manchester by a conduit 96 miles long, with a total fall of 178 feet. Portions of the route are in tunnels, 7 feet square, the longest tunnel being a little over 3 miles long ; and there are several inverted siphons, to be formed of five cast-iron pipes, each 34 feet in diameter, the longest siphon being 3% miles, and that under the river Lune having to bear a water-pressure of 416 feet. The water from the Vyrnwy reservoir will be conveyed to Liverpool in a conduit 67 miles long, of which 4 miles will be in tunnel, and will furnish a supply of 40 million gallons per day. A large supply of water from the river Verdon for the district round Aix, serving for irrigation and manufactures, as well as for domestic purposes,

is conveyed across the valley of St Paul in an inverted siphon formed of two wrought-iron tubes, each 53 feet in diameter.

The water obtained from rivers in low districts, and from wells, has to be raised by pumping to the height necessary to obtain a proper pressure for supply ; and the pumps have to be in duplicate, to prevent a failure in the supply in the event of a break-down. Thus the water- supply of London has to be raised by pumping to fill the service reservoirs.

PURIFICATION.

The water obtained for supply is frequently not sufficiently pure to be at once distributed for domestic purposes. The impurities to which water is liable are of three kinds, namely, particles of matter in suspension, inorganic substances in solution, and organic matters in solution or of extreme minuteness. Suspended matters are readily removed by subsidence if the particles are heavy, and by filtration if the particles are flocculent or light. Some inorganic compounds are readily removed, whilst others cannot be dealt with in a practical manner. The removal of organic impurities is of the most im- portance, and the most difficult, which has led to the great care exercised in selecting unpolluted supply.

Settling-Reservoirs.—Allusion has already been made to subsiding reservoirs formed at the head of large storage reservoirs ; the object of these, however, is rather to pre- vent the accumulation of silt and sand in the principal reservoir than for the purpose of purification, but the principle is the same. Supplies from large reservoirs are generally free from matters in suspension, except some- times during heavy floods, owing to the subsidence in the reservoir itself; but river supplies have often to be led into settling-reservoirs, where the water, whilst at rest, can deposit its heavier particles before passing on to the filter-beds for the removal of the lighter portions.

Lilter-Beds.—Over the bottom of brick tanks layers of clean material are spread, decreasing in coarseness from small rubble to sharp sand, with a total average thickness of about 4 feet. The actual filtration is effected by the upper layer of sand; and the lower layers allow the passage of the water unaccompanied by the sand. The efficiency of the filtration depends

upon the slowness of the passage of the water, which should not exceed a flow

|

WATER-

of from 24 to 3 gallons per square foot of area per hour. The filter must periodically be cleaned by scraping off the top surface of the sand, which becomes choked with the matter removed from the water ; and after a time a fresh layer of sand has to be provided. Filtration, though in itself a purely mechanical operation, has been found to reduce the organic impurities in the water, which must be due either to their oxidation from exposure in thin layers to the air in the process of filtering or to the actual removal of very minute organisms floating in the water, or probably to both causes combined.

Filters of spongy iron mixed with gravel were set up at the Antwerp waterworks in 1881, and arrested a quantity of matter which had passed through an upper layer of sand, and proved very efficient agents for purification. Their large cost, however, their becoming rapidly clogged and caked on the top, necessitating the removal of the upper layer of sand to break up the hard top iron crust, and the rather frequent renewal of the iron required, as compared with sand, were a bar to the extension of the system, which had become inadequate for its work. Eventually, it was found that the purification could be effected more economically and rapidly, and quite as effectually, by scattering cast-iron borings in the water as it flowed through horizontal revolving cylinders, furnished with projecting plates fastened at intervals round the inside, which, in revolving, scooped up the iron at the bottom, which had fallen through the water, and dis- charged it on reaching the top. The iron is first converted into ferrous oxide, FeO, which dissolves, at least partly, as bicarbonate, and then by further oxidation into ferric oxide, Fe,O,, which readily precipitates, and is easily removed by filtration through sand, a small portion only of the oxide remaining in. solution. Iron appears to purify water from organic matter, partly by its fatal influence on the growth and even life of micro-organisms, and partly by dragging down the floating organisms in the process of precipitation.

Softening Water.—Many waters drawn from springs, wells, and rivers fed by springs contain inorganic salts in solution, and, though innocuous and pleasant for drinking, are not good for general domestic and manufacturing purposes, owing to their curdling soap and encrusting kettles, boilers, and pipes. This quality, known as hardness, is mainly due to salts of lime, which are found in large quantities in waters drawn from the chalk. Most of the lime in solution is in the form of bicarbonate, CaO.2CO,, having been produced from the very slightly soluble carbonate of lime, CaO.CO,, of which chalk and other limestones are mainly composed, by combination with free carbonic acid, CO, It is only therefore neces- sary to remove half of the carbonic acid from the bicar- bonate to reconvert it into the insoluble carbonate. This can be done either by boiling, which drives off the excess of carbonic acid, depositing the carbonate of lime which forms the troublesome incrustation in pipes and boilers where chalk water is used, or by adding caustic lime, CaO, to the water, which, combining with the excess of carbonic acid, reduces the bicarbonate, forming carbonate of lime, which is precipitated. This reaction is indicated by the formula CaO + Ca0.2CO, = 2Ca0.CO,, and is the basis of Dr Clark's process for softening water. To indicate the degree of hardness of various waters, Dr Clark's scale of 1 degree of hardness for each grain of chalk in 1 gallon of water is employed. Some waters have 22°, or even more degrees of hardness; and all waters are termed hard which contain more than 5°; but by the softening process waters of 22° of hardness can be reduced to about 5°. The remaining or permanent hardness consists of sulphate of lime and other soluble

salts. The conversion of the bicarbonate in the process of softening is rapid ; but the difficulty of dealing with the fine precipitate, which requires time to settle, has hindered the general adoption of the process, though it has been applied successfully at various works deriving their supply from chalk wells. The precipitation of the carbonate of lime in the softening process has been observed to remove to a great extent the micro-organisms in the water, confirming the view expressed above, that precipitation sweeps down with it the minute germs, as in this case the chemical action could not influence them. The waters obtained from

mountainous districts are very soft, and therefore very valuable for manufacturing districts ; but they have more action upon lead, and are more liable to absorb organic impurities than water highly charged with inorganic salts.

STORAGE.

Quantity of Daily Supply.—The water-supply required is estimated in gallons per head of population, with additions in manufacturing districts for trade purposes. The consumption varies greatly in different towns, ranging from about 12 to 50 gallons per head per day; and it depends more upon the fittings and other sources of waste than upon the habits of the population, though the con- sumption per head is greater in the wealthier quarters. An ample supply, for domestic and general requirements, is from 20 to 25 gallons per head daily. The actual rate of consumption varies with the time of day, and also with the period of the year, being greatest between 7 and 10 a.m., and in June, July, and August, and least from 9 p.m. to 5 A.M., and in January, February, and March.

Where the quality of the supply drawn from different sources varies, as in London (the water from the deep wells in the chalk being far superior to that derived from the Lea), and where filtration has to be largely adopted, it is unfortunate that the best supply cannot be devoted to drinking and cooking, and the inferior in quality and unfiltered waters used for cleaning, for gardens, stables, water-closets, flushing sewers, watering the streets, and extinguishing fires. Besides, however, the cost of a duplicate system of mains and pipes, with the addition, in London, of difficulties between independent companies, the carelessness of persons in drawing from the two supplies has been considered a bar to this separation. It is possible, however, that, when the population becomes still more dense, and pure water more difficult to obtain, these objec- tions may be overruled, and the purest supply devoted to special uses.

Service-Reservoir.—To provide a sufficient reserve for sudden demands, such as for a fire, and to ensure an adequate supply to every house, a service-reservoir has to be constructed, into which the water from the source of supply is led. 'The reservoir consists generally of a brick or

concrete tank, rendered inside with cement, sunk in the ground, and roofed over with brick arches resting on the side walls and intermediate pillars, over which a covering of earth is spread. By this means light and heat are excluded, which, together with a depth of at least 15 feet of water, prevents the growth of minute aquatic plants, of which the germs are found in some well waters, particularly from the New Red Sandstone, and maintains the water at a tolerably even temperature. The reservoir should have a capacity of not less than twenty- four hours' supply, and should be at a sufficient elevation to command the whole of the district it serves, and if pos- sible afford a good pressure on the fire-hydrants. Where a town stands at very different levels, separate reservours at different elevations for supplying the high-level and

low-level districts are advisable, to equalize the pressure. XXIV. — 52

410

DISTRIBUTION.

The water is led from the service-reservoir through cast- iron mains to the branch mains, from which the service pipes convey it to the several houses. Lead is generally preferred for house connexions, owing to the facility with which it can be adapted to structural requirements. The only objection to it is that it is attacked by some very soft waters, oxide of lead being formed, which is partially soluble and very injurious to health. With free carbonic acid, however, the pipe becomes coated with carbonate of lead, which is insoluble in water and protects the pipe from further action. Peat also in water protects the lead pipes, by depositing a surface film. In the case of hard waters, the lead soon becomes coated with sulphate of lime. Accordingly, it is only under exceptional conditions that the employment of lead for pipes is deleterious ; but it should be prohibited for the lining of cisterns where the water may be stored for long periods.

Domestic filters are very valuable for local well and spring supplies, and afford an additional safeguard against accidental impurities in public supplies (see FiuTEr).

Intermittent and Constant Supply.—¥Formerly the com- mon form of supply was on the intermittent system. On this plan, each house is provided with a cistern, into which water from the main is admitted for a short period, once or twice a day, by means of a valve on each service main, which is opened and closed by the turncock for each separate district. When the cistern is filled, the inlet pipe is closed by the rising of the floating ball shutting the ball tap. The supply is, accordingly, limited to the contents of the cistern, except during the short period the water is turned on ; and the cistern is proportioned to the accommodation of the house. The water in these open cisterns is liable to contamination from impurities of various kinds settling in them and not being cleaned out ; and it is often exposed to heat, a smoky atmosphere, and dust, and sometimes to sewage gas. Moreover, in thie event of a fire, the turncock has to be summoned before a supply of water can be obtained. Accordingly, the adoption of the constant system has been urged, and in many places carried out. The advantages of drawing a fresh supply always direct from the main, and of having an ample supply constantly at hand to meet any emergency are unquestionable ; but the constant supply of water necessitates the strengthening and very careful inspection of the pipes, joints, and fittings, to prevent fracture and avoid leakage under a continual and increased pressure, and is liable to lead to a careless waste 'of water if unchecked by a meter. Before substituting a constant for an intermittent supply, it is essential to overhaul thoroughly the pipes and joints, and to substitute screw- down taps, which close gradually, for the leaky suddenly- closing plug-taps, which throw a sudden pressure on the pipes. Waste in water-closets can be stopped by the insertion of a waste preventer, which only allows a definite quantity of water to pass each time the plug is raised (see SEWERAGE). The detection of accidental waste from leakages has been much facilitated by the introduction of a waste-water meter, which records graphically, on a revolving cylinder, the amount of water which is passing the place where the meter is fixed. By fixing the meter on one of the district mains at night, when most of the recorded flow is running to waste, and shutting off suc- cessively the service pipes through which water is heard to be flowing, the change in the diagram of flow at each closing of a service pipe localizes the position and extent of each source of waste, showing at what places leaks must be

occurring, and which are the worst, needing attention first. This method of inspection was first adopted at

Liverpool in 1873; and, besides effecting a considerable economy, it enabled the constant service to be restored, which the previous waste had rendered impracticable.

Water-Meters.—There are two classes of water-meters, —-the positive and the inferential. The positive meter, such as Kennedy's and Frost's piston meters, measures the actual quantity of water passed through it, as recorded by the strokes of a piston working in the cylinder, which is successively filled from the top and bottom, and affords a measure of the water introduced ; whilst the inferential meter, such as that of Siemens, measures only the revolu- tions of a turbine actuated by the flow of the passing water, of which the quantity is deduced from the velocity. The posi- tive meter is more accurate, and measures very small flows; whereas the turbine meter may sometimes not be turned by very small flows which are gradually increased. Measure- ment by meter would seem naturally to follow the adoption of the constant service for domestic supply, as well as for manufactories. Its general adoption has, however, been hindered by the fear that a charge by quantity, instead of by rental, might press unduly upon the poorer classes, and induce them to stint themselves of a proper supply, and also the difficulty of obtaining a very cheap and at the same time a perfectly trustworthy meter of adequate durability. To avoid the possibility of checking a sufli- cient use of water in the poorer tenements, it has been proposed to allow a definite supply at the ordinary rate, and only to charge by meter for any excess over this amount. (ls F. V.-H.)

WATERTON, Cuartzs (1782-1865), naturalist and traveller, descended from a very ancient English family, was born at Walton Hall, near Pontefract, Yorkshire, in 1782. After being educated at the Roman Catholic college of Stonyhurst, and travelling a short time on the Continent, he went to Demerara to manage some estates belonging to his family. He continued in this occupa- tion for about eight years, when he began those wander- ings upon the results of which his fame as a naturalist principally rests. In his first journey, which began in 1812, and

the principal object of which was to collect the poison known as curari, he travelled through British Guiana by the Demerara and Essequibo rivers to the frontiers of Brazilian Guiana, making many natural history collections and observations by the way. After spending some time in England he returned to South America in 1816, going by Pernambuco and Cayenne to British Guiana, where again he devoted his time to the most varied observations in natural history. For the third time, in 1820, he sailed from England for Demerara, and again he spent his time in similar pursuits. Another sojourn in England of about three years was followed by a visit to the United States in 1824; and, having touched at several of the West India islands, he again went on to Demerara, returning to England at the end of the year. In 1828 he published the results of his four journeys, under the title of Wanderings in South America, —consisting largely of a collection of observations on the appearance, character, and habits of many of the animals to be found in British Guiana. Waterton was a keen and accurate observer, and his descriptions are of a graphic and humorous character, rarely to be found in works on natural history. He married in 1829, and from that time lived mostly at Walton Hall, devoting himself to the improvement of his estate, to country pursuits, and to natural history observations. Waterton also published three series of essays on various subjects connected with natural history. He died May 27, 1865, from the result of an accident.

WATERTOWN, a city of the United States, the county seat of Jefferson county, New York, is situated upon both

sides of Black River, 7 miles above its mouth, and is 140 miles north-west of Albany. It is laid out rather irregu- larly, with 60 miles of streets, is supplied with water by pumping, water-power being used, and is well sewered. The population in 1880 was 10,697, including 2444 of foreign birth. The river at this point is 60 yards wide. Tt falls 112 feet in two miles, and flows through the city in a succession of rapids, furnishing a magnificent water- power to the numerous paper, woollen, and cotton mills and machine shops which line its banks.

The first settlement was made in 1800, and the town had a rapid growth from the start. The eity was chartered in 1869.

WATERTOWN, a city in Jefferson and Dodge counties, Wisconsin, United States, is situated upon both sides of Rock river, in a rich farming region. Its population in 1880 was 7883, 3072 of them of foreign birth. The river furnishes a valuable water-power for extensive manufac- tures. Watertown contains the North-Western University, a Lutheran institution, and a Roman Catholic seminary. About two-thirds of the present population are Germans or their direct descendants.

WATERWORKS. See WarTER-SUPPLY.

WATFORD, an ancient market town of Herts, is situated on a ridge of gravel overlooking the river Colne, on the Grand Junction Canal and on the London and North- Western Railway, branches of which here diverge to St Albans and to Rickmansworth, 8 miles south-west of St Albans and 173 north-west of London by rail, the distance by road from Charing Cross being 15 miles. It consists chiefly of one spacious street, about 14 mile in length, running north-westwards from the river.

Watford is not mentioned in Domesday, being then included in the manor of Cashio, belonging to the abbey of St Albans. The town received the grant of a market from Henry I. When the abbey of St Albans was dissolved in 1549, Watford fell to the erown. In 1609 it came into the possession of Thomas Marbury, and it has belonged to the earls of Essex sinee 1767.

WATSON, Ricwarp (1737-1816), bishop of Llandaff, was born in August 1737 at Heversham, in Westmorland, and was the son of the master of the grammar school of that place. He was entirely educated by his father, who sent him in 1754 to Trinity College, Cambridge, with "a considerable stock of classical learning, a spirit of per- severing industry, and an obstinate provincial accent." He was elected a fellow of Trinity in 1760, and about the same time had the offer of the post of chaplain to the factory at Bencoolen. "You are too good," said the master of Trinity, "to die of drinking punch in the torrid zone," and Watson, instead of becoming, as he had flattered

himself, a great Orientalist, remained at home to be elected professor of chemistry, a science of which he did not at the time possess the simplest rudiments. “ I buried myself,” he says, “in my laboratory, and in fourteen months read a course of chemical lectures to a very full audience.” Not the least of his services was to procure an endowment for the chair, which served as a precedent in similar instances.

In 1771 he became a candidate for the regius pro- fessorship of divinity, and at the age of thirty-four gained what he calls “ the first place for honour in the university,” “Cand,” he adds, “exclusive of the mastership of Trinity College, I have made it the first for profit. I found it not worth £330 a year; it is now (1814) worth £1000 at the least.” He did not entirely renounce the study of chemistry : in 1768 he had published Jnstetutiones Metal- lurgicx, intended to give a scientific form to chemistry by digesting facts established by experiment into a connected series of propositions. In 1781 he followed this up with a volume of Chemical Essays, which Davy told De Quincey remained as late as 1813, after all recent discoveries, unsurpassed as a manual of introductory discipline. But on the day on which he composed his preface he burned all his chemical manuscripts, and never returned to the subject. His course as professor of divinity was no less decisive. “I reduced the study of divinity into as narrow a compass as I could, for I determined to study nothing but my Bible.” He produced several anonymous pamphlets on the liberal side in the subscription con- troversy and other topics of the day, and some sermons, one of which was thought likely to have involved him in a prosecution, but which, Dunning said, contained ‘just such treason as ought to be preached once a month at St James’s.” It is said to have prevented his obtaining the provostship of Trinity College, Dublin. In 1776 he answered Gibbon’s chapters on Christianity, and had the honour of being one of the only two opponents whom Gibbon treated with respect. In 1781 he was prostrated with a malignant fever, from the effects of which he never wholly recovered, and which served as an excuse for that neglect of many duties which remains the chief stain upon his character. THe had always opposed the American War, and when the accession of Lord Shelburne to power in 1782 afforded the then unfrequent opportunity of advanc- ing a Liberalin

politics and religion to a bishopric, Watson was made bishop of Llandaff, being permitted to retain his other preferments on account of the poverty of the see. Shelburne, he says, expected great service from him as a pamphleteer, but Watson proved from the ministerial point of view a most impracticable prelate. He imme- diately brought forward a scheme for improving the con- dition of the poorer clergy by equalizing the incomes of the bishops, the reception of which at the time may be imagined, though it was substantially the same as that carried into effect by Lord Melbourne's Government fifty years later. Watson now found that he possessed no influence with the minister, and that he had destroyed his chance of the great object of his ambition, promotion to a better diocese. Neglecting both his see and his professor- ship, to which latter he appointed a deputy described as highly incompetent, he withdrew to Calgarth Park, in his native county, where he occupied himself largely in form- ing plantations and the improvement of agriculture. He nevertheless frequently came forward as a preacher and a speaker in the House of Lords, but his only very con- spicuous appearance before the public was his warm support of the prince of Wales's unqualified claim to the regency on the insanity of the king in 1788, which com- pleted his disgrace at court. In 1796 he published his Apology for the Bible, in answer to Thomas Paine, at

present the best known of his numerous writings. It was most effective in its day; in ours Christianity would hardly be attacked or defended by the arms employed by either disputant. Undismayed by the displeasure of the court, or perhaps hoping to overcome it, Watson continued to exert his pen with vigour, and in general to good purpose, denouncing the slave trade, advocating the union with Ireland, and offering financial suggestions to Pitt, who seems to have frequently consulted him. In 1798 his Address to the People of Great Britain, enforcing resistance to French arms and French principles, ran through fourteen editions, but estranged him from many old friends, who accused him, probably with injustice, of aiming to make his peace with the Government. In 1807 the advent of a Whig ministry almost brought the coveted preferment within reach. Had Dr Markham died a few months sooner Watson would have been

archbishop of York. Such a disappointment might palliate the querulous strain of his conversation and published references to himself, though it could not render it dignified or decorous. De Quincey, however, who knew the bishop personally in his latter years, while severely criticizing his complaints, allows that his temper had not been soured by disappoint- ment. "His lordship was a joyous, jovial, and cordial host." He died on July 2, 1816, having occupied his latter years in the composition and revision of an autobio- graphy, which, with all its egotism and partiality, is a valuable work, and the chief authority for his life.

As an advocate of liberal principles in church and state, Watson stands almost alone among the prelates of his day; and it cannot be said that his longing for preferment, violent and unbecoming as it was, seduced him into mean actions or unworthy compliances. His character is high enough to make it cause for regret that it should stand no higher, as it easily might if he had possessed a nicer sense of dignity and had not measured success so exclu- sively by the attainment of wealth and station. Hard-headed and pushing, he yet had an intellectual conscience ; the two main ele- ments of his character stood in each other's way : he failed as a courtier, and did not leave a wholly unblemished reputation as a patriot. As a bishop he neither was nor endeavoured to be anything ; as an ecclesiastical statesman it was his misfortune to have been born fifty years too soon. His massive but unoriginal

intellect is justly characterized by De Quincey as "robust and commonplace." (R. G.)

| WATT, James (1736-1819), the inventor of the modern condensing steam-engine, was born at Greenock on the 19th of January 1736. His father was a small merchant there, who lost his trade and fortune by unsuc- cessful speculation, and James was early thrown on his own resources. Having a taste for mechanics he made his way to London, at the age of nineteen, to learn the business of a philosophical-instrument maker, and became apprenticed to one Morgan, in whose service he remained for twelve months. From a child he had been extremely delicate, and the hard work and frugal living of his London pupilage taxed his strength so severely that he was forced at the end of a year to seek rest at

home, not, however, until he had gained a fair knowledge of the trade and become handy in the use of tools. Before going to London he had made acquaintance with some of the professors in Glasgow college, and on his return to Scotland in 1756 he sought them out and obtained work in repairing astrono- mical instruments. He next tried to establish himself as an instrument maker in Glasgow, but the city guilds would not recognize a craftsman who had not served the full term of common apprenticeship, and Watt was forbidden to open shop in the burgh. The college, how- ever, took him under its protection, and in 1757 he was established in its precincts with the title of mathematical- instrument maker to the university.

Before many months Black, the discoverer of latent heat, then lecturer on chemistry, and Robison, then a student, afterwards professor of natural philosophy, became

his intimate friends, and with them he often discussed the possibility of improving the steam-engine, of which at that time Newcomen's was the most advanced type. The engine was then applied only to pumping water, —chiefly in the drainage of mines; and it was so, clumsy and wasteful of fuel as to be but little used. Some early experiments of Watt in 1761 or 1762 led to no positive result, but in 1764 his attention was seriously drawn to the matter by having a model of Newcomen's engine, which formed part of the college collection of scientific apparatus, given him to repair. Having put the model in order, he was at once struck with its enormous consumption of steam, and set himself to examine the cause of this and to find a remedy. .

In Newcomen's engine the cylinder stood vertically under one end of the main lever or "beam" and was open at the top. Steam, at a pressure scarcely greater than that of the atmosphere, was admitted to the under side; this allowed the piston to be pulled up by a counterpoise at the other end of the beam. Communication with the boiler was then shut off, and the steam in the cylinder was condensed by injecting a jet of cold water from a cistern above. The pressure of the air on the top of the piston then drove it down, raising the counterpoise and doing work. The injection

water and condensed steam which had gathered in the cylinder were drained out by a pipe leading down into a well.

Watt at once noticed that the alternate heating and cooling of the cylinder in Newcomen's engine made it work with tedious slowness and excessive consumption of steam. When steam was admitted at the beginning of each stroke, it found the metal of the cylinder and piston chilled by contact with the condensed steam and cold injection water of the previous stroke, and it was not until much steam had been condensed in heating the chilled surfaces that the cylinder was able to fill and the piston to rise. His first attempt at a remedy was to use for the material of the cylinder a substance that would take in and give out heat slowly. Wood was tried, but it made matters only a little better, and did not promise to be durable. Watt observed that the evil was intensified whenever, for the sake of making a good vacuum under the piston, a specially large quantity of injection water was supplied. :

He then entered on a scientific examination of the pro- perties of steam, studying by experiment the relation of its density and pressure to the temperature, and concluded that two conditions were essential to the economic use of steam in a condensing steam-engine. One was that the temperature of the condensed steam should be as low as possible, 100° F. or lower, otherwise the vacuum would not be good; the other was, to quote his own words, "that the cylinder should be always as hot as the steam which entered it." In Newcomen's engine these two con- ditions were incompatible, and it was not for some months that Watt saw a means of reconciling them. Early in 1765, while walking on a Sunday afternoon in Glasgow Green, the idea flashed upon him that, if the steam were condensed in a vessel distinct from the cylinder, it would be practicable to make the temperature of condensation low, and still keep the cylinder hot. Let this separate vessel be kept cold, either by injecting cold water or by letting it stream over the outside, and let a vacuum be niaintained in the vessel. Then, whenever communication was made between it and the cylinder, steam would pass over from the cylinder and be condensed ; the pressure in the cylinder would be as low as the pressure in the con- denser, but the temperature of the metal of the cylinder would remain

high, since no injection water need touch it. Without delay Watt put this idea to the test, and found

WATT

that the separate condenser did act as he had anticipated. To maintain the vacuum in it he added another new organ, namely, the air-pump, the function of which is to remove the condensed steam and water of injection along with any air that gathers in the condenser.

To further his object of keeping the cylinder as hot as the steam that entered it, Watt supplemented his great invention of the separate condenser by several less notable but still important improvements. In Newcomen's engine a layer of water over the piston had been used to keep it steam-tight; Watt substituted a tighter packing lubricated by oil. In Newcomen's engine the upper end of the cylinder was open to the air; Watt covered it in, leading the piston rod through a steam-tight stuffing-box in the cover, and allowed steam instead of air to press on the top of the piston. In Newcomen's engine the cylinder had no clothing to reduce loss of heat by radiation and conduction from its outer surface ; Watt not only cased it in non-con- ducting material, such as wood, but introduced a steam- jacket, or layer of steam, between the cylinder proper and an outer shell. All these features were specified in his first patent, in words which have been quoted in the article STEAM-ENGINE, vol. xxii. p. 475 (q.v.).

This patent was not obtained till January 1769, nearly four years after the inventions it covers had been made. In the interval Watt had been striving to demonstrate the merits of his engine by trial on a large scale. His earliest experiments left him in debt, and, finding that his own means were quite insufficient to allow him to continue them, he agreed that Dr Roebuck, founder of the Carron iron-works, should take two-thirds of the profits of the invention in consideration of his bearing the cost. An engine was then erected at Kinneil, near Linlithgow, where Roebuck lived, and this gave Watt the opportunity of facing many difficulties in details of construction. But the experiments made slow progress, for Roebuck's affairs became embarrassed, and Watt's attention was engaged by other work. He had taken to surveying, and was fast gaining reputation asa

civil engineer. In 1767 he was employed to make a survey for a Forth and Clyde canal, —a scheme which failed to secure parliamentary sanction. This was followed during the next six years by surveys for a canal at Monkland, for another through the valley of Strathmore from Perth to Forfar, and for others along the lines afterwards followed by the Crinan and Caledonian Canals. He prepared plans for the harbours of Ayr, Port-Glasgow, and Greenock, for deepening the Clyde, and for building a bridge over it at Hamilton. In the course of this work he invented a simple micrometer for measuring distances, consisting of a pair of horizontal hairs placed in the focus of a telescope, through which sights were taken to a fixed and movable target on a rod held upright at the place whose distance from the observer was to be determined. The micrometer was varied in a number of ways; and another fruit of his ingenuity about the same time was a machine to facilitate drawing in perspective.

Meanwhile the engine had not been wholly neglected. Watt had secured his patent; the Kinneil trials had given him a store of valuable experience ; Roebuck had failed, but another partner was ready to take his place. In 1768 Watt had made the acquaintance, through his friend Dr Small, of Matthew Boulton, a man of energy and capital, who owned the Soho engineering works at Birmingham. Boulton agreed to buy Roebuck's share in the invention, and to join Watt in applying to parliament for an Act to prolong the term of the patent. The application was successful. In 1775 an Act was passed continuing the patent for twenty-five years. By this time the inventor had abandoned his civil engineering work and had settled in Birmingham, where the manufacture of steam-engines

was begun by the firm of Boulton and Watt. The partnership was a singularly happy one. Boulton had the good sense to leave the work of inventing to Watt, in whose genius he had the fullest faith ; on the other hand, his substantial means, his enterprise, resolution, and business capacity, supplied what was wanting to bring the invention to commercial success.

During the next ten years we find Watt assiduously en- gaged in developing and introducing the engine. Its first and for a time its only

application was in pumping ; it was at once put to this use in the mines of Cornwall, where Watt was now frequently engaged in superintending the erection of engines. Further inventions were required to fit it for other uses, and these followed in quick succession. Watt's second steam-engine patent is dated 1781. It de- scribes five different methods of converting the reciprocat- ing motion of the piston into motion of rotation, so as to adapt the engine for driving ordinary machinery. The simplest way of doing this, and the means now universally followed, is by a crank and fly-wheel ; this had occurred to Watt but had meanwhile been patented by another, and hence he devised the "'sun and planet wheels " and other equivalent contrivances. A third patent, in 1782, con- tained two new inventions of the first importance. Up to this time the engine had been single-acting ; Watt now made it double-acting ; that is to say, both ends of the cylinder, instead of only one, were alternately put in com- munication with the boiler and thecondenser. Up to this time also the steam had been admitted from the boiler throughout the whole stroke of the piston ; Watt now intro- duced the system of expansive working, in which the ad- mission valve is closed after a portion only of the stroke is performed, and the steam enclosed in the cylinder is then allowed to expand during the remainder of the stroke, doing additional work upon the piston without making any further demand upon the boiler until the next stroke requires a fresh admission of steam. Ile calculated that, as the piston advanced after admission had ceased, the pressure of the steam in the cylinder would fall in the same proportion as its volume increased,—a law which, although not strictly true, does accord very closely with the actual behaviour of steam expanding in the cylinder of an engine. Recognizing that this would cause a gradual reduction of the force with which the piston pulled or pushed against the beam, Watt devised a number of con- trivances for equalizing the effort throughout the stroke. He found, however, that the inertia of the pump-rods in his mine engines, and the fly-wheel in his rotative engines, served to compensate for the inequality of thrust sufficiently to make these contrivances unnecessary. His fourth patent, taken out in 1784, describes the well-known 'parallel motion," an arrangement of links by which the top of the piston-rod is connected to the beam so that it may either pull or push, and is at the same time guided to move in a sensibly straight line. 'I have started a new hare," he writes to Boulton in June of that year; "I have gota glimpse of a method of

causing a piston-rod to move up and down perpendicularly by only fixing it to a piece of iron upon the beam, without chains or perpendicular guides or untowardly frictions, arch-heads, or other pieces of clumsiness. I think it a very probable thing to succeed, and one of the most ingenious simple pieces of mechanism I have contrived."

Still a later invention was the throttle-valve and centrifugal governor, by which the speed of rotative engines was automatically controlled. One more item in the list of Watt's contributions to the development of the steam-engine is too important to be passed without mention: the indicator, which draws a diagram of the relation of the steam's pressure to its volume as the stroke proceeds,

was first used by Boulton and Watt to measure the work done by their engines, and so to give a basis on which the charges levied.

414

from their eustomers were adjusted. It would be diffieult to ex- aggerate the part which this simple little instrument las played in the evolution of the steam-engine. The eminently philosophie notion of an indicator diagram is fundamental in the theory of thermodynamies; the instrument itself is to the steam-engincer what the stethoseope is to the physician, and more, for with it he not only diagnoses the ailments of a faulty machine, whether in one or another of its organs, but gauges its power in health.

The eommereial suceess of the engine was not long in being established. By 1788 all but one of the Neweomen pumping- engines in Cornwall had been displaced by Watt's. The mines were then far from thriving; many were even on the point of being abandoned through the diffieulty of dealing with large volumes of water ; and Watt's invention, which allowed this to be done at a moderate eost, meant for many of them a new lease of life. His engine used no more than a fourth of the fuel that had formerly been needed to do the same work, and the Soho firm usually elaimed by way of royalty a sum equivalent to one-third of the saving—a sum whieh must have been nearly equal to the cost of the fuel actually consumed. Rival manufaeturers came forward, amongst whom Bull and Hornblower aro the most eonspicuous names. They varied the form of the engine, but

they eould not avoid in- fringing Watt's patent by the use of a separate condenser. When aetion was taken against them on that ground, they retaliated by disputing the validity of the fundamental patent of 1769. In the ease of Boulton and Watt v. Bull the eourt was divided on this point, but in an aetion against Hornblower the patent was definitely affirmed to be valid by a unanimous finding of the Court of King's Beneh. This was in 1799, only a year before the monopoly ex- pired, but the deeision enabled the firm to elaim a large sum as arrears of patent dues. In eonnexion with these trials Watt him- self, as well as his early friends Blaek and Robison, drew up narratives of the invention of the steam-engine, whieh are of mueh interest to the student of its history.

Before Watt's time the steam-engine was exelusively a steam- pump, slow-working, eumbrous, and exeessively wasteful of fuel. His first patent made it quiek in working, powerful, and effieient, but still only as a steam-pump. His later inventions adapted it to drive maehinery of all kinds, and left it virtually what it is to- day, save in three respects. In respeet of meehanieal arrangement the modern engine differs from Watt's chiefly in this, that the beam, an indispensable feature in the early pumping-engines, and one which held its plaee long after the need for it had vanished, has gradually given way to more direet modes of connecting the piston with the erank. Another differenee is in the modern use of high-pressure steam. Itis remarkable that Watt, notwithstanding the faet that his own invention of expansive working must have opened his eyes to the advantage of high-pressure steam, declined to admit it into his praetiee. He persisted in the use of pressures that were little if at all abovo that of the atmosphere. His rivals in Cornwall were not so squeamish. 'Trevithick ventured as far as 120 tb on the square ineh, and a curious episode in the history of the steam-engine is an attempt whieh Boulton and Watt made to have an Aet of Parliament passed forbidding the use of high pressure on the ground that the lives of the publie were endangered. The third and only other respect in which a great improvement has been effeeted is in the introduction of eeompound expansion. Here, too, one eannot but regret to find the Soho firm hostile, though the necessity of defending their monopoly makes their aetion natural enough. Hornblower had in faet stumbled on the invention of the eompound engine, but as his machine employed Watt's condenser it was

suppressed, to be revived after some years by Woolf. In one of his patents (1784) Watt deseribes a steam-loeomotive, but he never proseeuted this, and when Murdoeh, his chief assistant (famous as the inventor of gas-light- ing), made experiments on the same lines, Watt gave him little encouragement, The notion then was to use a steam-earriage on ordinary roads ; its use on railways had not yet been thought of. When that idea took form later in the last years of Watt's life, the old man refused to smile upon his offspring ; it is even said that Watt put a clause in the lease of his house that no steam-carriace should on any pretext be allowed to approaeh it. –

On the expiry in 1800 of the Act by which the patent of 1769 had been extended, Watt gave up his share in the business of engine-building to his sons, J ames, who carried it on along with a son of Boulton for many years, and Gregory, who died in 1804. The remainder of his life was quietly spent at Heathfield Hall? his house near

1 Another narrative of the utmost interest was written by Watt in 1814 in the form of a footnote to Robison's artiele « Steam-Engine," from the fourth edition of the Encyclopxdia Britannica, which Watt revised before it was reprinted in the eolleeted edition of Robison's works, See Robison's Mechanical Philosophy, vol. ii.*

? His workroom at Heathfield (now in the possession of Mr

Birmingham, where he devoted his time, with scarcely an interruption, to mechanical pursuits. His last work was the invention of machines for copying sculpture,—one for making reduced copies, another for taking facsimiles by means of a light stiff frame, which carried a pointer over the surface of the work while a revolving tool fixed to the frame alongside of the pointer cut a corresponding surface on a suitable block. We find him in correspondence with Chantrey about this machine not many months before his death, and presenting copies of busts to his friends as the work "of a young artist just entering on his eighty-third year." His life drew to a tranquil close, and the end came at Heathfield on the 19th of August

1819. His remains were interred in the neighbouring parish church of Handsworth.

Watt was twice married,—first in 1763 to his cousin Miss Miller, who died ten years later. Of four children born of the marriage, two died in infancy; another was James, who succeeded his father in business; the fourth was a daughter who lived to maturity, but died early, leaving two children. His second wife, Miss Macgregor, whom he married before settling in Birmingham in 1775, survived him; but her two children, Gregory and a daughter, died young.

Some of Watt's minor inventions have been already notieed. Another, which has proved of great practical value, was the letter- eopying press, for copying manuseript by using a glutinous ink and pressing the written page against a moistened sheet of thin paper. He patented this in 1780, deseribing both a roller press, the use of which he seems to havo preferred in copying his own corre- spondence, and also tho form of serew press now found in every merehant's offiee.

In the domain of pure seienee Watt elaims reeognition not only as having had ideas greatly in advanee of his age regarding what is now ealled energy, but as a diseoverer of the eomposition of water. Writing to Priestley in April 1783, with referenee to some of Priestley's experiments, he suggests the theory that " water is eomposed of dephlogistieated air and phlogiston deprived of part of their latent or elementary heat." It is diffieult to determine the exaet meaning attached to these antiquated terms, and to say how far Watt's suggestion antieipated the fuller diseovery of Cavendish. Watt's views were communicated to the Royal Soeiety in 1783, Cavendish's experiments in 1784, and both are printed in tho same volume of the Philosophical Transactions.

The carly and middle part of Watt's life was a long strugglo with poor health: severe headaehe prostrated him for days at a time; but as he grew old his eonstitution seems to have beeomo more robust. His disposition was despondent and shrinking; ho speaks of himself, but evidently with unfair severity, as " indolent to excess." 'I am not enterprising," he writes; "I would rather face a loaded cannon than settle an account or make a bargain; in short, I find myself out of my sphere when I have

anything to do with mankind." Ho was a man of warm friendships, and has left a personal memorial of the greatest interest in his numerous letters to Dr Small and others. They are full of sagaeity and insight: his own aehievements are told with a shrewd but extremely modest estimate of their value, and in a style of remarkable terseness and lueidity, lightened here and there by a touch of dry humour. In his old age Watt is deseribed by his contemporaries as a man riehly stored with the most various knowledge, full of aneedote, familiar with most modern languages and their literature, a great talker. Seott speaks of "the alert, kind, benevolent old man, his talents and faney overflowing on every subjeet, with his attention alive to every one's question, his information at every one's eom- mand."

See J. P. Muirhead, Origin and Progress of the Mechanical Inventions of James Watt, 3 vols., 1854 (vols, i. and ii. eontain a memoir and Watt's letters; vol. iii. gives a reprint of his patent speeifications and other papers); Muirhead, Life of Watt, 1858 ; Smiles, Lives of Boulton and Watt; Williamson, Afemoriais of the Lineage, &c., of James Watt, published by the Watt Club, Greenock, 1856; Corre- spondence of the late James Watt on his Discovery of the Theory of the Composition of Water, edited by Muirhead, 1846; Cowper, "On the Inventions of James Watt and his Models preserved at Handsworth and South Kensington," Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., 1883; artiele " Watt" in the Hncyclopedia Britannica, 6th edition

(1823), by James Watt, junior; Robison, Mechanical Philosophy, vol, ii., 1822 (letters and notes by Watt on the History of the Steam-Engine). (J. A. E.)

WATTEAU, Antoine (1684-1721), French painter, was born at Valenciennes in 1684. Thrown on his own resources at an early age, the boy went moneyless and

Tangye) has been preserved full of his tools and models of his inven- tions. These are described, along with other Watt relies now at South Kensington, in an interesting paper by Mr E. A. Cowper, Proc. Inst. Mech. Eng., Nov. 1883.

ragged alone to Paris. There, after a hard struggle, he succeeded in getting work with a painter of saints for country customers, who assigned to Watteau, the future limner of gallant feastings, the repetition of dozens of St Nicholas. The saint brought him food and shelter, and in his few holidays Watteau sketched and drew. From this shop he passed to the studio of Gillot, whose influence helped him to follow the true direction of his own special gifts, but he left him, finding employment with Audran the decorator, then at work in the Luxembourg. Then Watteau quarrelled with Audran and went his way, fancying that Audran had blamed his first picture, the Departing Regiment, out of jealousy; and, flushed with success (for he had sold the work), he went off to show him- self in his native Valenciennes. There Watteau produced a second work, a Regiment Halting, which also sold in Paris, so thither he returned, and, welcomed by the celebrated Crozat, received fresh inspiration from his taste and the study of hisimmense collections. In 1709 he competed for the great prize, and, standing only second, applied fora crown pension to enable him to go to Italy. As proofs of his deserts, he carried to the Academy his first two pictures. His cause was warmly espoused by De la Fosse, and he was instantly made an associate of that body, becoming a full member in 1717. His diploma picture, Embarkation for the Isle of Venus, isnow inthe Louvre. Suffering always from lung disease, and of a highly nervous temperament, Watteau was, however, unfitted to live and work with others, and, in spite of his professional success and his assured re-putation, he held himself apart, illat ease with himself and seldom happy in his work, which suffered in sympathy with his changing moods. A visit to London further disturbed his health, and in 1721 he returned to Paris, establishing himself for a while in the house of his friend Gersaint, the picture dealer, for whom he painted a sign-board which had an extraordinary success (a fragment in the collection Schwitzer). Hoping to find rest and some alleviation to his increasing sufferings from country air, he accepted a lodging at Nogent, in the house of M. Lefebvre, which had been obtained for him through his constant friend the abbé Haranger, canon of St Germain]'Auxerrois. At Nogent, shortly after his arrival, on 18th July 1821, Watteau died, having bequeathed to the abbé,

to Gersaint, to M. Henin, and to M. Julienne the vast quantity of drawings which constituted almost the whole of his fortune.

No greater contrast can be found than that whieh Watteau's work presents to the painful condition under whieh he lived his life, a eontrast such as that whieh the boyish glee of Caldecott's designs showed in comparison to the physical misery against which his gallant spirit made so brave a stand. Watteau sought refuge, as it were, from his bodily pain in that fairyland which he created, where the pompous art of the "Grand Siecle" still cumbered the ground. His work, always conceived in a poetical spirit, lived in spite of the artificial atmosphere of the moek pastoral style of the day, and lives in virtue of the exquisite precision of his observation and of the extraordinary brillianey and lightness of his art.

WATTS, Isaac (1674-1748), theologian and hymn writer, was born at Southampton 17th July 1674. He was the eldest of uine children, and was named after his father, who kept a boarding establishment at Southampton. The father also wrote poetry, and a number of his pieces were included by mistake in vol. i. of the son's Posthumous Works. Young Watts is stated to have entered on the study of the classics when only in his fifth year, and at the age of seven or eight to have composed some devotional pieces to please his mother. His nonconformity precluded him from entering either of the universities, but in his sixteenth year he went to study at an academy in London kept by the Rev. Thomas Rowe, minister of the Inde- pendent meeting at Haberdashers' Hall. In his Jmprove- ment of the Mind (1741) Watts has expounded his method of study, but the precepts there laid down can hardly be

said to be justified by his example, for it is overwork at

this period of his life that is believed to have caused the weak and uncertain health of his subsequent years. Prob- ably it was as much from this cause as from diffidence that he deferred preaching his first sermon till the day he entered on his twenty-fourth year. Meantime he resided as tutor in the family of Sir John Hartopp at Stoke Newington, where he

probably prepared the materials of his two educational works,—Logick, or the Right Use of Reason in the Enquiry after Truth (1725), and Lhe Knowledge of the Leavens and the Earth Made Easy, or the First Principles of Geography and Astronomy Explained (1726). His Logic, Dr Samuel Johnson states, ‘ had been received into the universities," but this must be regarded rather as an indication of the decadence of logical studies there than a proof of the special excellence of the work. What merits it possesses are of a hortatory and moral kind, and, as Sir William Hamilton says, it is "not worth reading as a book of logic." In his twenty-fourth year Watts was chosen assistant to Dr Chauncy, pastor of the Independent congregation, Mark Lane, London, and two years later he succeeded as sole pastor. The state of his health led to the appointment of an assistant in 1703. In 1704 the congregation removed to Pinner's Hall, and in 1708 they built a new meeting-house in Bury Street. In 1712 Watts took up his residence with Sir Thomas Abney of Abney Park, where he spent the remainder of his life, the arrangement being continued by Lady Abney after her husband's death. Watts preached only occasionally, devoting his leisure chiefly to the writing of hymns, the preparation of his sermons for publication, and the com- position of theological works. Being little over 5 feet in height, and far from robust in health, he did not specially excel as an orator, although the felicity of his illustrations, his transparent sincerity, and his benevolent wisdom gave to his preaching an exceptional charm. His religious opinions were more liberal in tone than was at that time common in the community to which he belonged ; his views regarding Sunday recreation and labour were scarcely of Puritanical strictness; his Calvinism was modified by his rejection of the doctrine of reprobation, and he was in the habit of representing the heaven of the Christian as affording wide scope for the exercise of the special habits and tastes formed by the employments of earth. For an estimate of Watts as a hymn writer, see Hymns, vol. xii. p. 593. He died 25th November 1748, and was buried at Bunhill Fields, where a tombstone was erected to his memory by Sir John Hartopp and Lady Abney. A memorial was also erected to him in Westminster Abbey, and a memorial hall, erected in his honour at Southampton, was opened 6th May 1875.

In 1706 appeared his Hore Lyricw, of which an edition, with memoir by Robert Southey, forms vol. ix. of Sacred Classics (1834) ; in 1707 a volume of Hymns; in 1719 The Psalms of David; and in 1720 Divine and Moral Songs for Children. Various collected editions of his saered poetry have been published, and in 1869 an edition appeared with music for four voices. Among the theo- logical treatises of Watts, in addition to volumes of sermons, are Doetrine of the Trinity (1726); Treatise on the Love of God and on the Use and Abuse of the Passions (1729) ; Cateehisms for Children and Youth (1730); Essays towards a Proof of a Separate State for Souls (1732); Essay on the Freedom of the Will (1732); Essay on the Strength and Weakness of Human Reason (1737); Essay on the Ruin and Recovery of Mankind (1740); Glory of Christ as God-Man Unveiled (1746); and Useful and Important Questions concerning Jesus Christ (1746). He was also the author of a variety of miseel- laneous treatises. His Posthwnous Works appeared in 1773, and a further instalment of them in 1779. Several editions of his col- leeted works, with memoirs, have also been published.

The Life and Times of Watts by Milner appeared in 1834; a lifc is also included in Johnson's Lives of ihe Poets.

WAVE. By this term is commonly understood a state of disturbance which is propagated from one part of a medium to another. Thus it is energy which passes, and

not matter,—though in some cases the wave permanently displaces, usually to a small amount only, the medium through which it has passed. Currents, on the other hand, imply the passage of matter associated with energy.

The subject is one which, except in a few very simple or very special cases, has as yet been treated only by approximation even when the most formidable processes of modern mathematics have been employed,—so that this sketch, in which it is desired that as little as possible of higher mathematics should be employed, must be confined mainly to the

statement of results. And the effects of viscosity, though very important, cannot be treated.

There are few branches of physics which do not present us with some forms of wave, so that the subject is a very extensive one:—tides, rollers, ripples, bores, breakers, sounds, radiations (whether luminous or obscure), tele- graphic and telephonic signalling, earthquakes, the pro- pagation of changes of surface-temperature into the earth's crust—all are forms of wave-motion. Several of these phenomena have been treated in other parts of this work, and will now be but briefly referred to; others require more detailed notice.

When a medium is in stable equilibrium, it has no kinetic energy, and its potential energy is a minimum. Any local disturbance, therefore, in general involves a communication of energy to part of the medium, and it is usually by some form of wave-motion that this energy spreads to other parts of the medium. The mere with- drawal of a quantity of matter (as by lifting a floating body out of still water), local condensation of vapour in the air, the crushing of a hollow shell by external pressure, the change of volume resulting from an explosion, or from the sudden vaporization of a liquid—are known to all as common sources of violent wave-disturbance.

Waves may be free or forced. In the former class the disturbance is produced once for all, and is then propagated according to the nature of the medium and the form of the disturbance. Or the disturbance may be continued, provided the waves travel faster than does the centre of disturbance. In forced waves, on the other hand, the disturbing force continues to act so as to modify the pro- pagation of the waves already produced. Thus, while a gale is blowing, the character of the water-waves is con- tinually being modified ; when it subsides, we have regular oscillatory waves, or rollers, for the longer ones not only outstrip the shorter but are less speedily worn down by fluid friction. The huge mass of water which some steamers raise, especially when running at a high speed, is an excellent example of a forced wave. The ocean-tide is mainly a forced wave, depending on the continued action of the moon and sun; but the tide-wave in an estuary or a tidal river is practically free,—being almost independent of moon and sun, and depending mainly upon the

con- figuration of the channel, the rate of the current, and the tidal disturbance at the mouth.

In what follows we commence with a special case of extreme simplicity, where an exact solution is possible. This will be treated fully, partly on account of its own interest, partly because its results will be of material assistance in some of the less simple, and sometimes apparently quite different, cases which will afterwards come up for consideration.

(1) Transverse Waves on a Stretched Wire.—In the article MecHantcs, § 265, it has been proved by the most elementary considerations that an inextensible but flexible rope, under uniform tension, when moving at a certain definite rate through a smooth tube of any form, exerts no pressure on the interior of the tube. In fact, the rope must press with a force T/r (where T is the tension and r the radius of curvature) on the unit of length in con-

WAVE

sequence of its tension, and with a force — pv?/r (where v is the speed, and p the mass of unit length) in consequence of its inertia. That there may be no pressure on the tube, t.e., that it may be dispensed with, we must therefore have T—pv?=0, or v= J/T/u. From this it follows that a disturbance of any form (of course with continuous curva- ture) runs along a stretched rope at this definite rate, and is unchanged during its progress. In the proof, the influ- ence of gravity was left out of consideration, and this result may therefore be applied to the motion of a transverse disturbance along a stretched wire, such as that of a pianoforte, where the tension is very great in comparison with the weight of the wire. But the italicized word any, above, gives an excellent example of one of the most difficult parts of the whole subject, viz., the possibility of a solitary wave. This is a question upon which we cannot here enter.

If we restrict ourselves to slight disturbances only, theory points out and trial verifies that they are super- posable. In fact, in the great majority of investigations which have been made with regard to waves, the disturb- ances have been assumed to be slight, so that we can avail ourselves of the principle of superposition of small motions (Mecuanics, § 73), which

is merely an application of the mathematical principle of "neglecting the second order of small quantities." The verification by ¢rval is given at once by watching how the ring-ripples produced by two stones thrown into a pool pass through one another with- out any alteration; that by observation is evident to any one who sees an object in sunlight, when the whole inter- vening space is full of intense wave-motion.

Returning to our wire, let us confine ourselves to a small transverse disturbance, in one plane, and try to dis- cover what happens when the disturbance reaches one of the fixed ends of the wire. Whether a point of the wire be fixed or not does not matter, provided it do not move. In the figure below, two disturbances are shown, moving in opposite directions (and of course with equal speed). Of these, either is the perversion, as well as the inversion, of the other. When any part of the one reaches O,

the point halfway between them, so as to displace it upwards, the other contributes an exactly equal displace- ment downwards. Thus O remains permanently at rest, while the two waves pass through it without affecting one another; and we may therefore assert that the wave A when it reaches the end of the wire is reflected as B, or rather that each part of A when it reaches O goes back as the corresponding part of B. 3B, in the same way, is seen to be reflected from O as A.

Now we can see what happens with a pianoforte wire. Any disturbance A is reflected from one end O as B, and at the other end is reflected as A again. Hence the state of the wire, whatever it may be, recurs exactly after such an interval as is required for the disturbance to travel, twice over, the length of the string.

Remembering that the displacements are supposed to be very small, our fundamental result may now be ex- pressed by saying that the force acting on unit length of the disturbed wire, to restore it to its undisturbed position, is T/r or pe?/r. Thus the ratio of the acceleration of each element to its curvature is the square of the rate of pro- pagation of the wave. It will be shown below that this is the immediate interpretation of the differential equation of the wave-motion.

WAVE

Let us express the position of a point of. the wire, when undis- turbed, by zits distance (say) from one end. Let y represent its transverse displacement at time ¢. Then, bearing in mind that the disturbance travels with a constant speed v, the nature of the motion, so far as we have yet limited it, will be expressed by saying that the value of y, at x, at time ¢, will be the value of y, at x+ 7, at time ¢-+7; or, simply,

y=f(vt – 2).

For this expression, whatever be the function f, is unchanged in value, if ¢+7 be put for ¢, and #+-vr for x; and no other expres- sion possesses this special property. If there be a disturbance run- ning the opposite way along the wire, we easily see that it will be represented by an expression of the form F(vt +2). These disturbances are superposable, so that y=f(vt-x)+F(tt+e). . 2. . . . (1)

expresses the most general state of disturbance which the wire can suffer under the limitations we have imposed. Before going farther we may use this to reproduce the results given above.

Now xz=0 is one end of the wire, and there yis necessarily always

zero. Hence

0=f(vt) + F(t), so that the functions fand F differ only in sign. This condition, inserted in (1), gives us at once the state of matters indicated by the cut above.

If x=2 be the other end of the wire, we have the new condition

O=f(vt —2)—f(vt +2).

The meaning of this is simply that the disturbance is periodic, the period being 22/v, the other result already obtained.

Fourier's theorem (see HARMONIC ANALYSIS, or MECHANICS, § 67) now shows that the expression f may be broken up into one definite series of sines and cosines, whence the usual results as to the various simple sounds which can be produced, together or separately, from a free stretched string.

It may be asked, and very naturally, How can this explanation of the nature of all possible transverse motions of a harp or piano- forte wire, as the result of sets of equal disturbances running along i with constant speed, be consistent with the appearance which it often presents of vibrating as a whole, or as a number of equal parts separated from one another by nodes which remain apparently at rest in spite of the disturbances to which, if the explanation be correct, they are constantly subjected? The answer is given at once by a consideration of the expression

y=sin F (vt —%)—sin F(ot-+2) (where 7 is any integer), which is a particular case of the general expression (1), limited to the cirenmstances of a wire of length 2. This indicates, as we have seen, two exactly similar and equal sets of simple harmonic waves running simultaneously, with equal speed, in opposite directions along the wire. By elementary trigonometry we can put the expression in the form . tre trvt y= — 2sin ~~ cos —- :

This indicates—jirst, that the points of the string where x has the valucs

OG, Bees, 2 3 yt remain constantly at rest (these are the ends, and the 7-1 equidistant nodes by which the wire is divided into 7 practically independent parts); second, that the form of the wire, at any instant, is a curve of sines, and that the ordinates of this curve Increase and diminish simultaneously with a simple harmonic motion,—the wire resuming its undisturbed form at intervals of time ¢/iv.

This discussion has been entered into for the purpose of

showing, from as simple a point of view as possible, the production of a stationary or standing wave. The same principle applies to more complex cases, so that we need not revert to the question. __ Recurring to the general expression for y in (1), it is clear that if we differentiate it twice with respect to ¢, and again twice with respect to x, the results will differ only by the factor v? which occurs in cach term of the first. Thus

(2)

is merely another way of writing (1). But in this new form it — of the immediate interpretation given above in italics. 5 a?

For oe is the acceleration, and = the curvature.

: (2) Longitudinal Waves in a Wire or Rod.—If the displacements of the various parts of the wire be longi- tudinal instead of transverse, we may still suppose them to be represented graphically by the figure above—by

417

laying off the longitudinal displacement of each point in a line through that point, in a definite plane, and perpendicular to the wire. In the figure a displacement to the right is represented by an upward line, and a dis- placement to the left by a downward line. The ex- tremities of these lines will, in general, form a curve of continued curvature. And it is easy to see that the tangent of the inclination of the curve to the axis (¢.e., its steepness at any point) represents the elongation of unit length of the wire

at that point, while the curvature measures the rate at which this elongation increases per unit of length. The force required to produce the elon- gation bears to the elongation itself the ratio H, viz., Young's modulus. The acceleration of unit length is the change of this force per unit length, divided by ». Hence, by the italicized statement in (1), we have v= /E/p (Mrecuanics, § 270). All the investigations above given apply to this case also, and their interpretations, with the necessary change of a word or two, remain as before.

Thus, according to our new interpretation of the figure, the front part of A indicates a wave of compression, its hind part one of elongation, of the wire,—the displacement of every point, however, being to the right. B is an equal and similar wave, its front being also a compression, and its rear an elongation, but in it the displacement of each point of the wire is to the left.

Hence the displacements of O continually compensate one another ; and thus a wave of compression is reflected from the fixed end of the wire as a wave of compression, but positive displacements are reflected as negative.

If we now consider a free rod, set into longitudinal vibration by friction, we are led to a particular case of reflection of a wave from a free end. The condition is obviously that, at such a point, there can be neither compression nor elongation. To represent the reflected wave we must therefore take B of such a form that each part of it, when it meets at O the corresponding part of A, shall just annul the compression. On account of the smallness of the displacements, this amounts to saying that the successive parts of B must be equally inclined to the axis with the corresponding parts of A, but they must slope the other way. Thus the proper figure for this case is

A B ee ee ee

and the interpretation is that a wave of compression is reflected from a free end as an equal and similar wave of elongation; but the disturbance at each point of the wire in the reflected wave is to the same side of its equilibrium position as in the incident wave. os

This enables us to understand the nature of reflexion of a wave of sound from the end of an open organ pipe,‘as the former illustration suited the corresponding pheno- inenon in a closed one. .

(3) Waves in a Linear System of Discrete Masses.— Suppose the wire above spoken of to be massless, or at least so thin, and of such materials, that the whole mass of it may be neglected in comparison with the masses of a system of equal pellets, which we now suppose to be at- tached to the wire at equal distances from one another. The weights of these pellets may be supported by a set of very long vertical strings, one attached to each, so that the arrangement is unaffected by gravity. The wire may be supposed to be stretched, as before, with a definite tension which is not affected by small trans- verse disturbances. We will take the case of transverse disturbances only, but it is easy to see that results of precisely the same form will be obtained for longitudinal

disturbances. A moment’s thought will convince the reader that there must be a limit to the frequency of the oscillations which can be transmitted along a system like this, though there was none such with the continuous wire. It is not difficult to find this limit.

Let the transverse displacement, at time ¢, of the n pellet of the series, be called y,; and let T be the tension of the wire, m the mass of a pellet, and @ the distance from one pellet to the next. Then the equation of motion is obviously*

2 =% 7 Gn nm poe orig # ,,

T 1 (D-2+5, Jum.

ao a

where D stands for ¢°@. ; : [We remark in passing that, if a be very small, this equation tends to become

But in this case we have ultimately m=ay; so that we recover the equation for transverse vibrations of a uniform wire.] Suppose Yn= A cos (pt — gx) (where z=) to be a possible free motion of the system. this value is substituted in the equation above it gives

When

— mp" cos (pt — ga) =- [cos at g.@ +a) +cos(pt —9.2-a) —2cos (vt- gx) | = — cos (pt -— qx) . (1—cos qa), so that mp sin? ga/2.

It appears from the form of this expression that the greatest value of p is 24/T/am; or 2v/a, if v be the speed of a disturbance in a uniform wire under the same tension, and of the same actual mass per unit of length. The time of oscillation of a pellet is 2x/p, and cannot therefore be less than

arfam/T, or nav.

The result is that, if v be the speed of propagation of a disturbance in a uniform wire with the same tension and same mass, the period of the quickest simple harmonic transverse oscillation which can be freely transmitted in such a system is 7 times the time of running from one pellet to the next with speed »v.

Instead of pellets on a tended wire, we might have a series of equal bar magnets, supported horizontally at proper distances from one another, ina line. The mag- netic forces here take the place of the tension; and by arranging the magnets with their like poles together, i.e, by inverting the alternate ones, we can produce the equivalent of pressure instead of tension along the series. If the magnets have each bifilar suspension, their masses will come in, as well as their moments of inertia, in the treatment of transverse disturbances.

This question is closely connected with Stokes's explan- ation of fluorescence (see Lieut, vol. xiv. p. 602), for the effect of a disturbing force, of a shorter period than the limit given above, applted continuously to one of the pellets, would be to accumulate energy mainly in the immediate neighbourhood ; and this, if we suppose the disturbing force to

cease, would be transmitted along the system in waves of periods equal at least to the limit. These would correspond to light of lower refrangibility than the inci- dent, but having as characteristic a definite upper limit of refrangibility.

Such investigations, with their results, prepare us to expect that the usual mode of investigating the propa- gation of sound, to which we proceed, cannot be correct in the case of exceedingly high notes if the medium consist of discrete particles.

(4) Waves of Compression and Dilatation in a Fluid ; Sound; Explosions. —Consider the case of plane waves,

WAVE

where each layer of the medium moves perpendicularly to itself, and therefore may suffer dilatation or compres- sion. The case is practically the same as that treated in (2) above, and can be represented by the same graphic method. For we may obviously consider only the matter contained in a rigid cylinder of unit sectional area, whose axis is parallel to the displacements. The only point of difference is in the law connecting pressure and conse- quent compression, and that, of course, depends upon the properties of the medium considered.

(a) If the medium be a liquid, such as water, for instance, the compression may be taken as proportional to the pressure. Thus the acceleration on unit length of the column, multiplied by its mass (which in this case is 'simply the density of the medium), is equal to the increase of pres- sure per unit length, 2.¢., to the increase of condensation per unit length, multiplied by the resistance to compression, R. Thus the speed of the wave is ,/R/p, which is exactly analogous to the forms of (1) and (2). The density, p, of water is 62°3 Ib per cubic foot, and for it R is about 20,000 atmospheres at 0° C., so that the speed of sound at that temperature is about 4700 feet per second.

That even intense differences of pressure take time to adjust themselves over very short distances in water was well shown by the damage sustained by the open copper cases of those of the " Challenger"

thermometers which were crushed by pressure in the deep sea. When a strong glass shell (containing air only) is enclosed in a stout open iron tube whose length is two or three of its diameters, and is crushed by water pressure, the tube is flattened by excess of external pressure before the relief can reach the outside.

(6) In the case of a gas, such as air, we must take the adiabatic relation between pressure and density. The pressure increases faster than, instead of at the same rate with, the density, as it would do if the gas followed Boyle's law. Thus the changes of pressure, instead of being equal to the changes of compression (multiplied by the modulus), exceed them in the proportion of the specific heat at constant pressure (K) to that at constant volume (N). Thus the speed of sound is ,/K/N. p/p, where p is the pressure and p the density in the undisturbed air. The ratio of the two latter quantities, as we know, is very approximately proportional to the absolute temperature.

The questions of the gradual change of type or the dying away even of plane waves of sound, whether by reason of their form, by fluid friction, or by loss of energy due to radiation, are much too complex to be treated here.

In all ordinary simple sounds even of very high pitch the displacements are extremely small compared with the wave length, so that the approximate solution gives the speed with considerable accuracy. And a very refined experimental test that this speed is independent of the pitch consists in listening to a rapid movement played by a good band at a great distance. But there seems to be little doubt that, under certain conditions at least, very loud sounds travel a great deal faster than ordinary sounds.

The above investigation gives the speed of sound relatively to the air. Relatively to the earth's surface, it has to be compounded with the motion of the air itself. But, as the speed of. wind usually increases from the surface upwards, at least for a considerable height, the front of a sound-wave, moving with the wind, leans forward, and the sound (being propagated perpendicularly to the front) moves downwards ; if against the wind, upwards.

In the case of a disturbance in air due to a very sudden explosion, as of dynamite or as by the passage of a flash of lightning, it is probable that for some distance from the source the motion is of a projectile character ;

and that part at least of the flash is due to the heat developed by practically instantaneous and very great compression of each layer of air to which this violent motion extends.

(5) Gravitation and Surface-Tension Waves in Liquids. —Leaving out of consideration, as already sufficiently treated in a special article, the whole subject of Tipzs, whether in oceans or in tidal rivers, there remain many different forms of water-waves all alike interesting and important. The most usual division of the free waves is into long waves, oscillatory waves, and ripples. The first two classes run by gravity, the third mainly by surface- tension (see CapinLaRy Action). But, while the long waves agitate the water to nearly the same amount at all depths, the chief disturbance due to oscillatory waves or to ripples is confined to the upper layers of the water, from which it dies away with great rapidity in successive layers below. We will treat of these three forms in the order named.

(6) Long Waves.—The first careful study of these waves was made by Scott Russeiu (q.v.) in the course of an inquiry into traffic on canals. He arrived at the remarkable result that there is a definite speed, depending on the depth of the water, at which a horse can draw a canal-boat more easily than at any other speed, whether less or greater. And he pointed out that, when the boat moves at this speed, it agitates the water less, and there- fore damages the banks less, than at any lower. This particular speed is thus, in fact, that of free propagation of the wave raised by the boat; and, when the boat rides, as it were, on this wave, its speed is maintained with but little exertion on the part of the horse. If the boat be made to move slower, it leaves behind it an ever- lengthening procession of waves, of course at the expense of additional labour on the part of the horse.

The theory of the motion of such a wave is based on the hypothesis that all particles in a transverse section of the canal have, at the same instant, the same horizontal speed. However great this horizontal motion may be, the vertical motion of the water may be very small, for it depends on the change of horizontal speed from section to section only. In the investigation which follows, the energy of this vertical motion will be neglected (even at the surface, where it is greatest) in comparison with that of the horizontal motion. The hypothesis is proved to be well grounded by the actual observation of the motion of the water when a long wave of slight elevation or depression passes. A long box, with parallel sides of glass, partly filled with water, represents the canal ; and the wave is produced by slowly and slightly tilting the box, and at once restoring it to the horizontal position. The nature of the motion of the water is shown by particles of bran suspended in it. Such an apparatus may be usefully employed in verifying the theoretical result below, as to the connexion between the speed of the wave and the depth of the water, —observations of the passage of the crest being made with great exactness by means of a ray of light reflected from the surface of the water in a vertical plane parallel to the length of the canal. It may also be employed, by tilting it about an inclined position, for the study of the changes which take place in the wave as it passes from deeper to shallower water, or the reverse.

The statement of (1) above is immediately applicable to this question. For, if 4 be the (undisturbed) depth of the water, p its density, y and y' the elevations in two succes- sive transverse sections at unit distance from one another, the difference of pressures (at the same level) in the two sections is gp(y'—y). The acceleration of a horizontal cylinder of unit section is the difference of pressures

divided by p. But the whole depth is increased at each point in proportion as the thickness of a transverse slice is diminished. Hence, by the reasoning in (2) above, , CMS) a Oe

p diggin 7 Fig or i — 9h: and the speed of propagation of the wave is that which a stone would acquire by falling through half the depth of the water. That the speed ought to be independent of the density of the liquid

is clear from the fact that it is the weight of the disturbed portion which causes the motion, and that this (for equal waves in different liquids) changes proportionally to the mass to be moved.

Since we have made no hypothesis as to the form of the wave, our only assumptions being that the vertical motion is not only small in comparison with the depth, but incon- siderable in comparison with the horizontal motion, while the latter is the same at all depths in any one transverse section, it is clear that, under the same limitations, a wave of depression will run at the same speed as does a wave of elevation.

A solitary wave of elevation obviously carries across any fixed transverse plane a quantity of water equal to that which lies above the undisturbed level. If H be the mean height of this raised water, 6 the breadth of the canal (supposed rectangular), and A the length of the wave, the volume of this water is AH. But all particles in the transverse section behave alike ; and, when the wave has passed, the particles in a// transverse sections have been treated alike. Hence the final result of the passage of the wave is that the whole of the water of the canal has been translated, in the direction of the wave's motion, through the space bAH/b/, or AH/h. If the wave had been one of depression, the translation of the water would have been in the opposite direction to that of the wave's motion. Hence, when the wave consists of an elevation followed by a depression of equal volume, it leaves the water as it found it. Thus any permanent displacement of the water is due to inequality of troughs and crests.

A hint, though a very imperfect one, as to the formation of breakers on a gently sloping beach, is given by con- sidering that in shallow water the front and rear of an ordinary surface-wave must move at different rates, the front being in shallower water than the rear and therefore allowing the rear to gain upon it.

(7) Oscillatory Waves.—The typical example of these waves is found in what is called a "swell," or the regular rolling waves which continue to run in deep water after astorm. Their character is essentially periodic, and this feature at once enables us to select from the general integrals of the equations of non-rotatory fluid-motion the special forms which we require. The investigation may, without sensible loss of completeness for

application, be still further simplified by the assumption that the disturb- ance is two-dimensional, 7.c., that the motion is precisely the same in any two vertical planes drawn parallel to the direction in which the waves are travelling. The investi- gation is, unfortunately, very much more simple in an analytical than in a geometrical form.

If the axis of x be taken in the surface of the undisturbed water, in the direction in which the waves are travelling, and that of

y vertically downwards, the equation for the velocity-potential (see HyDROMECHANICS) is simply

dp Fo _,

This is merely the "equation of continuity,"—the condition that no liquid is generated, and none annihilated, during the motion. The type of solution we seek, as above, is represented by o=Y cos(mt—- na), where Y depends on y alone. If this can be made to satisfy the

420

*equation of continuity, we may proceed to further tests and restric- tions of it. Substitution lcads to d?Y *y 0 ae" Y-0, so that Y=Aé"¥+Bé-"%, where A and B are arbitrary constants. (a) If the depth of the water be unlimited, the value of A must be zero, for otherwise we should be dealing with disturbances which increase, without limit, as we go farther down. Hence, in this case, a particular integral of the equation, corresponding to a disturbance which can exist by itself, is ' o=Bé-"# cos (mt — nz). We will now avail ourselves of the supposition under which, as we have seen, disturbances are necessarily superposable, 7.¢., assume terms in B? to be negligible. The ordinary kinetic equation (HypRoMECHANICS) then becomes dp*

C+plp=gy- €3) =gy+mBe-™ sin (mt — nz). If we differentiate this expression with regard to ¢, and apply the result to the surface only, where v is constant, and remember that dy add : rr ~(st) ; we have simply 0O= -ng+m?,

which is the condition that no water crosses the bounding surface. This determines 7, without ambiguity, when m is given, and thus gives a relation between the period of a wave and its length, or between the period or the length and the speed of propagation. For we may write

mt — na= “= (vt 2) ‘

where A is the wave-length, and v the speed; so that

Thus we have

7

and the longer waves move faster, even when the vertical displace- ment is smallin both. This is quite different from the result for sound-waves. The components of the velocity of the particle of water whose mean position is x, y are

o) =Bng-” sin (mt—nzx), parallel to x, and (3) = — Bné-“¥ cos (mt—nx), parallel to y.

Hence the path is a circle whose radius is Bo ¢-“¥, or B me e-mm.

At the surface this is Bm/g, as in fact we see at once by the equa- tion for the pressure, which gives for the form of the surface C=gn+mB sin (mt—nzx).

Each surface-particle is at the highest point of its circular path, and moving forwards, when the crest of the wave passes it. When the trough passes, it is at the lowest point of its circle and moving backwards. The radii of the circles diminish in geometrical pro- gression at depths increasing in arithmetical progression. The factor is €~”Y =¢—?”¥/4, so that at a depth of one wave-length only disturbance is reduced to €—?” or about 1/585 of its surface- value.

From the investigation above we see that Atlantic rollers, of a wave-length of (say) 300 feet, travel at the rate of about 40 feet per second, or 27 miles an hour. But, even if they be of 40 feet height from trough to

crest (which is probably an exaggerated estimate), the utmost disturbance of a water particle at a depth of 300 feet is not quite half an inch from its mean position. This shows, in a very striking manner, what a mere surface-effect is in this way due to winds, and how the depths of the ocean are practically undisturbed by such causes.

This investigation has been carried to a second, and even to a third, approximation by Stokes, with the result that the form of a section of the surface is no longer the curve of sines, in which the crests and troughs are equal. The crests are steeper and higher, and the troughs wider and shallower, than the first approximation shows. Also the forward horizontal motion of each particle under the crest is no longer quite compensated for by its backward motion under the trough, so that what sailors call the "heave of the sea" is explained. The water is per-

manently displaced forwards by each succeeding wave. But this effect, like the whole disturbance, is greatest in the surface-layer and diminishes rapidly for each lower layer. The third approximation shows that the speed of the waves is greater than that above assigned, by a term depending on the square of the ratio of the height to the length of a wave.

(6) When the depth of the water is limited, we cannot make the simplification adopted in the last investigation.

If % be the depth of the water, our condition is that the vertical motion vanishes at that depth, and the relation between m and 18s Now

m?=ng(er —§¢ ~nh)1(g nh +. € cm) .

If % be regarded as infinite this gives as before

. m=ng. If, on the other hand, % be smal] compared with the wave-length, the equation approximates to

m=n"gh,

or v=gh; and we have the formula for long waves again. Thus the expres- sion above: includes both extremes,—though, so far as long waves go, it limits them to harmonic forms of section.

The surface-section is still the curve of sines, but the paths of the individual particles are now ellipses whose major axes are horizontal. Both axes decrease with great rapidity for particles considered at gradually increasing depths ; but the minor axes diminish faster than the major, so that the particles at the bottom oscillate in horizontal lines.

(8) Ripples.—Stokes in 1848 pointed out that the surface-tension of a liquid should be taken account of in finding the pressure at the free surface, but this seems not to have been done till 1871, when W. Thomson discussed its consequences. If T be the surface-tension, and 7 the radius of curvature of the (cylindrical) surface, in the case of oscillatory waves, the pressure at the free surface must be considered as differing from that in the air by the quantity T/r (Carrnuary Action). As T/gp is usually a small quantity, this. term will be negligible unless 7 is very small. If the waves be oscillatory, this means that their lengths must be very short, so that the depth of the fluid may be treated as infinite in comparison.

The curvature is practically d?y/dz®, becausc y/A is small; so that the term —Td?y/dz? must be introduced into the kinetic equa- tion along with p. The result is that

eT

—_ eee

mM 9 + onp 9

or Aue ar T or Ap

Thus the speed is, in all cases, increased by the surface-tension ; and the more so the shorter is the wave-length. Hence, as the speed increases indefinitely with increase of wave-length when gravity alone acts, and also increases indefinitely the shorter the wave when surface-tension alone acts, there must be a minimum speed, for some definite wave-

length, when both causes are at work, It is easily seen that v? is a minimum when

A=Ag=2er/T/9p , and that the corresponding value of v? is 2/gT/p. In the case of water the value of Ay is about 0°68 inch, and 1 is 0°76 in feet-seconds, nearly.

This slowest-moving oscillatory wave may therefore be regarded as the limit between waves proper and ripples. That ripples run faster the shorter they are is easily seen by watching the apparently rigid pattern of them which precedes a body moving uniformly through still water. The more rapid the motion the closer do the ripple-ridges approach one another. Excellent examples of ripples are produced by applying the stem of a vibrating tuning-fork to one side of a large rectangular box full of liquid. From the pitch of the note, and the wave-length of the ripples, we can make (by the use of the above formula) an approximate determination of surface-tension, a quantity somewhat difficult to measure by statical processes.

- very fully treated under Mecuanics (S$ 56-67).

Various forms of wave theory,

W A V—

The conditions of production of ripples by wind, or generally in a surface of separation of two fluids, each of which has any motion parallel to this surface, are given in HyYDROMECHANICS.

(9) Interference of Waves.—While the disturbances con- sidered are so small as to be superposable, z.e., inde- pendent of one another, the effect of superposition is merely a kinematical question, and, as such, has been See also Acoustics, LicHt, and Wave Turory. Thus ripple- patterns, ordinary beats of musical sounds, composition of lunar and solar ocean tides, diffraction, phenomena of polarized light in crystals or in transparent bodies in the magnetic field, &c., are all, in principle at least, simple kinematical consequences of superposition. But the pheno- mena called Tartini's beats, breakers, a bore, a jabble, and (generally) cases in

which a sufficient approximation cannot be obtained by omitting powers of the displacements higher than the first, are not of this simple character.

As a single illustration, take one case of the first of these phenomena. The fact to be explained is that when two pure musical sounds, of frequencies 2 and 3 (say), that is, forming a "perfect fifth," are sounded together, we hear in addition to them a graver note, viz., that of which the first sound is the octave and the second the twelfth. When a resonator, carefully tuned to this graver note, is applied to the ear the note is usually not heard. Hence Helmholtz attributes its production to the fact that the drum of the ear (in consequence of the attachments of the ossicles) has different elastic properties for inward and for outward displacements.

The force tending to restore the drum from a displacement x may therefore be represented approximately by

—pu+ge. Thus, when the drum is exposed to the two sounds above mentioned, its equation of motion is*

a? : : Gat Pea qe? +asin 3mi b sin (2mt B).

By successive approximations, it is found that there is a term in the value of a of the form labq cos (mt — B) (p? — 9m?)(p? — 4on?)(p? — m?) ' which is the " difference-tone" referred to. This, of course, is communicated to the internal ear.

Helmholtz points out, however, that such sounds may be produced objectively, provided the interfering disturbances are sufficiently great. No one seems yet to have obtained any really accurate notion of the smallness of the disturb- ances of air which can be heard as sound. That they are excessively small has long been shown by many processes, but even more perfectly by the comparatively recent invention of the telephone. :

(10) Waves in an Elastic Solid.—Some of the more elementary parts of this very difficult question have been treated from a theoretical point of view in the article Exasticiry. From an observational and experimental

point of view some are treated under EARTHQUAKE. See also Licgut, and Wave Tueory, for the luminiferous medium appears to behave like an elastic solid.

(11) Waves of Temperature and of Electric Potential. —In Hear (§ 78), and specially in the mathematical appendix to that article, will be found Fourier's treatment of heat-waves produced by periodic sources of various characters. It is sufficient to call attention here to the form of the equation for the linear motion of heat (which is the same as that for electricity and for diffu-

sion), viz., oe = pee) dt dx\ dx /]' where v represents temperature, c specific heat, and / thermal conductivity.

When ¢ and & are constants, this takes the very simple form dv dv

If plane harmonic waves of the type v= X cos (mt — nx) are to be transmitted, we must have simultaneously

2

o> ~n?K=0 . 21m —MX. The first gives X= Ant + BE-M; and the second, by means of this, gives Qun?(A€™* — BE-"2) = — m(AE™* + BE-7), Thus A vanishes, which implies that the amplitude of the waves must continuously diminish as they progress. Also Q2un=m, so that v= Bg-"* cos (2xnt — nx). If the conductivity be not constant, then, even in the simple case of k=k(1+av), where a is small, the wave throws off others of inferior amplitude and of a different period.

12, Works and Memoirs on Waves.—The literature is very extensive, so a few references only are given. The works of Lagrange, Laplace, Poisson, and Cauchy may be specially cited. Weber's Wellenlehre, and Scott Russell's papers, contain valuable experimental details. Theoretical papers of importance by Earnshaw, Kelland, Green, &c., treat of long waves. The collected works of Rankine, and particularly those of Stokes, deal in part with oscillatory waves. Stokes's " Reports on

Hydrodynamics," in the Trans. of the British Association, are of great value in themselves, and contain numerous references. A very complete discussion of the mathematics of the subject is given by Professor Greenhill in the American Journal of Mathematics. Lord Rayleigh's Sound, and the memoirs of De St Venant and Von Helmholtz, together with a remarkable series of papers by Sir W. Thomson, in recent volumes of the PA7l. Afag. and Proc. R, 8S. E., may fitly conclude the list. (P. G. T.)

WAVERTREE, a township of Lancashire, partly included within the parliamentary limits of Liverpool, 3 miles south-east of Liverpool Exchange. The churches are all modern. There is a small circle of monoliths on the south-east boundary of the township, called the Calder Stones. A cemetery of the Neolithic period was opened a few years ago. The town possesses roperies and a brewery. An extensive pumping station connected with the Liverpool water-works is in the vicinity. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1838 acres) in 1871 was 7810, and in 1881 it was 11,097.

WAVE THEORY OF LIGHT

Sl. A GENERAL statement of the principles of the

undulatory theory, with elementary explanations, has already been given under Licut, and in the article on Erver the arguments which point to the existence of an all-pervading medium, susceptible in its various parts of an alternating change of state, have been traced bya master hand; but the subject is of such great importance, and is so intimately involved in recent optical investigation and discovery, that a more detailed exposition of the theory, with application to the leading phenomena, was reserved for a special article. That the subject is one of difficulty

may be at once admitted. Even in the theory of sound, as conveyed by aerial vibrations, where we are well acquainted with the nature and properties of the vehicle, the fundamental conceptions are not very easy to grasp, and their development makes heavy demands upon our mathematical resources. That the situation is not im- proved when the medium is hypothetical will be easily understood. For, although the

evidence is overwhelming in favour of the conclusion that light is propagated as a vibration, we are almost entirely in the dark as to what it is that vibrates and the manner of vibration. This ignor-

ance entails an appearance of vagueness even in those parts of the subject the treatment of which would not really be modified by the acquisition of a more precise knowledge, ¢.g., the theory of the colours of thin plates, and of the resolving power of optical instruments. But in other parts of the subject, such as the explanation of the laws of double refraction and of the intensity of light reflected at the surface of a transparent medium, the vagueness is not merely one of language ; and if we wish to reach definite results by the a priort road we must admit a hypothetical element, for which little justification can be given. The distinction here indicated should be borne clearly in mind. Many optical phenomena must necessarily agree with any kind of wave theory that can be proposed ; others may agree or disagree with a parti- cular form of it. In the latter case we may regard the special form as disproved, but the undulatory theory in the proper wider sense remains untouched.

too wide for optical double refraction, which is of a much simpler character.

For these and other reasons, especially the awkwardness with which it lends itself to the explanation of dispersion, the elastic solid theory, valuable as a piece of purely dynamical reasoning, and probably not without mathematical analogy to the truth, can in optics be regarded only as an illustration.

In recent years a theory has been received with much favour in which light is regarded as an electromagnetic phenomenon. The dielectric medium is conceived to be subject to a rapidly periodic "electric displacement," the variations of which have the magnetic properties of an electric current. On the basis of purely electrical observa- tions Maxwell calculated the velocity of propagation of such disturbances, and obtained

a value not certainly dis- tinguishable from the velocity of light. Such an agree- ment is very striking ; and a further deduction from the theory, that the specific inductive capacity of a transparent

Elastio Of such special forms of the wave theory the most | medium is equal to the square of the refractive index, is solid famous is that which assimilates light to the transverse | supported to some extent by observation. The founda- theory. vibrations of an elastic solid. Zransverse they must be in | tions of the electrical theory are not as yet quite cleared

order to give room for the phenomena of polarization. This theory is a great help to the imagination, and allows of the deduction of definite results which are at any rate mechanically possible. An isotropic solid has in general two elastic properties—one relating to the recovery from an alteration of volume, and the other to the recovery from a state of shear, in which the strata are caused to slide over one another. It has been shown by Green that it would be necessary to suppose the luminiferous medium to be incompressible, and thus the only admissible differences between one isotropic medium and another are those of rigidity and of density. Between these we are in the first instance free to choose. The slower propagation of light in glass than in air may be equally well explained by supposing the rigidity the same in both cases while the density is greater in glass, or by supposing that the density is the same in both cases while the rigidity is greater in air. Indeed there is nothing, so far, to exclude a more complicated condition of things, in which both the density and rigidity vary in passing from one medium to another, subject to the one condition only of making the ratio of velocities of pro- pagation equal to the known refractive index between the media.

When we come to apply this theory to investigate the intensity of light reflected from (say) a glass surface, and to the diffraction of light by very small particles (as in the sky), we find that a reasonable agreement with the facts can be brought about only upon the supposition that the rigidity is the same (approximately, at any rate) in various media, and that the density alone varies. At the same

of more or less arbitrary hypothesis ; but, when it becomes certain that a dielectric medium is susceptible of vibrations propagated with the velocity

of light, there will be no hesitation in accepting the identity of such vibrations with those to which optical phenomena are due. In the mean-time, and apart altogether from the question of its probable truth, the electromagnetic theory is very instructive, in showing us how careful we must be to avoid limiting our ideas too much as to the nature of the luminous vibrations.

§ 2. Plane Waves of Simple Type.

Whatever may be the character of the medium and of its vibra- tion, the analytical expression for an infinite train of plane waves is

Acos | (Vt-2)+0 — (1),

in which A represents the wave-length, and V the corresponding velocity of propagation. The coefficient A is called the ampli- tude, and its nature depends upon the medium and must there- fore here be left an open question. The phase of the wave at a given time and place is represented by a The expression retains the same value whatever integral number of wave-lengths be added to or subtracted from x It is also periodic with respect to ¢, and

the period is ey is aug (2).

In experimenting upon sound we are able to determine inde- pendently 7, a, and V ; but on account of its smallness the periodic time of luminous vibrations eludes altogether our means of observa- tion, and is only known indirectly from A and V by means of (2).

There is nothing arbitrary in the use of a circular function to re- present the waves. Asa general rule this is the only kind of wave which can be propagated without a change of form ; and, even in the exceptional cases where the velocity is independent of wave- length, no generalitygis really lost by this procedure, because in accordance with Fourier's theorem any kind of periodic wave may be regarded as compounded of a series of such as (1), with wave- lengths in harmonical progression.

Electro- magnetic theory.

A well-known characteristic of waves of type (1) is that any Compo- number of trains of various amplitudes and phases, but of the same sition of wave-length, are equivalent to a single train of the sametype. Thus waves of

? like

time we have to suppose that the vibration is perpen- dicular to the plane of polarization. Up to this point the accordance may be regarded as

Qa fairly satisfactory ; but, when we extend the investigation zee Ut ; period. to crystalline media in the hope of explaining the observed 2a si Me ‘ == .cos — (Vé-a)-3A . sin— (Vt- laws of double refraction, we find that the suppositions >. mn 4 ins ae 3 which would suit best here are inconsistent with the con- =P cos “T(Vt— a) +9 (ay clusions we have already arrived at. In the first place, ae P2=(SA cos.a)?+3(Asin a)” (4),

and so long as we hold strictly to the analogy of an elastic solid, we can only explain double refraction as depending upon anisotropic rigidity, and this can hardly be recon- ciled with the view that the rigidity is the same in different isotropic media. And if we pass over this diffi- culty, and inquire what kind of double refraction a erystalline solid would admit of, we find no such corre- spondence with observation as would lead us to think that we are upon the right track. The theory of anisotropic solids, with its twenty-one elastic constants, seems to be

3=(A sin a) =(A cos a) op An important particular case is that of two component trains only. Tyo

Qa , 2a ‘ trains of Acos | S(Vt~1)+a} +A’eos } (Ve—2) +a —*

tan =

= Pecos Zr (Via) +o ’ Pim A2— Al OA A’cos(a— a’) « (6).

1 Sce Stokes, “ Report on Double Refraction,” Brit. Assoc. Report, 1862, p. 253.

whcre

Photo- metry.

WAVE THEORY

The composition of vibrations of the same period is precisely analogous, as was pointed out by Fresnel, to the composition of forces, or indeed of any other two-dimensional vector quantities. The magnitude of the force corresponds to the amplitude of the vi- bration, and the inclination of the force corresponds to the phase. A group of forces, of equal intensity, represented by lines drawn from the centre to the angular points of a regular polygon, consti- tute a system in equilibrium. Consequently, a system of vibrations of equal amplitude and of phases symmetrically distributed round the period has a zero resultant.

According to the phase-relation, determined by (a-a'), the am- plitnde of the resultant may vary from (A — A') to (A+A'). If A' and A are equal, the minimum resultant is zero, showing that two equal trains of waves may neutralize one another. This happens when the phases are opposite, or differ by half a (complete) period, and the effect is usually spoken of as the interference of light. From a purely dynamical point of view the word is not very ap- propriate, the vibrations being simply superposed with as little inter- ference as ean be imagined.

§ 3. Intensity.

The intensity of light of given wave-length must depend upon the amplitude, but the precise nature of the relation is not at once apparent. We are not able to appreciate by simple inspection the relative intensities of two unequal lights; and, when we say, for example, that one candle is twice as bright as another, we mean that two of the latter burning independently would give us tho samo light as one of the former. This may be regarded as the definition ; and then experiment may be appealed to to prove that the intensity of light from a given source varies inversely as the square of the distance. But our conviction of the truth of the law is perhaps founded quite as much upon the idea that something not liable to loss is radiated outwards, and is distributed in succession over the

surfaces of spheres eoncentrie with the source, whose areas are as the squares of the radii. The something can only be energy; and thus we are led to regard the rate at which energy is propagated across a given area parallel to tho waves as the measure of inten- sity; and this is proportional, not to the first power, but to the square of the amplitude.

Practical photometry is usually founded upon the law of inverse squares (LIGHT, vol. xiv. p. 583); andit should be remembered that the method involves essentially the use of a diffusing screen, the illumination of which, seen in a eertain direction, is assumed to be independent of the precise direction in which the light falls upon it; for the distance of a candle, for example, cannot be altered without introducing at the same time a ehange in the apparent magnitude, and therefore in the incidence of some part at any rate of the light.

With this objection is connected another which is often of greater importance, the necessary enfeeblement of the light by the process of diffusion. And, if to maintain the brillianey we substitute regular reflectors for diffusing sereens, the method breaks down altogether by the apparent illumination becoming independent of the distance of the source of light.

The use of a revolving disk with transparent and opaque sectors in order to control the brightness, as proposed by Fox Talbot,! may often be recommended in scientific photometry, when a great loss of light is inadmissible. The law that, when the frequency of inter- mittence is sufficient to give a steady appearance, the brightness is proportional to the angular magnitude of the open sectors appears to be well established.

§ 4. Resultant of a Large Number of Vibrations of Arbitrary Phase.

We have seen that the resultant of two vibrations of equal amplitude is wholly dependent upon their phase-relation, and it is of interest to inquire what we are to expect from the composition of a large number (m) of equal vibrations of amplitude unity, and of arbitrary phases. The intensity of the resultant will of course depend upon the precise manner in which tho phases are distri- buted, and may vary from 7? to zero. But is there a

definite intensity which becomes more and more probable as 7 is increased without limit ?

The nature of the question here raised is well illustrated by the special case in which the possible phases are restricted to two opposite phases. We may then conveniently discard the idea of phase, and regard the amplitudes as at random positive or negative. If all the signs are the same, the intensity is 7 ; if, on the other hand, there are as many positive as negative, the result is zero. But, although the intensity may range from 0 to »?, the smaller values are much more probable than the greater.

The simplest part of the problem relates to what is called in the theory of probabilities the " expectation " of intensity, that is, the mean intensity to be expected after a great number of trials, in each of which the phases are taken at random. The ehance that all the vibrations are positive is 2-", and thus the expectation of intensity eorresponding to this eontingeucy is 2-"."%. In like manner the ee eee

1 Phil. Mag., v. p. 831, 1834.

expectation corresponding to the number of positive vibrations being (7 —1) is Pee te :

andsoon. The whole expectation of intensity is thus

= L.n?+n.(n-2) ae (n— 4)? n(n —1)(r— 2 a (a= 6). . (1).

Now the sum of the (n+1) terms of this series is simply , as may be proved by comparison of coefficients of 2? in the equivalent forms (c#$e-tP I(t det…) —= pn n-2)x nn — 1) ent 4. nen-2)x4 1.2

The expectation of intensity is therefore n, and this whether be great or small.

The same eonclusion holds good when the phases are unrestricted. From (4), § 2, if A=1,

Poan+2e0s(a_—-a) « + (2), where under the sign of summation are to be included the cosines of the 4n(n — 1) differences of phase. When the phases are arbitrary, this sum is as likely to be positive as negative, and thus the mean value of P? is n.

The reader must be on his guard here against a fallaey which has misled some high authorities. We have not proved that when n is large there is any tendency for a single combination to give the intensity equal to n, but the quite different proposition that in a large number of trials, in each of which tho phases are rearranged arbitrarily, the mean intensity will tend more and more to the value n. It is true that even ina single combination there is no reason why any of the cosines in (2) should be positive rather than negative, and from this we may infer that when 1 is inereased the sum of the terms tends to vanish in eomparison with the number of terms. But, the number of terms being of the order n?, we can infer nothing as to the value of the sum of the series in com- parison with 2.

Indeed it is not true that the intensity in a single combination approximates to , when 7 is large. It can be proved? that the probability of a resultant intermediate in amplitude between r and r+dr is

ee-4)x 4 ae

2 er rde (3). The probability of an amplitude less than 7 is thus 5 [er hdr jovere . gs s Nu S0 ‘

or, which is the same thing, the probability of an amplitude greater than 7 is

(5).

The accompanying table gives the probabilities of intensities less than the fractions of m named inj—_77~__y |

—72[n Z |

° ° . . . . .

the first column. For example, the | ‘05 | 0488 | “80 | 5906 probability of intensity less than 2 10 | 0952 |} 1°00 | °6321 1s °6321. 20 | 1813 || 1°50 | °7768 It will be seen that, however great | °40 | 8296 || 2°00 | 8647 60 | °4512 |) 8°00 | “9502

m may be, there is a fair ehance of considerable relative fluctuations of ——~————————————” intensity in consecutive eombinations.

The mean intensity, expressed by

leo} =f et 2 dr, n/o

is, as we have already seen, equal to . ;

It is with this mean intensity only that we are concerned in ordinary photometry. A source of light, such as a candle or even a soda flame, may be regarded as composed of a very large number of luminous eentres disposed throughout a very sensible space ; and, even though it be true that the intensity at a particular point of a screen illuminated by it and at a particular moment of time is a matter of chance, further processes of averaging must be gone through before anything is arrived at of which our Senses could ordinarily take cognizance. In the smallest interval of time during which the eye could be impressed, there would be opportunity for any number of rearrangements of phase, due either to motions of the particles or to irregularities in their modes of vibration. And even if we supposed that each luminous centro was fixed, and emitted perfectly regular vibrations, the manner of eomposition and consequent intensity would vary rapidly from point to point of the screen, and in ordinary cases the mean illumination over the smallest appreciable area would eorrespond to a thorough averaging of the phase-relationships. In this way the idea of the intensity of a Inminous source, independently of any questions of phase, is seen to be justified, and we may properly say that two candles are twice as bright as one.

2 Phil. Mag., Aug. 1880.

a

Fermat's From the law of propagation, according to which the wave- In practical applications it is of importance to recognize the Symme- prin- surfaces are always as far advanced as possible, it follows that the | effects of a small departure of the wave-surface from its ideal plane trical ciple. —_ course of a ray is that for which the time, represented by / V-ids, | or spherical form. Let the surface be referred to a system of rect- aberra- isa minimum. This is Fermat's principle of least time. Since the | 22gular coordinates, the axis of z being normal at the centre of tion. refractive index («) varies as V-1, we may take JS wds as the measure einer or alae se ha SH eee GaP ae ! ee. of the retardation between one wave surface and another ; and itis – a ah eee oe G 7 mee ae a eee. wt tr the same along whichever ray it may be measured. P irecotliodeat ero tie by jf – ' Law of The priuciple that /uds is a minimum along a ray lends itself z=r2otArt+ . . . . . » (1), magnify- readily to the investigation of optical laws. As an example, we | ip which pis the radius of curvature, or focal length, and r? =2? + 7, ing. will consider the very important theory of magnifying power. Let | If the surface be truly spherical, A=1/83, and any deviation Ao,Bg be two points upon a wave-surface before the light enters | of A from this value indicates ordinary symmetrical spherical the object-glass of a telescope, A, B the corresponding points upon | aberration. a wave-surface after emergence from the eye-piece, both surfaces If, however, the surface be not symmetrical, we may have to Unsym- being planc. The value of /uds is the same along the tay AjA | encounter aberration of a lower order of small quantities, and metrical as along ByB; and, if from any cause B, be slightly retarded | therefore presumably of higher importance. By taking the axis of aberra- relatively to Ay, then B will be retarded to the same amount | «and y coincident with the directions of principal curvature at , tion, rey to A. Suppose now that the retardation in question is | we may write the equation of the surface due to a small rotation () of the wave-surface A,B, about an hee in its own plane Boe to AB. The eee of e <5, toy tat + Baty + yay? + By i (2), relatively to Ay is then Aj)By.; and in like manner, if ¢ be hat oa a af the commanion ditt rotation of AB, the retardation is AB.¢. Since peered ele pea a ae of souayatiines ij a nae a these rcOirdapion sare the same, we have most Nate ig – 3 a ee a indo 1s ath Cc b _ ArBy xia atu thule basal uaa RN RVe settee ony Peace 8 AB? adjustments be rendered symmetrical with respect to the horizontal or the magnifying power is

equal to the ratio of the widths of the ane . This plane eae then be neaattled as primary, p being : stream of light before and after passing the telescope. the primary focal length, at which distance the spectrum is formed. Prisms. The niagnifying power is not necessarily the same in all direc- | Under these circumstances 8 and 6 may be omittcd from (2), Ea eee oe ae "e a pee ae = om ee which thus takes the form | P work. Passage throug e€ prism does not alter the vertica ee of ie es of light; neates there is no magnifying power 2 <5, t bt ant + yay? 3 in this direction. at happens in a horizontal direction de- ; i : i pends upon circumstances. m single prism in the position of ees 'dal be 2 ae an eek is a es Me 7s ae oe minimum deviation does not alter the horizontal width of the tere Hen voaealicrat eee pete ane a oe ae beam. The same is true of a sequence of any number of usual formula the radius of curvature at the point x of the intcr- prisms each in the position of minimum deviation, or of the com- | S°¢Ho2 Br) miigibe piste 40 sap Dey Ca babe). bination called by Thollon a couple, when the deviation is the Since me mts ee = SN +n ae of a apa least that can be obtained by rotating the couple as a rigid system, 1s 4 principal radius of the surfaes ; so that, EE eH Iatere although a further diminution might be arrived at by violating have z this tie. In all these cases there is neither horizontal nor age : (4) vertical magnification, and the instrument behaves as a telescope ae : dae anges " of power unity. If, however, a prism be so placed that the angle of Again, in the neighbourhood of the origin, the approximate value emergence differs from the angle of incidence, the horizontal | of the product of the principal curvatures is width of the beam undergoes a change. If the emergence be 1 Sau | Qyx nearly grazing, there will be a high magnifying power in the pp. cr 3: horizontal direction ; and, whatever may be the character of the | Thus system of prisms, the horizontal magnifying power is represented a dp dp' Gar 2Qyx by the ratio of widths. Brewster suggested that, by combining (=)= > Dt © 5) a two prisms with refracting edges at right angles, it would be hence by (4) a ie eee possible to secure equal magnifying power in the two directions, | °° dp'~~1 and thus to imitate the action of an ordinary telescope. a} ae (5). Appar~~ The theory of magnifying power is intimately connected with ; er : ent that of apparent brightness. By the use of a telescope in regarding | The equation of the normal at the point x, y, z is, bright- a bright body, such, for example, asthe moon, there is a concentra- Soe g-@ ie | 6): ness. tion of light upon

*the pupil in proportion to the ratio of the area "~1 plat 8ar+yy? pty + Qyay * (6);*

424

§ 5. Propagation of Waves in General.

It has been shown under Oprics that a system of rays, how- ever many reflexions or refractions they may have undergone, are always normal to a certain surface, or rather system of surfaces. From our present point of view these surfaces are to be regarded as wave-surfaces, that is, surfaces of constant phase. It is evident that, so long as the radius of curvature is very large in comparison with A, each small part of a wave-surface propagates itself just as an infinite plane wave coincident with the tangent plane would do. If we start at time ¢ with a given surface, the corresponding wave- surface at time ¢-+dt is to be found by prolonging every normal by the length Vat, where V denotes the velocity of propagation at the place in question. If the ncdium be uniform, so that V is constant, the new surface is parallel to the old one, and this property is re- tained however many short intcrvals of time be considered in suc- cession. A wave-surfacc thus propagates itself normally, and the corresponding parts of successive surfaces are those which lie upon the same normal. In this sense the normal may be regarded as a ray, but the idea must not be pushed to streams of light limited to pass through small apertures. The manner in which the phase is determined by the length of the ray, and the conditions under which energy may be regarded as travelling along a ray, will be better treated under the head of Huygens's principle, and the theory of shadows (§ 10).

of the object-glass to that of the pupil. But the apparent bright- ness remains unaltered, the apparent superficial magnitude of the

1 Jt is here assumed that the object-glass is large cnough to fill the whole of the pupil with light; also that the glasses are perfectly transparent, and that there is no toss of light by reflexion. For theorctical purposes the latter re- quirement may be satisfied by supposing the transition between one optical medium and another to be gradual in all cases.

object being changed in preciscly the same proportion, in accord- ance with the law just established.

These fundamental propositions were proved a long while since by Cotes and Smith; and a complete exposition of them, from the point of view of geometrical optics, is to be found in Smith's treatise."

§ 6. Waves Approximately Plane or Spherical.

A plane wave of course remains plane after reflexion from a truly plane surface ; but any irregularities in the surface impress themselves upon the wave. In the simplest case, that of perpen- dicular incidence, the irregularities are doubled, any depressed portion of the surface giving rise to a retardation in the wave front of twice its own amount. It is assumed that the lateral dimen- sions of the depressed or elevated parts are large multiples of the wave-length ; otherwise the assimilation of the various parts to plane waves is not legitimate.

In like manner, if a plane wave passes perpendicularly through a parallel plate of refracting material, a small elevation ¢ at any part of onc of the surfaces introduces a retardation («—1)¢ in the corre- sponding part of the wave-surface. An error in a glass surface is thus of only one-quarter of the importance of an equal error ina reflecting surface. Further, if a plate, otherwise true, be distorted by bending, the errors introduced at the two surfaces are approxi- mately opposite, and neutralize one another.?®

2 Smith, Compleat System of Optics, Cambridge, 1738. The reader may be referred to a paper entitled "Notes, chiefly Historical, on some Fundamental Pro- positions in Optics" (Phi?. Mag., June 1886), in which some account is given of Smith's work, and its relation to' modern investigations.

3 On this principle Grubb has explained the observation that the effects of bending stress arc nearly as prejudicial in the case of thick Object-glasses as in the case of thin ones,

Primary focal line.

Second-

ary focal

line,

Fresnel's experi- ment.

WAVE

and its intersection with the plane ¢=p occurs at the point determined approximately by

E= — p(Bax? + yy') 7= eae — Apyxy

terms of the third ordcr being omitted.

According to geometrical optics, the thickness of the image of a luminous line at the primary focus is determined by the extreme value of ; and for good definition in the spectroscope it is neccs- sary to reduce this thickness as much as possible. One way of attaining the desired result would be to narrow the aperture ; but, as we shall see later, to narrow the horizontal aperture is really to throw away the peculiar advantage of large instruments. The same objection, however, does not apply to narrowing the vertical aper- ture ; and in many spectroscopes a great improvement in definition may be thus secured. In general, it is necessary that both y and a besmall. Since the value of & does not depend on p', it would seem that in respect of definition there is no advantage iu avoiding astigmatism.

The width of the image when 7=0 (corresponding to y=0) is 3apx', and vanishes when a=0, 7z.e., when there is no aberration for rays in the primary plane. In this case the image reduces to a linear are. If further y=0, this are becomes straight, and then the image at the primary focus is perfect to this order of approxi- mation. As an example where a=0, the

image of a luminous point, formed at an equal distance on the further side of a sloped equi-convex lens, may be mentioned.

At the secondary focus, (= p's and from (6)

5 > n=—-Qpyay . . . . . (8). If y==0, the secondary focal line is formed without aberration, but not otherwise. Both focal lines are well formed when parallel rays fall upon a plano-convex lens, sloped at about 30°, the curved side of the lens being turned towards the parallel rays.

oe eee

§ 7. Interference Fringes.

We have seen (§ 2) that, when two trains of parallel waves of equal wave-length are superposed, the intensity of the resultant depends upon the phase-relation of the components; but it is necessarily the same at all points of the wave-front. It not un- frequently happens that the parallelism of the component trains is approximate only, and there then arises the phenomenon known as interference fringes. If the two directions of propagation be inclined on opposite sides to the axis of 2 at small angles a, the expressions for two components of equal amplitudes are

cos | Vt-xcosa—ysina ! : and

cos = Vi-weosatysina } ;

so that the resultant is expressed by 2 cos ATYSIT # cos =" (Vé-aoos @) Bl pee eee able

from which it appears that the vibrations advance parallel to the axis of x, unchanged in type, and with a uniform velocity V/cosa. Considered as depending on y, the vibration is a maximum when ysina is equal to 0, A, 2A, 38a, &c., corresponding to the centres of the bright bands, while for the intermediate values 4a, $a, &c., there is no vibration. This is the interference of light proceeding from two similar homogeneous and very distant sources,

In the form of experiment adopted. by Fresnel the sources O,, 0,1 are situated at a finite distance D from the place of observa- tion (Lieut, vol. xiv. p. 606). If A be the point of the screen equidistant from 0,, O,, and P a neighbouring point, then approximately

O,P – 0,P=/{D?+ (w+ 40)?} —s/{D?+ (uw —40)} =ud/D, where 0,0,=b, AP=w.*

Thus, if A be the wave-length, the places where the phases are accordant are given by

WONDIO. 6 we sw we «6 (DS n being an integer.

If the light were really homogeneous, the successive fringes would be similar to one another and unlimited in number; more- over there would be no place that could be picked out by inspec- tion as the centre of the system. In practice A varies, and tho only place of complete accordance for all kinds of light is at A, where w=0. Theoretically, there is no place of complete discord- ance for all kinds of light, and consequently no complete blackness. In consequence, however, of the fact that the range of sensitiveness

1 It is scarcely necessary to say that 0), O2 must not be distinct sources of Nght; otherwise there could be no fixed phase-relation and consequently no regular interference. In Fresnel's experiment 0), O, are virtual images of one real source O, obtained by reflexion in two mirrors. The mirrors may be re- placed by a bi-prism. Or, as in Lloyd's arrangement, 0, may be identical with O, and O, obtained by a grazing reficxion from a single mirror.

THe Oh Y 425

of the eye is limited to less than an "octave," the centre of the first dark band (on either side) is sensibly black, cven when whito light is employed ; but it should be carefully remarked that the existence of even one band is due to selection, and that the forma- tion of several visible bands is favoured by the capability of the retina to make chromatic distinctions within the visible range.

The number of perceptible bands increases part passu with the approach of the light to homogeneity. For this purpose there are two methods that may be used.

We may employ light, such as that from the soda flame, which Light possesses ab initio a high degrce of homogeneity. If the range of origin- wave-length included be sy$y5, a corresponding number of inter- ally ference fringes may be made visible. The above is the number homo- obtained by Fizeau, and Michelson has recently gone as far as gencons. 200,000. 'The narrowness of the bright line of light seen in the spectroscope, and the possibility of a large number, of Fresnel's bands, depend upon preciscly the same conditions; the one is in truth as much an interference phenomenon as the other.

In the second method the original light may be highly composite, Spectro- and homogeneity is brought about with the aid of a spectroscope. scopic The analogy with the first method is closest if we uso the spectro- method. scope to give us a line of homogeneous light in simple substitution for the artificial flame. Or, following Foucault and Fizeau, we may allow the white light to pass, and subsequently analyse the mixture transmitted by a narrow slit in the screen upon which the interference bands are thrown. In the latter case we observe a channelled spectrum, with maxima of brightness corresponding to the wave-lengths bu/(nD). In either case the number of bands observable is limited solely by the resolving power of the spectro- scope (§ 18), and proves nothing with respect to the regularity, or otherwise, of the vibrations of the original light.

The truth of this remark is strikingly illustrated by the possible Achro- formation, with white light, of a large number of achromatic bands. matic The unequal widths of the bands for the various colours, and bands. consequent overlapping and obliteration, met with in the usual form of the experiment, depend upon the constancy of 6 (the mutual distance of the two sources) while A varies. It is obvious that, if 6 were proportional to a, the widths of the bands would be independent of A, and that the various systems would fit together perfectly. To carry out the idea in its entirety, it would be necessary to nse a diffraction spectrum as a source, and to dupli- cate this by Lloyd's method with a single reflector placed so

that b=0 when a=0. In practice a sufficiently good result could doubtless be obtained with a prismatic spectrum (especially if the red aud violet were removed by absorbing agents) under the con- dition that d(b/A)=0 in the yellow-green, It is remarkable that, in spite of the achromatic character of the bands, thcir possible number is limited still by the resolving power of the instrument used to form the spectrum.

If a system of Fresnel's bands be examined through a prism, the Airy's central white band undergoes an abnormal displacement, which theory has been supposed to be inconsistent with theory. The explana- of the tion has been shown by Airy? to depend upon the peculiar manner white in which the white band is in general formed. centre.

" Any one of the kinds of homogeneous light composing the incident hetero- geneous light will produce a series of bright and dark bars, unlimited in number as far as the mixture of light from the two pencils extends, and undistinguish- able in quality. The consideration, therefore, of homogeneous light will never enable us to determine which is the point that the eye immediately turns to as the centre of the fringes. What then is the physical circumstance that deter- mines the centre of the fringes?

"The answer is very casy. For different colours the bars have different breadths. If then the bars of all colours coincide at one part of the mixture of light, they will not coincide at any other part; but at equal distances on both sides from that place of coincidence they will be equally far from a state of coin- cidence. If then we can find where the bars of all colours coincide, that point is the centre of the fringes. ?

'It appears then that the centre"of the fringes is mot necessarily the point where the two pencils of light have described equal paths, but is determined by con- siderations of a perfectly different kind….. The distinction is important in this and in other experiments."

The effect in question depends upon the dispersive power of the prism. If v be the linear shifting due to the prism of the originally central band, v must be regarded as a function of A. Measured from the original centre, the position of the n'® bar is now

v+naD/b. ; The coincidence of the various bright bands occurs when this quantity is as independent as possible of a, that is, when ” is the nearest integer to ile

ME =a S 45 5 o 2 2 5 4, (BP or, as Airy expresses it in terms of the width of a band (h), n= —dv/dh. The apparent displacement of the white band is thus not v simply, but va (4). The signs of dv and dh being opposite, the abnormal displacement is in addition to the normal effect of the prism. But, since dv/dh, 2 ‘Remarks on Mr Potter’s Experiment on Interference,” Phil. Mag., bs Soe

161, 1833.

XXIV. — 54

Limits to the width

of the

426

or dv/da, is not constant, the achromatism of the white band is less perfect than when no prism is used.

If a grating were substituted for the prism, v would vary as h, and (4) would vanish, so that in all orders of spectra the white band would be seen undisplaced.

The theoretical error, dependent upon the dispersive power, involved in the method of determining the refractive index of a plate by means of the displacement of a system of interference fringes (Licut, vol. xiv. p. 607) has been discussed by Stokes.} In the absence of dispersion the retardation R due to the plate would be independent of a, and therefore completely compensated at the point determined by«=DR/d; but when there is dispersion it is accompanied by a fictitious displacement of the fringes on the principle explained by Airy.

More recently the matter has engaged the attention of Cornu,? who thus formulates the general principle :—“ Dans un systéme de Sranges @interférences produites & Vaide d’une lumiere hétérogene ayant un spectre continu, il existe toujours une frange achromatique qui joue le réle de frange centrale et qui se trowve au point de champ ow les radiations les plus intenses présentent une différence de phase maximum ou minimum.”

In Fresnel’s experiment, if the retardation of phase due to an interposed plate, or to any other cause, be F(a), the whole relative retardation of the two pencils at the point w is

o=Fa)+ a 4 ieee Me ae (5);

and the situation of the central, or achromatic, band is determined, not by ¢=0, but by d¢/da=0, or

WSIEDPIAE 4 « g- e mw & TOR

In the theoretical statement we have supposed the source of light

to be limited to a mathematical point, or to be extended only in

the vertical direction (parallel to the bands). Such a vertical

extension, while it increases illumination, has no prejudicial effect

source of upon distinctness, the various systems due to different points of the

light.

Diffrae- tion and Fres- nel’s bands.

Summa- tion of partial waves.

luminous line being sensibly superposed. On the other hand, the horizontal dimension of the source must be confined within narrow limits, the condition obviously being that the displacement of the centre of the

system incurred by using in succession the two edges only of the slit should be small in comparison with the width of an interference band.

Before quitting this subject it is proper to remark that Fresnel's bands are more influenced by diffraction than their discoverer supposed. On this account the fringes are often unequally broad and undergo fluctuations of brightness. A more precise calcula- tion has been given by H. F. Weber® and by H. Struve, but the matter is too complicated to be further considered here. The observations of Struve appear to agree well with the corrected theory.*

§ 8. Colours of Thin Plates.

When plane waves of homogeneous light (a) fall upon a parallel plate of index p, the resultant reflected wave is made up of an infinite number of components, of which the most important are the first, reflected at the upper surface of the plate, and the second, transmitted at the upper surface, reflected at the under surface, and then transmitted at the upper surface. It is readily proved (Lieut, vol. xiv. p. 608) that so far as it depends upon the distances to be travelled in the plate and in air the retardation (8) of the second wave relatively to the first is given by

5=2ut cos a' Me yee where ¢ denotes the thickness of the plate, and a' the angle of refraction corresponding to the first entrance. If we represent all the vibrations by complex quantities, from which finally the imaginary parts are to be rejected, the retardation 8 may be expressed by the introduction of the factor e—® where i= /(-1), and «=2n/a,*

At each reflexion or refraction the amplitude of the incident wave must be supposed to be altered by a certain factor. When the light proceeds from the surrounding medium to the plate, the factor for reflexion will be supposed to be 6, and for refraction c; the corresponding quantities when the progress is from the plate to the surrounding medium will be denoted bye, 7 Denoting the incident vibration by unity, we have then for the first component of the reflected wave 6, for the second cefe—® for the third cee 28 and so on. Adding these together, and summing the geometric series, we find*

*Z coffe **8 sal — ee 8 (2). In like manner for the wave transmitted through the plate we get of te 2% tK8 (3).*

The quantities 4, ¢, e, f are not independent. The simplest way to find the relations between them is to trace the consequences

1 Brit. Ass. Rep., 1850.

] 2 Jour, de Physique, i. p. 293, 1882. 2 Wied. Ann., Vili. p. 407,

4 Wied. Ann., xv. p. 49.

of supposing 5=0 in (2) and(8). For it is evident a priori that with a plate of vanishing thickness there must be a vanishing re- flexion, and a total transmission. Accordingly,

b+e=0, f=1-é (4), the first of which embodies Arago's law of the equality of reflexions, as well as the famous "loss of half an undulation." Using these

we find for the reflected vibration,

e (1 = er) 5 nan " and for the transmitted vibration 1-¢é 1-a% ii

The intensities of the reflected and transmitted lights are the squares of the moduli of these expressions. Thus

*(1 ~ cos #5)? + sin 2×5 (1 — cos «8)?+ 4 sin xd 4¢? sin *(418)*

1 — 2¢? cos x8 +e!

, : . (1 — e?)? Intensity of transmitted light i-Waseer the sum of the two expressions being unity.

According to (7) not only does the reflected light vanish con- pletely when 3=0, but also whenever 4%5=nz, n being an integer, that is, whenever 5=na. When the first and third medium are the same, as we have here

supposed, the central spot in the system of Newton's rings is black, even though the original light contain a mixture of all wave lengths, The general explanation of the colours of Newton's rings is given under Lieut, to which reference must be made. If the light reflected from a plate of any thickness be examined with a spectroscope of sufficient resolving power (§ 13), the spectrum will be traversed by dark bands, of which the centre corresponds to those wave lengths which the plate is incompetent to reflect. It is obvious that there is no limit to the fineness of the bands which may be thus impressed upon a spectrum, whatever may be the character of the original mixed light.

The relations between the factors 8, c, ¢, f have been proved, independently of the theory of thin plates, in a general manner by Stokes,® who called to his aid the general mechanical principle of reversibility. If the motions constituting the refleeted and refracted rays to which an incident ray gives rise be supposed to be reversed, they will reconstitute a reversed incident ray. This gives one relation ; and another is obtained from the consideration that there is no ray in the second medium, such as would be generated by the operation alone of either the reversed reflected or refracted rays. Space docs not allow of the reproduc-> tion of the argument at length, but a few words may perhaps give the reader an idea of how the conclusions 4 are arrived at. The incident ray (IA) being 1, the re- flected (AR) and refracted (AF) rays are denoted by db . and ce. When d is reversed, it gives rise to a reflected Fr' \e ray 6? along AI, and a refracted ray be along AG (say), Fig. 1. When ¢ is reversed, it gives rise to of along Al, and ce along AG. Hence be+ce=0, 6? +¢f=1, which agree with (4).

It is here assumed that there is no change of phase in the act of reflexion or refraction, except such as can be represented by a change of sign. Professor Stokes has, however, pushed the applica- tion of his method to the case where changes of phase are admitted, and arrives at the conclusion that 'the sum of the accelerations of phase at the two reflexions is equal to the sum of the accelera- tions at the two refractions, and the accelerations of the two re- fractions are equal to each other." The accelerations are su pposed to be so measured as to give like signs to

¢ and, and unlike to } and ¢. The same relations as before obtain between the factors b, ¢, e, f, expressing the ratios of amplitudes. §

When the third medium differs from the first, the theory of thin plates is more complicated, and need not here be discussed. One particular case, however, may be mentioned. When a thin trans-

*5 *'On the Perfect Blackness of the Central Spot in Newton's Rings, and on the Verification of Fresnel's Formule for the Intensities of Reflected and Refracted Rays," Camb. and Dub. Math. Jour., vol. iv. p. 1, 1849 ; reprint vol. ii, p. 89.*

6 It would appear, however, that these laws cannot be properly applied to the calculation of reflexion from a thin plate, This is sufficiently proved by the fact that the resultant expression for the intensity founded upon them does not vanish with the thickness, The truth is that the method of deducing the aggregate reflexion from the consideration of the successive partial reflexions and refrac- tions is applicable only when the disturbance in the interior of the plate is fully represented by the transverse waves considered in the argument, whereas the occurrence of a change of phase is probably connected with the existence of additional superficial waves (§ 27). The existence of these superficial waves may be ignored when the reflected and refracted waves are to be considered only at distances from the surface exceeding a few wave-lengths, but in the application to thin plates this limitation is violated, If indeed the method of calculating the aggregate reflexion from a thin plate were sound when a change of phase occurs, we could still use the expressions (2) and (3), merely under- standing by 8, ¢, e, f, factors which may be complex ; and the same formal rela- tions (4) would still hold good. These do not agree with those found by Stokes by the method of reversion ; and the discrepancy indicates that, when there are changes of phase, the action of a thin plate cannot be calculated in the usual way.

Intensity of reflected light = ¢?

(7); (8),

Inten- sities,

Zero re- flexion at certain thick- nesses,

Prin- ciple of reversi- bility.

Thin plate in eontaet with a perfeet reflector.

Colours of ancient glass.

Colours of New- ton's scale,

Bands approxi- mately achro- matic,

WAVE

parent film is backed by a perfect reflector, no colours should be visible, all the light being ultimately reflected, whatever the wave length may be. The experiment may be tried witha thin layer of gelatin on a polished silvcr plate. In other cases where a different result is observed, the inference is that either thc metal does not reflect perfectly, or else that the material of which the film is composed is not sufficiently transparent.

Theory and observation alike show that the transmitted colours of a thin plate, ¢.g., a soap film or a layer of air, are very infcrior to those reflected. Specimens of ancient glass, which have under- gone superficial decomposition, on the other hand, somctimes show transmitted colours of remarkable brilliancy. The probable ex- planation, suggested by Brewster, is that we have here to deal not merely with one, but with a series of thin plates of not very different thicknesses. It is evident that with such a series the transmitted colours would be much purcr, and the reflected much brighter, than usual. If the thicknesses are strictly equal, certain wave-lengths must still be absolutely missing in the reflected light ; while on the other hand a constancy of the interval between the plates will in general lead to a special preponderance of light of some other wave-length for which all the component parts as they ultimately emerge are in agreement as to phase.?

All that can be expected from a physical theory is the determina- tion of the composition of the light reflected from or transmitted by a thin plate

in terms of the composition of the incident light. The further question of the chromatic character of the mixturcs thus obtained belongs rather to physiological optics, and cannot be answered without a complete knowledge of the chromatic re- lations of the spectral colours themselves. Experiments upon this subject have been made by various observers, and especially by Max- well,? who has exhibited his results on a colour diagram as used by Newton. A calculation of the colours of thin plates, based upon Maxwell's data, and accompanied by a drawing showing the curve representative of the cntire series up to the fifth order, has recently been published ;3 and to this the reader who desires further infor- mation must be referred, with the remark that the true colours are not seen in the usual manner of operating with a plate of air encloscd between glass surfaces, on account of the contamination with white light reflected at the other surfaces of the glasses. This objection is avoided when a soap film is employed, to the manifest advantage of the darker colours, such as the red of the first order. The colours of Newton's scale are met with also in the light transmitted by a somewhat thin plate of doubly-refracting material, such as mica, the plane of analysis being perpendicular to that of primitive polarization.

The same series of colours occur also in other optical experi- ments, ¢g., at the centre of the illuminated area when light issuing from a point passes through a small round aperture in an otherwise opaque screen (§ 10).

The colours of which we have been speaking are those formed at nearly perpendicular incidence, so that the retardation (reckoned as a distance), viz., 2uécosa', is sensibly independent ofa. This state of things may be greatly departed from when the thin plate is rarcr than its surroundings, and the incidence is such that a' is nearly equal to 90°, for then, in consequence of the powerful dispersion, cosa' may vary greatly as we pass from onc colour to another. Under these circumstances the series of colours entirely alters its character, and the bands (corresponding to a graduated thickness) may even lose their coloration, becoming sensibly black and white through many alternations.4 The general explanation of this remarkable pheno- menon was suggested by Newton, but it does not appcar to have been followed out in accordance with the wave theory.

Let us suppose that plane waves of white light travelling in glass are incident at angle a upon a plate of air, which is bounded again on the other side by glass. If mu be the index of the glass, a' the angle of refraction, then sina'=sina; and the retardation, ex- pressed by the equivalent distance in air, is

2 seca' —w. 2ttana' sina=2t cosa'; and the retardation in phase is 2tcosa'/a, A being as usual the wave- length in air.

The first thing to be noticed is that, when a approaches the critical angle, cosa' becomes as small as we please, and that conse- quently the retardation corresponding to a given thickness is very much less than at perpendicular incidence. Hence the glass surfaces need not be so close as usual.

A second feature is the increased brilliaucy of the light.

1 The analytical investigations and formule given by Stokes for a pile of plates (Proc, Roy. Soc., xi, p. 545, 1860) may be applied to this question, provided that we understand the quantities 7, ¢, 6, yw, &c , to be complex, so as to express the luminous displacement in phase as well as in amplitude, instead of real quantities relating merety to intensities.

2 Maxwell, " Theory of Compound Colours," Phil, Trans., 1860.

3 Edin, Trans., 1887.

4 Newton's Optics, bk. il.; Fox Talbot, Phil. Mag., ix. p. 401, 1886,

THEORY

427

But the peculiarity which most demands attention 18 the lessened influence of a variation in A upon the phase-retardation. A diminution of a of itself increases the retardation of phase, but, since waves of shorter wave-length are more refrangiblc, this effect may be more or less perfectly compensated by the greater obliquity, and consequent diminution in the

value of cose'. We will investi- gate the conditions under which the retardation of phase is stationary in spite of a variation of a.

In order that A-! cosa' may be stationary, we must have

Asin a'da' +cosa'dA=0, where (a being constant) cos a'da' =sina du. Thus

(9),

rv giving a' when the relation between yp and A is known. According to Cauchy's formula, which represents the facts very well throughout most of the visible spectrum, p=A+Baz? . (10),

eae) (11). be If we take, as for Chance's "extra-dense flint," B= '984 × 10-?°, and, as for the soda lines, te A=5'89 × 10-5, we get a' =79° 30'. At this angle of refraction, and with this kind of glass, the retardation of phase is accordingly nearly independent of wave-length, and therefore the bands formed, as the thickness varies, are approxi- mately achromatic. Perfect achromatism would be possible only under a law of dispersion pe=A'— B'd?, If the source of light be distant and very small, the black bands are wonderfully fine and numerous. The experiment is best made (after Newton) with a right-angled prism, whose hypothenusal surface may be brought into approximate contact with a plate of black glass. The bands should be observed with a convex lens, of about 8 inches focus. If the eye be at twice this distance from the prism, and the lens be held midway between, the advantages are combined of a large field and of maximum distinctness.

so that

cot 2a! =

2B ru

If Newton's rings are examined through a prism, some very Effect of remarkable phenomena are exhibited, described in his twenty-fourth a prism.

observation.> “ When the two object-glasses are laid upon one another, so as to make the rings of the colours appear, though with my naked eye I could not discern above eight or nine of those rings, yet by viewing them through a prism I could sce a far greater multi- tude, insomuch that I could number more than forty….. And I believe that the expcriment may be improved to the discovery of far greater numbers. ... . But it was on but one side of these rings, namely, that towards which the refraction was made, which by the refraction was rendered distinct, and the other side became more confused than when viewed with the naked eye… . .

“J have sometimes so laid one object-glass upon the other that to the naked eye they have all over seemed uniformly white, without the least appearance of any of the coloured rings ; and yet by viewing them through a prisin great multitudes of those rings have discovered themselves.”

Newton was evidently much struck with these “so odd circum- stances ;” and he explains the occurrence of the rings at unusual thicknesses as due to the dispersing power of the prism. The blue system being more refracted than the red, it is possible under cer- tain conditions that the nt blue ring may be so much displaced relatively to the corresponding red ring as at one part of the cir- cumference to compensate for the different diameters. A white stripe may thus be formed in a situation where without the prism the mixture of colours would be complete, so far as could be judged by the eye.)

The simplest case that can be considered is when the “ thin plate” is bounded by plane surfaces inclined to one another at a small angle. By drawing back the prism (whose edge is parallel to the intersection of the above-mentioned planes) it will always be possible so to adjust the effective dispersing powcr as to bring the nth bars to coincidence for any two assigned colours, and therefore approximately for the entire spectrum. The formation of the achromatic band, or rather central black band, depends indeed upon the same principles as the fictitious shifting of the centre of a system of Fresnel’s bands when viewed through a prism.

But neither Newton nor, as would appear, any of his successors Condi- has explained why the bands should be more numerous than usual, tion

of and under certain conditions sensibly achromatic for a large num- achro- ber of alternatious. It is evident that, in the particular case of the matism.

wedge-shaped plate above specified, such a result would not occur. The width of the bands for any colour would be proportional to A, as well after the displacement by the prism as before; and the succession of colours formed in white light and the number of perceptible bands would be much as usual.

5 Newton's Optics, See also Place, Pogg. Ann., exiy. p. 504, 1861.

Stokes's prin- ciple.

Plane mirror and lens,

428

The peculiarity to be explained appears to depend upon the cwr- vatwre of the surfaces bounding the plate. or simplicity suppose that the lower surface is plane (y=0), and that the approximate equation of the upper surface is y=a+ ba', a being thus the least distance between the plates, The black of the nt" order for wave- length A occurs when

dnra=a+ be? . a (12); and thus the width (8x) at this place of the band is given by 4A =2d28x sos = KOBE or a r oe Tie dnb. /(YMA~ A) ee

If the glasses be in contact, as is usually supposed in the theory of Newton's rings, a=0, and dxaai, or the width of the band of the nb order varies as the square root of the wave-length, instead of as the first power. Even in this case the overlapping and subse- quent obliteration of the bands is greatly retarded by the use of the prism, but the full development of the phenomenon requires that a should be finite. Let us inquire what is the condition in order that the width of the band of the n order may be stationary, as A varies, By (14) it is necessary that the variation of A?/(4na —@) should vanish. Hence a=4mna, so that the interval between the surfaces at the place where the n*" band is formed should be half due to curvature and half to imperfect contact at the place of closest*

*approach. If this condition be satisfied, the achromatism of the n** band, effected by the prism, carries with it the achromatism of a large number of neighbouring bands, and thus gives rise to the remarkable effects described by Newton.*

§ 9. Newton's Diffusion Rings.

In the fourth part of the second book of his Optics Newton investigates another series of rings, usually (though not very appropriately) known as the colours of thick plates. The funda- mental experiment is as follows. At the centre of curvature of a concave looking-glass, quicksilvered behind, is pet an opaque card, perforated by a small hole through which sunlight is admitted. The main body of the light returns through the aperture ; but a series of concentric rings are seen upon the card, the formation of which was proved by Newton to require the co-operation of the two surfaces of the mirror. Thus the diameters of the rings depend upon the thickness of the glass, and none are formed when the glass is replaced by a metallic speculum. The brillianey of the rings depends upon imperfect polish of the anterior surface of the glass, and may be augmented by a coat of diluted milk, a device used by the Duc de Chaulnes. The rings may also be well observed without a screen in the manner recommended by Stokes. For this purpose all that is required is to place a small flame at the centre of curvature of the prepared glass, so as to concide with its image. The rings are then seen surrounding the flame and occupying a definite position in space.

The explanation of the rings, suggested by Young, and developed by Herschel, refers them to interference between one portion of light scattered or diffracted by a particle of dust, and then regularly refracted and reflected, and another portion first regularly refracted and reflected and then diffracted at emergence by the same particle. It has been shown by Stokes! that no regular inter- ference is to be expected between portions of light diffracted by different particles of dust,

_ In the memoir of Stokes will be found a very complete discus- sion of the whole subject, and to this the reader must be referred who desires a fuller knowledge. Our limits will not allow us to do more than touch upon one or two points. The condition of fixity of the rings when observed in

air, and of distinctness when a screen is used, is that the systems due to all parts of the diffusing surface should concide; and it is fulfilled only when, as in Newton's experiments, the source and screen are in the plane passing through the centre of curvature of the glass.

'As the simplest for actual calculation, we will consider a little further the case where the glass is plane and parallel, of thickness ¢t and index y, and is supp! marital by a lens at whose focus the source of light is placed. This lens acts both as collimator and as object-glass, so that the combination of lens and plane mirror replaces the concave mirror of Newton's experiment. The retardation is caleu- lated in the same way as for thin plates. In fig. 2 the diffracting particle is situated at B, and we have to find the relative retardation of the two rays which emerge finally at inclina- tion 6, the one diffracted at emergence following the path ABDBIE, and the other diffracted at entrance and following the path ABFGH. The retardation of the former from B to I is 2u¢+BI, and of the latter from B to the equivalent place Gis 2uBF. Now FB=tsecé', ¢' being the angle

Fig. 2.

1 Camb. Trans., ix. p. 147, 1851.

WAVE THEORY

of refraction ; BI=2¢tané'sin@ ; so that the relative rctardation R is given by R=2ut{1+u-1tan & sin 0 —sec 6'} =2ut(1 —cos 6'). If 6,6' be small, we may take mee tO is te i eu et ao as sufficiently approximate.

The condition of distinctness is here satisfied, since R is the same for every ray emergent parallel to a given one. The rays of one parallel system are collected by the lens to a focus at a definite point in the neighbourhood of the original source.

The formula (1) was discussed by Herschel, and shown to aerce with Newton's measures. The law of formation of the rings follows immediately from the expression for the retardation, the radius of the ring

of n‘ order being proportional to m and to the square root of the wave-length.*

§ 10. Huygens’s Principle. Theory of Shadows,

The objection most frequently brought against the undulatory theory in its infancy was the difficulty of explaining in accordance with it the existence of shadows. Thanks to Fresnel and his fol- lowers, this department of optics is now precisely the one in which the theory has secured its greatest triumphs.

The principle employed in these investigations is due to Huygens, Hyy- Pp. ploy keen age ys ry: e origin of waves an gens’s

and may be thus formulated. If roun ideal closed surface be drawn, the whole action of the waves in the region beyond may be regarded as due to the motion continually propagated across the various elements of this surface. The wave motion due to any element of the surface is called a secondary wave, and in estimating the total effect regard must be paid to the phases as well as the amplitudes of the components. It is usually convenient to choose as the surface of resolution a wave-front, 4.¢., a surface at which the primary vibrations are in one phase.

Any obscurity that may hang over Huygens’s principle is due mainly to the indefiniteness of thought and expression which we must be content to put up with if we wish to avoid pledging our- selves as to the character of the vibrations. In the gpa to sound, where we know what we are dealing with, the matter is simple enough in principle, although mathematical difficulties would often stand in the way of the calculations we might wish to make. The ideal surface of resolution may be there regarded as a flexible lamina; and we know that, if by forces locally applied every element of the lamina be made to move normally to itself exactly as the air at that place does, the external aerial motion is fully determined. By the principle of superposition the whole effect may be found by integration of the partial effects due to each ele- ment of the surface, the other elements remaining at rest.

We will now consider in detail the important case in which Plane uniform plane waves are resolved at a surface coincident with a primary wave-front (OQ). We imagine the wave-front divided into clement- wave. ary rings or zones, called Huygens's zones, by spheres described Huy-

round P(the point at which the aggregate effect is to be estimated), the first sphere, touching the plane at O, with a radius equal to PO, and the succeeding spheres with radii increasing at each step by 4a. There are thus marked out a series of circles, whose radii # are given by a +7°= (r+4ma)', or 22=nar nearly; so that the rings are at first of nearly equal area. Now the effect upon P of each element of 7| /P the plane is proportional to its area; but it depends

also upon the distance from P, and possibly upon b the inclination of the secondary ray to the direc- Fig. 8 tion of vibration and to the wave-front. These ce questions will be further considered in connexion with the dyna-mical theory; but under all ordinary circumstances the result is independent of the precise answer that may be given. All that it is necessary to assume is that the effects of the successive zones gradually diminish, whether from the increasing obliquity of the secondary ray or because (on account of the limitation of the region of integration) the zones become at last more and more incomplete. The component vibrations at P due to the successive zones are thus nearly equal in amplitude and opposite in pee (the r= of each corresponding to that of the infinitesimal circle midway between the boundaries), and the series which we have to sum is one in which the terms are alternately opposite in sign and, while at first nearly constant in numerical magnitude, gradually diminish to zero. In such aseries cach term may be regarded as very nearly indeed destroyed by the halves of its immediate neighbours, and thus the sum of the whole series is represented by half the first term, which stands over uncompensated. The question is thus reduced to that of finding the effect of the first zone, or central circle, of which the area is rar.

We have seen that the problem before us is independent of the law of the secondary wave as regards obliquity; but the result of the integration necessarily involves the law of the intensity and phase of a secondary

wave as a function of 7, the distance from the origin. And we may in fact, as was done by A. Smith,? determine

ox

2 Camb. Math. Jour., iii. p, 46, 1843,

+ zones,

Initial phase of second- ary waves.

Faetor for seeond- ary wave.

Analy- tical

investi- gation.

Primary wave eurved,

WAVE THEORY

the law of the secondary wave, by comparing the result of the integration with that obtained by supposing the primary wave to pass on to P without resolution.

Now as to the phase of the secondary wave, it might appear natural to suppose that it starts from any point Q with the phase of the primary wave, so that on arrival at P it is retarded by the amount corresponding toQP. Buta little consideration will prove that in that ease the series of secondary waves could not reconstitute the primary wave. For the aggregate effect of the secondary waves is the half of that of the first Huygens zone, and it is the central element only of that zone for which the distance to be travelled is equal to vr, Let us conceive the zone in question to be divided into infinitesimal rings of equal area. The effects due to each of these rings are equal in amplitude and of phase ranging uniformly over half a complete period. The phase of the resultant is midway between those of the extreme elements, that is to say, a quarter of a period behind that due to the element at the centre of the circle. It is accordingly necessary to suppose that the secondary waves start with a

phase one-quarter of a period in advance of that of the primary wave at the surface of resolution.

Further, it is evident that account must be taken of the variation of phase in estimating the magnitude of the effect at P of the first zone. The middle element alone contributes without deduction ; the effect of every other must be found by introduction of a resolv- ing factor, equal to cosé, if @ represent the difference of phase between this element and the resultant. Accordingly, the ampli- tude of the resultant will be less than if all its components had the same phase, in the ratio

+40

a cos0d0:7,

or 2:r. Now 2area/r=2ar; so that, in order to reconcile the amplitude of the primary wave (taken as unity) with the half effect of the first zone, the amplitude, at distance 7, of the secondarv wave emitted from the element of area dS must be taken to be

rare ry

ar (1).

By this expression, in conjunction with the quarter-period accelera- tion of phase, the law of the secondary wave is determined.

That the amplitude of the secondary wave should vary as r~} was to be expected from considerations respecting energy; but the occurrence of the factor a-1, and the acceleration of phase, have sometimes been regarded as mysterious. It may be well therefore to remember that precisely these laws apply to a secondary wave of sound, which can be investigated upon the strictest mechanical principles.

The recomposition of the secondary waves may also be treated analytically. If the primary wave at O be cos xaé, the effect of the secondary wave proceeding from the element dS at Q is

ie = cos K(at — p+4a)= —- = sin «(at —p).

If dS=2nxdzx, we have for the whole effect

a= K({at — p)xdx

ASO Pp or, since xdxz=pdp, n=2n/A,

- xf, sin k(at — p)dp= [— cos x(at— e) |r :

In order to obtain the effect of the primary wave, as retarded by traversing the distance 7, Viz., cos « (at—r), it is necessary to suppose that the integrated term vanishes at the upper limit. And itis important to notice that without some further understanding the integral is really ambiguous. According to the assumed law of the secondary wave, the result must actually depend upon the precise radius of the outer boundary of the region of integration, supposed to be exactly circular. This case is, however, at most very special and exceptional. We may usually suppose that a large number of the outer rings are incomplete, so that the in- tegrated term at the upper limit may properly be taken to vanish. If a formal proof be desired, it may be obtained by introducing into the intcgral a factor such as e¢~”?,in which A is ultimately made to diminish without limit.

When the primary wave is plaue, the area of the first Huygens zone is rar, and, since the secondary waves vary as 7~!, the intensity is independent ofr, as of courseit shouldbe. If, however, the prim- ary wave be spherical, and of radius a at the wave-front of resolu- tion, then we know that at a distance 7 further on the amplitude of the primary wave will be diminished in the ratio a:(r+a). This may be regarded as a consequence of the altered area of the first Huygens zone. For, if x be its radius, we have

{(rttaPe—-2}t+/{e-e}=arta, so that fe Pen csill nearly. a+r

Since the distance to be travelled by the secondary waves is still 7, we see how the effect of the first zone, and therefore of the whole series is proportional to a/(a@+7r). In like manner may be

treated other cases, such as that of a primary wave-front of un- equal principal curvatures.

The general explanation of the formation of shadows may also be conveniently based upon Huygens's zones. If the point under consideration be so far away from the geometrical shadow that a large number of the earlier zones are complete, then the illumina- tion, determincd sensibly by the first zone, is the same as if there were no obstruction at all. If, on the other hand, the point be well immersed in the geometrical shadow, the earlicr zones are alto- gether missing, and, instead of a serics of terms beginning with finite numerical magnitude and gradually diminishing to zero, we have now to deal with one of which the terms diminish to zero at both ends. The suin of such a series is very approximately zero, each term being neutralized by the halves of its immediate neigh- bours, which are of the opposite sign. The question of light or darkness then depends upon whether the series begins or cnds abruptly. With few exceptions, abruptness ean occur only in the presence of the first term, viz., when the secondary wave of least retardation is unobstructed, or when a ray passes throngh the point under consideration. According to the undulatory theory the light cannot be regarded strictly as travelling along a ray ; but the existence of an unobstructed ray implies that the system of Huygens's zones can be commenced, and, if a large number of these zones are fully developed and do not terminate abruptly, the illumination is unaffected by the neighbourhood of obstacles. Intermediate cases in which a few zones only are formed belong especially to the province of diffraction.

Shadows.

An interesting exception to the geueral rule that full brightness Poisson's requires the existence of the first zone occurs when the obstacle problem.

assumes the form of a small circular disk parallel to the plane of the incident waves. In the earlier half of the 18th century? Delisle found that the centre of the circular shadow was occupied by a bright point of light, but the observation passed into oblivion until Poisson brought forward as

an objection to Fresnel's theory that it required at the centre of a circular shadow a point as bright as if no obstacle were intervening. If we conceive the primary wave to be broken up at the plane of the disk, asystem of Huygens's zones can be constructed which begin from the circumfercnce; and the first zone external to the disk plays the part ordinarily taken by the centre of the entire system. The whole effect is the half of that of the first existing zone, and this is sensibly the same as if there were no obstruction.

When light passes through a small circular or annular aperture, the illumination at any point along the axis depends upon the precise relation between the aperture and the distance from it at which the point is taken. If, as in the last paragraph, we imagine a system of zones to be drawn commencing from the inner circular boundary of the aperture, the question turns upon the manner in which the series terminates at the outer boundary. If the aperture be such as to fit exactly an integral number of zones, the aggregate effect may be regarded as the half of those due to the first and last zones. Ifthe number of zones be even, the action of the first and last zones are antagonistic, and there is complete darkness at the point. If on the other hand the number of zones be odd, the effects con- spire; and the illumination (proportional to the square of the ampli- tude) is four times as great as if there were no obstruction at all.

The process of augmenting the resultant illumination at a particular point by stopping some of the seeondary rays may be carried much furthcr.? By the aid of photography it is easy to prepare a plate, transparent where the zones of odd order fall, and opaque where those of even order fall. Such a plate has the power of a condensing lens, and gives an illumination out of all propor- tion to what could be obtained without it. An even greater eficct (fourfold) would be attained if it were possible to provide that the stoppage of the light from the alternate zones were replaced by a phase-reversal without loss of amplitude.

In such experiments the narrowness of the zones renders necessary a pretty close approximation to the geometrical conditions. Thus in the case of the circular disk, equidistant ® from the source of light and from the

scrcen upon which the shadow is observed, the width of the first exterior zone is given by

a(2r) cea)'

2x being the diameter of the disk. If2r=1000 cm., 2e—1cm., ~a=6×10-5cm., then dz='0015 cm. Hence, in order that this zone may be perfectly formed, there should be no error in the cir- cumference of the order of '001 cm.3 The cxperiment succeeds in a dark room of the length above mentioned, with a threepenny bit (supported by three threads) as obstacle, the origin of light being a small needle hole in a plate of tin, through which the sun's rays shine horizontally after reflexion from an external mirror. In the absence of a heliostat it is more convenient to obtain a point of light with the aid of a lens of short foeus.

1 Verdet, Lecons d' Optique Physique, i. § 66. 2 Soret, Pogg. Ann., elvi. p. 99, 1875. 3 It is easy to see that the radius of the bright spot is of the same order of magnitude.

Cireular or annular aperture,

Soret's experi- ment.

Degree of aecuraey required.

Analyti- cal ex- pression.

Uncer- tainty in the ap- plication of Huy- gens's principle.

iixpres- sion for intensity.

Theorems of Bridge.

430

The amplitude of the light at any point in the axis, when plane waves are incident perpendicularly upon an annular aperture, is, as above,

cos x(at — 7,) — cos k(at — 1.) =2sin kat. sink(7,—7,), T, 7, being the distances of the outer and inner boundaries from the point in question. It is scarcely necessary to remark that in all such cases the calculation applies in the first instance to homo- geneous light, and that, in accordance with Fourier's theorem, each homogeneous component of a mixture may be treated separ- ately. When the original light is white, the presence of some components and the absence of others will usually give rise to coloured effects, variable with the precise circumstances of the case.

Although what we have to say upon the subject is better post- poned until we consider the dynamical theory, it is proper to point out at once that there is an element of assumption in the appli- cation of Huygens's principle to the calculation of the effects pro- duced by opaque screens of limited extent. Properly applied, the principle could not fail ; but, as may readily be proved in the case of sonorous waves, it is not in strictness sufficient to assume the expression for a secondary wave suitable when the primary wave is undisturbed, with mere limitation of the integration to the transparent parts of the screen. But, except perhaps in the case of very fine gratings, it is probable that the error thus caused is insignificant ; for the incorrect estimation of the secondary wavcs will be limited to distances of a few wave-lengths only from the boundary of opaque and transparent parts.

§ 11. Fraunhofer's Diffraction Phenomena.

A very general problem in diffraction is the investigation of the distribution of light over a screen upon which inipinge divergent or convergent sphcrical waves after passage through various diffracting apertures. When the waves are convergent and the recipient screen is placed so as to contain the centre of convergency—the image of the original radiant point, the calcu- lation assumes a less complicated form. This class of phenomena was investigated by Fraunhofer (upon principles laid down by Fresnel), and are sometimes called after his name. iz We may conveniently commence with them on account of their simplicity and great importance in respect to the theory of optical instruments.

If f be the radius of the spherical wave at the place of resolution, where the vibration is repre- y sented by cos xat, then at any point M (fig. 4) in

Fig. 4.

the recipient screen the vibration due to an element dS of the wave-front is (§ 9)

-& sin x(at—p) ,

p being the distance between M and the element dS.

Taking coordinates in the plane of the screen with the centre of the wave as origin, let us represent M by é, y, and P (where dS is situated) by x, y, 2 Then

pi=(x- EPH (yn P+2, faat+y2ter; so that pr =f? — Qxk — Quy + 2+ a? In the applications with which we are concerned, &, 7 are very small quantities ; and we may take we +

pays l= ow . At the same time dS may be identified with dad) , and in the de- nominator p may be treated as constant and equal to 7. Thus the expression for the vibration at M becomes

1 :

sy; [friar at- pe BE away ay: and for the intensity, represented by the square of the amplitude,

Pesral [fin away | tal_f/e0s Mandy)". ee

This expression for the intensity becomes rigorously applicable when / is indefinitely great, so that ordinary optical aberration disappears. The incident waves are thus plane, and are limited to a plane aperture coincident with a wave-front. The integrals are then properly functions of the direction in which the light is to be estimated.

{n experiment under ordinary circumstances it makes no differ- ence whether the collecting lens is in front of or behind the diffract- ing

aperture. It is usually most convenient to employ a telescope focused upon the radiant point, and to place the diffracting aper- tures immediately in front of the object-glass. What is seen through the eye-piece in any case is the same as would be depicted upon a screen in the focal plane.

Before proceeding to special cases it may be well to call attention to some gencral properties of the solution expressed by (2).4

1 Bridge, Phil. Mag., Nov. 1858.

WAVE THHORY

If, when the aperture is given, the wave-length (proportional to «~1) varies, the composition of the integrals is unaltered, provided ~ and 7 are taken universely proportional to a. A diminution of A thus leads to a simple proportional shrinkage of the diffraction pattern, attended by an augmentation of brilliancy in proportion TOA 2. ;

If the wave-length remains unchanged, similar effects are pro- duced by an increase in the scale of the aperture. The linear dimension of the diffraction pattcrn is inversely as that of the aperture, and the brightness at corresponding points is as the square of the arca of aperture.

If the aperture and wave-length increase in the same proportion, the size and shape of the diffraction pattern undergo no change.

We will now apply the integrals (2) to the case of a rectangular Rect- aperture of width @ parallel to « and of width 6 parallel to y. angular The limits of integration for z may thus be taken to be —4a and aperture.

+4a, and for y tobe —40,+36. We readily find (with substitution

for « of 2a/a ae me eu ab? nen "= a ar > a (3), fn : frre

as represcnting the distribution of light in the image of a mathematical point when the aperture is rectangular, as is often the case in spectroscopes.

The second and third factors of (3) being each of the form sin2u/2?2, we have to examine the character of this function. It vanishcs

when %=mn, m being any whole number other than zero. When w=0, it takes the value unity. The maxima occur when w=tanw,. (4),

and then sin 2x/u? =cos 21 (5). To calculate the roots of (5) we may assume u=(m+h)r-—y=U -y,

where y is a positive quantity which is small when w is large Substituting this, we find cot y=U — y, whence

1 y,¥ ye _ 2? y=q(1tg+ gt oe .) -— ae

This equation is to be solved by successive approximation. It will readily be found that

2 13 146

U-U gU iZU ios U ; (8)

In the first quadrant there is no root after zero, since tau u>w, and in the second quadrant there is none because the signs of w and tan ware opposite. The first root after zero is thus in the third quadrant, corresponding to m=1. Even in this case the series converges sufficiently to give the value of the root with considcrable accuracy, while for higher values of m it is all that could be desired. The actual values of u/m (calculated in another manner by Schwerd) are 1°4403, 2°4590, 3°4709, 4°4747, 5°4818, 6°4844, &c.

Since the maxima occur when u=(m+4)m nearly, the successive values are not very different from

4 4 4

mi'? Doak? dgqa? &

The application of these results to (3) shows that the field is Diffrac- brightest at the centre £=0,y=0, viz., at the geometrical image. tion

It is traversed by dark lines whose equations are

t=mfala, n=mfald. Within the rectangle formed by pairs of consecutive dark lines, and not far from its centre, the brightness rises to a maximum ; but these subsequent maxima are in all cases much inferior to the brightness at the centre of the entire pattern (¢=0,7=0).

pattern.

By the principle of energy the illumination over the entire foca] Total plane must be equal to that over the diffracting area ; and thus, in illumin-

accordance with the suppositions by which (3) was obtained, its ation.

value when integrated from = — o to =+ o, and from y= — to »=-+0 should be equal to ad, This integration, employed originally by Kelland? to determine the absolute intensity of a secondary wave, may be at once effected by means of the known

formula g Fin 2 + du = – oO Uu oO

It will be obscrved that, while the total intensity is proportional to ab, the intensity at the focal point is proportional to b%. If the aperture be increased, not only is the total brightness over the focal plane increased with it, but there is also a concentration of the diffraction pattern. The form of (3) shows immediatcly that, if a and b be altered, the coordinates of any characteristic poiut in the pattern vary as a-1 and 0-1,

The contraction of the diffraction pattern with increase of aperture is of fundamental importance with reference to the resolving power of optical instruments. According to common optics, where images are absolute, the diffraction pattern is sup-

2 Ed. Trans., xv. 315,

Os sin &

U=T.

Diffusion of images due to finite wave- length.

WAVE THEORY

posed to be infinitely small, and two radiant points, however near together, form separated images. This is tantamount to an assumption that a is infinitely small. The actual finiteness of A imposes a limit upon the separating or resolving power of an optical instrument.

This indefiniteness of images is sometimes said to be due to diffraction by the edge of the aperture, and proposals have even been made for curing it by causing the transition between the interrupted and transmitted parts of the primary wave to be less abrupt. Such a view of the matter is altogethcr misleading. What requires explanation is not the imperfection of actual images so much as the possibility of their being as good as we find them.

At the focal point (§=0,y7=0) all the secondary waves agree in phase, and the intensity is easily expressed, whatever be the form of the aperture. From the general formula (2), if A be the arca

of aperture, I,?=A2/a7f? . em @ (7).

The formation of a sharp imago of the radiant point requires that the illumination become insignificant when é, 7 attain small values, and this insignificance can only arise as a consequence of discrepancies of phase among the secondary waves from various parts of the aperture. So long as there is no sensible discrepancy of phase there can be no sensible diminution of brightness as compared with that to be found at the focal point itself. We may go further, and lay it down that there can be no considerable loss of brightness until the difference of phase of the waves pro- ceeding from the nearest and furthest parts of the aperture amounts to 4A.

When the difference of phase amounts to A, we may expect the resultant illumination to be very much reduced. In the par- ticular case of a rectangular aperture the course of things can be readily followed, especially if we conceive f to be infinite. In the direction (suppose horizontal) for which »=0, é/f=sin@, the phases of the secondary waves range over a complete period when sin?=A/a, and, since all parts of the horizontal aperture are equally effective, there is in this direction a complete compensation and consequent absence of illumination. When sin@=#aA/a, the phases range one and a half periods, and there is revival of illu- mination. We may compare the brightness with that in the direc- tion @=0. The phase of the resultant amplitude is the same as that due to the central secondary wave, and the discrepancies of phase among the components reduce the amplitude in the proportion

, 2

maximum at 6=0. In like manner we may find the illumination in any other direction, and it is obvious that it vanishes when sin 6 is any multiple of A/a.

The reason of the augmentation of resolving power with aper- ture will now be evident. The larger the aperture the smaller are the angles through which it is necessary to deviate from the principal direction in order to bring in specified discrepancies of phase—the more concentrated is the image.

4

1; so that thé brightness in this direction is 9,2 of the

431

to his instrument would recognize the duplicity with certainty. The obliquity, corresponding to w=7, is such that the phases of the secondary waves range over a complete period, 7.¢., such that the projection of the horizontal aperture upon this direction is one wave-length. We conclude that a@ double line cannot be fairly resolved unless its components sub- tend an angle exceeding that sub- tended by the wave-length. of light at a distance equal to the horizontat aperture. This rule is convenient on account of its simplicity ; and it is sufficiently accurate in view of the necessary uncertainty as to what exactly is meant by resolu- tion.

On the expe- rimental eonfir-

0 # mation of the

Fig. 5. theory of the by ae power of rectangular apertures, sce Optics, vol. xvii. p. 807.

If the angular interval between the components of a double line be half as great again as that supposed in the figure, the brightness midway between is ‘1802 as against 1°0450 at the central lines of each image. Such a falling off in the middle must be more than sufficient for resolution. If the angle subtended by the components of a double line be twice that subtended by the wave-length at a distance equal to the horizontal aperture, the central bands are just clear of one another, and there isa line of absolute blackness in the middle of the combined images.

E ros,

~, ~. ~. 2

~ a et) nl

Since the limitation of the width of the central band in the Central image of a luminous line depends upon discrepancies of phase stops.

among the secondary waves, and since the discrepancy is greatest for the waves which come from the edges of the aperturc, the ques- tion arises how far the operation of the central parts of the aperture is advantageous. If we imagine the aperture reduced to two equal narrow slits bordering its edges, compensation will evidently be complete when the projection on an oblique dircction is equal to $A, Instead of A as for the complete aperture. By this procedure the width of the central band in the diffraction pattern is halved, and so far an advantage is attained. But, as will be evident, the bright bands bordering the central band are now not inferior to it in brightness ; in fact, a band similar to the central band is repro- duced an indefinite number of times, so long as there is no sensible discrepancy of phase in the secondary waves proceeding from the various parts of the same slit. Under these circumstances the narrowing of the band is paid for at a ruinous price, and the arrangement must be condemned altogether.

A more moderate suppression of the central parts is, however, sometimes advantageous. Thcory and experiment alike prove that a double line, of which the components are equally strong, is better resolved when, for example, one-sixth of the horizontal

Lumin- In many cases the subject of examination is a luminous line of : ‘ : ous line, uniform intensity, the various points of which are to bo treated as | SPof™ be clowed tg pass, while othorea Httle further removed hae ama ie aan big be ie = – Giffen – Le ae ed cae are blocked off. Stops, each occupying one-eighth of the width, ks tee y at any point ¢, y of the omen patiern May Ye | and with centres situated at the points of trisection, answer well P y +g Wak the required purpose. ue = 3 a% eva It has already been suggested that the principle of cnergy Total 3 1°dy = Mf wate? (8), requires that the general expression for I? in (2) when integrated intensity 5 over the whole of the plane ¢, 7 should be equal to A, where A propor- i is the area of the aperture. A general analytical verification has tional to the same law as obtains for a luminous point when horizontal | becn given by Stokes! The expression for J? may be

written in aperture. ery are alone considered. The definition of a fine vertical | the form ine, and consequently the resolving power for contiguous vertical 1 K ? ; lines, is thus independent of the vertical aperture of the instrument, cae erz) Wik cos 7 E(a' ~ 2) +n(y'-y) dady da dy'. (9), a law of great importance in the theory of the spectroscope. ; : : ! . Hos distribution of illumination in the image of a luminous line fas ey ot – = ete miedo gy pee _ io, is shown by the curve ABC (fig. 5), representing the value of the ? oe : oe oer function sin?x/u? from w=0 to u=2n. The part corresponding to Pee Be rae ae ated again. with respect to &, 9 over the negative values of u« is similar, OA being a line of symmetry. : A cache : : Double Let us now consider the distribution of brightness in the image In oes by order of ie, ohh = Len line, of a double line whose components are of equal strength, and at | T°SP°Ct %° me We ESE, TA Ss RY guys

such an angular interval that the central line in the image of one coincides with the first zero of brightness in the image of the other. In fig. 5 the curve of brightness for one component is ABO, and for the other OA'C'; and the curve representing half the combined brightnesses is E'BE. The brightness (corresponding to B) mid- way between the two central points AA' is '8106 of the brightness at the central points themselves. We may consider this to be about the limit of closencss at which there could be any decided appearance of resolution, though doubtless an observer accustomed

duce under the integral sign the factor etsFhn, the + or being chosen so as to make the elements of the integral vanish at infinity. After the operations have been performed, a and £ are to be supposed to vanish.

Thus //T°dédy= Limit of

Giff erPreos % { et ~n)+nly ~w) } dndydetdy/ dean

1 Ed. Trans., xx. p. 317, 1853.

+00 mee now a ee 'eee H)dt= 2a cos H

*2 athe ? and thus //** Idt dn= Limit of*

2 a 4aB daedy dax' dy' SPL ap OEY Se TPT oe —— ae a au, dat = au.

(a! =) _

a

The limits for wu are ultimately — oo and +00, and we have

ae: 2a da! a ft ae ye me nerccoon Beas, -2 f/f i

ene

Let

In like manner the integration for y' may be performed; and we

*find Sf*2 Vdtdn= ff dedy=A (10).*

We saw that I> (the intensity at the focal point) was equal to A?/.27?, If A' be the arca over which the intensity must be IG in order to give the actual total intensity in accordance with

AT P= [[TPP dtdn, the relation between A and A' is AA'=A2f?2, Since A' is in some sense the area of the diffraction pattern, it may be considered to be a rough criterion of the definition, and we infer that the definition of a point depends principally upon the area of the aperture, and only in a very secondary degree upon the shape when the arca is maintained constant. §12. Theory of Circular Aperture.

We will now consider the important case where the form of the aperture is circular. Writing for brevity .

nt /f=p, HE SG ee we i);

we have for the general expression (§ 11) of the intensity A2f2= 924.02, , (2), where S= //sin(px+qy) dedy, . (8), C= ff cos (pu+gqy) dedy, . (4).

When, as in the application to rectangular or circular apertures, the form is symmetrical with respect to the axes both of x and ¢ ; S=0, and C reduces to

C= f/f cospxcosqydxdy, . » 6), In the case of the circular aperture the distribution of light is of course symmetrical with respect to the focal point p=0, g=0; and C is a function of p and g only through A/(p?+¢”). It is thus sufficient to determine the intensity along the axis of p. Putting q=0, we get

C= ff cos pe dx dy=2 “cos pe A/(R? — 2%) da,

R being the radius of the aperture. This integral is the Bessel’s function of order unity, defined by

J (2) == [00s (zcos¢) sin¢d¢ . (6). Thus, if z=Reos¢,*

C=7R? re GA)

and the illumination at distance ry from the focal point is

4J ( ) pao ee) (8) ez =a” (e ‘ (i)

The ascending series for J,(z), used by Airy? in his original inves- tigation of the diffraction of a circular object-glass, and readily obtained from (6), is B # ae ral hO->~ site ee weet + + 9). When z is great, we may employ the semi-convergent series

es oe Bacay 35. IN? Os a/(&)sine-40)} Saree) 8.7 oie 5/1

5 NG, Bs BY z

2 yeas 1 0355. 7.1.37 08

+ J (gone ae z 8.16.94 @ See Owl 1 WB ANS

8.16.24. 32. 40 z a (10).

llIt is casy to show that this conclusion is not disturbed by the introduction at every point of an arbitrary retardation p, a function of x,y. The terms (p'—p) are then to be added under the cosine in (9); but they are ultimately without cffect, since the only elements which contribute are those for which in the limit z'=2, y'=y, and therefore p'=p.

2"On the Diffraction of an Object-Glass with Circular Aperture," Camb. Trans., 1834, –

Tod

WAVE THEORY

A table of the values of 22-1J,(z) has been given by Lommel,? to whom is due the first systematic application of Bessel's functions to the diffraction integrals,

The illumination vanishes in correspondence with the roots of the equation J,(z)=0. If these be called 2, 2, %, . . . the radii of the dark rings in the diffraction pattern are

*Sry Pre 2aR' QR'? * * * being thus inversely proportional to R.*

The integrations may also be effected by means of polar co- ordinates, taking first the integration with respect to ¢ so as to obtain the result for an infinitely thin annular aperture. Thus, if

L=pcos gh, y=psing, C= Sf cos px da dy= S Jy" cos (pp cos 6) pdp de. Now by definition*

ies gp Re Same ["cos (2 cos@) d0=1 ~ 55+ a9 —a5— on 4agat ao (liye

The value of C for an annular aperture of radius 7 and width dr is thus

AC = 25 q(pp)p dp, . For the complete circle,

2 pR Cn © Sle)ede

(12).

_2n oR? pA pPRo 7 pile .4°R..e °°: =m? 25,(PR) |

pk

as before.

In these expressions we are to replace p by Ké/f, or rather, since the diffraction pattern is symmetrical, by kr/7f, where r is the dis- tance of any point in the focal plane from the centre of the system.

The roots of J,(z) after the first may be found from

4 050661 053041 -262051

ces = Pesci 200! 13),

- = ey Gere GET 3) and those of J,(z) from

2 “151982 -015399 -245835

& gg egg — 151988 — a 14

ee are rane? EL oe

formule derived by Stokes from the descending series.5 The following table gives the actual values:—*

2 z 2 g i | =forJTo(2)=0 —forJ,@)=0 || ¢ = for Jo(e)=0 = for J,(z)=0 1 7655 1°2197 6 5°7522 6°2439 2 Te goral 2°2330 7 6°7519 7‘2448 3 2°7546 3°2383 3 7°7516 8°2454 4 Bh7iee! 4°2411 9 8°7514 9°2459 5 4°7527 5°2428 10 9°7513 10°2463

In both cases the image of a mathematical point is thus a sym- metrical ring system. The greatest brightness is at the centre, where adC=2rpdp, C=nR?,

For a certain distance outwards this remains sensibly unimpaired, and then gradually diminishes to zero, as the secondary waves become discrepant in phase. The subsequent revivals of bright- ness forming the

bright rings are necessarily of inferior brilliancy as compared with the central disk.

The first dark ring in the diffraction pattern of the complete circular aperture occurs when

rif = 1:2197 xa/2k . (15). We may compare this with the corresponding result for a rect- angular aperture of width a, Elf ala;

and it appears that in consequence of the preponderance of the central parts, the compensation in the case of the circle does not set in at so small an obliquity as when the circle is replaced by a rectangular aperture, whose side is equal to the diameter of the circle.

Again, if we compare the complete circle with a narrow annular aperture of the same radius, we see that in the latter case the first dark ring occurs at a much smaller obliquity, viz.,

rf = °7655 x A/2R.

It has been found by Herschel and others that the definition of Central a telescope is often improved by stopping off a part of the central stop.

area of the object-glass; but the advantage to be obtained:in this way is in no case great, and anything like a reduction of the aper- ture to a narrow annulus is attended by a development of the

3 Schlémtich, xv. p. 166, 1870. 4 Camb. Trans., vol. ix., 1850. 5 The descending series for Jo(z) appears to have been first given by Sir W. Hamilton in a memoir on " Fluctuating Functions," Roy, Jrish Trans., 1840.

ayer PTHEOR Y

external luminous rings sufficient to outweigh any improvement due to the diminished diameter of the central area.?

The maximum brightnesses and the places at which they occur are easily dctermined with the aid of certain properties of the Bessel's functions. It

is known? that

Jo (z)= -Jy(z), Tale) =— Ty(e) ~ Hye)

Maxi- mum of bright- ness,

(16); (17);

Je(2) +Io(2) == Jy) (18),

The maxima of C occur when (hE) _ HE) 10) _ o, a ? GaN 2 2 Z or by (17) when J,(z)=0.

determined,

When z has one of the values thus

® B Jx(2) = Jo(2).

The accompanying table is given by Lommel,® in which the first column gives the roots of J,(z)=0, ; ————___—__,-___- and the second and third columns z the corresponding values of the |~ -og9999_ functions specified. It appears | 5-135630 that the maximum brightness in | 8°417236 the first ring is only about +; of A es the brightness at the centre. 17959820

Nie will now investigate tho! ! _____/ total illumination distributed over the area of the circle of radius r. We have

22-1J\(z) | 42-23)2(2)

1000000 017498 004158 001601 000779 000437

-++1:000000

*— *182279 + °064482 — 040008*

++ +027919

*— *020905 – Inte- grated intensity. mR4 4J,°(2)*

P= Pt id : ae

(19),

where 2=QrRr/af. (20).

Thus

rw 2

On RE zdz—rR?, 2

Om af oe Now by (17), (18)

2-1J,2(z) dz.

2.1J\(2)=Jo(z) -Jy'(z); so that

d d 2-1Ji%(2)= -—4 Goo ®) = 47,01 ? and 2 v,. 2-1J,(2) dz=1-J,2(2) — Jy2(2) . (21).

*If 7, or z, be infinite, J9(z), J,(z) vanish, and the whole illumination is expressed by 7R%, in accordance with the general principle. In any case the proportion of the whole illumination to be found out- side the circle of radius 7 is given by * J ?(2) +572). For the dark rings J,(z)=0; so that the fraction of illumination outside any dark ring is simply J,. Thus for the first, second, third, and fourth dark rings we get respectively 161, '090, ~~062, '047, showing that more than ths of the whole light is concen~~ trated within the area of the second dark ring. When z is grcat, the descending series (10) gives*

a) = 2 /(Z)sme-¥) é

so that the places of maxima and minima occur at equal intervals. The mean brightness varies as z~° (or as r~8), and the integral found by multiplying it by zdz and integrating between 0 and converges. It may be

instructive to contrast this with the case of an in- finitely narrow annular aperture, where the brightness is propor- tional to J,(z). When z is great,*

Jo(z) = J(2) cos(¢—47).

The mean brightness varies as 2-1; and the integral J, TXa)zdz

(22);

is not convergent.

The efficiency of a telescope is of course intimately connected with the size of the disk by which it represents a mathematical point. The resolving power upon double stars of telescopes of various apertures has been investigated by Dawes and others (Optics, vol. xvii. p. 807), with results that agree fairly well with theory.

If we integrate the expression (8) for I? with respect to 7, we shall obtain a result applicable to a linear luminous source of which the various parts are supposed to act independently.

power of tele-

Scopes.

Luminous line,

1 Airy, loc. cit. 'Thus the magnitude of the central spot is diminished, and the brightness of the rings increased, by covering the central parts of the object- glass," 2 Todhunter's Laplace's Functions, ch. Xxxi.

3 Loe. cit. 4 Phil. Mag., March 1881,

433

From (19), (20)

ae 2R4 ce} 5 at f ee Ldn ai af 4z-2J,?(z) dn =2R? dt – (2) dz since n?=7? — £2, 7 If we write (CSUN 9 5 6 4 & (23), whe » JP (z)dz we get ad ve Ld*

= oR2d is oy (2)ae i é nes uy] ¢ , nIG-O) (24)

This integral has been investigated by H. Struve,® who, calling to his aid various properties of Bessel's functions, shows that

Tees 21 , : Tees.

*i IGE) 22 f sin (2¢sin 8)cos*BdBp . (25),*

of which the right-hand member is readily expanded in powers of ¢. By means of (24) we may verify that

+0

Leaef, 12d =aR?.

Contrary to what would naturally be expected, the subject is more easily treated without using the results of the integration with respect to « and y, by taking first of all, as in the investiga- tion of Stokes (§ 11), the integration with respect to y, Thus

nape [t? 12d Limit of —~o

ff vor E(x'-2x)+n(y'-y) da dy dzx' dy' dn. (26); and [eri Preos 5 g(a' -2) + nly -y)t dn

26 cos (al —«)

= — ar 27). e+ (y -y) (7) if We have now to consider E We 28 dy dy' (28) B+ Ky! — y)?/f?*

In the integration with respect to y' every element vanishes in the limit (8=0), unless y'/=y. If the range of integration for y' includes the valuc 7, then ces 28 dy' Se Sait fara ap otherwise it vanishes. The limit of (28) may thus be denoted by Af Y, where Y is the common part of the ranges of integration for 7/ and y corresponding to any values of z' and z. Hence

ae Pan a-17-1 ff Yeos e (a! — x) dae da!

=f ¥c0s”$ cos SE ade ere (025).

if, as for the present purposc, the aperture is symmetrical with respect to the axis of y. In the application to the circle we may write

+o RR Kia tae! 2dy—=4a-1f-1 eee eee ’ ye Pdn=4a-f vg Ycos Ff Os F da dz’,

where Y is the smallcr of the two quantities

2n/(R?—a”?), 2a/(R?- 2°), z.e., corresponds to the larger of the two abscisse 2’, x If we take Y=2,/(R?-x?), and limit the integration to those values of x’ which are less than x, we should obtain exactly the half of the required result. Thus

[er Panter yf MB 22) cos cos EE dada! —% 0 So HE ij R -if /(R2 = 22) sin 28" dee ESO : op a eS Fe mESO uf

Hence, writing as before (= a » We get

af “Ldn = eal T 08% sin(2¢g)d8. . (30),

in which we may replace dt/t by d¢/¢, in agreement with the result obtained by Struve. The integral in (30) may be written in another form. We have

*J ¢sin{2¢8)cos”B dB = — 4c0s 8 cos(2¢sin B) — 4 / cos(2¢sin B)sin 8 dp; and thus OD ap Bi : ; Ve ¢sin (2¢a)eos*aap—4 f, 1-cos(2¢sin 8) sin B dB*

-f =? na(caeyailads (31).

5 Wied, Ann., xvii, 1008, 1882.

SX, == 98,

Double line.

Compari- son with rect- angular

aperture.

Uniform field of light ter- minated by straight edge.

434

The integral is thus expressible by means of the function K,,! and we have

*ae ** Pd = 488d CK (20) (32).*

The ascending series for K,(z) is I id Og a K@=i)ae-maretmee f+; 8 and this is always convergent. The descending semi-cortivergent series is

Ke == 24272 =3.2-84 12,32,5.2-5- 12,82. 52.7.2-74+ 2, 2_ AV\(22_ = a/ (2)-coste-am) {1 – SO aba

, 1.2.(82)? – a/ (2).sine—am) tees (34),

Ped (i= 8s” —- 657-4) Le =i 2B.

the series within braces being the same as those which occur in

the expression of the function J,(z).

When ¢ (or £) is very great,

2

dt vA ec ode,

so that the intensity of the image of a luminous line is ultimately inversely as the square of the distance from the central axis, or geometrical image.

As is evident from its composition, the intensity remains finite for all values of (: it is, however, Oo subject to fluctuations presenting

¢ | Intensity.

maxima and minima, which have | On the axis itself..| 0-00 1 been calculated by Ch. André,? See me a = 7 Irst Maxi1mum…. ” using apparently the method of | cocona minimum. | 6-80 bo quadratures. Second maximum.]| 8-00 ae The results are also exhibited gird minimum…. in ats 54 : ird maximum…| 11° xt by M. André in the form of a Beers Mint | 18-90 te ba

curve, of which fig. 6 is a copy.

It will be seen that the distribution of brightness does not differ greatly from that due to a rectangular aperture whose width (perpendicular to the luminous line) is equal to the diameter of the circular aperture. It will be in- structive to examine the image of a double line, whose components present an interval correspond- ing to (=a, and to compare the result with that already found for a rectangular aperture (§ 11). We may consider the brightness at distance ¢ pro- portional to

1 92¢2 Ud) Ss Tro

2ae Bee 7 In the compound image the illumination at the geometrical focus of one of the luminous lines is represented by L(0)+ L(x) ;

and the illumination midway between the geo-

n (35).

metrical images of thé two lines is SNS ae ee Oe 2L(47). Fig. 6. We find by actual

calculation from the = ‘33338, so that L(0) + L(m) = 3497, 2L(32) = 8342, 2L ($7) _ L(0)+L® © The corresponding number for the rectangular aperture was ‘811 ; so that, as might have been expected, the resolving power of the circular aperture is distinctly less than that of the rectangular aperture of equal width. Hence a telescope will not resolve a double line unless the angular interval between them decidedly exceeds that subtended by the wave-length of light at a distance equal to the diameter of the object-glags. Experiment shows that resolution begins

when the angular interval is about a tenth part greater than that mentioned.

If we integrate (30) with respect to & between the limits — oo and +o we obtain wR?, as hasalready been remarked. This represents the whole illumination over the focal plane due to a radiant point whose inlage is at O, or, reciprocally, the illumination at O (the same as at any other point) due to an infinitely extended luminous area, If we take the integration from £ (supposed positive) to oo we get the illumination at O due to a uniform luminous area extending over this region, that is to say, the illumination at a point situated at distance ~ outside the border of the geometrical image of a large uniform area. Ifthe point is supposed to be inside the geometri- cal image and at a distance ¢ from its edge, we are to take the in-

1 Theory of Sound, § 802. 2 Ann, d. U Ecole Normale, v. p. 810, 1876.

series, L(m)=-0164, L(}r)=-167i, L(0)

and 955.

WAVYI THAORT

tegration from —o to é. Thus, if we choose the scale of intensities

so that the full intensity is unity, then the intensity at a distance

corresponding to + ¢ (outside the geometrical image) may be repre-

sented by (), and that at a distance – ¢ by if(-(¢), where (¢)+3(—{) =1,

*and EQ=5-f CPaeKeQ=4-3- [°C-*aC KOO). . (86).*

This is the result obtained by Struve, who gives the following series for 3(). The ascending series, obtained at once by integration from (33), is @) 2 ee gai 201 ES Cees HC) = 4 1 ral ” 2n -—1 17.37.57… (2n+1)?° (37). When ¢ is great, we have approximately from the descending series ay Aa 1 cos(2¢+41) 80m otha) aan ge Thus “at great distances from the edge of the geometrical image the intensity is inversely proportional to the

distance, and to the radius of the object-glass." The following table, abbreviated from that given by Struve, will serve to calculate the enlargement of an image due to diffraction in any case that may arise. —

C=2rRe/a/. a =()=1-2(+¢). ¢ £(¢) 4 ¥(¢) 4 £(¢) 0°0 5000 2°5 0765 7°0 0293 0°5 3678 3°0 0630 9°0 "0222 10 "2521 4°0 "0528 11:0 0186 igs) "1642 5:0 0410 15°0 0135 2°0 1073 6°0 0328

It may perhaps have struck the reader that there is some want of rigour in our treatment of (30) when we integrate it over the whole focal plane of ¢, , inasmuch as in the proof of the formule £and 7 are supposed to be small. The inconsistency becomes very apparent when we observe that according to the formule there is no limit to the relative retardation of secondary waves coming from various parts of the aperture, whereas in reality this retardation could never exceed the longest line capable of being drawn within the aperture. It will be worth while to consider this point a little further, although our limits forbid an extended treatment.

The formula becomes rigorous if we regard it as giving the illumination on the surface of a sphere of very large radius /, in a direction such that

é=/fsin Ocosd, n=/sin ésing ; it may then be written

P= a-2f-2 f/f cose { (a! — a) sin Acosp +(y' —y)sin @sin }dedyda! dy'.

The whole intensity over the infinite hemisphere is given by

w fir Af" I?sin 6 dé d¢.

According to the plan formerly adopted, we postpone the intcgra- tion with respect to x, y, x', y', and take first that with respect to gand ¢. Thus fora single pair of elements of area dx dy, da! dy' we have to consider

ff sue (~2)sin dos 9+ (y'-¥) sin 6sing }sing dé do,

or, if we write

(38).

xe’ -#=recosa, y —y=rsina,

An (27 : vA v4 cos(xrsin 6cos) sin dé dd.

Now it may be proved (¢.g., by expansion in powers of xr) that

br 2 vA yi “cos(rersin 0cos#)sind dadp—2m —. , (89); 0 /0 — and thus Qa sin kr ‘ {= ahh yp Cady de dy (40),

r being the distance between the two elements of area dx dy, dx’dy/. In the case of a circular area of radius R, we have 3

sin xr pat, 2TR?§ , J,(2eR) MY ep edly dat! dy’ = a 1 r= , and thus . f— aR? 1 et (41). cR When cR=0,

=7R?, as before. 3 Theory of Sound, § 302.

Struve’s results.

Integra- tion of intensity further con- sidered.

WAVE

It appears therefore that according to the assumed law of the secondary wave the total illumination is proportional to the area of aperture, only under the restriction that the linear dimensions of the aperture are very large in comparison with the wave-length. A word as to the significance of (39) may not be out of place. We know that y=cose{sin@cospx+sin dsingy +cosdz} 0 6 (42)

satisfies Laplace’s extended equation (v?+«?))=0, being of the form cosxz’, where # is drawn in an oblique direction; and it follows that // y sin 60 d@ satisfies the same equation. Now this, if the integration be taken over the hemisphere =0 to =}2, must become a function of 7, or s/(a?+y?+2%), only.

Hence, putting =r, y=0, z=0, we get

am (2 : Hf vinedoao= uA “cos (xrsin 6cos)sin eded¢.

But the only function of 7 which satisfies Laplace's equation continuously through the origin is A sin «r/(x7r); and that A=2z is proved at once by putting r=0. The truth of the formula may also be established independently of the differential equation by

ko (72 equating the values of "A 7 sin 6dédd¢, whenx=7, y=0, 2=0,

and when x=0, y=0, z=7. Thus

au f Qe B ' 3 rag cos(«rsin@cos¢)sin édéd@

1 2

a 2 sin xr

cos (Krcos 6)sin db dp =2n —-

The formula itself may also be written

ef OR. ¥

435

By measurements of coronas it is possible to infer the size of the particles to which they are due, an application of considerable interest in the case of natural corona—the general rule being the larger the corona the smaller the water spherules, Young employed this method not only to determine the diameters of cloud particles (¢.9-, tvo~ inch), but also those of fibrous material, for which the theory is analogous. His instrument was ealled the eriometer.?

§ 13. Influence of Aberration. Optical Power of Instruments.

Our investigations and estimates of resolving power have thus Optical far proceeded upon the supposition that there are no optical errors.

imperfections, whether of the nature of a regular aberration or dependent upon irregularities of material and workmanship. In practice there will always be a certain aberration or error of phase, which we may also

regard as the deviation of the actual wave- surface from its intended position. In general, we may say that aberration is unimportant, when it nowhere (or at any rate over a relatively small area only) exceeds a small fraction of the wave- length (A). Thus in estimating the intensity at a focal point, where, in the absence of aberration, all the secondary waves would have exactly the same phase, we see that an aberration nowhere exceeding $a can have but little effect.

The only case in which the influence of small aberration upon Unsym- the entire image has been calculated is that of a rectangular metrical aperture, traversed by a cylindrical wave with aberration equal to aber- cw. The aberration is here unsymmetrical, the wave being in ration.*

advance of its proper place in one half of the aperture, but behind in the other half. No terms in x or 2? need be considered. The first would correspond to a general turning of the beam; and the second would imply imperfect focusing of the central parts. The

% 4! o(xr sin) sin 6d = a ing (43). effect of aberration may be considered in two ways. We may 0 ue suppose the aperture (a) constant, and inquire into the operation Coronas The results of the preceding theory of circular apertures admit | of an increasing aberration ; or we may take a given value of ¢ (z.e., or of an interesting application to coronas, such as are often seen | a given wave-surface) and examine the effect of a varying aperture. glories. encircling the sun and moon, They are due to the interposition of | The results in the second case show that an increase of aperture

small spherules of water, which act the part of diffracting obstacles. In order to the formation of a well-defined corona it is essential that the particles be exclusively, or preponderatingly, of one size. If the origin of light be treated as infinitely small, and be seen iu focus, whether with the naked eye or with the aid of a telescope, the whole of the light in the absence of obstacles would be concen- trated in the immediate neighbourhood of the focus. At other parts of the field the effect is the same, by Babinet's principle, whether the imaginary screen in front of the object-glass is gene- rally transparent but studded with a number of opaque circular disks, or is generally opaque but perforated with

corresponding apertures. Consider uow the light diffracted in a direction many times more oblique than any with which we should be concerned, were the whole aperture uninterrupted, and take first the effect of

up to that corresponding to an extreme aberration of half a period has no ill effect upon the central band (§ 11), but it increases unduly the intensity of one of the neighbouring lateral bands; and the practical conclusion is that the best results will be obtained from an aperture giving an extreme aberration of from a quarter to half a period, and that with an increased aperture aberration is not so much a direct cause of deterioration as an obstacle to the attainment of that improved definition which should accompany the increase of aperture.

If, on the other hand, we suppose the aperture given, we find that aberration begins to be distinctly mischievous when it amounts to about a quarter period, 7.e., when the wave-surface deviates at each end by a quarter wave-length from the true plane.

For the focal point itself the calculations are much simpler. Circular We will consider the case of a circular object-glass with a sym- aperture. metrical aberration proportional to hp. The vibration will be re- gymme-

presented by trical Ve cos (nt — hp) pdp,*

a single small aperture. The light in the proposed direction is that determined by the sizo of the small aperture in accordance with the laws already investigated, and its phase depends upon the position of the aperture. If we take a direction such that the light

aberra- (of given wave-length) from a single aperture vanishes, the evan-

tion.

escence continues even when the whole series of apertures is brought into contemplation. Hence, whatever else may happen, there must be a system of dark rings formed, the same as from a single small aperture. In directions other than these it is a more delicate question how the partial effects should be compounded. If we make the extreme suppositions of an

infinitely small source and absolutely homogeneous light, there is no escape from the conclusion that the light in a definite direction is arbitrary, that is, dependent upon the chance distribution of apertures. If, however, as in practice, the light be heterogeneous, the source of finite area, the obstacles in notion, and the discrimination of different directions imperfect, we are concerned merely with the mean brightness found by varying the arbitrary phase-relatious, and this is obtained by simply multiplying the brightness due to a single aperture by the number of apertures (7).1 The diffraction pattern is therefore that due to a single aperture, merely brightened x times.

In his experiments upon this subject Fraunhofer employed plates of glass dusted over with lycopodium, or studded with small metallic disks of uniform size; and he found that the diameters of the rings were proportional to the length of the waves and in- versely as the diameter of the disks.

In another respect the observations of Fraunhofer appear at first sight to be in disaecord with theory; for his measures of the diameters of the red rings, visible when white light was employed, correspond with the law applicable to dark rings, and not to the different law applicable to the luminous maxima. Verdet has, however, pointed out that the observation in this form is essentially different from that in which homogeneous red light is employed, and that the position of the red rings would correspond to the absence of blue-green light rather than to the greatest abundance of red light. Verdet's own observations, conducted with great care, fully eonfirm this view, and exhibit a complete agreement with theory.

1 See § 4.

in which the radius of the aperture is supposed to be unity. The intensity is thus expressed by

*rou [2f *costtet)pdp | + [_2/,*sin(ip')pdp | – ely*

the scale being such that the intensity is unity when there is no aberration (h=0). By integration by parts it can be shown that a

i. : 7 ao ae af a” pdp=e™ } 1 Sh __ (ih) 4

6.10 6.10.14

so that ; ee ae 2 ff cos(ipt)pdp=oosh 1 tet ar ag- cs sina T 2 [sin(tp”) pdp=sin 1-2) 4 OO – a Leena y ooo a Le*

Hence, when 4=4r, 2 4 1 0s (dmp) pdp= 1°32945/4/2, af, ‘sin (dup!) pdp=“35424/x/2,*

[2 = +9464. Similarly, when h=47 ” -[2= 8008 ; and when h=7,

12 = “8947.

2 “ Chromatics,” in vol. iii. of Supp. to Ency. Brit., 1817, 3 “Investigations in Optics,” Phil. Mag., Nov. 1879.

436

These numbers represent the influence of aberration upon the intensity at the central point, upon the understanding that the focusing is that adapted to a small aperture, for which 2 might be neglected. If a readjustment of focus be permitted, the num- bers will be sensibly raised. The general conclusion is that an aberration betwcen the centre and circumference of a quarter period has but little effect upon the intensity at the central point of the image.

Disturb- ‘a an application of this result, let us investigate what amount ance due of temperature disturbance in the tube of a telescope may be to varia- expected to impair definition. According to Biot and Arago, the tion of index y for air at ¢° C. and at atmospheric pressure is given by temper- ; i= “00029 ature, BO’ T+ 0087 ¢’ If we take 0° C. as standard temperature,

: du= —1°1¢x 10-8, Thus, on the supposition that the irregularity of temperaturet extends through a length 7, and produces an acceleration of a quarter of a wave-length,

ZA=1°11¢x 10-8; or, if we take A=5°3 × 10-5, ti=12,

the unit of length being the centimetre.

We may infer that, in the case of a telescope tube 12 cm. long, a stratum of air heated 1° C. lying along the top of the tube, and occupying a moderate fraction of the whole volume, would pro- duce a not insensible effect. If the change of temperature pro- gressed uniformly from one side to the other, the result would be a lateral displacement of the image without loss of definition; but in general both cffects would be observable. In longer tubes a similar disturbance would be caused by a proportionally less dif- ference of temperature.

We will now consider the application of the principle to the formation of images, unassisted by reflexion or refraction.! The function of a lens in forming an image is to compensate by its vari- able thickness the differences of phase which would otherwise exist between secondary waves arriving at the focal point from various parts of the aperture (Optics, vol. xvii. p. 802). If we sup- pose the diameter of the lens to be given (2R), and its focal length Jf gradually to increase, the original differences of phase at the image of an infinitely distant luminous point diminish without limit. When / attains a certain value, say f;, the extreme error of phase to be compensated falls to 4a. But, as we have seen, such an error of phase causes no sensible deterioration in the definition; so that from this point onwards the lens is useless, as only improving an image already sensibly as perfect as the aperture admits of. Throughout the operation of increasing the focal length, the resolving power of the instrument, which depends only upon the aperture, remains unchanged ; and we thus arrive at the rather startling conclusion that a telescope of any degree of resolving power might be constructed without an object-glass, if only there were no limit to the admissible focal length. This last proviso, however, as we shall see, takes away almost all practical importance from the proposition.

To get an idea of the magnitudes of the quantities involved, let us take the case of an aperture of + inch, about that of the pupil of the eye. The distance Jy, Which the actual focal length must exceed, is given by

MAP +R) -f,=4;

JiH2Rn . ww, Thus, if A=aog00> R=, we find J, = 800 inches. The image of the sun thrown upon a screen at a distance exceeding 66 feet, through a hole 4 inch in diameter, is therefore at least as well defined as that seen direct,

As the minimum focal length increases with the square of the aperture, a quite impracticable distance would be required to rival the resolving power of a modern telescope. Even for an aperture of 4 inches, /; would have to be 5 miles,

Images by simple aper- tures.

so that

(4).

Simple A similar argument may be applied to find at what point an versus achromatic lens becomes sensibly superior to a single one, The achro- question is whether, when the adjustment of focus is correct for the matic central rays of the spectrum, the error of phase for the most lens. extreme rays (which it is necessary to consider) amounts to a

quarter of awave-length. If not, the substitution of an achromatic lens will be of no advantage. Calculation shows that, if the aper- ture be 4 inch, an achromatic lens has no sensible advantage if the focal length be greater than about 11 inches. If we suppose the focal length to be 66 feet, a single lens is practically perfect up to an aperture of 1°7 inch.

Some estimates of the admissible aberration in a spherical lens have already been given under Optics, vol. xvii. p. 807. Ina similar manner we may estimate the least visible displacement of

1 Phil. Mag., March 1881.

WAVE THEORY

the eye-piece of a telescope focused upon a distant object, a Accu-

question of interest in connexion with range-finders. It appears ? racy of that a displacement 8f from the true focus will not sensibly focusing. impair definition, provided

af

2R being the diameter of aperture. The linear accuracy required is thus a function of the ratio of aperture to focal length. The formula agrees well with experiment.

The principle gives an instantaneous solution of the question of Delicacy the ultimate optical efficiency in the method of ‘ mirror-reading,” of mirror- as commonly practised in various physical observations. A rotation reading. by which one edge of the mirror advances }a (while the other edge retreats to a like amount) introduces a phase-discrepancy of a whole period where before the rotation there was complete agreement.

A comparison with the method of a material pointer, attached to Compari- the parts whose rotation is under observation, and viewed through son with a microscope, is of interest. The limiting efficiency of the micro- material – scope is attained when the angular aperture amounts to 180° pointer, (Microscopg, vol. xvi. p. 267; Optics, vol. xvii. p. 807); and it is evident that a lateral displacement of the point under observation through 4A entails (at the old image) a phase-discrepancy of a whole period, one extreme ray being accelerated and the other retarded by half that amount. We may infer that the limits of efficiency in the two methods are the same when the length of the pointer is equal to the width of the mirror.

An important practical question is the amount of error admis- Admis- sible in optical surfaces. In the case of a mirror, reflecting sible at nearly perpendicular incidence, pA errors there should be no deviation from A’ of optical truth (over any appreciable area) of ; surfaces. more than $A. For glass, ~-1=4 nearly; and hence the admissible error in a refracting surface of that material 4 is four times as great.

In the case of oblique reflexion at an angle ¢, the error of retardation due to an elevation BD (fig. 7) is QQ’ — QS = BDsec (1 — cos8QQ’) = BD sec $(1+cos2¢)=2BDcos¢ ; from which it follows that an error of given

magnitude in the figure of a surface is less important in oblique than in perpendicular reflexion. It must, however, be borne in mind that errors can sometimes be compensated by altering adjustments. If a surface intended to be flat is affected with a slight general curvature, a remedy may be found in an alteration of focus, and the remedy is the less complete as the reflexion is more oblique.

The formula expressing the optical power of prismatic spectro- Optical scopes is given with examples under Optics, vol. xvii. p. 807, and power of may readily be investigated upon the principles of the wave theory. prisms, Let AB, (fig.8) be a plane wave-surface of the light before it falls upon the prisms, AB the correspouding wave-surface for a parti- cular part of the spectrum after the light has passed the prisms, or after it has passed Fig. 8. the eye-piece of the observing telescope. The path of a ray from the wave-surface A,B, to A or B is determined by the condition that the optical distance, /uds, is a minimum (Optics, vol. xvii.

798); and, as AB is by supposition a wave-surface, this optical distance is the same for both points. Thus

J ds (for A) = [ds (for B) . . 4OY. We have now to consider the behaviour of light belonging to a neighbouring part of the spectrum. The path of a ray from the wave-surface AyBy to the point A is changed ; but in virtue of the minimum property the change may be neglected in calculating the optical distance, as it influences the result by quantities of the second order only in the changes of refrangibility. Accordingly, the optical distance from AjB, to A is represented by

JS (ut du)ds, the integration being along the original path Bg. i. Ae

Fig. 7.

Ao

ai

&o

? and similarly the optical distance between A,B, and B is represented

by /(u+8u)ds, the integration being along By… B. In virtue of (6) the difference of the optical distances to A and B is

JS suds (along By… B)- fduds (along A,... A). The new wave-surface is formed in such a distance is constant; and therefore the dispersion, or the angle through which the wave surface is turned by the change of refrangibility, is found simply by dividing (7) by the distance AB. If, as in common flint-glass spectroscopes, there is only one dispers- ing substance, Si du.ds—8y.s, where s is simply the thickness tra- versed by the ray. If ¢, and ¢, be the thicknesses traversed by the

2 Phil. Mag., xx. p. 354, 1885,

(7).

position that the optical

evi PAE OR Y

extreme rays, and a denote the width of the emergent beam, the dispersion @ is given by 6=Sy(t,—4)/a,

O=Spt/a . (8). The condition of resolution of a double line whose components subtend an angle is that must exceed A/a. Hence, in order that a double line may be resolved whose components have indices pand »+6y, it is necessary that ¢ should exceed the value given by the following equation :—

at! (9). For applications of these results, see SPECTROSCOPE.

or, if ¢, be negligible,

§ 14. Theory of Gratings.

The general explanation of the mode of action of gratings has been given under Lieut (vol. xiv. p. 607). If the grating be com- ee of alternate transparent and opaque parts, the question may

e treated by means of the general integrals (§11) by merely limiting the integration to the transparent parts of the aperture. For au investigation upon these lines the reader is referred to Airy's Tracts and to Verdet's Legons. If, however, we assume the theory of a simple rectangular aperture (§ 11), the results of the ruling can be inferred by elementary methods, which are perhaps imore instructive.

Apart from the ruling, we know that the image of a mathematical line will be a series of narrow bands, of which the central one is by far the brightest. At the middle of this band there is complete agreement of phase among the secondary waves. The dark lines which separate the bands are the places at which the phases of the secondary wave range over an integral number of periods. If now we suppose the aperture AB to be covered by a great number of opaque strips or bars of width d, separated by transparent inter- vals of width a, the condition of things in the directions just spoken of is not materially changed. At the central point there is still complete agreement of phase ; but the amplitude is dimin- ished in the ratio of a: a+d. In another direction, making a small angle with the last, such that the projection of AB upon it amounts to a few wave-lengths, it is easy to see that the mode of interference is the same as if there were no ruling. For example, when the direction is such that the projection of AB upon it amounts to one wave-length, the elementary components neutralize one another, because their phases are distributed symmetrically, though discontinuously, round the entire period. The only effect of the ruling is to diminish the amplitude in the ratioa: a+d; and, except for the difference in illumination, the appearance of a line of light is the same as if the aperture were perfectly free.

The lateral (spectral) images occur in such directions that the projection of the element (a+d) of the grating upon them is an exact multiple of A. The effect of each of the n elements of the grat- ing is then the same ; and, unless this vanishes on account of a parti- cular adjustment of the ratio a: d, the resultant amplitude be- comes comparatively very great. These directions, in which the retardation between A and B is exactly mma, may be called the principal direetions. On either side of any one of them the illum- ination is distributed according to the same law as for the central image (m=0), vanishing, for example, when the retardation

amounts to (mn+1)a. In considering the relative brightnesses of the different spectra, it is therefore sufficient to attend merely to the principal directions, provided that the whole deviation be not so great that its cosine differs considerably from unity.

We have now to consider the amplitude due to a single element, which we may conveniently regard as composed of a transparent part @ bounded by two opaque parts of width 4d. The phase of the resultant effect is by symmetry that of the component which comes from the middle of a. The fact that the other components have phases differing from this by amounts ranging between -amn/(a+d) causes the resultant amplitude to be less than for the central image (where there is complete phase agreement). Tf B, denote the brightness of the m lateral image, and B, that of the central image, we have*

amr

E..:B heh 2 cocci _2amn7? _ fatd ? in 20™ ke _amr "atd\) \ amr a+d a+d

If B denote the brightness of the central image when the whole of the space occupied by the'grating is transparent, we have By: B=a?:(a+d)?,

(1).

and thus Bn: B=

1

*mx atd @). The sine of an angle can never be greater than unity ; and con- sequently under the most favourable circumstances only 1/m?x? of the original light cau be obtained in the m** spectrum. We con- clude that, with a grating composed of transparent and opaque parts, the utmost light obtainable in any one spectrum is in the first,*

437

and there amounts to 1/x', or about 4, and that for this purpose a and d must be equal. When d=a, the general formula becomes Equal

sin ? 4mr opaque Ba: B= er = wed (3), and trans-

showing that, when m is even, B», vanishes, and that, when m is odd, er : Bn: B=1/m?x?. The third spectrum has thus only 4 of the brilliancy of the first.

Another particular case of interest is obtained by supposing `Trans- small relatively to(a`*+d). Unless the spectrum be of very high parent order, we have simply parts*

Bae B= {a/(a+d)}? (4); small, so that the brightnesses of all the spectra are the same.

The light stopped by the opaque parts of the grating, together with that distributed in the central image and lateral spectra, ought to make up the brightness that would be found in the central image, were all the apertures transparent. Thus, if a=d, we should have

yt 1.2 ee lap 47+ (145 tygt s+) which is true by a known theorem. In the general case

ee el eee Oe 2 n? (2a) a+d \a+d Gna)

5} 2 oe si Tw m=) ™M a formula which may be verified by Fourier's theorem.

According to a general principle formulated by Babinet, the Babinet's brightness of a lateral spectrum is not affected by an inter- prineiple. change of the transparent and opaque parts of the grating. The vibrations corresponding to the two parts are precisely antagonistic, since if both were operative the resultant would be zero. So far as the application to gratings is concerned, the same conclusion may be derived from (2).

From the value of By : B, we see that no lateral spectrum can sur- pass the central image in brightness ; but this result depends upon the hypothesis that the ruling acts by opacity, which is geuerally very far from being the case in practice. In an engraved glass grat- Gratings ing there is no opaque material present by which light could be aeting by absorbed,

and the effect depends upon a difference of retardation in retarda- passing the alternate parts. It is possible to prepare gratings which tion, give a lateral spectrum brighter than the central image, and the ex- planation is easy. For if the alternate parts were equal and alike transparent, but so constituted as to givearelative retardation of 4X, it is evident that the central image would be entirely extin- guished, while the first speetrum would be four times as bright as if the alternate parts were opaque. If it were possible to introduce at every part of the aperture of the grating an arbitrary retardation, all the light might be concentrated in any desired spectrum. By The supposing the retardation to vary uniformly and continuously we whole fall upon the case of an ordinary prism ; but thereis then no diffrac- light in tion spectrum in the usual sense. To obtain suchit would be neces- one sary that the retardation should gradually alter by a wave-length speetrum. in passing over any element of the grating, and then fall back to

Oblique ineidence.

Fig. 10.

its previous value, thus springing suddenly over a wave-length. It is not likely that such a result will ever be fully attained in practice ; but the case is worth stating, in order to show that there is no theoretical limit to the concentration of light of assigned wave-length in one spectrum, and as illustrating the frequently observed unsymmetrical character of the spectra on the two sides of the central image aq We have hitherto supposed that the light is inci- <> dent perpendicularly upon the grating ; but the theory 6 is easily extended. If the incident rays make an angle with the normal (fig. 9), and the diffracted ang rays make an angle ¢ (upon the same side), the rela- Bae tive retardation from each element of width (a+d) to the next is (a+d) (sin+sin); and this is the quantity which is to be equated to ma. Thus sin 6+sing=2sin4(6 + ¢).cos$(6-— ¢)=ma/(a+a) (5). The ‘‘deviation” is (0+), and is therefore a minimum when 6=¢, t. ¢., when the grating is so situated that the angles of inci- dence and difiraction are equal. d ‘ In the case of a reflexion grating the same method applies. If Refleeting 6 and ¢ denote*

the angles with the normal made by the incident grating. and diffracted rays, the formula (5) still holds, and, if the deviation be reckoned from the direction of the regularly reflected rays, it is expressed as before by (+), and is a minimum when 6=4¢, that is, when the diffracted rays re- turn upon the course of the incident rays. ; In either case (as also with a prism) the posi- tion of minimum deviation leaves the width of se the beam unaltered, ¢.¢., neither magnifies nor diminishes the angular width of the object under view. ; From (5) we see that, when the light falls perpendicularly upon bal ees. 1 Phil, Mag., xivii. 193, 1874. A.

Grating

sponding to m=0 not being counted as a spectrum), if the grating interval o or (a+d) is less than a. Under these circumstances, if the material of the grating be completely transparent, the whole of the light must appear in the direct image, and the ruling is not perceptible. From the absence of speetra Fraunhofer argued that there must be a microscopic limit represented by A; and the infer- ence is plausible, to say the least.! Fraunhofer should, however, have fixed the microscopic limit at 4a, as appears from (5), when we suppose 6=47, d=4dr.

Resolving We will now consider the important subject of the resolving

power.

No theo- retical limit.

Expres- sion for « disper- sion.”*

Aceu- raey of ruling.

power of gratings, as dependent upon the number of lines (7) and the order of the spectrum observed (m). Let BP (fig. 11) be the direction of the

B

principal maximum (middle of central band) for ¢ the wave-length a in the mt spectrum. Then the

relative retardation of the extreme rays (corre- ip sponding to the edges A, B of the grating) is mna. ms

If BQ be the direction for the first minimum (the Fig. 11

darkness between the central and first lateral band), the rela- tive retardation of the extreme rays is (mn+1)a. Suppose now that A+6a is the wave-length for which BQ gives the principal maximum, then (mn+1)A=mn(a+da);

whence

SAfA=1/mm . . . . . « . (6) According to our former standard, this gives the smallest difference of wave-lengths in a double line which can be just resolved; and we conclude that the resolving power of a grating depends only upon the total number of lines, and upon the order of the spectrum, without regard to any other considerations. It is here of course assumed that the 7 lines are really utilized.

In the case of the D-lines the value of 8a/a is about 1/1000 ; so that to resolve this double line in the first spectrum requires 1000 lines, in the second spectrum 500, and so on.

It is espeeially to be noticed that the resolving power does not depend directly upon the closeness of the ruling. Let us take the case of a grating 1 inch broad, and containing 1000 lines, and consider the effect of interpolating an additional 1000 lines, so as to bisect the former intervals. There will be destruction by inter- ference of the first, third, and odd spectra generally; while the advantage gained in the spectra of even order is not in dispersion, nor in resolving power, but simply in brilliancy, which is increased four times. If we now suppose half the grating cut away, so as to leave 1000 lines in half an inch, the dispersion will not be altered, while the brightness and resolving power are halved.

There is clearly no theoretical limit to the resolving power of gratings, even in spectra of given order. But it is possible that, as suggested by Rowland,? the structure of natural spectra may be too coarse to give opportunity for resolving powers much higher than those now in use. However this may be, it would always be possible, with the aid of a grating of given resolving power, to construct artificially from white light mixtures of slightly different wave-length whose resolution or otherwise would discriminate between powers inferior and supcrior to the given one.?

If we define as the "dispersion" in a particular part of the spectrum the ratio of the angular interval d@ to the corresponding increment of wave-length da, we may express it by a very simple formula. For the alteration of wave-length entails, at the two limits of a diffracted wave-front, a relative retardation equal to mnda. Hence, if a be the width of the diffracted beam, and dé the angle through which the wave-front is turned,

add=mndar, or dispersion=mn/a. . . . . (7),

The resolving power and the width of the emergent beam fix the optical character of the instrument. The latter element must eventually be decreased until less than the diameter of the pupil of the eye. Hence a wide beam demands treatment with further apparatus (usually a telescope) of high magnifying power.

In the above discussion it has-been supposed that the ruling is accurate, and we have seen that by increase of m a high resolving power is attainable with a moderate number of lines. But this procedure (apart from the question of illumination) is open to the objection that it makes excessive demands upon accuracy. Accord- ing to the principle already laid down, it can make but little dif- ference in the principal direction corresponding to the first spectrum provided each line lie within a quarter of an interyal (a+d) from its theoretical position, But, to obtain an equally good result in the m spectrum, the error must be less than 1 /m of the above amount.4 ee on Some Fundamental Propositions in Optics," Przl. Afag., June e rs we also Lippich, Pogg. Ann., cxxxix. Pp. 465, 1870; Rayleigh, Nature,*

3 The power of a grating to construct light of nearly definite wave-length is well illustrated by Young's comparison with the production of a musical note by reflexion of a sudden sound from a row of palings. The objection raised by Herschel (Light, § 703) to this comparison depends on a misconception.

4 It must not be supposed that errors of this order of magnitude are unob- jectionable in all cases. The position of the middle of the bright band represen-

There are certain errors of a systematie character which demand special consideration. The spacing is usually effected by means of a screw, to each revolution of which corresponds a large number (¢.g., one hundred) of lines. In this way it may happen that, Approxi- although there is almost perfect periodicity with each revolution mate of the screw after (say) 100 lines, yet the 100 lines themselves are period- not equally spaced. The ‘“‘ ghosts" thus arising were first de- ieity. scribed by Quincke,® and have been elaborately investigated by Peirce, both theoretically and experimentally. The general nature of the effects to be expected in such a ease may be made clear by means of an illustration already employed for another purpose. Suppose two similar and accurately ruled transparent gratings to be superposed in such a manner that the lines are parallel. If the one set of lines exactly biseet the intervals between the others, the grating interval is practically halved, and the previously exist- ing spectra of odd order vanish. But a very slight relative dis- placement will cause the apparition of the odd spectra. In this case there is approximate periodicity in the half interval, but com- plete periodieity only after the whole interval. The advantage of approximate bisection lies in the superior brilliancy of the surviving spectra; but in any case the compound grating may be considered to be perfect in the longer interval, and the definition is as good as if the bisection were accurate.*

The effect of a gradual increase in the interval (fig. 12) as we Gradually pass across the grating has been investigated by Cornu,' who thus increasing explains an anomaly observed by Mascart. The latter found that interval. certain gratings exercised a converging power upon the spectra formed upon one side, and a corresponding diverging power upon

the spectra on the other side. Let us suppose that the light is incident perpendicularly, and that the grating interval incrcases from the centre towards that edge which lies nearest to the spec- trum under observation, and decreases towards the hinder edge.

Fie. 12.—22, Fie, 13.—y2. Fig, 14.—23, Fig. 15.—ay2.

It is evident that the waves from both halves of the grating are accelerated in an increasing degree, as we pass from the centre outwards, as compared with the phase they would possess were the central value of the grating interval maintained throughout. The irregularity of spacing

has thus the effect of |

a convex lens, which

accelerates the mar-

ginal relatively to the

central rays. On the y 4 other side the effect F14- 16.—2y. Fig, 17,—~22y, Fig. 18.—y3. is reversed, This kind of irregularity may clearly be present in a degree surpassing the usual limits, without loss of definition, when the telescope is focused so as to secure the best effect.

It may be worth while to examine further the other variations from correct ruling which correspond to the various terms express- ing the deviation of the wave-surface from a perfect plane. If « and y be coordinates in the plane of the wave-surface, the axis of y being parallel to the lines of the grating, and the origin corre- sponding to the centre of the beam, we have as an approximate equation to the wave-surface (§ 6)

2 eon ga . + Bay Foyt a + Baty + yay” + By? + 4 TH

and, as we have just seen, the term in x corresponds toa linear error in the spacing. In like manner, the term in y corresponds to a Qurva- general curvature of the lines (fig. 18), and does not influence the ture. definition at the (primary) focus, although it may introduce astigmatism.® If we*

suppose that everything is symmetrical on the two sides of the primary plane y=0, the coefficients B, B, 8 vanish. In spite of any inequality between p and p', the definition will be good to this order of approximation, provided a and y vanish. The former measures the thickness of the primary focal line, and the latter measures its curvature. The error of ruling Other giving rise to a is one in which the intervals increase or decrease in errors, both directions from the centre outwards (fig. 14), and it may often be compensated by a slight rotation in azimuth of the object-glass of the observing telescope. The term in y corresponds to a varia- tion of curvature in crossing the grating (fig. 15).

When the plane zx is not a plane of symmetry, we have to con- sider the terms in xy, x?y, and y. The first of these corresponds a ee*

tative of a mathematical line can be fixed with a spider-line micrometer within a small fraction of the width of the band, just as the accuracy of astronomical observations far transcends the separating power of the instrument,

5 Pogg. Ann., cxlvi. p. 1, 1872.

8 Ann. Jour, Math. ; vol. ii. p. 330, 1879, vO. R., xxx. p. 645, 1875,

8 "In the same way we may conclude that in flat gratings any departure from a straight line has the effect of causing the dust in the slit and the spec- trum to have different foci—a fact sometimes observed " (Rowland, "On Concave Gratings for Optical Purposes," Pail. Mag., September 1883),

WAVE THEORY

to a deviation from parallelism, causing the interval to alter gradu- ally as we pass along the lines (fig. 16). The error thus arising may be compensated by a rotation of the object-glass about one of the diameters y=-+x. The term in xy corresponds to a deviation from parallelism in the same direction on both sides of the central line (fig. 17); and that in y? would be caused by a curvature such that there is a point of inflexion at the middle of each line (fig. 18).

All the errors, except that depending on a, and especially those depending on y and 34, can be diminished, without loss of resolving power, by contracting the vertical aperture. A linear error in the spacing, and a general curvature of the lines, are eliminated in the ordinary use of a grating.

The explanation of the difference of focus upon the two sides as due to unequal spacing was verified by Cornu upon gratings pur- poly constructed with an increasing interval. He has also shown

ow to rule a plane surface with lines so disposed that the grating shall of itself give well-focused spectra.?

439

where o denotes the constant interval between the planes contain- ing the lines. This is the ordinary formula for a reflecting plane grating, and it shows that the spectra are formed in the usual directions. They are here focused (so far as the rays in the primary plane are concerned) upon the circle OQ'A, and the out- standing aberration is of the fourth order.

In order that a large part of the field of view may be in focus at once, it is desirable that the locus of the focused spectrum should be nearly perpendicular to the line of vision. For this purpose Rowland places the eye-piece at O, so that ¢=0, and then by (11) the value of ¢' in the m spectrum is*

csingg=+ma . s If w now relate to the edge of the grating, on altogether 7 lines,

: t= Ge which there are

no=2asinw, and the value of the last term in (10) becomes

Row- A similar idea appears to have guided Rowland to his brilliant feno sinFwsin ¢'tang',

land's imvention of concave gratings, by which spectra can be photo- | °F , :

concave graphed without any further optical appli- femnasin?etan p (18). gratings, ance. In these instruments the lines are This expresses the retardation of the extreme relatively to the

ruled upon a spherical surface of speculum metal, and mark the intersections of the surface by a system of parallel and equidis- tant planes, of which the middle member passes through the centre of the sphere. If we consider for the present only the primary plane of symmetry, the figure is reduced to two dimensions. Let AP (fig. 19) represent the surface of the grating, O being the centre of the circle. Then, if Q be any radiant point and Q' its image (primary focus) in the spherieal mirror AP, we have

1, lk 2cos@

—+— => ——

On a

Fig. 19.

U '

where v, = AQ', w= AQ, a=OA, d=angle of incidence QAO, equal to the angle of reflexion Q'AO.? If Q be on the circle described upon OA as diameter, so that w=acos ¢, then Q' lies also upon the same circle; and in this case it follows from the symmetry that the unsymmetrical aberration (depending upon a) vanishes.

central ray, and is to be reckoned positive, whatever may be the signs of w and ¢'. If the semi-angular aperture (w) be x+y, and tan ¢'=1, mn might be as great as four millions before the error of phase would reach $a. If it were desired to usean angular aperture so large that the aberration according to (13) would be injurious, Rowland points out that on his machine there would be no difficulty in applying a remedy by making o

slightly variable towards the edges. Or, retaining o constant, we might attain compensation by so polish- ing the surface as to bring the eircumference slightly forward in comparison with the position it would occupy upon a true sphere.

It may be remarked that these calculations apply to the rays in the primary plane only. The image is greatly atiected with astig- matism; but this is of little consequence, if y in (8) be small enough. Curvature of the primary focal line having a very in- jurious effect upon definition, it may be inferred from the excellent performance of these gratings that y is in fact small. Its value does not appear to have been calculated. The other coefficients in (8) vanish in virtue of the symmetry.

Aber- ration.

The mechanical arrangements for maintaining the focus are of Rowland's great simplicity. The grating at A and the eye-picce at O are mechanical rigidly attached to a bar AO, whose ends rest on carriages, moving arrange-

This disposition is adopted in Rowland's instrument; only, in addition to the central image formed at the angle ¢'=¢@, there are

a series of spectra with various values of ¢', but all disposed upon the same circle. Rowland's investigation is contained in the paper already referred to; but the following account of the theory is in the form adopted by Glazebrook.

In order to find the difference of optical distances between the courses QAQ', QPQ', we have to express QP—QA, PQ'- AQ'. To find the former, we have, if OAQ=¢, AOP=a,

*QP?= wu? + 4a7sin*4w — 4awsin $wsin (fw —) =(u+asingsin w)?— asin*psin 2w + 4asin*4w (a— wcos¢). Now as far as w! 4sin*4w=sin? w+4sin4w, and thus to the same order QP?=(u+asin ¢sin w) —acos¢ (u— acos¢) sin *w + ta (a—ucos¢) sintw. But if we now suppose that Q lies on the circle w=acos@, the middle term vanishes, and we get, correct as far as w4,*

QP-(wtasingsina) , / {14 Zsintesinte} u

*so that QP -u=asingsinw+asin¢tangsintfw . . . (9), in which it is to be noticed that the adjustment necessary to secure the disappearance of sin*w is sufficient also to destroy the term in SIN °'w. A similar expression can be found for Q'P-Q'A; and thus, if Q'A=v, Q'AO=¢', where v=a cos 9', we get QP+ PQ'- QA – AQ'=asin w(sin ¢ – sin ¢') + asin 4w(singtan ¢+sin ¢' tan ¢') (10). If ¢'=¢, the term of the first order vanishes, and the reduction of the difference of path via P and via A to a term of the fourth order*

on rails OQ, AQ at right angles to each other. A tie between C and Q can be used if thought desirable.

*The absence of chromatic aberration gives a great advantage in the comparison of overlapping spectra, which Rowland has turned to excellent account in his determinations of the relative wave- lengths of lines in the solar spectrum.**

For absolute determinations of wave-lengths plane gratings are used. It is found® that the angular measurements present less difficulty than the comparison of the grating interval with the standard metre. There is also some uncertainty as to the actual temperature of the grating when in use. In order to minimize the heating action of the light, it might be submitted to a preliminary prismatic analysis before it reachcs the slit of the spectrometer, after the manner of Von Helmholtz (Optics, vol. xvii. p. 802).

Bell found further that it is necessary to submit the gratings to calibration, and not to rest satisfied with a knowledge of the num- ber of lines and of the total width. It not unfrequently happens that near the beginning of the ruling the interval is anomalous. If the width of this region be small, it has scarcely any effect upon the angular measurements, and should be left out of account in estimating the effective interval.

§ 15. Theory of Corrugated Waves.

The theory of gratings is usually given in a form applicable only to the case where the alternate parts are transparent and opaque. Even then it is very improbable that the process of simply including the transparent parts and excluding the opaque parts in the integrations of § 11 gives an accurate result. The condition of things in actual gratings is inuch more complicated, and all that can with confidence be asserted is the approxi-

ments.

Absolute measure-

ments,

proves not only that Q and Q' are eonjugate foci, but also that the | mate periodicity in the interval ¢. The Wave foci are exempt from the most important term in the aberration. | problem thus presents itself—to determine diverg- In the present application ¢' is not necessarily equal to ¢; but if | the eourse of events on the further side of ing in P correspond to a line upon the grating, the difference of retarda- | the plane z=0 when the amplitude and two tions for consecutive positions of P, so far as expressed by the term | phase over that plane are periodie functions # : dimen- of the first order, will be equal to =-ma (m integral), and therefore | of z; and the first step in the solution Pigs Ms sions,

without influence, provided

o (sing —sing')=-Fma. (11),

1 The ruling required is evidently that which would be marked out by inter- ference bands, supposing sources of light of the prescribed wave-length to be Situated at the radiant point and at the desired image.

2 This formula may be obtained as in Oprics, vol. xvii. p. 800, equation (8), and may indeed be derived from that equation by writing ¢'=¢, u=—lL

3 Phil. Mag., June 1883, Nov. 1883.

would naturally be to determine the effect corresponding to the infinitesimal strip ydx over which the amplitude and phase are constant. In fig. 20 QQ' represents the strip in question, of which the effect is to be estimated at P(0, 0, 2); QR=y, RP=r7, QP =p. ae

If we assume the law of secondary wave determined in § 10 so

4 Phil. Mag., March 1887. 5 Bell, Phil. Mag., March 1887.

Plane uniform wave.

Variable ampli-

tude and but periodic functions of x.

phase.

440

as to suit the resolution of an infinite uniform primary wave, we have, as the effect of QQ',

ie] ade [®Y cos «(at —p+4a) o Ap

x Ae Mea) sin x(at— p) @: The development of this cxpression for the operation of a linear source would take us too far! We must content ourselves with the limiting form assumed when xr is great, as it would almost always be in optics. Under these circumstances the denominator may be simplified by writing

J (p? = 7) = A/(2r). (p= 7); so that (1) becomes

2dx ? d(p-r) . ~ AN/(2r) Jo ee Now sin eu du cosxudts rd Ce of ae Ne

and thus we obtain

- sane k(at — 7) — cosK(at — r)} ' dz, , en sink(at—7—}4Aa) .)) which gives the effect of a linear source at a great distance. The

occurrence of the factor r-? is a consequence of the cylindrical ex- pansion of the waves. The whole effect is retarded one-eighth of a period in comparison with that of the central element, instead of one-quarter of a period as in the case of a uniform wave extending over the whole plane.

The effect of the uniform plane wave can be recovered by inte- grating (2) with respect to x from —o to +, on the supposition that xr is great. We have

ah Pale /r.d(r —2)

Jr Afr. /(r+2).A/(r—2)' and in this, since the only elements which contribute sensibly to the integral are those for which (7 —2) is small, we may write aes S(r+2) 2°

The integral can then be evaluated by the same formula as before, and we get finally cos« (a#—z), the same as if the primary wave were supposed to advance without resolution. The recomposition of the primary wave by integration with rectangular coordinates is thus verified, but only under the limitation, not really required by the nature of the case, that the point at which the effect is to be estimated is distant by a very great number of wave-lengths from the plane of resolution.

We will now suppose that the amplitude and phase of the pri- mary wave at the plane of resolution z=0 are no longer constants, Instead of cosxat simply, we should

have to take in general

A cos (pe +f) cos xat + B cos (px +g) sin «at ; but it will be sufficient for our purpose to consider the first term only, in which we may further put for simplicity A=1, =0. The effect of the linear element at 2, 0, upon a point at é, 2, will be, according to (2),

xe 5 = Ce te sink(at—7- a), where 7 is the distance, expressed by 72=2?+ (x — &)?. Thus, if we write x=t+a, the whole effect is

Se eee

where 7?= 2 + a2.

In the two terms of this integral the elements are in general of rapidly fluctuating sign; and the only important part of the range of integration in (for example) the first term is in the neigh- bourhood of the place where a—«r is stationary in value, or where

pda-xdr=0 . ....., (4),

In general ada-—rdr=0, so that if the values of a and r corre- sponding to (4) be called ao, 79, we have

pg & vaP) Now, in the neighbourhood of these values, if a=a)+a,,

a Kay" vp Pol) ye ery p- «St)- (a – | ;

1 Theory of Sound, § 341,

{ sin (xat + pt — dor — er +pa)

+sin («at — pt —4m—r—pa)}. (3),

(5).

Wavt TADWORY

in which by (5) the term of the first order vanishes. Using this

in (3), we get for the first term +o da. 5 9 -f. TOR) { sin (kat + pt — d9 — Kr) + Pay) cosha,

— cos(xat+ pt — dm — Kr) + pao) sinha," }, where for brevity / is written for ae _# 27 K2 The integration is effected by means of the formula

Log cotati = fy sin du = NACE

and we find K Ine =P) cos (Kat + pi — KT + Pay) . The other term in (8) gives in like manner

K Ine =p) Cos (Kat — pi — Kp + Pao) § so that the complete value is

C08 PE cog at —a/(K2-p?).z } « 6). Ne P { \/(? —p?).2 } (8)

When »=0, we fall back on the uniform plane wave travelling Velocity

with velocity a. In general the velocity is not a, but of pro- wat] n/ (x? — p?) . (7). pagation,

The wave represented by (6) is one in which the amplitude at various points of a wave-front is proportional to cos pé, or cos px; and, beyond the reversals of phase herein implied, the phase is con- stant, so that the wave-surfaces are given by z= constant. The wave thus described moves forward at the velocity given by (7), and with type unchanged.

The above investigation may be regarded as applicable to gratings which give spectra of the first order only. Although « vary, there is no separation of colours. Such a separation requires either a limitation in the width of the grating (here supposed to be infinite), or the use of a focusing lens.

It is important to remark that p has been assumed to be less than x, or o greater than A; otherwise no part of the range of integration in (8) is exempt from rapid fluctuation of sign, and the result must be considered to be zero. The principle that irregularities in a wave-front of periods less than a cannot be pro- pagated is of great consequence. Further light will be thrown upon it by a different investigation to be given presently.

The possibility of the wave represented by (6) is perhaps sufficiently established by the preceding method, but the occur- rence of the factor «/a/(x? – p”) shows that the laws of the secondary wave (determined originally from a consideration of uniform plane waves) was not rightly assumed.

The correct law applicable in any case may be investigated as Cor-

follows. Let us assume that the expression for the wave of given rected periodic time is law of teat f{f~) —4 second- ya] pe? Bley 9) de dy; 3), wave.

and let us inquire what the value of F (x, y) must be in order that the application of Huygens's principle may givea correctresult. From (8)

a /\ zd (—) F(a, y) dx dy, dz d

*pdp\ p / f(s —) = rie dp\ p p**

We propose now to find the limiting value of dy/dz when z is very

small. The value of the integral will depend upon those elements . only for which z and y are very small, so that we replace F(a, y) in the limit by F(0, 0). Also, in the limit,

*2 d fe—**P -% ee pe*

so that

and

Limit v Ge NO, 0). a

The proper value of ¢" F(a, y) is therefore that of —dy/dz at the same point (x, y, 0) divided by 2m, and we have in general*

In the case of the uniform plane wave, (at —z)

woe , ab/dze= -%.

; Ge teat eo —iKp gix(at—p+}A) —— ——dx dy = —— f eS ae ae =, fe

agreeing with what we have already found for the secondary wave in this case,

(9).

ix(at—z) Ke 3

so that

WAVE THEORY

But, if p=cos px. clet—V(?—p?). 2],

. (2=0) = -—ta/(x? — p?) cos px eas B

Daeg ix(at—p-+HAr) — AY wos pe dady .

2a The occurrence of the anomalous factor in (6) is thus explained. It must be admitted that the present process of investigation is rather artificial ; and the cause lies in the attempt to dispense with the differential equation satisfied by y, viz.,

and

*ay ey Oyo, at ap age * ~y=0 (10), on which in the case of sound the whole theory is based. It is in*

fact easy to verify that any value of y included under (8), where pa (E—2)+ (n-y)?+ (2, satisfies the cquation Py dy Py ae dy? dt? When there is no question of resolution by Huygens's principle, the distinction between ¢, 7 and x, ¥ may be dropped. Starting from the differential equation, we may recover previous

+e~=0.

44]

then shows that the field is uniform: when the screen occupies positions midway between those which give the most distinct patterns. These results are of interest in connexion with the photographic reproduction of gratings.

§ 16. Talbot's Bands.

These very remarkable bands are seen under certain conditions when a tolerably pure spectrum is regarded with the naked eye, or with a telescope, half the aperture being covered by a thin plate, @.9., of glass or mica. The view of the matter taken by the dis- coverer" was that any ray

which suffered in traversing the plate a retardation of an odd number of half wave-lengths would be extinguished, and that thus the spectrum would be seen inter- rupted by a number of dark bars. But this explanation cannot be accepted as it stands, being open to the same objection as Arago's theory of stellar scintillation.® It is as far as possible from being true that a body emitting homogeneous light would disappear on merely covcring half the aperture of vision with a half-wave plate. Such a conclusion would be in the face of the principle of energy, which teaches plainly that the retardation in question leaves the ageregate brightness unaltercd. The actual formation of the bands comes about in a very curious way, as is shown by a circumstance

first observed by Brewster. When the retarding plate is held on Brew- the side towards the red of the spectrum, the bands are not seen. ster's ob-

results very simply. If y be proportional to cospx cosqy, we have 2 Even in the eontrary case, the thickness of the plate must not serva-

Corruga- tions of

d 9 2 Get (ep) $0 (a1), If «?—p?~~¢?=p2, w being real, the solution of (11) is p=ne™ + Be, where A and B are independent of z Restoring the factors in~~ volving ¢, 2, y, we may write p= cos pa cos gyl a Meattue) 4 B lleat—me)} (12), of which the first term may be dropped when we contemplate waves travclling in the positive direction only. The corresponding realized solution 1s of the type y=cos pa cos gy cos{ at — 4/ (1? —p-q).z . (18). When «?>(p?+9"), the wave travels without change of type and

with velocity os

exceed a certain limit, however pure the spectrum may be. satisfaetory explanation of these bands was first given by Airy,' but we shall here follow the investigation of Stokes,® limiting ourselves, however, to the case where the retarded and unretarded beanis are contiguous and of equal width. The aperture of the unretarded beain may thus be taken to be limited by z= —h, x=0, y= —1, y—=+1; and that of the beam retarded by R to be given by ~=0, 2=h, y=-l, y=+1. For the former (1) § 11 gives

spf Jy sine tpt \ dedy

a ee ee ee sf a oe ee ai on integration and reduction.

(1),

V=—5 oe (14). For the retarded stream the only difference is that we must sub- V(x? — p? — 7) tract R from at, and that the limits of x are 0 and+h. We thus We have now to consider what occurs when «°<(p?+92). If we get for the disturbance at £, 7 due to this stream write x? — p? — q?= — p?, we have in place of (12) Qin f . «nl Of . wth . th Y=cos px cos qy{ A cleat tHe 4 B gteat—ne} : (15); ay sin eh sin 5F 'sin { at —f- Rt oF (ey and for the realized solution corresponding to (18) If we put for shortness 7 for the quantity under the last circnlar Y=cos pa cos gy e— cos eat . (16). | function in (1), the expressions (1), (2) may be put under the

We conclude that under these circumstances the motion rapidly diminishes as z increases, and that no wave in the usual sense can be propagated at all.

It follows that corrugations of a reflecting surface (no matter how deep) will not disturb the regularity of a perpendicularly reflected

forms usint, vsin(r—a) respectively ; and, if I be the intensity, I will be measured by the sum of the squares of the coefficients of sin + and cos 7 in the expression

usin + sin (tr —«), so that

Period wave, provided the wave-length of the corrugation do not exceed T=u?2? 2uv cosa,

less that of the vibration. And, whatever the former wave-length may | which becomcs on putting for w, v, and « their values, and putting than A be in relation to the latter, regular reflexion will occur when the y nl) 2

die out. incidence is sufficiently oblique. sin — } =()) . (3),

The first form of solution may be applied to give an explanation pees f ,

Shadow of the appearances observed when a plane wave traverses a parallel —(Ay ein 2a { Dee ege 2nR =e)} (4) of a coarse grating and then impinges upon a screen held at varying mt? wa BEN TNE D Ys ; grating. distances behind.' As the general expression of the wave periodic | 1¢ the subject of examination be a luminous line parallel to y, we

with respect to x in distance « we may take Aycos (kat — xz) + A, cos(pu+jf,) cos(Kat — 42) + By cos(p+ g,) sin (at — 42) + A,cos(2px +fy) cosx(at — poz) +..., where pH2rlo, e=2n/r, and pP=K?~~p, peta — ABs the series being continued as long as » is real. We shall here, however, limit ourselves to the first three terms, and in them sup~~ pose A, and B, to be small relatively to Ay. The intensity may then be represented by Ag? + 2A9A, cos (px-+f) cos (2 — p22)

+ 2A,)B,cos (pa +g)sin (Kz — p42) . (ly) The stripes thrown upou the screen in various positions are thus periodic functions of z, and the period is

2am Eg Ne P) OK

if A be supposed small in comparison with c. It may be noticed that, if the position of the screen be altered by the half of this amount, the effect is equivalent to a shifting parallel to 2 through the distance 4¢. Hence, if the grating consists of alternate trans- parent and opaque parts of width 40, the stripes seen upon the screen are reversed wlien thie latter is drawn back through the dis- tance o/aA. In this case we may supposc B, to vanish, and (17)*

(18),

1 Phil. Mag., March 1881, "On Copying Diffraction Gratings and on Some Phenomena Connected Therewith."

shall obtain what we require by integrating (4) with respect to 7 from—o to+o. The constant multiplier is of no especial interest, so that we may take as applicable to the image of a line

If R=}a, I vanishes at ¢=0; but the whole illumination, repre-

+

sented ryf; a dt, is independent of the value of R. If R=0,

1 : 2

I= PE sin? 2 » in agreement with § 11, where a has the meaning

here attached to 2h.

The expression (5) gives the illumination at ¢ due to that part of the complete image whose geometrical focus is at ¢=0, the retardation for this component being R. Since we have now to integrate for the whole illumination at a particular point O due to all the components which have their foci in its neighbourhood, we

Im sin 2

2 Phil. Mag., x. p. 864, 1837.

3 On account of inequalities in the atmosphere giving a variable refraction, the light from a star would be irregularly distributed over ascreen. The experiment is easily made on a laboratory scale, with a small source of light, the rays from which, in their course towards a rather distant scrcen, are disturbed by the neighbourhood of a heatcd body. At amoment when the eye, or object-glass of a telescope, occupies a dark position, the star vanishes. A fraction of a second later the aperture occupies a bright place, and the star reappears. According to this view the chromatic effects depend entirely upon atmospheric dispersion.

4 Phil. Trans., 1840, p. 225; 1841, p. 1. 5 Phil. Trans., 1848, p. 227.

XXIV. — 56

A tions.

Best thick- ness,

442

may conveniently regard O as origin. ¢& is then the coordinate relatively to O of any focal point O° for which the retardation is R ; and the required result is obtained by simply integrating (5) with respect to from —o to +0. To each value of & corresponds a different value of A, and (in consequence of the dispersing power of the plate) of R. The variation of A may, however, be neglected in the integration, except in 27R/a, where a small variation of A entails a comparatively large alteration of phase. If we write

p=2rR/a ww, Oe OS (6), we must regard p asa function of t, and we may take with sufficient approximation under any ordinary circumstances

hom p. +a. (7), where p' denotes the value of p at O, and wis a constant, which is positive when the retarding plate is held at the side on which the blue of the spectrum 7s seen. The possibility of dark bands depends upon @ being positive. Only in this case can

cos{p' +(a- Qah/rf)e } retain the constant value —1 throughout the integration, and then only when

(8),

e603 p= lh yy ae ee FO)

The first of these equations is the condition for the formation of

dark bands, and the second marks their situation, which is the same as that determined by the imperfect theory.

The integration can be effected without much difficulty. For

the first term in (5) the evaluation is effected at once by a known formula. In the second term it we observe that

cos{p' + (a- Qah/rf) E} =cos{ p' – gt} = 08 pcos %¢+Sin p' sin HE, we see that the second part vanishes when integrated, and that the remaining integral is of the form

w=" sin hak cose os

w= Qnh/raf and

where h=Th/Af, (= a—-Qrh/af (10). By differentiation with respect to g, it may be proved that w=0 from 4=-0© to 9,=-2h,, w=4n(2h,+9,) from g,=-— 2h, to g,=0, w=tn(2h,-9,) from g;= 0 to 9,=2h,, w=0 from 9,=22, to g=c. The integrated intensity, I', or Qrh,+2cospw, is thus I =2nh, (11),

when g, numerically exceeds 2/,; and, when g, lies between + 2h/,, T= { 2h, + (2h, — 4/92) cos p'} . (12). It appears therefore that there are no bands at all unless lies between 0 and +4h/,, and that within these limits the best bands are formed at the middle of the range when w=2h,. The formation of bands thus requires that the retarding plate be held upon the side already specified, so that = be positive ; and that the thickness of the plate (to which is proportional) do not exceed a certain limit, which we may call 2T,. At the best thickness T, the bands are black, and not otherwise. The linear width of the band (e) is the increment of ¢ which alters p by 2m, so that

e=2n/a . (18). With the best thickness w=2nh/af (14), so that in this case e=Aflh . (15).

Width of The bands are thus of the same width as those due to two infinitely

bands.

Experi- mental condi- tions.

narrow apertures coincident with the central lines of the retarded and unretarded streams, the subject of examination being itself a fine luminous line.

If it be desired to see a given number of bands in the whole or in any part of the spectrum, the thickness of the retarding plate is thereby determined, independently of all other considerations. But in order that the bands may be really visible, and still more in order that they may be black, another condition must be satisfied. It is necessary that the aperture of the pupil

be accommodated to the angular extent of the spectrum, or reciprocally. Black bands will be too fine to be well seen unless the aperture (2h) of the pupil besomewhat contracted. One-twentieth to one-fiftieth of an inch is suitable. The aperture and the number of bands being both fixed, the condition of blackness determines the angular magni- tude of a band and of the spectrum. The use of a grating is very convenient, for not only are there several spectra in view at the same time, but the dispersion can be varied continuously by sloping the grating. Theslits may be cut out of tin-plate, and half covered by mica or ' microscopic glass," held in position by a little cement.*

WAVE THEORY

If a telescope be employed there is a distinction to be observed,

Use of

according as the half-covered aperture is between the eye and telescope,

the ocular, or in front of the object-glass. In the former case the function of the telescope is simply to increase the dispersion, and the formation of the bands is of course independent of the par- ticular manner in which the dispersion arises. If, however, the half-ecovered aperture be in front of the object-glass, the pheno- menon is magnified as a whole, and the desirable relation between the (unmagnified) dispersion and the aperture is the same as with- out the telescope. There appears to be no further advantage in the use of a telescope than the increased facility of accommodation, and for this of course a very low power suflices.

The original investigation of Stokes, here briefly sketched, ex- More tends also to the case where the streams are of unequal width general

h, k, and are separated by an interval 2g.

In the case of unequal investiga.

width the bands cannot be black; but if h=k, the finiteness of tion of

2g does not preclude the formation of black bands. The theory of Talbot's bands with a half-covered circular aperture has been treated by H. Struve.!

§ 17. Diffraction when the Source of Light is not Seen in Focus.

The phenomena to be considered under this head are of less importance than those investigated by Fraunhofer, and will be treated in less detail; but, in view of their historical interest and of the ease with which many of the experiments may be tried, some account of their theory could not be excluded from such a work as the present. One or two examples have already attracted our attention when considering Huygens's zones, viz., the shadow of a circular disk, and of a screen circularly perforated ; but the most famous problem of this class—first solved by Fresnel—relates to the shadow of a screen bounded by a straight edge.

In theoretical investigations these problems are usually treated as of two dimensions only, everything being referred to the. plane passing through the luminous point and perpendicular to the dif- fracting edges, supposed to be straight and parallel. In strictness this idea is appropriate only when the source is a luminous line, emitting cylindrical waves, such as might be obtained from a luminous point with the aid of a cylindrical lens. When, in order to apply Huygens's principle, the wave is supposed to be broken up, the phase is the same at every clement of the surface of resolution which lies upon a line perpendicular to the plane of reference, and thus the effect of the whole line, or rather infinitesimal strip, is related in a constant manner (§ [5) to that of the element which lies in the plane of reference, and may be considered to be repre- sented thereby. The same method of representation

is applicable to spherical waves, issuing from a point, .

if the radius of curvature be large; for, although

there is variation of phase along the length of the P infinitesimal strip, the whole effect depends practi- A

cally upon that of the central parts where the phase is sensibly constant.?

*In fig. 21 APQ is the are of the circle representa- eh tive of the wave-front of resolution, the centre being _—*Fig- 21. at O, and the radius OA being equal to a. B is the point at which the effect is required, distant a+b from O, so that AB=); AP=s, PQ=ds.*

Taking as the standard phase that of the secondary wave from A, we may represent the effect of PQ by

cos ae (2 ->) ds, T OX

where 6=BP—AP is the retardation at Bof the wave from P relatively to that from A.

Now ‘ 5=(a+b)s/2ab . (1), so that, if we write 2n5 _ x(a +b)s? Te (2) i. wa. 2 Ye FY ce ee the effect at B is sa oh . cos att [es $nv*.dv +sin = f sin 4rv* . dv (8),*

the limits of integration depending upon the disposition of the diffracting edges. When a, 6, A are regarded as constant, the first factor may be omitted, —as indeed should be done for consistency’s sake, inasmuch as other factors of the same nature have been omitted already.

The intensity I, the quantity with which we are principally concerned, may thus be expressed*

P={ feos dnv®.dv}?+ { fsin drv.do}? oe oe*

1 St Petersburg Trans., xxxi., No. 1, 1883.

2 In experiment a line of light is sometimes substituted for a point in order to increase the illumination. The various parts of the line are here independent sources, and should be treated accordingly. To assume a cylindrical form of primary wave would be justifiable only when there is synchronism among the secondary waves issuing from the various centres.

Stokes,

:

Fresnel's i

integrals.

<<

Knocken- hauer's series.

- Gilbert's integrals.

Cauchy's series,

Straight edge,

WwaAWYeT THEORY

These integrals, taken from v=0, are known as Fresnel's integrals ; we will denote them by C and §, so that

v a, C -[cos 4nv7.dv, S -/{ sin 4av, dv (5).

0 0

When the upper limit is infinity, so that the limits correspond to the inclusion of half the primary wave, C and § are both equal to 4, by a known formula ; and on account of the rapid fluctuation of sign the parts of the range beyond very moderate values of v con- tribute but little to the result.

Aseending series for C and S were given by Knockenhauer, and are readily investigated. Integrating by parts, we find

: v there? tdny2 : vy t.grv2 o+i8=/"%e dv=e ™ wn hinfe ~ Ge:

0 0

and, by continuing this process, tn tn tm in 6 What. <6 L

b tine? tn id C+iS=e ~ 8 ae +4 v OP ae v 3°57 f

3 3 5

By separation of real and imaginary parts,

C=M cos 4rv?+ N sin rv? S =Msin 4rv?- N cos ir (6), where ue? er aiy? a le) ae (7); N re ry? qoyll ras ei? Lee. 7 oll (8).

These series are convergent for all values of v, but are practically useful only when v is sinall.

Expressions suitable for discussion when v is large were obtained by Gilbert… Taking

*é amv =U . (9), we may write — , ueiug, ee Gao Ne: a Again, by a known formula, ites NN NN us Substituting this in (10), and inverting the order of integration, we get 6 1 ce aha u u(i—x) Cee fe y oo dee mr/2fy ru So 1 way Cpe al Taal Ja i-e ae Thus, if we take 1 e—urr/x, dx 1 ° e-undy (.—RON Ha ES a pe Ce oy) eo m/2/y Jx(l+x) * (18), C=4-Geosu+Hsinu, S=4-Gsinu—Heoswu . (14).*

The constant parts in (14), viz. 4, may be determined by direct integration of (12), or from the observation that by their constitu- tion G and H vanish when uw=oo, coupled with the fact that C and § then assume the value 3.

Comparing the expressions for C, S in terms of M, N, and in terms

of G, H, we find that

G=(cosu+sinw)-M, H=2(cosw—sinw)+N . (15), formule which may be utilized for the calculation of G, H when 2 (or v) is small. For example, when «=0, M=0, N=0, and con- sequently G=H=},

Descending series of the semi-convergent class, available for numerical calculation when w is moderately large, can be obtained from (12) by writing x=wy, and expanding the denominator in powers of y. The integration of the several terms may then be effected by the formula

” © oly hay = 1(¢+4)=(¢-BG-B). AV

and we get in terms of v

Ge 1 1.3.5, 1.8.5.7.9 7 er qoyll (16), St Ae TD Wye ru (17).

The corresponding values of C and 8 were originally derived by

ey, without the use of Gilbert's integrals, by direct integration y parts.

From the series for Gand H just obtained it is easy to verify that

(18).

_ We now proceed to consider more particularly the distribution of light upon a screen PBQ near the shadow of a straight edge A. At a point P within the geometrical shadow of the obstacle, the half of the wave to the right of C (fig. 22), the nearest point on the

a, Mém. couronnés de lV Acad. de Bruxelles, xxxi. 1. See also Verdet, Lecons,

443

wave-front, is wholly intercepted, and on the left the integra- tion is to be taken from s=CA to s=o, If V be the value of v corresponding to CA, viz.,

= 2(a + b) ve ee ote ! (OL (19), we may write DN wo 2 = (f cos Ano? dv) Cf sin dne. dv) : (20),*

Vv Vv or, according to our previous notation,

I?=(4- Cy)?<u>?=G?</u> H?. C21);

Now in the integrals represented by G and H every element No bands diminishes as V increases from zero. Hence, as 0 inside CA increases, viz., as the point P is more and shadow. more deeply immersed in the shadow, the illumi- nation continwously decreases, and that without limit. It has long been known from observa- tion that there are no bands on the interior side of the shadow of the edge.

The law of diminution when V is mode- = rately large is easily expressed with the aid of Fig. 22. the series (16), (17) for G, H. We have ultimately G=0, H=(7V)-}, so that

PHlpey?,..

or the illumination is inversely as the square of the distance from the shadow of the edge.

For a point Q outside the shadow the integration extends over more than half the primary wave. The intensity may be expressed by

I2=(4+Cy)?? (22); and the maxima and minima occur when aC ds ($ Cv) ay + (8 +8v) Fy =9, whence sin 4rV2+cos$aV7=G (28).

When V=0, viz., at the edge of the shadow, I?=4; when V=o,

I?=2, on the scale adopted. The latter is the intensity due to the uninterrupted wave. The quadrupling of the intensity in passing Position outwards from the edge of the shadow is, however, accompanied by of ex- fluctuations giving rise to bright and dark bands, The position terior of these bands determined by (23) may be very simply expressed bands. when V is large, for then sensibly G=0, an

4a V2=3a+n0 . (24), n being an integer. In terms of 5, we have from (2) S=(F+4n)a . (25).

The first maximum in fact occurs when 5= 2a — '0046, and the first minimum when = {a — 0016a,? the correctious being readily obtainable from a table of G by substitution of the approximate value of V.

The position of Q corresponding toa given value of V, that is, Hyper- to a band of given order, is by (19) bolic pro-

BQ= ie of bands. By means of this expression we may trace the locus of a band of given order as } varies. With sufficient approximation we may regard BQ and Jas rectangular coordinates of Q. Denoting them by x, y, so that AB is axis of y and a perpendicular through A the axis of x, and

rationalizing (26), we have Qax— Vay? — Vaay=0, which represents a hyperbola with vertices at O and A. From (24), (26) we see that the width of the bands is of the order 4/{ba(a+0)/a}. From this we may infer the limitation upon the width of the source of light, in order that the bands may be properly formed. If w be the apparent magnitude of the source seen from A, wb should be much smaller than the above quantity, or w*

2 Verdet, Lecons, § 90. i 3 "Die Beugungserscheinungen geradlinig begrenzter Schirme," AbA. bayer.

Akad. der Wiss., ii, Cl., xv. Bd., ifi, Abth., 1886.

v 2

a

27413 Fresnel' s 1:5570 | table, 2°3990

1°6867

First maximum…. First minimum….. Second maximum.. Second minimum..| 2°7392 Third maximum…| 3°0820 | 2°3022 Third minimum….| 3°3913 | 1°7440

ES

12172

1°8726 2°3449

Cornu's method.

Diffrac- tion through a slit.

444

When the funetions C and S have once been calculated, the discussion of various diffraction problems is much facilitated by the idea, due to Cornu,! of exhibiting as a curve the relationship between C and 8,

considered as the rectangular coordinates (x, y) of a point. Such a curve is shown in fig. 23, where, according to the definition (5) of C, 8,

v Vv af cos $rv.dv, y= sin drv?, dv*

The origin of coordinates O corresponds to v=0 ; and the asymptotic points J, J', round which the curve revolves in an ever-closing spiral, correspond to v=+o.

The intrinsic equation, expressing the relation between the arc o (measured from O) and the inclination ¢ of the tangent at any point to the axis of x, assumes a very simple form. For

dx=cos$rv2.dv, dy=sindrv2.dv;

(29),

*so that =f /(da?+dy)=%, (30), Ly @=tan-} z =r? (31). Accordingly, * Ge Vite wo oe fe (32); and for the curvature, tno (33).*

Cornu remarks that this equation suffices to determine the general character of the curve. For the osculating circle at any point includes the whole of the curve which lies beyond ; and the suecessive con- volutions envelop one another with- out intersection,

The utility of the curve depends upon the fact that the elenients of are represent, in ampli- tude and phase, the component vibra- tions due to the corresponding por- tions of the pri- mary wave-front. For by (380) do = adv, Fig. 23, and by (2)dvis proportional to ds. Moreover by (2) and (31) the retardation of phase of the elementary vibration from PQ (fig. 21) is 2r8/a, or @. Hence, in accordance with the rule for compounding vector quantitics, the resultant vibration at B, due to any finite part of the primary wave, is represented in amplitude and phase by the chord joining the extremities of the corresponding are (¢,— 4).

In applying the curve in special cases of diffraction to exhibit the effect at any point P (fig. 22) the centre of the curve O is to be considered to correspond to that point C of the primary wave-front which lies nearest to

P. The operative part, or parts, of the curve are of course those which represent the unobstructed portions of the primary wave.

Let us reconsider, following Cornu, the diffraction of a screen unlimited on one side, and on the other terminated by a straight edge. On the illuminated side, at a distance from the shadow, the vibration is represented by JJ'. The coordinates of J, J' being (4, 4), (~~4, —4), I? is 2; and the phase is 4 period in arrear of that of theelement at O. As the point under contemplation is sup~~ posed to approach the shadow, the vibration is represented by the chord drawn from J to a point on the other half of the curve, which travels inwards from J' towards O. The amplitude is thus subject to fluctuations, which increase as the shadow is approached. At the point O the intensity is one-quarter of that of the entire wave, and after this point is passed, that is, when we have entered the geometrical shadow, the intensity falls off gradually to zero, without jiuctuations. The whole progress of the phenomenon is thus ex- hibited to the eye in a very instructive manner,

We will next suppose that the light is transmitted by a slit, and inquire what is the effect of varying the width of the slit upon the illumination at the projection of its centre. Under these circum- stances the arc to be considered is bisected at O, and its length is proportional to the width of the slit. It is easy to see that the length of the chord (which passes in all cases through O) increases to a maximum near the place where the phase-retardation is 2 of a period, then diminishes to a minimum when the retardation is about of a period, and so on.

If the slit is of constant width and we require the illumination at various points on the screen behind it, we must regard the arc

1 Journal de Physique, iit. p.1,1874. A similar suggestion has recently been made indepeudently by Fitzgerald.

of the curve as of constant length. The intensity is then, asalways, represented by the square of the length of the chord. If the slit be narrow, so that the arc is short, the intensity is constant over a wide range, and

does not fall off to an important extent until the discrepancy of the extreme phases reaches about a quarter of a

eriod, ¥ We have hitherto supposed that the shadow of a diffracting Silvery obstacle is received upon a diffusing screen, or, which comes to lining nearly the same thing, is observed with an eye-piece. If the eye, of an provided if necessary with a perforated plate in order to reduce the obstacle. aperture, be situated inside the shadow at a place where the illumina- tion is still sensible, and be focused upon the diffracting edge, the light which it receives will appear to come from the neighbourhood of the edge, and will present the effect of a silver lining. This is doubtless the explanation of a "pretty optical phenomenon, seen in Switzerland, when the sun rises from behind distant trees stand- ing on the summit of a mountain." 2

§ 18. Diffraction Symmetrical about an Axis.

The general problem of the diffraction pattern due to a source of light concentrated in a point, when the system is symmetrical about an axis, has been ably investigated by Lommel.? "We must content ourselves here with a very slight sketch of some of his results.

Spherical waves, centred upon the axis, of radius a fall upon | the diffracting screen; and the illumination is required ona second | screen, like the first_ perpendicular to the axis, at a distance (a+b) | from the source. We have first to express the distance (d) between | an element dS of the wave-front and a point M in the plane of the | second screen. Let ¢denote the distance of M from the axis of symmetry ; then, if we take an axis of # to pass through M, the coordinates of M are (¢ 0, 0). On the same system the coordinates of dS are

asin@cos?, asiné@sing, a(1—cosé@)+); and the distance is given by

P= + (2— 2aCsin 6cos p+ 4a(a+b) sin 240. In this expression ¢ and @ are to be treated as small quantities, Writing p for a sin 6, we get approximately

4,07 (eosg atbd, age P+ oab

2

bb

The vibration at the wave-front of resolution being denoted by a- cos 2Qnt/r,

the integral expressive of the resultant of the secondary waves is

(§ 17) . :

aL] sree? -2)as (2).

Substituting p dp d¢ for dS, and for d its value from (1), we obtain as the expression for the intensity at the point ¢

ao

uy P= BAS (C? +8?) (3), | where C=// cos (sp? — Ip cos ¢).p dp dd, (4), 48=// sin (dup? — Ip cos ¢).pdpdd (5), and the following abbreviations have been introduced Qratb — Sat a 2b 2? QR! (8).

The range of integration is for ¢ from 0 to 2x. The limits for p depend upon the partieular problem in hand; but for the sake of definiteness we will suppose that in the analytical definitions of Cand § the limits are 0 and 7, so as to apply immediately to the problem of a circular aperture of radius 7. If we introduce the notation of Bessel's functions, we have

r C=27 4 J (Zp) cos ($xp?). p dp (7).

(8).

By integration by parts of these expressions Lommel develops Lommel's series suitable for calculation. Setting series.

la S=2r A Jo(Zp) sin (4xp?). p dp

cr=y, lr=z (9), he finds in the first place C=nr ae v.49 U, (10), 2 § sin dy cos 4y sis yo} ay Ue (11),

*2 Necker, Phil. Mag., Nov. 1832; Fox Talbot, Phil. Mag., June 1833. '*When the sun is about to emerge… . every branch and leaf is lighted up with asilvery lustre of indescribable beauty. .... The birds, as Mr Necker very truly de- scribes, appear like flying brilliant sparks." Talbot ascribes the appearance to diffraction; and he recommends the use of a telescope.*

3 Abh. der bayer. Akad, der Wiss., ii. Cl., xv. Bd., ii. Abth.

4 Used now in an altered sense.

Shadow of cir- cular disk.

Condition of mathe. matical

similarity.

"Tay Eb THEO R Y 445

where

3

Uy! 54 2) -& Sale) + GI) ee oe Ci

2 a Ua 25 Ja(e)— GI) + Da ee. OD

These series are convenient when y is less than 2. The second set of expressions are

2) wae". sinlsey costy,.) SS sine 22 Vy eee ah gata ge a) geo S 2. 6 cosdy. simay S=ar) peosge – SEALY, oe – + + (15), where Be ZA Vo=Jol@) 7a Sole) t aa Julz)—- – + (16), z 2 Vi= 7 A@)— 98 JA a. ke a ee

Thesc serics are suitable when z/y is small. When the primary wave is complete, r=, and we have at once from the second set of expressions tee 4 OF Qa i Ca = sings Sco =" COS. se (18), so that Pe a ObAZ (a+b) " as we know it should be. In the application to the problem of the shadow of a circular disk the limits of integration are from 7 tooo. If these integrals be denoted by C', 8', we have

(19),

‘ 5 sin 42 cos 4 C’=Cn – Cami?) – 7m Vet ang a (CA0y , 4 sin S—ce ~Sanrt | ay, + my, t. . . (21); and 4x? Ch Pee Ve 1) Ha 4 Go BON Moe a a 5 te A (23).

When the point where the illumination is required is situated upon the axis, ¢, 7, z are zero. Hence V)=1,V,=0, and il

| eee (a+b? the same as if the primary wave had come on unbroken. This is Poisson’s theorem, already found (§ 10) by a mueh simpler method, in which attention: is limited from the first to points upon the axis. The distribution of light at other points upon the screen is to be found from (23) by means of the series (16), (17) for Vy and V,. Lommel gives eurves for the intensity when y=7, 2r, 37, ... 6x. The bright central spot is accompanied by rings of vary- ing intensity. The limit of the geometrical shadow [¢/(a+b)=7/a] corresponds to y=z. In this case Vo=Jo(2) ~~—Ix(z) +IA2) — ..~~=F{Io(z)+eosz} . . (24), Vi =J,(2) -J3(z)+-d,(z)- ...=$sineg . . . . . (25). The numbers computed for special values of y and z apply to a whole classof problems. Since alt ath re) aul e MO RE both y and z remain unchanged, even when A is constant, if we suppose

vr,

CCH, TERESA. . » « « E26). We may fall back upon Fraunhofer’s phenomena by supposing a=b=o, or more generally b= —a, so that y=0-

Under these circumstances cer = 920.

But it is unnecessary to add anything further under this head.

§ 19. Polarization.

_A ray of ordinary light is symmetrical with respect to the direc- tion of propagation. If, for example, this direction be vertical, there is nothing that can be said concerning the north and south sides of the ray that is not equally true concerning the east and west sides. In polarized light this symmetry is lost. Huygens showed that when a ray of such light falls upon

a crystal of Iceland spar, which is made to revolve about the ray as an axis, the pheno- mena vary in a manner not to be represented as a mere revolution

with the spar. In Newton's language, the ray itself has sides, or is polarized.

Malus discovered that ordinary light may be polarized by-reflexion Brew- as well as by double refraction; and Brewster proved that the ster's effect is nearly complete when the tangent of the augle of incidence law. is equal to the refractive index, or (which comes to the same) when the reflected and refracted rays are perpendicular to one another. ae light thus obtained is said to be polarized in the plane of re-

exion.

Reciprocally, the character of a polarized ray may be revealed by

submitting it to the test of reflexion at the appropriate angle. As the normal to the reflecting surface revolves (in a cone) about the ray, there are two azimuths of the plane of incidence, distant 180°, at which the reflexion is a maximum, aud two others, distant 90° from the former, at which the reflexion (nearly) vanishes. In the latter case the plane of incidence is perpendicular to that in which the light must be supposed to have been reflected in order to acquire its polarization.

The full statement of the law of double refraction is somewhat Double coinplicated, and scarcely to be made intelligible except in terms refrac- of the wave theory; but, in order merely to show the relation of tion. double refraction in' a uniaxal crystal, such as Iceland spar, to polarized light, we may take the case of a prism so cut that the refracting edge is parallel to the optic axis. By traversing such a prism, in a plane perpendicular to the edge, a ray of ordinary light is divided into two, of equal intensity, each of which is re- fracted according to the ordinary law of Snell. Whatever may be the angle and setting of the prism, the phenomenon may be repre- sented by supposing half the light to be refracted with one index (1°65), and the other half with the different index (1°48). The rays thus arising are polarized,—the one more

refracted in thc plane of refraction, and the other in the perpendicular plane. If these rays arc now allowed to fall upon a second similar prism, held so that its edge is parallel to that of the first prism, there is no further duplication. The ray first refracted with index 1°65 is refracted again in like manner, and similarly the ray first refracted with index 1°48 is again so refracted. But the case is altered if the second prism be caused to rotate about the incident ray. If the rotation be through an angle of 90°, each ray is indeed refracted singly ; but the indices are exchanged. The ray that suffered most refraction at the first prism now suffers least at the second, and vice versa, At intermediate rotations the double refraction reasserts itself, each ray being divided into two, refracted with the above-mentioned indices, and of intensity dependent upon the amount of rotation, but always such that no light is lost (or gained) on the whole by the separation.

The law governing the intensity was formulated by Malus, and Law of has been verified by the measures of Arago and other workers. If Malus. be the angle of rotation from the position in which one of the rays is at a maximum, while the other vanishes, the intensities are proportional to cos? and sin?@. On the same scale, if we neglect the loss by reflexion and absorption, the intensity of the incident light is represented by unity.

A similar law applies to the intensity with which a polarized ray is reflected from a glass surface at the Brewsterian angle. If be reckoned from the azimuth of maximum reflexion, the intensity at other angles may be represented by cos, vanishing when 6=90°.*

The phenomena here briefly sketched force upon us the view Trans- that the vibrations of light are transverse to the direction of pro- verse pagation. In ordinary light the vibrations are as much in one vibra- transverse direction as in another ; and when such light falls upon tions. a doubly refracting, or reflecting, medium, the vibrations arc resolved into two definite directions, constituting two rays polarized in perpendicular planes, and differently influenced by the medium.

In this case the two rays are necessarily of equal intensity.

Consider, for example, the application of this idea to the reflexion of a ray of ordinary light at the Brewsterian, or polarizing, angle. The incident light may be resolved into two, of equal intensity, and polarized respectively in and perpendicular to the plane of incidence. Now we know that a ray polarized in the plane per- pendicular to that of incidence will not be reflected, will in fact be entirely transmitted; and the necessary consequence is that all the light reflected at this angle will be polarized in the plane of inei- dence. The operation of the plate is thus purely selective, the polarized component, which is missing in the reflected light, being represented in undue proportion in the transmitted light.

If the incident light be polarized, suppose at an angle with the plane of incidence, the incident vibration may be resolved into cos in the one plane and sin@ in the other. The latter polarized component is not reflected. The reflected light is thus in all cases polarized in the plane of reflexion ; and its intensity, proportional to the square of the vibration, is represented by heos"8, if h be the intensity in which light is reflected when polarized in the plane of reflexion. The law of Malus is thus a necessary consequence of the principle of resolution. .

The idea of transverse vibrations was admitted with reluctance, Elastic even by Young and Fresnel themselves. A perfect fluid, such as solid the ethereal medium was then supposed to be, is essentially incap: theory.

able of transverse vibrations. But there seems to be no reason @ priori for preferring one kind of vibration to another; and the phenomena of polarization prove conclusively that, if luminous vibrations are analogous to those of a material medium, it is to solids, and not to fluids, that we must look. An isotropic solid is capable of propagating two distinct kinds of waves,—the first

The phase-relations being unknown, this quantity is quite indeter- minate. But, since each cosine varies from moment to moment, and on the whole is as much positive as negative, the mean intensity is

M(a,2)+M(a”)+..., that is to say, is to be found by simple addition of the separate intensities,

dependent upon rigidity, or the force by which shear is resisted, and the second analogous to waves of sound aud dependent upon In the former the vibrations are transverse to

Let us now dispense with the restriction to one direction of Elliptic vibration, and consider in the first place the character of a regular polariza- tion.

Medium The possibility of longitudinal waves, in which the displacement | to one plane, so that the light is not plane-polarized, but, in con- incom- is perpendicular to the wave-front, is an objection to the elastic formity with the path denoted by (2), it is said to be eddiptically- pressible. solid theory of light, for there is nothing known in optics corre- polarized. If one of the constituents of elliptically-polarized light sponding thereto. If, however, we suppose with Green that the be suitably accelerated or retarded relatively to the other, it may medium is incompressible, the velocity of longitudinal waves be- | be converted into plane-polarized light, and so identified by the comes infinite, and the objection is in great degree obviated. Such usual tests. Or, conversely, plane-polarized light may be converted a supposition is hardly a departure from the original idea, inas- | into elliptically-polarized by a similar operation. The relative much as, so far as we know, there is nothing to prevent a solid } acceleration in question is readily effected by a plate of doubly material possessing these properties, and an approximation is actu- | refracting crystal cut parallel to the axis. ally presented by such bodies as jelly, for which the velocity of If 8=a-+47, whether in the first instance or after the action of longitudinal vibrations is a large multiple of that of transverse | 4 crystalline plate, vibrations. x=a cos (P— a), y=rbsin(g-a) . . (8). § 20. Interference of Polarized Light. The maxima and minima values of the one coordinate here occur The conditions of interference of polarized light are most easily synchronously with the evanescence of the other, and the co- deduced from the phenomena of the colours of crystalline plates, if ordinate axes are the principal axes of the elliptic path. ; we once admit Young’s view that the origin of the colours is to | An important particular

case arises when further b=a, The Circular be sought in the interference of the differently refracted rays. path is then a circle, and the light is said to be etrewlarly-polarized. polariza- Independently of any hypothesis of this kind, the subject was According to the sign adopted in the second equation (3), the circle tion. directly investigated by Fresnel and Arago,! who summarized their | 1s described in the one direction or in the other. : conclusions thus :-— Circularly-polarized light can he resolved into plane-polarized Laws of | (1) Under the same conditions in which two rays of ordinary | Components in any two rectangular directions, which are such that interfer- light appear to destroy one another, two rays polarized in contrary the intensities are equal and the phases different by a quarter ence. (viz., perpendicular) directions are without mutual influence. period. If a crystalline plate be of such thickness that it retards (2) Two rays of light polarized in the same direction act upon | 02 component by a quarter of a wave-length (or indeed by any one another like ordinary rays; so that, with these two kinds of odd multiple thereof) relatively to the other, it will convert plane- light, the phenomena of interference are identical. polarized light into circularly ~~*polarized, and conversely »—in the (3) Two rays originally polarized in opposite directions may after*~~ *latter case without regard to the azimuth in which it is held. wards be brought to the same plane of polarization, without thereby The property of circularly-polarized light whereby it is capable acquiring the power to influence one another. of resolution into oppositely plane-polarized components of equal (4) Two rays polarized in opposite directions, and afterwards | intensities is possessed also by natural unpolarized light; but the brought to similar polarizations, react in the same manner as discrimination may be effected experimentally with the aid of the natural rays, if they are derived from a beam originally polarized | quarter-wave plate. By this agency the circularly-polarized ray is in one direction. converted into plane-polarized, while the natural light remains The fact that oppositely polarized rays cannot be made to inter- | apparently unaltered. The difficulty which remains is rather to fere may of itsclf be regarded as a proof that the vibrations are | ¢XPlain the physical character of natural light. To this we shall transverse ; and the principle, once admitted, gives an intelligible | Preseutly return; but in the meantime it is obvious that the con- account of all the varied phenomena in this field of optics. The | Stitution of natural light is essentially*

irregular, for we have seen only points on which any difficulty arises are as to the nature of | that absolutely regular, 7.¢., absolutely homogeneous, light 7s ordinary unpolarized light, and the rules according to which in- | ”@essarily (elliptically) polarized. ‘ tensity is to be calculated. It will be proper to consider these In discussing the vibration represented by (2), we have considered questions somewhat fully. the amplitudes and phases to be constant; but in nature this is no Plane In ordinary (plane) polarized light the vibrations are supposed to | More attainable than in the case of plane-polarized light. In order polariza- be in one direction only. If # and y be rectangular coordinates | that the elliptic polarization may be of a definite character, it is tion. in the plane of the wave, we may take, as representing a regular | OMly necessary that the ratio of amplitudes and the difference of

compressibility. t the direction of propagation, that is, they may take place in any direction parallel to the wave front, and they are thus suitable representatives of the vibrations of light. In this theory the luminiferous ether is distinctly assimilated to an elastic solid, and the velocity of light depends upon the rigidity and density assigned to the medium.

vibration of plane-polarized light,

“Z=acos(@—-a) . (1), where ¢=2nt/r, and a, a denote constants. It must be remembered, however, that in optics a regular vibration of this kind never pre- sents itself. In the simplest case of approximately monochromatic light, the amplitude and phase must be regarded (§ 4) as liable to incessant variation, and all that we are able to appreciate is the mean intensity, represeuted by M(a?). If a number of these irre- gular streams of light are combined, the intensity of the mixture cannot be calculated from a mere knowledge of the separate inten- sities, unless we have assurance that the streams are independent, that is, without mutual phase-relations of a durable character. For instance, two thoroughly similar streams combine into one of four- fold intensity, if the phases are the same; while, if the phases are opposed, the intensity falls to zero. It is only when the streams are independent, so that the phase-relation is arbitrary and variable from moment to moment, that the apparent resultant intensity is necessarily the double of the separate intensities.

If any number of independent vibrations of type (1) be super- posed, the resultant is [2 a, cos a] cos $+[Za, sin a,]sing, and the momentary intensity is [Z a, cos ay]? +[Za, sin a), or A> +2 +... + 2d4W COS (4, — ag) +... 1 Fresnel s Works, vol. i. p. 521.

vibration, of given frequency. The general expression will be =a cos (— a), y=beos(@—8) (2), where a, a, 0, 8 are constants. If 8=a, the vibrations are executed entirely in the plane x/y=a/d, or the light is plane-polarized. Or if B=a-a, the light is again plane-polarized, the plane of vibration being a/y=-—a/b. In other cases the vibrations are not confined

phases should be absolute constants, and this of course is consistent with the same degree of irregularity as was admitted for plane vibrations.

The intensity of elliptically-polarized light is the sum of the intensities of its rectangular components. This we may consider to be an experimental fact, as well as a consequence of the theory of transverse vibrations. In whatever form such a theory may be adopted, the energy propagated will certainly conform to this law. When the constants in (2) are regarded as subject to variation, the apparent intensity is represented by

(4).

M(a)+M(B) . 2. we.

We are now ina position to examine the constitution which must Unpolar- The conditions to be satisfied are ized light.

be ascribed to natural light. that when resolved in any plane the mean intensity of the vibra- tions shall be independent of the orientation of the plane, and, further, that this property shall be unaffected by any previous rela- tive retardation of the rectangular components into which it may have been resolved. The original vibration being represented by x=acos(p —a), y=bcos(¢- 8), or, a' We may write it, since we are concerned only with phase

differences, x=acos¢, y=b cos (@— 8) (5),

let us suppose that the second component is subjected to a retarda- tion e. Thus

xL=AC089, y=bcos(p—-8—e) (6), in which a, b, 5 will be regarded as subject to rapid variation,

Neces- sary eon- ditions.

WAV SE

while « remains constant. If the vibration represented by (6) be now resolved in a direction x', making an angle w with x, we have xz' =a cos? cosw+bcos(–S–e) sin w =[acos w+ dbsin w cos (8+ ¢)]cosG+bsinwsin (S+e)sin¢ ;

and the intensity is

a cos "w+ 6? sin2w+2abcoswsinweos(Ste) . . (7). Of this expression we take the mean, w and ¢ remaining constant. Thus the apparent intensity may be written M(x') =M(a*) cos'w + M(b?) sin 2w + 2M[ad cos (8+ €)] cos w sin w (8). In order now that the stream may satisfy the conditions laid down*

as necessary for natural light, (8) must be independent of w and e; so that

Mi@y= WG) . . . ss ws M(abcos$)=M(absins)=0. . . . .(10).?

In these equations a" and 5? represent simply the intensities, or squares of amplitudes, of the x and y vibrations; and the other two quantities adinit also of a simple interpretation. The value of y may be written

y=bcosdcos@+bsindsing . . . . (11); from which we see that bcosd is the coefficient of that part of the y vibration which has the same phase as the x vibration. Thus abcos' may be interpreted as the product of the coefficients of the parts of the x and y vibrations which have the same phase. Next suppose the phase of y accclerated by writing 41+ ¢ in place of ¢. We should thus have

y= —beosSsing+bsindcos¢, and bsin& represents the product of the coefficients of the parts which are now in the same phase, or (wliich is the same) the pro- duct of the coefficients of the x vibration and of that part of the y vibration which was 90° behind in phase. In general, if x=hcospth'sind¢, y=keos+k'sing . (12), the first product is hk+h'k' and the second is hk' — Wh.

Let us next examine how the quantities which we have been considering are affected by a transformation of coordinates in accordance with the formule

x =2COSwW+Y Sill @ , y'=-xsmew+ycosw . (13). We find

a =cos d{acosw+bsinwcosdsing.dsindsinw . (14), y' = COS o{ — asin w 6 cos w cos 5} +sing.bsindcosw. (15); whence amp." of x' =a? cos? w b? sin? w 2abcosdsinwcosw . (16), amp.? of y' =a? sin? w + 6? cos? w- 2abcos8sinwcosw . (17). In like manner First product = (6? – a?) sin w cos w+ ab cos 8 (cos? w —sin?w) (18), Second product=adsin & a 0 9 ogee w CD), The second product, representing the circulating part of the motion, is thus unaltered by the transformation. Let us pass on to the consideration of the mean quantities which occur in (9), (10), writing for brevity M(a)=A, M(6?) =B, M(aé cos 8) =C, M(adsin 3)=D, From (16), (17), (18), (19), if A', B', ©', D' denote the corre- sponding quantities after transformation,*

*A'=Acos?#+Bsin?w+2Ccoswsinw. . . . (20), B'=Asin?#+Bcos*w- 2Ccoswsinw. . . . (21), C' = C(cos*w—sin?w)+(B-A)coswsinw. . . (22), IDI) 5 5s 5 0 (CR).*

These formule prove that, if the conditions (9), (10), shown to be necessary in order that the light may behave as natural light, be satisfied for one set of axes, they are equally satisfied with any other. It is thus a matter of indifference with respect to what axes the retardation ¢ is supposed to be introduced, and the con- ditions (9), (10) are sufficient, as well as necessary, to characterize natural light.

Reverting to (8), we see that, whether the light be natural or not, its character, so far as experimental tests can show, is deter- mined by the

values of A, B, C, D. The effect of a change of axes 1s given by (20), &c., and it is evident that the uew axes may always be so chosen that C'=0. For this purpose it is only necessary to take w such that

*tan 2w=2C/(A-B). lf we choose these new axes as fundamental axes, the valucs of the oon for any others inclined to them at angle w will be of the orm A=A, cos? w + B, sin? w B=A,sin?w+B,cos*w? . . . . . (24). C=(B,—A,) cos w sin w*

If A, and B, are here equal, then C=0, A=B for all values of #. In this case, the light cannot be distinguished from natural light by mere resolution; but if D be finite, the difference may be made apparent with the aid of a retarding plate.

1 Verdet, Legons d'Optique Physique, vol. il. p. 83.

2 er OR OY 447

If A, and B, are unequal, they represent the maximum and minimuni values of A and B. 'The intensity is then a function of the plane of resolution, and the light may be recognized as partially polarized by the usual tests. If either A, or B, vanishes, the light is plane-polarized.?

When several independent streams of light are combined, the values, not only of A and B, but also of C and D, for the mixture, are to be found by simple addition. It must here be distinctly understood that there are no permanent phase-relations between one component and another. Suppose, for example, that there are two streams of light, each of which satisfies the relations A—B, C=0, but makes the value of D finite. If the two values of D are equal and opposite, and the streams are independent, the mixture constitutes natural light. A particular case arises when each com- ponent is circularly-polarized (D=+A=+B), one in the right- handed and the other in the left-handed direction. The intensities being equal, the mixture is equivalent to natural light, but only under the restriction that the streams are without phase-relation. If, on the contrary, the second stream be similar to the first, affected merely with a constant retardation, the resultant is not natural, but completely (plane) polarized light.

We will now prove that the most general mixture of light may Analysis be regarded as compounded of one stream of light elliptically- of general polarized in a definite manner, and of an independent stream of ease, natural light. The theorem is due to Stokes,? but the method that we shall follow is that of Verdet.4

In the first place, it is necessary to observe that the values of the fundamental quantities A, B, C, D are not free from restriction. It will be shown that in no case can C?+ D? exceed AB.

In equations (2), expressing the vibration at any moment, let @, 54, a,, By, be the values of a, b, a, 8 during an interval of time proportional to m,, and in like manner let the suffixes 2, 3,.... correspond to times proportional to 7, 23,.... Then

AB = 11420770? + 3701.75? +... + mye(0470.” + 47D”) +...

Again, by (12),

C=m,a,b,(cos a, cos 8, sin a, sin B,)...

= 7,00, COS 8) + WMollaby COS Bg+...,

D= mya), sin 8, + ttyoby Sin By +... 5

where, as before, 3:=B,— a, 5,=B2,—a2,

Thus, C2 + D2 = 172,704,701? + g2ig2hg? +... + My MLyAD Aighy COS (5z — By) +...

From these equations we see that AB —C?—- D® reduces itsclf to a sum of terms of the form

My Mol 42by? + 27d? — 24,0, Ayb, COS (82 – 8,)], each of which is cssentially positive. The only case in which the sum can vanish is when

8, = 6,=83=. 229

and further Dy 304 = 0g 3 Mg—= dg Qg=... Under these conditions the light is reduced to be of a definite elliptic character, although the amplitude and phase of the system as a whole may be subject to rapid variation. The clliptic con- stants are given by B/at=B/A, tao Ca . 25),

In general AB exceeds (C?D?); but it will always be possible to find a positive quantity H, which when subtracted from A and B (themselves necessarily positive) shall reduce the product to equality with C? D?, in accordance with

(A-H)(B-H)=C?+D?. . . . ; (26). The original light may thus be resolved into two groups. For the first group the constants are H, H, 0, 0; and for the second A — H, B-H,C, D. Each of these is of a simple character; for the first represents natural light, and the second light elliptically polarized. , It is thus proved that in general a stream of light may be regarded Stokes s as composed of one stream of natural light and of another elliptic- theorem. ally-polarized. The intensity of the natural light is 2H, where from (26)

H=4(A+B)-4/{(A-B)?+4(C?+D%)} . (27). The elliptic constants of the second component are given by b?/a?=(B-H)/(A- H), tand=D/C. . (28), and 3) ea 5) 5

If D=0, and therefore by (28) 3=0, the second component is plane-polarized. This is regarded as a particular case of elliptic polarization. Again, if A=B, C=0, the polarization is circular. The laws of interference of polarized light, discovered by Fresnel and Arago, are exactly what the theory of transverse vibrations would lead us to expect, when once we have cleared up the idea of unpolarized light. Ordinary sources, such as the sun, emit un- polarized light. If this be resolved in two opposite directions, the pean ee a ee eee 2 In this case D, necessarily vanishes.

2 "On the Composition and Resolution of Streams of Light from Different Sources," Camb. Phil. Trans,, 1852. 4 Loc. ctt., p. 94.

Wave- surface.

Direc- tion of ray.

Fresnel's views,

polarized components are not only each irregular, but there is uo permaneut phase-relation between them. No light derived from one can therefore ever interfere regularly with light derived from the other. If, however, we commence with plane-polarized light, we have only one series of irregularities to deal with. When resolved in two rectangular directions, the components cannot then interfere, but only on account of the perpendicularity. If brought back by resolution to the same plane of polarization, interference becomes possible, because the same serics of irregularities are to be found in both components.

§ 21. Double Refraction.

*The construction by which Huygens explained the ordinary and extraordinary refraction of Iceland spar has already been given (Licut, vol. xiv. p. 610). The wave-sarface is in two sheets, com- posed of a sphere and of an ellipsoid of revolution, in*contact with one another at the extremities of the polar axis. In biaxal crystals the wave-surface is of a more complicated character, including that of Huygens as a particular case.*

~ is not unimportant to remark that the essential problem of double refraction is to determine the two velocities with which plane waves are propagated, when the direction of the normal to the wave-frout is assigned. When this problem has been solved, the determination of the wave-surface isa mere matter of geometry, not absolutely necessary for the explanation of the leading pheno- mena, but convenient as affording a concise summary of the principal laws. In all cases the wave-surface is to be regarded as the envelope at any subsequent time of all the plane wave-fronts which at a given instant may be supposed to be passing through a particular point.

In singly refracting media, where the velocity of a wave is the saine in all directions, the wave-normal coincides with the ray. In doubly refracting crystals this law no longer holds good. The principles by which the

conception of a ray is justified (§ 10), when applied to this case, show that the centre of the zone system is not in general to be found at the foot of the perpendicular upon the primary wave-front. The surface whose contact with the primary wave-front determines the element from which the secondary dis- turbance arrives with least retardation is now not a sphere, but whatever wave-surface is appropriate to the medium. The direc- tion of the ray, corresponding to any tangent plane of the wave-surface, is thus not the normal, but the radius vector drawn from the centre to the point of contact.

The velocity of propagation (reckoned always perpendicularly to the wave-front) may be conceived to depend upon the direction of the wave-front, or wave-normal, and upon what we may call (at any rate figuratively) the direction of vibration. If the velocity depended exclusively upon the wave-normal, there could be no double, though there might be extraordinary, refraction, i.e., refraction deviating from the law of Snell; but of this nothing is known in nature. The fact that there are in general two velocities for one wave-front proves that the velocity depends upon the direction of vibration.

According to the Huygenian law, confirmed to a high degree of accuracy by the observations of Brewster and Swan,! a ray polarized in a principal plane (7.¢., a plane passing through the axis) of a uniaxal crystal suffers ordinary refraction only, that is, propagates itself with the same velocity in all directions. The interpretation which Fresnel put upon this is that the vibrations (understood now in a literal sense) are perpendicular to the plane of polarization, and that the velocity is constant because the direction of vibration is in all cases similarly related (perpendicular) to the axis. The development of this idea in the fertile brain of Fresnel led him to the remarkable discovery of the law of refraction in biaxal crystals.

The hypotheses upon which Fresnel based his attempt at a mechanical theory are thus summarized by Verdet:—

(1) The vibrations of polarized light are perpendicular to the plane of polarization ;

(2) The elastic forces called into play during the propagation of a system of plane waves (of rectilinear transverse vibrations) differ from the elastic forces developed by the parallel displacement of a single molecule only by a constant factor, independent of the par- ticular direction of the plane of the wave;

(3) When a plane wave propagates itself in any homogeneous medium, the components parallel tothe wave-front of the elastic forces called into play by the vibrations of the wave are alone operative ;

(4) The velocity of a plane wave which propagates itself with type unchanged in any homogeneous medium is proportional to the square root of the effective component of the elastic force developed by the vibrations.

Fresnel himself was perfectly aware that his theory was deficient in rigour, and indeed there is little to be said in defeuce of his second hypothesis. Nevertheless, the great historical interest of this theory, and the support that experiment gives to Fresnel's conclusion as to the actual form of the wave-surface in biaxal crystals, render some account of his work in this field imperative.

J Edinb. Trans., vol. xvi. p. 875.

THEORY

The potential energy of displacement of a single molecule from Energy of its position of equilibrium is ultimately a quadratic function of the displace- three components reckoned parallel to any set of rectangular axes. ment. These axes may be so chosen as to reduce the quadratic function to a sum of squares, so that the energy may be expressed,

Vim a'e? + 509? + BC? . (1),

where &, y, ¢ are the three component displacements. The corre- sponding forces of restitution, obtained at once by differentiation, a X=a%, Y=2, Z=e¢ (2). The force of restitution is thus in. gencral inclined to the direction of displacement. The relation between the two directions

X, Y, Z and , , ¢is the same as that between the normal to a tangent plane and the radius vector p to the point of contact in the ellipsoid

e+ PP te a1 F (8). If a', 67, c are unequal, the directions of the coordinate axes are the only ones in which a displacement calls into operation a parallel force of restitution. If two of the quantities a, 6%, c? arc equal, the ellipsoid (3) is of revolution, and every direction in the plane of the equal axes possesses the property in question. This is the case of a uniaxal crystal. If the three quantities a?, 02, c are all equal, the medium is isotropic.

If we resolve the force of restitution in the dircction of displace- ment, we obtain a quantity dependent upon this direction in a manner readily expressible by means of the ellipsoid of elasticity

(3). For, when the total displacement is given, this quantity is proportional to Ge ee 5, oe

that is to say, to the inverse square of the radius vector p in (8).

We have now to inquire in what directions, limited toa particular pjrec- plane, a displacement may be so made that the projection of the tions of force of restitution upon the plane may be parallel to the displace- yibra- ment. The answer tollows at once froin the property of the ellip- tion, soid of elasticity. For, if in any section of the ellipsoid we have a radius vector such that the plane containing it and the normal to the corresponding tangent plane is perpendicular to the plane of the section, the tangent line to the section must be perpendicular to the radius vector, that is, the radius vector must be a principal axis of the section. There are therefore two, and in general only two, directions in any plane satisfying the proposed condition, and | these are perpendicular to one another. If, however, the plane be | one of those of circular section, every line of displacement is such that the component of the force, resolved parallel to the plane, coincides with it.

According to the principles laid down by Fresnel, we have now complete data for the solution of the problem of double refraction. If the direction of the wave-front be given, there are (in general) only two directions of

vibration such that a single wave is propa- gated. Ifthe actual displacements do not conform to this condi- tion, they will be resolved into two of the required character, and the components will in gencral be propagated with different velocities. The two directions are the principal axes of the section of (3) made by the wave-front, and the velocities of propagation are inversely proportional to the lengths of these axes.

The law connecting the lengths of the axcs with the direction (2, m, n) of the plane is a question of geometry ;? and indeed the whole investigation of the wave-surface may be elegantly carried through geometrically with the aid of certain theorems of Mac- Cullagh respecting apsidal surfaces (Salmon, ch. xiv.). For this, however, we have not space, and must content ourselves with a sketch of the analytical method of treatment.

If v be the velocity of propagation in direction J, mm, n, the wave- surface is the envelope of planes

letmy+nz=v . (4), where v is a function of 7, m, n, whose fori is to be determined. If (A, », v) be the corresponding direction of vibration, then

lA+mptnv=0. (5).

once

According to the principles laid down by Fresnel, we sce at that the force of restitution (aa, bu, cv), corresponding to a displacement unity, is equivalent to a force v along (A, p, v), to- gether with some force (P) along (2, m,). Resolving parallel to the coordinate axes, we get*

*1P=@a-7,, mP=b*n- vu, nP=cy— vy, or 1P mP nP “gp? B= Bip | Be o*

Multiplying these by 7, m, respectively, and taking account of Law of (5), we see that velocity.

er) (7)

is the relation sought for between v and (J, m, 2). In this equia- tion 6, ¢ are the velocities when the direction of propagation is

2

nN

=0,

2 See Salmon's Analytical Geometry of Three Dimensions, Dublin, 1882, § 102.

WAVE THEORY

along x, the former being applicable when the vibration is parallel to y, and the latter when it is parallel to x.

The directions of vibration are determined by (5) and by the consideration that (J, m, 7), (A, m, v), and (aa, Dy, cv) lie in a plane, or (as we may put it) are all perpendicular to one direction (Ff, 9 1). Thus Uf+ mg+nh o}

Af+ wgtvh =0 @rf+ Pug + evh=0 The determinant expressing the result of the elimination of f: g: A may be put into the form

Mm

$8) 4 (Pat) + (oP) =O . (9),

which with (5) suffices to determine (A, m, v) 28 a function of (2, m, n).

The fact that the system of equations (5), (8) is symmetrical as between (A, yn, v) and (f, g, %) proves that the two directions of vibration corresponding to a given (7, m,) are perpendicular to one another,

The direct investigation of the wave-surface from (4) and (7) was first effected by Ampére, but his analytical process was very labori- ous. Fresnel had indeed been forced to content himself with an indirect method of verification. Butin the following investigation

(8),

A.Smith's of A. Smith} the eliminations are effected with comparatively little investiga- trouble.

tion.

Fresnel's wave- surface.

Principal Sections,

In addition to (4) and (7), we know that Pim+V?=1. . . (10). To find the equation to the envelope, we have to differentiate these equations, making 7, m, », v vary. Eliminating the differentials by the method of multipliers, we obtain the following :—

x=Al +Bi/(v?-a?) . (11);

y=Am+ Bm/(v? — 0) (12),

z—An +Bnj(—e) . (13); and ; ' m W

1=Bo } (Fate (e_ P(e (14).

The equations (11), (12), (18) multiplied by 7, m, n respectively and added, give a. (15). The same equations, squared and added, give ey? +22—= A24 B/v.

If we put 7? for x? + y?+2%, and for A the value just found, we obtain

B=v(r? —v?) . (16). If these values of A and B be substituted in (11), ~—y pus v=10} 1+ 3B =ly @uaal or vw — a? x ee 17). : y-ay mt)

If we substitute this value of 7, and the corresponding values of m, nin (4), we get

(v?—a?)a? (v—b?)y? (v2 -c?) 2? 2 vat yay? yy? Pog 1 pe T pie ~ Oe Ta Bp? whence Fg SM ze?

a-@t apt Ae? 18), as. the equation of the wave-surface.

By (6) equation (11) may be written

w=Al+BP-h, from which and the corresponding equations we see that the direc- tion (x, y, z) lies in the same plane as (J, m, m) and (A, yu, »). Hence in any tangent plane of the wave-surface the direction of vibration is that of the line joining the foot of the perpendicular and the point of contact (x, y, 2).

The equation (18) leads to another geometrical definition of Fresnel's wave-surface. If through the centre of the ellipsoid reciprocal to the ellipsoid of elasticity (3), viz.,

e/e+y/P+e/e=1 (19), a plane be drawn, and on the normal to this plane two lengths be marked off proportional to the axes of the elliptic section deter- mined by the plane, the locus of the points thus obtained, the apsidal surfacc of (19), is the wave-surface (18).

Fully developed in integral powers of the coordinates, (18) takes the form

(ac? + y® + 22)(a2x? + b2y? + 022") — a?(b? + a?

— (2 + a)y? — P(e? +07) +07P=0 . (20). The section of (20) by the coordinate plane y=0 is (ac? + 22 — b?)(a2x:? + e722 — a%c) =0 (21),*

1 Camb. Trans., vi., 18385.

representing a circle and an ellipse (fig, 24). That the sections by each of the principal planes would be a circle and an ellipse might have been foreseen independently of a general solution of the en- velope problem. The forms of the sections prescribed in (21) and the two similar equations are suffi- cient to determine the character of the wave-surface, if we assume that it is of the fourth degree, and involves only the even powers of the coordi- nates. It was somewhat in this way that the equation was first obtained by Fresnel.

If two of the principal velocities, é.g., @ and b, are equal, (20) becomes (22+ y? +27 — a?)(a2a? + ay?

+ 722 — a?c?) =0 (22), so that the wave-surface degenerates into the Huygenian sphere and ellip- soid of revolution appropriate to a uniaxal crystal. x=0, y=0, z=ha. external to the sphere. the ellipsoid is internal.

We have secn that when the wave-front is parallel to the circular sections of (3), the two wave velocities coincide. Thus in (7), if a?, b?, c? be in descending order of magnitude, we have m=0, v=b ; so that

Fig. 24,

The two sheets touch one another at the points If c>a, as in Iceland spar, the ellipsoid is On the other hand, if c

n? 1

Pe ge

aR (23). In general, if 6, 6' be the angles which the normal to the actual wave-front makes with the optic axes, it may be proved that the difference of the squares of the two roots of (7) is given by V9" — v2 = (a? — c") sin 6 sin 6" (24). In a uniaxal crystal the optic axes coincide with the axis of symmetry, and there is no distinction between 6' and 6.

Since waves in a biaxal crystal propagated along either optic axis have but one velocity, it follows that tangent planes to the wave- surface, perpendicular to these directions, touch both sheets of the surface. It may be proved further that each plane touches the surface not merely at two, but at an infinite number of points, which lie upon a circle.

The directions of the optic axes, and the angle included between them, are found frequently to vary with the colour of the light. Such a variation is to be expected, in view of dispersion, which renders a', b?, c® functions of the wave-length.

A knowledge of the form of the wave-surface determines in all cases the law of refraction according to the construction of Huygens. We will suppose for simplicity that the first medium is air, and that the surface of separation between the media is plane. The incident wave-front at any moment of time cuts the surface of separation in a straight line. On this line take any point, and with it as centre construct the wave-surface in the second medium corresponding to a certain interval of time. At the end of this interval the trace of the incident wave-front upon the surface will have advanced toa new position, parallel to the former. Planes drawn through this line so as to touch the wave- surface give the positions of the refracted wave-fronts. None other could satisfy the two conditions—(1) that the refracted wave- front should move within the crystal with the normal velocity suitable to its direction, and (2) that the traces of the incident and refracted waves upon the surface of separation should move together. The normal to a refracted wave lies necessarily in the plane of incidence, but the refracted ray, coinciding with the radius vector of the wave-surface, in general deviates from it. In most cases it is sufficient to attend to the wave normal.

As in total reflexion by simply refracting media, it may happen that no tangent planes can be drawn to satisfy the prescribed conditions, or that but one such can be drawn.

When the crystal is uniaxal, one wave is refracted according to the ordinary law of Snell. The accuracy of both the sphere and the ellipsoid of the Huygenian construction has been fully verified by modern observations, ?

The simplest case of uniaxal refraction is when the axis of the crystal is perpendicular to the plane of incidence, with respect to which every thing then becomes symmetrical. The section of the wave-surface with which we have to deal reduces to two con- centric circles; so that both waves are refracted according to the ordinary law, though of course with different indices.

In biaxal crystals one wave follows the ordinary law of refrac- tion, if the plane of incidence coincide with a principal plane of the crystal. This consequence of his theory was verified by Fresnel himself, and

subsequently by Rudberg and others. But the most remarkable phenomena of biaxal refraction are undoubtedly we ali ac Sil lla a iliac ele eae AOS ARI Ks

2 Stokes, Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xx. p. 443, 1872; Glazebrook, Phil. Trans., 1880, p. 421; Hastings, Amer. Jour., Jan. 1888. #

XXIV. — 57

Uniaxal crystals.

Optic axes,

Huygeus's

construc- tion

Total re- flexion,

Conical refrac- tion.

Electro-

450

those discovered by Hamilton and Lloyd, generally known as conical refraction.

In general there are two refracted rays, corresponding to two distinct waves. But the refracted waves coalesce when they are perpendicular to either optic axis, and (as we have seen) this wave touches the wave-surface along a circle. Thus corresponding to one wave direction there are an infinite number of rays, lying upon a cone. The division of a single incident ray into a cone of refracted rays is called internal conical refraction. If the second face of the crystal is parallel to the first, each refracted ray resumes on emer- gence its original direction, so that the emergent bundle forms a hollow cylinder. oe |

External conical refraction depends upon the singular points in the principal plane of zz, where the two sheets of the surface cross one another (fig. 24). At such a point (P) an infinite number of tangent planes may be drawn to the surface, and each of the per- pendiculars from O represents a wave direction, corresponding to the single ray OP. On emergence these waves will be differently refracted ; and thus corresponding to a single internal ray there are an infinite number of external rays, lying upon a cone.

It has already been admitted that the dynamical foundations of Fresnel's theory are unsound; and it must be added that the rigorous theory of crystalline solids investigated by Cauchy and Green does not readily lend itself to the explanation of Fresnel's laws of double refraction. On this subject the reader should con- sult Prof. Stokes's Report. Sir W. Thomson has recently shown! that an originally isotropic medium, pressed unequally in different directions, may be so constituted as to vibrate in accordance with Fresnel's laws. ,

It may perhaps be worth while to remark that the equations, analogous to (2) § (24), which lead to these laws are

at dp 252 dn dp 2052,

ap gg OSS gue we &e (25),

where a, 0, ¢ are the principal wave velocities. If we here assume E=A0, n=O, (=r6,

6/6, = p/Do = ¢ ik(la—my-+nz- vay,

and substitute in (25), the condition of transversality leads at once to the desired results. But the equations (25) are not applicable to the vibrations of a crystalline solid.

In the electromagnetic theory double refraction is attributed to

magnetic zolotropic inductive capacity, and appears to offer no particular

theory.

Double absorp- tion.

difficulty.

If the present position of the theory of double refraction is still somewhat unsatisfactory, it must be remembered that the un- certainty does not affect the general principle. Almost any form of wave theory involving transverse vibrations will explain the leading phenomenon, viz., the bifurcation of the ray. It is safe to predict that when ordinary refraction is well understood there will be little further trouble over double refraction.

The wave-velocity is not the only property of light rendered un- symmetrical by crystalline structure. In many cases the two polarized rays are subject to a different rate of absorption. Tour- malines and other crystals may be prepared in plates of such thickness that one ray is sensibly stopped and the other sensibly transmitted, and will then serve as polarizing (or analysing) ap- paratus. Although for practical purposes Nicol's prisms (LIGHT, vol. xiv. p. 612) are usually to be preferred, the phenomenon of double absorption is of great theoretical interest. The explanation is doubtless closely connected with that of double refraction.

§ 22. Colours of Crystalline Plates.

When polarized light is transmitted through a moderately thin plate of doubly refracting crystal, and is then analysed, e.g. with a Nicol, brilliant colours are often exhibited, analogous in their character to the tints of Newton's scale. With his usual acuteness, Young at once attributed these colours to interference between the ordinary and extraordinary waves, and showed that the thickness of crystal required to develop a given tint, inversely proportional to the doubly refracting power, was in agreenient with this view. But the complete explanation, demanding a fuller knowledge of the laws of interference of polarized light, was reserved for Fresnel and Arago. The subject is one which admits of great development ;? but the interest turns principally upon the beauty of the effects, and upon the facility with which many of them may be obtained in

experiment. We must limit ourselves to a brief treatment of one or two of the simpler cases,

The incident vibration being plane-polarized, we will suppose that its plane makes an angle a with the principal plane of the crystal. On entcring the crystal it is accordingly resolved into the two components represented by

cosacos@, sinacosd, where p=2Qrt/r.

1 "On Cauchy's and Green's Doctrine of Extraneous Force to explain dynami- cally Fresnel's Kinematics of Double Refraction," Phil, Mag., Feb. 1888. 2 See Verdet's Zecons, vol. ii.

WAVE THEORY

In traversing the crystal both waves are retarded, but we are concerned only with the difference of the retardations. Denoting the difference by p, we may take as the expressions of the waves on emergence

cosa cos ¢, sin a cos (— p). It may be remarked that, in the absence of dispersion, p would be inversely proportional to A; but in fact there are many cases where it deviates greatly from this law.

Now let the plane of analysation be inclined at the angle B to that of primitive polarization (fig. 25). Then for the sum of the two resolved components we have

cos a cos (a — 8) cos P+sin asin (a — 8) cos (¢-p), of which the intensity is {cos a cos (a— 8)-+sin asin (a — 8) cos p}?+sin 2a sin (a — 8) sin 2g

*= cos 98 — sin 2asin 2(a—f)sin hp . (1). If in (1) we write 8+4m in place of 8, we get sin®8+sin 2asin 2(a—) sin *4p (2);*

and we notice that the sum of (1) and (2) is unity under all cireum- stances. The effect of rotating the analyser through 90° is thus always to transform the tint into its . : complementary. The two complemen- g x tary tints may be seen at the same time if we employ a double image prism. In

the absence of an analyser we may regard the two images as superposed, and there is no colour.

These expressions may be applied at

once to the explanation of the colours

of thin plates of mica or selenite. In

this case the retardation p is propor-

tional to the thickness, and approxi-

mately independent of the precise direction of the light, supposed to be nearly perpendicular to the plate, viz., nearly parallel to a principal axis of the crystal.

The most important cases are when B=0, B=47. In the latter the field would be dark were the plate removed; and the actual intensity is

*ein*2e sin Ye 2k ee we The composition of the light is thus independent of the azimuth of*

the plate (a); but the catensity varies greatly, vanishing four times during the complete revolution. The greatest brightness occurs when the principal plane bisects the angle between the planes of polarization and analysis. If 8=0, the light is complementary to that represented by (8).

If two plates be superposed, the retardations are added if the azimuths correspond ; but they are subtracted if one plate be rotated relatively to the other through 90°. It is thus possible to obtain colour by the superposition of two nearly similar plates, although they may be too thick to answer the purpose separately.

If dispersion be neglected, the law of the colours in (3) is the same as that of the reflected tints of Newton's scale. The thick- nesses of the plates of mica (acting by double refraction) and of air required to give the same colour are as 400: 1. When a plate is too thick to show colour, its action may be analysed with the aid of a spectroscope.

Still thicker plates may be caused to exhibit colour, if the direc- tion of the light within them makes but a small angle with an optic axis. Let us suppose that a plate of Iceland spar, or other uniaxal crystal (except quartz), cut perpendicularly to the axis, is interposed between the polarizing and analysing apparatus, and that the latter is so turned that the field is originally dark. The ray which passes perpendicularly is not doubly refracted, so that the centre of the field remains dark. At small angles to the optic axis the relative retardation is evidently proportional to the square of the inclination, so that the colours are disposed in concentric rings. But the intensity is not the same at the various parts of the circum- ference. In the plane of polarization and in the perpendicular plane there is no double refraction, or rather one of the refracted rays vanishes. Along the corresponding lines in the field of view there is no

revival of light, and the ring system is seen to be tra- versed by a black cross.

In many crystals the influence of dispersion is sufficient to sensibly modify the proportionality of p to A. In one variety of uniaxal apophyllite Herschel found the rings nearly achromatic, indicating that p was almost independent of a. Under these circumstances a much larger number of rings than usual became visible.

In biaxal crystals, cut so that the surfaces are equally inclined to the optic axes, the rings take the form of lemniscates.

A medium originally isotropic may acquire the doubly refracting property under the influence of strain; and, if the strain be homo- geneous, the conditions are optically identical with those found ina natural crystal. The principal axes of the wave-surface coincide with those of strain. If the strain be symmetrical, the medium is optically uniaxal. In general, if P, Q, R be the principal stresses,

Colours of mica and

selenite.

Rings from uniaxal crystals.

Double

refraction

due to strain.

KH ——

Effects of heat.

Rotation by quartz.

WAVE THEORY

the difference of velocities for waves propagated parallel to R is evidently proportional to (P— Q), and so on.

More often it happens that the strain is not homogeneous. Even then the small parts may be compared to crystals, but the optical constants vary from point to point. The comparatively feeble doubly refracting power thus developed in glass may best be made evident by the production of the colours of polarized light. Thus, in an experiment due to Brewster, a somewhat stout slab of glass, polished on the edges, is interposed between crossed Nicols. When the slab is bent in a plane perpendicular to that of vision, a revival of light takes place along the edges, where the elongation and con- traction is greatest. If the width (in the direction of vision) be sufficient, the effect may be increased until the various colours of Newton's scale are seen. These colours vary from point to point of the thickness in the plane of bending, the "neutral axis" remaining dark. The optic axis, being everywhere coincident with the direction of elongation (or contraction), is parallel to the length of the slab. 'To this direction the plane of polarization should be inclined at about 45°.

The condition of internal strain is not necessarily due to forces applied from without. Thus, if glass originally free from strain be unequally heated, the accompanying expansions give rise to internal strains which manifest themselves in polarized light. If the heating be moderate, so as not to approach the softening point, the state of ease is recovered upon cooling, and the double refrac- tion disappears. But if the local temperature be raised further, the hot parts may relieve themselves of the temporary strain, and then upon cooling they and other parts may be left in a condition of permanent strain. Sudden cooling of glass heated to the soften- ing point leads toa similar result. The outer parts harden while the interior is still at a higher temperature, so that, when the whole is cooled down, the outside, being as it were too large for the inside, is in a condition of radial tension and circumferential compression, An examination in polarized light shows that the strains thus occasioned are often very severe. If any small part be relieved by fracture from the constraint exercised upon it by the remainder, the doubly refracting property almost or wholly disappears. In this respect unannealed glass differs essentially from a crystal, all parts of which are similar and

independent. It may be remarked that it is difficult to find large pieces of glass so free from internal strain as to show no revival of light when examined between crossed Nicols.

§ 23. Rotatory Polarization.

In general a polarized ray travelling along the axis of a uniaxal erystal undergoes no change; but it was observed by Arago that, if quartz be used in this experiment, the plane of polarization is found to be rotated through an angle proportional to the thickness of crystal traversed. The subject was further studied by Biot, who ascertained that the rotation due to a given thickness is in- versely as the square of the wave-length of the light, thus varying very rapidly with the colour. In some, specimens of quartz (called in conscquence right-handed) the rotation is to the right, while in others it is to the left. Equal thicknesses of right- and left-handed quartz may thus compensate one another.

Fresnel has shown that the rotation of the plane may be inter- preted as indicating a different velocity of propagation of the two circularly-polarized components into which plane-polarized light may always be resolved. In ordinary media the right- and left- handed cireularly-polarized rays travel at the same speed, and at any stage of their progress recompound a ray rectilinearly-polar- ized in a fixed direction. But it is otherwise if the velocities of propagation of the circular components be even slightly different.

The first circularly-polarized wave may be expressed by

&,=7 cos (vt — kz), m=rsin(nt—hyz) . (De and the second (of equal amplitude) by f =r cos (nt — kz), No= —7sin (nt—kyz) . . (2). The resultant of (1) and (2) is E=8 +£,=2r cos 4(ky — ky)z cos{nt—4(ky+kq)2}, =m + no=2r sin $key —ky)z cos{ nt — $k, + hy)z} ; so that nlé=tanh(kg-hy)z. 2. 1 (3),

which shows that for any fixed value of z the light is plane-polar- ized. The direction of this plane, however, varies with z. Thus, if n/E= tan 6, so that @ gives the angular position of the plane in reference to , we have

0=4(hey—h,)2 a

indicating a rotation proportional to z The quantities 4, k, are inversely as the wave-lengths of the two circular components for the samc periodic time. When the relative retardation amounts to an entire period, (k.-%,)2=27m, and then, by (4), =. The revolution of the plane through two right angles restores the original state of polarization. In quartz the rotation is very rapid,

amounting in the case of yellow light to about 24° for each milli- metre traversed.

451

It is interesting to observe with what a high degree of accuracy the comparison of the velocities of the two waves can be effected. If the plane of polarization be determined to one minute of angle, a relative retardation of A/10800 is made manifest. If 7 be the thickness traversed, v and v+8v the two velocities, the relative retardation is J3v/v. To take an example, pl ag that /=20 inches, A=xzphop inch; so that if 5v/v exceed 10-8, the fact might be detected.

In quartz the rotation of the plane depends upon the crystalline structure, but there are many liquids, ¢.g., oil of turpentine and common syrup, which exhibit a like effect. In such cases the rota- tion is of course independent of the direction of the light ; it must be due to some peculiarity in the constitution of the molecules.

A remarkable connexion has been observed between the rotatory property and the crystalline form. Thus Herschel found that in many specimens the right-handed and left-handed varicties of quartz could be distinguished by the disposition of certain sub- ordinate faces. The crystals of opposite kinds are symmetrical in a certain sense, but are yet not superposable. The difference is like that between otherwise similar right- and left-handed screws. The researches of Pasteur upon the rotatory properties of tartaric acid have opened up a new and most interesting field of chemistry. At that time two isomeric varieties were known,—ordinary tartaric acid, which rotates to the right, and racemic

acid, which is optically in- active, properties of the acids shared also by the salts. Pasteur found that the crystals of tartaric acid and of the tartrates possessed a right-handed structure, and endeavoured to discover correspond- ing bodies with a left-handed structure. After many trials crystal- lizations of the double racemate of soda and ammonia were obtained, including crystals of opposite kinds. A selection of the right-handed specimens yielded ordinary dextro-tartaric acid, while a similar selection of the left-handed crystals gave a new variety— levo-tartaric acid, rotating the plane of polarization to the left in the same degree as ordiuary tartaric acid rotates it to the right. A mixture in equal proportions of the two kinds of tartaric acid, which differ scarcely at all in their chemical properties,' reconsti- tutes racemic acid.

The possibility of inducing the rotatory property in bodies other- wise free from it was one of the finest of Faraday's discoveries. He found that, if heavy glass, bisulphide of carbon, &c., are placed in a magnetic field, a ray of polarized light, propagated ead the lines of magnetic force, suffers rotation. The laws of the pheno- menon were carefully studied by Verdet, whose conclusions may be summed up by saying that in a given medium the rotation of the plane for a ray proceeding in any direction is proportional to the difference of magnetic potential at the initial and final points. In bisulphide of carbon, at 18° and for a difference of potential equal to unity C. G. S., the rotation of the plane of polarization of a ray of soda light is 0402 minute of angle.

A very important distinction should be noted between the magnetic rotation and that natural to quartz, syrup, &c. In the latter the rotation is always right-handed or always left-handcd with respect to the direction of the ray. Hence when the ray is reversed the absolute direction of rotation is reversed also.

*The importance of polarimetric determinations has led to the con- trivancc of various forms of apparatus adapted to the special require- ments of the case. If the light be bright enough, fairly accurate measurements may be made by merely rotating a Nicol until the field appears dark. Probably the best form of analyser, when white light is used and the plane is the same for all the coloured com- ponents, is the Jellet,**

formed by the combination of two portions of Iceland spar. By this instrument the field of view is duplicated, and the setting is effected by turning it until the two portions of the field, much reduced in brightness, appear equally dark. A similar result is attained in the Laurent, which, however, is only applicable to homogeneous light. In this apparatus, advantage is taken of the action of a half-wave plate. In passing such a plate the plane of polarization is as it were reflected by the principal section, that is, rotated until it makes the same angle with the priucipal section as at first, but upon the further side. The plate covers only half of the field of view, and the eye is focused upon the

1 It would seem that the two varieties could be chemically distinguished only by their relations with bodies themselves right-handed or left-handed.

2 Phil. Trans,, 1885, p. 343.

3 Maxwell's Electricity and Magnetism, vol. ii. chap. xxi. 4 A description is given in Glazebrook's Physical Optics, London, 1883,

Delicacy of test.

Right- and left- handed. varieties,

Magnetic rotation.

Polari- metry.

Laurent analyser.

Soleil's appa- ratus.

Equa- tions for elastic solid,

452 WA we

dividing edge. The planes of polarization of the two halves of the field are different, unless the original plane be parallel (or perpen- dicular) to the principal section. In the Laurent analyser the half- wave plate is rigidly

combined with a Nicol in such a position that the principal section of the latter makes a small but. finite angle with that of the plate. The consequence is that the two halves of the field of view cannot be blackened simultaneously, but are rendered equally dark when the instrument is so turned that the principal section of the plate is parallel to the plane of original polarization, which is also that of the uncovered half of the field. A slight rotation in either direction darkens one half of the field and brightens the other half,

In another form of "half-shade" polarimeter, invented by Poynting, the half-wave plate of the Laurent is dispensed with, a small] rotation of onc half of the field with respect to the other half being obtained by quartz (cut perpendicularly to the axis) or by syrup. In the simplest construction the syrup is contained in a small cell with parallel glass sides, and the division into two parts is effected by the insertion of a small piece of plate glass about 33, inch thick, a straight edge of which forms the dividing line. If the syrup be strong, the difference of thickness of is inch gives a relative rotation of about 2°. In this arrangement the sugar cell is a fixture, and only the Nicol rotates. The reading of the divided circle corresponds to the mean of the planes for the two halves of the field, and this of course differs from the original position of the plane before entering the sugar. This circumstance is usually of no importance, the object being to determine the rotation of the plane of polarization when some of the conditions are altered.

A discussion of the accuracy obtainable in polarimetry will be found in a recent paper by Lippich.?

In Soleil's apparatus, designed for practical use in the estima- tion of the strength of sugar solutions, the rotation due to the sugar is compensated by a wedge of quartz. right-handed and the other of left-handed quartz, may be fitted together, so that a movement of the combination in either direction increases the thickness of one variety traversed and diminishes that of the other. The linear movement required to compensate the introduction of a tube of syrup measures the quantity of sugar present.

§ 24. Dynamical Theory of Diffraction. The explanation of diffraction phenomena given by Fresnel and

his followers is independent of special views as to the nature of

the ether, at least in its main features; for in the absence of a more complete foundation it is impossible to treat rigorously the mode of action of a solid obstacle such asa screen. The full solu- tion of problems of this kind is scarcely to be expected. Even in the much simpler ease of sound, where we know what we have to deal with, the mathematical difficulties are formidable; and we are not able to solve even such an apparently elementary question as the transmission of sound past a rigid infinitely thin plane screen, bounded by a straight edge, or perforated with a circular aperture. But, without entering upon matters of this kind, we may inquire in what manner a primary wave may be resolved into elementary secondary waves, and in particular as to the law of intensity and polarization in a secondary wave as dependent upon its direction of propagation, and upon the character as regards polarization of the primary wave. This question is treated by Stokes in his " Dynamical Theory of Diffraction"? on the basis of the elastic solid theory.

_ Let x, y, z be the coordinates of any particle of the medium in its natural state, and £, 7, ¢ the displacements of the same particle at the end of timc ¢, mcasured in the directions of the three axes

respectively. Then the first of the equations of motion may be put under the form

u ofVE PE a . ae Pat at ge reo) (a a),

ae" dae tay ae da" dy dz where a and b? denote the two arbitrary constants. Put for short- ness dé dy ag AR at dy oP a 6 (1),*

aud represent by v°é the quantity multiplied by 7.

(; According to this notation, the three equations of motion are

aE 272 2 _ 22,48 }

ap OVE t (a aa Sr

On _ 272 2 PCL

ap 7 Vent (a mer (2). ae Qe72 2 _ 428

*BP b*y7¢+ (a |*

It is to be observed that 8 denotes the dilatation of volume of the clement situated at (x, y, z). In the limiting case in which the medium is regarded as absolutely incompressible 5 vanishes A lovin in order that cquations (2) may preserve their gencrality, we must

1 Wien. Ber, 1xxxv., 9th Feb. 1882. See also Phil. Trans., 1885, p. 360. 2 Camb. Phil. Trans., vol. ix. p.1; reprint, vol. ii, p 243,

waves. parallel to OZ, we have €=0, »=0, while (is a function of x and ¢only. Equation (1) and the first pair of equations (2) are thus satisfied identically. The third equation gives :

answered by Stokes. placements corresponding to the incident light ; let O, be any point secondary in the plane P (of the wave-front), adjacent to O, ; only of the incident disturbance which passes continually across dS. Let O be any point in the medium situated at a distance from the

Two wedges, one of

Tet © kh ¥

suppose a at the same time to become infinite, and replace a28 by a new function of the coordinates.

These equations simplify very much in their application to plane Plane If the ray be parallel to OX, and the direction of vibration waves,

ae 9 VE of which the solution is C=f(bt-a) . (4)

where fis an arbitrary function.

The question as to the law of the secondary waves is thus Stokes's "Let €=0, n=0, ¢=f(bt—x) be the dis- law of

dS an element of that plane wave. and consider the disturbance due to that portion

point O, which is large in comparison with the length of a wave; let 0,0 =7, and let this line make an angle with the direction of propagation of the incident light, or the axis of x, and with the direction of vibration, or axis of z. Then the displacement at O will take place in a direction perpendicular to 0,0, and lying in the plane ZO,O; and, if ¢' be the displacement at O, reckoned positive in the direction nearest to that in which the incident

vibrations are reckoned positive,

»_ aS som Pipi ¢ =7,,(1 + cos 6)sin gp f(bt—1) . In particular, if

f(bt-2)=csin "(bE – 2) (5), we shall have (=F (1 +005 6) sin g cos (4-7), « (By.

It is then verified that, after integration with respect to dS, (6) gives the same disturbance as if the primary wave had becn sup- posed to pass on unbroken.

The occurrence of sin p as a factor in (6) shows that the relative intensities of the primary light and of that diffracted in the direc- tion 6 depend upon the condition of the former as regards polar- ization. Ifthe direction of primary vibration be perpendicular to the plane of diffraction (containing both primary and secondary rays), sing@=1; but, if the primary vibration be in the plane of diffraction, sin¢=cos@. This result was employed by Stokes as a criterion of the direction of vibration ; and his experiments, con- ducted with gratings, led him to the conclusion that the vibrations of polarized light are executed in a direction perpendicular to the plane of polarization.

The factor (1+cos@) shows in what manner the secondary dis- turbance depends upon the direction in which it is propagated with respect to the front of the primary wave.

If, as suffices for all practical purposes, we limit the application of the formule to points in advance of the plane at which the wave is supposed tobe broken up, we may use simpler methods of resolu- tion than that above considered. It appears indeed that the purely mathematical question has no definite answer. In illustra- Analogy tion of this the analogous problem for sound may be referred to. of sound. Imagine a flexible lamina to be introduced so as to coincide with the plane at which resolution is to be effected. The introduction of the lamina (supposed to be devoid of inertia) will make no differ- ence to the propagation of plane parallel sonorous waves through the position which it occupies. At every point the motion of the lamina will be the same as would have occurred in its absence, the pressure of the waves impinging from behind being just what is required to generate the waves in front. Now it is evident that the aerial motion in front of the lamina is determined by what happens at the lamina without regard to the cause of the motion there existing. Whether the necessary forces are due to acrial pressures acting on the rear, or to forces directly impressed from without, is a matter of indifference. The conception of the lamina leads immediately to two schemes, according to which a primary wave may be supposed to be broken up. In the first of these the element dS, the effect of which is to be estimated, is supposed to execute its actual motion, while every other element of the plane lamina is maintained at rest. The resulting aerial motion in front is readily calculated ; it is symmetrical with respect to the origin, z.e., independent of 6. When the secondary disturbance thus ob- tained is integrated with respect to dS over the entire plane of the lamina, the result is necessarily the same as would have been obtained had the primary wave been supposed to pass on without resolution, for this is precisely the motion generated when every element of the lamina vibrates with a common motion, equal to that attributed to dS. The only assumption here involved is the evidently legitimate one that, when two systems of variously distri-

3 Theory of Sound, § 278.

af

Various The method of resolution just described is the simplest, but it 2 ~ikr 5 ~ thr methods is only one of an indefinite number that might be

*papas and . a: at /- ea a () é of reso- which are all equally legitimate, so long as the question is regarded is. 7 acl ie ee ae lution. as a merely mathematical one, without reference to the physical | ¢ denoting the angle between r and z. In differentiating e-**/r properties of actual screens. If, instead of supposing the motion | with respect to 7, we may neglect the term divided by 7? as altogether at dS to be that of the primary wave, and to be zero elsewhere, we | insensible, &r being an exceedingly great quantity at any moderate suppose-the force operative over the element dS of the lamina to be | distance from the origin of disturbance. Thus that corresponding to the primary wave, and to vanish elsewhere, —tk.TZsing er we obtain a secondary wave following quite a different law.1 In ee en ee Os (15), this case the motion in different directions varies as cos 6, vanishing Rep eae ee eee : : at right angles to the direction of propagation of the primary wave. | "UC? Comp etely determines the rotation at any point. For a dis- Here again, on integration over the entire lamina, the aggregate turbing force of given integral magnitude it is seen Lo be every- effect of the secondary waves is necessarily the same as that of the ee se Set ae eterenly aa the angle Gb ih – rimary. ? oe : oe pene Impressed. Y In oe to apply these ideas to the investigation of the secondary bo tye directions and upon the distance (7). : force. wave of light, we require the solution of a problem, first treated eamicusity of ight isghowever, more maually expressed: in by Stokes," viz., the determination of the motion in an infinitely terms of the actual displacement in the plane of the wave. This extended elastic solid due to a locally applied periodic force. If displacement, which we may denote by ¢', is in the plane containing we suppose that the force impressed upon the element of mass | * and 7, and perpendicular to the latter. Its connexion with @ is Ddadyde is expressed by w=d(/dr; so that DZ dx dy dz, , TZLsing etlnt-m) being pata oe to the axis of Z, the only change required ¢ "ie ~~ (16), in our equations (1), (2) is the addition of the term Z to the second ene member of the third equation (2). In the forced vibration, now mae No ee . – ee mal eB under considcration, Z, and the quantities £, y, ¢, 5 expressing the 1 i ie Aa f fe real part of (16), we find, as the result of a resulting motion, are to be supposed proportional to ¢", where ST a 0 t=/ (-1), and n=2n/7, + being the periodic time. Under these DTZ cos nt (17), circumstances the double differentiation with respect to ¢ of any | the disturbance expressed by Resulting quantity is equivalent to multiplication by the factor — n?, and*

*thus , TZsing cos(nt-kr) disturb- our equations take the form ¢ aoe = ee (18). ance. (b?v? -n?)é4- (a? — my mo The occurrence of sing shows that there is no disturbance radi- ~ ated in ie oe a the force, a feature which might have been pi 2 72) 40 _ anticipated from considerations of symmetry. pe) ee dy i (7). Ae We sal sag) (18) to the istodligetien of a law of secondary ds isturbancc, when a primary wave (By? n?) ((a? – 0?) — = Z : dz J ¢=sin (nt — kz) (19) It will now be convenient to introduce the quantities a, a, 3, | 18 supposed to be broken up in passing the planew=0. The first which express the rotations of the elements of the medium round axes | Step is to calculate the force which represents the reaction between parallel to those of coordinates, in accordance with the equations the parts of the medium separated by w=0. he force operative dt dn dn d¢ dt dk upon the positive half is parallel to OZ, and of amount per unit of oe ie aR tae oe (8). } area equal to In terms of th ' btain f i = differenti ye ; dsub Piiliiitinenet tion, rom), bya enon aise and to this force acting over the whole of the plane the actual (By? +7?)e73=0 motion on the positive side may be conceived to be due. Tho (B2y? + n2)ex, = dZ/dy (9) secondary disturbance corresponding to the element dS of the plano ai ee 4 * | may be supposed to be that caused by a force of the above magni (Gv* +n*)a_= – dZ/dx tude acting over dS and vanishing elsewhere; and it only remains The first of equations (9) gives to examine what the result of such a force would be. y= (10). Now it is evident that the force in question, supposed to act Law of For a, we have upon the positive half only of the medium, produces Just double of secondary il OW ee the effect that would be caused by the same force if the medium wave. seas SY dy da dy da (11),? | were undivided, and on the latter supposition (being also loealized ae F . at a point) it comes under the head already considered. According ae A Se ae ila ———— a tho et to (18), the 'tee of the force acting at dS parallel to OZ, and of k=nfb=2n/r . LO een ae A being the wave length. / j { : : : 2b°D dS cos nt , Force We will now introduce the supposition that the force Z acts only will be a disturbance . locally within a small space of volume T, situated at (x, y, 2), and for /_25 sin > = 20 Peeled. simnlici me ee ' ? ¢ cos (nt — kr) (20), ppied. simplicity suppose that it is at the origin of coordinates that the Ar*

WAVE

buted motion at the lamina are superposed, the corresponding motions in front are superposed also,

rotations are to be estimated. Integrating by parts in (11), we get

eo tkr aZ, e7tkr d [e-#r fee fa)

in which the integrated terms at the limits vanish, Z being finite only within the region T. Thus

ill ad fe-tr

Since the dimensions of T are supposed to be very small in com-

parison with a, the factor ag aa

dy if Zstand for the mean valuc of Z over the volume T, we may

is sensibly constant; so that,

i BPO UR ¥

453

the direction of the force and to the line joining the point to the source of disturbance. Ifthe resultant rotation be w, we have

regard being' had to (12). This therefore expresses the secondary disturbance at a distance r and in a direction making an angle ¢ with OZ (the direction of primary vibration) due to the element dS of the wave-front.

The proportionality of the secondary disturbance to sing is Compari-eommon to the present law and to that given by Stokes, but here son with there is no dependence upon the angle @ between the primary and Stokes's The occurrence of the factor (ar)-1, and the law.

secondary rays. necessity of supposing the phase of the secondary wave accelerated by a quarter of an undulation, were first established by

Archibald Smith, as the result of a comparison between the primary wave, supposed to pass on without resolution, and the integrated effect The occurrence of factors such

write of all the secondary waves (§ 10). TZ y cd fe- as sing, or $(1+cos@), in the expression of the secondary wave Oa oe = —) (18). | has no influence upon the result of the integration, the eflects of In like ma: iad oe eN all the elements for which the factors differ appreciably from unity oo, a _ tte being destroyed by mutual interference. ; BS ele Ee a). (14). The choice between various methods of resolution, all mathe- 4nb r dr\ 1 matically admissible, would be guided by physical considerations*

From (10), (18), (14) we see that, as might have been expected, the rotation at any point is about an axis perpendicular both to eee soe ERRNO On axis pele ee

1 Loe, cit., equation (10). 2 Loe. cit., §§ 27-30.

q a Oa potion may be verified in the same manner as Poisson's theorem, in which k=0. –

respecting the mode of action of obstacles. Thus, to refer again to the acoustical analogue in which plane waves are incident upon a perforated rigid screen, the circumstances of the case aro best represented by the first method of resolution, leading to symme- trical secondary waves, in which the normal motion is supposed to

Polariza- tion of diffracted light.

be zero over the unperforated parts. Indeed, if the aperture is very small, this method gives the correct result, save as to a constant factor. In like manner our present law (20) would apply to the kind of obstruction that would be caused by an actual physical division of the elastic medium, extending over the whole of the area supposed to be occupied by the intercepting screen, but of course not extending to the parts supposed to

be perforated. In the present state of our ignorance this law seems to be at least as plausible as any other.

§ 25. The Diffraction of Light by Small Particles.

The theory of the diffraction, dispersion, or scattering of light by small particles, as it has variously been called, is of im- portance, not only from its bearings upon fundamental optical hypotheses, but on account of its application to explain the origin and nature of the light from the sky. The view, suggested by Newton and advocated in more recent times by such authoritics as Herschel? and Clausius,? that the light of the sky is a blue of the first order reflected from aqueous particles, was connected with the then prevalent notion that the suspended moisture of clouds and mists was in the form of vesicles or bubbles. Experiments such as those of Briicke® pointed to a different conclusion. When a weak alcoholic solution of mastic is agitated with water, the pre- cipitated guin seatters a blue light, obviously similar in character to that from the sky. Not only would it be unreasonable to attribute a vesicular structure to the mastic, but (as Briicke remarked) the dispersed light is much richer in quality than the blue of the first order. Another point of great importance is well brought out in the experiments of Tyndall‘ upon clouds precipitated by the chemical action of light. Whenever the particles are suffi- ciently fine, the light emitted laterally is blue in colour, and, in a direction perpendicular to the incident beam, is completely polarized.

About the colour there can be no prima facie difficulty; for, as soon as the question is raised, it is seen that the standard of linear dimension, with reference to which the particles are called sinall, is the wave-length of light, and that a given set of particles would (on any conceivable view as to their mode of action) produce a continually increasing disturbance as we pass along the spectrum towards the more refrangible end.

On the other hand, that the direction of complete polarization should be independent of the refracting power of the matter com- posing the cloud has been considered mysterious. Of course, on the theory of thin plates, this direction would be determined by Brewster’s law ; but, if the particles of foreign matter are small in all their dimensions, the circumstances are materially different from those under which Brewster’s law is applicable.

The investigation of this question upon the elastic solid theory will depend upon how we suppose the solid to vary from one optical medium to another. The slower propagation of light in glass or water than in air or vacuum may be attributed to a greater density, or to a less rigidity, in the former case; or we may adopt the more complicated supposition that both these quantities vary, subject only to the condition which restricts the ratio of velocities to equality with the known refractive index. It will presently appear that the original hypothesis of Fresnel, that the rigidity remains the same in both media, is the only one that can be reconciled with the facts; and we will therefore investigate upon this basis the nature of the secondary waves dispersed by small particles.

Conceive a beam of plane polarized light to move among a number of particles, all small compared with any of the wave- lengths. According to our hypothesis, the foreign matter may be supposed to Joad the ether, so as to increase its ¢nertia without altering its resistance to distortion. If the particles were away, the wave would pass on unbroken and no light would be cmitted laterally. Even with the particles retarding the motion of the eether, the same will be true if, to counterbalance the increased inertia, suitable forces are caused to act on the ether at all points where the inertia is altered. These forces have the same period and direction as the undisturbed luminous vibrations themselves. The light actually emitted laterally is thus the same as would be caused by forces exactly the opposite of these acting on the medium otherwise free from disturbance, and it only remains to see what the effect of such force would be.

On account of the smallness of the particles, the forces acting throughout the volume of any individual particle are all of the same intensity and direction, and may be considered as a whole. The determination of the motion in the ether, due to the action of a periodic force at a given point, is a problem with which we have recently been occupied (§ 24). But, before applying the solution to a mathematical investigation of the present qucstion, it may be well to consider the matter for a few moments from a more general point of view.

In the first place, there is necessarily a complete symmetry round the direction of the force. The disturbance, consisting of trans-

1 Article " Light," Enc. Metrop., 1830, § 1143.

2 Pogg. Ann., vols. 1xxii., Ixxvi., Ixxxviii; Crelle, vols. xxxiv., xxxvi,

3 Poyg. Ann., vol. Ixxxiti. 4 Phil. Mag. (4), vol. cxxxvil. p. 388,

verse vibrations, is propagated outwards in all directions from the centre; and, in consequence of the symmetry, the direction of vibration in any ray lies in the plane containing the ray and the axis of symmetry; that is to say, the direction of vibration in the scattered or diffracted ray makes with the direction of vibration in the incident or primary ray the least possible angle. The symmetry also requires that the intensity of the scattered light should vanish for the ray which would be propagated along the axis; for there is nothing to distinguish one direction transverse to the ray from another. The application of this is obvious. Suppose, for dis- tinctness of statement, that the primary ray is vertical, and that the plane of vibration is that of the meridian. The intensity of the light scattered by a small particle is constant, and a maximum, for rays which lie in the vertical plane running east and west, while there is no scattered ray along the north and south line. If the primary ray is unpolarized, the light scattered north and south is entirely due to that component which vibrates east and west, and is therefore perfectly polarized, the direction of its vibra- tion being also east and west. Similarly any other ray scattercd horizontally is perfectly polarized, and the vibration is performed in the horizontal plane. In other directions the polarization becomes less and less complete as we approach the vertical.

The observed facts as to polarization are thus readily explained, and the general law connecting the intensity of the scattered light with the wave-length follows almost as easily from considerations of dimensions.

The object is to compare the intensities of the incident and Method

scattered light, for these will clearly be proportional. The number of dimen- (z) expressing the ratio of the two amplitudes is a function of the sions, following quantities :—(T) the volume of the disturbing particle; (r) the distance of the point under consideration from it ; (A) the wave-length; (0) the velocity of propagation of light; (D) and (D') the original

and altered densities: of which the first three depend only upon space, the fourth on space and time, while the fifth and sixth introduce the consideration of mass. Other elements of the problem there are none, except mere numbers aud angles, which do not depend upon the fundamental measurements of space, time, and mass. Since the ratio (2), whose expression we seck, is of no dimensions in mass, it follows at once that ID and D' occur only under the form D: D', which is asimple number and may therefore be disregarded. It remains to find how 7 varies with T, 7, a, 0.

Now, of these quantities, 6 is the only one depending on time ; and therefore, as 2 is of no dimensions in time, 6 cannot occur in its expression.

Moreover, since the same amount of energy is propagated across all spheres concentric with the particle, we recognize that 7 varies as7. It is equally evident that 7 varies as T, and therefore that it must be proportional to T/ar, T being of three dimensions in space.

In passing from one part of the spectrum to another, A is the only quantity which varies, and we have the important law :—

When light is scattered by particles whicli are very small coni- Law of pared with any of the wave-lengths, the ratio of the amplitudes of inten- the vibrations of the scattered and incident lights varies inversely sities, as the square of the wave-length, and the ratio of cntensities as the inverse fourth power.

The light scattered from small particles is of a much richer blue than the blue of the first order as reflected from a very thin plate.

From the general theory (§ 8), or by the method of dimensions, it is easy to prove that in the latter case the intensity varics as A~?, instead of A~+4.

The principle of energy makes it clear that the light emitted Intensity laterally is not a new creation, but only diverted from the main of trans-

stream. If I represent the intensity of the primary light after mitted traversing a thickness x of the turbid medium, we have light.

dl = —hIa-4tdz, where / is a constant independent of A. On integration, lope ane. sel. (0), if I, correspond to x=0,—a law altogether similar to that of absorption, and showing how the light tends to become yellow and finally red as the thickness of the medium increases.®

Captain Abney has found that the above law agrees remarkably well with his observations on the transmission of light through water in which particles of mastic are suspended. ®

We may now investigate the mathematical expression for the Mathema- disturbance propagated in any direction from a small particle upon ticalin- | which a beam of light strikes. Let the particle be at the origin of vestiga- coordinates, and lct the expression for the primary vibration be _ tion. .

*Comite). 2 1. ws cs (2), The acceleration of the element at the origin is— 7?sin 2é; so that the force which would have to be applied to the parts where the density is D' (instead of D), in order that the waves might pass on undisturbed, is per unit of volume, —(D'-D)n*sin né.*

*5 **On the Light from the Sky, its Polarization and Colour," Phil, Mag., Feb, 1871, & Proc. Roy. Soc., May 1886,*

General expres- sions,

Hither

- *AN or AD van- ishes.*

AN must vanish.

Weave THEOR Y

To obtain the total force which must be supposed to act, the factor T (representing the volume of the particle) must be introduced. The opposite of this, conceived to act at O, would give the same disturbance as is

actually caused by the presence of the particle. Thus by (18) (§ 24) the secondary disturbance is expressed by

,_ D'-D n7T sin ¢ sin (nt – kr) we Aah? r

D — DID xl sin $ sin (nt- kr) « ee

1

D (3).

The preceding investigation is based upon the assumption that in passing from one medium to another the rigidity of the «ther does not change. If we forego this assumption, the question is necessarily more complicated ; but, on the supposition that the changes of rigidity (AN) and of density (AD) are relatively small, the results are fairly simple. If the primary wave be represented

by Cmte wl | (4), the component rotations in the secondary wave are AN yz aie ON AD AN ay anP(S ety a): " AD x , AN 2-2 moh (Sy eH SS) where UeT e- ter To daa ©)

The expression for the resultant rotation in the general case would be rather complicated, and is not needed for our purpose, It is easily seen to be about an axis perpendicular to the scattered ray (x, y, 2), inasmuch as ta +Yayt+2a,=0. Let us consider the more special case of a ray scattered normally to the incident ray, so that x=0. We have . AN 2 oe AD 2 a2 wow! tai+ a=? (SS) 2+P() gz)

If AN, AD be both finite, we learn from (7) that there is no direction perpendicular to the primary (polarized) ray in which the secondary light vanishes. Now experiment tells us plainly that there is such a direction, and therefore we are driven to the conclu- sion that either AN or AD must vanish.

The consequences of supposing AN to be zero have already been traced. They agree very well with experiment, and require us to suppose that the vibrations are perpendicular to the plane of polarization. So far as (7) is

concerned the alternative supposition that AD vanishes would answer equally well, if we suppose the vibrations to be executed in the plane of polarization ; but let us now revert to (5), which gives

According to these equations there would be, in all, six directions from O along which there is no scattered light, —two along the axis of y normal to the original ray, and four (y=0, z=+2) at angles of 45° with that ray. So long as the particles are small no such

vanishing of light in oblique directions is observed, and

z we are thus led to the conclusion that the hypothesis of

a finite AN and of vibrations in the plane of polarization

Q cannot be reconciled with the facts. No form of the

elastic solid theory is admissible except that in which

the vibrations are supposed to be perpendicular to the

plane of polarization, and the dif-

ference between one medium and

another to be a difference of density only.?

Before leaving this subject it may be instructive to show the applica- tion of a method, similar to that used for small particles, to the case of an obstructing cylinder, whose axis is parallel to the fronts of the primary waves. We will suppose (1) that the variation of optical properties depends upon a difference of density (D'—D), and is small in amount; (2) that the diameter of the cylinder is very small in comparison with the wave-length of light.

Let the axis of the cylinder be the axis of z (fig. 26), and (as before) let the incident light be parallel to x. The original vibration is thus, in the principal cases, parallel to either z or y. We will take

1 In strictness the force must be supposed to act upon the medium inits actual condition, whereas in (18) the medium is supposed to be absolutely uniform. It is not (difficult to prove that (3) remains unaltered, when this circumstance is taken into account; and it is evident in any case that a correction would depend upon the square of (D'—D).

Pag paper, "On the Scattering of Light by Small Particles," Pail. Mag.,

455

first the former case, where the disturbance due to the cylinder must evidently be symmetrical round OZ and parallel toit. The element of the disturbance at A, due to PQ(dz), will be proportional to dz in amplitude, and will be retarded in phase by an amount corre- sponding to the distance 7. In calculating the effect of the whole bar we have to consider the integral

ee _ [dr sin (nt — kr) ZL a $10 (né kr) -/, ~a/(P— RY) ° The integral on the left may be treated as in § 15, and we find

J. " r-Tsin (nt — r)de=4/(a/R) ein (nt -ER— 40),

showing that the total effect is retarded 4A behind that due to the central element at O. We have seen (8) that, if « be the sectional area, the effect of the element PQ is D'—D wodzsin D wr where @ is the angle OPA. In strictness this should be reckoned perpendicular to PA, and therefore, considered as a contribution to the resultant at A, should be multiplied by sing. But the faetor sin', being sensibly equal to unity for the only parts which are really operative, may be omitted without influencing the result. In this way we find, for the disturbance at A,

D'-D oO sin (nt-ER—4n)

sin (nt -

Oo D ytR? corresponding to the incident wave sin (ni— zx).

When the original vibration is parallel to y, the disturbance due to the cylinder will no longer be symmetrical about OZ. If a be the angle between OX and the scattered ray, which is of course always perpendicular to OZ, it is only necessary to introduce the factor cos a in order to make the previous expression (9) applicable.

The investigation shows that the light diffracted by an ideal wire- grating would, according to the principles of Fresnel, follow the law of polarization enunciated by Stokes. On the other hand, this law would be departed from were we to suppose that there is any difference of rigidity between the cylinder and the surrounding medium.

(9),

§ 26. Reflexion and Refraction.

So far as the directions of the rays are concerned, the laws of reflexion and refraction were satisfactorily explained by Huygens on the principles of the wave theory. The question of the amownt of light reflected, as dependent upon the characters of the media and upon the angle of incidence, 1s a much more difficult one, and cannot be dealt with a priori without special hypotheses as to the nature of the luminous vibrations, and as to the cause of the differ- ence between various media. By a train of reasoning, not strictly

dynamical, but of great ingenuity, Fresnel was led to certain Fresnel's formule, since known by his name, expressing the ratio of the re- formule.

flected to the incident vibration in terms of one constant (mu). If 6 be the angle of incidence and 6, the angle of refraction, Fresnel's expression for light polarized in the plane of incidence is

sin (0 ~ @,)

sin (6+ 6;) (), where the rclation between the angles , ,, and u (the relative re- fractive index) is, as usual,

sin @=p sin 6, ee ae In like manner, for light polarized perpendicularly to the plane of incidence, Fresnel found

tan (–,) ’ (3).

tan (6+ 6) In the particular case of perpendicular incidence, both formule coincide with one previously given by Young, viz.,

(4).

*(u-1)/(u+1)- Since these formule agree fairly well with observation, and are at any rate the simplest that can at all represent the facts, it may be advisable to consider their significance a little in detail. As increases from 0 to 42, the sine-formula increases from Young’s value to unity. We may see this most easily with the aid of a slight transformation :— sin(-6,) 1-tan6,/tan@ yu —cos 6/cos 6; sin(+06,) 1+tané,/tan p+cos6/cos 6, Now, writing cos 6/cos@, in the form 1 — sin? 6 a 1=p-*sin?¢§ ’ we recognize that, as increases from 0 to $7, cos 9/ COs 0 dimin- ishes continuously from 1 to 0, and therefore (1) increases from (4 —1)/(w4+1) to unity. y It is quite otherwise with the tangent-formula. Commencing at Young’s value, it diminishes, as increases, until it attains zero, when 0+ 6,— 47, or sin ,=cos; or by (2) tand=m. This is the polarizing angle defined by Brewster. It presents itself here as the*

456

angle of incidence for which there is no reflexion of the polarized light under consideration. As the angle of incidence passes through the polarizing angle, the reflected vibration changes sign, and increases in numerical value until it attains unity at a grazing incidence (@=4r).

Wavy Trait on ¥

By means of this expression we may obtain in succession the valucs of ¢(2), (8), &c., in terms of #(1), viz., 7. The general value is

mr go(m) = Tear (10),

Total We have hitherto supposed that the second medium (into which | § aA easily be Piha by ae Hee ted b + reflexion. the light enters at the refracting surface) is the denser. In the Pal ae Ing XP Teg eoayaer IRS NBL Cnenmmcd" Dyeaamie contrary case, total reflexion sets in as soon as sind =y-!, at which | °f ™ plates is oe point 6, becomes imaginary. We shall be able to follow this better Y(m)=1- ¢(m) = Sa . (11). in connexion with a mechanical theory. 1+ (mw 1)r If light falls upon the first surface of a parallel plate at the | The investigation has been extended by Stokes so as to cover the polarizing angle, the refracted ray also meets the second surface | case in which the plates exercise an absorbing influence.? of the plate at the appropriate polarizing angle. For if w be the The verification of Fresnel's formule by direct photometric index of the second medium relatively to the first, the tangent of | measurement is a matter of some difficulty. The proportion of the angle of incidence, which is also the cotangent of the angle | perpendicularly incident ight transmitted by a glass plate has of refraction, is equal to w. At the second surface (the third | been investigated by Rood ;? but the deficiency may have been medium being the same as the first) the angles of incidence and | partly due to absorption. If we attempt to deal directly with the refraction are interchanged, and therefore the condition for the | reflected Hight, the experimental difficulties are much increased; polarizing angle is satistied, since the index for the second refrac- | but the evidence is in favour of the approximate correctness of tion is w7}. Fresnel's formulz when light is reflected nearly perpendicularly Oblique The principal formule apply to light polarized in, and perpen- | from a recently polished glass surface. When the surface is old, polariza- dicular to, the plane of incidence. If the plane of polarization | even.though carefully cleaned, there may be a considerable falling tion. make an angle a with that of incidence, the original vibration may | off of reflecting power.4 be resolved into two,— cos a polarized in the plane of incidence, and We have seen that according to Fresnel's tangent-formula there sin a polarized in the perpendicular plane. These components are | would be absolutely no reflexion of light polarized perpendicularly reflected according to the laws already considered, and reconstitute | to the plane of incidence, when the angle of incidence is tan-1u, plane-polarized light, of intensity or, which comes to the same thing, common light reflected at this »_sin?(–6,), . . tan?(—6;) angle could be perfectly extinguished with a Nicol's prism.

*cos? a Sa Canes a tan® (0+ 6) (5). It was first observed by Airy that in the case of the diamond and eo ae – aj , ki 45° with the | ter highly refracting media this law is only approximately in are erica aC Mirae pee se WE ° | accordance with the facts. It is readily proved by experiment that, plane of incidence, or be circularly-polarized (§ 20), or be unpolar- | whatever be the angle of incidence, sunlight reflected from a plate ized, (5) applies to the reflected light, with substitution of 4 for | of bivioeless is incapable ofbenmuniencked byw a Neeolkwnd 16 cos*a and sin?a. If 8 denote in the general case the angle between iheetore tesperettly ice ae d y : os lee of incidence and that in which the reflected light is This subject has been studied by Jamin. The character of the Jamin's ees Aaa reflected vibration can be represented, as regards both amplitude observa- tan B=tana cos (6 + 6) P (6), | and phase, by the situation in a plane of a point P relatively to tions. cos (8 — 6) "| the origin of coordinates O. The length of the line OP represents a result the approximate truth of which has been verified by Fresnel | the amplitude, while the inclination of OP to the axis of x repre- and Brewster. sents the phase. According to Fresnel's formula appropriate to Reflected The formule for the intensities of the refracted light follow | light polarized perpendicularly to the plane of incidence, P is rays. immediately from the corresponding formule relative to the re- | situated throughout on the axis of «, passing through O when the flected light in virtue of the principle of energy. The simplest | angle of incidence is tan-4z. Jamin found, however, that in general way to regard the mattcr is to suppose the refracted light to emerge | P does not pass through O, but above or bclowit. When P is on from the second medium into a third medium similar to the first | the axis of y, the amplitude is a minimum, and the phase is mid- without undergoing loss from a second reflexion, a supposition | way between the extreme phases. For one class of bodies the which would be realized if the transition between the two media | phase is in arrear of that corresponding to perpendicular incidence, were very gradual instead of abrupt. The intensities of the different | and for another class of bodies in advance. In a few intermediate lights may then be measured in the same way; and the sup- | cases P passes sensibly through O; and then the change of phase position that no loss of energy is incurred when the incident light | is sudden, and the minimum amplitude is zcro. gives rise to the reflected and refracted lights requires that the In the case of metals the polarization produced by reflexion is*

Metallic sum of the squares of the vibrations representing the latter shall be | still more incomplete. Light polarized perpendicularly to the reflexion. — equal to the square of the vibration representing the former, viz., | plane of incidence is reflected at all angles, the amount, however, unity. We thus obtain, in the two cases corresponding to (1) and | decreasing as the angle of incidence increases from 0° to about 75°, (3), P and then again increasing up to a grazing incidence. The most _sin?(–6,) _ sin 26sin 26, : marked effect is the relative retardation of one polarized component sin?(+6,) — sin?(+,) (7), with respect to the other. At an angle of about 75° this retarda- tan? (9 — 6,) ein aoe tion amounts to a quarter period. ‘ : – oH = So (8). The intensity of reflexion from metals is often very high. From tan” (+6,) sin?(+ 6) cos? (8 ~ 0,) silver, even at perpendicular incidence, as much as 95 per cent. of A plate of glass, or a pile of parallel plates, is often convenient as | the incident light is reflected. There is reason for regarding the a polarizer, when it is not necessary that the polarization be quite | high reflecting power of metals as connected with the intense complete, At the precise angle of incidence (tan-2u) there would | absorption which they exercise. Many aniline dyes reflect in be, according to Fresnel’s formulx, only one kind of polarized light | abnormal proportion from their surface those rays of the spectrum reflected, even when the incident light is unpolarized. The polar- | to which they are most opaque. The peculiar absorption spectrum ization of the transmitted light, on the other hand, is imperfect ; | of permanganate of potash is reproduced in the light reflected from but it improves as the number of plates is increased. ” | a surface of a crystal.® Reflexion If we suppose that there is no regular interference, the intensity bya ® of the light reflected from a plate is readily calculated by a § 27. Reflewion on the Elastic Solid Theory. plate. geometric series when the intensit of the light refie ‘ : ee s ‘ single surface is known. The light ies fea the fait te so me Hy et Claes see ee Ra Gueic sale ies) Eeseranenneawsttne fe he investigation of reflexion and refraction presents no very serious peel aan yt st surface, reflected at the second, difficulties, but the results do not harmonize very well with optical and then transmitted at the first, is p(1-p)% The next component b ee Tt Gen hae f ; it uM t d = al reflected three times and transmitted twice, is p?(1 —)?, and so on. | he ee pe et a 2 aaa ame oa Pies alae P)‘s ‘| that reflexion and refraction can be explained, at least in their ‘ principal*

features, on a perfectly definite and intelligible theory, r=pt(1—p){ptp?p 5... ya? oe RO which, if not strictly applicable to the ether, has at any rate a dis- , : : ; +p "| tinct mechanical significance. The refracting surface and the Pile of The intensity of the light reflected from a pile of plates has been | wave-fronts may for this purpose be supposed to be plane. plates. investigated by Provostaye and Desains.! If (mm) be the reflexion When the vibrations are perpendicular to the plane of incidence Vibra-*

from m plates, we may find as above for the reflexion from (m-+1) plates, ' p(m+1)=r+(1—rPgo(m){1+rd(m) +7 [o(m)P+73[b(m) P+... } r+(1—2r)¢ (m) = ro(m) 1 Ann. d. Chim. xxx. p. 159, 1850.

(z=0), the solution of the problem is very simple. We suppose tions per- that the refracting surface is ~—0, the rigidity and density in the pendicu- first medium being N, D, and in the second N;, D,. The displace- Jar to

2 Proc, Roy. Soc., xi, p. 545, 1862. 3 Am, Jour., vol. 1., July 1870, Plane of

4 "On the Intensity of Light reflected from Certain Surfaces at nearly Per- incidence. pendicular Incidence," Proc. Roy. Soc., 1886.

5 Stokes, 'On the Metallic Reflection exhibited by Certain Non-Metallic Substances," Phil, Mag., Dec. 1853:

way h- TmHoOR Y

ments in the two media are in general denoted by & 7, ¢3 &» mp G3 but in the present case é 7, &, 7, all vanish. Moreover ¢, ¢, are independent of z. The equations to be satisfied in the interior of the media are accordingly (§ 24)

457

supposed to vibrate normally to the plane of polarization; while, if D=D,, the vibrations are parallel to that plane.

An intermediate supposition, according to which the refraction is regarded as due partly to a difference of density and partly to a

ae N/de ae difference of rigidity, could scarcely be reconciled with observation,

ap D(Se os) (1), | unless one variation were very subordinate ‘to the other. But the

PL Nag ae inost satisfactory argument against the joint variation is that

“a = ~ (a +59) Fe ee ee ek Cae Pee from the theory of the diffraction of light by small particles

:

At the boundary the conditions to be satisfied are the continuity of displacement and of stress ; so that, when x=0,

4 oa…

We will now, limiting ourselves for simplicity to Fresnel’s sup- Total position (N,=N), inquire into the character of the solution when reflexion.

total reflexion sets in.

The symbolical expressions for the reflected and refracted waves are

ee ws The incident waves may be represented by ¢= 1 gi(-axtbytet) (3), (= etlaxtby+et), a+Q, where Gs 20 gilayetryret) (14), De? =N(a?+ 6?) . (4); ; a+ My ; _— and aa+by=const. gives the equation of the wave-fronts. The and so long as a, is real they may be intrepreted to indicate reflected and refracted waves may be represented by (= 7 cos (-ax4 by ct) . (15), (= (eil-axtbytet) (5), a, i 2 Cages (6). Gao cos (a,x + by + ct) (16), The coefficient of ¢ is necessarily the same in all three waves on ; fee deena 4 gente account of the periodicity, and the coefficient of y must be the ee Le eee same sinee the traces of all the waves upon the plane of separation ¢=cos (axz+by+ct) . (17).

must move together. With regard to the coefficient of x, it appears by substitution in the differential equations that its sign is ehanged in passing from the incident to the reflected wave ;

in fact @=V2{(taP+P}=V2f{ar+o}. . M7); where V, V, are the velocities of propagation in the two media

given by

V=N/D, Viele. . . . 2 (8): Now 6/,/(a? + 6?) is the sine of the angle included between the axis of x and the normal to the plane of waves—in optical language, the sine of the angle of incidence—and b/a/(a,7+67) is in like manner the sine of the angle of refraction. If these angles be de- noted (as before) by , 6), (7) asserts that sin: sin 6, is equal to the constant ratio V: V,, the well-known law of sines. The laws

In this case there is a refracted wave of the ordinary kind, cqn- veying away a part of the original energy. When, however, the second medium is the rarer (V;>V), and the angle of incidence exeeeds the so-called eritical angle [sin-}(V/V,)], there can be no refracted wave of the ordinary kind. In whatever direction it nay be supposed to lic, its trace must necessarily outrun the trace of the incident wave upon the separating surface. The quantity a@,, as defined by our equations, is then imaginary, so that (13) and (14) no longer express the real parts of the symbolical expressions (5) and (6). If — 2a,' be written in place of a, the symbolical equations are Ot tty i artbytot oe a ey.

oa corn Thy tect) | Sta ert a Teese)

from which, by discarding the imaginary parts, we obtain

of reflexion and refraction follow simply from the fact that the ¢=cos(-ax+by+et+2e). (18), velocity of propagation normal to the wave-fronts is constant in 2a .

each medium, that is to say, independent of the direction of the Tae (oby+e+e). (19), wave-front, taken in connexion with the equal velocities of the ites ss

traces of all the waves on the plane of separation (V/sin@é= tan e=a,'/a (20).

V,/sin 6,). The boundary conditions (3) now give

Since 2 is supposed to be negative in the second medium, we see that the disturbance is there confined to a small distance (a few

a f iE f Phénce Te a SO Nal – C)= Ning (9), wave-lengths) from the surface, and no energy is propagated into Neate the interior. The whole of the energy of the incident waves is to C= ee] (10), | be found in the reflected waves, or the reflexion is total. There is, Nat+Nyy however, a ehange of phase of 2e, given by (20), or in terms of Realized a formula giving the reflected wave in terms of the incident wave V, V,, and expres- (supposed to be unity). This completes the symbolical solution. tan e=/{ tan? 6 – sec? a(v7/V,7)} 4, "ER (Al) sions. If a, (and ,) be real, we see that, if the incident wave be The principal application of the formule being to reflexions when Fresnel's ¢=cos (aa + by + et), the second medium is air, it will be convenient to denote by » the interpre- or in terms of V, A, and 6, index of the first medium relatively to the second, so that z= V,/V. tation. Qn ; Thus ¢=cos 5 & cosé+ysin@+ Vz) . (11), tan e=/{tan? 6 — sec? 6/u?} (22). the reflected wave is The above interpretation of his formula sin (0, —)/sin (6, +8), in N cot 6—N, cot @ Qe ' the case where 6, becomes imaginary, is due to the sagacity of em 1 cos —(-—axcos0+ysin 6+ Vt) (12). | Fresnel. His argument was perhaps not set forth with full rigour, cot +N, cot 0, be but of its substantial validity there can be no question. By a The formula for intensity of the reflected wave is here obtained on | similar process Fresnel deduced from his tangent-formula for the the supposition that the waves are of harmonie type ; but, since it change of phase (2e') accompanying total reflexion when the vibra- does not involve A and there is no change of phase, it may be ex- | tions are executed in the plane of incidence, tended by Fourier's theorem to waves of any type whatever. It Rane { Sas ganeee? 0} (28) may be remarked that when the first and second media are inter- ane = w/e ; i 2 s changed the coefficient in (12) simply changes sign, retaining its | The phase-differences represented by 2¢ and 2' eannot be investi- numerical value. gated experimentally, but the difference (2e'

— 2e)is rendered evident Alter- The amplitude of the reflected wave, given in general by (12), | when the incident light is polarized obliquely so as to contribute Native assumes special forms when we introduce more particular supposi- | components in both the principal planes. If in the act of reflexion Supposi- tions as to the nature of the difference between media of diverse | one component is retarded more or less than the other, the resultant tions, —_ refracting power. According to Fresnel and Grecn the rigidity | light is no longer plane but elliptically polarized.

does not vary, or N=N,. In this ease

If, on the other hand, the density is the same in various media, N,: N=V,?: V?=sin? 6,: sin? , and then Neot-N,cot 6, tan (6,—@) Neot@+N,coté@, tan(6,+6) ° If we assume the complete aeeuracy of Fresnel's expressions, either alternative agrees with observation; only, if N=N,, light must be

From (22) and (23) we have tan (e' —«)=cos 0a/{1-~?cosec? 6} , whence , Qu? sin 46 — (1+?) sin? @+1

24),

(1 +p?) sin 76-1 (28)

cos (2e' — 2e)=

The most interesting case oceurs when the difference of phase Difference amounts to a quarter of a period, corresponding to light circularly of phases.

If, however, we put eos (2e' – Ze) =9, we find 4p? sin? @=1 +wWtr/{(1 +P 8y?} 5 from which it appears that, in order that sin # may be real, «7 must

XXIV. — 58

polarized.

Fresnel's rhomb, Vibra- tions in the plane of inei- dence,

Green's formula.

Reflexion depend- ent upon diseon- tinuity.

458

exceed 8+4/8. So large a value of yn? not being available, the conversion of plane-polarized into circularly-polarized light by one reflexion is impracticable.

The desired object may, however, be attained by two successive reflexions. The angle of incidence may be so accommodated to the index that the alteration of phase amounts to 4 period, in which case a second reflexion under the same conditions will give rise to light circularly polarized. Putting (2e- 2e«')=40, we get

Qp? sint =(1+/4){(1+m?)sin?6+1} . . . (25), an equation by which is determined when yp is given.

It appears that, when »=1°51, 6=48° 37' or 54° 37'.

These results were verified by Fresnel by means of the rhomb shown in fig. 27.

The problem of reflexion upon the elastie solid theory, when the vibrations are executed in the plane of incidence, is more complicated, on account of the tendency to form waves of dilatation. In order to get rid of these, to which no optical phenomena correspond, it is necessary to follow Green in supposing that the velocity of such waves is infinite, or that the media are incompressible.! Even then we have to introduce in the neighbour- hood of the interface waves variously called longitudinal, pressural, or surface waves; other- wise it is impossible to satisfy the conditions of continuity of strain and stress. These waves, analogous in this respect to those occurring in the second medium when total reflexion 1s in progress (19), extend to a depth of a few wave-lengths only, and they are so constituted that there is neither dilatation nor rotation. On account of them the final formule are less simple than those of Fresnel. If we suppose the densities to be the same in the two media, there is no correspondence whatever between theory and observation. In this case, as we have seen, vibrations perpendicular to the plane of incidence are

reflected according to Fresnel's tangent-formula; and thus vibrations in the plane of incidence should follow the sine-formula. The actual result of theory is, however, quite different. In the case where the relative index does not differ greatly from unity, polarizing angles of 224° and 674° are indicated, a result totally at variance with observation. As in the case of diffraction by small particles, an elastic solid theory, in which the densities in various media are supposed to be equal, is inadmissible. If, on the other hand, following Green, we regard the rigidities as equal, we get results in better agreement with observation. To a first approximation indeed (when the refraction is small) Green's formula coincides with Fresnel's tangent-formula; so that light vibrating in the plane of incidence is reflected according to this law, and light vibrating in the perpendicular plane according to the sine-fornila. The vibrations are accordingly perpendicular to the plane of polarization.

The deviations from the tangent-formula, indicated by theory when the refraction is not very small, are of the same general charaeter as those observed by Jamin, but of much larger amount. The minimum reflexion at the surface of glass (u=$) would be 4,,? nearly the half of that which takes place at perpendicular incidence, and very much in excess of the truth. This theory cannot there- fore be considered satisfactory as it stands, and various suggestions have been made for its improvement. The only variations from Green's suppositions admissible in strict harmony with an elastic solid theory is to suppose that the transition from one medium to the other is gradual instead of abrupt, that is, that the transitional layer is of thickness comparable with the wave-length. This modification would be of more service to a theory which gave Fresnel's tangent-formula as the result of a sudden transition than to one in which the deviations from that formula are already too great.

_It seems doubtful whether there is much to be gained by further discussion upon this subject, in view of the failure of the elastic solid theory to deal with double refraction. The deviations from Fresnel's formule for reflexion are comparatively small ; and the whole problem of reflexion is so much concerned with the condition of things at the interface of two media, about which we know little that valuable guidance can hardly be expected from this quarter. It is desirable to bear constantly

in mind that reflexion depends entirely upon an approach to discontinuity in the properties of the medinm, If the thickness of the transitional layer amounted to a few wave-lengths, there would be no sensible reflexion at all.

Another point may here be mentioned. Our theories of reflexion take no account of the fact that one at least of the media is disper- sive, The example of a stretched string, executing transverse vibrations, and composed of two parts, one of which in virtue of

1 The supposition that the velocity is zero, favoured by some writers, is in-admissible. Even dilatational waves involve a shearing of the medium, and must therefore be propagated at a finite rate, unless the resistance to compression were negative. But in that case the equilibrium would be unstable.

2 Green's Papers, by Ferrers, p. 333.

stiffness possesses in some degree the es property, shows that the boundary conditions upon which reflexion depends are thereby modified. "We may thus expect a finite reflexion at the interface of two media, if the dispersive powers are different, even though the indices be absolutely the same for the waves under consideration, in which case there is no refraction, But a know- ledge of the dispersive properties of the media is not sufficieut to determine the reflexion without recourse to hypothesis.3

§ 28. Phe Velocity of Light. According to the principles of the wave theory, the dispersion of

No dis-

refraction can only be explained as due to a variation of velocity persion in

with wave-length or period. propagated through an elastic solid, there is no such variation ; and so the existence of dispersion was at one time

considered to be a serious objection to the wave theory. Dispersion 7 vacwo would indeed present some difficulty, or at least force upon us views which at present seem unlikely as to the constitution of free ether. The weight of the evidence is, however, against the existence of dis- persion 7m vacuo. ' Were there a difference of oue hour in the times of the blue and red rays reaching us from Algol, this star would show a well-marked coloration in its phases of increase and decrease, No trace of coloration having been noticed, the differ- ence of times cannot exceed a fraction of an hour. It is not at all probable that the parallax of this star amounts to one-tenth of a second, so that its distance, probably, exceeds two million radii of the earth's orbit, and the time which is required for its light to reach us probably exceeds thirty years, or a quarter of a million hours. It is therefore difficult to see how there can be a difference as great as four parts in a million between the velocities of light coming from near the two ends of the bright part of the spectrum.'"#*

For the velocity of light in vacwo, as determined in kilometres per second by terrestrial methods (Licut, vol xiv. p. 585), New- comb gives the following tabular statement :—

Michelson, at Naval Academy, im 1879…….cscsseeceeceseeee 299,910 MNGHEISOM, Ab Clovelmitd, USSOe yaa scc cut. ce cee anes ceasasiins nclovnennie 299,853 Newcomb at Washington, 1882, using only results sup-

posed to be nearly frec from constant e1TOY's…….0008 299,860 Newcomb, including all determinations …..cccccccsseoccescenees 299,810

To these may be added, for reference—

HouCanl 6 fit; Paria, Win 1882s isceasds.teWeieeas sceads Ss cdvesccsedesntnns 298,000 Ome He Baris, 1a USTs. cvanasiasssdeenassesee neve essa nuwslertinseccccterins 298,500 Cormac Prarie, AWS 18s. wescinescnue stwuss casi scivensuesleeisls asians 300,400 This last result, as discussed by Listing……. 299,990 Young and Forbes, 1880-1881 ……..sscssecsssseceees So 301,382

Newcomb concelndes, as the most probable result— Velocity of light in vacuo =299,860+30 kilometres.

It should be mentioned that Young and Forbes inferred from their observations a difference of velocities of blue and red light amount- ing to about 2 per cent., but that neither Michelson nor Newcomb, using Foucault's method, could detect any trace of such a difference.

When we come to consider the propagation of light through ponderable media, there seems to be little reason for expecting to find the velocity independent of wave-length. The interaction of matter and ether may well give rise to such a degree of compli- cation that the differential equation expressing the vibrations shall contain more than one constant. The law of constant velocity is a special property of certain very simple media. Even in the case of a stretched string, vibrating transversely, the velocity becomes a function of wave-length as soon as we admit the existence of finite stiffness.

As regards the law of dispersion, a formula, derived by Cauchy from theoretical considerations, was at one time gencrally accepted. According to this,

pwedsBa-+0.7*4 2 2 « « s & (L; and there is no doubt that eveu the first two terms give a good representation of the truth in media not very dispersive, and over the more luminous portion of the spectrum. A formula of this kind treats dispersion as due to the smallness of wave-lengths, giving a definite limit to refraction (A) when the wave-length is very large. Recent investigations by Langley ou the law of disper- sion for rock-salt in the ultra red region of the spectrum are not very favourable to this idea. 'The phenomena of abnormal disper-*

3 The reader who desires to pursue this subject may consult Green, ''On the Laws of Reflexion and Refraction of Light at the Common Surface of Two Non- Crystallized Media," Camb. Trans., 1838 (Green's Works, London, 1871, pp. 242, 283); Lorenz, '" Ueber die Reflexion des Lichts an der Grinzflache zweier iso- tropen, durchsichtigen Mittel," Pogg. Ann., cxi. p. 460 (1860), and " Bestimmung der Schwingungsrichtung des Lichtethers durch die Reflexion und Brechung des Lichtes," 7b¢d., exiy.

p. 238 (1861); Strutt (Rayleigh), "On the Reflection of Light from Transparent Matter," Phil. Mag., [4] xiii. (1871); Von der Miihll, ' Ueber die Reflexion und Brechung des Lichtes an der Grenze unkrystallinischen Medien," Math. Ann., v. 470 (1872), and 'Ueber Greeus Theorie der Reflexion und Brechung des Lichtes," Math. Ann., xxvii, 506 (1886); Thomson, Baltimore Lectures; Glazebrook, "Report on Optical Theories," Brit. Ass. Rep., 1886; Rayleigh, 'On Reflection of Vibrations at the Confines of Two Media between which the Transition is gradual," Proc. Math. Soc., xi. and Walker, " An Account of Cauchy's Theory of Reflection aud Refraction of Light," Phi/, Mag., 151 (1887). References to recent German writers, Ketteler, Lommel, Voigt, &e., will be found in Glazebrook's Report.*

4 Newcomb, Astron. Papers, vol. ii. parts iii. and iv., Washington, 1885.

In aerial vibrations, and in those vacuo,

Table of & velocities.

Formule for dis- persion.

Michel- son's re-

searches.

WAX—-WAX

sion indieate a elose connexion between refraction and absorption, and Helmholtz has formulated a general theory of dispersion based upon the hypothesis that it may be connected with an absorbing influence operative upon invisible portions of the spectrum. Upon this subject, which is as yet little understood, the reader may con- sult Glazebrook's "' Report on Optical Theories," 2

The limits of this article do not permit the consideration of the more speeulative parts of our subjeet. We will conclude by calling attention to two reeent experimental researehes by Michelson, the results of whieh cannot fail to give valuable guidance to optieal theorists. The first of

these? was a repetition under improved eonditions of a remarkable experiment of Fizeau, by which it is proved that when light is propagated through water, itself in rapid movement in the direction of the ray, the velocity is indeed influ- eneed, but not to the full extent of the veloeity of the water (v). Within the limits of experimental error, the velocity agrees with a

459

formula suggested by Fizeau on the basis of certain views of

Fresnel, viz.,

1

v

2

VaVyt" (2),

Me V, being the velocity when the medium is stationary. In the ease of water, (u?-1)/u?=-°437. Conformably with (2), a similar experiment upon air, moving at a velocity of 25 metres per seeond, gave no distinct effect.

From the result of the experiments upon water we should be tempted to infer that at the surface of the earth, moving through space, the ether still retains what must be coarsely called relative motion. Nevertheless, the seeond researeh above alluded to? appears to negative this conclusion, and to prove that, at any rate within the walls of a building, the ether must be regarded as fully partaking in the motion of material bodies. (R.)

WAX is a solid fatty substance of animal and vegetable origin, allied both in sources and constitution to the fixed oils and fats. From fats or solid oils wax differs principally in its greater hardness and higher melting-point; but in the strictly chemical sense, while oils and fats are glycerides, a true wax contains no glycerin, but is a combination of fatty acids with certain solid monatomic alcohols. Of wax from animal sources there are

in commerce beeswax, which forms wax par excellence, Chinese insect wax, and sper- maceti. The more important vegetable waxes are Japanese wax, myrtle-berry wax, carnauba wax, and palm wax.

Beeswax is secreted by all honey bees, and by them formed into the cell walls, &c., of their comb. It is separ- ated by draining the honey, melting the drained comb in boiling water, and collecting the wax which solidifies on the top as the water cools. In this state it is formed into cakes of raw or yellow wax, good examples of which are of a light yellow colour, translucent, with a faint pleasant odour of honey. At ordinary temperatures it breaks with a granular fracture ; and in thin flakes or pellets it softens with the heat of the hand, and can be kneaded between the fingers, Its specific gravity is 0°960; it melts at about 62° C., and solidifies just under its melting-point without evolution of heat. It is soluble in hot ether, essential and fixed oils, benzol, bisulphide of carbon, and chloro- form, and to some extent in boiling alcohol, but it is unaffected by water and cold alcohol. In chemical con- stitution it contains 10 per cent. of cerin, an ether of Co7Heg0 O, and 90 per cent. of myricin—ether of palmitic aad and myricy] alcohol,

C,¢H;,0

30H gy matter and other contaminations it contains, is unfit for many uses. The chief of these is candle-making. To remove soluble matter it is first melted over boiling water; and for bleaching it is formed into thin shreds and strips so as to expose the greatest possible surface. So prepared, it is spread out and frequently watered and turned in the direct sunlight, a slow but effective process. To hasten the bleaching action the wax may be mixed with about one-sixth of pure spirit of turpentine; and this preparation, on exposure, by its copious production of ozone, effects in four or five days a bleaching which otherwise would occupy three or four weeks. When the bleaching is complete all trace of turpentine oil will have disappeared. Bleaching may also be effected by chlorine, permanganate of potash, and other chemicals, but these injuriously affect the wax, in some cases forming substitution products which cannot be removed, and which in burning give off deleterious

cerotic acid and ceryl alcohol,

} O. Yellow wax, on account of the colouring

- *Brit. Ass. Rep., 1886. In this matter, aS in most others, the advantage lies with the leetromagnetic theory. See J. W. Gibbs, Amer, Jour., xxiii., 1882.*

- *“Influence of Motion of the Medium on the Velocity of Light,” by A. Michelson and E. W. Morley, Amer. Jour., xxxi., May 1886.*

consists of cerin, one of the eonstituents of beeswax.

fumes. Wax is obtained in all parts of the world where there is vegetation sufficient to support bees ; but it is most largely forthcoming from tropical and subtropical regions. It is subject to extensive adulteration from powdered mineral substances, flour, cheaper waxes, paraffin, &ec. Its uses are multifarious ; but it is most largely con- sumed in making candles for the religious services of Roman Catholic and Orthodox Greek Christians, and for wax figures and models (see Wax Figures).

Chinese Insect Wax, or Pe La, is a seeretion deposited by an insect, Coccus ceriferus, Fabr., in the twigs of a species of ash, Fraxinus chinensis, Roxb. The wax is, in its origin and the funetions it performs in the insect ceonomy, elosely related to the lac produced by the allied species of Coccws (see Lac, vol. xiv. p. 181). When separated from the twigs which it encrusts, and purified, it is a hard translucent white erystalline body, similar to spermaceti. It melts at from 82° to 86° C., and in composition It is little known in European eomnierce, but forms a highly important article of trade in China and Japan, where it is largely used for candle- making and for medicinal purposes.

For SPERMACETI, see vol. xxii. p. 395.

Japanese Wax is a hard wax-like fat which now forms an im- portant export from Japan, prineipally to London. It is obtained from the small stone fruits of several species of Rhus cultivated in Japan. For the extraction of the wax, which is present to the extent of about 20 per eent., the fruits are ground and treated by either of three methods—(1) heating and pressure, (2) boiling in water, and (8) maceration with ether or

bisulphide of carbon. The wax is subsequently bleached, and as it comes into the market eonsists of yellowish hard eakes, eovered often with a fine white powdery efflorescence. It has a resinous unpleasant raneid odour. It melts at about 54° C., and solidifies from melting at 41° C. with evolution of heat which raises the temperature about 5°C. Japanese wax becomes translueent about 12° C. under its melting-point, and when it has newly solidified from melting it can again be liquefied at 42° C., from which the melting-point rises by slow degrees with the lapse of time till it reaches the normal. It is not a true wax, but eonsists principally of the glyeeride palmitin with small pro- portions of stearin and disseminated erystals of free palmitic acid. It is largely mixed with and used as a substitute for beeswax, excepting for uses where its raneidity renders it objectionable.

Myrtle-Berry Wace is obtained from the fruit of several species of Myrica in the United States, New Granada, Venezuela, the Cape of Good Hope, and other regions. It is a hard greenish substanee, with a pleasant balsamic odour. Its melting-point is about 45°C., and it eonsists prineipally of frec palmitie acid with a little stearic acid and myristie acid, —a very small proportion of these being eombined as glycerides. It is consumed principally in the United States in combination with beeswax for candles; and it is said the Hottentots eat it like cheese.

Carnauba Wax is an exudation on the surface of the growing leaves of the earnauba palm, Corypha cerifera, L., which flourishes in tropieal South Ameriea. The wax is obtained by eutting off and drying the young leaves, from which it is then shaken as fine dust, and eaked by melting either over an open fire or in boiling water. It is a true wax, consisting of ethers of myricyl aleohol and eeryl alcohol with eerotie acid, and its melting-point ranges from 85° to 90° C. Carnauba wax is a substance of considerable commercial importance in Brazil, whence large quantities are sent to Europe for use in the candle-trade and otherwise as a substitute for beeswax.

Palm-Tree Wax is an exudation formed on the stems of two South Ameriean palms, Cerorylon andicola, H, and K., and Klop-

3 'Qn the Relative Motion of the Earth and the Luminiferous ARther," by Michelson and Morley, Phil. Mag., Dee. 1887.

stockta certfera, Kars. As scraped from the trecs and compacted by melting it is a mixture of resin and wax, having a melting-point as high as 102° to 105°C. The pure wax may be separated by digesting with boiling spirit, when it is obtained with a melting- point of 72° C. and a composition analogous to carnauba Wax, like which it is used for candles. Palm-tree wax is little seen in European commerce. For the compound called Szeaninc Wax, see vol. xxi. p. 586.

WAX FIGURES. Beeswax is possessed of properties which render it a most convenient medium for preparing figures and models, either by modelling or by casting in moulds. At ordinary temperatures it can be cut and shaped with facility ; it melts to a limpid fluid at a low heat ; it mixes with any colouring matter, and takes surface tints well ; and its texture and consistency may be modified by the addition of earthy matters and oils or fats. When molten, it takes the minutest impressions of a mould, and it sets and hardens at sucha temperature that no ordinary climatic influences affect the form it assumes, even when it is cast in thin lamine. The facilities which wax offers for modelling have been taken advantage of from the remotest times. Figures in wax of their deities were used in the funeral rites of the ancient Egyptians, and deposited among other offerings in their graves; many of these are now pre- served in museums. That the Egyptians also modelled fruits can be learned from numerous allusions in early litera- ture. Among the Greeks during their best art period, wax figures were largely used as dolls for children; statuettes of deities were modelled for votive offerings and for religious ceremonies, and wax images to which magical properties were attributed were treasured by the people. Wax figures and models held a still more important place among the ancient Romans. The masks (effigtes or imagines) of ancestors, modelled in wax, were preserved by patrician families, this jus ¢maginum being one of the privileges of the nobles, and these masks were exposed to view on ceremonial occasions, and carried in their funeral processions. The closing days of the Saturnalia were known as Sigillarta on account of the custom of making, towards the end of the festival, presents of wax models of fruits and waxen statuettes which were fashioned by the Sigillarti or manufacturers of small figures in wax and

other media. The practice of wax modelling can be traced through the Middle Ages, when votive offerings of wax figures were made to churches, and the memory and lineaments of monarchs and great personages were pre- served by means of wax masks as in the days of Roman patricians. In these ages malice and superstition found expression in the formation of wax images of hated persons, into the bodies of which long pins were thrust, in the confident expectation that thereby deadly injury would be induced to the person represented ; and this belief and practice continued till the 17th century. Indeed the superstition still holds a place in the Highlands of Scot- land, where within the Jast few years a clay model of an enemy was found in a stream, having been placed there in the belief that, as the clay was washed away, so would the health of the hated one decline. With the renaissance of art in Italy, modelling in wax took a position of high importance, and it was practised by some of the greatest of the early masters. The bronze medallions of Pisano and the other famous medallists owe their value to the art qualities of wax models from which they were cast by the cae perdue process ; and indeed all early bronzes and metal work were cast from wax models. The T%éte de cire in the Wicar collection at Lille, the work of a Florentine artist of the 15th century, is one of the most lovely creations of that fertile era. From that period till towards the close of the 18th century modelling of medallion portraits and of relief groups, the latter frequently polychromatic, was in considerable vogue throughout

Europe. About the end of the 18th century Flaxman executed in wax many portraits and other relief figures which Josiah Wedgwood translated into pottery for his Jasper ware. The modelling of the soft parts of dissec- tions, &c., for teaching illustrations of anatomy was first practised at Florence, and is now very common. Such preparations formed part of a show at Hamburg in 1721, and from that time wax-works, on a plane lower than art, have been popular attractions. These exhibitions con- sist principally of images of historical or notorious person- ages, made up of waxen masks on lay figures in which sometimes mechanism is fitted to give motion to the figure. Such an exhibition of wax-works with mechanical motions was shown in Germany early in the 18th century, and is described by Steele in the Zatler. The most famous modern wax-work exhibition is that of Madame Tussaud in London. This

collection was originated in Paris, dur- ing the Revolution, by that lady, who, having modelled Charlotte Corday, Marat, and other well-known persons of that bloody period, settled in London with her collection early in the present century.

WAXWING, a bird first so-called apparently by Selby in 1825 (Lllustr. Brit. Ornithology, p. 87), having been before known as the "Silk-tail " (Philos. Transactions, 1685, p. 1161)—a literal rendering of the German Seidenschwanz—or "Chatterer "—the prefix "German," ' Bohemian," or "Waxen" being often also applied. Selby's convenient name has now been generally adopted, since the bird is readily distinguished from almost all others by the curious expausion of the shaft of some of its wing- feathers at the tip into a flake that looks like scarlet sealing- wax, while its exceedingly silent habit makes the name "'Chatterer " wholly inappropriate, and indeed this last arose from a misinterpretation of the specific term garrulus, meaning a Jay (from the general resemblance in colour of the two birds), and not referring to any garrulous quality.

It is the Ampelis garrulus of Linneeus and of more recent ornithologists,

The Waxwing is a bird that for man y years excited vast interest. An irregular Winter-visitant, sometimes in countless hordes, to the whole of the central and some parts of southern Europe, it was of old time looked upon as the harbinger of war, plague, or death, and, while its harmonious coloration and the grace of its form were attractive, the curiosity with which its irregular appearances were regarded was enhanced by the mystery which enshrouded its birth- place, and until the summer of 1856 defied the searching of any explorer. In that year, however, all doubt was dispelled, through the successful search in Lapland, organized by the late John Wolley, as briefly described by him to the Zoological Society (Proceedings, 1857, pp. 55, 56, pl. exxii.).? In 1858 Mr Dresser found a small settlement of the species on an island in the Baltic near Uleaborg, and with his own hands took anest. It is now pretty evident that the Waxwing, though doubtless breeding yearly in some parts of northern Europe, is as irregular in the choice of its summer-quarters as in that of its winter-retrcats. Moreover, the species exhibits the same irregular habits in America. Mr Drexler on one occasion, in Nebraska, saw it in

“millions.” In 1861 Kennicott found it breed- ing on the Yukon, and later Mr MacFarlane had the like good fortune on the Anderson River.

Beautiful as is the bird with its drooping crest, its cinnamon-

1 Some writers, ignoring historical facts, have taken a South- American form (now known to belong to a wholly distinct Suborder of Birds) as the “type” of the Linnean genus Ampelis. Linneus had, as is well known, no conception of what is meant by the modern idea of a “type”; but none can doubt that, if such a notion had been entertained by him, he would have declared his type-species to be that to which the name was first applied, viz., the present, and hence those systematists are wrong who would remove this to a genus variously called Bombycilla, Bombiciphora, or, most absurd of all, Bombicivora. The birds which ought to be removed from Ampelis are those which are now generally recognized as forming a Family Cotingide, allied to the Pipride (cf. MaNAKIN), and like them peculiar to the Neotropical Region, in the fauna of which they constitute, according to the in- vestigations of Garrod and Forbes (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. pp. 41, 47), the natural group Oligomyode.

2 A fuller account of his discovery, illustrated by Hewitson, is given in The Ibis (1861, pp. 92-106, pl. iv.).

brown plumage passing in parts into grey or chestnut, and relieved by black, white, and yellow—all of the purest tint—the external feature which has invited most attention is the “scaling-wax ” (already mentioned) which tips some of the secondary or radial quills, and occasionally those of the tail.1 This is nearly as much exhibited by the kindred species, 4. cedrorwm—the well-known

Cedar-bird of the English in North America—which is easily dis-‘

tinguished by its smaller size, less black ehin-spot, the ycllower tinge of the lower parts, and the want of white on the wings. In the A. phenicoptcrus of south-eastern Siberia and Japan, the remiges and rectrices are tipped with red in the ordinary way

without dilatation of the shaft of the feathers.

Both the Waxwing and Cedar-bird seem to live chiefly on insects in summer, but are marvellously addicted to berries during the rest of the year, and will gorge themselves if opportunity allow. Hence they are not pleasant cage-birds, though quickly becoming tame. The erratic habits of the Waxwing are probably due chiefly to the supplies of food it may require, prompted also by the number of mouths to be fed, for there is some reason to think that this varies greatly from one year to another, according to season. The flocks which visit Britain and other countries outside the breeding range of the species naturally contain a very large proportion of young birds.

The systematic position of the genus Ampelis is very doubt- ful. It can hardly be said to have any near ally, for neither of the Neotropical and Antillean genera, Ptilogonys and Myvodectes (often erroneously spelt A/yiadestes), can as yet be safely declared of kin to it, as has been alleged. (a. N.)

WEALTH. The most commonly accepted definition of wealth is that it consists of all useful and agreeable things which possess exchange value, and this again is generally regarded as coextensive with all desirable things except those which do not involve Jabour or sacrifice for their acquisition in the quantity desired. On analysis it will be evident that this definition implies, directly, preliminary conceptions of utility and value, and, indirectly, of sacrifice and labour, and these terms, familiar though they may appear, are by no means simple and obvious in their meaning. Utility, for the purposes of economic reasoning, is usually held to mean the capacity to satisfy a desire or serve a purpose (J. S. Mill), and in this sense is clearly a much wider term than wealth. Sunshine and fresh air, good temper and pleasant manners, and all the infinite variety of means of gratification, material and immaterial, are covered by utility as thus defined. Wealth is thus a species of utility, and in order to separate it from other Species some differentia must be found. This, according to the general definition, is exchange value, but a little reflexion will show that in some cases it is necessary rather to contrast value with wealth. "Value," says Ricardo, expanding a thought of Adam Smith, "essentially

differs from riches, for value depends not on abundance but on the difficulty or facility of production." According to the well-known tables ascribed to Gregory King, a deficiency of a small amount in the annual supply of corn will raise its value far more than in proportion, but it would be paradoxical to argue that this rise in value indicated an increase in an important item of national wealth. Again, as the mines of a country are exhausted and its natural resources otherwise impaired, a rise in the value of the remainder may take place, and as the free gifts of nature are appropriated they become valuable for exchange, but the country can hardly be said to be so much the wealthier In consequence. And these difficulties are rather increased then diminished if we substitute for value the more familiar concrete term " money-price,'—for the contrast between the quantity of wealth and its nominal value becomes more sharply marked. Suppose, for example, that in the total money value of the national inventory a

1 The strueture of these appendages has been earefully described by Herr Andersen (Cifvers. K. Vet.~~Ak. Férhandlingar, 1859, pp. 219~~ 231, pl. ii.) Their development seems chiefly due to age, though, as Wolley shewed, they are perceptible in the nestling plumage. Mr Turner states (Contr. Nat. ist. Alaska, p. 177) that the Eskimo

name of the Waxwing means a "killer of small birds," these append- ages being held to be 'the clotted blood of its victims"!

decline were observed to be in progress, whilst at the same time, as is quite possible, an increase was noticed in the quantity of all the important items and an improvement in their quality, it would be in accordance with common- sense to say that the wealth of the country was increasing and not decreasing.

So great are these difficulties that some economists (e.9., Ricardo) have proposed to take utility as the direct measure of wealth, and, as Mr Sidgwick has pointed out, if double the quantity meant double the utility this would be an easy and natural procedure. But even to the same individual the increase in utility is by no means simply proportioned to the increase in quantity, and the utility of different commodities to different individuals, and a fortiori of different amounts, is proverbial. The very

same things may to the same individual be productive of more utility simply owing to a change in his tastes or habits, and a different distribution of the very same things, which make up the wealth of a nation, might indefinitely change the quantity of utility, but it would be paradoxical to say that the wealth had increased because it was put to better uses.

We thus seem thrown back on value as the essential characteristic, allowance being made for any change in the standard of value; but there are still difficulties to be overcome. Some things that undoubtedly possess value or that can command a price are immaterial, eg., the advice of a lawyer or physician or the song of a prima donna, and, although perhaps the skill of a workman (in any grade of the social scale) might be considered as at- tached to the man, as a coal mine is attached to a place, it is more in accordance with popular usage to consider skill as immaterial, whilst at the same time it seems equally natural prima facie to confine the term wealth to material things in the common sense. Again, the credit system of a country is a product of great labour and sacrifice, it is most closely connected with the production of its material wealth in the narrowest sense, and it certainly commands a pecuniary value, and yet credit is more generally held to be a representative rather than a part of wealth, owing apparently to its insubstantial character. Apart from the question of materiality some writers have insisted on relative permanence and possibility of accumulation as essential attributes of wealth, and have thus still further narrowed the scope of the definition.

There can be no doubt that it is on many grounds desirable in economics to use terms as far as possible in their popular acceptations ; but this rule must always be subordinate to the primary object in view. In nearly every department of knowledge in which popular terms have been retained it has been found necessary either con- stantly to use qualifying adjectives where the context is not a sufficient guide, and in some cases, when analysis discloses very different elements, to make a selection. Sometimes it has been found convenient to use a term with some variation in the definition according to the branch of the subject in hand.2 Applying these rules to the definition of wealth, perhaps the best solution is that which is generally connected with German economists (e.g., Held). Wealth consists

of utilities, and in the first great department of economics—the consumption of wealth —it is utility with which we are principally concerned,— the idea of value, for example, being overshadowed. The most general law of the consumption of wealth is that successive portions of any stock give a diminishing amount of utility when consumed. Thenin the department of the production of wealth the most important characteristics are the labour and sacrifice necessary to put the utilities

2 On the uses and difficulties of definitions in pahies ee sy, eompare Mr Sidgwiek's Principles, bk. i. ch. ii., and Caimes's Logical Method of Political Economy.

desired into the things and to place the things where they are wanted. 'The idea of value is again secondary and subordinate. We can readily see the part played by nature, labour, and capital respectively in the production of any commodity without considering the effects on its value of the various factors; we can understand the principles of division of labour and of the relative productiveness of large and small industries without entering into questions of value except in the most general manner. In the department of the distribution of wealth the fundamental conception is the right of appropriation; and accordingly J. S. Mill very properly commences this part of his subject by an account of the relative advantages of the socialistic and individual systems of property. It is quite possible under the former to conceive of all the distribution being made without any exchange and with reference simply to the wants or the deserts of the members of the society. Thus it is not until we arrive at the department of the exchange of wealth that the characteristic of value becomes predominant, although of course value is closely connected with utility and labour and sacrifice.

Usually, however, it will be found that in most cases anything which can fairly be classed as wealth in one department is also wealth in the others, and thus the definition is reached that wealth in general consists of all 'consumable utilities which require labour for their pro- duction and can be appropriated and exchanged." It only remains to add that "utilities" may be divided into "inner" and "outer " (to translate the German

literally), ~—the “inner ” being such as are simply sources of personal gratification to their possessor, e.g., a good ear for music; the “outer” utilities again may be divided into “ free” and “economic,” the former, as a rule, e.g., sunlight, not being the result of labour and not capable of appropriation or exchange, and the latter as a rule possessing each of these marks. It is these “economic utilities ” which con- stitute wealth in the specific sense of the term, although its use may be extended by analogy to include almost all utilities, (3. 8. NT.)

WEASEL, The smallest species of the group of animals of which the polecat and stoat are well-known members (see Mamaia, vol. xv. p. 440). It is Mustela vulgaris of Linnzus, but belongs to the section (Putorius) of the genus which has but three premolar teeth on each side above and below, instead of four as in the martens (to which Mustela is commonly restricted) and hence is now called Putorius vulgaris, The dentition is 7 3, ¢ 4, p 3, m4z=8; total 34,

The weasel is an extremely elegant little animal, with elongated slender body, the back generally much arched, the head small and flattened, ears short and rounded, neck long and flexible, limbs very short, five toes on each foot, all with sharp, compressed, curved claws, tail rather short, slender, cylindrical, and pointed at the tip, fur short and close. The upper parts, outside of limbs and tail, are a uniform reddish-brown, the under parts pure white. In very cold regions, both in Europe and America, it turns completely white in winter, but less regularly and at a lower temperature than its near ally the stoat or ermine, from which it is easily distinguished by its smaller size, and by its wanting the black end of the tail. The length of the head and body of the male is usually about 8 inches, that of the tail 24 inches; the female is smaller. The common weasel is pretty generally distributed through- out Europe, Northern and Central Asia, British North America, and the northern portions of the United States, It possesses in a full degree all the active, courageous, and bloodthirsty disposition of the rest of the genus, but its diminutive size prevents it attacking and destroying any but the smaller mammals and birds. Mice, rats, voles,

and moles, as well as frogs, constitute its principal food. It is generally found on or near the surface of the ground, but it can not only pursue its prey through very small holes and crevices of rocks and under dense tangled herbage,

Weasel. but follow it up the stems and branches of trees, or even into the water, swimming with perfect ease.

It constructs a nest of dried leaves and herbage, placed in a hole in the ground or a bank or hollow tree, in which it brings up its litter of four to six (usually five) young ones. The mother will defend her young with the utmost desperation against any assailant, having been often known to sacrifice her own life rather than desert them.

WEAVER-BIRD, the name! by which a group of between 200 and 300 species are now usually called, from the elaborately interwoven nests that many of them build, some of the structures being of the most marvellous kind. By the older systematists such of these birds as were then known were distributed among the genera Oriolus, Loxia, Emberiza, and Fringilla ; and it was Cuvier who in 1817 first brought together these dissevered forms, comprising them in a genus Ploceus. Since his time others have been referred to its neighbourhood, and especially the genus V2dua with its allies, so as to make of them a Subfamily Ploceinz, which in 1847 was raised by Prof. Cabanis to the rank of a Family Ploceide,—a step the propriety of which has since been generally admitted, though the grounds for taking it—far too technical to be here criticized—are very slight, and such as could not be held valid in any other Order than that of Passeres.

Where so many forms are coucerned, only a few of the most im- portant can now be mentioned. The type of Cuvier's genus is certainly the Loxia philippina of Linneus, so termed from the islands it inhabits. But the typical Weaver-bird of Latham (not that he had the name in that precise form) is the Hyphantornis cucullata or textor of modern writers, an African species, and it is to the Ethiopian Region that by far the greatest number of these ~ birds belong, and in it they seem to attain thcir maximum of development. They are all small, with, generally speaking, a Sparrow-like build ; but in richness of colouring the males of some are

very conspicuous—glowing in crimson, scarlet or golden-yellow, set off by jet-black, while the females are usually dull in hue. Some species build nests that are not very remarkable, except in

? First bestowed in this form apparently by Stephens in 1826 (Gen. Zoology, xiv. pt. i. p. 84); but in 1782 Latham (Synopsis, i. p. 435) had called the ' Troupiale du Sénégal" of Buffon the '* Weever Oriole," from its habit of entwining the wires of the cage in which it was kept with such vegetable fibres as it could get, and hence in 1788 Gmelin named it Oriolus textor. In 1800 Daudin used the term "Tisserin" for several species of the Linnzan genus Loxia, and this was adopted some years later by Cuvier as the equivalent of his Ploceus, as mentioned in the text.*

EEE

WE A—

being almost invariably domed—others (such as the Philippine Weaver-bird, Ploccus philippinus, just named) fabricate singular structures! of closely and uniformly interwoven tendrils or fine roots, that often hang from the bough of a tree over water, and, starting with a solidly wrought rope, open out into a globular chamber, and then contract into a tube several inches in length, through which the birds effect their exit and entrance. But the most wonderful nests of all, and indeed the most wonderful built by birds, arc those of the so-called Sociable Grosbeak, Philhetwrus socius, of Africa. 'These are composed wholly of grass, and are joined to- gether to the number of 100 or 200—indeed 320 are said to have been found in one of these aggregated masses, which usually take the form of a gigantié mushroom,? affording a home and nursery to many pairs of the birds which have been at the trouble of build- ing it. These nests, however, have been so often described and ficured by South-African travellers that there is no need here to dilate longer on their marvels. It may be added that this species of Weaver-bird, known to French writers as the Aépudlicain, is of exceptionally dull plumage.

The group of Widow-birds,? Vidwinw, is remarkable for the extraordinary growth of the tail-feathers in the males at the breed- ing-season. In the largest species, Vidwa (sometimes called Chera) progne, the cock-bird,

which, with the exception ofa scarlet and buff bar on the upper wing-coverts, is wholly black, there is simply a, great elongation of the rectrices ; but in V. paradisea the form of the tailis quite unique. The middle pair of feathers have the webs greatly widened, and through the twisting of the shafts their inferior surfaces are vertically opposed. These feathers are com- paratively short, and end ina hair-like filament. The next pair are produced to the length of about a foot—the bird not being so big as a Sparrow—and droop gracefully in the form ofa sickle. But this is not all: each has attached to its base a hair-like filament of the same length as the feather, and this filament originally adhered toand ran along the margin of the outer web, only becoming detached when the featheris full grown.4 In another species, V. principalis, the two middle pairs of rectrices are equally elongated, but their webs are convex, and the outer pair contains the inner, so that when the

'margins of the two pairs are applied a sort of cylinder is formed.®

The females of all the Widow-birds differ greatly in appearance from the males, and are generally clothed in a plumage of mottled brown. Usually classed with the Weaver-birds is a vast group of small seed-eating forms, often called Spermestine, but for which Hstreldine would seem to be a more fitting name. These comprehend the numerous species so commonly seen in cages, and known as Amadavats, Hstrelda amandava, Nutmeg-birds, Munia punctularia, Waxbills, Pytelia melba and phenicoptera, Cutthroats, Amadina fasciata, the Java Sparrow, Padda oryzivora, and many more than we can name. Many of these genera are common to Africa and India, and some also to Australia, but the last has several genera peculiar to itself, such as Donacicola and Poophila, there known as Grass-finches. The true affinity of these seems to require further investigation.® (A. N. _ WEAVING is the art of forming cloth by the interlac- ing of yarn or other filaments in a loom. In weaving two kinds or sets of yarn are used, the warp and the weft. The warp consists of the threads of yarn which extend generally but not always in parallel lines from end to end the whole length of the web; the weft yarn crosses and Intersects the warp at right angles, and fills up the breadth of the web. 'The warp is mounted on the loom for weav-

1 These differ from those built by some of the ORIOLES (g.v.) and other birds, whose nests may be compared to pensile pockets, while those of these Weaver-birds can best be likened to a stocking hung up by the "toe," with the " heel" enlarged to receive the eggs, while access and exit are obtained through the " leg."

- *But ata distance they may often be mistaken for a native hut, with its grass-roof,*

**It has been ingeniously suggested that this name should be more correctly written Whydah bird—from the place on the West Coast of Africa so named; but Edwards, who in 1745 figured one of the Species, states that he was informed that " the Portuguese call this bird i Widow, from its Colour and long Train" (Nat. Hist. Birds, i. p. 86). ~~" This curious structure was long ago described by Brisson (Orni~~ thologie, iii, p. 128), and more recently by Strickland (Contr. Orns- thology, 1850, pp. 88 and 149, pl. 59).*

_ " Both these species seem to have been first described and figured in 1600 by Aldrovandus (lib. xv. cap. 22, 238) from pictures sent to 2 by Ferdinando de' Medici, duke of Tuscany.

An illustrated Monograph of the Weaver-Birds by Mr Edward Bartlett is now in course of publication.

WEA 463

ing, and into it the weft is thrown by means of a shuttle. Weaving is thus distinct from knitting, netting, looping, and plaiting, by all of which methods cloth may be made from yarns. Cloth also is prepared by felting, but in that operation the fibres are simply matted together without either spinning or intertwisting.

To appearance the varieties of woven cloth are endless; but these differences are only in part due to the method of weaving. The textile materials employed, the methods used in spinning and preparing yarns, the dye colours resorted to, and the finishing processes may vary indefinitely and so contribute to give variety of character to the resultant

pro- duct. The complexities of the art of weaving itself are reducible to a few fundamental operations, which do not of necessity demand the most intricate mechanism. The gorgeous medieval textiles of which numerous examples remain were made in looms of primitive construction. For producing the Indian muslins of the present day with their marvellous delicacy of texture, and for the elaborate and sumptuous shawls of Kashmir, the weavers have only rude and simple looms. But patient and tedious handiwork in these instances is devoted to produce effects which, with the application of modern machinery, can be automatically secured with as great rapidity as in the case of the plainest fabric.

"The series of inventions which have led up to the marvel- lously ingenious looms of the present day began with the invention of the fly shuttle, so called because of the rapidity of its motion, by John Kay of Bury in 1733. Previous to Kay's time the shuttle was thrown by the weaver's hand across and through the warp threads from side to side of the web. His invention brought the plain hand-loom practically into the form in which it continues at present ; and, as it forms the basis of all modern ma- chinery, a description of its parts and working, and of the operations connected with plain weaving, may here be given. In accordance with the definition already laid down, plain cloth, such as an ordinary piece of calico or linen, will, on examination, be found to consist of two sets of threads, the one intersecting the other at right angles, with each single thread passing alternately over one and under the next. Such a web is produced by passing the weft thread over and under each alternate warp thread in the breadth of the loom, the warp threads under one shot of weft being above the next. To do this, and to beat or close up each successive weft thread so as to make an even and suffi- ciently close cloth, necessitates a series of operations of which the following is an outline.

Warping.—The number of longitudinal threads which go to form the web will vary, of course, according to its breadth and to the closeness with which they lie together; for fine webs several thousand warp threads, of sufficient length to form a web of many yards, may have to be laid parallel to each other. This is done in the warping frame, which consists of a large reel, set vertically, on which separate threads drawn from a

range of bobbins are wound together in a spiral manner to the rcquired length of the web. The yarns conling from the bobbins are brought together in a heck, which is made to slide up and down a guide post as the reel or warp- ing frame revolves, and thus it delivers to the reel a band of thread which winds up and down the reel spirally by the rise and fall of the heck. Supposing 100 "ends" or warp threads are being reeled from bobbins, and 1000 ends of warp are required in the web, then the full lengths wound on the rcel must be repeated upward and. downward ten times. At each end of the warp the threads are, by a mechanical device in the heck, made to intersect alternately, forming leashes which are, when taken from the reel, scparately tied up, and thus aid in maintaining the parallelism of the ends when they are bundled up. Such a bundle of warp when required for weaving is taken in hand by the beamer, whose duty is to spread the threads evenly and wind them on the warp beam, spreading the ends in the order in which they are to appear in the woven fabric, and giving them about the breadth of the web. Cotton warps are wound direct from the bobbins on the beam,

there being a mechanical arrangement in the warping machine which stops its motion when any thread breaks, or when a bobbin

464

is exhausted. The contents of several beams filled from bobbins may be required to be rewound together on a single beam to supply the requisite quantity of ends for a web.

Plain Weaving.—The warp beam thus filled is laid in the loom (fig. 1), and the euds of warp are then separately drafted or drawn through a pair of heddles or healds. The essential features of the

SS

Fic. 1.—Diagram of Hand-Loom, heddle are the eyes, loops, or mails through which the warp is

threaded, one end of warp only passing through any mail. This eye or mail is placed in the heddle half-way between an upper and a lower

wooden sheaf, over which pass the heald threads or between which extend the wires on which such mails are supported. The distance between the mails and the lathes at each end must be sufficient to allow of that opening or "shedding" of the warp which it is the function of the heddle to secure. Through the mails of one heddle each alternate end of warp is drafted, and the remaining ends are passed similarly through the other. Thus each heddle reeeives every alternate thread across the whole breadth of the warp. From the heddles the ends are carried through the reed (fig. 2), which is the ultimate distributor of the warp, and the instrument by which the weft is beaten up and closed in weaving. It consists

QUAL UNL

of an oblong narrow frame filled with fine strips of cane or of flat- tened brass or steel wire, these strips being placed in fine comb-like order more or less closely together, up to as many as 120 strips or "dents," or even more, per inch; two or more ends are passed through each slit of the reed, which is fixed in a "lay" or "batten," a suspended frame for moving the reed backward and forward in beat- ing up the weft. On the lower part of the batten a ledge projects, which forms the ''shuttle race" for carrying the shuttle in " pick- ing" from and to the shuttle boxes at each end of the lay. From the reed the ends are carried forward and fastened to the cloth beam, and now the warp is ready for the weaving operation.

*The three essential movements in weaving are (1) the ''shed- ding" or dividing of the warp threads to permit of the passage between them of the shuttle containing the weft ; (2) the «« picking" or shooting of the weft ; and (8) the * battening" or beating up of the weft. The shedding motion depends upon the heddles, which are corded or attached to a pair of treadles worked by the weaver's feet. Each treadle is eonnected with the heddles above and below by a system of levers or pulleys, so that the depression of one treadle while it raises one heddle depresses the other, and thus the opening or shed is made in the warp, one-half—consisting of alternate threads—being raised, the corresponding half pulled down, The weaver then with the left hand pushes the lay or batten back towards the heddles, till a sufficient portion of the shed is brought in front of the reed,*

and the depressed ends lie just over the shuttle race. A clear way is thus provided for picking or shooting the shuttle, which is done with a whipping jerk of the picking stick held in the right hand. This pulls the cord attached to the picker and projects the shuttle from one shuttle box into that at the opposite end of the lay. The lay is now drawn forward with the left hand, and the reed combs and beats up the weft thread, Treadle number two is next depressed and thereby a new shed is formed, the last made pick or shoot being enwrapped between the intersecting warp sheds; the lay is again thrown back, the pick of weft is shot and beaten up, and so on in regular succession (sec fig. 3).

} satin, it would be necessary were the

WEAVING

In plain weaving it is possible to produce stripes by the use of bands of coloured warp, and checks where both warp and weft are particoloured. In the latter case shuttles, or at least cops, equal in number to the different colours of weft required, must be pro- vided. It is obvious that the repeated changing of shuttles, and

Fig. 3.—Section of plain web in process of weaving on the loom: a, warp beam; b, leash rods where the warp is divided and crossed ; c,c, heddles; d, reed ; é, the woven cloth; 7, the cloth beam.

still more the withdrawing and replacing of cops in weaving with

frequently changing weft, would occasion great loss of time. To

avoid that, and to provide for the use of different coloured wefts, or of wefts of various counts, the drop box was invented, a deviee by which two or more shuttles can be successively used in any order desired. The drop box, and its numerous subsequent modi- fications of circular and other change boxes, consists of a series of

compartments or divisions in the shuttle box, each made to hold a

separate shuttle. These several compartments are by mechanical

agency brought in line with the shuttle race in the order in which the changes of weft picks are necessary.

Twill Weaving.—So long as only two sets or leaves of treadles are used in a loom very little in the form of a pattern can be pro- duced, seeing no variation can be effected in the alternate raising of each heddle. To a limited extent a corded surface may be pro- duced by passing two or three warp ends through each mail, and by throwing two or three picks of weft between each shed. But for effective figure-weaving there must be numerous possible variations of shed; and that is secured first by increasing the number of heddles in the loom. Thus with threc heddles alone it is possible to effect six combinations of shedding, and as the number of heddles is added to the variations of possible shedding increase in geo- inetrical ratio. But the number of treadles which can be corded up to separate heddles is in practice limited, and therefore only simple twill patterns are for the most part woven with treadles and heddles, A twillis a cloth in which the warp and weft do not intersect alternately, but where the warp predominates on the one side and the weft on the other. The simplest of all is the three- leaf twill, in which the warp passes over two and under one weit thread, and vice versa, in regular succession, giving the appearance of a succession of diagonal lines on the surface. Regular twills of from four to eight leaves are woven in the same manner, the weft rising over each fourth to eighth warp thread as the case may be. Many variations and combinations are possible in connexion with these regular twills. For example, they may be combincd with plain weaving: a cashmere twill may be made,—that is, a four-leaf com- bination, in which the weft passes altcrnately over and under two warp euds, and two picks are shot for each shed. Further, zig-zags, lozenges, squares, and other geometrical designs can be produced by reversing the order of the treading, and thereby causing the twill to run in different directions. The diagrams, figs. 4 and 5, show two arrangements of a four-leaf twill, the first being a regular twill and the second BN a dimity, the dark Wy 8 ti Ya

quares representing the point at which the weft rises to the.

TON one

Fig. 4.

Fig. 5.

surfaces. Satin or broken twills are those in which the warp threads are not intersected by the weft in regular succession, but only at intervals, and thereby the smooth continnons surface characteristic

of satin and damask is secured. Com- mon satin and double damask are eight- leaf twills, the order in which the weft rises being shown in the diagram, fig. 6. Rich satins may consist of sixteen to twenty leaf twills, the weft intersecting and binding down the warp at every sixteenth to twentieth pick as the case may be. Satins are usually woven with the face of the cloth downwards, be- cause in weaving, say a sixteen-leaf

ae 22 a See088

7

a EEE Yee nae

Fig. 6,

raised and one down, whereas, with the face of the cloth under, ouly one heddle has to be raised at a time.

Figure Weaving.—Only a limited number of heddles can in actual working be attached each to a separate treadle to be under

surface upwards to keep fifteen heddles

the control of the feet of the weaver. But to produce a complicated

and irregular pattern a large number of different sheds of warp must be provided, aud to secure with promptitude and certainty such manifold and complicated sheddings many of the most elegant and ingenious devices ever applied to mechanism have been in- vented. Before invention culminated in the Jacquard apparatus the draw loom or draw-boy loom was the machine employed for making figured patterns such as damasks.

In it each separate heddle shaft was fastened to a cord, which passed over a pulley, and coming down by the side of the loom these cords were arranged in a board in the order in which the heddles required to be drawn. The drawing of the cords and consequent formation of the shed was originally the work of a boy assistant, whence the name draw-boy loom ; but it was found possible, by various mechanical attachments worked from the treadles, to dispense with extra aid to the weaver. But even with this arrangement the number of heddles which can be hung in any loom is limited, though, by using thin shafts and arranging them in tiers, as many as eighty or ninety may be ac- commodated. Since as many as a thousand separate sheds may be required to form a complete pattern, a device other than shafts or leaves of heddles becomes necessary ; and the solution of the diffi- culty is found in hanging the individual heddle mails, not in shafts, but independently, each with a small lead weight called a lingo attached to it. Thus in effect a separate heddle is provided for each thread of warp, and it becomes possible to effect any com- bination of shed by cording together such leashes or mails as carry the warp threads to be raised. This tying together of the separate leashes, called " tying the harness" in the case of elaborate designs, isa tedious and difficult operation, requiring the exercise of con- siderable skill and patience. The successive sheds of a pattern being tied up, it is only necessary to have the cords arranged in the order in which they are to be drawn and attached to the mechanical device for pulling them, and forming the sheds in proper succession.

The Jacquard Loom.—The Jacquard apparatus is the most important and ingenious appliance which has ever been adapted to weaving, since by its agency it has become possible to produce the most intricate and extended patterns with the same certainty and with almost as much rapidity as plain cloth. The credit of introducing and making the machine a practical success—if not the whole honour of the invention—is due to Joseph Marie Jacquard of Lyons (see vol. xiii. p. 539). Attention was first directed to this ingenious artisan by a model of a net- making machine invented by him, which was deposited in the Conservatoire des Arts et Métiers. He was requested in 1801 by Napoleon to examine and improve on a com- plicated loom, and thereupon he undertook to produce a simple appliance to supplant the involved mechanism. The germs of the idea which he

perfected had been, early in the eighteenth century, conceived by Bouchon and Falcon, and in 1745 it was further developed and im- proved by Jacques de Vaucan- son. Indeed, had Vaucanson been acquainted with the fly shuttle which was then known and used at least in England, it is probable he would have come to be re- garded as the real inventor at once of the power-loom and of the apparatus which bears Jacquard's name.

The fundamental principle of the Jacquard apparatus is simple, although in its working fine mechanical details are essential. Its object is to effect the raising of any number of separate leashes, corded leashes, or heddles, in any order and succession without special tying of harness. How the apparatus works will bemade 4 – plain by the diagram, fig. 7. Here A, A represent the separate leashes through which the warp threads are drafted. It will be 16 7.—Diagram of Jacquard Loom. observed that these leashes are tied in pairs, but they might equally well be single, many together, or shafts of heddles. The cord from each separate leash passes through a finely perforated

board B, called the comber-board, between which and ,C, the bottom board, the pairs are tied to a cord. These cords pass up through the bottom board, and are caught in the lower hooks of a range of double-hooked long wires D, D. These hooked wires are supported and kept in position by being passed through loops or eyes in a range of cross-wires E, E. The head of each cross- wire is formed into an oblong eye as at @ (an enlarged representa- tion of a single cross-wire), through which a pin is passed for securing it in the spring-box F, in which each separate cross-wire presses against a small helical spring. The oblong eye permits a certain amount of play in the cross-wire, so that it can be pressed back against the helical spring when a force is applied at the opposite end. The points of the cross-wires pass through a perfor- ated board G, called the necdle-board, projecting about a quarter of an inch beyond its outer surface. The upper hooks of the up- right wires threaded through these cross-wires are attached to a board H, called the griffe. The whole function of the apparatus is to liberate these hooks in the order and to the extent necessary for the successive sheds. The hooks are dislocated thus. At the side of the projecting points of the cross-wires there is a

quadrangular frame I, called the cylinder. This cylinder can be drawn back, and turned so that each face may in succession be presented to and pressed against the face from which the cross-wires protrude. The cylinder alone does not affect the wires, but its function is to carry on its rotating faces a succession of pasteboard cards which are punctured with holes in a definite order. The wires connected with hooks which are not to be disturbed pass throngh the punctured holes and remain unaffected, while those supporting the hooks to be displaced are pressed back by the cardboard surface, and this motion of the cross-wire lifts the hook of the upright wire off the griffe. The griffe now rises, carrying with it the undis- turbed hooks, making a shed of the warp threads attached to their cords. The weft is then shot, the griffe descends, and the next punctured card is by a quarter revolution of the cylinder brought into contact with the cross-wires, and so the work goes on, succes- sive Jacquard cards being presented, new combinations of shed effected, and the weft shot till the pattern is completed. Hooks to any desired number may be arranged in a Jacquard apparatus, and when a separate hook is applied to each individual leash the most complete control and variety of shed may be secured. But in practice this is not necessary. Hach repeat of a pattern across a web may be corded up to one series of hooks, and in many ways it is practicable to limit the number of hooks required in weaving and thus to simplify the apparatus itself, and the system of punc- tured cards by which its operation is governed. If the Jacquard apparatus, for example, is controlling only a few leaves of heddles, then only a corresponding number of hooks are called into use. Usually the machines are provided with 300, 400, 600, 900, and sometimes more hooks, and when intricate and extensive patterns are being woven two or more machines may be sinultaneously brought to bear on the same loom.

The Power-Loom.—The first loom in which all the motions in weaving were connected and controlled by one motive power was the ribbon loom, known also as the Dutch or Dutch engine loom. A machine in which four to six pieces could be woven simultaneously is recorded to have been in existence in Dantzic in the last quarter of the sixteenth century (see RipBons, vol. xx. p. 531). In 1745 John Kay, inventor of the fly shuttle, and Joseph Stell patented improvements on the Dutch engine loom, which they said " may go or be worked by hands, water, or any other force." The

ribbon loom may be regarded as a series of distinct looms mounted within one frame, each having its own warp and cloth beams, heddles, and shuttle, but all worked by one set of treadles and with a single batten. The shuttles are thrown across the narrow web by a rack-and-pinion arrangement ; they are simultane- ously shot, and each occupies the place of its next neigh- bour to the right or left alternately. The Jacquard appar- atus and the drop-box arrangement for changing shuttles with change of weft are applied to the ribbon loom.

The application of power to the weaving of ordinary webs has developed along a different line, and the common power-loom has nothing to do with the ribbon loom. So early as 1678 there was figured and described in the French Journal des Seavans a machine " for making linen cloth without the aid of a workman," the invention of De Gennes, a French naval officer: The loom made in 1745 by Vaucanson, which also foreshadowed the Jacquard apparatus, embodied many improvements on the

conception of De Gennes, and presented some of the im- portant features of the modern power-loom. The practical realization of automatic weaving was, however, deferred for forty years, and the world owes it to a clergyman of the Church of England, the Rev. Dr Edmund Cartwright. His own graphic account of the history of his invention has already been given under Corton (see vol. vi. p. 500). Dr Cartwright's original loom was but an imperfect machine, although his patent was minute and detailed. Both he and others devoted much labour to its improve- ment; and in bringing the invention to a successful issue he spent from £30,000 to £40,000, while in return he re- ceived only a gift of £10,000 in 1809 from the Government. The power-loom fought its way to supremacy but slowly, for an imperfect power-loom is no better than a hand-loom; and it was only after the minor adaptations and adjustments which frequently make the difference between success and failure were brought into operation that the real advan- tages of power-loom weaving became

obvious. Even yet for many purposes the power-loom has not succeeded in supplanting hand-loom weaving.

The power-loom (fig. 8) differs much in appearance from the hand-loom, and is altogether more compact, from the fact that the lay, which is suspended from above in the latter, is in the power- loom centred below. The three principal motions, shedding, pick-

ing, and beating up, are of course the same in both. Motion is communicated to the working parts of the power-loom by the main

> S===

Fie. 8.—Power-Loom.

tappets, and (2) for the treadles called the shedding tappets. picking tappets have always a direct relation to the motion of the

shot to the side at which the apparatus is fixed. If the prongs

WEAVING

meet no thread they are not thrown up, and being unmoved a con- nexion is formed to the moving lay, and by a system of levers the loom is immediately thrown out of gear and stopped. Equally essential is it to provide means to stop the loom should the shuttle stick in the warp or otherwise fail to be carried from side to side of the lay. It is clear that, should the lay beat up with the shuttle sticking in the weft, there would ensue complete wreck of the warp. There are two ways of dealing with such a contingency. The first, invented in 1796 by Miller of Glasgow, is the "stop-rod motion," the action of which depends on the shuttle raising, as it enters the shuttle-box, a catch which if left down would strike against a frog or stop, and so throw the loom out of gear. The second device is

. the loose reed, in which there is an appliance for liberating the

lower part of the reed when any obstruction is met in the warp, and thereby preventing a blow being given by the beating-up motion. Double

Cloth.— For many purposes the weaving of double cloth is important. It permits of the formation of a ground of inferior material with a surface of finer texture; and it affords great scope for the formation of coloured patterns, allowing of the production of double-faced textures, which may or may not correspond in pattern according to pleasure. It moreover increases the thickness and weight of woven fabrics, and it is the basis of tubular weaving, such as is practised for making hose, tubes, seamless sacking, &c. There are three classes of double textures. The first consists of double warp surfaces with the weft in the centre; in the second it is the reverse—a warp centre and two weft faces; and in both these classes the two sides may be of different colours if two colours of warp and weft respectively are employed. In the third case the cloth may consist of distinct warps and wefts throughout, and practically be two separate cloths. These, if bound at the selvedges, would become woven tubes, and if at regular intervals over the surface a thread of warp or weft passes from the one into the other they are united as one texture. The intersection of double warps and wefts gives the opportunity of producing great diversity of colour and pattern in any fabric without waste of material, and the manner in which patterns may pass from side to side is illustrated in the sectional diagram, fig. 9. The diagram, fig. 10, illustrates

2 eX _____ > _foee a

Fre. 9.—Section of Double Cloth.

the method of producing a plain double cloth with the use of four heddles. Heddles 1 and 2 shed the upper cloth, 3 and 4 the

1

*noe lee * i = through the lower web _heddles eng putin through the 1 2,3 are raised and heddle 4 is upper warp heddle 1 is depressed. :*

up and all the others Gauze Weaving.—Hitherto we are down; and when the shuttle is passed

have dealt only with methods of weaving in which the warp threads run parallel with each other and are intersected at right angles by the weft. In

gauze weaving, by which effects intermediate between lace and plain cloth are produced, the warp threads are made to intertwist more or less among themselves, thereby favouring the production of light open textures, in which many ornamental lace-like combinations can be effected. Plain gauze isa thin open texture, in which two contiguous threads of warp make each a half twist around the other at every pick, the cloth having in section the appearance shown in fig. 11. A leno con- sists of a kind of

muslin in which SSOeSSOZOSBEKOEOBG the crossing or whip warp inter- twists with its neighbour only at every fourth pick. In fancy gauzes the crossing or whip warp may cross and entwine several ordinary warp threads at once, and in numerous other ways the simple principle of intertwisting may be used for ornamental effect. The mutual entwining of warp threads is accomplished by an extra heddle called a "doup," placed in front of the common heddles. The doup consists of a half heddle threaded through the eye of a plain heddle, of which it forms a part. The cross or whip warps are drafted first through one of the ordinary heddles and then passed under the thread or threads they are intended to entwine, and drafted through the doup heddle, as seen in the diagram, fig. 12, which shows the drafting of a plain gauze. The whole of the warp yarns which are to be entwined must with the whip

Fre. 10,— Method of Weaving Double Cloth.

Fig. 11.—Section of ordinary Gauze.

W EB—W EB

warp be passed through a single split of the reed, except when the doups are placed in front of the reed, which is done in the case of complicated gauze weaving. ; Piled fabrics are textures woven with a looped or otherwise raised surface. Looped pile is any fabric in which the woven loops remain uncut, as in Brussels and tapestry carpets and terry velvets. When these loops are cut in the finished texture then the material is a cut pile, such as ordinary velvet, fustian, imitation scalskin, om and other imitation furs. For oe! ordinary loop and cut pile ry fabrics two warps are re- f quired, the regular beam warp Y and the " pole" or pile warp. The latter, being raised into loops, is worked up more rapidly than the

ordinary warp, and it has consequently to be of greater length and wound on a separate beam. The ground or foundation may be either a plain or a twilled texture, and after every third pick of weft a wire is introduced into the shed and beaten up and woven into the cloth. In this way, by the stretching of the pile warp over the wire, a row of loops is formed across the web, the size of the loops being regulated by the size of the wire. Ifa looped pile is being woven then it only remains to pull out the wires from behind and again weave them in in front as the work proceeds. Butif cut pile is being made, then either the loops must be cut along the top before the wire is withdrawn, or the wire may at one end be provided with a knife edge which itself cuts the loops as it is being pulled out. For velvets, &c., the wires are provided with a groove on their upper face, and along this groove a cutting knife called a trivet is run to cut the loops. In fig. 13 the structure of a looped and cut velvet is illustrated. Fustian

is a cut pile fabric in

i – EVV VEY. e which thevelt mate: TSS surface, forms the Fig. 13.—Section of Looped Pile Fabric. substance of the pile. It is not woven over wires, aud the pile is cut by hand after the web leaves the loom. A third method of weaving pile fabrics consists of making a double web, the pile warp passing from the one to the other and binding them together, as shown in fig. 14. When the connecting threads are cut they form a pile surface for each separate cloth. The great difficulty which has Fie, 14.—Section of Double-Web Plush. been encountered in per- feeting this method of pile weaving has been to keep the connecting pile equal in length throughout, and to cut it so as to produce uniform level surfaces. The success which has been attained in plush weaving with double cloth is largely due to the patient and well-directed efforts of Mr S. C, Lister, of Manningham Mills, Bradford.

Fig, 12.—Drafting of Gauze Web. 1 and 2 ordinary heddles; D, doup heddle.

There are many subsidiary but highly important and most ingenious features of the art of weaving, specially in connexion with the production of ornamental surfaces, for notice of which it has been impossible to find room in the preceding Summary. The extent and complexity of the whole

subject renders the present- ation of a satisfactory outline of the art a matter of unusual difficulty; but those who wish to pursue the subject in detail, in addition to copious information to be gleaned from technical journals, may consult Darlow's History and Principles of Weaving (London, 1878), Ashenhurst's Weaving and Designing of Textile Fabrics (Bradford, 1879), and Brown's Practical Treatise on the Art of Weaving (4th ed., Dundee, 1883). To the two works first named we have to acknowledge our indebtedness for the suggestions of several diagrams.

WEBER, Cart Maria Friepricu Ernst von (1786- 1826), musical composer and creator of "romantic opera," was born at Eutin, near Liibeck, December 18, 1786, of a family that had long been devoted to art. His father, Baron Franz Anton von Weber, a military officer in the service of the palgrave Karl Theodor, was an excellent violinist, and his mother once sang on the stage. His cousins, Josepha, Aloysia, Constanze, and Sophie, daughters of Franz Anton's brother Fridolin, attained a high reputation as vocalists. Mozart, after having been cruelly deceived by Aloysia, made Constanze his wife, and thus became Franz Anton's nephew by marriage. Fridolin played the violin nearly as well as his brother; and the whole family displayed exceptional talent for music.

Franz Anton von Weber was a man of thriftless habits and culpable eccentricity. Having been wounded at Ros-

bach, he quitted the army, and in 1758 he was appointed financial councillor to Clement August, elector of Cologne, who for nine years overlooked his incorrigible neglect of duty. But the elector's successor dismissed him in 1768; and for many years after this he lived in idleness at Hildesheim, squandering the property of his wife, Anna de' Fumetti, and doing nothing for the support of his children until 1778, when he was appointed director of the opera at Liibeck. In 1779 the prince bishop of Eutin made him his kapellmeister, and not long afterwards his wife died of a broken heart. Five years later he went to Vienna, placed two of his sons under Michael Haydn, and in 1785 married the young Viennese singer Genovefa von Brenner, who in the following year gave birth, at

Eutin, to the subject of the present article—a delicate child, afflicted with congenital disease of the hip-joint.

On his return from Vienna, Franz Anton, finding that a new kapellmeister had been chosen in his place, ac- cepted the humbler position of " Stadt Musikant." This, however, he soon relinquished; and for some years he wandered from town to town, giving dramatic perform- ances, in conjunction with the children of his first wife, wherever he could collect an audience. The effect of this restless life upon the little Carl Maria's health and educa- tion was deplorable ; but, as he accompanied his father everywhere, he became familiarized with the stage from his earliest infancy, and thus gained an amount of dramatic experience that indisputably laid the foundation of his future greatness. Franz Anton hoped to see him develop into an infant prodigy, like his cousin Mozart, whose marvellous career was then rapidly approaching its close. In furtherance of this scheme, the child was taught to sing and place his fingers upon the pianoforte almost as soon as he could speak, though he was unable to walk until he was four years old. Happily his power of observation and aptitude for general learning were so precocious that he seems, in spite of all these disadvantages, to have in- stinctively educated himself as became a gentleman. His first music- master was Keuschler, who gave him instruction at Weimar in 1796. In 1798 Michael Haydn taught him gratuitously at Salzburg. In the March of that year his mother died, like her predecessor, of chagrin. In April the family visited Vienna, removing in the autumn to Munich. Here the child's first composition—a set of "Six Fughettas " —was published, with a pompous dedication to his half- brother Edmund; and here also he took lessons in singing from Valesi, and in composition from Kalcher, under whom he made rapid progress. Soon after this he began to play successfully in public, and his father compelled him to write incessantly. Among the compositions of this period were a mass and an opera—Die Macht der Liebe und des Weins— now destroyed. A set of "Variations for the Pianoforte," composed a little later, and dedicated to Kalcher, was lithographed by Carl Maria himself, under the guidance of Senefelder, the inventor of the process, in which both the father and the child took great interest.

In 1800 the family removed to Freiberg, where the Ritter von Steinsberg gave Carl Maria the libretto of an opera called Das Waldmddchen, which the boy, though not yet fourteen years old, at once set to music, and produced in November at the Freiberg theatre. The performance was by no means successful, and the composer himself was accustomed to speak of the work as "a very immature production"; yet it was afterwards reproduced at Chemnitz, and even at Vienna.

Carl Maria returned with his father to Saizburg in 1801, resuming his studies under Michael Haydn, and forming a close friendship with the Chevalier Neukomm. Here also he composed his second opera, Peter Schmoll und seine Nachbarn, which was unsuccessfully produced at Nurem-

berg in 1803. In that year he again visited Vienna, where, though the veterans Haydn and Albrechtsberger were both receiving pupils, his father preferred placing him under the Abbé Vogler, a man of kind and sympathetic nature, but quite unfit to train so great a genius. Through Vogler's instrumentality Carl Maria was appointed con- ductor of the opera at Breslau, before he had completed his eighteenth year. In this capacity he greatly enlarged his experience of the stage; but he lived a sadly irregular life, contracted debts which his slender salary was insuffi- cient to defray, and lost his beautiful voice through accidentally drinking a poisonous liquid used in litho- graphy,—a mishap that nearly cost him his life. These hindrances, however, did not prevent him from beginning a new opera called Aiibezahl, the libretto of which was based upon a well-known legend of the Riesengebirge. The plot of the piece was "romantic" to the last degree, and Weber worked at it enthusiastically, but it was never completed, and little of it has been preserved beyond a quintett and the masterly overture, which, re-written in 1811 under the title of Der Beherrscher der Geister, now ranks among its author's finest instrumental compositions.

Quitting Breslau in 1806, Weber removed in the fol- lowing year to Stuttgart, where he had been offered the post of private secretary to Duke Ludwig, brother of Irederick, king of Wiirtemberg. The appointment was

a disastrous one. The stipend attached to it was insufficient to meet the twofold demands of the young man's new social position and the thriftlessness of his father, who was entirely dependent upon him for support. Court life at Stuttgart was uncongenial to him, though he yielded to its temptations. The king hated him. He fell hopelessly into debt, and, worse than all, became involved in a fatal intimacy with Margarethe Lang, a singer at the opera. Notwithstanding these distractions he worked hard, and in 1809 re-modelled Das Waldméddchen, under the title of Sylvana,! and prepared to produce it at the court theatre. Buta dreadful calamity prevented its performance. Franz Anton had misappropriated a large sum of money placed in the young secretary's hands for the purpose of clearing a niortgage upon one of the duke's estates.2. Both father and son were charged with embezzlement, and, on February 9, 1810, they were arrested at the theatre, during a rehearsal of Sylvana, and thrown by the king's order into prison. No one doubted Weber's innocence, but after a summary trial he and his father were ordered to quit the country, and on February 27 they began a new life at Mannheim.

Having provided a comfortable home for his father,and begun the composition of a new comic opera, in one act, called Abu Hassan, Weber removed to Darmstadt in order to be near his old master the Abbé Vogler, and his fellow- pupils Meyerbeer and Gansbacher, with whom he lived on terms of the closest intimacy. On September 16, 1810, he reproduced Sylvana under its new title at Frankfort, but with very doubtful success. Abu Hassan was com. pleted at Darmstadt in January 1811, after many inter- ruptions, one of which exercised a memorable influence upon his later career. While reading with his friend, Alexander von Dusch, George Apel's then recently pub- lished Gespensterbuch, he was so much struck with the story of Der Freischiitz that he at once began to meditate upon its transformation into an opera, and the two friends actually set to work upon it then and there. But it was not until many years afterwards that the idea was carried out in a practical form. ee ee ee ee ae

1 As the MS. of Das Waldmddchen has been lost, it is impossible now to determine its exact relation to the later work.

2 Spitta gives a different account of the occurrence, and attributes the robbery to a servant.

Won ® eh

Weber started in Iebruary 1811 on an extended artistic tour, during the course of which he made many influential friends, and on June 4 brought out Abu Hassan with marked success at Munich. His father died at Mannheim in 1812, and after this he had no settled home, until in 1813 his wanderings were brought to an end by the unexpected offer of an appointment as kapellmeister at Prague, coupled with the duty of entirely remodelling the performances at the opera-house. The terms were so liberal that he accepted at once, engaged a new company of performers, and governed them with uninterrupted success until the autumn of 1816. During this period he composed no new operas, but he had already written much of his best pianoforte music, and played it with never-failing success, while the disturbed state of Europe inspired him with some of the finest patriotic melodies in exist- ence. First among these stand ten songs from Kérner's Leyer und Schwerdt, including " Vater, ich rufe dich," and "Liitzow's wilde Jagd"; and in no respect inferior to these are the splendid choruses in his cantata Kampf und Steg, which was first performed at Prague, December 22, 1815.

Weber resigned his office at Prague, September 30, 1816, and on December 21 Frederick Augustus, king of Saxony, appointed him kapellmeister at the German opera at Dresden. The Italian operas performed at the court theatre were superintended by Morlacchi, whose jealous and intriguing disposition produced an endless amount of trouble and annoyance. The king, however, placed the two kapellmeisters on an exact equality both of title and salary, and Weber found ample opportunity for the exercise of his remarkable power of organization and control. And now he once more gave his attention to the story of Der Freischiitz, which, with the assistance of Friedrich Kind, he developed into an admirable libretto, under the title of Des Jagers Braut.

The legend of ' The Seventh Bullet," though well known in the 17th century, and probably much earlier, seems to have been first given to the world in a connected form in a work entitled Unterredungen vom Reiche

der Geister, the second edition of which was printed at Leipsic in 1731. In this version of the story the scene is laid in Bohenia, and the action referred tothe year 1710. Apel reproduced the legend, under the title of "' Der Freischiitz," in the first volume of his Gespensterbuch, in 1810. Since then the story has been repeated in many varying forms, but it was Apel's version that first attracted Weber's attention, and it was from this that he and Kind together made their first sketch of the libretto, on February 21, 1817, though they found it necessary to increase the interest of the drama by the introduction of some accessory characters, and to substitute a happy ending for the fatal catastrophe of the original story. No subject could have been better fitted than this to serve as a vehicle for the new art-form which, under Weber's skilful management, developed into what is now universally recognized as the prototype of the true 'romantic opera." He had dealt with the supernatural in Liibezahl, and in Sylvana with the pomp and circumstance of chivalry, but in neither case with the unquestioning faith which alone can invest the treatment of such subjects with befitting dignity. The shadowy impersonations in fitibezahl are scarcely less human than the heroine who invokes them; and the music of Sylvana might easily have been adapted to a story of the 19th century. But in the master's later operas all this is changed. We cannot choose but shudder at the fiend in Der Freischiitz, for the .nfernal apparition comes straight to us from the nether world. Every note in Zuryanthe breathes the spirit of mediseval romance ; and the fairies in Oberon have a real existence, quite distinct from the tinsel of thestage. And this it is,—this uncompromising reality, even in face of the

unreal,—that forms the strongest characteristic of the pure "romantic school," as Weber understood and created it. It is true to nature even when dealing with the super- natural, for it treats its wildest subjects in earnest, and without a doubt as to the reality of the scenes it ventures to depict, or the truthfulness of their dramatic interpre- tation.

Weber and Kind sketched the scenario of the new opera in February 1817. On March 1 the poet placed the com- plete libretto in the hands of the composer, who wrote the first note of the music on July 2—beginning

with the duet which opens the second act. But so numerous were the interruptions caused by Morlacchi's intrigues, the insol- ence of unfriendly courtiers, and the attacks of jealous critics that nearly three years elapsed before the piece was completed. In the meantime the performances at the opera-house were no less successfully remodelled at Dresden than they had already been at Prague, though the work of reformation was far more difficult ; for the new kapellmeister was surrounded by enemies who openly subjected him to every possible annoyance, and even the king himself was at one time strongly prejudiced against him. Happily, he no longer stood alone in the world. Having, after much difficulty, broken off his miserable intimacy with Margarethe Lang, he married the well-known vocalist, Carolina Brandt, a noble-minded woman and consuinmate artiste, whose advice, even on subjects con- nected with the new opera, was extremely valuable. The great work was completed May 13, 1820, on which day Weber wrote the last note of the overture,—a portion of the design which, for obvious reasons, it was his custom to postpone until the rest of the music was finished. There is abundant. evidence to prove that he was well satisfied with the result of his labours ; but he gave him- self no rest. He had engaged to compose the music to Wolff's Gipsy drama, Preciosa. Two months later this also was finished, and both pieces ready for the stage.

In consequence of the unsatisfactory state of affairs at Dresden, it had been arranged that both Preciosa and Der Freischiitz—no longer known by its original title, Des Jagers Bravt—should be produced at Berlin. In February 1821 Sir Julius Benedict was accepted by Weber as a pupil; and to his pen we owe a delightful account of the rehearsals and first performance of his master's chef @ewre. Preciosa was produced with great success at the old Berlin opera-house on June 14, 1821. On June 18, the anniversary of the battle of Waterloo, the opening of the new "Schauspielhaus" was celebrated by the produc- tion of Der Freischiitz. Much anxiety was caused by unforeseen difficulties at the rehearsals; yet, so calm was Weber's mind that he devoted his leisure time to the composition of his Concertstiick in F minor—one of his finest pianoforte pieces. Until the last moment his friends Were anxious; the author was not; and the result justified his confidence in his own powers. The success of the plece was triumphant. The work was received with equal

enthusiasm at Vienna on October 3, and at Dresden on January 26, 1822. Yet Weber's position as kapellmeister was not much improved by his success, though, in order to remain faithful to his engagements, he had refused tempting offers at Berlin and Cassel, and, at the last- named place, had installed Ludwig Spohr in a position much more advantageous than his own.

For his next opera Weber accepted a libretto based, by Frau Wilhelmine von Chezy, on the story of Huryanthe, as originally told in the 13th century, in Gilbert de Montreuil's Roman de la Violette, and repeated with alter- ations in the Decamerone, in Shakespeare's Cymbeline, and in several later forms. In place of the ghostly horrors of Der Freischitz, the romantic element was hére supplied

by the chivalric pomp of the Middle Ages. The libretto, though soundly abused by shallow critics, is really an exceptionally good one—in one respect superior to that of Der Freischiitz, inasmuch as it substitutes elaborate recitative for the spoken dialogue peculiar to the German '"Schauspiel"" and French '"opéra comique." It is, in fact, a " grand opera" in every sense of the words,—the prototype of the "musical drama" perfected fifty years later by Wagner. The overture—as usual, written last— presents a feature that has never been imitated. During its performance the curtain temporarily rises, to exhibit, in a tableau vivant, the scene in the sepulchral vault upon which the whole story turns. This episode is now rarely presented ; but Weber himself well knew how much the interest of the piece depended on it. The work was pro- duced at the Kirntnerthor theatre in Vienna, October 25, 1823, and received with enthusiasm. Being of a less popular character than Der Freischiitz, it is not so fre- quently performed ; but it still retains its place upon the stage, and ranks among the finest 'romantic operas" that have ever been written.*

Weber's third and last dramatic masterpiece was an English opera, written for Covent Garden theatre, upon a libretto adapted by Planché from Wieland's Oberon. Destined for the English stage sixty years ago, this was necessarily disfigured by the spoken dialogue abandoned in

Huryanthe ; but in musical beauty it is quite equal to it, while its fairies and mermaids are as vividly real as the spectres in Der Freischiitz. 'Though already far gone in consumption, Weber began to compose the music on January 23, 1825. Charles Kemble had offered him £1000 for the work, and he could not afford to rest. He finished the overture in London, at the house of Sir George Smart, soon after his arrival, in March 1826; and on April 12 the work was produced with triumphant success. But it cost the composer his life. Wearied out with rehearsals and performances of the opera, and concerts at which he was received with rapturous applause, he grew daily perceptibly weaker; and, notwithstanding the care of his kind host, Sir George Smart, and his family, he was found dead in his bed on the morning of June 5, 1826. For eighteen years his remains rested in a temporary grave in Moorfields chapel; but in 1844 they were removed and placed in the family vault at Dresden.

Besides his three great dramatic masterpieces and the other works already mentioned, Weber wrote two masses, two sym- phonies, eight cantatas, anda vast amount of songs, orchestral and

pianoforte pieces, and music of other kinds, amounting altogether to more than 250 compositions. (W. S. R.)

WEBER'S LAW is the principal generalization of that branch of scientific investigation which has come to be known as "psycho-physics." According to Fechner, who has done most to prosecute these inquiries and to consolidate them under a separate name, '" psycho-physics is an exact doctrine of the relation of function or dependence between body and soul." In other words, it is throughout an attempt to submit to definite measurement the relation of physical stimuli to the resulting psychical or mental facts, and forms an important department of experimental psychology. It deals with the quantitative aspects of mental facts—their intensity or quantity proper and their duration. Physical science enables us, at least in the case of some of the senses, to measure with accuracy the objective amount of the stimulus, and introspection enables us to state the nature of the subjective result. Thus we are able to say whether a stimulus produces any psychical result, and can fix in that way the minimum

sensibile or "threshold of consciousness" for each of the senses. Tn like nanner (though with less accuracy, owing to the dis- turbing nature of the conditions) we can fix the sensational

maximum, or upper limit of sensibility, in the different senses, that is to say, the point beyond which no increase of stimulus produces any appreciable increase of sensation. We thus determine, as Wundt puts it, the limit-values between which changes of intensity in the stimulus are accompanied by changes in sensation. But the central inquiry of psycho-physics remains behind. Between the quantitative minimum and the quantitative maximum thus fixed can we discover any definite relation between changes in the objective intensity of the stimuli and changes in the intensity of the sensations as estimated by consciousness? The answer of psycho-physics to this in- quiry is given in the generalization variously known as ""Weber's law," " Fechner's law," or the '" psycho-physical law," which professes to formulate with exactitude the rela- tions which exist between change of stimulus and change of sensation.

As we have no means of subjectively measuring the absolute intensity of our sensations, it is necessary to de- pend upon the mental estimate or comparison of two or more sensations. Comparison enables us to say whether they are equal in intensity, or if unequal which is the greater and which is the less. But as they approach equality in this respect it becomes more and more difficult to detect the difference. By a series of experiments, therefore, it will be possible, in the case of any particular individual, to determine the least observable difference in intensity between two sensations of any particular sense. This least observable difference is called by Fechner the "Unterschiedsschwelle," or '"difference-threshold," that is to say, the limit of the discriminative sensibility of the sense in question. That such a "threshold," or least observable difference, exists is plain from very simple examples. Very small increases may be made in the objective amount of light, sound, or pressure—that is, in the physical stimuli applied to these senses—without the subject on whom the experiment is made detecting any change. It is further evident that, by means of this " Unterschiedsschwelle," it is

possible to compare the discriminative sensibility of different individuals, or of different senses, or (as in the case of the skin) of different parts of the same sense organ : the smaller the difference observable the finer the dis- criminative sensibility. Thus the discrimination of the muscular sense is much more delicate than that of the sense of touch or pressure, and the discriminative sensibility of the skin and the retina varies very much according to the parts of the surface affected. Various methods have been adopted with a view to determine these minima of discriminative sensibility with an approach to scientific precision. The first is that employed by Weber himself, and has been named the method of just observable differ- ences. It consists either in gradually adding to a given stimulus small amounts which at first cause no perceptible difference in sensation but at a certain point do cause a difference to emerge in consciousness, or, vice versa, in gradually decreasing the amount of additional stimulus, till the difference originally perceived becomes imper- ceptible. By taking the average of a number of such results, the minimum may be determined with tolerable accuracy. The second method is called by Fechner the method of correct and incorrect instances. When two stimuli are very nearly equal the subject will often fail to recognize which is the greater, saying sometimes that A is greater, sometimes that B is greater. When in a large number of trials the right and wrong guesses exactly balance one another we may conclude that the difference between the two stimuli is not appreciable by the sense. On the other hand, as soon as the number of correct guesses definitely exceeds half of the total number of cases, it may be in- ferred that there is a certain subjective appreciation of

difference. This method was first employed by Vierordt. The third method, that of average errors, is very similar to the one just explained. Here a certain weight (to take a concrete example) is laid upon the hand of the person experimented upon, and he is asked, by the aid of subjec- tive impression alone, to fix upon a second weight exactly equal to the first. It is found that the second weight sometimes slightly exceeds the first,

sometimes slightly falls below it. Whether above or below is of no con- sequence to the method, which depends solely on the amount of the error. After a number of experiments, the different errors are added together, and the result being divided by the number of experiments gives us the average error which the subject may be calculated upon to make. This marks the amount of stimulus which is just below the difference-threshold for him. This method was first employed by Fechner and Volkmann. The different methods were first named, and the theory of their applica- tion developed by Fechner, in his Elemente der Psycho-physik (1860).

These methods have been chiefly applied to determine the relation of the difference-threshold to the absolute magni- tude of the stimuli employed. For a very little reflexion tells us that the smallest perceivable difference is not an amount whose absolute intensity is constant even within the same sense. It varies with the intensity of the stimuli employed. We are unable, for example, to recognize slight differences in weight when the weights compared are heavy, though we should be perfectly able to make the distinction if the weights compared were both light. Ordinary observation would lead us, therefore, to the conclu- sion that the greater the intensity of the original stimulus at work the greater must be the increase of stimulus in order that there may be a perceptible difference in the resulting sensation. E. H. Weber (1795-1878) was the first (after a prolonged series of experiments on the sensa- tions of sight, hearing, and touch) to clothe this generality with scientific precision by formulating the law which has since gone by his name. The purport of the law is that, in order that the sensational difference may remain un- changed, the increase of stimulus must maintain the same proportion to the intensity of the preceding stimulus. The smallest perceptible difference is therefore not absol- utely the same, but it remains relatively the same, that is, it remains the same fraction of the preceding stimulus. For example, if we can: distinguish 16 oz. and 17 02z., we shall be able to distinguish 32 oz, and 34 oz. but not 32 oz. and 33 oz., the addition being in each case 7, of the preceding stimulus. This fraction (supposing it to be the difference-threshold of the muscular sense) remains a con- stant, however light or however heavy the weights com- pared. The law may be formulated thus : —The difference between any two stimuli is experienced as of equal

magni- tude, in case the mathematical relation of these stimuli remains unaltered. Or, otherwise expressed, In order that the intensity of a sensation may increase in arithmetical progression, the stimulus must increase in geometrical pro- gression. It is also expressed by Fechner in the form— The sensation increases as the logarithm of the stimulus.

The law has been variously interpreted. Fechner him- self designated it the psycho-physical law, and treated it as the fundamental formula of the relation between body and mind, thus assigning to it an ontological dignity and significance. But in this " psycho-physical" interpreta- tion of his results he has not had a numerous following. Wundt interprets the law in a purely 'psychological " sense, making it a special instance of the general law of relativity which governs our mental states. Introspection can give us no information as to the absolute intensity of the stimulus; for a stimulus is known in consciousness

WEB—WEB

only through its sensational resultant. Hence, he argues, we can only compare one psychical state with another, and our standard of measurement is therefore necessarily a relative one; it depends directly upon the preceding state with which we compare the present. Others have attempted to give the law a purely physical or " physio- logical" explanation. Instead of holding with Fechner that the law expresses a recondite relation between the material and the spiritual world, they prefer to regard the quanti- tative relation between the last physical antecedent in the brain and the resultant mental change as prima facie one of simple proportion, and to treat Weber's law as holding between the initial physical stimulus and the final action of the nerve-centres. According to this interpretation, the law would be altogether due to the nature of nervous action, As a nerve, says Sully, after a temporary degree of stimulation temporarily loses its sensibility, so the greater the previous stimulation of a nerve the greater is the additional stimulus required to produce an appreciable amount of sensation.

Weber's law, it must be added, holds only within certain limits. In the "chemical" senses of taste and smell experiinents are almost impossible. It is not practicable to limit the amount of the stimulus with the necessary

exactitude, and the results are further vitiated by the long continuance of the physiological effects. The same con- siderations apply with still more force to the organic sensations, and the results in the case of temperature sensations are completely uncertain. The law is approxi- mately true in the case of sight, hearing, pressure, and the muscular sense,—most exactly in the case of sound. As this is the sense which affords the greatest facilities for measuring the precise amount of the stimulus, it may per- haps be inferred that, if we could attain the same exacti- tude in the other senses, with the elimination of the numerous disturbing extraneous influences at work, the law would vindicate itself with the same exactitude and certainty. It is further to be noted, however, that even in those senses in which it has been approximately verified, the law holds with stringency only within certain limits. The results are most exact in the middle regions' of the sensory scale; on the contrary, when we approach the upper or lower limit of sensibility, they become quite un- certain.

Literatwre.—W eber's investigations were given to the public in his articlesin Wagner's Handwérterbuch der Physiologie. Fechner's Elemente der Psycho-physik, referred to above, was published in 1860, and contains an elaborate exposition of the whole subject. He replied to his critics in two later works, Zn Sachen der Psycho- physitk (1877) and Revision der Hauptpunkte der Psycho-physik (1882). Delbeuf's Hiude psychophysique (1873), and G. E. Miiller's Zur Grundlegung der Psycho-physik, are also important documents ; and the subject is fully treated in Wundt's Physiologische Psycho- logie and in Ladd's Physiological Psychology, which is based upon Wundt. Two English monographs may be referred to as containing important criticisms of the law,—the paper of Messrs Dewar and M'Kendrick in the Transactions of the Royal Society of Edinburgh

for 1873, and Mr James Ward's ' Attempt to Interpret Fechner's Law," in Mind, i. 452 sq. (A. SE.)*

WEBSTER, Danren (1782-1852), American states- man, was born at Salisbury, New Hampshire, January 18, 1782. His family can be traced back without difficulty to Thomas Webster, of Scottish ancestry, who settled in New Hampshire in 1636, but no further. Ebenezer Webster, the

father of Daniel, rose to the rank of captain in the "French and Indian War." From him his sons Ezekiel and Daniel inherited great physical force ; their mother, Abigail Eastman, gave them their intellectual Powers. Daniel always insisted on considering his elder brother, who became a leading lawyer in his native State, as really his superior in intellect, and the correspondence between them was close and confidential until Ezekiel's

death in 1829. Living on the frontier, Daniel was com- pelled to depend for early education on his mother and on the scanty schooling customary in winter ; and for much of this he was indebted to the fact that he was physically the weakest of his family. It is a little odd, however, that he failed utterly in that with which his final reputation was so closely connected. In his own words: "There was one thing I could not do: I could not make a declamation; I could not speak before the school." When he was fifteen years old a family council decided to send him to college, a step involving severe abstinence and additional struggle on the part of his immediate relatives. After an imperfect preparation, he graduated at Dartmouth College in 1801, studied law, and was admitted to the bar in Boston in 1805, from the office of Christopher Gore.

Regard for his father made Webster begin practice in the town of Boscawen, near his early home; but his father died within a year, and he removed to Portsmouth, the largest town of the State. Here he took a leading place at the bar, having but one rival. In May 1813 he entered Congress as a representative from New Hampshire, being placed at once on the committee of foreign affairs. As a moderate Federalist, he held that attacks on Canada should cease, and that the war should be confined to the ocean. His first speech showed that the raw New Hamp- shire boy of a dozen years before had developed new powers. "Ifthe war must continue, goto the ocean. If you are seriously contending for maritime rights, go to the theatre where alone those rights can be defended. Thither every indication of your fortune points you. There the united wishes and exertions of the nation will go with you. Even our party divisions, acrimonious as they are, cease at the water's edge." The position of any Federalist in Congress, however, was not a wide sphere of influence ; and Webster, removing to Boston in 1816, gave up political life for some years.

At the Massachusetts bar Webster soon gained a place as prominent as he had held in New Hampshire, and within three years his reputation as a lawyer had become national. His national standing was gained by his argu- ment in the " Dartmouth College case," practically endorsed by the Supreme Court. Dartmouth College had been chartered by the king in 1769. In 1816 the New Hampshire legislature undertook to alter the charter and reorganize the corporation ; and the State courts sustained the legislature in a suit brought by the old trustees against the new. On appeal to the Supreme Court of the United States in 1818, Webster contended that the College was an eleemosynary corporation, over which the legislature had no more power than the king who chartered it ; that the king had no power to void such a charter, and the New Hampshire legislature no such sovereign powers as parliament ; that the legislature's action came within the Federal constitution's prohibition of State legislation altering contracts; that "the charter of 1769 is a con- tract ;" that "the acts in question impair this contract ;" and that they were therefore unconstitutional and void. The Supreme Court upheld Webster's view, and it was soon seen that he had worked a serious change in the relations of the States to corporations, as they had thus far been

understood. The States endeavoured to meet the new rule by inserting in their charters clauses retaining the right to alter them; but the spirit of the ‘ Dartmouth College case,” which has always had its opponents among American lawyers, has had its influence upon judges every- where, in every variety of cognate cases. From this time Webster was recognized as the leading lawyer of the country, and his services were in constant demand.

His cases are quite beyond statement within the space here available. Some of his leading constitutional cases

472

were those of Gibbons v. Ogden, in 1824, in which he overthrew the action of the New York legislature, in granting to Ogden, assignee of Fulton and Livingstone, a monopoly of steam navigation in New York waters, as an interference with the right of Congress to regulate com- merce ; Ogden v. Saunders, in 1827, in which he attacked the right of a State to pass bankruptcy laws; the Girard College case, in 1844, in which he maintained that Chris- tianity was an essential part of the common law; and the case of Luther v. Borden, commonly known as the Rhode Island case, in 1848, in which he laid the foundation for the subsequent definition of the ‘guarantee clause” of the constitution, and stated the meaning of the “repub- lican government” of a State. Like other American lawyers, he made no distinction in his practice between kinds of cases, and was often retained in criminal causes. The most celebrated of these were the trials of Goodridge and Knapp; in the latter (6 Webster’s Works, 53) is the passage on the power of conscience, which has been de- claimed by countless American schoolboys.

Webster’s reputation as an orator began with his address at Plymouth in 1820, on the 200th anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims. It was increased by his address at the laying of the corner-stone of the Bunker Hill monument in 1825, on the 50th anniversary of the battle, and by that which commemorated in 1826 the 50th anniversary of the Declaration of Independence and the coincident deaths of Jefferson and John Adams. On every great public occasion thereafter, if Webster was obtainable, he was held to be the natural speaker to be chosen. His finest subsequent

speeches were made on the completion of the Bunker Hill monument in 1843, and at the laying of the corner-stone of the addition to the Capitol at Wash- ington in 1851.

In December 1823 Webster returned to Congress as a representative from Massachusetts, and his first speech, in January 1824, in support of a resolution to send a com- missioner to Greece, then in insurrection, made him the first of Congressional speakers. During his service in the house the tariff of 1824 came up for discussion. Re- presenting a commercial district, Webster's speech has always been a source of gratification to American opponents of protection. He repudiated the name of " American system," claimed by Clay for the system of protection which he was introducing. He cited with cordial approval the expressed belief of English statesmen that English manufactures had prospered in spite of protection, not because of it, and their desire for " unrestricted trade." He attacked the "old notion" of the balance of trade with such vigour that he felt compelled to apologize "for speaking irreverently of the dead." He stated the manner in which, under unrestricted trade, the American production in cotton, woollens, and iron had already come to rival that of England, protected for hundreds of years, and the loss in labour which would come from an attempt, by legal protection, to "support a business that cannot support itself." The whole speech would be a very striking free-trade argument even at the present day. When the tariff of 1828, which was still more protective, came up for discussion, Webster had ceased to oppose protection; but his speech does not attempt to argue in favour of it. It states that his pedple, after giving warning in 1824 that they would consider protection as the policy of the Government, had gone into protected manufactures, and that he now asked that that policy be not reversed to the injury of his constituents. It can hardly escape notice that, in his published Works, Webster has but two subsequent speeches in Congress on the tariff, both defending protection rather as a policy under which industries had been called into being than as

an advisable policy, if the stage had been clear for the adop- tion of a new policy.

In 1827 Webster was sent to the senate, in which he remained until his death, with the exception of his service in the cabinet in Tyler's administration. In January 1830 came the crowning event of his political life. A debate on public lands, under a resolution offered by Senator Foot, thence known as ' Foot's resolution," had wandered off into all possible fields. In course of it, Hayne, of South Carolina, attacked New England for having pursued a selfish policy as to western lands. Webster replied. During Hayne's answer Webster drew from him the first distinct and public statement of the new doctrine of nullifi- cation, of the constitutional right of a State to forbid the execution within its jurisdiction of Acts of Congress which it considered unconstitutional. This had been the product of Calhoun's intellect, which was generally taken to be the source of Hayne's inspiration. Webster's reply is his famous ' second speech on Foot's resolution." He began by a defence of Massachusetts, which has been severely criticized, and is perhaps open to criticism. But if effect is to be taken as a test, it is above criticisn.. The remainder of the speech was of intense interest, not merely to New England, but to the whole North and West, and to all the progressive elements of the country. He stated the anarchistic doctrine of nullification in its naked- ness, extorted from Hayne an unwilling half-admission of the exactness of his statement, and then went on to trample on it with such an exhibition of logic, sarcasm, and elephantine humour as has never been heard in the senate before or since. It is on this speech that Webster's fame was built. Southern men had taken the lead so long that it was a new sensation to the North and West to see a Southern leader completely overmatched by their champion ; and ' Black Dan Webster," a popular name, due to his dark complexion, beetling brows, and heavy cast of features, was for twenty years the representative of Northern sentiment as to the nature of the Union.

Calhoun took Hayne's place in the senate in 1833, introduced and defended resolutions endorsing the right of nullification, and was still more fully answered by Webster. For the next seventeen years the records of the senate are full of constitutional arguments between the two. Webster's oratory made him an invaluable member of the Whig party, and his addresses at political meetings are so numerous as to defy special mention. A leader so distinguished had a fair right to think of the

presidency, but it always remained just beyond his reach. In the general Whig confusion of 1836 he received the fourteen electoral votes of Massachusetts. In 1840 the candidature of Harrison left him no chance. In 1844 Webster's retention of his position under Tyler gave Clay an over-whelming advantage with his party. In 1848 the nomina- tion of Taylor, which Webster declared to be " one not fit to be made," was a fatal blow to the prospects of the Massachusetts leader. His final failure to obtain the Whig nomination in 1852 put an end to his political career.

When the Whig party came into power in 1841, Webster was appointed secretary of state (foreign affairs), and he retained his post under Tyler, after his colleagues had broken with the new president and resigned. There was good reason for his action. When he entered office war with Great Britain was a probable event of the near future. The M'Leod case, in which the State of New York insisted on trying a British subject, with whose trial the Federal Government had no power to interfere, while the British Government had declared that it would consider conviction and execution a casus belli; the exercise of the right of search by British vessels on the coast of Africa, of which Americans had a deep-seated detestation, quite apart from

were Ss THR

any feeling about the slave-trade ; the Maine boundary, as to which the action of a State might at any time bring the federal Government into armed collision with Great Britain,—all these at once met the new secretary, and he felt that he had no right to abandon his work for party reasons. With the special commissioner from Great Britain, Lord Ashburton, he concluded the treaty of 1842, which settled all these questions satisfactorily to both parties. At the same time Webster took the opportunity to end the long controversy as to the right of impressment. Sixteen years afterwards the British Government admitted at last the correctness of the American position.

The treaty of 1842 also introduced the principle of extradition into the connexion between the two countries. It had been admitted once before, in Jay's treaty of 1794, but only as to murder and forgery, and only until 1806.

Leaving the cabinet in 1843, Webster was returned to the senate in 1845 and spent the remainder of his life there. He opposed the annexation of Texas and the Mexican War, and was, as before, the recognized spokes- man of his party. As the growing intensity of the quarrel over the organization of the territory acquired from Mexico revealed the depth of the chasm which now yawned between the sections, Webster's standing- ground in American politics disappeared. His 7th of March speech, in 1850, which stamped him, in the opinion of many of his former Northern worshippers, as a recreant bidding for Southern votes for the presidency, was really little different from his former words. It was the country that had changed. He was still for the Union as the one controlling consideration, with an equal dislike for the abolitionist and the secessionist, who endangered the Union. But the North and the South were already so far apart that not even Webster could stand with one foot in one and the other foot in the other section; and his fate was parallel with that of John Dickinson, who essayed a similar réle during the revolution. Angered at the spirit with which his speech was received, Webster threw all his influence towards driving through the Whig Convention of 1852 an endorsement of the compromise of 1850 "in all its parts," including, of course, the Fugitive Slave Act.

The result was his own failure to receive the Whig nomina-

tion for the presidency, and the downfall of his party. Just before the election he died at his home, Marshfield, Massachusetts, October 1852.

Webster was twice married—-to Grace Fletcher, of New Hampshire, in 1808, and two years after her death to Catherine Bayard le Roy, of New York, in 1829. One of his sons, Edward, lost his life in the Mexican War; his only surviving child, Fletcher Webster, colonel of a Massa- chusetts regiment, was killed at Bull Run. In marked contrast to Webster's wonderfully able treatment of public financial affairs, his management of his private finances was notoriously shiftless,—so much so that, in his later years, the care of them was assumed by a voluntary com- mittee of Boston business men. Like other men of his time, he was neither careful nor temperate in table enjoy- ment. Washington people still tell of the enthusiasm with which, after dinner, he once insisted on standing up in a

theatre-box, to join in the chorus of the American national hymn. He was a devoted angler, and intensely interested in scientific agriculture ; much of his Private Correspond- ence 1s connected with the latter subject.

Webster named as his literary executors Edward' Everett, C. C. Felton, George Ticknor, and George Ticknor Curtis. By this 'rangement the standard edition of his Works, in six volumes, appeared (1851), In the first volume is a Life by Everett. See also Webster's Private Correspondence, Knapp's Life of Webster (1835), March's Reminiscences of Congress (1850), Laninan's Private Life of Webster (1856), Curtis's Life of Webster (1869), Harvey's Reminis- cences of Webster (1877), Lodge's Life of Webster (1883). (A. J.)

473

WEBSTER, Joun, the greatest of Shakespeare's con- temporaries or successors, was a writer for the stage in the year 1601, and published in 1624 the city pageant for that year, "invented and written by John Webster, merchant-tailor." In the same year a tragedy by Ford and Webster was licensed for the stage; it is one of the numberless treasures now lost to us through the careless- ness of genius or the malignity of chance. Beyond the period included between these two dates there are no traces to be found of his existence ; nor is anything known of it with any certainty during that period, except that seven plays appeared with his name on the title page, three of them only the work of his unassisted hand. His first noteworthy appearance in print, as far as we know, was as the author of certain additions to Marston's tragi- comedy of The Malcontent ; these probably do not extend beyond the induction, a curious and vivacious prelude to a powerful and irregular work of somewhat morbid and sardonic genius. 'Three years later, in 1607, two comedies and a tragedy, 'written by Thomas Dekker and John Webster," were given to the press. The comedies are lively and humorous, full of movement and incident ; but the beautiful interlude of poetry which distinguishes the second scene of the fourth act of Westward Ho/ is unmistakably and unquestionably the work of Dekker; while the companion comedy of Worthward Ho/ is com- posed throughout of homespun and coarse-grained prose. The Famous History of Sir Thomas

Wyatt is apparently a most awkward and injurious abridgment of a historical play in two parts on a pathetic but undramatic subject, the fate of Lady Jane Grey. In this lost play of Lady Jane Heywood, Chettle, and Smith had also taken part ; so that even in its original form it can hardly have been other than a rough piece of patchwork. There are some touches of simple eloquence and rude dramatic ability in the mangled and corrupt residue which is all that survives of it; but on the whole this "history " is crude, meagre, and unimpressive. In 1612 John Webster stood revealed to the then somewhat narrow world of readers as a tragic poet and dramatist of the very foremost rank in the very highest class. The White Devil, also known as Vittoria Corombona, is a tragedy based on events then compara- tively recent—on a chronicle of crime and retribution in which the leading circumstances were altered and adapted with the most delicate art and the most consummate judgment from the incompleteness of incomposite reality to the requisites of the stage of Shakespeare. By him alone among English poets have the finest scenes and passages of this tragedy been ever surpassed or equalled in the crowning qualities of tragic or dramatic poetry,—in pathos and passion, in subtlety and strength, in harmonious variety of art and infallible fidelity to nature. Eleven years had elapsed when the twin masterpiece of its author —if not indeed a still greater or more absolute masterpiece —was published by the poet who had given it to the stage seven years before. Zhe Duchess of Malfy (an Anglicized version of Amalfi, corresponding to such designations as Florence, Venice, and Naples) was probably brought on the stage about the time of the death of Shakespeare ; it was first printed in the memorable year which witnessed the first publication of his collected plays. This tragedy stands out among its compeers as one of the imperish- able and ineradicable landmarks of literature. All the great qualities apparent in The White Devil reappear in The Duchess of Malfy, combined with a yet more per- fect execution, and utilized with a yet more consummate skill. No poet has ever so long and so successfully sus- tained at their utmost height and intensity the expressed emotions and the united effects of terror and pity. The transcendent imagination and the impassioned sympathy

which inspire this most tragic of all tragedies save King Lear are fused together in the fourth act into a creation which has hardly been excelled for unflagging energy of impression and of pathos in all the dramatic or poetic literature of the world. Its wild and fearful sublimity of invention is not more exceptional than the exquisite justice and tenderness and subtlety of its expression. Some of these executive merits may be found in an ill-constructed and ill-conditioned tragi-comedy which was printed in the same year ; but few readers will care to remember much more of The Devil's Law-Case than the admirable scenes and passages which found favour in the unerring and untiring sight of Webster's first and final interpreter or commentator, Charles Lamb. Thirty-one years later the noble tragedy of Appius and Virginia was given to the world,—a work which would alone have sufficed to per- petuate the memory of its author among all competent lovers of English poetry at its best. Seven years after- wards an unprincipled and ignorant bookseller published, under the title of A Cure for a Cuckold, a play of which he assigned the authorship to John Webster and William Rowley. This attribution may or may not be accurate ; the play is a mixture of coarsely realistic farce and grace- fully romantic comedy. An elegy on Henry, prince of Wales, and a few slight occasional verses, compose the rest of Webster's remaining works.

Webster's claims to a place among the chief writers of his country were ignored for upwards of two centuries. In 1880 the Rev. Alexander Dyce first collected and edited the works of a poet who had found his first adequate recognition twenty-two years earlier at the pious and fortunate hands of Lamb. But we cannot imagine that a preseutiment or even a foreknowledge of this long delay in the payment of a debt so long due from his countrymen to the memory of so great a poet would seriously have disturbed or dis- tressed the mind of the man who has given us the clue to his nature in a single and an impcrishable sentence—"I rest silent in my own work." CARICES®)

WEBSTER, Noan (1758-1843), American lexico- grapher, was descended on the father's side from John Webster of Warwickshire, England, one of

the original settlers at Hartford, and for a time governor of Connecti- cut, and on the mother's side from William Bradford, second governor of Plymouth and one of the founders of that colony. He was the son of a farmer, and was born in West Hartford, Connecticut, 16th October 1758. In his early years he was engaged in agricultural work, but attended a district school in the winter, and when fourteen years of age began the study of the classics under the Rev. Nathan Perkins, D.D. He entered the freshman's class at Yale College in 1774, and while in his junior year there he took part as a volunteer in the expedition against General Burgoyne. After graduating in 1778 he supported himself by teaching while prosecuting the study of law. Having begun at this time to note down every word whose meaning he did not properly understand, he was first led to conceive the scheme of a new dictionary from his frequent inability to find proper definitions of words in those in current use. His experience as a teacher soon convinced him also of the need of better instruction books in English, and this he endeavoured to supply by his Grammatical Institute of the English Language, the first part of which appeared in 1783, and a second and third part in the following years. It comprehended a spelling- book, English grammar, and compilation of Jnglish reading, and very soon found a place in most of the schools of the United States. In 1785 he prepared a course of lectures on the English language, which he delivered in the principal American cities, and published in 1789 under the title Dissertations on the English Language. Meanwhile he also continued to take a deep interest in all prominent political questions. In his Sketches of American Policy (1784) he made the first

distinct proposal for a new constitution for the United States, and when the work of the commissioners was completed in 1787 he was asked by them to recommend the new constitution to the American people, which he did in an Examination of the Leading Principles of the Federal Constitution. After his marriage in 1789 he established himself in the practice of law at Hartford. In 1793 he was induced to found at New York a paper called Minerva, with which was connected the Herald, a semi-weekly ; the titles of the papers were subsequently altered respectively to

the Commercial Advertiser and the Mew York Spectator. In 1795 he contributed to his paper several articles, under the signature of Curtius, in vindi- cation of Jay's treaty with Great Britain, which were reprinted and had considerable effect in allaying opposition to it. In 1798 he removed to New Haven, which town he was chosen soon afterwards to represent in the general assembly of Connecticut. In 1802 appeared his well- known treatise on Zhe Sights of Neutrals. Having removed in 1812 to Amherst, he took there a leading part in the establishment of the academy and then of the college, of which he was chosen the first president. He also represented Amherst in the court of Massachusetts. In 1822 he returned to New Haven. Meanwhile his lexicographical studies, though much interrupted by his professional and political duties, had never been entirely suspended. In 1806 he published his Com- pendious Dictionary of the English Language, but this was only preparatory to a larger work. In 1824 he sailed for Europe to complete his researches, and after spending some time in Paris continued his labours in the library at Cambridge, where he finished the dictionary. It was published in 1828, and a second edition with many additions appeared in 1841. He also completed the revision of an appendix a few days before his death, which took place 20th May 1843.

In 1833 Webster published an edition of the Bible, " with amendments of the language," and again in 1839 an edition of the New Testament. In early life he wrote a History of the United States, of which a revised edition appeared in 1839. He was also the author of Historical Notices of Banking Institutions and Insurance Companics (1802), and a Collection of Papers on Political and Literary Subjects (1848). Since his death several revised and enlarged editions of the Dictionary have appeared. It was the result of much labour and research, and on this account, as well as for the clearness and carefulness of its definitions, it still holds a leading place among dictionaries of the English lan- guage, especially in America. A biography of Webster, by C. A. Goodrich, D.D., is prefixed to the quarto editions of the Dictionary.

WEBSTER, Tuomas (1800-1886), figure painter, was born at Ranelagh Street, Pimlico, London, on March 20, 1800. His father was a member of the household of George III.; and the son, having shown an aptitude for

music, became a chorister in the Chapel Royal, St James's. He, however, developed a still stronger love for painting, and in 1821 he was admitted student of the Royal Academy, to whose exhibition he contributed, in 1824, portraits of Mrs Robinson and Family. In the following year he gained the first medal in the school of painting. Till 1879 he con- tinued to exhibit in the Royal Academy work of a genial and gently humorous character, dealing commonly with subjects of familiar incident, and especially of child life. Many of these were exceedingly popular, particularly his Punch (1840), which procured in 1841 his election as A.R.A., followed five years later by full membership. He became an honorary retired academician in 1877, and died at Cranbrook, Kent, on September 23, 1886. His Going into School, or the Truant (1836), and his Dame's School (1845) are in the National Gallery, and five of his works are in the South Kensington Museum. Many of his paintings have been transcribed by Lumb Stocks, A.R.A., and other of the best engravers of the time.

WEHEDDERBURN

WEDDERBURN, AtEexanpeR (1733-1805), Baron Loughborough in 1780, earl of Rosslyn in 1801, lord high chancellor of Great Britain, was the eldest son of Peter Wedderburn (a lord of session as Lord Chesterhall), and was born in East Lothian on 13th February 1733. He acquired the rudiments of his education at Dalkeith, and in his fourteenth year was sent to the university of Edin- burgh, where he matriculated on 18th March 1746. It was from the first his desire to practise at the English bar, though in deference to his father's wishes he qualified as an advocate at Edinburgli on 29th June 1754, and he did not neglect to enter himself at the Inner Temple on 8th May 1753, so that he might keep the Easter and Trinity terms in that year. His father was called to the bench in 1755, and for the next three years Wedderburn stuck to his practice in Edinburgh, during which period he zealously, with an eye to the main chance, employed his oratorical powers in the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, and passed his evenings in the social and argumentative clubs which abound in its capital. In 1755 a short-lived precursor of the more famous Hdinburgh Review of a later generation was started in Edinburgh, and it is chiefly remembered now from the

circumstance that in its pages Adam Smith criticized the dictionary of Dr Johnson, and that the contents of its two numbers were edited by Wedderburn. The dean of faculty at this time, Lockhart, afterwards Lord Covington, a lawyer notorious for his harsh demeanour, in the autumn of 1757 assailed Wedder- burn with more than ordinary insolence. His victim re- torted with extraordinary powers of invective, and on being rebuked by the bench declined to retract or apologize, but placed his gown upon the table, and with a low bow left the court for ever. It was long supposed that this step was unpremeditated, but it is now believed that the alter- cation only made him act upon his previous decision of quitting the Scottish for the English courts. Through his prudence in having taken the preliminary steps some years previously he was called to the English bar at the Inner Temple on 25th November 1757. In his new position he acted with characteristic energy. To shake off his native accent and to acquire the graces of oratorical action, he en- gaged the services of Sheridan and Macklin. To secure business and to conduct his cases with adequate knowledge, he diligently studied the forms of English law, he solicited Strahan, the printer, "to get him employed in city causes," and he entered into social intercourse (as is noted in Alexander Carlyle's autobiography) with busy London solicitors, such as the brothers Dagge. His local connex- ions and the incidents of his previous career introduced him to the notice of his countrymen Lords Bute and Mansfield. When Bute was prime minister this legal satellite used, says Dr Johnson, to go on errands for him, and it is to Wedderburn's credit that he first suggested to the premier the propriety of granting Johnson a pension. Through the favour of the royal favourite he was returned to parliament (28th December 1761) for the Ayr burghs, and in consequence of the same patronage he was introduced into Churchill's Rosciad as "a pert prim prater," conspicuous for "guilt in his heart and famine in his face." In 1763 he became king's counsel and bencher of Lincoln's Inn, and for a short time went the northern circuits, but was more successful in obtaining business in the Court of Chancery, He obtained a considerable addition to his resources (Carlyle puts the amount at £10,000) on his marriage (31st December 1767) to Betty Anne, sole child and heiress of John Dawson of Marly in Yorkshire. When George Grenville, whose principles leaned to Toryism, quarrelled with the court, Wedderburn affected to regard him as

his leader in politics. At the dissolution in the spring of 1768 he was returned by Sir Lawrence Dundas for Richmond as

.Commons.

475

a Tory, but in the struggles over Wilkes he took the popular side of "Wilkes and liberty," and resigned his seat (May 1769). Inthe opinion of the people he was now regarded as the embodiment of all legal virtue; his health was toasted at the dinners of the Whigs amid rounds of applause, and, in recompense for the loss of his seat in parliament, he was returned by Lord Clive for his pocket-borough of Bishop's Castle, in Shropshire (January 1770). During the next session he acted vigorously in opposition, but his conduct was always viewed with distrust by his new associates, and his attacks on the ministry of Lord North grew less and less animated in proportion to its apparent fixity of tenure. In January 1771 he was offered and accepted the prize of solicitor-general. The high road to the woolsack was now open to his steps, but his defection from his former path has stamped his character with general infamy. Junius wrote of him—"As for Mr Wedderburn, there is something about him which even treachery cannot trust," and Colonel Barré attacked him in the House of The new law officer defended his conduct with the assertion that his alliance in politics had been with Mr George Grenville, and that the connexion had been severed onhis death. In his new position his services were warmly appreciated. He was cool and ready in debate, and when his advice was sought for the deliberation of the cabinet it was given with promptness and energy. The expression of Gibbon that Lord North "was upholden on either hand by the majestic sense of Thurlow and the skilful eloquence of Wedderburn" was not overstrained. All through the lengthened folly of the American War his declamation was consistently employed against the cause of the colonies, but one incident in his conduct is indelibly written in history. Dr Franklin obtained in 1773, by means of some unknown member of parliament, certain letters from crown officials in Massachusetts, written before the outbreak of hostilities, and recommending the employment of a military force for the suppression of the discontent which prevailed in America. These letters he

sent to the speaker of the house of assembly, and that body thereupon prayed for the recall of the officials. The application came before a committee of the privy council, when Wedderburn, amid the unrestrained applause of the majority of the judges, denounced Franklin in unmeasured terms, comparing "the coolness and apathy of the wily New Englander " with the "revengeful temper of the negro Zanga" in Dr Young's play of the Revenge. His victim preserved an impassive demeanour, but was cut to the quick. Years afterwards, on the termination of the war, when articles of peace were signed at Versailles—this is the usually accepted version of a story on which some doubt has been cast—Franklin wore the same clothes which he had worn when exposed to this invective. In June 1778 Wedderburn was promoted to the post of attorney-general, and in the same year he refused the dignity of chief baron of the exchequer because the offer was not accom- panied by the promise of a peerage. At the dissolution in 1774 he had been returned for Okehampton in Devonshire, and for Castle Rising in Norfolk, and selected the former constituency; on his promotion as leading law officer of the crown he returned to his old love of Bishop's Castle. The coveted peerage was not long delayed. In June 1780 he was created chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and he was at the same time gratified by the title of Baron Loughborough. For thirteen years he presided over this court, and, although his knowledge of the principles and precedents of law was always deficient, his skill in marshal- ling his facts and his clearness of diction made his appoint- ment generally acceptable. During the existence of the coalition ministry of North and Fox, the great seal was in commission (April to December 1783), and Lord Loughborough held

the leading place among the commissioners. For some time after its fall he was considered as the leader of the Whig party in the House of Lords, and, had the illness of the king brought about the return of the Whigs to power, the great seal would have been placed in his hands. The king's restoration to health secured Pitt's continuance in office, and disappointed the expectations of the Whigs. In 1792, during the period of the French Revolution, Lord Loughborough seceded from Fox, and on the 28th January 1793 he received the great seal in the Tory cabinet of

Pitt. In legal knowledge he was exceeded by many of his predecessors, but his judgments were always remarkable for their perspicuity, and in the appeal cases to the House of Lords, where it was his function to criticize and elucidate the opinions of others, he shone pre- eminent. All the political acts of the administration in which he served met with his zealous support, and he re- mained faithful to his leader until the question of Catholic emancipation became of urgent importance, when he is supposed to have influenced by unfair means the mind of his sovereign. It was probably through his advice that George III. refused his assent to Pitt's proposals, and that the removal of the disabilities under which the Catholics groaned was delayed for another quarter of a century. When the prime minister found that he could not carry out his compact with his Catholic fellow-subjects he re- signed, and Addington succeeded to his place. Much to Lord Loughborough 's surprise, no place was found for him in Addington's cabinet, and he was obliged to resign his post of lord chancellor (14th April 1801). His first wife died 15th February 1781 without leaving issue, and he married in the following year (12th September) Charlotte, youngest daughter of William, Viscount Courtenay, but her only son died in childhood. Lord Loughborough accordingly obtained in 1795 a re-grant of his barony with remainder to his nephew, Sir James St Clair Erskine. His fall in 1801 was softened by the grant of an earldom (he was created earl of Rosslyn 21st April 1801, with remainder to his nephew), and by a pension of £4000 per annum. After this date he rarely appeared in public, but he was a constant figure at all the royal festivities. He attended one of those gatherings at Frogmore, 31st December 1804. On the following day he was seized with an attack of gout in the stomach, and on 2d January 1805 he died at his seat, Baylis, near Salt Hill, Windsor. His remains were buried in St Paul's Cathedral on the 11th January.

At the bar Wedderburn was the most elegant speaker of his time, but in legal erudition he was excelled by many of his contempor- aries, and he is said to have been markedly afraid of Dunning's forensie powers. For cool and sustained declamation he stood un- rivalled in parliament, and his readiness in debate was universally acknowledged. In social life, in the company of the wits and writers of his day, his faculties seemed to desert him. He was not only dull but the cause of dulness in others, and even

Alexander Carlyle confesses that in conversation his illustrious countryman was "stiff and pompous." In Wedderburn's character ambition banished all reetitude of principle, but the love of money for money's sake was not among his faults. ve Jeg 2p)

WEDGWOOD, Jostan (1730-1795), the most distin- guished of English manufacturers of pottery. Many members of the Wedgwood family had been established as potters in Staffordshire throughout the 17th century, but their productions were in no way remarkable. Josiah, born in 1730, was the youngest child of Thomas Wedgwood, who owned a thriving pottery in Burslem. At a very early age he distinguished himself by keen powers of observation and love for all that was curious and beautiful. Soon after the death of his father in 1739, Josiah, then scarcely ten years of age, was taken away from school and set to learn the art of moulding or "throwing" clay pottery, at which he soon became extraordinarily skilful.

In 1744 he was apprenticed to his eldest brother, who had succeeded to the management of his father's pottery ; and in 1751, when the term of his apprenticeship had expired, Josiah Wedgwood became manager of the neighbouring Alder pottery, with a very moderate salary. In 1759 he started as an independent potter at the Ivy-House works in Burslem, and soon introduced many improvements among the simple classes of pottery which were then made in Staffordshire. Soon, however, Wedgwood's tastes were turned in an archzological direction by the increasing interest then taken in Greek or (as they were then called) Etruscan vases. His enthusiasm was specially aroused by the illustrations in Comte de Caylus's Recueil d Antiquités (1752-67); aided by this work he began to attempt to copy Greek designs, and in later years he was further assisted by loans of vases from the fine collection of Greek pottery possessed by Sir William Hamilton. In 1769 Wedgwood opened new potteries on a larger scale at Etruria in Staffordshire, having entered into partner- ship with Thomas Bentley of Liverpool, a man of great taste and culture, and in all respects a kindred spirit. Many able artists, and among them the young Flaxman, were engaged to design and model reliefs, busts, and

other designs for the Wedgwood and Bentley pottery ; and in a short time the productions of their kilns were widely sold and highly esteemed in all the chief countries of Europe. After Bentley's death in 1780, Wedgwood became sole owner of the Etruria pottery till 1790, when he took some of his sons into partnership. His chief artistic feat was perhaps the production of an accurate copy in clay of the celebrated glass Portland vase ; reproductions of this were sold at £50 a piece, and about 50 copies —not all of equal merit—were produced during Wedgwood's lifetime. In 1764 Josiah married his cousin Sarah Wedgwood. He died on January 3, 1795, in the 65th year of his age, leaving to his children a well-earned fortune of more than half a million.

Josiah Wedgwood was a man of the highest moral worth, and skilled in many branches of knowledge. He was the intimate friend of Dr Erasmus Darwin and other distinguished men of science. For the chief characteristics of the Wedgwood pottery the reader is referred to the article PorTERY, vol. xix. p. 632. See also Jewitt, Life of Wedgwood, 1865 ; and Eliza Meteyard, Life of Wedgwood, Ist ed., 1865-66.

WEDNESBURY, a market-town and parliamentary borough of Staffordshire, England, is situated near the source of the Tame, on the Great Western and London and North-Western railway lines, 8 miles north-west of Birmingham, and 1364 miles north-west of London. The church of St Bartholomew, a fine building in the Perpen- dicular style, is supposed to occupy the site of a heathen temple to Woden, and some remains of the ancient castle adjoin it. The church was erected probably in the 11th century, and from 1301 the advowson, tithes, &c., belonged to the abbot of Halesowen until 1535. It was partially re- built towards the close of the 15th century, and restored in 1766, in 1827, in 1878, andin 1885. Among other public buildings are the town-hall (1871-72), the free library in the Gothic style (1878), containing about 9000 volumes, the Liberal club (1875), the assembly rooms, the public baths, and the temperance hall. The neighbourhood of Wednesbury has been long celebrated for its iron and coal mines, the coal being unequalled as fuel for the smith's forge. A special kind of iron ore is obtained which is manufactured into axes and other edge-tools. The town possesses large steel and iron works, the more important manufactures being those of the

large kind of iron work used by railway companies (such as bridges, cranes, switches, roofs, wheels, axletrees, boiler-plates, and rails), water, steam, and gas pipes, and various kinds of wrought- iron work. The population of the urban sanitary district

(area 2124 acres), which is identical with the township, in 1871 was 25,030, and in 1881 it was 24,566. In 1811 the population was only 5372. Until 1885 the parlia- mentary borough had an area of 11,340 acres, with a population in 1871 of 116,809 and in 1881 of 124,437. West Bromwich, formerly included in it, has been erected into a separate borough, leaving in Wednesbury an area which in 1881 had a population of 68,142.

At Weduesbury (Wodensborough), Ethelfleda, widow of Ethelred of Mercia, in 916 constructed a castle. The place is not mentioned in Domesday, but appears to have belonged to the barony of Dudley. After the Conquest it became a demesne of the crown, and it was bestowed by Henry II. on the Heronvilles. It first received parlia- mentary representation in 1867.

WEEK. See CaLenpDar and SaBBaTa,

WEEVER. The weevers (7'rachinus) are small marine fishes which are common on the coasts of Europe, and which have attained notoriety from the painful and some- times dangerous wounds they are able to inflict upon those who incautiously handle them. They belong toa family of spiny-rayed fishes (7rachinidz), and are distinguished by a long low body with two dorsal fins, the anterior of which is composed of six or seven spines only, the posterior being long and many-rayed ; their anal resembles in form and composition the second dorsal fin. The ventral fins are placed in advance of the pectorals, and consist of a spine and five rays. The caudal fin has the hind margin not excised. The body is covered with very small scales, sunk in and firmly adherent to the skin, but the upper surface of the head is bony, without integument. The head, like the body, is compressed, with the eyes of moderate size and placed on the side of the head; the mouth is wide, oblique, and armed with bands of very small teeth.

Several species of weevers are known, but two only occur on the British coasts, viz., the Greater Weever (7vrachinus draco) and the Lesser Weever (7. vipera); the former is frequently found of a length of 12 inches, and possesses some thirty rays in the second dorsal fin, whilst the latter grows only to about half that length, and has about ten rays less in the dorsal. The coloration of both is plain, but the short first dorsal fin is always of a deep black colour. The weevers are bottom fish, burying and hiding them- selves in the sand or between shingle,—the lesser species living close inshore and the greater preferring deeper water, and being found sometimes floating on the surface at a distance of several miles from the shore. Although weevers, especially the lesser, are in the habit of burying themselves in the sand, and are abundant in some localities much resorted to by bathers, accidents from step- ping upon them are much more rare than from incautiously handling them after capture. They probably make their escape on perceiving the approach of a person. The wounds are inflicted by the dorsal and opercular spines, are very painful, and sometimes cause violent local inflammation. In the absence of any special poison organ it 1s most probable that the mucous secretion in the vicinity of the spines has poisonous properties. The spines are deeply grooved, the poisonous fluid which is lodged in the grooves being thus intro- duced into the punctured wound.

WEEVIL, a very old Anglo-Saxon term, now commonly applied to the members of a group of Coleoptera termed the Rhyncophora (see vol. vi. p. 133). This group is characterized by the prolongation of the head into a rostrum or proboscis, at the end of which the mouth, with its appendages, is placed. The antenna are short, usually elbowed, and often end in a club-shaped swelling. The basal portion of the antennz frequently lies in a depression at the side of the rostrum, and this gives the antenne the appearance of emerging half-way along the rostrum. The mouth appendages are small; the mandibles, however, are stout. 'The palps are very short and conical as a rule. The body is usually small ; in shape it varies very much. The elytra are very hard, and in some cases fused with one another, rendering flight impossible. The larve are white, fleshy, apodal grubs, with a series of tubercles along each side of the body; the head is round, and bears strong Jaws, and sometimes rudimentary ocelli. They are ex- clusively phytophagous. The Ehyncophora embrace three

families,—(1) the Curculionide, or true weevils, (2) the Brenthidz, and (3) the Bruchide.

The Curculionidx form one of the largest familics amongst the Coleoptera, the number of specics described exceeding 10,000, arranged in 1150 genera. The antenne are elbowed, and clavate, with the basal portion inserted in a groove. The third tarsal joint is generally bilobed. Over 400 specics exist in Great Britain, few of which exceed half an inch in length. The genera Phyllobius and Polydrosus include some of the most beautiful insects found in Britain, their brilliancy, like that of the Lepidoptera, being due to the presence of microscopic scales. The diamond beetle of South America, Entimus imperialis, is another singularly beautiful wecvil ; its colour is black, studded with spangles of golden green. The immense family of the Cuwrewlionide includes members which differ greatly from one another in size, colour, and appearance; even the rostrum, the most striking common characteristic, varies greatly. The form of the body is very varions: some are rounded or oval, others elongated, almost linear ; some are covered with warty protuberances, whilst others are smooth and shining, often with a metallic lustre.

One of the commonest members of this family in Great Britain is the Nut Weevil, Balaninus nucwm. It is of a brownish colour, varied with yellow, the legs reddish. Its rostrum is unusually long, being five-sixths of the body length in the female, and slightly shorter in the male, The antenne are 7-jointed. The first three joints are much longer than thick ; the four following are shorter, and the seventh not longer than thick. The larva is very common in hazel nuts and filberts). When the nuts are about half-grown, the female bores, with its rostrum, a minute hole in the still comparatively soft nut shell, and deposits an egg within the nut. The egg is said to be pushed in by means of the long rostrum. As the nut grows the slight puncture becomes almost obliterated, so that it is unnoticed by all but the most observant eye. The larva is a thick white grub with a brownish head, bearing fleshy tu- bercles along its side. It feeds upon the sub- stance of the nut. The nuts which are infested by this insect are

usually the first to fall to the ground ; the larva then bores a round hole through the nut shell, by means of its jaws, and creeps out, It hides itself in the ground during the winter, and in the spring it passes into the pupa stage, from which it emerges about August as the full-grown insect. A nearly allied form, Balaninus glan- dium, attacks both hazel nuts and acorns.

In an unobtrusive way weevilsdoimmense harm to vegetation. This is effected not so much by their numbers and their powers of consumption, as amongst cater- pillars, but by their habits of attacking the essential parts of a plant, and causing by their injuries the death of the plant affected. They destroy the young buds, shoots, and fruits, and attack the young plants in their most delicate organs. Many of them devour seed, as the Corn Weevils, Calandra granaria (see WHEAT) and C. oryze, and in this way vegetation is severely injured, and its spread seriously checked. Others cause much damage in forests, by boring uuder the bark and through the wood of trees, whilst some even burrow in the tissue of the leaves. 4 :

The Brenthide are by some authorities included in the family Cuwrculionide. They include some 275 species, and are almost exclusively tropical. Their antenne are 11-jointed, not elbowed. The rostrum is straight and very long. The shape of the body is very long and narrow, the first and second abdominal segment being very long, Allied to these is the sub-family Attelabides.

The Bruchide form a somewhat larger family than the fore- going, containing over 400 species. The antennz are straight, and inserted upon the head just in front of the eyes; they are 11-jointed, and serrated or toothed in the inside. The rostrum is short. Bruchus pisi causes considerable damage to pease ; during the spring the beetle lays its eggs in the young pea, which is devoured by the larva which hatches out in it. (A. E. 8.)

WEIGHING MACHINES. See Batance; also Mecuanics (vol. xv. p. 771) and Mint (vol. xvi. p. 490),

. Balaninus glandium, magnified.

. The same, natural size.

The larva, magnified.

The sume, natural size.

. Head and snout of the female, magnified.

. The same parts of the male, magnified, to show arrangement of antenne.

OTR OO ND

4

=

(

8

WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

HIS subject may be best divided for convenience of

reference into three parts :—I. ScIENTIFIC, including

the facts and data usually needed for scientific reference ;

II. Historicat, including the principles of research and

results in ancient metrology; and III. ComMmeErctaL, in-

cluding the weights and measures of modern countries as used in commerce.

I. ScrENTIFIC.

A unit of length is the distance between two points defined by some natural or artificial standard, or a multiple of that. For instance, in

Britain the unit of the yard is defined by the distance between two parallel lines on gold studs sunk in a bar of bronze, when at 62° F., which bar is preserved in the Standards Office. There are other units, such as the inch, foot, mile, &c.; but, as these are aliquot parts or multiples of the yard, there is no separate standard provided for them.

A unit of mass is the matter of a standard of mass, or a multiple of that. For instance, in Britain the unit of the pound is defined by a piece of platinum preserved in the Standards Office.

A unit of weight is the attractive force exerted between a unit of mass and some given body at a fixed distance,— this force being the weight of the unit in relation to the given body, or any other body of equal mass.1 Usually the given body is the earth, and the distance a radius of the earth. For instance, the unit of weight in Britain is the attraction between the earth and the standard pound when that is placed at sea-level at London, in a vacuum. For astronomical comparisons the unit of mass is the sun, and a unit of weight is not needed.

Standards of length are all defined on metal bars at present in civilized countries. Various natural standards have been proposed, such as the length of the polar diameter of the earth (inch), the circumference of} the earth (metre) in a given longitude, a pendulum vibrating in one second at a fixed distance from the earth, a wave of light emitted by an incandescent gas, &c. But the difficulty of ascertaining the exact value of these lengths prevents any material standard being based upon them with the amount of accuracy that actual measurements, to be taken from the standard, require. A natural standard is therefore only a matter of sentiment.

Standards of length are of two types, the defining points being either at a certain part of two parallel lines engraven in one plane (a line-standard), or else points on two parallel surfaces, which can only be observed by contact (an end-standard). The first type is always used for accurate purposes. Units of surface are always directly related to standards of length, without any separate standards. Volume is either determined by the lineal dimensions of a space or a solid, or, for accurate pur- poses, by the mass of water contained in a volume at a given temperature, which

again is measured either by liquid measure, or, more accurately, by weight. The standard of volume in Britain is a hollow cylinder of bronze, with a plate glass cover, when at 62° (gallon), legally defined as 277-274 cubic inches, or containing 10 pounds of water at 62° F.

Comparisons.—Lengths nearly equal are

compared

1 The word weight has incommon use two meanings, —(1) the force exerted between the earth and a body, and (2) a mass which is weighed against other bodies. In scientific use, however, weight means only a property of matter by which it is most convenient to compare the relative amounts of masses.

accurately by fixing two micrometer microscopes with their axes parallel, and at the required distance apart, on a@ massive support which will not quickly vary with temperature ; then the two lengths to be compared, e.g., the standard yard and another, are alternately placed beneath the microscopes, and their lengths observed several times. The error of a single observation in the Standards Department is stated to be a 100,000th of an inch. For fractional lengths a divided bar is required, the accuracy of which is ascertained by a shorter measure, which can be compared with successive sections of the whole length by micrometers. For ordinary purposes, where not less than ‘001 inch is to be observed, measures may be placed in

contact if one is divided on the edge, and the comparison

made with a magnifier. In large field-work the ends of a measure are transferred vertically to the ground by a small transit instrument or theodolite. End-measures between surfaces are read by means of a pair of contact pieces bearing line marks, the value of which is ascertained separately, or by a second end-measure; if both measures bear a line for observation, reversals then give the value of each measure.

Volumes are always most accurately defined by their weight of water, as weighing can be more accurately done than measuring. If the volume is

hollow, it may be filled with water and closed with a sheet of plate glass, or if solid the body may be weighed in water and out, the difference giving the weight of its volume of water. Un- fortunately the relation between water-weight and absolute volume is not yet accurately known. Volumes of liquid are similarly ascertained by their weight. Volumes of gas are measured in a graduated glass vessel inverted over a liquid, or for commercial purposes by some form of registering flow-meter.

Masses are compared by the BALANCE (q.v.), which may be made to indicate a 100,000,000th of the mass. They may also be estimated, not by their attractive force being balanced by an equal mass, but by the elasticity of a spring ; this, which is the only true weighing-machine showing weight and not mass, is useful for rough purposes, owing to its quick indication ; the most accurate form probably is that with angular readings.'

Temperature and the Atmosphere.—All the serious diffi- culties of weighing and measuring result from these causes, the effects of which and their corrections we will briefly notice. In measurement, since all bodies expand by heat, the temperature at which any measure or standard bar represents the abstract unit requires to be accurately "" stated and observed, the accuracy of optical observation being about equal to 735 of a degree F. of expansion in a standard. Great accuracy is therefore needed in the manufacture and reading of thermometers, and care that the standard and the thermometer shall be at the same temperature. Another method is to attach a parallel bar of very expansible metal to one end of the standard, and read its length on the standard at the other end; this ensures a more thorough uniformity of mean temperature between the standard and the heat-measurer. The most accurate method is by immersing the measures in a liquid, of which the temperature is read by several thermometers ; but this is scarcely needful unless high or low temperatures are required to ascertain the rate of expansion. A room with thick walls, double windows, and the temperature regulated by a gas stove is practically sufficiently equable for comparisons.

The temperature adopted for the standards is not the

2 See Mature, xxx. 205.

same in different countries. In Britain 62° F. has been adopted since the revision of the standards in 1822, as being a convenient average temperature for work; but, as it is purely a temperature of convenience, the rather higher point of 68° F. would be better. In any case an aliquot part of the thermal unit from freezing to boiling of water should be adopted ; 62° is $ and 68° is 3 of this interval. Whether a much higher temperature would not be more conducive to accuracy is a question; 92°, or 4 of the thermal unit, would be so near the temperature of the observer's skin and breath that measures and balances could be approached with less production of error ; and such a heat does not at all hinder accurate observing. The French temperature of 32° F. for standards has abandoned all other considerations in favour of readily fixing the temperature in practice by melting ice. This is a ready means of regulation, but a point so far from ordinary working temperatures has two great disadvantages: the observer's warmth produces more error, and the corrections for all observations not iced are so large that the rates of expansion require to be known very accurately for every substance employed: For water their standard tempera- ture is 39°°2 F., when it is at its maximum density ; this has the advantage that the density varies less with temperature than at any other point, but it is very doubt- ful if this is much used for actual work.

No substance expands uniformly with temperature, most materials expanding more rapidly at higher tempera- tures. The expansion of rods of the following metals, of 100 inches long, is given in decimals of an inch for the 90° from 32° to 122° F. (0 to 50° C.), and from 122° to 212° F. (50° to 100° C.):4—

; Platino- ; : : Platinum. serdtigms Steel. Iron. | Bronze.} Brass. | Zinc. 32° to 122° "0445 0435 "0536 0591 0876 0915 1469 122° to 212° 0471 0454 0574 0637 0927 0964 1487

But variations of 3 or 4 per cent. may easily be found in the rates of different specimens apparently alike ; hence the individual expansion of every important measure needs to be ascertained.

Weighing is complicated by being done in a dense and ‘variable atmosphere, unless—as in the most refined work —the whole balance is placed in a vacuum. When in the air all bodies placed in the balance must, for accurate purposes, have their volume known; and the weight of an equal volume of such air as they are weighed in must be added to their apparent weight to get their true weight. The weight of air displaced by a pound of the following materials is given in grains, at temperature 62° F., —barometer 30 inches,—also with barometer 29 inches (temperature 62°), and with temperature 32° (barometer 30 inches), to illustrate the variation? (allowing for contraction of the material as well):—

Tron, with Lead Adjustment,

Quartz. | Glass. | Water.

2°518 | 1°000

21°157 2°650

Sp. Gr, 8-143 | 8-283 7127

62”, 30) -403 | 1°047 | 1:029 1-196 3°217 | 3°385 | 8523 62°, 29 | 390 | 1012 | -995 1°156 3°110 | 3-272 | 8-240 82°, 30 | -429 | 1-112 | 1-093 1-271 3°422 | 3°600 | 9°05

The above is for London at sea-level ; but where the force of gravity is less 30 inches height of mercury will weigh less, and will therefore balance a less weight of air ; the air allowance must therefore be less for 30 inches of mercury barometer in lower latitudes and greater heights over sea-level. The change, for instance, in the allowance of air equal to the brass pound will make it, instead of

Computed from Fizeau, Ann. Bur. Long., 1878.

- *Computed from Chisholm, Weighing and Measuring, 1877, p. 162; also see p. 158.*

1:047 grains, become 1:046 when 15,000 feet above the sea, or 10° S. of London. Hence this reduction need rarely be noticed. The composition of the air also varies, and most seriously in the amount of aqueous vapour ; the

‘above is ordinary air, but if quite dry the 1:047 grains

would become 1°052 grains; the change in carbonic acid is quite immaterial, unless in very close rooms, so that it may be concluded that the moisture of the air is the main point to be noted, after its temperature and pressure,— small errors in any of these three data making far more difference than any other compensation that can be made in the weight of air.

The more complex allowances for the expansion of water in glass, brass, or other vessels we need not enter on here; the principles are simple, but the data require to be accurately determined for the material in question. The expansion of water is, however, so often in question, especially for taking specific gravities, that it is here given. A constant volume which contains or displaces 10,000 grains of water at 62° will contain ?—

At 32° F. (0° C.), 10,009°84 grains. | At 62° F. (163° C.), 10,000°00 grains. yy 89°°2 F. (4° C.), 10,011-20 —„ 5 68° F. (20° C.), 9,998°76 „ ;, 50° F. (10° C.), 10,008-89 5, », 86°F. (80°C), 9,968°76 ,

Hence if a specific gravity is observed at any of these temperatures it must be x the corresponding weight + 10,000 to reduce it toa comparison with water at 62°; the expansion of the body observed is another question altogether, and must be compensated also.

The weight of a cubic inch, or other linearly measured volume, of water is not yet very accurately known. The observations have been made by weighing closed hollow metal cases in and out of water (thus obtaining the weight of an equal volume of water), and then gauging the size of the case with exactitude. Cubes, cylinders, and spheres have been employed. The results are : +—

*Cubic | Cubic Cubic | Inch at} Foot at | Decimetre 62°F. | 62°: at 4° C, Grains. | Ounces.| Grammes, In France, by Lefevre-Gineau (legal French)! 252°603 | 997°70 | 1000-000 In England, by Shuckburgh and Kater eee ‘ = (egal British) Peiseacn teas sivas seaenactnoacette 252°724 | 998-18 | 1000-480 In Sweden, by Berzelius, Svanberg. a * 4 and Akermann…...s..c00-0 oietesecіy evens / SOD ETS | SID 3) MNUEIS In Austria, by Stampfer. ....svecccctissessesesses 252°515 | 997°35 999°653 Tat Rassia, by Kuptlets…cteesctsesssmscdsenseos 252°600 | 997-69 999-989*

National Standards and Copies.—Having now noticed the principles and constants involved, we will consider the British and metric standards, the only ones now used in scientific work.

The imperial standard yard is a bronze bar 38 inches long, 1 inch square; the defining lines, 36 inches apart, are cut on gold studs, sunk in holes, so that their surface passes

through the axis of the bar. Thus flexure does not tend to tip the engraved surfaces nearer or farther apart. This bar when in use rests on a lever frame, which supports it at 8 points, 4°78 inches apart, on rollers which divide the pressure exactly equally. This standard is in actual use for all important comparisons at the Standards Office. Four copies, which are all equal to it, within 4° of tempera-_ ture, are deposited in other places in case of injury or loss of the standard. The standard pound is a thick disk of platinum about 14 inches across, and 1 inch high, with a shallow groove around it near the top. Tour copies are deposited with the above copies of the yard. For public use there are a series of end-standards exposed on the outer wall of Greenwich observatory ; and a length of 100 feet, and another of 66 feet (1 chain), marked on brass

3 Computed from Report of Standards Department, 1883.

4 Computed from Chisholm, op. cié., p. 112.

5 See Chisholm, op. cit., pp. 188, 189. For less refined purposes measuring bars should be supported on two points, 21 per cent. of the whole length from the ends. This equalizes the strains in the curves, and makes a minimum distortion.

plates let into the granite step along the back of Trafalgar Square. As this is a practically invariable earth-fast standard, and most convenient for reference, it is important to know the minute errors of it, as determined by the Standards Department.) Starting from 0 the errors are in inches—

*at0 «6-10 «20s 80s —CisCisCTD = 8D 90—s— 100 feet, error 0 —-007 —*019 —-022 —015 —-008 —-007 -+-011 4-021 +0-17 —-008 inches.*

The mean uncertainty in these values is 003, and the greatest uncertainty ‘01. The total length of the chain standard is —°019 inch from the truth. ‘There is alsoa public balance provided at Greenwich observatory, which shows the accuracy of any pound weight placed upon it. For important scientific standards comparisons are made gratuitously, as a matter of courtesy, by the officials of the Standards Office, 7 Old Palace Yard, Westminster. The most delicate weighings are all performed in a vacuum case with glass sides, which is so constructed that the weights can be exchanged from one arm to the other without opening the case, so as to obtain double weighings.

The toleration of error in copies for scientific purposes, by the Standards Department, is 0005 inch on the yard or lesser lengths, about equal to 15 divisions of the micrometer ; on the pound ‘0025 grain, about $ a division of the official balances ; on the ounce ‘001 grain; on the gallon 1 grain; and on the cubic foot 4 grains. The toleration for commercial copies is ‘005 on the yard, ‘001 on the foot and under, and ‘1 grain on weights of 1 ounce to 1 pound.2 The Standards Commission of 1851 recom- mended a limit of 1 in 20,000.

For practical work of moderate accuracy the most convenient forms of measures are—for lengths under a foot, feather-edge metal scales divided to 4 inch (finer divisions are only confusing, and zjy9 of an inch can be safely read by estimation); for lengths of 1 to 10 feet, metal tubes or deep bars bearing line-divisions, and with permanent feet attached at 21 per cent. from either end, so that the deformation by flexure is always the same ; for long distances a steel tape with fine divisions scratched across itand numbered by etching. The most accurate way of using such a tape is

not to prepare a flat bed for it, but to support it at points not more than 50 feet apart; then by observing the distances and levels of these points, and knowing the weight of the tape, the correction for the sloping distance between the points and the difference of the catenary. length of the tape from the straight distance can be precisely calculated ; the corrections for stretching of the tape (best done by a lever arm with fixed weight), and for temperature, are all that are needful besides.

*The first French standard metre (of 1799) is a platinum bar end-standard of about 1 inch wide and } inch thick ; the new standard of the International Metric Commission is a line-standard of platino-iridium, 40 inches long and *8 inches square, grooved out on all four sides so that its section is between x and H form; this provides the greatest rigidity, and also a surface in the axis of the bar to bear the lines of the standard. The new standard kilogramme, like the old one, is a cylinder of platinum of equal diameter and height. These new standards are pre- served in the International Metric Bureau at Paris, to which seventeen nations contribute in support and direc- tion, and in which the most refined methods of comparison are adopted. For lineal comparisons the alternate sub- stitution of the measures on a sliding bed beneath fixed micrometer microscopes is provided as in the British office, and a bath for the heating of one measure in a liquid to ascertain its expansion. Jor weighing four balances are*

1 Report of Warden of the Standards, 1875. 2 Report of Warden, 1868, see also 1872.

provided, each with mechanisni for the transposition of the weights, and the lowering of the balance into play on its bearings, so that weighings can be performed at 13 feet distance from the balance, thus avoiding the disturb- ance caised by the warmth of the observer. The readings of the balance scale are made by a fixed telescope, the motion being observed by the reflexion of a fixed scale from a mirror attached to the beam of the balance. In this bureau are also an equally fine hydrostatic balance for taking specific gravities by water weighing, a standard baronieter, and an air thermometer, with all subsidiary apparatus. 'The special work of the

bureau is the con- struction and comparison of metric standards for all the countries supporting it, and for scientific work of all kinds.

The legal theory of the British system of weights and measures is—(A) the standard yard, with all lineal measures and their squares and cubes based upon that; (B) the standard pound of 7000 grains, with all weights based upon that, with the troy pound of 5760 grains for trade purposes; (C) the standard gallon (and multiples and fractions of it), declared to contain 10 tb of water at 62° F., being in volume 277°274 cubic inches, which con- tain each 252-724 grains of water in a vacuum at 62°, or 252°458 grains of water weighed with brass weights in air of 62° with the barometer at 30 inches.

The legal theory of the metric system of weights and measures is—(A) the standard metre, with decimal fractions and multiples thereof; (B) the standard kilogramme, with decimal fractions and multiples thereof; (C) the litre (with decimal fractions and multiples), declared to be a cube of +5 metre, and to contain a kilogramme of water at 4° C. ina vacuum. No standard litre exists, all liquid measures being legally fixed by weight. The metre was supposed, when established in 1799, to be a ten-millionth of the quadrant of the earth through Paris; it differs from this theoretical amount by about 1 in 4000.

The legal equivalents between the British and French systems are—metre = 39°37079 inches; kilogramme = 15432°34874 grains. By the more exact comparisons of Captain Clarke (1866) the metre (at 0° C., 32° F.) is equal to 39:37043196 inches of the yard at 62° F.; but Rogers in 1882 compared the metre as 39°37027. It must always be remembered that a French metre of per- fect legal exactitude will, by expanding from 32° to 62° F., become equal to a greater number of inches when the two measures are placed together ; thus a brass metre is equal to 39°382 inches when compared with British measures at the same temperature, and this is its true commercial equivalent. The kilogramme determination above is that of Professor Miller (1844), against the kilo- gramme des Archives, but in 1884 the international kilo- gramme yielded 15432°35639.

For further details, see H. W. Chisholm, Weighing and Measuring (Nature series), 1877, and Reports of the Warden of the Standards,

subsequently of the Standards Department (all in British Museum Newspaper Room), for all practical details,—especially reports on metre (1868-9), errors of grain weights (1872), principles of measur- ing (long paper of German Standards Commission, translated 1872), Trafalgar Square standards (1876), density of water (1883), tolera- tion of error, British and international (1883), standard wire and plate gauges in inches (1883), besides numerous practical tables, inainly in the earlier numbers before the wardenship was merged in the Board of Trade.

II. Historica.

'Though no line can be drawn between ancient and modern metrology, yet, owing to neglect, and partly to the scarcity of materials, there is a gap of more than a thousand years over which the connexion of units? of

8 In the absence of the actual standards of ancient times the units of measure and of weight have to be inferred from the other remains ;

hence unit in this division is used for any more or less closely defined amount of length or weight in terms of which matter was measured.

measure is mostly guess-work. Hence, except in a few eases, we shall not here consider any units of the Middle Ages. A constant difficulty in studying works on metro- logy is the need of distinguishing the absolute facts of the ease from the web of theory into which each writer has woven them,—often the names used, and sometinies the very existence of the units in question, being entirely an assumption of the writer. Therefore we sliall here take the more pains to show what the actual authority is for each conciusion. Again, each writer has his own leaning : Béckh, to the study of water-volumes and weights, even deriving linear measures therefrom ; Queipo, to the con- nexion with Arabic and Spanish measures ; Brandis, to the basis of Assyrian standards ; Mommsen, to coin weights ; and Bortolotti to Egyptian units; but Hultsch is more general, and appears to give a more equal representation of all sides than do other authors. In this article the tendency will be to trust far more to actual measures and weights than to the statements of ancient writers; and this

position seems to be justified by the great increase in materials, and the more accurate means of study of late. The usual arrangement by countries has been mainly abandoned in favour of following out each unit as a whole, without recurring to it separately for every locality.

The materials for study are of three kinds. (1) Literary, both in direct statements in works on measures (e.g., Elias of Nisibis), medicine (Galen), and cosmetics (Cleopatra), in ready-reckoners (Didymus), clerk's (katib's) guides, and like handbooks, and in indirect explanations of the equiva- lents of measures mentioned by authors (¢.g., Josephus). But all such sources are liable to the most confounding errors, and some passages relied on have in any case to submit to conjectural emendation. These authors are of great value for connecting the monumental information, but must yield more and more to the increasing evidence of actual weights and measures. Besides this, all their evidence is but approximate, often only stating quantities to a half or quarter of the aniount, and seldom nearer than 5 or 10 per cent.; hence they are entirely worthless for all the closer questions of the approximation or original identity of standards in different countries ; and it is just in this line that the imagination of writers has led them into the greatest speculations, unchecked by accurate evi- dence of the original standards. (2) Weights and measures actually remaining. These are the prime sources, and, as they increase and are more fully studied, so the subject will be cleared and obtain a fixed basis. A difficulty has been in the paucity of examples, more due to the neglect of collectors than the rarity of specimens. The number of published weights did not exceed 600 of all standards a short time ago; but the collections in the last three years from Naucratis (28),1 Defenneh (29), and Memphis (44) have supplied over six times this quantity, and of an earlier age than most other examples, while existing collections have been more thoroughly examined; hence there is need for a general revision of the whole subject. It is above all desirable to make allowances for the changes which weights have undergone ; and, as this has only been done for the above Egyptian collections and that of the British Museum, conclusions as to the accurate values of different standards will here be drawn from these rather than Continental sources. (3) Objects which have been made by measure or weight, and from which the unit of construction can be deduced. Buildings will generally yield up

their builder's foot or cubit when examined (Inductive Metrology, p. 9). Vases may also be found bearing such relations to one another as to show their unit of volume. And coins have long been recognized as one

- *These figures refer to the list of PUlo nee brois SURES ond Olathe present section, p. 489,*

of the great sources of metrology,—valuable for their wide and detailed range of information, though most unsatis- factory on account of the constant temptation to diminish their weight, a weakness which seldom allows us to reckon them as of the full standard. Another defect in the evi- dence of coins is that, when one variety of the unit of weight was once fixed on for the coinage, there was (bar- ring the depreciation) no departure from it, because of the need of a fixed value, and hence coins do not show the range and character of the real variations of units as do buildings, or vases, or the actual commercial weights.

PRINCIPLES OF Stupy.—(1) Limits of Variation in Different Copies, Places, and Times.—Unfortunately, so very little is known of the ages of weights and measures that this datum—most essential in considering their his- tory—has been scarcely considered. In measure, Egyptians of Dynasty IV. at Gizeh on an average varied 1 in 350 between different buildings (27). Buildings at Persepolis, all of nearly the same age, vary in unit 1 in 450 (25). In- cluding a greater range of time and place, the Roman foot in Italy varied during two or three centuries on an average zoo from the mean. Covering a longer time, we find an average variation of =4,5 in the Attic foot (25), ;4, in the English foot (25), y+ 9 in the English itinerary foot (25). So we may say that an average variation of 71, by tolera- tion, extending to double that by change of place and time, is usual in ancient measures. In weights of the same place and age there is a far wider range; at Defenneh (29), within a century probably, the average variation of different units is 51, g/g, and g,, the range being just the same as in all times and places taken together. Even in a set of weights all found together, the average variation is only reduced to 35, in place of yy (29). Taking a wider range of place and time, the Roman libra has an average variation of J; in the examples or better period (43), and in those

of Byzantine age =; (44). Altogether, we see that weights have descended from original varieties with so little intercomparison that no rectification of their values has been made, and hence there is as much variety in any one place and time as in all together. Average variation may be said to range from gy to +; in different units, doubtless greatly due to defective balances.

2. Rate of Variation.—Though large differences may exist, the rate of general variation is but slow,—excluding, of course, all monetary standards. In Egypt the cubit lengthened ;75 in some thousands of years (25, 44). The Italian mile has lengthened 3, since Roman times (2) ; the English mile lengthened about 5}, in four centuries (31). The English foot has not appreciably varied in several centuries (25). Of weights there are scarce any dated, excepting coins, which nearly all decrease; the Attic tetradrachm, however, increased |, in three centuries (28), owing probably to its being below the average trade weight to begin with. Roughly dividing the Roman weights, there appears a decrease of 4, from imperial to Byzantine times (43).

3. Tendency of Variation.—This is, in the above cases of lengths, to an increase in course of time. The Roman foot is also probably 53, larger than the earlier form of it, and the later form in Britain and Africa perhaps another gdp larger (25). Probably measures tend to increase and weights to decrease in transmission from time to time or place to place ; but far more data are needed to study this.

4. Details of Variation.—Having noticed variation in the gross, we must next observe its details. The only way of examining these is by drawing curves (28, 29), repre- senting the frequency of occurrence of all the variations of a unit ; for instance, in the Egyptian unit—the kat—counting in a large number how many occur between 140

and 141 grains, 141 and 142, and so on; such numbers represented by curves show at once where any particular varieties of the unit lie (see

Nawkratis, i. p. 83). This method is only applicable where there is a large number of examples; but there is no other way of studying the details. The results from such a study—of the Egyptian kat, for example—show that there are several distinct families or types of a unit, which originated in early times, have been perpetuated by copying, and reappear alike in each locality (see Z'anis, ii. pl. 1.). Hence we see that if one unit is derived from another it may be possible, by the similarity or difference of the forms of the curves, to dis- cern whether it was derived by general consent and recog- nition from a standard in the same condition of distribu- tion as that in which we know it, or whether it was derived from it in earlier times before it became so varied, or by some one action forming it from an individual example of the other standard without any variation being trans- mitted. As our knowledge of the age and locality of weights increases these criteria in curves will prove of greater value; but even now no consideration of the con- nexion of different units should be made without a graphic representation to compare their relative extent and nature of variation.

5. Transfer of Units.—The transfer of units from one people to another takes place almost always by trade. Hence the value of such evidence in pointing out the ancient course of trade, and commercial connexions (17). The great spread of the Phoenician weight on the Mediter- ranean, of the Persian in Asia Minor, and of the Assyrian in Egypt are evident cases ; and that the decimal weights of the laws of Manu (43) are decidedly not Assyrian or Persian, but on exactly the Phcenician standard, is a curious evidence of trade by water and not overland. If, as seems probable, units of length may be traced in pre- historic remains, they are of great value ; at Stonehenge, for instance, the earlier parts are laid out by the Pheenician foot, and the later by the Pelasgo-Roman foot (26). The earlier foot is continually to be traced in other megalithic remains, whereas the later very seldom occurs (25). This bears strongly on the Pheenician origin of our prehistoric civilization. Again, the Belgic foot of the Tungri is the basis of the present English land measures, which we thus see are neither Roman nor British in origin, but Belgic. Generally a unit is transferred from a higher to a less civilized people; but the near resemblance of measures in different countries should always be corroborated by historical considerations of a probable connexion by

com- merce or origin (Head, Historia Numorum, xxxvii.). It should be borne in mind that in early times the larger values, such as min, would be transmitted by commerce, while after the introduction of coinage the lesser values of shekels and drachmz would be the units ; and this needs notice, because usually a borrowed unit was multiplied or divided according to the ideas of the borrowers, and strange modifications thus arose.

6. Connexions of Lengths, Volumes, and Weights.—This is the most difficult branch of metrology, owing to the variety of connexions which can be suggested, to the vague information we have, especially on volumes, and to the liability of writers to rationalize connexions which were never intended. To illustrate how easy it is to go astray in this line, observe the continual reference in modern handbooks to the cubic foot as 1000 ounces of water ; also the cubic inch is very nearly 250 grains, while the gallon has actually been fixed at 10 tb of water; the first two are certainly mere coincidences, as may very prob- ably be the last also, and yet they offer quite as tempting a base for theorizing as any connexions in ancient metro- logy. No such theories can be counted as more than

coincidences which have been adopted, unless we find a very exact connexion, or some positive statement of origination. The idea of connecting volume and weight has received an immense impetus through the metric system, but it is not very prominent in ancient times. The Egyptians report the weight of a measure of various articles, amongst others water (6), but lay no special stress on it; and the fact that there is no measure of water equal to a direct decimal multiple of the weight-unit, except very high in the scale, does not seem as if the volume was directly based upon weight. Again, there are many theories of the equivalence of different cubic cubits of water with various multiples of talents (2, 3, 18, 24, 33); but connexion by lesser units would be far more probable, as the primary use of weights is not to weigh large cubical vessels of liquid, but rather small portions of precious metals. The Roman amphora being equal to the cubic foot, and containing 80 libre of water, is one of the

strongest cases of such relations, being often mentioned by ancient writers. Yetit appears to be only an approximate relation, and therefore probably accidental, as the volume by the examples is too large to agree to the cube of the length or to the weight, differing ;4,, or sometimes even zz. All that can be said therefore to the many theories connecting weight and measure is that they are possible, but our knowledge at present does not admit of proving or disproving their exactitude, Certainly vastly more evidence is needed before we would, with Bockh (2), derive fundamental measures through the intermediary of the cube roots of volumes. Soutzo wisely remarks on the intrinsic improbability of refined relations of this kind (Etalons Ponderaua Primitifs, note, p. 4).

Another idea which has haunted the older metrologists, but is still less likely, is the connexion of various measures with degrees on the earth's surface. The lameness of the Greeks in angular measurement would alone show that they could not derive itinerary measures from long and accurately determined distances on the earth.

7. Connexions with Coimage-———From the 7th century B.c. onward, the relations of units of weight have been complicated by the need of the interrelations of gold, silver, and copper coinage; and various standards have been derived theoretically from others through the weight of one metal equal in value toa unit of another. That this mode of originating standards was greatly promoted, if not started, by the use of coinage we may see by the rarity of the Persian silver weight (derived from the Assyrian standard), soon after the introduction of coinage, as shown in the weights of Defenneh (29). The relative value of gold and silver (17, 21) in Asia is agreed gene- rally to have been 134 to 1 in the early ages of coinage ; at Athens in 434 B.c. it was 14: 15; in Macedon, 350 B.c., 124:1; in Sicily, 400 Bic. 15:1, and 300 Bc. 12:1; in Italy, in lst century, it was 12: 1, in the later empire 13°9: 1, under Justinian 14°4:1, and in modern times 15°5: 1, but at present 23 : 1,—the fluctuations depend- ing mainly on the opening of large mines. Silver stood to copper in Egypt as 80:1 (Brugsch), or 120: 1 (Revil- lout); in early Italy and Sicily as 250: 1 (Mommsen), or 120 : 1 (Soutzo), under the empire 120 : 1, under Justinian 100: 1; at present itis 150:1. The distinc- tion of the use of standards for trade in general, or for silver or gold in particular, should

be noted. The early observance of the relative values may be inferred from Num. vii. 13, 14, where silver offerings are 13 and 7 times the weight of the gold, or of equal value and one- half value.

8. Legal Regulation of Measwres.—Most states have preserved official standards, usually in temples under priestly custody. The Hebrew "shekel of the sanctuary "

WHIGHTS AND

is familiar ; the standard volume of the apet was secured in the dromus of Anubis at Memphis (35); in Athens, besides the standard weight, twelve copies for public com- parison were kept in the city; also standard volume measures in several places (2) ; at Pompeii the block with standard volumes cut in it was found in the portico of the forum (33); other such standards are known in Greek cities (Gythium, Panidum, and Trajanopolis) (11, 33) ; at Rome the standards were kept in the Capitol, and weights also in the temple of Hercules (2) ; the standard cubit of the Nilometer was before Constantine in the Serapzum, but was removed by him to the church (2). In England the Saxon standards were kept at Winchester before 950 A.D., and copies were legally compared and stamped ; the Normans removed them to Westminster to the custody of the king's chamberlains at the exchequer ; and they were preserved in the crypt of Edward the Confessor, while re- maining royal property (9). The oldest English standards remaining are those of Henry VII. Many weights have been found in the temenos of Demeter at Cnidus, the temple of Artemis at Ephesus, and in a temple of Aphro- dite at Byblus (44); and the making or sale of weights may have been a business of the custodians of the temple standards.

9. Names of Units.—It is needful to observe that most names of measures are generic and not specific, and cover a great variety of units. Thus foot, digit, palm, cubit, stadium, mile, talent, mina, stater, drachm, obol, pound, ounce, grain, metretes, medimnus, modius, hin, and many others mean nothing exact unless qualified by the name of their country or city. Also, it should be noted that some ethnic qualifications have been applied to different systems, and such names as Babylonian and Euboic are ambiguous ; the normal value of a standard will therefore be used here

rather than its name, in order to avoid con- fusion, unless specific names exist, such as kat and uten.

All quantities stated in this article without distinguish- ing names are in British units of inch, cubic inch, or grain.

STANDARDS or LEeNcTN.—Most ancient measures have been derived from one of two great systems, that of the cubit of 20°63 inches, or the digit of '729 inch; and both these systems are found in the earliest remains.

20:63 ins.—First known in Dynasty IV. in Egypt, most accurately 20°620 in the Great Pyramid, varying 20°51 to 20°71 in Dyn. IV. to VI. (27). Divided decimally in 100ths ; but usually marked in Egypt into 7 palms or 28 digits, approximately ; a mere juxtaposition (for convenience) of two incommensurate systems (25, 27). The average of several cubit rods remaining is 20°65, age in general about 1000 B.c. (33). At Phile, &c., in Roman times 20°76 on the Nilometers (44). This unit is also re- corded by cubit lengths scratched on a tomb at Beni Hasan (44), and by dimensions of the tomb of Ramessu IV. and of Edfu temple(5)inpapyri. From this cubit, mahi, was formed the xylon of 3 cubits, the usual length of a walking-staff; fathom, nent, of 4 cubits, and the khet of 40 cubits (18); also the schanus of 12,000 cubits, actually found marked on the Memphis-Faium road (44).

Babylonia had this unit nearly as early as Egypt. The divided plotting scales lying on the drawing boards of the statues of Gudea (Nature, xxviii. 341) are of 4 20°89, ora span of 10°44, which is divided in 16 digits of '658, a fraction of the cubit also found in Egypt. Buildings in Assyria and Babylonia show 20°5 to 20°6. The Babylonian system was sexagcsimal, thus (18)—

uban, 5=qat, G=ammat, 6=qanu, 60=sos, 30=parasang, 2=kaspu.

'69inch = 3-44 20°6 124 7430 223,000 446,000

Asia Minor had this unit in early times,—in the temples of Ephesus 20°55, Samos 20°62 ; Hultsch also claims Priene 20°90, and the stadia of

Aphrodisias 20°67, and Laodicea 20:94. Ten build- Ings in all give 20°63 mean (18, 25); but in Armenia it rose to 20°76 in late Roman times, like the late rise in Egypt (25). It was speci- oe into ith, the foot of #ths being as important as the

*4m+,. This was especially the Greck derivative of the 20°63 ne * eubit. It ae in Babylonia as the foot of that*

*; * system (24), in accordance with the sexary system applied to the early decimal division of the cubit. In Greece it is the most usual unit, occurring in the Propylea at Athens 12°44,*

temple at Agina 12°40, Miletus 12°51, the Olympic course 12°62, &c. (18); thirteen buildings giving an average of 12°45, mean variation '06 (25), =%of 20°75, m. var. '10. The digit=4 paleste, =+ foot of 12°4; then the system is We—Cubit, "—Orewia……..coressose Lgaeeeeeeeee taniatees es = al, ee ae =acena, 10=plethron, . = } stadion. 12-4 inch 18°7 74:7 124°5 1245 7470

In Etruria it probably appears in tombs as 12°45 (25) ; perhaps in Roman Britain ; and in medieval England as 12°47 (25).

138 ins This foot is scarcely known monumentally. On three

2 of 20-7. Egyptian cubits there is a prominent mark at the 19th

*i" * digit or 14 inches, which shows the existence of such a measure (33). It became prominent when adopted by Phileterus about 280 B.c. as the standard of Pergamum (42), and probably it had been shortly before adopted by the Ptolemies for Egypt. From that time it isone of the principal units in the literature (Didymus, &c.), and is said to occur in the temple of Augustus at Pcrgamum as 13°8 (18). Fixed by the Romans at 16 digits (134= Roman foot), or its cubit at 1£ Roman feet, it was legally =18°94 at 128 B.c. (42); and 74 Philetercan stadia were=Roman mile (18). The multiples of the 20°63 cubit are in late times generally reckoned in these feet of % cubit. The name "Babylonian foot" used by Bockh (2) is*

only a theory of his, from which to derive volumes and weights; and no evidence for this name, or connexion with Babylon, is to be found. Much has been written (2, 3, 33) on sup- posed cubits of about 17-18 inches derived from 20°63,—mainly, in endeavouring to get a basis for the Greek and Roman feet, but these are really connected with the digit system ; and the monu- mental or literary evidence for such a division of 20°63 will not

*17°30 bear examination. There is, however, fair evidence for 5 of 20°76 units of 17°30 and 1:730 or 5 of 20°76 in Persian build- e * ings (25); and the same is found in Asia Minor as 17°25 or § of 20°70. On the Egyptian cubits a small cubit is marked as about 17 inches, which may well be this unit, as § of 20°6 is 172; and, as these marks are placed before the 28rd digit or 17:0, they cannot refer to 6 palms, or 17°7, which is the 24th digit, though they are usually attributed to that (33).*

*We now turn to the sccond great family based on the digit. This has been so usually confounded with the 20°63 family, owing to the juxtaposition of 28 digits with that cubit in Egypt, that it should be observed how the difficulty of their incommensurability has been felt. For instance, Lepsius (3) supposed two primitive eubits of 13°2 and 20°68, to account for 28 digits being only 20°4 when free from the cubit of 20°63, —the first 24 digits being in some cases made shorter on the cubits to agrec with the true digitstandard, while the remaining 4 are lengthened to fill up to 20°6. In the 70‘7 ins Dynasties IV. and V. in Egypt the digit is found in tomb * sculptures as °727 (27); while from a dozen examples in the later remains we find the mean ‘728 (25). A length of 10 digits is marked on all the inscribed Egyptian cubits as the ‘‘lesser span” (33). In Assyria the same digit appears as 730, particularly at Nimrud (25); and in Persia buildings show the 10-digit length of 7°34 (25). In Syria it was about *728, but variable ; in eastern Asia Minor more like the Persian, being *732 (25). In these cases the digit itself, or decimal multiples, seem to have been used.*

18:23 The pre-Greek examples of this cubit in Egypt, men-

25 x “729 tioned by Bockh (2), give 18°23 as a mean, which is ‘25 digits of ‘729, and has no relation to the 20°63 cubit. This cubit, or one nearly equal, was used in Judea in the times of the kings, as the Siloam

inscription names a distance of 1758 feet as roundly 1200 cubits, showing a cubit of about 17°6 inches. This is also evidently the Olympic cubit ; and, in pursuance of the decimal multiple of the digit found in Egypt and Persia, the cubit of 25 digits was $ of the orguia of 100 digits, the serics being old digit, = borguia, 10=amma, 10=stadion. 729 inch 182 72°9 729 7296 Then, taking 3 of the cubit, or } of the orguia, as a foot, the Greeks arrived at their foot of 12°14; this, though very well known in literature, is but rarely found, and then generally in the form of the cubit, in monumental measures. The Parthenon step, cele- brated as 100 feet wide, and apparently 225 feet long, gives by Stuart 12°137, by Penrose 12°165, by Paccard 12°148, differences due to scale and not to slips in measuring. Probably 12°16 is the nearest value. There are but few buildings wrought on this foot in Asia Minor, Greece, or Roman remains. The Greek system, however, adopted this foot as a basis for decimal multiplication, forming

foot, 10=aceena, 12°16 inches 121°6

which stand as 4th of the other decimal series based on the digit. This is the agrarian system, in contrast to the orguia system, which was the itinerary series (33). ; f

*Then a further modification took place, to avoid the inconven- ience of dividing the foot in 163 digits, and a new digit was formed —longer than any value of the old digit—of 7's of the foot, or *760, so that the series ran*

10=plethron,

1216

484

*digit, 06. : a i orguia, 10=stadion. '76 inch HS Ge 7296 This formation of the Greek system (25) is only an inference from the facts yet known, for we have not sufficient information to prove it, though it seems much the simplest and most likely history. li: Seeing the good reasons for this digit having been ex- 16 × 726 ported to the West from Egypt—from the presence of the * 18-23 cubit in Egypt, and from the '729 digit being the*

decimal base of the Greek long measures—it is not surprising to find it in use in Italy asa digit, and multiplied by 16 asa foot. The more so, as the half of this foot, or 8 digits, is marked off as a measure on the Egyptian cubit rods (33). 'Though Queipo has opposed this con- nexion (not noticing the Greek link of the digit), he agrees that it is supported by the Egyptian square measure of the plethron, being equal to the Roman actus (33). The foot of 11°6 appears probably first in the prehistoric and early Greek remains, and is certainly found in Etrurian tomb dimensions as 11°59 (25). Dérpfeld con- siders this as the Attic foot, and states the foot of the Greek metrological relief at Oxford as 11°65 (or 11°61, Hultsch). Hence we see that it probably passed from the East through Greece to Etruria, and thence became the standard foot of Romc; there, though divided by the Italian duodecimal system into 12 uncie, it always maintained its original 16 digits, which are found marked on some of the foot-measures. The well-known ratio of 25: 24 between the 12°16 foot and this we see to have arisen through one being 3 of 100 and the other 16 digits,—162: 16 being as 25: 24, the legal ratio. The mean of a dozen foot-measures (1) gives 11°616+ 008, and of long lengths and buildings 11°6074 '01. In Britain and Africa, however, the Romans used a rather longer form (25) of about 11°68, or a digit of 730. Their series of measures was

10=amma,

729

digitus, 4=palmus, 4=pes, 5=passus, 125=stadium, S=milliare; 726 inch 2°90 11°62 58°71 7262 58,100 also

uncia '968=,% pes, palmipes 14°52=65 palmi, cubitus 17-48=6 palmi.

Either from its Pelasgic or Etrurian use or from Romans, this foot appears to have come into prehistoric remains, as the circle of Stonehenge (26) is 100 feet of 11°68 across, and the same is found in one or two other cases. 11°60 also appears as the foot of some medieval English buildings (25).

We now pass to units between which we cannot state any con- nexion.

25 ~~1.—The earliest sign of this cubit is in a chamber at Abydos (44) about 1400 B.c.; there, below the sculptures, the plain wall is marked out by red designing lines in spaces of 25°13~~+ '03 inches, which have no relation to the size of the chamber or to the sculpture. They must therefore have been marked by a workman using a cubit of 25°13. Apart from medieval and other very uncertain data, such as the Sabbath day's journey being 2000 middling paces for 2000 cubits, it appears that Josephus, using the Greek or Roman cubit, gives half as many more to each dimension of the temple than does the Talmud ; this shows the cubit used in the Talmud for temple measures to be certainly not under 25 inches. Evidence of the early period is given, moreover, by the statement in 1 Kings (vil, 26) that the brazen sea held 2000 baths; the bath being about 2300 cubic inches, this would show a cubit of 25 inches. The corrupt text in Chronicles of 3000 baths would need a still longer cnbit; and, if a lesser cubit of 21°6 or 18 inches be taken, the result for the size of the bath would be impossibly small. For other Jewish cubits see 18°2 and 21°6. Oppert (24) concludes from inscriptions that there wasin Assyria a royal cubit of Z the U cubit, or 25°20 ; and four monuments show (25) a cubit averaging 25°28. For Persia Queipo (33) relies on, and develops, an Arab statement that the Arab hashama cubit was the royal Persian, thus fixing it at about 25 inches; and the Persian guerze at present is 25, the royal guerze being 14 times this, or 374 inches. Asa unitof 1°013, decimally multiplied, is most commonly to be deduced from the ancient Persian buildings, we may take 25°34 as the nearest ap- proach to the ancient Persian unit.

21:6.—The circuit of the city wall of Khorsabad (24) is minutely stated on a tablet as 24,740 feet (U), and from the actual size the U is therefore 10°806 inches. Hence the recorded series of measures on the Senkereh tablet are valued (Oppert) as—

7 Desl0f, aS eal 2=sa, 5=(n), 30=kasbu.

susi, n) 18 inch 3°6 648 1296 648 7,776 293,280 Other units are the suklum or 4U=5-4, and cubit of 2U=21°6, which are not named in this tablet. In Persia (24) the series on

the same base was—

12=us,

vitasti, 2=arasni 3860=asparasa, 30=parathafiha, 2=giv; 10-7 inches 21°4 7704 231,120 462,240 probably yava, 6=angusta, 10=vitasti; and gama=#? arasni; also bizu=2 arasni. 18 inch 07 107 12°38 21-4 42:8 214

The values here given are from some Persian buildings (25), which indicate 21°4, or slightly less; Oppert's value, on lcss certain data, is 21°52. The Egyptian cubits have an arm at 15 digits or about 10°9 marked on them, which seems like this same unit (33).

WEIGHTS AwyD

MEASURES

This cubit was also much used by the Jews (33), and is so often referred to that it has eclipsed the 25°1 cubit in most writers. The Gemara names 8 Jewish cubits (2) of 5, 6, and 7 palms; and, as Oppert (24) shows that 25°2 was reckoned 7 palins, 21°6 being 6 palms, we may reasonably apply this scale to the Gemara list, and read it as 18, 21°6, and 25°2 inches. There is also a great amount of medieval and other data showing this cubit of 21°6 to have been familiar to the Jews after their captivity ; but there is no evidence for its carlier date, as there is for the 25-inch cubit (from the brazen sea) and for the 18-inch cubit from the Siloam inscription,

From Assyria also it passed into Asia Minor, being found on the city standard of Ushak in Phrygia (33), engraved as 21°8, divided into the Assyrian foot of 10°8, and half and quarter, 5°4 and 2°7. Apparently the same unit is found (18) at Heraclea in Lucania, 21°86; and, as the general foot of the South Italians, or Oscan foot (18), best defined by the 100 feet square being 53, of the jugerum, and therefore=10°80 or half of 21°60. A cubit of 21°5 seems certainly to be indicated in prehistoric remains in Britain, and also in early Christian buildings in Ireland (25).

22:-2.—Another unit not far different, but yet distinct, is found apparently in Punic remains at Carthage (25), about 11°16 (22°32), and probably also in Sardinia as 11°07 (22°14), where it would naturally be of

Punic origin. In the Hauran 22°16 is shown by a basalt door (British Museum), and perhaps elsewhere in Syria (25). It is of some value to trace this measure, since it is indicated by some prehistoric English remains as 22°4.

20-0.—This unit may be that of the pre-Semitic Mesopotamians, as it is found at the early temple of Mukayyir (Ur); and, with a few other cases (25), it averages 19°97. It is described by Oppert (24), from literary sources, as the great U of 222 susi or 39°96, double of 19°98; from which was formed a reed of 4 great U or 159°8. The samme measure decimally divided is also indicated by buildings in Asia Minor and Syria (25).

19°2.—In Persia some buildings at Persepolis and other places (25) are constructed on a foot of 9°6, or cubit of 19°2; while the modern Persian arish is 38°27 or 2×19°13. The same is found very clearly in Asia Minor (25), averaging 19°3; and it is known in literature as the Pythic foot (18, 33) of 9°75, or 4 of 19°5, if Censorinus is rightly understood. It may be shown by a mark (33) on the 26th digit of Sharpe's Egyptian cubit= 19-2 inches.

13-3.—This measure does not seem to belong to very early times, and it may probably have originated in Asia Minor. It is found there as 13°35 in buildings. Hultsch gives it rather less, at 13°1, as the "small Asiatic foot." Thence it passed to Greece, where it is found (25) as 13°36. In Romano-African remains it is often found, rather higher, or 18°45 average (25). It lasted in Asia apparently till the building of the palace at Mashita (620 a.p.), where it is 13°22, according to the rough measures we have (25). And it may well be the origin of the diré Stambuli of 26°6, twice 13°3. Found in Asia Minor and northern Greece, it does not appear unreasonable to connect it, as Hultsch does, with the Belgic foot of the Tungri, which was legalized (or perhaps introduced) by Drusus when governor, as 4 longer than the Roman foot, or 13°07; this statement was evidently an approximation by an increase of 2 digits, so that the small difference from 13°3 is not worth notice. Further the pertica was 12 feet of 18 digits, z.e., Drusian feet.

Turning now to England, we find (25) the commonest building foot up to the 15th century averaged 13°22. Here we see the Belgic foot passed over

to England, and we can fill the gap toa considerable extent from the itinerary measures. It has been shown (31) that the old English mile, at least as far back as the 18th century, was of 10 and not 8 furlongs. It was therefore equal to 79,200 inches, and divided decimally into 10 furlongs, 100 chains, or 1000 fathoms. For the existence of this fathom (half the Belgic pertica) we have the proof of its half, or yard, needing to be suppressed by statute (9) in 1489, as "the yard and full hand," or about 40 inches,—cvidently the yard of the most usual old English foot of 18°22, which would be 39°66. We can restore then the old English system of long measure from the buildings, the statutc-prohibition, the surviving chain and furlong, and the old English mile shown by maps and itineraries, thus :—

foot, 3=yard, 2=fathom, 10=chain, 10=furlong, 10=mile.

13°22 39°66 79°32 793 7932 79,320 Such a regular and extensive system could not have been put into use throughout the whole country suddenly in 1250, especially as it must have had to resist the legal foot now in use, which was enforced (9) as early as 950. We cannot suppose that such a system would be invented and become general in face of the laws enforcing the 12-inch foot. Therefore it must be dated some time before the 10th century, and this brings it as near as we can now hope to the Belgic foot, which lasted certainly to the 3d or 4th century, and is exactly in the line of migration of the Belgic tribes into Britain. It is remarkable how near this early decimal system of Germany and Britain is the double of the modern decimal metric system. Had it not been unhappily driven out by the 12-inch foot, and repressed by statutes both against its yard and mile, we should need but a small change to place our measures in accord with the metre.

WEIGHTS AND

The Gallic leuga, or league, is a different unit, being 1°59 British miles by the very concordant itinerary of the Bordeaux pilgrim. This appears to be the great Celtic measure, as opposed to the old English, or Germanic, mile. In the north-west of England and in Wales this mile lasted as 1°56 British miles till 1500; and the perch of those parts was correspondingly longer till this eentury (31). The "old London mile" was 5000 feet, and

probably this was the mile which was modified to 5280 feet, or 8 furlongs, and so became the British statute mile.

STANDARDS OF AREA.—We cannot here describe these in detail. Usually they were formed in each country on the squares of the long measures. The Greek system was—

foot, aad

0 = eaniconoonereeo acena, 25=aroura, 4=plethron. 1:027 sq. ft. 36°96 102°68 2567 10,268 The Roman system was— pes, 100=decempeda, 36=clima, 4=actus, 2=jugerum, 94 sq. ft. 94 8384 13,536 27,072 jugerum, 2=heredium, 100=centuria, 4=saltus. 6205 acre 1241 1241 496-4

STANDARDS OF VOLUME.—There is great uncertainty as to the exact values of all ancient standards of volume,—the only precise data being those resulting from the theories of volumes derived from the cubes of feet and cubits. Such theories, as we have noticed, are extremely likely to be only approximations in ancient times, even if recognized then; and our data are quite inadequate for clearing the subject. If certain equivalences between volumes in different countries are stated here, it must be plainly understood that they are only known to be approximate results, and not to give a certain basis for any theories of derivation. All the actual monumental data that we have are alluded to here, with their amounts. The impossibility of safe correlation of units necessitates a division by countries.

Egypt.—The hon was the usual small standard; by 8 vases whieh have contents stated in hons (8, 12, 20, 22, 33, 40) the mean is 29°2 cubic inches ‘6; by 9 unmarked pottery measures (30) 29°14°16, and divided by 20; by 18 vases, supposed multiples of hon (1), 82°14°2. These last are probably only rough, and we may take 29:2 cubic inches +°5. This was reckoned (6) to hold 5 utens of watcr (uten.. 1470 grains), which agrees well to the weight ; but this was probably an approximation, and not derivative, as there is (14) a weight called shet of 4°70 or 4°95 uten, and this was perhaps the actual weight ofa hon. The variations of hon and uten, however, covcr one another completely. From ratios stated before Greek times (35) the series of multiples was*

To, S=hon, 4=honnu, 10Sapet /.....0. 10=(Theban), 10=sa. or besha \4=tama 8°65 cub, in. 29°2 1168 1168 4672 11,680 116,800

(Theban) is the "great Theban measure."

In Ptolemaic times the artaba (2336), modified from the Persian, was general in Egypt, a working equivalent to the Attic metretes, — value 2 apet or 4 tama ; medimnus=tama or 2 artabas, and fractions down to zi, artaba (35). In Roman times the artaba remained (Didymus), but 4 was the usual unit (name unknown), and this was divided down to +4 or tq artaba (35),—thus producing, by 7y artaba a working equivalent to the xestes and sextarius (35). Also a new Roman artaba (Didymus) of 1540° was brought in. Beside the equivalence of the hon to 5 utens weight of water, the mathematical papyrus (35) gives 5 besha= % cubic cubit (Revillout's interpretation of this as 1 cubit? is impossible geometrically, see Rev. Eg., 1881, for data); this is very concordant, but it is very unlikely for 3 to be introduced in an Egyptian derivation, and probably therefore only a working equivalent. The other ratio of Revillout and Hultsch, 320 hons=cubit? is certainly approximate.

Syria, Palestine, and Babylonia.—Here there are no monumental data known ; and the literary information does not distinguish the closely connected, perhaps identical, units of these lands. More- over, nonce of the writers are before the Roman period, and many relied on are medixval rabbis. A large number of their statements are rough (2, 18, 33), being based on the working equivalence of the bath or epha with the Attic metretes, from which are some- times drawn fractional statements which seem more accurate than they are. This, however, shows the bath to be about 2500 cubic inches. There are two better data (2) of Epiphanius and Theo- doret,—Attic medimnus= 14 baths, and saton (4 bath)=12 modii; these give about 2240 and 2260 cubic inches. The best datum is in Josephus (Ant., iii. 15, 3), where 10 baths=41 Attic or 31 Sicilian medimni, for which it is agrecd we must read modii (33); hence the bath =2300 cubic inches. Thus these three different reckonings agree elosely, but all equally depend on the Greek and Roman standards, which are not well fixed. The Sicilian modius here is #4, or slightly under 3, of the bath, and so probably a Punic variant of the 4 bath or saton of Pheenicia. One

close datum, if trust- worthy, would be log of water= Assyrian mina .. bath about 2200 cubic inches. The rabbinical statement of cubic cubit of 21°5 holding 320 logs puts the bath at about 2250 cubic inches; their log-measure, holding six hen's eggs, shows it to be over rather than under this amount ; but their reckoning of bath =4 cubit cubed is*

but approximate; by 21°5 it is 1240, by 25:1 it is 1990 cubic

inches. The earliest Hebrew system was— ez, 4S)ab)i. wees… 8=hin, 6) _ fbath, or 1o= { homer—wet. SISSAROM...3.:.<<00. 10f— epha 4 ~ Lor kor—dry. 82 cub. in. 128 230 283 2300 23,000

'Issarén (" tenth-deal") is also called gomer. The log and kab are not found till the later writings ; but the ratio of hin to 'issarén is practically fixed in early times by the proportions in Num. xv. 4-9, Epiphanius stating great hin=18 xestes, and holy hin=9, must refer to Syrian xestes, equal to 24 and 12 Roman; this makes holy hin as above, and great hin a double hin, 7.¢., seah or saton. His other statements of saton=56 or 50 sextaria remain unex- plained, unless this be an crror for bath=56 or 50 Syr. sext. and .. =2290 or 2560 cubic inches. The wholesale theory of Revillout (35) that all Hebrew and Syrian measures were doubled by the Ptolemaic revision, while retaining the same names, rests entirely on the resemblance of the names apet and epha, and of log to the Coptic and late measure lok. But there are other reasons against accepting this, besides the improbability of such a change. The Pheenician and old Carthaginian system was (18)— log, 4=kab, 6=saton, 30=corus, 31 cub. in. 123 740 22,200 valuing them by 31 Sicilian=41 Attic modii (Josephus, above). The old Syrian system was (18)—*

cotyle, 2=Syr.xestes, 18=sabitha or saton, 1i=collathon, 2=bath-artaba ;

1 2220

21 cub. in. 41 740 1110 also Syr. xestes, 45—=maris, 2-=metretes or artaba.

41 1850 8700

The later or Selencidan system was (18)— cotyle, 2=Syr. xestes, 90=Syr. metretes,~

22 44 4000

the Syrian being 14 Roman sextarii. The Babylonian system was very similar (18) —

ap pany: 15=maris \G), 3 4=capitha, { WS vos. ccus: epha, 10=homer, 6=achane. 33 cub. in. 132

1980 2380 23,800 142,800

The approximate value from capitha-2 Attic cheenices (Xenophon) warrants us in taking the achane as fixed in the following system, which places it closely in accord with the preceding.

In Persia Hultsch states—

CAPCLIGI Te, «.esesese0e 48 =artaba, = =achane,

74-4 cub.in. 1983 142,800

the absolute values being fixed by artaba =51 Attic cheeniccs (Herod., i. 192). The maris of the Pontic system is 4 of the above, and the Macedonian and Naxian maris 7, of the Pontic (18). By the theory of maris=+ of 20°6? it is 1755:; by maris— Assyrian talent, 1850, in place of 1850 or 1980 stated above; hence the more likely theory of weight, rather than cubit, connexion is nearer to the facts.

Hyinetan System.—This is so called from according with the Aiginetan weight. The absolute data are all dependent on the Attic and Roman systems, as there are no monumental data. The series of names is the same as in the Attic system (18). The values are 14 x the Attic (Athenzus, Theophrastus, &c.) (2, 18), or more closely 11 to 12 times } of Attic. Hence, the Attic cotyle being 17°5 cubic inches, the ASginetan is about 25°7. The Beeotian system (18) included the achane; if this—Persian,

then cotyle=24°7. Or, separately through the Roman system, the mnasis of Cyprus (18)=170 sextarii; then the cotyle=24‘8. By the theory of the metretes being 14 talents Mginctan, the cotyle would be 23°3 to 24°7 cubic inches by the actual weights, whieh have tended to decrease. Probably then 25-0 is the best approximation. By the theory (18) of 2 metretes=cube of the 18°67 cubit from the 12°45 foot, the cotyle would be about 25:4, within “4; but then such a eubit is unknown among measures, and not likely to be formed, as 12°4 is 3 of 20°6. The Aiginetan systcm then was—

P J COM Serres ene eaccs: | LOMlees E a, Si esstaies hecteus, 4=metrctes, $y } =medimnus.

100 00 8200

25 cub. in. 300 4800

This was the system of Sparta, of Beotia (where the aporryma =4 cheenices, the cophinns=6 cheenices, and saites or saton or hecteus=2 aporryme, while 30 medimni=achane, evidently Asiatic connexions throughout), and of Cyprus (where 2 choes= Cyprian medimnus, of which 5=medimnus of Salamis, of which 2 =munasis) (18).

Altic or Usual Greek System.—The absolute value of this system is far from certain. The best data are three stone slabs, each with several standard volumes cut in them (11, 18), and two named vases. The value of the cotyle from the Naxian slab is 15°4 (best, others 14°6-19°6); from a vase about 16°6; from the Panidum slab 17°1 (var. 16°2~-18°2) ; from a Capuan vase 17°8; from the Ganus slab 17°8 (var. 17'-18"). From these we may take 17°5 as a fair approximation. It is supposed that the Panathenaic vases were intended as metretes ; this would show a cotyle of 14:4-17°1. The theories of connexion give, for the value of the cotyle, metretes= Aginetan talent, .:. 15°4-16°6; metretes $ of 12°16 cubed, .°. 16°6;

metretes= 2% of 12°16 eubed, .. 16°8; medimnus=2 Attic talents, hecteus=20 mine, ehenix=—24 mine, .. 16°75; metretes=3 eubie spithami (4 eubit=9°12), .°. 17°5; 6 metretes=2 feet of 12°45 eubed, .. 17°8 eubic inehes for eotyle. But probably as good theories eould be found for any other amount; and certainly the facts should not be set aside, as almost every author has done, in favour of some one of half a dozen theories. The system of multiples was for liquids— : cyathus, 1}=oxybaphon, 4¢=cotyle, 12=chous, 12=metretes,*

2-9 cub. in, 4°4 17°5 210 2520 with the tetarton (8°8), 2=cotyle, 2—xestes (85°), introduced from the Roman system. For dry measure—

eyathus, 6=cotyle, 4=chonix, 8=hecteus, 6=medimnus, 2°9 cub. in. 175 70 560 3360 with the xestes, and amphorens (1680)—4 medimnus, from the Roman system. The various late provincial systems of division are beyond our present seope (18).

System of Gythiwm.—A system differing widely both in units and names from the preceding is found on the standard slab of Gythium in the southern Peloponnesus (Rev. Arch., 1872). Writers have unified it with the Attie, but it is deeidedly larger in its unit, giving 19°4 (var. 19°1-19°8) for the supposed eotyle. Its system is—

cotyle, 38=(n). 58 cub. in. 2796 And with this agrees a pottery cylindrieal vessel, with official stamp on it (AHMOZION, &e.), and having a fine black line traced round the inside, near the top, to show its limit; this seems to be probably very accurate, and eontains 58°5 eubie inehes, elosely agreeing with the eotyle of Gythium. It has been described (Rev. Arch., 1872) as an Attie eheenix. Gythium being the southern port of Greece, it seems not too far to conneet this 58 eubie inehes with the double of the Egyptian hon=58°4, as it is different from every other Greek system.

Roman System.—The eelebrated Farnesian standard congius of bronze of Vespasian, " mensurae exaetae in Capitolio P, X.," eon- tains 206°7 eubie inches (2), and henee the amphora 1654. By the sextarius of Dresden (2) the amphora is 1695; by the congius of Ste Genevieve (2) 1700 eubie inches; and by the ponderarium measures at Pompeii (33) 1540 to 1840,

or about 1620 for a mean. So the Farnesian eongius, or about 1650, may best be adopted. The system for liquid was—

quartarius, 4=sextarius, 2=amphora;

8-6 cub. ins. 34-4 1650 for dry measure 16 sextarii=modius, 550 eubie inches; and to both systems were added from the Attie the cyathus (2°87), aceta- bulum (4°3), and hemina (17°2 eubie inches). The Roman theory of the amphora being the cubic foot makes it 1569 eubie inches, or deeidedly less than the aetual measures ; the other theory of its containing 80 libre of water would make it 1575 by the eom- mereial or 1605 by the monetary libra,—again too low for the measures. Both of these theories therefore are rather working equivalents than original derivations ; or at least the interrelation was allowed to beeome far from exact.

Indian and Chinese Systems.—On the ancient Indian system see Numismata Orientalia, new ed., i. 24; on the ancient Chinese, Nature, xxx. 565, and xxxv. 318.

STANDARDS OF WeEIGuT.—For these we have far more complete data than for volumes or even lengths, and ean ascertain in many cases the nature of the variations, and their type in each place. The main series on whieh we shall rely here are those— (1) from Assyria (38) about 800 3.c. ; (2) from the eastern Delta of Egypt (29) (Defenneh) ; (8) from western Delta (28) (Naucratis) ; (4) from. Memphis (44),—all these about the 6th century z.c., and therefore before mueh interference from the deereasing coin standards; (5) from Cnidus; (6) from Athens; (7) from Corfu ; and (8) from Italy (British Museum) (44). As other collections are but a fraction of the whole of these, and are much less completely examined, little if any good would be done by including them in the combined results, though for special types or inseriptions they will be mentioned.

146 grains.—The Egyptian unit was the kat, which varied between 138 and 155 grains (28, 29). There were several families or varieties within this range, at least in the Delta, probably five or sixinall(29). The original places and dates of these cannot yet be fixed, exeept for the lowest type of 1388-140 grains; this belonged to Heliopolis (7), as two weights (35)

inseribed of "the treasury of An" show 139°9 and 140°4, while a plain one from there gives 138°8; the variety 147-149 may belong to Hermopolis (35), aceord- ing to an inseribed weight. The names of the kat and tema are fixed by being found on weights, the uten by inseriptions; the series was—

4=hemihecton, 4=chous,

232 932

6=congius, 4=urna,

206 825

(2), 10=kat, 10=uten, 10=tema.

14-6 grs. 146 1460 14,600 The tema is the same name as the large wheat measure (35), which was worth 30,000 to 19,000 grains of eopper, according to Ptolemaic receipts and accounts (Rev. Hg., 1881, 150), and therefore very

likely worth 10 utens of eopper in earlier times when metals were seareer. The kat was regularly divided into 10; but another divi- sion, for the sake of interrelation with another system, was in } and 4, searcely found exeept in the eastern Delta, where it is common (29); and it is known from a papyrus (38) to be a Syrian weight. The uten is found+-6=245, in Upper Egypt (rare) (44). Another division (in a papyrus) (38) isa silver weight of { kat—about 88,— vee the Babylonian siglus of 86. The uten was also binarily ivided into 128 peks of gold in Ethiopia; this may refer to another standard (see 129) (33). The Ptolemaic copper coinage is on two bases,— the uten, binarily divided, and the Ptolemaic five shekels (1050), also binarily divided. (This result is from a larger number than other students have used, and study by diagrams.) The theory (3) of the derivation of the uten from 7255 eubile eubit of water would fix it at 1472, which is

accordant; but there seems no authority either in volumes or weights for taking 1500 utens. Another theory (3) derives the uten from 7455 of the eubie eubit of 24 digits, or better $ of 20°63; that, however, will only fit the very lowest variety of the uten, while there is no evidence of the existenee of sueh acubit. The kat is not unusual in Syria (44), and among the hematite weights of Troy (44) are nine examples, average 144, but not of extreme varieties. ; The great standard of Babylonia beeame the ae (ha paren of several other areca: and itself aan d its derivatives beeame more widel 465,000. ion 3 y : spread than any other standard. It was known in two forms,—one system (24) of— um, 60=sikhir, 6=shekel, 10=stone, 6=maneh, 60=talent; 36 ers. 21-5 129 1290 7750 465,000 and the other system double of this in each stage except the talent. These two systems are distinetly named on the weights, and are known now as the light and heavy Assyrian systems (19, 24). (It is better to avoid the name Babylonian, as it has other meanings also.) There are no weights dated before the Assyrian bronze lion weights (9, 17, 19, 38) of the 11th to 8th centuries n.c, Thirteen of this elass average 127°2 for the shekel ; 9 hematite barrel-shaped weights (38) give 128°2; 16 stone duek-weights (38), 126°5. A heavier value is shown by the precious metals,—the gold plates from Khorsabad (18) giving 129, and the gold darie coinage (21, 35) of Persia 129°2. Nine weights from Syria (44) average 128°8. This is the system of the " Babylonian " talent, by Herodotus =70 mine Euboie, by Pollux=70 mine Attic, by Hlian=72 mine Attie, and therefore about 470,000 grains. In Egypt this is found largely at Naueratis (28, 29), and less commonly at Defenneh (29). In both places the distribution, a high type of 129 and a lower of 127, is like the monetary and trade varieties above noticed ; while a smaller number of examples are found, fewer and fewer, down to 118 grains. At Memphis (44) the shekel is seareely known, anda 4 mina weight was there converted into another standard (of 200). A few barrel weights are found at Karnak, and several egg-shaped shekel weights at Gebelen (44); also two euboid weights from there (44) of 1 and 10 utens are marked as 6 and 60, whieh can hardly refer to any unit but the heavy shekel, giving 245. Hultseh refers to Egyptian gold rings of Dynasty XVIII. of 125 grains. That this unit penetrated far to the south in early times is shown by the tribute of Kush (34) in Dynasty XVIII.; this is of 801, 1448, and 23,741 kats, or 15 and 27 manehs and 74 talents when redueed to this system. And the later Ethiopie gold unit of the pek (7), or

y+, of the uten, was 10°8 or more, and may therefore be the 4 sikhir or obolos of 21°5. But the fraetion ;45, or a continued binary division repeated seven times, is such a likely mode of rude subdivision that little stress ean be Jaid on this. In later times in Egypt aelass of large glass scarabs for funerary purposes seem to be adjusted to the shekel (30). Whether this system or the Pheenician on 224 grains was that of the Hebrews is uneertain. There is no doubt but that in the Maceabean times and onward 218 was the shekel ; but, the use of the word darkemén by Ezra and Nehemiah, and the probabilities of their ease, point to the darag-maneh, ¢y maneh, or shekel of Assyria; and the mention of § shekel by Nehemiah as poll tax nearly proves that the 129 and not 218 grains is intended, as 218 was never+3. But the Maecabcan use of 218 may have been a reversion to the older shekel ; and this is strongly shown by the fraction 4} shekel (1 Sam. ix. 8), the eontinual mention of large decimal numbers of shekels in the earlier books, and the certain faet of 100 shekels being=mina. This would all be against the 129 or 258 shekel, and for the 218 or 224, There is, however, one good datum if it ean be trusted: 300 talents of silver (2 Kings xviii. 14) are 800 talents on Sennacherib's eylinder (34), while the 30 talents of gold is the same in both accounts. Fight hundred talents on the Assyrian silver standard would be 267 —or roundly 300—talents on the heavy trade or gold system, which is therefore probably the Hebrew. Probably the 129 and 224 systems coexisted in the country; but on the whole it seems more likely that 129 or rather 258 grains was the Hebrew shekel before the Ptolemaie times,—especially as the 100 shekels to the mina is parallelled by the following Persian system (Hultsch)—

WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

60=mina…...-.. 60=talent of gold BCE Y Gmice cM. 0s 0.cccececazscovee-oseee 60 =talent of trade, 129 grs. 6450 7750 387,000 465,000 the Hebrew system being gerah, 20=shekel, 100=maneh, 380=talent, 12-9 prs. 258? 25,800 774,000

and, considering that the two Hebrew cubits are the Babylonian and Persian units, and the volumes are also Babylonian, it is the more likely that the weights should have come with these. From the east this unit

passed to Asia Minor; and six multiples of 2 to 20 shekels (av. 127) are found among the hematite weights of Troy (44), including the oldest of them. On the Aigean coast it often occurs in early coinage (17), at Lampsacus 131-129, Phoceea 256-4, Cyzicus 252-247, Methymna 124°6, &c. In later times it was a main unit of North Syria, and also on the Euxine, leaden weights of Antioch (3), Callatia, and Tomis being known (38). The mean of these easteru weights is 7700 for the mina, or 128. But the leaden weights of the west (44) from Corfu, &c., average 7580, or 126°3 ; this standard was kept up at Cyzicus in trade long after it was lost in coinage. At Corinth thc unit was evidently the Assyrian and not the Attic, being 129-6 at the earliest (17) (though modified to double Attic, or 133, later) and being+3, and not into 2drachms. And this agrees with the mina being repeatedly found at Corcyra, and with the same standard passing to the Italian coinage (17) similar in weight, and in division into $,—the heaviest coinages (17) down to 400 B.c. (Terina, Velia, Sybaris, Posidonia, Mctapontum, Tarcntum, &c.) being none over 126, while later on may were adjusted to the Attic, and rose to 134. Six disk weights from Carthage (44) show 126. It is usually the case that a unit lasts later in trade than in coinage; and the prominence of this standard in Italy may show how it is that this mina (18 nncie =7400) was known as the "Italic" in the days of Galen and Dioscorides (2).

126 prs A variation on the main system was made by forming a

*6300 * mina of 50shekels. This is one of the Persian series(gold),*

- *and the } of the Hebrew series noted above. But it is most striking when it is found in the mina form which distinguishes it. Eleven weights from Syria and Cnidus (44) (of the curious type with two breasts on a rectangular block) show a mina of 6250 (125°0); and it is singular that this class is exactly like weights of the 224 system found with it, but yet quite distinct in standard. The same passed into Italy and Corfu (44), averaging 6000, —divided in Italy into uucie (,/5), and scripule ($5), and called litra (in Corfu'). It is known iu the coinage of Hatria (18) as 6320, And a strange division of the shekel in 10 (probably therefore connected with this decimal mina) is shown by a series of bronze weights (44) with four curved sidcs and marked*

with circles (British Museum, place unknown), which may be Romano-Gallic, averaging 125—-10. This whole class seems to cling to sites of Phcenician trade, and to keep clear of Greece and the north,—perhaps a Pheenician form of the 129 system, avoiding the sexagesimal multiples.

If this unit have any connexion with the kat, it is that a kat of gold is worth 15 shekcls or } mina of silver; this agrees well with the range of both units, only it must be remembered that 129 was used as gold unit, and another silver unit deduced from it. More likely then the 147 and 129 units originated independently in Egypt and Babylonia.

86 prs, From 129 grains of gold was adopted an equal value

8600: of silver—1720, on the proportion of 1: 13%, and this 516 000 was divided in 10=172,—which was used either in ~" this form, or its half, 86, best known as the siglus (17). Such a proportion is indicated in Num. vii., where the gold spoon of 10 shekels is equal in value to the bowl! of 180 shekels, or double that of 70, i.¢., the silver vessels were 200 and 100 sigli. The silver plates at Khorsabad (18) we find to be 80 sigli of 84°6. The Persian silver coinage shows about 86°0; the danak was } of this, or 28°7. Xcnophon and others state it at about 84. As a monetary weight it seems to have spread, perhaps entirely, in consequence of the Persian dominion; it varies from 174° downwards, usually 167, in Aradus, Cilicia, and on to the Aigean coast, in Lydia and in Macedonia (17). The silver bars found at Troy averaging 2744, or % mina of 8232, have been attributed to this unit (17); but no divisiou of the mina in 4is to be expected, and the average is rather low. Two hematite weights from Troy (44) show 86 and 87°2. The mean from leaden weights of Chios, Tenedos (44), &c., is 8430. A duck-weight of Camirus, probably early, gives 8480; the same passed on to Greece and Italy (17), averaging 8610; but in Italy it was divided, like all other units, into uncie and scripule (44). It is perhaps found in Etrnrian coinage as 175-172 (17). By the Romans it was used on the Danube (18), two weights of the first legion there showing 8610; and this is the mina of 20 uncie

(8400) named by Roman writers. The system was—

obol, 6=siglus, 100=mina, 60=talent.

14°3 grs. 86 8600 516,000

A derivation from this was the 4 of 172, or 57°3, the so-called Phocean drachma, equal in silver value to the ¢y of the gold 258 grains. It was used at Phocea as 58°5, and passed to the colonies

487

of Posidonia and Velia as 59 or 118. The colony of Massilia brought it into Gaul as 58°2-54°9. 224 ors. That this unit (commonly called Pheenician) is derived 11.200: from the 129 system can hardly be doubted, both being 3 an, so intimately associated in Syria and Asia Minor. 672, 000. pec ws ' The relation is 258: 229::9:8; but the exact form in which the descent took place is not settled : y of 129 of gold is worth 57 of silver or a drachm, } of 230 (or by trade weights 127 and 226) ; otherwise, deriving it from the silver weight of 86 already formed, the drachm is 3 of the stater, 172, or double of the Persian danak of 28-7, and the sacred unit of Didyma in Ionia was this half drachm, 27; or thirdly, what is indicated by the Lydian coinage (17), 86 of gold was equal to 1150 of silver, 5 shekels, or yy Mina. Other proposed derivations from the kat or pek are not satisfactory. In actual use this unit varied greatly: at Naucratis (29) there are groups of it at 231, 223, and others down to 208; this is the earliest form in which we can study it, and the corre- sponding values to these are 130 and 126, or the gold and trade varieties of the Babylonian, while the lower tail down to 208 cor- responds to the shekel down to 118, which is just what is found. Hence the 224 unit seems to have been formed from the 129, after the main families or types of that had arisen. It is scarcer at Defenneh (29) and rare at Memphis (44). Under the Ptolemies, however, it became the great unit of Egypt, and is very prominent in the later literature in consequence (18, 35). The average of coins (21) of Ptolemy I. gives 219°6, and thence they gradually diminish to 210, the average (33) of the whole series of Ptolemies being 218. The ''argenteus" (as Revillout

transcribes a sign in the papyri) (35) was of 5 shekels, or 1090; it arose about 440 B.c., and became aftcr 160 B.c. a weight unit for copper. In Syria, as early as the 15th century B.c., the tribute of the Rutennu, of Naharaina, Megiddo, Anaukasa, &c. (34), is on a basis of 454-484 kats, or 300 shekels (,!, talent) of 226 grains, The commonest weight at Troy (44) is the shekel, averaging 224. In coinage it is one of the commonest units in early times ; from Phoenicia, round the coast to Maccdonia, it is predominant (17); at a maximum of 230 (Ialysus), it is in Macedonia 224, but seldom excceds 220 else- where, the earliest Lydian of the 7th century being 219, and the general average of coins 218. The system was—), 8=drachm, 4=shekel, 25=mina, 120=talent. 7 grs. 56 224 5600 672,000 From the Phenician coinage it was adopted for the Maccabean. It is needless to give the continual evidenccs of this being the later Jewish shekel, both from coins (max. 223) and writers (2, 18, 33) ; the question of the early shekel we have noticed already under 129. In Phenicia and Asia Minor the mina was specially made in the form with two breasts (.,4), 19 such weights averaging 5600 (=224) ; and thence it passed into Greece, more in a double value of 11,200 (=224). From Pheenicia this naturally became the main Punic unit ; a bronze weight from Iol (18), marked 100, gives a drachma of 56 or 57 (224~228); and a Punie inscription (18) names 28 drachmez=25 Attic, and .. 57 to 59 grains (228-236); while a prob- ably later series of 8 marble disks from Carthage (44) show 208, but vary from 197 to 234. In Spain it was 236 to 216 in different series (17), and it is a question whether the Massiliote drachme of 58-55 are not Phoenician rather than Phocaic. In Italy this mina became naturalized, and formed the "Italic mina" of Hero, Priscian, &c.; also its double, the mina of 26 uncie or 10,800, =50 shekels of 216; the average of 42 weights gives 5390 (=215°6), and it was divided both into 100 drachme, and also in the Italic mode of 12 unciz and 288 scripule (44). The talent was of 120 mine of 5400, or 3000 shekels, shown by the talent from Hercu- laneum, TA, 660,000 and by the weight inscribed PoNDO CxXXV. (z.¢., 125 libre) TALENTUM SICLORVM. ill., ¢.¢., talent of 3000 shekels (2) (the M being omitted ; just as Epiphanins describes this talent as 125 libre, or @(=9) nomismata, for 9000). This gives the same approximate ratio 96 : 100 to the libra as the usual drachma reckon- ing. The Alexandrian talent

of Festus, 12,000 denarii, is the same talent again. It is believed that this mina+12 unciz by the Romans is the origin of the Arabic ratl of 12 uktyas, or 5500 grains (33), which is said to have been sent by Harun al-Rashid to Charlemagne, and so to have originated the French monetary pound of 5666 grains. But, as this is probably the same as the English monetary pound, or tower pound of 5400, which was in use earlier (see Saxon coins), it seems more likely that this pound (which is common in Roman weights) was directly inherited from the Roman civilization. ‘ 80 ors,’ Another unit, which has scarcely been recognized in aa metrology hitherto, is prominent in the weights from 400.000, LSyPt,—some 50 weights from Naucratis and 15 from » Defenneh plainly agreeing on this and on no other basis. Its value varies between 76°5 aud 81°5,—mean 79 at Naucratis (29) or 81 at Defenneh (29). It has been conuected theoretically with a binary division of the 10 shekels or “‘stone” of the Assyrian systems (28), 1290 +16 being 80°6; this is suggested by the most usual mul- tiples being 40 and 80=25 and 50 shekels of 129; it is thus akin to the mina of 50 shekels previously noticed. The tribute of the Asi,*

488

Rutennu, Khita, Assaru, &c., to Thothmes III. (34), though in un- even numbers of kats, comes out in round thousands of units when reduced to this standard. That this unit is quite distinct from the Persian 86 grains is clear in the Egyptian weights, which maintain a wide gap between the two systems. Next, in Syria three inscribed weights of Antioch and Berytus (18) show a mina of about 16,400, or 200× 82. Then at Abydus, or more probably from Babylonia, there is the large bronze lion-weight, stated to have been origin- ally 400,500 grains ; this has been continually+60 by different writers, regardless of the fact (Rev. Arch., 1862, 30) that it bears the numeral 100 ; this therefore is certainly a talent of 100 mine of 4005 ; and as the mina is generally 50 shekels in Greek systems it points to a weight of 801. Farther west the same unit oceurs in several Greek weights (44) which show a mina of 7800 to 8310, mean 8050+100=80°5. ‘Turning to coinage, we find this often, but usually overlooked as a degraded form of the Persian 86 grains siglos. But the earliest coinage in Cilicia, before the general Persian coinage (17) about 380 B.c., is Tarsus, 164 grains; Soli, 169, 163, 158; Nagidus, 158,161-158 later; Issus, 166; Mallus, 163-

154, — all of which can only by straining be classed as Persian ; but they agree to this standard, which, as we have seen, was used in Syria in earlier times by the Khita, &. The Milesian or "native" system of Asia Minor (18) is fixed by Hultsch at 168 and 81°6 grains,—the coins of Miletus (17) showing 160, 80, and 39. Coming down to literary evidence, this is abundant. Bockh decides that the "Alexandrian drachma" was ~ of the Solonic 67, or=80°5, and shows that it was not Ptolemaic, or Rhodian, or Mginetan, being distinguished from these in inscriptions (2). Then the " Alex- andrian mina" of Dioscorides and Galen (2) is 20 uncie =8250 ; in the " Analecta" (2) it is 150 or 158 drachmee=8100. Then Attic: Euboic or Aginetan : : 18: 25 in the metrologists (2), and the Euboic talent=7000 " Alexandrian" drachme; the drachma there- fore is 80°0. The "Alexandrian" wood talent: Attic talent: : 6 : 5 (Hero, Didymus), and.. 480,000, which is 60 minee of 8000. Pliny states the Egyptian talent at 80 libre 396,000 ; evidently = the Abydus lion talent, which is+100, and the mina is .'. 3960, or 50× 79-2, The largest weight is the "wood" talent of Syria (18)=6 Roman talents, or 1,860,000, evidently 120 Antioch minz of 15,500 or 2× 7750. This evidence is too distinct to be get aside; and, exactly confirming as it does the Egyptian weights and coin weights, and agreeing with the early Asiatic tribute, it cannot be overlooked in future. The system was*

drachm, 2=stater, 50=mina, 50=talent. 60= Grecictalent: 80 ars. 160 8000 400,000 480,000 This system, the Mginetan, one of the most im- 20m Coy. ee portant to the Greek world, has been thought to 579 000 be a degradation of the Pheenieian (17, 21), sup-

,

posing 220 grains tohave been reduced in primitive Greek usage to 194. But we are now able to prove that it was an independent system—(1) by its not ranging usually over 200 grains in Egypt before it passed to Greece ; (2) by its earliest example, le before the 224 unit existed, not being over 208; and (3) by there being no intermediate linking on of this to the Phoenician unit in the large number of Egyptian weights, nor in the Ptolemaic coinage, in which both standards are used. The first example (30) is one with the name of Amenhotep I. (17th century 8.c,) marked as "

gold 5," whieh is 5 × 207°6. Two other marked weights are from Memphis (44), showing 201 °8and 196°4, and another Egyptian 19174. The range of the (34) Naucratis weights is 186 to 199, divided in two groups averaging 190 and 196, equal to the Greek monetary and trade varieties. Ptolemy I, and II. also struck a series of coins (32) averaging 199. In Syria hematite weights ave found (30) averaging 198°5, divided into 99°2, 49°6, and 24:8; and the same division is shown by gold rings from Egypt (38) of 24-9. In the medical Ronee (38) a weight of % kat is used, which is thought to be

yrian; now § kat—92 to 101 grains, or just this weight which we have found in Syria ; and the weights of 3 and 1 kat are very rare in Egypt except at Defenneh (29), on the Syrian road, where they abound. – So we have thus a weight of 207-191 in Egypt on marked weights, joining therefore completely with the Mginetan unit in Egypt of 199 to 186, and coinage of 199, and strongly connected with Syria, where a double mina of Sidon (18) is 10,460 or 50x 209°2. Probably before any Greek coinage we find this among the hematite weights of Troy (44), ranging from 208 to 193-2 (or 104— 96°6), z.¢., just covering the range from the earliest Egyptian down to the early aren. eoinage. Turning now to the early coinage, we see the fuller weight kept up (17) at Samos (202), Miletus (201), Calymna (100, 50), Methymna and Scepsis (99, 49),1 Ionia (197); while the coinage of Mgina (17, 12), which by its wide diffusion made this unit best known, though a few of its earliest staters go up even to 207, yet is characteristically on the lower of the two groups which we recognize in Egypt, and thus started

1 That this unit was used for gold in Egypt, one thousand years before becom- ing a silver coin weight in Asia Minor, need not be dwelt on, when we see in the coinage of Lydia (17) gold pieces and sitvcr on the same standard. which was expressly formed for silver alone, ¢.¢., 84 grains. The Attic and Assyrian stand- ards were uscd indifferently for either gold or silver.

WEIGHTS AND

MEASURES what has been considered the standard value of 194, or usually 190, decreasing afterwards to 184. In later times, in Asia,

however, the fuller weight, or higher Egyptian group, which we have just noticed in the coinage, was kept up (17) into the series of cistophori (196-191), as in the Ptolemaic series of 199. At Athens the old mina was fixed by Solon at 150 of his drachme (18) or 9800 grains, according to the earliest drachme, showing a stater of 196; and this continued to be the trade mina in Athens, at least until 160 B.c., but in a reduced form, in which it equalled only 138 Attic drachme, or 9200. The Greek mina weights show (44), on an average of 57, 9650 (=stater of 193), varying from186 to 199. In the Hellenic coinage it varies (18) froma maximum of 200 at Phare to 192, usual full weight; this unit occupied (17) all central Greece, Peloponnesus, and most of the islands, The system was— obol, 6=drachm, 2=stater, 50=mina, 60=talent. 16 grs. 96 192 9600 576,000 It also passed into Italy, but in a smaller multiple of 25 drachme, or } of the Greek mina; 12 Italian weights (44) bearing value marks (which cannot therefore be differently attributed) show a libra of 2400 or } of 9660, which was divided in unciz and sextule, and the full-sized mina is known as the 24 uncia mina, or talent of 120 libre of Vitruvius and Isidore (18)=9900. Hultsch states this to be the old Etruscan pound. 1 With the trade mina of 9650 in Greece, and recognized 4950 ors, 11 Italy, we can hardly doubt that the Roman libra is S'S: the halfof thismina. At Athens it was 2× 4900, and on the average of all the Greek weights it is 2 × 4825, so that 4950 —the libra—is as close as we need expect. The division by 12 does not affect the question, as every standard that came into Italy was similarly divided. In the libra, as in most other standards, the value which happened to be first at hand for the coinage was not the mean of the whole of the weightsin the country ; the Phoenician coin weight is below the trade average, the Assyrian is above, the figinetan is below, but the Roman coinage is above the average of trade weights, or the mean standard. Rejecting all weights of the lower empire, the average (44) of about 100 is 4956; while 42 later Greek weights (nomisma, &c.) average 4857, and 16 later Latin ones (solidus, &c.)show 4819. The coinage standard, however, was always higher (18) ; the oldest gold shows 5056, the Campanian Roman 5054, the consular gold 5037, the aurei 5037, the Constantine solidi 5053, and the Justinian gold 4996. Thus, though it fell in the later entpire, like the trade weight, yet it was always above that. Though it has no exact relation to the congius or amphora, yet it is closely 4977 grains, the x5 of the cubic foot of water. If, however, the weight in a

degraded form, and the foot in an unde- graded form, come from the East, it is needless to look for an exact relation between them, but rather for a mere working equivalent, like the 1000 ounces to the cubic foot in England. Béckh has re- marked the great diversity between weights of the same age,—those marked "Ad Augusti Temp" ranging 4971 to 5535, those tested by the fussy prefect Q. Junius Rusticus vary 4362 to 5625, aud a set in the British Museum (44) belonging together vary 4700 to 5168. The series was— siliqua, 6=scripnlum, 4=sextula, 6=uncia, 12=libra, 2°87 grs. 172 68°7 412 4950 the greater weight being the centumpondium of 495,000. weights were added to these from the Greek system— obolus, 6=drachma, 2=sicilicus, 4=uncia; 7 8°6 grs. 515 103 412 and the sextula after Constantine had the name of solidus as a coin weight, or nomisma in Greek, marked N on the weights. A beautiful set of multiples of the scripulum was found near Lyons (38), from 1 to 10× 17°28 grains, showing a libra of 4976. In Byzantine times in Egypt glass was used for coin-weights (30), averaging 68:0 for the solidus = 4896 for the libra. The Saxon and Norman ounce is said to average 416°5 (Num. Chron., 1871, 42), apparently the Roman uncia inherited. The system which is perhaps the best known, through

Other

oe its adoption by Solon in Athens, and is thence called 402,000 Attic or Solonic, is nevertheless far older than its intro-

000.

duction into Greece, being found in full vigour in Egypt in the 6th century z.c. It has been usually reckoned as a rather heavier form of the 129 shekel, increased to 134 on its adoption by Solon. But the Egyptian weights render this view impossible. Among them (29) the two contiguous groups can be discriminated by the 129 being multiplied by 30 aud 60, while the 67 or 134 is differently x 25, 40, 50, and 100. Hence, although the two groups overlap owing to their nearness, it is impossible to regard them as all one unit. The 129 range is up to 131°8, while the Attic range is 130 to 138 (65-69). Hultsch reckons on a ratio of 24 : 25 between them, and this is very near the true values; the full Attic being 67°3, the Assyrian should be 129:2, and this is just the full gold coinage weight. We

may perhaps see the sense of this ratio through another system. The 80 grain system, as we have seen, was prob- ably formed by binarily dividing the 10 shekels, or "stone"; and it had a talent (Abydus lion) of 5000 drachme ; this is praetically identical with the talent of 6000 Attic drachniz. So the talent of

the 80 grain system was sexagesimally divided for the mina which was afterwards adopted by Solon. Such seems the most likely history of it, and this is in exact accord with the full original weight of each system. In Egypt the mean value at Naucratis (29) was 66°7, while at Defennch (29) and Memphis (44)—probably rather earlier—it was 67°0. The type of the grouping is not alike in different places, showing that no distinct families had arisen before the diffusion of this unit in Egypt; but the usual range is 65°5 to 69°0. Next it is found at Troy (44) in tliree cases, all high examples of 68°2 to 68°7; and thesc are very important, since they cannot be dissociated from the Greek Attic unit, and yet they are of a variety as far removed as may be from the half of the Assyrian, which ranges there from 123°5 to 131; thus the difference of unit between Assyrian and Attic in these earliest of all Greek weights is very strongly marked. At Athens a low variety of the unit was adopted for the coinage, true to the object of Solon in depreciating debts; and the first coinage is of only 65°2, or scarcely within the range of the trade weights (28); this seems to have been felt, as, contrary to all other states, Athens slowly increased its coin weight up to 66°6, or but little under the trade average. It gradually supplanted the Aiginetan standard in Greece and Italy as the power of Athens rose; and it was adopted by Philip and Alexander (17) for their great gold coinage of 183 and 66°5. This system is often known as the "Euboic," owing to its early use in Eubcea, and its diffusion by trade from thence. Thc series was— chaleous, 8=obolus, 6=drachma, 100=mina, 60=talanton.

1-4 grs. 11:17 6700 402,000 Turning now to its usual trade values in Greece (44), the mean of 113 gives 67°15; but they vary more than the Egyptian examples, having a sub-variety both above and below the main

body, which itself exactly coincides with the Egyptian weights. Thc greater part of those weights which bear names indicate a mina of double the usual reckoning, so that there was a light and a heavy system, a mina of the drachma and a mina of the stater, as in the Pheenician and Assyrian weights. In trade both the mine were divided in 4, 2, 4, 3, and 4, regardless of the drachme. This unit passed also into Italy, the libra of Picenuni and the double of the Etrurian and Sicilian libra (17); it was there divided in uncie and scripule (44), the mean of 6 from Italy and Sicily being 6600; one weight (bought in Smyrna) has the name "Leitra" on it. In literature it is constantly referred to; but we may notice the " general mina" (Cleopatra), in Egypt, 16 uncie =6600; the Ptolemaic talent, equal to the Attic in weight and divisions (Hero, Didymus); the Antiochian talent, equal to the Attic (Hero); the treaty of the Romans with Antiochus, naming talents of 80 libre, ¢.¢., mina of 16 unciz; the Roman miua in Egypt, of 15 uncie, probably the same diminished; and the Italic mina of 16 uncix. It seems even to have lasted in Egypt till the Middle Ages, as Jabarti and the "'katib's guide" both name the ratl misri (of Cairo) as 144 dirhems

= 6760.

We have now ended our outline of ancient metrology, omitting all details that were not really necessary to a fair judgment on the

489

standard was probably 7002 grains.) Ale gallon of 1601=282 cubic inches, and wine gallon of 1707=231 cubic inches, both abolished in 1824. Winchester corn bushel of 8 × 268°8 cubic inches and gallon of 274} are the oldest cxamples known (Henry VII.), gradu- ally modified until fixed in 1826 at 277-274, or 10 pounds of water.

French Weights and Measures Abolished. —Often needed in read- ing older works.

*ligne, 12=pouce, 12=pied, 6=toise, 2000=lieue de poste, "08883 in. 1:0658 12°7892 716°735 2°42219 miles. grain, 72=gros, 8=once, 8=mare, 2=poids de marc. *8197 or. 59°021 472°17 3777°33 1:0792 ib.*

Rhineland foot, much used in Germany, =12°357 inches=the foot of the Scotch or English cloth ell of 87°06 inches, or 3 × 12°353.

(1) A. Aures, Métrologie Egyptienne, 1880; (2) A. Béckh, Metrologische Unter- suchungen, 1838 (general); (3) P. Bortolotti, Del Primitivo Cubito Egizio, 1883; (4) J. Brandis, Aftinz-, Mass-, und Gewicht-Wesen, 1866 (specially Assyrian): 'G) H. Brugsch, in Zetts, Aeg. Sp., 1870 (Edfu); (6) M. F. Chabas, Determination Méirique, 1867 (Egyptian volumes); (7) Id., Recherches sur les Poids, Mesures, et Monnaies des anciens Egyptiens; (8)1d., Ztschr. f. Aegypt. Sprache, 1867, p.57, 1870, p. 122 (Egyptian volumes); (9) H. W. Chisholm, Weighing and Measuring, 1877 (history of English measures) ; (10) Id., Ninth Rep. of Warden of Standards, 1875 (Assyrian); (11) A. Dumont, Mission en Thrace (Greek volumes); (12) Eisenlohr, Zischr. Aeg. Sp., 1875 (Egyptian hou); (13) W. Golénischeff, in Rev. Egypt., 1881, 177 (Egyptian weights) ; (14) C. W. Goodwin, in Ztschr. Aeg. Sp., 1873, p. 16 (shet); (15) B. V. Head, in Num. Chron., 1875; (16) Id., Jour. Inst. of Bankers, 1879 (systems of weight); (17) Id., Historia Numorum, 1887 (essential for coin weights and history of systems); (18) F. Hultsch, Griechische und Romische Metrologie, 1882 (essential for literary and monumental facts); (19) Ledrain, in Rev. Egypt., 1881, p. 173 (Assyrian) ; (20) Leemans, Monumens Egyptiens, 1838 (Egyptian hon); (21) T. Mommsen, //istoire de la Monnaie Romaine; (22) Id., Monuments Divers (Egyptian weights); (23) Sir Isaac Newton, Dissertation upon the Sacred Cubit, 1737; (24) J. Oppert, Etalon des Mesures Assyriennes, 1875; (25) W. M. F. Petrie, Inductive Metrology, 1877 (principles and tentative results); (26) Id., Stonehenge, 1880 ; (27)Id., Pyramids and Tenples of Gizeh, 1883; (28)Id., Nau- kratis, i., 1886 (principles, lists, and curves of weights); (29) Id., Tants, ii,, 1887 (lists and curves); (30) Id., Arch. Jour., 1883, 419 (weights, Egyptian, &c.); (31) Id., Proc. Roy. Soc. Edin,, 1883-84, 254 (milc); (32) R. S. Poole, Brit. Mus. Cat. of Coins, Egypt; (33) Vazquez Queipo, Essat sur les Systemes Meétriques, 1859 (general, and specially Arab and coins); (34) Records of the Past, vols.i., ii., vi. (Egyptian tributes, dc.); (35) E. Revillout, in Rev. Zg., 1881 (many papers on Egyptian weights, measures, and coins); (36) E. T. Rogers, Num. Chron., 1873 (Arab glass weights) ; (37) M. H. Sauvaire,in Jour, As. Soc., 1877, translationiof Elias of Nisibis, with notes (remarkable for history of balance) ; Schillbach (lists

of weights, allin next); (38) M. C.Soutzo, Htalons Pondéeraux Primitifs, 1884 (lists of all weights published to date); (39) Id., Systémes Monctaires Primitifs, 1884 (derivation of units); (40) G. Smith, in Zeits. Aeg. Sp., 1875; (4x) L. Stern, in Rev. £g., 1881, 171 (Egyptian weights); (42) P. Tannery, Rev. Arch., xli., 1523; (43) E. Thomas, Numismata Orientalia, pt. i. (Indian weights). Many isolated papers in Revue Archéologique, Hellenic Journal, &c., are not specified above; and (44) a great amount of material is yet unpublished of weighings of weights of Troy (supplied through Dr Schliemann's kindness), Memphis, at the British Museum, Turin, &c., which may probably appear before long, and which has been utilized in this article.

TIL. CommeErctat.

In this section we shall only refer to such measures as are in actual use at the present time ; the various systems of the Continental towns have been superseded by the metric system now in force, and are therefore not needed

now except for historical purposes.

subject, but trying to make as plain as possible the actual bases of English information, to trust to no opinions apart from facts, and to leave Great Britain. — weights what is stated as free as possible from the influence of theories. Length :— and Theoretical values have nowhere been adopted here as the standards, inch, 5k=pole, 4=chain, 10=furlong, 8=mile. ypeasures,

12=foot, 38=yard, lin. Wy 36 198 792 7920 63360 Hand, 4 inches; fathom, 2 yards; knot or geographical nile = 1'= 1'1507 miles. The chain is divided in 100 links for land measure ; link = 7°92 inches.

Terms of square measure are squares of the long measures.

contrary to the general practice of metrologists; but in each case the standard value is stated solely from the evidence in hand, quite regardless of how it will agree with the theoretical deduction from other weights or

measures. Great refinement in statements of values is ncedless, looking to the uncertainties which beset us.

There are innumerable theories unnoticed here; ouly those arc Volume: dry :— explained which seem to have a reasonable likelihood, and others pint, 2=quart, 4=gallon, 2=peck, 4=bushel, 8=quarter. arc only mentioned where it is needful to show that they have not cub, in. 34°659 69-318 277-274 554-548 221819 117456

been overlooked. In many cases fuller detail is given of less im- portant points, when they have not been published before, and no other information can be referred to elsewhere; when any point is abundantly proved and known, it has been passed with a mere

Gill=} pint; pottle=2 quarts; 5 quarters=wey or load; 2 weys= last. Volume : wet :—

. : i : : 5 Pint and quart ae 4=barrel or 2=pipe, butt, or mention. Finally, to indicate where further information on different : ae ey } gallon, 9=firkin, sen puncheon. matters may be found reference is frequently made by a nuinber to cub. ins. 277°274 —-:2495‘5 9981°9 19963°8

the list of works given below, some early and other works bcin omitted, of which all the data will be found in later books.

For historical reference we may state the following units legally abolished,

English Weights and Measwres Abolished.—The yard and hand- ful, or 40 inch ell, abolished in 1439. The yard and inch, or

§ | Avoirdupois weight, for everything not excepted below :—

drachm, 16=ounce, 16=pound, 14=stone, 2=quarter, 4=hundred, 20=ton. 27°3 grains. 437°5 7000 98,000 196,000 grs. 112 tb 2240 ib.

Troy weight (gold, silver, platinum, and jewels, exccpt diamonds and pearls) :—

. i = i — = (al, 37 inch ell (cloth measure), abolished after 1553; known later eat 2 Sn pene al = Po760 as the Scotch ell=37:06. Cloth ell of 45 inches, used till 1600. Diamond and pearl weight: —

The yard of Heury VII. =35°963 inches. Saxon moneyers pound, or Tower pound, 5400 grains, abolished in 1527. Mark, 2 pound= 3600 grains, Troy pound in use in 1415, established as monetary pound 1527, now restricted to gold, silver, and jewels, excepting

grain, 4=carat, 8 grain 3°2 Apothecaries' dispensing weight, for prescriptions only :—

150 =ounce Troy.

480

diamonds and pearls. Merchant's pound, in 1270 established for Tein cca ean me ee oa im oe all except gold, silver, and medicines=6750 grains, generally ea es' Hild ieaedis —

superseded by avoirdupois in 1303. Merchant's pound Ceo adi foes 20=pint, 8=gallon. grains, from France and Germany, also superseded. (" Avoirdepois " Siete Waker —e ee 8,750 70,000 occurs in 1386, and has been thence continued ; the Elizabethan 036 cub. in. '216 1733 34659 = Q77-274

XXIV. — 62

Metric system,

490

Metric System.—The report to the French National Assembly proposing this system was presented 17th March 1791, the meridian measurements finished and adopted 22d June 1799, an intermediate system of division and names tolerated 28th May 1812, abolished and pure decimal system enforced Ist January 1840. Since then Netherlands, Spain (1850), Italy, Greece, Austria (legalized 1876), Germany, Norway and Sweden (1878),

Switzerland, Portugal, Mexico, Venezuela, Argentine Republic, Hayti, New Grenada, Mauritius, Congo Free State, and other states have adopted this system. The use of it is permissive in Great Britain, India, Canada, Chili, &. The theory of the system is that the metre is a 10,000,000th of a quadrant of the earth through Paris; the litre is a cube of #5 metre; the gramme is zy/y5 of the litre filled with water at 4° C.; the franc weighs 5 grammes. The multiples are as follows :—

British. France. Netherlands. Other Names.

strich zentimeter

streep

duim

palm

elle or auno

millimetre centimetre decimetre METRE kilometre

039 inch

metre, stab 62138 mile kilometer, stadion 176 pint decilitre 7G, LITRE 17°608 , decalitre 88-038 (50 litres)

176°077 hectolitre

liter or kanne schepel ~ fig scheffel hektoliter, fasse, mudde kilot milligramme GRAMME decagramme hectogramme (500 grammes) kilogramme

(50 kilogr.) 100 kilogr. Pn. { 1000 kilogr,

drom loth

wigtije lood

ons 2190 pfund, livre

15432°35 pond

110°23 ib zentner, zolleent- centner métri- que, quintal

tonne, tonneau

220°46 „

2204-62 „

In land measure the unit is the are (10 metres square)=119°60 square yards; and the hectare=2°4736 acres. Other multiples of the units are merely nominal and not practically used.

Table for Conversion of British and Metric Units.

*Milli- Cubic Cubic Cubic Cubic Inches. metres. Metres.| Feet. Inches.| Centimetres.|} Metres. Feet, 1 25°399 1 3°2809 1 16°386 1 35°316 2 50°799 2 6°5618 32°772 g 70°633 3 76°199 3 9°8427 3 49°168 2 105°950 4 101°598 4 13°1236 4 85545 4 141°266 5 126-998 5 16°4045 5 81°931 5 176°583 6 152°397 6 19°6854 6 98°317 6 211°899 df 177°797 i 22°9663 7 114‘703 7 247°216 8 203°196 8 26°2472 8 131-089 8 282°533 9 228°596 9 29°5281 #) 147°476 9 317°849 Pints. | Litres. || Litres.) Gallons. ||Grains.| Grammes. Kilos. | Pounds. 1 “56755 1 *22024 1 “064799 1 2°6792 2 1°13510 2 “44049 2 *129598 2 5°3584 3 1°70265 3 66073 3 “194397 3 8°0377 4 2°27020 4 *88098 4 “259196 4 10°7169 5 2°83775 5 1°10122 5 °323994 5 13°3961 6 3°40530 6 1°32146 6 “388794 6 16°0754 7 3°97286 7 1°54171 Z 453593 i 18°7546 8 4°54041 8 1:76195 8 518392 8 21°4338 9 5°10796 9 1°98220 9 *583190 9 24°1130*

For approximate conversion either way use the following ratios: — 8 metres=315 inches (to z>$a5); 8 kilometres=5 miles (to 45); 4 litres=7 pints (to $5); 7 grammes=108 grains (to rd55).

Burmah, —Paulgaut 1 inch, taim 18 inches, saundaung 22 inches, dha 154 inches, dain 2°48 miles. Kait 251 grains, vis 3°59 Th, sait 14°36, ten

57°36, candy 533 Ib.

Candia.—Pic 25°11 inches, carga (corn) 4°19 bushels, rottolo 1°165 tb, cantaro 116°5 Ib, okka 2°65 tb.

Ceylon. —Seer 1°86 pints; 10 parrahs, 1 amomam, 5°6 bushels.

China,—Fau '141 inches, tsun 1°41, chik 14°1, cheung 141, yan 1410=117°5 feet. Other chiks—itinerary 12°17, imperial 12°61 surveyors 12°70, Peking 13°12, Canton 14°70 inches. Li=1800 chiks of 12°17, 13°12, or 14°1. Kop 3°3 cubic inches; 10=shing tsong 96 pint, tau 9°6 (12 catties of water), hwuh 96 pints. Tael 580°3 grains; 16=catty, 9328 grains or 1'333 Ib; picul 133°3 th.

Denmark.—Tomme 1°03 inches, fod 12°357, aln 24°714; miil 4°6807 miles. Pott °2126 gallons; 2=kande, 2=stiibchen, 2=— viertel 1°7008 gallons; anker 8°2914 gallons. Pot '02657 bushel, skieppe °47835, fjerding '9567, tonne 3°8268, last 84°188 bushels. Ort 15°1 grains, quintin 60°3, lod 241°2, nnze 482°5, mark 3860, pund 7720=1'103 tb=} kilogramine. Lispund 17°646 tb, skip- pund 8'151 cwt. Tonde (land) 1°25 acres, (coal) 4°6775 bushels.

Egypt.—Dir& of Nilometer 21°3 inches, dira' beledi 22°7, dira' handasi 25°18, pie or dira Stambuli 26°65 inches; pic of land,

WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

29°58, kasab 139°8 inches. Feddan 1,5 acre. Ruba 6°6 pints or quarts, wébe 6°6 gallons, ardeb 39°6 or 46°4 gallons. Dirhem 60°65 grains, ratl 1°0181 tb, okka 2°7274 tb, kantdr 101°31 Tb. India. —Bengal—gaz=yard. Bombay—gaz 27 inches, hath 18 inches. Madras—covid 18°6 inches. Bengal—cottah (kattha) 80 square yards; 20=biggah, 1600 square yards. Madras—24 mauris =cawri, 6400 square yards. Seer, 40=maund, 20—candy. Equivalents of Indian and other weights are as follows :—

Bengal

Factory. Madras.

Commercial Weights, &c. | Avoirdupois. Bombay.

tb oz. dr. Imds. s. ch. |mds. vis, pol.) mds. s. pice.

Acheen bahar of 200

oniiesoMeela f.ce 423 6 13 5 2613 16 719 15 4 27 Ache suncha of Meee | @ 87 197| eyhae | 7 34 sc a 560 0 0 & 20) 0 22 3 8 20 0 0 Bencoolen bahar……., 560 0 0 7 20 Sac 20 0 0 Bengal factory maund….| 7410 10:7] 1 7 35°7 2 26 20 Bengal bazaar maund…..) 82 2 21] 1 vA AER 2 37 10 Bombay candy of 20 MIAUNOS. .Mese-scssness en — 2 — BOE 8S) Bussorah maund of 76 ; SVELELOS ognncioososocoosonnd oe et : 4 352 seis

28 8 0 0 1 48 1 0 21:4

p 30 0 0 0 1 24 ly 2925:7 Cochin candy of 20 ; i TIPU ier ceecsrecease oe 7 PoE cag) NEES Gombroon bazaar candy.| 7 & 0 0 216 0 10 21-4 Goa candy of 20 maunds} 495 0 0 6 6 16 17 27 4:3 Jonkceylon bahar of 8 _ i CaypllSpeevenereneecers cane seb Bobs) 6 PLL Mt Te Madras candy of 20 ois IMAUWOSs. occ creereseces — . pO ie Mocha bahar of 15 frazils| 450 0 0 6 0 0 16 2 25-7 Muscat custom – house 812 0 0 2 32 012.15 Mysorecandyof7 morahs| 560 0 0 | 7 3 8 | 20 0 0 Pegu candy of 150 vis…..) 500 0 0 6 0 0 17 34 86

133 5 53) 1 2 26 4 30 14:3

Surat maund of 40 seers..| 37 5 53] 0 3 37:9 113 10 Surat pucca maund…….. 7410 10-7/ 1 7 357 2 26 20 Tillycherry candy of 20 MAUNAS.....0c.0006 } aw © = a i ie

Bengal bazaar weights are -y greater than factory weights. Grain and native liquids are usually weighed.

Japan.—Boo, 10=sun, 10=shaku (11°948 inches=}$ metre), 6=ken, 60=cho, 39=ri (2°647 miles). Go (11°1 cubic inches), 10=sho, 10=to, 10=koku (5°011 bushels). Momme 57°97 grains, 160=kin or catty (1°325 tb), 1000 momme=kuanme (8°281 fb).

Java.—FEll 27? inches. Kanne °3282 gallon ; rand, 396 =leaguer of arrack, 1834 gallons; 360 rands=leaguer of wine. Rice—sack, 2=picul 1853 Ib, 5=timbang; coyang 3581 fb.

Malacca,—Covid 18} inches; buncal 832 grains (gold and silver) ; kip 41 fb (tin); 100 catties=picul, 135 fb; 3 piculs=bahar; 40 piculs=coyau of salt or rice; 500 gantons=50 measures—1 last, nearly 29 cwts.; chupah=24 tb; gautang (=ganton?), 9 Ib of water at 62°.

Malta.—Palmo 10°83 inches, foot 7°2 and 11°17 inches, canna 82‘4 inches; 16 tumoli=salma, 4°44 acres. Caffiso (oil) 4°58 gallons; barile (wine) 9°16 gallons; salma (corn) 7°9 bushels. Ounce 407°2 grains ; rottolo 1°745 Ib; cantaro 174°5 ib.

Mexico. —Vara 32°97 inches. Fanega 1°50 bushels. Libra 1°0142 fb.

Morocco.—Canna 21 inches: commercial rottolo 1°19 tb, 100= quintal; market rottolo 1°785 Ib.

Persia, —Gaz (gueze), 6 handbreadths or 25 inches. Royal gaz 374 inches. Arash 38°27 inches. Parasang or farsakh 3 geographical miles (an hour’s walk for a horse). Sextario (21 cubic inches), 4= chenica, 2=capicha (2°4 quarts), 25=artaba(1°9 bushels). (These, as the native names show, are not native measures. As Chardin remarks, there are no true measures of capacity; even liquids are sold by weight.) Dirhem, 143 (Bussora), 147°8 (Tabriz), or 150 grs. Mescal, 2=dirhem, 50=ratl (7300 grains), 6=man or batman.

Russia.—Vershok (1°75 inches), 16=archine, 3=sagene (7 feet British, legally), 500=verst (“663 mile); 2400 square sagenes= deciatine (2°7 acres). Tcharkey (‘216 pint), 100 —vedro, 3=anker, 40 vedros=sarakovaia (324°6 gallons). Garnietz 2=tchetverka, 4=tchetverik, 2=paiak, 2=osmin, 2=tchetvert (5°77 bushels). Dola (°68578 grains) ; 96=zolotnic ; 8=lana; 12=funt (6319°7279 grains); 40=pud (36°112 tb); 10=berkovitz; 3=packen. Also 3 zolotnices=1 loth.

Siam.—Nin, 12=ktib (10 inches), 2=sok, 4=wa (79°999 inches on silver bar at 85° Fahr.), Thangsat, 10× 10×20 nin, actual standard 1159°8477

cubic inches at 85°=2°08 pecks. Thanan, 5×5×4 nin, standard 57°8800 at 85°=1°67 pints. Tical or bat (234°04 grains), 4=tael, 4=catty or chang, 50=picul or hap (133°738 tb).

Turkey.—Pic 26°8 or 27°06 inches; larger pic 27°9. Almud 1°15 gallons (of oil=8 okas) ; 4 killows=fortin of 3°7 bushels (killow

of rice=10 okas). Dram (49°5 grains), 100=chequi, 4=oka

As weights of grain are often needed we add pounds weight in

(2°8286 tb); dram (49°5 grains), 180=rotl, 100=kintal or kantar | cubic feet.

(127°29 tb).

United States. —Inch=1°000049 British inch, and other measures in proportion. Gallon=-83292 British gallon. Bushel= ‘96946 British bushel. Weight, as Great Britain.

See Kelly’s Universal Cambist ; Dourstber’s Dictionnaire Universelle des Poids et Mesures; Woolhouse, Weights and Measures; recent Reports of Board of Trade and Standards Department.

WEIMAR, the capital of the grand-duchy of Saxe- Weimar-Eisenach, the largest of the Thuringian states, is situated in a pleasant valley on the Ilm, 50 miles south- west of Leipsic and 136 miles south-west of Berlin. Containing no very imposing edifices, and plainly and irregularly built, the town presents at first a somewhat unpretending and even dull appearance ; but there is an air of elegance in its quiet and clean streets, which recalls the fact that it is the residence of a grand-duke and his court, and it still retains an indescribable atmosphere of refinement, dating from its golden age, when it won the titles of “ poets’ city” and “‘ the German Athens.” Weimar has now no actual importance, though it

will always remain a literary Mecca. It is a peaceful little German town, abounding in excellent educational, literary, artistic, and. benevolent institutions; its society is cultured, though perhaps a little narrow ; while the even tenour of its existence is undisturbed by any great commercial or manufacturing activity. The population in 1885 was 21,565; in 1782, six years after Goethe's arrival, it was about 7000; and in 1834, two years after his death, it was 10,638.

The reign of Goethe's friend and patron, the grand-duke Charles

Augustus (1775-1828), represents accurately enough the golden age of Weimar ; though even during the duke's minority, his mother,

theduchess Amalia " a Vat

had begun to make the little court a

focus of light and |_ "© JEG leading in Ger- many. The most SAD sf

striking building Fae in Weimar is the Bo extensive palace, erected for Charles Augustus under the superintendence of Goethe in 1789- 1808, in place of one burned down mo y 77 0: This building, with the associations of its erection, and its "noets' rooms," de- dicated to Goethe, Schiller, Herder, and Wieland, epi- tomizes the charac- teristics of the town. The main interest of Weimar centresin these men and their more or less illustrious con- temporaries; and, above all, Goethe, whose altar to the 'genius hujus loci" still stands in the ducal park, is himself the genius of the place, just as Shakespeare is of Stratford-on-Avon, or Luther of Wittenberg. Goethe's residence from 1782 to 1832 (now opened as a "Goethe museum," with his collections and other reminiscences), the simple " garden-house" in the park, where he spent many summers, Schiller's humble abode, where he lived from 1802 till his death in 1805, and the grand-ducal burial vault, where the two poets rest side by side, are among the most frequented pilgrim resorts in Germany. Rietschel's bronze group of Goethe and Schiller (unveiled in 1857) stands appropriately in front of the theatre (much altered in 1868) which attained such distinction under their combined auspices. Not far off is the

large and clumsy parish church, built about 1400, of which Herder became

Plan of Weimar.

52

& Fr

.

*Ai rg **

Close…...

See Report of Standards Department, 1884. (W.M. F. P.)

pastor in 1776; close to the church is his statue, and his house is still the parsonage. Within the church are the tombs of Herder and of Duke Bernhard of Weimar, the hero of the Thirty Years' War. The altar-piece—a Crucifixion—is said to be the masterpiece of Lucas Cranach, whose house is pointed out in the market-place. Wieland, who came to Weimar in 1772 as the duke's tutor, is also commemorated by a statue, and his house is indicated by a tablet. Among the other prominent buildings in Weimar are the library, containing 200,000 volumes and a valuable collection of portraits, busts, and literary and other curiosities ; the museum, built in 1863-68 in the Renaissance style; the ancient church of St James, with the tombs of Lucas Cranach and Museus; and the town-house, built in 1841, Various points in the environs of Weimar are also interesting from their associations. Separated from the town by the park, laid out in the so-called English style by Goethe, is the chateau of Belvedere, built in 1724. To the north-east is Tiefurt, often the scene of al-fresco plays, in which the courtiers were the actors and the rocks and trees the scenery; and to the north-west is the chateau of Ettersburg, another favourite resort of Charles Augustus and his court.

The history of Weimar, apart from its brilliant record at the end of the 18th and the beginning of the 19th century, is of compara- tively little

interest. The town is said to have existed in the 9th century, and in the 10th to have belonged to a collateral branch of the family of the counts of Orlamiinde. About 1376 it fell to the landgraves of Thuringia, and in 1440 it passed to the electors of Saxony. In 1806 it was visited by Napoleon, whose half-formed intention of abolishing the duchy was only averted by the tact and address of the duchess Luise. The Muses have never left Weimar. Since 1860 it has been the seat of a good school of painting, repre- sented by the landscape painters Preller, Kalckreuth, and Max Schmidt, and the historical painters Pauwels, Heumann, and Verlat. The frequent residence here also of the Abbé Liszt, from 1848 till his death in 1886, has preserved for Weimar quite an im- portant place in the musical world.

WEISSENFELS, an industrial town in the province of Saxony, Prussia, is situated on the Saale, 184 miles south- west of Leipsic and 19 miles south of Halle. It contains three churches, a spacious market-place, and various educational and benevolent institutions. The former palace, called the Augustusburg, built in 1664-90, occupies a site on a sandstone eminence near the town; this spacious edifice is now used as a military school. Weissenfels manufactures machinery, sugar, pasteboard, paper, leather goods, pottery, and gold and silver wares. It contains also an irou-foundry, and carries on trade in timber and grain. In the neighbourhood are large deposits of sandstone and lignite. Weissenfels is a place of considerable antiquity, and from 1657 till 1746 it was the capital of the dukes of Saxe-Weissenfels, a branch of the electoral house of Saxony. The body of Gustavus Adolphus was embalmed at Weissenfels after the battle of Liitzen. The population of the town in 1885 was 21,766.

WEKA, or Weexa. See OcyDROME.

WELLESLEY, Ricaarp Westey (or WELLESLEY), Marquis oF (1760-1842), eldest son of the first earl of Mornington, an Irish peer, and eldest brother of the duke of Wellington, was born June 20, 1760. He was sent to Eton, where he was distinguished as an excellent classical scholar, and to Christ Church, Oxford. 'By his father's death in 1781 he became earl of Mornington, taking his seat in the Irish House of Peers. In 1784 he entered the English House of Commons as member for Beeralston. Soon

after- wards he was appointed a lord of the treasury by Pitt, with whom he rapidly grew in favour. In 1793 he became a member of the board of control over Indian affairs; and, although he was best known to the public by his speeches

wo

492

in defence of Pitt's foreign policy, he was now gaining the acquaintance with Oriental affairs which made his rule over India so wonderfully effective from the moment when, in 1797, he accepted the office of governor-general. Wellesley seems in a peculiar manner to have caught Pitt's own large political spirit during the years of his intercourse with him from 1793 to 1797. With equally profound con- viction of the antagonism between the French republic and the interests of Great Britain all over the world, he had gained the same habit of dealing with political affairs in vast combinations and on the broadest survey. That Pitt and Wellesley had consciously formed the design of acquiring a great empire in India to compensate for the loss of the American colonies has not been proved ; but the rivalry with France, which in Europe placed England at the head of coalition after coalition against the French republic and empire, made Wellesley's rule in India an epoch of enormous and rapid extension of English power, On the journey outwards he formed, after a discussion at the Cape with officials and soldiers returning home, the design of annihilating French influence in the Deccan. Soon after his landing, in April 1798, he learnt that an alliance had actually been formed between Tippoo Saib and the French republic. Wellesley resolved to anticipate the action of the enemy, and ordered preparations for war. The invasion of Mysore followed in February 1799, and the campaign was brought to a rapid close by the capture of Seringapatam (see Inp1A and WetiineTon). In 1803 the restoration of the peshwa was taken in hand, which proved the prelude to the great Mahratta war against Sindhia and the raja of Berar. The result of these wars and of the treaties which followed them was that French influence in India was extinguished, that forty millions of population and ten millions of revenue were added to the British dominions, and that the

powers of the Mahratta and all other princes were so reduced that England became the really dominant authority over all India. Nor was Wellesley's rule distinguished only by conquest. He was an- excellent administrator, and sought to provide, by the foundation of the college of Fort William, for the training of a class of men adequate to the great work of governing India. In connexion with this college he established the governor-general's office, to which civilians who had shown great talent at the college were transferred, in order that they might learn something of the highest statesmanship in the immediate service of their chief. A free-trader, like Pitt, he endeavoured to remove some of the restrictions on the trade between England and India. Both the commer- cial policy of Wellesley and his educational projects brought him into hostility with the court of directors, and he more than once tendered his resignation, which, however, public necessities led him to postpone till the autumn of 1805. He reached England just in time to see Pitt before his death. On the fall of the coalition ministry in 1807 Wellesley (an English peer from 1797 and marquis in the peerage of Ireland from 1799) was invited by George ITT. to jom the duke of Portland's cabinet, but he declined, pending the discussion in parliament of certain charges brought against him in respect of his Indian administra- tion. Resolutions condemning him for the abuse of power were moved both in the Lords and Commons, but defeated by large majorities. In 1809 Wellesley was appointed ambassador to Spain. He landed at Cadiz just after the battle of Talavera, and endeavoured, but without "success, to bring the Spanish Government into effective co-operation with his brother, who, through the failure of his allies, was compelled to retreat into Portugal. A few months later, after the duel between Canning and Castlereagh and the resignation of both, Wellesley accepted the post of foreign secretary in Perceval's cabinet. He held this

office until February 1812, when he retired, partly from dissatisfaction at the inadequate support given to Welling- ton by the ministry, but also because he had become con- vinced that the question of Catholic

emancipation could no longer be kept in the background. From early life Wellesley had, unlike his brother, been an advocate of Catholic emancipation, and with the claim of the Irish Catholics to justice he henceforward identified himself. On Perceval's assassination he refused to join Lord Liver- pool's administration, and he remained out of office till 1821, criticizing with severity the proceedings of the congress of Vienna and the European settlement of 1814, which, while it reduced France to its ancient limits, left to the other great powers the territory that they had acquired by the partition of Poland and the destruction of Venice. He was one of the peers who signed the protest against the enactment of the Corn Laws in 1815. In 1821 he was appointed to the lord-lieutenancy of Ireland. Catholic emancipation had now become an open question in the cabinet, and Wellesley's acceptance of the viceroyalty was believed in Ireland to herald the immediate settlement of the Catholic claims. The Orange faction were incensed by the firmness with which their excesses were now repressed, and Wellesley was on'one occasion mobbed and insulted. But the hopes of the Catholics still remained unfulfilled. Lord Liverpool died without having grappled with the problem. Canning in turn passed away ; and on the assumption of office by Wellington, who was opposed to Catholic emancipation, his brother resigned the lord- lieutenancy. He had, however, the satisfaction of seeing the Catholic claims settled in the next year by the very statesmen who had declared against them. In 1833 he resumed the office of lord-lieutenant under Earl Grey, but the ministry fell a few months later, and, with one short exception, Wellesley did not further take part in official life. His old age, which was vigorous and animated to the last, was occupied with literary and classical pursuits. He died on September 26, 1842. He had no successor in the marquisate, but the earldom of Mornington and minor honours devolved on his brother William, Lord Mary- borough, on the failure of whose issue in 1863 they fell to the second duke of Wellington.

WELLINGBOROUGH, amarket-townof Northampton- shire, England, is situated on the declivity of a hill near the junction of the Ise with the Nen, and on the London and North-Western and Midland railway lints, 634 miles north-north-west of London, and 104 east-north-east of Northampton. The church of St Luke contains some Norman and Early English portions, with later work of various periods, and a Decorated

western tower and spire. The grammar-schools, founded in 1594 and endowed with the revenues of a suppressed guild, include a school of the second and a school of the third grade, the former a build- ing of red brick in the Renaissance style erected in 1880 at a cost of £6000, and the latter an old Elizabethan structure. Another educational endowment is Freeman's school, founded by John Freeman in 1711. There are also several charities. The market-place, situated in the centre of the town, was founded in 1874. The principal public buildings include the corn exchange (erected in 1861 at a cost of £4000), and the "Priory," an old residence now used for Sunday school and other parochial purposes. Formerly the town was famed for the chalybeate springs to which it owes its name. It is now of some importance as a centre of agricultural trade; but the staple industry is leather. A great impulse to the prosperity of the town was given by the introduction of the boot and shoe trade, especially the manufacture of uppers. Smelting, brewing, and iron-founding are also carried on, as well as the manu- facture of portable steam-engines. A coal depét of the

Midland Railway is also situated in the town. The popu- lation of the township and urban sanitary district (area 3992 acres) in 1871 was 9385 and in 1881 it was 13,794.

In 948 Edred gave the church at Wellingborough to Croyland abbey, and the grant was confirmed by King Edgar in 966. In the reign of Edward II. the abbot was lord in full. It received the grant of a market in the 2d year of King John. In 1621 it was visited by Charles I. and his queen, who resided in tents during a whole season that they might drink the waters. It was after its almost total destruction by fire in 1788 that the town was built on its present site on the hill.

WELLINGTON, a town of Shropshire, England, on the Great Western and London and North-Western rail- way lines, and on the Shropshire Union Canal, 1514 miles north-west of London, 11 east of Shrewsbury, and 31 north-west of Birmingham. The neighbourhood is pictur- esque, the Wrekin, about 14 miles from the town, rising to a height of 1320 feet. The church of All Saints, built in 1790, was restored in 1876, and again

in 1883. There are a number of charities. The manufacture of agricultural implements, iron and brass founding, and malting are carried on. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 352 acres) in 1871 was 5926, and in 1881 it was

6217.

Wellington, which is situated near the old Roman Watling Street, is referred to in Domesday as held by Earl Roger. It was grauted by King John to Thomas de Erdinton for serviccs rendered at Rome at the time of the interdict. It was held by Earl Edwin, but by the rebellion of Robert de Belesme was forfeited to the king. The church of Wellington was given by Earl Roger to Shrewsbury abbey. Wellington was the first rendezvous of Charles I., who on 19th September 1642 mustered his forces ncar the town.

WELLINGTON, a market-town of Somerset, England, is situated on a gentle elevation at the foot of the Black- downs near the river Tone, and on the Great Western Railway, 170 miles south-south-west of London, and 7 south-west of Taunton. The church of St John, a hand- some structure, with one of the characteristic Somersetshire towers, is of the Perpendicular style of architecture, except the nave, which is Early English. The church contains a monument to Sir J. Popham, lord justice of England in the time of Elizabeth and James I. Among other public buildings are the market-house or town-hall (1833), the West Somerset county school (1880), and the Popham hospital for aged men and women, founded by Sir John Popham in 1606 and rebuilt in 1833. On the highest summit of the Blackdowns, 24 miles south of the town, is a triangular stone tower erected in honour of the duke of Wellington, who took his title from the town. The staple industry is the woollen manufacture ; iron-founding and brick and tile making are also carried on. The population of the township and urban sanitary district (area 5195 acres) in 1871 was 6286, and in 1881 it was 6360.

King Alfred gave Wellington, with other two neighbouring manors, to Asser, who was afterwards raised to the sce of Sherborne, and died in 883. Subsequently it was conferred on Aldhelm, the first bishop of Wells. In Domesday it occurs as Wallintone, and is valued at £25. In the 2d of

Edward VI. the manor was granted by Bishop Barlow, together with the borough of Wellington, to Edward, duke of Somerset. On the duke's attainder it came to the crown, with whom it remained till the 22d of James I.

WELLINGTON, the chief town of Hutt county, New Zealand, and the seat of the colonial Government, is situated in the south-west of North Island, on the shores of Port Nicholson, in 41° 16' 25" S. lat. and 174° 47' 25" E. long., 80 miles east of Nelson, 160 south of New Plymouth, and 1200 south-east of Sydney. The imme- diate surroundings of Wellington were originally very uninviting, as it is walled in by high ranges unsuitable for tillage, but great enterprise has been shown in the con- struction of roads to the more fertile regions. Railways are being gradually extended towards both the north and the north-east. Owing to the prevalence of earthquakes the city is built chiefly of wood, but within recent years

there has been an increasing tendency to make use of concrete and brick. Among the principal public buildings are the Government house, the houses of legislature, the Government buildings, the new postal and telegraph office, Wellington college, St Patrick's Catholic college, the odd- fellows' hall, the freemasons' hall, the hospital, and the lunaticasylum. The city also possesses a colonial museum, an atheneum and mechanics' institute, a lyceum, and three theatres. The botanical gardens have an area of 100 acres. There is also a public park called the Town Belt. To supplement the water supply from two large reservoirs at Polhill's Gully, an aqueduct has lately been constructed from the Wainuiomata river, 16 miles distant, at an expense of £130,000.

Wellington was the first settlement of the New Zealand colonists. It owes its commercial prosperity and its selec- tion as the capital to its convenient and central position. It is the seat of both a Protestant and a Catholic see. The harbour, which has lately been extended and improved, is one of the best and safest in New Zealand. There is a lighthouse at the eastern entrance, on Pincarrow Head, opposite which is the pilot station. There are two large wharves, and in Evans Bay there is a patent slip capable of

receiving vessels of 2000 tons. As a shipping port Wellington ranks next to Auckland and Lyttelton. It possesses foundries, shipbuilding yards, boot factories, soap and candle works, tanneries, woollen, coffee, flour, and saw mills, breweries, aerated water works, coach factories, brick and tile works, and a very extensive meat- preserving establishment, which exports large supplies to Europe. The area of the municipal borough is 1100 acres, and from 4176 in 1861 the population increased to 13,488 in 1871 and 20,563 in 1881, while in 1886 the city and suburbs had 27,833 inhabitants.

WELLINGTON, Artuur WELLESLEY, DUKE oF (1769- 1852), was the fourth son of Garrett, earl of Mornington, now remembered only as a musician. He was descended from the family of Colley or Cowley, which had been settled in Ireland for some centuries. The duke's grand- father assumed the name of Wesley on succeeding to the estates of Mr Garrett Wesley, a kinsman of the famous divine; the affinity between the families of Colley and Wesley rests, however, on nothing nearer than a common ancestor in the 15th century. In the duke's early letters the family name is spelt Wesley ; the change to Wellesley seems to have been made about 1790. Arthur (born in Ireland in the spring of 17691) was sent to Eton, and subsequently to the military college at Angers. He entered the army as ensign of the 73d regiment in 1787, passed rapidly through the subaltern grades, became major of the 33d, and purchased the lieutenant-colonelcy of that regiment in 1793 with money advanced to him by his eldest brother. Before reaching full age he was returned to the Irish parliament by the family borough of Trim. Little is known of his history during these years; but neither in boyhood nor early youth does he appear to have made any mark among his contemporaries. His first experience of active service was in the disastrous campaign of 1794-95, when the British force under the duke of York was driven out of Holland by Pichegru. In 1796 he was sent with his regiment to India.

the world, but we have his own testimony that it was during these years of obscurity that he qualified himself in one direction for the great military career before him. As colonel commanding a regiment he gained the most minute and accurate acquaintance with every detail of the soldier's life, learned the precise amount of food

1 In Merrion Street, Dublin, or at Dungan Castle, Meath, towards the end of April or on Ist May; but both place and date are uncertain.

Three Indian years more passed before Wellesley became known to S¢vice.

required for every mouth, the exact weight that could be carried, the distances that could be traversed without exhaustion, the whole body of conditions in short which govern the activity both in peace and war of man and beast. It was to this absolutely complete knowledge of practical details that Wellington ascribed in great part his own success in the highest commands. It is probable, moreover, that he at this time made a serious study of the science and history of warfare. His training at the college of Angers is not sufficient to account for his great technical knowledge ; no record, however, exists of the stages by which this was acquired. In 1798 Colonel Wellesley's eldest brother, Lord Mornington, afterwards marquis of Wellesley, arrived in India as governor-general. The war with Tippoo Saib followed. The 33d regiment was attached to the subsidiary force furnished by the nizam, and Colonel Wellesley was entrusted with the command of this division, under the orders of General Harris. In a preliminary attack upon the works of Seringapatam Wellesley met with a repulse; in the successful assault upon the town he commanded the reserve. Though his military services in this short campaign were not of a striking character, he was appointed by his brother to the supreme military and political command in Mysore. His great faculties now for the first time found opportunity for their exercise. In the settlement and administration of the conquered territory Wellesley rapidly acquired the habits and experience of a statesman. Nor, in the midst of his work of peaceful reorganization, was it possible for him to abandon the life of the soldier. The frontiers of Mysore were harassed by independent chieftains or marauders, especially by one Doondiah, an energetic leader, who had assumed the title of "' the king of two worlds." Wellesley's operations against Doondiah were conducted with extraordinary energy ; his marches in pursuit were prodigious, and his final success complete. More im- portant, however, than the military side

of these operations was their political character. When pressed in Mysore, Doondiah moved into Mahratta territory, and into this, territory it was necessary for Wellesley to follow him. Here, negotiating and bargaining with the Mahratta chiefs, Wellesley acquired a knowledge of their affairs and an in- fluence over them such as no other Englishman possessed. Simple and honourable himself, he was shrewd and pene- trating in his judgment of Orientals ; and, unlike his great predecessor Clive, he rigidly adhered to the rule of good faith in his own actions, however depraved and however exasperating the conduct of those with whom he had to deal. The result of Wellesley's singular personal ascend- ency among the Mahrattas came into full view when the Mahratta war broke out. In the meantime, however, his Indian career seemed likely to be sacrificed to the calls of warfare in another quarter. Wellesley was ordered by the governor-general, in December 1800, to take command of a body of troops collected for foreign service at Trincoma- lee, in Ceylon. It was at first intended that these troops should act against Java or Mauritius ; their destination

was, however, altered to Egypt, and a notification was –

made to Wellesley that in consequence of this change General Baird would be placed in command above him. Though deeply offended at the loss of the command, Wellesley so completely sank all personal grievance in hig devotion to the public cause that, in opposition to his instructions, and at the risk of incurring severe censure, he moved the troops on his own responsibility from Trincomalee to Bombay, from the conviction that, if they were to be of any use in Egypt, it was absolutely necessary that they should provision at Bombay without delay. The documents in which Wellesley justified this step prove his singularly clear and profound acquaintance with the

conditions of a successful invasion of Egypt from India. At Bombay Wellesley was attacked by fever, and prevented from going on to Egypt. He returned with great satis- faction to his government in Mysore, where he remained until the Mahratta war broke out.

been overthrown by his rivals Holkar and others, and he had himself fled from Poona to Bassein on the coast. By the treaty of Bassein, made in

December 1802, the Indian Government entered into an alliance with this potentate, and pledged itself to restore his authority. Wellesley was placed in command of the army charged with this task. Starting from Seringapatam, he crossed the frontier on March 12, 1803, and moved through the southern Mahratta territory on Poona. The march was one unbroken success. Wellesley's own arrangements, which displayed the utmost forethought and sagacity in dealing with the physical conditions to be encountered on the march, would no doubt have secured his victory had resistance been encountered; but his personal and diplo- matic ascendency among the chieftains of the district worked even more powerfully than the fear of his arms. No hand was raised against him, and a march of six hundred miles was conducted without even a skirmish. "The confidence and respect of every class in the provinces south of the Kistna," wrote Major Malcolm, the political agent who accompanied the march, "is in a very great degree personal to Major-General Wellesley. To the admiration which the Mahratta chiefs entertain for that officer's military character, and the firm reliance which the inhabitants place on his justice and protection, the extra- ordinary success which has hitherto attended the progress of the march must be principally attributed." Wellesley had intended to reach Poona on the 23d of April. On the night of the 18th, when 60 miles distant from Poona, he re- ceived intelligence that Amrut Rao, a rival of the peshwa's, intended to burn the city at the approach of the English. Counting no moment to be lost, Wellesley pressed on with the cavalry, accomplished the march of 60 miles in thirty-two hours, and entered Poona on the afternoon of the 20th, in time to save the city from destruction. The peshwa was now restored to power, and entered into various military obligations with Wellesley, which he very imper- fectly fulfilled.

In the meantime Sindhia and Holkar, with the raja of Berar, maintained a doubtful but threatening aspect farther north. It was uncertain whether or not a con- federacy of the northern Mahrattas had been formed against the British Government. In these critical circum- stances, while peace and war hung in the balance, Wellesley was charged with " the general direction and control of all the military and political affairs of the British Government in the territories of the nizam, of the peshwa, and of the Mabhratta states and chiefs." Acting in execution of these powers, he

required Sindhia, as a proof of good faith, to withdraw to the north of the Nerbudda. Sindhia not doing so, war was declared on August 6, 1803. Wellesley marched northwards, captured Ahmadnagar on August 11, crossed the Godavery ten days later, and moved against the combined forces of Sindhia and the rajah of Berar. Colonel Stevenson was meanwhile approaching with a second division from the east, and it was intended that the two corps should unite in an attack on the enemy. On the 23d of September Wellesley supposed himself to be still some miles from the Mahratta headquarters ; he suddenly found that the entire forces of Sindhia and the rajah of Berar were close in front of him at Assaye. Weighing the dangers of delay, of retreat, and of an attack with his own unsupported division, Wellesley convinced himself that an immediate attack, though against greatly

The power of the Mahratta peshwa, nominally supreme in the Mahratta territory, had war.

superior forces in a strong position, was the wisest course. He threw himself upon the Mahratta host, and ultimately gained a complete victory, though with the loss of 2500 men out of a total probably not much exceeding 7000. In comparison with the battle of Assaye, all fighting that had hitherto taken place in India was child's play. The enemy's artillery was of the most formidable character, and worked with deadly effect. A hundred cannon were taken by the conqueror, who now, uniting with Stevenson's division, followed up the pursuit, and brought the war to a close by a second victory at Argaum on November 29. The treaties with Sindhia and the raja of Berar which followed the overthrow of their arms, and which marked the downfall of the Mahratta power, were negotiated and signed by Wellesley in the course of the following month. Not yet thirty-five years old, Wellesley had proved himself as thorough a master in the sphere of Indian statesmanship and diplomacy as on the field of battle. Had his career ended at this time, his despatches on the negotiations with the Mahrattas and on the general conduct of Indian policy would have proved him to have been one of the wisest and

attack of Victor, who had defeated Cuesta and driven him

back on the English. The battle was begun on the 27th Battle of Wellesley gained a Talavera.

and continued on the 28th of July. complete victory, and decisively proved the superiority of English troops under his command over those of the enemy. But within the next few days Soult's approach on the line of communication was discovered. It was impossible for Wellesley to follow up his advantages. The victory of Talavera had brought prestige but nothing else. Superi- ority of numbers had made the French the real winners of the campaign, and Wellesley, disgusted with his Spanish allies, had no choice but to withdraw into Portugal and there stand upon the defensive. A peerage, with the title of Viscount Wellington, was conferred upon him for his victory at Talavera.

Up to this time Napoleon, with the bulk of his armies, had been occupied with the war against Austria. The peace of Vienna, concluded in October 1809, made him free to throw an almost unlimited force into the Spanish Peninsula. Wellington, foreseeing that Portugal would now be invaded by a very powerful army, began the

strongest heads that have ever served England in the East. In the spring of 1805 Wellesley, now Sir Arthur, quitted

fortification of the celebrated lines of Torres Vedras, which Lines of

followed the mountain-bastion on the north of Lisbon, and Torres

India and returned home.. Vedras.

Service in the

Penin- sula,

He was immediately sent on the expedition to Hanover which was rendered abortive by the battle of Austerlitz. In 1806 he was elected member of parliament for the borough of Rye, and in the following year

was appointed Irish secretary. After serving in this office for a few months he was employed in the expedition against Copenhagen, where little glory was to be gained. In the summer of 1808 he took command of a body of troops destined to operate against the French in Spain or Portugal. Finding that the junta of Corunna wished for no foreign soldiery, he proceeded to fulfil his instructions by acting against Junot at Lisbon. He landed at Mondego Bay in the first week of August, and moved southwards, driving in the enemy's posts at Rolica on August 17. On the 21st the battle of Vimiero was fought and won. In the midst of this engagement, however, Sir Harry Burrard landed, and superseded Wellesley in the command. Wellesley in vain called upon this general to follow up the pursuit when the victory was gained. The consequence was that Junot's army, which would have been captured or annihilated if Wellesley's advice had been executed, escaped into a position which secured it the means of retreat if favourable terms of capitulation were refused. The convention of Cintra provided for the evacuation of Portugal by the French, but it gave Junot and all his troops a free return to France. So great was the public displeasure in England at the escape of the enemy that a court of inquiry was held into all the circumstances attending the convention of Cintra. At this inquiry the rejection of Wellesley's counsels by his superior officer at the close of the battle of Vimiero was fully proved.

After the failure of Sir John Moore's campaign in the winter of 1808-9, Wellesley, who had in the meantime resumed his duties as Irish secretary, returned to the Peninsula as chief in command. His first move was against Soult, who had captured Oporto. He drove the French out of this city by a singularly bold and fortunate attack, and then prepared to march against Madrid by the valley of the Tagus. Some appearance of additional strength was given him by the support of a Spanish army under General Cuesta ; but his movements were delayed by the neglect and bad faith of the Spanish Government, and time was given to Soult to collect a large force at Salamanca, with which he intended to fall upon the English line of communications. Wellesley, unconscious of Soult's presence in force on his flank, advanced against Madrid, and finally drew up at Talavera to meet the

left no single point open between the Tagus and the sea. The English army in the meantime wintered in the neigh- bourhood of Almeida. As summer approached Welling- ton's anticipations were realized. Mass¢na, who had distin- guished himself above every other general in the Austrian war of 1809, arrived in Spain, and moved against Portugal with an army of 70,000 men. Wellington was unable to prevent Ciudad Rodrigo from falling into the hands of the French. He retreated down the valley of the Mondego, devastating the country, and at length halted at Busaco, and gave battle. The French attack was repelled, but other roads were open to the invader, and Wellington continued his retreat. Masséna followed, and heard for the first time of the fortifications of Torres Vedras when he was within five days' march of them. On approaching the mountain-barrier the French general sought in vain for an unprotected point. It was with the utmost difficulty, while waiting for reinforcements, that he could keep his army from starving. At length, when the country was utterly exhausted, he commenced his retreat. Wellington descended from the heights, but his marching-force was too weak to risk a pitched battle. Masséna was in con- sequence able to maintain himself at Santarem for the winter. But in the spring of 1811 Wellington received reinforcements from England. He now moved against the enemy. Masséna retreated northwards, devastating the country with unsparing severity in order to check the pursuit. Such were the sufferings of his army, both in the invasion and in the retreat, that, although only one battle was fought during the campaign, the French, when they re-entered Spain, had lost 30,000 men.

In the meantime Soult, who was besieging Cadiz, had received orders from Napoleon to move to the support of Masséna. Leaving part of his force in front of Cadiz, he marched northwards and captured Badajoz. Here, how- ever, he learnt that Masséna was in full retreat, and also that his own army besieging Cadiz had been attacked and beaten. He in consequence returned and resumed the blockade. Wellington, freed from pressure on the south, and believing Masséna to be thoroughly disabled, con- sidered that the time had come for an advance into Spain. The fortresses of Almeida, Ciudad Rodrigo, and Badajoz had to be recaptured from the French. Leaving a small force to besiege Almeida, Wellington went southwards to arrange with Beresford for the siege of Badajoz.

During his absence Masséna again took the field, and marched to the relief of Almeida. Wellington returned in time to

Badajoz captured.

Advance into Spain.

Battle of Sala- manca,

496

defeat him at Fuentes d'Onoro, and Almeida passed into the hands of the British. In the south Soult advanced to the relief of Badajoz. He was overthrown by Beresford at Albuera ; but the junction of the two French armies compelled the English to raise the siege, and Wellington had to retire within the Portuguese frontier. Moving northwards with the view of laying siege to Ciudad Rodrigo, he was again outnumbered by the French, and forced to withdraw to cantonments on the Coa.

Wellington had from the first seen that, whatever number of men Napoleon might send against Portugal, it was impossible, owing to the poverty of the country, that any great mass of troops could long be held together. The French generals, by combining their armies, might for a while be superior to him, but the want of provisions would inevitably lead to their separation after a longer or shorter interval. This was verified at the end of 1811. Soult's division had to move southwards for support, and the English were again more than a match for the enemy in front of them. Wellington resumed the offensive, and on the 19th of January 1812 Ciudad Rodrigo was taken by storm. The road into Spain was now open; it only remained to secure Portugal itself and the line of com- munication by the capture of Badajoz. Wellington crossed the Tagus and completed the investment of this fortress by the middle of March. It was necessary at whatever cost to anticipate the arrival of Soult with a relieving army, and on the 6th of April Wellington ordered the assault. The fearful slaughter which took place before the British were masters of the defences caused Wellington to be charged with indifference to the loss of human life ; but, whatever faults may have been made in the actual operations, a postponement of the attack would merely have resulted in more battles

against Soult, in which a greater number of men would have perished. Of all generals Wellington was the last to throw away a single life needlessly.

The advance into Spain against the French line of com- munication between Madrid and the Pyrenees was now begun. Marmont, who had succeeded Masséna in the command, fell back and allowed Wellington to occupy Salamanca ; but on reaching the Douro he turned upon his assailant, and, by superior swiftness in marching, threatened to cut the English off from Portugal. Wellington now retreated as far as Salamanca, and there extricated himself from his peril by one of the most brilliant victories which he ever gained (July 22). The French fell back on Burgos. Instead of immediately following them, which from a military point of view would have been the better course, Wellington thought it wise to advance upon the Spanish capital. King Joseph retired southwards and the English entered Madrid in triumph. The political effect of this act was very great, but the delay gave the French northern army time to rally. On march- ing against them Wellington was checked by the obstinate defence of Burgos. Moreover, in consequence of the loss of the capital, Soult was now ordered to raise the siege of Cadiz, and to move to the support of King Joseph. Gathering his forces, and uniting them with the French army of the centre, he pressed on towards Madrid. It was impossible for Wellington to maintain his position, and he was compelled once more to retire into Portugal, while Madrid passed back into the hands of the French. During this his last retreat the demoralization and misconduct of the British army surpassed anything that their chief had ever witnessed. The effect of the campaign was, however, that Cadiz was free, and that the southern provinces were finally cleared of the invader.

Wellington was now invested by the cortes with the supreme command of the Spanish armies. He visited

WELLINGTON

Cadiz in December 1812, and offered counsels of modera- tion to the democratic assembly, which were not followed. During the succeeding months he was occupied with plans and preparations for a great combined attack, and at length, in May 1813, the hour for his final and victorious advance arrived. The disasters of the Russian campaign had compelled Napoleon to withdraw some of his best regiments from the Peninsula. Against a weakened and discouraged adversary Wellington took the field with greatly increased numbers, and with the utmost confidence of victory. His design was to throw himself directly upon the French line of communication, keeping his left pushed forward in advance of his centre, so as to threaten the envelopment of the fortified posts held by the enemy. Napoleon had foreseen that this would be the strategy of the English commander, and had ordered King Joseph to neglect every point to the centre and east, and to concen- trate at Valladolid. This order had been but imperfectly obeyed. The advance of the allied army was irresistible. Position after position was evacuated by the French, until Wellington, driving everything before him, came up with

the retreating enemy at Vitoria, now encumbered with an Battle of enormous train of fugitives, and with the spoils of five Vitoria.

years' occupation of Spain. His victory, won on the 21st of June, was overwhelming. All the artillery and almost all the treasure and stores of the French army fell into the hands of the conquerors. It only remained for Napoleon to commit to Marshal Soult, as his lieutenant, the task of defending the Pyrenees, and of delivering, if possible, the fortresses of St Sebastian and Pamplona, which Wellington now besieged. Soult's combats in the Pyrenees, and the desperate resistance of St Sebastian, prolonged the struggle through the autumn of 1813, and cost the English torrents of blood. But at length the frontier was passed, and after a succession of encounters on French soil Soult was forced back into his entrenched camp at Bayonne. Both armies now rested for some weeks,

during which interval Wellington gained the con- fidence of the inhabitants of the district by his unsparing repression of marauding, his business-like payment for supplies, and the excellent discipline which he maintained among his soldiers. In February 1814 the advance was renewed. The Adour was crossed, and Soult, leaving a garrison in Bayonne, fell back on Orthes. At Orthes he was attacked and defeated. Bordeaux now declared in favour of the Bourbons and admitted the English. Soult's last move was upon Toulouse. Here, after the allies had entered Paris, but before the abdication of Napoleon had become known, the last battle of the war was fought.

where he was received with extraordinary honours.

After the treaty of Paris (May 30) Wellington was Ambas- appointed British ambassador at the French capital. sador at | During the autumn and winter of 1814 he witnessed and Ps

reported the mistakes of the restored Bourbon dynasty, and warned his Government of the growing danger from conspiracies and from the army, which was visibly hostile to the Bourbons. '" The truth is," he wrote, 'that the king of France without the army is no king." His insight, however, did not extend beyond the circumstances immediately before and around him, and he entirely failed to apprehend the fact that the great mass of the French nation was still with Napoleon at heart. He remained in France until February 1815, when, in con- sequence of the return of Lord Castlereagh to England to meet the House of Commons, he took that minister's place at the congress of Vienna. All the great questions of the congress had already been settled, and Wellington's diplomatic work here was not of importance. His im-

Peace being proclaimed, Wellington took Return to | leave of his army at Bordeaux, and returned to England, England. |

The Hundred

Days.

Waterloo,

Restora- tion of the Bour- bons,

WELLINGTON

perfect acquaintance with French feeling was strikingly proved in the despatch which he sent home on learning of Napoleon's escape from Elba. 'He has acted," he wrote, "upon false or no information, and the king (Louis XVIII.) will destroy him without difficulty and in a short time." Almost before Wellington's unfor- tunate prediction could reach London, Louis had fled beyond the frontier, and France was at Napoleon's feet. The ban of the congress, however, went out against the common enemy of mankind, and the presence of Wellington at Vienna enabled the allies at once to decide upon their plans for the campaign. To Wellington and Bliicher was committed the invasion of France from the north, while the Russians and Austrians entered it from the east. Pre- parations were pushed forward, and it was supposed that the war would be opened by an attack upon Alsace about the middle of June. Wellington, with 35,000 English troops and about 60,000 Dutch, Germans, and Belgians, took his post in the Netherlands, guarding the country west of the Charleroi road. Bliicher, with 120,000 Prussians, lay between Charleroi, Namur, and Liége. In the meantime Napoleon had outstripped the preparations of his adversaries, and by the 13th of June had con- centrated 130,000 men on the northern frontier about Philippeville. It now became known to the allied leaders that large French forces were near at hand, but Wellington believed that Napoleon himself was still in Paris, and still expected that the war would be opened by a forward movement of Schwarzenberg into Alsace. He was, more- over, strongly of opinion that, if Napoleon did take up the offensive on the north, he would throw himself upon the west of the English line and endeavour to cut the English off from the sea. Persuaded that the danger lay rather towards the coast than at the centre of the Anglo-Prussian line, he kept his forces farther westward than he would have done if he had known Napoleon's real intentions. Although the French advance on the centre became evident at the front on the morning of the 14th, it was unknown to Wellington till the afternoon of the 15th (after the Prussians had been driven out of Charleroi) that the French had made any movement whatever. How it was that the advance remained unknown to Wellington

for twenty-four hours has not been explained; had he learnt of it at once, he would probably have been able to reach Ligny with sufficient force to turn the Prussian defeat into a victory and to end the war at one blow. Commencing his concentration eastwards twenty-four hours too late, he was unable to fulfil his design of assisting Bliicher. Ney, getting a start on the Brussels road, kept the English occupied at Quatre Bras during the 16th, while Napoleon was dealing with the Prussians at Ligny,— though the ultimate defeat of the French at Quatre Bras, and Napoleon's own failure to follow up his victory at Ligny by a rapid pursuit, rendered it possible for the allies to effect two days later the combination which they had failed to effect at Ligny. On the morning of Sunday, June 18, Wellington, assured of Bliicher's assistance, awaited Napoleon's attack on the memorable plain of Waterloo. How, at the head of 30,000 English and 40,000 mixed troops, he withstood the onslaught of the French army, and ultimately, in union with Bliicher, swept them from the field, needs not to be recounted here.

Ending his military career with one of the greatest achievements in history, Wellington suddenly became, from the peculiar circumstances of the moment, the most influential politician in Europe. The czar and the emperor of Austria were still at Nancy when Paris surrendered. Vellington had reason to believe that Alexander bore so hostile a feeling towards Louis XVIII. that, if matters were not settled before the arrival of the czar at Paris, the

Bourbon dynasty might not be restored at all. He there- fore took affairs into his own hands, and concluded an arrangement whereby the regicide Fouché, at that moment the most powerful man in Paris, was accepted as the minister of Louis XVIII. The difficulties which might otherwise have been thrown in the way of this monarch's return to the Tuileries by the troops or by the populace of Paris were thus removed; and when Alexander arrived he found Louis XVIII. already in possession. The negotiation with Fouché was not a dignified episode in Wellington's life; he stooped, however, to a somewhat humiliating expedient in order to

avert substantial mischief. The next manifestation of his personal ascend- ency was of a finer kind.

territory, Prussia demanded, as a guarantee against re- newed aggression, the annexation of Alsace and Lorraine. The British cabinet at first inclined to the Prussian view. Wellington, however, argued strongly for the opposite policy. He urged that the Bourbon dynasty would be hopelessly discredited if its second restoration were ac- companied by the loss of the border provinces ; that the allies had in their proclamations distinguished between the cause of Napoleon and the cause of the French people; and that the French people, by refraining from offering any general resistance, had shown their practical accept- ance of this distinction and so entitled themselves to the advantages held out in it. Wellington's arguments brought the English Government round to his own view, and so turned the balance in favour of the czar's policy of forbearance and against the annexations demanded by Prussia. The policy which he thus successfully advocated has naturally been condemned by most German statesmen and historians; but its justification is to be found in the long continuance of the peace of 1815, a continuance which would hardly have been possible if the recovery of Alsace and Lorraine had been added to the other motives which, during the next thirty years, repeatedly brought France to the verge of war.

Peace being concluded, Wellington was appointed commander-in-chief of the joint army of occupation, by which it was stipulated that France should be watched for the next five years. The administrative duties attaching to this post, and the reconstruction of the military frontier of the Netherlands, were, however, but a sinall part of the work now imposed upon him. In conjunction, and some- times in rivalry, with the representatives of the other powers, he observed the course of French politics, coun- selling King Louis XVIII., checking to the best of his ability the extravagances of the count of Artois and the ultra-royalist party, and advancing the financial negotia- tions with Messrs Baring which enabled the French Government to pay the indemnities due from it, and thus rendered it possible for the powers to reduce the period of occupation from five to three years. When this re- duction was first proposed, Wellington had not been con- fident of its wisdom; he

subsequently became convinced that it might be granted with safety, and at the congress of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1818 he supported the proposal for the immediate evacuation of France, though this cut short by two years his own tenure of an office of almost unparalleled influence and emolument. Returning to England, he sank into the comparative insignificance of master-general of the ordnance, with a seat in the cabinet. For the next three years he was little before the world ; but in 1822, on the death of Castlereagh, he was sent in the place of this minister to represent Great Britain at the congress of Verona.

XV = 563

*The conditions of peace with Condi- France had to be determined by the allies; and, while the tions of czar urged that France should be left with undiminished ?°****

The main question before the Congress congress was the policy to be adopted with regard to ofVerona.

Negotia- tions at St Peters- burg.

498

the Spanish movement, whether called revolutionary or constitutional, by which the absolute monarchy of King Ferdinand had been overthrown. It was the settled policy of the British Government to oppose any joint intervention of the powers in Spain ; it was not, however, known at London before Wellington set out that the pro- ject of intervention yet existed anywhere in a definite form. In passing through Paris the duke discovered the danger to be more imminent than had been supposed ; he also learnt that, whatever might be the intentions of the French Government with regard to intervention in Spain by its own army, it was determined under no circumstances to give Russian troops a passage through France. No sooner had Wellington arrived at Verona than he found that the czar was bent upon obtaining a joint declaration of all the powers condemning the Spanish constitution, and committing to the Russian army, as the mandatory of Europe, the task of overthrowing it. In pursuance of his instructions, Wellington now stated that Great Britain

would rather sever itself from the European alliance cemented at Aix-la-Chapelle than consent to any such joint declaration ; and the information which he had privately acquired at Paris enabled him to inform the ezar that his project of employing Russian troops in Spain would certainly be thwarted by France. Armed with these two powerful arguments—the one public and official, the other personal and private-—-Wellington had no great difficulty in preventing the summary framing of a decree against Spain like that which had been issued two years before by the congress of Troppau against the constitution of Naples. In this respect the British Government had gained its point; but its success was apparent rather than real. Although the congress of Verona published no declaration of joint European action against the Spanish constitution, it was not in Wellington's power to prevent the negotiations which followed between the French representative and the three Eastern courts. Out of these negotiations arose the French attack upon Spain in 1823, accompanied by diplomatic action on the part of the Eastern powers which rendered the restoration of Spanish absolutism more complete and more unqualified than it would have been if France had entered upon the work entirely alone.

In the cabinet of Lord Liverpool the influence of Canning had, since Castlereagh's death, been predominant on all matters of foreign policy. Though Wellington disliked the tone of defiance frequently used by Canning towards the autocratic courts, he was sincerely at one with Canning's Spanish policy ; he did not oppose his recog- nition of the independence of the South-American re- publics; and, when Canning, abandoning his position of passive neutrality between the Turkish Government and insurgent Greece, proposed to attempt joint diplomatic action with Russia in hope of terminating the struggle, the duke was willing to co-operate in this policy within certain limits. Canning, while really anxious to assist the Greeks, based his new policy officially on the need of preventing Russia from acting alone. With the duke, the design of putting a check upon Russia was the sole active motive. He cared nothing whatever for the Greeks, but he did feel anxious to prevent Russia from making their cause a pre- text of war with the Porte. He therefore consented, on the coronation of the ezar Nicholas in 1826, to carry pro- posals to St Petersburg for the diplomatic co-operation of Russia and

England in bringing about a settlement of the Greek question. On the 4th of April 1827 the protocol of St Petersburg was signed, by which the two powers agreed that the mediation of England should be offered to the Porte, on terms that Greece should be granted local autonomy, but remain part of the Ottoman empire and

WELLINGTON

tributary to the sultan. No provision was made for further action in case the Porte should not. accept England's mediation on these terms, nor was employment of force even alluded to. Scarcely had this protocol been signed when the accession of Canning to the premiership caused Wellington to withdraw from the Government. He was willing to serve with Canning under a common leader, but would not serve under him. The effect of his withdrawal was momentous in its bearing upon Eastern affairs. Canning, freed from Wellington's restraint, carried his intervention on behalf of Greece a step further, and con- cluded, on the 27th of July, the treaty of London, whereby France, England, and Russia bound themselves to put an end to the conflict in the East and to enforce the condi- tions of the St Petersburg protocol upon the belligerents. Against this treaty Wellington protested, on the ground that it "specified means of compulsion which were neither more nor less than measures of war." His apprehensions were fulfilled by the battle of Navarino.

Canning died in August 1827, and on the fall of Lord Prime Goderich's cabinet five months later Wellington became minister.

prime minister. He had declared some time before that it would be an act of madness for him to take this post ; but the sense of public duty led him to accept it when it was pressed upon him by the king. His cabinet included at the first Huskisson, Palmerston, and other followers of Canning. The repeal of the Test and Corpor- ation Acts having been carried in the House of Commons in the session of 1828, Wellington, to the great disap- pointment of Tories like Lord Eldon, recommended the House of Lords not to offer further resistance, and the measure was accordingly carried through. Soon after- wards a quarrel between the duke and Huskisson led to the retirement from the ministry of all its more liberal members. It was now hoped by the so-called Protestant party that

Wellington, at the head of a more united cabinet, would offer a steady resistance to Catholic eman- cipation. Never were men more bitterly disappointed.

The Clare election and the progress of the Catholic Catholic Association convinced both Wellington and Peel that the emanci-

*tine had come when Catholic emancipation must be P**

granted ; and, submitting when further resistance would have led to civil war, the ministry itself brought in at the beginning of the session of 1829 a bill for the relief of the Catholics. Wellington, who had hitherto always op- posed Catholic emancipation, explained and justified his change of front in simple and impressive language. His undoubted seriousness and his immense personal reputation did not, however, save him from the excesses of calumny and misinterpretation; and in order to impose some modera- tion upon his aspersers the duke thought it necessary to send a challenge to one of the most violent of these, the earl of Winchelsea. No mischief resulted from the encounter.

Catholic emancipation was the great act of Wellington's ministry ; in other respects his tenure of office was not marked by much success. The imagination and the breadth of view necessary to a statesman of the highest order were not part of his endowment, nor had he the power of working harmoniously with his subordinates.

tion.

His Eastern policy was singularly short-sighted. There Hastern might have been good reason, from Wellington's point policy.

of view, for condemning Canning's treaty of London ; but when, in consequence of this treaty, the battle of Navarino had been fought, the Turkish fleet sunk, and the independence of Greece practically established, it was the weakest of all possible courses to withdraw England from its active intervention, and to leave to Russia the gains of a private and isolated war. This, however, was Wellington's policy; and, having permitted Russia tc go

Agitation for re- form.

Fall of Welling- tonminis- try.

Later life.

to war alone in 1828, nothing remained for him but to treat Greece as a pawn in Russia's hands, and to cut down the territory of the Greek kingdom to the narrowest possible limits, as if the restoration to the sultan of an inaccessible mountain-tract, inhabited by the bitterest of his enemies, could permanently add to the strength of the Ottoman empire. The result was the renunciation of the Greek crown by Prince Leopold ; and, although, after the fall of Wellington's ministry, a somewhat better frontier was given to Greece, it was then too late to establish this kingdom in adequate strength, and to make it, as it might have been made, a counterpoise to Russia's influence in the Levant. Nor was the indulgence shown by the cabinet towards Dom Miguel and the absolutists of Portugal quite worthy of England. That Wellington actively assisted despotic Governments against the constitutional movements of the time is not true. He had indeed none of the sympathy with national causes which began to influence British policy under Canning, and which became so powerful under Palmerston; but the rule which he followed in foreign affairs, so far as he considered it possible, was that of non-intervention.

As soon as Catholic emancipation was carried, the demand for a reform of: parliament agitated Great Britain from end to end. The duke was ill-informed as to the real spirit of the nation. He conceived the agitation for reform to be a purely fictitious one, worked up by partisans and men of disorder in their own interest, and expressing no real want on the part of the public at large. Met with a firm resistance, it would, he believed, vanish away, with no worse result than the possible plunder of a few houses by the city mobs. Thus wholly unaware of the strength of the forces which he was pro- voking, the duke, at the opening of the parliament which met after the death of George IV., declared against any parliamentary reform whatever. This declaration led to the immediate fall of his Government. Lord Grey, the chief of the new ministry, brought in

the Reform Bill, which was resisted by Wellington as long as anything was to be gained by resistance. When the creation of new peers was known to be imminent, Wellington was among those who counselled the abandonment of a hopeless struggle. His opposition to reform made him for a while unpopular. He was hooted by the mob on the anniversary of Waterloo, and considered it necessary to protect the windows of Apsley House with iron shutters.

For the next two years the duke was in opposition. On the removal of Lord Althorp to the House of Lords in 1834, King William IV. unexpectedly dismissed the Whig ministry and requested Wellington to forma cabinet. The duke, however, recommended that Peel should be at the head of the Government, and served under him, during the few months that his ministry lasted, as foreign secretary. On Peel's later return to power in 1841 Wellington was again in the cabinet, but without departmental office beyond that of commander-in-chief. He supported Peel in his Corn- Law legislation, and throughout all this later period of his life, whether in office or in opposition, gained the admiration of discerning men, and excited the wonder of zealots, by his habitual subordination of party spirit and party connexion to whatever appeared to him the real interest of the nation. On Peel's defeat in 1846, the duke retired from active public life. He was now nearly eighty. His organization of the military force in London against the Chartists in April 1848, and his letter to Sir John Burgoyne on the defences of the country, proved that the old man had still something of his youth about him. But the general character of Wellington's last years was rather that of the old age of a great man idealized. To the unbroken splendours of his military career, to his honour-

able and conscientious labours as a parliamentary states- man, life unusually prolonged added an evening of impressive beauty and calm. The passions excited during the stormy epoch of the Reform Bill had long passed away. Venerated and beloved by the greatest and the lowliest, the old hero entered, as it were, into the immortality of his fame while still among his countrymen. Death came to him at last in its gentlest form. He

passed away on the 14th of September 1852, and was buried under the dome of St Paul's, in a manner worthy both of the nation and of the man. His monument, a mere fraction of the work originally designed, stands in the chapel at the south-western end of the cathedral.

Authorities.—The Wellington Despatches, edited by Gurwood ; Supplementary Despatches ; and Wellington Despatches, New Series, edited by the second duke of Wellington. Unlike Napoleon's despatches and correspondence, everything from Wellington's pen is absolutely trustworthy: not a word is written for effect, and no fact is misrepresented. Almost all the political memoirs of the period 1830-1850 contain more or less about Wellington in his later life. Those of Greville and Croker have perhaps most of interest. (C. A. F.)

WELLS, a municipal borough in the county of Somerset, England, at the foot of the Mendip Hills, 135 miles west of London. At present it is a place of little importance, except for its cathedral, markets, and assizes. The popu- lation of the city (726 acres) in 1881 was 4634.

The city of Wells is said to have derived its name from some springs called St Andrew's Wells, which during the Middle Ages were thought to have valuable curative properties. The munici- pality, consisting of a mayor, seven aldermen, and sixteen chief burgesses, was incorporated by a charter granted by King John in 1202. During Saxon times Wells was one of the most important towns of Wessex, and in 905 it was made the seat of a bishopric by King Edward the Elder. About the year 1091-92 Bishop John de Villula removed the see to Bath; and for some years Wells ceased to be an episeopal city. After many struggles between the secular clergy of Wells and the regulars of Bath, it was finally arranged in 1189 that the bishop should take the title of 'bishop of Bath and Wells," and should for the future be elected by delegates appointed partly by the monks of Bath and partly by the canons of Wells. The foundation attached to the cathedral chureh of Wells consisted of a college of secular canons of St Augustine, governed by a dean, sub-dean, chancellor, and other officials.

The existing cathedral, one of the most magnificent of all the secular churches of England, was begun by Bishop Joceline soon after his election to the episcopate in 1220; and the greater part of the building was

completed before his death in 1244. According to the usual medieval practice, the eastern part of the church was begun first, and the choir was consecrated for use long before the completion of the nave, the western part of which, with the mag- nificent series of statues on the facade, was carried out during the second half of the 13th century, and probably finished about the year 1300. 'The upper half of the two western towers has never been built. The very noble and well-designed central tower, 160 feet high, was built carly in the 14th century; the beautiful octagonal chapter-house on the north side, and the lady chapel at the extreme east, were the next important additions in the same century. The whole church is a building of very exceptional splendour and beauty; it is covered throughout with stone groming of various dates, from the Early English of the choir to the fan vaulting of the central tower. Its plan consists of a nave and aisles, with two short transepts, each with a western aisle and two eastern chapels. The choir and its aisles are of unusual length, and behind the high altar are two smaller transepts, beyond which is the very rich Decorated lady chapel, with an eastern scml- octagonal apse. The main tower is at the crossing. Ou the north of the choir is the octagonal chapter-house, the vaulting of which springs from a slender central shaft; as the church belonged to secular clergy, it was not necessary to place it in its usual position: by the cloister. The cloister, 160 by 150 feet, extends along the whole southern wall of the nave. The extreme length of the church from east to west is 371 feet. The oak stalls and bishop's throne in the choir are magnificent examples of 15th-century woodwork, still well preserved. ; : f

The great glory of the church, and that which makes it unique among the many splendid buildings of medieval England, is the wonderful series of sculptured figures whieh decorate the exterior of the west front,—-the work of English sculptors of the latter part of the 13th century,—a series which shows that at that time Eng- land was, as far as the plastie art is concerned, in no degree inferior to Germany and France, or even Italy, if we except the work done

by Niccola, the sculptor of the wonderful baptistery pulpit at Pisa. The whole of the fagade, 147 feet wide, including the two western towers, is completely covered with this magnificent series; there are nine tiers of single figures under canopies, over 600 in number, mostly large life size, with some as much as 8 feet in height, and other smaller statues; these represent angels, saints, prophets, kings and queens of the Saxon, Norman, and Plantagenet dynasties, and bishops and others who had been benefactors to the see. There are also forty-eight reliefs with subjects from Bible history, and immense representations of the Last Judgment and the Resurrec- tion, the latter alone containing about 150 figures. The whole composition is devised so as to present a comprehensive scheme of theology and history, evidently thought out with much care and ingenuity. As works of art, these statues and reliefs are of very high merit; the faccs are noble in type, the folds of the drapery very gracefully treated with true sculpturesque simplicity, and the pose of the figures remarkable for dignity. The main lines of the sculpture throughout are carefully arranged in a severely architec- tonic manner, so as to emphasize and harmonize with the chief features of the structure. Complete self-restraint is shown in the subordination of each part to the general effect of the whole—one of the great merits of English sculpture down to the 16th century. Of course a great variety of hands and much diversity of workman- ship can be traced in this mass of sculpture, but in very few cases does the work fall conspicuously below the general level of excel- lence, and some of the best figures show the very flower and crown of English plastic art, which was reaching its highest point about the time that the west front of Wells was completed.?

The interior of the central tower presents an interesting example of the very skilful way in which the medizval builders could turn an unexpected constructional necessity into a novel and beautiful architectural feature. While it was being built the four piers of the great tower arches showed signs of failure, and therefore, in order to strengthen them, a second lower arch was built below each main arch of the tower; and on this a third inverted arch was added. Thus the piers received a steady support along their whole height from top to bottom, and yet the opening of each archway was blocked up in the smallest possible degree. The contrasting

lines of these three adjacent arches on each side of the tower have a very striking and graceful effect; nothing similar exists elsewhere.

On the south side of the cathedral stands the bishop's palace, a stately moated building, originally built in the form of a quad- rangle by Bishop Joceline (1205-1244), and surrounded. by a lofty circuit wall, The hall and chapel are very beautiful structures, of rather later date, mostly of the 14th century.

The vicars' college was a secular foundation for two principals and twelve vicars; fine remains of this, dating from the 15th cen- tury, and other residences of the clergy stand within and near the cathedral close; some of these are among the most beautifnl examples of inedieval domestic architecture which exist any where in England.

The church of St Cuthbert in Wells is one of the finest of the many fine parochial churches in Somersetshire, with a very noble tower and spire at the west end. It was originally an Early Eng- lish cruciform building, but the central tower fell in during the 16th century, and the whole building was much altered during the Perpendicular period. Though much damaged, a very interesting reredos exists behind the high altar; erected in 1470, itconsists of a 'Jesse tree" sculptured in relief. Another very beautiful reredos was discovered in 1848, hidden in the plaster on the east wall of the lady chapel, which is on the north side. (J. H. M.)

WELSHPOOL, or Poot, a market-town and municipal and parliamentary borough in Montgomeryshire, North Wales, is situated in the upper Severn valley not far from the river, on the Shropshire Union Canal, and on the Cambrian Railway, 207 miles north-west of London, 8 north of Montgomery, and 18 west of Shrewsbury. The church of St Mary's, a Gothic structure, restored by Street at a cost of £4000, is a building of some antiquity ; Christ Church, in Powis Park, in the Norman style, was erected in 1839. The town-hall, erected in 1873 et aa cost of £6000, includes a corn and general market- house, assize courts, and assembly rooms. The Powysland Museum, containing a collection of local fossils and antj- quities and a library, was in 1887 vested in the corpora- tion as a free public library and museum.

——— ee eee ee? er a

1 See Cockerell, Iconography of Wells Cath., 1851; Reynolds, Wells Cath., 1881; and Britton, Wells Cath., 1821. The stone used for this sculpture is from the neighbouring Doulting quarry ; it was once decorated with gold and colour, applied on a ground of fine gesso in the usual way.

baronial residence of the earl of Powis, and about the same distance to the east is Leighton Hall. The site of an old moated mound is now occupied by a bowling green. The flannel manufacture has now ceased, but there is a large manufactory of tweeds and woollen shawls. The population of the municipal borough (area 19,549 acres) in 1871 was 7370 and in 1881 it was 7107. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 6761 acres) in 1881 was 5211.

About 1109 a castle was begun at Welshpool by Cadwygan ap Bleddyn ap Cynvyn, and completed by Gwenwynwyn. In 1191 it was besicged by Hubert, archbishop of Canterbury, and after being undermined surrendered, but it was retaken by Gwenwynwyn in 1197. It was dismantled in 1233 by Llewelyn, prince of North Wales, and for several generations it remained in the hands of the lords of Powis. During the civil war Lord Powis declared for the royal cause, but he was taken prisoner, and the castle was subsequently demolished. The town was incorporated about 1279 by the lords of Powis. In 1406 its boundaries were enlarged to the present enormous dimensions, and in 1615 it received a cliarter from James I., which was confirmed and enlarged by Charles II. From the 27th of Henry VIII. it has been included in the Mont- gomery district of boroughs, which returns one member to parlia- ment, The Welsh name of the town is Trallwns or Trallwm.

WENCESLAUS (1361-1419), German king, was the eldest son of the emperor Charles IV., of the house of Luxemburg. He was born in 1361, and when three years of age was crowned as his father's successor in Bohemia. In 1376 he was elected king of the Romans, and in 1378, on the death of Charles IV., he mounted the Bohemian and German thrones. He repeatedly thought of going to Rome to receive the imperial crown, but

this intention was never fulfilled. During his reign there was great confusion both in church and state, and he was wholly powerless to cope with the forces of disorder. Although not without a rude sense of justice, he was of a rough and violent temper, and too fond of pleasure to devote much attention to serious duty. The cities of Germany, in which were some of the best elements of the national life, had been gradually learning how to defend themselves by combining with one another against princes and robber knights; and a wise king or emperor might with their aid have succeeded in re-establishing the authority of the crown. Wenceslaus, however, never understood the importance of the cities, and missed every opportunity of winning their friendship. At a diet in Nuremberg in 1383 an attempt was made to secure the public peace, but the cities, knowing that their liberties were threatened, gave no heed to the measures adopted by the diet. In 1381 the Rhenish cities had formed a confederation, and notwithstanding the threats of Wenceslaus had united with the Swabian League, which was' regarded with fear and hatred by most of the southern princes. The battle of Sempach, in which the Swiss confederates gained a decisive victory over the house of Hapsburg, greatly encouraged the cities, but in 1388 a powerful coalition was formed against them, and at the battle of Déffingen their troops suffered so crushing a defeat that they were rendered incapable of further resistance. Ata diet held in Eger in 1389 public peace was therefore proclaimed, and the cities of Swabia, the Rhine country, Alsace, the Wetterau, Franconia, and Bavaria were ordered, on pain of the king's displeasure, to dissolve their alliances. This really meant that the princes had both the king and the towns at their mercy. Wenceslaus was not more successful in his native king- dom Bohemia than in Germany. In 1393, in the course of a struggle with the archbishop of Prague, he shocked both friends and enemies by the murder of the vicar- general John of Pomuk, who, after being subjected to torture, was bound and thrown into the river Moldau. With all his faults, Wenceslaus was sincerely anxious to check the violence of the Bohemian nobles. They accord-

ingly plotted against him, and in Jobst of Moravia, to whom Brandenburg had been given in pledge by Sigismund, the brother of Wenceslaus, they

found a powerful friend and leader. Wenceslaus was taken prisoner in 1394, and kept for some months in close confinement, and he was set free only when the German princes threatened that if he were detained the conspirators would be treated as enemies of the empire. He was unable to recover more than the appearance of power, and in 1395 he made himself an object of general contempt by selling to John Galeazzo Visconti, of Milan, the dignity of a duke of Lombardy. Afterthe defeat of his brother Sigismund, king of Hungary, at Nicopolis, Wenceslaus came to an under-standing with Jobst, to whom he gave Brandenburg in fief; and he afterwards tried to assert authority in Germany by summoning a diet at Frankfort, where, early 'In 1398, public peace was once more proclaimed. But Wenceslaus could not now undo the results of his indolence and incapacity, and when, in association with the king of France, he supported a plan for the deposition of Popes Boniface IX. and Benedict XIII, and for the assembling of a general council, the spiritual electors and Rupert, elector of the Palatinate, resolved that he himself should be deposed. These electors met at Oberlahnstein, and on the 20th August 1400 a decree depriving Wences- laus of the German crown was read by the elector of Mainz as chancellor of the empire. The decree was informal, but Wenceslaus was not in a position to set it aside, and Rupert of the Palatinate was elected king in his stead. Fresh troubles had overtaken him in Bohemia, and in 1402 he was made prisoner by his brother Sigismund, who kept him in confinement for nineteen months. After his release he was not less arbitrary than before, and he caused much discontent by encouraging the disciples of Huss, whom he supported, not apparently because he cared for their doctrines, but because he found it convenient to use them as an instrument against the clergy. On the death of Rupert in 1410 Wenceslaus, while retaining the title of king of the Romans, resigned his claims to the imperial dignity in favour of Sigismund, who was elected to the German throne. Wenceslaus died of a stroke of apoplexy on the 16th August 1419.

See Pelzel, Lebensgeschichte des rémischen wad béhmischen Kénigs Wenzel (1788-90); Weizsiicker, Deutsche Reichstagsacten unter

Konig Wenzel (1868-74) ; Lindner, Gesehiehte des Deutschen Reichs unter Konig Wenzel (1875).

WENDS. See Saxony, vol. xxi. p. 353, and Stavs.

WENLOCK, or Much Wentocg, a market-town and municipal borough of Shropshire, England, is situated on a branch of the Great Western Railway, 1634 miles north- west of London, 11 south of Wellington, and 12 south-east of Shrewsbury. There are some beautiful remains of the old priory church, including the southern half of the west front, three bays of the south aisle, and three sides of the south transept. The priory was originally founded as a nunnery by St Milburg, granddaughter of Penda, about 680, and after being destroyed by the Danes was refounded by Leofric in 1017. Afterwards it was remodelled by Roger de Montgomery as a house for Cluniac monks, and rose to great magnificence. The church of Holy Trinity is Norman and Early English, with portions of Decorated and Perpendicular. The other principal public buildings are the guild-hall, a quaint old timbered structure, the market-hall adjoining (erected in 1879 to harmonize with the old building), the corn exchange (1852), and the museum, occupying the site of the hospital of St John. The town is chiefly dependent on its agricultural trade. There are limestone quarries in the neigbourhood. The population of the municipal borough (the area of which is about 33,000 acres and embraces 17 parishes) in 1871

oO

was 19,401 and in 1881 it was 18,442. In addition to the municipal authority the town itself is under the government of a local board. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 9737 acres) in 1871 was 2531 and in 1881 it was 2321.

Wenlock is said to date from the pre-Roman period, but owed its rise to importance to the religious foundation of St Milburg. It received the grant of a market from Henry III. in 1224. It was incorporated by Edward IV. in 1448, when it also received the privilege of returning members to parliament, but in 1885 it ceased to have separate representation.

WENTWORTH, Tuomas. See Strarrorp.

WENZEL, Karu Frieprich (1740-1793), German metallurgist, was born at Dresden in 1740. His father was a bookbinder, and Wenzel began to learn the same trade ; but finding it monotonous he quietly left home and went to Holland at the age of fifteen. In Amsterdam he took lessons in surgery and chemistry, and then entered the Dutch navy as a surgeon. After some years a sea life lost its charm for him, and he resigned, returning to his native land in 1766 to complete his chemical studies at Leipsic. Wenzel now devoted his attention to metallurgy and assaying, working for a time with great success in the town of his birth. He received a prize for the best solution of a problem in working metals from the Copenhagen Society of Sciences. He also made some very careful chemical experiments, particularly on the mixture of solutions of various salts, and wrote several books on chemical subjects ; his claim for remembrance rests on one of these, Vorleswngen tiber die chemische Verwandtschaft der Korper. It was published in 1777; a second edition appeared in 1782, and a third with addi- tions in 1800. In 1780 Wenzel received the appointment of director of mines at Freiberg from the elector of Saxony, and in 1786 that of chemist in the porcelain works at Meissen. He died at Freiberg on February 26, 1793.

The discovery of the law of reciprocal proportions in chemistry (see CHEMISTRY, vol. v. p. 463) has been claimed for Wenzel as the result of his researches on the affinities of bodies; and, on the ground of his work being prior to that of Richter, and much more accurate than the earlier experiments of Bergmann on the same subject, he has been regarded as Dalton's precursor in laying the foundation of the atomic theory. It was pointed out by Hess in 1840 that this was a mistake, since Wenzel's researches led him to no definite conclusions as to invariable and reciprocal proportions in the combination of acids and bases, but rather pointed in the opposite direction. Kopp overlooked this criticism in writing his great Geschichte der Chemie (1844-1847), which has deservedly taken the highest place as an authority on chemical history ; and, although in the supplementary work published in 1873 he acknowledges his mistake as to Wenzel and confirms Hess's statement, the writers of text-books continue in many cases to give currency to the erroneous view.

WERDAU, a manufacturing town of Saxony, is situated on the Pleisse, in the industrial district of Zwickau, about 40 miles south of Leipsic. Its chief industries are cotton and wool-spinning and the weaving of cloth; but machinery of various kinds, paper, and a few other articles are also manufactured. In addition to the usual schools, Werdau contains a weaving-school. The town is mentioned as early as 1304, and in 1398 it was purchased by the margrave of Meissen, who afterwards became elector of Saxony. The population, 4994 in 1834, was 14,638 in 1885. The adjoining village of Leubnitz, with 2400 inhabitants, 1s now practically a part of Werdau.

WEREWOLF. See LycantTuropy.

WERGELAND, Henrik Arnotp (1808-1845), Nor- wegian poet and prose writer. See vol. xvii. p. 590.

WERNER, Asranam Gorrios (1750-1817), the father of German geology, was born in Oberlausitz, Saxony, 25th September 1750. The family to which he belonged had been engaged for several hundred years in mining pursuits. His father was inspector of Count Solm's iron-works at Mehrau and Lorzendorf, and from young Werner's infancy cultivated in him a taste for minerals and rocks. The boy showed early promise of distinction. In his fourth year he had learnt to read; in his fifth he could write and cipher; and by the time he was six or seven years old he had grown to be agreat reader. Already, when only three years of age, he had begun to collect specimens of stones, and, when he could read, one of his favourite employments was to pore over the pages of a dictionary of mining. At the age of nine he was sent to school at Bunzlau in Silesia, where he remained until 1764, when he joined his father, with the idea of ultimately succeeding him in the post which the latter held there. In his eighteenth year ill- health compelled him to seek the mineral waters of Carlsbad. In journeying thither by way of Freiberg he showed such enthusiasm and knowledge in an excursion in that neighbourhood as to attract the notice of the officials there, who invited him to attend their mining school which had been established two years previously. This was the turning point in Werner's career. He came to Freiberg in 1769 when he was nineteen

years of age, and found the school in its merest infancy. He soon distinguished himself by his industry and by the large amount of practical knowledge of mineralogy which he acquired. In 1771 he repaired to the university of Leipsic and went through the usual curriculum of study, but continued to devote himself with the greatest ardour to mineralogical pursuits. While still a student he wrote his first work on the external characters of minerals (Ueber die dussern Kennzeichen der Fossilien, Leipsic, 1764), which at once gave him a name among the mineralogists of the day. His friends in Freiberg, who had watched his pro- gress with much gratification, called him at the close of his college life to be inspector in the mining school and teacher of mineralogy there. To the development of that school and to the cultivation of mineralogy and geognosy he thenceforth devoted the whole of his active and indefatigable industry. From a mere provincial institution the Freiberg academy under his care rose to be one of the great centres of scientific light in Europe, to which students from all parts of the world flocked to listen to his eloquent teaching. He wrote but little, and though he elaborated a complete system of geognosy and mineralogy he never could be induced to publish it. From the notes of his pupils, however, the general purport of his teaching was well known, and it widely influenced the science of his time. He had the art of infusing into those who listened to him some of his own ardent enthusiasm. His disciples accordingly left his rooms with the determination to preach his doctrine everywhere. They became ardent partisans, and carried on an active propaganda in most countries of Europe. He died at Freiberg on June 30, 1817.

One of the distinguishing featu : i eare with which He eT 1 eRe Meta He showed that the roeks of the earth are not disposed at random, but follow each other in a certain definite order. Unfortunately he had never enlarged his experience by travel, and the sequenee of rock-masses which he had reeognized in Saxony was believed by him to be of universal applieation all over the globe. He taught that the roeks were the precipitates of a primeval ocean, and followed each other in sueeessive deposits of world-wide extent. Volcanoes were regarded by him as abnormal phenomena, probably due to the combustion of subterranean beds of eoal. Basalt and similar roeks, whieh even then were reeognized

by other observers as of igneous origin, were believed by lim to be water-formed accumulations of the same ancient ocean. Henee arose one of the

great historical controversies of geology. Werner's followers preached the doctrine of the aqueous origin of roeks, and were

| though its present form dates from 1521.

WER—WES

known as Neptunists ; their opponents, who recognized the import- ant part taken in the construction of the earth's crust by subter- ranean heat, were styled Vuleanists. Though much of Werner's theoretical work was erroneous, science is indebted to him for so elearly demonstrating the ehronological suceession of rocks, for the enthusiastie zeal which he infused into his pupils, and for the im- pulse whieh he thereby gave to the study of geology.

See 8. G, Frisch, Lebensbeschretbung A. G. Werners, Leipsic, 1825; Cuvier, Eloge de Werner; and Lyell, Principles of Geology.

WERNER, Frieprich Lupwic ZACHARIAS, German poet, was born at Kénigsberg on November 18, 1768, and died at Vienna on January 17, 1823. After an irregular life he joined the Church of Rome in 1809, was consecrated priest in 1814, and in his later years was well known asa preacher. As a dramatist he is remembered as thie originator of the so-called "' fate tragedies "; see GERMANY, vol. x. p. 543.

WERNIGERODE, a town of Prussian Saxony, about. 12 miles to the south-west of Halberstadt, is picturesquely situated on the Holzemme, on the north slopes of the Harz Mountains. It contains several interesting Gothic buildings, including the fine town-house dating from the 14th century. Some of the quaint old houses which have escaped the numerous fires that have visited the town are elaborately adorned with wood-carving. The gymnasium, occupying a modern Gothic building, is the successor of an ancient grammar-school, which existed until 1825. Wooden articles, cigars, and dye-stuffs are among the manufactures of the place. Above the town rises the chateau of the count of Stolberg-

Wernigerode. A pavilion in the park contains the library of 96,000 volumes, the chief feature in which is the collection of over 3000 Bibles and over 3600 volumes on hymnology. The population of Wernigerode in 1885 was 9083 ; including the imme- diately adjoining villages of Néscherode and Hasserode, it was 13,804.

Wernigerode is the chief town of the county (grafschaft) of Stol- berg-Wernigerode, which still retains a few shreds of nominal in- dependence, though really an integral part of Prussia since the congress of Vienna. It was originally a free and independent im- perial fief, and retains its peeuliar national colours. The eounty has an extent of 107 square miles, with 26,484 inhabitants, and includes the Brocken within its limits.

WESEL, a strongly fortified industrial town in West- phalia, Prussia, is situated at the confluence of the Rhine and the Lippe, 46 miles south-west of Mtinster, and 35 miles south-east of Nimeguen in Holland. The Rhine is here crossed by a large railway bridge and by a bridge of boats. The island of Biiderich in mid-stream is fortified, and the town is further protected by detached forts, one of which serves as a ¢éte-de-pont on the left bank of the Rhine. Wesel contains some quaint old houses with high-pitched roofs, and a town-house, dating from 1396, with an elaborate fagade. The large church of St Willibrord, a handsome late-Gothic edifice, was consecrated in 1181, Since 1883 it has been undergoing a much-needed restoration. St Matthew's church dates from 1472-77. The two Roman Catholic churches, the commandant's house (built in 1417), the Berlin gateway (1722), and the modern gymnasium and military hospital are among the other chief buildings. Wesel carries on a considerable trade both by railway and its two rivers ; wood and fish are perhaps the main exports. It has manufactures of wire, leaden pipes, and other metal goods, pianofortes, sugar, &c. The population, more than half Roman Catholic, was 20,677 in 1885.

Wesel, formerly known as Lippemiinde, was one of the points from which Charlemagne direeted his operations against the heathen Saxons. The present name is said to be derived from the numerous weasels (Germ., Wiesel) at one time found in the neighbourhood. In the Middle Ages it was a flourishing eommereial town, and a member of the Hanseatic

League, and as late as 1495 a free im- perial eity. A monument outside the town commeniorates eleven of Sehill's officers who were shot here in 1809 after their unsuc-

cessful attempt at Stralsund. Wesel is occasionally spoken of as Unterwesel, to distinguish it from Oberwesel, a small town also on the Rhine (18 miles south-south-east of Coblentz), and also at one time a free imperial town.

WESEL, Joun Kucuratu, of Oberwesel (see above), was born in the early years of the 15th century, and died under sentence of imprisonment for life on a charge of heresy in the Augustinian convent in Mainz in 1481. He appears to have been one of the leaders of the humanist movement in Germany, and to have had some intercourse and sympathy with the leaders of the Hussites in Bohemia. Erfurt was then the headquarters of a humanism which was at the same time devout and opposed to the realist metaphysic and the Thomist theology which prevailed in the Rhenish universities at Cologne and at Heidelberg. Wesel was one of the professors at Erfurt between 1445 and 1456, and was vice-rector in 1458. In 1460 he was called to be a preacher either at Worms or at Mainz, and in 1479, when an old and worn-out man (he was led into the room by two Franciscans, and was obliged to support himself on a staff), he was brought before the Dominican inquisitor Gerhard Elten of Cologne. The charges brought against him were chiefly based on a treatise, De /: ndulgentiis, which he had composed while at Erfurt twenty-five years before.

It is somewhat difficult to determine the exact theo- logical position of Wesel. Ullmann claims him as a "reformer before the Reformation," but it is more than doubtful that he had that experimental view of the doctrines of grace which lay at the basis of Reformation theology. He held that Christ is our righteousness in so far as we are guided by the Holy Ghost and the love towards God is shed abroad in our hearts, which clearly shows that he held the medizval idea that justification is an habitual grace implanted in men by the gracious act of God. He seems, however, to have protested against certain medieval ecclesiastical ideas

which he held to be exerescences erroneously grafted on Christian faith and practice. He objected to the whole system of indulgences; he denied the infallibility of the church, on the ground that the church contains within it sinners as well as saints ; he insisted that papal authority could be upheld only when the pope remained true to the evangel; and he held that a sharp distinction ought to be drawn between ecclesiastical sentences and punishments and the judgments of God.

The best account of Wesel is to be found in Ullmann's Reformers before the Reformation. His tract on Indulgences has been pub- lished in Walch's Monumenta Medti vt, vol. i., while a report of his trial is given in Ortuin Gratius's Faseeulus Rerwm Expeten- darum ct Fugiendarum (ed. by Browne, London, 1690).

WESER (0. Germ. Visuracha, Wisura; Lat. Visurgis), one of the chief rivers of Germany, formed by the union of the Werra and the Fulda at Miinden, in the Prussian province of Hanover, flows to the north and north-north- west, and enters the North Sea below Bremerhafen, to the east of the Jade Bay. The mouth is 170 miles from Miinden, but the winding course of the river is 279 miles long ; if the measurement be made from the source of the Werra, in Thuringia, the total length of the stream is 439 miles. At Miinden the river surface is 380 feet above sea-level; the most rapid fall in its course is between Carlshafen and Minden in Westphalia, where it descends 70 feet in 20 miles. Nearly the entire course of the Weser lies in Prussia, but it also touches part of Brunswick and Lippe, and after flowing through Bremen expands into an estuary separating the duchy of Oldenburg from the Prussian province of Hanover. Between Miinden and Minden its course lies through a series of picturesque valleys flanked by the irregular and disjointed mountain system known as the Weser Hills; but after it emerges from these mountains by the narrow pass called the " Porta

Westphalica," to the north of Minden, its banks become flat and uninteresting. The breadth of the river varies from 110 yards at Miinden to 220 yards at Minden, 250 yards at Bremen, 1} miles at Elsfleth, and 74% miles at its entrance into the sea. The Weser on the whole is shallow;

and navigation on the upper Weser, 7.2, above Bremen, is sometimes interrupted for months by drought. Sea-going ships may ascend to Elsfleth, though Bremer- hafen is the chief port for large vessels; smaller craft may reach Vegesack, and barges of 200 tons make their way to Miinden. The stream discharges itself into the sea amid sandbanks, which leave only a single narrow fairway, 19-22 feet deep at high water and 12 feet at low water ; on the upper Weser the navigation of the only available narrow channel, which is interrupted by occasional rapids, is assisted by locks and weirs. The Weser drains a basin estimated at 18,360 square miles. Its principal tributaries on the right are the Aller, Wiimme, Drepte, Lune, and Geeste, and on the left the Diemel, Nethe, Emmer, Werre, Aue, and Hunte. The Werra and Fulda are both navi- gable when they unite to form the Weser; the Aller, Wiimme, Geeste, and Hunte are also navigable. Beyond the junction of the Hunte the Weser, hitherto a single stream, is divided into several channels by islands.

The navigation of the Weser was long hampercd by the various and vexatious claims and rights of the different states through whose territories it ran. Before 1866 the joint stream, including the Werra and the Fulda, changed its ruler no less than thirty-five times on its way to the sea. In 1823, however, a treaty was made establishing a fixed toll and a uniform system of management; this was further improved in 1856 and 1865; and when Prussia took possession of Hanover and Hesse-Nassau in 1866 the chief diffi- culties in the way of organizing the river-trade disappeared. The principal town on the Weser is Bremen (population in 1885, 118,043). Other towns past which it flows betwixt Miinden and the sea are Carlshafen, Hoxter, Holzminden, Bodenwerder, Hameln, Rinteln, Viotho, Minden, Nienburg, Vegesack, Elsfleth, Braake, Blexen, Geestemiinde, and Bremerhafen. The Weser gave name to a department in the short-lived kingdom of Westphalia; the chief town was Osnabriick. A canal between the Wiimmce and the Oste, and another between the Geeste and the mouth of the Elbe, connect the Weser system with that of the Elbe. A canal is also being constructed from the Hunte to a tributary of the Ems.

WESLEY, an English family of special ecclesiastical distinction, claims descent from the ancient De Wellesleys, one of whom, Guy, was made a

thane by Athelstan about 938, the family seat being at Welswe, near Wells, in Somerset. Two brothers, John and Bartholomew, were among the ministers ejected for nonconformity in 1662.

SAMUEL (1662-1735), son of the above John, was born 17th December 1662. He was educated at an academy at Stepney, London, and in August 1683 entered Exeter College, Oxford, as a pauper scholaris, shortly after which he joined the Church of England, a step which so deeply offended his family that they left him henceforth to his own resources. While still an undergraduate he pub- lished Maggots, or Poems on Several Subjects never before Handled, 1685. He graduated B.A. 1688, was ordained priest 24th February 1689, and the following year was presented to the living of South Ormsby, Lincolnshire. In 1697 he removed to Epworth, Lincolnshire, where he died 25th April 1735. Among other works he was the author of Life of Christ (1693), Elegies on Queen Mary and Archbishop Tillotson (1695), LHistory of the Old and New Testaments in Verse (1704), Pious Communicant fughily Prepared (1700), and Latin Commentary on the Book of Job (1733). After the battle of Blenheim he published (1705) a long poem on Marlborough, or the fate of Europe, for which Marlborough made him chap- lain of a regiment. He had nineteen children, of whom three sons, Samuel, John, and Charles, acquired eminence.

SAMUEL (1690-1739) was born in London 10th February 1690, and educated at Westminster school, where he was

nominated king's scholar. In 1711 he entered Christ Church, Oxford, and on taking his M.A. degree returned to Westminster as tutor. He lived on intimate terms with Harley, earl of Oxford, Pope, Swift, and Prior, and wrote somewhat clever squibs against Sir Robert Walpole, the Whigs, and the Low Church divines. They were col- lected and published 1736, reached a second edition 1743, and were reprinted, with notes by James Nicholls and life by W. Nicholls, in 1862. Wesley became master of Tiverton grammar-school in 1732, and died there 6th November 1739.

Joun (1703-1791), brother of the preceding and founder of Methodism, was born, probably at Epworth, 17th June (O.S., 28th N.S.) 1703. There was a tradi- tion in the family that he was christened John Benjamin, but he never made use of the second name. When his father's rectory was burnt down in 1709 he was for a time left in the building, and narrowly escaped death. He entered Charterhouse in 1714, whence in 1720 he was elected to Christ Church, Oxford. In 1726 he became fellow of Lincoln, and in 1727 graduated M.A. After acting for some time as his father's curate he settled in November 1729 .at Oxford, and began to take pupils. About the same time, along with his brother Charles and others, he commenced that systematic course of religious life which led to their being termed by the Oxonians Methodists. A full record of the religious labours of Wesley is given under MerHopism (vol. xvi. pp. 185-189). In the organization of Methodism he dis- played not only extraordinary energy and capacity for work but remarkable administrative powers. His oratory was colloquial, terse, and homely, but never vulgar, while his expressive and refined features and intense yet reasoned earnestness enabled him to acquire among his followers a personal influence of an unrivalled kind. Although from overwork or exposure he had one or two serious illnesses, he generally enjoyed robust health, an experience probably partly accounted for by his constant journeys on horseback. In 1790 he said, "I do not remember to have felt lowness of spirits for a quarter of an hour since I was born." He preached usually at 5 o'clock in the morning, and fre- quently twice again in the same day, the number of sermons he delivered in a year being over 800. He continued his labours almost to the last, but wrote, 1st January 1790, "I am now an old man decayed from head to foot." He died 2d March 1791. Wesley translated several hymns from the German for the col- lections edited by him and his brother Charles, but is not known to have been the author of any original hymns (see Hymns, vol. xii. p. 594). The first collection of Psalms and Hymns edited by the brothers appeared anonymously in 1738, and a Collection of Moral and Sacred Poems, from the Most Celebrated Authors, in 1744. Wesley has no claims to rank as a thinker or even asa theologian, but within certain narrow limits was a skilful controversialist. He was the author of Primitive Physic (1747), Lxplanatory Notes on the New Testament (1755), Notes on the Old and New Testaments (1764), Doctrine of Original Sin (1757), Survey of the Wisdom of God in Creation

(1763), Preservative against Unsettled Notions in Religion (1770), and A Calm Address to our American Colonies (1775). He also edited the Christian Library, in fifty volumes. His Works appeared in 1818, and an eleventh edition, with life by J. Beecham and preface by T. Jackson, was published in 15 vols., 1856-57.

Cuarues (1708-1788), brother of the preceding, was born prematurely at Epworth, 18th December 1708. He entered Westminster school in 1716, was admitted a king's scholar in 1721, and entered Christ Church, Oxford, in 1726. He accompanied his brother John to

Georgia in 1735 as secretary to the managing committee, having been ordained priest a few days before leaving England ; but on account of a strong feeling of opposition manifested against him in the religious communities of Frederica he left Georgia for England five months after landing. 'To a serious illness which happened to him in February 1738 he attributed a moral change which he associated with conversion and a conscious sense of pardon. He seconded his brother in his evangelizing labours in England with unceasing diligence, and, al- though not possessing his brother's gifts of oratory and personal magnetism, contributed by his hymns an element of success to the movement of prime and permanent importance. He published no fewer than 4100 hymns of his own composition, and left about 2000 in manuscript. Numerous editions both of the special and general col- lections of his hymns have been published. Both as regards the number of his compositions and their various excellences, he is entitled to the chief place among Methodist hymn writers (see Hymns, wé supra). He died 29th March 1788. His Sermons, with memoir, appeared in 1816; a Life, by Rev. Thomas Jackson, in 1841; and his Journal, with notes by Rev. Thomas Jackson, 1849.

Two sons of Charles Wesley attained eminence as musi- cians :— CHARLES (1757-1815), organist of St George's, Hanover Square, London, who in 1778 published Six Con- certos for the Organ and Harp; and Samus. (1766-1837), organist of the Chapel Royal, noticed below.

See, in addition to the authorities already mentioned, the Lives by Hampson (1791), Coke and Moore (1792), Whitehead (1793-96), Southey (1820), Moore (1824), Watson (1831), Miss Wedgwood (1870), and Tyerman (exhaustive and complete) (1870); J. Dove, Biographical History of the Wesleys (1833); and G. J. Stevenson, Memorials of the Wesley Family (1876).

WESLEY, Samuet (1766-1837), musical composer, son of Charles Wesley (see above), was born at Bristol, February 24, 1766, and developed so precocious a talent for music that at three years old he played the organ and at eight composed an oratorio entitled Ruth—a fact which is duly chronicled on a curious portrait, painted in 1774, and afterwards engraved, wherein he is represented in the childish costume of the period. Though suffering for many years from an accidental injury to the brain, Wesley was long regarded as the most brilliant organist and the most accomplished extempore fugue- ° player in England. He may indeed be regarded as the father of our present style of organ-playing, for he it was who, aided by his friends Benjamin Jacob and C. F. Horn, first introduced the works of Sebastian Bach to English organists, not only by his superb playing, but by editing with Horn, in 1810, the first copy of Das wohltem- perirte Clavier ever printed in Erigland. Wesley's last per- formance took place, September 12, 1837, at Christ Church, Newgate Street, London, where, after hearing the wonder- ful performances of Mendelssohn, he was himself induced to play an extempore fugue. He died, October 11, 1837, leaving a vast number of MS. and printed compositions.

His brother Charles (1757-1815) was also an accomplished organist, and still more famous was his son, Samuel Sebastian, (1810-1876), Mus. Doc., and organist of Gloucester cathedral.

WESSEL, Wessetus Gansrortius! was born at Gron- ingen in 1400 (Hardenberg), in-1419 (Suffridus Petri), or in 1421, and on the death of his parents was adopted by a noble lady, Oda Clantes, who sent him along with her only son to the famous school at Deventer, which was under the supervision of the Brothers of Common Life, and was in close connexion

with the convent of Mount St Agnes at Zwolle, where then lived Thomas a Kempis,

1 The surname is from Gansfort or Gésevort, a Westphalian village

from which his family came; the Christian name is the equivalent of the Greek Basilius.

the author of the Znutatio Christi. At Deventer, where the best traditions of the 14th-century mysticism were still cultivated, Wessel imbibed that earnest devotional mysticism which was the basis of his theology and which drew him irresistibly, after a busy life, to spend his last days among the Friends of God in the Low Countries. From Deventer he went to Cologne to be taught the Thomist theology, which was fondly cherished in that famous Dominican school; and there he learnt realism, which, although he afterwards became a nominalist in metaphysics, always coloured his theology. At Cologne too he came in contact with humanism. He learnt Greek and Hebrew from monks who, it is said, had been driven out of Greece. The Thomist theology sent him to study Augustine, and his Greek reading led him to Plato, and from both of these great thinkers he learnt much that went to enrich his own theological system. The echoes of the din raised in Paris by the disputes between the realists and the nominalists reached Wessel in Cologne, and a desire to mingle in the fray, or perhaps to learn on which side truth was, induced him to go to Paris, where he remained sixteen years, scholar and teacher. There he eventually took the nominalist side, pronipted as much by his mystical anti-ecclesiastical tendencies as from any metaphysical insight ; for the nominalists were then the anti-papal party. A desire to know more about humanism sent him to Rome, where we find him in 1470 the intimate friend of Italian scholars and under the protection of Cardinals Bessarion and Della Rovere (afterwards Pope Sixtus IV.). It is said that Sixtus would have gladly made Wessel a bishop, but that he had no desire for any ecclesiastical preferment. From Rome he returned to Paris, and speedily became a famous teacher, gathering round him a band of enthusiastic young students, among whom was Reuchlin. As old age approached he came to have a growing dislike to the wordy theological strife which

surrounded him, and turned away from that uni- versity discipline, 'non studia sacrarum literarum sed studiorum commixtee corruptiones." After thirty years of academic life he went back to his native Groningen, and spent the rest of his life partly as director in a nuns' cloister there and partly in the convent of St Agnes at Zwolle. He was welcomed as the most renowned scholar 'of his time, and it was fabled that he had travelled through all lands, Egypt as well as Greece, gathering everywhere the fruits of all sciences—"a man of rare erudition," says the title page of the first edition of his collected works, 'who in the shadow of papal darkness was called the light of the world." His remaining years were spent amid a circle of warm admirers, friends, and disciples, to whom he imparted the mystical theology, the devotion to higher learning, and the deep devotional spirit which characterized his own life. He died on October 4, 1489, with the confession on his lips, "' I know only Jesus the crucified." He is buried in the middle of the choir of the church of the '"Geestlichen Maegden," whose director he had been.

Wessel has been called one of the "reformers before the Refor- mation," and the title is a true one if by it is meant a man of deeply spiritual life, who protested against the growing paganizing of the papacy, the superstitious and magical uses of the sacraments, the authority of ecclesiastical tradition, and that tendency in later scholastic theology to lay greater stress in a doctrine of justifica- tion upon the instrumentality of the human will than on the objective work of Christ for man's salvation. His own theology was, however, essentially mcdixval in type, and he never grasped that experimental thought of justification on which Reformation theology rests.

See Vila Wesseli Groningensis, by Albert Hardenberg, published in an ineom- Plete form in the preface to Wessel's eolleeted works, Amsterdam, 1614 (this preface also contains extracts from the works of several writers who have given facts About the life of Wessel); Muurling, Com. Hist. Theol. de Wesselt Gans- Sortti Vita, dc., 1831; Ullmann, Reformers before the Reformation (the seeond volume of the German edition is a second and enlarged edition of a previous

work, entitled Johann Wessel, ein Vorgdnger Luther's, 1884); Friedrich, Johann Wessel, ein Bild aus der Kirchengeschichte des 15ten Jahrhunderts, 1862; Ritschl, ITistory of the Christian Doctrine of Justification and Reconciliation (Edin., 1872). Wessel's two most important writings are his Treatise on Prayer (De Oratione) and his Scala Meditationis.

WESSEX. See Encuanp, vol. viii. pp. 270, 282 s¢., and Plate IT. of same volume.

WEST, Bensamin (1738-1820), history and portrait painter, was born in 1738, at Springfield, in Pennsylvania, coming of an old Quaker family who had emigrated from Buckinghamshire. When a boy of seven he began to show his inclinations to art. According to the well- known story, he was sitting by the cradle of his sister's child, watching its sleep, when the infant happened to smile in its dreams, and, struck with its beauty, young Benjamin got sonie paper, aad drew its portrait. The career thus begun was prosecuted amid many difficulties; but his perseverance overcame every obstacle, and at the age of eighteen he settled in Philadelphia as a portrait- painter. After a short time he removed to New York, where he practised his profession with considerable success. In 1760, through the assistance of some friends, he was enabled to complete his artistic education by a visit to Italy, where he remained nearly three years. Here he acquired reputation, and was elected a member of the principal academies of Italy. On the expiry of his Italian visit he settled in London as an historical painter. His success was not long doubtful. George III. took him under his special patronage ; and commissions flowed in upon him from all quarters. In 1768 he was one of the four artists who submitted to the king the plan for a royal academy, of which he was one of the earliest members ; and in 1772 he was appointed His Majesty's historical painter. He devoted his attention mainly to the painting of large pictures on historical and religious subjects, con- ceived, as he believed, in the style of the old masters, and executed with great care and much taste. So high did he stand in public favour that on the death of Sir Joshua Reynolds, in 1792, he was elected his successor as presi- dent of the Royal Academy, an office which he held for twenty-eight years. In 1802 he took advantage of the opportunity afforded by the peace

of Amiens to visit Paris, and inspect the magnificent collection of the masterpieces of art, pillaged from the gallery of almost every capital in Europe, which then adorned the Louvre. On his return to London he devoted himself anew to the labours of his profession, which were, however, somewhat broken in upon by quarrels with some of the members of the Royal Academy. In 1804 he resigned his office, but an all but unanimous request that he should return to the chair induced him to recall his resignation. Time did not at all weaken the energy with which he laboured at his easel. When sixty-five he painted one of his largest works, Christ Healing the Sick. This was originally designed to be presented to the Quakers in Philadelphia, to assist in erecting a hospital. On its completion it was exhibited in London to immense crowds, and was purchased by the British Institution for 3000 guineas, West sending a replica to Philadelphia. His subsequent works were nearly all on the same grand scale with the picture which had been so successful, but for obvious reasons they did not meet with very ready sale. He died in 1820, in his eighty-second year, and was buried in St Paul's.

Since his death West's reputation has seriously declined. His works, which fond criticism ranked during his life with the great productions of the old masters, are now considered as in general formal, tame, wanting that freedom of nature and that life which genius alone can breathe into the canvas. His Death of Wolfe is interesting as introducing modern costume instead of the classical draperies which had been previously universal in similar subjects by English artists; and his Battle of La Hogue is en- titled to an honourable place among British historical paintings.

An account of West's life was published by Galt (Zhe Progress of ay. — Gy

Genius, 1816); and biographics of him occur in Cunningham's Lives of Eminent British Painters and Redgrave's Century of Painters of the English School.

WESTALL, RicHarp (1765-1836), subject painter, was born in Hertford in 1765, of a Norwich family. In 1779 he went to London, and was apprenticed to an engraver on silver, and in 1785 he began to study in the schools of the Royal Academy. He painted Esau Seeking Jacob's Blessing, Mary Queen of Scots Going to Execution, and other historical subjects in water-colour, and some good portraits in the same medium, but he is mainly known' as a book-illustrator. He produced five subjects for the Shakespeare Gallery, illustrated an edition of Milton, executed a very popular series of illustrations to the Bible and the prayer-book, and designed plates for numerous other works. In 1808 he published a poem, A Day in Spring, illustrated by his own pencil. His designs are rather tame, mannered, and effeminate. He became an associate of the Royal Academy in 1792, and a full member in 1794; and during his later years he was a pensioner of the Academy. His last employment was to give art instruction to the Princess Victoria. He died on December 4, 1836. His brother, William Westall, A.R.A. (1781-1850), landscape painter, is mainly known by his illustrations to works of travel.

WEST BAY CITY, a city of Bay county, Michigan, United States, is situated on the Saginaw river, near its mouth, opposite Bay City. The city lies in one of the largest lumber districts of the United States, and its industries consist mainly in manufacturing and shipping lumber. It had a population of 9492 in 1885.

WEST BROMWICH, a municipal and parliamentary borough of Staffordshire, England, is situated near the – river Tame, and on the Great Western Railway, 6 miles north-west of Birmingham, and 1333 miles from London. It consists chiefly of one main street, the High Street, upwards of 1} miles in length. The parish church (All Saints, formerly St Clement's) is of very early origin, aud was given by Henry I. to the convent of Worcester, which subsequently gave it to the priory of Sandwell. The present church, a handsome structure in the Decorated style, was built in 1871-72. The principal other public buildings are the West Bromwich district hospital (erected in 1867 at a cost of £9000, and enlarged in 1882 at a cost of £4000), the town-hall and municipal offices (1875), the inarket-hall, the free library (1874), and the Liberal club (1884). There are two public charities—the Stanley (1613) and the

Whorwood (1614). Since 1880 the town has manufactured its own gas, but the water is supplied by the South Staffordshire Waterworks Company. There are several large foundries, smelting-furnaces, and forges, but the staple manufactures are the various kinds of implements of wrought-iron used for household, agri- cultural, or mechanical purposes. The town also possesses brass foundries, maltings, limekilns, and brickyards. There are large collieries in the neighbourhood. The area of the municipal and parliamentary borough and urban sanitary district is 5719 acres, with a population in 1871 of 47,918 and in 1881 of 56,295.

In 1230 the manor of West Bromwich was vested in the barons of Dudley, and in 1298 it descended to Walter de Evereus; in 1448 it passed to the Stanleys, from whom it was purchased by Sir Richard Skelton, solicitor-general to Charles I.; and in 1626 it came into the possession of Sir Samuel Clarke, by whose descendants, who subsequently assumed the name of Clarke-Jervoise, it was sold in 1823 to the earl of Dartmouth. West Bromwich was incor- porated 13th September 1882. By the Act of 1885 its parliamen- tary representation was separated from that of Wednesbury, and it was erected into a parliamentary borough returning one member.

WESTBURY, Ricuarp Beruett, Baron (1800-1873), was the son of Dr Richard Bethell, and was born at Bradford, Wilts. He was placed in the first class in

classics and the second in mathematics at Oxford in 1818, and was elected a fellow of Wadham College. In 1823 he was called to the bar at the Middle Temple. On attaining the dignity of queen's counsel in 1840 he rapidly took the foremost place at the Chancery bar, and was appointed vice-chancellor of the county palatine of Lancaster in 1851. His most important public service was the reform of the then existing mode of legal education, a reform which ensured that students before call to the bar should have at least some acquaintance with the elements of the subject which they were to profess. In 1851 he obtained a seat in the House of Commons, where he continued to sit, first as member for Aylesbury, then as member for Wolverhampton, until he was raised to the peerage.

Attaching himself to the Liberals, he became solicitor- general in 1852 and attorney-general in 1856 and again in 1859. On June 26, 1861, on the death of Lord Campbell, he was created lord high chancellor of Great Britain, with the title of Baron Westbury of Westbury, county Wilts. The object of his life was to set on foot the compilation of a digest of the whole law, but for various reasons this became impracticable. The conclu- sion of his tenure of the chancellorship was unfortunately marked by events which, although they did not render personal corruption imputable to him, made it evident that he had acted with laxity of practice and want of caution. Owing to the reception by parliament of reports of com- mittees nominated to consider the circumstances of the acceptance by him of the resignations of Mr Wilde, the bankruptcy registrar at Leeds, and Mr Leonard Edmunds, a clerk in the patent office, and clerk of the parliaments, the lord chancellor felt it incumbent upon him to resign his office, which he accordingly did on July 5, 1865, and was succeeded by Lord Cranworth. After his resignation he continued to take part in the judicial sittings of the House of Lords and the privy council until his death. In 1872 he was appointed arbitrator under the European Assurance Society Act, 1872, and his judgments in that capacity have been collected and published by Mr F. §. Reilly. As a writer on law he made no mark, and few of his decisions take the highest judicial rank. Perhaps the best known is the judgment delivering the opinion of the judicial committee of the privy council in 1863 against the heretical character of certain extracts from the well- known publication Hssays and Reviews. His principal legislative achievements were the passing of the Divorce Act, 1857, and of the Land Registry Act, 1862 (generally known as Lord Westbury's Act), the latter of which in practice proved a failure. What chiefly distinguished Lord Westbury was the possession of a certain sarcastic humour; and numerous are the stories, authentic and apocryphal, of its exercise. In fact, he and Mr Justice Maule fill a position analogous to that of Sydney Smith, convenient names to whom "good things" may be attri- buted. Lord Westbury died on July 20, 1873, within a day of the time of the death of Bishop Wilberforce, his special antagonist in debate.

A Life of Lord Westbury by T. A. Nash is now (1888) in the press.

WEST CHESTER, a borough and the county seat of Chester county, Pennsylvania, United States, is situated 27 miles west of Philadelphia, in a thickly settled farming region, devoted principally to market gardening and the dairy industry. Its population in 1880 was 7046, of whom 1164 were coloured and 517 of foreign birth.

WEST DERBY, a township in Lancashire, England, now virtually a suburb of Liverpool, about 4 miles north- east of Liverpool Exchange. It is chiefly composed of houses inhabited by the wealthier merchants of Liverpool. The parish church of St Mary was re-erected in 1856 in

the Early English style from the designs of Sir Gilbert Scott, and has a massive central tower with four pinnacles. The site of the former church is marked by a cross, Attached to the church of St James, also a modern structure in the Early English style, there is a library of 1800 volumes. In the centre of the old village there is an old court-house, erected in 1662, now belonging to the marquis of Salisbury as lord of the manor. Croxteth Hall, the seat of the earl of Sefton, is in the immediate vicinity. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 5561 acres) was 27,292 in 1871 and 33,614 in 1881.

In Saxon times West Derby gave its name to a hundred. Edward the Confessor had a castle there, the sito of whieh is still called the Castle Hill. In 1266 the manor was bestowed on Edmund, earl of Lancaster. When Henry de Bolingbroke, duke of Lancaster, became king, this and other manors reverted to the crown. In the 4th of Charles I. it was granted to various citizens of London, who resold it in 1639 to James, Lord Stanley and Strange. The property of the Stanleys was afterwards partly sequestrated and partly alienated.

WESTERN AUSTRALIA. This British colony, the portion of Australia that lies to the west of 129° E. long., forming considerably more than one-third of the whole, has an area of 1,060,000 square miles, is 1400 miles in length and 850 in breadth, and has a coast-line of 3500 miles. It is divided

into five districts—Central, Central Eastern, South-Eastern, North, and Kimberley. The Central or settled district, in the south-west, is divided into twenty-six counties. Apart from the coast lands, the map presents almost a blank, as the major portion is practically a dry waste of stone and sand, relieved by a few shallow salt lakes. The rivers of the south are small,—the Blackwood being the most considerable. To the north of this are the Murray, the well-known Swan, the Moore, the Greenough, and the Murchison. The last is 400 miles long. Sharks Bay receives the Gascoigne (200 miles long), with its tributary the Lyons. Still farther north, where the coast trends eastward, the principal rivers are the Ashburton, the Fortescue, and the De Grey. Kimberley district to the north-east has some fine streams,—the Fitzroy and Ord and their tributaries, on some of which (the Mary, Elvira, &c.) are the gold-fields, 250 miles south of Cambridge Gulf. The Darling mountain range is in the south-west, Mount William reaching 3000 feet; in the same quarter are Toolbrunup (3341 feet), Ellen's Peak (3420), and the Stirling and Victoria ranges. Gardner and Moresby are flat-topped ranges. Mount Elizabeth rises behind Perth. Hampton tableland overlooks the Bight. In the north-west are Mount Bruce (4000 feet), Augustus (3580), Dalgeranger (2100), Barlee, Pyrton, and the Capricorn range. Kimberley has the Leopold, M'Clintock, Albert Edward, Hardman, Geikie, Napier, Lubbock, Oscar, Mueller, and St George ranges. The lake district of the interior is in the Gibson and Victoria deserts from 24° to 32° §. The lakes receive the trifling drainage of that low region. Almost all of them are salt from the presence of saline marl.

Climate.—With little or no cold anywhere, the heat of summer over the whole area is considerable. Westcrn Australia differs from the country to the east in having no extensive ranges to collect vapour, while the trade winds blow off the dry land instead of from the ocean; for these two reasous the climate is very dry. Thunderstorms often supply almost the only rainfall in the interior. The south-western corner, the seat of settlements, is the only portion where rains can be depended on for cultivation; but even there few places have a rainfall of 40 inches. As one goes north- ward the moisture lessens. The north-west and all the coast along to Kimberley, with most of that district, suffer much from dryness, The north-east comes in summer within the sphere of the north- west

monsoons, though just over the low coast-range few showers are known. The south coast, exposed to polar breezes, with un- interrupted sea, has to endure lengthened droughts. In the Swan river quarter the rainfall is in winter, being brought by north-west Winds, and summer days have little moisture. While the south Wind cools the settled region, it comes over the parched interior to

the northern lands. The hot wind of Swan river is from the east and north-east ; but it is from the south in summer to Kimberley and the north-west. In one season the land breeze is hot, in another cool, but alwaysdry. In the year 1885 Perth had a rainfall of 29 inches with an evaporation of 66. The temperature ranged from 34° to 109° in the shade. In 1885 there fell 32% inches on 100 days, while Albany had 32 on 188 days, Augusta 46 on 122 days, and York less than 18 on 81 days. Geraldton port received the same as York, but on 63 days, while Cossack, the pearl port of the north-west, had but 94 on 18 days throughout the year, Northampton showed 213, Beverley 142, and Eucla 9,9 inches.

Geology.—The base of Western Australia is of granite and its kindred formations, which underlie Silurian or more ancient rocks. Not only are the principal elevations so composed, but throughout the vast extent of bare and sterile land eastward and inland granite is most prominent, rising through recent deposits in knobs and tables onward into South Australia, It is the rock of the Australian desert. The great lake district is a depression, with a granite floor permeated with igneous veins, surrounded by isolated hills and ranges of the Primary and metamorphic rocks. King George's Sound and the mountains around are granite, as also are disjointed ranges northward to Sharks Bay. The streams in the north-west, as well as the Lyons and Gascoigne, take their rise among the old igneous and Paleozoic formations. Kimberley is full of similar rocks. The upper Irwin has garnetiferous granite. Granite, both on the south and western shores, supports the recent deposits of calcareous and arenaceous material. The horizontal sandstone of the interior and the flat-topped hills of sandstone rest npon the granite. The arid region around Sharks Bay, glistening with limestone and sand, has the ancient

stone for a foundation, upon which coralline forms built their reefs, All sorts of meta- morphic rocks prevail in the Leopold, Weld, and other ranges of Kimberley. Quartz veins are common in the hills, Cambridge Gulf is lined with quartzose grit embodying rock crystal, and the Blackwood river with gneiss. Porphyry appears at York, on the Murchison, and elsewhere. Blue slate occurs on the Cauning at Champion Bay, and on Hampton Plains. Carboniferous rocks are present near the Irwin, Canning, Fitzroy, and Murchison, Mr Hardman traced them north-east over 1500 square miles, bearing coal plants. Secondary formations are rare: a deposit of Oolite 400 feet thick is reported from the Murchison. Tertiary beds of limestone are more plentiful, generally seen near the coast; others of a coralline nature are more recent. Arenaceous lime- stone cliffs rise two to four hundred feet along the southern shore for hundreds of miles, and similar stone is seen at the junction of the Fitzroy and the Margaret. The spiriferous sandstone on the Denison Plains of Kimberley, like that of the Moresby range, is doubtless Paleozoic. The desert sandstone, so easily decomposed to furnish moving sand-duunes, is regarded as Miocene by Prof. Tate. Freemantle stands upon a recent calcareous sand- stone. Roeburne is similarly situated. The south-west abounds in calcareous accretions. Cape Arid stops with its granite the progress of Tertiary beds. Tertiary agates and jaspers occur on the Ord and the Ashburton, Three terraces lead from the calcareous mud of the north-west shore to the granite of Mount Bruce. Nuyt's Land is probably Pliocene, Volcanic rocks of various ages have burst through other formations, from Kimberley down to King George's Sound, Basalt runs under the limestone of Bunbury, and even rises in pillars; it is in scoriaceous dykes at King Sound. Columnar greenstone occurs about Cape Leeuwin and Cape Natu- raliste, while greenstone dykes yield copper in the Champion Bay district, There is a sort of Giant's Causeway at Géographe Bay. Dampier Archipelago, Nickol Bay, the sources of the Fortescue and the De Grey, Glenelg river, Camden harbour, Mount Waterloo, Fitzroy river, and the gold field all show traces of volcanic action. Of the geology of three-fourths of the colony, however, we know scarcely anything. The presence of a new carbonaceous mineral called cliftonite has been recently determined by Mr L. Fletcher ina meteorite brought by the Rev. Mr Nicholai from Western Australia.

Minerals.—The earliest mines were of lead and eopper in Victoria district, the ore being sent to Geraldton, the port of Champion Bay, 30 miles from the Northampton mines of silver, lead, and copper. Berkshire valley has in addition plumbago, the Irwin antimony, and Woongong silver. The Geraldine lead and silver ores were first worked in 1845, and produced £43,000 in' 1878. Wheal Fortune and Tortura mines are of silver-lead ; Gelira, Whecl Alpha, and Narra Narra of copper. Iron ores are abundant; they are magnetic at Mount Magnet, Coal has not yet been found in any quantity. Carboniferous rocks are seen in several places, and fair specimens of coal have been obtained. A semi-bituminous mineral near the Swan and the Murray yields a pale oil, which would serve to varnish wood. Gold, long looked for, has been found in Kim- berley; and diggers rushed to the country about the Margaret, Mary, and Elvira rivers. he majority did not find returns equal to expen- diture; but auriferous quartz of great richness has been reported recently. The proclaimed gold-field lies between 16 and 193° S., 126° and 129° E, Building stone is found of many varieties.

508

Agriculture.—This was ouce confined to the Swan river quarter, but is rapidly extending northward in Victoria district, where the land is free of timber, though the rainfall is very light. In Kimberley tropical produce, especially sugar, cotton, spices, and riee, can be readily raised. The south- west is essentially a farm- ing country, but the soil is generally sandy. In 1886 86,248 acres were in crop (hay 25,718; wheat, 24,048; barley, 5185; oats, 1766; inaize, 171; potatoes, 356; green forage, 1075 ; vines, 649). No settlement has a finer variety of fruits, and both wine and raisins are being exported. The eottage homesteads are surrounded with pleasant gardens, vineyards, and orchards.

Live Stock.—Timber was too thick in the old settlement for flocks and herds; the squatting distriets are eastward of the divid- ing range and north of the Swan. The want of watcr both eastward and northward stops progress, but sheep stations arc established in oases of reputed eastern deserts. The north-west, in spite of drought, is a favourite locality for squatters; but the better- watered Kimberley is regarded as the most

hopeful. At the beginning of 1887 129,219,079 acres of the available country were leased by 6469 persons, at the rental of £73,868, averaging a little over half a farthing an acre. The horses numbered 38,360; cattle, 88,254; sheep, 1,809,071; pigs, 24,655; goats, 5801. Some parts, chiefly in the south-west, are troubled with poison plants. Borings in ill-watered places, as the southern and central districts, furnish water for stock. The Angora goat has been a success there. Rabbits already begin to trouble squatters. In proportion to inha- bitants, Western Australia has advanced in pastoral pursuits beyond its neighbours, excepting in the quality of stock and the get-up of wool. Of 678,400,220 acres in the colony only 1,851,742 are alienated, though 130,000,000 are leased out by Government. The land laws are liberal. Lessees have pre-emptive rights over parts of runs at 5s. per acre, within a certain period. Inferior land is much cheaper, Kimberley leases are for not less than 50,000 acres at 10s. rent per 1000 aeres,—this being the best pastoral country. A certain limited amount of stock is required according to acreage and district. Poisoned land can be leased for twenty-one years at £1 rent per 1000 acres, when the area is granted free if it be fenced and the poison plants eradicated ; a licence, for that term, of such land, costs one-eighth of that rent. The break-up of the extensive original grants is still essential to further progress.

Flora.—Judged by its vegetable forms, Western Australia would seem to be older than eastern Australia, South Australia being of intermediate age. Indian relations appear on the northern side, and South African on the western. There are fewer Antarctic and Polynesian representatives than in the eastern colonies. European forms are extremely scarce. Compared with the other side of Australia, a third of the genera on the south-west are almost wanting in the south-east. In the latter, 55, having more than ten species eaeh, have 1260 species; but the former has as many in 55 of its 80 genera. Of those 55, 36 are wanting in the south-east, and 17 are absolutely peculiar. There are fewer natural orders and genera westward, but more species. Baron Von Mueller declared that 'nearly half of the whole vegetation of the Austra- lian continent has been traced to within the boundaries of the Western Australian territory." He includes 9 Malvacex, 6 Ewphor- biacce, 2 Rubiacese, 9 Proteacece, 47 Leguminose, 10 Myrtacez, 12 Composite, 5 Labiate, 6 Cyperacer, 13 Convolvulacez,, 16

Graminee, 3 Filices, 10 Amaranthacee. Yet over 500 of its tropical species are identified with those of India or Indian islands. While seven- tenths of the orders reaeh their maximum south-west, three-tenths do so south-east. Cypress pines abound in the north, and ordinary pines in Rottnest Island. Sandalwood (Santalum cygnorum) is exported. The gouty stem baobab (Adansonia) is in the tropics. Aanthorrhea, the grass tree, abounds in sandy districts. Mangrove bark yields a purple tan. Palms and zamias begin in the north- west. The Melaleuca Leucadendron is the paperbark tree of settlers. The rigid-leafed Banksia is known as the honeysuckle. Casuarinz are the he and she oaks of colonists, and the Hxocarpus is their cherry tree. Beautiful flowering shrubs distinguish the south- west ; ad the eS are all ablaze with flowers after a fall of rain. Poison plants are generall J 1 ae Dee oioiea g y showy Leguminose, Sida, and

The timber trees of the south-west are almost unequalled. Of the Eucalypts, the jarrah or mwaho any, L. marginata, is first for value. It runs over five degrees of latitude, and its wood resists the teredo and the ant. Sir Malcolm Fraser assigns 14,000 square miles to the jarrah, 10,000 to Z. viminalis, 2300 to the karri (2. colossea or E. diversicolor), 2400 to York gum (2. loxo- phieba), 800 to the red gum (Zz, calophylla), and 500 to tuart or native pear (Z. gomphocephala). Not much good wood is got within 20 niiles of the coast. The coachbuilder's coorup rises over 300 feet. Morrel furnishes good timber and rich oil, An ever- increasing trade is done in the timber of the south-western forests. _ Fauna.—Among the mamials are the Macropus giganteus, M. irma, M. dama, M. brachyurus, Lagorchestes Jasciatus Bettongia penicillata, Phalangista vulpecula, Pscudochirus cooki, Dasywrus geofroyi, Tarsipes rostratus, Antechinus apicalis, Perameles

WHSTHRERW AUSTRADLDI&

obcsula, Perameles myosurus, Myrmecobius fasciatus. Fossil forms partake of the existing marsupial character, Diprotodon being allied to the wombat and kangaroo. WNail-bearing kangaroos are in the north-west ; the banded one, size of a rabbit, is on Sharks Bay. Nocturnal phalangers live in holes of trees or in the ground. Carnivorous Phascogale are found in south-west. There are three kinds of wombat.

The rock-loving marsupial Osphranter is only in the north-east, and Perameles bougainvillei at Sharks Bay. The dalgyte or Petrogale lagotis is at Swan river and Hypsiprymnus in the south. The colony has only two species of wallabies to five in New South Wales. The Halmaturus of the Abrolhos is a sort of wallaby; a very elegant speeies is 18 inches long. The pretty Dromicia, 6 inches long, lives on stamens and nectar, like the Tarsipes, having a brush at the tip of its tongue; its tail is pre- hensile. The hare-like Lagorchestes fasciatus is a great leaper. The Hapalotis of the interior has nests in trees. Beaver rats and other small rodents are troublesome, and bats are numerous. The dingo is the wild dog. The platypus (Ornithorhynchus) and the Echidna are the only forms of the Monotremata. The seal, whale, and dugong occur in the adjacent seas.

The west is not so rich as the east of Australia in birds. Many forms are absent and others but poorly represented, though some are peculiar to the west. The timbered south-west has the greatest variety of birds, which are scarce enough in the dry and treeless interior. Of lizards the west has 12 genera not found in eastcrn Australia. Of snakes there are but 15 species to 8 in Tasmania and 31 in New South Wales. While the poisonous sorts are 2 to 1 in the east, they are 3 to 1 in the west. The turtle is obtained as an article of food. The freshwater fishes are not all like those of the east. They include the mullet, snapper, ring fish, guard fish, bonita, roek cod, shark, saw fish, parrot fish, and cobbler. Under the head of fisheries may be mentioned the pearl oyster, which is dived for by natives at Sharks Bay; the trepang or béche-de-mer is also met with in the north. Inseets are well repre- sented, especially Coleoptera, Lepidoptera, Hymcnoptera, Hemiptera, and Diptera.

Trade and Commerce.—Safe harbours are few, and hundreds of miles of the coast-line are without shelter for a vessel. The coasting traffic, until recently, was confined to the south-west, from the Sound to Vietoria district ; but wool is now shipped at the north-west, as well as pearls, while wool, pearl shells, hides, tallow, and gold are claiming attention in the tropical north-east. The imports for 1886 amounted to £758,011, of which £847,915 came from the United Kingdom, and £396,871 from other British possessions, principally the neighbouring colonics and India. The exports reached £630,392,—the main items being wool (£322,578), shells

(£104,964), guano, timber, sandalwood, pearls, lead, copper, manna gum, and gold. Of these exports, £505,331 went to Great Britain, and £92,716 to other British ports.

Industries. —The pastoral industry occupies the first place. Fisheries are taking an important position (pearl shell, béclic-de- mer, and preserved or tinned fish), Mandurah, at the mouth of the Murray, and Freemantle have preserving sheds for mullet and snapper. Guano beds are worked to much advantage at the Lace- pede Isles. Salt is produced largely at Rottnest Island. Raisins are dried, and the oil of castor trees is expressed. The mulberry tree succeeds well, and sericulture is making progress. Dugong oil is got from Sharks Bay. Honey and wax are becoming valuable exports ; from the abundance of flowers the hives can be emptied twice a year. Mauna and gums of various kinds are among the resources of the country. Among the wines made are the Riesling, Burgundy, Sweetwater, Hock, and Fontaincbleau.

Roads and Railways.—Excellent roads were made during the period of convict labour. The northern railway from Northampton mines to Port Geraldton is 35 miles long. The eastcrn line is from Freemantle through Perth to Guildford (20 miles) and to Beverley (90 miles). A concession of 12,000 acres per mile is bringing the rail from York northward to Victoria district, and from Beverley southward to Albany on King George's Sound. Communieation between the several ports is conducted by steamers, which have been aided by a state subsidy.

Administration.—W estern Australia is a crown colony, adminis- tered by a governor, his ereeutive council, aud a legislative council partly nominated by the governor. The colonial revenue for 1887 amounted to £461,322, the expenditure to £456,897.

Edueation.—As in other colonies, the denominational system formerly prevailed ; but lately an cffort has been made to have public schools on a broader basis. The state in 1886 granted £7505 for 3169 scholars in the public sehools, and £1415 for 1339, principally Roman Catholics, in the assisted schools. The Perth Inquirer was the first newspaper ; there are now 11 in the colony.

Population.—Of the 42,000 inhabitants 7000 are in.Perth, the capital, 5000 in Freemantle, 1000 at Albany, 900 at York. Some trouble from the aborigines was cxperienced by settlers at first, but how many of them are useful upon stations, making good shepherds. A successful mission for natives has been conducted for many years at New Norcia, about 80 miles north of Perth, by Spanish monks.

WES—WES

*History.—Both the western and northern coasts of the colony are pretty accurately laid down on maps said to date from 1540 to 1550, where the western side of the continent terminates at Cape Leeuwen. The discovery of the coast may be attributed to Portuguese and Spanish navigators, who were in the seas northward of Australia as early as 1520. The next visitors, nearly a century later, were the Dutch. Edel explored northward in 1619, and De Witt in 1628. The "Gulde Zeepaard" in 1627 sailed along the south coast for 1000 miles, the territory being named Nuyt's Land. Tasman made a survey of the north shore in 1644, but did not advance far on the western border. Dampier was off the north-west in 1688 and 1696, naming Sharks Bay. Van- couver entered King George's Sound in 1791. The French, under D'Entrecasteaux, were off Western Australia in 1792; and their commodore Baudin, of the "Géographe" and '*Naturaliste," in 1801 and 1802 made important discoveries along the western and north-western shores. Captain Flinders about the same time paid a visit to the Sound, and traced Nuyt's Land to beyond the South Australian boundary. Freycinet went thither in 1818. Captain King surveyed the northern waters between 1818 and 1822.*

The earliest settlement was made from Port J ackson, at the end of 1825. Owing to a fear that the French might occupy King George's Sound, Major Lockyer carried thither a party of convicts and soldiers, seventy-five in all, and took formal British possession, though Vancouver had previously done so. Yet the Dutch had long before declared New Holland, which then meant only the western portion of Australia, to be Dutch property. This convict establishment returned to Sydney in 1829. In 1827 Captain Stirling was sent to report upon the Swan river, and his narrative excited such interest in England as to lead to an actual free settle- ment at

the Swan river. Captain Freemantle, R.N., in 1827 took official possession of the whole country. Stirling's account stimu- lated the emigration ardour of Sir F. Vincent, and Messrs Peel, Macqueen, &c., who formed an association, securing from the British Government permission to occupy land in Western Australia pro- portionate to the capital invested, and the number of emigrants they despatched thither. In this way Mr Peel had a grant of 250,000 acres, and Colonel Latour of 103,000. Captain (afterwards Sir James) Stirling was appointed heutenant-governor, arriving June 1, 1829. The people were scattered on large grants. The land was poor, and the forests heavy; provisions were at famine prices; and many left for Sydney or Hobart Town. The others struggled on, finding a healthful climate, and a soil favouring fruits and vegetables, whilst their stock grazed in the more open but distant quarters. The overland journey of Eyrc from Adelaide to King George's Sound in 1839-40, through a waterless waste, dis- couraged settlers ; but Grey's overland walk in 1838 from Sharks Bay to Perth revealed fine rivers and good land in Victoria district, subsequently occupied by farmers, graziers, and miners. Com- manders Wickham and Stokes about that time made discoveries on the northern coast. Roe was an active explorer, and Austin in 1854 investigated the country to the eastward. F, H. Gregory traced the Gascoigne in 1857, and made known superior land to the north-west about Nickol Bay four years later. Austin in 1864 saw a good future for the Glenelg district, previously described by Grey. A. Gregory was at the north-east in 1856, and J. Forrest in 1870 proved the way along the south coast to be no hopeless desert. Giles crossed from the east. Major Warburton in 1873 had severe trials with his camels before reaching De Grey river from the east. 'The Messrs Forrest suffered much in another attempt to penetrate the eastern barren country. A. Forrest had a successful tour in 1877 through the Kimberley province; two years later he made the connexion between Kimberley and the north-west. The difficulties of the settlers had compelled them to seek help from the British treasury, in the offer to accept convicts. These came in 1850; but transportation ceased in 1868, in consequence of loud protests from the other colonies. Seeking responsible government, the scttlers were told in 1888 that, if this were granted for the southern part, the north would still be retained as a crown colony. The discoveries of lead and copper, and lately of gold, must increase the working community; while the newly

opened pastures have brought in a great accession of stockholders. Settlers are arriving from South Australia and other colonies, so that the prospects of Western Australia are brightening. (J. BO.)

WEST HAM, an eastern suburb of London, in the county of Essex, which gives its name to an extensive parish, urban sanitary district, and parliamentary borough stretching north and south from Wanstead and Leyton to the Thames, and east and west from Little Ilford and East Ham to the river Lea. West Ham proper is situated on the main road between Stratford and Plaistow, three- quarters of a mile south-east of the Stratford station on the Great Eastern Railway, but the original village is now

completely absorbed in the new buildings which have Sprung up around it. The church of All Saints has an Early English nave and a good Perpendicular tower, but the architecture of the remainder of the building is non- descript and incongruous. Some mural paintings have within recent years been laid bare, and there are a number of old monuments. Among other public buildings are the West Ham, Stratford, and South Essex dispensary (1878), and the conference hall for public meetings. There are a considerable number of charities. West Ham park, 80 acres in extent, was opened 20th July 1874 at a cost of £25,000. A large public cemetery was consecrated in 1857, and there is a Jews' cemetery. The northern main sewer of the metropolitan main drainage system traverses the parish, the chief pumping station being at Abbey Mills. In 1762 West Ham had 700 houses. Morant, in his History of Essex, 1768, describes it as the "residence of considerable merchants, dealers, and industrious artists." Since then its character has completely changed, and it is now a busy industrial district, its prosperity being in a large degree traceable to the formation of the Victoria and Albert docks at Plaistow. It possesses large chemical works, match works, candle factories, manure works, flour- mills, cocoa-nut fibre factories, patent leather cloth fac- tories, smelting works, and copper works. The population of the parish, urban sanitary district, and parliamentary borough (area about 5390 acres) in 1871 was 62,919, and in 1881 it was 128,953.

At the time of the Conquest West Ham belonged to Alestan and Leured, two freemen, and at Domesday to Ralph Gernon and Ralph Pevercl. West Ham village was included in the part which descended to the Gernons, who took the name of Mont- fichet. It received the grant of a market and annual fair in 1253, but these have not been kept for many years. The lord- ship was given to the abbey of Stratford, and, passing to tho crown at the dissolution, it formed part of the dowry of Cathcrine of Portugal, and was therefore called the Qucen's Manor. In 1885 the urban sanitary district was erected into a parliamentary borough, returning two members for the Northern and Southern Divisions respectively.

WEST HOUGHTON, a township of Lancashire, Eng- land, on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 5 miles west-south-west of Bolton, 15 north-west of Manchester, and 5 east-north-east of Wigan. The church of St Bar- tholomew was rebuilt in 1870 in the Gothic style at a cost of £6000. There are coal-mines in the neighbour- hood, and the town possesses a silk factory, print-works, and cotton-mills. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 4341 acres) in 1871 was 6609 and in 1881 it was 9197.

West Houghton before the time of Richard II. was a manor belonging to the abbey of Cockersand. It was confiscated at the Reformation, and since then has been vestcd in the crown. It is now held by the representatives of the late Colonel Wilbraham. The army of Prince Rupert assembled on West Houghton moor before the attack on Bolton.

WEST INDIES. This important archipelago received Plates X., the name of the West Indies from Columbus, who hoped XI. that, through the islands, he had found a new route to India. It is also sometimes known as the Antilles (a name, however, more properly applied to a part than to the whole), as Columbus, on his arrival here, was supposed to have reached Antilla, a fabled country, said to lie far to the westward of the Azores, which found a vague and uncertain place on the maps and charts of many geo- graphers before that time. Columbus first landed on St Salvador, or Watling Island, named by the natives Guanahani, and several voyages to this new land were made in rapid succession by the great discoverer, resulting in the finding of most of the larger islands, and

a more intimate knowledge of those already known. The import- ance of its latest possession was at once recognized by the court of Spain, and, as a first move towards turning the

West Indies to profitable account, numbers of the natives, for the most part a harmless and gentle people, were shipped beyond seas and sold into slavery, others being employed in forced labour in the mines which the Spaniards had opened throughout the archipelago, and from which large returns were expected. Thus early in its history began that traffic in humanity with which the West-India plantations are so widely associated, and which endured for so long a time. Goaded to madness by the wrongs inflicted upon them, the aborigines at last took arms against their masters, but with the result which might have been expected—their almost utter extirpation. Many of the survivors sought release from their sufferings in suicide, and numbers of others perished in the mines, so that the native race soon almost ceased to exist. Spain was not long allowed to retain an undisputed hold upon the islands: British and Dutch seamen soon sought the new region, accounts concerning the fabulous wealth and treasure of which stirred all Europe, and a desultory warfare began to be waged amongst the various voyagers who flocked to this E] Dorado, in consequence of which the Spaniards found themselves gradually but surely forced from many of their vantage grounds, and compelled very materially to reduce the area over which they had held unchecked sway. The first care of the English settlers was to find out the real agricultural capabilities of the islands, and they diligently set about planting tobacco, cotton, and indigo. A French West India Company was incorporated in 1625, and a settlement established on the island of St Christopher, where a small English colony was already engaged in clearing and cultivating the ground ; these were driven out by the Spaniards in 1630, but only to return and again assume possession. About this time, also, the celebrated buccaneers, Dutch smugglers, and British and French pirates began to infest the neigh- bouring seas, doing much damage to legitimate traders, and causing commerce to be carried on only under force of arms, and with much difficulty and danger. Indeed, it was not till the beginning of last century—some time after Spain had, in 1670, given up her claim to

the exclusive possession of the archipelago—that these rovers were rendered comparatively harmless; and piracy yet lingered off the coasts down to the early years of the present century. In 1640 sugar-cane began to be systematically planted, and the marvellous prosperity of the West Indies commenced; it was not from the gold and precious stones, to which the Spaniards had looked for wealth and power, but from the cane that the fortunes of the West Indies were to spring. The successful propagation of this plant drew to the islands crowds of adventurers, many of them men of considerable wealth. In Barbados alone, it is said that 50,000 British subjects arrived in one year about this period. The West Indies were for many years used by the English Government as penal settlements, the prisoners working on the plantations as slaves. In 1655 a British force made an unsuccessful attack on Hayti, but a sudden descent on Jamaica was more fortunate in its result, and that rich and beautiful island has since remained in the possession of Great Britain. The Portu- guese were the first to import Negroes as slaves, and their example was followed by other nations having West-Indian colonies, the traffic existing for about 300 years. In 1660 a division of the islands was arranged between England and France, the remaining aborigines being driven to specified localities, but this treaty did not produce the benefits expected from it, and as wars raged in Europe the islands frequently changed hands. Hayti, now divided into two republics, has suffered much from internal broils and revolutions.

The West Indies are situated in about 20° N. lat. and

75° W. long., and form a broken, but upon the whole, con- tinuous barrier, shutting out as it were the Atlantic Ocean, with its contents of 34,804,000 cubic miles of water, and its mean depth of 2135 fathoms, from the lesser basins of the Caribbean Sea and Gulf of Mexico, containing respectively 1,675,000 cubic miles and 628,000 cubic miles, and with mean depths of 1269 fathoms and 772 fathoms. These two seas are separated by the island of Cuba and the isthmus of Yucatan, with the great Campeche Bank surrounding three sides of the latter. Spring tides do not rise above 4 feet, nor neaps above 24 feet. Complicated currents

and dangerous shoals, especially in the neighbour- hood of the Bahamas, necessitate the exercise of consider- able skill and care when navigating this region. The equa- torial current sweeps around Trinidad and the Antilles into the Caribbean Sea, and the Gulf Stream passes from the Gulf of Mexico by way of the Florida Channel. The well- known Sargasso Sea lies to the north-east of the islands.

The physical features of the region are clearly shown on the accompanying map (Plate XI.), the orographical and bathymetrical data being reproduced from a yet unpublished chart intended to illustrate one of the "Challenger" Reports, and inserted here by permission of Dr Murray, Director of the ' Challenger" Expedition Commission. In the Gulf of Mexico and Caribbean Sea there are 394,850 square miles covered by depths of 100 fathoms and less, 363,950 square miles with from 100 to 500 fathoms, 263,250 square miles by from 500 to 1000 fathoms, 572,950 square miles by from 1000 to 2000 fathoms, 274,850 square miles by from 2000 to 3000 fathoms, and 7750 square miles by over 3000 fathoms. The average surface temperature of the sea in the neighbourhood of the islands is from 75° to 78° F. in February, from 79° to 80° in May, and from 82° to 84° in August. The mean annual temperature of the Gulf Stream in the Florida Channel is 80° F. .

The various groups which go to form the West Indies have in some cases more than one name, but the follow- ing classification is that usually adopted. 'To the north lie the Bahamas, situated upon the Great Bahama Bank, south from which is Cuba; Jamaica, again, lies to the south of the latter, and to the east of Jamaica are Hayti and Porto Rico. Still farther to the east lie the Virgin Islands, south of which are the Caribbee Islands, or Antilles proper, divided by mariners into the Leeward and Windward groups. 'Trinidad lies close to the coast of South America. Thus the whole archipelago stretches, in the form of a rude arc, from Florida and Yucatan in North America to Venezuela in South America.

Area and Population of the Islands according to the latest Returns.

Square| Popula- Square) Popula- Miles. tion. Miles. tion. SpaNnisu 2)275,997 INDEPENDENT...| 29,000 | 1,150,000 GOD Bierce vcunee M21 O54 lll WMG hi..c..:.sss50°.<BRUTIS Hessian. 12,031 | 1,213,144

TRENCH says… I, 103 352,400 Bahamas, ...sccses 4,466 43,521 || Guadeloupe, &e…... 714{| 180,800 Turks and Caicos..; 169 4,732 || St Bartholomew….. 8 2,370 aoa Sea 4,193 | 580,804 || Martinique…..... 381] 169,230 indward Islands. Sides… 268) alam | et) ee St Vincent…..... Te] AO ||) Sea ace e sere tens :

: y BOING) sores sccicscees: 129 4,008 Barbados…..... 166 | 171,860 || iin 62 6407 Grenada, &..... Te) a ES saeco csencacae: Bal. eae ODA Ol eessce- e 114 18,051 23 6347

Leeward Islands… U Virgin Islands .. 57 5,287 223] 33,763 St Christopher .. 65] 29,137 135 18,430 Nevisn. fret 50] 11,864 53] 14,389 Antigua, &¢...,.. 170 34,964 35 944 Montserrat. ..... 32 10,083 eS. se Dominica…..... 291| 98,911 ERG HRI Pes ctec.ss5 92,270 | 5,070,038

Trinidad. eres. ore 1,754 153,128

The principal rivers are the Cauto, the Sagua la Grande, and the Sagua le Chica in Cuba, the Rio Grande and Plantain Garden in Jamaica, and the Gran Yacui, the

WEST

Neiba, and Yuna in Hayti. All have, necessarily, short courses, and none of them are of much importance.

The population is almost entirely of European, Negro, or East-Asiatic origin. The Negroes far outnumber the others, but the Asiatics are rapidly increasing in numbers.

As in most tropical countries where considerable heights are met with—and here over 15,500 square miles lie at an elevation of more than 1500 feet. above sea-level—the climate of the West Indies (in so far at least as heat and cold are concerned) varies at different altitudes, and on the higher parts of many of the islands a marked degree of coolness may generally be found. With the exception of part of the Bahamas, all the islands lie between the isotherms of 77° and 82° F. The extreme heat, however, is greatly tempered by the sea breezes, and by long, cool,

refreshing nights. Frost is occasionally formed in the cold season when hail falls, but snow is unknown. The seasons may be divided as follows. The short wet season, or spring, begins in April and lasts from two to six weeks, and is succeeded by the short dry season, when the thermometer remains almost stationary at about 80° F. In July the heat increases to an extent well nigh unbear- able, and thunder is heard to rumble in the distance. No change need now be looked for till after a period varying from the end of July to the beginning of October, when the great rainfall of the year commences, accompanied by those tremendous and destructive hurricanes, so intimately and truly associated with popular ideas regarding this region, on which the annual rainfall averages 63 inches— an amount of precipitation calculated to represent a mass of water of 12,465,437,000,000 cubic feet. This season is locally known as the "hurricane months." Out of a total of 355 hurricanes, or, more properly, cyclones, recorded during the last three hundred years, 42 have occurred in July, 96 in August, 80 in September, and 69 in October. These storms commence in the Atlantic and towards the east. or a day or two they follow a westerly course, inclining, at the same time, one or two points towards the north, the polar tendency becoming gradually more marked as the distance from the equator increases. When the hurricanes reach latitude 25° N., they curve to the north- east, and almost invariably wheel round on arriving at the northern portion of the Gulf of Mexico, after which they follow the coast line of North America. Their rate of speed varies considerably, but may be said to average 300 miles per day among the islands. The usual signs of the approach of the cyclones are an ugly and threatening appearance of the weather, sharp and frequent puffs of wind increasing in force with each blast, accompanied with a long heavy swell and confused choppy sea, coming from the direction of the approaching storm. But the baro- meter is the true guide, which should always be consulted when a cyclone is expected. If a sudden fall of the baro- meter is observed, or even if a marked irregularity of its diurnal variations takes place, a storm may be confidently looked for. In some of these hurricanes the barometer has been found to stand 2 inches lower in the centre of the disturbance than it did outside the limits of the storm field. December marks the commencement of the long dry season, which, accompanied by fresh winds and occasional hail showers, lasts till April. The average temperature of the air at Barbados, which may be taken as a

favourable average, is, throughout the year, 80° F. in the forenoon, and about 82° in the afternoon. The maxi- mum is 87°, and the minimum 75°.

The geological features of the West Indies are interesting. A calcareous formation, often assuming the shape of marbles, is most common, and indeed preponderates above all the other rocks to aremarkable degree. The Bahamas, which are low, are composed wholly of limestone formed from coral

[NDPMES

511

and shells, crushed into aconcretionary mass, hard on the surface, but soft where not exposed to atmospheric action, full of holes and indentations, and disposed in nearly level beds. The lower parts of the Antilles present a like forma- tion where the land does not riseabove 230 feet. Cuba shows two distinct compact limestones, one a clayey sand-stone and the other a gypsum. These are confined to the central and western parts of the island, which has also syenitic rocks, with some serpentine from which petroleum is obtained, Four-fifths of Jamaica consists of limestone overlying granite and other igneous rocks. Hayti has much metamorphic strata, generally greatly uptilted, and often exhibiting marked folding. These rocks appear to have been limestones, shales, sandstones, and conglomer- ates. Auriferous quartz veins occur in slates, where these are found near eruptive masses; there is also some syenite, and both active and extinct craters are upon this island. The western Antilles are entirely of volcanic origin, and coral reefs occur along their shores ; coral reefs are also presented on the coasts of many of the other islands, but are most irregular in their mode of occurrence, sometimes forming complete belts surrounding the land on all sides, but oftener appearing in the shape of unconnected masses. The fossils of the West Indies are important, as from many of them clear evidence is obtained to show that at no very remote geological period the islands formed part of the adjoining continents. The remains of the megatherium, mylodon, and cabylara, essentially South- American, are also found in North America, but only along the seaboards of Georgia and Carolina. As these are also found in some of the West India islands, as well as in South America, it is

thus perfectly clear that at one time the archipelago formed a land passage between the two great divisions of the New World. These remains have also been found in conjunction with the fossil human skeletons of Guadeloupe and the rude weapons associated with them. We may therefore fairly conclude that in Pleistocene times the West Indies formed the connecting link between the two Americas. The occurrence of tree stumps tm situ several feet below high-water mark also points to a comparatively late sinking of the land in some areas.

The mineral wealth of the islands is not remarkable. Gold, silver, iron, copper, tin, platinum, lead, coal of a poor quality, cobalt, mercury, arsenic, antimony, manganese, and rock salt either have been or are worked. Of late years asphalt has been worked to considerable advantage among the pitch lakes of Trinidad. Opal and chalcedony are the principal precious stones.

The fauna of the region is Neotropical, belonging to that region which includes South and part of Central America, although great numbers of birds from the North- American portion of the Holarctic realm migrate to the islands. The resident birds, however, eighteen genera of which are certainly Neotropical, show beyond doubt to which faunal region the islands properly belong. Mammals are, as in most island groups, rare. The agouti abounds, and wild pigs and dogs are sufficiently numerous to afford good sport to the hunter, as well as smaller game, in the shape of armadillos, opossums, musk-rats, and raccoons. The non-migrating birds include trogons, sugar- birds, chatterers, and many parrots and humming birds. Waterfowl and various kinds of pigeons are in abundance. Reptiles are numerous: snakes—both the boa and adder —are innumerable, while lizards, scorpions, tarantulas, and centipedes are everywhere. Insects are in great numbers, and are often very annoying. Among domestic animals mules are largely reared, and where the country affords suitable pasture and forage cattle-breeding 1s extensively engaged in. Much attention is not bestowed

on horse-breeding, except in regard to the comparatively small numbers required for use in driving and riding by the officials and planters. Goats

abound, and large flocks of sheep are kept for the sake of their flesh alone, as the climate is not adapted for wool-growing.

The flora of the islands is of great variety and richness, as plants have been introduced from most parts of the globe, and flourish either in a wild state or under cultivation ; grain, vegetables, and fruits, generally common in cool climates, may be seen growing in luxuriance within a short distance of like plants which only attain perfection under the influence of extreme heat, nothing being here required for the successful propagation of both but a difference in the height of the lands upon which they grow. The forests, which are numerous and wide- spreading, produce the most valuable woods and delicious fruits. Palms are in great variety, and there are several species of gum-producing trees. Some locust trees have been estimated to have attained an age of 4000 years, and are of immense height and bulk. Prptadenia is, on account of its almost imperishable character when in the ground, universally used as a material for house-building. Xanthoxylon, the admired and valuable satin-wood of commerce, is common; Sapindus finds a ready market on account of its toughness ; crab-wood yields a useful oil and affords reliable timber ; and tree ferns of various species are common. Pimento is peculiar to Jamaica. But it is to the agricultural resources of the islands that the greatest importance attaches. For centuries almost the whole care of the planters was bestowed upon the culti- vation of the sugar-cane and tobacco plant, but since the emancipation of the slaves and the fall in the price of sugar attention has been turned to the production of other and more varying crops. Perhaps this change has been most marked in the trade which has now sprung up in fruit, which is very large, and annually increasing. Sugar, however, is still the staple product, and has for some time been grown in considerable quantities on the small holdings of the Negroes and other labourers. Crops of tobacco, beans, pease, maize, and Guinea corn are also becoming popular, and a species of rice, which requires no flooding for its successful propagation, is largely produced. Hymenachne striatum covers many of the plains, and affords food for numerous herds of cattle.

For further particulars see Cuba, JAMAICA, Hayti, and other articles on separate islands. Interesting information regarding the state of the islands

immediately after the abolition of slavery may be found in Extracts from Papers Printed by Order of the House of Commons, 1839, Relative to the West Indies; and notices of the earlier British settlers are contained in Hotten's Original Lists of Emigrants, &c. (J, GU.)

WESTMACOTT, Str Ricnarp (1775-1856), one of the principal English sculptors of the classical revival, was born in London in 1775, and while yet a boy learned the rudiments of the plastic art in the studio of his father, who was then a sculptor of some reputation. In 1793, at the age of eighteen, he went to Rome and became a pupil of the Venetian Canova, who was then at the height of his fame. Under the prevailing influences of Italy, at that time Westmacott devoted all his energies to the study of classical sculpture, and throughout his life his real sympathies were with pagan rather than Christian art. Within a year of his arrival in Rome he won the first prize for sculpture offered by the Florentine academy of arts, and in the following year (1795) he gained the papal gold medal awarded by the Roman Academy of St Luke. On his return to London Westmacott began to exhibit his works yearly at the Royal Academy, and soon became the most popular of English sculptors. In 1805 he was elected an associate, and in 1811 a full member of the Royal Academy ; in 1827 he was appointed to succeed

Flaxman as Royal Academy professor of sculpture, and in 1837 he was knighted. A very large number of important public monuments were executed by him, including many portrait statues; but, like most sculptors of the pseudo- classic revival, he was not successful with this class of draped figure. Little can be said in praise of such works as the statue on the duke of York's column, the portrait of Fox in Bloomsbury Square, or that of the duke of Bedford in Russell Square. Much admiration was expressed at the time for Westmacott's monuments to Collingwood and Sir Ralph Abercromby in St Paul's Cathedral, and that of Mrs Warren in Westminster Abbey; but subjects like these were far less congenial to him than sculpture of a more classical type, such as the pedimental figures over the portico of the British Museum, and his colossal nude statue of Achilles in bronze, set up in Hyde Park in honour of the duke of

Wellington; this last statue, though possessing little originality of design, is not without grandeur, and shows a skilful treatment of the nude. Originality was not Westmacott's strong point, but he was highly trained, and, in spite of his artisti- cally degraded time, possessed a strong natural good taste, which preserved him from reproducing the mere- tricious feebleness of his master Canova. Westmacott wrote the article ScutprurE for the 8th edition of the Encyclopedia Britannica. He died September 1, 1856, after about fifteen years of retirement from active work.

WESTMEATH, an inland county of Ireland, in the province of Leinster, is bounded N.W. by Longford, N. by Cavan, N.E. and E. by Meath, S. by King's County, and W. by Roscommon. Its greatest length from east to west is about 40 miles, and its greatest breadth from north to south about 35 miles. The total area is 453,453 acres, or about 708 square miles. Westmeath is included within the great central limestone plain of Ireland, but at Moat-a-Genogue and near Ballymahon the sandstone rises above the limestone bed and forms isolated protuberances. The general average height of the surface of the county is over 250 feet above sea-level. Being diversified with hill, valley, lake, and river it is highly picturesque, but in no part can it be termed mountainous, the highest summits being Knocklayde (795 feet), Hill of Ben (710 feet), and Knockayon (707 feet). Good limestone is obtainable for building or agricultural purposes, but in some cases the limestone is difficult to calcine. Copper, lead, coal, and marble have been dug, but are not found in sufficient quantities to make the speculation profitable. In some parts there are numerous eskers of calcareous gravel. A large surface is occupied by bog. A special feature of Westmeath is the number of large loughs, which have a combined area of nearly 17,000 acres. In the north, on the borders of Cavan, is Lough Sheelin, with a length of 5 miles and an average breadth of between 2 and 3 miles, and adjoining it is the smaller Lough Kinale. In the centre of the county there is a group of large loughs, of which Lough Dereveragh has an area of 2555 acres. To the north of it are Loughs Lene, Glore, Bawn, and others, and to the south Loughs Iron and Owel. Farther south is Lough Ennell or Belvidere, and in the south-west Lough Ree, forming part of the boundary with Roscommon. The river Inny, which rises in Cavan, enters Westmeath from Lough Sheelin, and, forming for parts of its course the boundary with Longford, falls into Lough Ree. The Inny

has as one of its tributaries the Glore, flowing from Lough Lene through Lough Glore, a considerable part of its course being underground. From Lough Lene the Dale also flows southwards to the Irish Sea, and thus this lake sends its waters to the opposite shores of the island. The Brosna flows from Lough Ennell southwards by King's County into the Shannon.

WES—WES

*Agriculturc.—According to the Return of Owners of Land, 1876, Westmeath was divided among 668 proprietors possessing 480,003 acres, at an annual value of £301,696, or about 14s. an acre. There werc also 4262 acres of common or wastc lands. Of the proprietors only 111 possessed less than one acre. The following possessed over 8000 acres :—ear] of Longford, 15,014; John Malone, 12,555; Lord Castlemaine, 11,445; Lord Greville, 9784; Captain Thomas Smyth, 9779; Patrick Edward Murphy, 9694; Sir Benjamin Chapman, Bart., 9517; G. A. Roehfort-Boyd, 9481; Charles Brinsley Marley, 9060 ; and Sir John Ennis, Bart., 8775. The soil is generally a rich loam of great depth resting on limestone, and is well adapted both for tillage and pasturage. Even the hills when not under tillage are clothed with a rich pasturage to thcir sunimits. In 1886 22°2 per cent. of the entire area was under crops, 62°83 per cent. under grass, '1 per cent. fallow, 1°8 per cent. woods and plantations, 9°4 per cent. bog and marsh, '1 per cent. barren mountain land, and 4*1 per cent. watcr, roads, &c. The total number of holdings in 1886 was 10,992, of which 42 were above 500 acres in extent, 281 between 200 and 500 acres, 535 between 100 and 200 acres, 1094 between 50 and 100 acres, 3589 between 15 and 50 acres, 2466 between 5 and 15 acres, 1698 between 1 and 5 acres, and 1287 not excecding 1 acre. Within about the last forty years the area under crops has diminished nearly a third. In 1849 it was 130,913 acres, and in 1859 it was 122,684. Between 1876 and 1886 it has becn fluctuating rather than decreasing ; in the former year it was 98,959, and in the latter 96,287. Only in the area under mcadow and clover has there been an increase: in 1849 it was 35,359 acres, and by 1859 it had increased to 41,535, by 1876 to 51,262, and by 1886 to 56,619. The decline in the area under green crops has not been marked: in 1876 the arca was 21,369 acres, and in 1886 it was 19,292; but since 1849, when it was 76,173 acres, the area under corn crops has*

declincd more than two-thirds, and the decline has becn continuous, the area in 1876 being 26,305 acres, and in 1886 only 20,375. More than half the area under green crops is occupied by potatoes (11,948 acres in 1876, aud 11,106 acres in 1886), turnips occupying in these years respectively 6155 acres and 5362 acres, mangel-wurzel, &c., 1232 and 1129, and other green crops 2584 and 1695. The bulk of the area under corn crops has always been occupied by cats, but their area has declined from 59,424 acres in 1849 to 25,709 in 1876, and 19,969 in 1886. The areas under other corn crops are inconsiderable. The number of horses in 1886 was 13,014, of which 883 were kcpt for amusement and recreation. Mules numbered 659, and asses 4891. Cattle numbered 102,878, 15,806 of them milch cows, and 45,915 other cattle above two years ofage. The number of sheep was 118,401, of which 44,265 were under one year old. Pigs numbered only 17,308, goats 6811, and poultry 265,759, including 21,014 turkeys and 36,908 geese.

Manufactures. —The occupations are almost wholly agricultural, dairy farming predominating. Flour and meal are largely made. The only textile manufactures are those of friczes, flannels, and coarse linens for home use. The only mineral of any value is limestone.

Administration and Population.—De Burgo in 1760 placed the population at 50,340; in the parliamentary census of 1812 it was

given as 112,000; in 1821 it amounted to 128,819, in 1841 to 141,800, –

in 1861 to 90,879, and in 1881 to 71,798 (males 36,478, females 35,320). Between 1841 and 1881 the decrease has thus been 49:18 per cent. Roman Catholics in 1881 numbered 92:2 per cent, of the population, and Protestant Episcopalians 6°9. In 1881 54 per cent. of the population could read and write, 14°7 per cent. could read but could not write, and 31°3 per cent. could neither read nor write,—14°8 per cent. being under seven years of age. There were none who could speak Irish only; 828 could speak Irish and English. By the Act of 1885 Westmeath, which formerly returned two mem- bers to Parliament, was formed into two parliamentary divisions, North and South, each returning onc member; and, Athlone having been disfranchised, that part of the borough within the county was included in the South Division. The principal towns are

Athlone, of which about half (3072 inhabitants out of 6755) is within the county, the remainder being in Roscommon, and Mullingar (4787), the county town, a Catholic cathedral city, and an important rail- way junction. The county is divided into 12 baronics, and contains 63 parishes and 1356 townlands. It is in the home circuit, and assizcs are held at Mullingar, and quarter sessions at Mullingar and Moate. There are 16 petty session districts. The county is within the Dublin military district, and forms part of No. 67 sub-district, the brigade depét of which is at Birr. There is a barrack station at Mullingar.

Listory and Antiquitics.—Westmeath was included in the kingdom of Meath formed by Tuathal, overlord of the Scoti (0b. cir. 160 a.D.), to serve as his mensal land. The district suffered much in the 10th and 11th centurics from the Danes, who burnt the town and abbcy of Fore. In 1153 the northern region was the scene of a bloody battle under the leadership of the two sons of Dermod O'Brien, after which Turlough, having obtained the victory, put out his brother's eyes. On the settlement of the English in Leinster it formed part of the palatinate of Hugh de Lacy, who received about

800,000 acres from the king, and allotted large tracts to his followers. In the reign of Henry VIII. the palatinate was divided into two parts, the western of whieh was distinguished by the name of Westmeath. In the latter division a portion of Longford was included until this district was formed into a separate county by Elizabeth. The plan for the insurrection of 1641 was concerted in the abbey of Multifarnham, and both in the wars of this period and those of 1688 the gentry of the county were so deeply impli- cated that the majority of the estates were confiscated. There are a considerable number of old raths: one at Rathconrath is of great extent; another at Ballymore, originally a Danish fort, was fortified during the wars of the Cromwellian period and those of 1688, and afterwards was the headquarters of General Ginckell, when pre- paring to besiege Athlone ; and there is a third of considerable sizo near Lough Lene. The ruins of the Franciscan abbey of Multifarn- ham, founded in 1236 by William Delaware, picturesquely situated near Lough

Dereveragh, include a tower 93 feet in height. Others of less importance are at Fore, Kilmocahill, and Kilbcggan.

WESTMINSTER. See Lonpon.

WESTMORLAND, a northern inland county of England, adjoins Cumberland on the north-west, Lancashire on the south-west and south, Yorkshire on the east, and a small part of Durham on the extreme north-east. In form it may be regarded as an irregular polygon, with two large re-entering angles on the south-west and south-east. Its length from N.E. to §.W. is 42 miles, while from east to west it measures 40 miles. The total area is 505,864 acres, whereof 4958 acres are foreshore, and 8519 are water. No part of the county touches the sea, unless the estuary of the Kent be regarded as such.

Physically the county may be roughly divided into four areas. (1) The great upland tract in the north- eastern part, bordering on the western margin of York- shire and part of Durham, consists mainly of a wild moorland area, rising to elevations of 2780 feet in Dun Fell, 2803 in Dufton Fell, 2591 feet in Mickle Fell, 2008 Nine Standards, 2328 High Seat, 2323 Wilbert Fell, and Swarth Fell 2235 feet above the sea, (2) The second area comprises about a third of the massif of the Lake District proper, with its eastward continuation, the Langdale and Ravenstonedale Fells, and also the fells of Middleton and Barbon farther south. These include Helvellyn (3118 feet), Bow Fell (2959), Pika Blisca (2304), Langdale Pike (2300), High Street (2663), Fairfield (2950), the Calf (2220), besides others of considerable elevation. All but the lower parts of the valleys within these two areas lie at or above 1000 feet above Ordnance datum ; and more than half the remainder lies between that elevation and 1750 feet, the main mass of high land lying in the area first mentioned. (3) The third area includes the comparatively low country between the northern slopes of that just described and the edge of the uplands to the north-east thereof. This includes the so-called Vale of Eden. About three-fifths of this area lies between the 500 and the 1000 feet contour. (4) The Kendal area consists mainly of undulating lowlands, varied by hills ranging in only a few cases up to 1000 feet. More than half this area lies below the 500-feet contour. Westmorland may thus be said to

be divided in the middle by uplands ranging in a general south- easterly direction, and to be bordered all along its eastern side by the elevated moorlands of the Pennine chain. The principal rivers are—in the northern area the higher part of the Tees, the Eden with its main tributaries, the Lowther and the Eamont, and in the southern area the Lune and the Kent, with their numerous tributary becks and gills. The lakes include Ullswater (the greater part), Windermere (the whole), Grasmere, Hawes Water, and numerous smaller lakes and tarns, which are chiefly con- fined to the north-western parts of the county. Amongst the other physical features of more or less interest are numerous crags and scars, chiefly in the neighbourhood of the lakes; others are Mallerstang Edge, Helbeck, above

Brough ; Haikable, or High Cup Gill, near Appleby ; Orton Scars; and the limestone crags west of Kirkby Lonsdale. Amongst the waterfalls are Caldron Snout, on the northern confines of the county, flowing over the Whin Sill, and Stock Gill Force, Rydal Force, Colwith Force, and Dungeon Gill Force, all situated amongst the volcanic rocks in the west. Hell Gill, near the head of the Eden, and Stenkrith, near Kirkby Stephen, are conspicuous examples of natural arches eroded by the streams flowing through them. Amongst the more striking hills outside the massif of the Lake District are Wilbert Fell, Roman Fell, Murton Pike (1949 feet), Dufton Pike (1578 feet), and Knock Pike (1306 feet).

Geology.—The geological formations represented in Westmor- land are : —(A) (1) recent deposits, and (2) glacial drift; (B) New Red rocks—(1) Upper New Red, and (2) Lower New Red or Permian ; (C) Carboniferous rocks—(1) Coal-Measures and Millstone Grit, (2) Yoredale Rocks and Mountain Limestone, including the Roman Fell beds, Calciferous Sandstones, and the Lower Limestone Shale, and (3) the Upper Old Red ; (D) Siluro-Cambrian rocks—(1) Silurian rocks proper, (2) Upper Cambrian, Ordovieian or Lower Silurian rocks, and (3) Cambrian rocks ; (E) Metamorphic rocks of different ages ; and (F) various Plutonic rocks.

Alluvium in some form or another occurs as marginal deposits alongside streams, or as deltas where streams euter lakes, or where they spread at the foot of a hill-side. Peat forms a mantle of varying thickness on the damper or the more shady parts of nearly all the uplands, ranging locally up to a thickness of 10 feet, and occurs on the sites of old tarns or of old swamps. Screes of rock waste are of general occurrence about the lower parts of nearly all the crags, and as such they play an important part in the scenery of the district. Glacial deposits, in the form of boulder clay, of sand and gravel, or of boulders, are extensively distributed over the lowlands, and to a variable distance up the hill-sides also. They seldom much exceed 100 feet in thickness ; but their occur- rence is of considerable importance in relation to the scenery, and still more so to the character of the subsoil. Boulders of various kinds are scattered far and wide over nearly all but the highest parts of the county.

Between the period represented by the boulder clay and the next older deposit in Westmorland a great hiatus exists, which is else- where represented by several very important geological formations, Here the newest rock next in the series is the St Bees Sandstone and the gypseous shales at its base, which together' probably re- present the Bunter serics. Thesc soft red sandstones, flags, and marls with gypsum are all confined to the northern part of the county, where they form much of the low ground extending along the foot of the Cross Fell escarpment from the county boundary east of Penrith south-eastward to Kirkby Stephen. Some of the prettiest scenery of these parts (Crowdundle Beck ; Mill Beck, Dufton ; and Podgill, Kirkby Stephen) owes its character to these rocks. The stone is used extensively for building. Gypsum occurs in workable quantities in the shales near the base. Where fully developed these rocks are not less thau 2000 feet in thickness. The next formations in descending order consist of the Magnesian Limestone (0-30 feet), the Helton Plant Beds (0-40 feet), the Penrith Sandstone and its horizontal equivalents the Brockrams (0-1200 feet). All these are older than the rocks previously men- tioned, but belong to the samc series. They occur in the samc tract of country.

The highest rocks of the Carboniferous age in Westmorland are represented by a tiny patch of true Coal-Measures, let down, and so

preserved from denudation, by one of the great Pennine faults between Brough and Barras, in north-eastern Westmorland. These roeks consist of several thick and valuable seams of coal, and of beds of fireclay equally valuable, interbedded with several hundred feet of the usual sandstones and shales.! True Coal-Measures are not yet known to occur elsewhere in Westmorland. Millstone Grit of the ordinary type underlies these Coal-Measures, and is seen to perhaps a thickness of nearly 2000 feet, Except a small patch exposed near Appleby, and also another near Kirkby Lonsdale, the remainder of the Millstone Grit is confined to the higher parts of the wild moorlands along the eastern border of the county Lhe highest member of the second subdivision of the Carboniferous is the Yoredale Rocks, which form the chief mass of the hills forming the Westmorland part of the great central watershed of northern England. Most of the Cross Fell escarpment, of Stainmoor, and of the higher parts of the valley of the Eden consist of these rocks as do also much of the lowlands. They consist essentially of a series of thin beds of limestone, parted by variable thicknesses of sandstone and shales, with here and there a thiu eoal-seam. Their thickness ranges from 1500 to 2500 feet. The Borradale coal-seam,

1 These will be found described in detail in the 7 (sate op er rans. Cumb. and West, Assoc.,

and the Tan Hill seam, in these rocks, have long been worked for local purposes. Below the Yoredale Rocks limestone preponderates, and the grey limestones of this series form very conspicuous and striking features in the landscape around Kendal, Beetham, and Farleton; Kirkby Stephen, Orton, and Shap; Brough, Helgill, and Murton, and thence north-westward. Near Kirkby Stephen is nearly 2000 feet of this limestone, locally almost undivided. Near Kendal, at Barbon, between Ravenstonedale and Shap Wells, and near Helton occur masses of red gravelly conglomerate and red sandstones belonging to the Upper Old Red. The materials of the conglomerate largely consist of rocks foreign to the district. Fora period of immense length preceding the deposition of the Upper Old Red the older rocks of Westmorland seem to have been

exposed to a complicated scries of disturbances and denudations, with, as a result, the removal from some areas of a thickness of strata above (rather than below) 5 miles in thickness. It was aeross the up- turned and denuded ends of this vast pile of rock that the Upper Old Red was laid down. The older strata, grouped under D above, are thercfore separated from the Upper Old Red by an un- conformity representing the removal from this area, and the ac- cumulation in some unknown arca elsewhere, of a pile of rock 5 miles in thickness. This is one of the greatest breaks yet made known in the whole of the geological record.

The Siluro-Cambrian rocks are perhaps more fully developed in Westmorland and Cumberland than they arc anywhere else,—thc aggregate thickness of strata referable to one or other of the hori- zons in this group being at least 6 miles. The highest member of this series is the Kirkby Moor Flags, which consist of a considerable thickness of mudstones and sandstones, much disturbed and con- torted in places, and form the whole. of the low hill country on the east side of the turnpike road between Kendal and Kirkby Lonsdale, and extending thence eastward to a little beyond the Lune. Lithologically and palxontologically these rocks agree in a general way with the Ludlow rocks of Shropshire. Their highest beds are unconformable to the Upper Old Red, sometimes violently so. These rocks graduate downward into the Bannisdale Slates, 5200 feet of close alternations of flaggy grits and rudely cleaved sandy mudstones. These rocks occupy a large area around Kendal, and to the south-west of thattown. They also form a large part of the Howgill Fells. These in turn graduate downward into the Coniston Grits and Flags, which consist of 7000 feet of altcrnations of tough micaceous grits and rudely-cleaved mudstones,—the whole mass tending near its base to pass into finely-striped and cleaved mudstones, the Coniston Flags. The tough and durable nature of the harder beds of this series gives rise to a series of mammillated hills. All the rocks of the series here referred to give rise to a type of scenery different in many essential respects from that result- ing from the wastc of any other rocks in Westmorland, so that the hill scenery south of a line joining Ambleside and Shap Wells is distinctly different from that to the north of that line. Near their base the argillaceous members of the series graduate downwards into a few hundred feet of pale grey-green mudstone, with a peculiar porcellanous

texture; and these, in their turn, graduate downwards into a small thickness of pitch-black mudstones, with much tho general character of indurated fuller's earth, and usually crowded with graptolites having the general facies of those elsewhere found in the Llandeilo rocks. The pale grey beds are the Stock- dale Beds, or " pale slates." The Graptolitic Mudstones locally have at their basc a conglomerate, which consists of rolled fragments of rocks from various horizons in the older series. In general terms these two groups of rocks may be described as oceurring along a narrow outcrop extending from near Ambleside to Shap Wells. They reappear also near Dufton and at Cautla. In West- morland the Llandovery beds of Wales appear to be absent, as the rocks next older than the Graptolitic Mudstones consist of rocks characterized by fossils of an unmistakably Bala type. The West- morland type of these rocks consists of a mass of altcrnations of volcanic tufts and lavas, with the marine equivalents of these, and with limestones and shales, the whole series thinning as it is traced toward the centre of the Lake District near the head of Windermere. The Coniston Limestone is the best known member. of this series. The series as a whole, however, finds its best and most fully- developed representatives outside the area of old subaerial volcanic cones and craters on whose surface the Coniston Limestone lies, The calcareous members of this series are usually replete with well-preserved fossils in grcat variety. The series under notice forms some conspicuous features along the foot of the Cross Fell escarp- ment. Rising from beneath these series just mentioned comes the vast pile of old volcanic ejectamenta, largely subacrial in the typical district, which is known as the Borradale Volcanic Series (see CUMBERLAND). Outside the massif of the Lake District we

meet with the submarine cquivalents of these subaerial accumula-

tions. These are well seen at Milburn. They consist of many thousands of feet of alternations of submarine tuffs, with shales and mudstones, seemingly identical in character with the Skiddaw Slates, which in the centre of the Lake District mainly lie at the base of the volcanic rocks. The next type may be described as a

Wie THM OR LAN D

vast pile of old marine sedimentary accumulations, ten or more thousand feet in total thickness, and mainly consisting of alterna- tions of indurated shales, mudstones, and flags, with subordinate beds of grit. This is the Skiddaw Slate, which may be couveniently exainined on and around Murton Pike, near Appleby. The same general type of strata prevails over a very wide area. The bottom of these rocks has never been reached. The principal areas of metamorphic rocks in Westmorland are situated in the volcanic area. Rocks more or less altered by deep-seated action occur also around the Shap Granite. The alteration of the volcanic rocks here takes the form of an approach to the mineral characters of granite; but there is no passage from the one to the other. The sedimentary rocks are altered also, more or less, but in a different way: the calcareous beds are developed into idocrase rocks, the cleavage in the Coniston Flags is sealed or welded up anew, while the grits are rendered more or less quartzitic.

Amongst the plutonic rocks the chief is the well-known granitic porphyry, fragments of which occur in the Upper Old Red near Shap. There are many intrudes of diorite, gabbro, felsite, mica trap, and the like,—all Post-Silurian and Pre-Carboniferous in age. Another well-known plutonic rock, of later date than the Carboniferous period, is the Whin Sill, an intrusive sheet of dolerite, which has eaten its way into the Carboniferous rocks over hundreds of square miles in the north of England. It forms the most characteristic feature of the sombre and gloomy fell-side recess known as " High Cup Gill," or Haikable, near Appleby ; and it also forms the waterfall known as Caldron Snout. It is the newest intrusive rock known in Westmorland.

The whole county is traversed in many directions by great numbers of faults. One set, the Pennine faults, call for a brief notice here. Two lines of disturbance continued northward from the Craven faults enter the county east of Kirkby Lonsdale. One ranges north-north-eastwards, on the east of the Barbon Fells, and lets in the Carboniferous rocks forming Gragreth, throwing down about 2000 feet on the east; it ranges by Dent, aud east of Sedbergh, entering the county again in the valley between Clouds and the Raveustonedale Fells. Here its effects are as strik- ingly exhibited as at Gragreth, as the Millstone Grit summit of Wilbert Fell on

one side of the fault islet down to the same level as the summits of the Silurian hills on the other. The second set of faults referred to throws down in the opposite direction, letting down the Millstone Grit, the Yoredale Rocks, the Mountain Lime- stone, and finally, as its throw diminishes, the Old Red, against the foot of the Silurian massif of the Barbon Fells. This fault ranges parallel to the general course of the Lune nearly as far northward as Sedbergh, where it is joined by another set ranging east-north-east, which joins the set first described as ranging north-north-east to Ravenstonedale at a point near the county boundary north of Cautla. Thence the conjoined faults run northward in a very complex manner, producing some important effects upon the scenery about the foot of Mallerstang. Near Kirkby Stephen its throw changes from a downthrow to the east to one in the opposite direction, which throw increases rapidly in amount as the faults trend northwards, until at the foot of Stain- moor, below Barras, its throw amounts to quite 6000 feet down to the west; and we find the important patch of Coal-Measures above noticed let down in consequence. At this point it changes in direction, running north-westerly, with many complications, past Brough, Helton, Dufton, and Milburn, out of the county at the foot of Cross Fell. Along this line it throws down to the southi- west several thousands of feet; and it is to the complicated disturb- ances accompanying this great dislocation that nearly the whole of the more striking physical features of North Westmorland owe their origin. It is in connexion with the same important sets of disturbances also that the existence of most of the mineral veins of the district is due.

Climate. —The rainfall is exceptionally heavy. The largest quan- tity recorded appears to be that in the mountains along the county boundary west of Grasmere, where the mean amounts to as much as 140 inches. At Sty Head the rainfall in 1872 amounted to 243°98 inches. The area of greatest rainfall forms a rude ellipsoid around these two places, lying with its longest dimensions towards the south-east, nearly coinciding with the distribution of land above 1500 feet. The heaviest precipitation takes place in the months of January, September, and October, and the smallest in July. At Grasmcre, well inthe heart of the mountains, but farther east, and at a much lower elevation, the mean rainfall for the past twenty years has been 80 inches, rain of ‘01 inch or more falling on about 210 days of

the year. Between Grasmere and Shap the rainfall diminishes somewhat in the mountain areas. But in the lower ground still farther east the rainfall steadily but more rapidly diminishes, until at Milburn (644 feet) the mean for the last ten years has been about 38 inches on 175 days in the year. At Kendal the mean appears to be about 50 inches, and the number of wet days about 190 in the year; at Kirkby Lonsdale it is rather less, and at Kirkby Stephen less again. The mean tem- perature for January is between 38° and 39° F., February 40°-41°,

ols

March 41°-42°, April 46°-47°, May 51°, June 58°, July 60°-61°, August 60°, September 56°, October 49°, November 42°, and December 38°-40°. The principal characteristic of the climate is the preponderance of cloudy, wet, and cold days, especially in the spring and the autumn,—combining to retard the growth of vege- tation. The late stay of cold winds in the spring has much to do with the samie, especially in the lowlands extending along the foot of the Cross Fell escarpment from Brough north-westwards. Here, for weeks at a time, prevails a kind of cyclone revolving on a horizontal axis parallel to the escarpment,—the "helm-wind." The remark- able feature connected with it is that, when the wind is rushing furi- ously from the slopes of the escarpment in the direction of the low grounds, little movement of the air can be detected on the summit.

Flora and Fauna.—Among the denizens of the mountains are several plants distinctly alpine in character ; and others, more or less boreal in their principal stations, are here found at nearly their southernmost pointof distribution. Bog plants are also conspicu- ous in their variety, and include several forms of some rarity. The lichens, mosses, and ferns are well represented. Of trees the oak and the common elm do not seem quite at home anywhere except in the more sheltercd nooks, and in parks and other cultivated places. But the place of the common elm is well supplied by the wych elin, which grows to great perfection. In place of the oak the sycamore is seen almost everywhere in the lower lands ; and there are probably few parts of England where the ash thrives so well, or attains to so large dimensions. On the higher lands, up to the upper limit of woodland growth, the birch, the hazel, and the mountain ash, and, in limestone districts especially, the yew are the prevailing trees. The alder is abundant, and willows of various kinds occur. The upland character of the region affects also its fauna. The badger, the polecat, and perhaps even the wild cat are still met with in Westmorland. The lineal descendants of the wild red deer range over a carefully-preserved remnant of the primeval forest in more than one place. The raven, the peregrine, and the buzzard may still be seen, and the moors sustain a considerable variety of birds other than grouse. The whistle of the golden plover and the note of the curlew are intimately associated with the scenery of the moory uplands. In the lowlands the avifauna is characterized rather by the absence of many forms common in the south than by the presence of birds elsewhere rare. The orni- thologist cannot, however, help being struck with the comparative abundance of the redstart, the woodwren, and the grasshopper warbler, none of them very common in other parts of England.

Minerals. —Coal, the most important mineral product, occurs in connexion with the Carboniferous rocks, but most of the seams are thin and their quality is inferior, so that they have long ceased to have the industrial importance they once possessed. Fireclays of excellent quality and of unusual thickness occur with the coals at Argill, but have not hitherto been turned to indus- trial account. Amongst the building-stones those of the New Red certainly deserve the first rank. The warm-tinted,

easily- worked, and durable Penrith Sandstone furnishes one of the finest building-stones in the kingdom; while the associated Brockrams are in their own way hardly less valuable ; and the same may be said of the St Bees Sandstone, whence the materials used ou so many of the larger public buildings of the northern part of the county have been derived. The Carboniferous rocks nearly everywhere furnish durable freestones and good flags, The Silurian rocks likewise yield building-stones, but somewhat difficult to work. Some of the thinner beds of Carboniferous sandstone are occasionally quarried for roofing purposes. The Coniston Flags are quarried at several places on the south side of the county ; while in the north-western parts cleaved beds of volcanic ash, belonging to the Borradale Series, have long furnished an ample supply of the well-known "green slates." Amongst stones available for ornamental purposes the Shap granite-porphyry is undoubtedly the finest, as its choice for decorative purposes iu our large cities has shown abundantly. In the way of marbles there are the bituminous limestones at the base of the Yoredale Rocks, and the encrinital limestones nearer their top, both much appreciated ; while among limestones of different character there are the mottled and variegated limestones of several places in the neighbourhood of Kendal in the southern and of Asby in the northern parts of the county. Well-chosen specimens of Brockram have a pleasing effect when polished. Gypsum is worked extensively in the New Red rocks in the neighbourhood of Kirkby Thore and Temple Sowerby. Amongst the ores of the useful metals those of lead are of prime importance. The rich lodes of Greenside mines were until lately reckoned amongst the finest of their kind in the United Kingdom, and they have also supplied considerable quantities of silver, which has been extracted from the lead. These were worked in the voleanic rocks. Copper and zinc ores also occur in small quan- tities. Hematite has been discovered here and there at many points, especially where calcareous strata have been affected by infiltration from the New Red rocks.!

1 For other minerals of Westmorland, the interest of which is chiefly scientific, see Trans, Cumd. and West, Assoc., Nos. 7, 8, and 9.

Agriculture.—According to the Agricultural Returns for 1887 the total extent of green crops was 10,232 acres; of corn crops, 19,124, whereof 17,320 were of oats, and only 469 of wheat, and 118 of rye; seed-grasses, 14,951; and 207,017 acres of permanent pasture. The total number of horses is given as 8547; of cows and heifers in milk or in calf, 24,097; of other cattle, 39,225; of sheep, 334,978; and of pigs, 4731. There were 59 holdings of less than an acre; 495 of from 1 to 5 acres; 792 of from 5 to 20; 819 of from 20 to 50; 790 of from 50 to 100; 641 from 100 to 300; 64 from 300 to 500; 31 from 500 to 1000 ; and 3 holdings of above 1000 acres. The total number of owners is stated in the Return of Owners of Land, 1873, as 4876; the extent of lands held by them was 335,160 acres, with a gross estimated rental of £442,320, while 114,282 acres were commons or waste land. Seven pro- prietors then owned more than 5000 acres each :—earl of Lonsdale, 39,229; Sir H. J. Tufton, 16,094; marquis of Headfort, 12,851; Hon. Mary Howard, 8868; W. Wilson, 8690; G. E. Wilson, 7630; W. H. Wakefield, 5584. A large part of Westmorland was for- merly in the hands of what are called "statesmen," whose hold- ings were usually of small extent, but were sufficicnt, with careful management, for the respectable maintenance of themselves and their families. The proportion of landowners of this class is now, however, comparatively small. The meadow-land yields grass of first-rate quality. Grass of inferior value characterizes the pasture- lands; while on the fell (or unenclosed) land, except in limestone areas, the herbage consists chiefly of the coarser kinds of grass, bents, and heather. These, however, furnish nourishment for the hardier breeds of sheep, which are pastured there in large numbers. It is from the sale of these, of their stock cattle, horses, aud pigs, and of their dairy produce that the staple of the farmers' income is derived.

Manufacturcs.—The manufacturing industries, owing to the absence of any large supplies of native fuel, are not numerous. The principal is woollen manufacture in one form or another, and this is chiefly confined to the low country in and near Kendal. Bobbin-making, fulling, snuff-grinding, and several small industries are carried on at a profit, owing to the water-power available at so many points. Paper-making is also carried on.

Admainistration.—There are five lieutenancy subdivisions, and two police divisions. There are 109 civil parishes in the county. It 1s in the diocese of Carlisle, is in the York military district, and forms part of the northern circuit. There is onc court of quarter sessions for the county, and five petty sessional divisions. The assizes are now held at Carlisle. The principal town is Kendal, which had in 1881 a population of 13,696. Other towns, all much less important as regards both size and population, are Appleby, Kirkby Lonsdale, Bowness, Kirkby Stephen, Ambleside, Shap, and Orton. The county sends two members to parliament, representing the Northern (or Appleby) and the Southern (or Kendal) Divisions respectively.

Population.—According to the census of 1881 there were 64,191 inhabitants (31,515 males, 32,676 females), the decrease since 1871 being 819. The proportion of population to acreage is 1 person to 7°80 acres. The people of Westmorland may be described as a prevalently tall, wiry, long-armed, big-handed, dark-grey-eyed, fresh-coloured race. In disposition they are a cautious, reserved, staid, matter-of-fact, sober-minded, unemotional race, somewhat slow-witted, but not by any means dull, and are thrifty beyond measure. The general character of the dialects of Westmorland is that of a basis of Anglian speech, influenced to a certain extent by the speech current amongst the nou-Anglian peoples of Strath- clyde. This is overlain to a much greater though variable ex-tent by the more decidedly Scandinavian forms of speech intro- duced at various periods between the 10th and the 12th centurics. Three well-marked dialects can be made out.

Antiquities and History.—Amongst the oldest monuments of Westmorland are the circular earthworks called King Arthur's Round Table and Maybrough, both close to Penrith. Barrows and tumuli are common in the wilder parts of the county, more espe- cially along the limestone hills near Orton. 'Traces of earthworks, regarded as Celtic, occur near Crosby Ravensworth, and at a few other places. Rude stone circles and other structures of the same nature exist at several places between Ravenstonedale and Shap. Stone implements of the Neolithic type and implements of bronze have been found all over the county. Cup-marked stones have been noticed near Penrith. At Brough chureh was found a

slab bearing an inscription variously regarded as Greek, or Celtic, or Scandinavian. Well-marked traces of the occupation of the county by the Romans exist in their roads, their camps, their altars, and their coins, Monuments of later date, prior to the reign of Rufus, are excecdingly rare, and are chiefly confined to objects of an ecelesiastical character which mostly owe their preservation to their having been worked up as building material in some of the older churches. Good examples are to be found at Kirkby Stephen, Long Marton Bongate, and other churches. Vestiges of late Norman work, rarely carlier than 12th century, are preserved iu several of the

churches, and in a few of the castles. In the case of the castles

especially it is evident that their sites had been used as strongholds through a long succession of periods, extending in some cases far back into prehistoric times. From the 12th century downward each period of the history of Westmorland may be said to be fairly well represented. } (J. G. G.)

WESTON-SUPER-MARE, a watering-place of Somer- set, England, is situated at the northern extremity of Uphill Bay, a recess of the Bristol Channel, and on a branch of the Great Western Railway, 1384 miles from London, 20 south-west of Bristol, and 20 north-west of Wells. It-is built partly on level ground near the shore, and partly on the slopes of Worlebury Hill, which aids in sheltering it from the north and east. On this account, as well as from its bracing and dry air, it has won con- siderable favour both as a winter residence and as a summer resort. Many villas have been built in it by persons engaged in business in Bristol. An esplanade about 3 miles in length has been constructed at a cost of £30,000. The pier, which altogether is 1040 feet in length, and includes the rocky island of Birnbeck, is north from the town at the extreme end of Worlebury Hill, where also are the Prince Consort promenade gardens. The church of St John, built in 1824, mostly on the site of the old one, contains some old monuments. The other principal public buildings are the town-hall in the Venetian style, the assembly rooms, the market-house, the Weston county club, the church institute, the hospital and dispensary,

and the West of England sanatorium, which since its enlargement in 1882 contains 100 beds. The town has been long famed for its potteries. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 2770 acres) in 1871 was 10,568, and in 1881 it was 12,884.

The town was included in an ancient British settlement, of which Worlebury Hili was the citadel. The ramparts of this fortress stil] remain, including a number of hut circles, beneath which skeletons and Celtic remains have been found. In Domesday Westone is described as held by the bishop. In the time of Edward the Con- fessor it was held by Algar. In 1696 it was purchased by the Pigotts, the present lords of the manor. The growth of the town is entirely modern. About the beginning of the century it consisted of about twenty-four cottages inhabited by fishermen. A hotel for the re-

ception of visitors was erected in 1805, and an esplanade begun in 1825, since which time it has made rapid progress.

WESTPHALIA (Germ. Westfalen), a province in the west of Prussia, is bounded on the N. by the province of Hanover, on the E. by the province of Hanover, the principalities of Lippe-Detmold and Schaumburg-Lippe, the duchy of Brunswick, the province of Hesse, and the principality of Waldeck, on the S.W. by Rhenish Prussia, and on the N.W. by Holland. Its greatest length from north to south is 110 miles, its greatest breadth is 124 miles, and its total area is 7800 square miles.

The Lippe, an affluent of the Rhine, flowing from east to west across the province, divides it into two parts, dis- similar in their character. The northern portion, a con- tinuation of the plain of the Netherlands, is flat, with the exception of the east, which is occupied by the Weser Hills. South of the Lippe, on the other hand, the province is occupied by numerous small chains and groups of hills, enclosing many beautiful valleys. Between the parallel courses of the Lippe and Ruhr stretches the low chain of the Haar or Haarstrang (850-1050 feet), which is steep on its southern face, but slopes gradually down on the north to the valley of the Lippe, known as the Hellweg. The rugged mountain district south of the Ruhr is known as the Sauerland, and its eastern portion, the plateau of Winterberg, is the highest part of the province. The culminating point is

the Astenberg (2760 feet). This plateau is connected with the Westerwald on the south- west border by the Rothhaar or Rothlagergebirge. West- phalia is divided between the basins of the Rhine, Ems, and Weser. The Rhine itself does not touch Westphalia, but its aifluents, the Lippe and Ruhr, are the leading

streams in the province. The Ems, entering Westphalia from Lippe, flows north-west and enters Hanover. The Weser crosses the north-east of the province, piercing the Weser Hills by means of the narrow pass known as the Porta Westphalica or Westphalian Gate. All these streams are navigable for barges and small vessels. There are no lakes in the province. The climate is on the whole tem- perate, though sometimes the winters are severe among the mountains, .

About 42 per cent. of the surface is given up to agriculture, 25 per cent. to pastures and moors; 28 per cent. is under wood; and the remainder is unproductive. The fertility of the soil varies ; it is most unfertile in the north and north-east. A great proportion of the land is in the hands of small farmers and peasant proprietors, who as a class are well-to-do, though their system of farming is in some respects antiquated. Grain of various kinds is grown, though not in sufficient quantity to meet the demands of the pro- vinee ; potatoes, pease and beans, fruit, and tobacco are also pro- duced ; but perhaps the most important crops are hemp and flax, which places Westphalia among the leading flax-producing districts ofGermany. 'The forests are chiefly on the mountains of the Saner- land, and in the south generally. Considerable numbers of cattle and pigs are reared, the latter yielding the well-known Westphalian hams; goats are also numerous in some districts ; and Government pays some attention to the breeding of horses in this province. Sheep are comparatively few. (Compare the agricultural statistics under PrusstiA.)

In virtue of its abundant coal and iron Westphalia is onc of the busiest industrial quarters of Germany. There are coal-fields in the north and in other districts, and the great coal-ficld of the Ruhr extends into the province. The district of Arnsberg, occupy- ing the south of the province, is the eentre of the mineral industry. Dortmund gives name to one of the

five mining districtsinto which Prussia is officially divided. Westphalia produces more iron ore than any other province in Prussia except the Rhine province and Silesia ; next to Silesia it produces the most zinc, and next to Saxony the most copper; and it yields more sulphur than any other province. Argentiferous lead, antimony, limestone, gypsum, marble, and slates are also worked. There are seven salt-works and numerous mineral springs.

The mineral wealth of the province encourages an extensive manufacturing industry, the leading branches of whieh are linen-weaving and iron-working. The linen industry is very ancicnt, and since the 14th century has flourished in this province between the Lippe and Weser. Its chief centre is now Bielefeld, which also manufactures jute. The cotton factories of Miinster are im- portant. Woollens, stockings, and ribbons are also manufactured to some extent. The principal seats of the metallic industries are Iserlohn, Liidenscheid, Altena, Hagen, and the " Enneper Strasse," a valley 7 miles long and three quarters of a mile wide, lying along the Ennepeand containing as its chief towns Haspe (7318 inhabi- tants) and Gevelsberg (7055). Cast and wrought iron, steel, rails, wire, blades and tools, machinery and smali iron and steel goods, bronze, brass, and plated articles are among the leading products, Vitriol, glass, and paper are also made. An active trade is carried on in the manufactured goods, and in timber, hams, and sausages. The leading commercial towns are Bielefeld, Iserlohn, and Dort- mund. Minden has a port on the Weser; Beverungen is the centre of the ¢orn trade; and Paderborn is the chief wool-market. The roads are good, and the railways numerous and convenient.

The population in 1885 was 2,202,726, or 282 per square mile. About 52 per cent. are Roman Catholics, most of whom are found in the southern district of Arnsberg. About 464 per cent. are Protestants, the remainder are Jews and others. Education is well attended to. The seat of government isat Miinster ; and the province is divided into the three districts of Minden, Miinster, and Arnsberg. It has thirty-one members in the Prussian parlia- ment, and seventeen in the imperial diet.

Westphalia was the name given to the westcrn portion of the early duchy of Saxony (vol. xxi. p. 351). When Henry the Lion fell under the ban of the empire his Saxon domains were distributed by the emperor. The Sauerland and some othcr parts of West- phalia fell to the archbishops of Cologne, who afterwards received from Frederick Barbarossa the title of dukes of Westphalia and Angria. The northern portion of the original Westphalia became the nucleus of the circle of Westphalia in Maximilian's adminis- trative organization of the empire, while the duchy of Westphalia, as an apanage of Cologne, was included in the scattered circle of the Lower Rhine. The circle of Westphalia embraced, roughly speaking, what is now Oldenburg, Hanover to the west of the Weser, the districts of Miinster and Minden, and a few other territories, an area of about 27,000 square miles, which in Maxi- milian's time was divided among four bishoprics and innumer- able small sccular states with an aggregate population of about

3,000,000. The peace of Lunéville in 1801 transfcrred all parts of this circle west of the Rhine to France, while in 1803 the duchy of Westphalia was granted to the duke of Hesse-Nassau as com- pensation for his former possessions to the west of the Rhine, which had also been added to France.

In 1807 Napoleon constituted the kingdom of Westphalia 'and gave it to his youngest brother Jerome. It comprised all the Prussian provinces as far east as the Elbe, and extended south to Fulda and the Thuringian states, embracing an area of about 14,880 square miles, with a population of 2,000,000. Nearly the whole of Hanover was added to this kingdom in 1810; but next year Napolcon again took away the greater part, as well as other tceiritorics, leaving, however, 17,740 square miles, with 2,057,000 inhabitants. This kingdom was intended to take the lead in the Confederation of the Rhine. After the battle of Leipsic in 1813 the kingdom of Westphalia was abolished, and things reverted to their previous order until the congress of Vienna rearranged the map of Europe, whcn Westphalia as we now understand the term was assigned to Prussia.

The peace of Westphalia, concluded in 1648 at Osnabriick and Miinster, put an end to the Thirty Years' War (see GERMANY, vol. p oan oO

WEST POINT, the seat of the United States military academy, on the Hudson, in Orange county, New York. See Army, vol. ii. p. 619.

WEST TROY, a village of Albany county, New York, United States, is situated in the bottom-land on the west bank of the Hudson, opposite Troy, with which it is con- nected by an iron bridge, and 5 miles north of Albany. It is at the termini of the Erie and Champlain Canals, and is on a railroad line of the Delaware and Hudson Canal Company. The village is well laid out, has water and gas, is provided with street cars, and has extensive manu- factures of a varied character, but particularly of iron. The Watervliet (United States) arsenal is situated here. The population, 10,693 in 1870, was 8820 (2427 of foreign birth) in 1880.

WEST VIRGINIA, one of the North-Eastern Central

'States of the American Union, lying between 37° 6' and

40° 38' N. lat., is bounded on the N. by Pennsylvania and Maryland, on the E. and 8S. by Virginia, and on the W. by Kentucky and Ohio, and has an area of 24,780 square miles,

The form of the State is extremely irregular. It may be roughly likened to an ellipse, the greatest diameter of which lies nearly north-east and south-west. Its boundary upon the east and south is made up of the irregular line which limited the counties which were set off from Virginia for the formation of this State. Upon the west the boundary is low-water upon the further shore of the Big Sandy and Ohio rivers. A long narrow strip, known as the "Panhandle," projects northward some sixty miles along the Ohio,—the boundary being the con- tinuation of the straight line which separates Ohio and Pennsylvania. To the east of this the northern boundary follows Mason and Dixon's line; then, dropping in a due south direction to the "Fairfax Stone," it follows thence easterly the course of the Potomac to its junction with the Shenandoah.

The entire State is mountainous or hilly, being com- prised within the region known as the Cumberland or Alleghany plateau. The highest land in the State is upon the castern and southern boundary, where the plateau in many placcs reaches elevations exceeding 4000 feet. Thence the country has a general slope to the north-west, and is lowest along the Ohio, where the elevation is but 600 to 800 feet. This plateau has been subjected to stream erosion until it has become a network of narrow crooked ridges with deep gorges or narrow valleys. The height of the ridges and the depth of the valleys, together with the ruggedness of the country, diminish towards the north-west, until near the Ohio the hills become rounded and softened in outline, and the valleys are broad and fertile.

Climate.

Fauna.

Timber.

Minerals.

518

The drainage system of the State is in some respects peculiar. Although the general slope is towards the north-west, the Potomac, which flows south-easterly to the Atlantic Ocean, has cut its way far back into the plateau, and drains, by means of numerous long branches, the north-eastern quarter of the State. The remainder of the State is drained to the Ohio by means of several large branches which flow in a general north-westerly direction. Heading in the south-west is the Big Sandy, forming a portion of the State boundary. Fourteen miles above its mouth enters the Guyandotte, and 50 miles above the Guyandotte comes the Great Kanawha, one of the principal branches of the Ohio. This large and powerful stream has cut its way back beyond the crest-line of the plateau, tapping numerous streams in south-west Virginia and western North Carolina, so that its sources are now against the Blue Ridge in the latter State. It is known in North Carolina and Virginia, and in West Virginia to the Great Falls, by the name of New River. In West Virginia it has

numerous large tributaries—the Big and Little Coal rivers, Piney, and Bluestone from the south, and the Pocotaligo, Elk, Gauley, and Greenbrier from the north. The next branch of the Ohio, proceeding northward, is the Little Kanawha, which empties into the Ohio at Parkersburg. The north-western part of the State is drained by the Monongahela, one of the two head branches of the Ohio, and its tributaries, the principal of which are the Tygart's Valley, Cheat, and Buckhannon rivers. Of these streams the Ohio is navigable for river steamers at nearly all stages of water. The same may be said of the Kanawha to a point near the Kanawha Falls, while the Big Sandy, the Guyandotte, and the Monongahela are navigable for flat boats for long distances, and these, as well as numerous other streams, are largely used for the floating of lumber. All the streams of the State, and especially the smaller ones, have a rapid fall, but their enormous water-power has as yet been utilized only to a trifling extent.

The climate is nowhere severe, although, owing to the range in elevation within the State, there is a considerable range in tem- perature. The mean annual temperature ranges from 54° to 55° F., being highest in the neighbourhood of the Ohio, in the western part of the State, and lowest upon the high mountains in the eastern and north-eastern portion. The maximum is rarely above 25° aha any portion of the State, while the minimum occasionally reaches 10° in the more mountainous section. The rainfall may be given broadly at between 40 and 50 inches annually. It also varies with the elevation, being less in the lower portions and greatest upon the high mountains,

The fauna of the State is that common to the whole southern Appalachian region. Much of the area being as yet in a state of nature, deer of the white-tailed species are still abundant, and black bear are not unfrequently met with in the more rugged and remote portions. Wild turkeys are still found in some localities, and the mountains have long been a popular resort for hunters, while the streams, abounding in trout, afford an equally attractive field for the angler.

The timber resources of the State are enormous, and a small pro- portion of its area, amounting to only about 25 per eent., has been eleared. The

remainder is covered with virgin forest. This consists mainly of broad-leafed trees of the most valuable sorts for lumber, such as chestnut, black walnut, cherry, ash, poplar, hickory, locust, maple, oak, &c. Considerable areas of white pine are found in the highest portions of the plateau, being practically the only original forests of this wood left in the United States. Besides these there are considerable quantities of yellow pine, hemlock, spruce, and cedar seattered through the State.

Viewed broadly, the geological structure of West Virginia is extremely simple. Practically the entire State is overlaid by uearly horizontal beds of the Carboniferous formation. The coal of West Virginia forms its principal mineral wealth. It is estimated that of its entire area not less than 16,000 square miles are underlaid by workable beds of coal. The Report of the United States Geo- logical Survey upon ntineral resources defines the general boundaries of the coal fields of the State as follows : —" The eastern boundary begins at the south on the mountain range just east of the Bluestone River, and proceeds east to Little Sewell Mountattl: ac. ans . thence with the common boundary of Nicholas and Greenbrier and of

Wipe, YER eGdN TA

Webster and Pocahontas counties to Rich Mountain in Randolph county; following this last-named ridge to Laurel Mountain, the dividing line between Upshur county on the west and Randolph and Barbour counties on the east, and thence with the Briery Mountain into Preston county, and soon to the Pennsylvania State line." All the area to the west of this line is underlain by coal. To the east of it there are small outlying patches, as in Greenbrier, Meadow Mountain, and possibly in Pocahontas, Tucker, Grant, and Mineral counties, but these are unimportant as compared with the vast areas in the west. In the gorge of every large stream flowing through this area are seen outcropping beds of coal, easily acces- sible to the miner, and requiring only facilities of transportation to render the mineral of commercial value. In the matter of coal production the State is rapidly acquiring prominence. From a production in 1873 of 600,000 tons, it reached in 1886 a production of over 4,000,000 tons, being exceeded by only four of the States, viz., Pennsylvania, Illinois, Ohio, and

Iowa. The production is limited only by the demand, as the supply is almost inexhaustible. The coals of the State are of every variety except anthracite, and are noted for their purity for coking, steam, and gas purposcs and for domestic fuel.

Iron ore is abundant in various portions of the State, but is worked only to a comparatively limited extent.

Salt springs are found in the valley of the Kanawha and in that Mineral of the Ohio, and there are extensive evaporating works in both these springs.

localities. The production, however, has been retarded by the competition of those in Michigan, owing to the greater cheapness of fuel and better facilities for transportation in the latter locality. The production of salt in West Virginia in 1886 amounted to 250,000 barrels. West Virginia contains numerous valuable mineral springs, among the best known of which are the Greenbrier White Sulphur springs in Greenbrier county, Capon springs in Hampshire county, Irondale springs in Preston eounty, and Red Sulphur springs and Salt Sulphur springs both in Monroe county. These are well-known and popular summer resorts iu the mountains, and the waters from them are shipped to all parts of the United States.

While the entire State may be said to be either mountainous or Agricul-hilly, it contains a large extent of avable land. Nearly all of the ture.

lower hill country can be cultivated, while in the mountainous region there are numerous broad valleys of exeellent soil, and everywhere the hill and mountain sides can be eultivated if the slope is not excessively steep. The tenth eensus (1880) reported an area of 10,198,779 acres of land in farms, of which 3,792,327 acres, or about one-fourth the area of the State, wasimproved land, this being mainly in the lower and less mountainous portion. The average size of farms was 168 acres, showing as compared with the average 10 years earlier, viz., 214 acres, a decided decrease. The value of farms and farming'implements was very nearly $136,000,000. The numbers of live stock upon farms, as distinguished from animals owned for business purposes in cities, cousisted in January

1888 of 138,231 horses, 6475 mules, 474,933 sheep, 432,778 hogs, 171,273 mileh cows, and 780,892 other cattle,—showing that the live-stock interests of the State are very large. The estimated value ofall farm products sold, consumed, or on hand, as returned in 1880, was $19,360,049. The prineipal agricultural products are wheat, Indian corn, hay, tobacco, oats, and garden vegetables. The cereal products for 1887 consisted of 12,516,000 bushels of corn, 2,840,000 of wheat, and 2,531,000 of oats.

The manufactures, which are not extensive, are concentrated Manufac- mainly at Wheeling, the largest city, on the Ohio, in the northern tures,

part of the State; they consist mainly of manufactures of iron and steel, glass, flouring and grist mill products, lumber, and leather. There were in 1880 2375 manufacturing establishments, employ- ing a capital of $13,883,390 and 14,351 persons. The value of manufactured products was $22,867,126.

There are-1200 miles of completed railroads, with several Railways.

branches and one trunk line in process of construction. The Baltimore and Ohio Railroad traverses the State from Parkersburg and Bellaire on the Ohio, the two branches meeting at Grafton, and running thence eastward to Washington, Baltimore, and New York. The Newport News and Mississippi Valley Railroad runs across the State from the mouth of the Big Sandy on the west to the Alleghanies near White Sulphur springs, and thence extends to Richmond and Newport News. The Ohio River line runs from Wheeling to Huntington on the Ohio. The West Virginia Central extends from Piedmont on the Baltimore and Ohio linc to a point in Randolph county, and is now in process of econstruc- tion south-westward to intersect the Newport News and Mississippi Valley line. The Clarksburg and Weston, intersecting the Baltt- more and Ohio at Clarksburg, extends to Weston in Lewis county, and this has two branches, one to Glenville in Gilmer county, and the other to Buckhannon in Upshurcounty. The Grafton and Greenbrier Railroad, intersecting the Baltimore and Ohio at Grafton, extends up the Valley river to Belington in Barbour county. The Norfolk and Western Railroad,

one of the main trunk lines of the Atlantic States, has a part of its lines in the southern portion of

We ieee Fi eG PN T A

West Virginia. Railway construction is exceedingly active in all parts of the State, several new lines and numerous branches of existing lines being under construction and in contemplation.

The State early in its history (December 1868) adopted a liberal system of free schools. The plan is kuown as the township or district system,—the magisterial district or subdivison of each county being taken as the unit for taxation, and the general control of all the school interests of the district being placed in the hands of a district board of education elected by the people, and authorized among other dutics to levy taxes, to determine the number of months of school and the number of sub-districts, to plant and build schoolhouses, and to manage the financial and other school interests of the districts. There is likewise in each county a superintendent, and in the State a general superintendent. This system has since been maintained and strengthened by legislative enactment till from 133 schoolhouses and 431 public schools of all grades in 1865 there were in 1887 4587 schoolhouses in the State. In 1865 the amount expended in support of free schools was $7722 ; this gradually increased till in 1887 the amount was $1,087,674. The number of teachers employed by public appropriation was 387 in 1865; in 1887 it was 5106. 'The estimated value of school- houses in the State, 140,000 in 1865, was 2,000,000 in 1887. The average attendance in 1865 was 44 days; in 1887 it was 108. The school system of the State is made permanent by the constitutional enactment referred to, which requires that the legislature shall provide by general law for a thorough and efficient system of free schools. The general school system involves the education of teachers, and with this object from 1867 to 1872 the legislature provided for the establishment of six normal schools, which are in successful operation. In these schools tuition is free to all who desire to prepare themselves for teaching. They are popular among the people, and have done much to elevate the general standard of education. They prescribe courses of three years; nearly all of them have preparatory courses ; four of them give

collegiate training, and in all of them the study of ancient and modcrn languages is optional. The school system involves also what is known as the irreducible school fund. The principal, which now amounts to $600,000, is permanently invested. This fund is constantly augmented from sources provided by law and by voluntary coutributions.

Public The United States Government has erected public buildings for institu- its judicial, postal, and revenue departments within the State at tions, Wheeling, Clarksburg, Parkersburg, and Charleston, the capital of the State. While WHEELING (¢.v.) was temporarily the capital, a building was crected by its citizens for the uses of the State, which is now used for city purposes. The six normal schools already referred to have suitable buildings at Fairmont, Glenville, Hunt- ington, Concord, Shepherdstown, and West Liberty. The hospital for the insane at Weston in Lewis county and a branch asylum in course of construction at Spencer in Roane couuty, a deaf-mute and blind asylum at Romncy in Hampshire county, a penitentiary at Moundsville in Marshall county, and a university supported by the State at Morgantown in Monongalia county may be mentioned among the other public institutions of West Virginia. Valueof The assessed valuation of real estate in 1887 amounted to property, 118,753,342, and that of personal property to $48,710,175; that of railroad property in 1880 was $4,497,030, and in 1887 $22,797,984. The State tax is 80 cents on each hundred dollars of valuation.

An amendment to the constitution is now pending, by which it is proposed to prohibit the sale or manufacture of intoxicating liquors. At present the laws of the State—and they have been en- forced with more or less of modification almost since its foundation —involve the high licence system. The granting of the licence is based in all cases on good character, and is subject to the discretion of the county commissioners. Under the operation of these laws, and by virtue of local sentiment in its enforcement, no licence has been granted (and hence in effect the traffic has been prohibited) in as manyas 88 of the 54 counties. The licence is subject to a tax fixed by the State law, and where sales are to be made in incorporated villages it is subject to an additional tax, which is fixed by the authorities of the incorporation.

In 1880 the population of the State was 618,457. That of the principal cities was—Wheeling, 30,787; Parkersburg, 6582 ; Martinsburg, 6335 ; Charleston (the State capital), 4192; Grafton, 3030; and Charlestown, 2016. The coloured population numbered 25,886, the foreign-born population 18,265. The increase in population from 1870 to 1880 was 39°9 per cent. The proportion of native whites was 93 per cent. of the whole number of whites, which is larger than that of any other State in the Union. The popular vote at late elections indicates a population of 800,000, and that of Wheeling, Charleston, and Parkersburg is shown by local investigation to have very largely increased.

Adminis. _ The executive power is vested in a governor elected by the people tration, for a term of four years, and ineligible under the constitution for re-election. There are also an auditor, a treasurer, an attorney- general, a secretary of state and State superintendent of free schools, who with the governor constitute a board of public works,

Educa- tion.

Liquor laws,

Popula- tion.

519

and are likewise elected by the people for terms of four ycars, except the secretary of state and a librarian (who is ex officio adjutant- general), who are appointed by the governor. 'The legislative power is vested in a senate and house of delegates. The senate embraces 26 members, half of whorn are elected every alternate two years, for a term of four years. The house of delegates consists of 66 members, who are elected every two years. The legislature meets biennially, and may be convened in extraordinary session by the goveruor, or by the concurrence of three-fifths of its members. The veto power is vested in the governor, but a majority con- curring in each house of the legislature overrides it. The judiciary consists of a supreme court of appeals, with four judges, who in case of their equal division affirm the judgment of the lower court, and of circuit courts, with one judge each, exercising general original power and

appellate jurisdiction over magistrates or justices of the peace, and of magistrates and justices of the peace, whose Jurisdiction in civil cases is limited to $300, and who exercise criminal jurisdiction in petty offences, and may issue warrants of arrest and make preliminary examination and commit for trial in the circuit court in cases of crime. The fiscal regulations of the counties are confided to a board, consisting of three county commis- sioners. The county organization consists of these commissioners, a sheriff, deputy sheriffs, a circuit court clerk, a county clerk, who is recorder of deeds, wills, &c., board of education, school trustees, overseers of roads, a commissioner of school lands, an overseer of the poor, and a commissioner of accounts. All these except the deputy sheriffs, commissioner of accounts, commissioner of school lands, and overseer of the poor are elected by the people.

History.—The establishment of West Virginia as a State was consummated on 20th June 1863. Its creation and admission were due to conditions which existed prior to the civil war of 1861-65, to popular sentiment which those conditions developed when the war was precipitated, and to the exigencies of the war itself. The Alleghany Mountains had divided the State of Virginia politically and commercially, and in the sentiment relating to her systems of taxation, revenue, and public expenditure into a Virginia and a "Western" Virginia, long before the civil conflict gave perma- nent result and fixed an official definition to the line of demar- cation between them. Even after the war and the formation of the new State the title to two counties, Jefferson and Berkeley, "lying east of the mountains," was the subject of legislation and contention before the courts. They were in 1870 judicially de- clared by the supreme court of the United States to be a part of the State of West Virginia. The western part of Virginia was sparsely peopled, its great forests undeveloped, its vast mineral resources only partially realized, and its slave interests compar- atively small. The eastern section contained the larger population, owned the great bulk of slave property, and exercised controlling power over State affairs. The Alleghanies, dividing the two sec- tions, in the absence of transverse railroad facilities naturally sent the citizens of one side with the flow of their navigable waters to western and southern markets, while those of the other, moved by similar natural causes, turned to the seaboard for their commercial and business

intercourse. The basis of taxation, the basis of re- presentation, and the relation of the, slave interests to these, with the measure and distribution of public funds for works of internal improvement and other questions of local concern, constituted elements of continual controversy, and served to detract largely from the homogeneity of the population. Early in January 1861 the legislature of Virginia, in extra session, passed a bill calling a convention of the people to meet in the following month. At the same election the people were to vote ou the question whether the separation of Virginia from the Union should be determined by the convention or be submitted by the convention to the people for ratification or rejection. The majority at the election in favour of submitting the question of secession to the people was overwhelming, and was construed as indicating the loyal sentiment of the people of north-western Virginia, On the 17th of April, after the bom- bardment of Fort Sumter, the convention passed an ordinance of secession, and on the 24th a schedule submitting it to the people. The ordinance of secession was adopted by the people of Virginia, but the majority against it in the north-western part of the State was very large. A convention of the unionist counties, which met at Wheeling in June, adopted an ordinance for the reorganization of the State government, and in August adopted an ordinance pro- viding for the formation of a new State, to be named " Kanawha," comprising thirty-nine specified counties, and to include other counties also named, provided their vote should indicate such desire. Under this provision a number of counties were afterwards added to the original thirty-nine. At the time of the vote upon the proposition to form a new State war was raging throughout its proposed borders, and many of its counties had been the scene of violence and blooodshed. Many citizens were in the field as soldiers on the respective sides, and this fact, coupled with the general con- ditions, caused a small vote to be polled. Of this comparatively small vote, however, a large majority was for the new State, aud members were elected to a constitutional convention. This conven-

tion met at Wheeling in November, and formed a constitution for the roposed new State, and designated it the State of West Virginia. his constitution was submitted to the people, and adopted by an overwhelming

majority in April 1862, In May the legislature of the "reorganized Government" of Virginia passed a bill to author- ize the formation of the new State out of the territory of the old State of Virginia, as indicated by the recently ratified constitution, and in the same month this Act of the Legislature, accompanied by its memorial and a certified copy of the constitution and _proceed- ings by which it had been adopted, was presented to Congress. The subject led to grave discussion in that body, hut ultimately the proposed constitution was carried, with but one modification affecting the freedom of children of slaves thereafter to be born within the limits of the new State. A new constitution was adopted in 1872. The State of West Virginia being the result of a double revolution—that of the State of Virginia against the Federal Union and that of her north-western counties against the seceding State of Virginia—its people are conservative and strikingly homogeneous. Even in the throes of revolution declaring separation from the mother State provision was made for the assumption of a just share of the old State debt, though its adjustment has never yet been reached. West Virginia has no other debt. Falling naturally, as did most of the border States, immediately after the war, into violent proscriptions of the returning Confederate element, West Virginia was one of the first of the States to modify and repeal these enactments. By the election of 1870 they were abrogated for ever, and since that time the issues and consequences of war have so far disappeared as to leave no perceptible trace behind, (J. E. K.)

WETSTEIN, Jonn Jacos (1693-1754), New Testament critic, was born at Basel, March 5, 1693. His father, John Rudolph Wetstein, was pastor of St Leonard's in that city, and belonged to a learned family with wide ramifications. John Jacob studied the classics, Hebrew, and mathematics under distinguished professors, amongst whom was one of the Buxtorfs. Theology he studied under Samuel Werenfels, an influential anticipator of modern scientific theology and exegesis, While still a student he began to direct his attention to the special pursuit of his life—the text of the Greek New Testa- ment. A relative, John Wetstein, who was the university librarian, gave him permission to examine and collate the principal MSS. of the New Testament in the library, and he copied the various readings which they contained into his copy of Gerard of Maestricht's edition of the Greek text. In 1713 in his public examination he defended a disserta-

tion entitled De Varits Novi T'estamenti Lectionibus, and sought to show that variety of readings did not detract from the authority of Sacred Scripture. Wetstein paid great attention also to Syriac and Talmudic Hebrew. In the spring of 1714 he undertook a learned tour, which led him to Paris and England, the great object of his inquiry everywhere being manuscripts of the New Testament. In Paris he examined the Codex Ephraemi, and on arriving in England in August 1715 the Codex Alevandrinus and the Codex Beze with many others. Early the next year he made the acquaintance of Bentley at Cambridge, who took great interest in his textual inquiries. The great scholar induced him to return to Paris to collate for him more carefully the Codea Ephraemi, Bentley having then in view a critical edition of the New Testament. In July 1717 Wetstein returned to Basel to take the office of a curate at large in his native city, a post which he held for three years, at the expiration of which he exchanged it to become his father's assistant in the parish of St Leonard's, At the same time he pursued his favourite study, and lectured also in the university on New Testament exegesis, It was then that he formed the resolution to prepare a critical edition of the Greek New Testament. He had in the meantime broken with Bentley, whose famous Proposals appeared in 1720. Wetstein was not permitted, however, to pursue his purpose without molestation. The rumour

got abroad that his projected text would take the Socinian | | Gass, Protestantische Dogmattk, vol. iii, ; Bertheau's art. in-Herzog's Real-Ency-

side in the case of such passages as 1 Timothy iii, 16, and in other ways he gave occasion for the suspicion of heresy.

=

WET—WET

At length in 1729 the charge of projecting an edition of the Greek Testament savouring of Socinianism was form- ally laid against him. The end of the long and unedifying trial was his dismissal, May 13, 1730, from his office of curate of St Leonard's. He then removed from Basel to Amsterdam, where a relative, John Henry Wetstein, had an important

printing and publishing business, from whose office excellent editions of the classics were issued, and also Gerard of Maestricht's edition of the Greek Testa- ment. Previous to his removal from Basel Wetstein had commenced printing in this office an edition of the Greek Testament, which was suddenly stopped for some unknown reason. At his trial the first sheets of this edition were brought into court against him, though the new readings which had been adopted in his text were simply those which are now universally accepted. As soon as he reached Amsterdam he published anonymously the Pro- legomena, which he had proposed should accompany his Greek Testament, and which was republished by him, with additions, as part of his great work, 1751. The next year (1731) the Remonstrants offered him the chair of philosophy in their college at Amsterdam, vacated by the illness of John Le Clerc, on condition that he should clear himself of the suspicion of heresy. He thereupon returned to Basel, and procured a reversal (March 22, 1732) of the previous decision, and readmission to all his clerical offices, But, on his becoming a candidate for the Hebrew chair at Basel, his orthodox opponents procured his defeat and his retirement to Amsterdam. Here the Remonstrants per- mitted him to hold lectures in their college, which led, however, to renewed opposition on the part of the Calvin- istic party. At length, after much painful contention, he was allowed to instruct the Remonstrant students in philosophy and Hebrew on certain somewhat humiliating conditions. For the rest of his life he continued professor in the Remonstrant college, declining in 1744 the Greek chair at Basel. In 1746 he once more visited England, and collated Syriac MSS. for his great work. At last this appeared in 1751-52, in two folio volumes, under the title Novum Testamentum Grecum Editionis Recepte cum Lectionibus Variantibus Codicum MSS., &e. He did not venture to put new readings in the body of his page, but consigned those of them which he recommended to a place between the text and the full list of various readings. Beneath the latter he gave a commentary, consisting principally of a mass of invaluable illustrations and parallels drawn from classical and rabbinical literature, which has formed a storehouse for all later com- mentators. In his Prolegomena he gave an admirable methodical account of the MSS., the versions, and the readings of the fathers, as well as the troubled story of the difficulties with which he had had to contend

in the pro- secution of the work of his life, He did not long survive the completion of this work. He died at Amsterdam, March 9, 1754.

Wetstein's New Testament has never been republished entire. The London printer Bowyer published, in 1763, a text in which he introduced thie readings recommended by Wetstein; Semler re- published the Prolegomena and appendix,1764; A. Lotze commenced a_new edition of the work, but the Prolegomena only appeared (Rotterdam, 1831), and this "'castigated." It is geuerally allowed that Wetstein rendered invaluable service to textual criticism by his collection of various readings and his methodical account of the MSS. and other sources, and that his work was rendered less valuable through his prejudice against the Latin version and the principle of grouping MSS. in families which had been recommended by Bentley and Bengel.

See Wetstein's account of his labours and trials in his Nov. Test., 1; articles in Igen's Zischr. fiir histor. Theol. by C. R. Hagenbach (1839), by Van Rhyn in 1843, and again by Béttger in 1870; Tregelles, Account of the Printed Text of the New Testament ; Scrivener's Introduction to she Criticism of the New Testament ;

klopddie, 24 ed., 1886,

WETTE, Dr. See Dz Werte.

WEXFORD

WEXFORD, a maritime county of Ireland, in the province of Leinster, is bounded N. by Wicklow, E. and S. by St George's Channel, and W. by Waterford, Kilkenny, and Carlow. Its greatest length from its north-eastern extremity at Kilmichael Point to Hookhead Point at Waterford Harbour is upwards of 60 miles, and its greatest breadth from east to west 34 miles. The area is 576,588 acres, or about 901 square miles,

The coast-line does not present any striking features, and owing to the number of sandbanks navigation is dangerous near the shore. The only inlet of importance on the east coast and the only safe harbour is Wexford Harbour, which owing to a bar is not accessible to large vessels at ebb-

tide. On the south coast are the fishing harbours of Crossfarnogue and Fethard. Several islets adjoin the coast. South from Crossfarnogue Point are the Saltee Islands, and Coningmore and Coningbeg, beyond the latter of which is the Saltee lightship, South-east from Greenore Point is the Tuskar Rock.

The basis of the county is clay-slate, and the surface is chiefly a series of verdant low hills, except towards the northern and western boundaries. The clay-slate for- mation is interrupted by patches of quartz rock near Gorey, one south of Enniscorthy, and another south of Wexford. To the north of Gorey there is a protrusion of greenstone trap. The elevated ridge on the north- western boundary forms the termination of the granitic range in Wicklow, and in Croghan Kinshela, on the borders of Wicklow, rises toa height of 1985 feet. On the western border, a granitic range, situated chiefly in Carlow, extends from the valley of the Slaney at Newton- barry to the confluence of the Barrow with the Nore at New Ross. In the southern district, a hilly region, reach- ing in Forth Mountain a height of 725 feet, forms with Wexford Harbour the northern boundaries of the baronies of Forth and Bargy, a peninsula of flat and fertile land. Carboniferous limestone crops to the surface on the southern shore of Wexford Harbour, and forms also the extremity of Hookhead Point. Marble is quarried on the right bank of the Barrow, and ochres are dug on the coast districts. The river Slaney enters the county at its north-western extremity, and flows south-east to Wexford Harbour. Its chief tributary is the Bann, which flows south-westwards from the borders of Wicklow. The Barrow forms the western boundary of the county from the Blackstairs range of mountains till its confluence with the Suir at Waterford Harbour.

Agricultwre.—The soil for the most part is a cold and stiff clay resting on clay-slate. The interior and western districts have it much inferior to those round the coasts. In the south-eastern peninsula of Forth and Bargy the soil is a rich alluvial mould mixed with coralline sandstone and limestone. The peninsula of Hookhead, owing to the limestone formation, is specially fruitful. In the western districts of the county there are large tracts of turf and peat-moss. In 1876, according to the Return of Owners of Land, Wexford was divided among 1757 proprietors possessing 573,052

acres at an annual value of £374,517, or about 138s. an acre all over. Of these proprietors 581 possessed less than 1 acre. There were about 4500 acres of waste or common land. The following proprietors possessed upwards of 8000 acres:—Lord Carew, 17,831; Lady Adelaide Forbes, 15,216; marquis of Ely, 14,023; Viscount Powerscourt, 11,730; Lord Templemore, 11,327 ; William Orme Foster, 9724; Hon. Mrs Deane Morgan, 9413; Anne Colclough, 9328 ; Sir James Power, 8599; F. A. Leigh, 8281; and representatives of J. H. R. Rowe, 8008. Out of a total area of 575,700 acres in 1886, there were 202,548 acres, or 35-2 per cent., under crops, including mcadow and clover, 303,788 or 52°8 per cent. under grass, 431 acres fallow, 10,588 woods and plantations, 15,090 bog and marsh, 19,082 barren mountain land, and 24,183 water, roads, fences, &c. The total number of holdings in 1886 was 16,074, of which only 16 were above 500 acres in extent, 1045 between 100 and 500 acres, 2429 between 50 and 100, 2703 between 30 and 50, 3019 between 15 and 30, 3081 between 5 and 15, 2161 between 1 and 5, and 1620 not exceeding 1 acre. The decline in the area under crops between 1849 and 1886 has been

o21

much below the average for Ireland—from 245,514 acres to 202,543. In 1876 the area was 221,018 acres, so that there has been a large decline within the last ten years. In the area under meadow and clover there has been an increase from 39,343 in 1849 to 61,327 in 1876 and 64,064 in 1886, but within the last ten years the arca has been fluctuating. There has been no marked change in the area under green crops, which was 44,735 acres in 1849, 50,498 in 1876, and 45,958 in 1886. The area under corn crops has, however, declined nearly a half, being in 1849 163,321 acres, in 1876 109,193 acres, and in 1886 only 92,512 acres. Of green crops there has been since 1849 a great increase in the area under turnips, and a corresponding decrease in the area under potatoes : in 1849 they were respectively 9763 and 32,017 acres, and by 1876 they had changed to 19,704 and 23,974 acres, and by 1886 to 21,857 and 18,888 acres. There were also in 1886 2848 acres under mangel-wurzel and beetroot, and 3365 under other green crops. Of the corn crops the arca under wheat has declined from 44,592 acres in 1849 to 6948 in 1876 and

4541 in 1886, the area under oats from 80,166 acres to 47,065 in 1876 and 50,381 in 1886, while that under barley and bere increased from 36,563 acres in 1849 to 51,321 acres in 1876, but since then has declined to 35,036 acres. The number of horses in 1886 was 27,878, of which 942 were used for recreation. Mules numbered 1767, and asses 8031. Cattle numbered 126,410, of which 37,936 were milch cows. The number of sheep was 122,373, of which 48,243 were one year old and upwards. Pigs numbered 67,478, goats 6369, and poultry 571,107, of which 34,293 were turkeys and 60,414 geese.

Communications.—The Dublin, Wicklow, and Wexford Railway intersects the county ; and from Wexford a branch of the Great Southern and Western passes north-westwards joining the lines to Kilkenny and Kildare. The river Slaney is navigable for barges to Enniscorthy, and the Barrow for large vessels to New Ross.

Manufactures. —-Except in the town of Wexford the manufactures and trade are of smallimportance. Therc are important fisheries at Wexford, and one or two fishing villages along the south coast. The fishing grounds are good.

Administration and Population.—According to the calculation of De Burgo the population in 1760 was 66,804 ; the parliamentary census of 1812 places it at 112,000 ; in 1821 it amounted to 170,806, in 1841 to 202,033, in 1861 to 143,954, in 1871 to 182,666, and in 1881 to 123,854 (60,928 males and 62,926 females), Roman Catholics in 1881 formed 91°1 per cent. of the population, and Pro- testant Episcopalians 8°2 per cent. In 1881 the number of persons who could read and write amounted to 51°5 per cent. of the popu- lation, 15°3 per cent. could read but not write, and 33°2 per cent. could neither read nor write,—14°7 per cent. being under seven years of age. All could speak English, and 512 could speak English and Irish. By the Act of 1885 Wexford, which formerly returned two members to parliament, was divided into two parlia- mentary divisions, North and South, each returning one member, the borough of Wexford, which formerly returned one member, and the portion of the borough of New Ross within the county, being merged in the South Division. The principal towns are Wexford (12,163), New Ross (of which

a portion containing 6375 is in this county, the other portion containing 295 inhabitants being in Kilkenny), Enniscorthy (5666), and Gorey (2450). The county is divided into ten baronies, and contains 144 parishes and 1600 town-lands. Episcopally it is in Ferns diocese, except a small portion, whichis in Dublin. Judicially it is in the Leinster circuit, and assizes are held at Wexford, and quarter sessions at Enniscorthy, Gorey, New Ross, and Wexford. There are eleven petty sessions districts, and parts of two others. Wexford includes the poor law unions of Gorey and Wexford, and parts of Enniscorthy, New Ross, and Shillelagh. It is within the Cork military district, and along with Kilkenny, Tipperary, and Waterford forms No. 69 sub- district, the brigade depét of which is at Clonmcl. There are barrack stations at Wexford, Duncannon Fort, and New Ross.

History and Antiquities.—The peninsula of Hookhead is the ancient Sacrum Promontorium. The northern portion of Wexford was included in Hy Kinselagh, the peculiar territory of the Mac- morroughs, overlords of Leinster, who had their chief residence at Ferns. Dermod Macmorrough, having been deposed from the kingdom of Leinster, asked help of Henry II., king of England, who authorized him to raise forces in England for the assertion of his claim, He secured the aid of Strongbow by promising him the hand of Eva, and in addition obtained assistance from Robert Fitzstephen and Maurice Fitzgerald of Wales. On the Ist May 1169 Fitzstephen landed at Bagenbon on the south side of Fethard, and after four days' siege captured the town of Wexford from its Danish inhabitants. After this Dermod granted the territory of Wexford to Fitzstephen and Fitzgerald and their heirs for ever. Macmorrough having died in 1172, Strongbow became lord of Leinster. At first Henry II. retained Wexford in his own pos- session, but in 1174 he committed it to Strongbow. The barony of Forth is almost entirely peopled by the descendants of those who accompanied these English expeditions. Wexford was one of the twelve counties into which the conquered territory in Ireland

was divided by King John in 1210, and formed part of the pos- sessions of William Mareschal, earl of Pembroke, who had married Strongbow's daughter. Through the female line it ultimately passed to John Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury, who in 1446 was made earl of Waterford and baron of Dungarvan. In 1474 George Talbot was seneschal of the liberty of Wexford. The district was actively concerned in the rebellion of 1641; and during the Cromwellian campaign the town of Wexford was on 9th October 1649 carried by storm, and a week later the garrison at New Ross surrendered,—a "seasonable mercy," according to Cromwell, as giving him an 'opportunity towards Munster." Wexford was the chief seat of the rebellion of 1798, the leaders there being the priests. Evidences of the Danish occupation are seen in the numerous raths, especially at Dunbrody, Enniscorthy, and New Ross. Among the monastic ruins special mention may be made of Dunbrody abbey, of great extent, founded in 1182 for Cistercian monks by Henry de Montmorency, marshal of Henry II.; Tintern abbey, founded in 1200 by William Mareschal, earl of Pembroke, and peopled by monks from Tintern abbey in Mon- mouthshire; the abbey of St Sepulchre, Wexford, founded shortly after the invasion by the Roches, lords of Fermoy; Ferns abbey, founded by Dermod Macmorrough; and the abbey of New Ross, founded by St Alban in the 6th century. There are a consider- able number of old castles, including Ferns, dismantled by the Parlia- mentary forces under Sir Charles Coote in 1641, and occupying the site of the old palace of the Macmorroughs; the massive pile of Enniscorthy, founded by Raymond le Gros; Carrick Castle, near Wexford, the first built by the English ; and the fort of Duncannon, which has been garrisoned since the time of the Spanish Armada, and caused some trouble to Cromwell when in Wexford.

WEXFORD, a seaport, market-town, and municipal borough, and the chief town of the above county, is finely situated on the south side of the Slaney, where it discharges into Wexford Harbour, on the Dublin, Wicklow, and Wex- ford Railway and a branch line of the Great Southern and Western, 82 miles south of Dublin and 15 south-east of Enniscorthy. Wexford Harbour, formed by the estuary of the Slaney, is about 3 miles from north to south and about 4 from east to west, and has an area of about 1300 acres. A fine bridge of wood and iron 1500 feet in length crosses a narrow part of the estuary. The harbour affords splendid

accommodation for shipping, but its advantages have been in great part lost by a bar at its mouth pre- venting the entrance of vessels drawing more than 12 feet. The construction of a pier at Rosslare connected with Wexford by a railway has, however, proved of great benefit. The town consists of the quay, about 1000 feet in length, with two narrow streets running parallel with it, and other smaller ones branching off at intervals. Some remains of the old walls and flanking towers still exist. The Protestant Episcopal church, near the ruins of the ancient abbey of St Sepulchre, is said to occupy the spot where the treaty was signed between the Irish and their English invaders in 1169. The principal modern buildings are the town-hall, the theatre, the court-house, the barracks, occupying the site of the ancient castle, St Peter's College for the education of Catholic clergy, the county infirmary, the union workhouse, and a number of convents. 'The port has communication by steamer with Liverpool and Bristol. In 1886 the number of vessels that entered the port was 847 of 85,004 tons, the number that cleared 836 of 84,065 tons. The principal exports are agricultural produce, live stock, and whisky. Ship- building is carried on, and also tanning, malting, brewing iron-founding, distilling, and the manufacture of artificial manure, flour, agricultural implements, and rope and twine. The population of the town in 1871 was 12.077 and in 1881 it was 12,163. a:

Wexford was one of the earliest colonies of been taken by Fitzstephen. It was the second town that Cromwell besieged in 1649. It was garrisoned for William III. in 1690, In 1798 it was made the headquarters of the rebels, who, however surrendered it on the 2lst June. In 1318 the town received a charter from Aldomar de Valence, which was extended by Henry IV. in 1411, and confirmed by Elizabeth in 1558. By James I.

it was in 1608 made a free borough corporate, by the title of "the town and free borough corporate of Wexford." It returned two

the English, having

members to parliament from 1374 till the Union, when they were reduced to one. In 1885 it was included in the South Division

of the county.

WEYMOUTH anv MEtcomsBe Rzcis, a seaport, water- ing-place, market-town, and municipal borough of Dorset, England, is situated at the mouth of the small river Wey, on Weymouth Bay, opposite the Isle of Portland, and on the London and South-Western Railway and a branch of the Great Western, 74 miles south of Dorchester, 274 west-south-west of Poole Junction, and 1454 from London. It is formed of Weymouth, a fishing town and seaport on the south-west of the Wey, and Melcombe Regis on the north-east of the river, the two towns being connected by a bridge reconstructed in 188]. An esplanade about a mile in length fronts the sea. To the south of the esplanade is a pier of stone on wooden piles 1050 feet in length, erected in 1859 at a cost of £12,000. Theharbour lies between the pier on the north and the spur of land called the Nothe on the south, and is protected by a con- crete wall extending 500 feet northward from the Nothe. The principal buildings are the old town-hall, the market-house, the guild-hall, the masonic hall, the royal Dorset yacht clubhouse, the theatre, the Royal Victoria Jubilee Hall, the Weymouth and Dorset eye infirmary, the Wey- mouth royal hospital and dispensary, the Weymouth sana- torium for women and children, and the infantry barracks. Opposite the Royal Terrace is an equestrian statue of George III., erected in 1809 in commemoration of his jubilee. A marble statue was also erected to Sir H. Edwards in 1885. A mile south-west of Weymouth is Sandsfoot Castle, a fort erected by Henry VIII. for the protection of the shipping. 'There are a number of alms- houses and other charities. Weymouth has steam con- nexion with the Channel Islands, France, and various ports on the English coast. In 1886 903 vessels of 105,824 tons entered the port, and 905 of 98,964 tons cleared. The principal exports are Portland stone, bricks and tiles, and provisions, and the imports are coal, timber, garden and dairy produce, and wine. Ship and boat building, rope and sail making, and brewing are carried on. The population of the municipal borough of Weymouth and Melcombe Regis (area 763 acres) in 1871 was 13,259, and in 188] it was 13,715.

Both Weymouth and Melcombe Regis are very ancient. The port is supposed to have traded with Tyrian merchants before the arrival of the Romans. Various Roman remains, including pave- ments and coins, have

been found. Weymouth was the scene of Athelstan's vengeance on his half-brother Prince Edwin. It received a charter from Ethelred, which is preserved in Winchester cathedral. In the time of Edward the Confessor Weymouth and Melcombe were the property of the abbey of Cerne. In 1280 they formed a royal demesne and part of the dowry of Eleanor of Castile. Both Weymouth and Melcombe first returned members to parliament in the reign of Edward II. In 1347 they sent 20 ships and 264 men for the siege of Calais. Queen Margaret of Anjou landed at Weymouth 17th April 1471, and in 1506 Philip of Castile and his qucen were driven into the port by stress of weather. In 1571 Weymouth and Melcombe Regis were united in one borough, under the title of " mayor, aldermen, bailiffs, burgesses, and commonalty of the borough and town of Weymouth and Mel- combe Regis." The town was the scene of repeated conflicts during the Civil War, having been taken by the Royalists 9th August 1641, and retaken in 1644 by the Parliamentary forces, who stoutly defended it against an attack of nine days' duration in February of the following year. Originally the united borough sent fonr mem- bers to parliament (the only other place returning the same number being the city of London), but in 1832 these were reduced to two, and in 1885 it ceased to be separately representcd. Its importance as a watering-place dates from the time that George III. selected it as his favourite resort in the summer season. On 6th December 1881 Weymouth was constituted a port, the limits to commence at St Alban's Head, the limit of the port of Poole, and to extend ina western direction along the coast to the western bank of the river Char, being the eastern limit of the port of Exeter, and to include the island of Portland. Among the representatives of the boroughs in parliament are Sir William Penn, father of the founder of Pennsylvania, and Sir Christopher Wren.

WHALE 523

WHALE,! a name applied rather loosely to various | external covering all the bones, joints, and even most of animals of the order Cetacea, the general characters and | the muscles, nerves, and arteries, of the human arm and classification of which have been described in the article | hand; and rudiments even of hind legs are found buried MamMaLia (vol. xv. p. 391). All the members of the | deep in the interior of the animal,

apparently subserving sub-order Mystacoceti, or Cetacea with whalebone, are | no useful purpose, but pointing an instructive lesson to called "‘ whales." But of the Odontoceti, or Cetacea with | those who are able to read it. teeth, only certain of the larger ones are so termed, the In what follows a more detailed account is given of the smaller species being popularly spoken of as " bottlenoses," | best known of those species of Cetacea to which the name "dolphins," and "porpoises"; yet so indefinitely has the | "whale" is popularly applied, especially those frequenting word been applied that a true dolphin (Delphinus tursio), | British waters, than could be given under MAMMALIA. not exceeding 8 feet in length, is described in some works | 1 gyp order MYSTACOCETI or Whalebone Whales. as the "smaller bottlenosed whale." Genus Balena.—The Greenland, or more properly Arctic, right Green-

Although by their mode of life so far removed from | whale (Balena mysticetus) attains, when full-grown, a length of land

close observation that it is impossible to become as fami- | from 45 to 50 feet. Its external form is shown in fig. 1, from a right ce with them in ther weird condition az Sih & any careful drawing by Mr Robert Gray. In this species all the peculi- whale.

other animals, whales are in many respects the most

arities which distinguish the head and mouth of the whales from those of other mammals have attained their greatest development.

interesting and wonderful of all creatures; and there is | The head is of enormous size, exceeding one-third of the whole

much in their structure and habits which is well worthy of study, much that is difficult to understand, and much that leads to great generalizations and throws light upon far-reaching philosophical speculations.

length of the creature. The cavity of the mouth is actually larger than that of the body, thorax, and abdomen together. The upper jaw is very narrow,

but greatly arched from before backwards, to increase the height of the cavity and allow for the great length of

One of the first | the baleen or “whalebone” blades; the enormous rami of the

lessons which a study of these animals affords is that, in mandible are widely separated posteriorly, and have a still further

the endeavour to discover what a creature really is, from what others it is descended, and to what it is related, the general outward appearance affords little clue, and we must go deep below.the surface to find out the es- sential characteristics of its nature. There was once, and may be still in many places, a common idea that a whale is a fish, To 4 realize the fallacy of this notion we have only @ to consider what a fish really is, what under “ all the diversities of form, size, and colour known among fishes there is common to them all, and we see that in everything which characterizes a true fish and separates it from other classes, as reptiles, birds, and mammals, the whale resembles the last-named and differs from the fish. It is as essentially a mammal as a cow or a horse, and simply resembles a fish externally because it is adapted to inhabit the same element; but it is no more on that account a fish than is a bat, because adapted to pass a great part of its existence on the wing in the air, nearly related to a bird. The whole structure of a whale is a most instructive in- stance of a type of organization which is common to and characteristic of the class Mammalia, only specially modi- fied or adapted to a peculiar mode of life. We see in every part the result of two great principles acting and re- acting upon each other,—on the one hand, adherence to type, or rather to fundamental inherited structural condi- tions, and, on the other, adaptation to the peculiar circum- stances under which it lives, and to which in all probability it has become gradually more and more fitted. The external fish-like form is perfectly suited for swimming through the water; the tail, however, is not placed vertically as in fishes, but horizontally, a position which accords better with the constant necessity for rising to the surface for the pur- pose of breathing. The hairy covering characteristic of all mammals, which if present might interfere with rapidity of movement through the water, is reduced to the merest

rudiments,—a few short bristles about the chin or upper lip,—which are often only present in very young animals. The function of keeping the body warm is supplied by a thick layer of non-conducting material, the ‘“‘ blubber,” a peculiarly dense kind of fat placed immediately beneath the skin. The fore-limbs, though functionally reduced to mere paddles, with no power of motion except at the shoulder-joint, have beneath their smooth and continuous

pa Icel., hvalr ; Dan. and Swed., Aval ; Anglo-Saxon, hwel ; Germ., wal, walfisch. The meaning apparently is “ roller,” the word being closely allied to “ wheel” (Skeat).

outward sweep before they meet at the symphysis in front, giving the floor of the mouth the shape of an immense spoon. The baleen blades attain the number of 380 or more on each side, and those in the middle of the series have a length of 10 or sometimes 12

Fic. 1.—Greenland or Arctic right whale (Balena mysticetus),

feet. and fray out at the inner edge and ends into long, delicate, soft,

They are black in colour, fine and highly elastic in texture,

almost silky, but very tough, hairs. The remarkable development of the mouth and of the structures in connexion with it, which dis- tinguishes the right whale among all its allies, is entirely in relation to the nature of its food. It is by this apparatus that it is enabled to avail itself of the minute but highly nutritious crustaceans and pteropods which swarm in immense shoals in the seas it frequents. The large mouth enables it to take in at one time a sufficient quantity of water filled with these small organisms, and the length and delicate structure of the baleen provide an efficient strainer or hair-sieve by which the water can be drained off. If the baleen were rigid, and only as long as is the aperture between the upper and lower jaws when the mouth is shut, a space would be left beneath it when the jaws were separated, through which the water and the minute particles of food would escape together. But instead of this the long, slender, brush-like, elastic ends of the whalebone blades fold back when the mouth is closed, the front ones passing below the hinder ones in

a channel lying between the tongue and the lower jaw. When the mouth is opened, their elasticity causes them to straighten out like a bow unbent, so that at whatever distance the jaws are separated the strainer remains in perfect action, filling the whole of the interval. The mechanical perfection of the arrangement is completed by the great develop- ment of the lower lip, which rises stiffly above the jaw-bone and prevents the long, slender, flexible ends of the baleen from being carried outwards by the rush of water from the mouth, when its cavity is being diminished by the closure of the jaws and raising of the tongue.

If, as appears highly probable, the "bowhead" of the Okhotsk Sea and Behring Strait belongs to this species, its range is circum- polar. Though found in the seas on both sides of Greenland, and passing freely from one to the other, it is never seen so far south as Cape Farewell ; but on the Labrador coast, where a cold stream sets down from the north, its range is somewhat farther. In the Behring Sea, according to Scammon, "it is seldom seen south of the fifty-fifth parallel, which is about the farthest southern extent of the winter ice, while in the Sea of Okhotsk its southern limit is about the latitude of 54°." As has been abundantly shown by Eschricht and Reinhardt in the case of the Greenland seas, "'every- thing tends to prove," Scammon says, "that the Balena mysticetus

is truly an 'ice whale,' for among the scattered floes, or about the

524

borders of the ice-fields or barriers, is its home and feeding-ground. © It is true that these animals are pursued in the open water during the sammer months, but in no instance have we learned of their being captured south of where winter ice-fields are occasionally met with." The occurrence of this species, therefore, on the British or any European coast is exceedingly unlikely, as when alive and in health the southern limit of its range in the North Sea has been ascertained to be from the east coast of Greenland at 64° N. lat. along the north of Iceland towards Spitzbergen, and a glance at a physical chart will show that there are no currents setting south- wards which could bear a disabled animal or a floating carcase to British shores. To this @ priort improbability may be

added the fact that no authentic instance has been recorded of the capture or stranding of this specics upon any European coast, for the cases

WHALE

of these whales have been taken within the last few years, In the North Pacific a very similar if not identical species is regularly hunted by the Japanese, who tow the carcases ashore for the pur- poses of flensing and extracting the whalebone. In the tropical seas, however, according to Captain Maury's whale charts, right whales are never or rarely seen; but the southern temperate ocean, especially the neighbourhood of the Cape of Good Hope, Kergue- len's Island, Australia, and New Zealand, is inhabited by "black whales," once abundant, but now nearly exterminated through the wanton destruction of the females as they visit the bays and inlets round the coast, their constant habit in the breeding time. The range of these whales southward has not been accurately determined ; but no species corresponding with the Arctic right whale has as yet been met with in the Antarctic icy seas.

of its having been reported as seen in British waters may be ex- Genus Megaptera.—The whale commonly called "humpback " Hump-

plained by the supposition of one of the other species of the genus at whale.

Southern right whale.

being mistaken for it. Still, as two other Arctic cetaceans, the narwhal and the beluga, have in a few undoubted instances found their way to British shores, it would be rash absolutely to deny the possi- – bility of the Greenland right whale doing the same. Further details of the migrations and habits of this species are given under "' Whale Fisheries" (see p. 526 below).

The southern right whale (B. australis) resembles the last in the absence of dorsal fin and of longi- tudinal furrows in the skin of the throat and chest, but differs in that it possesses a smaller head in proportion to its

body, shorter baleen, a different-shaped contour of the upper margin of the lower lip, and a greater number of vertebre. The

Fia. 2.—Southern right whale (B. australis).

genus inhabits the temperate seas of both northern and southern hemispheres and is divided into several species according to their geographical distribution :—B. biseayensis of the North Atlantic, B. japoniea of the North Pacific, B. australis of the South Atlantic, and B. antipodarum and B. nove-zelandia of the South Pacific. But the differential characters by which they have been separated, external as well as anatomical, are slight and subject to individual variation ; and the number of specimens available for comparison in museums is not yet sufficient to afford the neces- sary data to determine whether these characters can be regarded as specific or not. The most interesting of these is the right whale, which was formerly abundant in the North Atlantic, but is now so scarce as to appear verging on extinction. This was the whale the pursuit of which gave occupation to a numerous population on the shores of the Basque provinces of France and Spain in the Middle Ages. From the 10th to the 16th centuries Bayonne, Biarritz, St Jean de Luz, and San Sebastian, as well as numerous other towns on the north coast of Spain, were the centres of an active whale "fishery," which supplied Europe with oil and whalebone. In later times the whales were pursued as far as the coast of New- foundland. They were, however, already getting scarce when the voyages undertaken towards the close of the 16th century for the discovery of the north-eastern route to China and the East Indies opened out the seas around Spitzbergen; then for the first time the existence of the Greenland whale became known, and henceforth the energies of the European whale-fishers became concentrated npon that animal. It isa singular fact that the existence of the Atlantic right whale was quite overlooked by naturalists till lately, all accounts referring to it being attributed to the Greenland whale, supposed once to have had a wider distribution than now, and to have been driven by the persecution of man to its present circum- polar haunts. To the two Danish cetologists Eschricht and Rein- hardt is due the credit of having proved its existence as a distinct species, from a careful collation of numerous historical notices of its structure, distribution, and habits ; and their restoration of

the animal, founded upon these documents, has been abundantly con- firmed by the capture of various specimens in recent times, showing that it still lingers in some of the localities where it formerly was so abundant. The only known instances of its occurrence on the coasts of Europe in modern times are in the harbour of San Sebas- tian in January 1854, in the Gulf of Taranto, in the Mediterranean

in February 1877, and on the Spanish coast between Guetaria and Zarauz (Guipnzcoa) in February 1878. The skeletons of these three whales are preserved in the museums of Copenhagen, Naples, and San Sebastian respectively. On the coast of the United States several

(Megaptera boops) by whalers, perhaps on account of the low back

Fia. 8.—Humpbacked whale (Megaptera boops).

hump-like form of the dorsal fin, is very distinctly characterized from all others of the group, especially by the immense length of the pectoral fins or flippers, which are indented or scalloped along their margins, and are, except at their base, of a white colour, nearly all the rest of the body being black. It differs from the right whale and resembles the rorqual in having the skin of the throat and chest marked with deep longitudinal furrows. The | baleen plates are short and broad and of a deep black colour. Though common in the North Atlantic between Nor- way and Greenland, this whale does not frequently appear on the coasts of the British Isles. One came ashore at Newcastle in 1839; another, a young one, was taken in the estuary of the Dee in 1863 and its skeleton is preserved in the Liverpool museum ; and ~ a nearly full-grown animal was captured in the mouth of the Tay in the winter of 1883-84. The usual length of the adult ranges from 45 to 50 feet. Whales of the genus Megaptera are found in the South Atlantic and in both the North and the South Pacific. They resemble those of British seas so closely that it is doubtful whether the differences which have been observed, and upon which several species have been founded, may not have been individual peculiarities ; but zoologists have not yet had the op- portunity of examining and comparing such a series of specimens of different ages and sexes from different localities as would be necessary to determine these points satisfactorily.

Genus Balenoptera.—The rorqnals or fin whales have the Rorqual plicated skin of the throat like that of Megaptera, the furrows or fin being more numerous and close-set ; but the pectoral fin is com- whale,

paratively small and the dorsal fin distinct and faleate. The head is comparatively small and flat, and pointed in front, the baleen short and coarse, the body long and slender, and the tail very much compressed before it expands into the " flukes." The rorquals are perhaps the most abundant and widely distributed of all the whales, being found in some of their modifications in all seas, except the extreme Arctic, and probably Antarctic, regions. Owing to the small quantity and inferior quality of their whalebone, the com- paratively limited amount of blubber or subcutaneous fat, and their great activity and the difficulty of capturing them by the old methods, these whales were not until recently an object of pursuit by whale-fishers ; but, since the introduction of steam-vessels, and especially of explosive harpoons fired from guns, in the place of those hurled by the human hand, a regular fishery has been established on the coast of Finmark (see p. 528 below). There are four distinct species of this genus in British seas. (1) Balenoptera sibbaldii, the "blue whale," the largest of all known animals, attains a length of 80 or even sometimes 85 feet. Its colour is dark bluish grey, with small whitish spots on the breast; the baleen is black ; the flippers are larger proportionally than in other rorquals, measuring one-seventh of the total length of the body ; and the dorsal fin is small and placed very far back. This whale has usually 64 vertebre, of which 16 bear ribs. Like the others of the genus, this species seems to pass the winter in the open seas, and approaches the coast of Norway at the end of April or beginning of May. At this time its sole food is a small crustacean (Euphausia inermis), which swarms in the fjords. Several speci- mens have been taken on the British coasts, two fine skeletons from the Firth of Forth being preserved in the Edinburgh museums. (2) Balenoptera museulus, the common rorqual, has a length of 65 to 70 feet, is of a greyish slate colour above and white underneath, and the baleen is slate colour, variegated with yellow or brown.

Sperm whale.

WHALE

This is the .

It has usually 62 vertebre, of which 15 bear ribs. commonest of all the large whales on the British coasts ; scarcely a winter passes without the body of one being somewhere washed

ashore, usually after stormy weather, and more frequently on the south coast, as this species has a more southern range than the last, and frequently enters the Mediterranean. It feeds largely on fish, and is frequently seen feasting among shoals of herrings. (3) Balzxnoptera borealis, often called Rudolphi's whale from its first describer, is a smaller species, scarcely attaining a length of 50 feet. It is bluish black above, with oblong light-coloured spots, whilst the under parts are more or less white ; the whole of the tail and both sides of the flippers are black; the baleen is black, and the bristly ends fine, curling, and white ; the flippers are very small, measuring one-eleventh of the total length of the body. There are 56 vertebre, with 14 pairs of ribs. This species, according to Collett, feeds chiefly on minute crustaceans, mainly Calanus finmar- chicus and Euphausia inermis, and not on fish. Until lately it was considered the rarest of the whales of European seas, and was only known to science from a few individuals stranded on the coasts of northern Europe at long intervals, the skeletons of which have been preserved in museums. The most southern point at which it has been met with hitherto is Biarritz in France. Since the establishment of the whaling station near the North Cape it has been shown to be a regular summer visitor, and in 1885 771 individuals were captured on the coast of Finmark. (4) Balznoptera rostrata, the lesser fin whale or rorqual, is the smallest species found in the northern seas, rarely exceeding 30 feet in length. Its colour is greyish black above, whilst the under side is white, including the whole of the lower side of the tail ; the inner side of the flippers is white; and there is a broad white band across the outer side, which is a very characteristic mark of the species ; the baleen is yellowish white. The dorsal fin in this and the last species is comparatively high, and placed far forwards on the body. This whale has usually 48 vertebra, of which 11 bear ribs. It is common in summer in the fjords of Norway, and is often seen around the British Isles. It has been taken, though rarely, in the Mediterranean, and it ranges as far north as Davis Strait.

Rorquals are met with in almost all seas throughout the world, but further and more accurate observations are required before their specific characters and geographical distribution can be made

out. Nearly all the individuals hitherto examined with any care,.

whether from the North Pacific, the Australian seas, or the Indian Ocean, come very near in structure to one or the other of the Atlantic forms described above, so much so that some zoologists have been induced to believe that there are but four species, each of which has a wide, almost cosmopolitan range, while others have described and named almost every individual specimen captured as belonging to a different species.

Two totally distinct forms of whalebone whales, Rachianectes glaucus, the grey whale of the North Pacific (California and J apan), and Neobalena maryinata of New Zealand, have never been found in the British seas (see vol. xv. p. 395).

II. ODONTOCETI or Toothed Whales,

Only one member of this group, the sperm whale or cachalot (Physeter macrocephalus), rivals the large whalebone whales in size, its length and bulk being about equal to, or somewhat exceeding,

Fic. 4.—Common rorqual (Balenoptera musculus).

siderably behind the end of the snout. The lower jaw is extremely narrow, and has on each side from twenty to twenty-five stout conical teeth, which furnish ivory of good quality, though not in sufficient bulk for most of the purposes for which that article is required, The upper teeth are quite rudimentary and buried in the gum. The pectoral fin or 'flipper is short, broad, and trun- cated, and the dorsal fin a mere low protuberance. The general colour of the surface is black above and grey below, the colours gradually shading into each other. The only known species of sperm whale is one of the most widely distributed of animals, being met with, usually in herds or "schools," in almost all tropical and subtropical seas,

but not oc- curring, except accidentally, in the Polar regions. Not unfre- quently specimens appear on the coasts of Great Britain, but only as solitary stragglers, or as dead carcases, floated northwards by the Gulf Stream. It-is remarkable that every case of which we have an accurate record has been an old male. The food of the sperm whale consists mainly of various species of cephalopods (squid and cuttlefish), but they also eat fish of considerable size. The substance called "ambergris," formerly used in medicine and now in perfumery, is a concretion formed in the intestine of this whale, and is found floating on the surface of the seas it inhabits. Its genuineness is proved by the presence of the horny beaks of the cephalopods on which the whale feeds.

The remaining Odontoceti are all animals of much smaller size Bottle- than the sperm whale, but to several of them the name of nose The hyperoodon, sometimes whale.

"whale" is commonly applied. called "bottlenose," a name also vaguely given to several species of dolphin, is a regular inhabitant of the North Atlantic, passing the summer in the Spitzbergen seas and going farther south in winter. It is allied to the sperm whale, and resembles it in possessing a large store of oil in the upper part of the head, which yields spermaceti when refined ; on this account, and also for the sake of the blubber, which supplies an oil almost indistinguishable from sperm oil, this whale has been the object of a regular chase in recent years, It is stated in the article MAMMALIA (vol. xv. p: 396) that there are two species of this genus, Hyperoodon rostratus, the common hyperoodon, and H. latifrons, attaining when adult, respectively, the length of 24 and 80 feet; bnt recent investiga- tions have shown that the latter is the male and the former the female of the same species. They feed exclusively on cephalopods, and are practically toothless; the only teeth which exist in the adult,—namely, a small pair at the front of the lower jaw,—are concealed beneath the gum during life. Smaller allied species, be- longing to the genera Ziphius and Mesoplodon, occasionally find their way into British seas, but their proper habitat appcars to be the South Seas.

It frequently happens that large herds or "schools" of whales Ca'ing or are captured in bays or inlets on the rocky coasts of Scotland, pilot These

are the so-called ca'ing whale.

or the Orkney or Shetland Islands. or pilot whale (Globicephalus melas), the grindhval of the Faroe Islanders and Norwegians. They attain the length of 20 feet, and are of a nearly uniform black colour, except a line down the middle of the under surface, which is grey. They are characterized by the round or globose form of the fore-part of the head, occa- sioned by the great development of a cushion of fat placed over the rostrum of the skull in front of the blowhole, and by the great length and narrowness of the pectoral fin. Their destruction in large numbers, amounting sometimes to hundreds at a time, arises from their eminently sociable character and their habit, when attacked, of rushing together and blindly following the leaders of the herd. When they are seen in the neighbourhood of land, the fishermen endeavour to get to seaward of them in their boats, and with shouting and firing of guns to drive them into a bay or fjord, pursuing them until they run themselves on shore in their alarm.

= The beluga (Delphinapterus leucas) is often called the Beluga be = " white whale," though scarcely exceeding the length of or white = = 12 feet. Its colour is almost pure white, and it has no whale.

Fie. 5.—Sperm whale (Physeter macrocephalus).

the Arctic right whale, from which, however, it is very different in outward appearance and in structure. The head is about one-third of the length of the body, very massive, high and truncated in front, owing its huge size and remarkable form mainly to the great accumulation of a peculiarly modified form of fatty tissue, filling the large hollow on the upper surface of the skull. The oil con- tained in cells in this great cavity, when refined, yields sper- maceti, and the thick covering of blubber, which everywhere envelopes the body, produces the valuable sperm-oil of commerce. The single blowhole is a longitudinal slit, placed at the upper and anterior extremity of the head to the left side of the middle line. The opening of the mouth is on the under side of the head, con-

dorsal fin, but a low ridge in its place. It is an in- © habitant of the Arctic seas, extending on the American coast as far south as the river St

Lawrence, which it ascends for a considerable distance. Several instances of its occurrence on the coast of Scotland are recorded, and it has been kept for some time in captivity in America, and even in London. Its external char- acters are represented in vol. xv. p. 399, fig. 50. ech The other cetaceans of this group are generally distinguished as narwhals, grampuses, killers, bottlenoses, dolphins, and porpoiscs, and are not usually called whales.

We have no certain knowledge of the existence of whalebone Fossil whales before the latter part of the Eocene period. The earliest species.

known forms were allied to the existing Balwnoptere. Right whales (Balzna), as might be expected in the case of such a highly

Whaler.

Whale- boat.

Harpoon gun,

Har- poons.

526

specialized form, have not been found older than the Pliocene; and |

it is intercsting to note that, instead of the individuals diminish- ing in bulk as we approach the times we live in, as with many other groups of animals, the contrary has been the case, no known extinct species of whale equalling in size those that are now to be met with in the ocean. 'he size of whales, as of all other things whose most striking attribute is magnitude, has been greatly ex- aggerated ; but, when reduced to the limits of sober fact, the Green- land right whale of 50 feet long, the sperm whale of 60, and the great northern rorqual (Balenoptera sibbaldii) of 80 exceed all other organic structures known, past or present. Instead of living in an age of degeneracy of physical growth, we are in an age of giants, but, it may be, at the end of that age. Through countless ages of time whales have been gradually shaped into their present wonderful

form and gigantic size; but the very perfection of their structure and their magnitude combined, the rich supply of oil protecting their internal parts from cold, the beautiful apparatus of whalebone by which their nutrition is provided for, have been fatal gifts, which, under the sudden revolution produced on the surface of the globe by the development of the wants and arts of civilized man, cannot but lead to their extinction in the not far future. (Ais 1eig5))

WHALE FISHERIES.

Commercially these may be conveniently classified under three heads,— the British, the American, and the Norwegian. The im- plements used, and the mode of capture of the different kinds of whales, being for the most part the same in all cases, the detailed account given below may be held to be of general application, unless the contrary is expressly stated.

The whaler is a vessel of from 400 to 500 tons gross register, rigged either as a ship or a barque, and provided with auxiliary engines of some 75 horse-power. Built after the strongest fashion, she is protected along the water-line by an additional planking of iron bark, an Australian wood of great hardness; the bows are strengthened inside by beams and knees and outside by plates of jron. Underneath the hold-beams about 50 iron tanks are fitted, each capable of containing 200 to 250 tons of oil; above the hold- beams a deck is laid, engine and boiler space being reserved in the stern.

WHALE

which was introduced by the Americans, by whom it is known as a "toggle iron." It consists of a head and shank of iron, and is mouuted on a wooden stock, by which it is darted. The head, a flattened piece of steel, somewhat triangular in form, is connected with the extremity of the shank by a stecl pin, on which it pivots and moves freely. Previous to use the head folds back along the shank, in which position it is retained by a wooden pin. After the weapon has been darted into a whale, the strain on the line breaks the wooden pin, and the head assumes a position at right angles to the shank, somewhat in the form of the letter T, and becomes transfixed in the fibrous tissue under the blubber. The shank isa rod of 4-

inch iron, 2 feet 6 inches long, expanding at its upper extremity to form a socket to receive the wooden stock. The hand harpoon measures 8 feet in length, and, exclusive of the line, weighs 10 tb. Expert harpooners can dart the weapon about 5 yards with considerable force and accuracy.

finest hemp, 32 yarns per strand ; 600 fathoms arc coiled into each whale-boat. The line is joined to the harpoon by the "foregoer," a piece of rope somewhat lighter and more pliable than whale-line. The foregoer being the only part of the line drawn out by the harpoon while in flight, its length, usually from 10 to 12 fathoms,

regulates the distance the harpoon may be fired. The whale-lance Whale- consists of a simple rod of }-inch iron, 6 feet long, one end flattened lance.

to form a small lance-shaped point with cutting edges, the other expanding to form a socket to receive a short wooden handle. Gun lances, bomb lances, and exploding harpoons of various forms and devices have from time to time been introduced ; but, mainly from the fact that in recent years the difficulty in securing a cargo lies not so much in effecting the capture of the animal as in discover- ing its whereabouts, and in approaching sufficiently near to permit the use of the harpoon, they have never come into general use.

Whether the ship is cruising amongst loose ice under canvas Whale- or lying "made fast" to a floe, a careful look-out is kept on board hunting,

from the crow's nest (a barrel lashed to the main-top-gallant mast- head) as well as from the deck. Immediately on a whale being seen, boats are manned and sent in pursuit. If the animal is feeding, which it generally does when near the surface by swimming back- wards and forwards horizontally round an ellipse, great caution is necessary to prevent its becoming aware of the approach of the boats. On the other hand, if the whale is "spauning," 7.¢., swiin- ming in a decided direction and appearing at the surface at in- tervals more or less regular, less caution is observed. In either case as well as under less usual circumstances the whale-boat, endeavouring to keep out of the angle of vision of the animal, approaches it from behind, swiftly but quietly ; the harpooner rises to his

gun and points it at the animal's back, withholding his fire, however, until within as short a distance as possible. On being harpooned the Greenland right whale usually dives per- pendicularly, remaining under water about forty minutes and drawing out some 600 to 700 fathoms of line before it returns to the surface. Whales descend with such velocity that they have been known to break their upper jaw by coming into violent con- tact with the bottom even in 400 fathoms of water. Before the animal has returned to the surface other boats have arrived upon the scene, and, on the reappearance of the whale, give chase and attach more harpoons. Again the whale dives, but soon returns to the surface, still more exhausted. Whenever its motions become sufficiently slow to permit the approach of the boats, the lance is used, a few thrusts in the region of the heart or lungs being speedily fatal. Quantities of blood are thrown up by the spiracles ; the animal lashes the water with its fins, and, after rushing violently through the water in its dying agony, rolls over on its side and lies stiff and rigid at the surface. Under favourable circumstances the capture of a full-grown whale from the time of first harpooning until its death occupies from one to one and a half hours. The operation of flensing is next performed. The body of the whale is lashed lengthwise alongside the ship with its under surface above water; the "cant-purchase," a powerful tackle, is then attached to the commencement of a transverse slip of blubber cut at the neck, known as the "cant-piece." By means of the eant-purchase the body is caused to rotate, whilst the fat is removed from the different parts as they appear above water in large "slips"' or '"blanket- pieces," each a ton or more in weight. After being received on deck, the blubber is cut into pieces about a foot square and stowed into the "'tween-decks." The whalebone is removed from each side of the upper jaw as it appears above water en bloc. The process of "cutting-in" occupies the ship's company about three hours. The only subsequent operations are the cutting up of the blubber into small pieces and its stowage in the oil tanks. The removal of the gum from the whalebone, the separation of the plates, and their stowage in the 'tween decks are operations per- formed subsequently. British Fisheries.

Greenland Right Whale.—The Greenland right whale (Balwna Green- mysticetus) is found amongst, or in the near vicinity of, the Polar land fish- Its habitat, however, is materially reduced in extent by the ing.

ice.

Whale-line Whale- is three-stranded rope, 23 inches in circumference, composed of the line.

WHALE

shallowness of many parts of the Arctic Ocean—e.g., of the Barents and Kara Seas and the sea to the north of Siberia—localities whcre the species is quite unknown. The fishing is prosecuted off Green- land and in Davis Strait by the British, and at Behring Strait by the Americans.

Sailing either directly from the home ports in April or proceeding thither after prosccuting the sealing, the British whale ships arrive at the north Greenland whaling-grounds off the west coast of Spitz- bergen early in May. If it is a "close" season, 7.¢., if the ice of the Barents Sea comes west round the south end of Spitzbergen,

527

whales make their appearance in May; the former have migrated south during the previous autumn amongst the archipelago of islands forming the west side into Fox Channel, thence by Hudson's Strait to the pack-ice off Resolution Island, where, together with the old whales, they probably winter. Early in May the whale- men drag their boats over the ice to the open water at the floe edge, and the whales are seen amongst the pack-ice in the offing, the younger whales being nearest the land-floe. Encampments are formed along the floe edge, and the fishing is continued until the whales migrate north in June.

and effects a junction with the Greenland ice, so as to form a south- east pack, the ships have sometimes to force their way through several hundred niiles of ice before reaching the grounds. On the other hand, if it is an " open" season, as more usually occurs,

The average full-grown Greenland right whale yields about 15 Produce tons of oil and 15 cwts. of whalebone, although individuals are of Green-

occasionally killed which yield nearly 30 tons of oil and 30 ewts. of land whalebone. The whalebone consists of about 590 slips, the longest whale-

hitherto been generally accepted by naturalists), the animal lives Z 5 re %H upon various invertebrate forms, such as Actini#, Schix, Cliones, Year. feel | ee = cai | ae | Ofoi |Of Whale-| of Total Mcdusx, Cancri, and Helices. Scoresby states that some of these Os| “2 i 2 | 8S | £a | per ewt. Vena Produce. genera are always to be seen wherever whales are found stationary ra 3 a ve ae and feeding. Dr John Murray, however, is of opinion that whales | |___}|___|_& |__| |_| also resort for food to the larger forms of pelagic fauna which exist £s. d.|& s. 4. £& in the immediate vicinity of the bottom of the ocean, and the 1860 | 8 15389 | 112 6 | 2010 0 | 70,828 ie : ; 6 1861 | 8 2178 | 119 0 | 18 0 0} 112,305 presence of which was ascertained during the course of the “ Chal- 18621 1 910 | 1051 | 2 7 0/26 0 0| 69,185 lenger”’ investigations. The third condition is abundance of the 1863 | 15 618 | 679 | 210 0 | 27 0 0| 48,627 higher forms of life, such as birds, especially guillemots (Uria grylla) 1864 | 3 762 | 903 | 2 4 0 | 2610 0| 54,818 and looms (Alca arra), also narwhals (Monodon monoceros), seals, oe BS bo a 4 2 2 = ie pa bears, &. The whales make their appearance amongst the ice 1se7 | 7 228 | 240 | 2 3 0 | 20 0 0| 12,366 near the sea edge about 15th May, but only remain in the locality 1868 | 4 28 | 1357 | 116 0 | 22 0 0] 71,529 until the opening of the barrier ice permits them to resume their 1869 : ae a ‘ 2 . a : 9 ed northward jonrney, for usually about the middle of June they i 4 1544 | 7 6 |is10 0| 72647 suddenly disappear from these grounds, and are last seen going 1872 | 25 1486 | 1 0 | 2410 0| 87,601 north-west. The north Greenland whale-fishing is then over for 1873 | 2 29 | 1475 | 1 6 | 2410 0 | 89,508 the season. If unsuccessful in obtaining a cargo at the northern eg i eas ee ; Y “4 F ae grounds, the whale ships next proceed southwards as far as lat. 75°; is76 | 13 987 | 1118 | 116 0 | 4210 0| 79,009 then, if the sea is sufficiently open, they penetrate westwards until 1877 | 2 867 | 935 | 113 0 | 60 0 0} 79,892 the coast of Greenland isvisible. There they cruise amongst the ice i : aad : : a 8 3 pd until August, when the darkness of the nights puts an end to the bole 5 ; 1074 | 1 7 013710 0| 63858 fishing. 1881 | 23 709 | 696 | 111 0 | 35 0 o| 44,268 Davis If the south-west fishing is first prosecuted, the vessels arrive be 1 0 a 4 9 et Strait at the ice edge near Resolution Island in April. Here, although 1 a nh oo: | aenales fishing. numbers of large

whales are usually seen, yet, owing to the boister- i 9 160 0 o| 33,233 ous weather and the compact nature of the ice, the fishing is seldom 1 1 © | 8210 0 | 38,052 very successful, so that the majority of the vessels, after pro- secuting the "saddle" sealing at Newfoundland or Greenland, pro- History.—As already stated (see above, p.524)a right whale fishery History ceed direct to Disco, where they usually arrive early in May. The | of great importance was prosecuted in the temperate waters of the of Green- whales make their appearance at South-East Bay about 15th May, | Atlantic at a very early period, more especially by the hardy seamen Jand and here, where once a great fishing was carried on, a few whales | of the Basque provinces from the 10th to the 16th century. Author- whale may be killed. The dangerous passage of Melville Bay is next | itics are now agreed that the whale pursued was Balena biscwy- fishing. performed and the whale ships, entering the north water in June, | ensis, which difiers from B. mysticetus in its smaller size, its greater push on towards the sounds. If there is a "' land-floe across," ¢.¢., | activity, and its more southern distribution. The Greenland right if the land-ice of the west side is continuous across the entrance | whale fishery owes its origin to Henry Hudson's first voyage to of Ponds Bay and Lancaster Sound, whales will be seen in consi- | Greenland and Spitzbergen in 1607. His glowing accounts of the derable numbers and good cargoes may be obtained ; but imme- | great numbers of whales and morses led to the despatch of Jonas diately the land-floe breaks up the whales depart to the westward. | Poole to the Greenland Sea by the Muscovy Company, and the When there is no land-floe across, the whales proceed at once | success of his four voyages (1609-1612) speedily attracted the into the secluded waters of Eclipse Sound and Prince Regent | vessels of other nations. For a time the English endeavoured to Inlet, where they resort during the summer months. At this | obtain a monopoly of the fishing; but, the other nations resisting, season of the year most of the vessels cruise in the sounds, while | hostilities were engaged in, which resulted in the discomfiture of a few search the middle ice, until the darkness of the August nights | the English by a Dutch fleet in 1618. Thereafter it was agreed compels them to seek an anchorage in some of the liarbours of the that different parts of the Spitzbergen coast should be allotted to west side, where they await the return of the whales south. This | different nationalities. The English interest in the industry, how- migration takes

place on the formation of young ice in the sounds, ever, declined, and the fishing fell mainly into the hands of the usually in the latter part of September. Only the larger in- Dutch, who until 1640 also carried on an important fishing in the dividuals, however, and the great majority of these males, come | seas surrounding the island of Jan Mayen. Meanwhile they did close down along the land of the west side. These the ships send | not neglect the Spitzbergen fishery, in which 10,019 whales were their boats out to intercept, and this forms the inshore fishing or | taken by them in the ten years 1679-1688. About 1680, when "rock-nosing ", which is continued until the formation of young ice | their fishing was probably at its most prosperous stage, they had drives the vessels out of their harbours, usually early in October. 260 vessels and 14,000 seamen employed. Their fishery continued Hud- A few vessels, American as well as British, occasionally enter | to flourish on almost as cxtensive a scale until 1770, when it began

the barrier ice in lat. 80° may be reached without hindrance. In cruising for whales certain indications are sought which the whale- men know by experience to be favourable to the appearance of the animal. The first of these is " whaling ice," or moderately loose ice with close pack or floes in the neighbourhood. The second is abundance of food. The presence of this condition may be as- ecrtained by a surface net, or it may be inferred from the colour of the water, which varies from the barrenness of clear cold cerulean to the richness of opaque and warm olive green. The crustacean Calanus finmarchicus, the pteropod Clione limacina, and the gas- teropod Limacina helicina are amongst the most abundant forms, the first-mentioned contributing perhaps nine-tenths of the whale's food. Yet very little is known positively as to the food of the Greenland right whale. According to whalemen (and the idea has

son's Bay Hudson's Bay and prosecute the fishing in the neighbourhood of

fishing. Southampton Island, and even enter Fox Channel.

There are whaling-stations in Cumberland Inlet, and a few vessels usually remain all winter, ready to take advantage of the opening of the ice in the following spring. Here the young as well as the old

measuring 10 feet 6 inches and weighing 5} tb in an average animal, fishing.

12 feet 6 inches and 94 tb in a very large one. The following table shows the returns of these fisheries from 1860 to 1886 in- clusive, in so far as British vessels were concerned. It will be seen that a constant decrease has taken place both in the number of whales killed and in the total value of the produce. The price

to which oil has fallen little more than pays the expense and trouble attending its being taken on board and its subsequent pre- paration for the market, and there can be little doubt that, but for the high price which whalebone commands, the fishing would long ere this have been abandoned as unremunerative.

Whales Killed.

Produce. Value

oe ee OO ———————————————

1 The figures given are the values of "size-bone," i.e., slips of whalebone sieeatie fae ia length, which is twiee the value of whalebone under that length, so that before the exact value of the produce eould be arrived at it has been found necessary to compute 17 per eent. of the whalebone at half the figure given, being the proportion of whalebone under size in an average whale.

Sperm whale fishing.

Behring Strait fishery.

Sperm whale fishing.

528

to decline, and finally, owing to the war, came to a close before the end of the century. At the samc time the Germans prosecuted the fishing to a very considerable extent: 79 vessels from Hamburg and Bremen were

employed in 1721, and during the fifty years 1670-1719 an average of 45 vessels sailed yearly from Hamburg alone. German vessels continued to engage in the fishing until 1873. The Spaniards, although they took part in the pursuit at an early date, and appear at first to have supplied the skilled por- tion of the crews of the English and Dutch vessels, never seem to have engaged largely in the northern fishery ; 20 of their vessels were employed in it in 1721, but before the end of the century they had entirely abandoned the occupation. The Danes, although likewise early appearing on the Spitzbergen fishing-grounds, never pursued the industry on a large scale until after the commencement of the Davis Strait fishing in 1721, in which year they had 90 sail engaged ; in 1803 the number had fallen to 35. As for the English fishing, although sundry attempts had been made to revive it, notably in 1673 and in 1725 (the latter year by the South Sea Company), it was not until a bounty of 20s. per ton on the burden of the ships employed, granted in 1733, had been increased to 40s. in 1749 that the industry began to revive ; in the same year vessels sailed from Scotland for the first time. Notwithstanding the re- duction of the bounty to 30s. the number of ships sailing from British ports in 1787 amounted to 255. In 1814 the value of the gross freights of the Greenland and Davis Strait fleets amounted to £700,000, and in the same year the " Resolution " of Peterhead, Captain Souter, returued from Greenland with 44 whales, produc- ing 299 tons of oil, the largest cargo ever brought into Great Britain. In 1824 the bounty was finally withdrawn. Since that time, owing to the scarcity of whales, and still more to their in- creasing shyness, caused in a great measure by the injudicious use of steam, the returns of the fishery have been gradually decreasing and the vessels employed have become fewer.

Sperm Whale.—Since 1853 British vessels have ceased to prose- cute this fishing. Begun in 1775, the British sperm whale fishing soon increased and by 1791 had assumed considerable importance, when the vessels engaged numbered 75, all hailing from London. It was British sperm whalemen who opened up the whaling-grounds of the Pacific and Indian Oceans.

American Fisheries.

The American whale fisheries embrace the Behring's Strait or Arctic fishery and the sperm whale or southern fishery.

Greenland Right Whale.—As already mentioned above, the object of this fishery is the capture of Balena mysticetus. In this case, however, the whales are mostly sought, not among the ice, but in open water, the vessels used being less adapted to ice navigation than those of the British, and nearly all are propelled by sail power alone. The hand harpoon is preferred and bomb lances are used to kill the whales. The vessels sail mostly from San Francisco in March, and arrive at the ice edge off Cape Navarin, where the fishing is first prosecuted, in May. The whales disappear during summer, but return in the autumn, when the "fall" fishing is carried on in the neighbourhood of Point Barrow ; between seasons the vessels go south and prosecute the sperm whaling. The Behring Strait fishery was commenced in 1848, and in the three following years 250 ships obtained cargoes. In 1871 34 vessels were abandoned in the ice off Cape Belcher, the crews making good their escape to other vessels ; again in 1876 12 vessels experienced a similar fate.

Sperm Whale.—The capture of the sperm whale (Physeter macro-cephalus) is prosecuted throughout the tropical seas of the globe. The distribution of the animal being, however, restricted to deep water, the fishing is usually carried on at a distance from land. The vessels used are generally barques of about 300 tons, carrying five boats and manned by a crew of thirty hands all told. 'The vessels have no particular time for sailing or arriving in port; the duration of a voyage is generally three years. The sperm whale is killed in the same manner as the Greenland right whale; the use of the hand harpoon is, however, preferred ; and the whale-boats which are not required to withstand contact with ice, are less strongly built, and much lighter and swifter than those uscd in the northern fisheries. The ordinary sperm whale yields about 60 barrels of oil (=10 tons), although large males are occasionally killed which yield a greater quantity. The oil is boiled at sea: hence its freedom from smell and the consequent high price which it commands as compared with that of the bottlenose whale.

Sperm whale fishing seems to have commenced early in the 18th century, the whaling community of Nantucket embarking in the industry about 1712; and in 1774, before the commencement of the War of Independence, a fleet of 360 vessels was engaged in it This fishery perhaps reached its climax in 1846, when it occupied a total of 785 vessels, having an aggregate capacity of 233,199 tons. During the period 1877 to 1886 inclusive the average annual number of vessels employed was 159, their average annual aggregate burden being 35,713 tons. The average annual imports into the United States of whaling produce were as follows: —of sperm oil

WHA—

WHA

31,824 barrels (=5804 tons), of whale oil 29,180 barrels (= 4863 tons), of whalebone 325,559 tb (=145 tons). New Bedford and San Francisco are the principal whaling-ports.

Norwegian Fisheries. The Norwegian fisheries include that of the fin whale and that of the bottle-nose whale.

Fin Whale.—Associated with this fishery is the name of Svend Fin Foyn, the seaman who first invented apparatus to attack success- whale fully the large and active fin whales which abound in northern seas, fishery

and at certain seasons frequent the fjords of the north coast of Nor- way. The principal feature of the whaling gear is the use of au exploding harpoon, which virtually kills the animal immediately it is struck. Owing to its weight, a gun of large size is required to throw the harpoon, and in turn a craft of considerable burden is required to carry the gun. The harpoon bears a shell containing 3 tb powder and weighs 123 Ib; the gun, 44 inches thick at the muzzle, with 3 inches bore, requires a charge of 1 tb powder, and weighs about 15 ewts. ; the vessel answering the purpose of a whale- boat is a steamer of about 80 tons burden and 30 horse-power. It is used not only for carrying the gun and pursuing the whales but also for towing the bodies of the animals when dead to the "factory" on shore, where the operation of flensing is performed. The whales hunted (in the

order of their size and relative value) are (1) the blue whale (Balenoptera sibbaldit), (2) the humpback (Megaptera longimana), (3) the common rorqual (Balznoptera musculus), (4) Rudolphi's rorqual (B. borealis), and (5) the lesser rorqual (B. rostrata). All are killed for their oil, which is much inferior in quality to that of the Greenland right whale, for their whalebone, which is short and brittle, and for their bones and flesh, which are converted into manure. The whalers hail from the south of Norway (Sandefjord, Tonsberg, &c.), and have their whaling sta- tions or "factories" on the fjords along the coast of Finmark. The fishing is prosecuted only in summer. In 1884 450 fin whales were killed, in 1885 1398, and in 1886 954.

Bottlenose Whale.—The bottlenose whale (Z/yperoodon rostratus) Bottle- abounds during summer in the northern seas adjacent to the ice nose edge, from the Labrador coast on the west to Nova Zembla on the whale east, but more particularly in the neighbonrhood of Jan Mayen and fishery.

Iceland, where the fishing is usually prosecuted during May, Juue, and July. Previous to May the weather is generally too stormy, and about the middle of July the whales, although hitherto numer- ous, suddenly disappear. The average-sized bottlenose whale yields 22 ewts. of oil, 5 per cent. of which is spermaceti ; the oil is superior even to sperm asa lubricant. Although the whale-ships had fre- quented the northern seas for centuries, and sailed over the haunts of these animals season after season, it was not until recent years that they were discovered to cxist there in immense numbers. The fishing may be said to date from the capture of 208 of these animals by the " Eclipse," Captain David Gray, of Peterhead in 1882. In the following year a number of British vessels took up the fishing, and at the same time the Norwegians embarked in it to such an extent that the market was soon glutted with oil, and the price fell from £55 per ton to £18, which no longer renders the industry remunerative to British vessels. A fleet of about thirty small sail- ing vessels annually leaves the Norwegian ports to prosecute this ie In 1885 they killed over 1300 whales and in 1886 about

1700.

Titerature.—On British whale fisheries, see Scoresby, Arctic Regions, Voyage to the Greenland Sea in 1822; M'Culloch, Dict. of Commerce; Markhain, Whaling Cruise ; Southwell, " Notes on the Seal and Whale Fisheries," in Zoologist, 1884, &e.; F. D. Bennett, Whaling Voyage round the Globe, 1833-36; and Beale, The Sperm Whale and its Captors, 1839. On American whale fisheries the following works may be consulted :— Starbuck, Hist. of Amer. Whale Fishery from its Earliest Inception to 1876; Report of U. S. Comm. of Fisheries, 1875, vol. iv. 5 Whalemen's Shipping List and Merchants' Transcript (New Bedford); and Scammon, Mammalia of North-Western America, 1874. On the Norwegian whale fisheries there are various papers in the Zoologist, by A. H. Cocks, 1884 and succeeding years. (R. GR.)

WHALEBONE is the inaccurate name under which the baleen plates of the right whale are popularly known ; and the trade-name of whale-fin, which the substance receives in commerce, is equally misleading. Three kinds of whale- bone are recognized by traders—the Greenland, yielded by the Greenland whale, Balena mysticetus ; the South Sea, the produce of the Antarctic black whale, B. australis ; and the Pacific or American, which is obtained from B, japonica, Of these the Greenland whalebone is the most valuable. It formed the only staple known in earlier times, when the northern whale fishery was a great and productive industry. This whalebone usually comes into the market trimmed and clean, with the hairy fringe which edges the plates removed. To prepare whalebone for its economic applications, the blades or plates are boiled for about twelve hours, till the substance is quite soft, in

which state it is cut either into narrow strips or into small bristle-like filaments, according to the use to which it is to be devoted.

Whalebone possesses a unique combination of properties which render it peculiarly and almost exclusively suitable for several pur- poses. It is light, flexible, tough, and Auten. and its fibres run parallel to each other without intertwisting. It has been found practicable to employ flexible steel for several purposes to which whalebone was formerly applied, especially in the umbrella and corset industries, in which steel is now

almost exclusively used. Whalebone is, however, still in large demand among dressmakers and milliners ; but it is principally used in the brush trade. In cases where bristles are too soft and weak, and where the available

vegetable fibres possess insufficient elasticity and durability, whale-

bone offers the great advantage of being procurable in strips or filaments, long or short, thick or thin, according to requirement. Hence it is principally used for making brushes for mechanical purposes, such as machines for road-sweeping, chimney-sweeping, boiler-flue cleaning, the cleaning of ships' bottoms, and for stable use, &c. The use of whalebone in brush-making was originally patented by Samuel Crackles in 1808, and various special inachines have been adapted for cutting the material into filaments. When whalebone came into the English market in the 17th century it cost at first about £700 per ton. In the 18th century its price ranged from £350 to £500 per ton, but early in the 19th century it fell as low as £25. Later it varied from £200 to £250 ; but with the decrease in whaling the article has becomé very scarce, and upwards of £1500 per ton is now paid for Greenland whalebone.

WHALE OILS. The whale or train (Germ., Thran) oil of commerce may be obtained from the blubber of any species of whale or dolphin (see WHALE FIsHERIES, above). The only whale oil that is otherwise commercially distin- guished is sperm or spermaceti oil, yielded by the sperm whales. Whale oil varies in colour from a bright honey yellow to a dark brown, according to the condition of the blubber from which it has been extracted. At best it has a rank fishy odour, and the darker the colour the more dis- agreeable the smell, Train oil consists of a glyceride of physetoleic acid (also found in earth-nut oil), together with

stearin, palmitin, &c. With lowering of the temperature _ stearin, accompanied with a small proportion of spermaceti, separates from the oil, and a little under the freezing-point nearly the whole of these constituents may be crystallized out. When separated and pressed, this deposit is known as whale tallow, and the oil from which it is removed is distin- guished as pressed whale oil; this, owing to its limpidity, is sometimes passed as sperm oil. Whale oil is principally used in oiling

wools for combing, in batching flax and other vegetable fibres, in currying and chamois leather-making, and as a lubricant for machinery. Sperm oil is obtained from the enormous cavity in the head of the sperm whale, and from several smaller receptacles throughout the body of the animal. During the life of the whale the contents of these cavities are in a fluid condition, but no sooner is the "head matter" removed than the solid wax spermaceti separates in white crystalline flakes, leaving the oil a clear yellow fluid having a fishy odour. The oil, which has an acid reaction, is purified by treatment with a solution of potash, which precipitates impurities held by the acid of the oil. Refined sperm oil is a most valuable lubricant for small and delicate machinery.

WHARTON, Mareguis or. Two noblemen with this title, father and son, hold a certain place in English literary history as subjects of satiric portraiture.

THomas Wuarton (1640-1715), a prominent Whig politician at the Revolution, is reputed by Dr Percy to have been the author of the famous political ballad Zili- burlero, which "sang James II. out of three kingdoms." Wharton was lord-lieutenant of Ireland in Anne's reign, and incurred the wrath of Swift, who attacked him as Verres in the Hraminer (No. 14), and drew a separate "character" of him, which is one of Swift's masterpieces. He was a man of great wit and versatile cleverness, and cynically ostentatious in his immorality, having the repu- tation of being the greatest rake and the truest Whig of

his time. Addison dedicated to him the fifth volume of the Spectator, giving him a very different "character" from Swift's.

Puitre WHARTON (1699-1731), the son of Thomas, suc- ceeded to title and fortune at the age of sixteen, and quickly earned for himself, by his wild and profligate frolics and reckless playing at politics, Pope's satire of him as "the scorn and wonder of our days" (Moral Essays, i. 179). He spent his large estates in a few years, then went abroad and gave eccentric support to the Old Pre- tender, There is a lively picture of his appearance at Madrid in 1726 in a letter from the British consul, quoted in Stanhope's History of England (ii. p. 140).

The elder Wharton is described at length by Macaulay as one of the four chiefs of the Whigs after the Revolution (History, chap. 20). He was created carl of Wharton in 1706, and marquis in 1714, immediately after the arrival of George I. in England. The younger Wharton succeeded to the marquisate in 1715 on his father's death, and was created duke on coming of age in 1720.

WHATELY, Ricnarp (1787-1863), archbishop of Dublin, was born in London on Ist February 1787. He was the youngest of the nine children of the Rev. J oseph Whately of Nonsuch Park, Surrey. After attending a pri- vate school near Bristol (where his father was prebendary), he went to Oxford in 1805 and entered Oriel College, then the most distinguished in the university. Copleston, afterwards bishop of Llandaff, was a college tutor when Whately entered, and had a marked influence upon the younger man. In their long walks together round Oxford they discussed and worked out much that was afterwards embodied in Whately's Logic. Whately took a double second-class in honours in 1808, afterwards gaining the prize for the English essay, and in 1811 he was elected fellow of Oriel. He continued to reside at Oxford as a private tutor, and in 1814 took holy orders. The Oriel common-room at that time was full of intellectual life, destined to discharge itself in very varied channels. Be- sides Copleston and Whately, Davison, Arnold, Keble, and Hawkins were among the fellows, and Newman and Pusey were added about the time of Whately's leaving Oxford. Newman has put on record in his Apologia his indebted- ness to Whately, who, he says, opened his mind and taught him to think and to use his reason. They soon became separated ; but between Arnold and Whately there was a warm friendship till the death of the

former. It was at this time that Whately wrote his celebrated tract, Historic Doubts relative to Napoleon Bonaparte, a very clever jeu @esprit directed against excessive' scepticism as applied to the Gospel history. In 1820 Whately made the acquaint- ance of Elizabeth Pope, to whom he was married in July of the following year. After his marriage he first settled in Oxford, where he continued to take pupils, and in 1822 he was appointed Bampton lecturer. The lectures, On the Use and Abuse of Party Spirit in Matters of Religion, were published in the same year, and were followed bya volume of Sermons in 1823. In August 1823 he removed to Halesworth in Suffolk, a country living to which he had been presented. Here two years were spent in vigorous parish work ; but the damp climate nearly proved fatal to Mrs Whately, and, when he was appointed in 1825 to the principalship of St Alban Hall, he returned with his family to Oxford. In the same year he took the degree of doctor of divinity. At St Alban Hall Whately found much to reform, and he left it a different place. In 1825 he published a series of Essays on Some of the Peculiarities of the Christian Religion, followed in 1828 by a second series On Some of the Difficulties in the Writings of St Paul, and in 1830 by a third On the Errors of Romanism traced to their Origin in Human Nature. He also published in 1829 a volume of his Halesworth sermons, under the title A View of the Scripture Revelations concerning a Future

State. It was while he was at St Alban Hall (1826) that the work appeared which is perhaps most closely associ- ated with his name,—his treatise on Logic, originally con- tributed to the Encyclopxdia Metropolitana. By this work, which gave a great impetus to the study of logic not only in Oxford but throughout Great Britain, Whately has been known to generation after generation of students ; and, though it is no longer so much in use, the qualities of the book make much of it as admirable now as when it was written. Whately swept the webs of scholasticism from the subject, and raised the study to a new level. A similar treatise on Rhetoric, also contributed to the Eney- clopedia, appeared in 1828. In 1829 Whately was elected to the professorship of political economy at Oxford in succession

to Senior. In writing to a friend he gives the following characteristic reason for accepting the appoint- ment: "It seems to me that before long political econo- mists of some sort will govern the world. Now the anti-Christians are striving hard to have this science to themselves, and to interweave it with their notions ; and, if these efforts are not met, the rising generation will be at the mercy of these men." It was a subject admirably suited to his lucid, practical intellect ; but his tenure of office was cut short by his appointment to the archbishopric of Dublin in 1831. He published only one course of Introductory Lectures (1831), in which he sought to establish the true scope of the science ; but one of his first acts on going to Dublin was to endow a chair of political economy in Trinity College out of his private purse. Whately's appointment by Lord Grey to the see of Dublin came asa great surprise to everybody, for though a decided Liberal Whately had from the beginning stood aloof from all political parties, and ecclesiastically his position was that of an Ishmaelite fighting for his own hand. The Evangelicals regarded him as a dangerous latitudinarian on the ground of his views on Catholic emancipation, the Sabbath question, the doctrine of election, and certain quasi-Sabellian opinions he was supposed to hold about the character and attributes of Christ, while his view of the church was diametrically opposed to that of the High Church party, and from the beginning he was the deter- mined opponent of what was afterwards called the Trac- tarian movement. The appointment was challenged in the House of Lords, but without success. In Ireland it was immensely unpopular among the Protestants, both for the reasons just mentioned and as being the appoint- ment of an Englishman and a Whig. Whately's blunt outspokenness and his "want of conciliating manners," which even his friends admit, prevented him from ever completely eradicating these prejudices ; and the amount of opposition he met with from his own clergy would have daunted a man less resolute than the new archbishop in the performance of what he conceived to be his duty. He ran counter to their most cherished prejudices from the first by connecting himself prominently with the attempt to establish a national and unsectarian system of educa- tion. He enforced strict discipline in his diocese, where it had been long unknown; and he published an un- answerable, and all the more unpalatable, statement of his views on the Sabbath (Thoughts on the Sabbath, 1832). The archbishopric of Dublin at that time—just after the

passing of the Catholic Emancipation Act, and in the midst of a general refusal to pay tithes—was anything but a bed of roses. Whately spoke of his appointment as "a call to the helm of a crazy ship in a storm," and one which nothing but an overpowering sense of duty could have in- duced him to accept. He took a small country place at Redesdale, four miles out of Dublin, where he could enjoy his favourite relaxation of gardening. Here his life was one of indefatigable industry. Questions of tithes, reform

of the Irish Church, reform of the Irish Poor Laws, and, in particular, the organization of national education occu- pied much of his time. But he found leisure for the dis- cussion of other public questions, for example, the subject of transportation and the general question of secondary punishments, in which he was strongly interested and on which he repeatedly published. In 1837 he wrote his well-known handbook of Christian Huidences, which was translated during his lifetime into more than a dozen languages. Ata later period he also wrote, in a similar form, Hasy Lessons on Reasoning, on Morals, on Mind, and on the British Constitution. He attached much im- portance himself to these unpretending but useful books. Among other works may be mentioned Charges and Tracts (1836), Essays on some of the Dangers to Christian Laath (1839), Lhe Kingdom of Christ (1841). He also edited Bacon's Hssays, Paley's Hvidences, and Paley's Jforal Philosophy. His cherished scheme of unsectarian religious instruction for Protestants and Catholics alike was carried out for a number of years with a measure of success, a selection of Scripture lessons and of Christian evidences by the archbishop himself being actually used in the model schools. But in 1852 the scheme broke down through the opposition of the new Catholic archbishop of Dublin, and Whately felt himself constrained to withdraw from the Education Board. 'This was felt by him as a grievous disappointment. From the beginning Whately was a keen-sighted observer of the condition of Ireland question, and gave much offence by openly supporting the state endowment of the Catholic clergy as a measure of justice. During the terrible years of 1846 and 1847 the archbishop and his family were unwearied in their efforts to alleviate the miseries of the people. Whately's private beneficence was not confined, however, to this period. Though so rigid a political economist that he could boast of never

having given a penny to a beggar, his charities were princely, and oftenest bestowed without the know- ledge of his nearest friends, From 1856 onwards symptoms of decline began to manifest themselves in a paralytic affection of the left side, which kept his arm in a constant tremor. In 1860 he lost his wife and a much-loved daughter. Still he continued the active discharge of his public duties till the summer of 1863, when he was pro- strated by an ulcer in the leg, and after several months of acute suffering he died on 8th October 1863. In the fol- lowing year his daughter published Miscellaneous Remains from his commonplace book and in 1866 his Life and Correspondence in two volumes. The loosely compiled Anecdotal Memoirs of Archbishop Whately, by W. J. Fitz- patrick (1864), may be used (with discretion) as enliven- ing Miss Whately's picture of her father.

Few eminent men have had more anecdotes and witty sayings attributed to them than Whately. He was a great talker, much addicted in early life to argument, in which he used others as in- struments on which to hammer out his own views, and as he ad- vanced in life much given to didactic monologue. But this didactic tendency was accompanied almost to the last by an intensely youthful delight in logic-chopping. At his monthly dinners to his clergy the archbishop would indulge even to an undignified extent in a species of logical horse-play. To this were added a keen wit, whose sharp edge often inflicted wounds never deliberately intended by the speaker, and a wholly uncontrollable love of pun- uing. Whately often offended people by the extreme unconvention- ality of his manners. When at Oxford his white hat, rough white coat, and huge white dog earned for him the sobriquet of the White Bear, and he outraged the conventious of the place by ex- hibiting the exploits of his climbing dog in Christchurch Meadow. This free and easy manner clung to him in later life and accom- panied him into the Dublin drawing-rooms, where it was often exaggerated by absence of mind. His fondness for dogs and animals generally was a passion through life, and he was also very fond of children, who, with their usual discrimination, gave him their confidence in return. He was an adept in various savage sports, more especially in throwing the boomerang.

_— a

Whately was a man loved and reverenced by a narrow circle, hated, or at least distrusted, by a much larger number. This was largely owing to his own intellectual characteristics ; for, with a remarkably fair and lucid mind, his sympathies were narrow, and by his blunt outspokenness on points of difference he alienated many. With no mystical fibre in his own constitution, the Trac- tarian movement was incomprehensible to him, and was the object of his bitter dislike and contempt. The doctrines of the Low Church party seemed to him to be almost equally tinged with superstition. In short, it is admitted even by his admirers that he had a tendency to depreciate those minds which could not rest content with his own "common-sense"' view of Christianity. See- ing so clearly himself, he could not believe that there might be thmgs which he could not see. Though a great logician, there was nothing philosophical or speculative about his mind, and he took a practical, almost business-like view of Christianity, which seemed to High Churchmen and Evangelicals alike little better than Xationalism. In this they did Whately less than justice, for his belief in Christianity as understood by himself was thoroughly genuine, and his religion was to him a real thing. But he may be said to have continued into our own times the typical Chris- tianity of the 18th century—the Christianity of the theologians who went out to fight the Rationalists with their own weapons. It is to Whately essentially a belief in certain matters of fact, to be accepted or rejected after an examination of 'evidences." Hence his endeavour always is to convince the logical faculty, and his Christianity inevitably appears as a thing of the intellect rather than of the heart. Whately himself was well aware that he was out of harmony with the general tendency of his time, and even Broad Church theology has in general proceeded since upon other lines than his. Nevertheless, though in no sense a fruitful or suggestive mind, his clear and massive intellect inspired general respect, and his books well repay reading by the shrewdness of their observa- tion, the acutencss of the reasoning, the faculty of telling illustra- tion, and the uniform excellence of style. Whately's qualities are exhibited at their best in his Logic, which is, as it were, the quintessence of the views which he afterwards applied to different subjects. He has written nothing better

than the luminous Ap- pendix to this work on " Ambiguous Terms." (A. SE.)

531

On the other side of the flower and ata slightly higher level is the "palea," of thinner texture than the other glumes, with infolded margins and with two ribs or veins. These several glumes are closely applied one to the other So as to conceal and protect the ovary, and they only separate to allow of the passage of the empty anthers after fertilization. Within the pale are two minute, ovate, pointed, white membranous scales called "lodicles." These contain three stamens with thread-like filaments and oblong, two-lobed anthers. The stamens are placed round the base of the ovary, which is a rounded or oblong body, much smaller than the glumes, covered with down, and sur- mounted by two short styles, extending into feathery brush-like stigmas. The ripe fruit or grain, sometimes called the "berry," the matured state of the ovary and its contents, is oblong or ovoid, with a longitudinal furrow on one side. The ovary adheres firmly to the seed in the interior, so that on examining a longitudinal section of the grain by the microscope the outer layer is seen to consist of epidermal cells, of which the uppermost are prolonged into short hairs to cover the apex of the grain. Two or three layers of cells inside the epidermis constitute the tissue of the ovary, and overlie somewhat similar layers which form the coats of the seed. Within these last is a layer of square cells larger and more regular in form than those on each side ; these contain the gluten or nitrogenous matter upon which so much of the nutritive value of the seed depends. This thin layer of gluten cells contains the albumen or perisperm, which constitutes the great mass of the seed, being composed of numerous cells of irregular form and size filled with starch grains. These layers of cells become more or less dry and inseparable one from

Struc- WHEAT (Zritieum), the most important and the most | another, forming the substance known as "bran." At ture of generally diffused of cereal grasses, is an annual plant, | the lower end of the albumen, and placed-obliquely, is the aos with hollow, erect, knotted stems, and

produces, in addi- | minute embryo-plant, which derives its nourishment in

tion to the direct develop- ments from the seedling plant, secondary roots and secondary shoots (tillers) from the base. Its leaves

the first instance from the albumen; this is destined to form the future plant.

Sucli in brief is the general structure of the wheat plant Origin as we now know it. Of its principal variations mention 24. will be made below. What was ae

.

i ie | ‘

have each a long sheath encircling the stem, and at the junction of the blade or “flag” with the sheath a small whitish outgrowth or “ligula.” The inflorescence or ear consists of a central stalk bent zigzag, now to the one side, now to the other, thus forming a series of notches (see fig. 1), and bearing a number of flat- tened spikelets, one of which grows out of each notch and has its inner or upper face pressed up against it. At the base of each spikelet are two empty boat-shaped glumes or “chaff-scales,”

H one to the right, the other

to the left, and then a series of flowers, 2 to 8 in number, closely crowded together ;

: D. Flowering glume or lower palea. the uppermost are abortive # pala. F Podicles ai tal j, | by Bentham and or sterile,—indeed, in some the ovary, surmounted by styles’ @ | Hooker and by : j

varieties only one or two of

Fic. 1.—Spikelet and flowers of wheat.

A. Spikelet magnified. 3B. Ginmes, from side. C. Glumes, from back.

and Hf. Seed from front and back re- spectively. J. Rachis, or central stalk

its origin is not known; and opinion has differed as to whether more than one species is involved

or whether all the varieties now |

known may not have been ori- me \\i The | | iN

ginally derived from one. prevalent opinion. among botanists is Wy that the wheat plant Yay is nowhere found in a wild condition. Recently, however, M. Frédéric Houssay is alleged to have discovered the plant wild in the moun- tains to the east of / Kurdistan; but the statement requires confirmation. Some of the species of the genus Jgilops (now referred to Z'riticum

Haeckel) may pos-

Fic. 2.—I. Beardless wheat. II. Polish wheat,

the flowers are fertile. Fach of ear, spikelets removed,

flower consists of an outer or lower glume, called the flower- ing glume, of the same shape as the empty glume and ter- Minating in a long, or it may be ina short, awn or " beard."

sibly have been the with seed. IJ. Spelt wheat, All much reduced. sources of our cultivated forms, as they cross freely with wheats. Haeckel, the latest monographer of the genus, considers that there are three species. (1) Z'riticwm mono-

ae

coccum, which undoubtedly grows wild in Greece and Mesopotamia, is cultivated in Spain and elsewhere, and was also cultivated by the aboriginal Swiss lake-dwellers, as well as at Hissarlik, as is shown by the grain! found in those localities. (2) 7. sativum is the ordinary culti- vated wheat, of which Haeckel recognizes three principal races, spelta,

dicoccum, and tenax. Spelt wheats (see fig. 2) were cultivated by the aboriginal Swiss, by the ancient Egyptians, and throughout the Roman empire. _The variety dicocewm was also cultivated in prehistoric times, and is still grown in southern Europe as a summer wheat and one suitable for starch-making. Other sub-varieties of 7. tenax are compactum, turgidum, and durum (see below). (3) The third species, 7. polonicum, or Polish wheat, is a very distinct-looking form, with long leafy glumes; its origin is not known. As these varieties intercross with each other, the presumption is that they, like the species of d%gilops, which also intercross with wheat, may have all originated from one common stock.

hand, are subjected to an enforced rest for a period of several months, and even when grown in milder climates remain quiescent for a longer period, and start into growth later in spring,—much later than varieties of southern origin. These latter, accustomed to the mild winters of those latitudes, begin to grow early in spring, and are in consequence liable to injury from spring frosts. Wheats of dry countries and of those exposed to severe winds have, says De Vilmorin, narrow leaves, pliant straw, bearded ears, and velvety chaff,—characteristics which enable them to resist wind and drought. Wheats of moist climates, on the other hand, have broader leaves, to admit of more rapid transpiration. No doubt careful microscopic scrutiny of the niinute anatomy of the leaves of plants grown under various conditions would reveal further adaptations of structure to external conditions of climate. At any rate, it is certain that, as a general rule, the hard wheats are almost exclusively cultivated in hot, dry countries, the spelt wheats in mountainous districts and on poor soil, turgid wheats, like the Egyptian, in plains or in ill-drained valleys,—the best races of wheat being found on rich alluvial plains and in fertile valleys. The wheat used in the neighbourhood of Florence for straw-plaiting is a variety with very slender stalks. The seed is sown very thickly at the beginning of winter and pulled, not cut, about the end of May, before the ear is ripe. In the United Kingdom ordinary wheat, such as old red Lammas and Chiddam's white, is used for

Home Basing his conclusions upon philological data, such as straw-plaiting, the straw being cut some time before the berry and the names of wheat in the oldest known languages, the | ripens. The propensity to "tiller" is of the greatest importance, distribu- writings of the most ancient historians, and the observa- | as it multiplies the resources of the farmer, An instance of this tion, : of Loreanoall + Hers. De Candolle infers that the | 8 s!ven ™ the Philosophical Transactions (1768), where it is stated sane OF ORE ee a ae . | that one seedling plant in the Cambridge botanic garden was original home of the wheat plant was in Mesopotamia, | divided into eighteen parts, each of which was replanted and sub-

and that from thence its cultivation extended in very early | sequently again divided, till it produced sixty-seven plants in one

times to the Canaries on the west and to China on the pace, a "ato ee of eae | et ey eos ee

: a ivided and produce ants, which in due time yielde 108

= st. In the western hemisphere wheat Yes es known ears. (2) The variations ie root-development have noe been much

till the 16th century. Humboldt mentions that it was | attended to, although it would be well to study them in order to accidentally introduced into Mexico with rice brought from | ascertain the degree of adaptability to various depths and condi-

Spain by a negro slave belonging to Cortes, and the same | tions of soil. (3) A most important difference is observable in the

writer saw at Quito the earthen vase in which a Flemish | lability to attacks of rust (Puccinea), some varieties being almost

é invariably free from it, while others are in particular localities so

monk had introduced from Ghent the first wheat grown subject to it as to be not worth cultivating. (4) Velvet-chaffed

in South America. wheats do best in poor soil, and bearded wheats are usually hardi- Principal As might be anticipated from the cultivation of the plant from j est. (5) The ears vary, not only in size, but also in form, this varia- time immemorial and from its wide diffusion throughout the eastern | latter characteristic being dependent on the degree of closeness tions. hemisphere, the varieties of wheat—that is, of 7'. sativum—are very | with which the spikelets are set on. In such varieties as Talavera

numerous and of every grade of intensity. Those cases in which the variation is most extreme some botanists would prefer to con- sider as forming distinct species; but others, as De Vilmorin, having regard to the general facts of the case and to the numerous inter- mediate gradations, look upon all the forms as derivatives from one. In illustration of this latter point it may be mentioned that not only do the several varieties run one into the other, but their chemical composition varies likewise according to climate and season. According to Prof. Church," even in the produce of a single

the spikelets are loose, while in the club and square-headed varie- ties they are closely packed. The form of the ear depends on the relative width of the anterior and posterior surfaces as compared with that of the lateral surfaces. In the square-headed varieties the lateral surfaces are nearly as wide as the median ones, owing to the form and arrangement of the spikelets. The number of abortive or sterile spikelets at the top of the ear also varies: in some cases nearly all the spikelets are fertile, while in others several of the uppermost ones are barren.

ear there may be 3 to 4 per cent. more of albuminoid matters in soinme grains than in others; but on the average the proportion of gluten to starch is as 9°11 to 100. From the point of view of agri- culture (see vol. i. p. 854) it is generally of no great moment what

The classification of the different varieties of cultivated wheat Classifi- has occupied the attention of many botanists and agriculturists. cation of The latest and fullest account is that of M. Henry de Vilmorin in culti- his Les Blés Meilleurs (Paris, 1881). The classification adopted by vated

rank be assigned to the various forms. It is only important to take cognizance of them for purposes of cultivation under varying cir- cumstances, Hence we only allude to some of the principal varia- tions and to those characteristics which are found to be unstable. (1) Setting aside differences of constitution, such as hardihood, size, and the like, there is relatively little variation in the form of the organs of vegetation. This indicates that less attention has been paid to the straw than to the grain, for it is certain that, were it desirable, a great range of variation might be induced in the foliage and straw. As itis, some varieties are hardier and taller than others, and the straw more solid, varying in colour and having less liability to be "laid"; but in the matter of "tillering," or the production of side-shoots from the base of the stem, there is much difference. De Vilmorin points out that wheats of cold countries have flexible, thin, hollow straw, elongated fragile ears, and soft floury seeds ; Hunter's wheat may be cited asa good example. Wheats of hotter countries have a more solid, rigid straw, the ears short, stout, com- pact, the glumes provided with long awns or beards, and the sced hard and horny. Spring wheats procured from uorthern latitudes mature more rapidly than those from temperate or hot climates, whilst the reverse is the case with autumn wheats from the same source. The difference is accounted for by the greater amount of light which the plants obtain in northern regions, and, especially, by its comparatively uninterrupted continuance during the growing period, when there are more working hours for the plants in the day than in more southern climes, Autumn wheats, on the other

1 See drawings made to scale by Mr Worthington Smith in the Gardener's Chronicle, 25th December 1886. 2 Food Grains of India, p. 94.

this writer is based, in the first instance, on the nature of the ear: wheats.

when mature its axis or stem remains unbroken, as in the true wheats, or it breaks into a number of joints, as in the spelt wheats. In the first class the ripe grain readily detaches itself from the chatf- scales, while in the spelts it is more or less adhcrent to them, or not readily separable from them, The true wheats are further sub- divided into soft wheats, turgid wheats (7. turgidum), hard wheats (7. durum), and Polish wheats (7.

polonicwm). In the soft wheats the chaff-scales are boat-shaped, ovoid, of the consistence of parch- ment, and shorter than the spikelet; the seed is floury, opaque, white, and easily broken. In the turgid wheats the glumes have long awns, and the seed is turgid and floury, as in the soft wheats. In the hard wheats the outer glumes are keeled, sharply pointed, awned, and the seed is elongated and of hard glassy texture, some- what translucent, and difficult to break owing to its toughness. These seeds are richer in nitrogen than the soft wheats, so that an approximate notion of the richness in albuminoids may be gained by simply inspecting the cut surface of the seed. The Polish wheat, rarely if ever cultivated in the United Kingdom, has very large lanceolate glumes, longer than the spikelet, and elongated glassy seeds. Further subdivisions are made, according to the pre- sence or absence of awns (bearded and beardless wheats), the colour of the ears (white, fawn-coloured, or red), the texture of the ears (glabrous—i.e., smooth—or downy), and the colour of the seed or "berry." In the jointed or spelt wheats the distinctions lie in the presence of awns, the direction of the points of the glumes (straight, bent outwards, or turned inwards), the form of the ear as revealed on a cross section, and the entire or cleft palea. As illustrating the fact of the occasional instability of these variations, Prof. Church mentions that a single grain will be sometimes horny and partly

Adapta- bility to soil and ~ locality.

WHEAT

opaque and soft, in which case its composition will correspond with its aspect. The division into spring wheat and winter wheat is an agricultural one solely. Any variety may be a spring or a winter wheat according to the time at which itis sown. In the summer wheats it may often be observed that the median florets do not fill out so fully as in the autumn wheats. Among the turgid wheats there is a frequent ten- i a dency in the spike to branch or become com- pound,—a_ tendency which is manifested to a less degree in other forms. The Egyptian, or so-called "mummy " wheat is of this charac- ter, the lower part of the spike branching out into several subdivi- sions. This multiplica- tion of the seed – bear- ing branches might at first sight be considered advantageous; but in p practice the

quality of the grain is found to be inferior, as if the force that should have been devoted to the maturation of the grain were, in a measure, di- verted and expended in the production of addi- tional branches to the spike.

With regard to the chemical composition of the ripe grain, the Rothamsted experiments reveal a singular uniformity, even under very varied conditions of manuring, and even where much diversity was apparent in the constitution of the straw.

Apart from the botanical interest of these diversities, as indica- tions of the faculty of variation in plants, and possibly as clues to the genealogy and origin of the cultivated plant, their practical importance is very great. Some varieties are suited to hot, others to cold countries ; some will flourish on one description of soil, others on another. Hence the paramount importance of ascertain- ing by experiment, not only what are the best varieties, but which are the best adapted for particular localities and particular climatic conditions. Porion and Dehérain have shown! the " infinite superi- ority " over the ordinary wheats of a particular square-headed variety grown on rich soil in the north of France. A good selection of seed, according to the nature of the soil, demands, says De Vil- morin, intelligence and accurate knowledge on the part of the farmer. If a good variety be grown in poor soil, the result will be unprofitable, while, if bad wheat be grown on good soil, the result may be nil. In botanical collections there exist, it is stated, her- barium specimens or other evidences of plants grown in Norway as far north as lat. 65° (Schubeler), in Switzerland at an elevation of 1200 feet above the valley of Zermatt (or 6500 feet above the sea), near the straits of Magellan, as well as in Teneriffe, the Cape of Good Hope, Abyssinia, Rodriguez, the Philippine Islands, and the Malay Archipelago. These widely-separated localities show the great area over which the culture is possible, aud illustrate the powers of adaptation of the plant. The requirements of the con- sumer have also to be considered : for some purposes the soft wheats, with their large relative proportion of starch, are the best, for others the hard wheats, with their larger hei of gluten. With the modern processes of milling, the hard wheats are preferred, for they make the best flour ; and in North America the spring wheats are, as a rule, harder than the winter wheats. The soft wheats are those which are most general in European

cultivation, and, as a rule, the beardless varieties, though more tender, are preferred. The bearded varieties are supposed to be hardier; at any rate they defy the ravages of predatory birds more completely than the unarmed varieties, and they are preferable in countries liable to storms of wind, as less likely to have their seeds detached. Hard wheats are specially employed in Italy for the fabrication of maca- roni. Polish wheat is used for similar purposes. Spelt wheats are grown in the colder mountainous districts of Europe ; their flour is very fine, and is used especially for pastry-making ; but, owing to the construction of the grain, it requires special machinery for grinding (see FLour).

The following passage, reproduced from a German source in

sGuRc

El EGEPECerrer rer

® Hi

G)

&, i

2,

log

Fic. 3.—Longitudinal section of a grain of wheat ; highly magnified. A. Epidermal cells. B. Cells containing gluten. OC. Cells of perisperm or albumen, filled with starch. D. Embryo cut through the middle, root-end pointing down- wards.

1 Ann. Agronom., January 1888, p, 33.

Agricultural Science (January 1887), may serve still further to illus- trate the fitness of particular varieties for special purposes.

“TInnumerable experiments have shown that the value of wheat for seed in- ereases with the size of the grain: the larger kernel yields a stronger plant, and this will bear a heavier crop; the smaller grain contains the larger proportion of gluten, yields a better flour, and brings a higher price; but with the smaller yield per acre the profit may be less. The ‘volume-weight’ is dependent more on the well-rounded form of the grain than on its size; when about alike in respect to shape, the market value of the grain is closely proportionate to its weight per bushel. Grain of a higher specific gravity is usually richer in gluten. Richness in this constituent is of the greatest importance, as affecting the market value of the grain ; it gives better baking qualities to the flour, besides a higher nutritive value, and is accompanied with greater richness in phosphate, also an important constituent of animal food. The proportion of gluten in wheat is determined largely by the climate, and especially by the proximity of the sea. Insular England produces a wheat grain with high absolute weight, but as a rule with less gluten than the wheat of eastern Europe. English wheat, and wheat in general grown in an ocean climate, seldom contains over ten per cent. of gluten, while in eastern Europe and in the western United States the proportion rises to twenty per cent. and above. Vigorous English seed wheat sown in eastern Europe yields larger crops than the native seed, _ a ~~ — in gluten than the parent, though not so rich as wheat from native seed.”

It is, however, to be observed that proximity to the sea does not produce soft wheat poor in gluten in Italy, Algeria, and other warm and tropical regions, where the plant is cultivated quite as much under the influence of the sea asin England. The soft wheat of Great Britain is to be explained rather by the mildness of the climate and the relative constancy of the temperature.

Wheat begins to grow at a temperature of 5° C. (41° Fahr.); and, when the aggregate temperature, as represented by the sum of the daily means, has mounted up to 185° Fahr., the germ begins to escape from the husk, if the seed be not deeply buried ; but if it is deeply buried, an amount of heat is required greater in proportion to the depth. Ifthe seed lies at a depth lower than a foot from the surface, it rarely germinates. The seedling plant ceases to grow if the mean temperature of the day remains

below 42° Fahr. When the young plants have been influenced by an aggregate tem- perature amounting to 1896° Fahr. from the period when sown, or 1715° from the period of germination, branching or "tillering" goes on freely, and the young ears are formed. Under the influence of a mean temperature of 55°, or a little above, the flowers are pro- duced. A still higher daily mean is required for the full develop- ment and ripening of the grain. The figures here cited are given by Risler and are calculated for the climate of Paris; but, of course, the same principles apply in the case of other countries. The amount of light and of moisture has also to be taken into account. The fact that the wheat plant requires less water than other cereals, and therefore does not suffer so much from drought, is one of great importance to the cultivator, and furnishes one reason for the greater proportionate culture of wheat in the eastern than in the western counties of England.

As for the soil requirements, see AGRICULTURE, Vol. i. p. 357. The following figures, cited by De Vilmorin from Joulie, will give an idea of the nature and amount of the demands made upon the soil by a wheat crop: in order to yield a crop of 444 bushels of wheat to the acre, the soil must supply to the crop during its growth in round numbers—202 Ib of nitrogen, 81 Ib of phosphoric acid, 55 Ib of lime, 26 tb of magnesia, and 255 tb of potash.

The numerous varieties of wheat now in cultivation have been Produc- In any wheat- tion of field there may be observed on close inspection plants differing in varieties,

obtained either by selection or by cross-breeding.

character from the majority. If seeds of these "sporting" plants be taken and grown in another season, they may (or may not) repro- duce the particular variation. If they do, and the same process of selection be continued, the variation becomes in time '' fixed," though it is always more or less liable to revert to its original con- dition. By continuously and systematically selecting the best grains from the best ears, Major Hallett has succeeded in introducing " pedigree wheats" of fine quality. But even greater results may be expected fron: cross-breeding, or the fertilization of the flowers of one description of wheat by the pollen of

another. This has been attempted by Shireff, Le Couteur, Maund, and others in the past, and more recently by H. de Vilmorin and Messrs Carter. Under natural circumstances wheat is self-fertilized: that is to say, the pollen of any given flower impregnates the stigma and ovule of the same flower, the glumes and coverings of the flower being tightly pressed round the stamens and stigmas in such a way as to prevent the access of insects and to ensure the deposit of the pollen upon the stigmas of the same flower. This process of self-fertilization is the usual method, and no doubt keeps the variety true or un- mixed ; but the occasional presence of varieties in a wheat-field shows that cross-fertilization is sometimes secured. The stamens of the wheat plant may frequently be seen protruding beyond the glumes, and their position might lead to the inference that cross-fertiliza- tion was the rule; but on closer examination it will be found that the anthers are empty or nearly so, and that they are not protruded till after they have deposited the pollen upon the stigma. The separation of the glumes, which occurs at the time of fertilization,

2 See Ritthausen, Die Eiweisskirper d. Getreidearten, Hiilsenfriichte, und Oel- samen, Bonn, 1872.

and which permits the egress of the useless stamens after that oper- ation, is stated to occur only under certain conditions of tempera- ture, when the heat, in fact, is sufficient to cause the lodicles of the flower to become turgid and thus to press apart the glumes. A temperature of about 75° Fahr. is found by Messrs Carter to be the most favourable. From what has been said it will be evident that the artificial fertilization of wheat is a very delicate operation. The glumes have to be separated and the anthers cut away before the pollen is fully formed, care being taken at the same time not to injure the stigma, and specially not to introduce, on the scissors or otherwise, any pollen except that of the variety desired. De Vilmorin's experiments have shown that all the varieties will inter- cross, and that even such a distinct form as the Polish is no excep- tion. From this he concludes that all the forms have originated from one stock and are to be comprised within one species. In the progeny of these crossed wheats, especially in the second genera- tion, much variation and

difference of character is observable,—a phenomenon commonly noticed in the descendants from crosses and hybrids and styled by Naudin "irregular variation." Sometimes characteristics appear in the crossed wheats which are not found in the parent varieties, although they occur in other wheats. Thus,

WenEAT

brings an abundant crop necessarily yield a proportionate return calculated in weight per bushel. The greatest weight per bushel (634 Ib in 1876) was secured on the same plot which in the same year yielded less than an average crop, 424 bushels per acre, very little difference being observable in the different varieties in point of quality, though much in quantity. The lowest average weight per bushel (56% 1b), however, corresponded with a very low total produce, 23% bushels per acre in 1880, on a poorly manured plot. These figures, added to those representing the cost for rent and taxes, manure, labour, and expenses of production generally, and considered in connexion with the enormous supplies imported from abroad, will show how great are the risks attendant upon wheat cultivation in the United Kingdom under existing circumstances ; but of course they are of little value as regards the growth of wheat in India-and the colonies.

The production of wheat, with the use of wheat bread, has in- creased enormously since the extension of railways has made possible the transportation of grain for great distances by land. The annual crop of the world is now estimated at nearly two thousand millions of bushels. Of late years the increase of production has been most notable in southern Russia, Australia, India, and North America.

Wheat is sometimes grown as a forage crop. A variety has been Wheat introduced from Japan by Messrs Sutton which seems to be very for useful for this purpose. Although it takesa longer time to mature fodder,

De Vilmorin records the presence of turgid wheats among seedlings raised from a soft wheat fertilized with the pollen of a hard variety, and spelt wheats among the descendants of a soft crossed with a

Yield of _ To show how considerable may be the variations in the produce colour, and covered over by velvety hairs ; different yielded by different varieties, the following figures, taken from the | it is easily re- cognized by the pecu- 5 Le, varieties, “ memoranda shcet ” of the Rothamsted experiments, may be cited. | liar character of its anterior legs, ¢

turgid wheat. Other of De Vilmorin’s experiments were made with the practical object of obtaining improved varieties or forms speci- ally suitable to particular localities. Among those he has raised is one named “ Dattel,” which is highly esteemed ; it was got from the red Chiddam, a valuable variety, but one in which the straw is defective. By crossing the red Chiddam with the pollen of Prince Albert a new variety has been produced which is stated to be early, very productive, and of good quality, as far as both grain and straw are concerned. Among many varieties raised by Messrs Carter some are very interesting: in one case the sced-parent was a short-strawed, downy-chaffed, awnless variety, the pollen-parent a large bearded American wheat. The offspring exceeded the seed-parent in stature by a foot, and had a smooth chaff and stout thickset ears with minute awns. Some of the crosses were made with the view to secure denser production of awns and thus to render the ears “bird-proof”; others were devised with a view of securing an early ripening variety, which was effected by crossing with the Talavera, a known early variety. The progeny was ready for cutting (in the neighbourhood of London) on 21st July 1886.

For twelve successive years (1871-1882) Sir John Lawes cultivated 26 varieties of wheat, each variety each year in a different field and under different conditions of manuring. From various circum- stances satisfactory averages were obtained during only eight years (1871-1878). The mean produce of all the varieties taken together during that period was 43} bushels (dressed corn) per acre; the lowest average produce was 363 bushels per acre, furnished by Hallett’s original red ; and the highest produce was 538 bushels per acre, yielded by Rivett’s red. As to manuring, the highest mean produce (513 bushels per acre) from 25 varieties taken together was obtained in 1878 on a field where all the 25 varieties were manured with 2 cwts. of nitrate of soda, the previous crop having been turnips, for which farmyard dung was applied, the turnips being partly

consumed on the land, partly removed. Here again Rivett's red furnished the best crop (664 bushels per acre). This variety in almost—but not in all —cases gave the highest produce. The lowest mean produce from all the varicties taken together was 21} bushels per acre in 1879,—a most disastrous season. In that year even Rivett's red furnished no more than 16 bushels per acre, among the lowest on the record, but nearly twice as much as red Rostock, which in the same year yielded only 84 bushels per acre, the manuring consisting of 2 ewts. of nitrate of soda after clover, partly cut, partly "'fed." This same variety in another ycar and under a different condition of manuring yielded 57 bushels per acre. The disastrous effect of the scason of 1879 was manifested not only in diminished produce but in lessened germinative power ; in the season following white wheats appear to have been the worst, the most satisfactory crop in 1880 being yielded by Webb's " challenge," seeds of which were received direct from Stourbridge and not grown on the Rotham- sted farm, as in the case of the other varieties. As to the weight per bushel of the grains of the different varieties at Rothamsted

there was a more limited range than in the case of the absolute weight, the highest mean (63 tb per bushel) being yielded by the "red nursery " variety, the lowest by Rivett's red (58#), the general

its seed, it flowers a fortnight earlier than other varieties. It seems also to be a hardy plant, having withstood successfully eight degrees of frost. From a crop sown on 27th August a sample was cut on the following 13th October, with a stem more than 2 feet in length and very thick and succulent, and the autumn was not very genial. This variety tillers well, so that it makes a complete mass of green stuff, which is very serviceable either for feeding sheep or for "soiling." (M. T. M.)

INsEcTs, &C., INJURIOUS TO WHEAT.

It will be convenient to arrange the insects injurious to wheat under the natural orders to which they belong, and afterwards to describe one or two other forms of animal life, such as the myriapod, Polydesmus, and the nematode worm which causes the ear-cockle, for, although these are not insects, they must be taken into account in any description of the animal pests of the wheat crop.

The order Orthoptera contains the mole cricket, Gryllotalpa vulgaris, one of the largest insects found in Great Britain. It is 2 inches or a little more in length, of a brownish

which are very strong and short ~ and laterally com- =

pressed. These in- sects lead a sub- terranean life, bur- rowing through loose sandy soil by means of their § fore limbs, which are structurally \ well adapted for digging. The W sexes pair about the middle of j June, and the female lays from (% 200 to 400 eggs in an oval cham- ‘*

ber excavated . Z|

some inches below the level of the ground. After lay- ing her eggs, she Ne does not, as is very Fia. 1.—Mole cricket. 1, Eggs; 2, larva ; 3, larva after generally the case first moult; 4, adult. Natural size.

amongst insects, die, but lives to keep guard over the eggs and the young larve, which appear in about three weeks; many of the latter, however, she cats. The young larve at first resemble black ants; they are very voracious and feed upon the young tender rootlets of corn and other plants. The adults prefer an animal diet, but do great damage by cutting through any roots which they encounter in their subterranean burrowings, and as these are winding and extensive considerable injury is caused to the crops. One of the natural enemies of mole crickets is the mole, which devours them readily ; they are also eaten by those birds which scratch the soil for worms. They appear to be very sensitive to smell, and a dressing of a quart of paraffin oil to 1 cwt. of ashes or mould, or watering with solutions of quassia and soft soap, will

ant Le : often rid the field of them. phat harley a a amounting to 613 Ib per bushel. The The corn thri n: Thrips cerealium, is a member of the order eilect of the bad season of 1879 was also shown here: the general Thysanoptera, which is by some authorities associated with the average in that year was only 534 tb per bushel, while in 1876 it :

was 634 for the same varieties. The greatest weight per bushel does not therefore correspond in all cases with the absolute amount of crop per

acre, for a small crop often yields grain of relatively heavy weight. Nor does the same condition of manuring that

1 For a discussion of the methods of production followed in the United States, as well as in Canada, and for the chemical composition, trade, milling, and statistics of wheat, see Brewer, " Production of Cereals," in Report to tenth census of United States, vol. iii.

Orthoptcra. Itis a minute insect about 2 mm. long, with a black and brown coloration. The male is wingless; the female bears four long narrow wings fringed with long hairs. The antenne are eight- jointed. The legs terminate in characteristic swellings; there are no claws. The insects are very active. The larve are whitish yellow, with bright red eyes, and acquire their wings after the fourth casting of the skin. The damage done to corn crops by these minute insects is often very serious; they secrete themselves under the palez surrounding the seed, and feed upon the soft juices of the latter. In addition to this, they sometimes cause injury to the plant by attacking the stalk whilst it is soft and full of sap. Owing to their very small size it is ex- ceedingly difficult to devise means for getting rid of them; much may be done, however, to pre- vent their appearance by keeping the land clean and free from weeds, which harbour them, and = by destroying all refuse in which they may \ breed, and ploughing in the stubble to a con- Fy, 2.— Corn thrips siderable depth. (Thrips cerealium),

The most injurious form amongst the Hemi- female; magnified. pera is Siphonophora granaria (Aphis granaria, Kirby); it attacks wheat chiefly in England, but is also found upon oats, barley, and rye. The young Aphides attack the leaf blades whilst young and tender, and when the ear begins to appear it is covered with numbers of these insects in every stage of development, from the young larva

Fig. 3.—1, Siphonophora granaria, winged Aphis; 2, natural size of same; 8, wingless form; 4, natural size of same; 5, Aphidius avene ; 6, natural size of same ; 7, Ephedrus plagiator ; 8, natural size of same.

to the perfect insect. The larve are of a green or dark green colour, with brown antenne and yellow and black legs. The female, which produces the young viviparously, has a green abdomen, bearing two horns posteriorly ; the rest of the body is brownish green, the legs black and yellow, the eyes red. The winged females, which appear late in the season, lay eggs ; but whether these eggs serve to carry the species over the winter or whether this is done by hibernat- ing larve is not definitely known. Both larvee and females produc- ing them have been found amongst the roots of the wheat plant during the winter. This Aphis is known to occur upon several of the common grasses of England ; hence any grasses growing in a wheat field should be destroyed as much as possible when the pest is in the neighbourhood. Deep ploughing and rotation of crops may also be recommended. In cases where the insects are noticed at an early stage, a dressing of soot or gas lime will serve to check them. Their numbers are kept down by lady-birds (Coccinella), which should never be killed, and also by two species of ichneu- mons (Aphidius avene and Ephedrus plagiator), which lay their eggs in the body of the Aphides.

The order Diptera includes several insects which are very harm- ful to corn crops. The frit fly, Oscinis vastator, is a very active small fly, with a greenish black metallic lustre, about 2 to 3 mm. in length. The larve are yellow or light brown, pointed anteriorly. The flies emerge from the chrysalis about April, and the female depdsits her little red eggs upon the under surface of the leaf of the wheat ; the larva when it is hatched creeps down and bores its way into the terminal bud of the plant, thus arresting all growth of the ear. The larva assumes the chrysalis state inside one of the outermost leaf sheaths. There are believed to be two broods each year. If, as seems probable, the pup pass the winter amongst the stubble or grass weeds, it is important that these should either be burnt or ploughed deeply in.

Two closely allied species of flies also attack corn crops ; they are Chlorops teniopus and Chlorops lineata. The former is of a light straw colour, with three longitudinal dark stripes, and a greenish black abdomen ; the antenne are black, the eyes greenish ; and the dark feet have a stripe of lighter colour. It is about 3 to 4mm. long. The injury to the crops is caused by the fly laying its eggs between the leaves of the

young plant; the larve which hatch out from these bore their way down the stem from the base of the ear to the first joint, and there they form swellings known to the farmer as the "gout." The ear is aborted or misformed. The dampest part of the field is most subject to attack. Ch. lineata is about 2 mm. long; the antenne have their two proximal joints yellow, whilst the third is black on its outer side ; in its habits this insect resembles Ch. teniopus, but attacks chiefly barley crops.

The daddy long-legs, Tipula oleracea, causes great damage to corn and other crops by the larve gnawing the young plants whilst they are still below the level of the ground. 'The female deposits her eggs in the ground, or near it in some grass, &c., choosing as damp a place as possible. The larva is provided with a very tough skin and may measure 14 inches in length. It is apodal, and bores its way beneath the surface of the earth by alternately contracting and expanding. It assumes the pupal condition during the later half of the summer. The pup are provided with backwardly directed spines, by means of which they raise themselves above the level of the ground. As a means of preserva- tion against this pest, ditches and other damp places should be cleaned out. Rooks, which de- vour the larve at a great rate, should be encour- aged ; and deep plough- ing to bury the eggs and the larvee should be prac- tised, and theland dressed with some such poisonous substance as gas lime be- fore breaking up.

Two species of Cecido- myia are most destruc- tive to wheat. Cecido- myta tritici, the wheat midge, has been known in Great Britain for over ~erssgegedeiaebesene a century. This fly is rie, 4.—Daddy long-legs (Tipula oleracea). 1, a little over 2 mm. in Larva; 2, pupa case; 3, insect, natural size; length, of an orange yel- 4, eggs. low colour, with black eyes; the female is provided with a long ovipositor, by means of which it deposits ten or more eggs in the ears of wheat. The larve hatch out in about ten days. They are at first transparent, but become yellow, and their colour gradually deepens. Most of the larve fall off the plant and bury themselves in the ground, where they change into pupx; some, however, re- main in the ear and are found in some numbers in chaff. The perfect insect emerges from the pupa in the spring. It is probable that more than one brood is produced during the season. The damage caused to the crop

is due to the larva feeding upon the soft tissue of the ear and thus causing the seed to be imperfect ; some authorities state that it also devours the pollen. Since the larve exist in chaff, great care must be taken that this does not prove a source of infection, and land which has been badly affected must be ploughed deep, in order to bury them. C. destructor is well known under the name of the Hessian F fly. It was first noticed in Great Britain during the summer of | 1886, in Hertfordshire, and within a few months its presence was reported throughout the eastern half of England and Scotland,— a circumstance which led some authorities to believe that it had existed in Great Britain for some , little time ; there has been, how- ever, no definite proof of this. The fly has been known in North America since 1776, where it has | done very extensive damage, espe- Fig, 5.—Hessian fly (Cecidomyia de- cially during warm moist sum- structor). 1, Insect; 2, larva; 3, pupa mers. It is known to occur OF "'flaxseed."

536

and 14 to 16 smaller joints, which diminish in length towards the ends. The male fly is smaller than the female; the abdomen terminates in two claspers. The female lays in the spring 40 or more eggs upon the leaves of the corn plants,—wheat, barley, and rye; oats are not affected. The larve are hatched in about 5 or 6 days, and make their way down to the axils of the leaves, feeding upon the sap whieh is passing up the stem. After a few weeks they are transformed into the "flax seed" pups, which are usually found just above the second joint of the stem. From these pup the autumn brood of flies emerge ; these lay eggs, and their larvae tide over the winter in the pupal condition. Sometimes only one brood is produced in the year. The injury done to the plant by the larve living upon the sap usually eauses the infeeted plants to bend over just above the second joint; this renders them easily distinguishable from the healthy plants. The numbers of this most injurious insect are fortunately kept down to a considerable extent by parasites. Five species of Chaleididw are known to be parasitie on C. destructor in America and six in Russia. Fortu- nately these are not absent in Great Britain. When a crop has been infected by this pest, the corn should be reaped above the second joint, and the stubble carefully ploughed in. A sharp look-out should be kept for the appearance of the "

flax seed" both in the plant and in samples of eorn, especially if the latter has been badly eleaned. Some species of wheat seem to have a greater power of resisting the attacks of this inseet than others, but as yet very little definite information ean be given on this point. These two pests do damage to the amount of millions of pounds every year in North America; but none of those mentioned before them are either common or destructive on that continent.

Cephus pygmeus belongs to that destructive group of the Hymeno- ptera, the saw-flies, and is commonly known as the corn saw-fly. The insect is black in eolour, with a large head and prominent eyes. The mouth parts are yellow, and in the male the legs are the same colour. The female is darker and has its black ovipositor slightly exposed. Whilst the wheat is still young and tender, the female pierees the stalk below the forming ear and there deposits an egg, The larva, which hatches out in about ten days, is when full-grown about half an inch long, whitish in colour, with a brown head. It differs from the ordinary saw-fly larva in having but three pairs of legs. This larva bores its way down the stem, cutting through the knots, and about harvest time it cuts the stem nearly through at its base. The larva assumes the pupal stage in the lowest part of the stem and remains in this condition till the following spring, when the perfect insect emerges: Plants which have been affected by this insect can easily be recognized by their thin empty ears. Since the insect passes the winter in the stubble, every effort should be made to destroy this wherever the disease has been prevalent.

The caterpillars of some species of Lepidoptera do considerable damage to corn crops. On the Continent the larve of Agrotis clavis (segetwm) devour the roots of wheat and are especially destruc- tive to autumn-sown crops. Tinea granella, a member of the family Tineide, causcs much harm to grain in store. This small moth, ofa dusky white colour, lays one or two minute eggs upon each grain; as soon as they are hatched, the caterpillars bore their way into the grain, and by means ofa web bind several grains together. Through these it bores minute passages and lives in them, devouring the substance of the grain. The larve ultimately withdraw to the angles and eorners of the granary; hence, wherever this pest is prevalent, care must be taken to keep the building free from dust,

cobwebs, &c. There isa member of the Coleoptera which is frequently mistaken for the above-mentioned pest. This beetle is known as Lrogosita mauritanica ; it is supposed to have been introduced from Africa. The larva is ¢ inch long, with a whitish body, bearing tufts of hairs and a brown head. It gnaws the corn grains and lives on their contents. The beetle is carnivorous, and is said to compensate for the damage its larva causes by devouring the above- mentioned Jinea granella.

Another beetle, Calandra granaria, the corn weevil, also attacks stored grain. The eggs are deposited in the grains of corn and the larva spends its life therein, living upon the substance of the grain, and ultimately turning toa pupa. It leaves the grain first upon attaining the mature state.

The larve of Elater (Agriotes) lineatus and of other species of this genus are amongst the most destructive insects known to agriculturists. They are commonly known as wire-worms from the exceedingly tough character of their skins. The mature beetles are known as skip-jacks, from the power they possess of regaining their normal position when placed on their back by means of a loose articulation between the pro-thorax and the meso-thorax. This when put in action causes the beetle to jump into the air, and they usually fall on their feet. The wire-worms have a rather flattened body, yellowish brown in colour ; it consists of twelve segments, and bears three pairs of legs. The larve live for several years, and then, burying themselves deep in the earth, emerge as the perfect insect in about a fortnight. The beetles pair in J une, and the female deposits her eggs upon blades of grass or the sheath-

ing leaves of corn. The best preventative for this pest is clean farming and scarifying the land after harvest, so as to kill all roots which might serve as food for the wire-worms. When a crop is badly attacked, soot or gas lime may be applied and the land well rolled to compress the earth. The numbers of the larve are to some extent kept down by moles aud insectivorous birds.

The cockchafer, Mclolontha vul- garis, is injurious to corn erops, in both its mature and its larval eon- dition. During the former state it devours

the leaves of wheat and of most other grasses, trees, and shrubs. The larva, which is very voracious, lives upon roots. This larva is very thick and fleshy, of a whitish hue, with three pairs of legs ; it usually lies in a eurled-up position. The +—-}-————“4 . larval condition lasts several years ; Fic. 6.—Wire-worm(Elater lineatus), but ultimately the larvae become showing insect and larva. pup, and in this condition live through the winter. Much may be done to prevent the spread of this pest by shaking the cock- chafers from the trees, amongst the leaves of which they hang, and destroying them. They are eagerly eaten by pigs and poultry.

An allied but much smaller species of beetle, Anisoplia horticola, with much the same habits as the above, also occurs in England, and attacks wheat and grass crops.

Millepedes, although they are not insects, but one of the groups which compose the larger division Zracheata, must be included in an account of the pests which attack wheat. The English species which is most destructive to wheat, barley, and oats is Polydesmus complanatius. Millepedes pass their life underground, and are sometimes mistaken for wire-worms, bnt can be at once distinguished by the great number of their legs. They affect damp places, which should be drained, and no rubbish or litter should be left lying about.

Ear-cockle is due to the parasitism of a small white nematoid worm, known variously as Anguillula (Vibrio) tritict or Tylenchus scandens or tritict. These worms eause the formation of a brownish black gall upon the wheat ear. When the ear ripens and falls to the ground, the nematodes escape from the gall and live in the damp earth. Ultimately they make their way on to a young plant, and, as the ear forms, they pass into it and pair inside the gall which has been caused by their presence. The female lays numerous eggs, from which young nematodes hatch out, until the gall is quite full of them. As long as the gall remains hard, the larve are motion- less ; but they become active in moisture, and develop into the adult state. If the surrounding conditions are unfavourable they will remain in the larval state for years. They are capable of resisting great

extremes of heat and cold, and are apparently un- affected by many poisons. Allied species affect the roots of wheat, grasses, and other plants.

For fungoid diseases, see Funaus, vol. ix. p. 831, and MiLpEw, vol. xvi. p. 293. (A. E. 8.)

WHEATEAR, as a bird's name perhaps of doubtful meaning,' though Taylor, the "water poet" (d. 1654), in whose writings it seems first to occur, and Willughby ex- plain it (in the words of Ray, the latter's translator) as given "because [in] the time of wheat harvest they wax very fat." It would seem also from this author to have been originally the local name for the species in Sussex, on the South Downs of which county its capture in a very simple kind of trap has been the occupation of many generations of shepherds, who thereby have made an excellent trade, since Wheatears in their proper season, from the end of July till towards the end of September, are justly esteemed for the table and fetch a price that for many years has been con- tinually rising owing to the failing supply, which is chiefly due to the bringing under tillage of so much of the sheep- walk, heath, down, and other open country that was formerly in a natural condition.

The Wheatear, the Saxicola enanthe of ornithologists, is one of the earliest migrants of its kind to return to its home, often reaching Sern eS ea i ae EE eg ne

' H

1 The vulgar supposition of its being an euphemism of an Anglo- Saxon name (cf. Bennett's ed. of White's Nat. Hist. Selborne, p. 69, note) must be rejected until evidence that sueh a name ever existed be addueed. It is true that " Whittaile" (ef, Dutch Wetstaart and French Culblane) is given by Cotgrave in 1611 ; but the older names, aecording to Turner, in 1544, of " Clotburd " (=Clod-bird) and Smateh (=Chat) do not favour the usual derivation. ' Fallow-chat" is another old name still loeally in use, as is " Coney-ehuck."*

England at the end of February and almost always by the middle of March. The cock bird, with his bluish grey back and light buff breast, set off by black ear-coverts, wings, and part of the tail, is rendered still more conspicuous by his white rump as he takes short flights in front of those who disturb him, while his sprightly actions and gay song harmonize so well with his delicately-tinted plumage as to render him a welcome object to all who delight in free and open country. When alarmed both sexes have a sharp monosyllabic note that sounds like chat; and this has not only entered into some of the local names of this species and of its allies, but has caused all to be frequently spoken of as " Chats." The nest is constantly placed under ground ; the bird takes advantage of the hole of some other animal, or the shelter of a clod in a fallow- field, or a recess beneath a rock. A large amount of soft materials is therein collected, and on them from 5 to 8 pale blue eggs are laid. The Wheatear has a very wide range throughout the Old World, extending in summer far within the Arctic Circle, from Norway to the Lena and Yana valleys, while it winters in Africa beyond the Equator, and in India. But it also breeds regularly in Greenland and some parts of North America. Its reaching the former and the eastern coast of the latter, as well as the Bermudas, may possibly be explained by the drifting of individuals from Iceland ; but far more interesting is the fact of its continued seasonal appearance in Alaska without ever showing itself in British Columbia or California, and without ever having been observed in Kamchatka, Japan, or China, though it is a summer resident in the Tchuktchi peninsula. Hence it would seem as though its annual flights across Bering's Strait must be in connexion with a migratory movement that passes to the north and west of the Stanovoi range of mountains, for Mr Nelson's suggestion (Cruise of the Corwen, pp. 59, 60) of a north- eet passage from Boothia Felix, where Ross observed it, is less ikely.1

More than 60 other species more or less allied to the Wheatear have been described,? but probably so many do not really exist. Some 8 are included in the European fauna ; but the majority are inhabitants of Africa. Several of them are birds of the desert ; and here it may be remarked that, while most of these exhibit the sand- coloured tints so commonly found in animals of like habitat, a few assume a black plumage, which, as explained by Canon Tristram, is equally protective, since it assimilates

them to the deep shadows cast by projecting stones and other inequalities of the surface.

Of other genera closely allied to, and by some writers included in, Saxicola there is only need here to mention Pratineola, which comprises among others two well-known British birds, the Stone- chat and Whinchat, P. rubicola and P. rubetra, the latter a summer- migrant, while the former is resident as a species, and the black head, ruddy breast, and white collar and wing-spot of the cock render him a conspicuous object on almost every furze-grown com- mon or heath in the British Islands, as he sits on a projecting twig or flits from bush to bush. This bird has a wide range in Europe, and several other species, more or less resembling it, inhabit South Africa, Madagascar, Reunion, and Asia, from some of the islands of the Indian Archipelago to Japan. The Whinchat, on the other hand, much more affects enclosed lands, and with a wide range has no very near ally.

Placed near these forms by nearly all systematists is the group containing the Australian genus Pctreca, containing about a dozen species,—the " Robins," so called of the colonists, some of them remarkable for their bright plumage ; and possibly allied to them, as indeed is generally thought, with 5 or 6 species peculiar to New Zealand, are the genera Miro and Myiomoira. But Prof. Parker has seen in the osteology of the first inferior characters which appear to him to separate them from their presumed colleagues, and, as stated before (ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 48), he terms them '""Struthious Warblers." Like so many other forms from the same countries, they probably preserve the more generalized structure of earlier and lower types, and should possibly be distinguished as a separate sub-family Petrecing.

All the birds mentioned in this article form the group Saxicoline of most authors. Some, however, have raised them to the rank of a distinct Family Saicolide (ef. – Warster) ; and Mr Sharpe (Cat. Birds Brit. Mus., iv. pp. 164-199) has placed Petreca and Pratincola in the Family Muscicapide. (A. N.

WHEATLEY, Francis (1747-1801), English portrait and landscape painter, was born in 1747 at Wild Court, Covent Garden, London. He

studied at Shipley's drawing-

school and the Royal Academy, and won several prizes

1 On this subject see also Dr Stejneger's observations in his "Ornitho-logical Exploration of Kamtschatka," in Bull. U.S. Nat. Museum, No, 29, pp. 349-351, and those of Prof. Palmén, Vega-Exped. Vetenskapl. lakttagelser, v. pp. 260-262.

2 Cf the monograph of Messrs Blanford and Dresser, in Proc. Zool. Society, 1874, pp. 213-241.

o

537

from the Society of Arts. He assisted in the decoration of Vauxhall, and aided Mortimer in painting a ceiling for Lord Melbourne at Brocket Hall (Hertfordshire). In youth his life was irregular and dissipated. He eloped to Ireland with the wife of Gresse, a brother artist, and established himself in Dublin as a portrait-painter, executing, among other works, an interior of the Irish House of Commons, His scene from the London Riots of 1780 was admirably engraved by Heath. He painted several subjects for Boydell's Shakespeare Gallery, designed illustrations to Bell's edition of the poets, and practised to some small extent as an etcher and mezzotint-engraver. It is, however, as a painter, in both oil and water-colour, of landscapes and rustic subjects that Wheatley will be most favourably remembered. His work in these departments is graceful and pleasing, but lacks force and the impress of reality. He was elected an associate of the Royal Academy in 1790, and an academician in the following year. He died on 28th June 1801. His wife, afterwards Mrs Pope, was known as a painter of flowers and portraits.

WHEATON, Henry (1785-1848), American lawyer and diplomatist, was born at Providence, Rhode Island, on 27th November 1785. He graduated at Brown univer- sity in 1802, was admitted to the bar in 1805, and, after two years' study abroad, practised law at Providence (1807-12) and at New York City (1812-25). He was a justice of the Marine Court of the city

of New York from 1815 to 1819, and reporter of the United States Supreme Court from 1816 to 1827, aiding in 1825 in the revision of the laws of New York. His diplomatic career began in 1825, with an appointment to Denmark as chargé d'affaires, followed by that of minister to Prussia, 1835 to 1845. During this period he had published a Digest of the Law of Maritime Captures (1815) ; twelve volumes of Supreme Court Reports, and a Digest ; a great number of historical articles, and some collected works; Elements of International Law (1836); Histoire du Progrés du Droit des Gens en Europe (1841), translated in 1845 by William B. Lawrence as a History of the Law of Nations in Europe and America; and the Right of Visitation and Search (1842). The History took at once the rank which it has always held, that of the leading work on the subject of which it treats.2 Wheaton's general theory is that inter- national law consists of "those rules of conduct which reason deduces, as consonant to justice, from the nature of the society existing among independent nations, with such definitions and modifications as may be established by general consent." The publication of a second transla- tion by Dana in 1866 led to a prolonged lawsuit between him and Lawrence. In 1846 Wheaton, who was niore than sixty years of age, was requested to resign by the new president, Polk, who needed his place for another appointment. The request provoked general condemna- tion; but Wheaton resigned and returned to the United States. He was called at once to Harvard College as lecturer on international law; but he died at Dorchester, Massachusetts, on 11th March 1848.

WHEATSTONE, Str Cartes (1802-1875), the prac- tical founder of modern telegraphy, was born at Gloucester in February 1802, his father being a music-seller in that city. In 1806 the family removed to London. Wheat- stone's education was carried on in several private schools, at which he appears to have displayed no remarkable attainments, being mainly characterized by a morbid shy- ness and sensitiveness that prevented him from making friends. About 1816 he was sent to his uncle, a musical instrument maker in the Strand, to learn the trade ; but with his father's countenance he spent more time in read-

3 See Davis's Outlines of International Law, 26, and Woolsey's International Law (Index, under Wheaton).

ing books of all kinds than at work. For sorfle years he continued making experiments in acoustics, following out his own ideas and devising many beautiful and ingenious arrangements. Of these the "acoucryptophone" was one of the most elegant—a light box, shaped like an ancient lyre and suspended by a metallic wire from a piano in the room above. When the instrument was played, the vibra- tions were transmitted silently, and became audible in the lyre, which thus appeared to play of itself. On the death of his uncle in 1823 Wheatstone and his brother took up the business; but Charles never seems to have taken a very active part in it, and he virtually retired after six years, devoting himself to experimental research, at first chiefly with regard to sound. In 1823 he published his first paper, " New Experiments on Sound," in Thomson's Annals of Philosophy, and was greatly encouraged by the appreciative translations which appeared in several Con- tinental journals. Wheatstone's shyness still clung to him; for, although he occasionally read a paper to scientific societies when a young man, he never could become a lecturer. Hence many of his investigations were first described by Faraday in his Friday evening discourses at the Royal Institution. By 1834 Wheatstone's originality and resource in experiment were fully recognized, and he was appointed professor of experimental philosophy at King's College, London, in that year. This appointment was inaugurated by two events,—a course of eight lectures on sound, which proved no success and was not repeated, and the determination by means of a revolving mirror of the speed of electric discharge in conductors, a piece of work leading to enormously important results. The great velocity of electrical transmission suggested the possibility of utilizing it for sending messages; and, after many ex- periments and the practical advice and business-like co- operation of Cooke, a patent for an electric telegraph was taken out in their joint names in 1837. Wheatstone's early training in making musical instruments now bore rich fruit in the continuous designing of new instruments and pieces of mechanism. His life was uneventful except im so far as the variety of his work lent it colour. He became a fellow of the Royal Society in 1837; in 1847 he married ; and in 1868, after the

completion of his master- piece, the automatic telegraph, he was knighted. While in Paris perfecting a receiving instrument for submarine cables, Sir Charles Wheatstone caught cold, and died on 19th October 1875.

; Wheatstone was enthusiastic in his work ; and, in spite of the invincible repugnance to public speaking, he could explain his machines and describe results to his friends with animation and remarkable clearness. Owing to the cast of his mind he could only undertake work with some distinct end or definite application in view ; hence he applied himself chiefly to the useful embodi- nent of scientific principles, and to researches designed to throw light on such subjects as the interference of mental impressions with the evidence of the senses. As a natural consequence of the nervous enthusiasm which possessed him, several researches which had been commenced, and sometimes carried to a considerable dis- tance, were relinquished as new sources of interest presented them- selves, and remained unfinished at his death. Many of his ideas were expanded and appropriated by other workers, more persever- ing, if less original, who carried them into effect. Wheatstone's physical investigations are described in more than thirty-six papers in various scientific journals, the more important being in the Philosophical Transactions, the Proceedings of the Royal Society, the Comptes Rendus, and the British Association Reports. They natur- ally divide themselves into researches on sound, light, and elec- tricity, but extend into other branches of physics as well. But his best work by far was in the invention of complicated and delicate mechanism for various purposes, in the construction of which he employed a staff of workmen traincd to the highest de- gree of excellence. For his insight into mechanism and his power over it he was unequalled, except perhaps by Babbage. A crypto- graphic machine, which changed the cipher automatically and printed a message, entirely unintelligible until translated by a duplicate instrument, was one of the most perfect examples of

this. Cryptography had a great fascination for Wheatstonc ; he studied it deeply at one time, and deciphered many of the MSS. in the British Museum which had defied all other interpreters. In acoustics his

*principal work was a research on the transmission of sound through solids (see TELEPHONE), the explanation of Chladui's figures of vibrating solids, various investigations of the principles of acoustics and the mechanism of hearing, and the invention of new musical instruments, ¢.g., the concertina. The kaleidophone, intended to present visibly the movements of a sonorous body, consisted of a vibrating wire, which could be varied in length, carrying a silvered bead reflecting a point of light. The motion of the bead was thus shown by persistence of the successive images on the retina, and mazy lines of light traced ont its successive posi- tions. A photometer was constructed on the same principle. In light there are a series of papers on the eye, on the physiology of vision, on binocular vision, including the invention of one of the most popular of scientific toys, the STEREOSCOPE (g.v.), and on colour. The polar clock, devised for use in place of a sun-dial, applies the fact that the plane of polarization of sky light is always 90° from the position of the sun; hence by measuring the azi- muthal angle of the plane, even when the sun is below the horizon, correct apparent solar time may be obtained. In 1835, in a paper on '*The Prismatic Decomposition of Electrical Light," he proved that sparks from different metals give distinctive spectra, which could be used as a means of detecting them. This is the funda- mental expcriment of chemical analysis by spark spectra. But it is by his electrical work that Wheatstone will best be remembered. Much of this, such as the famous "bridge" for measuring resist- ances that bears his name, will be found described under ELxc- TRICITY (vol. viii. p. 44). He not only guided the growth of scientific telegraphy on land wires, but made the carliest experi- ments with submarine cables, foreseeing the practicability of this means of communication as early as 1840. For short descriptions of the 'A, B, C" telegraph instrument—so popular before the introduction of the telephone—and of the automatic transmitter, by which messages may be sent at the rate of 500 words a minute, sce TELEGRAPH. He also devised printing telegraph receivers of various forms, electrical chronoscopes, and many fornis of electrical recording apparatus,—amongst others two sets of registering me- teorological instruments, of which the earlier, described in 1842, was afterwards developed by Secchi and Van Rysscl berghe (see THERMOMETER, vol. xxiii. p. 293), but the later, put forward in*

1867, included metallic thermometers and was less successful.

Wheatstone's Scientific Papers were collected and published by the Physical Society of London in 1879. The best biographical notices of him will be found in Afin. Proc. Inst. C.E., vol. xvii. p. 283, and Proc. Roy. Soc., vol. xxiv. p. xvi. For Wheatstone's connexion with the growth of telegraphy, see Nature, xi. p. 510, and xii. p. 30 sq.

WHEELING, a city of Ohio county, West Virginia, U.S., the largest and most important in the State, stands on the eastern bank of the Ohio and on an island in the river, in what is popularly known as the " Pan-Handle." The main portion of the city les in the bottom land, 40 to 50 feet above low water in the river, and, on an average, about 650 feet above the sea. Immediately east of it the bluffs rise to a height of 400 feet above the river. The island portion is connected with the mainland by a fine suspension bridge, 1010 feet long. The surrounding country is quite open and well cultivated, being timbered only on the hillsides ; cereals and tobacco are the principal crops, and wool is largely grown. Wheeling has railway connexions eastward by the Baltimore and Ohio line to Baltimore and Washington ; westward by the same line and by the Pittsburg, Cincinnati and St Louis; northward by the Cleveland and Pittsburg; and southward by the Ohio River Railroad. The Ohio, which is navigable to Pitts- burgh, furnishes another means of communication. The depth of water in front of the city ranges from 20 inches at the lowest stage to 30 or 40 feet during floods, while the width of the river varies from 100 to 1000 feet. The principal manufacturing industries are those of iron and steel, which employ some 2600 persons or about one-twelfth of the population. Wheeling is popularly known as the "nail city" from the large quantity of cut nails made in its workshops. It has also manufactories of glass and queens- ware, wine (from home-grown grapes), cigars and tobacco, lanterns, and leather, as well as breweries. The city has a large market for ginseng, which is exported almost ex- clusively to China. The population of Wheeling in 1880 amounted to 30,737, of whom one-fifth were foreign-born.

The first settlement (Fort Fincastle) on the present site of Wheel- ing was made in 1769. In 1776 its name was changed to Fort Henry ; it was twice besieged by the British and Indians, in 1777 and 1782. It was incorporated asa village under its present name in 1806, and in 1836 it received a city charter. Upon the forma- tion of the State of West Virginia in 1863 Wheeling was made the capital. In 1870 this dignity was conferred upon Charleston ; in 1875 it was restored to Wheeling, but lost again in 1885 to Charleston. The following figures illustrate the growth of Wheel- ing :—population in 1810, 914; in 1820, 1567 ; in 1840, 7385; in 1860, 14,083 ; in 1870, 19,280; and in 1880, 30,737.

WHEWELL, Witu1am (1794-1866), philosopher and historian of science, was born on 24th May 1794 at Lan- caster, Where his father was a house-carpenter. He was educated at the blue school and the graminar school of Lancaster, and afterwards at Heversham grammar school, where he obtained the exhibition which enabled him to enter Trinity College, Cambridge, in October 1812. For the remainder of his life his home was within the walls of Trinity. He graduated as second wrangler'in 1816, was elected fellow in 1817, appointed a mathematical lecturer in the following year, and in due course became one of the college tutors. From 1828 to 1832 he held the professor- ship of mineralogy and from 1838 to 1855 that of moral philosophy, or (as it was then called) moral theology and casuistical divinity. In 1841 he was appointed master of the college on the resignation of Dr Wordsworth. He died on 6th March 1866 from the effects of a fall from his horse.

Soon after taking his degree Whewell began to lay the foundation of his reputation by great and varied activity as an author, as well as by the prominent part he took in all matters educational and constitutional concerning the college and university. His first work, An Elementary Treatise on Mechanics (1819), was influential—along with the works of Peacock and Herschel—in reforming the traditional method of mathematical teaching in Cam- bridge; and it was also largely due to him that, at a later period (1856), the circle of Cambridge studies was widened by the admission of the moral and natural sciences to an academic position. On the other hand, his attitude with respect to questions of university and college reform was (especially in later life) conservative.

Claiming to be a refornter, he had yet no sympathy with the constitutional changes proposed at the time, and since commonly accepted as desirable and necessary. He upheld strenuously the tutorial system, while endeavouring to im- prove its efficiency ; he opposed the admission of Dissenters to the university in a controversy with Thirlwall (1834) ; he defended the system of clerical fellowships, the custom which admitted a privileged class of students under the name of "fellow-commoners," and the large powers which the " caput " or head of a college then possessed in university government. The appointment of the University Commis- sion in 1850 encountered his opposition, and the proposed reform of the university in 1855 called forth from him two pamphlets of hostile Memarks. The reform really wanted was, he contended, to encourage scientific and professorial work, and to utilize the college funds, not to put elections in the hands of the members of senate.

In the summer of 1826, and again in 1828, Whewell was engaged along with Airy in conducting experiments in Doleoath mine, Cornwall, in order to determine the density of the earth. Their united labours were unsuccess- ful, and Whewell did little more in the way of experimental science. He was the author, however, of an Essay on Mineralogical Classification, published in 1828, and con- tributed various memoirs on the tides to the Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society between 1833 and 1850. But it is on his History and Philosophy of the Sciences that his claim to an enduring reputation mainly rests. The His- tory of the Inductive Sciences, from the Earlvest to the Present

539

Time appeared originally in 1837. Whewell's wide ac- quaintance with various branches of science—though he cannot be said to have been a specialist in any department —enabled him to write a comprehensive account of their development, which has not yet been superseded, although it may want the thoroughness, and even in many respects the accuracy, of various subsequent histories of the special sciences. In his own opinion, moreover, the History was to be regarded as an introduction to the Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences (1840). The latter treatise 1 analyses the method exemplified in the formation of ideas, in the new

inductions of science, and in the applications and systematization of these inductions, all exhibited by the History in the process of development.

The Philosophy is described by the author as "an application of the plan of Bacon's Novwm Organum to the present condition of physical science," and as an attempt "to extract from the actual past progress of science the elements of a more effectual and snb- stantial method of discovery" than Bacon's. The Philosophy is divided into two parts, treating respectively of ideas and of know- ledge. The first part begins with an investigation of ideas in general, analysing the fundamental nature of scientific truths, the grounds of our knowledge of them, and the mental processes by which they are ascertained, and then applies these general prin- ciples to the philosophy of each of the subdivisions of science adopted in the History. The second part discusses knowledge or the construction of science, the processes by which our conceptions are brought to bear on facts, binding them together into ideal com- binations. By the "explication of conceptions" the ideas appro- priate to particular classes of facts are brought forward and ex- plained ; and by the "colligation of facts" the conceptions involving those ideas are united to the facts for the construction of science. But no art of discovery, such as Bacon anticipated, follows from the analysis of the method of scientific discovery ; for the elements of "invention, sagacity, genius," are needed at each forward step in scientific progress. At the same time Whewell claimed that the methods exhibited in his analysis were, not only the methods by which discoveries had actually been made, but also as definite and practical as any that had been put forward. The process of induction (or colligation of ascertained facts into general proposi- tions) is analysed into three steps,—(1) the selection of the (funda- mental) idea, such as space, number, cause, or likeness; (2) the formation of the conception, or more special modification of those ideas, as a circle, a uniform force, &c.; and (3) the determination of magnitudes. Upon these follow special methods of induction applicable to quantity, viz., the method of eurves, the method of means, the method of least squares, and the method of residues, and special methods depending on resemblance (to which the transition is made through the law of continuity), viz., the method of gradation and the method of natural classification.

Whewell's philosophy of science, as well as his ethical doctrine, was conditioned by opposition to the empirical tendency then preva- lent amongst English thinkers. In this he was influenced by the results of the Kantian philosophy. He maintained the distinction between necessary and contingent truths,—the former involved in the innate constitution of the mind, the latter coming from experi- ence. It is on this reference to the mind of what the current English philosophy attempted to derive from impressions of sense that the leading positions of his philosophy depend, and on it hinges the controversy between himself and J. 8. Mill. He de- fended the a priori necessity of axioms attacked by the latter, and in his inductive theory attributed more importance to the function of the mental] idea in the colligation of facts than Mill did, while he would have dispensed with the inductive methods of Mill by his rules for the construction of conceptions.

Between 1835 and 1861 Whewell was the author of various works on the philosophy of morals and politics, the chief of which, Ele- ments of Morality, ineluding Polity, was published in 1845. The peculiarity of this work—written, of course, from what is known as the intuitional point of view—is its fivefold division of the springs of action and of their objects, of the primary and universal rights of man (personal security, property, contrast, family rights, and government), and of the cardinal virtues (benevolence, justicc, truth, purity, and order). Among Whewell's other works—too numerous to mention—reference must be made to writings popular in their day, such as the Bridgewater Treatise on Astronomy (1833), and the essay, Of the Plurality of Worlds (1854), in which heargued

1 Afterwards broken up into three parts published separately ely) the History of Scientific Ideas (1858), substantially a reproduction of the first part of the Philosophy; (2) the Novum Organum Renovatum (1858), containing the second part of the same work, but without the historical review of opinions, which was issued with large additions as (3) the Philosophy of Discovery (1860).

against the probability of planetary life, and also to the Platonic Dialogues for English Readers (1859-61), to the Lectures on the History of Moral Philosophy in England (1852), to the essay, Of a Liberal Education in General, with particular reference to the Leading Studies of the University of Cambridge (1845), to the important edition and abridged translation of Grotius, De Jure Belli et Pacis (1853), and to the edition of the Mathematical Works of Isaac Barrow (1860).

Full bibliographical details are given by Isaac Todhunter, W. IV. hewell: an Account of his Writings, 2 vols. (1876). The Life of IV. Whewell has been written by Mrs Stair Douglas (1881).

WHIG AND TORY. Parliamentary parties came into existence in England as soon as parliament achieved or aimed at predominance in the state. In 1641, shortly after the meeting of the Long Parliament, they were divided on the question of church reform, passing, as soon as political questions were involved, into Cavaliers and Roundheads. After the expulsion of the Cavaliers in 1642 and 1643 the Houses were divided into a peace party and a war party, and these in 1643 took the shape of Presbyterians and Independents. After the Restoration there was a country party and a court party, and to these the names of Whig and Tory were applied in 1679, in the heat of the struggle which preceded the meeting of the first short parliament of Charles IJ. The words were nicknames given by the opponents of each party. To call a man a Whig was to compare him with the Presbyterian rebels of the west of Scotland. To call a man a Tory was to compare him with the Papist outlaws of Ireland. In fact, at this time the Whigs were maintainers of parliamentary power over the crown and of toleration for Dissenters, the Tories maintainers of the hereditary indefeasible rights of the wearer of the crown and of the refusal of toleration to Dissenters. The relation between the parties was further qualified by the fact that the heir to the crown was a Roman Catholic, whose claim to succeed was defended by the Tories and assailed by the Whigs.

The persistency of the names of the two parties is mainly owing to their unmeaningness. As new questions arose, the names of the old parties were retained, though the objects of contention were no longer the same.

The Revolution of 1688-89 made it impossible for the Tories to retain their old attitude of attachment to the hereditary right of the occupant of the throne, with the exception of the extreme wing of the party, which remained Jacobite. They still, however, continued, though accepting the Toleration Act, to oppose the offering of further favours to Dissenters. In Anne's reign, after the war with France had gone on for some time, they supported a peace policy, whilst the Whigs advocated a continuance of the war. On the whole, during the last years of the 17th and the first years of the 18th century the Whigs may be regarded as the party of the great landowners, and of the merchants and tradesmen, the Tories as the party of the smaller land- owners and the country clergy. The Whigs established, through their hold upon the boroughs under the influence of the great landowners, a firm government, which could keep in check, and at last practically set aside, the power of the crown. The Tories, distrusting the authority of the ministerial Government, and fearing a new despotism based on parliamentary corruption, became, especially after Bolingbroke's return from exile, almost democratic in their views and in their demands for the purification of the existing system.

With the accession of George III. Toryism took a new form. The struggle about the Dissenters was now a thing of the past, and the king was accepted as a leader in carrying on the attack against the power of the great Whig families. The attack was the easier because the Whig families had split into factions. For some time the divid- ing line between Whigs and Tories was this: the Tories asserted that the king had a right to choose his ministers

and control their policy, subject to the necessity of securing a majority of the House of Commons, whilst the Whigs thought that the choice should lie with leading members of parliament, and that the king should have no controlling power. The Whig view appears to resemble that subse- quently adopted ; but in the middle of the 18th century the corruption which prevailed rendered the analogy worth- less, and the real conflict was between the corrupt influence of the crown and the influence of a clique of great land- owners resting on their possession of electoral power

through the rotten boroughs. In 1770 the king had his way and established Lord North at the treasury as his nominee. The Whigs, deprived of power, improved their position by the loss of one great instrument of corruption ; but they were weakened by the establishment of two dis- tinct currents of opinion in their own ranks. The main body under Rockingham was influenced by Burke to de- mand practical reforms, but set its face against any popular changes in the constitution. The Whigs who followed Chatham wished to place parliament on a more popular basis by the reform of the House of Commons. When in 1783 Chatham's son Pitt became prime minister, the Tory party took a new start. It retained the Tory principle of reliance on the crown, and joined to it Chatham's principle of reliance on the people as opposed to the great Whig families. It also supported Pitt in practical reforms.

All this was changed by the French Revolution. In opposition to the new democracy, the Tories coalesced with a section of the Whig families, the representatives of which entered the ministry in 1794. From this time till 1822 Toryism was synonymous with a desire to retain the existing state of things, however full of abuses it might be. When Canning and Peel entered the ministry in 1822, a gradual change took place, and a tendency to practical reform manifested itself. The refusal of Wellington to listen to any proposal for altering the constitution of the House of Commons threw power once more into the hands of the Whigs in 1830. Shortly afterwards the name Tory gave place to that of Conservative, though of late years there has been an attempt to revert to it by those Con- servatives who wish to assert their power of originating a definite policy, and who do not like to be branded with a purely negative appellation. The name of Whig on the other hand was replaced by that of Liberal, being assigned for some time to the less progressive portion of the party, and thus, by becoming a term of reproach, threatening entirely to disappear.

WHIRLPOOL, a hollow in running water, caused or accompanied by a whirling motion which attracts and engulfs floating objects. The popular conception of a whirlpool was probably based on the ancient accounts of that of Charybdis, strengthened by exaggerated rumours of the Milstroém in the Lofoten Islands, and, in Great Britain at least, largely consolidated by the legends of Corrie- vreckan. The various reports of travellers and

descriptions of poetical "philosophers" as to the appearance of the Malstrém were faithfully collated and thrown into stereo- scopic relief by Edgar Allan Poe in his celebrated story. He describes how, with the rise of the tide, "the current acquired a monstrous velocity. . . . The vast bed of the waters, seamed and scarred into a thousand conflicting channels, burst suddenly into frenzied convulsions—heav- ing, boiling, hissing—gyrating in gigantic and innumerable vortices, and all whirling and plunging on to the eastward with a rapidity water never elsewhere assumes, except in precipitous descents. In a few minutes more there came over the scene another radical alteration. .. . The gyratory motions of the subsided vortices seemed to form the germ of another more vast. Suddenly—very suddenly—this assumed a distinct and definite existence, in a circle of over

Wort teil P Om L

a mile in diameter. The edge of the whirl was represented by a broad belt of gleaming spray; but no particle of this slipped into the mouth of the terrific funnel, whose interior, as far as the eye could fathom it, was a smooth, shining, and jet-black wall of water, inclined to the horizon at an angle of some 45°, speeding dizzily round and round with a swaying and sweltering motion, and sending forth to the winds an appalling voice, half shriek, half roar, such as not even the mighty cataract of Niagara ever lifts up in its agony to heaven." Nothing could escape the violence of such a vortex. Whales caught in it were swallowed down, and the largest ship was engulfed as easily as the smallest boat. After an hour or two the funnel slowly filled, and the fragments of the vessels which it had sucked down were thrown up, dashed to pieces against rocks at an un- known depth. Bearing such a reputation, whirlpools were naturally avoided by the mariner; and their real nature long remained unknown.

It was supposed that every whirlpool formed round a central rock ; under it opened a great cavern or gulf, down which the waters rushed, and so the whirling was produced as in a basin emptying through a central hole. This notion was developed by Athanasius Kircher (1602-80). In his theory whirlpools marked the entrances to subterranean channels connecting different seas, and the phenomena of tides were produced by the alternate

flow of water in opposite directions. Kircher gives a curious diagram of the Malstrém or "umbilicus maris," illustrating his sup- position that the water, after pouring into the vast funnel, flowed along a channel under the Scandinavian peninsula and rose in the Gulf of Bothnia. When the level of this gulf had been raised to a sufficient height, he thought that the current was reversed, and, aided by a stream pouring through a subterranean tunnel from the White Sea, raised the tide on the coast of Norway. Carrying his theory a degree farther to account for the Gulf Stream and the Antarctic drift, Kircher, with great ingenuity, placed a grand vortex at the North pole, down which all the water of the ocean tumbled, and, passing through the earth's axis, emerged at the South pole, thus keeping up "a circu- lation like that of the blood in the human body."

The facts which gave rise to the wild theories of medizeval geographers and the extravagant descriptions of early voyagers are impressive enough in themselves to rank amongst the grandest phenomena of nature. No one wlio has seen the tide-streams racing through the Pentland Firth at 12 miles an hour, now swirling along with a smooth dimpled surface, like molten glass, now meeting the counter- current and leaping high into the air in columns of water and spray, or who has heard the roar of Corrievreckan as the Atlantic tide rushes between Scarba and Jura against an easterly gale, will be disposed to deny the terrible danger to small open vessels or to wonder that horror strengthened imagination to the confusion and exaggeration of fact.

The formation of whirlpools is a natural result of water flowing rapidly in an irregular channel (see Hyprome- CHANICS, vol. xii. pp. 468, 510); it takes place in all rivers and in every tide-race of the sea, the depth, diameter, and velocity depending on accidental causes. The form of the surface of an ordinary whirlpool is given by Prof. J. Thomson! as that generated by the revolution of a curve whose formula is y = c?/a?, where y is the depth of any point on the curve below the general level remote from the whirl, x the distance of the point from the axis of revolution, and caconstant. Every point on the surface moves with the velocity a heavy body would attain in falling from the general level of the water surface to

that point, and any point in the interior of the revolving mass has a velocity equal to that of the point on the surface immediately above

! Brit. Assoc. Rep., 1852, Sections, p. 130.

itself. Prof. Thomson applied his researches on the motion of whirlpools to the construction of a particularly effective form of turbine.?

All the famous whirlpools are situated in channels essentially similar in configuration and in tidal phenomena : their vortices are produced at certain phases of the tide or with certain directions of the wind; and they are all dangerous to navigation, but the danger is due to the cause which produces the whirlpools—the tidal race—not to the "roaring wells" themselves. Whirlpools in a tidal stream are not stationary, but travel along with the current, fill- ing up and again forming in irregular succession. Small boats have repeatedly been drawn into these vortices in the northern fjords and capsized ; and trading steamers in passing through a tideway are violently deflected from their course. It is on record that a seventy-four gun ship has been whirled right round in the vortices of the Straits of Messina. The fishermen of the Norwegian fjords and of the northern island groups,—Lofoten, Faroe, Shetland, and Orkney,—still believe that, if they can throw a heavy or bulky object into a whirlpool, it will close up without harming their boats. Lithgow in his 7'ravels, speaking of the Pentland Firth, says, "I denote this credibly, in a part of the north-west end of this gulf there is a certain place of sea where these distracted tides make their rencountering rendezvous, that whirleth ever about, cutting in the middle circle a sloping hole, with which, if either ship or boat shall happen to encroach, they must quickly either throw over something into it, as a barrel, a piece of timber, and such like, or that fatal euripus shall then suddenly become their swallowing sepulchre." This custom, it has been supposed, is sacrificial in its origin. Its continued prac- tice, however, suggests what is probably the case, that the bulky object splashing into the whirl breaks the continuity of the surface and causes a collapse or filling-up. In windy weather, when there is a broken sea, vortices are not formed. The tidal stream passing through the irregular channels between islands gives rise to a complicated series

of eddies and counter-currents, which, according to the British Admiralty's Sailing Dzrections, make navigation dangerous, except when guided by local knowledge and © aided by fair wind and a favourable tide. The general effect appears to be that, as the tide rises, the strength of the stream increases ; and the counter-currents set up along the shore, as well as the overfalls produced by inequalities of the bottom, thoroughly mix the water to a depth of from 50 to 100 fathoms. This has been proved by observations of temperature amongst the tidal currents off the Mull of Cantyre, where at all times of the year there is no differ- ence between the surfaceand bottom temperature. At high water a state of rest ensues; and ebb tide usually reverses the order of phenomena, the main stream, counter-currents, and eddies running in the opposite direction, but with nearly equal strength, until low tide brings another pause.

Charybdis, a whirlpool famous in classical literature, is situated in the Straits of Messina. The rise of tide at Messina does not ex- ceed one foot, but the current may attain the velocity of nearly 6 milesan hour. Where the north-going flood tide meets the south- running counter-current, and where the southerly ebb meets its induced northerly stream, great eddics or garofola are formed, one of which is Charybdis. These depend very much on the wind for the intensity of their phenomena.

In ancient maps of the united Aral-Caspian Sea two whirlpools are represented. Near the position laid down there are in the river Amu-Daria two whirlpools at the junction of several channels. These have been recently examined? and found to arise from the river flowing over two conical hollows in its bed, respectively 120 and 60 feet deep; these do not appear to have been formed by running watcr, but closely resemble craters of mud volcanoes.

The most violent tidal current is said to be that of Salten Fjord to the south of Bodé on the north-west coast of Norway, eee a EE eee

2 Brit. Assoc. Rep., 1852, Report, p. 317. 7 8 Wood, in Journ. Roy. Geogr. Soc. (1875), xlv. p. 372.

known by the name of the Salteustrém, and dreaded on account of its turbulence and its numerous vortices. Opposite Salten Fjord, on the western side of Vest Fjord, the wild jagged range of the Lofoten Islands runs like a row of shark's teeth from south to north. Between two of the southernmost of the group, Moskenzs and Moskcen, runs the Moskenstrom, a tidal current which after low water commences to flow towards the north-east, then gradually changes its direction to east, to south, and at high water to south- west ; after half an hour's cessation the ebb begins to flow towards the south-west, at half ebb due west, and theu gradually turns through north to north-east at low water. The current thus rotates round Mosken once in 12 hours. It runs with a velocity of 7 miles an hour when a strong wind blows in the same direction, and, as the sea-bed is very irregular and rises abruptly from 200 fathoms seaward of Mosken to 20 fathoms in the channel and Vest Fjord, the flow is very turbulent, with occasional whirlpools and opposing currents set up along the shore, giving it a character very similar to that of the Strait of Messina. This is the place of the Malstrém.

In the Faroe Islands several dangerous tide-races exist in which are dreaded whirlpools, the two worst being the Querne off Sand Island and one round the rock of Sumboe-musk off Siider Island.

The Shetland and Orkney Islands are traversed by a system of formidable tideways called roosts, dangerous to fishing boats and very frequently forming whirlpools. It is sufficient to refer to the swiths or wells of Swona in Orkney, to the whirlpool of the Swelchie off Stroma, and the Merry Men of Mey, also in the Pent- land Firth. The channel of Jura Sound in the Hebrides, which contains Corrievreckan whirlpool, resembles that of Mosken and Messina in being narrow and of very irregular configuration. The sea to the west is about 70 fathoms deep ; a trough over 50 fathoms in depth and quarter of a mile wide runs through towards the east, deepening about the centre to 105 and 120 fathoms in consecutive holes. The channel is less than a mile in width, and the water is shallow (15 to 20 fathoms) from the shore out to the central trough, where the deepening is abrupt. To this fact, and not to the supposed existence of "a submerged rock of pyramidal form shooting up froma depth of 100 fathoms," are due, in all probability, the tidal stream,

rnnning sometimes at 9 miles an hour, and the great vortices which are occasionally formed, as well as the danger- ous counter-currents and overfalls.

Folklore.—Many marvellous stories are told of the dwellers in whirlpools. Fish are supposed to be more abundant there than anywhere else. Whales have from earliest times been associated, if not confounded, with these gulfs ; and all manner of sea-beings, —krakens, trows (trolls), and mermaids,—claim sanctuary beneath the turmoil. Ramus, two centuries ago, tried by dint of misapplied philological ingenuity to identify Charybdis with the Malstrém, alleging that the fact of Ulysses's voyage to northern seas was plainly recorded in the names of islands and headlands. For the myth of Charybdis, see ScyttA aND CHaRyBDIS. Whirlpools have been brought forward to explain the origin of the tides ; but a well-known Norse folk-tale in one of its forms gives to a particular vortex—the Swelchie—an additional and more important office, that of maintaining the salinity of the ocean. ' Malstrém"' (mill- stream) probably refers to the rapid current resembling a mill-race. The Querne in the Faroe Islands suggests the same idea from its name. A mist of poetical romance has always played over the roaring surges of Corrievreckan, and this finds expression in many poems and tales. Horrible sea-monsters made the gulf their home in the earliest times ; but they gave place to the seductive mer- maid who captivated a Macphail of Colonsay, and entertained him in her coral caves and fairy palaces beneath the sea for many years, Scott in his Border Minstrelsy gives another version of this story, in which Macphail outwits the mermaid and remains faithful to the maid of Colonsay. The name of the whirlpool is sometimes derived from cote bhreacen, '*the speckled cauldron," referring to the foam that usually variegates its surface; but the legend makes it the corry or gulf of Vrekan, a prince of Norway, who, having come there to wooa Hebridean chieftain's daughter, was swept into the whirlpool, and drawn down from sight for ever. George Mac- donald has embodied this legend in a highly dramatic poem.*

Literatwre.—References to whirlpools occur incidentally in many places. Sce A. Kircher's Mundus Subterraneus, vol. i., Amsterdam, 1664; Pontoppidan's Natural History of Norway, 1755 (this work cites the

opinions of earlier writers Ramus, Arraboe, &e.). For a good description of Charybdis, see Nicholson's Journal, vol. i. (1798) p. 12 > Of Corrievreckan, Athenwum, 3d September 1864, Full and trustworthy details of the actual state and dangers of special whirl-

pools will be found in the Sailing Directions or Coast Pi riti miralty for the various seas. fe ia a

WHIRLWIND. See Mrrzoroxocy, vol. xvi. p. 129 sq. WHISKY, or WuisKEy, a spirit distilled for drinking which originated, at least so far as regards the name,} with the Celtic inhabitants of Ireland and Scotland; and its manufacture and use still continue to be closely associated 1 Celtic wisge (water); the term in its present use is probably an

abbreviation of "usquebaugh" (wisge-beatha, "water of life"), Cf. Skeat, Etym. Dict., s.v.

with these two countries. Distilled spirit first became popularly known as aqua vite, and it was originally used only as a powerful medicinal agent. It was not till about the middle of the 17th century that it came into use in' Scotland as an intoxicating beverage. In August 1655 the town council of Glasgow issued regulations for persons who should 'brew, sell, and tap ail and acquavite," and in 1656 the town treasurer was indemnified for "'aquavytie sent to ane friend." In 1660 an excise duty was first im- posed on "acquavitze" consumed in England; but not till the year 1684 was any record kept of the quantities on which duty was charged. In that year duty was paid on the considerable quantity of 527,492 gallons. The con- sumption thereafter rose with great rapidity, reaching one million gallons at the end of the century, and in 1743 the enormous quantity of 8,200,000 gallons was consumed. Meantime the evils of the traffic had induced the legislature to pass, in 1736, the Gin Act (see Gtx) with the view of checking the demoralization attendant on the drinking habits of the people. It was principally in the form of gin that distilled spirits were consumed in England ; but gin is nothing else than a rectified and specially flavoured variety of whisky. In Scotland and Ireland the attempts of the excise authorities to control the distillation of

whisky, and to derive revenue from it, led to unlimited smuggling and open evasion of the law, and it was not till well into the 19th century that efficient regulations and energetic supervision brought the traffic in these countries under public control. Indeed illicit distillation is still extensively practised in Ireland, where the detec- tions average more than eight hundred yearly.

It is not easy at the present day to define whisky. Originally it was made from malted barley, the fermented wort from which was distilled in the common pot-still (see DIsTILLATION, vol. vii. p. 264) ; but with the introduction of the Coffey and other continuous stills, which yield a "silent" or flavourless spirit, it has become possible to prepare alcoholic liquor, which is sold as whisky, from any cereal grain, malted or unmalted, and from potato starch, grape sugar, and numerous other starch and sugar yiclding substances. As a rule, however, whisky is made from grain, and by preference from barley, malted or raw. The bulk of the whisky made in the United Kingdom can be separated into three classes. (1) Malt whisky is the product of malted barley alone, distilled in the ordinary pot-still. Its flavour is partly due to the circumstance that the malt is dried over a peat fire; and a spirit so prepared con- stitutes the pure Highland malt whisky of Scotland. (2) Grain whisky, under which heading comes the bulk of the Irish whisky of commerce, is made in the pot-still, principally from raw barley, with only a small proportion of malted barley to favour the trans- formation of starch into sugar in the preparation of the wort. (3) Plain spirit is produced from barley, rice, aud other cereals dis- tilled in the Coffey patent still. Plain spirit forms the basis from which gin, British brandy, and other rectifier's drinks are prepared ; and it is used for blending with other flavoured pot-still spirits, to produce a certain character of potable spirit sold by wholesale dealers and known by special blend names. It is only the finer qualities of matured malt and grain whisky that can be used as single or unblended spirit. In the United States whisky is distilled chiefly from corn and rye, wheat and barley malt being used, though only to a limited extent. When spirit is distilled as whisky, it retains the natural principles which impart an agreeable flavour to the beverage ; for the fuse] oil, which is contained in alcohol, and is acrid to the taste and stupefying in its effects, is to a great extent extracted. Whisky is greatly improved by age; it is not mellow,

nor its flavour agreeable, until it is several years old. In its original state it is almost colourless, but it derives a reddish hue from the wood of the barrels into which it is drawn, the inner surfaces of which are usually charred to facilitate the colouring.

In the financial year ending 31st March 1886 there were in England 10 distilleries, in Scotland 127, aud in Ireland 27. The quantity of spirits distilled in that year in the United Kingdom was 38,961,842 gallons; the number of gallons consumed as bever- age was 26,342,851 (England 15,290,816, Scotland 6,297,365, Ire- land 4,754,670) ; the quantity exported was 2,808,198 gallons ; and the stock held in bonded stores at the end of 1885 was 64,405,817 gallons, The total excise revenue from the manufacture, sale, and consumption of British spirits was £13,140,695, a considerable de- crease on previous years; and distilled spirits are now a steadily declining source of public income.

Triumph or trunip.

Ruff-and honours.

W HI—-W HI

Distilled spirits in the United States are the principal, and an increasing, source of internal revenue. In the fiscal year ending 30th June 1887 there were in the United States 969 grain distil- leries ; and the quantity of spirits distilled in that year (including whisky, alcohol, high-wines, and cologne or neutral spirits, and excluding fruit-brandy) was 77,831,599 gallons. The stock of spirits remaining in bonded warehouse on 30th June 1887 was 65,145,269 gallons. The total revenue from the manufacture and sale of dis- tilled spirits for the fiscal year ending 30th June 1887 was $65,829,322. This includes the tax upon whisky, fruit-brandy, alcohol, high-wines, cologne spirits, and rum. The revenue from the manufacture of whisky alone was $2,263,718,070.

WHIST, a game at cards. The etymology of the name is disputed ; probablyit is of imitative origin, from "whist " (hist, hush, silence), the game being so named because of the silence required to play it attentively.

In the 16th century a card game called triwmph or trump (corrupted from "triumph ") was commonly played in Eng- land. A game called trionji is mentioned as early as 1526, and triumphus Hispanicus in 1541. La triomphe occurs in the list of games played by Gargantua (Rabelais, first half of 16th century). In Florio's Worlde of Wordes (1598) trionfo is defined as "the play called trump or ruff." It is probable that the game referred to by the writers quoted is la triomphe of the early editions of the Académie des Jeux. It is important to note that this game, called by Cotton "French ruff," is similar to écarté. " English ruff-and-honours," also described by Cotton, is similar to whist. If we admit that ruff and trump are convertible terms, of which there is scarcely a doubt, the game of trump was the precursor of whist. A purely English origin may, therefore, be claimed for trump (not la triomphe). No record is known to exist of the invention of this game, nor of the mode of its growth into ruff-and-honours, and finally into whist. The earliest reference to trump in Eng- lish is believed to occur in a sermon by Latimer, "On the Card," preached at Cambridge, in Advent, about the year 1529. He says, "The game that we play at shall be the triumph. . . . Now turn up your trump,... and cast your trump, your heart, on this card." The game of trump is frequently mentioned in the second half of the 16th century. In Gammer Gurton's Needle (1575) Dame Chat says, 'We be fast set at trumpe." Eliot (fruits for the French, 1593) calls trump "a verie common ale-house game." Rice (Invective against Vices, printed before 1600) observes that "renouncing the trompe and comming in againe" (z.e., revoking intentionally) is a common sharper's trick. Decker (Belman of London, 1608) speaks of the deceits practised at "tromp and such like games." Trump also occurs in Antony and Cleopatra (written about 1607), with other punning allusions to card-playing—

*'*She, Eros, has Packed cards with Cesar, and false-played my glory Unto an enemy's triumph." —Act iv. sc. 12.*

Ruff-and-honours, if not the same game as trump, was probably the same with the addition of a score for the four highest cards of the trump suit. A description of the game is first met with in Zhe Compleat Gamester (1674) by Charles Cotton. He states that ruff-and-honours (alzas slamm) and whist are games very commonly known in England. It was played by four

players with partners, and it was compulsory to follow suit when able. The cards ranked as at whist, and honours were scored as now. Twelve cards were dealt to each player, four being left in the stock. The top card of the stock was turned up for trumps. The holder of the ace of trumps was allowed to ruff, t.e., to take in the stock and to put out four cards from his hand. The game was played nine up; and at the point of eight honours could be called, as at long whist. Cotton adds that at whist there was no stock. The deuces were put out and the bottom card was turned up for trumps.

It is believed that the earliest mention of whist is by

043

Taylor, the Water Poet (Jfotto, 1621).

He spells the word Whisk

"whisk." The earliest known use of the present spelling is °F Whist.

in Hudibras, the Second Part (spurious), 1663. The word is then spelt indifferently whisk or whist for about half a century. Cotton (1674) spells it both ways. Seymour (Court Gamester, 1734) has "whist, vulgarly called whisk." While whist was undergoing this change of name, there was associated with it the additional title of sewabbers (probably allied to sweep, or sweepstakes). Fielding (History of Mr Jonathan Wild) says that whisk-and-swab- bers was "the game then [1682] in chief vogue." Grose (Dictionary of the Vulgar Tongue, 1785) states that swabbers are "the ace of hearts, knave of clubs, ace and duce of trumps at whist." The true function of the swabbers is not positively known ; it is probable that the holders of these cards were entitled to receive a certain stake from the other players. Swabbers dropped out of general use during the 18th century. The points of the game rose from nine to ten ("nine in all," Cotton, 1725; "ten in all," Seymour, 1734, "rectified according to the present standard of play"). Simultaneously with this altera- tion, or closely following it, the entire pack of fifty-two cards was used, the deuces being no longer discarded. This improvement introduces the odd trick, an element of great interest in modern whist. Early in the 18th century whist

was not a fashionable game. The Hon. Daines Bar- rington (Archexologia, vol. viii.) says it was the game of the servants' hall. Contemporary writers refer to it in a disparaging way, as being only fit for hunting men and country squires, and not for fine ladies or people of quality. According to Barrington, whist was first played on scien- tific principles by a party of gentlemen who frequented the Crown Coffee House in Bedford Row, London, about 1728. They laid down the following rules :—' Lead from the strong suit ; study your partner's hand; and attend to the score." Shortly after the celebrated Edmond Hoytz (g.v.) published his Short Zreatise (1743). It has been surmised by some that Hoyle belonged to the Crown Coffee House party. This, however, is only a conjecture. There is abundant evidence to show that, in the middle of the 18th century, whist was regularly played at the coffee houses of London and in fashionable society. And it is notorious that, ever since the time of Hoyle, the game has continued to increase in public estimation.

It will be of interest to mark the successive stages through which whist has passed from the time of Cotton to the present day. The only suggestions as to play in Cotton are that, 'though you have but mean cards in your own hand, yet you may play them so suitable to those in your partner's hand that he may either trump them or play the best of that suit ;" also that "you ought to have a special eye to what cards are play'd out, that you may know by that means either what to play if you lead or how to trump securely and advantagiously." It appears from this that the main ideas were to make trumps by rufiing, to make winning cards, and to watch the fall of the cards with these objects. In the rules laid down by the Crown Coffee House school a distinct advance is to be noticed. Their first rule, '"' Lead from the strong suit," shows a know- ledge of the game only to be acquired by careful study, together with a long train of reasoning. The arguments in favour of the original strong-suit lead would be out of place here ; they are to be found in any modern manual. Their second rule, "Study your partner's hand," though sound, is rather vague, and savours somewhat of a repeti- tion of Cotton. 'Their third rule, "' Attend to the score," if amended into "Play to the score," is most valuable. From the Crown Coffee House school to Hoyle is rather a wide

jump; but there is no intervening record. Whether or not Hoyle derived at least a part of his inspiration from

Crown Coffee

ouse party.

Cotton.

Hoyle.

Payne.

Mat- thews.

Short whist.

544

that school, certain it is that in his Short Treatzse he en- dorsed and illustrated their rules. He also brought the doctrine of probabilities to bear on the game, and gave a number of cases which show a remarkable insight into the play. Two examples will suffice. He distinguishes between the lead of king from king, queen, knave, and one small card and of knave from king, queen, knave, and more than one small card. He also directs the third hand holding queen, ten, nine, and a small card to play the nine, not the small one, to his partner's lead of ace. This whist is so good, and so advanced, that even now, a hundred and fifty years later, only the very best players can be de- pended on to observe and profit by it.

About 1770 was published Payne's Maaims for Playing the Game of Whist. The advance in this book is decided. Leading from five trumps, in the hope of bringing in your own or your partner's long suit, is made into a general rule. And here, for the first time, the rule with respect to returned leads is printed, viz., "In returning your partner's lead play the best you have, when you hold but three originally." This rule, of all elementary ones, is, according to Clay, "the most important for the observance of whist-players." Hoyle does not give any such rule for

returned leads, whence it may be inferred that no settled practice prevailed in his day. Matthews's Advice to the Young Whist-Player (anon., 1804) repeats the "maxims of the old school," with " ob- servations on those he thinks erroneous" and '"'with several new ones." Matthews's book was a valuable contribution to whist literature, but some of the maxims which he thinks erroneous are now generally allowed to be correct. Thus, he prefers leading a single card to opening a long weak suit, the modern practice being just the contrary. He rejects leads from suits of three cards, except when the leader has reason to think it is his partner's suit; then he should " play off the highest, though the king or queen," and he adds, '"'V.B.—This is contrary to the general prac- tice, but undoubtedly right." Assuming his statement to be true, the general practice was evidently wrong. Matthews is sometimes credited with the discovery of the modern principle with regard to discarding. The old rule was always to discard from the weakest suit. The modern rule is to discard from the best protected suit when the opponents have the command of trumps. What Matthews does say is, "'If weak in trumps, keep guard to your ad- versaries' suits ; if strong, throw away from them." This advice, though good, does not amount to anything like a principle of play.

Soon after Matthews wrote, the points of the game were cut down from ten to five. Clay's account of this change is that, about the beginning of the 19th century, Lord Peterborough having lost a large sum of money, the players proposed to make the game five up, in order to give the loser a chance of recovering his loss. The new game, short whist, was found to be so lively that it soon became general, and eventually superseded the long game. This produced in 1835 Short Whist by "Major A." " Major A." is only Matthews done into short whist by a literary hack, who substituted "five" for "ten," and so on through- out. The book would not call for notice here, but that Major A. was regarded as the authority on whist for a considerable time, probably because it was erroneously supposed that the author was the well-known Major Aubrey, one of the best players of his day. Similarly "Coelebs" (Laws and Practice of Whist, 1851), who mainly repeats former writers, only calls for mention because he first printed in his second edition (1856) an explanation of the call for trumps. Calling for trumps was first recog- nized as part of the game by the

players at Graham's Club about 1840. Long whist may be said to have died about the same time that Major A.'s book was published.

WwW il © Se

The new game necessarily caused a change in the style of play, as recorded by James Clay in The Laws of Short Whist, and a Treatise on the Game (1864). That dis- tinguished player says that, when he first remembered whist, its celebrities were for the most part those who had been educated at long whist. In his judgment the old school was very accurate and careful, but was wanting in the dash and brilliancy of the best modern players, and sinned by playing what is now called a backward game.

Whist then travelled, and about 1830 some of the best French whist-players, with Deschapelles at their head, modified and improved the old-fashioned system. They were but little influenced by the traditions of long whist, and were not content merely to imitate the English. The French game was the scorn and horror of the old school, who vehemently condemned its rash trump leads. Those who adopted the practice of the new school were, however, found to be winning players. By way of example, the English player of the old school never thought of playing to win the game before it was saved; the French player never thought of saving the game until he saw he could not win it. As between the two systems, Clay preferred the rash attack to the cautious defence, and recommended a middle course, leaning more to the new than to the old doctrine.

Dr Pole (Philosophy of Whist, 1883) remarks that the long experience of adepts had led to the introduction of many improvements in detail since the time of Hoyle, but that nothing had been done to reduce the various rules of the game to a systematic form until between 1850 and 1860, when a knot of young men proceeded to a thorough investigation of whist, and in 1862 one of the members of this "little whist school" brought out a work, under the

Clay.

French whist.

pseudonym of "Cavendish," which "gave for the first Caven- time the rules which constitute the art of whist-playing 'ish-

according to the most modern form of the game." The little school was first brought prominently into notice by an article on whist in the Quarterly Renew of January 1871. On the appearance of this article it was fiercely debated by the press whether the "little school" did any- thing extraordinary, whether they elaborated anything, or compassed anything, or advanced a science, or whether they drew their inspiration from external sources, and merely gave a systematic arrangement to what was well known and procurable before. It was finally allowed that the little school did originate something, as they were the first to give, logically and completely, the reasoning on which the principles of play are based. Whist had previously been treated as though the "art" of the game depended on the practice of a number of arbitrary conven- tions. But the fact is that all rules of whist-play depend upon and are referable to general principles. Hence, as soon as these general principles were stated, and the reasons for their adoption were argued, players began to discuss and to propose innovations on the previously established rules of play.

A critical examination of the more important proposals Discard- made since 1862 may here be appropriately introduced. ins.

The older authorities laid down the rule, Discard from the weakest suit. It was shrewdly noticed that, when command of trumps was shown by the adversaries, the rule was more honoured in the breach than in the ob- servance, the reason being that, when the attack was ad- verse, the instinct of the player prompted him to guard his weak suits. Hence the rule was modified, and it be- came the practice to discard from the best protected suit when the command of trumps is with the opponents. There can be no doubt as to the soundness of this modern rule of play, and it has been generally accepted. It was sud- denly discovered that Matthews advanced a similar doctrine.

Echo of call for trumps.

Lead from penulti- mate card.

WHIST

His pretensions to this distinction have already been ex- amined. Soon after this (1872) followed the echo of the call for trumps. Calling for trumps, as all whist-players know, is effected by throwing away an unnecessarily high card. When the lower card is subsequently played, a royal invitation is given to the partner to abandon his own game and to lead trumps, there being great strength in the caller's hand. In practice it was found for various reasons (for which manuals must be consulted) to be highly advantage- ous for the caller's partner to be able to indicate whether he also had numerical strength in trumps (2.e., a minimum of four). The rule was eventually adopted that the caller's partner with at least four trumps should, if he had an opportunity, call in response, or echo, by also throwing away an unnecessarily high card; of course, if he had the opportunity, and refrained from echoing, he had less than four trumps. This rule of play was not appreciated at the time; but now (1888) it has the adherence of all thoughtful players.

Contemporaneously with the echo, the lead of the pen- ultimate card from suits of five or more cards was strenu- ously advocated in some quarters, and as strenuously opposed in others. Up to this date it had been the general practice, when leading a low card from a strong suit, to prefer the lowest card of the suit, irrespective of the number held. But some acute players departed from this rule when they held an intermediate sequence of three cards. Thus, with king, ten, nine, eight, two (intermediate sequence of ten, nine, eight), they would lead the eight in preference to the two, as a card of protection, in case the partner should happen to be very weak in the suit, when the eight must force an honour, whereas the two might enable the opponent to win the first trick with a six or a seven. Equally acute partners soon observed that, when a strong-suit player began with, say, an eight, and afterwards played a small card, the card must have been from a suit of at least five cards. As soon as this inference was established, the acute leader argued that, if he could show number in his strong suit (an important exhibition in modern whist), he need not confine this exhibition to those suits only in which he held an inter-

mediate sequence. He contended that the right play is to lead the lowest but one (or the penultimate) from all suits containing five or more cards, with which the less advanced player would begin by leading the lowest. Then ensued the grand battle of the penultimate. The old players regarded it with the same "horror" as they had formerly displayed with respect to the French school, and even went so far as to stigmatize it as a private under- standing and as cheating. The next stock objection raised was that it was an innovation. These feeble arguments were soon disposed of. The method was accessible to every one through the medium of the press; and, as Clay (Short Whast, 1864) rightly observes, "It is fair to give your partner any intimation which could be given, if the cards were placed on the table, each exactly in the same manner as the others, by a machine, the players being out of sight and hearing each of the others." The more genuine stric- tures were that penultimate leads complicate the game, that they give no advantage to the players, and that they simulate leads from weak suits (from which the highest is led). It is very doubtful whether penultimate leads do complicate the game. But, admitting for the sake of argu- ment that they do, it is no objection to an intellectual pastime that it exercises the brains of the players. The question whether those who practise penultimate leads reap any advantage therefrom is one which can only be determined by experience. The best test is the habit of those who play for a stake. They all hope to win; they are not likely to persist obstinately in a practice by which

they find they gain nothing; and at the present moment (1888) there is scarcely a player of any ability who de- liberately rejects the penultimate lead when he has a partner capable of understanding it. Hence it may be inferred that the experience of some sixteen years has resulted in a decided feeling that penultimate leads are on the whole advantageous to those who practise them. The simulation of a lead from a weak suit has no locus standi if it is borne in mind that original leads are contemplated, and that the original lead of all good players is from a strong suit. James Clay, the greatest player of his day, was at first opposed to penultimate leads. When he had considered the full arguments for and against them,

he "put then1 to the test of his individual experience, acknow- ledged their value, and did not hesitate to give his adhesion to them." !

The consideration of the proper card to lead from five- card suits naturally led to that of the correct lead from more than five cards, in the case of suits opened with a small card. General Drayson (Art of Practical Whist, 1879) was the first to lay down that six of a suit can be shown by leading the antepenultimate card. Thus, from queen, nine, seven, four, three, two of a suit he advised the lead of the four. General Drayson's proposal did not find favour with many players, though it distinctly follows where the penultimate from five is admitted.

Meanwhile, leads from high cards, having regard to the number held in the suit, had not escaped attention. Thus, from suits headed by ace, queen, knave it had always been the custom to lead ace, then queen, irrespective of num- ber. The third hand, holding king and small ones, was ex- pected to pass the queen. But, if the lead was from five cards or more, and the third hand held king and two small ones, this play often resulted in blocking the leader's strong suit. It was therefore held, after some discussion and tentative play, that with more than four of the suit the leader should proceed with knave after ace, in order to invite his partner to put on king, if it remained singly guarded. From this it follows that a similar distinction should be drawn as to the second lead from queen, knave, ten, according to the number of accompanying small cards. If the lead is from four cards only, queen should be led, then knave; if from more than four, queen, then ten. These innovations were introduced about 1874-75, It will be observed that the original idea in choosing a penulti- mate or antepenultimate card was to protect the suit, and that the original idea in choosing the higher or lower of two high indifferent cards was to give the partner the option of unblocking. Behind this there was seen to lie the collateral advantage of showing number. Hence these rules of play were frequently resorted to merely for the purpose of telling whether four or more than four cards of the suit selected to lead from were present in the hand of the original leader.

So far the indicated method, sound enough in itself, amounted only to the enunciation of modified rules of play. It yet remained for some one to

propound a constant method of treating all leads, and to classify the isolated rules so as to render it possible to lay down general principles. This was accomplished in 1883-84 by Nicholas Browse Trist of New Orleans, U.S.A.; and hence the method of leading reduced to form by him is known by the name of American leads. American leads propose a systematic course of play when opening and continuing the lead from the strong suit. First, with regard to a low card led. When you open a strong suit with a low card, lead your fourth best. When opening a four-card suit with a low card, the lowest, which is the fourth best, is the card selected. When opening a five-card suit with

1 Preface by the editors to Clay's Short Whist, 1881. XXIV. — 69

Ante-

penulti- mate

lead.

Ameri- can leads.

Play of second and third hands.

Laws of whist.

546

a low card, the penultimate card is selected. Instead of

calling it the penultimate, call it the fourth best. So with a six-card suit ; but, instead of antepenultimate, say fourth best. And so on with suits of more than six cards: dis- regard all the small cards and lead the fourth best. Secondly, with regard to a high card led, followed by a low card. When you open a strong suit with a high card and next lead a low card, lead your original fourth best. The former rule was to proceed with the lowest. Thus, from ace, knave, nine, eight, seven, two the leader was expected to open with the ace, and then to lead the two. An American leader would lead ace, then eight. Thirdly, with regard to a high card led,

followed by a high card. When you remain with two high indifferent cards, lead the higher if you opened a suit of four, the lower if you opened a suit of five or more. Examples have already been given of the cases of ace, queen, knave, &c., and of queen, knave, ten, &c. On the promulgation of these general principles another pitched battle followed, which raged with great fury. The objections urged against American leads are much the same as those against the penultimate, viz.,—(1) that they complicate the game, (2) that they seldom affect the result, (3) that the informa- tion afforded may be of more use to the opponents than to the leader's partner. The complication argument has but little foundation in fact. All an American leader asks his partner to observe is that, when he originally leads a low card, he holds exactly three cards higher than the one led ; when he originally leads a high card, and next a low one, he still holds exactly two cards higher than the second card led; and when he originally leads a high card, and follows it with a high card, he indicates in many cases, to those who know the analysis of leads (as laid down in whist books), whether the strong suit consisted originally of four or of more than four cards. It cannot be denied that moderate players may lack the quick perception which will enable them to take full advantage of the information afforded ; but that is no reason why better players should be deprived of the advantage, and it is no reason why the moderate player should not learn to speak the language of whist intelligibly, for the benefit of partners who do under- stand it. The answer to the effect-on-the-result argument is that American leads add but little which is new to the game. They only aim at consolidating the received prac- tice, and at extending a law of uniformity to cases not previously provided for. The who-gets-the-best-of-the- information argument is more difficult to meet. Under other whist conditions experience tells that it is advan- tageous in the long run to convey information of strength, notwithstanding its publication to the whole table. It is most improbable, therefore, that a player will be at a dis-advantage by publishing too much and too precise inform- ation as to his strength. But it must be admitted that this is not necessarily a sequitur ; long experience can only decide on which side the balance of advantage lies. Five years' experience is hardly enough. But it may be re- inarked that no instances are known of players who, having = adopted these leads, have voluntarily relinquished

em.

The introduction of American leads rendered it neces- sary thoroughly to overhaul the received play of the second and third hands,—of the second hand, in consequence of the information given, as to when he should cover or pass the card led ; of the third hand, for the same reason. when he should play to unblock his partner's long suit. 'A dis- cussion of these refinements would be out of place here. It is to be found in Whist Developments, by ' Cavendish "

(1885).

A printed existence was first given to the laws i in 17 13. The fourteen laws stein issued were eat atl

Weise?

to twenty-four. These laws were the authority nntil 1760, when the members of White's and Saunders's Chocolate Houses revised them. The revised laws (nearly all Hoyle) were accepted by whist players for over a century, notwithstanding that they were very in- complete. In 1863 the 'Turf Club undertook to frame a more com- prehensive code, and to solicit the co-operation of the Portland Club. The laws of short whist, approved by these two clubs, were brought out in 1864. They were at once adopted by nuimerous other clubs, and are now (1888) the standard by which all disputed points are decided. Laws or Wuist.1

The Rubber.—l. Tlie rubber is the best of three games. be won by the same players, the third game is not played.

Scoring.—2. A game consists of five points. Each trick, above six, counts Scoring.

one point.

3. eons 1.e ace, king, queen, and knave of trumps—are thus reckoned : if a player and his partuer, either separately or conjointly, hold—(i.) the

four honours, they score four points ; (ii.) any three honours, they score two points ; (iii.) only two honours, they do not score.

4, Those players who, at the commencement of a deal, are at the score of four, cannot score honours.

5. The penalty for a revoke takes precedence of all other scores; tricks score next ; honours last.

6. Honours, unless claimed before the trump card of the following deal is turned up, cannot be scored.

7. To score honours is not sufficient : they must be called at the end of the hand; if so called, they nay be scored at any time during the game.

8. The winners gain—{i.) a treble, or game of three points, when their adver- saries have not scored ; (ii.) a double, or game of two points, when their adver- saries have scored less than three; (iii.) a single, or game of one point, when their adversaries have scored three or four.

9, The winners of the rubber gain two points (commonly called the rubber points), in addition to the value of their games.

10. Should the rubber have consisted of three gaines, the value of the losers' gaine is deducted from the gross number of points gained by their opponents.

11. Ifan erroneous score be proved, such mistake can be corrected prior to the conclusion of the game in which it occurred, and such game is not con- cluded until the trump card of the following deal has been turned up.

12. If an erroneous score, affecting the amount of the rubber, be proved, such mistake can be rectified at any time during the rubber.

Cutting.—13. The ace is the lowest card.

14. In all cases every one must cut from the saine pack.

15. Should a player expose more than one card, he must cut again.

Formation of Table.—16. If there are more than four candidates, the players Forma- The tion of

are selected by cutting, those first in the room having the preference. four who cut the lowest cards play first, and again cut to decide on partners. The two lowest play against the two highest ; the lowest is the dealer, who has

choice of cards and seats, and, having once made his selection, must abide by it. &¢-

17. When there are more than six candidates, those who cut the two next lowest cards belong to the table, which is complete with six players. On the retirement of one of those six players, the candidate who cut the next lowest card has a prior right to any after-comer to enter the table.

Cutting Cards of Equal Value.—18. Two players cutting cards of equal value, unless such cards are the two highest, cut again; should they be the two low- est, a fresh cut is necessary to decide which of those two deals.

19. Three players cutting cards of equal value cut again. Should the fourth (or remaining) card be the highest, the two lowest of the new cut are partners, the lower of those two the dealer. Should the fourth card be the lowest, the two highest are partners, the original lowest the dealer.

Cutting Out.—20. At the end of arubber, should admission be claimed by any one or by two candidates, he who has, or they who have, played a greater number of consecutive rubbers than the others is, or are, out. But, when all have played the same number, they inust cut to decide upon the out-goers ; the highest are out.

Entry and Re-entry.—21, A candidate wishing to enter a table must declare such intention prior to any of the players having cut a card, either for the pur- pose of commencing a fresh rubber or of cutting out.

22. In the formation of fresh tables those candidates who have neither be- longed to, nor played at, any other table have the prior right of entry; the others decide their right of admission by cutting.

23. Any one quitting a table prior to the conclusion of a rubber may, with consent of the other three players, appoint a substitute in his absence during that rubber.

24, A player cutting into one table whilst belonging to another loses his right of re-entry into that latter, and takes his chance of cutting in as if he were a fresh candidate.

25. Ifany one break up a table, the remaining players have the prior right to him of entry into any other; and, should there not be sufficient vacancies at such other table to admit all those candidates, they settle their precedence by cutting.

Shaufling.—26. The pack must neither be shuffled below the table nor so that Shuffling.

the face of any card be seen.

27. The pack must not be shuffled during the play of the hand.

28. A pack, having been played with, must neither be shuffled by dealing it into packets nor across the table.

29. Each player has a right to shuffle, once only, except as provided by rule 32, prior to a deal, after a false cut, or when a new deal has occurred. –

30. The dealer's partner must collect the cards for the ensuing deal, and has the first right to shuffle that pack.

$1. Each player after shuffling must place the cards, properly collected and face downwards, to the left of the player about to deal.

82. The dealer has always the right to shuffle last ; but, should a card or cards be seen during his shuffling or whilst giving the pack to be cut, he may be compelled to re-shuffle.

The Deal.—33. Each player deals in his turn. The right of dealing goes to Deal.

the left.

34. The player on the dealer's right cuts the pack, and in dividing it must not leave fewer than four cards in either packet. If in cutting or in replacing one of the two packets on the other a card be exposed, or if there be any con- fusion of the cards, or a doubt as to the exact place ih which the pack was divided, there must be a fresh cut.

35. When a player, whose duty it is to cut, has once separated the pack, he cannot alter his intention: he can neither re-shufile nor re-cut the cards.

a a When the pack is cut, should the dealer shuffle the cards, he loses his eal,

1 From the club code, edited by J. L. Baldwin, by permission of Messrs. De La Rue and Co.

If the first two games Rubber.

EE —

Misdeal.

Trump card.

Cards liable to be called.

W Fi S.T

A New Deal.—37. There must be a new deal—{i.) if during a deal or during the play of a hand the pack be proved incorrect or imperfect ; (ii.) if any card, excepting the last, be faced in the pack.

38. If whilst dealing a card be exposed by the dealer or his partner, should neither of the adversaries have touched the cards, the latter can claim a new deal. A card exposed by either adversary gives that claim to the dealer, pro- yided that his partner has not touched a card. If a new deal does not take place, the exposed card cannot be called.

39. If during dealing a player touch any of his cards, the adversaries may do the same, without losing their privilege of claiming a new deal, should chance give them such option.

40. Ifin dealing one of the last cards be exposed, and the dealer turn up the trump before there is reasonable time for his adversaries to decide as to a fresh deal, they do not thereby lose their privilege.

41. If a player whilst dealing look at the trump card, his adversaries have a right to see it, and may exact a new deal.

42. If a player take into the haud dealt to him a card belonging to the other pack, the adversaries, on discovery of the error, may decide whether they will have a fresh deal or not.

A Misdeal.—43. A misdeal loses the deal.

44. It is a misdeal—(i.) unless the cards are dealt into four packets, one at a time in regular rotation, beginning with the player to the dealcr's left; (ii.) should the dealer place the last (i.e., the trump) card face downwards on his own or any other pack ; (iii.) should the trump card not come in its regular order to the dealer; but he does not lose his deal if the pack be proved imper- fect; (iv.) should a player have fourteen cards and either of the other three Jess than thirteen; (v.) should the dealer, under an impression that he has made a mistake, count either the cards on the table or the remainder of the pack; (vi.) should the dealer deal two cards at once or two cards to the same hand, and then deal a third ; but if, prior to dealing that third card, the dealer can, by altering the position of one card only, rectify such error, he may do so, except as provided by the second paragraph of this law; (vii.) should the dealer omit to have the pack cut to him, and the adversaries discover the crror prior to the trump card being turned up, and before looking at their cards, but not after having done so.

45. A misdeal does not lose the deal if during the dealing either of the adver- saries touch the cards prior to the dealer's partner having done so; but, should the latter have first interfered with the cards, notwithstanding [that] either or both of the adversaries have subsequently done the same, the deal is lost.

46. Should three players have their right number of cards, the fourth have less than thirteen, and not discover such deficiency until he has played any of his cards, the deal stands good. Should he have played, he is as answerable for auy revoke he may have made as if the missing card or cards had been in his hand ; he may search the other pack for it or them.

47. If a pack during or after a rubber be proved incorrect or imperfect, such proof does not alter any past score, game, orrubber. That hand in which the imperfection was detected is null and void. The dealer deals again.

48. Any one dealing out of turn, or with the adversary's cards, may be stopped before the trump card is turned up, after which the game must procecd as if no mistake had been made.

49. A player can neither shuffle, cut, nor deal for his partner, without the permission of his opponents.

50. If the adversaries interrupt a dealer whilst dealing, either by questioning the score or asserting that it is not his deal, and fail to establish such claim, should a misdeal occur, he may deal again.

51. Should a player take' his partner's deal and misdeal, the latter is liable to the usual penalty, and the adversary next iu rotation to the player who ought to have dealt then deals.

The Trump Card.—52. The dealer, when it is his turn to play to the first trick, should take the trump card into his hand. If left on the table after the first trick be turned and quitted, itis lable to be called. His partner may at any time remind him of the liability.

58. After the dealer has taken the trump card into his hand it cannot be asked for. A player naming it at any time during the play of that hand is liable to have his highest or lowest trump called.

54, If the dealer take the trump card into his hand before it is his turn to play, he may be desired to lay it on the table. Should he show a wrong

card, this card may be called, as also a second, a third, &c., until the trump card be produced.

55. If the dealer declare himself unable to recollect the trump card, his highest or lowest trump may be called at any time during that hand, and, un- less it cause him to revoke, must be played. The call may be repeated, but not changed, .e., from highest to lowest, or vice versa, until such card is played.

Cards Liable to be Called.—56. All exposed cards are liable to be called, and must be left on the table; but a card is not an exposed card when dropped on the floor, or elsewhere below the table. The following are exposed cards :—{i.) two or more cards played at once; (ii.) any card dropped with its face upwards, or in any way exposed on or above the table, even though snatched up so quickly that no one can name it.

57. Ifany one play to an imperfect trick the best card on the table, or lead one which is a winning card as against his adversaries, and then lead again, or play several such winning cards one after the other, without waiting for his partner to play, the latter may be called on to win, if he can, the first or any other of those tricks, and the other cards thus improperly played are ex- posed cards. ;

58. If a player or players, under the impression that the game is lost or won, or for other reasons, throw his or their cards on the table face upwards, such cards are exposed, and liable to be called, each player's by the adver- sary; but, should one player alone retain his hand, he cannot be forced to abandon it.

59. If all four players throw their cards on the table face upwards, the hands are abandoned, and no one can again take up his cards. Should this gencral exhibition show that the game might have beeu saved, or won, neither claim can be entertaiued, unless a revoke be established. The revoking players are then liable to the following penalties: they cannot under any circuinstances win the game by the result of that hand, and the adversaries may add three to their score, or deduct three from that of the revoking players.

60. A card detached from the rest of the hand so as to be named is liable to be called ; but, should the adversary name a wrong card, he is liable to have a suit called when he or his partner have the lead.

61. Ifa player, who has rendered himself liable to have the highest or lowest ofa suit called, fail to play as desired, or if, when called on to lead one suit, [he] lead another, having in his hand oue or more cards of that suit demanded, he incurs the penalty of a revoke. : '

62. If any player lead out of turn, his adversaries may either call the card erroneously led, or may call a suit from him or his partner when it is next the turn of either of thein to lead. :

63. If any player lead out of turn, and the other three have followed him, the trick is complete, and the error cannot be rectified. But, if only the second or the second and third have played to the false lead, their cards, on discovery of the inistake, are taken back ; there is no penalty against any one, excepting the original offender, whose card may be called, or he or his partner, when either

547

of them has next the lead, may be compelled to play any suit demanded by the adversaries.

64. In no case can a player be compelled to play a card which would oblige him to revoke.

65. The call of a card may be repeated until such card has been played.

66. Ifa player called on to lead a suit have none of it, the penalty is paid.

Cards Played in Error, or not Played to a Trick.—67. If the third hand play before the second, the fourth hand may play before his partner.

68. Should the third hand not have played, and the fourth play before his partner, the latter may be called on to win or not to win the trick.

69. If any one oinit playing to a former trick, and such error be not discovered until he has played to the next, the adversaries may claim a new deal. Should they decide that the deal stand good, the surplus card at the end of the hand is considered to have been played to the imperfect trick, but does not consti- tute a revoke therein.

70. Ifany one play two cards to the same trick, or mix his trump, or other eard, with a trick to which it does not properly belong, and the mistake be not discovered until the hand is played out, he is answerable for all consequent revokes he may have made. If during the play of the hand the error be de- tected, the tricks may be counted face downwards, in order to ascertain whether there be among them a card too many. Should this be the case, they may be searched, and the card restored ; the player is, however, liable for all revokes which he may have meanwhile made.

The Revoke.—71. [This] is when a player, holding one or more cards of the suit led, plays a card of a different suit.

72. The penalty for a revoke—ii.) is at the option of the adversaries, who at the end of the hand may either take three tricks from the revoking player, or deduct three points from his score, or add three to their own score; (ii.) can be claimed for as many revokes as occur during the hand ; (iii.) is applic- able only to the score of the game in which it occurs ; (iv.) cannot be divided, 1.€., & player cannot add one or two to his own score and deduct one or two froin the revoking player ; (v.) takes precedence of every other score, e.g.,—the claimants two, their opponents nothing—the former add three to their scorc, and thereby win a treble game, even should the latter have inade thirteen tricks and held four honours.

73. A revoke is established, if the trick in which it occur be turned and quitted, i.c., the hand removed from that trick after it has been turned face downwards on the table, or if either the revoking player or his partner, whether in his right turn or otherwise, lead or play to the following trick.

74, A player may ask his partner whetlicr he has not a card of the suit which he has renounced. Should the question be asked before the trick is turned and quitted, subsequent turning and quitting does not establish the revoke, and the error nay be corrected, unless the question be answered in

the negative, or ae the revoking player or his partner have led or played to the following

rick.

75. At the'end ofthe hand, the claimants of a revoke may search all the tricks.

76. Ifa player discover his mistake in time to save a revoke, the adversaries, whenever they think fit, may call the card thus played in error, or may require him to play his highest or lowest card to that trick in which he has renounced. Any player or players who have played after him may withdraw their cards and substitute others. The cards withdrawn are not liable to be called.

77. If a revoke be claimed, and the accused player or his partner mix the cards before they have been sufficiently examined by the adversaries, the revoke is established. The mixing of the cards only renders the proof of a revoke difficult, but does not prevent the claim, and possible establishment, of the penalty.

78.. ss] revoke cannot be claimed after the cards have been cut for the follow- ing deal.

79. The revoking player and his partner may, under all circumstances, require the hand in which the revoke has been detected to be played out.

80. If a revoke occur, be claimed, and proved, bets on the odd trick or on ainount of score must be decided by the actual state of the latter after the penalty is paid.

8I. Should the players on both sides subject themselves to the penalty of one or more revokes, neither can win the game; each is punished at the dis- cretion of his adversary.

82. In whatever way the penalty be enforced, under no circumstances can a player win the ganie by the result of the hand during which he has revoked ; he cannot score more than four. (Vide rule 61.)

Calling for New Cards.—88. Any player (on paying for them) before, but not after, the pack be cut for the deal may call for fresh cards. He must call for two new packs, of which the dealer takes his choice.

General Rules.—-84. Where a player and his partner have an option of exact- ing from their adversaries one of two penalties, thcy should agree who is to make the election, but must not consult with one another which of the two penalties it is advisable to exact. If they do so consult, they lose their right ; and if cither of them, with or without consent of his partner, demand a penalty to which he is entitled, such decision is final. Tlis rule does not apply in ex- acting the penalties for a revoke; partners have then a right to consult.

85. Any one during the play of a trick, or after the four cards are played, and before, but not after, they are touched for the purpose of gathering them to- gether, may demand that the cards be placed before their respective players.

86. If any one, prior to his partner playing, should call attention to the trick—either by saying that it is his, or by naming his card, or, without being required so to do, by drawing it towards him—the adversaries may require that opponent's partner to play the highest or lowest of the suit theu led, or to win or lose the trick. P

87. In all cases where a penalty has been incurred, the offender is bound to give reasonable time for the decision of his adversaries. .

88. Ifa bystander make any remark which calls the attention of a player or players to an oversight affecting the score, he is liable to be called on, by the players only, to pay the stakes and all bets on that game or rubber. 3

89. A bystander by agreement among the players may decide any question.

90. A card or cards torn or marked must be either replaced by agreement, or new cards called at the expense of the table.

91. Any player may demand to see the last trick turned, andnomore. Under no circumstances can more than eight cards be seen during the play of the hand, viz., the four cards on the table which have not beeu turned and quitted, and the last trick turned.

ETIQUETTE OF WHIST.

The following rules belong to the established etiquette of whist. They are not called laws, as it is difficult, in some cases impossible, to apply any penalty to their infractiou, and the ouly remedy is to cease to play with players who habitually disregard them. ; i

Two packs of cards are invariably used at clubs; if possible this should be adhered to.

Any one having the lead, and several winning cards to play, should not draw a second card out of his hand until his partner has played,to the first trick, such act being a distinct intimation that the former has played a winning card.

No intimation whatever by word or gesture should be given by a player as to the state of his hand or of the game.

Cards played in error.

Revoke.

General rules.

Etiquette of whist.

Dummy.

548

A player who desires the cards to be placed, or who demands to see the last trick, should do it for his own information only, and not in order to invite the attention of his partner. , ;

No player should object to refer to a bystander who professes himself unin- terested in the game, and able to decide any disputed question of facts,—as to who played any particular card, whether honours were claimed though not scored, or vice versa, &c. : pone

It is unfair to revoke purposely: having made a revoke, a player is not justi- fied in making a second in order to conceal the first.

Until the players have made such betsas they wish, bets should not be made with bystanders.

Bystanders should inake no remark, neither should they by word or gesture give any intimation of the state of the game until concluded and scored, nor should they walk round the table to look at the different hands. . ;

No one should look over the hand of a player against whom he is betting.

Dummy.

Dummy is played by three players. One hand, called dummy's, lies exposed on the 'able the ie are Tire nia as those of whist, with the following exceptions :—(i.) dummy deals at the commencement of each rubber; (ii.) dummy is not liable to the penalty for a revoke, as his adversaries see his cards ; should he revoke and the error not be discovered until the trick is turned and quitted, it stands good ; (iii.) dummy being blind and deaf, his partner is not liable to any penalty for an error whence he can gain no advantage: thus, he may expose some or all of his cards, or may declare that he has the game or trick, &c., without incurring any penalty ; if, however, he lead from dummy's hand when he should lead from his own, or vice versa, a suit may be called from the hand which ought to have led. '

Double Dummy.—[This] is played by two players, each having a dummy or ex- posed hand for his partner. The laws of the game do not differ from dummy whist, except in the following special law :—there is no misdeal, as the deal is a disadvantage.

H. J.)

WHISTON, Witt1aM (1667-1752), English divine and mathematician, was born on 9th December 1667 at Norton in Leicestershire, of which village his father was rector. He was educated privately, partly on account of the delicacy of his health and partly that he might act as amanuensis to his father, who had lost his sight. He afterwards entered at Clare College, Cambridge, where he applied himself with extraordinary diligence to mathematical study, and obtained a fellowship in 1693. He next became chaplain to Moore, the learned bishop of Norwich, from whom he received the living of Lowestoft in 1698. He had already given several proofs of his noble but over- scrupulous conscientiousness, and at the same time of the propensity to paradox and the pragmatical and wayward temper which almost destroyed the usefulness of the fine example of disinterestedness which he gave to a lax and lukewarm age. His Theory of the Earth (1696), although destitute of sound scientific foundation, obtained the praise of both Newton and Locke, the latter of whom justly classed the author among those who, if not adding much to our knowledge, "'at least bring some new things to our thoughts." In 1701 he resigned his living, where his conduct had been most exemplary, to become deputy at Cambridge to Sir Isaac Newton, whom he shortly after- wards succeeded as Lucasian professor of mathematics, For several years Whiston continued to write and preach both on mathematical and theological subjects with con- siderable success ; but his study of the Apostolical Con- stitutions had convinced him that Arianism was the creed of the primitive church ; and with him to form an opinion and to publish it were things almost simultaneous, His heterodoxy soon became notorious, and in 1710 he was deprived of his professorship and expelled the university. The rest of his life was spent in incessant controversy, — theological, mathematical, chronological, and miscellaneous. He vindicated his estimate of the Apostolical Constitutions and the Arian views he had derived from them in his Primitive Christianity, published in 1711. In 1713 he produced a reformed liturgy, and in 1730 one of the most valuable of his books, the Life of Samuel Clarke. While heretical on so many points, he was a firm believer in super- natural Christianity, and frequently took the field in de- fence of prophecy and miracle, including anointing the sick and touching for the king's evil. His dislike to

rationalism in religion also made him one of the numerous opponents of Hoadly's Plain Account of the Lord's Supper. He proved to his own satisfaction that Canticles was apocryphal and that Baruch was not. He was ever press- ing his views of ecclesiastical government and discipline, derived from the Apostolical Constitutions, on the rulers of

the church, and was lost in sincere astonishment that they could not see the matter in the same light as himself. He assailed the memory of Athanasius with a virulence at least equal to that with which orthodox divines had treated Arius. He attacked Sir Isaac Newton's chronological system with success ; but he himself lost not only time but money in an endeavour to discover. the longitude. Of all his singular opinions the best known is his advocacy of clerical monogamy, immortalized in the Vicar of Wakefield. Of all his labours the most useful is his translation of Josephus, with valuable notes and dissertations, which continues to be reprinted to this day. This appeared in 1736. His last 'famous discovery, or rather revival of Dr Giles Fletcher's," which he mentions in his autobiography with infinite complacency, was the identification of the Tartars with the lost tribes of Israel. About the same time (1747) he finally left the communion of the Church of England for the Baptist, leaving the church literally as well as figuratively by quitting it as the clergyman began to read the Athanasian creed. He died in London, at the house of his son-in-law, on 22d August 1752, leaving an auto- biography, which deserves more attention than it has re- ceived, both for its characteristic individuality and as a storehouse of curious anecdotes and illustrations of the religious and moral tendencies of the age. It does not, however, contain any account of the proceedings taken against him at Cambridge, these having been published separately at the time.

Whiston is a striking example of a not unfrequent phenomenon, the association of an entirely paradoxical bent of mind with pro- ficiency in the exact sciences. He is still more interesting as ex- emplifying a less ordinary observation, the possibility of arriving at rationalistic conclusions in theology without the slightest tincture of the rationalistic temper. His conclusions were in many respects those of the latitudinarian

divines of his day ; but anything more unlike the processes by which they attained these, or the spirit in which they supported them, would be difficult to imagine. He was not only paradoxical to the verge of craziness, but intolerant to the verge of bigotry. "J had a mind," he says, "to hear Dr Gill preach. But, being informed that he had written a folio book on the Canticles, I declined to go to hear him." This moral and intellectual unreason effectually destroyed the weight otherwise due to his erudition and acuteness, and left nothing recommendable for imitation in his conduct as a whole, except his passion for truth and his heroic disinterestedness,—virtues in which few have rivalled him, though some may have exhibited them less ostentatiously. When not engaged in controversy he was not devoid of good sense. He

often saw men and things very clearly, and some of his bon-mots are admirable.

WHITBY, a seaport and watering-place in the North Riding of Yorkshire, England, is picturesquely situated on both banks of the Esk, at its entrance into the North Sea, and on the North-Eastern Railway, 2474 miles north of London and 56 north-east of York. The river is crossed by a bridge which opens in the centre to permit the passage of vessels. The old parts of the town present a very antique and picturesque appearance, with narrow, steep, and irregular streets and plain old-fashioned houses, while the modern portion, included chiefly in West Cliff, possesses the usual characteristics of a fashionable watering-place. Of the old abbey all that now remains are the ruins of the church, occupying the site of the old Saxon building, but exhibiting no traces of remains earlier than the 12th century. The oldest portion is the choir, which is Early English ; the transept also is Early English but of later date; and the nave is rich Decorated. The west side of the nave fell in 1763 and the tower in 1830. On the south side are foundations of cloisters and domestic build- ings. Adjoining the abbey is Whitby Hall, built by Sir Francis Cholmley about 1580 from the materials of the monastic buildings, enlarged and fortified by Sir Hugh Cholmley about 1635, and restored within recent years. A little below the abbey is the parish church of St Mary, at first Norman, which still retains some portions of the

original building, but owing to a variety of alterations and reconstructions at different periods presents a very incongruous appearance. The principal public buildings are the town-hall, the museum, the public baths, St Hilda's Hall, the temperance hall, and the sea-side home. Pre- vious to 1632 the piers of the harbour were constructed of wood, but in that year a.west pier of stone was con- structed by Sir Hugh Cholmley. Under an Act of Parlia- ment obtained in 1702 the west pier was reconstructed and the east pier greatly improved. Lately further im- provements have been in progress, including the dredging of the river and the extension of the quay to permit

da,

In 1886

the landing of fish close to the railway station. the number of vessels that entered the port was 384 of 48,439 tons, the number that cleared 371 of 48,504 tons. The chief exports are jet ornaments and iron, but the shipping trade is on the decline; in fact the town is being gradually transformed into a fashionable watering-

place. The manufacture of alum, by which in the reign of Elizabeth the foundations of its prosperity were laid, is now discontinued. The introduction of iron ship-building has also affected an industry (the building of wooden ships) for which Whitby was at one time famous: it was here that the ships for Captain Cook's voyages were built. In 1886 the number of vessels built at the port was 3 of 1356 tons. Whale-fishing, established in 1753, began to decline in 1823, and was abandoned in 1837. The only manufacture that maintains its importance is that of jet ornaments, peculiar to the town, and made from time immemorial from a variety of petrified wood found towards the bottom of the Upper Lias. The fishing industry, owing to improved railway communications, has been progressive within late years. In 1886 it employed 231 boats of 1830 tons. Whitby is an important herring fishing station. The popu- lation of the urban sanitary district (area 2008 acres) was 12,460 in 1871 and 14,086 in 1881.

Whitby was called by the Saxons Streonshalh, but in Domesday the name occurs as Whitteby or the “ white town.” It owes its origin to the foundation of a monastery by Oswy, king of Northum- bria, in 658, in fulfilment of a vow for a victory gained over King Penda. The monastery embraced an establishment both for nuns and for monks of the Benedictine order, and under Hilda, a grand- niece of Edwin, a former king of Northumbria, acquired high celebrity. In 664 it was the meeting-place of a synod held under the presidency of Oswy to determine the time of kecping Easter and the shape of the religious tonsure. In 867 the town and abbey were destroyed by the Danes, after which they lay waste for upwards of 200 years. At the Conquest they belonged to Gospatric, earl of Northumberland, whose lands were confiscated by William and

given to Hugh, earl of Chester, who sold them to William de Percy. In 1074 the restoration of the abbey was begun by Reinfrid, who had been a soldier in the Conqueror’s army. In 1539 the abbey and lands were surrendered to the crown, and in 1555 were pur- chased by Sir Richard Cholmley. Whitby obtained the grant of a market from Henry II., and of a fair from Henry VI. It was created a parliamentary borough in 1832, but in 1885 it was in- cluded in the Whitby division of the North Riding.

WHITE, Gitpert (1720-1793), the natural historian of Selborne, was born on 18th July 1720 in the little Hamp- shire village which his writings have rendered so familiar to all lovers of either books or nature. He was educated at Basingstoke under Warton, father of the poet, and sub- sequently at Oriel College, Oxford, where he obtained a fellowship (1744). Entering upon a country curacy in 1753, he returned to Selborne in 1755, where he. seems soon to have discontinued his ministrations. He obtained a sinecure living from his college |} in 1758; but after his father’s death in the # same year he became curate of the neigh- bouring parish of Faringdon, and repeatedly declined valuable livings elsewhere, until 1784, when he returned to the curacy of a ays\| Selborne, and there ministered until his death “5 \ } on 26th June 1793.’ He was never married.

@ 100 200 300 #00 500 Feet

His daily life was practically unbroken by any great changes or incidents ; for nearly half a cen- tury his pastoral duties, his watchful country walks, the assiduous care of his garden, and the scrupulous posting of his calendar of observations made up the essentials of a full and delightful life, but hardly of a biography. At most we can only fill up the portrait by reference to the tinge of simple old- fashioned scholarship, which on its historic side made him an eager searcher for antiquities and among old records, and on its poetic occasionally stirred him to an excursion as far as that gentlest slope of Parnassus inhabited by the descriptive muse. Hence we are thrown back upon that correspondence with brother naturalists which has raised his life and its influence so far beyond the common- place. His strong naturalist tendencies are not, however, properly to be realized without a glance at the history of his younger brothers. The eldest, Thomas, retired from trade to devote himself to natural and physical science, and contributed many papers to the Royal Society, of which he was a fellow. The next, Benjamin, became the publisher of most of the leading works of natural history which appeared during his lifetime, including that of his brother. The third, John, became vicar of Gibraltar, where he accumulated much material for a work on the natural history of the rock and its neigh- bourhood, and carried on a scientific correspondence, not only with his eldest brother, but with Linneus. The youngest, Henry, who died soon after entering the church, is mentioned as having engaged in meteorological observations. The sister's son, Samuel Barker, also became in time one of White's most valued correspondents. With other naturalists, too, he had intimate relations: with Pennant and Daines Barrington he was in constant correspondence, often too with the botanist Lightfoot, and sometimes with Sir Joseph Banks and others, while Chandler and other antiquaries kept alive his historic zeal. At first he was content to furnish in- formation from which the works of Pennant and Barrington largely profited ; but gradually the ambition of separate authorship de- veloped from a suggestion thrown out by the latter of these writers in 1/70. The next year White sketched to Pennant the project of "a natural history of my native parish, an annus historico-naturalis, comprising a journal for a whole year, and illustrated with large notes and observations. Such a beginning might induce more able naturalists to write the history of various districts and might in time occasion the production of a work so much to be

wished for, a full and complete natural history of these kingdoms." Yet the famous Natural History of Selborne did not appear until 1789. It was well received from the beginning.

To be a typical parish natural history so far as completeness or order is concerned, it has of course no pretensions; batches of letters, an essay on antiquities, a naturalist's calendar, and mis- cellaneous jottings of all kinds are but the unsystematized material of the work proper, which was never written. Yet it is largely to this very piecemeal character that its popularity has been due. The style has the simple, yet fresh and graphic, directness of all good letter writing, and there is no lack of passages of keen observation, and even shrewd interpretation. White not only notes the homes

and ways, the times and seasons, of plants and animals,—com- paring, for instance, the different ways in which the squirrel, the tield-mouse, and the nuthatch eat their hazel-nuts,—or watches the migrations of birds, which were then only beginning to be properly recorded or understood, but he knows more than any other observer until Darwin about the habits and the usefulness of the earth- worms, and is as certain as the latest physicists that plants distil dew and do not merely condense it. The book is also interesting as having appeared on the borderland between the medieval and the modern school of natural history, avoiding the uncritical blundering of the old Encyclopedists, without entering on the technical and analytic character of the opening age of separate monographs. Moreover, as the first book which raised natural history into the region of literature, much as the Compleat Angler did for that gentle art, we must affiliate to it the more finished products of later writers like Thorean or Jefferies. Yet, while these are essential merits of the book, its endearing charm lies deeper, in the swect and kindly personality of the author, who on his rambles gathers no spoil, but watches the birds and field-mice without disturbing them from their nests, and quietly plants an acorn where he thinks an oak is wanted, or sows beech-nuts in what is now a stately row. He overflows with anecdotes, seldom indeed gets beyond the anecdotal stage, yet from this all study of nature must begin ;

and he sees everywhere intelligence and beauty, love and sociality, where a later view of nature insists primarily on mere adaptation of interests or purely competitive struggles. The en- cyclopedic interest in nature, although in White's day culminat- ingin the monumental synthesis of Buffon, was also disappearing betore the analytic specialism inaugurated by Linneus; yct the catholic interests of the simple naturalist of Selborne fully reappear a century later in the greater naturalist of Down.

WHITE, Josera Bianco (1775-1841), author, was born at Seville on 11th July 1775. He was educated for the Roman Catholic priesthood; but after his ordination doubts as to the principles of Catholicism led him to escape from Spain to England (1810), where he ulti- mately entered the Established Church, having studied theology at Oxford and made the friendship of Arnold, Newman, and Whately. He became tutor in the family of the last-named when he was made archbishop of Dublin (1831). While in this position he embraced Unitarian views ; and he found an asylum amongst the Unitarians of Liverpool, where he died on 20th May 1841.

His principal writings are Doblado's Letters from Spain, 1822 ; Lividence against Catholicism, 1825; Second Travels of an Irish Gentleman in Search of a Religion, 1834; Observations on Heresy and Orthodoxy, 1835. They all show literary ability, and were extensively read in their day. It is probable that his name will be longest known in the world of letters by his sonnet addressed Lo Night (" Mysterious night ! when our first parent knew"), which has found its way into almost all the recent anthologies, and was spoken of by his contemporaries, Hunt and Coleridge, as one of the finest in English or indeed in any language.

See Life of the Rev. Joseph Blanco White, written by himself, with portions of his Correspondence, edited by John Hamilton Thom, London, 1845,

WHITE, Rozerr (1645-1704), engraver and draughts- man, was born in London in 1645. He studied engraving under David Loggan, for whom he executed many architec- tural subjects; his early works also include landscapes and engraved title-pages for books. He acquired great skill in portraiture, his works of this class being commonly drawn with the black-

lead pencil upon vellum, and after- wards excellently engraved in line. Portraits executed in this manner he marked "ad vivum," and they are prized by collectors for their artistic merit and their authenticity. Virtue catalogued 275 portrait engravings by White, in- cluding the likenesses of many of the most celebrated per- sonages of his day ; and nine portraits engraved in mezzo- tint are assigned to him by J. Chaloner Smith. White died at Bloomsbury, London, in 1704.

His son, George White, who was born about 1671 and died about 1734, is also known as an engraver and portrait-painter.

WHITEBAIT, the vernacular name of a small Clupeoid fish which appears in large shoals in the estuary of the Thames during the summer months, and is held in great esteem as a delicacy for the table. As to whether or not it is a distinct form, the opinions of naturalists have been divided ever since their attention was directed to the question. Pennant and Shaw believed it to be some kind

of Cyprinoid fish, similar to the bleak, whilst Donovan, in his Natural Hestory of British Fishes (1802-8), misled by specimens sent to him as whitebait, declared it to be the young of the shad. In 1820 Yarrell proved conclu- sively that Donovan's opinion was founded upon an error; unfortunately he contented himself with comparing white- bait with the shad only, and in the end adopted the opinion of the Thames fishermen, whose interest it was to represent it as a distinct adult form; thus the whitebait is introduced into Yarrell's History of British Fishes (1836) as Clupea alba. The French ichthyologist Valenciennes went a step further, declaring it to be not only specifically but also generically distinct from all other Clupeoids. On ex- amining the specimens of Clupea alba which passed from Yarrell's collection into the British Museum, the present writer found them to be the young of the common her- ring (Catal. Fish. Brit. Afus., vii. p. 416, 1868); and this conclusion was fully borne out by visits to the Thames boats and by an examination of their captures on the spot. The bulk of the whitebait caught consists, in May and June, chiefly of the fry of herring, mixed with a number of shrimps, gobies, sticklebacks, pipe-fishes, young flounders, and an occasional sprat. But,

the Thames being unequal to the supply of the large demand for this delicacy, large quantities of whitebait are now brought to London and other markets from many parts of the coast. They fre- quently consist of a much greater proportion of young sprats than the fish obtained from the Thames; and they sometimes prove a valuable mine for the collector, who may find mixed with them pelagic animals (such as the smaller kinds of Cephalopods) which are not at all, or but rarely, met with at the mouth of the Thames or on the south coast generally. In times past whitebait were considered to be peculiar to the estuary of the Thames; and, even after the specific identification of Thames white- bait with the young of the herring from other localities, it was still thought that there was a distinctive superiority in the condition and flavour of the former. It is possible that the young herrings find in the estuary of the Thames a larger amount of suitable food than on other parts of © the coast, where the water may be of greater purity, but possesses less abundance of the minute animal life on which whitebait thrive. Indeed, Thames whitebait which have been compared with young herrings from the mouth of the Exe, the Cornish coast, Menai Strait, and the Firth of Forth seemed to be better fed; but, of course, the specific characteristics of the herring,—into which we need not enter here,—were nowise modified.

The fry of fishes is used as an article of diet in almost every country: in Germany the young of various species of Cyprinoids, in Italy and Japan the young of nearly every fish capable of being readily captured in sufficient numbers, in the South Sea Islands the fry of Zeuthis, in New Zealand young Galawxias are consumed at certain seasons in large quantities ; and, like whitebait, these fry bear distinct names, different from those of the adult fish.

Whitebait fishing in the Thames lasts from the end of March to September. The majority of the fish caught at the beginning of spring are about two inches long; as the season advances the pro- portion of larger specimens becomes greater, although very small ones occur abundantly throughout the season,—thus apparently confirming the opinion of those who maintain that the herring is in its spawning not bound to any particular month. Whitebait are caught on the flood-tide from boats moored in from 3 to 5 fathoms of water. The net used is a bag some 20

feet long, narrow and small-meshed towards the tail-end, the mouth being kept open in the direction of the advancing tide by a framework 3 or 4 feet square. It is placed alongside the boat and sunk to a depth of 4 feet below the surfacc; from time to time the end of the bag is lifted into the boat, to empty it of its contents. The "schools" of whitebait, advancing and retiring with the tide for days and probably for weeks, have to run the gauntlet of a dozen of these nets, and therefore get very much thinned in num-

— ee ee

WHI—W HI ool

ber by the end of the season. When the view commenced to gain ground that whitebait were young herring, the question arose whether or not the immense destruction of the young brood caused by this mode of fishing injuriously affected the fishery of the mature herring. This undoubtedly it does ; but, since it has been ascertained that the herring is much more restricted in its migra- tions than was formerly believed, and that it merely moves from the feeding-grounds in the depth of the ocean to the shallower spawn- ing-grounds of the neighbouring coast, the injury, such as it is, must be local and limited to the particular district in which the fishing for whitebait is methodically practised.

WHITEFIELD, or Stanp, a large manufacturing village of Lancashire, England, in the township of Pilkington, is situated a short distance from the Radcliffe Bridge station on the Lancashire and Yorkshire Railway, 54 miles north of Manchester and 196 from London. It possesses a number of fine villas inhabited by Manchester merchants. The church of All Saints, commonly called Stand church, was erected in 1826 from the designs of Sir Charles Barry. There is a school founded and endowed by Henry Siddal in 1688. Whitefield has risen into importance since 1829. There are coal mines in the neighbourhood, and cotton- spinning and hand and power loom weaving are carried on. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 2048 acres) was 9054 in 1871 and 9516 in 1881.

A family of the name of Pilkington was settled at Pilkington Tower or Stand soon after the Conquest, Leonard Pilkington being mentioned as lord of the manor in the tenth year of Henry I. The manor of Pilkington was granted to the earl of Derby by Henry VIL. after the battle of Bosworth. The old hall of the Pilking- ton family, called Stand Hall, existed as recently as 1848, On the foundation stone was the date 1580.

WHITEFIELD, Grorce (1714-1770), one of the most eloquent of pulpit orators, was born on 16th December 1714 at the Bell Inn, Gloucester, of which his father was landlord. At about twelve years of age he was sent to the school of St Mary de Crypt, Gloucester, where on account of his skill in elocution he was chosen to perform in a piece acted before the corporation of the school. He also became very fond of reading plays, a circumstance which probably had considerable influence on his subsequent career, for his eloquence was essentially dramatic in its character. At the age of fifteen he was taken from school to assist his mother in the public-house, and for a year and a half was a common drawer. He then again returned to school to prepare for the university, and in 1733 entered as a servitor at Pembroke College, Oxford. There he came under the influence of the Methodists (see WEsLEY), and entered so enthusiastically into their practices and habits that he was attacked by a severe illness, which com- pelled him to return to his native town. His sincere and enthusiastic piety attracted the notice of Dr Benson, bishop of Gloucester, who ordained him deacon on 20th June 1736. Having in the following week returned to Oxford and taken his degree, he began an evangelizing tour in Bath, Bristol, and other towns, his eloquence at once attracting immense multitudes. In 1736 he was invited by Wesley to go out asa missionary to Georgia, and went to London to wait on the trustees. Before set- ting sail he preached in some of the principal London churches, and so rapidly did the fame of his eloquence spread that crowds began to assemble at the church doors long before daybreak. Several of the sermons which he then preached were published "at the request of the hearers." On 28th December 1737 he embarked for Georgia, which he reached on 7th May 1738. After three months' residence there he returned to England to receive priest's orders, and to raise contributions for the support of an orphanage. He was, however, coldly received by the clergy generally, and began to preach in the open air. At Bristol his

addresses to the colliers soon attracted crowds, which were latterly estimated to exceed 20,000 persons. Whitefield's voice was so powerful that it penetrated to the

utmost limits of the crowd. His fervour and dramatic action held them spell-bound, and his homely pathos soon broke down all barriers of resistance. 'The first discovery of their being affected," he says, "was by seeing the white gutters made by their tears, which plentifully fell down their black cheeks." In 1738 an account of Whitefield's voyage from London to Georgia was published without his knowledge. In 1739 he published his Journal from his arrival in Savannah to his return to London, and also his Journal from his arrival in London to his departure thence on his way to Georgia. As his embarkation was further delayed for ten weeks he published A Continua- tion of the Rev. Mr Whitefield's Journal during the time he was delayed in England by the Embargo. His unfavour- able reception in England by the clergy led him to make reprisals. To Dr Trapp's attack on the Methodists he pub- lished in 1739 A Preservative against Unsettled Notions, in which the clergy of the Church of England were rather bitterly denounced ; he also published shortly afterwards The Spirit and Doctrine and Lives of our Modern Clergy, and a reply to a pastoral letter of the bishop of London in which he had been attacked. In the same year ap- peared Sermons on Various Subjects (2 vols.), the Church Companion, or Sermons on Several Subjects, and a recom- mendatory epistle to the Life of Thomas Halyburton. He again embarked for America in August 1739, and remained there two years, preaching in all the principal towns. While there he published Three Letters from Mr White- Jjield, in which he referred to the "mystery of iniquity" in Tillotson, and asserted that that divine knew no more of Christ than Mohammed did.

During his absence from England Whitefield found that a divergence of doctrine from Calvinism had been intro- duced by Wesley ; and notwithstanding Wesley's exhorta- tions to brotherly kindness and forbearance he withdrew from the Wesleyan communion. Thereupon his friends built for him near Wesley's church a wooden structure, which was named the Tabernacle. In 1741, on the invita- tion of Ralph and Ebenezer Erskine, he paid a visit to Scotland, commencing his labours in the

Secession meeting- house, Dunfermline. But, as he refused to limit his minis- trations to one sect, the Seceders and he parted company, and without their countenance he made a tour through the principal towns of Scotland, the authorities of which in most instances presented him with the freedom of the burgh, in token of their estimate of the benefits to the com- munity resulting from his preaching. From Scotland he went to Wales, where on 14th November he married Mrs James,a widow. The marriage was not ahappyone. On his return to London he preached to the crowds in Moor- fields during the Whitsun holidays with such effect as to attract nearly all the people from the shows. After a second visit to Scotland, June to October 1742, and a tour through England and Wales, 1742-44, he embarked in August 1744 for America, where he remained till June 1748. On his return to London he found his congregation at the Taber- nacle dispersed ; and his circumstances were so depressed that he was obliged to sell his household furniture to pay his orphan-house debts. Having, however, made the ac- quaintance of the countess of Huntingdon, he soon found his pecuniary affairs on a better footing. The countess appointed him one of her chaplains, built and endowed Calvinistic Methodist chapels in various parts of the country, and erected a college for the training of candi- dates for the ministry. The remainder of Whitefield's life was spent chiefly in evangelizing tours in Great Britain, Ireland, and America. It has been stated that 'in the compass of a single week, and that for years, he spoke in general forty hours, and in very many sixty, and that to thousands." On his return from America to England for

the last time the change in his appearance forcibly im- pressed Wesley, who wrote in his Journal : "He seemed to be an old man, being fairly worn out in his Master's ser- vice, though he had hardly seen fifty years." When health was failing him he placed himself on what he called " short allowance," preaching only once every week day and thrice on Sunday. In 1769 he returned to America for the seventh and last time. He was now affected by a severe asthmatic complaint; but to those who advised him to take some rest, he answered, "I had rather wear out than rust out." He died on the 30th September 1770 at Newbury, New England, where he

had arrived on the previous evening with the intention of preaching next day. In accordance with his own desire he was buried before the pulpit in the Presbyterian church of the town where he died.

Whitefield, says Lecky, " was chiefly a creature of impulse and emotion. He had very little logical skill, no depth or range of knowlege, not much self-restraint." He possessed neither Wesley's organizing power, nor his personal authority and influence. His one talent was his gift of popular oratory, the secret of which was his command of clear and direct English, his remarkable elocution- ary and dramatic skill, and his passionate fervour and simple pathos. His printed works convey a totally inadequate idea of his oratorical powers, and are all in fact below mediocrity. They ap- peared in a collected form in 1771-72 in seven volumes, the last containing Memoirs of his Life, by Dr John Gillies. His Letters, 1734-70, were comprised in vols. i., ii., and iii. of his Works and were also published separately. His Select Works, with memoir by J. Smith, appeared in 1850.

See also Philip's Whitefield's Life and Times, 1837 ; Tyerman's Life of Whitefield, 1876-77 ; and Lecky's History of England, vol. ii. (T. F. H.)

WHITEFISH is a collective name applied in different countries to very different kinds of freshwater fishes, which, however, have this in common, that their body is covered with regularly arranged silvery scales, without spots or orna- mental colours. Thus the numerous European species of the Cyprinoid genus Leuciscus are frequently comprised under the name of '" Whitefish," whilst in North America this term is in general use for the various species of the Salmonoid genus Coregonus, which abound in every lake and river of Canada and the northern parts of the United States.

WHITEHAVEN, a parliamentary borough of England and the principal seaport of Cumberland, is situated at the extremity of the Solway Firth, facing the Irish Sea, 41 miles south-west of Carlisle and 304 north-west of London. It is connected by a branch line with the London and North Western Railway. The town is built chiefly in a valley overlooked by high grounds on the north and south. The streets are spacious, with handsome shops. The principal public buildings are the town-hall, courtroom,

custom-house, police office, theatre, baths, free library, infirmary, and dispensary. The harbour is pro- tected by two stone piers ; the west pier (erected 1824-39) is 965 feet long, and the north pier (1837-41) 918 feet. There is daily communication with Liverpool, Glasgow, Belfast, Dublin, and the Isle of Man. The town has an import trade from America, the Baltic ports, France, Spain and Portugal, and the Mediterranean, The princi- pal exports are coal, pig iron, lime, freestone, and grain. The number of vessels that entered the port in 1886 was 2377, of 269,811 tons, the number that cleared 2297, of 257,025 tons. Iron ship-building is carried on, but the number of vessels built in 1886 was only 2 of 2406 tons. The other principal industries are engineering, brass- founding, boiler-making, brick and earthenware manu- facturing, and dyeing. 'There are two large collieries, one extending about 14 miles under the sea. Fishing is carried on toa small extent, the number of boats engaged in 1886 being 18 of 441 tons. The population of the urban sani- tary district (area 679 acres) was 18,243 in 1871 and 19,295 in 1881,

Whitehaven owes its name to the light colour of the rocks adjoining it. In the reign of Henry I. the manor formed part of

the monastery of St Mary's at York, to which the priory of St Bees belonged. In 1599 the manor of St Bees was purchased from Sir Thomas Chaloner by General Lowther and Thomas Wybergh, and the whole in 1644 came into the possession of Sir John Lowther, under whose auspices the town advanced with great rapidity.

From Charles II. the Lowthers obtained an additional grant of 150

acres, now partly included in the town, soon after which mcans were taken greatly to improve the harbour. By Acts passed in the 7th and 11th years of Queen Anne's reign the town is governed by twenty-two trustees elected triennially. The earl of Lonsdale, whose castle adjoins the town, is lord of the manor. Whitehaven has returned one member to parliament since 1832.

WHITELOCKE, BurstropE (1605-1675), son of Sir James Whitelocke, a justice of the King's Bench, was born at London, on 2d August 1605. He was educated at Eton and afterwards at Merchant Taylors' School, — London. In 1620 he entered St John's College, Oxford. In preparing for the bar he became acquainted with Selden, who aided him in his studies and gave him the use of his library. Whitelocke sat for Stafford in the parliament of 1626, and in the course of that year was called to the bar. In 1630 he married a daughter of Alderman Bennett. During the years that followed he was in the favour of Laud. He was not a man likely to raise disturbances in church and state; and he took an active part in the preparation of the law of Court Masque after Prynne's condemnation in 1634, not long after which his wife died. Before the year was out he made a runaway match with the sister of Lord Willoughby of Parham.

When the troubles began Whitelocke's cautious nature led him to distrust Laud, though he kept himself from all communication with the Scots. In the Long Parliament he represented Great Marlow, and took part in the impeach- ment of Strafford. Later on he did his best to avert a civil war, but prudently remained at Westminster instead of joining the king. When the Royalists advanced after Edge- hill, his house, Fawley Court, was pillaged by the soldiers. When attempts were subsequently made to open negotia- tions with the king, he became a leading member of the peace party, though, as he tells us himself, he "kept fair with the other leading men of the House, as Mr Pym, Hampden, and the rest, and would not entirely engage in any party, which made him the more courted by all." He was one of the commissioners appointed to carry the terms of the Parliament to Oxford in May, and drew on himself suspicions of too close intercourse with the king. Having at the close of 1644 taken part in a conference between some of the Scots and the English Presbyterians, his advice did much to frustrate a proposal for a parliamentary accusa- tion of Cromwell. On the other hand, he spoke in the Com- mons against the Self-Denying Ordinance. He was again a commissioner in the negotiation with the king at Uxbridge early in 1645. Whitelocke was present at the siege of Oxford in 1646, and was on excellent terms with Fairfax and Cromwell. Later in the year he opposed an ordi- nance for punishing heretics. His common-sense seems to have rallied him to the tolerationists, and he took their side in opposing the divine right of

presbytery and in getting rid of the Scottish army. In 1647 he tried to moderate the opposition of the Presbyterians to the army, but as usual he did not throw himself violently on either side. In 1648 he was named a commissioner of the great seal. He was much troubled at the attack on the House of Commons by Pride's " purge," but he did not resign his post. He refused to have anything to do with the king's trial ; but he accepted a commissionership of the new great seal of the commonwealth after the king's execution. Both before the trial and afterwards he was on intimate terms with Cromwell. In May 1649 his second wife died. In January 1650 he proposed to Lady Hungerford, but, being refused by her, he was married in the following August to the widow of Alderman Wilson. Whitelocke was now a

member of the council of state, striving to keep on good terms with all parties. After Cromwell's return from the Scottish war in 1651 Whitelocke was much consulted by him; but he gave offence by suggesting a restoration of the young king. After the dissolution of the Long Parliament in 1653 he was sent as ambassador to Sweden, as he thought, merely to get him out of the way. Returning in July 1654, he was chosen member of the first parliament of the Protectorate by the county of Buckingham, and he again became a commissioner of the great seal. In May 1655, after the dissolution of that parliament, he refused to execute an ordinance made by the Protector and council only for the reform of Chancery, and was consequently dismissed in June, but was soon afterwards appointed com- missioner of the treasury. He again sat for Buckingham- shire in the second Protectorate parliament in 1657, and took an active part in forwarding the Humble Petition and Advice. In December he was appointed one of Crom- well's lords.

After Cromwell's death Whitelocke rallied to his son, and in January 1659 was again a commissioner of the great seal. After Richard's fall he sat in the council of state, and'when the Rump was turned out by the soldiers he accepted an appointment to the army's committee of safety. On Ist November he became keeper of the great seal ; but on the return of the Rump he thought it prudent to go into hiding. Monk's arrival delivered

him from his fears; but, when the Convention Parliament was chosen, he, characteristically " foreseeing what would come to pass, did not think fit to labour to be a Parliament man." Of course he accepted the Restoration and was included in the Act of Oblivion. He died at his seat at Chilton in Wilt- shire in 1675.

WHITETHROAT, a name commonly given to two species of little birds, one of which, the Motacilla sylvia of Linneeus and Sylvia rufa) or S. cinerea of some recent authors, is regarded as the type, not only of the genus Sylvia, but of the so-called Family Sylwide (cf. WARBLER).

Very widely spread over Great Britain, in some places tolerably common, and by its gesticulations and song rather conspicuous, it is one of those birds which has gained a familiar nickname, and " Peggy Whitethroat" is the anthropomorphic appellation of school- boys and milkmaids, though it shares " Nettle-creeper" and other homely names with perhaps more than one congener, while to the writers and readers of books it is by way of distinction the Greater Whitethroat. The song of this bird, except by association with the season at which it is uttered, can scarcely be called agreeable, some of its notes being very harsh ; but the performer may be seen to be always in earnest, erecting the feathers of his crown, puffing out those of his throat, shaking his wings, and making other rapid Movements expressive of his feelings. Occasionally he will deliver his song as he flies up in a peculiar fashion, describing small circles in the air, stopping with a jerk, and then returning to the spot whence he arose.

The Lesser Whitethroat, Sylvia cwrruca,? is both in habits and plumage a much less sightly bird: the predominant reddish brown of the upper surface, and especially the rufous edging of the wing- feathers, that are so distinctive of its larger congener, are wanting, and the whole plumage above is of a smoky-grey, while the bird in its movements is never obtrusive, and it rather shuns than courts observation, generally keeping among the thickest foliage, whence its rather monotonous song, uttered especially in sultry weather, may be continually heard without a glimpse of the vocalist being presented. The nests of each of these species are very pretty works of art, firmly built of bents or other plant-stalks, and usually lined with horsehair ; but the sides and bottom are often so finely woven

as to be like open basket-work, and the eggs, splashed, spotted, or streaked with olive-brown, are frequently visible from beneath through the interstices of the fabric. This style of nest-building seems to be common to all the species of the genus Sylvia, as now restricted, and in many districts has obtained for the builders the

1 This specific term has been very constantly but most inaccurately, not to say absurdly, used for a very different bird, the Chiffchaff (cf, [Willow] WREN). Its only proper application is to the Whitethroat.

? Of course this is not the cwrruca of ancient writers, that being almost certainly the Hedge-Sparrow (see SPaRRow), the ordinary dupe of the Cuckow.

name of "Hay-Jack," quite without reference to the kind of bird which puts the nests together, and thus is also applied to the Blackcap, S. atricapilia, and the Garden-Warbler—this last being merely a book-name —S. salicaria (8. hortensis of some writers).? The former of these deserves mention as one of the sweetest songsters of Great Britain, and fortunately it is very generally distributed in summer. To quote the praise bestowed upon it, in more than one passage, by Gilbert White would here be superfluons. The name Blackcap is applicable only to the cock bird, who further differs from his brown-capped mate by the purity of his ashy-grey upper plumage; but, notwithstanding the marked sexual difference in appearance, he takes on himself a considerable share of the duties of incubation, and has been declared by more than one writer to sing while so employed—a statement that seems hardly credible. All these four birds, as a rule, leave Great Britain at the end of summer to winter in the south. Two other species, one certainly belonging to the same genus, S. orphea, and the other, S. nisoria, a somewhat aberrant form, have occurred two or three times in Great Britain. The rest, numbering perhaps a dozen, must be passed over.

Nearly allied to Sylvia, if indeed it can be properly separated, is Melizophilus, which consists of two species, one of them the curious Dartford Warbler of English writers, I. wndatus or provincialis. This is on

many accounts a very interesting bird, for it is one of the few of its family that winter in England,—a fact the more remarkable when it is known to be migratory in most parts of the Continent. Its distribution in England is very local, and chiefly confined to the southern counties, where through causes very in- sufficiently known it has of late years become so scarce that its extermination seems probable. It is a pretty little dark-coloured bird, which here and there may be scen on furze-grown heaths from Kent to Cornwall. In spasmodic gesticulations the cock surpasses the Whitethroat ; but these feats are almost confined to the pair- ing-season, and at other times of the year the bird's habits arc retiring. Fora species with wings so feebly formed it has a wide range, inhabiting nearly all the countries of the Mediterranean seaboard, from Palestine to the Strait of Gibraltar, and thence along the west coast of Europe to the English Channel ; but every- where else it seems to be very local.

This may be the most convenient place for noticing the small group of Warblers belonging to the well-marked genus Hypolais, which, though in general appearance and certain habits resembling the Phylloscopi (cf. [Willow] WREN), would seem usually to have little to do with those birds, and to be rather allied to the Sylviinz, if not to the Acrocephaling (cf. WARBLER). They have a remark- ably loud song, and in consequence are highly valued on the con- tinent of Europe, where two species at least spend the summer. One of them, H. icterina, has occurred more than once in the British Islands, and their absence as regular visitors is to be regretted. Among the minor characteristics of this little group is one afforded by their eggs, which are of a deeper or paler brownish pink, spotted with purplish black. Their nests are beautiful structures, combin- ing warmth with lightness in a way that cannot be fully appreciated by any description. ; ;

A great number of other more or less allied forms, in- teresting as they are in various ways, cannot for want of

space be here mentioned. (A. N.) WHITFIELD, Joun Crarxe (1770-1836), organist and composer, was born at Gloucester, 13th December 1770, and educated at Oxford under Dr Philip Hayes. In 1789 he was appointed organist of the parish church at Ludlow. Four years later he

took the degree of Mus. Bac. at Cam- bridge, and in 1795 he was chosen organist of Armagh cathedral, whence he removed in the same year to Dublin, with the appointments of organist and master of the children at St Patrick's cathedral and Christchurch. Driven from Ireland by the rebellion of 1798, he accepted the post of organist at Trinity and St John's Colleges, Cambridge, and about the same time assumed the surname of Whitfield, in addition to that of Clarke, by which he had been previously known. He took the degree of Mus. Doe. at Cambridge in 1799, and in 1810 proceeded to the same grade at Oxford. In 1820 he was elected organist and master of the choristers at Hereford cathedral ; and on the death of Dr Haig he was appointed professor of

3 This bird, if it has any true English name at all, should perhaps be called the "Pettichaps," that being applied to it, though not exclusively, in Lancashire and Yorkshire, but not, it would seem, in Northampton- shire or Hampshire (cf. Yarrell's Br. Birds, 4th ed. pp. 415, 416). ;

4 The Blackcap is recorded as having occurred several times in England in winter ; but its tarryiug was doubtless involuntary.

music at Cambridge. Three years afterwards he resigned these appointments in consequence of an attack of paralysis. He died at Hereford, 22d February 1836.

Whitfield's compositions were very numerous. Among the best of them are four volumes of anthems, published in 1805. He also composed a great number of songs, one of which—Bird of the Wilderness, written to some well-known verses by James Hogg, the "Ettrick Shepherd "—attained a high degree of popularity. But the great work of his life was the publication, in a popular and eminently useful form, of the oratorios of Handel, which he was the first to present to the public with a complete pianoforte accompaniment. Before his time these works could only be obtained either in full score or with a plain-figured bass, in which forms they were absolutely useless to the unlearned musician. But so great was

the success of his experiment that at the present day the form he originated is the only one with which the general public is familiar. His own volumes, indeed, have been long out of print, and are not now very easy to obtain ; but every one of the great oratorios, arranged on a similar plan, may be bought at a price within the reach of the poorest student of art.

WHITGIFT, Joun (1530 or 1533-1604), archbishop of Canterbury, was descended from a middle-class family, the elder branch of which had been long settled in Yorkshire. He was the eldest son of Henry Whitgift, merchant of Great Grimsby, Lincolnshire, where he was born, according to one account in 1533, but according to a calculation founded on a statement of his own in 1530. At an early age his education was entrusted to his uncle, Robert Whit- gift, abbot of the neighbouring monastery of Wellow, by whose advice he was afterwards sent to St Anthony's school, London. There he lodged with his aunt, wife of the verger of St Paul's cathedral; but, having through his uncle's teaching imbibed so much of the Reformation doc- trine that he declined to attend mass in the cathedral, he quarrelled with his aunt and had to return home. In 1549 he matriculated at Queen's College, Cambridge, and in May 1550 he migrated to Pembroke Hall, where he had the martyr John Bradford for a tutor. On 3lst May 1555 he became a fellow of Peterhouse. Having taken holy orders in 1560, he became in the same year chaplain to Dr Cox, bishop of Ely, who collated him to the rectory of Teversham, Cambridgeshire. In 1563 he was appointed Lady Margaret professor of divinity at Cambridge, and his lectures gave such satisfaction to the authorities that on 5th July 1566 they considerably augmented his stipend. The following year he was appointed regius professor of divinity, and also became master of Trinity. He had a principal share in compiling the statutes of the university, which passed the great seal on 25th September 1570, and in November following he was chosen vice-chancellor. Macaulay's description of Whitgift, as "(a narrow, mean, tyrannical priest, who gained power by servility and adula- tion," is tinged with rhetorical exaggeration; but un- doubtedly Whitgift's extreme High Church notions led him to treat the Puritans with exceptional intolerance. In a pulpit controversy with Cartwright, regarding the constitutions and customs of the Church of England, he showed himself Cartwright's

inferior in oratorical effective- ness, but the balance was redressed by the exercise of arbitrary authority. Whitgift, with other heads of the university, deprived Cartwright in 1570 of his professor- ship, and in September 1571 he exercised his prerogative as master of Trinity to deprive him of his fellowship. In June of the same year Whitgift was nominated dean of Lincoln, In the following year he published An Answere to a Certain Libel intituled an Admonition to the Parlia- ment. To this Cartwright replied by a Second Admoni- tion to the Parliament ; and in 1573 Whitgift published a third edition of his Answere, with additions bearing on Cartwright's Admonition. Cartwright thereupon rejoined by a Replye to an Answere made of M. Doctor Whitegifte ; and in 1574 Whitgift published Defence of the Answere to the Admonition against the Replye of T. C. On 24th

March 1577 he was appointed bishop of Worcester, and during the absence of Sir Henry Sidney in Ireland he for two and a half years acted as vice-president of Wales. In August 1583 he was nominated archbishop of Canterbury, and thus was largely instrumental in giving its special complexion to the church of the Reformation. Although he wrote a letter to Queen Elizabeth remonstrating against the alienation of church property, Whitgift always retained her special confidence. In his policy against the Puritans, and in his vigorous enforcement of the subscription test, he was only obeying her behests. Huis course of action gave rise to the Mar-prelate tracts, in which the bishops and clergy were bitterly attacked. Through Whitgift's vigilance the printers of the tracts were, however, discovered and punished ; and in order more effectually to check the publication of such opinions he got a law passed in 1593 making Puritanism an offence against the statute law. In the controversy between Travers and Hooker he interposed by prohibiting the preaching of the former; and he more- over presented Hooker with the rectory of Boscombe in Wiltshire, in order to afford him more leisure to complete his Ecclesiastical Polity, a work which, however, cannot be said to represent either Whitgift's theological or his ecclesiastical standpoint. Towards the close of his episco- pate he, in conjunction with the bishop of London and other prelates, drew up the Calvinistic instrument known as

*the Lambeth Articles. They were, however, not ac- cepted by the church. Whitgift attended Elizabeth on her deathbed, and crowned James I. He was present at the Hampton Court Conference in January 1604, and died at Lambeth on the 29th of the following February. He was buried in the church of Croydon, and his monument there with his recumbent effigy was in great part destroyed in the fire by which the church was burnt down in 1867. Whitgift is described by his biographer, Sir G. Paule, as of ** middle stature, strong and well shaped, of a grave countenance and brown complexion, black hair and eyes, his beard neither long nor thick." He was noted for his hospitality, and was somewhat ostentatious in his habits, sometimes visiting Canterbury and other towns attended by a retinue of 800 horsemen. He left several un- published works, which are included among the MSS. Angliz. Many of his letters, articles, injunctions, &c., are calendared in the published volumes of the State Paper series of the reign of Elizabeth. His Collected Works, edited for the Parker Society by Rev. John Ayre, 8 vols., Cambridge, 1851-58, include, besides the controversial tracts already alluded to, two sermons published during his lifetime, a selection from his letters to Cecil and others,*

and some portions of his unpublished MSS.

A Life of Whitgift by Sir G. Paule appeared in 1612, 2d ed. 1649. It has been embodied by Strype in his Life and Acts of Whitgift, 1718. There is also a life in Wordsworth's Eeclesiastical Biography, Hook's Archbishops of Canterbury, and vol. i. of Whitgift's Collected Works. See also Cooper's Athene Canta- brigienses.

WHITING, a marine fish (Gadus merlangus), abundant on the shores of the German Ocean and all round the coasts of the British Islands. It is distinguished from the other species of the genus Gadus or Cod-fish by having from thirty-three to thirty-five rays in the first anal fin, and by lacking the barbel on the chin (which is so well de- veloped in the common cod-fish, whiting-pout, &c.) entirely, or possessing only a minute rudiment of it. The snout is long, and the upper jaw longer than the lower. A black spot at the root of the pectoral fin is also very character- istic of this species, and but rarely absent. The whiting is one of the most valuable food fishes of northern Europe, and is caught throughout the

year by hook and line and by the trawl. It is in better condition at the beginning of winter than after the spawning season, which falls in the months of February and March. Its usual size is from 1 to 13 pound, but it may attain to twice that weight. In the south of Europe it is replaced by an allied species, Gadus euxini, which, however, seems to be limited to the cold waters of the Adriatic and Black Seas.

WHITLOW is a name applied loosely to any inflamma-

tion involving the pulp of the finger, attended by swelling and throbbing pain. In the simplest form, apt to occur in sickly children, the inflammation results in a whitish vesicle of the skin, contaming watery or bloody fluid. In all such cases, where the deeper structures are not implicated, no radical local treatment is needed, although the illness is an indication for constitutional treatment. The affection is not usually spoken of as whitlow unless it involves the deeper structures of the last joint of the finger. These are in a peculiarly close relation to the surface; hence the liability to deep-seated formations of matter, from some slight scratch or prick (poisoned or otherwise) of the skin over the pulp of the finger, or even when there is no obvious external provocation. The intimate connexion of the surface with the deep structures is near the finger-tip ; in that region there are certain regular bundles of strong fibres passing from the under layers of the skin, through the fat of the finger pulp, down to the free end of the bone, which is roughened and expanded in a very peculiar manner for their insertion. These fibres, which are proper to adults, serve to convey an inflammatory infection from the skin down to the bone, or to the periosteum or covering of the bone, and to the tendon (of the deep flexor muscle of the finger) inserted into that part of the last joint of the finger next tothe hand. The peculiar danger of a whitlow is that, if it be not opened in time by a deep cut down to the bone along the middle line of the phalanx, the inflam- mation will attack the covering of the bone, and so produce mortification or necrosis of the latter, and then attack the insertion of the tendon, causing sloughing of it also. In this way a whitlow, which has been neglected or treated by temporizing and ineffective methods, often leads to a loss of the bony tip of the last finger-joint, or even of the whole of the joint, and to a proportionate shortening and deform- ity of the finger. In another class of cases, which are fortunately less common, the deep-seated inflammation travels along the various structures of the finger towards the palm of the hand. The inflammation extends inside the dense fibrous tunnel or sheath which contains and binds down both tendons upon the middle and proximal joints of the finger. In that confined space the inflamma- tion becomes peculiarly virulent: the tension of the part gives the pain a bursting character; the redness and swelling extend all round the fingers and to the back of the hand and wrist; and the result of all this

suppuration and sloughing may be rigidity and contraction of the fingers and hand. Whenever matter burrows in this way, the treatment must be by free incisions. In all cases of whit- low the general disturbance of health is excessive.

The general treatment of all whitlow inflammations consists at the outset in relief of a congested state of the system, where such exists, by a purge and by a restricted diet, in applying poultices or hot compresses to the affected finger, and in carrying the arm in a sling. The presence of matter will not be obvious by the ordinary signs of a gathering ; attempts to let out the matter by anything short of a free and deep incision are likely to fail and to cause the loss of more or less of the bone.

Whitlows have sometimes been observed to occur among a number of persons together, in a sort of cpidemic, especially where the individuals are all subject to the same conditions of living, as among troops in garrison. These epidemics usually occur at a season (probably the spring) when erysipelas, carbuncles, and boils are prevalent.

WHITSTABLE, a watering-place and seaport of Kent, England, is situated on the south side of the Thames estuary and on the South Eastern and the London, Chat- ham, and Dover Railway lines, 6 miles north-north-west of Canterbury and 62 south-south-east of London. It con- sists chiefly of one main street, about a mile in length, and two narrower streets parallel with it, built on an embank- ment. The church of All Saints, in the Decorated and Perpendicular styles, possesses some old brasses; it was

restored in 1875. The other principal buildings are the institute for literature, science, and art (in connexion with which there are a library, museum, and aquarium), the assembly rooms, the foresters' hall, and the Wynn Ellis almshouses. The "Street," a low narrow ledge of shingle running for three quarters of a mile towards the sea, forms a natural pier and promenade. Whitstable has been famous for its oyster beds from time immemorial. The oysters raised there greatly excel all others in delicacy of flavour, and to economize space spat from other beds is brought to

Whitstable to mature. The lands are held by a company of dredgers incorporated by Act of Parliament in 1793, the affairs being administered by a foreman, deputy foreman, and jury of twelve men. The less ex- tensive Seasalter and Ham oyster fishery adjoins. Of late years the productiveness of the beds has been declining, owing, it is said, to the emptying of refuse and rubbish into the Thames. There is a considerable coasting trade in coal in conjunction with the South Eastern Railway Company, who are the owners of the harbour. The popula- tion of the township and parish (3601 acres) in 1871 was 4881 and 4882 in 1881. A portion of Seasalter is in- cluded in Whitstable.

Whitstable and Seasalter embrace what was formerly known as the "borough of Harwich," but its boundaries are not now recogniz- able. Some Roman remains have been discovered. At Domesday the manor of Whitstable was held by Odo, bishop of Bayeux. Subsequently it came by female descent to the earls of Athole, and afterwards was several times in the hands of the crown, before it came to St John, Viscount Bolingbroke. In modern times it was

held by Wynn Ellis, who left a valuable collection of paintings to the nation.

WHITSUNDAY, or Pentecost (zevrynxoor7), the fiftieth day after Easter Sunday, one of the principal feasts of the Christian Church, is enumerated among these along with Easter Sunday, Good Friday, and the Sundays throughout the year by Origen (Cont. Cels., viii. 392), and is thus en- joined in the Apostolical Constitutions (v. 20): " After ten days from the Ascension, which from the first Lord's Day is the fiftieth day, do ye keep a great festival on the day the Lord Jesus sent on us the gift of the Holy Ghost." The origin of the Anglo-Saxon name of White Sunday, which also occurs in Icelandic, is somewhat obscure, for in the Roman Church the Dominica in Albis (Low Sunday), so called from the white robes then worn by candidates for baptism, has always been the Sunday immediately follow- ing Easter, A very probable suggestion is that in northern countries the colder climate made it desirable to postpone the great baptismal festival to a time when the spring season was further advanced.

WHITTINGTON, a town of Derbyshire, England, is situated on the Chesterfield Canal and on the Midland Railway, 94 miles south-east of Sheffield and 153 north- north-west of London. The church of St Bartholomew, in the Early English style, was erected in 1863 near the site of an older one; it contains the old font and also a mural monument to the antiquary, Dr Pegge (died 1796). The principal works are large iron factories. The manufacture of stone bottles and coarse earthenware is also carried on. Whittington was placed under the government of a local board in 1873. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1581 acres) was 5578 in 1871 and 7271 in

1881.

WHITTINGTON, Sir Ricuarp (died 1423), was the son of Sir William de Whittington of Pauntley, Gloucester- shire, who died an outlaw in 1360. His mother was J oan, daughter of William Mansell, who was high-sheriff of Gloucestershire in 1308. Richard Whittington makes his first appearance in 1379, when he contributed five marks to a city loan. In 1392 he was elected alderman and sheriff of London, being at that time a member of the

Mercers' Company. He was appointed or elected mayor in 1397, 1398, 1406, and 1419; and in 1416 he was chosen member of parliament for London. In April 1402 he supplied cloth of gold for the marriage of the king's daughter Blanche with Louis, son of the emperor Rupert, and four years later (July 1406) for that of Philippa and Erik VII. of Denmark. Jn March 1413 the king repaid him a loan of £1000, and in September 1415 he was granted a lien on the customs of Boston, Kingston-on- Hull, and London, in discharge of 700 marks lent to Henry V. (by whom he seems to have been knighted). He died in March 1423. Among his chief benefactions by will were the rebuilding of St Michael's church, in con-nexion with which he founded a college, and of Newgate. He is said to have also restored St Bartholomew's hospital, London.

All that is known about Whittington has been carefully collected in the Rev. Samuel Lysons's Model Merchant of the Middle Ages (London,

1860), from which the above account is taken. — Lysons argues very strongly in favour of the famous story of os Whittington and his Cat," and rejects the rationalization which explains the legend by supposing Whittington's fortunes to have been made in the voyages of a medisval cat or merchant-vessel. He is, however, only able to trace back the actual quadruped to a picture which is inscribed "R Whittington 1536." Even this picture he had never seen ; and he has to admit that it bore marks of having been altered from its original size, and that the inscription is later than the alteration. 'The story, however, was evidently current by the end of the 16th century. Moreover, it is said that the figure of a cat was represented at the feet of the statue of Liberty on the gate of Newgate previous to the great fire of 1666; or, according to another account, Whittington's own "statue with the cat remained in a niche to its final demolition on the rebuilding of the present prison." In repairing a house which once belonged to the Whittington family at Gloucester in 1862, a stone of 15th-century workmanship was discovered and on it appeared in bas-relief the figure of a boy nursing acatin his arms. All this, however, cannot be said to go very far towards proving the veracity of the old legend. Clouston (Pogntlar Tales and Fictions, London, 1887, ii. 65-78) traces the main features of the story in the folk-lore of Denmark, Russia, Norway, Brittany, anl even Persia. It was current in Italy during the 15th century ; but its earliest appearance seems to be in Abdullah's History of Persia, written towards the close of the 13th century. This writer as:ribes the occurrences he tells of to the first half of the 11th cen- tury. Even this, in Clouston's opinion, is not the original form of the story, which from one or two of its details he suspects to be of Buddhist origin.

WHITWORTH, a manufacturing village of Lancashire, England, is situated on the river Spodden and on the Rochdale and Bacup branch of the Lancashire and York- shire Railway, 3 miles north of Rochdale. It possesses the usual characteristics of the cotton-manufacturing dis- tricts. Coal-mining is also carried on in the neighbour- hood. The church of St Bartholomew is in the Early English style. The manor of Whitworth was granted to the abbey of Stanilaw in the reign of John. A local board of twelve members was formed in 1874. The urban sani- tary district, which includes the villages of Hallfold, Facit, and Leavingreave, had an area of 8000 acres, with a popu- lation of 11,892, in 1881.

WHOOPING-COUGH. See Hoorinc-Coucu.

WHORTLEBERRY, a vernacular name corrupted from the Latin myrtillus, under which appellation, according to Prior, the berries of the common myrtle were employed in the Middle Ages for culinary purposes. In more modern times the term has been applied to various species of

Vaccinium, particularly to V. Myrtillus, also known ag the bilberry. The berries of this plant have a considerable similarity to those of the myrtle. Several species of Vac- cinium occur on moorlands throughout the northern hemi- sphere. They are low shrubs allied to heaths, usually with evergreen leaves and with small bell-shaped or urn- shaped flowers, which have an inferior ovary surmounted by five calyx lobes. The stamens, though in a single row, are double the number of the corolla lobes. The anthers have usually two horns at the back and are generally

prolonged at the top into two longish tubes, each with a hole at the extremity, throngh which the pollen escapes. The fruit isa globular or ovoid, many-seeded berry. J. Myrtillus and V. uliginosum have blue berries; V. Vates idea, the cowberry, has red fruits. A hybrid between V'. Myrtillus and V. Vitis idea, called V. intermedium, occurs in Shropshire and Staffordshire. The cranberry (Oxy- coccus) is very closely allied to the whortleberry.

WHYDAH. See Danomey, vol. vi. p. 765.

WICHITA, a city of the United States, the county seat of Sedgwick county, Kansas, is situated on the east bank of the Arkansas river, in the midst of an extremely fertile region. It is entered by six lines of railway, thus being one of the most important railway centres of the State. Its growth has been remarkable, even in this region of rapid development. In 1870 its site was with- out inhabitants ; in 1880 it contained 4911 persons, while in 1886 it had a population of 20,129, making it the fourth city of the State.

WICK, a royal and parliamentary burgh and seaport of Scotland, the county town of Caithness, is situated on the German Ocean at the head of

Wick Bay and at the eastern terminus of the Sutherland and Caithness section of the Highland Railway, 374 miles north of Edinburgh by rail and 184 south of John O'Groat's House. It consists of the old burgh of Wick on the north bank of the river, Louisburgh, a northern continuation of Wick, and Pultney- town, the chief seat of commerce and trade, on the south side of the river. Pultneytown, laid out in 1805 by the British Fishery Society, is built on a regular plan; and Wick proper consists chiefly of the narrow and irregular High Street, off which is the temperance hall, with Bridge Street, somewhat more regularly built, and containing the town-hall and the county buildings. In Pultneytown there are an academy, a chamber of commerce, a naval reserve station, and a fish exchange. The port consists of two harbours of fair size ; but the entrance is dangerous in stormy weather. Several expensive schemes for con- structing a breakwater have resulted in disastrous failure. In 1886 the number of vessels that entered the port was 1128 of 109,142 tons, the number that cleared 1094 of 103,162 tons. The average value of the exports for the five years ending 1887 was about £150,000; but in 1886 it was only £89,641. The chief exports are fish, cattle, and agricultural produce, and the imports include coal, wood, and provisions. Steamers from Granton and Aber- deen to Thurso, the Orkneys, and the Shetlands call at Wick going and returning. It is, however, chiefly to its fisheries that the town owes its prosperity. For many years it was the chief seat of the herring-fishing on the east coast of Scotland ; but its insufficient harbour accom- modation has greatly hampered its progress, and both Peterhead and Fraserburgh more than rival it as fishing ports. The number of boats belonging to the port in 1885 was 807; the value of the herrings cured was £117,754 and of cod, ling, and skate, £61,928. Ship- building, formerly prosecuted, has now been discontinued ; but boat-building and net-making are extensively carried on. There are also cooperages, flour-mills, steam saw-mills, a rope and a woollen manufactory, and a distillery. Wick forms one of a group of parliamentary burghs called the Wick burghs. The population of the parliamentary burgh, which includes the royal burgh of Wick, Pultneytown, and Louisburgh, was 8145 in 1871 and 8053 in 1881. In the last year the population of the royal burgh was only 1420. In 1883 the royal burgh was extended by the in- clusion of Louisburgh. The population of this extended area in 1881 was 2954.

Wick (Vik or ‘“‘bay”) is mentioned as early as 1140. It was constituted a royal burgh by James VI. in 1589, its superior being

Ww 1e—W IC

then George, carl of Caithness. By a parliamentary bounty in 1768 some impetus was given to the herring-fishery, but its real importance dates from the construction of a harbour in 1808. It has sent one member to parliament since 1832.

WICKLIFFE. See Wyctirre.

WICKLOW, a maritime county of Ireland, in the pro- vince of Leinster, is bounded on the E. by St George’s Channel, N. by the county of Dublin, 8. by Wexford, and W. by Carlow and detached portions of Kildare. The area is 500,178 acres or about 781 square miles.

Physical Features.—The coast is precipitous and pic- turesque, but very dangerous of approach owing to sand- banks. There are no inlets that can be properly termed bays. The harbour at Wicklow has lately been improved; but that of Arklow is suitable only for small vessels. To the north of the town of Wicklow there is a remarkable shingle beach, partly piled up by the waves and currents. The central portion of the county is occupied by a granite mountain range, forming one of the four principal mountain groups of Ireland, The direction of the range is from north-east to south-west, and the highest elevations are generally attained along the central line. The range consists of long sweeping moorlands, rising occasionally by precipitous escarpments into culminating points, the highest summits being Kippure (2473 feet), Duff Hill (2369), Douce Hill (2384), and Lugnaquilla (3039). The range rises from the north by a succession of ridges inter- sected by deep glens, and subsides towards the borders of Wexford and Carlow. Though the range is metamor- phic, it 1s also in part intrusive, and its formation has been accompanied by a considerable elevation of Silurian rocks, beyond which it does not penetrate, notwithstanding that the Cambrian rocks occupy a large tract along the sea coast. In the valleys there are many instances of old river terraces, the more remarkable being those at the lower end of Glenmalure and the lower end of Glendalough. It is in its deep glens that much of the

peculiar charm of Wicklow scenery is to be found, the frequently rugged natural features contrasting finely with the rich and luxuriant foliage of the extensive woods which line their banks. Among the more famous of these glens are the Dargle, Glencree, Glen of the Downs, Devil's Glen, Glen- malure, Glen of Ismail, and the beautiful vale of Ovoca. The eastern districts of the county are occupied by clay slate or quartzite, the latter of which presents frequently a smooth polished surface and shows indications of Glacial erosion. Evidences of Glacial action also appear in the moraines of Glenmalure and Glendalough. The principal rivers are the Liffey, on the north-western border; the Vartry, which passes through Devil's Glen to the sea north of Wicklow Head ; the Avonmore and the Avonbeg, which unite at the "meeting of the waters" to form the Ovoca, which is afterwards joined by the Aughrim and falls into the sea at Arklow; and the Slaney, in the west of the county, passing southwards into Carlow. There are a number of small but romantic lakes in the valleys, the principal being Loughs Dan, Bray, and Tay or Luggelaw, and the loughs of Glendalough.

Minerals.—WLead is raised at Lugganure (near Rathdrum), the principal lead mine in Ireland. In 1796 gold was discovered near Croghan Kinshcla, but not in quantities to render working re- munerative. Auriferous silver occurs in the slaty strata. There are important copper mines at Ovoca, where sulphur and iron are alsodug. Slates for roofing are quarried at Dunganstown and elsc- where. Limestone, limestone gravcl, and marl are obtained near the sea and in the river valleys.

Agriculture. —According to the latest landowners' return, Wick- low was divided among 1041 proprietors, possessing 497,656 acres, at an annual valuation of £254,800, or about 10s. 23d. per acre.

There were also about 2500 acres of waste land. Of the proprietors 534, or rather more than a half, possessed less than 1 acre each.

The following possessed over 8000 acres each :—William Kemmis,

8042; J. S. Moore, 8731; R. A. G. Cunninghame, 10,479 ; earl of

—

Meath, 14,718; marquis of Downshire, 15,766; earl of Carysfort, 16,292; J. Mandeville Hugo, 17,937; earl of Wicklow, 22,104; marquis of Waterford, 26,035 ; Viscount Powerscourt, 36,693 seannd earl Fitzwilliam, 89,891. The climate near the sea is remarkably mild, and permits the myrtle and arbutus to grow. The land in the lower grounds is fertile; and, although the greater part of the higher districts is covered with heath and turf, it affords good pasturage for sheep. There is a considerable extent of natural timber, as well as artificial plantations. Out of a total area of 499,894 acres in 1886 105,642 or 21°1 per cent. were under crops, 234,890 or 47 per cent. under grass, 175 acres fallow, 19,479 or 3°9 per cent. woods and plantations, 29,028 or 5°8 per cent. bog and marsh, 94,347 or 18°9 per cent. barren mountain land, and 16,333 or 3°3 per cent. water, roads, fences, &c. The total number of holdings in 1886 was only 8072 and their size is much above the average for Ireland, 70 being above 500 acres in extent, 973 be- tween 100 and 500 acres, 2615 between 30 and 100 acres, 2646 between 5 and 30 acres, 855 between 1 and 5 acres, and 913 not ex- ceeding 1 acre each. Between 1849 and 1886 the area under crops decreased from 126,251 to 105,642 acres; but within the last ten years the decrease was not so marked, the area in 1876 being 111,488 acres. The area under meadow and clover has been gradu- ally increasing: in 1849 it was 50,793 acres, and, while in 1876 it was 60,086 acres, in 1886 it was 60,390. The area under green crops shows very slight fluctuations: in 1849 it was 18,837 and in 1886 it was 18,114. Potatoes and turnips, which occupied respect- ively 10,847 and 5304 acres in 1886, have not perceptibly altered in the proportions of the areas. The decrease in the arca under corn crops has, on the other hand, been remarkable ; from 56,616 acres in 1849 it fell to 31,361 in 1876 and to 27,129 in 1886. The area under wheat in 1849 was 7817 acres, but between 1876 and 1886 it decreased from 3639 to 814 acres. The area under oats has de- creased from 44,527 acres in 1849 to 26,920 in 1876 and 25,344 in 1886 ; the area under barley, bere, and other corn crops being in these years 4272, 1480, and 971 acres respectively. The number of horses in 1886 was 11,300 (of which 7206 were used for agricul- tural purposes), asses 3465, mules 351, cattle 81,577 (of which 24,523 were milch cows), sheep 169,334, pigs 22,329, and goats 6278.

Communication.—The Dublin, Wicklow, and Wexford Railway skirts the coast from Bray to the town of Wicklow, after which it bends westward to Rathdrum, and then passes by the vale of Ovoca to Arklow. At Wooden Bridge a branch goes off south-west- wards to Shillelagh.

Manufactures and Trade.—Except in the Ovoca district, where the mining industry is of some importance, the occupations are chiefly agricultural. The manufacture of flannel, which formerly gave employment to a considerable number of pcople, is now in a very depressed condition. Herring and round fish are caught off the coast, but these fisheries are much neglected. There, is, how- ever, a2 rather prosperous oystcr fishery at Arklow. Of late years the harbour at Wicklow has been improved, the bed of the river deepened, and a steam-packet pier erected.

Administration and Population.—According to De Burgo's esti- mate, the population of Wicklow in 1760 amounted to 43,872; the parliamentary census of 1812 placed it at 83,109; by 1821 it had increased to 110,767, and by 1841 to 126,143, but by 1861 it had diminished to 86,451, by 1871 to 78,697, and by 1881 to 70,386 (males 35,101, females 35,285). Roman Catholics in 1881 num- bered 79°9 per cent. of the population, Protestant Episcopalians 18-3 (an unusually large proportion for the south of Ireland), Pres- byterians 0°4, Methodists 1:0, and other denominations 0°4. The number of persons who could read and write numbered 57:4 of the population, able to read only 12°8 per cent., illiterate 29°8. There were none who could speak Ivish only, and the number who could speak Irish and English was 243. Wicklow, which formerly re- turned two members to parliament, was in 1885 formed into two parliamentary divisions, an eastern and a western, each returning one member. The principal towns arc part of Bray (4887), a fashionable watering-place, the other part (2148) being in Dublin ; Wicklow (3391), the county town; and Arklow (4777), a fishing- station of some importance. The county is divided into eight baronies and contains fifty-nine parishes. According to the Pro- testant Episcopal arrangements, it is in the dioceses of Dublin and Glendalough, with portions in those cf Leighlin and Ferns. It is in the home or Leinster circuit ; and assizes are held at Wicklow and quarter- sessions at Bray, Baltinglass, Tinahely, Arklow, and Wicklow. There are

ten petty sessions districts within the county, and portions of four others. It includes two poor-law unions and portions of the unions of Naas, Rathdown, and Shillelagh. It is in the Dublin military district. —

History and Antiquities.—On the division of the district of the Pale by King John into twelve counties Wicklow was included in Dublin county. It was made a separate county by James I. in 1605. It sided with the royal cause during the Cromwellian wars, but on Crontwell's advance submitted to him without striking a blow. During the rebellion of 1798 some of the insurgents took refuge within its mountain fastnesses. An engagement took place

between them and General Holt near Aughrim, which was speedily decided in Holt's favour ; a second was fought at Arklow between them and General Needham with a similar result. Of the ancient cromlechs there are three of some interest, one near Enniskerry, another on the summit of Lugnaquilla, and a third, with a druidical circle, at Donoughmore. There are comparatively unimportant monastic remains at Rathdrum, Baltinglass, and Wicklow. The ruins in the vale of Glendalough, known as the "seven churches," are, with the doubtful exception of Clonmacnoise, the most remark- able ecclesiastical remains in Ireland. They owe their origin to St Kevin, who lived in the vale as a hermit, and is reputed to have died on 3d June 618. On the site of St Kevin's cell an extensive monastic establishment was founded, and around it a town sprang up, which was long famed as a scat of learning. The buildings which constitute the "seven churches" are the round tower, one of the finest in Ireland, 110 feet in height and 51 in circumference ; St Kevin's kitchen or church, of which the nave, 25 feet by 15, with a curious high-pitched roof and a round belfry (supposed_to be the earliest example of a round belfry springing from the roof or gable), still remains; a structure within the cemetery called the cathedral, in a state of great dilapidation, but from its ee and dimensions seemingly well entitled to its name; the lady chapel, chiefly remarkable for its doorway of wrought granite, in a style of architecture allied to the Greek ; Trinity church, consisting of nave (29 feet 6 inches by 17 feet 6 inches), chancel (18 feet 6

inches by 9 feet), and a basement story, and presenting some of the finest characteristics of the ancient architecture of Ireland, including a very beautiful specimen of the square-headed doorway ; the monas- tery, or St Saviour's abbey, with peculiar ornamental sculpture, and supposed to contain the tomb of St Kevin ; and the Refeart or ceme- tery church. In the cemetery and all along the valley there are a large number of monuments and stone crosses of various size and style. The cave known as St Kevin's bed shows evidence of having been artificially constructed, but is probably only an enlarged natural cavity. Of the old fortalices or strongholds associated with the early wars those of special interest are Black Castle, near Wicklow, origin- ally founded by the Norse invaders, but taken by the Irish in 1301, and afterwards rebuilt by William FitzWilliam ; the scattered re- mains of Castle Kevin, the ancient stronghold of the O'Tooles, by whom it was probably originally built in the 12th century; and the ruins of the old castle of the Ormondes at Arklow, founded by Theobald Fitz Walter (died 1285), the scene of frequent conflicts up to the time of Cromwell, by whom it was demolished in 1649, and now containing within the interior of its rnined walls a constabu- lary barrack. 'The fine mansion of Powerscourt occupies the site of an old fortalice founded by De la Poer, one of the knights who landed with Strongbow ; in the reign of Henry VIII. it was taken by the O'Tooles and O'Brynes. (LES)

WIDDIN, or Win1y, a fortified town of Bulgaria, within 20 miles of the Servian frontier and about 130 miles south-east of Belgrade, in 44° N. lat. and 22° 50' E. long. It occupies a strong position on the right bank of the Danube over against the Roumanian town of Kalafat, with which it is connected by a bridge of boats over a mile long. Owing to its low situation, the soil is marshy and the city is liable to inundation (six floods having occurred since 1839). Its population in 1888 amounted to 13,435, in- cluding 6929 Bulgarians, 3387 Turks, and 1304 Jews. The citadel, always a formidable stronghold, has recently been strengthened and enlarged with a double line of ram- parts reaching to the water's edge, while on the land side the approaches are naturally protected by the extensive marshy tracts formed here by a sharp bend of the Danube from the east to the south. The old town within these lines was formerly inhabited exclusively by Mohammedans, and still presents an Oriental

aspect, with its mosques, minarets, and over 1700 stalls lining the bazaar or main thoroughfare of Plevna Ulica. There are a few local industries, such as the making of gold and silver filigree work, saddlery, beer, flour, and cutlery, besides a brisk riverine trade, mainly in the hands of the Jews and Bul- garians. 'The fisheries in the Danube are of some import- ance (£20,000 annually).

Widdin stands on the site of the Roman town of Bononta in Meesia Superior, not to be confounded with the Pannonian Bononia which stood higher up the Danube to the north of Sirmium. Its name figures conspicuously in the military annals of medieval and recent times ; and it is specially memorable for the overthrow of the Turks by the imperial forces in 1689 and for the crushing defeat of the hospodar Michael Sustos by Pasvan Oglu in 1801. It was again the scene of stirring events during the Russo-Turkish wars of

1854-55 and 1877-78, and successfully resisted the assaults of the Serviansin the Servo-Bulgarian War of 1886-87.

WIDNES, a manufacturing town of Lancashire, Eng- land, is situated on the Mersey, where it is joined by the Sankey Brook Navigation, and on the London and North- Western Railway, 13 miles south-east of Liverpool and 188 from London. Capacious private docks were constructed in 1866 and extended in 1884. The Mersey is crossed by a wrought-iron bridge, 1000 feet long and 95 in height, completed in 1868, and having two lines of railway and a footpath. The church of St Mary was erected in 1856, that of St Ambrose in 1880, and that of St Paul in 1884. Widnes is one of the principal seats of the alkali and soap manufacture, and has also grease-works for locomotives and waggons, copper-works, iron-foundries, oil and paint works, and sail-cloth manufactories. It is governed by a local board of fifteen members. Until comparatively recent years it was a small township, dependent chiefly on agri- culture. In 1851 the population was under 2000, but by 1861 the numbers had more than trebled. In 1871 the population of the urban sanitary district (area 3339 acres) was 14,359, and 24,935 in 1881; in 1888 it was estimated to exceed 30,000.

The barony of Widnes came from the Lacy family to the dukes of Lancaster and thence to the crown. In 1554-55 it was declared to be part of the duchy of Lancaster.

WIELAND, CuristopHer Martin (1733-1813), Ger- man man of letters, was born on the 5th September 1733 at Oberholzheim, a Swabian village near Biberach, then an imperial city. He was carefully educated by his father, who was a clergyman at Oberholzheim ; and at a very early age he gave evidence of a strong literary impulse. In his fourteenth year he was sent to the school of Klosterbergen, near Magdeburg, where he attracted a good deal of atten- tion, not only by his knowledge of the classics and of French and English literature, but by his power of lucid and grace- ful expression. When he was about sixteen he left school and went to live with a relative at Erfurt, who undertook to prepare him for the university by reading with him the writings of the philosopher Wolff. Having spent a year and a half with this relative, he went for some time to Biberach, whither his father had been transferred from Oberholzheim. At Biberach he met a young kinswoman, Sophie Gutermann, with whom he fell in love, and who exercised a powerful influence upon the development of his intellect and imagination. While talking with her, after they had heard his father preach a sermon on the text "God is Love," he conceived the scheme of his first poem, Die Natur der Dinge. In 1750 he went to the university of Tiibingen, nominally for the purpose of studying law; but in reality he devoted his attention wholly to literature. At Tiibingen he wrote his poem on the Nature of Things, and in 1752 it was published anony- mously. Here also he wrote Anti-Oud, Lobgesang auf den Frithling, Moralische Briefe, and Moralische Erzihlungen. At home Wieland had been strictly brought up, and his home training had been confirmed at the Klosterbergen school, the head-master of which was a member of the straitest sect of the Pietists. In his early writings, there- fore, Wieland appears as a youth of a deeply serious dis- position, with an ardent enthusiasm for what he conceives to be the highest ideas of theology and ethics.

Bodmer, the Swiss critic and poet, strongly attracted by this new literary force, cordially invited Wieland to visit him at Zurich. Wieland accepted the invitation, and lived for many months in Bodmer's house. In 1754 the

two friends parted; for, although they had apparently the same aims and motives, they were in reality very unlike one another, and Bodmer was apt to play rather too osten- tatiously the part of a guide and patron. Wieland con- tinued to reside in Switzerland, remaining in Zurich about

five years and in Bern about a year, and supporting him- self by working as a tutor. During the early part of his residence in Switzerland Wieland maintained the serious tone that had marked his first writings. In his Briefe von Verstorbenen an hinterlassene Freunde, Sympathien, Emp- Jindungen eines Christen, and other works of this period he sought to give expression to the loftiest spiritual aspira- tions ; and in the letter in which he dedicated the Hmp- Jindungen to the court preacher Sack, in Berlin, he went out of his way to rebuke the frivolity of certain Anacreontic poets, whom he denounced as "'a band of epicurean pagans." But Wieland's mystical and ascetic doctrines did not at all correspond to his real impulses, and soon after he left Bodmer's house he began to feel that he had misunderstood his own character. His piety became less enthusiastic, and he learned to have a keen appreciation of pleasures which he had formerly condemned as incompatible with any high or worthy conception of the ends of human life. This change led to a kind of literary activity wholly different from that by which he had made his reputation. He wrote two dramas, Johanna Grey (in which he made free use of Rowe's play Lady Jane Grey) and Clementina von Poretta; and he chose as the subject of an epic poem the career of Cyrus, who was to be presented as a hero closely resembling Frederick the Great. Cyrus he never finished ; but he completed Araspes und Panthea, a poem in which he developed an episode from the Cyropedia of Xenophon.

In 1760 he settled at Biberach as director of the chancery. The appointment was a poor one, and for a time Wieland found life at Biberach extremely dull and tiresome. By and by, however, he made the acquaintance of Count Stadion, an experienced man of the world, at whose house Wieland became a constant visitor ; there he met, among many other persons whose society he liked, his first love, Sophie, who had married Von Laroche, the count's confidential friend and "factotum."

Under these new influences the change of tone which had been begun in Switzerland was soon completed; and in Don Sylvio von Hosalva (1764), a romance, intended to be taken as an imitation of Don Quixote, he gave himself the pleasure of laughing at principles and sentiments which he had formerly held to be sacred. This work was followed by Komasche LErzihlungen (1766), the cynical grossness of which far surpassed that of any contemporary German writer. Wieland, himself seems to have felt that in these tales he had gone too far, for, although in his next work, Agathon (1766-67), the hero of which is a disciple of Plato, he sometimes treads on slippery ground, his ulti- mate aim is to show that the true rule of life is to hold the balance even between the spiritual and the physical impulses of man. His unfinished Jdris und Zenide (1768) has a less worthy motive ; but in the didactic poem Jfus- arion (1768) he returned to the idea of Agathon, that fanaticism and sensuality are equally opposed to enduring happiness, and that he is most to be envied who knows how to gratify all legitimate impulses without allowing any of them to become unduly powerful. To Wieland, when his mind and character were fully developed, this law of conduct seemed to be the highest to which man can attain, and he was never tired of indirectly expounding it in his later writings. At Biberach he devoted much time to the study of Shakespeare, and in 1762-66 he published, in eight volumes, translations of twenty-two of Shake- speare's plays.

In 1765 Wieland had married a lady of Augsburg, to whom he was warmly attached. Four years afterwards he was made professor of philosophy at Erfurt, where he remained until 1772. During his stay at Erfurt he wrote Dralogen des Diogenes von Sinope; Beitrdge zur geheimen

Geschichte des menschlichen Verstandes und HHerzens, aus den Archiven der Natur; Der goldene Spiegel; Die Grazten, a didactic poem ; Combabus, a disagreeable tale in verse ; and Der neue Amadis, a comic poem in eighteen cantos.

In 1772 Wieland settled for life at Weimar, his position at first being that of a tutor to the two sons of the duchess Anna Amalia. Here he founded

the monthly periodical, Der Deutsche Mercur, which he edited until 1796. For this periodical he wrote constantly, and, con- sidering the immense number of his productions, it is surprising that he was able to maintain, on the whole, so high a level of excellence. By far the best of his works is the poem Oberon, the only work by him which has still a wide circle of readers in Germany. It was published in 1780. Among other original writings produced in Weimar may be named a comic romance, Die Geschichte der Abderiten (1774), Der verklagte Amor (1774), Das Wintermdrchen (1776), and Das Sommermdrchen (1777). In 1782 and 1786 appeared translations of the Epistles and Sateres of Horace ; and in 1788 and 1789 he issued a translation of Lucian, his study of whom led to his writing Neue Gottergespriche (1791), Geheime Geschichte des Philo- sophen Peregrinus Proteus (1791), and Agathoddmon (1799). From 1793 to 1802 he was engaged in issuing a revised edition of his writings; but in 1796 he found time to establish a new periodical, Das Attische Museum, in which he printed, among other things, translations of some of the comedies of Aristophanes. In 1797 Wieland bought Osmannstidt, an estate near Weimar ; and there he lived for some years with his large family. At Osmannstiadt he wrote his last important romance, Aristipp und einige seiner Zeitgenossen (1800-2). In 1801 his wife died, and two years afterwards he sold his estate and returned to Weimar, where he spent his last years in translating and annotating the Letters of Cicero. He died on 20th January 1813.

Wieland was a man of many moods, and his friends, when talk- ing with him, could never be quite sure that they would not un- intentionally offend him. But, although vain and over-sensitive, he often gave evidence of an essentially humane and generous spirit. Asa writer he lacked force of imagination and depth of feeling ; and even at his best he had too narrow a range of vision to be a great moral teacher. Nevertheless, he has an important place in the history of German literature. He was the founder in Germany of the psychological romance, and few of his successors in this kind have surpassed his delicate and subtle analyses of complicated motives. Both in prose and in verse he was a master of the art of composition, and most of the younger writers of his day learned something from the clearness, ease, and grace of his style. To him belongs the merit of having first suggested to his countrymen that it might be

worth their while to study their native literature as well as that of France, England, and Italy.

Wieland's Collected Works, edited by Gruber, were issued in 53 vols. in 1818- 1828 and in 36 vols. in 1851-56. There are biographies of him by Gruber (1827-28), Loebell (1858), and Ofterdingen (1877). Much light is thrown on his character Anke letters; see Ausgewchlte Briefe (1815-16) and Briefe an ney

WIENER NEUSTADT. See NEusrapr.

WIESBADEN, capital of the former duchy of Nassau and now the chief town of a district in the province of Hesse-Nassau in Prussia, disputes with Baden-Baden the title to be considered the most frequented and most fashionable watering-place in Germany. It is situated in a small and fertile valley on the south-west slopes of Mount Taunus, 5 miles to the north of Mainz and 3 miles from the Rhine (see the subjoined plan). The town is neat and well-built, with broad and regular streets. Its prosperity is entirely owing to its hot springs; and the general character and appearance of the place, with its numerous hotels, lodging-houses, villas, bath-houses, pro- menades, and places of entertainment, are dictated by the requirements of the visitors, who number annually about 60,000. The principal buildings are the palace, built in 1837-42 and restored in 1882; the Cursaal, a large and

handsomely fitted up establishment, built in 1810, and adjoined by a beautiful and shady park ; the Protestant church, built of polished bricks in 1852-60, with five tall towers, in the Gothic style; the (ay (aiterotes

Roman Catholic church; the new |. An, synagogue in the Moorish style;N. ~ the museum, with a picture gal- |A lery, a collection of antiquities, and a library of 70,000 volumes ; the theatre; the Berg church; and the Russian chapel, erected on the Neroberg in 1855. Wiesbaden con- tains numerous scientific societies and educational institutions, in- cluding a well-known chemical laboratory. The thermal springs contain only 4 per cent. of salt, and very little carbonic acid ; and

a good deal of their efficacy is duep to their high temperature, which E varies from 156° to 142° Fahr. |." The water is generally cooled to Ses 93° Fahr. for bathing. The prin- |S cipal spring is the Kochbrunnen (156° Fahr.), the water of which is drunk by sufferers from gout, chronic dyspepsia, obesity,

f WIESSADEN [FB m8

SY Ss A

N. Environs of Wiesbaden.

&c, There are twenty-eight other springs used for bath- ing, and effica-

cious in cases of

rheumatism, gout,

scrofula, and ner- ue vous ailments.

The town lies 320 ie feet above the sea- [ff level. Its climate PSs

Wwysunx

is mild and warm, so that even in winter it is fre- quented by from 5000 to 6000 vi- siters. The popu- lation in 1885 was 55,457; in 1816 it was 4608 ; in 1867, 30,085. Wiesbaden is one of the oldest water- ing-places in Ger- | many, and may be f_js regarded as the capi- [7 tal of the Taunus # spas. The springs, 44 mentioned by Pliny as Fontes Mattiact, were known to the Romans, who appear to have fortified the

Plan of Wiesbaden. place. Under the Carolingian monarchs it was the site of a palace.

Otho I. made it a town. The name Wisibada appears in 830. Though the springs never passed out of knowledge, they did not attain their greatest repute until the close of the 18th century. From 1771 till 1878 Wiesbaden was a notorious gambling resort ; but in the latter year public gambling was suppressed by the Prussian Government.

See Geschichte und historiche Topographie der Stadt Wiesbaden, by F Roth, and Balneologische Studien iiber Wiesbaden, ed. by Dr Peiffer, both vub. lished at Wiesbaden in 1883, and both containing copious bibliographical lists,

WIFE. See HusBanp anD Wirz, and Women.

WIG.! Artificial hair appears to have been worn from very ancient times, as is testified by well-made wigs re- covered from Egyptian mummy figures. The full and flow-

ee a

1 Shortened from periwig, a lengthened form (through the Dutch) of peruke. This word is extant in all the Romance languages (Ital. parrucca, or, in Sardinian, pilucca ; Span. peluca; Portug. peruca ; Fr. perrugue ; Walloon perik) and is derived from pelo (pilus).

Wwir=-wié¢

ing locks which adorn the sculptured reliefs of human figures found at Nineveh also suggest that wigs were not unknown among the ancient Assyrians. In the 16th cen- tury the fashion of wearing false hair became prevalent among ladies in Europe. At one period Elizabeth of Eng- land was possessed of no fewer than eighty attires of false hair. Mary of Scotland throughout her life was also in the habit of varying the attires of hair.she wore; and much of the confusion which has arisen in connexion with her portraits is traceable to this cireumstance.? The peri- wig of the 16th century was, however, merely false hair worn like, and sometimes with, the real hair, as an adorn- ment or to supply the defects of nature. It was not till the 17th century that the peruke was worn as a distinctive feature of costume; as such it was first employed by Louis XIII. when his hair failed. His successor, Louis XIV., did not adopt it till 1673. In the meantime it had been freely donned by courtiers and gallants of the era. Charles I. of England, while in Paris on his way to Spain, ““shadowed himself the most he could under a burly per- ruque, which none in former days but bald-headed people used.” The wearing of the peruke became general in the days of Charles II. Pepys records that he parted with his

own hair, and "paid £3 for a periwigg"; and on going to church in one he says, "it did not prove so strange as I was afraid it would." About this time the peruke is described as '"'a counterfeit hair which men wear instead of their own, a thing much used in our days by the generality of our men, contrary to their forefathers." The wig obtained its maximum development during the reign of Queen Anne, who was patroness of the full-bottomed wig,—a huge head-dress which covered the back and shoulders and floated down over the chest. In 1724 the peruke-makers advertised "full-bottom tyes, full bobs, minister's bobs, naturals, half naturals, Grecian flyes, curley roys, airey levants, qu perukes, and bagg wiggs" among the variety of artificial head-gear which they supplied. Early in the reign of George III. the general fashion of wearing wigs began to wane and gradually died out; but among professional men the practice continued to hold its place, and it was by slow degrees that military officers and clergymen gave up the habit. The wig of the 17th cen- tury now holds its place only on the judicial bench, and with the speaker of the English House of Commons, bar- risters, and advocates; but even on the bench its use is being threatened. Wigs of course continue to be worn by many to make up for natural deficiencies; and on the stage the wig is, as in all times, an indispensable adjunct. Many of the modern stage wigs are made of jute, a fibre which lends itself to marvellously perfect imitations of human hair.

WIGAN, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of Lancashire, England, is situated on the river Douglas and on the main line of the London and North Western Railway, 18 miles west-north-west of Man- chester, 18 north-east of Liverpool, and 195 north-west of London. The Douglas is spanned by several bridges, and is connected with the Leeds and Liverpool Canal. There is also a branch canal by Leigh and Worsley to Manchester. The older portions of the town occupy the north bank of the river, the modern additions being chiefly on the south ° bank, The church of All Saints, Late Perpendicular, con-

2 Whilst a prisoner in Lochleven Castle she received " plusieurs per- ruques et aultres choses y servant"; and there was sent after her to Carlisle "ung paqué de perruques de cheveux." Her maid, Mary Seton, was a skilled busker, and, according to Sir F. Knollys, "she did set such a

*curled hair upon the queen that was said to be a perwyke, that shewed very delicately, and every other day she hath a new device of hair dressing."' Even on the scaffold, according to an eye-witness, she wore "borrowed heire aburne," her own hair being ** polled very short."*

sisting of chancel with aisles and two chapels, was restored in 1630 and againin 1847 There are six other ecclesi- astical parishes. The principal public buildings are the Royal Albert Edward Infirmary and Dispensary (1873, enlarged 1884), the public hall (1853), the borough courts and offices (1866), the arcade (1872), the market-hall (1877), the free public library (1878), the public baths (1882), and the county justices courts and offices (1888). The educational institutions include the free grammar school (founded by James Leigh in 1619 and rebuilt in 1876), the mining and mechanical school, and the mechanics' institution. The charities are numerous but of small individual importance, their aggregate annual value amounting to about £2500. A public park of 27 acres was opened in 1878. The town owes much of its prosperity to its coal mines, which afford employment to a large proportion of the inhabitants and supply fuel for the factory furnaces. Mills for making hats were estab- lished at Wigan in 1482; and subsequently bell-founding and pottery-making were of some importance. The chief industry is now the maufacture of cotton fabrics ; the town also possesses iron forges, iron and brass foundries, oil and grease works, railway waggon factories, and bolt, screw, and nail works. The population of the municipal and parliamentary borough (area 2188 acres) was 20,774 in 1831; by 1861 it had increased to 37,658, by 1871 to 39,110, and by 1881 to 48,194 (23,508 males and 24,686 females) ; in 1888 it was estimated at 55,000.

Wigan is situated at the junction of three Roman roads, and there was a ford across the river where Millgate nowstands. Many Roman coins have been found in the neighbourhood ; hence it is supposed that Wigan was an important Roman station. Numerous Danish barrows also exist in the neighbourhood. After the Con- quest Newton (in which Wigan is situated) was bestowed on Roger de Poictou, but on account of his rebellion was forfeited to the crown. The rectory of Wigan existed before 1248, and the

rector as lord of the manor received a charter for the town in the 30th year of Henry III. Wigan was a city of refuge for runaway slaves during the Middle Ages. It was one of the 120 boroughs selected to send members to parliament in 1306; but the privilege lay dor- mant until 1547. From the charter it received in the 24th year of Edward III., confirming its liberties, it is evident that it was already an important market town, while its fairs were on a large scale and regulated by special laws. It also received charters from Richard II. and Charles Il. Leland refers to it as a paved town 'fas bigge as Warrington, and better builded." Camden describes it as 'neat and plentiful." Wigan contributed £50 of ship-money to Charles I. in 1636. On the outbreak of the Civil War in 1642 it was occupied by the earl of Derby, and formed the central garri- son for the king in Lancashire ; but the entrenchments were taken by Sir John Seaton in 1643 after a desperate battle. It was again repossessed by the earl of Derby, but was retaken by Colonel Ashton in March, when the outworks and fortifications were demolished. On 25th August 1651 the earl of Derby was defeated at Wigan by Colonel Lilburne, when Sir Thomas Tyldesley was slain. A memorial pillar to Tyldesley was crected in 1679 and restored in 1882. The town was governed by a mayor, recorder, 12 aldermen, and 2 bailiffs till the charter of 2d Wiliam IV. Under the Muni- cipal Act it was divided into five wards, and is governed by a mayor, recorder, 10 aldermen, and 30 councillors. It has a com- mission of the peace and a separate court of quarter sessions. In 1885 the number of its parliamentary representatives was reduced

to one. See Sinclair's History of Wigan, 1882.

WIGEON (French Vigeon, from the Latin Vipio),! also called locally "Whewer" and '" Whew" (names imitative of the whistling call-note of the male), the Anas penelope of Linnzeus and Mareca penelope of many modern orni- thologists, one of the most abundant species of Ducks throughout the greater part of Europe and northern Asia, reaching northern Africa and India in winter. A good many pairs breed in the north of Scotland; but the nurseries of the vast numbers which resort in autumn to

1 Just as PIGEON (q.v.) is from Pipio. Other French names, more or less local, are, according to M. Rolland, Vignon, Vingeon, Wagne, Woinge, Wignet, Wutot, Viouz,and Digeon. In some parts of England the small teasing flies, generally called midges, are known as " wigeons."

the waters of temperate Europe are in Lapland or farther to the eastward. Comparatively few breed in Iceland.

Intermediate in size between the Teal and the Mallard, and less showy in plumage than either, the drake Wigeon is a beautiful bird, with the greater part of his bill blue, his forehead cream-colour, his head and neck chestnut,? passing into pinkish grey below and above into lavender-grey, which last, produced by the transverse undulations of fine black and white lines, extends over the back and upper surface of the wings, except some of the coverts, which are conspicuously white, and shows itself again on the flanks. The wings are further ornamented by a glossy green speculum between two black bars ; the tail is pointed and dark ; the rest of the lower parts is white. The female has the inconspicuous coloration characteristic of her sex among most of the Duck tribe. In habits the Wigeon differs not a little from most of the Anatine. It greatly affects tidal waters during the season of its southern stay, and becomes the object of slaughter to hundreds of gunners on the coasts of Britain and Holland ; but, when it resorts to inland localities, as it also does to some extent, it passes much of its time in grazing, especially by day, on the pastures which surround the lakes or moors that it selects.

The Wigeon occurs occasionally on the eastern coast of North America, and not uncommonly, it would seem, on the Pribyloff Islands in the Pacific. But the New World has two allied species of its own. One of them, J/. ameri- cana (a freshly killed example of which was once found in a London market), inhabiting the northern part of that continent, and in winter reaching Central America and the West Indian islands as far as Trinidad, wholly resembles its Old-World congener in habits and much in appearance. But in it the pale frontlet and the rich chestnut are mingled into, as it were, a compromise of light warm brown, the white wing-coverts are wanting, and nearly all the plumage is subdued in tone. The

other species, J/. sibilatriz or chiloensis, inhabits the southern portion of South America and its islands, from Chili on the west to the Falklands on the east, and is easily recognized by its nearly white head, nape glossy with purple and green, and other differences, (A. N.)

WIGHT, Iste oF, a small island in the English Channel, situated off the coast of Hampshire, between 50° 35' and 50° 46' N. lat. and 1° 34' and 1° 5' W. long. (see vol. xi. Pl. VII.). It forms a portion of the county of Hampshire, and is separated from the mainland by a narrow strait, the Solent and Spithead. The island is, roughly speaking, diamond-shaped, the shorter diameter, from north to south, measuring 13 miles, and the longer, from east to west, 23 miles. The area is 92,931 acres, or about 145 square miles. The most prominent feature in its physical geo- graphy is a range of high chalk downs running from east to west across the centre of the island, and terminating in the Culver and Freshwater cliffs respectively. This range is broken through in the centre by the valley of the Medina, which flows due north and is the only river of consequence in the island ; it is navigable up to Newport. A second smaller range of chalk downs occurs in the south near Ventnor. Along the south coast, extending from St Catherine Point to Ventnor, there is the remarkable dis- trict known as the Undercliff, celebrated for its wild and romantic beauty and for its mild climate. It is sheltered from the north by a line of high cliffs. North of the central chalk range the country is for the most part flat and well-wooded. Parkhurst Forest, where timber is grown for the use of the British navy, is 3000 acres in extent. The geology of the island affords within a small area abundant opportunities for studying many different formations. The uppermost of the strata represented in the island is the Eocene, and the lowest the Wealden. All the strata between these two may be studied in good sec- tions, and very numerous and interesting fossils may be collected. The various Eocene beds are exhibited along

2 Hence come the additional local names " Bald-pate" and ' Red-

head," AXIV. — 7I

the north coast, and may also be studied to great advan- tage in White Cliff and Alum Bays. In the neighbour- hood of Gurnet Bay there is a very remarkable bed, con- taining beautifully-preserved remains of insects and spiders. In Alum Bay, in the extreme west, the strata are vertically disposed, and consist of a very curious series of coloured sands and clays. Here also the junction between the Eocene and the underlying Chalk is admirably shown. The central range of chalk downs is part of the northern slope, and the downs behind the Undercliff are part of the southern slope of a lesser anticlinal axis, the upper portion of the Chalk strata having been denuded in such a way as to expose the underlying Greensand, of which the greater portion of the southern half of the island is composed. The Greensand formation may best be studied in the cliff section from Atherfield Point to Rocken End. Beneath the Greensand the Wealden is exposed in the section from Brook to Atherfield, and also, to a much less extent, in Sandown Bay. The Wealden strata have yielded abundant fossil remains of extinct reptiles (Jguanodon), especially in the neighbourhood of Brook and Cowleaze Chines ; and at Brook Point an extensive fossil forest exists, being the remains of a great raft of timber floated down and deposited in estuarine mud at the mouth of a great river. At Brook also the characteristic Wealden mollusk, Unio valdensis, occurs abundantly.

The climate is mild and rclaxing, and enjoys the reputation of being peculiarly salubrious. In winter and spring, however, the east winds are very trying, and in summer the heat is at times very great. The climate of the Undercliff is especially mild, and a large consumption hospital (the Royal National Hospital for Consumption and Diseases of the Chest), arranged on the cottage principle, has been established here. Partly owing to the mildness of the climate, and partly to the beauty of the scenery, the island has long been a favourite resort of tourists, and within recent years several fashionable watering-places have sprung up. Of these the principal are Cowes, at the mouth of the Medina, the headquarters of the Royal Yacht Squadron, Ryde (11,461 inhabitants in 1881), Bembridge, Sandown, Ventnor (5739), Shanklin (1780), Fresh- water (2809), and Yarmouth (787). Newport (9357), on the Medina, is the capital of the island, but is comparatively little frequented by visiters. Hitherto many parts of the island have been more or less inaccessible owing to the

deficiency of railways; but it is being rapidly opened up, and a railway is now in course of construction between Newport, Carisbrooke, Yarmouth, and Freshwater. There are few industries in the island. The population is chiefly agri- cultural, a large proportion of the land being devoted to sheep- grazing. Fishing is also carried on to a considerable extent on the south coast,—lobsters, crabs, and prawns being plentiful. Oyster cultivation has been attempted in the Medina, in Brading Harbour, and in the Newtown river. At Cowes shipbuilding is carried on, and on the Medina there are cement-works. In the towns, how- ever, the chief occupation of the inhabitants consists in provid- ing for the wants of the summer visiters; in winter very little business is done. The island is divided into two liberties, East and West Medina, excluding the two boroughs of Newport and Ryde; and it forms one petty and special sessional division of the county. Until 1885 there was one member of parliament for the island and one for the borough of Newport ; now, however, there is only one member for the whole island. Enpiscopally the island has for many centuries belonged to the see of Winchester. In 1881 the population was 73,633, as against 66,219 in 1871.

_ History.—The Isle of Wight (Roman Vectis) was originally inhabited by Celts, and was conquered for the emperor Claudius by Vespasian in 43. The Romans remained in possession for four centuries. In 530 it was conquered by Cerdic and Cymric and added to the kingdom of Wessex. Later on it again became free from the control of Wessex and remained independent until the inhabitants of their own accord submitted to Edward, the son of Alfred. William the Conqueror gave the island as an independent lordship to William Fitz-Osborne, but it was again forfeited to the crown on the rebellion of his son, the earl of Hereford. Henry I. gave the lordship to Richard de Redvers, in whose family it remained until 1293, when Isabella de Fortibus, the lady of the island, sold it to Edward I. Richard II. again appointed a lord of the island, and the office continued until the reign of Henry VII., when it was finally abolished. From that date onwards the govern- ment has been vested in a captain or governor, whose office is now honorary. Charles I. was confined in Carisbrooke Castle for some time in 1649. The antiquities include the British pit villages near

Rowborough, the Celtic tumuli on several of the chalk downs, the long stone at Mottistone, the Roman villas near Brading and Caris- brooke, tlie ruins of Quarr Abbey, and numerous ancient churches. Carisbrooke Castle, almost in the centre of the island, is a fine old ruin built upon the site of an ancient British stronghold. The

-British fortifications were probably occupied as a camp by the

Romans under Vespasiau, and they were subsequently held by the Saxons, who made the high mound known as the keep. The inner walls of the castle were erected in the 11th century, and the outer defences were constructed in the reign of Elizabeth. The Roman villa near Brading contains some beautiful and well-preserved ex- amples of tesselated pavements; that at Carisbrooke is smaller and not so interesting.

WIGTOWN, or WicTon, a maritime county in the south-west corner of Scotland, forming the western division of the old district of Galloway, is bounded N. by the Irish Channel and Ayrshire, E. by Kirkcudbright and Wigtown Bay, 8. by the Irish Sea, and W. by the Irish Channel. It is of very irregular form. Its greatest breadth, east and west, is about 33 miles and its greatest length, north and south, about 26 miles. The area is 310,742 acres or 4854 square miles.

Physical Features.—The coast-line has a total length of about 120 miles. On the eastern boundary the estuary of the Cree expands into Wigtown Bay. Between Wig- town and Luce Bays is the peninsula of the Machers, of which Burrow Head is the southern extremity. Luce Bay has a length of about 15 miles and an average breadth of 12. By its indentation on the south and that of Loch Ryan (about 9 miles long and nearly 3 broad) on the north the two-pronged peninsula of the Rinns is formed, of which the Mull of Galloway, the most southerly point in Scotland, is the southern extremity, and Kirkcolm Point the northern. The coast is more or less precipitous, with many small inlets, few of which, on account of dangerous hidden rocks, afford suitable landing-places for vessels. Loch Ryan forms, however, a splendid natural harbour, of which Stranraer is the port. Portpatrick on the Irish Channel is the nearest port in Great

Britain to Ireland, and 7 miles to the south is Port Logan. With the exception of Port William on its eastern shore, Luce Bay is destitute of harbours. Wigtown Bay includes on the Wigtown side the small harbours of the Isle of Whithorn, Garliestown, Wigtown, and Carty, but the upper portions of the bay are not navigable at low water. The county is occupied almost solely by Silurian strata, its characteristic feature being a series of rocky hills, which extend more or less over the whole county, attaining their highest eleva- tion in the north, on the borders of Ayrshire. A considerable number range between 400 and 800 feet in altitude, the highest summits being Miltonish (970 feet), on the northern border, and Craigairie Fell (1000 feet) in Kirkcowan parish. A great part of the county has a wild and bleak appearance, the hills being covered with heath and whins, while in the lower parts there are long stretches of bog and moss. The Silurian rocks are in some parts interpenetrated by small areas of granite; and immense granite boulders are occasionally scattered over the lower grounds, doubtless the result of the Glacial action of the Kirkcudbrightshire ice bed. Along the western edge of Loch Ryan there is a narrow band of Carboniferous strata, consisting of sandstones which have been classed as calci- ferous. They rest unconformably on a narrow belt of Permian strata separating them from the Silurian rocks. In the Carboniferous strata various plant impressions are met with. Between Luce Bay and Loch Ryan, and on the upper shores of Wigtown Bay, there are raised beaches. Galena, copper pyrites, and barytes have been found in small quantities; grey shales for roofing slates and flags for pavement are dug at Cairn Ryan on the eastern shores of Loch Ryan, where sandstone is also quarried for build- ing purposes; from the clays in the neighbourhood of

WIGTOWN

Stranraer bricks are manufactured. Owing to the irre- gular hilly character of the county the streams, though numerous, are generally small. The Cree, forming the boundary with Kirkcudbrightshire, flows past Newton Stewart and Carty into Wigtown Bay; the Bladenoch, from Loch Maberry on the Ayrshire border, falls into Wig- town Bay at the town of Wigtown, after having received the Tarf, the Malzie, and the Black Burn; and the Luce, formed by the junction of the Main Water and

the Cross Water at New Luce, flows south into Luce Bay. There are a very large number of lochs, but none of them very extensive, the principal being the beautiful one in Inch parish included in the grounds of Castle Kennedy, Lochs Maberry and Dornal on the Ayrshire border, Loch Connel in Kirkcolm parish, Loch Ronald in Kirkcowan parish, and Castle Loch and the four lochs of Mochrum in Mochrum parish. Dowalton Loch, at the junction of Kirkinner, Sorbie, and Glasserton parishes, was drained in 1862,

Agriculture.—Although the rainfall exceeds the average in Scot- land, the climate is not specially unfavourable for the ripening of crops, and frosts are not generally of long continuance. A con- siderable portion of Wigtownshire consists of stony moors, which have insufficient soil to render reclamation possible. Along the shores there is some extent of gravelly soil, which, however, requires heavy manuring to render it fruitful. Where the highcr districts are arable a rocky soil prevails, better adapted for grass and green crops than for corn crops. A large extent of the county is black top reclaimed from moors ; in other districts loam and clay prevail. The most common method of cropping is a six years' shift of oats, green crops, corn crop, and three years' grass. According to the Agricultural Returns for 1887, the arable area was 147,068 acres or about 46 per cent. of the whole, considerably above the average for even the lowland counties of Scotland. The area under corn crops was 37,392 acres, of which 35,511 were under oats. The latter area has not materially changed within the last thirty years, the chief diminution having been in wheat, which in 1855 occupied 7343 acres and in 1887 only 736. Barley and bere in 1887 ocenpicd 796 acres, rye 38, and beans 310. The bulk of the green crops consists of turnips and swedcs, occnpying in 1887 15,678 acres, whilst 1902 acres were potatoes, 229 mangold, 100 carrots, 153 cabbage, &c., and 185 vetches. There were 69,326 acres under clover and rotation grasses and 21,883 under permanent pasture. In 1881 (the latest return) there were over 8009 acres nnder woods, and in 1887 there were 40 under nursery grounds, 6 under market gardens, and 7 under orchards. The large area under grass and turnips is owing to the general prevalence of dairy farming. In 1887 the number of cattle was 42,062, of which 21,197 were milch cows, 2 number exceeded in only fonr other connties in Scotland, although in the number of its cattle it is surpassed

by ten counties. The Galloway cattle, a black polled breed, are now chiefly confined to the eastern districts, the Ayrshire being found a much more snit- able breed for dairy purposes. In some cases Galloway bulls are kept for breeding with Ayrshire cows. Many dairy farms send milk to Glasgow and the neighbouring towns; but the mannfacture of cheese has greatly increased within late years, large cheese factories having been established. Dunlop is now almost wholly superseded by Cheddar cheese. Horses, chiefly Clydesdale, for which breed Wigtownshire has acqnired some fame, numbered 5699 in 1887 ; sheep, chiefly blackfaced on the hilly farms, and in other districts crosses with Leicesters and other long-woolled breeds, numbered 116,264 ; and pigs 10,380. From 1345 returns obtained from occu- piers of land in 1887, ont of 147,104 acres 142,266 were rented and occupied and 4838 owned and ocenpied. The following table gives a classification of agricultural holdings according to size in 1880 and 1885 :—

|50 acresand| 50 to 100 | under, acres,

100 to 200

200 to 500 | 500 to 1000 acres.

Year. acres. acres.

No. | Acres. | No. | Acres. | No.

Above 1000 acres.

Acres.

063

Hamilton, 6300; Mrs 8. O. M'Taggart, 5998; Lient.-Col. Sir W. T. F. Agnew Wallace, 5785 ; and R. H. J. Stewart, 5552.1

Communication.—The Portpatrick Railway crosses the county from Newton Stewart by Kirkcowan, Glenluce, and Stranraer to Portpatrick. From Newton Stewart the Wigtownshire Railway passes south by

Wigtown and Garliestown to Whithorn. The Girvan and Portpatrick Railway branches off from the Portpatrick line at East Challoch near Dunragit and passes northwards by New Luce. 'There is a line of steamers to Ireland by Portpatrick.

Manufactures and Trade.—Although agriculture is the main industry, there is a variety of small manufactures in the towns, including a woollen factory at Kirkcowan, engineering and locomo- tive works at Stranraer, hand-loom weaving in various places, distilling, tanning, and currying. The fishing industry is of al- most no account. There is, however, an oyster fishery in Loch Ryan, and herrings are canght in Loch Ryan and the Bay of Luce. The value of the salmon fisheries, including those of the rivers, is less than £1000 a year.

Administration and Population.—From 22,918 in 1801 the popn- lation had by 1821 increased to 33,240 and by 1851 to 43,389; but it declined to 42,095 in 1861, to 38,830 in 1871, and to 38,611 (males 18,143, females 20,468) in 1881. In point of density Wig- town stands twenty-first among the counties of Scotland, the number of persons to the square inile being 79. The proportion of females to every 100 males was 112°82, the largest proportion of any county with the exceptions of Orkney and Shetland and Forfar. The number of persons who conld speak Gaelie was only twenty-eight. The town population in 1881 numbered 9060, the village 8574, and the rural 20,977. The county has three royal burghs— Wigtown (1789), Stranraer (8455), and Whithorn (1648). The last two are also police burghs (Stranraer, 63842). Part (2645) of the police burgh of Newton Stewart is within the county, the remainder being in Kirkcudbrightshire. Newton Stewart is also a burgh of barony, as are likewise Glenluce (901) and Portpatrick (591). The county returns one member to parliament. Formerly Wigtown, Stranraer, and Whithorn formed with New Galloway a group of burghs returning one member, but by the Act of 1885 they were merged in the county. The county includes seventeen parishes. Wigtownshire is in the same sheriffdom as the counties of Kirkcud- bright and Dumfries. Sheriff conrts are held during certain periods at Wigtown and Stranraer, and quarter sessions are held at Wig- town and Glenluce.

Listory and Antiquities,—The portion of Galloway now forming Wigtownshire was in early times occupied chiefly by the Novante. When the district was overrun by the Romans under Agricola in 82, they fixed their headquarters at Whithorn (Leucophibia), and one of their principal stations, Rerigonitwm, was on the eastern shore of Loch Ryan. The Devil's dyke, a defensive work of the Romans, extended from Loch Ryan to the upper part of the Solway Firth. A sketch of the early history of Galloway, inclnding Wig- townshire, is given under KIRKCUDBRIGHT (vol. xiv. p. 98). The district was the scene of the labours of the Christian missionary St NINIAN (g.v.), who arrived at Whithorn (Candida Casa) towards the close of the 4th century. Whithorn was a bishop's see from 727 till the Reformation. In addition to the caves on the sea coast, which, like those of Kirkcudbrightshire, are associated with early human occupation, the ancient inhabitants have left traces of themselves in cairns, standing stones, hut circles, and remains of ancient villages. Numerous early relics have also becn dug up, in- cluding flint and other stone implements, as well as a great variety of ancient bronze implements and ornaments.2 The Dowalton crannogs were the first lake dwellings discovered in Scotland, and are among the most remarkable in the country. Among the ancient fortalices may be mentioned the sea towers of Carghidown and Castle Feather, south of Whithorn ; the ruins of Baldoon, south of Wigtown, associated with events which suggested to Scott the tale of the Bride of Lammermoor ; the tower of Corsewall near the west shore of Loch Ryan ; the foundations of a Norse stronghold in Crnggleton Bay ; Dunskey at the head of Castle Bay, built in the 16th century, but occupying the site of an ancient fortress; the fragments of Long Castle at Dowalton Loch, the ancient seat of the M'Doualls ; the castle of Mochrum and Myrtoun Castle, the seat of the Maccullochs, in Mochrum parish ; and the ruined tower of Sorbie, the an- cient keep of the Hannays. Of the Cistercian abbey

Total.

Acres.

32,638 | 20 34,426 | 18

12,271! 1

11,186 | 1

_ According to the latest landowners' Return, the divided among 1820 proprietors, possessing 309,087 acres at an

county was

annual value of £230,589, or about 14s. 11d. per acre. Of the pro- prietors 1674 possessed less than one acre each. The following owned over 5000 acres each :—earl of Stair, 79,174; E. J. S. Blair, 37,268 ; earl of Galloway, 28,203 ; marquis of Bute, 20,157 ; Sir W. Maxwell, 16,877; James M'Donall, 16,290; Sir Andrew Agnew, 12,962; D. Hunter Blair, 8255 ; William Maitland, 7848 ; Sir J. Dalrymple Hay, 7400; R. Vans Agnew, 6777; W. C. S.

1,210 1,220

1347 | 146,026| Of Glenluce, founded in 1190 by Roland, lord of 1344 | 147,208) Galloway, the principal remains are the chapter

house in the Decorated style, the walls of the cloister, and a small portion of the church in the Early English

1 For further particulars regarding the agriculture, see a paper by W. H. Ral- stone, in Trans. Royal and Highland Agric. Soc., vol. Xvil., new ser. (1885).

2 For lists with illustrations, see papers by Rev. G. Wilson and Sir Herbert Maxwell in Ayr and Wigton Archeological Collections, vols. i., ii., and v.

3 See CRANNoGS, vol. vi. 552; and for descriptions of these and other lake dwellings in Wigtownshire, consult a paper by Robert Monro, in Ayr and Wigton Arch. Coll., vol. v., and ' Notes on Crannogs and Lake Dwellings of Wigtonshire," by Rev. G. Wilson, in Proceedings Soc. Antig. Scot., vol. ix. pp. 368-378 and x. 737-739.

style. The ancient cathedral of Whithorn, though in a dila- pidated condition, forms a picturesque ruin, and near it are some slight remains of the ancient priory founded by St Ninian. The Dominican priory of Wigtown, founded in 1267, has, like the ancient castle, entirely disappeared ; and only some slight mounds remain of Saulseat abbey, founded for Premonstratensians by Fer- gus, lord of Galloway, in 1148. Wigtown was probably created a sheriffdom in the 13th century. In 1341 the earldom of Wigton, which included the whole of the county, with the jurisdiction of a regality, was bestowed upon Sir Malcolm Fleming. In 1372 the earldom was purchased by Archibald Douglas, who the same year was created lord of Galloway. In the reign of James I. William Douglas of Leswalt was sheriff of Wigtown and keeper of the castle of Lochnaw ; but in 1426 the constableship of Lochnaw, with the sheriffdom of Wigtown, was acquired by Andrew Agnew. These dignities continued to be held by the Agnew family till 1682, when Sir Andrew Agnew refused to take the test and was superseded by Graham of Claverhouse. At the Restoration in 1688 the office of sheritf was restored to the Agnew family, and they held it till the abolition of hereditary jurisdictions in 1747. The principal modern mansions are Galloway House, built in 1740, the seat of the earls of Galloway ; Castle Kennedy, built by the first earl of Stair after the destruction of the old castle by fire in 1716; the baronial castle of Lochnaw, including, with large modern additions, the battlemented tower of the ancient building ; and Barnbarroch House, the seat of R. Vans Agnew.

See Symson, Description of Galloway, 1823; Murray, Literary History of Gal-

loway, 1882 ; Sir Andrew Agnew, Hereditary Sheriffs of Galloway, 1864; Histories of Galloway, by Mackenzie, 1841, and P. H. Mackerlie, 1870-78. (Gly 38e, Jal

WILBERFORCE, Samvet (1805-1873), bishop of Ox- ford and afterwards of Winchester, was the third son of William WILBERFORCE (see below), and was born at Clap- ham Common near London on 7th September 1805. Until he entered Oriel College, Oxford, in 1823 he was educated privately. In the “ United Debating Society,” which afterwards

developed into the “ Union,” Wilberforce distinguished himself as a zealous advocate of liberalism. The set of friends with whom he chiefly associated at Ox- ford were sometimes named, on account of their excep- tionally decorous conduct, the ‘Bethel Union”; but he was by no means averse to amusements, and specially de- lighted in hurdle jumping and hunting. He graduated in 1826 ; and the summer and autumn of 1827 were spent ina Continental tour. After his marriage on 11th June 1828 to Emily Sargent, he was in December ordained and ap- pointed curate-in-charge at Checkenden near Henley-on- Thames. In 1830 he was presented by Bishop Sumner of Winchester to the rectory of Brightstone in the Isle of Wight. In this comparatively retired sphere he soon found scope for that manifold activity which so promi- nently characterized his subsequent career. In 1831 he published a tract on tithes, “to correct the prejudices of the lower order of farmers,” and in the following year a collection of hymns for use in his parish, which had a large general circulation ; a small volume of stories entitled the Note Book of a Country Clergyman ; and a sermon, The Apostolical Ministry. He now began to be sought for as a preacher and declined several offers of appointments. In February 1836 he was made a rural dean. At the close of 1837 he published the Letters and Journals of Henry Martyn. Although a High Churchman Wilberforce held aloof from the Oxford movement, and in 1838 his diver- gence from the “Tract” writers became so marked that J. H. Newman declined further contributions from him to the British Critic, not deeming it advisable that they should longer “co-operate very closely.” _In 1838 Wilberforce pub- lished, with his elder brother Robert, the Life of his father and two years later his father’s Correspondence. In 1839 he also published Hucharistica (from the old English divines), to which he wrote an introduction, Agathos and other Sunday Stories, and a volume of University Sermons and in the following year Rocky Island and other Parables, In November 1839 he was installed archdeacon of Surrey, in August 1840 collated canon of Winchester, and in October he accepted the rectory of Alverstoke. In 1841 he was chosen Bampton lecturer, and shortly afterwards

wl bw Ie

made chaplain to the Prince Consort, an appointment he owed to the impression produced by a speech at an anti- slavery meeting some months previously. In October 1843 he was appointed by the archbishop of York to be sub-almoner to the queen. In 1844 appeared his History of the American Church. In March of the following year he accepted the deanery of Westminster, and in October the bishopric of Oxford.

The bishop in 1847 became involved in the Hampden controversy, and signed the remonstrance of the thirteen bishops to Lord John Russell against Dr Hampden's appointment to the bishopric of Hereford. He also en- deavoured to obtain satisfactory assurances from Dr Hampden ; but, though unsuccessful in this, he withdrew from the suit against him. The publication of a papal bull in 1850 establishing a Roman hierarchy in England brought the High Church party, of whom Wilberforce was the most prominent member, into temporary disrepute. The secession to the Church of Rome of his brother-in-law, Archdeacon (now Cardinal) Manning, and afterwards of his two brothers, brought him under further suspicion, and his revival of the powers of convocation lessened his influence at court; but his unfailing tact and wide sympathies, his marvellous energy in church organization, the magnetism of his personality, and his eloquence, both on the platform and in the pulpit, gradually won for him recognition as without a rival on the episcopal bench. In the House of Lords he took a prominent part in the discussion of social and ecclesiastical questions. He has been styled the 'bishop of society"; but society occupied only a fraction of his time. The great bent of his energies was ceaselessly directed to the better organization of his diocese and to the furtherance of schemes for increasing the influence and efficiency of the church. In 1854 he opened a theological college at Cuddesdon, which was afterwards the subject of some controversy on account of its alleged Romanist tend- encies. His attitude towards Hssays and Reviews in 1861, against which he wrote an article in the Quarterly, won him the special gratitude of the Low Church party, and latterly he enjoyed the full confidence and esteem of all except the extreme men of either side and party. On the publication of Colenso's Commentary on the Romans in 1861 Wilberforce endeavoured to induce the author to hold a private conference with him ; but after the publica- tion of the first two parts of the Pentateuch Critically Ex- amined he drew up the address of

the bishops which called on Colenso to resign his bishopric. In 1867 he framed the first Report of the Ritualistic Commission, in which coercive measures against ritualism were discountenanced by the use of the word "restrain" instead of 'abolish " or "prohibit." He also endeavoured to take the sting out of some resolutions of the second Ritualistic Commission in 1868, and was one of the four who signed the Report with qualifications. Though strongly opposed to the disestab- lishment of the Irish Church, yet, when the constituencies decided for it, he prudently advised that no opposition should be made to it by the House of Lords. After twenty- four years' labour in the diocese of Oxford, he was named by Mr Gladstone for the bishopric of Winchester. His unremitting labours had, however, seriously told on his constitution, and the change to a new diocese, entailing a repetition of the work of organization which he had com- pleted in the old one, proved too much for his health. The result was a severe affection of the heart, which on more than one occasion threatened to prove fatal. He was killed on 19th July 1873 by the shock of a fall from his horse near Dorking, Surrey.

Besides the works already mentioned, Wilberforce wrote Heroes

of Hebrew History (1870), originally contributed to Good Words, and several volumes of sermons. See Life of Samuel Wilberforee, with

WIL—WIL

Selections from his Diary and Correspondence, vol. i., ed. by Ash- well, and vols. ii. and iii., ed. by his son Reginald G. Wilberforce.

WILBERFORCE, Wi11aM (1759-1833), whose name is chiefly associated with the abolition of the slave trade, was descended from a Yorkshire family which possessed the manor of Wilberfoss in the East Riding from the time of 'Henry II. till the middle of the 18th century. He was the only son of Robert Wilberforce, member of a com- mercial house at Hull, by his wife Ehzabeth, daughter of Thomas Bird of Barton, Oxon, and was born at Hull on 24th August 1759. It was from his mother that he in- herited both his feeble frame and his many rich mental endowments. He was not a diligent scholar, but at the grammar school of Hull his skill in elocution attracted the attention of the master. Before he had completed

his tenth year he lost his father and was transferred to the care of a paternal uncle in London; but in his twelfth year he returned to Hull, and soon afterwards was placed under the care of the master of the endowed school of Pocklington. Here his love of social pleasure made him neglectful of his studies ; but he entered St John's College, Cambridge, in October 1766. Left by the death of his grandfather and uncle the possessor of an independent fortune under his mother's sole guardianship, he was somewhat idle at the university, though he acquitted him- self in the examinations with credit; but in his serious years he "could not look back without unfeigned remorse" on the opportunities he had then neglected. In 1780 he was elected to the House of Commons for his native town, his success being due to his personal popularity and his lavish expenditure. He soon found his way into the fast political society of London, and at the club at Goosetrees renewed an acquaintance begun at Cambridge with Pitt, which ripened into a friendship of the closest kind. In the autumn of 1783 he set out with Pitt on a tour in France; and after his return his eloquence proved of great assistance to Pitt in his struggle against the majority of the House of Commons. In 1784 Wilberforce was elected for both Hull and Yorkshire, and took his seat for the latter constituency.

A journey to Nice in the autumn of the same year with Dr Isaac Milner led to his conversion to Evangelical Chris- tianity and the adoption of more serious views of life. The change had a marked effect on his public conduct. In the beginning of 1787 he busied himself with the estab- lishment of a society for the reformation of manners. About the same time he made the acquaintance of Thomas Clarkson, and began the agitation against the slave trade. Pitt entered heartily into their plans, and recommended Wilberforce to undertake the guidance of the project as a subject suited to his character and talents. While Clark- son conducted the agitation throughout the country, Wil- berforce took every opportunity in the House of Commons of exposing the evils and horrors of the trade. In 1788, however, a failure of his digestive powers compelled him to retire for some months from public life, and the introduc- tion of the subject in parliament therefore devolved on Pitt, whose representations were so far successful that an Act was passed providing that the number of slaves carried in ships should be in proportion to the tonnage. On 12th May of

the following year Wilberforce, in co-operation with Pitt, brought the subject of abolition again before the House of Commons; but the friends of the planters suc- ceeded in getting the matter deferred. On 27th January following Wilberforce carried a motion for referring to a special committee the further examination of witnesses, but after full inquiry the motion for abolition in May 1791 was lost by 163 votes to 88. In the following April he carried a motion for gradual abolition by 238 to 85 votes ; but in the House of Lords the discussion was finally post-

poned till the following session. Notwithstanding his un- remitting labours in educating public opinion and annual motions in the House of Commons, it was not till 1807, the year following Pitt's death, that the first great step towards the abolition of slavery was accomplished. When the anti-slavery society was formed in 1823, Wilberforce and Clarkson became vice-presidents ; but before their aim was accomplished Wilberforce had retired from public life, and the Emancipation Bill was not passed till August 1833, a month after his death.

In 1797 Wilberforce published A Practical View of the Prevailing Religious System of Professed Christians in the Higher and Middle Classes of this Country Contrasted with Real Christianity, which within half a year went through five editions and was afterwards translated into French, Italian, Dutch, and German. Shortly after the appear- ance of this work he occupied himself with a plan for a religious periodical which should admit "'a moderate degree of political and common intelligence," the result being the appearance in January 1801 of the Christian Observer. He also interested himself in a variety of schemes for the ad- vancement of the social and religious welfare of the com- munity, including the establishment of the Association for the Better Observance of Sunday, the foundation, with Hannah More (q.v.), of schools at Cheddar, Somersetshire, a project for opening a school in every parish for the religious instruction of children, a plan for the education of the children of the lower classes, a bill for securing better salaries to curates, and a method for disseminating, by Government help, Christianity in India. In parlia- ment he was a supporter of parliamentary reform and of

Catholic emancipation. Jn 1812, on account of failing health, he exchanged the representation of Yorkshire for that of a constituency which would make less demands on his time, and was returned for Bramber. In 1825 he retired from the House of Commons, and the following year settled at Highwood Hill, "just beyond the disk of the metropolis." He died at London on 29th July 1833, and was buried in Westminster Abbey close to Pitt, Fox, and Canning. In Westminster Abbey a statue was erected to his memory, and in Yorkshire a county asylum for the blind was founded in his honour. A column was also erected to him by his townsmen of Hull.

See Life of William Wilberforce, by lis sons, 1888, 5 vols.; Correspondence, 2 vols., 1840.

WILDBAD, a watering-place in the north-west of Wiirt- emberg, is picturesquely situated in the romantic pine- clad gorge of the Enz, 28 miles west of Stuttgart and 14 east of Baden-Baden. Its thermal alkaline springs have a temperature of 90°-100° Fahr., and are used for bathing in cases of rheumatism, gout, neuralgia, and similar ail- ments (see MINERAL WaTERS, vol. xvi. p. 433). The fact that the springs rise within the baths, and are thus used at the fountain-head, is considered to contribute materially to their curative influence. The system of bathing in com- mon is customary at Wildbad, although of course separate baths may be obtained. The water is applied internally for affections of the stomach and digestive organs, and of the kidneys, bladder, &c. Wildbad possesses all the usual arrangements for the comfort and amusement of the visiters (over 6000 annually), including large and well-appointed hotels, a curhaus, a trink-halle, and promenades. The neighbourhood is picturesque, the most attractive spot being the Wildsee, of which many legends are told. The population of the town in 1885 was 3514.

WILFRID (c. 634-709), archbishop of York from 665 till 709, was born of good parentage in Northumbria, c. 634. When nearly fourteen years of age he was sent away froma harsh stepmother to serve in King Oswy's court, where he attracted the notice of the queen, Eanfled.

She, fostering his inclination for a religious life, placed him under the care of an old noble, Cudda, who had be- taken himself to a monastic life at Lindisfarne. Later on Eanfled enabled him to visit Rome under the protection of Benedict Biscop, the son of a Northumbrian, or rather Anglian, noble. At Lyons Wilfrid's pleasing features and quick intelligence made Dalfinus, or Aunemund, the archbishop, desire to adopt him and marry him to his niece. Resisting his offers, the youth went on to Rome, received the papal benediction, and then, in accordance with his promise, returned to Lyons, where he stayed for three years, till the murder of his patron (27656), whose fate he would have shared had not his beauty stayed the hand of the executioners. On his return home, Oswy's son Alchfrid gave him a monastery at Ripon, and before long Bishop Agilbert of Paris ordained him priest. He was probably already regarded as the leading exponent of the Roman discipline in England when his speech at the council of Whitby determined the overthrow of the Celtic party (664). About a year later he was consecrated to the see of York (not in England, where perhaps he could not find the fitting number of orthodox prelates, but at Compiégne). On his return journey he narrowly escaped the pagan wreckers of Sussex, and only reached his own country to find he had been supplanted in his see. The rest of his life is a record of wandering and misfortune. For three years (665-668) he ruled his monastery at Ripon in peace, occasionally, however, exercising his episcopal functions in Mercia and Kent. On Archbishop Theodore's arrival (668) he was restored to his see, but only to be driven out through the anger of King Egfrid's queen (677). Theodore now divided Wilfrid's large diocese into three ; and the aggrieved prelate went to lay his case before the bishop of Rome. On his way he narrowly escaped murder at the hands of foreign princes, whom his own countrymen had stirred up against him. A synod held at Rome under Agatho (7679) ordained his restitution ; but even a papal decision could not prevent his being cast into prison on his return home. When released he wandered first to Mercia, whence Egfrid once more drove him forth to Sussex. Here he rescued the pagan folk from an impending famine, and established a bishop's see at Selsea. After Egfrid's death (20th May 685) Wilfrid was restored to York and Ripon (686-687). He was once more driven out in 691- 692, and after appealing to Rome in person obtained an- other decision in his favour (703-704). Despite the inter- cession of Berghtwald,

archbishop of Canterbury, Egbert's brother Aldfrid refused to admit the aged prelate into his kingdom till his last illness (705). This year or the next a council was held near the river Nidd, the papal letters were read, and, despite the opposition of the bishops, Wilfrid once more received the abbeys of Ripon and Hexham. Not long after he died at Oundle (Northamptonshire) as he was going on a visit to Ceolred, king of Mercia (709). He was buried at Ripon, whence, according to Eadmer, his bones were afterwards removed to Canterbury. Wilfrid's is a memorable name in English history, not only be- cause of the large part he played in supplanting the Celtic discipline

and in establishing a precedent of appeal to papal authority, but

also by reason of his services to architecture and learning. At York he renewed Panulinus's old church, roofing it with lead and furnish- ing it with glass windows ; at Ripon he built an entirely new basilica with- columns and porches; at Hexham in honour of St Andrew he reared a still nobler church, over which Eddius grows eloquent

In the early days of his bishopric he used to travel about his diocese attended by a little troop of skilled masons. He seems to have also reformed the method of conducting the divine services by the aid of his skilled chanters, Addde and Honan, and to have established or tenewed the rule of St Benedict in the monasteries. On each visit to Rome it was his delight to collect relics for his native land: and to his favourite basilica at Ripon he gave a bookcase wrought in gold and precious stones, besides a splendid copy of the Gospels. Asa missionary his success was extraordinary, and even on his way

to Rome in 679 he found time to convert the Frisian king, Ald- gislus, though the latter had been bribed to slay him by the offer of "a measure of gold solidi." Later in life he ordained Suidbert as the first bishop of Frisia. In earlier years his influence was so great that he supplied the Franks with one of their later Mero- vingian kings, Dagobert II.

Wilfrid's life was written shortly after his death by Eddius at the request of Acca, his successor at Hexham, and Tatbert, abbot of Ripon,—both intimate friends of the great bishop. Other lives were written by Frithegode in the 10th, by Foleard in the 11th, and by Eadmer early in the 12th century. The dates have to be supplied mainly from Bede's Hist. Eccl., iii. c. 25, &e., 13, &e., v. 19, &c. All the lives are printed in Raine's Historians of the Church of York, vol. i. (Rolls Series).

WILHELMSHAVEN, or WILHELMSHAFEN, the chief naval station and war harbour of Germany on the North Sea, is situated on the east side of the Jahde, a large basin united with the sea by a channel 3 miles long. The ground on which it stands was purchased by Prussia from the duke of Oldenburg in 1853, and though reckoned a part of the province of Hanover is completely surrounded on the land- ward side by Oldenburg territory. The town is laid out on a regular and ample scale, and the streets are wide and shaded with trees. A statue has been erected to Admiral Prince Adalbert of Prussia (d. 1873). Most of the inhabit- ants, who numbered 13,972 in 1885, including 1326 Roman Catholics, are connected with the dockyard and fleet ; and there is an additional colony of dockyard em- ployés at Bant (3000 inhabitants), on Oldenburg soil.

The original harbour, constructed in 1855-69, consists of an inner and outer basin. To the south-east of the inner harbour, which is used by war-vessels not iu active service, a large new harbour has recently been constructed for war-vessels in commission and for commercial purposes. The entrance to both the old and the new harbour is sheltered by long and massive moles. A torpedo har- bour has also been formed. The inner harbour and the adjacent docks, building-slips, machine-shops, &c., form the Government dockyard, which is enclosed by a lofty wall with fourtecn iron gates. The whole establishment is defended by strong fortifications.

WILKES, Joun (1727-1797), the champion of the right of free representation by British constituencies, was de- scended from a family long connected with Leighton- Buzzard in Bedfordshire, but he himself was born at Clerkenwell, London, on 17th October 1727. His father, Israel Wilkes, was a rich distiller, and the owner, through his wife Sarah, daughter of John Heaton of Hoxton, of considerable house property in its

north-eastern suburbs. After some training under private tuition John Wilkes was sent to the university of Leyden, matriculating there on 8th September 1744. Several young men of talent from Scotland and England were studying in this Dutch uni- versity at that period, and a lively picture of their life, in which Wilkes displays the gaiety of temper which remained faithful to him all his days, is presented to us by "Jupiter " Carlyle. With this training he acquired an intimate know- ledge of classical literature, and he enlarged his mind by travelling through Holland, Flanders, and part of Germany. At the close of 1748 he returned to his native land, and in a few months (October 1749) was drawn by his relations into marrying Mary, sole daughter and heiress of John Mead, citizen and grocer of London, who was ten years his senior. The ill-assorted pair,—for she was grave and staid, while he rioted in exuberant spirits and love of society,—lived together in the country for some months, when, to make matters worse, they returned to town to dwell with the wife's mother. One child, a daughter, was born to them, when Wilkes left his wife and removed to West- minster, where he kept open house for many young men about town possessing more wit than morals. To this un- fortunate marriage should in justice be attributed some of his errors in life. In 1754 he contested the constituency of Berwick-upon-Tweed, but failed to gain the seat. Wilkes was now a well-known figure in the life of the West End, and among his associates were Thomas Potter, the son of the archbishop of Canterbury, Sir Francis Dashwood, after- wards Lord le Despencer, and Lord Sandwich, the last of

whom in after years showed great animosity towards his old companion in revelry. In July 1757, by a triangular arrangement in which Potter and the first William Pitt played the other parts, Wilkes was elected for Aylesbury, and for this constituency he was again returned at the general election in March 1761. Pitt was his leader in politics ; but to Pitt he applied in vain for a seat at the board of trade; nor was he successful in his other applica- tions for office. Stung by these disappointments, Wilkes threw himself into bitter opposition to Bute, and to make his antagonism more effective established a paper called The North Briton, in which he from the first attacked the Scotch prime minister with exceeding

bitterness, and grew bolder as it proceeded in its course. One of its articles ridiculed Lord Talbot, the steward of the royal household, and a duel was the result. When Bute resigned, the issue of the journal was suspended ; but, when the royal speech framed by George Grenville's ministry showed that the change was one of men only, not of measures, a supple- mentary number, No. 45, was published, 23d April 1763, containing a caustic criticism of the king's message to his – parliament. Lord Halifax, the leading secretary of state, issued a general warrant "to search for authors, printers, and publishers," and to bring them before him for examin- ation. Charles Churchill, the poet and a coadjutor in this newspaper enterprise, escaped through the good offices of Wilkes; but the chief offender was arrested and thrown into the Tower. A week later, however, he was released by order of the Court of Common Pleas on the ground that his privilege as a member of parliament afforded him immunity from arrest. General warrants were afterwards declared illegal, and Halifax himself after a series of dis- creditable shifts was cast in heavy sums, on actions brought against him by the persons whom he had injured,—the total expenses incurred by the ministry in these lawless pro- ceedings amounting to at least £100,000. So far Wilkes had triumphed over his enemies, but he gave them cause for rejoicing by an indiscreet reprint of the obnoxious No. 45, and by striking off at his private press thirteen copies of an obscene Essay on Woman, written by his friend Potter, in parody of Pope's Essay on Man, one of which got into the hands of Lord Sandwich. Immediately on the meeting of the House of Commons (15th November 1763) proceedings were taken against him. Lord North moved that No. 45 was "'a false, scandalous, and seditious libel," and, as the motion was of course carried, the paper was publicly burnt in Cheapside on 4th December. The Essay on Woman was brought before the Upper House by Lord Sandwich, and, on account of the improper use which had been made of Bishop Warburton's name as_ the author of some coarse notes, the work was voted a breach of privilege, and Wilkes was ordered to be prosecuted in the Court of King's Bench for printing and publishing an impious libel. He was expelled from the House of Com- mons on 19th January 1764 ; and on 21st February he was found guilty in the King's Bench of reprinting No. 45 and of printing and publishing the Lssay on Woman. Wilkes was on these dates absent from England. Some strong expressions applied to him by Samuel Martin, an

ex-secre- tary of the treasury, had provoked a duel (16th November 1763), in which Wilkes was severely wounded in the stomach. He withdrew to Paris, and as he did not return to England to receive his sentence in the law courts was pronounced an outlaw.

For several years Wilkes remained abroad, receiving £1000 a year from the leading Whigs, and in the course of his travels he visited many parts of Italy. In March 1768 he returned to London and sued the king for pardon, but in vain. His next step was to offer himself as a candi- date for the representation of the City of London, when he

was the lowest at the poll. Undaunted by this defeat, he solicited the freeholders of Middlesex to return him as their champion, and they placed him at the head of all com- petitors. He appeared before the King's Bench, and on a technical point procured a reversal of his outlawry ; but the original verdict was maintained, and he was sentenced to imprisonment for twenty-two months as well as toa fine of £1000, and he was further ordered to produce securities for good behaviour for seven years after his liberation. His conduct was brought before the House of Commons, with the result that he was expelled from the House on 3d February 1769, and with this proceeding there began a series of contests between the ministry and the electors of Middlesex without parallel in English history. They promptly re-elected him (16th February), only to find him pronounced incapable of sitting and his election void. Again they returned him (16th March) and again he was rejected. A fourth election then followed, when Colonel Henry Lawes Luttrell, with all the influence of the court and the Fox family in his favour, obtained but 296 votes to 1143 given for Wilkes, whereupon the House declared that Luttrell had been duly elected. Through these audacious proceedings a storm of fury broke out through- out the country. In the cause of " Wilkes and liberty" high and low enlisted themselves. His prison cell was thronged daily by the chief of the Whigs, and large sums of money were subscribed for his support. So great was the popular sympathy in his favour that a keen judge of contemporary politics declared that, had George III. pos- sessed a bad and Wilkes a good character, the king would

have been an outcast from his dominions. At the height of the combat in January 1769 Wilkes was elected an alder- man for the City of London ; in 1771 he served as sheriff for London and Middlesex, and as alderman he took an active part in the struggle between the corporation and the House of Commons by which freedom of publication of the parliamentary debates was obtained. His admirers endeavoured in 1772 to procure his election as lord mayor of London, but he was set aside by the aldermen, some of whom were allied with the ministry of Lord North, while others, as Oliver and Townshend, leant to the Liberalism of Lord Shelburne. In 1774, however, he obtained that dignity, and he retained his seat for Middlesex from the dissolution in 1774 until 1790. He moved in 1776 for leave to bring in a bill "for a just and equal representa- tion of the people of England in parliament" ; but attempts at parliamentary reform were premature by at least half a century. After several failures better fortune attended his efforts in another direction, for in 1782 all the declarations and orders against him for his elections in Middlesex were ordered to be expunged from the journals of the House. In 1779 Wilkes was elected chamberlain of the city by a large majority, and the office became his freehold for life. He died at his house in Grosvenor Square, London, on 20th December 1797.

Wilkes printed editions of Catullus and Theophrastus, and at the time of his death had made considerable progress with a translation of Anacreon. His conversation was often sullied by obscenity and profanity ; but he knew how to suit his conversation to his com- pany, and his well-known assertion that, ugly as he was, with the start of a quarter of an hour he could get the better of any man, however good-looking, in the graces of any lady, shows his confi- dence in his powers of fascination. The king was obliged to own that he had never met so well-bred a lord mayor, and Dr Johnson, who made his acquaintance at the house of Dilly, the bookseller in the Poultry, confessed that "Jack has great variety of talk, Jack is a scholar, and Jack has the manners of a gentleman." It is doubtful how far he himself believed in the justice of the principles which he espoused. To George III. he remarked of his devoted friend and legal adviser, Serjeant Glynn, "Ah sir! he was a Wilkite, which I never was." His writings were marked by great powcr of

sarcasm. Two collections of his letters were published, one of Letters to his Daughter, in four volumes in 1804, the other Corre-

spondence with his Friends, in five volumes in 1805. WILKESBARRE, a city of the United States, the county seat of Luzerne county, Pennsylvania, is situated on the right bank of the north branch of the Susquehanna river in the Wyoming valley, 98 miles north-north-west from Philadelphia. The business portion lies in the bottom lands, while the residence portions have extended into the adjacent hilly country. It is entered by four rail-ways,—the Central of New Jersey, that of the Delaware and Hudson Canal Company, the Lehigh Valley, and the Pennsylvania. The city is irregularly laid out. The population in 1880 was 23,339; in 1870 it was 10,174. Wilkesbarre is in an anthracite mining district, and its industries all relate more or less directly to this product. It is a centre for the distribution of mining supplies of

all kinds and for the shipment of coal.

After several attempts, which were rendered futile by Indian hostilities, a settlement was finally effected upon the site of Wilkesbarre in 1770. Eight years later the whole region was depopulated by the Wyoming massacre, and the infant town, with many others, was sacked and burned. In the same year a fort was erected upon the site of the ruined village, around which the town was rebuilt. Up to 1855 its growth was very slow and uncertain. The discovery of means of using the anthracite coal, which is found in abundance in the neighbourhood, gave an immense impetus to the growth and prosperity of the city.

WILKIE, Str Davin (1785-1841), Scottish subject- painter, was born on 18th November 1785, the son of the parish minister of Cults in Fifeshire. He very early de- veloped an extraordinary love for art: he was accustomed to say that he could draw before he could read and paint before he could spell, and at school he used to barter his sketches and portraits for slate-pencils and marbles. He was also noted for his keen and constant observation of the village life around him ; and a friend has recorded that he "liked better to stand and look at his companions at their

games than to join in their play." In 1799, after he had attended school at Pitlessie, Kettle, and Cupar, his father reluctantly yielded to his desire to become a painter ; and through the influence of the earl of Leven Wilkie was admitted to the Trustees' Academy in Edinburgh, and began the study of art under John Graham, the able teacher of the school. From William Allan (afterwards Sir William Allan and president of the Royal Scottish Academy) and John Burnet, the engraver of Wilkie's works, we have an interesting account of his early studies, of his indomitable persever- ance and power of close application, of his habit of haunt- ing fairs and market-places, and transferring to his sketch- book all that struck him as characteristic and telling in figure or incident, and of his admiration for the works of Carse and David Allan, two Scottish painters of scenes from humble life. Among his pictures of this period are mentioned a subject from Macbeth, Ceres in Search of Proserpine, and Diana and Calisto, which in 1803 gained a premium of ten guineas at the Trustees' Academy, while his pencil portraits of himself and his mother, dated that year, and now in the possession of the duke of Buccleuch, prove that he had already attained considerable certainty of touch and power of rendering character. A scene from Allan Ramsay, and a sketch from Macneill's ballad of Scot- land's Skaith, afterwards developed into the well-known Village Politicians, were the first subjects in which his true artistic individuality began to assert itself.

_ In 1804 Wilkie returned to Cults, established himself in the manse, and commenced his first important subject- picture, Pitlessie Fair, which includes about 140 figures, and in which he introduced portraits of his neighbours and of several members of his family circle. This work, which was purchased by Kinnear of Kinloch for £25, is rather hot and unpleasant in tone and colouring ; but it is a picture of the greatest interest and promise, so full of

incident and character as to justify its painter's remark, when he saw it twelve years afterwards, that it contains "more subject and entertainment than any other three pictures which I have since produced." In addition

to this elaborate figure-piece, Wilkie was much employed at the time upon portraits, both at home and in Kinghorn, St Andrews, and Aberdeen.

In the spring of 1805 he left Scotland for London, carrying with him his Bounty-Money, or the Village Recruit, which he soon disposed of for £6, and began to study in the schools of the Royal Academy. One of his first patrons in London was Stodart, a pianoforte maker, a distant connexion of the Wilkie family, who commis- sioned his portrait and other works and introduced the young artist to the dowager countess of Mansfield. This lady's son was the purchaser of the Village Politicians, which attracted great attention when it was exhibited in the Royal Academy of 1806, where it was followed in the succeeding year by the Blind Fiddler, a commission from the painter's lifelong friend Sir George Beaumont. Wilkie now turned aside into the paths of historical art, and painted his Alfred in the Neatherd's Cottage, for the gallery illustrative of English history which was being formed by Alexander Davison. The picture was executed with the most conscientious care, and subjected to many alterations, but in the end it proved far from a success. It bears no vivid impress of reality; the figure of the king is wanting in dignity and character ; indeed the subject was one for which the artist had no essential sympathy, and into which he was unable to project his imagination effectively. After its completion he wisely returned to genre-painting, producing the Card-Players and the admir- able picture of the Rent Day, which was composed during recovery from a fever contracted in 1807 while on a visit to his native village. His next great work was the Ale- House Door, afterwards entitled the Village Festival (now in the National Gallery), which was purchased by J. J. Angerstein for 800 guineas. It has been styled by Leslie 'the most artificial of Wilkie's earlier productions." Its figures seem rather small for the extent of canvas; but the separate groups are excellent, and in its handling, in the exquisite delicacy and refinement of touch, and in the variety and beauty of its broken tints it bears marks of the most distinct progress. It was followed in 1813 by the well-known Blind Man's Buff, a commission from the prince regent, to which a companion picture, the Penny Wedding, was added in 1818.

Meanwhile Wilkie's eminent success in art had been rewarded by professional honours. In November 1809 he was elected an associate of the Royal Academy, when he had hardly attained the age prescribed by its laws, and in February 1811 he became a full academician. In 1812 he opened an exhibition of his collected works in Pall Mall; but the experiment was unsuccessful, entailing pecuniary loss upon the artist. In 1814 he executed the Letter of Introduction, one of the most delicately finished and perfect of his cabinet pictures. In the same year he made his first visit to the Continent, and at Paris entered upon a profitable and delighted study of the works of art collected in the Louvre. Interesting particulars of the time are preserved in his own matter-of-fact diary, and in the more sprightly and flowing pages of the journal of Haydon, his fellow-traveller. On his return he began Distraining for Rent, one of the most popular and dramatic of his works. In 1816 he made a tour through Holland and Belgium in company with Raimbach, the engraver of many of his paintings. The Sir Walter Scott and his Family, a cabinet-sized picture with small full-length figures in the dress of Scottish peasants, was the result of a visit to Abbotsford in 1818. Reading a Will, a commission

from the king of Bavaria, now in the New Pinakothek at Munich, was completed in 1820; and two years later the great picture of Chelsea Pensioners Reading the Gazette of the Battle of Waterloo, commissioned by the duke of Wellington in 1816, at a cost of 1200 gnineas, was ex- hibited at the Royal Academy. The subject was a par- ticularly happy one, and was carried out with the greatest fulness of incident and variety of character; it appealed powerfully to the popular sentiment of the time, while the accomplished and masterly technique of the work won the admiration of the artistic portion of the public.

In 1822 Wilkie visited Edinburgh, in order to select from the royal progress of George IV. a fitting subject for a picture. The Reception of the King at the Entrance of Holyrood Palace was the incident ultimately chosen; and in the following year, when the artist, upon the death of Raeburn, had been appointed royal limner for Scotland, he received

sittings from the monarch, and began to work diligently upon the subject. But several years elapsed before its completion ; for, like all such ceremonial works, it proved a harassing commission, uncongenial to the painter while in progress and unsatisfactory when finished. His health suffered from the strain to which he was sub- jected, and his condition was aggravated by heavy domestic trials and responsibilities. In 1825 he sought relief in foreign travel: after visiting Paris, he passed into Italy, where, at Rome, he received the news of fresh disasters through the failure of his publishers. A residence at Toplitz and Carlsbad was tried in 1826, with little good result, and then Wilkie returned to Italy, to Venice and Florence. The summer of 1837 was spent in Geneva, where he had sufficiently recovered to paint his Princess Doria Washing the Pilgrims' Feet, a work which, like several small pictures executed at Rome, was strongly influenced by the Italian art by which the painter had been surrounded. In October he passed into Spain, whence he returned to England in June 1828.

It is impossible to over-estimate the influence upon Wilkie's art of these three years of foreign travel. It amounts to nothing short of a complete change of style. Up to the period of his leaving England he had been mainly influenced by the Dutch genre-painters, whose technique he had carefully studied, whose works he fre- quently kept beside him in his studio for reference as he painted, and whose method he applied to the rendering of those scenes of English and Scottish life of which he was so close and faithful an observer. 'Teniers, in particular, appears to have been his chief master; and in his earlier productions we find the sharp, precise, spirited touch, the rather subdued colouring, and the clear, silvery grey tone which distinguish this master; while in his subjects of a slightly later period,—those, such as the Chelsea Pen- sioners, the Highland Whisky Still, and the Rabbit on the Wall, executed in what Burnet styles his second manner, which, however, may be regarded as only the development and maturity of his first,—he begins to unite to the qualities of Teniers that greater richness and fulness of effect which are characteristic of Ostade. But now he experienced the spell of the Italian masters, and of Velaz- quez and the great Spaniards. His change of feeling is accurately marked in an entry in his journal during his last visit to The Hague. "One feels wearied," he writes, "with the perfections of the

minor Dutch paintings, and finds relief in contemplating even the imperfect sketches and incomplete thoughts of those great Italians. My friend Woodburn used to say when we were in Italy that 'all collectors begin with Dutch pictures but end with Italian.'"

In the works whicli Wilkie produced in his final period he exchanged the detailed handling, the delicate finish,

and the reticent hues of his earlier works for a style dis- tinguished by breadth of touch, largeness of effect, richness of tone, and full force of melting and powerful colour. His subjects, too, were no longer the homely things of the genre-painter : with his broader method he attempted the portrayal of scenes from history, suggested for the most part by the associations of his foreign travel. His change of style and change of subject were severely criticized at the time; to some extent he lost his hold upon the public, who regretted the familiar subjects and the interest and pathos of his earlier productions, and were less ready to follow him into the historic scenes towards which this final phase of his art sought to lead them. The popular verdict had in it a basis of truth: Wilkie was indeed greatest as a genre-painter. He possessed the keenest in- stinct for the portrayal of what was around him, the truest insight for the effective selection, the artistic and telling combination, of the things that met his every-day sight, and were dear to him through life-long nearness; but he was destitute of that higher and more recondite kind of imagination which "bodies forth the form of things un- seen," and gives life and reality to its re-creations of the past. It is, however, undoubtedly true that on technical grounds his change of style was criticized with undue severity. While his later works are admittedly more fre- quently faulty in form and draughtsmanship than those of his earlier period, some of them at least (the Bride's Toilet, 1837, for instance) show a true gain and development in power of handling, and in mastery over complex and for- cible colour harmonies. . Most of Wilkie's foreign subjects, ~—the Pifferari, Princess Doria, the Maid of Saragossa, the Spanish Podado, a Guerilla Council of War, the Guerilla Taking Leave of his Family, and the Guerilla's Return to his Family,—passed into the English royal

collection; but the dramatic Two Spanish Monks of Toledo, also entitled the Confessor Confessing, became the property of the marquis of Lansdowne. On his return to England Wilkie completed the Reception of the King at the Entrance of Holyrood Palace,—a curious example of a union of his earlier and later styles, a "mixture" which was very justly pronounced by Haydon to be "like oil and water." His Preaching of John Knox before the Lords of the Congre- gation had also been begun before he left for abroad ; but it was painted throughout in the later style, and conse- quently presents a more satisfactory unity and harmony of treatment and handling. It was one of the most suc- cessful pictures of the artist's later period.

In the beginning of 1830 Sir Thomas Lawrence died, and Wilkie was appointed to succeed him as painter in ordinary to the king, and in 1836 he received the honour of knighthood. The main figure-pictures which occupied him until the end were Columbus in the Convent at La Rabida, 1835; Napoleon and Pius VII. at Fontainebleau, 1836 ; Sir David Baird Discovering the Body of Tippoo Sahib, 1838; the Empress Josephine and the Fortune- Teller, 1838 ; and Queen Victoria Presiding at her First Council, 1838. His time was also much occupied with portraiture, many of his works of this class being royal commissions. His portraits are pictorial and excellent in general distribution, but the faces are frequently wanting in drawing and character. He seldom succeeded in show- ing his sitters at their best, and his female portraits, in particular, rarely gave satisfaction. A favourable example of his cabinet-sized portraits is that of Sir Robert Liston; his likeness of W. Esdaile is an admirable three-quarter length ; and one of his finest full-lengths is the gallery portrait of Lord Kellie, now in the town-hall of Cupar.

In the autumn of 1840 Wilkie resolved on a voyage to the East. In a letter to Sir Robert Peel he states that his object was '"'to judge, not whether I can, but whether

those that are younger, or with far higher attainments and powers, may not in future be required, in the advance and spread of our knowledge, to refer at once to the locali- ties of Scripture events, when the great work is to be essayed of representing Scripture history,'"—-a sentence which foreshadows the new direction and aims of Mr Hol- man Hunt and other modern realists. Passing through Holland and Germany, he reached Constantinople, where, while detained by the war in Syria, he painted a portrait of the young sultan. He then sailed for Smyrna and travelled to Jerusalem, where he remained for some five busy weeks. The last work of all upon which he was en- gaged was a portrait of Mehemet Ali, done at Alexandria. On his return voyage he suffered from an attack of illness at Malta, and died at sea off Gibraltar on the morning of lst June 1841. His body was consigned to the deep in the Bay of Gibraltar.

An elaborate Life of Sir David Wilkie, by Allan Cunningham, containing the painter's journals and his observant and well-con- sidered 'Critical Remarks on Works of Art," was published in 1843. Redgrave's Century of Painters of the English School and John Burnet's Practical Essays on the Fine Arts may also be referred to for a critical estimate of his works. A list of the exceptionally numerous and excellent engravings from his pictures will be found in the Art Union Journal for January 1840. Apart from his skill as a painter Wilkie was an admirable etcher. The best of his plates, such as the Gentleman at his Desk (Laing, VII.), the Pope examining a Censer (Laing, VIII.), and the Seat of Hands (Laing, IV.), are worthy to rank with the work of the greatest figure- etchers. During his lifetime he issued a portfolio of seven plates, and in 1875 Dr David Laing catalogued and published the complete series of his etchings and dry-points, supplying the place of a few copper-plates that had been lost by reproductions, in his Ltchings of David Wilkie and Andrew Geddes. (J. M. G.)

WILL, or TESTAMENT, is an instrument by which a per- son regulates the rights of others over his property or family after his death. For the devolution of property not disposed of by will, see INHERITANCE, INTESTACY. In strictness ' will" is a general term, whilst " testament" applies only to dispositions of personalty ; but this dis- tinction is seldom observed. The conception of freedom of disposition by will, familiar as it

is in modern England, is by no means universal, In fact, complete freedom is the exception rather than the rule. Legal systems which are based upon Roman law, such as those of Scotland and France, allow the whole property to be alienated only where the deceased leaves no widow or near relatives. In France this restriction has met with condemnation from eminent legal and economical authorities. M. Troplong, for instance, holds that "un peuple n'est pas libre, s'il n'a pas le droit de tester, et la liberté du testament est la plus grande preuve de la liberté civile." 1

History.—The will, if not purely Roman in origin, at least owes to Roman law its complete development,—a development which in most European countries was greatly aided at a later period by ecclesiastics versed in Roman law. In India, according to the better opinion, it was unknown before the English conquest ; in the Mosaic law and in ancient Athens the will, if it existed at all, was of a very rudimentary character. The same is the case with the Leges Barbarorwm, where they are unaffected by Roman law. The will is, on the other hand, recog- nized by Rabbinical and Mohammedan law. The early Roman will, as Sir H. Maine shows,? differed from the modern will in most important respects. It was at first effectual during the lifetime of the person who made it: it was made in public ; and it was irrevocable. Its original object, like that of adoption, was to secure the perpetua- tion of the family. This was done by securing the due vesting of the Aereditas in a person who could be relied upon to keep up the family rites. There is much prob-

1 Traité des donations entre-vifs et des testuments (1855), preface. 2 Ancient Law, chap. vi.

ability in the conjecture that a will was only allowed to be made when the testator had no genézles discoverable, or when the gentiles had waived their rights. It is certain from the text of Gaius® that the earliest forms of will were those made in the comitia calata, and those made in procinctu, or on the eve of battle. The former were pub- lished before the comztia, as representative of the patrician gentes, and were originally a legislative act. 'These wills were the peculiar privilege of patricians. At a later time

*grew up a form of plebeian will (testamentum per xs et Libram), and the law of succession under testament was further modified by the influence of the preetor, especially in the direction of recognition of jideicommissa (see TRUST). Codicilli, or informal wills, also came into use, and were sufficient for almost every purpose but the appointment of an heir. In the time of Justinian a will founded partly on the jus civile, partly on the edict of the preetor, partly on imperial constitutions and so called testamentum tripar- titum, was generally in use. The main points essential to its validity were that the testator should possess testa- mentary capacity, and that the will should be signed or acknowledged by the testator in the presence of seven witnesses, or published orally in open court. The wit- nesses must be zdonet, or free from legal disability. For instance, women and slaves were not good witnesses. The whole property of the testator could not be alienated. The rights of heirs and descendants were protected by enact- ments which secured to them a legal minimum. The age at which testamentary capacity began was fourteen in the case of males, twelve in the case of females. Up to 439 A.D, a will must have been in Latin ; after that date Greek was allowed. Certain persons, especially soldiers, were privileged from observing the ordinary forms. 'The liability of the heir to the debts of the testator varied at different periods. At first it was practically unlimited. Then the law was gradually modified in his favour, until in the time of Justinian the heir who duly made an in- ventory of the property of the deceased was liable only to the amount of the property to which he had succeeded. This limitation of liability is generally termed by the civilians beneficiwm inventarii. Closely connected with the will was the donatio mortis causa, the rules of which have been as a whole adopted in England (see below). An immense space in the Corpus Juris is occupied with testamentary law. The whole of part v. of the Dugest (books xxvili.-xxxvi.) deals with the subject, and so doa large number of constitutions in the Code and Novels.**

The effect of Christianity upon the will was very marked. For instance, the duty of bequeathing to the church was inculeated as early as Constantine, and heretics and monks were placed under a disability to make a will or take gifts left by will. A will was often deposited in a church. The canon law follows the Roman law with a still greater leaning to the advantage of the church. No church property could be bequeathed.

Manifest usurers were added to the list of those under disability. For the validity of a will it was generally necessary that it should be made in the presence of a priest and two witnesses, unless where it was made in pias causas. The witnesses, as in Roman law, must be zdonet. Gifts to the church were not subject to the deductions in favour of the heir and the children necessary in ordinary cases.2 In Eng- land the church succeeded in holding in its own hands for centuries jurisdiction in testamentary matters.

The Roman law of wills has had considerable effect upon English law. In the words of Sir H. Maine, " The

"7h, Wl,

4 For further information as to the history of the Roman will, see Roman Law, especially pp. 674, 691, 702, 706, 718.

® Most of the law is contained in Deeretals, iii. 26, 'De Testamentis."

Roman and English law con- trasted.

Real estate in England.

WiLL kh

English law of testamentary succession to personalty has become a modified form of the dispensation under which the inheritances of Roman citizens were administered." 1 At the same time there are some broad and striking differ- ences which should be borne in mind. The following among others may be noticed. (1) A Roman testator could not, unless a soldier, die partly testate and partly intestate. The will must stand or fall asa whole. This is not the case in England. (2) There is no one in English law to whom the unversitas juris of the testator descends as it did to the Roman heres, whose appointment was essential to the validity of a formal will, and who partook of the nature of the English heir, executor, ad- ministrator, devisee, and legatee. (3) The disabilities of testators differed in the two systems. The disability of a slave or a heretic is peculiar to Roman law, of a youth between fourteen and twenty-one to

English law. (4) The whole property may be disposed of in England ; but it was not so at Rome, where, except by the wills of soldiers, children could not be disinherited unless for specified acts of misconduct. During the greater part of the period of Roman law the heir must also have had his fourth in order to induce him to accept the inheritance. (5) In English law all wills must conform to certain statutory require- ments ; the Romans recognized from the time of Augustus an informal will called codicilli. The English codicil has little in common with this but the name. It is not an informal will, but an addition to a will, read as a part of it, and needing the same formalities of execution. (6) There is a striking difference, unknown to Roman law, between wills of realty and wills of personalty. Probate is necessary for the latter but not for the former. The Roman legatum applied to both movables and immovables; in England a legacy or bequest is a gift of personalty only, a gift of real estate being called a devise.2 (7) The Roman will spoke from the time of making; the English speaks from the time of death. This difference becomes very important in case of alteration in the position of the testator between the making of the will and his death. As a rule the Roman will could not, the English can, pass after- acquired property.

Liberty of alienation by will is found at an early period in England. To judge from the words of a law of Canute, intestacy appears to have been the exception at that time.® How far the liberty extended is uncertain: it is the opinion of some authorities that complete disposition of land and goods was allowed, of others that limited rights of wife and children were recognized. However this may be, after the Conquest a distinction, the result of feudalism, to use a convenient if inaccurate term, arose between real and personal property. It will be convenient to treat the history of the two kinds of will separately.

It became the law after the Conquest, according to Sir E. Coke,‘ that no estate greater than for a term of years could be disposed of by will, unless in Kent, where the custom of GAVELKIND (q.v.) prevailed, and in some manors and boroughs (especially the City of London), where the pre-Conquest law was preserved by special indulgence. The reason why devise of land was not acknowledged by law was, no doubt, partly to discourage death-bed gifts in mortmain, partly because the testator could not give the

devisee that SEISIN (q¢.v.) which was the principal element ina feudal conveyance. By means of the doctrine of uses, however, the devise of land was secured by a circuitous method, generally by conveyance to feoffees to uses in the lifetime of the feoffer to such uses as he should appoint

1 Ancient Law, chap. vi.

2 The distinction between bequest and devise did not always exist. For instance, the Assize of Northampton, c. 4, speaks of a devise (divisa) of chattels. 3 Secular Laws, c. 68. SD Tsien, Te

571

by his will (see Trusr).6 On the passing of the Statute of Uses lands again became non-devisable, with a saving in the statute for the validity of wills made before the Ist of May 1536. The inconvenience of this state of things soon began to be felt, and was probably aggravated by the large amount of land thrown into the market after the dissolution of the monasteries. Asa remedy the Act of 32 Hen. VIII. c. 1 was passed in 1540, and was after- wards explained by 34 and 85 Hen. VIII. c. 5. The effect of these Acts was to make lands held in fee simple de- visable by will in writing, to the extent of two-thirds where the tenure was by knight service, and the whole where it was in socage. Corporations were incapacitated to receive, and married women, infants, idiots, and lunatics to devise. The Act 12 Car. IT. c. 24, by abolishing tenure by knight service, made all lands devisable. In the same reign the Statute of Frauds (29 Car. IT. c. 3) dealt with the formalities of execution. Up to this time simple notes, even in the handwriting of another person, constituted a sufficient will, if published by the testator as such. The Statute of Frauds required, inter alia, that all devises should be in writing, signed by the testator or by some person for him in his presence and by his direction, and should also be subscribed by three credible witnesses. The strict interpretation by the courts of the credibility of witnesses led to the passing of 26 Geo. II. c. 6, making interested witnesses sufficient for the due execution of the will, but declaring gifts to them void. The will of a man was revoked by marriage and the birth of a child, of a woman by marriage only. A will was also revoked by an alteration in circumstances, and even by a void conveyance inter vivos of land devised by the will made subsequently to the date of the

will, which was presumed to be an attempt by the grantor to give legal effect to a change of intention. As in Roman law, a will spoke from the time of the making, so that it could not avail to pass after- acquired property without republication, which was equiva- lent to making a new will. Copyholds were not devisable before 1815, but were usually surrendered to the use of the will of the copyhold tenant; 55 Geo. III. c. 192 made them devisable simply. Devises of lands have gradually been made liable to the claims of creditors by a series of statutes beginning with 3 and 4 W. and M. c. 14.

The history of wills of personalty was considerably Person- Tn alty.

different, but to some extent followed parallel lines. both cases partial preceded complete power of disposition. The general opinion of the best authorities is that by the common law of England a man could only dispose of his whole personal property if he left no wife or children ; if he left either wife or children he could only dispose of one- half, and one-third if he left both wife and children. The shares of wife and children were called their pars ration- alilis. This pars rationabilis is expressly recognized in Magna Charta. At what period the right of disposition of the whole personalty superseded the old law is uncertain. That it did so is certain, and the places where the old rule still existed,—the province of York, Wales, and the City of London,—were regarded as exceptions. The right of be- quest in these places was not assimilated to the general law until comparatively recent times by Acts passed between 1693 and 1726. A good will of personalty could be made by a male at fourteen, by a female at twelve. The formalities in the case of wills of personalty were not as numerous as in the case of wills of land. Up to 1838 a nuncupative or oral will was sufficient, subject, where the gift was of £30 or more, to the restrictions contained in the Statute of Frauds. The witnesses to a written will need not be

5 Many instances of such conveyances occur in Sir Harris N icolas's Testamenta Vetuste and in Fifty Earliest English Wills (13887-1439), edited by Mr F. J. Furnivall in 1882.

“credible,” and it was specially enacted by 4 and 5 Anne c. 3 that anyone who could give evidence in a court of law was a good witness toa will of personalty. A will entirely in the testator’s handwriting, called a holograph will, was valid without signature. At one time the executor was entitled to the residue in default of a residuary legatee. But 11 Geo. IV. and 1 Will. IV. c. 40 made him in such an event trustee for the next of kin.

Jurisdiction over wills of personalty was till 1858 in the ecclesiastical courts, probate being granted by the diocesan court! if the goods of the deceased lay in the same diocese, in the provincial court of Canterbury or York (the Pre- rogative Court) if the deceased had bona notabilia, that 1s, goods to the value of £5 in two dioceses. The ecclesiastical jurisdiction was of very ancient origin. It was fully established under Henry IL., as it is mentioned by Glanvill. In the City of London wills were enrolled in the Court of Hustings from 1258 to 1688 after having been proved before the ordinary. Contested cases before 1858 were tried in the Prerogative Court with an appeal originally to the Court of Delegates, later to the judicial committee of the privy council. There were also a few special local jurisdictions, probably for the most part survivals of the pre-Conquest period, when wills seem to have been pub- lished in the county court. The ecclesiastical courts had no jurisdiction over wills of land, and the common law courts were careful to keep the ecclesiastical courts within their limits by means of PRroHrsITIon (q.v.). No probate of a will of land was necessary, and title to real estate by will might be made by production of the will as a document of title. This is still the law in ordinary cases ; but the Act of 1857 has introduced probate of will of land as an ex- ceptional proceeding. The liability of the executor and legatee for the debts of the testator has been gradually established by legislation. In general it is limited to the amount of the succession. Personal liability of the exe- cutor beyond this can by the Statute of Frauds only be established by contract in writing.

Such were the principal stages in the history of the law as it affected wills made before 1838 or proved before 1858. The principal Acts now in force are the Wills Act, 1837 (7 Will. IV. and 1 Vict. c. 26), the Court of Probate Act, 1857 (20 and 21 Vict. ¢. 77), and the Judicature Acts. Some of the earlier Acts arc still law, though of little importance since the more

modern and compre- hensive enactinents. The earliest on the statute roll is 20 Hen. III. c. 2, cnabling a widow to bequeath the crops of her lands. Before the Wills Act uniformity in the law had been urgently recommended by the Real Property Commissioners in 1833. It appears from their report? that at the time of its appearance there were ten different ways in which a will might be made under different cir- cumstances.

The Act of 1837 affected both the making and the interpretation of wills? Excluding the latter for the present, its main provisions were these. All property, real and personal, and of whatever tenure, may be disposed of by will. If customary freeholds or copyholds be devised, the will must be entered on the court rolls. No will made by any person under the age of twenty-one is valid. Every will is to be in writing, signed at the foot or end thereof by the testator or by some person in his presence and by his direetion, and such signature is to be made or acknowledged by the testator in the presence of two or more witnesses present at the same time, who are to subscribe the will in the presence of the testator. Publi- cation is not necessary. A will is not void on account of the icompetency of a witness. Gifts to a witness or the husband or wife of a witness are void. A creditor or executor may attest. A will is revoked (except where made in exercise of a power of appoint- ment of a certain kind) by a later will, or by destruction with the intention of revoking, but not by presumption arising from an alteration in circumstances. Alterations in a will must be executed and attested as a will. A will speaks from the death of the testator, unless a contrary intention appear. The Act of 1857 transferred the jurisdiction, both voluntary and contentious, of all ecclesiastical,

a ep)

1 The testamentary jurisdiction of the archdeacon's court is alluded to by Chaucer in the " Friar's Tale," but it was afterwards completely superseded by the bishop's court.

2 Fourth Report, p. 12.

3 By sect. 1 of the Act the word " will" includes codicil.

royal peculiar, peculiar, and manorial courts to the Court of Probate constituted by the Act, created a judge and registrars of that court, abolished the old exclusive rights in testamentary matters of the advocates of Doctors' Commons, and laid down rules of procedure. Contentious jurisdiction was given to county courts where the per- sonal estate of the deceased was under £200 in value. The Judi- cature Act, 1873, merged the old Court of Probate in the Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division of the High Court of Justice. The division now consists of the president and one other judge. The practice of the division is mainly regulated by the Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883. Appeals lie to the Court of Appeal and thence to the House of Lords. Before the Judicature Act they lay directly to the House of Lords. The principal rules now obtaining as to probate are these. Probate is confined as a rule to wills of per- sonalty or of mixed personalty and realty, and is either in common form, where no opposition to the grant is made, or in solenin form, generally after opposition, when the witnesses appear in court. The Act of 1857 introduced proof of wills of realty in solemn form after citation of the heir-at-law and devisees.. Probate may be granted either in the principal or in a district registry, and should be obtained within six months after the testator's death. Where no executor is named in a will, the will is not now invalid, as was once the case, but administration ewm testamento annexo is granted. The same course is pursued where the exccutor renounces or dies intestate before administering the estate of the deceased. After probate the probate (as the official copy of the will is called) itself becomes evidence, the original will being deposited in the principal registry at Somerset House, London. On grant of probate a duty, denoted by a stamp on the probate, is payable. It varices accord- ing to the amount at which the personalty is fixed by the oath of the executor. Other Acts dealing with the practice in wills and probate may be shortly stated. 15 and 16 Vict. c. 24 removed some of the difficulties which had arisen on the clause of the Wills Act that the signature was to be at the foot or end. 44 Vict. c 12 enabled any officer of inland revenue to grant probate where the personal estate does not exceed £300. The main duty of an exe- cutor is to pay the debts of the deceased in a certain order of priority, to administer the estate, to pay probate and legacy duties, and in general to

carry out the intention of the testator. There are numerous Acts, especially the Conveyancing Act, 1881, dealing with the rights and liabilities of exccutors, the general effect of which is to discharge an executor from liability for bona jide pay- ment of debts, for distribution of assets after public notice to persons interested, &c. (see EXECUTORS).

Rules of interpretation or construction depend chiefly on decisions Interpre- The tation of law was gradually brought into its present condition through pre- wills.

of the courts, to a smaller extent on statutory enactment.

cedents extending back for centuries, especially decisions of the Court of Chancery, the court par exeellenee of construction, as dis- tinguished from the Court of Probate. The Court of Probate did not deal unless incidentally with the meaning of the will ; its juris- diction was confined to seeing that it was duly executed. The present state of the law of interpretation is highly technical. Some phrases have obtained a conventional meaning which the testators who uscd them probably did not dream of. Many of the judicial doctrines which had gradually become established were altered by the Wills Act. These provisions of the Act have since that time themselves become the subject of judicial decision. Among other provisions are thesc, most of them to take effect only in the absence of a contrary intention. A residuary devise is to include estates comprised in lapsed and void devises. A general gift of the testator's lands is to include copyholds and leaseholds. A general gift of real or personal estate is to include real or personal estate over which the testator had a general power of appointment. A devise without words of limitation is to pass the fee simple. The words "die without issue" or similar words are to mean die with- out issue living at the time of the death of the person whosc issue was named. 'Trustees under an unlimited devise are to take the fee simple. Devises of estates tail are not to lapse if the devisee, though he predeceased the testator, left issue inheritable under the entail. Gifts to children or other issue leaving issue living at the testator's death are not to lapse. Rules of interpretation founded on principles of equity independent of statute arc very numerous, and for thein the works devoted to the subject must be consulted. Some of the more important, stated in as general a form as possible, are these. The intention of the testator is to be observed. This rule is called by Sir E. Coke the pole star to guide the judges. There is a presumption against intestacy, against double portions, against constructing merely precatory words to import a trust, &c. One part of the will is to be expounded by another. Interlineations and alterations are presumed to have becn made after, not as in deeds before, execution. Words are supposed to be nsed in their strict and primary sense. Many words and phrases, however, such as "money," "'residue," and 'issue' and otlier words of relation- ship, have become

invested with a technical meaning, Evidence is admissible in certain cases to explain latent ambiguity, and parol evidence of the terms of a lost will may be given.

WILL 573

Tnvalida- A will may be void, in whole or in part, for many reasons, which nay at its discretion dispense with probate of the will of a merchant

tion of may be divided into two great classes, those arising from external | seaman whose effects do not exceed £50 in value. By an Act

wills. circumstances and those arising from the will itself. The main passed in 1868 the existing exemptions are extended to a sum of examples of the former class are revocation by burning, tearing, | £100 in the case of civil service pay or annuities, of civil or military &e., by a later will, or by marriage of the testator, incapacity of | allowances chargeable to the army votes, and of army prize money the testator from insanity, infancy, or legal disability (such as | JVcll made under power.—A will made under a power of appoint being a convict), undue influence, and fraud, any one of which is | ment is not revoked by marriage when the real or personal estate ground for the court to refuse or revoke probate of a will good on | thereby appointed would not in default of appointment pass to the the face of it, or declare a will of lands void. Undue influence is | testator's executor or administrator or to the next of kin. Before a ground upon which frequent attempts are made to set aside wills. | the Wills Act a will exercising a power of appointment had to Its nature is well explained in a judgment of Lord Penzance's: | conform to any special requisitions in the power, but since the Act "Pressure of whatever character, whether acting on the fears or | the power is duly exercised if executed and attested like an ordinary the hopes, if so exerted as to overpower the volition without con- | will. hegistration.—In the register counties memorials of wills vincing the judgment, is a species of restraint under which no affecting lands in those counties must be registered (see Reqis- valid will can be made."! The circumstances appearing on the | TRATION). va face of the will which make it open to objection may either avoid At common law there eould be no larceny of a will of lands, Criminal it altogether or create a partial intestacy, the will remaining good | But now by the

Larceny Act of 1861 stealing, injuring, or conceal- law re- aga whole. Where the will is not duly executed, c.g., if it is a ing a will, whether of real or personal estate, is punishable with lating to forgery or if it isnot signed by the testator or the proper number | penal servitude for life. Forgery of a will (at one time a capital wills. of witnesses, the will is not admitted to probate at all. Where it crime) renders the offender liable to the same penalty. Fraudulent contains devises or bequests bad in law, as in general restraint of | concealment of a will material to the title by a vendor or mortgagor Inarriage, or tending to create perpetuities, or contrary to public | of land or chattels is by 22 and 28 Vict. c. 835 a misdemeanour policy, or to some particular enactment, only the illegal part is | punishable by fine or imprisonment or both. void. A remarkable instance is a well-known case in which a con- Connected with the subject of this article, though not falling Donatio dition subsequent in a devise was held void as against public policy, | directly under it, is the donatio mortis causa, depending for the mortis being a gift over of the estate devised in case the first devisee, the | most part upon rules adopted from Roman law. Unlike a bequest causa. eldest son of an earl, did not before his death obtain the lapsed | under a will, such a gift passes without probate and does not need title of duke of Bridgewater.? the presence of any statutory number of witnesses. It is, however,

Wills of | There are some wills of an exceptional kind which demand special | liable to legacy duty and is part of the assets of the deccased. For

excep- notice. ing.—It was resolved in parliament in the 16th Ric. II. | its validity two elements are essential: the gift must be conditional

tional that the king, his heirs and successors, might lawfully make their | on the donor's dying from his existing illness, and therefore revoc-

character. testaments. In some later cases parliamentary authority has been able, and there must be delivery. Money, jewels, or other chattels*

given to royal wills, in others not. The executors of Henry IV. were confirmed in their office by letters patent of Henry V., those of Henry V. by parliament. The largest testamentary powers ever conferred on an English king were given to Henry VIII. by 25 Hen. VIII. c. 7, empowering

him to limit and appoint the succcs- sion to the crown by will, in default of children by Jane Scymour or any future wife. By 39 and 40 Geo. III. c. 88 the king and his successor may devise or bequeath their private property. No court, however, has jurisdiction to grant probate of the will of a king. Guardianship.—As a general rule wills deal with property, but even at common law a will simply appointing a guardian was good. The common law was superseded by 12 Car. II. c. 24, under which a father may dispose of the custody of his unmarried infant children by will. The Guardianship of Infants Act, 1886, extended such powers in certain cases to the mother. JMarricd Woman.—At common law a married woman could not (with a few exceptions) make a will without her husband's licence and consent, and this disability was specially preserved by the Wills Acts of Henry VIII. and of 1837. A common mode of avoiding this difficulty was for the husband to contract before marriage to permit the wife to make an appointment disposing of personalty to a certain value. Courts of equity from an early time allowed her, under certain restrictions, to make a will of property held for her separate use. In some cases her husband could dispose of her property by will, in others not. The law as it existed previously to 1882 is now practically obsolete, the Married Women's Property Act of that year enabling a married woman to dispose by will of any real or personal property as her separate property as a fcme sole without the intervention of any trustee. 'The Act also enables a married woman who is execu- trix of a will to act as if she were a feme sole. -Alicn.—Before 1870 an alien enemy resident in England could only dispose of property by will with the king's licence. The Naturalization Act, 1870, enables him to do so as fully as a natural-born British sub- ject. Soldicr and Sailor.—Wills of soldiers in actual military service, and of sailors, are subject to special legislation, and are excepted from the operation of the Wills Act. The privilege only applics to wills of personal estate. Wills of soldiers on an expedi- tion may be made by unattested writing or by nuncupative testa- ment before two witnesses. Wills of petty officers and seamen in the navy, and of marines, as far as relates to their pay or prize- money, must be attested by an officer, and wills made by a seaman in the merchant service must, if made at sea, be attested by the master or mate, if made on land by a superintendent of a mercantile marine office, a elergyman, justice of the peace, or consular or customs officer. The wills of prisoners of war are subject to special

regulations, and the Admiralty may at its discretion waive the due execution of wills in other instances. The effects of seamen, marines, and soldiers, killed or dying in the service, are exempt from probate duty. Pay, wages, prize money, and pensions due to persons employed in the navy may be paid out without probate where the whole assets do not exceed £32. The Board of Trade

1 Hall v. Hall, Law Rep., 1 Probate, 481.

2 Egerton v. Earl Brownlow, 4 House of Lords Ouses, 210.

3 4 Inst., 335.

4 See the Collection of Royal Wills printed for the Society of Antiquaries by J. Nichols (1780).

may be the subjects of a donatio mortis causa ; so may negotiable instruments passing by delivery, but not cheques signed by the giver, as his authority to draw is revoked by his death. It pre- sented before his death, the gift, being unconditional, is wanting in one of the elements of a good donatio mortis causa.) Lreland.—The Act of 1837 applies to Ireland. on lines similar to the English Act was passed for Ireland, 21 and 22 Vict. c. 79. Under the Irish Judicature Act of 1877 the then existing Court of Probate was merged in the High Court of Justice.

Scotland.—Up to 1868 wills of immovables were not allowed in Scotland.

Scotland. The usual means of obtaining disposition of heritage after death was a trust disposition and settlement by deed de prz- senti, under which the truster disponed the property to trustees according to the trusts of the settlement, reserving a life interest. Thus something very similar to a testamentary disposition was secured by means resembling those employed in England before the Wills Act of Henry VIII. The main disadvantage of the trust disposition was that it was liable to be overthrown by the heir, who could reduce ex capite Iccti all voluntary deeds made to his prejudice within sixty days of the death of his ancestor. In 1868 the Titles to Land Consolidation Act made it competent to any owner of lands to settle the succession to the same in the event of death by

testamentary or mortis causa deeds or writings. In 1871 reduction ex capite lectt was abolished by 34 and 35 Vict. c. 81. A will of immovables must be executed with the formalities of a deed and registered to give title (see REGIsrRATION). The disability of a woman as a witness was removed by the Titles to Land Con- solidation Act. As to wills of movables, there are several import- aut points in which they differ from corresponding wills in Eng- land, the influence of Roman law being more marked. Males may make a will at fourteen, females at twelve. A nuncupative legacy is good to the amount of £100 Scots (£8, 6s. 8d.), and a holograph testament is good without witnesses, but it must be signed by tlie testator, differing in this from the old English holograph. By the Conveyancing Act, 1874, such a will is presumed to have been exc- cuted on the date which it bears. Not all movables can be left, as in England. The movable property of the deceased is subject to jus relicte, or widow's right to half if there be no child or children, one-third if there be a child or children, and the legitim, or bairn's part, of half if there be no widow, one-third if there be a widow. Only the remainder is disponible as dead's part. Legitim depends upon survivance and is not transmissible on predecease of a person prospectively entitled to it. Both jus relicte and legitim may be excluded hy discharge or satisfaction, as by provision in the coutract of marriage. Executor in Scotch law is a more extensive term than in English. He is either nominate or dative, the latter appointed by the court and corresponding in most respects to the English adniinistrator. Caution is required from the latter, but not from the former. Confirmation includes both the probate and letters of administration of English procedure. Without confirma- tion by the court interference by the executor becomes a vitious

The principal authorities for the English law are, for the formalities, Williams, Executors; for the construction, the works of Sir James Wigram and of Messrs Jarman, F. V. Hawkins, and Theobald. Precedents will be found in Hayes and Jarman's Concise Forms of Wills and in ordinary collections of precedents in conveyancing.

In 1857 an Act Ireland.

United States.

intromission. Originally confirmation of testaments of movables fell, as in England, under the cognizance of the church courts. Such jurisdiction certainly existed at the time of regiam majestatem. This ecclesiastical right continued through the Commissary Court at Edinburgh (constituted by Queen Mary in 1568) and the local commissaries until modern times, when the jurisdiction of these courts was at first transferred and then abolished by a series of en- actments from 4 Geo. IV. c. 97 to the Sheriff Courts Act, 1876. The Act of George IV. placed the commissary jurisdiction in the sheriff courts ; by the Act of 1876 the sheriffs sit as sheriffs in testamentary matters, no longer as commissaries. Confirmation of wills where the whole estate is under £300 is regulated by 44 Vict. e. 12 and other Acts. An eik is an addition to a confirmation made on discovery of additional effects of the deceased after con- firmation. By the common law doctrine of passive representation the heir or executor was liable to be sued for implement of the de- ceased's obligations. The Roman principle of benefictum inventarii was first introduced by an Act of 1695. As the law at present stands, the heir or executor is liable only to the value of the suc- cession, except where there has been vitious intromission in mov- ables, and in gestio pro herede and some other cases in heritables. The present inventory duty on succession to movables depends upon 44 Vict. c. 12 In England the executor is bound to pay the debts of the deceased in a certain order; in Scotland they all rank pari passu, except privileged debts.!_ (See PRIVILEGE.)

The will of a summons is the conclusion of a writ containing the will of the sovereign or judge, charging the executive officer to cite the party whose attendance is requircd. It is regulated by several Acts, ¢.g., 1 and 2 Vict. c. 114, 31 and 32 Vict. c. 100. (See Sum- MONS, WARRANT, WRIT.)

United States.—By the constitutions of many States laws giving effect to informal or invalid wills are forbidden. The age of testa- mentary capacity varies very much. Eighteen is a common one. Full liberty of disposition is not universal. Homesteads generally, and dower estates frequently, are

not devisable. In some States only a disposable portion of the property can be left, so that child- yen cannot be disinherited without good cause, and in some children omitted in a will may: still take their share. It is frequently provided that a certain amount must be left to the widow. Louisiana follows French law, by which the testator can under no circumstances alienate by will more than half his property if he leave issue or ascendants. In some States a married woman may not leave more than half her property away from her husband. Some require the husband's consent and subscription to make the will of a married woman valid. Nuncupative and holograph wills are in use. The former are confined to personalty and must gener- ally be reduced to writing within a short time after the words are spoken. In Louisiana there is a special form of will, borrowed from Roman law, called the mystic or sealed will, in which the testator declares a sealed packet to be his will before witnesses. The number of witnesses necessary for the validity of a will of any kind is usually two, sometimes three. Wills of soldiers and sailors are privileged, as in England. Probate is granted sometimes by the ordinary chancery or common law courts, more frequently by courts of special jurisdiction, such as the Prerogative Court in New Jersey, the Surrogate's Court in New York.?

International Law.—There are three main directions which the opinion of jurists and the practice of courts have taken. (1) The whole property of the testator may be subjected to the law of his domicil. To this effect is the opinion of Savigny and the German practice. (2) The property may be subjected to the law of the place where it happens to be at the time of the testator's death. (3) The movable property may be subjected to the law of the domicil, the immovable to the law of the place where it is situate, the lex loct ret site. England and the United States follow this rule. Testamentary capacity is generally governed by the law of the testator's domicil, the form of the instrument in most countries either by the law of his domicil or the law of the place where the will was made, at his option. The old rule of English law was to allow the former alternative only. The law was altered for the United Kingdom in 1861 by Lord Kingsdown's Act (24 and 25 Vict, c. 114), by which a will made out of the United Kingdom by a British subject is, as far as regards personal estate, good if made according to the forms required by the law of the place where it was

made, or by. the law of the testator's domicil at the time of making it, or by the law of the place of his domicil of origin. Sub- sequent change of domicil does not avoid such a will. Another Act passed on the same day (24 and 25 Vict. c. 121) enacted that by convention with any foreign Government foreign domicil could not be acquired by a testator without a year's residence and a written declaration of intention to become domiciled. In the United States some States have adopted the narrow policy of enact- ing by statute the old common law rule, and providing that no will SS

1 See M'Laren, Wills and Succession. Styles of wills will be found both in that work and in Juridical Styles.

2 See Stimson, American Statute Law, 8$ 2600-2844.

Wo Pie

wel L

is valid unless made in the form required by the law of the State of the testator's domicil. The construction of a will is governed by the law of the domicil of the testator, as he must be supposed to have used language in consonance with that law, unless indeed. he express himself in technical language of another country. The persons who are to take under a will are decided by different rules according as the property is movable or immovable, the former being governed by the law of the domicil, the latter by the lex loci rei site. It was held recently by the Court of Appeal in England that, under the will of an Englishman domiciled in Holland, leaving personal property to children, children legitimated per subscquens matrimoniwm could take, as they were legitimate by the law of Holland, though not by the law of England.? Such children could not, however, have succeeded simply under that designation to real property in England devised by the will. A will duly executed abroad is generally required to be clothed with the authority of a court of the country where any property affected by the will is situate. As far as regards the different kingdoms composing the United Kingdom, 21 and 22 Vict. c. 56 enables an English or Irish probate, or a Scotch confirmation, to be sealed as of course in the proper court of one of the other kingdoms. (J. Wt.) WILLENHALL, a

township of Staffordshire, England, in the parish of Wolverhampton, is situated on a branch of the Birmingham Canal and on the Midland and the London and North Western Railways, 3 miles east of Wolverhampton, 12 north-west of Birmingham, and 124 north-west of London. The township includes seven ham- lets. The church of St Giles, originally erected in 1350, was rebuilt in 1867 in the Decorated style. There are three other churches in connexion with the Established Church, all of modern origin,and a Roman Catholic church. Willenhall possesses a literary institute, a free library, and a higher grade board school, erected in 1883, The water- works became in 1868 the property of the Wolverhampton corporation. Willenhall is situated in the neighbourhood of extensive coal and iron mines, and possesses brass and iron foundries, and manufactories of various kinds of iron- ware, including door locks and padlocks, ironmongery for doors and gates, ferules, files, gridirons, steel traps, screws, and currycombs. There are also varnishing works and maltings. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 1368 acres) was 15,902 in 1871 and 16,067 in 1881.

The village began to be of importance in the reign of Elizabeth, when the coal and iron were first wrought.

WILLESDEN, a suburb and parish of London, about 4 miles north-west from Hyde Park Corner, is situated on a number of railway lines affording very convenient access to the City. It consists of a number of houses grouped round the parish church of St Mary, Queenstown, a district inhabited chiefly by the working classes ; Willesden Green and the outlying hamlets of Brondesbury, Harlesden, Neasdon, Dollis Hill, Stroud Green, and Stonebridge Park are now largely occupied by villas. The church of St Mary, dating probably from the early part of the 14th century, contains some remains of Early English, with a Perpendicular chancel and tower. It was enlarged in 1851 and again in 1872. At Queenstown there are a working-

‘men’s institute, a workmen’s hall, and a Good Templars’

orphanage. In Willesden Lane there is a Jewish cemetery. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 4383 acres) was 15,869 in 1871 and 27,453 in 1881.

At Domesday the manor of Willesden and Harlesden was held by the canons of St Paul's. In the 12th century it was formed into eight distinct manors, seven of which are held by the same number of prebendaries. The district is associated with the exploits of Jack Sheppard.

WILLIAM I. (1027 or 1028-1087), king of England, surnamed the ConquERoR, was born in 1027 or 1028. He was the bastard son of Robert, duke of Normandy, and Herleva, daughter of Fulbert, a tanner of Falaise. When he was about seven years old his father, intending to go on pilgrimage and having no legitimate sons, proposed him as his heir. The great men of the duchy did homage to the child, and a year later (1035) his father's death left

3 " Re Goodman's Trusts," Law Rep., 17 Chancery Div., 266.

him to make good his claim. Anarchy was the natural result of a mmority. William's life was on more than one occasion in danger and several of his guardians perished in his service. At the earliest possible age he received knighthood from the hands of Henry I. of France, and speedily began to show signs of his capacity for govern- ment. In 1042 he insisted that the "truce of God" should be proclaimed and observed in Normandy. When he was about twenty years old, his authority was threat- ened by a general conspiracy, which spread through the western half of his duchy. An attempt was made to seize him at Valognes, and he only escaped by riding hard all night to his own castle at Falaise. Bessin and Cotentin, the most Norman parts of Normandy, rose in rebellion. William sought and obtained aid from King Henry, and completely defeated the rebels at Val-es-Dunes near Caen (1047). The battle was but a combat of horse, but it decided the fate of the war and left William master of his duchy. The debt which he owed to Henry was repaid next year. War broke out between Geoffrey, count of Anjou, and Henry (1048), and William came to his suzer- ain's assistance. Alencon, one of the chief border fortresses between Normandy and Maine, which had received an Angevin garrison, was captured by the duke. The inhabit- ants had taunted him with his birth, and William, who had dealt leniently with the rebels after Val-es-

Dunes, took a cruel revenge. Soon afterwards Domfront, another important border fortress, fell into his hands.

In 1051 William visited England (see vol. viii. p. 289). Two years later he married Matilda, daughter of Baldwin, earl of Flanders, and a descendant of Alfred. The marriage had been forbidden by a council at Rheims as uncanonical, and was opposed by Lanfranc, prior of Bec. This produced a quarrel between Lanfrane and William, who ravaged the lands of the abbey and ordered the banishment of its prior. Lanfranc, however, soon came to terms with the duke, and engaged to obtain a dispensation from Rome, which, how- ever, was not granted till 1059. Strengthened by this alliance with Flanders, William showed himself more than a match for all his enemies. Henry, who had hitherto been for the most part friendly, now turned against him. After the suppression of some isolated revolts, William was threatened in 1054 by a great confederacy. His dominions were invaded by the forces of the French king, in com- bination with those of Geoffrey of Anjou, Theobald of Blois, and others. William remained at first on the defen- sive; then, falling suddenly on one of the French armies at Mortemer, in the north-eastern corner of his duchy, he cut it to pieces. This blow put an end to the war; Henry made peace (1055) and William took the opportunity of extending his dominions in a southerly direction. He built fresh fortresses and exacted homage from Count Geoffrey of Mayenne. In 1058 Henry and Count Geoffrey made a final effort to crush their dangerous neighbour ; but the effort failed, like those which preceded it. William again allowed the allies to enter and ravage his territory ; but, while the French army was crossing the Dive at Varaville, he attacked and completely destroyed their rear-guard, which was cut off from the van by the advancing tide. Henry again made peace, and soon afterwards died (1060). The death of Geoffrey of Anjou in the same year relieved William of his most formidable rival for the possession of Maine. Herbert Wake-Dog, the lawful ruler of that terri- tory, who had been dispossessed by Geoffrey, recovered his dominions on the latter's death. He at once '"com- mended" himself to William, thus making the duke his heir. On his death in 1063 William took possession of Le Mans and the county of which it was the capital,—an acquisition which extended his southern frontier nearly to the Loire, almost severed Brittany from the rest of

France, and paved the way for the subsequent junction with Anjou.

It was apparently soon after this event, in the year 1064, that Harold, then earl of Wessex, visited Nor- mandy. For the relations between him and William which grew out of this visit, see ENGLAND, vol. viii. pp. 290-291. When Harold was elected and crowned king of England (1066), William's first step was to send an embassy to him demanding the fulfilment of his promise. The purport of the demand is as uncertain as that of the pledge ; but, whatever it was, Harold rejected it. The duke thereupon summoned a council of his supporters, who advised him to call together an assembly representing the whole duchy. This assembly, a typical feudal parliament, met at Lillebonne. While acting together it appears to have opposed the scheme for the conquest of England which William laid before it, but its members were won over singly. He then made a compact with Tostig, the banished brother of Harold; he came to terms with the emperor Henry; he conciliated Philip, king of France, by offering to hold England as his vassal ; and—most important of all—he obtained the sanction of Rome. Pope Alexander II. not only issued a bull declaring William to be the rightful heir to the throne, but sent him a ring and a banner as symbols that the blessing of heaven was on his claim, Embarking at St Valéry, William landed on 28th September at Pevensey. The battle of Senlac or Hastings (14th October 1066) was a decisive victory for the duke of Normandy; but it took five years more to complete the conquest of England.

Early in 1067 William made a progress through the eastern and central parts of his new dominions. All that had as yet submitted to him was comprised in the old kingdoms of Wessex and East Anglia, and a small portion of Mercia. He at once secured his hold over these districts by the erection of fortresses in London, Norwich, and else- where. He received homage from the great men; he con- fiscated the lands of those who had resisted him; and, while keeping a large number of manors for himself, he granted others to his followers, Even those who had not resisted were regarded as having legally forfeited their title and had to submit to a re-

grant on less advantageous terms. In March 1067 William returned to Normandy, taking with him as hostages the earls Eadwine, Morkere, and Waltheof. The revolts which broke out in the north and south-west compelled him toreturn to Englandin December. Early in 1068 he marched on Exeter, as the centre of the western revolt. He took the town and built a castle, after which he subdued Cornwall, and then marching northward forced Bristol to submit. In the summer of 1068 there was a general rising of the north, of which Eadgar was the nominal head; but Eadwine and Morkere were the moving spirits. The insurgents were aided by Malcolm, king of Scotland. William had, however, only to show himself in order to put down the insurrection. He journeyed northward, by way of Warwick and Nottingham, to York, received the submission of Eadwine, Morkere, and Malcolm, and returned by way of Lincoln and Cambridge. His march was accompanied by heavy confiscations, and great castles, rising in places of vantage, rendered the Norman power at once visible and secure. In the spring of 1069 a fresh revolt broke out. Robert of Comines, the newly appointed earl of Northumberland, was slain at Durham ; a Danish fleet entered the Humber, and a Danish army, joined by Eadgar and Waltheof, seized and burned York. The sons of Harold attacked Devon, while other isolated outbreaks took place in the west. These were speedily put down by William's lieutenants ; and in the autumn the king himself, going northward a second time, recovered York and harried Northumberland with ruthless delibera-

tion. Returning to keep Christmas at York, he set out again in January 1070 to oppose Malcolm, who had crossed the border in aid of the insurgents. He forced Waltheof to submit, and drove the Scottish king back into his own country; then, marching over pathless fells in the depth of winter, he reached Chester, took the town, and founded another castle. Northumbria, exhausted and ruined, gave up the struggle, and the omission of the northern counties from the Domesday survey throws a grim light on the com- pleteness of the Conquest. In one district only, the fens of Cambridgeshire, where Hereward still held out, the spirit of

resistance survived. In April 1071 William arrived at Cambridge and commenced a regular blockade. Advancing cautiously by means of a causeway through the fens, he entered Ely in October, and therewith the last flicker of independence died out. The conquest of England was completed. To guard against any fresh incitements to rebellion from Scotland, William in 1072°invaded that country and forced Malcolm to do him homage,—an event which had an important effect on the subsequent relations of the two countries.

Henceforward such trouble as William met with came, not from the English, but from his Norman vassals or his own family. In 1073 the citizens of Le Mans took advan- tage of his absence to set up a "commune," and invited Fulk of Anjou to protect them. William was soon in the field, this time assisted by English troops. He harried the country, recovered Le Mans, and made an advantageous peace with the count. By a skilful compromise he recog- nized Fulk as overlord of Maine, but kept actual posses- sion of the district, for which his son Robert did homage. A year later a formidable revolt broke out in England. Two of William's great vassals, Ralph, earl of Norfolk, and Roger, earl of Hereford, rebelled, and a Danish fleet, prob- ably in alliance with them, appeared in the Humber. William returned at once to England and put down the insurrection. A great meeting of the witan was summoned to try Roger and Waltheof, for the latter, though he took no part in the rebellion, had undoubtedly been privy to it. Roger was imprisoned for life and Waltheof was condemned to death. This was the last instance of opposition to William in England ; but the remaining ten years of his life were occupied with almost continuous troubles on the Continent. In 1076 he was engaged in a war with Brittany, which the interference of Philip of France forced him to bring to an unsuccessful conclusion. Next year he quarrelled with his son Robert. Matilda took the young man's side against her husband, and Philip lent him his assistance. In 1080 William was at open war with his son. While besieging him at Gerberoi he received a wound and was forced to raise the siege. A temporary reconcilia- tion followed, soon to give way to another and a final quarrel. Three years later Matilda died, and troubles thickened upon William. A rebellious vassal, Hubert of Beaumont, seems to have held him at bay for nearly three years. Rival claims to Vexin, a district on the eastern frontier of

Normandy, involved him in another. war with France. He was growing old and weary, and, as he lay sick at Rouen in the summer of 1087, the French army harried his territories with impunity. When he had recovered sufficiently to take the field, he invaded Vexin and burned the town of Mantes. But his horse, plunging in the burning cinders, inflicted on him an internal injury which proved his death-wound. He was carried to St Gervais, where, on 9th September 1087, he died. His body was conveyed to Caen and buried in the great minster which he had built.

The career of William as a warrior and conqueror occupies of necessity the largest space in his life; but his fame as a statesman and administrator is not less than that which he won on the battle- field. This is not the place to discuss the results of the Conquest,

wre ote Md

'high degree.

[ENGLAND.

but the policy of the Conqueror in regard to church and state cannot be overlooked. An orthodox churchman, a supporter of union under the successor of Peter against the schismatic tendeucies of the English Church, he nevertheless repelled any claim on the part of Rome to interference with his political sovereignty. He allowed Peter's pence to be collected, but refused to pay tribute to the pope. While recognizing him as head of the church, he declined to hold his kingdom as his vassal, nor would he permit papal bulls to enter England or excommunications to be issucd agaiust any of his subjects without his leave. He controlled all appointments to important ecclesiastical dignities ; he made laws for the church ; he dealt justice to ecclesiastics, high and low, in his own courts. At the same time he had no desire to humiliate the church; on the contrary, he sought to elevate it to a higher position in the state, to make it a more potent agent of civilization. A weaker states- man might have seen his own advantage in encouraging the rivalry between Canterbury and York ; William strengthened the church by forcing the younger to give way to the elder see. With the same object, that of increasing the efficiency of ecclesiastical organi- zation, he severed the temporal and

spiritual jurisdictions and furthered the enforcement of clerical celibacy. Finally, the trust which he reposed in Lanfranc from the time of his appointment to the see of Canterbury in 1070 shows not only his insight into character but his respect for the head of the English Church.

In regard to temporal affairs William was rather an adminis- trator than a lawgiver. His reign is not marked by a series of legislative acts like those of Henry II. or Edward I. ; but his work was the indispensable preliminary to theirs, for a strong monarchy was the first requisite of the state. To cstablish the power of the crown was William's principal care. The disintegrating tendencies of feudalism had already been visible under the Anglo-Saxon kings. William, while he established fully developed feudalism as a social, territorial, and military system in his new dominions, took measures to prevent it from undermining his own authority. He seattered the estates of his great vassals, so as to hinder them from building up provincial principalities; he maintained the higher popular courts against the encroachments of manorial jurisdictions ; he prevented the claims of feudal lordship from standing between himself and the mass of his subjects by exacting an oath from every landholder at the meeting on Salisbury plain ; finally, by the great survey which resulted in Domesday Book he not only asserted his right to make a general inquisition into property, but laid the firm basis of knowledge which was indispensable to centralized govern- inent and taxation. The care which he took to maintain English laws and institutions is part of the same policy. He balanced the two nationalities over which he ruled, and obliged each to depend upon him as its leader or protector against the other. He ruled as an English king; his feudal council was the witenagemot with a new qualification ; but at the same time he was lord of the land as no king had been before him, and he enjoyed not only all the in- come of his predecessors but in addition all the dues which came to lim as feudal sovereign. He was thus perhaps the strongest and most absolute monarch that has ever sat wpon the English throne.

In character William was stern, self-reliant, and imperious in a He was not naturally cruel; but he was ruthless if it served his purpose, and could take pitiless vengeance for an insult ora wrong. He was too strong to prefer deceit wheu force would serve as well, but his diplomacy was subtle

and guileful, and no scruple turned him aside from his aim. His temper, originally forgiving, was soured by opposition towards the end of his life, and his tyrannical tendencies were strengthened by the long cxercise of uncontrolled power. His passionate devotion to the chase is only too clearly shown in the harshness of his forest laws. In private life he displayed domestic virtues, and his fidelity to his wife was exceptional in the annals of his house and time.

Authorities. William of Jumiéges, Hist. Norman., and William of Poitiers, Gesta Willelmi (both in Duchesne's Hist. Norm. Script.); Wace, Roman de Row ; Ordericus Vitalis, Hist. Eccl.; the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle; the Bayeux tapestry ; Freeman, Hist. of Norman Conquest. (G. W. P.)

GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF NORMAN KinGS oF ENGLAND.
Witwiam [,= Matilda. |

| | | | Robert, duke Richard. Wiittau If. Henry I.=Matilda, rece

of Normandy. daughter count of of Mal- Blois. colm and STEPHEN, Margaret.

Matilda=Geoffrey, count of Anjou. Henry If.

WILLIAM IT. (1056-1100), king of England, surnamed Rorus, third son of William I. and Matilda, was born in 1056. Little is known of his youth, except that in the quarrel between the Conqueror and Robert he remained loyal to his father. When the Conqueror was on his death-

| William.

ENGLAND. |

bed he sent William to England with a letter to Lanfranc, requesting the archbishop to secure his election to the throne. Accordingly on 26th September 1087 William was elected and crowned at Westminster. His brother Robert, to whom the Conqueror had bequeathed the duchy, was not likely to give up his claim to the larger part of his father's dominions without a struggle. A general revolt in his favour broke out in the summer

of 1088, Roger Bigod rose in Norfolk, Roger, earl of Shrewsbury, and Robert of Mowbray on the western border, while Odo of Bayeux, the king's uncle, whom he had reinstated against his father's advice in the earldom of Kent, occu- pied Rochester. But there was little combination among the rebels. After being foiled in attacks on Ilchester and Worcester, the rebellion in the west seems to have died away. William won over the earl of Shrewsbury, and summoned his English subjects to his aid. He promised good government, the repeal of the forest laws, and the reduction of taxes. Thus conciliated, the fyrd, or national levy, flocked to his standard. It was the beginning of that alliance between the monarchy and the people which, fostered by Henry I. and Henry II. and confirmed by the great Edward, secured victory for the crown in its struggle with the feudal aristocracy. With the aid of his English troops William took castle after castle, repelled an at- tempted landing of the Norman fleet, and forced Odo to surrender his stronghold of Rochester. The rebellion being thus suppressed, he held a great council, at which, although the rebels in general were leniently treated, many confisca- tions and sentences of banishment were pronounced. A later meeting at Salisbury (November 1088) was notable for the trial of William of Saint-Calais, bishop of Durham, who had been one of the chief promoters of the rebellion. The bishop denied the jurisdiction of the king's court and appealed to Rome. It was the first instance of such an ap- peal. The court, however, acting under the advice of Lan- franc, refused to allow the plea, and the bishop, condemned to lose the temporalities of his see, retired to Normandy. Two years later William sent an army to Normandy (Easter 1090), which under the misgovernment of Robert had lapsed into a state of anarchy. The re-conquest of the duchy by England was begun by the capture of St Valéry ; but there was not much fighting, place after place yielding to William's lieutenants or to English gold. Robert called King Philip to his aid, but William bribed him to retire. In Rouen itself a popular movement took place for the surrender of the town; but Henry, the duke's youngest brother, put a stop to it by killing its leader, Conan, with his own hands. In February 1091 William himself crossed the Channel, and at once received homage from many of his brother's subjects. Unable to resist, Robert consented to a disgraceful peace. By the treaty of Caen William engaged to pay Robert a sum of money, in return for which he received some of the most important districts of eastern Normandy, as well as

Cherbourg and other places in the west. It was agreed, among other stipulations, that whichever brother died first the other should succeed to his dominions. Later in the same year William marched against Malcolm III., who had invaded Northumberland, and, penetrating as far as the Firth of Forth, obliged the Scottish king to do him homage. Whether it was for the whole of Scotland or for Lothian only, history does not say ; but the latter is most probable. For an account of the subsequent relations between Malcolm and William, see ScoTLAND, vol. xxi. p. 481. Meanwhile war had broken out again with Normandy. At Christmas 1093 Robert sent a challenge to his brother, reproaching him with violations of the treaty. Accord- ingly in March 1094 William. invaded Normandy a second time. On this occasion fortune turned against him. Philip

assisted the duke, and William, who had exhausted his supplies, was unable to buy him off as before. In this predicament his justiciar, Ralph Flambard, assembled an English army on the pretext of an expedition to Normandy, took from each man the money which had been provided for his expenses, and then dismissed the soldiers to their homes. With the money so obtained William bribed the French king, and then returned to England. Next year the first crusade was being preached, and Robert took the cross. A peace was made between the brothers through papal mediation, William supplying Robert with funds, for the repayment of which the latter pledged his duchy. When, in September 1096, Robert set off for the crusade, William took possession of Normandy, where he soon put an end to the anarchy which had resulted from Robert's misrule ; and he held the country till his death. Shortly before the acquisition of Normandy William had subdued a second rebellion in England. Robert of Mowbray was again one of the chief conspirators, and he was joined by William of Saint-Calais, whom the king, in accordance with the treaty of Caen, had restored to his bishopric, and by others. Mowbray refused to obey a summons to the king's court, whereupon William marched against him, captured his castles of Bamborough and Tynemouth, and took him prisoner (1095). As on the suppression of the earlier rebellion, William

called a great assembly, this time con- sisting of all his tenants-in-chief, and by their judgment the rebels were condemned. During the next two years he made a serious attempt at the conquest of Wales. The southern portion of the principality had been to a great extent reduced, first by Harold, afterwards by the Norman border lords. William's efforts were mainly directed against the northern districts. He made three invasions, and pene- trated to Snowdon, but seeming victories were immediately followed by revolts, and in the end little ground was actually won.

The last three years of the 11th century were much occupied by tedious wars with France and efforts to recover Maine. In 1097 he quarrelled with Philip about Vexin, and crossed the Channel to make good his claim to that district ; but the French king was able to hold his own. Next year William set about the recovery of Maine. That territory had been allowed by Robert to slip out of his hands, and had been governed since 1091 by Helias de la Fléche. William's vassal, Robert of Belléme, attacked Helias, and, having succeeded in taking him prisoner, handed over his prize to the king. William thereupon marched into Maine, and a desultory war of forays, sieges, and skirmishes followed. Fulk of Anjou opposed the Norman claim ; but in August 1098 a treaty was made, by which Williaim's rights over the country were recognized, and Helias was at the same time set free. William now turned again to France. Strengthened by an alliance with the duke of Aquitaine, he invaded the French territory and advanced as far as Pontoise. But, tiring of the fruit- less war, he made a truce with Philip and returned to England early in 1099. He had only been there a few months when he heard that Helias de la Fléche was attacking his castles in Maine and had won back Le Mans. He crossed the Channel with great speed, and a last cam- paign replaced him in possession of the coveted border- land. But he took no pains to secure his hold, and the Norman power in Maine fell to pieces immediately on his death.

William II.'s relations with Anselm form perhaps the most important episode of his reign. Lanfranc died in 1089. The worst features of William's character began at once to show themselves. At the instigation or with the assistance of Ralph Flambard, he applied to the posses- sions of the church all the principles of feudal law developed

in the interest of the monarchy. He treated vacant bene- fices as if they had been lay fiefs and bishops as tenants- in-chief, while he made simony the rule and degraded the heads of the church into servile courtiers. He had kept the see of Canterbury vacant for nearly four years, when a severe illness aroused him to a sense of his enormities. Sending for Anselm, at that time abbot of Bec, he forced the crozier into his unwilling hands (1093). Anselm in- sisted on three conditions,—that the temporalities of the see should be fully restored, that William should act in ecclesiastical affairs by his counsel, and that he should be allowed to recognize Urban II. as pope. After some hesi- tation William yielded the first demand, and Anselm did homage for the temporalities. The other two demands remained unsettled. In December 1093 Anselm was con- secrated archbishop of Canterbury. On the outbreak of war against Normandy in 1094 Anselm offered William a contribution of £500. William declared the sum in- sufficient and angrily rejected the gift. Anselm refused to offer more, lest he should seem, even by a gift after his appointment, to be guilty of simony. Other grounds of quarrel were found in the reproofs which the archbishop levelled against the vices of the court, and his demand for ecclesiastical reform. In 1095 a more serious dispute arose. Anselm asked leave to go to Rome in order to obtain his pallium from the pope. As this involved a recognition of Urban, and William wished to secure his independence by acknowledging no pope, the permission was refused. The archbishop demanded that the question should be discussed at a great council. Accordingly an assembly was held at Rockingham (March 1095), in which Anselm was treated by the king as if he had been on trial for contumacy. The bishops sided with the king; the laity took part mostly with the primate. Anselm refused to renounce allegiance to the pope, but denied that this was incompatible with obedience to the king. The assembly broke up without coming toa decision, William now tried to win over the pope and received a legate who brought with him the pall. In the hope of getting the legate to suspend Anselm, he consented to recognize Urban. But, when he found that the pope had no intention of throwing over the archbishop, he

reconciled himself with Anselm and allowed him to take the pall from the altar at Canter- bury. But it was not long before he found an opportunity of taking his revenge. A contingent of knights sent by the primate to aid the king in his Welsh war (1097) was de- clared to be worthless, and- Anselm was summoned to ex- plain his conduct at court. Tired of the persecution and despairing of reform, Anselm again asked leave to go to Rome. William, believing, whether rightly or not, that Anselm intended to appeal against him, refused his request. Twice repeated, it met with the same answer. Anselni was charged with having broken his oath to observe the laws of the kingdom in threatening to leave England with- out the king's permission. He answered that he had only sworn to the laws subject to his duty to God and the verdict of his conscience. This answer alienated many who had supported him on the previous occasion. He was asked to swear that he would not appeal against the king, and on his refusal was ordered to leave the country. In October 1097 Anselm left England. William at once seized the archbishopric and kept possession of it till his death.

The unscrupulous tyranny which Rufus displayed in his quarrel with Anselm was equally characteristic of his tem- poral government. The feudal customs of aids, reliefs, escheats, &c., were developed into a great system of extor- tion. The townsfolk and the cultivators of the soil were weighed down by heavy taxes. The forest laws were carried out with ruthless severity. On the other hand, order was maintained, and the tyranny was to a certain extent veiled

or limited by the frequent use which William made of his great councils, in the trials of great men like Odo, in the declaration of war, in the settlement of disputes such as that with Anselm. It is clear that the national assembly was neither extinct nor inefficient during this reign. It was in this period too that the office of justiciar became permanent in the person of William's chief minister, Ralph Flambard, although in his hands its powers were used merely in support of despotism.

In his private character William was as vicious as in his public capacity he was tyrannical. He was harsh and violent, extravagant and lustful, regardless of God and pitiless to man. He had a strong vein of mockery and sarcasm, and no little of the grim Norman humour. Almost the only redeeming feature of his character is his chivalrous observation of his plighted word; but for ordinary promises or obligations he had no respect. He died under mys- terious circumstances in the New Forest, Hampshire, on 2d August 1100. William IJ. was not married ; he was succeeded by his brother Henry.

Authorities,—Ordericus Vitalis, Historia Tcclesiastica ; Geoffrey Gaimar, Histoire des Angles; Eadmer, Historia Novorum; the Anglo-Saxon Chronicle;

Freeman, Reign of William Rufus. (Gaiene»)

WILLIAM IIT. (1650-1702), king of England and prince of Orange,! was the son of William IT., stadtholder of the United Netherlands, and Mary, daughter of Charles I. of England. He was born on 14th November 1650. His father died eight days before his birth, whereupon the states-general abolished the office of stadtholder. As he grew up, William became the head of the party, at once democratic and monarchical, which was attached to the house of Orange. But all power was concentrated in the hands of John de Witt and other leaders of the rival or aristocratic republican party. Hence William learned caution, reserve, insight into character, and the art of biding his time. .

When, however, France and England declared war upon the Netherlands in the spring of 1672, the rapid success of the French arms, and the rejection by Louis of the terms offered by the Dutch Government, produced a revolu- tion in favour of William. A popular rising obliged De Witt to repeal the perpetual edict (which ratified the sup- pression of the stadtholdership in 1667), and on 8th July 1672 the prince of Orange was declared by the states- general stadtholder, captain-general, and admiral for life. The revolution was followed by a riot in which John and Cornelius de Witt lost their lives. There appears no evi- dence connecting William with the attack on the De Witts ; but he made no attempt to punish it: on the contrary, he rewarded the leaders. Then, rejecting the

outrageous terms offered by the allies, he placed his private fortune and the revenues of his offices at the disposal of the state, and declared himself ready to die in the last ditch. In order to check the French advance the sluices were opened and vast tracts of country placed under water. The Dutch fleet prevented an English landing. An alliance was made with the elector of Brandenburg, whose forces effected a useful diversion on the eastern frontier. Next year (1673) William lost Maestricht, but he more than balanced this disaster by treaties with Spain and the empire. The war now began to turn in his favour. Early in 1674 the French troops evacuated Holland, and in February of the same year peace was made with England in the treaty of Westminster. As the tide turned, William's allies became more active in his behalf. The league of The Hague, the first of those great coalitions by which he sought to set a limit to the aggressions of Louis XIV., was joined by the elector of Brandenburg, who had been obliged a year

1 For some account of this family, see HoLLAnD, vol. xii. pp. 74 and 79 sq.

before to come to terms with France, and by several other German princes. In Flanders William himself opposed Condé and fought the indecisive battle of Senefie (August 1674). For the next two years the war dragged on with- out very important results. William, although he had saved Holland, could not prevent France from winning places at the expense of the empire and Spain. In April 1677 he was decisively beaten by the duke of Orleans near St Omer. A great part of the Spanish Netherlands as well as Franche Comté was now in the hands of France. These advances caused much alarm in England ; and the prince of Orange linked himself closer to that country by marrying Mary, elder daughter of James, duke of York, in November 1677. Early next year William signed a treaty of alliance with England, the object of which was to compel Louis to come to terms. The duplicity of Charles and the attitude of the country party in England, anxious for war with France but unwilling to put an army into the king's hands, prevented this arrangement from taking effect. A fresh treaty was, however, made

between the two powers (July), and the pressure thus brought to bear upon Louis led to the peace of Nimeguen (August 1678). Four days after the peace was signed William attacked the French army under the duke of Luxembourg in its en- trenchments round Mons. A sanguinary but resultless battle ensued, William attempted to justify this bloodshed by the insufficient and incredible plea that he was not aware that the peace had been signed. He can hardly have wished to prolong the war ; but it is not surprising if he was dis- satisfied with a peace which gave Franche Comté and many places in the Spanish Netherlands to France.

During the years which immediately followed the peace of Nimeguen, Louis's aggressive proceedings provoked a general uneasiness, of which the prince of Orange made skilful use. The French king had seized on William's ancestral principality of Orange in the south of France. William declared publicly that he would make Louis repent the outrage, and when called on to withdraw his words refused to do so. Personal affront was thus added to the national grounds of his hostility. The second of his coali- tions against France began by a treaty between the Nether- lands and Sweden (October 1681) for the maintenance of the peace of Nimegucn, which was soon joined by the empire and Spain, and by several of the German states. When, however, Louis declared war on Spain, invaded the Spanish Netherlands, and even took Luxemburg (1683-84), William could not persuade the states-general to raise an army, and the allied powers acquiesced in the truce of Ratisbon, which left the French king in possession of all that he had won (1685). Certain claims on the Palatinate which Louis urged on behalf of his sister-in-law, the duchess of Orleans, gave William an occasion for organizing a further combination against him. In July 1686 the emperor, with the kings of Spain and Sweden, acting as members of the empire, and the most important German princes entered into the league of Augsburg, which, how- ever, William did not himself join.

Meanwhile, as heir presumptive to the English throne, he paid close attention to what was passing in England. He sought to win Charles by sheltering the duke of Mon- mouth during the exile to which his father had unwillingly condemned him. The same motives led him to dismiss the duke when James II. succeeded his brother, and to dis- courage the

attempt which Monmouth made to win the crown. Healso endeavoured to stop Argyll and his friends when they were setting out for England; and he tried to dissuade Monmouth from his rash expedition, and to induce him to take service against the Turks in Hungary, and, when this failed, he sought, with as little success, to prevent his crossing to England. Throughout the

whole crisis he showed a scrupulous regard for the interests of his father-in-law, which fortunately coincided with his own; but at the same time he astutely avoided any step which would have alienated from him the constitu- tional party. When, however, James II. began to show himself in his true colours, William became the head of the opposition in England. As such, he strongly disap- proved of the first Declaration of Indulgence (1686) and remonstrated with James on the unconstitutional nature of his act. When the king requested him, a year later, to place Papists instead of Protestants in command of the English regiments then in the service of Holland, he declined to do so, and rejected with equal firmness a demand from James that he should send the troops back to England. Nevertheless he refused to listen to Mor- daunt's premature suggestion that he should undertake an invasion in 1686, and, even when Edward Russell visited him at The Hague (May 1688), he was unwilling to move till he was assured that the majority of the nation would be with him. The letter, signed by seven leaders of the two great English parties, which Adiniral Herbert carried to Holland (June 30) set his scruples at rest.

On 30th September he issued a declaration in which he recapitulated James's unconstitutional acts, and stated that he was coming to England in order to secure the assembling of a free parliament, by whose decision he was resolved to abide. On 2d November he sailed from Holland, and three days later landed at Torbay. At first only few persons joined him, but presently the gentry began to come in. James, who had massed his troops at Salisbury, was compelled by William's advance and by the desertion of Churchill and others to fall back upon London. Here he attempted to treat with the invader. William, anxious to avoid all appearance of conquest,

consented to negotiate, and it was agreed that a parliament should be summoned, both armies meanwhile holding aloof. James, however, attempted to leave the country, but was stopped and returned to Whitehall. For a moment he seemed to contemplate resistance, but William now insisted on his retiring from London. His final flight relieved the prince of a great difficulty. On 19th December William arrived in London, and at once called a meeting of peers and others who had sat in the parlia- ments of Charles II.'s reign. By their advice he summoned a convention, wluch met on 22d January 1689 and settled the crown on William and Mary, who, after accepting the Declaration of Rights, were on 13th February proclaimed king and queen.

The revolution had so far succeeded beyond expectation ; but William's difficulties had only begun. His primary object was to bring England into the field against France. But he had first to secure his own throne, which was still endangered by resistance in Scotland and Ireland; in order to do it with effect he had to gain the good will of the Eng- lish parliament and to harmonize or control its two great factions, which, momentarily united by the imminence of despotism, were again almost on the verge of civil war. He wished to be superior to party, which he could only become by being independent of parliament, and this the revolution had rendered impossible. The revolution was due mainly to the Whigs, who were therefore Williain's natural allies; but the political principles of the Whigs led them to curtail the power of the sovereign. The principles of the Tories were much more to his taste ; but the Tories were disinclined to apply their principles on behalf of a sovereign whose title they could not conscien- tiously acknowledge. In selecting his first mumistry William endeavoured to conciliate both sides and to hold the balance even. He eventually saw that such a policy was impracticable, and that, the nation having arrived at

080

its majority, ministers must represent the party which was strongest in parliament. His natural reluctance to recog- nize this change, or to give up any of the powers which his predecessors had possessed, led to not unfrequent collisions with parliament and exposed him to some

humiliation, while the struggle between the two parties at times re- duced him to despair, and constantly hampered his action on the Continent.

For nearly a year and a half after William's acceptance of the crown he was occupied in forming the coalition against Louis XIV. known as the Grand Alliance. As stadtholder of the United Netherlands, William had already entered into an alliance with the emperor, In December he joined the league as king of England, and in 1690 the coalition was completed by the adhesion of Spain, Brandenburg, and Savoy. William had thus gained his first great object : he had united Europe against the Bourbon. Meanwhile, however, his arms had made little progress in Scotland and Ireland. James had landed in Ireland in March 1689 and nearly the whole island was in his hands. The relief of Londonderry (July) and the battle of Newtown Butler (August) saved the north for William, but elsewhere Schomberg could make no way. In Scotland the convention had offered the crown to William and Mary; but in the battle of Killiecrankie (July) the clans under Dundee had routed William's army. The convention, which shortly after his accession had been turned into a parliament, met for its second session in the autumn of 1689, and the two parties quarrelled so violently over the Corporation and Indemnity Bills that William threatened to leave the country. He was induced by Nottingham and Shrewsbury to give up this intention, but in January 1690 he dissolved the parliament. William put an end to the quarrel about the indemnity by issuing an Act of Grace, which gave an almost complete amnesty ; and, after placing the government in the hands of the queen and a council of nine persons, he left for Ireland. The defeat of the English and Dutch fleets off Beachy Head and the repulse of the allied forces at Fleurus (June and July 1690) were severe blows to William's hopes ; but the former led to no important results and the latter was more than balanced by the victory which William won at the battle of the Boyne (1st July 1690). James fled from the country, and William entered Dublin in triumph. In September he returned to England, leaving Marlborough to conquer the south of Ireland in a short but brilliant campaign. Meanwhile the resistance in Scot- land had collapsed, and Mackay reduced the Highlands to tranquillity. In 1691 William was able to go abroad and to take the command in Flanders, where, however, his efforts were unsuccessful.

The next year (1692) opened with the massacre of Glencoe. It is improbable that, in signing an order for the "extirpation" of the Macdonalds, he intended that the order should be literally executed. Nevertheless, the order came from him, and he cannot be acquitted of all blame. About the same time the insecurity of his position was shown by the discovery of Marlborough's treachery ; and Marlborough did not standalone. While many whom William trusted or appeared to trust were intriguing with James, an invasion of England was being organized by the French Government. Fortunately, and in great measure owing to the politic conduct of Mary, the commanders of the fleet were induced to stand firm, and the great victory of La Hogue (19th May 1692) put a stop to the projected mvasion, But the fortune of war went against William on the Continent. He could not save Namur from the French, and he was severely defeated in an attempt to surprise the duke of Luxembourg at Steenkerke (4th August 1692). Next year he was again beaten by the

we ea 1 ie

[ENGLAND.

same commander at Neerwinden (19th July). The battle of La Hogue had not given England the command of the seas, and French privateers inflicted great damage on English trade. In June 1693 the Smyrna fleet was almost entirely destroyed off Cape St Vincent.

In spite of these reverses William struggled on with indomitable courage, and he was well supported by the country. Parliament, under the skilful guidance of Montague, adopted various important financial measures to meet the expenses of the war. The land-tax was re-assessed, the national debt created, the Bank of England established, and the coinage renewed (1693-95). In 1694 William confirmed the parliamentary system by giving his consent, though an unwilling consent, to the Triennial Act, and he recognized the principles of ministerial government by modifying the ministry, until in 1696 it was in thorough harmony with the parliamentary majority. In 1695 Wil- liam won his first important success on the Continent by recovering Namur, and, though no advance was made by the allies next year, the exhaustion of France was becoming more and more evident. At length, in March 1697, a con- gress met at Ryswick, and in

September peace was made. Louis was obliged to give up all (with the exception of Strasburg) that he had added to his dominions since 1678, and he recognized William as king of England. With the conclusion of the war the dread of a standing army revived in England, and, much to William's disgust, a vote of parliament reduced the military force to 10,000 men, although the question of the Spanish succession (see vol. ix. p. 580) was pending. The new parliament which met early in 1699 reduced the army still further and resolved that it should consist solely of English troops, thus com- pelling William to dismiss his favourite Dutch guards. They went on to institute an inquiry into the manner in which the forfeited estates in Ireland had been disposed of, and in their second session (November 1699) they passed a bill for the "resumption" of these estates. William died on 8th March 1702 from the consequences of a fall from his horse on 20th February.

Authorities. Burnet, History of his own Times; Voltaire, Siécle de Louis XIV.; Negotiations of the Count @ Avaux (London, 1754) ; Négociations relatives & la Succession d' Espagne, &c., collected by Mignet (Paris, 1835); Lettres et Mémoires de Marie, Reine d Angle- terre, &c. (The Hague, 1880); Harris, History of the Lifeand Reign of William IT. (Dublin, 1749); Mackintosh, History of the Revolu- tion in England; Macaulay, History of England; Ranke, English History. (G. W. P.)

WILLIAM IV. (1765-1837), king of England, was the third son of George III. He was born at Windsor, 21st August 1765. When he was fourteen years old he was sent to sea as a midshipman under Admiral Digby. Next year he sailed under Rodney and took part in the action off Cape St Vincent (16th January 1780). During the rest of the war the young prince saw plenty of service, for which he imbibed a strong liking, and so laid the founda- tion of his popularity. On the conclusion of the war he travelled in Germany, visiting Hanover and Berlin, where he was entertained by Frederick the Great. In 1785 he passed for heutenant ; next year he was made captain and stationed in the West Indies. Shortly after 1787, being tired of his station, he sailed home without orders, and was punished for his insubordination by being obliged to stay at Plymouth till his ship was refitted, when he again sailed for the West Indies.

In 1789 he was made duke of Clarence. When war was declared against the French republic in 1793, he strongly supported it and was anxious for active employ- ment; but, though he was made rear-admiral of the red, he could obtain no command. Thus condemned to in- activity, he amused or revenged himself by joining the prince of Wales and the duke of York in their opposition

to the king. He threw himself into the dissipations of society, and his hearty geniality and bluff, sailor-like man- ners gained him popularity, though they did not secure him respect. He took his seat in the House of Lords, where he defended the extravagancies of the prince of Wales, spoke on the Divorce Bill, vehemently opposed the emanci- pation of slaves, and defended slavery on the ground of his experience in the West Indies. Meanwhile he formed a connexion with Mrs Jordan, the actress, with whom he lived on terms of mutual affection and fidelity for nearly twenty years, and the union was only broken off eventually for political reasons. During all this period the prince had lived in comparative obscurity. The death of Princess Charlotte in 1817 brought him forward as in the line of succession to the crown. In 1818 he married Adelaide of Saxe-Meiningen, a lady half his age, without special attrac- tions, but of a strong, self-willed nature, which enabled her subsequently to obtain great influence over her husband. On the death of the duke of York in 1827 the duke of Clarence became heir to the throne, and in the same year he was appointed lord high admiral. In discharging the functions of that office he endeavoured to assume indepen- dent control of naval affairs, although his patent precluded him from acting without the advice of two members of his council. This involved him in a quarrel with Sir George Cockburn, in which he had to give way. As he still continued to act in defiance of rules, the king was at length obliged to call upon him to resign.

On 28th June 1830 the death of George IV. placed him on the throne. During the first two years of his reign England underwent an agitation more violent than any from which it had suffered since 1688. William IV. was well-meaning and conscientious ; but his timidity and irre- solution

drove ministers to despair, while his anxiety to avoid extremes and his want of insight into affairs pro- longed a dangerous crisis and brought the country to the verge of revolution. Immediately after his accession the revolution of July broke out in France and gave a great impulse to the reform movement in England. The king, though he called himself an "old Whig," did not dismiss the Tory ministry which had governed the country during the last two years of his brother's reign ; but the elections for the new parliament placed them in a minority. Within a fortnight of the opening of parliament they were beaten on a motion for the reform of the civil list, and resigned. Lord Grey undertook to form a ministry, with the avowed intention of bringing in a large measure of reform. This was not in itself displeasing to the king, who had liberal tendencies, and a few years before had supported Catholic emancipation. But, when the struggle in parliament began, his disinclination to take up a decided attitude soon exposed the Government to difficulties. The first Reform Bill was introduced on Ist March 1831; the second read- ing was carried on 21st March by a majority of one. Shortly afterwards the Government were beaten in commit- tee, and offered to resign. The king declined to accept their resignation, but at the same time was unwilling to dissolve, although it was obvious that in the existing parliament a ministry pledged to reform could not retain office. From this dilemma William was rescued by the conduct of the opposition, which, anxious to bring on a change of ministry, moved an address against dissolution. Regarding this as an attack on his prerogative, William at once dissolved parliament (April 1831). The elections gave the ministry an overwhelining majority. The second Reform Bill was brought in in June, and passed its third reading (21st September) by a majority of 109. A fort- night later (8th October) the Lords threw out the Bill by a majority of 41. For an account of the subsequent stages of the struggle, see GREY, vol. xi. pp. 191-192.

During the rest of his reign William IV. had not much opportunity of active political interference, but on one other occasion he made an unjustifiable use of his pre- rogative. Two years after the passing of the

Reform Bill the ministry of Lord Grey had become unpopular. In July 1834 Lord Grey himself retired and Lord Melbourne took the lead. There were divergences of opinion in the cabinet, and the king strongly objected to the ministerial policy respecting the Irish Church. On the shallow pre-text that Lord Althorp's removal to the Upper House would weaken the ministry in the House of Commons, where, however, they still had a majority, he suddenly dismissed them and summoned Sir Robert Peel (14th November). Peel's ministry, containing many members who had been in the government on the king's accession, was called from its short duration "the ministry of the hundred days." Its formation clearly indicated that the Whig proclivities of the king, which had never been more than partial or lukewarm, had wholly disappeared. The step was regarded with general disapprobation. It was immediately followed by a dissolution, and the ministry soon found themselves ina minority. Beaten on Lord John Russell's motion re- specting the Irish Church (3d April 1835), Peel resigned and Melbourne again came into power. Under him the Whigs retained the lead during the remainder of the reign. This coup détat of November 1834 was the last occasion on which the English sovereign has attempted to impose an unpopular ministry on the majority in parliament.

In May 1837 the king began to show signs of debility, and died from an affection of the heart on the 20th of June, leaving behind him the memory of a genial, frank, warm- hearted man, but a blundering, though well-intentioned prince. He was succeeded by his niece Victoria.

Authorities. —Correspondence of Earl Grey with William IV. and Sir Herbert Taylor, London, 1867 ; Fitzgerald's Life and Times of William IV.; Greville's Memoirs; Memoirs of Sir Robert Peel ; Civil Correspondence of the Duke of Wellington ; Walpole's History of England; Martineau's History of the Peace; Molesworth's History of England. (G2 Wis-Bs)

WILLIAM, surnamed the Lion, king of Scotland from 1165 to 1214. See Scoriann, vol. xxi. p. 484.

WILLIAM I. (1797-1888), king of Prussia and German emperor, was the second son of Frederick William III. of Prussia and Louisa, a princess of

Mecklenburg-Strelitz. He was born at Berlin on 22d March 1797, and received the names of Wilhelm Friedrich Ludwig. He was a delicate child and had to be carefully nurtured. His con- stitution, however, was sound, and he became one of the most vigorous men in Germany. After the battle of Jena he spent three years at Kénigsberg and Memel. Mean- while he had given evidence of sterling honesty, a strict love of order, and an almost passionate interest in every- thing relating to war. On Ist January 1807 he received an officer's patent, and on 30th October 1813 was ap- pointed a captain. William accompanied his father in the campaign of 1814, and early in the following year received the iron cross for personal bravery shown at Bar- sur-Aube. He took part in the entry into Paris on 31st March 1814, and afterwards visited London. He joined the Prussian army in the final campaign of the Napoleonic wars, and again entered Paris. The prince was made a colonel and a member of the permanent military commis- sion immediately after his twentieth birthday, and at the age of twenty-one became a major-general. In 1820 he received the command of a division; and during the fol- lowing nine years he not only made himself master of the military system of his own country but studied closely those of the other European states. In 1825 he was pro- moted to the rank of lieutenant-general, and obtained the command of the corps of guards. On 11th June 1829 he married Augusta of Saxe- Weimar.

On the death of his father in 1840—the new king, Frederick William IV., being childless—Prince William, as heir presumptive to the throne, received the title of prince of Prussia. He was also made lieutenant-governor of Pomerania and appointed a general of infantry. In politics he was decidedly Conservative; but at the outbreak of the revolutionary movement of 1848 he saw that some concessions to the popular demand for liberal forms of government were necessary. He urged, however, that order should be restored before the establishment of a constitutional system. At this time he was the best-hated man in Germany, the mass of the Prussian people believ- ing him to be a vehement supporter of an absolutist and reactionary policy. He was even held responsible for the blood shed in Berlin on 18th March, although he had been relieved nine days before of his command of the guards. So bitter was the feeling

against him that the king entreated him to leave the country for some time, and accordingly he went to London, where he formed intimate personal relations with Prince Albert, Sir Robert Peel, Lord John Russell, Lord Palmerston, and other English statesmen. On 8th June he was back at Berlin, and on the same day he took his seat as member for Wirsitz in the Prussian national assembly, and delivered a speech in which he expressed belief in constitutional principles. In 1849, when the revolutionary party in the grand-duchy of Baden be- came dangerous, he accepted the command of "the army of operation in Baden and the Palatinate," and his plans were so judiciously formed and so skilfully executed that in the course of a few days the rebellion was crushed. At the beginning of the campaign an unsuccessful attempt was made on his life. In October 1849 he was appointed military governor of the Rhineland and Westphalia, and took up his residence at Coblentz. In 1854 the prince was raised to the rank of a field-marshal and made governor of the confederate fortress of Mainz. When the king was attacked with a disease of the brain, Prince William assumed the regency (7th October 1858).

On 2d January 1861 Frederick William IV. died, and his brother succeeded him as William I. For the internal conflict between the king and the house of representatives on the question of military reorganization, which filled up the first years of his reign, see Germany (vol. x. p. 510) and Prussia (vol. xx. p. 12), Thé events and results of the war with Denmark, and of that with Austria which arose out of the Schleswig-Holstein question, belong to the history of Austria and of Prussia, and have been already described under those articles. The brilliant achievements of the army in this last contest finally convinced the king's subjects that his aims had been wise. On his return to Berlin he was received with unbounded enthusiasm, and from this time he was looked up to as a father rather than as a sovereign. On the outbreak of the war with France in 1870 all Germans rallied round the king of Prussia, and, when on 31st July he quitted Berlin to join his army, he knew that he had the support of a united nation. He crossed the French frontier on the 11th of August, and personally commanded at the battles of Gravelotte and Sedan. It was during the siege of Paris, at his head-quarters in Versailles, that he was proclaimed German emperor on 18th January 1871. On 3d March 1871 he signed the preliminaries of peace

which had been accepted by the French assembly ; and on 21st March he opened the first imperial parliament of Germany. On 16th June he triumphantly entered Berlin at the head of his troops.

After that period the emperor left the destinies of Ger- many almost entirely in the hands of Bismarck, who held the office of imperial chancellor (see Prussta). In his personal history the most notable events were two attempts upon his life in 1878,—one by a working lad called Hédel,

WILLIAM

[GERMANY,

another by an educated man, Karl Nobiling. On the first occasion the emperor escaped without injury, but on the second he was seriously wounded. These attacks grew out of the socialist agitation ; and a newreichstag, elected for the purpose, passed a severe anti-socialist law, which was afterwards from time to time renewed. The socialists, however, far from being crushed, again and again gave proof of their power by returning a considerable number of deputies to parliament. In the hope of alienating from them the mass of the working class, Bismarck introduced, with the cordial approval of the emperor, a series of measures for the benefit of the poorer members of the community. Until within a few days of his death the emperor's health was remarkably robust; he died at Berlin on 9th March 1888,

The reign of William I. marked an era of vast importance in the history of Germany. In his time Prussia became the first power in Germany and Germany the first power in Europe. These momentous changes were due in a less degree to him than to Bismarck and Moltke; but to him belongs the credit of having recognized the genius of these men, and of having trusted them absolutely. Personally William was a man of a singularly noble and attractive character. His supreme wish was to discharge loyally the duties which had been imposed upon him, and he never shrank from any personal sacrifice that seemed to be demanded in the interests of his people. The best traditions of the Hohenzollerns were maintained, not only by the splendour of the achievements with which his name will

always be intimately associated, but by the simplicity, manliness, and uprightness of his daily life.

WILLIAM IV. (1532-1592), landgrave of Hesse, well known as an astronomer, son of Philip the Magnanimous, was born at Cassel on 14th June 1532. During his father's captivity after the battle of Miihlberg (1547) he carried on the government in his'name for five years, and succeeded him on his death in 1567. At an early age he became interested in astronomy ; and in 1561 he built an observa- tory at Cassel, where observations were regularly made, first by himself, afterwards by Rothmann and Biirgi. The last-named was not only a very skilful mechanic (it seems probable that he applied the pendulum to clocks long be- fore Huygens did) but an original mathematician, who independently invented logarithms. William died on 25th August 1592,

Most of the mechanical contrivances which made Tycho Brahe's instruments so superior to those of his contemporaries were adopted at Cassel about 1584, and from that time the observations made there seem to have been about as accurate as Tycho's; but the re- sulting longitudes were 6' too great in consequence of the adopted solar parallax of 3'. The principal fruit of the observations was a catalogue of about a thousand stars, the places of which were deter- mined by the methods usually employed in the 16th century, con- necting a fundamental star by means of Venus with the sun, and thus finding its longitude and latitude, while other stars could at any time he referred to the fundamental star. It should be noticed that clocks (on which Tycho Brahe depended very little) were used at Cassel for finding the difference of right ascension between Venus and the sun before sunset ; Tycho preferred observing the angular distance between the sun and Venus when the latter was visible in the day time. The Hessian star catalogue was published in Lucius Barettus's Historia Celestis (Augsburg, 1668), and a number of other observations are to be found in Celi et Siderum in eo Errantium Observationes Hassiace, Leyden, 1618, edited by SNELLIUS (¢.¥.). R. Wolf, in his " Astronomische Mittheilungen," No. 45 (Vierte- jahrsschrift d. naturforschenden Gesellschaft in Ziirich, 1878), has given a résumé of the manuscripts still preserved at Cassel, which throw much light on the methods adopted in the observations and reductions.

WILLIAM (1533-1584), surnamed the Stent, prince of Orange, count of Nassau, was born at the castle of Dil- lenburg in Nassau on 16th April 1533. He was the eldest son of William of Nassau (died 1559) and his second wife, Juliana of Stolberg, a woman of remarkable piety and discretion, who devoted much thought and care to the training of her children. In 1544 he inherited from his cousin René or Renatus the principality of Orange and the great estates belonging to his family in the Netherlands (see HoLLann, vol. xii. p. 74 sq.). He was educated at the court

of Brussels in the Roman Catholic faith. Having attracted the attention of Charles V., he was invested by the emperor at the age of twenty-two with the command of the army on the French frontier; and it was on his shoulder that Charles V. leaned when in 1555, in the presence of a great assembly at Brussels, he transferred to his son Philip the sovereignty of the Netherlands. Orange was also selected to carry the insignia of the empire to Ferdinand, king of the Romans, when Charles resigned the imperial crown. He took part in Philip IT's first war with France, and negotiated the preliminary arrangements for the treaty of Cateau-Cambrésis (1559). He was one of the hostages sent to France for the due execution of the treaty, and during his stay in that country Henry II., who entirely misunderstood his character, revealed to him a plan for the massacre of all Protestants in France and the Netherlands. The prince was horrified by this disclosure, but said nothing ; and it was on account of his extraordinary discretion on this occasion that he received the surname of "the Silent." The epithet is apt to convey a mistaken impression as to his general character. He was of a frank, open, and generous nature, without a touch of moroseness in the ordinary intercourse of life.

The persecution of the Protestants in the Netherlands, carried on with such reckless ferocity by Cardinal Gran- vella, led Orange, Egmont, and Horn, the most prominent of the great nobles, to protest against the violence of the Government ; and in 1563 they wrote to Philip urging him to withdraw Granvella, and ceased to attend the state council, In the

following year Granvella was displaced, whereupon they resumed their seats at the council; yet shortly afterwards it was decided by Philip that the canons of the Council of Trent, the edicts, and the Inquisition should be immediately promulgated in every town and village of the provinces, and that the process should be repeated 'every six months. At the meeting of the state council at which this was formally decided Orange dis- claimed any responsibility for the consequences, and he whispered to his neighbour that now the most extra- ordinary tragedy the world had ever seen was about to begin. The proceedings of the Gueux or reforming party so alarmed the regent, Margaret of Parma, that she was persuaded to sign an accord, declaring the abolition of the Inquisition and granting liberty of worship in all places where the new forms of religion had been already accepted. In consequence of these concessions the great nobles undertook to restore order, the prince of Orange especially distinguishing himself at Antwerp. But Philip, who had been longing for an excuse to crush the inde- pendent spirits of the Netherlanders, now resolved to send the duke of Alva into the country, with a Spanish force. Orange, since he could not count upon the hearty support of Egmont or Horn, had no alternative but to resign his offices and withdraw from the Netherlands (1567), taking up his residence at Dillenburg. He was warmly attached to Egmont, and before his departure, at an interview at Willebroeck, urged him to seek refuge in some foreign land ; but Egmont was not to be persuaded, and the two friends parted never to see one another again.

Orange was repeatedly summoned to Brussels; but he declined to appear before the Council of Disturbances, on the ground that it had no jurisdiction over an inde- pendent prince and a knight of the order of the Fleece. The havoc wrought by Alva filled him with grief and anger ; and in 1568 he contrived to collect two forces, one of which, commanded by his brothers Louis and Adolphus, gained a victory in Groningen, where Adolphus fell. Alva, having ordered the execution of Egmont and Horn, advanced against Louis and defeated him in East Fries- land. Orange then invaded Brabant, but could neither

bring Alva to a decisive engagement nor induce the people to rise against him. The army had therefore to be dis- banded, and its disappointed leader joined Wolfgang of Zweibriicken in an attempt to aid the Huguenots. Acting on the advice of Coligny, Orange issued letters of mark to seamen against the Spaniards; and for years the "sea beggars" harassed the enemy along the coast, and often did no little harm to their own countrymen, In 1572 the revolt against Spain was so far successful that Orange resumed the functions of stadtholder of Holland and Zealand, a position to which he had been appointed in 1559; but he professed to rule in the name of the king, for as yet the people had no wish to throw off their allegiance to the Spanish crown. Orange had won their confidence not only by acting as their champion but by accepting the Protestant faith. He had never been an enthusiastic Catholic, and as a Protestant he was dis- tinguished aiong the eminent men of his time by his mastery of the true principles of toleration. Meanwhile he had been using the utmost diligence in bringing to- gether an army, and his brother Louis, by a_ brilliant stroke, had captured the city of Mons. On 15th July 1572 the estates of Holland met at Dort, and, recognizing Orange as the legal stadtholder of Holland, Zealand, Fries- land, and Utrecht, voted the sums necessary for the pro- secution of the war. In August he crossed the Meuse at the head of an army, trusting mainly to the promised co-operation of France. All his hopes, however, were shattered by the massacre of St Bartholomew. He was obliged to disband his troops, and Mons was re-taken by the Spamards. On 14th April 1574, at the village of Mook, near Nimeguen, the patriots were again routed, and Orange's brothers, Louis and Henry, slain. But many fortified places held out, and on 3d October Orange, who had ordered the country to be inundated, was able to relieve Leyden, which had for months been defended with splendid bravery and self-sacrifice. At length the brutality and despotism of the Spaniards were so fiercely and gener- ally resented that Orange was able to enter upon a series of negotiations, which resulted on 8th November 1576 in the pacification of Ghent, signed on behalf of nearly all the provinces. By this treaty the provinces bound them- selves to drive the Spaniards from the Netherlands, to convoke the states-general, and to establish freedom of worship both for Roman Catholics and for Protestants. Don John of Austria, Spanish regent of the Netherlands (1576-78), granted all the demands of the states; but Orange was

suspicious of the intentions of the Govern- ment, and in no way relaxed his vigilance. Troubles soon broke out, and Orange was called to Brussels to the aid of the states, being elected ruwaard (governor) of Brabant. When the archduke Matthias (afterwards emperor) was invited by the Catholic nobles to accept the position of governor-general, Orange prudently refrained from resist- ing the scheme; and he acted with equal discretion in regard to the duke of Alencon, who came nominally as the protector of the liberties of the Netherlands. Orange, however, retained in his own hands complete control over the movement in the seven northern provinces, which by the Union of Utrecht, signed on behalf of five of the pro- vinces on 23d January 1579, laid the foundations of the comnionwealth of the United Netherlands. Orange's rela- tion to the new federal republic was somewhat vaguely defined ; but in his lifetime it was not felt that there was any very urgent need for an exact delimitation of the relative functions of the executive and the legislative authorities. Negotiations for the conclusion of peace with Spain were carried on for some time in vain; and in 1580 Philip issued a ban against the prince, and set a price of 25,000 gold crowns upon his head. Orange pub-

lished a vigorous "apology," and on 26th July 1581 the estates of the United Provinces formally renounced their allegiance to the Spanish crown, An unsuccessful attempt on the life of Orange was made in 1582. But on 10th July 1584 he was shot dead in his house at Delft by Balthazar Gerard, who seems to have been actuated in part by fana- ticism, in part by the hope of gain.

William of Orange was tall and well-formed, of a dark complexion, with brown hair and eyes. He was a man of a singularly upright and noble character. He has been charged with excessive ambition ; but his ruling motive was undoubtedly a love of justice, for the sake of which he often risked his life and willingly sacrificed his wealth and leisure. He was a born statesman, capable of forming wise and far-reaching plans, and of modifying them to suit the changing circumstances in which it was necessary to execute them. In moments of difficulty he displayed splendid resource and courage, and he had a will of iron, which misfortunes were

never able either to bend or to break. To him chiefly belongs the honour of having permanently crippled the tyrannical power of Spain, and of having founded the independence and greatness of the United Provinces.

He was married four times. His wives were (1) Anne of Egmont (died 1558), by whom he had a daughter and a son, Philip William, who was seized by Alva in 1567 and sent to the court at Madrid, where he was educated ; (2) Anne of Saxony (divorced in 1575, died in 1577), the mother of several daughters and of Maurice of Orange (see HoLLAND, vol. xii. p. 77); (8) Charlotte of Bourbon (died 1582), who had six daughters ; (4) Louisa, Coligny's daughter, the mother of Frederick Henry of Orange (Joe. cit., p. 79), who represented the family after the death of his two elder brothers, and succeeded Maurice as stadtholder.

See Schiller, Geschichte des Abfalls der Vereinigten Niederlande; Klose, Withelm I, von Oranien; Gachard, Correspondance de Guillaume le Taciturne and Corre- spondance de Philippe II. sur les Affaires des Pays-Bas ; Groen van Prinsterer, Archives ou Correspondance Inédite de la Maison d'Orange-Nassau; Juste, Guillaume le Taciturne d'aprés sw Correspondance et les Papiers d'Etat; Motley, The Rise of the Dutch Republic. (J. SL.)

WILLIAM of Holland, second count of the name, was born about 1227, succeeded his brother Floris IV. in 1235, and was chosen king of the Romans by the papal party in 1247. See Germany, vol. x. p. 491, and Hoxzanp, vol. xii. p. 71. He died on 28th January 1256.

WILLIAM L, king of the Netherlands from 1815 to 1840, was born at The Hague on 24th August 1772, and died at Berlin on 7th November 1843. His son, WiLL1AM IT. (1792-1849), reigned from 1840, and was in turn suc- ceeded by his son, Witt1am III. (born 1817). See Hot- LAND, vol. xii. p. 83.

WILLIAM, archbishop of Tyre, was doubtless a native

of the Holy Land. He was perhaps born about 1137; but this is a mere inference from his own statement that he was still pursuing his studies "across the seas" when Amalric came to the throne (17th February 1163),

and did not return till late in 1166 or early in 1167. Asa child he had seen Ralph, the patriarch of Antioch, who died about 1141-42; he remembered the fall of Edessa (December 1144); and he seems to call himself a contemporary historian from the accession of Baldwin IIL, an event which he dates 10th November 1142 (Hist. Rer, Lransmarin., xvi., pref., and xix. 4, 12). Unfortunately the chapter (xix. 12) which relates to his own early life has been excised or omitted from every MS. of his great work now extant,—a remark which holds good, not only for the original Latin, but also for the 13th-century French translation. William was appointed archdeacon of Tyre at the request of Amalric on 31st August 1167. Next summer he was despatched on an embassy to the emperor Manuel. At the time of the disastrous campaign against Damietta (October-December 1169) he had to take refuge at Rome from the "unmerited anger" of his archbishop. About 1170 he was appointed tutor to Amalric's son Baldwin, afterwards Baldwin IV. A very few months after Baldwin's accession William was made chancellor of the kingdom (¢. October 1174), and less than a year later (13th June 1175) was consecrated archbishop of Tyre. The former office he still held in 1182. He belonged to the commission which negotiated with Philip of Flanders

WILLIAM

[TYRE,

in 1177; and in the following October (1178) he was one of six bishops sent to represent the Latin Church of the East at the Lateran Council (19th March 1179). He returned home by way of Constantinople, where he stayed seven months (October 1179-April 1180) with Manuel. This is his last authentic appearance in history; but we know from his own works that he was writing his History in 1182 (xix. 20), and that it breaks off abruptly at the end of 1183 or the beginning of 1184. Some fifty years later his first continuator accused Heraclius, patriarch of Jerusalem, of having procured William's death at Rome. This story, however, seems to be pure legend ; nor perhaps is much more credit to be attached to the theory that identifies him with the archbishop of Tyre sent over to Europe to preach a new crusade in 1188. It is true that Matthew Paris speaks of Henry II.'s receiving the cross from the hands of " Willelmus episcopus

Tyrensis"; but more contemporary writers omit the Christian name, while others write it Josce or Joscius. '

If not the greatest, William of Tyre is at least among the greatest, of medizval historians. His Historia Rerum in Partibus Trans- marinis Gestarum is the main authority for the Latin kingdom of the East between 1127, where Fulcher of Chartres leaves off, and 1184, where Ernonl takes up the narrative. It was translated into French in the 18th century, or possibly before the end of the 12th. A little later it was united to Ernoul's chronicle or that of Bernard the Treasurer, and continued in more than one form to 1249, 1261, or 1275. In this shape the combined histories form the Livre d'Outremer quoted by Joinville (cxvil. § 77),—the standard medi- zval account of the exploits of the Frankish warriors in the East. William's own work consists of twenty-two books and a fragment (one chapter and a preface) of book xxiii. It extends from the preaching of the first crusade by Peter the Hermit and Urban II. to the end of 1188 or the beginning of 1184. Like William's other work, the Historia de Orientalibus Prinetpibus, it was under- taken at the request of Aimalric, who was himself a lover of history and supplied the author with Arabic MSS.; but, whereas the latter book (now unfortunately lost) was mainly based upon the writings of a certain "Seith, the son of Patrick (Patricit), patriarch of Alexandria," of the Historia Transmarina its author remarks, "Iu this work we have had no guide, whether Greek or Arab, but have had recourse to traditions only, save as regards a few things that we have ourselves seen." The " traditions" here spoken of must be taken to include the Gesta Francorum of Tudebode, Raymund of Agiles, Fulcher of Chartres, and, above all, Albert of Aix. It is only with the accession of Baldwin I., even if so early as this, that William's claim to originality can fairly be sustained; and even here his narrative, till towards the close of book Xiii., is based upon that of Fulcher. From this point William of Tyre is indebted to no other historian. Of the remaining books two are devoted to the reign of Fulk (xiv.-xv.), three to that of Baldwin III. (xvi.-xviii.), two to that of Amalric, and the rest to that of Baldwin LY.

No medieval writer, except perhaps Giraldus Cambrensis, pos- sesses William's power of delineating the physical and mental features of his heroes. Again, very few had his instinctive insight into what would be of

real value to future ages: genealogy, topo- graphy, archeology, social life (political and ecclesiastical), military matters and naval, all find a due exposition in his pages. It is hardly too much to say that from his work alone a fairly detailed map of the Levant, as it was in the 12th century, might be con- structed ; and it is impossible to praise too highly the scrupulous fidelity with which he defines nearly all the techuical terms (whether relating to land or sea) of which he makes use. His chief fault is in the matter of chronology, where indeed he is not unfrequently at discord with himself. In the later books his information, even as regards what was taking place beyond the Nile or the Euphrates, as well as in Europe, is singularly exact. Nor did he consider any trouble too severe if by its means he might attain to the truth. Though a man of great learning and almost certainly acquainted with Arabic and Greek, he is as ready to enliven his pages with a country proverb as to embellish them with quotations from Cicero, Virgil, Ovid, or Plato. He was a prelate of pious character, in- clined to see the judgment of God on the iniquities of his fellow- countrymen in every disaster that overtook his native land and every Saracen success.

WILLIAM or Cuampzravx. xk. pp. 4228103,

WILLIAM or Lorris, the first author of the Roman de la Rose, derives his surname from a small town about equidistant from Montargis and Gien, in the old district of

See SCHOLASTICISM, vol.

WYKEHAM. |

the Gatinais, and in the present department of Loiret. This and the fact of his authorship may be said to be the only things positively known about him. The rubric of the poem, where his own part finishes, attributes Jean de Meung's continuation to a period forty years later than William's death and the consequent interruption of the romance. Arguing backwards, this death used to be put at about 1260; but Jean de Meung's own work has recently been dated earlier, and so the composition of the first part has been thrown back to a period before 1240. The author represents himself as having dreamed the dream which furnished the substance of the poem

in his twentieth year, and as having set to work to "rhyme it" five years later. The general characteristics of the Roman will be found noticed under FRaNcz (see vol. ix. p. 643). It may be added here that, though the later and longer part shows signs of greater intellectual vigour and wider knowledge than the earlier and shorter, William of Lorris has more poetry than his continuator, made a much greater impression on the spirit of his own and following ages, and is to all appearance more original. The great features of his four or five thousand lines are, in the first place, the extraordi- nary vividness and beauty of his word-pictures, in which for colour, freshness, and individuality he has not many rivals except in the greatest masters, and, secondly, the fashion of allegorical presentation, which, hackneyed and wearisome as it afterwards became, was evidently in his time new and striking. There are of course traces of it before, as in some romances, such as those of Raoul de Houdenc, in the troubadours, and in other writers ; but it was unquestion- ably William of Lorris who fixed the style. And to have fixed a style which captivated Europe for at least two centuries, if not three, does not happen to many of the personages of literary history.

The most convenient edition of the Roman de la Rose is that of F, Michel (2 vols., Paris, 1864).

WILLIAM or Matmuszoury. LIAM OF.

WILLIAM or Newsureu, born about 1136, was a canon of Newburgh in the North Riding of Yorkshire, and author of a valuable chronicle of English affairs from the Norman Conquest to 1197, He calls himself Gulielmus Parvus, and is frequently referred to as William Petyt or Little. His work (Gulielmi Neubrigensis Rerum Anglicarum Jnbri V.) was edited by Silvius at Antwerp in 1567 and by Hearne at Oxford in 1719 (3 vols. 8vo); the latest edition is that by H. C. Hamilton for the English Historical Society (Historia Rerum Anglicarum Willelmi Parvi, S.T.D., Ordinis Sancti Augustini Canonici Regularis in Coenobio B, Marize de Novoburgo in Agro Eboracensi, 2 vols., 1856).

WILLIAM oF Occam. See Occam.

WILLIAM or Wyxernam (1324-1404), bishop of Win- chester and chancellor of England, was born in 1324 at Wickham in Hampshire. His father was a yeoman ; his mother is said to have been of noble descent. He was educated at the priory school, Winchester, at the cost of Sir John Scures, lord of the manor of Wickham and governor of Winchester Castle, who afterwards took him into his service. When he was twenty-two years old he passed into the service of Edingdon, bishop of Winchester. In 1347 the bishop introduced him to the king asa young man likely to be useful from his skill in architecture. Edward IIL, who was then completing the Round Tower at Windsor, made him his chaplain. But his employment for some time was mainly secular : he acted as guardian of several of the king's manors and as clerk of the works at Henley and elsewhere. In 1356 he was appointed surveyor of the works at Windsor, and a little later surveyor and warden of several other castles. In 1359 he began the building of the great quadrangle to the east of the keep at

See MALMEsBuRy, WIL-

Windsor, a work which occupied ten years. This building established his fame as an architect. Two years after its completion he was employed to build Queenborough Castle (Kent). Meanwhile he was also gaining experience in affairs of state. In 1360 he must have been a member of the king's council, for he appears as a witness to the ratification of the treaty of Brétigny. In 1364 he became keeper of the privy seal. In 1365 he was one of the commissioners to treat for peace with Scotland. And, although he was not yet in holy orders, he was loaded by the king with preferments, one of which, the living of Pulham in Norfolk, involved him (about 1360) in a dispute with the pope. In fact he had attained to such eminence that Froissart says, 'At this time there reigned in England a priest called Sir William de Wican, so much in favour with the king that by him everything was done."

Early in life William had received the tonsure; but it was not till 1362 that he was ordained deacon and priest. In 1363 he became archdeacon of

Northampton, and pro- vost and prebendary of Wells. Although at this time he possessed a number of prebends, it appears, from a return which he made in 1366 on account of a papal bull against pluralities, that he only held one benefice with cure of souls. On the translation of Bishop Edingdon in this year from Winchester to Canterbury William was nominated by the king to the vacant bishopric ; but the pope withheld his confirmation for some time, and it was not till October 1367 that William was consecrated bishop of Winchester. A month previously he had been made chancellor of Eng- land. During his first chancellorship the war with France was renewed and went against the English. The blame for this fell in great measure on the ministry, and in 1371 William resigned the great seal. But in 1373 he was one of a committee of the Lords appointed to confer with the Commons on the question of an aid. About this time he fell out with John of Gaunt, with whom he had pre- viously been on good terms. Since the overthrow of the clerical ministry in 1371 John of Gaunt had been practi- cally head of the government, but the conduct of his sup- porters caused general discontent. In the "Good Parlia- ment" of 1376 Lord Latimer was impeached, and the bishop was active in promoting his trial and punishment. This was a great blow to John of Gaunt. The death of the Black Prince in June 1376 enabled him to take his revenge. The bishop was attacked in the council on the ground of malversation and misconduct of public affairs during his chancellorship, condemned to pay an enormous fine, and deprived of the temporalities of his see. The other bishops took his side and regarded his punishment as an insult to their order. It was not, however, till after the accession of Richard II. (1377) that William recovered his position. He then received a full pardon, and was reconciled to John of Gaunt.

During the next ten years he became more and more clearly identified with the constitutional or Lancastrian party. In 1380 and 1381 he was named on commissions for the reform of the king's household. In 1382 he took part in a conference with the Commons. Next year he successfully opposed a demand from the lords of the Scot- tish marches for a share in the public funds in order to defray the expense of guarding the border, a duty on the performance of which rested their title to their lands. In 1386 he became one of the commission appointed to examine into the Exchequer and to act as a sort of council of regency. It was before this

commission that the five "lords appellant" impeached Richard II.'s favourites, who next year were condemned by the " Merciless Parliament." A year later (1389) the king suddenly resumed the reins of power. In order, apparently, to conciliate the clergy, Richard at once offered the great seal to the

bishop of Winchester, who after some hesitation accepted the charge. His second chancellorship lasted for two years, and was marked by efforts on his part to reform the government and place it on a more constitutional basis. After he had held office for a year he and his colleagues in the ministry resigned their appointments, and challenged a public inquiry into their conduct. This being pro- nounced satisfactory, they resumed their offices. The chancellor drew up rules for the conduct of business in the council; and from this time minutes of the proceedings were regularly kept. In 1391 he resigned the great seal, and thenceforward retired from public life.

It is, however, as the founder of two great colleges that William is principally known to fame. Immediately after his promotion to the bishopric of Winchester he appears to have begun to carry out his educational schemes. Between 1369 and 1379 he bought the land enclosed in the north-eastern corner of the city walls at Oxford on which New College now stands (see OxrorD, vol. xviii. p. 97). Meanwhile he was taking steps to establish the sister foundation at Winchester. In 1378 he obtained a licence from the pope to found a college there, which was confirmed by the king four years later. The ground on which Winchester College stands belonged partly to the bishop and partly to other proprietors, from whom he bought it. In 1387 he began to build, and the buildings were occupied by his scholars in 1393, though they do not appear to have been finished till 1395. When his two colleges were established and endowed, he provided them with statutes, which after several revisions took their final form in 1400. Nor does he appear to have neglected his duties as a bishop. He visited and reformed the hospital of St Cross near Winchester; he corrected the abuses which had

crept into the priory of St Swithin; and he rebuilt or transformed the nave of Winchester cathedral. He kept a strict watch on the clergy under his charge, endeavouring to ensure their efficiency by frequently moving them from one living to another, and he promoted the material prosperity of his diocese by repairs of bridges and roads. In the relations between England and the papacy William of Wykeham strongly supported the nationalist policy of Edward III. The Statutes of Provisors and Premunire niet with his full approval. So far he was in accord with Wycliffe, but he showed no sympathy with the doctrinal opinions of the reformer. Bishop Courtenay, who headed the attack on Wycliffe, was a life- long friend of the bishop of Winchester, who published in 1382 the interdict condemning Wycliffe's heresies, and in 1392 sat on an episcopal commission to try his follower Henry Crumpe. William of Wykeham died at Waltham on 27th September 1404, and was buried in the cathedral of Winchester.

Authorities.—The episcopal register of William of Wykeham (pre- served at Winchester); Walsingham, Historia Anglicana ; Lowth, Life of William of Wykeham, London, 1758 ; Walcott, Welliam of Wykeham and his Colleges, 1852; Moberly, Life of William of Wykeham, Winchester, 1887. (G. WoaP.)

WILLIAMS, Joun (1796-1839), English missionary, was born at Tottenham near London, on 29th June 1796, He was trained as an ironmonger, and acquired while young considerable experience in mechanical work. Having offered himself. to the London Missionary Society, he was sent, after some training, in 1816 to the South Sea Islands asa missionary. He was first stationed at Kimeo, in the Society Islands, where he rapidly acquired a knowledge of the native language. After staying there fora short time he finally settled at Raiatea, which became his permanent headquarters, His success as a missionary here and elsewhere was remarkable. The people rapidly became Christianized and adopted many of the habits of civiliza- tion, Williams was fairly liberal for his age, and the results

of his labours among the Pacific Islands were essentially beneficial. He travelled unceasingly among the various island groups, planting stations and settling native mis- sionaries whom he himself had trained. From the Society Islands he visited the Hervey group, where he discovered, and stayed for a considerable time on, the island of Raro- tonga. Most of the inhabitants of the group were con- verted in a remarkably short time, and Williams's influence over them, as over the people of other groups, was very great. Besides establishing Christianity and civilization among them, he also, at their own request, helped them to draw up a code of laws for civil administration upon the basis of the new religion. While at Rarotonga he, with the help of the natives, built himself a ship, within about four months ; with this he returned to Raiatea, and made voyages among other island groups, including Samoa and the neighbouring islands, Williams returned to England in 1834 (having previously visited New South Wales in 1821); and during his four years' stay at home he had the New Testament, which he had translated into Rarotongan, printed. Returning in 1838 to the Pacific, he visited the stations already established by him, as well as several fresh groups. He went as far west as the New Hebrides, and, while visiting Erromango, one of the group, for the first time, was murdered by the natives, 20th November 1839.

Williams was probably on the whole one of the most successful of Christian missionaries, both as regards the extent and the per- manence of the work he accomplished. His Narrative of Mis- sionary Enterprises in the South Sea Islands was published in 1837, and formed an important contribution to our knowledge of the islands with which Williams was acquainted. See Alemoir of John Williams, by Rev. Ebenezer Prout, London, 1843.

WILLIAMS, Roger (c. 1600—c. 1684), one of the founders of the colony of Rhode Island, North America, was born either of Welsh or Cornish parents, but this as well as the date of his birth has been the subject of dis- pute. In early life he went to London, where his skill as a reporter commended him to the notice of Sir Edward Coke, who sent him to Sutton's Hospital (Charterhouse school). From Charterhouse he went to one of the uni- versities, but whether to Oxford or Cambridge there is no direct evidence to show. The register of Jesus College, Oxford, has the

following entry under date 30th April 1624: "Rodericus Williams, filius Gulielmi Williams, de Conwelgaio Pleb., an. Nat. 18." If this entry refers to the founder of Rhode Island he was of Welsh parentage and born about 1606. As Coke was a Cambridge student, the probability is, however, that Williams was sent there ; and a Roger Williams matriculated at Pembroke College of that university on Ist July 1625, and took his B.A. degree in January 1627. This Roger Williams was the second son of William Williams, and was baptized at Gwinsea, Cornwall, on 24th July 1600, a date which cor- responds with a statement regarding his age made by Williams himself. After leaving the university he entered on the study of law; but, soon forsaking it for theology, he was admitted into holy orders and is said to have had a parochial charge. On account of his Puritan beliefs he left England for Massachusetts Bay, where he arrived in the beginning of 1631. He accepted an invitation to become pastor of a church at Salem, on 12th April 1631, the same day that the magistrates were assembled at Boston to express disapproval of the scheine. To escape persecution he went to Plymouth, beyond the jurisdiction of Massachusetts Bay, and became assistant pastor there ; but in the autumn of 1633 he returned to Salem as assist- ant pastor, succeeding in the following year as sole pastor. Chiefly on account of his pronounced opinions regarding the restricted sphere of the civil magistrate in religious matters, he came into conflict with the court of Massa- chusetts, and, being banished from the colony, left with a

few sympathizers in January 1636 for Narragansett Bay. At first they received a grant of land from an Indian chief, which is now included in Seekonk, Massachusetts, and began to build houses, but in June following he and five others embarked in a canoe for Rhode Island, and founded a settlement to which Williams, in remembrance "of God's providence to him in his distress," gave the name of Pro- vidence. In 1639 he was publicly immersed and became pastor of the first Baptist church of Providence. As Massachusetts now began to claim jurisdiction over Nar- ragansett Bay, Williams proceeded in June 1643 to Eng- land, and through the mediation of his friend Sir Henry Vane, whose acquaintance he had made at Massachusetts, obtained an independent charter, 14th

March 1644. In 1649 he was chosen deputy president. He again visited England in 1651 to obtain a more explicit charter, and remained there till 1654, enjoying the friendship of Milton, Cromwell, and other prominent Puritans. On his return to the colony in 1654 he was chosen president or governor, and remained in office till 1658. He lived to the age of eighty-four, but the exact date of his death is uncertain.

Williams was the author of a Key into the Language of the Indians of America (written at sea on his first voyage to England; London, 1643, reprinted in vol. i. of Collections of Rhode Island Historical Society, 1827) ; Afr Cotton's Letter Examined and Answered, 1644 ; The Bloody Tenent of Persecution for the Cause of Conscience, 1644 ; Queries of Highest Consideration, 1644; The Bloody Tenent yet more Bloody, 1652; The Hireling Ministry None of Christ's, 1652 ; Experiments of Spiritual Life and Health, 1652; and George Fox Digged out of his Burrows, 1676. A complete collection of all his letters that have been recovered forms vol. vi. of the Publications of the Narragansett Club. See Lives by Knowles (1833), Gammell (1846), and Elton (1852); Spark's Library of American Biography ; Savage's Genealogical Dictionary of New England Settlers; Bio- graphical Cyclopedia of Representative Men of Rhode Island, 1883 ; Guild's Account of the Writings of Roger Williams, 1862; and Dexter's As to Roger Williams and his Banishment from Massa- chusetts Bay, 1876.

WILLIAMSPORT, a city of the United States, the county seat of Lycoming county, Pennsylvania, is situated in the valley of the west branch of the Susquehanna river, amid the hills of the Alleghany plateau, and is entered by four railway lines,—the Northern Central, the Philadelphia and Erie, the Philadelphia and Reading, and the Corning, Cowanesque, and Antrim. The city is somewhat irregularly laid out, and the streets are mainly unpaved. The popu- lation in 1880 was 18,934; in 1870 it was 16,030. Williamsport owes its importance chiefly to its large lumber industry. The healthfulness of its climate and the beauty of the surrounding scenery have made it a popular summer resort in recent years.

WILLIBRORD, St, the apostle of the Frisians, was born about 657. His father, Wilgils, an Angle or, as Alcuin styles him, a Saxon, of

Northumbria, withdrew from the world and constructed for himself a little oratory dedicated to St Andrew. The king and nobles of the district endowed him with estates till he was at last able to build a church, over which Alcuin afterwards ruled. Willibrord, almost as soon as he was weaned, was sent to be brought up at Ripon, where he must doubtless have come under the influence of Wilfrid. About the age of twenty the desire of increasing his stock of knowledge (c. 679) drew him to Ireland, which had so long been the headquarters of learning in western Europe. Here he stayed for twelve years, enjoying the society of Egbert and Wictbert, from the former of whom he doubtless received his first impulse to missionary work among the North-German tribes. In his thirty-third year (c. 690) he started with twelve companions for the mouth of the Rhine. These districts were then occupied by the Frisians under their king Rabbod or Radbod. After a time he found in Pippin, the mayor of the palace, a strong supporter, who sent him to Rome, where he was consecrated bishop by

Pope Sergius on St Cecilia's Day 696. Bede says that when he returned to Frisia his see was fixed in Utrecht. He now seems to have spent several years in founding churches and the work of conversion, till his success tempted him to pass into those parts of the land which did not own the Frankish sway. Being kindly received by Radbod, but failing to convert him, he passed on to Denmark, whence he carried away thirty boys to be brought up among the Franks. On his return he was wrecked on the holy island of Fosite (Heligoland), where his disregard of the pagan superstition nearly cost him his life. When Pippin died, Willibrord found a supporter in his son Charles Martel, who, according to Alcuin's version of the story, established the bishop in Utrecht upon Radbod's death (719). At this time he was assisted for three years in his missionary work by St Boniface (719- 722). Of the later years of his life we have no special chronological details. He passed throughout his diocese on horseback, working petty miracles and prophetically anticipating the future glory of Charles's son Pippin at his baptism. He was still living when Bede wrote in 731. A passage in one of Boniface's letters to Stephen III. speaks of his preaching to the Frisians for fifty years, apparently reckoning from the

time of his consecration. This would fix the date of his death in 738; and, as Alcuin tells us he was eighty-one years old when he died, it may be inferred that he was born in 657,—a theory on which all the dates given above are based, though it must be added that they are substantially confirmed by the inci- dental notices of Bede. The day of his death was 6th November, and his body was buried in the monastery of Epternac, which he had himself founded. Even in Alecuin's time miracles were reported to be still wrought at his tomb.

The chief authorities for Willibrord's life are Alenin's Vita Willi- brordi, both in prose and in verse, and Bede's Hist. Eccl., v. ce. 9-11. See also Eddius's Vita Wilfridit.

WILLIMANTIC, a borough in the town of Windham, Windham county, Connecticut, United States, is situated in a broken hilly country, on the Westfield river and on three railway lines,—the New York and New England, the New York, New Haven, and Hartford, and the Central Vermont. The population in 1880 was 6608. The indus- tries consist chiefly of cotton manufactures, in which the town has acquired great prominence, owing to the fine water power afforded by the Westfield river.

WILLIS, NarHanret Parker (1806-1867), American author, was descended from George Willis, described as a '"' Puritan of considerable distinction," who arrived in New England about 1630 and settled in Cambridge, Mass. Nathaniel Parker was the eldest son and second child of Nathaniel Willis, a newspaper proprietor in Boston, and was born in Portland, Maine, 20th January 1806. After attending Boston grammar school and the academy at Andover, he entered Yale College in October 1823. Although he did not specially distinguish himself as a student, university life had considerable influence in the development of his character, and furnished him with much of his literary material. Immediately after leaving Yale he published in 1827 a volume of Poetical Sketches, which attracted some attention, although the critics found in his verses more to blame than to praise. It was followed by Fugitive Poetry (1829) and Poems (1831). He also con- tributed frequently to magazines and periodicals. In 1829 he started the American Monthly Magazine, which was continued from April of that year to August 1831, but failed to

achieve success. On its discontinuance he went to Europe as foreign editor and correspondent of the Vew York Mirror. To this journal he contributed a series of letters, which, under the title Pencillings by the Way, were

088

published at London in 1835 (3 vols.; Philadelphia, 1836, 2 vols.; and first complete edition, New York, 1841). Their vivid and rapid sketches of scenes and modes of life in the Old World at once gained them a wide popularity ; but he was censured by some critics for indiscretion in reporting conversations in private gatherings. Notwithstanding, however, the small affectations and fopperies which were his besetting weaknesses as a man as well as an author, the grace, ease, and artistic finish of his style won general recognition. His Slingsby Papers, containing descriptions of American life and adventure, republished in 1836 under the title Inklings of Adventure, were as successful in England as were his Pencillings by the Way in America. He also published while in England Melaine and Other Poems (London, 1835 ; New York, 1837), which was introduced by a preface by Barry Cornwall. After his marriage to Mary Stace, daughter of General Stace of Woolwich, he returned to America, and settled at a small estate on Oswego Creek, just above its junction with the Susquehanna. Here he lived off and on from 1837 to 1842 and wrote Letters from Under a Bridge (1840), the most charming of all his works. During a short visit to England in 1839-40 he published Two Ways of Dying for a Husband. Returning to New York, he established, along with George P. Morris, a news- paper entitled the Evening Mirror. On the death of his wife in 1845 he again visited England. Returning to America in the spring of 1846, he again married, and established the Vational Press, afterwards named the Home Journal. In 1845 he published Dashes at Life, in 1846 a collected edition of his Prose and Poetical Works, in 1849 Rural Letters, and in 1850 Life Here and There. In the

last-mentioned year he settled at Idlewild, and on account |

of failing health spent the remainder of his life chiefly in retirement. Among his later works were Hurrygraphs, 1851; Outdoors at Idlewild,

1854; Ragbag, 1855; Pearl Fane, 1856 ; and the Convalescent, 1859. He died 20th July 1867, and was buried in Mount Auburn, Boston.

His Poems, with memoir, appeared in 1867, an English edition of his Poems in 1868, and a Selection from his Prose Writings, edited by Henry A. Beers, New York, 1885. His Life, by Henry A. Beers, appeared in the series of American Men of Letters the same year.

WILLIS, Tomas (1621-1675), English physician, was born at Great Bedwin, Wiltshire, on 27th January 1621. He studied at Christ Church, Oxford ; and when that city was garrisoned for the king he bore arms for the Royalists. He took the degree of bachelor of medicine in 1646, and after the surrender of the garrison applied himself to the practice of his profession. In 1660, shortly after the Restoration, he became Sedleian professor of natural philo- sophy in place of Dr Joshua Cross, who was ejected, and the same year he took the degree of doctor of physic. In 1664 he discovered the medicinal spring at Astrop, near Brackley in Northamptonshire. He was one of the first members of the Royal Society, and was elected an honorary fellow of the Royal College of Physicians in 1664. In 1666, after the fire of London, he removed to Westminster, on the in- vitation of Dr Sheldon, archbishop of Canterbury. There he rapidly acquired an extensive practice, his reputation and skill marking him out as one of the first physicians of his time. He died at St Martin's on 11th November 1675 and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

_ Willis was admired for his piety and charity, for his deep insight into natural and experimental philosophy, anatomy, and chemistry and for the elegance and purity of his Latin style. He wrote in English A Plain and Easy Method Jor Preserving those that are Well from the Infection of the Plague, and Sor Curing such as are Infected. His Latin works were printed in two vols, 4to at Geneva in 1676, and at Amsterdam in 1682. His grandson, Browne Willis,

was the author of several antiquarian works,

See Munk, Roll of the Royal Col Physici i Deedes rey oy ge of Physicians, London (2a ed., vol. i.,

_ WILLMORE, James Tresrrts (1800-1863), English line engraver, was born at Bristnall's End, Handsworth,

near Birmingham, on 15th September 1800. At the age of fourteen he was apprenticed to William Radcliffe, a Birmingham engraver, and in 1823 he went to London and was employed for three years by Charles Heath. He was afterwards engaged upon the plates of Brockedon's Passes of the Alps and Turner's England and Wales. He engraved after Chalon, Leitch, Stanfield, Landseer, East- lake, Creswick, and Ansdell, and especially after Turner, from whose Alnwick Castle by Moonlight, the Old Témé- raire, Mercury and Argus, Ancient Rome, and the sub- jects of the Rivers of France he executed many admirable plates. He was elected an associate engraver of the Royal Academy in 1843. He died on 12th March 1863. WILLOW (Salix), a very well marked genus of plants constituting, with the Poplar (Populus), the order Salica- cex. Willows are trees or shrubs, varying in stature from a few inches to a hundred feet, and occurring most abund- antly in cold or temperate climates in both hemispheres, and generally in moist situations. They are not unrepre- sented in the tropics, but have hitherto not been discovered in Australia or the South Sea Islands. Their leaves are deciduous, alternate, simple, generally much more long than broad, whence the term willow-leaved has become proverbial. At their base they are provided with stipules, which are also modified to form the scales investing the winter buds. The flowers are borne in catkins or amenta, which are on one tree male only, on another female. Each

(1) Leaf shoot ; (2) male catkin ; (3) male flower; (4) female catkin ; (5) female flower ; (6) capsule, opened ; (7) seed.

Willow.

male flower consists of a small scale or bract, in whose axil are usually two, sometimes three, rarely five stamens, and still more rarely a larger number. In addition there is a small glandular disk, which assumes different shapes in different species. The female flowers are equally simple, consisting of a bract, from whose axil arises usually a very short

stalk, surmounted by two carpels adherent one to the other for their whole length, except that the upper ends of the styles are separated into two stigmas. When ripe the two carpels separate in the form of two valves and liberate a large number of seeds, each provided at the base with a tuft of silky hairs, and containing a straight embryo with- out any investing perisperm or albumen. Fertilization is effected by insects, especially by bees, which are directed in their search by the colour and fragrance of the flowers.

Some pollen must also be transported by the wind to the female flowers. The tuft of hairs at the base of the seed doubtless facilitates rapid dispersion of the seed, early germination of which is rendered desirable owing to its tenuity and the absence of any perisperm. Although the limitations of the genus are well marked, and its recogni- tion in consequence easy, it is otherwise with regard to the species. The greatest difference of opinion exists among botanists as to their number and the bounds to be assigned to each. The cross-fertilization that takes place between the species of course intensifies the difficulty. Andersson, a Swede, spent nearly a quarter of a century in their investigation, and ultimately published a monograph which is the standard authority on the subject. He admits about a hundred species. Some botanists have enumerated eighty species from Great Britain alone, while others count only a dozen or fifteen. To illustrate the great perplexity surrounding the subject, we may mention that to one species, S. nigricans, one hundred and twenty synonyms have been attached. Some of these are doubtless such as no botanist, with adequate material for forming an opinion, would accept ; but, after making the necessary deductions for actual mistakes and misstatements, there still remains a large number upon which legitimate differences of opinion prevail. Andersson says that he has rarely seen two speci- mens of this species which were alike in the collective characters offered by the stature, foliage, and catkins. No better example could be found of the almost limitless varia- tion in so-called species, so that the attempt to define the indefinable can at best result only in an arbitrary grouping.

Few genera have greater claims to notice from an economic point of view. As timber trees many of the species are valuable from their rapidity of growth and for the production of light durable wood, serviceable for many purposes. Among the best trees of this kind are S. fragilis, especially the variety known as S. fragilis, var. Russelliana, and S. alba, the white or Huntingdon willow. These trees are usually found growing by rivers' banks or in other moist situations, and are generally pollarded for the purposc of securing a crop of straight poles. This plan is, however, objection- able, as inducing decay in the centre of the trunk. Where poles are required, it is better to treat the trees as coppice and to cut the trunk level with the soil. S&. Capra, a hedgerow tree, generally grows in drier situations. It is a useful timber tree, and its wood, like that of S. alba, is prized in the manufacture of charcoal. Its catkins are collected in England in celebration of Palm Sunday, the gaily-coloured flowers being available in early spring when other decorations of the kind are scarce. Certain sorts of willow are largely used for basket-making and wicker-work. The species employed for this purpose are mostly of shrubby habit, and are known under the collective name of osiers. The best for planting, according to Mr Scaling, is the bitter osier, S. purpurea ; planted on rich, well-drained soil, subject to occasional immersion, this willow may be grown profitably for basket-work. It is also well adapted for forming wind-breaks or screens, or for holding the banks of streams and preventing the removal of the soil by the current. . viminalis is one of the best of the green osiers, suitable for hoops and valuable for retaining the soil on sloping embank- ments. SS. vitellina yields the yellow osiers. Osiers are largely imported into England from Belgium and France, but might with advantage be much more abundantly grown in the United King- dom than they are. They are easily propagated by truncheons or cuttings, inserted in a slanting direction into the soil for a depth of 8 to 10 inches. Mr Scaling recommends that they be planted 18 inches apart, thus employing about 20,000 cuttings per acre, the whole cost of planting being estimated at £25 the acre. A crop is obtained the third year after planting, and one may be expected annually for the succeeding ten years. The average yield is cited at 6 to 74 tons, ranging in price from £2, 10s. to £3, 10s. a ton (unpeeled), Land unsuitable for root or grain crops can be utilized for the growth of osiers ; but, as in the case of all other plants, good cultivation, including the selection of sorts appropriate to the

locality, drainage, manure, &c., ensures the best return. S. acwmi- nata and other species do well by the seaside, and are serviceable as wind-screens, nurse-trees, and hedges. S. daphnoides, S. repens, and other dwarf kinds are useful for binding heathy or sandy soil.

In addition to their use for timber or basket-making, willows con- .

tain a large quantity of tannin in their bark. A bitter principle named SALICIN (q.v.) is also extracted from the bark. As orna- mental trees some willows also take a high rank, The white willow

589

is a great favourite, while the drooping habit of the weeping willow renders it very attractive. Though named S. babylonica, it is really a native of China, the willow of the Euphrates (Ps. cxxxvii.) being in all probability Populus euphratica. SS. babylonica is sometimes spoken of' as Pope's willow, having been cultivated by that poct, or as Napoleon's willow, because his tomb at St Helena is overshadowed by a tree of this species, from which many offsets exist or are reputed to exist in modern gardens. 8. regalis has very white, silvery leaves. S. rosmarinifolia is remarkable for its very narrow leaves, —purplish above, silvery beneath.

WILLUGHBY, Francis (1635-1672), English orni- thologist and ichthyologist, who is memorable as the pupil, friend, and patron as well as the active and original co- worker of John Ray (g.v.), and hence to be reckoned as one of the most important precursors of Linneus. He was the son of Sir Francis Willughby, and was born in 1635, His connexion with Ray dated from his studies at Cambridge (1653-59) ; and, after concluding his academic life by a brief sojourn at Oxford, and acquiring consider- able experience of travel in England, he made an exten- sive Continental tour in his company. The specimens, figures, and notes thus accumulated were in great part elaborated on his return into his Ornithologia, which, how- ever, he did not live to publish, having injured a naturally delicate constitution by alternate exposure and over-study. This work was published in 1676, and translated by Ray as the Ornithology of Fr. Willughby (London, 1678, fol.) ; the same friend

published his Historia Piscium (1686, fol.). Willughby died on 3d July 1672.

In Ray's preface to the former work he gives Willughby much of the credit usually assigned to himself, both as critic and system- atist. Thus, while founding on Gesner and Aldrovandus, he omitted their irrelevancies, being careful to exclude " hieroglyphics, emblems, morals, fables, presages, or ought else pertaining to divinity, ethics, grammar, or any sort of humane learning, and present him [the reader] with what properly belongs only to natural history." Again, he not only devised artificial keys to his species and genera, but, "that he might clear up all these obscurities [of former writers] and render the knowledge and distinction of species facile to all that should come after, he bent his endeavours mainly to find out certain characteristic notes of each kind," while finally, in apologizing for his engravings, he yet not unjustly claims that "they are best and truest of any hitherto graven in brass." See further ORNITHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 4.

WILMINGTON, the largest city of the State of Dela- ware, United States, and the county seat of New Castle county, is situated between Brandywine and Christiana creeks and near the Delaware river. The site is low, but with sufficient slope to afford suitable drainage. The surrounding country is level and fertile, and is devoted mainly to agriculture and manufactures. Wilmington is a railway centre of considerable importance, being entered by the Philadelphia, Wilmington, and Baltimore,: the Baltimore and Ohio, and the Wilmington and Northern Railways. The Brandywine and Christiana creeks are navigable for vessels of light draught, and the Delaware can float vessels of the largest size and affords ample harbour accommodation. The city is laid out quite regu- larly. The population, which in 1870 was 30,841, in 1880 was 42,478, The manufactures in 1880 gave occupation to 7852 persons, the principal branches being the manufac- ture of paper and of iron and steel, shipbuilding, and waggon and carriage making. The trade of the city is inconsiderable.

Wilmington was settled by Swedes in 1638. The settlement was conquered by the Dutch, who in turn handed it over to the English. It was chartered

as a city in 1832, and since the middle of the century has grown rapidly.

WILMINGTON, the county seat of New Hanover county, North Carolina, United States, the principal sea- port and the largest city of the State, is situated on the east bank of Cape Fear river, 30 miles from the ocean. It has railroad communication to the north, south, and west, and this, together with its maritime position, makes it an important shipping point. The principal objects of trade

are lumber (southern pine), naval stores, and cotton. The value of its exports by sea exceeds $4,000,000 annually. The city, which is in the main regularly laid out, had in 1870 a population of 13,446, and in 1880 of 17,350, of whom 60 per cent. were Negroes.

The site of Wilmington was originally occupied by a town named Newton, laid out in 1733. The name was changed to Wilmington six years later. The place was incorporated as a city in 1866. During the Civil War it was the principal port of entry for the Confederate blockade-runners.

WILMOT, Joun. See Rocuzsrer, Earu oF.

WILNO. See Vina.

WILSON, Atexanper (1766-1813), 'the American ornithologist," was born in Paisley, Scotland, on 6th July 1766. His father, a handloom weaver, soon removed to the country, and there combined weaving with agriculture, distilling, and smuggling,—conditions which no doubt helped to develop in the boy that love of rural pursuits and adventure which was to determine his career. At first he was placed with a tutor and destined for the church; but his father's circumstances soon compelled him to apprentice the boy to his own trade. 'The lad's real life, however, was spent in reverie and versification, and in long woodland rambles, in the course of which he combined his poetic musings with the keen observation of a naturalist, supplemented by the woodcraft of an accomplished poacher. As these tastes developed, he decided to exchange the loom for the pedlar's pack, and then spent a year or two in travelling

through Scotland, recording in his journal every matter of. natural history or antiquarian interest, like another Sibbald or White of Selborne. Having incurred a short imprisonment for lampooning the master-weavers in a trade dispute, he emigrated to America in 1794. After a few years of weaving, peddling, and desultory observation, he became a village schoolmaster, and in 1800 obtained an appointment near Philadelphia, where he formed the acquaintance of Bartram the naturalist, from whom he received much instruction and encourage-ment. Under his influence Wilson commenced to draw birds, having conceived the idea of illustrating the orni- thology of the United States; and thenceforward he steadily accumulated materials and made many expeditions. In 1806 he obtained the assistant-editorship of Rees's Encyclo- pzdia, and thus acquired more means and leisure for his great work, the first volume of which appeared in the autumn of 1808, after which he spent the winter in a journey "in search of birds and subscribers." By the spring of 1813 seven volumes had appeared; but the arduous expedition of that summer, in search of the marine waterfowl to which the remaining volume was to be de- voted, gave a shock to his already impaired health, and soon after he succumbed to dysentery after a short illness, dying at Philadelphia on 23d August 1813.

Of his poems, not cxcepting the Foresters (Philadelphia, 1805), nothing need now be said, save that they no doubt served to develop his descriptive powers. His American Ornithology, however, re- mains a fundamental classic. In the words of Jardine, "He was the first who studied the birds of North America in their natural abodes and from real observation ; and his work will remain an ever to be admired testimony of enthusiasm and perseverance, one certainly unrivalled in description ; and, if some plates and illustra- tions may vie with it in finer workmanship or pictorial splendour, few indeed can rival it in fidelity and truth of delineation." The eighth and ninth volumes were edited after his decease by his friend Ord, and the work was continued by Lucien Bonaparte (4 vols., Philadelphia, 1828-33). The American Ornithology was also repub- lished by Sir William Jardine (3 vols., London, 1832), and an edi- tion of his entire works has been edited by Rev. A. B. Grosart (Paisley, 1876). A statue was also erected to him at Paisley in 1876,

WILSON, Frorence. See Vonusenvs.

WILSON, Hzyry (1812-1875), vice-president of the United States from 1873 to 1875, was born at Farmington, N.H., on 16th February 1812. His proper name was Jeremiah J. Colbath. His parents were day-labourers and

very poor. Atten years of age he went to work as a farm- labourer. The boy was greedy for reading, and before the end of his apprenticeship had read more than a thousand volumes. At the age of twenty-one, for some unstated reason, he had his name changed by Act of the Legislature to that of Henry Wilson. Walking to Natick, Mass., he learned the trade of shoemaker, and by it supported himself through the Concord academy. After successfully estab- lishing himself as a shoe manufacturer, he became a noted public speaker in support of Harrison during the presi- dential election of 1840. For the next ten years he was regularly returned to the State legislature. In 1848 he left the Whig party and became a "Free Soiler." The Free Soil party nominated him for governor of the State in 1853, but he was defeated. In 1855 he was sent to the United States Senate by the Free Soil and Democratic parties, and remained there by re-elections until 1873. When the Civil War broke out he found a severe test awaiting him. He had been deeply interested from 1840 until 1850 in the militia of his State, and had risen through its grades of service to that of brigadier-general. He was now made chairman of the military committee, and in this position performed most laborious and important work for the four years of the war. The position offered boundless and safe opportunities for becoming wealthy. But so far was Wilson from using them that he died poor, owing to his necessary neglect of his private affairs. Sumner says that in 1873 Wilson was obliged to borrow a hundred dollars from him to meet the expenses of his inauguration as vice-president. The Republicans nomi- nated Wilson for the vice-presidency in 1872, and he was elected ; but he died, before completing his term of service, at Washington on 22d November 1875. He left two small but useful works, Anti-Slavery Measures in Congress (Boston, 1864) and Military Measures in Congress (Hart- ford, 1868), and a larger work in

three volumes, The Rise and Fall of the Slave Power in America (Boston, 1871-76). His Lafe has been written by E. Nason and by J. B. Mann.

WILSON, Horacze Hayman (1786-1860), one of the most distinguished Orientalists of England, was born in London on 26th September 1786. He was educated for the medical profession, and on completing his studies went out to India in 1808 as an assistant-surgeon on the Bengal establishment of the East India Conipany. Instead of entering the regular medical service, however, his know- ledge of chemistry and the practical analysis of metals caused him to be attached to the mint at Calcutta, where he was for a time associated with John Leyden, the Scottish poet and Orientalist. It was not long before he himself became deeply interested in the ancient language and litera- ture of India, and attracted the attention of Henry T. Colebrooke, the famous Sanskrit scholar, on whose recom- mendation he was in 1811 appointed secretary to the Asiatic Society of Bengal. In 1813 he published the Sanskrit text —with a graceful, if somewhat free, translation in English rhymed verse—of Kalidasa's charming lyrical poem, the Meghadiita, or Cloud-Messenger (2d ed. 18438, 3d ed. 1867). He then undertook the arduous task of preparing the first Sanskrit-English Dictionary from materials compiled by native scholars for the college of Fort William, supple- mented by his own researches. The work appeared in 1819, prefaced with an excellent general survey of Sanskrit lexicology. A second, much enlarged, edition, but without the introduction, was published in 1832, and has recently been reprinted at Calcutta. The appearance of the Dic- tionary at once placed Wilson in the first rank of Sanskrit scholars ; and, while patiently pursuing his study of the writings and institutions of ancient India, he became one of the most valuable contributors to the Asiatic Researches and the Caleutta Quarterly. Among his more important

Wills ON

contributions to these journals may be mentioned essays on the 'Medical and Surgical Sciences of the Hindus" (1823); the "Hindu History of Kashmir" (1824); "Hindu Fiction" (1825); and his masterly "Account of the Re- ligious Sects of the Hindus, their History, Doctrines, and Practices" (1828-32). In 1827 he published Select Speci- mens of the

Theatre of the Hindus, in 3 vols., in which, besides a very full and highly appreciative survey of Indian dramaturgy, which still remains the standard authority on the subject, he offered elegant translations of six complete plays and short accounts of twenty-three others. This work was reprinted in London in 1835, in 2 vols., and again in Wilson's Collected Works (vols. xi. and xii.) Of considerable importance, alike to Sanskrit and vernacular students, and to Eastern antiquarians generally, was his next publication, the Mackenzie Collection (2 vols., 1828 ; 2d ed. in one vol., 1882), being a descriptive catalogue of the extensive collection of Oriental, especially South Indian, MSS. and antiquities made by Col. Colin Mackenzie, and purchased from his widow by the Indian Governnient, now deposited partly in the India Office, London, and partly at Madras. Neither his extensive literary researches, how- ever, nor the official duties of an assay master and mint secretary, at any time prevented Wilson from taking a pro- minent part in all social amusements of the Anglo-Indian community of Calcutta, especially in musical and theatrical entertainments. His interest in political and economic affairs in India is shown by his Historical Sketch of the First Burmese War, with Documents, Political and Geo- graphical (1827, reprinted in London), and his Review of the External Commerce of Bengal from 1818 to 1828 (1830), as well as by his History of British India from 1805 to 1835, in continuation of Mill's History, 3 vols. (1844-48), and largely based on his personal impressions and recollections. He also acted for many years as secre- tary to the committee of public instruction. As such, he not only organized and superintended the studies of the Hindu College from the time of its establishment, but took a leading part in the promotion of public education among the natives, and the introduction of the English language and European science, although, as one of the staunchest opponents, on grounds of expediency and feasibleness, of the proposal that English should be made the sole medium of instruction in native schools, he became for a time the object of bitter attacks. Long, however, before this con- troversy came to an end he had been called away to a different sphere of scholarly activity. In 1832 the uni- versity of Oxford, in recognition of his services to Oriental scholarship, selected Dr Wilson to be the first occupant of the newly founded Boden chair of Sanskrit. Shortly after his return to England he was also appointed librarian to the East India Company. He now found himself in a position singularly

favourable to learned research and literary pursuits; and the long record of his subsequent work shows that he made the best of his opportunities. He immediately joined the Royal Asiatic Society, and, succeeding Colebrooke as director (in 1837), he was the very soul of the society up to the time of his death, scarcely a number of its journal appearing. without some interest- ing contribution from his pen. His death took place at London on 8th May 1860.

Of these contributions we need only mention here his " Historical Sketch of the Kingdom of Pandya" (1836), based on documents con- tained in the Mackenzie collection ; the continuation of his " Ana- lysis of the Puranas" (1836), begun in the Bengal Socicty's Joyrnal (1832) ; "Civil and Religious Institutions of the Sikhs" and " Re- ligious Festivals of the Hindus" (1848); "Analysis and Revised Translation of the Rock Inscriptions of Kapur di Giri" (1850); and his popular lecture "On the Present State of the Cultivation of Oriental Literature" (1852). Hardly less numerous, and certainly not less valuable, are his separate publications during this period, by which important light was thrown on many departments of

Eastern inquiry. The most noteworthy of these works are the text of, and commentary on, the Sankhyakarika (1837), being a very popular summary of the Sankhya philosophy, with a translation (of the text by Colebrooke, and the commentary by Wilson) ; trans- lation of the Vishnu Purdna (1840, 2d annotated ed. by F. E. Hall; Works, vols. vi.~~x.); Ariana Antiqua, Antiquities and Coins of Afghanistan (1841); edition of Dasakwmaracharita (1846); Gloss~~ ary of Indian Revenue, Judicial, &c., Terms (1855) ; Translation of the First Four Ashtakas (rather more than one-half) of the Sacred Hymns of the Ligveda, 3 vols., 1850-57; Grammar of the Sanskrit Lan- guage, in several editions ; and two lectures on the Religious Practices and Opinions of the Hindus, delivered at Oxford in 1840. In tlic Collected Works (12 vols.) the more valuable of his papers and lec- tures form three volumes of essays on Sanskrit Literature and two volumes of essays on The Religion of the Hindus, edited by Dr R. Rost. While in point of accurate scholarship Wilson was per- haps

scarcely the equal of Colebrooke, any deficiency in this respect is far more than counterbalanced by the many-sidedness of his genius, by literary powers of a very high order, by his admirable artistic taste, and by broad human sympathies, which enabled him fully to appreciate and enjoy the merits and beauties of the ancient Indian literature. A considerable number of Sanskrit MSS. (540 vols.) collected by Wilson in India are now in the Bodleian.

WILSON, Joun (1785-1854), better known as Curisto- PHER Norra (the pen-name which he used in his contvi- butions to Blackwood's Magazine), was born at Paisley on 18th May 1785. His father, who bore the same name with himself, was a wealthy gauze manufacturer of no particular family or education. His mother, Margaret Sym, was of gentler blood, possessing also beauty and talents. John was the fourth child, but the eldest son, and he had nine brothers and sisters.1 He appears, like many Scotchmen of genius, to have been rather irregularly educated in his earlier days,—the best of his physical and sporting, if not of his scholastic, training being received at the manse of the village of Mearns, of which constant notices appear in the Hssays. He was only twelve when he was first entered at the university of Glasgow, and he continued to attend various classes in that university for six years, being for the most part domiciled with and under the tutorship of Prof. Jardine. His father's death had immediately preceded his first entry at Glasgow. In these six years Wilson "made himself " in all ways, acquiring not inconsiderable scholar- ship, perfecting himself in all sports and exercises, and falling in love with a certain '" Margaret," who was the object of his affections for several years. The most curious literary memorial of these early years is a letter to Words- worth, written in 1802 without any personal acquaintance or introduction, and betraying not a little priggishness, as we should now count it, but in that respect only showing the difference of contemporary manners, and interesting as being the first evidence of what was nearly a lifelong connexion of admiring though sometimes recalcitrant criticism.

In June 1803 Wilson was entered as a gentleman commoner at Magdalen College, Oxford. Men have seldom felt more than Wilson the charm which Oxford exercises on all but a very few, and generally (with some noteworthy exceptions, such as Gibbon and Jeffrey) very worthless, sons ;

and in much of his later work, notably in the essay called "Old North and Young North," he has expressed his feeling. But it does not appear that his Magdalen days were altogether happy, though he perfected himself in "bruising," pedestrianism, and other sports, and read so as to obtain a brilliant first class. His love affairs with "Margaret" did not go happily, and he seems to have made no intimate friends at his own college and few in the university. He took his degree in 1807 and found himself at twenty-two his own master; and he had a good

1 The youngest brother was James Wilson " of Woodville" (1795- 1856), who became a Zoologist of some repute. He contributed to Blackwood's Magazine and to the North British and Quarterly Reviews, and wrote most of the articles on natural history (" Entomology,"

'¢ Welminthology," " Mammalia," ' Ornithology," " Reptiles," &c.) in the seventh cdition of the Encyclopedia Britannica.*

income, no father or guardian to control him, no property requiring management, and apparently was not under the influence of the etiquette which in similar circumstances generally makes it necessary for a young man to adopt some profession, if only in name. His profession was an estate on Windermere called Elleray, and ever since iniperishably connected with his name. Here he built, boated, wrestled, shot, fished, walked (he was always an astonishing pedes- trian), and otherwise diverted himself for four years, besides composing or collecting fron previous compositions a con- siderable volume of poems. But Wilson was too genuine a man to be happy without a wife, and in 1810 the place of "Margaret " was taken by Jane Penny, a Liverpool girl of some family and fortune, whom he married on 11th May 1811. Zhe Isle of Palms, his first published volume, consisting of poems, was issued not long after this. Four years of married life at Elleray succeeded, which, except as being happier and therefore less historied, do not seem to have differed much from the earlier four. Then came the event which definitely made a working man of letters of Wilson, and without which he would probably have produced a few volumes of verse and nothing more. His whole fortune, or at least the major part of it, was lost by the dishonest

speculation of an uncle in whose hands, with no doubt rather culpable carelessness, Wilson had left it. At the same time this hard fate was by no means unquali- fied in its hardness, His mother had a house in Edin- burgh, in which she was able and willing to receive her son and his family ; nor had he even to give up Elleray, though henceforward he was not able constantly to reside init. He read law and was called to the Scotch bar, taking plentiful sporting and pedestrian excursions, on some of which his wife accompanied him, publishing in 1816 a second volume of poems (Zhe City of the Plague), and generally leading a very pleasant life, if not such an entirely independent one as formerly. The year 1817 was the turning point in Wilson's life. The famous Cevallos article, which resulted in the secession of Scott and other Tories from the Hdinburgh Review and the establishment of the Quarterly, was years earlier; but there had still been no formal declaration that the "Blue and Yellow" was for Whigs only. Wilson was a Tory and the son of Tories ("If you turn Whig, John," said his mother to him, "this house will not hold you and me"), but he was glad to accept Jeffrey's invitation to contribute. Almost at the same time, however, a far more suitable chance appeared. Wilson was not patient of being edited, and his reckless humour as well as his political bias would in the long run have pretty certainly disqualified him for the Edinburgh. The growth of Blackwood's Magazine, and its sudden trans- formation from a colourless or Whiggish monthly rival to Constable's Review into an organ at once of the most red-hot Toryism in politics and of the wildest irreverence towards received notions in literature and other matters, took place in the same year. The petard of the "'Chaldee Manuscript," nominally due to Hogg, but with most of the gunpowder put in by Wilson and Lockhart, determined the character of the new periodical, and Wilson's career was fixed. He was never exactly editor, for the powers of ' Christopher North" in that respect were a fantastic imagination 3 and we have definite and authoritative assertions, not only that he never received any stipend for editing, but that the pub- lishers always retained a certain supervision even over Wilson's own contributions. The famous series of the Noctes Ambrosianz is said to have been of Maginn's inven- tion, and for nearly ten years was so very partially representa- tive of Wilson's own work and thought that none of its numbers during that time have been included by his son-in- law in the

authorized, but by no means complete, edition. Lockhart, a somewhat less genial but far more concentrated

we Las ON

and deliberate writer, was, until his departure for London to take charge of the Quarterly, at least as potent in the management as Wilson ; and, although the facts are not known with absolute certainty, thereis no doubt that it was a daring "alarum and excursion" of Lockhart's, under the alias (one of many) of Baron von Lauerwinkel, which caused Jeffrey, nominally because of an attack on Prof. Playfair, but obviously for other reasons, to inform Wilson, almost in so many words, that his further contributions were not desired for the Ldinburgh. Wilson had also some share—though, if internal evidence may be trusted, not much—in Lockhart's Peter's Letters, which, harmless as they seem nowadays, infuriated the Whig society of the Scottish capital.

The first result of this new business on Wilson's general mode of life was that he left his mother's house and estab- lished himself (1819) in Ann Street, Edinburgh, on his own account with his wife and family of five children. The second was much more unlooked for: it was his candidature for and election to the chair of moral philo- sophy in the university of Edinburgh (1820). To speak honestly, his qualifications for the post were almost nil, even if the fact that the best qualified man in Great Britain, Sir William Hamilton, was also a candidate, be left out of the question. But, luckily for Wilson and for letters, the matter was made a political one; the Tories still had a majority in the town council; he was power- fully backed up by friends, Scott at their head; and his adversaries played into his hands by attacking, not his competence (which, as has been said, was very vulnerable), but his moral character, which was not open to any fair reproach. Yet he made a very excellent professor, never perhaps attaining to any great scientific knowledge in his subject or power of expounding it, but acting on generation after generation of students with a stimulating force that is far more valuable than the most exhaustive knowledge of a particular topic. His duties left him plenty of time for magazine work, and for many years his contributions to blackwood were extraordinarily voluminous. Most of the best and best-known of them appeared between 1825 and 1835, that is, between the departure of Lockhart for London in the former year and the death of Blackwood the publisher and of Mrs Wilson in the latter.

The domestic events of Wilson's life in the last thirty years of it may be very briefly told. He oscillated between Edinburgh and Elleray, with plentiful excursions and summer residences elsewhere, a sea trip on board the Experimental Squadron in the Channel during the summer of 1832, and a few other unimportant diversions. The death of his wife was an exceedingly severe blow to him, especially as it coincided very nearly with that of his friend Blackwood. For many years after it (though he never up to the date of his death gave up writing) his literary work was intermittent, and, with some exceptions, not up to the level of the earlier. Late in 1850 his health showed definite signs of breaking up ; and in the next year a civil list pension of £300 a year was conferred on him. He died at Edinburgh on 3d April 1854.

But a very small part of Wilson's extensive work was published in a collected and generally accessible form during his lifetime, the chief and almost sole exceptions being the two volumes of poems above referred to, the Lights and Shadows of Scottish Life (prose tales and sketches), and the Recreations of Christopher North, a selection, mostly limited to sporting and descriptive pieces, of his magazine articles. These volumes, with a selected edition of the Noctes Ambrosiane in four volumes, and of further essays, critical and imaginative, also in four volumes, were collected and re-issued uniformly after his death by his son-in-law, Prof. Ferrier. The collection is very far from exhaustive ; and, though it undoubtedly contains most of his best work and comparatively little that is not good, it has been complained, with some justice, that the characteristic, if rather immature, productions of his first eight years on Blackwood are almost entirely omitted, that the Noctes are

given but in part, if in their best part, and that at least three long, important, and interesting series of papers, less desultory than is his wont, on "Spenser," on " British Critics," and the set called ' Dies Boreales," have been left out altogether. Wilson's characteristics are, however, uniform enough, and the standard edition exhibits them sufficiently, if not exhaustively. His poems may be dismissed at once as little more than interesting. They would probably not have been written at all if he had not been a young man in the time of the full flood of influence of Coleridge, Wordsworth, Byron, and Scott. His prose tales have in some estimates stood higher, but will hardly survive the tests of universal criticism. It is as an essayist and critic of the most abounding geniality, if not genius, of great acuteness, of extraordinary eloqnence, and of a fervid and manifold sympathy, in which he has hardly an equal, that " Christo- pher North" lives and will live. The Noctes Ambrosianz, a series of convivial table-talk, giving occasion to wonderfully various digressions of criticism, description, and miscellaneous writing, have been of late years ranked far below their real value. From their origin it necessarily followed that there was much that is ephemeral, a certain amount that is purely local, and something that is purely trivial in them. But their dramatic force, their incessant flashes of happy thought and happy expression, their almost*

incomparable fulness of life, and their magnificent humour give them all but the highest place among genial and recreative literature. It is often thought, and sometimes said, that no one but a Scotchman can relish them—an utter mistake, against which it is desirable most ener- getically to testify in the name of lovers of them who have not a drop of Scottish blood in their veins. The same qualities, together with a greater share of purely literary and critical power (to the display of which the form of the Noctes was inimical), and of a sometimes abused but very admirable faculty of word-painting, appear in the miscellaneous essays. Wilson's defects lay in the directions of measure and of taste properly so called, that is to say, of the modification of capricious likes and dislikes by reason and principle. He is constantly exaggerated, boisterous, wanting in refinement. But these are the almost necessary defects of his qualities of enthusiasm, eloquence, and generous feeling. The well- known adaptation of phrase in which he not recanted but made up for numerous earlier attacks on Leigh Hunt, "the Animosities are mortal, but the Humanities live for ever," shows him as a writer at his very best, but not without a little characteristic touch of grandiosity and emphasis. As a literary critic, as a sportsman, as a lover of nature, and as a convivial humorist, he is not to be shown at equal advantage in miniature ; but almost any volume of his miscellaneous works will exhibit him at full length in either capacity or in all.

The chief, if not the sole, authentic source of information for Wilson's life is the memoir by his daughter, Mrs Gordon (Edinburgh, 1862). (G. SA.)

WILSON, Ricwarp (1714-1782), English landscape painter, was born at Penegoes, Montgomeryshire, where his father was a clergyman, on Ist August 1714. His early taste for art was observed by a relative of his mother, Sir George Wynne, who in 1729 sent him to London to study under Thomas Wright, a little-known portrait painter of the time, by whom he was instructed for six years. He then started on his own account, and was soon in a good practice. Among his commissions was a full-length of the prince of Wales and the duke of York, painted for their tutor, the bishop of Norwich. Examples of his portraits may be studied in Greenwich Hospital, in the Garrick Club, and in various private collections. In 1749 Wilson visited Italy, where he spent six years. He had

previously executed some landscapes, but it was now that the advice of Zuccarelli and Joseph Vernet decided him to adopt this department of art exclusively. He studied Claude and Poussin, but retained his own individuality, and produced some admirable views of Rome and the Campagna. In 1755 he returned to England, and became one of the first of English landscape painters. Niobe, one of his most powerful works, was exhibited at the Society of Artists in 1760. On the establishment of the Royal Academy in 1768 he was appointed one of the original members, and he was a regular contributor to its exhibi- tions till 1780. He frequently executed replicas of his more important subjects, repeating some of them several times; in the figures which he introduced in his land- scapes he was occasionally assisted by Mortimer and Hay- man. During his lifetime his landscapes were never widely popular; his temper was consequently embittered

by neglect, and so impoverished was he that he was obliged to seclude himself in an obscure, half-furnished room in Tottenham Court Road, London. In 1776, however, he obtained the post of librarian to the Academy ; and by the death of a brother he acquired a small property near Llanferras, Denbighshire, to which he retired to spend his last days, and where he died suddenly in May 1782. After his death his fame increased, and in 1814 about seventy of his works were exhibited in the British Institu- tion. The National Gallery, London, contains nine of his landscapes.

The works of Wilson are skilled and learned compositions rather than direct transcripts from nature. His landscapes are treated with great breadth, and with a power of generalization which occa- sionally led to a disregard of detail. They are full of classical feeling and poetic sentiment ; they possess noble qualities of colour, and of delicate silvern tone ; and their handling is vigorous and easy,

the work of a painter who was thoroughly master of his materials.

See Studies and Designs by Richard Wilson, done at Rome in the year 1752 (Oxford, 1811); T. Wright, Some Account of the Life of Richard

Wilson (London, 1824) ; Thomas Hastings, Etchings from the Works of Richard Wilson, with some Memoirs of his Life (London, 1825). Many of Wilson's best works were repro- duced by Woollett and other engravers of the time.

WILTS, a south-western county of England, is bounded Plate

N.W. and N. by Gloucestershire, E. by Berks and Hants, S. by Hants and Dorset, and W. by Somerset. It is of an irregular oval form, its greatest length from north to south being 54 miles and its greatest breadth from east to west 37. The area is 866,677 acres, or about 1354 square miles.

About two-thirds of the surface of Wilts is occupied by Geology.

a great Chalk upland, embracing the greater part of the wild wooded tract of Cranborne Chase, the undulating elevation of Salisbury Plain, and the hilly district of the Marlborough Downs, with Savernake Forest. In some cases the Chalk rises into steep escarpments ; and the scenery of the north-western region, bordering on the lower ground, is varied and picturesque. A large portion of the Chalk region is over 600 feet above sea-level, and several summits have an elevation of over 900 feet, the highest being Inkpen Beacon (1011 feet) at the junction of Wilts, Hants, and Berks. Scattered over the surface of the northern downs are huge blocks of silicious Tertiary grits, called sarsen stones or grey wethers, which have been used in the formation of the Druidical circles of Stonehenge and Avebury. The underlying Greensand is exposed in the deep valleys of the Chalk, especially in the broad vale of Pewsey, separating the Marlborough Downs from Salisbury Plain. It also appears as a narrow fringe between the Chalk and Oolite formations on the north and west, and in Alfred's Tower near Stourton on the Somersetshire border reaches an elevation of 800 feet. Outliers of the London Clay cap some of the hills in the neighbourhood of Great and Little Bedwin and Savernake Forest; and the clays and sands of the Woolwich and Reading beds appear in the south-eastern extremity of the county. About a third of the surface of the county, to the north-west of the Chalk, including a portion of the White Horse Vale, consists mainly of Oolite limestones and clays resting chiefly on the Greensand. The Lower, Middle, and Upper varieties are all represented. At one time the fuller's earth of the Lower

Oolite was dug for use in the cloth-mills. In the Coral Rag of the Middle Oolite a useful bed of iron is wrought near Westbury, the annual output of ore varying in value from £12,000 to £20,000. The valuable Portland stone of the Upper Oolite is quarried for building purposes at Chilmark, Tisbury, and Swindon, and the famous Bath stone of the Great Oolite is obtained at Corsham and Box on the Somersetshire border. The Oolite yields a variety of interesting fossils: the pear encrinite (Apiocrinites rotundus) is found in the Bradford clay ; many fine corals are obtained in the Coral Rag; and Jsastrxa oblonga is

very plentiful at Tisbury. = XXIV. — 75

Rivers,

Agricul- ture.

Com- munica- tion.

Manu- faetures and trade.

594

One of the most charming features of Wilts is its rich and finely wooded valleys. The three principal rivers are the Kennet, the Lower or Bristol Avon, and the Southern or Christchurch Avon. The Kennet, rising in the Marl- borough Downs, winds eastwards past Marlborough and Hungerford into Berkshire, to join the Thames at Reading. The Lower Avon, which rises in Gloucestershire, flows southwards by Malmesbury, Chippenham, Melksham, and Bradford, where it bends north-westwards into Somerset- shire. Besides several smaller streams, it receives from the south the Frome, which forms for a short distance the boundary between Wilts and Somersetshire. The Southern Avon, which rises near Bishop's Cannings in the centre of the county, flows southwards by Amesbury and Salisbury into Hants. At Salisbury it receives from the west the Nadder, after its junction with the Wily at Wilton, and from the north-east the Bourne. The Thames skirts the north-eastern border of the county.

Agriculture.—According to returns made on 4th June 1887, the total area of land occupied was 759,538 acres, of which 646,653 were rented and 112,885 owned and occupied ; 759,412 acres, or about seven-eighths of the whole area, were under cultivation. Of this area 395,010 acres were permanent pasture, a great portion consisting of sheep-runs on the Chalk downs. In some places, especially in Salisbury Plain, tillage was in former years extensively introduced in the Chalk districts, but much of this has again re- verted to pasture. There were 174,876 acres under corn crops, 99,388 under green crops, 79,049 under rotation grasses, and 11,086 under fallow. In north-west Wilts the prevailing soil is a reddish chalky clay resting on a subsoil of broken stones, whilst on the Chalk for- mation the arable land is of a lighter character. There are also extensive tracts of richer soil well adapted for wheat and beans. In 1887 wheat occupied 67,357 acres, barley 50,928, oats 44,047, rye 1728, beans 7274, and pease 3542. The bulk of the green crops are grown for the feeding of cattle and sheep, potatoes occupying only 3339 acres and carrots 237, while 54,869 acres were under turnips and swedes, 5673 mangold, 10,473 cabbage, rape, &c., and 24,527 vetches, &c. The total area under nursery grounds in 1887 was 91 acres, while market gardens occupied 3525, and orchards 3346. Woods in 1881 occupied 45,270 acres, a great part being comprised in the ancient forests, including Cranborne Chase and Savernake Forest, which contain some remarkable old oaks and beeches. The number of horses in 1887 was 28,616, of whieh 18,980 were used solely for purposes of agriculture. Cattle num- bered 106,020, 60,113 being cows and heifers in milk or in calf. Dairy farming is the leading industry in the north-western districts, Wiltshire being famous for its cheese. Of the cattle 15,505 were two years and above, and 30,402 under two years, an indication that comparatively few cattle are kept for purposes of feeding. Sheep in 1887 numbered 643,125, and pigs 66, 422.

According to the latest landowners' Return, Wiltshire was divided

among 14,013 owners, possessing 828,949 acres at an annual valua- tion of £1,599, 239, or about £1, 18s. 7d. per acre. There were 9685 owners possessing less than one acre each, 1519 acres being divided amongst them. The estimated extent of commons or waste lands was 1931 acres. The following proprietors owned over 7000 acres each :—earl of

Pembroke, 39,601 acres; marquis of Ailesbury, 37,994 ; marquis of Bath, 19,978; earl of Radnor, 17,173; Simon W. Taylor, 14,960; R. P. Long, 13,618 ; Sir John Neeld, 13,113; trustees of Sir H. Meux, 11,896; marquis of Lansdowne, 11,146; earl of Suffolk, 11,098 ; earl of Normanton, 9812; Lord Ashburton, 9592; Sir E. Antrobus, 8374 ; Sir Francis D. Astley, 7888 ; Sir M. E. Hicks Beach, 7200; and T. Fraser Grove, 7179. _ Communication.—A considerable amount of traffic is carried on in the northern districts by means of canals. The Thames and Severn Canal crosses the north-west corner of the county. Between Cricklade and Swindon it is joined by a branch eanal to the Wilts and Berks Canal. This last has a semicircular course south- westwards by Swindon, Wootton Basset, and Melksham, 2 miles beyond which it is joined by the Kennet and Avon Canal, which crosses the centre of the county by Hungerford, Devizes, and Brad- ford. The railway communication is supplied chiefly by the Great Western and the London and South Western lines.

Manufactures and Trade,—Wiltshire has long been celebrated for its cloths, the chief seats of the industry being Bradford and Trowbridge, while among other places Melksham and Chippenham are perhaps the most important. Wilton is still celebrated for its carpets. Haircloth weaving and the manufacture of cocoa-nut fibres are carried on at Melksham, and there are silk works at Chippen- ham, Malmesbury, Mere, and Warminster. Tron-smelting from the mines of the neighbourhood is carried on at Westbury ; portable engines are made at Devizes ; and at Swindon are the engineering

Wie Ts

works of the Great Western Railway. Various towns are associated with different branches of the agricultural trade: Salisbury and Devizes have important corn markets; Chippenham, besides a trade in cheese, has a condensed milk nianufactory ; Wilton has a large sheep fair ; and Calne is the centre of the Wiltshire bacon trade.

Administration and Population.—Wiltshire comprises 29 hun- dreds, the city of Salisbury or New Sarum (population 14,792 in 1881), and the municipal boroughs of Calne (2474), Chippenham (1852), Devizes (6645), and Marlborough (3343). The county has one court of quarter sessions

and is divided into fifteen petty sessional divisions. The city of Salisbury and the borough of Devizes have commissions of the peace and separate courts of quarter sessions, and the borough of Marlborough has a commission of the peace. Previous to the Act of 1885 the county was divided for parliamentary purposes into North and South Wilts, each returning two members, and included the following parliamentary boroughs—Calne, Chippenham, part of Cricklade, Devizes, Malmes- bury, Marlborough, Salisbury city, part of Shaftesbury, Westbury, and Wilton. All these returned one member each, with the ex- ception of Salisbury, which returned two; by the Act of 1885 they were all merged in the county divisions, with the exception of Salisbury, which was deprived of one member. The county was re- formed into five parliamentary divisions, each returning one mem- ber,—north (Cricklade), into which the Wiltshire portion of Crick- lade is merged ; north-west (Chippenham), into which Chippenham and Malmesbury are merged ; south (Wilton), into which Wilton is merged ; east (Devizes), into which Devizes and Marlborough are merged ; and west (Westbury), into which Westbury is merged. The county contains 340 civil parishes, with parts of seven others. It is mostly in the diocese of Salisbury. From 183,820 in 1801 the population by 1821 had increased to 219,574, and by 1841 to 256,280, and, although by 1861 it had diminished to 249,311, by 1871 it had again increased to 257,177 ; in 1881 it was 258,965, of whom 128,114 were males and 130,851 females. The number of persons to an acre is 0°30 and of acres to a person 3°35.

History and Antiquities.—In the importance of its early archxo- logical remains Wilts takes a foremost place among the counties of England. In the river gravel-beds near Salisbury and _ else- where several specimens of flint implements of the Paleolithic age have been dug up, and the numerous barrows of the Chalk downs have yielded a great variety of stone implements of the Neolithic age, as well as of a later period. The ancient British boundary, the Wans Dyke, passed westwards across the county from Great Bedwin; west of Marlborough it still remains for many miles in a perfect condition. Traces of several other bound- aries of a somewhat similar character are met with in other parts of the county. The British "ridgeway" runs north-eastwards from Avebury, near the tumulus of Silbury Hill, to the ancient forts of Barbury and Badbury; other

ancient British trackways have been converted into Roman roads. Among the principal ancient defensive works are Battlesbury and Scratchbury near War- minster; the entrenchments of Barbury and Badbury ; Bratton, near Westbury, defended by double ramparts, in some places 36 feet in height, to which Guthrum the Dane is said to have retreated after his defeat by King Alfred; Casterly, on a ridgeway about 7 miles south-east of Devizes, described by Sir R. C. Hoare as "one of the most original and unaltered works of the British era which our country can produce"; Figbury Ring, 3 miles north-east of Salisbury, sometimes called Chlorus's camp, from the tradition that it was made by the British general Constantine Chlorus ; Sidbury, 3 miles south-west of Collingbourne, probably an ancient British town ; Vespasian's camp, between Amesbury and Stonehenge ; and Yarnbury camp, in very perfect preservation, to the north of Wily. Ogbury camp, 6 miles north of Salisbury, is an undoubted British entrenchment, but probably a sheep-fold. The stone circles of Avebury and Stonehenge are the most remarkable megalithic struc- tures in the kingdom ; but their origin and date are the subject of much dispute. Durrington " walls," north of Amesbury, are prob- ably the remains of a British village; there are also traces of others at several places on the slopes of the Marlborough Downs and Salisbury Plain.

There are no records of the Roman invasion, though many evi- dences of Roman occupation remain. The ancient Fosse Way crossed the north-west corner of the county from Bath to Cirencester. From this last town another road passed southwards to Cunetro (Folly Farm near Marlborough), joining the Via Julia, which crossed the county from Bath to Silchester. From Salisbury one went north-east to Silchester, another east to Winchester, and another north-west to Bath. On the line of these roads remains of Roman villages have been found at different places.

After the departure of the Romans Wilts was the scene of fre- quent contests, first between the Britons and the Saxons and after- wards betwcen the Saxons and the Danes. Badbury is the reputed Mons Badonicus where King Arthur defeated Cerdic in 520. In 552 Cynric inflicted a severe defeat on a large army of Britons at Old Sarum, and in 556, after a great victory over them at Barbury Hill, he incorporated the country of the Wilsaetas in the kingdom

Popula- tion, &e,

History and an- tiquities.

Ancient British roads : and forti- fieations.

Roman roads.

History.

Ancient edifices, &e.

Distin- guished persouis,

WIM—WIM

of Wessex. In 823 Egbert, king of the West Saxons, gained a victory over Beornwulf, king of Mercia, at Ellandune near Wilton. Wilton itself was the scene of Alfred's defeat by the Danes in 871. In 878 the Danes plundered Chippenham, where Alfred had one of his residences, and made the town their headquarters ; but after- wards Alfred inflicted on Guthrum such a severe defeat at Ethan- dune (supposed to be Edington near Westbury) that the Danes came to terms with him, the south-western part of Mercia being henceforth held by the Saxons and the north-eastern by the Danes. During the Danish invasions at the close of the 10th and the be- ginning of the 11th century the district was overrnn by Sweyn, who pillaged and burned Wilton, as well as Old Sarum. At the latter town Canute died in 1036. During the conflict between Stephen and Matilda the strongholds of Sarum, Devizes, and Malmesbury were held by Bishop Roger for Matilda, until he was compelled to surrender them. During the Civil War Wiltshire sided chiefly with the Parliament. In 1643 Wardour Castle near Tisbury was bravely defended by Lady Blanche Arundel] against Sir Edward Hungerford, and, although she was forced to capitulate, the castle was again taken by her son in 1645. In 1643 Essex was routed by Charles I. and Rupert at Aldbourn, and the same year Waller was defeated by Wilmot at Roundaway near Devizes. After the storm- ing of Devizes Castle by Cromwell in September 1645 the Cavaliers were wholly driven from the county.

The church of St Lawrence, Bradford, converted at one time into cottages, is one of the most perfect specimens of ancient Saxon architecture existing ; and there is also Saxon work in the churches of Britford (north and south door), Burcombe (cast end of the chancel), Manningford Bruce, and a few other places. There is a large amount of Roman work in the church of Malmesbury abbey, much of it, however, being Transition ; the church of St John's, Devizes, retains its original Norman tower and exhibits Norman vaulting in the«chancel; the chancel of St Mary's in the same town is also Norman, and its porch has characteristic Norman mouldings ; the churches of Preshute and Corsham contain interesting examples of the same style. Salisbury cathedral is the finest and most per- fect example of Early English existing; and there is much good architecture of the same style in the churches of Amesbury, Bishop's Cannings, Cricklade, Collingbourne-Kingston, Downton, Edington, and Purton. The prevailing architecture is, however, Perpendicular, of which there are numerous fine examples, especially in the districts where good building stone is found; but in the Chalk districts, where the churches are constructed of flint, the architecture is generally inferior. There are numerous interesting examples of domestic architecture of the 14th, 15th, and 16th centuries. The only monastic remains of importance within the county are the abbey church of Malmesbury ; the picturesque ruins of Lacock or Laycock abbey (3 miles sonth of Chippenham), founded in 1232 by Ella, countess of Salisbury; the walls of Bradcnstoke priory (north- east of Chippenham), founded in 1142 by Walter d'Evreux for Augustinian canons, now converted into a farmhouse ; and slight remains of the Cluniac priory of Monkton-Farleigh, founded in 1125. The fortress of Old Sarum is almost completely demolished, but the outlines of the defences remain ; Devizes retains a few frag- ments, " built up again," according to Freeman, as " meaningless ornaments in the midst of the most fearful piece of modern gim- crack that human eyes ever beheld"; and the mound of Marl- borough has been made into a 'hill of pleasure." Trowbridge Castle, which was held for Matilda by Humphrey de Bohun, has completely disappeared, its site being occupied by modern build- ings ; and only a few small fragments remain of Ludgershall, which Matilda occupied on her escape from Winchester.

*Wilts has an unusually long roll of illustrious persons. Among divines, Hugh Latimer was rector of West Kington; Richard Hooker was rector of Boscombe ; George Crabbe was for eighteen years rector of Trowbridge, and was buried in the chanccl of the church ; Dr Henry Sacheverell was the son of a Marlborough clergy- man; George Herbert and Archdeacon William Coxe were both rectors of Bemerton (ncar Salisbury) ; and Dr Joshua Marshman, the Indian missionary, was born at Westbury. Of persons who have distinguished themselves in some form of literature we may mention Thomas Chubb, the Deist, who was a native of Harnham ; Hobbes of Malmesbury; Philip Massinger, who was born at Salisbury; Joseph Addison, the son of the rector of Milston ; Bryan Edwards, the historian ; Aubrey and Britton, the antiquaries ; Edmund Lud- low, author of the Afemoirs of the Restoration period ; and Sir R. Colt Hoare, the historian of Wilts. Statesmen are represented by **Orator" Hunt, Sir John Davies, Bolingbroke, Hyde first earl of Clarendon, Harris first earl of Malmesbury, Fox first Lord Holland, Protector Somerset, and Henry Fawcett. Other persons of special distinction are Sir Christopher Wren, Sir B. Collins Brodie, and*

Thomas Willis, one of the founders of the Royal Society.

See Sir H. C. Hoare's Ancient Wiltshire, 1812-21, and Modern Wiltshire, 1829- 1844; Aubrey and Jackson's Topographical Collections for Wilts, 1864; Britton's Beauties, 1801; Kite's Monumental Brasses of Wilts, 1860; Jackson's Ancient Chapels of Wilts, 1867; Jones's Karly Annals, 1871; Saint George's Visitation of Wilts 1623, 1882; Stratford's Wiltshire and tts Worthies, 1882; and A. C. Smith's British and Roman Antiquities in North Wilts, 1884-85. (T. F. H.)

WIMBLEDON, a suburb of London, in the county of Surrey, is situated on the London and South Western Rail- way, 74 miles south-west of London. The old village of Wimbledon has been greatly extended of late years, the district being now a favourite residence for the London middle classes. Wimbledon Common, to the north-west of the village, was the meeting-place of the Rifle Association from its foundation in 1860 till 1888. At its south- western extremity are the outlines of a British

earthwork, called Czesar's camp, having an extreme diameter of 950 feet and a diameter within the vallum of 750 feet. At Coombe's Hill and elsewhere British relics have been found. The parish church of St Mary is supposed to date from Saxon times; but, after it had undergone various restorations and reconstructions, it was rebuilt in 1833 in the Perpendicular style. There are various other churches and chapels, all modern. A free library was established in 1887. The benevolent institutions include nine alms- houses (1838), a cottage hospital (1867), a convalescent hospital (1867), and a hospital for infectious diseases (1877). The population of the urban sanitary district (area 3220 acres) was 9087 in 1871 and 15,950 in 1881.

Wimbledon (Wibbandune) is supposed to have been the scene of a battle in 568 between Ceawlin, king of Wessex, and Ethelbert, king of Kent, in which the latter was defeated. At Domesday it formed part of the manor of Mortlake, held by the archbishops of Canterbury. Afterwards the name was sometimes used inter- changeably with Mortlake, and in 1327 it is described as a grange or farm belonging to Mortlake. On the impeachment of Arundel, archbishop of Canterbury, in 1398, it was confiscated. In the reign of Henry VIII. Cromwell, earl of Essex, held the manor of Wimbledon, with Bristow Park as an appendage. On the confisca- tion of Cromwell's estates in 1540 it again fell to the crown, and by Henry VIII. it was settled on Cathcrine Parr for life. By Queen Mary it was granted to Cardinal Pole. In 1574 Elizabeth bestowed the manor house, while retaining the manor, on Sir Christopher Hatton, who sold it the same year to Sir Thomas Cecil. In 1588 Elizabeth transferred the manor to his son Sir Edward Cecil, in exchange for an estate in Lincolnshire. At the time of the Civil War the manor was sold to Adam Baynes, who shortly afterwards sold it to General Lambert ; and at the Restora- tion it was granted to the queen dowager, Henrietta Maria, who sold it in 1661 to George Digby, earl of Bristol. On his death in 1676 it was sold by his widow to the lord-treasurer Danby. Some years after Danby's death it was purchased by Sarah, duchess of Marlborough, who demised it to her grandson, John Spencer. It was sold by the fifth Earl Spencer in 1877. Wimbledon House, built by Sir Thomas Cecil in 1588, was destroycd by fire in 1785, and a new house, called Winibledon Park House, was erected about

1801.

WIMBORNE MINSTER, a market town of Dorset, England, is situated on a gentle slope above the river Allen, near its confluence with the Stour, and on the Great Western Railway, 6 miles north of Poole and 114 west-south-west of London. The feature of the town is the ancient minster. As it now stands, it is a fine cruciform structure of various styles from Early Norman to Perpen- dicular, and consists of a central lantern tower, nave and choir with aisles, transepts without aisles, western or bell tower, north and south porches, crypt, and vestry or sacristy, with the library over it. Its maximum length is 182 feet, and its maximum breadth 102. The interior was restored in 1856-57. It contains a large number of interesting monuments, including a brass with the date 873 (supposed to mark the resting-place of Ethelred, third son of Ethelwulf), an orrery of the 14th century, and an octagonal Norman font of Purbeck marble. A new church, dedicated to St John the Evangelist, was built and partly endowed in 1876. The free grammar-school, established in 1497, was refounded by Elizabeth, a portion of the revenues of the monastery being devoted to this purpose. New school buildings in the Elizabethan style were erected in 1851. There are two hospitals, St Margaret's and Courtenay's. Near Wimborne is Canford Hall, the seat of Lord Wimborne, a mansion in the Tudor style, built by

Blore in 1826, and improved from designs of Sir Charles Barry. The town depends chiefly on agriculture ; but the manufacture of hose is carried on to a small extent, and there are also coachbuilding works. The population of the parish of Wimborne Minster (area 11,966 acres) was 5019 in 1871 and 5390 in 1881.

Wimborne (Saxon Vinburnan) is supposed to have been the Vindogladia or Ventagladia of the Romans. A nunnery was founded here in 712 by St Cuthberga, sister of Ina, king of the West Saxons. It was destroyed by the Danes about 900, and _subse- quently became a house of secular canons, when the church became collegiate. The establishment existed till 1547. Wimborne is supposed to have been the scene of a battle between the earl of Devon and the Danes in 851, in which the latter were defeated. It was

taken possession of by Ethelwold in 901. The duke of Mon- mouth was apprehended near Wimborne after his escape from Sedgemoor. The town claims to have been the birthplace of Matthew Prior, the poet.

WINCHESTER, a city, and a parliamentary and muni- cipal borough, of Hampshire, England, is situated on the river Itchen, 66 miles south-west of London by the London and South Western Railway. The Caer Gwent (White City) of the Britons and Venta Belgarum of the Romans, Winchester was a town of much importance in early times, mainly on account of its central position on the Roman high roads in the south of England.1 Temples to Apollo and Concord stood within the precincts of the present cathedral close; but in the 3d century the place is said to have become one of the chief centres of the early Celtic Christians. The Saxon invaders at the end of the 5th century treated the Roman name Venta as if it were a feminine substantive, and, transforming it into " Winte," called the town Winte-ceaster, "the City of the Winte ;" hence the modern name Winchester. Throughout the Saxon period the city was one of the highest importance : early in the 6th century it became the capital of Wessex ; and the kings of Wessex were crowned and usually buried in the cathedral. Even after the formation of the united kingdom of Anglia by Egbert, the great witan was still held in Winchester. It was also one of the chief centres for the coining of money under the pre-Norman kings: in the time of Athelstan it contained six mints, while London possessed only three. Even after the Norman Conquest many sovereigns were crowned and many parliaments held here; the celebrated Statutes of Winchester were passed in a parliament held in 1285. The city continued to be a favourite royal residence, and Henry II. rebuilt the palace on a larger scale? This same king gave it its first regu- lar charter of incorporation (1184). In the Middle Ages Winchester was famed for its wool trade and textile fabrics ; in the 14th century it was the chief wool mart of England and had an extensive trade with France, Bel- gium, and Holland. In the 15th century its prosperity began to decline. In Cromwell's time the city suffered severely from a siege, during which Winchester Castle was dismantled. Charles II. began to build a palace on the site of this fortress, after designs by Sir Christopher Wren, but the death of the king prevented the work from being completed.®

The first Christian church at Winchester is said to have been destroyed during the persecution of Aurelian, and rebuilt in 293. It was again burned by the Saxons in 495. St Swithun held the episcopate from 852 to 862 and enlarged the cathedral. The foundations of the ad. jacent abbey church of Hyde, in which some of the Saxon kings were buried, were discovered in 1886 close to the north side of the cathedral nave. The cathedral church 1 See Milner, History of Winchester, and Smirke, " Consuetadinary of Winchester," in Arch. Jour., vol. ix.

? The hall of this palace still exists ; it is illustrated by Turner in Domestic Architecture, London, 1851, vol. i. p. 176.

3 Evelyn in his Diary (16th Sept. 1685) speaks of this as a " stately fabric" which had been " brought almost to the covering."

was at one time associated with a priory of secular canons, but St Ethelwold, bishop from 963 to 984, suppressed the secular foundation and built a Benedictine abbey in its place.# A wholly new cathedral was begun by Bishop Walkelin (1070-98), and in 1093 the eastern portion was consecrated jointly to St Peter, St Paul, and St Swithun. The two Norman transepts and the low central tower still exist, as does also the very curious early crypt, east of the crossing. This isa low vaulted structure partly sup- ported by a central row of columns; it has an apsidal ter- mination, and is surrounded by an ambulatory, out of which a second smaller apse extends eastwards,—apparently a survival of the "confessio" of the earlier cathedral. The whole of the Norman nave was pulled down and rebuilt on a more magnificent scale by William of Wykeham at the end of the 14th century; the work was completed after his death by means of a large bequest. The choir was also remodelled in the 14th century and again much altered by Bishop Fox (1501-28).

In plan Winchester cathedral consists of a nave, two transepts, choir, and retro-choir, all with aisles. A large lady chapel extends still further eastwards. The length of the whole building is no less than 546 feet, thus being greater than that of any other church in England, with the exception of St Albans, which measures about the same length. One of its chief beauties is the magnificent reredos behind the high altar ; this consists of a lofty wall, the full width of the choir, pierced by two

processional doors, and covered with tiers of rich canopied niches, which once contained colossal statues. A eross of plain ashlar stone in the centre shows where an immense silver crucifix was once attached ; and a plain rectangular recess above the altar once contained a massive silver-gilt retable, covered with cast and repoussé statuettes and reliefs, an elaborate work of the most costly magnificence. A second stone screen, placed at the interval of one bay behind the great reredos, served to enclose the small chapel in which stood the magnificent gold shrine, studded with jewels, the gift of King Edgar, which contained the body of St Swithun. In the choir is the plain tomb of William II., and under many of the arches of the nave and choir are a number of very elaborate chantry chapels, each containing the tomb of its founder. Some of these have fine recumbent effigies, noble ex- amples of English medieval sculpture ; the most notable are the monuments of Bishops Edingdon, Wykeham, Waynflete, Cardinal Beaufort, Langton, and Fox. The font of black marble is an inter- esting example of 11th-century art; its sides are covered with curious reliefs representing scenes from the life of St Nicholas. A good deal of very magnificent 14th-century stained glass still exists at Winchester.

Winchester College was built from 1387 to 1393 by WILLIAM oF WYKEHAM (g.v.). The foundation of the school consisted of a warden, ten fellows, three chaplains, seventy scholars, and sixteen choristers. Its fine chapel, hall, cloister, and other buildings still exist in good pre- servation. About a mile distant from the town stands the hospital of St Cross, founded in 1136 by Henry de Blois, bishop of Winchester, to provide board and lodging for 13 poor men and a daily dinner for 100 others, It was enlarged and mostly rebuilt by Cardinal Beaufort, 1405-47. The buildings are still in a good state of preser- vation, including the simple but very stately cruciform chapel, built about the year 1180, which in plan resembles a fine parochial church.6 The whole place has been much injured by so-called "restoration."

Winchester suffered greatly in the plague of 1666, and its population was much reduced. At present its pros- perity chiefly depends on the presence of the cathedral, the college, and its barracks, which accommodate about 2000 men. The city has several good schools and the usual public and

charitable institutions. From the 23d year of Edward J. it returned two members to parliament until

- *See Britton, Winchester Cathedral, London, 1817.*

> Great treasures of gold and jewels were presented to this cathedral by many of the early kings of England, especially by Canute, who gave his gold gem-studded crown to be hung over the great crucifix above the high altar.

8 See a valuable account of St Cross in the Winchester volume of the Archxological Institute, by E. A. Freeman.

WwW Ii n=—wWii N 597

1885, when it lost one member. The population of the municipal and parliamentary borough (area 1032 acres) was 16,366 in 1871 and 17,780 in 1881. (J. H. M.)

WINCHESTER, a city and the county seat of Frederick county, Virginia, United States, is situated in the Shen- andoah valley, about 700 feet above sea-level, and on a branch of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad. It lies about 67 miles west-north-west of Washington. The surrounding country is rich and fertile, devoted to agriculture and cattle-raising, for which Winchester serves as a centre of supply and distribution. The city has manufactories of shoes, furniture, gloves, &c., and some iron foundries and tanneries. The population in 1880 was 4958 (1517 coloured), In 1888 it was estimated at over 5000.

Winchester was laid out as a town in 1752 and incorporated in 1779. It has had a very slow growth, and during the Civil War it suffered severely from the armies of both combatants.

WINCKELMANN, Jowann Joacumm (1717-17 68), historian of ancient art and the founder of scientific archzo- logy, was born at Stendal in the Altmark (Prussia) on 9th December 1717. His father was a poor shoemaker, and in his early years Winckelmann had to contend with great difficulties. With a passion for knowledge, however, he combined a,

resolute will; and by acting for some time as amanuensis to an old and blind rector he contrived to pass through the necessary courses of instruction at school. In 1737 he attended a gymnasium at Berlin and the school at Salzwedel, and in the following year he went as a student of theology to the university of Halle. He took little real interest in theology, and such interest as he had was quenched partly by the influence of the philo- sophy of Wolff, partly by the unfavourable impression made upon him by the Pietists. Through his connexion with the chancellor Von Ludewig he was led to enter upon the study of German history ; he devoted himself also with great enthusiasm to the study of Greek literature. He thought of becoming a physician, and began to attend medical classes at Jena; but the accomplishment of this scheme was beyond his means, and he was obliged to accept a tutorship near Magdeburg. In 1743 he was made associate-rector of a school at Seehausen in the Altmark, and this appointment he held for five years. He then went to Dresden, where he acted as librarian and general assistant to Count Henry Von Biinau, for whose history of the Holy Roman empire he collected materials. The treasures in the Dresden gallery awakened in his mind an intense interest in art, which was deepened by association with various artists, and especially with Oeser, who after- wards exercised so powerful an influence over Goethe when Goethe was a young student at Leipsic. Winckelmann's study of ancient literature had inspired him with a strong desire to visit Rome, and now he sought, through the papal nuncio Archinto, to obtain the appointment of librarian to Cardinal Passionei. Nothing could be done for him, however, unless he joined the Roman Catholic Church ; this condition, after long hesitation, he ultimately decided to comply with.

In 1755 Winckelmann gave the first indication of his genius by the publication of his Gedanken uber die Nach- ahmung der griechischen Werke in Maleret und Bildhauer- kunst. This was followed by a pretended attack on the work, and a defence of its principles, nominally by an im- partial critic. In the Gedanken Winckelmann suggested most of the doctrines he afterwards developed ; and the book was warmly admired not only for the new ideas it contained but for the power and charm of its style. One good result of the impression it produced was that Augustus IIL., elector of Saxony and king of Poland, was induced to grant him a

pension of 200 thalers, that he might have an opportunity of prosecuting his studies in Rome. He

arrived in Rome in November 1755, and, with the excep- tion of some brief intervals, remained there during the rest, of his life. He became librarian to Cardinal Archinto, and also received much kindness from Cardinal Passionei ; and after their death he was received as librarian and as a friend into the house of Cardinal Albani, who was forming his magnificent collection in his villa at Porta Salara. In 1763, while retaining this position, Winckelmann was made prefect of antiquities.

From the time of his arrival in Rome he devoted him- self earnestly, at first with the aid of his friend Raphael Mengs, to the study of Roman antiquities, and he gradu- ally acquired what was then an unrivalled knowledge of ancient art. In 1760 appeared his Description des Pierres Gravées du Feu Baron de Stosch, embodying the results of much work at Florence, where he had spent nine months in cataloguing the engraved gems collected by his friend Baron von Stosch. He published in 1762 Anmerkungen tiber die Baukunst der Alten, including an account of the temples at Pestum. In 1758 and 1762 Winckelmann visited Naples for the purpose of studying the treasures excavated at Pompeii and Herculaneum ; and from his Sendschreiben von den herculanischen Entdeckungen (1762) and his Nachricht von den neuesten herculanischen Entdeckungen (1764) scholars obtained their first au- thentic information about those groups of antiquities. Winckelmann again visited Naples in 1765 and 1767, and wrote for the use of the electoral prince and princess of Saxony his Briefe an Bianconi, which were published, eleven years after his death, in the Antologia Romana. For several years his energies were devoted chiefly to the preparation of his masterpiece, the Geschichte der Kunst des Alterthums, which was issued in 1764. It at once commanded attention and was soon recognized as a book that would take a permanent place in the litera- ture not only of Germany but of Europe. In this great work Winckelmann sets forth both the history of Greek art and the principles on which it seemed to him to be based. He also presents a glowing picture of the con- ditions, political, social, and intellectual, which tended to foster creative activity in ancient Greece. The funda- mental idea of his theory is that the end of art is beauty, and that this end

can be attained only when individual and characteristic features are strictly subordinated to the artist's general scheme. According to Winckelmann, the true artist, selecting from nature the phenomena fitted for his purpose, and combining them through the imagination, creates an ideal type marked in action by "noble simplicity and calm greatness,"—an ideal type in which normal pro- portions are maintained, particular parts, such as muscles and veins, not being permitted to break the harmony of the general outlines. In the historical part he used not only the works of art he himself had studied but the scattered notices on the subject to be found in ancient writers; and his wide knowledge and active imagination enabled him to offer many fruitful suggestions as to periods about which he had little direct information. The materials for the study of Greek art which have been recovered since Winckelmann's time have compelled archeologists to reject some of his conclusions, to modify others, and to present the subject as a whole in a somewhat different light ; but the writer was penetrated by so fine an enthusiasm, his style is at once so strong, so graceful, and so animated, and his descriptions of particular works of art are so vivid and true, that his book can never wholly lose its freshness. It marked an epoch by indicating the spirit in which the study of Greek art should be approached, and the methods by which investigators might hope to attain to solid results. To Winckelmann's contemporaries the work came as a revelation, and it exercised a profound influence on the

best minds of the age. Goethe studied it eagerly, and it was read with intense interest by Lessing, who had found in a statement in the earliest of Winckelmann's works the starting-point for his Laocoon.

Winckelmann contributed various admirable essays to the Bibliothek der Schénen Wissenschaften ; and in 1766 he published his Versuch einer Allegorie, which, although con- taining the results of much thought and reading, is not conceived in a thoroughly critical spirit. Of far greater importance was the splendid work entited Monument Antichi Inediti (1767-68), prefaced by a 7'rattato Prelumi- nare, presenting a general sketch of the history of art. The plates in this work are representations of

objects which had either been falsely explained or not explained at all. Winckelmann's explanations were of the highest service to archeology, by showing that in the case of many works of art which had been supposed to be connected with Roman history the ultimate sources of inspiration were to be found in Homer.

In 1768 Winckelmann left Rome with the Italian sculp- tor Cavaceppi, intending to visit Germany. But he went no farther than to Vienna, where he was received with honour by Maria Theresa, At Trieste on his way back to Italy he made the acquaintance of a man called Arcangeli, to whom he showed some gold coins that had been given to him by the empress; Arcangeli's cupidity was excited, and during the night he entered Winckelmann's room, and, after having tried to throttle him, stabbed him five times. Winckelmann died of his wounds on 8th June 1768. His murderer was caught and executed.

Winckelmann ranks among the foremost writers of the 18th cen- tury, and it is hardly possible to overrate the services rendered by him to archeology and the study of ancient art. With wide learning and an extraordinary power of accurate observation he combined imagination and feeling, and through him the modern world ob- tained for the first time something like a true conception not only of particular works of Greek art but of the general intellectual movement from which they sprang. If inany of his ideas have now been abandoned, that is to a large extent due to the fact that scholars and thinkers were put upon the right track by his re- searches. His character as a man corresponded to his greatness as a writer. No difficulty was formidable enough to deter him from working out his vast schemes; and in relation to his friends and in general social intercourse he was distinguished by a noble gener- osity of spirit and thorough honesty of purpose.

An edition of his works was begun by Fernow in 1808 and completed by Meyer and Schulze (1808-20). There is an admirable study of his character and work in Goethe's Winckelmann und sein Jahrhundert (1805), to which contributions were made by Meyer and Wolf, The best biography of Winckelmann is the one by Justi, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1866-72. (J. SL.)

ia See Merrorotoey, vol. xvi. pp. 124, 143,

154,

WINDHAM, Witt1am (1750-1810), English politician, came from an ancient family long resident at Felbrigg near Cromer in Norfolk. His father, Colonel William Windham, was an adventurous soldier with a taste for languages, both ancient and modern; William Windham, the statesman, was born in Golden Square, London, on 3d May 1750. At the age of seven he went to Eton, which he quitted in 1766 for the university of Glasgow, and under the care of Dr Simson he acquired the taste for mathematics which always distinguished him. In 1767 he matriculated as gentleman commoner at University College, Oxford, where he remained until 1771. He never took the degree of B.A., but qualified as M.A. on 7th October 1782, and received the degree of D.C.L. on 3d July 1793. He made a tour in Norway in 1773 and visited Switzerland and Italy between 1778 and 1780. His maiden speech on the political platform was delivered at Norwich on 28th January 1778, when he vehemently opposed the prosecution of the American War. On his return to England in 1780 he contested the representation of the city of Norwich, but was not successful. His entrance into public life took place in April 1783, when he

went to Ireland as chief secretary to Lord Northington, the lord-lieutenant under the coalition ministry of Fox and Lord North. Windham was his own keenest critic, his distrust in his own powers and his disappointment at his own achievements being conspicuous on every page of his Diary. Sickness compelled his return to England early in July 1783; but change of scene and constant exercise restored him to health before the end of that year. In April 1784 he again contested Norwich and was returned by a majority of 64 votes, thus scoring one of the few triumphs attained by the adherents of the coalition cabinet. This seat he retained until 1802, when he was beaten by William Smith, one of the leaders of the Nonconformists. Though he strenuously opposed all proposals for parliamentary reform, to which most of the Whigs were deeply committed, Windham remained in alliance with that party until after the outbreak of the French Revolution, when he and several of his chief allies joined Pitt. The place of secretary-at-war was conferred upon him in July 1794, and

he was at the same time created a privy coun- cillor and admitted to a seat in the cabinet. Windham discharged the duties of his office with unflagging zeal, his efforts being particularly directed towards amelior- ating the condition of the inferior grades of the army. In the autumn of 1794 he was despatched to the duke of York's camp in Flanders with the views of his ministerial colleagues, but their advice could not counteract the military incapacity of the royal duke. When Pitt was frustrated in his intention of freeing the Catholics from their political disabilities, Windham, who in religious matters always inclined to liberal opinions, took his place among the ministers who retired from office (February 1801). He was a constant opponent of all negotiations for peace with France, preferring to prosecute the cam- paign at whatever cost until some decisive victory had been gained, and the temporary peace of Amiens, which was carried through under Addington's administration, did not meet with his approval. When he was ousted from the representation of Norwich (July 1802), a seat for the pocket borough of St Mawes in Cornwall was found for him by its patron, the marquis of Buckingham, whose opinions coincided with Windham's on the leading political questions of the day. He declined a place in Pitt's new cabinet (May 1802) on the ground that the exclusion of Fox, who had joined with them in opposition to the weak ministry of Addington, prevented the formation of an administration sufficiently strong in parliament and the country to cope with the dangers which threatened the safety of the nation, and he offered a general opposition to the measures which the prime minister proposed. On Pitt's death in January 1806 the ministry of " All the Talents" was formed under the leadership of Lord Grenville, and Windham accepted the seals as secretary of state for war and the colonies. Fox's death necessitated several official changes ; and a peerage was proposed for Windham, but he declined the proffered honour, and remained in office as long as the ministry existed. A general election took place in October 1806 and Windham was elected for the county of Norfolk ; but the election was declared void on petition, and he was compelled to sit for the Treasury borough of New Romney, for which he had also been elected. In 1807, when the House was dissolved under the influence of the "No Popery " cry of Spencer Perceval, a seat was found for Windham by Lord Fitzwilliam in his close constituency of Higham Ferrers. Liberty of religious opinion he uniformly supported at all periods

of his life, and with equal consistency he opposed all outbreaks of religious fanaticism ; hence with these convictions in his mind few of the domestic measures of the new ministers met with his approbation. Moreover, he disapproved of

|

the expedition to the Scheldt, and thought the charges brought against the duke of York, as commander-in-chief, required his retirement from office. At the same time he actively opposed the bill of Sir Samuel Romilly, his col- league on most political questions, for reducing the number of offences visited with the punishment of death. In July 1809 he received a blow on the hip whilst rendering assistance at a fire, which he thought little of at the time; but a tumour subsequently formed on the spot and an operation became necessary. This brought on a fever, and Windham rapidly sank. He died on 4th June 1810, and was buried in the family vault at Felbrigg.

Windham was tall and well-proportioned ; and the impressive- ness of his speeches was heightened by the excellence of his address. Exercise of all kinds had charms for him. He attended all the celebrated prize-fights of his day, and he more than once spoke in the House of Commons against the prevention of bull-baiting. Nor did he neglect the pleasures of literature and science. His speeches were published in three volumes in 1806, with a memoir by Thomas Amyot, his private secretary while he was in office in 1806, and his Diary was edited by Mrs Henry Baring in 1866. The passages in the latter work relative to Dr Johuson's declining days have been of considerable use to the later editors of Boswell.

WINDMILL. The date when windmills were first erected is unknown; but they were certainly used in Europe in the 12th century. Of late they have generally been replaced by steam engines in Great Britain ; but they are still extensively employed in Holland in draining the polders and grinding trass. In America they are largely used ; Wolff states that in some cities in the United States over 5000 windmills are manufactured annually. In spite of the competition of more powerful and tractable motors, windmills

may often be used with success and economy, especially in new countries where fuel is scarce, and for work which can be done intermittently. The Indian Government recently made inquiries with a view to using windmills for irrigation, and a good deal of information will be found in a report by Colonel Brownlow in the Pro- fessional Papers on Indian Engineering, vol. viii. A wind- mill is not a very powerful motor, and in its employment its power is variable and intermittent. In good situations it will generally work for about eight hours out of the twenty-four on an average. Small windmills are useful on farms for working machines and pumping, in brickfields for pumping, and on ships for clearing out bilge water. They are employed for drainage purposes in Holland and Nor- folk, and for mining purposes in some new countries. In America they are used to pump water at railway stations. Sir W. Thomson has proposed to utilize them in charging electric accumulators. As an auxiliary to a steam engine they are sometimes useful ; thus at Faversham a 15-horse- power windmill raised in ten months 21,000,000 gallons of water from a depth of 109 feet, saving 100 tons of coal.

European Windmills.—In all the older windmills a shaft, called the wind shaft, carried four to six arms or whips on which long rectangular narrow sails were spread. The wind shaft was placed at an inclination of 10° or 15° with the horizontal, to enable the sails to clear the lower part of the mill. The whip carrying the sail was often 30 to 40 feet in length, so that the tips of the sails described a circle 60 to 80 feet in diameter. The sails were rectangu- lar, 5 to 6 feet wide, and occupying five-sixths of the length of the whip. A triangular leading sail was sometimes added. Sometimes the sails consisted of a sail-cloth spread on a framework ; at other times narrow boards were used. The oldest mill was no doubt the post mill, the whole struc- ture being carried on a post; to bring the sails to face the wind, the structure was turned round by along lever. The post mill was succeeded by the tower, smock, or frock mill, in which the mill itself consisted of a stationary tower, and the wind shaft and sails were carried in a revolving cap rotating on the top of the tower. Meikle introduced in

1750 an auxiliary windmill or fan, placed at right angles to the principal sails, for automatically turning the mill face to the wind. If the wind shifts, the small fan begins to revolve and, acting through gearing, rotates the cap of the mill. Mills are exposed to great danger if the sails are not reefed or furled in high winds, and the reefing serves also to prevent the speed of the mill becoming excessive. In 1807 Sir W. Cubitt introduced automatic reefing arrange- ments. The sails were made of thin boards held up to the wind by a weight. As the strength of the wind increased, the boards were pressed back and exposed less surface.

American Windmills.—American windmills generally have the sails arranged in an annulus or disk. The sails consist of narrow boards or slats arranged radially, each board inclined at a constant angle of weather (see below); and the impulse of the wind on these inclined surfaces drives the mill. An American mill presents a larger sur- face for a given length of sail, and consequently the con- struction is lighter. To turn the mill face to the wind, a simple large rudder or fish-tail is used, projecting back- wards in a plane at right angles to the plane of rotation of the sails. There are a great variety of mills in America, but those most commonly used are of two types. (1) In those which have side-vane governor wheels the action equivalent to reefing the sails is effected by turning the whole wheel formed by the sails oblique to the wind, so as to diminish the wind's action.

Warner's Annular Sail Windmill.— Messrs Warner of Cripplegate (London) make a windmill somewhat similar to American mills. The shut- ters or vanes consist of a frame covered with canvas, and these are pivoted between two angle-iron rings so as to form an annular sail. The vanes are connected with spiral springs, which keep them up to the best angle of weather for light winds. If the strength of the wind in- ereases, the vanes give to the wind, forcing back the springs, and thus the area on which the wind acts dimin-

o=—

i

It IN

eC AIS REE FZ Zz = aN /Ap<

iB ishes. In addition, there are : ed y

a striking lever and tackle ad", for setting the vanes edge- awd, ways to the wind when the VON K mill is stopped or a storm is {} eS > expected. The wheel is kept Rui Ny | INS WZ } face to the wind by a rudder (i ae, Dia in small mills; in large mills (Al y Y/N y

a subsidiary fan and gear are used. Fig. 1 shows a large mill of this kind, erected in a similar manner to a tower ' mill. The tower is a framework of iron, and carries a revolving cap, on which the wind shaft is fixed. Behind is the subsi-

Frc. 1.—Warner's annular sail windmill.

600

diary fan with its gearing, acting on a toothed wheel fixed to the cap.

Relation between the Velocity of the Wind and its Pressure on Sur- faces. —When a flat thin plate is exposed normally to the wind, the pressure on its front surface.is increased and that on its back sur- face somewhat diminished. The resultant total pressure per square ' foot in the direction of the wind is given approximately by the

equation pr OO BA Sacks er enaqoaeosaah ks (1)

if v is in miles per hour, or 3 et ee eee (1a) if vis in feet per second. Thus, winds at velocities of 5, 10, and 20 miles per hour would give a pressure of § Ib, 4 1b, and 2 Ib respect- ively on each square foot of a surface normal to the wind, and these may be considered ordinary working velocities for windmills. In storms the velocity of the wind may reach a much greater value. Pressures of 28 or 30 tb per square foot have been frequently regis- tered by anemometers, and at exceptionally exposed stations press- ures of 50, 80, and even 90 Ib per square foot have been recorded. These pressures, which are useless for working the windmill,

must, nevertheless, be reckoned with in deciding on its structural strength. j _

Pressure on Surfaces Oblique to the Wind.—The variation of press- ure with inclination of surface is only known. experimentally. Let R be the direction of the wind, making an angle @ with the normal to the surface, supposed to be at rest. Then, if pis the pressure per square foot of sur- face when the wind is normal to

-»—_—_—>

the surface, the resultant normal Fig. 2. ‘ pressure on the oblique surface is

n=; oe Tb per square foot ……. (2). But the windmill sail moves in a direction perpendicular to the wind, Hence, if v is the velocity of a the wind and w that of the sail, the | e

*relative velocity is Vu?+¥%, and the direction of relative motion can be found as follows. Let aa be the plane of rotation of the sail. The inclination @ of the sail to the plane of rotation is called the angle of weather, and is the same as the angle the wind makes with the nor- mal to the sail. Set off c&b=v, be=w, then o¢ is the relative velocity, and **

this makes an angle ¢=tan- — with the direction of the wind

and an angle @+¢ with the normal to the sail. Hence for the moving sail

_ 2cos(0+¢)

“PT + 00s 6+ 6) Be Oe ng ey (3).

Before replacing p by its value in (1) another consideration re- quires attention. The sail generally moves faster than the wind ; it is not a thin- edged plane, but presents a not inconsiderable surface at right angles to its direction of motion, and thus creates resist- ance. Of the whole pressure of the wind a part only is effective, the rest being used to overcome the resistance of the sail. It will be assumed that the effective

pressure driving the sails is only, for v in feet per second, p=-001 v? Ib per square foot, and, therefore, the effective normal pressure on the sails is, for the relative velocity

wen G ae 9), ¢0s (0+ ¢) yi +4', n=001(v? 4 TF c0s" (0 6)" in the direction of motion of the sail is m sin 6. Consequently the useful work of the sail expressed in foot-pounds per square foot is nu sin 0=-001(0? u2}y——— 9 ; ' te = Le (0)+cos (0+) into strips and introducing the known values of w, v, and 6 the work done is easily found.

Best Angle of Weather.—The best angle of weather is that which

sin @

makes ——————_———. j sec (0+) + cos (0+ ¢) simple rule 6=674°—2¢. Given the velocity of the wind and that of the tips of the sails, the value of ¢ is easily found for any point

The component of this

By dividing the sail

a maximum. This gives the very

of the sail, and thence 6. Thus, for ry – =3°'0 2°5 2°0 15 10 0°5, ot 68° = 64° 57° 45° 1 @=184° 164° 198° o44° 334° 472°,

Horse-Power of Windmills. —For the older kinds of windmills the following rule derived from some experiments by Coulomb may be used. Let m = no. of sails, 4 area of each sail in square feet, v velocity of wind in feet per second ; then the horse-power of the

WIN—WIN

*a, tae. mr *S J, 660,000 ' : be about 24 to 8 times the wind velocity. For American wheels Wolff gives the horse-power which may be expected for an aver-*

age of 8 hours per day as follows :—

this assumes the speed of the tips of the sails to

Velocity of Wind in Miles per Hour.

Diameter of Revolutions of

Horse-Power of Wheel in Feet. i

Mill. Wheel per Minute.

16 0°04 16 0°12 16 0°21 16 0°28 16 0°41 16 0°61 16 0°78

16 1:34

70-75. 60-65 55-60 50-55 45-50 40-45 35-40 30-35

Further information will be found in Rankine, The Steam Engine and other Prime Movers; Weisbach, The Mechanics of Engineering ; and Wolff, The Wind- mill as a Prime Mover. (CW. C. U.)

0.

WINDSOR,! a parliamentary and municipal borough of Berkshire, England, 21 miles from London by the Great Western Railway, situated on the right bank of the Thames, is chiefly remarkable for its royal castle. The town itself? is of no special interest, in spite of its great antiquity. In 1276 Edward I. made Windsor a free borough. In 1302 it began to send representatives to parliament, though at uregular intervals, and from the time of Henry VI. it returned two members till 1867, when they were reduced to one. The town is presided over by a mayor, aldermen, and councillors, who were incorporated by a charter of Edward IV. The town-hall was built in 1686 by Sir

oy SCALE OF FEET

(300 10

ns

“e HOEY i) ot

ae samme, Asus’

. oumtain |

Plan.of Windsor.

Christopher Wren, but was much altered in 1852. The Thames is crossed here by a bridge resting on three granite piers (1823). The parish church of St John the Baptist was rebuilt in 1822; the other two churches are also modern. The town was formerly celebrated for the number of its inns, of which “‘ The Garter ” and “ The White Hart” were the chief. The former was the favourite inn of Shakespeare’s Sir John Falstaff, and is frequently men- tioned in the Merry Wives of Windsor. In 1650 the town contained 70 inns, many of which were very picturesque half-timbered buildings; but none of these now exist. In

1The name is said to be derived from Windelsora (A.8. windel, “to wind,” and or, a “shore,” from the winding course of the Thames).

2 In official documents the town is called New Windsor, to dis- tinguish it from its parent settlement Old Windsor, which is now a

village prettily situated about two miles to the south-east of Windsor Castle.

1871 the population of the municipal borough was 11,769 and in 1881 12,273; that of the parliamentary borough (area 3253 acres) in the same years was 17,281 and 19,082 respectively. Of this last total 3464 were in Buckinghamshire, into which county the parliamentary borough of Windsor extends.

Windsor Castle, from its commanding position, its stately group of ancient buildings, and its long list of historical associations, is one of the most magnificent and interesting of royal palaces. It has for many centuries

been the chief residence of the English sovereigns! As early as the time of the Heptarchy a stronghold of some importance existed at Windsor ; the chief part of this still remains, and forms the great circular mound, about 125 feet in diameter, on which the Round Tower now stands. This great earth- work was once surrounded by the fosse, agger, and vallum which were usually constructed to defend both Roman and Saxon strongholds. The primitive wooden enclosure was replaced by a stone circuit-wall in the time of William the Conqueror ; and the first complete Round Tower was built by Henry III. about 1272, but was wholly reconstructed on a more massive scale by Edward III., who in 1344 designed the new tower to form a meeting-place for his newly-estab- lished order of the Knights of the Garter. Edward selected this spot because, according to a popular legend (quoted by Froissart), it was on the summit of the circular mound that King Arthur used to sit surrounded by his knights of the Round Table. The main bulk of the present Round Tower is of this date; but its walls were heightened, and the tall flag-turret was added by the court architect, Sir Jeffrey Wyatville, in the reign of George IV. In addition to the Round Tower, Henry III. constructed long lines of circuit-walls, crowned at intervals with many smaller towers, one of which, named after him, still exists in good preserva- tion. He also built a great hall, kitchen, and other apart- ments, together with a chapel, which was afterwards pulled down to make room for the present chapel of St George. The beautiful little chapel cloister which Henry III. built still exists, and on its walls are traces of contemporary paintings in distemper. Another chapel was built by Henry III. and dedicated to his favourite saint, Edward the Confessor. This graceful building, with an eastern apse, is now called the Albert Memorial Chapel; a good deal of Henry III.'s work still exists in the lower part of its walls, but the upper part was rebuilt in 1501-3 by Henry VII. Some years later the unfinished chapel was given by Henry VIII. to Cardinal Wolsey, and for long after it was known as '"Wolsey's tomb-house." Wolsey engaged a Florentine sculptor named Benedetto? to make him a very magnificent and costly tomb of marble and gilt bronze, with a recumbent effigy at the top, probably very similar in design to Torrigiano's tomb of Henry VII. at Westminster. The rich bronze work of Wolsey's tomb was torn off and melted by order of the Commonwealth in 1642, and the mere metal was sold for the then large sum of £600. In 1805 the black marble sarcophagus, stripped of its bronze ornaments, was

moved from Windsor and used as a monument over Nelson's grave in the crypt of St

Paul's. Though Wolsey's tomb-house was roofed in and used for mass by James II., the stone vaulting was not com- pleted till recent times, when the whole place was fitted up by Sir Gilbert Scott as a memorial to the Prince Consort. Its internal walls were then lined with rich marbles, and decorated with reliefs by Baron Triqueti, in a style some- what tawdry and discordant with the old building.

The magnificent chapel of St George ranks next to Westminster Abbey as a royal mausoleum, though no king was buried there before Edward IV., who left directions in his will that a very splendid tomb was to be erected with an effigy of himself in silver. Nothing now remains of this, except part of the wrought iron grille which sur- rounded the tomb—one of the most elaborate and skilfully wrought pieces of iron-work in the world. This grille has recently been moved from the north aisle to the north side of the sanctuary. The next sovereign buried here was Henry VIII., who directed that his body should be laid beside that of Jane Seymour, in a magnificent bronze and marble tomb. The tomb was never completed, and what existed of its metal-work was probably melted down by the Commonwealth. No trace of it now remains. The chapel itself is one of the finest examples of Perpendicular archi- tecture in England, and is on the whole finer in design than the other two royal chapels, those of King's College at Cambridge and that of Henry VII. at Westminster, which were a little later in date. The existing building was begun by Edward IV., who in 1473 pulled down almost the whole of the earlier chapel, which had been completed and filled with stained glass by Edward III. in 1363. The nave of St George's was vaulted about the year 1490, but the choir groining was not finished till 1507; the hanging pendants from the fan vaulting of the choir mark a later development of style, which contrasts strongly with the simpler lines of the earlier nave vault. In 1516 the lantern and the rood-screen were completed, but the stalls and other fittings were not finished till after 1519.

The present private apartments of the sovereign at Windsor were mostly rebuilt or remodelled by Sir Jeffrey Wyatville, but some of the rooms, and

especially the library, contain fine mantelpieces and ceilings of the 16th and 17th centuries. Among the many treasures preserved in the royal library is a fine collection of drawings by the chief Italian painters, together with three volumes of MSS. in the auto- graph of Leonardo da Vinci, illustrated with many draw- ings by his hand.5 The library also contains a magnificent series of portraits by Holbein, eighty-seven in number, highly finished in sepia and chalk, representing the chief personages of Henry VIII.'s court—all of them works of the highest beauty and marvels of iconic vigour. The foundation at- tached to the royal chapel, which possesses the privileges of a "royal peculiar," consists of a dean, who is exempt from any episcopal jurisdiction, and a college of canons.

The royal forest of Windsor is one of the finest in the country, though it has been much reduced in size even since 1790, when it contained about 60,000 acres; many of its oaks are of great size and antiquity. (J. H. M.)

WINDWARD ISLANDS. See Wesr Inorzs.

WINE

HE word "wine" in its widest sense includes all alcoholic beverages derived from _ sacchariferous vegetable juices by spontaneous fermentation; in the

1 See Loftie, Windsor, reprinted with etchings from The Portfolio, London, 1885; Tighe and Davis, Annals of Windsor, 1860; and Ashton, Illustrations of Windsor Castle, 1841.

2 Probably a son or nephew of the Florentine sculptor Benedetto da Maiano, who died in 1497 ; another member of the same family was employed by Wolsey at Hampton Court.

narrower sense of its ordinary acceptance it designates the fermented product of grape juice, with which alone the present article proposes to deal.

Part I.—CuHEMIsTRY. Vinous fermentation, phenomenally and chemically, is

3 These have recently been printed with an English translation by Dr Richter, London, 1883. See also Dr Waagen, Treasures of Art in Britain, London, 1854, vol. ii.

fully explained under FrrMenTATION (vol. ix. p. 92 sq.). From what is said there it will be readily understood that winemaking is an easy art where there is a sufficient supply of perfectly ripe grapes. In Italy, Spain, Greece, and other countries of southern Europe nature takes care of this; in the more northern of the wine-producing dis- tricts of France, and especially on the Rhine in Germany, the culture of the vine means hard work from one end of the year to the other, which only exceptionally finds its full reward. And yet it is in those naturally less favoured districts that the most generous wines are produced. Southern wines excel in body and strength ; but even the best of them lack the beautiful aroma (Blume or bouquet) characteristic of high-class Rhine wine. The large propor- tion of sugar in southern grape juice would appear to be inimical to the development of that superior flavour. Yet in Missouri, for instance, where wine is produced in pretty much the Rhenish way, from Rhenish kinds of grapes, which there ripen far more readily than they do at home, no wine equal in flavour to real Rhine wine has as yet been made. It seems that the hard struggle for existence which the vine-plant has to fight on the Rhine is essential for the development of the peculiar flavour of the wine. To secure the highest attainable degree of maturity in the grapes, the vintage on the Rhine is postponed until the grapes almost begin to wither, and the white grapes on the sunny side of the bunches exhibit a yellowish brown (instead of a green) colour and show signs of flac- cidity. In the best vineyards (where it is worth the trouble) the bunches are carefully

sorted, the ripest being put aside and pressed by themselves. In some places even the individual bunches are analysed and the best berries cut out with a pair of scissors, to be used by themselves. The processes concerned in the extraction of the juice are described below (p. 605). If the production of red wine is intended, the juice is allowed to ferment over the stalks and skins until enough of alcohol has been produced to enable the juice to extract the pigment from the skins. After that juice and residue are separated. The alcohol, however, extracts other things besides the pigment, especi- ally tannin, which imparts to red wines their characteristic astringency. The must (or magma of crushed grapes) is immediately conveyed to a cool cellar, the temperature of which should lie between 9° and 12° C., and is placed in large tubs or vats or open casks, and is then left to itself. Although no yeast is added from without, vinous fermenta- tion sets in sooner or later, and after some four to five days is in full swing. On the seventh day, as a rule, the pro- cess has passed its climax, and after ten to fourteen days the yeast-scum on the surface disappears and the liquid clears up. It now constitutes what is called Jungwein, which still contains a considerable remnant of unfermented sugar. This young wine is drawn off into large casks and placed in cellars having a temperature of 9° to 12° C.; there it is left for some months, generally until the following March. 'The casks are filled almost to the bung-hole and kept full by the occasional addition of wine, the small bung-hole being covered so as to provide an outlet for the carbonic acid, without giving any greater access to the air than is absolutely unavoidable, to prevent acetous fer- mentation. During this period the small remnant of sugar in the young wine gradually ferments away, while the percentage of alcohol undergoes a corresponding gradual in- crease. As this after-fermentation progresses very slowly, there is no perceptible increase of temperature in the liquid, and even the newly-formed yeast cells remain deposited at the bottom as a precipitate. On it certain components of the must, being less soluble in (alcoholic) wine than in the must, separate out, as, for instance, the albumenoids and, most markedly, the bitartrate of potash; this last

separates out conjointly with tartrate of lime and colour- ing-matters, as a coherent crust known as avgol. The finished young wine is drawn off clear into smaller casks, bunged up, and allowed to mature. It is during this period that the "bloom" of the wine develops, probably through the very slow formation of ethers from the alcohol and the acids previously produced, or from traces of higher alcohols by oxidation. How long a wine should be allowed to mature depends on its richness. With relatively poor wines a year's maturing may be aniply sufficient; rich wines continue improving for years.

To give an idea of the composition of grape juice, we quote two analyses of high-class musts of 1868, by Neubauer :—

a eroberg Riesling. ie ae ge ———w ——

ROI sacs skier Says oese aeons | 18:06 24°24 eee (e he 6) (6 |e eacaem men aceacrorecdeotnde 0°42 0°43 ANNO SOTGIVCNOIER Beodoonondconse vocoudees 0522 0°18 Combined organic acids and

CXUNACUS: . vu oceaeenutes corer eae 411 3°92

0°47 %

Supposing such musts to ferment, the albumenoids are partly precipitated as components of the yeast or other- wise, or decomposed, with formation of ammonia salt; part of the phosphates go into the yeast likewise; the greater part of the bitartrate of potash of the juice is pre- cipitated as argol; and the greater part, if not all, of the sugar is decomposed, with formation from every 100 parts of sugar destroyed of alcohol 48°5, carbonic acid 46°9, succinic acid 0°7, glycerin 3:0, matter passing into the yeast 0°9 as principal products.

Besides the predominating process of vinous fermenta- Minor

tion proper, certain minor fermentations and other bye- reactions take place, which lead to the formation of free acetic and other fatty acids, ethers, and traces of higher alcohols. Of these last, however, which play such an important part in whisky-brewing, only very little is formed in

grape-juice fermentation. Of the bye-products the ethers are undoubtedly the most important, because it is they that constitute the bloom ; but our knowledge regard- ing them is very limited. The flavour of a wine is due to two sets of volatile bodies, namely—(i.) cenanthic ether (see Ginantuic Acid, vol. xvii. p. 731), to which is due the smell common to all wines (which remains in an empty wine cask after the bloom proper has gone), and (ii.) a set of ethers (are they ethers ?) which constitute the Llume. Geiger distilled a bottle of good wine and then re-mixed residue and distillate. But the mixture was not drink- able ; yet, after having been bottled up for a long time, it gradually regained its original virtues. These remarks apply only to white Rhenish wines. Red wines, in addi- tion to the components named, contain chiefly colouring and astringent matters. The wines of Hungary, France, &c., as is well known, have a different character from those of the Rhine region; but the scientific analysis of the relations is of comparatively little importance.

In all rich musts part of the sugar escapes fermentation and imparts to the wine a higher or lower degree of sweet- ness; southern wines (port, sherry, &c.), even in their natural condition, contain relatively large percentages of sugar. In their case it is chiefly this sugar, in Rhine wine the glycerin and what there may be of unchanged sugar, which constitute the "body" of the wine. Spanish and Portuguese wines, however, especially those intended

ne 7 Wine-Brewing.—One mae of assisting nature in wine-'| widely spread practice that prevails of disinfecting wine- 'making is the process of gallisizing," so called from its | casks with sulphurous acid (by burning sulphur within

inventor (Gall), which is largely practised on the Rhine. them) before they are used. Ina given vineyard the must produced in a good year is Want of space will not allow of the treatment of wine characterized by certain percentages of free acid and of | analysis generally ; but sufficient has been said to show sugar. In bad years the latter decreases and the former | how far the genuineness of a wine can be proved by increases. But this, according to Gall, can be easily | chemical analysis. Against the most important and fre- remedied by adding sugar and water in sufficient

quantity | quently occurring fraud, namely, the substitution of a to establish the percentages of free acid and sugar which are | genuine, but inferior, for a high class wine of a similar characteristic of the best years, and then allowing the mix- | kind, chemical analysis is at present absolutely powerless. ture to ferment. The sugar is added sometimes in the form It sometimes happens that wine becomes viscous and Injurious of cane sugar (which is no doubt the best substitute for | forms threads when poured from the bottle. This mischief, ferments, natural grape sugar obtainable), but more frequently in the | which is caused by the development of a foreign ferment, °° form of what is known in commerce as "grape sugar," | can be cured by the judicious addition of a solution of which is in reality more or less impure dextrose produced | tannin, which precipitates the "gum." From a similar from potatoes or maize starch (see SuaaR, vol. xxii. p. 623). | cause comes acetous fermentation, which always takes place Scientifically speaking, Gall's method appears to be un- | in a moderate degree, but may assume undue dimensions. objectionable ; but that it does so is really owing to our | Red wines are liable to develop a foreign substance which ignorance of the intricacies of the actual process of grape- | imparts to them a bitter taste. A wine kept in a mouldy Juice fermentation. In any case, grape juice is one thing | cask assumes of course a mouldy taste and smell. Some- and dextrose plus so much pump-water is another; and | times a wine will "capsize": the alcohol and the acid the sale of gallisized as "natural" wine must be pro-| disappear and what was wine becomes an insipid un- nounced a fraud. Science affords a means of distinguishing | drinkable liquid. Most of the injurious effects caused in a gallisized from a natural wine, if the added sugar con- | wine by foreign ferments can be prevented by a process sisted of dextrose. The sugar of normal grape juice is | introduced by Pasteur. The wine is kept for a sufficient half dextrose and half levulose ; a similar mixture is pro- | time at a temperature of 70° C. in the absence of air, and duced from added cane sugar. In the process of fermenta- | then transferred to a germ-free cask, without allowing it tion the dextrose is the first to disappear ; the rest of the | to come in contact with more air than can be helped. The lzvulose then follows. Hence a finished natural wine, if | only objection to Pasteur's precautionary method is that it it turns the plane of polarized light at all, will turn it to | renders the wine slightly flat through the removal of part the left; but, if the wine was doctored with

*dextrose, | of its carbonic acid. No doubt these deleterious con- certain dextro-rotatory impurities survive to the end and | sequences might be prevented to a very great extent if the the wine turns the plane of polarization to the right | fermentation were conducted from the first in casks which (Neubauer). A commission of experts who met in Berlin | communicated with the air only through a (wide enough) in 1884 declared gallisizing to be a legitimate practice as | tube full of cotton wool, which medium is known to filter long as the water added does not amount to more than | off all germs (see FERMENTATION, vol. ix. p. 95). twice the weight of the added sugar. Liebig long ago Efervescing or Sparkling Wines.—These wines are Spark- recommended the addition of a concentrated solution of | largely impregnated with carbonic acid engendered by an ling neutral tartrate of potash to ready-made wine, as a means | after-fermentation in the closed bottle by means of added "™** for reducing its acidity. If the free acid is tartaric, it | sugar. The art originated in Champagne, where the best combines with the tartrate into cream of tartar, which | sparkling wines are produced, and whence it has spread gradually separates out and can be removed by decanta- | to the Rhine, the Moselle, and other districts. The natural tion or filtration. Long before Gall, Chaptal showed | wine of Champagne is not of a very high order ; yet it pro- that bad must may be improved by adding the calculated | duces the best champagne. For champagne-making blue weight of (cane) sugar and neutralizing the excessive acid | grapes are preferred. In eliminating the juice excessive by means of powdered marble. The principal feature in | pressure is avoided, so as to keep the must clear of particles Chaptal's, as compared with Gall's method, is that it dis- | of skin. The processes of fermentation and clearing, as cards the resources of the pump. well as those connected with the making of champagne*

Plaster- In Spain, Portugal, and France it is a very common | generally, are described in detail below (p. 606). Cham-

ing wine. practice to dust over the grapes with plaster of Paris or to | pagne-makers distinguish three grades of effervescence.

WINE

for exportation into Great Britain, are habitually doctored by the addition of cane sugar and cognac.

add the plaster to the must. The intention is, in the former case, to prevent putrefaction of the berries, in the latter to add to the chemical stability of the wine. Ac- cording to experience, a plastered wine is ready for bottling sooner than it would be in its natural condition. The chemical process involved consists in this: the sulphate of lime, CaSO,, decomposes the bitartrate of potash, (C,H,O,) KH, of the must, with the formation of insoluble tartrate of lime, (C,H,0,)Ca, and soluble acid sulphate of potash, KHSO,. 'The latter takes up potash from, chiefly, the phosphate present and becomes normal salt, K,SO,, with the formation of free acid (e.g., phosphoric acid),

603

sulphuric acid determination, in the case of German wines more especially, is rendered very uncertain owing to the

In mousseux the pressure in the bottle amounts to from 4 to 44 atmospheres; in grand mousseux it reaches 5 atmospheres ; and less than 4 atmospheres' pressure con- stitutes cremant (from la créme, "cream"), a wine which throws up a froth but does not give off carbonic acid violently. A champagne which contains relatively little sugar is called "dry"; it is chiefly this kind which is imported into Great Britain, where champagne is used habitually as a dinner wine. In France a sweet wine 18 preferred. The intensely sweet substance called "saccha- rine" (see Sucar, vol. xxii. p. 623) has been utilized for producing a sparkling wine which is both sweet and dry. Cheap champagnes may be (and we believe are) produced by simply adding sugar and some flavouring matter to wine, and then pumping in carbonic acid in the soda-water fashion. The following extract from a table by August Dupré will show the chemical composition of the wines most popular in Great Britain. The numbers may be

Histori- cal sketch.

604

read as grammes per litre or as ounces per 1000 fluid ounces.

*Free * Aleohol.| Acid, Be ae. | Glucose. xed Hock at 30s. a dozen 96 3°5 0°6 18°6 nil » at 120s „ | 104 3 09 | 206 | 1°71 Claret at 15s. „ | 85 | 4:2 15 | a14 | 4:3 » at 66s. 55 85 oe 1°8 18 10 Sherry at 22s. __„ iz at 15} 42 26 say en price: ..... 184 2°8 16 56 35 Port at 32s. a dozen… 186 onl | "Ors 75 43 FIs price 2.65… 182 i isl 31 10 (WEEDS)*

Part Il.—Inpustry AND TRADE.

At the present day wine is practically a European product, although a certain quantity is made in the United States, at the Cape of Good Hope, and in Australia. The principal countries in Europe where the vine is grown to any extent are France, Spain, Portugal, Austria-Hungary, Italy, Germany, and the southern por- tions of Russia and Greece; but in the first six alone is wine an article of much comniercial importance.

In the lands of the Levant the use of wine is as old as the earliest memory of civilization, and we find its introduction ascribed to gods (Dionysus in Greece, Osiris in Egypt), or, in the case of the Hebrews, to the patriarch Noah, the second father of mankind. Corn, wine, and oil appear together (as in the Old Testament) as the main gifts of the soil, the material bases of life and comfort. The cultivation of the vine was the highest achievement of ancient husbandry, impossible to semi-nomadic peoples, who might grow a corn crop, but did not remain long enough in one spot to form vineyards. Thus the vine and the olive are in antiquity the marks and almost the symbols of settled and cultured life. Starting perhaps from Armenia and eastern Pontus, viticulture gradually made its way through the lands of ancient civilization, rejected only by a race like the NABATHANS (q.v.), whose laws were directed to prevent the transition from nomadic to settled life (cp. the Old Testament Rechabites). Of Asiatic wines the most famous was that of Chalybon (Helbon) near Damascus, which was an article of Phcenician commerce in the time of Ezekiel (xxvii. 18) and at a later date furnished the tables of the Persian kings. Of Greek wines the most famous came from the islands (as Chios, Lesbos, Cos) or from points on the Asiatic coast (Strabo, xiv. p. 637). The vine reached Spain through the Phoenicians, and Italy and southern Gaul (Marseilles) from Greece; it had no place in the oldest Roman husbandry,

nor was wine used in the oldest Roman ritual. But in time Italy became a great wine country, and Cato regards viticulture as the most profitable branch of hus- bandry. It was indeed artificially fostered by the Roman republic, which prohibited the import of foreign growths into Italy and stimulated exports by restrictions on wine-growing in the provinces, especially in southern Gaul, which thus became a great market for Italian wines. These restrictions were not wholly removed till the time of Prosus (q.v.), when the reins of empire were no longer in Italian hands. In the first century of our era Spanish and Gaulish as well as Greek wines were drunk at Rome (Pliny), but in Gaul the production seems to have been limited to the districts of the Allobroges and Bituriges on the Rhone and the Gironde. It was after Probus's time that viticulture seems to have been established on the Seine and the Moselle, and Julian when in Gaul still found occasion to discharge an epigram against the false Dionysus of Celtic beer. The northward spread of the vine was doubtless also retarded by difficulties of acclimatization, which were only gradually over- come. In the Middle Ages, when transport was difticult, wine was produced in the south of England and in several parts of Germany where there is now no motive for urging a precarious husbandry. ! The exact mode of vine-culture and wine-making amongst the ancients is somewhat obscure ; but there is reason to believe that the latter, although in a somewhat cruder form, closely resembled the system in use at the present day. As far as viticulture is con- cerned, we find from Pliny and others that the Romans encouraged the upward growth of the vine upon trees and palisades in prefer- ence to the dwarf system now followed in the more northern regions, such as France,—a fact doubtless attributable to the almost tropical luxuriance which the vine attains in Italy. Little comparative information can be obtained as to the style of wine made by the ancients ; but from the few facts we do know it may be presumed that, apart from alcoholic qualities, the wines of Greece and Rome had not the high properties possessed by those of the present day.

1 On the history of viticulture, see especially Hehn, Culturpflanzen, &c., 3d ed., p. 63 sq., and Mommsen, Rom. Gesch., v. 98 sq. In accordance with the history of the plant, the names wine, vinum, &c., are traced by philologists to oives. The further history of the name is obscure; but it

seems to be Indo- European ; the Hebrew yayin is almost certainly a loan-word.

WINE

The introduction of resinous flavours or of salt, then usually resorted to, would hardly suit the present high rearing of vinous products. The vintage in the more favoured districts began towards the end of September and in the less favoured during the following month. Grapes were not gathered until they had attained their fullest maturity, and in many instances they were allowed to dry three or four days in the sun after gathering in order to obtain further sweetness aud body. The grapes were trodden and then submitted to the press, much after the custom still prevalent in Burgundy and Portugal. When, however, the juice was deemed too thin and watery for the production of good wine, it was boiled down to a greater consistency, whilst a small portion of gypsum was added to it. The original receptacles for wine appear to have becn the skins of animals, rendered impervious by oil or resinous substances, but later on the principal vessels were made of earthenware (amphorz aud the like) or, in certain districts, though less frequently, of wood, after the style of modern casks. In modern as compared with ancient times the wine-growing industry has considerably changed its locality. Although Italy and (in a very ininor degree) Greece still produce a considerable quantity of wine, yet France, Spain, and Portugal must now be recognized as the chief homes of viticulture. France is the country whose modern agricultural' history aud export trade are most connected with wine production ; and, although, in consequence of the Phylloxerw and mildew, the yield has fallen off of late years, it still holds the premier position for quantity, variety, and general excellence of quality.

France.

It was only by degrees, owing partly to its soil and partly to France.

the aptitude of its inhabitants, that France developed the position which it now holds as a wine-producing country. Geographically and meteorologically speaking, it is in every way cminently fitted for this. The winters are not too cold, nor, on the other hand, have the summers the

intense heat and drought which are often so prejudicial to the vine in southern climates. The country is throughout of that gently undulating charactér which is so import- ant for the proper exposure and ripening of the grape, whilst the calcareous properties of the soil are especially favourable to the growth of the plant. The habits of the people, moreover, and the system of small holdings have also undoubtedly done much in developing the industry ; for there is, perhaps, no branch of agri- culture which requires more minute attention, or for which such a system of land tenure is more suitable, than vine culture. At present throughout all France there are only ten departments in which wine is not produced,—Calvados, Cétes-du-Nord, Finistére, Manche, Nord, Oise, Orne, Pas-de-Calais, Seine-Inférieure, and Somme ; and in 1887 the total production amounted to 24,333,284 hectolitres, or some 585,332,250 gallons, which, however, is con- siderably less than the average for the previous ten years, owing to the immense injury caused by the Phylloxera. In 1875, the annus mirabilis of wine-production in France, the yield amounted to 83,632,391 hectolitres, or nearly three and a half times that of twelve years later.

As France is the home of wine-growing, so must the Médoc dis- Médoc,

trict in its turn be considered the very heart of that industry in France, for nowhere have such elegance, finesse, and distinct variety been obtained as on the banks of the Gironde. Unlike the products of the different vineyards of most other districts, which are purchased by the merchant and vatted to supply a general wine of commerce, the yields of the principal estates of Médoc are kept distinct, and reach the consumer as the product of the particular growth and the particular year. This practice is, almost without exception, resorted to with what are known as the classed growths and the superior bourgeois, whilst in seasons in which the wines are of good quality it is continued down to the lower grades. The area of the department of Gironde is about 2,407,000 acres, of which some 500,000 acres are under the vine. There are six descriptions of soil :—(1) that of the valleys, chiefly alluvial, the vines on which produce wines of considerable colour and vinosity, but wanting in Jinesse ; (2) the strong lands, which require frequent working and the assistance of lighter earths and manures, although, when of a ferruginous colour, this soil is

very favourable to the vine; (3) the marshy lands, which are of considerable extent, and which, when gravel enters into their composition, are extremely fertile ; (4) lands formed at the surface of gravel, quartz, and heavy sand, with clay subsoil, over which are grown most of the finest vines of the Médoc ; (5) the silicious or flinty soils, covering about one- half of the department, of which some portions, when worked with clay and calcareous elements, are suitable for vine cultivation ; (6) the intermediate lands, between the strong soil and the last-named, which are chiefly available for the growth of the commoner descrip- tions of white wines. The principal vines used in the Médoc are, for red wines, the Cabernets (2), the Merlot, and the Malbec, and for white wines, the Semillon, the Sauvignon, and the Muscatelle. The vines of the Cabernet species, although producing excellent grapes, are especially susceptible to damage from weather at flower- ing time, and consequently are not so greatly used as the Merlot,

wily &

which is very productive, and not so liable to attacks from Oidiwm as other descriptions. The grapes of this vine, however, have to be gathered with promptitude, as they ripen very quickly and if subjected to rain soon become rotten. The vine most generally selected, however, is the Malbec, which is a remarkably early bearer, its chief disadvantage being that it is very susceptible to frost. Of the various vine diseases and pests the chief is undoubtedly the Phylloxera (see VINE, p. 238 above), which was first seen in Médoc in 1869. The amount of damage caused by this insect during the past fifteen years is almost incredible, and at one time it was feared that the vineyards would be wholly destroyed. Of late, however, con- siderable success has been met with in checking its inroads, the area now under vine cultivation being larger than was the case when its ravages first began to make themselves severely felt. Another evil which has occasionally been very virulent is the Oidium, a species of fungus, which first made its appearance in France in 1851, about which time it also devastated the vineyards of Madeira. Another cause from which an enormous amount of damage has been done of recent years is the mildew, which not only destroys the leaves and fruit, but further leaves its taint on wines made from grapes affected by it. It is believed, however, that a

complete cure or prevention for this pest has been found in a solution of sulphate of copper. In addition to these enemies, the vine-grower has to take account of hail, frost, and coulure— this last cansed by too great humidity of the soil, which leads to large quantities of flowers falling from the branches before turning into grapes, and also to the grapes themselves falling. The vintage in Médoc nsually commences between the middle and end of Sep- tember and lasts from two to three weeks. The process is a very simple one. The grapes are gathered and brought on bullock drays to tle press-house ; here they are separated from the stalks and placed in vats, where they are allowed to ferment for a period of from seven to fifteen days. As soon as the wine is sufficiently made, it is drawn off into hogsheads and removed to light and airy stores. The first month the bung is put lightly in and the cask filled up every three or four days ; the second month it is put in more firmly and the cask filled every eight days. In March, the lees having fallen, the first sowéirage or drawing-off takes place. A second is made in June and a third in November, after which the hogsheads are turned on their side and the fillings-up cease. In the second and following years, after the wine has been removed to dark cellars, two drawings-off suffice, one in spring and the other in autumn. After this, if the wine ferments, it is drawn off in a sulphured eask, and if necessary fined with eggs and again drawn off in a fortnight.

The great variety of qualities that the wines of Médoc possess has necessitated their classification, by which they have been divided into paysan, artisan, bourgeois, and fine growths, the last- named being subdivided into five categories, and known as the "classed growths." This classification is the result of years of observation and study, going back to the 18th century, its present form being the result of a eonference of brokers in 1855. Subjoined is a list of the red wines of Médoc (the English "claret"'), with the names of the eantons to which they belong.

First GROWTHS.

Chatcau Latour, Pauillac. Haut-Brion, Pessac.

Chateau Lafitte, Pauillac. As Margaux, Margaux. of

SECOND GROWTHS. Chateau Mouton-Rothschild, Pauillac. | Chateau Gruaud-Larose, St Julien. 5 Rauzan-Segla, Margaux. » Branne-Cantenac, Cantenac. a Rauzan-Gassies, _„ »» Pichon-Longueville, Pauillac. 35 Léoville-Lascases, St Julien. 1 Pichon- Longueville-Lalande, Léoville-Poyferré, Se Pauillac.

- Léoville-Barton, Ss 33 Dueru-Beaucaillou, St Julien. – Durfort-Vivens, Margaux. Cos d'Estournel, St Estéphe. aA Lascombes, fr Chateau Montrose, es Gruaud – Larose -Sarget, St Julien.

THIRD GROWTHS.

Chateau Palmer, Cantenac.

Chateau Kirwan, Cantenac. La Lagune, Ludon.

D'Issan, Cantenac. fe

*Fe Lagrange, St Julien. Sp Desmirail, Margaux. » Langoa, 3 », Calon-Ségur, St Estéphe. * Giscours, Labarde. rp Ferriére, Margaux.*

AA Malescot, Margaux. . Becker, a

43 Brown Cantenac, Cantenac.

FourtH GRoWTHs.

Chateau Saint-Pierre, St Julien. Chateau La Tour Carnet, St Laurent. », Branaire-Duluc, „ », Rochet, St Estéphe. . Talbot, – ap Beychevelle, St Julien. aA Duhart-Milon, Pauillac. | Le Prieuré, Cantenac. », Poujet, Cantenac. | Marquis de Therme, Margaux.

FiIrTH GROWTHS. Chateau Pontet-Canet, Pauillac. Chateau Le Tertre, Arsac.

5 Batailley, a es Haut-Bages, Pauillac. Grand-Puy-Lacoste, eS » Pedesclaux, 9 Ducasse-Grand-Puy, : fp Belgrave, St Laurent. Chateau Lynch-Bages, as ne Camensac, 35

» Lynch-Moussas, ,, Cos-Labory, St Estéphe.

»» Dauzac, Labarde. Chateau Clerc-Milon, Pauillac.

+3 Mouton-d'Armailhacq, Pauil- a5 Croizet-Bages __,, lac. op Cantemerle, Macau.

605

The average yield of the Gironde during the ten years 1876-1886 amounted to 1,435,863 heetolitres, or about 31,589,000 gallons, an average which has been placed considerably lower than that of the preceding decade by the small yields of 1881, 1882, 1884, and 1885. In each of the prolific years of 1874 and 1875 the production of the Gironde exceeded 5,000,000 hectolitres, and in 1869 it reached 4,500,000. The principal claret vintages of the 19th century are considered to have been those of 1815, '25, '28, '31, '34, "41, °47, "48, 58, 64, 69, 70, '74, and '75. From 1875 to 1882 nothing exceptional was produced. Of the vintages since 1882 it is still too early to speak, although it is probable that some of the 1884's, where they have escaped the mildew, and the 1887's will turn out well.

Sauterne, or what is known as the white-wine-produeing district Sauterne.

of Médoc, lies to the south of Bordeaux ; and to those who are only familiar with the Médoc vineyards it gives the impression of being quite a distinct country, having more the appearance of the Rhine provinces than of the south of France. The vintage in the Sauterne district is frequently as late as the end of October, and in some cases does not take place until November. The method followed differs from that of Médoc, the grapes being gathered almost one by one, and not until they have almost assumed the appearance of rottenness, or extreme ripeness, so that in faet fermentation has commenced before the fruit is taken from the plant. The Sauterne grapes are white and of medium size, and yield a must which does not lose the whole of the sugar during fermentation, but remains sweet without the addition of spirit. In gathering the grapes, it is customary for women to cut off with seissors the berries as they ripen, the

vintage thus lasting over a considerable time. The grapes, moreover, are not put into vats, but are carefully pressed and the juice put into hogsheads, while the fermentation completes itself. 'The first result is a very sweet luscious wine, known as the téte, which is chiefly sent to Russia, where it makes enormous prices. Following this a second wine, of a drier character, called millieu, is made from the less saccharine grapes, this being the class of wine generally known as Sauterne. There is also a third process, in which all the remaining grapes are mixed together and pressed, the result being called the quewe. In the preparation of the better class wines for the English markct the three varieties are usually mixed in certain proportions, so that the wine sent to the United Kingdom is very different from the oily liqueur-like article which is in such favour in the colder elimate of Russia. As a rule all the finer descriptions are put into bottle before ship- ment, the corks bearing the name of the chateau and the vintage, as is the case with the chateau-bottled red wine. The charaeter of Sauterne may be best described as being, in good years, very luscious and yet very delicate, and possessing a special séve, or, in other words, having that special taste which, while it remains in the mouth, leaves the palate perfectly fresh. The Sauterne district comprises the communes of Sauternes, Bommes, and Barsac, with part of those of Preignac, Saint-Pierre-de-Mons, and Fargues. The finer growths, like the red wines of Médoc, are arranged in classes, in the following order :—

GRAND First GRowTH. Chateau Yquem, Sauternes.

First GROWTHS. Chateau La Tour Blanche, Bommes. Chateau Climens, Barsac. ;

» Peyraguey, "A », Bayle (Guiraud), Sauternes. 9) Vigneau, 3 pe Rieussec, Fargues. 7 Suduiraut, Preignac. ~~ Rabaut, Bommes.

a3 Coutet, Barsac. SECOND GROWTHS.

Chateau Myrat, Barsac. Chateau Caillou, Barsac.

7 Doisy, 2? ” Suau, ”

a Peyxotto, Bommes. vs Malle, Preignac.

90 D’Arche, Sauternes. 00 Romer, _,,

An Filhot, ap x Lamothe, Sauternes.

» Bronstet-Nérac, Barsac.

The prices of the “grand” Sauterne wines vary enormously accord- ing to the year, the quality of which is also very various. Between 1870 and 1885 the first growths have ranged from £8 to £60 per hogshead. Chateau Yquem in the ordinary way fetches from one- fifth to one-fourth more than the other first growths, whilst a rather greater difference rules between the first and second growths. There is, however, no positive rule in this respect; for if, as occasionally happens, a first growth is vintaged a little too late and does not succeed so well as some second growths, the latter will fetch quite as high, if not higher, prices.

Champagne takes its name from the old province which is now Cham- represented by the departments of Marne, Haute-Marne, Aube, and pagne.

Ardennes. It is from the first two that the greater portion of this description of wine is derived, the best qualities being pro- duced in Marne. The vineyards are situated on the banks of the river in the neighbourhood of Epernay, and extend from the right bank over the mountains of Rheims to the vicinity of that city and from the left bank to the small town of Vertus. Of those near the river the principal are at Ay, Dizy, Hautvillers, and Mareuil on the right bank, and at Pierry and Moussy on the left, whilst in the district reaching to the south of these are those of Avize, Cramant,

Saumur,

and Vertus. The vineyards of the mountain include those of Verzenay, Sillery, Rilly-en-Montagne, and Bouzy. The sparkling champagnes arc made from both white and red grapes, carefully pressed, and the wine is of an amber colour, more or less deep ac- cording to vintage and to the proportion of black grapes used. The grapes are pressed in a large pressoir, the first pressing yielding the best quality, whilst the second and third are proportionately in- ferior. The wine from the first pressing is about equal in quantity to that of the other two combined. The vintage usually takes place in the first week in October, the young wines being left to ferment in the cask until the winter, when the first racking takes place, which operation is repeated a month later, when the wines are fined previously to being put in bottle. The wines of the various growths are mixed in the proportions desired, and a certain quantity of old wine (preserved in cask) is added. The amount of saccharine in the wine is also ascertained, and if deficient the requisite quantity in the form of refined candied sugar is added to bring it to the necessary degree for producing fermentation in the bottle. The bottles, which are carefully selected, — those showing the least flaw being rejected, —have sloping shoulders, in order that the sediment may not adhere to the sides in the after-process. The wine, after being corked, is secured by an iron clip, and the bottles are arranged in piles in a horizontal position, in which they remain throughout the summer months. During this time the carbonic acid gas is generated, as is also a sediment, which falls to the side of the bottle. The wines are then stacked away in cellars until required for shipment. Previous to the wine being prepared for this pur- pose, the bottles are placed in a slanting position, neck downwards, in cranks made in the shape of the letter A, and are daily shaken very slightly, so that by degrees the sediment falls into the cork. This operation is very delicate, the slightest twist being disastrous. The incline is gradually increased, so that at last the bottle is almost perpendicular,—a process which generally takes from three to six weeks, With the sediment thus on the cork, the iron clip is removed, when the force of the wine sends out the cork together with the sediment. The wine is now subjected to dosage or liqueur- ing, the amount of which depends upon the sweetness required ; the bottles are then filled up with wine, corked, and wired ready for shipment. The liqueur used is made from the finest wine, candied sugar, and cognac, the usual amount of which for wine sent to the United Kingdom is from one

to four per cent. For colder countries the percentage of liqueur is much greater, in some cases exceeding twenty per cent. The liqueuring is regulated by a machine, by which the quantity is measured to a nicety ; but in some establishments it is still measured by hand with a small ladle. The principal centres of the champagne trade are Rheims and Epernay, although important establishments exist at Ay, Avize, Chalons, and Dizy. The total production of Marne averages about a million hectolitres annually. A large proportion of this, however, is unsuited for making champagne. At the same time the supply is still considerably in excess of the demand, the stock in mer- chants' cellars in the district having amounted in May 1887 to upwards of 82,000,000 bottles, whilst at least half that quantity existed in cask, the total stock thus equalling nearly six years' requirements.

Another district of France which produces large quantities of sparkling white wine is that of Saumur, in the department of Maine-et-Loire. These wines have been known for centuries, but up to 1834 were only used as still wines. At that date a successful attempt was made to convert them into sparkling wines, after which they were principally used to supplement the deficient vintages in Champagne. In 1874 sparkling Saumur was introduced into the United Kingdom in its own name, and has since inade con- siderable advance in the English market, owing mainly to its good quality and its moderate price. It has a great resemblance to the winés of Champagne, and is very fine and wholesome; and, although it lacks the body and finesse of the best growths of Marne, it com- pares very favourably with the lower grades of these wines, and is also much lower in price, the best descriptions being obtainable by the English consumer at little more than three shillings a bottle. The judges of taste and analysis at the Paris exhibition in 1878 gave the following award: "The wine does not differ from Cham- pagne in respect of sweetness and lightness; it is equally white, clear, and sparkling. It contains in nearly the same proportion the same substances as the wines of Champagne." The town of Saumur is situated on the banks of the Loire and at the foot of a command- ing range of hills, to which latter fact the country in a great measure owes its success as a producer of sparkling wines, as the hills furnish, at a trifling cost and in excellent quality, mile upon mile of the excellent cellarage which is indispensable to their preparation. These

cellars are excavations in the hills from which the limestone has been taken, and possess the advantages of easy access and even temperature. The best wines of the district are made from black grapes pressed en blanc, as in Champagne, the usual variety of vine being the Breton. The white grapes employed are the Pincaw blanc, which are vintaged a full fortnight later than the red grapes. According to the system of manufacturing sparkling Saumur, one-

Wink

half of each year's must is put into barrels by itsclf to ferment and become wine, and is kept to be mixed with one-half of the next year's must. In the following May the mixture is put into bottles to undergo its second fermentation, which is induced in the same manner as in champagne, the wine being treated in precisely the same manner. The scdiment is also worked into the neck in a similar way, and is thrown off by the system of disgorgement. The average yield of Maine-et-Loire for the ten years ended 1887 was about 11,990,000 gallons.

Next to those of Médoc, the wines of Burgundy are the best Bur- French red wines known in England. This district comprises the gundy. departments of Céte-d'Or, Yonne, and Saéne-et-Loire, known in former days as Upper and Lower Burgundy. By far the finest qualities are grown in Céte-d'Or, in the two communes of Nuits and Beaune. The former lies in the neighbourhood of Dijon, and comprises some of the choicest growths, merging into Beaune in the south, which in its turn adjoins the Macon district, in the department of Saéne-et-Loire. The wines of Céte-d'Or are grown on the slopes of a range of hills which traverses the department, the best vineyards lying about half-way up the side, where they get the full rays of the sun, the vine apparently deteriorating as it is planted above or below this altitude. As in the case of Médoc wines, the best growths are kept distinct and have a high reputa- tion. The usual classification is as follows :—

Red Wines.

Class I.—Romanée-Conti, Chaibertin, | Class III.—Continued. Clos Vougeot, Richebourg, La mont, Cailles, Cras-Murge, Bou- Tache. dots,

Porrets, Pruliers, Thaurey, Class II.—Musigny, Romanée – St-Vaucrains, Cailleret, Champans, Vivant, Le Clos Saint-Georges, Clavoillon, Clos Margeot, Clos Le Corton, Les Bonnes Mares, Le Tavannes,, Noyer, Bart, part of Clos du Tart. ‘ Corton, Echezaux, Féves, Gréves, Class III.—Arvelets, Rugiens, Beau- Ferriére, Sautenot.

White Wines.

Class II.— Continued. Combettes, Genevriéres, Goutte d’Or, Charlemagne.

Class J.—Montrachet. Class II.— Chevalier Batard Montrachet,

The wines of Céte-d’Or are full-bodicd and of excellent colour ; they are of great reputation on the Continent, especially in Belgium, although till recently not so well known in England, owing to the difficulty experienced in keeping them. But this drawback has now been removed by increased care in their treatment, and by a system of freezing in the young wines, by which a quantity of the natural water is removed and the alcoholic strength of the re- mainder thereby increased. One of the principal features of the Céte-d’Or is the Hospice de Beaune, a celebrated charitable institu- tion and hospital, the revenues of which are principally derived from certain vineyards in Beaune, Corton, Volnay, and Pommard.

The wines of these vineyards are sold every year by auction on the

first Sunday in November, and the prices they make serve as standards for the various growths of Burgundy. In Yonne, lying

to the north-west of Céte-d’Or, a considerable quantity of wine is

made, both red and white. The former has good colour and body,

with a fair bouquet, but is much inferior to the wines of Burgundy proper. The latter, grown mostly in the commune of Chablis, is Chablis, of fair quality and is generally known by the name of this district. Saéne-et-Loire, which lies to the south of Beaune, produces the

wine known as Macon, grown in the neighbourhood of that town, Macon. the best growths being those of Théorine. The wines of MAcon

have most of the Burgundy characteristics, but are lighter in colour

and body, and lack much of their bouquet and flavour.

Red and white wines are produced in the arrondissement of Hermit-Valence in the department of Dréme. These wines are of excellent age. quality and improve greatly in bottle, in which state they will keep for many years. The white wines are especially choice, and have a far greater reputation than the red. They are soft and rich, and are said to have no analogy to any other white wine known.

The departments of Charente and Charente-Inférieure, although Charente. their wines are unknown in the United Kingdom, are celebrated on account of the brandy distilled from them. This industry has suffered enormously of late years from the ravages of the Phylloxera, which has destroyed many of the best vineyards in the neighbour- hood of Cognac. The wines of the district are in themselves common and of little use but for the still, for which purpose they cannot be approached by those of any other department. But the proportion of wine required to make brandy is so high that, unless it can be produced at a moderate price, the cost of the spirit becomes enormous ; hence the proprietors have been unable to obtain a sufficiently high price for their wines to make it worth their while to incur the cost of resisting the plague, and consequently a large quantity of vine-land has gone out of cultivation. In 1874 the produce of the two departments amounted to over 250,000,000 gallons, whereas that of 1887 was little over 14,000,000 gallons. During the last two or three years re-planting has been diligently carried on.

The above constitute the principal varieties of French wines known in the United Kingdom ; they form, however, but a sinal]l fraction of the entire production of the country. Enormous quan-

Montrachet, Charmes,

W oi it Ts

tities are produced in the southern provinces, but they are of a commoner description and are reserved for home consumption. Thus in 1887 the two departments of Aude and Hérault yielded between them 5,643,832 hectolitres, or about 124,160,000 gallons, which was considerably in excess of the total produce of the districts previously alluded to. In the department of Pyrénées-

of wine, however, has not hitherto been in great demand in Great

Britain. In addition to Manzanilla, there is another description of somewhat similar wine, but with less characteristic taste and some-

what more body, known as Montilla ; it is grown in the province Montilla, of Cordova. Yet another description of wine grown in the vicinity, Moguer, on the right bank of the Guadalquivir, is that known as Moguer, &e.

Algeria.

Sherry.

Orientales, in the old province of Roussillon, a full-bodied and deep-coloured wine is produced, a small portion of which is sent to Great Britain and is of a better quality than most southern growths. This wine is known by the old name of the province and is of considerable value for blending light thin wines. There are also some very fair wines made in the department of Jura and in the district lying east of Burgundy.

Algeria.—Owing to the devastation caused by the Phylloxera in France much attention has of recent years been bestowed on vine culture in Algeria. The result of the first experiments has been very encouraging. M. Bouchardat in a recent report to the Medical Society of Paris wrote—" In the not very distant future by means of the vine we may look for the definite conquest of Algeria. Through its cultivation new colonists will be brought into the country and the habit of labour and its accompaniment, wealth, will result both for them and for the natives. It is through the cultivation of the vine also that we may hope to remove the greatest

present obstacle to progress in Algeria, viz., the unhealthiness of the marshlands ; for in reality on all the soils where the vine is cultivated we soon see those conditions disappear to which intermittent fevers owe their origin." Algeria undoubtedly possesses soil and climate suit- able to vine culture ; in fact, the vine seems almost to grow at will and is productive in the third year after being planted. The laying out of vineyards is consequently proceeding very rapidly, and con- siderable improvement by means of skilled labour is becoming noticeable in the making of the wines. The wines of Algeria re- semble that of Roussillon in general character, being full-bodied, with good colour and alcoholic strength. The greatest quantity is produced in the province of Algiers, although there is a consider- able yield in the provinces of Constantine and Oran, the latter being cultivated principally by Spaniards.

Spain.

Spain is second only in reputation to France among wine-growing countries. Its white wine, known as sherry, first brought it into prominence ; and the red wines of Tarragona and Rioja have of late years formed a great feature in the commerce of the Peninsula. The reduced yield of the French vineyards, especially of those pro- ducing the cheapest wines, owing to the ravages of the Phylloxera, combined with an increased home consumption, has compelled that country to import large quantities of wine for its own use, and Spain has taken a foremost place in supplying the demand which has thus sprung up. In addition to this, a considerable quantity is exported to other countries, Great Britain amongst the number, in the shape of Spanish claret and port, which are perhaps of as good an intrinsic value as any that reach the United Kingdom. The wines of Andalusia naturally claim a priority in description.

Sherry, so called from the town of Jerez (Xeres) de la Frontera, the headquarters of this industry, is produced in Andalusia in the area included between San Lucar in the north, Port St Mary in the south, and Jerez in the east. This tract of country contains in all about 25,000 acres of vine-growing soil. The system of pre- paring sherry is different from that followed in the case of most other wines. In France every small

grower can make his few hogsheads of wine, and when these have been made the process is complete. In Jerez, on the contrary, the immense establishments, many of them owned by Englishmen, purchase the grape juice or fruit and make their own must. The wines, which are stored in bodegas or sheds above ground, are reared for a number of years as soleras. These soleras consist of vats of various characters of sherry, the style of which is unvaryingly kept up, and whenever a quantity is drawn off they are filled up with wines of the same description. Certain quantities taken from various soleras are blended in order to make up the regular marks, by which means the style of different shipments is maintained. There are several different varieties of sherry known in the United Kingdom, which may be divided into the Amontillado and the Manzanilla classes. The Amontillado class may be again subdivided into Fino and Oloroso, the former being the more delicate; frequently the two descriptions are different developments of exactly the same wine. The Manzanilla wines are very much lighter and drier, and are the produce of vines grown on the coast. In making up the marks for the different markets several varieties of sweetness and colour are required. 'These are obtained by the addition of vino dulce made from grapes which are allowed to grow dead-ripe, and of colouring matters made from wine boiled down almost toa liqueur. A cer- tain amount of grape spirit is added to check the tendency to re- fermentation. This system applies only to the Amontillado class. The Manzanillas are mostly shipped in their natural state, with spirit added in small quantities only where it is feared that the wines will otherwise not be able to stand the journey. This description

which resembles a cheap sherry, and is only used for blending with the commonest qualities. Of late a large quantity of this wine has found its way to France to assist in making a cheap wine for the French consumers. Other districts in the south of Spain well known for the production of wine are those of Malaga and Rota. The former yields a sweet description, principally made from Muscat grapes, although a coarse drier wine of the sherry type is also produced. The Rota district is known principally for a sweet red wine, known in England as '"'teut" (tinto), mainly used for ecclesiastical purposes.

The central districts of Spain also produce some good red wines Val de suitable for exportation, such as Val de Pefias, which have moderate Peiias.

colour and considerable strength, and are said to be the produce of vines brought from Burgundy. The name Val de Pefias, how- ever, is often given also to wines grown in the neighbouring dis- tricts. The system of storing these wines is very similar to that mentioned by Horace in connexion with Falernian, and is still practised at Montilla. The wines are placed in large earthen jars (tinajas) like Roman amphore, which are prepared inside with a kind of varnish with a view to the preservation of the wine.

Leon and Old Castile in the northern and central parts of Spain Riojaand furnish about one-half of the wine grown in the entire country. Tarra- On the border of this region is the rich and fertile district of Rioja gona.

(Logrofio), which has a climate admirably suited to the production of wines of moderate strength, The wines of Navarre are more full-bodied and have more colour and alcoholic strength, but owing to want of care in their production are less suitable for exportation. In Catalonia there isa much more important wine industry, the district producing what is known in England as Tarragona or Spanish red. The best quality produced is the wine of the Priorato district (about 15 miles inland from Tarragona), which is very rich and full-bodied, and keeps well. Unfortunately this particular area, Which is chiefly mountainous, is limited. The next descrip- tion to this is the wine of Huesca, which is also fine-coloured and full-flavoured. The wines of Aragon are also good, but require special care owing to their liability to a second fermentation. The best growth is that of Carinena (Zaragoza). The greater part of the Spanish wines imported into France are supplied from Catalonia and Aragon. A French authority on the subject states that " of all the towns in Catalonia which supply wines to France Manresa is in reality the one which, for several years, has sent the largest quantity. This region enjoys a climate more temperate than that of Roussillon, and from hence are derived three-quarters of the wine shipped to France from Barcelona.

Hence may be found all types of wines, including dry white and natural red."

The only islands of the Canary group on which vine culture is Canary now carried on on a commercial scale are those of Gran Canaria wine.

(Grand Canary) and Teneriffe, for although a certain amount is produced at Palma it is all used for local purposes. On the two first- named islands the industry has fallen away of late, owing to the attacks of Oidium, which destroyed the vines at about the same period as in Madeira. Since then the islands have been chiefly de- voted to the production of cochineal, until the recent discovery of aniline dyes, which has, to a great extent, ruined the industry, and again led the inhabitants to turn their attention to vine culture. This has been especially the case in Gran Canaria, where a consider- able area of ground is now planted with vines, and a fair return of wine is obtained. These are being treated similarly to those of Madeira, which they greatly resemble in character. In Teneriffe a wine known as Vidonia, which is of a somewhat similar type, is produced, and is exported in small quantities. Vine-growers in this island adhere more to the methods in vogue in Spain.

Portugal.

The generous, full-flavoured wines known as port are the produce Port.

of the district of Alto Douro in the north-east of Portugal, which begins at a point on the river Douro some 60 miles above Oporto, whence these wines are shipped. 'The whole of the port-wine dis- trict, comprising a region between 30 and 40 miles in length with a maximum breadth of about 12, is rugged and mountainous, necessitating the construction of terraces supported by walls, with- out which protection the soil would inevitably be washed away by the winter rains. The climate of Alto Douro is very cold in winter and extremely hot in summer (frequently 108° Fahr. in the shade). It is owing to this intense heat combined with the peculiar richness of the soil, which is of argillaceous schist formation, that port wines attain to such perfection of colour, body, and ripeness. Till quite recently the means of communication between Oporto and Alto Douro were extremely limited. Roads in the district itself there were none, or very

few, and the only way of getting the produce to the port of shipment was by the river, the naviga-

Cultiva- tion of

the vine for port.

Vintage in Alto Douro.

tion of which, at all times difficult and even dangerous, on account of the numerous rocks and rapids which obstruct its course, is often rendered impossible by freshets. The Douro railway, however, now traverses the whole length of the wine country along the river bank from Oporto, and other lateral railways are in course of con- struction which will open up several fine wine-producing districts hitherto unavailable owing to want of roads.

The method of cultivating the vine in Alto Douro differs con- siderably from those employed in various other parts of the country, where the vines are either trained over pollarded trees or treillaged at a certain height from the ground, or where they are plantcd in rows and grown like bushes. The method is as follows. In November or December trenches are dug, 3 feet to 3 feet 6 inches deep, according as the soil is heavy or light, and 2 feet broad, in which vine cuttings are placed at a distance of 3 feet to 4 feet 6 inches apart from each other. The trenches are then partly filled in, in order that the vines may get all the benefit of the rain-water collecting in them. During the first year of planting great care is taken to keep down all weeds whilst the vines are shooting. At the end of two years the young vines, if they have come on well, can be grafted, the best time for performing this operation being October or February; in this way the period of production is hastened, and the vineyard will yield in four instead of five years' time. Should some of the vines die, their places are usually sup- plied by the process called mergulho or layering: that is, a trench is dug in the direction of the space left bare and in it the stock of the nearest vine is turned down. The trench is then partly filled in, leaving two or three shoots of the buried vine visible to the extent of a couple of

‘“‘eyes”’ above the surface, which shoots are to take the place of the missing vines. There is also the system of planting from nurseries, which are made with either Portuguese or American varieties. The plot of ground used for the nursery must be kept well clear of weeds and, if in a dry situation, well watered. In two years’ time and during the month of February the young vines can be transplanted, and the year after grafted, when the vineyard is planted. The first of the regular operations in the course of cultivation is to clear away the soil from the feet of the stocks, which takes place directly the vintage is over. At the same time mawure may be given, and, if the vines are strong enough to bear the application, sulphate of carbon may be injected, ou account of the prevalence of Phylloxera. After this the vines are pruned. In March the first annual turning of the soil takes place ; then the branches of the vines are tied to stakes or canes, in which process considerable skill is brought to bear so as to make the vine shoot in the required direction. Immediately after or about the time they blossom the vines are sulphured, to keep off the Oidiwm, which disease is still active in Portugal; and lastly in June the soil is hoed over to destroy the weeds. The turning of the soil, which is effected with an implement resembling a two-pronged hoe, and the cultivation of the vineyards generally, are to a great extent performed by labourers (Gallegos) from Galicia in Spain, but at vintage time serranos from the neighbouring serras also flock in to work.

The vintage in Alto Douro generally commences late in Sep- tember. The grapes are cut by women and children, and are con- veyed in large baskets—twenty-two of which full of grapes will yield a pipe of wine—by Gallegos to the place whcre the wine is to be made. Here they are emptied into large stone tanks, 2 feet to 2 feet 6 inches in depth, each holding from seven to thirty pipes of wine. Each tank is fitted with a beam press, except where the modern screw press has taken its place. As the grapes come in, the stalks are removed, either with a kind of rake or, as in the best managed establishments, with machines called desingacadores, made for the purpose. The white grapes are separated from the red, the “white port” being made from the former; this wine was formerly much appreciated in England, but now finds its chief market on the Continent. When the tank is full, a number of men, and sometimes even women, begin the process of treading, which is coutinued for about forty-eight

hours; after that the must is left to ferment by itself. When the weather has been cold or the year a very ripe one, it has sometimes been found necessary to give as much as seventy-two hours' treading ; nowadays, how- ever, there is seldom need for so much work. When the must has sufficiently fermented, it is drawn off into huge vats, holding as a rule about twenty-five pipes each; at the same time sufficient alcohol is added to prevent acetous fermentation and retain part of the sweetness of the grape. Formerly the drawing-off of the must from the tank was determined simply by taste or Judgment, but of late years the saccharometer is employed to decide when the must has reached the requisite degree of sweetness. The wines are left untouched in the vats till the cold weather causes them to deposit the lees, when they are racked, and at the same time another small addition of brandy is made. The brandy used is with hardly any exception simply distilled wine, and is of very fine quality. About March or April the wines are again racked from their lees into casks, and are sent down either by boat or rail to Oporto, where they are stored, in most cases for a considerable number of years previous

to being shipped. The cheaper wines are an exception, being as a rule shipped when young, also those of the so-called 'vintage " class, which are the finest wines of a good year kept separate and shipped as the produce of that particular year. The following is a list of the most famous " vintages" of the 19th century—1809, '12, "15, 720, 727, 784, "40, °47, "51, °63, G8, "70, 73, 78, Sd, the Imat year when the wine was shipped as a vintage being 1884. The stores or lodges where the wines are warehoused are chiefly situated on the Villa Nova side of the river, facing Oporto, and generally speaking comprise a series of long one-storied stone buildings, with thick partition walls and heavy tiled roofs. The wines are kept in casks ranged in rows of two or three tiers ; in some establishnients large vats, holding from 10 to 110 pipes, are also used, being especi- ally serviceable for blending purposes. The amount of wine con- tained at the present day in these lodges is calculated at something like 80,000 pipes, the gross value of which cannot be less than two and a

half or three million pounds sterling, by far the greater part of this sum representing English capital.

The chief market for port wine is, as it always has been, England. Port- Its introduction into England, which was the beginning of the wine trade in these wines, dates from the end of the 17th century. At trade. first the exportation was small, the annual average for the first ten years being just over 600 pipes. The consumption, however, gradu- ally increased till 1753, when, owing to adulterations and various other causes, port wine fell into disrepute, and the shipments receded to a very low figure. The prices of new wine to the farmer at this time varied between £2 and £3 per pipe, whilst the shipping prices for old wine did not exceed £9. To remedy this state of things the Old Wine Company was established in 1756 by the marquis of Pombal. The first act of the company was to make an arbitrary circumscription of what they considered the viticultural region of Alto Douro, outside of which no vines could be planted. The territory within the limits of the demarcation was then divided into three districts,—(1) that producing the factory wines, z.c., those set apart for England, (2) that whence the supplies for the Brazils were drawn, and (8) that the produce of which was reserved for tavern use or distillation. For all the wine allowed to be exported permits were issued, without which not a single cask could be sent dowu to Oporto for shipment. Later on, however, these permits were openly sold in the market, fetching asa rule about £3. The inconvenience and damage to the trade resulting from these absurd regulations led to the abolition of the company in 1833. But in 1843 the creditors of the Old Wine Company, whose lodges, with their valuable contents, had been destroyed at the raising of the siege of Oporto by the retreating Miguelites, induced the Govern- ment, as an indemnity for their losses, to re-establish the former company's monopoly. The new company had no authority to pre- vent the planting of vines ; but their powers as to the classification and exportation of port wine were the same as those possessed by the old company. For instance, in 1848 over 11,000 pipes were produced, but only 7000 were approved for exportation to England. At this time the export duty on wine destined for England was £3 per pipe—in reality £6, if the £3 permit is taken into considera- tion, whilst that on wine destined for countries out of Europe was only 6d. per pipe. The consequence was that considerable quantities of wine were

shipped to America and thence to England, the differ- ence in the duty just paying expenses with a slight profit to the shipper. This state of things lasted till 1853, when the company was finally 'exonerated from its official duties" and the export duty equalized on wine to all countries. Since that time the port- ° wine trade has been entirely unrestricted.

Besides the curse of monopolies, Alto Douro has suffered severely Ravages from the Oidiwm and Phylloxera. The former appeared about 1848, of Phyl- but it was not till 1853 that the disease assumed serious proportions. loxera The climax was reached in 1856, when only 15,000 pipes were vin- and taged, about one-sixth of the usual quantity. At one time it Oidium. seemed as if the whole trade would collapse, as the exportation dropped from 41,621 pipes in 1856 to 16,696 pipes in 1858. For- tunately, however, the sulphur remedy was discovered and applied in time, and since then the Oidiwm, though not eutirely got rid of, has at any rate been effectually prevented from doing much harm. The same, as yet, cannot be said of the Phylloxera, the ravages of which have been much more serious. Its presence in Alto Douro was suspected as early as 1868; but for years hardly any attempt was made to save the vines, owing to the incredulity of the large farmers, who considered the cause of the withering of their vines to be the coutinuous drought of successive dry seasons. More energetic efforts are now being made to cope with the disease ; but in the meantime the yield has been getting less year by year, and at the present time is little more than half what it used to be during the three years previous to the appearance of the Oidiwm, when the average was over 100,000 pipes. The excess of exportation over production for the last few years is owing, in the first place, to the enormous increase in the Brazilian trade, which is largely made up of wines from the Minho and Beira districts, and, secondly, to the new trade in commion country wines with France. The shipments of wine of all kinds from Oporto to the Brazils amounted during

1887 to over 25,000 pipes, whilst those to France exceeded 10,000. According to the latest accounts, the Phylloxera still continues to extend the area of its attacks, although, on the other hand, many of the

abandoned vineyards are again being brought under cultiva- tion; also the number and extent of the new plantations are steadily increasing. Statistics Exportation of wine from Oporto from 1678 to 1756, when the of port- Wine Company monopoly was established :—1678-87, average 632 wine pipes per annum; 1688-97, 7668 ; 1698-1707, 7188 ; 1708-17, 9644 ; trade. 1718-27, 17,692; 1728-37, 19,234; 1738-47, 18,556; 1748-56, 16,354. Total, 953,362 pipes. Total exportation of wine from Oporto from 1757 to 1833, or during the existence of the Wine Company mono- poly, 2,564,096 pipes. Average to Great Britain, 27,938 pipes; to rest of the world, 5362. Total, 33,300 pipes. Total exportation of wine from Oporto from 1834 to 1842 during the absence of re- strictions—to Great Britain, 233,469 pipes ; to continent of Europe,

11,980 ; to rest of the world, 41,600; total, 287,049 pipes. Average ©

to Great Britain, 25,941 pipes per annum ; to continent of Europe, 1331; to rest of the world, 4622. Total exportation of wine from Oporto from 1843 to 1853 during the existence of the New Winc Company monopoly— to Great Britain, 272,799 pipes; to continent of Europe, 47,271; to the rest of the world, 75,197; total, 395,267 pipes. Average to Great Britain, 24,800 pipes per annum; to continent of Europe, 42974; to rest of the world, 6836.

Exportation of Wine from Oporto from 1854 to 1887, during the absence of restrictions and equalized rate of export duties to all

paris. To Great) Rest of To Great] Rest of Year. Britain. jthe world. Total. Year. Britain. |the world. Total. Pipes, |- Pipes. Pipes. Pipes. Pipes. Pipes.

1854 | 88,881 | 5,421 | 39,252 || 1885 | 29,656 | 35,071 | 64,727 1864 | 29,042 | 5,677 | 85,619 || 1886 | 31,467 | 43,362 | 74,829 1874 | 35,758 | 20,778 | 56,5381 || 1887 | 32,052 | 39,459 | 71,511 1884 | 30,281 | 31,741 | 62,022

Total | 992,436 | 569,365 1,561,801

Lisbon In addition to port, a large quantity of wine is produced in other

wines. districts of Portugal, notably in the neighbourhood of Lisbon. Of these the principal are Torres Vedras, to the north of the city, where a large quantity of red wine of a coarse claret type is grown ; Collares, the vineyards of which lie beyond Cintra, and where a higher class is produced ; Carcavellos, at the mouth of the Tagus ; and Bucellas, in which a white wine is produced from the Riesling grape, known in the United Kingdom as Bucellas hock. Car- cavellos yields a fuller-bodied description, which savours more of the Madeira type.

Madeira. There is every reason to believe that vines were introduced into Madeira soon after the discovery of the island. But it was not till some 200 years later, after the marriage of the infanta Catherine of Portugal with Charles II. of England, that British merchants established themselves at Funchal, from which point the wine trade of Madeira commenced. The system of cultivation is some- what peculiar. The vines are trained over a lattice-work of cane, about 4 feet from the ground, supported on stakes, thus giving room for the vine-dresser to pass underneath and keep the ground clear from weeds. This system of keeping the ground clear and moist has much to do with the excellent character of the wine produced. An English acre can yield about seven pipes (644

- gallons), but the average is considerably below this quantity. The vintage commences as a rule about the last week in August, and the grapes are all pressed before the October rains set in. This latter operation is still carried out in the primitive fashion, the fruit being thrown into large presses and trodden with the naked feet. Madeira wine improves much with age, and is occasionally to be met with from fifty to a hundred years old. The choicest descriptions are Malmsey, Sercial, Bual, and Tinta. The Jesuits at one time contrived to hold the monopoly of the Malmsey wine, aud were owners of the vineyards at Cama de Lobos, in which it was produced. Of the other wines the choicest are found on the south side of the island ; but here as the elevation above the sea increases the quality falls off. The grapes from which Malmsey is made are not gathered till a month later than those for other wines of a drier character. Sercial is also a much-esteemed wine; it is said to combine all the attributes of a perfect wine, being full- bodied and having a rich aromatic flavour peculiar to itself. The grape from which it is produced is of the Riesling variety, and

is supposed to have been transplanted from the banks of the Rhine. Bual is a very luscious wine, the produce of a white grape. Tinta, on the other hand, is obtained from a red grape, and has somewhat of the character and appearance of the wines of Burgundy, whence the vines are said to have been derived.

Trade in Madeira wine became well known in England about the middle

Madeira. of the 18th century, when it became fashionable, owing to the strong recommendation of officers who had served in the West Indies and America. The great demand at the beginning of the 19th century caused the culture of the vine on the island to be greatly increased. The annual production must ultimately have

reached over 30,000 pipes, larger quantities of the commoner sorts being consumed on the island or turned into brandy. So much of the land indeed was under the vine that nearly ali bread-stuffs had to be imported, the corn grown on the island being at that time only equal to three months' consumption, whereas now, owing to the decreased number of the vineyards, it grows an amount equal to nine months' requirements. In evidence of the importance whieh at one time attached.to the Madeira wine trade, it may be mentioned that in 1799 a fleet of ninety-six ships was convoyed from Portsmouth to the port of Funchal by three men-of-war. This fleet took on to the West Indies 30414 pipes of Madeira, partly for the supply of the West Indian colonies and partly shipped for the voyage there and back to England. For many years this practice of sending wine for a voyage to the East or West Indies and back has existed amongst the Madeira merchants. The voyage matures the wine, and at the same time gives it a peculiar bouquet and flavour, derived most probably from the intense heat of the ship's hold and the continual motion to which it is subjected. There is, however, a marked difference between wines shipped to the East and those sent to the West Indies, the only reason assign- able being the difference in the length of the voyage. A custom prevails of submitting the wine, shortly after its manufacture, to a high temperature in buildings especially designed for the purpose, the result of which is the earlier development and mellowing of the wine, and the prevention of re-fermentation. The exact tempera- ture to which the wines

are thus subjected and the length of time depend on individual judgment, although the temperature never exceeds 130° to 140° Fahr. for inferior and 100° to 120° for better class wines. Itis this process which gives Madeira its charaeteristic flavour, to which again its popularity in Great Britain is due. The large stone buildings, two stories high, in which this process is carried on are divided into compartments and heated by flucs with hot air from stoves below. On the wines being removed after a lapse of three, four, or six months, as the case may be, they are fined and racked, a second proportion of brandy being added if necessary, and they are then left to themselves, except for an occa- sional fining and racking, until they are shipped, which scarcely ever takes place before the second or third year.

As long ago as 1785 the quantity of Madeira shipped to England was 120,000 gallons, which gradually increased up to 1820, when it reached 520,000 gallons. After 1852, however, this amount was greatly reduced, and, although it has again improved of late years, the quantity imported in 1885 was only 108,771 gallons. With reference to the wine trade of Madeira with all parts of the world, it appears that in 1646 as many as 2000 pipes were exported. About this time English and other foreign houses established them- selves in Funchal, and it is without doubt owing to them that the culture of the vine was increased and an export trade of some im- portance commenced. It was not, however, until the latter half of the 18th century that, in consequence of the wars between France aud England and the closing of the French ports, the Madeira trade increased to large proportions. In 1774 some 7000 pipes were shipped, which by 1780 had increased to over 16,000. In 1813 it is said some 22,000 pipes of Madeira were exported, at an average price of 300 dollars per pipe. After the war the large convoys to the Hast and West Indies ceased, but the Indiamen still called at Madeira on their outward voyage. Nearly all the regimeutal messes in the East Indies were supplied with Madcira wine, whilst large shipments were also made to America, Russia, and Germany. The taste for Madeira has of late very much died away, the cause of which must be traced to the appearanec, in the spring of 1852, of the Oidiwm Tuckeri, which devastated the vineyards of the island. Vines were rooted up and sugar- canes planted in their stead, whilst, with production practically at a standstill, holders refused to part with their wines except

at enormous figures. In consequence of these high prices Madeira was soon placed beyond the reach of all but the wealthiest classes. When in the course of time a cessation of the disease came about, the Madeira vineyards began to be re-planted, so that the produc- tion of the island has again reached some 5000 to 6000 pipes annu- ally, and brought about a corresponding reduetion in price, genuine wine being now obtainable at considerably less than £20 per pipe. Popular prejudice is in consequence being removed, and a gradual although slow revival in the Madeira trade is taking place.

Tialy.

In point of quantity of production, though far inferior in quality, Italian Italy ranks ahead of France. The estimated area under the vine wines.

is in excess of that of France. The annual yield is some 660,000,000 gallons, valued at about £100,000,000. Whereas in France and Spain the acreage under the vine is devoted exclusively to that plant, the vine in Italy is grown simultaneously with the olive, corn, &c. The vines are simply trained on wires at some distance from the ground, and are frequently allowed to run from tree to tree, mingling in the general vegetation, nature doing so much for the vine-grower that he, in most instances, does but little to assist her. The vintage usually takes place in September and October, XXIV. — 77

Sicilian.

610

and, except in Sicily and some of the southern provinces, the system employed is somewhat rude in comparison with those of other nations. Yet considerable improvement has taken place during the last few years. Greater attention is being paid to the selection of suitable plants, whilst on the larger estates modern wine-presses and utensils are coming into use, and the necessity of care and cleanliness for the production of good wine is beginning to be better understood. Amongst the chief faults still noticeable, but remediable with cultivation and care, are a strong flavour peculiar to the soil and a disposition on the part of the proprietors to over-

alcoholize wines destined for exportation. In many instances also the grapes are gathered indiscriminately, often before they are ripe, whilst the quality is also frequently further damaged by want of attention and cleanliness in treatment. There can be no doubt that with proper treatment the wines of Italy would hold a much higher position than they do at present, the exports being, so far, trifling compared with the amount of production, and consisting to a great extent of Sicilian wines. Of the wines of northern Italy the best known descriptions are perhaps those of Montferrat and Asti. These are mostly light in colour, hard, and somewhat diffi- cult to keep. Some of the white wines of this district are very good. A large quantity of sparkling wine is also produced. The general nature of the soil is extremely fertile and the climate moderate, so that everything points to northern Italy as very suit- able for wine production. In central Italy the best wines are those of Montepulciano, Chianti, Pomino, Montalcino, and Carmignano. The greater proportion of the wine made here is from the province of Tuscany, which is also a very suitable one for the vine. These wines have considerable alcoholic strength, and are fit for consump- tion in about six to twelve months after the vintage, attaining per- fection in two years. The price usually varies from 11d. to 2s. 11d. per gallon, according to growth. The wines of Montepulciano have a brilliant purple colour and a luscious flavour, although not cloy- ing to the palate, their sweetness being gcnerally tempered with an agreeable sharpness and astringency. The rocky hills of Chianti near Siena furnish another description of red wine, which is also sweet, but less aromatic. An excellent wine of the claret type is produced at Artimino. But perhaps the choicest wines grown in Italy are those of the Neapolitan district. Of these the best known are the Lacryma Christi a red wine of good bouquet and an elegant taste, several descriptions of good class Muscat wine, and also a de- scription of Malvoisie. These three sorts are the produce of vines grown on the slopes of Mount Vesuvius nearest the sea. Of the Lacryma Christi only a small quantity is made, but many of the second-rate wines of the neighbourhood take the name and pass in common for the growth.

Until recently the greater portion of the wines exported by Italy to other countries were for blending purposes. Lately, however, there has been a marked improvement in this respect, and a con- siderable quantity of wine

is now exported in bottle. A trade of some importance is being developed with the United States, the imports in 1887 having amounted to 26,340 dozen bottles and 71,020 gallons in bulk.

The principal wine produced in Sicily is that grown in the neigh- bourhood of Marsala, from which town it takes its name. The character of the wine is somewhat after the style of Madeira, it having good bouquet and improving with age. It is the result of a mixture of various kinds of grapes carefully selected, amongst which are included the usual Madeira varieties. Thanks to the eave bestowed upon its production, Marsala has of late years ac- quired considerable reputation. The vintage usually takes place about the third week in September, which, although somewhat late for so southern a latitude, allows the grapes to mature thoroughly, whilst all the rotten ones are carefully picked out before the fruit is put into the press. The shippers usually arrange to purchase the vintage from the growers, subject to the condition that the wine is made in a certain manner. The must is collected in large casks capable of holding about 250 gallons each, in which it is allowed to ferment. The system pursued in the preparation of Marsala, as in the case of other strong wines, consists in the addi- tion of a certain quantity of spirit, according as the wine is intended for shipment to England or for consumption in Italy, the former being generally brought up to a strength of 33° to 35°, or about 5° more than that reserved for home consumption, the extra strength being to enable the wine to stand the sea voyage. Taken generally, there is very little difference between the qualities of the different growths of Marsala ; in fact, where the system of fortifying and sweetening is properly carried out and the best description of finings used to reduce the reddish tint found in most of the wines, it is almost impossible when the wines are two or three years old to detect any great variation, whilst such a thing as bad Marsala can scarcely be said to exist. Formerly all Marsala wines judged not sufficiently good for consumption as such were made into spirit for fortifying the better description ; but, since the Italian Govern. ment have raised the duty on alcohol, a different system is adopted. The inferior class of must is not now fermented, but is reduced by evaporation to about two-thirds of its original bulk, thus forming

a sort of essence. This essence is added to the wine intended for consumption in the proportion of from 5 to 10 per cent. at the com- mencement of the fermentation. Within about two months of the first drawing-off of the wine the contents of each cask are carefully examined, and all which may be considered not sufficiently good for Marsala is sct aside ; and this operation is repeated in March or April. Immediately after the next vintage it is examined for the third time, after which it is fined and drawn off into large vats capable of holding up to 18,000 gallons each. These vats, like the Spanish soleras, are never entirely emptied, a certain quantity of old wine being allowed to remain in them, which gives the new wines the bouquet and character peculiar to true Marsala.

Austria-Hungary.

Of the Austrian-Hungarian empire Hungary, from a viticultural Hun- point of view, forms by far the most important part. The quantity garian.

of wine produced in that country has assumed of late years con- siderable proportions, the white wines page both greater in quan- tity and of better description than the red. Inclusive of Croatia aud Slavonia, it is estimated that there are in Hungary upwards of 1,000,000 acres of vineland, producing annually some 250,000,000 gallons of wine, the value of which is estimated at over £16,000,000. The wines of central Hungary are strong, and include white varieties varying in colour from a light to a deep yellow tinge, as well as wines of considerable depth of colour. Those of the south of Croatia are as a rule less strong, but are for the most part of a deep colour and are generally known as black wines. The produce of Transylvania ranks extremely high,and is for the most part white, although some excellent red wines arc grown. The strength of Hungarian wines is moderate, that of Tokay being from about 20 to 25 per cent. of proof spirit, whilst Carlowitz averages from 24 to 25. The other descriptions generally have a less alcoholic strength. Foremost among the wines of Hungary is the sweet Tokay, grown in the submontane district around the town of Tokay, which covers a space of about 20 square miles. Throughout the whole of this district it is the custom to collect the grapes only when they have become dry and sweet, almost like raisius. The fruit is gathered separately and the best wine made from selected grapes. The

grapes are first put together in a cask, in the bottom of which holes are bored to let that portion of the juice escape which will run away without pressure. This forms the highest quality. The grapes are then squeezed for the ordinary wine. In abundant years the yield of Tokay reaches nearly 2,000,000 gallons, of which about 15 per cent. are of really superior quality, and of this about one-fifth is classified as extra fine. The three classes of Tokay are known as essentia, ausbruch, and mdslds, the first-named being the yield of the juice taken without pressure. It is, however, so scarce that it never appears in the market. The vineyards of Menes (in the county of Arad) produce a sweet red wine. Cavlowitz is produced farther south, on the banks of the Danube, some 40 miles north-west of Belgrade. It has somewhat of the character of port wine, although more astringent and lacking in fruitiness. Many of the Hungarian vineyards also produce Muscat-flavoured wines which are highly appreciated. The vintage in Hungary lasts from the commencement of October to the end of November, and for the most part is conducted on an imperfect principle, although great improvements have becn introduced of late years. The grapes are crushed by the feet in some places, whilst in others a kind of mill is used, and in others again they are pressed in sacks, The wine is usually prepared in wooden utensils, generally made on the spot, the trade of the cooper being but little known. The system of carrying on the fermentation in closed barrels is not always adopted, and the wine is frequently spoilt by not being drawn off in time.

Next to Hungary the principal vine-growing district of the empire Dalma is Dalmatia, in which the vine culture has of late increased to an tian.

enormous extent. Fifty years ago the vine was scarcely grown, except in the islands and on the sea-coast; but it has now pene- trated into the interior, and occupies about one-twentieth part of the soil under cultivation. The Dalmatian wines, which are almost entirely red, have generally full colour and contain a high degree of alcohol, whilst they also possess a good body and bouquet, re- sembling in a great measure the wines of Burgundy. The average annual production is 22,000,000 gallons, of which only about 4,000,000 are exported ; but this branch of the trade is gradually increasing, Defective cellarage, imperfect fermentation, and general

ignorance as to manipulation prevented the development of the

wine trade of Dalmatia for many years ; but these defects have of late been in a great manner remedied by the action of the Austrian Government in educating the proprietors in this respect. The best wines produced in the province are Moscato Roso, Vino Taitaro, Prosecco Vugova, Maraschino, and Malvasia.

Germany.

German wines, gencrically spoken of as Hock and Moselle, arc Rhine the products of the most northern latitude of successful vinc-culture wines.

in Europe. To this circumstance must be attributed the fact that

Moselle wines.

Russia and Greeee.

United States.

Wins

a greater inequality exists in the different vintages than is known in connexion with the wines of any other country. In a successful season, when the grapes have been able to mature thoroughly, per- haps no class of wine shows more elegance and quality than do those of the Rhine provinces, while, on the other hand, there are none on which the adverse influence of cold and wet is more appar- ent. 'The principal wine-producing districts of Germany are Alsace- Lorraine, Baden, Wiirtemberg, the Hessian and Bavarian Palatinates, and the Rheingau, the total annual production of which is about 80,000,000 gallons. Of thesc the first three give half the aggregate yield ; but their wines are chiefly light and poor, and are only used for home consumption. The best wines of Germany are grown on the banks of the Rhine in the neighbourhood of Mainz: the Rhein- gau, in which the choicest descriptions are grown, lies on the right bank of the river, whilst the vineyards of Hesse lie on the left. The wines produced on the left bank are

full-bodied and with good flavour, the best growths being Liebfraumilch, Nierstein, Schar- lachberg, and Forst, which are considered nearly equal to the Rheingau wines. Amongst the latter are the wines of Johannisberg and Steinberg; the first-named is looked upon as the king of German wines. In the samc neighbourhood are also the celebrated vineyards of Riidesheim, Grafenberg, and Rauenthal. The vineyard of Johannisberg is said to have been planted about the year 1009, under the direction of Ruthard, archbishop of Mainz. During the Thirty Years' War these vineyards were destroyed, but in 1722 the abbot of Fulda built a chateau on the site of the old convent and re-planted the vineyards. Hochheimer is the produce of a compara- tively small district situated on the banks of the Main, several miles above its junction with the Rhine. The name (whence Hock) has been known in England for upwards of two hundred years, and no doubt originally included and denoted the general body of Rhine wines. The wines of the Moselle, many of which are shipped as sparkling wines, occupy only a secondary position, although in favourable seasons they are characterized by a light pleasant flavour with a marked aroma. The wines of Germany, at least of the descriptions exported, are mostly white, although a small quantity of red is grown in the Palatinate, notably at Assmannshausen, which resembles Burgundy. The yield, however, is comparatively trifling. Amongst the leading descriptions of vine plants in German vineyards the Riesling stands out pre-eminent. It is gener- ally planted on the rocky mountain slopes, and the bunches of white grapes which it produces only ripen perfectly in years of high temperature. When this is the casc, however, they yield a wine of high quality, the characteristics of which develop as the wine grows older. On the lower lands the speeies known as the Klein- berger and Oestreicher are planted, the grapes of which ripen more easily and produce more freely than the Pineau Riesling grape. The French vines, the Pineau and Gros Blane, are also cultivated in Germany. But one-half of the vines growing on the banks of the Rhine are Riesling plants, which are probably indigenous to the valley, as, although planted elsewhere, they have never been found to yield fruit of such quality as in the Rheingau. Great care is bestowed upon the process of vintage, which usually takes place at as late a date as possible, as a rule not before the end of October or beginning of November, in order to allow the grapes to ripen as thoroughly as may be. The wine is allowed to ferment in casks instead of in vats, as in most other

countries, owing to which cir- cumstance considerable difference in quality and price is apt to exist in the produce of the same growth and vintage. After the grapes are gathered, they are pressed as they attain ripeness ; and, after the fermentation is duly effected, the wine is fined and racked into vats, which are constantly filled up so that the wine improves with age. The time for racking varies with different proprietors, some taking the wine off the lees in the February following the vintage, whilst others allow the lees to remain a year in the wine, a process which gives it a fuller and sweeter taste. Several years are required to get the wine fit for bottling, as there is no fixed peviod at which it will finish its fermentation, in fact the finer the wine the longer the time requisite to get it in condition. During this period it receives the greatest attention and is frequently tested, condition being perhaps the greatest difficulty in connexion with German wines. Russia and Greeee,

A certain quantity of wine is made in the southern portions of Russia and in Greece ; but the quality is mostly coarse and common, and the produce is almost entirely used for home consumption.

United States.

The cultivation of the vine has made rapid progress of late years in the United States, and American wines are steadily taking the place of the foreign product. The soil and climate of the Pacific coast seem best adapted to the growth of the vine, and wine-making appears likely to beeome one of the leading industries of California, where the vine was first introduced by the Franciscan fathers about the year 1769. The variety of grape first planted in that region was known as the " Mission" grape, and is gencrally supposed to have been imported from Mexico. Subsequently the principal

varieties of French, German, and Spanish vines were introduced into that State and have all been tried with more or less success. The result is that several descriptions of wine are now made in California resembling, to a certain extent, the leading European types, although, as a rule, of a coarser style,—a defect, however, which is disappearing with the spread

of technical knowledge. Although California is by far the largest grape-growing State in the Union, producing nearly one-half of the wines madc in the United States, yet the rate of increase of the product during the past five years has been greatest in other States. In Ohio, upon the shores of Lake Erie and along the Ohio river, the vine is ex- tensively cultivated. 'The champagnes and clarets made in the neighbourhood of Sandusky and Cleveland, and the 'sparkling Catawba," made originally by Nicholas Longworth of Cincinnati, are produced in considerable quantities. New York, Missouri, Illinois, and Pennsylvania are likewise large wine-producing States, the largest wine-manufacturing establishment bemg in New York State, in Steuben county. The annual yield in each of these States ranges now (1888) from 2,000,000 to 4,000,000 gallons. Wines of inferior quality are made in small quantities in nearly all the States. In the eastern and middle States the principal grapes are the Catawba and Ives seedling, while in the south the Virginia seedling and the Scuppernong grapes are the favourites. The wine-grapes in these regions resemble the grapes of Germany and France, con- taining more acid and flavour, while those grown on the Pacitic coast are of a milder and sweeter character, resembling the wines of Spain. The principal obstacles in the way of the cultivation of the vine in the United States are mildew and blight, which sometimes destroy the entire foliage of the vine, and the grape-rot, whieh in some localities has bafiled the grower and caused the abandonment of grape-culture. The ravages of the Phylloxera are likewise encountered in certain localities, but these are not so ex- tensive in the United States as in France, and, indeed, certain varieties of vine are entirely free from them. The exports of American wines, though still small, are rapidly increasing. The imports of foreign wines have steadily decreased during the past fifteen years. The total annual production of wine in the United States now amounts to about 35,000,000 gallons.

Cape of Good Hope.

Previous to the alteration of the wine duties in 1860, which placed Cape of foreign and colonial wines on a similar basis, a considerable business Good was developing in the United Kingdom in favour of Cape wines, Hope.

especially of those descriptions most resembling the traditional port and sherry. The Cape of Good Hope in its geographical and climatic elements greatly resembles the vine-growing countries of Europe, and, notwithstanding certain earthy characteristics (due in the main to imperfect cultivation) which were inseparable from its wines, bade fair at one time to rival the best of its competitors north of the equator. The equalization of duty, however, has con- siderably checked the trade in Great Britain, notwithstanding the great improvement which has since taken place in wine-making at the Cape. Australia.

Wine-producing has been prosecuted as an industry for many Australia.

years in the Australian colonies, and in some instances with con- siderable energy. But it has not hitherto developed to any great extent, owing to the absence of differential dutics to favour the growers and the cost of freight, although from the quality of their production they have no reason to dread competition with the wine-growers of Europe. The Australian colonies (Victoria, South Australia, New South Wales) have suffered much from want of technieal knowledge both in vine selection and wine preparation, though in both of these branches considerable progress has been made during the last few years. According to Mr J. P. Stow, in his History of South Australia, the tentative stage of vine culturc in that colony has now passed. Good markets for its vintages may be expected in Europe as soon as wines of certain qualities are made in sufficient quantities to allow of heavy stocks being kept. As with the growths of Médoc, attempts are being made to keep the yields of the various vineyards distinct, those of Highercombe, Auldana, Tintara, &c., in South Australia being well known in Great Britain. In their principal characteristics these wines re- semble those of France, the red wines being intermcdiate between claret and Burgundy, while the white wines, although the fuller descriptions eome ncar Sauterne and Chablis, as a rule take more after those of the Rhine. The quantity imported into England during 1887 amounted to 168,188 gallons.

Asia.

Although holding a position of little importance in wine-grow- Asia.

ing, as compared with Europe, Asia yields a certain quantity for home consumption. Chief amongst these are the wines of Caueasia and Armenia, which, according to Thudicum, are more notable for their alcoholic strength than for their colour. Wines are also made in Persia, especially in the district of Shiraz; these, however, rarely find their way into the market. (H. J. N.)

612

WINKELRIED, Arnotp von. The incident with which this name is connected is, after the feat of Tell, the best known and most popular in the early history of the Swiss Confederation. We are told how, at a critical moment in the great battle of Sempach, when the Swiss had failed to break the serried ranks of the Austrian knights, a man of Unterwalden, Arnold von Winkelried by name, came to the rescue. Comrhending his wife and children to the care of his comrades, he rushed towards the Austrians, gathered a number of their spears together against his breast, and fell pierced through and through, having opened a way into the hostile ranks for his fellow- countrymen, though at the price of his own life. But the Tell and Winkelried stories stand in a very different posi- tion when looked at in the dry light of history, for, while in the former case imaginary and impossible men (bearing now and then a real historical name) do imaginary and

impossible deeds at a very uncertain period, in the latter

we have some solid ground to rest on, and Winkelried's act might very well have been performed, though, as yet, the amount of genuine and early evidence in support of it is very far from being sufficient.

The Winkelrieds of Stanz! were a knightly family when we first hear of them,though towards the end of the 14th century they seem to have been but simple men without the honours of knighthood, and not always using their prefix "von." Among its members we find an Erni Winkelried acting as a witness to a contract of sale on May 1, 1367, while the same man, or perhaps another member of the family, Erni von Winkelried, is plaintiff in a suit at Stanz on September 29, 1389, and in 1417 is the landamman (or head man) of Unterwalden, being then called Arnold Winkelriet. We have,

therefore, a real man named Arnold Winkelried living at Stanz about the time of the battle of Sempach. The question is thus narrowed to the points, Was he present at the battle, and did he then perform the deed commonly attributed to him? involving a minute investigation of the history of that battle, to ascertain if there are any authentic traces of this incident, or any opportunity for it to have taken place.

(1) Evidence of Chronieles.—The earliest known mention of the incident is found in a Zurich chronicle (discovered in 1862 by Herr G. von Wyss), which is a copy, made in 1476, of a chronicle written in or at any rate not earlier than 1438, though it is wanting in the 16th-century transcript of another chronicle written in 1466, which up to 1389 closely agrees with the former. It appears in the well- known form, but the hero is stated to be "ein getriiwer man under den Eidgenozen," no name being given, and it seems clear that his death did not take place at that time. No other mention has been found in any of the numerous Swiss or Austrian chronicles till we come to the book De Helvetize Origine, written in 1538 by Rudolph Gwalther (Zwiugli's son-in-law), when the hero is still nanieless, being compared to Decius or Codrus, but is said to have been killed by his brave act. Finally, we read the full story in the original draft of Giles Tschudi's chronicle, where the hero is described as "a man of Unterwalden, of the Winkelried family," this being expanded in the final recension of the ehronicle (1564) into 'fa man of Unterwalden, Arnold von Winckelried by name, a brave knight," while he is entered (in the same book, on the authority of the " Anniversary Book" of Stanz, now lost) on the list of those who fell at Sempach at the head of the Nidwald (or Stanz) men as "' Herr Arnold von Winckelriet, ritter," this being in the first draft " Arnold Winckclriet."

(2) Ballads.—There are several war songs on the battle of Sem- pach which have come down to us, but in one only is there men- tion of Winkelried and his deed. This is a long ballad of 67 four- line stanzas, part of which (including the Winkelried section) is found in the additions made between 1531 and 1545 to Etterlin's chronicle by H. Berlinger of Basel, and the whole in Werner Steiner's chronicle (written 1532). It is agreed on all sides that the last stanza, attributing the authorship to

Halbsuter of Lucerne, "'as he came back from the battle," is a very late addition. Many

1 Their history from 1248 to 1534 has been minutely worked out from the documents by Herr Hermann von Liebenau, in a paper published in 1854, and reprinted at Aarau in 1862, with much other matter, in his book, Arnold von Winkelried, seine Zeit und seine That,

authorities regard it as made up of three distinct songs (one of which refers to the battle and Winkelried), possibly put together by the younger Halbsuter (citizen of Lucerne in 1435, died between 1470 and 1480), though others contend that the Sempach- Winkcl- ried section bears clear traces of having been composed after the Reformation began, that is, about 1520 or 1530. Some recent discoveries have proved that certain statements in the song usually regarded as anachronisms are quite accurate; but no nearer approach has been made towards fixing its exact date, or that of any of the three bits into which it has been cut up. In this song the story appears in its full-blown shape, the name of Winckelrict being given.

(3) Lists of Those who Fell at Sempach.—We find in the " Anni- versary Book" of Emmetten in Unterwalden (drawn up in 1560) the name of "der Winkelriedt" at the head of the Nidwald men Gi and in a book by Horolanus, a pastor at Lucerne (about 1563), that of "Erni Winckelried" occurs some way down the list of Unterwalden men.

(4) Pictures and Drawings.—In the MS. of the chronicle of Die- bold Schilling of Bern (c. 1480) there is in the picture of the battle of Sempach a warrior pierced with spears falling to the ground, which may possibly be meant for Winkelried; while in that of Diebold Schilling of Lucerne (1511), though in the text no allu- sion is made to any such incident, there is a similar picture of a man who has accomplished Winkelried's feat, but he is dressed in the colours of Lucerne. Then there is an engraving in Stumpf's chronicle (1548), and, finally, the celebrated one by Hans Rudolph Manuel (1551), which follows the chronicle of 1476 rather than the ballad.

The story seems to have been first questioned about 1850 by Moritz von Stiirler of Bern, but the public discussion of the subject originated with a lecture by Prof. O. Lorenz on "Leopold III. und die Schweizer Biinde," which he delivered in Vienna on March 21, 1860. This began the lively paper war humorously called "the second war of Sempach," in which the Swiss (with but rare exceptions) maintained the historical character of the feat against various foreigners—Austrians and others.

Most of the arguments against the genuineness of the story have been already more or less directly indicated. (1) There is the total silence of all the old Swiss and Austrian chroniclers until 1538, with the solitary exception of the Zurich chronicle of 1476 (and this while they nearly all describe the battle in more or less detail). The tale, as told in the 1476 chronicle, is clearly an inter- polation, for it comes immediately after a distinct statement that 'God had helped the Confederates, and that with great labour they had defeated the knights and Duke Leopold," while the passage immediately following joins on to the former quite naturally if we strike out the episode of the "true man," who is not even called Winkelried. (2) The date of the ballad is extremely uncertain, but cannot be placed earlier than at least 60 or 70 years after the battle, possibly 130 or 140, so that its claims to be regarded as embodying an oral eontemporary tradition are of the slightest. (3) Similar feats have been frequently recorded, but in each case they are sup- ported by authentic evidence which is lacking in this case. Five cases at least are known: a follower of the count of Hapsburg, in a skirmish with the Bernese in 1271; Stiilinger of Ratisbon in 1B, in the war of the eount of Kyburg against the men of Bern and Solothurn; Conrad Royt of Lucerne, at Nancy in 1477; Herni Wolleben, at Frastenz in 1499, in the course of the Swabian war; aud a man at the battle of Kappel in 1531. (4) It is argued that the course of the battle was such that there was little or no chance of such an act being performed, or, if performed, of having turned the day. This argument rests on the careful critical narrative of the fight constructed by Herr Kleissner and Herr Hartmann from the contemporary accounts which have come down to us, in which the pride of the knights, their heavy armour, the heat of the J uly sun, the panic which befell a sudden part of the Austrian army, added to the valour of the Swiss, fully explain the complete rout. Herr Hartmann, too, points out

that, even if the knights (on foot) had been ranged in serried ranks, there must have been sufficient space left between them to allow them to move their arms, and therefore that no man, however gigantic he might have been, could have seized hold of more than half a dozen spears at once.

Herr K. Biirkli (Der Wahre Winkelried,—die Taktik der alten Ursehweizer, Zurich, 1886) has put forth a thcory of the battle which is, he allows, opposed to all modern aceounts, but entirely agrees, he strongly maintains, with the contemporary authorities, According to this the fight was not a pitched battle but a surprise, the Austrians not having had time to form up into ranks. Assuming this, and rejecting the evidence of the 1476 chronicle as an inter- polation and full of mistakes, and that of the song as not proved to have been in existence before 1531, Herr Biirkli comes to the startling conclusion that the phalanx formation of the Austrians, as well as the name and act of Winkelried, have been transferred to Sempach from the fight of Bicocca, near Milan (April 27, 1522), where a real lcader of the Swiss mercenaries in the pay of France, Arnold Winkelried, really met his death in very much the way

that his namesake perished according to the story. Herr Biirkli confines his criticism to the first struggle, in which alone mention is made of the driving back of the Swiss, pointing out also that tho chronicle of 1476 and other later accounts attribute to the Austrians the manner of attack and the long spears which were the special characteristics of Swiss warriors, and that if Winkelried were a knight (as is asserted by Tschudi) he would have been clad in a coat of mail, or at least had a breastplate, neither of which could have been pierced by hostile lances.

Whatever may be thought of this daring theory, it seems clear that, while there is some doubt as to whether such an act as Winkelried's was possiblo at Sempach, taking into account the known details of the battle, there can be none as to the utter lack of any early and trustworthy. evidence in support of his having per- formed that act in that battle. It is quite conceivable that such evidence may later come to light; for the present it is wanting.

Authorities.—Sce in particular Theodor von Liebenau's Die Schlacht bei Sempach —Gedenkbuch zur fiinften Sdcularfeier (1886), published at the expense of the Governmentof Lucerne. This contains every mention or description of the battle or of anything rclating to it, published or unpublished, in prose or in verse, com- posed within 300 ycars after the battle, and is a most marvellous and invaluable collection of original materials, in which all the evidence for Winkelried's dced has been brought together in a handy shape. Besides the works mentioned in the text, the following are the most noteworthy pamphlets relating to this con- troversy. 1nsupport of Winkelried's act: G. v. Wyss, Ueber eine Zurcher-Chronik aus dem 15ten Jahrhundert, Zurich, 1862; A. Daguet, " La Question de Winkel- ricd," in Afusée Neuchdtelois for Dec. 1883; G. H. Oclisenbein, " Die Winkelried- frage," in Sonntagsblatt of the Bund newspaper for Jan. and Feb. 1879; A. Bernouilli, Winkelrieds That bei Sempach, Basel, 1886; W. Oechsli, Zur Sempacher Schlachtfeier, Zurich, 1886; E. Secretan, Sempach et Winkelried, Lausanne, 1886 ; and the summary in K. Dindliker's larger Geschichte der Schweiz, i. 510-525, Zurich, 1884. Against Winkelried's claims we have the remarkable study of O. Kleissner, Die Quellen zur Sempacher Schlacht und die Winkelriedsage, Gottingen, 1873; O. Hartmann, Die Schiacht bet Sempach, Frauenfeld, 1886; and the concise summary of the evidence given by M. v. Stiirler (the first to suspect the story) in the Anzeiger fiir Schweiz. Geschichte, 1881, 3892-394. (W. A.B. C.)

WINNIPEG, capital of the province of Manitoba, in the Dominion of Canada, stands at the confluence of the Red River and the Assiniboine, in 49° 56' N. lat. and 97° 7' W. long., and 764 feet above the sea. Its name is taken from Lake Winnipeg (Ojibway, Wen, " muddy, " and Wzpz, "water"). The waters of the Red River reach the lake 45 miles north of the city. For some five miles north of "the Forks," as the junction of the rivers was formerly called, lay the old Red River colony of Lord Selkirk, founded in 1812 (see vol. xx. p. 315). Five fur traders' or colonists' forts have stood within the city limits:—(1) Fort Rouge (1736), of the French voyageurs; (2) Fort Gibraltar (1804-15), built by the north-west traders of Montreal; (3) Fort Douglas (1813-35), Lord Selkirk's fort; (4) old Fort Garry (1821-35), of Hudson's Bay Company; and (5) new Fort Garry (1835-82). The transfer of Rupert's Land to Canada in 1870 led to the

formation of the province of Manitoba. 'Then, too, Winnipeg was begun as a village, half a mile north of Fort Garry. The city is built on the prairie; a part of the site was swampy, but is being well drained. The city includes both sides of the Assiniboine, but on the east side of the Red River there is an independent corpor- ation, the town of St Boniface, which is virtually a suburb. St Boniface, with 1449 inhabitants, was first settled by Lord Selkirk's German De Meuron soldiers in 1817. The growth of Winnipeg has been remarkable. Living on its site in 1871 there were but 241 souls. As Canadian im- migration increased the village grew, and in 1873 it was incorporated as a city, in the face of strenuous opposition by the Hudson's Bay Company. 'The census of 1881 gave the city 7985 inhabitants. In the following year Winni- peg, as being the central point of the Canadian Pacific Railway, which connects the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, became a place of great prospective importance. An enormous rise in values took place. The population of the city doubled in a few months, and the wildest specu- lation took place. This inflation, locally known as "the boom," caused much damage, and in the following year the collapse brought down almost all the business men of the city. The population diminished very rapidly, but has risen again, and is now increasing. The census of 1886 gave Winnipeg 20,238 inhabitants. The city has water, gas, electricity, and ample fire protection, and archi-

tecturally presents a fine appearance. Main Street, which is 132 feet wide and block-paved for a mile, is stated to be one of the best streets in Canada. Being on the eastern edge of the prairies, which run for a thousand miles to the Rocky Mountains, and standing to the west of the great Laurentian formation extending from Montreal, Winnipeg is an important railway centre. The first railway to reach the city was the Pembina branch of the Canadian Pacific Railway, which connects with the railway system of the United States. This took place in December 1878. The Canadian Pacific Railway has not only its main line now running through the city, but five other branches radiat- ing from this centre. Forty miles of the Hudson's Bay Railway, to run from Winnipeg to York Factory, are already completed, and the Government of Manitoba is

construct- ing (1888) an independent line to connect with the Ameri- can railway system, to be known as the Red River Valley Railway. The total. valuation of property for the city for 1887 was $19,392,410, while the exports of the port of Winnipeg for the year were of the value of $816,260, with $1,929,120 of imports. There are seven chartered banks, and many branches of Canadian and English life assurance and loan associations are in operation. In education Winnipeg is the centre of the Canadian North- West. The Winnipeg public and secondary schools com- pare favourably with those of other Canadian cities, and employ 50 teachers, male and female. At Winnipeg is situated the provincial university, to which are affiliated four colleges,—St Boniface (Roman Catholic), St Jolin's (Church of England), Manitoba (Presbyterian), and Mani- toba medical college. The university has been voted 150,000 acres of wild land by the Dominion Government, and has received $85,000 of a legacy from a native of Rupert's Land. There are 24 church buildings in the city and neighbourhood. The census of 1886 gives the religion of the population as follows :—Church of England, 5962; Presbyterians, 5271; Methodists, 3217; Roman Catholics, 2244. The societies are the historical and scientific society, and St Andrew's, St George's, St Patrick's, St Jean Baptiste, Scandinavian, and Hebrew national societies. Masonic, oddfellows', and temperance organizations are strong. There are two hospitals, besides a children's home and maternity hospital. The finer build- ings and erections are the city hall, post-office, parliament buildings, governor's residence, court-house, college build- ings, Hudson's Bay Company warehouse, Westminster block, Cauchon block, and the volunteer monument of 1886 on the City Square.

WINONA, a city and the county seat of Winona county, Minnesota, United States, is situated upon the west bank of the Mississippi, on a terrace slightly elevated above the river. This terrace is in the bottom-land, which is here 5 to 7 miles in width between the bluffs, which rise 400 to 500 feet above it. The surrounding country is fertile and well settled, being devoted principally to the culture of the cereals. There are ample railroad communications, and the Mississippi is navigable for 160 miles above the city. Lumber and flour are manufactured largely. The population in 1885 was 15,664; in 1880 it was 10,208, one-third being foreign-born. The coloured element was inconsiderable.

The town was laid out in 1852, and five years later a city government was organized. In 1860 a large part of the city was

destroyed by fire, but the losses were speedily repaired, and since that time the growth of Winona has been rapid.

WINSLOW, Epwarp (1595-1655), was born in Wor- cestershire, England, October 19, 1595. He became a member of Robinson's church at Leyden, and in 1620 joined the " Mayflower " company of pilgrims with his wife and brother, being one of the party which discovered Plymouth Harbour. His wife died soon after their arrival,

and his marriage with Mrs Susanna White was the first marriage in Plymouth colony. He was chosen a magis- trate in 1624, and governor in 1633, 1636, and 1644, when Bradford, the usual governor, " by importunity got off." He made several voyages to England as the colony's agent. 1655, when Cromwell sent him on a mission to the 'West Indies. He died on the voyage, May 8, 1655.

Winslow's portrait is in the gallery of the Pilgrim Society at Plymouth. Winsor (Narrative and Critical History of the United States, 277, and autograph at page 268) gives a copy of it as "the only authentie likeness of any of the ' Mayflower' pilgrims." The list of his writings is given in the same volume. See also Allen's American Biography, and Belknap's American Biography.

WINTER, Peter (1754-1825), dramatic composer, was born at Mannheim in 1754 (or, according to other accounts, in 1758). the abbé Vogler, but so little that he may be almost con- sidered as self-taught. After playing in the "kapelle " of the elector Karl Theodor, at Munich, he became in 1776 director of the court theatre. When Mozart pro- duced his [domeneo at Munich in 1781, Winter, annoyed at his success, conceived a violent hatred towards him ; yet his own popularity was both brilliant and lasting, and of more than thirty operas written by him between 1778 and 1820 very few were unsuccessful, though, through

lack of dramatic power, none have survived him. His

most popular work, Das unterbrochene Opferfest, was pro- duced in 1796 at Vienna, where in 1797-98 he composed Die Pyramiden von Babylon and Das Labyrinth, both written for him by Schickaneder in continuation of the story of Mozart's Zauberflite. While in Vienna Winter gratified his spite against Mozart by propagating scan- dalous and utterly baseless reports concerning his private life. He returned to Munich in 1798. Five years later he visited London, where he produced Calypso in 1803, Proserpina in 1804, and Zaira in 1805, with great success. His last opera, Sanger und Schneider, was produced in 1820 at Munich, where he died October 17, 1825. Besides his dramatic works he composed some effective sacred music, including twenty-six masses.

WINTERTHUR, a flourishing industrial town in the Toss valley, canton of Zurich, Switzerland. It is 1450 feet above sea-level, and has a rapidly increasing population (in 1870, 9404; in 1880, 13,595; in 1887, 15,516), all German-speaking and nearly all Protestants. It is the point of junction of eight lines of railway, and is therefore of considerable commercial importance. Its main in- dustries are cambric-weaving, cotton-printing, the manu- facture of machinery, and wine-growing, Stadtberg being the best variety of wine grown in the neighbourhood of the town. It is a modern well-built town with a fine town-hall and well-arranged school buildings. It was formerly very wealthy and thriving, but has suffered severely from the disastrous financial enterprise of the National Railway of Switzerland which it promoted. In 1878 it had to sell its property in that line, and from 1881 to 1885 it was in great difficulties in the matter of a loan of nine million frances guaranteed in 1874 by the town, together with three others in Aargau, to that ill-fated rail- way. As the three co-guarantor towns were unable to pay their share, the whole burden fell on Winterthur, which has struggled valiantly to meet its liabilities, and has been helped by large loans from the cantonal and federal Governments.

The Roman settlement of Vitudurum (Celtic dur, water) was a little north-east of the present town, at the plaee now known as Ober- Winterthur. It was there that in 919 Burkhard II., duke of Alemannia, defeated Rudolph II., king of Transjurane Burgundy. It was practieally refounded in the

valley in 1180 by the eounts of Kyburg, who granted it great liberty and privileges, making it the seat of their district court forthe Thurgau. In 1260 the towusmen,

Returning to England in 1649, he remained until |

He received some instruction from |

WIN—WIR

in their zeal for additional power, overthrew the castle of the counts. In 1264 the town passed with the rest of the Kyburg inheritanee to the Hapsburgs, who showed very great favour to it, and thus sceured its unswerving loyalty. In 1292 the men of Zurich were beaten baek in an attempt to take the town. Fora short time after the out- lawry of Duke Frederiek of Austria, it beeame a free iniperial eity (1415-42) ; but after the conquest of the Thurgau by the Swiss confederates (1460-61) Wintcrthur, which had gallantly stood a nine weeks' siege, was isolated in the midst of non-Austrian terri- tory. Henee it was sold by the duke to the town of Zurieh in 1467, its rights and liberties being reserved, and its history sinee then has been that of the other lands ruled by Zurieh. In 1717~ 26 Zurieh tried hard by means of heavy dues to erush the rival silk and eotton industries at Winterthur, whieh, however, on the whole very successfully maintained its ancient rights and liberties against the eneroachments of Zurich. J. C. Troll, Gesch. d. Stadt Winterthur, 1840.

WINTHROP, Joun (1587-1649), was born at Groton, Suffolk, England, January 12, 1587. He graduated at Trinity College, Cambridge, about 1605, and was bred to the law. He became a Puritan, and in 1629 was made governor of the Massachusetts Bay Company. The next year he headed the great emigration to Massachusetts, landing at Salem and settling at Boston. The remainder of his life was closely identified with the history of his colony. He was re-elected governor until 1634, and afterwards in 1637-40, 1641-43, and 1646-49. He died at Boston, March 26, 1649.

The tenderness and gentleness of Winthrop's nature are beyond dispute ; even sueh political opponents as Vane retained their personal friendship

for him. These qualities, however, were sup- plemented by a deeided antipathy to demoeraey in every form, whieh inade him the best of eivil leaders for the supporters of the eeelesiastieal system of early Massachusetts. A vigorous, perhaps captious, statement of this side of his influenee will be found in Brooks Adams's Hmaneipation of Massachusetts. His Life and Letters have been edited by his deseendant, R. C. Winthrop. His Journal has been edited by James Savage, who has given it the more appropriate and exaet title of The History of New England, 1630-1649. The Winthrop Papers are in the Collections of the Massaehusetts Historical Soeiety. Winthrop's deseendants have been numerous, and have ineluded an unusual number of men and women of marked ability ; see Whitimore's Notes on the WV inthrop Family. One of them, Theodore Winthrop (1828-1861), of New Haven, was one of the earliest victims of the civil war.

WINTHROP, Joun (1606-1676), son of the preceding, was born at Groton, England, February 12, 1606. He graduated at Trinity College, Dublin, studied law at the Inner Temple, London, and then travelled on the Con- tinent, seeing some military and diplomatic service. In 1631 he followed his father to Massachusetts, being made a magistrate in 1633. Returning to England, he obtained a commission as governor of Connecticut under the Say and Sele patent, and sent out the party which put up the fort at Saybrook, at the mouth of the Connecticut river. In 1645 he obtained a title to lands in south-eastern Connecticut, and founded there the present city of New London. Connecticut made him a magistrate in 1651, and elected him governor annually from 1657 until his death. He was the agent who obtained for the colony the charter of 1662. He died at Boston, April 5, 1676.

All of the father's fine qualities, and more, came out in the son. The father has had a few unfavourable critics ; the son has always been looked upon as the flower of American Puritanism. Even the son, however, was only the representative, in obtaining the eharter, of a knot of able and determined men, who had clearer notions of the commonwealth life at whieh they were aiming; and the governor does not seem to have approved all of their somewhat vigorous proeeedings in putting it into effect. Physical seienee had strong attractions for Winthrop. He was one

of the first members of the Royal Society, and was eonstantly interested in mines and mining in New England. The authorities for his life are those given in the preceding sketch.

WINTON, or Wyntoun, ANDREW or. See Wyntoun. WIRE. The physical properties requisite to make useful wire are possessed by only a limited number of metals and metallic alloys. The metals must in the first place be ductile ; and, further, the wire when drawn out

W IR—

must possess a certain amount of tenacity, the quality on which the utility of wire principally depends. The metals suitable for wire, possessing almost equal ductility, are platinum, silver, iron, copper, and gold; and it is only from these and certain of their alloys with other metals, principally brass and bronze, that wire is prepared. By careful treatment wire of excessive tenuity can be pro- duced. Dr Wollaston first succeeded in drawing a platinum wire sgdqo inch in diameter by encasing a fine platinum wire within silver to ten times its diameter. The cored wire he then reduced to x21,, inch, and by dissolving away the silver coating the platinum wire 3od09 inch thick only remained. By continued treatment in this way wires of platinum used for spider-lines of telescopes are now obtained of such —————_—____—

| | Diameter. Strain. extreme tenuity that = . We GHA cles nccxt "0162 inches.| 5°61- 5-42 tb a mile length of the | Platinum .. | 0161, 6°70- 6°59 ,, Wire weighs not more pu " ee | than a grain; and it 0169 3? | 1112-10-89 " is said that platinum cae? ig . " wire has been made 0600 7" 342». Phosphor Bronze | -0630 Be 394 ,,

which measures not pee aap ely eee 2 more than g5g mm., equal to less than the fifty-thousandth part of an inch. The accompanying table shows the com- parative tenacity of the wire of metals and metallic alloys.

Wire was originally made by beating the metal out into plates, »

which were then eut into continuous strips, and afterwards rounded by beating. The art of wire-drawing does not appear to have been known till

the 14th century, and it was not introduced into England before the second half of the 17th century. Wire is usually drawn of eylindrical form ; but it may be made of any desired section by varying the outline of the holes in the draw-plate through whieh it is passed in the process of manufacture. The draw-plate is a disk of hard steel pierced with a scries of holes correspouding in aperture with the size and section of the wire to be-made. The holes are funnel-shaped, being widest at the side where the metal enters, and tapering to their small diameter at the face where the wire is drawn away. The excessive friction, which is partly relieved by lubricants, causes a rapid enlargement of the holes; and where great uniformity of size is required, as in the case of fine gold, silver, and platinum wire, perforated rubies or similar hard stones are fitted in the draw-plate. The draw-plate is mounted in the draw-bench, which is provided with a reel on which the wire is wound, and in drawing down to smaller dimensions it passes through successive smaller holes in the draw-plate—one at a time—and is wound on another reel or frame on the bench. During the drawing the wire requires to be annealed more or less frequently according to the nature of the metal under treatment. The ductility of the metal and the diameter of the wire operated on determine the rapidity with which the wire can be drawn: iron and brass travel at rates varying from 12 to 45 inehes per sccond, while gold and silver wires of fine section may be drawn through at 60 to 70 inches per second. Stout iron wire down to a section of } inch or thereby is made by rolling bars of fine fibrous metal in a rolling mill, in the same way as nail rods, small bars, and angles are rolled. The thinner wires are drawn from these stout wires by the ordinary process of draw- ing. Iron requires repeated annealing in the process of attenuation, and to preserve it from oxidation it is treated with a scour-bath, consisting of dilute sulphuric acid and a proportion of sulphate of eopper. The minute film of copper thus deposited on the wire not only prevents oxidation, but also favours the drawing by lessening the friction in passing through the draw-plate. Much of the iron wire whieh is to be used in exposed situations is further protected from oxidation by a covering of zinc in the so-called galvanizing process.

In commerce the sizes of wire are estimated by ecrtain more or less recognized standard wire gauges. The most commonly quoted is the

Birmingham wire gauge. It gives forty mcasuremenis, which bear no definite relation to each other, ranging from the largest No. 0000= “454 inch to No. 836=-004 inch. Sir Joseph Whitworth in 1857 proposed a standard wire gauge which is coming to be generally recognized. His measurements range from half an ineh to one-thousandth of an inch by regular gradations of one- thousandth. Beginning at the smallest, No. 1 is 001 ineh, 2=-002 inch, 10=-010 inch, and so on, larger breaks being made in the scale as the size inereases, but the number and ratio continuing the same till it ends at No. 500=°500 inch. In America a standard wire gauge, proposed in 1864 by Messrs Brown and Sharpe, of Providence, R.I., is now extensively recognized. In it the grada- tions are uniform, increasing in geometric ratio, so that the size of each successive number is found by multiplying the preceding by

WIS 615

1123. The standard is calculated from wire No. 36, which in the American gauge represents a diameter of ‘005, while in the Birming- ham gauge No. 36 is equal to -004 inch.

It must be obvious that the uses of wire are multifarious and diverse beyond all enumeration. It forms the raw material of important manufactures, such as the wire-net industry, wire-cloth making, and wire-rope spinning, in which it occupies a place ana- logous to a textile fibre. Wire-cloth of all degrees of strength and fineness of mesh is used for sifting and screening machinery, for draining paper pulp, for window screens, and for many other purposes. Vast quantities of copper and iron wire are employed for telegraph and telephone wires and cables, and as conductors in electric light- ing. Itisin no less demand-for fencing, and much is consumed in the construction of suspension bridges, and eages, &e. In the manufacture of stringed musical instruments and philosophical apparatus wire is again largely used. Among its other sources of consumption it is sufficient to mention pin and hair-pin making, the needle and fish-hook industries, nail, peg, and rivet making, and earding machinery; but indeed there are few industries into which wire does not more or less enter.

WIRE ROPE. See Rops, vol. xx. p. 846.

WISBECH, or WisBEacu, a municipal borough, market- town, and seaport of Cambridge, England, in the Isle of Ely, is situated on the river Nene, on the Wisbech Canal, by which there is conncxion by the Ouse with Hertford, and on branches of the Great Eastern and Midland Rail- ways, 40 miles north of Cambridge, 21 east-north-east of Peterborough, and about 90 from London. It possesses a spacious market-place, a handsome crescent, and several good streets. There is a public park, 18 acres in extent. The greater part of the town is situated on the south side the river, which is crossed by aniron bridge. The churcli of St Peter and St Paul is very singularly constructed, having two parallel naves, two aisles, and two chancels, with a large square tower at the west end, originally dating from the 12th century, but almost entirely recon- structed about the close of the 15th century. The churcli contains some semicircular Saxon arches as well as some traces of Early Norman. Among the other public build- ings are the corn exchange (re-erected 1811), the public hall, the custom-house, the new cattle market, the work- ing men's club and institute, and the museum and literary institute, with a library of 12,000 volumes and a fine collection of Roman remains and other antiquities. Be- sides the Cambridgeshire Hospital (1873) and the twelve corporation almshouses there are a large number of other charities. A grammar-school was established in the middle of the 16th century, and provision was made in the charter of Edward VI. for its continuance. A Gothic monument was erected here to Thomas Clarkson, the anti-slavery orator, in 1881. Vessels of 500 tons burden can enter the port, and extensive wharfage has been erected at a cost of £60,000. The number of vessels that entered the port in 1886 was 294, of 50,721 tons, and the number that cleared 286, of 50,812 tons. The chief imports are corn, potatoes, wool, timber, and iron, and the exports agricul- tural produce and salt. In the neighbourhood immense quantities of fruit are grown, including apples, pears, plums, gooseberries, and strawberries. Potatoes, asparagus, and other vegetables are also largely grown for the London market. The town possesses agricultural implement works, coach-building works, breweries, ropeworks, planing and sawing mills, and corn and oil-cake mills, many of them driven by water, and others by steam. The town is divided into two wards, and is governed by a mayor, six alder- men, and eighteen councillors. It has a separate commis- sion of the peace. The corporation act as the urban sanitary authority. Water is obtained from chalk springs

near Norfolk. The population of the municipal borough in 1871 was 9362 and in 1881 it was 9249.

Wisbech was most probably a fort of the Romans, who it is sup- posed constructed the river banks in the neighbourhood. It takes

its name from the river Ouse (Wyse). It is first noticed in 664, in a charter of Wulfhere, son of Penda. In the early part of the

Plate XV.

11th century it was given by Oswy and Leoflede to the convent of Ely, on the admission of their son Alwyn into that monastery. After the subjugation of the Isle of Ely William erected a strong castle at Wisbech to hold the district in subjection. At Domesday the manor was held by the abbot of Ely, and possessed extensive fisheries, especially of eels. In 1190 Richard I. granted to the tenants of the manor exemption from tolls at all fairs and markets in England, a privilege confirmed by King John, who in 1216 visited the town. In 1236 the town and a great part of the castle was destroyed by an inundation, and the castle lay in ruins till the 15th century, when Morton, bishop of Ely, erected a new building of brick for an episcopal residence. In the reign of Elizabeth it was appropriated to the confinement of state prisoners, among others of robert Catesby. During the Protectorate it was purchased by Thurloe, afterwards secretary of state, who in 1660 ereeted an en- tirely new one from designs of Inigo Jones, when some Roman bricks were discovered. On the Restoration it again came into the possession of the bishops of Ely, who sold itin 1793, and all remains of it have now disappeared. Anciently the town possessed eight guilds in addition to that of the Holy Trinity, to which they were subordinate. This guild received royal sanction from Richard 1I. in 1393, and held its last meeting in 1557. The town received a chartcr of incorporation from Edward VI. in 1549, which was re- newed by James 1. in 1611, and confirmed by Charles II. in 1669, remaining in force till the passing of the Municipal Act.

See Watson's Historical Account of Wisbech, 1827; IHistory of Wisbech, 1833; and " Wisbech Castle," in Journal of Brit. Arch. Assoc., 1879.

WISBY, a picturesque old town on the west coast of the Swedish island of Gotland. It has a considerable trade, but does not occupy half the space enclosed within its old walls, which, with their towers, still survive. These walls, which were built partly on the site of older struc- tures, date from the thirteenth century. The vacant spaces of the town are used as gardens, in some of which are fine ruined churches. The church of St Mary (built 1190- 1225) is used as the cathedral. Of the ten ruined churches the most interesting is that of St Nicholas, partly in the Romanesque partly in the Gothic style. In 1880 the

population of the town was 6924.

In the Middle Ages Wisby was a port of the Hanseatic League, and a great centre of trade. Its wealth was so celebrated that in an old ballad the people were said to play with the choicest jewels, and the women to spin with golden distaffs. All the principal nations of Kurope had representatives at Wisby, and some of its beantiful churches were built by foreign residents. In 1361 it was attacked and plundered by King Waldemar I1l. (Atterdag) of Denmark. 1t never recovered from this blow, and when, in 1645, Gotland was finally united to Sweden by the treaty of Brémsebro Wisby had altogether lost its importance.

WISCONSIN, one of the North-Eastern Central States of the American Union, has the parallel of 42° 30' N. lat. for its southern limit, Lake Michigan for its border on the E., Lake Superior on the N., and the Mississippi on theW. Michigan on the E., Minnesota and Iowa on the W., and Illinois on the S. are its neighbour States. Its area, exclusive of water surface, is estimated at 54,450 square miles. Its length from north to south is 300 miles, its breadth 250 miles ; its lake shore-line exceeds 500 miles. Its surface contours are gentle and pleasing. The lower parts of the State lie about 600 feet above the sea, the highest summits about 1800 feet. Few peaks rise more than 400 feet above their bases, and abrupt elevations of more than 200 or 300 feet are not common except along the Mississippi. The State is merely a swell of land between three notable depressions,—the basins of Lake Michigan, Lake Superior, and the

Mississippi. The summit of the swell lies within 30 miles of Lake Superior, whence there is a rapid descent northward, with gentler declines to the south-east and south-west, separated by a low swell extending from the summit southward into Illinois. This is traversed in the south-central portion of the State by a remarkable diagonal valley, occupied by Green Bay and the Fox and Wisconsin rivers, cutting it down to within about 200 feet of the lake levels. The easterly slope is traversed longitudinally by a ridge of Niagara limestone, running nearly parallel to the shore of Lake Michigan, at an average distance of about 30 miles.

Ww is—

WIS

The greatest topographical interest—and it is very con- siderable—lies in the minor surface features. The ice of the Glacial period invaded in force the eastern and northern parts of the State, while an area of 10,000 square miles in the south-western portion was left untouched. Flowing but very irregular contours, accented by morainic peaks and ridges, by gravel knolls, and by domes of drift, mark the former area; while deep dendritic valleys, erosion cliffs, and castellated outliers give more striking relief to the latter. About 2000 minor lakes dot the eastern and northern portions, all lying within the glaciated area, and caused by the irregular heaping of the drift, or by the erosion of the glaciers. Numerous waterfalls occur in this portion, likewise due to the disturbance of the river- courses by the ice incursion. None occur in the un- glaciated area.

Geology.—The geological structure of the State is unusually sym- metrical (see general geological map in Plate XV.). It has for its nucleus a great mass of the most ancient crystalline rocks (Archean). This nucleus occupies the north-central portion of the State, and about it are wrapped successive layers of later-formed rocks, lying concentrically upon each other, and occupying all the rest of the State. The ancient nucleus consists of granites, gneisses, syenites, and various highly crystalline schists. These are warped, contorted, and twisted among themselves in the most intricate fashion, and, since their origina] upheaval, have been extensively cut away, exhibiting what was formerly the interior of a much distorted mass. Whether this was originally sedimentary or igneous is

undetermined, so great are the vicissitudes it has suffered since its original forma- tion. It is extensively traversed by dykes and veins. As yet it has not proved to be productive in minerals of notable commercial value, but affords a wealth of the finest of building material. This forma- tion is confidently referred to the Laurentian age, and ranks among the earliest known formations. Around the borders of this nucleus, though not skirting it continuously at the surface, are tracts of Huronian rocks. For the greater part these lie in highly inclined beds, and exhibit evidence of much disturbance since their original formation. Where they come in contact with the Laurentian nucleus, they show, by their unconformity to it, and the erosion of the strata at the contact, that a vast but unknown interval of time separated the two formations. The Huronian rocks are chiefly quartzites, with which are associated quartz-porphyries and various slates and schists, together with layers of igneous rock, either formed at the same time with other members of the series, or subsequently intruded, They embrace also, especially in the north- eastern and northern portions of the State, and extending into the upper peninsula of Michigan, valuable beds of iron-ore, as well as beds of carbonaceous matcrial. The amount of carbon contained is large, but_unfortunately impure and in the graphitic condition. Limestone also occurs, among the most ancient of its kind. The quartzites of Barron county embrace deposits of pipestone, which also occurs in the Baraboo quartzite, but less notably. Several isolated knobs of quartz-porphyry in central Wisconsin are referred to this formation, and are being extensively utilized for building material, paving, and macadamizing. Apart from the igneous beds, the members of this series were originally sediments, and even now show clearly their fragmental origin. The thickness of the Huronian beds reaches at least 13,000 feet. Overlying the Huronian rocks in the north-western part of the State is an im- mense series of igneous beds, sandwiched between which, and also overlying which, are layers of sandstone, shale, and conglomerate, the whole constituting the great copper-bearing (Keweenaw) forma- tion of Lakc Superior. This crosses the entire north-western corner of the State. The strata are bowed downwards, forming a great trough, the axis of which stretches from near the mouth of the Montreal river to the St Croix. The igneous beds were formed by great outwellings of molten matter, which spread widely over the surface, following each other at longer or shorter intervals, as shown

by the presence or absence of intervening deposits or by erosion. The copper of the formation appears to have been brought up by these igneous ejections, and to have been subsequently con- centrated by percolating water in the vesicular portions of the old lavas, or in the intervening sandstones or conglomerates, or in fissures traversing the beds,—all these forms being present. The formation in Wisconsin has not yet proved sufficiently rich to pay the expense of mining. The thickness of this formation is truly stupendous, estimates ranging from 25,000 to 45,000 feet.

The preceding formations are found tilted at various angles; those which follow lie nearly flat. The Potsdam sandstone, next in order, rests upon all of these at points, coming in contact with different ones in different places. The wear which they had suffered before it was placed upon them indicates a long interval of time. The thickness of the Potsdam is very irregular, owing to the un-

—

even worn surface of these underlying formations. In places it is upwards of 1000 feet deep. Being an open-textured water-bearing formation, dipping south-eastward and south-westward from the central axis of the State, and embracing and being overlaid by im- pervious beds, it furnishes many fine-flowing wells to the districts bordering Lake Michigan and the Mississippi. Some of its beds supply excellent building material, though in general it is not sufficiently firm. The Potsdam sandstone forms a broad irregular crescentic belt, sweeping around the southern border of the Archean nucleus. It also skirts the northern side in the Lake Superior basin. Overlying the Potsdam sandstone is a stratum of impure Magnesian Limestone, ranging from 50 to 250 feet in thickness. It forms the surface rock in an irregular ragged belt, stretching from the St Croix southward along the Mississippi, and south-easterly to the south-central part of the State, and thence north-easterly to the upper peninsula of Michigan. Small quantities of the ores of lead, iron, and copper are found in it, and certain portions furnish an excel- lent building stone. Overlying this, the Lower Magnesian Lime- stone, is an irregular stratum of nearly

pure sandstone (St Peter's), ranging from a few feet to upwards of 200 feet in thickness. It is composed of nearly pure grains of quartz, and from the absence of cementing material generally crumbles with ease, though in excep- tional places it is sufficiently hard to be used as a building-stone. Being porous and gently dipping between impervious beds, it sup- plies some of the finest artesian fountains in the State. Its purer portions afford sand.

Upon the St Peter's sandstone rests a series of limestone beds, the lower part of which is known as Trenton, the upper as Galena. Their united thickness varies considerably, averaging about 250 feet. In the south-western part of the State they have' yielded large quantities of lead and zinc ores, and some copper. 'The formation occupies a small area in the north-west of the State,'a large area in the south-west, and a belt stretching from south to north through the valleys of Rock river and Green Bay.

Overlying the above limestones is a stratum of about 200 feet in thickness, composed of clay, earthy, and calcarcous shales (Hudson River). This is a soft formation and easily eroded, and hence occupies little area at the surface. It forms a narrow north- and-south belt on the eastern margin of the Green Bay and Rock river valley. It has little economic value. At a few points on the surface of these shales there are accumulations of a peculiar Oolitic iron ore (Clinton), popularly known as "seed" or "shot ore," from its concretionary structure. Its highest development is at Iron Ridge in Dodge county, where its thickness ranges from 15 to 25 feet. It is a soft ore, lying in regular horizontal beds, is quarried with great ease, and yields about 45 per cent. of metallic iron.

The next formation is a thick limestone stratum (Niagara), rang- ing from 400 to 800 feet. The different portions vary greatly in texture and purity, some being very fine-grained, others of admir- able granular texture, and others uneven, cavernous, or full of chert nodules. It furnishes excellent building rock, and quicklime of high quality. The formation occupies a broad tract adjacent to Lake Michigan, reaching from the southern line of the State to the head of the Green Bay peninsula. Italso caps the elevated mounds in the south-west of the State. The Lower Helderberg

limestone, which attains great thickness farther east, is barely (indeed, some- what doubtfully) represented in the State by some thin shaly beds of limestone found north of Milwaukee. The remainder of the normal Silurian beds and the Lower Devonian formations are not represented in the State, but just north of Milwaukce is a small area of limestone which represents the Hamilton period (Middle Devonian), a portion of which possesses hydraulic properties of a high degree of excellence, and is the basis of an important industry.

From the middle of the Devonian age until the ice incursion of the Glacial period, Wisconsin appears to have been a land surface, subjected to erosion, which developed the hills and valleys that diversify its surface, except as they were modified by the invading ice. As previously indicated, the ice of the Glacial period over- rode the northern and eastern portions of the State, while it left about one-fifth of the State in the south-west untouched. The paths of the invading ice were determined by the great valleys of Lake Superior, Lake Michigan, and Green Bay, aided by the divert- ing influence of the intervening heights. There appear to have been two important invasions,—the earlier covering the larger area, while the later exhibited the more forceful action. There were also minor episodes of glacial advance and retreat. Both spread out an irregular sheet of mixed rock debris, partly derived from the old decomposed surface, and partly produced by the grinding action of the glaciers themselves, The underlying rock was smoothed, scratched, and polished, and in some moderate measure filed down by the overriding ice. A remarkable chain of hills formed about the edge of the ice (the Kettle moraine) constitutes an interesting feature topographically and geologically. It forms a part of an extensive series of terminal moraines that stretch from the Atlantic to the Saskatchewan.

Soils.—The soils of the State are varied. Those of the drift-

bearing region are-derived from the heterogeneous mixture of pre- glacial soils and glacial grindings, and constitute for the greater part loamy clays and sandy loams of a high degree of fertility and permanence. In the south-west a considerable portion of the soils are derived from the decomposition of the underlying limestone, and are highly fertile and

*easily tilled. In the central portion there is a considerable area underlaid by the Potsdam sandstone, from which sandy soils, of relatively low fertility, have been derived. Vegetation.—The greater part of the State was originally covered by forest, but in the south and west considerable areas of prairies were found interspersed with woodlands. The prevalent trees of this region are the oaks, poplars, hickories, and their usual associ- ates. Along the eastern border of the State, except at the very south, is an extensive tract of heavy timber, in which maple, elm, ash, and their usual associates predominate. Towards the north the pines, hemlocks, and spruces come in. The north part of the State was originally eovered by an almost unbroken forest, com- posed of groves of pine, of hard wood, and of a promiscuous mixture of species embracing both conifers and deciduous trees. This constitutes the great lumber region of Wisconsin. Climate.—Lying between 424° and 47° N. lat., and near the centre of the continent, Wisconsin has a typical temperate con- tinental climate. Its summers are warm, and diversified by short rains and clear skies; its winters are somewhat severe but rela- tively dry and stimulating, and are less chilly than more humid atmospheres at similar or even higher temperatures. The average rainfall is about 30 inches. The mean summer temperature varies from about 70° in the south to about 60° in the north; the mean winter temperature varies from about 25° in the south to about 15° in the extreme north. The great lakes produce a marked effect on the seasonal temperature of the State, elevating it in winter and depressing it in summer, so that the summer isotherms run from the north-west to south-east, forced south by the cooling influence of the lakes; while those of the winter run from south-west to north-east, forced north by their warming influence. As a result, productions requiring a high summer temperature flourish in the south-western and central portions of the State, but are precarious in the vicinity of the lakes, while fruits and crops requiring milder winters and more equable temperatures can be produced near the lakes, but are uncertain away from them. (EvG: ©.) Population. —In 1840 Wisconsin Territory had a population of 30,945. The accompanying table exhibits the population from 1850 to 1880. The State census of 1885 gives the number as 1,563,423. The Federal – Density census of 1880 showed Population. per 1,309,618 whites, 2702 ise * hee eee > coloured, and 3161 Indians. Total. | Males. | Femaled.| ils. The foreign-born popula- | yg50 | 305,391 | 164,716 | 140,675 | 5°61*

tion numbered 405,425, or | 1860 | 775,881 | 407,449 | 368,432 | 14-25 30°81 per cent. of the | 1870 | 1,054,670 | 544,886 | 509,784 | 19°37

315,497 | 680,069 | 635,428 | 24:16 whole, of whom 184,328 os : :

eame from the German empire, 66,284 from the Scandinavian countries, and 78,057 from Great Britaiu and Ireland.

Cities. —In 1885 Milwaukee had a population of 158,509; Osh- kosh, 22,064; La Crosse, 21,740; Eau Claire, 21,668; Racine, 19,636; Fond du Lac, 12,726; Madison (the State capital), 12,064; Sheboygan, 11,727 ; Appleton, 10,927 ; and Janesville, 9941.

Agriculture.—By the United States eensus of 1880 Wisconsin had 134,322 farms, embracing 15,353,118 acres, of which 9,162,528 acres were improved land. Of these farms 122,163 were cultivated by the owners and 12,159 were rented. The State census of 1885 estimates the total number of persons engaged in agriculture at 332,500, and the value of farms and agricultural products at $568,187,288. The produce is estimated approximately as fol- lows :—wheat, 21,000,000 bushels; Indian corn, 37,700,000; oats, 43,000,000 ; barley, 11,500,000; rye, 2,100,000 ; potatoes, 11,700,000; hay, 2,300,000 tons; sorghum, 599,000 gallons ; apples, 1,671,000 bushels; berries, 71,000 bushels. 29,500 acres of tobacco produced nearly 29,595,000 ib (this is in demand for cigar wrappers). Of cheese nearly 33,480,000 Ib were produced, and of butter 36,240,000 ib. There were in 1886 about 389,000 horses, 1,256,000 cattle, 6700 mules and asses, 917,000 sheep and lambs, and 777,000 swine. }

Manufactures, &c.—Large water-powers are found, ehiefly on the Fox, Wisconsin, and Chippewa rivers. In 1885 the value of real estate and machinery used in manufacturing was over $38,000,000 : stock and fixtures over $24,000,000 ; value of manufacturing estab- lishments and their products, $193,700,000. There were about 58,500 menemployed. The lumber, shingles, and lath manufactured amounted to $27,113,000 ; milling (including all flour manufactured from eereals), $19,870,000; wooden articles, $13,719,000 ; iron products and manufactured articles of iron, $10,300,000 ; beer, more than 1,445,000 barrels, valued at $9,081,000 (over 75 per cent.

of this coming from the great brewing city of Milwaukee) ; manu-

factured articles of leather, $8,629,000; waggons, carriages, and

sleighs, $4,678,000 ; paper, $2,804,000 ; woollen fabrics, $613,000 ;

cotton fabrics, $556,000. 'The census of 1880 valued the slaughter=

ing and meat-packing product at about $6,534,000 and agricultural implements at $3,742,000.

Lumbering.—The proximity of Wisconsin to the prairie States renders its lumbering interests especially important. In 1886 the total forest area of the State was 17,000,000 acres, or 48°8 per cent. of the whole area. Aceording to the census of 1880, Wisconsin was exceeded only by Michigan and Pennsylvania in the value of its lumber product. Operations are chiefly carried on along the Menomonee, Peshtigo, Oconto, Wolf, Wisconsin, Yellow, Black, Chippewa, Red Cedar, and St Croix rivers; but the rapid increase in railroads has opened the northern forests very generally. The lumber, shingles, and lath manufactured amounted to about 3,323,390,000 feet in 1885.

Mines and Quarries.—In 1880 Wisconsin ranked sixth among the iron-producing States, but since then its importance has in- ereased. 'The most extensive iron deposits occur in the Huronian formation in the Menominee region, and along the Montreal river. In 1882 the total product of the Menominee region was 276,017 tons; the Montreal range, divided between Wisconsin and Michigan, about a dozen miles south of Lake Superior, has just been opened up, and there is a rich deposit of Bessemer ore. In 1886 the pro- duct of the whole range was about 800,000 tons. The lead and zinc region lics in the south-west of the State; production had been declining, but recently new discoveries have revived it. There is a rich supply of building-stone; limestone quarries are most numerous, but the red-brown sandstone of Bayfield county and the granite of Marquette county are especially valued.

Fisheries.—The white fish and lake-trout fishing industries of Lake Miehigan and Lake Superior are extensive, and the inland lakes? and streams abound in bass, pike, pickerel, sturgeon, and brook-trout. A State fisheries commission annually stocks the waters with brook-trout, white fish, and pike.

Railways and Canals.—There were in Wisconsin in June 1886 4576 miles of railway. The leading lines are the Chicago, Milwaukee, and St Paul; the Chicago and North-Western; the Chicago, Min- neapolis, St Paul, and Omaha; the Milwaukee, Lake Shore, and Western ; and the Wisconsin Central. A canal connects the Fox and Wisconsin rivers at Portage, and the Sturgeon Bay Canal unites Green Bay and Lake Michigan.

Administration, &c.—The State, which is divided into sixty- eight counties, is represented in the Congress of the United States by two senators and nine representatives. The supreme court is composed of a chief justice and four associate justices; there are fourteen judicial circuits, each with a judge; and besides these are county and municipal judges and justices of the peace. The State legislature, composed of the senate (33 members) and the assembly (100 members), meets bienially.

Finances.—The value of all taxable property of the State for the year 1886, as determined by the State board of assessment, was as follows :—personal property, $114,922,900; city and village lots, $110,564,625; lands, $271,019,627; total assessed value of all woperty, $496,507,152. Taxes were as follows:—State tax,

241,137; county taxes, $2,590,375; town, city, and village taxes, $7,835,385. The total indebtedness of the towns, cities, villages, aud school districts in 1885 was $6,848,123; total indebtedness of counties, $1,569,444; bonded debt of the State, $2,252,000.

Charitable, Reformatory, and Penal Institutions. —The State sup- ports two hospitals for the insane, containing together 1141 inmates in 1885, while there are 1240 insane in county asylums, jails, and poorhouses. The school for the deaf has an attendance of 205, school for the blind, 62; industrial school for boys, 292; industrial school for girls, 268; State prison school, 443; a school for de- pendent children has just been

established. The whole number of prisoners in all places of confinement during 1885 was 19,829, and ui reformatories 771. The State board of contro! and the board of charities and reforms have charge of these institutions.

Edwcation.—The State makes liberal provision for its public schools; it sets apart as a permanent fund the Federal grant of section 16 in each township, with 500,000 acres of land, and 5 per cent. of the proceeds of the sale of public lands in the State, together with less important items. In 1886 there were still 103,130 acres unsold, and the amount of the fund at interest was nearly $3,000,000. This school-fund income, which in 1887 was $341,289, is supplemented by a State tax of one mill on the dolar, which amounted to $896,138; the combined amount is annually apportioned among the counties, towns, villages, and cities in pro- portion to the number of children in each of from four to twenty years of age; in their turn the counties must levy upon each town, city, and village a tax equal to their proportion of the com- bined school fund and State mill tax. The total receipts from all sources for school purposes in 1886 was $4,192,962, and the dis- bursements $3,184,958. In the same year there were 556,093 persons of school age. Of these 59°4 per cent. were enrolled in the public schools. The enrolments in normal schools and uni- versity (2481), in colleges, seminaries, and academies (1131), and

1 There are about 3000 square miles of clear-water lakes.

in private schools (14,164) made the total enrolment over 350,000. In 1879 attendance at a public or private school for at least twelve weeks each year was made compulsory on all children between the ages of seven and fifteen years. Women are eligible to all school offices, except that of State superintendent of public instruction. In 1888 there are 137 free high schools, receiving special aid from the State. Provision is made for the education of teachers by the five normal schools. The leading denominational colleges are Beloit, Ripon, Milton, Racine, and Lawrence university. The public school system is crowned by the State university at Madison, organized in 1848. It derives its support chiefly from an annual State tax of one-eighth of a mill on the dollar. The total regular income of

the university in 1886 was $105,000; the attendance in 1887 was 600. Connected with the university are a teachers' institute lectureship and farmers' institutes-held in different por- tions of the State, as well as over sixty accredited high schools.

The State historieal society at Madison, the capital, has a refer- ence library of 125,000 volumes and pamphlets, and is the richest in the nation upon the history of the Mississippi basin; the State law library there has 19,000 volumes, the university library 14,500, and the city library 9000. Milwaukee has a public library of 35,000 volumes.

Antiquities and History.—The State is noted for its exceptionally large number of animal mounds, the work of the " mound-builders." They are found along rivers and lake banks, and are from 2 to 6 feet high, sometimes 200 feet long; remains of prehistoric cir- cumvallations, with brick baked in sitw, have been found, and the largest collection of prehistoric copper implements has been made in this State. Wisconsin was the meeting ground of the Algonkin aud Dakota Indian tribes. Its water system connecting the Great Lakes and' the Mississippi made it the keystone of the French possessions in Canada and Louisiana. The genesis of Wisconsin was from the fur trade. French explorers, ascending the Ottawa, crossed to Lake Huron, whence they easily passed throngh the Straits of Mackinaw to Green Bay, thence up the Fox to the portage between it and the Wisconsin, and on to the Mississippi. In 1634 an agent of Champlain, Jean Nicolet, first of recorded white men to reach Wisconsin soil, ascended the Fox a eonsiderable distance. In 1658-59 Radisson and Groseilliers, two fur traders who afterwards induced England to enter the Hudson Bay region, passing along the south shore of Lake Superior, struek southward to the tributaries of the Mississippi. Radisson's journal describes a great river visited by him, which was probably the Mississippi. In 1665 Father Claude Allouez founded a Jesuit mission at La Pointe, and in 1669 the mission of St Francis Xavier on the shores of Green Bay. Louis Joliet, leaving Quebec under orders to dis- cover the South Sea, in 1678, took with him Father Marquette from Mackinaw, and reached the Mississippi by the diagonal water- way of the Fox and Wisconsin rivers. In 1679 La Salle, aceom- panied by Father Hennepin, passed along the western shore of Lake Michigan to the

Illinois, and in the next year Hennepin, ascending the Mississippi, met Du Luth, who had reached it by way of the western extremity of Lake Superior. Thus were traced out the bounds and principal river-courses of Wisconsin. The epoch of the fur trade followed, during which stockade posts were erected at various key-points on the trading routes ; they became depend- encies of Mackinaw, long the emporium of the fur trade. In the French and Indian war of 1755-60 Wisconsin savages served under Charles de Langlade against the English at Braddock's defeat and elsewhere. Near the middle of the 18th century De Langlade and his father had established a trading post at Green Bay, whieh after- wards became a fixed settlement ; at the close of the revolutionary war Prairie du Chien, at the mouth of the Wisconsin, grew into a like settlement; and towards the close of the century Milwaukee, La Pointe, and Portage became permanent trading posts. The British garrison that was sent in 1761 to hold Green Bay left at the outbreak of Pontiac's war, and did notreturn. In the revolutionary war Wisconsin Indians under De Langlade supported the British, England having retained Mackinaw despite the treaty of 1788, American domination was not practically felt by the Wisconsin traders until after the war of 1812. In this war they favoured Great Britain, and in 1814 the latter wrested Prairie du Chien from an American detachment. But the formation of Astor's American Fur Company to deal in this region was followed by a United States law excluding English traders, which resulted in an increase of American influence. At the close of the war the United States placed forts at Green Bay and Prairiedu Chien. By the ordinance of 1787 Wisconsin had been a part of the territory north-west of the river Ohio; in 1800 it was included in Indiana Territory, whence in 1809 it passed to Illinois Territory, and in 1818 to Michigan Territory. In 1825 the lead-mines in south-western Wisconsin, which had been known from the earliest days of French exploration, and had been worked by the Sacs and Foxes and by Winnebagoes, attracted a considerable mining population. Hos- tilities with the Winnebagoes followed, resulting in the cession by the latter of the lead region, and the erection of Fort Winnebago in 1828 at Portage. In 1832 occurred Black Hawk's War, occasioned

by the refusal of a Sac band to remove beyond the Mississippi from Illinois, in accordance with treaty stipulations. Pursued by regulars and Illinois militia to the head-waters of Rock river, the band fled across south-western Wisconsin to the Mississippi, where they were nearly exterminated. This expedition disclosed the rich farming lands of the region. formed. Before this the fur trade and lead-mining .had been the chief factors in development, but a wave of land speculation and immigration reached here at this period. In 1840 there was a population of 30,945, more than double that of four years before. On August 9, 1846, Congress authorized Wisconsin to form a State government. The constitution framed in 1846 being rejected by the people, a second one was ratified in 1848, and Wisconsin be- came a State on May 29 of that year.

At an early period the State adopted the policy of attracting im- migration by cheap lands, a work in which the railroads have greatly aided, with the result that Wisconsin has the remarkable

are whole communities of the same foreign nationality,—such as the German groups along the shore of Lake Michigan, the Scandi- navian in various localities, the Swiss colony of New Glarus, the Belgians in Door county, and many others. The recent develop- ment of lumbering has rapidly built up northern Wisconsin, a process now being accelerated by the mining interests on the Montreal range. Wisconsin furnished to the Union armies in the civil war over 91,000 men, the famous Iron Brigade being chiefly from that State. (UBS dls #8)

WISHAW, a police burgh of Lanarkshire, Scotland, and an important mining and iron town, is situated on the face of a hill, a short distance south of the South Calder water, and on the Caledonian Railway, 12 miles east-south-east of Glasgow. It is rather irregularly built, but contains some spacious streets, although the majority of the houses are inhabited by the working classes. It has numerous churches belonging to the different denom- inations, and a public library. Wishaw has risen to importance since the development of the coal and iron industry within recent years. The coal-pits of the district are among the most extensive in Scotland, and in the town there are iron and steel works, malleable-iron

works, fireclay works, and a distillery. Wishaw was created a police burgh in 1855, and in 1874 the limits of the burgh were extended so as to include the villages of Cambusnethan and Craigneuk. The population of Wishaw according to its old limits was 8812 in 1871 and 8953 in 1881, that of the extended area in 1881 being 13,112, of which 1829 belonged to Cambusnethan and 2330 to Craigneuk. The town has borne in succession the following names:—New Town of Cambusnethan, New Town of Wishaw, Wishaw- town, and Wishaw.

WISMAR, the second commercial town and seaport of Mecklenburg-Schwerin, Germany, is situated on the Bay of Wisinar, one of the best harbours on the Baltic, 18 miles almost due north of Schwerin. The town is well and regularly built, with broad and straight streets, and contains numerous handsome and quaint buildings in the northern Gothic style. The church of St Mary, a Gothic edifice of 1353, with a tower 260 feet high, and the church of St Nicholas (1381-1460), with very lofty vaulting, are regarded as good examples of the influence exercised in these northern provinces by the large church of St Mary in Ltibeck. The elegant cruciform church of St George dates from the 14th and 15th centuries. The Fiirstenhof, at one time a ducal residence but now occupied by the municipal authorities, is a richly decorated specimen of German Renaissance. Built in 1554, it was restored in 1877-79. The "Old School," dating from about 1300, has been restored, and is now occupied as a museum. The chief manufactures of Wismar are iron, chicory, cigars, roofing-felt, asphalt, &e. Fishing and agriculture are carried on by the inhabitants, but their main industry is connected with shipping and trade. The leading ex- ports are grain, oil-seeds, butter, and cattle ; the imports are coal, timber, iron, stoneware, and lime. The harbour is deep enough to admit vessels of 16-feet draught. In

In 1836 Wisconsin Territory was |

1886 the port owned 35 ships (2 steamers), of 8302 tons burden ; in 1875, however, it had 46 ships, with a total burden of 10,447 tons. The population, 6009 in 1810 and 14,462 in 1875, was 16,011 in 1885.

Wismar is said to have received town-rights in 1229. In the 18th and 14th centuries it was a flourishing Hanse town, with important woollen factories, Though a plague carried off 10,000 of the inhabitants in 1376, the town seems to have remained toler- ably prosperous until the 16th century. By the peace of West- phalia in 1649 it passed to Sweden, along with a barony to which it gives name. In 1803 Sweden pledged both town and barony to Mecklenburg for a sum of money, reserving, however, the right of redemption after 100 years. In view of this contingent right of Sweden, Wismar is not represented in the diet of Mecklenburg ; but it still enjoys some of its ancient rights and privileges as a free

| town. proportion of persons of foreign parentage indicated above. There |

WITCHCRAFT. This subject has already been con- sidered in its general aspects under Astrotocy, DEMOoN- oLoey, Divination, Macic, and Sprrirvauism. In this place what will be mainly attempted will be to illustrate the position assumed by the law towards a crime which was regarded for centuries not only as' possible but also as specially noxious. It is a long interval from the Twelve Tables to the Bill of Rights, but the lawyers of the latter

age accepted the existence of witchcraft with a faith

almost as unquestioning as those of the former, and com- paratively few were they, whether lawyers or laymen, who in the interval dared to raise their voices against the prevailing superstition. The writings of Shakespeare and the other Elizabethan dramatists are sufficient of them- selves to show the universal prevalence of the belief in England. For the purposes of this article witchcraft may be taken to include any claim of a power to produce effects by other than natural causes. By whatever name such a power might be called in a particular case, whether witch- craft, conjuration, sorcery, incantation, divination, or any similar name, the legal effects attaching to its supposed exercise were usually the same. Witchcraft was the most comprehensive English name, sortilegium the most com- prehensive in ecclesiastical Latin.

In Roman law it was provided by the Twelve Tables that no one should remove his neighbour's crops to another field by incantation or conjure away his corn. At a later date the Lex Cornelia de Sicariis et Veneficis was extended by decree of the senate to cases of offering sacrifice to injure a neighbour.1_ Exercise of magical and diabolical arts rendered the magicians themselves liable to be burned alive, and those who consulted them to crucifixion. Even the possession of magical books was criminal. To administer a love potion, even though harmless, was punished by labour in the mines, or relegation and fine in the case of persons of rank.2 One title of the Code of Justinian is entirely taken up with the subject. Astro- logers (mathematict) seem to have been specially

objection- able to both the pagan and Christian emperors. Sorcery was punished by Constantine with banishment, or death by burning; and an accusation of witchcraft, as of treason, rendered every one, whatever his rank, liable to torture. To teach or to learn magic art was equally criminal. The

. only exceptions allowed (and these were afterwards re-

moved by Leo) were magic remedies for disease and for drought, storms, and other natural phenomena injurious to agriculture. A constitution of Honorius and Theodosius in 409 rendered mathematici liable to banishment unless they gave up their books to be burned in the presence of a bishop. The trial of ApuLEivs (¢.v.) for magic in 150 a.p. is the most familiar instance occurring under Roman law.*

The church followed and amplified Roman law. The

tome. sive Sls. 2 Paulus, Sententia, v. 21, 23 3 Cod., ix. 18 (De Maleficis et Mathematicis). 4 Const., 65.) (OliYihen i dh, ILO.

620

graver forms of witchcraft constituted Heresy (q.v.), and jurisdiction over such offences was claimed by the church courts to a comparatively late date. This authorization of belief in witchcraft was based partly on well-known texts of the Mosaic law—especially Exodus xxii. 18,— partly on peculiar constructions of other parts of Scripture, such as 1 Cor. xi. 10, where the words "because of the angels" were supposed to prove the reality of the class of demons called encubi.2 What kinds of witchcraft were heresy was a question learnedly discussed by Farinaccius and other writers on criminal law. The practical effect of this mode of regarding witchcraft was that, although according to the better opinion the offence was in itself the subject of both secular and ecclesiastical cognizance, in fact it was on the continent of Europe seldom punished by the secular power, except as the mere executive of ecclesiastical sentences. The earliest ecclesiastical decree appears to have been that of Ancyra, 315 a.p., condemning soothsayers to five years' penance. In canon law the Decretum subjected them to excommunication as idolaters and enemies of

Christ, and the bishop was to take all means in his power to put down the practice of divination.® The Decretals contained, among others, the provision that a priest seeking to recover stolen goods by inspection of an astrolabe might be suspended from his office and benefice.t In the 14th century John XXII. published a bull against witchcraft. In the 15th a vigorous crusade was begun by the bull ““Summis desiderantes affectibus ” of Innocent VIII. in 1484. Under the authority of this bull Sprenger and Kramer (Latinized into “ Institor ”) were appointed inquisitors, and five years later they published the famous work Malleus Maleficarum or Hexenhammer, the great text-book on procedure in witchcraft cases, especially in Germany. The third part of the work deals with the practice at length. One or two of the more interesting points of practice deserve a brief notice. Witnesses incompetent in ordinary cases were on account of the gravity of the offence admissible on a charge of witchcrafé against but not for the accused. An alleged witch was to be conjured by the tears of our Saviour and of our Lady and the saints to weep, which she could not do if she were guilty. The authors explain that witch- ‘craft is more natural to women than to men, on account of the inherent wickedness of their hearts. In the Roman and Greek Churches the form of Exorcism (q.v.) still survives,© and was acknowledged by the Church of England as lately as 1603. The 72d canon of that year forbade attempts by the clergy at casting out devils by fasting and prayer unless by special licence from the bishop. No such canon appears among the Irish canons of 1634. On one occasion in 1612 punishment of the exorcised demons was attempted. The bishop of Beauvais, in a document which Garinet has preserved, pronounced sentence of excommunication against five such demons.’ England.—As in other countries, ecclesiastical law claimed cognizance of witchcraft as a crime against God. The Penttentials of Archbishops Theodore and Egbert and

1 The name of one form of heresy (vauderie) came in time to denote a particular kind of witchcraft.

? A reference to the incubus as a matter of common knowledge occurs in the prologue to Chaucer’s Wife of Bath’s Tale.

3) Bin iLecalsa

5 The practice was also regulated by instructions promulgated by the Inquisition. A code of such instructions framed in 1657 will be found in the later editions of Cautio Criminalis (see below).

6 The extraordinary minuteness of detail by which the practice of exorcism was regulated, even in the last century, appears from a curious little Portuguese book by Brognolo, Methodo de exorcizar expelindo Demonios (Coimbra, 1727).

' For the Roman and ancient church law, see Smith's Dict. of Antiquities, s.vv. " Magica," ""'Mathematici," and Dict. of Chr. Antig., s.v. ' Magic."*

Wore Ow far T

the Confessional of Egbert are full of condemnations of magic divinations, diabolical incantations, love-philtres, &c. An exception is made in favour of incantation by a priest by means of the Lord's prayer or the creed. The practice of magic by women is set out in the same document with minute and disgusting detail. After the Conquest, commissions were from time to time issued empowering bishops to search for sorcerers. -A form of such a commission to the bishop of Lincoln in 1406 is given by Rymer.® The ecclesiastical courts punished by penance and fine up to 1542.9 For graver punishments the secular power acted as executive. Many persons guilty of sorcery were, according to Sir Edward Coke,1° burned by the king's writ de heretico comburendo after condemnation in the ecclesiastical courts. The secular courts dealt with witchcraft from a very early period. It was an indictable offence at common law and later by statute, though apparently not a felony until the Act of Henry VIII. The earliest trial recorded in England was in a secular court. In 1324 several persons were appealed before the coroners of the king's household, and the record, certifying acquittal by a jury, was then brought up by writ of certiorari.

In proceedings against a woman the doctrine of coercion by the husband (see Women) did not apply. A distinc- tion, more curious than important, was drawn between conjurers, witches, and sorcerers. Conjurers by force of magic words endeavoured to raise the devil and compel him to execute their commands. Witches by way of friendly conference bargained with

an evil spirit that he should do what they desired of him. Sorcerers or charmers, by the use of superstitious forms of words or by means of images or other representations of persons or things, produced.strange effects above the ordinary course of nature. Legislation on the subject began in the pre-Conquest codes. Thus the laws of Ethelred banished witches, soothsayers, and magicians. The laws of Canute included love-witchcraft under heathendom. It was evi- dently regarded as a survival of paganism. The first Act after the Conquest was passed in 1541 (33 Hen. VIII. c. 8), which dealt with a somewhat remarkable mixture of offences. It declared felony without benefit of clergy various kinds of sorceries, discovery of hidden treasure, destruction of a neighbour's person or goods, making images and pictures of men, women, children, angels, devils, beasts, and fowls, and pulling down crosses. The Act having been repealed at the accession of Edward VI., another Act on similar lines but distinguishing different grades of witchcraft was passed in 1562. By this Act, 5 Eliz. c. 16, conjuration and invocation of evil spirits, and the practice of sorceries, enchantments, charms, and witchcrafts, whereby death ensued, were made felonies without benefit of clergy and punishable with death. If only bodily harm ensued, the punishment for a first offence was a@ year's imprisonment and the pillory, and for a second death. If the practice was to discover hidden treasure or to provoke to unlawful love, the punishment for a first offence was the same as in the last case, for a second imprisonment for life and forfeiture of goods. At the accession of James I., perhaps in compliment to the king's position as an expert and specialist in the matter, was passed 1 Jac. I. c. 12, which continued law for more than a century. The strange verbiage of the most im- portant section of the Act is worth quoting in full. "If any person or persons shall use, practise, or exercise any

8 Federa, vol. vii. p. 427.

® See Hale, Heclesiastical Precedents, cited in Stephen, JHist. of the Criminal Law, vol. ii. p. 410. 103 Inst., 44.

Parliamentary Writs (Record Commission edition), vol. ii. div, i, p. 403.

WorTcrocnR a rT

invocation or conjuration of any evil and wicked spirit, or shall consult, covenant with, entertain, employ, feed, or reward any evil and wicked spirit to or for any intent or purpose, or take up any dead man, woman, or child out of his, her, or their grave or any other place where the dead body resteth, or the skin, bone, or any part of any dead person, to be employed or used in any manner of witchcraft, sorcery, charm, or enchantment, or shall use, practise, or exercise any witchcraft, enchantment, charm, or sorcery, whereby any person shall be killed, destroyed, wasted, consumed, pined, or lamed in his or her body or any part thereof," every such offender is a felon without benefit of clergy. The Act further punished with im- prisoument for a first offence, and for a second made it felony without benefit of clergy, to declare by witchcraft where treasure was, to provoke to unlawful love, or to attempt to hurt cattle, goods, or persons. This Act was repealed in 1736 by 9 Geo. II. c. 5. It will be noticed that in all the Acts it was necessary (except in the case of love-philtres) that injury should have been caused or intended or gain made. There were statutes which, although not directly concerned with witchcraft, aimed at the suppression of analogous offences. Thus multiplication of gold and silver (by means of the philosopher's stone) was made felony in 1403 by 5 Hen. IV. ¢. 4. This was repealed by 1 Will. and M. c. 30,—it is said, by the influ- ence of Robert Boyle. Numerous Acts dealing with the practice of palmistry and fortune-telling by Egyptians or Gipsies were passed at different times, beginning in 1530 with 22 Hen. VIII. c. 10. They are now superseded by the provisions of the Vagrant Act of 1824.

Trials for witchcraft in England do not seem to have been proportionately as numerous or to have been accom- panied with such circumstances of cruelty as those in niost other countries. This may be accounted for partly by the diminishing authority of the church courts, partly by the absence of TorTURE (q¢.v.) as a recognized means of procedure, though no doubt it was too often used in an informal manner. The pricking of the body of an alleged witch by Hopkins the witch-finder and similar wretches in order to find the insensible spot or devil's mark, the proof by water (a popular survival of the old water ordeal), and similar proceedings, if not judicial torture, at least caused as much pain to the victims. Charges of witch-craft seem to have been made with great frequency against persons of rank during the Wars of the Roses for political purposes. The cases of the

duchess of Gloucester and Jane Shore will at once occur to the mind, and neither Edward IV. nor his queen were exempt. The duke of Clarence was accused of imputing witchcraft to the former ; and the latter and her mother, the duchess of Bedford, were charged with having obtained the promise of marriage from the king by magical means. Trials in England were most numerous in the 17th century. In the case of the Lancashire witches in 1634 seventeen persons were condemned on the evidence of one boy. In the period from 1645 to 1647 between two and three hundred are said to have been indicted in Suffolk and Essex alone, of whom more than half were convicted.? The State Z'rials contain several instances of such trials, viz., those of Anne Turner in 1615,? and the countess of Somerset in 1616 ®(where a charge of witchcraft was joined with the charge of poisoning Sir Thomas Overbury), Mary Smith in 1616, the Essex witches in 1645,° the Suffolk witches in 1665,° and the Devon witches in 1682." The most interesting trial is that of the Suffolk witches, because Sir Matthew Hale was the judge and Sir Thomas

2 Ibid., 930. 5 4 Ibid., 817. 7 8 Ibid., 1017.

1 2 State Trials, 1052 n. 3 Tbid., 951. 4 Toid., 1050. 8 6 Tbid., 647.

Browne was the medical expert witness.§ In many of these trials the accused confessed before execution. The reasons which urged them to confess not only impossi- bilities, but impossibilities of the most revolting kind, are not very easy to discover. In some cases, no doubt, the object was to escape the misery of life as a reputed witch. The theory of witchcraft, too, was universal and well known, and the revolting details of worship of the devil and of the witches' sabbath must have been familiar to all. Torture, as the Milan case shows (see ToRTURE), might force from the accused confession of an impossible crime, and even without torture instances have been known in modern times where women have charged themselves with offences in which they were the only believers.9 These considerations may partially, if not fully, solve a difficulty which has been felt ever since the time of Cardan. Towards the end of the 17th century the feeling towards witchcraft began to change. The case of Hatha- way in 1702 no doubt accelerated the decay of the old belief. He was convicted of

cheating and assault by falsely pretending to be bewitched and by making an attack on an alleged witch.!° The last trial in England was that of Jane Wenham in 1712, convicted at Hertford, but not executed. A case said to have occurred in 1716 does not rest on good authority. This change of feeling was no doubt caused to a great extent by the works of writers, few in number but strong in argument, who from the time of Reginald Scor (g.v.) struck at the very found- ations of the popular belief. One of the most interesting but least-known writers is George Gifford, whose views are in the nature of a compromise. His point is that the devil may deceive not only witches but their accusers. The jury who convict may sometimes be right, but it must be very seldom. As lately as 1718 Dr Hutchinson, bishop of Down and Connor, thought it worth while to argue against witchcraft, but rather from the popular than the scientific point of view.!2 Legal writers did little to shake the prevailing opinion. Coke, Bacon, and Hale certainly admitted the possibility of witchcraft; Selden at least

8 In this case, tried at the assizes at Bury St Edmunds on March 16, 1664-65, two widows named Rose Cullender and Annie Duny were accused of bewitching young children. The main points of the evidence were these. There had been a quarrel between the accused and the parents of the children, and the accused had uttered threats against them. The children fell into fits and vomited crooked pins, ané once one of them vomited a twopenny nail with a broad head ; they cried out the names of the accused in their fits; they could not pronounce the words " Lord," " Jesus," or "Christ"' in reading, but when they came to " Satan" or "devil" they cried, " This bites, but makes me speak it right well." One of the children fell into a swoon after being suckled by one of the accused, and out of the child's blanket fell a great toad which exploded in the fire like gunpowder, and immediately afterwards the alleged witch was seen sitting at home maimed and scorched. Evidence of finding the witch's mark was given, and then evidence of reputation, viz., that the accused, besides being themselves accounted witches, had had some of their kindred condemned as such. A farmer swore that once when his cart had touched Cullender's house it overturned continually and they could not get it home. Sir Thomas Browne testified that the swooning fits were natural, heightened to great excess by the subtlety of the devil co-operating with the witches.

Experiments upon the children were then made in court by bringing them into contact with the witches and others. These were of so unsatisfactory a nature that many present openly declared that they thought the children impostors. The chief baron in his summing up said that there were such creatures as witches was undoubted, for the Scriptures affirmed it and the wisdom of nations had provided laws against such persons. The report alleges that after conviction of the accused the children immediately re- covered.

9 A remarkable instance is a case of Robinson v. Robinson and Lane (to be found in the Divorce Court Reports in 1859), where purely imaginary acts of adultery were recorded by the respondent in her diary. 014 St. Tr., 643.

11 A Discourse of the Subtle Practices of the Devil by Witches (1587), and A Dialogue concerning Witches and Witchcraft (1603). _John Webster's Displaying of Supposed Witchcraft (1677) takes a similar line. 12 Historical Essay concerning Witcheraft, 1st ed., 1718.

622

approved the statutory provisions on the subject ; and Blackstone in guarded language said that its exclusion from the list of crimes was not to be understood as imply- ing a denial of the possibility of such an offence, though, following Addison, he would not give credit to any particular modern instance.

In the present state of the law pretended supernatural powers may be such as to bring those professing them under the criminal law, or to make void a transfer of pro- perty caused by belief in their existence. The Act of 1736 enacted that any person pretending to use witchcraft, tell fortunes, or discover stolen goods by skill in any occult or crafty science, was to be imprisoned for a year, to stand in the pillory, and to find sureties for good behaviour. This is still law, except as to the pillory. By the Vagrant Act of 1824, 5 Geo. IV. c. 83, s. 4, any person pretending or professing to tell fortunes, or using any subtle craft, means, or device, by palmistry or otherwise, to deceive and impose on any of Her Majesty's subjects, is to be deemed a rogue and vagabond. Under this Act a person may be convicted

for attempting to deceive by falsely pretending to have the supernatural faculty of obtaining from invisible agents and the spirits of the dead answers, messages, and manifestations of power, viz., noises, raps, and the winding up of a musical box.! So may one who issues an advertisement professing to forecast the future, though no money is received, and the future of a particular person is not told.? A false pretence of witchcraft is also punishable under the Larceny Act of 1861, 24 and 25 Vict. c. 96. It has been held that a false pretence that the defendant had the power to bring back the husband of the prosecutrix over hedges and ditches was within the statute. In a case in Chancery in 1868 a widow lady, aged seventy-five, was induced by the defendant, a spiritual medium, to transfer a large sum of money to him, under the belief that such was the wish of her deceased husband as declared in spiritualistic manifestations. The court held that his claim of supernatural power constituted undue influence, and that the gift must be set aside.4

See, in addition to the authorities cited, Sir Walter Scott's Letters on Demonology and Witeheraft,; Stephen, Hist. of the Criminal Law, vol. ii. ch. xxv.; Pike, Hist. of Crime in England, esp. vol. ii. p. 1381 sg.; Dr Nicholson's Introduction to Reginald Scot's Discovery of Witeheraft ; Spalding, Elizabethan Demonology, ch. iii.; also reports of particular cases, such as the trial of the Suffolk witches, published in a separate form in 1682, and the indictment of the astrologer Lilly for advising to recover stolen goods (when the grand jury threw out the bill), to be found in his autobiography.

Scotland.—The principal Act of the Scottish parliament was 1568, c. 73 (ratified and confirmed in 1649), making it a capital offence to use witchcraft, Sorcery, or necromancy, or to pretend to such knowledge, or to seek help from witches. "It was repealed by 9 Geo. IJ. c. 5. Trials were either before the ordinary courts or, more frequently, before special tribunals erected by the authority of commissions from time to time issued by the privy council, often on the petition of a presbytery or the General Assembly. Boxes were placed in the churches to receive accusations. The frequency of cases is shown by an order of parliament in 1661 that justices depute should go once a week at least to Musselburgh and Dalkeith to try persons accused of witchcraft. In these trials evidence of

the wildest description was admitted. Anything was relevant, especially if sworn to by a professed witch-finder or witeh-pricker, a position in which one Kincaid, like Hopkins in England, attained special eminence. Torture was used in most eases, and in an aggravated form, as it was supposed that the devil protected his votaries from the effects of ordinary torture. A special form of iron collar and gag called " the witch's bridle" was generally used. The details of the trials in Piteairn's Criminal Trials are utterly revolting, especially those of Bessie Dunlop in 1576 and of Dr Fian in 1590. One of the charges in the former case is very remarkable, and the accused herself confessed it, that she acted under the

1 Monck v. Hilton, Law Rep., 2 Exch. Div., 268.

? Penny v. Hauson, 16 Cox Crim. Cas., 173.

® Reg. v. Giles, Leigh and Cave's Rep., 502.

4 Lyon v. Home, Law Rep., 6 Equity, 655.

guidance of the spirit of Thome Reid who had been killed at Pinkie in 1547. In some cases a charge of witchcraft was joined with a charge of another crime, as of murder in the master of Orkney's case, of treason in Dr Fian's, accused of raising a stormat sea when the king was on a voyage.5 James VI. was frequently present in person at trials for witcheraft, and the most horrible cases recorded are those which occurred in his reign. The full pleadings in a charge are given in the case of Margaret Wallace.® Itis noticeable that the articles of dittay began by resting the criminality of sorcery upon the divine law as contained in the 20th chapter of Leviticus and the 18th chapter of Deuteronomy. The punishment was gene- rally burning. The last execution took place in 1722, after convic- tion before the sheriff of Sutherland. As to pretended powers, the Act of 1736 applies to Scotland, and at common law obtaining money by pretending to tell fortunes or recover property by enchant- ment is punishable as falsehood, fraud, and wilful imposition.

See, further, Sir Walter Scott's Letters; appendix vii. to Pitcairn: the Register of the Privy Council of Scotland, passim ; Buekle, /Tist, of Civilization, vol. ii. p.

190.

Lreland.—The earliest recorded case is in the same year as the earliest in England, 1324, but in an ecclesiastical and not as in England in a secular tribunal. It was a proceeding against Dame Alice Kyteler and others in the bishop of Ossory's court, which led to a considerable conflict between the church and the civil power.' The English statute of Elizabeth was adopted almost word for word by 28 Eliz. c. 2(I.). The only other Act of the Irish parliament bearing on the question was 10 Car. I. , sess. 2, c, 19 (I.), enacting that if a person bewitched in one county died in another the person guilty of causing his death might be tried in the county where the death happened. It is remarkable that this Act is based upon an English Act, 2 and 3 Edw. VI. c. 24, dealing with the venue in criminal trials, but the English Act does not mention witchcraft. 28 Eliz. c. 2 was not repealed until 1821 by 1 and 2 Geo. IV. «. 18, so that Ireland appears to be distinguished as the last country in which peualties against witchcraft were retained in statute law.

United States.—The earliest execution in New England is said to have been in 1648. In the abstract of the laws of New England printed in 1655 appear these articles :~-' IIL Witcheraft, which is fellowship by covenant witha familiar spirit, to be punished with death. IV. Consulters with witches not to be tolerated, but either to be cut off by death or banishment or other suitable punishment." 8 The fanatical outbreak at Salem in 1691-92 is one of the most strik- ing incidents in the history of New England. Nineteen persons were executed for witchcraft, among whom was Giles Cory, the only person who ever perished by the peine Sorte et durein America (see TorTURE). In 1692 fifty were tried, but only three convicted, and they received the governor's pardon. For these proceedings the writing and preaching of Cotton Mather were largely responsible, The States have now their own legislation against pretended super- natural powers. Provisions similar to those of the English Vagrant Act are common.

A full account of the proceedings at Salem will be found in Hutchinson's J7is¢. of Massachusetts Bay (vol. ii. ch. 1), in Baneroft's Hist. of the Colonization of the United States (iii. 84), and in Cotton Mather's Memorable Providences (Boston, 1689) and Wonders of the Invisible World (Boston, 1693).

Continental States.—The law against witchcraft was minutely treated by Continental jurists of the 16th and 17th centuries, especially by those who, like Farinaccius and Julius Clarus, were either churchmen or laymen holding ecclesiastical appointments. The extent to which legal refinement could go is well illustrated by the treatise on criminal law by Sinistrari de Ameno,? an Italian writer of the 17th century, whose belief in sorcery is strikingly shown by his strange work on the subject called Demonialitas.1 He defines sortilegium as "actus humanus quo per media inutilia aut vetita aliquis effectus procuratur ad damnum aut utilitatem propriam aut alienam." Six species, it appears, were recognized, called amatorium, defensorium, revelatorium, lweratorium, male- Jactorium, divinatorium. There were eleven distinct modes of profession to the service of the devil. Some of the tndicta on which torture might be inflicted were absence of the accused from bed during the night, drawing cabalistic signs on the ground, threats of injury, anointing the body. The text of Roman law was sometimes distorted in an extraordinary Way: ¢ €.g., it Was a maxim that a contract with a demon was not binding, and this was ex- pressed in the language of Roman law in the formula "in demonem cadere non potest obligatio." In Germany the ecclesiastical courts generally acted, though the crime was sometimes the subject of secular legislation, especially in the Constdtautio Criminalis of

> All these cases will be found in vol. i. of Pitcairn. In one case (noted at p. 216), a jury having acquitted an accused woman who had eonfessed under torture, the-king had them tried for wilful error.

6 Pitcairn, vol. iii. p. 508.

" The ease, edited by Mr Thomas Wright, forms vol. xxiv. of the Camden Society's publications.

8 Cited in 6 State Trials, 647, where an account of the Salem trials will be fonnd.

9 De Delietis et Penis Traetatus Absolutissimus, Rome, 1754.

**° Published at Paris with an English translation in 1879,*

Charles V. (the Carolina).1_ The number of victims perhaps ex- eceded that in any other country. It was in Germany too that the last exeeution for witchcraft in Europe took place, at Posen in 1793. In France prosecutions for vauderic oceurred in the 13th and 14th centuries. In the 15th century Joan of Arc was con- demned on a eharge of witchcraft.2 Henry III., like Edward IV. of England, was accused by his eneinies of practising sorcery. The most numerous prosecutions were set on foot in the 17th century, and as in other countries they met with the firmest support from some literary men, among whom P. de]'Ancre is conspicuous for his orthodoxy.? A royal edict of 1682 revived all previous ordin- ances against the practice of sorcery and divination, and punished with corporal punishment any persons consulting sorcerers, with death those who exercised magic themselves. The "Chambrc Ardente" tried some cases, and the last case ever brought before such a tribunal resulted in the condemnation in 1680 of a woman named Voisin for sorcery and poisoning in connexion with the Marquise de Brinvilliers. The law against sorcery held its plaee in French legal works till at least the middle of the last century. It was treated at length both by the Sieur de Lamarre and by Muyart de Vouglans.® The latter distinguishes white from black magic, the black only being criminal as a part of the larger offence of lése-majesté divine, which included also heresy, blasphemy, and perjury. Burning was the usual punishment. Among the more remarkable of the 7ndicia upon which torture might be inflicted was the finding on the premises of the accused instruments of magic, as wax figures transfixed with needles, feathers in the form of a eircle, or a written pact with the devil. Pretended exercise of magic is now punished by the Code Pénal. A very curious case of slander is mentioned by Merlin. It was tried in 1811 in the de- partment of Yonne. The slander consisted in an allegation by the defendant that the complainants had danced around the devil, who*

was seated on a gilded arm-chair as president of the dance. The tribunal of police thought the matter more a subjeet of ridicule than of injury and dismisscd it, but this judgment was quashed by the court of eassation on the ground that the charge was one which might trouble the publie peace. In Spain and Italy there is a eonsiderable body of legislation on the subject of witchcraft. For instance, the code of the Siete Partidas' in Spain punished with death those who acted as diviners or witches, especially in love matters. A distinction was drawn between divination by astronomy, whieh was legitimate, and that by augury from birds or by incan- tation over water or a mirror. On the Continent, as in England, there was during two centuries a steady flow of literary attack on the reasonableness of belief in witchcraft. The earliest attack was made in Germany, the country which had distinguished itself by the vigour of its prosecutions of the crime. Cornelius Agrippa, in his De Oceulta Philosophia, was not entirely orthodox on the subject ; and it was more directly treated in the De Prestigiis Demonum of Johann Wier or Weier in 1563, twenty-one years earlier than Reginald Scot's work. Wier was followed in the next century by Father Frederick Spee® in Germany, and by B. Bekker (g.v.) in the Netherlands. The work of Spee, originally pub- lished anonymously, appears to have caused a great sensation at the time and to have eaused a relaxation of prosccutions in order to give opportunity for further inquiry. The work takes the form of fifty-two doubts, the first of which is "An Sage Striges seu Malefici revera existant?" The general conclusion is that, although witches exist in general, the question of their operation in particular cases is open to so much doubt that it would be well to suspend proceedings for a time. The writer did not profess entire disbelief, as did Bekker. The main idea of De Bctooverde Wereld of the

latter is that good and evil spirits could have no effect or influence

on earthly affairs, for spirit could not act on inatter. All proseen- tions for witchcraft were therefore unjust, and against the honour of God and the advantage of man. During the same period other writers both lay and legal treated the question incidentally. Montaigne was sceptical; Montesquieu, while not actually intimat- ing disbclief, enjoined the

greatest care in trying accusations. As in England, the current of literary feeling was not uniformly op-

1 Art, 44 gives the cndicia which suffice to put tothe torture. Art 52 gives the questions whieh are to be asked by the judge.

2 The numerous allusions to Joan of Arc's witeheraft in the First Part of Shakespeare's Tenry V7. will be familiar.

3 DP' Inieredulité et Mescréance du Sortilége Plainement Convaineue, Paris, 1622.

4 Traité sur la Magie, Sortilégc, Possessions, Obsessions, et Maléfices, Paris, 1737. > Institutes au Droit Criminel, Paris, 1757.

6 Répertoire de Jurisprudence, s.v. ' Sortilége."*

7 Partida vii. tit. 23.

8 Cautio Criminalis, seu de Processibus Contra Sagas, the first edition (Frankfort, 1632) being anonymous, " auetore ineerto theologo Romano," while later ones bear the name of the author. A full aeeount of an ordinary trial for witcheraft will be found in the work. One of the most shameful parts of it, the stripping and shaving of an alleged witch, meets with the author's strongest reprobation.

posed to popular belief, for Wier was answered by Bodin, and Luther and other eminent writers no doubt had full faith in the existence of witchcraft.

See Lecky, Hist. of Rationalism in Europe, vol. i. ch. i., where an immense number of authorities are cited; works on magic, such as those by Delrio and Garinet ; Schcltema, Geschiedenis der Heksenprocessen, Haarlem, 1828; Soldan, Geschichte der Hexenprocesse, Stuttgart, 1843; and various reports of particular trials, e.g., the proceedings against fifty-three magicians at Logrofio in Castile in 1610, by P. de l'Ancre (Paris,

1612), the trials in Sweden in 1669 and 1670, by Dr Anthony Horneck (London, 1700), the proceedings against G. Kébbing at Coesfeld in 1632, by Niesert (Coesfeld, 1827), and Les Procedures de Sorcellerie & Neuchatel, by Lardy (Neuchatel. 1866). (J. Wt.)

WITENAGEMOT. See Eneianp, vol. viii. p. 276. WITHER, Grorce (1588-1667), appears inthe Dunciad as "sleeping among the dull of ancient days, safe where no critics damn." The once ardent poet's slumbers were disturbed towards the close of the 18th century by George Ellis, who in his Specimens resuscitated some of Wither's poetry, not to condemn but to praise. Thereafter he was speedily released from Pope's limbo. Wordsworth pre- fixed a dozen of Wither's most exquisite lines to his own poem To the Daisy; Southey quoted him eulogistically ; Brydges republished a selection of his poems, and searched out the facts of his life ; Park madea list of his voluminous writings, over 100 in number, for The British Libliographer; and, most fortunate stroke of all for Wither's memory, Charles Lamb wrote upon him one of his most delightful essays, re-creating and immortalizing the old poet's poetic spirit.2 Wither's life was full of adventure. Born June 11, 1588, the son of a Hampshire gentleman, educated at Magdalen College, Oxford, he entered at Lincoln's Inn, conceived an ardent passion for poetry, put forward as a satirist in 1613 with Abuses Stript and Whipt, and was promptly lodged in the Marshalsea. It was the year of the Essex divorce case, when so plain a satirist, though he whipt abuses in the abstract, might easily have given offence. In prison he wrote The Shepherd's Hunting, the fourth eclogue of which contains his memorable praise of poetry. Wither's dfotto was published in 1618; Fair Virtue, or The Mistress of Philarete, the longest, freshest, and most captivating lover's panegyric in the language, in 1622. When the civil war broke out, Wither took the side of the Parliament, sold his estate in Hampshire and raised a troop of horse, was taken prisoner and saved from death at the intercession of Denham, backed by a timely jest, was promoted aud enriched by Cromwell, was stript of his possessions at the Restoration and thrown into prison, but released under bond for good behaviour. Besides the poems above mentioned, which are the basis of Lamb's admiration, and his curious #mblems, published in 1635, Wither, a man of most radiant energy and eloquence, wrote a host of satirical and polemical tracts, for which readers may be referred to the

Bibliographer. The famous song “Shall I, wasting in despair,” occurs in The Mistress of Philarete. Ue died in London May 2, 1667. WITHINGTON, a township of Lancashire, England, 4 miles south of Manchester, of which it is practically a suburb. It is chiefly occupied by better-class mansions and villas. The township is within the old parish of Man- chester, but was formed into a separate ecclesiastical parish in 1854. The urban sanitary district includes part of the parish of Withington and three other parishes (area 5728 acres), the population being 10,099 in 1871 and 17,109 in 1881. The population of the Withington portion (area 2229 acres) in 1871 was 4863, and in 1881 it was 9328. WITNESS, in law, is a person who gives or might give evidence in a court of justice. The law of witnesses is on the one hand a branch of the law of EvipENCcE (q.v.), and on the other is closely connected with the Jury (q.v.), for the jurors were originally chosen for their knowledge or presumed knowledge of the facts in dispute. The part of the Scotch juror’s oath “and no truth conceal” is an 9 The marginal notes forming the original MS. of this essay have recently been reprodueed by Mr Swinburne, Aiscellanies, p. 157.

obvious survival of the time when the juror was a witness. It is only by gradual steps that the law has reached its present stage in the United Kingdom and the United States. At present the disabilities of witnesses are few; almost every one is a capable witness, and the main question has become one of credibility rather than of capability. It was far otherwise in Roman and ecclesi- astical law and in the older law of England and Scotland. A reference to Torture will show that in Roman and medizval law the testimony of many persons was not admissible without the application of torture. At the same time a large body of possible witnesses was excluded for reasons which have now ceased to be considered expedient, and was subject to rules which have long become obsolete. In Roman law witnesses must be zdonez, or duly qualified. Minors, certain heretics, infamous persons (such as women convicted of adultery), and those interested in the result of the trial were inadmissible. Parents and children could not testify against one another, nor could slaves against their masters, or those at enmity with the party against whom their

evidence was offered. Women and slaves were under a disability to be witnesses to a will. The canon law extended the disability to testify to an excommunicated person, and to a layman in a

criminal charge against a clerk, unless he were actually.

the prosecutor. In the days of trial by battle a party could render a witness against him incompetent by challenging and defeating him in the judicial combat. A policy similar to that of Roman law was followed for centuries in England by excluding the testimony of parties or persons interested, of witnesses for a prisoner, and of infamous persons, such as those who had been attainted, or had been vanquished in the trial by battle, or had stood in the pillory. All these were said vocem non habere. Many systems of law excluded witnesses from policy of a local or temporary nature. _WoMmEN (¢.v.) were generally regarded as wholly or partially incompetent. The evidence of Jews was frequently rejected in Spain and other countries during the 14th and 15th centuries. In the United States, while slavery was lawful, the evidence of slaves (and in some States that of free persons of colour) was not received for or against whites. There were in Roman law some hard and fast rules as tonumber. Seven Witnesses were necessary for a will, five for a mancipatio or manumission or to determine the question whether a person; were free or a slave. Five was also the number necessary under the Liber Feudorum for proving ingrati- tude to the lord. Two were generally necessary, as in the Mosaic law, as a minimum number to prove any fact. Unius responsio testis omnino non audiatur are the words of a constitution of Constantine. The evidence of a single witness was simply semiplena probatio, to be supplemented, in default of a second witness, by torture or by reference to oath. In the canon law the evidence of a notary was generally equivalent to that of two ordinary witnesses. The evidence of the pope and that of a witness who simply proved baptism or heresy (according to some authorities) are perhaps the only other cases in which canon law dispensed with confirmatory evidence. In England one witness is as arule sufficient. But in certain cases two or more are necessary. 'Two must attest a marriage or a will,' and two are necessary for a conviction of perjury, treason, and some other crimes, such as offences against the Act of Supremacy of Elizabeth. Inthe United States the number necessary for

the attestation of a marriage or will is not uniform inall the States. Sometimes a special number has been fixed in England by statute in excep-

1 The absence of two witnesses does not, however, avoid a marriage as it does a will, The section of 4 Geo. IV. c. 76 providing for the presence of witnesses at a marriage has been held to be merely directory.

tional cases. A curious Act of Richard II., passed in 1383 (6 Ric. IT. st. 2, c. 5), fixed the number of compurgators necessary to free an accused person from complicity in the peasant revolt at three or four. Corroborative evidence —not necessarily the evidence of another witness, but corroboration in a material particular—must in England be given to entitle the complainant or plaintiff to succeed in an affiliation summons or in an action for breach of pronuse of marriage. The evidence of an accomplice also needs confirmation, if not in strict law, at least in practice. The number of witnesses had in one instance in old Scotch law the curious effect of determining the punishment. By the assizes of King William, the ordeal of water was under- gone by the accused on the oaths of three witnesses; if to them the oaths of three seniores were added, the penalty was immediate hanging. Witnesses need not now in English law be ¢donet or credible, except in the case of witnesses to bills of sale under the Bills of Sale Act, 1882, The "credible" of the Statute of Frauds has not been repeated in the Wills Act (see WiLL). In the case of dishonour of a foreign bill of exchange the evidence of a notary is required, and a solicitor must attest a warrant of attorney, as was also required for a bill of sale from 1878 to 1882.

The modern law of witnesses has been already treated to a con- siderable extent under Evipence. It should be noticed that since the date of that article a new rule of great importance has received statutory sanction. The rules of the Supreme Court, 1883 (Ord. XXXVI, 1, 38), enable the judge in all cases to disallow any questions put in cross-examination of any party or other witness which may appear to him to be vexatious and not relevant to any matter proper to be inquired into in the cause or matter. It will suffice here to give a brief statement of the law as it at

present stands, rather by way of supplement to what has been already said than as an ex- haustive notice. Witnesses may be either sworn or unsworn, either judicial or non-judicial, the unsworn and non-judicial almost coin- ciding. The evidence of judicial witnesses may be given viva voce or by deposition or affidavit, the latter being the more usnal course in chancery and bankruptcy proceedings. Where evidence is taken on commission, the usual course where the witness is out of the jurisdiction, the questions and the witness's answers are produced in writing to the court which issued the commission, it being a delegation of the authority of the court. As a rule all witnesses coming before a court of justice, whether to give evidence as to a fact or a professional opinion, must be sworn (see OATHS).2 To this rule certain exceptions exist at common law and have been introduced by statute, the one of the most importance being the law by which persons objecting to take an oath may affirm. Another exception was introduced by the Criminal Law Amendment Act, 1885, the Act allowing the evidence of a child of tender years to be received without oath. But to eusure a conviction such evidence must be corroborated. At common law a person merely produc- ing documentary evidence need not as a rule besworn. A witness, too, may be examined unsworn on the voir dire, as it is called, to decide the preliminary question of his competency. Non-judicial witnesses are those who attest an act of unusual importance, for the due execution of which evidence may afterwards be required. They are either made necessary by law, as the witnesses to marriages and wills, or used by general custom, as the witnesses to deeds. In some cases the attestation has become a mere form, such as the attestation of the lord chancellor to a writ of summons (see WRIT). Those witnesses whose evidence is not received may be divided into incompetent and privileged,—classes which must be carefully distinguished. The evidence of the former is wholly inadmissible ; that of the latter is admissible if they waive their privilege. Among the incompetent witnesses are those of too tender years to under- stand the nature of an oath, idiots and lunatics, those convicted of perjury under an Act of Elizabeth (see Persury),? and accused persons or their husbands or wives (except where the trial is for treason or for personal injuries inflicted by one spouse against the other), The exclusion of the latter class has led to much dis-

2 The giving of evidence unsworn appears to have been at one time regarded as a privilege. The men of Ripon, for instance, were by a charter of Athelstan to be believed on their yea and nay in all disputes.

3 A person convicted of perjury at common law is not on that account incompetent in England ; his evidence may be given for what itis worth. It is otherwise in the United States, see Revised Statutes, § 5392. In France disability to be a witness may be inflicted as part of the punishment on conviction for certain crimes (see Code Pénal, § 42).

cussion among English lawyers. In 1878 the Criminal Code Commission recominended that prisoners shonld be allowed to give evidence on their own behalf on oath. Several recent Acts have modificd in some degree the rigour of the common law. The accused, or the husband or wife of the accused, may give evidence on oath in certain proceedings, nominally criminal, substantially of a civil nature, such as indictments for nuisance or non-repair of a highway (40 Vict. and 41 Vict. c. 14). The same is the case under the Merchant Shipping, Licensing, and Customs Acts, the Married Women's Property Act, 1882, the Criminal Law Amendment Act, 1885, the Merchandise Marks Act, 1887, and other Acts. Up to 1702 the prisoner was under the further disability of not being able to have his witnesses examined on oath. This harsh rule, borrowed from Roman law, was not abrogated in Ireland until 1711, in Scotland until 1735. Where a witness is competent, he is also compellable, except the king. The only privileged witnesses practically now recognized in England are high officers of state, executive or judicial, and members of the legal profession, who need not divulge what has been disclosed to them in professional confidence. Clergy and medical men are not privileged, though attempts have sometimes been made to protect disclosures to them, especially to priests in the confessional. Any witness is privileged from answering questions the answers to which might expose him to penalty or forfeiture or to a charge of adultery. Lists of wit- nesses intended to be called by the crown must be supplied to the accused in charges of TREASON (q.v.), and are generally on the back of the indictment in ordinary cases, though the prosecution is not bound to call them. In

Scotland lists of the witnesses are supplied in all cases, and in the United States in capital charges.

The mode of securing the attendance of a witness is by subpoena (see Writ) in civil actions in the High Court, by subpeena or RECOGNIZANCE (¢.v.) before an assize court, by SUMMONS (q.v.) in a county court or court of summary jurisdiction. In exccptional cases attendance may be secured by writ of habeas corpus ad testi- Jicandum or by WARRANT (q.v.) of a secretary of state. In Scotland attendance is generally secured by citation. Disobedience to a sub- poena is punishable as ConrEemrt or Courtr (qg.v.).1 False evidence renders the offender liable to the penalties of perjury. Various Acts of Parliament deal with compelling appearance before com- mittees of parliament, courts of martial, and other tribunals of a special nature. A witness is protected from any action for slander for words spoken in the witness box. He is also protected from arrest cundo, morando, et redeundo. The scale of allowances to witnesses depends upon orders of court made with the approval of the Treasury. It is graduated according to the social position of the witnesses. (J. Wt.)

WITSIUS, Hermann (1636-1708), Dutch theologian, was born February 12, 1636, at Enckhuysen, North Hol- land, studied at Utrecht, Leyden, and Groningen, and was ordained to the ministry in 1657. In 1675 he became professor of divinity at Franeker, and in 1680 he was translated to a corresponding chair at Utrecht. In 1685 he acted as chaplain to the Dutch embassy sent to London to congratulate James II. on his accession. In 1698 he succeeded Spanheim at Leyden, where he died on October

22, 1708.

*Subjoined is a list of his more important works. Judzus Christianizans,— circa Principia Fidei et SS. Trinitatem, Utrecht, 1661; De Geonomia Federum Dei cum Hominibus, 1677 (often re- printed, both in Latin and in English, and still regarded as one of the clearest and most suggestive expositions of the so-called "*federal" theology); Diatribe de Septem Epistolarum Apocalypti- carum Sensu Historico ac Prophetico, Franeker, 1678; Eaxcrcitationcs Sacre in Symbolum quod Apostolorum dicitur et in*

Orationem Dominicam, Franeker, 1681; Miscellanea Sacra, Utrecht, 1692- 1700 (2 vols. 4to).

WITT. See Dz Wirt.

WITTEN, a rapidly growing town of Westphalia, Prussia, is favourably situated among the coalfields of the Ruhr, 14 miles east of Essen and 15 miles north- east of Elberfeld. The coal-mines in the neighbourhood provide abundant fuel for large cast-steel works, iron- foundries, railway workshops, machinery and boiler works, glass-works, distilleries, and other industrial establishments. In 1843 the population was 3444; in 1885 it was 23,903.

WITTENBERG, now an unimportant manufacturing town in the province of Saxony, Prussia, is situated 55 miles to the south-west of Berlin, on the Elbe, which is here spanned by a stone bridge 300 yards long, and by an

1 Jn the ecclesiastical courts it was formerly punished by Excom- MUNICATION (g.v.).

iron railway bridge 320 yards long. The three suburbs which adjoin the town are not older than 1817. Witten- berg is interesting chiefly on account of its close connexion with Luther and the dawn of the Reformation; and several of its buildings are associated with the events of that time. Part of the Augustinian monastery in which Luther dwelt, at first as a monk and in later life as owner with his wife and family, is still preserved, and has been fitted up as a "Luther museum." The Augusteum, built in 1564-83 on the site of the monastery, is now a clerical seminary. The Schlosskirche, to the doors of which Luther nailed his famous ninety-five theses in 1517, dated originally from 1490-99 ; it was, however, seriously damaged by fire during the bombardment of 1760, and has practically been re-built. The old wooden doors, burnt in 1760, are replaced by bronze doors, bearing the Latin text of the theses. In the interior of the church are the tombs of Luther, Melanch- thon, and the electors Frederick the Wise and John the Constant. The parish

church, in which Luther often preached, was built in the 14th century, but has been much altered since Luther's time. The present infantry barracks were at one time occupied by the university of Witten- berg, founded in 1502, but incorporated with the university of Halle in 1817. Luther was appointed professor of philosophy here in 1508; and the new university rapidly acquired a considerable reputation from its connexion with the early Reformers. Shakespeare makes Hamlet and Horatio study at Wittenberg. The ancient electoral palace is another of the buildings that suffered severely in 1760 ; it now contains archives. Melanchthon's house and the house of Lucas Cranach the Elder (1472-1553), who was burgomaster of Wittenberg, are also pointed out. Statues of Luther and Melanchthon embellish the town. The spot, outside the Elster Gate, where Luther publicly burned the papal bull in 1520 is marked by an oak tree. Woollen and linen-weaving, stocking-making, leather-work- ing, distilling, and brewing are carried on in Wittenberg. The formerly considerable manufacture of the heavier kinds of cloth has died out. The population in 1885 was 13,856 ; in 1816 it was 6206. :

Wittenberg is mentioned as early as 1180. It was the capital of the little duchy of Saxe-Wittenberg (vol. xxi. p. 352), the rulers of which afterwards became electors of Saxony;.and it con- tinued to be the chief town of Saxony under the Ernestine electors. The capitulation of Wittenberg (1547) is the name given to the treaty by which John Frederick the Magnanimous was compelled to resign the electoral dignity and most of his territory to the Albertine branch of the Saxon family. In 1760 the town was" bombarded by the Austrians. In 1813 it was refortified by com- inand of Napoleon; but in 1814 it was stormed by the Prussians under Tauentzien, who received the title of " Von Wittenberg " as a reward. Wittenberg continued to be a fortress of the third class

until the reorganization of the German defences after the founda- tion of the new empire in 1871 led to its being dismantled.

WLOCEAWEK, or VLoTSLAVSK, a district town of the government of Warsaw, on the left bank of the Vistula, which is crossed by an iron bridge, 118 miles by rail to the N.W. of Warsaw. It was founded about 1139, and became known under the name of Vladislavia, or Old

Ladislaus, as a centre for trade of some importance. Later on it fell into decay; but, owing to its position on the great water highway of Poland and on the railway connecting Warsaw with Berlin and Dantzic, its popula- tion has rapidly increased of late, and now amounts to 22,600. Its merchants carry on an active trade in grain. It has a fine cathedral, dating from the 14th century.

WOBURN, a town of Middlesex county, Massachusetts, United States, lies about 10 miles somewhat west of north from Boston ; it comprises within its limits four villages of

greater or less size, besides a small rural population. The town contains 75 miles of streets. The population in 1885 was 11,750, about three-tenths of foreign birth. The

industries, which are largely manufacturing, are connected chiefly with the tanning of leather and the making of boots and shoes.

Woburn is one of the older towns of Massachusetts, having been settled in 1642. Its growth, however, was slow, and it is only in recent years that it has attained to importance.

WOELFL, Josep (1772-1812), pianist and composer, was born in 1772 at Salzburg, where he studied music under Leopold Mozart and Michael Haydn. After a short residence at Warsaw he produced his first opera, Der Hollenberg, with some success at Vienna, where it was soon followed by Das schine Milchmddchen and some other drainatic pieces. These, however, have been long for- gotten, and his fame now rests upon his compositions for the pianoforte, and the skill with which he is said to have met their formidable demands upon his power as an executant. The perfection of his technique was im- measurably enhanced by the enormous stretch of his fingers; and to the wide grasp of the key-board this placed at his command he owed a facility of execution which he turned to excellent account, especially in his extempore perform- ances.

So remarkable were these that even the youthful Beethoven did not disdain to play in company with him at the house of Count Wetzlar, and in memory of this exhibi- tion of good-humoured rivalry he dedicated to Beethoven his Three Sonatas, Op. 6. Quitting Vienna in 1798 Woelfl exhibited his skill in most of the great European capitals, and, after spending some years in Paris, made his first appearance in London, May 27, 1805. Here he enjoyed a long term of popularity, crowned about 1808 by the publication of his Sonata, Op. 41, containing some variations on " Life let us cherish." This, on account of its technical difficulty, he entitled Non Plus Ultra; and, in reply to the challenge, Dussek's London publishers reprinted a sonata by that composer, originally called Le Retour & Paris, with the title Plus Ultra, and an ironical dedication to Mon Plus Ultra, Woelfl died in Great Marylebone Street, London, May 21, 1812. Some stories once current concerning his ruin by a card-sharper and death upon a heap of straw are proved to have been utterly without foundation.

WOHLER, Friepricu (1800-1882), chemist, was born on July 31, 1800, in Eschersheim, near Frankfort-on-the Main. While attending the village school of Rodelheim, he received valuable additional instruction from his father, a man of more than ordinary acquirements. In 1812 the family removed to Frankfort, where he entered the gym- nasium, and by the kindness of a scientific friend, Dr Buch, was introduced to the study of mineralogy, chemistry, and physics. He afterwards studied medicine at Marburg and Heidelberg, graduating in that faculty at the latter university. Having, on the advice of Leopold Gmelin, decided upon devoting himself henceforth to chemistry, he completed his chemical education at Stock- holm, under Berzelius, in whose laboratory he worked for a considerable time, and with whom, during his subsequent life, he maintained the most friendly relations. While in Sweden he took part in a scientific expedition through Norway, which made him acquainted with the brothers Brongniart and with Humphrey Davy.

After his return from Sweden in 1825, he accepted a call to Berlin as teacher of chemistry in the then newly- erected " gewerbschule," and remained there until 1832, when family affairs caused him to take up his abode in Cassel. In 1836 Wéhler became professor of chemistry in the

medical faculty of the university of Gdottingen, which office, in his case, was combined with that of inspector-general of pharmacy for Hanover. He held his chair till his death, which occurred, after a short illness, on the 23rd September 1882.

WOE—-WOH

Wohler's career as a chemist extends over two generations. Some sixty years ago, when the elementary nature of chlorine had just been established, and the isolation of cyanogen was still a novelty, young Wohler already worked as an investigator, the same Wohler who rejoiced with the chemists of to-day over the synthesis of indigo. Of the world of chemical discoveries that lie between he magna pars fuit. Within the limits of the prescnt article, however, it is impossible to do more than indicate briefly the nature of some of his greater achievements, Amongst these his discovery of cyanicacid, and what it led him to, oceupy a prominent place. From these investigations of his the science of organic chemistry may be said to date.

When, in 1828, Wohler prepared the ammonia salt of his acid, he was astonished to find that the salt, although made by what appeared to be a straightforward double decomposition, did not exhibit the character of an ammonia salt at all, but turned out to be identical with urea, a substance which heretofore had been known only as one of the organic components of urine. Prior to this discovery a wide and impassable gulf had in the minds

-of chemists separated the mineral from the organic kingdom.

Inorganic bodies all appeared to be derivable from their elements by a succession of acts of binary combination; the full analysis of such a body contained in itself the full instruction for its synthetical production in the laboratory. Organic substances, on the other hand, were supposed to be things of an entirely different order; in them the few elements which they all consist of were assumed to be united with one another, each with each, in a mysterious manner, which could be brought about only by theagency of " vital force."" Vital force, it was now seen, had nothing to do with the formation of urea at any rate. The gulf was bridged over, and a great and

new morning full of the highest promise dawned over chemistry. If the promise was more than fulfilled, if organic chemistry from a mere possibility developed into a reality, we owe this chiefly to the great researches which were carried out con- jointly by Wchler and Liebig.

One of the first, if not the first, of these was an investigation on the oxygenated acids of cyanogen, which they published in 1830. In their research they proved, both analytically and synthetically, that cyanic and cyanuric acid, although distinct bodies, have the same elementary composition, and that the former, when simply kept in a sealed-up tube, gradually passes wholly into a porcelain- like neutral solid, cyamelide, which is widely different from either. By these discoveries, and by Wohler's synthesis of urea, the fact of isomerism was firmly established. Compared with this great conquest their joint work on mellitic acid (1830) and on sulpho- vinic acid (1831) appears small; it sinks into insignificance when viewed in the light of their immortal researches on bitter-almond oil and on uric acid.

In 1832 bitter-almond oil was supposed to be to bitter almonds what a hundred and one other essential oils are to their vegetable sources. Of its chemistry nothing was known except the fact that it contains loosely combined prussic acid, and that, when kept for a long time, it is liable to deposit a crystalline solid, as various other essential oils do. Liebig and Wohler, being struck by the absence from even powdered bitter almonds of the intense smell characteristic of the oil, set about tracing the latter to its origin, and soon solved the question. In 1830 Robiquet and Boutron-Charlard had succeeded in extracting from bitter almonds a crystal- line nitrogenous solid, soluble without decomposition in alcohol and in water, which they called amygdaline. What Liebig and Wohler found was that, when bitter-almond meal is mashed up with water, this amygdaline, by the action of the water and a ferment (common to both sweet and bitter almonds), breaks up into sugar, prussic acid, and bitter-almond oil. They also succeeded in separating the prussic acid from the distilled oil, and found the thus purified oil to be a non-poisonous liquid of the composition C,H,O. This liquid, when exposed to the air, readily takes up oxygen and assumes the form of a solid, which is identical at the same timne with the quasi-stearoptene of the oil and with Scheele's benzoic

acid, C,H,0,,_ When treated with chlorine, the purified oil yields a chloride, C,H;0.Cl,—the chlorine of which, by treatment with the respective potassium compounds, is displaced by its equivalent in bromine, iodine, sulphur, cyanogen, and, on treat- ment with ammonia, by the group NH,. Water converts it into hydrochloric and benzoic acids. In all these reactions the group C,H,O holds together; it moves forwards and backwards as if it were a compound element, —a common-place enough fact in the eyes of the chemical student of 1882, but a most wonderful revelation to the chemist of 1832. Berzelins, who certainly was not much given to dealing in superlatives, greeted the discovery in his Jahresbericht as opening up a new era in organic chemistry, and, rejecting the prosaic name of benzoyl which Wéhler and Liebig had given to their radical, proposed to name it proine, from mpwit, early in the day, or orthrine, from dpépos, the dawn.

Equally important in a scientific sense, but greater as a piece of experimental work, was their joint research on Uric Acip (q.¥.). After their uric acid research the ways of Wéhler and Liebig

diverged. The latter continued to prosecute organic rescarch ; the former turned his attention more to inorganic subjects, —not ex- clusively, however, as the well-known research on narcotine (which was carried out in his laboratory, partly by himself partly by Blyth, and published in 1848) is alone sufficient to prove.

Amongst Wohler's inorganic publications, a short notice on the improvements in the preparation of potassium is significant as forming the small beginning of a brilliant series of researches on the isolation of elementary substances and on their properties, a subject for which he evidently had a great love, as he always comes back to it in the intervals of other work. In 1827 he for the first time succeeded in isolating aluminium, the metal of clay, by means of a method which was soon found to be more generally applicable. Alumina, like many other metallic oxides, is not reducible by electrolysis or by the action of charcoal at any tcmper- ature. But, when heated with charcoal in chlorine gas, it passes into the state of a volatile chloride. What Wohler found was that this

chloride, when heated with potassium or sodium, readily gives up its chlorine and assumes the elementary form. The aluminium which Wohler thus obtained was a grey powder; but in 1845 he succeeded in producing the metal in the shape of well-fused, fully metallic globules. Wohler, on this second occasion, correctly ascertained all the properties which everybody now knows to be characteristic of this metal; and it is as well to add that where Wohler's aluminium differed from what now occurs in commerce under this name it differed to its own advantage. That Wohler should not have seen the practical importance of his discovery is not to be credited ; if he never suggested an attempt to manu- facture the metal industrially, that is only the natural consequence of the circumstances in which he was placed.

The earlier aluminium research was followed in 1828 by the isolation of beryllium and yttrium. These earlier metal reductions fall into the Berlin period. While in Cassel he worked out pro- cesses for the manfacture of nickel free from arsenic, and this laid the foundation for what is now a flourishing chemical industry in Germany. The several methods for the analysis of nickel and cobalt ores which he describes in his Mineral-Analyse: appear to be an incidental outcome of this work. This subject was one of his favourite topics ; as late as 1877 we see him coming back to it in the publication of a short process for the separation of nickel and cobalt from arsenic and iron.

In 1849 metallic titanium arrested his attention. Since the days of Wollaston those beautiful copper-like cubes which are occasionally met with in blown-out blast furnaces had been sup- posed to be metallic titanium pure and simple. Wéohler observed that the reputed metal, when fused with caustic alkali, emitted torrents of ammonia, and on further inquiry ascertained the crystals to be a ternary compound, containing the elements of a nitride and of a cyanide of the metal. In pursuance of this research Wohler taught us how to prepare real titanium and really pure titanic acid.

In 1854 Deville's energetic attempts to produce aluminium in- dustrially caused Wéhler to turn his attention again to this early and almost forgotten child of his genius. His first incentive, no doubt, was the natural

and just desire to claim his right as the real discoverer of what Deville, in his ignorance of foreign scientifie work, quite honestly thought he had been the first to find out. This dispute came to a very satisfactory issue: Deville, after a

little pardonable hesitation, fully acknowledged Wohler's priority, |

and the two henceforth were friends, and worked together.

The first fruit of this happy union was a memorable joint re- search (published in 1856 and 1857), which led to their discovery of an adamantine and of a graphitoidal (in addition to the long known ainorphous) modification of boron. This graphitoidal species subsequently, in their own hands, proved to be a mistake ; but the adamantine modification lives to this day asa true analogue of ordinary (carbon) diamond.

From boron to silicon is an easy transition, so we need not wonder at finding Wohler, in 1857, engaged (conjointly with the physicist Buff) in a research on new compounds of silicon. On electrolysing a solution of common salt with silicon-containing aluminium as a positive electrode, they obtained a self-inflammable gas which they recognized as hydrogen contaminated with the previously unknown hydride of silicon, SiH,, which body Wéhler subsequently, with the co-operation of Martius, obtained in a state of greater purity. Wéohler and Buff also obtained, though in an impure state, what were subsequently recognized by Friedel and Ladenburg as silicon-chloroform and as silicon-formic anhydride.

Space does not allow of more than a mere reference to Wéhler's researches on metallic or semimetallie nitrides. What we know of this as yet little understood class of bodies, with barely an exception, came out of his laboratory, if it was not done by himself in the strict sense of the word. And only a reference can be made to the numerous processes which Wohler, in the course of his long laboratory practice, has worked out for the preparation of pure chemicals, and for the execution of exact analytical separations. He had better work to do than to take up analytical problems for their own sake; but what he did in this direction incidentally

amounts to a great deal. The analysis of meteorites was one of his favourite specialties,—one of his results being the discovery of organic matter in a ineteorite which he examined in 1864.

As a teacher Wohler ranks with Liebig and Berzclius. In a sense he was the greatest of the three. Berzelius never had the opportunity to teach large numbers of students in his laboratory; and Liebig lacked the many-sideduess so characteristic of the Git. tingen laboratory as long as it really was under Wéhler's personal direction. One student might wish to work on organic chemistry, another on minerals, a third on metallurgy, a fourth on rare ele- ments; let them all go to Wohler, and all, as well as the fifth or sixth, would find themselves in the right place. That Wohler in these circumstances was able to do much literary work is truly marvellous. His Grundriss der Chemvie, which he published anony-mously at first, has passed through many editions, and been trans- lated into various foreign languages,—never, unfortunately, into English. A more valuable teaching book still, and more unique in its character, is his excellent Practische Uebungen in der chemischen Analyse (entitled in the second edition AMineral-Analyse in Bei- spielen), of which we have two English translations. To a man like him the compilation of either book probably gave little trouble ; what must have taken up a very large portion of his valuable time are his translations of Berzelius's Lehrbuch der Chemie, and of all the successive volumes of Berzelius's Jahresbericht, which only thus became really available to the scicntific world at large. From 1838, too, Wohler was one of the editors of Licbig's Annalen.

Wohler's last publication (1880) treats of a new kind of galvanic element in which the one metal aluminium serves for either pole.

A very excellent biography of Wéhler by Hofmann is published in the Berichte der deutschen chemischen Gesellschaft for 1882. (W. D.)

WOHLGEMUTH, Micwazt (1434-1519), an able painter of the school of Franconia, of which Nuremberg, where he was born in 1434, was the chief artistic centre. Little is known of his private life beyond the fact that in 1472 he married the widow of the painter Hans Pleyden- wurff, whose

son Wilhelm worked as an assistant to his stepfather. The importance of Wohlgemuth as an artist rests, not only on his own individual paintings, but also on the fact that he was the head of a large workshop, in which many different branches of the fine arts were carried on by a great number of pupil-assistants, including Albert Diirer (see vol. vil. pp. 555-56). In this atelier not only large altar-pieces and other sacred paintings were executed, but also elaborate retables in carved wood, consisting of crowded subjects in high relief, richly decorated with gold and colour, such as pleased the rather doubtful Teutonic taste of that time (see p. 648 infra). Wood-engraving was also carried on in the same workshop, the blocks being cut from Wohlgemuth's designs, many of which are remarkable for their vigour and clever adaptation to the special necessities of the technique of woodcutting. Two large and copiously illustrated books have woodcuts supplied by Wohlgemuth and his stepson Wilhelm Pleydenwurff. The first is the Schatzkammer der wahren Reichthiimer des Hels, printed by Koberger in 1491; the other is the Historia Mundi, by Schedel, 1493-94, a sort of encyclopedia, usually known as the Nuremberg Chronicle, which attained a very high degree of popularity at the time, and is now highly valued, not for the text, but for its remarkable collection of spirited engravings.

Among the paintings ascribed to Wohlgemuth a large number are clearly the work of less able assistants, but those by the hand of the master himself possess merit of a very high order, in their rich colour, powerful drawing, and refined delicacy of finish. The earliest known work by Wohlgemuth is a retable consisting of four panels, dated 1465, now in the Munich gallery, a decorative work of much beauty. In 1479 he painted the retable of the high altar in the church of St Mary at Zwickau, which still exists, receiving for it the large sum of 1400 gulden. One of his finest and largest works is the great retable painted for the church of the Austin friars at Nuremberg, now moved into the museum ; it consists of a great many panels, with figures of those saints whose worship was specially popular at Nuremberg. In 1501 Wohlgemuth was employed to decorate the town-hall at Goslar with a

large series of paintings ; some on the ceiling are on panel, and others on the walls are painted thinly in tempera on canvas. As a portrait-painter he enjoyed much repute, and some of his works of this class are very admirable for their realistic vigour and minute finish. Outside Germany Wohlgemuth's paintings are scarce ; the Royal Institution at Liverpool possesses two good examples,—Pilate Washing his Hands, and the Deposition from the Cross, parts prob- ably of a large altarpiece. During the last ten years of his life Wohlgemuth appears to have produced little by his own hand. One of his latest paintings is the retable at Schwabach, executed in 1508, the contract for which still exists. He died at Nuremberg in 1519.

WOLCOT, Joun (1738-1819), painter and satirist under the pseudonym of PrTER Pinpar, was son of Alexander Wolcot, surgeon at Dodbrooke, adjoining Kings- bridge, in Devonshire, and was baptized there 9th May 1738. He was educated at Kingsbridge free school under John Morris, at the Bodmin grammar school, and in France, and as the result of this training was well acquainted with Greek and Latin, and spoke French with facility. For seven years he was apprenticed to his uncle, John Wolcot, a surgeon at Fowey, and it was intended that he should in due course succeed to the practice. Among his uncle's patients were Sir William Trelawny and his household, at Trelawne, near Fowey, and when Trelawny went to Jamaica as governor in 1769 he was accompanied by Wolcot, who had now qualified as M.D. of the uni- versity of Aberdeen (8th September 1767). Considerable ecclesiastical patronage was in the gift of the governor of Jamaica, and, to render himself eligible for any desirable living which might fall vacant, Wolcot returned to England, and was ordained deacon on 24th June 1769 and priest on the following day. With these qualifications he once more repaired to the West Indies, and in 1772 became incumbent of Vere, Jamaica, but on the death of his patron (11th December 1772) he bade adieu to the colony, and on his arrival in England settled as a physician at Truro. Party politics ran high in that borough, and Wolcot threw him- self into the fray, making an especial butt of an influential merchant, afterwards the representative of Truro in par- liament. In consequence of those indiscretions he left in 1779, and in 1781 he fixed his permanent abode in London. He brought with him the young Cornish artist John Opie, whose talents in painting received the

enthu- siastic admiration of the doctor. Wolcot exerted himself energetically in spreading the fame of his young protegé by puffs in the papers and by introductions to the leaders of fashion.1 From this date he dropped the profession of medicine, as he had previously thrown off his clerical orders, and earned the means of subsistence by his satirical productions. Wolcot had long dabbled in poetry. His first effusion, on the recovery of the elder Pitt from gout, is said to have appeared in Martin's Magazine, about 1756, when he was resident at Fowey, and he dictated verses until within a few days of his death. Many of his serious pieces were marked by taste and feeling, and his translation of Thomas Warton's Latin epigram on sleep dwells in the memory through its happy simplicity. After his settlement in London he threw off with marvellous rapidity a succession of pungent satires. George III. was his favourite subject of ridicule, and his peculiarities were described or distorted in The Lousiad, Peeps at St James's, The Royal Visit to Exeter, Two of Wolcot's happiest satires on the " farmer king " depicted the royal survey of Whitbread's brewery and the king's wonder how the apples got into the apple dumplings. The most entertaining biography which the Fnglish language has yet produced was ridiculed in An Epistle to James Boswell, and in a piece on the rival

1 See Opie and his Works, by J. Jope Rogers.

biographers, happily called Bozzyand Piozzi. The leading man of science and the adventurous traveller fell under his lash,—the former in Sir Joseph Banks and the Emperor of Morocco, and the latter in a Complimentary Epistle to James Bruce. When Woleot came to London with his rough artistic genius from the west his hand was directed against the painters of the day who had already established their reputation, and his Lyric Odes to the Academiciuns often turned their modes of painting into a jest with marvellous effect. Wolcot was himself no mean artist, and in 1797 there was published Six Picturesque Views from Paintings by Peter Pindar, engraved by Alken. His knowledge of the art of painting lent force to his strictures on the academicians of the age. In 1795 he disposed of his works to the booksellers for an annuity of £250 a year,

which he lived to enjoy for many more years than the purchasers expected or desired. His various pieces were published in 1796 in four octavo volumes, and they were often reprinted. His satires are said to have exercised such an effect on public opinion that the ministers pressed upon him a Government pension, on condition that he refrained from any further attacks on the king's peculiarities; but it is also asserted that he speedily declined to accept it any longer, and that he even returned the moneys which he had received. Like many another ridiculer of the idiosyncracies of others he was himself very susceptible to criticism, and for some attacks made on him by Gifford, the editor of the Quarterly Review, he attempted to belabour his satirical opponent in Wright's shop in Piccadilly, but Gifford was too quick for him, and Wolcot was soundly thrashed. He died at Latham Place, Somer's Town, London, on 14th January 1819, and seven days later was buried near Samuel Butler, the author of Hudibras, in the vestry vault in the churchyard of St Paul's, Covent Garden.

Polwhele, the Cornish historian, was well acquainted with Wolcot in his early life, and the best account of his residence in the west is found in vol. i. of Polwhele's 7raditions and in Polwhele's Bio- graphical Sketches, vol. ii. Cyrus Redding was a frequent visitor at the old man's house, and has described Wolcot's later days in his Past Celebrities, vol. i., and his Fifty Years' Recollections, vols. i. and ii. John Taylor, "everybody's Taylor," lived "on the most friendly footing with the doctor," who figures in the Records of my Life. Wolcot's humour was broad, and he cared little whether he hit above or below the belt, but he had a keen eye for the ridiculous, and was endowed with a wondrous facility of diction.

WOLF. The zoological position and general characters of the wolf (Canis lupus) are described in the article Mammatia (vol. xv. p. 438), where the difficulties that naturalists meet with in separating and defining the numerous variations of the animals called wolves, dogs, jackals, and foxes are shown. The true wolves are (excluding some varieties of the domestic dog) the largest members of the genus, and have a wide geographical range, extending over nearly the whole of Europe and Asia, and North America from Greenland to Mexico, but they are not found in South America or Africa, being replaced in both of these continents by

various species of jackals and foxes. As might be expected from this extensive range, and the varied character of the climatic conditions of the countries they inhabit, they present great diversities of size, length and thickness of fur, and coloration, although resembling each other in all important structural characters. These differences have given rise to a supposed multiplicity of species, expressed by the names of C. lupus, C. lycaon (Central Europe), C. laniger and C. niger (Tibet), C. pallipes (India), C. occidentalis, C. nubilis, C. mexicanus, &c., of North America, but it is very doubtful whether these ought to be distinguished as other than local varieties. In North America there is a second distinct smaller species, called the coyote or prairie wolf (Canis latrans), and perhaps the Japanese wolf (C.

hodophylax) may also be distinct, although, except for its smaller size and shorter legs, it is scarcely distinguishable from the common species. Though generally distributed throughout the Indian peninsula, the wolf is not found in Ceylon nor in Burmah and Siam. The ordinary colour of the wolf is a yellowish or fulvous grey, but specimens have been met with almost pure white and others entirely black. In northern countries the fur is longer and thicker, and the animal generally larger and more powerful than in the southern portion of its range. Its habits are similar everywhere, and it is still, and has been from time imme- morial, especially known to man in all the countries it inhabits as the devastator of his flocks of sheep. Wolves do not catch their prey by lying in ambush, or stealing up close to it, and making a sudden spring as the cat tribe do, but by fairly running it down in open chase, which their speed and remarkable endurance enable them to do, and usually, except during summer, when the young families of cubs are being separately provided for by their parents, they assemble in troops or packs, and by their combined and persevering efforts are able to overpower and kill even such great animals as the American bison. It is singular that such closely allied species as the domestic dog and the Arctic fox are among the favourite prey of wolves, and, as is well known, children and even full-grown people are not unfrequently the objects of their attack when pressed by hunger. Notwithstanding the proverbial ferocity of the wolf in

a wild state, many instances are recorded of animals taken when quite young becoming perfectly tame and attached to the person who has brought them up, when they exhibit many of the ways of a dog. They can, however, rarely be trusted by strangers.

The history of the wolf in the British Isles, and its gradual extirpation, has been thoroughly investigated by Harting in his work on Extinct British Animals, from which the following account is abridged. To judge by the osteological remains which the re- searches of geologists have brought to light, there was perhaps searcely a county in England or Wales in which, at one time or another, wolves did not abound, while in Scotland and Ireland they must have been still more numerous. The fossil remains which have been discovered in Britain are not larger than, nor in any way to be distinguished from, those of European wolves of the present day. Wolf-hunting was a favourite pursuit of the ancient Britons as well as of the Anglo-Saxons, In Athelstan's reign these animals abounded to such an extent in Yorkshire that a retreat was built by one Acchorn, at Flixton, near Filey, whcrein travellers might seek refuge if attacked by them. As is well known, great efforts were made by King Edgar to reduce the number of wolves in the country, but, notwithstanding the annual tribute of 300 skins paid to him during several years by the king of Wales, he was not altogether so successful as has been commonly imagined. In the reign of Henry III. wolves were sufficiently numerous in some parts of the country to induce the king to make grants of land to various individuals upon the express condition of thcir taking measures to destroy these animals wherever they could be found. In Edward II.'s time, the king's forest of the Peak, in Derbyshire, is especially mentioned as infested with wolves, and it was not until the reign of Henry VII. (1485-1509) that wolves appear to have become finally extinct in England. This, however, is rather a matter of inference from the cessation of all mention of them in local records than from any definite evidence of their extirpation. Their last retreat was probably in the desolate wolds of Yorkshire. In Scotland, as might be supposed from the nature of the country, the wolf maintained its hold for a much longer period. There is a well-known story of the last of the race being killed by Sir Ewen Cameron of Lochiel in 1680, but there is evidence of wolves having survived in Sutherlandshire and other parts into the following century (perhaps as

late as 1743), though the date of their final extinction cannot be accurately fixed. In Ireland, in Cromwell's time, wolves were particularly troublesome, and said to be increas- ing in numbers, so that special measures were taken for their destruc- tion, such as the offering of large rewards for their heads, and the prohibition (in 1652) of the exportation of " wolf-dogs," the large dogs used for hunting the wolves. The active measures taken then and later reduced their numbers greatly, so that towards the end of the century they became scarce, but, as in the case of the sister island, the date of their final disappearance cannot now be ascertained. It has been placed, upon the evidence of somewhat doubtful traditions, as late as 1766.

It is entirely owing to their insular position that the British Islands have been able to clear themselves of these formidable and destructive animals, for the neighbouring country of France, with no natural barriers to prevent their incursions from the vast conti- nent to the east, is still liable every winter to visits from numbers of them, as the following figures indicate. Government rewards were paid in 1883 for 1316 wolves destroyed, in 1884 for 1035, in 1885 for 900, and in 1886 for 760. The increase of the reward just before the first-named date seems thus to have had some effect in lessening the number. (W. H. F.)

WOLF, Frieprich Avcust (1759-1824), was born in 1759 at Hainrode, a little village not far from Nordhausen, in the province of Hanover. His father, who was village schoolmaster and organist, was in his way an enthusiast in education, and gave his son whatever advantage is to be gained by the earliest possible cultivation. In time the family removed to Nordhausen, and there young Wolf went to the grammar school, where he soon acquired all the Latin and Greek that the masters could teach him, besides learning French, Italian, Spanish, and music. This, however, was in the earlier and (as he himself regarded it) the idler part of his schooltime. He pre- sently took his education into his own hands, devoted himself entirely to classics, borrowed books wherever he could, and rapidly stored his young and powerful memory with their contents. The

precocity of his attainments was only equalled by the force of will and confidence in his own powers which characterized him throughout life.

After two years of solitary study, at the age of eighteen, Wolf went to the university of Gottingen. His first act there was a prophecy—one of those prophecies which spring from the conscious power to bring about their fulfilment. He had to choose his "faculty," and chose one which then existed only in his own mind, the faculty of " philology." What is even more remarkable, the omen was accepted. He carried his point, and was enrolled as he desired.

Wolf's relations with Heyne, who was then the chief ornament of Gottingen, form an unpleasant chapter, which may well be passed over here. Heyne was a scholar of little force or originality, but he was one of those who, by their power of assimilating and transmitting the thoughts of others, often rise to the highest reputation. Wolf soon left him, and fell back upon the university library, from which he borrowed with his old avidity.

During the years 1779-83 Wolf was a schoolmaster, first at Ilfeld, then at Osterode. His success as a teacher was striking, and he found time to publish an edition of the Symposium, which excited notice, and led to his pro- motion to a chair in the Prussian university of Halle.

The moment was a critical one in the history of educa- tion. The literary impulse of the Renaissance was almost spent ; scholarship had become dry and trivial. A new school, that of Locke and Rousseau, sought to make teach- ing more modern and more human, but at the sacrifice of mental discipline and scientific aim. Wolf was eager to throw himself into the contest on the side of anti- quity. In Halle (1783-1807), by the force of his will and the enlightened aid of tle ministers of Frederick the Great, he was able to carry out his long-cherished ideas, and found the science of philology. By one of England's insular aberrations, the word " philology " threatens to be confined to the study of the forms of language. Wolf defined it to be "knowledge of human nature as exhibited in antiquity." The matter of such a science, he held, must be sought in the history and education of some highly cultivated nation, to be studied in written remains, works of art, and what- ever else bears the stamp of national

thought or skill. It has therefore to do with both history and language, but primarily as a science of ¢nterpretation, in which historical facts and linguistic facts take their place in an organic whole. Such was the ideal which Wolf had in his mind when he established the philological seminarium at Halle.

630

Wolf's writings make little show in a library, and were | always subordinate to his teaching. During his time at Halle he published his commentary on the Leptines (1789) —which suggested to his pupil, Aug. Boeckh, the Public Economy of Athens—and a little later the Prolegomena to Homer (1795). This book, the work with which his name is chiefly associated, was thrown off in comparative haste to meet an immediate need. It has all the merits of a great piece of oral teaching—command of method, sug- gestiveness, breadth of view. The reader does not feel that he has to do with a theory, but with great ideas, which are left to bear fruit in his mind (see Homer).

The Halle professorship ended tragically, and with it the happy and productive period of Wolf's life. He was swept away, and his university with him, by the deluge of the French invasion. A painful gloom oppressed his remaining years (1807-24), which he spent at Berlin. He became so fractious and intolerant as to alienate some of his warmest friends. He gained a place in the depart- ment of education, through the exertions of W. von Humboldt. When this became unendurable, he once more took a professorship. But he no longer taught with his old success ; and he wrote very little. His most finished work, the Darstellung der Alterthumswissenschaft, though published at Berlin (1807), belongs essentially to the Halle time. At length his health gave way. He was advised to try the south of France. He got as far as Marseilles, and was laid in the classic soil of that ancient Hellenic city.

The chief source of this sketch has been the admirable artiele by Mr Mark Pattison in the North British Review of June 1865, soon (we believe) to be reprinted by the Clarendon Press. Since the date of that artiele Wolf's Kleine Schriften have been edited by G. Bernhardy (Halle, 1869). The works not included in that eol- leetion are the Prolegomena, the Letters to

Heyne (Berlin, 1797), the eommentary on the Leptines (Halle, 1789), and a translation of the Clouds of Aristophanes (Berlin, 1811). To these must be added the Vorlesungen on Iliad i.-iy., taken from the notes of a pupil, and edited by Usteri (Bern, 1880). (D. B. M.)

WOLFE, Cuarwes (1791-1823), author of The Burial of Sir John Moore, born in Dublin in 1791, was an Irish clergyman, curate of Ballyclog, in Tyrone, and after- wards of Donoughmore. The poem seems to have been written when Wolfe was still a student in Trinity College, Dublin, and it originally appeared in an Irish newspaper (the Vewry Telegraph) in 1817. The initials C. W. were affixed to it at first, but as it was quoted from newspaper to newspaper these were dropped, and, eventually finding its way into the Edinburgh Annual Register, it was claimed for and by as many people as Punch's famous advice to those about to marry. Wolfe's Trinity College friends came to the rescue, and one of them (Archdeacon Russell) wrote a memoir which, in spite of its being one of the dullest memoirs ever written, went through at least eight editions—a curious testimony to the popularity of the poem. Wolfe died of consumption at Cork in 1823, at the early age of thirty-two.

WOLFE, James (1727-1759), the hero of Quebec, was the son of Lieutenant-General Edward Wolfe, and was born in the vicarage of Westerham, Kent, on J anuary 2, 1727. At an early age he evinced a keen interest in the adventures and achievements of war, and at thirteen accompanied his father to Cartagena. Obtaining a commission as ensign in the 12th regiment of foot in 1741, he embarked for Flanders on the 10th May of the following year, and during the campaign of 1743, in which he acted as adjutant, he was present at the battle of Dettingen. Hav- ing exhibited, in addition to high courage, a rare talent for command, he received while yet a youth a commission, on 3d June 1744, as captain in the 4th or king's regiment of foot, and shortly afterwards was made brigade-major. In this capacity he took part in the suppression of the |

WO L—

WOL

rebellion of 1745, being present both at Falkirk and at Culloden. In January 1747 he sailed for the Continent, and for his valour at the battle of Lawfeldt on the 2d July he received the public thanks of the commander-in-chief, the duke of Cumberland. On 5th January 1749 he was gazetted major of the 20th regiment, and in the following year he became lieutenant-colonel. In this position he began to manifest those great qualities as a commander which were the secret of his success, and, while introducing into the regiment that perfect discipline necessary to the highest proficiency, secured the personal affection of almost every soldier. In the luckless Rochefort expedition he was quartermaster-general, and by his dashing gallantry attracted the special notice of Pitt. When therefore it was decided in 1758 to send an expedition to Cape Breton under

Amherst, Wolfe was appointed by Pitt brigadier-general.

Under the eye of Amherst and Admiral Boscawen he con- ducted the landing at Louisburg through a heavy surf and in face of the well-directed fire of the enemy. He himself was the first to land, and forming his division into compact order attacked and carried with the bayonet the nearest French battery, after which he formed thecamp. Chiefly through his ardent energy the siege operations were brought to a successful issue after an investment of six months. Wolfe then eagerly urged an attack on Quebec, expressing his determination to leave the service if nothing further was to be done. Pitt not only acted on his advice, but selected him as the leader of the difficult and almost chimerical enterprise. Quebec, besides being strongly fortified, was occupied by forces which greatly outnumbered those placed at Wolfe's disposal. Moreover, Montcalm the French commander had an open country behind him for supplies, and was only called upon to protract the defence behind his ramparts till the resources of the besiegers were exhausted. It was incumbent on Wolfe to force Montcalm to give battle, and this could only be effected by manceuvres of the most daring kind. After bombarding the city from the heights of Point Levi, Wolfe made an attempt, 29th June 1759, to attack Montcalm's camp in front, but his instructions were not carried out with suffi- cient accuracy, and foreseeing that irretrievable disaster was imminent he found it necessary after the attack had begun to recall his

troops and retire. As the enemy were now on their guard against a second attack of a similar kind, Wolfe saw that the problem must be solved by some other method, and after some time spent in careful con- sideration he hit upon a still more daring plan. In the evening of the 12th September with 5000 men he silently descended the St Lawrence in boats, and, scaling the heights of Abraham in the darkness, drew up his forces on the plains so as to cut off Montcalm's supplies. The audacity of the movement was too much for Montcalm's patience. Onhis attention being called to it he exclaimed " Oui, je les vois ot ils ne doivent pas étre; je vais les écraser." But the genius of Wolfe was equal to the occasion. With calm self-possession he forbade a single shot to be fired till the enemy were within thirty yards. The crushing volleys with which they were then met, followed by an impetuous attack with the bayonet, was decisive of the action. While leading a charge at the head of the Louisburg grenadiers, Wolfe had one of his wrists shattered by a shot, but wrapping a handkerchief round it he kept on. Another shot struck him, and he still advanced, when a third lodged in his breast. While he was lying in a swoon some one near him exclaimed, " They run; see how theyrun!" 'Whorun?" demanded Wolfe, like one roused from sleep. " The enemy," was the answer; "' they give way everywhere." Wolfe then signified that a regiment should be sent down to Charles liver to cut off their retreat, and on learning that his

WO L—

orders had been obeyed he turned on his side, and murmured as his last words, " Now God be praised, I will die in peace." Montcalm, the French commander, was mortally wounded in the same action, and died soon after- wards. By the surrender of Quebec Canada was lost to the French.

See Wright, Life of Major-General James Wolfe Parkman, Montcalm and Wolfe (2 vols., 1884),

WOLFENBUTTEL, a small town in the duchy of Brunswick, is situated on both banks of the Oker, 7 miles to the south of Brunswick. It contains various minor tribunals, some schools, and a small garrison; and it carries on a few unimportant manufactures (machinery, copper goods, linen, cork, preserves, &c.). Wolfenbiittel, in fact, may be accepted as

tolerably representative of the average dull German provincial town, clinging more or less faithfully to the traditions of the period when it was the residence of the ducal family. It owes its chief interest to its connexion with Lessing, who was ducal librarian there from 1770 till his death in1781. The old library building, designed in 1723 in imitation of the Pantheon at Rome, contains a marble statue of the poet. The library, including 300,000 printed books and 7000 MSS., has, however, been transferred to a large new Renaissance edifice, opened in October 1887. It is espe- cially rich in copies of the Bible and in books of the early Reformation period. Opposite the old library is the palace, occupied since 1835 by a theatre, a law court, and a seminary. The ducal burial-vault is in the church of St Mary. There are two other Evangelical churches and a Roman Catholic church in Wolfenbiittel, and perhaps the only other noteworthy building is the large prison. The ancient fortifications have been converted into pro- menades, once a favourite resort of Lessing. In 1885 the population of Wolfenbiittel, including the suburbs of Auguststadt and Juliusstadt, was 13,455. The " Wolfen- biittel Fragments " are alluded to under Lessrne, vol. xiv. p- 481; see also REIMARUS.

A castle is said to have been founded on the site of Wolfenbiittel by a margrave of Meissen about 1046. When this began in 1267 to be the residence of the early Brunswick or Wolfenbiittel line of counts, a town gradually grew up around it. In 1542 it was taken by the Saxons and Hessians, who however evacuated it five years later after the battle of Miihlberg. In the Thirty Years' War, in June 1641, the Swedish, under Wrangel and Konigsmark, defeated the Austrians under the archduke Leopold at Wolfenbiittel. The town passed wholly into the possession of the Brunswick-Wolfen- biittel family in 1671, and for nearly one hundred years enjoyed the distinction of being the ducal capital. In 1754, however, Duke Charles transferred the ducal residence to Brunswick, a blow from which Wolfenbiittel has never recovered.

WOLFF, Caspar Friepricn (1733-17 94), who is justly reckoned the founder of modern embryology, was born at Berlin in 1733, and studied anatomy and physiology under Meckel, and later at Halle, where he graduated in medicine in 1759, his thesis being his famous Theorra Generationis. After serving as a surgeon in the Seven Years' War, he

wished to lecture on anatomy and physiology in Berlin; but being refused permission he accepted a call from the empress Catherine to become professor of those subjects at the academy of St Petersburg, and acted in this capacity until his death in 1794.

While the theory of "evolution" in the crude sense of a simple growth in size and unfolding of organs all previously existent in the germ was in possession of the field, his researches on the develop- ment of the alimentary canal in the chick first clearly established the converse view, that of epigenesis, i.e., of progressive formation and differentiation of organs from a germ primitively homogeneous (see EMBRYOLOGY, vol. viii. p. 165). He also largely anticipated the modern conception of embryonic layers, and is said even to have foreshadowed the cell theory. It is certain that he discerned, long before Goethe, the leafy homology of the parts of flowers.

WOLFF, Curistran (1679-1754), is an important figure in the history of philosophy, and his life has more

(1864), and

dramatic interest than is usually the case with an academic teacher. He was the son of a tanner, and was born at Breslau on the 24th January 1679. His father had dedi- cated him before his birth to a life of learning, having been disappointed himself in similar aspirations, and Wolff accordingly received a gymnasium training in Breslau, whence he proceeded in 1699 to the university of Jena. Mathe- matics and physics formed at first his chief attraction, to which he soon added philosophy. He studied the Cartesian philosophy as well as the works of Grotius and Pufendorf, but was chiefly influenced by Tschirnhausen's Medicina Mentis. In 1703 he qualified as privat-docent in the university of Leipsic, where he lectured till 1706, when he was called as professor of mathematics to Halle. Before this time he had made the acquaintance of Leibnitz, of whose philosophy his own system is a modification. In Halle Wolff limited himself at first to mathematics, but on the departure of a colleague he annexed physics, and presently included in his lectures all

the main philosophical disciplines. He followed the example of Thomasius in lecturing in German instead of Latin. This fact, and the remarkableclearness of his exposition, caused his class-rooms to be crowded. He also became known as a writer toa wider circle, and was made member of the Royal Society of London and the Academy of Berlin. But the claims which Wolff advanced on behalf of the philosophic reason appeared impious to his theological colleagues. Halle was the headquarters of Pietism, which, after a long struggle against the rigidity of the older Lutheran dogmatism, had itself assumed the characteristics of a new orthodoxy. This orthodoxy, represented by Joachim Lange and A. H. Francke, considered the cause of supernaturalism en- dangered by a philosophy which professed by the un- assisted reason to present the whole universe as a rational and necessarilydetermined system. Wolff's professed ideal was to base theological truths on evidence of mathematical certitude. Personal grounds accentuated the bitterness. Strife broke out openly in 1721, when Wolff, on the occasion of laying down the office of pro-rector, delivered an oration "On the Moral Philosophy of the Chinese," in which he praised the purity of the moral precepts of Confucius, pointing to them as an evidence of the power of human reason to attain by its own efforts to moral truth. The attacks and accusations in connexion with this address were unsuccessful at the time, but Wolff con- tinued to give offence to his colleagues, and to Lange in particular, by his action in the filling up of university chairs, and in 1723 a disappointed pupil, a docent in the same university, published a hostile criticism upon Wolff's system, at the instigation, it is said, of Lange. This was contrary to university etiquette and statute, and Wolff some- what injudiciously appealed to the Government for an in- terdict upon such attacks. He succeeded in obtaining this, but his enemies retaliated by sending to court a united representation of the dangerous character of his views. Through a worthless courtier, they gained the ear of the king, Frederick William I., by a concrete example, which touched him most nearly. If one of His Majesty's famous grenadiers at Potsdam should desert, the king would have no right, it was represented, upon the principles of Wolff, to punish the man, seeing that he only did what it was necessarily predetermined that he should do. The result of this representation was swifter and more drastic than Wolff's bitterest enemies had calculated on. On the 13th November 1723 a cabinet order arrived in

Halle de- posing Wolff from his office, and commanding him to leave Halle and quit Prussian territory within forty-eight hours on pain of ahalter. 'The same day Wolff passed into Saxony, and presently proceeded to Marburg, to which university he had received a call before this crisis. The landgrave of

632

Hesse received him with every mark of distinction, and the circumstances of his expulsion drew universal atten- tion to his philosophy. It was everywhere discussed, and over two hundred books and pamphlets appeared for or against it before 1737, not reckoning the systematic treatises of Wolff and his followers. The seventeen years which Wolff spent at Marburg witnessed the publication of his chief works, and the rise of his philosophy to almost un- disputed sway throughout Germany. His earlier treatises were, like his lectures, composed in German :—a treatise on logic, called Verniinftige Gedanken von den Kriiften des menschlichen Verstandes (1712); ametaphysic, Verniinftige Gedanken von Gott, der Welt, und der Seele des Menschen, auch aller Dinge tiberhaupt (1719) ; treatises on ethics and politics with similar titles (1721) ; three on the philosophy

of nature (1723—4—5), followed by an encyclopzedic review of.

his system in 1726. From that time he began to go over the same ground more fully and methodically in a series of Latin works. The logic, ontology, cosmology, and em- pirical psychology appeared between 1728 and 1732, followed by the rational psychology and natural theology in 1734. Meanwhile, after some years the king of Prussia made overtures to Wolff to return, and in 1739, by the irony of events, a cabinet order prescribed the study of the Wolffian philosophy to all candidates for ecclesiastical pre- ferment. In 1740 Frederick William died suddenly, and one of the first acts of his successor, Frederick the Great, was to recall Wolff to Halle on the most flattering and advantageous terms.- His entry into Halle on the 6th of December 1740 partook of the nature of a triumphal pro- cession. In 1743 he became chancellor of the university, and in 1745 he received the title of "freiherr" from the elector of Bavaria. But, though he was thus loaded with honours, and his philosophy

everywhere triumphant, he found that he had outlived his power of attracting the academic youth. His matter was no longer fresh, nor were his own powers what they had been when he left Halle seventeen years before, and he had the bitter ex- perience of lecturing to empty class-rooms. He died on the 9th April 1754, in the seventy-sixth year of his age, fourteen years after his return to Halle.

The Wolffian philosophy held almost undisputed sway in Germany till it was displaced by the Kantian revolution. It is essentially a common-sense adaptation or watering-down of the Leibnitian system; or, as we can hardly speak of a system in con- nexion with: Leibnitz, Wolff may be said to have methodized and reduced to dogmatic form the thoughts of his great predecessor, which often, however, lose the greater part of their suggestiveness in the process. Since his philosophy disappeared before the influx of new ideas and the appearance of more speculative minds, it has been customary to dwell almost exclusively on its defects—the want of depth or freshness of insight, and the aridity of its neo- scholastic formalism, which tends to relapse into verbose platitudes. But this is to do injustice to Wolff's real merits. These are mainly his comprehensive view of philosophy, as embracing in its survey the whole field of human knowledge, his insistence every- where on clear and methodic exposition, and his confidence in the power of reason to reduce all subjects to this form. To these must be added that he was practically the first to "teach philosophy to speak German." It will be seen that these merits concern the form rather than the matter of philosophy, the latter being mainly derived:-from Leibnitz, with some modifications in the sense of the older scholastic Aristotelianism. The Wolffian system retains the determinism and optimism of Leibnitz, but the monadology recedes into the background, the monads falling asunder into souls or conscious beings on the one hand and mere atoms on the other. The doctrine of the pre-established harmony also loses its meta- physical significance, and the principle of sufficient reason intro- duced by Leibnitz is once more discarded in favour of the principle of contradiction which Wolff seeks to make the fundamental principle of philosophy. Philosophy is defined by him as the science of the possible, and divided, according to the two faculties of the human individual, into a theoretical and a practical part. Logic, sometimes called philosophia rationalis, forms the introduc- tion

or propedeutic to both. Theoretical philosophy has for its parts ontology or philosophia prima, cosmology, rational psycho- logy, and natural theology; ontology treats of the existent in

general, psychology of the soul as a simple non-extended substance, cosmology of the world as a whole, and rational theology of the existence and attributes of God. 'These are best known to philo- sophical students by Kant's treatment of them in the Critique of Pure Reason. Practical philosophy is subdivided into ethics, economics, and politics. Wolff's moral principle is the realization of human perfection. (A. SE.)

WOLF-FISH. See Sra-Worr.

WOLFRAM VON ESCHENBACH, medieval German poet, lived in the latter part of the 12th and the early part of the 13th century. Little is known about the facts of his life, and such knowledge as we possess is derived wholly from his own writings. He belonged to a poor but noble family, He speaks of himself as a Bavarian, and refers to the count of Wertheim as his feudal lord. His home was the castle of Eschenbach (near Ansbach), and in the churchyard at Eschenbach what was said to be his grave was shown as late as the beginning of the 17th century. He spent some time at the court of Hermann, landgrave of Thuringia, where he met Walther von der Vogelweide, to whom he makes two references in his works. Wolfram survived Hermann, who died in 1216. His residence at the Thuringian court led to his being included among the poets who were afterwards said to have taken part in a great competition for poetic supremacy at the Wartburg. Wolfram seems to have been happily married, and to have had children. In politics he was a supporter of the emperor Otho IV. He understood French, but could neither read nor write.

His greatest work is Parzival, an epic poem completed between 1205 and 1215. It combines the story of the Holy Grail with in- cidents from the legends of southern France about the old princes of Anjou and from the legendary history of Arthur and the Knights of the Round Table. 'To Wolfram's contemporary, Gottfried of Strasburg, the style of this poem seemed abstract and obscure ; and Parzival certainly lacks the lightness

and grace of Gottfried's masterpiece Tristan. It has, however, high imaginative qualities, and, regarded as a whole, is the most splendid achievement in the literature of Germany during the period of Middle High German. Even in Wolfram's day the poem produced a profound impres- sion, and in the 15th century it was still so warmly appreciated that it was one of the earliest works made accessible to the public through the invention of printing. The principal authority used by Wolfram seems to have been the Conte del Gral of Chrestien de Troyes. He mentions, besides this work, a poem by Kiot, a Pro- vengal poet ; but nothing is known of Kiot, and it may be that he never really existed. Whatever may have been the sources of Parzival, Wolfram gave to everything he borrowed from others a wholly new character, impressing upon it strongly the mark of his own great ideal spirit. Besides his chief work and various lyrics he composed two epic fragments, Titurel and Willehalm, the former before Parzival, the latter after. Titurel, a love-tale, be- longs to the same cycle of legends as the story of Parzival, and, so far as form is concerned, it is the brightest and niost artistic of Wolfram's works. Willehalm presents the legendary history of St William of Orange, a contemporary of Charlemagne. The so- called third part of this poem was continued by Ulrich von Tiir-

heim about 1250, the first part by Ulrich von dem Tiirlin between 1252 and 1278.

A complete edition of Wolfram's works was issued by Lachmann in 1833, Bartsch afterwards published, with notes, an edition of Parzival and Titurel. There are renderings into modern German by San-Marte and Simrock. See San- Marte's Parzival-Studien, and essays by Bartsch, Pfeiffer, Rochat, and Zingerle in Pfeiffer's Germania.

WOLLASTON, Wit1am (1659-1724), English philo- sophical writer, was born at Coton-Clanford in Stafford- shire, March 1659. He was educated under disadvantages both at school and at the university, but left his college (Sidney, Cambridge) with a high reputation for his acquirements, in September 1681. He then became assistant-master of the Birmingham grammar school, and in that position took holy orders. In 1688 an uncle unexpectedly left him an ample fortune, on which he retired, moving to

London, where he married a lady of fortune, and devoted himself to his domestic duties and the pursuit of learning and philosophy. In his studies he occupied himself more especially with the foundation of the common doctrines of "natural religion," which were

in those years so universally discussed. The substance of his thinking on these doctrines he embodied, towards the end of his life, in the one book by which he is now remembered, The Religion of Nature Delineated, the first edition of which was privately printed in 1722, and the second, revised, in 1724, He died in October of the same year.

Wollaston's Religion of Nature, which falls between Clarke's Discourse of the Unchangeable Obligations of Natural Religion and Butler's Sermons, was one of the popular philosophical books of its day. More than 10,000 copies of it were sold ina few years. It was highly valued by Bishop Butler and a favourite book of Queen Caroline, the wife of George II., and she ordered the numerous quotations from Latin, Greek, and Hebrew in the notes to be translated into English for her use. To the 8th edition (1750) was added a life of the author. Thongh the book is now re- membered chiefly for the theory of the nature of moral good and evil advocated in it, it was rather its defence of natural religion, and its bold, sometimes original, penetrating, and often eloquent discussion of great ethical religious problems which secured for it ""descrved reputation." It was designed to be an answer to the two questions—Is there such a thing as natural religion? and If there is, what is it? Wollaston starts with the assumption that religion and morality are identical, and labours to show that religion is "the pursuit of happiness by the practice of truth and reason." The moral theory on which he values himself as propounding a view met with nowhere else is that moral evil is the practical denial of a true proposition and moral good the affirma- tion of it. To steal is wrong because it is to deny that the thing stolen is what it is—the property of another. In Wollaston's view " happiness" occupies a large place. He makes pain an evil and pleasure a good. Happiness is a duty and an end to be aimed at by every intelligent being. He makes the produetion of happiness also the test of the rightness or wrongness of all social

regulations. But he admits that in this world happiness and virtue only tend to coincide, and derives from their defective coin- cidence his argument for a state of future rewards and punishments.

In addition to this work Wollaston published anonymously a small book On the Design of the Book of Ecclesiastes, or the Unreasonableness of Men's Restless Contention for the Present Enjoyments, represented in an English Poem, London, 1691. The subject of the book is sufficiently indicated in its title, and was in form and argument so worthless that its author consulted his reputation by im- mediately suppressing it. It is now very scarce. The university library of Cambridge possesses @ copy.

See Wollaston's fife prefixed to the 8th ed. of his Religion of Nature; John Clarke, Examination of the notion of Moral Good and Evil advanced tn a late book entitled The Religion of Nature Delineated, London, 1725; Drechsler, Ueber Wollaston's Moral-Philosophte, Erlangen, 1802; Leslie Stephen's History tof English Thought in the Eighteenth Century, London, 1876, ch. iii. and ch. ix.; H. Sidgwick's History of Ethics, 1886, p. 194 sg. A French translation of his book, bauche de la Religion Naturelle, appeared at The Hague in 1726.

WOLLASTON, Wittram Hyper (1766-1828), chemist and natural philosopher, was born at East Dereham, in Norfolk, on August 6, 1766, the second of seventeen children. His father, the Rev. Francis Wollaston, rector of Chislehurst, grandson of William Wollaston noticed above, was an enthusiastic astronomer. Wollaston studied at Caius College, Cambridge, of which he remained a fellow until his death. He took the degree of M.B. in 1787, and that of M.D. six years later, and commenced to practise medicine in 1789 at Bury St Edmunds. Failing to make headway he removed to London, where he was equally unsuccessful. He applied for a vacant physician- ship at St George's Hospital, but was not appointed ; and he never got over the feeling of irritation, which indeed led him to abandon medicine altogether. Wollaston betook himself to original research, and for a time ranged pretty impartially over the sciences. He is said to have accumu- lated a fortune by the manufacture of platinum and of various optical and mechanical inventions. He devoted much attention to the affairs of the Royal Society, of which he was elected

a fellow in 1793 and made secretary in 1806. For many years he was a vice-president, but did not care to enter on competition with Sir Humphry Davy when the latter was elected president in 1820. Beyond appearing at the meetings of learned societies Wollaston took little part in public affairs ; he lived alone, conducting his investigations in a deliberate and very exhaustive manner, but in the most rigid seclusion, no person being admitted to his laboratory on any pretext. Towards the close of 1828 he felt the approach of the

fatal malady—a tumour in the brain—and devoted his last days to a careful revisal of his unpublished researches and industrial processes, dictating several papers on these subjects, which were afterwards published in the Philo- sophical Transactions. On December 22, 1828, he died, as he had lived, self-possessed, stern, and silent.

Wollaston's character presents a very remarkable analogy with that of Henry Cavendish: both studied all branches of science; both were highly respected by their contemporaries for intellectual power and achievements in research; both were reserved and distant, making few friends, never acting from impulse, but occasionally displaying unexpected generosity. Wollaston's char- acter can only be partially divined from his public actions and relations with other scientific men, and unfortunately no other data are available. A dispute as to priority in discovering electro- magnetic rotation is referred to under FARADAY, vol. ix. p. 29; and suggestions as to the prior invention of his process of manu- facturing platinum are to be found in the article PLatinum (vol. xix. p. 190). The incidents associated with the discovery of the metal palladium were more serious than either of these. Wollaston detected this element, extracted a considerable quantity, and ex- posed it for sale in an instrument-maker's shop, calling attention to it by an anonymous advertisement. A chemist, Chenevix, purchased some of the metal, and concluded from a few hasty experiments that it was an amalgam of platinum. He submitted a paper to the Royal Society, which Wollaston as secretary read, after, it is said, vainly advising Chenevix to withdraw it. A con- troversy, supported by elaborate series of experiments, took place,

and was ouly terminated when Wollaston acknowledged that he was the discoverer, and described the process of extraction from the ores of platinum. Chenevix was disgusted, and deserted chemistry. Yet Wollaston was a most thorough and conscientions worker: it was his extreme caution in coming to conclusions until the facts were irresistible that occasionally led him to the unfor- tunate method of tentative anonymous publication; but the same quality ensured a solidity and trustworthiness in his Royal Society memoirs which make them models to subsequent investigators.

Most of Wollaston's papers deal more or less directly with chemistry, but they diverge beyond that science on all sides into optics, physiology, botany, acoustics, astronomy, and even touch on art. He discovered the metals palladium and rhodinm, and proved the identity of columbium with titanium. The minute scale on which his analytical processes were carried out was rendered possible by his extraordinary keenness of sight and neatness in manipulation.

The Royal Society awarded him a royal medal for his process of manufacturing platinum,—a work which, in its immediate effects, it is almost impossible to over-estimate. Wollaston was the first to produce the metal in a state fit to manufacture, and in quantity sufficient to make platinum crucibles generally available, thus sup- plying analytical chemistry with its most powerful instrument of advance. In optics his most important theoretical observation, to which, however, he gave little attention, was the discovery in 1802 of dark lines in the solar spectrum (see Licut, vol. xiv. p. 593), but practically the reflecting GonloMETER and CAMERA LuctDA (qq.v.) were of greatest value, the former supplying the crystallo- graphcr with his chief data, the latter indispensable in the develop- ment of modern microscopical research. Amongst his other papers may be mentioned those dealing with the physiology of vision, the apparent direction of the eyes in a portrait, a comparison of the light of the sun with that of the moon and fixed stars, a slide-rule for calculating chemical equivalents, sounds inandible to certain ears, and a theory of the formation of fairy-rings.

An appreciative essay on the 'Life of Wollaston" will be found in George Wilson's Religio Chemici (1862).

WOLLIN, an island belonging to Prussia, is the more easterly of the islands at the mouth of the Oder, which separate the Stettiner Haff from the Baltic Sea (vol. xvii. p. 724). It is divided from the mainland on the E. by the Dievenow, and from Usedom on the W. by the Swine. It is roughly triangular in shape, and has an area of 90 square miles. Heath and sand alternate with swamps, lakes, and forest on its surface, which is quite flat, except towards the south-west, where the low hills of Lebbin rise. The coast is fenced with dunes and shifting sand-hills. Cattle-rearing and fishing are the chief re- sources of the inhabitants, who number about 14,000. Misdroy, on the north-west coast, is a favourite sea-bathing resort, and some of the other villages, as Ostswine, opposite Swinemiinde, Pritter, famous for its eels, and

Lebbin, are also visited in summer. XXIV. — 80

Wot.n, the only town, is situated on the Dievenow, and is | present money, for a year's singing of masses 'for me and

connected with the mainland by three bridges. It carries on the industries of a small scaport and fishing-town, and has (1885) a population of 5241. Near the site of the present town once stood the ancient and opulent Baltic capital of the Slavs, called Wolin by the Wends, Julin by the Danes, and Winetha or Vineta by the Germans. Jomsburg, Hynnisborg, and Waltzborg, names or epithets occurring in several of the northern sagas, are said by Schafarik also to refer to this town. In the 10th and 11th centuries Wolin was the centre of an active and extensive trade. Adam of Bremen (d. 1076) extols its size and wealth ; he mentions that " Greeks" and other foreigners frequented it, and that "Saxons'"' were per- mitted to settle there on equal terms with the Wends, so long as they did not obtrude the fact of their Christianity. In 1125, how- ever, Wolin itself became the scat of a Christian bishopric, which was removed to Cammin

in 1170. A colony of Scandinavian vik- ings, often mentioned iu the sagas, flourished in this neighbour- hood from about 970 till their stronghold of Jomsburg was de- stroyed in 1083 by Magnus of Norway and Denmark. In 1183 Wolin itself was burned by Canute VI. of Denmark. Within modern times Wollin was captured by the Swedish in 1630 and 1759, and by the Brandenburgers in 1659 and 1675. A tradition long reigned, though now proved to be baseless, that the Wendish Vineta had been overwhelmed by the sea, and some submarine granite blocks ncar Damerow, in Usedom, were popularly recognized as its ruins. These arc still pointed out as such to strangers.

WOLLSTONECRAFT, Mary. See Gopwin, Mary W., and SHEetuey, Mary W.

WOLSEY, Tuomas (c. 1471-1530), cardinal, was born at Ipswich, and seems to have been the eldest son, as perhaps he was the eldest of all the four known children, of Robert Wolsey and his wife Joan. The name Wolsey, spelt Wulcy by both Robert and Thomas, is a diminutive of Wulf, that is, Wolf, and clearly proves their descent from those Teutonic folk who gave names to two English counties, to the southern one of which the Wolseys belonged. Simple repetition has made it commonly believed that Robert Wolsey was to trade a butcher. The assertion was first set afloat by enemies of the great cardinal, and was intended to be disparaging. The prob- ability, however, seems to be that he was really a grazier, and perhaps also a wool merchant. He certainly belonged to the better class of merchants, was connected with wealthy people, and himself died possessed of lands and_pro- perty in and about Ipswich. Fairly trustworthy tradition points to a house in St Nicholas Street there as occupy- ing the site of his own dwelling. According to Fiddes, supported as to the year by Cavendish, Wolsey's birth happened in March 1471, though contemporary evidence would place it some years later. His education began doubtless at the grammar school of his native town, where he showed himself an apt scholar. That reputation was fully sustained when he passed to Magdalen College, Oxford, for he took his B.A. degree at the early age of fifteen, whence he was known as "the boy bachelor." He became M.A. with such credit and distinction that he had conferred upon him a fellowship and the mastership of the grammar

school attached to his college, of which last in 1498 we find him bursar. The whole course of college training was scholastic; it strengthened and trained the intellect for actual life. Wolsey is said to have been deeply versed in the subtleties of Aquinism ; certain it is he remained wholly unaffected by the Greek revival of the Renaissance, and looked but indifferently upon its followers. From arts he went on to the study of divinity, in which the unfriendly Polydore Virgil is compelled to admit he was "not unlearned," but of which he did not become bachelor till 1510. That there was in fact, from whatever cause, some delay in Wolsey's taking orders is evidenced by his father's will, made on the last day of September 1496, probably just before his death. That instrument appointed Joan sole legatee, and directed "that if Thomas my son be a priest within a year next after my decease" he, or, failing him, another priest, should be paid ten marks, equal to about £60

my friends."

Among Wolsey's pupils at Magdalen school were three sons of the marquis of Dorset. So well was the marquis satisfied with the progress of his children that he invited Wolsey to spend with him the Christmas holidays of what must have been the year 1499. When Wolsey returned to Oxford it was with the presentation to the quiet Somerset parish of Lymington. In the October following he was inducted. He had not been long placed when a neighbouring squire, Sir Amias Paulet, put him in the stocks. The cause of this indignity is not clear; but it was remembered and resented with all the keenness attaching to an injustice suffered. Fifteen years after, as soon as he became lord chancellor, Wolsey summoned Paulet before him, administered a severe rebuke, and ordered him not to leave London without licence. From then till 1523 Paulet's name disappears from the state papers, where previously its occurrence had been frequent. In September 1501 Dorset died, and that event finally decided Wolsey to quit Lymington. Paulet's proceeding had not affected Wolsey's character, for he now became one of the private chaplains of Henry Dean, archbishop of Canterbury. But any hopes he may have founded on this appointment were soon blighted by the death of Dean in February 1503. Dean's executors, of whom the chief was the favoured servant of Henry VIL, Sir Reginald Bray, deputed the carrying out of his

instructions respecting his funeral to Wolsey and another chaplain. Through Bray, probably, Wolsey next obtained a chaplaincy with another favourite agent of Henry's, Sir Richard Nanfan, deputy- lieutenant of Calais. Nanfan was an old man; and so excellent did Wolsey's business capacity prove that the knight soon entrusted to him the whole work of the deputyship. In 1505 Nanfan resigned and returned to England to pass his latter days in peace; but so thoroughly had his chaplain gained his esteem that, "through his instant labour and especial favour," Wolsey became chaplain to Henry VII. himself, and when in 1506 Sir Richard died Wolsey was one of his executors.

Henry was a cold master, and did not offer much oppor- tunity for making way in his favour, but Wolsey imme- diately set himself to win the approval of the leading privy councillors, Bishop Fox and Sir Thomas Lovell. As usual he succeeded. And he retained their friendship to the last,—his relations with Fox being perhaps the most beautiful episode in all Wolsey's life. Through their recommendation he began his political life by a mission, probably in 1507 and to the emperor Maximilian. According to Cavendish, who gives Wolsey himself as his authority, not only was the embassy performed in the extraordinarily short space of about eighty hours, but Wolsey took upon him to add to his instructions some items which he afterwards found the king had sent after him. The expedition and bold intelligence displayed established him in the king's good opinion. Other missions ensued, one of them to Scotland in the spring of 1508, all executed to the royal satisfaction. Under Henry high ecclesiastical promotion came by political service. On the 2d February 1509 Wolsey, who by this time held several minor preferments, was collated to the deanery of Lincoln. Within three months Henry died and his son came to the throne. Already had Wolsey ingratiated himself with the young Henry, and almost at once com- menced his unprecedentedly rapid rise to power. Lyming- ton having been resigned by July, he in October received a grant of The Parsonage, part of the forfeited property of Sir Richard Empson; and another month brought him the office and title by which he was chiefly known for the next four years, that of king's almoner. From that time forward

MeO SHY

his history becomes entwined with the annals of his country, where all that concerns the statesman must be sought.

On the 20th November 1511 his signature as a privy councillor first occurs. The council was composed of two parties,—the old officials, chiefly ecclesiastics and headed by Fox, who favoured peace, and the old nobility, led by Surrey, who advocated a spirited policy, even at the risk of war. Friendship and his cloth naturally attached Wolsey to the former, thereby giving rise to that family hatred of the Howards which pursued him to the end of his life. Fox had long been anxious to withdraw from political life, and he now gradually shifted his state duties on to the willing, able, and younger shoulders of Wolsey. Nor was Wolsey's opportunity of distinguishing himself long in coming. An expedition against Guienne in 1512 had effected nothing and returned in disgrace. This only roused Henry's pride and persistence, and he resolved to invade France from the north in the following year. The organization of the necessary force he committed to Wolsey. Churchman though he was, Wolsey succeeded to admiration. The royal army crossed the Channel, fought what French wit styled the Battle of Spurs, and took Thérouanne and Tournai, while at home Surrey won the bloody battle of Flodden. Success had crowned Wolsey's labours and covered his royal master with glory. Wolsey's favour with Henry was confirmed. Rewards came thick and fast. On the capture of Tournai, Henry named Wolsey to the bishopric of that see, which just then fell vacant ; but the English nomination was never ratified by the pope, who in the end issued bulls promoting the French nominee Guillard. Despite this miscarriage Wolsey was not long in being a bishop. In the succeeding January (1514) the see of Lincoln lost its episcopal head, and next month the new pope Leo X. confirmed Wolsey's appointment to it. The preferment proved but temporary; for in July Cardinal Bainbridge, archbishop of York, was poisoned at Rome, and on the 5th August Wolsey was raised to his place.

Two days later Wolsey brought to a triumphant ter- mination his first great effort in diplomacy, and made with Louis XII. of France a treaty which really undid the notorious league of Cambrai, defeated Ferdinand of Spain with his own weapons, and left England, for the moment, the first power in Europe. Wolsey thereby began a new era in English politics.

Since its origin with the Norman Conquest English foreign policy had been bounded by the horizon of France. It had been dynastic and insular. Wolsey made it European by taking the empire, Italy, and Spain into his calculations. He deliberately set himself to preserve the balance of power in Europe as a means of raising his country from a third to a first rate state. And that end he accomplished solely by diplomacy founded on the successes of 1513, which impressed on Continental statesmen a sense of England's power and thus gave to Wolsey's succeeding diplomacy a weight it would not otherwise have commanded and which it never afterwards lost. The character of the policy accounts for its fluctuations : as the scales turned, so was Wolsey com- pelled to vary his pressure.

The year 1515 brought him two new honours. For years Warham, archbishop of Canterbury, had desired to be released from the lord chancellorship, and Henry had repeatedly urged Wolsey to accept it. Wolsey naturally shrank from adding to his already arduous duties ; but both Warham and the king became so urgent that he at last yielded. By patent dated 21st December he assumed the post, and at once threw himself into its work with his accustomed vigour, dispensing justice and introducing reforms with fearless impartiality. The second dignity, the cardinalate, was obtained through the active interven- tion of Henry himself, and only by the most threatening

635

| arguments did the king overcome the fears and reluctance

of Leo. On the 10th September Wolsey was elected cardinal sole. The bearer of the red hat and ring arrived in London in November, and on Sunday the 18th Wolsey was installed amidst all the ceremonial magnificence which he valued not only for his own sake but for his king's. By similar strong measures was wrung from Leo the legateship, an office Wolsey sought in order to carry out ecclesiastical reforms. In 1518 Leo, ostensibly on account of a crusade, sent legates to the four chief courts of Europe. Campeggio, the legate to England, was allowed to reach Calais, where his further progress was stopped till the pope had joined Wolsey with him. Next year Wolsey was appointed sole legate for a year, and, finally, in 1524, following several extensions, he became legate for

life, after receiving unusual powers. In virtue of this commission he erected a court and instituted reformations by which he incurred much odium. In 1518 he received the see of Bath and Wells zm commendam, which in 1523 he resigned for Durham, replaced in turn by Fox's bishopric of Win- chester in 1529. At the conclusion of the Calais con- ference in 1521, Henry recompensed him with the rich abbacy of St Albans, held, like the episcopates, in com- mendam. From these and other sources he received immense revenues, which were almost entirely devoted to state purposes or national objects. He was prime minister of Henry, and in his income as in his master's there was no distinction between public and private money. Vast sums were used in founding his college at Ipswich and Cardinal College at Oxford, now known as Christ Church, which formed but part of a splendid scheme of national education, a scheme ultimately ruined by the greed of the king. Even what was expended on his own resplendent establishment redounded to the honour of his king and country. His was an age when power and pomp were more closely connected than they are now, and Wolsey's power was extraordinary. "He is in great repute," reported the unfriendly Venetian ambassador Giustinian ; "seven times more so than if he were pope." No wonder, then, that he cared but little to fill the papal chair. When, in 1522, and again in 1523, his candidature for the papacy came to nothing, he was not disappointed. And, if in 1529, on the illness of Clement VII., he showed himself seriously anxious on the subject, it was in all likelihood that he might compass Henry's will respecting divorce from Catherine, and prevent that rupture with the apostolic see which he foresaw would result from papal opposition.

Wolsey's favour with the king had been founded on success, and it fell by failure. In the region of politics one diplomatic victory had followed another. The balance had been firmly held between Francis I. and the emperor Charles V., an enterprise rendered memorable by the splendours of the Field of the Cloth of Gold (1520), planned and directed by Wolsey, and amidst which the Middle Ages passed away. Suddenly across his minister's diplomatics Henry dragged the question of the divorce, and everything had to be sacrificed to its accomplishment. Seeing too clearly how much, both personal and national, depended on attaining Henry's desire, Wolsey strove his very utter- most to further a design to which he

was himself opposed, stooping to the most discreditable and unworthy means. But the decision lay with Pope Clement, who was in the power of Charles V., Catherine's nephew, and all Wolsey's efforts were in vain. Vain, too, were all attempts to intimidate Catherine herself. A collusive suit was begun before Wolsey by which she was to be condemned unheard : she got word of it and thwarted the plan by demanding counsel. A commission was obtained from the pope for Campeggio and Wolsey to try the cause in England (1529); she appeared before the legatine court at Blackfriars only

to appeal to Rome, and thither under imperial pressure Clement revoked the case. It was plain Wolsey had failed, and all Henry's wrath burst out against his too faithful servant. He pointedly employed a secretary, and Wolsey's occupation was gone. Wolsey's foreign policy and domestic reforms had united against him every party and class in the nation, while at the same time he bore the blame of Henry's mistakes and extravagance. So long, however, as his royal master remained true to him he could defy all hostility. But now that the king, too, had turned against him his sole support had given way, and the hungry pack of enemies was unloosed. On the 20th September Henry parted from Wolsey without any sign of displeasure, but they parted for the last time. Anne Boleyn and her uncle Norfolk were Wolsey's bitter foes. By Anne's sway over Henry Wolsey was kept from the royal presence while Norfolk plotted his ruin. On the 17th October, at the king's command, Wolsey delivered up the great seal to Norfolk and the base ungrateful Suffolk. He was deprived of his dignities, his goods were confiscated, and, surrendering York Place, he retired to Esher. The Court of King's Bench found him guilty in a pramunire, and sentenced him to imprison- ment, while a bill precluding his restoration to power or dignities reached the Commons. The bill was dropped, but not till February 1530 did Henry grant him a full pardon and restore him to the archbishopric of York, on condition that he resigned Winchester and St Albans. Dreading his proximity to the king, his enemies procured his banishment into his diocese. Thither he went in April, and won the hearts of the people by his simplicity of life and graciousness of manner. His foes were alarmed ; his death alone could quiet their fears. He was

preparing to be installed archbishop on Monday, 7th November, when on the 4th he was arrested at Cawood Castle by the earl of Northumberland for high treason. On the way south, at Sheffield Park, Nottinghamshire, he was met by Sir William Kingston, keeper of the Tower, and at last Wolsey knew his doom. Long years of toil, anxiety, and the ceaseless vexations of his cruel enemies had shattered his health, and some pears sufficed to bring on dysentery, which was unskilfully treated, and aggravated by Kingston's appearance. Nevertheless he set out, and by three stages reached Leicester abbey on Saturday the 26th. '" Father abbot," he said, as the convent with its head came out to receive him, "I am come hither to leave my bones among you." He felt that he was dying. Kingston assisted him upstairs, and he at once went to bed. Vomiting and faintings came on, and he rapidly sank, yet his last moments were spent in speaking to Kingston of the objects of his life's best energies, his king and country. At eight o'clock on the morning of the 29th he died; and within twenty-four hours was buried in a rude coffin all that remained of the genius who made possible the glories of Elizabeth and the British empire of to-day. He left two children, born before he became a bishop, of " one Larke's daughter,'—a son who went by the name of Thomas Winter and was an ecclesiastic, and a daughter who passed as Dorothy Clansey and was a nun.

See Lives of Wolsey by Cavendish, Fiddes, and Grove, and J. S. Brewer's Reign of Henry VIII, 1509-30. There is no complete correct account of his life up to 1509, in connexion with which see Pinkerton's History of Scotland, ii, app. 445-50, along with J. Gardiner's Letters and Papers, &c., of Richard IIT. and Henry VIT., M. R. Series, pref. ; and Letters, &c., pref. and i., app. B, 426-52.

An excellent short view of Wolsey as a statesman will be found in Prof. M. Creighton's Thomas Wolsey. (i We C5)

WOLVERHAMPTON, a municipal and parliamentary borough and market-town of Staffordshire, England, one of the principal seats of the hardware manufacture in the Midlands, is situated on an eminence commanding an

extensive view towards Wales, on the Birmingham and Liverpool, the Staffordshire and Worcestershire, and the Wyrley and Essington Canals, and on the London and North-Western, the Midland, and the Great Western Rail- ways, 13 miles north-west of Birmingham, 16 south of Stafford, and 126 from London. The principal streets diverge from Queen Square, and are for the most part regular and well built, with numerous handsome shops. Towards the west there are pleasant suburbs of villas, the country being rich and well wooded. 'The old church of Wolverhampton, founded by Wulfruna in 996 and dedi- cated to the Virgin, was in the reign of Henry III. rededi- cated to St Peter. It has undergone frequent alterations, and in 1862-65 underwent extensive restoration. It is now a fine cruciform building, with south porch and central tower. Internally the church consists of a long and lofty nave with side aisles and north and south tran- septs, and terminating in a chancel with apsidal ending. The lower portion of the tower, south transept, &c., belong to the 13th century; the nave, clerestory, upper part of the tower, and north transept were erected in the 15th century; and the chancel is wholly modern, having been rebuilt in 1865. Wolverhampton was formerly a deanery, and on its abolition in 1846 the township was divided into ecclesiastical parishes, the number of which is now thirteen. At the old free grammar school, founded in 1515 by Sir Stephen Jenyns, a native of the town and an alderman of London, Sir W. Congreve and Dr Abernethy received their education. New buildings for the school were erected in 1876 in the western part of the town at a cost of £22,000. There is also a blue-coat school, founded in 1710. The other principal public buildings are the town-hall (1871), the corn exchange (1851, £15,000), the market-hall (1853, £10,500), the agricultural hall (1863, £6000), the public baths (1850), the post-office (1873), the art gallery, museum, and school of art (1884-85), and the free library. There is a cattle market about 5 acres in extent, and also a large pig market. The theatre royal (1844) is a handsome building in the Doric style. The benevolent institutions include a general hospital, the eye infirmary, the orphan asylum, and the institute of the society for outdoor blind. In Queen Square there is an equestrian statue of the late Prince Consort, unveiled by the queen in 1866, and on Snow Hilla statue in Sicilian marble (1879) of the Right Honourable Charles Pelham Villiers, who has represented the borough from 1835 to the present time (1888). Street improvements

have been carried out on a large scale within recent years. Main drainage works on a thorough method have also been completed, and a large farm purchased for the utilization of the sewage. The water-works, opened in 1847, belong to the corporation. The water is supplied from springs in the Red Sandstone by wells sunk to a great depth. The old racecourse, 50 acres in extent, has been laid out as a public park ; and a new racecourse was opened in 1887. The population of the municipal borough and urban sanitary district (area 3396 acres) in 1871 was 68,291, and in 1881 it was 75,766 (males 37,827, females 37,939); while that of the parliamentary borough (18,888 acres) was 156,978 in 1871, and 164,332 (males 82,657, females 81,675) in 1881.

Situated in a district abounding in coal and ironstone, Wolver- hampton has become famous for the manufacture both of the heavier and the smaller kinds of iron-wares, although in the finer class of metal manufactures for which the neighbouring town of Birmingham is famous it has little or no share. It possesses large smelting furnaces, and iron and brass foundries, but is specially occupied in the manufacture of all kinds of iron implements, tools, and domestic requisites, including locks and fastenings, hinges and nails, kitchen furniture, gardeners', wrights', and smiths' tools and implements, tinplate goods, and every variety of japanned ware, of which it may be regarded as the principal seat. There are also

extensive clay-retort works, chemical works, grease works, dye- works, varnish works, coach works, corn and saw mills, cooperages, ropewalks, maltings, and breweries.

The place was originally called Hanton or Hamtune, but on the foundation of a college for a dean and secular canons in 996 by Wulfruna, sister of Ethelred IJ. and widow of Anthelm, duke of Northumberland, it was named Wulfrunahamton. By William Rufus the echureh was placed under the eare of Sampson, bishop of Worcester, who settled it on a prior and convent of his own cathedral. In the reign of Stephen it was taken possession of by Roger, bishop of Salisbury, and subsequently it came into the hands of the secular canons, who held it

until Dean Peter of Blois resigned it to Hubert, archbishop of Canterbury, that he might build an abbey of Cistercian monks. The church was accounted one of the king's free chapels, and was annexed by Edward IV. to the deanery of Windsor. The college and prebends were granted to the duke of Northumberland in the reign of Edward VI., and on his attainder they came again to the crown. The deanery and prebends were refounded by Queen Mary, and this was confirmed by James I. The town received the grant of a market and fair from Henry III. in 1258. It suffered severely from fire in 1590, the conflagration lasting five days. During the Civil War its sympathies were Royalist, and it was visited by Charles I. » aceom- panied by his sons Charles and James. In 1645 it was for a time the headquarters of Prince Rupert. Its importance as a seat of manufactures is entirely of modern date and due to the rise of the iron industry. Although it reeeived the privilege of returning members to parliament in 1832, it was not ineorporated as a muni- cipal borough till 1848. It is divided into eight wards, and is governed by a mayor, 12 aldermen, and 36 councillors. It has separate commissions of the peace and quarter sessions. In 1885 the number of its parliamentary representatives was increased to three, the borough being separated into three parliamentary divi- sions—EHast, South, and West.

WOMBAT. The animals which have received this name belong to the Marsupial family Phascolomyide (see MamMatia, vol. xv. p. 383). They have the following dental formula: 74, ¢9, p31, m4=8; total 24. All the teeth are of continuous growth, having persistent pulps. The incisors are large and scalpriform, much as in Rodents. The body is broad and depressed, the neck short, the head large and flat, the eyes small. The tail is rudimentary, hidden in the fur. The limbs are equal, stout, and short. The feet have broad, naked, tuberculated soles; the fore-feet

Common Wombat (Phascolomys ursinus).

with five distinct toes, each furnished with a long, strong, and slightly curved nail, the first and fifth considerably shorter than the other three. The hind feet have a very short nailless hallux ; the second, third, and fourth toes partially united by integument, of nearly equal length ; the

fifth distinct and rather shorter; these four are pro- vided with long and curved nails.

There are two distinct forms of wombat :—

(1) Phascolomys proper. Fur rough and coarse. Ears short and rounded. Muffle naked. Post-orbital process of

the frontal bone obsolete. Ribs fifteen pairs. Vertebra : C7, D 15, L 4, 8 4, © 10-12. The wombat of Tasmania and the islands of Bass's Straits (P. wrsinus) and the closely similar but larger animal of the southern portion of the mainland of Australia (P. platyrhinus) belong to this form.

(2) Lasiorhinus. Fur smooth and silky. Ears large and more pointed. Muffle hairy. Frontal region of skull broader than in the other section, with well-marked post- orbital processes. Ribs thirteen. Vertebre: C7, D 13, L 6,8 4, C 15-16. One species, P. latifrons, the Hairy- Nosed Wombat of Southern Australia.

In their general form and actions the wombats resemble small bears, having a somewhat similar shuffling manner of walking, but they are still shorter in the legs, and have broader flatter backs than bears. They live entirely on the ground, or in burrows or holes among rocks, never climbing trees, and they feed-entirely on grass, roots, and other vegetable substances. They sleep during the day, and wander forth at night in search of food, and are shy and gentle in their habits generally, though they can bite strongly when provoked. The only noise the common wombat makes is a low kind of hissing, but the hairy- nosed wombat is said to emit a short quick grunt when annoyed. 'The prevailing colour of the last-named species, as well as P. ursinus of Tasmania, is a brownish grey. The large wombat of the mainland is very variable in colour, some individuals being found of a pale yellowish brown, others dark grey, and some quite black. The length of head and body is about three feet. Fossil remains of wombats, some of larger size than any now existing, have been found in caves and post-Pliocene deposits in Australia, but in no other part of the world. (w. H. F.)

WOMBWELL, a township of England, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, on the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire Railway, 44 miles south-east of Barnsley, 7 north-west of Rotherham, and 184 from London by rail. The church of St Mary is an ancient structure, enlarged and altered in 1835. The inhabitants are chiefly employed in the extensive collieries. The population of the urban sanitary district (area 3851 acres) in 1871 was 5009, and in 188i it was 8451.

WOMEN, Law RELATING To. The law as it relates to women has been gradual in its operation, but its tend- ency has been almost uniformly in one direction. Dis- abilities of women, married or unmarried, have been one after another removed, until at the present day, in most civilized countries, the legal position of women differs little from that of men as far as regards private rights. Politi- cally and professionally the sexes are still not upon an equality, but even in this aspect women have considerably greater rights than they once possessed, and the old theory of their intellectual and moral inferiority is virtually exploded. Those who defend their exclusion must now do so on other grounds. Much of the law relating to married women has been already dealt with under the heads of ADULTERY, Bicamy, Divorcr, Marriace, HusBanD AND Wire, and SETTLEMENT, the last two especially dealing with their rights of property.

The dependent position of women in early law is proved by the evidence of most ancient systems which have in whole or in part descended to us. In the Mosaic law divorce was a privilege of the husband only,! the vow of a woman might be disallowed by her father or husband,? and daughters could inherit only in the absence of sons, and then they must marry in their tribe The guilt or innocence of a wife accused of adultery might be tried by the ordeal of the bitter water. Besides these instances,*

1 Deut. xxiv. 1. 3 Numb, xxvii., xxxvi.

2 Numb. xxx. 8. “ Numb. v. 11.

much legislation dealing with, inter alia, offences against chastity, and marriage of a man with a captive heathen woman or with a purchased slave. So far from second marriages being restrained, as they were by Christian legislation, it was the duty of a childless widow to marry her deceased husband’s brother. In India subjection was a cardinal principle. “ Day and night must women be held by their protectors in a state of dependence,” says Manu.! The rule of inheritance was agnatic, that is, descent traced through males to the exclusion of females.2 The gradual

growth of stridhana, or property of a woman given by the husband before or after marriage, or by the wife's family, was probably what led to the suttee, for both the family of the widow and the Brahmans had an interest in getting the life estate of a woman out of the way. Women in Hindu law had only limited rights of inheritance, and were disqualified as witnesses. In Roman law a woman was even in historic times completely dependent. If married she and her property passed into the power of her husband; if unmarried she was (unless a vestal virgin) under the perpetual tutelage of her father during his life, and after his death of her agnates, that is, those of her kinsmen by blood or adoption who would have been under the power of the common ancestor had he lived. Failing agnates, the tutelage probably passed to the gens. The wife was the purchased property of her husband, and, like a slave, acquired only for his benefit. A woman could not exercise any civil or public office. In the words of Ulpian, "feminz ab omnibus officiis civilibus vel publicis remotze sunt.'4 A woman could not continue a family, for she was " caput et finis familie suz,"> could not be a witness, surety, tutor, or curator; she could not adopt or be adopted, or make a will or contract. She could not succeed ab tmtestato as an agnate, if further removed than a sister. A daughter might be disinherited by a general clause, a son only byname. On the other hand, a woman was privileged in some matters, but rather from a feeling of pity for her bodily weakness and presumed mental incapacity ® than for any more worthy reason. Thus she could plead ignorance of law as a ground for dissolving an obligation, which a man could not as a rule do; she could accuse only in cases of treason and witchcraft; and she was in certain cases exempt from torture. In succession ab intestato to im- movable property Roman law did not, as does English, recognize any privilege of males over females. Legal dis- abilities were gradually mitigated by the influence of fictions, the preetorian equity, and legislation. An example of the first was the mode by which a woman freed herself from the authority of her tutor by fictitious cession into the authority of a tutor nominated by herself, or by sale of herself into the power of a nominal husband on the understanding that he was at once to emancipate her to another person, who then manumitted her. The action of equity is illustrated by the recognition by the praetor of cognatic or natural as distinguished from agnatic or artificial relationship, and of a widow's claim to succeed on the death of her husband intestate and without relations. Legislation,*

beginning as early as the Twelve Tables, which forbade excessive mourning for the dead by female mourners, did not progress uniformly towards

1 Ch. ix. § 2 (Sir W. Jones's translation),

? Whether this was the oldest rule of inheritance has been much debated. See Famity. That birth of a child gave the mother certain legal rights in a primitive stage of society is the view of many writers. See especially Das Mutterrecht of J. J. Bachoffen (Stutt- gart, 1861). 3 Maine, Harly History of Institutions, lect. xi.

- *Dig;, i. 16, 195. > [bid.*

5 Imbecillitas is the term used more than once in the texts of Roman law,

WOMEN

which illustrate the subordination of women, there was | enfranchisement of women.

For instance, the Lex Voconia (about 169 B.c.), called by St Augustine the most unjust of all laws, provided that a woman could not be instituted heir to a man who was registered as owner of a fortune of 100,000 asses." A constitution of Valentinian I. forbade bequests by women to ecclesiastics. But the tendency of legislation was undoubtedly in the direction indicated. Adoption of women was allowed by Diocletian and Maximian in 291. The tutelage of women of full age was removed by Claudius, and, though afterwards in part revived, has disappeared by the time of Justinian. This implied full testamentary and contractual liberty. In regard to the separate property of the married woman, the period of dos had by the time of Justinian long super- seded the period of manus (see SETTLEMENT). 'The result was that, in spite of a few remaining disabilities, such as the general incapacity to be surety or witness to a will or contract, of a wife to make a gift to her husband, of a widow to marry within a year of her husband's death, the position of women had become, in the words of Sir H. Maine, "one of great personal and proprietary inde- pendence."® For this improvement in their position they were largely indebted to the*

legislation of the Christian emperors, especially of Justinian, who prided himself on being a protector of women. The following are a few of the matters in which Christianity appears to have made alterations, generally but perhaps not always improve- ments, in the law. As a rule the influence of the church was exercised in favour of the abolition of the disabilities imposed by the older law upon celibacy and childlessness, of increased facilities for entering a professed religious life,® and of due provision for the wife. The church also supported the political power of those who were her best friends. The government of Pulcheria or Irene would hardly have been endured in the days of the pagan empire. Other cases in which Christianity probably exercised influence may be briefly stated. (1) All differences in the law of succession ab intestato of males and females were abolished by Justinian. (2) The appointment of mothers and grandmothers as tutors was sanctioned by the same emperor. (3) He extended to all cases the principle established by the Senatus Consultum Tertullianum (158), enabling the mother of three (if a freed woman four) children to succeed to the property of her children who died intestate, and gave increased rights of succession to a widow. (4) The restrictions on the marriage of senators and other men of high rank with women of low rank were extended by Constantine, but almost entirely removed by Justinian. (5) Second marriages were discouraged (especially by making it legal to impose a condition that a widow's right to property should cease on re-marriage), and the Leonine Constitutions at the end of the 9th century made third marriages punishable. (6) The same constitutions made the benediction of a priest a necessary part of the ceremony of marriage.!° The criminal law in its relation to women presents some points of interest. Adultery was punished with death by Constantine, but the penalty was reduced by Justinian to relegation to a convent. A woman condemned for adultery could not re-marry. A marriage between a Christian and a Jew

7 The way in which this law was evaded was by non-enrolment of the testator in the census (see Montesquieu, Esprit des Lois, bk. xxvii.). Another way was by leaving her the inheritance by jidercommissum (see TRUST).

8 Ancient Law, ch.v. Hence the necessity of such laws as the Lex Oppia (see SuMpruaRY Laws).

® A remarkable example of this tendency was the provision that an actress might leave the stage and break her contract of service with impunity in order to become a nun (see THEATRE). Even under the pagan emperors a constitution of Diocletian and Maximian in 285 had enacted that no one was to be compelled to marry (Cod., v. 4, 14).

**° See Troplong, De U' Influence du Christianisme sur le Droit Civil,*

WOMEN

rendered the parties guilty of adultery. Severe laws were enacted against offences of unchastity, especially procure- ment and incest. It was a capital crime to carry off or offer violence toa nun. A wife could not commit furtum of her husband's goods, but he had a special action rerum amotarum against her. By several sumptuary consti- tutions, contained in the Code, bk. xi., women as well as men were subject to penalties for wearing dress or orna- ments (except rings) imitating those reserved for the emperor and his family. Actresses and women of bad fame were not to wear the dress of virgins dedicated to Heaven. If a consul had a wife or mother living with him, he was allowed to incur greater expense than if he lived alone. The interests of working women were pro- tected by enactments for the regulation of the gynecia, or workshops for spinning, dyeing, &e.

The canon law, looking with disfavour on the female independence prevailing in the later Roman law, tended rather in the opposite direction. The Decretum specially inculeated subjection of the wife to the husband, and obedience to his will in all things! The chief differences between canon and Roman law were in the law of marriage, especially in the introduction of publicity and of the formalities of the ring and the kiss. The benediction of a priest was made a necessary part of the ceremony, as indeed it had been made by the civil power, as has been already stated, in the post-Justinian period of Roman law. But in practice this rule appears to have fallen into disuse until it was again revived by the council of Trent. It was, however, the rule of the English common law after the Reformation. The ceremony was not to be performed during Lent. The woman was to be veiled during the ceremony. A promise of marriage was so sacred that it made a subsequent marriage with another person void.

Spiritual cognation was a bar to marriage. The sentence of the church was made necessary for divorce. As to women in general the law does not say very much. Women, even relatives, were not to live with priests unless in case of necessity. They were not to approach the altar or fill any public office of the church ; nor might they lend money on usury. Baptism might be valid although administered by a woman. Women who had professed religion could not be forced to give evidence as witnesses. In some cases the evidence of women was not receivable (see Wirnzss).?

The early law of the northern parts of Europe is interesting from the different ways in which it treated women. In the words of Sir H. Maine? —" The position of women in these barbarous systems of inheritance varies very greatly. Sometimes they inherit, either as individuals or as classes, only when males of the same generation have failed. Sometimes they do not inherit, but transmit a right of inheritance to their male issue. Sometimes they succeed to one kind of property, for the most part movable property, which they probably took a great share in producing by their household labour ; for example, in the real Salic law (not in the imaginary code) there is a set of rules of succession which, in my opinion, clearly admit women and their descendants to a share in the inheritance of movable property, but confine land exclusively to males and the descendants of males… . The idea is that the proper mode of providing for a woman is by giving her a marriage portion ; but, when she is once married into a separate community consisting of strangers in blood, neither she nor her children are deemed to have any further claim on the parent group." Among the Scandinavian races

1 Pt. ii. caus. xxxiii. qu. v. ch. 16.

? On this branch of the subject Manssen's Het Christendom en de Vrouw (Leyden, 1877) may be consulted with advantage.

3 Early Law and Custom, ch. v.

women were under perpetual tutelage, whether married or unmarried. The first to obtain freedom were the widows. As late as the code of*

Christian V., atthe end of the 17th century, it was enacted that if a woman married without the consent of her tutor he might have, if he wished, administration and usufruct of her goods during her life.5 The provision made by the Scandinavian laws under the name of morning-gift was perhaps the parent of the modern settled property.6 The Brehon law of Ireland excepted women from the ordinary course of the law. They could distrain or contract only in certain named cases, and distress upon their property was regulated by special rules. In the pre-Conquest codes in England severe laws were denounced against unchastity, and by a law of Canute a woman was to lose nose and ears for adultery. The laws of Athelstan contained the peculiarly brutal pro- vision for the punishment of a female slave convicted of theft by her being burned alive by eighty other female slaves. Other laws were directed against the practice of Wiroucrart (9.v.) by women. Monogamy was enforced both by the civil and ecclesiastical law; and second and third niarriages involved penance. A glimpse of cruelty in the household «is afforded by the provision, occurring no less than three times in the ecclesiastical legislation, that if a woman scourged her female slave to death she must do penance. 'Traces of wife-purchase are seen in the law of Ethelbert, enacting that if a man carry off a freeman's wife he must at his own expense procure the husband another wife. The codes contain few provisions as to the property of married women, but those few appear to prove that she was in a better position than at a later period. The laws of Ine gave her a third of her husband's property ; the laws of Edmund as to betrothal allowed this to be increased to half by antenuptial contract, to the whole if she had children and did not re-marry after her husband's death. No doubt the dower ad ostium ecclesiz favoured by the church generally superseded the legal rights where the property was large—in fact this is specially provided by Magna Charta, c. 7—just as at present rights under a marriage settlement take the place of those given by statute. " Provisio hominis tollit provisionem legis." The legal rights of a married woman apart from contract were gradually limited, until by the time of Glanvill her person and property had become during her husband's lifetime entirely at his disposal, and after his death limited to her dower and her pars rationabilis (see WiLL).

A few of the more interesting matters in which the old common and statute law of England placed women in a special position may be noticed. A woman was exempt from legal duties more particularly attaching to men and not performable by deputy. She could apparently origin- ally not hold a proper feud, i.e, one of which the tenure was by military service.' The same principle appears in the rule that she could not be endowed of a castle main- tained for the defence of the realm and not for the private use of the owner. She could receive homage, but not render it in the form used by men, and she was privileged from suit and service at the sheriff's tourn. She was not sworn to the law by the oath of allegiance in the leet or

4 See Stiernhodk, De Jure Sveonwm (Stockholm, 1672), bk. ii. ch. i.; Messenius, Leges Svecorum (Stockholm, 1714).

® Bk. iii. ch. xvi. §§ 1, 2.

° The development of the bride-price no doubt was in the same direction. Its original meaning was, however, different. It was the sum paid by the husband to the wife's family for the purchase of part of the family property, while the morning-gift was paid as pretium virginitatis to the bride herself. In its English form morning-gift occurs in the laws of Canute; in its Latinized form of morgangiva it occurs in the Leges Henrict Primi.

7 It is remarkable that the great fiefs of France except the Isle of France, the special apanage of the crown, all became in time female fiefs. This is shown by the table at the end of Laboulaye's Recherches.

tourn, and so could not be outlawed (see OuTLAW), but was said to be waived. She could be constable, either of a castle or a vill, but not sheriff, unless in the one case of Westmorland, an hereditary office, exercised in person in the 17th century by the famous Anne, countess of Dorset, Pembroke, and Montgomery. In certain cases a woman could transmit rights which she could not enjoy. On such a power of transmission, as Sir H. Maine shows,! rested the claim of Edward III. to the crown of France. The claim through a woman was nota breach of the French constitutional

law, which rejected the claim of a woman. The jealousy of a woman's political influence is strikingly shown by the case of Alice Perrers, the mistress of Edward UL She was accused of breaking an ordinance by which women had been forbidden to do business for hire and by way of maintenance in the king's court.?

By Magna Charta a woman could not appeal any one for murder except that of her husband. This disability no doubt arose from the fact that in trial by battle she naturally did not appear in person but by a champion. She was not admitted as a witness to prove the status of a man on the question arising whether he were free or a villein. She could not appoint a testamentary guardian, and could only be a guardian even of her own children to a limited extent. Her will was revoked by marriage, that of a man only by marriage and the subsequent birth of a child (see Winn). By 31 Hen. VI. ¢. 9 the king's writ out of chancery was granted to a woman alleging that she had become bound by an obligation through force or fraud. By 39 Hen. VI. c. 2 a woman might have livery of land as heiress at fourteen. Benefit of clergy was first allowed to women partially by 21 Jac. I. c. 6, fully by 3 Will. and M. c. 9 and 4 and 5 Will. and M. c. 24. Public whipping was not abolished until 57 Geo. III. c. 75, whipping in all cases until 1 Geo. IV. c. 57. Burning was the punish- ment specially appropriated to women convicted of treason or witchcraft. A case of sentence to execution by burning for petit treason occurred as lately as 1784. In some old statutes very curious sumptuary regulations as to women's dress occur. By the sumptuary laws of Edward III. in 1363 (37 Edw. IIL cc. 8-14) women were in general to be dressed according to the position of their fathers or husbands. Wives and daughters of servants were not to wear veils above twelve pence in value. Handicraftsmen's and yeomen's wives were not to wear silk veils. The use

traceable in the early law of procedure. For instance, by the Statute of Essoins (12 Edw. II. st. 2), essoin de sernitio regis did not lie where the party was a woman ; that is, a woman (with a few exceptions) could not excuse her absence from court by alleging that she was on public duty. The influence of the church is very clearly traceable in some of the earlier

criminal legislation. Thus by 13 Edw. I. st. 1, c. 34, it was punishable with three years' imprisonment to carry away a nun, even with her consent. The Six Articles, 31 Hen. VIII. c. 14, for- bade marriage and concubinage of priests and sanctioned vows of chastity by women.

The present position of women in English law may be treated, English Sex alone, as law.

for purposes of convenience, under several heads. will appear, does not determine the law: scx and marriage together must often be taken into consideration.

Political Rights.—This branch of the law is full of singular Politieal A woman may fill some of the highest positions in the rights.

anomalies. state. She may be a queen, a regent, ora peeress in her own right.3 A queen regnant has, by 1 Mary, sess. 3, c. 1, as full rights as a king. A peeress is entitled, by 20 Hen. VI. c. 9, to be tried like a peer by the House of Lords or the court of the lord high steward (see TRIAL), and has a seat in the House of Lords, but no right of speaking or voting. Other public offices which a woman can fill are those of overseer, guardian of the poor, churchwarden, and sexton. She may also, if married, be one of a jury of matrons empanelled to determine the question of pregnancy of a widow on a writ de ventre inspiciendo or of a female prisoner, but she cannot serve on an ordinary jury. If unmarried or a widow she can vote in municipal, school board, local government, poor law, and other elections of a local character (such as polls of ratepayers under the Free Libraries and Borough Funds Acts), and can be a member (whether married or not) of a school board, but apparently not an overseer or guardian if married and living with her husband. She cannot be registered as a voter or vote at a parliamentary election or be elected a member of parliament. It was decided in 1868 that the words of Lord Brougham's Act (13 and 14 Vict. c. 21, § 4), by which in all Acts words importing the masculine gendcr are to be taken to include females unless the contrary is expressly provided, did not bring a woman within the word '""man" in the Representation of the People Act, 1867.4. The same would no doubt be held, if the point were raised, under the Representation of the People Act, 1884. The question of granting the parlia- mentary franchise to women

was first brought before the House of Commons by John Stuart Mill in 1867, as an amendment to the Representation of the People Bill of that year, and has uniformly been rejected on that and several subsequent occasions. At present the Isle of Man is the only part of the United Kingdom where such a right exists. It was there conceded in 1882 to unmarried women with sufficient property qualification. For the precedence of women, see PRECEDENCE. 'The national status of married women and widows is provided for by the Naturalization Act, 1870.

Professions and Trades.—The only one of the learned professions Profes- open to women is the medical. Such rights as may be possessed by sians the Society of Apothecaries and the College of Surgeons to admit and women to their respective qualifications are specially saved by 87 trades,

of fur was confined to the ladies of knights with a rental above 200 marks a year. Careful observance of difference of rank in the dress was also inculcated by 3 Edw. IV. c. 5.

The wife or daughter of a knight was not to wear cloth of gold or sable fur, of a knight-bachelor not velvet, of an esquire or gentleman not velvet, satin, or ermine, of a labourer not clothes beyond a certain price or a girdle garnished with silver. By 22 Edw. IV. c. 1, cloth of gold and purple silk were confined to women of the royal family. It is worthy of notice that at the times of passing these sumptuary laws the trade interests of women were pro- tected by the legislature. By 37 Edw. III. c. 6, handi- craftsmen were to use only one mystery, but women might work as they had been accustomed. 3 Edw. IV. c. 3 forbade importation of silk and lace by Lombards and other alien strangers, imagining to destroy the craft of the silk spinsters and all such virtuous occupations for women. In some cases the wives and daughters of tradesmen were allowed to assist in the trades of their husbands and fathers; see, for instance, the Act con- cerning tanners, 1 Jac. Lc. 22. Some trading cor- porations, such as the East India Company, recognized no distinction of sex in their members. The disabilities imposed on women by substantive law are sometimes

1 Karly Law and Custom, ch. v. 2 Rot. Parl., vol. iii. p. 12.

and 38 Vict. c. 34 and 38 and 39 Vict. c. 48. By an Act of 1876 (39 and 40 Vict. c. 41) medical qualifications may be granted, irrespective of sex, by any body empowered to grant such qualifica- tions. As a matter of fact the College of Surgeons does not at present allow women to qualify, but the Society of Apothecaries and the College of Surgeons of Ireland and the King's and Queen's College of Physicians in Ireland follow the more liberal course. Admission to degrees, medical and others, in the universities is only allowed to a limited extent. Oxford and Cambridge admit women to examinations, but not to degrees. London, under its supple- mental charter of 1878, admits to all degrees. The University Education (Ireland) Act, 1879, contains a section empowering the Royal University of Ireland to examine women for degrees and certificates of proficiency. The Endowed Schools Act, 1869, pro- vides for extending to girls the benefits of educational endowments. A similar provision is included in the City of Loudon Parochial Charities Act, 1883. Under the powers of these Acts, as well as by private munificence, a considerable sum of money has been during the last few years provided for the purposes of female education. Special regulations are made by the Factories and Mines Acts as to the employment of women and girls in factories and mines. Under no circumstances is a woman allowed to work underground. The Shop Hours Regulation Act, 1886 (a temporary provision), forbids the employment in shops of girls under eighteen for more than ee = es ee eee

3 Most peeresses are those who have suceeeded to ancient peerages by writ. Modern peerages are almost always limited to heirs-male.

4 Chorlton v. Lings, Law Rep., 4 Common Pleas, 374.

Family rights.

Rights of pro- perty.

WOMEN

seventy-four hours in a week. Women have recently been em- ployed to a greater extent than formerly in Government depart- ments, especially in the post-office. A married woman may, since the Married Women's

Property Act, 1882, carry on a trade separ- ately from her husband, and in such a case is liable to be made a bankrupt. She may apparently be a partner of her husband, and may lend him money, but in this case her claim to a dividend on his bankruptcy is postponed to that of other creditors.

Family Rights.—The age at which a girl can contract a valid marriage is, following Roman law, twelve; she is thus two years in advance of a boy, who must be fourteen. Under the Infants Settlement Act (see SerrLEMENT) a valid settlement can be made by a wonian at seventeen with the approval of the conrt, the age for a man being tweuty. support of illegitimate children till they attain the age of sixteen. She is generally assisted, in the absence of agreement, by an affilia- tion order granted by magistrates. A married woman having separate property is, under the Married Women's Property Act, liable for the support of her husband, children, and grandchildren beeoming chargeable to any union or parish. At common law the father was entitled as against the mother to the custody of a legitimate child up to the age of sixteen, and could only forfeit such right by misconduet. But the Court of Chancery, wherever there was trust property and the infant could be made a ward of court, took a less rigid view of the paternal rights and looked more to the interest of the child, and consequently in some cases to the extension of the mother's rights at common law. Legislation has tended in the same direction. By 36 Vict. e. 12 the Court of Chancery was empowered to enforce a provision in a separation deed, giving up the custody or control of a child to the mother. The Judicature Act, 1873, § 25 (10), enacted that in questions relating to the custody and education of infants the rules of equity should prevail. The Guardianship of Infants Act, 1886, largely extended the mother's powers of appointing and acting as a guardian, and gave the court a discretion to regard the mother's wishes as to the custody of the children. he children of women convicted of crime or frequenting the company of prostitutes may be sent to an industrial school. The principal disabilities under which women are now placed may perhaps be classed under the head of family rights, viz., exclusion of female heirs from intestate succession to real estate, unless in absence of a male heir (see INHERITANCE, Primo- GENITURE), and the obtaining of Divorcr (g.v.) by a husband for the adultery of his wife, while

the wife can only obtain it for adul- tery coupled with some further cause, such as cruelty or desertion.

fights of Property.—Unmarried women and widows have praeti- cally equal rights with men. Since the date of the article HusBanp AND WiFE the Married Women's Property Act, 1882, has extended the change in the law attempted to a limited degree by the previous Acts of 1870 and 1874. The most important provisions of the Act (45 and 46 Vict. c. 75) falling under this head are the following. A married woman is capable of acquiring, holding, and disposing by will or otherwise of any real and personal property as her separate property, in the same imanner as if she were a feme sole, without the intervention of any trustee. Every contract entcred into by a married woman is to be deemed to bind her separate property, unless the contrary be shown. Property of a woman niarried after the commencement of the Act, whether belonging to her at the time of marriage or acquired after marriage, is to be held by her as a feme sole. The same is the case with property acquired after the commencement of the Act by a woman married before the Act. After marriage a woman remains liable for antenuptial debts and liabilities, and as between her and her husband, in the absence of contract to the contrary, her separate property is to be deemed primarily liable. The husband is only liable to the extent of property acquired fromi or through his wife. The Act also contains provisions as to stock, investment, insurance, evidence (see Wit- NESS), and other matters. The effect of the Act is to render obsolete the old law as to what creates a separate use or a reduction into possession of choses in action (see PERSONAL Estate), as to equity to a settlement, as to fraud on the husband's marital rights, ! and as to the inability of one of two married persons to give a gift to the other. Also, in the case of a gift to a husband and wife in terms which would make them joint-tenants if unmarried, they no longer take as one person but as two. The construction of the Act by the courts has been in one or two cases perhaps somewhat narrow; still there is no doubt that it has affected the proprietary rights of married women to an immense extent. Its effect has been principally to improve the position of wives of the humbler elass unprotected by marriage settlement. 'There is a special saving in

1 This was a rule of law, confirmed, though not for the first time established, by the well-known decision of Lord Thurlow in Countess of Strathmore v. Bowes, in 1789, to the effect that a sccret conveyance by a woman during her engage- ment to her future husband might be set aside by him after marriage A legal relation was in this case created by engagement or betrothal. The only other instance in English law in which betrothal gives any rights appears to be the action for breach of promise of marriage. In the Mosaie law betrothal was, for the purposes of punishment of adultery, equivalent to marriage (see Deut. xxii. 23). In some modern systems betrothal is a matter of more importance than it isin England. In Germany, for instance, it is publicly advertised.

An unmarried woman is liable for the-

é

641

the Act of existing and future settlement. A settlement is still necessary where it is desired to secure only the enjoyment of the income to the wife and to provide for children. The Act by itself would enable the wife, without regard to family claims, instantly to part with the whole of any property which might come to her. Restraint on anticipation, a means of protecting a married woman's property from her husband's influence, is also preserved by the Act, subject to the liability of such property for antenuptial debts, and to the power given to the court by the Conveyancing Act, 1881, to bind a married woman's interest notwithstanding a clause of restraint. This possibility of being restrained from anticipation is now one of the principal points of difference between the proprietary rights of nen and women. Formerly remaining unmarried could be attached as a condition of the enjoyment of property by a widow only, but it has been recently decided that such a condition may be imposed upon a widower as well. In one case, however,the widow has still an advantage over the widower. Limitations contained in her marriage settlement in favour of her children by a former marriage are not treated as voluntary, while similar limitations in the settle- ment of a widower are regarded as voluntary, and therefore void as against a subsequent

mortgagee of the settled property.2. By Magna Charta, c. 7, a widow is to have her QUARANTINE (q.v.), and is not to be forced to re-marry.

Procedure.—An action for breach of promise of marriage and an Proce- affiliation summons under the Bastardy Acts are, the former prac- dure. tically, the latter entirely, confined 'to women. An action of SEDUCTION (q.v.), though not brought in England by the woman herself, is for injury suffered by her. The Rules of the Supreme Court and the Married Women's Property Act contain various pro- visions for the bringing and defending of actions by married women. The main provision is § 1 (2) of the Act, enabling a inarried woman to sue and be sued, either in contract or in tort or otherwise, in all respects as if she were a feme sole. Her position, however, is not, owing to the judicial interpretation of the Act, as completely independent as the words of the Act would at first sight appear toimply. It has been held, for instance, that she cannot smece the Act, any more than before it, be next friend or guardian ad litem of au infant. The husband and wife too may still be sued jointly for a tort committed by the wife after marriage. Apart from proceedings for divorce or judicial separation, a husband cannot sue his wife for a tort committed during the coverture, nor a wife her husband, unless for the protection and security of her separate property. She can, however, eanse him to be bound over in reeognizances to keep the peace towards her in case of violence on his part. The Married Women's Property Act contains a useful section enabling questions between husband and wife as to property to be decided in a summary way. A judgment against a married woman under the Act is limited to execution against her separate property; she cannot like an ordinary debtor be committed to prison under the Debtors Act for default in payment.*

Criminal Law.—There ave some offences which can be eommitted Criminal only by women, others which can be committed only against them. law. Annong the former are concealment of birth (in ninety-nine cases out of a hundred), the now obsolete offence of being a common scold, and prostitution and kindred offences. Many offences of the latter kind were up to a recent date dealt with under the Contagious Diseases Acts, which were repealed in 1886. Where a married woman eominits a crime in company with her husband, she is generally presumed to have

acted by his coercion, and so to be entitled to acquittal. This presumption, however, was never made in witcheraft cases, and is not now made in cases of treason, murder, and other grave crimes, or in crimes in which the principal part must necessarily be taken by the wife, such as keeping a brothel. In fact, the exceptions to the old presumption are now perhaps more numerous than those falling within it. The doctrine of coercion and the practice of separate acknowledgment of deeds by married women (necessary before the Married Women's Property Act) seem to be vestiges of the period when women, besides being chattels, were treated as chattels.+ Formerly a wife could not steal her husband's property, but since the Married Women's Property Act this has become possible. he evidence of a wife is not usually receivable for or against her husband (see Witness). She does not become an accessory after the fact by receiving and harbouring her husband after he has committed a felony; the husband, however, is not equally privileged if the offence be committed by the wife. Adultery is now no crime, England being almost the only countiy where such is the case. It was punished by fine in the ecclesiastical courts up to the 17th century, and was made criminal for a short

2 See Re Cameron and Wells, Law Rep., 37 Chancery Div., 32.

3 A brief sketch of the law relating to this braneli of the subject has been added by way of appendix to this article.

4 It was certainly laid down by the Court of Chancery, in more than one case, that the reason for enforcing acknowledgment of deeds by a married woman apart from her hnsband was the presumption that in matters of property she was sure to be coerced by him. If such were the truth, the separate acknowledgment —a matter of a few minntes' eonversation— was but a poor safeguard. The doctrine of cocrcion in felonies is attributed by Mr Justice Stephen to the wish to give women, while they had not benefit of clergy, the same chance of escape as nen (see his Digest of the Criminal Law, App., note J).

XXIV. — 81

Scottish law.

time by an ordinance of the Long Parliament. The offences which ean be committed only against women are chiefly those against decency, such as rape, procuremeut, and similar erimes, in which a considerable change in the law in the direction of increased pro- tection to women was made by the Criminal Law Amendment Act, 1885. Another offence is abduction, which needs to be separately mentioned, as it appears in law to be an offence partly against the person, partly against property, for a difference is made between the abduction of a woman with property and of one without pro- perty. As to offences committed against a wife, reeent legislation has made some considerable changes. By the Matrimonial Causes Act, 1878, if a husband be convicted of an aggravated assault upon lis wife, the court before which he is tried may order (subjeet to an appeal to the Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division of the High Court) that the wife be no longer bound to cohabit with him, such order to have the effeet of a judicial separation on the ground of cruelty. The order may also provide for payment of a weekly allowance by the husband to the wife and for the custody of the children of the marriage. That of the ehildren under ten may be given to the wife. The Married Women's Property Act gives a married woman criminal remedies against all persons (including her husband) for the protection of her separate property, with a proviso that no such eriminal proceeding shall be taken against a husband while they are living together, nor while they are living apart, con- cerning any act done while they were living together, unless the wife's property have been wrongfully taken by the husband on deser- tion of his wife. The section just cited extends the common law, under which the wife's redress for injuries committed by her husband was confined to injuries to the person. But it extends it only to injuries to the separate property, and it has recently been held that a wife cannot, under the terms of the section, proceed against her hus- band criminally fora libel.!| The Married Women (Maintenance in Case of Desertion) Act, 1886, enables a wife to summon her husband before a court of summary jurisdiction for desertion, and the court may make an order for her support. Before the Aet the wife's only course was to become chargeable to the parish, allowing the guardians to seek to reeover from the husband the cost of her maintenanee. The punishment of a woman may still be different from

that of a man in TREASON (qg.v.). Where whipping is allowed after convic- tion for robbery, or of juvenile offenders for larceny, it cannot be inflicted on females. Chastisement of a wife by a husband, pos- sibly at one time lawful to a reasonable extent, would now certainly constitute an assault. The husband's rights are limited to restrain- ing the wife's liberty in case of her misconduct.

Scotland.—As early as Regiam Majestatem (12th century) women were the object of special legal regulation. In that work the mercheta mulieris (probably a tax paid to the lord on the marriage of his tenant's daughter) was fixed at a sum differing according to the rank of the woman. Numerous ancient laws dealt with trade and sumptuary matters. By the Leges Quatuor Burgorum female brewsters making bad ale were to forfeit eightpence and be put on the cucking-stool, and were to set au ale-wand outside their houses under a penalty of fourpence. The same laws also provided that a married woman committing a trespass without her husband's knowledge might be chastised like a child under age. The Statuta Gilde of the 13th century enacted that a married woman might not buy wool in the streets or buy more than a limited amount of oats. The same code also ensured a provision for the daughter of one of the guild-brethren unable to provide for herself through poverty, either by marrying her or putting her in a eonvent. By the Act 1429, e. 9, wives were to be arrayed after the estate of their husbands. By 1457, c. 18, no woman was to go to church with her face covered so that she could not be known. 1581, c. 18, was con- ceived in a more liberal spirit, and allowed women to wear any head-dress to which they had been accustomed. 1621, c. 25, permitted servants to wear their mistress's cast-off clothes. 1681, c. 80, contained the remarkable provision that not more than two changes of raiment were to be made by a bride at her wedding. In its more modern aspect the law is in most respects similar to that of England. A woman may be queen or a peeress of Scotland. In the old law she could not do homage, but only fealty, and she could not be arbiter, eautioner, or witness. A married woman could be warrantor of heritables only where her husband was under age and she was of full age. All disabilities of women as witnesses were removed by 31 and 32 Vict. c. 101, § 139. A woman is still not receivable as cautioner for an executor-dative. Nor ean she be tutor-at-law, but she may be appointed tutor by testament or by the

court. While tests existed women were exempt from the test oath (see Tesr Acrs). The Court of Session decided in 1868 that the parliamentary suffrage was confined to

1 Reg. v. Lord Mayor of London, Law Rep., 16 Qucen's Bench Diy., 772.

2 The rule of succession to Scottish peerages is different from that regulating the succession to English peerages by writ. In ease of the death of a peer leay- ing severa] daughters and no son, the English peerage would fall into abeyance among the daugliters, but the eldest daughter would succeed to the Scottish peerage. In the peerage law of Scotland there was no presumption that a peerage was limited to males, and the more ancient peerages were often held by females or their husbands in their right.

WOMEN

males. But, as in England, women possess votes in elections to school boards and to municipal and local bodies, the latter specially conferred by the Municipal Elections Amendment Act, 1881, and the General Police and Inryrovement Act, 1882. The right of married women to vote at school-board elections under the Education Act, 1872, appears to have eaused some diffieulty, and to have been differently deeided in different counties. Women are not admitted to degrees by the Scottish universities, though several attempts have been made to confer upon them this privilege. At one time, in- deed, they seem to have practised medicine without qualification, for in 1641, in a ratification of the privileges of the Edinburgh ehirurgeons, a complaint was recited that women practised chirurgy without having learned the art. In 1873 the Court of Session de- cided that female students could not graduate in medicine at Edin- burgh. A bill to enable the universities to grant degrees to women was rejected in 1875. St Andrews grants them not the ordinary degrec but a special title of L.L.A.5 The powers given by the Act of 1876 (39 and 40 Vict. c. 41) have recently been exercised in favour of women by the Colleges of Physicians and of Surgeons of Edinburgh and the Faeulty of Physicians and Surgeons of Glasgow. By the Educational Endowments Act, 1882, the benefits of endow- ments are to be extended as far as possible to both sexes. In 1881 the Married Women's Property Act (44 and*

45 Vict. c. 21) made important extensions of the rights given to married women by the Act of 1877, for whieh see HusBAND AND Wirs. A wife married after the date of the Act has a separate estate in movable and heritable property. A husband has the same rights in the movable estate of his deeeased wife as a widow had before the Aet in the estate of her deceased husband. Children have a right of legitim in their mother's movable estate. The criminal law differs slightly from that of England. At one time drowning was a punishment specially reserved for women. Incest or an attempt to commit incest is still punishable asa crime, and has been so punished within the last few years. Adultery and fornieation are still nominally crimes under old Acts, but criminal proceedings in these cases have fallen into desuetude. The age of testamentary capacity is still twelve, not twenty-one, as in England.

United States.—The Acts of Congress contain little affecting the Law in subject. Any woman married to a citizen of the United States United who might herself be lawfully naturalized is to be deemed a citizen. States,

Women are allowed as clerks in Government departments, and may be employed as nurses and hospital matrons in the army. The right of voting for Congress or for the State legislatures is still denied in the country as a whole, in spite of the strong attempts which have been made by the advoeates of female suffrage. The right, however, exists to a limited extent. In the Territories of Washington, Wyoming, and Utah women vote, and in the consti- tutions of some States, such as Colorado and Wisconsin, it is pro- vided that the right of suffrage may be extended to women by a majority of electors at a general election. The constitutions of most States confine the parliamentary franchise to male electors. The admission of women to the school franchise is, however, largely increasing, and had in 1887 been adopted by fourteen States. Ina limited number of States the professions (except the military) are open to women. Where the legal profession is not so open, a refusal by a State court to grant a licence to practise law is no breach of the Federal constitution (see PRIVILEGE). In most States the policy adopted in England by the Married Women's Property Act is the rule, and there is in general no distinction of sex in succession to real estate. For the testamentary rights of married women see WILL. In some of the State universities women are

admitted to full privileges of instruction and graduation. In others, sueh as the university of Pennsylvania, they are admitted to instruction and examination, but not to graduation. The law in some cases gives women remedies for tort which are unknown in England. For instance, by the law of some States a woman may bring an action of SEDUCTION (q.v.) in her own name, and may re- eover damages for slander imputing unchastity, without proof of special damage, which cannot be done in England. The criminal law is also more extensive. In the New England and some of the other States mere fornication is punishable as a erime. Adultery is criminal by the law of most States.

Literature.—Besides those already cited, the following authorities may be consulted. Forthe general law Montesquieu, Esprit des Lots, bk. vii.; Laboulaye, Recherches sur la Condition Civile et Politique des Femmes, 1843; Thos. Wright, Womankind in Western Europe, 1869; Sheldon Amos, Differenceof Sex asa Topic of Jurisprudence and Legislation, 1870; Paul Gide, Etude sur la Condition Privée de la Femme, 1885, Ernest Naville, " La Condition Sociale des Femmes," in the Biblio- théque Universelle et Revue Suisse, for Oet., Nov., and Dee., 1887. For old English law, The Law's Resolutions of Women's Rights, 1632; The Lady's Law, 1737 ; The Laus Respecting Women, 1777 (these three works are anonymous); C. S. Kenny, Hist. of the Law of England as to the Effects of Marriage on Property and on the Wife's Legal Capacity, 1879. For modern English law, T, Barrett- Lennard, The Position in Law of Women, 1883 ; R. Thicknesse, Digest of the Law of Husband and Wife, 1884; Wolstenholme and Turner, Conveyancing Acts (4th ed,), 1885; W. P. Eversley, Law of the Domestic Relations, 1885; Félix Remo, L' Egalité des Sexes en Angleterre, 1886.

3 Brown v. Ingrain, 7 Court of Sess. Cases, 3d ser., 281. 4 Jex-Blake v. Edinburgh Univ., 11 Court of Sess. Cases, 3d ser., 784. 5 Lady Literate in Arts.

Breach of pro- mise.

Wwoo—Wwoo

Breach of Promise of Marriage.—The action for breach of promise of marriage is in some of its incidents peculiar to English law. In Roman law, betrothal (sponsalia) imposed a duty on the be- trothed to become husband and wife within a reasonable time, subject to the termination of the obligation by death, repudiation by the words conditione tua non utor, or lapse of time, the time fixed being two years. No action lay for breach of promise to marry unless arrhe sponsaliti# had been given, i.¢., earnest of the bargain, to be forfeited by the party refusing to carry it out. The arrha might also be given by a parent, and was equally liable to forfeiture.

A provincial governor, or one of his relations or household, could |

not recover any arrha that might have been given, it being sup- posed that he was in a positiqn of authority and able to exercise influence in forcing consent toa betrothal.

In the canon law breach of the promise made by the sponsalia, whether de presenti or de futuro, a division unknown to Roman law, does not without more appear to have sufficed to found an action for its breach, except so far as it fell under ecclesiastical cognizance as lxsio fidei, but it had the more serious legal effect of avoiding as a canonical disability the subsequent marriage, while the original sponsalia continued, of a betrothed person to any other than the one to whom he or she was originally betrothed. The sponsalia became inoperative, either by mutual consent or by cer- tain supervening impediments, such as ordination or a vow of chastity. The canonical disability of pre-contract was removed in England by 32 Hen. VIII. c. 38, re-established in the reign of Edward VI., and finally abolished in 1753.

In England the duty of the partics is the same as in Roman law, viz., to carry out the contract within a reasonable time, if no time be specially fixed. Formerly a contract to marry could be specifically enforced by the ecclesiastical court conrpelling a cele- bration of the marriage in faete ecelesix. The last instance of a suit for this purpose was in 1752, and the right to bring it was abolished in 1753 by Lord Hardwicke's Act (26 Geo. II. c. 33). The action for breach of promise may be brought by a man or a woman, though the former case has been of rare occurrence, and a male plaintiff has still more rarely been rewarded with anything more than

nominal damages. It may be brought by but not against an infant, and not against an adult if he or she has merely ratified a promise inade during infancy; it may be brought against but not by a married man or woman (in spite of the inherent incapacity of such a person to haye married the plaintiff), and neither by nor against the personal representatives of a deceased party to the promise (unless where special damage has accrued to the personal estate of the deceased). The promise need not be in writing. The parties to an action are by 32 and 33 Vict. c. 68 competent witnesses; the plaintiff cannot, how- ever, recover a verdict without his or her testimony being cor- roborated by other material evidence. The measure of damages is to a greater extent than in most actions at the discretion of the jury ; they may take into consideration the injury to the plaintiff's feelings, especially if the breach of promise be aggravated by seduction. Either party has a right to trial by jury under the rules of the Supreme Court, 1883. The. action cannot be tried in a county court, unless by consent, or unless remitted for trial there by the High Court. Unchastity of the plaintiff unknown to the defendant when the promise was made and dissolution of the

contract by mutual consent are the principal defences which are | Bodily infirmity of the defendant |

usually raised to the action. is no defence to the action, though it may justify the other party in refusing to marry the person thus affected. Where the betrothed are within prohibited degrees of consanguinity or affinity, there can be no valid promise at all, and so no action for its breach.

In Scotland a promise in the nature of sponsalia de futuro not followed by consummation may be resiled from, subject to the liability of the party in fault to an action for the breach, which by 6 Geo. IV. c. 120, s. 28, is a proper cause for trial by jury. If, however, the sponsalia be de presenti, and, according to the more probable opinion, if they be de futuro followed by consum- mation, a pre-contract is constituted, giving a right to a decree of declarator of marriage and equivalent to marriage, unless declared void during the lifetime of the parties.

In the United States the law is in general accordance with that of England. The statute law of California and Dakota pro- vides that the unchastity of one party of which the other is igno- rant is a good defence, but it is no defence if both participate therein. (J. Wt.)

WOOD. See Botany, vol. iv. p. 100; Burprne, Forests, STRENGTH OF MATERIALS ; also Frr, OAK, PINE, TEAK, &c.

WOOD, Antuony A! (1632-1695), antiquary, was the fourth son of Thomas Wood (1580-1643), B.C.L. of Oxford,

1 In the Life he speaks of himself and his family as Wood and not

a Wood, a pedantic return to old usage adopted by himself. A pedigree is given in Bliss's edition, 1848, p. 357.

| clvil war skirmishes.

_and after, was a perfect Elysium" (ibid., p. 68).

643

where Anthony was born 17th December 1632. He was sent to New College school in that city in 1641, and at the age of twelve was removed to the free grammar school at Thame, where his studies were interrupted by He was then placed under the tuition of his brother Edward (1627-55), of Trinity College ;

| "while he continued in this condition his mother would

alwaies be soliciting him to be an apprentice which he could never endure to heare of " (Life, 1848, p. 33). He was entered at Merton College in 1647, and made post- master. In 1652 "he began to exercise his natural and insatiable genie he had to musick" (cbid., 53), and was examined for the degree of B.A. He engaged a music- master, and obtained permission to use the Bodleian, "which he took to be the happiness of his life." He was admitted M.A. in 1655, and in the following year published a volume of sermons of his late brother Edward. Dugdale's Warwickshire came into

his hands, and he describes how 'his tender affections and insatiable desire of knowledge were ravished and melted downe by the reading of that book. What by musick and rare books that he found in the public library, his life, at this time ie now began systematically to copy monumental inscriptions and to search for antiquities in the city and neighbour- hood. He went through the Christ Church registers, "at this time being resolved to set himself to the study of antiquities." Dr John Wallis, the keeper, allowed him free access to the university registers in 1660; "here he layd the foundation of that book which fourteen years afterwards he published, viz., ist. et Antig. Univ. Oxon." He steadily investigated the muniments of all the colleges, and in 1667 made his first journey to London, where he visited Dugdale, who introduced him into the Cottonian library, and Prynne showed him the same civility for the Tower records. On October 22, 1669, he was sent for by the delegates of the press, "that whereas he had taken a great deal of paines in writing the list. and Antiq. of the Universitie of Oxon, they would for his paines give him an 100 li. for his copie, conditionally, that he would suffer the book to be translated into Latine" (cbid., 167). He accepted the offer and set to work to prepare his English

_ MS. for the translators, Richard Peers and Richard

Reeve, both appointed by Dr Fell, dean of Christ Church, who undertook the expense of printing. The translation was supervised by Fell, with whom and the translators Wood has endless quarrels about alterations of his text. In 1674 appeared J/istoria et Antiquitates Universitatis

| Oxomiensis, handsomely printed '"e Theatro Sheldoniano,"

in two folio volumes, the first devoted to the university in general and the second to the colleges. Copies were widely distributed, and university and author received niuch praise. On the other hand, Bishop Barlow told a correspondent that "not only the Latine but the history itself is in many things ridiculously false" (Genuine Remains, 1693, p. 183). In 1678 the university registers which had been in his custody for eighteen years were removed, as it was feared that he would be implicated in the Popish Plot. To relieve himself from suspicion he took the oaths of supremacy and allegiance. During this time he had been gradually completing his great

work, which was produced by a London publisher in 1691-92, 2 vols. folio, Athenz Oxonienses: an Exact History of all the Writers and Bishops who have had their Education in the University of Oxford from 1500 to 1690, to which are added the Fasti, or Annals for the said time. On 29th July 1693 he was condemned in the vice-chancellor's court for certain libels against the late earl of Clarendon, fined, banished from the university until he recanted, and the book burnt. The proceedings were printed in a volume of Miscellanies

published by Curll in 1714. Wood was attacked by Bishop Burnet in a Letter to the Bishop of Lichfield and Coventry, 1693, 4to, and defended by his nephew Dr Thomas Wood, in a Vindication of the Historiogrupher, to which 1s added the Historiographer's Answer, 1693, 4to, reproduced in the subsequent editions of the Athene. The nephew also defended his uncle in An Appendix to the Life of Bishop Seth Ward, 1697, 8vo. On 9th October 1695 Wood had an interview with the earl of Clarendon, but was not able to get his fine remitted. After a short illness he died 28th November 1695, in his sixty-third year, and was buried in the ante-chapel of St John Baptist (Merton College), in Oxford, where he superintended the digging of his own grave but a few days before.

He is described as "a very strong lusty man," of uncouth manners and appearance, not so deaf as he pretended, of reserved and temperate habits, not avaricious, and a despiser of honours. He reccived ncither office nor reward from the university which owed so niuch to his labours. He never married, and led a life of self-denial, entirely devoted to antiquarian research. Bell-ringing and inusic were his chief relaxations. His literary style is poor, and his taste and judgment are frequently warped by prejudice, but his two great works and unpublished collections form a price- less source of information on Oxford and her worthies. He was always suspected of being a Roman Catholic, and invariably treated Jacobites and Papists better than Dissenters in the Athenx, but he died in communion with the Church of England.

Wood's original manuscript (purchased by the Bodleian in 1846), was first published by John Gutch, as The History and Antiquities of the

*Colleges and Halls in the University of Oxford, with a con- tinuation, 1786-90, 2 vols. 4to, and The History and Antiquities of the University of Oxford, 1792-96, 3 vols. 4to, with portrait of Wood. To these should be added The Antient and Present State of the City of Oxford, chiefly collected by A. & Wood, with additions by Sir J. Peshall, 1778, 4to. A new edition is in preparation by the Oxford Historical Society. Modius Saliwm, a Colleetion of Pieces of Humour, chiefly ill-natured personal stories, was published at Oxford in1751,12mo. Some letters between Aubrey and Wood were given in the Gentleman's Magazine (3d ser., ix., x., xi.). Wood consulted Dr Hudson about getting a third volume of the Athenz printed in Holland, saying, " When this volume comes out I'll make you laugh " (Relig. Hearniane, i, 59). This was included in a second edition of the Athenx published by Tonson in 1721, 2 vols. folio, ** very much corrected and enlarged, with the addition of above 500 new lives." The third appeared as "a new edition, with additions, and a continuation by Philip Bliss," 1818-20, 4 vols. 4to. The Eeelesiastical History Society proposed to bring out 'a fourth edition, which stopped at the Life, ed. by Bliss, 1848, 8vo (see Gent. Mag., N.S., xxix. 135, 268). Dr Bliss's interleaved copy is in the Bodleian, and Dr Griffiths announced in 1859 that a new edition was contemplated by the Press, aud asked for additioual matter (see Notes and Queries, 2d ser., vii. 514, and 6th ser., vi. 5, 51). Wood bequeathed his library (127 MSS. and 970 printed books) to the Ashmolean Museum, and the keeper, William Huddesford, printed a catalogue of the MSS. in 1761. In 1860 the whole collection was transferred to the Bodleian, where 25 volumes of Wood's MSS. had been since 1690. Many of the original papers from which the Athens was written, as well as several large volumes of Wood's correspondence and all his diaries, are in the Bodleian.*

The chief authority is the Zife of Wood written by himself, and first published by Hearne in the appendix to T. Caii Vindicte, 1730; tne memoirs after 1672 were compiled by Rawlinson from the original diaries, and printed by Huddesford with the Lives of Leland and Hearne, 1772, 2 vols. 8vo. A new edition was issued by Bliss, 1848. See also Reliquiw Hearnianex, ed. Bliss, 2d ed., 1869, 3 vols. 12mo ; Hearne's Remarks and Collections (Oxford Hist. Soc., 1885, &e.); Macray's Annals

of the Bodleian Library, 1868; Nichols's Literary Anecdotes, i., iv., v., viii.; Noble's Biogr. History of England, i. (HER)

WOOD, Mrs Henry (1814-1887), novelist, was born on the 17th January 1814. Her maiden name was Ellen Price ; her father was a glove manufacturer in Worcester —the original of the cathedral city which, with its church dignitaries and schools, is the scene of so many of her tales. From certain vague memoirs published by her son in the Argosy! (of which her novels were the mainstay for the last twenty years of her life) it appears that the industrial distress described in Afildred Arkell is a reminiscence of the collapse of the glove trade in Wor-

cester, consequent on Huskisson's tariff reforms in 1823, |

from which her father suffered along with other English

1 See "Mrs Henry Wood, In Memoriam," Argosy, vol. xliii., 1887.

glove manufacturers. She married young, it is said, and after her marriage lived for the most part in France, her husband being "at the head of a large shipping and banking firm abroad." She first came before the public in her own name as the author of a temperance tale (Danesbury House), which had gained the prize of £100 offered by the Scottish Teniperance League. This was in 1860; but it appears from the memoirs already referred to that "for many years" before this she had been a regular contributor of stories anonymously, month after month, to Mr Harrison Ainsworth's magazines, Bentley's Miscellany, and Colburn's New Monthly. Danesbury House was very favourably reviewed, her genuine gifts as a story-teller making themselves apparent in spite of the didactic purpose of the tale; but Mrs Wood's first great success was made in the following year with Hast Lynne, one of the most popular novels of the century. A long review in the Z%mes, in which a place was claimed for her in the foremost rank of novelists, was the loudest note in a general chorus of praise, and fairly established her position, The praise of the critics continued throughout the next half-dozen of her novels, which followed one another with great rapidity: The Channings and Mrs

Halliburton's Troubles, in 1862; Verner's Pride and The Shadow of Ashlydyat, in 1863 ; Lord Oakburn's Daughters, Oswald Cray, and Trevlyn Hold, in 1864. These works were held to confirm the promise of Hast Lynne, and The Shadow of Ashlydyat was pronounced to be (as it is still generally considered) the best of them all. Complaints of sameness,— almost inevitable, considering the rate of production, — of commonplaceness of sentiment and material, and of a certain narrowness and insufficiency in her conceptions of poetical justice first began to be heard in connexion with Mildred Arkell (1865), and became louder as the fertile novelist continued to pour forth her stories with inexhaustible fluency. She became owner of the Argosy in 1867, and her stories quickly raised it to an enormous circulation. She had a certain triumph over her critics with the Johnny Ludlow tales, an imitation of Miss Mitford's Zales of Our Village. Mrs Wood's name was not put to them as they appeared in the Argosy, and when the first series was collected and published separately in 1874 they excited among reviewers an approach to the enthusiasm with which her first efforts had been welcomed. Undoubtedly Mrs Wood possessed many of the qualities of a first-rate story-teller,— great simplicity of style, unfailing fluency, a lively interest in prominent traits of character, abundant circumstantiality, skill in exciting curiosity and keeping up suspense, and withal a wonderful clearness of method. Amidst her crowd of characters and incidents you are never puzzled or perplexed, and she very rarely lapses into tediousness. If ever she is tedious, it is from repeating herself. Her "criticism of life" is not very broad or very profound, though it is generally for moral edification ; she is simply an excellent story-teller out of the ordinary materials of the craft. In private life Mrs Wood seems to have been a most amiable person: her son gives a very lovable picture of her. Her death took place on 10th February 1887, at the age of seventy-three. She was active in her work till the very last, and left several completed stories, short and long, ready for publication.

WOOD-CARVING. In most countries, during the early development of the plastic art, sculpture in wood took a very important position, and was much used for statues on a large scale, as well as for small works decorated with surface carving. On the whole, wood is much more suitable for carving in slight relief than for sculpture in the round, aud its

special structure, with bundles of long fibres, strong in one diretivon and weak in

another, make it very necessary for the carver to suit his design to the exigencies of the material. Large curves should be avoided, on account of their tendency to split across with the grain, and deep under-cutting is objection- able for the same reason. A tough fibrous substance like wood obviously calls for a very different treatment from that which is suitable to a homogeneous substance like stone or marble. 'This adaptation of the design to the material is very conspicuous in the wood-carving of the finest kinds, such as the Scandinavian doorways of the 9th to the 12th centuries, the Perpendicular roofs and screens of England in the 15th century, and the richly carved panelling of Moslem countries throughout the Middle Ages.

Some woods, such as pear, lime, and more especially box, are comparatively free from any distinct grain, and may be carved almost like marble, but these woods are only to be had in small pieces, and from their want of fibre are structurally weak, and are therefore only avail- able for decorative purposes ona small scale. It is this absence of grain which makes boxwood the material selected for engraving on wood, a form of wood-carving in which the artist needs to be as little as possible hampered by the structure of his material. In ancient.times cedar wood was specially used for decorative carving, and in the East various perfumed woods, such as that of' the sandal- tree, have always been favourites with the carver. In Europe the oak, the chestnut, the fir, and the walnut have been chiefly used, and for sculpture in the round or high relief the sycamore and the plane-tree, as well as the oak.

One objection to using wood for life-sized or colossal | sculpture is that large blocks are very liable to crack and |

split from end to end, owing to the fact that the parts near the surface dry and shrink more rapidly than the core. For this reason the medieval carvers usually hollowed out their wooden statues from the back, so as to equalize the shrinkage and prevent splitting. In all cases wood for carving

should be very well seasoned, and it is especially necessary to get rid of the natural sap, which causes rot if it is not dried out. It is useful to soak newly cut timber in running water, so that the sap may be washed away; it is then comparatively easy to dry out the water which has soaked into the pores of the wood and taken the place of the sap.

Lgyptian.—One of the most remarkable examples of ancient Egyptian art, dating probably from nearly 4000 years B.C., is a life-sized portrait statue of a stout elderly man, now in the Boulak museum. This is carved out of a solid block of sycamore wood, except that the right arm is worked separately and attached by a mortice and tenon ; the eyes are formed by inlaid bits of shell and crystal, and the whole is a most wonderful piece of life-like realism (see fig. 1). Although dating from so remote a period, this statue bears witness to an amount of technical skill

and artistic knowledge which shows that long centuries |

of experience and artistic development must have preceded its production, —a period of which we have no remains, this statue being one of the earliest works of art which even Egypt has preserved for us. In the same museum are also some very remarkable wooden panels from the

tomb of Hosi, about four feet high, carved in low relief These |

with standing figures of men and_ hieroglyphs. large slabs of wood formed part of the wall lining of the tomb. The reliefs are executed with the utmost spirit and extreme delicacy of treatment, and are highly decorative in style ; they show, moreover, a keen sense of the special treatment suitable to the material in which

=) i a i ee ee er 1 In many cases_it is almost impossible to distinguish between chestnut and oak, especially in the medizval roofs of England.

they are carved. These also date from nearly 4000 B.c. After the early dynasties in Egypt wood does not seem to have been used for sculpture on a large scale, although it was very commonly employed for mummy cases

or coffins, one end carved with a human face and the rest almost plain, except for its elaborate painted ornaments in gold and colours, applied on a thin coat of stucco laid evenly over the wood. A large number of smaller examples of Egyptian wood-carving exist in various museums, such as furniture, boxes, im- plements for the toilet, and the like, frequently decorated with — slight surface reliefs of animals or plants, and graceful patterns formed of the lotus or papyrus flower treated with great deco- rative skill. Greek.—Owing to the perishable nature of the material, almost the only ancient examples of wood-carving which have survived to our time are those from the tombs of Egypt.2 The many important pieces of wooden sculpture which once existed in Greece and other ancient countries are only known to us by the descriptions of Pausanias and various classical writers. It is probable that the earliest examples of the plastic art among the Hellenic race were the rude wooden images of the gods (Edava), of which many examples were preserved down to late historic times. The art of sculpture, and especially sculpture in wood, is probably older than that of painting, as it requires less artistic knowledge to rudely fashion a log of wood into a rough body with rounded head, two holes for the eyes and slits for the mouth and nose, than to conceive mentally and set down on a plane surface any attempt even at the rudest outline drawing,—a process which requires a distinct act of abstraction and some notion of treating the subject in a conventionally symbolic way. Real things have of course.no enclosing line, and the representation of an object in outline conveys little or no idea to the mind of a man who is yet in a very early stage of culture. The Palladium, or sacred figure of Pallas, which was guarded by the vestal virgins in Rome, and which was fabled to have been brought by Aineas from the burn- ing Troy, was one of these wooden gdava (see VusTa).. A wooden figure of the Armed Aphrodite at Cythera is men- tioned by Pausanias, iii. 23, 1. Of the same kind was the wooden statue of Hermes in the shrine of Athene Polias on the Acropolis of Athens, said to have been the offering of Cecrops (Pausan., i. 27, 1); and the figure of Athene Polias itself was an ancient wooden édavoy. Another very ancient statue, carved out of cedar wood, was the statue of Apollo in his temple, dedicated 428 B.c., in the Campus Martius of Rome; this statue was called Apollo

Fic, 1—Life-sized Portrait Statue from a Tomb of the Fourth Dynasty.

2 Acacia and sycamore wood were chiefly used for the larger wood sculpture of Egypt. A wooden coffin, covered with fine Greek paint- ings of c. 800 B.c., was discovered in a tomb at Panticapeum (Kertch), and is now in the museum at St Petersburg.

Sosianus, from Sosius the prefect of Syria, who presented it to the temple (Pliny, H. W., xiii. 5 and xxxvi. 4). Pausanias (ii. 24) mentions another early wooden statue at Argos,—that of Zeus Larisseeus, which was remarkable for having three eyes. A very elaborate example of cedar-wood carving enriched with gold and ivory is described by Pausanias (v. 17 to 19). This was a coffer dedicated at Olympia by the children of Cypselus, tyrant of Corinth in the 7th century B.c. It was decorated with bands in relief, with scenes from the lives of various gods and heroes. A cedar box, with two carved dogs attached to it, was found at Mycene by Dr Schliemann, and is now in the museum at Athens. During the most flourishing period of Greek art wood was sometimes used for important plastic purposes, as, for example, the colossal statue of Athene at Plateea, carved by Phidias. The figure was of gilt or plated wood, with the exception of the nude parts,— the face, hands, and feet,—which were of Pentelic marble.

Roman.—Of the wood-carving of the Roman period almost no important examples now exist; but the carved panels of the main doors of 8S. Sabina on the Aventine Hill are very interesting specimens of wooden relief-

sculpture of early Christian times, dating, as the costumes |

show, from the 5th century. The doors are made up of a large number of small square panels, each minutely carved with a scene from the Old or New Testament ; the whole feeling of these reliefs is thoroughly classical, though of course in a very debased form.

Medizxval.—The most remarkable examples of early medizeval wood-carving are the doorways of wooden churches of Scandinavia and Denmark, dating from the 9th to the 13th centuries. These are framed

with great planks or slabs of pine wood, the whole surface of which is covered with rich and intricate patterns of interlacing scroll-work, mixed with figures of dragons and serpents, designed with extraordinary wealth of invention, and of the highest decorative value. The relief is very low, except where occasionally a monster's head projects from the general level ; and yet the utmost vigour of effect is gained by the grand sweeping curves of the leading lines. These are masterpieces of wood-carving, designed and 'executed with the most perfect sense of the necessities of the material.

Fig. 2 shows part of the architrave of a door from Aal |

church, Norway, dating from the 12th century. Unhappily almost the last of these interesting wooden churches have been destroyed in recent years, and merely the wrecks of their grand wooden sculpture have been occasionally pre- served in some museum ; some very valuable casts of these are in the South Kensington Museum.

Lnglish.—For various ecclesiastical purposes a large amount of important sculpture in wood was produced in Britain throughout the Middle Ages. At the time of the Reformation every church had its rood-screen, surmounted by a large crucifix between two standing figures of St Mary and St John. These were of wood, except perhaps in some of the richest cathedral or abbey churches, which occasionally had the rood made of silver. nuinber of churches also had retables over the various

altars, with reliefs carved in wood and decorated with gold |

and colours. Many examples of this class still exist in Germany and Spain, but almost all the English examples perished under the iconoclasm of the Reformation.! Another important class of wood-carving was that of large recumbent effigies from tombs, of which a good inany examples still exist. One of the earliest is that of Robert, duke of Normandy, in Gloucester cathedral,

1 Only three English examples of the figure of Christ on the rood are now known to exist. One of these was recently found built up in the rood-

staircase of a small church in Wales. It is a work of the 14th century, carved roughly, but with much spirit.

A very large |

ARVING

| illustrated in ScuLprurg, fig. 5 (vol. xxi. p. 558). Itisa _work of the 12th century, but was broken to pieces, and is now much restored. Like most wooden sculpture in _ England, it is carved out of oak. The finest example of English wood sculpture is a life-sized effigy in the south choir aisle of Aber- gavenny church, that of the young knight George de Cantelupe (d. 1273). The face is a portrait of very ‘ high plastic merit, and the whole treatment of the figure, with the graceful drapery of its tunic, and its care- fully carved armour, is very remarkable as an example of the very high level of excellence that was reached by the Eng- lish contemporaries of Niccola Pisano. The usual treatment of these wooden figures was to cover the whole surface with a thin coating of gesso or fine stucco, in which various details or ornaments were modelled or stamped in relief, and then richly decorated with gold and colour. A _ similar treatment was adopted for all the wooden sculpture of the medieval period throughout Europe.

The church at Abergavenny, already referred to, also contains part of what once must have been a very large and magnificent example of wooden sculpture. This is a colossal recumbent figure of Jesse, and formed the lower part of what was called a ‘Jesse tree.” Out of the recumbent figure grew a great tree, on the branches of which were figures of the illustrious descendants of Jesse’s line. Merely the stump of this tree now remains, springing from the side of Jesse, but when complete the whole tree must have reached high up towards the roof, with its network of branches form- ing a sort of screen behind the high altar— very rich and magnificent in effect, when the whole was perfect with its brilliant coloured decora- tion, and the stained glass of the large east window seen dimly through the open branches of the tree. The existing figure of Jesse, which is 10 feet long, is cut out of a solid block of oak; a figure of an-angel at the head is worked out of the same piece of wood.?

Another very important application of wood-carving was for the decoration of the church stalls, screens, and

Fig. 2.—Part of the Carved Architrave of a Door from Aal Church.

2 See a valuable monograph on the church of Abergavenny by Octavius Morgan, published by the Cambrian Archeological Society. For an account of other wooden effigies, see Arch. Jour., xi. p. 149; and on existing rood figures, a paper by J. T. Micklethwaite in the Proc. Soc. Ant. for 1886, p. 127.

roofs, which in the 15th century in England reached so high a pitch of splendour. The development of archi-

tectural wood-carving was much slower than that of |

sculpture in stone. During the "Early English " period wood-work was rather heavy in style and coarse in detail;

in "Decorated" times wood-work of much beauty and |

richness was produced, but forms more suitable to stone were still used, and it was not till the later '" Perpendi- cular" period in the 15th century that the wood-carvers of England learnt to perfectly adapt their designs to the nature of their material. Very beautiful roofs, for example, were produced in the 14th century, such as that at Adder- bury,' but the principals are frequently constructed with large arched braces, richly moulded and very graceful in effect but constructionally weak, and very wasteful of the material. Enormous balks of oak were required to enable the large curves of the braces to be cut out of the solid. The builders of the 15th century corrected these defects, and designed their sumptuous screens, stall-canopies, and open roofs with straight lines for the leading framework, — only using curves on a smaller scale, and in places where mucli strain does not fall upon them. the beauty, in its own class, of the 15th and early 16th century wood-work in England ; the many fine examples that still exist give us some notion of the wealth of the country

in this branch of art at a time when every church was obliged by canon law to have its rood-screen, and almost always also possessed carved oak stalls and many other fittings, such as statues and retables, in the same material.?

The rich oak work of England was no exception to the universal application of coloured decoration, and nearly every screen, roof, or choir-stall was covered with minute painting in gold and colours. The modern notion that oak should be left unpainted was quite unknown to our medizval forefathers ; and they, as a rule, preferred even a simple coating of white, red, or other colour to the natural tint of the oak, which would haye looked very dull and heavy in tone when surrounded by the polychro- matic brilliance of the floor, the walls, and the windows. In most cases, however, the wood-work was not left with its uniform ground of paint ; delicate and graceful patterns of diapers or sprigs of foliage were added on to all the main lines of the work, and covered the chief members of all the mouldings, in exactly the same way as was done with the sculpture in stone. Many of the Norfolk screens still have much of their painted orna- ment in good preservation?; and additional richness was gained by the groundwork of delicately moulded stucco with which the whole surface of the wood was covered before the colouring and gilding were applied. Modern "restorers" have in most cases scraped off all that remained of this brilliant decoration, and frequently no signs are now visible of this universal system of decora- tion. in the abbey church of St Albans is now bare of any colouring, though it was once a very brilliant example of polychromatic decoration.

Great richness of carving is lavished on the church roofs especially of Norfolk and Suffolk. Carved bosses cover the intersections of the moulded timbers, some with

1 The roof of Westminster Hall, of the early part of the 15th cen- tury, is in size and richness of detail the most magnificent open timber roof in the world; it has curved braces of very wide span, cut out of enormous balks of oak or chestnut.

2 It should be noted that in Old English the word " picture" was often used for a statue or a relief, —partly no doubt from the fact that all

sculpture was decorated with painting.

3 See Talbot Bury, Ecclesiastical Wood-Work, London, 1847.

4 So called because from it a guardian used constantly to watch, day and night, the great gold shrine of St Alban, with its treasure of precious offerings all round it.

Nothing can exceed |

The very rich and graceful "watching gallery" 4.

| open cresting or " brattishing " along the top. _ which fills in the upper part of these screens is of wonder-

647

bunches of delicate foliage, others carved into figures of angels with outspread wings. Other statuettes of angels often cover the ends of the hammer-beams, and the whole cornice frequently has running foliage inserted in a hollow of the moulding. All this wood-carving is usually of very high artistic merit, and combines delicacy of detail with strength of decorative effect in a way that has never been surpassed by the medizeval artists of any country of the. Continent. These magnificent roofs, which are peculiar to England, and even to certain districts such as East Anglia, are amoug the most perfect artistic productions of the

| Middle Ages.

Norfolk, Suffolk, Devonshire, and other counties are still rich in elaborate chancel screens, carved with delicate foliage, especially in the hollows of the cornice, and light The tracery

ful beauty, and executed with the most minute finish and

| delicate moulding. The ends of the 15th-century stalls

were often richly decorated with carving, and are crowned with finials or " poppy-heads" of the most elaborate and spirited design. The underside

of the “ iisericords” § of the monastic stalls were specially selected for minute en- richment, in spite of their very inconspicuous position. The utmost wealth of fancy and minuteness of workmanship is often lavished upon these, and their reliefs are frequently works of art of a very high order. In some cases the carver took his design from contemporary engravings by some distinguished German or Flemish artist, such as Schongauer or Albert Diirer. One of these in the chapel of Henry VII. at Westminster, representing “The Golden Age,” is a work of wonderful beauty and delicacy of touch. Genre and satirical subjects are often selected: the regulars are made fun of in the churches of the secular clergy, and the vices of the secular priests are satirized on the stalls of the monastic churches. This satire is often carried to the verge of indecency, especially in the scenes frequently selected by clerical carvers to set forth the miseries of the married state.

In England during the 16th and 17th centuries little wood-carving of much merit was produced; the oak panelling, furniture, and other fittings of the Elizabethan and Jacobean periods were largely enriched with surface reliefs, coarse in execution, but often decorative in effect, and chiefly remarkable for their showy appearance pro- duced with the minimum of labour,’ a great contrast to the rich detail and exquisite finish of the pre-Reformation work. Towards the end of the 17th century a very realistic style of wood-carving came into use, in which great technical skill was displayed but little real artistic feeling. Grinling Gibbons (1648-1721) and his pupils produced the most elaborate works of this class, such as wreaths, scrolls, and friezes carved in high relief, or in the round, with fruit and flowers, modelled and carved with wonderful imitative skill, but weak in true decorative effect. These clever groups of foliage and fruit were carved in pear or lime wood, and fastened on to the surface of wall-panels, mantelpieces, and other wooden fittings. The stalls and screens in St Paul’s Cathedral are some of Gibbons’s best works, and a great deal of his realistic carving still exists at Oxford in Trinity College, at Trinity College, Cambridge, at Chatsworth, at Petworth, and in many of the great country houses of that time. Since then wood-carving has not taken an important position among the lesser arts of the country.

—® A number of fine examples are well illustrated by Brandon,

Open Timber Roofs, London, 1856.

§ Often wrongly called “ misereres.” ;

7 See Sanders, Woodwork of the 16th and 17th Centuries, London, 1883; and Small, Scottish Wood-Work of the 16th and 17th Centuries, Edinburgh, 1878.

648

Ltalian.—During the medizval period wood was often used by the greatest sculptors of Italy, especially for crucifixes and statues of saints for ecclesiastical purposes. Fig. 3 shows a magnificent example of the school of Nino Pisano, dating from about the middle of the 14th century. It is a colossal figure of the Angel of the Annunciation, said to have once be- — longed to Pisa cathedral, Zed and now one of the chief treasures of the South Kensington Museum. It is very remarkable for the delicate beauty of the face, and for the sculp- turesque simplicity of the folds of the drapery. The original wings were prob- ably much larger than the present ones, which are restorations.

Many fine roods or crucifixes of life size still exist in the churches of Italy. One attributed to Donatello is preserved at Florence, in the church of 8. Croce ; another by Brunelleschi still exists. Nothing like the magni- ficent oak open roofs and choir screens of England were made in Italy. The latter were usually of marble or of metal, and the roofs were of the plain king-post construc- tion, usually concealed by vaulted or panelled ceil- ings. Towards the end of the 15th century, and especially in the first half of the 16th, wood-carving of the most elaborate and magnificent sort was largely used to decorate church stalls, wall-panelling, doors, and the like.

| i MT ma

A i | i

Fig. 3.—Colossal Statue of an Angel in the South Kensington Museum.

Fie, 4.—Example of a Carved Walnut-Wood Panel; school of Raphael. panel with carving of this school, which is always remark- able for its high finish and delicate cameo-like execution. Spanish.—Spain during the 15th and 16th centuries was specially remarkable for the production of large and

1 Bergamo, Ornati del Coro di S. Pietro dei Cassinesi, Rome, 1845. 2 See Finochietti, Scu/tura in Legno, Florence, 1873.

elaborate retables, carved with statues and reliefs, very like those of contemporary Germany. Alonso Cano and other sculptors frequently used wood for large statuary, which was painted ina very realistic way with the most startling life-like effect.

Danish.—Denmark also possessed a school of able wood- carvers, who imitated the great altarpieces of Germany. A very large and well-carved example still exists in the | metropolitan cathedral of Roskilde.

Hrench.—In France during the medieval period wooden sculpture was produced which was very similar in character to that of England, and was decorated with similar colour- ing. Many of the French cathedral and abbey choir stalls are works of the utmost magnificence. Those at Amiens are specially remarkable. Fig. 5 shows an example of the delicate tracery work of the 15th century. In the 16th century many wood-carvers in France imitated the rich and delicate work of the Raphaelesque school in Italy, and much wood-work of men m great refinement was pro- duced, very different from the coarsely effective work of Elizabethan and Jaco- bean England. In the 18th century large sums were spent on elaborate

wooden panelling for rooms, the walls being divided into series of |

spaces with rococo fram- | ing, formed by applied | scroll-work, made up of | many fantastic and in- congruous bits of curved mouldings, which were usually gilt. The general effect was very inartistic, | and was unredeemed by | any beauty of detail. The intermediate spaces were sometimes

Boucher, or other popu- lar artists.

German.—In Germany, during the 15th century, wood was used for the [i most important sculp- turesque purposes, such as large triptychs or retables made up of many reliefs, with sacred subjects, and statues of saints,—the whole framed and canopied with rich Gothic " tabernacle work." See Scunprurse, vol. xxi. p. 565. Fig. 6 shows a fine example of one of these retables, said to be the work of Veit Stoss, now in the South Kensington Museum. As in England the whole of the wood was covered with fine gesso, and then richly gilt and painted with vivid colours. Nothing could exceed the decorative effect of these great retables, rich with minute sculpture and carved foliage, and shining with gold and brilliant colours, some of which were mixed with a transparent varnish medium, and applied over a ground of gold leaf, so that the metallic lustre shone through the transparent pigments over it. Stall ends and panels were enriched with carving of the highest order of merit ; life-sized human figures are often introduced at the ends of the book-rests, and large surfaces

bia

Fig, 5,—Traceried Panel in Oak; French work of the 15th century.

3 See Roumier, Sculptureen Bois… . U0 Eglise des Péres Jaecobins, Paris, n.d. (17th cent.) ; and Pascal, Boiseries sculptées de Notre- | Dame de Paris, 1855.

WOOD-CARVING

Win SSNS

Aah ;

Fig. 6,-The Centre of a Wooden Triptych, attributed to Veit Stoss, now in the South Kensington Museum.

with bold conventional foliage, full of spirit and vigorous beauty. These splendid stalls were executed in 1468 by Jorg Syrlin. During this period

the wood-carving of Germany occupied a foremost position in the world, and

one

))

(

in many places, such as Nuremberg and parts of Bavaria, great technical skill has survived down to the present time.

Switzerland and Tyrol have also been for long cele- brated for delicate wood-carving on a small scale. The

649

cleverly executed figures of peasants and of animals, especially the chamois, are widely popular, and their pro- duction gives occupation to a large class of able artisans, who, however, rarely rise to the level of original artists, though they attain a fairly high average of excellence. Mohammedan.—Nothing can exceed the skill with which the Moslem wood-carvers of Persia, Syria, Egypt, and Spain designed and executed the richest panelling and other decorations for wall-lining, ceilings, pulpits, and all kinds of fittings and furniture. The mosques and private houses of Cairo, Damascus, and other Oriental cities are full of the most elaborate and minutely delicate wood-work.

Jee

Fig. 8.—Example of Moslem Wood-Panelling, with inlay of different woods.

| skill is shown by the way in which the Moslem carver has adapted his design to his material—avoiding curved lines,

and utilizing woods which he could only get in small pieces. Another very elaborate class of Oriental wood- work is the rich ceilings and domes built up of small pieces of wood into the ingeniously intricate ‘stalactite ”

patterns, which were then covered with stucco and decorated with rich painting in gold and colours.

In the early medizeval period very elaborate wood-work for screens and other fittings was produced for the Coptic churches of Egypt by native Christian workmen ; some of these had small panels carved in a hard dark wood, with saints and Bible subjects in low relief, very Byzantine in style. The British Museum possesses some fine examples of this carved work from a church in Old Cairo. These early wood fittings are now rapidly disappearing.!

Asvatic.—In India wood-carving of the most magnificent kind has been constantly produced for many centuries. The ancient Hindu temples were decorated with doors, ceilings, and other fittings, carved in sandal and other

1 See Butler, Coptic Churches of Egypt, Oxford, 1884. XXIV 82

woods, with patterns of extreme richness and minute elaboration. The doors of the temple at Somnauth, on the north-west coast of India, were especially famed for their magnificence, and were very highly valued as sacred relics. In 1024 they were carried off to Ghuznee by the Moslem conqueror Sultan Mahmoud, and are now lying in the fort at Agra. The gates which still exist are very fine specimens of ancient wood-carving, but they are probably only copies of the original very early doors.

In many parts of India wood-carving of the most beautiful kind is largely used for architectural purposes, especially for the enrichment of the wooden framework of houses, and for forming delicate open lattices for windows. In the main, however, the native carvers of India excel rather in richness of effect and minute delicacy of work- manship than in general gracefulness of line and purity of design. In these respects the wood-work of Moslem carvers in India is very far superior to that of the Hindus.

In China and Japan the wood-carvers are absolutely unrivalled in technical skill; grotesque and imitative work of the most wonderful

perfection is produced, and some of the wood-carvings of these countries are really beautiful as works of art, especially when the carver copies the lotus lily or other aquatic plants. In many cases, however, as in the other arts of Japan and China, extreme ugliness of design is combined with the most perfect execution and exquisite finish, and the carvers have very little notion of the really decorative treatment of surface reliefs. The extensive use of wood or bamboo for archi- tectural purposes creates a wide field for the wood-carver, whose very limited sense of true beauty is to some extent made up for by his wealth of grotesque fancy and extreme deftness of hand, which are the main characteristics of the workmen of China and Japan in all branches of art.

Wood-Carving of Savage Races.—Many savage races, such as the Maoris and Polynesians, are very skilful in the decorative treatment of wood in slight relief. Intricate geometrical designs of much beauty and suitability to the material are used to decorate canoes, paddles, and the beams of huts. Great richness of effect is often produced by the smallest possible amount of cutting into the surface of the wood. The wooden architecture of the Maoris is sometimes decorated in the most lavish way. The main uprights of the walls are carved into grotesque semi-human monsters, enriched with painting and inlay of iridescent shell, which show much imaginative power. Other beams are carved with series of spirals, bearing much resemblance to the very early sculptured ornaments of Mycene, Tiryns, and other Hellenic cities,—one of the many examples which show that very similar stages of artistic develop- ment are passed through by men of the most different races and age. In many cases the freshness of invention and freedom of hand shown in the carved ornament of savage races give a more really artistic value to their work than is usually found in the modern laboured and mechanical carving of highly civilized people.

In modern Europe decorative wood-carving shares the general low level of the lesser arts. The commercial spirit of the age, and the general desire to produce the utmost display with the smallest cost and labour, have reduced the art of wood-carving to a very low state.

Sec Williams, History of the Art of Sculpture in W ood, London, 1835; for practical information see Bemrose and Jewitt, Manual of Wood-Carving, London, 1862; Rogers, Art of Wood-Carving, London, 1867; and Lacombe, Manuel de la Sculpture sur Bots, Paris, 1868. (J. H. M.)

WOODCOCK (A.-8., Wade-coce, Wudu-coc, and Wudu- snite), a bird as much extolled for the table, on account

1 See art, ELLENBOROUGH for an account of the recent history of these celebrated doors. They are illustrated in wrchxologia, xxx. p. 174.

|

of its flavour, as by the sportsman, who, from its relative scarcity in regard to other kinds of winged game, the uncertainty of its occurrence, as well as the suddenness of its appearance and the irregularity of its flight, thinks himself lucky when he has laid one low. Yet, under favourable conditions, large bags of Woodcocks are made in many parts of Great Britain, and still larger in Ireland, though the numbers are trifling compared with those that have fallen to the gun in various parts of the European Continent, and especially in Albania and Epirus. In England of old time Woodcocks were taken in nets and springes, and, though the former method of capture seems to have been disused for many years, the latter was practised in some places until nearly the middle of the

present century (cf. Knox, Game-birds and Wild Foul, pp. 148-151) or even later.

The Woodcock is the Scolopax rusticula® of ornithology, and is well enough known to need no minute description. Its long bill, short legs, and large eyes—suggestive of its nocturnal or crepuscular habits—have over and over again been the subject of remark, while' its mottled plumage of black, chestnut- and umber-brown, ashy- grey, buff, and shining white—the last being confined to the tip of the lower side of the tail-quills, but the rest intermixed for the most part in beautiful combination—could not be

adequately de- scribed within the present allotted space. Setting aside the many extreme aberrations froin the normal colouring which examples of this species occasionally present (and some of them are extremely curious, not to say beautiful), there is much variation to be almost constantly observed in the plumage of individuals, in some of which the richer tints prevail while others exhibit a greyer coloration. This variation is often, but not always accompanied by a variation in size or at least in weight.4 The paler birds arc generally the larger, but the difference, whether in bulk or tint, cannot be attri- buted to age, sex, season, or, so far as can be ascertained, to locality. It is, notwithstanding, a very common belief among sportsmen that there are two ‘“‘species” of Woodcock, and many persons of experience will have it that, beside the differences just named, the “little red Woodcock” invariably flies more sharply than the other. However, a sluggish behaviour is not really associ- ated with colour, though it may possibly be correlated with weight —for it is quite conccivable that a fat bird will rise more slowly, when flushed, than one which is in poor condition. It may suffice here to say that ornithologists, some of whom have taken a vast amount of trouble about the mattcr, are practically unanimous in declaring against the existence of two “species” or even ““races,” and morcover in agrecing that the sex of the bird cannot be detcr- mined from its plumage, though there are a few who believe that the young of the year can be discriminated from the adults by having the outer web of the first quill-feather in the wing marked with angular notches of a light colour, while the old birds have no trace of this “vandyke” ornament. Careful dissections, weighings, and measurings seem to shew that the male varies most in size; on an average he is slightly heavier than the female, yct some of the lightest birds have proved to be cocks.®

Though there are probably few if any counties in the United Kingdom in which the Woodcock does not almost yearly breed, especially since a ‘close time” has been afforded by the legislature for the protection of the species, there can be no doubt that by far the greatcr number of those shot in the British Islands have come from abroad,—mostly, it is presumed, from Scandinavia. These arrive on the east coast in autumn—generally about the middle of October —often in an exhausted and impoverished state. Most of them seem to cross the sea by night, and at that season it is

a brutal practice for men to sally forth and slaughter the helpless and almost starving wanderers, who are often found seeking refuge in any shelter that may present itself. If unmolested, however, they are soon rested, pass inland, and, as would appear, ina marvellously short time recover their condition. Their future destination seems to be greatly influenced by the state of the weather. If cold or frost stop their supply of food on the eastern side of Great Britain — eee ee eee: eee

*2 In the legal sense of the word, however, Woodcocks are not '*game,"' though Acts of Parliament require a " game licence" from those who would shoot them.*

3 By Linneus, and many others after him, misspelt rusticola. The correct form of Pliny and the older writers seems to have been first restored in 1816 by Oken (Zoologie, ii. p. 589).

- *The difference in weight is very great, though this seems to have been exaggerated by some writers. A friend who has had much experience tells us that the heaviest bird he ever knew weighed 16} oz., and the lightest 9 oz. and a fraction.*

° Cf. Dr Hoffmann's monograph Die Waldschnepfe,

ed. @, p. 35, published at Stuttgart in 1887.

wo0o—W0O0O

they press onward and, letting alone Ireland, into which the im- migrant stream is pretty constant, often crowd into the extreme south-west, as Devonshire and Cornwall, and to the Isles of Scilly, while not a few betake themselves to the unknown ocean, finding there doubtless a watery grave, though instances are on record of examples having successfully crossed the Atlantic and reaching Newfoundland, New Jersey, and Virginia. To return, however, to the Woodcocks which breed in Britain, whose habits have been much more frequently observed since the folly and cruelty of killing them in spring has becn recognized, and it may be hoped abandoned. Pairing takes place very early in February and the eggs are laid often before the middle of March. These are four in number,

of a yellowish cream-colour blotched and spotted with reddish-brown, and seldom take the pyriform shape so common among those of Limicoline birds.

or underwood, and usually near water or at least ina damp locality

—is at first little more than a slight hollow in the soil, but as in- | cubation proceeds dead leaves are collected around its margin until | a considerable mass is accumulated. During this season the male |

Woodcock performs at twilight flights of a remarkable kind (c. Birps, vol. iii. p. 771), repeating evening after evening (and it is believed at dawn also) precisely the same course, which generally describes a triangle, the sides of which may be a quarter of a mile or more long. On these occasions the bird's appearance on the wing is quite unlike that which it presents when hurriedly flying after being flushed, and though its spced is great the beats of the wings are steady and slow. produced, whether from the throat of the bird, as is commonly averred, or from the plumage is uncertain.

have tried to syllable it.

of England called "roading," and the track taken by the bird a

The nest—always made on the ground amid trees |

At intervals an extraordinary sound is |

To the present | writer the sound seems to defy description, though some hearers | This characteristic flight is in some parts |

*“‘cock-road.”1 In England in former times advantage was taken | of this habit to catch the simple performer in nets called *‘cock- |*

shutts,” which were hung between trees across the open glades or rides of a wood, and in many parts of the Continent it still is, or was till very lately, the disgraceful habit of persons calling them- selves sportsmen to lie in wait and shoot the bird as he indulges in his measured love-flight. A still more interesting matter in rela- tion to the breeding of Woodcocks is the fact, asserted by several

ancient writers, but for long doubted if not disbelieved, and yet™

finally established on good evidence, that the old birds transport their newly-hatched offspring, presumably to places where food is more accessible. The young are clasped between the thighs of the parent, whose legs hang down during the opcration, while the bill is to some extent, possibly only at starting, bronght into operation to assist in adjusting the load if not in bearing it through the air.?

The Woodcock inhabits suitable localities across the northern part of the Old World, from Iveland to Japan, migrating southward towards autumm. As a species it is said to be resident in the Azores and other Atlantic Islands; but itis not known to penetrate very far into Africa during the winter, though in many parts of India it is abundant during the cold weather, and reaches even

Ceylon and Tenasserim. The popular belief that Woodcocks live _and the Australian Region, save Celebes and Flores; but it

‘by suction” is perhaps hardly yet exploded ; but those who have observed them in confinement know that they have an almost insatiable appetite for earthworms, which the birds scck by probing soft ground with their highly sensitive and ficxible bill.2 This fact seems to have been first placed on record by Bowles, who noticed it in the royal aviary at San Ildefonso in Spain, and it has been corroborated by other observers, and especially by Montagu, who discovered that bread and milk made an excellent substitute for their ordinary food.*

The eastern part of North America possesses a Wood- cock, much smaller than though generally (and especially in habits) similar to that of the Old continent. It is the Scolapax minor of most authors ; but, chiefly on account

1 The etymology and consequently the correct spelling of these ex- pressions seem to be very uncertain. Some would derive the word from the French réder, to rove or wandcr, but others connect it with the Scandinavian rode, an open space in a wood (see Notes and Quertes, ser. 5, ix. p. 214, and ser. 6, viii. pp. 528, 524). Looking to the regular routine followed by the bird, the natural supposition would be that it is simply an application of the English word road ; but of course natural suppositions are often wrong, and they always require the support of evidence before acceptance.

2 Cf. J. E. Harting, Zoologist, 1879, pp. 433-440, and Mr. Wolf’s excellent illustration. Sir R. Payne-Gallwey, in the “ Badminton Library” (Shooting, ii. p. 118, note), states that he himself has witnessed the performance.

3 The pair of muscles said by Loche (Expl. Scient. de V Algérie, ii: p. 293) to exist in the maxilla, and presumably to direct the move- ment of the bill, do not seem to have as yet been precisely described.

4 Introduccion a la Historia Natural y a la Geografia fisica de Espata, pp. 454, 455 (Madrid, 1775).

of its having the outer three primaries remarkably attenuated, it has been placed in a separate genus, Philohela. In Java is found a distinct and curiously coloured species, described and figured many years ago by Horsfield (Zrans. Linn. Society, xiii. p. 191, and Zoolog. Researches, pl.) as S. saturata. To this Mr Seebohm ° has lately referred the S. rosenbergi of Schlegel (Wederl. Tijds. v. d. Dierkunde, iv. p. 54) from New Guinea; but, as the culpable destruction of the type- specimen of the former (during its transfer from the old museum of the East India Company to the British Museum) has made a comparison of the two impossible, the identification can scarcely be said to be free from doubt. Another species is S. rochusseni from the Moluccas, but this last, though resembling the other Woodeocks in most of the characters which distinguish them from the SNIPES (¢7.v.), has like the latter the lower part of the tibia bare of feathers. (A. N.) WOOD-ENGRAVING. See Encravine. WOODPECKER, a bird that pecks or picks holes in wood, and from this habit is commonly reputed to have its name; but since it is in some parts of England also known as " Woodspeight" (erroneously written "Wood- spite")—the latter syllable being cognate with the German Specht and the French Lyeiche, to say nothing possibly of the Latin Picws—the vulgar explanation seems open to doubt. More than 300 species of Woodpecker have been described, and they have been very variously grouped by systematists ; but all admit that they form a very natural Family Picide, which according to the view taken in this series of articles belongs to the Order Picarie. Prof. Huxley (Proc. Zool. Society, 1867, p. 467) would separate the Woodpeckers still more under the name of Celeo- morphex, and Prof. Parker (Yrans, R. Microsc. Socrety, 1872, p. 219) would raise them still higher as Saurognathe. They are generally of bright particoloured plumage, in which black, white, brown, olive, green, yellow, orange, or scarlet—the last commonly visible on some part of the head—mingled in varying proportions, and most often strongly contrasted with one another, appear; while the less conspicuous markings take the form of bars, spangles, tear-drops, arrow-heads, or scales. Woodpeckers inhabit most parts of the world, with the exception of Madagascar

may be worth stating that no member of the group is known to have occurred in Egypt.

*Of the three British species, the Green Woodpecker, Gecinus or Picus viridis, though almost unknown in Scotland or Ireland, is the commonest, frequenting wooded districts, and more often heard than seen, its laughing cry (whence the namc " Yaffil" or **Yafile,'" by which it is in many parts known), and undulating flight afford equally good means of recognition, even when it is not near enough for its coleurs to be discerned. About the size of a Jay, its scarlet crown and bright ycllow rump, added to its prevailing grass-green plumage, make it a sightly bird, and hence it often suffers at the hands of those who wish to keep its stuffed skin as an ornament. Besides the scarlet crown, the cock bird has a patch of the same colour running backward from the base of*

> Geographical Distribution of the Family Charadriide, p. 506, pl. This work will be found of much interest to those who would speculate on the causes which have lcd to the distribution of existing Limicoline birds.

*§ The number of English names, ancient and modern, by which these birds are known is very great, and even a bare list of them could not be here given. 'The Anglo-Saxon was Migera or Higere, and to this may plausibly be traced " Hickwall," now-a-days used in some parts of the country, and the older " Hickway," corrupted first into " Highhaw," and, after its original meaning was lost, into "Hewhole," which in North America has been still further corrupted into " Highhole" and more recently into "High-holder." Another set of names includcs **Whietile'" and " Woodwale," which, different as they look, have a common derivation perceptible in the intermediate form " Witwalc." The Anglo-Saxon Wodake (= Woodhack) is another name apparently identical in meaning with that commonly applied to Woodpecker.*

the lower mandible, a patch that in the hen is black.! Wood- peckers in general are very shy birds, and to observe the habits of the species is not easy. Its ways, however, are well worth watch- ing, since the ease with which it mounts, almost always spirally, the vertical trunks and oblique arms of trees as it searches the inter- stices of the bark for its food, flying off when it reaches the smaller or upper brauches—either to return to the base of the same tree and renew its course on a fresh line, or to begin

upon another tree near by—and the care it shews in its close examination, will repay a patient observer. The nest almost always consists of a hole, chiselled by the birds' strong beak, impelled by very powerful muscles, in the upright trunk or arni of a tree, the opening being quite circular, and continued as a horizontal passage that reaches to the core, whence it is pierced downward for nearly a foot. There a chamber is hollowed out in which the eggs, often to the number of six, white, translucent, and glossy, are laid with no bedding but a few chips that may have not been thrown out.? The young are not only hatched entirely naked, but seem to become fledged without any of the downy growth common to most birds. Their first plumage is dull in colour, and much marked beneath with bars, crescents, aud arrowheads.

Of generally similar habits are the two other Woodpeckers which inhabit Britain—the Pied or Greater Spotted, and the Barred or Lesser Spotted Woodpecker—Dendrocopus major and D. minor—each of great beauty, from the contrasted white, blue- black, and scarlet that enter into its plumage. Both of these birds have an extraordinary habit of causing by qnickly-repeated blows of their beak on a branch, or even on a small bough, a vibrating noise, louder than that of a watchman's rattle, and enough to excite the attention of the most incurious. Though the Picd Woodpecker is a resident in Britain, its numbers receive a consider- able accession nearly every autumn.

The three species just mentioned are the only Woodpeckers that inhabit Britain, though several others are mistakenly recorded as occurring in the country—and especially the Great Black Wood- pecker, the Picus martius of Linneus, which must be regarded as the type of that genus.? This fine species considerably exceeds the Green Woodpecker in size, and except for its red cap is wholly black. It is chiefly an inhabitant of the fir forests of the Old World, from Lapland to Galicia, and across Siberia to Japan,4 In North America this species is replaced by Picus pileatus, there generally known as the Logcock, an equally fine species, but variegated with white; and further to the southward occur two that are finer still, P. princtpalis, the Ivory-billed Woodpecker, and P. tmperialis. The Picine indeed flourish in the New World, nearly one-half of the described species

being American, but out of the large number that inhabit Canada and the United States there is here room to mention only a few.

First of these is the Californian Woodpecker, Mclanerpes for- micivorus, which has been said to display an amount of providence beyond almost any other bird in the number of acorns which it collects and, as shewn in the accompanying figure, fixes tightly in holes which it purposely makes in the bark of trees, and thus "a large pine forty or fifty feet high will present the appearance of being closely studded with brass nails, the heads only being visible." An extraordinary thing is that this is not done to furnish food in winter, for the species migrates, and after journeying a thousand miles or PS a a FS

1 A patch of conspicuous colour, generally red, on this part is characteristic of very many Woodpeckers, and careless writers often call it " mystacial," or some more barbarously " moustachial." Con- sidering that moustaches spring from above the mouth, and have nothing to do with the mandible or lower jaw, no term could be more inisleading,

2 It often happens that, just as the Woodpecker's labours are over, a pair of STARLINGS (¢.v.) will take possession of the newly-bored hole, and, by conveying into it some nesting-furniture, render it unfit for the rightful tenants, who thereby suffer ejectment, and have to begin all their trouble again. It has been stated of this and other Woodpeckers that the chips made in cutting the hole are carefully re- moved by the birds to guard against their leading to the discovery of the nest. The present writer has had ample opportunity of observing the contrary as regards this species and, to some extent, the Pied Woodpecker next to be mentioned. Indeed there is no surer way of finding the nest of the Green Woodpecker than by scanning the ground in the presumed locality, for the tree which holds the nest is always recognizable by the chips scattered at its foot.

3 The expression Picus martius was by old writers used in a very general sense for all birds that climbed trees, not only Woodpeckers, but for the NursatcH and TREE-CREEPER (qqg.v.) as well. The ad- jective martius loses all its significance if it be removed from Picus, as some even respectable authorities have separated it.

4 The persistency with which many writers on British birds have for years included this species among them is a marvellous instance of the durability of error, for not a case of its asserted occurrence in this country is on record that will bear strict investigation, and the origin of the mistake has been more than once shewn.

WOODPECKER

more only returns in spring to the forests where its supplies are laid up. It has been asserted that the acorns thus stored are always those which contain a maggot, and, being fitted into the sockets pre- pared for them cup-end foremost, the enclosed insects are unable to escape, as they otherwise would, and are thus ready for consump- tion by the birds on their return from the south. But this state- ment has again been contradicted, and moreover it is alleged tha these Woodpeckers fol- p= eee a low their instinct so j : blindly that "they do not distinguish between an acorn and a pebble," so that they "fill up the holes they have drilled with so much labor, not only with acorns but occasionally with stones" (cf. Baird, Brewer, and Ridgway, North American Birds, ii, pp. 569-571).

The next North- American form deserv- ing notice is the genns Colaptes, represented in the north and east by AQ C. auratus, the Golden- winged Woodpecker or Flicker, in most parts f ws OV ced, bakin spond Californian Woodpecker (Melanerpes aud west replaced by Sormicivorus). the allied C. mexieanus, easily distinguishable among other char- acteristics by having the shafts of its quills red instead of yellow. It is curious, however, that, in the valleys of the upper Missouri and Yellowstone rivers, where the range of the two kinds overlaps, birds are found presenting an extraordinary mixture of the other- wise distinctive features of each, and these birds have been de- scribed as hybrids. It would be premature to say whether this view be correct or not, and in regard to it Dr Coues has well re- marked (Birds of the Northwest, p. 294), "that it is only in virtue of missing links we are enabled to predicate species in any case," thereby indicating the possibility (not entertained for the first time) that these supposed hybrids are examples of the more generalized form of Colaptes, which becomes differeutiated further to the north and south into the specialized C. auratus and C.

mexicanus. Thus the subject is one highly interesting to the student of evolution.®

Some other Woodpeckers deserve especial notice,—among them the Colaptes or Soroplex campestris, which inhabits the treeless plains of Paraguay and La Plata, and had become fnlly adapted to a terri- | torial mode of life, as long ago observed by Azara and Darwin, but yet has readily returned, since the opportunity has been afforded, to the arboreal habits of its relatives, as remarked by Mr Hudson (Proc. Zool. Society, 1870, pp. 158-160). A similar provision of habit and haunt obtains in a Sonth-African Woodpecker, Go- colaptes olivaceus, which lives almost entirely on the ground or rocks, and picks a hole for its nest in the bank of a stream (Zoolo- gist, 1882, p. 208).

The Picide offer a fruitful ground for taxonomical speculation. At least three Subfamilies are admitted by all modern systematists—the Woodpeckers proper, Picine; the Piculets, Pecumnine, which are small birds wanting the stiff rectrices of the former; and the WRYNECKS (¢.v.). Sundevall (Conspectus Avium Picinarum, Stockholm, 1866) gave up the attempt to establish genera in the first of these, though he separated the 254 species which he admitted into 4 Series and 30 Tribes, thereby differing from the method of Malherbe, who, in his great monograph of the Family,® recognized 277 species and 19 genera, as well as from Prof. Cabanis, who (Mus. Heineanum, iv. part 2) strove to establish 48 genera in.about three- fourths of the whole Family, and from G. R. Gray, who in his Hand List recognized 4 Subfamilies, 19 genera, 74 subgenera, and 312 species. It seems obvious that until

5 When more is known it will very likely be found that a somewhat similar state of things exists in the Palearctic area in regard to the various local races of, or "species" allied to, Dendrocopus major and D. minor respectively. At present the only cases that seem to be strictly parallel are those furnished by the genera Coracias (ef, RoLLeER) and Huploeamus (ef. PHEASANT).

§ Monographie des Picidées, 4 vols. folio, Metz, 1859-62.

WO0O0—WO0O0

the aid of the anatomist is invoked no satisfactory arrangement can be supplied, and it is not certain that even then will the desired end be reached, for Macgilli- vray, who furnished Audubon with elaborate descriptions of parts of the structure of several North-American forms, found considerable differences to exist between species whicli can hardly be but nearly allied. Some of the most striking of these differences often lie in the form and development of the hyoid bones, and of the muscles which work the extensile tongue. Unhappily the subject does not seem to have been pursued by any other investigator ; but it may be mentioned that some limited researches on the pterylosis, conducted by Kessler (Bull. Soc. Nat. Jfoscou, xvi. p. 285), in addition to those of Nitzsch, indicate that as being also a promising line of inquiry, though one that has scarcely been attempted by any other workers.1 (A. N.)

WOODSTOCK, an ancient corporate market-town of Oxfordshire, England, is situated on a stream formerly called the Ennis and now the Glyme, which separates Old and New Woodstock, about 8 miles north-west of Oxford. The church of St Mary Magdalene, in New Woodstock, is of Nornian date, but has been greatly altered by restoration, and now has Decorated chancel with Perpendicular additions, clerestoried nave, Decorated north aisle and Early English south aisle retaining a por- tion of the Norman doorway, Perpendicular west porch, and Perpendicular west tower. interesting monuments. The town-hall, erected in 1766 after the designs of Sir William Chambers, includes a market-place and the fire brigade station, with public hall and council-chamber above. Almshouses were erected in 1798 by Caroline, duchess of Marlborough, and endowed with £3500, which has been increased by bequest at different periods. The town is dependent chiefly on agri- culture, but the manufacture of leather gloves has been carried on from an early period. By the Municipal Cor- porations Act, 1882, the borough (area about 30 acres), formerly governed by a charter of Charles II., was placed under a corporation. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 20,804 acres), which had been extended in 1832 and ceased to be separately represented in 1885, was 7033 in 1881.

The old manor house of Woodstock, which is supposed to have been built upon the site of a Roman villa, was at an early period a royal residence.

Here Alfred the Great is said to have resided while translating Boetius. At a witenagemot held at Woodstock by King Ethelred a code of laws was published for the govern- ment of the Anglo-Saxon kingdom. Henry I. made Woodstock a favourite residence, and formed a zoological garden there. Wood- stock was the scene of Henry II.'s courtship of Rosamond Clifford, and his frequent visits to the place led to the building of the nucleus of the town of New Woodstock. A first assize was held at Woodstock in 1184. It sent representatives to parliament from 1301-2 till 1885. It was incorporated by Henry VI. in 1453, and the charter was confirmed and extended by successive monarchs, that granted by Charles II. remaining the governing charter till 1882. Queen Elizabeth was a prisoner at Woodstock from May 1554 till May 1555, and after her accession to the throne visited it in 1566 and again in 1575. In 1576 she made the town a staple of wool and yarn. Woodstock was visited by James J. and by Ara- bella Stuart. During the Civil War it was the scene of frequent military operations, and after a siege it surrendered to the parlia- ment 20th April 1646. After the battle of Blenhcim the manor of Woodstock was by Act 3 and 4 of Queen Anne, chap. 4, bestowed in perpetuity on John duke of Marlborough. Blenheim palace, built by the duke from the designs of Sir John Vanbrugh, was completed in 1715. In 1723 the old manor house was destroyed and the site levelled.

See Marshall's Larly History of Woodstock Manor, 1873.

WOODSTOCK, a town, port of entry, and the capital of Oxford county, province of Ontario, Canada, is situated

1 Mr Hargitt, author of many papers in The Ibis on birds of this Family, has undertaken a catalogue of the specimens belonging to it contained in the British Museum.

The church contains many |

on the river Thames and Cedar Creek, and on the Great Western Railway, 80 miles south-west of Toronto. The trade is of growing importance. There is good water- power, and the town possesses several corn-mills and

a woollen factory. Its healthy situation and the beauty of the neighbouring scenery attract a number of summer visitors. The population in 1881 was 5373.

WOOD-WORK. See Buirprne, vol. iv. pp. 476-500.

WOOL AND WOOLLEN MANUFACTURES. Wool is a modified form of hair, distinguished by its slender, soft, and wavy or curly structure, and by the highly imbricated or serrated surface of its filaments. The numerous varieties of the sheep are the niost characteristic, as they are also by far the most importaut, producers of wool ; but the sheep is by no means the only animal which yields wool employed for industrial purposes. The alpaca and other allied fibres obtained from the alpaca and its con- geners in South America (see ALPACA, vol. i. p. 597, and LiaMa, vol. xiv. p. 738), the mohair yielded by the Angora goat (Monae, vol. xvi. p. 544), and the soft woolly hair of the camel are all wools of much industrial importance, while the most costly wool in the world is that yielded by the Cashmere goat of the Himalayan Mountains. At what point indeed it can be said that an animal fibre ceases to be hair and becomes wool it is impossible to determine, because in every characteristic the one class by imper- ceptible gradations merges into the other, so that a con- tinuous chain can be formed from the finest and softest merino to the rigid bristles of the wild boar.

Next to cotton, wool is the most important of all textile Early fibres used by mankind. From the ease with which it History.

may be made into thread, and owing to the comfort derived from clothing of woollen texture, it naturally would be the textile first used by mankind for clothing. The testimony of all ancient records goes to prove the high antiquity of woollen textures and the early importance of the sheep. The different kinds of wool and the cloth made from them in antiquity are described by Pliny (7. W., viii. 73, 74, 190 sq.).

Among the arts of civilized life which the British Isles Wool in owe to the Romans not the least important was the spin- Britain.

ning and weaving of wool. The sheep certainly was a domestic animal in England long before the period of the Roman occupation ; and it is most probable that such use was made of sheep skins and of wool as was common among uncivilized races. But the Romans established a woollen factory whence the occupying army was supplied with clothing, and the value of the manufacture was soon recognized by the Britons, of whom Tacitus remarks, "Inde etiam habitus nostri honor et frequens toga" (Agric. c. 21). The product of the Winchester looms, and the wool whence it was made, soon established a reputation abroad, it being remarked that 'the wool of Britain is often spun so fine that it is in a manner comparable to the spider's thread." The reputation which English wool at this early period established was miain- tained throughout medieval times; and the fibre was in great demand in the Low Countries and other Continental centres where skill in manufacture was highly developed. There are many allusions to woollen manufactures in England in early times; but altogether the native industry could not rival the products of the Continent, although the troubles in various industrial centres, from time to time, caused skilled workers in woot to seek an asylum in England. In the time of William the Conqueror Flemish weavers settled under the protection of the queen at Carlisle, but subsequently they were removed to Pembrokeshire. At various periods in the reigns of succeeding monarchs further immigrations of skilled Flemish weavers occurred, and they were planted at different places throughout the

country. priory of St Bartholomew was instituted by Henry II. ; guilds of weavers were established; and the exclusive privilege of exporting woollen cloth was granted to the city of London. Edward IIL made special efforts to encourage woollen industries according to the manner in which it was supposed in mediaeval times that trade could be best encouraged. He brought weavers, dyers, and fullers from Flanders; he himself wore Flemish cloth; and to stimulate native industry he prohibited under pain of life and limb the exportation of English wool. Previous to the time of Edward III. English wool had been in larger demand on the Continent, where it had a reputation exceeded only by the wool of Spain, which for ages pro- vided Kurope with the best material for cloth-making. The

customs duties levied on the export of wool were an important source of the royal revenue, and Edward III.'s attempt to stop the trade appears to have been an honest though misguided attempt to foster native manufactures. His prohibitory law was, however, found to be unworkable, and the utmost that both he and his successors were able to effect was to hamper the export trade by vexatious restrictions and to encourage much "running" or smuggling of wool, Thus while Edward III. limited the right of exporting to merchant strangers, we find that Edward IV. decreed that no alien should export wool and that denizens should export it only to Calais. Legislation of this kind prevailed till the reign of Elizabeth, when the freeexportation of English wool was permitted; and Smith, in his Memoirs of Wool, points out that it was during this reign that the manufacture made the most rapid progress in the country. In 1660 the absolute prohibition of the export of wool was again decreed, and it was not till 1825 that this prohibitory law was finally repealed. The prohibition appears to have been based on the mistaken notion that England possessed a monopoly of the finest kinds of wool, and that by withholding it from foreign competitors the home manufacturers would command the markets of the world. The results of the prohibitory law were exceedingly detrimental: the production of wool far exceeded the consumption; the price of the raw material fell; wool "running" or smuggling became an organized traffic; and the whole industry became disarranged. Extraordinary expedients were resorted to for stimulating the demand for woollen manufactures, among which was an Act passed in the reign of Charles II. decreeing that all dead bodies should be buried in woollen shrouds,—an enactment which remained in the Statute Book, if not in force, for a period of 120 years. On the opening up of the colonies, every effort was made to encourage the use of English cloth, and the manufacture was discouraged and even prohibited in Ireland.

It was not without reason that the attention of monarchs and legislators was so frequently directed to the woollen industries. Wool was indeed "the flower and strength and revenue and blood of England," and till the develop- ment of the cotton trade, towards the end of the 18th century, the woollen industries were, beyond comparison, the most important sources of wealth in the country. What the actual value of the trade at any early period was it is impossible to ascertain, and the estimates of wool pro-

duction and the value of the manufactures in the 17th and 18th centuries vary widely. Towards the close of the 17th century the wool produced in England was estimated to be worth £2,000,000 yearly, furnishing £8,000,000 worth of manufactured goods, of which there was exported about £2,000,000 in value. In 1700 the official value of woollen goods exported was about £3,000,000, and in the third quarter of the century the exports had increased in value by about £500,000 only. In 1774 Dr Campbell

Wook

The cloth fair in the church yard of the | (Political Survey of Great Britain) estimated the number of

sheep in England at 10,000,000 or 12,000,000, the value of the wool produced yearly at £3,000,000, the manu- factured products at £12,000,000, and the exports at £3,000,000 to £4,000,000. He also reckoned that the industry then gave employment to 1,000,000 persons. These figures, in the light of the dimensions of present day industries, may appear small, but they bore a predominant relationship to the other great sources of employment and trade of the period. In 1800 the native crop of wool was estimated to amount to 96,000,000 ib; and, import duty not being imposed till 1802, the quantity brought from abroad was 8,600,000 Ib, 6,000,000 ib of which came from Spain. In 1825 the importation of colonial wool became free, the duty leviable having been for several previous years as high as 6d. per tb, and in 1844 the duty was finally remitted on foreign wool also.

Sheep were introduced at Jamestown in Virginia in Wool in 1609, and in 1633 the animals were first brought to America.

Boston. Ten years later a fulling mill was erected at Rowley, Mass., " by Mr Rowley's people, who were the first that set upon making cloth in this western world." The factory woollen industry was, however, not established till the close of the 18th century, and it is recorded that the first carding machine put in operation in the United

| States was constructed in 1794 under the supervision of

John and Arthur Schofield.

The prevailing colour of sheep's wool is white, but it must not be forgotten that there are races with black, brown, fawn, yellow, and grey shades of wool. For manu-

facturing purposes generally white wool is, of course, most

valuable, but for the homespuns, which in earlier times absorbed the bulk of wool, natural colours were in many cases desirable and used with good effect. In dontestic spinning, knitting, and weaving, natural colours are still largely taken advantage of, as in the cases of rough yarns, Shetland knitted shawls, Highland tweeds, &c.

As has already been indicated, the distinction between Charac- wool and hair lies chiefly in the great fineness, softness, teristics

and waved delicacy of woollen fibre, combined with a highly serrated surface. These peculiarities are precisely the characters which give wool its distinctive value as a textile fibre, and most distinctive of all is the serrated structure which specially belongs to wool and gives it the important property of felting, upon which many of its applications depend. 'The serrations of wool and the wavy structure it assumes are closely connected, those wools which have the greatest number of serrations being also most finely waved in structure. The appearance pre-sented by wool under the microscope, as compared with the aspect of certain other animal fibres, is shown in fig. 1 (compare vol. ix. p. 133). The imbrications all lie in one direction,—from the root, their growing point, upwards to the apex of the fibre,—so that, while a lock of wool drawn between the finger and thumb from the root end outwards slips quite smoothly, if drawn in the contrary direction from point to root it offers a distinct resistance, and the fibre feels harsh and rough. Under the influence of moisture and pressure, tangled masses of wool thoroughly interlock and mat together, by the mutual clutching of the serrations of the fibres, and it is thus that the shrinking and thickening of woollen textures under washing is accounted for, and the capacity of cloth for felting or fulling is due to this condition of the fibre. The serrations are most numerous, acute, pointed, and distinct in fine merino wools, as

many as 2800 per inch being counted in specimens of the finest Saxony wools. In the Leicester wool of England, on the other hand, which is a long bright staple, the serratures are not only much fewer in number, counting about 1800, but they are also less pronounced

in character, so that the fibre presents a smoother, less waved character. In some inferior wools the serrations are not so many as 500 per inch. A similar difference may be noted in the fineness of the fibres. Saxony lambs' wool has a diameter of from rs00 tO yep inch, whilst coarse Algerian wools may rise to a maximum diameter of about s+, inch.

Other distinguishing qualities of good wool consist in uniformity and strength of fibre with freedom from tender or weak portions in its length, a condition which not unfre- quently arises from ill health in the sheep. In ill-bred wool there may also be found inter- mingled "kemps" or dead hairs,— straight coarse shining fibres which show con- spicuously among the wool, and be- come even more prominent in the manufacturedand dyed goods. Wool also possesses a softness of touch : and an elasticity both in the raw and manufactured = condition which distinguish it from all other fibres. In length ' of staple it varies very much, attain- ing in combing wools to a length of as much as 15 to 20 inches. As a rule the fine ; felting wools are' === short in staple, these constituting carding or woollen yarn wools ; and the longer are lustrous and comparatively straight, and thus most suitable for combing or worsted wools. The latter wools approach mohair and alpaca in their characters, and they are pre- pared and spun by the same class of machinery.

The bulk of the wool of commerce comes into the market in the form of fleece wool, the product of a single year's growth, cut from the body of the living animal. The first and finest clip, called lambs' wool, may be taken from the young sheep at about the age of eight months. When the animal is not shorn till it attains the age of twelve or fourteen months the wool is known as hogg or hogget, and it, like lambs' wool, is fine and tapers into long thin ends. All subsequently cut fleeces are known as wether wool, and possess relatively somewhat less value than the first clip. Fleece wool as it comes into the market is either "in the grease," that is, unwashed,

and with all the dirt which gathers to the surface of the greasy wool present; or it is received as "washed" wool, the washing being done as a preliminary to the sheep-shearing. Skin wool is that which is obtained from sheep which either die or are killed. Such wool is always of inferior value and inuch impregnated with lime from the steeping -pits in the tan-yards in which the skins are first treated to soften and swell the skin for facilitating the easy separa- tion of the wool from it.

The wool market is supplied from almost every quarter

F1a. 1.—Microscopic Structure of Wool. b, Southdown; c, Leicester: d, mohair,

a, merino;

655

of the globe, and the qualities and varieties of the article are exceedingly numerous. The range of woollen and worsted manufactures is also very wide, and the raw material suitable for one section of the trade is not at all fitted to supply other sections. Much more than is the case in any other textile industry we have in the woollen trades practically a series of separate and distinct industries, each with its own appropriate class of raw materials. The main distinctions are—(1) carding wools, in which felting properties are desirable ; (2) combing wools, requiring length of staple and brightness of fibre, for hard-spun non= felting worsteds ; and (3) carpet and knitting wools, in which long and strong if somewhat coarse staple are the essential qualities. Breeding, climate, and food are the main factors in developing and rearing special races of sheep in which the qualities essential for producing the raw materials of any of these sections of industry are secured,

For centuries the finer wools used for cloth-making Merino throughout Europe were obtained from Spain, which was Wool.

the home of the famous merino breed developed from races of sheep originally introduced into the Peninsula by the Romans. Till early in the present century the superiority of Spanish merinos remained

unchallenged, but the Penin- sular War and its attendant evils produced a depreciation of quality concurrently with the introduction of Saxon and Silesian wools, which suddenly supplanted the product

| of Spain, and hold the first place down to the present | day. The Spanish merino sheep was introduced into

Saxony by the elector in 1765, and by judicious crossing with the best native race developed the famous electoral breed. Merinos were carried to Hungary in 1775, and to France in 1776, and in 1786 Daubenton brought then to Rambouillet, whence a famous race developed. In 1802 the first merinos known to have left pure descendants were taken to the United States, and in 1809-10 an importa- tion (4000) of merino sheep was made. The introduction of merino blood has also largely modified certain of the breeds of English sheep, and from them, crossed with the English breeds, Southdowns and Leicesters, have sprung the vast flocks of sheep in the various Australasian colonies, which now bid fair to supply the whole. world with wools of the merino class, and of the very highest quality.

Of colonial wools, which are now by a long way the Colonial most important supplied to the British market, the best wool.

qualities come from Port Phillip, Sydney, and Adelaide, the first of these being excelled in quality as a cloth- making wool by the merinos of Saxony and Silesia alone. New Zealand also yields a very large annual crop of wool of high quality, and the wool of Tasmania is generally of fine colour, sound and uniform in staple. The Cape of Good Hope is the source of a large supply of wool, much of which, however, is unequal in strength and somewhat kempy in character. A great proportion of the wool which comes from South America is seriously deteriorated by burrs, and it is of a character which fits it for the worsted manufacture alone.

The wools grown in the United Kingdom may be British separated into three classes—(1) short or carding wool ; wool.

(2) long or combing wool; and (3) blanket, carpet, and knitting wool. Of short wools Southdown may be taken as the type and best example. It is a

staple of excellent quality, milling well, and suitable either for the woollen or worsted trade. The long wools of greatest importance

_are obtained from the Lincoln and Leicester sheep. These

breeds yield a long fleece of remarkable lustre, and it was the possession of this class of wool which gave England its high reputation in former times as a wool-producing country. A similar quality of wool is also obtained from the East Riding Yorkshire breed of sheep. Cheviot wool

Sheep washing.

656

approaches the Leicester class in some qualities, but is destitute of the latter's peculiar lustre, and is shorter in staple, though strong in fibre, with good milling qualities, which render it valuable for the tweed manufacture. Intermediate between the long and short there are several British breeds, which have been established either by crosses or local conditions and treatment, the most im- portant of these being found in Shropshire, Staffordshire, and Norfolk. The carpet wools are yielded by sheep of the type of the Blackface of the mountainous regions of Scotland, from which is obtained a fleece of long staple but somewhat unequal qualities. Much of the Highland wool is "laid," that is, impregnated with tar, from the practice of the stock-masters of smearing the animals with a nlixture of tar and fat immediately after shearing, with a view of protecting them from the rigours of the climate. Of wools of a special character there may be noted Welsh wool, which possesses properties fitting it pre-eminently for the making of the famed Welsh flannels, and Shetland wool, which being very fine and soft inits nature is almost entirely worked up into delicate yarns for knitting the well-known Shetland shawls and other knitted work.

The weight of a fleece of wool of the various breeds of sheep ranges from under 2 tb in the case of the small Shetland breeds up to 8 or 9 ib for the large merinos and other heavy races, and in exceptional cases a heavy ram's fleece may reach so much as 15 ib; but, taken all over, sheep may be reckoned to yield on an average 5 tb of wool in a year.

Where there is abundance of water and other con- veniences it is the practice to wash or half-wash sheep previous to shearing, and such wool comes into the market as washed or half-washed fleece. The surface of a fleece has usually a thick coating of dirt adhering to it, and in the cases of merino breeds the fleece surface is firmly caked together into large solid masses, from the adhesion of dirt to the wool constantly moist with the exudation from the skin of the greasy yolk or "suint," so that in an un-washed fleece nearly 30 per cent. of weight may represent dirt, and about 40 per cent. the greasy suint, which lubri- cates the wool, while the pure wool is not more than one-third part of the whole. The yolk forms a protective covering to the sheep, rendering the fleece impervious to moisture, and while left in the wool also preserves it soft, pliant, and silky to touch. It forms a kind of natural soap, consisting principally of potash salts with animal oil, almost entirely soluble in cold water. The following analyses of German merino wool—the variety in which suint is most largely developed—illustrate the difference which may result in the composition of the fibre from the simple washing of the fleece on the sheep's back :—

Unwashed Merino. Washed Merino. Momeral mathen. soncece0eds 6°3 16°8 0°94 1°3 Suint and fatty matter…) 44°3 44-7 21:00 40°0 URS WORE 6 sotaciecaes cap gar es 38°8 28°5 72°00 56:0 WOMstihre. tent bec. ooecc bese. 11°4 70 6°06 a7

Wool, however, which is merely washed in the rough- and-ready manner described below still retains great and variable quantities of suint, &c. Where running streams exist, the sheep are penned by the side of the water, and taken -one by one and held in the stream while they are washed, one man holding and the other washing. The operation is objectionable in many ways, as it pollutes the stream, and it dissipates no mean amount of potash salts, valuable for manure or for other chemical purposes. Sheep washing appliances are now largely employed, the arrangement consisting of a pen into which the sheep are driven and subjected to a strong spray of water either hot or cold, which soaks the fleece and softens the dirt. This

done, they are caused to swim along a tank which narrows towards the exit, and just as they pass out of the pen they are- caught and subjected to a strong douche of pure water. After a few days the wool of a washed sheep is sufficiently dry for shearing or clipping, which is there- upon done.

A skilful shepherd will clip the fleece from a sheep in Sheep one unbroken continuous sheet, retaining the form and Shearing.

relative positions of the mass almost as if the creature had been skinned. In this unbroken condition each fleece is rolled up by itself, which greatly facilitates the sorting or stapling which all wool undergoes for the separation of the several qualities which make up the fleece.

Sorting or stapling was formerly a distinct industry, Wool and to some extent it is so still, though frequently the work stapling.

is done in the premises of the spinners. Carding wools are separated and classed differently from combing wools, and in dealing with fleeces from different races the classifica- tion of thesorter varies. In the woollen trade short-staple wool is separated into qualities, known, in descending series from the finest to the most worthless, as picklock, prime, choice, super, head, seconds, abb, and breech, and tle pro- portions in which the higher and lower qualities are present are determined by the qualities of the fleece or the race yielding the wool. In the worsted trade the classification goes, also in descending series, from fine, blue, neat, brown, breech, downright, seconds, to abb. The last three are short and not commonly used in the worsted trade. The greater proportion of good English long wool will be classified as blue, neat, and brown; it is only in exceptional cases that more than from 5 to 8 per cent. is "fine" on the one hand, or of lower quality than breech on the other. Generally speaking, the best portion of a fleece is from the shoulders and side of the animal (1 in fig. 2). The wool from 2 is irregular in growth, and often filled with burrs, . &c.; from the loin 3 it is shorter of staple and coarser,

*a 4 ' *

a ee et vf.

characters which become _increas- ingly pronounced as we approach the 4s tail and hind quar- ss ter 4. The belly

Fre. 2.—Qualities of Fleece.

wool 5 is. short, worn, and dirty, as is also the front of the throat 6, while on the head and shins 7 the product is short, stiff, and straight, more like hair than wool.

The sorter works at a table or frame covered with wire netting through which dust and dirt fall as he handles the wool. Fleeces which have been hard packed in bales, especially if unwashed, go into dense hard masses, which must be heated till the softening of the yolk and the swell- ing of the fibres make them pliable and easily opened up. When the fleece is spread out the stapler first divides it into two equal sides; then he picks away all straws, large burrs, and tarry fragments which are visible ; and then with marvellous precision and certainty he picks out his separate qualities, throwing each lot into its allotted receptacle. Sorting is very far removed from being a mere mechanical process of selecting and separating the wool from certain regions of the fleece, because in each individual fleece qualities and proportions differ, and it is only by long experience that a stapler is enabled, almost as it were by instinct, rightly to divide up his lots, so as to produce even qualities of raw material.

The washing which a fleece receives on the live sheep Scouring.

Drying.

MANUFACTURE. |

is not sufficient for the ordinary purposes of the manu- facturer. The scouring process is thus the first link in the long chain of manufacturing processes through which wool passes. On the careful and complete manner in which scouring is effected much depends. 'The qualities of the fibre may be seriously injured by injudicious treat- ment, while, if the wool is imperfectly cleansed, it will take on dye colours unevenly, and all the subsequent manufacturing operations will be more or less unsatisfac- tory. The water used should be soft and pure, both to save soap and still

more because the insoluble lime soap formed in dissolving soap in hard water is deposited on the woollen fibres and becomes so entangled that its removal is a matter of extreme difficulty. Wool washed with hard water is always harsh to the touch, and takes on dye colours but unevenly, owing to the interference of unremoved lime soap. In former times stale urine was a favourite medium in which to scour wool; but that is now disused, and a specially prepared potash soap is the detergent principally relied on. Excess of alkali has to be guarded against, since uncombined caustic acts ener- getically on the wool fibre, and is indeed a solvent of it. On this account a soap solution of too great strength leaves the wool harsh and brittle, and the same detrimental result arises when the soapy solution is applied too hot.

In former days, when the method of hand-scouring pre- vailed, the wool to be washed was placed with hot soap- sud in a large scouring "bowl" or vat, and two men with long poles kept stirring it gently about till the detergent loosened and separated the dirt and dissolved the grease. The wool was then lifted out and drained, after which it was rinsed in a current of clean water to remove the "scour," and then dried. These operations are now per- formed by mechanical agencies; and, to save soap, it is the practice to first steep the wool in steepers,—tubs having a perforated false bottom in which steam is blown through the wool steeped in pure water. The process removes much mechanically mixed dirt, and softens the other impurities, expanding the fibres themselves, and thus rendering the scouring operation easier and more expedi- tious. In machine scouring the object aimed at is to bring all the wool equally under the influence of the soapy solution, and to prevent it from matting into lumps in its progress through the washing bowls. Usually the wool passes through two sets of bowls, the soap solution being stronger in the first set. The wool is fed into one extre- mity of the bowl, which is an oblong vat, by an endless apron from which it passes to an immersed plate which sinks it into the hot soapy solution, where the whole is thoroughly soaked. It is then carried to the opposite end of the bowl, either by a series of forks or rakes with reciprocating motion, or by sets of iron prongs fixed at a uniform distance on a frame to which recipro- cating action is cominunicated by eccentric mounting. These carry the wool forward by gentle progression, so as not to ball it, till at the upper end it is caught and

squeezed between rollers to wring out part of the water from the fibres, and then passed on for further drying.

The more gently and uniformly the drying can be effected the better is the result attained, and over-drying of wool has to be specially guarded against. By some manufacturers the wool from the squeezing rollers is whizzed in a hydro-extractor, which drives out so much of the moisture that the further drying is easily effected. The commonest way, however, of drying is to spread the wool as uniformly as possible over a framework of wire netting, under which are a range of steam-heated pipes, the sides being enclosed in a framing of wood. A fan blast blows air over these hot pipes, and the heated air passes up and is forced through the layer of wool which

rests on the netting. Unless the wool is spread with great evenness it gets unequally dried, and at points where the hot air escapes freely it may be much over-dried. A more rapid and uniform result is obtained by the use of Petrie's wool drier, which consists of a close chamber divided into five horizontal compartments, the floors of which consist of alternate fixed and movable bars. Under the chamber are a tubular heating apparatus and a fan by which a powerful current of heated air is blown up the side of the chamber, and through all the shelves or compartments successively, passing in the path over which the wool slowly travels. The wool is entered by con- tinuous feed at one side of the chamber; the strength of the blast carries it up and deposits it on the upper shelf, and by the action of the movable bars, which are worked by cranks, it is carried forward to the opposite end, whence it drops to the next lower shelf, and so on it travels till at the extremity of the lower shelf it passes out by the delivery lattice well and equally dried. Moore's drier is a simpler and less expensive form of drying apparatus, intermittent in its action. It consists of a case enclosed except as regards the top, where there are openings to allow the escape of moist air. It contains two tiers of steam-heated pipes, and directly over the top of each tier there is a row of iron rollers of small diameter set close together. Atone end of the machine is a door for

feeding wool into it, and at the opposite extremity is a spiked drum geared to rotate at a high speed. A fixed quantity of wool is fed into the machine at one time and placed on the lower series of rollers. These in their rotation carry the wool forward exposed to the heat of the pipes both above and below, till it reaches the drum, which, revolving rapidly, lifts it to the higher range of rollers. Over these the wool is carried back, till at- the other end it again falls to the lower range, and so it circulates through the machine till the drying is completed. To withdraw the dried wool it is only necessary to raise the outlet door over the revolving drum, when it throws out the contents of the machine as fast as the wool comes within its range.

The dried wool, notwithstanding the several manipula- Teazing.

tions to which it has been subjected, is still in the condition of matted locks, which have to be opened up and the whole material brought into a uniformly free and loose condition. 'This is effected in the Willey or teazing machine, which consists of a large drum and three small cylinders mounted in an enclosed frame. The drum is armed with ranges of powerful hooked teeth or spikes, and is geared to rotate with great rapidity, making about 500 revolutions per minute. The smaller cylinders, called workers, are also provided with strong spikes ; they are mounted over the drum and revolve more slowly in a direction contrary to the drum, the spikes of which just clear those of the workers. The wool is fed into the drum, which carries it round with great velocity; but, as it passes on, the locks are caught by the spikes of the workers, and in the contest for possessing the wool the matted locks are torn asunder till the whole wool is delivered in a light, free, and disentangled condition.

For certain classes of dirty wool, notably such as that Buring.

which comes from Buenos Ayres, still another preparing operation is essential at this stage—that is, the removal of burrs or small persistently adherent seeds and other fragments of vegetable matter which remain in the wool. Two methods of effecting this—one chemical, the other mechanical—may be pursued. The chemical treatment consists in steeping the wool in a dilute solution of sulphuric acid, draining off the dilute acid by means of the hydro-extractor, and then immediately

exposing the wool to further rapid drying in a heat of about 250° F. The acid leaves the wool itself uninjured, but is retained XXIV. — 83

Oiling. There remains yet another preliminary operation through a gentle reciprocating motion is communicated, so that the material which wool generally has to pass previous to the spinning | is felted as it passes on. When duly condensed, the cloth, of processes, As delivered from the drying apparatus the | leathery consistence, is dyed, printed, dressed, and finished, when wool is bright and clean, but somewhat harsh and wiry to required, like ordinary woollen cloths. Felt has extensive appli-

h Keown th loot a Ie welch eat cations, there being made from it druggets, carpets, table-covers, the touc Bs to € eg) 0 e@ york which 1s 1 8 horse-cloths, &c.; the coarser varieties are used for boiler-covering natural lubricant. To render it properly soft and elastic, | and other mechanical purposes. and to improve its spinning qualities, the fibre is sprinkled It becomes necessary here to indicate the specific distinction of Woollens with a percentage of oil, comparatively small quantities | Woollen and worsted yarns and cloth. In a general way it may be and

: : said that woollen yarns are those made from short wools possessed worsteds.

~—by some spinners none—being used for worsted wools, of high felting qualities, which are prepared by a process of carding, but a larger amount being applied in the oiling of wool for whereby the fibres are as far as possible crossed and interlocked woollen manufactures. The oil further has the advantage | with each other, and that these cardings, though hard spun on the of producing contelti adhestwénais of. the ilteyarl TH | er es aiveaing Wace niin aie eerai-oNenCrnnTTiNh

. . : . Vi roug. = spinning process, and thus it enables the spinner to get | 4, milling which is the distinguishing characteristic of woollen a more level and finer yarn, and it prevents loss from the | efoth. On the other hand, worsted yarns are generally made from flying off of te fibres. As the oil is a costly item, | the long lust aa MeO Ie. ey ocowonaihel

ying off of separate fibres. s the oil is a costly item, e long lustrous varieties of wool; the fibres are so combe it is of consequence that it should be equally distributed to bring ae as far poe oe Ae i ee con other ;

. : . : e spinning is done on r rame, e yarn is spun and used De thrifty manner, for which £ nd ve | ih compact, smooth, and level thread, which, when woven into forms of oiling apparatus have been devised, which cloth, is not milled or felted. At all points, however, woollen and sprinkle the oil in a very fine spray over thinly distributed | worsted yarns as thus defined overlap each other, some woollens wool carried by an endless cloth under the sprinkler. be a ae vonge ee Pea eee ey ae a

ee ae +) 3 . +): : eing, when made from short staple wool, also carded as well as Gallipoli olive oil . the best medium for oiling combing combed ; and occasionally worsted yarn is spun on the mule frame, wool ; and for carding wool the liquid olein expressed from | while milling or felting is a proccss done in all degrees,—woollen tallow and lard in the preparation of stearin is employed | being sometimes not at all milled, while to some worsteds a certain with advantage. milling finish is given. The fundamental distinction between the idisnanne. Ab wee: : eae classes rests in the crossing and interlacing of the fibres in preparing eee a ee On Be for se Van OUS Oye || Mou lled yarn,—an operation confined to this alone among all tex- and other processes by which it is worked into useful | tiles, while for worsted yarn the fibres are treated, as in the caso forms ; but pure wool of one quality alone is not gene- | of all other textile materials, by processes designed to bring them rally used in the production of woven fabrics. For many | into a smooth parallel relationship to each other. reasons-—alnong wvhich cheapness figures prominently | _, Woolen sams, as above cxlainl, er exclusiva made by the Caning wools are blended, and to no inconsiderable extent the which carding was done before the introduction of machinery and added material consists of shoddy, mungo, or extract wools | factory-work consisted of square or oblong pieces of board with

(see below). Blending with cotton is also practised, and | handles, one face of the board being covered with card Icather,

for some purposes silk and wool are mixed. The question of which was closely studded with fine elastic steel teeth, pointed 1 1] a alee das : Hleneh in onc direction and bent as in fig. 3. These teeth were strong or colour as well as quailty also determines blending opera- | fine according to the nature, length, and strength of the fibre to be tions, natural coloured wools being frequently intermixed | carded, but the finer the teeth the more

to obtain particular shades for tweeds, knitting yarns, &c. | closely were they studded together. A The various materials to be intermixed are bedded in due ae a pee a oiled — ch NUURUNUOARRETOEEREOELEED

° ° ace on e suriace o one cara 5 ri 5 BSS SSS SSS SSS TAC SSDS proportion in separate layers over each other, and passed a in the left hand, was held teeth Fre. 8.—Card Teeth. through a teazer, from which they issue SO intimately | upward on the lap of the operator, while the other card, held in intermixed that they present a uniform appearance. the right hand teeth downward, and consequently pointed in an

Woollen The processes hitherto described—although woollen ee ieee me re. end jeeheate oe on

anu- ; oe a us taking up a share of the wool which becam ngled in its oe manufacture has been specially kept in view—are more or | oth. In this way, by drawing the one card over he. ober

658

by the more absorbent vegetable matter, and the high heat causes it to combine so energetically with the water left in the burrs that the vegetable matter becomes com- pletely carbonized. The wool is thereupon washed in water rendered sufficiently alkaline to neutralize any free acid which may remain, and dried. The same _burr- renioving effect is obtained by the use of a solution of chloride of aluminium, a method said to be safer for the wool and less hurtful to the attendant workmen than is the sulphuric acid process. For mechanical removing of burrs, a machine something like the Willey in appearance is employed. The main feature of this

apparatus is a large drum or swift armed with fine short spikes curved slightly in the direction in which it rotates. By a series of beaters and circular brushes the wool is carried to and fed on these short spikes, and in its rotation the burrs, owing to their weight, hang out from the swift. The swift as it travels round is met by a series of three burring rollers rotating in an opposite direction, the projecting rails of which knock the burrs off the wool. The burrs fall on a grating and are ejected, with, of course, a good deal of wool adhering to them, by another rotating cylinder.

less essential to wool for all purposes to which it is applied. But from this point the manufacturing opera- tions diverge into three main channels, which may be regarded as almost distinct textile industries. First and simplest we have the felt manufacture, in which cloth is

woollen yarn and cloth manufacture, embracing the pre- paration of carded yarns and of cloth which is so milled or felted as to have the appearance of felt; and, thirdly, in the worsted yarn and cloth industry combed yarn is prepared and cloth showing the yarn and pattern is woven. These definitions must be taken to be accurate only in the broad general acceptation.

Felt is a kind of cloth made without spinning or weaving, but Felt.

simply by the mutual adhesion of the imbricated fibres. The peculiar property is most distinctly developed in the short or carding wools, but all wool, in common with mohair, alpaca, vicugna, and camel's hair, possesses it. Felting properties are also found in the hair of other animals; the rabbit, espeeially, supplies the finer felts used for hat-making, while the beaver hat, which is the ancestor of the modern dress hat, was a felt of beaver hair. Felted cloth is made by the combined influence of heat, moisture, and pressure or rubbing on a uniformly spread-ont mass of woollen fibres. The wool is scribbled or carded out

into a uniform lap of extreme thinness, but of a length and breadth sufficient for the size of the cloth to be made.

repeatedly, the whole of the wool was ultimately separated and equally distributed over the pair of cards. The wool was then stripped out of the cards by drawing the teeth of onc through those of the other in the direction of their inclination. The carded wool thus lifted out was condensed into a loose but uniform round pipe or "carding" by rolling on the back of the card, and these

made without either spinning or weaving ; second is the | cardings were then ready for spinning on the wheel.

MANUFACTURE. |

For the apparently simple operation of carding, the factory machinery is complex, delicate, and very expensive. Ordinarily it consists of three carding-engines, called respectively the scribbler, the intermediate, and the finisher, but sometimes the intermediate is omitted. In each of these there is a complicated series of card- covered cylinders of different diameters running at different rates of speed, sometimes in a contrary and sometimes in the same direction, which are engaged in contending with each other for the

:

ox | Z ZO) fA 9: Fig. 4.—Diagram of Scribbling Card. "2)

wool supplied to the machine, in abstracting it altogether from their neighbours, and passing it on to be again contended for and teased in the operation, and finally passed clean out of the machine. A sectional illustration (fig. 4) of the first portion of a "scribbler'"' will serve as an illustration of the whole operation from beginning to end. The wool is entered to the appa- ;,

ratus by a travelling lattice, the supply being equalized and carefully distributed by a mechanical feed. It is caught between the lower two of a range of three fecd- rollers a, revolving immediately behind which is the

“licker-in” roller 6, which immediately takes possession of the por- tion of the feed which has fallen to the share of the lower or No. 1 feed-roller. The remainder of the feed is carried upward on the middle feed-roller, from which it is taken by the uppermost of the three rollers a, and from it the wool is delivered 4 to the “licker-in.” In this way a certain amount of preliminary blending and in- termixing is accomplished. Against the licker-in revolves the “angle stripper” e, the function of which is to remove the wool from the former and deliver it over to the great breast cylinder, which re- volves at a high speed (surface-velocity about + mile per minute). By the cylinder it is carried on till it comes against a small roller revolving slowly in the opposite direction, called “ worker No. 1” d, which abstracts part of the wool, and carrying it round gives it up to the somewhat smaller roller, the “ stripper” e, which again delivers it to the breast cylinder. Passing on it carries the wool partly to

oo TN los iN a i== ie

Fie. 5.—Single-Cylinder Carding Engine. the second worker f, and stripper g, when the same operation is re-

peated. Continuing its progress, the cylinder with its covering of wool next comes in contact with the “fancy” h, the teeth of which are set so as to pass a little way into those of the cylinder. Its effect is to throw the wool partly out of its teeth and prepare it for being entirely removed by the “doffer” 7, which is the next roller met by the cylinder, and which, like the “ fancy,” revolves in a contrary direction to the breast cylinder. The angle stripper j passes the wool from the doffer to the next cylinder, which is called a “ swift,” and which has the same workers, strippers, fancy and doffer rollers as the breast cylinders. The scribbler contains

three such sets of cylinders and rollers over which the wool passes till it is delivered. The intermediate carding-engine has two swifts, with relative workers, &c., and the finisher has also two swifts and acondenser. In some carding-cngines the swifts are provided with more than two sets of

workers and strippers. This is particularly the case in a class of carding-engines provided with only one swift or cylinder of very large diameter, around which there arc five sets of workers and strippers (fig. 5).

The carded wool, as it leaves the last swift of the finisher card, is Condens- in the form of a continuous equally-distributed lap. To prepare it ing, for spinning, this lap must now be divided into a series of equal strips or ribbons, and these then condensed into a rounded carding or sliver sufficiently compact to bear winding on a bobbin. The condenser for doing this is attached to the finisher card, and con- sists of rings or bands of card-cloth the width of the strips to be made, placed on one or on two cylinders, which rings doff the portion of the lap against which they revolve and yield it up to a stripper. These strips as they pass out are acted on by a pair of rubbers which, bya partly oscillating motion, rub the strip into the form of a carding of rounded loose untwisted fibres, which in the subsequent operation of spinning is easily drawn out to the degree of tenuity required in the yarn to be made.

The mule-frame employed for spinning woollen yarns is the same Mule in principle as, but in some respects modified in action from, the spinning. spinning-mule used for fine counts of cotton yarn. The mule (fig.

6) consists of a stationary frame on which the bobbins of sliver are placed, and of a carriage which travels back and forward a distance of in all about 2 yards from the stationary frame. The carriage contains in a horizontal row the spindles which give twist to the yarn and wind it on the bobbins or paper tubes fixed on them;

Ee

)

i

2

Fig. 6.—Wool Spinning Mule.

and the complicated motions of the whoie machine are regulated by gearing and belting from head-stocks on the stationary frame. The carriage being close up to the stationary frame, the ends of the slivers are passed through a pair of small giving-off rollers and attached to the bobbins or tubes in the carriage. The carriage then begins to travel back on its rails, the slivers being simultaneously delivered to it through the rollers, at the same rate at which it travels, till, say, a yard length is given ont, and as the carriage has been moving back the spindles have been revolving slowly so as to communicate some twist to the sliver; but up to this point there has been no drawing out or drafting. But now the rollers cease to give out sliver, the carriage continues travelling back, and the spindles revolve at a greatly increased rate, simultaneously drawing out the sliver and giving it the requisite twist, till, when it comes to the end of the rails over which it runs, the yard of original sliver is drawn out to 2 yards of yarn and twisted almost enough. The full twist is given while the carriage remains standing at the end; then the spindles are reversed two or three times to unwind a small proportion of yarn which the twisting operation leaves near the point of the bobbin; and lastly the carriage is run in to the stationary frame while the spindles wind the now finished yarn on the bobbins or tubes, an automatic arrangement securing due tension and the proper wind- ing of the yarn.

Yarn, as delivered from the mule in woollen-spinning, or from the Woollen throstle in the case of worsteds, is in the condition known as singles. yarn. For twisting the singles into yarn of two or more ply it is wound on bobbins ; sometimes the bobbins from the spinning-frame are used direct, and placed on pegs in the twisting-frame, which is a mechanism like the throstle, but without the arrangement for

ye LL] I's

Worsted yarn,

Combing.

drafting. The twist is given in the reverse direction from that in which the singles are spun, and thereby the single is to some extent untwisted. Yarns of two-, three-, and five-ply and upwards are made ; these are sometimes redoubled or again twisted together. The yarn may be made up of preeisely the same singles, sometimes different counts or sizes of singles are twisted together; in other cases the colours may be different; and yet again yarns may be made of distinct fibres, such as wool and cotton, or wool and silk, &c. Nunierous variations of the method of twisting are employed to pro- duce loops, knots, and other irregularities in the yarn, for con- venicnce in weaving and knitting fancy textures.

If we adhere to the definition of worsted yarn which distin- guishes it as being made from wool fibres brought as far as possible into a level parallel condition, we shall have to do only with two methods of manufacture, —(1) of yarn from long wool by the method of drawing, gilling, and combing, and (2) of yarn from medium and short staple wools, which are first carded and afterwards combed. But there is commonly added a third class of worsted yarns, worsted only in the sense that they are not meant for felting. These are carpet yarns and lightly twisted knitting yarns, which, being meant to be full and open in structure, are prepared for spinning by carding alone, precisely as in making woollen yarns.

The primitive method of wool-combing, and the simple imple- ments employed till comparatively recent days, when the ingenious machinery now used was invented, will serve to illustrate the problem of preparing long wool for spinning. The hand combs employed were studded with two —sometimes three—rows of long, smooth, rounded, and sharp-pointed steel spikes. The operative was provided with a pair of these combs. He had a comb-post to which he could attach them, and a comb-pot or small stove in which he heated the teeth of his combs and the wool which he worked. The teeth of one comb being duly heated he fixed it in the eomb-post, and taking a quantity of wool previously oiled he dashed it in portions into the teeth of the comb and drew it through, leaving a portion locked in the spikes, and this operation he continucd till the comb was well filled with wool. Then he placed it in the comb-pot to heat up, while he similarly proceeded to fill the teeth of the seeond comb, which in the

meantime had been heating. With both filled and duly heated, he took one comb in his left hand, laying it in his lap teeth upwards, and with the other in his right he proceeded to comb out the locks, beginning first at the tips and working gradually in as the fibres were smoothed and opened out. In the end the combs were worked with teeth close up to each other and through the entire mass, the noils or short fibre being thus entirely combed out, excepting a small quantity left Gs the teeth which could not be reached by the opposing combs.

The typical modern process in worsted-yarn fabrication is that in which the preparation consists in gilling and subsequent comb- ing, as practised when long wool is the staple to be treated. The object of gilling is to bring all the fibres level and parallel to each other, and to prepare a uniform sliver for the subsequent combing operation. The gilling-machine or gill-box (fig. 7) in its essen- tial features consists first of a pair of rollers to which the wool is

Fra. 7.——Screw Gilling Machine.

fed. Beyond these it is caught by rows of steel pins fixed in heavy stecl bars, termed fallers, which rise in close and constant succession immediately behind the feed-rollers, penetrate the wool presented to them, and travel forward with it towards a second pair of rollers which catch the fibre and draw it away. The spike-covered fallers are so called because they travel from one to the other pair of rollers, carried forward by endless screws into which they are

Wood lh

[MANUFACTURE.

threaded, then, falling down, are returned by the action of similar screws operating in the opposite direction, till just under the feed- rollers they rise again to catch the feed of wool, and so continue to circulate. ‘There is thus a continuous line of fallers travelling be- tween feed-rollers and back rollers, but as the back rollers revolve much more quickly than the front rollers, and also draw the wool through them more rapidly than it is presented to them by the fallers, there is a constant and steady drawing of

wool away from the front rollers and through the teeth of the fallers, and this draught tends to cause all the fibres to arrange themselves in the direction in which they are being gently dragged. A set of gill- boxes consists of five or six machines constructed on the same principle, but with the pins of the fallers finer and more closely studded as the fibre travels on and as the orderly and symmetrical arrangement of the sliver increases. From the first two or three machines the wool is generally delivered as a broad lap, and it is similarly presented to the next, but in the later boxes the pro- duct is condensed into a sliver, which is received in large eylin- drical tin cans. Six of these cans are brought to the front of the next gill-box, and the six slivers are, in passing through, drawn into and delivered as one, and, such an operation being repeated three times, it will be seen that any original portion of sliver must be distributed over a great length, and in this way the fibres are brought even with cach other and a very level and uniform strand is produced. In the original form of gill-box the fallers travelled from front to back at a uniform speed, and thus all the draughting was done by the rapid rotation of the back rollers. Now, by a graduated pitch in the screws which carry the fallers forward, they travel at a steadily accelerated rate, beginning slow, and reaching their greatest rapidity just as they deliver the wool to the back rollers, which revolve still more rapidly. Thus there is steady draughting throughout the whole range of the machine, and the wool is at once more gently treated and more uniformly drawn out than in the old forms of the machine.

It will be obvious that the gill-boxes through which long wool passes, while possessing the power of bringing the fibres into a smooth, equal, and regular condition, do nothing in the way of selecting and separating out the long and straight from the short and curly fibres which are always intermixed. To obtain an even and smooth worsted yarn it is necessary to effect this separation, and it is the function of the various forms of combing machine now in use to separate the " top" or long fibre from the "noil" or short and broken wool, and to deliver the former as a continuous sliver of uniform size, The invention of a successful combing machine has been the great triumph of the modern worsted in- dustry, and the introduction of the apparatus led, as is commonly the case with all great inventions, to a vast amount of dispute and litigation, and many

conflicting claims of merit. About 1840 at least three investigators were separately at work on the problem —Mr S. C. Lister of Bradford, Mr Donisthorpe of Leicester, and M. Heilmann of Alsace. Messrs Lister and Donisthorpe conjointly secured a patent for a combing machine, in connexion with which they entercd into partnership, but their patent rights were success- fully disputed by Heilmann under a patent granted to him in 1847, and they were obliged to buy up his invention for £80,000. Since that time much attention has been given to combing machinery, not for wool alone, but also for spun silk and cotton; and now there are many varicties of apparatus in the market for doing what not very long ago was pronounced to be utterly impracticable. The three principal classes of machine at present used for wool-combing are—(1) the Lister or nip machine, which is most suitable for long combing wools, mohair, and alpaca; (2) the Noble or circular comb, principally useful for combing shorter staple or intermediate wools ; and (3) the Holden or square-motion comb, which is applicable for short staple wools. It is impossible here to convey a full con- ception of the delicate almost intelligent manner in which these machines work.

Drawing.

Carded worsted.

Throstle spinning.

Shoddy and mungo,

MANUFACTURE. |

rollers, which thus deliver four continuous slivers of top, and lcave the noil to be otherwise lifted out of the tecth.

The sliver as delivered from the combing machine is made up into a ball by a balling gill-box, behind the back rollers of which instead of a can there is a large bobbin for recciving the sliver, which is wound on it in a diagonal manner from the oscillating rotation given to the bobbin. Such balls of sliver then undergo the operation of drawing, the purpose of which is still further to equalize the strand of fibre, and to bring it into a

sufficiently attenuated form for spinning. The principle of drawing or draughting consists in presenting the sliver to a pair of receiving rollers which pass it on to a pair of delivery rollers, which rotate proportionately faster than the receivers, and to that extent draw out and attenuate the sliver. Supposing the wool to pass through six such drawing frames, six slivers may be fed into the first and drawn out to the dimensions of one; the same may be repeated in the second, five slivers may be reduced to onc in the third, four to one in the fourth and fifth frames; and in the roving frame, in which a little twist is given to the sliver before it is wound on a bobbin, two slivers may be elongated into onc. Thus we have any length of sliver drawn out 6×6×5×4×4×2=5760 times its original extension, and with increase of framcs this extension multiplies enormously. Treating the slivers in nine drawing frames, we may have 8×6×5×5×5×4×3 ×2 × 2=288,000 of extension.

Short and medium staple wools are carded before being gilled and combed. The preliminary operations differ in no way from those employed for woollen yarns. After carding the wool is gencrally washed, previous to gilling in a back washer. The machine consists of two sud bowls or vats provided with immersers and squeezing rollers through whieh the eardings are passed ; then they are carried round two eopper cylinders internally heated by steam, from which they are passed on and delivered by the fallers of a gilling apparatus.

The bobbins of elongated and slightly twisted rovings are now ready for spinning on the throstle spinning-frame, on which it is simultaneously drawn out to its ultimate tenuity, twisted, and wouud ona bobbin. The drawing out is done practically by the same device as the drafting of sliver in the drawing-frame. The bobbins of rove are placed on pegs on the frame slightly canted forward, so that the roving as drawn off comes away at right angles from the bobbin. The rovings pass first between a pair of rollers, and are earried on and supported by small carrier rollers till they reacha front pair of rollers, the upper of which is covered with leather and the lower grooved or furrowed. The space between the back and front pairs of rollers, termed the ratch, is that in which the final drawing is effected, and the amount of attenuation effected is dependent on the relatively faster rate at which the front rollers rotate as compared with the

back pair. Immediately the slender cord has passed the front pair of rollers, twist is imparted to it by the spindle working either on the old flyer principle, on the cup principle, or with the more recent ring and traveller. See also Yarn. The doubling and subsequent treatment of worsted singles are the same as in the case of woollen yarn singles from the mule frame.

The term shoddy was formerly one of some opprobrium in con- nexion with woollen manufactures, but the substance is now frankly recognized as a material of great utility for many purposes when body and warmth are more essential than toughness or elasticity. Shoddy consists of rags and shreds of stockings, flannels, and other soft worsted fabrics torn and reduced to such fragments of the original fibre as ean be made by the operation. Mungo is a similar pre- paration made from rags, and from shreds and clippings of milled woollen cloths, being divided into new mungo made from tailor's waste, and old mungo from rags of all degrees of degradation. Extract wool is that which is recovered from rags of various cloths in which cotton and wool are variously woven together. The wool is freed from the cotton by the same chemical or earboning process which is employed in freeing dirty wool from burrs, viz., by treating the union fabric with a solution of sulphuric acid and heating it in a stove, when the acid energetically attacks and chars the vegetable fibre, leaving the wool unharmed. Shoddy and mungo are prepared by dusting the rags and fragments, elassifying them according to eolour and quality, picking out seams, oiling the material, and then passing it intoa machine significantly called the "devil," which literally rends the rags, &c., to fragments, which look more like dust than fibres, by the exceedingly rapid rotation of a swift or large cylinder armed with powerful iron spikes, with equally strong toothed rollers revolving in an opposite direction. Into the same eategory with these come the flocks formed in the various pro- cesses of finishing cloth, which are, of course, even shorter than the others. Indeed the shoddy manufacturers hold that " anything long enough to have two ends "' is sufficient for manufacturing purposes. The shoddy trade was begun in Batley, Yorkshire, by Mr Benjamin Law in 1813, and, notwithstanding the disfavour with which it was long viewed, it prospered and developed till the shoddy district of Batley, Dewsbury, and their surroundings became the eentre of a great and prosperous branch of the woollen trade entirely

dependent on these disintegrated materials. It is said that as much as 125,000,000 tb of shoddy material is now yearly worked up into cloth in England aloné. Shoddy, &c., cannot be used without a due proportion of natural-length wool, usually one-third of pure wool being employed in spinning shoddy yarn ; but sometimes as much as 80 per eent. of the finished cloth eonsists of shoddy. It finds its way into a very large proportion of woollen goods, but its use is detrimental where tenacity and wear are required, For linings, rugs, wraps, and heavy friezes, pilots, druggets, blankets, &c., in which bulk and warmth more than wear-resisting qualities are required, it is suitable, and it also makes into good light milled cloth for ladies' jackets. Shoddy is practically a new source of textile material; its employment is a utilization of waste, and fur- nishes eheap serviceable textures.

For the dyeing and weaving of woollen and worsted fabrics the reader is referred to the separate articles relating to these processes, But a piece of cloth—woollen eloth especially—as it coines from the loom is very far from being a finished product. Indeed the most characteristic operations in woollen-cloth manufacture are subsequent to the weaving stage. Woollen cloth from the loom, ealled "roughers," has an irregular, slack aspect, very different from the same web when it comes to be sold as, say, broad-eloth, The web as it leaves the loom is still saturated with the oil with which it was sprinkled before spinning, and impregnated with the size applied to the yarn to give it tenacity and consistency in weav- ing. 'To remove these it is scoured with hot soap-sud in a trough having a convex bottom, and fitted with wooden mallets which are made to fall obliquely against the cloth. After being scoured in this way, it is stretched in a frame for burling or perching, an operation which eonsists in going carefully over the whole web, picking out all burrs and knots in the texture, and darning up holes aud open spots which it may show.

Fulling is the one process which is specially distinctive of woollen texturcs,—its results being shown in the highest degree in broad- cloths, doeskins, and other like goods. Every one knows how flannels, blankets,

and hosiery tend to contract with frequent washing, gaining in thickness and solidity what they lose in exten- sion and elasticity ; such shrinking is greatly accelerated when. woollen articles are much rubbed in very hot water. This shrink- ing or fulling is, as already explained, the result of the serrated wavy structure of wool. The operation of fulling or milling is performed in the fulling stocks, or in the more modern milling- machine; but, by whatever agency carried out, the effect is always the same. The old method of fulling by the stocks is wasteful of power, and the blows the stocks give tend sometimes to tear the eloth, drawbacks from which the milling-machine is comparatively free. The cloth to be fulled is well saturated with hot soap and water, and either worked under the falling weight of the stocks or pressed and rubbed between rollers in the milling-machine while so heated and soaped. The more prolonged the operation the more docs the material shrink up and thicken, and a piece of cloth may even be milled till it is reduced to half its original length and breadth. The degree of fulling is a distinctive feature of many different varieties of eloth. In the treatment of broad-cloth, doe- skins, meltons, and all nap-finished cloth, the milling is carried so far that the fibres become densely matted, obliterating the appear- ance of weave, and giving the piece more the aspect of felt than of cloth. Fabrics such as Venetian cloths, and diagonals, &c., to which no pile-finish: is given, are milled only to the extent of solidifying and increasing the substance and strength of the texture, and tweeds are only very slightly felted to give them a dressed surface, On the conclusion of the fulling operation the goods are scoured to free them from soap, which is very simply done by gradually supplanting the soap-sud with pure water, which is tepid at first but is gradually cooled by additions till in the end the cloth is being worked in pure cold water. ;

The cloth that is taken from the fulling-maehine must immedi- atcly be stretched uniformly in all directions by hooks on a frame, so that it may dry evenly without wrinkle or eurl. The fraime may be placed in a hot-air chamber to hasten the drying, or the eloth may be allowed to dry under ordinary atmospheric eonditious. In this operation a pile or nap is raised on the surface of milled cloth. The raising of the pile is effected by the agency of the flower-head of the teasle (Dipsacus fullonum), which forms a cone- like spike eovered with imbricated scales. These scales end in

sharp, recurved hooks, possessed of high elasticity, combined with just sufficient stiffness for the work they have to do. The use of these hooked teasles is to scratch the surface of the milled cloths, and getting entangled with minute surfaee fibres break these or pull out their ends, and so raise over the whole surface a fine but un- equal nap. Formerly the teasles were set together in a flat frame, and by hand the workmen brushed them in a uniform manner over the whole surface of the tightly stretched eloth. But this labori- ous handicraft has long been superseded by the use of the gig-mill or dressing-machine. 'This apparatus consists of a eylinder made to rotate at a high rate of speed. The surface of the eloth to be raised is, in a state of uniform tension, brought in contact with the

Cloth finishing.

Fulling.

Teasling.

Cropping.

Pressing.

Manufae- tures in wool.

Trade.

662

revolving cylinder. An automatic arrangement in the machine regulates the lightness or eloseness of contact of cloth and teasles. The myriads of elastic hooks scrateh the entire surface, disengaging and opening up short fibres, and thus covering the whole with a nap. There are, however, several varieties of pile desired in dressing woollen cloths, and a pile may be raised in a certain class of fabrics for a purpose quite the opposite of that for which other piles are formed. Thus in cloth dressing the object is to get a glossy and smooth nap which quite covers and conceals the under- lying structure, while tweeds and similar goods are teasled with the view of ultimately removing all pile from the surface and leaving the

pattern of the cloth well defined and free from all hairiness. Pile-dressed fabrics are raised by the wet method: that is, the cloth to be operated upon in the dressing-machinc is first damped, and the nap so produced lies smooth, flat, and level in one direc- tion, covering the surface in much the same way as short hairs cover the skin of an animal. Cloth raised dry, on the other hand, throws its fibre ends straight out from the cloth, the action indeed being a kind of eombing-up of all the more loose and open surface fibres so as to prepare them for being entirely cropped or shorn off in order to leave the fabric with a elean, bare surface. Metallic teasles have frequently been suggested and to some extent employed as a substitute for the vegetable product, but hitherto such devices have not proved quite satisfactory.

The operation of cropping was also formerly a handicraft, the worker using a huge pair of shears, and the employment demanded much dexterity and skill to produce a uniform smooth pile or a well-cleaned surface. It is now done with equal rapidity and certainty by a machine which in principle is the same as the lawn-mower. It consists of a eylinder armed with a series of helical knives or cutters, the cylinder revolving with great velocity against the smooth stretched surface of the cloth, partly cutting away and partly tearing off the tips of the projecting fibres which come within the range of its ledger-blades. Four hundred years before the practical introduction of this helical cropping machine, it was invented and proposed for moderna use by Leonardo da Vinci.

With the view of giving lustre to the finished cloth, it is, when taken from the cropping machine and brushed on the brushing machine to reniove the flocks produced in shearing, wound tightly round a huge drum, and boiled, or rather immersed in water heated to from 160° to 180° F., for three or four hours. It is then nnwound, the ends are reversed, winding first on the roller the end whieh was on the outside in the previous boiling, and again boiled. Finally it is pressed in an hydraulic press, in which the cloth is heated either by the introduction of hot iron-plates between the folds or by forcing steam through it in the press, this last process adding to the solidity and smoothness of the cloth and developing the lustre characteristic of a well-finished fabric.

The range and variety of cloths and other textures made from wool are exceedingly great. Under the heading of cloth manufac- tures, there may be enumerated, of piled cloths, broad-cloth, doeskins, cassimeres, meltons, beavers, and friezes. Of cloths milled and cropped bare there are venetians, sataras, and diagonals, which differ in the arrangements of warp and weft in the weaving. Tweeds, which form an important item, are cloths only slightly felted, raised dry, eropped, and pressed. The variety of worsted cloths is still greater, embracing says, serges, sateens, repps, merinos, mousselaines-de-laine, tartans, camlets, Russell cords, coburgs, lastings, delaines, and Orleans cloth. Hosiery forms a manufacture apart, as do also the processes of making carpets, blankets, flannels, shawls, rugs, and wrappers, curtain-cloths, and alpaca and mohair textures.

Asan illustration of the advantages which have resulted from the application of machinery to the many and complicated pro- cesses of cloth manufacture, it has been calculated by M. Alcan that, whereas in the 17th century the labour of more than 10,000 men was needed to produce in one day a ton of cloth from a ton of wool, that amount of work now can be done in one day by about 1900.

Wherever civilized mankind dwell there is found wool produc- tion, with more or less of woollen manufaeture. This fact not- withstanding, the eultivation of wool tends to become increasingly associated with special localities, and from age to age different regions cnter into competition as sources of wool, and the great sources of supply correspondingly change their position. Neglect- ing the produce of Britain, which probably has not varied to any notable extent during the century, though its movement as an article of export has developed greatly in that interval, we may briefly note the vast developments which have taken place in some sources of supply. In 1800 most of the wool, other than that from native sources, used in England came from Spain. In 1810 167 tb was imported from the Australian colonies, and now the imports from these colonies reach 400,000,000 Ib yearly, and the imports from Spain have dwindled to 1,700,000 ib. Similarly the quantity brought from the Cape of Good Hope has grown from about 30,000 ib in 1820 to 61,250,000 tb in 1886. The growth and fluctuation in the imports from these and other regions are exhibited in the following table :—

WOOL

[MANUFACTURE.

Imports of Wool into the United Kingdom from the Princtpal

Countries, Foreign and Colonial (given in thousands of lbs.). a aie South East Total from Spain, | Gorey, | neiela, Africa. Indies, {all Countries.

1800 6,062 412 f oS 8,609 1810 5,592 778 167 pat 10,914

1820 3,536 5,113 99 30 9,775 1830 1,643 26,073 1,967 33 32,305 1840 1,266 21,812 9,721 751 2,441 49,436

1850 440 9,166 39,018 | 5,709 3,473 74,326 1860 1,000 9,954 59,166 | 16,574 | 20,214 151,218

1870 25 4,406 175,081 32,785 11,148 263,250

1880 1,580 7,174 | 300,627 | 51,386 | 29,190 463,309 1886 1,710 3,281 | 401,426 | 61,257 | 34,597 615,998

The exports of raw wool have risen in fairly steady proportion to the imports, springing up from 92,542,384 fb in 1870 to 311,902,741 tb in 1886, the average excess of the imports over the exports each year being froni 200,000,000 to 230,000,000 fb.

The following table exhibits the relative position and progress of the principal textile manufactures in the United Kingdom at various periods : —

Description Persons Employed. Power Looms.

1878, 1836,

1856.

1870, | 1878.

Cotton…...

259,104 |379,213 |450;087 | 482,903 |108,751 |298,847 |440,676 |514,911 Woollen….| 54,808} 79,091 |125,130| 134,344 | 2,150) 14,453 | 48,140) 56,944 Worsted….| 31.628] 87,794|109,587] 130,925 | 2,969) 38,956) 64,654) 87,393 Flax .| 43,557 | 80,262 |129,772| 108,806 | 1,714] 9,260) 35,300] 40,448 Pa lRsusipace- 34,303 | 56,137| 48,124 40,985 209| 7,689] 12,878) 12,546 Totals……. 423.400 |682,497 |862,700| 897,963 |115,793 |369,205 |601,148 |712,242

The growth of the export trade from the United Kingdom in woollen and worsted manufactures from 1820 is exhibited in the

subjoined table (in thousands of pounds sterling) :—

Woollen Total Woollen Total

Porro and Woollen Pte and Woollen reel Worsted jJandWorsted Gana Worsted jand Worsted

*sea Yarns. | Exports. * | Yarns. Exports.*

1820 | 5,586 ora 5,586 1857 | 10,703 2,943 13,646

1830 4,728 122 4,851 1865 | 20,141; 5,100 25,241

1840 5,327 452 5,780 1870 | 21,665 4,994 26,659

1850 | 8,588 1,451 10,040 1880 | 17,265 3,345 20,610

The following is the detailed statement of exports from the United Kingdom from the Board of Trade Returns for 1887 :—

Quantities.

Woollen and worsted yarns…….-.ceseeeees 40,165,100 tb. £3,970,205 Coatings, all WOO].....-scsseseeesscesssensssees 17,175,900 yds. 3,843,872 Do., mingled with other materials….} 29,057,500 yds. 3,682,913 Woollen Stuffs…....-ccccrescccsscseccescescceseeees 49,582,300 yds.

2,311,107 Worsted Coatings…....cccccssssnssessesessessesees 10,038,800 yds. 1,832,072 Worsted (B6088.6..sca-vadsannsaistvscrssesacéassexsey 151,362,000 yds. 5,113,191 IGE ihren Steen nen eden ate (3a ee pe Bae 10,925,000 yds. 416,307 Carpets … rcccccccccesccerssetcscoscecscesscorsceaceses 12,980,300 yds, 1,310,241 Blankets……....cccccoseccsecerssescsvvessesssescessrs 1,578,912 pairs. 545,576 WROSLOTY ccc viswcesucsncsssasesseceuaneesosccsscessesnes 'ee 734,691 Small wares and unenumerated…....+ 794,539 Total… :.cceccccecsessssecsenssee sae £24,554,714

Alpaca ana Mohair YarN……....cceseer eer eeeens 12,196,100 tb. £1,081,971

Particular districts have attained a predominant hold on certain branches of the manufacture, and with great tenacity the industries have clung for long periods to the districts which have succeeded in establishing a reputation for the branches they cultivated. In this way the manufacture of superfine broad-cloths has been long associated with the West of England, specially with Wiltshire and Gloucestershire, and in that district the trade in fine cloth is still chiefly centred. In point of quantities produced, how- ever, and of persons employed, the West Riding of Yorkshire woollen cloth districts far outstrip the West of England, and are the true centres of all industries connected with wool. Of woollen cloths of all kinds the towns of Leeds and Huddersfield are the most important producers. The shoddy trade has been specially developed at Batley and Dewsbury, and the numerous manufac- tures of worsted have their principal centre in Bradford and the populous district surrounding it. Norwich, at one time the eapi- tal of worsted manufactures, and a large producer of shawls, thanks to the immigration of Flemings, has entirely lost its supremacy, probably owing to the superior coal facilities of Yorkshire, but it is yet the seat of no inconsiderable worsted manufacture. The hosiery trade is developed chiefly in and around Leicester, and at Kilmarnock the allied knitting of bonnets is a specialty. Flannels and blankets are associated with Wales ; the carpet trade belongs principally to Kidderminster, Halifax, Glasgow, and Kilmarnock. Shawls are made in Paisley, Alva, and Alloa in Scotland, knitting- yarns being a largely developed industry in the two last-mentioned towns. Tweeds are the

special industry of Hawick, Galashiels, Dumfries, and Aberdeen, and also form an important part of the manufactures of Leeds, (J. PA.)

Imports of wool.

Exports of wool.

Factory employ- ment.

Export of manu- faetures.

Centres of industry.

WO0O0O—WO0O0

WOOLLETT, Wittiam (1735-1785), engraver, was born at Maidstone, of a family which came originally from Holland, on August 15, 1735. He was apprenticed to John Tinney, an engraver in Fleet Street, London, and he also studied in the St Martin's Lane academy. His first important plate was from the Niobe of Richard Wilson, published by Boydell in 1761, which was followed in 1763 by a companion engraving from the Phaethon of the same painter. After West he engraved his fine plate of the Battle of La Hogue (1781), and the Death of General Wolfe (1776), which is usually considered Woollett's masterpiece. In 1775 he was appointed engraver-in- ordinary to George III; and he was a member of the ' Incorporated Society of Artists, of which for several years he acted as secretary. He died in London May 23, 1785.

In his plates, which unite work with the etching-needle, the dry-point, and the graver, Woollett shows the greatest riehness and variety of execution. In his landscapes the foregrounds are distinguished by depth and vigour, the distanees by the utmost tenderness; and his rendering of water is particularly excellent. In his portraits and historieal subjects the textures are varied and well diseriminated, and the rendering of flesh is characterized by great softness and delicacy. His works rank among the great productions of the English school of engraving. Louis Fagan, in his Catalogue Raisonné of the Engraved Works of William Woollett (1885), has enumerated 123 plates by this engraver.

WOOLSORTER'S DISEASE (Antarax, ANTHRAC- MIA, CHARBON, or MALIGNANT Pustutz) is the term applied toa virulent acute malady occasionally occurring in workers in the wool or hair, as well as in those handling the carcases, of animals, chiefly sheep and oxen, which had been affected with splenic fever. The disease, as it is seen in animals, has been described in the article Mourrain (9.v.). The present notice refers only to the malady in man.

For many years cases of sudden death had been observed to occur from time to time among healthy men engaged in woollen manufactories, particularly in the work of sorting or combing wool. In some instances death appeared to be due to the direct inoculation of some poisonous material into the body, for a form of malignant pustule was observed upon the skin; but, on the other hand, in not afew cases without any external manifestation, symptoms of blood-poisoning, often proving rapidly fatal, suggested the probability of other channels for the introduction of the disease.

In 1880 the occurrence of several such cases among woolsorters at Bradford, reported by Dr Bell of that town, led to an official inquiry by the Local Government Board, and an elaborate investigation into the pathology of the disease was at the same time conducted at the Brown Institution, London, by Professor Greenfield.

Among the results of this inquiry it was ascertained— (1) that the disease appeared to be identical with that known by the name of splenic fever or anthrax occurring among sheep and cattle; (2) that in the blood and tissues of the body was found in abundance, as in the disease in animals, the bacillus anthracis, which is held to be the infecting agent in communicating the malady ; and (3) that the skins, hair, wool, &c., of animals dying of splenic fever retain this infecting organism, which, under certain conditions, finds ready access to the bodies of the workers.

Two well-marked forms of this disease are recognized, external anthrax and internal anthrax. In external anthrax the infecting agent is accidentally inoculated into some portion of skin, the seat of a slight abrasion, often the hand, arm, or face. A minute swelling soon appears at the part, and develops into a vesicle containing serum or bloody matter,

and varying in size, but seldom larger than a shilling. This vesicle speedily bursts, and leaves an ulcerated or sloughing surface, round about which are

663 ©

numerous smaller vesicles which undergo similar changes, and the whole affected part becomes hard and _ tender, while the surrounding surface participates in the inflam- matory action, and the neighbouring lymphatic glands are also inflamed. This condition, termed malignant pustule, is frequently accompanied with severe constitu- tional disturbance, in the form of fever, delirium, perspira- tions, together with great prostration and a tendency to death from septicemia, although on the other hand recovery is not uncommon. It was repeatedly found that the matter taken from the vesicle during the progress of the disease, as well as the blood in the body after death, contained the bacillus anthracis, and when inoculated into small animals produced rapid death, with all the symptoms and post-mortem appearances characteristic of splenic fever.

In internal anthrax there is no visible local mani- festation of the disease, and the infecting material appears to gain access to the system from the air charged with it, as in rooms where the contaminated wool or hair is unpacked, or again during the process of sorting. The symptoms usually observed are those of rapid physical prostration, with a small pulse, somewhat lowered tem- perature (rarely fever), and quickened breathing. Exam- ination of the chest reveals inflammation of the lungs and pleura. In some cases death takes place by collapse in less than one day, while in others the fatal issue is postponed for three or four days, and is preceded by symptoms of blood-poisoning, including rigors, perspira- tions, extreme exhaustion, &c. In some cases of internal anthrax the symptoms are more intestinal than pul- monary, and consist in severe exhausting diarrhcea, with vomiting and rapid sinking. Recovery from the internal variety, although not unknown, is more rare than from the external, and its most striking phenomena are its sudden onset in the midst of apparent health, the rapid develop- ment of physical prostration, and its tendency to a fatal termination despite treatment. The post-mortem appear- ances in internal anthrax are such as are usually observed in septicemia, but in

addition evidence of extensive inflammation of the lungs, pleura, and bronchial glands has in most ca:es been met with. The blood and other fluids and the diseased tissues are found loaded with the bacillus anthracis, and inoculation experiments, such as those already referred to, produced similar results.

Treatment in this disease appears to be of but little avail, except as regards the external form, where the malignant pustule may be dealt with early by strong caustics to destroy the affected textures. For the relief of the general constitutional symptoms, quinine, stimulants, and strong nourishment appear to be the only available means. As preventive measures in woollen manufactories, the disinfection of suspicious material, or the wetting of it before handling, is recommended as lessening the risk to the workers.

WOOLSTON, Tuomas (1669-1731), English deist, born at Northampton in 1669, was the son of a "reputable tradesman," entered Sidney College, Cambridge, in 1685, studied theology, and was made a fellow of his college. Whiston states that he " was in his younger days a clergy- man of very good reputation, a scholar, and well esteemed as a preacher, charitable to the poor, and beloved by all good men that knew him." After a time, by the study of Origen, he became possessed, to fanaticism bordering on insanity, with the notion of the importance of an allegorical interpretation of Scripture, and advocated its use in the defence of Christianity both in his sermons and in his first book, Zhe Old Apology for the Truth of the Christian Religion against the Jews and Gentiles Revived (1705). For many years he published nothing, and was left to pursue

his allegorical fancies in peace. But in 1720-21 the publication of letters and pamphlets in advocacy of his notions, with open challenges to the clergy to refute them, brought him into trouble. It was reported that his mind was disordered, and Whiston states that his college allowed him his fellowship, though not in residence, on account of his illness, but that when he appeared at college to prove that he was well he was ordered to go into residence. On his refusing to do this his fellowship was taken from

him (1721). Whiston interceded for him in vain, " the clamour against him running so high." In the " Life" prefixed to the collected edition of his works, his non-residence is de- scribed as only "a pretence for depriving him." From 1721 he lived for the most part in London, on an allowance of £30 a year from his brother and other presents. He continued to publish bitter and scurrilous pamphlets against the clergy and the advocates of the literal sense of Scripture. His influence on the course of the deistical controversy commenced with his book, Zhe Moderator between an Infidel and an Apostate, or the Controversy between the Author of the Discourse of the Grounds and Reasons of the Christian Religion and his Reverend Ecclesiastical Opponents Set in a Clear Light (1725, 3d ed. 1729). The 'infidel " intended was Anthony Collins, who had maintained in his book alluded to that the New Testament is based on the Old, and that not the literal but only the allegorical sense of the prophecies can be quoted in proof of the Messiahship of Jesus. Woolston interposed as umpire in the contro- versy thus started, and, passing from the evidence from prophecy, which alone he allowed, opened the great debate on the evidential value of the miracles of Christ. He denied absolutely the proof from miracles, called in ques- tion the fact of the resurrection of Christ and other miracles of the New Testament, and maintained that they must be interpreted allegorically, or as types of spiritual things. Two years later he commenced a series of Descourses on the same subject, in which he applied the principles of his Moderator to the miracles of the Gospels in detail. The Discourses, 30,000 copies of which were said to have been sold, were six in number, the first appearing in 1727, the next five 1728-29, with two Defences in 1729-30. The pub- lication of the Jfoderator drew upon him a prosecution by the attorney-general in 1726 for blasphemy and profaneness, which was suspended in consequence of Whiston's interces- sion. But the appearance of the first four of his Discourses caused the renewal of the prosecution, and on March 4, 1729, the trial ended in his being found guilty of the alleged crime. He was sentenced (Noy. 28) to pay a fine of £25 for each of the first four Descourses, with imprisonment till paid, and also to a year's imprisonment and to give security for his good behaviour during life, namely, to be bound himself in a recognizance of £2000 and two securities of £1000 each, or four of £500 each. He failed to find this

security, and remained in confinement until his death, though he mitigated its severity by purchasing the liberty of the rules of the King's Bench. Dr Samuel Clarke solicited at court for his release, but Woolston's death auticipated any results of his efforts. He died in prison January 21, 1731.

In his attack on the miracles Woolston does not raise the general philosophical question of their possibility, but confines himself to the task of seeking to prove that the accounts of them as given in the Gospels arc, when taken literally, full of contradictions, absurdities, and ineredibilities, and that thcy must therefore be interpreted as allegory, and emblems of Christ's more mysterious work. In his view, however, that work of Christ appears to be nothing more than to teach the mystical sense of the Old Testament, the best part of which is the "simple golden religion of nature." He evidently had formed to himself no clear theory of the origin of the accounts of the miracles, sometimes ascribing them to the fancy of the writers, sometimes to deliberate invention, and he does not scek to harmonize any such view of them with their emblem-

| atic character, of which he is such a fanatical advocate. Whiston remarks, probably with truth, "When Woolston died he hardly knew himself whether he believed the Christian religion or not." Though it cannot be denied that he anticipated, in some of his criticisms of the details of the miraculous narratives, many points since urged by Reimarus, Strauss, and others, he nowhere exhibits the least soundness of judgment, historical sense, or eonsistency of thought, while his language and illustrations are coarse and offensive in the extreine.

Upwards of sixty more or less weighty pamphlets appcared in the next few years in reply to his Afoderator and Discourses. As amongst the abler and most popular of them may be mentioned Dr Z. Pearce's The Miracles of Jesus Vindicated, 1729; Sherlock's The Tryal of the Witnesses of the Resurreetion of Jesus, 1729, 13th ed. 1755; and Lardner's Vindication of Three of Our Saviour's Miracles, 1729, Lardner being onc of those who

did not approve of the prose- cution of Woolston (see Lardner's Life by Kippis, in Lardner's Works, vol. i.).

See Life of Woolston prefixed to his Works in five volumes, London, 1733; Memoirs of Life and Writings of William Whiston, London, 1749, pp. 231-85 ; Appendix to A Vindication of the Miracles of our Saviour, &c., by J. Ray, 2d ed. 1731; Lechler's Geschichte des Englischen Detsmus, 1841; Leland's View of the Principal Deistical Writers, 1734; Leslie Stephen's History of English Thought in 18th Century, ch. iv.; Cairns's Unbelief in the Eighteenth Century, 1880; Sayons's Les Déistes Anglais, 1882.

WOOLWICH, a parliamentary borough and garrison town of Kent, England, is situated chiefly on the south bank of the Thames, on the declivity of Shooter's Hill, which slopes downwards to the river, 10 miles from Charing Cross by rail and 12 by steamer. The town is irregularly built, with narrow streets, and for the most part mean-looking houses. The spacious level at the summit of the hill is known as Woolwich Common. The feature of Woolwich is the Royal Arsenal, at which the number of men usually employed is about 10,000. It occupies an area of 333 acres, and includes four depart- ments :—the royal gun factories, employed in the manu- facture of rifled wrought-iron and steel ordnance, the principal divisions being the rolling and puddling furnaces, the coiling mills, the boring mills, the tanneries, and the steam-hammers, including one of 40 tons; the royal carriage department, for the manufacture of gun carriages, pontoon trains, baggage and store waggons, and ambulances for the sick and wounded ; the royal laboratory department, for the manufacture of shot and shell, caps, fuzes, &c. ; and the ordnance store department of the army, for the supply of every kind of military equipment. Separated from the other portions of the arsenal are the laboratories for the manufacture of rockets and cannon cartridges. The Royal Artillery Barracks, facing the Common, originally erected in 1775, has been greatly extended at different times, and now consists of six ranges of brick building, each over 400 feet in length. It includes a church in the Italian Gothic style erected in 1863, a theatre, and a library of 40,000 volumes in connexion with the officers' mess room. Opposite the barracks is the memorial to the officers and men of the royal artillery who fell in the Crimean War, a bronze figure of Victory cast out of

cannon cap- tured in the Crimea. Near the barracks is the Royal Artillery Institution, with a fine museum and a lecture hall. On the western side of the barrack field is the Royal Military Repository, where all officers of artillery pass a term of instruction. Within the Repository enclosure is the Rotunda, originally erected in St James's Park for the reception of the allied sovereigns in 1814, and shortly afterwards transferred to its present site. It contains models of the principal dockyards and fortifications of the British empire, naval models of all dates, and numerous specimens of weapons of war from the remotest times to the present day. On the Common is the Royal Military Academy, where cadets are trained for the artillery and engineering services, erected in the castellated style from the design of Sir R. Wyatville in 1801. Within the grounds is a memorial erected to the prince imperial of France, for two years a student in the academy; while near | the Rotunda is a monument erected in 1882 to the memory

of the members of the royal artillery who fell in the Zulu and Afghan wars of 1879. In addition to the great barracks of the royal artillery there are a number of other barracks, and a permanent camp of huts. At the south- east extremity of the Common is the Hubert military hospital. The parish church of St Mary Magdalene was rebuilt, in 1726-29, near the site of the old one dating from before the 12th century. The other parishes are Holy Trinity, St John the Evangelist, and St Michael's and All Angels. 'The Goldsmiths' almshouses, originally founded by Sir Martin Bowes, who was lord mayor of London in 1545, and rebuilt in 1771 by the Goldsmiths' Company, are (1888), on the appropriation of the charity to pensions, to be purchased by the trustees of the present parochial almshouses, built by private benevolence. Behind the Royal Military Academy is a mineral well, " the Shooter's Hill waters" of Evelyn. Near Woolwich Common there are brick and tile kilns and sand and chalk pits. In the neighbourhood are extensive market-gardens. The town is governed by a local board of health, and is within the juris- diction of the central criminal court and the metropolitan police. The population of the

entire parish of Woolwich (area 1126 acres) in 1871 was 35,557 and in 1881 it was 36,665, The population of the district now included in the parliamentary borough, which comprises the parishes of Woolwich, Eltham, and Plumstead, was 74,963 in 1881.

Woolwich (Wulewich) is mentioned in a grant of land by King Edward in 964 to the abbey of St Peter at Ghent. In Domesday, where the manor is mentioned as consisting of 68 acres of land, it is named Hulviz. The Roman Watling Street crossed Shooter's Hill, and a Roman cemetery is supposed to have occupied the site of the Royal Arsenal, numerons Roman urns and fragments of Roman pottery having been dug up in the neighbourhood. Wool- wich secms to have been a small fishing village until in the beginning of the 16th century it rose into prominence as a dock- yard and naval station. There is evidence that ships were built at Woolwich in the reign of Henry VII., but it was with the purchase by Henry VII]. of two parcels of land in the manor of Woolwich, called Boughton's Docks, that the foundation of the town's prosperity was laid, the launching of the " Harry Grace de Dieu," of 1000 tons burden, making an epoch in its history. Woolwich remained the chief dockyard of the English navy until the introduction of iron ship building, but the dockyard was finally closed in 1870. The town has been the headquarters of the royal artillery since the establishment of a separate branch of this service in the reign of George I. An arsenal existed at Woolwich in the reign of Henry VI1., and the laboratory is mentioned in 1695. On account of an explosion at Moorfields, the gun foundry was removed to Woolwich in 1716, but the establishment was of minor importance until the commencement of the Napoleonic wars. In 1860 the arsenal was greatly extended. Formerly Woolwich was included in the parliamentary borough of Greenwich, but in 1885 it was made a separate borough returning one member.

WOONSOCKET, a town of Providence county, Rhode Island, United States, on the Blackstone river, 16 miles from Providence and 37 from Boston. The surrounding country, which is fertile, is devoted to market-gardening and dairying. 'There are 64 miles of streets. The popu- lation (11,527 in 1870) was 16,050 in 1880, being nearly half of foreign birth, a fact explained by its extensive manufactures. The principal industries are

the manufac- ture of cotton and woollen goods; of the latter Woon- socket produces more than any other city in the United States, while in the former industry it is excelled by few. Its importance as a manufacturing town is due to the magnificent water-power within its limits.

WORCESTER, a midland county of England, of a very irregular shape, and of curious arrangement. Some of its parishes are detached from the county, while portions of other counties extend within its boundaries. It is bounded on the N. by Staffordshire, E. by Warwickshire, S. by Gloucestershire, W. by Herefordshire, and N.W. by Shrop- shire. The greatest length from north to south is 34 miles, and its breadth 30 miles. The area is 472,453 acres, or about 738 square miles.

Surface and Geology.—The surface consists of very fine and picturesque hills and well-watered and fruitful valleys, and the county is certainly one of the fairest and most picturesque in England. Its finest hills are the well- known Malvern Hills on its south-west border, the Abberley Hills running north from them, the Lickey and Clent Hills in the east, and in the south the Bredon Hills, which are a continuation of the Cotswolds. The principal rivers are the Severn, which is navigable, and runs through the county from north to south; the Stour, which joins the Severn at Stourport; the Teme, which enters the county at Tenbury, receives the Kyre and the Leigh, and falls into the Severn below Worcester; and the Warwickshire Avon, which joins the Severn at Tewkesbury. The valley of the Severn is appropriately named the Vale of Worcester, and that of the Avon the Vale of Evesham,— the latter being generally considered one of the loveliest valleysin England. The rivers are well stocked with fish,— salmon, trout, grayling, shad, and lampreys being found in most of them.

The chief geological formation of the county is the Triassic, and a line running north and south through the Malvern Hills and the Forest of Wyre ccalfield would divide the hard and ancient Paleozoic strata from the softer and more recent Mesozoic. Black shales, of about 1000 feet thick, rest upon the Hollybush sandstone. near Bransill Castle ; and the Silurian formation extends west of the Malverns as far as Abberley. The sandstone known as May Hill exists in the south-west, reaching the

Herefordshire Beacon ; fossils are often found in it. To the west of Raggedston and Midsummer Hills the Cambrian formation extends; this also is fairly rich in fossils. There is but little of the Old Red Sandstone in the county, but the Carboniferous formation extends from the Forest of Wyre coalfield to the Abberley Hills, and from Bewdley to the western limits of the county. The Permian formation is found near Martley, Abberley, Bewdley, and the Clent Hills, while red marls and sand- stones of the Triassic period constitute about three-fourths of the county. At Droitwich and in the Vale of Evesham limestones and a bluish clay exist; and in the gravels deposited by the Severn and the Avon the remains of extinct mammals have been found.

Climate and Agriculture.—The climate is generally equable and healthy, and is very favourable to the cultivation of fruit, vegetables, and hops, for which Worcestershire has long held a high reputation, the red marls and the rich loams which are so prevalent being good both for market gardens and tillage. Its agricultural production consists principally of wheat, barley, beans, fruit, and hops, in the cultivation of which great care and skill areemployed. The large and well-stocked orchards, the picturesque hop fields, and the wonderfully productive market gardens are the pride of the county, and one of the most attractive objects to all visitors. According to the agricultural returns for 1887, the area under cultivation was 401,936 acres, distributed as follows:—corn crops, 90,785; green crops, 32,709; clover and rotation grasses, 31,519; permanent pasture, 232,998; flax, 2; hops, 2828; and fallow, 11,145. The area under orchards was 18,687 acres; market gardens, 8525; and nursery grounds, 386. In 1881—the latest return—there were 18,871 acres under woods and plantations. The number of horses in 1887 was 20,249, of which 14,155 were used solely for agriculture; cows in milk or calf, 27,808; other cattle, 38,472; sheep, 174,371, of which 75,065 werc under one year; pigs, 33,695.

According to the landowners' return of 1872-3, the total number of proprietors in the county was 21,804, possessing 441,060 acres, with a gross annual estimated rental of £1,685,736. Ofthe owners, only 5796 possessed one acre or upwards. There were also 3415 acres of waste land. The following are the names of the larger landowners :—earl of Dudley,

14,699 acres; earl of Coventry, 13,021; Earl Beauchamp, 10,624; Lord Windsor, 8519; Harry F. Vernon, 7448; Karl Somers, 6265; Lord Lyttelton, 5908; the Ecclesiastical Cominissioners, 5213; R. Berkeley, 4812; Duc D'Aumale, 4604; Sir John Pakington, 4868; Lord Northwick,

4215; and Sir F. Winnington, 4196. ; — Industries.—Agriculture in its various branches is the principal

KOOL, == 84

666

industry of the county. and salt; and a considerable number of people find employment in the quarries of limestone around Pershore and Evesham, and at other quarries of freestone and flagstone. There is not much mining in the county; the largest number of artisans are employed in the various hardware trades, as the making of nails, at Halesowen and the neighbouring villages, and of needles at Redditch, Astwood Bank, and elsewhere. Glass is largely produced at Dudley and Stourbridge. Worcester is famous for its porcelain, its gloves, and its coach-building, and Kidderminster for its carpets. The salt works at Droitwich are as old as the Roman occupation, and there are others at Stoke. There are a large variety of other trades, including crate making, coke burning, alkali, vinegar, and vitriol works, button inaking, leather staining, paper making, and tanning.

Communication.—The county is well provided with railways and canals. 'The roads are good, and the means of intercourse and communieation are excellent.

Administration and Population.—Worcestershire comprises five hundreds (Halfshire, Doddingtree, Oswaldslow, Pershore, and Blackenhurst), the city of Worcester, and the municipal boroughs of Bewdley, Droitwieh, Dudley, Evesham, and Kidderminster. There are eleven market towns. The city of Worcester has a separate court of quarter sessions, and a cominission of the peace, and all the boroughs have commissions of the peace. Itis in the Oxford circuit ; the assizes as well as quarter sessions are held at Worcester. There is one court of quarter sessions in the whole

county, and there are sixteen petty sessional divisions. The shire contains 248 civil parishes, and is mostly in the diocese of Worcester but partly in that of Hereford. The principal places besides the city of Woreester are Bewdley (population 3088 in 1881), Bromsgrove (12,813), Droit- wich (3761), Dudley (46,252), Evesham (5112), Halesowen (7768), Kidderminster (24,270), Oldbury (18,841), Redditch (9961), Stour- bridge (9757), and Tenbury (2083).

By the Redistribution Act of 1885, the county was divided into three parliamentary boroughs and five county divisions. The boroughs, each returning one member, are Dudley, Kidderminster, and Worcester; the county divisions are West (Bewdley), East, South (Evesham), Mid. (Droitwich), and North (Oldbury). The population in 1861 was 307,397; in 1871, 338,837; and in 1881, 380,283 (males 184,205, females 196,078). The number of persons to an acre was 0°80, and of acres to a person 1°24,

History.—W orcestershire was not a district of much importance in the days of the Roman occupation of Britain. By occupying Gloucester the Romans held the valley of the lower Severn, and thence their roads ran to Hereford, and not till Uriconium (Wroxeter) on the side of the Wrekin did they regard the Severn valley as again habitable. This was due to the fact that the greater part of the district now contained in Worcestershire was forest and jungle, not inviting occupation to the colonist. Here and there the Romans held a military outpost, as at Worcester, keeping on the east side of the river ; but the west side was left to the Britons, who found a home on the summits of the Malvern Hills. It was long before the English invaders thought the Severn valley worthy of their arms; but in the beginning of the 7th century the tribe of the Hwiccas was in possession of the lands now contained in Warwick- shire, Worcestershire, and Gloucestershire. The Hwiccas formed part of the Mercian kingdom, and when Archbishop Theodore undertook the ecclesiastical organization of England he set up at Worcester a bishop of the Hwiccas, and the diocese of Worcester continued to mark the limits of the Hwiccan territory till Henry VIII. founded the separate see of Gloucester.

The church was the main instrument of civilization in Wor- cestershire. The abbey of Evesham was the centre of agricultural life along the valley of the Avon ; the priory of Malvern began the clearing of the forest whieh reached from the hills to the Severn. Many other religious houses were spread over the county. There were no great barons, as much of the land was given in early times to the church, and much consisted of forest which was only slowly cleared. The bishop of Worcester was the undoubted head of the district, and provided for its defence. The chief historical event connected with the county in the Middle Ages, the battle of Evesham, was owing to the fact that Walter de Cantilupe, bishop of Worcester, was a firm friend and adherent of Simon de Montfort in his opposition to the misgovernment of Henry III. When Earl Simon had seized the king's person in the battle of Lewes, the chief opposition to his government was raised by the lords marchers on the Welsh borders. Simon went to Hereford for the purpose of reducing them to submission; but Edward's escape from captivity gave them a leader, and awakened the hopes of the royalists. Simon sent for reinforcements, but his son was sur- prised and cut off at Kenilworth. Ignorant of the fact, but afraid to wait any longer lest the passage of the Severn should be closed against him, Simon withdrew to the friendly territory of the bishop of Worcester, aud took up his abode in the abbey of Evesham. There in 1265 he was surprised by Edward, and died fighting a hopeless fight.

As Wales became more settled, Worcester developed its trade

WORCESTER

Its mineral wealth consists of coal, iron, | slowly. From early times the salt mines at Droitwich were worked,

and a "salt-way " was made for the carriage of their produce. A trade with Wales and Bristol was established, and clothiers sent their wares from Bewdley and Worcester down the Severn. The dissolution of the monasteries affected very seriously a district whieh was so closely connected with the church, and it was some time before it recovered from the shock which its soeial life then received. In the great civil war Worcestershire, in common with the west of England, was Royalist, and suffered considerably from the Parliamentary forces. In 1651 Charles II.

with the Scottish army marched to Worcester, where he was weleomed by the citizens. Cromwell followed, and took up his position on the Red Hill just outside the city gates. Lambert succeeded in passing the Severn at Upton, and drove back the Royalist troops to the neighbourhood of Worcester, on the other side of the Severn. Charles determined to take advantage of this division of the Parliamentary army on the two sides of the river, and made an attack on Cromwell's camp. At first he was successful, but Crom- well was reinforced by Lambert's troops from the other side in time to drive back Charles's foot, who were not supported by the Scottish horse. Their rout was complete ; Charles managed to escape into the city, where he escaped in disguise, and began his adventurous journey to Boscobel. Since that time Worcestershire has pursued a eourse of peaceful development.

See Nash, History of Worcestershire (2 vols. fol., 1799); Chambers, Biographical Illustrations of Worcestershire (1820); Turberville, Worcestershire in the 19th Century (1852); Allies, Antiquities and Folk-Lore of Worcestershire (1852), and Noake, Guide to Worcestershire (1868).

WORCESTER, an episcopal city, municipal and parlia- mentary borough, the capital of the above county, and a county of itself, is situated on the eastern bank of the Severn, 120 miles from London by rail, and a little over 26 from Birmingham.

The principal building and chief glory of the city is the cathedral. The see was founded by the advice of Arch-_ bishop Theodore in 673, though, owing to opposition on the

Plan of Worcester.

till 780. In its formation the tribal division was followed, and it contained the people of the Hwiccas. The bishop's church of St Peter's, with its secular canons, was absorbed by Bishop Oswald into the monastery of St Mary. The canons became monks, and in 983 Oswald finished the building of a new monastic cathedral. After the Norman Conquest the saintly bishop of Worcester, Wulfstan, was the only English prelate who

was left in possession of his see. He so far adopted Norman customs as to undertake

W OC Ss F HR

the building of a great church of stone according to the Norman pattern. In 1088 an incursion of the Welsh stopped his labours for a time, but in 1094 he held a synod in the crypt. Of the work of Wulfstan, the outer walls of the nave, aisles, a part of the walls of the tran- septs, some shafts, and the crypt remain. The crypt is apsidal, a style of which there are only four examples in England—Winchester, 1079; Worcester, 1084; Glou- cester, 1089 ; and Canterbury, 1096. Wulfstan's building seenis to have extended no farther than the transepts, but the nave was continued, though much of it was destroyed by the fall of the central tower in 1175. In 1203 Wulfstan was canonized, and the monks, growing richer by the offerings at his shrine, finished the cathedral in 1216. Soon after this date they built a lady chapel at the east end, extending the building by 50 feet; then they were so satisfied with their new work that the choir was rebuilt to match in the Early English style. The nave was sunilarly remodelled in the 14th century, the north side in the Decorated, the south side in the Perpendicular style. The building is cruciform, and is without transept aisles, but has secondary transepts to the choir. The tower is in the centre, and is 162 feet high. There is an interesting chapter house of Late Norman architecture, a round build- ing with its stone roof supported on a central pillar. The refectory is a fine room of Decorated architecture, and the cloisters are Perpendicular. The cathedral was very much out of repair in 1857, when the restoration was undertaken by the cathedral architect, Mr Perkins, in which most of the work of previous generations was wholly swept away, and in some important particulars replaced by conjectural work of Early English style. The cost was about £100,000, raised principally by publie subscription, though for four years the dean and chapter had provided the funds required.

In the cathedral are several good monuments and-

monumental effigies. That of King John, in the choir, is the earliest sepulchral effigy of an English king in the country. There is an altar tomb, in a chantry chapel, of Arthur, prince of Wales, son of Henry VII.,

who died in 1503. There are also monuments of Jolin Gauden, the bishop who wrote Icon Basilike, so often attributed to Charles I., of Bishop Hough by Roubillac, and of Mrs Digby by Chantrey. There are many other monuments ; and in the north alley of the cloister is a stone ou which is cut the sad and significant word " Miserrimus," and nothing more—a tragedy in a single word.

There are eleven parish churchesin the city :—St Helen's, the oldest, was rebuilt in 1820; St Albans, ancient, partially restored in 1850 ; All Saints, built in 1740, which contains a peal of ten bells; St Andrew's, repewed in 1850 ; St Nicholas, begun in 1728 and finished in 1730; St Martin's, erected in 1772; St Swithin's, in 1736; St Peter's, dating from 1686, which has annexed to it the chapelry of Whittington; St Michael's, in Bedwardine, modern ; St John's, Bedwardine, made a parish church in 1371; and St Clement's, built in 1823. In 1874 a parish was formed out of Claines, named the Tything, and in 1876 the church (St Mary Magdalene) was built; St Paul's was built in 1837, and constituted a separate parish in 1844; St George's, built by subscription in 1830, was made a parish out of Claines, in 1862; Holy Trinity, erected in 1865, was formed a parish in 1866. There are also a Roman Catholic chapel and places of worship for all descriptions of Dissenters.

There are no remains of the old castle of Worcester ; it adjoined the monastery so closely that King John gave its yard to the monks, and after that time it ceased to be a stronghold. The Commandery, founded by St Wulfstan in 1095, is one of the "rarest specimens of early house

architecture in existence." The hall contains an open timber roof of the time of Henry VIL, "a good bay window, a fine door, the projecting canopy of the dais, a music-screen and gallery, and some fragments of stained glass." The cathedral grammar school, founded by Henry VIII. in 1541, occupies the refectory of the old monastery, which has just been restored by Mr Christian, and hay many interesting architectural features.

The guild-hall, built in 1723, is an admirable building in the Ltalian style; it contains a portrait of George III, painted by Sir Joshua Reynolds, and presented by the king to commemorate his visit to the city at the triennial musical festival in 1788. The corporation possess some very interesting old charters and manuscripts, and good municipal regalia. The shire-hall, erected in 1835 at a cost of £35,000, is a fine stone building in the Ionic style, with a portico supported by six fluted columns. The county jail, built in 1809 at a cost of £19,000, was entirely reconstructed on the separate principle in 1860, at a further cost of £24,000. The infirmary was built in 1770, the dispensary in 1822, and the ophthalmic insti- tution in 1866, There is a museum of natural history; and a free library was opened in 1881. Worcester has long been famous for several important branches of industry. The Clothiers' Company possess a charter granted by Queen Elizabeth ; but the great industries are now the manufac- ture of gloves and of porcelain. A company of glovers was incorporated in 1661; it is principally occupied with the making of skin gloves, in which the skins of deer, sheep, lambs, goats, and kids are used. The manufacture of porcelain was introduced by Dr Wall, a Worcester physician, in 1751 (see vol. xix. p. 642). The materials employed are china clay and china stone from Cornwall, felspar from Sweden, fire-clay from Stourbridge and Broseley, marl, flint, and calcined bones. Pickles and sauces are among the notable productions of the city: and among its other trades are those of carriage making, rope and twine spinning, boat and barge building, tanning, and the production of chemical manures and of cider and perry.

The charities of Worcester are numerous, and include St Oswald's hospital, Nash's almshouses, Wyatt's alms- houses, the Berkeley hospital, Goulding hospital, Shew- ring's hospital, Inglethorpe's almshouses, Waldgrave's alms- houses, Moore's blue-coat school, Queen Elizabeth's charity, and others, which produce an annual income of more than £10,000. The population of the city and municipal borough (area 1263 acres) in 1871 was 33,226 and in 1881 it was 33,956. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 3266 acres) in 1871 was 38,116 and ia 1881 it was 40,354,

Among the charters still preserved in the guild-hall is one of Richard I. dated November 12, 1189, which grants to the burgesses to hold of the

king and his heirs the town of Worcester at a yearly rental of £24. In the reign of Philip and Mary the town was raised to the dignity of a city, and this with other privileges was confirmed by Elizabeth in 1558; and in 1622 James I. granted a charter ordaining that the city shall be a free city of itself, and a county separate from all other countics. From the time of Edward I, until 1885 Worcester returned two membcrs to parliament, but the number was then reduced to one. Municipally the city is divided into five wards. The county assizes are held in the city, as are also the quarter sessions, the county court, the borough court, town and county petty sessions, and the ecclesiastical and probate court.

The Romans found a British settlement and held it as a military station, to which they gave the name Vigorna. By the Saxons it was called Wigorna-ceaster, whence we have tlre present name of Worcester. It was more than once burnt and pillaged by the Danes, but at the date of the Conquest it was of sufficient import- anee to havea mint. From its proximity to Wales, it frequently suffered from the inroads of the Welsl. It was taken by the

empress Maud, and retaken by Stephen, after severe contests, The king kept the Easter week there in 1139,—as it is recorded, with

‘“‘oreat pomp”; and in 1234 Henry III. held the Whitsuntide festival in the city. Queen Elizabeth rested there in one of her progresses; in 1687 James Il. came, and touched for the king’s evil. He attended mass in the Catholic chapel; but the mayor and the corporation, though accompanying him to the chapel door, firmly and patriotically declined to enter.

For the part this city took in the great civil war sce p. 666.

WORCESTER, a city and the county seat of Worcester county, Massachusetts, United States, is situated in a region of Glacial hills, lakes, and ponds, which form varied and pleasing landscapes, 39 miles west of Boston. Besides the closely-built portion, the city includes a large suburban district, which contains fourteen villages of various sizes. The closely-built portion is very irregularly laid out, con- forming in some

degree to the slope of the ground. ‘There are 197 niles of streets, very little of which is paved. The public parks have an aggregate area of 35 acres. The population in 1885 was 68,389 (20,182, or 29°51 per cent. of foreign birth). The proportion of coloured people was very small, The manufacturing industries are very large and varied; prominent among them are the manufactures of iron and steel, foundryand machine shop products and tools, and second to these the manufacture of boots and shoes.

The settlement of Worcester began in 1718. Earlier attempts had been made, but the incursions of Indians had frustrated them. 1t was incorporated as a town in 1722, but made very slow progress in growth until the completion of the Boston and Worcester (now

3oston and Albany) Railroad in 1835. Since that date, with the extension of its railroad connexions, it has developed rapidly. In 1848 it received a city charter, and at present itis the third eity of the State in population and wealth. The population, which in 1765 was 1478 and in 1790 was 2095, rose to 4173 in 1830, 7497 in 1840, 17,049 in 1850, 41,105 in 1870, and 58,291 in 1880.

WORCESTER, FLorencE oF. See vol. ix. p. 337.

WORDSWORTH, Wittiam (1770-1850), the poet, was born at Cockermouth, on the Derwent, in Cumber- land, on the 7th of April 1770. His parentage offers a curious parallel to Scott’s: he was the son of an attorney, law-agent to the earl of Lonsdale, a prosperous man in his profession, descended from an old Yorkshire family of landed gentry. On the mother’s side also Wordsworth was connected with the middle territorial class: his nother, Anne Cookson, was the daughter of a well-to-do mercer in Penrith, but her mother was a Crackanthorpe, whose ancestors had been lords of the manor of New- biggin, near Penrith, from the time of Edward III. He was thus, as Scott put it in his own case, come of “gentle” kin, and like Scott he was proud of it, and dictated the fact in his short fragment of prose auto- biography. The country squires and farmers whose blood flowed in Wordsworth’s veins were not far enough above local life to be out of sympathy with it, and the poet’s interest in the

common scenes and common folk of the North country hills and dales had a traceable hereditary bias.

Though his parents were of sturdy stock, both died prematurely, his mother when he was five years old, his father when he was thirteen, the ultimate cause of death in his mother's case being exposure to cold in "a best bedroom" in London, in his father's exposure on a Cuniberland hill, where he had been befogged and lost his way. At the age of eight Wordsworth was sent to school at Hawkshead, in the Esthwaite valley in Lanca- shire. His father died while he was there, and at the age of seventeen he was sent by his uncle to St John's College, Cambridge. He did not distinguish himself in the studies of the university, and for some time after taking his degree of B.A., which he did in January 1791, he showed what seemed to his relatives a most perverse reluctance to adopt any regular profession. His mother had noted his "stiff, moody, and violent temper" in childhood, and it seemed as if this family judgment was to be confirmed

in his manhood, After taking his degree, he was pressed |

to take holy orders, but would not; he had no taste for the law; he idled a few months aimlessly in London, a few months more with a Welsh college friend, with whom he had made a pedestrian tour in France and Switzerland during his last Cambridge vacation ; then in the November of 1791 he crossed to France, ostensibly to learn the language, made the acquaintance of revolu- tionaries, sympathized with them vehemently, and was within an ace of throwing in his lot with the Brissotins to give them the steady direction that they needed. When it came to this, his relatives cut off his supplies, and he was obliged to return to London towards the close of 1792. But still he resisted all pressure to enter any of the regular professions, published An Lvening Walk and Descriptive Sketches in 1793, and in 1794, still moving about to all appearance in stubborn aimlessness among his friends and relatives, had no more rational purpose of livelihood than drawing up the prospectus of a periodical of strictly republican principles to be called ''The Phil- anthropist." At this

stage, at the age of twenty-four, Wordsworth seemed to his friends a very hopeless and impracticable young man.

But all the time from his boyhood upwards a great purpose had been growing and maturing in his mind. The Prelude expounds in lofty impassioned strain, treat- ing of simple facts in diction that would be "poetic" beyond the worst extravagances of the panegyrical school but for the genuine emotion that inspires its amplitude of phrase, how his sensibility for nature was "augmented and sustained," and how it never, except for a brief interval, ceased to be "creative" in the special sense of his subsequent theory. But it is with his feelings towards nature that Zhe Prelude mainly deals; it says little re- garding the history of his ambition to express those feelings in verse. It is the autobiography, not of the poet of nature, but of the worshipper and priest. The salient incidents in the history of the poet he communi- cated in prose notes and in familiar discourses. And it appears that, while he was still a schoolboy of fourteen, the delight that he took in contemplating and moralizing from nature was mingled with the enthusiasm of a poet's ainbition and joy in the discovery of a fresh imperfectly worked field. Commenting on the couplet in the Evening Walk—

" And, fronting the bright west, yon oak entwines Its darkening boughs and leaves in stronger lines—" he said :

"This is feebly and imperfectly exprest ; but J recollect distinctly the very spot where this first struck me. It was on the way between Hawkshead and Ambleside, and gave me extreme pleasure. The moment was important in my poctical history; for I date from it my consciousness of the infinite variety of natural appearances which had becn unnoticed by the poets of any age or country, so far as I was acquainted with them; and I made a resolution to supply in some degree the defieieney. I could not at that time have been above fourteen years of age."

About the same time he wrote, as a school task at Hawkshead, verses that show considerable acquaintance with the poets of his own country at least, as well as some previous practice in the art of verse-making.' The fragment that stands at the beginning of his collected works, recording a resolution to end his life among his

1 Memoirs of William Wordsworth, by Canon Wordsworth, vol. i. pp. 10, 11. Aceording to his own statement in the memoranda die- tated to his biographer, it was the suecess of this exercise that ' put it into his head to eompose verses from the impulse of his own mind." The resolution to supply the deficiencics of poetry in the exact de- seription of natural appearances was probably formed while he was in this state of boyish eestasy at the accidental revelation of his own powers. The date of his beginnings as a poet is confirmed by the lines in The Idiot Boy, written in 1798—*

"T to the Muses have been bound These fourteen years by strong indentures."

WORDS

native hills, was the conclusion of a long poem written while he was still at school. And, undistinguished as he was at Cambridge in the contest for academic honours, the Evening Walk, his first publication, was written during his vacations! He published it in 1793, to show, as he said, that he could do something, although he had not distinguished himself in university work. It is significant of his persistency of purpose that in this poem, as well as in the Descriptive Sketches founded on his tour abroad during his last vacation, he is seen to be steadily fulfill- ing his resolution to supply defects in the minute descrip- tion of nature. There are touches here and there of the bent of imagination that became dominant in him soon afterwards, notably in the moral aspiration that accom- panies his Kemembrance of Collins on the Thames :— "O glide, fair stream! for ever so Thy quiet soul on all bestowing, Till all our minds for ever flow As thy deep waters now are flowing." But in the main this first publication represents the poet in the stage described in the twelfth book of Zhe Prelude :— " Bent overmuch on superficial things, Pampering myself with meagre novelties Of colour and proportion ; to the moods Of time and season, to the moral power, The affections, and the spirit of the place Insensible." i Nature was little more than a picture-gallery to him ; the pleasures of the eye had all but absolute dominion ; and he " Roamed from hill to hill, from rock to rock, Still craving combinations of new forms, New pleasures, wider empire for the sight, Proud of her own

endowments, and rejoiced To lay the inner faculties asleep." But, though he had not yet found his distinctive aim as a poet, he was inwardly bent, all the time that his relatives saw in him only a wayward and unpromising aversion to work in any regular line, upon poetry as " his office upon earth."

In this determination he was strengthened by his sister Dorothy, who witli rare devotion consecrated her life henceforward to his service. A timely legacy enabled them to carry their purpose into effect. A friend of his, whom he had nursed in a last illness, Raisley Calvert, son of the steward of the duke of Norfolk, who had large estates in Cumberland, died early in 1795, leaving him a legacy of £900. And here it may be well to notice how opportunely, as De Quincey half-ruefully remarked, money always fell in to Wordsworth, enabling him to pursue his poetic career without distraction. Calvert's bequest came to him when he was on the point of concluding an engage- ment as a journalist in London. On it and other small resources he and his sister, thanks to her frugal manage- ment, contrived to live for nearly eight years. By the end of that time Lord Lonsdale, who owed Wordsworth's father a large sum for professional services, and had steadily refused to pay it, died, and his successor paid the debt with interest. is wife, Mary Hutchinson, whom he married in 1802, brought him some fortune; and in 1813, when in spite of his plain living his family began to press upon his income, he was appointed stamp- dis- tributor for Westmorland, with an income of £500, after- wards nearly doubled by the increase of his district. By this succession of timely godsends, Wordsworth, though

1 In The Prelude, book iv., he speaks of himself during his first vaeation as " harassed with the toil of verse, much pains and little progress." To the same time belongs an incident recorded later in the same book, when he was returning in early morning from a dance—

'« My heart was full: I made no vows, but vows Were then made for me; bond unknown to me Was given, that I should be, else sinning greatly, – A dedicated spirit."

he did not escape some periods of sharp anxiety, was saved from the necessity of turning aside from his vocation.

To return, however, to the course of his life from the time when he resolved to labour with all his powers in the office of poet. 'The first two years, during which he lived with his self-sacrificing sister at Racedown, in Dorset, were spent in half-hearted and very imperfectly successful experiments, satires in imitation of Juvenal, the tragedy of The Borderers,? and a poem in the Spenserian stanza, the poem now entitled Guilt and Sorrow. Wow much longer this time of doubtful self-distrustful endeavour might have continued is a subject for curious speculation; an end was put to it by a fortunate incident, a visit from Coleridge, who had read his first publication, and seen in it, what none of the public critics had discerned, the advent of "an original poetic genius." It would be impossible to exaggerate the importance for Wordsworth of the arrival of this enthusiastic Columbus. Under his sister's genial influence he was groping his way doubtfully out of the labyrinth of poetic conventions, beginning to see a new pathos and sublimity in human life, but not yet con- vinced except by fits and starts of the rightness of his own vision. Stubborn and independent as Wordsworth was, he needed some friendly voice from the outer world to give him confidence in himself. Coleridge rendered him this indispensable service. He had begun to seek his themes in*

"Sorrow, that is not sorrow, but delight ;

And miserable love, that is not pain

To hear of, for the glory that redounds

Therefrom to human kind, and what we are." He read to his visitor one of these experiments, the story of the ruined cottage, afterwards introduced into the first book of Zhe Excursion. Coleridge, who had already seen original poetic genius in the poems published before, was enthusiastic in his praise of them as having "a character, by books not hitherto reflected," and his praise gave new heart and hope to the poet hitherto hesitating and un- certain.

June 1797 was the date of this memorable visit. So pleasant was the companionship on both sides that, when Coleridge returned to Nether Stowey in Somerset, Words- worth at his instance changed his quarters to Alfoxden, within a mile and a half of Coleridge's temporary resi- dence, and the two poets lived in almost daily intercourse for the next twelve months. During that period Words- worth's powers rapidly expanded and matured; ideas that had been gathering in his mind for years, and lying there in dim confusion, felt the stir of a new life, and ranged themselves in clearer shapes under the fresh quickening breath of Coleridge's swift and discursive

2 Not published till 1842. For the history of this tragedy see Memoirs, vol. i. p. 118; for a sound, if severe, eriticism of it, Mr Swinburne's AMiscellanies, p. 118. And yet it was of the blank verse of The Borderers that Coleridge spoke when he wrote to Cottle that "he felt a little man by the side of his friend."

3 The charaeter of Dorothy Wordsworth is shown in the extracts from her Journal printed in the Memoirs, and in her Lecollections of & Tour in Scotland, edited by the late Principal Shairp, 1874. The poet's aeknowledgments of obligation to her were not mere grateful words thrown ont at random—

- *She gave me eyes, she gave me ears,*

And humble cares, and delicate fears;

A heart, the fountain of sweet tears,

And love, and faith, and joy." The fourteenth book of The Prelude espeeially enables us to under- stand the full meaning of this enlogium, every word of whieh has been earefully weighed. This book contains a complete picture of the state of mind in which Coleridge found the poet, when he " seemed to gain elear sight of a new world—a world, too, that was fit to be transmitted and made visible to other eyes."

4 The version read to Coleridge, however, must have been in Spen- serian stanzas, if Coleridge was right in his reeolleetion that it was in the same

metre with The Female Vagrant, the original title of Guilt and Sorrow.

670

dialectic. The radiant restless vitality of the more vari- ously gifted man stirred the stiffer and more sluggish nature of the recluse to its depths, and Coleridge's quick and generous appreciation of his power gave him precisely the encouragement that he needed.

The Lyrical Ballads were the poetic fruits of their com- panionship. Out of their frequent discussions of the relative value of common life and supernatural incidents as themes for imaginative treatment grew the idea of writing a volume together, composed of poems of the two kinds. Coleridge was to take the supernatural ; and, as his industry was not equal to his friend's, this kind was represented by the Ancient Mariner alone. Among Wordsworth's contributions were The Female Vagrant, We are Seven, Complaint of a Forsaken Indian Woman, The Last of the Llock, The Idiot Boy, The Mad Mother ("Her eyes are wild"), The Thorn, Goody Blake and Larry Gill, The Reverie of Poor Susan, Simon Lee, Ex- postulation and Reply, The Tables Turned, Lines left upon a Yew-tree Seat, An Old Man Travelling (" Animal Tran- quillity and Decay"), Lines above Tintern Abbey. The volume was published by Cottle of Bristol in September,

1798.

It is necessary to enumerate the contents of this volume in fairness to the contemporaries of Wordsworth, whom it is the fashion to reproach for their cold or scoffing recep- tion of lis first distinctive work. Those Wordsworthians who give up The Idiot Boy, Goody Blake, and The Thorn as mistaken experiments have no right to triumph over the first derisive critics of the Lyrical Ballads, or to wonder at the dulness that failed to see at once in this humble issue from an obscure provincial press the advent of a great master in literature. The poems that have not yet won general acceptance even among the most devoted Wordsworthians formed a large part of the whole revela- tion, and attention was specially drawn to them by the title. While the taste for Zhe Idiot Boy is still uncreated, still far from general, while critics of authority can still so completely miss the

poet's intention as to suggest that the poem might have been enjoyable if Betty Foy's im- becile son had been described as beautiful and the word "idiot " had not been left to convey uncorrected its repul- sive associations, while intimate disciples acknowledge themselves unable to understand the "glee" with which Wordsworth told the simple story, and wonder whether he intended it as a "comic poem,"! it may be doubted whether now, after nearly a century of discipleship and exposition, the Lyricai Ballads would receive a much more cordial or much wider welcome than they did in 1798. It is true that Tintern Abbey was in the volume, and that all the highest qualities of Wordsworth's imagination and of his verse could be illustrated now from the lyrical ballads proper in this first publication ; but before we accuse our predecessors of purblindness, corrupt taste, and critical malignity, as is the sweet and reasonable custom of too

1 The defect of The Idiot Boy is really rhetorical, rather than poetic. Wordsworth himself said that "he never wrote anything with so much glee," and, once the source of his glee is felt in the nobly affectionate relations between the two half-witted irrational old women and the glorious imbecile, the work is seen to be executed with a harmony that should satisfy the most exacting criticism. The poet not only felt but gave complete expression to the most exquisitely tender humour in telling the story of the simple incident. Poetically, there- fore, the poem is a success ; not a note is out of tune, with the excep- tion perhaps of the boisterous ridicule of the romantic ballad in his speculations as to the employment of the lost horseman; otherwise, as a work of art in a rare vein of humorous tenderness elevated by the moral dignity of the subject, The Idiot Boy is as perfect as any- thing that Wordsworth wrote. But rhetorically this particular attempt to " breathe grandeur upon the very humblest face of human life " must be pronounced a failure, inasmuch as the writer did not use sufficiently forcible means to disabuse his readers of vulgar pre- possessious.

WORDS WORT H

many professing Wordsworthians,? we should remember that clear vision is easier for us than it was for them when the revelation was fragmentary

and incomplete.

Although Wordsworth was not received at first with the respect to which we now see that he was entitled, his power was not entirely without recognition. There is a curious commercial evidence of this, which ought to be noted, because a perversion of the fact is sometimes used to exaggerate the supposed neglect of Wordsworth at the outset of his career. When the Longmans took over Cottle's publishing business in 1799, the value of the copyright of the Lyrical Ballads, for which Cottle had paid thirty guineas, was assessed at nil. Cottle therefore begged that it might be excluded altogether from the bargain, and presented it to the authors. But in 1800, when the first edition was exhausted, the Longmans offered Wordsworth £100 for two issues of a new edition with an additional volume and an explanatory preface. The sum was small compared with what Scott and Byron soon afterwards received, but it shows that the public neglect was not quite so complete as is sometimes represented. Another edition was called for in 1802, and a fourth in 1805. The new volume in the 1800 edition was made up of poems composed during his residence at Goslar in the winter of 1798-99, and after his settlement at Grasmere in December 1799. It contained a large portion of poems now universally accepted :—Ruth, Nutting, Three Years She Grew, A Poet's Epitaph, Hartleap Well, Lucy Gray, The Brothers, Michael, The Old Cumberland Beggar, Poems on the Naming of Places. But it contained also the famous Preface, in which he infuriated critics by presuming to defend his eccentricities in an elaborate theory of poetry and poetic diction.

Comparatively few in the present day have actually read and studied this famous document, although it is con- stantly referred to as a sort of revolutionary proclamation against the established taste of the eighteenth century. For one that has read Wordsworth's original, hundreds have read Coleridge's brilliant criticism, and the fixed con- ception of the doctrines actually put forth by Wordsworth is taken from this. Now, although the Preface and the ex- tensive and bitter discussion provoked by it had not a tithe of the influence on poetry ascribed to it by a natural liking for sudden changes and simple personal agencies, although the result on literary practice was little more than the banishment of a few

overdriven phrases and figures of speech from poetic diction, it is desirable, considering the celebrity of the affair, that Wordsworth's exact position should be made clear. To do this is to contradict several 'vulgar errors" on the subject, probably too vulgar and deeply rooted to be affected by any exposure. Coleridge's criticism of his friend's theory proceeded avowedly "on the assumption that his words had been rightly interpreted, as purporting that the proper diction for poetry in general consists altogether in a language taken, with due excep- tions, from the mouths of men in real life, a language which actually constitutes the natural conversation of men under the influence of natural feelings." Coleridge assumed further that, when Wordsworth spoke of there being "no essential difference between the language of prose and metrical composition," he meant by language not the mere words but the style, the structure, and the order of the sentences ; on this assumption he argued as if Words- worth had held that the metrical order should always be the same as the prose order. Given these assumptions, which formed the popular interpretation of the theory

- *Herein curiously, if not ridiculously, inconsistent, as their master was not, with his tranquillizing creed.*

3 Sir Henry Taylor, one of the most acute and judicious of Words- worth's champions, came to this conclusion in 1834.

~~ ORs WOR T H

by its opponents, it was easy to demonstrate its absurdity, and Coleridge is very generally supposed to have given Wordsworth's theory in its bare and naked extravagance the coup de grdce. But the truth is that neither of the two assumptions is warranted; not only so, but both were expressly disclaimed by Wordsworth in the Preface itself. There is not a single qualification introduced by Coleridge in correction of the theory that was not made by Wordsworth himself in the original statement.! In the first place, it was not put forward as a theory of poetry in general, though from the vigour with which he carried the war into the enemy's country it was naturally enough for polemic purposes taken as such ; it was a statement and defence of the principles on which his own poems. of humbler life were composed, undertaken at the instance of friends interested in "a

class of poetry well adapted to in- terest mankind permanently, and not unimportant in the quality and in the multiplicity of its moral relations." He assailed the public taste as "depraved," first and mainly in so far as it was adverse to simple incidents simply treated, being accustomed to "gross and violent stimulants," – "craving after extraordinary incident," possessed with a "degrading thirst after outrageous stimulation," "frantic novels, sickly and stupid German tragedies, and deluges of idle and extravagant stories in verse." This, and not adherence to the classical rule of Pope, which had really suffered deposition a good half century before, was the first count in Wordsworth's defensive indictment of the taste of his age. To make it perfectly clear that he was pleading only for his own maligned and misunder- stood poems, he repeated at the close of the Preface that, "af his purpose were fulfilled, a species of poetry would be produced which is genuine poetry, in its nature well adapted to interest mankind, &e." It is true that he said also that, "in order entirely to enjoy the poetry which I am recommending, it would be necessary to give up much of what is ordinarily enjoyed "; but the context makes it plain that in so saying he referred to startling incident and gaudy ornament, his own purpose being to make "'the feel- ing give importance to the action and situation, not the action and situation to the feeling," and to use language as near as possible to the language of real life. In the second place, as regards this language of real life, and the "poetic diction," the liking for which was the second count in his indictment of the public taste, it is most explicitly clear that, when he said that there was no essential difference between the language of poetry and the language of prose, he meant words, plain and figur- ative, and not structure and order, or, as Coleridge other- wise puts it, the "ordonnance" of composition. Coleridge says that if he meant this he was only uttering a truism, which nobody that knew Wordsworth would suspect him of doing; but, strange to say, it is as a truism, nominally acknowledged by everybody, that Wordsworth does ad- vance his doctrine on this point. Only he adds—" if in what I am about to say it shall appear to some that my labour is unnecessary, and that I am like a man fighting a

1 Although Coleridge makes the qualifieations more prominent than they were in the original statement, the two theories are at bottom so elosely the same that one is sometinies inclined to suspeet that parts, at least, of

the original emanated from the fertile mind of Cole- ridge himself. The two poets eertainly discussed the subjeet together in Somerset when the first ballads were written, and Coleridge was at Grasmere when the Prefaee was prepared in 1800, The diction of the Prefaee is curiously Hartleian, and, when they first met, Cole- ridge was a devoted disciple of Hartley, naming his first son after the philosopher, while Wordsworth detested analytie psyehology. If Coleridge did contribute to the original theory in 1798 or 1800, he was likely enough to have forgotten the fact by 1814. At any rate he evidently wrote his criticism without niaking a elose study of the Prefaee, and what he did in effect was to restate the original theory agaiust popular misconceptions of it,

671

battle without enemies, such persons may be reminded that, whatever be the language outwardly holden by men, a practical faith in the opinions which I am wishing to establish is almost unknown"; and what he wished to establish, as may be seen by any person of average intelli- gence who grapples honestly with his stiff and condensed exposition, and interprets it with reference to the contro- versy in which it was an incident, was the simple truth that what is false, unreal, affected, bombastic, or non-sensical in prose is not less so in verse. There was no greater heresy than this in Wordsworth's theory of poetic diction. The form in which he expresses the theory was conditioned by the circumstances of the polemic, and readers were put on a false scent by his purely incidental and collateral and very much overstrained defence of the language of rustics, as being less conventional and more permanent, and therefore better fitted to afford materials for the poet's selection. But this was a side issue, a para- doxical retort on his critics, seized upon by them in turn and made prominent as a matter for easy ridicule ; all that he says on this head might be cut out of the Preface with- out affecting in the least his main thesis. The drift of this is fairly apparent all through, but stands out in un- mistakable clearness in his criticism of the passages from Johnson and Cowper. " But the sound of the church-going bell These valleys aud rocks never heard,

Ne'er sighed at the sound of a knell Or smiled when a Sabbath appeared."

The epithet '"church-going" offends him as a puritan in grammar; whether his objection is well founded or ill founded, it applies equally to prose and verse. Poetic licence does not justify bad grammar. Whether this is strictly defensible or not, all the same it illustrates his contention. To represent the valleys and rocks as sighing and siniling in the circumstances would appear feeble and absurd in prose composition, and is not less so in metrical composition; "the occasion does not justify such violent expressions." These are examples of all that Wordsworth meant by saying that "there is no essential difference between the language of prose and metrical composition"; and it is mere pedantry to detach this phrase from the context, and hold him bound by the precise scliolastic sense of the word essential to a meaning that he expressly repudiates. So far is Wordsworth from contending that the metrical order should always be the same with the prose order, that part of the preface is devoted to a subtle analysis of the peculiar effect of metrical arrangement, assigning the pleasure proper to this as his reason for writing in verse rather than in prose, and repeating again and again such phrases as "fitting to metrical arrangement a selection of the real language of men in a state of vivid sensation," and "language closely resembling that of real life, and yet in the circumstance of metre differing from it so widely."2 What he objects to is not departure from the structure of prose, but the assumption, which seemed to him to underlie the criticisms of his ballads, that a writer of verse is not a poet unless he uses artificially ornamental language, not justified by the strength of the emotion expressed. The farthest that he went in defence of prose structure in poetry was to maintain that, if the words in a verse happened to be in the order of prose, it did not follow that they were prosaic in the sense of being unpoetic,—a side-stroke at critics who complained of his prosaisms for no better reason than that the words stood in the order of prose composition.

2 He expressly admitted also that, in the expression of passion, owing

to "the tendency of metre to divest language to a certain degree of its reality," a strength of language might be used in verse that good

taste would not tolerate in prose.

672

Wordsworth was far from repudiating elevation of style in poetry. "If," he said, "the poet's subject be judici- ously chosen, it will naturally, and upon fit occasion, lead him to passions the language of which, if selected truly and judiciously, must necessarily be dignified and varic- gated, and alive with metaphors and figures." But no "foreign splendours" should be interwoven with what "the passion naturally suggests," and " where the passions are of a milder character the style also should be subdued and temperate."

Such was Wordsworth's theory of poetic diction. Nothing could be more grossly mistaken than the current notion, which has been repeated by so many critics of authority that it has become an established belief, that the greater part of Wordsworth's poetry was composed in defiance of his own theory, and that he succeeded best when he set his own theory most at defiance. All com- mentators on Wordsworth who feel tempted to repeat this pretty paradox should pause and read his own state- ment of his theory before giving further currency to a misconception which they will see is absurdly unwarrant- able. It is traceable to the authority of Coleridge. His just, sympathetic, and penetrating criticism on Words- worth's work as a poet did immense service in securing for him a wider recognition; but his proved friendship and brilliant style have done sad injustice to the poet as a theorist. It was natural to assume that Coleridge, if anybody, must have known what his friend's theory was ; and it was natural also that readers under the charm of his lucid and melodious prose should gladly grant themselves a dispensation from the trouble of verifying his facts in the harsh and cumbrous exposition of the theorist himself.1 After all, the theory is a minor affair. It is the work that counts; only it is hardly fair to Wordsworth that he should go down as a stupid genius who did right against his own reasoned principles, or an arrogant person who knew himself to be wrong but refused to admit it.

The question of diction made most noise, but it was far from being the most important point of poetic doctrine set forth in the Preface. If in this he merely enunciated a truism, generally admitted in words but too

generally ignored in practice, there was real novelty in his plea for humble subjects, and in his theory of poetic composition. We might, indeed, easily exaggerate to ourselves the amount of innovation in mere abstract theory; this might have been insignificant enough but for the turn that was given to it by the poet's individuality. But in view of

1 So deeply rooted is the misconception that even Mr Myers, after quoting the Preface itself, and the famous stanza " Perhaps some dungeon hears thee groan," &c., from The A filiction of Margaret, com- ments as follows:—" These lines, supposed to be spoken by 'a poor widow at Penrith,' afford a fair illustration of what Wordsworth calls 'the language really spoken by men,' with 'metre siperadded.' 'What other distinction from prose,' he asks, 'would we have?' We may answer that we would have what he has actually given us, viz., an appropriate and attractive music, lying both in the rhythm and the actual sound of the words used." But in the theory this is covered by the phrases metrical arrangement and selection of the real language of men in a state of wiwid sensation, dignified and variegated and alive with metaphors and figures. Wordsworth was not an adroit expositor in prose, and he did not make his qnalifications sufficiently prominent, but the theory of diction taken with those qualitications left him free without inconsistency to use any language that was not contrary to 'true taste and feeling." He acknowledged that he might occasionally have substituted "particular for general associ- ations," and that thus language charged with poetic feeling to himself night appear trivial and ridiculous to others, as in The Idiot Boy and Goody Blake; he even went so far as to withdraw Alice Fell, first published in 1807, from several subsequent editions ; but he argued that it was dangerous for a poet to make alterations on the simple authority of a few individuals or even classes of men, because if he did not follow his own judgment and feelings his mind would infallibly be debilitated.

all that was most distinctive and influential in Words- worth's own work, his remarks on poetry in general, on the supreme function of the imagination in dignifying humble and commonplace incidents, and on

the need of active exercise of imagination in the reader as well as in the poet—passiveness in this particular not being recoin- mended as wise—his remarks on these points are im- measurably more important than his theory of poetic diction. It is much to be regretted that Coleridge's genius for luminous and brilliant exposition was not applied to the development of the few stiff phrases in which Wordsworth sought to generalize his own practice. Such sayings as that poetry "takes its origin from emotion recollected in tranquillity," or that it is the business of a poet to trace ""'how men associate ideas in a state of excitement," are, like the detached parts of a Chinese puzzle, meaningless till they are pieced together with views of the poet's art expressed and illustrated elsewhere. They are significant of Words- worth's endeavour to lay the foundations of his art in an independent study of the feelings and faculties of men in real life, unbiassed as far as possible by poetic custom and convention. If this had meant, as many might suppose from the bare statement of the idea, that the new poet was to turn his back on his pre- decessors and never look behind him to what they had done, was to reject absolutely as valueless for him the accumulating tradition of thought and expression, was to write in short as if nobody before him had ever written a line, even going to common speech for his diction, a more foolish and unfruitful, silly and presumptuous, ambition could not be conceived. But Wordsworth was guilty of no such extravagance. He was from boyhood upwards a diligent student of poetry, and was not insensible of his obligations to the past. His purpose was only to use real life as a touchstone of poetic substance. Imagination operates in all men for the increase or the abatement of emotion. Incidents that have lodged in the memory are not allowed to lie there unchanged ; joy is sustained by the instinctive activity of the imagination in assembling kindred ideas round the original incident, and under the instinctive operation of the same faculty pain is relieved by the suggestion of ideas that console and tranquillize. Now the poet, in Wordsworth's conception, is distinctively a man in whom this beneficent energy of imagination, operative as a blind instinct more or less in all men, is stronger than in others, and is voluntarily and rationally exercised for the benefit of all in its proper work of increase and consolation. If the poet is to discharge this mission profitably, he must study how the imagination works in real life, that is to say, "how men associate ideas in a state of excitement." Not every image

that the excited mind conjures up in real life is necessarily poetical. Joy may be chilled and pain exaggerated by morbid imaginative activity. It is the business of the poet to select and modify for his special purpose of producing immediate pleasure. " Nor," says the ardent theorist, "let this necessity of producing immediate pleasure be considered as a degradation of the poet's art. It is far otherwise. It is an acknowledgment of the beauty of the universe, an acknowledgment the more sincere because it is not formal but indirect ; it is a task light and easy to him who looks at the world in the spirit of love; further, it is a homage paid to the native and naked dignity of man, to the grand elementary principle of pleasure, by which he knows and feels and moves."

All this is elementary enough as Hartleian psychology. The formal recognition of it will not make a man a poet. But there were several respects in which the formal

TURD s WOR T

recognition of these elementary principles of poetic evolution powerfully affected Wordsworth's practice. One of these may be indicated, though not fully ex- pressed, by saying that he endeavoured always to work out an emotional motive from within. Instead of choosing a striking theme and working at it like a decorative painter, embellishing, enriching, dressing to advantage, standing back from it and studying effects, his plan was to take incidents that had set his own imagination spontaneously to work, and to study and reproduce with artistic judgment the modification of the initial feeling, the emotional motive, within himself. There is room for an endless amount of subtle discussion, which would be out of place here, as to the exact difference between the methods thus broadly stated. It is obvious that they tend to approximate, inasmuch as all poets must work to some extent from within and all to some extent from without. The mere fact of using words, the medium of communication between man and man, implies a reference, unconscious or deliberate, to the effect produced on others. But undoubtedly in Wordsworth's case the reference to others was of deliberate purpose as much as _ possible suppressed. Probably from natural stiffness of temper, he could not make it easily, and found the effort, as it must always be when it is an effort and not a happy

instinct, embarrassing and chilling. At any rate, if an association, to use his own terminology, gave pleasure to himself, he did not pause long to consider the probable effect on others. If he did reflect upon it when the act of composition was over, he was often able to satisfy him- self that, if an association which seemed to him just, reasonable, and humane, was not acceptable to general sentiment, the general sentiment was corrupt. To this, as he himself with his‘ habits of self-criticism was fully aware, was owing much of his strength and much of his unpopularity. By keeping his eye on the object, as spontaneously modified by his own imaginative energy, he was able to give full and undistracted scope to all his powers in poetic coinage of the wealth that his imagina- tion brought. On the other hand, readers whose nature or education was different from his own, were repelled or left cold and indifferent, or obliged to make the sympa- thetic effort to see with his eyes, which he refused to make in order that he might see with theirs. “ He is retired as noontide dew Or fountain in a noon-day grove,

And you must love him ere to you He will seem worthy of your love.”

From this habit of taking the processes of his own mind as the standard of the way in which “men associate ideas in a state of excitement,” and language familiar to himself as the standard of the language of “real men,” arises a superficial anomaly in Wordsworth’s poetry, an apparent contradiction between his practice and his theory. His own imagination, judged by ordinary standards, was easily excited, excited by emotional motives that have little force with ordinary men. Most of his poems start from humbler, slighter, less generally striking themes than those of any other poet of high rank. But his poetry is not corre- spondingly simple. On the contrary, much of it, much of the best of it—for example, the Ode to Duty, and that on the Intimations of Immortality—is as intricate, elaborate, and abstruse, as remote from the ordinary paths of thought, as is to be found in literature. The emotional motive is simple; the passion has almost always a simple origin, and often is of no great intensity; but the imaginative structure is generally elaborate, and, when the poet is at his best, supremely splendid and gorgeous. No poet has built such magnificent palaces of rare material for the ordinary everyday homely human affections. It is because

he has invested our ordinary everyday principles of con- duct, which are so apt to become threadbare, with such imperishable robes of finest texture and richest design that Wordsworth holds so high a place among the great moral- ists, the greatest of moralists in verse. And yet he attained this end in his most effectively moral poems, though not by any means in all his poems, without in the least con- fusing the boundaries between poetry and preaching, his conception of the end of poetry as immediate pleasure serving him as a load-star.

His practice was influenced also, and not always for good, by his theory that poetry "takes its origin from emotion recollected in tranquillity." This was a somewhat doubtful corollary from his general theory of poetic evolu- tion. A poem is complete in itself; there must be no sting in it to disturb the reader's content with the whole ; through whatever agitations it progresses, to whatever elevations it soars, to this end it must come, otherwise it is imperfect as a poem. Now the imagination in ordinary men, though the process is not expressed in verse, and the

poet's special art has thus no share in producing the effect,

reaches the poetic end when it has so transfigured a dis- turbing experience, whether of joy or grief, that this rests tranquilly in the memory, can be recalled without dis- quietude, and dwelt upon with some mode and degree of pleasure, more or less keen, more or less pure or mixed with pain. True to his idea of imitating real life, Words- worth made it a rule for himself not to write on any theme till his imagination had operated upon it for some time involuntarily ; it was not in his view ripe for poetic treat-

- ment till this transforming agency had subdued the original

einotion to a state of tranquillity.1 Out of this tranquillity arises the favourable moment for poetic composition, some day when, as he contemplates the subject, the tranquillity disappears, an emotion kindred to the original emotion is reinstated, and the poet retraces and

supplements with all his art the previous involuntary and perhaps unconscious imaginative chemistry.

When we study the moments that Wordsworth found favourable for successful composition, a very curious law reveals itself, somewhat at variance with the common con- ception of him as a poet who derived all his strength froin solitary.communion with nature. We find that the recluse's best poems were written under the excitement of some break in the monotony of his quiet life—change of scene, change of companionship, change of occupation. The law holds from the beginning to the end of his poetic career. We have already noticed the immense stimulus given to his powers by his first contact with Coleridge after two years of solitary and abortive effort. Above Tintern Abbey was composed during a four days' ramble with his sister; he began it on leaving Tintern, and con- cluded it as he was entering Bristol. His residence amidst strange scenes and "unknown men" at Goslar was parti- eularly fruitful: She Dwelt among the Untrodden Ways, Ruth, Nutting, There was a Boy, Wisdom and Spirit of the Universe, all belong to those few months of unfamiliar environment. The breeze that met him as he issued from the city gates on his homeward journey brought him the first thought of Zhe Prelude. The second year of his residence at Grasmere was unproductive ; he was " hard at work" then on The Hxcursion; but the excitement of his tour on the Continent in the autumn of 1802, combined perhaps with a happy change in his pecuniary circuni- stances and the near prospect of marriage, roused him to one of his happiest fits of activity. His first great sonnet,

1 The Prelude contains a record of his practice, after the opening lines of the first book—. '¢ Thus far, O friend! did J, not used to make A present joy the matter of a song, . Pour forth, &c."

the Lines on Westminster Bridge, was composed on the roof of the Dover coach; the first of the splendid series "dedicated to national independence and liberty," the most generally impressive and universally intelligible of

his poems, Fair Star of Evening, Once did she Hold the Gorgeous East in Fee, Toussaint, Milton, thou shouldst be Living at this Hour, It is not to be Thought of that the Flood, When I have Borne in Memory what has Tamed, were all written in the course of the tour, or in London in the month after his return. A tour in Scotland in the follow- ing year, 1803, yielded the Highland Girl and The Solitary Reaper. Soon after his return he resumed The Prelude ; and The Affliction of Margaret and the Ode to Duty, his greatest poems in two different veins, were coincident with the exaltation of spirit due to the triumphant and success- ful prosecution of the long-delayed work. The Character of the Happy Warrior, which he described to Miss Martineau as '"'a chain of extremely valooable thouglits," though it did not fulfil "' poetic conditions,"! was the pro- duct of a calmer period. The excitement of preparing for publication always had a rousing effect upon him; thie preparation for the edition of 1807 resulted in the com- pletion of the ode on the Intimations of Immortality, the sonnets The World is too much with us, Methought I saw the Footsteps of a Throne, Two Voices are there, and Lady, the Songs of Spring were in the Grove, and the Song at the Least of Brougham Castle. After 1807 there is a marked falling off in the quality, though not in the quantity, of Wordsworth's poetic work. It is significant of the com- paratively sober and laborious spirit in which he wrote The Excursion that its progress was accompanied by none of those casual sallies of exulting and exuberant power that mark the period of the happier Prelude. The com- pletion of The Lxcursion was signalized by the production of Laodamia. The chorus of adverse criticism with which it was received inspired him in the noble sonnet to Haydon —High is our Calling, Friend. He rarely or never again touched the same lofty height.

It is interesting to compare with what he actually accomplished the plan of life-work with which Wordsworth settled at Grasmere in the last month of the eighteenth century.2_ The plan was definitely conceived as he left the German town of Goslar in the spring of 1799. Tired of the wandering unsettled life that he had led hitherto, dissatisfied also with the fragmentary occasional and disconnected char- acter of his lyrical poems, he longed for a permanent home among his native hills, where he might, as one called and consecrated to the task, devote his powers continuously to the composition of a great philosophical poem on "Man, Nature, and

Society." The poem was to be called The Recluse, "as having for its principal subject the sensations and opinions of a poet living in retirement." He com- municated the design to Coleridge, who gave him enthusi- astic encouragement to proceed. In the first transport of the conception he felt as if he needed only solitude and leisure for the continuous execution of it. But, though he had still before him fifty years of peaceful life amidst his beloved scenery, the work in the projected form at least was destined to remain incomplete. Doubts and misgiv- ings soon arose, and favourable moments of felt inspiration delayed their coming. To sustain him in his resolution he thought of writing as an introduction, or, as he put it, an antechapel to the church which he proposed to build, a

1 This casual estimate of his own work is not merely amusing but also instructive, as showing—what is sometimes denied—that Words- worth himself knew well enongh the difference between ' poetry" and such " valuable thoughts"' as he propounded in The Hxcurston.

2 Wordsworth's residences in the Lake District were Townend, Grasmere, from December 1799 till the spring of 1808; Allan Bank, from 1808 to 1811; the parsonage at Grasmere, from 1811 to 1813; Rydal Mount, for the rest of his life.

history of his own mind up to the time when he recognized the great mission of his life. One of the many laughs at his expense by unsympathetic critics has been directed against his saying that he wrote this Prelude of fourteen books about himself out of diffidence. But in truth the original motive was none other than distrust of his own powers. He began this review of his early life to reassure himself from misgivings whether nature and education had fitted him for his proposed task, partly by elevating his mind to a confidence in uature's special destination, and partly by making practical trial of his powers in a simpler work. He turned aside from Vhe Prelude to prepare the second volume of the Lyrical Ballads and write the explan- atory Preface, which as a statement of his aims in poetry had partly the same purpose of strengthening his

self-con- fidence. From his sister's Journal we learn that in the winter of 1801-2 he was "hard at work on The Pedlar" — the original title of Zhe Excursion. But this experiment on the larger work was also soon abandoned. It appears from a letter to his friend Sir George Beaumont that his health was far from robust, and in particular that he could not write without intolerable physical uneasiness. We should probably not be wrong in connecting his physical weakness with his rule of waiting for favourable moments. His next start with The Prelude, in the spring of 1804, was more prosperous ; he dropped it for several months, but, resuming again in the spring of 1805, he completed it in the summer of that year. But still the composition of the great work to which it was intended to be a portico proceeded by fits and starts. It was not till 1814 that the second of the three divisions of The Recluse, ultimately named The Excursion, was ready for publication ; and he went no further in the execution of his great design. It is possible that he had his own unfinished project in mind when he wrote the sonnet on Malham Cove.— "? Mid the wreck of Is and Was, Things incomplete and purposes betrayed

Make sadder transits o'er thought's optic glass Than noblest objects utterly decayed."

We shall speak presently of the reception of The Excur- ston. Meantime we must look elsewhere for the virtual accomplishment of the great design of Z'he Recluse. The purpose was not after all betrayed ; it was really fulfilled, though not in the form intended, in his various occasional poems. In relation to the edifice that he aspired to con- struct, he likened these poems to little cells, oratories, and sepulchral recesses ; they are really the completed work, much more firmly united by their common purpose than by any formal and visible nexus of words. Formally dis- connected, they really, as we read and feel them, range themselves to spiritual music as the component parts of a great poetic temple, finding a rendezvous amidst the scenery of the district where the poet had his local habita- tion. The Lake District, as transfigured by Wordsworth's imagination, is the fulfilment of his ambition after an en- during memorial. The Poems collected and published in 1807 compose in effect 'a philosophical poem on man, nature, and society," the title of which might fitly have been Zhe Recluse, "as having for its principal subject the

sensations and opinions of a poet living in retirement." As a realization of the idea of Zhe Fecluse, these poems are from every poetical point of view infinitely superior to the kind of thing that he projected and failed to complete.

The derisive fury with which The Excursion was assailed upon its first appearance has long been a stock example of critical blindness, conceit, and malignity. And yet, if we look at the position claimed for the Hacursion now by competent authorities, the error of the first critics is seen to lie not in their indictment of faults, but in the pro- minence they gave to the faults and their generally dis-

respectful tone towards a poet of Wordsworth's greatness. Jetfrey's petulant ' This will never do," uttered, professedly at least, more in sorrow than in anger, because the poet would persist in spite of all friendly counsel in misapply- ing his powers,! has become a byword of ridiculous critical cocksureness. But the curious thing is that The Hxcursion has not "done," and that the Wordsworthians who laugh at Jeffrey are in the habit of repeating the substance of his criticism, though in more temperate and becoming language. Thus Dean Church, in a criticism at once sympathetic and judicious, after the usual fling at Jeffrey's "insolence," goes on to say—

"In The Excursion and The Prelude there are passages as magnificent as perhaps poet ever wrote; but thcy are not specimens of the context in which they are cmbedded, and which in spite of them does not carry along with it the reader's honest enjoyment. We read on because we must." ?

This is the very substance of Jeffrey's criticism, which was far from being unreservedly damnatory, as the following will show :—

"Besides those more extended passages of interest or beauty which we have quoted and omitted to quote, there are scattered up and down the book, and in the midst of its most repulsive portions, a very great nuniber of single lines and images that sparkle like gems in the desert and startle

us by an intimation of the great poetic powers that lie buried in the rubbish that has been heaped around them."

Jeffrey, it will be seen, was not blind to the occasional felicities and unforgetable lines celebrated by Coleridge, and his general judgment on The Hucursion has been abundantly ratified? It is not upon The Excursion that Wordsworth's reputation as a poet can ever rest, whatever defence may be made for it as "a chain of extremely valuable thoughts," varied by passages of lofty or quietly beautiful description, invigorating exhortation, and gentle pathos. The two " books" entitled The Churchyard among the Mountains are the only parts of the poem that derive much force from the scenic setting ; if they had been pub- lished separately, they would probably have obtained at once a reception very different from that given to The Excursion as a whole. The dramatic setting is merely dead weight, not because the chief speaker is a pedlar—Wordsworth fairly justifies this selection—but because the pedlar, as a personality to be known, and loved, and respected, and listened to with interest, is not completely created. We know Uncle Toby better than Sterne, but we do not know the Wanderer so well as Wordsworth, and consequently we are more easily bored by him than by the poet speaking in his own person as he does in The Prelude. His cheerfulness after reciting the tale of Margaret at the ruined cottage is almost offensive; the assigned motive

1 The lively lawyer, to whom reviewing was a recreation, obviously enjoyed the process of "slating"' more than is quite consistent with his strong protestations of sorrow over the poet's waywardness; but it should not be overlooked that he did make ample acknowledgment, when he had sated himself with denunciations of the Wanderer's ver- bosity, of the power and beauty of isolated passages. In the second part of his article, indeed, he quoted so much that was admirable that he confessed himself disposed to rescind his severe judgment, but re- perusal of the Wanderer's arguments convinced him that it could not be rescinded. Jeffrey's criticisms in their entirety are dead and buried, except for the professional student, but even critics have their humble rights, and it is time that his four opening words should re- ceive the privilege of interment also, if they are not to be fairly interpreted. His criticism of The White Doe is

valueless enough, because the sentiment of that poem is more abstruse, less palpable to the running reader; but what he said of The Hxecursion has simply been repeated in duller language by the Wordsworthians who have denounced his arrogance in daring to say it.

2 Ward's English Poets, vol. iv. p. 138. Oliphant might be quoted to the same effect.

5 In joining The Prelude with The Excursion in the same condem- nation, Dean Church goes farther than Jeffrey. Asa poem The Pre- lude is infinitely superior ; its autobiographical character gives it a certain unity, and it contains a greater number of lofty passages in Wordsworth's best vein.

Mr Myers and Mrs

ay © Eel H 675

for it in the beauty of nature that remains though the poor broken- hearted woman is gone is hardly higher than the dropsical scullion's philosophy in Tristram Shandy. "¢We is dead. He is certainly dead,' said Obadiah. 'So am not I,' said the foolish scullion."4

There can be little doubt that adverse criticism had a depressing influence on Wordsworth's poetical powers, not- withstanding his nobly expressed defiance of it and his determination to hold on in his own path undisturbed. Its effect in retarding the sale of his poems and thus de- priving him of the legitimate fruits of his industry was a favourite topic with him in his later years ;° but the absence of general appreciation, and the ridicule of what he considered his best and most distinctive work, contributed in all probability to a still more unfortunate result—the premature depression and deadening of his powers. He schooled himself to stoical endurance, but he was not superhuman, and in the absence of sympathy not only was any possibility of development checked but he ceased to write with the spontaneity and rapture of his earlier verse. The common theory that the marked stiffening of his powers after 1807 was the effect of age only may be true; but the coincidence of this falling off with the failure of the strenuous effort made in that year to conquer the

hostility of critics and the indifference of the public makes the theory extremely doubtful as a whole truth. Words- worth's true nature is often misjudged under the fallacy that the preacher of high and serene fortitude in the face of failure and misfortune must himself be imperturbable. On the contrary the most eloquent advocate of this heroic virtue is the man who most feels the need of it in the frailty of his own temper. It is on record that Words- worth, with all his philosophy of consolation, did not easily recover serenity after domestic bereavements, and we go very far wrong when we confound his proud and self- reliant defiance of criticism with insensibility to it or power to rise at will above its disheartening and benumb- ing influence.

For five years after the condemnation of The Excursion Wordsworth published almost nothing that had not been composed before. The chief exception is the Thanksgiving Ode of 1816. He was occupied mainly in the task of putting his work and his aims more fully before the world, maintaining his position with dignity and unflinch- ing courage, so far unmoved by criticism that he would not alter his course one jot for the sake of public favour. In 1815 he published a new edition of his poems, in the arrangement according to faculties and feelings in which they have since stood; aud he sought to explain his

4 Charles Lamb's review of The Excursion in the Quarterly (Oct. 1814), in spite of the editor Gifford's modifications, remains the most sympathetic of competent criticisms of the poem. In one point there is an oversight, significant of the indefiniteness of Wordsworth's ex- position; Lamb supposes the conversion of the Solitary to be accom- plished within The Excursion. It was really reserved for the third part of The Recluse. It was the poet's intention, as expressed in his conversations with Miss Fenwick, to effect this conversion not by argument, but by carrying the sceptic back to his native Scotland, making him witness of a sacrament service, and making early associ- ations thereupon reassert themselves. This would have been in accordance with his theory of the value of early associations, Whiat makes the position of the Solitary a little difficult to grasp at first is that Wordsworth, on principle, does not present this character in marked contrast to the other characters in the poem, but rather lays stress on what he has in common with them, tender-

heartedness to- wards suffering and intense enthusiasm for nature; hence it arises that the reader cannot see without some study what it is that the other interlocutors find lacking in him, and aim at supplying to him.

5 Mr Matthew Arnold heard him say that "for he knew not how many years his poetry had never brought him in enough to buy his shoe-strings " (preface to Selection, p. v.). The literal facts are that he received £100 from the Longmans in 1800, and nothing more till he was sixty-five, when Moxon bought the copyright of his writings for £1000 (Prose Works, iii. 437).

purposes more completely than before in an essay on "Poetry as a Study." In the same year he was persuaded. to publish the The White Doe of Eylstone, written mainly eight years before. In purely poetic charm the White Doe ought to be ranked among the most perfect of Wordsworth's poems, the most completely successful exhibition of his finest qualities ; nowhere is the peculiar music of his verse more happily sustained or more per- fectly in harmony with the noble and tender feeling which here springs as if from infinite depths, to flow round and subdue the tragic agony of the incidents. But Jeffrey, who was much too busy a man to enter into a vein of poetry so remote from common romantic sentiment, would have none of the White Doe: he pronounced it "the very worst poem ever written," and the public too readily endorsed his judgment. Two other poems, with which Wordsworth made another appeal, were not more successful. Peter Bell, written in 1798, was published in 1819; and at the instigation of Charles Lamb it was followed by The Waggoner, written in 1805. Both were mercilessly ridiculed and parodied. These tales from humble life are written in Wordsworth's most unconventional style, and with them emphatically " not to sympathize is not to understand," but when they are read sympathetically they are felt to be written with the spontaneity and freedom of the poet's most inspired moments, although they are not in his high serious vein.

Meantime, the great design of The Recluse languished. The neglect of what Wordsworth himself conceived to be his best and most characteristic work was not encouraging; and there was another reason why the

philosophical poem on man, nature, and society did not make progress. Again and again in his poetry Wordsworth celebrates the value of constraint, and the disadvantage of "too much liberty," of "unchartered freedom."! This thought was impressed upon him by his own experience. There was "too much liberty" in his vague scheme of a philosophical poem. He needed more of the constraint of a definite form to stimulate his working powers to prosperous vigour. The formlessness of the scheme prevented his 'working at it continuously. Hence his " philosophy" was expressed in casual disconnected sonnets, or in sonnets and other short poems connected by the simplest of all links, sequence in time or place. He stumbled upon three or four such serial ideas in the latter part of his life, and thus found beginning and end for chains of considerable length, which may be regarded as fragments of the project which he had not sufficient energy of constructive power to execute. The Sonnets on the River Duddon, written in 1820, follow the river from its source to the sea, and form a partial embodiment of his philosophy of nature. The Ecclesiastical Sonnets, written in 1820-21, trace the history of the church from the Druids onwards, following one of the great streams of human affairs, and exhibit part of his philosophy of society. A tour on the Continent in 1820, a tour in Scotland in 1831, a tour on the west coast in 1833, a tour in Italy in 1837, furnished him with other serial forms, serving to connect miscel- laneous reflections on man, nature, and society ; and his views on the punishment of death were strung together in still another series in 1840. He sought relief from "the weight of too much liberty" in this voluntary subjection to serial form, taking upon himself that

" Constraint Whence oft invigorating transports flow That choice lacked courage to bestow."

His resolute industry was productive of many wise, impressive, and charitable reflexions, and many casual

1 See the Sonnet, Nuns fret not, &c., The Pass of Kirkstone, and the Ode to Duty.

felicities of diction, but the poet very seldom reached the highest level of his earlier inspirations.

Wordsworth was appointed poet-laureate on the death of Southey in 1843. His only official composition was an ode on the installation of the Prince Consort as chan- cellor of Cambridge university in 1847. This was his last writing in verse. He died at Rydal Mount after a short illness, on the 23d of April 1850, and was buried in Grasmere churchyard.

It was Wordsworth's own desire that there should be no elaborate criticisni of his poetry. This desire has not been respected. We have already referred to Lamb's severely edited review of The Excursion (1814), and to Coleridge's criticism in the Biographia Literaria (1817). This last, together with the enthusiastic and unreserved championship of Wilson in Blavkwood's Magazine in a series of articles between 1819 and 1822 (see Recreations of Chris- topher North), formed the turning point in Wordsworth's reputation. From 1820 to 1830 De Quincey says it was militant, from 1830 to 1840 triumphant. By 1850 there were signs of reaction, but, though the language of criticism has become more judicial, there has been no falling off in veneration for Wordsworth's character or appreciation of his best work. Among critics that are specially interesting for various reasons we may mention De Quincey (Works, vols. ii, and v.), Sir Henry Taylor (Works, vol. v.), George Brimley (Essays), Matthew Arnold (preface to Selection), Mr Swinburne (Miscellanies), Mr F. W. H. Myers ("' Men of Letters" series), and eee Stephen (Hours in a Library, 3d series, '¢Wordsworth's

igs").

Wordsworth's writings in prose have been collected by Mr Grosart (London, 1876). This collection contains the previously unpub- lished Apology for a French Revolution, written in 1793, besides the scarce tract on the Convention of Cintra (1809) and the political addresses Jo the Freeholders of Westmoreland (1818). The bulk of three volumes is made up by including letters, notes, prefaces, &c. Wordsworth's Guide to the Lakes originally appeared in 1810 as an introduction to Wilkinson's Select Views, and was first published separately in 1822.

The standard editions of Wordsworth are Moxon's six-volume edition originally settled by the poet himself in 1836-7, and Moxon's single-volume double-column edition sanctioned by the poet in 1845. A carefully annotated edition in nine large volumes, by Prof. Knight, is in course of publication. It contains a useful chronological table of the poems; and the hitherto unpublished part of The Recluse is promised for the ninth volume. Prof. Knight's book on The English Lake District is also useful to minute students of Wordsworth. (W. M.)

WORKINGTON, a seaport and market-town of Cumber- land, England, on the south bank of the Derwent, whiere it enters the Solway Firth, and on several branch railway lines, 34 miles south-west of Carlisle and 311 miles from London by rail. The Derwent is crossed by a stone bridge of three arches erected in 1841. In the more ancient portions of the town the streets are narrow and irregular, but there are now many spacious streets with handsome houses and shops. The ancient parish church of St Michael was rebuilt in 1770, and, this building having been destroyed by fire in 1887, another is now (1888) in course of erection. The other public buildings are the jubilee hall, the assembly-rooms, the temperance hall, the mechanics' institute, the infirmary, the new covered market, the custom-house, and the bonded warehouses. Near the town is Workington Hall, the seat of the ancient lords of the manor, a quadrilateral castellated structure in great part modern, but still retaining some of the ancient rooms, including that in which Mary queen of Scots is said to have slept when she escaped to England after the battle of Langside in May 1568. The harbour is remark- ably safe, and has been improved by the construction of a breakwater 600 feet in length. The Lonsdale dock, 41 acres in extent, was opened in 1862. In 1886 37 vessels in the foreign and colonial trade (19,806 tons) entered the port, and 24 cleared (10,495 tons) ; 1687 in the coasting-trade entered (197,487 tons), and 1682 cleared (206,404 tons). The value of the exports of the produce of the United Kingdom in 1882 was £181,012, but in 1885 it was only £13,845, and in 1886 it was £38,468. The chief exports are pig-iron, lime, coal, steel rails, and

steel plates. The value of the imports of foreign and colonial merchandise in 1882 was £57,512, but since then it has declined, and was only £18,282 in 1885, and £27,448 in 1886.

1888).

WORKSOP, a market-town of Nottinghamshire, Eng- land, is situated on the Chesterfield Canal, and on the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincoln Railway and the Midland Railway, 16 miles east-south-east of Sheffield and 1464 from London. It is a well-built and pleasant country town, with considerable traces of antiquity. The church of St Mary and St Cuthbert is an old priory church, once divided internally into two buildings, the eastern dedicated to St Mary being for the use of the canons, and the western dedicated to St Cuthbert for the parishioners. When the priory was demolished at the Reformation only the western portion of the church was spared, and for many years it was in a dilapidated con- dition until it was restored with Perpendicular additions. Behind it are the ruins of the lady chapel, containing some fine Early English work. The priory gatehouse, chiefly in the Decorated style, now forms the entrance to the precincts of the church. It is supposed to have been built early in the 14th century by the third Lord Furnival, when the market was established. Of the priory itself the only remains are a wall at the north- west corner of the church which includes the cloister gateway. There wasa Norman keep on the castle hill, but no remains of the building are now left. The magnificent manor-house, built by Gilbert, first earl of Shrewsbury, and occasionally occupied by Mary queen of Scots during her captivity under the sixth earl, was in great part destroyed by fire in 1761, while being restored at great expense by the duke of Norfolk, and when the estate came into the possession of the duke of Newcastle in 1840 the ruined portion of the mansion remaining was removed anda smaller mansion built near it. The ecclesiastical parish of St John's was formed in 1867. There is a corn exchange, erected in 1854, in the Venetian style, and a mechanics' institute, erected in 1852. Form- erly liquorice was extensively grown, but malting is now the principal industry. A large corn market and a cattle and horse fair are held. The town also possesses brass and iron foundries, agricultural implement works, saw-mills, and chemical works.

The population of the urban sanitary district (18,220 acres) was 10,409 in 1871, and 11,625 in 1881.

Worksop occurs in Domesday as Withercope. By William the Conqueror the manor was bestowed on Roger de Busli. It subse- quently passed to William de Lovitot, who in 1103 founded a priory for Augustinian canons dedicated to St Mary. From the De Lovitots it passed successively to the Furnivals, the Nevilles, the Talbots, earls of Shrewsbury, and the Howards, earls of Arundel and afterwards dukes of Norfolk. By the duke of Norfolk it was sold in 1840 to the duke of Newcastle, whose country mansion, Clumber, is in the parish. In December 1460 an engagement took place at Worksop between the forces of the duke of York and those of the duke of Somerset.

See White's Worksop, 1875; and Sissons, Guide to Worksop, 1888.

677

WORM. This word has no definite significance in modern zoological classification ; it is constantly applied to several phyla of the animal kingdom which have for the most part no special relations to each other. By Linnzus the Latin equivalent "' Vermes " was applied to the modern divisions of MoLiusca, C@LENTERA, Protozoa, TUNI- CaTA, ECHINODERMATA (qq.v.), a3 well as to those animals which are in many current text-books of zoology grouped together under the same name! The group Vermes as used, for example, by Claus includes several distinct phyla, viz., NemaromwEa (9.v.), Platyhelminthes (see PLANARIANS, TaPe-Worms, and TrEeMaToDA), NEMER- TINES (9.v.), Chetognatha (see Sacitta), Gephyrea (see ANNELIDA), ROTIFERA (q.v.), Discophora (see Lerxcu), Chetopoda.

The Chetopoda are divided into Oligocheta and Polycheta, which have been shortly treated of, together with Dis- cophora and Grephyrea, in the article ANNELIDA (¢.v.). The leech and its kindred (Discophora) have been more fully described in another article (Lezcu, g.v.). The present article will treat of the earthworm and its immediate allies. The earthworm belongs to the order Oligocheta, which also includes a number of freshwater forms; these latter Oligocheta have been distinguished as "

Limicole ” from the earthworms or “ Terricole.” There are, how- ever, no structural peculiarities of any importance which ab- solutely distinguish the terrestrial from the aquatic forms. Earthworms are, it is true, characterized by the simplicity of their sete, by the absence of cilia upon the body, by the thickness of the body-wall, which im- plies an increased thickness of the mus- cular layers, and by the thickness of the intersegmental septa, particularly in the

anterior region of

Fig. 1.~—Diagrams of Various Earthworms, to illus- the body . All these trate external characters. A, B,C, anterior seg- ments from the ventral surface; D, hinder end of body of Urochxta. A. Lumbricus: 9, 10, seg- ments containing spermathecex, the orifices of which are indicated; 14, segment bearing ovi- ducal pores; 15, segment bearing male pores; 32, 37, first and last segments of clitellum. B, Acanthodrilus: cp, orifices of spermathece; 9, oviducal pores; ¢ , male pores; on 17th and 19th segments are the apertures of the atria. C, Peri- cheta: the spermathecal pores are between seg- ments 6 and 7, 7 and 8, 8 and 9, the oviducal pores upon the 14th and the male pores upon the 18th segment. In all the figures the nephridial pores are indicated by dots and the sete by strokes.

structural modifica- tions, however, are so obviously connected with the density of the medium in which they live that they cannot be held to be of primary import- ance. On the other hand, there is no deep-seated anatomical character which distinguishes earth- worms from the freshwater Oligocheta. An article on earthworms must therefore necessarily include an account of the aquatic and mud-inhabiting Oligocheta.

The Oligocheta range in size from a few lines to several feet in length; the large earthworm from the Cape Col- ony (Microcheta rappi) measures 5 or 6 feet in length when fully extended. On the whole the terrestrial forms (earthworms) are larger than the aquatic forms. The Oligochxta are found all over the globe, but at present no details of value can be given as to their distributional

1 Gegenbaur, Elements of Comp. Anat., Eng. trans., 1878; Claus, Text-Book of Zoology, Eng. trans., 1884.

areas. As might be imagined from their soft perish- able bodies, nothing is known respecting the distribution

of the Oligocheta in past time.

The most prominent characteristic of the Oligocheta, as of the Chetopoda generally, is the segmentation of the body: the body is divided into a series of segments or metameres, which resemble each other most closely in the lowest forms. This metamerism is seen externally in the presence of transverse furrows, corresponding with the internal divisions of the body cavity, and in the dis- position of the sete. The mouth opens into the first segment, which is usually unprovided with setz ; in front of the mouth is a preoral lobe; this latter is aborted in some Oligochxta (Urochexta, Thamnodrilus). oa

Body- Wall.—In all Oligochexta three layers can be distinguished in the body-wall—(1) an outer epidermis, which secretes a delicate cuticle, (2) a circular muscle layer, (3) a longitudinal muscle layer. Within the last-named is the peritoneal lining of the ccelom.

Clitellum.—During sexual maturity certain of the segments of the body in Luwmbricus and other earthworms undergo a change in appearance which is caused by the development of several layers of unicellular glands beneath the epidermis. Among the "'Limicolz (e.g.,in Limnodrilus, Rhynchelmis, Enchytreidex) the clitellum is, on the contrary, furnished with an epidermal layer only one cell thick ; some of these cells become large and glandular. In these points Criodrilus agrees with earthworms. The sccretion of these glands may form the cocoon in which the eggs are deposited, but it appears to be also used to attach individuals together during copu- lation. The clitellum is universal among the Oligocheta. Monili- gaster and Criodrilus were for some time considered as an

exception to this rule, but a clitellum has recently been demonstrated in these two genera by Bourne (17)? and Benham (7). The clitellum in carthworms never occupies less than two segments, and in Trigaster it extends over twenty-seven.

Sete#.-—These are universally found in the Oligochexta, but differ in their shape, as well as in their number and arrangement, in different families. In the majority of forms the sete are disposed in four longitudinal rows ; the sete in each of these rows may be comparatively numerous (Naidomorpha), or may be limited to two

Yi

Fig. 2.—Sete of Oligocheta. a, penial seta of Pericheta ceylontca ; b, extremity of penial seta of Acanthodrilus (after Horst); ¢, seta of Urochexta (Perier) ; da, seta of Lumbricus; e, seta of Criodrilus; f, g, sete of Bohemitlla comata; h, 4,7, sete of Psammoryctes barbatus (f to j after Vejdovsky).

ea

D> > >>> >r>r7 =z

>>>>>

7

>>>>>>F >> >> >_> —ST

~ >

~~

&

Lumbriculide and many earthworms). In Acanthodrilus multt- porus and other earthworms the eight sete are no longer in pairs, but separated by nearly cquivalent intervals. In Urochwta (fig. 1,D) and Diachexta each segment has also eight setz, but these are dis- posed more or less

alternately in successive segments. In the former of these two genera, as also in Eudrilus, peculiar structures of a chitinous nature exist between the individual set of a OS SS ee a

1 The genus Acanthodrilus is almost entirely Antarctic in its range.

It occurs in Patagonia, 8. Georgia, Kerguelen's Land, New Zealand, Cape of Good Hope and other parts of Africa, Madagasear, and New Caledonia. Perichxta is charaeteristie of the Old and New World tropies, particularly of the former; in the Old World it ranges from India to China and Japan, and through the Indian Islands to Australia and New Zealand. Australia has the peeuliar genera Megascolides, Notoscolex, and Cryptodrilus, but the greatest number of peculiar genera are found in the Neotropical region. In Europe the most characteristic genera are Lumbricus and Allolobophora; these are found in most other parts of the world, but it is possible that they have been accidentally imported.

? These figures refer to the " Literature," p. 684.

WORM

segment; these are similar to certain structures described in Anachxta by Vejdovsky (15) as abortive sete; their presence in Urochxta and Eudrilus may indicate that the number of sete in these worms has been reduced from a continuous eircle round each

'segment, such as exists in the family Perichetide (fig. 1, C).

Among the Natdomorpha there are delicate hair-like sete which pass by numerous intermediate forms into sete with a bifurcate extremity; in many limicolous forms, as in earthworms, the set are simple in form, ending in a slightly curved extremity. The sete are developed in the interior of cells of ectodermic origin ; special muscles effect their movements.

Celom.—The Oligochxtia, like other Annelids, have a ccelom Celom.

which is formed by the excavation of paired mesoblastic somites ; the intersegmental septa represent the walls of each two adjacent somites ; the dorsal and ventral mesenteries, which in the Archt- annelida suspend the gut from the body-wall, are largely absent in the Oligochzxta, the cavities of each pair of somitcs becoming continuous. 'Traces of the dorsal mesentery are met with in some forms ; in almost all the ventral mesentery persists to a great extent in a sheet which suspends the ventral blood-vessel from the intestine.

The coelom communicates with the exterior by the nephridia and ducts of the reproductive organs and by certain dorsally-placed pores. These latter are sometimes present only on the head seg- ment (Criodrilus and many aquatic genera), sometimes on the body segments also (Hnchytreida); in the majority of earthworms they appear to exist only on the body segments, and the first one does not usually appear before the third and fourth segment. In Pon- todrilus and a few other species the dorsal pores are entirely absent. The ccelom is lined with a peritoneum, the cells of which exhibit different characters in different parts of the body. The intestine is covered with a layer of large cells containing numerous granules; this cellular investment was originally described as hepatic, but it is now known to have no relation to the alimentary tract. The investigations of Kiikenthal (16) show that these cells are concerned with the excretory function.

Nervous System.—This consists of (1) a pair of cerebral ganglia Nervous connected by a circumcesophageal ring with a chain of ventral system.

ganglia arranged in pairs—a pair to each segment; (2) a system of small ganglia and nerves arising from the cerebral ganglia and innervating the anterior part of the alimentary tract ; and (3) two lateral ganglionated cords, which have a special interest for those who believe that the segmented worms are the Invertebrate group from which the Chordata (including the Vertebrata) have sprung. The discovery of Kisig (" Die Capitelliden," Naples Monographs), that this lateral cord is on both sides connected with segmentally arranged sense-organs in the Capitellida, is an additional argument for considering this lateral system as the homologue of the lateral line in fishes.

The nervous system of olosoma is probably degenerate ; it con- sists merely of a pair of cerebral ganglia, which are situated in the procephalic lobe in connexion with the epidermis. In Ctenodrilus the nervous system, like that of the Archiannelida (see below), is imbedded in the epidermis throughout its whole extent. In the higher forms, in fact in all the remaining Oligochexta, the central nervous system has lost its primitive connexion with the epidermis. Moreover, in these forms the cerebral ganglia, originally developed in the procephalic lobe, have moved back, and may lie as far back as in the fourth segment.

Vascular System.—All the Oligochxta possess, in addition to the Vascular corpusculated fluid of the ccelom, a system of closed vessels which system.

in the higher forms attains to a very highly developed condition. This vascular system contains in nearly all the Ol¢gocheta, as in the Polychxta and Hirudinca, a red-coloured fluid, which has been proved to owe its coloration to hemoglobin, and in which are suspeuded corpuscles. - #olosoma has a colourless pseudhemal fluid. In the lower forms the walls of the blood-vessels are exces- sively delicate, and contain no muscles ; in the higher forms (e.g., Lumbricus) the blood-vessels are furnished with muscular tissne as well as with an epithelial lining. The cells of the latter give rise to the corpuscles of the blood, which consist of little more than the nucleus.

The simplest form of vascular system occurs in olosoma and Ctenodrilus. The alimentary tract is surrounded with a network of blood capillaries, which in the cesophageal region unite to form a dorsal vessel; this passes along the cesophagus, but is situated between the walls of the intestine and its covering of peritoneal cells ; beneath the cerebral ganglia the dorsal vessel gives off a branch on either side; these unite with a ventral vessel, which passes beneath the intestine, and gives off branches to it, which are regularly arranged in pairs. In the Enchytreide the dorsal vessel is also restricted to the anterior segments of the body, and originates from a blood sinus in the walls of the alimentary tract. The dorsal vessel gives off anteriorly two branches which unite to form the ventral vessel; three pairs of slender vessels, a pair to each segment,

originate from the dorsal vessel, and are connected with these two branches. In all the higher Oligochexta there is reticulum of blood capillaries developed in the walls of the alimen-

WORM 679

Excretory Organs.—It has been recently shown by Vejdovsky Excretory

tary canal, but the dorsal vessel, although connected with this (15) that the Oligocheta, like Polygordius, many Polycheta, organs.

network, does not originate from it, but passes from end to end of

the body. The dorsal vessel is also connected with the ventral vessel by paired trunks, which are segmentally disposed, 7.e., a pair to each segment. In the Naidomorpha and Lumbriculide, the vascular system consists only of these parts, together with some few branches which penetrate the layers of the body-wall and reach to the epidermis. Among earthworms the vascular system is more complex ; our knowledge of the details of the circulation in certain tropical genera (Urocheta, Pontodrilus) is due to Perrier, and but little of importance has been added to his descriptions. The circulation of Lwmbricus is known principally from the investi- gations of D'Udekem, Claparéde, and recently of Horst. In Lwm- bricus there are three longitudinal trunks (fig. 3) which run from end to end of the body—(1) dorsal, (2) supranervian, (3) subnervian. The dorsal vessel is connected with the supranervian by seven

US

me)

<7

COON. SSSSEEEEEETI 9)

rig Z a ¢

Fia. 3.—Diagrammatic Transverse Section through one of the Posterior Segments of Lumbricus (partly after Marshall and Hurst). 2, nephridium;

f, funnel of nephridium ; 7.c, nerve cord; e, epidermis; m, transverse muscles ; m', longi- tudinal muscles; s, s', ventral and dorsal pairs of sete ; ¢, typhlosole ; d, dorsal blood-vessel, connected by a vertical branch with typhlosole and by branches with intestinal blood-plexus; s.x, supranervian vessel; v, infranervian vessel. On the left side are indicated the chief vessels given off from the main trunk to the body-wall and nephridium.

pairs of stout trunks in the outer part of the body ; from the dorsal vessel in front of the last of these originates on either side a lateral longitudinal vessel which passes along the sides of the cesophagus and gives off branches to it. In the intestinal region the dorsal vessel is connected by branches with the capillary network of the intestine, and also directly by lateral branches with the sub- nervian vessel; the latter gives off branches to the body-walls. The majority of earthworms possess in addition a small vessel running above the alimentary canal, but below the dorsal vessel ; this is especially concerned with the blood supply of the alimen- tary tract, and in the intestinal region it runs in the interior of the typhlosole; the presence of this supra-intestinal trunk was first noted by Perrier, who also discovered that more or fewer of the large contractile "hearts" of the anterior segments are connected with this vessel as well as with the dorsal vessel. The subnervian vessel is absent in Pontodrilus and other genera. The immense development of the integumental capillary system is eharacteristic of earthworms, and is no doubt to be explained by the much greater thickness of the body-wall; it has been already stated that among the lower Oligocheta the integumental capillary system is present though feebly developed. In some genera of earthworms the capillaries penetrate the epidermic layer, as in some of the aquatic genera and in many leeches. It has been recently stated by Sarasin that these epidermic capillaries open by pores on to the exterior. That the vascular. system of 4olosoma represents a primitive condition is shown by the investi- gations of Vejdovsky (15) into the development of Rhynchelmis. In this worm the dorsal vessel is at first only visible in the anterior region of the body, where it lies upon the cesophagus below the peritoneal covering of the latter; posteriorly it communicates with a blood sinus surrounding the intestine ; this stage exactly corresponds to the adult olosoma, and the blood is also colour- less ; subsequently the dorsal vessel becomes

connected with the ventral by a few lateral trunks; this stage is retained in the Enchytreide. Moreover, in the Chloremidez a similar condition exists (Horst, Zool. Anzeig., viii. p. 12), and in the larval Teredella.

Gephyrea, and Hirudinea, possess temporary larval excretory tubules as well as the definitive nephridia. These organs have been found in Rhynchelmis, Nais, Chetogaster, and Afolosoma, In the first mentioned type they appear as a pair of fine tubes with a ciliated lumen, without any apparent internal aperture; they run on either side of the pharynx, and each opens by a pore placed at the side of the mouth, In the young asexually produced individual of Nais, Chextogaster, and Aolosoma similar organs are to be seen. The permanent excretory organs consist in the majority of Oligochxta of three parts:—(1) a funnel-shaped expansion furnished with cilia, opening into the body cavity; (2) a eoiled glandular tube; and (3) a terminal vesicle furnished with muscular layers, and opening on to the exterior of the body. 'The latter section may be absent, and in the relative proportions of the different parts as well as in certain details of their structure there are great differences. Asa general rule, the funnel lies in a segment anterior to that which bears the external pore; but in Plutellus Perrier states that the whole organ lies in one segment. In the majority of forms there are not more than a single pair of nephridia to each segment (except in Perichxta, &c.). In the limicolous Oligocheta nephridia are generally wanting in the anterior segments of the body, and disappear in those which contain the generative ducts when the latter are developed ; in the terricolous forms, on the other hand, the nephridia usually eommence in the second or third segment. Ctenodrilus is remarkable for the fact that it only possesses a single pair of nephridia, the funnel of which is situated on the anterior side of the first dissepiment; but in no form are these organs entirely wanting. The glandular part of the organ consists, as in the Hirudinea and most Platyhelminths, of a row of cells placed end to end, which are perforated by the lumen; the lumen of the tubule is therefore, as was first discovered by Claparéde, intra- cellular; in this particular the nephridia of the Oligocheta differ from those of the Polycheta, where the walls of the duct are made up of rows of cells, the lumen therefore being inter-cellular.! While in the greater number of Oligochxta the lumen of the tubule is simple and unbranched, in Chetogaster fine branches are given off,

which ramify in the substance of the cells; this is an important point of resemblance to the nephridia of the Hirudinea, where Vejdovsky and Bourne (Q. J. M. S., 1884) have described a similar branching of the duct. The glandular part of the nephridium is often, as in Lumbricus, differentiated into two parts; the anterior section is composed of more delicate cells, the posterior of larger and more glandular cells; the lumen is furnished with cilia. The external surface of the organ is frequently covered with rounded cells of a glandular appearance, which are to be looked upon as modified peritoneal cells; in certain cases (e.g., Pontodrilus and many "' Limicole"') those cells form a solid mass in the interior of which are concealed the windings of the excretory tubule. Special dilatations of the tubule are occasionally met with, as in Rhynchelmis ; and, among leeches, Clepsine, Pontobdella, &c., show a similar dilatation, which, as in Rhynchelmis, comes imme- diately after the funnel. The terminal section of the nephridium, the "contractile" vesicle, is more marked among earthworms than in the "Limicolw"; it is lined by a delicate layer of cells and furnished with muscular fibres; in Urobenus (Benham, 7), as well as in many other species, this region of the nephridium is very largely developed, and is furnished with a long sac-like diver- ticulum. The differences in strueture between the various parts of the nephridium are due to their different origin : the funnel is formed independently of the glandular tubule, though both take their origin from the mesoblast ; the contractile vesicle is inva-

| ginated from the ectoderm.

In Acanthodrilus muiltiporus Beddard found that the number of nephridial pores in the anterior region of the body to each segment was more than 100. In Zypheus an almost identical arrangement exists, and in Pericheta (Beddard, 4). In the last-named genus, as well as in an Australian form, Megascolides (Spencer, 12), the nephridial system forms a continuous network of tubules, uniuter- rupted by the septa. In Acanthodrilus the network of each segment is independent. In this genus, as in Pericheta, there are numerous ciliated funnels in each segment.

The relation of the nephridia of the Chetopoda to those of the Platyhelminths, on the one hand, and to those of the Hirudinca and

Gephyrea are variously interpreted. It has been proved that in Polygordius, many Chextopoda, and many Hirudinea and Gephyrea, the larve, like those of the Oligochexta, possess excretory organs, which are constructed on the type of the nephridia in Platyhel- minths. Thisisatany rate the case with Polygordius, the Chetopod larva, and the larva of Echiurus; in all these types the nephridia are paired branched tubes, which open separately on to the exterior; they have, however, no internal openings, the flagellate cells of the Platyhelminth, with their single flagellum and funnel-shaped per-

1 Nussbaum has lately (Arch. Slav. de Biol., i.) found that in the leech a number of cells fuse to form a single drain-pipe cell. This would tend to prove that the intercellular lumen preceded the intracellular.

foration, being absent. The larval excretory organs of the Hirudinea, like these of the Oligochezta referred to above, are to be looked upon as in a more rudimentary condition; they are unbranched, and are sometimes without an external orifice. Moreover, essentially similar organs are found in the larval mollusc. In many of the above- cited examples it is certain that the larval excretory organs have no connexion with the permanent excretory organs; they atrophy before the latter appear. Hatchek, however, has stated that there is a connexion between the larval and permanent excretory organs in Polygordius; doubts have been thrown upon this observation by some who believe that the facts already cited showed (1) that the excretory system of Annelida and Hirudinca isa new formation, while (2) the exerctory system of their Platyhelminth ancestors 1s represented by the transitory excretory system of the Annelida, which has therefore naturally no connexion with the permanent excretory system. This view has the merit of explaining the presence of apparently similar structures (7.¢., the larval nephridia) in such diverse types as Mollusca, Hirudinea, and Gephyrea, and is perhaps further supported by the high devclopment of the larval excretory organ in the active larve of Polygordius, Echiurus, and the Chzxtopoda, and its rudimentary character in the embryo Oligochzta. It follows from this that the permanent nephridia of the Chxtopoda are new structures, unless the

views of Bergh (18) be accepted, who would derive these organs from the generative ducts of the Platyhelminths.

Against this hypothesis may be urged (1) the unlikelihood of a new formation of excretory organs in Annelids, and the probability of these organs being really homologous with those of their Platy- helminth ancestors, and (2) the fact that the larval excretory organs of Polygordius, Polychxta, and Oligocheta and Hirudinca are con- nected with the permanent system or at least are not in any way replaced by the permanent excretory system ; in the Oligocheta the larval excretory organs appear comparatively late, and the segment occupied by them never gives rise to a pair of permanent nephridia.

The following facts lead to another hypothesis, which is in many respects more acceptable.

A connexion between the nephridia of consecutive segments has becn recently stated by Wilson to occur in the embryo Lumbricus. Meyer and Cunningham have observed the same in Terebeila. Vejdvosky (15) has recorded in Anacheta bohemica a connexion between the nephridia of the 21st and 22d segments, and moreover the first pair of nephridia has two internal funnels. In the leech Pontobdella the nephridia (Bourne, Q. J. Min. Sct., 1884) form a network, the internal funnels and external apertures alone being arranged metamerically. The presence of numerous external pores to each segment in certain earthworms, and the continuity of nephridia of adjacent segments are facts to be referred to the same category. Kisig's discovery of the presence of many nephridia in each of the seg- ments of the Capitellidx, which are conncted together, is also, like the other facts referred to, in harmony with the supposition that the excretory system of the Annelida has been directly derived from that of the Platyhelminths somewhat asfollows. The excretory system is at first, as in the Platyhelminth, a continuous system, opening by numerous apertures into the body cavity by a single orifice ora pair of orifices on to the exterior. Secondary external apertures are then formed, which are irregular in their disposition (these actually occurin certain Platyhelminths), and more or less numerous; this condition is largely retained in Acanthodrilus and Pericheta; the secondary external

apertures as well as the internal apertures then become reduced in number and metanierically arranged ; this condition occurs in Pontobdella and Terebella, and toa very limited extent in Anachxia. The connexion between the nephridial system of succession segments then disappears, and the characteristic Annelid excretory system is arrived at.

|

WORM

duct which opens into the pharynx. Similar glands appear to occur in most Lumbricidw in the form of unicellular glands attached to the pharynx.

Another series of glandular structures are connected with the

. pharynx, which have been termed by Vejdovsky salivary glands ;

these are found in the Enchytreidz, and consist of simple or branched tubes, which open into the hinder end of the pharynx at each side by a single duct; since these glands agrce in their minute structure with nephridia, which are not found in the scginents which contain the glands, it is probable that they represent slightly metamorphosed nephridia (Vejdovsky). Among earthworms Uro- cheta, Diacheta, and Acanthodrilus multiporus possess a pair of glands at the anterior end of the body (glandes & mucosité, Perrier), which are larger and more complicated than the nephridia, though their structure is the same ; in Acanthodrilus these glands open into the buccal cavity ; in Urocheta they are branched and open on to the surface of the body on the one hand, and into the ccelom by several funnels (Beddard). It is possible that they are the homo- logues of the salivary glands in the Enchytrxide.

The cesophagus is ciliated in the lower forms, but among earth- worms cilia appear to be limited to that section of the cesophagus which lies behind the gizzard. The intestine, however, appears to be ciliated in all the Oligochewta. There is thus a gradual diminu- tion in the ciliation of the alimentary tract in passing from the lower to the higher forms. In 4olosoma the whole canal from mouth to anus is ciliated. When the

buccal cavity first appears it is lined with a cuticle, and has no cilia. The pharynx loses its cilia in the Enchytrzidx, while the rest of the alimentary tract is cili- ated. Among earthworms the cilia are partially wanting in the cesophagus, whilc the intestine is lined with a ciliated epithelium.

In some Oligochxta the esophagus is furnished with a muscular dilatation, which is usually termed gizzard. This organ first makes its appearance among the Naidomorpha, but is absent from other genera of " Limicolx." Itis, on the contrary, present in nearly all earthworms; the gizzard is lined with a tall columnar epithclium, which secretes a specially thickened cuticle, and the muscular layers are enormously increased. In ZLumbricus the gizzard lies at the posterior end of the csophagus, but in all other earthworms it is succeeded as well as preceded by a section of cesophagus, as in Nais. In Lwmnbricus, as well as in many other genera of earth- worms, the gizzard occupies two segments, and the septum dividing these segments has disappeared, or is at most represented by a few bands of muscle, which bind down the gizzard to the body- wall. On the other hand, in some earthworms as well as in the Naidomorpha the gizzard only occupies one segment. In Digaster and Vrigaster there are, as the names of these genera imply, two or three separate gizzards, while in Montligaster there are four or five. In Zrigaster and Moniligaster each gizzard only occupies a single segment; it is possible that the single gizzard of Lumbricus, &c., which occupies two segments, is due to the fusion of two separate gizzards lying in as many consecutive segments.

The cesophagus in most earthworms is furnished with from one to six pairs of glandular diverticula, which are known as "calci- ferous glands" or "glands of Morren." Those glands produce a calcareous secretion.

The intestine is wider than the esophagus, but has much the same structure; in Molosoma the walls of the intestine consist of little more than a single layer of ciliated cells, but in the higher forms this is surrounded by a layer of circular and longitudinal muscular fibres. A remarkable peculiarity distinguishes the intestine of the majority of earthworms; this is a longitudinal fold on the dorsal side which projects into the lumen of the intestine, and which is known as the "typhlosole"

(fig. 3, ¢). A typhlosole does not exist in Pontodrilus nor in any known limi-

Alimen- ; Alimentary Tract.—The alimentary canal of all the Oligochzta | colous form. In Pericheta the intestine is furnished with one or tary is a straight tube running from mouth to anus, but even in the | more pairs of short ceca; in Megascolex and other genera there tract. lowest forms is specialized into different regions. A pharynx, | are series of compact glands opening into the intestine.

cesophagus, and intestine can be recognized universally ; the pharynx is formed by the stomodzal invagination of the epiblast, while the terminal section of the intestine is formed by the proc- todeal invagination; the rest of the alimentary canal is hypo- blastic. In olosoma the pharynx is restricted to the first segment

Reproductive Organs.—The Oligochxta are, so far as is known, Repro- invariably hermaphrodite ; in this particular they differ from the ductive Polychzxta, where as a rule the testes and ovaries are found in organs, distinct individuals. Among the Polychexta, however, Protwla and other Serpulide are hermaphrodite. The reproductive organs

of the body, a condition which is seen in the embryonic stages of other Oligochxia, but also in the adult Polygordius (see below). This is followed by the narrow cesophagus, which leads, in the fourth segment, into the intestine; the intestine is at first wide

but afterwards becomes narrower; the whole alimentary canal is ciliated. In the higher types the pharynx occupies several seg- ments, and is preceded by a buccal cavity, the epithelium of which is not ciliated ; in many Oligochzxta (e.g., Enchytreus) the pharynx is protrusible. It is frequently furnished with glands, which are of two kinds, and probably not morphologically comparable. In many Enchytreide and Naidomorpha certain of the anterior segments contain glands attached to the anterior faces of the intersegmental septa; these have been termed septal glands. In Anachexta there are only two pairs of these glands, but four in Pachydrilus ; the glands of each side of the body are connected by a continuous longitudinal

consist of testes and ovaries, with their ducts, and spermathece, which are filled with spermatozoa during copulation, The repro- ductive glands are developed as a proliferation of the peritoneal epithelium, but are restricted to one or two segments ; these organs moreover have a definite form, and are commonly surrounded by a layer of cells of different nature from the sexual cells which make up the substance of the gland.

(1) Male Reproductive Organs—(a) Testes.—In Lumbricus these organs consist of two minute pairs of solid cellular masses attached close to the median ventral line upon the posterior face of the septa which divide segments 9-10 and 10-11 (fig. 4). These organs were first discovered by Hering. In the majority of earthworms (Acantho-

1 For an account of the function of these glands, as well as of the part which

earthworms play as geological agents, see Darwin, formatiun of Vegetable Mould, &c.

drilus, Eudrilus, Perwhsta, &c.) there is an identical number of testes occupying the same segments. It is probable but not yet proved that in Urochwta and Moniligaster, where there is only a single seminal reservoir and vas defcrens on each side, there is but one pair of testes; at any rate, in Typheus, where the seminal reservoirs and vasa deferentia are single, there is but one testis on each side placed in the 10th segment.

Among the "Zimicolz" there is rarely (Phrcoryctes) more than a single pair of testes, which may be in the 5th (Naidomorpha), 9th (Lumbriculidz), 10th (Tubifex), or 11th (Enchytreus, &c.) segment.

(b) Seminal Reservoirs. —The spermatozoa are not, however, de- veloped within the testes, but in special receptacles, the seminal reservoirs (seminal vesicles, vesicule seminales). These structures frequently enclose the testes, with which they have been con- founded by many writers. By the earlier writers the seminal reservoirs were regarded as ovaries; this opinion was due to the numerous parasitic Gregarines which these

organs contain; the encysted parasites were mistaken forova. In Lwmbricus terrestris, &c. (Bergh), there is a single median reservoir, which encloses the testes, the funnels of the vasa deferentia, and the nerve cord in each of segments 9 and 10; with these are connected three pairs of lateral outgrowths situated respectively in segments 8, 10,and11. In Allolobophora fetida there are four pairs of isolated seminal reservoirs in segments 8, 9, 10, and 11; there is no median unpaired portion; and the testes as well as the vasa deferentia lie freely in the body cavity; the first two pairs lie on the posterior septa of their segments, and open by an aperture into the cavity of the segment behind; the last two pairs lie upon the anterior septa of their segments, and open into the cavity of the segment in front. In all cases the seminal reservoirs are formed as outgrowths of the septa. The cavity of the seminal reservoirs is broken up by anastomosing trabecule, in the interstices of which the spermatozoa undergo their development. There is very great variety among earthworms in the number and arrangement of the seminal reservoirs, but there is no form known in which they are absent. In Urocheta, Typheus, Titanus, and Diacheta there appear to be only a single pair, which are of great length. In Diachxta (Benham) they oceupy 26 segments.

In many of the " Limicole," as was first proved by Lankester in Tubifex, seminal reservoirs are found ; a where their develop- ment has been traced they appear to originate as outgrowths of the septa. In some of the simpler forms, ¢.g., Chatogaster, seminal reservoirs are not developed, but the testicular products float freely in the perivisceral cavity, where they undergo their de- velopment.

(c) Vasa Deferen- tia.—It is a rule without any excep- tions among the Oligocheta that the Spermatozoa are car- ried out of the body by special ducts, which perform only this function. In this respect the Oligoche#ta are in marked contrast to the Polychxta,where Fig, 4.—Genital Segments of Lumbricus (slightly altered theripespermatozoa from Howes, Biological Atias). The left side repre-

are either set free sents the immature, the right the mature condition, by a rup haa of the so far as the male reproductive organs are concerned,

body-wall, or are conveyed to the ex- terior by means of the nephridia, which, however, may be slightly modified in relation to this function. These ducts are termed vasa deferentia ; they in- variably open freely into the body cavity, and only sometimes (¢.g., Lumbricus) acquire a secondary relation with the testes by way of the seminal reservoirs ; they are developed independently of the testes. In the Hirudinca and Platyhelminths, on the other hand, the efferent ducts are continuous with the testes, of which they appear to be mere outgrowths ; Nussbaum has, however, recently (Zool. Anzeiger, viii. p. 181) stated that in Clepsine the vasa deferentia are aoiabged independently of the testes.

In their simplest form (in many Enchytreidz) the vasa deferentia consist of a single pair of convoluted tubes, which open by a wide funnel-shaped aperture into one segment, while the external aper- ture is situated in the following segment. Very generally in those

t, anterior pair of testes (the second pair are in the next segment); vs, seminal vesicles; sp, spermathece ; vd, vas deferens; 0, ovary; od, oviduct; ro, recep- taculum ovorum; 7, nephridia; nc, nerve cord.

681

Oligocheta the funnel-shaped expansion is continued into a wide cylindrical tube, which narrows abruptly on passing through the intersegmental septum into a slender tube; the walls of both sections of the vas deferens are formed of cylindrical ciliated cells; the external aperture is often surrounded by several rows of large glandular cells. Among a large number of the lower Oligocheta there is a single pair of vasa deferentia, which occupy in the same way two segments; the internal funnel-shaped aperture opens into one segment, while the greater part of the tube and the external orifice are situated in the following segment. A further complica- tion is, however, introduced in the form of a glandular terminal organ, which opens on to the exterior by one extremity, and com- municates with the vas deferens at the other. In Stylaria lacustris this organ is pear-shaped, narrowing towards the external aperture ; it is lined by a layer of cylindrical glandular cells, outside of which is a layer of muscular fibres ; the whole organ is covered by large peritoneal cells of a glandular appearance. This organ is termed the atriwm; the vas deferens,

which is short, only curved (not convoluted), opens by one end into the broad extremity of the atrium, and terminates in a ciliated funnel, which has this peculiarity that it does not lie in the segment in front, but in the same segment (in the 6th) as the atrium; it is, however, closely applied to the intersegmental septum of segments 5-6.

This condition of the vasa deferentia is exactly repeated in the earthworm Moniligaster barwellt ; the seminal reservoirs (Beddard) lie partly in the 8th and partly in the 9th segment; the vas deferens, which is much coiled, lies in the same segment; it is con- tinuous at one end with the seminal reservoir, and at the other with a glandular body opening between segments 9-10, which has a structure apparently identical with that of the atrium of Stylaria. Cheetogaster diaphanus (Vejdovsky, 15) has the same general dis- position of the vasa deferentia, but the atrium is divided into a glandular "vesicula seminalis," into which opens the vas deferens, and a distal non-glandular portion, which can be everted during copulation.

The reproductive ducts of the 7'ubifictde# are still further com- plicated in their structure. In Tubzfex rivulorwm the structure of the atrium at an early stage is like that of Stylaria ; a simple globular or pear-shaped atrium is formed as an invagination of the integument; later this is differentiated into two parts, as in Chaetogaster ; an additional structure is, however, developed in

Fic. 5.—Male Genital Ducts of Various Oligocheta. In most cases the whole length of the vasa deferentia is shown; the transverse lines indicate the boundaries of the segments through which they pass. The thick black lines indicate the atria, the dotted lines the muscular part of the atria. In F, G, H the penial sete are shown lying in a sac opening in common with the atria. A, Moniligaster barwelli (outside the atrium in A and C is a layer of glandular tissue); C, Phreatothrix pragensis (after Vejdovsky); D, Zudrilus silvicola; E, Pontodrilus marionis; F, Pericheta armata; G, Typheus gammii; H, Acanthodrilus novx-zelandiz ; I, Ocnerodrilus (after Eisen).

the form of a group of unicellular glands, collectively termed the prostate, which open into the glandular distal region of the atrium ; in theadult 7'ubifex the proximal section of the atrium 1s developed into a protrusible

penis; this is surrounded by a second invagina- tion of the integument, which forms a penis sheath and part of the penis proper. The glandular part of the atrium (vesicula seminalis) is ciliated, but cilia are wanting in the penis. In Telmatodrilus

(Kisen) the prostates are very nunierous, and arranged in pairs ; in Psammoryetes (Vejdovsky) and in Hemitubifex (Kiscn) the upper part of the vesicula seminalis, into which open the vas deferens and the prostate, forms a globular chamber distinct from the re- mainder of the atrium.

Another type of efferent apparatus is found in the Lumbriculidx, In Stylodrilus there is a single pair of atria, which have much the same structure as in Sty/aria, but the proximal end of the organ is less glandular and can be everted asa penis. With each atrium, however, are connected two vasa deferentia; one of these opens by a funnel-like expansion into the segment in front, the other passes back into the segment behind that which contains the atrium, and after again perforating the septum opens by a funnel-shaped ex- pansion into the atrial segment. Among earthworms Afoniligaster, as already stated, is furnished with an efferent apparatus exactly eomparable to that of the lower " Zimicolz." In other genera the same divisions can be recognized in the efferent apparatus, which may also be single ordouble. In all earthworms, however, with the exception of Aloniligaster, the internal funnels are situated several segments in front of the external pore, instead of being placed in the next segment. This is the case also with Oenerodrilus (Hisen), a form usually referred to the " Limicolx." Urocheta and Typhxus are the only genera known, besides AMoniligaster, in which there is a single vas deferens on each side. In all others there are a pair of vasa deferentia on each side, which open by separate funnels into two consecutive segments (10th and 11th); the vasa deferentia open on to the exterior by a common pore; they may become united into asingle tube in the segment behind that which contains the posterior funnel (Lumbricus, Pericheta), or one or two segments farther back

(Aficrocheta), or, finally, as in Eudrilus, they may unite in the terminal apparatus.

The structure of the vasa deferentia and the funnels corresponds to that of the lower Oligochzta, except that the funnels are usually much plicated. In Lumbricus, Urochxta, &c., the vasa deferentia open directly on to the exterior; in other types, however, an atrium can be recognized. The most primitive form of these organs (in some respects) is seen in the genus Hudrilus (Beddard, 3); the two vasa deferentia open into the interior of a glandular organ, which is probably the homologue of the atrium; thisorgan is divided into two parts by a longitudinal septum, but is covered by continuous layers of muscles ; it communicates with two muscular tubes, also covered by a continuous layer of muscle, which unite into a single muscular penis, which is probably eversible. The penis, like the atrium, is lined by a single layer of non-ciliate cells; the cells of the glandular portion are non-ciliate, and are arranged in two layers ; the penis projects into the interior of a cavity open to the exterior ; this corresponds to the penis sheath of the Naidomorpha. With the penis sheath ("bursa copulatrix," Perrier) is also connected a small rigid diverticulum with muscular walls.

It is not certain whethcr the partial longitudinal division of the atrium and vesicula represents the partial fusion of the primitively distinct atria or the commencing separation into two parts of a single atrium; the latter alternative, on the whole, is the more probable.

In Perichxta, Acanthodrilus, &c., certain glandular bodies are

connected with the termination of the vas deferens, which have been termed "prostates." These glands are of two kinds: (1) in Acan- thodrilus, Pontodrilus, &c., they consist of a single somewhat con- voluted tube of uniform diameter ; (2) in Perichzta, &c., they have aracemose lobulated appearance. It is probable that these structures are homologous. The prostates of Perichexta (fig. 5, F) are made up of numerous ductules, which are connected with groups of cells that have the character of unicellular glands ; each cell:is connected bya long stalk with the termination of the ductule; in Acanthodrilus, &c., the prostate is lined by a double layer of cells which surround a central lumen; the innermost

layer of cells are narrow and columnar, the outer layer are large pear-shaped glandular cells. The difference between the two organs is this: in Perichzta the glandular cells have become segregated into groups, while the lumen of the glandis branched. In atleast one species of Perichexta both these differences from Acanthodrilus are less marked. _ The so-called prostates of Acanthodrilus and Pontodrilus agree in their minute structure with the vesicula seminalis of Eudrilus, and they open on to the exterior, like the corresponding structures in Perichata, by a thick-walled muscular tube ; the vas deferens, however, is connected in Pontodrilus with the muscular part of the atrium, and not with the vesicula ; the condition of the efferent apparatus is therefore a more modified one. In Typheus this modification is carried still further: the vas deferens enters the body- wall independently of the vesicula and atrium, and only joins the latter below the epidermis just before its opening on to the exterior. If Vejdovsky be right in interpreting the so-called receptaculum seminis of Oenerodrilus (Hisen) as the atrium, the relations of the several parts of the efferent system in this worm are much the same asin Typheus. In Acanthodrilus (fig. 5, H) the two pairs of atria open on to the 17th and 19th segments respectively; the vasa deferentia open on to the 18th independently of them.

(d) Genital Setz.—It is commonly the case among the Oligochzxta

WokRM

that the sete upon the clitellum, in the neighbourhood of the spermathecee and the male sexual apertures, undergo a_ certain amount of modification. Thus in Lwmbricus the sete in these regions of the body are longer and more slender than the sete else- where (Hering); in Urochxta and Thammodrilus the sete upon the elitellum are ridged. Analogous modifications are found in Nais and other "‘ Limicolz." The function of these setz is prob- ably, as Lankester has suggested, to assist in attaching the worms together during copulation. Before the individual is mature these setee are absent, and the ordinary sete occupy their place; when the clitellum is developed the ordinary sete drop out, and are replaced by the genital sete (Vejdovsky).

*In Acanthodrilus, Typheus, and some species of Pericheta the apertures of the atria are furnished with a thin-walled muscular diverticulum in which are found a bundle of extraordinarily long sete ; these can be protruded through the sexual orifice and may possibly serve to assist in the transference of the sperm to the spermathece of another individual. These setee may be termed '*penial" sete (Lankester) (fig. 2, a, b).*

(2) Female Reproductive Apparatus—(a) Ovaries.—The ovaries of Lumbricus were first discovered by D'Udekem ; they consist of a pair of minute pear-shaped bodies attached to the anterior septum of the 13th segment (fig. 4, 0); their position exactly corresponds to that of the testes, and like those organs they are covered by a delicate layer of flattened peritoneal cells. In Pericheta and Acanthodrilus, where the testes are prolonged into numerous digi- tate processes, the ovaries have an identical form; finally, the contents of the young ovaries and testes consist of entirely similar germinal cells (Bergh); these facts all tend to prove the serial homology of the ovaries and testes. With the exception of Hucli- pidrilus and Phreoryctes, the Oligocheta possess but a single pair of ovaries, which appear to be invariably! placed behind the testes.

(0) Receptaculum Ovorwm.—Correspouding to the seminal reser- voirs are a paiv of outgrowths from the posterior side of the septum which separates segments 13-14; the ripe or nearly ripe ova are stored in these receptacles. Their presence in Lwmbricus was first discovered by Hering. They have the same structure as the seminal reservoirs ; their eavity is similarly divided by anastomosing trabecule; and they have been proved by Bergh (19) to originate in the same way. In Afoniligaster (Horst) these bodies are of large size, and therefore resemble more closely the seminal reservoirs. They are generally present in earthworms. Among the Naido- morpha organs are niet with which appear to resemble the recep- tacula. In Stylaria lacustris a pair of delicate sacs are developed in the same segment as that which contains the ovaries; in these the ova undergo their development ; the extremity of the sac encircles the ovary, so that the ova can readily find their way into it. This organ is, however, compared by Vejdovsky (15) to the delicate peritoneal covering of the ovary in Lwmbricus, and more particularly to a tube-like projection of this

peritoneal covering at the free extremity of the ovary where the ripe ova are found.

(ce) Oviduct.—The oviducts in Lwmbricus are two minute trumpet-shaped bodies composed of a single layer of ciliated cells; the funnel-shaped expansion opens into the 13th segment; the tube perforates the mesentery, and opens on to the exterior in the 14th segment. The mouth of the oviduct is in close relation with the aperture of the receptaculum ovorum into the same segment. In most earthworms a pair of oviducts of similar structure have been recognized; in Pericheta the two oviducts open by a common pore situated in the median ventral line of the 14th segment. The aper- tures of the oviducts are, with the exception of Aloniligaster (Horst) and Allurus (Beddard, 5), invariably placed in front of the male gene- rative pores. Among the "limicolous" forms oviducts have been described in Rhynchelmts, Phreoryctes, and Phreatothriz ; in these genera, however, the oviducts consist of little more than the funnel which is sessile on the ventral body-wall of the 11th segment, and opens on to the exterior in the groove between this and the following segment; in Phreoryctes, Beddard (6), there are two pairs of oviducts entirely contained in one segment. It is important to note that in Rhynchelmis and Phreatothrix the female pore is behind the male pore, while in earthworms (except Aoniligaster, All/urus) it is in front. Among the lower Oligochexta oviducts are abscnt; their place is taken in the Hnchytrzidez and others by a pair of slit-like orifices placed on the clitellar segment behind the apertures of the vasa deferentia. That these pores represent the external orifices of the oviducts in the higher forms is shown by the following considera- tions: (1) their position behind the male pores; (2) the probability urged by Vejdovsky that the clitellar segment really represents three fused segments, in which case the oviducal pores are really one segment behind the male efferent pores; (3) the remarkable analogy with the Cyelostomata among fishes, where the abdominal pores act as oviduct (Weber, Zeitsch. f. wiss. Zool., 1887).

The ovaries and oviducts of Hudrilus (Beddard, Horst), differ in many particulars from those of other Oligochzta. The ovaries (fig. 6) are two solid bodies situated on the anterior septum of segment

1 Plutellus is, according to Perrier, an exception ; the ovaries are in front of the testes.

Classifi- cation,

WORM

14, They are surrounded by layers of muscles, and the interior is divided by trabecule into numerous compartments ; directly con- tinuous with each ovary isa contorted tube which passes through the septum into the 13th segment, and then again passes through the septum, and opens on to the exterior in the 14th segment, in common with a large spermathecal pouch and a small glandular body. The oviduct opens by a wide the ovary, and is lined throughout with a ciliated epithelium; it is covered by layers of muscular fibres, which aro continuous with those of the ovary. The continuity of the ovary and its duct is unknown in any other Oligocheta, but is analo- gous to the condition of the ovaries Fie. 6.2 atemile Beamianie Mad. and their ducts in the leeches. It ratus of pkey On te right is possible that the muscular wall side the spermatheca has been cut of the ovary is to be regarded as an away to show the contorted ovi- hypertrophy of the peritoneal cover- {uct ol gina shone ease ing of the ovary in Lumbricus, &c., joined duct of spermatheca and and that this has involved the ovi- oviduct.

duct; or the muscular coat of the ovary may be regarded as the receptaculum ovorum, which, as in Stylaria, is developed in the same segment as the ovary; this supposition is strengthened by the fact that the oviduct traverses the septum between the 18th and 14th segments,

Spermathecee.—Of these organs there are from onc to eight pairs ; they consist of spherical or pear-shaped vesicles, often furnished with accessory diverticula. They receive the semen during copu- lation and by their epithelium is fabricated the generally chitinous spermatophore in which the spermatozoa are enveloped, and in which they are conveyed to the neighbourhood of the clitellum of another individual.

The genital ducts have been compared with nephridia by many writers ; there is not only a considerable anatomical resemblance, but a

developmental similarity ; the vasa deferentia (and the ovi- ducts ?), like the nephridia, consist of a funnel, of a more or less elongated tubule, and of a distal vesicular part. The ¢ntracellular duct of the nephridium and the intercellular duct of the vas deferens may be explained by the different functions which the organs perform.1 The sperimathecew, on the other hand, are com- parable to the vesicle of the nephridium, which is formed in both cases by an ectodermic ingrowth. The fact that the funnel and the tubule in both cases are developed independently, but both from the mesoblast, isa striking point of similarity between the vasa deferentia and oviducts and the nephridia. The belief of Claparéde that in the "Limicolx" the genital ducts were the homo- logues of nephridia, but not in the " Lerricole," was based upon the erroneous assumption that nephridia are absent in the genital segments of the former. This has been shown by Vejdovsky to be an error: nephridia are present at first in the genital segments, but degenerate and disappear when the genital ducts are formed. Moreover, enough has been already said to prove the extreme unlikelihood of a non-homology between the generative ducts in earthworms and those in the "limicolous" forms. Lankester put forward the theory that there were primitively two pairs of nephridia in each segment, each series being connected with one of the pairs of sete ; the genital ducts were supposed to be the remains of one series which had aborted, except in the genital segments. This theory was at first espoused by Perrier, who found that the nephridia were sometimes connected with one series of sete and sometimes with the other, and sometimes (Plutellus) alternated from segment to segment, opening in one segment by the ventral and in another by the dorsal sete; these facts appeared to show that one or other of the two series of nephridia was partially or entirely retained in different genera. In his later publications Perrier was not inclined to attach much weight to this hypothesis, inasmuch as it did not satisfactorily refer the genital ducts to one or other of the presumed double series of nephridia ; the apertures of the genital ducts and nephridia were found occasionally to co- incide at the same pair of sete.

The discovery that each segment of a worm may contain numerous nephridial pores disposes of any a@ priori difficulties as to the homology between nephridia and genital ducts, though the question is far from being settled.

Classification and Affinities. —It has already been stated that the Oligocheta form a group which cannot be subdivided into Limicole and Terricolw as was proposed by Claparéde. The genera of Oligo- cheta have been arranged in families by Vejdovsky (14), to whom the reader is referred for a classification, which is satisfactory as regards the "limicolous " forms, and some of the families (2.g., Lumbricidz and Perichetidx) of earthworms. Since that time, how-

SS ee ee

1 The difference between the nephridia and genital ducts in this respect cannot be regarded as being of importance; the nephridia of Polychta differ from those of Oligochzta in having an intercellular lumen. Lang, moreover, has shown ('"' Dice Polycladen," Maples Monographs) that in some Planarians the reproductive ducts, like the nephridia, may have an intracellular lumen.

mouth into the interior of

3

683

ever, a large number of new genera and species of earthworms have been described, which cannot at present be satisfactorily arranged. Perrier divided earthworms into threc groups :—(1) Preclitellians (e.g., Lumbricus), where the male pores are situated in front of the clitellum ; (2) Intraclitellians (e.g. , Eudrilus), where the male pores are within the clitellum ; and (3) Postclitellians (e.g., Perichzta), where the male pores open behind the clitellum. Advaneing knowledge has shown this classification to be untenable, for two principal reasons: first, because it separates some species of Acanthodrilus which are postclitellian from others which are intraclitellian, and it separates the intraclitellian Megascolex from the postclitellian Perichzta, between which genera there are numer- ous points of affinity ; and, secondly, because this classification is based on the assumption that earthworms can be considered as a group apart from other Oligochewta, whereas it is now impossible to draw any line of division between any two such groups.

The simplest forms of Oligochewta are the genera Holosoma and Ctenodrilus. 4olosoma has a "head," consisting of one segment which contains the pharynx. The nervous system consists of cerebral ganglia, which are placed in the first segment, and retain connexion with the epiblast ; the apparent absence of a ventral nervous cord is in all probability to be looked upon as evidence of degeneration. The body possesses considerable traces of the primitively continuous ciliation ; upon the head are a pair of ciliated pits. In all these particulars, as well as in the characters of the vascular system, "olosoma agrees with Ctenodrilus; the latter form has, however, a ventral nerve cord, which, like the cerebral ganglia, is lodged in the epidermis. In most of these points olosoma and Ctenodrilus resemble larval forms of the higher Oligocheta. The reproductive organs of Ctenodrilus are not known, but those of Zolosoma are constituted on the Oligocheetous plan. These two genera are also closely allied to the Archiannclida, of which a short description is appended, as they are not treated elsewhere in this work.

The affinities of Ctenodrilus are not so plain ; but, in the absence of any knowledge respecting the generative organs, it is impossible to refer them definitely to the. Oligocheta or to the Polychexta.

Archiannelida.—This subclass includes certain small marine Archian- worms which were formerly placed among the Polychwta. Hatchek nelida. originally created the group for the reception of Polygordius and Protodrilus; and recently Fottinger has placed Histriodrilus? (an animal formerly referred to the Discophora) in the same group. The name Arechiannelida implies that these forms stand at the base of the Annelida, and that they represent most nearly the common ancestral form from which both the Polychewta and Oligochzta have been derived. Their structure, which bears out this supposition, suggested the name.

Polygordius is found on the northern and southern coasts of Europe; it is a small slender worm, varying in length (according to the species) from 30 m. to 1 decim. The segmentation is hardly marked externally. The head segment is divided as in the Chetopoda generally into a prostomium and a peristomial ring; the prostomium gives rise to two tentacles. On either side of the prostomium is a ciliated pit, which is of special interest, as it

occurs on the one hand among the NEMERTINES (q.v.), and on the other among certain Polychsta (e.g., Ophelidz), and in the lowly organized Oligochxt olosoma. Cilia are found in certain species in the neighbourhood of the mouth and on the anal segment.

The ciliation of the body is more marked in Protodrilus, where there is a continuous ventral groove lined by cilia; there are rings of cilia also on each segment. The partial ciliation of Polygordius is to be derived from this by reduction. Certain Oligochsta retain traces of the primitive ciliation of the body (e.9., olosoma),

There are no traces of sete in Polygordius or its allies. The segmentation of the body, although hardly marked externally, is very clearly marked internally ; the body-cavity is divided by suc- cessive septa into a series of segments ; there is no such fusion of the anterior segments as is met with among tho Polycheta and Oligocheta, and the segments are less differentiated among them- selves than is usually the caso in the higher Chaetopoda. The head segment contains the pharynx, which is limited to this segment ; the nephridia, which consist of simple tubes (probably but not certainly formed of a chain of "'drain-pipe" cells, as in Oligocheta) are found in all the segments except the first and last. The nephridia do not lie freely within the celom, but in the thickness of the parietal peritoneum ; the funnel only just opens into the cavity of the segment preceding that which bears the external pore; that is to say, it is chiefly contained within the thickness of the septum.

3 The correct name of this worm is Histrtobdella. The altered termination is to express the change in the view regarding its affinities,

684

In having the form of simple sinuous (not eoiled) tubes, and in lying within the peritoneum, the nephridia are in a very arehaie condition ; the same thing oeeurs in the Capitellidz ; in the higher Annelids the nephridia lie within the celom, and are usually much eoiled and complieated in structure. ts

The vaseular system eonsists of a dorsal and a ventral trunk, which traverse the thiekness of the dorsal and ventral mesenteries. The development of these vessels shows that their cavity is eontinuous with the blastocele, and is not a secondary eanalization of a solid chain of mesoblast eells, as is so eommonly the ease in the Annelida. The two trunks eommunieate in every segment exeept the last two or three by two lateral vessels, one on eaeh side; each of these latter gives off a eecal tube running backwards along the somatie peritoneum. Thus the vascular system undergoes but little modification in different segments. In Protodrilus the blood- vessels have no walls, and therefore permanently retain a eondition whieh is found in the young Polygordius before the adjacent mesoblast eclls have become differentiated into an extremely dclicate membrane. The condition of the vascular channels in Polygordius represents that of the larval Polychata and Oligocheta before the spccial muscular walls have been formed. olosoma, however, is identical with the adult Polygordius in these particulars.

The digestive tube consists of only a single layer of eiliated cells covered by a single layer of peritoneal eclls, and is therefore in an embryonic condition as eompared with the Chetopoda and Oligo- cheta. It is, however, specialized into a pharynx, cesophagus, and intestine. The nervous system is extremely simple, and lies in the thickness of the epidermis, thus presenting an embryonie charaeter, which is, however, met with in certain Polycheta.

In Polygordius the cerebral mass is situated in the prostomium, and communicates by a circumcesophageal commissure with a ventral cord which is single and median, and shows no traee of ganglionic enlargements. In Protodrilus there are two ventral cords, while in Histriodrilus there are a series of ganglionic swell- ings. A nervous plexus also exists in the thiekness of the longitudinal muscles.

Polygordius is of separate sexes; Protodrilus is hermaphrodite. The sexual products are developed in all execpt the first few and last few segments from the lining of the eelom ; the ova and sper- matozoa are apparently liberated by the rupture of the body-wall. Histriodrilus has

special efferent ducts for the ovaries and testes (found in different individuals), the nature of which is not yet settled.

Polygordius leaves the egg as an active larva, first diseoverea oy Loven. This larva is shaped like a humming-top, and has a preoral circlet of eilia ; immediately behind this on one sidc is the mouth, which leads into an alimentary eanal opening at the posterior end of the body; at the apical region is an ectodermie thickening.

*Literature.—(x) Beddard, " On the Nephridia of Acanthodrilus," Proc. Roy. Soc., 1885 ; Ann. Sci. Nat., 1886; (2) 1d., 'On the Atrium in Earthworm," Zool. Anz., 1888; (3) 1d., "Structure of Hudrilus," Proc. Zool. Soc., 1886; (4) 1d., * Nephridia of Perichzta," Q. J. M.S., 1888 ; (5) Id., '* Allurus," ibid.; (6) 1d., " Phreoryctes," Ann. Nat. Hist., 1888; (7) Benham, "Studies in Earthworms," Nos, i., if., iii, Q. J. M. S., 1886-7; (8) Id., ""Brachydrilus," Zool. Anz., 1887; (9) Horst, 'Notes on Earthworms," Notes from Leyden Museum, 1886-7; (zo) Rosa, " Criodrilus," Attt R. Acad. Sci. Torino, 1886; (11) 1d., '* Hormogaster," tbid., 1888; (12) Spencer, ft Nephridia of Earthworms," Nature, June 28, 1888; (x3) Scharff,*

Ctenodrilus," Q. J. M. S., 1887; (14) Fletcher, " Australian Earthworms," Proc. L. S. N.S. W., 1886 ; (15) Vejdovsky, System u. Morphol, d. Oligochiditen :1 (26) Kukenthal, " Lymphoidzellen d. Anneliden," Jen. Zeitsch., 1885; (17) Bourne, "Indian Earthworms," Proc. Zool. Soc., 1886; (18) Bergh, " Excretionsorgane d. Wiirmer," Kosmos, 1885; (19) 1d., " Geschlechtsorgane d. Regenwiirmer," Zetisch. J. wiss. Zool., 1886. On Archiannelida see Fraipont, " Polygor- dius," Fauna und Flora des Golfen v. Neapel (complete references to previous papers). (F. E. B.)

WORMS, one of the oldest, and from an historical point of view one of the most interesting, cities in Germany, is situated on the left bank of the Rhine, in the grand-duchy of Hesse-Darmstadt, 25 miles south of Mainz and 20 miles north-west of Heidelberg. The town is irregularly built, and some of the old walls and towers still remain, but its general aspect is modern and commercial. The chief squares are the market-place and the Dom-Platz. Worms formerly contained many ecclesiastical buildings, now

represented by eight churches, two of which, however, are no longer used for divine service. The principal church and chief building is the spacious Romanesque cathedral which ranks beside the cathedrals of Spires and Mainz among the famous ecclesiastical edifices of the Rhine. This magnificent building, with four round towers, two large domes, and a choir. at each end, has a specially

LS y This work is a general summary of investigation into anatomy of Oligochxta up to 1884, with complete list of literature. For this

reason the present bibliography refers only to more important published since that date, : portant papers

WoR—WOR

imposing exterior, though the impression produced by the interior is also one of great dignity and simplicity, height- ened by the natural colour of the red sandstone of which it is built. In this last particular it differs from the cathedrals of Mainz and Spires, where the natural colour of the stone no longer appears in the interior. Only the lower part of the western towers belongs to the original building consecrated in 1110; the remainder dates from 1181, with the exception of the west choir and the vault- ing, which were built in the 13th century, and the elabor- ate south portal, which was added in the 14th century. The ornamentation of the older parts is simple to the verge of rudeness ; and even the more elaborate later forms show no high development of workmanship. The church is 485 feet long and 114 feet wide ; the transepts, which are at the west end, are about 120 feet long (inside measure- ment), and the choir is 160 feet high. The cathedral belongs to the Roman Catholic community, who possess also the church of St Martin and the Liebfrauenkirche, a handsome Gothic edifice outside the town, finished in 1467. The principal Protestant place of worship is Trinity church, built in 1726. Second in interest to the cathedral is the church of St Paul, also in the Romanesque style, and dating from 1102-16, with a choir of the early 13th century. It is adjoined by the remains of an abbey and cloisters of various epochs. Since 1881 this church has contained an interesting museum of national antiquities. The late Romanesque St Andrew's church is also used for secular purposes. The synagogue, an unassuming build- ing erected in

the 11th century and restored in the 13th, is now completely modernized. The Jewish community of Worms (about 1400 in number) claims to be the most ancient in Germany, and to have existed continuously since before the Christian era, though the earliest authentic mention of it occurs in 588. A curious tradition, illustrat- ing the efforts of the dispersed people to conciliate their oppressors, asserts that the Jews of Worms gave their voice against the crucifixion, but that their messenger did not arrive at Jerusalem until after the event.

The town-house of Worms was restored in 1884. The Bischofshof, in which the most famous diet of Worms (1521) was held, is now replaced by a handsome modern residence. The Luginsland is an old watch-tower of the 13th century. Worms also contains numerous schools and a richly endowed hospital. In the Luther-Platz rises the imposing Luther monument (unveiled in 1868), consisting of a series of twelve statues on a platform 16 feet square. In the centre the colossal statue of Luther rises, on a pedestal at the base of which are sitting figures of Peter Waldus, Wycliffe, Huss, and Savonarola, the heralds of the Reformation ; at the corners of the platform, on lower pedestals, are statues of Luther's contemporaries, Melanch- thon, Reuchlin, Philip of Hesse, and Frederick the Wise of Saxony, between which are allegorical figures of Magdeburg (mourning), Spires (protesting), and Augsburg (confessing). The greater part of the work, which took nine years to execute, was designed by Rietschel, and carried out after his death in 1861 by Kietz, Dondorf, and Schelling.

The trade and industry of Worms are not unimportant. The leading resource of the inhabitants is wine-growing, the most famous vintage being known as Liebfrauenmilch, grown on vineyards near the Liebfrauenkirche. Lugin- lander and Katterlocher are also well-known varieties. The manufacture of patent leather employs 3000 hands. Machinery, chicory, slates, &c., are also produced. Worms possesses a river-harbour, and carries on some trade by water. The population in 1885 was 21,903, of whom about one-third were Roman Catholic. In its prosperous days Worms is estimated to have had from 40,000 to 70,000 inhabitants.

Borbetomagus, the name by which Worms was known in Roman times, seems to indicate a Celtic origin for the town. The modern name is usually connected with Wurm or Lindwurm, the German word fora dragon. Drusus is said to have erected a fort on the site of the town in 14.3B.c. Asa settlement of the Germanic tribe of the Vangiones, it existed under Roman protection till about the middle of the 5th century. The Burgundians then took it and made it their capital, and its name appears in many of the heroic legends of that people. King Gunther and Brunhilde held their court at Worms; and here Sigfried wooed the fair Chriemhild. The "Rosengarten," often mentioned in these legends, lay on the opposite bank of the Rhine. Under the Franconians this town was also important ; and it wasa frequent residence of Charlemagne and his successors. The scene of the graceful though unhistorical romance of Eginhard and Emma, the danghter of Charlemagne, is laid at Worms. The first bishop of Worms of whom anything authentic is known was Erembert (670), though an "' episcopus Vangionum " is said to have attended a council at Cologne in 347. Worms seems to have thriven under the bishops, but the citizens invariably espoused the cause of the emperors against them, and were rewarded by privileges which fostered the trade of the town and eventually led to its recognition as a free imperial city. Worms was frequently visited by the imperial court, and won the proud title of 'Mother of Diets." The most famous diet was that held in 1521, at which Luther appeared to defend his doctrines before Charles V. Four years later the town formally embraced Protestantism. Worms preserved a tolerable prosperity even through the hardships of the Thirty Years' War; but in 1689 it was laid in ashes by the French, a blow from which it has never thoronghly recovered. The peace of Lunéville annexed it in 1801 to France ; but in 1815 it passed to Hesse-Darmstadt, being then an unimportant town with 6250 inhabitants.

WORSBROUGH, a township in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on a branch of the Dearne and Dove Canal, and near several branch lines of the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincolnshire Railway, 9 miles north-west of Rotherham and 3 south of Barnsley. The church of St Mary, an interesting structure with remains of Norman work, but chiefly

in the Transition Early English style, underwent restoration in 1864. It contains some old monuments and brasses. There are extensive collieries and gunpowder mills in the neighbourhood, and the town- ship possesses iron and steel works and corn-mills. A short distance to the west is Wentworth Castle, built in 1730 by Thomas, earl of Strafford, on the site of an ancient fortress, and,containing a large number of portraits of historical interest. The population of the urban sanitary district (3779 acres) was 6030 in 1871, and 8443 in 1881.

WORSTED. See Woot.

WORTHING, a watering-place of Sussex, is situated on the London, Brighton, and South Coast Railway, 61 miles south of London and 104 west of Brighton. On account of its sheltered situation at the foot of the South Downs it has some reputation as a health-resort for pulmonary complaints. Asa general sea-side resort it is increasing in favour, especially with the wealthier classes. There is a marine parade 14 mile in length, a long range of firm sands, and an iron promenade pier, 960 feet in length, constructed in 1882. A public park, 21 acres in extent, was opened in 1881. The churches and chapels are all modern. The other principal buildings are the town-hall (1834), a quadrangular structure with square clock tower, Montague hall, the literary institute, the workmen's insti- tute, the infirmary and dispensary (1882), the Thomas Banting memorial convalescent home, the public baths, erected in 1886, Humphrey's almshouses, and Queen Elizabeth's almshouses. The mother parish of Worthing is Broadwater, the church of which, three-quarters of a mile north of Worthing, a cruciform building in the Transition style, has some old monuments and brasses. The popu- lation of the urban sanitary district (979 acres) was 7401 in 1871, and 10,976 in 1881.

Pottery and other Roman remains have been found at Worthing. In Domesday the manor appears under the name of Ordinges, and consisted of eleven hides, or about 110 acres. In the reign of Edward I. it was valued at 100 shillings. It formed part of the endowment of the priory of Easebourne, near Midhurst, and at the

Reformation was granted with other possessions to Henry Fitz- william, earl of Southampton. It afterwards passed through several hands to the earl of Warwick. It was of some importance in the reign of Edward III., who granted it the privilege of a market, but it declined to a poor fishing hamlet. Its rise as a watering place began about 1760, and after a visit of the Princess Amelia in 1797 it made rapid progress.

WOTTON, Sir Henry (1568-1639), an accomplished literary amateur, was one of the favourite diplomatists of James I. of England, although, following the quietistic habit of his family, he never would undertake employ- ments of the greatest weight and difficulty. The seat of the family, which was founded in the 14th century by a lord mayor of London, was Bocton or Boughton Malherbe in Kent. It was,as described by Izaak Walton in his Lefe of Sir Henry, a typical English family of wealthy landed gentry, keeping up a connexion with the court, but avoiding the risks of factious ambition, often holding offices of high trust, but always prudently declining the highest. Henry, the youngest of four sons, was sent to school at Winchester, and thence to Oxford (New College and afterwards Queen's). At the age of twenty-two, with a high academic reputation for wit and scholarship, he was sent abroad to complete his education, and spent eight years in France, Spain, and Germany, making acquaintance with men of learning as well as courtiers, a general favourite. Returning to England at the age of thirty, he sought political employment, and became one of the secretaries of Essex. On the fall of Essex he made his escape from England and took refuge at Florence, where he employed his leisure in writing a sketch of "the state of Christendom." While he was at Florence the grand-duke discovered a plot against King James, and Wotton was sent to Scotland with the infor- mation and a casket of antidotes. King James was so charmed with the emissary that on his accession to the English throne he at once offered Wotton ambassadorial employment. He might have had the embassy to Spain, but this he prudently declined, and chose instead the easier duty of managing relations with Venice and the German states. After twenty years of diplomatic service he craved and obtained the post of provost of Eton in 1624. He had studied and written nota little at odd times during his active life, and when he settled at Eton he intended to write a life of Luther; but in this and other large lite- rary projects he never got beyond the stage of

collecting materials. In his fifteen years' provostship he set an example of careful, dignified, and gracious supervision ; and his wit, wisdom, courtesy, and benignity are well represented in the Reliquiz Wottianx, published with Walton's Life in 1651. Two of his witticisms are im- mortal,—his definition of an ambassador as "an honest man sent to lie abroad for the good of his country,"' and his advice toa young diplomatist to tell the truth, and so puzzle and confound his adversaries. He died in 1639.

WOTTON, Witt1aMm (1666-1726), is now remembered chiefly for his part in the famous " Battle of the Books," but to his own generation his Reflections upon Ancient and Modern Learning was only one of many proofs of his extraordinary amount and variety of scholarship. Born in 1666, the son of an English clergyman, rector of Wrentham, in Suffolk, he was one of the wonders of his age in precocity. He could translate from several languages at the age of five. He was under ten when he was sent to Cambridge, and he took the degree of B.A. at the age of twelve years and five months, having already created such a sensation by his linguistic attain- ments that Latin poems were addressed to him as a prodigy. In the Battle of the Books he took a judicious middle course between the extreme champions, Fontenelle

1 The full story of this witticism is given in Walton's Life.

and Temple, making a succinct, elaborate, and careful com- parison between ancients and moderns in oratory, poetry, mathematics, philosophy, astronomy, anatomy, botany, and other arts and sciences. of which appeared in 1694, show that his prodigious memory was not confined to languages, and that he possessed also strong judgment and argumentative power. The treatise may still be read with interest, as a survey of the state of various sciences at the close of the 17th century. Wotton, who was made D.D. in 1707, wrote also on subjects so diverse as fossils and Welsh laws, besides producing various historical works. He was en- gaged on his translation of the Welsh laws at the time of his death, which took place in 1726.

WOUWERMAN, Partie (1619-1668), a Dutch painter of battle and hunting scenes, was born at Haarlem in May 1619. He received the elements of his art instruction from his father, Paul Joosten Wouwer- man, an historical painter of moderate ability, and he then studied under Jan Wynants, and for a short time under Evert Decker. Returning to Haarlem, he became a member of its guild of painters in 1640. In that city he seems to have led the rest of his singularly produc- tive life, and there he died in May 1668. About seven or eight hundred pictures are enumerated in Smith's Catalogue Raisonné as the work of Philip Wouwerman, but probably many of these are the productions of his brothers Peter and Jan, and of his many other imitators. His authentic works are distinguished by great spirit and animation, and are infinitely varied and full of incident, though dealing recurrently with cavalry battle- pieces, military encampments, scenes of cavalcades, and hunting or hawking parties. He is equally excellent in his vivacious treatment of figures, in his skilful animal painting, and in his admirable and appropriate intro- duction of landscape backgrounds. Three different styles have been observed as characteristic of the various periods of his art. His earlier works are marked by the pre- valence of a foxy-brown colouring, and by a tendency to an angular form in the draughtsmanship ; the productions of his middle period have greater purity and brilliancy ; and his latest and greatest pictures possess more of force and breadth, and are full of a delicate silvery-grey tone.

WRASSE. This name is applied to the fishes of the family Labridx generally, and more especially to certain members of the family to be mentioned hereafter. They are without exception inhabitants of the sea, very abundant in the tropical zone, less so in the temperate, and dis- appearing altogether on the confines of the Arctic and Antarctic Circles. Their body is generally compressed, like that of a carp, covered with smooth (cycloid) scales ; they possess one dorsal fin only, the anterior portion of which consists of numerous spines. Many wrasses are readily recognized by their thick lips, the inside of which is some- times curiously folded, a pecu- liarity which has given to them the German name of " lip- fishes." The dentition of their jaws con- sists of strong conical teeth, of which some in front, and often one at the hinder end of the upper jaw, are larger than the others.

Lips of Labrus festivus,

But the principal organs with which they crush shell-fish, crustaceans, and other hard substances are the solid and strongly-toothed pharyngeal bones, of which the lower are

coalesced into a single flat triangular plate. The majority of wrasses are beautifully coloured, exhibiting extra- ordinarily varied patterns of permanent pigmentary colours, as well as evanescent reflexions of the scales. All of

His Keflections, the first edition °

WOU—-WRE

them are surface fishes, living close to the shore or coral- banks. Rocky parts of the coast overgrown with sca- weed are their favourite haunts in the temperate, and coral-reefs in the tropical seas. Some 450 species of wrasses (including Parrot-Wrasses) are known, chiefly from the tropics; some grow to a large size and are esteemed as food, whilst others, like the British species, are small and but rarely eaten.

Of the British wrasses the Ballan Wrasse (Labrus maculatus) and the Striped or Red Wrasse or Cook (Labrus mixtus) are the most common. Both belong to the genus Labrus, in which the teeth stand in a single series, and which has a smooth edge of the preoperculum and only three spines in the anal fin. The ballan wrasse is the larger, attaining to a length of 18 inches, and, it is said, to a weight of 8 ib; its colours are singularly variegated, green or brownish, with red and blue lines and spots ; the dorsal spines are twenty in number. The cook wrasse offers an instance of well-marked secondary sexual difference,—the male being ornamented with blue streaks or a blackish band along the side of the body, whilst the female has two or three. large black spots across the back of the tail. This species possesses only from sixteen to eighteen spines in the dorsal fin. The Goldsinny or Corkwing (Crenilabrus melops) is much more frequent on the southern coasts of England and Ireland than farther north, and rarely exceeds a length of 10 inches. As in other wrasses, its colours are beautiful, but variable; but it may be readily

distinguished from the two preceding species by the toothed edge of the preoperculum. The three other British wrasses are much scarcer and more local, viz., Jago's Goldsinny (Ctenolabrus rupestris), with a large black spot on the anterior dorsal spines, and another on the base of the upper caudal rays ; Acantholabrus palloni, which is so rarely captured that it lacks a vernacular name, but may be easily recognized by its five anal spines and by the teeth in the jaws forming a band ; and the Rock-Cook (Centrolabrus exoletus), which also has five anal spines, but has the jaws armed with a single series of teeth.

On the Atlantic coasts of the Northern States of North America the wrasses are represented by the genus Z'autoga, which is distinct from the European forms. The only species of this genus, known by the names of Tautog or Blackfish, is a fish of considerable economic value, being much esteemed as food, It is caught in great numbers, and generally sold of a weight of about 2 Ib.

WRECK (in Low Latin wreceum or warectum maris) is a ship or goods cast on land by the sea in tidal waters. While still at sea such ship or goods do not constitute wreck but derelict, which includes flotsam, jetsam, and lagan (see Fiotsam). In Roman law wreck was restored to the owner if he claimed it before a judicial tribunal within a year and a day, the fiscus waiving its claim after a constitution attributed to either Marcus Aurelius or Constantine. Theft from a wreck was regarded as agera-vated by the helpless position of the owner, and the thief was liable for fourfold the loss if an action was brought against him within a year, after that time for the loss simply. Plunderers of wreck and exhibitors of false lights were also punished criminally. Most of the Roman law on the subject is contained in Digest xlvii. 9, Code xi. 5. The Leonine Constitutions, c. 64, made a concealer of wreck liable to the fourfold penalty. In France it was provided by the laws of Oléron (see Sea Laws) that succour was to be afforded to shipwrecked persons, and their property returned to them. Wreck afterwards became a right of the crown (a right limited to one-third of the value by an ordinance of Francis I.), but was often granted to feudal seigneurs under the name of droit de

bris. In England the rule seems in the time of Bracton (the reign of Henry III.) to have been the same as that of the Roman law, that wreck only belonged to the king if no claimant appeared within a year and a day. It would perhaps be more accurate to say that it vested in the crown, subject to be divested on proof of ownership within the period limited. The reason for this rule of law appears to be the necessity of enabling persons in authority to protect wreck from the pillage which it was otherwise certain to have undergone at a time when wreck was looked upon as legitimate prey of the wrecker. In Bracton (120, 5) it is said that even if a dog escaped, or if any certain mark were put upon the goods, it was no wreck. The Statute of Westminster the First (3 Edw. I. c. 4) is merely declaratory of the common law as it is found in Bracton. It enacts that, where a man, a dog, or a cat escaped alive out of a ship, such ship should not be adjudged wreck, but the goods should be saved and kept by view of the sheriff, coroner, or king's bailiff, and delivered into the hands of such as were of the town where the goods were found, so that if any sued for the goods, and proved that they were his or perished in his keeping within a year and a day, they should be restored to him without delay ; if not, they should remain to the king, and where wreck belonged to another than the king he should have it in like manner. In both Bracton and the statute the escape of a living thing appears to be used rather as an example of a means of proof than as the sole means of proof. The latter, however, became the doctrine of the courts for centuries ; it was wreck unless a living thing escaped, and as such part of the hereditary revenue of the crown, and expressly recognized by the Statute De Prerogativa Regis (see PREROGATIVE). To hold inquests of wreck was by the Statute De Officio Coronatoris (4 Edw. I. c. 2) one of the duties of the coroner, of which he has only recently been relieved by the Coroners Act, 1887, repealing the Act of Edward I, In 1771 a return was made by Lord Mansfield to the older and more reasonable view of the common law as it stood in Bracton, That distinguished judge considered that the rule that it was wreck unless a living thing came to shore was contrary to principles of law, justice, and humanity, and that the escape of an animal was simply a medium of proof. 'It was the proof and not the escape that was the important fact.1 Claims to wreck were, by Ric. H..c:8, not cognizable in the Admiralty Court as was derelict, for that was in and upon the sea, while wreck must have touched the land before it became wreck.

Unclaimed derelict was, like unclaimed wreck, a right of the crown, but in a different way. It was not a direct right jure coronez, but claimed by the king in his office of Admiralty as an admiralty droit. As wreck in the last resort became crown property, it was never subject to forfeiture as a DEODAND (g.v.) where lives were lost. Wreck was frequently granted to subjects as a franchise, e.g., to lords of manors and to various maritime cities and boroughs, among others to the Cinque Ports. Within the Cinque Ports the serjeants of the Admiralty of the Cinque Ports still act as receivers of wreck (17 and 18 Vict. c. 120).

So stood the common law as affected by early legislation. It is now of comparatively small importance, as the law now depends chiefly on the Merchant Shipping Act, 1854, part viil., and the amendments introduced by later Acts.

The definition of wreck for the purposes of the Merchant Shipping Acts (which is in effect for all practical purposes) is considerably extended beyond its common law meaning. By s. 2 of the Act of 1854, it includes jetsam, flotsam, lagan, and derelict. By the Sea Fisheries Act, 1883, it is still further extended to include all fish- ing boats, all their small boats, all rigging gear or other appur- tenances of fishing boats, all nets, lines, buoys, floats, or other

‘ Hamilton v. Davis, 5 Burrow’s Rep., 2733.

fishing implements whatsocver found or picked up at sea whether marked or unmarked. The principal provisions of the Act of 1854 are as follows. »The general superintendence throughout the United Kingdom of all matters relating to wreck is committed to the Board of Trade. No person exercising Admiralty jurisdiction is to interfere with wreck. Whenever any ship or boat is stranded or in distress at any place on the shore of the sea, or of any tidal water, the receiver of wreck of the district is to procecd thither and take command, and issue such directions as he may think fit with a view to the preservation of the ship. All cargo and other articles washed ashore, or lost or taken from the ship, are to be delivered to the receiver. In the absence of the receiver, customs officers, justices of the

peace, and others have the power of the receiver, Tho receiver is as soon as possible to examine on oath any person who may be able to give any account of a ship in distress or her cargo or stores, and forward the result of his examination to the Board of Trade (where it is deposited in the wreck register) and to Lloyd's. On proof of title of a lord of the manor or other person entitled to unclaimed wreck, the receiver is to hold it on behalf of such person. The receiver is aided and protected by numerous provisions making it punishable to refuse men or vehicles on his demand, to scerete or fail to give notice of wreck, to obstruct the receiver or any other person on his way to the wreck, &c. In case of suspected concealment of wreck, he may obtain a search warrant (see WARRANT) from a justice of the peace. Whenever any wreck is saved by any person other than a receiver, SALVAGE (g.v.) is payable. In case of no claim being made within a year by the owner, and in the absence of any private right of a lord of a manor or other person, tho receiver is to sell the wreck, and pay the pro- ceeds, after deducting expenses and salvage, to the exchequer, to become part of the consolidated fund. The Admiralty Division of the High Court of Justice has jurisdiction to decide upon all claims of salvage, whether the wreck is found at sea or cast upon the land, or partly in the sea and partly on land. Wreck, if foreign goods, is liable to customs dutics. Goods saved from a ship wrecked on its homeward voyage are to be forwarded to the port of its original destination. A seaman is entitled to wages up to the time of a vessel being wrecked, unless he has not exerted himself to the ut- most to save the ship, cargo, and stores. Receivers' districts under the Act of 1854 were formed by a Board of Trade order of October fi: 1856. The Merchant Shipping Act, 1862, provides, inter alia, that the receiver may appoint a valuer in salvage cases, that the delivery of wreck by the receiver to any person is not to prejudico the right of third parties, and that the payment of proceeds of wreck claimed by the crown is to be made to the consolidated fund or the revenues of the duchies of Cornwall or Lancaster according to circumstances. Instructions to receivers were issued by the Board of Trade in 1865 and 1886, In 1876 a new tribunal for the investigation of shipping casualties was created by the Merchant Shipping Act, 1876, which las in most cases superseded the pro- cedure provided by the Act of 1854. The Act cnabled the lord chancellor to appoint a wreck commissioner, or wreck commis- sioners not exceeding

three, and gave the commissioner or com- missioners power to act with or without skilled assessors, and in certain cases which were not within the purview of tho Act of 1854, viz., where a ship on the coast of the United Kingdom or a British ship elsewhero has been stranded or damaged and any witness is found at any place in the United Kingdom, and where a British ship has been lost or is supposed to have been lost, and any evidenco can be obtained in the United Kingdom as to the circumstances under which she proceeded to sea or was last heard of. In addition to the Acts mentioned, there are sevcral others which affect the subject of wreck more or less directly. By 6 Geo. IV. c. 87 cousuls in foreign ports are to have credit for disburse- ments on behalf of shipwrecked persons. Where a foreign ship is wrecked, the consul-general or other consular officer is by 18 and 19 Vict. c. 91 to be deemed the owner. Removal of wrecks is provided for in dockyards by 28 and 29 Vict. c. 125, in most other cases by the Harbours Clauses Act, 1847, and the Removal of Wrecks Act, 1877, giving powers of removal to the harbour or general lighthouse authorities. Provision is made by special Acts for raising wreck in the Thames, Mersey, Humber, Clyde, and other rivers. Burial of bodies washed ashore from wrecks is regulated by 48 Geo. III. c. 75 and 49 Vict. c. 20. The criminal Jaw re- lating to wreck has been the subject of a considerable mass of legis- lation. The protection of the receiver in his duties by the Act of 1854 has been already mentioned. The Act further provides against wrongfully carrying off or removing wreck, impeding or hindering the saving of wreck, and secreting wreck or obliterating or defacing any marks thereon. Taking wreck into a foreign port and there disposing of it is made felony, punishable with ten years' penal servitude. Other provisions are made by the Criminal Law Consolidation Acts of 1861. To plunder or steal any part of a wrecked ship or vessel, or any goods belonging to such vessel, is a felony, punishable with fourteeen years' penal servitude. Any person in possession of such goods, and not giving a satisfactory account of how he came by them, may be committed to prison on summary

conviction, and such goods, if exposed for sale, may be seized and carried before a justice of the peace, and the vendor called upon to satisfy the

justice that he came lawfully by them, 24 and 25 Vict. c. 96, ss. 64-66. Destruction of and injury to ships or wrecks, and masking, alteration, or removal of lights or exhibition of false lights, and injury to or concealment of buoys and other marks of navigation, are all punishable by 24 and 25 Vict. ¢. 97, ss. 42-49, penal servitude for life being the maximum penalty. To impede a shipwrecked person or any person in his endeavour to save him, and to assault any magistrate, officer, or other person in the exercise of his duty in the preservation of wreck, are crimes by 24 and 25 Vict. c. 100, ss. 17, 87. In the case of plunder, damage, or destruction of any ship or boat stranded or in distress on the shore of the sea or tidal water, or of any part of its cargo or e aaige by persons riotously and tumultuously assembled, either ashore or afloat, the owner has a right to compensation against the police authority of the district under the Riot (Damages) Act, 1886.

Scotland.—As in England, unclaimed wreck was a right of the crown, often granted to subjects, generally under the style of "wrak, waith, and ware," the last two words signifying derelict and seaweed. It was so granted to the earl of Orkney in 1581. It was occasionally dealt with by the Scottish Parliament. Thus by 1426, c. 15, ships wrecked on the coast of Scotland were to be escheat to the king if they belonged to a country observing a simi- lar law, otherwise to have the favour shown to ships of Scotland. Compensation for destruction of wreck by a riotous assembly is to be made by the inhabitants of the nearest county, city, or borough under the Riot Act of George I. (see Riot), the Act of 1886 not applying to Scotland.

Onited States.—The State legislation as to disposition of wrecked property is generally in favour of the owner on his claim being made within a limited time. As to the Acts of Congress on the subject, the secretary of the treasury is empowered to make con- tracts and provisions for the preservation, sale, or collection of wrecked property, Revised Statutes, § 3755, and may issue a register for a foreign vessel wrecked in the United States and purchased and repaired by a citizen of the United States, § 4136. Special provisions are made as to wreck in Florida, §§ 4289-4241. Plun- dering wreck, or impeding the escape of a shipwrecked person, or showing false or extinguishing true lights in order to cause wreck are

punishable offences, § 5358. Wreck is not confined as in Eng- land to loss on tidal waters, but extends to that happening on the great freshwater lakes and rivers. Wreck commissioners and wreck masters are generally appointed, with powers and duties similar to those of the receiver in the United Kingdom. (i. Wit)

WREN (Anglo-Saxon Wrenna and Wrenne, Icelandic Etindill), the well-known little brown bird—with its short tail, cocked on high—inquisitive and familiar, that braves the winter of the British Islands and even that of the European continent, and, except in the hardest of frosts, will daily sing its spirit-stirring strain. Itis the Motacilla or Sylvia troglodytes of the earlier systematists, and the Troglodytes parvulus, europzus, or vulgaris of most later writers, save a few who (ignoring not only common sense but also the accepted rules of scientific nomenclature), by an utterly mistaken view of Vieillot's intention in establishing the genus Z'roglodytes, reserve that term for some American species—which can hardly be generically separated from the European form—and have attempted to fix on the latter the generic term Anorthura, which is its strict equi- valent and was proposed by Rennie on grounds that are wholly inadmissible,

The interest taken in this bird throughout all European countries is scarcely exceeded by that taken in any other, and, though in Britain comparatively few vernacular names have been applied to it, two of them —" Jenny " or " Kitty-Wren "—are terms of endear- ment, M. Rolland records no fewer than 139 local names for it in France ; and Italy, Germany, and other lands are only less prolific. Many of these carry on the old belief that the Wren was the King of Birds, a belief connected with the fable that on one occasion the fowls of the air in general assembly resolved to choose for their leader that one of them which should mount highest. This the Hagle seemed to do, and all were ready to accept his rule, when a loud burst of song was heard, and perched upon him was seen the exultant Wren, which unseen and unfelt had been borne aloft by the giant. The curious association of this bird with the Feast of the Three Kings, on which day in South Wales, or, in Ireland and in the south of France, on or about Christmas Day, it was customary for men and boys to

“hunt the Wren,” addressing it in a song as “the King of Birds,” is very remarkable, and has never yet been explained.

The Wren hardly needs description here, and its domed nest,

a ~———

WRE—-WEREE

apparently so needlessly large for the size of the bird, is a well- known object, for it is built with uncommon care, and often (though certainly not always) in such a fashion as to assimilate its exterior to its surroundings and so to escape observation. Very curious too is the equally unaccountable fact, that near any occupied nest may generally be found another nest, or more than one, of imperfect construction. The widespread belief concerning these unfinished fabrics is implied by their common name of ‘cocks’ nests,” but evidence to that effect is not forthcoming. The breed- ing-habits of the Wren were most closely studied and accurately reported by Mr Weir to Macgillivray (Brit. Birds, iii. pp. 23-80) in a way that leads every ornithologist to wish that the same care might be bestowed on other kinds of birds.

The range of the Wren in Europe? is very extensive, though it seems to stop short of the Arctic Circle; but it occurs in Algeria, Madeira, and, according to Bolle, in the Canaries. It also inhabits Palestine. Further to the eastward its limits are difficult to trace, because they inosculate with those of a considerable number of local races er species. As might be expected, the form inhabiting Japan, 7. fumigatus, seems to be justifiably deemed a species. In North America, 7’. alascensis occurs in the extreme north-west, and is replaced further to the southward by Z. pacificus. East-ward of the Rocky Mountains, the form is 7’. hyemalis—the well- known Winter-Wren of Canada and the United States, The number of species of Wrens inhabiting North America is, however, very considerable; but authorities are by no means agreed as to how many should be reckoned valid, and they have been segregated into six or seven genera, Here the House-Wren, 7’. domesticus or aedon, can alone be mentioned, It is a very common summer- visitant to most parts of the Eastern States, and where it occurs is of a very familiar disposition, entering into the closest

relations with those that cultivate its acquaintance, It is represented in the West by 7. parkmanni.

The Z'roglodytide, if they are to be regarded as forming a distinct Family, predominate in the New World, no fewer than 60 species being enumerated in the Nomenclator of Messrs Sclater and Salvin as belonging to the Neotropical Region. But the Treglodytide by no means contain all the birds to which the name " Wren " is applied. Several of the Sylviide (cf. WARBLER) bear it, especially the beautiful little Golden-crested Wren (cf. Kryeiet) and the group commonly known in Britain as " Willow-Wrens "—— forming the genus Phylloscopus. Three of these are habitual summer-visitants, which differ much more in their manners than in theirlook. The largest, usually called the Wood-Wren, P. sibilatriz, is more abundant in the north than in the south of England, and chiefly frequents woods of oak or beech. It has a loud and very peculiar song, like the word ¢wéé, sounded very long, and repeated several times in succession—at first slowly, but afterwards more quickly, and near the end accompanied by a peculiar quivering of the wings, while at uncertain intervals comes another note, which has been syllabled as chea, uttered about three times in succession. The Willow-Wren proper, P. trochilus, is in many parts of Great Britain the com- monest summer-bird, and is the most generally dispersed. In spring its joyous burst of song is repeated time after time, until all around thrills with the loud and merry chorus, and yet never tires the ear. The restless but graceful activity of the bird, as it flits from twig to twig, adds to the charm of its appearance, which Hewitson so well appreciated. The third species, P. collybita or minor (frequently but most wrongly. called Syluia rufa or P. rufus), commonly known as the Chiffchaff, from the peculiarity of its constantly repeated two-noted cry, is very numerous in the southern and western part of England, but seems to be scarcer northward. These three species make their nest upon or very close to the

1 Much interest has lately attached to the discovery, announced by Mr Seebohm (Zoologist, 1884, p. 333), that the Wren, for 200 years and upwards, known to inhabit St Kilda differed in hue from that of the other British Islands and of the continent of Europe, and it has by him been described as a distinct species, Z. hirtensis. It had for mote than twenty

years been known that the Wren of the Feroes and Iceland deserved separation from the ordinary 7. parvulus, by being larger, and especially by having larger and stouter feet. It is the 7. borealis of Fischer (Journ. fiir Ornithologie, 1861, p. 14, pl. i.).

WREN

ground, and the building is always domed. Hence they are commonly called " Oven-birds,"! and occasionally, from the grass used in their structure, " Hay-jacks," a name common to the WuITE-THRoat (q.v.) and its allies.

To return, however, to the Z'roglodytide or true Wrens. If it cannot be said that they form a peculiar Family, it would be rather to the Sylwide that they and the Certhiide (cf. TRrex-CREEPER) should be assigned, and they seem to be very unfitly placed among the Z7%meludz, as has lately been done (Cat. B. Brit. Museum, vi. p. 1). These last, so far as any definition can be given of them, belong to the Ethiopian and Indian Regions, while the pre- dominance of the 7'roglodytidx in the Neotropical Region, as already remarked, is very obvious. A. N.)

WREN, Sir CuristopHer (1631-1723), the son of a clergyman, was born at East Knoyle, Wiltshire, in 1631; he entered at Wadham College, Oxford, in 1646, took his degree in 1650, and in 1653 was made a fellow of All Souls. While at Oxford Wren distinguished himself in geometry and applied mathematics ;? in 1657 he became professor of astronomy at Gresham College, and in 1660 was elected Savilian professor of astronomy at Oxford. It is, however, as an architect that Wren is best known, and the great fire of London, by its destruction of the cathedral and nearly all the city churches, gave Wren a scope for his talent such as probably no architect has ever had to the same extent. Just before the fire Wren was asked by Charles II. to prepare a scheme for the restoration of the old St Paul's. In May 1666 Wren submitted his report and designs? for this work; the old cathedral was in a very ruinous state, and Wren proposed to remodel the greater part, as he said, "after a good Roman manner," and not "to follow the Gothick Rudeness of the old Design." According to this scheme, only the old choir was left; the nave and

transepts were to be rebuilt after the classical style, with a lofty dome at the crossing—not unlike the plan which was eventually carried out.

In September of the same year (1666) the fire occurred, and the old St Paul's was completely gutted, though the greater part of its walls still remained standing. From 1668 to 1670 attempts were being made by the chapter to restore the ruined building; but Dean Sancroft was anxious to have the cathedral wholly rebuilt, and in 1668 he had asked Wren to prepare a design for a wholly new church. This first design, the model for which is preserved in the South Kensington Museum, is very inferior to what Wren afterwards devised. In plan it is an immense rotunda surrounded by a wide aisle, and approached by a double portico ; the rotunda is covered with a dome taken from that of the Pantheon in Rome; on this a second dome stands, set on a lofty drum, and this second dome is crowned by a tall spire. This plan was devised as being specially suitable to the needs of a Protestant church, but the dean and chapter objected to the absence of a structural choir, nave, and aisles, and wished to follow the medieval cathedral arrangement, at least as far as concerned the plan. Thus, in spite of its having been approved by the king, this design was happily abandoned —much to Wren's disgust ; and he prepared another scheme with a similar treatment of a dome crowned by a spire, which in 1675 was ordered to be carried out. Wren had, however, been much hampered by ignorant interference, and apparently

1 By ornithologists this name is given to a wholly distinct group— not even belonging to the Oscines—the Furnariid# of Garrod, con- sisting of about 8 genera of Tracheophonine Birds, some of which build marvellous nests of mud spherical inform. For their habits see Darwin (Jour. of Researches, chap. v.) and Mr Hudson's account (Argentine Ornithology, i. pp. 167-170).

2 Newton, in his Principia, p. 19, ed. of 1718, speaks very highly of Wren's work as a geometrician.

3 Wren's drawing for this exists in the All Souls collection.

did not himself approve of this second design, for he got the king to give him permission to alter it as much as he liked, without showing models or drawings to any one. Wren fully availed himself of this permission, and the actual building bears little resemblance to the approved design, to which it is very superior in almost every possible point. Wren's earlier designs have the exterior of the church arranged with one order of columns; the division of the whole height into two orders was an immense gain in increasing the apparent scale of the whole, and makes the exterior of St Paul's very superior to that of St Peter's in Rome, which is utterly dwarfed by the colossal size of the columns and pilasters of its single order. The present very graceful dome and the drum on which it stands, masterpieces of graceful line and harmonious proportion, were very important alterations from the earlier scheme. As a scientific engineer and practical architect Wren was perhaps more remarkable than as an artistic designer. The construction of the wooden external dome, and the support of the stone lantern by an inner cone of brickwork, quite independent of either the external or internal dome, are wonderful examples of Wren's constructive ingenuity. The first stone of the new St Paul's was laid on June 21, 1675; the choir was opened for use December 2, 1697; and the last stone of the cathedral was set in 1710. The stone used is from the Portland quarries ; the wooden dome is covered with lead, not copper as was at first proposed. The fine oak stalls were carved by Grinling Gibbons, who received £1333, 7s. 5d. for them. The whole cost of the cathedral was £1,167,474,—of which £810,181 was pro- vided by the London import duty on coal.é

After the destruction of the city of London Wren was employed to make designs for rebuilding its fifty burnt churches, and he also prepared a scheme for laying out the whole city on a new plan, with a series of wide streets radiating from a central space. Difficulties arising from the various ownerships of the ground prevented the accom- plishment of this scheme.

Among Wren's city churches the most noteworthy are St Michael's, Cornhill; St Bride's and St Mary le Bow, Fleet Street, the latter remarkable for its graceful spire ; and St Stephen's, Walbrook, with a plain exterior, but very elaborate and graceful interior. In the design of

spires Wren showed much taste and wonderful power of inven- tion. He was also very judicious in the way in whicli he expended the limited money at his command; he did not fritter it away in an attempt to make the whole of a building remarkable, but devoted it chiefly to one part or feature, such as a spire ora rich scheme of internal decora- tion. Thus he was in some cases, as in that of St James's, Piccadilly, content to make the exterior of an almost barn- like plainness.

The other buildings designed by Wren were very numer- ous. Only afew of the principal ones can be mentioned :— the custom house, the royal exchange, Marlborough House, Buckingham House, and the Hall of the College of Physicians—now destroyed; others which exist are—at Oxford, the Sheldonian theatre, the Ashmolean museum, the Tom Tower of Christ Church, and Queen's College chapel ; at Cambridge, the library of Trinity College and

4 Proportionally the apparently greater size of St Paul's is very remarkable; it is very difficult to realize that the top of the dome of St Paul's is only as high as the springing of that of St Peter's. In actual fact the one looks about as high as the other.

5 Wren also designed a colonnade to enclose a large piazza forming a clear space round the church, somewhat after the fashion of Berniui's colonnade in front of St Peter's, but space in the city was too valuable to admit of this. Wren was an enthusiastic admirer of Bernini's designs, and visited Paris in 1665 in order to see him and his pro- posed scheme for the rebuilding of the Louvre. Bernini showed his design to Wren, but would not let him copy it, though, as he said, he 'would have given his skin'"' to be allowed to do so.

the chapel of Pembroke, the latter at the cost of Bishop

Matthew Wren, his uncle. The western towers of West- minster Abbey are usually attributed to Wren, but they

were not carried out till 1735-45, many years after Wren's. death, and there is no reason to think that his design was

used. Wren (D.C.L. from 1660) was knighted in 1673, and was elected president of the Royal Society in 1681.1. He was in parliament for many years, representing Plympton from 1685, Windsor from 1689, and Weymouth from 1700. He occupied the post of surveyor of the royal works for fifty years, but by a shameful cabal was dis- missed from this office a few years before his death. He died in 1723, and is buried under the choir of St Paul's; on a tablet over the inner north doorway is the well-known epitaph —"' Si monumentum requiris, cireumspice."

Wren's genius as an artist is very difficult to estimate; he lived at a most unhappy time, when architecture had sunk almost to its lowest point of degradation. If, how- ever, we bear this in mind we must admit that he was an artist of very remarkable ability; his inventive genius no one can dispute.

For further information the reader should consult the Parentalia, published by Wren's grandson in 1750, an account of the Wren family and especially of Sir Christopher and his works; also the two biographies of Wren by Elmes and Miss Phillimore; Milman, Annals of St Paul's, 1868; and Longman, Three Cathedrals dedi- eated to St Paul in London, 1873, pp. 77 sg. See also Clayton, Churehes of Sir C. Wren, 1848-49; Taylor, Towers and Steeples of Wren, London, 1881; and Niven, City Churches, London, 1887, illustrated with fine etchings. In the library of All Souls at Oxford are prescrved a large number of drawings by Wren, including the designs for almost all his chief works, and a fine series showing his various schemes for St Paul's Cathedral. (J. H. M.)

WRESTLING anp BOXING. Wrestling is the art of forcing an antagonist to the ground without resorting to blows or kicks. It is a trial of strength and skill between two opponents standing face to face, who strive to throw one another. As a gymnastic exercise it was greatly encouraged among the ancient Greeks, and the highest honours and rewards were bestowed on the victors at the Olympic, Isthmian, Nemean, and other games (see Games). It was also cultivated by the Romans, though their tastes inclined to more savage and brutalizing exhibitions than that of wrestling. It was

not unknown in Egypt and at Nineveh, as may be seen from the sculptures in the British Museum. At the same time it differed very much in its ancient form from the wrestling of to-day, the wrestlers of old being wont to compete almost if not quite nude, their bodies besmeared with oil or some other kind of grease by way of making their muscles supple; but, as this practice rendered it very difficult to get fair hold of one another, the wrestlers were accustomed to use sand on their hands, or even to roll in the dust of the arena as a corrective. In their contests they took hold of each other by the arms, drew forward, pushed backward, used many contortions of the body, interlocked their limbs, seized one another by the neck, throttled, lifted each other off the ground, and butted like rams, though the chief point of their art was to become master of their opponent's legs, when a fall was the immediate result. In England the pastime has been popular from an early period, more especially in the Middle Ages, for in 1222, in Henry IIL's reign, it is on record that a wrestling match took place between the men of Westminster and the citizens of London in St Giles Fields, the latter winning easily. The return match was held at Westminster on Lammas day following, but was interrupted by the bailiff of West- minster and his associates, who maltreated the Londoners and drove them into the city. Ata later period Clerken- well was the usual trysting place. At one of the matches there in 1453 another riot occurred, and the lord mayor,

a a ERE Ser? _} The Royal Society possesses a good portrait of Wren by Kneller,

WRE-—-WRE

who usually attended these athletic carnivals, was again routed and driven within the city boundary. In those days the prize was sometimes a ram and sometimes a cock.

The four English systems of wrestling include those of (1) Cornwall and Devon, (2) Lancashire, (3) Catch hold, first down to lose, and (4) Cumberland and Westmorland. The Cornwall and Devon men compete in strong loose linen jackets, catching hold above the waist or of any portion of the jacket. Kicking, which used to bea pro-' minent feature of the west-country style, is now forbidden, and the men wrestle in their stockinged

feet. In order to be fairly thrown, two shoulders and one hip must be on the ground, or two hips and one shoulder, and a man must be thrown flat on his back before any other portion of his body touches the earth ere a decision can be given against him. Formerly each county wrestled under different rules, but the systems are now amalgamated and are classed as one and the same. In Lancashire the wrestlers compete in their stockinged feet, but are allowed to catch hold of any portion of the body. This is the most barbarous of all the English systems, and includes the objectionable battling on the ground which is the fatal characteristic of the French method. Tripping, however, is not forbidden, and a fall is sometimes secured without a resort to scrambling tactics, which is impossible under French rules. The 'catch hold, first down to lose" style of wrestling is of recent origin and promises to become popular. The utmost simplicity distinguishes it. Ordi- nary wrestling attire is worn, such as jersey, drawers or knickerbockers, and stockings. The men on closing must not grip lower than the waist, and the competitor who touches the ground first by any part of his body is the loser. This system is perhaps the fairest for all parties, as the competitors set to work on equal terms without that delay in getting into holds so frequent in north-country wrestling. The Cumberland and Westmorland system is probably the best and most scientific of all. On taking hold, the wrestlers stand up chest to chest, each placing his chin on his opponent's right shoulder and grasping him round the body, the right arm of each being under the left arm of the other, and each joins his hands behind his opponent. When both have got hold the play commences. Kicking is forbidden, and if one competitor lets go his hold before the other the decision is given against him. If both fall on the ground—an undecided or dogfall, as it is termed —they wrestle over again, but if one falls before the other his defeat is registered at once. This kind of wrestling is free from danger, and the German style much resembles it, but in the latter a competitor's hands are not required to remain locked behind his adver- sary's back, as is the practice in the north of England. No catching hold of legs, thighs, or arms is allowed, but each man tries to throw his adversary by using the "buttock," which consists of facing to the right, twisting so as to place the left hip under an opponent's middle, pulling him close, stooping forwards and lifting him off the ground, and throwing him; or the "crossbuttock," facing to the right about to such an extent as to turn the back to the

adversary, and then proceeding as before ; or the "back-hank," which consists in commencing as in the "buttock," and then passing the left leg from inside round an antagonist's left leg, when by keeping a tight hold with the arms and pulling backwards the leverage supplied by the leg being inside usually secures the fall; or the " back heel," which consists in pulling an opponent towards one, putting the left heel behind his right heel, forcing his leg up forwards, and throwing him bodily backwards; or the "left leg hipe," which consists in lifting and swinging him round to the right, then striking the inside of his

' right thigh with the outside of the left thigh, by which he

gets off his balance and falls; the "right leg hipe" is the same action mutatis mutandis. There is also the "left leg stroke," which consists in striking an antagonist's right leg with one's left leg, swinging him round to the left and off his balance; the "right leg stroke" is the same thing with the right leg. Of course there is an umpire to see that no competitor takes an unfair advantage or plays foul, and to determine disputed points according to the rules in force.

Box1nc.—This, though perhaps hardly as popular as wrestling, is closely identified with it in the gymnasium, if not outside it. In the United Kingdom prize fighting is an illegal sport, but it is hardly likely that glove boxing will ever fall into the same disrepute. Its present comparative popularity is principally due to the efforts of the late Mr John G. Chambers, who in 1866 founded the Amateur Athletic Club, and in conjunction with the marquis of Queensberry drew up a code of rules (known as the Queensberry rules), which regulate the principal glove con- tests throughout the kingdom, as follows :—

Challenge Cups (Open to Gentlemen Amateurs).—1. That the entries be drawn to contend by lots. 2. That the entrance fee be 10s. .8. Heavy weights to be over 11 stone 4 Ib; middle weights not to exceed 11 stone 4 tb; light weights not to exceed 10 stone. 4, That there be three judges appointed by the committee. 5. That the boxing take place in a 24 feet ring. 6. That no wrest- ling, roughing, or hugging on the ropes be

allowed. 7. That cach heat consist of three rounds, with one minute interval between ; the duration of each round to be at the discretion of the judges, but not to exceed five minutes. 8. Any competitor not coming up to time shall be deemed to have lost. 9. That no shoes or boots with spikes or spriggs be allowed. 10. Competitors to wear jerseys. 11. Gloves to be provided by the club. 12. The cups to be boxed for once in each year; the winner to receive a silver medal.

Definition of Gentleman Amatewr.—Any gentleman who has never conipeted in an open competition, or for public money, or for adniission money, or with professionals for a prize, public money, or admission money, and who has never at any period of his life taught, pursued, or assisted in the pursuit of athletic exercises as a means of livelihood. The committee reserve the right of requiring a reference or of refusing an entry.

Contests for Endurance.—To be a fair stand-up boxing match, in a 24 feet ring, or as near that size as practicable ; no wrestling or hugging allowed ; the rounds to be of three minutes' duration and one minute time ; if either man fall through weakness or otherwise he must get up unassisted; ten seconds to be allowed him to do so; the other man meanwhile to retire to his corner, and when the fallen man is on his legs the round is to be resumed and continued until the three minutes have expired, and, if one man fails to come to the scratch in the teu seconds allowed, it shall be in the power of the referee to give his award in favour of the other man; a man hanging on the ropes in a helpless state, with his toes off the ground, shall be considered down ; no seconds or any other person to be allowed in the ring during the rounds; should the contest be stopped by any unavoidable interference, the referee to name time and place for finishing the contest as soon as possible, so that the match must be won or lost, unless the backers of both men agrec to draw the stakes. The gloves to be fair-sized boxing gloves of the best quality, and new ; should a glove burst or come off, it must be replaced to the referec's satisfaction. A man on one knee is considered down, and if struck is entitled to the stakes. No shoes or boots with spriggs allowed. (Ue Ide 18.)

WREXHAM, a market-town and municipal and parlia- mentary borough of Denbighshire, North Wales, 11 miles south-south-west of Chester and 201 miles from London by rail. It was characterized by the poet Churchyard in the 16th century as "Trim Wricksam towne, a pearle of Denbighshiere," and the description is not altogether inap- plicable at the present day, the streets being spacious, with many handsome houses. Wrexham church, dedicated to St Giles, contains 14th and 15th century work, but was in great part reconstructed at the beginning of the 16th century. The tower, erected between 1506 and 1520, has been styled "' one of the seven wonders of Wales." It is 135 feet in height, and consists of several successive stages panelled throughout, and decorated with numerous statues of saints placed in niches of the buttresses. It is sur- mounted by an open-work balustrade, from which spring

four lantern-shaped turrets of pierced open-work. The church was restored in 1867. It contains a large number of monuments. The bells, ten in number, are the most famous in the principality. In 1647 the church was used as a prison by Cromwell. The other principal public buildings are the guild-hall (formerly the old grammar school); the public and corn exchange (formerly the Union Hall), opened in 1873, after alteration, at a cost of £4900; the infirmary ; and the infantry barracks of the Royal Welsh Fusiliers. In the neighbourhood there are a racecourse and training-ground. The town is situated on the edge of the Denbighshire coalfield, in the vicinity of coal, iron, and lead mines. It has long been celebrated for its ales, and possesses also corn and paper mills and tanneries. The surrounding country is very fertile, and the agricultural trade is of some importance. The parliamentary borough unites with Denbigh, Ruthin, and Holt in returning a member to parliament. The town has a special commission of the peace and a petty sessions court. The population of the municipal borough and urban sanitary district (1306 acres) was 8576 in 1871, and 10,978 in 1881. The population of the parliamentary borough (1791 acres) in 1881 was 12,333.

Although Wrexham was situated on the eastern side of Offa's Dyke, it was reckoned one of the towns of Mercia. In the Saxon Chronicle the name

occursas Wrightesham. Edward I. granted the town with the lordship of Bromfield and Yale to John Earl Warren. The township of Wrexham Regis within the borough and the town- ship of Stansty without constitute ancient manors. Formerly the township of Wrexham Abbot was ecclesiastical property, and an appendage to the abbey of Valle Crucis, near Llangollen. During the civil war the town was occupied by the Parliamentary troops. Wrexham town was constituted a parliamentary borough in 1832, and incorporated as a municipal borongh in 1857.

See A. N. Palmer's Wrexham and History of the Parish Church of Wrexham.

WRIGHT, Josepn (1734-1797), styled Wright of Derby, subject, landscape, and portrait painter, was born at Derby on September 3, 1734, the son of an attorney of the place, who was afterwards town-clerk. During his early years he manifested an aptitude for mechanical pursuits, and also for music, but he finally resolved to become a painter, and in 1751 he went to London and for two years studied under Thomas Hudson, the master of Reynolds. Return- ing to Derby he practised portrait-painting ; but feeling the need for further instruction he again placed himself for fifteen months under his former master. He then settled in Derby, and varied his work in portraiture by the productions of the subjects seen under artificial light with which his name is chiefly associated, and by landscape paint- ing. He married in 1773, and in the end of that year he visited Italy, where he remained till 1775. While at Naples he witnessed an eruption of Vesuvius, which under various treatment formed the subject of many of his subsequent pictures. On his return from Italy he established him- self at Bath as a portrait-painter ; but meeting with little encouragement he returned to Derby, where he speut the rest of his life. He was a frequent contributor to the ex- hibitions of the Society of Artists, and to those of the Royal Academy, of which he was elected an associate in 1781 and a full member in 1784. He, however, declined the latter honour on account of a slight which he believed that he had received, and severed his official connexion with the Academy, though he continued to contribute to the exhibitions from 1783 till 1794. He died at Derby on August 29, 1797.

There has been a tendency in recent criticism to over-estimate the works of Joseph Wright. His portraits are frequently defective in drawing, and without quality or variety of handling, while their flesh tints are often hard, and unpleasant in their purple-grey shadows. He is seen at his best in his subjects of artificial light, of which the Orrery (1766), the property of the corporation of Derby, and the Air-pump (1768), in the National Gallery, are ex- cellent examples. His Old Man and Death (1774) is also a strik-

ing and individual production. An exhibition of Wright's works was brought together at Derby in 1883, and twelve of his pictures were shown in the winter exhibition of the Royal Academy in 1886.

WRIGHT, Sizas (1795-1847), was born at Amherst,

Massachusetts, May 24, 1795. He graduated at Middle- bury College, Vermont, in 1815, was admitted to the bar in 1819, and began practice at Canton, in northern New York. From the first he showed those characteristics which finally made him a representative American Democratic leader. He had settled in what was almost a wilderness. His farm was a small one, and no hired labourer upon it worked harder than he. His manner of life was of the simplest. In his professional work he was a type of the lawyer of the old school,—shrewd, skilful, rigidly just, and controlled by the belief that his pro- fession was a public trust, and that judicial qualities must mingle with those of the advocate. He seems never to have sought an office, and never to have felt at liberty to refuse one, even that of village postmaster, if he could possibly serve. He was appointed surrogate in 1820, and was elected successively to the State senate in 1823, to the house of representatives in 1827-29, comptroller of the State 1829-33, United States senator 1833-44, and governor of New York 1844-46. During his public life he had become a leader of the Democratic party of New York, Van Buren being his closest associate. When the national Democratic party in 1844 nominated and elected Polk to the presidency, instead of Van Buren, Wright and the State organization took an attitude of armed neutrality towards the new administration. Re- nominated for governor-in 1846, Wright was

defeated, and the result was ascribed to the hostility of the Polk administration. The death of the defeated candidate, at Canton, August 27, 1847, gave intense bitterness to New York politics for several years ; and his faction, in 1848, succeeded in defeating their national party's candidates in the presidential election.

Wright was one of a elass of politicians whieh has influeneed American development largely, finding its most eharacteristie types in the State of New York. It may be traeed elearly from about 1820, beginning with what was then known as " the Albany Regeney," ineluding Dix, Marcy, Wright, Seymour, Tilden, to Cleveland (president from 1885), and many of the new men who have eome into the national administration with him. Absolutely and punctiliously honest, devoted to the publie good, and believing intensely that the public good depended on the political prineiples of their party, they have been prone to consider politics as a warfare, and merciless exelusion of opponents from office as a legitimate war-weapon. One of their earliest leaders, Marey, deelared the rule of party struggle, that "the spoils (of offiee) belong to the vietor"'; the latest, President Cleveland, has been the first to recognize the merit system of appointment in practice, Tilden having already aeeepted it in theory. The sternness of Wright's integrity in office was illustrated in 1845, when the "anti- rent troubles" broke out again, and it seemed probable that the votes of the disaffeeted would decide the coming election. The governor asked and obtained from the legislature the power to sup- press the disturbanee by armed foree, ordered the militia into the disturbed distriet, arrested the offenders, had them tried, eonvieted and punished, and put an end to what was really an insurrection. His defeat in 1846 was a transition from the old to the new phase

of Ameriean politics ; but his name is still the representative of all that was best in the old.

Wright's Zife has been written by Jenkins, who also has a sketch of him i his Governors of New York; but the best biography of him is that of WamRiond.

WRIGHT, THomas (1810-1877), antiquary, was born at Ludlow, in Shropshire, 21st April 1810, and was de- scended from a Quaker family

formerly living at Bradford, in Yorkshire. He was educated at the old grammar school at Ludlow, and afterwards at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated in 1834. While at Cambridge he contributed to the Gentleman's Magazine and other periodicals, and in 1835 he came to London to devote himself to a literary career. His first separate work was Early English

Poetry in Black Letter, with Prefaces and Notes, 1836, 4 vols. 12mo, which was followed during the next forty years by a very extensive series of publications, many of lasting value. He helped to found the British Archeological Association and the Percy, Camden, and Shakespeare societies. In 1842 he was elected corresponding member of the Acadéinie des Inscriptions et Belles Lettres of Paris, and was a fellow of the Society of Antiquaries as well as member of many other learned British and foreign bodies. In 1859 he superintended the excavations of the Roman city of Uriconium, near Shrewsbury, of which he issued a description. He died at Chelsea, 23d December 1877, in his sixty-seventh year. A portrait of him is in the Draw- ing Room Portrait Gallery for October 1,1859. His fer- tility was remarkable, and the list of seventy-eight articles in Allibone's Dictionary (1871, iii. pp. 2864-67) includes exainples of almost every department of literature. He was a great scholar, but will be chiefly remembered as an industrious antiquary and the editor of many relics of the Middle Ages. In the British Museum catalogue are 121 references under his name.

His chief publieations are—Queen Elizabeth and Her Times, a Series of Original Letters, 1888, 2 vols.; Reliquiw Antiqux#, 1839- 43, again 1845, 2 vols., edited with Mr J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps; W. Mapes's Latin Poems, 1841, 4to, Camden Society; Political Ballads and Carols, published by the Perey Soeiety, 1841; Popular Tveatises on Setence, 1841; History of Ludlow, 1841, &e., again 1852; Collection of Latin Stories, 1842, Perey Soeiety; The Vision aud Creed of Piers Ploughman, 1842, 2 vols., 2d ed. 1855; Bio- graphia Literaria, vol i., Anglo-Saxon Period, 1842, vol. ii, Anglo-Norman Period, 1846; The Chester Plays, 1848-47, 2 vols., Shakespeare Soeiety; St Patrick's Purgatory, 1844; Aneedota Literaria,

1844; Arehzxological Album, 1845, 4to; Hssays connected with England in the Middle Ages, 1846, 2 vols.; Chaueer's Canter- bury Tales, 1847-51, Perey Society, a new text with notes, re- printed in 1 vol., 1853 and 1867; ZLarly Travels in Palestine, 1848, Bohn's Antiq. Lib.; England wnder the House of Hanover, 1848, 2 vols., several editions, reprodueed in 1868 as Caricatwre History of the Georges; Mapes, De Nugis Curialium, 1850, 4to, Camden Soeiety; Geoffrey Gaimar's JMJetrical Chroniele, 1850, Caxton Society; Narratives of Soreery and Magic, 1851, 2 vols.; The Celt, the Roman, and the Saxon, 1852, 4th ed. 1885; History of Fulke Fitz Warine, 1855; Jo. de Garlandia, De Triumphis Eeelesiv, 1856, 4to, Roxburghe Club; Dietionary of Obsolete and Provincial English, 1857; A Volume of Vocabularies, 1857, 2d ed. by R. P. Wiilcker, 1884, 2 vols.; Les Cent Nouvelles Nouvelles, Paris, 1858, 2 vols.; Malory's History of King Arthwr, 1858, 2 vols., revised 1865; Political Poems and Songs from Edward ITT. to Riehard 1IZ., 1859-61, 2 vols., Rolls Series; Songs and Ballads of the Reign of Philip and Mary, 1860, 4to, Roxburghe Club; Essays on Archxological Subjects, 1861, 2 vols.; Domestie Manners and Sentiments in England in the Middle Ages, 1862, 4to, reproduced in 1871 as The Homes of other Days; Roll of Arms of Edward I., 1864, 4to; Autobiography of Thomas Wright (1736-97), his grandfather, 1864; History of Caricature, 1865, 4to; Womankind in Western Europe, 1869, 4to; Anglo-Latin Satirical Poets of 12th Cent., 1872, 2 vols., Rolls Series.

WRIT, in law, is a formal commission from the crown or other supreme executive officer to an inferior executive officer or to a private person, enjoining some act or omission. The word represents the Latin brevis or breve (both forms are found, the latter more commonly), so called, according to Bracton, from its shortly expressing the intention of the framer, "' quia breviter et paucis verbis intentionent proferentis exponit."! The breve can be traced back as far as the Codex Theodosianus (438 a.p.), where one of its meanings is that of an official report or letter. It bears a similar meaning in some of the capitularies of the Frankish kings. The interdictum of Roman law some- times represents the writ of English law; ¢.g., there is con- siderable likeness between the Roman interdictum de libero homine exhibendo and the English writs of habeas corpus and de homine replegiando, From Roman law the breve passed into the Liber Feudorum and the canon law, in

1 It is perhaps doubtful whether zntentio is here used in its ordinary sense or in the technical signification which it bore as a part of the Roman formula (see Roman Law, vol. xx. p. 707-8).

both in a sense differing from that at present borne by the writ of English law. The breve testatwm of the Liber Feudorum was an instrument in writing made on the land at the time of giving seisin by the lord to the tenant, and attested by the seals of the lord and the pares curie or other witnesses. In England such witnesses were part of the inquest, and joined in the verdict in case of disputed right until 12 Edw. IL. st. 1,¢. 2. The breve testatum in England developed into the FrEorrMENT (g.v.), later into the deed of grant (see Reat Estate) ; in Scotland into the charter, and later into the disposition. In canon law breve denoted a letter under the pope's seal. In old English ecclesiastical law a brief meant letters patent issued out of Chancery to churchwardens or other officers for the collection of money for church purposes. Such briefs were regulated by 4 Anne c. 14, but are now obsolete, although they are still to be found named in one of the rubrics in the communion service of the Book of Common Prayer. In English legal practice brief now denotes the written instructions put into the hands of counsel to form the basis of his case. It was probably so called from its at first being only a copy of the original writ. Such a brief is in Scotland called a memorial. History The writ in English law still occupies a very important of writin position, which can scarcely be understood without a oe sketch of its history. To a certain extent this history has p already been given under Pirapine, for the whole theory of pleading depends in the last resort upon the writ. Writ or breve was at first used in a less technical sense than that which it afterwards assumed: thus in the Leges Henrict Primi it simply means a letter from the king, and in the Assize of Clarendon (1166) imbreviart means to be registered. It became formalized by the reign of Henry IL, and precedents are given by Glanvill. The writ process was at that date the foundation of all civil justice in the king's court, and of much in the lower courts, and was a profitable source of revenue to the exchequer. Every writ had to be purchased (breve perquirere was the technical term). This purchase developed in later times into the payment of a fine to the king where the

damages were laid above £40. The usual scale was 6s. 8d. for every 100 marks claimed. Insuing outa writ of covenant, the basis of the proceedings in levying a fine (see ENTAIL), the king was entitled to his primer jine, 2.¢., one-tenth of the annual value of the land concerned. The sale of writs was forbidden by Magna Charta and other statutes in certain cases, especially that of the writ de odio et atea in favour of the liberty of the subject. A solicitor was so called because his original duty was to solicit or sue out a writ and take the due proceedings by paying the proper fine. The costs of a writ purchased were first allowed to a successful demandant by the Statute of Gloucester, 6 Edw. I.c. 1. Through the Norman period the 'pre- rogative of issuing writs seems to have been undisputed. Glanvill's precedents did not exhaust all possible forms, for in the time of Bracton, in the 13th century, it was still possible to frame new writs at the pleasure of the crown. The Provisions of Oxford in 1258 put an end to this by enacting that the chancellor should not seal anything out of course (7.2, any writ for which there was no precedent) by the will of the king, but that he should do it by the council. In 1285 the Statute of Westminster the Second, 13 Edw. I. st. 1, c. 24, re-established the power of the crown within certain limits, that is, in causes of action in a similar case falling under the same law (12 consimili casu cadente sub eodem jure) as those for which precedents of writs already existed in the Chancery (see Trespass, Trover). These precedents were at an early date recorded in the Registrum Brevium, called by Sir Edward Coke the oldest book in the common law. Apart from the powers

given by the statute, new writs could only be issued by the authority of parliament, and writs are sometimes found set out in statutes, especially in the Statutum Wallix, 12 Edw. I. c. 7, where precedents of the most usual writs will be found. The Statute of Westminster the Second itself contained precedents of the writ of formedon and of many others. The original flexibility of the writ was thus limited within comparatively narrow bounds. The right to the issue of the writ determined the right of action. So essential was the writ that it was a legal axiom in Bracton that no one could sue at law without a writ, and it was called by Coke, in his introduction to Littleton, "the heartstrings of the common law." As such it occupied an important place in some of the leading statutes dealing with constitutional rights. The Statute of Marl- bridge, 52 Hen. III. c. 22,

forbade a lord to distrain his freeholders to answer for their freeholds, or for anything touching their freeholds, without the king's writ. By 25 Edw. III. st. 5, c. 4, it was accorded, asserted, and stablished that none should be taken by petition or sug- gestion made to the king or his council unless by indict- ment or presentment in due manner or by process made by writ original at the common law. 42 Edw. II c. 3 provided that no man should be put to answer without presentment before justices, or matter of record, or by due process and writ original according to the old law of the land. Both these statutes were recited and the general principle confirmed by 16 Car. Ic. 10. Uniformity of procedure was secured by 27 Hen. VIII. c. 24, by which all writs were to be in the king's name in a county palatine or liberty, but tested by those who had the county palatine or liberty. It was not until 1731 that, by virtue of 4 Geo. II. c. 26, writs were framed in the English language. They had previously been in Latin; this accounts for the Latin names by which a large number are still known. The writ was issued from the common law side of the Chancery, and was in the special charge of the manager and petty bag offices. Though issuing from the king's Chancery, it did not necessarily direct the trial of the question in the king's court. In whatever court it was returnable, it called in the aid of the sheriff as executive officer. It was either addressed to him or, if addressed to the party alleged to be in default, it concluded with a threat of con- straint by the sheriff in the event of disobedience, generally in those terms, 'et, nisi feceris, vicecomes de N. faciat ne amplius clamorem audiam pro defectu justitie." If the writ was returnable in the county court or the lord's court, the sheriff or the lord sat as the deputy of the king, not by virtue of his inherent jurisdiction. The writ was not necessary for the initiation of proceedings in these courts or before the justices in eyre (who sat as judges of the county court),! but a custom seems to have grown up of suing out a writ from the king where the claim was above 40s. Cases were transferred from the lord's court to the county court by writ of tolt (so called because it removed, tollit, the case), from the latter to the king's court by writ of pone (so called from its first word). By Magna Charta the power of bringing a suit in the king's court in the first instance by writ of precipe was taken away, and the writ was thenceforth only returnable in the king's court where the tenant held of the king i capite, or where the lord had no court or abandoned his right. Hence it became a common form in the writ of right to allege that the lord had

renounced his court (dominus remisit curiam) so as to secure trial in the king's court. Besides being used for the trial of disputes, writs addressed to sheriffs, mayors, commissioners, or others were in constant use for financial

1 The distinction between the royal and local courts was not per- haps at all times very strictly drawn. Thus in the Leges Henrica Primi, c. 31, the county court is called curia regis.

694

ay Wl

and political purposes, ¢.g., for the collection of fifteenths, | alternative of the judicial combat was accepted was

scutage, tallage, &c., for summons to the council and later to parliament, and for recalling a parliament, the last by means of the rarely occurring writ de revocatione parlia- mentt,

There were several divisions of writs (excluding those purely financial and political), the most important being that into original and judicial, the former (tested in the name of the king) issued to bring a suit before the proper court, the latter (tested in the name of a judge) issued during the progress of a suit or to enforce judgment. Original were either optional, ¢. ¢., giving an option of doing a certain act or of showing cause why it was not done, beginning with the words precipe quod reddat, the principal example being the writ on which proceedings in a common recovery (see ENnTaiL) were based, or per- emptory, 2.e., calling on a person to do a certain act, beginning with the words si A fecerit tesecurum. Original were also either de cursu or magistralia, the former those fixed in form and depending on precedent, the latter those framed by the masters in Chancery under the powers of the Statute of Westminster the Second. They were also either general or special, the latter setting forth the grounds of the demand with greater particularity than the former. By 5 Geo. II. c. 27 special writs were confined to causes of action amounting to £10 or upwards. There was also a division of writs into writs of right (ea debito Justitiz), such as habeas corpus, and prerogative writs (ex gratia),

such as mandamus (see PREROGATIVE). Coke and other authorities mention numerous other divisions, but those which have been named appear to be the principal.

The most interesting form of writ from the historical point of view was the writ of right (breve de recto), called by Blackstone "the highest writ in the law," used at first for debt and other personal claims, afterwards confined to the recovery of real estate as the writ of right par excellence. It was so called from the words plenum rectum contained in it, and was the remedy for obtaining justice for ouster from or privation of the freehold. By it property as well as possession could be recovered. It generally lay in the king's court, as has been said, by virtue of a fictitious allegation. In that case it was addressed to the sheriff and was called a writ of right close. It was also a writ of right close where the lands in dispute were held in antient demesne. When addressed to the lord and tried in his court, it was generally a writ of right patent. After the appearance of the tenant the demandant in a writ of right counted, that is, claimed against the tenant according to the writ, but in more precise terms, the writ being as it were the embryo of the future count. The trial was originally by battle (see TriaL), but in the reign of Henry II. an alternative pro- cedure was introduced, interesting as the earliest example of the substitution of something like the Jury (q.v.) system for the judicial combat. A writ de magna assisa elagenda was directed to the sheriff commanding him to return four knights of the county and vicinage to the court, there to return twelve other knights of the vicinage to try upon oath the question contained in the writ of right (technically called the mise). This mode of trial was known as trial by the grand assize. Generally the whole of the sixteen knights were sworn, though twelve was a sufficient number. The last occasion of trial by the grand assize was in 1835. But long before that date possessory had from their greater convenience tended to supersede proprietary remedies, and in most cases the title was sufficiently determined by the assizes of other kinds, especially that of novel disseisin and later by pro- ceedings in ejectment (see Possession). The oath of the champion on proceedings in a writ of right where the

regulated by statute, 3 Edw. I.c. 41. The writ of right is also interesting as being the basis of the law of Limira- TION (q.v.). By the Statute of

Merton, 20 Hen. III. c. 8, no seisin could be alleged by the demandant but from the time of Henry II. By 3 Edw. I. c. 39 the time was fixed at the reign of Richard I., by 32 Hen. VIII. c. 2 at sixty years at the most. There were other writs of right with special names, eg., the writ of right by the custom of London for land in London, the writ of right of advowson, brought by the patron to recover his right of presentation to a benefice, and the writs of right of dower and de rationabili parte, the latter brought by coparceners or brothers in gavelkind. There were also writs in the nature of a writ of right, e.g., formedon, brought by a reversioner on discontinuance by a tenant in tail and given by the Statute De Donis (see Enratz) ; escheat, brought by the lord where the tenant died without an heir; ne cnjuste vexes, to prohibit the lord from exacting services or rents beyond his due; de nativo habendo, to recover the inherit- ance in a villein; and the little writ of right close according to the custom of the inanor, to try in the lord's court the right of the king's tenants in antient demesne. Up to 1832 an action was (except as against certain privileged persons, such as attorneys) commenced by original writ, and writ practically became the equivalent of action, and is so used in old books of practice, such as Booth on Real Actions. The law was gradually altered by legislation and still more by the introduction of fictitious proceedings in the common law courts, to be described later, by which the issue of the original writ was suspended, except in real actions, which were of comparatively rare occurrence. The original writ is no longer in use in civil procedure, an action being now in all cases commenced by the writ of summons, a judicial writ, a procedure first introduced in 1832 by 2 Will. IV. c. 39. In the follow- ing year an immense number of the old writs were abolished by 3and 4 Will. IV. c. 27. An exception was made in favour of the writ of right of dower, writ of dower unde mihil habet, QUARE IMPEDIT (q.v.), and EJECTMENT (¢.2.), and of the plaints for free bench and dower in the nature of writs of right. Ejectment was remodelled by the Common Law Procedure Act, 1852; the other writs and plaints remained up to the Common Law Procedure Act, 1860, by which they were abolished. Other writs which have been superseded by simpler proceedings, generally by ordinary actions, are those of the four assizes of novel disseisin, jurzs utrum, mort d'auncester, and darrein presentment (see ASSIZE), estrepement and waste (see Waste), monstrans de droit (see PETITION), NUISANCE (g.v.), PARTITION (¢.v.), premunire (see

TREASON), Quo WaRRANTO (q.v.), SciRE Factas (q.v.), subpoena (see Trust), and warrantia chartz (see WaRRANTY). The number of writs was so large that any exhaustive list of them is almost impossible, but a few of those of more

special interest which have become obsolete may be shortly Obsolete mentioned. Admensuratio lay against persons usurping writs.

more than their share of property. It was either dots or pasture, the latter, like the Scotch '"souming and rouming," being the remedy for surcharge of common. Alias and pluries writs were issued when a previous writ had been disobeyed. Attaint lay to inquire by a jury of twenty-four whether a jury of twelve had given a false verdict. It was superseded in the 16th century by the practice of setting aside a verdict or granting a new trial, and was finally abolished by 6 Geo. IV. c. 50.

| querela was a means of relieving a defendant by a matter

of discharge occurring after judgment. After having been long practically superseded by stay of execution it was finally abolished by the rules made under the Judicature

we it 'T

Act, 1875. Capias, latitat, and quominus are interesting as showing the extraordinary mass of fictitious allegation in the old procedure of the common law courts before 1832. By capias ad respondendum followed by alias and pluries the Court of Common Pleas was enabled to take cognizance of an action without the actual issue of an original writ. The capias was a judicial writ issued to follow an original writ of trespass quia clauswm Sregit. The issue of the original writ and after a time the issue of the capias became mere fictions, and proceedings com- menced with the issue of another writ called capias testatum. On return of the writ the plaintiff elected to proceed with a cause of action other than trespass, and the real merits of the case were eventually reached in this tortuous manner. After being served with the capias the defendant was bound to put in common or special bail, the former being sufficient in all but exceptional cases. Here again there was a fiction, for his common bail

were John Doe and Richard Roe. The same fictitious pair also appeared on the side of the plaintiff as his pledges for the due prosecution of his action. By datitat and quominus the Courts of King's Bench and Exchequer respectively assumed jurisdiction by a further series of fictions over ordinary civil actions. The writ of Jatitat, following the bill of. Middlesex, itself in later times generally a fiction, alleged that the defendant was in hiding out of Middlesex, after committing a trespass guia clausum fregit, for which he was in the custody of the king's marshal in the Marshalsea prison. The real cause of action was then stated in what was called the ac etiam clause. Writs filed in the King's Bench and Common Pleas were in the custody of an officer of each court called the custos brevinm. The writ of guominus alleged that the plaintiff was the king's debtor and that through the defendant's default he was unable to discharge the debt. Deceit or disceit lay for the redress of anything done deceitfully in the name of another, but was especially used to reverse a judgment in a real action obtained by collusion. Déstraint of knighthood was a mode of obtaining money for the crown by the exercise of the prerogative of forcing every one who held a knight's fee under the crown to be knighted or to pay a fine. The earliest extant writ was issued in 1278. It was abolished by 16 Car. L c. 20. Entry was & possessory remedy against one alleged to hold land unlawfully. It was divided into a large number of kinds, and was the subject of much of the old real property learning. The ones most commonly occurring were the writs of entry in the per and in the post, the former alleg- ing, the latter not, the title of the heir from the original disseisor. When writ had come to be equivalent in mean- ing to action, one of the divisions of possessory actions was into writs of entry and writs of assize. A special writ of entry for dower was given by 6 Edw. I. c. 7. Excommunicato capiendo was the authority for arresting an excommunicated person and detaining him until he was reconciled to the church, when he was liberated by the writ de eacommunicato deliberando. These proceedings were abolished and the writ de contumace capiendo substi- tuted by 57 Geo. IIL c. 127 (see Excommunicarton), Heretico comburendo was issued on certificate of conviction for heresy by the ecclesiastical court. A case of burning two Arians under this writ occurred as lately as the reign of James I. It was abolished by 29 Car. I. c. 9. Homine replegiando, mainprize, and odio et atia (or bono et malo) were all ancient means of securing the liberty of

the sub- ject, long superseded by the more effective procedure of habeas corpus. The last of the three enjoined the sheriff to inquire whether a committal on suspicion of murder was on just cause or from malice and ill-will. It was regulated by Magna Charta and the Statute of Westminster

the Second, but, having been abused to the advantage of sherifis, it was taken away by 28 Edw. IIL c. 9. Wise prius was given by the Statute of Westminster the Second, 13 Edw. I. c. 30. Its place is now taken by the com- mission of Nisr Prius (¢.v.). Orando pro rege et regno, before the present Book of Common Prayer, enjoined public prayers for the high court of parliament. Privilege com- manded the release of a prisoner entitled to privilege of parliament. Protection was given for enabling a man to be quit of suits brought against him while absent beyond seas. It was dealt with by a large number of old statutes, but none has been issued since 1692. Rebellion was a means of enforcing obedience to the process of the Court of Chancery. In modern procedure attachment takes its place. Rege inconsulto commanded judges of a court not to proceed in a case which might prejudice the king until his pleasure should be known. Replevin was a survival of the most archaic law. The procedure consisted of writ on writ to an almost unlimited extent. It originally began by the issue of a writ of replevin or replegiart facias. The case might be removed from the county court toa superior court by writ of recordari facias loquelam. If the dis- trainor claimed a property in the goods distrained, the question of property or no property was determined by a writ de proprietate probanda, and, if decided in favour of the distrainor, the distress was to be returned to him by writ de retorno habendo. Ifthe goods were removed or concealed ; a writ of capias in withernam enabled the sheriff, after due issue of alias and pluries writs, to take a second distress in place of the one removed. It is said that the question whether goods taken in withernam could be replevied was the only one which the Admirable Crichton found himself unable to answer. For the modern practice, see DISTRESS, REPLEVIN. Restitutione extracti ab ecclesia lay for restor- ing a man to a sanctuary from which he had been wrong- fully taken (see Sanctuary). Secta lay for enforcing the duties of tenants to their lord's court, ¢.g., secta ad molen- dinum, where the tenants were bound to have their corn ground at the lord's mill. Secsina habenda allowed delivery of lands of a felon to the lord after the king had had his year, day, and waste (see Waste). Vi laica removenda is curiously illustrative of ancient manners. It lay where two parsons contended for a church, and one of then entered with a great number of laymen and kept out the other by force. As lately as 1867 an application for the issue of the

writ was made to the Chancery Court of the Bermuda Islands, but refused on the ground that the writ was obsolete, and that the same relief could be obtained by injunction. On appeal this refusal was sustained by the privy council.

Of writs now in use, other than those for elections, all are Writs judicial, or part of the Process (q.v.)! of the court, except per- now in They are to be hereafter use,

haps the writ of error in criminal cases. issued out of the central office of the Supreme Court, or the office of the clerk of the crown in Chancery, provision having been made by the Great Seal (Officers) Act, 1874, and the Judicature (Officers) Act, 1879, for the transfer on the next vacancy of the duties of the clerk of the petty bag to those officers. By the latter Act the record and writ clerks, previously officers of the Chancery Division, were abolished. By 40 and 41 Vict. c. 41 the wafer great scal or the wafer privy seal may be attached to writs instead of the im pression of the great or privy seal. The judicial writs issue chiefly, if not entirely, from the central office, with which the old crown office was incorporated by the Act of 1879. The crown office had charge of writs occurring in crown practice, such as quo warranto and certiorart.

In local civil courts, other than county courts, writs are usually Judicial issued out of the office of the registrar, or an officer of similar writs,

jurisdiction. By 35 and 36 Vict. c. 86 writs of cxecution from such courts for sums under £20 may be stamped or sealed as of course by the registrar of a county court, and executed as if they had issued from the county court. In county court practice the

1 Tt may be noticed that by the interpretation clause of the Sheriffs Act, 1887, the expression " writ" includes any process.

WARRANT (q.v.) corresponds generally to the writ of the Supreme Court. Most of the present law on the subject of writs is contained in the Rules of the Supreme Court, 1883, Ord. xlii.—xliv., and in the Crown Office

Rules, 1886. Both sets of rules contain numerous pre- cedents in their schedules. all writs (with certain exceptions) are to be tested in the name of the lord chancellor, or, if that office be vacant, in the name of the lord chief justice. The main exceptions are those whieh occur in crown practice, which are tested by the lord chief justice. The writ of error bears the tests of the king or queen, "'witness our- selves." Before the issue of most writs a pracipe, or authority to the proper offices to issue the writ, is necessary. This is of course not to be confounded with the old original writ of precipe. Writs affecting land must generally 'be registered in order to bind the land (see RecisTRATIoN). A writ cannot as a rule be served on Sunday (see SUNDAY). Some of the more important modern writs (other than those of an extrajudicial nature) may be shortly noticed. Hasrsas Corpus, MANDAMUS, and PROHIBITION (9g.¥.) have been already treated. Writs are generally, unless where the contrary is Stated, addressed to the sheriff. Abatement or nocu- mento amovendo enjoins the removal of a nuisance in pursuance of a judgment to that effect. Ad quod damnum is for the purpose of inquiring whether a proposed crown grant will be to the damage of the crown or others. It is still in use, and recent examples will be found in the London Gazette. If the inquiry be determined in favour of the subject, a reasonable fine is payable to the exchequcr by 27 Edw. I. st. 2. Attachment is issued as a means of support- ing the dignity of the court by punishment for contempt of its orders (see CONTEMPT OF CouRT). Since the Judicature Acts a uniform practice has been followed in all the branches of the High Court, and a writ of attachment can now only be issued by leave of the court or a judge after notice to the party against whom it is to be issued. Capias: the old writs of capias ad satisfaciendum and capias utligatwm may still be used, but their importance has been much diminished since the alterations made in the law by the Debtors Act, 1869, and the abolition of civil outlawry (see OuT-LAW). Certiorari is a writ in very frequent use, by which the pro- ceedings of an inferior court are brought up for review by the High Court. In general it lies for excess of jurisdiction as mandamus does for defect. The Summary Jurisdiction Act, 1879, makes the writ no longer necessary where a special case has been stated by a court of quarter sessions. Delivery enforces a judgment for the delivery of property without giving the defendant (unless at the option of the plaintiff) power to retain it on payment of the assessed value. Distringas lay to distrain a person for a

crown debt or for his appearance on a certain day. Its opcration has been much curtailed by the substitution of other proceedings by 28 and 29 Vict. c. 104, and the rules of the Supreme Court. It now seems to lie only against inhabitants for non-repair of a highway. Dis- tringas nuper vicccomitem is a writ calling on an ex-sheriff to account for the proceeds of goods taken in execution. Elcgit is founded on the Statute of Westminster the Second, andisso named from the words of the writ, that the plaintiff has chosen (elcgié) this particular mode of satisfaction. It originally ordered the sheriff to seize a moiety of the debtor's land and all his goods, save his oxen and beasts of the plough. By 1 and 2 Vict. c. 110 the elegit was extended to include the whole of the lands, and copy- holds as well as freeholds. By the Bankruptcy Act, 1883, an clegit no longer applies to goods. Error, the only example of an original writ remaining, was at one time largely used in both civil and criminal proceedings. It was abolished in civil procedure by the Common Law Procedure Act, 1852, and proceedings in error by the rules made under the Judicature Act, 1875. III., 25 Edw. III. st. 6. Haxtent is the writ of execution issued by the crown fora crown debt of record. The sale of chattels seized under an extent takes place under a writ of venditiont exponas. A crown debtor is eutitled to an catent im aid against a person indebted to him. Where a crown debtor has died a writ reciting his death, and so called diem clausit cxtremum, issues against his property. Fieri facias is the ordinary writ of execution on a judgment commanding the sheriff to levy the sum, interest, and costs on the personal pro- perty of the party. Where the sheriff has not sold the goods, venditiont cxponas issues to compel him to do so. Where the party is a beneficed clergyman, the writ is one of fiert facias de bonis ceclesiasticis or of sequestrari facias (addressed to the bishop). The latter writ also issues in other eases of an exceptional nature, as against a corporation and to seize a pension. It is addressed to eommissioners, not to the sheriff. Habere facias possessionem is given to the owner of a tithe or rent charge, enabling him to have

By -Ord. ii. r. 8 of the rules of 1883 .

WRIT

possession of the lands chargeablo therewith until arrears due to him are paid (see TirHEs). Jndicavit is still nominally grantable under the Statute De Conjunctim Feoffatis of 34 Edw. L., and is a particular kind of prohibition granted to the patron of an advow- son. Inquiry issues for the assessment of damages by the sheriff or his deputy. It represents to some extent the old writ of justicies, and the later writ of trial allowed by 3 and 4 Will. IV. ¢. 42, butis narrower in its operation, for under the last-named writs the whole case or issues under it could be tried. Before an inquiry the liability has been already established. Zevari facias is the means of levying execution for forfeited recognizances (see RECOGNIZANCE). The Bankruptcy Act, 1883, abolished it in civil proceedings. Ne cacat regno was at one time issued by virtue of the prerogative to prevent any person from leaving the realm, a form of restraint of liberty recognized by parliament in 5 Ric. II. c. 2. It has now become a means of preventing a debtor from quitting the kingdom, and so withdrawing himself from the jurisdiction of the court with out giving security for the debt. There is some doubt whether it has not been impliedly superseded by the powers given by Ord. xix. of the Rules of the Supreme Court. Von omittas is for executing pro- cess by the sheriff in a liberty or franchise, where the proper oflicer has neglected to do so. It rested originally ehiefly upon the Statute of Westminster the Second, c.39, and is now regulated by the Sheriffs Act, 1887, which repeals the previous enactment. Posscssion (also called assistance) enjoins the sheriff to give possession of land to the party entitled thereto under a judgment for such possession. In admiralty, where the judgment is for possession of a ship, the writ is addressed to the marshal. Procedendo is the converse of prohibi- tion. It directs the lower court to proceed with the case. It also lies to restore the authority of commissioners suspended by super- sedeas. Restitution restores property, either real or personal, after the right to it has been judicially declared. Thus it lies on behalf of the owner of real property under the statutes of forcible entry and of personal property under the Larceny Act, 1861. Signijicavit, once a writ, appears since 57 Geo. III. c. 127 to be merely a notice. It is a‘part of the proceedings against a person disobeying the order of an ecclesiastical court, and consists in a notification to the crown in Chancery of the disobedience. Thereupon a writ de contwmace capiendo issues for his arrest. On his subsequent obedience or

satisfaction, a writ of deliverance is granted. Precedents of these writs are given in the Act named. Subpena is the ordinary mcans

| of securing the presence of a witness in court, and is addressed to

the person whose attendance is required. It is so called from its containing the words "and this you are not to omit under the penalty of £100," &c. The subpena may be either ad testificandum, to-give evidence, or duces teewm, to produce docunients, &c., or both combined. By special order of a judge under 17 and 18 Vict. ¢. 23 a subpena may be issued from any court in England, Scotland, or Ireland to compel the attendance of a witness out of the juris- diction. Summons is the universal means of commencing an action in the High Court. It is addressed to the defendant, and may be either generally or specially indorsed with a statement of the nature of the claim made. The latter form of indorsement is allowed in certain cases of debt or liquidated demand, and gives the plaintiff the great advantage of entitling him to final judgment in default of appearance by the defendant, and even in spite of appearance unless the defendant can satisfy a judge that he has a defence or ought to be allowed to defend. No statement of claim is necessary in case of a specially indorsed writ, the indorse- ment being deemed to be the statement. The writ may be issued out of the central office or out of a district registry, and the plaintiff may name on his writ the division of the High Court in which he proposes to have the case tried. There are special rules governing the issue of writs in probate and admiralty actions. The writ remains in force for twelve months, but may be renewed for good cause after the expiration of that time. Service must be personal, unless where substituted service is allowed, and in special cases, such as actions to recover land and admiralty actions. Service out of the jurisdiction of a writ or notice of a writ is allowed only by leave of the court or a judge. Notice of the issue of a writ, and not the writ itself, is served on a defendant who is neither a British subject nor in British dominions. The law is contained in the Rules of tho Supreme Court, especially Ord. ii—xi. and xiv. Supersedcas com- mands the stay of proceedings on another writ. Itis often combined with procedendo, where on a certiorari the High Court has decided in favour of the jurisdiction of the inferior court. It is also used for removing from the commission of the peace, and for putting

an end to the authority of, any persons acting under commission from the crown. Venire facias is the first proceeding in outlawry, call- ing upon the party toappear. Under the old practice a venire facias de novo was the means of obtaining a new trial. Ventre inspiciendo appears still to be competent, and is a curious relic of antiquity. It issues on the application of an heir presumptive in order to determine by a jury of matrons whether the widow of a deceased owner of lands be with child or not. Almost exactly the same pro- ceeding was known in Roman law under the name of interdictum de inspiciendo ventre, the pretor sending five women to make a report.

Non- judicial writs.

Scotland.

WRI—W RI

The principal writs of a non-judicial nature relate to parliament or some of its constituent elements. Parliament is summoned by the king's writ issued out of Chancery by advice of the privy coun- cil. The period of forty days once necessary between the writ and the assembling is now by 15 and 16 Vict. c. 23 reduced to thirty- five days. Writs of summons are issued to the lords spiritual and temiporal before every new parliament. Those to Irish represen- tative peers are rcgulated by the Act of Union, those to archbishops and bishops by 10 and 11 Vict. e. 108. New peerages are no Ionger created by writ, but the eldest son of a peer is occasionally summoned to the House of Lords in the name of a barony of his father's, Earl Percy, the eldest son of the duke of Northumber- land, was so summoned in 1887, and sits as Baron Lovaine (see PEERAGE). With respect to election of members of the House of Commons, the procedure differs as the election takes place after a dissolution or on a casual vacancy. After a dissolution the writ is issued, as already stated, by order of the crown in council. For a single election the warrant for a new writ is issued during the session by the spcaker after an order of the house made upon motion ; during the recess by the speaker's authority alone, under the powers given by 24 Geo. III. sess. 2, c. 26, 21 and 22 Vict. c. 110, and 26 Vict. c. 20. The warrant is addressed to the clerk of the crown in Chancery for Great Britain, to the clerk of the crown and hanaper of

Ireland. A superscdeas to a writ has some- times been ordered where the writ was improvidently issued. The time allowed to elapse between the receipt of the writ and the elec- tion is fixed by the Ballot Act, 1872, sched. 1, at nine days for a county ora district borough, four days for any other borough. The writ is to be returned by the returning officer to the clerk of the crown with the name of the member elected endorsed on the writ. Sched. 2 gives a form of the writ, which is tested, like the writ of error, by the quecn herself. The returning officer is the sheriff in eounties and counties of cities (such as Chester), generally the mayor in cities and boroughs, and the vice-chancellor in univer- sities (see PARLIAMENT). Other writs for election are those for ConvocaTION (q.v.), which is by 25 Hen. VIII. c. 19 summoned by the archbishop of the province on receipt of the king's writ, and for election of coroners, verderers of royal forests, and some other officers whose office is of great antiquity. The writ de coronatore eligendo, addressed to the sheriff, is specially preserved by the Coroners Act, 1887.

Offences relating to writs are dealt with by the Criminal Law Con- solidation Acts of 1861; larceny by 24 and 25 Vict. c. 96, s. 30; forgery by 24 and 25 Vict. c. 98, s. 27. The maximum penalty is seven years' penal servitude. :

Scotland.—Writ is a more extensive term than in England. Writs are either judicial or extrajudicial, the latter including deeds and other instruments,—as, for instance, in 42 and 48 Vict. c. 44, and in the common use of the phrase " oath or writ" as a means of proof. In the narrower English sense both "writ" and "'brieve" are used. The brieve was as indispensable a part of the old procedure as it was in England, and many forms are given in Regiam Majestatem and Quoniam Attachiamenta. It was a com- mand issued in the king's name, addressed to a judge, and ordering trial of a question stated therein. Its conclusion was the will of the summons (see WinL, Summons). In some cases proceedings which were by writ in England took another form in Scotland. For instance, the writ of attaint was not known in Scotland, but a similar end was reached by trial of the jury for wilful crror.t_ The English writ of ne excat regno is represented by the meditatio fuge warrant. Most proceedings by brieve, being addressed to the sheriff,

became obsolete after the institution of the Court of Session, when the sheriffs lost much of that judicial power which they had enjoyed to a greater extent than the English sheriff (see SHERIFF). The executive functions of the English sheriff are performed by the messengers-at-arms. An English writ of execution is represented in Scotland by diligence, chiefly by means by warrants to messen- gers-at-arms under the authority of signet letters in the name of the king. The brieve, however, has not wholly disappeared. Brieves of tutory, terce, and division are still eompetent, but not in use. Other kinds of brieve have been superseded by simpler procedure, c.g., the brieve of service of heirs by 10 and 11 Vict. c. 47, for which a petition to the sheriff was substituted by that Act and 31 and 82 Vict. c. 101. The brieve of cognition of insane persons is now the only one of practical importance. The old brieves of furiosity and idiotcy were abolished, and this new form was introduced by the Act last named. Writs eo nomine have been the subject of much recent legislation. The writs of capias, habeas, certiorari, and extent were replaced by other proceedings by 19 and 20 Vict. c. 56. The writ of clare constat was introduced by 21 and 22 Vict. c. 76. It and the writs of resignation and confirmation (whether granted by the crown or a subject superior) were regulated by 31 and 32 Vict. c. 101. By the same Act crown writs are to be in the English language, and registered in the regis-

1 An example occurring in the reign of James VI. will be found in Piteairn's Criminal Trials, vol. i. p. 216.

ter of crown writs. They need not be sealed unless at the instance of the party against whom they are issued. Writs of progress (except crown writs, writs of clare constat, and writs of acknow- ledgment) were abolished by 37 and 38 Vict. c. 94. The clare constat writ is one granted by the crown or a subject superior for the purpose of completing title of a vassal's heirs to lands held by the deceased vassal. Where the lands are leasehold the writ of acknowledgment under 20 and 21 Vict. ¢: 26 is used for the same purpose. By 40 and 41 Vict. c. 40 the form of warrant of execution on certain extracts of registered writs is amended. Extracts of registered writs are to be equivalent to the registered writs them- selves. Writs registered in

the register of sasines for preserva- tion only may atterwards be registered for preservation and execution. By 22 Geo. II. c. 48, passed for the purpose of assimi- lating the practice of outlawry for treason in Scotland to that in use in England, the court before which an indictment for treason or misprision of treason is found, is entitled on proper cause to issue writs of capias, proclamation, and exigent. Many writs are by the Stamp Act, 1870, chargeable with a duty of tive shillings. In some respects the proceedings in parliamentary elections differ from those in use in England. Thus the writ in university elec- tions is directed to the vice-chancellors of Edinburgh and Glasgow respectively, but not to those of St Andrews and Aberdeen, and there is an extension of the time for the return in elections for Orkney and Shetland, and for the Wick burghs. Representative peers of Scotland were by the Act of Union to be elected after writ issued to the privy council of Scotland. On the abolition of the privy council a proclamation under the great seal was substituted by 6 Anne, c. 23.

United States.—Writs in United States courts are by Act of United Congress to be tested in the name of the chief justice of the United States.

States. By State laws writs are generally bound to be in the name of the people of the State, in the English language, and tested in the name of a judge. Writs of error have been the subject of much legislation by the United States and by the States. In New York writs of error and of ne exeat have been abolished. Writs as parts of real actions have been generally superseded, but in Massachu- setts a writ of entry on disseisin is still a mode of trying title. Writs of dower and of estrepement are still in use in some States. By the law of some States, ¢.g., New Jersey, writs of election are issued to supply casually occurring vacancies in the legislature.

Authorities.—The importance of the writ in procedure led to the compilation of a great body of law and precedent at; an early date. In addition to the Registrum Brevtum there were, among other old works, the Natura Brevium, first published in 1525; Theloall, Le Digest des Briefes Originales (1579); Fitzherbert, Le Nouvel Natura Brevium (1588); Oficina Brevium (1679). See too Coke upon Littleton, 158, 159, 2

Coke's /nstitutes, 39. Many precedents will also be found in the collection of Parliamentary Writs and in Stubbs's Select Charters. Old books of practice, such as Tidd's Practice, Corner's Crown Practice, and Booth On Real Actions, contained much law on the subject. For the history Spence's Equitable Jurisdiction, vol. i. bk. ii. ch. viii., Forsyth's Hist. of Trial by Jury, Stephen On Pleading, and Bigelow's ist. of Procedure, ch. iv., may be consulted. There appears to be no book dealing with the writ in modern practice, but sufficient information is contained in the ordinary treatises on procedure. (J. Wt.)

WRITING MACHINES. Machines and appliances of various kinds are in common use to facilitate the process of writing, and to produce copies of writings already made with the pen. Such facsimile writings are obtained by numerous devices, all of which, however, come under the heads (1) of manifolding, (2) of processes analogous in principle to lithography, and (3) of stencilling. The simplest form of manifold writing is by sheets of paper prepared with lamp-black being interleaved between the sheets of white paper on which the impressions are to be taken, and writing over the whole with a style or other sharp-pointed instrument. By this means a considerable number of copies can be made at one time, and the method is in general use among newspaper writers and _tele- graphists in the production of what is technically known as "flimsy," where several copies of the same matter are required. Of processes analogous to lithography, the best known is the "hektograph " method, in which the writing is done in the first instance on paper with aniline ink, and then a transfer is made to a gelatine composition which gives off a considerable number of impressions. In principle the autocopyist is like the hektograph, but in this apparatus the writing is done with a special ink, which is transferred to a prepared and properly stretched sheet of parchment. From this parchment copies are obtained precisely as from a lithographic stone on which a transfer has been impressed. Of the apparatus worked in the stencil method, the cyclostyle has been most extensively

adopted. This machine consists of a frame of sufficient size containing a plate of tin on which the paper from which the impression is to be taken is rested. The paper

is prepared in a particular way, and the "pen" with which |

the writing is done consists of an ordinary wooden holder, at the end of which is fixed on a pivot a minute wheel. The edge of the wheel is studded with fine points, which, as it revolves and turns in the direction of the writing, pierce the paper, thus making a perfect stencil. The ink is passed over the top of this stencil by means of a roller, and the impression is left on a sheet of ordinary paper placed beneath.}

The principal substitute for the pen, however, is 'the machine now generally known as the type-writer, which in its present form dates only from 1873, but it has within that time come into extensive use, especially in America, the country of its origin. Numerous attempts to produce type-writing machines had been previously made both in England and America. So long ago as 1714 one Henry Mill took out a patent for a machine which he described as "an artificial machine or method for the impressing or transcribing of letters, singly or progressively, one after another as in writing, whereby all writings whatsoever may be engrossed in paper or parchment so neat and exact as not to be distinguished from print"; but his instrument is said to have been clumsy and useless, and led to no practical result. In 1867 the idea was taken up by Messrs C, Latham Sholes and Samuel W. Soulé, printers in Milwaukee, and Mr Carlos Glidden, and, after many experiments and failures, a practical working machine was elaborated in 1873, which, being originally made by Messrs E. Remington and Sons, of Ilion, N.Y., is known as the Remington standard type-writer. The success of this machine has induced many inventors to enter the field, and now three principal classes of type-writers are more or less in use. These are (1) type-bar machines, (2) cylinder machines, and (3) wheel machines. The Remington is the type and original of all type-bar machines, which are so called because the steel types are fixed at the extremity of a bar or rod of iron. These bars are in the Remington arranged in a circle around a common centre, and by striking the key of any particular letter, a lever is moved which raises the

type-bar, and causes the type at its point to strike on an inked ribbon, and impresses the letter on the paper, which lies against an india-rubber roller. The type-bars are so hinged that all the types as they are struck hit precisely the same spot, so that were the paper to remain stationary the impressions of all the types struck would be superimposed on each other : but, by an automatic mechanism, the cylinder with the paper moves a space to the left after the impression of each type, and the depression of a wooden bar similarly moves the cylinder a space after each word without impressing any sign. In the recent forms of the Remington machine, each type bar carries two types, capital and lower case, or other duplicate signs, the one a little behind the other, and when a capital letter is to be printed the depression of a key shifts the position of the cylinder so as to bring the second type in contact with the ink ribbon. In this way from one set of keys two sets of type can be with facility acted upon. With practice, an average writing speed of forty words per minute can easily be attained on the Remington type-writer, and very expert writers have been able to keep up a speed of from sixty to seventy words for ashort time. It is safe to say that type-writing can be ordinarily done at about three times the speed of

‘ The trypograph is also a stencil-using device, in which a simple style is used for writing, but the paper is stretched over a fine and sharply corrugated metallic plate which punctures the paper as the style passes over it.

ordinary handwriting. In the cylindrical machines the letters and signs are all upon a cylinder or “sleeve,” and the striking of a key produces a combined lateral and rotary motion for bringing the proper type to the common printing point. Thus, for every separate impression the entire cylinder has ordinarily to make two movements of variable length, and the instrument is noisy in operation, and does not possess the rapid direct action of the type-bar machines. On the other hand, it is a variable spacer, giving more space to such wide letters as m and w than to the narrow

letters i, t, and 1, a distinct advantage over the type bar machines, where each letter, wide or narrow, occupies precisely the same space. Of such cylinder machines the newest form is the Crandall type-writer, an apparatus supplied with spare type cylinders or "sleeves," which are easily separated and attached, so that many kinds of type can be brought into actual use. Of wheel machines the Columbia may be taken as one of the most recent examples. It is a simple and cheap apparatus in which the letters and signs are placed on the periphery of a wheel by the rotation of which any desired type is brought into position for printing. The machine is furnished with a dial index and pointer to indicate the type which is in position. The wheel machine has the advantages of variable spacing, and wheels with type of different character can readily be placed on it; on the other hand, it is not capable of being run with a rapidity nearly so great as can be secured with type-bar machines,

WRYNECK (Germ. Wendehals, Dutch Draathalzen, French 7orcol), a bird so called from its wonderful way of writhing its head and neck, especially when captured, as it may easily be, on its nest in a hollow tree. The Jyna 2 torquilla of ornithology, it is a regular summer-visitant to most parts of Europe, generally arriving a few days before the Cuckow, and it is in many countries known by some name associating it with that well-known bird—as in England "Cuckow's leader" and "Cuckow's mate"— but occasionally it is called "Snake-bird," not only from the undulatory motions just mentioned, but from the violent hissing with which it seeks to repel an intruder from its hole.?

The very unmistakable note of the Wryneck, without having any intrinsic merit, is always pleasant to hear as a harbinger of spring. Itis merely a repetition of what may be syllabled que, que, que, many times in succession, rapidly uttercd at first, but gradually slowing and in a continually falling key. This, how- ever, is only heard during a few weeks, and for the rest of the bird's stay in Europe it seems to be mute. It feeds almost ex- clusively on insects, especially on ants, and may often be seen on the ground, busily engaged at their nests. Somewhat larger than a Sparrow, its plumage is not easily described, being beautifully variegated with black, brown, buff, and grey—the last produced by minute specks of blackish-brown on a light ground—the darker markings disposed in

patches, vermiculated bars, freckles, streaks, or arrow-heads—and the whole blended most harmoniously, so as to recall the coloration of a GoATSUCKER (q.v.) or of a Woopcock (g.v.). The Wryneck builds no nest, but commonly lays its translucent white eggs on the bare wood of a hole in a tree, and it is one of the few wild birds that can be induced to go on laying by abstracting its eggs day after day, and thus upwards of forty have been taken from a single hole—but the proper complement is from six to ten. As regards Britain, the bird is most common in the south-east, its numbers decreasing rapidly towards the west and north, so that in Cornwall and Wales and beyond Cheshire and Yorkshire its occurrence is but rare, while it appears only by accident in Scotland and Ireland.

Some writers have been inclined to recognize five other

2 Frequently misspelt, as by Linnzeus in his later years, FPunz.

3 The peculiarity was known to Aristotle, and possibly led to the cruel use of the bird as a love-charm, to which several classical writers refer, as Pindar (Pyth. iv. 214; Nem. iv. 85), Theocritus (iv. 17, 30), and Xenophon (Memorabilia, 11. xi. 17, 18). In one part at least of China a name, Shay-ling, signifying "Snake's neck," is given to it (Zois, 1875, p. 125).

WURTEMBERG,} or WURTTEMBERG, a European king- See dom, forms a tolerably compact mass in the south-west sketch angle of the German empire, of which it is the third ae :

species of the genus ZJynxz ; but the so-called J. Japonica is specifically indistinguishable from J. torquilla ; while that designated, through a mistake in the locality assigned to it,

L. indica, has been found to be identical with the J. pector- alts of South Africa. Near to this is I. pulchricollis, dis- covered by Emin Pasha in the east of the Bar-el-Djebel (Lées, 1884, p. 28, pl. iii.) Another distinct African species is the L. exquatorialis, originally described from Abyssinia. The Wrynecks, as already stated (Woop- PECKER, supra, p. 652), form a Subfamily Zyngine of the Picide, from the more normal

groups of which they differ but little in internal structure, but much in coloration and in having the tail-quills flexible, or at least not stiffened to serve as props as in the climbing Picine. (a. WN.)

WUHU, or Woo-Hoo, a district city in the province of Gan-hwuy, China, is situated about a mile from the south bank of the Yang-tsze Keang river, with which it is con- nected by a straggling suburb. By the treaty of 1858 it was marked out as one of the treaty ports, but it was not opened to trade until 1877. At first its commercial pro- gress was very slow, the neighbourhood of the older ports of Kew-keang and Chin-keang militating against its suc- cess ; but of late years there has been a distinct improve- ment in the trade of the port, the gross value of which was £1,316,863 in 1885 and £2,011,327 in 1886. The principal exports are rice and silk piece goods, while next in importance come feathers, hides, nutgalls, and tea. For the production of feathers large quantities of ducks are reared in the surrounding districts. Of imports, opium is by far the most considerable item, amounting in 1886 to 779,728 1b, of the value of £652,223. In the same year £126,093 worth of cotton goods were imported, and £124,014 worth of sugar. Of the minor articles, matches, needles, sandalwood, and window glass form the largest items. During the same period 1088 vessels entered the port (691 British, 362 Chinese). The city, which is one of the largest of its rank in China, was laid desolate during the T'ai-p'ing rebellion, but it is gradually becoming repeopled.

WUN, a British district in the chief commissionership of Berar, lying between 19° 46' and 20° 42' N. lat. and between 77° 26' and 79° 10' E. long., and containing an area of 3907 square miles. It is bounded on the N. and W. by Ainraoti and Basim districts, on the S. by the Nizam's Dominions, and on the E. by Wardh& and Chanda districts of the Central Provinces. Win is a wild hilly country intersected by offshoots from the Ajanta chain of mountains. For the most part the hills in the district are bare, or clothed only with dwarf teak or small jungle; but on the heights near Win town the bamboo grows abundantly, and elsewhere small bamboos are found in the ravines. The Wardhd4 and Paingangd, which bound the district on the east and south, unite at its south-east corner. The Paingangé carries off nearly all the drainage of the district. Wun is

rich in coal and iron ores. Of wild animals the tiger, leopard, and hyzena abound; bears,

wolves, and jackals are also numerous; while small game |

is plentiful in all parts. There is a great want of means of communication ; during the rains cart traffic is entirely suspended, the only means of transit at this time of the year being that afforded by water from the Wardha for a short distance. The climate is enervating and unhealthy, and the average annual rainfall is about 41 inches.

Wun district forms part of the territory assigned by the nizam to the British Government undcr the treaties of 1853 and 1860. It was undisturbed during the mutiny of 1857. In 1886-87 the gross revellue amounted to £86,174, of which the land contributed £57,391. The population in 1881 was 392,102 (inales 201,491, females 190,611); Hindus numbered 335,787, Mohammedans 17,031, Christians 127, and aboriginals 37,252. Wun, the chief town of the district (population 4207), has some fine temples.

factor in point of area and the fourth in point of popu- lation, In the south it is cleft by the long narrow territory of Hohenzollern, belonging to Prussia; and it encloses six small enclaves of Baden and Hohenzollern, while it owns seven small exclaves within the limits of these two states. It lies between 47° 34' 48" and 49° 35' 17" N. lat., and between 8° 15' and 10° 30' E. long. Its greatest length from north to south is 140 miles; its greatest breadth is 100 miles; its boundaries, almost entirely arbitrary, have a circuit of 1116 miles ; and its total area is 7531 square miles, or about one twenty- eighth of the entire empire. It is bounded on the E. by Bavaria, and on the other three sides by Baden, with the exception of a short distance on the S., where it touches Hohenzollern and the Lake of Constance. For adminis- trative purposes the country is divided into the four circles ("kreise") of the Neckar in the north-west, the Jagst in the north-east, the Black Forest in the south- west, and the Danube in the south-east.

Wiirtemberg forms part of the South-German tableland, and is hilly rather than mountainous. In fact the undu- lating fertile terraces of

Upper and Lower Swabia may be taken as the characteristic parts of this agricultural country. The usual estimates return one-fourth of the entire surface as "plain," less than one-third as " moun- tainous," and nearly one-half as "hilly." The average elevation. above the sea-level is 1640 feet ; the lowest point is at Béttingen (410 feet), where the Neckar quits the country ; the highest is the Katzenkopf (3775 feet), on the Hornisgrinde, on the western border.

The chief mountains are the Black Forest on the west, the Swabian Jura or Rauhe Alb, stretching across the middle of the country from south-west to north-east, and the Adelegg Mountains in the extreme south-east, adjoining the Algau Alpsin Bavaria. The Rauhe Alb or Alp slopes gradually down into the plateau on its south side, but on the north it is sometimes rugged and steep, and has its line broken by isolated projecting hills. The highest summits are in the south-west, viz., the Lemberg (3326 feet), Ober-Hohenberg (3312 feet), and Plettenberg (3293 feet). In a narrower sense the name Rauhe Alb is re- served for the eastern portion only of the Swabian J ura, lying between Hohenzollern and Bavaria; in the narrowest sense of all it is applied to a single group near Reutlingen. Most of the isolated summits above referred to (none of which are over 2630 feet) project from this eastern section ; among them are the hills of Hohenstaufen, Teck, Mossingen, and Hohenzollern.

The Black Forest (Germ. Schwarzwald), a mountain group or system deriving its name from the dark foliage of its pine forests, hes partly in Wiirtemberg and partly in Baden. Its general shape is that of a triangle, its base resting on the Rhine between the Lake of Constance and Basel, and its apex pointing north. It stretches along the east bank of the Rhine from Basel to Durlach, at a distance varying from 4 to 15 miles from the river, and parallel to the Vosges range on the west bank. The south, west, and north faces of the group are rugged and steep, but on the east it loses its mountainous character, and melts so gradually into the bounding plateau that it is difficult to assign it definite limits on that side. The total length of the Black Forest range is 98 miles, its breadth varies from 46 to 13 miles, and its area is 1913 square

1 The origin of the name is disputed, though the once popular derivation from “ Wirth am Berg” is universally rejected. Some authorities derive it from an old proper name Wirnto or Wirtino, others from a Celtic place-name Virodunum or Verdunum. Wirten- bere, Wirtenberg, Wirtemberc are early forms. Wirtemberg was long current, and in the latter half of the 16th century Wiirtemberg and Wiirttemberg appear. The last was adopted in 1806 as the official spelling, though Wiirtemberg, the ordinary English spelling, is also common, and occurs sometimes in official documents and even on coins issued after that date.

5 1B

224.

Moun- tains.

Black Forest.

700 WURTE

miles. The average elevation decreases from south to north from 3280 feet to 2296 feet. The hills do not rise in peaks but in rounded summits and plateau-like masses and combs, separated from each other by the deep ravines of the streams.

The south part of the Black Forest was called Mons Abnoba by the Romans, and the whole was known to them from the 3rd century as Silva Marciana. The uame Silva Nigra appears in medieval Latin. This retired district, always somewhat over- shadowed by the majestic beauties of the neighbouring Swiss Alps, was long unvisited and almost unheard of. Within comparatively recent years, however, it has become a favourite resort for summer visitors and tourists. Though not boasting any very striking mountain scenery, the Black Forest includes romantic and wild vales as well as smiling and picturesque valleys; and the beauty of its streams and waterfalls, its fragrant and shady forests, the quaintness of its sequestered villages, and the primitive sim- plicity of its inhabitants, who still retain their peculiar costume, are all objects of interest.

About two-thirds of the Black Forest belongs to Baden and the remaining third to Wiirtemberg; but it is convenient to disregard the political boundaries, and to consider it as formed of the Southern or Upper and the Northern or Lower Black Forest, separated from each other by the deep and romantic gorge of the Kinzig. The principal rocks are stratified gneiss and eruptive granite, though some of the summits are porphyritic. In the north and east those rocks are covered with a tolerably thick layer of variegated and red sandstone, which also appears, though not so abundantly, in the south and west. The kernel of the Southern Black Forest is the Feldberg (4803 feet), the highest point in the range, round which the othcr summits and masses are grouped. Among the chief summits are the Belchen (4640 feet), the Erz- kasten (4218 feet), the Hochkopf (4150 feet), and the Kandelberg (4077 feet). The average height of the erest in this division of the forest is about 3300 feet. 'The chief streams are the Wutach, Alb, Wehra, Wiese, Neumagen, and Dreisam, all tributaries of the Rhine, and the Brege and Bregach, regarded as the head-waters of the Danube. On the eastern slopes lie the Feldsee, Titisee, Schuchsce, and numerous other small lakes, most of them in bleak and solitary situations among the extensive moors. The waterfall on the Gutach, at Triberg, is 170 feet high. The central height of the Northern Black Forest is the Hornisgrinde (3825 feet), on the border between Wiirtemberg and Baden. Other heights arc the Hohe Ochenskopf (3460 feet), the Hohloh (3225 feet), and the Kniebishohen (3180 feet), with the Kniebis Pass. The average height of the crest is 2470 feet. The principal streams are the Kinzig and Murg, which join the Rhine, and the Glatt, Enz, and Nagold, which fall into the Neekar. The eastern slopes of this division also are sprinkled with lakes, the chief of which are the gloony Mummelsee and the Wildesee.

As the name implies, the Schwarzwald is largely covered with forests, chiefly of pines and firs. Oaks, beeches, &c., also flourish, especially in the valleys and towards the west. The timber trade and its eognate industries are thus the chicf resources of the in- habitants. The felled timber is floated in the form of rafts down the numerous streams to the Neckar or Rhine, where larger rafts are formed, sometimes requiring a crew of several hundred men, for the voyage to Holland, the principal market. The increase of railways has, however, considerably diminished

the quantity of wood thus exported by water; and numerous sawmills within the limits of the forest are engaged in cutting timber into planks for export by rail. Perhaps, however, the most characteristic industry of the Black Forest is the manufacture of wooden elocks (often spoken of as " Dutch clocks"). This industry has long flourished in the district, and has recently been organized and extended, while considerable factories have been established at Furtwangen, Triberg, and other chief centres. Clocks to the value of about £2,000,000 are said to be annually produced, and 1400 persons are engaged in their manufacture. Musical-boxes are also extensively made here. Straw-plaiting occupies a large number of girls and wonien, especially in winter ; and glass-blowing, charcoal-burning, and potash-boiling are also carried on. Agriculture is of no great importance, as the soil is poor, and the crops scanty. Cattle are kept in considerable numbers ; they are driven up to the mountains in summer, and return to the valleys in autumn. The mining in- dustry is quite insignificant ; coal is worked to a small extent in and near Rotliegenden. In spite of their industrial resources, aided by the wealth introduced by tourists and visitors to the numerous mineral springs, the population of the Black Forest is too numerous to find support at home, and large numbers go abroad as pedlars, merchants, servants, &c.

The climate of the Schwarzwald is severe, but healthy. The forests cease at 4250 feet, and are succeeded by scanty grass and herbs. On iwmany of the snmmits snow lies for ten months in the year, yet in some of the valleys vines, almonds, and chestnuts ripen. Wild boars, deer, hares, foxes, and various kinds of game are found. The carriage-roads follow the vallcys, but innumerable footpaths lead in all directions through the magnificent woods. The Black

MBERG

Forest railway, opened in 1873, ascends the picturesque valleys of the Kinzig and Gutach by means of bridges, viaducts, and tunnels, ofteu of the boldest construction.

To the south of the Rauhe Alb the plateau of Upper Swabia stretches to the Lake of Constance and eastwards across the Iller into Bavaria. Between the Alb and the Black Forest in the north-west are the fertile

terraces of Lower Swabia, continued on the north-east by those of Franconia.

About 70 per cent. of Wiirtemberg belongs to the Rivers.

basin of the Rhine, and about 30 per cent. to that of the Danube. The principal river is the Neckar, which flows northward for 186 miles through the country to join the Rhine, and with its tributaries drains 57 per cent. of the kingdom. On the west it receives the Enz, swelled by the Nagold, and on the east the Fils, Rems, Murr, Kocher, and Jagst. The Danube flows from east to west across the south half of Wiirtemberg, a distance of 65 miles, a small section of which is in Hohenzollern. Just above Ulm it is joined by the Iller, which forms the boundary between Bavaria and Wiirtemberg for about 35 miles. The Tauber in the north-east joins the Main; the Argen and Schussen in the south enter the Lake of Constance. The lakes of Wiirtemberg, with the exception of those in the Black Forest, all lie south of the Danube. The largest is the Federsee (640 acres) near Buchau. About one-fifth of the Lake of Constance is reckoned to belong to Wiirtem- berg. Mineral springs are abundant; the most famous spa is Wildbad, in the Black Forest.

The climate is temperate,—colder among the mountains Climate in the south than in the north. The mean temperature and varies. at different points from 43° to 50° F. The soil.

abundant forests induce much rain, most of which falls in summer. The soil is on the whole fertile and well- cultivated ; and for many centuries agriculture was almost the only resource of the inhabitants. Middle and Lower Swabia are the most fertile districts. The removal of burdens and restrictions in 1848 and 1849, and intelligent state-aid, combined with the formation of agricultural societies, have encouraged farming, but the practice of parcelling the land in minute patches among the members of the communities still retards progress. According to returns made in 1878, 45°2 per cent. of the land was under agriculture, 30°7 under forest, 19°4 in pasture, 1-2 in vineyards, and the remainder unproductive. Grain is produced in excess of the home demand.

The following table shows the average annual extent (in acres) Agricul-

of the chief crops in 1878-1880, and the value :—

Spelt….| 492,000 | £3,001, 410 || Barley..| 225,000 | £1,288,200 Oats…..| 334,400 | 1,475,470 || Potatoes| 194,900] 718,600 Rye…..| 96,800 493,475 || Beetroot) 49,242 340,200

Pease, maize, rape, hemp, flax, hops, and chicory are also pro- duced in considerable quantity ; tobaceo is grown in the valley of the Neckar. Wiirtemberg is very rich in fruit trecs of various kinds, and market-gardening flourishes near the larger towns and in the Remsthal. In 1880 there were 35,000 acres under veget- ables. The cultivation of the vine is a highly important industry in the valleys of the Neckar and some of the other streams. In the period 1827-1882 the average annual area under vines was 63,327 acres, yielding 5,701,454 gallons of wine, worth £411,700. The best year was 1835, when 22,303,006 gallons were produced, the worst was 1854, with 1,696,376 gallons. Among the best Wiirtemberg wines are those known as Rothenberger, Tiirkheimer, Lammler, Brodwasser, Kisberger, Elpinger, Schalksteiner, Weins- berger, Markelsheimer, Verrenberger, and Lindelberger. About one-third of the entire country is under forest, the greater propor- tion of which consist of deciduous trees (oaks, beeches, &c.). Coni- ferous trees are most numerous in the Black Forest, in Upper Swabia, and in the circle of Jagst. Most of the forests belong to the state or to public companics, and are carefully and skilfully managed. Large tracts in the Black Forest are in the hands of the " Schiffergesellschaft," a very ancient guild of timber merchants.

In 1883 Wiirtemberg contained 96,885 horses, 904,139 cattle, Live The breeding of stock.

550,104 sheep, 292,206 swine, and 54,876 goats.

Minerals.

Manu- factures.

Trade.

Commu- nication.

Popula- tion.

Wwwuk T's

horses commands a good deal of attention from Government, which maintains several stud-farms. Cattle, bred for export, are reared mainly in the Jagst and Danube divisions, sheep on and near the Alb.

Salt and iron are the only minerals of industrial importance found in Wirtemberg, and both are worked alinost entirely by Government. There are five Government salt-works (the chief of which are Friedrichshall and Wilhelmsgliick), employing together 425 hands. In 1879-80 970,084 tons of salt were produced, two- thirds by mining. The salt industry only began to be of import- ance at the beginning of the present century. The iron industry on the other hand is of great antiquity, though it is much hampered by the entire absence of coal mines in Wiirtemberg. The chief fuel used in smelting the iron is wood or charcoal. Iron is mined at Neuenbiirg, Freudenstetten, and, to a very limited extent, in the Black Forest. In 1877-80 15,546 tons of ore were raised by 110 miners, yielding about 33 per cent. of raw metal. Cement, gypsum, grindstones, millstones, building-stones, &c., are also found. The annual value of the minerals of all kinds raised in Wiirtemberg has been roughly estimated at about £350,000.

Until the close of the Napoleonic wars, Wiirtemberg was almost exclusively an agricultural and bucolic country ; but since that period it has turned its attention to trade and manufactures, and perhaps now stands second only to Saxony among the German states in commercial and industrial activity. The want of coal is naturally a serious drawback, but it is to a certain extent com- pensated by the abundant water-power. The textile industry is carried on in most of its branches. Wool, from both domestic and foreign sources, is woven at Esslingen, Goppingen, and other towns in Lower Swabia; cotton is manufactured in Goppingen and Esslingen, and linen in Upper Swabia. lLace-making also flourishes in the last-named district, as a rural house-industry. The silk industry of Wiirtemberg, which employs about 1100 hands, though not very extensive

in itself, is the most important silk industry in Germany. Ravensburg claims to have possessed the earliest paper-mill in Germany ; paper-making is still important in that town and at Heidenheim, Heilbronn, Goppingen, and other places in Lower Swabia. Government owns six iron foundries and puddling works, the most important of which is at Wasseralfingen, where over 1000 hands are employed. The locomotive engines of Esslingen enjoy a wide reputation; and agricultural and other machinery, boilers, and tools of various kinds are also manufactured and exported by various towns. The organs of Ludwigsburg are well known ; bell-founding is carried on at Stuttgart, Reutlingen, and Cannstatt; beetroot sugar and beer are considerable items in the list of annual produce ;—wine has been already mentioned. The manufacture of chemicals at Stuttgart, Heilbronn, &c., is important.

Trade has prospered since Wiirtemberg joined the North German Customs Union in 1834. The leading trading towns are Heilbronn, Stuttgart, Ulm, and Friedrichshafen. Cattle, horses, sheep, agricultural produce, timber, salt, and various manufactured goods are the chief exports; coal, hops, stcel goods of various kinds, eggs, and poultry are among the chief imports. The book- trade of Stuttgart is very extensive ; that town has been called the Leipsic of southern Germany.

In 1887 991 miles of railway were open for traffic in Wiirtemberg. With the insignificant exception of two private lines, togcther no more than 31 miles long, all the railways are in the hands of the state. The Neckar, the Schussen, and the Lake of Constance are all navigable for boats ; the Danube begins to be navigable at Ulm. The roads of Wiirtemberg are fairly good; the oldest are Roman. Wiirtemberg, like Bavaria, retained the control of its own postal and telegraph system on the foundation of the new German empire. In 1885 there were 1750 miles of telegraph wires in the kingdom.

In 1885 the population of Wiirtemberg was 1,995,168, or one twenty-third of the total population of Germany on one twenty- eighth of its area. The average per square mile is 264°9. The following table shows the distribution of the population among the administrative districts, and their religion. The Neckar divi- sion contains most large towns.

Area in | Inhabitants Roman

Division. Population.| Square | per Square ie is Catholics Miles, Mile. : in 1880,

Neckar…....| 639,470 1285 497 °6 562,700 53,026 Black Forest] 475,299 1843 257°8 351,144 | 119,750 Jagst Mr orsineite ar 405,034 1984 204°1 280,374 122,987 Danube …... 475,365 2419 196°5 170,362 | 294,527

The people of the north-west belong to the Alcmannic stock, those of the north-east to the Franconian, and those of the centre and south to the Swabian. According to the occupation census of 1882, the following were the numbers of those (including their families and dependants) engaged in the various departments of work :—in agriculture, forestry, &c., 942,924; in mining and industrial pursuits, 674,081 ; in trade and commerce, 143,258 ; in

MBERG 701

domestic and other servicc, 11,254; in professions, 95,712 ; 'no returns," 90,240. In 1886 there were 3717 emigrants; in 1881 there were 11,470.

In 1885 there were 15 towns with more than 10,000 inhabitants, viz., Stuttgart (125,906), Ulm (33,610), Heilbronn (27,758), Ess- lingen (20,864), Cannstatt or Canstatt (18,031), Reutlingen (17,319), Ludwigsburg (16,201), Gmiind (15,321), Tiibingen (12,551), Gop- pingen (12,102), and Ravensburg (11,482).

About two-thirds of the population are Protestant. In 1880, when the total population was 1,971,118, there were 1,364,580 Protestants, 590,290 Roman Catholics, 13,331 Jews, 2817 of other Christian sects, and 98 "others."" The Protestant church is con- trolled (under the minister of religion and education) by a consis- tory and a synod,—the latter being made up of the consistory and six general superintendents or " prelates'"' from six principal towns. But no laws are made or altered without the consent of a repre- sentative council, including both lay and clerical members. The Roman Catholie church is subject to the bishop of Rottenburg, in the archdiocese of Freiburg. Politically it is under a

Roman Catholic council, appointed by Government. The Jews also since 1828 have been subject to a state-appointed council.

Wiirtemberg is one of the best educated countries of Europe. Educa- School attendance is compulsory on children from seven to fourteen tion.

years of age, and young people from fourteen to eightecn must either attend the schools on Sunday or some other educational establishinent. Every community of at least 30 families must have aschool. The different churches attend to the schools of their own confession. There is a university at Tiibingen, and a polytechnic school at Stuttgart. Technical schools of various kinds are estab- lished in many of the towns, in addition to a thorough equipment of gymnasia, commercial schools, seminaries, &c. The conservatory of music at Stuttgart enjoys a high reputation.

Wiirtemberg is a constitutional monarchy and a member of the Consti- German empire, with 4 votes in the federal council and 17 in the tution.

imperial diet. The constitution rests on a law of 1819, amended in 1868 and 1874. The crown is hereditary, and conveys the simple title of king of Wiirtemberg. The king receives a civil list of £90,670, and the "apanages" of the crown amount to £14,900 more. The legislature is bi-cameral. The upper chamber (Standesherren) is composed of adult princes of the blood, heads of noble families from the rank of count (Graf) upwards, representa- tives of territories (Standesherrschaften) which possessed votes in the old German diet, and of life members nominated by the king. The number of this last class must not exceed one-third of the house. The lower house (Abgeordneten-Haus) has 98 members, viz., 13 noble landowners, elected by their peers (Ritterschaft), the 6 Protestant " prelates," the Roman Catholic bishop, and 2 other official Roman Catholic members, the chancellor of the university of Tubingen, 7 representatives from the chief towns, and 68 repre- sentatives from country districts. The king appoints the president of the upper chamber ; since 1874 the lower chamber has elected its own chairman. Membcrs are elected for six years by ballot ; the suffrage is enjoyed by all male citizens. With the exception of the royal princes and the life-members of the upper

house that reside in Stuttgart, the members of both houses receive a daily payment of 9m. 41pf. (9s. 5d.) each. eee

The highest executive is in the hands of a ministry of state (Staatsministerium), consisting of six ministers and the privy coun- cil, the members of which are nominated by the king. There are ministers of justice, war, finance, home affairs, religion and edu- cation, and foreign affairs, railways, and the royal household. The legal system is framed in imitation of that of the German empire. The judges of the supreme court for impeachments of ministers, &c., named the Staatsgerichtshof, are partly elected by the chambers and partly appointed by the king. The country is divided into four administrative "circles," subdivided into 64 " Oberamter," each of which is under an "Oberamtmann," assisted by an " Amtsver- sammlung" or local council. At the head of each of the four large divisions is a " Regierung."

The official finance period of Wiirtemberg embraces two years. Finance.

For 1885-87 the budget showed an annual income of £2,811,921, balanced by the expenditure, which included a payment of £2500 to a reserve fund. The chief sources of income were taxes (£1,392,893, including £691,773 of direct taxes), and public domains and monopolies (£1,095,336, including £662,385 from railways and £72,741 from post and telegraphs). The chief expenditure was on the interest (£875,525) and sinking fund (£122,873) of the public debt. This debt amounted in 1887 to £21, 202,570, of which by far the greater proportion (£18, 966,700) was incurred for constructing and buying railways. Most of it bears interest at 4 per cent.

In terms of the convention of 1870 the troops of Wiirtemberg Army.

form the 13th army corps in the imperial German army. They include 8 regiments of infantry, 4 of cavalry, and 2 of field artillery, &c. By the army law of March 11, 1887, the peace strength of the army was fixed at 773 officers, 18,815 men, and 64 cannon, The town of Ulm is one of the strongest fortresses in Germany.

History.

The earliest known inhabitants of the country now called Wiir- temberg seem to have been Suevi. The Romans, who appeared first about 15 B.c., added the south part of the land to the province of Gaul in 84 A.D., and defended their positions there by a wall or rainpart, drove the Romans beyond the Rhine and the Danube ; but they in their turn were conquered by the Franks under Clovis (496), and the land was divided between Rhenish Franconia and the duchy of Alemannia. The latter, however, disappears about 760, and its territories were administered for the Frankish monarchs by " grafs" or counts, until they were finally absorbed in the duchy of Swabia. The last duke of Swabia dicd in 1268, and a large share of his power and possessions fell into the hands of the "grafs" of Wiir- temberg, whose ancestral castle crowned a hill between Esslingen and Cannstatt. Tradition mentions a Conradus de Wirtembere in 1090, but the earliest authentic count seems to have been Ulrich (1241-1265), who had large possessions in the valleys of the Neckar and the Rems. The power of this family grew steadily under suc- cessive counts ; and in 1482 their possessions were declared indi- visible. This early adoption of the principle of primogeniture saved Wiirtemberg from the wasting effects of those family feuds and jealousies which interfered so seriously with the development of some of the other German states. Eberhard V., surnamed "im Bart " (1482-1496), was one of the most energetie and illustrious rulers that Wiirtemberg ever had, and in 1495 his possessions were raised by the emperor to the dignity of an immediate imperial duchy. The reign of Ulrich I. (1498-1550), who succeeded to the duchy while still a child, was a most eventful period for the country, and many stories and traditions cluster round the name of this gifted and vigorous but unscrupulous aud ambitious man. The extortions by which he sought to raise money for his extrava- gant pleasures excitcd a rising known as the "arme Konrad " (poor Conrad)—not unlike ithe rising of Wat Tyler in England ; and by the treaty of Tubingen in 1514 his people undertook to pay his debts in exchange for various political privileges, which in effect laid the foundation of the constitutional liberties of the country. A few years later, however, Ulrich quarrelled with the Swabian league of imperial towns, and their army headed by the duke of Bavaria, who was incensed by Ulrich's ill-treatment of his wife, a Bavarian

princess, invaded Wiirtemberg, expelled the duke, and in 1520 sold the duchy to Austria for 220,000 florins, Ulrich, however, found his opportunity in the discontent caused in Wir- temberg by the military and religious oppression of Austria, and in the disturbed state of the empire during the Peasants' War, and the commotions excited by the Reformation. Aided by Philip of Hesse and other Protestant princes, he fought a victorious battle at Lauffen in 1534 ; and by the treaty of Kadan he was recognized once more as duke, though forced to acknowledge his duchy a fief of Austria. One of his first acts was to introduce the Reformation, and to endow Protestant churches and schools throughout his land. His connexion with the Schmalkaldian League once more cost hima temporary expulsion from his throne, but Charles V. reinstated him in 1547, though under severe conditions. Ulrich's son Christopher (1550-1568) introduced systems of law and church government (Grosse Kirchenordnung) which have endured in part to the present day. The establishment in this reign of a kind of stand- Ing committee to superintend the finances was the beginning of popular representation in the government, though its members belonged exclusively, of course, to the higher ranks. Frederick I. (1593-1608), an energetic and ambitious prince, induced the em- peror Rudolph II. in 1599 to raise the duchy once more to the dignity of an immediate fief of the empire. In the reign of his successor, Johu Frederick (1608-1628), Wiirtemberg — suffered severely from the Thirty Years' War, though the duke took no active share in that struggle. His son and successor, however, Eberhard IIT. (1628-1674), eagerly joined in it, but with disastrous effects. Wiirtemberg was occupied by imperial troops, the duke was driven into exile, and when the peace of Westphalia once more reinstated him he found but 50,000 subjects where he had left 400,000. In the reign of Eberhard IV. (1677-1733), who was but one year old when his father William died, Wiirtemberg made acquaintance with another destructive enemy. In 1688, 1692, 1703, and 1707 the French entered the country with fire and sword, annihilating whole villages in their ruthless brutality, and leaving deserts in their track. The depopulated country eagerly afforded a welcome and a home to the Waldensians, who had been driven from their valleys by the duke of Savoy in 1699. Charles Alexander, who became duke in 1738, had embraced the Roman Catholic faith when an officer in the Austrian service, while his favourite minister was the unscrupulous Jew Siiss

Oppenheimer, The duke, instigated by his minister, was believed to aim at the suppression of the diet, and at the introduction of the Romish faith, but Charles's sudden death in 1737 put an abrupt end to these plans. Siiss Oppenheimer was hanged by the regent, before the next duke, Charles Eugene (1737-1798) came of age in 1744, The prince was gifted but vicious, and he soon fell into the hands of unworthy favourites. His whole reign was disturbed by dis-

About the beginning of the 3d century the Alemanni.

we RAW a et

sensions betwixt the ruler and the ruled, in which the intervention of foreign powers (Prussia and England) was invoked, though in vain, by the unhappy people. Alarmed by the gathering discontent, Charles made a few concessions in his old age. Frederick Eugene (1795-1797), a brother of Charles Eugene, had been brought wp at the court of Frederick the Great, whose niece he married. His children were, through this influence, educated as Protestants, and the royal faniily of Wiirtemberg have been Protestants since his death.

Frederick II. (1797-1816) resembled the first of his name in becoming embroiled with the diet. He declared war against France in defiance of the wishes of his people, and when the French in- vaded the country he retired to Erlangen, till after the peace of Lunéville (1801). By a private treaty at the same date, he cx- changed Montbéliard (which had belonged to Wiirtemberg since 1418) and his Alsatian possessions for nine imperial towns and other territories, amounting in all to 850 square miles, with 124,000 inhabitants. He accepted also the title of elector from Napoleon. The newly acquired districts were not incorporated with his former possessions, but reniained separate under the name " New Wiirtem-berg." The new district had no diet. This was the first of a series of transactions with the national enemy, which swelled Frederick's territory, though they added but little to his credit, In 1805 Wiirtemberg took up arms on the side of France, and the elector was rewarded at the peace of Pressburg by various Austrian possessions in Swabia, and the title of king. On January 1, 1806, Frederick assumed the royal style, abrogated the constitution, and united old and new Wiirtemberg. He subsequently

united church and state, and proclaimed religious equality. In 1806 King Frederick I. joined the Confederation of the Rhine, and received fresh territories, with 160,000 inhabitants ; and the peace of Vienna brought 110,000 new subjects under his sceptre. But he had to perform his part of the bargain by joining Napoleon in his cam- paigns against Prussia, Austria, and Russia. Of 16,000 Wiirtem- bergers who marched to Moscow, only a few hundred returned, When fortune turned, Frederick with ready adroitness changed sides, and managed to preserve his royal title and most of his new- won lands by joining the allies immediately after the battle of Leipsic.

Wiirtemberg had been promised a constitution by Frederick before he died in 1816, but a good deal of discussion took place before it was granted in 1819 by William I. (1816-1864). A period of quiet now sct in, and the educational condition of the kingdom, its agriculture, and its trade and manufactures began to receive earnest attention. The desire for political freedom had by no means been satisfied by the constitution of 1819, and a "liberal opposition "' began to make itself felt about 1830. The agitation of 1848 did not leave Wiirtemberg undisturbed, though no scenes of actual violence took place in the kingdom. The conservative ministry granted freedom of the press and -other privileges, too late, however, to avert their fall. The king was compelled to call the liberals to power in March 1848, and a new liberal constitution was granted. But as soon as the stress was over the " March ministry " was dismissed, and the reactionary party were again in the ascendant. By a high-handed interference with recently granted popular rights on the part of the king and his ministers a servile diet was assembled in 1851, which yielded up without hesitation all that had been gained since 1848. The constitution of 1819 was reinstituted, and it has remained, with only a few modifications, ever since. In 1864 Charles ascended the throne. In the duel between Prussia and Austria for supremacy in Germany, the sympathies of the rulers of Wurtemberg were always on the side of the latter, although the country entered the Customs Union under Prussia's protection in 1864. In 1866 Wiirtemberg took up arms on behalf of Austria ; but the Wiirtemberg troops were defeated at Tauberbischofsheim, three wecks after Sadowa, and its ministers sued for peace. Prussia exacted an indemnity of 8 million florins, and Wiirtemberg

struck a secret offensive and defensive treaty with its conqueror. In 1870 this kingdom shared in the national enthusiasm which swept over Germany when France declared war ; and its troops had a creditable share in the memorable campaign of 1870-71. Since the foundation of the present German empire, the separate history of Wiirtemberg has been of almost exclusively local interest. The tendency of legislation has been, ou the whole, liberal.

A very full and minute description of Wiirtemberg, together with eopious lists of authorities on all subjeets conneeted with it, will be found in Das Kénig- reich Wurttemberg, Stuttgart, 1882 sq, offieially published by the Konigliches Statistiseh-Topographisehes Bureau. (F. MU.)

WURTZ, Cuartes ApotpHe (1817-1884), chemist, was born at Strasburg on November 26, 1817. His father, Jean Jacques Wurtz, was then Lutheran pastor at the small village of Wolfisheim near Strasburg. His mother, Sophie Kreiss, was the sister of Theodore Kreiss, professor of Greek at the Protestant gymnasium of Strasburg, and of Adolphe Kreiss, a Lutheran pastor. When Wurtz was

nine years old his father was translated to the church of St Pierre le Jeune in Strasburg, and died there in 1845. Madame Wurtz, after the death of her husband, remained at Strasburg with her brother Theodore, and after his death lived with her son Adolphe in Paris till her own death in 1878.

Wurtz was educated first at Wolfisheim and afterwards at the Protestant gymnasium of Strasburg. There he obtained several prizes, but seems rather to have disap- pointed his father, who said he would never turn out any- thing extraordinary. He took special interest in those studies which bore upon nature ; in 1828 he took part ina botanical class with excursions, which developed his taste for natural science.

His education owed more perhaps to his home circle than to the school. His learned and pious father, his more generally cultured uncles, and the circle of friends attracted by them opened to him a wide view of what

there is for a man to know. His holidays were mostly spent at the house of a grand-aunt at Rothau, where he learned to know the hills and woods of Alsace, and amused himself in the spinning, weaving, bleaching, and _print- ing works in the neighbourhood. In 1834 he left the gymnasium with the degree of bachelier-és-lettres. His father seems to have wished him to devote himself to the church. But he had already made his choice. For some time he had fitted up a sort of laboratory in the washing- house, and had there repeated the experiments he had seen performed in the class-rooms of the gymnasium. His father took no interest in science, but consented to his study of medicine as next best to theology. He went through his studies conscientiously, and passed all his examinations with credit, but of course devoted himself specially to the chemical side of his profession. In 1839 he was appointed superintendent of practical chemistry in the faculty of medicine under Professor Cailliot. He graduated as M.D. 13th August 1843, the title of his thesis being "On Albumin and Fibrin." He then went for a year to Giessen, to study under Liebig. There he made the acquaintance of Hofmann, Strecker, and Kopp. On leaving Giessen he went to Paris, where he worked in Dumas's private laboratory, and in 1845 was appointed assistant to Dumas in the Ecole de Médecine. In 1847, on his presentation of a thesis "On Pyrogenic Bodies," he was appointed 'professor agerégé," and in 1849 he gave the lectures on organic chemistry in place of Dumas. His laboratory in the Ecole Pratique dela Faculté de Médecine was very inconvenient and ill fitted up; he therefore, in 1850, along with Dollfus and Verdeil, who had just re- turned to Paris from Giessen, opened a private laboratory in the Rue Garanciére. The adventure was successful in a scientific sense as long as it lasted ; but unfortunately the three chemists had neglected to secure fixity of tenure, the house was sold, and they had to retire and sell their furnishings. The same year Wurtz was appointed pro- fessor of chemistry in the Institut Agronomique, then founded at Versailles. But here also the want of fixity was felt. Louis Napoleon abolished the Institut in 1859. In 1853 Dumas resigned the chair of organic chemistry in the faculty of medicine ; at the same time the chair of mineral chemistry and toxicology became vacant by the death of Orfila; the two chairs were united, and Wurtz was appointed to the post thus constituted. In 1866 he was made dean of the faculty of medicine, and used his influence for the rearrangement and reconstruction of the

buildings devoted to scientific teaching. In 1874 he persuaded the Government to found a chair of organic chemistry at the Sorbonne, and resigned his office of dean, retaining the title of honorary dean. At the Sorbonne he had a smaller but better prepared audience than at the

Ecole de Médecine. But he had great difficulty in per- suading the Government to build him a suitable laboratory, and indeed did not live to see the new laboratory opened. He was appointed senator in 1881. He was one of the founders of the Chemical Society of Paris, of which he was the first secretary, and was three times president. He was elected member of the Academy of Sciences in 1867, in succession to Pelouze. He was vice-president in 1880 and president in the following year. He died, after a short illness, May 12, 1884. Wurtz was an honorary member of nearly every scientific society in Europe. In 1878 he gave the Faraday lecture of the Chemical Society of London, and in 1881 was awarded the Copley medal by the Royal Society of London. Through life he remained warmly attached to the church of his fathers, and took a practical interest in its affairs.

Wurtz's work is chiefly to be found in the Annales de Chimie et de Physique, in the Comptes Rendus, and in the Bulletin de la Société Chimique. The following is a short outline of his most important discoveries. First, with respect to the constitution of hypophosphorous and phosphorous acids, he showed that the salts of these acids all contain the elements of water, and proposed formule for them, in which the salt radical is represented as containing hydrogen. These formule, translated, of course, into the modern language, which Wurtz did so much to introduce, are still used as the best representations of the constitution of these salts, In the course of this investigation he discovered the curious and interest- ing compound cuprous hydride. He also discovered sulphophos- phoric acid and the oxychloride of phosphorus. His next great work was on cyanuric acid. He discovered the eyanic ethers (R-N=C=0), and from them obtained the mono-alkyl ureas. From the cyanic ethers he produced a class of substances which opened the way into a new field of organic chemistry. On treat- ing these ethers with caustic potash

he obtained potassium carbon- ate and an ammoniacal vapour. These vapours he soon recognized as ammonia, in which an equivalent of hydrogen had been replaced by methylium, CHg, or ethylium, C.H;. By acting on the cyanic ethers with his new bases he obtained the dialkyl ureas. In 1855 he reviewed the various substances that had been obtained from glycerin, and came to the conclusion that glycerin is a body of alcoholic nature formed on the type of three molecules of water, as common alcohol is on that of one. This speculation led him in 1856 to the discovery of the glycols, alcoholic bodies similarly related to the type of two molecules of water. This discovery he worked out very thoroughly, in investigations on oxide of cthylene and the polyethylenic alcohols. The oxidation of the glycols led him to homologues of lactic acid, and to a discussion of the constitution of the latter. On this question a controversy arose with Kolbe, in the course of which many important facts were discovered, and valuable additions were made to chemical theory. In 1867 Wurtz obtained neurine synthetically, by the action of trimethylamine on glycol-chlorhydrine. In 1873 he discovered aldol, CH;-CH(OH)-CH,-CHO, and pointed out its double character as at once an alcohol and an aldehyde.

His investigations on the olcfines had led him to the discovery of the peculiar behaviour of the substance called by him chlor- hydrate of amylene and of its analogues, when the temperature of their vapour is raised. The gradual passage from a gas of approxi- mately normal vapour density to one of half the normal density was used by him as a powerful argument in favour of the opinion that abnormal vapour densitics, such as those of sal-ammoniac and pentachloride of phosphorus, are to be explained by dissociation. By experiments at low temperatures and pressures he obtained nearly the normal density in the case of the pentachloride of phosphorus, and showed how the dissociation depends on thie temperature and pressure. He took an active part in the discus- sion as to the dissociation of the vapour of hydrate of chloral, in which H. Sainte-Claire Deville and M. Berthelot were his chief opponents. By well-chosen experiments he brought to light the facts involved, and stated the case for dissociation in a very clear and to most minds very convincing way.

Wurtz for twenty years, from 1852 to 1872, published in the Annales de Chimie'et de Physique abstracts of chemical work done out of France. In 1868 he began, with the assistance of many French chemists, the publication of the Dietionnaire de Chimie Pure et Appliquée. This great work, many important articles in which were written by himself, was finished in 1878. (Two volumes of appendix have since been added.) In 1864 he published a book in two volumes entitled Chimie Médieale, and in 1867 Lecons Elémen- tatres de Chimie Moderne, an excellent little text-book which has gone through five editions in French, and has been translated into English by Prof. Greene. In 1879 appeared his Théorie Atomique, and in 1885 Traité de Chimie Biologique. This was his last work .

he corrected the last proof-shcets himself, and the last part of the book was published a few weeks after his death.

A full account of the life and work of Wurtz, with a list of his published books and papers, will be found in the obituary notice by M. Friedel in the Bulletin de la Société Chimique, vol. xliii., i.Ixxx., 1885. (A. C. B.)

WURZBURG, or Wirzzerc, the fourth largest town

in Bavaria, and the chief town of the district of Lower Franconia in the north-west of that kingdom, is situated on both sides of the Main, 60 miles south-east of Frank- fort. An ancient stone bridge (1474-1607), 650 feet long, and adorned with statues of saints, connects the two parts of the town. Wiirzburg is quaintly and irregularly built; many of the houses are interesting specimens of medizval antiquity; and the numerous old churches recall the fact that it was long the capital of an ecclesiastical principality. The principal church is the imposing Romanesque cathedral, a basilica with transepts, begun in 1042 and consecrated in 1189. The four towers, however, date from 1240, the (rococo) fagade from 1711-19, and the dome from 1731. The spacious transepts terminate inapses. The beautiful Marienkapelle, a Gothic edifice of 1377-1441, was restored in 1856; it is embellished with fourteen statues by Tilman Riemenschneider, who died at Wiirzburg in 1531. The Stifthaug church, with two towers and

a lofty dome, was built in the Italian Renaissance style in 1670-91. The bones of St Kilian, patron saint of Wiirzburg, are preserved in the Neumiinster church, which dates from the 11th century ; Walther von der Vogelweide is buried in the adjoining cloisters. The church of St Burkard is externally one of the best pre- served architectural monuments in the city. It was built in 1033-42, in the Romanesque style, and was restored in 1168. The Late Gothic choir dates from 1494-97. The Neubaukirche, or university church, curiously unites a Gothic exterior with a Classical interior. The Protestant church of St Stephen (1782-89) originally belonged to a Benedictine abbey. Of the secular buildings in Wiirzburg the most conspicuous is the royal (formerly episcopal) palace, a huge and magnificent edifice built in 1720-44 in imitation of Versailles. The Julius hospital, a large and richly endowed institution affording food and lodging to 600 persons daily, was founded in 1576 by Bishop Julius Kichter von Mespelbrunn. The quaint town-house dates in part from 1456. Among the other chief buildings are the Government offices, the theatre, the Maxschule, the observatory, and the various university buildings. A university was founded at Wiirzburg in 1403, but only existed for a few years. The present university was founded by Bishop Julius in 1582. Owing to its con- nexion with the large hospital, its laboratories, and its rich anatomical collections, the medical faculty speedily became famous, and has remained the most important faculty at Wurzburg ever since. The university library contains 200,000 volumes, and there are numerous scientific insti- tutes connected with the main institution. In 1886 it was attended by 800 students (600 medical), and had a teach- ing staff of 70 professors and lecturers. The other edu- cational establishments of Wiirzburg are numerous; among them is a music institute, which gives instruction gratis in vocal and instrumental music.

Wiirzburg is surrounded by vineyards, which yield some of the best wines in Germany; it also carries on the manufacture of beer, leather, tobacco, and railway car- riages. The environs are highly picturesque as well as fertile ; the most interesting point is the Leistenburg, on which stands the fortress of Marienburg, the resi- dence of the bishops until 1720. This position was occupied by a Roman fort, and seems to have been fortified by Bishop Conrad, who died in 1203. The population of Wiirzburg in 1885 was 55,100, of whom 9000 were Protestants.

Wiirzburg is one of the most ancient and interesting towns of Germany, and as the capital of an immediate episcopal principality long played an important part in the history of the empire. The first bishop was Burkard, consecrated in 741, though the town seems to have existed in the previous century. The bishops soon acquired a considerable share of temporal power, and in the 15th ecntury enjoyed the title of dukes of East Franconia. The citizens of Wiirzburg espoused the cause of Henry IV. against their bishop, and in 1086 the town was twice taken by the contending armies. Various imperial diets were held in Wiirzburg, the chief being those of 1180, when Henry the Lion was placed under the ban, and of 1209, when Otto IV. was betrothed. In 1525 the rebellions peasants under Gotz von Berlichingen took the town, but were repnised from the Marienburg, and were defeated with great slaughter by the Swabian forces. The bishopric, which at one time embraced an area of 190 square miles, with 250,000 inhabitants, was secularized at the peace of Lunéville, and passed to Bavaria in 1803. The peace of Pressburg (1805) transferred it, under the name of an electorate, to the grand-duke of Tuscany, who joined the Confedera- tion of the Rhine, assuming the title grand-duke of Wiirzburg. The congress of Vienna restored it to Bavaria. Archduke Charles defeated Marshal Jourdan near Wiirzburg in 1796; and in 1866 the bombarding of the citadel was the last warlike act of the Prussian army of the Main. The Wiirzburg conference is the name given to the mceting of the representatives of the smaller German states in November 1859 to devise some means of mutual support in the imperial dict. Wircebirgunv is the old Latin form of the name of the town; Herbipolis (herb-town; Wurz is the German for root or herb) appears in the 12th century.

WYANDOTTE, formerly a city and the county seat of Wyandotte county, Kansas, United States, had in 1886 a population of 13,840. In that year Armourdale (2634) and Kansas City, Kansas (4755), were consolidated with Wyandotte under the name of Kansas City, Kansas. The city is situated upon the west bank of the Missouri river and north bank of the Kansas river, in eastern Kansas, immediately adjoining the State line, and separated by it from Kansas City, Missouri. The surrounding country is a

fertile and highly cultivated prairie. The city is intersected by several railroads, most of which are branches of the Missouri Pacific system. It is rather irregularly laid out, being an aggregation of independent settlements, and its municipal improvements are in a formative stage. The population in 1886 was 21,229 (about 16 per cent. of foreign birth and 20 per cent. coloured). Kansas City is the third in the State in point of population.

WYAT, Sm Tuomas (1503-1542), is an important figure historically in English literature, although his poetry does not rank very high in intrinsic value. He was undoubtedly the leader, the first in point of time, and the acknowledged master of "the company of courtly makers" who in the reign of Henry VIIL, under Italian influence, transformed the character of English poetry. SurRReEy (q.v.) is usually associated with Wvyat in this leadership, and his influence was probably greater, as his verse was superior in fluency, dexterity, and force. But the priority, the actual lead, undoubtedly belongs to Wyat, who was Surrey's senior by fourteen years, and was celebrated by the younger poet with all the homage of an enthusiastic disciple. That there should ever have been any doubt upon the point arises from the fact that their poems were not printed till several years after both were dead, that they were then printed together in the same collection (Tottel's Miscellany, 1557), and that Surrey's name was placed first on the title-page by the publisher, while his poems preceded Wyat's in the Miscellany. It is to Wyat that the praise rightfully belongs of being the first writer of sonnets in English. He is also our first writer of satires in the classical form. Apart from the question of their services as pioneers of new metres and a new vein of love sentiment, there is a wide difference in character between Surrey and Wyat. Their poetry strongly cor- roborates the evidence of their portraits by Holbein. Wyat is much less bright and radiant, of a grave, sedate cast, with a vein of humorous melancholy and _ satiric

observation. It is not known for certain that Wyat ever travelled in Italy, but the probability that he did so is strong. Wyat's father, Sir Henry, the owner of Allington castle in Kent, was a prominent figure at the court of

Henry VII., and a residence at one of the Italian courts was then a usual part of the education of a young man of rank. Wyat was born in 1503, and we have no record of him between his taking his bachelor's degree at Cambridge at the age of fifteen and his being sworn a member of the privy council at the age of thirty, except that he took part in the tournament at a great feast held by the king at Greenwich in 1525. He was knighted in 1536, and twice sent as ambassador to the emperor, a strong proof of his repute as a statesman and diplomatist. He died in 1542, in the course of a hurried journey to Falmouth to meet and convoy an ambassador from the emperor. Wyat is commonly known as Sir Thomas Wyat the elder, to distinguish him from his son of the same name, who headed an insurrection against Mary in 1554, and paid the penalty of failure.

WYATT, Jamzs (1743-1813), a popular architect, born in Staffordshire in 1743, who lived at a time when architec- tural taste was at its lowest ebb. He spent some time in Rome making measured drawings of the classical remains, and on his return to England became one of the most successful architects of his time, and eventually was elected president of the Royal Academy. On the death of Sir William Chambers in 1796, Wyatt was appointed surveyor to the Board of Works. His chief works were a number of buildings at Kew for George IIL, all in the worst taste, and Fonthill Abbey for the rich and eccentric Mr Beckford, author of Vathek. This enormous and costly mansion, a sort of theatrical parody of a Gothic abbey, was erected in an incredibly short space of time by relays of workmen labouring day and night. The massive and lofty tower collapsed soon after it was finished, and a great part of this extravagant architectural freak has since been pulled down. James Wyatt was killed by a fall from his carriage in 1813.

WYCHERLEY, Witttam (c. 1640-1715), the typical "Restoration dramatist," and one of the greatest masters of the comedy of repartee, was born about 1640 at Clive, near Shrewsbury, where for several generations his family had been settled on a moderate estate of about £600 a year. Like Vanbrugh, Wycherley spent his early years in France, whither, at the age of fifteen, he was sent to be educated in the very heart of the "precious" circle who disported on the banks of the Charente.

Wycherley's friend, Major Pack, tells us that his hero "improved, with the greatest refinements," the "extraordinary talents" for which he was 'obliged to nature." Although the harmless affecta- tions of the Rambouillets and Montausiers, among whom he was thrown, are certainly not chargeable with the "refinements" of Wycherley's comedies —comedies which caused even his great admirer Voltaire to say afterwards of them, "Il semble que les Anglais prennent trop de liberté et que les Frangaises n'en prennent pas assez "— these same affectations seem to have been much more potent in regard to the "refinements" of Wycherley's religion.

Wycherley, though a man of far more intellectual power than is generally supposed, was a fine gentleman first, a responsible being afterwards. Hence under the mani- pulations of the heroine of the "Garland" he turned from the Protestantism of his fathers to Romanism—turned at once, and with the same easy alacrity as afterwards, at Oxford, he turned back to Protestantism under the mani- pulations of such an accomplished master in the art of turning as Bishop Barlow. And if, as Macaulay hints, Wycherley's turning back to Romanism once more had something to do with the patronage and unwonted

liberality of James IL, this merely proves that the deity he worshipped was the deity of the "polite world" of his time—gentility. Moreover, as a professional fine gentle- man, at a period when, as the genial Major Pack says, "the amours of Britain would furnish as diverting memoirs, if well related, as those of France published by Rabutin, or those of Nero's court writ by Petronius," Wycherley was obliged to be a loose liver. But, for all that, Wycherley's sobriquet of "Manly Wycherley" seems to have been fairly earned by him, earned by that frank and straightforward way of confronting life which, according to Pope and Swift, charac- terized also his brilliant successor Vanbrugh.

That effort of Wycherley's to bring to Buckingham's notice the case of Samuel Butler (so shamefully neglected by the court Butler had served) shows that the writer of even such heartless plays as The Country Wife may be familiar with generous impulses, while his uncompromising lines

in defence of Buckingham, when the duke in his turn fell into trouble, show that the inventor of so shameless a fraud as that which forms the pivot of The Plain Dealer may in actual life possess that passion for fairplay which is believed to be a specially English quality. But amoug the 'ninety-nine " religions with which Voltaire accredited England there is one whose permanency has never been shaken—the worship of gentility. To this Wycherley remained as faithful to the day of his death as Congreve himself. And, if his relations to that "other world beyond this," which the Puritans had adopted, were liable to change with his environments, it was because that "other world" was really out of fashion altogether.

Wycherley's university career seems also to have been influenced by the same causes. Although Puritanism had certainly not contaminated the universities, yet English "quality and politeness" (to use Major Pack's words) have always, since the great rebellion, been rather ashamed of possessing too much learning. As a fellow-commoner of Queen's College, Oxford, Wycherley only lived (according to Wood) in the provost's lodgings, being entered in the public library under the title of "Philosophize Studiosus" in July 1660. And he does not seem to have matriculated or to have taken a degree.

Nor when, on quitting Oxford, he entered himself of the Middle Temple, did he give any more attention to the dry study of the law than was proper to one so warmly caressed "by the persons most eminent for their quality or politeness." Pleasure and the stage were alone open to him, and in 1672 was produced, at the Theatre Royal, Love in a Wood. With regard to this comedy W ycherley told Pope—told him "over and over" till Pope believed him—believed him, at least, until they quarrelled about Wycherley's verses—that he wrote it the year before he went to Oxford. But we need not believe him: the worst witness against a man is mostly himself. To pose as the wicked boy of genius has been the foolish ambition of many writers, but on inquiry it will generally be found that these inkhorn Lotharios are not nearly so wicked as they would have us believe. When Wycherley charges himself with having written, as a boy of nineteen, scenes so callous and so depraved that even Barbara Palmer's appetite for pro- fligacy was, if not satisfied, appeased, there is, we repeat,

no need to believe him. Indeed, there is every reason to disbelieve him, — not for the reasons advanced by Macaulay, however, who in challenging Wycherley's date does not go nearly deep enough. Macaulay points to the allusions in the play to gentlemen's periwigs, to guineas, to the vests which Charles ordered to be worn at court, to the great fire, &c., as showing that the comedy could not have been written the year before the author went to Oxford. We must remember, however, that even if the play had been written in that year, and delayed in its production

till 1672, it is exactly this kind of allusion to recent |

events which any dramatist with an eye to fresliness of colour would be certain to weave into his dialogue. It is

not that 'the whole air and spirit of the piece belong to.)

a period subsequent to that mentioned by Wycherley," but that "' the whole air and spirit of the piece" belong to a man,—an experienced and hardened young man of the world,—and not to a boy who would fain pose as an experienced and hardened young man of the world. The real defence of Wycherley against his foolish impeachment of himself is this, that Love in a Wood, howsoever inferior in structure and in all the artistic economies to The Country Wife and The Plain Dealer, contains scenes which no inexperienced boy could have written—scenes which, not for moral hardness merely, but often for real dramatic ripeness, are almost the strongest to be found amongst his four plays. With regard to dramatic ripeness, indeed, if we were asked to indicate the finest touch in all Wycherley, we should very likely select a speech in the third scene of the third act of this very play, where the vain, foolish, and boastful rake Dapperwit, having taken his friend to see his mistress for the express purpose of advertising his lordship over her, is coolly denied by her and insolently repulsed. 'I think,"says Dapperwit, " women take incon- stancy from me worse than from any man breathing."

Now, does the subsequent development of Wycherley's dramatic genius lead us to believe that, at nineteen, he could have given this touch, worthy of the hand that drew Malvolio? Is there anything in his two masterpieces — The Country Wife or The Plain Dealer—that makes it credible that Wycherley, the boy, could have thus delineated by a single quiet touch vanity as a chain-armour which no shaft can pierce—vanity, that is to say, in its perfect development? However, Macaulay (forgetting that, among the myriad vanities of the writing fraternity, this of pre- tending to an early development of intellectual powers that ought not to be, even if they could be, developed early is at once the most comic and the most common) is rather too severe upon Wycherley's disingenuousness in regard to the dates of his plays. That the writer of a play far more daring than Etheredge's She Would if She Could—and far more brilliant too—should at once become the talk of Charles's court was inevitable ; equally inevitable was it that the author of the song at the end of the first act, in praise of harlots and their offspring, should touch to its depths the soul of the duchess of Cleveland. Possibly Wycherley intended this famous song as a glorification of Her Grace and her profession, for he seems to have been more delighted than surprised when, as he passed in his coach through Pall Mall, he heard the duchess address him from her coach window as a "rascal," a " villain," and as a son of the very kind of lady his song had lauded. For his answer was perfect in its readiness: '" Madam, you have been pleased to bestow a title on me which belongs only to the fortunate." Perceiving that Her Grace received the compliment in the spirit in which it was meant, he lost no time in calling upon her, and was from that moment the recipient of those "favours" to which he alludes with pride in the dedication of the play to her. Voltaire's story (in his Letters on the English Nation) that Her Grace used to go to Wycherley's chambers in the Temple disguised as a country wench, in a straw hat, with pattens on and a basket in her hand, may be apocryphal, —very likely it is,—for disguise was quite superfiuous in the case of the mistress of Charles If. and Jacob Hall,— but it at least shows how general was the opinion that, under such patronage as this, Wycherley's fortune as poet and dramatist, "eminent for his quality and politeness," was now niade,

Charles, who had determined to bring up his son, the

wYcHt k i & ¥

duke of Richmond, like a prince, was desirous of securing for tutor a man so entirely qualified as was Wycherley to impart what was then recognized as the princely education, and it seems pretty clear that, but for the accident, to which we shall have to recur, of his meeting the countess of Drogheda at Bath and secretly marrying her, the educa- tion of the young man would actually liave been entrusted by his father to Wycherley as a reward for the dramatist's having written Love in a Wood.

Whether Wycherley's experiences as a naval officer, which he alludes to in his lines "On a Sea Fight which the Author was in betwixt the English and the Dutch," occurred before or after the production of Love in a Wood is a point upon which opinions differ, but on the whole we are inclined to agree with Macaulay, against Leigh Hunt, that these experiences took place not only after the production of Love in a Wood but after the production of The Gentleman Dancing Master, in 1673. We also think, with Macaulay, that he went to sea simply because it was the " polite" thing to do so—simply because, as he himself in the epilogue to The Gentleman Dancing Master says, "all gentlemen must pack to sea."

This second comedy is inferior to Love in a Wood, and for the reasons already discussed in connexion with the works of another dramatist (see VanprucH). In The Stelapse, however, the artistic mistake of blending comedy and farce damages a splendid play, but leaves it a splendid play still. In Zhe Gentleman Dancing Master this ming- ling of discordant elements destroys a play that would never under any circumstances have been strong,—a play nevertheless which abounds in animal spirits, and is luminous here and there with true dramatic points.

It is, however, oa his two last comedies—The Country Wife and The Plain Dealer—that must rest Wycherley's fame as a master of that comedy of repartee which, inaugurated by Etheredge, and afterwards brought to perfection by Congreve and Vanbrugh, supplanted the humoristic comedy of the Elizabethans. Zhe Country Wife, produced in 1675, is so full of wit, ingenuity, animal spirits, and conventional humour that, had it not been for its motive—a motive which in any healthy state . of society must always be as repulsive to the most lax as to the niost moral reader—it

would probably have survived as long as the acted drama remained a literary form in England. So strong, indeed, is the hand that could draw such a character as Marjory Pinchwife (the undoubted original not only of Congreve's Miss Prue but of Vanbrugh's Hoyden), such a character as Sparkish (the undoubted original of Congreve's Tattle), such a character as Horner (the undoubted original of all those cool impudent rakes with whom our stage has since been familiar), that Wycherley is certainly entitled to a place alongside Congreve and Vanbrugh. And, indeed, if priority of date is to have its fair and full weight, it seems difficult to challenge Prof. Spalding's dictum that Wycherley is "the most vigorous of the set."

In order to do justice to the life and brilliance of The Country Wife we have only to compare it with The Country Girl, afterwards made famous by the acting of Mrs Jordan, that Bowdlerized form of Zhe Country Wife in which Garrick, with an object more praiseworthy than his success, endeavoured to free it of its load of un- paralleled licentiousness by disturbing and sweetening the motive,—even as Voltaire afterwards (with an object also more praiseworthy than his success) endeavoured to disturb and sweeten the motive of The Plain Dealer in La Prude. While the two Bowdlerized forms of Garrick and Voltaire are as dull as the sop of Boursault, the texture of Wycherley's scandalous dialogue would seem to scintillate with the changing hues of shot silk or of the neck of a

pigeon or of a shaken prism, were it not that the many- coloured lights rather suggest the miasmatic radiance of a foul ditch shimmering in the sun. It is easy to share Macaulay's indignation at Wycherley's satyr-like defilement of art, and yet, at the same time, to protest against that disparagement of their literary riches which nullifies the value of Macaulay's criticism. And scarcely inferior to The Country Wifeis The Plain Dealer, produced in 1677,— a play of which Voltaire said, "Je ne connais point de comédie chez les anciens ni chez les moderns ou il y ait autant d'esprit." Strong language, no doubt ; but Voltaire has prevented it from seeming too strong by turning the play into Za Prude, and offering us in that a subject for comparison. No one has pointed out the immense

influence of this comedy, as regards manipulation of dialogue, upon all our subsequent comedies of repartee, from those of Congreve and Vanbrugh to those of Douglas Jerrold and T. W. Robertson; and, as to characters, he who wants to trace the ancestry of Tony Lumpkin and Mrs Hardcastle has only to turn to Jerry Blackacre and his mother, while Manly (for whom Wycherley's early patron, the duke of Montausier, sat), though he is perhaps overdone, has dominated this kind of stage character ever since. If but few readers know how constantly the blunt sententious utterances of this character are reappearing, not on the.stage alone, but in the novel and even in poetry, it is because a play whose motive is monstrous and intoler- able can only live in a monstrous and intolerable state of society ; it is because Wycherley's genius was followed by Nemesis, who always dogs the footsteps of the defiler of literary art. When Burns said— 'The rank is but the guinea stamp The man's the gowd for a' that,"

when Sterne, in Z'ristram Shandy, said, " Honours, like impressions upon coin, may give an ideal and local value to a bit of base metal, but gold and silver will pass all the world over without any other recommendation than their own weight," what did these writers do but adopt— adopt without improving—Manly's fine saying to Freeman, in the first act :—"I weigh the man, not his title; 'tis not the king's stamp can make the metal better or heavier "? And yet it is in the fourth and fifth acts that the coruscations of Wycherley's comic genius are the most dazzling ; also, it is there that the licentiousness is the most astonishing. Not that the worst scenes in this play are really more wicked than the worst scenes in Vanbrugh's Relapse, but they are more seriously imagined. Being less humorous than Vanbrugh's scenes, they are more terribly and earnestly realistic ; therefore they seem more wicked. They form indeed a striking instance of the folly of the artist who selects a story which cannot be actualized with- out hurting the finer instincts of human nature. When Menander declared that, having selected his plot, he looked upon his comedy as three parts finished, he touched upona subject which all workers in drama—all workers in imagin- ative literature of every kind—would do well to consider. In all literatures—ancient and modern —an infinite wealth of material has been wasted upon subjects that are unworthy, orelse incapable, of artistic realization; and yet Wycherley's

case is, in our literature at least, without a parallel. No doubt it may be right to say, with Aristotle, that comedy is an imitation of bad characters, but this does not mean that in comedy art may imitate bad characters as earnestly as she may imitate good ones,—a fact which Thackeray forgot when he made Becky Sharp a murderess, thereby destroying at once what would otherwise have been the finest specimen of the comedy of convention in the world. And perhaps it was because Vanbrugh was conscious of this law of art that he blended comedy with farce. Perhaps he felt that the colossal depravity of intrigue in

707

which the English comedians indulged needs to be not only warmed by a superabundance of humour but softened by the playful mockery of farce before a dramatic circle such as that of the Restoration drama can be really brought within human sympathy. Plutarch's impeach- ment of Aristophanes, which affirms that the master of the Old Comedy wrote less for honest men than for men sunk in baseness and debauchery, was no doubt unjust to the Greek poet, one side of whose humour, and one alone, could thus be impeached. But does it not touch all sides of a comedy like Wycherley's—a Comedy which strikes at the very root of the social compact npon which civilization is built? As to comparing such a Comedy as that of the Restoration with the Comedy of the Elizabethans, Jeremy Collier did but a poor service to the cause he undertook to advocate when he set the occasional coarseness of Shakespeare alongside the wickedness of Congreve and Vanbrugh. And yet, ever since Macaulay's essay, it has been the fashion to speak of Collier's attack as being levelled against the immorality of the 'Restoration dramatists." It is nothing of the kind. It is (as was pointed out so long ago as 1699 by Dr Drake in his little- known vigorous reply to Collier) an attack upon the English drania generally, with a special reference to the case of Shakespeare. While dwelling upon that noxious and highly immoral play //amlet, Collier actually leaves un- scathed the author of Zhe Country Wife, but fastens on Congreve and Vanbrugh, whose plays—profligate enough in all conscience—seem almost decent beside a comedy whose incredible vis motrix is "the modish distenper."

That a stage, indeed, upon which was given with applause A Woman Killed with Kindness (where a wife dies of a broken heart for doing what any one of Wycherley's married women would have gloried in doing) should, in seventy years, have given with applause Zhe Country Wefe shows that in historic and social evolution, as in the evolution of organisms, "change" and " progress" are very far from being convertible terms. For the barbarism of the society depicted in these plays was, in the true sense of the word, far deeper and more brutal than any barbarism that has ever existed in these islands within the historic period. If civilization has any meaning at all for the soul of man, the Englishmen of Chaucer's time, the Anglo-Saxons of the Heptarchy, nay, those half-naked heroes, who in the dawn of English history clustered along the southern coast to defend it from the invasion of Cesar, were far more civilized than that "race gangrenée"—the treacherous rakes, mercenary slaves, and brazen strumpets of the court of Charles II., who did their best to substitute for the human passion of love (a passion which was known perhaps even to paleeolithic man) the promiscuous inter- course of the beasts of the field. Yet Collier leaves Wycherley unassailed, and classes Vanbrugh and Congreve with Shakespeare!

It was after the success of Zhe Plain Dealer that the turning-point came in Wycherley's career. The great dream of all the men about town in Charles's time, as Wycherley's plays all show, was to marry a widow, young and handsome, a peer's daughter if possible,—but in any event rich, and spend her money upon wine and women. While talking to a friend in a bookseller's shop at Tun- bridge, Wycherley heard Zhe Plain Dealer asked for by a lady who, in the person of the countess of Drogheda, answered all the requirements. An introduction ensued, then love-making, then marriage—a secret marriage, for, fearing to lose the king's patronage and the income there- from, Wycherley still thought it politic to pass as a bachelor. He had not seen enough of life to learn that in the long run nothing is politic but " straightforwardness, " Whether because his countenance wore a pensive and sub-

dued expression, suggestive of a poet who had married a dowager countess and awakened to the situation, or whether because treacherous confidants divulged his secret,

does not appear, but the news of his marriage oozed out, .

—it reached the royal ears, and deeply wounded the father anxious about the education of his son. Wycherley lost the appointment that was so nearly within his grasp, —lost indeed the royal favour for ever. He never had an opportunity of regaining it, for the countess seems to have really loved him, and Love in a Wood had proclaimed the writer to be the kind of husband whose virtue prospers best when closely guarded at the domestic hearth. Wherever he went the countess followed him, and when she did allow him to meet his boon companions it was in a tavern in Bow Street opposite to his own house, and even there under certain protective conditions. In summer or in winter he was obliged to sit with the window open and the blinds up, so that his wife might see that the party included no member of a sex for which her hushand's plays had advertised his partiality. She died at last, however, and left him the whole of her fortune. But the title to the property was disputed ; the costs of the litigation were heavy—so heavy that his father was unable (or else he was unwilling) to come to his aid; and the result of his marrying the rich, beautiful, and titled widow was that the poet was thrown into the Fleet prison. There he languished for seven years, being finally released by the liberality of James II.,—a liberality which, incredible as it seems, is too well authenticated to be challenged. James had been so much gratified by seeing Zhe Plain Dealer acted that, finding a parallel between Manly's "manliness" and his own, such as no spectator had before discovered, he paid off Wycherley's execution creditor. Other debts still troubled Wycherley, however, and lie never was released from his embarrassments, not even after succeeding to a life estate in the family property. In coming to Wycherley's death, we come to the worst allegation that has ever been made against him as a man and asa gentleman. At the age of seventy-five he married a young girl, and is said to have done so in order to spite his nephew, the next in succession, knowing that he himself must shortly die and that the jointure would impoverish the estate. No doubt it is true enough that he did marry the girl and did die eleven days afterwards ; but,

if we consider that the lady he married was young and an heiress (or was supposed to be an heiress), and 'if we further consider how difficult it was for an old gallant of Wycherley's extraordinary personal vanity to realize his true physical condition, we may well suppose that, even if he talked about "marrying to spite his nephew," he did so as a cloak for other impulses, such as senile desire or senile cupidity, or a blending of these impulses. Wycherley wrote verses, and, when quite an old man, prepared them for the press by the aid of Alexander Pope, then not much more than a boy. But, notwithstanding all Pope's tinkering, they remain contemptible. He died in December 1715, and was buried in the vault of the church in Covent Garden. (T. w.) WYCLIFFE,' or Wycuir, Joun (c. 1320-1384), was

' A note is necessary as to the spelling of Wycliffe's name. Out of thirteen contemporary entries in documents, twelve give "'y" in the first syllable; the seven entries in the Queen's College accounts show four with '"'y"' to three with "i," but these do not certainly refer to the reformer. In not one of these is there a "ck" (though once a "'ke") (see Mr F. D. Matthew, in the Academy, June 7, 1884). The chroniclers, &c., oifer every imaginable variety of spelling, and it is possible that our favourite form in more recent times, ' Wickliffe," derived its popularity from the old play on the name, " nequam vita," which we find in Gascoigne. Our choice must be decided by usage, and the spelling adopted in the present article is that of the village from which Wycliffe derived his name; it is also preferred by the editors of the Wycliffe Bible, by Milman, and by Bishop Stubbs.*

born, according to Leland,? our single authority on the point, at Ipreswel (evidently the place now called Hipswell), a mile from Richmond, in Yorkshire. The date may have been somewhere about 1320. Leland elsewhere mentions that he "drew his origin" from Wycliffe-on-Tees (Collectanea, ii. 329), so that his lineage was of the ancient family which is celebrated by Scott in Marmion. The Wyclifies had a natural connexion with the college at Oxford which had been founded in the latter part of the previous century by their neiglibours, the Balliols of Barnard Castle; and to Balliol College, then distinctively an "arts" college? John Wycliffe

in due time proceeded. It has been generally believed, and was in fact believed not many years after his death, that he was a fellow of Merton College in 1356; but in all probability this identification rests upon a confusion with another and contemporary John Wyeliffe. That the future reformer was a fellow of Balliol College is implied in the fact that some time after 1356, but before the summer of 1360, he was elected master of the college. This office he held but a short time. So soon as 1361 he accepted a college living, that of Fillingham in Lincoln- shire, and probably left Oxford for some time. In 1363, however, he was back again, this time resident in Queen's College, where he seems to have rented rooms at various dates from this year onwards ; on the 13th April 1378 he obtained from his bishop leave of absence " insistendo literarum studio in universitate Oxon. per biennium," and in the following November he exchanged his benefice for one more conveniently situate, at Ludgarshall, in Buckinghamshire. A certain amount of residence at Oxford was necessary if he was now proceeding to a degree in divinity, and still more if, as is generally under- stood, he is the same person with the John Wycliffe who was appointed, December 1365, to the wardenship of Canterbury Hall, a house which Archbishop Islip had lately founded for a mixed body of monks and secular clergy- men, and then, changing his mind, had filled exclusively with the latter. His successor Archbishop Langham in 1367 reversed the arrangement, expelled Wycliffe and his colleagues, and substituted monks. Wycliffe appealed to Rome and lost his case, 1370. There seems no reason to dispute the legality of the action either of Archbishop Langham or of the cardinal who tried the appeal at Viterbo ; but Wycliffe no doubt felt himself hardly used, and (if he be rightly identified with the reformer) the experience may have confirmed him in some of the opinions which are characteristic of his subsequent career, and which have been attributed, but only on the authority of a bitter opponent, Thomas Netter of Walden, to dis- appointment at not receiving the bishopric of Worcester (perhaps at its voidance in 1368). But the doubt as to the identification in the one case, and the suspicion attach- ing to the evidence in the other, may disincline us to reason about the motives which directed Wycliffe on to the path of reform.*

Among the rest ' Wyclif" has the support of Shirley, of Mr T. Arnold, and of the Wyclif Society ; while " Wiclif" is the popular form in*

Germany.

2 Ttinerary, Stow's transcript, Bodleian Library, Tanner MS., p. 464, f. 45 (Leland's original being mutilated at this place). Hearne misprinted the name "Spreswel," and thus set all Wycliffe's bio- graphers on a search after a vox nihili.

3 See a document of 1325 printed in the appendix to the Fourth Report of the Historical Manuscripts Commission, p. 442 sg. Pro- vision for theological study was made by the benefaction of Sir Philip Somerville in 13840 (Lyte, Hist. of the Univ. of Oxford, p. 154, 1886).

4 Hence arose the common mistake, which was repeated so lately as in Milman's Hist. of Latin Christianity, bk. xiii. ch. vi., that Wycliffe began his university career at Queen's College. It is indeed open to question whether this be not yet another John Wycliffe ; see

Mr H. T. Riley's remarks in the Second Report of the Historical Manuscripts Commission, appendix, p. 141 sq.

wy e¢ b

Some years indeed before this time he had thrown himself publicly into the defence of what had become the national resistance to the papacy at Avignon, closely associated as the latter was with the interests of France. He had entered the service of the royal court, and apparently as king's chaplain (" peculiaris regis clericus ") had published a tract, Determinatio quedam de Dominio, in support of the action of parliament in 1366, when it repudiated the tribute due to the pope. The tract is of interest, not only because it contains the first trace of the writer's special doctrine of "dominium" or lordship (adjusting the spiritual relation to a feudal framework), but also because it shows the line of thought by which Wycliffe's position became determined in a sense hostile to the papal system. It was not at the outset dogmatic but political elements in it which provoked his censure. He disputed the right of the spiritual power to interfere in teniporal matters, and was gradually led on to deny the lawfulness of any temporal possessions of the church, and thus to become the common enemy of the beneficed clergy and of the endowed monks ;

with the friars he was at present on friendly terms. Wycliffe thus drew from Richard Fitz- Ralph, archbishop of Armagh, whose instruction he may have personally followed in his youth,! his doctrine of '"dominium," which the latter had employed against the friars and in favour of the endowed clergy; while at the same time he combined it with the doctrine of the excellence of "evangelical poverty" which he derived from William of Ockham and the tradition of the Spiritual Franciscans nearly half a century earlier. Wycliffe's position may appear paradoxical ; but in truth he made a selection from the discordant views, and built up a con- sistent theory of his own, of which the salient principles were (1) that sin deprived a man of all right to possess anything; (2) that all property should be held in common; (3) that the spiritual power is entirely separate from the civil, and thus (4) that, should it overstep its bounds and come into contact with temporal concerns, it becomes thereby subject to civil jurisdiction ; (5) that the church should hold no property ; (6) that excommunication is of no effect unless justified by the sin of him against whom it is directed ; and (7) that in no case should it be pro- nounced for any offence connected with temporal affairs. These views are expounded in Wycliffe's several treatises De Dominio, which were written some time before 1377 and probably not long after 1370, though their precise date has not yet been established.?

Plainly such a writer was likely to be useful to the court, where John of Gaunt was now supreme,—especially since Wycliffe enjoyed the reputation of an unmatched proficiency in the scholastic learning of his day. On the 7th April 1374 he was presented by the crown to the rectory of Lutterworth, in Leicestershire, which he held until his death ; and on the following July 26th he was

——————— ee eee

1 Archbishop FitzRalph had been a fellow of Balliol College, and was vice-chancellor of the university in or about 1333 (A. A 'Wood, Fasti Oxon., p. 21, ed. Gutch, 1790). His work, on which Wycliffe mainly based his theory, is entitled De Pauperie Salvatoris, aud exists only in manuscript; but Mr R. L. Poole is preparing the greater part of it for publication. An old legend makes Wycliffe take part in the archbishop's

controversy with the friars so early as 1360. It was suspected by Robert Vaughan, and then denied by Shirley. The further researches of Dr Lechler have placed the late date at which Wycliffe began his opposition to the friars on a sure foundation ; and the fact has been confirmed decisively by the publication of the St Albans Chronicon Angliw, by Mr E. M. Thompson, in 1874 (see pp. 116, 118), and more recently by that of the reformer's earlier Latin works.

? It is uniformly asserted that Wycliffe fell into heresy after his admission to the degree of doctor (Fasc. Ziz., p. 2). The process about Canterbury Hall makes the warden B.D. in 1367 or 1368 (Lyte, p. 252, n. 5),—so that if he be the reformer we have an approximate terminus a quo for his inception.

| eae 709

nominated one of the royal ambassadors to proceed to Bruges to confer with the papal representatives on the long-vexed question of "provisions." The rank he took is shown by the facts that his name stands second, next after that of the bishop of Bangor, on the commission, and that he received pay at the princely rate of twenty shillings per diem. The commission itself was appointed in con- sequence of urgent and repeated complaints on the part of the Commons, but the negotiations were practically fruitless ; the king had an interest in keeping up the system of papal provisions and reservations, and it could hardly be expected that any concessions that might be gained by his commissioners would imply more than a temporary compromise or an illusory advantage. Yet it is possible that the real result of the negotiations is to be found, not in the formal stipulations, but in certain articles not then committed to writing which were laid before the English parliament in February 1377.

Some time after his return Wycliffe was given the pre- bend of Aust in the collegiate church of Westbury-on- Trim, which he held but a short time, the confirmation of his appointment (November 6, 1375) being followed within a fortnight by the grant of the benefice to another person. Henceforth he lived mainly at Lutterworth and Oxford, making, however, frequent and, as it seems, prolonged visits to London from time to time. He assumed the position of a popular preacher there, and delighted an

audience already sufficiently disaffected towards the rich and powerful clergy. He was also closely allied with John of Gaunt, who welcomed him as an instrument towards his design of humbling the church. Wycliffe indeed expressly refused to affirm that it was in such a condition as to deserve spoliation ; but when to this he added that the decision was the affair of statesmen, "politicoram qui intendunt praxi et statui regnorum" (De Civili Dominio, i. 37, p. 269), it is plain that his theory might readily commend itself to the duke, while the proviso could only increase the hostility towards him of the endowed clergy. For some years he was suffered to spread his doctrines without hindrance. The archbishop of Canterbury, Simon Sudbury, had no mind to proceed against him until at length the pressure of the bishops compelled him to summon the dangerous preacher to appear before the bishop of London and answer certain charges laid against him. The nature of these accusations is not stated, but their purport can hardly be doubtful. On the 19th February 1377 Wycliffe made his appearance at St Paul's. He was accompanied by the duke of Lancaster, by Lord Percy the marshal of England, and by four doctors of the four mendicant orders. 'The trial, however, came to nothing; for, before Wycliffe could open his mouth, the court was broken up by a rude brawl between his protectors and Bishop Courtenay, ending in a general riot of the citizens of London, who were so much enraged by the insult to their bishop in his own cathedral church—coming as this did at the same time as a serious attempt at an invasion by the duke in parliament of their civic liberties (Chron. Angl., p. 120)—that they would have sacked his palace of the Savoy had not Courtenay himself intervened.

Wycliffe had escaped for the time, but his enemies did not rely solely on their own weapons. Probably before this they had set their case before the pope; and towards the end of May five bulls were issued by Gregory XI, who had just returned to Rome from Avignon, condemning eighteen (or in other copies nineteen) " conclusions " drawn from Wycliffe's writings. All the articles but one are taken from his first book De Civili Dominio, the recent publication of which shows the charges to be honestly | made and the quotations to be entirely free from any

suspicion of unfairness. The bulls truly stated Wycliffe's intellectual lineage ; he was following in the error of Marsiglio of Padua ; and the articles laid against him are concerned entirely with questions agitated between church and state—how far ecclesiastical censures could lawfully affect a man's civil position, and whether the church had a right to receive and hold temporal endowments. The bulls were addressed (May 22) to the archbishop of Canterbury and the bisliop of London, the university of Oxford, and the king. The university was to take Wycliffe and send him to the prelates; the latter were then to examine the truth of the charges and to report to the pope, Wycliffe being meanwhile kept in confinement. The execution of the papal bulls was impeded by three separate causes,—the king's death on the 21st June; the

tardy action of the bishops, who enjoined the university |

to make a report, instead of simply sending Wycliffe to them ; and the unwillingness of the university to admit external authority, and, above all, the pope's right to order the imprisonment of any man in England. The con- vocation, indeed, as the St Albans chronicler! states with lamentation, made serious objections to receiving the bull at all; and in the end it merely directed Wycliffe to keep within his lodgings at Black Hall for a time.

If the university was disposed to favour the reformer, the Government was not less so. John of Gaunt was for the moment in retirement ; but the mother of the young king appears to have adopted his policy in church affairs, and she naturally occupied a chief position in the new council. As soon as parliament met in the autumn of 1377 Wycliffe was consulted by it as to the lawfulness of prohibiting that treasure should pass out of the country in obedience to the pope's demand. Wycliffe's affirmative Judgment is contained in a state paper still extant; and its tone is plain proof enough of his confidence that his views on the main question of church and state had the support of the nation.2, Indeed he had laid before this same parliament his answer to the pope's bulls, with a defence of the soundness of his opinions. His university, moreover, confirmed his argument ; his tenets, it said, were true (7.e., orthodox), though their expression was such as to admit of an incorrect interpretation. But

Wycliffe was still bound to clear himself before the prelates who had summoned him, and early in 1378 he appeared for this purpose in the chapel of Lambeth Palace. His written defence, expressed in some respects in more cautious language than he had previously used, was laid before the council; but its session was rudely interrupted, not only by an inroad of the London citizens with a crowd of the rabble, but also by a messenger from the princess of Wales enjoining them not to pass judgment against Wycliffe ; and thus a second time he escaped, either without sentence, or at most with a gentle request that he would avoid dis- cussing the matters in question. Meanwhile his " pro- testatio" was sent on to Rome.*

In the autumn of this year Wycliffe was once .aore called upon to prove his loyalty to John of Gaunt. The duke had violated the sanctuary of Westminster by sending a band of armed men to seize two knights who had taken refuge there. They resisted, and one of them was killed. After a while the bishop of London excommunicated all concerned in the crime (excepting only the king, his mother, and his uncle), and preached against the culprits ee a en ee ee

1 When he says that the bull was only received at Oxford shortly before Christmas, he is apparently confounding it with the prelates' mandate, which is dated December 18 (Lewis, appendix xvii.)—Chron. Angl., p. 178.

2 In one text of this document a noteis appended, to the effect that the council enjoined silence on the writer as touching the matter therein contained (Fasciculi Zizaniorum, p. 271). This, if true, was appar- ently a measure of precaution.

publicly at St Paul's Cross. The duke, fearing the anger of the Londoners, arranged that the ensuing parliament should be held at a safe distance, at Gloucester, and, it was rumoured, proposed to bring before it a sweeping scheme of spoliation of church property. Wycliffe was required to write an apology for the duke's actions at Westminster. His paper, which is still preserved, and forms part of the De Ecclesia, seeks, without excusing the

homicide, to lay down the limits within which the privilege of asylum is permissible, and maintains that the duke was right in invading the sanctuary in order to bring escaped prisoners to justice. But the duke's whole behaviour seems to have been high-handed, and Wycliffe can with difficulty be excused from a charge of subserviency to his patron.

The year 1378 forms a turning point in Wycliffe's career. The schism in the papacy caused by the election in September of Clement VIL. in opposition to Urban VI. slowly decided Wycliffe towards a more revolutionary attitude with respect to the Roman see, a power which he now convinced himself was at the root of the disorders of the church. He set on foot an active propaganda, choosing the two special means of sending forth his "poor" or 'simple priests" to preach pure doctrine throughout the country, and of making the first complete English version of the Bible. This latter work was mainly executed by Wycliffe himself, but his friend Nicholas Hereford did part of the Old Testament. Afterwards the whole was revised by John Purvey, who assisted Wycliffe in his parish duty at Lutterworth, and finished his edition probably not long after the reformer's death. Most existing copies are of the latter redaction, which is printed in parallel columns with the older one in the great edition of the version edited by J. Forshall and Sir F. Madden (Oxford, 1851). Wycliffe's translation of the Bible, and still more his numerous English sermons and tracts, establish his now undisputed position as the founder of English prose writing.

Wycliffe's itinerant preachers were not necessarily intended to work as rivals to the beneficed clergy. The idea that underlay their mission was rather analogous to that which animated Wesley four centuries later. Wycliffe aimed at supplementing the services of the church by regular religious instruction in the vernacular ; and his organization included a good number of men who held or had held respectable positions in their colleges at Oxford. The influence of their teaching was soon felt throughout the country. The common people were rejoiced by the plain and homely doctrine which dwelt chiefly on the simple "law" of the gospel, while they no doubt relished the denunciation of existing evils in the church which formed, as it were, the burthen of such discourses. The feeling of disaffection against the rich and careless clergy, monks, and

friars was widespread but undefined. Wycliffe turned it into a definite channel (he was now persuaded that the friars were as bad as the monks) ; he insensibly passed from an assailant of the papal to an assailant of the sacerdotal power ; and in this way he was led to reject the distinctive symbol of that power, the doctrine of tran- substantiation. It was in the summer of 13813 that Wycliffe propounded at Oxford a set of theses, substituting for the accredited doctrine of the church one which

3 This is the date given in the Fasciculi Zizaniorum. Wood, how- ever, makes Berton chancellor in 1880 and 1882, But if Wycliffe's heresy was first put forth in the latter year there seems to be hardly time for the condemnation and then for the archbishop's summons to the London council in May. It is safest therefore to leave the date of the Fasciculi Zizaniorum undisturbed. The Peasants' Revolt in June 1381, and the murder of Archbishop Sudbury, may sufficiently account for the interval between the Oxford and the London pro- ceedings,

allowed the real presence of Christ in the consecrated elements, but denied any change of substance, a doctrine practically undistinguishabie (unless by its scholastic form) from the modern Lutheran doctrine. The theologians of the university were at once roused. The chancellor, William Berton, sat with twelve doctors (half of whom were friars), and solemnly condemned the theses; Wycliffe appealed to the king, and John of Gaunt hastily sent down a messenger enjoining the reformer to keep silence on the subject.

The condemnation at Oxford was almost immediately followed by the Peasants' Revolt, with which it has been supposed that Wycliffe had something to do. The only positive fact implicating him is the confession of one of its leaders, John Ball, that he learned his subversive doctrines from Wycliffe. But the confession of a con- demned man can seldom be accepted without reserve; and we have not only the precise and repeated testimony of Knyghton that he was a " precursor" of Wycliffe, but also documentary evidence that he was excommunicated as early as 1366, long before Wycliffe exposed himself to ecclesiastical ceusure. Wycliffe in truth was always careful to state his communistic views in a theoretical way ;

they are confined to his Latin scholastic writings, and thus could not reach the people from him directly. At the same time it is very possible that his less scrupulous followers translated them in their popular discourses, and thus fed the flame that burst forth in the rebellion. Perhaps it was a consciousness of a share of responsibility for it that led them to cast the blame on the friars. In any case Wycliffe's advocates must regret that in all his known works there is only one trace of any repro- bation of the excesses that accompanied the outbreak.

In the following spring his old enemy William Courtenay, now archbishop of Canterbury, resolved to take measures for stamping out Wycliffe's crowning heresy. He called a provincial council at the Blackfriars in London, which assembled on the 21st May 1382, and sat with intervals until July. The council was met by a hardly expected manifestation of university feeling on Wyeliffe's side. The chancellor and both the proctors stood by him. They allowed a Wycliffite sermon to be preached before the uni- versity on Ascension Day. The archbishop's commissary complained that his life was not safe at Oxford. Still no steps were taken to bring Wycliffe to judgment. Twenty- four articles extracted from his works were condemned ; some of his prominent adherents were imprisoned until they recanted ; the university officers were soon brought to submission, but Wycliffe himself remained at large and unmolested. It is said indeed by Knyghton that at a council held by Courtenay at Oxford in the following November Wycliffe was brought forward and made a recantation ; but our authority fortunately gives the text of the recantation, which proves to be nothing more yor less than a plain English statement of the condemned doctrine. It is therefore lawful to doubt whether Wycliffe appeared before the council at all, and even whether he was ever summoned before it. Probably after the over- throw of his party at Oxford by the action of the Black- friars council Wycliffe found it advisable to withdraw permanently to Lutterworth. That his strength among the laity was undiminished is shown by the fact that an ordinance passed by the House of Lords alone, in May 1382, against the itinerant preachers was annulled on the petition of the Commons in the following autumn. In London, Leicester, and elsewhere there is abundant evidence of his popularity. The reformer, however, was growing old. There was work, he

probably felt, for him to do, more lasting than personal controversy. So in his retirement he occupied himself, with restless activity, in

ii

writing numerous tracts, Latin and English, as well as one of his most important books, the Zrialogus. In spite of a paralytic seizure which came upon him in 1382 or early in 1383, he continued his labours. In 1384 it is stated that he was cited by pope Urban VI. to appear before him at Rome ; but to Rome he never went. On the 28th December of this year, while he was hearing mass in his own church, he received a final stroke, from the effects of which he died on the New Year's eve! He was buried

_at Lutterworth ; but by a decree of the council of Con-

stance, May 4, 1415, his remains were ordered to be dug up and burned, an order which was carried out by Bishop Fleming in 1428.

At this distance of time Wycliffe's reputation is still a battle- ground of parties. By those who uphold the indefeasible sanctity of church property, the exemption of the church from all control or oversight on the part of the state, or yet more the apostolic pre- rogative of the Roman see, his political doctrine is judged as revolutionary, sacrilegious, and heretical. His denial of tran- substantiation is conceived to imply a base hypocrisy in his con- tinued discharge of priestly functions; but they who maintain this argument should bear in mind that the office of the mass is older than the doctrine of transubstantiation, and a man cannot be fairly accused of dishonesty in using words in a sense at all events nearer that in which they were originally written. A sober study of Wycliffe's life and works justifies a conviction of his complete sincerity and earnest striving after what he believed to be right. If he cannot be credited (as he has been by most of his biographers) with all the Protestant virtues, he may at least claim. to have dis- covered the secret of the immediate dependence of the individual Christian upon God, a relation which needs no mediation of any pricst, and to which the very sacraments of the church, however desirable, are not essentially necessary. When he divorces the idea of the church from any connexion with its official or formal constitution, and conceives it as consisting exclusively of the righteous, he may seem to

have gone the whole length of the most radical reformers of the 16th century. And yet, powerful as was his influence in England, it was but transicnt, and within forty years it was nearly extinct. His true tradition is to be found not in his own country but in Bohemia, where his works were eagerly read and multiplied, and where his disciple John Huss, with less origin- ality but greater simplicity of character and greater spiritual force, raiscd Wyclitlism to the dignity of national religion. To Huss, whose works are to a great extent acento of extracts from Wycliffe, Luther owed much; and thus the spirit of the English teacher had its influence on the reformed churches of Europe.

The documentary materlals for Wycliffe's biograpliy are to be found in John

Lewis's Life and Sufferings of J. Wiclif (new ed., Oxford, 1820), which contains ~

a valuable appendix of illustrative papers and records; Foxe's Acts and Monu- ments, vol. iii., ed. 1855, with app.; Forshall and Madden's preface to the Wycliffe

Bible, p. vii. note, Oxford, 1851; W. W. Shirley's edition of the Fasciculi Zizani- –

orum (probably the work of Thomas Netter of Walden), 1858; and H. T. Riley's notices in the appendices to the Second and Fourth Reports of the Historical Manuscripts Commission. Among contemporary records the recently discovered narrative of a monk of St Albans—a bitter opponent of John of Gaunt—is of

conspicuous value; it was published under thie title of Chronicon Angliz, by –

Mr E. M. Thompson, 1874. Of this the account in Walsingham's ZHistoria Anglicana (ed. H. T. Riley, 1863, 1864) is mainly a modified version. Knyghton, who wrote De Eventibus Angliz at Leicester in the heart of what may be called the Wycliffe country, is very well informed as to certain passages in the reformer's history, though his chronology is

extremely faulty (printed in Twysden's Hist. Anglic. Scriptores Decem, 1652). There are valuable 1otices also in the continuation of the Eulogium Historiarum (vol. iii., ed. F. S. Haydon, 1863), in the Chronicle of Adam of Usk (ed. E. M. Thompson, 1876), and in more than one of the continuations of Higden. For the study of Wycliffe's theology the controversial works of Wodeford and Walden are important, but must necessarily be used with caution.

Of modern biographies that by Dr G. V. Lechle: (Johann von Wiclif und die Vorgeschichte der Reformation, 2 vols., Leipsic, 1873; partial Engl. trans., by P. Lorimer, 1878, 1881, and 1884) is by far the most comprehensive; it includes a detailed exposition of the reformer's system, based to a considerable extent on works which were then unpublished. Shirley's masterly introduction to the Fasciculi Zizaniorum, and Mr F, D. Matthew's to his edition of English Works of Wyclif hitherto unprinted (1880). as well as Mr Creighton's History of the Papacy during the Period of the Reformation, vol. i., 1882, and Mr H. C. Max- well Lyte's account in his 7/istory of the University of Oxford (1886), add to or correct our stock of biographleal materials, and contain much valuable criticism. Wycliffe's political doctrine is discussed by Mr R. L. Poole (dllustrations of the Listory of Medizxval : Thought, 1884); and his relation to Huss is elaborately demonstrated by Dr J. Loserth (Hus und Wiclif, Prague, 1884; also Engl. trans.)

Wycliffe's works are enumerated in a Catalogue by Shirley (Oxford,1865). The following are published:—A. Latin.—De Oficio Pastorali, ed. G. V. Lechler, Leipsic, 1863; 7rialogus, ed. G. V. Lechiler, Oxford, 1869; portions of the Summa in Theologia, viz., De Civili Donvinio, i., ed. R. L. Poole, 1885, aud De Ecclesia, ed. J. Loserth, 1886; De Benedicta Incarnatione, ed. E. Harris, 1886; Dialogus sive Speculum Ecclesiz Militantis, ed. A. W. Pollard, 1886 3 Sermones, ed. J. Loserth, 2 vols., 1887-88; Polemical Tracts, ed. R. Buddensieg, 2 vols., 1883; De Compositione Hominis, an early work, ed. R. Beer, 1884. All but the first two of these are issued by the Wyclif Society, which was founded in 1882 for the purpose of publishing all the reformer's unedited works.

1 Of Wycliffe's personal appearance we know hardly more than that he was a spare man with frail health. None of the existing portraits of him is contemporary.

‘

‘

1

’

712

B. English.—Select English Works, ed. T. Arnold, 3 vols., 1869-71, and English Works hitherto unprinted, ed. F. D. Matthew, 1880, chiefly sermons and short tracts, of many of which the authenticity is uncertain. The Wicket (Nuremberg, 1546; re- printed Oxford, 1828) is not included in either of these collections. CeETe:)

WYCOMBE, Hich Wycomss, or Cuippinc WyYcoMBE,

a municipal borough and market-town of Bucks, is situ-°

ated in the valley of the Wyck and on a branch of the Great Western Railway, 29 miles west-north-west of London, 25 south-east of Oxford, and 10 north of Maiden- head. Notwithstanding many additions to the town within recent years, it still retains many evidences of antiquity, including several medieval buildings. The parish church of All Saints, the largest in the county, was rebuilt in 1273 by the abbess and uuns of Godstowe, Oxfordshire, on the site of an earlier Norman structure, and underwent extensive reconstruction in the beginning of the 15th century. The present western tower, 108 feet in height, was completed in 1522, and adorned with pinnacles in 1753. The style of the building is now Early English with Decorated and Perpendicular addi- tions. The interior underwent extensive restoration in 1874, under the direction of the late G. E. Street, and the restoration of the exterior is at present (1888) in progress. For the grammar school, founded in 1555 by the mayor and

burgesses of Wycombe, and now under the direction of the charity commissioners, a hand- some new building was erected in 1883. The remains of the Norman hall of St John the Baptist, incorporated in the old school building, with its chapel in the Early English style, adjoins the new building. The other princi- pal public buildings are the guild-hall, originally erected by the earl of Shelburne in 1757, and altered and improved in 1859; the literary institute, 1854; the free library, per- manently endowed by a subscription of the townspeople after the premises had been presented by J. O. Griffiths ; the High Wycombe hospital, established in 1875; the shambles, erected in 1761 on the site of the old hog market ; and the South Bucks auction mart, 1887. Some remains still exist of Desborough Castle, supposed to have been erected for defence against the Danes. There are a number of almshouses, including those of Queen Elizabeth, endowed in 1562 out of the revenues of the dissolved fraternity of St Mary. In 1797 a military college was established at Wycombe, which was transferred to Farn- ham and the junior department to Sandhurst in 1812 and 1813. The Frogmore gardens were presented to the town by J. O. Griffiths in 1877 as public pleasure- grounds. 'Thereisa common pasturage, 30 acres in extent, called the Rye. Formerly lace and strawplait making were the staple industries, but they have been superseded by chair-making, which of late years has greatly increased, the number of chairs made annually now amounting to over 1} millions. The rise of the industry was due to the beech-woods in the neighbourhood ; but, in addition to the cane and rush-bottomed chairs, for which these woods supply the frames, chairs of a finer kind are now also made from walnut, cherry, and other more valuable woods. There are also flour and paper mills. The borough, which is divided into three wards, is governed by a mayor, six aldermen, and eighteen councillors. The population of the municipal borough in 1871 (area then 122 acres) was 4811; in 1880 the area was extended to 400 acres, and the population in 1881 was 10,618. The population of the parliamentary borough (area 6395 acres), which existed till 1885, was 10,492 in 1871 and 13,154 in 1881.

From the character of Roman remains fonnd at Wycombe it seems to have been an important Roman station. By the Saxons a fortress called Desborough castle was erected for its defence. At the Conquest it was a borough town, and was then held by Robert Doily or Doyley. In the 9th

year of Edward I. it reverted to the crown. 'The incorporation of the borough is ascribed to Henry I. From the 28th of Edward I. it returned two members to

parliament, but in 1867 the number was reduced to onc, and in 1885 it was merged in the Sonth or Wycombe Division of the county. Camden, writing in the beginning of the 17th century, says of it, " This town for largeness and beauty comparcs with the best in the county, and as it is governed by a mayor is justly pre- ferred to the rest.'"" During the Civil War it was the scene of a skirmish between Prince Rupert and the Parliamentarian forces, in

which the latter were defeated. See Parker's Antiquities of Wycombe, 1878,

WYNTOUN, Anprew oF, a Scottish monk who flourished at the beginning of the 15th century, was the author of the Orygynale Cronykil of Scotland. The chronicle, whicli is in verse and has some historical value from the use made in it of the St Andrews registers, is called "original" because it begins with the beginning of the world, the second chapter giving an account of the creation of man. The history of Scotland is brought down to the death of Robert III. in 1406. Of the chronicler himself nothing is known except what he tells us in his prologue, namely, that he was a canon regular of St Andrews, and prior of Serf's Inch in Lochleven. The chronicle has been twice carefully edited and annotated, —by Macpherson in 1795, and by David Laing in 1872-79.

WYOMING, a Territory of the United States, is Plate nearly rectangular in shape, having as its boundaries XVII.

the 41st and 45th parallels of N. latitude and the 27th and 34th meridians west of Washington. South of it are Colorado and Utah; on the west, Utah, Idaho, and Montana; on the north, Montana; and on the east, Dakota and Nebraska. The area is 97,890 square miles.

The surface is greatly diversified. great, being probably not less than 6400 feet. est portions of the Territory are along the northern and eastern borders, where in several places the surface is less than 5000 feet above sea-level, while its highest points exceed 13,000 feet. By far the greater part consists of high plains, which are broken by numerous inountain ranges and ridges, which form parts of the Rocky Mountain system. This system enters the Territory in the south-eastern part, and traverses it in a north-west direction. On the south it consists of three members, the Laramie range, which is crossed by the Union Pacific railroad at Sherman, and the Medicine Bow and Park ranges, which separate branches of the North Platte river. These ranges run out and fall down into the plain in the southern part of the Territory, leaving for 150 miles a broad flat plateau to re- present the Rocky Mountain system. The ill-defined sum- mit of this plateau forms the parting between the waters of the Missouri and Colorado. Eastward this plateau slopes to the Great Plains, and westward to the Green river basin. The Union Pacific Railroad traverses it, and therefore the traveller upon this road sees little of the Rocky Mountains except at a distance. Farther north the mountains rise again from this plateau in several ranges. The principal of these is that known as the Wind River range, which in a sense is continued northward beyond the northern boundary of the Territory by the Absaroka range. The former contains the most elevated land in the Territory, its highest peak being Frémont's, with an elevation of 13,790 feet. The latter range is in its southern part a great volcanic plateau, elevated 10,000 to 11,000 feet above the sea, while farther north it is eroded into very rugged mountain forms. About the point where these ranges join, there is a confused mass of mountains of great breadth and considerable height. In this elevated mass rise streams flowing to the

Atlantic, the Gulf of California, and the Pacific. The highest peaks of these mountains are those known as the Three Tétons, the most elevated of which, Mount Hayden, has an altitude of 13,691 feet. East of the Wind River and Absaroka ranges, and separated from them by the valley of the Wind River and the Big Horn basin, is the range

Its mean elevation is Moun- The low- tains.

Rivers.

Geology.

Fauna.

Flora.

Climate.

Ww YO—-W YO

known as the Big Horn Mountains, which is reputed to contain peaks having'an altitude of 12,000 feet. These ranges form the backbone of the Territory. Eastward from the Big Horn and Laramie ranges stretch the plains in an almost unbroken expanse, gently sloping to the eastward from an altitude of about 6000 feet at the base of the mountains, while south-west of the Wind River range is spread the expanse of the Green river basin, through which flows the principal fork of the Colorado.

The drainage system of Wyoming is somewhat complex. While the mountainous regions are well watered by numerous streams, the broad valleys and the plaius are poorly supplied with streams. Many of those which flow full in the mountains during the entire year run dry in summer upon the plains. None of the streams are navigable, The eastern three-fourths of the Territory is drained by the tributaries of the Missouri to the Atlantic. Of this area the North Platte drains the southern portion of the Rocky Mountain system, together with a large part of the plains lying north and east of it. Farther north- ward and eastward the plains are drained by the Cheyenne river. The eastern face of the Big Horn

mountains is drained by the Powder and Tongue rivers, while from its western slopes, and from the eastern slopes of the-Wind River and Absaroka ranges, the Wind River, known lower down in its course as the Big Horn, collects the waters. The Yellowstone, heading in the confused mass of moun- tains about the north end of the Wind River range, flows northward through a beautiful lake, draining the west slope of the Absaroka rauge. The Snake, or "' Mad" river of the early explorers, heading in the same mass of mountains, flows south-westward to seek an exit from them, while the Green, whose sources are in the same elevated country, drains the west slope of the Wind River range, and flows southward through the broad sage-covered expanse known as the Green river basin. In the south- west corner of the Territory is a small area drained by means of Bear river into Great Salt Lake.

The geological structure of Wyoming is even more complicated than its surface features. In the north- western corner is an area in which volcanic action, as represented in hot springs and geysers, is still alive, while the evidences of volcanic action upon a tremendous scale, in recent geological time, are seen in the form of sheets of lava and volcanic breccia, which are spread over the land, and from which mountain ranges have been carved. Most of this region is comprised in the Yettowstonz NationaL Park (q.v.), which has been set apart from settlement by the general Government. Many of the niountain slopes show a succession of the stratified formations, from the Triassic downwards through the series. The plains region is mainly floored by Tertiary and Cretaceous formations, as is also the case with the higher plateaus and with the Green river basin.

The native fauna of Wyoming resembles that of the other north- west Territories. The larger quadrupeds, which were formerly very abundant, and which are now not unfrequently to be met with, are the grizzly, black, and cinnamon bears, the North American panther, the elk, the moose, two or three species of deer, and the antelope. Upon the plains are seen the grey wolf and the coyote, the jack rabbit, the prairie dog, and the gopher. The buffalo, which was formerly extremely abundant upon the plains, is now practically extinct.

The eastern plains are mainly grass-covered, but as one goes westward the grass gradually disappears, and gives place to artemisia and greasewood. Forests are confined almost entirely to the mountains, although the high plains in the Yellowstone Park, in the north-western corner of the Territory, are covered with timber, The forests are composed of quaking aspen upon the lower slopes, succeeded at greater elevations by pines and spruces, the ite' limit of timber in the Territory being about 10,000 feet above the sea.

Wyoming has, in common with most of the western States, an arid climate. In the arable regions the rainfall is nowhere sufficient for the needs of agriculture, and irrigation is universally practised. The rainfall ranges in this part of the Territory from

' France.

718

8 to 15 inches, being greater in the eastern part and diminishing westward, vee the mountains it probably reaches, if it does not exceed, 30 inches annually. :

The temperature ranges with the elevation. Upon the plains and plateaus and in the valleys (this comprising nearly all the habitable parts of Wyoming) the aunual temperature is between 40° and 50° F. Upon the mountains it diminishes until at an altitude of 10,000 feet it reaches approximately the freezing point.

At the last census (1880) the Territory contained 20,789 inhabit- Popula- In 1870 there were only 9118, showing an increase of 128 tion.

ants, per cent, The population is now (1888) estimated at not far from 40,000. Asin all frontier communities, a large proportion con- sists of adult males. In 1880 there were 14,152 males to 6637 females. The proportion of the foreign born was large, there being 5850 of this class to 14,939 natives. ;

The Territory contains eight counties :—Albany (population 4626), Carbon (3438), Crook (239), Johnson (637), Laramie (6409), Sweet-water (2561), Uinta (2879), and Frémout (formed since 1880). The principal cities are Cheyenne, the capital, which is situated upon the plains, near the east base of the Laramie range (population in 1880, 3456); Laramie City, near the west base of the same range (2696); Rawlins, upon the high plateau forming the continental watershed (1451); and Evanston, in the south-west corner of the Territory (1277).

The industries of Wyoming mainly relate to the raising of cattle Cattle and to mining. The former industry is in proportion to the raising.

number of inhabitants very large, and has been until recently ex- tremely profitable. The raising of cattle is carried on at slight expense, the cattle being allowed to range freely over the plains, and little provision is made for feeding and shelter, even in winter, as the loss from exposure and starvation is not sufficiently great to warrant the additional expense. In 1880 the number of cattle was returned as 521.213, and sheep as 450,225. In 1887 the report of the governor states that the number of cattle has increased to 753,648, while that of sheep has slightly diminished, being 421,688.

Mines of gold and silver have been worked to a limited extent near the east base of the Wind River range and in the north-western part of the Territory, and also at the extreme south, in the Park range, but the production is insignificant. On the other hand, the coal mines of Wyoming are very valuable ; they are mainly situated in the southern part of the Territory, at Carbon, Rock Spring, Almy, and Twin Creek, on or near the Union Pacific Railroad. The production in 1886 was 829,355 tons, valued at $2,488,065.

As in other Territories, the government of Wyoming is under Govern- the immediate jurisdiction of the United States, the executive and ment.

judicial officers being appointed by the president. The treasurer is appointed bythe governor. TheTerritoryhas a legislature consisting of two houses, the members of which are elected by the people.

The area of Wyoming was in the main included in the Territory History.

of Louisiana, acquired by the United States by purchase from The western part was acquired by prior settlement, as was the case with Washington, Oregon, and Idaho. It was or- ganized as a Territory in 1868. The progress of settlement has until recent years been very slow, owing to the inhospitable character of the country along its southern border, traversed by the Union Pacific railroad, and to the occupation by Indians of the more fertile districts. Latterly, as the Indians have been removed, settlement has progressed more rapidly. (HieG.))*

WYON, THomas (1792-1817), medallist, was born at Birmingham in 1792, He was apprenticed to his father, the chief engraver of His Majesty's seals, and studied in the schools of the Royal Academy, London, where he gained silver medals in both the antique and the life class; he also obtained a gold medal from the Society of Arts, He was appointed probationary engraver to the mint in 1811, and soon after engraved his medal commemorative of the peace, and his Manchester Pitt medal. In 1815 he was appointed chief engraver to the mint; but he sank into ill-health, and died at Hastings on September 22, 1817, at the age of twenty-five.

A memoir of Wyon, with a list of his works, appeared in the Gentleman's Magazine for February 1818. His younger brother, Benjamin Wyon (1802-1858), and his nephews, Joseph Shepherd Wyon (1836-1873) and Alfred Benjamin Wyon (1837-1884), were also well-known medallists. They successively held the appointment of chief engraver of Her Majesty's seals.

WYON, Wittiam (1795-1851), medallist, cousin of Thomas Wyon, was born at Birmingham in 1795. In 1809 he was apprenticed to his father, a die-sinker. Removing to London, he studied the works of Flaxman, attended the schools of the Royal Academy, and gained a gold medal from the Society of Arts for a copy of the head

of Ceres, and a second for an original group. In 1816 he was appointed assistant engraver to the mint, and in 1828 chief engraver; in 1831 he was elected associate and in 1838 full member of the Royal Academy. He executed coinages for George IV., William IV., and Queen Victoria, the Peninsular, Trafalgar, and Cabul medals, the William TV. coronation medal, and those of many learned societies. He died at Brighton on October 29, 1851. A memoir, with a list of his works, by Nicholas Carlisle, was privately issued in 1837.

WYTTENBACH, Daniez Atpert (1746-1820), a famous classical scholar, was born at Bern, of a family whose nobility and distinction he loved to recall. In par- ticular, he was proud of his descent from Thomas Wytten-bach, professor of theology in Basel at the end of the 15th and beginning of the 16th centuries, who numbered the Reformer Zwingli and other distinguished men among his pupils. Wyttenbach's own father was also a theological professor of considerable note, first at Bern, and then at Marburg. His removal to Marburg, which took place in 1756, was partly due to old associations, for the elder Wyttenbach had studied there under the famous Christian Wolff, and embodied the philosophical principles-of his master in his own theological teaching. Soon after the Wyttenbachs settled in Germany the great war broke out, and the region around Marburg suffered severely, so that the scenes and excitement of military life must have powerfully affected the growth of the boy's somewhat sensitive character. After a careful preliminary education, partly in the schools of Bern and Marburg, partly by private tutors, and always under the eye of a severe but conscientious and affectionate father, young Wyttenbach entered at the age of fourteen the university of Marburg, and passed through a four years' course there. His parents intended that he should become a Lutheran pastor. The first two years were given up to general education, principally to mathematics, ' philology," and history. The professor of mathematics, Spangenberg, acquired great influence over young Wyttenbach. He is said to have taught his subject with great clearness, and with equal seriousness and piety, often referring to God as the supreme mathematician, who had constructed all things by number, measure, and weight. " Philology" in the German univer- sities of that age meant Hebrew and Greek. These two languages were generally handled by the same professor, and were taught almost solely to

theological students. Wyttenbach's university course at Marburg was troubled about the middle of the time by mental unrest, due to the fascination exercised over him by Bunyan's Pilgrim's Pro- gress, Like Bunyan himself, he believed that he was doomed to perdition, and that he had committed the inex- piable sin against the Holy Ghost. The disorder was cured by Spangenberg, The principal study of the third year was metaphysics, which took Wyttenbach entirely captive. The fourth aud last year was to be devoted to theology and Christian dogma. Wyttenbach had hitherto submitted passively to his father's wishes concerning his career, in the hope that some unexpected occurrence might set him free. But he now turned away from theological lectures, and privately devoted his time to the task of deepening and extending his knowledge of Greek literature. His father was wise enough to leave him to follow his own bent. To use Wyttenbach's own words, he looked up to every Greek book as a temple of wisdom. But the struggle for knowledge was hard, and taxed all his powers, He possessed at the time, as he tells us, no more acquaint- ance with Greek than his own pupils at a later time could acquire from him during four months' study. He was almost entirely without equipment beyond the bare texts of the authors. Each author only yielded after a pro-

tracted siege. But Wyttenbach was undaunted, and four years' persistent study gave him a knowledge of Greek such as few Germans of that time possessed. His love for philosophy carried him towards the Greek philosophers, especially Plato. He describes himself as walking about the meadows near Marburg, conning portions of his text of Plato, which he had taken to pieces for easier carriage. During this period Ruhnken's notes on the Platonic lexicon of 7imzus fell into his hands. Ruhnken was for him al- most a superhuman being, whom he worshipped day and night, and with whom he imagined himself as holding converse in the spirit. Taking up the works of Julian, he emended them on the principles of Ruhnken. When Wyttenbach was twenty-two he determined to seek else- where the aids to study which Marburg could not afford. His father, fully realizing the strength of his son's pure passion for scholarship, permitted and even advised him to seek Heyne at Gottingen. From this teacher he received the utmost kindness and encouragement, and he was

urged by him to dedicate to Ruhnken the first fruits of his scholarship. Wyttenbach therefore set to work on some notes to Julian, Eunapius, and Aristeenetus, and Heyne wrote to Ruhnken to bespeak his favourable consideration for the work. Before it reached him Ruhnken wrote a kind letter to Wyttenbach, which the recipient "read, re-read, and kissed," and another on receipt of the tract, in which the great scholar declared that he had not looked to find in Germany such knowledge of Greek, such power of criticism, and such mature judgment, especially in one so young. Wyttenbach was now able with boldness to devote himself to the career of a scholar. He studied with ardour the works of the great scholars of the Nether- lands, and in his morning and evening petitions prayed that it might be given him to see Valckenaer and Ruhnken in the flesh, By Heyne's advice, he now worked hard at Latin, which he knew far less thoroughly than Greek, and we soon find Heyne praising his progress in Latin style to both Ruhnken and Valckenaer. He now wrote to ask their advice about his scheme of coming to the Netherlands to follow the profession of a scholar. Ruhnken strongly exhorted Wyttenbach to follow his own example, for he too had been designed by his parents for the Christian ministry in Germany, but had settled at Leyden on the invitation of Hemsterhuis. Valckenaer's answer was to the same effect, but he added that Wyttenbach's letter would have been pleasanter to him had it been free from excessive compliments. These letters were forwarded to the elder Wyttenbach, with a strong recommendation from Heyne. The old man had been himself in Leyden in his youth, and entertained an admiration for the scholarship of the Netherlands; so his consent was easily won. Young Wyttenbach reached Leyden in 1770. According to his own description, he approached the gates of the city with a feeling of religious awe such as might have passed over an ancient visitant to Athens and the Acropolis. As he neared Ruhnken's door, the words of Homer "surely there is some god within" were in his mind. He was delighted to find the great man entirely free from the pomposity and assumption which had made many of the German professors disagreeable to him. A year was spent with great contentment, in learning the language of the people, in attending the lectures of the great "duumviri" of Leyden, and in collating MSS. of Plutarch. At the end of 1771 a professor was wanted at Amsterdam for the College of the Remonstrants. By the recommendation of Ruhnken, Wyttenbach obtained the chair, which he

filled with great success for eight years. His lectures took a wide range. Those on Greek were repeated also to the students of the university of Amsterdam (the " Atheneum"), In 1775 a visit was made to Paris, which was fruitful both of new

friendships and of progress in study. About this time, on the advice of Ruhnken, Wyttenbach began the issue of his Bibliotheca Critica, which appeared at intervals for the next thirty years. The object professed in the preface was to help in rescuing classical studies from the neglect into which they had fallen, by creating an interest in new works of merit, through critical notices, embody- ing the results of original research by the writer himself. Tt was in fact a kind of critical review written by one man. The methods of criticism employed were in the main those established by Hemsterhuis, and carried on by Valckenaer and Ruhnken, and the publication met with acceptance from the learned all over Europe. In 1777 the younger Burmann (' Burmannus Secundus ") retired from his professorship at the Atheneum, and Wyttenbach hoped to succeed him. When another received the appoint- ment, he was sorely discouraged. Only his regard for Ruhnken and for Dutch freedom (in his own words "Ruhnkeni et Batavee libertatis cogitatio") kept him in Holland. For fear of losing him, the authorities at Amsterdam nominated him in 1779 professor of philosophy. Some of his lectures given in this capacity were worked up for publication ; in particular a treatise on logic belongs to this period. In philosophy Wyttenbach never shook off the influence of Woltf, and the Kantians were irate because he failed to appreciate their master. In 1785 Toll, Burmann's successor, resigned, and Wyttenbach was at once appointed to succeed him. His full title was " pro- fessor of history and eloquence and Greek and Latin liter- ature." Hehad hardly got to work in his new office when Valckenaer died, and he received a call to Leyden. Greatly to Ruhnken's disappointment, he declined to abandon the dnties he had so recently undertaken. In 1787 began the internal commotions in Holland, afterwards to be aggra- vated by foreign interference. Scarcely during the re- maining thirty-three years of Wyttenbach's life was there a moment of peace in the land. He held entirely aloof from factions, and yearned continually after quiet and

reconciliation. About this time two requests were made to him for an edition of the Moralia of Plutarch, for which a recension of the tract 'De sera numinis vindicta" had marked him out in the eyes of scholars. One request came from the famous '"Societas Bipontina," the other from the delegates of the Clarendon Press at Oxford. Wyttenbach, influenced at once by the reputation of the university, and by the liberality of the Oxonians in tendering him assistance of different kinds, declined the offer of the Bipontine Society,—very fortunately, since their press was soon destroyed by the French. 'The fortunes of Wyttenbach's edition curiously illustrate the text '"habent sua fata libelli." The first portion was safely conveyed to Oxford in 1794. Then war broke out between Holland and Great Britain. Randolph, Wyttenbach's Oxford correspondent, advised that the next portion should be sent through the British ambassador at Hamburg, and the MS. was duly consigned to him "in a little chest well pro- tected by pitch." After sending Randolph a number of letters without getting any answer, Wyttenbach in disgust put all thought of the edition from him, and a shudder ran throngh his frame whenever Plutarch was mentioned. At last, after simultaneous letters had been despatched to a good many delegates of the Clarendon Press, the missing box was discovered in a forgotten corner at Hamburg, where it had lain for two years and a half. The work was finally completed in 1805. Meanwhile Wyttenbach received repeated invitations to leave Amsterdam, which were refused. One came from his native city Bern, another from Leyden, where vacancies had been created by the refusal of professors to swear allegiance to the new Dutch republic set up in 1795, in which Wyttenbach had

acquiesced. But he only left Amsterdam in 1799, when on Ruhnken's death he succeeded him at Leyden. Even then his chief object in removing was to facilitate an arrangement by which the necessities of his old master's family might be relieved. His removal came too late in life, and he was never so happy at Leyden as he had been at Amsterdam. Before long appeared the ever-delightful Lnfe of Dad Ruhnken. Though written in Latin, this biography deserves to rank high in the modern literature of its class. It is composed in a style that is lucid, flowing, and graceful, not

imitated from any one ancient author, but (a few grammatical matters apart) such as we can inlagine that some gifted Roman of the classical time might well have struck out for himself. One of Ruhnken's friends called it "a Milesian tale," partly from the fascin- ation of the style, and partly because the book often took such a wide range that Ruhnken was lost amid extended observations springing out of his relation to the classical studies of his age. Of Wyttenbach's life at Leyden there is little to tell. The continual changes in state affairs greatly disorganized the universities of Holland, and Wyttenbach had to work in face of much detraction ; still his success as a teacher was very great. In 1805 he narrowly escaped with his life from the great gunpowder explosion, which killed 150 people, among them the Greek scholar Luzac, Wyttenbach's colleague in the university. One of Wyttenbach's letters gives a vivid account of the disaster. During the last years of his life he suffered severely from illness and became nearly blind. After the conclusion of his edition of Plutarch's MJoralia in 1805, the only important work he was able to publish was his well-known edition of Plato's Phzdo. Many honours were conferred upon him both at home and abroad, and in particular he was made a member of the French Institute. Shortly before his death, he obtained the licence of the

| king of Holland to marry his sister's daughter, Johanna

Gallien, who had for twenty years devoted herself to him as housekeeper, secretary, and aider in his studies. The sole object of the marriage was to secure for her a_ better provision after her husband's death, because as the widow of a professor she would be entitled toa pension. Johanna Gallien was a woman of remarkable culture and ability, and wrote works held in great repute at that time. On the festival of the tercentenary of the foundation of the university of Marburg, celebrated in 1827, the degree of doctor was conferred upon her. Wyttenbach died of apoplexy in 1820, and he was buried in the garden of his country house near Amsterdam, within sight, as he noted, of the dwellings of Descartes and Boerhaave.

Although his work can hardly be set on the same level as that of Hemsterhuis, Valckcnaer, and Ruhnken, yet he was a very eminent exponent of the sound methods of criticism which they established. These

four men, more than any others after Bentley, laid the foundations of Greek scholarship as it exists to-day. The precise study of grammar, syntax, and style, and the careful criticism of texts by the light of the best manuscript evidence, were upheld by these scholars in the Netherlands when they were almost entirely neglected elsewhere on the Continent, and were only pursued with partial success in England. Wyttenbach may fairly be regarded as closing a great period in the history of scholarship. He lived indeed to see the new birth of German classical learning, but his work was donc, and he was unaffected by it. Wyttenbach's criticism was less rigorons, precise, and masterly, but perhaps more sensitive and sympathetic than that of his great predecessors in the Netherlands. In aetual acquaintance with the philosophical writings of the ancients, he has probably never been surpassed. In character he was upright and simple-minded, but shy and retiring, and often failed to make himself appreciated. His life was not passed without strife, but his few friends were warmly attached to him, and his many pupils were for the most part his cnthusiastie admirers. Wyttenbach's biography was written in a somewhat dry and lifeless manner by Mahne, one of his pupils, who also published some of his letters. His Opuscula, other than those published in the Bibliotheca Critica, were collected in two volumes (Leyden, 1823). @. S2R9)

716

xX

*represents the Pheenician letter Samekh, to which the *% old Ionian %& is singularly close in form. This form is familiar to Greek students, because it belongs to the alphabet that superseded the alphabet of the Eubcean type which was first in use at Athens. But the Eubcean form of the letter was + (see Roehl, [.G.A., No. 372) ; and this form went with the Eubcean alphabet of Chalcis to the western Hellenic world, and passed in Italy into the form X, which survives with us. The history of the symbol in Italy is not, however, perfectly clear, because in the extremely archaic alphabets of Czere and Formello we find not only + but also a symbol &, and this has the place of Xt in the Jonian alphabet, whereas + stands after U, instead of in its proper place, which has been thus usurped by*

this huge and otherwise unknown intruder. There would be no difficulty in supposing that + is only a curtailed portion of the fuller form, and that the two survived for a time side by side in the alphabet, perhaps with some differ- entiation of value, were it not that this is inconsistent with the ultimate derivation of the Italic alphabet from Chalcis, where the large form certainly does not appear. 'The name Xt (ksi) is clearly Greek, not, like the names of the letters in general, borrowed from the Pheenician. It is obviously modelled upon Psi, just as Psi was itself modelled upon Pi. The value of the sound in Phcenician was probably a strong sibilant, with a weak guttural preceding. In the old inscrip- tions of the Aigean Islands —Thera, Naxos, &c.—we find a double symbol KM (z.e., &s); in Naxos we find also XZ and 8 (z.e., hs), which indicates a guttural breathing before the s; andin old Attic inscriptions also we find X®.

But this same symbol X had another very different value in Greece from fs, and by this value, 7.¢c., a guttural aspirate, £h or ch, it is familiar to Greek students under the name Chi. This value is confined to alphabets of the Ionian type. In the islands we find KQ or KH, also § at Thera, digraphs being employed in the same manner as for ks and ps. This same guttural sound is represented in alphabets of the Eubcean type under the form Y or , which appears naturally in the Cere alphabet, but in the derived Italian alphabets was retained by the Etruscan only. In Greece it was found in Beotia and the Pelo- ponnesus: ¢.g., it appears on the tripod at Delphi set up by the Lacedemonians to commemorate the victory of Plateeze. But in the Ionic alphabet alone this same symbol has a totally different value, to wit, ps, and to this value the Greeks gave the name Psi. It is noteworthy that the old Attic way of writing this double sound was 2. The origin of this second X and that of its companion Y is very uncertain. The Attic writings above mentioned, and the of Thera, give colour to the idea that X and ® may be survivals of a ruder alphabet, superseded by the Phoenician, with the values & and p. On the other hand, it does not seem impossible that Y, with the value ch, may be a descendant of the useless $ (koppa), obtained by opening out the circle (Taylor, Alphabet, ii. 93); but the same writer maintains that X is a variation of K, which seems very improbable. It is at

least as credible that it is a variant of Samekh, in which the guttural element of the original complex sound superseded the sibilant.

There is nothing noteworthy in the history of # in English. In French, when medial, it has generally passed into ss, as in lazsser (from laxare); and it has the same sound, even when written, as in soixante. It is frequently found at the end of words owing to a mis-writing, the contraction for final ws having been confounded with it,

las in plurals, yeux, animaux, &c., where the uw has been added again, also in époux (esponsus), faux (falsus), roux (russus), &c. Not unnaturally the x has. been substituted still further, as in prox; in other cases, like croix, we have probably a learned imitation of the Latin. Italian also substitutes ss for x, as in massemo for maximus, lussuria, &c. ,On « in Spanish, see vol. xxii. p. 350.

XALAPA. See Janapa.

XANTHUS, an ancient city of Lycta (¢.v.), on the river Xanthus, about 8 miles above its mouth. It is chiefly memorable in history for its two sieges, and the desperate but unavailing resistance made on both occasions. The first siege was by the Persian general Harpagus (see vol. xviii. p. 566), when the acropolis was burned and the inhabitants, with all their possessions, perished (Herod., i. 176). The city was afterwards rebuilt; and in 42 B.c. it was besieged by the Romans under Brutus. It was taken by storm and set on fire; and the inhabitants, refusing to surrender, all perished in the flames. During its prosper- ity, Xanthus contained many fine temples and other build- ings, extensive remains of which, in excellent preservation, were discovered by Sir C. Fellows (Lxcursion in Asia Minor, 1839). A large collection of marbles, chiefly sepulchral, from Xanthus is now in the British Museum.

*XAVIER, Francisco (1506-1552), surnamed the ** Apostle of the Indies," was the youngest son of Juan de Jasso, privy councillor to Jean d'Albret, king of Navarre, and his wife Maria Azpilcueta Xavier, sole heiress of two noble Navarrese families. He was born at his mother's castle of Xavero or Xavier, at the foot of the Pyrenees and close to the little town of Sanguesa, on 7th April 1506, according to a family register, though his earlier*

biographers fix his birth in 1497. Following a Spanish custom of the time, which left the surname of either parent optional with children, he was called by his mother's family name, and grew up tall, strong, healthy, and active both in mind and body, with a lively, cheerful disposition. He showed no taste, however, for the career of arms, and early dis- closed a preference for literary pursuits. His father accordingly strained his slender resources to send him, in 1524, to the university of Paris, then much frequented by Spaniards, where he entered the College of St Barbara, and made such rapid progress that he was appointed in 1528 lecturer in Aristotelian philosophy at the Collége de Beau- vais. In 1530 he took his degree as master of arts. The same year which saw his nomination as lecturer at the university saw also the arrival there of the man who was to mould his destiny and that of his chamber-mate Pierre le Fevre, namely, Ignatius Loyola, even then meditating the foundation of his celebrated institute (see JEsurrs, vol. xill. p. 652). Ignatius speedily recognized in Xavier the qualities which made him the first missionary of his time, —and set himself to win him as an associate in his vast enterprise. Xavier, after a protracted resistance, yielded to the spell, and was one of the little band of seven persons, including Loyola himself, who took the original Jesuit vows and founded the company, on 15th August 1534, in the crypt of Notre Dame de Montmartre. They continued in Paris for two years longer, though there is some uncertainty whether Xavier retained his chair; but on 15th November 1536 they started for Italy, to concert with Ignatius (then in Spain, but purposing to join them) plans for a mission to convert the Moslems of Palestine. About Epiphany-tide 1537, after a journey attended with much fatigue and some danger, owing to the disturbed

il

posture of political affairs, they arrived in Venice, where they found Ignatius awaiting them. As some months must needs elapse before they could sail for the Holy Land, Ignatius determined that the time should be spent partly in hospital work at Venice and later in the journey to Rome, there to obtain their credentials, Accordingly, Xavier devoted himself for

nine weeks to the care of the patients in the hospital for incurables, at the end of which time he set out with eight companions for Rome, where Pope Paul IIT. received them favourably, sanctioned their enterprise, and gave them facilities for obtaining ordina- tion. Returning to Venice, Xavier was ordained priest on Midsummer Day 1537; but the outbreak of war between Venice and Turkey put an end to the Palestine expedition. Hereupon the companions agreed to disperse for a twelve- month's home mission work in the Italian cities, and Boba- dilla and Xavier betook themselves, first to Monselice, thence to Bologna, where they remained till summoned to Rome by Ignatius at the close of 1538, to consider his plans for erecting the company into a religious order, with a formal constitution under papal sanction. 'The draft rules were signed by the whole number on 15th April

1539, though it was not till 1540 that the pope's confirma-

tion was given, nor was it published till 1541. While the remaining members dispersed anew for work in various parts of Italy, Ignatius retained Xavier at Rome as secret- ary to the new institute. Meanwhile John IIL, king of Portugal, had resolved on sending a mission to his East Indian dominions, and, at the instance of his minister Govea, applied through his envoy Pedro de Mascarenhas to the pope for six Jesuits to undertake the task. Ignatius could spare but two, and chose Rodriguez and Bobadilla for the purpose ; and the former set out at once for Lisbon to confer with the king. Bobadilla, sent for to Rome, arrived there just before Mascarenhas was about to depart, but fell too ill to respond to the call made on him. Hereupon Ignatius on 15th March 1540 told Xavier to leave Rome the next day with Mascarenhas, in order to join Rodriguez in the Indian mission. Xavier complied, merely waiting long enough to obtain the pope's benediction, and set out for Lisbon, where he was presented to the king, and soon won his entire confidence, attested notably by procuring for him from the pope four briefs, one of them appointing him papal nuncio in the Indies. On 7th April 1541, his thirty-fifth birthday, he sailed from Lisbon with Martin Alphonso de Souza, governor of India, and, refusing all accommodations for the voyage offered him, except a few books and some clotliing, lived amongst the common sailors on board, ministering to their religious and temporal

needs, especially during an outbreak of scurvy. After five months' voyage the ship reached Mozambique, where the captain resolved to winter, and Xavier was prostrated with a severe attack of fever. When the voyage was resumed, the ship touched at the Mohammedan town of Melinde, whose sultan told Xavier of the marked decline of Islam. But neither there nor at the island of Socotra, the next point of arrival, where Christianity was equally declining, was the missionary able to remain long enough to attempt any work ; and he finally reached Goa on 6th May 1542. Exhibiting his brief to Joao d' Albuquerque, bishop of Goa, he asked his permission to officiate in the diocese, and at once began a mission, walking through the streets ringing a small bell, and telling all those attracted by its sound to come themselves, and send their children and servants, to the " Christian doctrine" or catechetical instruc- tion in the principal church. He spent five months actively employed in Goa, where he is stated to have effected much reformation in morals, and then turned his attention to

the fishery coast, extending from Cape Comorin to the:

Paumbum Pass, where he had heard that the Paravas, a

tribe engaged in the pearl-fishery, had relapsed into heathen- ism after having professed Christianity. He laboured assiduously amongst them for fifteen months, and at the end of 1543 returned to Goa to procure colleagues for the mission. 'Travancore was his next field of action, and there he is said to have succeeded in founding no fewer than forty- five Christian settlements, each with numerous converts. It is to be noted that his own letters contain, both at this time and later on, express disproof of his possession of that miraculous gift of tongues with which he was credited even in his lifetime, and which is attributed to hin in the Breviary office for his festival. Not only was he obliged to employ interpreters, but he relates that in their absence he was compelled to use signs only, and he never appears to have displayed any special aptitude for acquiring new languages. He sent a missionary to the isle of Manaar, and himself visited Ceylon, where he proved unsuccessful in an effort to invoke Portuguese interference in a dynastic dispute, and betook himself thence to Meliapur, the tradi- tionary tomb of St Thomas the apostle, which he reached in

April 1544, continuing there four months. His next sphere of active work was Malacca, which he reached on 25th September 1545, and where he remained another four months, but had comparatively little success, and abandoned it at last as wholly intractable. While there he addressed a letter to King John of Portugal, urging him to set up the Inquisition in Goa to repress Judaism, and was readily listened to, although the actual erection of the tribunal did not take place till 1560, some years after his own death. After a missionary expedition to Amboyna and other isles of the Molucca group, he returned to Malacca in July 1547, and found three Jesuit recruits from Europe awaiting him. An attack upon Malacca by the sultan of Acheen, which the governor was disinclined to punish, aroused the warlike temper which slumbered in Xavier's breast, and he compelled the organization of an expedition to chastise the invaders, which proved a triumph and much increased his local influence. While in Malacca ho met one Han-Siro, a Japanese exile (known to the bio- graphies as Anger), whose conversation fired him with zeal for the conversion of Japan. But he first paid a series of visits to the scenes of his former labours, and then, return- ing to Malacca, took ship for Japan, accoinpanied by Han- Siro, now known as Paul of the Holy Faith. After a perilous voyage they reached Kagoshima, at the south of Kiusiu, the southernmost of the larger Japanese islands, and in the territory of the daimio of Satsuma. Kago- shima was Han-Siro's birthplace, and he was himself heartily welcomed by his friends, whom he induced to extend their good-will to his companions. The daimio, who desired to secure the Portuguese trade, was friendly at first; but, finding that the merchant vessels preferred the safer anchorage of Firando (or Hirado) far to the north of his fief, he withdrew his permission to preach and threatened converts with the penalty of death. Xavier judged it well to move elsewhither, and travelled on foot to Firando, making some converts on the road, aud prov- ing far more successful at Firando itself than in Kagoshima. Thence he proceeded to the capital of the empire, the city then known as Miako, subsequently as Kioto, and now as Saikio or "western capital." But the mikados or emperors had been little more than puppets under the control of the shoguns or hereditary commanders-in-chief for some centuries before this time, so that Xavier judged that he could work more effectually at the courts of the great daimios than at that of their nominal sovereign. He also noticed that asceticism and poverty

had no such attractive power in Japan as they had exercised in India, and deter- mined to try the effect of some measure of pomp and dis- play on his return from Miako. Making but a brief stay

at Firando, he went to Amanguchi (Yamaguchi), capital of Suwo, and there presented himself to the daimio in some state, bringing him valuable presents. He was allowed to preach, and had some success, which encouraged him to proceed to Fucheo, capital of the fief of Bungo (Bugo), where his mission prospered more than anywhere else in Japan ; and, feeling that he could now safely leave the work in other hands, he quitted that empire in 1551, in- tending to attempt next the conversion of China. On board the "Santa Cruz," the vessel in which he sailed to Malacca, he discussed this project with Diego Pereira, the captain, and devised the plan of persuading the viceroy of Portuguese India to despatch an embassy to China, in whose train he might enter, in despite of the law which then excluded foreigners from that empire. He reached Goa in February 1552, and after settling some disputes which had arisen in his absence obtained from the viceroy consent to the plan of a Chinese embassy and to the nomination of Pereira as envoy. Large sums for the necessary expenses were contributed by the treasury, by Pereira himself, and by subscriptions from private persons interested in the missionary part of the scheme. Xavier left India on 25th April 1552 and betook himself to Malacca, there to meet Pereira and to re-embark on the "Santa Cruz." But Alvaro d' Ataide, governor of Malacca, had a private grudge against Pereira, and besides desired the Chinese embassy for himself, and therefore threw diffi- culties in the way of the expedition, though Xavier, anticipating something of the kind, had procured for him the high office of captaincy of the neighbouring seas, and had also provided himself with stringent orders from the viceroy for the furtherance of his object, with threats of punishment for disobedience. Ataide, however, paid no attention to them, and laid an embargo on the "Santa Cruz." Xavier, who with characteristic modesty had kept his dignity as papal nuncio private (save for exhibit- ing the brief to the bishop at Goa on his first arrival in India), determined to avail himself of it now, and desired the vicar-general of Malacca to inform the governor, and to remind him that such

as impeded a nuncio in the dis- charge of his office were subject to excommunication by the pope himself. Ataide paid no more regard to the papal brief than he had done to the viceroy's letter, and even charged Xavier with having forged it,—if not both docu- ments,—while the people of Malacca sided with him against Xavier and Pereira. At last, however, he agreed to a com- promise. The embassy was stopped and Pereira detained, while some of the governor's people were substituted for as many of the crew of the "Santa Cruz," in which Xavier and two companions were allowed to proceed. The vicar- general asked him to take formal leave of the governor; but he refused, saying that they would meet no more till the day of judgment, when Ataide must give account for his resistance to the spread of the gospel, and, shaking the dust of Malacca from his shoes, he embarked 16th July 1552. After a short stay at Singapore, whence he de- spatched several letters to India and Europe, the ship at the end of August 1552 reached San-chan (Chang-chuang), an island at no great distance from Canton, which served as port and rendezvous for Europeans, not then admitted to trade directly with China. Xavier was seized with fever soon after his arrival, and was, in addition, delayed by the failure of the interpreter he had engaged, as well as by the reluctance of the Portuguese to attempt the voyage to Canton for the purpose of landing him. He arranged for his passage in a Chinese junk and had made all other preparations for starting, when he was again attacked by fever, and died on 2d December 1552. He was buried close to the cabin where he had died, but his body was later transferred to Malacca, and thence to Goa, where it

.purity, integrity, and benevolence.

XEN—-X EN

still lies. He was beatified by Paul V. in 1619 and canonized by Gregory XV. in 1621.

The chicf authorities for the life of St Francis Xavier are De Vita Sancti Francisct Xaverti Libri VI., by the Jesuit Torsellino (Tur-

'sellinus), Rome, 1596, of which there is a vigorous English version,

Paris, 1632; another biography by Lucena, Lisbon, 1600; his Letters, published in seven books by the Jesuit Poussines (Pos- sinus), Rome, 1667 ; a fuller collection of the Letters by another Jesuit, Menchacha, Bologna, 1795, translated into French by Léon Pagés, Paris, 1854 ; Faria y Souza, Asia Portuguesa, Lisbon, 1655 ; Bouhours, Vie de St Francois Xavier, Paris, 1684; Bartoli, Asia, part i, Rome, 1653; H. J. Coleridge, Life and Letters of St Francis Xavier, London, 1872; while a graphic sketch of the more striking episodes is to be found in Sir James Stephen's article on the " Founders of Jesuitism," reprinted in his Hssays in Ecclesi- astical Biography, London, 1849. (Re Es)

XENTA, a city of the United States, the county seat of Greene county, Ohio, is situated in the midst of a rich agricultural region, and on the Pittsburg, Cincinnati, and St Louis and the Dayton, Fort Wayne, and Chicago Rail- ways. Itis one of the oldest cities of Ohio, having been laid out in 1803. It is the seat of the Methodist Episco- pal Xenia college (1850), a Presbyterian theological semi- nary (1794), and Wilberforce university (1863), this last designed for the education of coloured youth of both sexes. The population in 1880 was 7026.

XENOCRATES of Chalcedon, scholarch or rector of the Academy from 339 to 314 B.c., was born in 396. Removing to Athens in early youth, he became the pupil of the Socratic /Mschines, but presently joined himself to Plato, whom he attended to Sicily in 361. Upon his master's death (347 B.c.), in company with Aristotle he paid a visit to Hermias at Atarneus. In 339, Aristotle being then in Macedonia, Xenocrates succeeded Speusippus in the presidency of the school, defeating his competitors Menedemus and Heracleides by a few votes. On three occasions he was member of an Athenian legation, once to Philip, twice to Antipater. Soon after the death of Demosthenes in 322, resenting the Macedonian influence then dominant at Athens, Xenocrates declined the citizen- ship offered to him at the instance of Phocion, and, being unable to pay the tax levied upon resident aliens, was, it is said, sold, or on the point of being sold, into slavery. He died in 314, and was succeeded as scholarch by Polemon, whom he had reclaimed from a life of profligacy. Besides Polemon, the statesman Phocion, Cheron tyrant of Pellene, the Academic Crantor, the Stoic Zeno, and Epicurus are alleged to have frequented his lectures.

Xenocrates's earnestness and strength of character won for him universal respect, and stories were remembered in proof of his Wanting in quickness of apprehension and in native grace, he made up for these deficiencies by a conscientious love of truth and an untiring industry. Less original than Speusippus, he adhered more closely to the letter of Platonic doctrinc, and is accounted the typical representative of the Old Academy. In his writings, which were numerous, he seems to have covered nearly the whole of the Academic programme ; but metaphysics and ethics were the subjects which principally engaged his thoughts. He is said to have invented, or at least to have emphasized, the tripartition of philosophy under the heads of physic, dialectic, and ethic.

In his ontology Xenocrates built upon Plato's foundations: that is to say, with Plato he postulated ideas or numbers to be the causes of nature's organic products, and derived these ideas or numbers from unity (which is active) and plurality (which is pass- ive). But he put upon this fundamental dogma a new interpreta- tion. According to Plato, existence is mind pluralized : mind as a unity, ¢.¢., universal mind, apprehends its own plurality as eternal, immutable, intelligible ideas; and mind as a plurality, «e., particular mind, perceives its own plurality as transitory, mutable, sensible things. The idea, inasmuch as it is a law of universal mind, which in particular minds produces aggregates of sensations called things, is a "determinant" (wépas éxov), and as sueh is styled " quantity " (ooév) and perhaps " number" (dp:Oués) ; but the ideal numbers are distinet from arithmetical numbers, and the elements of ideal numbers from the elements of arithmetical num- bers. Xenocrates, however, failing, as it would seem, to grasp the idealism which was the metaphysical foundation of Plato's theory

of natural kinds, took for his principles arithmetical unity and plurality, and accordingly identified ideal numbers with arithmetical numbers. In thus reverting to the crudities of certain Pytha- goreans he laid himself open to the criticisms of Aristotle, who, in his Metaphysics, recognizing amongst contemporary Platonists three principal groups—(1) those who, like Plato, distinguished mathematical and ideal numbers ; (2) those who,

like Xenocrates, identified them ; and (3) those who, like Speusippus, postulated mathematical numbers only—has much to say against the Xeno- crateau interpretation of the thcory, and in particular points out that, if the ideas are numbers made up of arithmetical units, they not only cease to be principles but also become subject to arithmetical operations. Xenocrates's theory of inorganic nature was substanti- ally identical with the theory of the elements which is propounded in the Timzus, 58 C sq. Nevertheless, holding that every dimen- sion has a principle of its own, he rejected the derivation of the elemental solids—pyramid, octahedron, icosahedron, and cube— from triangular surfaces, and in so far approximated to atomism. Moreover, to the tetrad of simple elements—namely, fire, air, water, carth—he added the wéumrry ovcla, ether.

His cosmology, which is drawn almost entirely from the Timexus, and, as he intimated, is not to be regarded as a cosmogony, should be studied in connexion with his psychology. Soul is a self-mov- ing number, derived from the two fundamental principles, unity (&) and plurality (vas dépicros), whence it obtains its powers of rest and motion. It is incorporeal, and may exist apart from body. The irrational soul, as well as the rational soul, is immortal. The universe, the heavenly bodies, man, animals, and presumably plants, are each of them endowed with a soul, which is more or less perfect according to the position which it occupies in the descend- ing scale of creation. With this Platonic philosopheme Xenocrates combines the eurrent theology, identifying the universe and the heavenly bodies with the greater gods, and reserving a place be- tween them and mortals for the lesser divinities.

If the extant authorities are to be trusted, Xenocrates recognized three grades of eognition, each appropriated to a region of its own, —namely, knowledge, opinion, and sensation, having for their re- spective objects supra-celestials or ideas, celestials or stars, and infra- celestials or things. Even here the mythological tendency displays itself, —voynrd, dofacrd, and aic@nrd being severally committed to Atropos, Lachesis, and Clotho. Of Xenocrates's logic we know only that with Plato he distinguished 76 xa@' atré and 7d mpés Ti, re- jecting the Aristotelian list of ten categorics as a superfluity.

Valuing philosophy chiefly for its influence upon conduct, Xeno- crates bestowed especial attention upon ethics. The catalogue of his works shows that he had written largely upon this subject ; but the indications of doctrine which have survived are scanty, and may be summed up in a few sentences. Things are goods, ills, or neutrals. Goods are of three sorts—mental, bodily, external ; but of all goods virtue is incomparably the greatest. Happiness con- sists in the practice of virtue, the requisite powers and opportunities being presupposed. Hence the virtuous man is always happy, though his happiness cannot be perfect unless he is adequately provided with personal aud extraneous advantages. The virtuous man is pure, not in act only, butalso in heart. To the attainment of virtue the best help is philosophy; for the philosopher does of his own accord what others do under the compulsion of law. Specula- tive wisdom and practical wisdom are to be distinguished. Meagre as these statements are, they suffice to show that in ethics, as else- where, Xenocrates worked npon Platonic lincs, and that in his theory of the relations of external advantages to happiness, as well as in the technicalities of his exposition, he closely resembled Aristotle.

Xenocrates was not in any sense a great thinker. His meta- physic was a travesty rather than a reproduction of that of his master. His ethic had little which was distinctive. But his austere life and commanding personality made him an effective teacher, and his influence, kept alive by his pnpils Polemon and Crates, ceased only when Arcesilaus, the founder of the so-called Second Academy, gave a new direction to the studies of the school.

Bibliography.—D. Van de Wynpersse, De Xenocrate Chalcedonio, Leyden, 1822; C. A. Brandis, Gesch. d. Griechisch-Rémischen Philosophie, Berlin, 1853, ii, 2, 1, 19-37; E. Zeller, Philosophie d. Griechen, Leipsic, 1875, ii., 1, 840-842, 862-883 ; F, W. A. Mullach, Fragmenta Philosophorum Grecorum, Paris, 1881, iii. 100-130. (Hi. JA.)

XENOPHANES of Colophon, the reputed founder of the Eleatic school of philosophy, is supposed to have been born in the third or fourth decade of the 6th century B.c. An exile from his Ionian home, he resided for a time in Sicily, at Zancle and at Catana, and afterwards estab- lished

himself in southern Italy, at Elea, a Phoczean colony founded in the sixty-first Olympiad (536-533). In one of the extant fragments he speaks of himself as having begun his wanderings sixty-seven years before, when he was twenty-five years of age, so that he was not less than ninety-two when he died. His teaching found expression

in poems, which he recited rhapsodically in the course of his travels. In the more considerable of the elegiac frag- ments which have survived he ridicules the doctrine of the migration of souls (xviii.), asserts the claims of wisdom against the prevalent athleticism, which seemed to him to conduce neither to the good government of states nor to their material prosperity (xix.), reprobates the introduction of Lydian luxury into Colophon (xx.), and recommends the reasonable enjoyment of social pleasures (xxi.), Of the epic fragments the more important are those in which he attacks the "anthropomorphic and anthropopathic poly-theism" of his contemporaries. According to Aristotle, "this first of Eleatic unitarians was not careful to say whether the unity which he postulated was finite or infinite, but, contemplating the whole firmament," (or perhaps "the whole world," for the word ovpavés is ambiguous), "declared that the One is God." Whether Xenophanes was a monotheist, whose assertion of the unity of God suggested to Parmenides the doctrine of the unity of Being, or a pantheist, whose assertion of the unity of God was also a declaration of the unity of Being, so that he anticipated Parmenides,—in other words, whether Xenophanes's teach-ing was purely theological or had also a philosophical significance,—is a question about which authorities have differed and will probably continue to differ. The silence of the extant fragments, which have not one word about the unity of Being, favours the one view ; the voice of anti- quity, which proclaims Xenophanes the founder of Eleati- cism, has been thought to favour the other.

Of Xenophanes's utterances about (1) God, (2) the world, (3) knowledge, the following survive. (1) " There is one God, greatest among gods and men, neither in shape nor in thought like unto mortals. .. . He is all sight, all mind, all ear (7.e., not a com- posite organism). . . . Without an effort

ruleth he all things by thought. . . . He abideth ever in the same place motionless, and it befitteth him not to wander hither and thither. . . . Yet men imagine gods to be born, and to have senscs, and voice, and body, like themselves. . . . Even so the gods of the Ethiopians are swarthy and fiat-nosed, the gods of the Thracians are fair-haired and blue-eyed. . . . Even so Homer and Hesiod attributcd to the gods all that is a shame and a reproach among men—theft, adultery, deceit, and other lawless acts. . . . Even so lions and horses and oxen, if they had hands wherewith to gravc images, would fashion gods after thcir own shapes and make them bodies like to their own. (2) From earth all things are and to earth all things return. . .. From carth and water come all of us… . The sea is the well whence water springeth. . . . Here at our fect is the end of the earth where it reacheth unto air, but, below, its foundations are without end. . . . The rainbow, which men call Iris, is a cloud that is purple and red and yellow. (3) No man hath certainly known, nor shall certainly know, aught of that which I say about the gods and about all things ; for, be that which he saith ever so perfect, yet doth he not know it ; all things are matters of opinion. . . – That which I say is opinion like unto truth. . . . The gods did not reveal all things to mortals in the beginning ; long is the search ere man findeth that which is better."

There is very little secondary evidence to record. " The Eleatic school," says the Stranger in Plato's Sophist, 242 D, " beginning with Xenophanes, and even earlier, starts from the principle of the unity of all things."" Aristotle, in a passage already cited, Jleta- physics, A5,speaks of Xenophanes as the first of the Eleatic unitarians, adding that his monotheism was reached through the contempla- tion of the ovpavés. Theophrastus (in Simplicius's 4d Physica, 5) sums up Xenophanes's teaching in the propositions, "The All is One and the One is God." Timon (in Sext. Empir., Pyrrh., i. 224), ignoring Xenophancs's theology, makes him resolve all things into one and the same unity. The demonstrations of the unity and the attributes of God, with which the treatise De Melisso, Xenophane, et Gorgia (now no longer ascribed to Aristotle or Theophrastus) ac- credits Xenophanes, are plainly framed on the model of Eleatic proofs of the unity and the attributes of the Ent, and must therec- fore be sct aside. The epitomators of a later time add nothing to the testimonies already enumerated.

Thus, whereas in his writings, so far as they are known to us, Xenophanes appears as a theologian protesting against an anthropo- morphic polytheism, the ancients seem to have regarded him asa philosopher asserting the unity of Being. How are we to under- stand these conflicting, though not irreconcilable, testimonies ? According to Zeller, the discrepancy is only apparent. The Greek

gods being the powers of nature personified, pantheism lay nearer to hand than monotheism. Xcnophanes was then a pantheist. Accordingly his assertion of the unity of God was at the same time a declaration of the unity of Being, and in virtue of this declaration he is entitled to rank as the founder of Eleaticism, inasmuch as the philosophy of Parmenides was his forerunner's pantheism divested of its theistic element. This reconciliation of the internal and the external evidence, countenanced as it is by Theophrastus, one of the best-informed of the ancient historians, and approved by Zeller, one of the most acute of the modern critics, is more than plausible ; but there is something to be said on the contrary part. In the first place, it may be doubted whether to a Greek of the 6th century pantheism was nearer than monotheism. Secondly, the external evidence does not bear examination. The Platonic testimony, if it proved anything, would prove too much, namely, that the doctrine of the unity of Being originated, not with Xeno- phanes, but before him ; and, in fact, the passage from the Sophist no more proves that Plato attributed to Xenophanes the philosophy of Parmenides than Theaxtetus, 160 D, proves that Plato attributed to Homer the philosophy of Heraclitus. Again, Aristotle's descrip- tion of Xenophanes as the first of the Eleatie unitarians does not necessarily imply that the unity asserted by Xenophanes was the unity asserted by Parmenides; the phrase, "contemplating the firmament (or the world), he declared that the One is God," leaves it doubtful whether Aristotle attributed to Xenophanes any philosophical theory whatever; and the epithet d-ypocxbrepos dis- courages the belief that Aristotle regarded Xenophanes as the author of a new and important departure. Thirdly, when Xeno- phanes himself says that his theories about gods and about things are not knowledge, that his utterances are not verities but verisi- militudes, and that, so far from

learning things by revelation, man must laboriously seek a better opinion, he plainly renounces the "disinterested pursuit of truth." If then he was indifferent to the problem, he ean hardly be credited with the Eleatic solution. In the judgment of the present writer, Xenophanes was neither a philosopher nor a sceptic. He was not a philosopher, for he despaired of knowledge. He was nota sceptic, if by '"'sceptic" is meant the misologist whose despair of knowledge is the consequence of disappointed endeavour, for he had never hoped. Rather he was a theologian who arrived at his theory of the unity of God by the rejection of the contemporary mythology. But, while he thus stood aloof from philosophy, Xenophanes influenced its de- velopment in two ways: first, his theological monism led the way to the philosophical monism of Parmenides and Zeno; secondly, his assertion that so-called knowledge was in reality no more than opinion taught his successors to distinguish knowledge and opinion, and to assign to each a separate province.

Apart from the old controversy about Xenophanes's relations to philosophy, doubts have recently arisen about his theological posi- tion. In fragments i., xiv., xvi., xxi., &c., he recognizes, thinks Freudenthal, a plurality of deities; whence it is inferred that, besides the One God, most high, perfect, eternal, who, as immanent intelligent cause, unifies the plurality of things, there were also lesser divinities, who govern portions of the universe, being them- selves eternal parts of the one all-embracing Godhead. Whilst it can hardly be allowed that Xenophanes, so far from denying, actu- ally affirms a plurality of gods, it must be conceded to Freudenthal that Xenophanes's polemic was directed against the anthropomor- phic tendencies and the mythological details of the contemporary polythcism rather than against the polythcistic principle, and that, apart from the treatise De Melisso, Xenophane, et Gorgia, now generally discredited, there is no direct evidence to prove him a consistent monotheist. The wisdom of Xenophanes, like the wisdom of the Hebrew Preacher, showed itself, not in a theory of the uni- verse, but in a sorrowful recognition of the nothingness of things and the futility of endeavour. His theism was a declaration not so much of the greatness of God as rather of the littleness of man, His cosmology was an assertion not so much of the immutability of the One as rather of the mutability of the Many. Like Socrates, he was not a philosopher, and did not pretend to be

*one; but, as the reasoned scepticism of Socrates cleared the way for the philo- sophy of Plato, so did Xenophanes's *' abnormis sapientia " for the philosophy of Parmenides.*

Bibliography.—S. Karsten, Xenophanis Colophonit Carminum Reliquiz, Brussels, 1830; F. W. A. Mullach, Frag. Phil. Grec., Paris, 1860, i. 99-108; G. Teichmntiller, Studien z. Gesch. d. Begriffe, Berlin, 1874, pp. 589-623; E. Zeller. Phil. d. Griechen, Leipsic, 1877, i. 486-507; J. Freudenthal, Ueber d. Theologie d. Xenophanes, Breslau, 1886, and 'Zur Lehre d. Xen.," in Archiv J Gesch. d. Philos., Berlin, 1888, i. 322-347. For a fuller bibliography, including the con- troversy about the De Melisso, Xen., et Gorgia, see Ueberweg, Grundriss d. Gesch. d. Philos,, Berlin, 1871, i. § 17. See also art. PARMENIDES. (H. JA.)

XENOPHON, Greek historian and essayist, was born at Athens about 430 B.c.1 He was a citizen of good position, belonging to the order of the knights. Early in

———— ee eee

1 The story that he was present at the battle of Delium in 424 p. Cr which would carry back the date of his birth to 444 or 443, is now generally rejected, as it is impossible to reconcile it with his own

life he came under the influence of Socrates. In 401 3.c., being invited by his friend Proxenus to join the expedition of the younger Cyrus against his brother, Artaxerxes II.

of Persia, he jumped at the offer, for he was a needy man,

and his prospects at home may not have been very good, as the knights were at this time out of favour from hav- ing supported the Thirty Tyrants. At the suggestion of Socrates Xenophon went to Delphi to consult the oracle ; but his mind was already made up, and he at once crossed to Asia, to Sardis, the place of rendezvous. He joined neither as officer nor as soldier: he went simply to see new countries and peoples out

of a spirit of curiosity and love of excitement. Of the expedition itself he has given a full and detailed account in his Anabasis, or the "Up-Country March." (See Persta, vol. xviii. p. 577.) After the battle of Cunaxa the officers in command of the Greeks were treacherously murdered by the Persian satrap Tissa- phernes, with whom they were negotiating an armistice with a view to a safe return. The army was now in the heart of an unknown country, more than a thousand miles from home and in the presence of a troublesome enemy. It was decided to march northwards up the Tigris valley and make for the shores of the Euxine, on which there were several Greek colonies. Xenophon became the leading spirit of the army; he was elected an officer, and he it was who mainly directed the retreat. To his skill, good temper, and firmness the Greeks seem to have largely owed their safety. He seems indeed to have been an Athenian of the best type, having tact and sympathy, with a singular readiness of resource and a straightforward businesslike eloquence which could both persuade and convince. All through the perils and hardships of the retreat he shared the men's privations. Part of the way lay through the wilds of Kurdistan, where they had to encounter the harassing guerilla attacks of savage mountain tribes, and part through the highlands of Armenia and Georgia. After a five months' march they reached Trapezus (Trebizond) on the Black Sea (February 400 B.c.), having given splendid proof of what Greek discipline and spirit could accomplish. When they reached the Euxine a tendency to demoraliza- tion began to show itself, and even Xenophon almost lost his control over the soldiery. At Cotyora he aspired to found a new colony ; but the idea, not being unanimously accepted, was abandoned, and ultimately Xenophon with his Greeks arrived at Chrysopolis (Scutari) on the Bos- phorus, opposite Byzantium. After a brief period of ser- vice under a Thracian chief, Seuthes, they were finally in- corporated in a Lacedznmionian army which had crossed over into Asia to wage war against the Persian satraps Tissa- phernes and Pharnabazus, Xenophon going with them. Near Pergamum he captured a wealthy Persian nobleman with his family, and the ransom paid for his recovery seems to have been sufficient to provide Xenophon with a fair competency.

On his return to Greece Xenophon served under Agesi- laus, king of Sparta, which state was at this time at the head of the Greek world. With

his native Athens and its general policy and institutions he was not in sympathy. | At Coronea he fought with the Spartans against the Athenians and Thebans, for which his fellow-citizens de- creed his banishment. 'The exile found a home at Scillus in Elis, about two miles from Olympia; there he settled down to indulge his tastes for sport and for literature. It was probably at Scillus that he wrote most of his books ; there too he built and endowed a temple to Artemis, modelled on the great temple at Ephesus. After Sparta's great defeat at Leuctra in 371 3.c., which fatally shattered ps

statements about himself in the Anabasis, implying that in 401 n.e.

he was a comparatively young man,—we may fairly assume not over thirty years of age,

XEN—X IM

its ascendency, Xenophon was driven from his home by the people of Elis. Meantime Sparta and Athens had become allies, and the Athenians repealed the decree which had condemned Xenophon to exile. There is, however, no evidence that he ever returned to his native city. According to the not very trustworthy authority of his biographer (Diogenes Laertius), he made his home at Corinth. He was still living in 357 B.c.;1 but how much

longer he lived we have no means of knowing.

The Anabasis is a work of singular interest, and is brightly and pleasantly written. Xenophon, like Cesar, tells the story in the third person, and there is a straightforward manliness about the

style, with a distinct flavour of a cheerful lightheartedness, which .

at once enlists our sympathies. His description of placcs and of relative distances is very minute and painstaking. The researches of modern travellers attest his general accuracy."

The Cyropxdia, which describes the boyhood and training of Cyrus, hardly answers to its name, being for the most part an account of the beginnings of the Persian empire and of the victori- ous career of Cyrus its founder. But Xenophon had little or nothing to build on except the floating stories and traditions of the East that had gathered round the figure of the great Persian hero-king. The Cyropedia contains in fact the author's own ideas of training and education, as derived conjointly from the teachings of Socrates and his favourite Spartan institutions. A distinct moral purpose, to which literal truth is sacrificed, runs through the work.

The Hellenica, though by no means a first-class historical work, fills a gap by giving the events of the fifty years from 411 to 362 B.c. Thus it includes the downfall of the Athenian empire, the supremacy of Sparta, and the sudden collapse of that power after Leuctra in 371 Bc. It takes up Greek history at the point at which Thucydides's great work abruptly ends. His credit as an historian has been specially impugned, and it has been suggested that he was much more influenced by his political likes and dislikes than by a love of truth. However that may be, there are certainly serious omissions and defects in the work, which greatly detract from its value. At the time he probably wrote it he was no doubt a strong political partisan and a thorough believer in Sparta. But subsequently a change came over him; and, when he described the terrible reverse at Leuctra, he seems to have felt that Sparta's pres- tige had becn deservedly destroyed, and that its downfall was licaven's vengeance on an ungracious and treacherous policy. He always clings to a belief in a divine overruling providence, though in the Hellenica there are unmistakable traces of a pettiness of mind and narrowness of view very far below the dignity of an historian. :

The Memorabilia, or " Recollections of Socrates," is the tribute of an affectionate and admiring disciple who felt that the nobleness of his master's aims and life was his best defence. The work is not a literary masterpiece: it lacks coherence and unity, and the picture it gives of Socrates fails todo him justice. Stillit is an honest piece of work and a labour of love, and, as far as it goes, we may well believe it faithfully describes the philosopher's manner of life and style of conversation. It was the moral and practical side of Socrates's teaching which most

interested Xenophon ; into his abstruse meta- physical speculations he seems to have made no attempt to enter ; for these indeed he had neither taste nor genius. It was the philosophy which aims at "a sound mind in a sound body " which specially suited the robust and healthy mind of Xenophon. Moving within a limited range of ideas, he doubtless gives us " considerably less than the real Socrates, while Plato gives us something more."

Xenophon has left several minor works, some of which are very interesting and give us an insight into the home-life of the Greeks.

The Gconomics, which deals with the management of the house and of the farm, presents a pleasant and amusing picture of the Greek wife and of her home duties. She was to be thoroughly domestic, devoted to her household work, without any intellectual aspiration ; she must keep up her good looks by healthy exercise, not by rouging or painting. There are some good practical remarks on matrimony and on the respective duties of husband and wife; in these it is assumed that providence has endowed each sex with capa- cities peculiar to itself and that the highest happiness is to be found in union and in well-organized cooperation. 'The true sphere of woman is in the faithful and diligent discharge of her home duties; this, above all things, will win her husband's respect and esteem.

In the essays on horsemanship ('Immx#) and hunting (Cynegeticus), Xenophon deals with matters with which he had a thorough

1'In the Hellenics (vi. 4, 37) he mentions Tisiphonus, who succeeded Alexander, tyrant of Phers, in 357 B.c.

2 Major Milligan, in his Wild Life among the Koords, says, " My researches have put beyond doubt the accuracy of his statements, and are of a nature to show the historical, geographical, and ethnological importance which is to be attached to the accounts handed down to posterity by that illustrious writer."

practical acquaintance. In the former he gives rules how to choose a horse, and then tells how it is to be groomed and ridden and generally managed. All this has still great interest for the modern reader. We gather from this little work that the ancient Greeks never used the stirrup, nor had they any idea of providing their horses with iron shoes. The book on hunting deals chiefly with the hare, though the author speaks also of boar-hunting and describes the hounds, tells how they are to be bred and trained, and gives speciinens of suitable names for them. On all this he writes with the zest of an enthusiastic sportsman, and he observes that those uations will be most likely to be successful in war of which the upper classes have a taste for field-sports.

The Hipparchicus explains the duties of a cavalry officer ; it is not, according to our ideas, a very scientific treatise, showing that the art of war was but very imperfectly developed and that the military operations of the Greeks were on a somewhat petty scale. He dwells at some length on the moral qualities which go to the making of a good cavalry officer, and hints very plainly that there must be strict attention to religious duties.

The Agesilaus is a eulogy of the Spartan king, who had two special merits in Xenophon's eyes: he was a rigid disciplinarian and he was particularly attentive to all religious observances. We have a summary of his virtues rather than a good and striking picture of the man himself.

The Hiero works out the line of thought indicated in the story of the Sword of Damocles. It is a protest against the notion that the "tyrant" is a man to be envied, as having more abundant means of happiness than a private person. This is one of the most pleasing of his minor works ; it is cast into the form of a dialogue between Hiero, tyrant of Syracuse, and the lyric poet Simonides.

The Symposium, or " Banquet," is a brilliant little dialogue in which Socrates is the prominent figure. He is represented as "'improving the occasion," which is that of a lively Athenian supper-party, at which there is much drinking, with flute-playing, aud a dancing girl from Syracuse, who amuses the guests with the feats of a professional conjuror. Socrates's table-talk runs through a variety of topics, and winds up with a philosophical disquisition on the superiority of true heavenly love to its

earthly or sensual counterfcit, and with an earnest exhortation to one of the party, who had just won a victory in the public games, to lead a noble life and do his duty to his country.

There are also two short essays on the political constitution of Sparta and Athens, written with a decided bias in favour of the former, which he praises without attempting to criticize. Sparta seems to have presented to Xenophon the best conceivable mixture of monarchy and aristocracy.

In the essay on the Revenues of Athens, he offers suggestions for making Athens less dependent on tribute received from its allies : first, more foreign settlers should be attracted to the city by holding out strong commercial inducements and from these a moderate capi- tation tax should be collected ; secondly, more should be made of the silver mines of Laurium by leasing them out to private capi- talists, who might work them by slaves purchased with public money and hired at a fixed rate by the lessees. But above all, he would have Athens use its influence for the maintenance of peace in the Greek world and for the settlement of questions by diplo- macy, the temple at Delphi being for this purpose an independent centre and supplying a divine sanction.

The Apology, Socrates's defence before his judges, is rather a feeble production, and in the general opinion of modern critics not a genuine work of Xenophon.

The editions both of Xenophon's entire and of his separate works, especially of the Anabasis, are very numerous. A few of the best are enumerated below :— (1) Anabasis, text of L. Dindorf, with notes by J. S. Watson, 1868 ; (2) Memora- bilia, edited, with short notes, by J. R. King, 1874 (Oxford); (3) Hellenics, text of C. G. Cobet, 1862; (4) Cyropedia, from the text of L. Dindorf, with notes by E. H. Barker, 1831. The minor works have been repeatedly edited. Useful editions of the Hiero (London, 1883) and conomics (London, 1884) have been issued by H. A. Holden. There is an English translation of the entire works by various hands, published in 1831; also a French translation, similarly executed, in 1845. To Sir A. Grant's monograph on Xenophon, in Blackwood's " Ancient Classics for English Readers," the present writer is considerably indebted. Gy. Jo B:)

XENOPHON or Epuezsus. See Romance, vol. xx. p.635.

XERES. See JEREZ DE LA FRoNTERA and WINE, p. 607 above.

XERXES (Old Persian Khshaydrshd ; in the book of Esther, Ahaswerus), the name of two Achemenian kings of Persia. Xerxes I., son of Darius Hystaspis and of Atossa, daughter of Cyrus, reigned from 485 to 464 B.c., and is famous for his unsuccessful expedition against Greece (480 B.C.) ; see Persta, vol. xviii. p. 572 sg. Xerxes IL, the son of Artaxerxes J. and grandson of Xerxes I, came to the throne in 424 and was murdered by his brother Secy- dianus after a reign of a month and a half;

XIMENES. See Jimenrs.

XXIV, — g1

The history of this symbol has already been given under U. The three symbols U, V, Y are only differentiations of one original form.

The sound of yin Greek was that of French w in "lune" and German % in "iibel." In Beotian and Laconian Greek the old w-sound was retained; but it was represented by ov, a digraph which had also the value of u in other dia- lects where it arose from phonetic change, ¢.g., in tods (for tévs). The name ¥ yAdv was probably given to distin- guish it from ¥ dca depOdyyou,—that is, the same sound, but denoted by o:, which in the 2d century B.c. was be- ginning to have the value of v; just so € YAdv is opposed to at, or €6ca SiOdyyov, The difference in sound between the full and the modified ~ is this: for the first the lips are rounded as much as possible, and the back part of the tongue is raised towards the palate; for the second the rounding of the lips is the same, but the tongue is in the position for 7, so that in sounding & we are sounding 7 with the lips rounded in addition. This explains the ease with which the 2-sound is produced instead of w% by persons unfamiliar with the latter sound: when an Englishman pronouncing " Miiller " says " Miller," he puts the tongue right for 2 but omits to round the lips as well. This change has been a regular one in our language. There is no doubt that y (¢.e, %) was a sound of Early English (or Anglo- Saxon), as of the other Teutonic languages, in words like "fyr" (fire), "synn" (sin); it was the "'umlaut" of

x, especially when followed in the next syllable by 2 or e; so “burg” has for gen. and dat. “byrig,” orig. “ burges,” “burge.” Butin Middle English y passed into7: thus ‘“f¥r” (sounded as fiir) came to be sounded as ‘‘fir” (feer), and this (as in other cases where i occurs) was diphthongized in com- paratively modern times into “fire” (faior). Thus in the middle of a word y lost its special value; on the other hand, at the beginning of a word it easily passed into the con- sonant y, the value which it has regularly in modern English. This explains the fact that the English language had no symbol for the sound of French w when this sound was re-introduced into England after the Norman Conquest. Accordingly the French symbol as well as the sound was taken : it is found in words like “muse,” “lute,” sounded as “myyz,” “lyyte.”” The yy gradually developed into the zw sound with which we are familiar in “ miiiz,” “iat”; but the spelling remained unchanged. It must have been awkward to have the symbol u representing both the full (native) sound and the modified (French) sound; this was partially obviated by borrowing for the full w-sound the French writing ow: e.g., “his” was written “house,” with- out at first any change of sound; but this was not consist- ently carried out. Much later, at the end of the 16th century, the sound was diphthongized into “haus” (as now), but the spelling (ow) remained. The fact that y and ¢ became indistinguishable led to the use of y at the end of a word instead of 7: thus we write “day” instead of the older “ dai.”

In Early English we find the symbol 3 (which is a modi- fication of the Anglo-Saxon g) used initially with the value of g, and medially (chiefly before ¢) where modern English writes gh, as in laght. . This is due to French scribes, who used the French (z.e., our modern) form of g for the g-sound, and then the 5 for the sound which had been weakened in Anglo-Saxon from g to y, as in 3jeard (our yard) for ori- ginal gard (Norse garth ; in North English Aysgarth and Gatesgarth). About the 15th century this same symbol was mistaken for z, and as such it is still occasionally em- ployed in cursive, when 3 is written instead of z.

YACHOW-FU, a prefectural city in the Chinese province of Sze-cl’uen, is situated in 30° 4’ N. lat. and 103° 4’ E. long., and is a place of some antiquity and note, being first mentioned in history during the Chow dynasty (1122- 255 B.c.). It is prettily placed in a valley surrounded by an

amphitheatre of hills, on the banks of the river Ya. The town is large, populous, and busy, and owes its im- portance to the fact that it stands at the parting of the

"tea and tobacco trade route to Tibet via Tatsien-lu and the cotton trade route to western Yun-nan wa Ningyuen-Fu. Yachow-Fu is the seat also of a considerable silk manu- facture; and in its immediate neighbourhood there exist both coal and iron. The city wall measures 2 miles in circumference, and-is pierced by four gates. The popula- tion is estimated at about 40,000.

YACHTING is the sport of racing in yachts! and boats with sails for money or plate, and also the pastime of cruising for pleasure in sailing or steam vessels. The history of yachting is the history of yacht-racing, inas- much as competition improved yachts just as horse-racing improved horses. It dates from the beginning of the 19th century; for, although there were sailing yachts long before, they were but few, and belonged exclusively to princes and other illustrious personages. Jor instance, in the Anglo-Saxon period Athelstan had presented to him by the king of Norway a magnificent royal vessel, the sails of which were purple and the head and deck wrought with gold, apparently a kind of state barge. Elizabeth had one, and so has every English sovereign since. During her reign a pleasure ship was built (1588) at Cowes, so that the association of that place with the sport goes back three hundred years. In 1660 Charles IJ. was presented by the Dutch with a yacht named the " Mary," until which time the word " yacht" was unknown in England. The Merrie Monarch was fond of sailing, for he designed a yacht of 25 tons called the "Jamie," built at Lambeth in 1662, as well as several others later on. In that year the "Jamie" was matched for £100 against a small Dutch yacht, under the duke of York, from Greenwich to Graves- end and back, and beat her, the king steering part of the time—apparently the first record of a yacht match and of an amateur helmsman.

The first authentic record of a sailing club is in 1720, when the Cork Harbour Water Club, now known as the Royal Cork Yacht Club, was established in Ireland, but the yachts were small. Maitland, in his History of London (1739), mentions sailing and rowing on the Thames as among

the amusements then indulged in; and Strutt, in his Sports and Pastimes (1801), says that the Cumberland Society, consisting of gentlemen partial to this pastime, gave yearly a silver cup to be sailed for in the vicinity of London. The boats usually started from Blackfriars Bridge, went up the Thames to Putney, and returned to Vauxhall, being, no doubt, mere sailing boats and not yachts or decked vessels. From the middle to the end of the 18th century yachting developed very slowly: although matches were sailed at Cowes as far back as 1780, very few yachts of any size, say 35 tons, existed in 1800 there or elsewhere. In 1812 the Royal Yacht Squadron was established by fifty yacht-owners at Cowes and was called the Yacht Club, altered to the Royal Yacht Club in 1820; but no regular regatta was held there until some years later. The yachts of the time were built of heavy materials, like the revenue cutters, full in the fore body and fine aft ;

1 The English word yacht is the Dutch jacht, jagt, from jachten, " to hurry," "to hunt."

but it was soon discovered that their timbers and scantlings were unnecessarily strong, and they were made much lighter. It was also found that the single-masted cutter was more weatherly than the brigs and schooners of the time, and the former rig was adopted for racing, and, as there was no time allowance for difference of size, they were all built of considerable dimensions. Among the earliest of which there is any record were the "Pearl," 95 tons, built by Sainty at Wivenhoe near Colchester in 1820, for the mar- quis of Anglesey, and the " Arrow," 84 tons, originally 61 feet 94 inches long and 18 feet 54 inches beam, built by Joseph Weld in 1822, which is still extant as a racing yacht, having been rebuilt and altered several times, and again entirely rebuilt in 1887-88. The Thames soon followed the example of the Solent and established the Royal Thames Yacht Club in 1823, the Clyde founding the Royal Northern Yacht Club in 1824, and Plymouth the Royal Western in 1827. In this year the Royal Yacht Squadron passed a resolution disqualifying any member who should apply steam to his yacht,—the enactment being aimed at 'T. Assheton Smith, an enthusiastic yachts- man and fox-hunter, who was

having a paddle-wheel steam yacht called the ‘ Menai” built on the Clyde. In 1830 one of the largest cutters ever constructed was launched, viz., the “‘ Alarm,” built by Inman at Lymington for Joseph Weld of Lulworth Castle, from the lines of a famous smuggler captured off the Isle of Wight. She was 82 feet on the load line by 24 feet beam, and was reckoned of 193 tons, old measurement, in which length, breadth, and half- breadth (supposed to represent depth) were the factors for computation. Some yachtsmen at this time preferred still larger vessels and owned square-topsail schooners and brigs like the man-o’-war brigs of the day, such as the “Waterwitch,” 381 tons, built by White of Cowes, in 1832, for Lord Belfast, and the “ Brilliant,” barque, 493 tons, belonging to J. Holland Ackers, who invented a scale of time allowance for competitive sailing. In 1834 the first royal cup was given by William IV. to the Royal Yacht Squadron—a gift which has been continued ever since (except in 1862, when it was dropped for one year, owing to the death of the Prince Consort), and in recent years supplemented by similar gifts to other clubs. In 1836 the Royal Eastern Yacht Club was founded at Granton near Edinburgh ; in 1838 the Royal St George’s at Kingstown and the Royal London ; in 1843 the Royal Southern at Southampton and the Royal Harwich; in 1844 the Royal Mersey at Liverpool and the Royal Vic- toria at Ryde. The number of vessels kept pace with the clubs—the fifty yachts of 1812 increasing nearly tenfold before the middle of the century, which was the critical epoch of yacht-building.

In 1848, after J. Scott Russell had repeatedly drawn attention to the unwisdom of constructing sailing vessels on the “cod’s head and mackerel tail” plan, and had enunciated his wave-line theory, Mare built at Blackwall an entirely new type of vessel, with a long hollow bow and a short after body of considerable fulness. This was the iron cutter “‘ Mosquito,” of 59 feet 2 inches water line, 15 feet 3 inches beam, and measuring 50 tons. Prejudice against the new type of yacht being as strong as against the introduction of steam, there were no vessels built like the “ Mosquito,” with the exception of the “ Volante,” 59 tons, by Harvey of Wivenhoe, until the eyes of English yachtsmen were opened by the Americans three years later. About this period yacht-racing had been gradually coming into favour in the United States, the first yacht club being founded at New York in 1844 by nine yacht-owners ; and in 1846

the first match between yachts in the States was sailed, 25 miles to windward and back from Sandy Hook lightship, between J. C. Stevens's new centre-board sloop

"Maria," 170 tons, 100 feet water line and 26 feet 8 inches beam, with a draught of 5 feet 3 inches of water, and 'the "Coquette," schooner, 74 tons, belonging to J. H. Perkins, the latter winning; but the appearance of the " Maria," which had a clipper or schooner bow, like that of the newest racing cutters of 1887-1888, did much for yachting in America. Stevens then commissioned George Steers of New York, builder of the crack pilot schooners, to con- struct a racing schooner to visit England in the year of the great exhibition, and the result was the '' America" of 170 tons. Like the " Mosquito," she had a very long and hollow bow, with considerable fulness aft. She crossed the Atlantic in the summer of 1851, but failed to compete for the queen's cup at Cowes in August, although the club for that occasion threw the prize open to all the world, as her owner declined to concede the usual time allowance for difference of size. The members of the Yacht Squadron, not wishing to risk the reproach of denying the stranger a fair race, decided that their match for a cup given by the club, to be sailed round the Isle of Wight later on in the same month, should be without any time allowance. The '"' America," thus exceptionally treated, entered and com- peted against fifteen other vessels. The three most dan- gerous competitors being put out through accidents, the '"' America" passed the winning-post 18 minutes ahead of the 47-ton cutter "' Aurora," and won the cup; but, even if the time allowance had not been waived, the American schooner yacht would still have won by fully a couple of minutes.

The prize was given to the New York Yacht Club and constituted a challenge cup, called the America cup, for the yachts of all nations, by the deed of gift of the owners of the winner. Not only was the "America" as great a departure from the conventional British type of yacht as the " Mosquito," but the set of her sails was a decided novelty. In England it had been the practice to make them baggy, whereas those of the "America" were flat, which told materially in working to windward. The re- volution in yacht designing and canvassing was complete, and the bows of existing cutters were lengthened, that of the "Arrow" among

others. The ‘“ Alarm” was also lengthened and turned into a schooner of 248 tons, and the ‘ Wildfire,” cutter, 59 tons, was likewise converted. Indeed there was a complete craze for schooners, the “Fly- ing Cloud,” “Gloriana,” ‘Lalla Rookh,” ‘“ Albertine,” “ Aline,” “ Egeria,” “ Pantomime,” and others being built between 1852 and 1865, during which period the centre board, or sliding keel, was applied to schooners as well as sloops in America. The national or cutter rig was never- theless not neglected in England, for Hatcher of South- ampton built the 35-ton cutter “‘Glance ”—the pioneer of the subsequent 40-tonners—in 1855, and the “Vampire” —the pioneer of the 20-tonners—in 1857, in which year Weld also had the “ Lulworth,” an 82-ton cutter of com- paratively shallow draught, constructed at Lymington. At this time too there came into existence a group of cutters, called “flying fifties” from their tonnage, taking after the “Mosquito” as their pioneer; such were the ‘ Extrava- ganza,” “ Audax,” and “Vanguard.” In 1866 a large cutter was constructed on the Clyde called the ‘‘Condor,” 135 tons, followed by the still larger “ Oimara,” 163 tons, in 1867. In 1868 the “Cambria” schooner was built by Ratsey at Cowes for Ashbury of Brighton, and, having proved a suc- cessful match-sailer, was taken to the United States in 1870 to compete for the America cup, but was badly beaten, as also was the ‘“ Livonia” in 1871.

The decade between 1870 and 1880 may be termed the Golden Age of yachting, inasmuch as the racing fleet had some very notable additions made to it, of which it will suffice to mention the schooners “‘ Gwendolin,” “ Cetonia,”

724

“Corinne,” “ Miranda,” and ‘‘Waterwitch ;” the large cutters ‘“Kriemhilda,” ‘Vol au Vent,” “Formosa,” “Sameena,” and ‘‘Vanduara;” the 40-tonners “ Foxhound,” “Myosotis,” and

“Norman;” the 20-tonners “Vanessa” (Hatcher’s master-_

piece), “Quickstep,” “Enriqueta,” “Louise,” and “Freda ;” and the yawls “ Florinda,” “ Corisande,” “‘ Jullanar,” and “Tatona.” Lead, the use of which commenced in 1846, was entirely used for ballast after 1870 and

placed on the keel outside. Of races there was a plethora; indeed no less than 400 matches took place in 1876, as against 63 matches in 1856, with classes for schooners and yawls, for large cutters, for 40-tonners, 20-tonners, and 10-ton- ners. The sport too was better regulated, and was con- ducted on a uniform system: the Yacht-Racing Association, established in 1875, drew up a simple code of laws for the regulation of yacht races, which was accepted by the yacht clubs generally, though a previous attempt to introduce uniformity, made by the Royal Victoria Yacht Club in 1868, had failed. The Association adopted the rule for ascertaining the size or tonnage of yachts which had been for many years in force, known as the Thames rule; but in 1879 they altered the plan of reckoning length from that taken on deck to that taken at the load water line, and two years later they adopted an entirely new system of calculation. Subsequently to these repeated changes yacht- racing gradually waned, the new measurement exercising a prejudicial effect on the sport, as it enabled vessels of ex- treme length, depth, and narrowness, kept upright by enor- mous masses of lead on the outside of the keel, to compete on equal terms with vessels of greater width and less depth, in other words, smaller yachts carrying an inferior area of sail. Of this type are the yawls "' Lorna" and " Wendur," the cutters " May," " Annasona," "'Sleuth-hound," " Tara," and " Marjorie,"—the most extreme of all being perhaps the 40-tonner "Tara," which is six times as long as she is broad, and unusually deep, with a displacement of 75 tons, 38 tons of lead on her keel, and the sail spread of a 60-ton- ner like " Neva."

In 1884 two large 80-ton cutters of the above type were built for racing, viz., the "Genesta" on the Clyde and the "Trex" at Southampton. Having been successful in her first season, the former went to the United States in 1885 in quest of the America cup ; but she was beaten by a new yacht, called the " Puritan," built for the purpose of defending it, with a moderate draught of 8 feet 3 inches of water, considerable beam, and a deep centre-board. The defeat of the "Genesta" is not surprising when it is re- collected that she drew 13 feet of water, had a displace- ment or weight of 141, as against the " Puritan's" 106 tons, and a sail area of 7887 square feet to the American's 7982,—a greater mass with less driving power; but she did not leave the States empty-handed, as she won

and brought back the Cape May and Brenton Reef challenge cups, though they were wrested from her by the "'Irex" in the following year. The same thing happened to the "Galatea," which was beaten by the " Mayflower" in 1886. In 1887 a new cutter, called the "Thistle," was built on the Clyde to try to win back the America cup; but, although built very differently from the "Genesta" and " Galatea," 2.e., of a much greater width than modern English racing yachts generally, the "Thistle," when matched with the new centre-board " Volunteer," had no better fortune than her predecessors, These new American racing vessels are some- thing very different from the old flat-bottomed sloop "Maria," with one head-sail and a trivial draught of water, Inasmuch as they are lead- ballasted cutters with two head-sails and a draught of nearly 10 feet of water, with the additional advantage of a centre-board descend- ing as much as 8 or 10 feet below the keel. In this connexion it is noteworthy that a prize won by a fixed-keel

YuCH Ten G

schooner should be defended by centre-board craft with a single mast.

From 1887 an entirely new system of measurement for competitive sailing has been adopted in the United King- dom, the old plan of measuring the hull having given way to the more rational one of taking the length on the water- line and the sail area of the vessel as the factors for rating. This leaves naval architects free to adopt a long and narrow or a short and "beamy" hull.

Yacht-racing as at. present conducted is simple and easily managed. A course is chosen by the committee of the club giving the prizes, averaging for first-class vessels 40 or 50 nautical miles in length, such as the old qneen's course from Cowes eastward to the Nab lightship, back past Cowes to Lymington, and returning to the starting-post. The competitors, i.¢., cutters, yawls, and schooners, —cutters sailing at their full, yawls at four-fifths, and schooners at three-fourths of their tonnage or rating— cruise about under way in readiness for crossing an imaginary line between the club-house or committee vessel and a mark-boat, which forms the starting as well as winning place, on the signal being given. No time is allowed at the start, but only at the finish, and conse: quently there

is a good deal of manceuvring to get across the line first and to windward. The yachts make the best of their way on- wards, running if the wind is abaft them, reaching if it is on the beam, and close-hauled if it is fonl, the greatest skill being shown in cross-tacking and getting the weather-gauge. When close-hauled and reaching, the ordinary fore-and-aft sail (see SAIL, SEAMANSHIP, and SHIPBUILDING) is used ; but when going free a large racing sail called a spiunaker is set on a long boom projecting from the foot of the mast at right angles to the vessel. This sail, whicli is a tri- angular one, cxtends from the topmasthead to the deck, on the opposite side to that occupied by the main boom, though occa- sionally shifted to the bowsprit end. After leaving all the marks on the port or starboard hand, as may be directed in their instruc- tions, the competing yachts arrive at the winning-place generally in single file, the moment at which each competitor passes the line being noted by a time-keeper. It is then ascertained whether any and which vessel has saved her time allowance, which varies ac- cording to the length of the course, and the first which has done so is declared to have won. The amount of prize money gained by the most successful vessel of the season—almost always a cutter— generally exceeds 1000 sovereigns, exclusive of cups or plate. The expense of racing is enormous ; in the case of an 80 or 100-ton cutter it amounts to fully £2000 or £3000 a year. The cost of cruising is of course not so great, the wages of non-racing crews (which are much smaller in number) being less, and averages perhaps £10 a ton. There are not such frequent renewals of sails; there are not so inany breakages of spars, no entrance fees, and no " winning money " to pay the crew, nor any of the thousand and one extras which go to swell the yearly account of the racing owner. Racing yachts make good cruisers if their spars are shortened and their wings clipped ; and it is a very common practice to turn an ex-racing cutter into a yawl, by shortening her boom and adding a mizzen- mast and mizzen-sail to her counter. The yawl rig is comfortable for cruising, but not so successful for racing as the cutter. The speed of yachts varies according to their length, and this is one reason why an allowance in time should be given by a large yacht to a smaller one. As instances of pace it is on record that the "Arrow" in 1858 sailed 45 knots in 4h. 19 m., and 50 knots in 1872 in4h. 40m. In the latter year the " Kriemhilda" did 50 knots in 4 h. 37 m., while the " Marjorie" did the same distance in 4h. 26 m., and the "Samena " in 4h, 15 m. in

1883; the “ Lorna” (yawl) in 4 h. 14 m., and the “ Irex” in 4h. 7 min., both in 1885, —all these distances being sailed inside the Isle of Wight, irrespect- ive of the state of the tide. A greater pace has been developed by schooners in bursts of speed with a fair tide and half a gale of wind behind them, but in racing inside the Isle of Wight the “‘ Egeria” in 1870 did 50 knots in 4 h. 27 m., the “Olga” in 4h. 25 m. in 1875, the “Enchantress” in 4h. 18 m, in 1879. which is not so quick as the cutters.

As to the number of yachts now afloat, cruisers as well as racers, the British yacht fleet, which in 1850 consisted of 500 sailing and 3 steam vessels, now numbers 2209 sailing yachts, of 64,051 tons, and 700 screw steam yachts, of 68,667 tons, or a gross total of 2909 yachts, of 132,718 tons—in round numbers 3000 yachts, allowing , for small craft not included in the above total. They are con- structed of wood, iron, or steel —this last gradually coming to the front in the pleasure fleet as well as in the mercantile marine and royal navy. Next to Great Britain the United States possesses the largest number afloat, amounting to nearly if not quite 1200 yachts ; and, if to the foregoing are added the yachts.of other countries included in Lloyd’s list, a grand total of upwards of 5000 is reached. While the taste for sailing vessels has made marked strides since 1850, that for steam yachts has made still more extraordinary

progress, one noteworthy feature being the increase in their size, and another their enormous prime cost. More than thirty of those recently built exceed 500 tons, while double that number range from 300 to 500 tons ; two or three even exceed 1000 tons each. Admiralty warrants are granted to clubs and their members to fly the white, blue, or red ensign with device on it, such yachts being registered according to the provisions of the Merchant Ship- ping Acts. The white man-of-war or St George’s ensign, used by ritish war-ships, is flown by the Royal Yacht Squadron alone of yacht clubs. The ordinary red ensign of the merchant navy may be flown by any English vessel without permission of Government, as it is the national flag. Yachts with Admiralty warrants are en- titled to certain privileges, such as exemption from excise and some other dues ; they may enter Government harbours without paying dues, and may make fast and

lie to Government buoys when these are not required by any of H.M. ships; they need not have their names painted on their sterns, though it is better that they should ;

and their masters need not hold Board of Trade certificates. Literature.—Vanderdecken, Yachts and Yachting (1862); H. C. Folkard, The Sailing Boat (1870); Stonehenge, British Rural Sports (1876); Dixon Kemp, Yacht Architecture (1885), Yacht Designing (1876), and Yacht and Boat Sailing (1878-86); Yacht-Racing Calendar (annual); Lloyd's Yacht Register (annual); and Hunt's Yacht List (annual). (BE. D. B.)

YAK. This animal is the Bos grunniens of Linnzus and all subsequent zoologists, so called on account of the pig-like grunting sounds it makes. It is structurally more closely allied to the common ox than to the bison, with which group of the Bovidz it has been sometimes errone- ously associated. It is only found in the lofty plateau of Asia between the Altai Mountains and the Himalayas, and occurs both wild and as the ordinary domestic animal of the inhabitants of that region, supplying milk, food, and raiment, as well as being used as a beast of burden. The

wild yaks inhabit the most inaccessible parts of the moun- tains, ranging up to an elevation of 20,000 feet,—higher it is said, than any other animal,—delighting in extreme cold, and finding their sustenance in the coarse, wiry grass which is almost the only vegetable production of those

desolate regions. They cannot live to the south of the BEG = =

Himalayas beyond the immediate neighbourhood of the snow. Their size is that of a small ox. The horns are long, nearly cylindrical, smooth, and pointed at the ends, and with a peculiar and characteristic curve, being directed at first outwards, then upwards, forwards, and inwards, and finally a little backwards. Some of the domestic yaks are hornless. The most remarkable external character is the excessive growth and peculiar distribution of the hairy covering. The upper parts of the body and sides are elothed with a thick, soft, woolly hair, more fully de- veloped along the middle of the back, especially on the shoulders, where it forms a great bunch ; on the sides it is comparatively short. From the upper parts of the limbs and the whole of the lower surface of the body a thick

_ river Atdan to make its great bend in that direction. | ridge is almost entirely unknown, having been crossed by

animals sweeping the ground and almost concealing the somewhat short legs. The tail is profusely covered with a thick mass of such hairs. The calves are at first covered only with a soft, shortish woolly hair, of nearly uniform length all over. Domestic yaks vary considerably in size and appearance according to their treatment and the purpose for which they are bred. The finest are those used for carrying the native chiefs. Those employed for ploughing are very inferior-looking animals. They vary also in colour. The wild animals are nearly uniformly black ; the domestic yaks are often quite white. It is not uncommon to see the long hair on the ridge of the back, that on the tail, and the long flowing hair of the under parts white, whilst all the rest of the animal is black. The tails of the domestic yaks are used as orna- mental standards by the Tartars, and are largely imported into India as chowries or fly-flaps.

YAKUTSK, a province of Eastern Siberia, which includes nearly the whole of the basin of the Lena, and covers an area of 1,517,127 square miles (nearly one- third of Siberia and almost one-fifth of the entire Russian empire). It has the Arctic Ocean on the N., Yeniseisk on the W., Irkutsk, Transbaikalia, and Amur on the S., and is separated from the Pacific (Sea of Okhotsk) only by the narrow Maritime Province (see vol. xxii. pl. L).

The Vitim plateau, from 2500-to 3500 feet in altitude, Physical

and bordered on the south-east by the Stanovoi Mountains, occupies the south-eastern portion of the province. Its moist, elevated valleys, intersected by ranges of flat, dome- shaped hills, which rise nearly 1000 feet above the plateau, are unsuited for agriculture, and form an immense desert of forest and marsh, visited only by Tungus hunters, save in the south-west, where a few settlements of gold-miners have lately sprung up. The high border-ridge of the plateau (see Srperra) stretches from the South Muya Mountains towards the north-east, thus compelling the The

only two geographers at points more than 500 miles apart. The alpine country fringing the plateau all along its north- western border is better known in the south-west, where rich gold-mines are wrought in the spurs between the Vitim and the Lena; and farther north-east it has been crossed by several geographers (Middendorff, Erman, the Siberian expedition) on their way from Yakutsk to the Sea of Okhotsk. The Lena, in that part of its course where it flows north-east, waters the outer base of this alpine region. It is a wild land, traversed by several chains of mountains, all having a north-eastern direction and intersected by deep, narrow valleys, where wild mountain streams flow amidst immense boulders and steep cliffs. The whole is covered with dense forests, through which none but the Tunguses can find their way, and they only by means of marks made on the trees. The summits of the mountains, ranging from 4000 to 6000 feet, mostly rise above the limits of tree vegetation, but in no case pass the snow-line. Summits and slopes alike are strewn with crystalline rock débris, mostly hidden under thick layers of lichens, where only the larch, which sends out its roots horizontally, can find support and sustenance. Birch and aspen grow on the lower slopes; and where strips of alluvium have been deposited in the narrow bottoms of the valleys thickets of poplar and willow make their ap- pearance, or a few patches of grassy soil are occasionally found. These last, however, are so rare that all of them are known to the gold-diggers for scores of miles around their settlements, and hay has to be brought at consider- able cost from the lowlands. All necessaries of life for

| the gold-diggings have to be shipped from Irkutsk down growth of long, straight pendent hair descends, in old |

the Lena, and deposited at entrepdts, whence they are

726

transported in winter by means of reindeer to their desti- nation. A line drawn south-west and north-east, from the mouth of the Vitim towards that of the Atdan, separates the mountain tracts from the elevated plains (from 1500 to 2000 feet) which fringe the highlands all the way from the upper Lena to Verkhne-Kotymsk, and probably to the mouth of the Kotyma. Immense and sometimes marshy meadows extend over those

plains in the south-west ; farther north mosses and lichens are the prevalent vegetation. The surface is much furrowed by rivers and diversified by several mountain-chains (Ver- khoyansk, Tas-karyktakh, Kotymsk, and Afazeya). Little is known as to the real character of these mountains, although they are figured on maps as isolated ridges shoot- ing north-west from the highlands, between the chief rivers which flow into the Arctic Ocean. Beyond the elevated plains vast tundras, covered with mosses and _ lichens,

MAK UTS ES

*on the left is the Vilui (about 1300 miles), which has an immense drainage-area on the lower plains, and since 1887 has been navi- gated by a steamer. At Yakutsk the Lena becomes a magnificent stream of more than 4 miles in width, with numerous islands, and this character it maintains for the next 1200 miles of its course, sometimes reaching a width of 17 miles and a depth of7 to 8 fathoms. It enters the Arctic Ocean by a wide delta, occupying more than 250 miles of the coast-line; here the river divides into seven or eight principal branches, the chief of which vary from 35 to 65 miles in length, the largest being more than 6 miles broad. The bar, however, has only 8 feet of water, and the Swedish steamer '**Lena" had great difficulty in entering from the sea. The lower course of the river is subject to terrible inundations when the ice breaks up on its upper part, whilst at the same time the higher reaches of its lower course are still covered with ice several feet in thickness, Large portions of the banks are then torn away by the enormous niasses of ice. The Olenek (1200 miles), which enters the Arctic Ocean to the west of the Lena, is also a considerable river; the Yana (1000 miles), Indighirka (950), and Kotyma (1000) to the east all rise in the mountain region between 61° and 62° N. lat. and flow north and north-east into the Arctic Ocean.*

The granites, granitic syenites, and gneisses of the high plateau Geology are surrounded by a variety of crystalline slates, Huronian and and Laurentian ; and vast layers of Silurian and Devonian limestones minerals.

stretch to the shores of the ice-bound ocean; only a few trees succeed in the struggle for a miserable existence,

Northern coast.

Rivers.

though some isolated groups penetrate farther north along the courses of the Lena, the Indighirka, and the Kotyma, almost reaching in the first-named valley the seventy-second degree of north latitude.

The Arctic coast is indented by several bays—Borkhaya and Yana to the east of the wide Lena delta, and Omul- yakh, Kotyma, and Tchaunskaya still farther to the east. Islands have been explored as far as 78° N. lat. These fall into three gronps,—the Lyakhovskiye, the Anjou or New Siberian, and the De Long Islands. The Medvyezhie (Bear) Islands off the Kotyma and the two Ayun Islands in Tchaunskaya Bay are merely littoral. Wrangel's Land seems to be the outer island of a great and as yet unknown archipelago. The entire coast of Yakutsk is full of memorials of the courageous explorations made in 1735-41 by Minin, Lapteff, and Prontchischeff in small boats, with- out any of the modern appliances for Arctic explorations, and Tchaunskaya Bay recalls the loss of Shatauroff's ex- pedition. The prospects of regular navigation recently raised by Nordenskjéld's bold circumnavigation of Asia seem unlikely to be fully realized, the ice apparently having never again been in so favourable a condition as in 1878- 79, Every year, however, a narrow passage close by the coast is left almost free of ice, enabling a ship or two to reach the estuary of the Yenisei, or even the delta of the Lena.

The great artery of Yakutsk, the Lena, rises on the western slope of the Baikal Mountains, its sources being separated only by a narrow ridge from the great Siberian lake. It soon issues from the mountain valleys, and flows over the elevated plains, where it has carved a deep channel between horizontal layers of Old Red Sand- stone and further on of contorted beds of limestone. As far as Yakutsk it maintains its north-eastern direction, with but one great bend in 60° N. lat. and several small windings in its upper course. At Katchug—a lading-place 180 miles north-east from Irkutsk—it is still shallow, but soon becomes a mighty

stream of much beauty, which is increased by the high crags and inountains amidst which it has dug its channel. Though thus picturesque, its valley can hardly be called hospitable: the narrow level stretches along the base of the mountains are often marshy, while the raw and wet climate renders agriculture most difficult ; the villages are poverty-stricken, and in most of them goitre is endemic. About 60° N. lat. the Lena receives from the right its first great tributary, the Vitim (1400 miles in length), which after a very sinuous course leaves the great plateau below Lake Oron, by a narrow gorge which has not yet been visited by any geographer. It is navigable by steamers in its lower course. The next large tributary of the Lena is the Oleckma (about 800 miles), which also rises on the plateau and crosses it from south to north; it is navigable only in the very lowest part of its course ; higher up, its valley, which offers the gveatest difficulties for the traveller, has been utilized as a route only by the Cossack conquerors of Siberia and by one of the mem- bers of the Siberian expedition. The next important tnbutary, also from the right, is the Atdan (nearly 1300 tiles), which first flows parallel to the Lena and then turns north-westwards to join it, itself receiving on the left a large tributary, the Amga. It is navigated from Ust-Maya. The only large tributary of the Lena

and sandstones extend over large areas. Farther north the Carbon-iferous, Chalk, and Jurassic formations are spread over a wide region, and the whole is covered with layers of Glacial deposits in the highlands and of post-Glacial elsewhere. The mineral wealth of Yakutsk is very great; but gold (262,200 oz. in 1884) and salt (obtained from springs to the amount of about 6000 ewts. annually) only are worked. Coal has been recently discovered on the Vilui close by its mouth, as also on the lower Lena.

Though there are spots in the North-American archipelago and Climate.

in northern Greenland where the cold is as intense as at Yakutsk, no region can be named which has such extremes of cold and heat or winter temperatures so low, so long continued, or spread over so immense an area. Verkhoyansk on the Yana (67° 34’ N. lat. and 134° 20’ E. long.) is, in respect of cold, the pole of the Old World ; nowhere, even in Siberia, do

we find such low winter tem- peratures: from whatever quarter the wind imay blow it cannot fail to bring a warmer temperature to Verkhoyansk. Frosts of — 76° Fahr. have been observed there, and the average temperature of the three winter months is — 58°71; even that of March is but little above the freezing-point of mereury (~~37°:9). Neither Ust~~ Yansk (70° 55' N. lat., but close to the sea coast), nor Yakutsk, nor even the polar station of Sagastyr at the mouth of the Lena (73° 23' N. lat.), has a winter so cold and so protracted. Aud yet at Sagastyr temperatures of — 63°°6 were measured in February 1888, and the average temperature of that month was only —48°°6. At Yakutsk the average temperature of the winter is — 40°°2, and the soil is frozen to a depth of 600 feet (Middendorff), Even ata depth of 382 feet the temperature of the soi] is 26°°4 Fahr. For further particulars, see SIBERIA, vol. xxii. p.6. The Lena, both at Kirensk and at Yakutsk, is free from ice for only 161 days in the year, the Yana at Ust-Yansk for 105. While at Yakutsk only 145 days and at Verkhoyansk only 73 have no snow ; the interval between the latest frosts of one season and the earliest frosts of the next is barely 37 days, and even less in the north.

In spite of the rigours of its climate, the province of Yakutsk Popula- had 243,450 inhabitants in 1883, and the population is supposed tion.

to be increasing notwithstanding the infectious diseases which some- times sweep away whole villages. The Russians constitute but a trifling element in the population ; and their villages, numbering scarcely twenty, are chiefly peopled by exiled Nonconformists, be- longing to the sects reputed "dangerous." In 1879 there were 5400 exiles living in the towns or settled in the Yakut encamp- ments, 53800 peasants (also formerly exiles), 1890 military, and 4100 artisans, merchants, and officials. The remainder were chiefly Yakuts (211,900), and partly Tunguses (10,400), with a few Yuka- ghirs, Lamuts, and Tehuktchis. The Yakuts belong to the Turkish stem (see vol. xxiii. p. 661), and speak a dialect of Turkish, with an admixture of Mongolian words. They call themselves Sokha (pl. Sokhalar), their present name having been borrowed by the Russians from the Tunguses, who call them Yeko or Yekot. Most probably they formerly inhabited sonthern Siberia, and especially the upper Yenisei, where a Tartar stem calling itself Sakha still remains in Minusinsk. They

are middle-sized, have dark and rather narrow eyes, a broad flat nose, thick black hair, and almost no beard. On the whole they are healthy and reach an advanced age, are very laborious and enterprising, and display in schools much more intelli- gence than ithe Tunguses or Buriats. Their implements show a great degrce of skill and some artistic taste. They live in log yurtas with small windows, into which plates of ice or pieces of skin are inserted instead of glass. A large fire is kept continually burning in the middle of the yurta, which always has a wooden chimney. The yurtas are usually at some distance from one another, but at the same time are grouped into villages or naslegs. During summer

Occur a- tions.

Com- munica- tion and trade.

Y A K—

they abandon their wooden dwellings and encamp in conical tents, | consisting of a few poles covered with prepared birch bark. Their food is chiefly flesh, and their drink koumiss. Though nearly all are nominally Christians, they retain much of their original Shaman- ism. Their settlements, which formerly were limited to the valleys of the Lena and its northern tributaries, are now steadily advancing southwards into the hunting domains of the Tunguses, who give way before the superior civilization of the Yakuts. Wherever they penetrate, even in the valleys at the base of the Vitim plateau (Muya, Tchara), they always cultivate some barley, and carry on some trade.?

Both the Russians and the Yakuts earry on some agriculture wherever possible in the southern parts of the province; it was estimated in 1879 that 40,000 quartcrs of barley, summer rye, wheat, and oats were eropped in Yakutsk (23,000 quarters by the Yakuts). But eattle-breeding is the ehief means of support; in 1879 there were in Yakutsk 130,400 horses of an excellent small, but most hardy breed, 260,900 cattle, 49,000 reindeer, and several thousands of dogs, which are used for travelling purposes. The hunting of the wild reindeer affords the ehief means of subsistence in the tundras ; wealth or famine depends upon its success or failure. The herds are attacked on the routes they pursue during their migrations,

especially where they have to cross a river. Jarther north the pursuit of water-birds, which come in innumerable flocks to breed on the lakes of the tundras and the shores of the oeean, is a most important resource. Fishing also is earricd on even in winter from beneath the ice. The mountains between the Lena and the Vitim have, during the last thirty years, become a most important eentre of gold-washings, and, notwithstanding the diffi- eulties of communication, and the necessity of bringing every- thing from Irkutsk or Transbaikalia, the population of the gold- mines of the Olekma and Vitim numbered more than 13,000 in 1882. Thousands of workmen go every spring down the Lena to work at the mines and return to their villages in autumn.

The principal ehannel of communication in Yakutsk is the Lena. As soon as the spring arrives, scores of boats are built at Katchug, Verkholensk, and Ust-Ilga, and the goods brought on sledges in winter from the capital of Eastern Siberia, ineluding eonsiderable amounts of corn and salt meat, are shipped down theriver. Steamers ply all along its eourse, and enter its tributary, the Vitim, which is navigated almost to the gorges beneath Lake Oron. A few steamers descend to the delta of the Lena, and return with cargoes of fish and furs. 'There are very few overland routes. A new one, available for the transport of live stock from Transbaikalia to the gold-mines of Olekina, was opened in 1869, and cattle are brought every year from Transbaikalia, notwithstanding the hardships of the 700 miles' route across the plateau and the wild mountain tracts. Two other routes, also mere footpaths, on which travellers and goods are transported on horseback, radiate from Yakutsk to Ayan and to Okhotsk. Manufactured goods and groceries, chiefly tea, rice, and sugar, were imported to Yakutsk by the former route to the amount of some 1000 ewts. in 1883; these goods eross the Stanovoi Mountains and the plateau on sledges as far as the Maya, whence they are shipped to Yakutsk.

The province is divided into five distriets, the chief towns of which are—Yaxursk (see below), Sredne-Kotymsk (560), Olek- minsk (500), Verkhoyansk (290), and Viluisk (390). Exeept Yakutsk, these "towns" are but miserable villages. {(2 PACK)

YAKUTSK, capital of the above province, situated in 62° 2' N. lat. and 129° 44' E. long., 1800 miles to the north-east of Irkutsk, was founded by Cossacks in 1622. It stands on a branch of the Lena, Khatystakh, between which and the main river, five miles distant, lie several low islands. During the break-up of the ice the water of the Khatystakh, finding no outlet into the Lena on account of the huge masses of ice, rises and floods the lower parts of the town, leaving after its subsidence great pools, which, as well as Lake Tatoye close by, become a source of infectious disease. The town is, however, pro- tected to some extent by a wooden embankment. The old fort is now destroyed, but its five wooden towers, erected in the 17th century, are still standing. The streets are unpaved, and the wooden houses are built upon high base- ments to protect them from the inundations. The shops only are of stone. There are in Yakutsk a cathedral, three churches, a monastery, two gymnasia for boys and girls,

and several elementary schools. It is the residence of the

1 Besides the older literature, the bibliography of which is given in Semenoff's Geogr. Dictionary (Russian), compare Radloft's Aus Sibirten (Leipsic, 1884) ; F. Miiller's Tungusen und Yakuten (Leipsic, 1882) ; and Vambéry's Das Tiirkenvolk (Leipsic, 1885); and several interest- ing monographs in Jzvestia of East Siberian Geogr. Soc.

Ta N v27/

Russian governor and the provincial authorities, as well as of a few wealthy merchants, who carry ou trade iu furs, mammoth bone, and reindeer hides, which are ex- ported to Russia, and in imported groceries and manu- factured goods. The arrival of the latter gives occasion to a fair in July, which is frequented by natives from all parts of the province ; the returns are estimated at about £450,000. 'The population was 5290 in 1885.

YAM, a term usually applied to the tubers of various species of Dioscorea. These are plants with thick root- stocks, from which protrude long slender, climbing stems, bearing alternate or opposite, entire or lobed leaves and unisexual flowers in long clusters. The flowers are gener- ally small and individually inconspicuous, though collect- ively showy. Each

consists of a greenish bell-shaped or flat perianth of six pieces, enclosing six or fewer stamens in the case of the male flowers, and a three-celled, three- winged ovary in that of the female flowers. The ovary ripens into a membranous capsule, bursting by three valves to liberate numerous flattish or globose seeds. The species are natives of the warmer regions of both hemispheres, and many of them are important on account of the large amount of starch contained in their tubers. According to Prof. Church's analysis of the Chinese yam, it contains more nutritive or nitrogenous matter, but less starch, than potatoes: in 100 parts there are of water 82°6, starch 13:1, albumen 2-4, fat 0:2, woody fibre 0-4, and mineral matter 1°3 parts.

D. sativa and D. alata are the species most widely diffused in tropieal and sub-tropical eountries. D. aculcata, grown in India, Cochin China, and the South Sea Islands, is esteemed one of the best varieties. D. japonica, the Chinese yam, is hardy in Great Britain, but the great depth to which its enormous tubers descend renders its eultivation unprofitable ; the tubers of D. alata some- times attain a weight of 100 Ib. Most of the yams contain an acrid principle, which is dissipated in cooking.

The only European Dioscorca is that known as D. pyrenaica, found in 1845 in the Pyrenees, a remarkable instance of a species growing at along distance from all its congeners. True yams must not be confounded with the sweet potato, Convolvulus Batatas (see vol. xix. p. 597), as they sometimes are in London markets. The eommon blaek briony (Zamus communis) of hedges in England is elosely allied to the yams of the tropics, and has a similar root- stock, which is reputed to be poisonous.

YAMBO, or YEMBo, more properly YAaNnBO', a town of Arabia on the Red Sea, in 24° 4' N. lat. Having the best harbour on this coast, it has taken the place of Al- Jar (which lay to the south and is now ruined) as the port of Medina, and is visited by steamships in connexion with the pilgrim traffic and for the import of grain. The town is surrounded by dilapidated walls, and the fixed population probably does not exceed 4000 (Von Maltzan). The Johaina Arabs are the dominant element, though there is a Turkish officer and guard who maintain a certain authority within the walls. Six or seven hours' journey inland at the base of the

mountains (Jebel Radwé) is the fruitful valley of Yanbo al-Nakhl, with palm-groves, several hamlets of the Johaina, and country houses of the merchants of the port. This inland town, or group of villages, is the Yanbo‘ of the old Arab geographers, and lies on the route of the Egyptian pilgrim caravan, one night’s journey from the famous battlefield of Bedr. The port is sometimes distinguished as Yanbo‘ al-Bahr (Yanbo‘ on the Sea).*

YANAON, a French settlement in India, near the mouth of the Godavari on the Orissa coast, in the Goda- vari district, Madras presidency. It is situated in 16° 44’ 10” N. lat. and 82° 12’ 5” E. long., and has an area of 2258 acres and a population of 4473.

Yanaon was founded shortly before 1750, and its fortunes followed the vieissitudes of French history in southern India. With the

other French possessions in India it was secured by the treaty of

1814-15.

YANG-CHOW FU, or Haneo-cHow Foo, a prefectural city in the Chinese province of Kiang-su, is situated on the Grand Canal in 32° 21’ N. lat. and 119° 15’ E. long. The walls are between three and four miles in circumfer- ence, and the streets both in the suburbs and in the city are well supplied with handsome shops. The temples, colleges, and other public buildings are fine and large, and there is generally a well-to-do look about the place. The flourishing trade of the town may be either the cause or the result of an almost Jewish predilection shown by the people for mercantile pursuits. Unlike Chinamen gener- ally, they prefer trade to husbandry, and have earned for themselves pre-eminence as a community of shopkeepers. Another of their characteristics is their extreme superstition. Their observance of full moons and festivals exceeds in ritualistic display that which is commonly thought to be good enough for such occasions by their fellow-country- men; and their jealousy for the honour of their gods has on more than one occasion led to religious outbreaks. The most violent of these fanatical ebullitions, so far as foreigners are

concerned, occurred in 1868, when Mr Hud- son Taylor first attempted to open a mission there. But Yang-chow Fu possesses an earlier historical connexion with foreigners. Marco Polo ruled over it for three years by appointment from Kublai Khan (7 1282-85). The great traveller speaks of it as "a noble city," " which has seven and twenty other wealthy cities under its administration. . . . The people," he adds, "are idolaters and use paper money." They "live by trade and manufactures, for a great amount of harness for knights and men-at-arms are made there." The population of the city and suburbs is esti- mated at about 360,000. In 1880 the value of foreign goods imported into the town amounted to about £96,956.

YANG-TSE KIANG, or Yane-tsz—e Keane. See Cuina, vol. v. p. 631.

YANINA. See Janina.

YANKTON, one of the principal cities of the Territory of Dakota, United States, and until recently its capital, is the county seat of Yankton county, and is situated upon both banks of the James or Dakota river at its confluence with the Missouri, and on the Chicago and St Paul and the Chicago and North Western Railroads. It serves as a centre of supply and distribution for the adjacent fertile plains. The population in 1880 was 3431; in 1888 this had probably increased to 5000.

The city derives its name from the Yankton division of the Sioux Indians. A trading-post was first established on its site in 1859, and the city was incorporated ten years later.

YARKAND, or Yarkenn, the chief town of the prin- cipal oasis of Kast Turkestan, is situated on the Yarkand- Daria, in 38° 25'N. lat. and 77° 16' E. long., at an altitude of about 4100 feet above sea-level. The settlements of the Yarkand oasis occupy the south-western corner of East Turkestan, and are scattered along the numerous rivers which issue from the steep slopes of the Pamir in the west, and the Karakorum and Kuen-Lun Mountains in the south. The oasis of Kashgar limits it in the north, and a tract of desert separates it from the oasis of Khotan in the south- east. The Yarkand-Daria and its numerous tributaries, which are fed by the glaciers of the mountain regions, as also many rivers which no longer reach the main stream but are lost in the steppe or amidst the irrigated fields, bring

abundance of water to the desert; one of them is called Zerafshan (“ gold-strewing”), as much on account of the fertility it brings to the desert as of the small amount of gold discovered in its auriferous sands. Numberless irrigation canals, some of them of considerable length, carry the water of the rivers to the fields, which occupy a broad zone of loess skirting the base of the mountains. Higher up, in the spurs of the mountains, there are rich pastur-

ages, where large numbers of goats, yaks, camels, sheep, and cattle are reared. On the whole, the oasis of Yarkand is regarded as the richest of East Turkestan, and its population probably numbers about 200,000 inhabitants (32,000 households in 1873). Wheat, barley, rice, beans, and various oil-yielding plants are grown in the fields, and the gardens supply abundance of melons, grapes, apples, and other fruits. The cotton tree and the mulberry are cultivated in the warmer parts of the oasis. There is no lack of gold, lead, and precious stones in the mountains, though only the first-named is at present extracted. A variety of petty trades are carried on in the towns; Yarkand is renowned for its leather-ware and saddlery. The population consists of Persians, who have almost given up the use of their mother tongue and now speak Turkish, and of Turkish Sarts.

The town of Yarkand, which has a population of about 60,000 according to Forsyth (5000 houses in the city, and as many in Yanghishar and the suburbs), is very favourably situated on the river of the same name, five days’ journey south-east from Kashgar. It is surrounded by a thick earthen wall, nearly four miles long, with towers in the Chinese style of architecture, and is well watered by num- berless canals, which are drawn from the river and, after having irrigated the rich gardens of the city, lead to cisterns in which water is collected for the winter. The square fortress of Yanghishar, which was built by the Chinese, stands within four hundred yards of the walls of the town. The ten mosques and madrasas of Yarkand, although much poorer than those of Bokhara or Samarcand, enjoy a wide renown in the Moslem world. There isa brisk trade, especially in horses, cotton, leather-ware, and all kinds of imported manufactured goods.

Yarkand is surrounded by a number of smaller towns, the chief of which are—Yanghi-hissar, which has about 600 houses and is the centre of a populous district, Tash- kurgan on the Pamir, now reckoned as belonging to the Russians, Posgam (1600 houses), Kargatyk, at the junction of the routes leading to Ladak and Khotan (2000 houses), Sanju (2000), Tagarchi, Kartchum, Besh-taryk (1800), Guma (3000), and several smaller ones.

Yarkand was but very imperfectly known until the second half of the 19th century. Marco Polo visited it between 1271 and 1275, and Goes in 1603; but the continnous wars which marked the his- tory of the oasis (see TURKESTAN, vol. xxiii. pp. 637-640) prevented Europeans from frequenting it, so that until 1863 the information borrowed from medizval travellers and from Chinese sources, along with that supplied by the pandit Mir Isset Ullah in 1812, was all that was known about the Yarkand region. The first European who reached it in the 19th century was Adolph Schlagintweit, who passed by Yarkand in August 1857, but was killed a few days later at Kashgar. The pandit Mohammed Hamid visited it in 1863 and determined its geographical position and altitude. The best recent information is due to Robert Shaw! and G. W. Hayward, who stayed at Yarkand in 1869, and to Sir Douglas Forsyth, who first visited itin 1870. Three years later he visited it again with an expedi- tion which had Gordon, Bellew, Chapman, Trotter, Biddulph, and Stoliczka as members, and afterwards published a detailed report upon the scientific results of the mission. In 1886, after a re- markable journey through East Turkestan, A. D. Carcy reached Yarkand and spent the winter there.

YARMOUTH, or Great YARMOUTH, a municipal and parliamentary borough, seaport, watering place, and import- ant fishing station of England, chiefly in Norfolk, with a small portion (of the municipal borough only) in Suffolk, is situated on a long and narrow peninsula of sand, bounded on the west by the river Bure, the Breydon (formed by the Yare and the Waveney), and the estuary of these rivers. It stands on the Great Eastern and the Eastern and Mid- land Railway lines, 20 miles east of Norwich and 122

‘ 1 R. Shaw, Visits to High Tartary, Yarkand, and Kashgar, London,

871.

2 Report of a Mission to Yarkund in 1878, Calcutta, 1875, with numerous photographs.

YAS OU T H

north-east of London. The old town of Great Yarmouth was built chiefly along the eastern bank of the Yare, but within recent years the town has extended beyond its ancient walls, of which some remains still exist, to the sea- shore, where there are a marine drive and three piers—two of them 700 feet long. The principal features of Yarmouth are the north and south quays, and the straight narrow lanes, 145 in number, called "rows," running at right angles to them. These rows were at one time inhabited by the wealthy burgesses, and many of the houses now tenanted by the poorer classes have curiously panelled rooms, with richly decorated ceilings. The market place of Yarmouth is one of the most spacious in the kingdom, its area being about three acres. The old town of Great Yarmouth is connected with Little Yarmouth by a bridge across the Yare of stone and iron, erected in 1854. The Bure is crossed by a suspension bridge. The church of St Nicholas, founded in 1101 by Herbert Losinga, the first bishop of Norwich (who removed the see from Thetford), and consecrated in 1119, is one of the largest parish churches in England, Originally it was in the form of a Latin cross, but only the tower of the ancient building remains ; and by successive alterations the form of the church has been completely changed. The clerestoried nave in the Early English style, with columns alternately oct- angular and circular, was rebuilt in the reign of King John. A portion of the chancel is of the same date. About fifty years later the aisles were widened, so that the nave is now the narrowest part of the building. A grand west front with towers and pinnacles was constructed in 1330-38, but the building was interrupted by a visitation of the plague. Within the church there were at one time eighteen chapels, maintained by guilds or private families, but these were demolished by the Reformers, who sold the valuable utensils of the building and applied the money to the widening of the channel of the harbour. During the Commonwealth the Independents appropriated the chancel, the Presbyterians the north aisle, and the Episcopalians were

allowed the remainder of the building. The brick walls erected at this time to separate the different por- tions of the building remained till 1847. In 1864 the tower was restored, and the east end of the chancel rebuilt ; in 1869-70 the south aisle was rebuilt; and in 1884 the south transept, the west end of the nave, and the north aisle underwent restoration. The width of the nave is 26 feet, and its length to the tower 117, that of the tower 27 feet, and of the chancel 92,—total 236 feet. The Roman Catholic church is a handsome Gothic building erected in 1850. In 1551 a grammar school was founded, the great hall of the dissolved hospital, founded in the reign of Edward I. by Thomas Fastolfe, being appropriated as the building. The school was closed from 1757 to 1860, when it was re-established by the charity trustees; and in 1872 new buildings were erected. In the hospital school a number of boys and girls were formerly boarded and educated, but since 1850 the charity has been administered as a place of free education only. Among the other principal public buildings are the town-hall and public offices, of red brick and red sandstone in the Queen Anne style of architecture, with a tower 125 feet in height, erected in 1883; the aquarium, erected in 1877 and extended in 1882; the old toll-house, formerly the town-hall, a build- ing of the 14th century, which has been carefully pre- served as a relic of antiquity; and the assembly and reading rooms, the drill-hall, the custom-house, the bar-racks at Southtown, the bathhouse, the workhouse, the public library, and two theatres. A Doric column, 144 feet in height, was erected on the downs in 1817 to the memory of Nelson. Among the charitable and benevolent institutions are the royal naval lunatic asylum, originally

afford excellent anchorage.

feet, and at high water of 18 to 20 feet.

729

founded as a lunatic hospital in 1811; the sailors' home

(1859), the boys' home (1870), the Walrond memoria!

smack-boys' home (1875), the fishermen's hospital (1702), and Warne's and various minor charities.

Yarmouth Roads, except in east or north-east winds, The present channel to the quays was made in 1567 by Joost Jansen, a Netherlands engineer, It affords a depth of water at the bar of 12 The town owes its origin to the fisheries, and is now one of the chief

fishing stations on the east coast of England, being

specially famed for its herring and mackerel fisheries (see FisHERrES, vol. ix. pp. 251-252), while cod and other white fish are also caught in great quantities. The number of boats registered under the Fisheries Act in December 1886 was 439, employing from 4500 to 6100 men and boys. The boats engaged in fishing are mostly trawling smacks. The curing of fish is an important in- dustry, Yarmouth bloaters being celebrated throughout

the kingdom. A great stimulus was given to the fishing trade by the erection of a fish wharf in 1869, having a length of 2257 feet. on the rivers by means of lighters and wherries.

There is a considerable inland trade In 1883 the value of the imports of foreign and colonial produce reached £285,742, and, although in 1886 it sank to

£173,636, the average for the five years preceding 1888 was about £235,000. The value of the exports in 1882 was £3399 and in 1886 £14,706. are coal, timber, and provisions.

The principal imports

The trade is chiefly with the Baltic ports, France, Portugal, Spain, the Channel Islands, the United States, and British North America. The number of vessels engaged in the foreign and colonial trade that entered in 1886 was 191 of 38,134 tons, that cleared 99 of 18,299 tons. The number in the coasting trade was 1033 of 110,312 tons entered, and 1083 of 124,527 tons cleared. Steam-packets ply between London, Hull, and Newcastle. Ship-building and boat- building are carried on chiefly in connexion with the fisheries, the number built in 1886 being 11 of 781 tons. There are also rope, twine, and trawl-net manufactories, silk-crape works, and extensive maltings. Yarmouth is frequented in summer as a seaside resort. It is governed by a mayor, twelve aldermen, and thirty-six councillors. The corpora- tion act as the urban sanitary authority. Water is obtained from one of the "broads" at Ormesby. The borough has a separate commission of the peace and court of quarter- sessions. The population of the municipal borough (area 3685 acres) was 41,819 in 1871 and 46,159 (9008 being in Gorleston in Suffolk) in 1881.

At the close of the 5th century Yarmouth is said to have been the landing-place of a Saxon invader Cerdic. At an early period it was resorted to by fishermen from the Cinque Ports and from the Continent for the herring-fishing, who dried their nets on the denes or downs, and also erected tents where they sold their fish to mer- chants from London and elsewhere. At Domesday the place is de- scribed as the king's demesne, and as having seventy burgesses. Henry I. appointed a provost as governor, and in the 9th year of John it received a charter of incorporation. It received another charter from Henry III., who permitted the inhabitants to enclose the borough with walls and moats. In 1338-39 the town suffered severely from the plague, during which 7000 persons are said to have died. In 1381 the rebels under Wat Tyler were defeated by the inhabitants of Yarmouth. The town also rendered considerable assistance when England was threatened by the Spanish Armada ; in recognition of this Elizabeth empowered the "bailiffs, burgesses, and commonalty" to hold an admiralty court, and extended their liberties in other ways. In 1588 a castle was built in the centre of the town, and a mound called the south

mound raised and crowned with heavy ordnance. The castle was demolished in 1621 and new fortifications thrown np, having a circuit of 24 miles. On account of the hardship experienced by the town from the levying of ship-money by Charles I., it declared for the Parliament.' At the close of the war the fortifications were demolished. From an early period the Cinque Ports had the power of sending bailiffs to Yarmouth to govern the town during the herring-fishing season,

from Michaelmas to Martinmas, their jurisdiction being concurrent with that of the bailiffs of Yarmouth; but on account of the jealousies that were thus created the privilege was abolished in the reign of Charles II. Until the Act of William LV. the town was governed by a charter of Queen Anne. It sent two members to patliament from the reign of Edward I. till 1867, when it was disfranchised ; but by the Act of 1885 it was again allowed to re- turn one member. (T. B. E.)

YARN consists of any textile fibre prepared by the process of spinning for being woven into cloth. It is only in a few minor and exceptional cases, such as the weaving of hair-cloth or of wire, that there isany making of woven fabrics without the previous spinning of yarn. As weav- ing can be shown to be among the earliest and most universal of the industries of mankind, the process of spinning yarn, which of necessity accompanies or rather precedes weaving, can be claimed as one of the primal employments of the race. There is ample evidence obtain- able, not only of the great antiquity, but also of the wide —almost universal—diffusion of the art of spinning. Remains of the implements employed are found wherever traces of prehistoric and early man make their appearance. It happens that the exceedingly simple apparatus which was used in the earliest ages continued to be the spinning implements of civilized communities till comparatively recent times, and it may therefore be said that there is no art which has been more widely diffused, more uniformly practised, and which remained so long fixed and unpro- gressive, as that of yarn-spinning. On the other hand, since human ingenuity bent itself to improve the art—and these efforts only began in earnest about the middle

of the 18th century—there have not been developed in the whole range of mechanical industries implements of greater variety, complexity, delicacy of action, and manifold pro- ductive capacity than the varied machines now adapted for the production of yarn.

The primitive spinning implement consists of a spindle, a rod of wood, usually from 9 to 12 inches in length, rounded and tapering towards both extremities, as shown in the accompanying cut. At the upper extremity there

Primitive spindle. is usually a notch, in which the yarn is caught while undergoing the operation of twisting, and to the spindle there is commonly added a whorl—a perforated disk of stone or other heavy material—the object of which is by its weight to give momentum and steadiness to the spindle when it is rotated by the hands of the spinner. The fibre to be spun is commonly attached loosely to a distaff or "rock" of wood, which is held under the left arm of the operator; but in the case of certain short fibres the material is made up in rolls or cardings. A rotatory motion is given to the spindle by twirling it between the fingers of the right hand ; and the fibre to be spun is then drawn out in a uniform strand between the fingers of both hands and simultaneously twisted into yarn by the rotat- ing spindle to which it is attached. The portion that is sufficiently twisted is wound on the body of the spindle, and the operation is continued till the spindle is filled with yarn of a smooth and equal calibre. The quantity thus rolled up gives the name to a now definite measure of yarn, "the spindle." Simple and primitive as is this apparatus, a dexterous and experienced spinner is able to produce yarn of an evenness, strength, and delicacy such as can scarcely be exceeded with the aid of the most com- plicated appliances and by the numerous processes of perfected modern spinning. The cotton yarns with which the famous Dacca muslins of India,—textures which from their

YA R—

extreme flimsy airiness receive such names as ' woven air" and "evening dew,"—are spun with the aid only of these simple and rude appliances. The spindle used by the deft Hindu is a slender strip of bamboo not much bigger than a darning needle, lightly weighted with a pellet of clay ; and,

as the tender thread formed cannot even support the weight of so slight a spindle, the apparatus is rotated in a socket, which consists of a piece of hollow shell. The spindle as here described was the sole apparatus with which, so far as is known, the whole of the yarn woven into cloth by mankind till comparatively modern times was made, and even at the present day it is not wholly obsolete. Apart from its use in Eastern countries and among the untutored tribes of Central Africa, the spindle in its original form continues to be used in the remote districts of the Scottish Highlands and islands, and in many other regions of Europe.

Throughout all the changes and developments of modern yarn-spinning the rotating spindle continues to be the essential implement, and all the improvements which have been effected have had for their object,—(1) the providing of mechanical means of rotating the spindle, (2) an automatic method of drawing out and attenuating the fibre, and (3) devices for working a large group of spindles together.

The first improvement on the simple spindle consisted in mount- ing it horizontally in bearings, and giving it a rotatory motion by a band from a large wheel, passing round a small pulley or "wharve"' fixed on the spindle itself. Such was the first spin- ning wheel which, in the form of the "charka," has long been known in the East Indies ; and from a drawing in a 14th-century MS. in the British Museum it is obvious that it was not unknown, although certainly far from common, in Europe at that early date. A jewelled model hand-wheel of this description was formerly the property of Mary of Guise. This form of wheel came ultimately to be known in Scotland as the "muckle wheel," in contradistinction to one of later invention, and the method of working it is not yet an altogether forgotten art.

No strict record of the dates at which various developments of the art of spinning took place are to be found, and it is certain that many appliances were long known and to some extent used before their adoption became general. Thus it is quite clear that the flier, which is fitted around modern spindles for twisting the yarn before it is wound on the bobbin, was known to Leonardo da Vinci and probably invented by him. Among the numerous mechanical drawings left by that man of genius there is one

which shows a spindle with flier and bobbin, with a device for moving the bobbin up and down on the spindle so as to effect an even distribution of the yarn. But the use of the flier does not seem to have been known in England till about the end of the 17th century. Ina pamphlet issued in 1681 by Thomas Firmin, entitled Some Pro- posals for the Employment of the Poor, there is an illustration of an improved wheel, with two spindles provided with fliers, having on them hooks or pins for directing the yarn on different parts of the bobbin. The sketch also shows the spindle and flier driven by different bands, as was the case with the spinning-wheel which sub- sequently came into common use. In hand-spinning the further application of the treadle motion, with connecting-rod and crank-axle to drive the little wheel with the feet alone, was the final development. By this agency both hands of the spinner were free, continuous and uniform motion was secured, and the spinuer could work two spindles simultaneously, the one with the right and the other with the left hand. It was in this condition that the most advanced form of yarn-making was carried on in the 18th century, when a great series of inventions revolutionized the entire range of textile industries and laid the foundation of the gigantic factory system of spinning and weaving which now prevails.

The problem which lay before inventors was to bring tangled masses of fibrous material into parallel order, and to draw out and twist these fibres into uniform strands by automatic means, without the continuous application of intelligent attention. The first stage in the evolution of mechanical spinning was effected under the patent of Louis Paul in 1788, in which there was clearly described and foreshadowed what is now one of the most important features of spinning machinery—the drawing rollers. In his specification he says :—

"One end of the mass, rope, thread, or sliver is put betwixt a pair of rowlers, cillinders, or cones, or some such movements, which, being turned round, by their motion draws in the raw mass of wool or cotton to be spun, in proportion to the velocity given to such rowlers, cillinders, or cones. As the prepared mass passes regularly through or betwixt these rowlers, cillinders, or cones, a succession of other rowlers, cillinders, or cones, moving proportionably faster

than the first, draw the rope, thread, or sliver into any degree of fineness which may be required."

Next, to James Hargreaves of Blackburn is due the first con- ception of the famous spiuning-jenny, which he devised about 1767 and patented in 1770. In his specification Hargreaves describes his invention as a inachine or engine to be managed by one person only, and that the wheel or engine will spin, draw, and twist sixteen or more threads at one time by a turn or motion of one hand and a draw of the other. At the same time the humble barber of Preston, Richard Arkwright, was busily engaged in developing the important series of inventions and adaptations which resulted in the modern throstle spinning-frame. Arkwright's principal patents were secured in 1769 and 1775 ; and in the latter year Samuel Crompton of Bolton brought before the world his mule spinning-frame, in which the drawing rollers of Paul and Arkwright were with happy effect applied to the jenny of Hargreaves. 'These inventions are at the foundation of all modern systems of yarn-spinning ; details regard- ing them are given under Corron, LINEN, SILK, and WooL.'

The various methods by which the sizes or counts of yarn have been fixed in different countries have long been a source of much inconvenience in the international exchange of spun yarns. The methods of estimating sizes or weights of yarn are indeed com- plicated in the extreme, for not only has each country different standards, which may locally be disregarded, but for the yarn from each separate fibre there may be different lengths of hank and different methods of estimating sizes. Thus, taking English stand- ards, we find that cotton yarns are made up into hanks of 560 "threads" of 14 yards, giving 840 yards per hank, and the "counts" are the number of hanks which go to make 1tb weight of yarn. For linen yarns there are 24 yards in a thread, and 120 threads or 300 yards in a lea, and the couut is the number of leas per fb. In a hank of worsted or woollen yarn there are 560 yards, and the count similarly is the number of hanks per tb. In Continental countries the length of the hank or its equivalent is different ; the weight by which the count is reckoned also varies; and, as the weights and measures of the several countries have

only the most involved ratio to each other, to estimate comparative sizes complex calculated tables are necessary. Attempts have been made to establish an international standard of numbering yarns based on the French metric system, in which the count is the number of grams which a definite length of yarn—1000 metres—weighs. No progress, how- ever, has been made in coming to an international agreement in the

uestion. (J. PA.)

YAROSELAVL, a government of central Russia, sepa- rated from Moscow by narrow strips of Vladimir and Tver on the 8., and having Tver and Novgorod on the W., Vologda on the N., and Kostroma on the E., is one of the smallest, but at the same time one of the most populous and industrial governments of Great Russia. It has an area of 13,751 square miles, and the population was 1,118,130 in 1884. It consists of a broad and shallow depression, elongated from west to east, where the Volga flows at a level ranging from 260 to 230 feet above the sea, while the surrounding hills rise to altitudes of from 700 to 800 feet. In the west, especially between the Motoga and the Sheksna, the country is covered with marshes and ponds, which become completely flooded when the water rises in the rivers. There is another region of low and marshy tracts in the south, about Rostoff. Gentle sloping hills appear in the north on the left bank of the Sheksna.

Jurassic clays, sandstones, and sands cover nearly the whole of Yarostavl, but they are concealed almost everywhere by thick deposits of Glacial boulder clay, which is regarded by Russian geolo- gists as the bottom moraine of the great ice-cap of the Glacial period. Triassic " variegated marls," widely diffused throughout the whole of the middle Volga region, undoubtedly underlie nearly all the Jurassic deposits of the government, but only a few patches come to the surface; many salt springs exist in these deposits, Thé Upper Carboniferous limestones come to the surface only in the north-west and towards the east. The chief mineral products are bog-iron ores, sulphate of copper, and pottery clay. Peat occurs in thick beds. There are also several mineral springs. The soil is mostly a kind of loess of moderate fertility ; sandy tracts are not uncommon ; and

wide areas are covered with marshes—relics of the great lakes of the Lacustrine period.

The chief river of the government is the Volga, which traverses it for 180 miles, making a great bend to the north. The chief towns—Rybinsk, Yarostavl, Motoga, Romanoff-Borisoglyebsk, Uglitch, and Myshkin—are situated on its banks, and a brisk

1 Geological Survey of Russia, sheet 56, by Nikitin (Russian and German), St Petersburg, 1884. '

traffic is carried on, both by the river itself and by two canals, Mariinsk and Tikhvinsk, which connect it with the Neva through its tributaries the Sheksna aud the Motoga. Another tributary received by the Volga within the government is the Kotorost, which has many manufactories on its banks and is navigated, especially in spring. The Kostroma flows along the eastern border and is a channel for the export of timber and fuel. Small lakes are numerous, the chief being Lake Nero or Rostoff. The forests, which consist chiefly of fir and Scotch pine, cover one-third of the aggregate area; but they are rapidly being destroyed. The flora of Yarostavl, although similar to that of Moscow, bears a northern stamp owing to the presence of the dwarf birch, Rubus arcticus, and Linnea borealis.

The climate is as continental as that of middle Russia generally. The average temperature at Yarostavl is 36°°7 Fahr. (January 6°°5, July 61°5); the prevailing south-western and western winds render it moister than in central Russia ; and the average number of days with rain or snow is114. The rivers remain frozen from 118 to 183 days every year.

The population is thoronghly Great Russian. The aboriginal Meryas have been completely Russified; and traces of the Karel- ians, who immigrated in the 17th century, can only be discovered in the names and features of some inhabitants on the Siti river. There are moreover some 1000 Tartars, 2100 Jews, and about 500 Gipsies. Leaving out of account some 2700

Catholics and Protest- ants, the population belongs to the Greek Orthodox Church or is Raskolnik.

Although Yarostavl is one of the chief manufacturing govern- ments of the empire, its inhabitants have by no means abandoned agriculture, 27 per cent. of the total area being under crops (36 per cent. under forests and 8 per cent. untillable) ; on the lands of the peasantry the percentage is still greater (from 46 to 58 per cent.). Rye, oats, and barley, with some wheat and pease, are the chief crops, and in good seasons Yarostav] has even a surplus of corn, which is either sent to the distilleries or exported, The average crops of 1883-85 were 960,100 quarters of ryc, 36,000 of wheat, 97,400 of barley, 1,097,100 of oats, 19,600 of other grain, and 6,992,800 bushels of potatoes. Nearly 40,000 cwts. of flax are cropped every year. Market-gardening is largely engaged in and the Yarostavl gardeners have a wide repute throughout Russia. Chicory, sweet pease, cucumbers, apples, and berries are exported. Although there is no want of meadows, cattle-breeding is not greatly developed. In 1882-84 thcre were 178,370 horses, 260,000 cattle, 188,700 sheep, and 4700 pigs. One-third of the peasant households had no horses. Cheese-making on the co-operative principle has spread extensively of late, owing to the efforts of the zemstvo; 93 associations have a yearly production to the value of £12,700. Domestic trades are carried on in great variety in the villages, including the making of linen cloth, boots, gloves, sheepskins, knitted wares, clothes, felts, all kinds of wooden wares, pottery, and a variety of metallic goods. The total production is very consider- able, although no details are available. The manufactures are growing rapidly, the yearly production of 1708 establishments being estimated at £2,210,000 in 1884. Cotton and linen are the chief items (nearly £1,000,000); fiour-mills, distilleries, and tobacco works come next; and these are followed by chemical works and workshops for machinery, metallic wares, and so on, which are rapidly developing. The trade of the government is very active both on the Volga and on the two railway lines, one of which connects Rybinsk with the St Petersburg and Moscow line and the other connects Yarostavl with Moscow and Vologda. MRybinsk and Yarostav] are the chief commercial centres, but Rostoff, Motoga, Romanoff, and Poshekhonie also carry on an active trade in corn, timber, and manufactured wares. The total merchandise shipped or discharged to and

from the towns and villages of Yarostavl is estimated at 1,600,000 tons annually, one-half by rail.

One of the most distinctive features of Yarostavl is the large numbers of its male population who annually leave their homes in order to work all over Russia as locksmiths, masons, plasterers, waiters in restaurants, greengrocers, tailors, gardeners, carpenters, joiners, pilots, or boatmen. Many of these employments have been specialties of the population of Yarostavl from a remote antiquity, and the native of this government can easily be distinguished by his enterprising spirit, keen air, and energetic and nervous temperament. In Moscow and St Petersburg together there are about 76,400 employed in the above capacities, and it may be estimated that as many as 100,000 persons annually leave their homes in this way.

The educational institutions were represented in 1884 by a lyceum (197 students), six gymnasia (569 boys and 1219 girls), a military school (492 boys), a seminary for teachers (81 students), and 745 elementary schools (25,780 boys, 10,140 girls).

Yarostavl is divided into ten districts, the chief towns of which, with their population in 1884, are—YAROSLAVL (see below), Daniloff (5780), Lubim (3180), Motoga (6860), Myshkin (2390), Poshekhonie (5990), Romanoff-Borisoglyebsk (5300), Rostoff (12,450), Rybinsk (19,900), and Uglitch (11,930). Petrovsk (1760) has municipal institutions.

History. —As early as the 9th century the Slavonians had become masters of the Yarostavl territory, which was formerly occupied by the Finnish stems Vess and Merya, as also by Mordvinians, Muroms, and Tcheremisses in the south. Rostoff was already in existence ; but Yarostavl, Rybinsk, and Uglitch begin to be mentioned in the annals only in the 11th and 12th centuries. The independent prin- cipality of Rostoff was divided in the 13th century into three parts,

but these were soon afterwards successively annexed to Moscow. _ See the Trudy of the Yarostavl Statistical Committee, 8 vols., and the Vyestnik of

the Yarostavl zemstvo, published since 1872. (@. A. K.)

YAROSEAVL, capital of the above government, stands on the right bank of the Volga, at its junction with the Kotorost, 173 miles by rail to the north-east of Moscow, and had a population of 48,310 inhabitants in 1884; but this number is temporarily much increased during the period of navigation. The suburbs of the town occupy the left bank and are inundated at high water. A fine quay borders the Volga for nearly two miles. The cathedrals and several churches are very old. The Uspenskiy cathe- dral was begun in 1215 and rebuilt in 1648 ; the churches of the Preobrazhenskiy monastery, St John's, and Voskre- seniye date from the 15th and 17th centuries, the second being a fine specimen of the architectural style exemplified in the Vasiliy Blazhennyi church of Moscow. Yarostavl has a lyceum, founded by Demidoff, with a juridical faculty, three gymnasia (409 boys, 669 girls), and various primary schools. The manufactories, whose total production in 1862 barely reached the value of £200,000, now employ 5100 hands and yield an output valued at about £1,000,000 (one-half from one cotton-mill). The trade, especially that in corn, is very active and accounts for one-quarter of the whole traffic of the government. The Yarostavl merchants also carry on a large import trade in manufactured goods and groceries.

The town of Yarostavl was founded in 1026-1036 by Yarostay

_Vladimirovitch, who caused a wooden fort to be erected at the con- fluence of the Kotorost with the Volga. It became the chief town of a principality in 1218 and remained so until 1471, when it fell under the dominion-of Moscow. Even in the 13th century Yarostavl was an important town, and, although it suffered during subsequent wars, it maintained its importance until the 19th century, when the trade on the Volga and its rising manufactures

again gave it a position of predominance in the upper basin of the Volga.

YARRELL, Wiuttam (1784-1856), one of the most popular of British naturalists, was born at Westminster in June 1784. His father was a newspaper agent, and he himself succeeded to the business on his father's death, and prosecuted it till within a few years of his own. He availed

himself of any interval of relaxation to enjoy such sport as the neighbourhood of London afforded, acquired the reputation of being the best shot and the first angler in the metropolis, and soon also became an expert natural- ist. In 1824 he became a fellow of the Linnean Society, and was a diligent contributor to their 7ransactions 3 and he was one of the earliest members of the Zoological Society. The greater part of his leisure towards the end of his life was devoted to his two great works, The Listory of British Fishes (2 vols., 1836) and The Listory of British Birds (2 vols., 1843). These works are compiled on the same plan; they contain accurate figures, with accompany- ing descriptions, of every British fish or bird 3 and they have from the first taken their position as standard authorities. Few books on natural history are more agreeable to the general reader: the style is pleasant, and the truth with which he describes the habits of the birds is such as might have been expected from a keen and ob- Servant sportsman. In 1856 he had an attack of paralysis, of which he died at Yarmouth on Ist September of the same year.

YAWS is the name in use in the British West Indies and on the West Coast of Africa for a peculiar disease of the skin in Negroes. The learned name, first applied by Sauvages (1761), is frambesia, from the likeness of the

typical excrescences to a raspberry. For many years yaws

was thought to be peculiar to the African Negro, either in

his home (both west and east coasts) or in the West Indies and Brazil. long been known in the East Indies (first mentioned by Bontius early in the 17th century), affecting the Malays rather than the Negroes, its chief seats being Amboyna, Ternate, Timor, Celebes, Java, and Sumatra.

But a disease the same in every respect has

It has been identified more recently by De Rochas and other observers in New Caledonia and Fiji. The parangi of Ceylon has been shown by Kynsey to be the same as the West Indian yaws. Also in the Samoa group, to which there has been no Negro migration, an identical malady occurs.

The closely allied verrugas of the Peruvian Andes (see Wart) is so different in its endemic circumstances that it is not usually classified as a form of yaws. The account that follows applies equally to all of the local forms, while it has more especial reference to yaws in the Negroes of the West Indies.

The general course of the disease is as follows. Previons to the eruption there may or may not be any disorder of health ; in child- ren (who form a large part of the subjects of yaws) there will prob- ably be rheumatic pains in the limbs and joints, with languor, debility, and upset of the digestion ; in adults of ordinary vigour the eruption is often the first sign, and it is attended with few or no constitutional troubles. The eruption begins as small pimples like a pin's head, smooth and nearly level with the surface ; they have a little whitish speck on their tops, grow rapidly, and reach the size of a sixpence or ashilling. The pustules then break, and a thick viscid ichor exudes and dries upon them as a whitish slough, and around their base as a yellowish brown crust. Beneath the whitish slough is the raspberry excrescence or yaw proper, a reddish fungous growth with a nodular surface. The favourite seats of the eruption are the forehead, face, neck, armpits, groin, genitals, perineum, and buttocks. Hairs at the seat of a yaw turn white. In young children or infants the corners of the mouth ulcerate, as in syphilis, and the perineal excrescences resemble condylomata. The pustules and excrescences do not all arise in one crop: some are found mature while others are only starting. If the patient be of sound constitution and good reaction, the yaws may reach the full size of a mulberry in a month, in which case they will probably be few; but in persons of poor health they may take three months to attain the size of a wood-strawberry, in which case they will be numerous inversely to their size. Often there is one yaw much larger than the rest, and longer in falling; it is called the "master yaw" or "mother yaw." On the soles of the feet (less often on the palms of the hands) the bursting yaws are as if im- prisoned beueath the horny cuticle ; they cause swelling and tender- ness of the foot, until set free by paring the callous skin down to the quick ; these yaws are called "crab yaws" or tubbas. Usually a yaw is painless unless when rubbed or irritated. The absence of pain is used as a diagnostic sign if there be any doubt as to the nature of the attack : a pustule is opened, and a little of the juice of

capsicum dropped into it ; if it be a yaw, no smarting will be felt. In some cases a few yaws will show themselves long after the primary attack is over; these are called "memba yaws " (from "re- member"), the term being sometimes applied also to protracted cases with successive crops of eruption. Six weeks is the average time in a good case, from the first of the eruption to the fall of the cxcres- cences ; in such regular cases a scar remains, it may be for many months, darker than the rest of the (Negro) skin. But the disease is often a much more tedious affair, the more protracted type having become common in the West Indies of recent years. In such cases the eruption comes out by degrees and as if with difficulty, crop after crop ; foul, excavating, and corroding ulcers may remain, or a limb may be in part seamed and mutilated by the scars of old ulceration, The scars after ulceration are not so dark as the skin around.

That yaws isa communicable disease is beyond question ; but that it has always arisen by conveyance of yawey matter from a previous case is neither proved nor probable. Being to a great extent a disease of childhood, it is not usually conveyed after the manner of syphilis, but by contact in other ways (as in the epidemic syphilis of 1494-1520 and in recent circumscribed epidemics). An abrasion or wound of the surface, such as a chigoe bite or a cut of the foot, is a likely point of entrance for the virus. If the yawey matter finds access to a pre-existing sore or ulcer, it causes the latter to take on a foul and sloughing condition. No sore or yaw 1s induced at the point of infection, which will probably be healed long before the eruption appears. It is said, however, that the pustules appear earliest and in greatest numbers on the skin near the spot where the virns entered. They follow the infection at an

interval of several weeks (incubation period). Cases of yaws by infection are not unknown in white persons of good position, both children and adults, in the West Indies and elsewhere.

The nature of the disease is obscure. It is alleged to be here- ditary by some, and denied to be so by others; the fact seems to be that some constitutions are much more susceptible than others, and susceptible at some periods or states of health more than at others. As an epidemic, the

disease in a locality has seasons of activity and quiet. One attack in childhood gives a large degree of immunity for the rest of life. Yaws used to break out in the slaves on board Guineamen. Both in Africa and among the slaves in the West Indies it was a custom to inoculate the yaws, so as to get yay attack over (called "buying the yaws") or to get put upon the sick list.

As regards treatment, the malady in a person of good constitu- tion runs its course and gets well in a few weeks. Whatever tends to check the eruption, such as exposure to chill, is to be avoided. A week's course of cream of tartar and sulphur (confection of sulphur) at the beginning of the illness is often resorted to, so as to bring the eruption well out. The patient should remain indoors, in a well-aired room, and take daily warm baths and diluent drinks. If the excrescences are flabby and unhealthy, it is an indication for generous diet. Mercurial treatment is no longer in vogue. Asex- ternal applications, weak lotions of zinc or carbolic acid may be used, and, if the excrescences are irritable, a watery solution of opium. Tedious and unhealthy yaws should be dressed with a wash of sulphate of zinc or of copper; the same may be applied to a yaw ulcer. The crab yaws of the horny soles or palms, after they are let through by paring the cuticle, may be dusted with alum powder. The most intractable cases occur in badly nourished and anemic subjects, and these will often go on for months in hospital without mending. Of late in the West Indies the disease has become largely a morbus miseriz, and to that extent less amenable to treatment.

The date of the first appearance of yaws in the West Indies and Brazil is matter of dispute ; the general belief is that it came in with the African Negro. After the emancipation in 1838 there was a marked decline in the prevalence of the disease in] Jamaica and other colonies. In Jamaica it began to be seen again from 1854 to 1864, the cases being more of adult age than formerly. The worst recent centre of yaws has been Dominica, which is occupied by Negro communities unprovided with medical attendance. In 1871 the Government opened and maintained two special hospitals for yaws (under a board of commissioners), one at Morne Bruce near Roseau, and the other at Prince Rupert's. In Barbados and Antigua cases of yaws are rarely seen, the population being more creole than

Negro. Trinidad has a good deal of the disease from time to time in the inland villages ; bad cases are admitted to the leper asylum at Port of Spain. In Grenada, which has a special yaws hospital, and in St Vincent the immigration of Hindu coolies received a check owing to the ravages made by the disease among them. It prevails also in San Domingo, Guadeloupe, and others of the Antilles. At Berbice and Essequibo there were 23 fatal cases in one year (1870). The disease is common in all parts of Brazil. In western Africa cases are found along the whole coast from the Senegal to the Congo, and in the interior (Timbuktu and Bornu). On the East Coast it is found in Mozambique, Madagascar, and the Comoros. Its localities in the East Indies and islands of the Pacific have been already mentioned.

For the literature dealing with the subject, see Hirsch, Geographical and His- torical Pathology (Engl. trans.), vol. ii., London, 1885 (New Sydenham Soc.).

YAZD, or YEzp, a city of Persia, capital of the district of Yazd, province of Farsistan, in 31° 50' N. lat. and 54° 25' EK. long. Yazd stands on a flat sandy plain, about 50 miles broad and encircled by an amphitheatre of pictur- esque hills, on the high road between Ispahan and Karman, 190 miles south-east of the former and 220 north-west of the latter place. The old and dilapidated walls enclose a very large space, which, however, is much encumbered with ruins, the population having fallen from about 100,000 at the beginning of the 19th century (Christie) to about 30,000 in 1868 (Smith), Since the famine of 1870 the place has recovered some of its former prosperity, and has at present (1888) an estimated population of 50,000, includ- ing 1000 Jews and about 4000 fire-worshippers, Yazd being the only town in Persia where these still form a separate community. There are fifty mosques, sixty-five public baths, eight public schools, but no building of any note except the chief mosque, a very old and decayed structure, which still presents a lofty and imposing frontage. With the exception of a fine new bazaar, which is well stocked with goods and much frequented, the markets and other

Bs parts of the town are irregularly planned, with narrow dark streets and little life. Yazd is in fact a city of the wilder- ness, whose oasis, planted

chiefly with mulberries and other fruit trees, is everywhere surrounded by the shifting sands, which at some points already threaten to encroach on the town itself (Macgregor). In this way was engulfed its predecessor, Old Yazd or Askizdr, whose ruins are still visible 10 miles to the north-west on the road to Kashan. Nevertheless the local traders maintain their old reputation for intelligence and enterprise, and their agents still visit the distant markets of India, Java, and China. The trade with India formerly carried on through Shirdz now takes the more direct route through Karman. The exports are chiefly sugar, silks, opium (4000 chests in a single year to China), cordage, cotton, felts, and copper ; the imports wheat, rice, cotton goods, and henna. This henna, together with rang for dyeing the hair, is brought from the Mindb and Bandar-Abbas districts to be ground and prepared for the Persian market. From the neighbouring villages and the remote province of Ghilién comes the raw material for the silk-looms, which produce two kinds—sasb and aluhi —both of the very finest quality. Other noted products of the local industries are the felts, equal to the best in Karman, and the candied sugars and sweetmeats, in the preparation of which the fire-worshippers excel. A great drawback to Yazd is the defective and irregular supply of water, which largely depends on the yearly snow and rain- fall on the surrounding hills. The annual revenue averages £35,000 to £40,000, of which three-fifths go to the public treasury ; the rest supports the local administration and household of the governor, who resides in a kind of citadel within the city walls

YEADON, a manufacturing town in the West Riding of Yorkshire, is situated on a hill north of Airedale, about 14 miles from Guiseley station on the Midland Railway and 84 miles north-west of Leeds. The streets are gener- ally irregular and tortuous, but within recent years greater care has been taken in the arrangement of new buildings. The church of St John in the Pointed Gothic style, erected in 1843, consists of chancel and nave, with square tower surmounted by pinnacles. The town-hall and mechanics' institute, a handsome Gothic building erected in 1883, in- cludes a large public hall, the rooms of the Liberal club and of the local board, and class and lecture rooms. Yeadon is chiefly of modern growth, although wool-combing and cloth manufacture were carried on to some extent before the establishment of the first woollen-mill in 1831. Since

1850 the town has made rapid progress, and now possesses several mills, in which woollen cloths are manufactured, especially materials for ladies' jackets, ulsters, mantles, &c. The township was formed out of Guiseley in 1845. The local board of health was established in 1863. The popula- tion of the urban sanitary district (area 1723 acres) was 5246 in 1871 and 6534 in 1881.

YEAR. See CALenpDar, vol. iv. p. 666.

YEAST, an insoluble substance forming an essential component of all sacchariferous juices when in the state of vinous fermentation. This subject is pretty fully dealt with under FERMENTATION (see vol. ix. pp. 92, 95, 97); one important application of yeast, however, viz., that which it finds in the baker's trade, is there only referred to. To produce a spongy loaf, the dough, before being made into loaves, is mixed with a ferment which, if allowed to act for a sufficient time before baking, produces alcohol and carbonic acid from a small portion of the actual or potential sugar present; and the carbonic acid, being liberated from within the dough, causes it to "rise." In former times leaven (see Baxkine, vol. iil. p. 253) used to be employed exclusively. For higher classes of bakery yeast is now preferred. The yeast produced so abundantly

Type and

circum- stances,

734

in beer-brewing is available ; but its bitter taste is an objec- tion to it. Hence it has long been customary in Germany to produce yeast expressly for bakers' and cooks' purposes, which may, of course, be done in a variety of ways. method frequently used is to produce a wort (see BREWING, vol. iv. p. 275) from barley, malt, and rye, and by the addi- tion of a little ready-made yeast to let it ferment under con- ditions which favour the growth of yeast-cells, but restrict the proportion of alcohol produced to a minimum (comp. FERMENTATION, vol. ix. p. 97). During the most tumultu- ous period of the process the yeast is skimmed off from the surface, washed with water, and either "filter-pressed " or

“centrifuged” to obtain it as a relatively dry paste ; it is then mixed with a proportion of dry starch, to give ita higher degree of dryness. Such yeast goes into commerce as presshefe or pfundhefe (German yeast or barm). This industry used to be a monopoly of Germany ; but quite lately the manufacture of German yeast has been taken up in Scotland.

YEDO. See Toxio.

YEISK, a district town of the Russian province of Kuban (Caucasus), was founded in 1848 at the mouth of the Yeia, on a narrow sandbank which separates the shallow Bay of Yeisk from the Sea of Azoff, 108 miles to the south-west of Rostoff-on-the-Don. Notwithstand- ing its shallow roadstead, which has a depth of 14 feet only at 2 miles from the shore, Yeisk has grown with great rapidity, and in 1884 had 23,725 inhabitants. Corn, linseed, and wool are exported to a considerable extent (1,730,000 cwts. of corn and flax and 10,000 ewts. of wool in 1885), and the port was visited in 1886 by 69 ships (30,000 tons) engaged in foreign trade and by 697 (80,800 tons) engaged in the coasting trade. There are large wool-cleansing factories, oil-works, and tanneries.

YEKATERINBURG. For this and similar forms of Russian town-names, see EKATERINBURG, &c.

YELETS, a district town of the Russian government of Orel, 121 miles by rail to the east of Orel, stands on the great trunk railway which connects Riga with Tsaritsyn on the lower Volga; a branch line connects it also with the railway which runs from Tula to Samara and Orenburg. Owing to its advantageous position Yelets, which had been for a long time an important entrepét for the corn trade, has rapidly grown of late, and in 1883 had 36,680 inhabit- ants. The Yelets merchants buy large quantities of grain in the fertile neighbouring provinces, and send their agents to southern and south-eastern Russia; nearly 150 flour-mills, many of them driven by steam, prepare flour, which is forwarded chiefly to Moscow and partly to Riga. The trade in cattle is also very important. Yelets has become of late a manufacturing centre, and has some im- portant tanueries, foundries for cast-iron and copper, tallow- melting works, sieve manufactories, éc. The town has several educational institutions, Its cathedral and two monasteries contain venerated historic relics.

Yelets is first mentioned in 1147, when it was a fort of Ryazah. The Polovtsys attacked it in the 12th century, and the Mongols destroyed it during their first invasion. The Tartars plundered it in 1415 and 1450 ; and it seems to have been completely abandoned in the latter half of the 15th century. Its development dates from the second half of the 17th century, when it became a centre for the trade with south Russia.

YELIZAVETGRAD. Sce Exizaseruerap.

YELIZAVETPOL. See ELizaABerHpot.

YELLOW FEVER is a typhus-like fever of certain ports, or of ships hailing from them. It differs from all other existing types of fevers and infections in largely sparing the Negro. It resembles cholera in being en-demic in some parts of the world (but only shipping places) and in being importable to others, in being an infection that issues from the soil or some medium equi-

valent thereto, and in being a virulent filth-disease ; but it differs from cholera in having at the outset a violent febrile paroxysm lasting two or three days. As a fever it resembles typhus; but it differs from typhus in all those "exogenous" characters wherein it resembles cholera. The generic place and affinities of yellow fever are perhaps best provided for in the nosology of Cullen: the symptoms. are within the sphere of the organic nervous system ; they stand for excitement first and prostration afterwards ; and they are an effect of human effluvia. Its differentia among the "' nervous" fevers due to "human effluvia" would be its maritime or amphibious habitat, its associa- tion with tropical heat, the chief part played by the liver in its symptomatology (on the lines of acute yellow atrophy), and the singular immunity of the Negro race.

An attack of yellow fever may follow definite exposure Charac-

(such as landing at an endemic port) within a few hours, as in corresponding cases of cholera; but the outbreak of symptoms is more often delayed for a few days, the limit of "incubation" being about eight.

The few hours' languor, chilliness, headache, and muscular pains, which might be the precursors of any febrile attack, are followed by a peculiar look of the eyes and face, which is charac- teristic : the face is flushed, and the eyes suffused at first and then congested or ferrety, the nostrils and lips red, and the tongue scarlet,—these being the most obvious signs of universal congestion of the skin, mucous mem- branes, and organs. Meanwhile the temperature has risen to fever heat, and may reach a very high figure (maximum of 110° Fahr., it is said); the pulse is quick, strong, and full, but may not keep up in these characters with the high temperature throughout. There are all the usual accompaniments of high fever, including hot skin, failure of appetite, thirst, nausea, restlessness, and delirium (which may or may not be violent) ; albumen will nearly always be found in the urine. The fever is a continued one so long as it lasts; but the febrile excitement comes to an end after two or three days. In a certain class of ambulatory or masked cases the febrile reaction may never come out, and the shock of the infection after a brief interval may lead unexpectedly and directly to prostration and death. The cessation of the paroxysm makes the stadiwm, or lull, characteristic of yellow fever. The hitherto militant or violent symptoms cease, and prostration or collapse ensues. The internal heat falls below the normal; the action of the heart (pulse) becomes slow and feeble, the skin cold and of a lemon-yellow tint, the act of vomiting effortless, like that of an infant, the first vomit being clear fluid, but afterwards black from an admixture of blood. It is at this period that the prospect of recovery or of a fatal issue declares itself. The prostration following the paroxysm of fever may be no more than the weakness of commencing recovery, with copious flow of urine, which even then is very dark-coloured from the presence of blood. The prostration will be all the more profound according to the height reached by the temperature during the acute paroxysm. Much blood in the vomit and in the stools, together with all other hemorrhagic signs, is of evil omen. Constant hiccough, with loud cries or wailing, is a certain sign of death, which may also be ushered in by suppression of urine, coma, and convulsions, or by fainting from failure at the heart. The proportion of recoveries is usually less than one-half; but it has been now and then very large (as in the New Orleans epidemic of 1878). Convalescence is on the whole rapid; but, if some old disease, such as ague, have been lighted up,

or abscesses induced, it may go on slowly for months. One attack of yellow fever confers a high degree of immunity from a second.

The treatment of yellow fever has been one of the classical sub- Treat- In the Philadelphia epidemics of the end of ment.

jects of controversy.

Patho- logy.

History

Y@tig oy FeV ER

the 18th century, Rush gained much credit for his incessant labours in bleeding the victims during the violence of the paroxysm. Al- though blood-letting to relieve the congestions has been given up, experience still favours the resort to vigorous measures at the out- set. The following practice was adopted with much success by Dr Joseph Jones during the epidemic of 1878 at New Orleans,—an emetic of ipecacuanha, followed by a powder of calomel (10 to 20 grains), with as much quinine added (the latter ingredient of doubt- ful utility), and that again followed by a full dose of castor oil. Beyond that heroic medication at the outset of the febrile paroxysm, the treatment was directed to assisting the action of the skin and kidneys, by keeping the temperature of the room uniform, by inustard foot-baths, and by copious draughts of lemonade or other aerated water, or of barley water. The diet indicated is fever diet : z.€., it should exclude solid food. For such symptoms as tender- ness over the stomach a mustard poultice is applied ; for diminished secretion of urine, dry cupping over the loins. When the lull occurs, the patient should on no account be allowed to get up, as sudden failure of the heart is apt to follow exertion. Iced cham- pagne and beef-tea are found to be the best supports for this stage. The only thing to do when black vomit threatens is to give the patient ice to suck, or (more questionably) to place an ice-bag on the abdomen. When the stage of prostration assumes a "typhoid" character, an enema of ice-cold water, with a little turpentine in it, helps to get rid of the flatus and to stimulate the kidneys. Re- covery is in all

cases more probable where there is abundant cubic space and good ventilation.

Yellow fever is of the nature of typhus, in the language of older writers, a nervous or putrid fever. The two salient things about it are the internal hemorrhages and the almost complete arrest of the function of the liver; of these the latter would seem to be primary and the former secondary. The state of the liver on examination after death from yellow fever is by far the most significant feature in the morbid anatomy: the bile-ducts and gall- bladder are empty, or contain only a clear albuminoid fiuid ; the organ is bloodless and ofa golden yellow colour ; and the hepatic cells are everywhere full of fatty granules or other molecular detritus. It shows, in fact, the morbid anatomy of acute yellow atrophy, or that state of the hepatic structure and functions which is due to total inhibition or arrest (see PATHOLOGY, vol. xviii. p. 386), whether the inhibiting influence be phosphorus poisoning, or emotional strain, or something in the pregnant state, or the infective influ- ence of yellow fever. All the other phenomena of this fever are grouped around the liver derangement, as around a centre, namely, the yellow tint of the skin, the fatty degeneration of the heart favouring syncope, the hemorrhages from the mucous membrancs (including the black vomit), the degeneration of the renal epithe- lium with albuminuria, and the coma and convulsions. Yellow fever therefore may be styled a sudden or arbitrary infection im- posed. from without, the distinctive mark or "note" of which is the same peculiar group of symptoms that is found in the rare and sporadic cases of ycllow atrophy. To reach the full and correct doctrine of yellow fever, we have to harmonize the clinical and pathological facts of the disease, as already given, with the histori- cal, geographical, racial, and other associated circumstances now to be stated.

The first authentic account of yellow fever comes from Bridge-

and geo- town, Barbados, in 1647, where it was recognized as a "nova graphical pestis," that was unaccountable in its origin, except that Ligon, distribu- the historian of the colony, who was then on the spot, connected it

tion.

with the arrival of ships. It was the same new pestilence that Dutertre, writing in 1667, described as having occurred in the French colony of Guadeloupe in 16385 and 1640; it recurred at Guadeloupe in 1648, and broke out in a peculiarly disastrous form at St Kitt's the same year, and again in 1652; in 1655 it was at Port Royal, Jamaica; and from those years onwards it became familiar at many harbours in the West Indies and Spanish Main, and in the Atlantic ports of the British American colonies, It is a question whether it had not occurred at Porto Rico, San Domingo, and other places in the Spanish Antilles a good many years before ; but the reports from the colonies of New Spain, both for that and subsequent periods, are highly defective as regards the data needed to distinguish yellow fever from the bilious remittent form of malarial fever, which is a non-infective sickness. The Mexican form of typhus, called " matlazahuatl," which has been an indigenous disease of the native population in the interior for several centuries, has no other connexion with yellow fever than that it belongs to the same family of typhus; its circumstances are quite different, especially in respect that it is a purely inland form of febris pauperum. In 1853 yellow fever appeared for the first time at Callao and Lima in Peru; and almost in the same months a severe epidemic prevailed among the plantation hands in the sierra region of the interior. The two forms were described as the same disease by Dr Archibald Smith ; but the fever of the sierras was afterwards shown to be a form of typhus, analogous to the native Mexican form, and quite unconnected with the yellow fever of the coast.

735

In the harbours of the American colonies (United States) the history of yellow fever has been as follows. It begins to be heard of at Charleston in 1693, and at Philadelphia the same year. The South Carolina port has the fullest record of it, next in order in the earlier period being Philadelphia, New York, and Norfolk (Va.). Towards the end of the 18th century the ports of New England, as far north as New Hampshire, have visitations, and it begins to be quite common at Baltimore, Wilmington, Savannah, and New Orleans. Ata still later period (within the 19th century) we find the centre of incidence shifting so as to include Mobile, Memphis, Natchez, St Francisville, and Baton Rouge; and in the most recent period

outbreaks are recorded at Galveston and other ports of Texas, and at Pensacola, Vicksburg, and Key West. The Atlantic ports gradually lost it and the Gulf ports took up the inheritance, several of them keeping it still. Some of the epidemics were very disastrous, one of the Philadelphia outbreaks corresponding to the pestilence which figures in the last section of Longfellow's Evan- geline: "Wealth had no power to bribe, nor beauty to charm the oppressor." In the New Orleans epidemic of 1878 the deaths num- bered 4056. The American ports mentioned have been only its principal seats, many other smaller harbours having had outbreaks now and then, such as New Haven (Conn.), Providence (R.I.), Swedesborough (N.J.), Alexandria (Va.), Augusta (Ga.), St Augus- tine (Fla.), Opelousas (La.), and Houston (Tex.).

Along with the harbours and anchorages of the West Indies and Spanish Main, the three chief harbours of Guiana (Cayenne, Suri- nam, and Demerara) have had an equal share, and for almost the same period. But for Brazilian ports there is no record of yellow fever until 1849, when it appeared for the first time at Rio de Janeiro, Bahia, and other places. Thesc ports became endemic seats of the infection from that year, and are now more distinctively the head- quarters of the disease than its old West Indian and Mexican Gulf centres. Monte Video had a disastrous epidemic in 1857, and Buenos Ayres a visitation in 1858; but the shipping placcs of the river Plate are not in the same class of endemic foci as the harbours of Brazil.

There have been a few epidemics at trading places on the West Coast of Africa, most of them subsequent to 1820, and all of them confined generally to white residents.

During the great period of yellow fever (1793-1805), and for some years afterwards, the disease found its way time after time to various ports of Spain. Cadiz, indeed, suffered five epidemics in the 18th century, Malaga one, and Lisbon one; but from 1800 down to 1821 the disease assumed much more alarming proportions, Cadiz being still its chief seat, while Seville, Malaga, Cartagena, Barcc- lona, Palina, Gibraltar, and other shipping places suffered severely, as well as some of the country districts nearest to the ports. These Spanish outbreaks were clearly connected with

the ar- rival of ships, but for the most part there had not been cases of yellow fever on board the ships. The last severe epidemic on Spanish soil was at Barcelona in the summer of 1821, when 5000 persons died. The most recent disastrous epidemic in Europe was at Lisbon in 1857, when upwards of 6000 died in a few weeks. The outbreaks at St Nazaire (1861), Leghorn, Swansea (1864), and Southampton have been carefully studied, but are otherwise of minor importance,

Yellow fever is dependent upon high summer temperature for its epidemic development, and it requircs a good deal of heat to continuc even after it has once acquired epidemic intensity. In its endemic centres in the New World it clings peculiarly to the lower quarters of the seaports, to the alluvial foreshores, and to the anchorages ; on many occasions it has been prevalent among the crews of men- of-war and of merchantmen at anchor, or moored in the harbour, or lying up in the carénage, when there has been none of it among the residents ashore. It is admitted that the endemic influence which causes it is effluvial or miasmatic from the harbour mud, or from the bilge-water of a ship that had lain in the harbour, or from the alluvial foundations of houses nearest to the beach. So far as prevalence on shore is concerned, it seems to follow the same laws as cholera and typhoid fever: that is to say, it is an exogenous or soil infection, a fermentation of filth in the ground, with a seasonal activity closely following the movements of the subsoil watcr. In like manner, when it has been imported to Spain, it has clung to alluvial soil and has spread after the fashion of a soil-borne infec- tion rather than by personal contagion, although in Spanish ports, just as in Philadelphia, according to Rush's opinion, contagious- ness has been found to be "contingent " to it under certain circum- stances. To establish an epidemic in a distant port, it has been necessary that there should be carried thither a material quantity of the specifically poisonous harbour-filth in a ship's bilges, and that the conditions favourable to its increase and diffusion by fer- mentation should exist in the new soil.

The next most significant thing in the incidence of this fever is that new arrivals at an indigenous centre are peculiarly liable to take it, and most liable of all the sailors and others from northern latitudes, such as

Sweden, Finland, Holland, and Germany. In fact an epidemic outburst in a yellow-fever port or endemic centre

Special local and racial circum- stances.

Theory of the disease,

at the present day is commonly connected with an unusual influx of strangers. It is not to be supposed, however, that the residents acquire immunity by acclimatization: they have no greater im- munity in that sense than have the Bengalis from cholera, or than those who permanently reside in unsanitary localities from typhoid fever or diphtheria. The only immunity is that of the Negro race, an immunity all the more striking that the Negroes in yellow- fever ports are mostly found living in the favourite haunts of the disease, and that their race is peculiarly liable to all other infec- tions of the kind, including cholera, typhus, and typhoid. Al- though the protection of the Negro of pure blood is not absolute, itis nearly so. In ordinary circumstances Negroes become liable when of mixed blood, and almost exactly in proportion to the degree of white stock in their breeding. hese racial 'peculiarities have been so often remarked and are so universally admitted in their broad significance that no detailed proofs need be adduced. It may be stated, however, that all African Negroes, whether fresh from Africa or long acclimatized to the New World, have the same natural protection ; thus the Nubian regiment in the French ser- vice during the Mexican expedition did not lose a single man, and did not even have a single case, in the epidemic at Vera Cruz in 1866. The protection is profoundly racial, and not due to the Negroes being inured to yellow-fever localities. There is no other instance of the same racial immunity in the whole range of in- fective sickness.

Two things stand out prominently in the foregoing recital of facts,—(1) that yellow fever, in time and place, has dogged the steps of the African slave trade, and (2) that the African Negro has a very large racial immunity from yellow fever. The first of these facts was generalized by Audouard (Paris, 1825), but has been neglected and forgotten ; the

second fact, which no one seriously disputes, is the complement and confirmation of the historical and geographical induction. The circumstances in Peru, although ap- parently in contradiction, are really corroborative: a form of yellow fever established itself at certain ports of that country in the wake of a notorious Chinese coolie trade (see CoontE, vol. vi. p. 334); but the Chinese themselves were exempt from the fever at the tinie, and would appear not to have sutfered from it in the subsequent epidemics on the Peruvian coast. The question thus arises as to the particular connexion between the African slave trade (or the analogous Chinese coolie trade) and yellow fever. The first point is that the fever has not been a fever of the voyage but of the land- ing place, although there are several authentic instances (¢.9., cases of the "Regalia" and 'La Pique") of yellow fever arising at sea from the exposure of white men to the stench of a shipful of Negroes. Again, the filthy condition ofa Guineaman on her arrival from Africa was a notorious fact; and the filth of that kind was discharged into the creeks, carénages, and anchorages of slave ports in material quantity year after year for a long period. At Havana as many as a hundred slavers would arrive in one year. Steady accretions of the filth of slave-ships from the beginning of the traffic to America down to its abolition in 1808, and its final cessation previous to 1860, would account for a peculiarly pestiferous state of the harbour mud, of the beach, and even of the water ; in fact, the water in the Bay of Havana was pestiferous and full of organic matter where it was several fathoms deep, and there was a standing order in the British navy against admitting it into ships. Wher- ever the harbours were most tideless, as around the Gulf of Mexico and in the West Indian Islands, and wherever the soil was most alluvial, and the movements of the ground-water most extensive, the specific putrefaction or fermentation thus introduced into the harbour would spread farthest on shore, being aided or encouraged always by the abundance of other organic matter which it met with at particular spots, such as the foundatious of houses.

The next step is to consider the connexion between this wholesale befouling of slave ports and the particular type of endemic disease. One of the points most emphasized by Audouard was the funda- mental physiological differences between the African Negro race and the white. The discharges of the Negro body might become by their effluvia

specifically poisonous, he argued, to white men under special circumstances. A more direct factor in the etiology was the very common, if not uniform, prevalence of dysentery and diarrhcea in the passage from the Guinea coast to the western shores of the Atlantic: the filth in a slave-ship's bilges was, in part at least, dysenteric in its source and properties. Now, there is much independent evidence, collected from times of war and famine, to prove a certain correlation or equivalence between dysentery and typhus ; according to Blane's phrase, the one was vicarious to the other. Yellow fever is admittedly a form of typhus, a form distin- guished by a hemorrhagic tendency. Thus we find the connexion explained between dysentcric and other evacuations of the Negro race, carried to the mud and alluvial soil of ports under very peculiar circumstances, and a special form of endemic typhus, dif- fering from the ordinary form in being earth-borne instead of air- borne. The remaining part of the synthesis concerns the differcn- tial type of yellow fever within the genus "'typhus:" Whence did it obtain the "note" or distinctive mark, anatomical and clinical,

of an acute yellow atrophy of the liver? The dysenteric filth that was imported into the harbours of the New World represented that almost unique unwholesomeness of life which is summed up in the phrase "horrors of the middle passage." Among suchi horrors nostalgia, despair, and the sense of wrong were not the least; and these are among the states of human feeling that have been known, now and then, in the ordinary way of life to assume that peculiar visceral embodiment, or to find that means of expression, which amounts to acute yellow atrophy of the liver, and stands, in fact, for a total arrest of the hepatic functions, biliary and other.

There is no other theory of yellow fever to contest the field with the slave-trade hypothesis; that alone satisfies all the conditions ofa correct synthcesis—historical, geographical, ethnological, physio- logical, and, some would say, even ethical. There have been various other theories put forward from time to time, all of them much too fragmentary, and therefore erroneous, such as the hypo- thesis of rotting timber (in

wharves, ships' hulls, &c.), of sugar cargoes, of common foul bilge-watcr, of madrepores, and of bacilli. The bacillary or parasitic hypothesis is the fashionable one at present, but it is much too ambitious, as ordinarily held, and altogether wide of the mark. The part played by putrefactive organisms is a subordinate one. In the general grouping of factors they can only come in after we have found the specific integral of the yellow-fever soil ixfits endemic seats ; they cannot elaborate the miasmatic poison of yellow fever without a definite pabulum, any more than the "lactic bacillus" can produce lactic fermentation without milk-sugar.

The sanitary or public health aspects of yellow fever have been Sanita- discussed in great part under QUARANTINE (vol. xx. p- 156). In tion.

regard to its sanitation at the endemic seats in the West Indies, Guiana, Brazil, Central America, and the Gulf States of the American Union, the same principles apply as to other filth-diseases. The object is to secure a clean soil, and to that end drainage and sewer- age serve best. In the sanitation of yellow fever the case is so far peculiar that the harbour bottom, the adjoining mudbanks and mangrove swamps, and even the seawater itself, are apt to retain the specific taint, especially where the cleansing action of the tides is slight. But there is good reason to think that the specific taint in the soil is everywhere slowly disappearing, now thatit is no longer reinforced by fresh supplies year after year. It has practically vanished from the Atlantic ports of the United States, and has be- come almost rare in such harbours as Port Royal, Jamaica. Its headquarters are now the Brazilian ports, which were the last to develop it (in 1849).

Literature.—The chief work is that of La Roche, Yellow Fever, 2 vols., Philadelphia, 1855. A very full bibliography is given by Hirsch at the end of his section on " Yellow Fever," in Historisch-Geographische Pathologie, vol. i., Stuttgart, 1S81 (Engl. transl. by Creighton, London, 1883). Recent experience, epidemiological and clinical, is given in the writings (2 vols.) of Dr Joseph Jones of New Orleans, 1887; see also Maclean's Diseases of Tropical Climates, London, 1886. Among the numerous monographs may be specially mentioned those of Pym (Observations upon the Bulam Fever, London, 1815), who showed that

one attack gave immunity, and of Daniel Blair (Some Account of the Last Yellow Fever Epidemic of British Guiana, with plates, 3d ed., London, 1852), A popular exposition of the slave-trade hypothesis of Audouard (with additions by the writer of the present article) will be found in North. Amer. Rev., October

1884. Audouard's three papers were collected under the title Recueil de Mémoires sur le Typhus Nautique, ow Fiévre Jaume, Paris, 1825. (C. C.)

YELLOW RIVER. See Curna, vol. v. pp. 630-631.

YELLOWSTONE NATIONAL PARK, an area situ- See Plate

ated mainly in north-western Wyoming, United States, which has been withdrawn from settlement by the United States Government and dedicated to the purposes of a public park. It is a region of hot springs and geysers, mountains and cafions, lakes and waterfalls. While it is almost entirely comprised in Wyoming, a narrow strip 2 miles wide projects on the north into Montana, and on the west a strip about 5 miles in width projects into the same Territory and into Idaho. Its boundaries, which were defined at a time when the country was little known, are as follows, The northern boundary is a parallel of latitude running through the mouth of Gardiner river, a branch of the Yellowstone, 2 miles north of 45° N. The eastern boundary is a meridian 10 miles east of the most easterly point of Yellowstone Lake, which places it almost on the 110th meridian, The southern boundary is a parallel 10 miles south of the most southerly portion of the same body of water, in lat. 44° 10'N. The western boundary is a meridian 15 miles west of the most westerly portion of Madison (now Shoshone) Lake, this meridian being approxi- mately that of 111°6'. The Park is therefore very nearly a rectangle in shape, its length north and south being 61°8 miles and its breadth 53°6. Its area is 3312 square miles.

Its surface is mainly an undulating plateau, with a mean

YERREVUWSTONE

elevation above the sea of about 8000 feet, upon the surface of which the minor streams flow, while the larger ones have cut cations for themselves, several of them being of great depth. The eastern portion, however, is occupied by an extremely rugged mountain chain, known as the Absaroka Range, peaks of which rise to heights exceeding 11,000 feet. These mountains, which separate the waters of the Yellow- stone from those of the Big Horn, are unsurpassed in the United States for sublimity and grandeur of scenery. The Gallatin Range, which separates the Yellowstone from the Gallatin river, enters the Park near the north-western corner and extends southwards some 20 miles within it. It reaches its culminating point in Electric Peak, 11,050 feet high, just within the Park boundary. Another group of mountains, in the form of a horseshoe, occurs near the middle of the Park, known as the Washburne Mountains, the highest summit of which, Mount Washburne, has an elevation of 10,346 feet. The Red Mountains are in the southern part, their culminating peak being Mount Sheri- dan, 10,385 feet in height. In this part of the Park the plateau is more elevated and broken, and just beyond its southern limits it rises intoa confused maze of mountains.

The Park has an abundant rainfall, and its streams are numerous and bold. It contains many beautiful lakes and ponds, Within its area are the sources of the Yellowstone and the Madison, which go to make up the Missouri, and of the Snake, one of the forks of the Columbia. This last stream, which drains the south-western part, takes its rise in several branches, among them being Lewis Fork, which has its origin in the beautiful Shoshone Lake, and Heart river, which rises in Heart Lake, under the shadow of Mount Sheridan. The Yellowstone drains the eastern part. Rising just beyond its southern limits, it flows into and through Yellowstone Lake, a magnificent sheet of water, of very irregular shape, having an area of 150 square miles. A few miles below the lake, the river, after a succession of rapids, leaps over a cliff, making the Upper Fall, 112 feet in height. Half & mile lower down it rolls over the Lower Fall, which has a clear descent of 300 feet. The river at this point carries, at the average stage of water, about 1200 cubic feet per second. With this fall the river enters the Grand Cajion, which in many scenic effects has not its equal on the globe. Its depth is not great, at least as compared with the cafions upon the Colorado river system, ranging from 600 feet at its head

to 1200 near the middle, where it passes the Washburne Mountains. Its length to the mouth of Lamar river is 24 miles. It is cut ina volcanic plateau, and its ragged broken walls, which are inclined at very steep angles, are of a barbaric richness of colouring that almost defies description. Reds, yellows, and purples predominate, and are set off very effectively against the dark green of the forests upon the plateau, and the white foam of the rushing river which fills the bottom of the chasm. Near the foot of the Grand Cafion, Tower ereek, which drains the concavity of the horseshoe formed by the Washburne Mountains, enters the Yellowstone. Just above its mouth this stream makes a beautiful fall of 132 feet into the gorge in which it joins the river. A few miles farther down the Yellowstone is joined by an eastern branch, Lamar river, which drains a large part of the Absaroka Range. 'Then it enters the Third Cafion, from which it emerges at the mouth of Gardiner river. The latter stream drains an area of elevated land by means of its three forks, and upon each of them occurs a fine fall in its descent toward the Yellowstone. The Madison rises in the western part of the Park and flows in a generally north- ward and then westward course out of the Park. Its waters are mainly collected from the rainfall upon the plateaus, and from the hot springs and geysers, most of which are within its drainage area. Upon this river and its affluents are

several fine falls. Indeed all the streams of this region show evidence, in the character of their courses, of a recent change of level in the surface of the country.

The climate is characterized by a considerable degree of humidity and a heavy rainfall, as compared with adjacent portions of the West. The temperature is that of a semi-arctic region. Frost may occur in midsummer and snow begins to fall in September.

The native fauna is abundant and varied. The 'policy of the Government, which protects game within this reservation, has in- duced it to take shelter here against the sportsman and pot-hunter, so that elk, deer, antelope, mountain sheep, bear, and numerous smaller game animals are very abundant and tame. The only herd of wild bisons left in the United

States is upon this reservation ; and in some parts moose are occasionally seen.

The flora is very varied. With the exception of a few limited areas in the northern part, the region is covered with forests, gener- ally so dense that landmarks are invisible and the traveller is forced to guide himself by the sun or by compass. The trees are mainly the Douglas spruce and the yellow pine, and are not of large size or great commercial value.

The surface of the park is almost entirely covered with volcanic rocks. The Gallatin Range, however, in the north-western corner, is made up of stratified beds ranging from the Silurian system up to the Cretaceous. In a few localities also Tertiary lake beds and local drift are found. The plateaus generally are composed of rhyolite, while the mountain ranges are made up of later volcanic deposits, mainly conglomerates. In this region the ancient volcanic fires, which formerly extended far and wide, especially to the south and west, are still in existence, as is shown by the vast numbers of hot springs and geysers. The number of the former is by a close estimate not less than 3000, varying in size from a few inches in diameter to an area of many acres. The number of active geysers is 71, These phenomena are found in groups in numerous local- ities, the most important of which—for they contain most of the great geysers—are the Upper and the Lower Geyser basins, near the head of the Madison, here known as the Firehole, river. The former contains 26 geysers, several of which are of such power as to throw water to heights exceeding 200 feet, and the amount of water thrown out is so great as to raise the temperature of the river water many degrees. The Lower basin contains 16 geysers. The Norris basin, upon Gibbon river, a branch of the Madison, contains 9 geysers, and the Shoshone basin, upon the shore of Shoshone Lake, contains 8 active spouters. Others are found at Heart Lake, upon Pelican creek, in Hayden's valley, and in Monument basin. In all these localities the water holds silica in solution in considerable quantities, so that as it cools and evaporates it deposits siliceous matter, which has covered with a hard white floor many square miles of these valleys, and has built up craters around the springs

. and geysers of considerable size and great beauty of form. Besides

silica, the water of many of the springs contains sulphur, iron, alum, and other materials in solution, which in places stain the pure white of the siliceous deposits with bright bands of colour. Upon Gardi- ner river, near the northern boundary of the Park, there is a large group of springs, known as the Mammoth Hot Springs, which differ from the others in holding carbonate of lime in solution. These springs have deposited so freely as to build upa hill 200 feet in height, from the top of which the springs boil out. The slopes of this mound have been built in the form of a succession of basins rising one above another, and the water from the springs overflows from one into another, growing gradually cooler as it descends. Upon the bank of Yellowstone river, between the falls and the lake, there was, when the region was first explored, a geyser which at intervals of about 4 hours threw upa column of mud to a height of 40 or 50 feet. In more recent times this geyser has ceased action. These phenomena have been under observation since 1871; and, while there have been changes in them, certain geysers having ceased and others having been formed, no evidence of a diminution of power has been observed.

The Park is accessible by means of the Northern Pacific Railroad, by a branch which extends up the valley of the Yellowstone within a few miles of the northern boundary; and with this a line of stage coaches is connected.

The most stringent laws have been enacted in regard to the killing of game, the starting of forest fires, and the removal of the deposits of the springs.

Although exploring parties had at various times passed on all sides of this strange region, its wonders remained undiscovered until so late a period as 1870. This fact is all the more remarkable because at that time the frontier of settlement was in the Gallatin valley, not a hundred miles from the great geyser region. Some rumours of hot springs and geysers, coming from stray trappers and Indians, had been received, however, and these were sufficient to start a party from the Montana settlements in 1870, to investigate the strange tales. The discoveries made by this, the Washburne

party, induced Dr F. V. Hayden, then in charge of a Government survey, to turn his explorations in this direction.' The reports

brought back by him induced Congress to reserve this area from settlement, which was done in the spring of 1872. In that year further explorations were made, and in subsequent years army expeditions carried the work of exploration still farther. In 1878 a map of the Park, based upon triangulation, was drawn up by the Hayden survey, and in 1883-85 a more detailed map was made by the United States Geological Survey, and a systematic study of its geological phenomena was instituted. (H. G.) YELLOW-TAIL. This name is given by seafaring men to a variety of marine fishes, chiefly of the family of Horse-Mackerels, which have this in common, that they are edible and have a yellow caudal fin. As the latter peculiarity, which has found expression in the specific names of chrysurus, canthurus, &c., of systematic ichthyo- logy, is not confined to that family, very different kinds of fishes bear the same name: thus, for instance, the fishermen of the United States apply it to species of the Meagre family (Sciznidx) and to others. Economically the most important kinds of these fishes, the yellow-tail of the South Atlantic and the southern Indo-Pacific Ocean, are species of the genera Seriola, Seriolichthys, and Micro- pteryx, some of which, like Seriola lalandw and S. gigas, attain to the size of a cod or a coal-fish, and are preserved in a similar manner, either salted or dried. They abound in many localities, and are valued as food fish everywhere. They form a large proportion of the dried fish which are exported from the Cape of Good Hope to Mauritius and Batavia, or are sold to the whalers visiting the Southern Ocean. They are equally abundant at St Helena, where, however, their value as an article of trade does not seem to be fully understood. On the coasts of South Australia and New Zealand they are likewise a staple article of food, but are chiefly eaten fresh, the most esteemed species being Serv- ola lalandii, also known to the colonists as the '"'king-fish." YEMEN, in Arabia, literally the land "on the right hand" of one who faces east, meant originally all the land southwards from Syria (Sh4m).*

The Arabia Felix (evdaiuwv) of Ptolemy and other ancients is a mistrans- lation, the right hand being taken to mean "lucky" (Se€uds, dexter). Arabia Felix included all Arabia except the peninsula of Sinai (Arabia Petrzea) and the Syrian desert (Arabia Deserta) : 7.¢., it took in the Hij4z and Nejd as well as South Arabia. The Arabs use the term Yemen in various extensions, A tradition of the Prophet makes Yemen and Sham meet at Tabbak ; but Abt 'Abbas already confines the name to all Arabia south of Mecca. This usage, which excludes Nejd and Hijéz from Yemen, is not merely that of Moslem geographers, who take Mecca as their imaginary standpoint, but is found in the heathen poets. When Imraolkais speaks of a Yemenite trader, Tarafa, of tanned ox-hides from Yemen, Labid of a youth from Yemen who knew letters, or a poet of Hodhail of the excellent work of a Yemenite smith, they all mean by Yemen the southern region where trade, letters, and industry had their early home in the peninsula. The northern boundary of Yemen is variously laid down. Al-Asma'{ makes it a line drawn obliquely from 'Om4n to Nejran; but Hamdant rightly draws it farther north, from 'Om4n and Yebrin in the south of Yem4ma by way of Al-Hujaira, Tathlith, and Jorash to Kodommol (Kotumble of the Admi- ralty chart, in lat. 17° 52'). In its narrowest limitation Yemen comprises, not the whole south of the peninsula, but only the south-west as far as Hadramaut, which was viewed as a dependency of Yemen. The physical conformation of the south-western portion of the peninsula differs greatly from that of Arabia proper, being similar to that of Ethi- opia. A range of mountains, which rises into peaks of considerable elevation, and descends with a steep slope towards the shore of the Red Sea, stretches from the southern extremity northwards as far as Téif. This range is pierced by several streams and wadies, which flow into

the Red Sea! In old times the region cannot of course have been called " the Southland " by its own inhabitants,

eh

Regnum Charibach

MECCA ‘7

Engish Miles oO 50 400

L7 4 “Seug,

*Kamna. > * Maiin*

3 > Bardkish

5

°Khamr Sabota Az) a) = °Haura Kaukaban , Aly re © Sarid (Mariaba) – ga ™, thamae HADRAMAUT J Sana {Chatromotitae) Meonkes Gabaeans Bet el Fakth :

Taizz vd

\ Maphoritis see Lahajo

Map of Yemen.

Sabzeans.—The ancient name of the people of Yemen was Saba (Saba’ with final hemza); and the oldest notices of them are in the Hebrew Scriptures. The list of the sons of Joktan in Gen. x. 26-29 contains in genealogical form a record of peoples of South Arabia which must rest on good information from Yemen itself, Many of these names are found on the inscriptions or in the Arabic geographers,—Sheba (Saba’), Hazarmaveth (Hadramaut), Abimael (Abime‘athtar), Jobab (Yuhaibib, according to Halévy), Jerah (Wardh of the geographers), Joktan (Arab Kahtan; wakata =kahata). On the other hand, the names of some famous nations mentioned on the inscriptions are lacking, from which it may be concluded that they did not rise to prominence till a later date. Saba’ (Sheba) itself, which was in later times the chief name, has in Gen. x. 28 a subordinate place; it was perhaps only a collective name for the companies of merchants who con- ducted the South-Arabian export trade (the root saba’ in the inscriptions meaning to make a trading journey),

and in that case would be of such late origin as to hold one of the last places in a list that has genealogical form. Two other accounts in Genesis, originally independent, give supplementary information drawn from the Saban colonies, the stations and factories established to facilitate trade through the desert. The inscriptions of Al"Ola published by D. H. Miiller show that there were Minzan colonies in North Arabia. Other South Arabs, and espe- cially the Sabzeans, doubtless also planted settlers on the northern trade routes, who in process of time united into one community with their North-Arab kinsmen and neigh- bours. Thus we can understand how in Gen. xxv, 2-3 Sheba and Dedan appear among the North-Arab "sons of Keturah." Again, the Sabeeans had colonies in Africa and there mingled with the black Africans; and so in Gen. x. 7 Sheba and Dedan, the sons of Raamah (Raghma), appear in the genealogy of the Cushites. With the Ethi- opians Saba'? means "men," a clear indication of their Sabeean descent.

The queen of Sheba who visited Solomon may have come with a caravan trading to Gaza, to see the great king

ss An excellent topographical description of Yemen is given in Ham- dani's Geogr. d. Arab. Halbinsel, ed. D. H. Miiller (1884).

YEMEN

whose ships plied on the Red Sea. The other Biblical books do not mention the Sabzeans except incidentally, in allusion to their trade in incense and perfumes, gold and precious stones, ivory, ebony, and costly garments (Jer. vi. 20; Hzek. xxvii. 15, 20, 22 sq.; Isa. lx. 6; Job vi. 19). These passages attest the wealth and trading importance of Saba from the days of Solomon to those of Cyrus. When the prologue to Job speaks of plundering Sabwans (and Chaldeans) on the northern skirts of Arabia, these may be either colonists or caravans, which, like the old Phcenician and Greek traders, combined on occasion robbery with trade. The prologue may not be historical; but it is to be presumed that it deals with historical possibilities, and is good evidence thus far.

The Biblical picture of the Sabsean kingdom is confirmed and supplemented by the Assyrian inscriptions. Tiglath Pileser IT. (733 3.c.)

tells us that Teima, Saba', and Haipa (=Ephah, Gen. xxv. 4 and Isa. lx. 6) paid him tribute of gold, silver, and much incense. Similarly Sargon (715 B.C.) in his Annals mentions the tribute of Shamsi, queen of Arabia, and of Itamara of the land of Saba',—gold and fragrant spices, horses and camels.

The earliest Greek accounts of the Sabzans and other South-Arabian peoples are of the 3d century B.c. Erato- sthenes (276-194 B.c.) in Strabo (xv. 4, 2) says that the extreme south of Arabia, over against Ethiopia, is inhabited by four great nations,—the Mineans (Mewaior, Myvaio. ; Ma'in of the inscriptions) on the Red Sea, whose chief city is Carna; next to them the Sabzans, whose capital is Mariaba (Mariab of the inscriptions); then the Cata- banes (Kataban of the inscriptions), near the Straits of Bab-al-Mandeb, the seat of whose king is Tamna ; fourthly, and farthest east, the people of Hadramaut (Chatramotite), with their city Sabota. The Catabanes produce frank- incense and Hadramaut myrrh, and there is a trade in these and other spices with merchants who make the journey from /Hlana (Elath, on the Gulf of 'Akaba) to Minea in seventy days; the Gabzans (the Gaba'an of the inscriptions, Pliny's Gebanite) take forty days to go to Hadramaut. This short but important and well-informed notice is followed a little later by that of Agatharchides (120 3.c.), who speaks in glowing terms of the wealth and greatness of the Sabzans, but seems to have less exact information than Eratosthenes. He knows only the Sabzans and thinks that Saba is the name of their capi- tal. He mentions, however, the "'happy islands" beyond the straits, the station of the Indian trade (§ 103). Arte- inidorus (100 B.c.), quoted by Strabo, gives a similar account of the Sabzeans and their capital Mariaba, of their wealth and trade, adding the characteristic feature that each tribe receives the wares and passes them on to its neighbours as far as Syria and Mesopotamia.

The accounts of the wealth of the Sabzans brought back by traders and travellers excited the cupidity of Rome, and Augustus entrusted A'lius Gallus with an expedition to South Arabia, of which we have an authentic account in Strabo (xvi. 4, 22). He hoped for assistance from the friendly NaBaT#Aans (9.v.); but, as they owed everything to their position as middlemen for the South-Arabian trade, which a direct communication

between Rome and the Sabzans would have ruined, their viceroy Syllaus, who did not dare openly to refuse help, sought to frustrate the emperor's scheme by craft. Instead of showing the Romans the caravan route, he induced them to sail from Cleopatris to Leucocome, and then led them by a circuitous way through waterless regions, so that they reached South Arabia too much weakened to effect anything. But the

expedition brought back a considerable knowledge of the

country and its products, and the Roman leader seems to have perceived that the best entrance to South Arabia

was from the havens on the coast. So at least we may conclude when, a hundred years later (77 a.D., as Dillmann has shown), in the Periplus of an anonymous contemporary of Pliny (§ 23) we read that Charibael of Zafar, "the legitimate sovereign of two nations, the Homerites and Sabzeans," maintained friendly relations with Rome by frequent embassies and gifts. Pliny's account of Yemen, too, must be largely drawn from the expedition of Gallus, though he also used itineraries of travellers to India, like the Periplus Maris Erythrxi just quoted.

Nautical improvements, and the discovery that the south-west monsoon (Hippalus) gave sure navigation at certain seasons, increased the connexion of the West with South Arabia, but also wrought such a change in the trade as involved a revolution in the state of that country. The hegemony of the Sabzans now yields to that of a new people, the Homerites or Himyar, and the king henceforth bears the title "'king of the Himyarites and Sabzeans." Naval expeditions from Berenice and Myoshormus to the Arabian ports brought back the information on which Claudius Ptolemy constructed his map, which still surprises us by its wealth of geographical names.

Sabeean colonies in Africa have been already mentioned. That Abyssinia was peopled from South Arabia is proved by its language and writing; but the difference between the two languages is such as to imply that the settlement was very early and that there were many centuries of

separation, during which the Abyssinians were exposed to foreign influences. New colonies, however, seem to have followed from time to time, and, according to the Periplus (§ 16), some parts of the African coast were under the suzerainty of the Sabean kings as late as the Sabsxo-Himyaritic period ; the district of Azania was held for the Sabsean monarch by the governor of Maphoritis (Ma'Afir), and was exploited by a Saban company. Naturally difficulties would arise between Abyssinia and the Sabzean power. In the inscription of Adulis (2d century) the king of Ethiopia claims to have made war in Arabia from Leucocome to the land of the Sabean king. And the Ethiopians were not without successes, for on the Greek inscription of Akstim (c. the middle of the 4th century) King Afizanes calls himself "king of the Aksumites, the Homerites, and Raidan, and of the Ethiopians, Sabzans, and Silee." More serious was the conflict under Dht-Nuw'ds (Dht-Nuwas of the Arab historians) in the beginning of the 6th century; it ended in the overthrow of the Him- yarite king and the subjugation of Yemen, which was governed by a deputy of the Aksumite king, till (about 570) the conquerors were overthrown by a small band of Persian adventurers (see Persia, vol. xviii. p. 613).

With the exception of what the South-Arabian Hamdani relates of his own observation or from authentic tradition, the Mohammedan Arabic accounts of South Arabia and Sabzea are of little worth. The great event they dwell on is the bursting of the dam of Ma'rib, which led to the emigration northwards of the Yemenite tribes. We may be sure that this event was not the cause but the conse- quence of the decline of the country. When the inland trade fell away and the traffic of the coast towns took the sea route, the ancient metropolis and the numerous inland emporia came to ruin, while the many colonies in the north were broken up and their population dispersed. To this the Koran alludes in its oracular style, when it speaks (xxxiv. 17) of well-known cities which God appointed as trading stations between the Sabzeans and the cities He had blessed (Egypt and Syria), and which He destroyed because of their sins.

Inscriptions.—This abstract of the history of Yemen from ancient

sources can now be verified and supplemented from inscriptions. Doubts as to the greatness and importance of the Sabean state, as

attested by the ancients, and as to the existence of a special Saban writing, called " Musnad," of which the Arabs tell, were still current when Niebuhr, in the 18th century, brought to Europe the first account of the existence of ancient inscriptions (not seen by him- self) in the neighbourhood of Yarim. Following this hint, Seetzen, in 1810, was able to send to Europe, from porphyry blocks near Yarim, the first copies of Sabean inscriptions. They could not, however, be read. But the inscriptions found by Wellsted in 1834 at Hisn Ghordb were deciphered by Gesenius and Rédiger. Soon after this the courageous explorer Arnaud discovered the ancient Mariab, the royal city of the Sabeans, and at great risk copied fifty-six inscriptions and took a plan of the walls, the dam, and the temple to the east of the city. These, with other inscriptions on stone and on bronze plates brought home by Englishmen, found a cautious and sound interpreter in Osiander. The historical and geographical researches of Kremer and Sprenger gave a fresh impulse to inquiry. Then Joseph Halévy made his remarkable journey through the Jauf, visiting districts and ruins which no European foot had trod since the expedition of Gallus, and returned with almost 800 inscriptions. Of more recent travellers 8. Langer and E. Glaser have done most for epigraphy, while Manzoni is to be remembered for his excellent geographical work. ; The alphabet of the Sabean inscriptions is most closely akin to the Ethiopic, but is purely consonantal, without the modifications in the consonantal forms which Ethiopic has devised to express vowels. There are twenty-nine letters, one more than in Arabic, Samech and Sin being distinct forms, asin Hebrew. This alphabet, which is probably the parent of the South-Indian character, is un- doubtedly derived from the so-called Pheenician alphabet, the connecting link being the forms of the Safa inscriptions and of the Thamudean inscriptions found by Doughty and Euting. Of the latter we can determine twenty-six characters, while a twenty- seventh probably corresponds to Arabic z (6). A sign for also probably existed, but does not occur in the known inscriptions. In the Thamudean and Sabean alphabets the twenty-two original Pheenician characters are mostly similar, and so are the differentiated forms for ¢ and 7, while %, 3, and probably also & and U? have

been differentiated in different ways. This seems to imply that the two alphabets had a common history up to a certain point, but parted company before they were fully developed. The Tha- mudean inscriptions are locally ncarer to Pheenicia, and the letters are more like the Pheenician ; this character therefore appears to be the link connecting Pheenician with Sabean writing. It may be noticed that a Thamudeau Icgend has been found on a Baby- lonian cylinder of about 1000 B.c., and it is remarkable that the Sabean satara, "write,'? seems to be borrowed from Assyrian shatdru.

The language of the inscriptions is South Semitic, forming a link between the North Arabic and the Ethiopic, but is much nearer the former than the latter. To the details already given in the article Semitic LANGUAGES (vol. xxi. p. 653 sg.) it may be added that of the two dialects commonly called Sabean and Minean the latter might be better called Hadramitic, inasmuch as it is the dialect of the inscriptions found in Hadramaut, and the Mineans seem undoubtedly to have entered the Jauf from Hadramaut.

The inscriptions not only give names of nations corresponding to those in the Bible and in classical authors but throw a good deal of fresh light on the political history of Yemen. The inscrip- tions and coins give the names of more than forty-five Saban kings. The chronology is still vague, since only a few very late inscriptions are dated by an era and the era itself is not certain. But the rulers named can be assigned to three periods, according as they bear the title " mukrab of Saba," "king of Saba," or "king of Saba and Raidan." The last, as we know from the Aksuni inscriptions, are the latest, and thosc with the title "mukrab" must be the earliest. Four princes of the oldest period bear the name Yatha'ʻamar, and oue of these may, with the greatest probability, be held to be the "Itamara Sabai" who paid tribute to Sargon of Assyria. This helps us to the age of some buildings also. The famous dam of Ma'rib and its sluices were the work cf this ancient prince—structures which Arnaud in the 19th century found in the same state in which Hamdani saw them a thousand years ago. The power of these old sovereigns extended far beyond Ma'rib, for their names are found on buildings and monuments in the Jauf.

We cannot tell when the kings took the place of the mukrab, but the Sabzo-Himyaritic period seems to begin with, or a little after, the expedition of Ailius Gallus. A fragmentary inscription of Ma'rib (Br. Mus., 83) was made by "Ilsharh Yahdib and Ya'zil Bayyin, the two kings of Saba and Raidan, sons of Far'm Yanhab, king of Saba." If this Ilsharh is identical with the INdocapos of Strabo, king of Mariaba at the time of the Roman invasion, the inscription preserves a trace of the influence of that event on the union of the two kingdoms.

The inscriptions of the latest period present a series of dates—669, 640, 582, 573, 885—of an unknown era. Reinaud thought of the Seleucid era, which is not impossible; but Halévy observes that

the fortress of Mawiyyat (now Hisn Ghorab) bears the date 640, and is said to have been erected "when the Abyssinians overran the country and destroyed the king of Himyar and his princes." Referring this to the death of Dhu Nuwas (525 a.p.), Halévy fixes 115 B.c. as the epoch of the Sabean era. This ingenious combina- tion accords well with the circumstance that the oldest dated in- scription, of the year 385 (270 a.p.), mentions 'Athtar, Shams, and other heathen deities, while the inscriptions of 582 (467 a.p.) and 573 (458 a.p.), so far as they can be read, contain no name of a heathen god, but do speak of a god Rahmanan—that is, the Hebrew Rahman, "the compassionate" (Arabic, Al-Rahman), agreeably with the fact that Jewish and Christian influences were powerful in Arabia in the 4th century. The only objections to Halévy's hypo- thesis are (1) that we know nothing of an epoch-making event in 115 B.c., and (2) that it is a little remarkable that the latest dated inscription, of the year 669 (554 a.p.), should be twenty-five years later than the Abyssinian conquest. An inscription found by Wrede at 'Obne is dated "in the year 120 of the Lion in Heaven," which we must leave the astronomers to explain.

The inscriptions throw considerable light not only on the Sabeans but on other South-Arabian nations. The Mineans, whose import- ance has been already indicated, appear in the inscriptions as only second to the Sabeeans, and with details which have put an end to much guesswork,

¢.g., to the idea that they are connected with Mina near Mecca. Their capital, Ma‘in, lay in the heart of the Sabean country, forming a sort of enclave on the right hand of the road that leads northward from Ma’rib. South-west of Ma‘in, on the west of the mountain range, and commanding the road from San‘a to the north, lies Barakish, anciently Yathil, which the inscriptions and Arabic geographers always mention with Ma‘in. The third Minean fortress, probably identical with the Kdpva of the Greeks, lies in the middle of the northern Jauf, and north of the other two. The three Minean citadels lie nearly in this position (.°.), with old Sabeean settlements (Raiam) all round them, and even with some Sabean places (e.g., Nask and Kamna) within the triangle they form. The dialect of the Mineans is sharply distinguished from the Sabeans (see above). The inscriptions have yielded the names of twenty-seven Minean kings, who were quite independent, and, as it would seem, not always friends of the Sabeans, for neither dynasty mentions the other on its inscriptions, while minor kings and kingdoms are freely mentioned by both, presumably when they stood under the protection of the one or the other respectively. The Minzeans were evidently active rivals of the Sabean influence, and a war between the two is once mentioned. In Hadramaut they disputcd the hegemony with one another, the government there being at one time under a Minzan, at another under a Saban prince, while the language shows now the one and now the other influence. The religions also of the two powers present many points of agreement, with some notable differences. Thus, puzzling as the fact appears, it is clear that the Minzans formed a sort of political and linguistic island in the Sabean country. The origin of the Minzans from Hadramaut is rendered probable by the pre- dominance of their dialect in the inscriptions of that country (except in that of Hisn Ghorab), by the rule, already mentioned, of a Minean prince in Hadramaut, and by Pliny’s statement (H. N., xii. 63) that frankincense was collected at Sabota (the capital of

Hadramaut ; inscr. NII), but exported only through the Gebanites,

whose kings received custom dues on it, compared with xii. 69, where he speaks of Minean myrrh “in qua et Atramitica est et Gebbanitica et Ausaritis Gebbanitarum regno,” &c., implying that Minean myrrh was

really a Hadramite and Gebanite product. All this suggests a close connexion between the Minans and Hadra- maut; and from the Minean inscriptions we know that the Gebanites were at one time a Minzan race, and stood in high favour with the queen of Ma‘in. Thus we are led to conclude that the Mineaus were a Hadramite settlement in the Jauf, whose object was to secure the northern trade road for their products. We cannot but see that their fortified posts in the north of the Sabean kingdom had a strategical purpose ; and so Pliny (xii. 54) says, " Attingunt et Minei, pagus alius, per quos evehitur wno tramite angusto [from Hadramaut]. Hi primi commercium turis fecere maximeque exer- cent, a quibus et Mineum dictum est." Besides this road, they had the sea-route, for, according to Pliny, their allies, the Gebanites, held the port of Ocelis. If the Minzans were later immigrants from Hadramaut, we can understand how they are not mentioned in Gen. x. In later times, as is proved by the Minean colony in Al-‘Ol4, which Euting has revealed to us, they superseded the Sabeans in some parts of the north. In the ‘Olé inscriptions we read the names of Minean kings and gods. Notable also is the mention in 1 Chron. iv. 41 of the "Bedouin encampments

corsa) and the Ma‘inim" smitten by the Simeonites, which may possibly refer to the destruction of a Minean caravan pro- tected by these Bedouins. The LXX. at least renders Ma‘inim by Mwalovs. It seems bold to conjecture that the Minzans were in accord with the Romanus under Alius Gallus, yet it is noteworthy that no Minzan town is named among the cities which that general

destroyed, though ruin fell on Nask and Kamna, which lie inside the Minzan territory.

The inscriptions seem to indicate that the monarchics of South Arabia were hereditary, the son generally following the father, though not seldom the brother of the deceased came between, appar- ently on the principle of seniority, which we find also in North Arabia. Eratosthenes (in Strabo xvi. 4, 3) says that the first child born to one of the magnates after a king came to the throne was his designated successor ; the wives of the magnates who were pregnant at the king's accession were carefully

watched and the first child born was brought up as heir to the kingdom. There seems to be a mistake in the first part of this statement ; what Eratosthenes will have said is that the oldest prince after the king was the designated suc- cessor. This law of succession explains how we repeatedly find two kings named together among the Sabzans, and almost always find two among the Minzans; the second king is the heir. The prin- ciple of seniority, as we know from North-Arabian history, gives rise to intrigues aud palace revolutions, and was probably often violated in favour of the direct heir. On the other hand, it readily leads to a limited power of election by the magnates, and in fact good Arabian sources speak of seven electoral princes. Some inscriptions name, besides the king, an eponymus, whose office seems to have been priestly, his titles being dhu harif, eponymus, and rashiw, ' sacri- ficer." All royal inscriptions are signed by him at the beginning and the end, and he appears with the king on coins.*

Religion.—In spite of the many ruins of temples and inscriptions, the religion of the Sabeans is obscure. Most of the many names of gods are mere names that appear and vanish again in particular districts and temples. Of the great uational gods of theSabeans and Minzans we know a little more. The worship of the heavenly bodies, for which there is Arabic evidence, had really a great place in Yemen. Sun-worship seems to have been peculiar to the Sabeeans and Hamdanites ; and, 1f the Sabis of Sabota (Pliny) was in fact the sun deity Shams, this must be ascribed to Saban influence. The Saban Shams was a goddess, while the chief divinity of the Minzans was the god 'Athtar, a male figure, worshipped under several forms, of which the commonest are the Eastern 'Athtar and 'Athtar Dhu Kabd. Wadd and Nikrah, the gods of love and hate, are possibly only other forms of the two 'Athtars. The Sabzans also recognize 'Athtar ; but with them he is superseded by Almakah, who, accord- ing to Hamdani, is the planet Venus, and therefore is identical with 'Athtar. The moon-god Sin appears on an inscription of Shabwat ; but, according to Hamdani, Haubas, "the drier," was the Sabean moon-god. Ou the Shabwat inscription 'Athtar is the father of Sin, and it is noteworthy that these two deities also appear as nearly related in the Babylonian legend of 'Ishtar's descent to Hades, where 'Ishtar is conversely the daughter of the god Sin. The mother of 'Athtar on another inscription is probably the

sun. We find also the common Semitic I] (El) and a Dhu Samai answer- ing to the northern Ba‘al Shamayim. Three gods of the inscriptions are named in the Koran, — Wadd, Yaghuth, and Nasr. In the god- name Ta’lab there may be an indication of tree-worship. The many minor deities may be passed over ; but we must mention the sanc- tuary of Riyam, with its images of the sun and moon, and, according to tradition, an oracle. In conformity with old Semitic usage, pil- grimages were made at definite seasons to certain deities, and the Sabean pilgrim month, Dhu Hijjatan, is the northern Dhw’l-Hijja. The outlines, and little more, of a few of the many temples can still be traced. Noteworthy are the elliptic form of the chief temples in Ma’rib and Sirwah, and the castle of Nakab-al-Hajar with its entrances north and south.

Sacrifices and incense were offered to the gods. The names for altar (midhbah) and sacrifice (dhibh) are common Semitic words, and the altar of incense has among other names that of miktar, as in Hebrew. A variety of spices—the wealth of the land—are named on these altars, as rand, ladanum, costus, tarum, &c. Frankincense appears as Jubdn, and there are other names not yet understood. The gods received tithes of the produce of trade and of the field, in kind or in ingots and golden statues, and these tributes, with freewill offerings, erected and maintained the temples. Temples and forti- fications were often combined. The golden statues were votive offerings; thus a man and his wife offer four statues for the health of their four children and a man offers to Dhu Samai statues of a man and two camels, in prayer for his own health and the protection of his camels from disease of the joints.

Their commerce brought the Sabeans under Christian and Jewish influence ; and, though the old gods were too closely connected with their life and trade to be readily abandoned, the great change in the trading policy, already spoken of, seems to have affected religion as well as the state. The inland gods lost importance with the failure of the overland trade, and Judaism and Christianity seem for a time to have contended for the mastery in South Arabia. Jewish influence appears in the name Rahman (see above), while efforts at Christianization seem to have gone forth from several places at various times. According to Philostorgius, the Homerites were converted under Constantius II. by the Indian

Theophilus, who built churches in Zafar and Aden. Another account places their

7Al

*conversion in the a of Anastasius (491-518). In Nejran Syrian missionaries seem to have introduced Christianity (Néldeke). But, as the religion of the hostile Ethiopians, Christianity found poli- tical obstacles to its adoption in Yemen ; and, as heathenism had quite lost its power, it is intelligible that Dhtii Nuwas, who was at war with Ethiopia before the last fatal struggle, became a Jew. His expedition against Christian Nejrdn had therefore political as well as religious motives. The Ethiopian conquest rather hurt than helped Christianity. The famous kalis (éxxdyola) of Abraha in San'a seems to have been looked on as a sign of foreign dominion, and Islam found it easy to supersede Christianity in Yemen. Coins.—In older times and in many districts coins were not used, and trade was carried on mainly by barter. Nor have there yet been many great finds of coins; indeed most of the picces in European collections probably come from the same hoard. At the same time the coins throw a general light on the relations of ancient Yemen. The oldest known pieces are imitations of the Athenian mintage of the 4th century B.c., with the legend AOE and the owl standing on an overturned amphora. The reverse has the head of Pallas with a Sabean N. Of younger coins the first series has a king's head on the reverse, and the old obverse is enriched with two Sabean monograms, which have been interpreted as meaning '*majesty"' and "eponymus" respectively. In a second series the Greek legend has disappeared, and, instead of the two Sabean monograms, we have the names of the king and the eponymus. A third series shows Roman influence and must be later than the ex- pedition of Gallus. As the standard of the coins of Attic type is not Attic but Babylonian, we must not think of direct Athenian influence. The type must have been introduced either from Persia or from Pheenicia (Gaza). One remarkable tetradrachm with the Sabzan legend Abyath'a is imitated from an Alexander of the 2d century B.C., the execution being quite artistic and the weight Attic. There are also coins struck at Raydan and Harib, which must be assigned to the Himyarite period (1st and 2d century A.D.). The inscriptions speak of " bright Hayyili coins in high relief," but of these*

none have been found. They also speak of sela‘ pieccs. The sela‘ in late Hebrew answers to the older shekel and the men-

tion of it seems to point to Jewish or Christian influence. Literature.—Fresnel, Piéces rel. aux Inserr. Himyarites déc. par M. Arnaud, 1845; Inscriptions in the Himyaritic Character in the British Musewm, London, 1863 ; Pretorius, Beitr. zur Erkldrung der himjar. Inschr., 3 parts, Halle, 1872- 74; Kremer, Siidarabische Sage, 1866; Sprenger, Alte Geogr. Arabiens, 1873; D. H. Miiller, Stidarabische Studien, Vienna, 1877; Id., Die Burgen u. Schlosser Stidarabiens, 2 parts, Vienna, 1879-81 (especially for chronology and antiquities) ; Mordtmann and Miiller, Sabdische Denkmdler, Vienna, 1883; Derenbourg, Etudes sur VEpigraphie du Yemen, Paris, 1884; Id., Nouv. Etud., 1885; Glaser, Mittheilungen tiber . . . sab. Inschr., 1886; Hamdani, Geogr. d. Arab. Halbinsel, ed. D. H. Miiller, vol. i., Leyden, 1884. See also papers by Osiander, Z.D.M.G., Xix.-xx. (1864-65); Halévy, Journ. As., 1872-74; D. H. Miiller, Z.D.41.G., xxix.- Xxxi., Xxxvii.; Prideaux, Tr. Soc. Bibl. Arch., 1873; Derenbourg, Bab. and Or. Record, London, 1887. In the press, D. H. Miiller, Epigraphische Denkmdler nach… Copien Eutings. Further cp. the travels of Niebuhr, Seetzen, Well- sted, Wrede, Maltzan, Halévy, Manzoni, and Glaser. (D. H. M.)

YENISEI. See Srperra and YENISEISK.

YENISEISK, a province of Eastern Siberia, which extends from the Chinese frontier to the shores of the Arctic Ocean, with an area of 992,870 square miles—as large as one-half of European Russia—has Tobolsk and Tomsk on the W., Yakutsk and Irkutsk on the E., north-western Mongolia on the S., and the Arctic Ocean on the N. (see vol. xxii. pl. I.). Its southern extremity being in 51° 45’ N. lat. and its northern (Cape Tcheluskin) in 77° 38’, it combines a great variety of orographical types, from the Sayan alpine regions in the south to the tundras of the Arctic littoral.

The border-ridge of the high plateau of north-western Oro- Mongolia, which is known under the general name of the graphy.

Western Sayans, and reaches altitudes of from 7000 to 8000 feet, limits it in the south. This is girdled on the north-western slope by a zone, nearly 100 miles wide, of alpine tracts, characterized by narrow valleys separated by several parallel chains of mountains, which are built up of crystalline slates, from 6000 to 7000 feet high. Here in the impenetrable forests only a few Tungus families find a precarious living by hunting. Towards the south, in the basins of the tributaries of the Tuba, the Sisim, and the Yus, and in those of the Kan, the Agut, and the Biryusa, the valleys of the alpine tracts contain rich auriferous deposits, and numerous gold-washings have been established along the taiga. In 53° 10' N. lat. the Yenisei emerges from the mountain tracts into the wide steppes of Abakan and Minusinsk, from 1500 to 2000 feet above sea-level, which extend along the base of the mountain region north-

Low- lands,

Arctic shores.

Geology.

Minerals.

Rivers.

742

eastwards towards the upper Lena. A flattened ridge of mountains, hardly attaining more than 3000 to 3500 feet, shoots north-east from the Kuznetskiy Alatau (see Tomsk) and separates the dry steppes of Minusinsk and Abakan from the next terrace of plains, from 1200 to 1700 feet in height, which also stretches in a north-eastern direction from Barnaut in the Attai to Krasnoyarsk, and into the upper basin of the Vilui. Another system of mountains, known under the general name of the Yeniseisk Taiga, rises on the outer border of this terrace, in the space be-tween the Upper Tunguska, or Angara, and the Podka- mennaya Tunguska. This system consists of several parallel chains running south-west to north-east, from 2500 to 3500 feet in altitude, though they are much lower on the left bank of the Yenisei, and passing on north-

eastwards into the basin of the Olenek. For many years past the Yeniseisk Taiga has been one of the richest auriferous regions of Siberia, not so much on account of the per- centage of gold in its alluvial deposits (which are poor in comparison with those of Olekminsk) as on account of the facilities for supplying the gold-fields with articles of food produced in the steppes of Minusinsk.

Beyond the Yeniseisk Taiga begin the lowlands, which at no point rise more than a few hundred feet above the sea and which slope gently towards the Arctic Ocean. They are covered with lakes, thin forests, and marshes ; and, as they approach the ocean, they assume more and more the characters of barren tundra, devoid of tree vegetation and covered with lichens. Beyond 70° N. lat. trees occur only along the courses of the rivers. Two ranges, however, break the monotony of the lowlands,—the Tungusskiy ridge, which stretches north-east between the Khatanga and Anabara rivers, and the Byrranga Mountains, which run along the north-western shore of the Tainryr peninsula.

The shores of the Arctic Ocean are indented by deep estuaries, that of the Taz penetrating 600 miles into the interior of the continent, and that of the Yenisei 300 miles, Gyda Bay, between the estuaries of the Ob and the Yenisei, and Taimyr, Thaddeus, and Khatanga Bays, are wide and deep indentations, ice-bound almost all the year round, Taimyr peninsula, which protrudes as a massive block of land between the Yenisei and the Khatanga, is an utterly barren stony tundra.

In the south are the granites and granitic syenites of the border- ridge of the plateau. In the alpine region all varieties of erystal- line slates—gneisses, diorite slates, talc and mica-schists, and clay slates—are found, the latter being auriferous, and the whole inter- sected with dykes and veins of protogene, diorites, porphyry, marble, and quartz. The same crystalline rocks are met with in the Kuznetskiy Atatau, the Yeniseisk Taiga, and the Byrranga Mountains. The plains are built up of Silurian, Devonian, Car- boniferous, and Triassic limestones and saudstones, with extensive freshwater deposits of the Jurassic period. Chalk and Eocene de- posits are met with farther north. The mountain region bears traces of extensive glaciation, and the lowlands of having been covered during the

post-Glacial period with immense lakes and marshy tundras, where thousands of mammoths and rhinoceroses were buried, along with other (now fossil) representatives of extinct Tertiary and post-Tertiary mammals. All the country gives evi-

dence of having been covered with numberless lakes during the Lacustrine period.

Yeniseisk is exceedingly rich in all kinds of metals and minerals. Gold dust appears in three different regions,—the northern Yeniseisk Taiga, where 100,740 oz. of gold were extracted in 1884 ; the region of the Kuznetskiy Atatau and its spurs, with the basins of the Tuba, Sisim, and Black and White Yus (25,860 oz. in 1884); and the upper parts of the tributaries of the Kan and Agut (12,540 0z.), where the gold-washings merge into those of the Nijne-Udinsk district of Irkutsk. Silver ore is found at several places in the basin of the Abakan, but the mines have been abandoned. Iron ore occurs almost everywhere in south Yeniseisk, but there is only one iron- work on the Abakan (25,000 cwts. in 1884). Salt lakes are very common, and about 50,000 ewts. of salt are extracted every year.

The whole of Yeniseisk is watered by the Yenisei and its affluents. The Yenisei rises in north-western Mongolia in several branches (Bei-khem, Ulu-khem, &c.), the chief of which, the Ulu-

khem, has its source in marshes to the west of Lake Kossogol at a height of more than 5000 feet. As far as the Russian frontier its course crosses the plateau at an altitude of not less than 3000 feet ; on entering Yeniseisk it pierces the great border-ridge and the series of parallel chains of the alpine region. At Sayansk (58° 10’ N. lat.) it emerges from the highlands and traverses the elevated steppes, receiving the Abakan on the left and the Tuba on the right. In 55° N. lat. it suddenly turns to the north-east, skirting the base of a low range of hills, on the northern slope of which flows the Tchutym, a tributary of the Ob, separated from the Yenisei by an isthmus only 6 miles in width. The possibility of connecting at this point the two great river-systems of Siberia has often been discussed ; the

difficulty is that the Tchutym valley is 440 feet higher than the other. A little below Krasnoyarsk the Yenisei is joined by a great tributary, the Kan, and farther north by the Angara or Upper Tunguska, which brings the waters of Lake Baikal? and is navigable from Irkutsk, notwithstanding a series of rapids in its middle course. The right-hand tributaries of the Ob, —the Ket, the Tym, and the Vakh,—approach the Yenisei so closely, and their sources are so thoroughly inosculated with those of the left-hand tributaries of the Yenisei, that the question of con- necting the two systems by means of a canal has been more than once raised ; indeed something has been done to connect the Great Kas, a tributary of the Yeniseil, with the Ket,—a boat with some 150 ewts. of cargo having already passed from the one to the other.? A railway across the narrow isthmus between the Tchutym and the Yenisei is now regarded as the best solution of the question. In 61° N, lat. the Yenisei, already more than two miles broad, divides into several branches, which wind amidst many islands, and has several dangerous rapids. Then, before piercing a ridge of hills, it expands into a kind of lake, 10 miles across, just above its junc- tion with the Podkamennaya Tunguska, Almost exactly at the Arctic Circle, opposite Turukhansk, it receives from the right another large tributary, the Lower Tunguska, which rises within a short distance of the upper Lena. The Yenisei, thus augmented, becomes more than 6 miles wide in lat. 68°. Its estuary begins at the village of Dudino, and has a breadth of 40 miles ; it contains numberless islands, The great river narrows once more (12 miles) before entering the Arctic Ocean (Yenisei Bay), after a total course of more than 3000 miles. It is navigable on its middle and lower courses, steamers plying between Krasnoyarsk and Minusinsk, as also on the lower Yenisei. Its mouth has been visited almost every year of late by steamers from Norway or Great Britain; and it is expected that regular communication will be established between Dudino and European ports.

The climate, though very severe throughout, offers, as might be Climate.

expected, great varieties. The Minusinsk steppes have a dry and relatively mild climate, so that they are sometimes called the Italy of Siberia. At Krasnoyarsk (55° 1’ N. lat.) the climate is more severe, and the winds are exceedingly disagreeable. The yearly fall of snow is so small that the

winds blow it away in the neigh- bourhood of the town ; hence a circuit has to be made by the con- voys of sledges to avoid it, or the sledges changed for wheeled carriages. Yeniseisk (58° 27’ N. lat.) has an average temperature below freezing-point, and at Turnkhansk the coldest month (Febru- ary) has an average temperature of ~24° Fahr. On the Taimyr peninsula the average summer temperature hardly reaches 45°. For additional particulars, see SIBERIA, vol. xxii. p. 6.

The highlands of Sayan and Atatau are thickly clothed with Flora.

forests of cedar, pitch-pine, larch, elder, and birch, with a rich undergrowth of rhododendrons, Berberis, and Ribes ; the Scotch fir appears only in the lower and drier parts of the valleys. The summits and slopes of the mountains are strewn with débris and boulders, and thickly sheeted with lichens and mosses; but there are also patches of meadow land covered with flowers, most of which are known in Europe. Still, the flora is poor as a rule, and Dr Martianoff, after several years’ collecting, succeeded in gathering only 104 species of phanerogams.? On the other haud, the flora of the Minusinsk plains and of the steppes of the Abakan at once strikes the traveller by the variety and brilliancy of its forms. The meadows are covered with bright flowers scattered amid the com- mon Graminex, and in June and July they are adorned and per- fumed by the Polygala, Dianthus, Medicago, Lathyrus, yellow sweet- scented lily, and scores of other flowers, mostly familiar in Europe, but attaining in Yeniseisk a larger size and greater brilliancy of colour. The rich carpet of grass and flowers is overtopped by the tall white blossoms of Archangelica and Spirwa Ulmaria, and ie a ae

1 According to recent measurements, the Angara, where it issues from Lake Baikal, has a volume of 121,400 cubic feet per second (Zzvestia, East Siberian Geogr. Soc., xvii., 1886).

2 According to Baron Aminoff’s measurements, Lake Bolshoye, through which the canal would have to pass, is 66 feet above the Ket at its junction with the Ozernaya, and 181 feet above the Yenisei at its junction with the Kas.

3 N. Martianoff, " Materials for a Flora of the Minusinsk Region," in Trudy of the Kasan Society of Naturalists, xi. 3, 1882.

Fauna. Popula- tion.

Occupa- tions.

Manu- factures.

Towns.

Y EO—

the blue masses of the tall Veronica longifolia. The meadows of the moister localities, surrounded by thickets of willow, poplar, wild cherry, and hawthorn, are still more attractive, on account of their wealth in anemones, violets, gentians, and so on, and the numerous creepers which festoon the trees and shrubs. M. Mar- tianoff's lists enumerate a total of 760 flowering and 760 crypto- gamic plants. Of the lower Fungi and parasitical Myxomycetes 1300 species were noted, and out of the 823 species hitherto described by specialists no less than 124 have proved to be new. Farther north- ward the flora of Yeniseisk is similar in character to that of the Siberian lowlands (see SrBeRiA, vol. xxii. p. 7). In the Taimyr peninsula it is represented by only 124 species of flowering plants.

For the fauna of Yeniseisk, see SrpertA, vol. xxii. p. 7.

The steppes of the upper Yenisei have been inhabited from a very remote antiquity, and numberless kurgans, graves, rock in- scriptions, and smelting furnaces of the successive inhabitants ate scattered all over the prairies of Abakan and Minusinsk.! The present population exhibits traces of all these predecessors (see SIBERIA and TarTars). Numerous survivals of Turkish and Samoyedic stems are found in the steppe land and in the Sayans; but some of them are greatly reduced in numbers (only a few hundreds). The Kaibals, the Katcha Tartars, the Sagais, the Kyzyl and Milet Tartars, and the Kamasins have settlements of their own, aud maintain their national features ; but the Karagasses, the Kotts, and the Arintses have almost entirely disappeared, and are represented only by a

few families in the spurs of the Sayans.? The Tunguses are scattered in the least accessible tracts, and may number about 2000, or less. Several hundreds of Yakuts inhabit the Turukhansk district ; and in the tundras between the Taz and the Yenisei there are a few hundred Ostraks (q.v.) and Yuraks of the Samoyedic stem. The remainder of the population, which numbered in all 447,076 in 1885, consists of Russians,—partly exiles, but mostly voluntary settlers. Nearly 50,000 belong to the unfortunate category of "settled" exiles. The 'indigenes ""— Tartars, Tunguses, Ostiaks, &c.—number about 50,000.

The chief occupation of the Russians is agriculture, which pros- pers in Minusinsk, the granary of the province; it is also carried on in west Kansk, Krasnoyarsk, and Atchinsk, and in a few villages of the Yeniseisk district, the total area of land under corn being reckoned at nearly 2,500,000 acres. Wheat, summer and winter rye, oats, barley, and buckwheat are the chief crops. Gardening is carried on in Minusinsk. Cattle-breeding is important, especially in Minusinsk. It has been estimated that there are in Yeniseisk about 270,000 horses, 240,000 cattle, 300,000 sheep, and 30,000 rein- deer in Turukhansk. These figures, however, must be below the true ones. The cattle being kept throughout the winter in the steppes, the snow-storms of early spring prove disastrous, as also do the murrains, to which no fewer than 200,000 head succumbed in the Minusinsk district in 1881. Hunting and fishing are an import- ant resource for most of the indigenes and for many of the Russiaus.

The manufactures of Yeniseisk are hardly worth mentioning, all capital being engaged in gold-washing or in commerce. The chief trade is in furs (exported), and in groccries and manufactured goods (imported). The gold-fields of the Yeniseisk Taiga are supplied with grain and cattle by river from the Minusinsk region, and with salt, spirits, and iron by the Angara. Attempts have recently been made to stimulate the trade in tea with north-west Mongolia.

Yeniseisk is divided into five districts, the chief towns of which are KRASNOYARSK (q.v.), the capital, which had 17,155 inhabitants in 1884; Atchinsk (7190) and Kansk (4050), two small towns on the great

Siberian highway, of which the latter is an entrepdt for the gold-mines ; Minusinsk (8270) on the Tuba, close by its junc- tion with the Yenisei, which has now a small but excellent natural history and ethnographical museum; and Yeniseisk (7050), the chief entrepot for the gold-mines, having a public library and a natural history museum, created of late by exiles. Turukhansk (139) is the chief town of a vast " region" (Krai). (B2ZA., HE)

YEOLA, a municipal town of India, in the Nasik district, Bombay presidency, with a population (1881) of 17,685 (males 8975, females 8710). It is situated in 20° 4' 10" N. lat. and 74°30' 30" E. long., 44 miles east of NAsik town, 13 miles south of Manwar station on the north-east line of the Great Indian Peninsular Railway, and nearly 12 miles from the frontier of the Nizam's dominions. Yeola is a flourishing commercial town, trading in silk and cotton goods, which it weaves, and in gold-twist,

which it also manufactures. At the time of its foundation Ycola was under the emperor of

1 Besides the works of Radloff, and those mentioned in the biblio- graphy of Semenoff's Dictionary, see N. Savenkoff's paper on recent explorations, in Jzvestia of Hast Siberian Geogr. Soc., xvii., 1887, and the Descriptive Catalogue of the Minusinsk Museum, by D. Klementz.

? Radloff's Aus Sibirien (2 vols., Leipsic, 1880) contains full ac- counts of the various Turkish stems of Yeniseisk,

Delhi ; it subsequently passed into the hands of the rajas of Satara and then the peshwas. Finally it was given in grant to Vithal, the ancestor of the present chief of Vinchur, who still enjoys the revenue from the lands attached to the town, though he has no authority within it.

YEOMANRY CAVALRY. See Votuntzrrs.

YEOVIL, a market town and municipal borough of Somerset, England, is situated on the river Yeo or Ivel, which here separates Somerset from

Dorset, and on branch lines of the London and South Western and the Great Western Railways, 40 nmiles south of Bristol and 124 west- south-west of London. The streets are regular and spa- cious, with a number of handsome public buildings. A few of the houses are of considerable antiquity, but within recent years the town has undergone much alteration. The church of St John the Baptist, occupying a command- ing site in the centre of the town, is a large and beautiful cruciform structure in the Perpendicular style, consisting of chancel, nave of seven bays, aisles, transepts, and lofty western tower. It is described by Mr Freeman as "a grand and harmonious whole, as truly the work of real artistic genius as Cologne or Winchester." There are two ecclesiastical parishes within the borough, Hendford and Yeovil Marsh, The principal secular public buildings are the town-hall in the Grecian style, erected in 1849, and the corn exchange. There area reading room and a library in connexion with the young men's Christian association and mutual improvement society. The benevolent institu- tions include Woborne's almshouses for six men and six women, the portreeves' almshouses, and a few smaller charities. Water is obtained from Holywell, 8 miles dis- tant, by works constructed by the corporation. Formerly the woollen manufacture was of some consequence, but this industry has now died out. The staple industry is the manufacture of gloves, for which the town has long been celebrated. Brewing and brick-making are also carried on. The agricultural trade of Yeovil is of some importance, large corn markets and cattle and horse fairs being held. The corporation consists of a mayor, four aldermen, and twelve councillors, who hold the manorial rights and also form the urban sanitary authority. The town has a commission of the peace, and petty sessions are held both by the county and the borough magistrates. The population of the municipal borough and urban sani- tary district (area about 700 acres) in 1871 was 8527, and in 1881 it was 8479.

Yeovil was a borough by prescription. Anciently it was called the town, borough, lordship, and hundred of Yeovil, and was in- cluded in a district which soon after the Conquest was taken pos- session of by the crown. The manor of Yeovil included in this district was some time afterwards assigned to the rector of St John the Baptist church, and was incorporated under the name of the portreeve and burgesses of Yeovil. In

1418 it was resigned by the rector to Henry V., who gave the manor to the convent of the Virgin Mary and Saint Bridget. The grant was confirmed by Edward IV. After the dissolution of the monasteries the manor was settled by Henry VIII. on Catherine Parr, who held it till her death. In 1449 the town was visited by a fire, by which 117 houses were destroyed. In 1853 Yeovil was placed under the Municipal Act.

YEW. This tree (Taxus) belongs to a genus of Coni- Jerz in which the ordinarily woody cone is represented by a fleshy cup surrounding a single seed. Usually it forms a low-growing tree of very diverse habit, but generally with dense spreading branches, thickly covered with very dark green linear leaves, which are given off from all sides of the branch, but which, owing to a twist in the base of the leaf, become arranged in a single series on each side of it. The trees are usually dicecious: the male flowers are borne on one individual and the female on another, although instances occur in which flowers of both sexes are formed on the same tree. The male flowers are more or less globu- lar and occur in the axils of the leaves. They consist of a number of overlapping brownish scales, gradually increasing

in size from below upwards and surrounding a naked stalk that bears atits summit a head of anthers. Each anther has a flat five-lobed top, something like a shield ; from its under surface five, six, or more pollen cases hang down, and

Yew. magnified ; (3) fruit ; (4) male flowers; (5) stamens ; (6), (7) female flower in different stages ; (8) section of female flowers, magnified.

(1) Shoot with male flowers; (2) leaf and in section,

these open lengthwise to liberate the globose pollen-grains. Each flower thus consists of a number of monadelphous stamens ; but, according to the older view of its structure, each stamen constitutes of itself a single flower, the whole mass being considered as an amentaceous inflorescence or catkin of numerous monandrous flowers. The female flowers are also placed each separately in the axil of a leaf, and consist of a number of

overlapping scales, as in the male. These scales surround a cup which is at first shallow, green, and thin, but which subsequently becomes fleshy and red, while it increases so much in length as almost entirely to conceal the single straight seed. It is clear that the structure of the female flower differs from that of most conifers ; but the structure of the wood and other characters forbid its being separated from them except as a subdi- vision (Z'axacez).

The poisonous properties, referred to by classical writers such as Cesar, Virgil, and Livy, reside chiefly if not en- tirely in the foliage. This, if eaten by horses or cattle, especially when it has been cut and thrown in heaps so as to undergo a process of fermentation, is very injurious. The leaves have also been used for various medicinal pur- poses, but are seldom employed now. The succulent por- tion of the yew berry is quite harmless ; but it is probable that some noxious principle is contained in the seed. As, however, it is hard and disagreeable to the taste, the danger from this source is not great. As a timber tree it is used for cabinet-work, axle-trees, bows, and the like, where strength and durability are required.

The yew occurs wild over a very large area of the northern hemisphere. In north-eastern America and in Japan trees are found of a character so similar that by some botanists they are all ranged under one species, The

varieties grown in the United Kingdom are very numerous, one of the most striking being that known as the Irish yew,—a shrub with the pyramidal or columnar habit of a cypress, in which the leaves spread from all sides of the branches, not being twisted, as they usually are, out of their original position. In the ordinary yew the main branches spread more or less horizontally, and the leaves are so ar- ranged as to be conveniently exposed to the influence of the light ; but in the variety in question the branches are mostly vertical, and the leaves assume a direction in accordance with the ascending direction of the branches.

The yew is a favourite evergreen tree, either for planting sepa- rately or for hedges, for which its dense foliage renders it well suited. The wood is very hard, close-grained, and of a deep red brown colour internally. Its younger branches, owing to their toughness, were formerly used for bows. The planting of the yew in churchyards was at one time supposed to have been done with a view to the supply of yew staves. But, while importation from abroad was fostered, there seems to have been no statute enforcing the cultiva- tion of the yew in Great Britain; on the other hand, a statute of Edward I. (cited in Gard. Chron., 6th March 1880) states that the trees were often planted in churchyards to defend the church from high winds. Be this asit may, yews of huge size and great antiquity still exist in various parts of the country in the vicinity of churches, Some of these are of historic interest ; but it is hardly prudent to cite either the measurements or the allegations as to age, the cir- cumstances under which the estimates were framed being different in each case. Accurate comparative measurements made on a uni- form pian would be very serviceable. The Crowhurst yew, men- tioned by Evelyn as 30 feet in circumference, was still in existence in 1876 (Gard. Chron., 22d July 1876). The large yew at Anker- wyke near Staines, with a trunk 273 feet in circumference, might well have been in existence in 1215, when Magna Charta was signed. Considerable interest also attaches to the fine yew in Buckland

churchyard near Dover, which in 1880 was removed to a distance of 60 yards. The trunk had been split so that it had a direction nearly parallel with the soil. This huge tree was moved with a ball of soil round its roots, 16 feet 5 inches by 15 feet 8 inches, by 3 feet 64 inches in depth, the weight of the entire mass being esti- mated at 56 tons. The dimensions of the tree in 1880 were as follows—" circumference of the main trunk, 22 feet ; of the upright portion of the trunk, 6 feet 10 inches ; second horizontal trunk, 10 feet 10 inches ; do., south limb forking off at 9 feet from the main trunk, 7 feet 10 inches ; do., west limb forking off at 9 feet froin the main trunk, 8 feet 8 inches; extent of branches from centre of main trunk southwards, 30 feet 10 inches, and from north to south 48 feet; they extend from the main trunk westward 33 feet." The tree was replanted so that the horizontal portions were replaced in their original erect position and the natural symmetry restored (Gard. Chron., ist May 1880).

YEZD. See Yazp, p. 733 above.

YEZO. See Japan.

YOH-CHOW FU, a prefectural city in the Chinese province of Hoo-nan ("south of the lakes "), stands on high ground on the east side of the outlet of Tung-ting Lake, in 29° 18' N, lat. and 113° 2' E. long. ©The district in which Yoh-chow Fu stands is the ancient habitat of the aboriginal San Miao tribes, who were subsequently deported into north-western China, and who, judging from some of the non-Chinese festival customs of the people, would ap- pear to have left traditions behind them. The present city, which was built in 1371, is about 3 miles in circum-ference and is entered by four gates. The walls are high and well built, but were not strong enough to keep out the Taiping rebels in 1853. Situated between Tung-ting Lake and the Yang-tze-kiang, Yoh-chow Fu forms a depot for the native products of the province which are destined for export, and for foreign goods on their way inland. In 1885 foreign goods to the value of 28,228 taels were sent from Hankow to Yoh-chow Fu, the principal items being grey shirting, oil, and lead. The city is 4250 Chinese miles from Peking, and contains a population of about

60,000.

YOKOHAMA, situated in 35° 26’ 53” N. lat. and 139° 38’ 39” E. long. (see map in vol. xxiii. p. 433), is the most important of the five ports in Japan open by treaty to foreign commerce and residence, both on account of its

proximity to Tokio, the capital, and of the extent of its

x : Exports. Imports. trade. It stands on a plain, extending along the Bay of 1878 Tie ahok a Tokio and shut in by hills, one of which, towards the ee gt eae eae ee se get ee south-east, terminates in a promontory called Honmoku- || jggo.7 770770077 3,792,991 5,378,385 misaki, Its area extends over ‘873 of a square mile, of i ne a ee 4,319,077 4,404,289 which °26 is occupied by the foreign settlement. The Se ert echiaicta eta cen, 5,451,803 4,155,628 : ‘ ; ‘ : ea ieee aiaint 5,245,290 3,925,392 climate is variable, the range in temperature being from im… 4.381.096 3 967 644 95° to 43° Fahr., and the mean temperature 57°°7.. The seep cror tins pwd Ae cold in winter is severe owing to the prevalence of northerly Se 6,502,466 | 4,116,842

Tes

ZG

on]. YU) y)

*O \\ *

Lae

1 Kanagawa Kew Buildings 2 Public Gardeaw 3 Gustom House Landings (4 French (5) Natwe (6)English) 7 Harbour Ligh.

Plan of Yokohama.

winds, while the heat is great in summer, though it is The rain- fall is large—according to Dr Hepburn's observations In 1859, when the neighbouring town of Kanagawa was opened to foreigners under the treaty with the United States, Yokohama was

tempered by sea breezes from the south-west.

(1863-1869) 694 inches annually.

an insignificant fishing village; and notwithstanding the

protests of the foreign representatives the Japanese Govern- ment shortly afterwards chose the latter place as the settle-

ment instead of Kanagawa. The town has since increased so rapidly that in 1886 the population was 111,179 (3904 foreigners, including 2573 Chinese, 256 Americans, and 625 British). The Japanese Government has constructed various public buildings, a granite breakwater, and a cause-way 2 miles long, connecting the town with Kanagawa. Waterworks on the most improved principle have been completed recently, the water being supplied from the Sagamigawa, The foreign settlement consists of well- constructed streets with business establishments. The wealthier portion of the foreigners reside, however, on a hilly locality to the south of the town, called the Bluff. The land occupied by foreigners has been leased to them by the Japanese Government, 20 per cent. of the annual rent being set aside for municipal expenses.

The harbour, which is a part of the Bay of Tokio, is good and commodious, extending from Honmoku-misaki (Treaty Point) to the mouth of the Tsurumi, a distance of about 5 miles. The average depth at high water is about 46 feet, with a fall of tide of about 8 feet, the entrance being marked by a lightship and two buoys. There are two landing-places, the English and the French " hatoba a but, as there are no quays available for large vessels, goods have to be carried to the shore in junks. Steamers from San Francisco, Vancouver's Island, China, d&c., call re-gularly. A railway about 18 miles long connects Yoko- hama with Tokio. This, the first railway in Japan, was constructed in 1872. Yokohama is the

terminus of the Tokaido line, which will ultimately connect Yokohama with Kioto, the former capital.

The following table shows the value of the foreign trade of Yoko- hama from 1878 to 1886 :—

The figures for the bullion trade in 1886 were—export (gold) £9291, (silver) £1,243, 569 ; import (gold) £4776, (silver) £1,903,010. The revenue from custom duties, &., in the same year was—export duties, £212,587 ; import duties, £198,866 ; warehouses, £1979 ; harbour dues, £1870.

YOKOSUKA, a seaport and naval station of Japan, is situated in the province of Sagami and on the Bay of Tokio, 12 miles south of Yokohama (see map in vol. xxiii, p. 433). The port is sheltered by hills and affords good anchorage. The site was occupied by a small fishing village until 1865, when the shogun's Government estab- lished a shipyard there. Since then it has grown rapidly and come into prominence. In 1868 the Japanese Govern- ment converted the shipyard into a naval dockyard, and subsequently carried out many improvements. In 1884 the port became a first-class naval station; and naval barracks, warehouses, offices, hospitals, &c., were estab- lished there. A large number of ships-of-war and of the mercantile marine are always found in the port, as well as an increasing number of foreign vessels, which come to be docked and repaired. The dockyard was first constructed by French engineers; but since 1875 the work has been entirely in the hands of Japanese engineers. The number of hands employed is about 2800. 'There are three dry docks and slips, The area occupied by the dockyard and other naval establishments is 7000 acres, and that of the town 270 acres. The population was 5800 in 1888,

YONKERS, a city of Westchester county, New York, United States, is situated upon the east bank of the Hudson river, about 18 miles from its mouth, and on the New York Central and Hudson River and the New York City and Northern Railroads. The site is very hilly, con- sisting of ridges forming terraces parallel to the river. The city had in 1880 a population of 18,892 (12,733 in 1870). Yonkers has important manufacturing industries, principally of carpets, hats, silk, brass goods, elevators (lifts),

steam engines, and machinery; but it is chiefly as a residence suburb, being within an hour of the business centre of the metropolis, that it has acquired its popula- tion and importance.

Yonkers was settled by the Dutch of New Amsterdam about the middle of the 17th century, and was held as a manor until 1779. In 1788 it was organized as a township, and in 1872 it received a city charter.

YONNE, a department of central France, was formed in 1790 partly from the province of Champagne proper (with its dependencies, Sénonais and Tonnerrois), partly from Burgundy proper (with its dependencies, the county of Auxerre and Avallonnais), and partly from GAtinais (Orléanais and fle-de-France). It lies between 47° 18' and 48° 25' N. lat. and 2° 50'and 4° 20' E. long., and is bounded by Aube on the N.E., Céte-d'Or on the E., Niévre on the S., Loiret on the W., and Seine-et-Marne on the N.W. The highest elevation (2000 feet) of the department is in the granite mountains of Morvan, in the south-east, where other peaks range from 1300 to 1600 feet. These moun- tains are flanked by limestone plateaus, from 700 to 1200 feet in height, traversed by the Yonne and its tributaries, The department belongs wholly to the basin of the Seine, except a small district in the south-west, which belongs to that of the Loire. The river Yonne flows through it from south to north-north-west, receiving on the right bank the

XXIV. — 94

Plate pxev iii

Geology.

746

Cure (with its tributary the Cousin), the Serein, the Ar- mancon (the valley of which is traversed by the Burgundy Canal and by the railway from Paris to Lyons through Burgundy), and the Vanne (from which Paris is partly sup- plied by an aqueduct). To the west of the Yonne le the sources of the Loing, another tributary of the Seine, and of its affluents, the Ouanne and the Lunain. ; The Yonne is navigable throughout the

department, and is connected with the Loire by the Canal of Nivernais, which in turn is connected with that of Briare joining the Seine and the Loire. The climate of Yonne resembles that of Paris; but the extremes of heat and cold are greater on the plateaus. The annual rainfall is 27 inches at Auxerre and 32 in the east of the department. 'The prevailing winds are from the south-west and west.

Of a total area of 1,835,475 acres 1,125,412 acres are arable, 426,757 are under wood, 91,309 under vines, 79,3866 under grass, and 39,316 are returned as occupied by heaths, pasture-lands, and marshes. The live stock in 1880 included 41,295 horses, 1280 mules, 8438 asses, 126,636 cattle, 238,522 sheep of native and 58,416 of superior breed (wool-clip in 1880 566 tons), 30,561 pigs, and 6516 goats. There were also 21,411 beehives (61 tons of honey). Oxen are fattened and the well-known St Florentin cheeses made. The wines of Tonnerre and Auxerrois are the finest red wines of Lower Burgundy, and those of Chablis are the finest white. The principal crops in 1884 were—wine 22,486,420 gallons (average of ten preceding years 28,607,370 gallons), wheat 5,500,000 bushels, meslin 192,600, rye 680,625, barley 948,750, oats 4,677,750, buck- wheat 35,200, potatoes 3,410,088, beetroot for fodder 25,060 tons, hops 79 tons, colza seed 206, hemp seed 138, hemp 99, linseed 40, flax 22, tobacco 338, hay 386,650, clover 34,245, lucerne 30,189, and sainfoin 6297 tons. The forests consist of oak, beech, clm, horu- beam, ash, and birch, and re-plantations are being made with dif- ferent kinds of pine and with larch; chestnut trees are not un- common. In 1880 700 tons of peat were extracted ; and there are fine quarries of Oolitic limestone, and of cement, ochre, fossil phosphates, china clay, and chalk. The chief industrial establish- ments are tanneries, forges (11,863 tons of iron in 1882), paper- mills, saw-mills, and breweries ; files and other articles of steel, boots and shoes, hosiery, and champagne are also manufactured. Cereals, wines, firewood, charcoal, ochre, and bark are exported ; southern wines and building materials are among the imports. There are 286 miles of railway, 318 of national and 6755 of other roads, and 205 of waterway. The population was 357,029 in 1881, aud 355,864 in 1886. About 217,000 are engaged in agricultural pursuits. The department constitutes the archiepiscopal diocese of Sens, has its court of appeal at Paris, its academy at Dijon, and belongs to the district of Orleans army

corps. It is divided for administrative purposes into five arrondissements. Places of note are the chef-lieu Auxerre (16,754 inhabitants in 1886), the pictur- esque Avallon (5768), Joigny (6189), famous for its wines, and Tonnerre (4650), for its wines and building stones.

YORK, a northern county of England, is bounded E. by the North Sea, N. by Durham (the boundary line being formed by the Tees), 8. by Lincoln, Nottingham, Derby, and Chester, and W. by Lancaster and Westmorland. It is much the largest county in England, being more than double the size of Lincolnshire, which ranks next to it. The area is 3,882,851 acres, or nearly 6067 square miles, almost one-eighth of the surface of England. Of the total area 750,828 acres or about 1173 square miles are in the East Riding, 1,361,664 acres or about 21274 square miles in the North Riding, and 1,768,380 acres or about 2763 square miles in the West Riding. The city of York, which forms an administrative division separate from the Ridings, embraces an area of 1979 acres or about 3 square miles.

The marked differences in the geological structure of Yorkshire are reflected in the great variety of its scenery. The stratification is for the most part regular, but owing toa great line of dislocation nearly coincident with the western boundary of the county the rocks dip towards the east, while the strike of the strata is from north to south. The bold and picturesque scenery of the western hills and dales is due to the effects of denudation among the harder rocks, which here come to the surface. A portion of the Pennine chain, stretching from Derbyshire to the Cheviots, runs north and south through Yorkshire, where it has

an average breadth of about 30 miles. The strata here consist of (1) Silurian beds, occupying a small area in the north-west corner of the county; (2) the Carboniferous or Mountain Limestone, which has been subjected to great dislocations, the more important of which are known as the North'and South Craven faults; (3) the Yoredale series, consisting of shales, flagstones, limestone, and thin seams of coal; and (4) the Millstone Grit, forming part of the hilly moorlands, and capping many of the loftier eminences. In the West Riding the Pennine range forms part of the elevated country of Craven and Dent, with Whernside (2384 feet),

Ingleborough (2361), and Penyghent (2270). Towards the east it gradually declines into a series of moorland hills. Mickle Fell in the north-west corner of the county rises to a height of 2581 feet. The scenery in the western part of the North Riding is somewhat similar to that in Craven, except that the lower hills are of sharper outline owing to the perpendicular limestone scars. To the intermingling of the limestone with the softer rocks are due the numerous "forces" or waterfalls, which are one of the special features of the scenery of this district, the more remarkable being High Force in Teesdale and Aysgarth Force in Wensleydale. The action of water on the limestone rocks has given rise to extensive caverns, of which the best examples are those of Clapham and Ingle- ton in the West Riding, as well as to subterranean water- courses. At Brimham, Plumpton, and elsewhere there are curious fantastic masses of rock due to irregular weathering of the Millstone Grit. The Pennine region is bounded on the south-east by the Coal Measures, forming the northern portion of the Derbyshire, Nottingham, and Yorkshire coalfield, which in Yorkshire extends from Sheffield north- wards to Leeds. To the east the Measures dip beneath the Permian beds, of which a narrow band crops up from Masham southwards. The Permian strata are overlain to the east by the Trias or New Red Sandstone, which is searcely ever exposed, but having been partly worn away is covered with Glacial deposits of clay and gravel, forming the low-lying Vale of York, extending from the Tees south to Tadcaster and east beyond York to Market Weighton. Farther east the Triassic beds are overlain by Lias and Oolite. The Lias crops to the surface in a curve extending from Redcar to the Humber. In the Middle Lias there is a seam of valuable iron ore, the source of the prosperity of the Cleveland region. The moorlands extending from Scarborough and Whitby are formed of Liassic strata topped with beds of Lower Oolite, rising gradually to the north-east and attaining at Burton Head a height of 1489 feet, the greatest elevation of the Oolite formation in Eng- land. In the bottom bed there is a seam of ironstone, an immense nugget of which, in Rosedale, now nearly all removed, formed at one time a conspicuous cliff. In this district there are a number of picturesque eminences capped by Lower Oolites,and among the eastern slopes of the moorlands there are several charming and fertile valleys. Along the line of the Lower Oolites there is a series of low flat hills, which slope southwards under the clays of the Vale of Pickering.

These clays are covered by the Chalk, forming the district of the Wolds, which again dips southwards below the clays and sands of Holderness.

The coast is not deeply indented at any part, the inlets Coast.

scarcely deserving the name of bays. Except in the Holderness region, the shore as far north as Saltburn is bold and rocky, and presents a great variety of picturesque cliff scenery, while below the cliffs there are in many cases long stretches of beautiful sands.

Yorkshire is famed for the beauty of its river scenery, Rivers.

in which respect it is scarcely surpassed by Scotland. The great majority of the rivers issue from the higher western regions and flow eastwards. The Tees, which rises on the

Lakes.

Minerals.

Mineral springs.

Agricul- ture.

COUNTY. |

south-east borders of Cumberland, forms throughout almost its entire length the boundary between Yorkshire and Dur- ham. The Swale rises on the confines of Westmorland, and after a semicircular course by Richmond joins the Ure a few miles below Boroughbridge. This latter river flows in a similar direction some miles south of the Swale through the beautiful Wensleydale, and then past Jervaulx Abbey, Masham, and Ripon. After its junction with the Swale it takes the name of the Ouse, and on being joined by the Nidd passes by York and Selby, beyond which it receives the Aire and the Trent, and finally it falls into the Humber. The Wharfe flows south-eastwards from the Pennine range past Bolton Abbey, Otley, Wetherby, and Tadcaster to the Ouse near Cawood. The Aire rises in full stream from the foot of Malham Cove in Craven, and, flowing past

Skipton, Keighley, and Leeds, receives the Calder at Castleford, and falls into the Ouse near Goole. The Ribble flows southwards through the district of Craven into Lancashire. The Don rises in the Penistone moors, and flowing northwards by Sheffield and Doncaster falls into the Ouse near Goole. The Hull flows southwards through the East Riding to the Humber at Hull.

The county is almost destitute of lakes, the only sheets of water of size sufficient to lay claim to that title being Semmer Water at the upper end of Wensleydale, Malham Tarn at the head of Airedale, and Hornsea Mere near the sea-coast at Hornsea.

One of the chief sources of the mineral wealth of York- shire is the coalfield in the West Riding, the most valuable seams being the Silkstone, which is bituminous and of the very highest reputation as a house coal, and the Barnsley thick coal, the great seam of the Yorkshire coalfield, which is of special value, on account of its semi-anthracitic quality, for use in iron-smelting and in engine furnaces. The average yearly production of the Yorkshire coalfield is nearly twenty million tons, the number of persons em- ployed above and below ground at the coal-pits being over 60,000. Associated with the Upper Coal Measures there is a valuable iron ore, occurring in the form of nodules. Large quantities of fire-clay are also raised, as well as of gannister and oil-shale. In the Middle Lias of the Cleve- land district there is a remarkable bed of iron ore, of which the annual production is over six million tons, the greater proportion of the ore being converted into pig-iron in Middlesbrough, by far the most important centre of pig- iron manufacture in the kingdom. Altogether the pro- duction of pig-iron in Yorkshire is nearly one-third of that produced in England, and nine-tenths of the produce of Yorkshire belongs to the Cleveland district. Lead ore is obtained in the Yoredale beds of the Pennine range in Wharfedale, Airedale, Niddesdale, Swaledale, Arkendale, and Wensleydale. Slates and flagstones are quarried in the Yoredale rocks. In the Millstone Grit there are several beds of good building stone, but that most largely quarried is the Magnesian Limestone of the Permian series, which, however, is of somewhat variable quality.

Yorkshire is noted for the number of its mineral springs, chiefly sulphureous and chalybeate, the principal, besides those at Harrogate, being Askern, Aldfield, Boston Spa, Croft, Filey, Guisbrough, Hovingham, and Scarborough.

Agriculture.—The hilly country in the west of Yorkshire, embracing the north-western corner of the North Riding and a great part of the West Riding, is chiefly pasture land, sheep being grazed on the higher grounds and cattle on the rich pastures where the limestone rock prevails. The Vale of York, with an area of about 1000 square miles, includes much fertile land occupied by all kinds of crops. The Chalk downs by careful cultivation now form oue of the best soils for corn crops, the rotation being grasses, wheat, turnips, and barley. The till or boulder clay of Holderness is the richest soil in Yorkshire. A great part of the land in this

district has been reclaimed from the sea, from 20,000 to 30,000 acres being protected by embankments. The Vale of Cleveland

in the North Riding is well cultivated, the higher grounds in the district being chiefly pastoral. The smallest proportional area under cultivation is in the North Riding, 860,820 acres out of 1,361,664 in 1887, while in the East Riding there were 666,291 acres out of 804,798, and in the West Riding 1,210,639 acres out of 1,716,389. The proportion of permanent pasture is largest in the West Riding, 803,514 acres or about two-thirds of the area under cultivation, while in the North Riding it was 488,958 acres or rather more than one-half, and in the East Riding only 191,519 acres or cousiderably less than a third. On the other hand, the area under corn crops in the West Riding was 208,890 acres, in the North Riding 197,846 acres, and in the East Riding 254,162 acres. Wheat in 1887 occupied 66,341 acres in the East Riding, 38,437 in the North, and 58,659 in the West ; barley 64,042 in the East, 61,367 in the North, and 54,592 in the West; and oats 101,410 in the East, 85,554 in the North, and 81,314 in the West. Rye, beans, and pease occupied comparatively small areas. Liquorice is grown in the neighbourhood of Pontefract. Flax is still

grown, but occupies a comparatively small area, only 868 acres in 1887. Green crops in the East Riding occupied 110,806 acres (potatoes 12,956, turnips 75,590, mangold 5297, carrots 613, cabbage, &c., 7419, and vetches, &c., 8931), in the North Riding 78,689 (potatoes 11,246, turnips 58,121, mangold 2379, carrots 110, cabbage, &c., 3329, and vetches, &c., 3504), aud in the West Riding 99,596 (potatoes 23,044, turnips 62,079, mangold 3331, carrots 250, cab- bage, &c., 2219, and vetches, &c., 8673). Clover and rotation grasses occupicd in the East, North, and West Ridings 92,982, 71,846, and 85,075 acres respectively, and fallow land 16,388, 23,460, and 138,141 acres respectively. The areas under orchards in 1887 were—in the East Riding 849 acres, in the North 1015, and in the West 1694, the areas under market gardens being 520, 369, and 2652 acres, under nursery grounds 104, 154, and 807 acres, and under woods (in 1881) 14,480, 49,106, and 66,014 acres respectively. Horses numbered 38,046 (23,508 used for agriculture, 14,538 un- broken horses and mares kept solely for breeding) in the East Rid- ing, 40,384 (26,026 used for agriculture) in the North Riding, and 53,149 (35,180 used for agriculture) in the West Riding. These horses are only such as are returned by occupiers of land, and do not include the large number used for commercial purposes. The draught horses are generally of a somewhat mixed breed, but the county is famed for its breeds of hunters and of carriage and saddle horses. A breed known as Cleveland bays is much used in London carriages. Horse-racing is a favourite Yorkshire sport, the principal stables being at Malton, Beverley, Doncaster, and Middleham. Cattle in 1887 numbered 86,169 (26,211 cows and heifers) in the East Riding, 162,462 (54,111 cows and heifers) in the North Riding, 264,876 (122,457 cows aud heifers) in the West Riding. The breeds of cattle are not much attended to, the custom in the hilly districts, in both the West and the North Riding, being to purchase lean cattle at the northern fairs to fatten for the Lancashire and York- shire butchers. The Teeswatcr breed is, however, on the incrcase in Yorkshire. In Holderness there is a short-horned breed, chiefly valuable for its milking qualities. Cheese-making is largely carried on in some districts. Sheep in 1887 numbered in the East Riding 429,252, in the North Riding 638,320, and in the West Riding 646,809. The Leicester, the Lincoln, and the South Down, and crosses betwecn the Cheviot and Leicester, are perhaps the most common breeds. The old Wolds sheep have also been improved by crossing with

Leicesters. The total number of pigs in the East Riding in 1887 was 46,332, in the North Riding 48,990, and in the West Riding 71,887. Though the large long-eared breed is still kept, the small breed is that chiefly in favour. Large numbers of pigs are kept at the dairy farms and fed mainly on whey. York- shire bacon is famed for its flavour.

According to the latest landowners' Return, 1878, the East Rid- ing was divided among 19,576 proprietors, possessing 710,733 acres at an annual value of £2,032,195, or about £2, 17s. 2d. per acre. There were 15,012 who owned less than one acre each, and there were 4049 acres of common lands. The following possessed over 10,000 acres each :—Sir Tatton Sykes 34,010 acres, Lord Londes- borough 33,006, Sir G. Cholmley 20,503, Lord Wenlock 19,453, Lord Hotham 18,683, W. H. H. Broadley 14,208, William F. Bethel 13,396, Lord Leconfield 13,247, Lord Middleton 12,295, Crown Property 12,230, Viscountess Downe 11,595, and T. A. C. Constable 10,981. The North Riding was divided among 16,313 proprietors, possessing 1,278,884 acres at an annual value of £1,841,945, or about £1, 8s. 9d. per acre. The following owned over 10,000 acres each :—John Bowes 48,887, Lord Feversham 39,312, marquis of Ailesbury 15,370, Lord Bolton 15,419, Viscount Downe 15,271, earl of Carlisle 13,030, Sir G. O. Wombwell 11,912, Lord Londesborough 11,884, Mrs D. Harcourt 11,442, Mrs J. T. D. Hutton 10,902. There were 10,115 proprietors who possessed less than one acre, and the area of common land was 247,409 acres. The West Riding was divided among 76,913 proprietors, possessing 1,632,259 acres at an annual value of £8,199,840, or about £5, Os. 54d. per acre, the large rental being duc to the increased rent of land in towns. There were 59,496 proprietors who owned less than one

acre each, and the estimated area of common land was 99,912 acres. The following proprietors owned over 10,000 acres each :—Charles Towneley 23,153, earl of Harewood 20,330, duke of Devonshire 19,333, Earl Fitzwilliam 19,165, Andrew Montagu 17,591, duke of Norfolk 15,270, George Lane Fox 15,018, earl of Dartmouth 14,723, Walter Morrison 14,118, Sir H. J. Tufton 12,202, T. W. S. Stanhope 11,357, Ayscough

Fawkes 11,205, James Farrer 11,088, marquis of Ripon 10,908, Sir H. D. Ingilby 10,610, and duke of Leeds 10,034.

Communication.—The county, especially in the manufacturing districts, is intersected with railways in all directions, the princi- pal companies being the North Eastern, the Manchester, Sheffield, and Lincoln, the Lancashire and Yorkshire, the Midland, and the Great Northern. A considerable amount of traffic, especially in coal, is carried on by means of the canals. ‘ an

Manufactures and Trade.—For many years an extensive district in the West Riding has been famed for its woollen and worsted manufactures. The early development of the industry was due partly to the abundance of water power supplicd by the numerous streams in the valleys by which the district is indented ; and in recent times the happy accident of the proximity of coal and iron has enabled the industry to keep pace with modern requirements. The West Riding is now the chief seat of the woollen manufacture in the United Kingdom, and has almost a monopoly in the manu- facture of worsted cloths. In this industry ncarly all the important towns in the Riding are engaged, Leeds having for its specialty almost every variety of woollen and worsted cloth, Bradford yarns and mixed worsted goods, Dewsbury, Batley, and the neighbouring districts shoddy, Huddersfield both plain goods and fancy trouser- ings and coatings, and Halifax, to the neighbourhood of which the cotton industry of Lancashire has also penetrated, worsted and car- pets. Next to the woollen industry comes the manufacture of iron and steel machinery and implements of every variety, Leeds being one of the principal seats of all kinds of mechanical engineering, and Sheffield of iron work and cutlery. For the minor manufac- tures in the district, and for more specific details, reference must be made to the separate articles on the different towns. Until comparatively recently agriculture was the chief calling of the North Riding; but the discovery of iron ore in the Cleveland region has led to the formation of another great manufacturing centre, mainly devoted to the production of pig-iron, the manufacturing of steel by the basic process, and iron shipbuilding. The industrial activity of the East Riding is mostly centred in Hull, the chief port of the county, although the Lancashire ports must be regarded as the principal ports for the trade,

especially of the West Riding. In the North Riding Middlesbrough is rising into importance as a shipping port, and Whitby, though not progressing as a port, has a considerable coasting trade. The fishing industry, which is of minor iniportance, is carried on at Hull, Filey, Whitby, and Scar- borough, and a considerable number of villages.

Scarborough is by far the most attractive and thriving watering- ing-place north of the Thames; anda number of others, such as Whitby, places Bridlington, Filey, and Saltburn, are rising yearly in repute. and spas. Among others, chiefly of local celebrity, are Redcar, Hornsea, and

Withernsea. There are a considerable number of inland spas fre- quented to some extent by persons from other parts of the county, but the only one of wide reputation is Harrogate.

Com- munica- tion.

Manu- factures and trade,

Water-

Adminis- Administration and Population.—Yorkshire has from an early tration period been divided into three ridings, each of which has a lord and lieutenant. The East Riding has a separate court of quarter sessions popu- and a commission of the peace. The city of York within the lation, municipal limits constitutes a separate division of the county.

The municipal city and the ainsty are for parliamentary purposes included in the North Riding, for registration purposes in the East Riding, and for all other purposes in the West Riding. The parlia- mentary city of York, which formerly extended beyond the muni- cipal limits, is partly in the North and partly in the East Riding. The following table gives the population of the county and of the three ridings in 1801, 1821, 1871, and 1881 :—

ise1_—|

1801 1871 1881

East Riding……. 139,433 190,449 | 268,466 315,460 North Riding (with the municipal city of ATS) \CROe, coe sen ee 155,506 183,381 346,518 395,790 West Riding……. 363,953 799,357 | 1,821,371 | 2,175,314 MOINS NE pooceo on ones 658,892 1,173,187 2,436,355 2,886,564

re ee eae ae | The population has more than quadrupled since 1801, the increase having been much the greatest in the West Riding. Though in area much the largest, Yorkshire is in population third among English counties, being exceeded in this respect both by Lancashire and Middlesex. The number of males in 1881 was 1,420,001 and of females 1,466,563. The number of persons to an acre in the county was 0°74—East Riding 0°42, North Riding (not including the city of York) 0°25, and West Riding 1-23. The East Riding comprises 6 wapentakes and the municipal boroughs of Beverley (pop. 11,425), Kingston-upon-Hull (154,240), and Hedon (966). It

Yow.

[COUNTY.

is divided into 12 petty and special sessional divisions. The borough of Kingston-upon-Hull has a separate court of quarter sessions and a commission of the peace, and the borough of Beverley has a com- mission of the peace. The riding contains 352 civil parishes with part of one other, viz., Filey, which extends into the North Riding. It is entirely in the diocese of York. The North Riding comprises 11 wapentakes, the liberties of East and West Langbaurgh and of Whitby Strand, and the municipal boroughs of Middlesbrough (55,934), Richmond (4502), and Scarborough (30,504). It is divided into 19 petty and special sessional divisions. The boroughs of Richmond and Scarborough have separate courts of quarter sessions and commissions of the peace, and the borough of Middlesbrough has a commission of the peace. The riding contains 554 civil parishes and parts of five others. It is almost entirely in the diocese of York and Ripon. The West Riding comprises 9 wapen- takes, the city of Ripon (7890), and the municipal boroughs of Barnsley (29,790), Batley (27,505), Bradford (183,032), Dewsbury (29,637), Doncaster (21,139), Halifax (73,630), Harrogate (9482), Huddersfield (81,841), Leeds (309,119), Pontefract (8798), Rother- ham (34,782), Sheffield (284,508),

Wakefield (30,854), and Keighley (12,085). The riding is divided into 25 petty and special sessional divisions. The city of York, the boroughs of Bradford, Doneaster, Leeds, Pontefract, and Sheffield, and the liberty of Ripon (including the city) have separate courts of quarter sessions and commissions of the peace, and the boroughs of Batley, Dewsbury, Halifax, Huddersfield, and Wakefield have commissions of the peace. The liberty and the borough of Ripon are not included in the West Riding for the purposes of the county rate, but are rated separately. The riding contains 724 civil parishes and parts of six others. It is mostly in the dioceses of York, Ripon, and Manchester. For parliamentary purposes the East Riding is formed into three divi- sions, —Buckrose, Holderness, and Howdenshire, each returning one member. It also includes the parliamentary borough of Kingston-upon-Hull, returning three members, with part of the borough of York city, which returns two members. The North Riding for parliamentary purposes is formed into four divisions, —Cleveland, Richmond, Thirsk, and Whitby, each returning one member. It also includes the boroughs of Middlesbrough and Scarborough, each returning one member, with portions of the boroughs of Stockton and York city. The West Riding for parliamentary purposes is formed into three divisions, which are again subdivided into districts each returning one member,—the north division into five districts, the south into eight, and the east into six. The riding also includes the following parliamentary boroughs :—Bradford returning three members, Dewsbury one, Halifax two, Huddersfield one, Leeds five, Pontefract one, Sheffield five, and Wakefield one.

History and Antiquities.—Traces of the old British inhabitants History. are numerous in the Wolds of the East Riding and the moors of the North Riding. Remains of the circular pit-dwellings of ancient Brigantian villages still exist at Egton Grange, Hole Pits, Killing Pits, Danby, and Roseberry Topping. A large number of implements, of both flint and bronze, have been discovered in the barrows on the Wolds and moors, and in the caves of the limestone district. Circles and other stone monuments are not uncommon, the most remarkable being the monolith, 29 feet in height, at Rudston, and the group of monoliths called the Devil's Arrows at Boroughbridge, 163, 214, and 22% feet in height respectively. On the hiil-sides there are numerous ancient earthworks and dykes, such as the

fortification on Flamborough Head, incorrectly called the Danes' dyke. Yorkshire was included in the territory of the Brigantes at the time of its invasion by the Romans in 51; it did not, however, niake formal submission till 79. It afterwards formed part of the district of Maxima Cesariensis, of which the capital was Eboracum (York). The central districts of Yorkshire seem to have been densely peopled by the Romans. Watling Street entered the county near Bawtry, crossed the Don at Danum (Doncaster), the Aire at Legeoliwm (Castleford), and the Wharfe at Calcaria (Tadcaster). Thence it proceeded by Eboracum (York), Iswrium (Aldborough), and Cataractonium (Catterick Bridge) to Ad Tisam (Pierce Bridge), where it crossed the Tees. Another road passed eastwards from York to Malton, and various branches traversed the county in different directions. A great variety of Roman remains have been discovered and traces of Roman camps are numerous, such as Cataractonium, the outlines of the station at Old Malton, the ancient wall with the multangular tower at York, and the remains of Isurium. After the departure of the Romans Yorkshire was overrun by the Picts. Subsequently it formed the Anglo-Saxon kingdom of Deira to the south of Bernicia (see vol. viii. p. 270). The two were included in N orthumbria, which seems to have been under the rule sometimes of a single prince and sometimes of two separate princes in Bernicia and Deira, the northern boundary of the latter kingdom being probably the Tees and the southern always the Humber (sec NORTHUMBERLAND, vol. xvii. p. 568 sg., where the early history of the district, includ- Ing a notice of the Danish invasions, is given). After the Con- quest Yorkshire was divided among several Norman earls—includ-

Ancient castles.

Ecclesi- astical struc: tures.

COUNTY. |

ing Alan of Brittany, who held Richmond Castle, Ibert de Lacy, and William de Percy. The district was at this period frequently invaded by the Scots. In 1138 David of Scotland laid waste the country to the gates of York ; but he was completely defeated by the English on 22d August of that year in the battle of the Standard at Northallerton. In 1312 Thomas

Plantagenet, earl of Lancaster, raised an insurrection in Yorkshire against Gaveston, the favourite of Edward II., whom he captured in Scarborough and beheaded at Warwick on 19th June. 'The earl again in 1322 headed a party against the Despensers, but on 16th March was defeated and captured at Boroughbridge, and on 22d was beheaded at Pontefract. During the Wars of the Roses the county was the scene of frequent conflicts, including the battle of Wakefield (31st December 1460), in which Richard, duke of York, was defeated by Queen Margaret and slain, and the battle of Towton (29th March 1461), in which Edward IV. defeated Henry VI. In 1536 the county was the sceue of the insurrection under Robert Aske, known as the 'Pilgrimage of Grace," causcd by the dissolution of the monasteries. In 1569 a rising took place in Yorkshire under the earls of Westmorland and Northumberland in behalf of Mary Queen of Scots. During the Civil War the county was chiefly Royalist, although some of the most famous Parliamentary officers were Yorkshiremen, the more noted being Fairfax and Lambert. Bradford, Hull, Scarborough, Pontefract, and York sustained long sieges ; and on 2d July 1644 the great and decisive battle of the war occurred at Marston Moor. The annals of the county are destitute of further incidents of special historic importance.

Of ancient strongholds or castles Yorkshire has still many inter- esting examples in a more or less complete condition, including Barden Tower, built in the reign of Henry VII. by Henry Clifford, 'the shepherd lord," which has been in ruins since 1774; Bolton Castle, pronounced by Leland "the fairest in Richmondshire," a square building with towers at the corners, erected in the reign of Richard II. by Richard Scrope, chancellor of England, occupied by Queen Mary while under the charge of Lord Scrope, besieged during the Civil War, and rendered untenable in 1647 ; the square tower or keep of Bowes Castle, supposed to have been built by Alan Niger,

first earl of Richmond; the gateway tower (erected in the reign of

Henry VI.) of Cawood Castle, said to have been originally built by King Athelstan in 920; the keep and various portions of the walls of the extensive fortress of Conisbrough, of uncertain origin, but probably

dating from Saxon times; the remains of Danby Castle, said to have been built shortly after the Conquest by Robert de Bruce ; Harewood, of great extent, originally founded soon after the Conquest, but now containing no portions earlier than the reign of Edward III. ; the keep, in the Early English style, and other remains of Helmsley, built in the 12th century by Robert de Roos surnamed Fursan ; detached portions, including the principal tower, of Knares- borough, probably dating originally from Norman times ; the pictur- esque remains of the quadrangular fortress of Middleham, built soon aftcr the Conquest by Robert FitzRanulph, afterwards possessed by the Nevilles, and rendered untenable by order of Parliament in 1647; the ruins of the ancient stronghold of Mulgrave, said to have been originally founded two centuries before the Conquest by a Saxon giant named Wade or Wada, dismantled after the Civil War ; the extensive remains—including Rosamond's Tower, associated with the misfortunes of Fair Rosamond, the mistress of Henry II. —of Pickering Castle, of unknown date, dismantled after the Civil War ; the ruins of Pontefract, formerly one of the most important fortresses of the kingdom, built by Ilbert de Lacy about 1080; a few remains of Ravensworth Castle, dating from before the Conquest ; the keep and other remains of the great Norman fortress of Rich- mond, founded about 1070 by Alan Rufus of Brittany; the tower of Ripley, built in 1555 by Sir William Ingilby, included in the modern mansion ; slight remains of the fortress of Sandal, erected in 1320 by John, eighth earl of Warren; the great tower, in the Roman style, and other remains of the extensive fortress of Scar- borough, founded by William le Gros in 1136 ; the detached ruins of Sheriff Hutton, founded by Bertram de Bulmer in the reign of Stephen ; slight remains of the ancient Skelton Castle; Skipton Castle, of various dates, but originally Norman; Slingsby Castle, originally built probably soon after the Conquest ; the ruins of Spofforth, originally erected by Henry de Percy in 1309 ; the founda- tions of the keep aud some fraginents of the walls of Tickhill, built or enlarged by Roger de Busli in the 11th century ; the remains of Whorlton, dating from the time of Richard II. ; and one side of the great quadrangular castle of Wressell, built by Thomas Percy, ear] of Worcester, in the reign of Richard II.

At the time of the dissolution of the monasteries Yorkshire possessed 28 abbeys, 26 priories, 23 nunneries, 30 friaries, 13 cells, 4 commanderies of

Knights Hospitallers, and 4 preceptories of the Knights Templars. The principal monastic rnins still existing are St Mary's, York (see York); Bolton Priory, generally called Bolton Abbey, one of the most romantically situated ruins in the kingdom, originally founded at Embsay, two miles distant, by William de Meschines for Augustinian cauons, removed to its present situation by his daughter Alice over against the spot where her only son

perished in the Wharfe; the church and other ruins in the Early

English style of Byland Abbey, founded for Cistercian monks in the 12th century ; the picturesque ruins of Easby near Richmond, containing interesting examples of Norman and Early English, founded in 1152 for Premonstratensians by Ronaldus, constable of Richmond Castle; Egglestone on the Tees, founded in the 12th century for Premonstratensians ; Fountains Abbey, one of the finest and most complete among the monastic ruins of the kingdom, ex- hibiting fine speci:mens of various styles of architecture from Norman to Perpendicular, founded in 1182 for certain monks of the Benedic- tine abbey of St Mary's, York, who had adopted the Cistercian rule ; the eastern end of the church of Guisbrough Priory in the Pointed style, founded in 1119 by Robert de Bruce, the burial-place of many illustrious nobles; the picturesque ruins of Jervaulx, exhibiting examples of Norman and Early English, founded in 1156 for Cis- tercian monks by Conan, fifth earl of Richmond ; the gateway and other remains of Kirkham, founded in 1121 by Walter l'Espec; the beautiful ruins of Kirkstall, exhibiting remarkably fine examples of Norman, founded in 1152 by Henry de Lacy for Cistercian monks from Fountains Abbey; the church, refectory, and other remains, in the Early English style with some traces of Norman, of Rievaulx Abbey, founded in 1131 by Walter l'Espec. There are other monastic remains of less importance at Bridlington, Coverham, Marrick, Meaux, Monk Bretton, Mount Grace, Old Malton, Roche, Rosedale, Sawley, Selby, Watton, and Whitby. In respect of church architecture Yorkshire excels any other county in the kingdom for variety

of style, and the size and importance of many of the buildings. Space forbids entrance into minute details ; but it may be mentioned here that, in addition to the cathedral churches of York, Ripon, and Beverley, there are several other churches on a very large scale, including St Mary's, Beverley, chiefly Perpendicular, very elaborate in style, originally built by Archbishop Thurstan in the 12th century ; the parish church of Bradford, a very fine ex- ample of Decorated ; the priory church of Bridlington, containing fine examples of Norman, Early English, and Perpendicular ; Halifax parish church, chiefly of the 15th century ; St Augustine's church, Hedon, Early English, Decorated, and Perpendicular, with some transition Norman ; Howden, one of the finest in Yorkshire, chiefly 18th century with latcr additions ; Holy Trinity, Hull, one of the largest parish churches in England, of the 13th century, chiefly Early English and Perpendicular; St Mary's, Masham, dating from Saxon times and having a fine Norman tower ; St Patrick's, Patrington, in the Decorated style, with a remarkably graccful spire, 189 feet in height ; All Saints, Rothcrham, a beautiful cruciform building, described by Rickman as "one of the finest Perpendicular churches of the north"; the abbey church, Selby, containing fine specimens of Norman, Early English, and Decorated ; the parish church, Sheffield, chiefly Perpendicular ; St Mary's, Thirsk, said to have been built out of the ruins of the old castle, chiefly Perpendi- cular; and Wakefield parish church, chiefly of the latter part of the 15th century, with a spire 250 feet in height, rebuilt in 1860-61. The bibliography of Yorkshire is very extensive. For histories of the several towns and districts reference may be made to Anderson's English Topography. The chief works relating to Yorkshire as a whole are Leland's Itinerary; Allen's History of Yorkshire, 3 vols., 1828-31; Baines's Yorkshire Past and Present, 4 vols., 1871-77; and Smith's Old Yorkshire, 5 vols., 1881-84. _Among numerous works on the geology, reference may be made to Phillips's Geology of the York- shire Coast, 3d ed., 1875; Davis and Lees, West Yorkshire, 1878; Bird's Sketch of the Geology of Yorkshire, 1881; and Simpson's Fossils of Yorkshire, 1884. In the publications of the Surtees Society there are many volumes of genealogical or antiquarian interest relating to the county, and in Journ. Yorks. Arch. Soc.

Many valuable topographical and historical papers. See also Lefroy's Ruined Abbeys of Yorks., 1883, and Bulmer's Arch. Studies in Yorks., 1887. (T. F. H.)

YORK, a cathedral city and archbishop's see, the county town of Yorkshire, a county in itself, and a municipal and parliamentary borough, is situated on the river Ouse at its junction with the Foss, and on the main joint line of the North Eastern and Great Northern Railways, 188 miles north of London. The surrounding country is flat, but the plain of York is one of the richest and most fertile districts in England. While the special feature of York is the cathedral, the city generally has an antique appear- ance, with narrow picturesque streets, the remains of ancient walls, and many churches and other buildings of consider- able architectural interest. The Ouse is crossed by three bridges for general traffic.—the Ouse bridge, of three elliptical arches, erected 1810-20 where a bridge had stood from time immemorial; Lendal bridge, opened in 1863, a handsome structure of iron, consisting of a single arch 175 feet in span ; and Skeldergate bridge, 1880, constructed of iron resting on stone piers. The Foss is crossed by five bridges. Of the old Roman city there are some remains of the fortifications, including ten sides of a thirteen-sided building called the multangular tower, occupying one of

the four angles of the ancient wall, with the lower part of the wall leading from this tower to Bootham Bar, the upper part of the wall being of later origin. The walls of the English city, enclosing a much wider area, though they have undergone reconstruction at various periods and were much battered during the siege of the city in 1644, are in remarkably good preservation, especially the portion to the west of the Ouse. They contain Norman and Early Eng- lish architecture, but the bulk of the walls are in the Decorated style. There are four principal gates or "bars" —Micklegate Bar, at the southern entrance to the city, where the heads of traitors were formerly exposed, consist-

ing of a square tower built over a circular arch, probably Norman, with embattled turrets at the angles; Bootham Bar, the main entrance from the north, having also a Norman arch; Monk Bar, on the Scarborough road, the most imposing of the four, probably belonging to the 14th century, formerly called Goodramgate, which after the Restoration was changed to Monk Bar in honour of General Monk ; and Walmgate Bar, belonging to the time of Edward J. and retaining the barbican rebuilt in 1648. Of the Norman fortress built by William the Conqueror in 1068 some portions were probably incorporated in Clifford's Tower, which was partly destroyed—by fire in

Plan of York.

1684. It formed the keep or donjon of the later fortress, which was dismantled at the Civil War and converted into a prison. The debtors' prison, erected in 1708, and the North and East Riding assize courts, erected in 1777, are also included within the castle wall, which was constructed in 1836.

The cathedral of St Peter, if surpassed by some other English cathedrals in certain special features, is as a whole the most striking and imposing specimen of ecclesiastical architecture in England. It is in the form of a Latin cross, consisting of nave with aisles, transepts, choir with aisles, a central tower, and two western towers. The extreme external length is 524 feet 6 inches, the breadth across the transepts 250 feet, the height of the central tower 213 feet, and the height of the western towers 202 feet. The material is magnesian limestone. The cathedral occupies the site of the wooden church in which King Edwin was baptized by Paulinus on Easter Day 627.

After his baptism Edwin, according to Bede, began to con- struct "a large and more noble basilica of stone," but it was partly destroyed during the troubles which followed his death, and was repaired by Archbishop Wilfrid. The building suffered from fire in 741, and, after it had been repaired by Archbishop Albert, was described by Alcuin as "a most magnificent basilica." At the time of the Norman invasion the Saxon cathedral, along with the library of Archbishop Egbert, perished in the fire by which the greater part of the city was destroyed, the only relic of it

now remaining being the central wall of the crypt. It was reconstructed by Archbishop Thomas of Bayeux (1070-1100) ; but of this building few portions now re- main. The apsidal choir and crypt were reconstructed by Archbishop Roger (1154-91), the south transept by Archbishop Walter de Gray (1215-55), and the north tran- sept and central tower by John Romanus, treasurer of the cathedral (1228-56). With the exception of the crypt,

Ciry. |

the transepts are the oldest portions of the building now remaining. They represent the Early English style at its best, and the view across the great transept is unsurpassed for architectural effect. The south transept is the richest and most elaborate in its details, one of its principal fea- tures being the magnificent rose window ; and the north transept contains a series of beautiful lancet windows called the Five Sisters. The foundation of the new nave was laid by Archbishop Romanus (1285-96), son of the treasurer, the building of it being completed by Arch- bishop Melton about 1345. The chapter-house was built during the same period. The west front, consisting of a centre and two divisions corresponding with the nave and aisles, is one of the finest features of the whole building, and has been described as "more architecturally perfect as a composition and in its details than that of any other English cathedral," the great window above the door being, in the words of Mr Britton, 'an unrivalled specimen of the leafy tracery that marks the style of the middle of the 14th century." In 1361 Archbishop Thoresby (1352-73) began the lady chapel and presbytery, both in the Early Perpendicular style. The rebuilding of the choir, begun about the same period, was not completed till about 1400. It is a very fine specimen of Late Perpendicular, the great east window being one of the finest in the world. With the rebuilding of the choir the whole of the ancient Nor- man edifice was removed, the only Norman architecture now remaining being the eastern portion of the crypt of the second period, built by Archbishop Roger (1154-91). To correspond with later alterations, the central tower was re-cased and changed into a Perpendicular lantern tower, the work being completed in 1444. The south-west tower was begun in 1432 during the treasurership of John de Bermingham, and the north-west tower in 1470. With the erection of this

tower the church was completed as it now stands, and on 3d February 1472 it was re-consecrated by Archbishop Neville. On 2d February 1829 the wood- work of the choir was set on fire by Jonathan Martin, a madman. On 2d May 1840 a fire broke out in the south- west tower, reducing it to a mere shell. The cathedral within recent years has undergone extensive restoration. Next to the cathedral the most interesting building in York is St Mary's Abbey, situated in Museum Gardens, founded for Bene- dictines by Alan, earl of Richmond, and latterly one of the most powerful ecclesiastical establishments in England, its head having the rank of a mitred abbot with a seat in parliament. The principal reniains of the abbey are the north wall and the ruins of the church, in the Early English and Decorated style, and the principal gateway with a Norman arch. The hospitium, a curious building of wood, is now used as a museum of antiquities, and contains a fine collection of Roman remains discovered in the vicinity. A con- siderable portion of the abbey was employed for the erection of the king's manor, a palace for the lord president of the north, now oc- cupicd asa school for the blind. In the gardens is also situated the ambulatory of St Leonard's hospital, founded by King Athel- stan and rebuilt by Stephen. _ Besides the cathedral, York possesses a large number of churches of special architectural interest, includ- ing All Saints, North Street, Decorated and Perpendicular, with a spire 120 feet in height ; Christ Church, with south door in the Decorated style, supposed to occupy the site of the old Roman palace ; Holy Trinity in Goodramgate, Decorated and Perpendicular with Perpendicular tower; Holy Trinity, Micklegate, in a dilapi- dated condition, with Roman masonry in its foundation walls ; St Denis, Walmgate, with rich Norman doorway and Norman tower; St Helen's, St Helen's Square, chiefly Decorated ; St John's, North Street, chiefly Perpendicular ; St Lawrence, without the bar of Walmgate, with rich Norman doorway ; St Margaret's, Walmgate, celebrated for its curiously seulptured Norman porch and doorway ; St Mary the Elder, Bishophill, Early English and Decorated, with brick tower, rebuilt in 1659; St Mary the Younger, Bishophill, with a square tower in the Saxon style, rebuilt probably in the 13th century ; St Mary, Castlegate, with Perpendicular tower and spire 154 feet in height ; St Michael-le-Belfry, founded in 1066, but re- built in 1538 in the Late Perpendicular style ; and St Olave, Mary- gate, Perpendicular, said to have been founded by Siward, earl of Northumberland. Among the

principal secular buildings are the guild hall, with a fine old room in the Perpendicular style, erected

in 1446, and containing a numbcr of stained-glass windows ; the mansion-house, built in 1725 from designs by the earl of Burling- ton ; the assembly rooms, erected in 1730, also from designs by the earl of Burlington, with the concert-room adjoining, built in 1828; the corn exehange ; the infantry barracks ; the cattle market ; the theatre, founded by Tate Wilkinson in 1765, and lately re-faced in the Gothic style by the corporation, who own the property; the De Grey rooms for balls and concerts; the fine old merchant's hall; the merchant tailors' hall; and the masonic hall. The public in- stitutions of a learned or educational character include the York- shire Philosophical Society, whose museum in the Grecian style was opened in February 1830; the subscription library, instituted 1784, and containing upwards of 20,000 volumes; the York institute of science and literature, established in 1827, and removed to the present premises in 1846; the Wilberforce school for the blind; the York fine art and industrial institution ; and the Government school of art. The charities include the York county hospital, the union workhouse, the dispensary, Colton's hospital for 8 poor men, Harrison's hospital, Dorothy Wilson's hospital (founded in 1777) for 16 poor women, Sir Arthur Ingram's hospital (founded in 1640) for 10 poor widows, and the old maids' hospital for 10 poor spinsters. The principal schools are St Peter's cathedral gramniar-school (originally endowed in 1557), Archbishop Holgate's grammiar-school, the York and diocesan grammar-school, and the blue-coat school for boys (founded in 1705), with the associated grey-coat school for irls.

_ In modern times York has ceased to retain its commercial im- portance ; but it possesses several iron foundries, railway engineer- ing works, a large glass factory, breweries, flour-mills, tanneries, glove manufactories, and confectionery and other minor establish- ments. Within its municipal limits the city of York constitutes a separate division of the county of York; the municipal city and the ainsty are for parliamentary purposes included

in the North Riding, for registration purposes in the East Riding, and for all other purposes in the West Riding. The parliamentary city of York, which formerly extended beyond the municipal limits, is partly in the North and partly in the East Riding. The eorpo- ration consists of a lord mayor, 12 aldermen, and 36 councillors. The city returns two members to parliament. In 1884 the bound- aries of the city were extended to include the townships of Holgate and St Olave, and part of the townships of Clifton, Dringhouses, Fulford, Heworth, and Middlethorpe. The population of the niunicipal borough (area 1979 acres) was 48,796 in 1871 and 49,5380 in 1881, and that of the parliamentary borough (area 2789 acres) 50,765 in 1871 and 60,343 in 1881. 'The new area is about 3553 acres, with a population estimated at over 70,000 in 1888.

York, the British name of which was Caer-Ebroc, was chosen by the Romans as an important depdt after the conquest of the Bri- gantes by Agricola in 79 and named Lboracum. Ultimately it beeame the niilitary eapital and centre of the Roman power in Britain. The original Roman city was rectangular iu form, about 650 yards by 550, and built somewhat after the plan of ancient Rome on the east bank of the Ouse. In York the emperors sat in the pretorium, and a temple was erected there to Bellona. The first emperor to take up his residence in York was Hadrian, when he visited Britain in 120. Severus died at York in February 211, and his body is supposed to have been burnt at Severus's Hill, a short distance south of the city. Constantius Chlorus also died at York in July 306, and his son Constantine the Great was there inaugurated Roman emperor. Early in the 7th century the city, under the name of Eoforwic, became the capital of the Bretwaldas. Edwin after his conversion in 627 made it au archbishop's see. The province of York, of which Paulinus was the first bishop, formerly included a great part of Seotland, but is now confined to the six northern dioceses of England. From the time of Arch- bishop Egbert (732-766) York became celebrated as a school of learning and under Alcuin was one of the most famous places of education in Europe. The city was one of the priucipal Danish settlements and seats of commerce, its population in 990 being estimated at 30,000. It was the capital of the Danish jarl; and Siward is stated to have died at York in 1055 and to have been buried in St Olave's church. After the death of Edward the Con- fessor York was eaptured by Harold Hardrada, who,

however, was shortly afterwards defeated and slain at Stamford Bridge. It was captured by William I. in 1068 and to guard it he erected a tower ; but it was re-taken and the whole Norman garrison put to death. In revenge for their slaughter William, on re-capturing the city after a siege of six months, devastated the country between York and Durham. In 1175 Henry II. held the first English parliament at York, when Malcolm of Scotland did homage for his kingdom. The city was frequently visited by subsequent monarchs, and was the scene of important conventions and parlia- ments. After the suppression of the rebellion known as the Pil-grimage of Grace in 1569, the Council of the North was established at York. The eity was besieged during the Civil War by the Parliamentary troops, to whom it surrendered on 16th July 1644. York received its first charter of incorporation from Henry I.

See Drake's Eboracum, 1736; Sheahan and Whellan's History of York, 1835-56 ; Hargrove's History of York, 1818; Dixon's Fasti Eboracenses, 1863; Ornsby's Dio- cesan History of York, 1882; Raine's Historians of the Church of York, 1879-86 ; Davies's Walks through York, 1880; Twyford's York and York Castle, 1883; and Benson and Jefferson's Picturesque York, 1886. (T. F. H.)

YORK, a borough and the county seat of York county, Pennsylvania, United States, is situated upon Codorus Creek, a branch of the Susquehanna river, and upon three railway lines,—the Pennsylvania, the Northern Central, and the Peachbottom. The surrounding country is undu- lating and is devoted to agriculture. The city is regularly laid out, with streets running diagonally to the cardinal points. It contains some manufactories of agricultural implements, paper-mills, car-shops, &c. The population in 1880 was 13,940; in 1870 it was 11,003.

The settlement of York dates from 1741. For nearly a year (1777-78) it was the place of meeting of the Continental Congress. In 1787 York was incorporated as a borough.

YORK, Hovsz or. Richard, duke of York, who claimed the crown of England in opposition to Henry VI., though he never succeeded to the

throne himself, was, nevertheless, the founder of a royal line. It may be said, indeed, that his claim, at the time it was advanced, was rightly barred by prescription, the House of Lancaster having then occu- pied the throne for three generations, and that it was really owing to the misgovernment of Margaret of Anjou and her favourites that it was advanced at all. Yet it was founded upon strict principles of lineal descent, and was certainly a strong one, if it could only be maintained that hereditary right did not suffer from interruption. For the duke was descended from Lionel, duke of Clarence, the third son of Edward III., while the House of Lancaster came of John of Gaunt, a younger brother of Lionel. The House of Lancaster, therefore, had been clearly in wrongful posses- sion of the throne, and Richard, duke of York, claimed it as the true heir. One thing which might possibly have been considered an element of weakness in his claim was that it was derived through females, —an objection actually brought against it by Chief-Justice Fortescue. For Lionel, duke of Clarence, left only a daughter, Philippa, who married Edmund Mortimer, third earl of March ; and the male line of the Mortimers also failed on the death of Edmund, the fifth earl, whose sister, and ultimately his sole heir, Anne, married Richard, earl of Cambridge, and became by him the duke of York's mother. But a suc- cession through females could not reasonably have been objected to after Edward III.'s claim to the crown of France ; and, apart from strict legality, the duke's claim was probably supported in the popular estimation by the fact that he was descended from Edward III. through his father no less than through his mother. For his father, Richard, earl of Cambridge, was the grandson of Edmund, duke of York, fifth son of Edward III.; and he himself was the direct lineal heir of this Edmund, just as much as he was of Lionel, duke of Clarence. His claim was also favoured by the accumulation of hereditary titles and estates. The earldom of Ulster, the old inheritance of the De Burghs, had descended to him from Lionel, duke of Clarence ; the earldom of March came from the Mortimers, and the dukedom of York and the earldom of Cambridge from his paternal ancestry. And in addition to all this his own marriage with Cecily Neville, though she was but the youngest daughter of Ralph, first earl of Westmoreland, allied him to a powerful family in the north of England, to whose support both he and his son were greatly indebted.

The reasons why the claims of the line of Clarence had been so long forborne are not difficult to explain. Roger Mortimer, fourth earl of March, was actually designated by Richard II. as his successor ; but he died the year before Richard was dethroned, and his son Edmund, the fifth earl, was but a child at Henry IV.'s usurpation. Henry took care to secure his person; but the claims of the family

troubled the whole of his own and the beginning of his son's reign. It was an uncle of this Edmund who took part with Owen Glendower and the Percies; and for ad- vocating the cause of Edmund Archbishop Scrope was put to death. And it was to put the crown on Edmund's head that his brother-in-law Richard, earl of Cambridge, conspired against Henry V. soon after his accession. But this was the last attempt made in favour of the family for along time. The plot was detected, being revealed, it is said, by the earl of March himself, who does not appear to have given it any encouragement ; the earl of Cambridge was beheaded. The popularity gained by Henry V. in his French campaigns secured the weak title of the House of Lancaster against further attack for forty years.

Richard, duke of York, seems to have taken warning by his father's fate; but, after seeking for many years to correct by other means the deplorable weakness of Henry VI.'s government, he first took up arms against the ill advisers who were his own personal enemies, and at length claimed the crown in parliament as his right. The Lords, or such of them as did not purposely stay away from the House, admitted that his claim was unimpeachable, but suggested as a compromise that Henry should retain the crown for life, and the duke and his heirs succeed after Henry's death. This was accepted by the duke and an Act to that effect received Henry's own assent. But the Act was repudiated by Margaret of Anjou and her followers, and the duke was slain at Wakefield fighting against them. In little more than two months, however, his son was proclaimed king at London by the title of Edward IV., and the bloody victory of Towton immediately after drove his enemies into exile and paved the way for his coronation.

We need not follow the vicissitudes of Edward's reign, of which a brief account will be found under Epwarp IV. (vol. vii. p. 684). After his recovery of the throne in 1471 he had little more to fear from the rivalry of the House of Lancaster. But the seeds of distrust had already been sown among the members of his own family, and in 1478 his brother Clarence was put to death—secretly indeed, within the Tower, but still by his authority and that of parliament—as a traitor. In 1483 Edward himself died ; and his eldest son, Edward V., after a nominal reign of two months and a half, was put aside by his uncle, the duke of Gloucester, who became Richard IIL, and then caused him and his brother Richard, duke of York, to be murdered, But in little more than two years the usurper was defeated and slain at Bosworth by the earl of Rich- mond, who, being then proclaimed king as Henry VIL, shortly afterwards fulfilled his pledge to marry the eldest daughter of Edward IV. and so unite the Houses of York and Lancaster.

Here the dynastic history of the House of York ends, for its claims were henceforth merged in those of the House of Tudor. But the family history has still much to do with the story of those reigns. For, although the union of the Roses onght to have extinguished controversy, a host of debatable questions and plausible pretexts for rebellion still remained. The legitimacy of Edward IV.'s children had been denied by Richard IIL. and his parlia- ment, and, though the Act was denounced as scandalous, the slander might still be re-asserted. The duke of Clarence had left two children,a son and a daughter, and the attainder of their father could not be a greater bar to the crown than the attainder of Henry VII. himself. Seeing this, Henry had, immediately after his victory at Bosworth, secured the person of the son, who was named Edward, earl of Warwick, and kept him a prisoner in the Tower of London. Yet a formidable rebellion was raised in his behalf by means of Lambert Simnel, who, personating the prisoner in the Tower, professed to have escaped, went to Ireland, and,

Y O

after being actually crowned as king in Christchurch cathedral, Dublin, came over with a host of Yorkist sympathizers into England, where he was defeated and taken prisoner at the battle of Stoke in 1487. The earl of

Warwick lived for twelve years later in unjust confine- ment, and was ultimately put to death in 1499 because he had consented to a plot for his own liberation. As to his sister Margaret, she was married to one of Henry VII.'s Welsh followers, Sir Richard Pole (or Poole), and could give no trouble, so that, when Henry VIII. came to the throne, he thought it politic to treat her with kindness. He made her countess of Salisbury, reversed her brother's attainder, created her eldest son, Henry, Lord Montague, and caused one of her younger sons, Reginald, who displayed much taste for learning, to be very carefully educated. 'This, however, was the very thing which involved the whole family in ruin. For Henry looked to the learning and abilities of Reginald Pole to vindicate before Europe the justice of his divorce from Catherine of Aragon ; and, when Pole not only was unable to comply but was con- scientiously compelled to declare the very opposite, the king's indignation knew no bounds. Pole himself was safe, having secured some time before a retreat in Italy. He was even, for his great merits, made a cardinal by the pope. But this only made matters worse for his family at home: his brother, Lord Montague, and even his mother, the aged countess of Salisbury, were beheaded as traitors because they had continued to correspond with him. Cardinal Pole, however, came back to his own country with great honour in the reign of Queen Mary, and was made archbishop of Canterbury on the deprivation of Cranmer.

Two nephews of this cardinal, named Arthur and Edmund Poole, are the last members of the family whom it is needful here to mention. Early in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, being ardent young men, they conspired to go over to the duke of Guise in France, hoping to return with an army into Wales and so promote the claims of Mary Queen of Scots to the crown of England, for which service the elder, Arthur, expected to be restored to the dukedom of Clarence. The result was that they were condemned to death, but were only imprisoned for the

HOUSE. |

RK 753

rest of their days in the Tower, where they both carved inscriptions on the walls of their dungeon, which are still visible in the Beauchamp tower.

There was yet another branch of the House of York which inight have given trouble to the Tudors, if they had not been very narrowly watched and ultimately extin- guished. Of the sisters of Edward IV. the eldest, Anne, who married the duke of Exeter, left only one daughter by her second husband, Sir Thomas St Leger ; but the second, Elizabeth, married John de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, and had several children of both sexes. Their eldest son was created earl of Lincoln during his father's life, and Richard ITl., after the death of his own son, had designated him as his successor. Disappointed of a kingdom by the success of Henry VIL., he joined in Simnel's rebellion and was killed at the battle of Stoke. His brother Edmund thus became heir to his father ; but in the reduced circumstances of the family he agreed to forbear the title of duke and take that of earl of Suffolk. He continued for some years in favour with the king, who made him a knight of the Garter ; but, having killed a man in a passion, he fled abroad and was for some time entertained at the court of the emperor Maximilian and afterwards of Philip, king of Castile, when resident in the Low Countries, before his departure for Spain. But Philip, having been driven on the English coast when going to take possession of his Spanish kingdom, was entertained at Windsor by Henry VII., to whom he promised to deliver up the fugitive on condition that his life should be spared. Edmund de la Pole accordingly was brought back to his native country, to be lodged in the Tower for the remainder of his days. And, though the pro- mise to spare his life was kept by the king who gave it, his son Henry VIII. caused him to be executed in 1513, when war broke out with France, apparently for treasonable cor- respondence with his brother Richard, then in the French service. After his death Richard de la Pole, remaining in exile, called himself earl of Suffolk, and was flattered occa- sionally by Francis I. with faint hopes of the crown of England. He was killed at the battle of Pavia in 1525. There were no more De la Poles who could advance even the most shadowy pretensions to disturb the Tudor dynasty.

GENEALOGICAL TABLE OF THE HovUsE oF YORK.

Edward III. | a z | | ald val Edward, the William Lionel, = Elizabeth, d. of John of Gaunt, Edmund, William Thomas Black Prince. of Hatfield duke of | William de Burgh, duke of Lancaster. duke of York. of Windsor of

Woodstock, | (died young). Clarence. earl of Ulster. : (died young). duke of Gloucester. Richard IT. Henry IV. Edward, (dethroned 1399). Edniund Mortimer, = Philippa. duke of York. third earl of March. Henry V. | Roger Mortimer, = Eleanor Holland, Henry VI.

fourth earl of March. | eldest daughter of Thomas, second

earl of Kent.

Edward,

prince of Wales. –

| Edmund Mortimer, fifth earl of March.

| Anne Mortimer= Richard, earl of Cambridge

(executed 1415).

Cecily Neville, daughter of = Richard, duke of York Ralph, earl of Westmoreland. | (killed in battle 1460).

| Richard III. (killed in battle 1485).

| Anne, married Henry Holland, duke of

George, duke of Clarence Exeter, and had no child by him. By

| Edward IV. (0b. 1483). I (attainted 1478).

j | her second husband, Sir Thomas St (0b. 1491). Edward V. Richard, _ Edward, Leger, she had a daughter married to Sir Qnurdered 1483). duke of York prince of Wales Geo. Manners, Lord Roos, and mother (murdered 1483). (died 1484). of the first earl of Rutland. |] —_ | | | | Edward, Margaret, =Sir Richard Pole. John de la Pole, Edmund Humphrey and Richard Four earl of Warwick _ countess of Salisbury earl of Lincoln, de la Pole Edward, dela Pole = daugliters. (executed 1499). (executed 1541). (0b. 1487). (ob. 1513). churchmen. (ob. 1525).

|

Ursula, married to Henry, lord Stafford, son of Edward, duke of Buck-ingham.

| Reginald Pole, cardinal.

Sir Geoffrey Pole, Arthur Pole. of Lordington,

Sussex,

| Henry Pole, Lord Montague (executed 1539).

Five sons and one daughter. Among the former were Arthur and Edmund, who were prisoners in the Tower.

| Elizabeth=John de la Pole,

duke of Suffolk

(J. GA.)

XXIV. — 95

754 YORUBA

YORUBA, or Yarrsa, a country of West Africa, occupy- ing the eastern half of the Slave Coast region in 6°-9° N. lat. and 3°-7° E. long. Taken in its widest sense, so as to include the whole domain of the Yoruba race and speech, the Yoruba country stretches from the Bight of Benin northwards in the direction of the unexplored region of Borgu, and from the ill-defined eastern frontier of Dahomey to the Niger and its delta, which enclose it on the north- east, east, and south-east. Within these limits it covers an area of at least 40,000 square miles, with a population roughly estimated at over 2,000,000. But since 1820-21, when the old Yoruba empire was broken up by the Fulah invaders, the northern part, comprised between the Niger and the water-parting of the streams flowing north to that river and south to the Gulf of Guinea, has been included in the Fulah state of Gando. This water-parting, which constitutes the main

physical feature of the land, is formed by the eastern continuation of the mountain range which in the Mahi country, north of Dahomey, appears to rise to over 6000 feet (Skertchley), but which in Yoruba gradually falls to considerably under 2000 feet. But to- wards the east, about the upper course of the river Oshun, the system again rises to what is described as "a very mountainous country" (Higgins and Smith), The city of Ilorin, near the northern slope of the divide, stands at an elevation of a little over 1300 feet, which is probably about the average height of the range in Yoruba. Gerhard Rohlfs, who in 1867 traversed the whole region from Rabba on the Niger to Lagos on the Gulf of Guinea, de- scribes the section north of the water-parting as an open, gently sloping, and highly cultivated plain, to which the profusion of flowering plants gives the aspect of a vast garden. Here abundant crops of cereals, cotton, yams, ground-nuts, and kola nuts are raised. South of the divide the land, which is intersected by the nearly parallel courses of the rivers Ogun, Omi, Oshun, Oni, and Oluwa, falls in continuous undulations down to the coast, the open cultivated ground gradually giving place in the same direction to forest tracts, where the most characteristic tree is the oil-palm. Flowering trees and shrubs are here also plentiful, while the chief cultivated plants are corn, yams, plantains, bananas, tobacco, cotton, okro, ground- nuts, and ata-ale yielding a yellow dye (Higgins and Smith). As the sea is approached, the wooded tracts merge almost ' everywhere in a broad zone of dense primeval forest, com- pletely separating the arable lands of the interior from the coast lagoons.

These lagoons, lying between the outer surf-beaten beach and the inner shore line, form a navigable highway of still waters, which in many places is several miles in extent, During the dry season the rivers discharging into the lagoons are unable to force a passage seawards ; but after the rains they find an outlet, now at one point now at another, while here and there the natives themselves often excavate passages for their boats between the inner and outer waters. Of all the lagoons the most extensive are those of Leckie in the east and Ikoradu (Lagos) in the west. At its northern extremity the latter receives the discharge of the Ogun, the largest river in Yoruba, whose current is strong enough to keep the seaward channel open throughout the year. Hence the great importance

of the British port of Lagos, which lies in smooth water at the inner entrance of this channel.

From Lagos, which, besides Badagry (about 40 miles farther west), is the only station actually occupied by England on this coast, the British Government exercises a sort of benevolent suzerainty over the whole of the Yoruba country. In 1886 it despatched to the inland tribes two commissioners (Higgins and Smith) for the purpose of bringing to a close the intertribal wars by which the

country had for years been wasted, and also of inducing the chiefs to give up the practice of human sacrifices, which, as in Dahomey and

Ashantee, though to a less degree, has always prevailed throughout this region. The commissioners obtained and cmbodied in their reports (Blue Books, 1887) a considerable amount of information regarding the present political and social condition of the Yoruba peoples. Since the dismemberment of their empire by the Fulahs (1820-21) the country has been divided into a number of semi- independent states, chieftaincies, or kingdoms, hanging loosely together, or rather constantly at war, and with a feeble sense of common nationality. The direct representative of the old Yoruba power is the "alafin" or king of the Yoruba country proper, occupying the northern and central parts of the whole region. Round about this central state are grouped the kingdoms of Ilorin,

Ijesha, Ife, and Ondo in the east, Mahin and Jebu in the south,

and Egba in the west. The alafin resides at Oyo, on a headstream of the Oshun, a place which as metropolis of the Yoruba nation has succeeded the older capitals, Bohu and Katunga, lying farther north and destroyed during the wars with the Fulahs. Oyo has an estimated population of 70,000 or 80,000; but it is greatly ex- ceeded in size by several other places in Yoruba Land, where for mutual protection the inhabitants have mainly grouped themselves in large walled towns. Thus have sprung up the great cities of Abeokuta (200,000 ?), capital of Egba, on the Ogun, due north of

Lagos ; Ibadan (150,000), on a branch of the Omi, 30 miles south of Oyo ; Llorin (200,000 2), one of the great markets of West Africa, capital of the Lorin state ; Ogbomosho (60,000), between Oyo and Torin ; Ejigbo (40,000), Tlobu (60,000), and Ikirun (60,000), fol- lowing successively nearly due east from Oyo; Ilesha (40,000), Oshogbo (60,000), and Ede (50,000), following each other due west in the Ilesha state; Ipetumodu (40,000), in Ife ; Ode Ondo (60,000), capital of Ondo; Jebu Ode (60,000), Epe (40,0002%), and Lagos (75,000), in the Jebu state and British protectorate. The consti- tution of some of these great urban groups is most remarkable. Thus Abeokuta, dating from 1825, owes its origin to the incessant inroads of the slave-hunters from Dahomey and Ibadan, which compelled the village populations scattered over the open country to take refuge in this rocky! stronghold against the common enemy. Here they constituted themselves a free confederacy of some sixty distinct tribal groups, each preserving the traditional customs, re- ligious rites, systems of government, and even the very names, of their original villages. Yet this apparently incoherent aggregate has since held its ground successfully against the powerful armies often sent against the place both by the king of Dahomey from the west and by the people of Ibadan from the east. The different tribes are clearly distinguished by their sevcral tattoo markings, usually some simple pattern of two or more parallel lines, disposed hori- zontally or vertically on both cheeks or other parts of the face.

Notwithstanding their political feuds, the Yoruba people are distinguished above all the surrounding races for their generally peaceful disposition, love of industry, friendliness, and hospitality towards strangers. Physically they resemble closely their Ewe and Dahomey neighbours, but are of somewhat lighter complexion, taller, and of less pronounced Negro features. Their superior intelligence is shown in their greater susceptibility to Christian and Mohammedan influences, their capacity for trade, and their remarkable progress in the industrial arts. Although the bulk of the nation is still pagan, Islam has made great advancement since the cessation of the Fulah wars, while Protestant and Roman Catholic missions have been at work for many years at Abeokuta, Oyo, Ibadan, and other large towns. Samuel Crowther, the first Negro bishop, who was distinguished as au explorer, geographer, and linguist, was a

native of Yoruba, rescued by the English from slavery and educated at Sierra Leone.

Although agriculture is the chief industry, such useful arts as pottery, weaving, tanning, dyeing, and forging are practised in all the towns. The people make their own agricultural implements, extract a palatable wine from the Raphia vinifera, and weave a stout cotton fabric, which was formerly exported to Brazil, but which can now scarcely stand the competition of cheaper Manchester goods even in the home market. Butas builders the Yorubas know no rivals in Negroland. The houses of the chiefs, often containing as many as fifty rooms, are constructed with rare skill, and tastefully decorated with carvings representing symbolic devices, fabulous animals, and even scenes of war or the chase.

Before the introduction of letters the Yorubas are said to have employed knotted strings, like the Peruvian quipus, for recording events of historic interest. Their language, which has been reduced to writing and carefully studied by Crowther, Bouché, Bowen, and other missionaries, is spoken with considerable uniformity throughout the whole of the Yoruba domain, and has even pene- trated with the enterprising native traders as far east as Kano in the Haussa country beyond the Niger. The best-known dialectic varieties are those of Egba, Jebu, Ondo, Ife, Ilorin, and Oyo (Yoruba proper, called also Nago) ; but the discrepancies are slight, while the divergence from the conterminous linguistic groups (Ewe in the west, Ibo, Nupe, and others in the east) appears to be fundamental.

1 Abeokuta = "under the rocks."

>=

YO U—

The most marked featureis a strong tendency towards monosyllabism, which has been produccd by phonetic decay, and which, as in the Indo-Chinese family, has given rise to the principle of intonation, required to distinguish words originally different but reduced by corruption to the condition of homophones. Besides the tones, of which there are three,—high, low, and middle,—Yoruba has also developed a degree of vocalic

harmony, in which, as in Ural- Altaic, the vowels of the affixes are assimilated to that of the root. Inflexion, as in Bantu, is effected chiefly by prefixes; and there is a remarkable power of word-formation by the fusion of several rela- tional elements in a single compound term. The Bible and several religious treatises have been translated into Yoruba, which as a inedium of general intercourse in West Africa ranks in importance next to Haussa and Mandingan. (A. H. K.)

YOUGHAL, a seaport, borough, and market town in the county of Cork, Ireland, is situated on the west side of the estuary of the Blackwater, and on the Cork and Youghal branch of the Great Southern and Western Rail- way, 157 miles south-west of Dublin and 28 east of Cork. The fine collegiate church of St Mary, in the Later Deco- rated style, was originally erected in the 11th century, but rebuilt in the 13th, and since that time it has been frequently repaired. It contains a fine monument to the first earl of Cork. There are still a few fragments of the Dominican friary founded by Fitzgerald in 1269. Myrtle Grove, formerly the residence of Sir Water Raleigh, still remains. The harbour is safe and commodious, and there are several good quays. At the northern extremity of the harbour the river is crossed by a bridge resting on wooden piles. The principal exports are corn and other agricultural produce ; the imports are coal, culm, timber, and slate. Coarse earthenware and bricks are manufac- tured. There is a salmon fishery in the Blackwater. Youghal is of some repute as a watering-place. The population of the town (area 345 acres) in 1871 was 6081, and in 1881 it was 5826.

Youghal is one of the most ancient towns in Ireland, and was incorporated by King John in 1209. The Franciscan monastery, founded at Youghal by Fitzgerald in 1224, was the earliest house of that order in Ireland. Sir Roger Mortimer landed at Youghal in 1317. The town was plundered by the earl of Desmond in 1579. In 1641 it was garrisoned and defended by the earl of Cork. In 1649 it declared for the Parliament. It sent two members to Parliament from 13874 till the union, after that only one down to 1885, when it was for parliamentary purposes merged in the East Division of the county.

YOUNG, Arruur (1741-1820), a writer on agriculture and social economy, the third son of Rev. Arthur Young, rector of Bedingfield, in Suffolk, was born on 7th Septem- ber 1741. After having been for some time at a school at Lavenham, he was in 1758 placed in a mercantile house at Lynn, but showed no taste for commercial pursuits, He gave early evidence of literary inclinations by publishing, when only seventeen years old, a pamphlet On the War in North America and by beginning a periodical work, entitled The Universal Museum, which, however, was soon dropped by the advice of Dr Samuel Johnson.

After his father's death in 1759, his mother gave him the direction of Bradfield Hall ; and in 1767 he undertook on his own account the management of a farm in Essex. Possessing no practical acquaintance with agriculture, but being active-minded and of an inquiring turn, he engaged in experiments of various kinds, and embodied the results of them in A Course of Experimental Agriculture, which appeared in 1770. Though Young's experiments were, in general, unsuccessful, he acquired in the process of making them a solid knowledge of agriculture ; and, writing in a lively style, he was able to make his disquisitions on the subject interesting to the public. He had already com- menced a series of journeys through different parts of England and Wales, and gave an account of his observa- tions in books which appeared from 1768 to 1770 —A Stx Weeks' Tour through the Southern Counties of England and Wales, A Sia Months' Tour through the North of England,

MO U 755

and the Farmer's Tour through the East of England. He says that these books contained the only extant informa- tion relative to the rental, produce, and stock of England that was founded on actual examination. They were very favourably received at home and abroad, being translated into most Continental languages by 1792.

In 1768 he published the Yarmer's Letters to the People of England, in 1771 the Farmer's Calendar, which has gone through a great number of editions, and in 1774 his Political Arithmetic, which was soon translated into several foreign languages. About this time Young acted as par- liamentary reporter for the Morning Post. He made a tour in Ireland in

1776, and drew up the results, with copious observations on the state of that kingdom, in the years 1776-79, publishing a quarto volume on them in 1780. In 1784 he commenced the publication of the Annals of Agriculture, which was continued for 45 volumes i this work had contributions from many authors, among whom was George III., writing under the nom de plume of Ralph Robinson. Young's first visit to France was made in 1787. In May of that year he went to join Rochefou- cauld-Liancourt at Paris, and accompanied by him and another gentleman travelled south to Bagnéres de Luchon, making also an excursion into Spain. In November he was again in London; but in July 1788 he returned to France to study at leisure what he had before cursorily observed. He then saw the western part of the country, travelling alone on horseback, and came back a third time to see the east. The motive of these visits was "to make himself a master of their agriculture, that, if he found anything good and applicable to England, he might copy it." But he had an eye no less for political and social phenomena, and, traversing France in every direction just before and during the first movements of the Revolution, he has given us interesting and valuable notices of the condition of the people and the conduct of public affairs at that critical juncture. The Travels in France appeared in two vols. 4toin 1792. On his return home he was appointed sec- retary of the Board of Agriculture, then just formed under the presidency of Sir John Sinclair. In this capacity he gave the most valuable assistance in the collection and preparation of agricultural surveys of the English counties. In 1765 he had married a Miss Allen; but the union is said not to have been a very happy one, though he was of domestic habits and a most affectionate father. His sight failed, and he submitted to an operation for cataract, which proved unsuccessful. He suffered also in his last years from stone. He died in February 1820.

'To the works of Arthur Young," said Kirwan, "the world is more indebted for the diffusion of agricultural knowledge than to any writer who has yet appeared." To the samc effect is the more recent testimony of Mr Hoskyns, who tells us that " the Farmer's Letters and Calendar, as well as the Tours, displayed the mind and pen of a master in his art, and went far towards laying the foundation of a practical agricultural literature." But it is as a social and political observer that Young is now

best known to the reading public, and the books which have established his reputa- tion in these departments—his Tour in Ireland and Travels in France—are still full of interest and instruction.

He found that Ireland had ‘“‘ flourished for the last thirty years to an uncommon degree, more,” he believed, “than any country in Europe”; and he protcsted against the turbulence of the population and the outcries of the gentry at a time when Ireland had “ cex- pericnced more favour from three sessions of a British parliament than from three centuries before.” But he saw clearly and exposed unsparingly the causes which retarded the progress of the nation. He strongly urged the repeal of the penal laws which pressed upon the Catholics ; he thought, however, that their disabilities should be removed, not bya single measure, but gradually. He protested against the harshness with which the labouring classes were treated by their superiors, and denounced the middlemen as being, not merely a useless class, but by their oppression and insolent manners the chief causes of popular discontent. He condemned the restric- tions imposed by Great Britain on the commerce of Ireland, and also the perpetual interference of the Irish parliament with industry

by prohibitions and bounties ; of the latter he censured in specially strong terms the bounty on the inland carriage of corn to Dublin. He deplored the drain of rents and the neglect of their tenantry by absentee proprietors. The state of agriculture, generally low though improving, he found particularly unsatisfactory in Ulster, owing to the prevalence there of the linen manufacture, at that time carried on in the homes of the people, who were constantly divided between this occupation and the labours of the field. Emigration, he thought, was not sufficiently encouraged ; indeed it scarcely existed at the period of his visit. It had previously been practised to a greater extent, and, besides relieving the population which remained, had been useful in removing restless spirits who would have been troublesome at home. He favoured a legislative union of Ireland with Great Britain, though he did not regard such a measure as absolutely necessary, many of its advantages being otherwise attain- able, without incurring the risk of some possible inconveniences.

*The soil of France he found in general superior to that of Eng- land, and its produce less. Agriculture was neither as well under- stood nor as much esteemed as in England. He severely censured the higher classes for their neglect of it. “ Banishment (from court) alone will force the French nobility to execute what the English do for pleasure—reside upon and adorn their estates. Young saw the commencement of violence and outrage in the rural districts, being himself more than once in peril from popular sus- picion. His sympathies began to take the side of the classes suffer- ing from the excesses of the Revolution, and this change of attitude was distinctly shown by his publication in 1793 of a tract entitled The Example of Franeea Warning to England. Of the profounder significance of the French outbreak, as the commencement of a world-wide movement and a new era in social history, he seems to have had little idea, and thought the crisis would be sufficiently met by a constitutional adjustment in accordance with the English type. Yet he had much of the feeling which then inspired the Revolutionary actors, and, along with it, it may be added, some- thing of the general sentimentalism of the period. Another en- thusiasm he frequently exhibits—namely, for music, and especially for the Italian opera. But his master passion was the devotion to agriculture, which constantly showed itself. He strongly con- demned the métayer system then widely prevalent in France, as “nerpetuating poverty and excluding instruction,” as, in fact, the curse and ruin of the country. Some of his phrases have been often quoted by the advocates of peasant proprietorship as favour- ing their view. “The magic of property turns sand to gold.” ‘*Give a man the secure possession of a bleak rock, and he will turn it into a garden; give him a nine years’ lease of a garden, and he will convert it into a desert.” But these sentences, in which the epigrammatic form exaggerates a truth, and which might seem to represent the possession of capital as of no import- ance in agriculture, must not be taken as conveying his approba- tion of the system of small properties in general. He approved it only when the subdivision was strictly limited, and even then with great reserves ; and he remained to the end what J. S. Mill calls him, “ the apostle of la grande eulture.”” The French acknowledge the valuable services which his criticisms and counsels rendered to their agriculture. The directory in 1801 ordered his writings on the art to be translated and published at Paris in 20 volumes under the title of Le Cultivateur Anglais. Wis Travels in France were*

translated in 1793-94 by Soulés; and a new version by M. Lesage, with an introduction by M. de Lavergne, appeared in 1856. An interesting review of the lattcr publication, under the title of Arthur Young et la France de 1789, will be found in M. Baudrillart's Publicistes Modernes, 2d ed., 1878. (in It,)

YOUNG, Bricuam (1801-1877), Mormon president, was born in Whitingham, Vermont, on lst June 1801. His father was a farmer, and he himself learned the trade of a painter and glazier. He originally belonged to the Baptist Church, but joined the Mormons at Kirtland, Ohio, in 1832, In the same year he was ordained "elder ;" in 1835 he was made an apostle; and in 1844 he succeeded Joseph Smith as president. He died at Salt Lake City, on 29th August 1877. See Mormons.

YOUNG, Epwarp (1681-1765), author of Wight Thoughts, was born at Upham, near Winchester, in 1681. The minute facts of his life are to be found in the biography contributed to Johnson's Lives of the Poets by Herbert Croft. The son of the dean of Sarum, educated at Winchester and Oxford (New College and Corpus), Young obtained a law fellowship at All Souls in 1708, and proceeded to use it as a base of operations for gratifying his "ruling passion," the love of fame. There was at the time an open career for young men of talent who showed

ability to recommend the policy and the persons of states-

xy Ore NG

men in their struggle for power, and Young, full of un- bounded energy and eloquence, exuberant to eccentricity, joined in the. race with a vigour that soon raised him to distinction. He seems to have been for a time in the family of the earl of Exeter as tutor; but the notorious marquis of Wharton (see WHARTON) took a fancy to him, bribed him away from this post with liberal promises of maintenance and patronage, settled two annuities on him, and tried to get him into Parliament. Meantime Young began to publish and to dedicate, the poems and the dedications taken together (Zhe Last Day, 1713, and The Force of Religion, 1714) showing the simple mixture of piety and worldliness that is one of the notes of his character. He essayed tragedy, writing at mid-day with closed shutters, by

the light of a candle fixed in a human skull. Busiris was performed at Drury Lane in 1719, The Revenge in 1721. Far from gloomy in the company of Wharton and his friends, he had a decided bent for gloomy themes when alone, and a most copious and lofty— often extravagantly lofty—eloquence in the treatment of them ; a paraphrase of the book of Job was one of his productions about this time. But he showed equal facility in dashing and effective satire: his first great literary success was made with the series of satires published between 1725 and 1728, and collected in the latter year under the title Love of Fame, the Universal Passion. These satires do not bear comparison with Pope's, to which they pointed the way, but they have a charm of exuberant vitality and power, an irregular abundance of wit and bold imagery, a frequent felicity of diction, that entitle them to Johnson's praise—'"'a very great performance "—and enable us to understand the impression produced by Young in conversation. One of the features in Young's character that disarms resentment of his fulsome adulation, and other extravagances and eccentricities, is his humorous Falstaffian consciousness of his own faults. 'Who can write the true absurd like me?" he cries in one of his satires. He abundantly proved this in Ocean: an Ode, with which he hailed the accession of George IT. Soon after, when nearly fifty, he took orders, was appointed a royal chaplain, and presented by his college to the rectory of Welwyn. He was disappointed in his desire of further promotion in the church; he had succeeded some time before in extracting a pension of £200 from Walpole, and this favour was cynically treated as a satisfaction in full of his claims on the Government. The Wight Thoughts were published in separate " Nights" between 1742 and 1744. Inthe preface Young said that "the occasion of this poem was real, not fictitious, and that the facts men- tioned did naturally force these moral reflexions on the mind of the writer." Croft has shown that this statement, though justifiable in the main, has to be taken with some qualifications, and that a common belief that Lorenzo was meant for the author's own son was undoubtedly a mistake. Still, it is true that Young's wife, her daughter, and her daughter's husband died in rapid succession, and the poem —a great work in spite of all its inequalities—was, like In Memoriam, the expression of a real sorrow and search for consolation. Young continued to write occasionally even after he had passed his eightieth year. His death took place on 12th April 1765.

Besides Croft's Life, there are interesting references to Young in Boswell's Johnson (see Birkbeck's ed., iv. 119, v. 270).

YOUNG, Tuomas (1773-1829), one of the most re- markable figures alike in literature and science in the beginning of the 19th century in Great Britain. He belonged to a Quaker family of Milverton, Somerset, and was the youngest of ten children, having been born on 13th June 1773. His precocity, especially in the acquirement of languages, was remarkable, being little

YOU—

inferior to that of Sir W. Rowan Hamilton. But his thirst for knowledge was unlimited in its range. He was not content with languages, mathematics, and physical science : natural science, medicine, and even ancient philosophy were eagerly studied by him; and he was passionately devoted to athletic exercises. His medical studies were pursued successively in London, Edinburgh, Gottingen, and finally at Emmanuel College, Cambridge, where he took his doctor's degree. The death of a maternal uncle put him in a position of comfortable independence, and he did not heartily enter upon practice. He was secured in 1802 by the Royal Institution as a colleague of Davy and professor of natural philosophy. Here his special talents found ample occupation, and the chief result was the publica- tion in 1807 of his celebrated Course of Lectures on Natural Philosophy, a work which is even now regarded as a valuable authority. Some years before he had made his remarkable discovery of the interference of light, and begun that wonderful series of researches which, as com- pleted by Fresnel, secured the triumph of the undulatory theory. He was foreign secretary of the Royal Society for more than a quarter of a century ; and it is curious to note that his reputation stood higher in foreign than in home scientific circles. He was one of the eight foreign associates of the Institute of France. He was one of the Commission- ers of Weights and Measures, and secretary to the Board of Longitude, which in those days conducted the Nautical Almanac. A few years before his death he became inter- ested in life assurance, with great benefit to the company whose scientific business he conducted. His death, on 10th May 1829, was probably hastened by the extraordinary amount

and variety of the labours he undertook, and the self-sacrificing zeal with which he devoted himself to them.

His Life, by Dr Peacock, dean of Ely and a well-known mathe- matician, was published in 1855, along with a collection of his Miscellaneous Works and Scientific Memoirs. Young was a somewhat copious contributor to the 6th edition of this Encyclopedia, and some of the best of his smaller papers appeared in it for the first time. For a résumé of his contributions to the subject of hemadynamics, see VASCULAR SysTEM, p. 97 supra. Another of the multitudi- nous problems that claimed his attention was the decipherment of the Egyptian hieroglyphics, in which he had made some progress as early as 1814; see his Account of some Recent Discoveries in Hicro- glyphical Literature (London, 1823).

YOUNGSTOWN, a city and the county seat of Mahon- ing county, Ohio, United States, is situated upon the Mahoning river, a tributary of the Ohio. The prevailing industries of the surrounding country are agriculture and coal-mining. Youngstown is directly connected with six railway lines. Owing to the contour of the site, the city is laid out very irregularly. The population in 1880 was 15,435 (8075 in 1870). The industries of Youngstown are connected chiefly with the manufacture of iron: there are several furnaces and rolling-mills, and manufactories of rails and stoves and of agricultural tools and machines.

Youngstown was laid out in 1797, being one of the first settle- ments made in that part of Ohio known as the Western Reserve. Since the rebellion it has grown with great rapidity.

YPRES (Flem. Yperen), a town of Belgium, capital of an arrondissement in the province of West Flanders, stands in a fertile plain on the Yperlee, 21 miles north-north-west of Lille. In the 14th century it is said to have contained 200,000 inhabitants; and it was long famous for its woollen and linen manufactures, though the once current derivation of the word "diaper" from the name of this town can no longer be maintained. Of the old fortifica- tions some traces still remain, as well as a few picturesque dwelling-houses of the 14th and 15th centuries. The fine Gothic cloth hall (1201-1342), with a facade 462 feet in length, is pierced by two rows of

pointed windows ; there are two corner turrets; and in the centre rises a massive square clock tower. The forty-four statues of counts

¥ UC 757

of Flanders and their consorts which formerly adorned it were restored in 1860. The town-hall (1730) contains some interesting frescos and sculptures of modern date. The finest parts of the Gothic cathedral of St Martin (1221-70) are the choir, and the portal and rose window of the south transept; in the interior is some good wood- carving ; the old frescos were "restored" in 1826, In the cloister is the tomb of Cornelius JaNsEN (q.v.). The town contains several other churches, as well as hospitals, a military school, a museum, and a public library. The chief manufactures are those of linen thread and lace and of woollen and linen cloth ; dyeing, bleaching, and tanning are also carried on. The population in 1876 was 15,515,

YRIARTE. See [Rrarre.

YTTRIUM, the name of a rare element which in its character is closely allied to, and in nature is always associ- ated with, cerium, lanthanum, didymium, and erbium (see LANTHANUM, vol. xiv. p. 291). For the preparation of yttrium compounds the best raw material is a rare Swedish mineral called gadolinite, which, according to K6nig, consists of 22°61 per cent. of silica, 34°64 of yttria, Y,0.,, and 42°75 of the oxides of erbium, cerium, didy- mium, lanthanum, iron, beryllium, calcium, magnesium, and sodium. Bunsen and Bahr, in 1866, elaborated a method for extracting the several rare oxides in the state of purity ; but the method is too complicated to reproduce here! Metallic yttrium is obtainable by reducing the chloride with potassium; but this operation has never been carried out with pure chloride. Yttria, Y,O., is a yellowish white powder, which at high temperatures radiates out a most brilliant white light. It is soluble, slowly but completely, in mineral acids. It is recognized most surely by its very characteristic spark spectrum. Solutions of yttria salts in their behaviour to reagents are not unlike those of zirconia. The atomic weight of yttrium, according to the latest researches,? is 89°02, if O=16.

YUCATAN, a peninsular region of Central America, forming the south-eastern extremity of Mexico (see vol. xvi. pl. I.), of which, since 1861, it constitutes the two confederate states of Campeche (Campeachy) in the west and Yucatan in the east. At its neck the peninsula is conterminous on the south-east with British Honduras, on the south-west with the state of Tabasco (Mexico), and on the south with the republic of Guatemala, the boundaries towards these territories being largely of a purely conventional character. From this base the land projects in a compact rectangular mass between the Gulf of Mexico and the Caribbean Sea, west and east, for 280 miles northwards, across nearly four degrees of latitude (18° to 21° 40' N.) and three of longitude (87° 30' to 90° 30' W.), to within 120 miles of Cuba, from which it is separated by the Yucatan Channel. Jt has a mean breadth of about 200 miles, a coast-line of 700 miles, and a total area of 55,400 square miles, with a population in 1882 of 393,000 (Yucatan, 29,570 square miles, population 302,500; Campeche, 25,830 square miles, population 90,500).°

The coast-line presents a uniform monotonous aspect, being fringed by no islands except Cozumel near the north- east point, and broken by no indentations except the shallow Lake Terminos on the west and the inlets of Ascension, Espiritu Santo, and Chetumal Bays on the east side. But the north coast is skirted by an almost continu- ous line of low dunes, nearly 200 miles long, enclosing a broad lagoon, which varies in length and depth with the

1 See the handbooks of chemistry and the original memoir in Liebig's Annalen, vol. cxxxvii. p. 1.

2 Cleve, Jahresber. der Chemie, 1882, p. 15.

3 Previous estimates assigned 32,650 square miles to Yucatan and 26,100 to Campeche.

Bound- aries, area, &c,

Physical features.

seasons. Behind the lagoon a bed of coralline and porous limestone rocks, composing nearly the whole tableland of Yucatan, rises continuously southwards in the direction of the Sierra Madre, which, beyond the frontier, traverses the whole of Guatemala and Central America. Geologic- ally, Yucatan thus presents the character of a compara- tively recent formation, built up by polypi in shallow waters, and gradually covered with a layer of thin dry soil by the slow weathering of the coral rocks. But the sur- face is not so uniformly level and monotonous as it appears on most maps; for, although there are scarcely any running

YUCaeR?PaA TY

which is now destitute alike of running waters, of dense vegetation, and almost of inhabitants, was at that time thickly peopled and full of populous cities remarkable for the great size, splendour, and artistic taste of their public monuments. For Maya, as the land was then called,' was the chief centre of the wide-spread Maya- Quiché power and culture, which rivalled, and in some respects excelled, those of the Peruvian Incas and of the Aztecs on the Anahuac plateau. Although the Maya nation had at that time already entered on a period of decadence, it was still strong and vigorous enough to resist the conquistadores for a period of fully twenty years (1527-47), the reduction of this barreu region costing "the lives of more Spaniards than had been expended in wresting from the Incas and the Montezumas the wealthiest empires of the western world" (Bancroft).

streams, it is diversified here and there by a few lacustrine basins, of which Lakes Bacalar and Chicankanah are the largest, as well as by some low isolated hills and ridges in the west, and on the east side by the Sierra Alta, a range

Wonder has been expressed that such a bleak, arid, and almost Mayan streamless land could have ever become the seat of empire and the irriga- home of a flourishing civilization. But the absence of rivers on the tion plateau appears to be due not so much to the deficient rainfall as works.

Climate.

Vege- All the northern districts, as well as the greater part of the Sierra | mogt fully described, are Izamal, Mayapan, Aké, Acanceh, Uxmal, table Alta, are destitute of large trees ; but the coast-lands on both sides Tikul, and Kabah, all centred in the north-west corner of the pen- produc- towards Tabasco and British Honduras enjoy a sufficient rainfall

of moderate elevation, traversing the whole peninsula from Catoche Point southwards to the neighbourhood of Lake Peten in Guatemala.

There are thus no elevations sufficiently high to intercept the moisture-bearing clouds from the Atlantic, while those from the Pacific are cut off by the Sierra Madre. Hence the climate is necessarily dry, with a deficient and uncertain rainfall, especially in the central and northern districts. Here also the tropical heats are intensified by the neighbourhood of the Gulf Stream, which in its passage through the Yucatan Channel flows much nearer to the coast of the peninsula than to that of Cuba. Still, the climate, although "hot of the hottest' (Ober), with a temperature ranging from 75° to 98° Fahr. in the shade, is comparatively healthy, owing to its great dryness and to the cool breezes which prevail night and day throughout a great part of the year. The atmosphere is also occasionally purified by the fierce temporales or " northers," which sweep across the Gulf freely over this open low-lying region. Yellow fever, however, periodically visits the Campeche coast, while ague is endemic in the undrained swampy districts towards the southern frontiers. Like most regions lying entirely within the tropics, Yucatan has two scasons only, which are determined by the alter- nations not so much of temperature as of atmospheric moisture. The dry season lasts from October to May, the wet season for the rest of the year; the hottest months appear to be March and April, when the heat is increased by the burning of the corn and henequen fields on the plateau.

numerous round the now desolate northern and north-eastern shores

of the peninsula, The whole of the northern section of Yucatan,

to the extremely porous nature of the calcareous soil, which absorbs the waters like a sponge and prevents the development of surface streams. Beneath the surface, however, the waters accumulate in such abundance

that a sufficient supply may always be had by sink- ing wells in almost any part of the tableland. What the present inhabitants neglect to do was systematically practised by the former populations, whose aguadas or artificial lakes and under- ground reservoirs must be reckoned amongst the most remarkable monuments of Maya culture. "Intelligence, much skill in masonry, and much labour were required to construct them. They were paved with several courses of stone laid in cement, and in their bottoms wells or cavities were constructed. More than forty such wells were found in the bottom of one of these aguadas at Galal, which has been repaired and restored to use. In some places long subterranean passages lead down to pools of water, which are used in the dry season. One of these subterranean reservoirs is 450 feet below the surface of the ground, and the passage lcading to it is about 1400 feet long" (Baldwin, p. 145). Thus the Mayan, like the Peruvian, the Egyptian, and the Babylonian culture, was based on a well-planned and carefully executed system of waterworks, specially adapted to the peculiar physical conditions of the country,

The monumental remains which must be assigned to the Maya- Ruined Quiché, as distinguished from other native civilizations, are spread cities.

over a great part of Central America, but are mainly comprised within the triangular space formed by connecting Mitla in Oajaca, Copan in Honduras, and the north coast of Yucatan above Tizimin by three straight lines. But of the "sixty-two ruined cities" of Yucatan proper the most important, or at least the best known and

traditions, by the people of Chichen-Itza some three centuries before the arrival of the Spaniards.

Izamal.

Chiehen- Itza.

Kabah.

Inscrip- tions.

rWCca tT 2N

rangle, with one front 280 feet long and enclosing a court 258 by Here Dr Le Plongeon discovered in 1881 a surprisingly

214 feet. beautiful statue, Central America. to prevent it from falling into the hands of the Mexican authorities, who had seized another remarkable statue previously brought to light by this industrious explorer (Ober).

Conspicuous amongst the crumbling monuments of Aké, which lies ten leagues east of Merida, isa huge pyramid, with an immense flight of steps, presenting some extraordinary features different from anything elsewhere discovered in Yucatan. This strange monument is surmounted by thirty-six pillars (twenty-nine still standing), each 4 feet square and from 14 to 16 feet high; disposed in three parallel rows 10 feet apart, the whole supported by a platform 212 fect by 46 and approached by steps from 44 to 64 feet long and from 1 to 14 feet high. At Izamal, a few miles east of Aké, stands another great pyramid, with a base of nearly 650 feet, besides three others, and a colossal head 13 feet high, not, however, a monolith, but built up of rough stones coated with mortar. But the gigantic face described and reproduced by Stephens had disappeared at the time of Char- nay's visit to Izamal.

surpassing anything of the kind ever found in

To this explorer we are indebted for the first detailed account of

the wonderful remains of Chichen-Itza, which include another nunnery, a tennis-court, several temples, and other buildings pro- fusely embellished with rich friezes, statues, pillars, reliefs, and the like, the whole grouped round a central pyramid of great size, known as the Castillo, from the beautiful structure still standing on its summit. Chichen-Itza, which was certainly inhabited at the time of the conquest, was the capital of the Itzaes, one of the most powerful Maya nations, who appear to have afterwards migrated

southwards to the neighbourhood of Lake Peten, where tribes of

this name are still found. They constituted one of the eighteen semi-independent Maya states, whose incessant internecine wars at last brought about the dismemberment of the once potent theo- cratic empire of Xibalba (Palenque?) and the destruction of the Maya civilization.

Scarcely less important than those of Chichen-Itza are the monu- ments of Kabah, which lies about 12 miles south of Uxmal. The two places were formerly connected by a plastered causeway, traces of which are still visible, and Kabah must have been a very large city, for its ruins are scattered over a considerable area. Amongst them are comprised lofty pyramids, vast terraces, and sumptuous palaces or temples, with elaborate ornamentation, sometimes almost completely disguising the architectural features of the edifices. Charnay mentions "triumphal arches," but adds that he sought in vain for the unique specimen of this kind of monument in America which is mentioned and figured by Stephens, and which bears such a striking resemblance to the triumphal arches of the Roman type. Many other remaius have either disappeared or crumbled away almost beyond recognition since they were first sketched by Cather- wood.? But, on the other hand, numerous buried cities and monu- ments probably still remain concealed amid the rank tropical vege- tation, especially in the almost unknown territory of the unreduced Lacandons and Itzaes towards the Guatemala frontier. But enough has already been surveyed fully to justify Maudslay's general re- mark, that Yucatan is thickly covered with the ruins of great build- ings "even superior in some respects to those found in other parts of Central America."

Like those of Palenque, Lorillard Town, Tikul, and Copan, many of these buildings are covered with inscriptions, the key to the deciphering of which has not yet been discovered. Notwithstand- iug certain divergences, seen especially at Lorillard, all belong ob- viously to the same writing system. But whether that system is purely ideographic, phonetic, or intermediate cannot be asserted with any certainty, although Holden, who has attacked the problem from a fresh standpoint, declares emphatically that they are not phonetic, "except in so far as their rebus character may make them in a sense phonetic." He claims by his system to have fixed the order in which the inscriptions are to be read (in lines left to right, in columns vertically downwards), and fancies he has determined the meaning of three characters representing Maya divinities. But Holden is ignorant of the Maya-Quiché language, of which a few manuscripts have been rescued from the fury of the early Spanish iconoclasts. One of these documents, the Popol-Vuh, written or copied about 1558 from an older

Quiché book, has been edited and even translated by Brasseur de Bourbourg. This uncritical writer

1 On one of the palaces "two salient cornices form a frame to immense friezes which in their details would compare favourably with our proudest monuments" (Charnay). On others are sculptured some remarkable bas-reliefs, which represent Maya warriors receiving the swords of kneeling Aztec captives, the nationalities of the figures being clearly identified by their respect- ive costumes. The significance of records of this sort has either been altogether overlooked or else strangely misinterpreted by most writers on Central-Ameri- can antiquities.

2 In 1841 Stephens was assured by the eura of Santa Cruz del Quiché that the palaces of that place, then in a dilapidated state, were quite perfect thirty years before, and that the now deserted city of Utatlan in the province of Vera Paz was then almost as perfect as when its inhabitants had abandoned it. He had himself walked in its silent streets amid its colossal buildings, which were as entire as those of Santa Cruz.

But this object he again carefully hid away

makes use of a so-called Maya-Quiché alphabet preserved by Diego de Landa, first bishop of Yucatan, in his Relacion or history of the Mayas. But the alphabet in question is admittedly extremely defective and inadequate to interpret the native writings, and has even been pronounced "a Spanish fabrication" by Dr Valentini,' a view which Holden appears to endorse. The puzzle thus remains still unsolved, and no safe inference can be drawn beyond the fact that the inscriptions and manuscripts are composed in a highly conventional form of writing, and probably in more than one Maya- Quiché dialect.

Other difficult questions connected with the origin and antiquity Origin

of the Maya culture, and the nature of its relations to that of and an-Mexico, will be found discussed under Mxexrco (g.v.). But, sinee tiquity of that article was written, fresh materials have been collected and Maya

published which help to throw some further light on these obscure eulture. subjects. Unfortunatcly M. Charnay, who since the time of Stephens and Catherwood has undoubtedly contributed most to our knowledge of the Central-American remains, has revived in an exaggerated form the old views of Morelet, Orozco y Berra, and others regarding the Toltec origin of all these monuments. This observer sees evcrywhere the clearest cvidences, not merely of Toltec influ- ences, which are obvious enough, but of the Toltec institutions themselves, of the Toltec religion, architecture, and civilization, to the exclusion of all others in Central America. He even boldly traces on the map the lines of a twofold Toltec migration, from Tula along the Atlantic and from Toluca along the Pacific side, to their junction at Copan in Honduras, some few centuries before the discovery of the New World. But our faith in the soundness of these views is greatly shaken when we find M. Charnay identifying the Toltecs themselves somewhat wildly with Malays, Indo-Chinese, and other Asiatic races. Some of the present populations of Yucatan are even pronounced to be "a cross between the Malay and the Chinese," and all the exploded theories are thus revived of an Asiatic origin of the civilized inhabitants of the New World and of their cultures. But, as Ober well remarks, the evidence is cumu- lative in favour of the independent evolution of these cultures. Late contact,—that is, contact since the remote Stone Age,—with the inhabitants of the eastern hemisphere has been either of the most casual nature or else as shadowy as the Atlantis itself, which is seriously referred to in this connexion by otherwise sane writers, but which was obviously as pure an invention of Plato as the Utopia was of Sir Thomas More.

An essential condition of the Toltec theory is the assumed recent, or comparatively recent, date of all the Central-American monu- ments, and Charnay has certainly dispelled the extravagant ideas at one time prevalent regarding the hoary antiquity of some of these remains. He has shown in particular that no argument in favour of great age can be drawn from the size of the trees by which many of them are overgrown. By actual experiment he has proved that the concentric circles of these trees correspond, not to so many years, as had been supposed, but rather to so many months, ifnot even to shorter periods of growth. Thus collapse the extravagant estimates of 2000 years (Waldeck) or 1700 (Lorainzar)

assigned to the buildings on this assumption. At the same time some of the cities were already forgotten ruins at the time of the conquest, and many of the structures date evidently back to a period prior to the Toltec migrations southwards. The bas-reliefs of Kabah also clearly show that these Toltecs, probably of Nahua stock and closely related to the Aztecs, already found the land occupied by a civilized people, able to record on stone monuments their triumphs over the northern invaders. Some of these mouu- ments themselves equal, if not surpass, in artistie taste and work- manship anything the Toltec builders are known to have produced on the Anahuac plateau. They also present many distinctive features, especially in their design and decorative parts, while the inscriptions are altogether different from those of the Aztecs as seen in extant manuscripts. The conclusion seems inevitable that the Maya-Quiché culture was an independent growth, brought in later times under Nahua influences, the relations being perhaps somewhat analogous to those existing between the Greco-Bactriau and Indian or the Moorish and Spanish in the Old World.

At the time of the conquest a great part of Central America was Classifi- found to be occupied, as it still is, by peoples related, at least in eation of speech, to the Maya inhabitants of Yucatan. The numerous Maya- branches of this widespread family ranged from Tamaulipas (about Quiché the Tropic of Cancer) southwards to north Honduras and San Sal- nations, vador (14° N. lat.). But the chief divisions were the Mayas of

rucatan and the Quichés of Guatemala, whence the compound term Maya-Quiché collectively applied to the whole race. Owing partly to the uncertainty of their mutual affinities, but mainly to the confusing and inconsistent nomenclature of the early Spanish and later writers, the classification of the various Maya-Quiché natious presents serious difficulties, some of which have not yet been over- come. Inthe subjoined scheme are embodied the results of the researches of De Bourbourg, Berendt, Stoll, and others in this intricate branch of ethnology :—

3 In a paper read before the American Antiquarian Society, 28th April 1880.

Modern inhabit- ants.

Maya Grovup.—Huasteca, Vera Cruz and Tamaulipas ; Totonae(?),! north part of Vera Cruz ; Maya proper, throughout Yucatan ; Chol (Cholti, Colchi), between the Salinas and Mondaguas rivers, Gua- temala ; Jfopan, north of the Chols; Chontal, Tabasco, distinct from the Nicaraguan Chontales ; T'zental (Cendal), Ocosingo dis- trict, Chiapas; Tzotzil (Zotzil, Zotzlem), San Cristobal, Chiapas ; Chafiabal, Comitan district, Chiapas. :

Quicut Group.—Cakehiquel (Kacchikil), Tecpan to Sta Lucia and the Pacific ; Tzutwil (Sotojil, Zutuhil), Aitlan district, Guate- mala; Quiché proper (Kiché, Utatlica), Cunen and Rabinal districts, and thence south-west to the Pacific, Guatemala ; Uspanteea, San Miguel Uspantan, Guatemala. :

Poconcu! Grour.—Poconchi proper (Pokonichi, Pacomchi), Tac- tic district, Guatemala ; Quekchi (Caechi, Aquacateca), Coban dis- trict, Guatemala ; Chorti (Lenguaapay), Zacapa and Chichimula, and thence eastwards to Honduras; Pokomam, Jalapa, and thence to San Salvador.

MamE Group.—Jfame proper (Mem, Zakloh-pakap), throughout south-western Guatemala ; Jxil, Cotzal district, Guatemala ; Agua- eatecas (Sinca, Xinca), throughout south-eastern Guatemala ; Ala- gtulae (2), San Cristobal, Chiapas.

Yucatan is still almost entirely inhabited by the same Maya race that was found in possession of the land at the time of the discovery. About five-sixths of the population are of nearly pure Maya stock and speech, the Spanish and mestizo elements being mostly confined to the large towns. The mestizos are said to be the handsomest on the continent, while the full-blood natives are perhaps the least characteristic of all the aboriginal populations. They have the coarse black and straight hair, the arched nose, and the reddish-brown complexion common to most of the primitive in- habitants of America. But they can be readily distinguished from all of them by their regular features, low cheek-bones, small mouth and ears, straight jaws, frank expression, and a certain air of refine- ment betraying descent from a highly cultured people. "It would be difficult,"

says Charnay, "'to find among the rural classes of Europe men of a better build, or with more intelligent and open countenances." Although generally peaceful, patient under oppres- sion, and even somewhat indolent, their history since the conquest (1547) has not been wholly uneventful. After more than two centuries of passive resistance, there was a general revolt in 1761, brought about by the intolerable misrule of the Spanish adminis- tration. The declaration of independence (1821) was followed in 1824 by the union with the Mexican confederacy, which continued without interruption till 1840. In that year an independent re- public was set up in Yucatan, which, however, was suppressed in 1843. Then came the general uprising of the natives in 1846, when Mexico was engaged in a disastrous war with the United States. To quell the revolt, the ruling classes were obliged to call in the aid of the Mexicans (1847-53), whereby the peninsula again lost its autonomy, and was divided (1861) into the two federal states of Yucatan and Campeche. But the rebellion was not entirely suppressed, and many of the natives, withdrawing eastwards to the coast-lands beyond the Sicrra Alta, have hitherto defied all the efforts of the authorities to reduce them.

Bibliography.—D. L. Cogolludo, Historia de Yucathan, Madrid, 1688; Diego de Landa, Relacion de las Cosas de Yucatan, ed. by Br. de Bourbourg, Paris, 1864; Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. des, Nations Civilisées du Mexique et de U Amérique Centrale, Paris, 1857-59, and Etudes sur le Systéme Graphique et la Langue des Mayas, Paris, 1869-70; Lord Kingsborough, Antiquities of Mexico, London, 1831-48 (vols. ii. and iii.); H. H. Bancroft, Native Races of the Pacific States, New York, 1875, and Hist. of the Pacific States (vols. iv. and y.), San Francisco and London, 1882-87; J. L. Stephens, Incidents of Travel in Yucatan, new edition, New York, 1858; E. G. Squier, Travels in Central America, New York, 1853, and Notes on Ccntral America, New York, 1855; J. D. Baldwin, Ancient America, New York, 1872; Marquis de Nadaillae, Prehistoric America London, 1885; Désiré Charnay, The Ancient Cities of the New World, London, 1887; F. A. Ober, Travels in Mexico (bk. i., Yucatan), Boston, 1884; A, P, Maudslay, "'Exploration, &c., of Copan," in Proc. Roy. Geogr. Soc., September, 1886; E. 8. Holden, "Studies in Central-American Picture- Writing," in Annual Report of Bureau of Ethnology, Washington, 1879-80. Ane Eine Ke

YUCCA,? a genus of the order Liliacex, the species of which are remarkable for their stately appearance and generally magnificent inflorescence. They occur in greatest frequency in Mexico and the south-western States of the American Union, extending also into Central America, and occurring in such numbers in some places as to form "straggling forests." They have a woody or fibrous stem, sometimes short, and in other cases, even in the same species, attaining a height of 15 to 20 feet, and branching at the top into a series of forks. The leaves are crowded in tufts at the ends of the stem or branches and are generally stiff and sword-shaped, with a sharp point, sometimes flaccid eee

1 Although Totonac is grouped by Brinton and others in this family, Gatschet is inclined to regard it as an independent stock language (Réplique a Mr D. G. Brinton, Paris, 1888, p. 8).

- *A Spanish word meaning " bayonet."*

and in other cases fibrous at the edges. The numerous flowers are usually white, bell-shaped, and pendulous, and are borne in much-branched terminal panicles. Each flower consists of a perianth of six regular pieces, as many hypogynous stamens, with dilated filaments, bearing rela- tively small anthers. The three-celled ovary is surmounted by a short thick style, dividing above into three stigmas, and ripens into a succulent berry in some of the species, and into a dry three-valved capsule in others. The flowers are fertilized by the agency of moths.

A coarse fibre is obtained by the Mexicans from the stem and foliage, which they utilize for cordage. The succulent fruits, which resemble small bananas, are cooked as an article of diet ; and the roots contain a saponaceous matter used in place of soap.

Most of the species are hardy in Great Britain, and their striking appearance renders them attractive in gardens even when not in flower. Their rigid foliage, invested by thick epidermis, also enables them to resist the noxious air of towns better than most plants. A popular name for the

plant is “ Adam’s needle.” The species which split up at the margins of their leaves into filaments are called “‘ Eve’s thread.”

YUN-NAN. See Curna, vol. v. p. 640.

YUN-NAN FU, the capital of the Chinese province of Yun-nan, is situated in 25° 6’ N. lat. and 102° 52’ E. long. Originally the district surrounding Yun-nan Fu was known as the “land of the southern barbarians.” The city, which under different dynasties has borne different names, is situated on a plain, and is surrounded by well-fortified walls, 64 miles in circuit. Marco Polo describes it, under the name of Yachi, as ‘“‘a very great and noble city, in which are numerous merchants and craftsmen. The people are of sundry kinds, for there are not only Saracens and idolaters but also a few Nestorian Christians. They have wheat and rice in plenty. ... Theirmoney is… cer- tain white porcelain shells that are found in the sea.” For many years Mahommedans have been very numerous in the city and neighbourhood ; and in 1855 a Mahomme- dan rising took place within the city. Yun-nan Fu has a prosperous and busy aspect: the shops are large and well supplied with native silken goods, saddlery, &c., while Eng- lish cotton, Russian cloths, and raw cotton from Burmah constitute the main foreign merchandise. Employment for large numbers of workpeople is found in the copper factories. A local mint at Yun-nan Fu issued annually 101,000,000 cash before the outbreak of the rebellion in 1855. The population of the city is estimated at about

200,000.

YVETOT, a town of France, chef-lieu of an arrondisse- ment in the department of Seine-Inférieure, stands on the plateau of Caux, 24 miles north-west of Rouen on the railway to Havre, and is chiefly known from Béranger’s famous song. Calicoes, tickings, Siamese, rouennerie cotton, reps, and handkerchiefs are made here, as in most places in the department, and a trade is carried on in wool. The church is ugly, but contains a marble altar from the Car- thusian monastery at Rouen, some fine woodwork from the abbey of St Wandrille, and an elegant pulpit. Theremains of a Bernardine monastery are occupied in part by the court and jail. The hospital and seminary are both modern, The population was 7625 (commune 8397) in 1881 and 7333 (commune 7972) in 1886.

From the 15th till the middle of the 16th century the lords of Yvetot bore the title of king, and their lands were exempt from all service to the French crown. The town was occupied during the Hundred Years' War by Henry V. of England, and afterwards retaken by Charles VII. of France. On 8th May 1592 Henry IV. defeated here the troops of the League under the duke of Parma. A Bernardine monastery was founded at Yvetot in 1650, and sup- pressed in 1781. In 1658 part of the town was destroyed by fire.

<<

761

L

7, the last letter of our alphabet, has fallen away from , its old place in the Pheenician and Greek alphabets. In these it stood seventh, probably with the value of dz or zd. In shape it was Tin all the older writings both of the Tonian and the Eubcean type. Later it became Z, as we have it, by a natural and convenient change. But TL is the older Italian as well as the Greek form; it remained so in Oscan ; in Etruscan and Umbrian the cross strokes were brought near together, but the upright line remained. The Latin alphabet, however, dropped the symbol, having apparently no need of it; it appears on an old coin of Cosa (Corpus, i. 14), unless the letter there be only a modified s. Later, in the Ist century B.c., the letter in the form Z was re-introduced, where we have it, to represent more accurately the sound of z in words borrowed from the Greek, in which alone it appears ; ss (or initial s) had previously been employed for this purpose. The original place of the letter had been occupied in the meantime by G, the Latin modified form of C (see under G), so Z had to take the lowest place together with Y, which had been also borrowed from Greece for a similar purpose.

The exact value of zeta in Greek has been much dis- cussed (see Blass, Aussprache des Griechischen, p.95). That it was a double sound—not French z (the voiced sibilant corresponding to the voiceless s)—seems clear from Aris- totle's statement that €, y, and ¢ were all cunddvias, and from its power of lengthening a previous short vowel in scanning. The

arguments, however, for the dz or the zd value are about evenly balanced, and it is not improbable that it may have had both. In Latin the value was doubt- less that of the Greek z.

In Old English z hardly occurs; when it does it is in borrowed names with the value of ts,as in Betzaida, Zabulon. It was introduced in order to represent French z in words borrowed from France, as zeal, zone (see article S). But it is used in only a very small number of the words where the sound occurs : we still adhere to the usage of our fore- fathers and employ s for the s-sound and the zsound alike, indeed rather inclining to use s for z, and to differentiate s by doubling the symbol: compare his (¢.e., hiz) and hiss (2.e., his). In German z represents ¢s, the sound into which Teutonic ¢ passed in High German—e.g., inherz, our "heart." It was also used formerly, either alone or in combination with s, to denote the voiceless sibilant when final: thus the conjunction dass, which is nothing but the neuter pronoun das, was formerly written daz, and is sometimes even now written dasz. In French the Latin z became the voiced sibilant ; and a similar process has taken place in modern Greek. In French, however, the final sound must once have been stronger—e.g., in fils (filius), later fiz, and still later jis (as it is still pronounced), which passed into England in the form /%tz in proper names. Still plainer is the evidence of verbal forms like avez =avets = habetis.

For the history of the English variant 3 for z, see article Y. (5. P.)

ZAANDAM, ZAANREDAM, or SAARDAM, a village of Hol- land, in the province of North Holland, 5 miles by rail to the north-west of Amsterdam, at the confluence of the Zaan with the Y. The houses are mostly of wood, painted white or green, and the place shares with the other villages of North Holland a high reputation for neatness and cleanliness. In the immediate neighbourhood are a very large number of windmills, including corn, paper, saw, coffee, snuff, and other mills. Peter the Great of Russia wrought at Zaandam as a ship-carpenter for a short time in 1697, and the hut in which he is said to have lived is

still shown and much visited. Some shipbuilding is still carried on. The population in 1887 was 14,351.

ZACATECAS, a city of Mexico, capital of the state of the same name, lies 340 miles by rail north-west of Mexico, in 22° 46' N. lat. and 102° W. long. Zacatecas, which had a population of 46,000 in 1886, is the centre of one of the oldest and most productive silver-mining districts in the republic, and the town itself stands on the rich vein discovered here by Juan de Tolosa in 1546. It lies on the great Mexican tableland, 7976 feet above the sea, in a narrow ravine surrounded by rolling hills, all containing almost inexhaustible deposits of the precious metal. Within half an hour's walk of the centre of the town are situated twelve mines, some of which have been worked with little interruption for over three hundred years. Owing to the irregular nature of the ground and the great value of the land, the city is laid out in narrow tortuous streets, which, unlike most other Mexican towns, are lined by high houses of three and four stories. Noteworthy amongst the public buildings are the cathedral, with a finely sculptured facade, the Government palace, the city hall, the theatre, and the mint ; this last, during the period from 1772 to 1865, issued silver money to the value of £41,000,000, besides £110,000 in gold. The streets, although narrow, are well paved and partly lit by electricity. Since the completion of the Central Mexican Railway to this place in 1884 it has increased in population and prosperity. From the Bufa Hill, 500 feet high, lying to the north of the city, an ex- tensive view is commanded of the surrounding district, which is of an extremely rugged character and almost destitute of vegetation. In the neighbourhood are nine small lakes, yielding an abundance of salt and carbonate of soda. Zacatecas, which received the title of city from Philip II. in 1585, is supplied with water by a large, well- constructed aqueduct.

The state of Zacatecas lies between Coahuila and Jalisco north and south respectively, and is elsewhere conterminous with Guana- juato, Durango, and San Luis Potosi. It has an arca of 25,227 square miles and a population (1882) of 422,506, of whom a pre- ponderating proportion arc Indians or mestizos. It stands at a mean altitude of over 7000 feet above sea-level, and is traversed by the Mazapil, Norillos, Guadaloupe, and other metalliferous ranges, this state ranking among the first in the republic for mineral wealth. Next to the Veta Madre of Guanajuato and the famous Comstock lode, Nevada, the Veta Grande of Zacatecas is held to be the most remarkable silver vein in North America. The chief mining

dis- tricts are Zacatecas, Espiritu Santo, Chapala, Los Arcos, Norias, Ipala, Santa Lucia, Naranjal, and Santo Martino; and in 1886 about 324 mines were open (21 gold, 67 gold and silver, 167 silver alone, 15 copper, 37 lead, and 16 quicksilver). Besides its minerals the state possesses considcrable agricultural resources, the south- eastern parts especially being very fertile and well watered by the rivers Tlaltenango and Juchipila. Maize, wheat, fruits—such as peaches, apricots, grapes,—and all kinds of vegetables are extensively cultivated, the annual maize crop being valued at over £1,000,000, wheat at about £250,000, and the remaining crops at about £600,000. Even in the bleak and arid northern districts there are some exten- sive grazing-grounds, where cattle, horses, mules, sheep, and goats thrive well. Some of the slopes are well timbered, the chief species being the mountain cedar, oak, elm, ash, and cotton-wood. Be- sides the capital, the chief mining towns are Fresnillo (pop. 15,000), Garcia (8000), Villanueva (7000), Linos (7000), Sombrerete (6000), and Nieves (3000).

ZACH, Franz Xaver, Baron von (1754-1832), astronomer, was born at Pesth in June 1754. He served for some time in the Austrian army, and afterwards lived in London from 1783 to 1786 as tutor in the house of the Saxon minister, Count Briihl, In 1786 he was appointed by Ernest II. of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha director of the new observatory on the Seeberg at Gotha, which was finished in 1791. From 1806 Zach accompanied the duke's widow

on her travels in the south of Europe. He died in Paris

on 2d September 1832.

Zach published Tables of the Sun (Gotha, 1792 ; new and improved edition, zb/d., 1804), and numerous papers on geographical subjects, particularly on the geographical positions of many towns and places, which he determined on his travels with a sextant. His principal importance is, however, as editor of three scientific journals of great

value,—Aligemeine Geographische Ephemeriden (4 vols., Gotha, 1798-99), Monatliche Correspondenz zur Beforderung der Erd- und Himmels-Kunde (28 vols., Gotha, 1800-13, from 1807 edited by Lindenau), and Correspondance Astronomique, Géo- graphique, Hydrographique, et Statistique (Genoa, 1818-26, 14 vols., and one number of the 15th suppressed at the instigation of the Jesuits).

YZACHARIAE VON LINGENTHAL, Kart Satomo (1769-1843), German jurist, was born on 14th September 1769 at Meissen in Saxony. His family came from Austria. His father was a lawyer ; his mother, a Hessian, was the daughter of a pastor. Of feeble health and long the only child of his parents, Karl did not go to school until the age of fifteen. He afterwards studied philosophy, history, mathematics, and philology at the university of Leipsic. In 1792 he went to Wittenberg as tutor to Count zur Lippe, and whilst there he began to study law. There he came greatly under the influence of Kant, traces of whose teaching remain even in his latest writings. In 1794 Zachariae became a privat-docent, lecturing on canon law, in 1798 extraordinary professor, and in 1802 ordinary professor of feudal law. From that time to his death in 1843, with the exception of a short period in which public affairs occupied him, he poured out a succes- sion of works covering the whole field of jurisprudence and extending into other adjoining regions. He was also in- defatigable in the labour of his chair, and he was the editor of, or a copious contributor to, more than one periodical. In 1807 he went to Heidelberg, then begin- ning its period of splendour as a school of law. There, resisting many calls to Géttingen, Berlin, and other univer- sities, he remained until his death. In 1811 he married under romantic circumstances. His wife died in four years.

In 1820 he was elected representative of the university in the first Baden chamber, and four years later was made a member of the second. From 1825 to 1829 he devoted much time to political affairs and to the preparation of a code. He was a constitutional reformer, averse to great or violent changes. He loved to cite the saying of the Roman emperor to his adopted son,—'"Imperaturus es hominibus qui nec totam servitutem pati possent nec totam libertatem,"—"'a truth," he observes in one of his many brochures (Die Souverainetdtsrechte der Krone Wiirtemberg, &c.),

“which no Government and no people should ever forget.” In 1842 he was ennobled with the title of Von Lingenthal. To the last days of his life he toiled with the ardour of a young student. His fame extended beyond Germany. The German universities then enjoyed by tacit consent a jurisdiction in regard to legal questions of international importance which had come down from the Middle Ages; and Zachariae was often consulted as to questions arising in Germany, France, and England. Elaborate “opinions,” some of them forming veritable treatises,—e.g., on Sir Augustus d’Este’s claim to the duke- dom of Sussex, Baron de Bode’s claim as an English sub- ject to a share in the French indemnity, the famous dispute as to the debts due to the elector of Hesse-Cassel, confis- cated by Napoleon, and the constitutional position of the Mecklenburg landowners,—were composed by Zachariae. He died on 27th March 1843, leaving a son who has worthily continued his father’s labours in jurisprudence.

Zachariae’s true history is in his writings, which are extremely numerous and inultifarious. They deal with almost every branch of jurisprudence ; they are philosophical, historical, and practical ; they relate to Roman, canon, German, and French law ; and his curlosity extended to the writings of his contemporaries, Bentham

and Austin. A work on Sulla, in whom he sees another Napoleon, and an unpublished translation of his favourite Tacitus were some of the fruits of his restless activity. The first book of much con- sequence which he published was Die Hinheit des Staats und der Kirche mit Riicksicht auf die Deutsche Reichsverfassung (1797), one of the most original of his works, displaying the writer’s power of analysis, his skill in making a complicated set of facts appear to be deductions from a few principles, — a study even now well worth reading. His themc is the relation of religion to the state. Zachariae undertakes to show that with Christianity three systems only are possible, —(1) what he calls the system of hierarchy, according to which the state is under the power of the church, the object of the former being subordinated to that of the latter ; (2) the territorial system, according to which the church is subject to the power of the state; and (8) what he terms the collegiate system, according to which neither of the two societies is subject to the other, and both have different objects in

view. The con- sequence of the adoption of these various systems—the principles of ae which must be accepted according as one or the other of them is supreme—he deduces with much acumen. While much of his work has lost its interest, it remains a luminous example of the application of the deductive process to historical investigation, a proof that legal conceptions may often serve to give unity to the complex facts of history. In 1805 appeared Versuch einer aligemeinen Hermeneutik des Rechts. Neither in English nor in Scotch legal literature is there any book, so far as known to the present writer, covering the field to which it relates. It is an attempt to found on the rules of grammar and logic a system of interpretation applicable to all systems of law. The weak part of the book is that, like so many of Zachariae's works, it stops short at the point where the inquiry would be most fruitful. I)lustra- tions are taken from Roman law ; we miss any adequate treatment of the problems which the forms of modern legislation raise. In 1806 appeared Die Wissenschaft der Gesetzgebung, a fragment, which is a curious outcome of the French Revolution. Impressed by the overthrow or decay of the forces which had hitherto held society together, he looked about for a better substitute for them than politique de circonstance offered. Many of Zachariae's maxims seem fanciful; there are divisions which do not elucidate, and distinctions made apparently for their own sake. But the work is interesting; it shows that the author was groping after the prin- ciple of utility as the guide of the legislator ; the study of very different facts had brought him independently to much the same conclusion as Bentham had reached. Zachariae's last work of importance was Vierzig Biicher vom Staate, published in 1839-42, with the motto non omnis moriar. This was his favourite work, and is the one to which his admirers point as his enduring monu- ment. Undoubtedly it contains much erudition and, what is rarer, many original ideas as to the future of the state and of law. It has been compared to L'Esprit des Lois, and Zachariae, in spite of his pedantry, has some tincture of the discursive brilliancy of Montesquieu. It covers no small part of the field of Buckle's first volume of the History of Civilisation. The reader will, however, seek in vain for any order or system in some of the chapters of Vierzig Biicher vom Staate. He was recasting many of his ideas as he wrote, and the book ends before the process is completed. Among the most esteemed of the works of Zachariae is that on Staatsrecht, of the originality of which he was proud, and his

treatise on the Code Napoléon, a marvellous work, considering it was composed by a German professor who did not much concern himself with this subject till somewhat late in life. There are no fewer than three French cditions of his book, and it has been trans- lated into Italian. Zachariae edited with Mittermaier the Kritische Zeitschrift fiir Rechiswissenschaft und Gesetzgebung des Auslandes, and the introduction which he wrote illustrates his wide reading and his constant desire for new light upon old problems.

Zachariae exhibits the best and the worst sides of German juris- prudence: there is the desire not to base generalizations or con- clusions on the peculiarities of any one system, but to master the Whole facts. He does not assume a distinction or classification of Roman law to be necessarily scientific. He seeks real reasons ; he avoids the English lawyer's favourite fallacy of proving idem per idem, of seeking to show the reasonableness of anything by saying the same thing again in different language. Though a scholar, Zach- ariae has not the weakness of exaggerating the importance of what- ever is rare or unpublished, and he has no delight in barren erudition. Himself a learned pandectist, he had cast aside his countrymen's proneness to find all things in the Corpus Juris. His books, how- ever, have the failings of so many German works on law. They want actuality ; they have little relation to the facts of life. They are leavened by metaphysics—often very bad metaphysics, and not always by the same system. Nor is he aclear thinker. We are never sure what is his notion of the province of jurisprudence ; his favourite idea appears to be that law creates among men an order similar to that which exists in the physical world, and that it is a security for the freedom of man's will. The influence of Kant is observable in all his works. In his later that of Hegel also appears ;

a

and his mental changes do not end there. He does not indeed say, "Back to Montesquieu; study facts, the simplest and primitive facts above all ; adopt his method, and improve upon it ;" but that is the wise spirit of some of his later works. Unfortunately he did not fulfil the promise which

they contain. He had not learned to distinguish sharply between the scicnce and the practical art of jurisprudence, and we are never certain in what capacity he speaks. He had not conceived clearly the truth that society forms one whole, that the phenomena of law at any given time or place are not acci- dents but the outcome of a long train of events, that, so regarded, they are as much susceptible of scientific treatment as the facts of language, and that a treatise on botany or, still more, one on com- parative philology is a better guide to what jurisprudence may yet be than a volume of Hugo or even Austin. It was made a reproach to Zachariae that he changed his opinions. He did so; it was a sign of his single- mindedness and restless curiosity. It is also one of the reasons why his works are now little read. They opened paths, and they were superseded by others which could not have existed without them.

There is no adequate account of Zachariae and his works; the best are

Robert von Mohl's Geschichte u. Literatur der Staatswissenschaften (1855-58) and Charles Brocher's K. 8. Zacharia#, sa Vie ct ses Euvres (1870). (J. Mt.)

ZACHARIAS, St, pope from 741 to 752, was a Greek by birth, and appears to have been on intimate terms with Gregory III, whom he succeeded (November 741). Contemporary history dwells chiefly on his great personal influence with the Lombard king Luitprand, and with his successor Rachis; it was largely through his tact in deal- ing with these princes in a variety of emergencies that the exarchate of Ravenna was rescued from becoming part of the Lombard kingdom.

ZAIRE," or Conco, designations of the river now gener- ally known under the latter name (see vol. i. pl. II.) This river system occupies a large part of equatorial Africa,— 1,5£0,000 square miles according to a probable estimate ; and in the length of its course (some 2900 miles) and the volume of its discharge (1,500,000 or at least 1,200,000 cubic feet per second) the river ranks among the most im- portant in the world.2_ The history of the exploration of the Congo basin is a matter of yesterday and to-day; and in several directions the exact limits, with the relations of the affluents to the system, have still to be determined. The mouth of the river lies on the west coast of the con- tinent in 6° S. lat. and 12° 25' E. long,

The head-waters of its most eastern stream (Malagarazi) rise only 370 miles from the Indian Ocean. The course of the main river de- scribes a vast bow, the central portion of which lies as far north as 2° N. lat.

To the north of the Lokinga or Mushinga Mountains, a range, reaching about 6000 feet in altitude, which sends its southward drainage to the Zambesi, lies Bangweolo (Bemba, Shuia, or Chama) Lake, at a height of 3700 feet above the sea according to Livingstone, or 4300 according to Giraud. It has a very irregular outline. Nowhere more than 18 or 20 feet deep, it is nevertheless fed by several large rivers, of which the Chambesi or Chasi ranks first. Livingstone, who discovered the Chambesi in 1867

1 Zaire is a Portuguese corruption of a native word. It is doubtful whether Congo was first the name of the kingdom or of the river; according to Janko (Petermann's Mitteilungen, 1888), the word prob- ably means originally a "spear." Stanley called the river the Living- stone; but this designation has not become popular.

- *Dr Murray of the "Challenger" Expedition estimates the mean annual discharge of the Congo at 419°291 cubic miles, making it in*

this respect only second to the Amazons (Scot. Geog. Mag., 1887). The annual rainfall of the basin he puts at 1213°344 cubic miles.

in 10° 34'S, lat., describes it as " flooded with clear water, not more than 40 yards wide, showing abundant animal life in its waters and on its banks." Its head-streams drain the country between the south end of Lake Tangan- yika and the north end of Lake Nyassa.

From the south-west extremity of Lake Bangweolo issues the Luapula, which is generally regarded as the main head- stream of the Congo. It is about 20 feet deep and 200 yards wide. Our knowledge of its course is still imper- fect, though from Giraud (1883) and Capello and Ivens (1884-85) we learn that it is interrupted by dangerous rapids (at Mambirima, é&c.) ; and there is no doubt that it is gradually deflected northwards and is the main affluent of Lake Moero. This extensive basin is quite different from

Lake Bangweolo: its southern end is situated in a low marshy plain and the difference between high and low water level is as much as the whole depth of Bang- weolo, From north to south the total length is upwards of 90 miles, though during the rainy season vast additional tracts to the south are under water. Several considerable affluents fall into the lake from the east. The river has not been followed between Lake Moero and Lake Lanji; but near the latter it is known to receive the Kamirondo from the left and the Lukugu from the right.

The basin of the Tanganyika is a " vast chasm enclosed within mountain ranges or cliffs, often rising steeply from the shore and terminating in elevated platcaus," with depths of 300 or 350 fathoms. The total length is 380 miles; and, while the northern end narrows to about 10 miles, the width towards the centre is from 30 to 50 miles. The islands are few and unimportant, and, except at the great peninsula of Ubwari on the west coast, near the northern end of the lake, the shore line is remarkably regular. The water is perfectly fresh. Of the various settlements on Tanganyika the most important is Ujiji (4° 54' S. lat. on the east coast), which formerly gave its name to the lake. "It is the terminus," in the words of Captain Hore, "of what for many years was the only safe and well-known route from the East Coast of Africa to the lake, and an important station upon a line of traffic, geographically suited and by common consent eget as convenient, right across the continent." Another point of interest is Karema (in 6° 50' 8. lat., on the eastern shore), originally a station of the African Interna- tional Association. A lighthouse has also been erected on Kavala Island.

The connexion of Tanganyika with the system of thc Congo is one of the most curious points in Central African hydrography. When Livingstone and Stanley were at Ujiji in 1871 the level of the lake was low. Between that date and 1874 it appears to have risen greatly, as Commander Cameron found that the Lukuga (mouth in 5° 35' S. lat.) was acting as an overflow pipe. In 1876 Stanley obtained further proof of the increase of the lake: three palm-trees which had stood in the market place of Ujiji in 1871 were then 100 feet in the lake, and the sand beach over which he had walked with Livingstone was over 200. But his careful exa- mination of the Lukuga outlet showed (curiously enough) that there was no distinct

outflow from the lake, though he thought it pretty certain that the Lukuga had at one time been an effluent and that it was about to resume its old function. In March 1879 Captain Hore placed a gauge on the shore at Ujiji. By the 27th of May he found the waters had fallen 2 feet, and in August 1880 they reached a point 10 feet 44 inches below the original mark. They were still subsiding in 1886. ;

The Lukuga outlet seems to be a comparatively modern formation. The portion towards Tanganyika appears to have been originally a stream flowing into the lake, all its affluents still having a lake- ward direction, while the section towards the Congo was a minor tributary of that river. At what period and by what circumstances the affluent was turned into an emissary it is hard to determine. Stanley proposed the bold theory that Tanganyika at one time consisted of two divisions, one at a higher level than the other, and that the sudden destruction of the barrier caused the lower lake to rise with such violence as to force a passage up the Lukuga and across the ridges to the Congo. Captain Storms suggests instead that Lake Hikwa or Rikwa (discovered by Joseph Thomson in 1880), which lies 50 miles to the east of Tanganyika, was more prob- ably the source of the inundation. A visit to the plain of Katawi convinced him that this must at one time have formed part of Lake Hikwa, then about three times its present size. About 12 leagues N.N.E. of Karema he says there is a gap in the chain which sepa- rates the basin of the smaller from that of the larger lake. Not improbably, however, no such cataclysm as that proposed by Stanley or Storms is really necessary to account for the Lukuga pheno-

menon. The very fact that, in the short space of time during which the Tanganyika has been observed by Europeans, its level has undergone such considerable alteration seems to suggest that a series of unusually rainy seasons may have been the source of all the inundation that was requisite. :

Below Lake Lanji there is another portion of the stream

still unexplored ; but from the junction of the Luama, a river 400 yards wide at its mouth (about 5° S. lat.), the whole course of the Congo down

to the Atlantic (1800 miles) is known. At Nyangwe the channel is about a mile wide, with (according to Stanley) a volume of 230,000 cubic feet per second. As it flows northward it receives the Elila, the Ulinde, the Lowa, and the Munduku Lilu, all of moderate importance. The first point of much interest is the series of cataracts known as the Stanley Falls, situated at the equator. The first cataract occurs just after the Congo has received the Black river and the Leopold river; about 6 miles farther down follow in somewhat rapid succession the second, third, fourth, and fifth ; and then the river is divided into two by the large inhabited island of Asama. The sixth cataract, caused by a broad dyke of greenish shale, does not occur for upwards of 20 miles, and between the sixth and seventh there is a distance of 25 miles. At the last of these the Congo is about 1300 yards broad, of which width 40 yards is occupied by the right branch, 760 yards by the island of Wemya, and 500 yards by the main river. The fall is only about 10 feet; but the enormous mass of water, and the narrow limits to which it is suddenly contracted, make it much more imposing than many a far loftier cataract. After passing the falls the first great left-hand affluent is the Lubilash or Boloko, first ascended by Grenfell in 1884 to the neighbourhood of 1° 30'. Next we come to an important right-hand affluent, the Aruwimi, Arawhimi, or Biyerre, which is now recognized as identical with the Nepoko, discovered by Junker in the south of the Monbuttu territory. About 24° 30'E. lat. this stream, which discharges 158,850 cubic feet per second, is interrupted by the Yam- buga Falls; but above the falls Stanley in 1887 found it navigable for his steel boat. Another right-hand affluent of similar rank is the Itimbiri or Loika, ascended in 1884 by Grenfell for 100 miles, as far as the Lubi Falls. No other tributary of equal importance is known to exist till we come to the Lulongo, about 45 miles north of the equator, formed by the junction of the Lopuri and the Masinga, which drain the country to the south of the great bend of the river. The Lopuri is 500 yards wide at the confluence and has a depth of from 7 to 8 feet. The Lulongo is 500 yards wide at its mouth and higher up occupies a channel from one-half to three-quarters of a mile in width. According to Von Frangois, it discharges 494,200 cubic feet per second. It was ascended in 1885 by Grenfell, who describes it as commercially the most im- portant affluent of the Congo, on account of the value of its ivory and slave trade. Just to the north of the equator is the junction of the Juapa or Chuapa, which

Grenfell has followed as far east as 23° E, long., a distance of 400 miles. This is Stanley's Black river. An unusual amount of geographical interest attaches to the next Congo tribu- tary—the Ubangi or Mobangi; if the latest reports are to be trusted, it is the recipient of the waters of the Welle-Makua, the river discovered by Schweinfurth in 1870, which has ever since been one of the hydrographic prob- lems of the time.? Grenfell ascended the Ubangi in 1885 for some distance above the rapids of Zongo, which are formed by the river striking athwart a line of hills Tunning north-west and south-east, with peaks from 600

; See Bull. Soc. Roy. Belge de Géog., 1886, or Scot. Geog. Mag., 1886.

i For the discussion of the Welle problem, see Mouvement Géogra- phique, 1886, Janko's resumé of theories in Scot. Geogr. Mag., 1888, and Wills's criticism of the same.

to 700 feet above the level of the stream. At this point the breadth is reduced to about 800 yards. In 1886 M. van Géle failed in his attempt to surmount the Zongo rapids ; but in 1888, according to the latest reports, he succeeded in advancing sufficiently far up the river (which turns eastward at the rapids) to prove its identity with the Welle-Makua. By this discovery the limits of the Congo basin are carried eastward as far as within 40 miles of the Nile at Wadelai—the Welle being mainly formed of the Kibali, a stream about 80 yards wide, whose head-waters rise in that neighbourhood.? Quite a multitude of second- ary streams join the upper course of the Ubangi, and it continues to receive accessories from the north and west. till it merges in the longer river, into which it is calculated to pour about 529,500 cubic feet per second. Its last right- hand tributary probably drains the Tukki swamp in 13 K. long. The Nghiri Muinda or Loij, a comparatively small river draining the peninsula between the Ubangi and the Congo, joins the former about 30' N. lat., with a current 100 yards wide and from 15 to 20 feet deep. It was ascended by the " Henry Reed" in 1886 as far as Mikutu (1° 20' N. lat.), where the stream, still 9 feet deep, was found to be formed of a number of small channels issu- ing from a swampy forest. The Ibangi, a right-hand tributary of the Ubangi, was also navigated for 60 miles, to a spot where the depth was

still 10 feet; but the passage was obstructed by a barrier of tree trunks. The ascent of the Lobay, which is about 200 yards wide and 13 feet deep at its junction with the Ubangi in 3°50' N. lat., was interrupted at a distance of 40 miles by a three-foot fall.

A short distance below the confluence of the Ubangi and Congo there enters from the left the emissary of Mantumba Lake, a considerable basin discovered by Stanley in 1883 and since examined by W. H. Bentley in the missionary ship " Peace." When the Congo is in flood there is a back-flow into the lake, and, as the whole country is very flat, it is quite possible that there is a connexion both with the Uruki and Bussera, on the one hand, and with Lake Leopold IL, on the other. This latter lake is much larger, and is certainly connected southward with the Lukinje or Lukatta, a tributary of the Kassai.

In its further course the Congo is joined by a number of moderate-sized streams from the west. Below Lukolela it spreads out into a kind of river lake 20 to 25 kil. (123 to 154 miles) wide, and along its left bank extends a swampy region, the chain of low wood-covered hills which has hitherto confined the valley retiring for a mile or two. In 3° 15'S. lat. it receives its last great affluent—the Kassai or Kwa, which has recently been proved to be the most important of the southern or left-hand, as the Ubangi is the most important of the northern or right-hand, tribu- taries. The Kassai rises to the south of 12' S. lat. and flows north through Muata Yamvo's kingdom. In its upper course it possibly receives an emissary from Lake Dilolo, which also sends a branch south to the Zambesi. As it advances northwards it is joined by a large number of streams, all generally flowing northward. The Kassai enters the Congo in 3°10' 8. lat., with a depth of 25 to 80 feet and a breadth of 600 yards, at a height of 942 feet above the sea. The exploration of the system was carried out by Wissmann, Wolf, Von Francois, and Mueller in 1883-85. The Kassai itself has been ascended as far as the Wissmann Fall in 5° 40'S. lat., and its course has been struck at Digundu in 10° S. lat. The Lulua, which joins it from the right, is known as high up as Kangombe Fall ; it is there about 200 yards wide ; but it does not become truly navigable till it is joined by the Luebo. The San- kuru, at one time supposed to flow directly into the Congo,

3 See map illustrating the journeys of Dr W. Junker,

Proc. Roy Geogr. Soc., 1887.

LAL—ZLAM

enters the Kassai by two arms, 820 feet and 200 feet in breadth, in 4° 17'S. lat. and 20° 15' E. long., its bright yellow waters forming a strong contrast with the brown of the larger stream. The Kuango, a fine stream, with its head-waters in the same district as those of the Kassai, flows in a wonderfully straight course north to join that river in 17° 30' E. long. It was ascended by Mechow in 1880 as far as the rocky ledge at Kikamshi or Kinganshi ; and, though it is only 3 feet high, the same barrier pre- vented the ascent of Grenfell's steamer in 1887. For 87 miles after receiving the Kassai or Kwa the Congo flows in a deep gorge, between banks sometimes 700 feet high. In 4° 5' §. lat. it enters Stanley Pool, an island-studded lake 1147 feet above the sea, expanding southward of the main course of the river. Its rim is "formed by sierras of peaked and picturesque mountains, ranging on the southern side from 1000 feet to 3000 feet in height." The banks offer considerable variety in character. A striking object on the north bank is the Dover Cliffs, so named by Stanley from their white and glistening appear- ance, produced, however, not by chalk but by silver sand, the subsidence of which into the water renders approach to the bank sometimes dangerous. Towards the lower end of the lake the country on both sides becomes comparatively low and flat, and at places swampy. On the south side, however, stands the great red cliff of Kallina Point (about 50 feet high), so named after an Austrian lieutenant drowned there in 1882. Round the point rushes a strong current 74 knots an hour, difficult to stem even for a steamer. On the river, as it leaves the Pool, are situated (south side) Leopoldville, founded by Stanley in 1881, and Brazzaville, a station established by the French explorer De Brazza. Below Stanley Pool the Congo begins to break through the coast ranges, and forms a long series of rapids and falls, often enclosed between rocky shores, and even cliffs. Among the more important falls are those named Mahiney, Zinga, Ntambo, Uataka, Itunzima, Isan- gila, Ngoma, and Yellala. At Yellala, just above Vivi, the river escapes into the lowlands and is navigable for the rest of its journey to the sea (113 miles). Below Boma

(5° 48’ S. lat.) it widens out and is interrupted by numer- ous islands ; but it does not break up into several channels so as to form a delta, though there are various creeks that appear as if they might yet become deltaic outlets. Be- tween Banana Point on the north and Shark Point on the south the mouth of the Congo has a width of 7 miles. At Banana Point (at which there is not a vestige of the plant whose name it bears) there is fair harbourage for sea-going vessels. Shark Point is also known as Padron Point, from the remains of a stone pillar (padrdo) erected by the Portuguese explorer Diogo Cao (visited by Burton, 1863; by Daunett, 1887).

The exploration of the Congo system has been accompanied and followed by one of the most remarkable political movements of modern times. On 15th September 1876 the International African Association was constituted, under the presidency of Leopold IL., king of the Belgians, for the purpose of devising the best means of opening up equatorial Africa to civilization. Later on (25th November 1878) was founded under the same auspices a Comité d’Etudes du Haut Congo, which afterwards became known as the International Association of the Congo. It was as an agent of this association that Mr Stanley undertook his epoch-making ascent of the river in 1879. In September the first permanent station of the association was founded at Vivi;! in December the second at Jangila ; and in May 1881 the third at Manyanga. The associa- tion was recognized as an independent territorial government by the United States in April 1884 and by Germany in November of the same year. An international conference for the regulation of the relations of the new state and the various European Govern- ments was held at Berlin under the presidency of Prince Bismarck (15th November 1884-26th February 1885). The permanent neu-

1 See list of stations—some of which have been since abandoned— in Scot. Geogr. Mag., 1885.

trality of the Congo State territory, freedom of commerce in the Congo basin, and the abolition of the slave trade were among the main points established by the plenipotentiaries. In the close of 1884 and the early

part of 1885 the association was recognized by England (16th December 1884), Italy, Austria-Hungary, the Nether- lands, France, &e. In April 1885 the Belgian chamber of repre- sentatives authorized King Leopold to become sovereign of the new state—the union between Belgium and the Congo to be purely personal. The total area of the Independent State of the Congo, as it is officially designated, is estimated at 807,125 square miles, and its population may be about 40,000,000. It has a very limited coast-line, being hemmed in by French territory on the north and by Portuguese territory on the south. The southern limit is a conventional line from Nokki (on the south bank of the river below Vivi) across the continent to Langi Lake; the northern limit follows the fourth parallel of N. lat. from 17° to 30° E. long. French territory occupies all the north bank of the river from Ngombi (15 E. long.) up to Lukolela. In 1888 the state main- tained 146 white officials, and had a force of upwards of 1000 native soldiers (Zanzibaris, Haussas, and Bangalas). It has four steamers on the lower Congo and five on the upper. The value of the commerce is as yet only £560,000, the principal exports being india-rubber, ivory, coffee, palm nuts and oil, copal, and wax. As to the possibility of developing the country into a great consumer of European goods, there has been much and bitter discussion ; at the present stage it is admitted that it has no native product of value in sufficient quantity to pay for a large importation. The river, however, has recently been proved navigable for sea-going vessels as far as the capital, Boma, and no serious difficulties have been met by the engineers engaged in surveying a railway from the

lower Congo up to Stanley Pool.

See Stanley, The Dark Continent and The Congo; Johnson, The Congo to Bolobo; Thy, Aw Congo et au Kasai, 1888 ; Coquithat, Sur le Haut Congo, 1888; Wiss- mann, Wolf, &c., Im Innern Afrikas, 1888.

ZALEUCUS. See Locrt.

ZAMBESI, the most important river on the East Coast of Africa (see vol. i. pl. II.), and the fourth largest on the continent, drains during its course of about 1200 miles an area of 600,000 square miles. Its head-streams, which have not yet been fully explored, are the Leeambye or Iambaji,

rising in Cazembe's country; the Lungebungo, which descends from the Mossamba Mountains; and the Leeba river, from the marshy Lake Dilolo (4740 feet), situated between 10° and 12° S. lat. and 22° and 23° E. long. These three rivers, reinforced by the Nhengo, unite to form the upper Zambesi (Leeambye), which flows at first southwards and slightly eastwards through the Barotse valley, then turns prominently to the east near its junction with the Chobe (Chuando or Linianti), and passes over the Victoria Falls. Thence, as the middle reach of the Zambesi, the river sweeps north-east towards Zumbo and the Kebrabassa rapids above Tete, and finally forms the lower Zambesi, which curves southwards until it reaches the Indian Ocean at 18° 50'S. lat. Fed chiefly from the highland country which stretches from Lake Nyassa to inner Angola, its chief tributaries are the Loangwa and the Shiré, the last an important river draining out of Lake Nyassa, and which in the dry season contains probably as great a volume of water as the Zambesi, and is much more navigable. Except for an interruption of 70 miles at the Murchison cataracts, the Shiré is open throughout its en- tire length to the lake.

On the whole the Zambesi has a gentle current, and flows through a succession of wide fertile valleys and richly wooded plains; but, owing to the terrace-like structure of the continent, the course of the river is interrupted from point to point by cataracts and rapids. These form serious, and in some cases insurmountable, hindrances to navigation. Those on the lower Zambesi begin with its delta. The bar here was long held to be impassable, except to vessels of the shallowest draught ; but the difficulty was exaggerated partly through ignorance and partly in the interests of the Portuguese settlement of Quilimane, which, before the merits of the Kongone entrance were understood, had been already established on the Qua-qua river, 60 miles to the north. The Zambesi is now known to have four mouths, the Milambe to the

west, the Kongone, the Luabo, and the Timbwe. The best of these, the Kongone, has altered and the channel im- proved recently. There are at least 18 feet of water on the bar at high water neap tides; and steamers drawing 15 feet, and sailing vessels drawing 3 feet less, have no diffi-

culty in entering. The deep water continues only a short distance ; and, after Mazaro (60 miles) is reached, where the river has already dwindled to the breadth of a mile, the channel is precariously open in the dry season as far as Senna (120 miles from the mouth) for vessels drawing 41 feet. Up to this point navigation could only be suc- cessfully and continuously carried on by vessels of much lighter draught—stern-wheelers for preference with a draught of little more than 18 inches, About 90 miles from Senna the river enters the Lupata gorge, the im- petuous current contracting between walls to a width of scarcely 200 yards. Passing Tete (240 miles from the mouth with a smooth course), the channel becomes danger- ous at Kebrabassa, 90 miles farther on. From the Kebra- bassa rapids upwards, and past the Victoria Falls, there are occasional stretches of navigable water extending for considerable distances, while the upper Zambesi with its confluents and their tributaries forms a really fine and ex- tensive waterway. Like the Nile, the Zambesi is visited by annual inundations, during which the whole country is flooded and many of the minor falls and rapids are then obliterated.

The chief physical feature of the Zambesi is the Mosi- oa-tunya ("smoke sounds there") or Victoria Falls, ad- mitted to be one of the noblest waterfalls in the world. The cataract is bounded on three sides by ridges 300 or 400 feet high, and these, along with the many islands dotted over the stream, are covered with sylvan vegetation. The falls, according to Livingstone, are caused by a stupendous crack or rent, with sharp and almost unbroken edges, stretching right across the river in the hard black basalt which here forms the bed. The cleft is 360 feet in sheer depth and close upon a mile in length. Into this chasm, of more than twice the depth of Niagara, the river rolls with a deafening roar, sending up vast columns of spray, which are visible for a distance of 20 miles. Unlike Niagara, the Mosi-oa-tunya does not terminate in an open gorge, the river immediately below the fall being blocked at 80 yards distance by the opposing side of the (supposed) cleft running parallel to the precipice which forms the waterfall. The only outlet is a narrow channel cut in this barrier at a point 1170 yards from the western end of the chasm and some 600 from its eastern, and through this the Zambesi, now only 20 or 30 yards wide, pours for 120 yards before emerging into the enormous zig-zag trough which conducts the river past the basalt plateau.

The region drained by the Zambesi may be represented as a vast broken-edged plateau 3000 or 4000 feet high, composed in the remote interior of metamorphic beds and fringed with the igneous rocks of the Victoria Falls. At Shupanga, on the lower Zambesi, thin strata of grey and yellow sandstones, with an occasional band of limestone, crop out on the bed of the river in the dry season, and these persist beyond Tete, where they are associated with extensive seams of coal. Gold is also known to occur in several places.

The higher regions of the Zambesi have only been visited by one or two explorers ; and the lower, though nominally in possession of the Portuguese since the beginning of the 16th century, are also comparatively little known. The Barotse valley or valley of the upper Zambesi 1s a vast pastoral plain, 3300 feet above sea-level about 189 miles in length and 30 to 35 broad. Though inundated in the rainy season, it is covered with villages and supports count- less herds of cattle. The Luinas who inhabit it are clothed with skins, work neatly in ivory, and live upon milk, maize, and sweet potatoes. In the neighbourhood of the falls the tsetse fly abounds so that the Batoka people who live there, and who are the only

arboriculturists in the country, live upon the produets of their gardens. Zumbo, on the north bank, and Chicova, opposite on the southern side (500 miles above the delta), were the farthest inland of the Portuguese East African settlements, and are well placed for commerce with the natives. Founded by Pereira, a native of Goa, these settlements were ultimately allowed to go to ruins; but Zumbo has been recently re-occupied. The onee eclebrated gold mines of Parda Pemba are in the vicinity. The only other Portugucse settle- ments on the Zambesi are Tete and Senna. Tete, formerly a large and important plaee, now nearly in ruins, still possesses a fort and several good tiled stone and mud houses. Thither Portuguese goods, ehiefly wines and provisions, are carried by means of canoes. The exports, which inelude ivory, gold dust, wheat, and ground- nuts, are limited owing to the diffieulty of transport ; but this diffi- culty is not insurmountable, for Tete has been twice visited by small

steam vessels. Senna, farther down the river, a negleeted and unhealthy village, has suffered much from political mismanage- ment, and has ceaseless troubles with the Landeens or Zulus, who own the southern bank of the river and collect in force every year to exact a heavy tribute-money. The industrial possibilities of the lower Zambesi, and indeed of the whole river-system, are enormous. India-rubber, indigo, archil, beeswax, and calumba root are plenti- ful, and oil seeds and the sugar-cane could be produeed in sufficient quantity to supply the whole of Europe.

The Zambesi region was known to the medieval geographers as the empire of Monomotapa, and the course of the river, as well as the position of Lakes N'gami and Nyassa, was filled in with a rude approximation to aeeuraey in the earlier maps. These were prob- ably construeted from Arab information. The first European to visit the upper Zambesi was Livingstone in his exploration from Beehuanaland between 1851 and 1853. Two or three years later he descended the Zambesi to its mouth and in the course of this journey diseovered the Victoria Falls. In 1859, aecompaniéd by Dr Kirk (now Sir John Kirk), Livingstone ascended the river as far as the falls, after tracing the course of its main tributary the Shiré and diseovering Lake Nyassa. The mouths of the Zambesi were long claimed exelusively by the Portuguese, but in 1888 the British Government opened negotiations with Portugal to have the river declared free to all nations. (EE TD»)

ZAMORA, an inland province of Spain, one of the three into which the former province of Leon has since 1833 been divided, is bounded on the W. by Tras-os-Montes (Portugal) and Orense, on the N. by Leon, on the EF. by Valladolid, and on the S. by Salamanca; its area is 4135 square miles. It is traversed from east to west by the Douro, which receives within the province the Val- deraduey and the Esla on the right and the Guarefia on the left ; the Tormes also skirts the south-western boundary for some 25 miles. Except in the north-west and west, where it is entered by spurs from the Cantabrian chain (Sierra de la Culebra and Sierra de Peiia Negra), the pro- vince is flat ; its lowest point is 1070 feet above sea-level. Its plains, especially the "tierra de campo" formed by the valley of the Esla, yield large quantities of grain and pulse ; wine and flax are also

produced ; and on the higher grounds large numbers of merino sheep are fed. The industries of Zamora are unimportant. The province is traversed by no railway except that connecting its capital with Medina del Campo on the northern line. There are eight partidos judiciales and 300 ayuntamientos ; besides ZAMORA (see below), the capital, there is only one town, the historic city of Toro (7754), with a population exceeding 5000. The total population of the province in 1877 was

250,000.

ZAMORA, capital of the above province, is situated 2000 feet above sea-level, on the right bank of the Douro (here crossed by a bridge of seventeen pointed arches) a little below its junction with the Valderaduey, 57 miles by rail west by north from Medina del Campo and 182 miles north-west from Madrid. The population in 1877 was 13,632. It has a small but fine Romanesque cathedral (completed about 1174) and an ancient castle, as well as several other interesting churches of the 12th century. It is the seat of a seminary and an academy of engineering, and has unimportant linen and woollen manufactures.

In the early period of the Christian re-conquest Zamora, from its

position on the north of the Douro, was a place of considerable strategie importanee. It was taken from the Arabs by Alonso the

the karudolia, which yields the best edible olive berry. For size, vigorous growth, and productiveness the olive tree of Zante is rivalled only by that of Corfu.

Catholic in 748, but was again held by them for short periods in 813, 939, 963, 984, and 986. It was entirely repaired by Ferdinand I., who in 1061 gave it to his daughter Dofia Urraca. After his death in 1065 Sancho disputed possession with his sister and laid siege to the town, but without success, although the famous Ruy Diaz de Bivar was among his warriors, and indeed at this time received his title of El Cid Campeador. The town became subject to Alphonso VI. in 1073.

ZANESVILLE, a city of the United States, the county seat of Muskingum county, Ohio, is situated on both banks of the Muskingum river, at the mouth of Licking river, 170 miles north-east of Cincinnati and 37 nearly due south of Cleveland. The surrounding country is thickly popu- lated, the inhabitants being engaged in agriculture and in coal and iron mining. Zanesville has railway communica- tion by several lines. The population in 1880 was 13,13, showing a gain of about 80 per cent. since 1870.

Zanesville was founded about the beginning of the 19th century, and in 1804 was made the county seat. From 1810 to 1812 the Ohio legislature met at Zanesville. It was incorporated as a city in 1855. Its growth prior to 1870 was slow.

ZANTE, the ancient Zacynruvs, an island of Greece, one of the Ionian group, in the Ionian Sea, in 37° 40' N. lat. and 21° E. long., is 25 miles long, about 12 broad, and 64 miles round, with an area of 277 square miles, and a population in 1879 of 44,522, and estimated in 1887 at 48,000. Zante lies 8 miles south of Cephalonia, forming with it, Leucas, and Ithaca a crescent-shaped insular group, which represents the crests of a submerged limestone ridge facing the Gulf of Patras. At Ithaca, its northernmost

member, the ridge almost touches the adjacent coast of Acarnania, with which it is geologically connected ; and at

Zante, its southernmost member, it recedes about 15 miles from the coast of Elis in Morea. Zante is of somewhat

irregular oval shape, with its main axis disposed in the

direction from north-west to south-east, and indented by a deep inlet at its southern extremity. The surface is mainly occupied by an extensive and highly productive central

plain, skirted on the west side by a range of bare limestone

hills from 1000 to 1200 feet high, which fall gently land- wards, but present bold steep cliffs towards the sea, and which culminate northwards

in Mount Skopos d 500 feet ?), the highest point in the island. On the east side the plain is also limited by a low ridge, which still justifies the epithet of nemorosa, or the " wooded," applied by Virgil to Zacynthus. These hills are densely clothed to their summits with an exuberant growth of olives, figs, myrtles, laurels, oranges, aloes, vines, and other sub-tropical plants. Travel- lers sailing between this coast and the mainland describe in enthusiastic language the charming effect produced by these masses of evergreen vegetation rising in long terraces above the surrounding waters, and everywhere interspersed with pleasant homesteads and hamlets embowered in verdure. Nevertheless Zante, notwithstanding its Italian title of "Fior di Levante," is inferior in picturesque beauty to Corfu, owing to the less elevation of its hills and the somewhat monotonous character of the great central plain. This plain, however, is highly cultivated, forming an almost continuous stretch of gardens and vineyards, varied here and there with a few patches of cornfields and pasture lands. Here is grown a peculiar dwarf vine, whose fruit, the "currant" (from "Corinth ") of commerce, forms the chief resource and staple export of Zante, as well as of the neighbouring mainland. In 1886 the currant crop for the whole of Greece was valued at £2,000,000, of which nearly one-fifth was raised in Zante, chiefly for the English market. The vine, which grows to a height of 3 feet, begins to yield in seven years and lasts for over a century. From the grape, which has a pleasant bitter-sweet taste, a wine is also extracted, which is said to excel all others in flavour, fire, and strength. Besides this species, there are nearly forty different kinds of vine and ten of the olive, including

The island enjoys a healthy climate ; and, although there arc no perennial streams, an abundant supply of good water is obtained from the numerous springs, occurring espetially in the eastern and central districts. But earthquakes are frequent and at times disastrous. During recent times the most destructive were those of 1811, 1820, and 1840 ; and, although the prevailing geological formations are sedimentary, chiefly calcareous, there seems no doubt that these disturbances are of igneous origin. Other indications of voleanic agency are the oil springs occurring on the coast, and even in the bed of the sea near Cape Skinari

on the north side, and especially the famous pitch or bituminous wells already mentioned by Herodotus (Hist., bk. iv.). These have been productive through- out the historic period and still yield a considerable supply of pitch. They are situated in a swamp near the coast village of Chieri, and comprise two basins, with alternate layers of water and bitumen, the lower sheet of water apparently communicating with the sea.

Zante, capital of the island, is a considerable seaport on the east side, with a population of 16,250 (1879). It occupies the site of the ancient city of Zacynthus, said to have been founded by Zacynthus, son of a legendary Arcadian chief, Dardanus, to whom was also attributed the neighbouring citadel of Psophis. But of this, as well as of the temple of Diana that formerly crowned the summit of Mount Scopus, no vestiges can now be discovered.

Traditionally the island formed part of the territory of Ulysses, king of Ithaca, and at one time it appears to have also received a colony of Achzans from Peloponnesus. Later it joined the Athenian hegemony ; but after the fall of Athens the democratic party was replaced by an oligarchy, which ruled in the interests of Sparta. Under the Romans Zacynthus was included in the province of Epirus, and passed in medizval times successively from Byzantium to the Normans (11th century), the Orsini, counts of Cephalonia (after the 4th crusade), and the Tocco family, who held it with Cephalonia as vassals of the Neapolitan Angevine dynasty. In the 15th century it was occupied by the Venetians, and was held by them till the fall of the republic in 1797. Wrested in 1799 by the Russians from the French, it was soon after seized by the English, and in 1815 constituted with the other Ionian Islands a ' sept- insular republic" under British protection, till the union with Greece in 1864.*

The long Venetian occupation is reflected in the appearance, character, and to some extent even the language and religion of the Zantiots. Nearly all the aristocracy claim Venetian descent ; most of the upper classes are bilingual, speaking both Greek and Italian ; and a considerable section of the population are Roman Catholics of the Latin rite. Even the bulk of the people, although mainly of Greek stock, form in their social usages a connecting link between the Hellenes, whose language they speak, and

the Western nations by whom they were so long ruled. They have the reputation of being industrious and enterprising, but passionate and revengeful. But no more high-minded, enlightened, and courteous people can anywhere be found than in the cirele of the Maddalenas, Terzettis,

Mercatis, and other families of Venetian lineage.

See Balthazar Raimondini, De Zacynthi Antiquitatibus ; C. Parrigopoulo, Histoire de la Civilisation Hellénique; S. de Nolhac, La Dulmatie, les les loniennes, &c., Paris, 1882.

ZANZIBAR, or, more correctly, ZANGUEBAR, a sultanate of east central Africa, which till recently comprised the four islands of Zanzibar, Pemba, Lamu, and Mafia (Monfia), together with the adjacent seaboard from about 3° N. to 10° S. lat., with undefined limits towards the interior. But by the Anglo-German convention, signed in London on 29th October 1886, the territory on the mainland was restricted to the strip of coastlands ten nautical miles broad, stretching from the mouth of the Miningani river at the bay of Tunghi, just south of Cape Delgado, northwards to Kipini at the mouth of the Tana, together with the isolated stations of Kisimayu (Kismayu), Brava, Merka, and Magdoshu (Magadoxo) on the Somal coast, each with a land circuit of ten nautical miles, and Warsheikh on the same coast, with a land circuit of five nautical miles. Since then, however, further changes have taken place. The sultan's officers have been replaced in the seaports of Dar-es-Salaam and Pangani on the Zanzibar coast proper by commissioners of the German East African Association, to whom the customs of those places have been farmed 5 the port of Tunghi below Cape Delgado has been claimed and forcibly occupied (1887) by the Portuguese; the island of Pemba appears to have been ceded (May 1888) to the

recently chartered British East African Company ; lastly,

the station of Kisimayu on the Somal coast is claimed

(June 1888) by Italy in reparation of an affront offered to

the Italian consul at Zanzibar. But, as defined by the

above-mentioned convention, the reduced dominions of the sultan have areas (in square miles) and estimated populations (1887) as under :—

Popula- tion.

220,000

10,000 7,000 20,000 500,000 8,000

Total…

7420

765,000

The political and commercial, as well as the geographical, centre of the state is the fertile and densely peopled island of Zanzibar, which lies at a mean distance of 20 miles from the Swahili coast, between 5° 40’ and 6° 30’S. lat. With the neighbouring Pemba (to the north) and the more distant Mafia (to the south) it forms an independent geological system, resting on a foundation of coralline reefs, and constituting a sort of outer coast-line, which almost every- where presents a rocky barrier to the fury of the waves rolling in from the Indian Ocean. All three are disposed parallel to the adjacent seaboard, from which they are separated by shallow waters, mostly under thirty fathoms, and strewn with numerous reefs dangerous to navigation, especially in the Mafia channel opposite the Rufiji delta.

Mafia itself is low and fertile, and extensively planted with cocoa-nut palms. It is continued southwards by an extensive reef, on which stands the chief village, Chobe, the residence of the governor and of a few Arab and Hindu (Banyan) traders. Chobe stands on a shallow creek inac- cessible to shipping.

Zanzibar, the Unguya of the natives, is not exclusively of coralline formation, but also presents several heights of a reddish ferruginous clay,

rising in gentle slopes above the central plains. In the south these heights nowhere exceed 400 or 450 feet ; but on the north-west coast they develop a chain of hills disposed parallel to the shore and attain- ing an elevation of a little over 1000 feet. The forests by which the island was formerly covered have mostly dis- appeared, and the greater part of the rich soil is carefully cultivated, yielding two annual crops of corn, and four of manioc, the staple food of the people. There are extensive cocoa-nut groves, and from India and Malaysia have been introduced the mangosteen, guava, durian, cinnamon, nut- meg, and cloves, all of which thrive well. The soil seems specially suited for the clove, which, although nearly destroyed by the terrific cyclone of 1872, has already re- covered from that disaster, and the annual export of this spice now exceeds £10,000 in value. Although the fauna is almost exclusively continental, Zanzibar till recently possessed a distinct variety of Colobus (C. kirkii), which appears to be now extinct.! Some years ago a hippopo- tamus visited the island from the mainland 3 but no car- nivora are now found larger than the serval and wild cat.

On the east side of the island there still survive a few groups of Wa-Hadimu Bantus, who represent the aboriginal stock. But elsewhere, and especially in the capital (for which, see below), the population is of an extremely hetero- geneous character, including full-blood and half-caste Arabs Indian "Canarians" (that is, half-caste Portuguese from Kanara on the Malabar Coast of India), Swahili of every shade, slaves or freedmen from all parts of East Africa Europeans, and Americans, (See SWAHILI.)

1H. H. Johnston, The Kilima-Njaro Expedition, p. 38.

Ak, SEZ TB ee

The neighbouring island of Pemba, intersected by 5° S. lat., is even more fertile, but much less cultivated, than Zanzibar. From the luxuriant vegetation which every- where clothes the cliffs to their summits it takes the name of the "Green." The land is exclusively owned by great Arab proprietors, who work their plantations with scarcely disguised slave labour and export considerable quantities of cloves, which here also find a congenial home. The capital, Shaki-Shaki, which lies at the head of a

shallow creek on the west side, is inaccessible to shipping. But at Kishi-Kashi, at the north-west extremity, there is a deep and well-sheltered harbour, though of somewhat difficult approach. Here resides the chief of the Arab landed aristocracy, who has hitherto been more of a vassal than a subject of the sultan, and whose allegiance has lately been transferred to the British East African Association.

Lamu also, the fourth member of the sultan's former insular possessions, has ceased to fly the Zanzibar flag. It is a small flat island lying close to the mainland above the mouth of the Ozi branch of the Tana delta, and appears to be now incorporated in the adjacent German territory of Vitu land. Lamu, its capital, with a reported population of 15,000, has a fine harbour, formed by a long deep channel separating it from the neighbouring island of Manda.

The Zanzibar seaboard (now more generally known as the Swahili coast) is a low-lying swampy and alluvial region, rising gently from the sea towards the first terraced escarpments of the continental plateau. Owing to the numerous streams reaching the coast along this seaboard — Rovuma, Ukeredi, Umbi-Kuru, Rufiji, Rufu, Wami, Umba, and others—a great part of the surface consists of rich alluvial soil, densely covered with a tropical vegetation. Here the warm currents setting landwards from the Indian Ocean bring both moisture and heat, so that this coast has a higher temperature and heavier rainfall than the Atlantic seaboard under the same parallels of latitude.2 Thanks to these conditions, while the climate is oppressive and malari- ous, the vegetation is extremely luxuriant, assuming about the marshy deltas the aspect of an impenetrable jungle of mangroves, reeds, and tall grasses, growing to a height of 12 or 14 feet. A characteristic plant is the msandarus? or copal-tree of the lower Rufiji valley, which yields the best gum known to commerce. Other economic plants more or less extensively cultivated are rice, maize, millet, the cocoa-nut and oil palm, besides several European species already acclimatized at Bagamoyo and other stations. But nearly the whole of this region is well suited for raising tropical produce, such as sugar, coffee, cotton, indigo, cinna- mon, cloves, and other spices.

Besides Dar-es-Salaam and Pangani, surrendered to the Germans (see above), the chief stations and seaports, going northwards, are Lindi, Kilwa (Quiloa), Bagamoyo, Mombasa (Mombas), and Malindi (Melinda). Of these Bagamoyo is at present the most important, as the starting-point of travellers and traders for the interior. Here are also the headquarters of the French Roman Catholic missions in east equatorial Africa, with training schools, extensive plantations, and gardens of acclimatization. Kilwa, Mom- basa, and Malindi, great and flourishing emporiums under the Zen} empire, are now almost abandoned. This remark applies also to Magdoshu, the chief isolated station on the Somal coast belonging to Zanzibar.

From the earliest times of which there is any authentic record the whole of the seaboard from the Somal coast to an unknown distance southwards was comprised within the dominions of the

Zenj (Zang) potentates, who for centuries claimed and vindicated the title of "sovereign of the sea." From them the seaboard

a a aa ae cade abe eae

? Mean temperature of the West and East Coasts 72° and 80° Fahr. respectively ; average annual rainfall at Zanzibar 60 inches ; at Loanda (Atlantic side) 36 inches; rainfall at Zanzibar in 1859 (exceptional) 170 inches.

LAN—ZAR

island of the site of the city. Down to 1873 Zara was strongly fortified; but its ramparts have now been con- verted into elevated promenades, which command extensive views to seaward and to landward. Of its four old gates one, the Porta Marina, incorporates the relics of a Roman arch, and another, the Porta di Terraferma, was designed by Sanmichele. oval in form, is thoroughly Venetian. dividing it into four quarters, are straight and wide, but the side-streets are ill-paved and narrow.

itself took the name of zangucbar,! the Balid-ez-Zenj, or " Land of the Zenj" of the Arabs, a term which thus corresponds to the Hindu-bar, or

“land of the Hindu,” formerly applied to the west coast of India on the opposite side of the intervening Arabian Sea. By Ibn Batuta and other Arab writers the Zen) people them- selves are spoken of in a general way as Mohammedan Negroes ; and they are no doubt still represented by the semi-civilized and highly intelligent Mohammedan Bantus now collectively known as the Swahili or “coast people.” Their empire began to decline soon after the appearance of the Portuguese in the eastern waters towards the close of the 15th century. To them fell in rapid suc- cession the great cities of Kilwa with its 300 mosques (1505), Montbasa the “ Magnificent” (1505), and soon after Malindi and Magdoshu the “Immense” (Ibn Batuta). On the ruins of the Portuguese power in the 17th century was built up that of the imams of Muscat, who ruled over a great part of south Arabia and the whole of the Zanzibar coast for over a century and a half down to 1856. On the death of the imam, or rather the “sayyid,” Said of Muscat in that year his dominions were divided between his two sons, the African section falling to Majid, who was suc- ceeded in 1870 by his younger brother Bargash ibn Said, commonly known as sultan of Zanzibar. He lived long enough to witness the recent dismemberment of his dominious, and in March 1888 left to his son and successor, Sayyid Khalif, a mere fragment of the former powerful Mohammedan empire on the East-African seaboard. The administration of the “ten-mile zone” on the mainland, al- though reserved to the sultan by the Anglo-German convention of 1886, was practically surrendered to the Germans in August 1888 when the German East African Company hoisted their flag jointly with the sultan’s at fourteen ports along this seaboard.

See J. L. Krapf, Travels, &c., London, 1830; Baron von der Decken, Reisen in Ost-Afrika, Leipsic, 1869; Captain R. F. Burton, The Lake Regions of Central Africa, London, 1860; Keith Johnston and A. H. Keane, Africa (Stanford series), London, 1878; H. M. Stanley, Through the Dark Continent, London, 1878; H. H. Johnston, The Kilima-Njaro Expedition, London, 1885; Joseph Thomson, To the Central African Lakes, &c., London, 1881. (Usk, 181, UC

ZANZIBAR, capital of the island and state of the same name, is the largest city on the African seaboard next to Alexandria and Tunis. It lies

in sheltered waters, from 30 to 40 feet deep, on the west side of the island, in 6° 10’ 8. lat., about 25 miles north-east of Bagamoyo, its port on the mainland. It comprises two distinct quarters, —Shangani, the centre of trade and residence of the sultan, and the eastern suburb occupied by the lowest classes (fishermen, porters, slaves, &c.), with a total joint population estimated in 1887 at about 100,000. Viewed from the sea, the place presents a pleasant prospect with its glittering mosques, palace, white houses, barracks, forts, and round towers, But the interior is a labyrinth of narrow filthy streets, winding through a dense mass of hovels, a “cesspool of wickedness Oriental in its appearance, Mohammedan in its religion, Arabian in its morals, . . . a fit capital for the Dark Continent.”? Nevertheless Zanzibar, which is now regularly visited by several lines of ocean steamers, is the necessary centre of trade for the eastern seaboard, the focus of all exploring and missionary work for the interior, the portal through which civilizing influences have hitherto penetrated into the eastern section of equatorial Africa. The imports, chiefly raw and bleached cottons and European wares, were valued at £1,220,000 in 1883, the exports at £800,000, of which £215,000 represented ivory, £153,000 caoutchouc, £13,000 sesame seed, £10,600 cloves. In 1885 the port was visited by 124 vessels of 115,500 tons, of which 49 of 60,674 tons were British. There are several Protestant and Roman Catholic missions stationed in Zan- zibar, the health of which has been much improved by a recently constructed aqueduct yielding a good supply of pure water.

ZARA (Slav. Zadar), an Austrian seaport, the capital of Dalmatia, and the seat of a Roman Catholic archbishop and of a Greek bishop, lies on the Adriatic, 130 miles south-east of Trieste, opposite the islands of Ugliano and Pasman, from which it is separated by the narrow Channel of Zara. The promontory on which it stands is separated from the mainland by a deep moat, practically making an

1 Mispronounced Zanzibar by the local Banyans and other Indian

traders. ? Prof. H. Drummond, Tropical Africa, p. 5.

The general aspect of the town, which is The main streets,

The chief interest of Zara lies in its churches, the most remarkable

of which is the cathedral of St Anastasia, a fine Roman-

esque basilica, founded by Doge Enrico Dandolo after the capture of the town in 1202 and finished in 1205. The churches of St Chrysogonus and St Simeon are also in

the Romanesque style, and St Mary's retains a fine Roman-

esque campanile of 1105. The old octagonal church of St Donatus, traditionally (but in all probability erroneously) said to have been erected in the 9th century on the site of

a temple of Juno, has been converted to secular purposes.

Most of the Roman remains were used up in the construc- tion of the fortifications, But two squares are embellished with lofty marble columns ; a Roman tower stands on the east side of the town ; and some remains of a Roman aque- duct inay be seen outside the ramparts. Among the other chief buildings are the Loggia del Comune, rebuilt in 1565, containing a public library of 34,000 volumes; the old palace of the priors, now the governor's residence ; and the episcopal palace. The harbour, to the north-east of the town, is safe and spacious, and it is annually entered by about 1200 vessels, of 185,000 tons, mainly engaged in the coasting trade. The chief industry is the preparation of maraschino, made from the marasco, or wild cherry, which covers the hills of Dalmatia, About 340,000 bottles of this liqueur are exported annually. Glass-making and fishing are also carried on. The population of the town in 1881 was 11,861, of the commune 24,536. Almost all of these are of Italian descent, and Italian is practic- ally the only language spoken in the town.

The foundation of Zara is ascribed by tradition to the Liburni. In the early days of the Roman empire it became a flourishing Roman colony under the name of Jadera, subsequently changed to Diadora. It remained

united with the Eastern empire down to about the year 1000, when it sought the Venetian protection. For the next four centuries it was a bone of contention between Venice and Hungary, changing hands repeatedly. It was occupied by the Hungarians at the end of the 12th century, but was re-captured by the Venetians in 1202, with the aid of French crusaders on their way to the Holy Land. In 1409 it was finally purchased from Hungary by the island republic for 100,000 ducats. In 1792 it passed, with Venice, into the possession of Austria. Fro1h 1809 to. 1813 it belonged to France.

About 15 miles to the south-east lies Zara Vecchia, or Old Zara, an insignificant village on the site of Biograd (White Town), formerly the residence of the Croatian kings, but destroyed during the Hungarian-Venetian wars.

Comp. Zara, e suoi Dintorni (Zara, 1878), and Notize Storiche della Citta di Zara (Zara, 1883), both by Angelo Nani.

ZARAGOZA, or Saracossa, an inland province of Spain, one of the three into which Aragon is now divided, is bounded on the N.E. and E. by Huesca, Lerida, and Tarragona, on the S. by Teruel and Guadalajara, and on the W. by Soria and Navarre; the area is 6607 square miles. It belongs wholly to the basin of the Ebro, by which river it is traversed from north-west to south-east. The main valley is bounded on the 8.W. by the Sierra de Moncayo, which reaches a maximum elevation—the highest in the province—of 7700 feet, and is continued ina south- easterly direction by the lower sierras of La Virgen and Vicor ; on the north-west are the spurs of the Pyrenees. The principal tributaries of the Ebro within the province are the Jalén, Huerva, and Aguas on the right and the Arva and Gallego on the left ; the Aragon also, which flows principally through Navarre, has part of its course in the

north of this province. At its lowest point, where the Ebro quits it, Zaragoza is only 105 feet above sea-level. The soil is in its level portions

comparatively fertile, the chief productions being wheat, rye, barley, oats, hemp, flax, oil, and wine. Silkworms are bred; and on the higher grounds sheep are reared. There are considerable forests on the lower mountain slopes. Zaragoza has no manufac- tures of importance. The province is traversed by the Ebro Valley Railway, which connects Miranda on the northern line with Lerida, Barcelona, and Tarragona, and has a branch to Huesca ; it also has communication with Madrid ; and there are local lines to Carifiena (south-west from Zaragoza) and to Puebla de Hijar (along the right bank of the Ebro). The Aragon Canal, originally intended to con- nect the Mediterranean with the Atlantic, is open from Tudela (El Bocal) to a point below Zaragoza. 'There are 13 partidos judiciales and 312 ayuntamientos; of these only Calatayud (11,512) and Zaracoza (see below) have more than 10,000 inhabitants. The total population of the province in 1877 was 400,587.

ZARAGOZA, capital of the above province, formerly ingdom of Aragon, lies at a

pel

EAN

Plan of Zaragoza.

1,2. Railway sta- 5. Archbishop's 10. Academy of 13. Cathedral of tions. palace. Fine Arts. La Seo.

3. Cathedral del 6. Aljaferia. 11. Government 14. University. Pilar, or of 7. Bull-ring. Offices. 15. Capitania the Pillar. 8. Civil hospital. 12. Church of St general,

4, Municipal 9. Military hos- Philip and 16. 8. Engracia. buildings. pital. St James.

feet above sea-level, on a rich plain on the right bank of the Ebro, just above its confluence with the Huerva, 212 miles by rail to the north-east of Madrid. The river js here crossed by a fine stone bridge of seven arches, erected in 1437, and another bridge—of iron—much needed for

the convenience of through railway traffic, is projected. Seen from a distance, the city with its numerous domes and towers has an imposing appearance, which it hardly main- tains on a nearer approach. The older streets are narrow, gloomy, and ill paved ; the massive buildings formerly in- habited by the Aragonese nobility are either in ruins or turned into wood-stores and granaries; and an air of poverty and decay pervades the whole town. By the river side there are public walks and avenues of poplar. The two most important buildings of Zaragoza are its cathedrals, in each of which the chapter resides alternately for six months. La Seo (‘The See”) is the older of the two, dating chiefly from the 14th century; its prevailing style is Gothic but the oldest portion, the lower portion of the apse, is Byzantine, and the fagade is of the Late Pseudo-Classical style, by which so many churches in Spain have been dis- figured. The Iglesia Metropolitana del Pilar is the larger and more modern building, dating only from the latter

half of the 17th century ; it was built after designs by Herrera el Mozo, and owes its name to one of the most venerated objects in Spain, the “ pillar ” of jasper on which the Virgin is said to have alighted when she manifested herself to Santiago as he passed through Zaragoza. It has no architectural merit ; externally its most conspicuous features are its domes, which are decorated with rows of green, yellow, and white glazed tiles. The church of San Pablo dates mainly from the 13th century. Adjoining the church of San Felipe is the Torre Nueva, an octangular clock tower in diapered brickwork, dating from 1504; it leans some 9 or 10 feet from the perpendicular, owing to faulty foundations. Among other conspicuous public build- ings are the municipal buildings, the exchange (Lonja), and the civil and military hospitals, which are among the largest in Spain. The university was founded in 1474, but its history has not been brilliant. To the west of the town is the Aljaferia or old citadel, an irregular pile origin- ally built as a palace by the Moors and also used as such by its Christian owners. It was afterwards assigned by Ferdinand and Isabella to the Inquisition, and has since been used as barracks, a

military hospital, and a prison ; it is now unoccupied and falling into decay. The chief manufactures of Zaragoza are silk, woollen cloth, leather, saltpetre, soap, and chocolate; and there is considerable trade in agricultural produce, and in wine and spirits. The population of the town in 1877 was 84,575.

Zaragoza, the Celtiberian Salduba, was colonized at the close of the Cantabrian War (25 3.c.) by Augustus, who gave it his own name, Cesarea Augusta, or Cexsaraugusta. It was a colonia immunis and the seat of a conventus juridicus. No remains of the ancient city have been preserved. It was taken by the Goths about 466 and in 712 by the Moors. In 1118 it was recovered by Alonso el Batallador of Aragon after a siege of five years, during which the defenders were reduced by famine to the direst straits. In 1710 Stanhope defeated the French under Philip V. not far from the town. The most memorable recent events in the history of Zaragoza are those which took place during the Napoleonic invasion. In 1808 the citizens rose against the French, and, under the command of PaLaFox (q.v.), defended the town for two months. The first siege was raised on 15th August 1808 ; but the respite then gained was not made use of to strengthen the defences, and, when the enemy renewed their attack in greater force in December, the place was compelled to surrender (20th February 1809), after losing in all nearly 60,000 men.

ZARLINO, Gioszrre or Gruserre (1517-1590),! musi- cal theorist, surnamed from his birthplace, ZarLmnus CLODIENSIS, was born at Chioggia, Venetia, in 1517. Studying in his youth for the church, he was admitted to the minor orders in 1539 and ordained deacon in 1541 at Venice ; but he soon devoted himself entirely to the study of music under the guidance of Adrian Willaert, then choir- master at St Mark's. Willaert, dying in 1562, was suc- ceeded by Cipriano di Rore, on whose removal to Parma in 1565 Zarlino was elected choir-master. Though now re- membered chiefly as a theorist, it is evident that he must have been famous both as a practical musician and as a composer ; for, notwithstanding the limited number of his printed works, consisting of a volume entitled Modulationes Sex Vocum (Venice, 1566), and a few motets and madrigals scattered through the collections of Scotto and other con- temporary publishers, he both produced and superintended the

public performance of some important pieces in the service of the republic. First among these was the music written to celebrate the battle of Lepanto (7th October 1571). Again, when Henry ITI. of France passed through Venice on his return from Poland in 1574, Zarlino directed on board the " Bucentaur" the performance of an ode for which he himself had composed the music, to verses supplied by Rocco Benedetti and Cornelio Frangipani. The ode eae 0. We A

! Burney and Hawkins place Zarlino's birth in 1540, and his death

in 1590. Caffi gives the true dates. Zarlino himself tells us that he was ordained deacon in 1541.

was followed by a solemn service in St Mark's, in which Zarlino's music formed a prominent feature, and the festival concluded with the representation of a dramatic piece entitled Orfeo composed by Zarlino. S. Maria della Salute was founded in 1577 to commemo- rate the plague, he composed a solemn mass for the occa- sion. Not one of these works is now known to be in existence ; the only example we possess of Zarlino's com- positions on a grand scale is a MS. mass for four voices, in the library of the Philharmonic Lyceum at Bologna. He died at Venice on 14th February 1590.

Fortunately for the science of music, Zarlino's theoretical writings have all been preserved. Though he was by no means free from

certain visionary ideas concerning the transcendental powers of

music, in which the theorists of the 16th century delighted, Zarlino was, in practical knowledge and intelligent application of scientific truth to the development of art, immeasurably in advance of the age in which he lived. His clear insight into the mathematical foundation of the scale placed him in direct antagonism to the leaders of the school of the Renaissance, which, with Vincenzo Galilei at its head, blindly followed the mistaken reasoning of Boetius (see vol. xvii. p. 80), and adhered as a matter of principle to the Pythagorean section of thecanon. This

difference of opinion, occur- ring ata critical period in the development of art, made Zarlino many bitter enemies ; but he steadily maintained his principles in temperate and unanswerable argument; and his theory is now accepted as the basis of modern art, while that of his opponents is utterly discarded.

Zarlino's first theoretical work was the Istitutiont Armoniche (Venice, 1558 ; reprinted 1562 and 1573). This was followed by the Dimostrationt Armoniche (Venice, 1571; reprinted 1573) and by the Sopplimenti Musieali (Venice, 1588). Finally, in a complete edition of his works published shortly before his death Zarlino reprinted these three treatises, accompanied by a T'ract on Patience, a Discourse on the True Date of the Crucifixion of Our Lord, an essay on Zhe Origin of the Capuehins, and the Resolution of Some Doubis Coneerning the Correetion of the Julian Calendar (Venice, 1589).}

The Jstitutiont and Dimostrationt Armoniche deal, like most other theoretical works of the period, with the whole science of music as it was understood in the 16th century. The earlier chapters, treat- ing chiefly of the arithmetical foundations of the science, differ but little in their line of argument from the principles laid down by Pietro Aron, Zacconi, and other early writers of the Boetian school; but in bk. ii. of the Jstitutioni Zarlino boldly attacks the false system of tonality to which the proportions of the Pythagorean tetrachord, if strictly carried out in practice, must inevitably lead. The fact that, so far as can now be ascertained, they never were strictly carried out in the Italian medixval schools, at least after the invention of counterpoint, in no wise diminishes the force of the reformer's argument. The point at issue was, that neither in the polyphonic school, in which Zarlino was educated, nor in the later monodic school, of which his recalcitrant pupil, Vincenzo Galilei, was the most redoubtable champion, could those proportions le tolerated in practice, however attractive they might be to the theorist in their mathematical aspect. So persistently does the human ear rebel against the division of the tetrachord into two greater tones and a leimma or hemitone, as represented by the fractions 3, 3, 243, that, centuries before the possibility of recon- ciling the demands of the ear with those of exact science was satis- factorily demonstrated, the Aristoxenian school

advocated the use of an empirical scale, sounding pleasant to the sense, in preference to an unpleasing tonality founded upon immutable proportions. Didymus, writing in the year 60, made the first step towards estab- lishing this pleasant-sounding scale upon a mathematical basis, by the discovery of the lesser tone ; but unhappily he placed it in a false position below the greater tone. Claudius Ptolemy (130) recti- fied this error, and in the so-called syntonous or intense diatonic scale reduced the proportions of his tetrachord to $, 3%, 43,—i.¢., the greater tone, lesser tone, and diatonic semitone of modern music." Ptolemy set forth this system as one of eight possible forms of the diatonic scale. But Zarlino uncompromisingly de- clared that the syntonous or intense diatonic scale was the only form that could reasonably be sung; and in proof of its perfection he exhibited the exact arrangement of its various diatonic intervals, to the fifth inclusive, in every part of the diapason or octave. The proportions are precisely those now universally accepted in the

1 Ambros mentions an edition of the Istitutiont dated 1557, and one of the Dimostrationt dated 1562, The present writer has never met with either.

2 We have given the fractions in the order in which they occur in the modern system. Ptolemy, following the invariable Greek method, placed them thus—}%, §, 3. This, however, made no difference in the actual proportions.

When the church of

system called "just intonation." But this system is practicable only by the voice and instruments of the violin class. For keyed or fretted instruments a compromise is indispensable. To meet this exigency, Zarlino proposed that for the lute the octave should be divided into twelve equal semitones ; and after centuries of dis- cussion this system of 'equal temperament" has, within the last thirty-five years, becn universally adopted as the best attainable for keyed instruments of every description.3

Again, Zarlino was in advance of his age in his classification of the ecclesiastical modes. These scales were not, as is vulgarly sup- posed, wholly abolished in favour of our modern tonality in the 17th century. Eight of them, it is true, fell into disuse; but the medieval Ionian and Hypo-ionian modes are absolutely identical with the modern natural scale of C ; and the Holian and Hypo- zolian modes differ from our minor scale, not in constitution, but in treatment only. Medieval composers, however, regarded the Ionian mode as the least perfect of the series and placed it last in order. Zarlino thought differently and made it the first mode, changing all the others to accord with it. His numerical table, therefore, differs from all others made before or since, prophetically assigning the place of honour to the one ancient scale now recognized as the foundation of the modern tonal system.

These innovations were violently opposed by the apostles of the monodie school. Vincenzo Galilei led the attack in a tract entitled Discorso Intorno alle Opere di Messer Gioseffe Zarlino, and followed it up in his famous Dialogo, defending the Pythagorean system in very unmeasured language. It was in answer to these strictures that Zarlino published his Sopplementi.

ZEA. See Cros.

ZEALAND, or SsAELLAND, the largest and most easterly island of DENMARK (¢.v.), is separated from Fiinen on the west by the Great Belt and from Sweden on the east by the Sound ; its greatest length from north to south is 81 miles, its breadth 65, and its area 2636 square miles.‘ Its surface is for the most part undulating, but on the whole little above sea-level; the highest elevations are in the south-east, where Cretaceous hills (the oldest geological formation on the island) reach heights of upwards of 350 feet. The coast is indented by numerous deep bays and fjords : the Ise fjord in the north in particular, with its branches the Roeskilde fjord on the east and the Lamme fjord on the west, penetrates inland for about 40 miles. There are no rivers of importance ; but several large lakes, the most considerable being Arre and Esrom, occur in the north-east. The soil is fertile and produces grain, especi- ally rye and barley, in great abundance, as well as potatoes and other vegetables, and fruit.

Agriculture and cattle- raising, along with some fishing, are the leading occupa- tions of the inhabitants ; linen is almost the only article of domestic industry. The population in 1880 was 610,000. The principal towns, besides CopENHAGEN (q.v.), the capital (234,850 inhabitants in 1880), are Roeskilde (5893), formerly the capital and still the see of the primate; Elsinore (8978); Slagelse (6076), a great agricultural centre ; Soré (1464), formerly the seat of a university and still educationally important ; and Korsér (3954), the port for mail steamers to the mainland, connected by rail with Soré, Roeskilde, and Copenhagen.

ZEALAND, the most westerly province of Holland, is bounded on the north by South Holland, on the east by North Brabant and Belgium, on the south-east and south by Belgium, and on the west by the North Sea. Its area is 689 square miles, the greater part of which consists of the islands Schouwen, Duiveland, St Philipsland, Tholen, North, South, and East Beveland, Wolfaartsdyk, and Wal- cheren. 'The greater part of the surface is below sea-level. The westward coasts of Schouwen and Walcheren are partly sheltered by dunes; but the province is mainly

3 It was first used in France, for the organ, in 1835; in England, for the pianoforte in 1846 and for the organ in 1854. Bach had advocated it in Germany a century earlier; but it was not generally adopted.

4 The province of Zealand and Méen, which includes the island of Samsé as well as that of Méen, has an area of 2828 square miles and a population of 721,703 ; the "stift" or bishopric of Zealand includes also the island of Bornholm.

dependent for protection from the sea on its artificial dykes, which have a total length of 300 miles, and on the repair of which upwards of £80,000 is spent annually. The soil consists of a fertile sea clay (see vol. xii. p. 62), which specially favours the production of wheat ; much rye is also cultivated, as well as barley (for malting), beans and pease, flax, and madder. Cattle and swine are reared, and dairy produce is largely exported ; but the sheep of the province are small and their wool indifferent. The indus- tries (linen, yarn-spinning, distilling, brewing,

salt-refining, shipbuilding) are comparatively unimportant. The in- habitants, who still retain many quaint and archaic peculiarities of manner and dress, speak the variety of Dutch known as Low Frankish (see vol. xii. p. 84). The capital is Middelburg (population 16,378 in 1887), in Walcheren, where also is Flushing (12,005). The total population of the province in 1887 was 198,567.

ZEBRA. In the article Horsz (vol. xii. p. 175) the general zoological and anatomical characters of the genus Fquus, and its relationship to other animals, were fully described. Among the existing species mention was made of certain forms distinguished from the rest by the peculiar coloration, being marked by conspicuous dark stripes on a lighter ground, and by their exclusively African habitat. These are the Quacea (see vol. xx. p. 146) and two, if not three, distinct species to which the name zebra is com- monly applied. The animal of this group which was first known to Europeans, and was formerly considered the most common, is the True Zebra (Zquus zebra, Linn.), sometimes called the Mountain Zebra. It inhabits the mountainous regions of the Cape Colony; but now, owing to the advances of civilized man into its somewhat restricted range, it has become very scarce, and is even, like its ally the quagga, threatened with extermination at no distant date. The second species, Burchell's Zebra (Zquus burch- ell, Gray), still roams in large herds over the plains to the north of the Orange river, but in yearly diminishing numbers, Both species are subject to considerable indi- vidual variations in marking, but the following are the

principal characters by which they can be distinguished. Equus zebra is the smaller of the two (about 4 feet high at the shoulders), and has longer ears, a tail more scantily clothed with

Fig, 1.—True or mountain zebra (Equus zebra).

The and the stripes are black; the lower brown.

thighs, the whole of the surface is covered with stripes, the legs

hair, and a shorter mane. general ground colour is white,

i : part of the face is bright With the exception of the abdomen and the inside of i

having narrow transverse bars reaching quite to the hoofs, and the base of the tail being also barred. The outsides of the ie have a white tip and a broad black mark occupying the greater part of the surface, but are white at the base. Perhaps the most

ZEB—ZEB

constant and obvious distinction between this species and the next is the arrangement of the stripes on the hinder part of the back, where there are a number of short transverse bands reaching to the median longitudinal dorsal stripe, and unconnected with the uppermost of the broad stripes which pass obliquely across the haunch from the flanks towards the root of the tail. There is often a median longitudinal stripe under the chest.

Equus burchelli is a rather larger and more robust animal, with smaller ears, a longer mane, and fuller tail. The general ground colour of the body is pale yellowish brown, the limbs nearly white, the stripes dark brown or black. In the typical form they do not extend on to the limbs or the tail; but there is a great variation in this respect, even in animals of the same herd, some being striped quite down to the hoofs (this form has been named EZ. chapmanni).

ryt

LMIWNSS y Yayo ONIN ld! Fig. 2.—Burchell's zebra (Z. burchelli).

There is a strongly marked median longitudinal ventral black stripe, to which the lower ends of the transverse side stripes are usually united, but the dorsal stripe (also strongly marked) is com- pletely isolated in its posterior half, and the uppermost of the broad haunch stripes runs nearly parallel to it. A much larger proportion of the ears is white than in the other species. In the middle of the wide intervals between the broad black stripes of the flanks and haunches fainter stripes are generally seen.

E. grevyi.—Under this name a zebra has lately been described which was sent in 1882 to Paris from the Galla country, lying to the south of Abyssinia, the most northern locality in which zebras have hitherto been met with. In most ofits characters it resembles E. zebra, but the stripes are finer and more numerous than in the typical examples of that species, and it has a strong, black, and isolated dorsal stripe. Considering the great variations that are met with in the markings of animals of this group, it is doubtful whether the aberrant characters of this individual are sufficient to separate it eae! from the true zebra of South Africa. The question will be cleared up when any complete scientific examina- tion has been made of other specimens, and also of the zebras which are known to exist in the neighbourhood of Lake Nyanza, and which are apparently of the same form. It is curious that the most northern and the most southern of the districts inhabited by zebras both contain identical or closely allied species, while the interme- diate territory is occupied by a totally different form, EZ. burchelli. It should be mentioned that the last-named animal is generally spoken of as the "quagga" by colonists and hunters. Its flesh is relished by the natives as food, and its hide is very valuable for leather, Although the many attempts that have been made to break in and train zebras for riding or driving have sometimes been rewarded with partial success, the animal has never been domesticated in the true sense of the word. (W. H. F.)

ZEBULUN (aban), one of the twelve tribes of Israel,

derived, according to Gen. xxx. 20, from the sixth son of Leah. The verse offers two etymologies of the name, from the roots ZBD, "give," and ZBL, "inhabit." The form ZoBovdwv (LXX.), with 6 in the last syllable, agrees with the vocalization of the adjective 955301, "Zebulonite." The

country of Zebulun lay in the fertile hilly country to the north of the plain of Jezreel, which forms the first step towards the mountains of Asher and Naphtali, and in- cluded the goodly upland plain of Battauf. The descrip-

tion of its boundaries in Josh. xix. 10 sg. contains few names that can be identified with any certainty : Chisloth- tabor is apparently the modern

Iksil, a little to the west of Tabor, Daberath the modern Dabiriya, at the foot of Tabor, Gath-hepher (A.V. Gittah-hepher) the village of Al-Meshhed, and Remmon Rummana. Thus the eastern boundary laid down in Conder and Kitchener's reduced Ordnance Survey map comes too near the Lake of Tiberias. The west boundary is not defined in Josh. xix., but should agree with the somewhat vague east boundary of Asher in verse 27. At one period Zebulun must have reached the sea and bordered on Pheenician territory (Gen. xlix. 13, Deut. xxxiii. 18, 19). In the latter passage allusion is made to a feast upon a sacred mountain (Mount Tabor ?) held by Zebulun and Issachar in common, and to the wealth these tribes derived from commerce by sea. Zebulun had a chief part in the war with Sisera (Jud. iv. 6); it furnished one of the judges, Elon the Zebulonite (Jud. xii. 11, 12); andthe prophet Jonah, who foretold the victories of Jeroboam IL, came from the town of Gath-hepher (2 Kings xiv. 25). The captivity of the northern tribes under Tiglath Pileser (2 Kings xv. 29) appears to have included Zebulun (Isa. ix. 1 [viii. 23]). Nazareth lay within the territory of Zebulun, but is not mentioned in the Old Testament.

ZECHARIAH, son of Berechiah, son of Iddo, or by con- traction son of Iddo, appeared as a prophet in Jerusalem along with Hacear (g.v.), in the second year of Darius Hystaspes (520 8.c.), to warn and encourage the Jews to address themselves at length to the restoration of the temple, which, since their return from exile eighteen years before, had lain unaccomplished, less through want of zeal than through the pressure of unfavourable circumstances. Supported by the prophets, Zerubbabel and Joshua set about the work, and the elders of Judah built and the work went forward (Ezra v. 1 sq., vi. 14). The first eight chapters of the book of Zechariah exactly fit into this his- torical setting. They are divided by precise chronological headings into three sections,—(a) chap. i. 1-6, in the eighth month of the second year of Darius; (6) chap. i. 7-vi. 15, on the twenty-fourth day of the eleventh month of the same year ; (c) chap. vii.~~viii, on the fourth day of the ninth month of the fourth year of Darius. The first sec~~ tion is a preface containing exhortation in general terms. The main section is the second, containing a series of night visions, the significant features of which are pointed out by an angel who stands by the prophet and answers his questions.

i. 7-17. The divine chariots and horses that make the round of the world by Jehovah's orders return to the heavenly palace and report that there is still no movement among the nations, no sign of the Messianic crisis. Seventy years have passed, and Zion and the cities of Judah still mourn. Sad news! but Jehovah gives a comfortable assurance of His gracious return to Jerusalem and the rebuilding of His temple.

i. 18-21 (Heb. ii. 1-4). Four horns, representing the hostile world-power that oppresses Israel and Jernsalem, are routed by four smiths.

ii. 1-18 (Heb. ii. 5-17). The new Jerusalem is laid out with the measuring line. It is to have no walls, that its population may not be limited, and it needs none, for Jehovah is its protection. The catastrophe of the nations is near to come; then the exiles of Zion shall stream back from all quarters, the converted heathen shall join them, Jehovah Himself will dwell in the midst of them, even now He stirs Himself from His holy habitation.

iii. 1-10. The high priest Joshua is accused before Jehovah by Satan, but is acquitted and given rule in Jehovah's house and courts, with the right of access to Jehovah in priestly intercession. The restoration of the temple and its service is a pledge of still higher things. The promised " branch" (or " shoot," MD¥), the Messiah, will come: 7.¢., the Persian lordship hasan end ; the national king- dom is restored in its old splendour ; and a time of general felicity dawns, when every man shall sit happy under his vine and under his fig tree. As by rights the Messianic kingdom should follow immediately on the exile, it is probable that the prophet designs to

(73

hint in a guarded way that Zerubbabcl, who in all other places is mentioned along with Joshua, is on the point of ascending the throne of his ancestor David. The jewel with seven facets is already there, only the inscription has still to be engraved on it (iii. 9). The charges brought against the high priest consist simply in the obstacles that have hitherto impeded the restoration of the temple and its service ; and in like manner the guilt of the land (iii. 9) is simply the still continuing domination of foreigners.

iv. 1-14. Beside a lighted golden candlestick of seven branches stand two olive trees—Zerubbabel and Joshua, the two anointed ones—specially watched over by Him whose seven eyes run through the whole earth. This explanation of the vision is separated from the description by an animated dialogue, not quite clear in its expression, in which it is said that the mountain of obstacles shall disappear before Zerubbabel, and that, having begun the building of the temple, he shall also bring it to an end in spite of those who now inock at the day of small beginnings.

v. 1-4. A written roll flies over the Holy Land; this is a con- crete representation of the curse which in future will fall of itself on all crime, so that, ¢.g.. no man who has suffered theft will have occasion himself to pronounce a curse against the thief (¢f. Jud. Xvil. 2).

v. 5-11. Guilt, personified as a woman, is cast into an epha- measure with a heavy lid and carried from Judah to Chaldea, where it is to have its

home for the future.

vi. 1-8. The divine teams, four in number, again traverse the world toward the four winds, to execute Jehovah's commands. That which goes northward is charged to wreak His anger on the north country. The series of visions has now reached its close, returning to its starting-point in i. 7 sqq.

An appendix follows (vi. 9-15). Jews from Babylon have brought gold and silver to Jerusalem ; of these the prophet must make a crown designed for the " branch " who is to build Jehovah's house and sit king on the throne, but retain a good understanding with the high priest. Zerubbabel is certainly meant here, and, if the received text names Joshua instead of him (vi. 11), this is only a correction, made for reasons easy to understand, but which breaks the context and destroys the sense and the reference of " them both" in verse 13.

The third section (chaps. vii.-viii.), dated from the fourth year of Darius, contains an inquiry whether the fast days that arose in the captivity are still to be observed, with a comforting and encouraging reply of the prophet.

Thus throughout the first eight chapters the scene is Jerusalem in the early part of the reign of Darius. Zerub- babel and Joshua, the prince and the priest, are the leaders of the community. But, while the spiritual head is in office, the authority of the civil head is rather moral than official, and is not so much actual as hoped for. The great concern of the time and the chief practical theme of these chapters is the building of the temple; but its restoration is only the earnest of greater things to follow, viz., the glorious restoration of David's kingdom. The horizon of these prophecies is everywhere limited by the narrow con- ditions of the time, and their aim is clearly seen. The visions hardly veil the thought, and the mode of expression is usually simple, except in the Messianic passages, where the tortuousness and obscurity are perhaps intentional. Noteworthy is the affinity between some notions evidently not franied by the prophet himself and the prologue to Job,—the heavenly hosts that wander through the earth and bring back their report to Jehovah's throne, the figure of Satan,

the idea that suffering and calamity are evidences of guilt and of accusations presented before God.

Passing from chaps. i.-viii. to chaps. ix. sg., we at once feel ourselves transported into a different world.

Jehovah's word is accomplished on Syria-Pheenicia and Philistia ; and then the Messianic kingdom begins in Zion, and the Israelites detained among the heathen, Judah and Ephraim combined, receive a partin it. The might of the sons of Javan is broken in battle against this kingdom (ch. ix.). After an intermezzo of three verses (x. 1-38: " Ask rain of Jehovah, not of the diviners") a second and quite analogous Messianic prophecy follows. The foreign tyrants fall ; the lordship of Assyria and Egypt has an end ; the autonomy and martial power of the nation are restored. The scattered exiles return as citizens of the new theocracy, all obstacles in their way parting asunder as when the waves of the Red Sea gave passage to Israel at the founding of the old theocracy (x. 3-12). Again there is an interlude of three verses (xi. 1-8): fire seizes the cedars of Lebanon and the oaks of Bashan, which the rabbins refer to the

burning of the sanctuary of Jerusalem.! The difficult passage about the shepherds follows. y :

The shepherds (rulers) of the nation make their flock an article of trade and treat the sheep as sheep for the shambles. Therefore the inhabited world shall fall a sacrifice to the tyranny of its kings, while Israel is delivered to a shepherd who feeds the sheep for those who make a trade of the flock (jN¥T "IYI3, xi. 7, 11="they that sell them," ver. 5) and enters on his office with two staves, " Favour i and "Union." He destroys "the three shepherds" in one month, but is soon weary of his flock and the flock of him. He breaks the staff " Favour," 7.¢., the covenant of peace with the nations, and asks the traders for his hire. Receiving thirty pieces of silver, he casts it into the temple treasury and breaks the staff " Union 4.€., the brotherhood between Judah and Israel. He is succeeded by a foolish shepherd, who neglects his flock and lets it go to ruin. At length Jehovah intervenes; the foolish shepherd falls by the sword ; two-thirds of

the people perish with him in the Messianic crisis, but the remnant of one-third forms the seed of the new theocracy (xi. 4-17 taken with xiii. 7-9, according to the necessary transposition proposed by Ewald). All this must be an allegory of past events, the time present to the author and his hopes for the future beginning only at xi. 17, xiii. 7-9. The general situation is clear: foreign kings govern Israel through native princes. The details cannot be explained in the absence of information as to the date and historical course of the events described by the prophet in allegorical form. But those who seek to escape this difficulty, by supposing that the word of the prophet was unintelligible to lus contemporaries, and gained a true meaning only in its New Testament fulfilment,? must forget that in Zech. xi. 9 the shepherd wearies of his office and abandons the flock, while in the New Testament the shepherd gives his life for the sheep, and that in Zech. xi. 12, 18 the price is paid to the shepherd, but in the New Testament to the traitor. ;

Chap. xii. presents a third variation on the Messianic promise. All heathendom is gathered together against Jerusalem and perishes there. Jehovah first gives victory to the countryfolk of Judah and then they rescue the capital. "After this triumph the noblest houses of Jerusalem hold, each by itself, a great lamentation over a martyr "whom they have pierced" (or " whom men have pierced "). In xii. 10 bys followed by yy cannot be right. If TN be deleted, we may read WW bye, but not WN yyy, which is not Hebrew. Yet it is very doubtful if the deletion of NN is justifiable or suffi- cient. It is taken for granted that the readers will know who the martyr is, and the exegesis of the church applies the passage to our Lord. Chap. xiii. 1-6 is a continuation of chap. xii. ; the dawn of the day of salvation is accompanied by a general purging away of idolatry and the enthusiasm of false prophets. Yet a fourth varia- tion of the picture of the incoming of the Messianic deliverance is given in chap. xiv. The heathen gather against Jcrusalem and take the city, but do not utterly destroy the inhabitants. Then Jehovah, at a time known only to Himself, shall appcar with all His saints on Mount Olivet and destroy the heathen in battle, while the men of Jerusalem take refuge in their terror in the great cleft that opens where Jehovah sets His foot. Now the new era begins, and even the heathen do homage to Jehovah by bringing due

tribute to the annual feast of tabernacles. Allin Jerusalem is holy down to the bells on the horses and the cooking- pots.

There is a striking contrast between chaps. i.-viii. and chaps. ix.~~xlv, The former prophecy is closely tied to the situation and wants of the community of Jerusalein in the second year of Darius [., and all that it aims at arises out of the necessities of the time, and is of a practical and possible kind—the restoration of the temple and perhaps the elevation of Zerubbabel to the throne of David. The latter chapters, on the other hand, soar far above the field of reality; the historical situation from which they start can hardly be recognized ; and the future hope has very little connexion with the present, The fundamental differ~~ ence between the two parts of the book lies, not in the subject but in the nature of the prophecy, —in the first part realistic and almost prosaic, in the second vague and fantastic. There are corresponding differences in style and speech > and it 18 particularly to be noted that, while the superscriptions in the first part name the author and give the date of each oracle with precision, those in the second part (ix. 1, xii. 1) are without name or date, That both parts do not belong to the same author must be ad-

‘ See Wagenseil, Sota, p. 927 ; Lightfoot, on Matt. xxvi, 3. Matt. xxvii. 8-10; cp. Jahrbb. J. D. Theol., 1878, p. 471 sq.

7 OME ere Tt et EL

mitted. But most recent critics make the second part the older. Chaps. ix.-xl. are ascribed to a contemporary of Amos and Hosea, about the middle of the 8th century B.c., because Ephraim is mentioned as well as Judah, and Assyria along with Egypt (x. 10), while the neighbours of Israel appear in ix. 1 sg. in the same way as in Amos i-ii, That chaps. xii.-xiv. are also pre-exilic is held to appear especially in the attack on idolatry and lying pro- phecy (xiii. 1-6); but, as this prophecy speaks only of Judah and Jerusalem, it is dated after the fall of Samaria, and is assigned to the last days of the Judean kingdom on the strength of xii. 11, where an allusion is seen to the mourn- ing for King Josiah, slain in battle at Megiddo. Some suppose that the author of ix.-xi. is the Zechariah, son of Jeberechiah, of Isa. viii. 2; and Bunsen ascribes xii.-xiv. to the prophet Urijah, son of Shemaiah (Jer. xxvi. 20 sq.). It is more likely that chaps.

ix.-xiv. go all together and are of much later date. These vague predictions have no real spiritual affinity either with the prophecy of Amos, Hosea, and Isaiah, or with that of Jeremiah, where we always feel the solid ground of present reality under our feet. It was only after the exile that prophecy lost its close connexion with history and ceased to be built on present realities. The kind of eschatology which we find in Zech. ix.-xiv. was first introduced by Ezekiel, who in particular is the author of the conception that the time of deliverance is to be preceded by a joint attack of all nations on Jerusalem, in which they come to final overthrow (Ezek. xxxvill. sg.; Isa. Ixvi. 18-24; Joel). The importance at- tached to the temple service, even in Messianic times (Zech. xiv.), implies an author who lived in the ideas of the religious commonwealth of post-exile times. A future king is hoped for; but in the present there is no Davidic king, only a Davidic family standing on the same level with other noble families in Jerusalem Gai, 7, 12). 'The "bastard" (mixed race) of Ashdod reminds us of Neh. Xiil. 23 sgg.; and the words of ix. 12 (to-day, also, do I declare that I will render double unto thee") have no sense unless they refer back to the deliverance from Babylonian exile. But the decisive argument is that in ix. 13 the sons of Javan, 2.e., the Greeks, appear as the representatives of the heathen world-power. The prophecy, therefore, is later than Alexander; and indeed the hostility to the Jews implied in the passage just cited dates only from the time when Palestine passed from the hands of the Ptolemies to those of the Seleucids. Assyria and Egypt (x. 11) may well be the Ptolemaic and Seleucid kingdoms, which to- gether made up for the Jews the empire of the sons of Javan, In ix. 1 sq. (imitated from Amos i.~~ii.) Seleucid Syria is described as parcelled out into a number of small principalities, some of which were at the time nearly inde~~ pendent. That the Jews had reason enough to hate their neighbours, even in later times, appears, e.g., in 1 Mac. v. : compare especially ix. 6, 7 with 1 Mac. v. 68. The reference in ix. 8 would fit well with the Egyptian cam- paigns of Antiochus IV. Epiphanes, when Jerusalem suf- fered so much on the outward march and still more on the return of his troops. That the victory of Judah over the heathens is to precede the deliverance of Jerusalem (xii. 5 sqq.) is a remarkable feature, hardly to be explained except by the history of the Maccabee wars. The complaint about idolatry also fits this period ; and that a new kind of prophecy then came up, in an age where it no longer had a legitimate place, is far from unlikely.

If this date is assumed for chaps. ix,-xlv., we must hold that, by the copious use of phrases from older prophets and other means, the author sought to give his oracles an archaic garb. That this is no unfair assumption appears especially in xiv. 5, in the reference to the earthquake in the days of Uzziah, which is natural only if the author addressed

contemporaries of that catastrophe. This passage is indeed a stronger argument for a date in the Assyrian period than anything cited from chaps. ix.-xi. If, notwithstanding this, no commentator dates chap. xiv. less than 150 years after Uzziah, it is illegitimate to protest against the view that in chaps. ix. sg. Ephraim is an archaizing name for the Diaspora (1 Mac. v. 23, 45, 53).

How so late a piece was admitted among the prophetic writings, while Daniel, written about the same time, is placed only among the hagiographa, is a question not yet answered. We know too little about the history of the canon. A similar case is that of Isa. xxiv.-xxvii. But it is not less difficult to explain how a prophecy of the 8th century could have turned up in post-exile times and been appended to the book of Zechariah.

The literature of the book is cited by C. H. H. Wright, Zechariah and his Prophecies, 2d ed., London, 1879. See also Stade, " Deu- terozacharja," in Zeitschr. f. AT. Wiss., 1881, p. 1 sg.; 1882, pp. 151 sg., 275 sq. (J. WE.)

ZEITZ, an ancient manufacturing town in the extreme south of the province of Saxony, Prussia, is pleasantly situated on a hill on the White Elster, 22 miles south- south-west of Leipsic and 29 south-south-east of Halle. The river is here crossed by two iron bridges, and one stone and one timber bridge. The Gothic abbey church dates from the 15th century, but its Romanesque crypt from the 12th. The old Franciscan monastery, now occupied by a seminary, contains a library of 20,000 volumes. Just outside the town rises the Moritzburg, built in 1564 by the dukes of Saxe-Zeitz, on the site of the bishop's palace ; it is now a reformatory and poorhouse. Zeitz has manufactures of cottons and woollens, machinery, wax- cloth, musical instruments, vinegar, cigars, &c. ; and wood- carving,

dyeing, and calico-printing are carried on. In the neighbourhood there are considerable deposits of lignite, and mineral-oil works. In 1885 the population was 21,261 (18,265 in 1880); in 1816 it was 6640.

Zeitz is an ancient place of Slavonic origin. From 968 till 1028 it was the seat of a bishopric, afterwards removed to Naumburg, 15% miles to the north-west, and styled Naumburg-Zeitz. In 1564 the last Roman Catholic bishop died, and his dominions were thenceforward administered by princes of Saxony. From 1653 till 1718 Zeitz was the capital of the dukes of Saxe-Zeitz or Sachsen- Zeitz. It thereafter remained in the possession of the electors of Saxony until 1815, when it passed to Prussia.

ZELLE, or more usually Crtzz, an industrial and com- mercial town in the district of Liineburg in Prussia, is situated on the left bank of the navigable Aller, near its junction with the Fuse and the Lachte, 23 miles to the north-east of Hanover. The town, with which three suburbs were incorporated in 1869, is well built. It is the legal and official centre of a "circle," and contains the usual tribunals and bureaux, besides several schools, benevolent institutions, and a prison. The library of the appeal court-house consists of 60,000 vols. The principal church contains a ducal burial vault, in which is buried Sophia Dorothea, first wife of the elector George of Hanover, afterwards George I. of England. The town-house dates from the 14th century. The most interesting building in Zelle is the former ducal castle, begun in 1485 in the Late Gothic style, but with extensive Renaissance additions of the close of the 17th century. Caroline Matilda, the divorced wife of Christian VII. of Denmark and sister of George ITI. of England, resided here from 1772 till her death in 1775; she is buried in the above-mentioned church, and a memorial tablet has been erected to her in the "French garden" outside the town. The industries of the place include the manufacture of woollen yarn, cigars, glue, printers' ink, philosophical instruments, stoves, bricks, &c. ; and it carries on trade in wood, wool, honey, wax, cranberries, and other articles, Nursery-gardening flourishes in the fertile environs, where there are also a

large paper-mill and a Government stud farm. The popula- tion in 1885 was 18,782, almost entirely Protestant.

Zelle received town-rights in 1292. From about 1369 it was the residence of the ducal family of Brunswick – Liineburg – Zelle, which became extinct in 1705. In the 17th century Zelle was the most strongly-fortified town in Liineburg. In 1757 it was besieged and partly laid in ashes by Richelieu. At the peace of Zelle (5th February 1679) Sweden gave in her adhesion to the peace of Nime- guen. Zelle is the birthplace of Thaer (1752-1828), the eminent agriculturist, and of Ernst K. F. Schulze (1789-1817), the poet.

ZEND-AVESTA, the original document of the religion of ZoROASTER (q.v.), and still used by the ParsrxEs (g.v.) as their bible and prayer book. The name " Zend-Avesta" has been current in Europe since the time of Anquetil Duperron (c.1771), but the Parsees themselves call it simply Avesta,— Zend (1.¢., "interpretation ") being specially employed to denote the translation and exposition of a great part of the Avesta which exists in Pantavi (g.v.). Text and transla- tion are often spoken of together in Pahlavi books as Avistak va Zand ("Avesta and Zend"), whence (through a misunderstanding) our word Zend-Avesta. The origin and meaning of the word "Avesta" (or in its older form Avistak) are alike obscure; it cannot be traced further back than the Sasanian period. The language of the Avesta is still frequently called Zend; but, as already implied, this is a mistake. We possess no other document written in it, and on this account modern Parsee scholars, as well as the older Pahlavi books, speak of the language and the writing indifferently as Avesta. As the original home of the lan- guage can only be very doubtfully conjectured, we shall do well to follow the usage sanctioned by old custom and apply the word to both. Although the Avesta is a work of but moderate compass (comparable, say, to the Jliad and Odyssey taken together), there nevertheless exists no single MS. which gives it in its entirety. This circum- stance alone is enough to reveal the true nature of the book : it is a composite whole, a collection of writings as the Old Testament is. It consists, as we shall afterwards see, of the last remains of the extensive sacred literature in which the Zoroastrian faith was formerly set forth.

Contents and Character.—As we now have it, the Avesta consists of four parts,—the Yasna, the Vispered, the Vendidad, and the Khordah Avesta.

1. The Yasna, the principal liturgical book of the Parsees, in 72 chapters (Aditi, hd), contains the texts that are read by the priest at the solemn Yasna (Izeshne) ceremony. The arrangement of the chapters is purely liturgical, although their matter in many cases has nothing to do with the liturgical action. The kernel of the whole book, around which the remaining portions are grouped, consists of the Gdthds or "hymns" of ZOROASTER (g.v.), the oldest and most sacred portion of the entire canon. The Yasna accordingly falls into three sections of about equal length. (a) The introduc- tion (chaps. 1-27) for the most part is made up of long-winded, monotonous, reiterated invocations. (b) The Gathds (chs. 28-54) contain the discourses, exhortations, and revelations of the prophet, written in a metrical style and an archaic language, different in many respects from that ordinarily used in the Avesta. As to the authenticity of these hymns, see ZoROASTER. The GAthds proper, arranged according to the metres in which they are written, fall into five subdivisions (28-37, 43-46, 47-50, 51, 53). Between chap. 37 and chap. 43 is inserted the so-called Seven-Chapter Yasna (haptanghditi), a number of small prose pieces not far behind the Gathas in antiquity. (c) The so-called Later Yasna (Aparé Yasné) (chaps. 54-72) has contents of considerable variety, but consists mainly of invocations.

2. The Vispercd, a minor liturgical work in 24 chapters (karde), is alike in form and substance completely dependent on the Yasna; it is based upon the arrangement of the Yasna in its present form, a circumstance proving its much later date asa whole. The name Vispered, meaning "all the chiefs" (vispé ratavé), has reference to the spiritual heads of the religion of Ormuzd, invocations to whom form the main contents of the book.

3. The Vendidad (Vitdaévé Datem), ¢.c., the law for the "enemies of the devil," contains in 22 chapters (fargard) a kind of dualistic account of creation (chap. 1), the legend of Yima and the golden age (chap. 2), the praises of agriculture (chap. 3), and in the bulk of the remaining chapters the circumstantial precepts of the religion

with reference to purification and ecclesiastical penance. It may with propriety be called the "' priestly code" of the Parsees.

The Yasna, Vispered, and Vendidad together constitute the Avesta in the stricter sense of that word, and the reading of them appertains to the priest alone. For liturgical purposes the sepa- rate chapters of the Vendidad and the Vispered are sometimes in- serted amongst those of the Yasna so as to form what is known as the Vendidad Sade, which then, accompanied by certain liturgical actions, is publicly read in the Parsee worship. The reading of the GAthds and Vendidad in this case may, when viewed according to the original intention, be taken as corresponding in some sense to the sermon, while that of the Vispered and the rest of the Yasna may be taken as corresponding to the hymns and prayers of Chris- tian worship. e ,

4. In marked contrast to the three already mentioned is the Khordah Avesta, or Little Avesta, which is designed equally for priesthood and laity, and serves rather as a_book of private devo- tion. Besides some short prayers, such as the Nydishes, the favourite daily prayers of the Parsees, it contains the Yashts or songs of praise, twenty-one in number, addressed to the Yazatas (Izads), the deities and angels of the Ormuzd creed.

Over and above the four books just enumerated there are a con- siderable number of fragments from other books, as well as quota- tions, glosses, and glossaries.

In its present form, however, the Avesta is only a frag- mentary reninant of the old priestly literature of Zoroas- trianism, a fact confessed by the learned tradition of the Parsees theniselves, according to which the number of Yashts was originally thirty. The truth is that we possess but a trifling portion of a very much larger original Avesta, if we are to believe native tradition, carrying us back to the Sasanian period, which tells of an original Avesta in twenty-one books called nasks or nosks, as to the names, contents, and chapters of which we have several more or less detailed accounts, particularly in the Pahlavi Dinkard and in the Rivayats. From the same sources we learn that even then a considerable portion of the original Avesta had been lost : we are told that of a number of nosks only a small portion was found to be extant "after Alexander."

For example, of the seventh nosk, which "before Alexander " had as many as fifty chapters, there then remained only thirteen ; and similar things are alleged about the eighth, ninth, tenth, and other nosks. But even of the remains of the original Avesta, as these lay before the authors referred to, only a small portion has survived to our time. Of all the nosks one only, the nineteenth, has come down to us unimpaired and intact,—the Vendidad. All the others, with the exception of slight traces, have disappeared in the course of centuries.

It would be rash to treat in an offhand way this old tradition about the twenty-one nosks as pure invention. The number twenty-one indeed points to an artificial arrangement of the material; for twenty-one is a sacred number, and the most sacred prayer of the Parsees, the so- called Ahuné Vairyé (Honovar) contains twenty-one words : and it is also true that in the enumeration of the nosks we miss the names of the books we know—Yasna, Vispered, as well as the Yashts and the Khordah Avesta. But either we must regard them as having been included among the nosks, though under other names, or, what is even more probable, we must assume that even at that early date special liturgical manuals—the Yasna especially—distinct from the nosks had already been compiled for the practical use of the priests. Further, the statements of the Dinkard and other writings leave on one a very distinct impression that the authors actually had before them the text of the nosks, or at all events of a large part of them. And, besides in other directions there are numerous indications that such books had once really existed. In the Khordah Avesta as we now have it we find two Srésh Yashts ; with regard to the first, it is expressly stated in old MSS. that it was taken from the Hadékht nosk (the twentieth, accord- ing to the Dinkard). From the same nosk also a consider- able fragment (Y¢., 21 and 22 in Westergaard) has been

taken. So also the extensive quotations from Avesta texts in the Wiringistén, a Pahlavi book, are probably the disjecta membra of the seventeenth (or Haspéram) nosk. Lastly, the numerous other fragments, the quotations in the Pahlavi translation, the many references in the

Bunda- hish to passages of this Avesta not now known to us, all presuppose the existence in the Sasanian period of a much more extensive Avesta literature than the mere prayer book now in our hands. The existence of an original Avesta is far from being a mere myth. But, even granting that a certain obscurity still hangs undispelled over the problem of the old Avesta, with its twenty-one nosks, we may well believe the Parsees themselves, when they tell us that their sacred literature has passed through successive stages of decay, the last of which is represented by the present Avesta. There is evidence of this in the patchwork and fragmentary character of some portions of the present Avesta; and, moreover, in the MS. evidence of recent centuries we are able to observe with our own eyes the actual process of abridgment gradually going on, and to trace the manner in which certain portions of the present Avesta slowly passed out of currency. This holds good, in particular, of the greater Yashts. The transcribers of the Khordah Avesta satisfied themselves for the most part with those prayers which were currently in use, such as the Nydishes and one or two of the smaller and inter- mediate Yashts. The great Yashts are not of very frequent occurrence: some of them indeed are already met with but seldom, and MSS. containing all the Yashts are of great rarity. Of the fifteenth, seventeenth, and nineteenth Yashts we might even venture to predict that some centuries hence they may perhaps be found defying the tooth of time in not more than a single manuscript copy.

Origin and History.—While all that Herodotus (i. 132) has got to say is that the Magi sang "the theogony" at their sacrifices, Pausanias is able to add (v. 27, 3) that they read from a book. Hermippus in the 3d century B.c. affirmed that Zoroaster, the founder of the doctrine of the Magi, was the author of twenty books, each containing 100,000 verses. According to the Arab historian Tabari, these were written on 1200 cowhides, a statenient confirmed by Masudi, who writes, "Zartusht gave to the Persians the book called Avesta. It consisted of twenty-one parts, each containing 200 leaves. This book, in the writing which Zartusht invented and which the Magi called the writing of religion, was written on 12,000 cowhides, bound together by golden bands. Its language was the Old Persian, which no one now understands." These statements suffi- ciently establish the existence and great bulk of the sacred writings. Parsee

tradition adds a number of interesting statements as to their history. According to the Arda- Viraf-Ndma, stated to have been written during the Sasanian period, the religion revealed through Zoroaster had subsisted in its purity for 300 years when Iskander Rumi (Alexander the Great) invaded and devastated Iran, and burnt the Avesta which, written on cowhides with golden ink, was preserved in the archives at Persepolis. According to the Dinkard, there were two copies, of which one was burnt, while the second perished at the hands of the Greeks in some other way. The Rivayats have it that Alexander burnt the greater part of the twenty-one nosks, and go on to say that after his death the Zoroastrian priests met, gathered the scattered fragments which had escaped the ravages of war, and put together the present collection, which is but a small portion of the original book. With regard to this editing the Dinkard gives various details. It tells us that the collecting of the Avesta fragments, so far as these were still extant, whether in writing or in oral tradition, began under the last of the Arsacids at the command of King Vologeses. The first of the Sasanians,

4END-AV EST A

Ardeshir Babagan, and his son Shapar J. resumed and con- tinued the work, and proclaimed the new Avesta thus pro- duced as canonical. Finally, under Shaptr II. (309-380) a new revision and final redaction were made by Adarbid Mahraspand

It is possible enough for historical criticism to regard this tradition in many of its features as mere fiction, or as a perversion of facts made for the purpose of transferring the blame for the loss of a sacred literature to other shoulders than those really responsible for it. People may, if they choose, absolve Alexander from the charge of vandalism of which he is accused; but the fact nevertheless remains, that he suffered the palace at Persepolis to be burnt (Diod., xvil. 72; Curt., v. 7). Even the statement as to the one or two complete copies of the Avesta may be given up as the invention of a later day. Nevertheless the essential elements of the tradition remain unshaken, viz., that the original Avesta or old sacred literature, divided on account of its great bulk and heterogeneous contents into many portions and a variety of separate works, had an

actual existence in numerous copies and also in the memories of priests, that, although gradually diminishing in bulk, it remained extant during the long period of foreign domina- tion and ecclesiastical decay after the time of Alexander, and that it served as a basis for the redaction subsequently made. The kernel of this native tradition—the fact of a late collection of older fragments—appears indisputable. The character of the book is entirely that of a compilation.

In its outward form the Avesta as we now have it belongs to the Sasanian period, the last survival of the compilers' work already alluded to. And it need hardly be said that the collecting and arranging of the scattered fragments often rendered necessary, or at least desirable, certain ad- ditions by the redactors' own hands. But, broadly speaking, the materials out of which the compilers reared their build- ing belonged originally to older structures and are of very various dates. Opinions differ greatly as to the precise age of the original texts brought together by subsequent redactors : according to some, they are pre-Achzemenian : according to Darmesteter, they were written in Media under the Achemenian dynasty; according to Eduard Meyer, they are on the whole of Sasanian origin ; according to some, their source must be sought in the east, according to others, in the west, of Iran. But to search for a precise time or exact locality is to deal with the question too narrowly ; it is more correct to say that the Avesta was worked at from the time of Zoroaster down to the Sasanian period. Its oldest portions, the Gathas, proceed from Zoroaster himself. This conclusion is inevitable for every- one to whom Zoroaster is an historical personality, and who does not shun the labour of an unprejudiced research into the meaning of those difficult texts (comp. ZOROASTER). The rest of the Avesta, in spite of the opposite opinion of learned Parsees, does not even claim to come from Zoroaster. As the Gathas constitute the kernel of the Later Yasna, so they ultimately proved to be the first nucleus of a religious literature at large. The language in which Zoroaster taught, especially a later development of it,—an idiom in- disputably belonging to eastern Iran,—remained as the standard with the followers of Zoroaster, and became the sacred language of the priesthood of the faith which he had founded ; as such it became, so to speak, absolved from the ordinary conditions of time and space. Taught and acquired as an ecclesiastical language, it was enabled to live an

artificial life long after it had become extinct as a vernacular,—in this respect comparable to the Latin of the Middle Ages or the Hebrew of the rabbinical schools. The various texts themselves enable us to trace its gradual paralysis, decay, and death. It is only from this point of view that the language can be used as a criterion for the

relative chronology of these. Any more exact arrangement seems almost impossible ; we have practically no other tests to apply. The priests by whom the texts were edited gave them the form intended to be valid once for all and refrained from any allusion to ephemeral relations, The following conclusions may be stated in a general way.

The language of the Avesta travelled with the Zoroastrian religion and with the main body of the priesthood, in all probability, that is to say, from east to west; within the limits of Iran it became international. The Avesta texts must have passed through a long process of development, which did not reach its close till at a comparatively late period. Many portions are the result of repeated redacting and compiling ; older texts are removed from their original connexion, and worked into new ones or made use of in these. In these operations the revisers of the Sasanian epoch may be presumed to have had only the smallest share; the texts they had before them were already for the most part in a revised form. They were no longer in a position to give a relatively correct text ; what they still had in their power to some extent to perform is approxi- mately exhibited in such passages as Y¢., 1, 12 sg.; Ye, 2, 11 sg. ; Yt., 10, 120 sq.,—perhaps in part translated back from the Pahlavi.

The great Yashts and the Vendidad are the most instructive portions for the history of the text. The original kernel of Yashkts 5, 8, 15, 17, 19 consists of the Iranian mythology of gods and heroes which had its origin in the East, and there also was cast into a poetical form. Fragments of it were worked into the framework of the great Yashts at a much later date. The author of Vend., 2 used in a fragmentary way a poetic version of the Yima legend. 'The redactor of Verdes, judging from the monotonous and clumsy style of the opening sections, must have been prosaic enough ; yet from the twenty-fourth paragraph onwards we have a bright and pleasant

description of the blessings of agriculture, in a poetical form, that contrasts singularly with what im- mediately precedes it, and must certainly have been borrowed from an older source. In this way alone can we in other instances also account for the numerous verses with which the prose is often interspersed. Their function often was merely to set off and ornament the later prose. Of "genuine" and "spurious" there can be in this connexion no question, but only of "older" and "more recent." However vague and obscure the question may remain after all has been said, we can at least lay so much down as fundamentally fixed, namely, that all that is metrical in the Avesta bears the stamp of a higher antiquity than does the prose.

As has been already stated, the Avesta now in our hands is but a small portion of the book as edited under the Sasanians. The large part perished under the devastating wave of persecution which broke over Iran with the Mohammedan invasion, or under the still more fatal influ- ences of the apathy and forgetfulness of its proper guardians, The understanding of the older Avesta texts was far from perfect even at the time when they were being edited and revised. The need for a translation and interpretation became evident; and under the later Sasanians the majority of the books, if not the whole of them, were rendered into the current Pahlavi. A thorough use of this translation will not be possible until we have it in good critical editions, and acquaintance with its language ceases to be the mono- poly of a few privileged individuals. For the interpretation of the older texts it is of great value. The Parsee priest Neryosangh subsequently translated a portion of the Pahlavi version into Sanskrit.

The MSS. of the Avesta are comparatively speaking of recent date. The oldest is the Pahlavi Vispered in Copenhagen, of date

1258. Next come the four MSS. of the Herbad Mihiraépan Kat Khusro at Cambay (1323 and 1324), two Vendidads with Pahlavi in London and Copenhagen, and two Yasnas with Pallavi in Copenhagen and Bombay,

in the possession of Dastur Jamaspji Minocheherji, who of all the Parsees is richest in old and good MSS. Generally speaking, the MSS. fall off in quality and carefulness in proportion to their lateness ; an honourable exception must be made in favour of those proceeding from Kirman and Yazd in Persia, mostly dating from the 17th and 18th centuries.

The first European scholar to direct attention to the Avesta was Hyde of Oxford, in his Historia Religionis Veterum Persarwm eorumgue Magorum (1700), which, however, failed to awaken any lasting interest in the sacred writings of the Parsees. The merit of achieving this belongs to the enthusiastic Orientalist Anquetil Duperron, the fruit of whose prolonged stay in India (from 1754 to 1761) and his acquaintance with the Parsee priests was a translation (certainly very defective) of the Zcud-Avesta. The foundation of a scientific exegesis was laid by Burnouf. The interpretation of the Avesta is one of the most difficult problems of Oriental philology. To this very day no kind of agreement has been reached by conflicting schools even upon some of the most important points. The most salient contributions are those of Westergaard, Spiegel, Darmesteter, Roth, and Bartholomae. Opi- nion is divided also as to the significance of the Avesta in the liter- ature of the world. The exaggerated enthusiasm of Anqnetil Du- perron has been followed, especially since Spiegel's translation, by an excessive reaction. The future will doubtless be more just with regard to the importance of the book for the history of religion in general and even of Christianity.

Editions.—The first complete editions were that by Westergaard (Copenhagen, 1852-54) and that of the Avesta in the stricter sense, along with the Pahlavi translation, by Spiegel (Vienna, 1853-58). A new and complete edition by Geldner has been in course of publication since 1885. The best translation is that by Darmesteter and Mills in Sacred Books of the East (3 vols., Oxford, 1880 sq., with an excellent introduction by the first-named).

Literature.—See Anquetil Duperron, Zend-Avesia, Ouvrage de Zoroastre, &e., (Paris, 1771) ; Haug, Essays on the Sacred Language, &c., of the Parsis, especially in the new edition by E. W. West (London, 1878); De Harlez, Introduction

a UEtude de U Avesta (Paris, 1881); Max Duncker, Geschichte des Alterthums, vol. ;

iv.; and Eduard Meyer, Geschichte des Alterthums (Stuttgart, 1884). (K. G.)

ZENO, emperor of the East from 474 to 491, was an Isaurian of noble birth, and originally bore the name of Trascalisszeus, which he exchanged for that of Zeno on his marriage with Ariadne, daughter of LeoI., in 468. Of his early life nothing is known ; after his marriage (which was designed by Leo to secure the Isaurian support against his ambitious minister Aspar) he became patrician and com- mander of the imperial guard and of the armies in the East. While on a campaign in Thrace he narrowly escaped assassination ; and on his return to the capital he avenged himself by compassing the murder of Aspar, who had instigated the attempt. In 474 Leo I. died after appointing as his successor Leo the son of Zeno and Ariadne ; Zeno, however, with the help of his mother-in-law Verina, succeeded in getting himself crowned also, and on the death of his son before the end of the year became sole emperor. In the following year, in consequence of a revolt fomented by Verina in favour of her brother Basiliscus, he was compelled to take refuge in Isauria, whither he was pursued by Illus and Trocundus, two of the usurper's generals, and where, after sustaining a defeat, he was compelled to shut himself up in a strong castle. Basiliscus, however, soon outstripped Zeno in avarice, cruelty, and self-indulgence, and the vicissitudes of war and intrigue ultimately enabled the latter to re-enter Constantinople unopposed (July 477), while his rival was banished to Phrygia, where he soon afterwards died. The remainder of Zeno's reign was disturbed by numerous other less formid- able revolts, and it was to relieve himself of the pressure of one of these that in 487 he gave Taroporic (9.2.) permission to invade Italy and dethrone Odoacer, which led to the establishment of the Ostrogothic kingdom in Italy. At an earlier period of his reign (476) Zeno had received the deputation from the Roman senate which announced the deposition of Romulus Augustulus. In ecclesiastical history the name of Zeno is associated with the Henoticon or instrument of union, promulgated by him and signed by all

the Eastern bishops, with the design of terminating the Monophysite controversy. The docu-

ment, which is given by Evagrius (H.£., iii. 14), re-affirms the doctrine of the Niczeno-Constantinopolitan creed, and renews the condemnation of Nestorius pronounced by the council of Ephesus, but adroitly avoids the crucial point as to the unity or duality of natures in the Incarnate Word, treating this as an open question.

ZENO or Citrum. See Stores.

ZENO or Evga, son of Teleutagoras, is supposed to have been born towards the beginning of the 5th century B.c. The pupil and the friend of Parmenides, he sought to recommend his master's doctrine of the existence of the One by controverting the popular belief in the exist- ence of the Many. In virtue of this method of indirect argumentation he is regarded as the inventor of "dia- lectic," that is to say, disputation having for its end not victory but the discovery or the transmission of truth. He is said to have been concerned in a plot against a tyrant, and on its detection to have borne with exemplary constancy the tortures to which he was subjected; but authorities differ both as to the name and the residence of the tyrant and as to the circumstances and the issue of the enterprise.

In Plato's Parmenides, Socrates, "then very young," meets Parmenides, "an old man some sixty-five years of age," and Zeno, "aman of about forty, tall and person- able," and engages them in philosophical discussion. But it may be doubted whether such a meeting was chrono-logically possible. Plato's account of Zeno's teaching (Parmenides, 128 sq.) is, however, presumably as accurate as it is precise. In reply to those who thought that Parmenides's theory of the existence of the One involved inconsistencies and absurdities, Zeno tried to show that the assumption of the existence of the Many carried with it inconsistencies and absurdities grosser and more numerous. In early youth he collected his arguments in a book, which, according to Plato, was put into circulation without his knowledge.

Of the paradoxes used by Zeno to discredit the belief in plurality and motion, eight survive in the writings of Aristotle and Simpli- cius. They are commonly stated as follows.! (1) If the Existent is Many, it nwst be at once infinitely small and infinitely great,— infinitely small, because the parts of which it consists must be in- divisible and therefore without magnitude ; infinitely great, be- cause, that any part having magnitude may be separate from any other part, the intervention of a third part having magnitude is necessary, and that this third part may be separate from the other two the intervention of other parts having magnitude is necessary, and so on ad infinitum. (2) In like manner the Many must be numerically both finite and infinite,—numerically finite, because there are as many things as there are, neither more nor less; numerically infinite, because, that any two things may be separate, the intervention ofa third thing is necessary, and so on ad infinitum. (3) If all that is is in space, space itself must be in space, and so on ad infinitum. (4) Ifa bushel of corn turned out upon the floor makes a noise, each grain and each part of each grain must make a noise likewise ; but, in fact, it is not so. (5) Before a body in motion can reach a given point, it must first traverse the half of the distance ; before it can traverse the half of the distance, it must first traverse the quarter; and so on ad infinitum. Hence, that a body may pass from one point to another, it must traverse an infinite number of divisions. But an infinite distance (which Zeno fails to distinguish from a finite distance infinitely divided) cannot be traversed in a finite time. Consequently, the goal can never be reached. (6) If the tortoise has the start of Achilles, Achilles can nevcr come up with the tortoise ; for, while Achilles traverses the distance from his starting-point to the starting-point of the tortoise, the tortoise advances a certain distance, and while Achilles traverses this distance the tortoise makes a further advance, and so on ad infinitum. Consequently, Achilles may run ad infinitum without overtaking the tortoise. [This paradox is virtually identical with (5), the only difference being that, whereas in (5) there is one body, in (6) there are two bodies, moving towardsalimit. The "infinity" of the premise is an infinity of subdivisions of a distance which is finite ; the "infinity" of the conclusion is an infinity of distance. Thus Zeno again confonnds a finite distance infinitely divided with an infinite distance. Ifthe tortoise hasa start of 1000 feet, Achilles,

1 See Zeller, Die Philosophie d. Griechen, I. 540 sg.; Grundriss, 54.

on the supposition that his speed is ten times that of the tortoise, must traverse an infinite number of spaces,—1000 feet, 100 feet, 10 feet, &c.,—and the tortoise must traverse an infinite number of spaces,—100 feet, 10 feet, 1 foot, &c.,—before they reach the point, distant from their starting-points 11114 feet and 1114 feet respect- ively, at which the tortoise is overtaken. In a word, 1000, 100, 10, &c., in (6) and 4, 3, $, &., in (5) are convergent series, and 11115 and 1 are the limits to which they respectively approximate.] (7) So long as anything is in one and the same space, it is at rest. Hence an arrow is at rest during every moment of its flight, and therefore also during the whole of its flight. (8) Two bodies mov- ing with equal speed traverse equal spaces in equal times. But, when two bodics move with equal speed in opposite directions, the one passes the other in half the time in which it passes it when at rest. These propositions appeared to Zeno to be irreconcilable.

In short, the ordinary belief in plurality and motion seemed to him to involve fatal inconsistencies, whence he inferred that Par- menides was justified in distinguishing the mutable movable Many from the immutable immovable One, which alone is really existent. In other words, Zeno re-affirmed the dogma, "The Ent is, the Non- ent is not." It may seem strange that a reasoner so acute should confound that which is infinitely divisible with that which is in- finitely great, as in (1), (2), (5), and (6); that he should identify space and magnitude, as in (3); that he should neglect the imper- fection of the organs of sense, as in (4); that he should resolve motion into a series of states of rest, and on the strength of this analysis deny the reality of motion, as in (7); and that he should ignore the relativity of speed, as in (8). But Zcno's perplexity was genuine, and his end was positive. He was neither an eristic seeking an argumentative victory, nor a sceptic despairing of truth, but an honest thinker, breaking ground in a new field with indiffer- et success,

Great as was the importance of these paradoxes of plurality and motion in stimulating speculation about space and time, their direct influence upon Greek thought was less considerable than that of another paradox,—

strangely neglected by historians of philosophy,—the paradox of predication. We learn from Plato (Paurmenides, 127 D) that "the first hypothesis of the first argument " of Zeno's book above mentioned ran as follows: "If ex- istences are many, they must be both like and unlike {unlike, inasmuch as they are not one and the same, and like, inasmuch as they agree in not being one and the same, Proclus, On the Parmenides, ii. 143]. But this is impossible ; for unlike things cannot be like, nor like things unlike. Therefore existences are not many." That is to say, not perceiving that the same thing may be at once like and unlike in different relations, Zeno regarded the attribution to the same thing of likeness and unlike- ness as a violation of what was afterwards known as the principle of contradiction; and, finding that plurality entailed these attributions, he inferred its unreality. Now, when without qualification he affirmed that the unlike thing cannot be like, nor the like thing unlike, he was on the high road to the doctrine maintained three-quarters of a century later by the Cynics, that no predication which is not identical is legitimate. He was not indeed aware how deeply he had committed himself; otherwise he would have observed that his argument, if valid against the Many of the vulgar, was valid also against the One of Parmenides, with its plurality of attributes, as well as that, in the absence of a theory of predication, it was useless to specu- late about knowledge and being. But others were not slow to draw the obvious conclusions ; and it may be con- jectured that Gorgias's sceptical development of the Zeno- nian logic contributed, not less than Protagoras's sceptical development of the Ionian physics, to the diversion of the intellectual energies of Greece from the pursuit of truth to the pursuit of culture.

For three-quarters of a century, then, philosophy was at a standstill ; and, when in the second decade of the 4th century the pursuit of truth was resumed, it was plain that the difficulty raised by Zeno must be met before the problems which had occupied the earlier thinkers—the problem of knowledge and the problem of being—could be so much as attempted. Accordingly, in the seventh

book of the Republic, where Plato propounds his scheme of Academic education, he directs the attention of studious youth primarily, if not exclusively, to the concurrence of inconsistent attributes; and in the Phedo, 102 B-103 A, taking as an instance the tallness and the shortness simul- taneously discoverable in Simmias, he offers his own theory of the immanent idea as the solution of the paradox. Simmias, he says, has in him the ideas of tall and short. Again, when it presently appeared that the theory of the immanent idea was inconsistent with itself, and moreover inapplicable to explain predication except where the sub- ject was a sensible thing, so that reconstruction became necessary, the Zenonian difficulty continued to demand and to receive Plato's best attention. Thus, in the Par- menides, with the paradox of likeness and unlikeness for his text, he inquires how far the current theories of being (his own included) are capable of providing, not only for knowledge, but also for predication, and in the concluding sentence he suggests that, as likeness and unlikeness, greatness and smallness, é&c., are relations, the initial paradox is no longer paradoxical; while in the Sophist, Zeno's doctrine having been shown to be fatal to reason, thought, speech, and utterance, the principle which in the Parmenides is applied to atré xa6' attra eiSy and to sensible particulars is extended to include the case of iy which are not avra xa@' atrd. It would seem then that, not to Antisthenes only, but to Plato also, Zeno's paradox of predication was a substantial difficulty; and we shall be disposed to give Zeno credit accordingly for his percep- tion of its importance.

In all probability Zeno did not observe that in his controversial defence of Eleaticism he was interpreting Parmenides's teaching anew. But so it was. For, while Parmenides had recognized, together with the One, which is, and is the object of knowledge, a Many, which is not, and therefore is not known, but nevertheless becomes, and is the object of opinion, Zeno plainly affirmed that plur- ality, becoming, and opinion are one and all inconceivable. In a word, the fundamental dogma, "The Ent is, the Non-ent is not," which with Parmenides had been an assertion of the necessity of distinguishing between the Ent, which is, and the Non-ent, which is not, but becomes, was with Zeno a declaration of the Non-ent's absolute nullity. Thus, Just as Empedocles developed Parmenides's theory of the Many to the neglect of his theory of the One, so Zeno developed the

theory of the One to the neglect of the theory of the Many. With the severance of its two mem- bers Eleaticism proper, the Eleaticism of Parmenides, ceased to exist.

The first effect of Zeno's teaching was to complete the discomfiture of philosophy. For the parodox of predica- tion, which he had used to disprove the existence of plurality, was virtually a denial of all speech and all thought, and thus led to a more comprehensive scepticism than that which sprang from the contemporary theories of sensation. Nevertheless, he left an enduring mark upon Greek speculation, inasmuch as he not only recognized the need of a logic, and grappled, however unsuccessfully, with one of the most obvious of logical problems, but also by the invention of dialectic provided a new and powerful instrument against the time when the One and the Many should be reunited in the philosophy of Plato.

Bibliography.—F¥. W. A. Mullach, Fragmenta Philosophorum Grecorwm, Paris, 1860, i. 266 sq. ; Zeller, Die Philosophie d. Griechen, Leipsic, 1876, i. 584-552; P. Tannery, Pour I' Histoire de la Science flelléne, Paris, 1887, pp. 247-261. Ignoring the philosophical aspect of Zeno's teaching, Tannery supposcs him to have main- tained in opposition to the Pythagoreans that body is not a sum of points, time not a sum of moments, and motion not a sum of passages from point to point. For histories of philosophy and other works upon Eleaticism, see PARMENIDES. (H. JA.)

ZENOBIA. See Patmyra, vol. xviii. p. 201 sq.

780

ZENTA, a market town of Hungary, in the county of Bacs-Bodrog, on the right bank of the river Theiss, 20 miles south of Szegedin, is historically known for the decisive victory won in its vicinity by Prince Eugene over the Turks in 1696. The population, which is purely agri- cultural, numbered 21,200 in 1880, and 16,000 in 1886.

ZEPHANIAH (Sophonias, Zopovias, Heb, IBY, ""whom Jehovah hides" or " protects"; compare the Phoenician man's or woman's name bynypy,

C.L.S., No. 207, Euting, Pun. Steine, p. 16), son of Cushi, the ninth, according to the order of his book, among the twelve minor prophets, flourished in the reign of Josiah of Judah, and apparently before the great reformation in the eighteenth year of that king (621 B.c.). For various forms of idolatry put down in that year are spoken of by Zephaniah as still prevalent in Judah (chap.i. 4 sg.), and are specified in such a connexion as to imply that they were not the secret sins of individuals, but held the first place among the national backslidings that could, as the prophet teaches, be removed only by a sweeping judgment on the state. Of the person of Zephaniah nothing is known ; but it has been conjectured that his great-great-grandfather Hezekiah (chap. i.1) is the king of that name, and if so he belonged to the highest class of Judean society. :

The genuineness and integrity of the short prophecy

ascribed to Zephaniah do not seem to be open to reasonable.

doubt. Stade (Gesch. Isr., i. 644) raises a question about chap. iii., and if this were a distinct oracle there would be no cogent reason to ascribe it to the author of the two chapters that precede; for the book of the minor prophets is made up of a number of short pieces, some bearing a name and some anonymous, and it is only old usage that ascribes the anonymous pieces to the last preceding prophet whose name is prefixed to his prophecy. But, though the sequence of thought in the book of Zephaniah is not so smooth as a Western reader may desire, a single leading motive runs through the whole, and the first two chapters would be incomplete without the third, which moreover is certainly pre-exilic (verses 1-4), and presents specific points of con- tact with what precedes as well as a general agreement in style and idea.

The dominating motive of the whole is the approach of a sweeping and world-wide judgment, which the prophet announces as near at hand, and interprets, on the lines laid down by Isaiah in his prophecies about Israel and Assyria, as designed to destroy the wicked and prepare the way for the visible sovereignty of the righteous God of Israel. As regards Judah, which forms the subject of the first and third chapters, the effect of the judgment will be to sift out the idolaters, the men of violence and wrong,

the false prophets and profane priests, the hardened men of the world to whom all religion is alike and who deem that the Lord will do neither good nor evil. The men who seek meekness and righteousness will be left, a poor and lowly people, trusting in the name of the Lord and eschew. ing falsehood. To them a future of gladness is reserved, a peaceful life under Jehovah's immediate kingship and loving protection. Such an ideal necessarily implies that they shall no longer be threatened by hostility from with- out, and this condition is satisfied by the prophet's view of the effect of the impending judgment on the ancient enemies of his nation. The destruction of the Philistines on the west and of Moab and Ammon on the east will enable the Hebrews to extend their settlements from the Mediterranean to the Syrian desert ; and their remoter oppressors, the Ethiopians and Assyrians, shall also perish. That Ethiopia appears instead of Egypt is in accordance with the conditions of the time. It was with Ethiopic dynasts holding sway in Egypt that Assyria had to con- tend during the 7th century B.c., when the petty kingdoms

of Palestine were so often crushed between the collision of the two great powers, and even Psammetichus, the con- temporary of Josiah, and the restorer of a truly Egyptian kingdom, was nominally the heir of the great Ethiopian sovereigns.

These conceptions are closely modelled on the scheme of Jehovah's righteous purpose worked out by Isaiah a century before, when Judah first felt the weight of the Assyrian rod, and they afford the most conclusive evidence of the depth and permanence of that great prophet's influ- ence. But in one point there is an important divergence. In Isaiah's view Assyria is the rod of God's anger; and, when the work of judgment is complete and Jehovah returns to the remnant of His people, the theodicea is com- pleted by the fall of the unconscious instrument of the divine decrees before the inviolable walls of the holy mountain. Zephaniah in like manner looks to an all-con- quering nation as the instrument of divine judgment on Judah and the rest of the known world. He represents the day of Jehovah, according to the old meaning of that phrase, as a day of battle (not an assize day); he speaks of the guests invited to Jehovah's

sacrifice, z.c., to a great slaughter, of alarm against fenced cities, of blood poured out as dust, of pillage and desolation at the hand of an enemy. But beyond this all is vague; we neither hear who the sword of Jehovah (ii. 12) is, nor what is to become of him when his work is completed. Isaiah's construction has in all its parts a definite reference to present political facts, and is worked out to a complete conclusion ; Zephaniah borrows the ideas of his predecessor without attaining to his clearness of political conception, and so his picture is incomplete. The foreign conqueror, by whom Judah is to be chastised and Nineveh and Ethiopia destroyed, is brought on to the stage, but never taken off it. It is safe to con- clude that the principal actor in the prophetic drama, who is thus strangely forgotten at the last, was not as real and prominent a figure in Zephaniah's political horizon as Assyria was in the horizon of Isaiah. At the same time it is reasonable to think that so complete a reproduction of Isaiah's ideas in the picture of a new world-judgment was not formed without some stimulus from without, and this stimulus has been sought in the Scythian invasion of western Asia, to which some of Jeremiah's earlier prophecies also appear to refer; see IsRaxt, vol. xiii. p. 415. But from the analysis given in the article Scyrura (vol. xxi. p- 577) it is doubtful whether the Scythians had appeared even on the distant horizon at the date of Zephaniah's prophecy,! while, on the other hand, the movements in the far East which preceded the first siege of Nineveh are chronologically suitable, and appear to afford quite sufficient basis for Zephaniah's undefined anticipation of a general political convulsion. How the danger that threatened Nineveh stirred the mind of the Hebrews appears also from the prophecy of Nahum.

Be this as it may, the comparison between Isaiah and Zephaniah affords an instructive example of the difference between original and reproductive prophecy. All the prophets have certain funda- meatal baat in common, and each has learned something from his predecessors. If Zephaniah draws from Isaiah, Isaiah himself drew from Amos and Hosea. But Isaiah goes to his predecessors for general principles, and shapes the application of these principles to the conditions of his own time in a manner altogether fresh and in- dependent. Zephaniah, on the other hand, goes to his predecessor for details ; he does not clearly distinguish between the form and the substance of the prophetic ideas,

and looks for a final consum- mation of the divine purpose, not only in accordance with the

rinciples of Isaiah, but on the very lines which that prophet had aid down. But these lines were drawn on the assumption that the Assyrian judgment was final and would be directly followed by the reign of righteousness. This assumption was not justified by

1 The Scythians appeared in Media about 619 B.c., and, if they were really Sacee and came from the East, their appearance in Palestine would fall still later.

the event ; the deliverance and reformation were incomplete; and the inbringing of the reign of righteonsness was again deferred. Zephaniah sees this, but fails to draw the true inference. He postulates a new crisis in history similar to the Assyrian crisis of which Isaiah wrote, and assumes that it will run such a course as to fulfil Isaiah's unfulfilled predictions. But the movements of history do not repeat themselves ; and the workings of God's right- eous providence take fresh shape in each new scene of the world's life, so that a prediction not fulfilled under the conditions for which it was given can never again be fulfilled in detail. As it is an essential fcature of prophecy that all ideas are not only presented but thought out in concrete form, and with reference to present historical conditions, the distinction between the temporary form and the permanent religious truth embodied in that form is also essential. The tendency to confound the two, to ascribe absolute truth to what is mere embodiment, and therefore to regard unful- filled predictions as simply deferred, even where the form of the prediction is obviously dependent on mere temporary conditions of the prophet's own time, gained ground from the time of Zephaniah onwards, and culminated in the Apocalyptic literature. As it grew, the eternal ideas of the great prophets fell into the background, aud were at length entirely lost in the crass Jewish conception of a Messianic age, which is little more than an apotheosis of national particularism and selfrighteousness. Zephaniah's eschatology is not open to this charge: with him, as with Isaiah, the doctrine of the salvation of the remnant of Israel is inspired by spiritual con- victious and

instinct with ethical force. The emphasis still lies on the moral idea of the remnant, not on the physical conception Israel. He does not yield to Amos or Isaiah in the courage with which he denounces sin in high places, and he is akin to Hosea in his firm hold of the principle that the divine governance is rooted not only in righteousness but in love, and that the triumph of love is the end of Jehovah's working. Yet even here we see the differ- ence between the first and second generations of prophecy. The persuasion to which Hosea attains only through an intense inward struggle, which lends a peculiar pathos to his book, appears in Zephaniah, as it were, ready made. There is no mental conflict before he can pass through the anticipation of devastating judgment to the assurance of the victory of divine love, and the sharp transi- tions that characterize the book are not, as with Hosea, due to sudden revulsion of feeling, but only mark the passage to some new topic in the circle of received prophetic truth. The finest thing in the book—in spite of certain obscurities, which may be partly due to corruptions of the text—is the closing passage ; but the description of the day of Jehovah, the dies ire dies illa of chap. i. 15, which furnishes the text of the most striking of medieval hymns, has perhaps taken firmer hold of the religious imagination. Least satisfactory is the treatment of the judgment on heathen nations, and of their subsequent conversion to Jehovah. In the scheme of Isaiah it is made clear that the fall of the power that shatters the nations cannot fail to be recognized as Jehovah's work, for Assyria falls before Jerusalem as soou as it seeks to go beyond the limits of the divine commission, and thus the doctrine ' With us is God" is openly vindicated before the nations. But Zephaniah assumes that the convulsions of history are Jehovah's work, and specially designed for the instruction and amendment of Israel (iii. 6 sg.), and neglects to show how this conviction, which he himself derives from Isaiah, is to be brought home by the com- ing judgment to the heart of heathen nations. Their own gods indeed will prove helpless (ii. 11), but this is not enough to turn their eyes towards Jehovah. Here, therefore, there is in his eschatology a sensible lacuna, from which Isaiah's construction is free, and a commencement of the tendency to look at things from a merely Israelite standpoint, which is so notable a feature of the latcr Apocalyptic.*

There is no important separate commentary on Zephaniah ; the student must refer to the commentaries on the minor prophets (see HosEa). The relative section in Duhm, Theologie der Propheten, deserves attention. An apocryphal

prophecy ascribed to Zephaniah is quoted by Clement of Alexandria, Stromata, v. Il, § 78. CW. R. 8.)

ZEPHYRINUS, Sz, bishop of Rome from about 202 to 26th August 217, succeeded Victor I. He is described as a man of little intelligence or strength of character, and the somewhat important controversies on doctrine and discipline that marked his pontificate are more appropri- ately associated with the name of Hrpponytus (q.v.) and of Calixtus, his principal adviser and afterwards his suc- cessor (see PopEpom, vol. xix. p. 489).

ZEPHYRUS, the west wind, brother of Boreas, the north wind, was the son of the Titan Astreus and Eos, the dawn (Hes., Z'heog., 579), and had his palace in Thrace (i1., ix.5; Od., v. 295). He was married to Chloris, the goddess of flowers (Ov., ast., v. 195), by whom he had a son, Carpus; by the harpy Podarge he was also the

781

father of Xanthus and Balius, the horses of Achilles a, xvi. 150).

ZERAFSHAN, an independent "circle" or province of Russian Turkestan, includes the valley of the river Zeraf- shan from its sources to Katty-Kurgan, as well as the mountains which bound the valley to the north and south. It is the Socprana (q.v.) of the ancients, famed for its fertility, which is due to the waters of the Polytimetus. The present Russian province of Zerafshan, which is densely peopled along the course of the river, has a length of nearly 250 miles trom west to east, a width of from 50 to 100 miles, and an area of 19,665 square miles. It is bounded on the W. by Bokhara, on the N. by the Kizil- kum Desert of Syr-Daria and the Russian province of Ferghana, on the E. by the Alai plateau, and on the S. by the vassal khanates of Bokhara,—Karategin, Hissar, Shahr-i-Syabs, and Karshi. High chains of mountains enclose the province on

three sides. To the north are the Turke- stan Mountains, which separate the tributaries of the Syr from those of the Amu, rising to 22,000 feet in their highest snow-clad peaks, and crossed by but few passes, which themselves range from 10,000 to 13,000 feet. In the west the Turkestan Mountains are joined by the Nura- tau Mountains, which have a north-westerly direction (see TURKEsTAN). In the south-east the valley of the Zerafshan is separated from that of the Surkhab by the grand snow-clad Hissar Range, which runs from north-east to south-west, and by several chains parallel to it, while farther west a series of mountains, partly running also towards the south-west and partly towards the north-west, separate it from the Bokhara plains of the Amu. The lowest passes across these chains have altitudes of not less than 7000 feet. But the valley of the Zerafshan lies broadly open towards the steppes in the west, and has supplied an easy route for the railway from the Caspian by Merv to Samarkand.

Granites and all kinds of crystalline slates are widely developed in the mountains which enclose Zerafshan. Carboniferous lime- stones are met with in the west; but the great bulk of the deposits which overlie the crystalline slates, and are raised to the greatest heights in the highlands, belong to a more recent geological time, namely, to the Secondary—chiefly Chalk—and Tertiary periods. The Zerafshan valley owes its fertility to the thick terraces of loess which surround the base of the mountains and sometimes reach a thickness of 100 feet.

The Zerafshan river, which owes its name("gold-spreading"') prob- ably more to the fertility it brings than to the gold which is found in very small quantities in its sands, rises under the name of Matchi from a large glacier, fed by the high peaks which rise at the junction (improperly called Kok-su) of the "urkestan Mountains with the Alai Range. The altitude of the glacier is about 9000 feet, and thence the Zerafshan flows due west in a narrow valley, with a fall of not less than 40 feet per mile. Several villages are scattered over the slopes of the mountains ; and some thirty bridges,made of poplar trees felled across the river and swaying under the weight of the foot passenger, furnish means of communication. After a course of nearly 100 miles in the mountains the Zerafshan receives from the left the Fan, with the Yagnob, which flows in a high longitudinal

valley, separated from the main river by the lofty Zerafshan Range. About Pendjakent it enters on its middle course along a broad valley from 20 to 50 miles wide. Large aryks, or irrigation canals, one of which is 50 miles in length and has all the appearance of a river, distribute the waters of the Zerafshan over the valley, while the river itself divides into two great branches, 10 to 12 miles apart, forming a large island, the Miankal, which is the most fertile part of the province. Adam keeps up the water in the southern branch, Kara-Daria, close by which is situated SAMARKAND (q.v.), and five large aryks distribute its water over the fields. Numberless canals drain off its waters farther west in the neighbourhood of the city of Bokhara, so that, after carrying an insignificant volume of water to the small Lake Kara-kul, it stops its course there, some 30 miles from the Amu-Daria, of which it formerly was an affluent.

The population of Zerafshan was reckoned at 351,900 in 1883. The bulk of the inhabitants are Uzbegs and Tajiks, the remainder consisting of a few thousand Persians, Hindus, and Jews respect- ively ; the Russians are mainly military, civil functionaries, merchants, and a few peasant settlers. Wheat, barley, rice, and other cereals, as also lucerne, are widely cultivated, and the gardens

of Zerafshan are beautiful. on in the towns and villages.

Zerafshan is divided into three districts, the chief towns of which are Samarkand (36,000 inhabitants), now connected by rail with Bokhara, Merv, and Mikhailovsk on Krasnovodsk Bay in the Cas- pian Sca; Katty-Kurgan (4425), close by the frontier of Bokhara ; and Pendjakent (1880), chief town of the mountain district of the upper Zerafshan, known as Kohistan.

ZERBST, a manufacturing town in the duchy of Anhalt, Germany, is situated on the Nuthe, 11 miles north- west of Dessau and 21 south-east of Magdeburg. It con- tains five churches, one of which (St Nicholas), built in 1446-88, is a good example of the Late Gothic style as developed in Saxony, with its spacious proportions, groined vaulting, and bare

simple pillars. The town-house dates from about 1480, but it was disfigured by additions in the beginning of the 17th century. The palace (1681- 1750) has been used as a depository of archives since 1872. There are several quaint old houses, with high gables, in the market-place, in the middle of which stand a Roland column, of about 1445, and a bronze figure known as the " Butterjungfer" (butter-girl), of uncertain origin and meaning, but now regarded as the palladium of the town. The old Franciscan monastery, with fine cloisters, founded in 1250, contains the gymnasium ; a nunnery of 1214 has been converted into barracks; and the Augustinian monastery of 1390 has been a hospital since 1525. The site of the old fortifications is occupied by pretty pro- menades. Gold and silver articles, silk, plush, cloth, leather, soap, starch, chemicals, and carriages are among the chief manufactures. Iron-founding is carried on; and several breweries are engaged in the preparation of Zerbster bitter beer, which enjoys considerable repute. Market-gardening is also a profitable industry at Zerbst. The population, almost entirely Protestant, was 15,069 in 1885; in 1849 it was 9350.

Zerbst is an ancient town, mentioned in 949. In 1307 it came into the possession of the Anhalt family, and from 1603 till 1793 was the capital of the collateral branch of Anhalt-Zerbst. In 1793 it passed to Anhalt-Dessau.

ZEUS, the chief deity of ancient Greek religion, bears a name which almost certainly means "sky." His title is identified by etymologists with the Sanskrit Dyaus, the "bright one," "sky," though his legend and place in religion are not closely akin to those of the Vedic deity. It seems nearly certain that the peoples who speak Aryan languages had at some remote time a common word for the sky, and nothing can be more probable than that they also worshipped the vault of heaven. In what sense the sky may have been an Aryan deity before the distant and obscure process called the Aryan dispersion, it is not possible with certainty to say. The followers of Mr Herbert Spencer might not inconsistently suppose that there was once an Aryan medicine-man or chief named Sky, and that on his death his ghost was worshipped and his cult finally blended with that of the actual natural phenomenon. Or, again, it might be argued that the sky was originally adored as a symbol of the Infinite, and that men, losing the

original conception, and misled by the personal appearance of the name as other words for sky became more familiar, were deceived into the belief that "sky " was a personal deity. Or, once nore, theorists might urge that Sky was first worshipped at a stage of early fancy, when all things in nature were looked on as personal and of human parts and passions, while later the sky sank back into the category of lifeless things, leaving Zeus as a distinct personal being and deity. Other hypotheses might, no doubt, be invented, but unhappily we have no means of proving their historical accuracy. It is a common thing among backward races, for example on the Gold Coast, to find Sky worshipped as a god, or regarded as the dwelling-place of gods. How

A variety of petty trades are carricd

ZER—

4G U

and in what manner such conceptions were attained by the ancestors of the ancient Greeks we can never know as a matter of fact

Coming to historical and documentary evidence, our earliest knowledge of Zeus is derived from the Homeric and Hesiodic poems. Itis very probable that in the legend and ritual of remote towns and temples in Greece we have traces of a conception of Zeus much older than that which meets us in Homer. But Homer and Hesiod are the most ancient literary testimonies ; next to these come the speculations of the early philosophers and the writings of the lyric poets, Pindar, Herodotus, and the tragedians. Finally, we have the Zeus of the philosophers of the central period,—Plato and Aristotle,—and the Zeus of the later philosophic periods down to the prevalence of Christianity.

By the time that Zeus meets us in Homer he has wandered far from the original conception of him. What- ever that may have been, Zeus cannot have been first imagined in an age of advanced society on the heroic system, that is, in an age of the fully developed monogam- ous family of city states each governed by a king, and of a general loose confederation, with a kind of upper and lower house,—the prince's council and the

assembly of the people. It is, however, on the model of such a society that the Olympian consistory is organized in Homer, with Zeus for the bretwalda, the principal chief of the gods. Such a position Zeus holds in Homer. The poet represents him as anthropomorphic,—a powerful, humorous, amorous ruler, sometimes troubled by disputes among his younger brethren, —Hades and Poseidon,—his wife, and his children. His claim to supreme authority is based on primogeniture (Z/., xv. 187), whereas in Hesiod Zeus is the successful youngest son of Cronus. Both poets agree that he has overthrown the paternal dynasty, and established his own power after violent struggles. The legends in Hesiod are full of ugly and puerile fables and conceits, dating doubtless from remote and uncivilized antiquity. Though Zeus be so much of a magnified man in Homer, there are probably traces of the elemental conception, and his union with Hera (il., xiv. 152) on the crest of Ida may be a poetic memory of the old story of Heaven wedding Earth, though Hera cannot as a rule be regarded as a form of Gea or of Demeter. While among the gods Zeus is a father, brother, and emperor, Homeric men sometimes use his name as we might use that of God, in a religious rather than in a mythological sense. Now regarded as subject to Fate, so that he cannot save even his own children from her decree, elsewhere he seems to hold the gifts of Fate in his own hand: from two vast jars he deals out good and evil to mankind. Where morals are concerned, he sanctions the oath (//., iii. 227) both in this world and the next, and he is the friend of strangers and suppliants, the patron of the hospitable hearth. In Homer Zeus does not assume the form of the lower animals, and in the strange passage where he recounts his loves, the Leporello of his own Don Juan, he says nothing of those well-known disguises. In Hesiod the old wild tales revive, and we learn, for example (Theog., 886 ; compare the scholiast), that Zeus swallowed his own wife, Metis, after inducing her to take the shape of a fly, just as Puss-in-Boots got rid of the ogre who turned himself into a mouse. In Hesiod, too, we have the tale of Prometheus and Pandora, a tale which afforded such an admirable theme for moral handling by A®schylus. Zeus tempted Epimetheus by the aid of the woman Pan- dora; hence came death into the world and all our woe. Then Prometheus pitied and aided men, whom Zeus had intended to destroy, and the hero was fixed to a rock in Caucasus by order of the god. The myth may be alle-

gorized in a dozen ways, and perhaps may be taken to mean that man does not increase happiness by increasing

knowledge, science, and the arts of life. Without the gifts of Prometheus, carried to what Horace would have thought a profane pitch of perfection, we should not have reached modern industrialism and the horrors of modern war. In Hesiod Prometheus may stand for humanity vainly struggling to be powerful and happy against that inflexible and ruthless law which is Zeus. And what shall the end be? How shall the ways of Zeus be justified to men, and man's rebellion be justified to Zeus? We no more know how Aischylus solved the problem mythically than we can dis- cover the actual solution. The idea that another shall voluntarily take the place of Prometheus (A!sch., Prom. Vonct., 1026) naturally recalls the theory of the Atonement. To such mysteries does the Greek mind attain, and in such ultimate perplexities is the conception of Zeus, the Bon Dieu of the Homeric Olympian festivals, involved.

At the opposite pole from the Hesiodic Zeus is the Zeus who practically means the unknown god, as Terpander sings, Let wavrwv apxa, TavTww ayhTwp, or, as the Orphic hymn (whatever its date) proclaims him, Zebs xepary, Leds uéooa, Ards & éx wavra rérvuxrar.

Thus Zeus becomes a shorthand symbol for the pantheistic deity.

The Zeus of pure religion and of speculation is very different from the Zeus of ritual and of local myth. To ritual, and to the local myths treasured by priests, which often tried to explain the ritual, we owe the unbecoming anecdotes of Zeus as the god who, in the form of ant, snake, bull, eagle, and so forth, made love to the daughters of men. On this point reference may be made to the work of the present writer, J/yths, Ritual, and Religion (ii. 189). The hypothesis there offered is that the Greeks in their early uncivilized state, dwelling in tribes and in scattered kraals or villages, retained traditions like the totemic and magical beliefs of Red Indians or Australians. When they became more united and more civilized, they did not drop wholly the faith that they were descended from animals, nor wholly forget such tales as the Indians tell of Manibozho

and the Australians of Punjel, but they transferred the old anec- dotes to Zeus. In place of saying, "We descend from a bull," they said, "We descend from Zeus, who for purposes of amorous disguise took the shape of a bull," or a swan, or an ant, as the case might be. Probably some foreign legends, Phoenician or African, were also borrowed and attached to Zeus. If this be a correct, as it seems a possible, hypothesis, then it will be well to be cautious in explaining the myths about Zeus as if they were all of elementary origin, and all expressed in images some natural process or series of natural phenomena. We must regard Zeus as an extremely difficult complex, in which elemental myths, myths of savage fancy, myths of perverted history, theories of early natural philosophy, and the ideas of panthe- istic speculation are all confusedly mingled. He is the sum of the religious thought of Hellas, formed in the numberless ages between savagery and complete civilization. He received human sacrifices even after the Christian era ; yet long before it he all but corresponded to the Unknown Substance of Spencerian philosophy. (See Plato, Rep., viii. 565 D; Suidas, s.v. " Laphystius.") A summary of the Zeus myths will be found in Dr William Smith's Dictionary of Classical Mythology. For a comparison between the character and attributes of Jupiter and Zeus, see the article JUPITER.

Among modern works in which the character and legend of Zeus are discussed may be recommended Welcker's @riechische Gotterlehre (Gottingen, 1857); Preller's Griechische Mythologie (Berlin, 1872); the Selected Essays of Mr Max Miiller; Le Sentiment Religieux en Greéce of M. Jules Girard (3d ed., Paris, 1887) ; and C. O. Miiller's Introduction to a Scientific System of Mythology (Eng. transl., London, 1844). The subject has not yet been reached (1888) in Rosscher's great Lexikon. The authorities named will introducc the

reader in turn to other authors, their researches and speculations. Heyne's Apollodorus (Gottingen, 1803) is also useful. (Any Li)

ZEUXIS, a Greek painter, who flourished about 420- 390 B.c., and described himself as a native of Heraclea, meaning probably the town in Magna Grecia. To this neighbourhood seem to point the facts of his

having painted a figure of Helena for a temple in Croton, of his presenting a picture of Alemena to the people of Agri- gentum, and of his having been, in one account, a pupil of Damophilus of Himera in Sicily, the other statement being that he was a pupil of Neseus of Thasos. After- wards he appears to have resided in Ephesus. His known works are—

1. Zeus Surrounded by Deities.} 8. Alemena, possibly another 2. Eros Crowned with Roses. name for 7.

3. Marsyas Bound. 9. Helena at Croton.

4, Pan. 10. Penelope.

5. Centaur Family. 11. Menelaus.

6. Boreas or Triton. 12. Athlete.

7

An Old Woman.

. Infant Hercules Strangling| 13. Boy with Grapes.

the Serpents in Presence} 14.

of his Parents, Alcmena|15. Grapes.

and Amphitryon. 16. Monochromes. 17. Plastic works in clay.

In ancient records we are told that Zeuxis, following the initiative of Apollodorus, had introduced into the art of painting a method of representing his figures in light and shadow, as opposed to the older method of outline, with large flat masses of colour for draperies, and other details, such as had been practised by Polygnotus and others of the great fresco painters. The new method led to snialler compositions, and often to pictures consisting of only a single figure, on which it was the more easy for the painter to demonstrate the combined effect of the various means by which he obtained perfect roundness of form. The effect would appear strongly realistic, as com- pared with the older'

method, and to this was probably due the origin of such stories as the contest in which Zeuxis painted a bunch of grapes so like reality that birds flew towards it, while Parrhasius painted a curtain which even Zeuxis mistook for real. The story reads in Pliny (WV. H., xxxv. 65) as if Parrhasius had brought forward a picture with an apparent curtain hung in front to protect the colours from the light, and that Zeuxis had tried to pull the curtain aside. It is perhaps a variation of this story when we are told (Pliny, loc. cit.) that Zeuxis also painted a boy holding grapes, towards which birds flew, the artist remarking that if the boy had been as well painted as the grapes the birds would have kept at a dis- tance. But, if the method of Zeuxis led him to real roundness of form, to natural colouring, and to pictures consisting of single figures or nearly so, it was likely to lead him also to search for striking attitudes or motives, which by the obviousness of their meaning should emulate the plain intelligibility of the larger compositions of older times. Lucian, in his Zeuas, speaks of him as carrying this search to a novel and strange degree, as illustrated in the group of a Female Centaur with her Young. When the picture was exhibited, the spectators admired its in- vention and overlooked the skill of the painter, to the vexation of Zeuxis. The pictures of Hercules Strangling the Serpents to the astonishment of his father and mother (7), Penelope (10), and Menelaus Weeping (11) are quoted as instances in which strong motives naturally presented themselves to him. But, in spite of the tendency towards realism inherent in the new method of Zeuxis, he is said to have retained the largeness of form which had charac- terized his predecessors. Of all his known works it would be expected that this quality would have appeared best in his famous picture of Helena, for this reason, that we cannot conceive any striking or effective incident for him in her career. In addition to this, however, Quintilian

states (Inst. Orat., xii. 10, 4) that in respect of largeness of form Zeuxis had followed Homer, while there is the fact that he had inscribed two verses of the Iliad (iii. 156 sq.) under his figure of Helena. As models for the picture he was allowed the presence of five of the most beautiful maidens of Croton at his own request, in order that he might be able to "transfer the truth of life toa mute image." Cicero (De Invent. ii. 1, 1)

assumed that Zeuxis had found distributed among these five the various elements that went to make up a figure of ideal beauty. It should not, however, be understood that the painter had made up his figure by the process of combining the good points of various models, but rather that he found among those models the points that answered to the ideal Helena in his own mind, and that he merely required the models to guide and correct himself by during the process of transferring his ideal to form and colour. This picture also is said to have been exhibited publicly, with the result that Zeuxis made much profit out of it. By this and other means, we are told, he became so rich as to rather give away his pictures than to sell them. He presented his Alemena to the Agrigentines, his Pan to King Arche- laus of Macedonia, whose palace he is also said to have decorated with paintings. According to Pliny (WV. Z.,, xxxv. 62), he made an ostentatious display of his wealth at Olympia in having his name woven in letters of gold on his dress. But, as there would not be much ostenta- tion in that, and as Pliny at times makes mistakes in translating from his Greek sources, it is possible that Zeuxis may merely have presented some piece of tapestry to a temple at Olympia with the customary inscription woven in letters of gold. Under his picture of an Athlete (12) he wrote that "It is easier to revile than to rival" (Hopnoetai tis paddov 7 Pysjoerat). A contemporary, Isocrates (De Permut., 2), remarks that no one would say that Zeuxis and Parrhasius had the same profession as those persons who paint pinakia, which is equivalent to the vase-painters of the time. We possess many examples of the vase-painting of the period circa 400 B.c., and it is noticeable on them that there is great freedom and facility in drawing the human form, so as to suggest roundness and perspective. In the absence of fresco paintings of that date we have only these vases to fall back upon. Yet, with their limited resources of colour and perspective, they in a measure show the influence of Zeuxis, while, as would be expected, they retain perhaps more of the large- ness of form of older times. It is said that he died of laughter at the quaintness of a picture he had painted of an Old Woman.

ZHITOMIR, or Jrromir, a town of western Russia, capital of the government of Volhynia, is situated on the Tetereff river, 646 miles to the south-west of Moscow. The railway which connects Riga and Kénigsberg with Odessa, wa Berditcheff, passes within 27 miles of the old Lithuanian

city without sending a branch towards at; and the whole place, with its old abandoned mansions of the Polish nobility, has an air of decay. Nor is it rich in historical monuments of its troubled past, its churches and cathedral mostly dating from the 18th century. Its popu- lation, however, reached 54,830 in 1884,—Jews constitut- ing more than one-third of the total. Two large printing offices in Zhitomir issue nearly one-half of all the Hebrew books printed in Russia. The Jewish merchants carry on a considerable export trade in the agricultural produce of the plains surrounding the city, as also in timber and wooden wares from the forests to the north.

Zhitomir is a very old city, tradition tracing its foundation as far back as the times of Askold and Dir. The annals, however, men- tion it chiefly in connexion with invasions of the Tartars who plundered it in the 13th, 14th, and even the 17th century (1606), or 1m connexion with destructive conflagrations. It fell under

| Lithuanian rule in 1320, and during the 15th century was one of

the fifteen chief cities of the kingdom. Later on it became part of Poland, and when the Cossacks rose under Khmelnitsky (1648) they sacked the town. It became annexed to Russia along with the rest of the Ukraine.

ZIMMERMANN, Joann Gezore, Rirrer von (1728- 1795), a Swiss philosophical writer and physician, was born at Brugg, in the canton of Aargau, on 8th December 1728. He studied at Géttingen, where he took the degree of doctor of medicine. Afterwards he practised as a physician in his native place, and here he wrote Ueber die Einsamkeit (1755) and Vom Nationalstolz (1758). These books made a great impression in Germany, and were translated into almost every European language. They are now only of historical interest. In Zimmermann's character there was a strange combination of sentimentalism, melancholy, and enthusiasm ; and it was by the free and eccentric expres- sion of these qualities that he excited the interest of his contemporaries. Another book by him, written at Brugg, Von der Erfahrung in der Arznewwissenschaft (1764), also attracted much attention. In 1768 he settled at Hanover as

private physician of George III. with the title of Hofrath. Catherine II. invited him to the court of St Petersburg, but this invitation he declined. He attended Frederick the Great during that monarch's last illness, and afterwards issued various books about him, of which the chief were Ueber Frederich den Grossen und meine Unterredung mit thm kurz vor seenem Tode (1788) and Fragmente tiber Friedrich den Grossen (1790). These writings display extraordinary personal vanity, and convey a wholly false impression of Frederick's character. Zimmermann died at Hanover on 7th October 1795.

See Zimmermann's Briefe an einige seiner Freunde in der Schweiz (1830) and Bodemann's Johann Georg Zimmermann (1878).

ZINC, the name both of an important useful metal and of the element of which the metal consists. Zine as a component of brass had currency in metallurgy long before it became known as an individual metal. Aristotle refers to the alleged fact that the Mossinecians produced a bright and light-coloured yaAxds, not by addition of tin, but by fusing up with an earth. Pliny explicitly speaks of a mineral cadmia as serving for the conversion of copper into aurichalcum, and says further that the deposit (of ZnO) formed in the brass furnaces could be used instead of the mineral. The same process was used for centuries after Pliny, but its rationale was not understood. Stahl, as late as 1702, quoted the formation of brass as a case of the union of a metal with an earth into a metallic compound ; but he subsequently adopted the view propounded by Kunkel in 1677, that cadmia is a metallic calx, and that it dyes the copper yellow by giving its metal up to it. In 1597 Libavius described a "peculiar kind of tin" which was prepared in India, and of which a friend had given him a quantity. From his account it is quite clear that that metal was zinc, but he did not recognize it as the metal of calamine. It is not known to whom the discovery of isolated zine is due; but we do know that the art of zine-smelting was practised in England from about 1730. The first Continental zinc-works were erected at Liége in 1807. The atomic weight of zinc is 65°37 (the mean of the results obtained by Marignac and Baubigny), O = 16.

Zine Ores.—The following may be named as important.

(1) Red Zine Ore (impure ZnO) occurs in quartz-like crystals, but more frequently presents itself in large-grained and lamellar masses. Sp. gr. 5:4 to 57. Colour, hyacinth-red to brown. Lustre, adamantine.

(2) Franklinite (RO.M,O3, where R stands for Zn, Fe, Mn; M for Fe, Mn). The zinc averages about 10 per cent. It crystallizes in regular octahedra, with rounded-off edges and angles. Sp. gr. 5°1. Colour, black ; streak, reddish-brown. Lustre, sub-metallic. This and the preceding occur in association with each other and other things in New Jersey, U.S.

(3) Calamine (ZnCO3). "The pure mineral (zine spar) forms well-

defined, though small, rhombohedra. The ordinary ore is massive, and is contaminated, often largely, with clay, silica, oxide of iron, and the like. Sp. gr. 4 to 4°5. Sometimes colourless, but as a rule light grey, yellow, or buff-coloured. Lustre, vitreous. It is found in association with silicates of zinc, zinc-blende, and lead ores, chiefly in limestone and dolomitic strata, at the Kelmisberg or Vieille Montagne in Belgium, in Derbyshire and Northumber- land, and in Silesia; but these last deposits are well nigh exhausted. Irregular deposits occur near Santander and Cartagena in Spain, and in Sardinia. At Wiesloch in Baden a yellow variety is found, which contains as much as 8 per cent. of cadmium. Smaller per- centages of cadmium are met with in many other zinc ores.

(4) Electric Calamine, the German Kieselzinkerz (ZnOSiO2 + HO), is also called hemimorphite on account of the marked hemimorphism in its (ortho-rhombic) crystals. Sp. gr. 3°35 to 3°5. Sometimes colourless, but more frequently grey, yellow, red, green, brown, blue,—always, however, light-coloured. Lustre, vitreous. The crystals, when heated, exhibit electric polarity ; hence the name. As arnule they are small and united into cuneiform, spheroidal, or kidney-shaped masses; there are also granular, dense, and earthy varieties. It occurs with willemite and calamine at the Altenberg near Aix-la-Chapelle, with blende and lead ore at Raibel and Blei. berg in Carinthia, near Iserlohn in Westphalia, at Matlock in Derbyshire, near Tarnowitz in Silesia, at Olbucs, Rezbanya in Hun- gary,

and Nertchinsk in Siberia. American sources are at Pheenix- ville and Friedensville in Pennsylvania and in the Austin mine in Virginia.

(5) Wéllemite, anhydrous ZnOSiO», occurs in New J ersey and else-where; it is a comparatively rare ore.

(6) Zinc-Blende, or shortly Blende (ZnS).—The five ores mentioned above, as indeed all oxidized zinc ores, having become scarce, most of the zine which now occurs in commerce is derived from zinc- blende. This ore crystallizes in combinations of the two tetrahedra: and other forms of the regular system. Sp. gr. 3-9 to 4-2. Colour, green, yellow, red, but mostly brown or black. Colourless crystals are scarce, Lustre, fatty or diamond-like. The ordinary ore forms crypto-crystalline or fibrous or granular masses, which sometimes present the form of kidneys, consisting of concentric layers. The finest crystals are found in Franklin, New J ersey, which are colour- less and consist of pure ZnS, and in the Pefias de Europa, Asturias (Spain), in which liquid enclosures are often met with. The darker varieties, which always include more or less of foreign sulphides, are found in a great number of places. In Cornwall, Wales, Alston Moor in Cumberland, Teesdale in Yorkshire, Derbyshire, and the Isle of Man dark-coloured blende is found in the lead- mining districts with galena, quartz, and limestone. In Belgium and on the Rhine massive blende occurs with iron pyrites and galena ; this ore requires a great deal of sorting to become fit for smelting. In Sweden blende is frequently found: at Ammeberg on Lake Wetter a vast deposit occurs in the gneiss. To English miners blende is known as " black Jack," to the South Americans as "chumbe." The principal American deposits are in Missouri.

Metallurgy.—Oxide of zinc, like most heavy metallic oxides, is easily reduced to the metallic state by heating it to redness with charcoal ; but, as zinc has the exceptional property of being readily volatile at the temperature of its reduction, the operation must be carried out in some kind of retort, and the zinc be recovered as a distillate. To pure red zinc ore the operation of distilling with charcoal might be applied quite directly; and the same might be done with pure calamine of any kind, because the carbonic acid of carbonate of zinc goes off below redness and

the silica of silicate of zinc only retards, but does not prevent, the reducing action of the charcoal. Zinc-blende, however, being sulphide of zine, is not directly reducible by char- coal ; but it is easy to convert it into oxide by roasting : the sulphur goes off as sulphurous acid, whilst the zinc re- mains in the (infusible) form of oxide, ZnO. In practice, however, wo never have to deal with pure zinc minerals, but with complex mixtures, which must first of all be subjected to mechanical operations, to remove at least part of the gangue, and if possible also of the heavy metallic impurities (see MrTaLiurey, vol. xvi. p. 59 sg). And, supposing this to be done, the ore, even if it is not blende, must be roasted, in order to remove all volatile components as com- pletely as possible, because these, if allowed to remain, would carry away a large proportion of the zinc vapour during the distillation. If the zinc is present as blende, this operation offers considerable difficulties, because in the roasting process the sulphide of zinc passes in the first

gases go out at m, where they mix with air; goes along the top of the muffle to a

slanting canal 6 and keeps it at a temperature above the

slides down the

785

instance into sulphate, which demands a high temperature for its conversion into oxide. Another point to be con- sidered in this connexion is that the masses of sulphurous acid evolved, being destructive of vegetable life, are an intolerable nuisance to the neighbourhood in which the operations take place.

Hasenclever and Helbig have constructed a furnace by which some two-thirds of the sulphurous acid can be conducted into chambers and condensed into the useful form of oil of a vitriol. Figs. 1, 2, and 3 show how the furnace is constructed. & is a Siemens gas furnace, n being ¢ the orifice for the introduction of the fuel ; the 7

the flame travels between the sole g and the bottom of the muffle c, and then

the flue g; it passes below the

fusing-point of antimony (432° C.). The ore is introduced through d the funnel a; it Sid

Fig. 1.—Longitudinal section along A B of figs 2.

partition walls d, d, which follow each other at distances of half a metre, compel it to spread out evenly into a thin layer, partition walls, as shown by fig. 3, are arranged so that the gascs

The

| (~- B

Fig. 2.—Horizontal section along C D of figs 1.

coming from the muffle must travel along an undulating line and lick up as much as possible of the sulphur of the ore. From the last compartment ¢ the gaseous product goes first to a cooling chamber, and thence to the vitriol chamber. The hol- low cylinder f, which is cooled internally by air while made to revolve, con- veys the ore in instalments from the bottom end of the canal to the muffle. At in- tervals of two hours it is — spread evenly on the bot- Fig. 3.

tom of the muffle, and at last it is drawn out through o and trans- ferred to the sole g, to be finally roasted (“ todtgerdstet”) there, The apparatus works very satisfactorily even with ores poor in sulphur. An ore containing 20 per cent. of sulphur contained at the end f of the inclined canal 10 per cent., at the end 0 of the muffle 6°4 per cent., and at last, when “‘todtgeréstet,” only 1°2. About one-third of the sulphur is lost, 7.¢., goes out through the chimney, as SO.

The distillation process in former times, especially in England, used to be carried out “ per descensum.” The bottom of a crucible is perforated by a

pipe which projects into the crucible to about two-thirds of its height. The powdery mixture of ore and charcoal is put into the crucible around the pipe, the crucible closed by a luted-on lid, and placed in a furnace constructed so as to permit of the lower end of the pipe projecting into the ash-pit. The zinc vapour produced descends through the pipe and condenses into liquid zinc, which is collected in a ladle held under the outlet end of the pipe. For manufacturing purposes a furnace similar to that used for the making of glass was employed to heat a circular row of crucibles standing on a shelf along the wall of the furnace. This system, however, has long been abandoned ; at present one or other of the following methods is used as a rule.

XXIV, — 99

786

In the Belgian process the reduction and distillation are carried out in cylindrical retorts of fire-clay, about a metre long and 0°15 metre wide inside. Some forty-six or more retorts, arranged in eight parallel horizontal rows, are heated in one furnace. The fur- naces are square and open in front, to allow the outlet ends of the retorts to project ; they are grouped together by fours; and their several chimneys are within the same enclosure. Each retort is provided with two adapters, uamely, a conical pipe of fire-clay, about 0°4 metre long, which fits into the retort end, and a conical tube of black sheet iron, which fits over the end of the fire-clay pipe, and which at its outlet end is only 2 centimetres wide. To start a new furnace, the front side is closed provisionally bya brick wall, a fire lighted inside, and the temperature raised very gradually to a white heat. After four days' heating the provisional front wall is removed piecemeal, and the retorts, after having been heated to redness, are inserted in corresponding sets. The charge of the re- torts consists of a mixture of 1100 Ib of roasted calamine and 550 Ib of dry powdered coal per furnace. A newly-started furnace, how- ever, is used for a time with smaller charges. Supposing the last of these preliminary distillations to have been completed, the resi- dues left in the retorts are removed and the retorts, as they lie in the hot furnace, are charged by means of semi-cylindrical shovels, and their adapters put on. The charging operation

being com- pleted, the temperature is raised, and as a consequence an evolution of carbonic oxide soon begins, and becomes visible by the gas burst- ing out into the characteristic blue flame. After a time the flame becomes dazzling white, showing that zine vapour is beginning to escape. The iron adapters are now slipped on without delay, and left on for two hours, when, as a matter of experience, a consider- able amount of zinc has gone out of the retort, the greater part into the fire-clay adapter, the rest into the iron cone. The former con- tains a mixture of semi-solid and molten metal, which is raked out into iron ladles and cast into plates of 66 to 77 tb weight, to be sold as "'spelter." The contents of the iron recipient consist ofa powdery mixture of oxide and metal, which is added to the next charge, except what is put aside to be sold as "zinc dust." This dust may amount to 10 per cent. of the total production. As soon as the adapters have been cleared of their contents, they are replaced, and again left to themselves for two hours, to be once more emptied and replaced, &c. The complete exhaustion of the charge of a furnace takes about 11 hours.

In the Silesian process the distillation is conducted in specially constructed muffles, which are arranged in two parallel rows within a low-vaulted furnace, pretty much like the pots in a glass furnace. As a rule every furnace accommodates ten muffles. Through an orifice in the outlet pipe (which during the distillation is closed by a loose plug) a hot iron rod can be introduced from time to time to clear the canal of any solid zinc that may threaten to obstruct it. As soon as the outlet pipe has become sufficiently hot the zinc flows through it and collects in conveniently placed receptacles. About 6 or 8 hours after starting the distillation is in full swing, and in 24 hours it is completed. A fresh charge is then put in at once, the muffles being cleared only after three successive distillations. The distillate consists of a conglomerate of drops ("drop zinc"). It is fused up in iron basins lined with clay, and cast out into the customary form of cakes. In some modern works the muffles are heated by means of Siemens's regenerative gas furnace, by which a more uniform heat can be secured and maintained at a less cost.

Of the several metallic impurities in zinc ores iron is at once the most common and the least objectionable, because it is absolutely non-volatile

at the temperature of a zinc retort; whenever commercial zinc contains iron, this comes from its having been re-fused in iron vessels after its distillation. Lead, though hardly volatile by itself at a red heat, if present in the ore, is, so to say, carried over by the zine vapour and passes at least partly into the distillate. Cadmium and arsenic being more volatile than zinc itself, if present, accumulate in the first fractions of the distillate, but may pervade it in traces to the end. Zine made from oxidized ores is usually free from arsenic ; that derived from blende is almost sure to contain it. This in practice is equivalent to saying that, while in former times it was easy, 1 1s now very difficult, to obtain in commerce zinc free from arsenic. Traces of arsenic do not, however, in- terfere with any of the technical applications of the metal. As for cadmium, it is not (metallurgically speaking) an impurity at all, but, like silver in lead, a rather desirable admixture which it may be worth while to extract,

No reliable method is known by which commercial zinc could be purified so as to render it fit for all the purposes of the analyst ; the only way to obtain really pure zinc is

ZINC

to prepare it from pure oxide by distillation with charcoal in a non-metallic retort.

Properties of Pure Zinc.—Zine, a bluish-white metal, fuses at 415° C. and under ordinary atmospheric pressure boils at 1040° C. (Deville and Troost). The molten metal on cooling deposits crystals, and at last freezes into a com- pact crystalline solid, which may be brittle or ductile according to circumstances. According to Bolley, if zinc be cast into a mould at a red heat, the ingot produced is laminar and brittle; if cast at just the fusing-point, it is granular and sufficiently ductile to be rolled into sheet at the ordinary temperature. According to some authorities, pure zine always yields ductile ingots. A clue to the explanation of these anomalous facts is afforded by certain observations of Gustav Rose and others, from which it appears that zinc is dimorphous and may or may not crystallize in the regular system. Supposing a mass of molten zine to freeze into, say, cubes, the ingot will be ductile ; an ingot of, say, rhombohedra, on the other hand, is almost bound to be brittle, because

the crystals are orientated in a lawless fashion, and, as they cannot be expected to contract at the same rate in all directions, we must be prepared for a brittle ingot. Commercial " spelter " always breaks under the hammer ; but at 100° to 150° C. it is susceptible of being rolled out into even a very thin sheet. Such a sheet, if once produced, remains flexible when cold. At about 200° C., again, the metal becomes so brittle that it can be pounded ina mortar. The specific gravity of zinc cannot be expected to be perfectly constant ; according to Karsten, that of pure ingot is 6°915, and rises to 7°191 after rolling. The coefficient of linear expansion is 0°002,905 for 100° from 0° upwards (Fizeau). The specific heat is 0°093,93 (Schiiller and Wartha). Compact zinc is bluish white ; it does not tarnish much in the air. It is pretty soft, and clogs the file. If zinc be heated up to near its boiling-point, it catches fire and burns with a brilliant light into its powdery white oxide, which forms a reek in the air (lana philosophica). Boiling water attacks it appreciably, but no more, with evolution of hydrogen and formation of hydroxide, Zn(OH),. A rod of perfectly pure zinc, when immersed in dilute sulphuric acid, is so very slowly attacked that there is no visible evolution of gas; but, if a piece of platinum or other less basilous metal is brought into contact with the zinc, it dissolves readily, with evolution of hydrogen and formation of sul- phate. The ordinary impure metal dissolves at once, the more readily the less pure it is. Cold dilute nitric acid dissolves zinc as nitrate, with evolution of nitrous oxide, N,O, and formation of nitrate of ammonia. At higher temperatures, or with stronger acid, nitric oxide, NO, is produced besides or instead of nitrous.

Oxide of Zinc, ZnO.—There is only this one oxide. It is pre- pared chiefly in two ways,—({1) by burning the metal, a method now being carried out industrially, the zinc vapour being some- times produced extempore from a mixture of roasted ore and carbon, and (2) by heating the basic carbonate (see below). It is an infus- ible solid, which is intensely yellow at a red heat, but on cooling be- comes white. This at least is true of the oxide produced from the metal by combustion ; that produced from the carbonate, if once made yellow at a red heat, retains a yellow shade permanently. Oxide of zinc is insoluble in water, and does not combine directly with it; it dissolves readily in all aqueous acids, with formation of "zine salts." It also dissolves in aqueous caustic alkalies, including

ammonia, forming "zincates" (¢.g., ZnO.KHO). Oxide of zine is used in the arts as a white pigment; it has not by any means the covering power of white lead, but offers the advantage of being non-poisonous and of not becoming discoloured in sulphuretted hydrogen. It is used also in medicine, chiefly externally.

The hydrate, Zn(OH)s, is prepared by precipitating a solution of any zinc salt with caustic potash. The alkali must be free from carbonate and an excess of it must be avoided, otherwise the hydrate re-dissolves. It is a white powder, and is insoluble in water. To

acids and to alkalies it behaves like the oxide, but dissolves more readily,

ZIN—ZIN

The basic carbonate, ZnCOj.xZn(OH),, where x is variable, is prepared by precipitation of a solution of the sulphate or chloride with carbonate of soda. To obtain a product free of Cl or SO, there must be an excess of alkali and the zinc salt must be poured into the hot solution of the carbonate. The precipitate, even after exhaustive washing with hot water, still contains a trace of alkali; but from the oxide, prepared from it by ignition, the alkali can be washed away. The basic carbonate is, like the oxide, used as a pigment. Normal carbonate of zinc, ZnCO;, has never been pre- pared artificially, but it exists in nature as zinc spar.

The sulphate, ZnSO,+7H,0, white vitriol, is prepared by dis- solving the ordinary metal in dilute sulphuric acid. If care be taken to keep the zinc in excess, the solution will be free from all foreign metals except iron and perhaps manganese. Both are easily removed by passing chlorine through the cold solution, to produce ferric and manganic salt, and then digesting the liquid with a washed precipitate of basic carbonate, produced from a small portion of the solution by means of carbonate of soda. The iron and man- ganese are precipitated as hydrated sesquioxides, and are filtered off. The filtrate is acidified with a little sulphuric acid and evapor- ated to crystallization. The salt crystallizes out on cooling with 7 molecules of water, forming colourless ortho-rhombic prisms, usually small and needle-shaped. They are permanent in the air. According to Poggiale, 100 parts of water dissolve respectively of (7H,O) salt

115°2, 138°2, 161-5, 263°8, 442°6, and 653°6 parts

at O°, 10°, 28, SU; 80> and 100°C.

At 100° C. the crystals lose 6 of their 7 H,O's ; the rest of the water goes off only at a higher temperature, which lies close to that at which the salt begins to decompose. The anhydrous salt, when exposed to a red heat, breaks up into oxide, sulphur dioxide, and oxygen. An impure form of the salt is prepared by roasting zinc- blende at a low temperature. Sulphate of zinc is used in medicine, chiefly externally. In the arts it is employed in the preparation of varnishes, and as a mordant for the production of colours on calico. A green pigment known as Rinmann's green is prepared by mixing 100 parts of zinc vitriol with 2°5 parts of nitrate of cobalt and heat- ing the mixture to redness, to produce a compound of the two oxides. Sulphate of zinc, like sulphate of magnesia, unites with the sulphates of the potassium metals and of ammonium into crystalline double salts, ZnSO,.R.SO,+ 6H,O, isomorphous with one another and the magnesium salts.

The chloride, ZnCle, is produced by heating the metal in dry chlorine gas, when it distils over as a white translucent mass, easily fusible, and boiling sufficiently low to be distillable from out of a retort of hard Bohemian glass. Its vapour-density at 900° C. is 4°57, air=1, corresponding to ZnCl, (V. and C. Meyer). Chloride of zine is extremely hygroscopic; it dissolves in a fraction of its weight of even cold water, forming a syrupy solution. A solution of chloride of zinc is easily produced from metal and hydrochloric acid, but it cannot be evaporated to dryness without considerable de- composition of the hydrated salt into oxy-chloride and hydrochloric acid. A concentrated solution of chloride of zinc converts starch, cellulose, and a great many other organic bodies into soluble com- pounds; hence the application of the fused salt as a caustic in surgery, and the impossibility of filtering a strong ZnCl, ley through paper. Ata boiling heat chloride of zine dissolves in any propor- tion of water, and highly concentrated solutions, of course, boil at high temperatures ; hence they afford a convenient medium for the maintenance of high temperatures.

Oxide of zinc unites with the chloride in a great number of pro- portions, forming oxy-chlorides. A (mixed) compound of this order is used as a cement for stuffing teeth and other purposes. One part of extremely fine glass powder is mixed with three of finely powdered oxide of zine free from carbonic acid. On the other hand, one part of borax is dissolved in the least sufficicncy of hot water and added to fifty parts of solution of chloride of zinc of 1°5 to 1:6 sp. gr. Immediately before use the powder is made into a paste with the solution ; it hardens in a few minutes, forming a stonc- like mass.

For other zinc compounds, the reader is referred to the handbooks of chemistry.

Analysis.—From neutral solutions of its salts zinc is precipitated by sulphuretted hydrogen as sulphide, ZnS,—a white precipitate, soluble, but by no means readily, in dilnte mineral acids, but in- soluble in acetic acid. In the case of acetate the precipitation is quite complete; from a sulphate or chloride solution the greatcr part of the metal gocs into the precipitate; in the presence of a sufficiency of free HCl the metal remains dissolved; sulphide of ammonium precipitates the metal completely, even in the presence ofammonia salts and free ammonia. The precipitate, when roasted at the end of an asbestos stick over a "bunsen," passes into oxide, which is yellow in the heat and white after cooling; and, if it be moistened with cobalt solution and re-heated, it exhibits a green colour after cooling. By these tests the precipitate is easily identi- fied with certainty. For further information, see handbooks of analysis. (W. D.)

787

ZINCKEN, or ZINKEN, the German name of a family of wind instruments now obsolete, known in Italy as cornettz, in France as cornets & bouguin, and in England as " cornets," but differing entirely from the modern cornetsd& pistons; these last will also be noticed here, as bearing the same name.

The old cornets were of two kinds,—the straight and the curved. The straight (Germ. gerade Zincken, stille Zincken ; Ital. cornetti diritti, cornetti muti) were usually made with the mouthpiece (a cupped

mouthpiece analogous to that of the trumpet) forming part of the tube. The curved (Germ. krumme Zincken ; Ital. cornetti curvi) are formed of two pieces of wood of different lengths, each having half the channel in which the column of air is to vibrate hol- lowed out, the diameter increasing from the mouthpiece towards the lower end. The two pieces of wood, when thus prepared, are joined together with glue; they are then finished off so as to form a pipe with eight sides, and are finally covered with leather. The mouthpieces are made of wood, horn, or ivory, and are fixed by a tenon to the upper extremity of the pipe. The primitive instru- ment was an animal's horn. Pipes of such small length give only, besides the first or fundamental, the second and sometimes the third note of the harmonic series. Thus, a pipe that has for its fundamental note A will, if the

pressure of the lips be steadily in- -~—————-~+—,~— creased, give the octave A and the — twelfth E. To connect diatonically the a

first and second, the length of the pipe was progressively shortened, by making holes in its substance for the fingers to cover. The opening of these holes successively furnished the instrumentalist with the different intervals of the scale,

six holes sufficing -—p>— SS for this purpose : SS ae The fundamental Z – 2

was thus connected with its octave by all the degrees

of a diatonic scale which could become chromatic by the help of cross fingerings and greater or less pressure of

the lips within the mouthpiece. The fingering – = was completed by a seventh hole, which had —— for its object the production of the octave

without the necessity of closing all the holes in order to produce the second note of the harmonic series. The first complete octave, thus obtained by a succession of funda- mental notes, is easily octaved by a stronger pressure of the lips against the mouthpiece, and thus the ordinary limits of the compass of a zincke or cornet extend to a fifteenth.

Whether straight or curved, it is pierced laterally with seven holes, six through the front and the seventh, that nearest to the mouthpiece, through the back. The first three holes were usually covered with the third, second, and first fingers of the right hand, the next four with the third, second, and first fingers and the thumb of the left hand. But some instrumentalists inverted the position of the hands. Virdung! shows a kind of zincke made of an animal's horn with only four holes, three at the back of the pipe and one in front. Such an instrument as this had naturally a very limited compass, since with the help of these four holes only the intermediate notes between the second and third proper tones of the harmonic scale could be produced, the lower octave comprised between the first and second remaining incomplete. At the be- ginning of the 17th century Pretorius? represents the zincken as a complete family arranged thus :—(1) the little zincke, of which the lowest note was that shown in (i.); (2) the ordinary zincke, with lowest note (ii.); and @—S— (3) the cornon, corno torto, i.)

Gi.)

1 Musica getutscht und auszgezogen, Basel, 1511. 2 Syntagmatis Musici, vol. ii. ; De Organographia, Wolfenbiittel,

1618.

788

or great zincke, with lowest note (iii.). In France the family was composed of the following instruments:—(1) the dessus, with 3 — —— —— —— = lowest note (a) ; aoe Se —= (2) the haute." + OL; © contre, with lowest note (6); (3) the tazdle, with lowest note (c); and (4) the basse, with lowest note (d). Numbers (2), (3), and (4) in this last series were sometimes furnished with an open key, which, when the closed tube was length- ened, augmented the compass downwards by a note.

During the Middle Ages these instruments were in such favour that an important part was given to them in all instrumental combinations. In Germany, in the 18th cen- tury, they were used with trombones in the churches to accompany the chorales, There are examples of this em-

ployment in the sacred cantatas of J. 8. Bach. Monte- verde made use of them in his opera Orfeo in 1608, as did Gluck in the opening chorus of his Orfeo, played at Vienna in 1762. The great vogue of the zincke is not to be accounted for by its musical qualities; for it has a hard, hoarse, piercing sound, and it failed utterly in truth of intonation; and these natural defects could only be modified with great difficulty. It is now hard to under- stand Mersenne's eulogium of the dessus, then more em- ployed than the other cornets, " because it was used in vocal concerts and to make the treble with the organ, which is ravishing when one knows how to play it to perfection, like the Sieur Quiclet," and, farther on, "as to the property of its tone, it resembles the brilliancy of a sunbeam piercing the darkness, when it is heard among the voices in churches, cathedrals, or chapels."

The serpent is another instrument of the cornet family, though not usually classed with it. Its construction and its acoustic principle are the same as those of the old cornet. It is, properly speaking, an enlarged cornet with one hole less, that which is stopped with the thumb. The mouth- piece is fixed to the instrument by means of a long brass crook. A detailed account of the serpent and its con- geners is given under OpuIcLerpE (vol. xvii. p. 778). The zincke or cornet has now entirely disappeared, and the rare specimens still met with are eagerly sought by collectors, The serpent has lasted longest, and even within the last twenty years has been used in many churches in the south of France.

CorneET, CoRNET A PIsToNs.

At present the names of cornet, cornet 4 pistons, and cornopean are given to an instrument that has no analogy whatever to the medi- eval cornet. It is a transformation of the old post-horn, with a shorter tube than that of the trumpet, and improved to such a de- gree that its quality of tone is intermediate between the brightness of the trumpet and the softness of the fligel-horn or bugle with pis- tons. The extent of the modern

cornet without pistons is com- ——————————— – = = prised within the second and ——————— eighth of the harmonic scale ae 8 :

The seventh, being too flat, owing to a well-known acoustic pheno- menon, is rarely used. The cornet & pistons of the highest pitch is in Bb, and is used for a trumpet in that key. The notes written therefore sound a major second lower than the notation. It is furnished with three pistons, which lower the principal tube by a whole tone (1st piston), a half tone (2d piston), and a tone and a half (3d piston) respectively. It has already been explained under TROMBONE how the different pistons are combined to produce the entire chromatic compass of the instrument from the lowest limit . At first the cornet & pistons was ——= to the —F —— supplied with a great many crooks. a: highest ——— There were crooks for A, Ab, G, F, 2 ‘ KE, Eb, and D; but it is easy to un- derstand that, if the additional tubes put in communication with the principal colunm of air by means of the pistons are adjusted for the key of Bb, the same additional tubes are too short to fulfil the same office for an instrument lowered to the extent of a minor sixth, as it would be for the key of D. Hence nearly all these crooks have disappeared, only those for Bb, A, and Ab being re- tained. The invention of the modern cornet, or more exactly the

application of pistons to the post-horn, is German, and dates from

the first quarter of the 19th century, almost immediately after the invention of pistons by Stolzel and Bliimel. It was introduced into Great Britain and France about 1830. There were at first only two pistons,— that of the whole tone and that of the half tone, — from which there naturally resulted gaps in the chromatic scale of the instrument. The history of the cornet is that of the improve- ment brought about by pistons apart from their successive trans- formations, and it has remained to the present time what it was when first invented. The great favour the cornet meets with is due to the facility with which it speaks, to the little fatigue it causes, and to the simplicity of its mechanism. We may, however, regret, from the point of view of art, that its success has been so great, and that it has ended by usurping in brass bands the place of the bugles, the quality of their tone being infinitely preferable as a foundation for an ensemble composed exclusively of brass in- struments. Even the symphonic

orchestra has not been secure from its intrusion. In fact, the cornet is taking the place of the trumpet nearly everywhere, and, if care is not taken, the latter will in a few years have completely disappeared, to the great detriment of or- chestral tone colour; for the quality of tone of the cornet can never be an adequate substitute for the brilliant and majestic sonorousness so characteristic of the trumpet. (V. M.) ZINZENDORF, Nicotavs Lupwie, Count or ZInzen- DORF AND PorreNDorF (1700-1760), religious reformer, descended from an ancient family belonging to Lower Austria, was born on 26th May 1700, at Dresden. His family had taken the Protestant side in the Reformation struggle, and in consequence his grandfather, Max Eras- mus, had abandoned his Austrian estates to settle near Nuremberg. Max's second son, George Louis, was a member of the Saxon cabinet and a personal friend of the Pietist Spener. George's second wife, Charlotte Justine, the mother of Nicolaus, who was an only son, was a daughter of Nicolas and Catherine von Gersdorf, who were also Pietist. The boy was thus born into a Pietist circle ; and Spener was his godfather. He never knew his father, who died six weeks after he was born. His mother married again when he was four years old, and he was educated under the charge of his pious and gifted grand- mother,! Catherine von Gersdorf, to whom more than to any other he was indebted for the absorbing and enthusi- astic piety which characterized him from childhood. His school days were spent at the pedagogium-at Halle amidst Pietist surroundings, and in 1716 he went to the univer- sity of Wittenberg, to study law and fit himself for a diplomatic career. Three years later he was sent to travel in Holland, in France, and in various parts of Germany. These two years of wandering were employed by him in making the personal acquaintance of men distinguished for practical piety and belonging to a variety of churches. On his return he visited the branches of his family settled at Oberbirg and at Castell. During a lengthened visit at Castell he fell in love with his cousin Theodora; but the widowed countess, her mother, objected to the malriage, and the lady afterwards became the wife of Count Henry of Reuss. Zinzendorf seems to have considered this dis- appointment to be a call in providence to betake himself to some special work for God. He had previously, in deference to his family, who wished him to become a diplomatist, rejected the invitation of Francke to take Count Canstein's place in the Halle orphanage ; and he now resolved to settle down as a Christian landowner,

spending his life on behalf of a pious tenantry. He bought Berthelsdorf from his grandmother, and selected John Andrew Rothe for pastor and John George Heiz for jactor ; hc married Erdmute Dorothea, sister of Count Henry of .tcuss, and began living on his estate. His intention was to carry out into practice the Pietist ideas of Spener. He did not mean to found a new church or religious organization distinct from the Lutheranism of the land. He meant to create a Christian association, the members of which by preaching, by tract rp eggs ee ee

1 A volume of Spiritual Songs, written by Zinzendorf's grandmother Catherine, was published in 1729 by Anton.

and book distribution, and by practical benevolence might awaken the somewhat torpid religion of the Lutheran Church. The "band of four brothers " (Rothe, pastor at Berthelsdorf; Schiffer, pastor at Gorlitz ; Francis von Watte- wille, a friend from boyhood ; and himself) set themselves by sermons, books, journeys, and correspondence to create a revival of religion, and by frequent meetings for prayer to preserve in their own hearts the warmth of personal trust in Christ. From the printing establishment at Ebersdorf large quantities of books and tracts, catechisms, collec- tions of hymns, and cheap Bibles were issued 3 and a translation of Arndt's True Christianity was published for circulation in France. Dislike to the high and dry Lutheran orthodoxy of the period gave Zinzendorf some sympathy with that side of the growing rationalism which was attacking dogma, while he at the same time felt its lack of earnestness, and of a true and deep understanding of religion and of Christianity, and endeavoured to counteract its tendency by pointing men to the historical Christ, the revelation of the Father. It is also more than probable

that he began to doubt the wisdom of Spener's plan of not.

separating from the Lutheran Church, and that he began to think that true Christianity could be best promoted by free association of Christians, who in course of time might grow into churches with no state connexion. These thoughts of his took a practical turn from his connexion with the

Bohemian or Moravian Brethren. Zinzendorf offered an asylum to a number of persecuted wanderers from Moravia (see Moravian Breturen), and built for them the village of Herrnhut on a corner of his estate of Berthelsdorf. The refugees who came to this asylum—the first detachment under Christian David in1722—and continued coming from various regions where persecution raged, for a succession of years (till 1732), belonged to more than one Protestant organization. Persecution had made them cling pertina- ciously to the small peculiarities of creed, organization, and worship, and they could scarcely be persuaded to live in peace with each other. Zinzendorf devoted himself to them. He, with his wife and children, lived in Herrnhut and brought Rothe with him. He had hard work to bring order out of the confusion. He had to satisfy the authorities that his religious community could be brought under the conditions of the peace of Augsburg; he had to quiet the suspicions of the Lutheran clergy ; and, hardest of all, he had to rule in some fashion men made fanatical by persecu- tion, who, in spite of his unwearied labours for them, on more than one occasion, it is said, combined in his own house to denounce him as the Beast of the Apocalypse, with Pastor Rothe as the False Prophet. Patience had at last its perfect work, and gradually Zinzendorf was able to organize his refugees into something like a militia Christi, based not on monastic but on family life. He was able to establish a common order of worship in 1727, and soon afterwards a common organization, which has been described in the article Moravian BreTuHrEN., Zinzendorf took the deepest interest in the wonderful missionary enterprises of the Brethren, and saw with delight the spread of this Protestant family (not monastic) order in Germany, Denmark, Russia, and England. He travelled widely in its interests, visiting America in 1741-42 and spending a long time in London in 1750. Missionary colonies had by this time been settled in the West Indies (1732), in Greenland (1733), amongst the North American Indians (1735); and before Zinzendorf's death the Brethren had sent from Herrnhut missionary colonies to Livonia and the northern shores of the Baltic, to the slaves of North Carolina, to Surinam, to the Negro slaves in several parts of South America, to Travancore in the East Indies, to the Copts in Egypt, and to the west coast of South Africa, The community in Herrnhut, from which almost all these

colonies had been sent out, had no money of its own, and its expenses had been almost exclusively furnished by Zinzendorf. His frequent journeyings from home made it almost impossible for him to look after his private affairs ; he was compelled from time to time to raise money by loans, and about 1750 was almost reduced to bankruptcy. This led to the establishment of a financial board among the Brethren, on a plan furnished by a lawyer, John Frederick Kober, which worked well. In 1752 Zinzendorf lost his only son, Christian Renatus, whom he had hoped to make his successor ; and four years later he lost his wife Erdmute, who had been his counsellor and confidante in all his work, and without whose wise guidance he could never have accomplished what he achieved. Zinzendorf remained a widower for one year, and then (June 1757) contracted a second marriage with Anna Nitschmann, on the ground that a man in his official position ought to be married. Three years later, overcome with his labours, he fell ill and died (on 9th May), leaving John de Wattewille, who had married his eldest daughter Benigna, to take his place at the head of the community.

See Spangenberg, Leben des Grafen von Zinzendorf, 1772-75; Schrautenbach, Der Graf v. Zinzendorf, 1871 (written in 1782, and interesting because it gives Zinzendorf's relations to such Pietist rationalists as Dippel); F. Bovet, Le Comte de Zinzendorf, 1860; Becker, Zinzendorf im Verhaltniss z. Philosophie u. Kirchenthum seiner Zeit, 1886 (the best account; written by the author of the article "' Zinzendorf" in Herzog-Plitt's Encyki.). See also the books mentioned under MoravIAN BRETHREN, (a 1.)

ZION. See Jerusalem and TEMPLe.

ZIRCONIUM, a rare element, closely allied to titanium. Klaproth in 1789 analysed zircon and found it to contain a new earth, which he called "zirconia." Zircon is essen- tially a silicate of zirconia, ZrO,.Si0,. For the extraction from it of zirconia the mineral is first of all heated and quenched in water to render it brittle, and then reduced to a fine powder, which is fused up with three to four parts of acid fluoride of potassium ata gentle heat ina platinum crucible. When the mass fuses tranquilly and

all the water is expelled, the platinum crucible is placed in a Hessian crucible ; the two crucibles are then covered and kept for two hours at the highest temperature producible by means of a wind-furnace. The porcelain-like fuse is powdered, boiled in water, and acidified with hydrofluoric acid, and the residual fluosilicate of potassium is filtered off. The filtrate on cooling deposits crystals of fluozircon- ate of potassium, ZrF,K,, which are purified by re-crystal- lization from hot water. The double fluoride is decomposed with hot concentrated sulphuric acid ; the mixed sulphate is dissolved in water ; and the zirconia is precipitated with ammonia in the cold. The precipitate, being difficult to wash, is (after a preliminary washing) re-dissolved in hydrochloric acid and re-precipitated with ammonia. Hydrated zirconia, Zr(OH),, as thus obtained, is quite appreciably soluble in water and easily in mineral acids, with formation of zirconic salts, e.g., ZrCl,, analogous to SnCl, But, if the hydrate is precipitated in the heat, it demands concentrated acids for its solution, The hydrate readily loses its water at a dull red heat and passes into anhydride with vivid incandescence. The anhydrous oxide, ZrO,, is with difficulty soluble even in hydrofluoric acid ; but a mixture of two parts of concen- trated sulphuric acid and one of water dissolves it on con- tinued heating as Zr(SO,),. Zirconia, when heated to whiteness remains unfused, and radiates out abundance of white light. This property has been utilized for the con- struction of a new kind of gas lamp, in which a colourless flame, produced by the combustion of a mixture of gas and air, serves to heat a hollow cylinder of zirconia suspended over it by means of platinum gauze. Zirconia, like oxide of tin and oxide of titanium, unites not only with acids

but also with basic oxides. For instance, if it be fused up | In 1410 he fought as a volunteer, on the losing side, in with an excess of carbonate of soda, 2 of CO, are expelled by | the great battle of Griinwald, near Tannenberg in Prussia,

every ZrO,, with formation of ortho-zirconate (analogous to ortho-silicate) of soda, ZrO,.2Na,O. On treating the fuse with water we obtain the salt Na,O.8ZrO, + 12H,0, which crystallizes in hexagonal plates.

Zirconic chloride, ZrOl, is prepared, by igniting a mixture of zirconia and charcoal in a current of chlorine, as a white sublimate. It has the exact vapour-density corresponding to the formula. It dissolves in water with evolution of heat; on evaporation a basic salt, 2ZrOCl, + 9H,0, separates out in star-shaped aggregates of needles.

Metallic zirconium is obtainable, by heating the double fluoride of zirconium and potassium with metallic potassium, as an iron-grey powder. 'Troost produced crystallized zirconium by fusing the double fluoride with aluminium in a graphite crucible at the temperature of melting iron, and extracting the aluminium from the fuse with hydro-chloric acid. The crystals look like antimony and are brittle ; their specific gravity is 4:15. The powdery metal burns readily in air; the crystalline metal requires to be heated in an oxyhydrogen flame if it is to catch fire. Mineral acids generally attack the crystallized metal very little even in the heat; aqua regia, however, dissolves it readily, and so does hydrofluoric acid. The spark spec- trum of zirconium is characterized by five lines, whose wave-lengths are as follows :—6127 in the red, and 4815, 4771, 4738, 4709, and 4686 in the blue. The atomic weight is not known exactly; according to Marignac and Deville, it lies near 90, if O=16.

ZITTAU, the centre of the Saxon linen trade and the most populous town in the district of Bautzen, in the king- dom of Saxony, is situated on the left bank of the Mandau, near its confluence with the Neisse, 25 miles south-east of Bautzen and 48 east-south-east of Dresden. The town is built in a regular and modern style. The town-house dates from 1844, and contains a public library of 30,000 volumes. The church of St John was rebuilt in 1834-37; and the church of St Peter and St Paul, with its elegant tower, belonged to an old Franciscan monastery. The latter was restored in 1882 and part of it fitted up as an historical museum. There are five other churches in the town. Zittau is well equipped with schools, including a gymnasium (founded in 1586) and a commercial school, both accommodated in the Johanneum, and several techni- cal institutions.

The leading branch of industry is linen and damask weaving ; but woollen stuffs, trimmings, &c., are also produced in the factories of the town, and in the surrounding weaving villages, 37 of which, with 70,000 inhabitants, are included in the municipal jurisdiction. The town, which is one of the best endowed in Saxony, also owns valuable forests on the mountains of Upper Lusatia. There are various steam-mills, iron-foundries, brick-fields, and potteries near the town, and extensive deposits of lignite, employing over 1000 hands. Zittau is situated near the border of Bohemia, with which it carries on some trade. In 1885 the population was 23,215, of whom less than one-fifth were Roman Catholics ; in 1834 the population was 8508.

Zittau is of Wendish origin (Chytawa is its Wendish name), and was made a town by Ottocar II. of Bohemia. It was one of the six towns of the Lusatian league (1346), at which period it be- longed to Bohemia. It suffered severely in the Hussite wars and in the Thirty Years' War, and was bombarded and burnt by the Austrians in 1757 during the Seven Years' War. The musical composer Marschner (1795-1861) was born at Zittau.

ZIZKA, or Ziska, Joun (c. 1360-1424), leader of the Hussires (¢.v.) from 1419, was born at Trocznow in the neighbourhood of Budweis in Bohemia about the year 1360. He was of noble descent, and was brought up from an early age at Prague at the court of King Wenceslaus.

in which the knights of the Teutonic Order were com- pletely routed by the Lithuanians and Poles. He after- wards took part in the Hungarian wars against the Turks, and is also said to have fought on the English side in the battle of Agincourt. In the discontents which followed the martyrdom of Huss and Jerome in Bohemia he sided with the liberal party, and ultimately, on the outbreak of hostilities, became its leader. He soon organized a for- midable body of infantry, and from his newly fortified stronghold of Tabor asa centre achieved various successes, of which the most signal was the victory over the imperial troops at Deutschbrod (8th January 1422). At an early period of the war,—at the siege of Raby in 1421,—Zizka, who from boyhood had been blind of an eye, completely lost his sight; but his strength of will enabled him almost

wholly to overcome this formidable disadvantage, and his extraordinary presence of mind, fertility of resource, and keenness of mental vision, coupled with a zeal that was wholly sincere, though not always free from fanaticism, continued to mark him out as the leader in the cause he had espoused until his death, which was caused by an infectious disorder while he was besieging Przibislaw (11th October 1424).

See Millauer, Diplomatisch-historische Aufsdtze tiber Johann Ziska (1824). Zizka's life has been made the subject of an epic by the German poet Meissner (1846 ; 10th edition 1867), and has also been related in prose by George Sand.

ZLATOUST, in the Russian government of Ufa, is one of the chief towns and iron-works of the Urals. It is situ- ated on the Ai, a tributary of the Ufa, in a picturesque valley of the middle Urals, at a height of 1200 feet above sea-level. The 270 miles which stretch between Zlatoust and Ufa in the west will soon be covered by rail, while a branch line is projected to connect it with Ekaterinburg in the north. The town is well built, mostly of wood, has a first-class meteorological and magnetic observatory, and is the seat of the mining administration for the Zlatoust district, which includes, besides several iron-works, the rich gold-washings of the basin of the Mias. Its merchants carry on a brisk trade in agricultural produce and cattle, as well as in manufactured wares, imported for the use of the mining villages of the neighbourhood. The Ai and several ponds supply the crown iron-works with motive power, and in 1884 the iron furnaces of Zlatoust yielded 90,800 ewts. of pig-iron, which were used almost entirely for the manufacture of swords, bayonets, and artillery munition. The population of Zlatoust in 1884 was 19,000.

ZNAIM, or ZNaym (Czech Znojmo), an interesting old town of Moravia, is picturesquely situated on the left bank of the Thaya, 45 miles north-north-west of Vienna. The town proper is adjoined by four suburbs, and it contains three fine open squares, while the site of the old fortifications is occupied by a pleasant promenade. The Rauberthurm is a relic of the old castle of the margraves of Moravia ; the round castle-chapel, known as the heathen temple (Heiden-Tempel), in the Romanesque style of the 12th century, was at one time considered the most ancient building in Moravia.

The Gothic church of St Nicholas was built about 1348 by the emperor Charles IV.; the town-house, with an elegant Gothic tower, 250 feet high, dates from about 1446. The ancient and once powerful Preemonstratensian abbey of Bruck, to the east of the town, is now occupied as barracks. The town is well equipped with technical and other schools, and carries on manufactures of earthenware, leather, chocolate, vinegar, and other articles. Large quantities of cucumbers, grain, and wine are produced in the fertile environs. In 1880 the population, chiefly of German origin, was 12,254.

The present town of Znaim was founded in 1226 by Ottocar I. of

Defini- tion.

Signs and con- stella- tions,

Duoden- ary di- Vision.

ZOD~—ZOD 791

Bohemia on the site of Znojmo, the ancient capital of the tributary margraves of Moravia, which had been destroyed in 1145. Znaim is best known to history for the armistice concluded here in 1809 after the battle of Wagram between Napoleon I. and the archduke Charles. In 1866 the Prussians occupied the town from July 18th till September 3d. The novelist Karl Postel (1793-1864), who wrote under the pseudonym of Charles Sealsfield, was born at Pop- pitz, 24 miles to the south-west.

ZODIAC (6 (wdiaxds xixdos, from (édi0v, "a little animal"), an imaginary zone of the heavens within which lie the paths of the sun, moon, and principal planets. It is bounded by two circles equidistant from the ecliptic, about eighteen degrees apart ; and it is divided into twelve signs, and marked by twelve constellations. The signs— the Greek Swéexarypopca—are geometrical divisions thirty degrees in extent, counted from the spring equinox in the direction of the sun's progress through them. The whole series accordingly shifts westward through the effect of precession by about one degree in seventy-two years. At the moment of crossing the equator towards the north the sun is said to be at

the first point of Aries; some thirty days later it enters Taurus, and so on through Gemini, Cancer, Leo, Virgo, Libra, Scorpio, Sagittarius, Capricornus, Aquarius, and Pisces (see Astronomy, vol. ii. p. 771). The constellations bearing the same names coin- cided approximately in position, when Hipparchus observed them at Rhodes, with the divisions they designate. The discrepancy now, however, amounts to the entire breadth of a sign, the sun's path in Aries lying among the stars of Pisces, in Taurus among those of Aries, dc.

The twelvefold division of the zodiac was evidently sug- gested by the occurrence of twelve full moons in successive parts of it in the course of each year. This approximate relation was first systematically developed by the early inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and formed the starting-point for all their divisions of time. As the year separated, as it were of itself, into twelve months, so the day was divided into twelve "double hours," and the great cosmi- cal period of 43,200 years into twelve "sars." Each sar, month, and hour was represented at once visibly and sym- bolically by a twelfth part of the "furrow" drawn by the solar Bull across the heavens. The idea of tracing the sun's

path among the stars was, when it occurred to Chaldean

astronomers, an original and, relatively to their means, a recondite one, We owe to its realization by them the constitution and nomenclature of the twelve signs of the zodiac. Assyrian cylinders and inscriptions indicate for the familiar series of our text-books an antiquity of some four thousand years, Ages before Asurbanipal reigned at Nineveh the eighth month (Marchesvan) was known as "the month of the star of the Scorpion," the tenth (Tebet) belonged to the "star of the Goat," the twelfth (Adar) to the "star of the Fish of Hea." The motive underlying the choice of symbols is in a few cases obvious, but in most remains conjectural. The attributes of the deities appointed to preside over the months and signs were to some extent influential. Two of them, indeed, took direct possession of their respective portions of the sky. The zodiacal Virgo is held to represent the As- syrian Venus, Ishtar, the ruling divinity of the sixth month, and Sagittarius the archer-god Nergal, to whom the ninth month was dedicated. But no uniform system of gelection was pursued; or

rather perhaps the results of several, adopted at various epochs, and under the influence of varying currents of ideas, became amalgamated in the final series.

This, there is reason to believe, was the upshot of a prehistoric reform. So far as positive records go, Aries was always the first sign. But the arrangement is, on the face of it, a comparatively modern one. None of the

1 Lenormant, Origines de U Histoire, vol. i. p. 286.

brighter stars of the constellation could be said even roughly to mark the equinox much before 1800 B.c. ; during a long stretch of previous time the leading position belonged to the stars of Taurus.2 Numerous indications accordingly point to a corresponding primitive zodiac. Setting aside as doubtful evidence derived from interpret- ations of cuneiform inscriptions, we meet, in connexion with Mithraic and Mylittic legends, reminiscences of a zodiac and religious calendar in which the Bull led the way. —Virgil's

Candidus auratis aperit cum cornibus annum

Taurus perpetuates the tradition. And we shall see presently that the Pleiades, not only were originally, but continued to be until well within historical memory, the first asterism of the lunar zodiac.

In the Chaldean signs fragments of several distinct strata of thought appear to be embedded, From one point of view, they shadow out the great epic of the destinies of the human race ; again, the universal solar myth claims a share in them; hoary traditions were brought into ex post facto connexion with them; or they served to com- memorate simple meteorological and astronomical facts.

The first Babylonian month Nisan, dedicated to Anu Second

and Bel, was that of "sacrifice"; and its association with sign.

the Ram as the chief primitive object of sacrifice is thus intelligible. According to an alternative explanation, how- ever, the heavenly Ram, placed as leader in front of the flock of the stars, merely embodied a spontaneous figure of the popular imagination, An antique persuasion, that the grand cycle of creation opened under the first sign, has been transmitted to modern cognizance by Dante (Inf, i. 38). The human race, on the other hand, was supposed to have come into being under Taurus. The aa inter- pretation of the sign goes back to the far-off time when the year began with Taurus, and the sun was conceived of as a bull entering upon the great furrow of heaven as he ploughed his way among the stars.

In the third month Third to

and sign the building of the first city and the fratricidal sixth

brothers—the Romulus and Remus of Roman legend— were brought to mind. The appropriate symbol was at first indifferently a pile of bricks or two male children, always on early monuments placed feet to feet. The retro- grade movement of a crab typified, by an easy association of ideas, the retreat of the sun from his farthest northern excursion, and Cancer was constituted the sign of the summer solstice. The Lion, as the symbol of fire, repre- sented the culmination of the solar heat. In the sixth month, the descent of Ishtar to Hades in search of her lost husband Tammuz was celebrated, and the sign of the Virgin had thus a purely mythological signification.

The history of the seventh sign is somewhat complicated. Seventh

The earlier Greek writers,—Eudoxus, Eratosthenes, Hip- parchus,— knew of only eleven zodiacal symbols, but made one do double duty, extending the Scorpion across the seventh and eighth divisions. The Balance, obviously indicating the equality of day and night, is first mentioned as the sign of the autumnal equinox by Geminus and Varro, and obtained, through Sosigenes of Alexandria, official recognition in the Julian calendar. Nevertheless, Virgil (Georg., i. 32) regarded the space it presided over as so much waste land, provisionally occupied by the

sign.

and eighth signs.

“Claws” of the Scorpion, but readily available for the .

2 The possibility should not, however, be overlooked that the “ stars of the months” were determined by their heliacal risings (see Bosan- quet and Sayce on Babylonian astronomy, in Monthly Notices Roy. Astr. Soc., vol. xl. p. 117). This would give a further extension backwards of over 1000 years, during which the equinox might have occurred in the month of the Ram.

3 Lajard, Recherches sur le Culte de Mithra, p. 605.

4 Sayce, Trans, Society of Biblical Archxology, vol. iii. p. 162.

apotheosis of Augustus. Libra was not of Greek inven- tion. Ptolemy, who himself chiefly used the “ Claws ” (XyAai), speaks of it as a distinctively Chaldzan sign ;’ and it occurs as an extra-zodiacal asterism in the Chinese sphere. An ancient Chinese law, moreover, prescribed the regu- larization of weights and measures at the spring equinox.” No representation of the seventh sign has yet been dis- covered on any Euphratean monument ; but it is noticeable that the eighth is frequently doubled,’ and it is difficult to avoid seeing in the pair of zodiacal scorpions carved on Assyrian cylinders the prototype of the Greek scorpion and claws. Both Libra and the sign it eventually super- seded thus owned a Chaldean birthplace. The struggle of rival systems of nomenclature, from which our zodiacal series resulted, is plainly visible in their alternations ; and the claims of the competing signs were long sought to be conciliated by representing the Balance as held between

sign Leo on Ninevite cylinders.1° The wooing of Ishtar by the hero of the epic falls under Virgo, and his encounter with two scorpion men, guardians of the rising and the setting sun, under Scorpio. The eleventh tablet narrates the deluge ; the twelfth associates the apotheosis of Hea-

bani (the Babylonian Chiron) with the zodiacal emblems of the resurrection.

In the formation of the constellations of the zodiac The con- The stella Chaldzeans chose three stars in each sign to be the " coun- tis:

very little regard was paid to stellar configurations,

cillor gods" of the planets.1! These were called by the Greeks "'decans," because ten degrees of the ecliptic and ten days of the year were presided over by each. The college of the decans was conceived as moving, by their annual risings and settings, in an "eternal circuit" between the infernal and supernal regions. Our modern asterisnis first appear in the Phenomena of Eudoxus about 370

the claws of the Scorpion. B.C. But Eudoxus, there is reason to believe, consulted, Ninth to The definitive decline of the sun's power after the | not the heavens, but a celestial globe of an anterior epoch, twelfth autumnal equinox was typified by placing a Scorpion as | on which the stars and the signs were forced into unnatural = the symbol of darkness in the eighth sign. Sagittarius, agreement. The representation thus handed down to us figured later as a Centaur, stood for the Babylonian Mars. | (in the verses of Aratus) has been thought to tally best Capricornus, the sign of the winter solstice, is plausibly with the state of the sky about 2000 B.c.;12 and the men- connected with the caprine nurse of the young solar god | tion of a pole-star, for which Eudoxus was rebuked by in Oriental legends, of which that of Zeus and Amalthea | Hipparchus, seems, as Mr W. T. Lynn has pointed out,18 is a variant.4 The fish-tailed Goat of the zodiac presents | to refer to the time when « Draconis stood near the pole. a close analogy with the Mexican calendar sign Cipactli, | The data afforded by Eudoxus, however, are far too vague a kind of marine monster resembling a narwhal.> Aquarius | to serve as the basis of any chronological conclusion. is a still more exclusively meteorological sign than Leo. The Egyptians adopted from the Greeks, with consider- Egyptian The eleventh month was known in Euphratean regions as | able modifications of its attendant symbolism, the twelve- zodiacal that of "want and rain." The deluge was traditionally | fold division of the zodiac. Aries became the Fleece; two %8" associated with it. It was represented*

in zodiacal sym- | Sprouting Plants, typifying equality or resemblance, stood bolism by the god Ramman, crowned with a tiara and | for Gemini; Cancer was re-named Scarabeeus; Leo was pouring water from a vase, or more generally by the vase | converted, from the axe-like configuration of its chief stars, and water without the god. The resumption of agricul- | into the Knife; Libra into the Mountain of the Sun, a tural labours after the deluge was conimemorated in the | reminiscence, apparently, of the Euphratean association of twelfth month, and a mystical association of the fishes, | the seventh month with a "holy mound," designating the which were its sign, with the life after death is evident | Biblical tower of Babel. A Serpent was the Egyptian ina monument of Assyrian origin described by M. Cler- | equivalent of Scorpio; the Arrow only of Sagittarius was mont-Ganneau, showing a corpse guarded by a pair of | retained ; Capricornus became " Life," or a Mirror as an fish-gods.6 The doubling of the sign of Pisces still recalls, | image of life; Aquarius survived as Water; Taurus, Virgo, according to Mr Sayce,' the arrangement of the Baby- | and Pisces remained unchanged.!4 The motive of some of lonian calendar, in which a year of 360 days was sup- | the substitutions was to avoid the confusion which must plemented once in six years by a thirteenth month, a second | have ensued from the duplication of previously existing Adar. To the double month corresponded the double sign | native asterisms ; thus, the Egyptian and Greek Lions were of the " Fishes of Hea."§ composed of totally different stars. Abstractions in other Cyclical _ The cyclical meaning of the succession of zodiacal signs, | cases replaced concrete objects, with the general result of a though now obscured by interpolations and substitutions, | effacing the distinctive character of the Greek zodiac as a succes. WaS probably once clear and entire. It is curiously re- | "circle of living things." sion of flected in the adventures of the Babylonian Hercules, the Early Zoroastrian writings, though impregnated with Spread signs. solar hero Izdubar.? They were recorded in the compara- star-worship, show no traces of an attempt to organize of Greek

tively late surviving version of the 7th century B.c., on | the heavenly array. In the Bundehish, however (9th Sem:

twelve tablets, with an obvious design of correlation with the twelve divisions of the sun's annual course. Izdubar's conquest of the winged bull Heabani was placed under Taurus; his slaying of the tyrant Houmbaba (the prototype of Geryon) in the fifth month typified the victory of light over darkness, represented in plastic art by the group of a lion killing a bull, which is the form ordinarily given to the eee

1 In citing a Chaldean observation of Mercury dating from 235 B.c. (Almagest, vol. ii. p. 170, ed. Halma).

: See Uranographie Chinoise, by Gustav Schlegel, who, however, claims an extravagant antiquity for the Chinese constellational system,

*3 Lenormant, Origines, vol. i. p. 267. * Wnd., p. 259,*

5 Humboldt, Vues des Cordilléres, 1810, p. 157.

6 Rev. Archéol., 1879, p. 344.

7 Trans. Soc. Bibl. Archeol., vol. iii. p. 166.

8 The god Hea, the Oannes of Berosus, equivalent to the fish-god

Dagon, came to the rescue of the protagonist in the Chaldean drama of the deluge.

- *Sir H. Rawlinson, Atheneum, 7th December 1872,*

century), the twelve '" Akhtars," designated by the same names as our signs, lead the army of Ormuzd, while the seven " Awakhtars" or planets (including a meteor and a comet) fight for Ahriman. The knowledge of the solar zodiac thus turned to account for dualistic purposes was undoubtedly derived from the Greeks. By them, too, it was introduced into Hindustan. Aryabhata, about the beginning of our era, reckoned by the same signs as Hip- parchus. They were transmitted from India by Buddhist missionaries to China, but remained in abeyance until the Jesuit reform of Chinese astronomy in the 17th century.

The native zodiacal system was of unexampled complex- ity. Besides divisions into twenty-eight and twenty-four

10 Lenormant, Origines, vol. i. p. 240.

11 Diod. Sic., Hist., ii. 80, where, however, by au obvious mistake the number of "councillor gods" is stated at only thirty.

- *RB. Brown, Babylonian Record, No. 8, p. 34.*

B Babylonian Record, No. 5, p. 79.

4 Brugsch, Z. D. M. G., vol. ix. b> ulsy

signs.

Aztec signs,

LODIAC 793

Chinese parts, it included two distinct duodenary series. The tse series of or "stations" were referred by Biot to the date 1111 p.c.

Measured from the winter solstice of that epoch, they corresponded, in conformity with the Chinese method of observation by intervals of what we now call right ascen- sion, to equal portions of the celestial equator.! Projected upon the ecliptic, these were, of course, considerably unequal, and the tse accordingly differed essentially from the Chaldean and Greek signs. Their use was chiefly astrological, and their highly figurative names—" (reat Splendour," " Immense Void," "Fire of the Phcenix," é&c. —had reference to no particular stars. They became vir- tually merged in the European series, stamped with official recognition upwards of two centuries ago. The twenty- four ¢sveki or demi-tse were probably invented to mark the course of weather changes throughout the year. Their appellations are purely meteorological.

The characteristic Chinese mode of dividing the "yellow road" of the sun was, however, by the twelve "cyclical animals,"—Rat, Ox, Tiger, Hare, Dragon or Crocodile, Serpent, Horse, Sheep, Monkey, Hen, Dog, Pig. The

open- ing sign corresponds to our Aquarius; and it is remarkable that the rat is, in the far East, frequently used as an ideo- graph for "water." But here the agreement ceases. For the Chinese series has the strange peculiarity of proceeding in a retrograde direction or against the course of the sun. Thus, the second sign (of the Ox) occupies the position of Capricorn, the third that of Sagittarius, and so on. The explanation of this seeming anomaly is to be found in the primitive destination of the "animals" to the purposes of an "'horary zodiac." Their succession, established to mark the hours of day and night, was not unnaturally associated with the diurnal revolution of the sphere from east to west. They are unquestionably of native origin. Tradi- tion ascribes their invention to Tajao, minister of the emperor Hwang-te, who reigned c. 2697 B.c., and it can scarcely be placed later than the 7th century 3.c.3

The Chinese circle of the "animals" obtained early a wide diffusion. It was adopted by Tartars, Turks, and Mongols, in Tibet and Tong-king, Japan and Corea, It is denominated by Humboldt' the "zodiac of hunters and shepherds," and he adds that the presence in it of a tiger gives it an exclusively Asiatic character. It appears never to have been designed for astronomical employment. From the first it served to characterize the divisions of time. The nomenclature not only of the hours of the day and of their minutest intervals was supplied by it, but of the months of the year, of the years in the Oriental sixty-year cycle, and of the days in the "little cycle" of twelve days. Nor has it yet fallen into desuetude. Years "of the Rat," "of the Tiger," "of the Pig," still figure in the almanacs of Central Asia, Cochin China, and Japan.

A large detachment of the "cyclical animals" even found its way to the New World. Seven of the twenty days constituting the Aztec month bore names evidently borrowed from those of the Chinese horary signs. The Hare (or Rabbit), Monkey, Dog, and Serpent reappeared without change ; for the Tiger, Crocodile, and Hen, unknown in America, the Ocelot, Lizard, and Eagle were substituted as analogous.© The Aztec calendar dated from the 7th cen- tury; but the zodiacal tradition embodied by it was doubtless much more ancient. Of the zodiac in its true sense of a partitioned belt of the sphere there was no ab- original knowledge on the American continent. Mexican ie Se ee

? Biot, Journ. des Savans, 1839, p. 729, and 1840, p. 151; Gaubil, Hist. del Astr. Chinoise, p. 9.

? Humboldt, Vues des Cordilléres, p. 168.

3G. Schlegel, Ur. Chin., pp. 37, 561. 4 Op. cit., p. 219.

® Ibid., p. 152; Prescott, Conguest of Mexico, vol. iii. p. 321 (ed.

1860).

acquaintance with the signs related only to their secondary function as dies (so to speak) with which to stamp recur- ring intervals of time.

The synodical revolution of the moon laid down the Lunar lines of the solar, its sidereal revolution those of the lunar Zodiac. zodiac. The first was a circlet of "full moons" ; the second marked the diurnal stages of the lunar progress round the sky, from and back again to any selected star. . The moon was the earliest "'measurer" both of time and space ; but its services can scarcely have been rendered available until stellar "milestones" were established at suitable points along its path. Such were the Hindu nakshatras, a word Hindu originally signifying stars in general, but appropriated to system designate certain small stellar groups marking the divisions ° "4" of the lunar track. They exhibit in an exaggerated form the irregularities of distribution visible in our zodiacal constellations, and present the further anomaly of being frequently reckoned as twenty-eight in number, while the ecliptical ares they characterize are invariably twenty-seven. Now, since the moon revolves round the earth in 27 4 days, hesitation between the two full numbers might easily arise; yet the real explanation of the difficulty appears to be different. The superfluous asterism, named Abhijit, included the bright star a Lyre, under whose in- fluence the gods had vanquished the Asuras. Its invoca- tion with the other nakshatras, remoteness from the ecliptic notwithstanding, was thus due (according to Prof. Max Miiller's plausible conjecture) ° to its being regarded as of especially good omen. Acquaintance with foreign systems of twenty-eight lunar divisions tended doubtless to fix its position, which remained, nevertheless, always equivocal." Alternately admitted into or rejected from the series, it was

finally, some six or seven centuries ago, eliminated by the effects of precession in reversing the order of culmination of its limiting stars.

The notion of a twenty-seven-fold division of the zodiac was deeply rooted in Hindu tradition. The number and the name were in early times almost synonymous. Thus, a nakshatra-mala denoted a necklace of twenty-seven pearls ;° and the fundamental equality of the parts was figured in an ancient legend, by the compulsion laid upon King Soma (the Moon) to share his time impartially be- tween all his wives, the twenty-seven daughters of Pra- japati. Everything points to a native origin for the system of nakshatras. Some were named after exclusively Vedic deities; they formed the basis of the sacrificial calendar of the Brahmans; the old Indian names of the months were derived from them ; their existence was pre- supposed in the entire structure of Hindu ritual and science.? They do not, however, obtain full recognition in Sanskrit literature until the Brahmana period (7th or 8th century B.c.). The Rig-Veda contains only one allu- sion to them, where it is said that "Soma is placed in the' lap of the nakshatras" ; and this is in a part including later interpolations.

Positive proof of the high antiquity of the Hindu lunar zodiac is nevertheless afforded by the undoubted fact that the primitive series opened with Krittika (the Pleiades) as the sign of the vernal equinox. The arrangement would have been correct about 2300 B.c. ; it would scarcely have been possible after 1800 B.c.l° We find nowhere else a well-authenticated zodiacal sequence corresponding to so early a date. The reform by which Krittika, now rele- gated to the third place, was superseded as the head of the series by "Acvini" 4 was accomplished under Greek

——————————————————————— ee 8 Rig-Veda Samhita, vol. iv., 1862, Preface, p. Ixii. ? Whitney, Journ. Am. Orient. Soc., vol. viii. p. 394. 8 Max Miiller, op. cit., p. lxiv. ® Tbid., p. 42. 10 A. Weber, Indische Studien, vol. x. ie 220, 1! Named from the Acvins, the Hindu Castor and Pollux. It is

KXIV. —= a00

794 ORD PA

influence somewhere near the beginning of our era. For | ample, unmistakably gave its name to the Mexican day purposes of ritual, however, the Pleiades, with Agni or Ollin, signifying Le 'track of eas 3 and —_ sone "Fire" as their presiding deity, continued to be the first | further contain a "flint weapon," a stick," and a "house.

sign. Hindu astronomy received its first definite or- Several houses and. couches were ranged along the Hindu ganization in the 6th century, with results embodied in | zodiac with the naive idea of providing resting-places for

the Surya-Siddhanta. Here the "signs" and the "con- | the wandering moon, ' stellations" of the lunar zodiac form two essentially dis- Relationship of a more intimate kind connects the Hindu Relative tinct systems. The ecliptic is divided into twenty-seven | lunar mansions with those of the Arabs and Chinese. eee equal parts, called bhogas or arcs, of 800' each. But the | The resemblance between the three systems ds indeed 80 Chinese," nakshatras are twenty-eight, and are represented by as | close that it has been assumed, almost as axiomatic, that nq many "junction stars" (yogdtdra), carefully determined | they must have been framed from a single model ; and the Arabian by their spherical coordinates. The successive entries | question of their origin has been debated with all the systems.

of the moon and planets into the nakshatras (the ascer- tainment of which was of great astrological importance) were fixed by means of their conjunctions with the yogd- tdras. These, however, soon ceased to be observed, and already in the 11th century Al-Birini could meet with no Hindu astronomer capable of pointing out to him the complete series. Their successful identification by Colebrooke! in 1807 had a purely archeological interest. The modern nakshatras are twenty-seven equal ecliptical divisions, the origin of which shifts, like that of the solar signs, with the vernal equinox. They are, in fact, the bhogas of the Sirya-Siddhanta. The mean place of the moon in them, published in all Hindu almanacs, is found to serve unexceptionally the ends of astral vaticination.? The system upon which it is founded is of great antiquity. Belief in the power of the nakshatras evidently inspired the invocations of

*them in the Atharva-Veda. In the Brahmana period they were distinguished as "deva" and "'yama," the fourteen lucky asterisms being probably asso- ciated with the waxing, the fourteen unlucky with the waning moon.? A special nakshatra was appropriated to every occurrence of life. One was propitious to marriage, another to entrance upon school-life, a third to the first ploughing, a fourth to laying the foundation of a house. Festivals for the dead were appointed to be held under those that included but one star. Propitiatory abstinences were recommended when the natal asterism was menaced by unfavourable planetary conjunctions. The various members of the body were parcelled out among the nak-shatras, and a rotation of food was prescribed as a whole- some accompaniment of the moon's revolution among them.**

resources of varied erudition by scholars such as Biot, Weber, Whitney, and Max Miller. As the upshot of the controversy it appears nevertheless to have become tolerably clear that the nakshatras were both native to India, and the siew to China, but that the mandzl were mainly of Indian derivation.

sphere had nothing to do with the moon's daily motion seems to convey the actual fact. Their number, as a multiple of four, was prescribed by the quaternary partition of the heavens, fundamental in Chinese astronomy. It was considered by Biot to have been originally twenty- four, but to have been enlarged to twenty-eight about 1100 B.c., by the addition of determinants for the solstices and equinoxes of that period.6 The essential difference, however, between the nakshatras and the svew is that the latter were equatorial, not ecliptical, divisions. They were measured by the meridian-passages of the limiting stars, and varied in amplitude from 2° 42' to 30° 24'.9 The use of the specially observed stars constituting or repre- senting the szew was as points of reference for the move- ments of sun, moon, and planets. They served, in fact, and still serve (though with astrological ends in view), the precise purpose of "fundamental stars" in European as- tronomy. All that is certainly known about the antiquity of the siew is that they were well established in the 3d century B.c. Their initial point at the autumnal equinox marked by Kio (Spica Virginis) suits a still later date ; and there is no valid evidence that the modern series

resulted from the rectification of an older superannuated arrangement, analogous to the Krittika sequence of nak-

Nomen- The nomenclature of the Hindu signs of the zodiac, | skatras. The Hindu zodiacal constellations belong then ee save as regards a few standard asterisms, such as Agvini | to an earlier epoch than the Chinese "stations," such as signs, 20d Krittika, was far from uniform. Considerable dis- | they have been transmitted to our acquaintance. Yet not crepancies occur in the lists given by different authorities.5 | only were the latter an independent invention, but it is Hence it is not surprising to meet in them evidence of | almost demonstrable that the nakshatras, in their more foreign communications. Reminiscences of the Greek | recent organization, were, as far as possible, assimilated to signs of Gemini, Leo, Libra, Sagittarius, Capricornus, and | them. The whole system of junction stars was doubt- Pisces are obvious severally in the Hindu Two Faces, Lion's | less an imitation of the séew; the choice of them by the Tail, Beam of a Balance, Arrow, Gazelle's Head (figured as | Hindu astronomers of the 6th century A.D. was plainly a marine nondescript), and Fish. The correspondence does instigated by a consideration of the Chinese list, conipiled not, however, extend to the stars; and some coincidences | with a widely different intent. Where they varied from adverted to by Humboldt between the nakshatras and the | it, some intelligible reason can generally be assigned for zodiacal animals of Central Asia are of the same nominal | the change. Eight junction stars lie quite close to, seven Connex- character.® Mexican loans are more remarkable. They | others are actually identical with, Chinese determinants ae fae" were apparently direct as well as indirect. The Aztec | and many of these coincidences are between insignificant ava calendar includes nakshatra titles borrowed, not only | and, for the purposes of ecliptical division, inconveniently

through the medium of the Tartar zodiac, but likewise

situated objects.

The assertion, paradoxical at first Chinese sight, that the twenty-eight "'hostelries" of the Chinese aster-

straight from the Indian scheme, apart from any known The small stellar groups characterizing the Arab “ man- Arabian

intervention. The “three footprints of Vishnu,” for ex- | sions of the moon” (mandazil al-kamdr) were more equably oe eS ea i ee ee oie 2 : _ 7 : : of the composed of the stars in the head of Aries, and is figured by a horse’s distributed than either the Hindu or Chinese series. oI TOOL

presented, nevertheless, striking resemblances to both. Twenty-four out of twenty-eight were formed, at least in part, of nakshatra or sieu stars. That the Arab was essen- tially a copy of the Hindu lunar zodiac can scarcely admit

4 Ibid., p. 152. 8 Biot, Jour. des Suvans, 1845, p. 40. : G. Schlegel, Ur. Chin., p. 77. 10 Biot, Htudes, p. 186. ? Whitney, Notes to Strya-Siddhanta, p. 200.

head. 1 As. Res., vol. ix. p. 330.

2 J. B. Biot, Ktiudes sur ? Astronomie Indienne, Dp: 220: —

3 A. Weber, “Die Vedischen Nachrichten von den Naxatra,” in Berliner Abhandlungen, 1861, p. 309. j

4 Ibid., p. 8322; H. Kern, Die Yogatara des Varamihira ; Weber’s Ind. Stud., vol. xv. pp. 174-181. :

> Sir William Jones, As. Res., vol. ii. pp. 294-5.

§ Humboldt, Vues des Cordilléres, p. 154.

Astro- logical predic- tion.

Astro- logical influence of signs.

ZO 2B

of a doubt. They were divided on the same principle; each opened at the spring equinox; the first Arab sign Sharatan was strictly equivalent to the

Hindu Acvini; and eighteen constellations in each were virtually coincident. The model of the stew was, however, also regarded. Eighteen Chinese determinants were included in the Arab asterisms, and of these five or six were not nakshatra stars ; conse- quently, they must have been taken directly from the Chinese series. Nor were the Greek signs without effect in determining the names of the mandzil,! the late appearance of which, in a complete form, removes all difficulty in accounting for the various foreign influences brought to bear upon them. They were first enumerated by Alfar- ghani early in the 9th century, when the Arabs were in astronomy the avowed disciples of the Hindus. But, although they then received perhaps their earliest quasi- scientific organization, the mansions of the moon had for ages previously figured in the popular lore of the Bedouin. A set of twenty-eight rhymes associated their heliacal risings with the changes of season and the vicissi- tudes of nomad life ; their settings were of meteorological and astrological import ;? in the Koran (x. 5) they are re- garded as indispensable for the reckoning of time. Yet even this intimate penetration into the modes of thought of the desert may be explained by prehistoric Indian com- munication. The alternative view, advocated by Weber, that the lunar zodiac was primitively Chaldzan, rests on a very shadowy foundation. It is true that a word radi- cally identical with mandzil occurs twice in the Bible, under the forms mazzaloth and mazearoth (2 Kings xxiii. 5; Job xxxviil. 32); but the heavenly halting-places which it seems to designate may be solar rather than lunar. Euphratean exploration has so far brought to light no traces of ecliptical partition by the moon's diurnal motion, unless, indeed, zodiacal associations be claimed for a set of twenty-eight deprecatory formulz against evil spirits inscribed on a Ninevite tablet.

The safest general conclusions regarding this disputed subject appear to be that the séew, distinctively and un- varyingly Chinese, cannot properly be described as divisions of a lunar zodiac, that the nakshatras, though of purely Indian origin, became modified by the successive adoption of Greek and Chinese rectifications and supposed improve- ments; while the mandzil constituted a frankly eclectic system, in which elements from all quarters were combined. It was adopted by Turks, Tartars, and Persians, and forms part of the astronomical paraphernalia of the Bundehish. The szew, on the other hand, were early naturalized in Japan.

The refined system of astrological prediction based upon the solar zodiac was invented in Chaldia, obtained a second home and added elaborations in Egypt, and spread irresistibly westward about the beginning of our era. For genethliacal purposes the signs were divided into six solar and six lunar, the former counted onward from Leo, the "house" of the sun, the latter backward from the moon's domicile in Cancer. Each planet had two houses—a solar and a lunar—distributed according to the order of their revolutions. Thus Mercury, as the planet nearest the sun, obtained Virgo, the sign adjacent to Leo, with the corresponding lunar house in Gemini; Venus had Libra (solar) and Taurus (lunar); and so for the rest. A ram frequently stamped on coins of Antiochus, with head reverted towards tlhe moon and a star (the planet Mars), signified Aries to be the lunar house of Mars. With the respective and relative posi- tions in the zodiac of the sun, moon, and planets, the character of their action on human destiny varied indefinitely. The influence of the signs, though secondary, was hence overmastering: Julian called them Oe@v duvduers, and they were the objects of a corre- sponding veneration. Cities and kingdoms were allotted to their*

several patronage on a system fully expounded by Manilius :—

Hos erit in fines orbis pontusque notandus, Quem Deus in partes per singula dividit astra,

1 Whitney, Notes to Stirya-Siddhénta, p. 206.

2 A. Sprenger, Z. D. M. G., vol. xiii. p. 161; Biriini, Chronology, trans. by Sachau (London, 1879), p. 386 sg.

3 Lenormant, Chaldean Magic, p. 1.

4 "Orat. in Solem," Op., vol. i. p. 148, ed. 1696.

PA 795

Ac sua cuique dedit tutele regna per orbem, Et proprias gentes atque urbes addidit altas, In quibus exercent prestantia sidera vires.5

Syria was assigned to Aries, and Syrian coins frequently bear the effigy of a ram ; Scythia and Arabia fell to Taurus, India to Gemini. Palmyra, judging from numismatic evidence, claimed the favour of Libra, Zeugma that of Capricorn ; Leo protected Miletus, Sagittarius Singara.© The "power of the signs" was similarly distributed among the parts of the human body :—

Et quanquam communis eat tutela per omne Corpus, et in proprium divisis artubus exit: Namque aries capiti, taurus cervicibus heeret 5 Brachia sub geminis censentur, pectora cancro.7

Warnings were uttered against surgical treatment of a member through whose sign the moon happencd to be passing ;® and zodiacal anatomy was an indispensable branch of the healing art in the Middle Ages. Some curious memorials of the superstition have survived in rings and amulets, engrayen with the various signs, and worn as a kind of astral defensive armour. Many such, of the 14th and 15th centuries, have been recovered from the Thames.? Individuals, too, adopted zodiacal emblems. Capricornus was im- pressed upon the coins of Augustus, Libra on those of Pythodoris, queen of Pontus ; a sultan of Iconiuin displayed Leo as his "horo- scope" and mark of sovereignty ; Stephen of England chose the protection of Sagittarius.

In Egypt celestial influences were considered as emanating mainly Egyptian

from the thirty-six "decans" of the signs. They were called the astro- "media of the whole circle of the zodiac ;" 1° each ten-day period logy. of the Egyptian year was consecrated to the decanal god whose section of the ecliptic rose at its commencement ; the body was correspondingly apportioned, and disease was cured by invoking the zodiacal regent of the part affected As early as the 14th century B.C. a complete list of the decans was placed among the hieroglyphs adorning the tomb of Sethos I.; they figured again in the temple of Rameses II.,!2 and characterize every Egyptian astrological monument. Both the famous zodiacs of Dendera dis- play their symbols, unmistakably identified by Lepsius. The late origin of these interesting representations was established by the detection upon them of the cartouches of Tiberius and Nero. As the date of

inception of the circular one now at Paris the year 46 B.C. has, however, been suggested with high probability, from (among other indications) the position among the signs of the emblem of the planet Jupiter. Its design was most likely to serve as a sort of thema celi at the time of the birth of Cesarion. The companion rectangular zodiac still in sitw on the portico of the temple of Isis at Dendera suits, as to constellational arrange- ments, the date 29 a.p. It set forth, there is reason to belicve, the natal scheme, not of the emperor Tiberius, as had been conjectured by Lauth,! but of the building it served to decorate. The Greek signs of the zodiac, including Libra, arc obvious upon both these monuments, which have thrown some useful light upon the calendar system and method of stellar grouping of the ancient Egyptians. ®

An Egypto-Greek planisphere, first described by Bianchini,2® Plani- resembles in its general plan the circular zodiac of Dendera. The spheres. decans are ranged on the outermost of its five concentric zones ; the planets and the Greek zodiac in duplicate occupy the next three ; while the inner circle is unaccountably reserved for the Chinese cyclical animals. The relic was dug up on the Aventine in 1705, and is now in the Louvre. It dates from the 2d or 3d century of our era. The Tartar zodiac is not unfrequently found engraven on Chinese mirrors in polished bronze or steel of the 7th century, and figured on the "' plateau of the twelve hours" in the treasury of the emperors of the Tang dynasty."

Probably the most ancient zodiacal representation in existence is a fragment of a Chaldean planisphere in the British Museum, once inscribed with the names of the twelve months and their govern- ing signs, Two only now remain.® A zodiac on the "astrological altar of Gabies" in the Louvre illustrates the apportionment of the signs among the inmates of the Roman Pantheon; and they occur

> Astr., bk. iv., ver. 696 sq. ;

6 Eckhel, Descriptio Nummorum Antiochie Syriz, pp. 18, 25.

7 Manilius, Astr., bk. iv. ver. 702-5.

8 A. J. Peirce, Science of the Stars, p. 84.

® Journ. Arch. Soc., xiii. pp. 254, 310, and xx. p. 80.

10 In a fragment of Hermes translated by Th. Taylor at p. 362 of his version of Iamblichus.

11 Pettigrew, Superstitions Connected with Hist. of Medicine, p. 30.

2 Lepsius, Chronologie der Aegypter, part i. p. 68.

1 Ail 8% WO M Les Zodiaques de Denderah, p. 78.

15 See Riel's Das feste Jahr von Denderah, 1878.

16 Mém. del' Acad., Paris, 1708, Hist., p. 110 ; see also Humboldt, Vues des Cordilléres, p. 170 ; Lepsius, op. cit., p. 83 ; Froéhner, Sculp- ture du Louvre, p. 17. 3

W Schlegel, Ur. Chin., p. 561; Pettigrew, Jour. Arch. Soc., vol. viii 85 Baile 18 Fox Talbot, Trans. Soc. Bibl. Archeol., vol. iv. p. 260.

19 Ménard, La Mythologie dans I Art, p. 388.

Zodiacal symbols

in archi- crypt of San Savino at Piacenza.!

tecture.

Zodiacal hiero- glyphs,

796

as a classical reminiscence in the mosaic pavements of San Miniato and the baptistery at Florence, the cathedral of Lyons, and the Zodiacal symbolism hecame conspicuous in medieval art. Nearly all the French cathedrals of the 12th and 13th centuries exhibit on their portals a species of rural calendar, in which each month and sign has its corresponding labour. The zodiac of Notre Dame of Paris, opening with Aquarius, is a noted instance." A similar series, in which sculptured figures of Christ

*and the Apostles are associated with the signs, is to be seen in perfect preservation on the chief doorway of the abbey church at Vézelay. The cathedrals of Amiens, Sens, and Rheims are decorated in the same way. In Italy the signs and works sur- vive fragmentarily in the baptistery at Parma, completely on the porch of the cathedral of Cremona and on the west doorway of St Mark's at Venice. They are less common in England; but St Margaret's, York, and the church of Iffley in Oxfordshire offer good specimens. In the zodiac of Merton College, Oxford, Libra is re- presented by a judge in his robes and Pisces by the dolphin of litzjames, warden of the college, 1482-1507.3 The great rose-win- dows of the Early Gothic period were frequently painted with zodiacal emblems; and some frescos in the cathedral of Cologne contain the signs, each with an attendant angel, just as they were depicted on the vault of the church at Mount Athos. Giotto's zodiac at Padua was remarkable (in its undisturbed condition) for the arrangement of the signs so as to be struck in turns, during the corresponding months, by the sun's rays.*_ The "' zodiac of labours' was replaced in French castles and hétels by a ''zodiac of plea- sures," in which hunting, hawking, fishing, and dancing were sub- stituted for hoeing, planting, reaping, and ploughing.®*

It is curious to find the same sequence of symbols employed for the same decorative purposes in India as in Europe. A perfect set of signs was copied in 1764 from a pagoda at Verdapettah near Cape Comorin, and one equally complete existed at the same period on the ceiling of a temple near Mindurah.®

The hieroglyphs representing the signs of the zodiac in astrono- mical works are of late introduction. They are found in manu- scripts of about the 10th century, but in carvings not until the 15th or 16th.' Their origin is unknown ; but some, if not all of them, have antique associations. The hieroglyph of Leo, for instance, occurs among the symbols of the Mithraic worship.6 (A. M. C.)

ZODIACAL LIGHT. The zodiacal light is usually de- scribed as a cone or lenticularly-shaped glow of nebulous light, seen after sunset or before sunrise, extending up- wards from the position of the sun nearly in the direction of the ecliptic or of the sun's equator. This description, though

fairly correct for the higher latitudes, does not represent accurately what is seen in the tropics, where the light is often a very conspicuous object. There, if an observer on a clear, moonless night watches the western sky from soon after sunset till the last trace of twilight has disappeared, he will notice that the twilight seems to linger longer near where the sun sank below the horizon, and that gradually a nebulous whitish band of light, broad towards the horizon and narrowing first rapidly and then more slowly upwards, begins to stand out clearly from the vanishing twilight, which spreads along a much wider and nearly horizontally-topped arc of the horizon. 'This is the zodiacal light. When seen on a perfectly clear night, it will be noticed that it fades imperceptibly on both borders and towards the vertex, and that its light is distinctly brighter towards the base than at greater altitudes. Its width and brightness, and the height of the vertex, differ very much from time to time, partly on account of actual variations, but much more from differences in the trans- parency of the atmosphere. In England it is seldom observed - except in the months of March, April, and May shortly after sunset, or about October before sunrise. This is due to no change in the light itself, but simply to the

1 Fowler, Archxologia, vol. xliv. jo 1.

? Viollet-le-Duc, Dict. de l'Arch. Francaise, vol. ix. p. 551; Le Gentil, Mém. del Acad., Paris, IPAS, jo, AO

3 Fowler, Archwologia, vol. xliv. 1 LUO)

> Viollet-le-Duc, Dict. de l'Arch., vol. ix. p. 551.

§ John Call, Phil. Trans., vol. 1xii. p. 353. Comp. Houzeau, Bidbliographie Astronomigque, vol. i. pt. i. p. 136, where a useful sketch of the general results of zodiacal research will be found.

7 R. Brown, Archeologia, vol. xvii. p. 341; Sayce, in Nature, vol. Xxyv. p. 525,

8 See Lajard, Culte de Mithra, pl. xxvii. fig. 5, &e.

4 Ibid., p. 175.

circumstance that at other seasons the ecliptic makes so small an angle with the horizon that a light lying in or near it does not rise sufficiently high above the mists of the horizon to be seen after the twilight has vanished. In lower latitudes, where the angle made with the horizon is greater, while the duration of twilight is shorter, it can be easily seen at all seasons when there is a clear sky and no moon, except when Venus is an evening star, in which case the great brightness of that planet often almost completely obliterates the comparatively faint zodiacal light, at least in its neighbourhood. The zodiacal light has frequently been described as having a reddish yellow tint ; but this seems to be erroneous, for, when seen under favourable conditions, it is distinctly white and very similar to that of the Milky Way. Any colour that may have been observed is doubtless due to atmospheric causes.

Among the Moslems, to whom it is important on ritual grounds to determine accurately the moment of daybreak, at which during Ramadan the daily fast begins, the morning zodiacal light appears to have been observed from an early period, and is known as the "false dawn" or the "wolf's tail" (Redhouse, in Journ. R. A. S., July 1878). But in Christian Europe it seems to have been first observed by Kepler, who described its appearance with considerable accuracy and came to the conclusion that it was the atmosphere of the sun. Descartes wrote about it in 1630 and Childrey in 1659; but the attention of astronomers was first prominently called to it by Dominic Cassini, who first saw it on 18th March 1683. It is to him that it owes the name which it now bears. He explained it by supposing the existence of a flat, luminous ring encircling the sun, nearly in the plane of his equator, and accounted for its disappearance on the sanie principle as that which accounts for the vanishing of Saturn's ring. Mairan (1731), like Kepler, ascribed the light to the sun's atmosphere ; and this explanation was generally accepted, till Laplace showed that it was untenable, since no real solar atmosphere could extend to anything like the distance from the sun which is reached by the zodiacal light. He further showed that, even if the solar atmosphere did extend far enough,

it would not have the lenticular appearance ascribed by observers to the zodiacal light, since the polar axis would be at least two-thirds of the equatorial axis. Since then many observers have made a study of the subject, amongst whom may be mentioned Jones, Piazzi Smyth, Jacob, Brorsen, Schmidt, Backhouse, Liais, and Wright.

Extent.—The way in which the light fades off gradually towards the boundaries makes it extremely difficult to determine accurately the true position of the light or its extent. Various observations show that at times the base, at an elongation of about 20°, may have a width of from 25° to 30°, while at an elongation of 60° the breadth is frequently as much as 20°, but usually much less. The distance of the vertex from the sun frequently exceeds 90°, and Mr Liais and others have recorded cases when the light has been traced completely round from the western to the eastern horizon. This is very uncommon ; but it is not at all rare to find the light stretching nearly to the meridian three hours aftcr sunset, and several ob- servers have recorded the existence of a bright patch of light almost opposite to the position of the sun. This is known as the @egen-schein, and though it las been secn comparatively seldom its exist- ence must be accepted as proved ; for its position has been deter- mined by actual measurement by several astronomers, and their results agree with quite as great closeness as can be expected in the determination of the position of such an object. A lengthened series of observations was made on the zodiacal light by the Rev. G. Jones, chaplain of the United States steam frigate " Mississippi," in the China and Japan Seas in 1855. He charted the apparent posi- tion of the cone of light on a large number of nights and mornings, and came to the somewhat startling conclusion that his observations could be explained only by supposing the existence of a nebulous ring round the earth within the orbit of the moon. He recorded that twice near 23° 28' N, lat., with the sun at the opposite solstice,

he had seen "the extraordinary spectacle of the zodiacal light, simultaneously at both the east and west horizons from 11 to 1

PO Deh Ave eal lai G HT

o'clock for several nights in succession." On reading this state- ment, Baron Humboldt communicated to the Monatsberichte d. kén. preuss.

Akad. d. Wiss. some unpublished obscrvations of his own on a sunilar phenomenon. These were to the effect that on the 17th and 18th of March the light was very bright in the west, and "we constantly perceived in the east (and this is beyond doubt a very striking phenomenon) a whitish light which was also of a pyra- midal form. The latter augmented the brightness of the sky ina very striking manncr." The light in the west was so conspicuous that "even the sailors were delighted with this double light." He noted, too, what is a very important fact, that the two lights set at the same time; and there is much to be said in defence of his view that the eastern light was the reflexion of the true zodiacal light in the west, just as the eastern sunset glows are the reflexion of those in the west. The chief obstacle in the way of accepting this view is that,it is difficult to believe that a light so faint as the zodiacal light could have a reflexion bright enough to be seen, and even to be seen distinctly. On the other side must be set the cir- cumstance that the simultaneous glow at both horizons seems never to have been observed from great altitudes. This is easily under- stood if the second glow is a mere reflexion ; whereas, if it comes from another source of light, it ought to be more conspicuous at high than at low levels.

Position.—The exact position of the axis of the zodiacal light relatively to the ecliptic has not yet been satisfactorily fixed. The extreme haziness of outline and the excessive faintness of the light near the vertex make it quite impossible to use a telescope for measuring its limits. Most observers have tried to fix its position by tracing its outline on a star chart, while Prof. C. Piazzi Smyth employed two sights mounted equatorially. But even by these means no great accuracy can be attained, for the limits of the light can be traced only when the eye is quite unfatigued and when the light is looked at with averted vision. The difficulty experienced is well illustrated by the wide divergencies between the results of different observers—divergencies not only in the extent of the light, which would be quite natural, but even in the direction of the axis of the cone. Thus, Captain Jacob, who observed in Madras in 1856-57-58, found that his evening observations placed the vertex of the western cone in from 2°S. lat. to 6° N. lat., with an average of about 3° N. lat. His morning observations were less numerous and gave positions for the vertex of the eastern cone varying from 3 N, to 8° S., with an average

of about 2°S. Mr Backhouse from 418 observations found a mean deviation from the ecliptic of 2°-06, while Captain Tupman, observing in the Mediterranean in August and September, found an inclination of no less than 20°. He also found that the plane of the light did not pass through the sun. His observations, however, differ somewhat widely from those of most other observers. Mr A. Searle has made a very careful study of all the best published records. In his first paper more than 650 observations by Jones, Heis, Schmidt, and others are discussed, and he concludes that apparent changes in Jlati- tude are mainly, if not entirely, produced by the effect of atmo- spheric absorption, which affects the lower boundary more than the upper and to an extent depending on the inclination of the axis of the light to the horizon. In a second paper he discusses Jones's observations alone and comes to the conclusion that, after making allowance for the effects of absorption, there is some evidence that the zodiacal light, as seen during the second half of the 19th century, has had a more northern latitude near 180° long. than near 0° long. It seems somewhat doubtful, however, whether the observations hitherto made are sufficiently accurate to justify this conclusion, and all that can be confidently asserted is that the observations made so far point to such a difference as being probable. Similar variations in the greatest clongation, the breadth, and the bright- ness have been asserted to exist. Thus Mr J. F. Julius Schmidt, as the result of several years' observations, finds a variation in the inclination of the axis of the cone of light to the ecliptic from 4° 18' at the end of December to 0° towards the end of March, a similar variation in the greatest elongation from the sun from 120° in January to 70° in April, and a further similar variation in breadth at corresponding elongations, with a minimum for all three about 30th March. It may be pointed out that observations regarding the extent of the visible light are absolutely valueless unless accom- panied by careful records of the clearness of the sky as evidenced by the visibility of faint objects, for all obscrvers of the zodiacal light must have noticed that a thin film of mist, which hardly affects the colour of the sky or the visibility of the brighter stars, may almost completely obliterate the zodiacal light. No accurate photo- metric observations seem to have been made on the strength of the light and observers have differed widely in their estimates. Some assert that it is much brighter than the Milky Way, while others— and especially those who have observed in the tropics— say that it is

seldom so bright as the brighter parts of the Milky Way. It is certainly often brighter than most of the Milky Way. Mr Searle deduces from Sir W. Herschel's and Celoria's observa- tions that the Milky Way is about 2 magnitudes brighter than the mean brightness of the sky, and says that on this estimate the

brighter parts of the zodiacal light would be commonly 3 or 4 magnitudes brighter than the surrounding sky. This is almost certainly an over- estimate. There seems to be very little doubt that the brightness undergoes periodic fluctuations, but no estimate can as yet be made of the length of the period. It is probable that the brightness has been below the average for the last few years, but is now increasing. Most observers have also reported rapid changes of brightness, or undulations, such as are seen in the aurora and in the tails of some comets; but, as was pointed out by Olbers in 1833, these undulations must be produced in the earth's atmo- sphere. In this connexion it may be mentioned that in observing the spectrum rapid fickerings, like waves moving along the spectrum, are often very marked.

The Moon's Zodiacal Light.—Several observers have recorded observations which appeared to show that the moon produced an appearance very similar to that of the zodiacal light. Piazzi Smyth, however, when observing on the Peak of Teneriffe, saw this appear- auce and showed by actual measurement that the glow seen before moonrise does not lie near the ecliptic, but is nearly vertical, and is due simply to refraction in the earth's atmosphere. This ex- planation will hardly account for an interesting observation made by Mr L. Trouvelot, which if repeated would require to be very carefully investigated. On a night when the zodiacal light was very bright and there were magnetic disturbances followed by an auroral display, but when no aurora was actually visible, he saw a conical light rising obliquely from the top of the roof of a building behind which the moon, then about 15° or 20° above the horizon, was concealed. The axis of the light coincided nearly with the ecliptic and the light could be traced on both sides of the moon, when the moon itself was concealed. The whole of the circum- stances led Mr

Trouvelot to conclude that this light and the zodiacal light were phenomena of the same order, while this and other observations, he cousidered, rendered it probable that there was some connexion between the zodiacal light and auroras.

Physical Constitution.—As has already been pointed out, it is impossible to see the zodiacal light through a telescope, and this, taken along with the extreme faintness of the light, renders it exceedingly difficult to examine it satisfactorily with either the polariscope or the spectroscope. Many attempts have been made to determine whether or not the light was to any extent polarized, but with questionable results until Prof. A. W. Wright attacked the problem, using a polariscope specially designed for studying very faint lights. With this he was enabled to determine with certainty that the light was partially polarized in a plane passing through the sun, and that the amount of polar- ization was most probably as much as 15 per cent., but less than 20 per cent. Many attempts have been made to observe the spectrum. In 1867 Angstrém, observing at Upsala in March, obtained the bright aurora line (W. L. 5567), and concluded that in the zodiacal light there was the same material as is found in the aurora and in the solar corona, and probably through all space. Upsala, however, is a place where the aurora spectrum can often be observed in the sky even when no aurora is visible, and it has generally been believed that what Angstrém really saw was an auroral and nota zodiacal light spectrum. Sefior A. T. Acrimiz, observing at Cadiz, obtained a con- tinuous but faint spectrum with two bright lines—a yellowish line, probably an aurora line, and a line in the blue, more refrangible than F, which he could not identify, but which in all probability was another auroral line. The fact that he saw this spectrum with a five-prism spectroscope attached to an equatorial seems conclusive evidence that it was not the zodiacal light spectrum that he was observing. The most satisfactory observations hitherto published seem to be those of Prof. Piazzi Smyth and Prof. A. W. Wright. Both used spectroscopes specially designed for the examination of faint lights, and their results agree completely with each other. Prof. Smyth made his observations at Palermo and found a faint con- tinuous spectrum extending from about W. L. 5550 to W. L, 5000 (British inches scale), with a maximum brightness at about W. L. 5350. In fact, the light was almost exactly'

similar to that of faint diffused sunlight, such as is got in the last traces of twilight. Prof. Wright's conclusion was

that the spectrum differs from that of sunlight only in intensity. Some recent unpublished observations made in the tropics indicate that, while the spectrum is usually that described by Prof. Smyth, there are times when a bright line is scen. Too much stress, however, must not be laid on this, as the observations are by no means conclusive, and the apparent line may in reality be only a part of the continuous spectrum which is brighter than usual. ;

The discussion of the real cause of the zodiacal light is rendered very difficult by the want of agreement in the observations that have been made upon it, and by the existence of a small number of apparently trustworthy observations of a very abnormal extension of the light, as detailed above; but certain conclusions may be safely arrived at. The theory that it is due to a ring of small bodies surrounding the earth seems to be entirely negatived, as pointed out by Proctor and others, by several of its features. The best observations leave no room for the parallactic displacement which would be observed if there were such a ring round the earth, and the absence of a large part of the luminous circle on ordinary occasions would be inexplicable on any such hypothesis. There can therefore be very little doubt that we must look for the cause of the light to the existence of a mass of small bodies moving in orbits round the sun, and that, as shown by the polarization and the spectrum, the light is chiefly, if not entirely, reflected sunlight. To account for all the observations, Proctor has shown that the bodies must travel in orbits of considerable eccentricity, carrying them far beyond the limits of what we may term the zodiacal disk. Under these conditions the constitution of the disk would become variable within exceedingly wide limits, and all the recorded variations might be fairly explained. The appearance of a complete arch, as seen by Liais and others, would indicate an extension far beyond the earth's orbit ; but, at present at least, this must. be looked on as very exceptional. The spectroscopic evidence, so far as it goes, confirms this theory, since it indicates that the light is mainly reflected

sunlight ; and, even if further observations should confirm the opinion that bright lines are sometimes present, this need in no way invalidate the conclusions that have been arrived at. Indeed, it seems highly probable—especially if Mr Lockyer's views regarding meteorites are confirmed—that bright lines should be seen in such a body of meteorites. Olbers long ago suggested that the corona was the brightest part of the zodi- acal light, and there is nothing in recent observations to con- tradict this view, for all observations go to show that the outer corona has no definite boundary, but shades off imper- ceptibly and becomes invisible at a great distance from the sun. Dr Huggins, while holding that the corona is most probably due to the ceaseless outflow of extremely minute particles from the sun, thinks it not improbable that the zodi- acal light may be in some way connected with this outflow. Dr Siemens, when discussing his theory of the conservation of solar energy, sought for an explanation of the zodiacal light in the dust which he supposed to be ejected from equa- torial regions, rendered luminous partly by reflected sunlight, partly by phosphorescence, and partly by electrical action.

With the increasing number of observatories at high altitudes it may fairly be hoped that before long astro- nomers will be put in possession of such definite measure- ments as will enable some at least of the points still under discussion to be finally settled, and that far more accurate observations will soon be available on which to construct a satisfactory theory.

Bibliography.—Childrey, Natural History of England (1659) and Britannia Baconica, p. 188 (1661); Cassini (D.), Nouv. Phénom. d'une lumiére céleste [zodiacal e] (1683) and Découverte de la lumiére céleste qui parotst dans le zodiague (1685); Hooke (ha):

Lxplication of a Glade of Light, &c. (1685) ; Mairan, Observations de la lumiére zodiacale; Euler (L.), Sur la cause de la lumiére

zodiacale (1746); Mairan, Sur la cause de la lumiére zodiacale (1747); Wolf (R.), Beobachtungen des Zodiacallichtes (1850-52) ; Brorsen, Ueber den Gegenschein des Zodiacallichts (1855) and in Schu- macher, 998; Schmidt (J. F. J.), Das Zodiacallicht, Brunswick (1856), andin Astron. Nachr., lxxill. p. 199; Jacob, Memoirs R. A.S., xxvili. p. 119; Jones (G.),

in Gould, No. 84, in Monthly Notices R.A.S., Xvi. p. 18, and in U. 8. Exploring Expedition Narrative, vol. ili. (1856) ; Humboldt, in Monatsber. d. k. preuss. Akad. d. Wiss., July 1855, also in AL Not. R.A.S., xvi. p. 16; Smyth (C. P.), in Trans. R.S.H., Xx. p. 489 (1852), and in MM. Not. R.A.S., xvii. p. 204 and xxxil. p. 277; Backhouse (T. W.), in If, Not. R.A.S., xxxvi. p. land xli. p. 333 ; Tupman, in Mf, Not. R.A.S., xxxii. p. 74; Liais, in Comptes Rendus, |xiv. p. 262 (January 1872); Wright (A. W.), in Amer. Jour. of Science, evii. p. 451 and cviii. p. 39; Angstrom, in Pogg. Annal., cxxxvii. p. 162; Searle (Arthur), in Proc. Amer. Acad., xix. p. 146 and vol. xi. p. 185 ; and Trouvelot, in Proc. Amer. Acad., xiii. p. 183 (1877). (C. M. 8.)

ZOHAR. See Kappan.

ZOLLNER, JoHann Cart FRIEDRICH (1834-1882), astronomer and physicist, was born at Berlin on 8th November 1834. From 1872 he held the chair of astro- physics at Leipsic university. He is the author of numer- ous papers on photometry and spectrum analysis in Poggen- dorf's Annalen and Berichte der kh. sdichsischen Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften, of two works on astronomical photo- metry (Grundztige einer allgemeinen Photometrie des Him- mets, Berlin, 1861, 4to, and Photometrische Untersuchungen, Leipsic, 1865, 8vo), and of a very strange book, Ueber die Natur der Cometen (Leipsic, 1872, 8vo). He died at Leipsic on 25th April 1882.

Zollner's "astrophotometer"' compares the light of a star as seen in a telescope with that of an artificial star produced by a paraffin lamp. From the latter the light passes through three Nicol's prisms, of which two can be turned so as to vary the intensity of the light, the latter being proportional to the square of the cosine of the angle through which the prisms are turned, which angle is read off on a small circle. In ordcr to vary the colour of the arti- ficial star, so as to make it resemble the natural star as much as possible, there is inserted between the first and second prisms a plate of left-handed quartz, cut perpendicular to the axis, the rota- tion of which is read off on another circle. This instrument has been used by Zéllner, Lindemann, Engelmann, J. T. Wolff, and others for photometric observations of stars and planets; but it labours under

several defects, among which the difficulty of keeping the flame of the lamp at a constant height is the most serious,

ZOMBOR, a royal free city of Hungary, the capital of the county of Bacs-Bodrog, lies about 120 miles south of Buda- pest in a fertile plain, on the Francis Canal that connects the Danube and the Theiss. The town has some fine streets and squares, and several handsome buildings, among which may be mentioned the county and town halls, the theatre, and the Roman Catholic and Greek churches. Zombor is a station on the Alfold-Fiume Railway and the centre of the corn and cattle trade of an extensive area. The popu- lation numbered 24,693 in 1880 and about 31,000 in 1886.

ZONARAS, Joannes, historian and theologian, flour- ished at Constantinople in the 12th century. Under Alexius I. Comnenus he held the offices of commander of the bodyguard and private secretary to the emperor, but in the succeeding reign he retired to Mount Athos, where he spent the rest of his life in writing his books. He is said to have lived to the age of eighty-cight.

His most important work, the Chronicon, is in eighteen books, and extends from the creation of the world to the death of Alexius (1118). The carlier part is largely drawn from Josephus; for Roman history he chiefly followed Dion Cassius, whose first twenty books are only known to us through Zonaras. Of contemporary events which he himself witnessed he writes more briefly and meagrely than might have been expected. His history was con- tinued by Nicetas Acominatus. Among the other works of Zonaras is an Exposition of the Apostolical Canons. The Chrontcon or Annals was first printed at Basel in 1557; Du Cange next edited it in 1686 ; and it also forms part of the Bonn collection of Byzantine writers, having been edited by Pinder (2 vols.) in 1841-44. The latest edition is by Dindorf, with Du Cange's notes (6 vols. 8vo, Leipsic, 1868-75). The Opera Omnia Historica, Canonica, Dog- mutica, were published by Migne in 2 vols. 4to, at Paris in 1865.

A lexicon, also attributed to Zonaras, has been edited by Tittmann (Leipsic, 1808).

AW OE OG Y

‘hare branch of science to which the name zoology is

strictly applicable may be defined as that portion of biology which relates to animals, as distinguished from that portion which is concerned with plants.

theories having been rejected and nothing as yet suggested in their place.

The history of zoology as a science is therefore the his- Scope of tory of the great biological doctrine of the evolution of the his-

Relation The science of biology itself has been placed by Mr | living things by the natural selection of varieties in the ty of ; : d : 5 2 zoology.

of bio- Herbert Spencer in the group of concrete sciences, the | struggle for existence,—since that doctrine is the one

locy t P : ooup : ° 2 88 5

ie ° other groups recognized by that writer being the “abstract- | medium whereby all the phenomena of life, whether of form

sciences, Concrete” and the “abstract.” The abstract sciences are | or function, are rendered capable of explanation by the laws

logic and mathematics, and treat of the blank forms in which phenomena occur in relation to time, space, and number. The abstract-concrete sciences are mechanics, physics, and chemistry. The title assigned to them is justified by the fact that, whilst their subject-matter is found in a consideration of varied concrete phenomena, they do not aim at the explanation of complex concrete phenomena as such, but at the determination of certain “abstract” quantitative relations and sequences known as the “laws” of mechanics, physics, and chemistry, which never are manifested in a pure form, but always are inferred by observation and experiment upon complex phenomena in which the abstract laws are

disguised by their simultaneous interaction. The group of concrete sciences includes astronomy, geology, biology, and socio- logy. These sciences have for their aim to "explain" the concrete complex phenomena of (a) the sidereal system, (d) the earth as a whole, (c) the living matter on the earth's surface, (d) human society, by reference to the properties of matter set forth in the generalizations or laws of the abstract-concrete sciences, 7.e., of mechanics, physics, and

of physics and chemistry, and so made the subject-matter of a true science or study of causes. A history of zoology must take account of the growth of those various kinds of information with regard to animal life which have been arrived at in past ages through the labours of a long series of ardent lovers of nature, who in each succeeding period have more and more carefully and accurately tested, proved, arranged, and tabulated their knowledge, until at last the accumulated lore of centuries—almost without the con- sciousness of its latest heirs and cultivators—took the form of the doctrine of descent and the filiation of the animal

series. History.

There is something almost pathetic in the childish wonder and delight with which mankind in its earlier phases of civilization gathered up and treasured stories of strange animals from distant lands or deep seas, such as are recorded in the Physiologus, in Albertus Magnus, and even at the present day in the popular treatises of Japan and China, That omnivorous universally credulous stage, which may be called the "legendary," was succeeded by

the age of collectors and travellers, when many of the Era of strange stories believed in were actually demonstrated as collect- true by the living or preserved trophies brought to Europe 078 224

: aera : ~~+ travel~~ by adventurous navigators. The possibility of verification ia '

chemistry.

The classification thus sketched exhibits, whatever its practical demerits, the most important fact with regard to biology, namely, that it is the aim or business of those

occupied with that branch of science to assign living things, in all their variety of form and activity, to the one set of forces recognized by the physicist and chemist. Just as the astronomer accounts for the heavenly bodies and their movements by the laws of motion and the pro- perty of attraction, as the geologist explains the present state of the earth's crust by the long-continued action of the same forces which at this moment are studied and treated in the form of "laws" by physicists and chemists, so the biologist seeks to explain in all its details the long process of the evolution of the innumerable forms of life now existing, or which have existed in the past, as a neces- sary outcome, an automatic product, of these same forces.

Science may be defined as the knowledge of causes; and, so long as biology was not a conscious attempt to ascertain the causes of living things, it could not be rightly grouped with other branches of science. For a very long period the two parallel divisions of biology,—botany and zoology,— were actually limited to the accumulation of observations, which were noted, tabulated, and contemplated by the students of these subjects with wonder and delight, but only to a limited extent and in restricted classes of facts with any hope or intention of connecting the phenomena observed with the great nexus of physical sequence or causation. A vague desire to assign the forms and the activities of living things in all their variety to general causes has always been present to thoughtful observers from the earliest times of which we have record, but the earlier attempts in this direction were fantastic in the extreme ; and it is the mere truth that, at the time when the phenomena of inorganic nature had been recognized as the outcome of uniform and constant properties capable of analysis and measurement, living things were still left hopelessly out of the domain of explanation, the earlier

established verification as a habit; and the collecting of things, instead of the accumulating of reports, developed a new faculty of minute observation. The early collectors of natural curiosities were the founders

of zoological science, and to this day the naturalist-traveller and his correlative, the museum curator and systematist, play a most important part in the progress of zoology. Indeed, the historical and present importance of this aspect or branch of zoological science is so great that the name "zoology" has until recently been associated entirely with it, to the exclusion of the study of minute anatomical structure and function which have been distinguished as anatomy and physiology. It is a curious result of the steps of the historical progress of the two divisions of biological science that, whilst the word "botany" has always been understood, and is at the present day understood, as embracing the study, not only of the external forms of plants, their systematic nomencla- ture and classification, and their geographical distribution, but also the study of their minute structure, their organs of nutrition and reproduction, and the mode of action of the mechanism furnished by those organs, the word "zoology" has been limited to such a knowledge of ani- mals as the travelling sportsman could acquire in making his collections of skins of beasts and birds, of dried insects and molluscs' shells, and such a knowledge as the museum curator could acquire by the examination and classification of these portable objects. Anatomy and the study of ani- mal mechanism, animal physics, and animal chemistry, all of which form part of a true zoology, have been excluded from the usual definition of the word by the mere accident that the zoologist of the last three centuries has had his museum but has not had his garden of living specimens as. the botanist has had ;! and, whilst the zoologist has thus

1 The medieval attitude towards both plants and animals had no

for a long time been deprived of the means of anatomical and physiological study—only supplied within the past century by the method of preserving animal bodies in alcohol—the demands of medicine for a knowledge of the structure of the human animal have in the meantime

named and independently constituted sciences, leaving at last, as a residwum to which the word might still be applied, that medical aspect of

life which is concerned with the workings of the living organism regarded as a piece of physico-chemical apparatus.

Whatever may be the history of the word " physiology," Rise of

brought into existence a separate and special study of we find zoology, which really started in the 16th century scientific

human anatomy and physiology.

Relation From these special studies of human structure the | with the awakening of the new spirit of observation and he toana~- knowledge of the anatomy of animals has proceeded, the | exploration, for a long time running a separate course tomyand same investigator who had made himself acquainted with | uninfluenced by the progress of the medical studies of te "the structure of the human body desiring to compare with | anatomy and physiology. The history of every branch of

the standard given by human anatomy the structures of other animals. Thus comparative anatomy came into exist- ence as a branch of inquiry apart from zoology, and it is only now, in the latter part of the 19th century, that the limitation of the word "zoology" to a knowledge of animals which expressly excludes the consideration of their internal structure has been rejected by the general consent of those concerned in the progress of science; it is now generally recognized that it is mere tautology to speak of zoology and comparative anatoiny, and that our museum naturalists must give attention as well to the inside as to the outside of animals.

The anatomy and physiology of plants have never been excluded from the attention of botanists, because in con- trast to the earlier zoologists they always were in possession of the whole living plant, raised from seed if need be in a hot-house, instead of having only a dried skin, skeleton, or shell. Consequently the study of vegetable anatomy and physiology has grown up naturally and in a healthy way in strict relation to the rest of botanical knowledge, whilst animal anatomy and physiology have been external to zoology in origin, the product of the medical profession and, as a consequence, subjected to a misleading anthropo- centric method.

Restricted Whilst we may consider the day as gone by in which

science involves a recognition of the history, not only of other branches of science, but of the progress of human society in every other relation. The century which de- stroyed the authority of the church, witnessed the dis- covery of the New World, and in England produced the writings of Francis Bacon is rightly regarded as the start- ing-point of the modern knowledge of natural causes or science. The true history of zoology as a science lies within the three last centuries; and, whilst the theories and fables which were current in earlier times in regard to animal life and the various kinds of animals form an im- portant subject of study from the point of view of the history of the development of the human mind, they really have no bearing upon the history of scientific zoology. The great awakening of western Europe in the 16th century led to an active search for knowledge by means of observa- tion and experiment, which found its natural home in the universities. Owing to the connexion of medicine with these seats of learning, it was natural that the study of the structure and functions of the human body and of the animals nearest to man should take root there; the spirit of inquiry which now for the first time became general showed itself in the anatomical schools of the Italian uni- versities of the 16th century, and spread fifty years later to Oxford.

so ee. zoology could be regarded as connoting solely a special In the 17th century the lovers of the new philosophy, Influence physio. Museum knowledge of animals (as twenty-five years ago | the investigators of nature by means of observation and °f aca- logy. was still the case), it is interesting to observe by the way | experiment, banded themselves into academies or societics a.

the curious usurpation of the word " physiology," which, | for mutual support and intercourse. It is difficult to ex- ties,

from having a wide connotation, indicated by its etymology, —the physiologus of the Middle Ages being nothing more nor less than the naturalist or student of nature,—has in these later days acquired a limitation which it is difficult to justify or explain. Physiology to-day means the study of the physical and chemical properties of the animal or vegetable body, and is even distinguished from the study of structure and

strictly confined to the study of function. It would hardly be in place here to discuss at length the steps by which physiology became thus limited, any more than to trace those by which the words " physician " and "physicist" (which both mean one who occupies himself with nature) came to signify respectively a medical prac- titioner and a student of the laws of mechanics, heat, light, and electricity (but not of chemistry), whilst the word "naturalist" is very usually limited to a lover and student of living things, to the exclusion of the so-called physicist, the chemist, and the astronomer. It is probable that physiology acquired its present significance, viz., the study of the properties and functions of the tissues and organs of living things, by a process of external attraction and spoliation which gradually removed from the original physiologus all his belongings and assigned them to newly

relation to real knowledge, but was part of a peculiar and in itself highly Interesting mysticism. A fantastic and elaborate doctrine of symbolism existed which comprised all nature ; witchcraft, alchemy, and medicine were its practical expressions. Animals as well as plants were regarded as "simples" and used in medicine, and a knowledge of them was valued from this point of view. Plants were collected and

cultivated for medicinal use: hence the physic botanist's advantage. aga a

aggerate the importance of the influence which has been exercised by these associations upon the progress of all branches of science and of zoology especially. The essential importance of academies is to be found, as Laplace, the great French astronomer, has said, "in the philosophic spirit which develops itself in them and spreads itself from them as centres over an entire nation and all relations. The isolated man of science can give himself up to dogma- tism without restraint ; he hears contradictions only from afar. But ina learned society the enunciation of dogmatic views leads rapidly to their destruction, and the desire of each member to convince the others necessarily leads to the agreement to admit nothing excepting what is the result of observation or of mathematical calculation."

The first founded of surviving European academies, the Academia Naturz Curiosorum (1651),! especially confined itself to the description and

illustration of the structure of plants and animals; eleven years later (1662) the Royal Society of London was incorporated by royal charter, having existed without a name or fixed organization for seventeen years previously (from 1645). A little later the Academy of Sciences of Paris was established by Louis XIV. The influence of these great academies of the 17th century on the progress of zoology was precisely to effect that bringing together of the museum-men and the physicians or anatomists which was needed for further development. Whilst the race of collectors and systema- tizers culminated in the latter part of the 18th century

1 The Academia Secretorum Nature was founded at N aples in 1560, but was suppressed by the ecclesiastical authorities.

in Linneus, a new type of student made its appearance in such men as John Hunter and other anatomists, who, not satisfied with the superficial observations of the popular "zoologists," set themselves to work to examine anatomic- ally the whole animal kingdom, and to classify its members by aid of the results of such profound study. From them we pass to the comparative anatomists of the 19th century and the introduction of the microscope as a serious instru- ment of accurate observation.

The influence of the scientific academies and the spirit in which they worked in the 17th century cannot be better illustrated than by an examination of the early records of the Royal Society of London. 'The spirit which animated the founders and leaders of that society is clearly indicated in its motto "Nullius in verba." Marvellous narrations were not permitted at the meetings of the society, but solely demonstrative experiments or the exhibition of actual specimens. Definite rules were laid down by the society for its guidance, designed to ensure the collection of solid facts and the testing of statements embodying novel or remarkable observations. Under the influence of the touch- stone of strict inquiry set on foot by the Royal Society, the marvels of witchcraft, sympathetic powders, and other relics of medizval superstition disappeared like a mist before the sun, whilst accurate observations and demon- strations of a host of new wonders accumulated, amongst which were numerous contributions to the anatomy of animals, and none perhaps more

noteworthy than the observations, made by the aid of microscopes constructed by himself, of Leeuwenhoek, the Dutch naturalist (1683), some of whose instruments were presented by him to the society.

Results of It was not until the 19th century that the microscope, useofthe thus early applied by Leeuwenhoek, Malpighi, Hook, and scope, SWammerdam to the study of animal structure, was per-

Pe fected as an instrument, and accomplished for zoology its final and most important service. The earlier half of the 19th century is remarkable for the rise, growth, and full development of a new current of thought in relation to living things, expressed in the various doctrines of develop- ment which were promulgated, whether in relation to the origin of individual animals and plants or in relation to their origin from predecessors in past ages. The perfecting of the microscope led to a full comprehension of the great doctrine of cell-structure and the establishment of the facts—(1) that all organisms are either single corpuscles (so-called cells) of living material (microscopic animalcules, &c.) or are built up of an immense number of such units (2) that all organisms begin their individual existence as a single unit or corpuscle of living substance, which multi- plies by binary fission, the products growing in size and multiplying similarly by binary fission; and (3) that the life of a multicellular organism is the sum of the activities of the corpuscular units of which it consists, and that the processes of life must be studied in and their explanation obtained from an understanding of the chemical and physical changes which go on in each individual corpuscle or unit of living material or protoplasm (cell-theory of Schwann).

On the other hand, the astronomical theories of develop- ment of the solar system from a gaseous condition to its present form, put forward by Kant and by Laplace, had impressed men's minds with the conception of a general movement of spontaneous progress or development in all nature ; and, though such ideas were not new but are to be found in some of the ancient Greek philosophers, yet now for the first time they could be considered with a sufficient knowledge and certainty as to the facts, due to the careful observation of the two preceding centuries. The science of

geology came into existence, and the whole panorama of successive stages of the earth's history, each with its dis-

Ideas of develop- ment.

801

tinct population of strange animals and plants, unlike those of the present day and simpler in proportion as they recede into the past, was revealed by Cuvier, Agassiz, and others. The history of the crust of the earth was explained by Lyell as due to a process of slow development, in order to effect which he called in no cataclysmic agencies, no mysterious forces differing from those operating at the present day. Thus he carried on the narrative of orderly development from the point at which it was left by Kant and Laplace,—explaining by reference to the ascertained laws of physics and chemistry the configuration of the earth, its mountains and seas, its igneous and its stratified rocks, just as the astronomers had explained by those same laws the evolution of the sun and planets from diffused gaseous matter of high temperature.

The suggestion that living things must also be included The in this great development was obvious. They had been so Natur- included by poet-philosophers in past ages; they were so neal included by many a simple-minded student of nature xahio, watching the growth of the tree from the seed, formed a true but unverified inference in favour of a general process of growth and development of all things from simpler beginnings. The delay in the establishment of the doctrine of organic evolution was due, not to the ignorant and un- observant, but to the leaders of zoological and botanical science, Knowing as they did the almost endless com-plexity of organic structures, realizing as they did that man himself with all the mystery of his life and conscious- ness must be included in any explanation of the origin of living things, they preferred to regard living things as something apart from the rest of nature, specially cared for, specially created by a Divine Being, rather than to indulge in hypotheses which seemed to be beyond all pos- sibility of proof, and were rather of the nature of poets' dreams than in accordance with the principles of that new philosophy of rigid adherence to fact and demonstration which had hitherto served as the mainsprings of scientific progress. Thus it was that the so-called "N: atur-philoso- phen" of the last decade of the 18th century, and their successors in the first quarter of the 19th, found few adherents among the working zoologists and botanists. Lamarck, Treviranus, Erasmus Darwin, Goethe, and Saint- Hilaire preached to deaf ears, for they advanced the theory that living beings had developed by a slow process of transmutation in successive generations from simpler an- cestors, and in the beginning from simplest formless matter, without being able to demonstrate any existing mechanical causes by which such development must necessarily be brought about. They were met in fact by the criticism that possibly such a development had taken place ; but, as no one could show as a simple fact of observation that it had taken place, nor as a result of legitimate inference that it must have taken place, it was quite as likely that the past and present species of animals and plants had been separately created or individually brought into existence by unknown and inscrutahle causes, and (it was held) the truly scientific man would refuse to occupy himself with such fancies, whilst ever continuing to concern himself with the observation and record of

indisputable facts. The critics did well; for the " Natur-philosophen," though right in their main conception, were premature.

It was reserved for Charles Darwin, in the year 1859, Darwin's to place the whole theory of organic evolution on a new doctrine footing, and by his discovery of a mechanical cause actu- ee ally existing and demonstrable by which organic evolution ; must be brought about to entirely change the attitude in regard to it of even the most rigid exponents of the scien- tific method. Since its first publication in 1859 the history' of Darwin's theory has been one of continuous and decisive conquest, so that at the present day it is universally ac-

cepted as the central, all-embracing doctrine of zoological and botanical science.

"ZOO LO GY

on the subject of the utility of this or that startling variety of structure; but few attempts, though some of great importance, were made to systematically explain by observa-

Intro- Darwin succeeded in establishing the doctrine of organic | ir

duction evolution by the introduction into the web of the zoological | tion and experiment the adaptation of organic structures

ofthrem" and botanical sciences of a new science. The subject- | to particular purposes in the case of the lower animals

oa matter of this new science, or branch of biological science, | and plants. Teleology had, however, an important part

is had been neglected: it did not form part of the studies | in the development of what is called physiology, viz., the

of the collector and systematist, nor was it a branch of | knowledge of the mechanism, the physical and chemical anatomy, nor of the physiology pursued by medical men, | properties, of the parts of the body of man and the higher nor again was it included in the field of microscopy and animals allied to him. The doctrine of organs and func- the cell-theory. The area of biological knowledge which | tions—the organ designed so as to execute the function, Darwin was the first to subject to scientific method and | and the whole system of organs and functions building up to render, as it were, contributory to the great stream | a complex mechanism, the complete animal or plant—was formed by the union of the various branches, the outlines | teleological in origin (see PHyYsIoLocy), and led to brilliant of which we have already traced, is that which relates to | discoveries in the hands of the physiologists of the last the breeding of animals and plants, their congenital varia- | and the preceding century. As applied to lower and more tions, and the transmission and perpetuation of those | obscure forms of life, teleology presented almost insur- variations. This branch of biological science may be called | mountable difficulties; and consequently, in place of exact thremmatology (Opéypo, "a thing bred"). Outside the | experiment and demonstration, the most reckless though scientific world an immense mass of observation and experi- | ingenious assumptions were made as to the utility of the ment had grown up in relation to this subject. From the | parts and organs of lower animals, which tended to bring earliest times the shepherd, the farmer, the horticulturist, | so-called comparative physiology and teleology generally and the "fancier" had for practical purposes made them- | into disrepute. Darwin's theory had as one of its results selves acquainted with a number of biological laws, and | the reformation and rehabilitation of teleology. Accord- successfully applied them without exciting more than an | ing to that theory, every organ, every part, colour, and occasional notice from the academic students of biology. It | peculiarity of an organism, must either be of benefit to is one of Darwin's great merits to have made use of these | that organism itself or have been so to its ancestors: no observations and to have formulated their results to a | peculiarity of structure or general conformation, no habit large extent as the laws of variation and heredity. As | or instinct in any organism, can be supposed to exist for the breeder selects a congenital variation which suits his | the benefit or amusement of another

organism, not even requirements, and by breeding from the animals (or plants) | for the delectation of man himself. Necessarily, accord- exhibiting that variation obtains a new breed specially | ing to the theory of natural selection, structures either are characterized by that variation, so in nature is there a | present because they are selected as useful or because selection aniongst all the congenital variations of each | they are still inherited from ancestors to whom they were generation of a species. This selection depends on the | useful, though no longer useful to the existing representa- fact that more young are born than the natural provision | tives of those ancestors. of food will support. In consequence of this excess of The conception thus put forward entirely re-founded tele- births there is a struggle for existence and a survival of ology. Structures previously inexplicable were explained the fittest, and consequently an ever-present necessarily- | as survivals from a past age, no longer useful though once acting selection, which either maintains accurately the form | of value. Every variety of form and colour was urgently of the species from generation to generation or leads to its | and absolutely called upon to produce its title to existence modification in correspondence with changes in the sur- | either as an active useful agent or as a survival. Darwin rounding circumstances which have relation to its fitness | himself spent a large part of the later years of his life in for success in the struggle for life. thus extending the new teleology. A beginning only has

Newde- | Darwin's introduction of thremmatology into the domain | as yet been made in the new life of that branch of zoological

velop- of scientific biology was accompanied by a new and special | and botanical study.

ee development of a branch of study which had previously The old doctrine of types, which was used by the philo-

been known as teleology, the study of the adaptation of organic structures to the service of the organisms in which they occur. It cannot be said that previously to Darwin there had been any very profound study of teleology, but it had been the delight of a certain type of mind—that of the lovers of nature or naturalists par excellence, as they were sometimes termed—to watch the habits of living animals and plants, and to point out the

remarkable ways in which the structure of each variety of organic life was adapted to the special circumstances of life of the variety or species. The astonishing colours and grotesque forms of some animals and plants which the museum zoologists gravely described without comment were shown by these observers of living nature to have their significance in the economy of the organism possessing them ; and a general doctrine was recognized, to the effect that no part or struc- ture of an organism is without definite use and adaptation, being designed by the Creator for the benefit of the creature

sophically-minded zoologists (and botanists) of the first half of the century as a ready means of explaining the failures and difficulties of the doctrine of design, fell into its proper place under the new dispensation. The adher- ence to type, the favourite conception of the transcendental morphologist, was seen to be nothing more than the ex- pression of one of the laws of thremmatology, the persist- ence of hereditary transmission of ancestral characters, even when they have ceased to be significant or valuable in the struggle for existence, whilst the so-called evidences of design which was supposed to modify the limitations of types assigned to Himself by the Creator were seen to be adaptations due to the selection and intensification by selective breeding of fortuitous congenital variations, which happened to prove more useful than the many thousand other variations which did not survive in the struggle for existence.

Thus not only did Darwin's theory give a new basis to Effects of the study of organic structure, but, whilst rendering the Darwin's : ; theory general theory of organic evolution equally acceptable and cea necessary, it explained the existence of low and simple forms zoology. of life as survivals of the earliest ancestry of more highly

complex forms, and revealed the classifications of the

to which it belongs, or else for the benefit, amusement, or instruction of his highest creature—man. Teleology in this form of the doctrine of design was never very deeply rooted amongst scientific anatomists and systematists. It was considered permissible to speculate somewhat vaguely

oe Oo 'L 0" ¥

systematist as unconscious attempts to construct the genealogical tree or pedigree of plants and animals. Finally, it brought the simplest living matter or formless protoplasm before the mental vision as the starting-point whence, by the operation of necessary mechanical causes, the highest forms have been evolved, and it rendered un- avoidable the conclusion that this earliest living material was itself evolved by gradual processes, the result also of the known and recognized laws of physics and chemistry, from material which we should call not living. It abolished the conception of life as an entity above and beyond the common properties of matter, and led to the conviction that the marvellous and exceptional qualities of that which we call "living" matter are nothing more nor less than an exceptionally complicated development of those chemical and physical properties which we recognize in a gradually ascending scale of evolution in the carbon compounds, containing nitrogen as well as oxygen, sulphur, and hydro- gen as constituent atoms of their enormous molecules. Thus mysticism was finally banished from the domain of biology, and zoology became one of the physical sciences, —the science which seeks to arrange and discuss the phe- nomena of animal life and form as the outcome of the operation of the laws of physics and chemistry.

Nature AND Scop oF ZooLoey.

The brief historical outline above given is sufficient to justify us in rejecting, for the purposes of an adequate appreciation of the history and scope of zoology, that simple division of the science into morphology and physio- logy which is a favourite one at the present day. No doubt the division is a logical one, based as it is upon the distinction of the study of form and structure in them- selves (morphology) from the study of what are the activi- ties and functions of the forms and structures (physiology). Such logical divisions are possible upon a variety of bases, but are not necessarily conducive to the ascertainment and remeinbrance of the historical progress and present signifi- cance of the science to which they are applied. As a matter of convenience and as the outcome of historical events it happens that in the universities of Europe, whilst botany in its entirety is usually represented by one chair, the animal side of biology is represented by a chair of so- called zoology, which is understood as the old-fashioned systematic zoology, a chair of human and comparative

anatomy, and a chair of physiology (signifying the mechanics, physics, and chemistry of animals especially in relation to man). Fifty years ago the chairs of anatomy and physiology were united in one. No such distinction of mental activities as that involved in the division of the study of animal life into morphology and physiology has ever really existed: the investigator of animal forms has never entirely ignored the functions of the forms studied by him, and the experimental inquirer into the functions and properties of animal tissues and organs has alwaystaken very careful account of the forms of those tissues and organs.

A more instructive subdivision of the science of animal division biology or zoology is one which shall correspond to the 'is f thought and mental pr ti Pistorical separate currents or thoug I preoccupation progress, Which have been historically manifested in western Europe in the gradual evolution of what is to-day the great river of zoological doctrine to which they have all been rendered contributory. Such a subdivision of zoology, whilst it enables us to trace the history of thought, corresponds very closely with the actual varieties of mental attitude exhibited at the present day by the devotees of zoological study, though it must be remembered that the gathering together of all the separate currents by Darwin is certain sooner or later to entail new developments and branchings of the stream.

Division into mor- phology and phy- siology inade- quate.

A sub-

803

We accordingly recognize the following five branches of zoological study : —

1, Morphograpky.—The work of the collector and systematist: exemplified by Linnzus and his pre- decessors, by Cuvier, Agassiz, Haeckel.

. Lronomics.—The lore of the farmer, gardener, sportsman, fancier, and field-naturalist, including thremmatology, or the science of breeding, and

the allied teleology, or science of organic adapta- tions: exemplified by the patriarch Jacob, the poet Virgil, Sprengel, Kirby and Spence, Wal- lace, and Darwin.

3. Zoo-Dynamvics, Zoo-Physics, Zoo-Chemistry.— The pursuit of the learned physician,—anatomy and physiology: exemplified by Harvey, Haller, Hunter, Johann Miiller.

- Plasmology.—The study of the ultimate corpuscles of living matter, their structure, development, and properties, by the aid of the microscope ; exem- plified by Malpighi, Hook, Schwann, Kowalewsky.

. Philosophical Zoology.—General conceptions with regard to the relations of living things (espe- cially animals) to the universe, to man, and to the Creator, their origin and significance: exem- plified in the writings of the philosophers of classical antiquity, and of Linnzus, Goethe, Lamarck, Cuvier, Lyell, H. Spencer, and Darwin.

It is true that it is impossible to assign the great names of the present century to a single one of the subdivisions of the science thus recognized. With men of an earlier date such special assignment is possible, and there would be no difficulty about thus separating the minor specialists of modern times. But the fact is that as we approach Darwin's epoch we find the separate streams more and more freely connected with one another by anastomosing branches ; and the men who have left their mark on the progress of science have been precisely those who have been instrumental in bringing about such confluence, and have distinguished themselves by the influence of their discoveries or generalizations upon several lines of work. At last, in Darwin we find a name which might appear in each of our subdivisions,—a zoologist to whose doctrine all are contributory, and by whose labours all are united and reformed.

We shall now briefly sketch the history of these streams of thought, premising that one has (so far as the last three centuries are concerned) but little start of another, and that sooner or later the influence of the pro- gress of one branch makes itself felt in the progress of another.

bo

ae

Cr

MorpPHOGRAPHY.

Under this head we include the systematic exploration Meaning and tabulation of the facts involved in the recognition of of mor- all the recent and extinct kinds of animals and their dis- Sa tribution in space and time. (1) The museum-makers of °°?" old days and their modern representatives the curators and describers of zoological collections, (2) early explorers and modern naturalist-travellers and writers on zoo- geography, and (3) collectors of fossils and paleontologists are the chief varieties of zoological workers coming under this head. Gradually since the time of Hunter and Cuvier anatomical study has associated itself with the more super- ficial morphography until to-day no one considers a study of animal form of any value which does not include inter- nal structure, histology, and embryology in its scope.

The real dawn of zoology after the legendary period of Edward the Middle Ages is connected with the name of an English- Wotton. man, Wotton, born at Oxford in 1492, who practised as a physician in London and died in 1555. He published a treatise De Differentiis Animalium at Paris in 1552, In

Aris- be found in the works of Aristotle himself. Aristotle did | until a late date that their full influence was brought to totle's not definitely and in tabular form propound a classification | bear upon systematic zoology by Georges Cuvier (1769- pn a of animals, but from a study of his treatises Historia | 1832). ™ Animalium, De Generatione Animalium, and De Partibus | The most prominent name between that of Gesner and John Animalium the following classification can be arrived at :— cen 4 a — – ee ot is oe . Ray. % c c = ohn KAY (g.v.). ough not so extensive as that o ae Sane : (=Mammals, | Linnzeus, his work is of the highest importance, and rendered including the Whale). the subsequent labours of the Swedish naturalist far easier : es es ee than they would otherwise have been. A chief merit of Coie UE ae aS : ; 1 hs Ray is to have limited the term "species" and to have eee Bes (2 Bake) a iain inaanameis assigned to it

the significance which it has until the Dar- B. ”Avaipa, bloodless animals (= Invertebrata). winian era borne, whereas previously it was loosely and : ate st ba ee a ee vaguely applied. He also made considerable use of ana- . saga l oe ee (=Arthropoda, ex. | tomical characters in his definitions of larger groups, and clusive of Crustacea). may thus be considered as the father of modern zoology. 4. ‘Osrpaxodépuara, shell-bearing Anema (=Echini, Gastro- | Associated with Ray in his work, and more especially poda, and Lamellibranchia.) occupied with the study of the Worms and Mollusca, was Wotton’s Wotton follows Aristotle in the division of animals into | Martin Lister (1638-1712), who is celebrated also as the modifica- the Enema and the Anema, and in fact in the recognition | author of the first geological map. tions. of all the groups above given, adding only one large group After Ray’s death in London in 1705 the progress of From to those recognized by Aristotle under the Anema, namely, | anatomical knowledge, and of the discovery and illustration Ray to the group of Zoophyta, in which Wotton includes the Holo- | of new forms of animal life from distant lands, continued Lim2®“s: thurie, Star-Fishes, Jfedusx, Sea-Anemones, and Sponges. | with increasing vigour. We note the names of Vallisnieri Wotton divides the viviparous quadrupeds into the many- (1661-1730) and Alexander Monro (1697-1767); the toed, double-hoofed, and single-hoofed. By the introduc- | travellers Tournefort (1656-1708) and Shaw (1692-1751) ; tion of a method of classification which was due to the | the collectors Rumphius (1637-1706) and Hans Sloane superficial Pliny,—viz., one depending, not on structure, but (1660-1753); the entomologist Réaumur (1683-1757); on the medium inhabited by an animal, whether earth, air, Lhwyd (17038) and Linck (1674-17 34), the students of Star- or water,—Wotton is led to associate Fishes and Whales | Fishes 3 Peyssonel (b. 1694), the investigator of Polyps as aquatic animals. But this is only a momentary lapse, | and the opponent of Marsigli and Réaumur, who held for he broadly distinguishes the two kinds. ‘_ | them to be plants; Woodward, the paleontologist (1665- Gesner. Conrad Gesner (1516-1565), who was a physician and 1722),—not to speak of others of less importance. held professorial chairs in various Swiss cities, is the most Two years after Ray’s death Carl Linnaus (q.v.) was Linnaeus. voluminous and instructive of these earliest writers on | born. Unlike Jacob Theodore Klein (1685-1759), whose systematic zoology, and was so highly esteemed that his | careful treatises on various

groups of plants and animals Ht astoria Animalium was republished a hundred years after | were published during the period between Ray and Linnzus, his death. His great work appeared in successive parts,— | the latter had his career marked out for him in a university, C.9e5 Viipara, Ovipara, Aves, Pisces, Serpentes et Scorpio,— | that of Upsala, where he was first professor of medicine and contains descriptions and illustrations of a large num- | and subsequently of natural history. His lectures formed ber of animal forms with reference to the lands inhabited | a new departure in the academic treatment of zoology and by them. Gesner's work, like that of John Johnstone | botany, which, in direct continuity from the Middle Ages, (6. 1603), who was of Scottish descent and studied at St | had hitherto been subjected to the traditions of the medical Andrews, and like that of Ulysses Aldrovandi of Bologna profession and regarded as mere branches of "materia (2. 1522), was essentially a compilation, more or less | medica." Linnzus taught zoology and botany as branches critical, of all such records, pictures, and relations concern- | of knowledge to be studied for their own intrinsic interest. ing beasts, birds, reptiles, fishes, and monsters as could be | His great work, the Systema Nature, ran through twelve gathered together by one reading in the great libraries | editions during his lifetime (Ist ed. 1735, 12th 1768). of Europe, travelling from city to city, and frequenting | Apart from his special discoveries in the anatomy of the company of those who either had themselves passed | plants and animals, and his descriptions of new species, the into distant lands or possessed the letters written and great merit of Linnzus was his introduction of a method eB the specimens brought home by adventurous | of enumeration and classification which may be said to have . ; created systematic zoology and botany in their present a ia ; a oe ap of parts of the New World next brought form, and establishes' od name for – as 4 great ists and 2 : a ry Cra ws eae of many novel forms organizer, the man who recognized a great practical micro- e, a er part of the 16th century | want in the use of language and supplied it. Linnzus scopists. and the beginning of the 17th that careful study by | adopted Ray's conception of species, but he made

many respects Wotton was simply an exponent of Aristotle, whose teaching, with various fanciful additions, constituted the real basis of zoological knowledge throughout the Middle Ages. It was Wotton's merit that he rejected the legendary and fantastic accretions, and returned to Aris- totle and the observation of nature. The most ready means of noting the progress of zoology during the 16th, 17th, and 18th centuries is to compare the classificatory con- ceptions of successive naturalists with those which are to

"specialists" of the structure and life-history of particular groups of animals was commenced which, directed at first to common and familiar kinds, was gradually extended until it formed a sufficient body of knowledge to serve as an anatomical basis for classification. This minuter study

had two origins, one in the researches of the medical anatomists, such as Fabricius (1537-1619), Severinus (1580-1656), Harvey (1578-1657), and Tyson (1649-1708), the other in the careful work of the entomologists and first microscopists, such as Malpighi (1628-1694), Swam-

merdam (1637-1680), and Hook (1635-1702). The com- mencement of anatomical investigations deserves notice here as influencing the general accuracy and minuteness with which zoological work was prosecuted, but it was not

species a practical reality by insisting that every species shall have a double Latin name,—the first half to be the name of the genus common to several species, and the second half to be the specific name. Previously to Linnzeus long many-worded names had been used, sometimes with

one additional adjective, sometimes with another, so that no true names were fixed and accepted. Linnzus by his binomial system made it possible

to write and speak with accuracy of any given species of plant or animal. He was, in fact, the Adam of zoological science. He proceeded

- further to introduce into his enumeration of animals and

Classifi cation of Linneus.

plants a series of groups, viz., genus, order, class, which he compared to the subdivisions of an army or the sub- divisions of a territory, the greater containing several of the less, as follows :—

Class, Order. Genus. Species. Variety.

Genus sum- Genus inter- Genus proxi- Species. Individuum. mum. medium. mum.

Provincia. Territorium. Parcecia. Pagus. Domicilium.

Legio. Cohors. Manipulus. Contubernium. Miles.

Linnzus himself recognized the purely subjective char- acter of his larger groups; for him species were, however, objective: "there are," he said, "just so many species as in the beginning the Infinite Being created." It was re- served for a philosophic zoologist of the 19th century (Agassiz, Essay on Classification, 1859) to maintain dog- matically that genus, order, and class were also objective facts capable of precise estimation and valuation. This climax was reached at the very moment when Darwin was publishing the Origin of Species (1859), by which universal opinion has been brought to the position that species, as well as genera, orders, and classes, are the subjective ex- pressions of a vast ramifying pedigree in which the only objective existences are individuals, the apparent species as well as higher groups being marked out, not by any distributive law, but by the purely non-significant opera- tion of human experience, which cannot transcend the results of death and decay.

The classification of Linnzeus (from Syst. Vat., 12th ed., 1766) should be compared with that of Aristotle. It is as follows,—the complete list of Linnean genera being here reproduced :—

Class I. MAMMALIA.

Order 1. Primates. Genera: Homo, Simia, Lemur, Vespertilio. 59) ae. Erla. Genera: Elephas, Trichecus, Bradypus, Myrme- cophaga, Manis, Dasypus. 3 Oe Here.

Genera: Phoca, Canis, Felis, Viverra, Mustela, Ursus, Didelphys, Talpa, Sorex, Erinaceus.

> 4. Glires. Genera: Hystrix, Lepus, Castor, Mus, Sciurus, Noctilio. +) Da Leora. Genera: Camelus, Moschus, Cervus, Capra, Ovis, Bos. i>, &. Bellu. » Genera: Equus, Hippopotamus, Sus, Rhinoceros. mw he Cebe.

Genera: Monodon, Balena, Physeter, Delphinus. Class II. AvEs. Order 1. Accipitres. Genera: Vultur, Falco, Strix, Lanius. 59) ee Pee.

Genera: (a) Trochilus, Certhia, Upupa, Buphaga, Sitta, Oriolus, Coracias, Gracula, Corvus, Para- disca; (b) Ramphastos, Trogon, Psittacus, Croto- phaga, Picus, Yunx, Cuculus, Bucco ; (c) Buceros, Alcedo, Mcrops, Todos.

5, 3 Anseres.

Genera : (a) Anas, Mergus, Phacthon, Plotus ; (b) Ehyncops, Diomedea, Alca, Procellaria, Pele- canus, Larus, Sterna, Colymbus.

» «4 Gralle.

Genera: (a) Phenicopterus, Platalea, Palamedea, Mycteria, Tantalus, Ardea, Recurvirostra, Scolopax, Tringa, Fulica, Parra, Rallus, Pso- phia, Cancroma ; (b) Hematopus, Charadrius, Otis, Struthio.

» 5. Galline.

Genera: Didus, Pavo, Meleagris, Crax, Phasianus,

Tetrao, Numida.

Order 6. Passeres.

Genera: (a) Loxia, Fringilla, Emberiza; (b) Caprimulgus, Hirundo, Pipra; (c) Turdus, Ampelis, Tanagra, Muscieapa; (d) Parus, Motacilla, Alauda, Sturnus, Columba.

Class III. AMPHTBIA. Order 1. Reptilia. Genera: Testudo, Draco, Lacerta, Rana. 3, 2 Serpentes.

Genera: Crotalus, Boa, Coluber, Anguis, Amphis-

bena, Cecilia. », & Nantes,

Genera: Petromyzon, Raja, Squalus, Chimera, Lophius, Acipenser, Cyclopterus, Balistes, Os- traeion, Tetrodon, Diodon, Centriscus, Syn- gnathus, Pegasus.

Class IV. Piscxs. Order 1. Apodes,

Genera: Murena, Gymnotus, Trichiurus, Anar- rhiehas, Ammodytes, Ophidium, Stromateus, Xiphias.

», 2. Jugulares.

Genera: Callionymus, Uranoscopus, Trachinus,

Gadus, Blennius. 3 8 Thoracic.

Genera: Cepola, LEcheneis, Coryphxna, Gobius, Cottus, Scorpena, Zeus, Plewronectes, Chetodon, Sparus, Labrus, Setwxna, Perca, Gasterosteus, Scomber, Mullus, Trigla.

3, 4. Abdominales.

Genera: Cobitis, Amia, Silurus, Zeuthis, Lori- caria, Salmo, Fistularia, Esox, Elops, Argen- tina, Atherina, Mugil, Mormyrus, Exocetus, Polynemus, Clupea, Cyprinus.

Class V. INsEcTA. Order 1. Coleoptera.

Genera: (a) Scarabeus, Lucanus, Dermestes, Hister, Byrrhus, Gyrinus, Attelabus, Curculio, Silpha, Coccinella; (b) Bruchus, Cassida, Ptinus, Chrysomela, Hispa, Meloe, Tenebrio, Lampyris, Mordella, Staphylinus ; (c) Cerambyx, Leptura, Cantharis, Elater, Cicindela, Buprestis, Dytiseus, Carabus, Necydalis, Forficula.

. Hemiptera.

Genera: Blatta, Mantis, Gryllus, Fulgora, Cicada, Notonecta, Nepa, Cimex, Aphis, Chermes, Coc- cus, Thrips.

. Lepidoptera. Genera: Papilio, Sphinx, Phalena. . Neuroptera.

Genera: Libellula, Ephemera, Myrmelecon, Phry-

ganea, Hemerobius, Panorpa, Raphidia. . Hymenoptera.

Genera: Cynips, Tenthredo, Sirex, Ichnewmon,

Sphex, Chrysis, Vespa, Apis, Formica, Mutilla.

», 6. Diptera. Genera: Cstrus, Tipula, Musca, Tabanus, Culex, Empis, Conops, Asilus, Bombylius, Hippo- bosca. » «@ Aptera.

Genera: (a) Pedibus sex; capite a thorace dis- ereto: Lepisma, Podura, Termes, Pedicu- lus, Pulex.

(2) Pedibus 8-14; capite thoraceque unitis: Acarus, Phalangium,

Genera: (a) Ore supero; basi se affigens: Aetinia, Ascidia.

(6) Ore antico; corpore pertuso laterali fora- minulo: Limazx, Aplysia, Doris, Tethis,

(c) Ore antico; corpore tentaculis antice cincto: Holothuria, Terebella.

(d) Ore antico; corpore brachiato: Triton, Sepia, Clio, Lernxa, Scyllea.

(e) Ore antico; corpore pedato: Aphrodita, Nereis.

(f) Ore infero centrali: Medusa, Asteria, Echinus.

From Linnzus to Cuvier.

La- marck's classifi- cation.

S06 ZOOL

Order 3. Testacea. Genera: (a) Multivalvia: Chiton, Lepas, Pholas. (6) Bivalvia (=Conchx): Mya, Solen, Tellina, Cardium, Mactra, Donax, Venus, Spon- dylus, Chama, Arca, Ostrea, Anomia, Mytilus, Pinna. (c) Univalvia spira regulari (= Cochlex): Argo- nauta, Nautilus, Conus, Cyprea, Bulla, Voluta, Buccinum, Strombus, Murex, Trochus, Turbo, Helix, Nerita, Haliotis. (zd) Univalvia absque spira regulari: Patella, Dentaliwm, Serpula, Tercdo, Sabella. :, 4 Lithophyta. Genera: Tubipora, Madrepora, Millcpora, Celle- ; pord. 5. Zoophyta. ; Genera: (a) Fixata: Isis, Gorgonia, Alcyonium, Spongia, Flustra, Tubularia, Corallina, Sertularia, Vorticella. (6) Locomotiva: Hydra, Pennatula, Tenia, Volvox, Furia, Chaos.

The characters of the six classes are thus given by Linnzeus :—

39

viviparis, Manvmalibus ; oviparis, Avibus.

pulmone arbitrario, Amphidiis ; branchiis externis, Piscibus. antennatis, Jnsectis ; tentaculatis, Vermibus.

Cor biloculare, biauritum ; Sanguine calido, rubro :

Cor uniloculare, uniauritum;} Sanguine frigido, rubro :

Cor uniloculare, inauritum ; Sanie frigida, albida :

Between Linnzus and Cuvier there are no very great names ; but under the stimulus given by the admirable method and system of Linnzeus observation and description of new forms from all parts of the world, both recent and fossil, accumulated. We can only cite the names of Charles

Bonnet (1720-1793), the entomologist, who described the reproduction of Aphis; Banks and Solander, who accom- panied Captain Cook on his first voyage (1768-177 ne Thomas Pennant (1726-1798), the describer of the English fauna ; Peter Simon Pallas (1741-1811), who specially ex- tended the knowledge of the Linnzan Vermes, and under the patronage of the empress Catherine explored Russia and Siberia ; De Geer (1720-1778), the entomologist ; Lyonnet (1707-1789), the author of the monograph of the anatomy of the caterpillar of Cossus ligniperdus ; Cavolini (1756-1810), the Neapolitan marine zoologist and forerunner of Della Chiaje (fi. 1828); O. F. Miiller (1730-1784), the describer of freshwater Oligochxta; Abraham Trembley (1700-1784), the student of Hydra; and Ledermiiller (1719- 1769), the inventor of the term Jnfusoria. The effect of the Linnzean system upon the general conceptions of zoolo- gists was no less marked than were its results in the way of stimulating the accumulation of accurately observed de- tails. The notion of a scala nature, which had since the days of classical antiquity been a part of the general philo- sophy of nature amongst those who occupied themselves with such conceptions, now took a more definite form in the minds of skilled zoologists. The species of Linnaeus were supposed to represent a series of steps in a scale of ascending complexity, and it was thought possible thus to arrange the animal kingdom in a single series,—the orders within the classes succeeding one another in regular grada- tion, and the classes succeeding one another in a similar rectilinear progression. LAMARCK (7.v.) represents most completely, both by his development theory (to be further mentioned below) and by his scheme of classification, the high-water mark of the popular but fallacious conception of a scala nature. His classification (1801 to 181 2) is as follows :—

1 The anatomical error in reference to the auricles of Reptiles and Batrachians on the part of Linneus is extremely interesting, since it shows to what an extent the most patent facts may escape the observa- tion of even the greatest observers, and what an amount of repeated dissection and unprejudiced attention has been hecessary before the structure of the commonest animals has become known.

Oo¢ Y

Invertebrata. –

1. Apathetic Animals Class I. INFUSORIA. Orders: Nuda, Appendiculata. Class II. Pouyrt.

Orders: Ciliati (Rotifera), Denudati (Hydroids), Va-

ginati (Anthozoa and Polyzoa), Natantes (Crinoids). Class III. RaDIarta. Orders: AMollia (Acalephe), Echinoderma (including Actiniz). Class TV. Tunrcara. Orders: Bothryllaria, Ascidia. Class V. VERMEs.

Orders: Molles (Tape-Worms and Flukes), Rigiduli (Nematoids), Hispiduli (Nais, &c.), Epizoariz (Lerneans, &c.).

2. Sensitive Animals. Class VI. INsEctTa (Hexapoda).

Orders: Aptera, Diptera, Hemiptera, Lepidoptera, Hymenoptera, Neuroptera, Orthoptera, Colcoptera.

Class VII. ARACHNIDA.

_ Orders: Antennato-Trachealia (=Thysanura and Myriapoda), Exantennato- Trachcalia, Exantennato- Branchialia.

Class VIII. Crusracra. Orders: Heterobranchia (Branchiopoda, Isopoda, Amphipoda, Stomapoda), Homobranchia (Decapoda).

Class IX. ANNELIDA.

Orders: Apoda, Antennata, Sedentaria. Class X. CIRRIPEDIA.

Orders: Sessilia, Pedunculata. Class XI. CoNcHIFERA.

Orders: Dimyaria, Monomyaria. Class XII. Mouiusca.

Orders: Pteropoda, Gasteropoda, Trachelipoda, Ce.

phalopoda, Hetcropoda. Vertebrata.

8. Intelligent Animals. Class XIII. Fisues. XIV. REPriuEs.

Class XV. Brrps. XVI. MamMa.s.

2? 3

The enumeration of orders above given will enable the reader to form some conception of the progress of know- ledge relating to the lower forms of life during the fifty years which intervened between Linnzus and Lamarck. The number of genera recognized by Lamarck is more than ten times as great as that recorded by Linneus.

We have mentioned Lamarck before his great contem- porary Cuvier because, in spite of his valuable philosophical doctrine of development, he was, as compared with Cuvier and estimated as a systematic zoologist, a mere enlargement and logical outcome of Linnzeus.

The distinctive merit of Cuvier (g.v.) is that he started Cuvier. a new view as to the relationships of animals, which he may be said in a large measure to have demonstrated as true by his own anatomical researches. He opposed the scala nature theory, and recognized four distinct and divergent branches or embranchemens, as he called them, in each of which he arranged a certain number of the Linnzan classes, or similar classes. The embranchemens were characterized each by a different type of anatomical structure. Cuvier thus laid the foundation of that branch- ing tree-like arrangement of the classes and orders of animals which we now recognize as being the necessary result of attempts to represent what is practically a genea- logical tree or pedigree. Apart from this, Cuvier was a keen-sighted and enthusiastic anatomist of great skill and industry. It is astonishing how many good observers it requires to dissect and draw and record over and over again the structure of an animal before an approximately correct account of it is obtained. Cuvier dissected many Molluses and other animals which had not previously been anatomized ; of others he gave more correct accounts than

had been given by earlier writers, Skilful as he was, his observations are very frequently erroneous. accuracy in work as well as great abundance

of production has only distinguished one amongst all the great names of zoology—that of Johann Miiller.

Great

It certainly did not

ZOO CO Gy

distinguish Cuvier. Another special distinction of Cuvier is his remarkable work in comparing extinct with recent organisms, his descriptions of the fossil Mammalia of the Paris basin, and his general application of the knowledge of recent animals to the reconstruction of extinct ones, as indicated by fragments only of their skeletons,

It was in 1812 that Cuvier communicated to the Academy of Sciences of Paris his views on the classification of animals. He says—

'Si l'on considére le régne animal d'aprés les principes que nous venons de poser, en se debarassant des préjugés établis sur les divisions ancieunement admises, en n'ayant égard qu' & lorganisa- tion et & la nature des animaux, et non pas A leur grandeur, 4 leur utilité, au plus ou moins de connaissance que nous en avons, ni + toutes les autres circonstances accessoires, on trouvera qu'il existe quatre formes principales, quatre plans généraux, si l'on peut s'ex- primer ainsi, d'aprés lesquels tous les animaux semblent avoir été modelés et dont les divisions ultérieures, de quelque titre que les naturalistes les aient décorées, ne sont que des modifications assez légéres, fondées sur le développement, on l'addition de quelques parties qui ne changent rien & l'essence du plan."

His classification as finally elaborated in Le Régne Animal (Paris, 1829) is as follows :—

First Branch. Animalia Vertebrata. Class I. MAMMALIA.

Orders: Bimana, Quadrumana, Carnivora, Marsupialia,

Rodentia, Edentata, Pachydermata, Ruminantia, Cetacea. Class II. Brrps. Orders: Accipitres, Passercs, Scansorces, Galling, Gralle, Palmipedes. Class III. Reprint. Orders: Chelonia, Sauria, Ophidia, Batrachia. Class IV. FisHEs.

Orders: (a) Acanthopterygii, Abdominalcs, Subbrachii, Apodes, Lophobranchii, Plectognathi ; (b) Stwriones, Sel- achit, Cyclostomi.

Second Branch. Animalia Mollusca. Class I. CEPHALOPODA. Class II. Przropopa. Class III]. Gasrropopa.

Orders: Pulmonata, Nudibranchia, Inferobranchia, Tectt- branchia, Heteropoda, Pectinibranchia, Tubulibranchia, Scutibranchia, Cyclobranchia.

Class IV. ACEPHALA. Orders: Testacea, Tunicata. Class V. BRacH1opoDa. Class VI. CrkRHOPODA. Third Branch. Animalia Articulata. Class I. ANNELIDES. Orders: Tubicole, Dorsibranchix, Abranchiz. Class II. CrusTacka.

Orders: (a) Malacostrata: Decapoda, Stomapoda, Am- phipoda, Lxemodipoda, Isopoda; (b) Entomostraca: Branchiopoda, Pectlopoda, Trilobitxz.

Class II]. ARACHNIDEs. Orders: Pulmonariw, Trachearіz. Class IV. INsxEcrs.

Orders: Myriapoda, Thysanura, Parasita, Suctoria, Coleo- ptcra, Orthoptera, Hemiptera, Neuroptera, Hymenoptera, Lepidoptera, Rhipiptcra, Diptera.

Fourth Branch. Animalia Radiata. Class I. EcHINODERMS. Orders : Pediccllata, Apoda. Class II. INTESTINAL Worms. Orders: Nematoidea, Parenchymatosa. Class III. ACALEPHA.

Orders: Simplices, Hydrostaticz.

Class TV. Potypi (including the Celentcra of later authori- ties and the Polyzoa).

Orders: Carnost, Gelatinosi, Polypiarit.

Class V. INFUSORIA.

Orders: Lotifera, Homogenea (this includes the Protozoa of recent writers and some Protophyta).

The leading idea of Cuvier, his four embranchemens, was confirmed by the Russo-German naturalist Von Von Baer. Baer (1792-1876), who adopted Cuvier's divisions, speak- ing of them as the peripheric, the longitudinal, the mass- ive, and the vertebrate types of structure. Von Baer, however, has another place in the history of zoology, being the first and most striking figure in the introduc- tion of embryology into the consideration of the relations

of animals to one another.

Cuvier's classifi- cation.

807

*Cuvier may be regarded as the zoologist by whom The mor- anatomy was made the one important guide to the under- Pholo- standing of the relations of animals. But it should be &** noted that the belief, dating from Malpighi (1670), that there is a relationship to be discovered, and not merely a haphazard congregation of varieties of structure to be classified, had previously gained ground. Cuvier was familiar with the speculations of the "Natur-philosophen," and with the doctrine of transmutation and filiation by which they endeavoured to account for existing animal forms. The noble aim of F. W. J. Schelling, "das ganze System der Naturlehre von dem Gesetze der Schwere bis zu den Bildungstrieben der Organismus als ein organisches Ganze darzustellen," which has ultimately been realized through Darwin, was a general one among the scientific men of the year 1800. Lamarck accepted the develop- ment theory fully, and pushed his speculations far beyond the realm of*

fact. The more cautious Cuvier adopted a view of the relationships of animals which, whilst denying genetic connexion as the explanation, recognized an essen- tial identity of structure throughout whole groups of ani- mals. This identity was held to be due to an ultimate law of nature or the Creator's plan. The tracing out of this identity in diversity, whether regarded as evidence of blood-relationship or as a remarkable display of skill on the part of the Creator in varying the details whilst re- taining the essential, became at this period a special pur- suit, to which Goethe, the poet, who himself contributed importantly to it, gave the name "morphology." (C. F. Wolff, Goethe, and Oken share the credit of having initi- ated these views, in regard especially to the structure of flowering plants and the Vertebrate skull. Cuvier's doctrine of four plans of structure was essentially a morphological one, and so was the single-scale doctrine of Buffon and Lamarck, to which it was opposed. Cuvier's morphologi- cal doctrine received its fullest development in the prin- ciple of the "correlation of parts," which he applied to paleontological investigation, namely, that every animal is a definite whole, and that no part can be varied without entailing correlated and law-abiding variations in other parts, so that from a fragment it should be possible, had we a full knowledge of the laws of animal structure or morphology, to reconstruct the whole. Here Cuvier was imperfectly formulating, without recognizing the real phy- sical basis of the phenomena, the results of the laws of heredity, which were subsequently investigated and brought to bear on the problems of animal structure by Darwin.

Richard Owen! may be regarded as the foremost of R. Owen. Cuvier's disciples. Owen not only occupied himself with the dissection of rare animals, such as the Pearly Nautilus, Lingula, Limulus, Protopterus, Apteryx, &c., and with the description and reconstruction of extinct Reptiles, Birds, and Mammals,—following the Cuvierian tradition,—but gave precision and currency to the morphological doctrines which had taken their rise in the beginning of the cen- tury by the introduction of two terms, "homology" and Homo- "analogy," which were defined so as to express two logy and different kinds of agreement in animal structures, which, "2!°8Y- owing to the want of such "counters of thought," had been hitherto continually confused. Analogous structures in any two animals compared were by Owen defined as structures performing similar*

functions, but not necessarily derived from the modification of one and the same part in the "plan" or "archetype" according to which the two animals compared were supposed to be constructed. Homologous structures were such as, though greatly dif- fering in appearance and detail from one another, and though performing widely different functions, yet were

- *Born in 1804 in Lancaster; conservator of the Hunterian Museum, London, 1830-56; superintendent Nat. Hist. Brit. Mus., 1856-84.*

capable of being shown by adequate study of a series of intermediate fornis to be derived from one and the same part or organ of the "plan-form" or "archetype." It is not easy to exaggerate the service rendered by Owen to the study of zoology by the introduction of this appar- ently small piece of verbal mechanism; it takes place with the classificatory terms of Linnzus. And, though the conceptions of "archetypal morphology," to which it had reference, are now abandoned in favour of a genetic mor- phology, yet we should remember, in estimating the value of this and of other speculations which have given place to new views in the history of science, the words of the great reformer himself. " Erroneous observations are in the highest degree injurious to the progress of science, since they often persist for a long time. But erroneous theories, when they are supported by facts, do little harm, since every one takes a healthy pleasure in proving their falsity" (Darwin). Owen's definition of analogous struc- tures holds good at the present day. His homologous structures are now spoken of as " homogenetic " structures, the idea of community of representation in an archetype giving place to community of derivation from a single representative structure present in a common ancestor. Darwinian morphology has further rendered necessary the introduction of the terms '"homoplasy" and "homoplastic"?! to express that close agreement in form which may be at- tained in the course of evolutional changes by organs or parts in two animals which have been subjected to similar moulding conditions of the environment, but have no genetic community of origin, to account for their close similarity in form and structure.

Fi OCOM2O2Ge

greatness can only be estimated by a consideration of the fact that he was a great teacher not only of human and comparative anatomy and zoology but also of physiology, and that nearly all the most distinguished German zoolo- gists and physiologists of the period 1850 to 1870 were his pupils and acknowledged his leadership. The most striking feature about Johann Miiller's work, apart from the com- prehensiveness of his point of view, in which he added to the anatomical and morphological ideas of Cuvier a consideration of physiology, embryology, and microscopic structure, was the extraordinary accuracy, facility, and completeness of his recorded observations. He could do more with a single specimen of a rare animal (e.g., in his memoir on Amphioxus, Berlin, 1844) in the way of making out its complete structure than the ablest of his contemporaries or successors could do with a plethora. His power of rapid and exhaustive observation and of accurate pictorial reproduction was phenomenal. His most important memoirs, besides that just mentioned, are those on the anatomy and classification of Fishes, on the Ceecilians, and on the developmental history of the Echinoderms.

A name which is apt to be forgotten in the period J. V. between Cuvier and Darwin, because its possessor occupied Thomp-

an isolated position in England and was not borne up by any great school or university, is that of John Vaughan Thompson, who was an army surgeon, and when past the age of forty, being district medical inspector at Cork (1830), took to the study of marine Jnvertebrata by the aid of the microscope. Thompson made three great discoveries, which seem to have fallen in his way in the most natural and simple manner, but must be regarded really as the

Owen's The classification adopted by Owen in his lectures | outcome of extraordinary genius. He showed that the seta (1855) does not adequately illustrate the progress of zoologi- | organisms like Flustra are not hydroid Polyps, but of a more cation.

cal knowledge between Cuvier's death and that date, but, such as it is, it is worth citing here. Province: Vertebrata (Myelencephala, Owen). Classes:

MAMMALIA, AVES, REPTILIA, PISCEs. Province; Articulata.

Classes: ARACHNIDA, INsEcTA (including Sub-Classes Myria- poda, Hexapoda), CRusTACEA (including Sub-Classes Hnto- mostraca, Malacostraca), Epizoa (Epizootie Crustacea), AN- NELLATA (Chetopods and Leeches), CIRRIPEDIA.

Province: Mollusca.

Classes: CEPHALOPODA, GASTEROPODA, PTEROPODA, LAMELLI-

BRANCHIATA, BRACHIOPODA, TUNICATA. Province: Radiata. Sub-Province: Radiaria. Classes: ECHINODERMATA, Bryozoa, ANTHOZOA, ACA- LEPH#, Hyprozoa. Sub-Province : Entozoa. Classes : C@&LELMINTHA, STERELMINTHA. Sub-Province: Infusoria. Classes: RoTIFERA, PoLyGasrrRia (the Protozoa of recent authors).

The real centre of progress of systematic zoology was no longer in France nor with the disciples of Cuvier in England, but after his death moved to Germany. The wave of morphological speculation, with its outcome of new systems and new theories of classification, which were as numerous as the professors of zoological science,2 was necessarily succeeded in the true progress of the science by a period of minuter study in which the microscope, the discovery of embryological histories, and the all-important

complex structure resembling Molluscs, and he gave them the name Polyzoa. He discovered the Pentacrinus europzus, and showed that it was the larval form of the Feather-Star Antedon (Comatula). He upset Cuvier's retention of the Cirripedes among Mollusca, and his subsequent treatment of them as an isolated class, by showing that they begin life as free-swimming Crustacea identical with the young forms of other Crustacea. Vaughan Thompson is a type of the marine zoologists, such as Dalyell, Michael Sars, P. J. Van Beneden, Claparede, and Allman, who during the present century have approached the study of the lower marine organisms in the same spirit as that in which Trembley and Schaffer in

the last century, and Swammer- dam in the 17th, gave themselves to the study of the minute freshwater forms of animal life.

It is impossible to enumerate or to give due considera- tion to all the names in the army of anatomical and embryo- logical students of the middle third of this century whose labours bore fruit in the modification of zoological theories and in the building up of a true classification of animals. Their results are best summed up in the three schemes of classification which follow below—those of Rudolph Leuckart (b. 1823), Henri Milne-Edwards (1800-1884), and T. H. Huxley (b. 1825), all of whom individually contributed very greatly by their special discoveries and researches to the increase of exact knowledge.

Contemporaneous with these were various schemes of Single-classification which were based, not on a consideration of fact the entire structure of each animal, but on the variations °¥5™S

cell-theory came to swell the stream of exact knowledge. We have already mentioned Von Baer in this connexion, and given a passing reference to Johann MULLER (q.v.), the

Johann

Miiller. of classi-

greatest of all investigators of animal structure in the pre- sent century. Miiller (1801-1858) was in Germany the suc- cessor of Rathke (1793-1860) and of Meckel (1781-1833) as the leader of anatomical investigation; but his true Se eh eee

1 See Lankester, "On the Use of the Term Homology in Modern Zoology and the Distinction between Homogenetic and Homoplastic Agreements," Ann. and Mag. Nat. Hist., 1870.

- *See Agassiz, Lssay on Classification, 1859, for an account of them.*

of a single organ, or on the really non-significant fact of the structure of the egg. All such single-fact systems have. proved to be useless and in fact

departures from the true line of growth of the zoological system which was shaping itself year by year—unknown to those who so shaped it— as a genealogical tree. They were attempts to arrive at a true knowledge of the relationships of animals by "royal roads" ; their followers were landed in barren wastes.

Leuck- art's classifi- cation.

Milne-

ZO@G LOG YF 809

R. Leuckart's! classification is as follows :—

Type 1. Coelenterata. Class I. PoLypt. Orders: Anthozoa and Cylicozoa. ,, II. ACALEPHA. Orders : Discophore and Ctenophore. Type 2. Echinodermata. Class I. PELMATOZOA. Orders: Cystidea and Crinoidca, » Il. Acrinozoa. Orders: Echinida and Astcrida. ;, III. ScyropERMATA. Orders: Holothuri# and Sipunculida. Type 3. Vermes. Class I. ANENTER ATI. Orders : Cestodes and Acanthocephali.

», LI. APopEs. Orders: Nemertini, Turbellarii, Trematodes, and Hirudinei.

>> UL. Cina Orders: Bryozoa and Rotifera. », LY. ANNELIDES. Orders: Nematodes, Lumbricini, and Branchiati. Type 4. Arthropoda. Class I. CRUSTACEA. Orders: Entomostraca and Malacostraca.

», LL. Insecta. Orders: Afyriapoda, Arachnida (Acera, Latr.), aud Hexapoda.

Type 5. Mollusca. Class I. TunicaTa. Orders: Ascidiz and Salpe. », LI. ACEPHALA. Orders: Lamellibranchiata and Brachiopoda. >, LII. GASTEROPODA. Orders: Heterobranchia, Dermatobranchia, Hetero-poda, Ctenobranchia,Pulmonata,and Cyclobranchia. », LV. CEPHALOPODA. Type 6. Vertebrata. (Not specially dealt with.)

The classification given by Henri Milne-Edwards? is as

Edwards's follows —

classifi- cation.

Branch I. Osteozoaria or Vertebrata. Sub-Branch 1. Allantoidians. Class I. MAMMALIA. Orders: (a) Monodelphia: Bimana, Quadru- mana, Cheiroptera, Inscctivora, Rodentia, Lidentata, Carnivora, Anphibia, Pachyder- mata, Ruminantia, Cetacea ; (b) Didelphia : Marsupialia, Monotremata. 7 Li Binns: Orders: Rapaces, Passcres, Scansores, Galline, Grallz, Palmipedes. », LII. REpriLEs. Orders: Chelonia, Sauria, Ophidia. Sub-Branch 2. Anallantoidians. Class I. BATRACHIANS. Orders: Anura, Urodela, Perennibranchia, Ceciliz. », II. FisHEs. Section 1. Osset. Orders: Acanthopterygii, Abdominales, Sub- brachti, A podes, Lophobranchit, Plectognathi. Section 2. Chondropterygit. Orders: Stwriones, Sclachii, Cyclostomi. Branch II]. Kntomozoa or Annelata. Sub-Branch 1. Arthropoda. Class I. INSECTA.

Orders: Coleoptera, Orthoptera, Neuroptera, Hymenoptera, Lepidoptera, Hemiptera, Di- ptera, Rhipiptera, Anoplewra, Thysanura.

Il. Mypiapopa. Orders: Chilognatha and Chilopoda. », LI], ARACHNIDS. Orders: Pulmonaria and Trachcaria.

39

1 Die Morphologie und die Verwandtschaftsverhdlinisse der wirbel- losen Thiere, Brunswick, 1848. The Protozoa, recognized as a primary group by Siebold and Stannius (Lehrbueh d. vergleich. Anatomie, Berlin, 1845), are not included at all by Leuckart in his scheme. The name Protozoa was first used by Goldfuss (1809) to include micro- scopic animals and also the Polyps and Medusx, and Siebold and Stan- nius first used it in its modern signification as comprising and limited to the Infusoria and Rhizopoda.

2 Cours Elémentaire d' Histoire Naturelle, Paris, 1855.

Class IV. CRUSTACEA. Section 1. Podophthalnvia. Orders: Decapoda and Stomopoda. Section 2. Edriophthalni. Orders: Amphipoda,

Lemodipoda, and Isopoda. Section 3. Branchiopoda. Orders: Ostracoda, Phyllopoda,and Trilo- bitz. Section 4. Entomostraca. Orders: Copepoda, Cladocera, Siphono- stoma, Lernwida, Cirripedia. Section 5. Xiphosura. (The orders of the classes which follow are not given in the work quoted.) Sub-Branch 2. Vermes. Class I. ANNELIDs. Class IV. CESTOIDEA. », IL HELMINTHS. » V. ROTATORIA. », 111. TURBELLARIA.

Branch III. Malacozoaria or Mollusca. Sub-Branch 1. Mollusca proper.

Class I. CEPHALOPODA. Class III. GASTEROPODA. », lI. PTEROPODA. », I[V. ACEPHALA. Sub-Branch 2. Molluscoidea. Class I. TuNICATA. Class II. Bryozoa.

Branch IV. Zoophytes. Sub-Branch 1. Radiaria.

Class I. EcuinopERMS. Class III. CoRALLARIA or », II. ACALEPHS. PoLyPl. Sub-Branch 2. Sarcodaria. Class I. InFusorIA. Class II. SPONGIARIA.

In England T. H. Huxley adopted in his lectures (1869) Huxley's a classification which was in many respects similar to both classifi- of the foregoing, but embodied improvements of his own. °°". It is as follows :- —

Sub-Kingdom I. Protozoa. Classes: RH1ZOPODA, GREGARINIDA, RADIOLARIA, SPONGIDA. Sub-Kingdom II. Infusoria. Sub-Kingdom III. Ceelenterata. Classes: Hyprozoa, ACTINOZOA. Sub-Kingdom IV. Annuloida. Classes: ScoLECIDA, ECHINODERMATA. Sub-Kingdom V. Annulosa. Classes: CrusTAcEA, ARACIINIDA, Myri1apopa, INsEcTA, CHa- TOGNATHA, ANNELIDA. Sub-Kingdom VI. Molluscoida. Classes: Potyzoa, BRACHIOPODA, TUNICATA. Sub-Kingdom VII. Mollusca. Classes: LAMELLIBRANCHIATA, BRANCHIOGASTROPODA, PULMO- GASTROPODA, PTEROPODA, CEPHALOPODA. Sub-Kingdom VIII. Vertebrata. Classes: Piscrs, AMPHI1BIA, Repritia, AVES, MAMMALIA.

We now arrive at the period when the doctrine of organic evolution was established by Darwin, and when naturalists, being convinced by him as

they had not been by the transmutationists of fifty years' earlier date, were com- pelled to take an entirely new view of the significance of all attempts at framing a "natural" classification.

Many zoologists—prominent among them in Great Classifi- Britain being Huxley—had been repelled by the airy fancies cations

and assumptions of the "philosophical" morphologists. ee

'The efforts of the best minds in zoology had been directed jure,

for thirty years or more to ascertaining with increased accuracy and minuteness the structure, microscopic and gross, of all possible forms of animals, and not only of the adult structure but of the steps of development of that structure in the growth of each kind of organism from the egg to maturity. Putting aside fantastic theories, these observers endeavoured to give in their classifications a strictly objective representation of the facts of animal structure and of the structural relationships of animals to one another capable of demonstration. The groups within groups adopted for this purpose were necessarily wanting in symmetry: the whole system presented a strangely irregular character. From time to time efforts were made by those who believed that the Creator must have followed a symmetrical system in his production of

animals to force one or other artificial, neatly balanced XXIV. — 102

L. Agas- siz.

S10

scheme of classification upon the zoological world. The last of these was that of Louis Agassiz (Hssay on Classvji- cation, 1859), who, whilst surveying all previous classifica- tions, propounded a scheme of his own, in which, as well as in the criticisms he applies to other systems, the leading notion is that sub-kingdoms, classes, orders, and families have a real existence, and that it is possible to ascertain and distinguish characters which are of class value, others which are only of ordinal value, and so on, so that the classes of one sub-kingdom should on paper,

and in nature actually do, correspond in relative value to those of another sub-kingdom, and the orders of any one class similarly should be so taken as to be of equal value with those of another class, and have been actually so created.

26 GO iro Gc Y

adult structure. Von Baer had gained unanimous support for his dictum, "Die Entwickelungsgeschichte ist der wahre Lichttriger fiir Untersuchungen tber organische Korper." Thus J. Miiller's studies on the larval forms of Echinoderms and the discoveries of Vaughan Thompson were appreciated. But it was only after Darwin that the cell-theory of Schwann was extended to the embryology of the animal kingdom generally, and that the knowledge of the development of an animal became a knowledge of the way in which the millions of cells of which its body is composed take their origin by fission from a smaller num- ber of cells, and these at last from the single egg-cell. Kolliker (Development of Cephalopods, 1844), Remak (Development of the Frog, 1850), and others had laid the

Influence The whole position was changed by the acquiescence, | foundations of this knowledge in isolated examples; but of Dar- which became universal, in the doctrine of Darwin. That | it was Kowalewsky, by his accounts of the development of 'octrine COCtrine took some few years to produce its effect, but it | Ascidians and of Amphioxus (1866), who really made on taxo. became evident at once to those who accepted Darwinism | zoologists see that a strict and complete cellular embryo-

nomy. lectors and anatomists, morphologists, philosophers, and | the comprehension of their relationships as at the beginning embryologists had been so long striving was nothing more | of the century the coarse anatomy had been shown to be by nor less than a genealogical tree, with breaks and gaps of | Cuvier. Kowalewsky's work appeared between the dates various extent inits record. The facts of the relationships | of the Generelle Morphologie and the Schépfungsgeschichte. of animals to one another, which had been treated as the | Haeckel himself, with his pupil Miklucho-Maclay, had in outcome of an inscrutable law by most zoologists and | the meantime made studies on the growth from the egg

*glibly explained by the transcendental morphologists, were | of Sponges, —studies which resulted in the complete separa- amongst the most powerful arguments in support of | tion of the unicellular or equicellular Protozoa from the Darwin's theory, since they, together with all other vital | Sponges, hitherto confounded with them. It is this in- phenomena, received a sufficient explanation through it. | troduction of the consideration of cell-structure and cell- It is to be noted that, whilst the zoological system took | development which, subsequently to the establishment of the form of a genealogical tree, with main stem and numer- | Darwinism, has most profoundly modified the views of ous diverging branches, the actual form of that tree, its | systematists, and led in conjunction with the genealogical limitation to a certain number of branches corresponding | doctrine to the greatest activity in research,—an activity to a limited number of divergencies in structure, came to | which culminated in the work (1873-82) of F. M. Balfour, be regarded as the necessary consequence of the operation | and produced the profoundest modifications in classification. of the physico-chemical laws of the 'universe, and it was Haeckel's earlier pedigree is worth comparing with his Haeckel's recognized that the ultimate explanation of that limitation | second effort, as showing the beginning of the influence second is to be found only in the constitution of matter itself. just noted. The second pedigree is as follows :— arrange- Haeckel. The first naturalist to put into practical form the conse- Phvih Clad Cl = quences of the new theory, in so far as it affected zoological i (we ca classification, was Ernst Haeckel of Jena (b. 1834), who | OVULARIA. | Gregan in 1866, seven years after the publication of Darwin's | Protozoa. 4 Infusoria. Origin of Species, published his suggestive Generelle Morpho- | Basruzarua. (ell aber logie. Haeckel introduced into classification a number of See — ee terms intended to indicate the branchings of a genealogical Coraline tree. The whole "system" or scheme of classification oy ACALEPHA, | Herc, was termed a genealogical tree (Stammbawm) ; the main Ctenophora. branches were termed '" phyla," their branchings " sub- ele See eres: phyla"; the great branches of the sub-phyla were termed ol **cladi," and the "cladi" divided into " classes," these into | y, – i Twnicata. sub-classes, these into legions, legions into orders, orders oe C&LOMATI. Ehynchoceela. into sub-orders, sub-orders into tribes, tribes into families | ee families into genera, genera into species. Additional { iomelide*

branchings could be indicated by similar terms where neces- Spirobranchia. sary. There was no attempt in Haeckel's use of these Mollusea ae Lamellibranchia. terms to make them exactly or more than approximately EUCEPHALA. — equal in significance; such attempts were clearly futile pina wa and unimportant where the purpose was the exhibition of : Compe aa ee. lines of descent, and where no natural equality of groups Bokiandems., Dp Echinida. was to be expected ex hypothesi. Haeckel's classification of —s eg 1866 was naturally enough only a first attempt. In the — Heats edition of the Watiirliche Schépfungsgeschichte published | 4tTthropoda. TRACHEATA. ae in 1868, he made a great advance in his genealogical classi- Insecta. fication, since he now introduced the results of the extra- (AcRANIA. Leptocardia. ordinary activity in the study of embryology which followed oo Patina al on the publication of the Origin of Species. oo Cellular The pre-Darwinian systematists since the time of Von | Vertebrata. a fe: ee Baer had attached very great importance to embryological Amphibia. SY facts, holding that the stages in an animal's development Reptilia. were often more significant of its true affinities than its lb meibiins

that the natural classification of animals, after which col-

logy of animals was as necessary and feasible a factor in

ZOOLOG ¥ 811

Dendri- _ In representing pictorially the groups of the animal king- | the series of forms which occur in individual development, FS in dom as the branches of a tree, it becomes obvious that a | (6) the series of existing forms from lower to higher, and tion of @8tinction may be drawn, not merely between the indivi- | (c) the series of forms which succeed one another in the animal dual main branches, but further as to the level at which | strata of the earth's crust, whilst an explanation of this

kingdom. they are given off from the main stem, so that one branch | parallelism was either not attempted, or was illusively

or set of branches may be marked off as belonging to an earlier or lower level than another set of branches; and the same plan may be adopted

with regard to the clades, classes, and smaller branches. The term "grade" was introduced by Lankester! to indicate this giving off of branches at a higher or lower, 7.¢., a later or earlier, level of a main stem. The mechanism for the statement of the genealogical relationships of the groups of the animal kingdom was thus completed. Renewed study of every group was the result of the acceptance of the genealogical idea and of the recognition of the importance of cellular embryology. On the one hand, the true method of arriving at a knowledge of the genealogical tree was recognized as lying chiefly in attacking the problem of the genealogical relationships of the smallest twigs of the tree, and pro- ceeding from them to the larger branches. Special studies of small families or orders of animals with this object in view were taken in hand by many zoologists. On the other hand, a survey of the facts of cellular embryology which were accumulated: in regard to a variety of classes within a few years of Kowalewsky's work led to a genera- lization, independently arrived at by Haeckel and Lankester, to the effect that a lower grade of animals may be dis- tinguished, the Protozoa or Plastidozoa, which consist either of single cells or colonies of equiformal cells, and a higher grade, the Metazoa or Enterozoa, in which the egg-cell by "cell division" gives rise to two layers of cells, the endoderm and the ectoderm, surrounding a primitive diges- tive chamber, the archenteron. Of these latter, two grades were further distinguished by Lankester,—those which re- main possessed of a single archenteric cavity and of two primary cell-layers (the Calentera or Dzploblastica), and those which by nipping off the archenteron give rise to two cavities, the coelom or body-cavity and the metenteron or gut (Celomata or Triploblastica). To the primitive two-cell-layered form, the hypothetical ancestor of all Metazoa or Enterozoa, Haeckel gave the name Gastrza; the embryonic form which represents in the individual growth from the egg this ancestral condition he called a "gastrula." The term "diblastula" has more recently been adopted in England for the gastrula of Haeckel. The tracing of the exact mode of development, cell by cell, of the diblas- tula, the ccelom, and the various tissues of examples of all classes of animals has been pursued during the last twenty years with immense activity and increasing instrumental facilities, and is still in progress.

Two names in connexion with post-Darwinian taxonomy and the ideas connected with it require brief mention here. Fritz Miiller, by his studies on Crustacea (Fiir Darwin, 1864), showed the way in which genealogical theory may be applied to the minute study of a limited group. He is also responsible for the formulation of an important prin- ciple, called by Haeckel "' the biogenetic fundamental law," viz., that an animal in its growth from the egg to the adult condition tends to pass through a series of stages which are recapitulative of the stages through which its ancestry has passed in the historical development of the species from a primitive form ; or, more shortly, that the development of the individual (ontogeny) is an epitome of the development of the race (phylogeny). Pre-Darwinian zoologists had been aware of the class of facts thus inter- preted by Fritz Miller, but the authoritative view on the subject had been that there is a parallelism between (a)

1 " Notes on Embryology and Classification," in Quart. Journ. Micr.

Sci., 1877.

offered in the shape of a doctrine of harmony of plan in creation. It was the application of Fritz Miiller's law of recapitulation which gave the chief stimulus to recent embryological investigations ; and, though it is now recog- nized that "recapitulation" is vastly and bewilderingly modified by special adaptations in every case, yet the principle has served, and still serves, as a guide of great value.

Another important factor in the present condition of Dohrn's zoological knowledge as represented by classification is the doctrine

doctrine of degeneration propounded by Anton Dohrn. Lamarck believed in a single progressive series of forms, whilst Cuvier introduced the conception of branches. The first post-Darwinian systematists naturally and without re- flexion accepted the idea that existing simpler forms repre- sent stages in the gradual progress of development,—are in fact survivors from past ages which have retained the exact grade of development which their ancestors had reached in past ages. The assumption made was that (with the rare exception of parasites) all the change of structure through which the successive generations of animals

have passed has been one of progressive elaboration. It is Dohrn's merit to have pointed out} that this assumption is not warranted, and that degeneration or progressive simplification of structure may have, and in many lines certainly has, taken place, as well as progressive elaboration

and continuous maintenance of the status guo. The intro- duction of this conception ¢

*necessarily has had a & 3 9 mostimportanteffect – 3 s **

*in the attemptto,, % * & eo , unravel the gen- _% * * " ealogical affini-*,, ae ties of animals. It "e as*

renders the task a more complicated one ; at the same time it removes some serious difficulties "-Srss & CELOMAatTs and throws a flood of ., és light on every group of i" * the animal kingdom. x*

*One result of the in- ra troduction of the new conceptions dating from * oN oe ATrRoson Darwin has been a healthy reaction from that attitude of mind which led to the re- garding of the classes and orders recognized by authoritative zoologists as sacred institutions which were beyond the criticism of ordinary men. That state of mind was due to the fact that the groupings so recognized did not profess to be simply the result of scientific reasoning, but were necessarily regarded as the expressions of the "insight" of some more or less gifted persons into a plan or system which had been arbi- trarily chosen by the Creator. Consequently there was a tinge of theological dogmatism about the whole matter. To deny the Linnean, or later the Cuvierian, classes was very much like denying the Mosaic cosmogony. At the present time systematic zoology is entirely free from any such prejudices, and the Linnzan taint which is apparent*

1 Ursprung der Wirbelthiere, Leipsic, 1875 ; and Lankester, Degen- eration, London, 1880.

Pet errs

Grade L PROTOZOA Genealogical tree of animal kingdom.

even in Haeckel and Gegenbaur may be considered as finally expunged. Classifi- We give below the classification of Ray Lankester as cation of an example of the most recent genealogical classification. Ray Lan- Tt ig represented by the above genealogical tree and the Kester. tabular statement which follows. The chief points in this classification are the inclusion of Balanoglossus and the Tunicata in the phylum Vertebrata, the association of the Rotifera and the Chetopoda with the Arthropoda in the phylum Appendiculata, the inclusion of Limulus and the Eurypterina in the class Arachnida, and the total aban- doning of the indefinite and indefensible group of "Vermes."

Grade A. PLASTIDOZOA (PROTOZOA).

Grade a. GYMNOMYXA. Class I. PROTEOMORPHA (no orders recognized). ,, LI. Mycrrozoa. Orders.—1. Sorophora. 2. Endosporea. 3. Exosporea. », LII. Logosa. Orders.—1. Nuda. 2. Testacea. », 1V. LABYRINTHULIDEA (no orders). » VY. HELIOzOA. Orders.—1. Aphrothoraca. Chalarothoraca. }, VI. RETICULARIA. Sub-Class a. Lmperforata. Orders.—1. Gromiidca. lidea. 4. Lituwolidca. Sub-Class 0. Perforata. Orders.—1. Textularidca. 2. Chilostomellidea. 3. Lagenidea. 4. Globigerinidea. 5. Rotalidca. 6. Nunemulinidea. >, VII. RADIOLARIA. Sub-Class a. Stlicoskeleta. Orders.—1. Peripylwa. 2. Monopylza. 8. Phxodaria. Sub-Class 6. Acanthinoskelcta. Order.—1. Acanthometridea. Grade 6. CORTICATA. Class I. Sporozoa. Sub-Class a. Gregarinidca. Orders.—1. Haplocyta. Sub-Class 6. Coccidiidca.

2. Chlamydophora. 3. 4, Desmothoraca.

2. Astrorhizidea. 38. Milto-

2. Septata.

Orders.—1. Monosporca. 2. Oligosporea. 8. Poly- sporea. Sub-Class ¢. Myxosporidea (no orders). me d. Sarcocystidca (no orders). » Il. FuacELuata. Sub-Class a. Lissoflagellata. Orders.—1. Monadidea. 2. Euglenoidea. 8. Hetero-

mastigoda. 4. Isomastigoda. Sub-Class b. Choanoflagellata. Orders.—1. Nuda. 2. Lortcata. », III. DINoFLAGELLATA. Orders.—1. RHYNCHOFLAGELLATA (no orders). ©. ears Orders.—1. Peritricha. tricha. 4. Hypotricha. » VI. ACINETARIA. Orders.—1. Suctoria.

3. Gelatinigera.

2. Hetcrotricha. 8. Holo-

2. Non-Suctoria.

Grade B. ENTEROZOA.

Sub-Grade A. CHLENTERA.

Phylum 1. NEMATOPHORA. Class I. HyDROMEDUSZ.

Orders.—1. Anthomedusx (Gymnoblastea). tomeduse (Calyptoblastea). Trachomeduse. phora.

», Il. ScyPpHoMEDUSA. Sub-Class a. Tetrameralia. Orders.—1. Calycozoa. 2. Peromedusx. 3. Cubomeduse. Sub-Class &. Octomeralia. Orders.—1. Cannostomx. 2. Semostomex. 8. Rhizostome. », II]. ANTHOZOA. Sub-Class a. Actiniomorpha.

Orders.—1. Actiniaria. 2. Antipatharia. 8. Madre- poraria.

Sub-Class 0. Aleyoniomorpha.

Orders.—1. Protalcyonaria.

2. Lep- 8. Narcomeduse. 4. 5. Hydrocoralline. 6. Siphono-

2. Stolonifera. 8. Al-

207 LOG Y

cyonaria. 4. Paragorgonaria. Pennatularia. 7. Helioporaria, Class TV. CTENOPHORA. Orders.—1. Saccata. 4, Lobata.

Phylum 2, PORIFERA.

Class I. CALCISPONGIZ (= Megamastictora). Orders.—1. Homocela. 2. Heterocela. ,, IL. Srmnicosponclz (= AMicromastictora). Sub-Class 1. Hyalospongiz. Order. Hexactinellaria. Sub-Class 2. Demospongiz. Orders. —1. Tetractinellaria. Halisarcaria.

5. Gorgonaria. 6.

2. Hurystoma. 38. Teniata.

2. Monaxonaria. 8.

Sub-Grade B. C@LOMATA.

Phylum 1. VERTEBRATA.

Branch A. Hemichorda (Balanoglossus). »,. B. Urochorda. Grade I. Larvalia (no divisions recognized). », IL. Saccata. Class J. AscIpIa. Orders.—1. Simplices. 4. Pyrosomiidca. » LI, SALPIFORMIA. Orders.—1. Salpiidea. 2. Doliolidea. Branch C. Cephalochorda (Amphiorus). » D. Craniata. Grade I. Cyclostoma. Class I, MyxINoIpEa (no orders). ,, Il. PETROMYZONTIA (uo orders). Grade II. Gnathostoma. Sub-Grade a. Branchiata Heterodactyla. Class I. Pisces. . Sub-Class 1. Selachit. Orders. —1. Squali. 2. Rait. Sub-Class 2. Holocephali (no orders). oy 3. Ganoidct. Orders.—1. Chondrostet. 2. Polypterint. 3. Lepi- dosteit. 4. Amidini. 5. Cephalaspidini. 6. Pla- codermi, 7. Acanthodini. 8. Pycnodontint. 9. Celacanthini. 10. Diptcrint. Sub-Class 4. Teleostci. Orders.—1. Physostomi. 2. Pharyngognathi. 3. Anacanthini. 4. Acanthoptert. 5. Plectognathi. 6. Lophobranchia. », II. Dipenot. Orders.—1. Monopneumones. 2. Dipnewmones. Sub-Grade 6. Branchiata Pentadactyla. Class I. AMPHIBIA. Sub-Class 1. Urodela. Orders.—1. Jchthyoidea. 2. Salamandrina. Sub-Class 2. Gymnophiona (Cecilia, &c.). iD 3. Stegoccphala (Labyrinthodon, &c.). e. 4, Anura (Rana, &c.). Sub-Grade c. Lipobranchia Pentadactyla. Branch a. MONOCONDYLA. Class I. REPTILIA. Sub-Class 1. Chelonia (orders not tabulated). 5 2. Lacertilia. Orders.—1. Rhynchoccphala. 2. Chameleonina. 3. Lacertina. Sub-Class 8. Ophidia. Orders. —1. Opoterodonta. 38. Proteroglypha.

Sub-Class 4. Crocoditia. Orders.—1. Amphicelia. 2. Opisthocelia. 3. Procelia. Sub-Class 5. Pterosauria (orders not tabulated). a 6. Dinosauria. Orders.—1. Sauropoda. 2. Stegosauria. 3. Ornithopoda. 4. Theriopoda. 5, Celuria. 6. Compsognatha. 7. Hallopoda. Sub-Class 7. Anomodontia (Dicynodon, &c.). 56 8. Plestosauria. a 9. Icthyosauria. 59 LI. Avan? Grade a. Phanerodactyla. Order. Saururz. Grade 6. Cryptodactyla. Orders.—1. Ratiiz. Branch b. AMPHICONDYLA, Class. MAMMALIA. Grade 1. Monotrema (Ornithorhynchus and Ech- tdna).

2. Sociales. 3. Composite.

2. Colubriformia. 4, Solenoglypha.

2. Carinate.

LZ OOrE OG &

Grade 2. Ditrema. Branch a. MMarsupialia. Orders.—1. Barypoda. 2. Rhizophaga. 3.

Maeropoda. 4. Carpophaga. 5. Pedi- manda. 6. Cantharophaga. 7. Creophaga. 8. Edentula.

Branch 6. Plaeentalia.

Sub-Branch a. Typidentata. Orders.—1. Proinseetivora. 2. Insectivora. 3. Carnivora. 4. Cetaeea. 5. Ungulata. 6. Amblypoda. 7. Sirenia. 8. Toxodon- tia. 9. Rodentia. 10. Proboseidea. 11. Hyracoidea. 12. Cheiroptera. 18. Pro- simiz. 14, Stniz. Sub-Branch 6. Edentata. Orders.—1. Bradypoda.

Phylum 2. ECHINODERMA. Branch A. Ambulacrata. Class I. HoLoTHURIDEA. Orders.—1. Elasipoda. », LI. EcHINOIDEA. Grade a. Paleechini (Melonitcs, Eocidaris). Grade 6. Autechini. Branch 1. Desmostieha. Orders.—1. Regularia. Branch 2. Petalosticha. Orders.—1. Clypeastrina. 2. Spatangina. » III. AsTEROIDEA. Orders.—1. Colastra. », LV. OPHIUROIDEA. Orders.—1. Ophiastra. Branch B. Tentaculata.

2. Effodientia.

2. Pedata. 3. Apoda.

2. Heocycliea.

2. Brisingastra. 2. Phytastra.

Class I. CRINOIDEA.

Orders.—1. Palzocrina. 2. Neocrina. », Il. Cysrorpza.

Orders.—1. Agelaerina. 2. Echinencrina. », III. BLAsToIDEA.

Orders.—1. Elzacrina. 2. Eleutherocrina.

Phylum 38. PODAXONTA. ClassI. GEPHYR™A. Sub-Class 1. Hehiuromorpha. Orders.—1. Sternaspida. Sub-Class 2. Sipwneulomorpha. Orders.—1. Sipunculina. » II. Potyzoa. Sub-Class 1. Vermtformia. (Genus: Phoronis.) 5 2. Hupolyzoa. Branch a. Eetoprocta. Orders. —1. Phylactolenu. Branch 6. Entoprocta. (Loxosoma, &c.)

[The sub-class Pterobranchia (Rhabdoplewra and Cephalodiscus) hitherto referred to Polyzoa are probably related to the Hemichorda of the Vertebrate phylum.]

», III. BracHiopopa. Orders.—1. Heardines. 2. Cardinata.

Phylum 4. NEMATOIDEA. EUNEMATOIDEA (no orders). CHETOSOMARIA.

(Chzxtosoma, Rhabdogaster.) CILETOGNATHA.

(Sagitta, Spadelia.)

Phylum 5. ACANTHOCEPHALA. (Genus: Eehinorhynehus.) Phylum 6. GASTROTRICHA. (Genera: Chetonotus, Iehthydiwm, &c.) Phylum 7. PLATYHELMIA.

Branch A. Ciliata.

Class I. RHABDOC@LA.

Orders.—1. Aeela. II. DENDROCELA..

Orders. —1. Triclada.

» LIL. NEMERTINA. Orders.—1. Palxonemertina. Hoplonemertea. [The Jesozoa of Van Beneden may be classed here as a degenerate parasitic group including Orthoneetida and Rhombozoa.]

Branch B. Cotylophora. Class I. TREMATOIDEA. Sub-Class a. Jfonogenea. Orders.—1. Tristoma. Sub-Class 6, Digenea. Orders. —1. Jfonostoma. stoma. 4. Holostoma.

2. Echiurina.

2. Priapulina.

2. Gymnolema.

Class I. 3 UE

nie

2. Orthoeela. 3. Alleocela.

39

2. Polyelada.

2. Sehizonemertca. 3.

2. Polystonu.

2. Distoma. 3. Gastero-

813

Class II. CEsTorpEA. Orders.—1. Amphilinaria. 2. Caryophyllaria. 3. Ligularia. 4, Eehinobothriaria. 5. Tetrarhyn- charia. 6. Phyllobothriaria. 7. Teniaria. » III. Hrrupinza. Orders.—1. Rhynchobdella. 2. Gnathobdella.

Phylum 8. APPENDICULATA.

Branch A. Rotifera. Class I. PARAPODIATA. (Genus: Pedalion.) >, Il. Lipopopa. Orders.—1. Ploima. Branch B. Cheetopoda. Class I. PoLycHa#Ta. Sub-Class 1. Hrrantia (orders not tabulated). 2. Sedentaria (orders not tabulated).

2. Bdelligrada. 3. Rhizota.

23

» IL OLreocuata. Orders. —1. Lumbricomorpha. 2. Senuridomorpha. 3. Naidomorpha. 4. Bdellomorpha. », LI]. MyzosroMaRIa.

(Genus: JLyzostomum.) . SACCOCIRRIDEA. (Genus: Saccoeirrus.) HAPLOANNELIDA. (Genera: Polygordius, Protodrilus, Histriobdella). Branch C. Arthropoda (=Gnathopoda). Grade 1. Ceratophora. Class I, PERIPATIDEA. (Genus: Peripatus.) > Il. Myriapopa. Orders.—1. Diplopoda. », LIJ. Hexaropa. Orders. —1.

2. Chilopoda.

Orthoptera (Sub-Orders: Thysanura, Autorthoptcra, Pseudoneuroptera). 2. Neuroptera (Sub-Orders: Planipennia, Trichoptcra). 3. Strep- siptera. 4. Rhyncota (Sub-Orders: Pedieularia, Aphidaria, Cicadaria, Hemiptera). 5. Diptera (Sub-Orders: Brachyeera, Nemoccra, Aphaniptera). 6. Lepidoptera. 7. Coleoptera. 8. Hymenoptera.

Grade 2. Acerata.

Class I. CRUSTACEA.

Grade 1. Entomostraca.

Orders.—1. Phyllopoda. 2. Ostracoda. 3. Copepoda. 4. Cirrinedia.

Grade 2. Leptostraca. (Genus: Nebalia.)

Grade 3. Malacostraca. Branch a. Arthrostraca.

Orders.—1. Amphipoda. Branch b. Thoracostraca. Orders.—1. Cumacea. 2. Stomapoda. phthalmia. >, Il. ARACHNIDA.

Grade a. Delobranchia. Orders.—l. Hurypterina. 2. Xiphosura. 3. Trilobitz.

Grade 6. Embolobranchia. Orders.—1. Seorpionina. 2. Thelyphonina. 3. Ara-

nein.

Grade c. Lipobranchia. Orders.—1. Galeodina. 2. Opilionina.

4, Acarina.

2. Isopoda. 3. Podo-

3. Pscudo- scorpionina. >, LI]. PANTOPODA. (Genera: Pyenogonum, &c.) », LV. TARDIGRADA. (Genera: Afacrobiotus, Milnesium, &e.) VY. LINGUATULINA. (Genera: Pentastoma, &c.)

Phylum 9. MOLLUSCA.

Branch A. Glossophora. Class I. GASTROPODA. Grade 1. Isopleura. Orders.—1. Polyplacophora. Chetodermarta. Grade 2. Anisopleura. Branch a. Streptoncura. Orders.—1. Zygobranchia. Branch 0. Huthyneura. Orders.—1. Opisthobranchia. » Ll. ScAPHOPODA. (Genus: Dentaliwm.) ;, LI]. CEPHALOPODA (= Siphonopoda). Orders. —1. Tetrabranchia. 2. Dibranchia. Branch B. Lipocephala. Class. LAMELLIBRANCHIA. Orders.—1. Jsomya.

2, Neomeniaria. 3.

2. Azygobranehia.

2. Pulmonata.

2. Hetcromya. 3 Monomya.

Develop- ment of new species,

Geo- graphi- cal dis- tribution of ani- mals.

Study of marine fauna.

Sl4

We have now traced the history of the morphography of animals so as to show that increasingly in successive epochs independent branches of knowledge have been brought to bear on the consideration of the main problem, namely, the discrimination of the kinds and the relations to one another of animal forms. Before glancing at the history of the remaining branches of zoological science, which have had an independent history whilst ultimately contributory to taxonomy and morphography, it may be briefly pointed out that the accumulation of knowledge with regard to the distribution of animal forms on the earth's surface and in the seas has progressed simultane- ously with the discrimination of the mere forms of the species themselves, as has also the knowledge derived from fossilized remains as to the characters of former In- habitants of the globe. Both these subdivisions of mor- phography have contributed to the establishment of Dar- winism,—the one (paleontology) by direct evidence of organic evolution in time, the other (zoo-geography) in a more indirect way.

Alfred Russell Wallace stands prominently forward as a naturalist-traveller who by his observations, chiefly on Lepidopterous Insects, in both South America and the Malay Archipelago, was led to the conclusion that a pro- duction of new species is actually going on, and that, too, by means of a process of natural selection of favourable

variations. Wallace and Darwin, who each recognized cordially and fully the other's work, laid their views before the Linnean Society on the same day in 1859.

The facts of the geographical distribution of animals were systematized, and great zoo-geographical provinces first clearly recognized, by P. L. Sclater in 1857. The application of the Darwinian theory to the facts tabulated by Sclater, combined with a knowledge of the distribution of animals in past geological periods, has led to a full explanation of the migrations of terrestrial animals, and has furnished a striking corroboration of the sufficiency of the doctrine of organic evolution, as reformed by Darwin, to account for all the phenomena of zoology.

The study of the marine fauna by means of the dredge and trawl had been enthusiastically prosecuted by British, French, and Scandinavian naturalists in the two decades before Darwin's book; the collection of forms, the discovery of new species, and the recording of their bathymetrical and local distribution had produced a great mass of know- ledge through the labours of E. Forbes, Gwyn-Jeffreys, Sars, Quatrefages, Norman, and others. The post-Dar- winian developments of this line of inquiry have been two. In the first place, dredging and trawling have been extended by the aid of steamships of the Norwegian, British, Ameri- can, French, and Italian navies into greater depths than were previously supposed to contain living things. New species and genera, and a vast extension of knowledge as to distribution, have been the outcome of these expeditions, connected with the names of G. O. Sars and Daniellsen in Norway, of Alex. Agassiz in America, and of Carpenter and Wyville Thomson in Great Britain. It is worthy of note that the practical demand for sounding the Atlantic in connexion with the laying of the first deep-sea telegraph- cable is what led to these explorations, the first recognition of life at these great depths in the ocean being due to Dr Wallich, who accompanied a sounding expedition in 1860 to the North Atlantic, and to Prof. Fleeming Jenkin, who in the same year acted as engineer in raising the sub- marine cable between Sardinia and Africa, upon which living corals were found. In the second place, the study of marine zoology has, since the publication of the Origin of Species, been found to require more complete arrange- ments in the form of

laboratories and aquaria than the isolated vacation student could bring with him to the

LOO teOvG ¥

seaside. Seaside laboratories have come into existence: the first was founded in France by Coste (1859) at Concarneau (Brittany), again with a practical end in view, viz. the study of food-fishes with an aim to pisciculture. The demand for a knowledge of the embryology of all classes of animals, and for further facts as to the structure and life- history of the minuter microscopic or very delicate forms of marine life, is what has determined the multiplication of these marine "stations." The largest and best supported pecuniarily is that founded at Naples by Anton Dohrn in 1872; others exist at Trieste, Villefranche, Cette, and at New Haven and Beaufort in the United States, whilst a large laboratory, on a scale to compare with that at Naples, has this year (1888) been opened at Plymouth by the Marine Biological Association of the United Kingdom. Another result of the stimulus given to zoological re-

studying on the spot, and with all the advantages of abund- ant and living material, the structure, and especially the embryology, of rare and exceptionally interesting forms of animal life. In the pre-Darwinian period of this century zoologists who were convinced of the importance of anatomical and embryological study were still content to study specimens immersed in spirit and brought home, often imperfectly preserved, by unskilled collectors, or to confine their attention to such species as could be procured in Europe. Before Cuvier, as we have already pointed out, attention was, with rare exceptions, limited to the dried skeletons and external forms of animals. Now, however, the enterprising zoologist goes to the native land of an interesting animal, there to study it as fully as possible. The most important of these voyages has been that of W. H. Caldwell of Cambridge to Australia (1885-86) for the purpose of studying the embryology of the Monotrema and of Ceratodus, the fish-like Dzipnoon, which has resulted in the discovery that the Monotrema are oviparous. Similarly Adam Sedgwick proceeded to the Cape in order to study Peripatus, Bateson to the coast of Maryland to study Balanoglossus,

and the brothers Sarassin to Ceylon to in- vestigate the embryology of the Cecilia.

The task of the zoologist has changed and developed in every succeeding period. Pure morphography has long ceased to be a chief line of research; and now even the preoccupation produced by the addition to it of the study of cellular embryology is about to undergo a modification by the demand for knowledge of the facts of heredity and adaptation in greatly extended detail.

Zoo-MrcHanics, Zoo-Puysics, Zoo-CHEMISTRY.

The development of that knowledge of the structure of the human body, and of the chemical and physical pro- cesses going on in it, which is necessary for the purposes of the medical art forms a distinct history, which has both influenced and been influenced by that of other branches of zoology. The study of the structure and composition of the body of man and of the animals nearest to him was until fifty years ago one with the inquiry into the activities of those parts, and indeed the separation of anatomy and physiology has never been really carried out. For convenience of teaching, the description of the coarser anatomy of the human body has been in modern universities placed in the hands of a special professor, theoretically condemned to occupy himself with the mere formal details of structure, whilst the professor of physiology has usually retained what is called "microscopic anatomy," and necessarily occupies himself with as much structural anatomy as is required for a due description of the functions of organs and the properties of tissues. It would seem that in our medical schools and universities these arrange-

Expedi- tions for

fauna,

Study of anatomy and phy- siology.

Harvey and the Italian school.

Malpighi and Leeu- wenhoek.

Ovists UeTSUS animal- culists.

LZLOOLOGY

ments should be reconsidered. Anatomy and physiology should be re-united and subdivided as follows,—(1) physi- ology with anatomy in relation to physiology, (2) anatomy in relation to surgery and medical diagnosis,—the former being a science, the latter a piece of technical training in rule of thumb.

Physiological anatomy or anatomical physiology has its beginnings in Aristotle and other observers of antiquity. The later Graeco-Roman and the Arabian physicians carried on the traditional knowledge and added to it. Galen dominated the Middle Ages. The modern development begins with Harvey and with the Italian school in which he studied. Its great names are Fabricius of Acquapendente (1537-1619), Vesalius (1514-1564), Eustachius (c. 1500- 1574), Riolan (1577-1657), Severino (1580-1656). The history of the discovery of the circulation of the blood and of the controversies connected with it gives an interesting and sufficient presentation of the anatomico-physiological knowledge of the period (see Harvey). The foundation of the scientific academies and the records of their publica- tions furnish thenceforward a picture of the progress in this study. As an early anatomist Willis (1621-1675), professor of physic in Oxford, deserves notice for his work on the anatomy of the human brain, the plates for which were drawn by young Christopher Wren, the prodigy of Oxford common-rooms, who later built St Paul's Cathedral. The Royal Society, in its early days when Wren was a fellow, met at Gresham College whenever the professor of physic there could obtain a human body for dissection, and amongst its earliest records are the memoirs of Tyson on the anatomy of the Chimpanzee and the experiments on transfusion of blood, extirpation of the spleen, and such like inquiries. —

Marcello Malpighi (1628-1694) and Anton van Leeu- wenhoek (1632-1723) were the first to introduce the microscope into anatomical research. Malpighi first used the injection of blood-vessels on a large scale, and more- over is to be credited with having first conceived that there is a definite relation of the structure of lower kinds of animals to that of higher and more elaborate kinds, and that this relation is one of gradual

transition, so that lower animals are not to be regarded as isolated and arbi- trary existences, but are really simpler exhibitions of the same kind of structure and mechanism which occurs in higher animals. It is this conception which later de- veloped into the theory of an actual transmutative deve- lopment of lower into higher organisms. Leeuwenhoek discovered the red blood corpuscles of Vertebrates, saw the circulation in the capillaries of the Frog's foot, de- scribed the fibrillar structure and cross-striping of muscular fibre, the tubular structure of dentine, the scales of the epidermis, the fibres of the lens, and the spermatozoa, these last having been independently discovered at Leyden in 1677 by Ludwig Ham of Stettin. The spermatozoa were regarded by the "animalculists" as the fully formed but minute young which had to be received in the egg, in order to be nourished and increase in size, and were hailed as a decisive blow to Harvey's doctrine of epigenesis and his dictum "'omne vivum ex ovo." Albrecht von Haller was the chainpion of the so-called "evolutionists" in the 18th century, better called "' praformationists." Haller wrote, " There is no such thing as development! No part of the animal body is made before another ; all are simul- taneously created."

whilst the "animalculists," who regarded the spermatozoon !

S15

as the essential germ, would have substituted Adam for Eve in the above calculation. These fanciful conceptions —containing as they do a share of important truth—were opposed by Caspar Friedrich Wolff, who in his doctorate dissertation (1759) maintained that the germ is a struc- tureless particle, and acquires its structure by " epigenesis " or gradual development. Wolff has proved to be nearer the truth than Haller; but modern conceptions as to the molecular structure of the egg-protoplasm point to a com- plexity as great as that imagined by the evolutionists. Later it was maintained that the spermatozoa are parasitic animalcules, and this view prevailed for 150 years, so that in the Physiology of Johann Miiler (1842) we read, "Whether the spermatozoa are parasitic animaleules or living parts of the animal in which they occur cannot at present be stated with certainty."

Physiology in the 18th century could only proceed by means of inferences from purely anatomical observation, aided by imaginative conceptions which had no real basis. The explanation of the processes of life in the animal body was waiting for that progress in the knowledge of physics and chemistry which at last arrived, and gave a new im- pulse to investigation. Albrecht von Haller (1708-1777) was the first to apply experimental methods to the deter- mination of the functions of the various organs made known by anatomists, and from him we may trace a bi- furcation in the tendencies of medical men who occupied themselves with the study of the structure and functions of the animal organism. The one class proceeded more and more in the direction of comparative anatomy, the other in the direction of exact analysis and measurement of both the structure and properties of the organs of Ver- tebrate animals allied to man and of man himself.

John Hunter (1728-1793) is the most striking figure of this epoch in the relation of medicine to general zoological progress ; the preservation of his museum in Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, by the combined action of the state and the Royal College of Surgeons, is an abiding record of the historical progress of biological science, Hunter col- lected, dissected, and described not only higher but lower animals, with the view of arriving at a knowledge of the function of organs by the most extensive and systematic survey of their modifications in all kinds of animals. His purpose was that of the physiologist and medical man, but he made great contributions to the general knowledge of animal structure. The same class of investigations, when taken up by Cuvier from the point of view of systematic zoology and morphology, led to a reconstruction of classi- fication and laid the foundation of anatomical zoology. Hunter was the younger brother of William Hunter, who also formed an important museum, still preserved in Glas- gow. Hunter classified the organs of animals into those which subserve the preservation of the individual, those which subserve the preservation of the species, and those which are the means of relation with the outer world, and he arranged his museum of dissections and preparations on this plan.

The great progress of chemistry at the end of the 18th and the beginning of the 19th century was followed by an application of chemical laws and

chemical methods to the study of animal life. Curiously enough, as showing how deeply interwoven are the various lines of scientific progress, Priestley in his discovery of oxygen was as much concerned in the study of a chlorophyll-bearing Protozoon, Huglena viridis, as in that of the red oxide of mercury; and the interest in "vital spirits" as a physiological factor was an important stimulus to those researches which produced modern chemical knowledge.

The purely anatomical side of physiological progress is marked in the beginning of the 19th century by the work

Von Haller.

The two

Hunters.

Rela- tions of chemis-

try and

zoology.

Begin- nings of histo- logy.

Schwann's

cell- theory.

Schwann's other dis-

coveries.

816

of Bichat (1771-1802), who distinguished by naked-eye characters the different structural materials of which the organs of man and the higher animals are built, and thus founded in first outline the science of histology. By the end of the first quarter of this century it had become

clear to the minds of the anatomico-physiological students of animal life that the animal body was subject to the same physical laws as other matter, although it was still held that some additional and mysterious agent—so-called "vitality "—was at work in living bodies. It had become clear that animal material could be investigated chemically, and that the processes of digestion, assimilation, respira- tion, and secretion were chemical processes.

To a considerable extent the chemical composition and properties of the tissues, and the chemical nature of the various changes of life and of putrefaction after death, had been investigated, but one step was yet to be taken which brings the study of ultimate structure, chemical activity, form, and the formation of form to a single focus. This was taken by Theodore Schwann (1810-1881), who in 1839 published his epoch-making cell-theory. Schwann

was a pupil of Johann Miiller, and there can be little.

doubt that the ideas of the pupil are to be credited in some measure to the master. Schwann took up the thread of microscopic investigation which had been sedu- lously pursued by a distinct line of ~~*students since the days of Hook and Leeuwenhoek, and had resulted in a general doctrine among botanists of the cellular struc*~~ *ture of all the parts of plants. Schwann showed not only that plants are uniformly built up by these corpuscular units (of which Robert Browne in 1833 had described the peculiar nucleated structure), but that all animal tissues are also so built up. That, however, was not Schwann's chief point. The cell-theory for which he is famous is this, that the substance of the individual cell is the seat of those chemical processes which seen en masse we call life, and that the differences in the properties of the differ- ent tissues and organs of animals and plants depend on a difference in the chemical and physical activity of the con- stituent cells, resulting in a difference in the form of the cells and in a concomitant difference of activity. Schwann thus pointed to the microscopic cell-unit as the thing to be studied in order to arrive at a true knowledge of the processes of life and the significance of form. In founding the study of cell-substance (or protoplasm, as it was subse- quently called by Max Schultze in 1861, adopting the name used by*

botanists for vegetable cell-contents) Schwann united two lines of inquiry, viz., that of minute investi- gation of structure and development and that of zoo- chemistry and zoo-physics. He spent a large part of the next forty years in an attempt to penetrate further into the structure of cell-substance ; he hoped to be able to find in cell-substance ultimate visible molecules, a knowledge of the arrangement and characters of which would explain the varying properties of protoplasm.

It is not a little remarkable that Schwann, who thus brought about the union of physiological and morphological study by his conception of cell-substance, should also have

been the initiator of that special kind of experimental in-.

vestigation of the physical properties of tissues by the exact methods used by physicists which, by the aid of the kymo- graphion, the thermo-electric pile, and the galvanometer, has been so largely pursued during the last thirty years in our physiological laboratories. It is perhaps less surprising that Schwann, who had so vivid a conception of the activity and potentialities of the cell-unit, should have been the discoverer of the immensely important fact that putrefaction and fermentation are not the conse- quences of death but of life, and that without the presence of living Bacteria putrefaction does not occur, whilst he

also is the discoverer of the fact that the yeast which causes alcoholic fermentation is a mass of unicellular living organisms.

From Schwann's time onward the cell became more and more the point of observation and experiment in the pro- gress of both morphography and physiology. It was soon shown, chiefly through Kélliker and Remak, that all cells originate by fission from pre-existing cells,—a fact un-known to Schwann,—and the doctrine 'omnis cellula e cellula" was established. It was also demonstrated that the Mammalian egg discovered by Von Baer was a typical nucleated cell, and that all animals, and plants also (this generalization took thirty years to establish), take their origin from an egg, which is in essence and in fact a single nucleated cell. The

doctrine of Harvey, "omne vivum ex ovo," thus received its most ample justification. The study of "growth from the egg" became necessarily a study of the multiplication by fission of the egg-cell and its fission-products, their arrangement in layers, and the chemical metamorphosis of their substance and exuda- tions. This study, as well as the allied investigation of the cell-structure of the adult tissues, was immensely facilitated by methods of hardening, staining, section-cutting, and clarifying which grew up after Schwann's time, and have their present highest development in the automatic microtome of Caldwell, which can be worked by a motor, and delivers consecutive sections of animal tissues or em- bryos zgonth of an inch thick, arranged in the form of ribbons, ready for examination with the microscope, at the rate of one hundred or more per minute. Stricker of Vienna was the first to embed embryos in waxy material for the purpose of cutting thin sections of them, about twenty-five years ago, and R. Leuckart of Leipsic was subsequently the first to employ this method in the study of the structure of small [nvertebrata.

The knowledge of the anatomical facts of cellular de- velopment and cellular structure necessarily gave im- mensely increased precision to the notion of gradation of structure in the animal series from simple to complex, and rendered Darwin's doctrine the more readily accepted. It was not, however, until after Darwin's date (1859) that the existence of unicellular animals was fully admitted, and the general facts of cellular embryology established throughout the animal kingdom.

Similarly cellular physiology, by establishing the concep- tion of a simple optically homogeneous cell-substance as the seat of the activities which we call "life," rendered it possible to accept the suggestion of a simple "substance of life" which might have been evolved from simpler non-living matter by natural processes depending on physical and chemical laws. It is noteworthy that Darwin himself appears not to have been influenced directly by any such physiological or chemico-physical doctrine as to "proto- plasm" or cell-substance. Nevertheless the way was prepared for the reception of Darwin's theory by this state of physiological knowledge.

The word “protoplasm” requires a little further notice. Protoplasm was applied by Von Mohl and by Max Schultze to the slimy substance of the cell, including therein both the general thinner material and the nucleus. It is, as Roscoe remarked at Manchester (Brit. Ass. Address, 1887), a structure and not a chemical body. Nevertheless gradually physiologists have come to use the word “ protoplasm ” for one of the chemical substances of which Schultze’s proto- plasm is a structural mixture—namely, that highest point in the chemical elaboration of the molecule which is at- tained within the protoplasm, and up to which some of the chemical bodies present are tending, whilst others are degradation products resulting from a downward meta- morphosis of portions of it. This intangible, unstable, all-

Develop- ment of cell- theory.

Cellular physio- logy.

Proto- plasm.

Plasmo- logy.

Bio- nomics.

Teleo- logy.

4, OO Ip O-G Y

pervading element of the protoplasm cannot at present be identified with any visibly separable part of the cell-sub- stance, which consists of a hyaline denser network of ex- cessive tenuity, of a less dense hyaline liquid, and of finest and less fine granules of varying chemical nature. This “critical ” substance, sometimes called “true protoplasm,” should assuredly be recognized by a distinct name “ plasmo- gen,” whilst protoplasm retains its structural connotation.

The study of the process of fertilization and of the significance in that process of the distinct parts of the sperm-cell and egg-cell—the separate fibrille and granules of the nuclei of those cells—at the present moment

forms one of the engrossing subjects of zoological investigation.1 Not less important is the descent, as it were, of physiological investigation in relation to every organ into the arena of the cell: digestion, secretion, muscular contraction, nerve action, all are now questions of plasmology, or the study of cell-substance founded by Schwann.?

GENERAL TENDENCY OF ZOOLOGY SINCE DARWIN.

The serious and broadly-based study of bionomics which was introduced by Darwin, and in his hands gave rise to the doctrine of natural selection, by which the hypothesis of the origin of species by gradual transmutation in the natural process of descent from ancestral forms was established as a scientific doctrine, can hardly be said to have had any history. Buffon (1707-1788) alone among the greater writers of the three past centuries emphasized that view of living things which we call "'bionomics." Buffon deliberately opposed himself to the mere exposition of the structural resemblances and differences of animals, and, disregarding classification, devoted his treatise on natural history to a consideration of the habits of animals and their adaptations to their surroundings, whilst a special volume was devoted by him to the subject of reproduction. In special memoirs on this or that animal, and in a subor- dinate way in systematic works, material is to be found helping to build up a knowledge of bionomics, but Buffon is the only prominent writer who can be accorded historic rank in this study.? The special study of man in these relations—such as is concerned with the statistics of population—must be considered as having contributed very importantly to Darwin's wider study of bionomics in general. The work of Malthus On Population (1798) exercised the most important influence on Darwin's thought, as he himself tells us, and led him to give attention to the facts of animal population, and so to discover the great moving cause of natural selection—the struggle for exist- ence. Darwin may be said to have founded the science of bionomics, and at the same time to have given new stimulus and new direction to morphography, physiology, and plas- mology, by uniting them as contributories to one common biological doctrine—the doctrine of organic evolution— itself but a part of the wider doctrine of universal evolu- tion based on the laws of physics and chemistry.

The full influence of Darwin's work upon the progress and direction of zoological study has not yet been seen. The immediate result has been, as pointed out above, a reconstruction of the classification of animals upon a genealogical basis, and an investigation of the individual development of animals in relation to the steps of their gradual building up by cell-division, with a view to obtain- ing evidence of their genetic relationships. On the other hand, the studies which occupied Darwin himself so largely subsequently to the publication of the Origin of Species,

1 See the memoirs of Weismann on Heredity and F. M. Balfour's Embryology.

2 For a fuller and general history of PaysroLoay, see that article.

3 The main literary sources made use of by Darwin are the magazines

and treatises of horticulturists, farmers, pigeon-fanciers, and the like, in fact': what is comprised in the veld newspaper.

viz., the explanation of animal (and vegetable) mechanism, colouring, habits, &c., as advantageous to the species or to its ancestors—in fact, the new teleology,—has not yet been so vigorously pursued as it must be hereafter. The most important work in this direction has been done by Fritz Miller (tir Darwin), by Herman Miiller (Lertilization of

Plants by Insects), and by August Weismann (memoirs trans-

lated by Meldola). Here and there observations are fron1 time to time published, but no large progress has yet been made, probably on account of the fact that animals are exceedingly difficult to keep under observation, and that there is no provision in universities and like institutions for the pursuit of these inquiries or even for their academic representation. More has been done with plants than with animals in this way since Darwin, probably owing to the same cause which has, ever since the revival of learning, given botany a real advantage over zoology, namely, the existence of ' physick" gardens, now become "' botanical "

gardens, and the greater ease of management, experiment, and observation in the case of plants than in that of ani- mals. It is true that zoological gardens have existed for the last fifty years in all large European cities, but these have always been conducted with a view to popular exhibition; and, even where scientific influences have been brought to bear on their management, they have been those of the morphographer and systematist rather than of the bionomist. Moreover, zoological gardens have never been part of the equipment of the university professor of zoology, as it may be hoped in future will be the case. The foundation of marine biological laboratories under the control of scientific zoologists offers a prospect of true bionomic observation and experiment on an increased scale in the near future, and, were such laboratories founded in our universities and provided with the necessary appliances for keeping terrestrial and freshwater animals, as well as marine forms, alive and under observation in conditions resembling as nearly as possible those of nature, a step would have been taken towards carrying on the study of bionomics which cannot long be delayed. It seems to be even more important that the academic curriculum of zoology should not, by mere mechanical adhesion to the old lines of morphography, and experimental research on the chemical and physical properties of tissues and organs, confine the attention and training of young students to what are now, comparatively speaking, the less productive lines of research.

If we turn to the other branch of bionomics, that con Threm- cerned with the laws of variation and heredity (thremma- Hee tology), we find that since Darwin, and independently of °°%

his own work, there has been a more obvious progress than in teleology. In the first place, the continued study of human population has thrown additional light on some of the questions involved, whilst the progress of microscopical research in the hands of Biitschli, Hertwig, Balfour, and August Weismann promises to give us a clear foundation as to the structural facts connected with the origin of the egg-cell and sperm-cell and the process of fertilization. This is not the fitting place in which to give a sketch of the doctrines and hypotheses of thremmatology. They may be gathered from Darwin's writings, more especially the Origin of Species

and Animals and Plants under Domes- tication.4 They relate to the causes of variation in animals and plants, the laws of the transmission of parental char- acters, the share of each parent in the production of the char- acters of the offspring, atavism, and the relations of young to parents as to nuniber, sex, nourishment, and protection.

An important development of Darwin's conclusions 1s actually in progress and deserves special notice here, as it

+ The reader is also referred to Ribot's L' Hérédité, and the writings of Charles Darwin's cousin, Francis Galton.

is the most distinct advance in the department of biono- mics since Darwin's own writings, and at the same time touches questions of fundamental interest. The matter strictly relates to the consideration of the "causes of varia- tion," and is as follows.

The fact of variation is a familiar one. No two animals, even of the same brood, are alike: whilst exhibiting a close similarity to their parents, they yet present differences, sometimes very marked differences, from their parents and from one another. Lamarck had put forward the hypo- thesis that structural alterations acquired by a parent in the course of its life are transmitted to the offspring, and that, as these structural alterations are acquired by an animal or plant in consequence of the direct action of the environment, the offspring inheriting them would as a consequence not unfrequently start with a greater fitness for those conditions than its

parents started with. In its turn, being operated upon by the conditions of life, it would acquire a greater development of the same modification, which it would in turn transmit to its offspring. In the course of several generations, Lamarck argued, a structural alteration amounting to such difference as we call "specific " might be thus acquired. The familiar illustration of Lamarck's hypothesis is that of the giraffe, whose long neck might, he suggested, have been acquired by the efforts of a primitively short-necked race of herbivores, who stretched their necks to reach the foliage of trees in a land where grass was deficient, the effort producing a distinct elongation in the neck of each generation, which was then transmitted to the next. This process is known as " direct adaptation ;" and there is no doubt that such structural adaptations are acquired by an animal in the course of its life. Whether such acquired characters can be transmitted to the next generation is a separate question. It was not proved by Lamarck that they can be, and, indeed, never has been proved by actual observation. Nevertheless it has been assumed, and also indirectly argued, that such acquired characters must be transmitted. Darwin's great merit was that he excluded from his theory of develop- ment any necessary assumption of the transmission of ac- quired characters. He pointed to the admitted fact of congenital variation, and he showed that these variations to all intents and purposes have nothing to do with any characters acquired by the parents, but are arbitrary and, Their causes are extremely difficult to trace in detail, but it appears that they are largely due to a "shaking up" of the living matter which constitutes the fertilized germ or embryo-cell, by the pro- cess of mixture in it of the substance of two cells,—the germ-cell and the sperm-cell,— derived from two different individuals. Other mechanical disturbances may assist in this production of congenital variation. Whatever its causes, Darwin showed that it is all-important. In some cases a pair of animals produce ten million offspring, and in such a number a large range of congenital variation is possible. Since on the average only two of the young survive in the struggle for existence to take the place of their two parents, there is a selection out of the ten million young, none of which are exactly alike, and the selection is determined in nature by the survival of the congenital variety which is fittest to the conditions of life. Hence there is no necessity for an assumption of the perpetuation of direct adaptations. The selection of the fortuitously (fortuitously, that is to say,

so far as the conditions of sur- vival are concerned) produced varieties is sufficient, since it is ascertained that they will tend to transmit those char- acters with which they themselves were born, although it is not ascertained that they could transmit characters acquired on the way through life. A simple illustration of the differ- ence is this : a man born with four fingers only on his right

A@ © 2 © Gi ¥

hand is ascertained to be likely to transmit this peculiarity to some at least of his offspring ; on the other hand, there is not the slightest ground for supposing that a man who has had one finger chopped off, or has even lost his arm at any period of his life, will produce offspring who are defective in the slightest degree in regard to fingers, hand, or arm. Darwin himself, apparently influenced not merely by the consideration of certain classes of facts which seem to favour the Lamarckian hypothesis but also by a respect for the general prejudice in its favour and for Mr Herbert Spencer's authority, was of the opinion that acquired characters are im some cases transmitted. It should be observed, however, that Darwin did not attribute an es- sential part to this Lamarckian hypothesis of the trans- mission of acquired characters, but expressly assigned to it an entirely subordinate importance. –

The new attitude which has been taken since Darwin on this question is to ask for evidence of this asserted transmission of acquired characters. It is held! that the Darwinian doctrine of selection of fortuitous congenital variations is sufficient to account for all cases, that the Lamarckian hypothesis of transmission of acquired char- acters is not supported by experimental evidence, and that the latter should therefore be dismissed. Weismann has also ingeniously argued from the structure of the egg-cell and sperm-cell, and from the way in which, and the period at which, they are derived in the course of the growth of the embryo from the egg—from the fertilized egg-cell— that it is impossible (it would be better to say highly improbable) that an alteration in parental structure could produce any exactly representative change in the substance of the germ or sperm-cells.

It does not seem improbable that the doctrine of organic evolution will thus become pure Darwinism and be entirely dissociated from the Lamarckian heresy.

The one fact which the Lamarckians can produce in their favour is the account of experiments by Brown-Séquard, in which he produced epilepsy in guinea-pigs by section of the large nerves or spinal cord, and in the course of which he was led to believe that in a few rare instances the artificially produced epilepsy was transmitted. This in- stance does not stand the test of criticism. It is not clear whether the guinea-pigs operated upon had or had not already a constitutional tendency to epilepsy, and it is not clear in what proportion of cases the supposed transmission took place, and whether any other disease accompanied it. On the other hand, the vast number of experiments in the cropping of the tails and ears of domestic animals, as well as of similar operations on man, are attended with negative results. No case of the transmission of the re- sults of an injury can be produced. Stories of tailless kittens, puppies, and calves, born from parents one of whom had been thus injured, are abundant, but they have hitherto entirely failed to stand before examination.

Experimental researches on this question are most urgently needed, but they are not provided for either in the morphographical or physiological laboratories of our universities.

Whilst simple evidence of the fact of the transmission of an acquired character is wanting, the a priore argunients in its favour break down one after another when discussed. The very cases which are advanced as only to be explained on the Lamarckian assumption are found on examination and experiment to be better explained, or only to be ex- plained, by the Darwinian principle. Thus the occurrence of blind animals in caves and in the deep sea was a fact which Darwin himself regarded as best explained by the atrophy of the organ of vision in successive generations through the absence of light and consequent disuse, and

1 Weismann, Vererbung, &c., 1886.

the transmission (as Lamarck would have supposed) of a more and more weakened and structurally impaired eye to the offspring in successive generations, until the eye finally disappeared. But this instance is really fully ex- plained by the theory of natural selection acting on con- genital fortuitous variations. Many animals are thus born with distorted or defective eyes whose parents have not had their eyes submitted to any peculiar conditions. Sup- posing a number of some species of Arthropod or Fish to be swept into a cavern or to be carried from less to greater depths in the sea,—those individuals with perfect eyes would follow the glimmer of light and eventually escape to the outer air or the shallower depths, leaving behind those with imperfect eyes to breed in the dark place. A natural selection would thus be effected. In every succeeding generation this would be the case, and even those with weak but still seeing eyes would in the course of time escape, until only a pure race of eyeless or blind animals would be left in the cavern or deep sea. Experiments and inquiries with regard to this subject are in progress ; amongst those who have occupied themselves with it are August Weismann of Freiburg and E. B. Poulton of Oxford.

stance of the pure Darwinian theory without the aid of Lamarckism.

The whole of this inquiry has special importance in regard to mankind, since the great questions of influence of race and family as opposed to the influence of education are at issue. If pure Darwinism is to be accepted, then education has no value in directly affecting the mental or physical features of the race, but only in affecting those of the individual. Were acquired characters really and fully transmitted, then every child born would inherit the know- ledge of both its parents more or less completely, and from birth onwards would be able to add to its inherited stock, so that the progress of the race in mental acquirements would be prodigiously more rapid than it is. On the other hand, peculiarities of mind and body established in a race or a family acquire increased significance, for they cannot be got rid of by training, but are bound to reappear if the stock which exhibits them is allowed to breed. It seems that the laws of thremmatology may eventually give to mankind the most precise

directions, not only as to how to improve the breeds of plants and animals, but as to how to improve the human stock. It is not a little re-

Theory It has been argued that the elaborate structural adapta- | markable that the latest development of zoological science of trans- tions of the nervous system which are the corporeal correla- | should favour that respect to breeding which is becoming mission . . : . . . :

ofin- tives of complicated instincts must have been slowly built | less popular than it was, and should tend to modify the stincts, up by the transmission to offspring of acquired experience, | current estimate of the results of education.

that is to say, of acquired brain structure. At first sight

it appears difficult to understand how the complicated series of actions which are definitely exhibited as so-called "instincts" by a variety of animals can have been due to the selection of congenital variations, or can be otherwise

The relation of Darwinism to general philosophy and of Relation the history of zoology to philosophical doctrines is one of of z0o- the most interesting chapters which might be written on ee the subject of this article. It belongs, however, rather to oe

explained than by the transmission of habits acquired by the parent as the result of experience, and continuously elaborated and added to in successive generations. It is, however, to be noted, in the first place, that the imitation of the parent by the young possibly accounts for some part of these complicated actions, and, secondly, that there

the history of philosophy than to that of zoology. Undoubt- edly the conceptions of mankind at different periods of history with regard to cosmogony, and the relations of God, nature, and man, have had a very marked influence upon the study of zoology, just as in its turn the study of zoology has reacted upon those conceptions.

are cases in which curiously elaborate actions are performed by animals as a characteristic of the species, and as sub-

In this, as in other phases of mental development, the Develop-

ancient Greeks stand out in the most striking manner as ee € 10aca

serving the general advantage of the race or species, which, nevertheless, can nxo¢ be explained as resulting from the transmission of acquired experience, and must be supposed to be due to the natural selection of a fortuitously developed habit which, like fortuitous colour or form variation, happens to prove beneficial, Mr Poulton has insisted upon the habits of "shamming dead" and the combined posturing and colour peculiarities of certain caterpillars (Lepidopterous larvee) which cause them to resemble dead twigs or similar surrounding objects. The advantage to the animal of this imitation of surrounding objects is that it escapes the pursuit of (say) a bird which would, were it not deceived by the resemblance, attack and eat the cater- pillar. Now it is clear that preceding generations of cater- pillars cannot have acquired this habit of posturing by experience. Either the caterpillar postures and escapes, or it does not posture and is eaten ; it is not half eaten and allowed to profit by experience. We seem to be justified in assuming that there are many movements of stretching and posturing possible to caterpillars, and that some cater- pillars had a congenital fortuitous tendency to one position, some to another, and, finally, that among all the variety of habitual movements thus exhibited one has been selected and perpetuated because it coincided with the necessary conditions of safety, since it happened to give the caterpillar an increased resemblance to a twig.

The view that instinct is the hereditarily fixed result of habit derived from experience has hitherto dominated all inquiry into the subject, but we may now expect to see a renewed and careful study of animal instincts carried out with the view of testing the applicability to each in-

possessing what is sometimes called the modern spirit. The doctrine of evolution is formulated in unmistakable terms by Heraclitus and other philosophers of antiquity. Not only so, but the direct examination of nature, includ- ing the various-forms of animal life, was practised by

Aristotle and his disciples in a spirit which, though not altogether free from prejudice, was yet far more like that which actuated the founders of the Royal Society less than three hundred years ago than anything which was mani- fested in the two thousand years intervening between that date and the time of Alexander the Great. The study of zoology in the Middle Ages was simply a fantastic commentary on Aristotle and the records of animals in the various books of the Bible, elaborated as part of a peculiar system of mystic philosophy, which has more analogy with

‘the fetichism and totem worship of savage races than with

any Greek or modern conceptions. So far as philosophy affected the study of zoology in the beginning of the modern period, its influence was felt in the general accept- ance of what has been called the Miltonic cosmogony, — namely, that interpretation of the Mosaic writings which is set forth by the poet Milton, and of which the character- istic is the conception of the creation of existing things, including living things, nearly or just as they are, by a rapid succession of “fiats” delivered by an anthropo- morphic Creator. It was not until the end of the 18th century that Schelling (as quoted above) conceived that unity of nature and general law of development which is now called the doctrine of evolution.

In England Erasmus Darwin (Zoonomia, published in 1794-96), in France Lamarck (Philosophie Zoologique,

1809) and Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire (Principes de Philosophie Zoologique, 1830), and in Germany Oken (Lehrbuch der Natur-Philosophie, 1809-11), Goethe (Zur Natur Wiss- ensch., Stuttgart, 1817), and Treviranus (Biologie, 1802-5) were the authors of more or less complete systems of a philosophy of nature in which living things were regarded as the outcome of natural law, that is, of the same general processes which had produced the inanimate universe. The “Natur-philosophen,” as they were called in Ger- many, demand the fullest recognition and esteem. But, just in proportion as the ‘“Natur-philosophen” failed to produce an immediate effect on the study of zoology by their theory of natural development, so was the doctrine of evolution itself deprived of completeness and of the most important demonstration of its laws by the long- continued delay in the final introduction of biology into the area of that doctrine.

Darwin by his discovery of the mechanical principle of organic evolution, namely, the survival of the fittest in the struggle for existence, completed the doctrine of evolution,

ZOROASTER, one of the great teachers of the East, the founder of what was the national religion of the Perso- Iranian people from the time of the Achzmenidz to the close of the Sasanian period. The name (Zwpodorpys) is the Greek form of the old Iranian Zarathushtra and the new Persian Zardusht; it seems to mean "possessor of old camels."

Zoroaster was already famous in classical antiquity as the founder of the widely renowned wisdom of the Magi. The later Greek writers place him with almost one consent in the east of Iran, and more particularly in Bactria. The name is not mentioned by Herodotus in his sketch of the Medo-Persian religion (i. 131 sg.), but it occurs in a fragment (29) of the earlier writer Xanthus. Plato calls Zoroaster the founder of the doctrine of the Magi and a son of Oromazes. According to Hermodorus, one of Plato's disciples, he was a Persian, the first Magian ; according to Hermippus, a Bactrian; according to Trogus Pompeius, even king of the Bactrians and founder of the Magian art and knowledge of the stars; according to Diodorus, an Arian, that is, a native of east Iran. A few details as to his life are also given. Thus, according to Pliny, he laughed on the very day of his birth—a statement found also in the Zardusht-Ndma—and for thirty years he lived in the wilderness upon cheese. Plutarch speaks of his intercourse with the deity and compares him with Lycurgus and Numa. Dio Chrysostom, Plutarch's contemporary, declares that neither Homer nor Hesiod sang of the chariot and horses of Zeus so worthily as Zoroaster, of whom the Persians tell that out of love to wisdom and righteousness he withdrew himself from men and lived in solitude upon a mountain. The mountain was burnt up, but Zoroaster escaped uninjured and spoke to the multitude. His struggle with Semiramis seems to be an invention of Ctesias. Plutarch, drawing partly on Theopompus, speaks of his religion in his Isis and Osiris (cc. 46 and 47),

Ancient writers differ greatly as to Zoroaster's date. Ctesias, as we have seen, makes him a contemporary of Semiramis. Hermippus of Smyrna places him 5000 years before the Trojan War, Xanthus 6000 years before Xerxes. Aristotle assigned him a similar antiquity. Agathias remarks (ii. 24) with perfect truth that it is no longer possible to determine with any certainty when he lived and legislated. 'The Persians," he adds, "say that Zoro- aster lived under Hystaspes, but do not make it clear whether by

this name they mean the father of Darius or another Hystaspes. But, whatever may have been his date, he was their teacher and instructor in the Magian

| and gave it that unity and authority which was necessary in order that it should reform the whole range of philo- sophy. The detailed consequences of that new depart- ure in philosophy have yet to be worked out. Its most important initial conception is the derivation of man by natural processes from ape-like ancestors, and the conse- quent derivation of his mental and moral qualities by the operation of the struggle for existence and natural selection from the mental and moral qualities of animals. Not the least important of the studies thus initiated is that of the evolution of philosophy itself. Zoology thus finally arrives through Darwin at its crowning development: it touches and may even be said to comprise the history of man, socio- logy, and psychology.

Bibliography.—Engelmann, Bibliotheca Historico-Naturalis, vol. i., 1846 (being a list of the separate works and academical memoirs relating to zoology published between 1700 and 1846); Carus and Engelmann, Bibl. Zoologica, Leipsic, 1861 (a similar list of works published between 1846 and 1861); J. V. Carus, Gesch. d. Zoologie,

Munich, 1872; and L. Agassiz, dn Essay on Classification, London, 1859. (E. RB. L.)

| religion." All classical antiquity, however, without a dis- sentient voice speaks of Zoroaster as an historical person.

He is nowhere mentioned in the cuneiform inscriptions of the Achzemenide, although Darius and his successors were without doubt devoted adherents of Zoroastrianism. Very little value can be attached to the fabulous narratives concerning him in the later Persian and Parsee literature, the Shah-Nadma and the Zardusht-Ndma (13th century) ; and the information of the Pahlavi books is very scanty. The Zend-Avesta alone gives abundant details, which, in part at least, may be regarded as authentic.

Before proceeding to compile from these a brief sketch of the life and doctrine of Zoroaster it will be well that we should first look at the question whether we are cntitled to regard him as an his- torical character at all. For Zoroaster too, like his great fellow- teacher Buddha, has fallen under the ban of modern scepticism. According to Darmesteter and Eduard Meyer, the Parsee saint is a mere myth, a divinity invested with hnman attributes, an incarnation of the storm-god, who with his divine word, the thundcr, cones down from heaven and smites the demons. Darmesteter, however, has failed to realize sufficiently the distinction between the Zoroaster of the later Avesta and the Zoroaster of the Gathas. It cannot be denied that in the later Avesta, and still more in writings of more recent date, he is presented in a supernatural light and invested with superhuman powers. At his appearing all nature rejoices (Yasht 13, 93); he enters into conflict with the demons and rids the earth of their presence (Yasht 17, 19); Satan approaches him as tempter to make him renounce his faith (Vd., 19, 6). The Zar- dusht-Ndma is full of miracles and miraculous deliverances wrought by Zoroaster. But it is quite otherwise in the Gathas.

The Gathas alone within the Avesta make any claim to be the ipsissima verba of the prophet; in the rest of that work they are put into Zoroastcr's own mouth (Yasna, 9, 1) and are expressly called "the Gathas of the holy Zoroaster" (Yasna, 57, 8). The litanics of the Yasna, and the Yashts, refer to him as a personage belonging to a remote antiquity. The Vendidad also merely gives accounts of the dialogues between Ormuzd and Zoroaster. The Gathas alone claim to be authentic utterances of Zoroaster, his genuine expressions in presence of the assembled church.

The person too of the Zoroaster whom we meet with in these hymns differs ¢oto celo from the Zoroaster of the younger Avesta. Heisthe exact opposite of the miraculous personage of later legend, ——a mere man, standing always on the solid ground of reality, whose only arms are trust in his God and the protection of his powerful allies. And at times his position is precarious enough. He whom we hear in the Gath4s has had to face, not merely all forms of out- ward opposition and the unbelief and lukewarmness of adherents, but also the inward misgivings of his own heart as to the truth and final victory of his causc. At one time hope, at

another despond- ency, now assured confidence, now doubt and despair, here a firm faith in the speedy coming of the kingdom of heaven, there the thought of taking refuge by flight,—such is the range of the emotions which find their immediate expression in these hymns. And the whole breathes such a genuine originality, all is psycho- logically so accurate and just, the earliest beginnings of the new religious movement, the childhood of a new community of faith, are reflected so naturally in them all, that it is impossible for

ma za ieee 6 6 ae ee ee EEE ——— ee

AZAQOROASTER

a moment to think of a later period of composition by a priesthood whom we know to have been devoid of any historical sense, and incapable of reconstructing for themselves the spiritual conditions under which Zoroaster lived. As soon as the position has been fully mastered—that in the Gathas we have firm historical ground on which Zoroaster and his surroundings may rest, that here we have the beginnings of the Zoroastrian religion—then it becomes impossible to answer otherwise than affirmatively every general question as to the historical character of Zoroaster. On the other hand, we mnst not expect too much from the Gathis in the way of definite detail. They give no historical acconnt of the life and teach- ing of their prophet, but rather are, so to say, versus memoriales, which recapitulate the main points of interest, often again in an allusive way. It must be remembered too that their extent is but limited.

As to the birthplace of Zoroaster the Avesta is silent. In later tradition two places contended for this honour : the older and more widely spread story made him a native of Rai (Rhagz) in. Media, another of Shiz, the capital of Atropatene, also in Media. It is hard to decide whether both traditions rest merely upon priestly pretensions of a later date or whether one of them is not perhaps authentic. According to Yasna, 19, 18, the "zarathushtrotema" or supreme head of the Zoroastrian priesthood had at a later (Median or Sasanian ?) time his residence in Rhage. But there is a passage in even the Gathas (Y., 53, 9) which seems to contain a lurking allusion to Rhage; unfortu- nately, however, both text and meaning are uncertain. However this may be, the activity of Zoroaster as

a teacher is certainly to be placed in the east of Iran. On this point also the Gathas say nothing. The later Avesta names, as the locality of his advent, "Airyanem vaéjé," a quite fabulous country, which, according to Vd., 1, 3 and 7, was not identified with Bactria. He taught under the reign of a ruler named Vishtaspa (later Gushtasp, the Greek Hystaspes), with whom and with whose court he stood in close and friendly relations. This Vishtaspa must be care- fully distinguished from Hystaspes the father of Darius. According to the epic legend, Vishtaspa was king of Bactria. Already in the later Avesta he has become a half mythical figure, the last in the series of heroes of east Iranian legend, in the arrangement of which series priestly influence is unmistakably evident. He stands at the meeting-point between the old world and the new era which begins with Zoroaster. In the Gathds he appears as a quite historical personage ; it is essentially to his power and good example that the prophet is indebted for his success. In Yasna, 53, 2, he is spoken of asa pioneer of the doctrine revealed by Ormuzd. In the relation between Zoroaster and Vish- taspa already lies the germ of the state church which after- wards became so completely subservient to the interests of the dynasty and sought its protection from it.

Among the grandees of the court of Vishtaspa mention is made of two brothers Frashaoshtra and Jamaspa; the latter, according to the later legend, was the minister of Vishtaspa. Zoroaster was nearly related to both ; his wife Hvévi seems to have been their sister, and the husband of her daughter, Pourucista, was a son of Jamadspa. Apart from this connexion, the new prophet relies especially upon his own kindred (hvaétush) and their followers (airy- aman). His first disciple, Maidhyéimaongha, was a rela- tion ; his father was, according to the later Avesta, Pouru- shaspa, his great-grandfather Haécataspa, and the ancestor of the whole family Spitama, for which reason Zarathushtra usually bears this surname. His sons and daughters are repeatedly spoken of. His death is, for reasons easily intelligible, nowhere inentioned in the Avesta ; in the Shah- Nédma he is said to have been murdered at the altar by the Turanians in the storming of Balkh.

We are quite in the dark as to the date of Zoroaster ; King Visht4spa has no place in any historical chronology, and the Gathas give no hint on the

subject. But at any rate he must have lived long before Cyrus, by whose time

821

the new religion had already become established in western Tran (Nic. Damasc., fr. 66). Duncker places him about the year 1000 B.c. Merely conjectural also is the opinion once orally expressed by Gutschmid that Zoroaster may have been a contemporary of Moses, thus belonging, according to Gutschmid's view, to about the 14th century B.c.,—a period of great religious activity throughout western Asia.

It was a new religion that Zoroaster taught. This must not, however, be taken as meaning that everything he taught came, so to say, out of his own head. His doctrine was a product of the time, and had its roots in the nature and history of the people to which he belonged. Usually he is spoken of as a reformer of the old Iranian faith. But in order to be sure of this it would be necessary first to know something about the nature of that faith as it existed before he arose. Was it still essentially the same as that of the nearly-allied ancient Hindus, as found in the Rag- Vedat To this question no distinct answer is forthcom- ing ; we are ignorant as to how far the way had been pre- pared for Zoroastrianism or how far it was wholly new. But still there is room for conjecture as to what it was that gave the prophet the first impulse and occasion for his work.

The most striking difference between Zoroaster's doctrine of God and the old religion of India lies in this, that, while in the Avesta the evil spirits are called daéva (Modern Persian div), the Aryans of India, on the other hand, in common with the Italians, Celts, and Letts, gave the name of déva to their good spirits, the spirits of light. An alternative designation for deity in the fig-Veda is asura. In the more recent hymns of the Aig-Veda and in later India, on the other hand, only ew spirits are understood by asurds, while in Iran the corresponding word ahura was, and ever has continued to be, the designation of God the Lord, especially of the supreme God, with the epithet of Mazddo (the Wise). Thus ahura-daéva, déva-asura in Zoroastrian and in later Brahman theology are in their meanings exactly opposed. This difference no one has as yet satisfactorily accounted for, and yet it supplies the key to the doctrine of Zoroaster.

The difference proceeded from an old distinction between the ideas deva and asura. An original ideal difference, a different conception of god associated with the two words, grew in the two lands into a sharp antithesis, a formal conflict, but in opposite senses. In India the development still admits of being traced. In the older Rig-Veda the difference is latent. Here a god is spoken of as déva, but not every déva is an asura. Asura is some- thing which is attributed only to certain particular gods as a special attribute, notably to Varuna, though also to others, such as Indra, but only by the so-called "' katheno- theism" of the Vedic religion. On the other hand, it is expressly stated that in the case of Indra the dignity of an asura was only a conferred one (fig-V., 6, 10, 2). In Feg- Veda, 4, 42 Varuna claims as against Indra the priority in the asura dignity. This hymn, like 10, 124, is of import- ance for the whole question. The contrast there implied between Varuna and Indra, the rivalry between them as to which is the greater, comes to light sometimes more strongly, sometimes less so, throughout the entire Hzg- Veda. The contrast is really in other terms the old con- trast between asura and deva, between a more spiritualistic and a more materialistic conception of deity. Asura is ethically the higher conception, deva the lower: deva is the vulgar notion of God, asura is theosophic. The super- sensuous figure of Varuna is the type of an asura, the sensuous figure of Indra the type of a deva. In the Jug- Veda, Varuna, the old king of the gods, is going down, while Indra, the popular national god, is in the ascendant. Along with Varuna, but in a still higher degree, the very

conception of asura goes down; it becomes unmodern, obsolete, and acquires an undesirable flavour. The asuras thus come to form a distinct group of celestial beings men- tioned along with the devas (A.-V., 10, 10, 26): they become in rank inferior to the devas (A.-V., 6, 86, 3) and receive the designation of asurd adevés—asuras that are no devas ; and from this it is but a short step to the "aswras that are opposed to the gods."

The old contrast between asura and deva was wrought out and accentuated quite differently on Iranian soil. While in India the entire revolution took place in a blood- less manner wholly within the realm of

ideas, the old antithesis led to an open quarrel among the Aryans of Iran. In the background of the picture of Zoroaster's times set before us in the G4thds we see the people divided between two opposing and hostile cults, the watchwords of which are ahura on the one hand and daéva on the other. How it is that matters had come to this pass remains obscure, for we have no source of information to take us further back. The opposing parties are not separated by distance in space or by differing nationality, but occur side by side. "Hard by the believer in ahura dwells the worshipper of the daévas," complains Zoroaster. The en- tire people seems broken up by the religious difference.

It is difficult to focus the scattered references in the Gathas so as to obtain a clear picture of the time. Only this much is clear, that in Zoroaster's day not two cults only but two stages of culture are struggling for the mastery. The ahkura worshippers represent the higher phase; they are breeders of cattle, and the care of the cow is to them a sacred duty. The worshippers of the daévas maltreat the animal and slaughter it in their sacrifices. We perceive that the higher ethical tendency of the old asura faith is producing its effects in the higher degree of culture of the believers in Ahura, while the worshippers of the daévas stand on a lower grade.

It is to this period of religious ferment that Zoroaster's appearance on the scene belongs. It is not he who has evoked this religious conflict of parties, as the common assumption is, and just as little is it he who in Ahura with the epithet of Mazdao offers a new god to his people. He strikes decisively into the existing struggle, mounts to the position of spiritual leader of the akura party and makes the battle a victory. As zaotd (Indian hotd), for so he calls himself, the first in rank of the old Aryan priests, he had all the greater opportunity to make his views known in matters of religion. Mankind had been brought face to face with a critical choice, that of electing between two radically opposed confessions of faith, without having any clearness as to the lasting consequences of the momentous step. He determines to save them, to lead them to a right choice, for he sees further than they, and believes himself to be initiated into the secrets of the god- head and of the life to come. What the other party worship as gods under the name of daéva are in reality powers by

whom unwitting mankind are led to their destruction,—evil powers, false gods, devils. Such is the position from which all his teaching starts; and thus the change in the conception of daéva was a natural develop- ment. From the daévas proceeds all the evil in the world. But his speculation does not stop here. The daévas them- selves anon become manifest to him as being but the instru- ments of a higher principle, called by him for the most part Druj (falsehood, deception), and more rarely Angré Mainyush, that is the spirit enemy, Ahriman. This Ahri- man or evil principle is the most characteristic product of Zoroastrian speculation. From the schism or religious dualism of his time he derived the idea of that dualistic scheme of the universe which has impressed its character upon the whole of the religion called by his name.

ZO 8 0 AsT © RK

ZOROASTRIAN DOCTRINE.

The fundamental idea of the Zoroastrian ereed is dualistic. At the beginning of things there existed two spirits—Ahur6é Mazdao (Ormuzd) and Angré Mainyush (Ahriman)—who represented good and evil (Yasna, 30, 3). The existence of evil in the world is thus presupposed from all eternity. Both spirits possess ercative power, which manifests itself in the one positively and in the other nega- tively. Ormuzd is light and life and all that is pure and good,— in the ethieal world law, order, and truth; his antithesis is dark- ness, filth, death, all that is evil in the world, lawlessness, and lies. When the two are spoken of as yéma ("a pair"), this is not to be interpreted as meaning that they are twins:} it simply denotes a duality, an opposed eouple, a dvandva. The two spirits had until then counterbalaneed one another. The ultimate triumph of the good spirit is an ethical demand of the religious consciousness and the quintessence of Zoroaster's revelation.

The evil spirit with his wicked hosts appears in the Gathds much less endowed with the attributes of personality than does Ahura Mazda. Within the world of the good Ormuzd is Lord and God alone. In this sense Zoroastrianism is often referred to as the faith of Ormuzd or as Mazdaism. Ormuzd in his exalted majesty is the ideal figure of an Oriental king. Of other gods beside him the doetrine of the Gathds knows

nothing. The natural and symbolical gods of the popular belief have no place in it. Yet Ormuzd is not alone in his doings and conflicts, but has in con- junction with hiinself a number of genii—for the most part per- sonifieations of ethical ideas. These are his creatures, his instru- ments, servants, and assistants, like the ministers of an autoeratic sovereign. They are comprehended under the general name of ameshd spentd ('immortal holy ones") and are the prototypes of the seven amshaspands of a later date. These are—(1) Ashem, afterwards Ashem Vahishtem (Plutareh's 4\j0eva), corresponding to all that is true, good, and right,— ideas practically identical for Zoroaster, and the embodiment of all that is true, good, and right, upright law and rule; (2) Vohu Mané (etvo), good sense, 2.¢., the good principle, the idea of the good, the principle that works in man inclining him to what is good; (3) Khshathrem, afterwards Khshathrem Vairim (etvoula), the power and kingdom of Ormuzd, which have subsisted from the first but not in integral eompleteness, the evil having crept in like the tares among the wheat: the time is yet to come when it shall be fully manifested in all its unelouded majesty ; (4) Armaiti (co¢ia), or the spirit of docility and obedience, spoken of as daughter of Ormuzd and regarded as having her abode upon the earth ; (5) Haurvatat (aAooros), perfeetion ; (6) Ameretatat, immortality. Other ministering angels are Géush Tashan ("the ereator of the cow"), Géush Urvan ("the genius and defender of animals"), and the holy spirit of Ormuzd, often thought of as having personal existence. Of the elements fire alone ('the son of Ahura Mazda") receives personification and figures as his ally.*

As soon as the two at first absolutely separate spirits (comp. Bundahish, 1, 4) eneounter one another, their creative activity and at the saine time their permanent conflict begin. The history of this conflict is the history of the world. A great cleft runs right through the world: all creation divides itself into that which is Ahura's and that whieh is Ahriman's. Not that the two spirits carry on the struggle in person ; they leave it to be fought out by their respective creations and creatures which they send into the field. The field of battle is the present world.

In the centre of battle is man ; his soul is the object of the war. Man is a ereation of Ormuzd, who therefore has the right to eall him to aecount. But Ormuzd created him free in his determina- tions and in his actions,

wherefore he is accessible to the influences of the evil powers. This freedom of the will is clearly expressed in Yasna, 31,11: "Since thou, O Mazda, didst at the first ereate our being and our souls in accordanee with thy mind, and didst create our understanding and our life together with the body, and works and words in whieh man aceording to his own will can frame his confession, the liar and the truth-speaker alike lay hold of the word, the knowing and the ignorant each after his own heart and under- standing, Armaiti searches, following thy spirit, where errors are found." Man takes part in this conflict by all his life and activity in the world. By a true confession of faith, by every good deed, by continually keeping pure his body and his soul, he impairs the power of Satan and strengthens the might of goodness, and estab- lishes a claim for reward upon Ormuzd; by a false confession, by every evil deed and defilement, he increases the evil and renders serviee to Satan.

The life of man falls into two parts,—its earthly portion and that which is lived beyond the grave. The lot assigned to him after death is the result and consequence of his life upon earth. No religion has so elearly grasped the ideas of guilt and of merit. On the works of men here below a striet reckoning will be held in ee ee ee erie ee oe

1 Later sects sought to rise from the dualism to a higher unity. Thus the Zarvanites represented Ormuzd and Ahriman as twin sons proceeding from the fundamental principle of all, Zrvana Akarana, or limitless time.

heaven (according to later represcntations by Rashnu and Mithra). All thoughts, words, and dceds of each are entered in the book as separate items (ddthra, Y., 31, 14; Vend., 19, 27), all the evil works as debts (ishudé). Wicked actions cannot be undone, but in the heavenly account can be counterbalanced by a surplus of good works. It is only in this sense that an evil deed can be atoned for by a good one. Of a remission of sins the doctrine of Zoroaster knows nothing. After death the soul arrives at the cinvato pere- tush or accountant's bridge over which lies the way to heaven. Here the statement of his life account is made out. If he has a balance of good works in his favour, he passes forthwith into paradise (Garé demdna) and the blessed life. If his evil works outweigh his good he

falls finally under the power of Satan, and the pains of hell are his portion for ever. Should the evil and the good be equally balanced, the soul passes into an intermediate stage of existence (the Haméstakdns of the Pahlavi books) and his final lot is not decided until the last judgment. This court of reckoning, the judicium particulare, is called éka. The course of inexorable law cannot be turned aside by any sacrifice or offering, nor yet evcn by the free grace of God.

But man has been smitten with blindness and ignorance: he knows neither the eternal law nor the things which await him after death. He allows himself only too easily to be ensnared by the craft of the evil powers who seek to ruin his future existence. He worships and serves false gods, being unable to distinguish between truth and lies. Therefore it is that Ormuzd in his grace determined to open the cyes of mankind by sending a prophet to lead them by the right way, the way of salvation. According to later legend (Vd., 2, 1), Ormuzd at first wished to entrust this task to Yima (Jemshid), the ideal of an Iranian king. But Yima, the secular man, felt himself unfitted for it and declined it. He con- tented himself therefore with establishing in his paradise (vara) a heavenly kingdom in miniature, to serve at the same time as a pattern for the heavenly kingdom that was to come. Zoroaster at last, as being a spiritual man, was found fit for the mission. Zoroaster experienced within himself the inward call to seek the amelioration of mankind and their deliverance from everlasting ruin, and regarded this inward impulse, intensified as it was by means of dreams and visions, as being the call addressed to him by God Himself. Like Mohammed after him he often speaks of his con- versations with God. He calls himself most frequently manthran ("prophet"), ratw ("spiritual authority"), and saoshyant (meaning "he who will deliver," that is to say, when men come to be judged according to their deeds).

The full contents of his dogmatic and ethical teaching we can- not gather from the Gathas. He speaks for the most part only in general references of the divine commands and of good and evil works. Among the former those most inculcated are renunciation of Satan, adoration of Ormuzd, purity of soul and body, and care of the cow. We learn little otherwise regarding the practices con- nected with his doctrines. A ceremonial

worship is hardly men- tioned. He speaks more in the character of prophet than in that of lawgiver. The contents of the Gathas are essentially eschatological. Revelations concerning the last things and the future lot, whether bliss or woe, of human souls, promises for true believers, threaten- ings for misbelievers, his firm confidence as to the future triumph of the good—such are the themes continually dwelt on with endless variations.

It was not without special reason, Zoroaster believed, that the calling of a prophet should have taken place precisely when it did. It was, he held, the final appeal of Ormuzd to mankind at large. Like John the Baptist and the Apostles of Jesus, Zoroaster also believed that the fulness of time was near, that the kingdom of heaven was at hand. Through the whole of the Gathis runs the pious hope that the end of the present world is not far off. He himself hopes along with his followers to live to see the decisive turn of things, the dawn of the new and better eon. Ormuzd will summon together all his powers for a final decisive struggle and break the power of evil for ever; by his help the faithful will achieve the victory over their detested enemies, the daéva worshippers, and render them powerless. Thereupon Ormuzd will hold a judictum universale (vtdditi) upon all mankind and judge strictly according to justice, punish the wicked, and assign to the good the hoped-for reward. Satan will be cast, along with all those who have been delivered over to him to suffer the pains of hell, into the abyss, where he will thénceforward lie powerless. Forthwith begins the one undivided kingdom of God in heaven and on earth. This is called, sometimes the good kingdom, sometimes simply the kingdom. Here the sun will for ever shine, and all the pious and faithful will live a happy life, that no evil power can disturb, in the fellowship of Ormuzd and his angels for ever.

Zoroaster's teachings show him to have been a man of a highly speculative turn, faithful, however, with all his originality, to the Iranian national character. With zeal for the faith, and boldness and energy, he combined diplomatic skill in his dealings with his exalted protectors. His thinking is consecutive, self-restrained, practical, devoid on the whole of all that might be called fantastic

and excessive. His form of expression is tangible and concrcte. His system is constructed on a clearly conceived plan.

History and Later Development of Zoroastrianism.—F¥or the great mass of the people Zoroaster's doctrine was too abstract and spirit- ualistic. Popular faith instinctively and naturally turns to con- crete plastic forms of godhead borrowed from surrounding nature, and thus it came to pass that anumber of the old Aryan divinities, whom the newteaching had driven into the background, were again restored to their former rank,—especially Mithra, the sun-god. Besides hii, in the younger Avesta, Anahita (Anditis), the goddess of the waters, Tishtrya (Sirius), and other heavenly bodies are in- voked with special preference. The Gathas know nothing of a new belief which afterwards arose in the fravashi, or guardian angels of the faithful. Fravashi properly means "confession of faith," and when personified comes to be regarded as a protecting spirit. Un- believers have no fravashi.

On the basis of the new teaching arose a widely spread priesthood (dthravané) who systematized the doctrines, organized and carried on the worship, and laid down the minutely elaborated laws for the purifying and keeping pure of soul and body which are met with in the Vendidad. To the last-named belong in particular the numerous ablutions, bodily chastisements, love of truth, agriculture, protection of useful animals, as dogs and cattle, the destruction of noxious animals, and the prohibition either to burn or to bury the dead. In the worship the drink prepared from the haoma (Indian soma) plant had a prominent place. The last things and the end of the world are relegatcd to the close of a long period of time (3000 years after Zoroaster), when a new Saoshyant is to be born of the seed of Zoroaster, the dead are to come to life, and a new incor- ruptible world to begin.

The religion of Zoroaster, broadly speaking, never spread beyond the limits of Iran, although some isolated Turanian stems can be reckoned among those who profess it. From the East it doubtless passed in the first instance into Mcdia and thence into Persia proper (comp. Persia, vol. xviii. p."564). In the Persians of Herodotus's time we still see the new

proselytes who have indeed accepted the creed, but not yet without reserve all the religious usages which accompany it, and least of all those which run completely counter to sacred and immemorial traditions of their time-honoured customs. According to Herodotus (i. 140), they still refrained from exposing, at least from openly exposing, their dead to dogs and vultures, but continued to bury them. This was practised by the Magi only, that is, by the priesthood, in conformity with the priestly laws. The Persians, however, made so far a concession to their adopted religion that they enveloped their dead bodies in wax, so that the earth might not be defiled.

After the fall of the Achemenide (331 B.c.) Zoroastrianism lost greatly in power and dignity. It was subsequently rehabilitated, however, by the Sasanians, under whom it reached its highest prosperity. Protected by this dynasty, the priesthood developed into a completely organized state church, which was able to employ the power of the state in enforcing strict compliance with the re- ligious law-book hitherto enjoined by their unaided efforts only. The formation of sects was at this period not infrequent (comp. Manicuazism). The Mohammedan invasion (636), with the terrible persecutions of the following centuries, was the death-blow of Zoroastrianism. In Persia itself only a few followers of Zoroaster are now found (in Kirman and Yazd). The Parsrxs (q.v.) in and around Bombay hold by Zoroaster as their prophet and by the ancient religious usages, but their doctrine has reached the stage of a pure monotheisn1.

Literature.—See under ZEND-AvESsTA; also Windischmann, Zoroustrische Studien, Berlin, 1863. (K. G.)

ZOSIMUS, a Greek historical writer, held public office (Photius describes him as "comes et exadvocatus fisci") at Constantinople some time in the first half of the 5th century. His History, which is mainly a compilation from previous authors (Herennius Dexippus, Eunapius, Olympio- dorus), consists of six books: the first sketches very briefly the history of the early emperors from Augustus to Dio- eletian (305); the second, third, and fourth deal more copiously with the period from the accession of Constantius and Galerius to the death of Theodosius; the fifth and sixth cover the period between 395 and 410. The work is apparently unfinished.

The style is characterized by Photius as concise, clear,and pure. The historian's object was to account for the decline of the Roman empire from the pagan point of view, and in this undertaking he has at various points treated the Christians with some unfairness.

A Latin version of the History was published by Leunclavius in 1576 (Basel, fol.), and in 1581 H. Stephanus added the Greek text of the first two books to his edition of Herodian. All the six books were published by Sylburgius in vol. iii. of his Romanze Historiz

Seriptores Greet Minores (Frankfort, 1590). There have been several subsequent editions ; that of Reitemeier (Leipsic, 1784) was re- edited by Bekker for Niebuhr's Corpus Scriptorwm Historiz By- zantine (Bonn, 1837). Zosimus was translated into French by Consin in 1678; into English, anonymously, in 1684; and into German by Seybold and Heyler in 1804-5.

ZOSIMUS, bishop of Rome from 18th March 417 to 25th December 418, succeeded Innocent I. and was fol- lowed by Boniface I. For his attitude in the Pelagian controversy, see PeLacrus (vol. xviii. p. 472). He took a decided part in the protracted dispute in Gaul as to the jurisdiction of the see of Arles over that of Vienne, giving energetic decisions in favour of the former, but without

settling the controversy.

ZOSTEROPS,! originally the scientific name of a genus of birds founded by Vigors and Horsfield (Trans. Linn. Society, xv. p. 235) on an Australian species called by them Z. dorsalis, but subsequently shown to be identical with the Certhia cerulescens, and also with the Sylvia lateralis, previously described by Latham. Latterly the name has been Anglicized in the same sense, and, whether as a scientific or a vernacular term, applied to a great number of species? of little birds which inhabit for the most part the tropical districts of the Old World, from Africa to most of the islands in the Indian and Pacific Oceans, and northwards in Asia through India and China to Amurland and Japan.

The birds of this group are mostly of unpretending appearance, the plumage above being generally either mouse-coloured or greenish olive ; but some are sufficiently varied by the white or bright yellow of their throat, breast, or lower parts, and several have the flanks of a more or less lively bay. It is remarkable that several islands are inhabited by two perfectly distinct species, one belonging to the brown and the other to the grecn section, the former being wholly insular. The greater number of species seem to be confined to single islands, often of very small area, but others have a very wide dis- tribution, and much interest has been excited by the undoubted fact that the type-species, 7. exwrulescens, has of late years largely ex- tended its range. First described from New South Wales, where it is very plentiful, it had been long known to inhabit all the eastern part of Australia. In 1856 it was noticed by naturalists as occur- ring in the South Island of New Zealand, when it became known to the Maorics by a name signifying "Stranger," and to the English settlers as the "Blight-bird," from its clearing the fruit-trees of a blight by which they had lately been affected. It soon after appeared in the North Island, where it speedily became common, and it has thence not only spread to the Chatham Islands, but, as Sir Walter Buller states (Birds N. Zealand, ed. 2, i. p. 79), it has been met with in considerable numbers 300 miles from land, as though in search of new countries to colonize. Yet this author be- lieves it to be indigenous to the west coast of the South Island, and Sir James Hector joins in that opinion. If they be right, it is, however, pretty certain that until the year before mentioned it niust have been confined to an extremely small district, and the only assignable cause of its spreading so rapidly, when it did extend its range, is that of a large surplus population unable to find a living at home. It is known to propagate at a high rate of increase, and at times numbers have been found dead, apparently for want of food. In any case it is obvious that this Zosterops must be a compara- tively modern settler in New Zealand.+4*

All the species of Zosterops are sociable, consorting in large flocks, which only separate on the approach of the pairing season. They build nests, described as being variously placed—sometimes suspended from a horizontal fork and sometimes fixed in an upright crotch—and lay (so far as is known) pale blue, spotless eggs, thereby differing wholly from several of the groups of birds to which they have been thought allied.

Though mainly insectivorous, the birds of this genus will eat fruits of various kinds and in such quantities

1 The derivation is {wor#p-npos and &y, whence the word should be pronounced with all the vowels long. 'The allusion is to the ring of white feathers round the eyes, which is very conspicuous in many species.

: In 1883 Mr Sharpe (Cat. B. Brit. Museum, ix. pp. 146-208) ad- mitted 85 species, besides 3 more which he had not been able to examine.

3 By most English-speaking people in various parts of the world

the prevalent species of Zosterops is commonly called " White-eye" or i Silver-eye " from the feature before mentioned. __ Sir W. Buller says that he and Mr Gould were able to piek ont N ew-Zealand examples from a series otherwise made up of Australian Specimens. Hence it would seem as if a slight amount of differenti- ation had been set up; but the variation would doubtless have been greater had the species been an ancient eolonist.*

ZOS—ZSC

as to be at times injurious. The habits of Z. exrulescens have been well described by Sir W. Buller (wt supra), and those of a species peculiar to Ceylon, 7. eeylonensis, by Col. Legge (B. Ceylon, p. 586), while those of the widely-ranging Indian Z. palpebrosa and of the South-African Z. capensis have been succinctly treated by Jerdon (B. India, ii. p. 266) and Mr Layard (B. South Afriea, p. 116) re- spectively.

It is a remarkable and, if capable of explanation, would doubtless be an instructive fact that the largest known species of the genus, Z. albigularis, measuring nearly 6 inches in length, is confined to so small a spot as Norfolk Island, where also another, 7. tenwz- rostris, not much less in size, occurs; while a third, of intermediate stature, Z. strenua, inhabits the still smaller Lord Howe's Island. A fourth, Z. vatensis, but little inferior in bulk, is found on one of the New Hebrides ; but, after these giants of their kind, the rest fall off considerably, being from one-fifth to one-third

less in length, and Pome of the smaller species hardly exceed 34 inches from end to end.

The affinities of the genus Zosterops are by no means clear. Placed by some writers, if not systematists, with the Paride (cf. Titmouse), by others among the Jfelv- phagide (cf. Honzy-Eater), and again by others with the Nectariniide (cf. SUNBIRD), the structure of the tongue, as shown by Dr Gadow (Proc. Zool. Society, 1883, pp. 63, 68, pl. xvi. fig. 2), entirely removes it from the first and third, and from most of the forms generally included among the second. On the whole it seems safest to regard the genus, at least provisionally, as the type of a distinct Family — Zosteropide—as Families go among Passerine birds; but, whether the Australian genera Aelithreptus and Plectrorhamphus (otherwise Plectrorhyncha) should be in- cluded under that heading, as has been done, remains to be proved, and in the meanwhile may be reasonably doubted. (A. N.)

ZOUCH, Ricwarp (c. 1590-1661), a distinguished writer on civil and international law, was born at Anstey, Wiltshire, about the year 1590. He was educated at Winchester and afterwards at Oxford, where he became a fellow of New College in 1609. In 1613 he published a poem entitled The Dove, or Passages of Cosmography, which he dedicated to his relative Edward, Lord Zouch, warden of the Cinque Ports. He was admitted at Doctor's Commons in January 1618, commenced LL.D. in April 1619, and was appointed regius professor of law at Oxford in 1620. In 1625 he became principal of St Alban Hall and chancellor of the diocese of Oxford; in 1641 he was made judge of the High Court of Admiralty. Under the Commonwealth, having submitted to the Parliamentary visitors, he retained his university appointments, though not his judgeship ; this last he resumed at the Restoration, dying soon afterwards at his apartments in Doctor's Commons, London, on 1st March 1661.

He published Elementa jurisprudentiz (1629), Deseriptio juris et judieit feudalis, seeundum consuetudines Mediolani et Normanniz, pro introductione ad jurisprudentiam Anglicanam (1684), Deseriptio

juris et judieti temporalis, seeundum consuetudines feudales et Nor-

mannieas (1636), Deseriptio juris et judieti eeclesiastie, secundum canones et consuetudines Anglicanas (1636), Deseriptiones juris et judieti sacri, .. . militaris, .. . maritimi (1640), Juris et judien fecialis sive juris inter gentes . . . explicatio (1650), and Solutio queestionis de legati delinquentis judice eompetente (1657). In virtue of the last two he has the distinction of being one of the earliest systematic writers on international law.

ZSCHOKKE, Joann Hernricu Dantex (1771-1848), German author, was born at Magdeburg on 22d March 1771. He was educated at the cloister school of his native place and at the gymnasium of Altstidt. Asa youth he spent some time with a company of strolling players, but afterwards he attended the university of Frankfort-on-the- Oder, where, in 1792, he became a privat-docent. He created much sensation by two extravagant plays, Abdllzno, der grosse Bandit (1794) and Julius von Sassen (1796), the success of which shows how urgent was the need for the elevating influence of the dramatic writings of Goethe and Schiller. The Prussian Government having declined

to make him a full professor, Zschokke in 1795, after some time spent in travel, settled in the Grisons, where, in asso- ciation with the burgomaster Tscharner, he conducted an educational institution in the castle of Reichenau. In recognition of his services the authorities of the Grisons gave him the rights of a citizen, and in 1798 he associated his name permanently with the country by the publica- tion of his Geschichte des Freistaats der drei Biinde in hétien. The political disturbances of this year compelled him to close his institution; but, being a man of great resource and energy, he was able, during the revolutionary period which now began in Switzerland, to enter upon a new and more important career. He was sent asa deputy to Aarau, where he was made head of the educational de- partment. Afterwards he was sent as Government com- missioner to Unterwalden, and his authority was ultimately extended over the cantons of Uri, Schwyz, and Zug. In this high office Zschokke distinguished himself by the vigour of his administration and by the enthusiasm with which he devoted himself to the promotion of the interests of the poorer

classes of the community. In 1800 he re- organized the institutions of the Italian cantons, and then he became lieutenant-governor of the canton of Basel. Zschokke retired for a while from public life when the central Government at Bern proposed to re-establish the federal system, but after the changes effected by Bonaparte he entered the service of the canton of Aargau, with which he remained connected. In 1801 he attracted attention by his Geschichte vom Kampfe und Untergange der schweiz- erischen Berg- und Wald-Cantone. Through his Schweizer- bote, the publication of which began in 1804, he exercised a wholesome influence on public affairs ; and the like may be said of his Afiscellen der neuesten Weltkunde, issued from 1807 to 1813. In 1811 he also started a monthly peri- odical, the Hrheiterungen. He wrote various historical works, the most important of which is Des Schweizerlandes Geschichte fir das Schweizervolk, published in 1822. He was also the author of Bilder aus der Schweiz, and of a series of popular tales which greatly extended his reputa- tion,— Der Creole, Alamontade, Jonathan Frock, Das Gold- macherdorf, and Meister Jordan. In Stunden der Andacht, which was widely read, he expounded in a rationalistic spirit what seemed to him the fundamental principles of religion and morality. Selbstschau is a kind of autobio- graphy. Zschokke was not a great original writer, but he secured for himself an eminent place in the literature of his time by his enthusiasm for modern ideas in politics and religion, by the sound, practical judgment displayed in his works, and by the energy and lucidity of his style. He died on 27th June 1848.

An edition of his selected works, in forty volumes, was issued in 1824-28. In 1851-54 an edition in thirty-five volumes was published. There are biographies of Zschokke by Miinch and by Emil Zschokke.

ZUCCARO, or ZuccuEro,! the name of two Italian painters.

I. TappEo Zuccaro (1529-1566), one of the most popular painters of the so-called Roman mannerist school, was the son of an almost unknown painter at St Angelo in Vado, called Ottaviano Zuccaro, where he was born in 1529. While yet a boy Taddeo found his way to Rome; and, though suffering great hardships from poverty and want of friends, he succeeded at an early age in gaining a knowledge of painting and in

finding patrons to employ him. His first start in life, while only seventeen years old, was due to a pupil of Correggio, named Daniele da Parma, who engaged him to assist in painting a series of frescos in a chapel at Vitto near Sora, on the borders of the Abruzzi. After that Taddeo returned to Rome in 1548, and began his career as a fresco painter, by execut-

l So spelt by Vasari.

ing a series of scenes in monochrome from the life of Furius Camillus on the front of the palace of a wealthy Roman named Jacopo Mattei. From that time his success was assured, and for the rest of his short life he was largely employed by the popes Julius III. and Paul IV., by Della Rovere, duke of Urbino, and by other rich patrons of art in Rome and elsewhere. His best frescos were an historical series painted on the walls of a new palace at Caprarola, built for Cardinal Alessandro Farnese, for which Taddeo also designed a great quantity of rich decorations in stucco relief after the style of Giulio Romano and other pupils of Raphael. Nearly all his paintings were in fresco, very large in scale, and often in chiaroscuro or monochrome; they were more remarkable for rapidity of execution and a certain boldness of style than for any higher qualities. The very great estimation in which Taddeo's frescos were held is a striking proof of the very rapid degradation of taste which took place during the second half of the 16th century. His work is mannered in style, artificial and pompous in conception, and lacks any close or accurate knowledge of the human form and its movements. The long chapter which Vasari devotes to this painter and his brother Federigo is only one of many examples of the writer's habit of giving undue prominence to the artists of his own time and school. Taddeo Zuccaro died in Rome in 1566 ; heis buried in the Pantheon, not far from Raphael.

Taddeo's easel pictures are less common than his decorative frescos. A small painting on copper of the Adoration of the Shepherds, formerly in the collection of James IJ., is now at Hampton Court ; it is a work of very small merit. The Caprarola frescos were engraved and published by Prenner, Jllustrt Fatti Farnesiani Colorits nel Real. Palazzo di Caprarola, Rome, 1748-50.

IT. Feprrico Zuccaro (1543-1609), the younger brother and pupil of Taddeo, was born in 1543. In 1550 he was placed under his brother's charge in Rome, and during his lifetime worked as his assistant ; he completed the Capra- rola frescos, which were unfinished when Taddeo died in 1566. Ina short time Federigo attained to an eminence far beyond his very limited merits as a painter, and was perhaps the most popular artist of his generation. Prob- ably no other painter has ever produced so many enormous frescos crowded with figures on the most colossal scale, all executed under the unfortunate delusion, common in his time, that grandeur of effect could be attained merely by great size combined with extravagance of attitude and ex- aggeration of every kind. Federigo's first work of this sort was the completion of the painting of the dome of the cathedral at Florence, under the patronage of the grand-duke Francesco I.; the work had been begun by the art-historian Vasari, who wrote in the most generous lan- guage about his more successful rival. The inner surface of this beautiful cupola was disfigured by Federigo in the most tasteless way. Regardless of the injury to the appar- ent scale of the interior of the church, he painted about 300 figures, each nearly 50 feet high, sprawling with violent contortions all over the surface. Happily age has so dimmed these pictures that their presence is now almost harmless.

After this achievement Federigo was recalled to Rome by Gregory XIII. to continue in the Pauline chapel of the Vatican the scheme of decoration which had been begun by Michelangelo during his failing years. A quarrel which arose between the painter and some members of the papal court led to his departure from Italy. He first visited Brussels, and there made a series of cartoons for the tapestry-weavers. Thence, in 1574, Federigo passed over to England, where his fame was already known, so that he at once received a large number of commissions to paint the portraits of various distinguished persons, among them Queen Elizabeth, Mary Queen of Scots,! Sir Nicholas

1 Engraved by Vertue. XXIV. — 104

Bacon, Sir Francis Walsingham, Lord High Admiral Howard, and others. A curious full-length portrait of Elizabeth in fancy dress, now at

Hampton Court, 1s attri- buted to this painter, though very doubtfully. Another picture in the same collection appears to be a replica of his painting of the Allegory of Calumny, as suggested by Lucian's description of a celebrated work by Apelles; it was the satire in this directed against some of his courtier enemies which was the immediate cause of the pope's dis- pleasure and Federigo's temporary exile from Rome. His success as a painter of portraits and other works in oil was more reasonable than the admiration expressed for his colossal frescos. A portrait of a Man with Two Dogs in the Pitti Palace at Florence is a work of some real merit, as is also the Dead Christ and Angels in the Borghese Gallery in Rome. After a short exile Federigo was pardoned by the pope and recalled to Rome to finish his work on the vault of the Pauline chapel. In 1585 he was invited by Philip II. of Spain to decorate the new Escorial at a yearly salary of 2000 crowns. He accepted this offer, and worked at the Escorial from January 1586 to the end of 1588, when he returned to Rome. He there founded in 1595, under a charter confirmed by Sixtus V., the Academy of St Luke, of which he was the first president. This is still the chief academy of painters in Italy, and its organization suggested to Sir Joshua Reynolds his scheme for founding the English Royal Academy.

Federigo, like his contemporary Giorgio Vasari, aimed at being an art critic and historian as well as a practical artist, but with very different success. His chief book, L' Idea de Pittori, Scultori, ed Archatettc (Turin, 1607), is a senseless mass of the most turgid bombast. Little can be said in praise of his smaller works, consisting of two volumes printed at Bologna in 1608, describing his. visit to Parma and a journey through central Italy.

Federigo was raised to the rank of a cavaliere not long before his death, which took place at Ancona in 1609.

For both Taddeo and Federigo Zuccaro, see Vasari, pt. iii., and Lanzi, Storia Pittorica, Roman School, epoch iii. (J. H. M.)

ZUG,! a canton of Switzerland, ranking as eighth in the Confederation. It includes the districts round the Lake of Egeri and on both shores of the northern half of the Lake of Zug, and is the smallest undivided canton both in area and in population. Its total area is 92°3 square miles, 75 of

which are classed as productive (forests 12°5), while of the rest 13 are covered with lakes. The highest point in the canton is the Wildspitz (5191 feet), the culminating peak of the Rossberg ridge. The popu- lation was 22,994 in 1880, an increase of 2001 on that of 1870, the numbers of men and women being nearly equal. German is the native tongue of 22,592, and 21,734 are Roman Catholics. Till 1814 Zug was in the diocese of Constance, but on the reconstruction of the diocese of Basel in 1828 it was assigned to it. The capital is Zug (4924 inhabitants in 1880); Baar has a population of 3896. The territory of Zug is very fertile and the population mainly agricultural. Cattle and fruit are among the chief articles of export, much cider and " kirschwasser " being manufactured, The town of Zug is connected by railway with Lucerne and Zurich, and a railway is planned to Arth, which will connect Zug directly with the St Gott- hard line. On 5th July 1887 a landslip carried the houses of a small portion of the capital, as in 1435, into the lake.

The town of Zug is first mentioned in 1255. In 1273 it was bought by Rudolph of Hapsburg from Anna, the heiress of Kyburg and wife of Eberhard, head of the cadet line of Hapsburg ; and in 1278 part of its territory (the valley of Egeri) was pledged by Rudolph as security for a portion of the marriage gift he promised to Joanna, daughter of Edward I. of England, betrothed to Hart-

; 1 Tts name has been rather fancifully derived from " fischzug," mean- ing a "haul of fish."

mann (Rudolph's son), whose death in 1281 prevented the marriage taking place. The town of Zug was governed by a mayor, appointed by the Hapsburgs, and a council, and was much favoured by that family. Several country districts (Baar, Menzingen, and Hgeri) had each its own " landsgemeinde," but were governed by one bailiff, also appointed by the Hapsburgs; these were known as the "Ausser Amt," and were always favourably disposed to the Con- federates. Duke Leopold of Austria was defeated on 15th November 1315 by the Confederates at Morgarten Pass, in the territory of Zug (see SWITZERLAND, vol. xxii. p. 783 sqg.). On 27th January 1352 both the town of Zug and the Ausser Amt entered the Confedera- tion, the latter being received on exactly the same terms as the

town (and not, as was usual in the case of country districts, as a subject land); but in September 1352 Zug had to acknowledge its own lords again, and in 1355 to break off its connexion with the League. But about 1364 the town and the Ausser Amt were re- covered for the League by the men of Schwyz, and from this time Zug took part as a full member in all the acts of the League. In 1379 the emperor Wenceslaus exempted Zug from all external juris- dictions ; in 1889 the Hapsburgs renounced their claims, reserving only (in the treaty of 1394) an annual payment of twenty silver marks, which came to an end in 1415. In 1400 Wenceslaus gave all criminal jurisdiction to the town only. The Ausser Amt then, in 1404, claimed that the banner and seal of Zug should be kept in one of the country districts, and were supported in this claim by Schwyz. The matter was finally settled by arbitration: the banner, &c., was to be kept in the town (access being allowed to the others), whilst the Ausser Amt was fined and Schwyz also. Finally in 1415 the right of electing their landammann was given to Zug by the Confederates, and a share in the criminal jurisdiction was grauted to the Ausser Amt by Sigismund. In 1385 Zug joined the league of the Swabian cities against Leopold and shared in the victory of Sempach (9th July 1386), as well as in the various Argo- vian (1415) and Thurgovian (1460) conquests of the Confederates, aud later in those in Italy (1512), having already taken part in the occupation of the Val d'Ossola (1410-14, 1417-22). Between 1379 and 1470 Zug had acquired various districts in her own neighbourhood, which werc ruled till 1778 by the town and the Ausser Amt as subject lands.

At the time of the Reformation Zug clung to the old faith and was a member of the "Christliche Vereinigung" of 1529. In 1586 Zug became a member of the Golden League. From 1729 to 1736 the canton was distracted by violent disputes as to the distribution of the French pensions. In 1798 it opposed the French, formed part of the Tellgau, and later one of the districts of the canton of the Waldstatten (of which in 1799 it became the capital) in the Helvetie republic. In 1803 it regained its independence as a sepa- rate canton, and by the constitution of 1815 the "landsgemeinde" or assembly ofall the citizeus (existing for both districts since 1352) became a body of electors to choose a cantonal council. The reform movement of 1830 did not affect the canton, which in 1848 was a member of the Sonderbund and shared in the war of 1847. Both in 1848

and in 1874 it voted against the acceptance of the Federal constitutions. In 1848 the remaining functions of the ‘‘lands- gemeinde” were abolished by the Liberals. Its present constitu- tion dates from 1873-76, and was amended in 1881. There is a legislature of seventy-three members, fifty-eight (one to every 400 inhabitants) elected in the communes and fifteen by the whole population, both classes holding office for three years; the execu- tive, of seven members, is elected by the communes for three years. By the “facultative or optional referendum,” in case of a demand by one-third of the members of the legislative assembly or by 500 citizens any law, and any resolution involving a capital expendi- ture of 40,000 or an annual one of 10,000 francs, must be submitted to a direct popular vote.

ZULLA, as Salt writes the name, or Z¢ta (Thulla, Déla), as it is also written, is a village near the head of Annesley Bay on the African coast of the Red Sea. It derives its only interest from ruins in its vicinity which are generally supposed to mark the site of the ancient em- porium of Adulis (“ASovdAus, “ASovAcé), the port of Axum and chief outlet in the early centuries of our era for the ivory, hides, slaves, and other exports of the interior. Cosmas Indicopleustes saw here an inscription of Ptolemy Euergetes (247-222 B.c.) ; and hence, as the earliest men- tion of Adulis is found in the geographers of the first cen- tury after Christ, it is conjectured that the town must have previously existed under another name and may have been the Berenice Panchrysus of the Ptolemies. The ruins in question, which are not very extensive or remarkable, are described by Riippel, Reise in Abyssinien, i. 266 (1838) ; see also Rohlfs in Zeitschr. d. Gesell. f. Erdkunde in Berlin,

iii, . . . (1868), and, for further references to ancient and modern sources, the editions of the Periplus by C. Miiller (Geog. Gr. Min., i. 259) and Fabricius (1883). An Italian protectorate over the district of Zulla was proclaimed in

1888.

ZULULAND, a territory of South Africa, lying to the north of the colony of Natal, with a coast-line of about 130 miles (see vol. i. pl. IL). It is

occupied chiefly by Zulu tribes ; but since its conquest by England in 1879 a Boer republic, known as the New Republic, has been carved out of it, which extends into the centre of the country from the Transvaal on its north-west, and comprises an area equal to nearly one-half of the remaining portion of Zululand. This portion is composed of a strip of country adjacent to Natal, lying to the south of the Umhlatuzi river, and the district extending along the coast to the north of that river for a distance inland varying from 50 to 70 miles. The former piece of country has been known since 1882 as the Zulu Reserve. It is bounded on the south-west by the Tugela, Buffalo, and Blood rivers, the last-named being one of the borders of the Transvaal Republic.

Zululand presents very varied physical features: undu- lating country covered with mimosa "bush," in some parts very densely, alternates with wild and fantastically broken scenery, and thickly-wooded precipices and ravines, and these again with grass-clad hills. Two considerable forests exist in the country,—one, the Ingome Forest, lying in northern Zululand, just within the territory recently ceded to the Boers, the other upon the Natal border. These pro- duce the varieties of timber mentioned under Nata. The wholesale destruction of woods for domestic purposes, which has robbed that colony of much of its beauty, and is believed to have seriously affected its rainfall, has not proceeded very far at present in Zululand. The mineral resources of the country have yet to be investigated, but gold has been recently found in the Reserve. The rivers, like those in Natal, are rapid streams of small volume, running over rocky beds; the Tugela river is the most considerable. The climate differs but little from that of Natal. The country is very healthy for the most part ; but horse sickness prevails in the valleys in the hot season, and the swampy neighbourhood of St Lucia Bay, a lagoon lying at the mouth of the Umfolosi river, is uninhabitable. Like the Natal natives, the Zulus cultivate the ground very superficially, planting maize, gourds of several kinds, and a grain from which a light beer is prepared. Cattle, the sole wealth of the people, were at one time very numerous in the country, and also goats. A few of the chiefs use horses.

Long after big game had become scarce in Natal, Zulu- land offered excellent opportunities to the sportsman. It still has antelopes of various

kinds, including a few koodoo, and, at the mouths of the more northern rivers, hippopota- muses; but the buffalo and rhinoceros are not met with farther south than the densely-wooded hills near the Um- folosi river. The lion is not seen south of the Lebombo Mountains in the north of Zululand, but the leopard and smaller carnivores are plentiful enough in the country. Its natural history is similar to that of Natal; but indica- tions are not wanting in its fauna and flora of its closer proximity to the tropics.

Language.—With the exception of the tongues spoken by the Hottentot-Bushman tribes of the south-west, the languages of Africa from about 5° north of the equator southwards are now recognized as forming one great family, for which the designation Bantu has been adopted, the word abantu in Zulu and other members of the group denoting "people" (plural inflex aba, root ntu). The Zulu tongue, as that of a conquering and superior race, extends beyond the river Zambesi, and is often understood even where another language is the vernacular. In the kingdoms of Lobengula and Umzila it is the language of the ruling classes. Philologists speak highly of the beauty and flexibility of the Bantu languages, and

of their grammatical structure. To the student of comparative philology they offer a field of inquiry of the highest importance, both on account of the vast domain occupied by them and of the deep insight they afford into the structure and growth of human speecli in general. This great linguistic family occupies about one-half of Africa, extending from near the Niger delta in the north-west, and from Lake Albert Nyanza farther east, to the south-eastern ex- tremity of the continent. It thus comprises such widely separated peoples as the Ba-Farami and Ba-Kwiri of the Cameroons region and the Zulu-Kaffres of the south-east coast on the one hand, and on the other the Wa-Ganda of the Somerset Nile and the Ova-Herero of Damaraland on the south-west coast. But, notwithstanding this widespread range, and although none of the dialects have possessed any written standard till quite recent times, being in fact every- where spoken by peoples of low culture, the Bantu is distinguished above all other great linguistic families, except perhaps the Semitic, for its

astonishing homogeneous character. So close is the resem- blance the different branches bear to each other that philologists have been able to describe in broad traits the more salient features of the phonetic system, structure, and syntax common alike to all. They speak unconsciously of the Bantu language, as if it were every- where essentially one, and this surprising uniformity is reflected in the geographical, and especially the ethnological, terminology of the southern half of the continent. Thus the national or tribal place prefix in its various dialectic forms—aba, ba, ama, bua, vua, ova, wa, mu, ap, &e.,—is of constant occurrence throughout the whole of this region.

Their close uniformity is further shown in their common phonetic system, which is at once simple and harmonious, requiring all words to end in a vowel, rejecting all consonantal juxtapositions, except a few characteristic nasal combinations, such as ng, mb, nd, nt, nw, mf, nk, ns, throwing the accent as a rule on the first vowel of the stem (méso), and lastly repelling all harsh sounds, except the three intruding Hottentot clicks in the Zulu-Kaffre group. Nearly all the consonantal sounds, ranging from about eighteen to twenty, occur in English, while the vowel system everywhere corresponds to that of Italian. But the most marked feature of the Bantu tongues is their so-called alliterative concord, which has been com- pared both to the gender concordance of Aryan and the progressive vowel harmony of Ural-Altaic. But it differs from the former inasmuch as it is initial and not final, and extends to the verb as well as to noun, adjective, participle, and pronoun, as if we should say in Latin, Domina mea pulchra, ama eum. Thus, in the Kongo dialect, ¢ kintuku kiaku kiavididi exono kisolokele=“the coat you lost yesterday it turned up.” It differs from the Ural-Altaic system inasmuch as the concordance is regulated, not by the root vowel influencing those of the agglutinated postfixes (see URAL-ALTAIC), but by the prefixed particle, the true nature of which has not yet been determined. Buta comparative study of the Bantu tongues shows that in the archaic language whence all descend cach noun had a proper prefix of its own, which prefix determined both the class to which the noun belonged and the concordance of all words in the sentence dependent on that noun. ‘That such is the correct view is evident from the fact that, even where the noun has lost its prefix, as sometimes happens, this prefix nevertheless reappears in the dependent adjective,

thus revealing its original form. We see, for instance, that nti= " tree" was originally in the plural m#- nti, because the following adjective still takes m7, as in nti miandwelo = "small trees." Bleek, the true founder of Bantu philology, has determined in the organic language eighteen such prefixes which still persist to a greater or less extent in the different branches, and have in some even been added to, as fi, for instance, in Kongo (W. H. Bentley). The analogy of this alliterative concord with the so-called Aryan grammatical gender is obvious, showing that the Aryan languages themselves were originally non-gender lan- guages and that their present gender agreement is essentially a ques- tion of phonetic harmony and not of sex in any intelligible sense of the term. Hence also the extraordinary phcnomenon of sex in this system apparently applied to inanimate objects.

Another remarkable feature of Bantu grammar is the wonderful development of verbal inflexion, which is both final and initial. The final, which in some groups yields as many as 300 distinct forms, each conjugated throughout, belongs to the verb itself in its various active, passive, middle, negative, repetitive, reciprocal, causative, and other meanings. The initial expresses mood, tense, person, number, and alliterative concord, and the whole system is immensely complicated by the fact that, as in Basque, the Caucasian, American, and some Ural-Altaic languages, the verb incorporates the direct pronominal object. Thus: ikuntala="I-see-him ;" tukutala =' we-see-you ;" bekwatala = " they-see-them ;" and so on. Hence the form kuntonda= "to-see-her," for instance, will be conjugated throughout, the result being a luxuriant growth of verbal forms fully comparable to that of the richest Ural-Altaic languages.

Bleek has subjected to a comparative study twenty-five members of the family, selected from almost every region that had been ex- plored up to his time (1862). Since then further geographical dis- covery, especially in the Congo and Ogoway basins, has revealed

many more Bantu tongues, of which, however, too little is known to determine their mutual relations with any pretence to accuracy. But, although any attempt at a strictly scientific classification would

*consequently be premature, the subjoined table, based on geographical distribution, will be found convenient for the purpose of reference.**

Norru-Wxst Group (CAMEROONS AND OcowAy-GABOON BASINS).—Ba-Kisk, Ba-Farami, Ba-Mbuku, Mu-Fundu, Dwalla, Wuri, Ba- Koko, Ba-Kwiri, Ba-Kundu, Mpongwe, Benga, Fernandian, Ba- Kale, Ba-Ngwe, Ivili, Ajuma, Fan (?), A-Shango, Okando, Cabinda, (Ba-Fyot). ; : .

Conco Group.—Vua-Nyamezi, Vua-Tuzi, Vua-Hha, Vua-Fipa, Vua-Vinza, Ba-Regga, Ba-Ngala, Wa-Buma, Ba-Bemba, Wa-Biza, Vua-Rua, Ma-Rungu, Ba-Songo, Ka-Lunda, Mboshi, Ba-Mbu, Kioko.

SouTH-WrEst Grove (Ancota, DAMARALAND).—Mu-Sorongo, Mu-Shicongo, Kongo proper, (S. Salvador), Bunda, Ba-Nano, Ba- Bwero, Ganguella, Libollo, Mu-Ndombe, Ba-Kwando, Ba-Simba, Ova-Mbo (Ovampo), Ova-Herero, :

ZAMBESI Group.—Amboella, Ba-Lunda, Ba-Viko, Ra-Najoa, Ba-Toana, Ba-Kuba, Ba-Rotse, Ba-Toka, Ba-Shukulompo, Ma-Kalaka, Ma-Shona, Ba-Nyai, Ma-Nyanja.

SouTH CENTRAL Group (BECHUANA AND BasuTo LANDs).—Ba-Rolong, Ba-Tlapi, Ba-Katla, Ba-Mapela, Ba-Hlokoa, Ba-Soetla, Ba- Suto, Ma-Kololo.

SoUTH-EASTERN Group (ZULULAND, NaTAL, KAFFRARIA).—See under article KAFFRARIA.

EASTERN Group (GASALAND, MoZAMBIQUE, ZANZIBAR COAST, EquaToRIAL LAKES).—Chobi, Ma-Kwakwa, Ma-Gwanza, Ma-Long-wa, Ba-Hlengwe, Bila-Kulu, Ma-Ndonda, Gwa-Tevi, Ma-Kua, Ma-Ngwangwara, Ma-Tambwe, Wa-Nindi, Ma-Wa, Wa-Hiyao (Yao or Ajawa), Ma-Ganya, Wa-Swaheli, Wa-Segua, Wa-Sambara, Wa- Zaramo, Wa-Kamba, Wa-Nika, Wa-Pokomo.

The pedigree and affinity of the Zulus, that is, the northern branch of the Zulu-Kaffre group, are given under KAFFRARIA. Here it will suffice to add that since the establishment of the Zulu military ascendency early in

the 19th century various Zulu hordes have successively invaded and overrun a great part of south- east Africa, as far as and even beyond the Lake Nyassa district. Throughout these regions they are variously known as Ma-Zitu, Ma-Ravi, Ma-Ngone (Umgone), Matebele (Ama-Ndebeli), Ma-Viti, and Aba-Zanzi. Such is the terror inspired by these fierce warriors that many of the conquered tribes, such as the Wa-Nindi of Mozam- bique, have adopted the very name of their conquerors or oppressors. Hence the impression that the true Zulus are far more numerous north of the Limpopo than has ever been the case. In niost places they have already become extinct or absorbed in the surrounding populations. But they still hold their ground as the ruling element in the region between the Limpopo and the lower Zambesi, which from them takes the name of Matebeleland, and which, like Zulu- land itself, has recently (1888) become a British protectorate.

Laws and Customs.—The Zulus possess an elaborate system of laws regulating the inheritance of personal property (which consists chiefly of cattle), the complexity arising from the practice of poly- gamy and the exchange of cattle made upon marriage. The giving of cattle in the latter case is generally referred to as a barter and sale of the bride, from which indeed it is not easily distinguishable. But it is regarded ina different light by the natives themselves. The kraal is under the immediate rule of its hcadman, who is a patriarch responsible for the good behaviour of all its members. Over the headman, whose authority nay extend to more than one kraal, is the tribal chief. The exercise by some of the principal chiefs, during the reigns of mPande and his son, of the power of life and death could not always be controlled by the central author- ity. Several of the Zulu customs resemble those of the Jews, such as the Feast of First Fruits, held upon the ripening of the maize, when the whole nation gathers at the king's kraal, and the custom of raising up seed to a deceased brother. By the custom of ukuh- lonipa a woman carefully avoids the utterance of any word which occurs in the names of the principal members of her husband's family: e.g., if she have a brother-in-law named uNkomo, she would not use the Zulu for "cow," inkomo, but would invent some other word for it. The employment of " witch doctors" for "smell- ing out" criminals or abatagati (usually translated " wizards," but meaning evildoers of any kind, such as poisoners) is still common in

Zululand, as in neighbouring countries, although it was discouraged by Cetshwayo, who established "kraals of refuge" for the reception of persons rescued by him from condemnation as abatagatt.

Population.—No means exist for estimating the present population of Zululand. The country was at the time of the late war regarded as less densely inhabited than the colony of Natal. The Zulu army was estimated to contain twenty-three regiments, of 40,400 men in all, and, although the enrolment was voluntary, it may be assumed that it comprised nearly all the able-bodied men of the nation. In addition to the heavy mortality sustained by the Zulus

1 To avoid confusion the names are given with their ethnical instead of thei linguistie prefixes. Thus, Ba-Suto, not Se-Suto. pees

in the war many lives have been lost in subsequent conflicts in which they have engaged amongst themselves.

History.—The earliest record of contact between Europeans and the Zulu race is probably the account of the wreck of the " Dodding- ton" in 1756. The survivors met with hospitable treatment at the hands of the natives of Natal, and afterwards proceeded up the coast to St Lucia Bay, where they landed. They describe the natives as "very proud and haughty, and not so accommodating as those lately Jett. "- They differed from the other natives in the superior neatness of their method of preparing their food, and were more cleanly in their persons, bathing every morning, apparently as anact of devotion. Their chief pride seemed to be to keep their hair in order. It is added that they watched strictly over their women.

In 1780 the Zulu tribe inhabited the valley of the White Um- folosi river under the chieftainship of Senzangakona, At that time the Zulus numbered some few thousands only, being subject to the paramount chief Dingiswayo, who ruled over the mTetwa tribe, which inhabited the country to the north-east of the Tugela. Dingiswayo is represented as having been very much in advance of other chiefs in those-parts in enlightenment and intelligence. He opened up a trade with the Portuguese, bartering ivory and oxen for beads and brass. He was also very warlike, and introduced a strict military organization among his

people, by means of which he obtained the ascendency over neighbouring tribes, including that of the Zulus. Upon the death of Senzangakona at the beginning of the 19th century he was succeeded by a son named Tshaka, who had served as an officer in the army of Dingiswayo, whose favour he won through his force of character and talents. Dingiswayo having been killed in battle, the mTetwa tribe sought the protec- tion of Tshaka, who lost no time in further developing the new military organization, and very soon became master of nearly the whole of south-eastern Africa from the Limpopo to Cape Colony, including the settlement of Natal, Basutoland, a large part of the Orange Free Statc, and the Transvaal Republic. The terror of the Zulu arms was, moreover, carried far into the interior through the revolt of a Zulu chief, Mzilikazi (Mosclekatse), who conquered a vast territory towards the north-west.

Tshaka's strict discipline and mode of attack, in which the long missile weapon of the other tribes was replaced by a short stabbing assegai, was such that nothing in the mode of warfare of those opposed to him could withstand him. He overran the district of Natal with his armies in 1820; but crowds of the northern tribes driven before his onslaught passed through the country about 1812.

In 1825 an English naval officer, Lieutenant Farewell, visited Tshaka with the object of obtaining leave to establish a settlement in what is now the district of Natal. He found the king at Umgun- gindhlovu, "surrounded by a large number of chiefs, and about 8000 or 9000 armed men, observing a state and ceremony in our introduction that we little expected." The king showed his visiter much friendliness, making him a grant of land in that neighbour- hood. Lieutenant Farewell took formal possession of the territory he had received, which he described as nearly depopulated and not containing more than 300 or 400 inhabitants, on 27th August 1825. The Zulu monarch, being anxious to open a political connexion with the Cape and English Governments, entrusted in 1828 one of his principal chiefs, Sotobi, and a companion to the care of Lieutenant King, to be conducted on an embassage to Cape Town, Sotobi being commissioned to proceed to the king of England. From causes which are not now certainly known these people were not allowed to proceed beyond Port Elizabeth, and were soon sent back to Zulu- land.

On 28d September 1828 Tshaka was murdered by his brother, Mhlangana, and a few days afterwards Mhlangana was killed by another brother, Dingane. Tshaka's reign had involved an immense sacrifice of human life, but he had set before himself the aim of establishing a great kingdom, and, having succeeded in that, his home rule had been relieved by acts of generosity and statesmanship.

What is recorded of Dingane's reign shows him in the light of a bloodthirsty and cruel monster without a redeeming feature. The attempts made by the emigrant Dutch Boers under Piet Retief to establish friendly relations with him, and obtain a cession of the district of Natal, ended in the massacre of the whole party of seventy of their leading men at the king's kraal (February 1838), and of all members of their families left behind in Natal who could not be collected into fortified camps. Two unsuccessful attempts were made to avenge the deaths of the emigrant Boers. A Dutch command under Pieter Uys invaded the Zulu country, but was compelled to retreat, leaving thcir leader behind them, while a considerable force, composed of English settlers, Boers, and natives, entered Zululand at the mouth of the Tugela, and was completely annihilated, after inflicting very great loss on the Zulus. A de- tachment of the Zulu army on this occasion entered Natal and compelled the settlers at the port to take refuge on board a ship. After a further attack by Dingane the emigrant Boers and settlers again invaded Zululand in December 1838, and after a severe

engagement defeated the Zulu army with great slaughter on the banks of the Blood river, which owes its name to the results of the victory. In 1840 the Boers agreed to support Dingane's brother mPande in rebellion against him. The movement was completely successful, several of Dingane's regiments going over to mPande. Dingane passed into Swaziland in advance of his retreating forces, and was there murdered, while mPande was crowned king of Zulu- land by the Boers, who received in exchange for their services the much-coveted district of Natal. During the next sixteen years of mPande's reign nothing occurred to disturb the peaccful relations between the Zulus and the Natal Government. 1In1856

a civil war broke out between two of mPande's sons, Cetshwayo and Umbulazi, who were rival claimants for the succession. A bloody battle was fought between them on the banks of the Tugela in December 1856, in which Umbulazi and many of his followers were slain. The Zulu country continued, however, excited and disturbed, until the Government of Natal in 1861 obtained the formal nomination of a successor to n1Pande ; and Cetshwayo was appointed. mPande died in October 1872, but practically the government of Zululand had been in Cetshwayo's hands since the victory of 1856, owing both to political circumstances and the failing health of his father. In 1873 the Zulu nation appealed to the Natal Government to pre- side over the installation of Cetshwayo as king; and tlis request was acceded to. The rnle of mPande was in earlier years a severe one, the executions ordered by him being so numerous in 1859 as to evoke remonstrances from Cetshwayo, who warned the king that he would drive all the people over into Natal. In 1856 and for some years afterwards a considerable exodus of refugees did take place into the colony, but by 1871 the tide appeared to be turn- ing the other way. In 1854 the native population in Natal was reckoned at from 100,000 to 120,000. By 1873, owing largely to the influx of refugecs from Zululand, it had risen to 282,783 ; but five years later it had not increased to more than 290,035, some hundreds of heads of families having returned to Zululand.

The encroachments of the Transvaal Bocrs upon the borders of Zululand having for many years exposed the British Government to urgent appeals on the part of the Zulus for its intervention, a second attempt was made by the Government of Natal, and this time with success, to induce the Boers to submit the boundary disputes between them and their neighbours to arbitration. A commission was appointed, composed of three British officers, who in June 1878 pronounced a decision substantially in favour of the Zulus. But the high commissioner, Sir Bartle Frere, lad deter- mined upon measures for re-modelling the Zulu nation with a view to the confederation of the South African colonies and states. The invasion of Zululand took place in January 1879, and the war was ended by the capture of the king at the end of August. Cetshwayo having been conveyed to Cape Town, the Zulu country was portioned out among eleven Zulu chicfs, a white adventurer, and a Basuto chief who had done

good service in the war. This arrangement was productive of much bloodshed and disturbance, and in 1882 the British Government determined to restore Cetshwayo again to power. In the meantime, however, the deepest blood feuds had been engendered between the chiefs Zibebu and Hamu ou the one side and the neighbouring tribes who supported the ex-king and his family on the other. These people suffered severely at the hands of the two chiefs, who were assisted by a band of white free- booters. Zibebu, having created a formidable force of well-armed and trained warriors, was left in independence on the borders of Cetshwayo's territory, while the latter was restrained by the con- ditious of his restoration from any military enterprise or defensive measures. A collision very soon took place; but in the conflicts that followed Zibebu's forces were victorious, and on 22d July 1883, led by a troop of mounted whites, he made a sudden descent upon Cetshwayo's kraal at Ulundi, which he destroyed, massacring such of the inmates of both sexes as could not save themselves by flight. The king escaped, though wounded, into the Reserve, which had been placcd nnder British rule ; there he died in 1884. He left a son, Dinuzulu, who sought the assistance of some of the Transvaal Boers against Zibebu, whom he defeated and drove into the Reserve. These Boers, not a large number, claimed as a stipulated reward for their services the cession of the greater part, and the more valuable part, of central Zululand. The Government of Natal has recently attempted to mediate on behalf of the Zulus and has accepted on their behalf, in spite of their protests, a line which roughly divides ecntral Zululand into two equal portions. Of these the north- western has been created into the independent Boer state already mentioned. The rest of central Zululand is administered, with the Reserve, as a British protectorate.

See John Chase, A Reprint of Authentic Documents relating to Natal (Grahams- town, 1843); Saxe Bannister, Humane Policy (London, 1830), and_authorities collected in Appendix; Delegorgue, Voyage de l'Afrique Australe (Paris, 1847); Allen Francis Gardiner, Narrative of a Journey to the Zoolu Country (London, 1836) ; Leslie, Among the Zulus (Edinburgh, 1875); Bishop Colenso, Extracts from the Blue Books or Digest upon Zulu Affairs (in the British Museum) ; Cetshwayo"s Dutchman (London, 1880); Frances Colenso, The Ruin of Zululand (London, 1884); R. N.

Cust, Sketch of the Modern Languages of Africa (London, 1883). See also authorities cited under Natat. (F. E. C.-A. H. K.)

829

ZURBARAN, Francisco (1598-1662), a distinguished Spanish painter, was born at Fuente de Cantos in Estremadura on 7th November 1598. His father was named Luis Zurbaran, a country labourer, his mother Isabel Marquet. The lot apparently marked out for Francisco was that of tilling the ground, like his father; but his natural faculty had decided otherwise. In mere childhood he set about imitating objects with charcoal; and his father was quick-witted and long-headed enough to take him off, still extremely young, to the school of Juan de Roélas in Seville. Francisco soon became the best pupil in the studio of Roélas, surpassing the master himself ; and before leaving him he had achieved a solid reputation, full though Seville then was of able painters. He may probably have had here the opportunity of copying some of the paintings of Michelangelo da Caravaggio; at any rate he gained the name of "the Spanish Caravaggio," owing to the very forcible realistic style in which he excelled. He constantly painted direct from nature, following but occasionally improving on his model ; and he made great use of the lay-figure in the study of draperies, in which he was peculiarly proficient. He had a special gift for white draperies; and, as a natural consequence, Carthusian monks are abundant in his paintings. To these rigidly faithful methods of work Zurbaran is said to have adhered through- out his career, which was always eminent and prosperous, wholly confined to his native Spain, and varied by few incidents beyond those of his daily laborious and continu- ally productive diligence. His subjects were mostly of a severe and ascetic kind,—religious vigils, the flesh chastised into subjection to the spiritt—the compositions seldom thronged, and often reduced to a single figure. The style is more reserved and chastened than Caravaggio's, the tone of colour often bluish to a morbid excess. Exceptional effects are attained by the precise finish of foregrounds, largely massed out in light and shade. Zurbaran married in Seville Leonor de Jordera, by whom he had several children. Towards 1630 he was appointed painter to Philip IV. ; and there is a story that on one occasion the sovereign laid his hand on the artist's shoulder, saying, '"'

Painter to the king, king of painters." It was only late in life that Zurbaran made a prolonged stay in Madrid, Seville being the chief scene of his operations. He died in 1662 in Madrid.

In 1627 he painted the great altarpiece of St Thomas Aquinas, now in the Seville museum ; it was exccuted for the church of the college of that saint in the same city. This is Zurbaran's largest composition, containing figures of Christ and the Madonna, various saints, Charles V. with knights, and Archbishop Deza (founder of the college) with monks and servitors, all the principal personages being beyond the size of life ; this work is full of fine portrait-like heads, and it ranks, both in importance and in elevated style, as the painter's masterpiece. It had been preceded by the numerous pictures of the screen of St Peter Nolasco in the cathedral. In the church of Guadalupe he painted various large pictures, eight of which relate to the history of St Jerome, and in the church of St Paul, Seville, a famous figure of the Crucified Saviour, in grisaille, presenting an illusive effect of marble. In 1633 he finished the paintings of the high altar of the Carthusians in Jerez. In the palace of Buenretiro, Madrid, are four large canvases representing the Labours of Hercules, an unusual instance of non-Christian subjects from the hand of Zurbaran. A very finc specimen is in the London National Gallery, a whole-length life-sized figure of a kneeling Franciscan holding a skull (figured in vol. xxi. p. 440, fig. 36).

"The principal scholars of this master, whose style has as much affinity to that of Ribera as to Caravaggio's, were Bernabe dc Ayala and the brothers Polanco.

ZURICH (Germ. Ziirich),} a canton in Switzerland, ranking as the first in dignity. It is of very irregular shape, consisting simply of the conquests made by the city.

It extends from the Lake of Zurich to the Rhine, taking in 1 The name is derived from the Celtic dur (water), The true and

accurate Latinized form is Turicum, but the false form Tigurum was given currency to by Glareanus and held its ground from 1512 to 1748.

the district of Eglisau on the right bank of that river. the east it is, roughly speaking, limited by the ranges of low hills which separate it from the valley of the Thur, and on the west by those (e.g., the Albis) which divide it from the valleys of the Reuss and the Aar. Its total area is 655°9 square miles, of which 610°6 are classified as fertile (woods covering 186 and vines 21°5). Of 45:2 square miles of non-fertile land 26°2 are covered by the lake. The highest point in the canton is the Schnebelhorn (4250 feet) in the south-east corner. The population in 1880 was 317,576 (an increase of 32,790 since 1870), and in 1887 was estimated to be 339,163. In 1880 there were 313,762 German-speaking and 283,134 Protestant inhabitants. The number of Roman Catholics nearly doubled from 1870 to 1880 (17,942 and 30,298). Be- sides ZuricH (see below), the capital, the only other town of any size in the canton is WINTERTHUR (q.v). The land is very highly cultivated and is held by no less than 36,000 proprietors. The canton is well supplied with railways, the first line of any length in Switzerland being that from Zurich to Baden in Aargau (opened 1847). The line from Zurich to the summit of the Uetliberg (2861 feet) was made in 1875. For the history of the canton, see under the town, below.

ZURICH, chief city of the above canton, and until 1848 practically the capital of the Swiss Confederation, is beautifully situated, at a height of 1506 feet, on the banks of the Limmat where it issues from the Lake of Zurich, and on the river Sihl, which joins the Limmat just above the north end of the lake. That part which lies on the right bank of the Limmat is known as the Large Town, that on the left as the Little Town. The central portion— the '"city"—is governed by an executive of seven members and a town council of sixty, both elected by the citizens, and in 1887 had 27,638 inhabitants. The nine outlying townships or "' gemeinden" have each a separate organiza- tion, distinct from that of the city, and in 1887 had 60,836 inhabitants, of whom 18,527 were in Aussersihl and 10,883 in Riesbach. The total population of the town and its suburbs was thus 88,474 in 1887. These are nearly all Protestants and German-speaking. The number of Roman Catholics has doubled in the last ten years ; they are mainly resident in Aussersihl, the work- men's quarter, where also

many Italian-speaking persons dwell. There are in Zurich about 7000 Old Catholics.

Of the old buildings the finest and most important is the Gross Munster (or Propstei) on the right bank of the Limmat. This was originally the church of the king's tenants, and in one of the chapels the bodies of Felix, Regula, and Exuperantius, the patron saints of the city, were buried, the town treasury being formerly kept above this chapel. The present building was erected at two periods (1090-1150 and 1225-1300), the high altar having been dedicated in 1278. The towers were first raised above the roof at the end of the 15th century and took their present form in 1779. The chapter consisted of twenty-four secular canons ; it was reorganized at the Reformation (1526), and suppressed in 1832. On the site of the canons' houses stands a girls' school (opened 1853), but the fine Romanesque cloisters (12th and 13th centuries) stillremain. There 1s a curious figure of Charlemagne in a niche on one of the towers : to him is attributed the founding or reform of the chapter. On the left bank of the Limmat stands the other great church of Zurich, the Frau Munster (or Abtei), founded for nuns in 853 by Louis the German. The high altar was dedicated in 1170 ; but the greater part of the buildings are of the 13th and 14th centuries. It was in this church that the relics of the three patron saints of the town were preserved till the Reformation, and it was here that the burgo- nlaster Waldmann was buried in 1489. There were only twelve nuns of noble family, comparatively free from the severer monastic vows ; the convent was suppressed in 1524. Of the other old churches may be mentioned St Peter's, the oldest parish church, though the present buildings date from the 13th century only, and formerly the meeting-place of the citizens ; the Dominican church (18th century), in the choir of which the cantonal library of 80,000 volumes has been stored since 1873 ; the church of the Austin friars

(14th century), now used by the Old Catholics ; and the Wasser- kirche. The last-named churzh is on the site of an old pagan holy

ZW Ue ie Gt On |

place, where the patron saints of the city were martyred ; since 1631 it has housed the city library, the largest in Switzerland, which contains 120,000

printed volumes and 4000 MSS. (among these be- ing letters of Zwingli, Bullinger, and Lady Jane Grey), as well as a splendid collection of objects from the lake dwellings of Switzer- land. The building itself was erected 1479 to 1484, and near it is a statue of Zwingli, erected in 1885. The existing council house dates from 1698, and the guild houses were mostly rebuilt in the 18th century. Among the modern buildings the polytechnic school, the cantonal school, the reading rooms (museum), the hospital, and the railway station are the most conspicuous. There are some fine old fountains (the oldest dating back to 1568). The quays along the river and the lake are extensive and afford fine views ; and there are several good bridges, Roman traces being still seen in the case of the Niederbriicke. The mound of the Lindenhof was formerly crowned by the king's house, which disappeared in the 13th cen- tury, and the hillock was planted with limes as early as 1422. Zurich possesses a large number of charitable institutions.

The inhabitants are very industrious and of social habits among themselves, the town being noted for its clubs and societies. It is the intellectual capital of German-speaking Switzerland, and has been called " Athens on the Limmat." Cotton-spinning and the manufacture of machinery are two of the leading industries, but by far the most important of all is the silk trade. This flourished in Zurich in the 12th and 13th centuries, but disappeared about 1420 ; it was revived by the Protestant exiles from Locarno (1555) and by the Huguenot refugees from France (1682 and 1685). The value of the silk annually exportéd (mainly to France, the United States, and England) is estimated at £2,916,000 to £3,333,000. The trade employs about 20,000 hand looms and 4500 steam-power looms ; but the number of the former is diminishing, while that of the latter is increasing. Poor wine is also made. Zurich is the bank- ing centre of Switzerland. There are a large number of educational establishments, public and private. Besides the excellent primary and secondary schools, there are the cantonal school, including a gymnasium and a technical side (opened 1842), and a high school for girls (opened 1875). The cantonal university and the Federal polytechnic school are housed in the same building, but have no other connexion. The university was founded in 1832-33 (no doubt as a successor to the ancient chapter school at the Gross Miinster, said to date back to Charlemagne's time—

hence its name the Caro- linum—reorganized at the Reformation, and suppressed in 1832) ; in 1886 it had 51 professors and 481 matriculated students, besides 65 persons attending special courses of lectures. The polytechnie school, founded in 1854, includes six main sections (industrial chemistry, mechanics, engineering, training of scientific and mathe- matical teachers, architecture, forestry and agriculture), and a general philosophical, mathematical, and literary department. The numbers of students in the first three sections were, in 1885, 122, 97, and 90—in all the six 412, of whom 192 were foreigners ; there were about fifty-four professors. The polytechnic school has good collections of botanical specimens and of engravings. Near it is the observatory (1542 feet). There are also in Zurich many institutions for special branches of education—eg., veterinary surgery, music, industrial art, silk-weaving, &c.

*History.—The earliest inhabitants of the future site of Zurich were the lake dwellers. The Celtic Helvetians had a settlement on the Lindenhof when they were succeeded by the Romans, who established a customs station here for goods going to and coming from Italy ; during their rule Christianity was introduced early in the 3d century by Felix and Regula, with whom Exuperantius was afterwards associated. The district was later occupied by the Alemanni, who were conquered by the Franks. It is not till the 9th century that we find the beginnings of the Teutonic town of Zurich, which arose from the union of four elements :—(1) the royal house and castle on the Lindenhof, with the king's tenants around, (2) the Gross Miinster, (3) the Frau Miinster, (4) the com- munity of *‘ free men” (of Alemannian origin) on the Ztrichberg. The Frankish kings had special rights over their tenants, were the protectors of the two churches, and had jurisdiction over the free community. In 870 the sovereign' placed his powers over all four in the hands of a single official (the Reichsvogt), and the union was still further strengthened by the wall built round the four settle- ments in the 10th century as a safeguard against Saracen marauders and feudal barons. The Reichsvogtei passed to the counts of Lenz- burg (1063-1172), and then to the dukes of Zaringen (extinct 1218). Meanwhile the abbess of the Frau Minster had been acquiring ex- tensive rights and privileges over all the inhabitants, though she never obtained the criminal jurisdiction. The town flourished greatly*

in the 12th and 18th centuries, the silk trade being intro- duced from Italy. In 1218 the Reichsvogtei passed back into the hands of the king, who appointed one of the burghers as his deputy, the town thus becoming a free imperial city under the nominal rule of a distant sovereign. The abbess in 1234 became a princess of the empire, but power rapidly passed from her to the council, which she had originally named to look after police, &c., but which (c. 124C) came to be elected by the buzghers, though the abbess

was still "the lady of Zurich." This council was made up of the representatives of certain knightly and rich mercantile families (the "patricians"), who excluded the craftsmen from all share in the government, though it was to these last that the town was largely indebted for its rising wealth and importance.

In October 1291 the town made an alliance with Uri and Schwyz, and in 1292 failed in a desperate attempt to seize the Hapsburg town of Winterthur. After that Zurich began to display strong Austrian leanings, which characterize much of its later history. In 1815 the men of Zurich fought against the Swiss Confederates at Morgarten. Thc year 1836 marks the admission of the craftsmen to a share in the town government, which was brought about by Rudolph Brun, a patrician. Under the new constitution (the main

features of which lasted till 1798) the council was made up of

thirteen members from the " constafel " (including the old patricians and the wealthiest burghers) and the thirteen masters of the craft guilds, each of the twenty-six holding office for six months. The office of burgomaster was created and given to Brun for life. Out of this change arose a quarrel with one of the branches of the Hapsburg family, in consequence of which Brun was induced to throw in the lot of Zurich with the Swiss Confederation (1st May 1351). The double position of Zurich as a free imperial city and as a member of the Everlasting League was soon found to be embar- rassing to both parties (see SWITZERLAND, vol. xxii. p. 784 sq.). Meanwhile the town had been extending its rule far beyond its

walls,—a process which began in the 18th century, went on apace in the 14th, and attained its height in the 15th century (1268-1467). This thirst for territorial aggrandizement brought about the first civil war in the Confederation (the "Old Zurich War," 1436-50), in which, at the fight of St Jacob on the Sihl (1443), under the walls of Zurich, the men of Zurich were completely beaten and their burgomaster Stiissi slain. The purchase of the town of Winterthur from the Hapsburgs (1467) marks the culmination of the territorial power of the city. It was to the men of Zurich and their leader Haus Waldmann that the victory of Morat (1476) was due in the Burgundian War ; and Zurich took a leading part in the Italian campaign of 1512-15, the burgomaster Schmid naming the new duke of Milan (1512). No doubt her trade connexions with Italy led her to pursue a southern policy, traces of which are seen as early as 1331 in an attack on the Val Leventina and in 1478, when Zurich

meu were in the van at the fight of Giornico, won by a handful of

Confederates over 12,000 Milancse troops.

In 1400 the town received from the emperor the Reichsvogtei, which carried with it complete immunity from the empire and the right of criminal jurisdiction. As early as 1893 the chief power had practically fallen into the hands of the council of 200 (really 212), composed of the former council and a number of other citizens originally elected by it; and in 1498 this change was formally recog- nized. This transfer of all power to the guilds had been one of the aims of the burgomaster Hans Waldmann (1483-89), who wished to make Zurich a great commercial centre. He also introduced many financial and moral reforms, and subordinated the interests of the country districts to those of the'town. He practically ruled the Confederation, and under him Zurich became the real capital of the League. But such great changes excited opposition, and he was overthrown and executed. His main ideas were embodied, however, in the constitution of 1498, by which the patricians be- came the first of the guilds, and which remained in force till 1798 ; some special rights were also given to the subjects in country dis- tricts. It was, however, the prominent part taken by Zurich in adopting and propagating the principles of the Reformation which finally secured for it the lead of

the Confederation ; for a detailed account of its policy and the events in which it shared during this period, see SWITZERLAND (vol. xxii. p. 790 sq.) and ZWINGLt.

In the 17th and 18th centuries a distinct tendency becomes ob- servable in the city government to limit power to the actual holders. Thus the country districts were consulted for the last time in 1620 and 1640; and a similar breach of the charters of 1489 and 1531 occasioned disturbances in 1777. The council of 200 came to be chosen by a small committee of the members of the guilds actually sitting in the council, and early in the 18th century a determined effort was made to crush by means of heavy duties the flourishing silk trade in Winterthur. In 1655 an attempt was made by Bern and Zurich to set up a central administration in the Confederation, which failed through the jealousy of the other cantons. The first symptoms of active discontent appeared later among the dwellers by the lake, who founded in 1794 a club at Stafa and claimed the restoration of the liberties of 1489 and 1531, a movement which was put down by force of armsin1795. The old system of govern- ment perished in Zurich, as elsewhere in Switzerland, in 1798, and under the Helvetic constitution the country districts obtained political liberty. But under the cantonal constitution of 1815 the town had 130 representatives in the great council, while the country districts had only 88.

that the town finally lost the last relics of the privileges which it had so long enjoyed as compared with the country districts. In 1833 Zurich tried hard to secure a revision of the Federal constitu- tion and a strong central Government. The town was the Federal capital for 1839-40, and consequently the victory of the Conserva- tive party there caused a great stir throughout Switzerland. But, when in 1845 the Radicals regained power at Zurich, which was again the Federal capital for 1845-46, that city took the lead in opposing the Sonderbund cantons. In 1869 the cantonal constitu- tion was again thoroughly revised in a very democratic sense ; and, with the exception of a few changes made later, it is the existing constitution. There is an executive of seven members and a legis- lature of 211 (one member to every 1500 inhabitants), each holding office

for three years and elected at the same time directly by the vote of the people. The referendum exists in both forms, com- pulsory and optional : all laws and all money grants of a total sun over 250,000 francs or an annual sum of 20,000 must be submitted to a popular vote, the people meeting for that purpose at least twice in each year, while the executive may submit to a popular vote any other matter, though it fall within its powers as defined bylaw. One-third of the members of the legislature or 5000 legally qualified voters can force the Government to submit to the peopic any matter whatsoever (initiative). The constitution provides for the imposition of a graduated and progressive income tax. In 1885 the penalty of death was abolished in the canton. Zurich has sheltered many political refugees of late years, especially Poles and Russians ; but its hospitality has been abused by the Socialists, who have given considerable trouble. The Swiss National Agricul- tural and Industria] Exhibition was held at Zurich in 1883.

For the present state of the town, see Europdische Wanderbilder (Nos. 126- 129), Zurich, 1887. For the local and architectural history the principal work is S. Vogelin, Das alte Ziirich (2d ed., 1878), and for general history, J. C. Bluntschli, Staats- und Rechts-Geschichte der Siadt und Landschaft Ziirich (2d ed., 1856); G. v. Wyss, Geschichte der Abtei Ztirich, 1851-58 (in vol. viii. of Mittheil. d. antiquar. Gesellsch. in Z.); Id., Die Reichsvogtei Ziirich, 1870 (in vol. xvii. of Zetischr. f. Schweiz. Recht). Many of the recent works on Swiss history, e.g., those of Dandliker, Oechsli, Orelli, Strickler, are by Zurich men and pay special attention to Zurich matters. GW: AS BSC:

ZUTPHEN, a fortified town of Holland, in the province of Guelderland, 20 miles by rail south from Deventer, stands on the right bank of the Yssel, at its junction with the Berkel. Its most important public building is the church of St Walburga, dating from the 12th century, which contains several interesting monuments of the counts of Zutphen, and good examples of old metal-work and sculp- ture. The place has an active trade, especially in grain and in the timber floated down from the Black Forest by the Rhine and the Yssel; the industries include tanning, weaving, and oil and paper manufactures. The population in 1887 was 16,357. Some 24 miles to the north of the town is the agricultural colony

of Nederlandsch-Mettray, founded by a private benefactor for the education of poor and friendless boys in 1851, and since that date largely extended,

Zutphen at one time belonged to the Hanseatic League and had an extensive foreign trade. It has been more than once besieged, and it was before Zutphen that Sir Philip Sidney received his mortal wound (22d September 1586).

ZWEIBRUCKEN. See Dreux Ponts.

ZWICKAU, one of the busiest towns in the industrial district of the kingdom of Saxony to which it gives its name, is situated in a pleasant valley on the left bank of the Zwickauer Mulde, 41 miles south of Leipsic. The river is here crossed by four bridges, two of which are of iron, The town contains six churches, including the fine Late Gothic church of St Mary (1453-1536, restored 1884), with a tower 278 feet high, and the Gothic church of St Catherine (14th to 15th century), of which Thomas Miinzer was pastor in 1520-22. Among the secular buildings are the town-house of 1581, the Gothic "'Gewandhaus" (now a theatre) of 1522-24, the Government buildings of 1838, the law-courts, the hospital, and the barracks. The rail- way station, which with its dependencies covers 81 acres, is said to be one of the largest in Germany. The chateau of Osterstein (1581-91) is now a penitentiary. The manu- factures of Zwickau are both extensive and varied: they include machinery, chemicals, porcelain, paper, glass, dye- stuffs, tinware, stockings, and curtains. There are also steam saw-mills, brickfields, iron-foundries, and breweries,

Though no longer so important as when it lay on the chief trade route from Saxony to Bohemia and the Danube, Zwickau still carries on considerable commerce in grain, linen, and coal. The mainstay of the industrial prosperity of the town is the adjacent coalfield, which in 1885 em- ployed 10,000 hands and yielded coal to the value of £854,900. The mines are mentioned as early as 1348; but they have been actively worked only for the last 65 years, during which time the population of the town

has increased more than sixfold. In 1885 the population was 39,245; in 1834 it was 6701.

Zwickau is of Slavonic origin, and is mentioned in 1118 as a trading place. From 1290 till 1348 it was a free imperial city, but about the latter date it was forced to accept the protection of the margrave of Meissen. The Anabaptist movement of 1525 be- gan at Zwickau under the inspiration of the " Zwickau prophets." Robert Schumann (1810-1856), the musical composer, was born here. The name is sometimes fancifully derived from the Latin cygnea, from a tradition that placed a "swan lake" here which had the property of renewing the youth of those who bathed in it.

ZWINGLI, Huupretcw (1484-1531), Swiss Reformer, was born on lst January 1484 at Wildhaus, at the head of the Toggenburg valley, in the canton of St Gall, Switzer- land. His father was a well-to-do peasant proprietor, amman of the township ; his mother was Margaret Meili, whose brother was abbot of the cloister of Fischingen in Thurgau. The people of Wildhaus were in Zwingli's time a self-ruled village community. They had also bought from the abbots of St Gall the privilege of electing their own pastor; and the first parish priest chosen by the votes of the parishioners was Bartholomew Zwingli, the uncle of the Reformer, who latterly became dean of Wesen. Zwingli thus came of a free peasant stock, and he carried the marks of his origin all his life. When eight years old he was sent to school at Wesen, where he lived with his uncle, the dean. Two years later he was sent to Basel ; and after a three years' sojourn there he became a pupil in the high school of Bern, where his master was Heinrich Wolflin, an accomplished classical scholar, from whom Zwingli acquired that love of classical literature which never left him. From Bern he went to Vienna (in 1500), and after two years' study there he returned to Basel. At Basel the celebrated Thomas Wyttenbach was his master and friend, and taught him those Evangelical truths which he afterwards so signally defended.

It is impossible to avoid contrasting the joyous youth of Zwingli with the sad childhood of Luther. Zwingli was full of love of family, of township, of country, and of Christ. He had none of those dark religious

experiences which drove Luther to the convent, and which made him miserable there. He had never to struggle alone in despair of soul, one step at a time, towards the gospel of God's free grace. Wyttenbach was very unlike those nominalist divines from whom Luther learnt medieval theology. He foresaw many things which a later generation discovered. Zwingli has assured us that Wyttenbach taught him that the death of Christ, and not priests, masses, and pilgrim- ages, was a sufficient ransom for the sins of the world ; that he pointed out the errors of the schoolmen and of Romish theology ; and that he asserted that Holy Scrip- ture, and not ecclesiastical tradition, was the sole rule of faith. Itcost Zwingli nothing to break with the medizval church. He had been taught independence from child- hood, and shown how to think for himself while a student at Basel.

When twenty-two years of age Zwingli was ordained by the bishop of Constance. He preached his first sermon at Rapperswyl, and said his first mass among his own people at Wildhaus. He was appointed (1506) to the parish of Glarus, where he had leisure for study and began to read extensively and carefully in preparation for future work.

|

ZWiIi-——-ZWiI

At Glarus too he gathered the boys of the district about him (AXgidius Tschudi, the historian of Switzerland, among them) to teach them the classics ; and he set himself by a study of the masterpieces of ancient and medizeval rhetoric to learn the art of oratory. He tells us that at this time he foresaw that a man who is called to be a preacher must know many things, two things above all others—God, and how to speak. Meanwhile he tested every doctrine in theology by the Word of God and took his stand firmly upon what it taught him.

The Swiss troops of Zwingli's day were supposed to be the best in Europe, and neighbouring states were glad to have their assistance in war. The Swiss were accustomed to hire out their soldiers for large sums of money to those states who paid best. It was~their custom also to send the parish priest of the district from which the troops came as chaplain to the

regiment. Zwingli went twice, once in 1512 and again in 1515, with the men of Glarus. He saw the demoralizing tendency of such mercenary war- fare and ever afterwards denounced the immoral traftic. In 1521 he persuaded the authorities of the canton of Zurich to renounce it altogether.

In 1516 Zwingli was transferred to Einsiedeln. It was then, and is still, resorted to by thousands of pilgrims yearly, who come to visit the famous image of the Virgin and Child which has been preserved there for at least a thousand years. Zwingli denounced the superstition of pilgrimages. His sermons made a great sensation and attracted attention in Rome. The papal curia had no wish to quarrel with the Swiss, who furnished them with troops, and sought to silence the Reformer by offers of promotion, which he refused. Soon afterwards he was elected, after some opposition, to be preacher in the cathedral at Zurich, and accepted the office (1518), having first obtained a pledge that his liberty to preach the truth should not be interfered with. He began the fight almost on his arrival. Bernhardin Samson, a pardon-seller like Tetzel, had been selling indulgences in the Forest Cantons and proposed to come to Zurich, Zwingli prevailed on the council to send the friar out of the country. In the beginning of 1519 he began a series of discourses on the New Testament Scriptures,—on St Matthew's Gospel, on the Acts of the Apostles, and on the Pauline Epistles. The sermons, preached '"'in simple Swiss language," had a great effect. The Reformation in Zurich was begun. The council of the canton was on Zwingli's side and protected their preacher. He began to preach against fasting and other Roman practices ; some of his followers put his precepts in practice and ate fleshin Lent. The bishop of Constance accused them before the council of Zurich. Zwingli was heard in their defence, and the accusation was abandoned. The victory on the subject of fasting was followed by an attack on the doctrine of the celibacy of the clergy. Pope Adrian VI. interfered, and asked the Zurichers to abandon Zwingli. The Reformer persuaded the council to allow a public disputation, which was held in 1523. Zwingli pro- duced sixty-seven theses,! containing a summary of his doctrinal views, and argued in their favour with such power that the council upheld the Reformer and separated the canton from the bishopric of Constance. The Refor- mation, thus legally established, went forward

rapidly. The Latin language was discontinued in the service; the incomes of chapters, convents, and monasteries were applied for education; the celibacy of the clergy was abolished ; monks and nuns were freed from their vows; mass and image worship were declared to be idolatrous; and the Eucharist in both kinds was celebrated by a solemn com- munion of all the Reformed congregations on Maundy Thursday 1525.

T Cf. Schaff's Creeds of the Evangelical Protestant Churches, p. 197.

ZWINGLI

The progress of the Reformation in Zurich attracted the attention of all Switzerland, and the Confederation became divided into two parties. The Reformers found numerous supporters in the larger towns of Basel, Bern, and Schaff- hausen, and in the country districts of Glarus, Appenzell, andthe Grisons. The five Forest Cantons—Lucerne, Zug, Schwyz, Uri, and Unterwalden—remained solidly opposed toallreforms. This anti-Reformation party was also strong in the patrician oligarchies which drew papal pensions, and enriched themselves by the nefarious blood traffic de- nounced by Zwingli. The Zurichers felt it necessary to form a defensive league to prevent their Reformation from being crushed by force. They were especially anxious to gain Bern, and Zwingli challenged the Roman Catholics to a public disputation in that city. No less than 350 ecclesi- astics came to Bern from the various cantons to hear the pleadings, which began on 2d January 1528 and lasted nineteen days. Zwingli and his companions undertook to defend against all comers the following ten propositions :—

(1) That the Holy Christian Church, of which Christ is the only Head, is born of the Word of God, abides therein, and does not listen to the voice of a stranger ; (2) that this church imposes no laws on the conscience of people without the sanction of the Word of God, and that the laws of the church are binding only in so far as they agree with the Word ; (3) that Christ alone is our righteousness and our salvation, and that to trust to any other merit or satisfaction is to deny Him ; (4) that it cannot be proved from the Holy Scripture that the body and blood of Christ are corporeally present in the bread and in the wine of the Lord's Supper ; (5) that the mass, in which Christ is offered to God the Father for the sins of

the living and of the dead, is contrary to Scripture and a gross affront to the sacrifice and death of the Saviour ; (6) that we should not pray to dead mediators and inter- cessors, but to Jesus Christ alone; (7) that there is no trace of purgatory in Scripture ; (8) that to set up pictures and to adore them is also contrary to Scripture, and that images and pictures ought to be destroyed where there is danger of giving them adora- tion ; (9) that marriage is lawful to all, to the' clergy as well as to the laity; (10) that shameful living is more disgraceful among the clergy than among the laity.

These they defended to such purpose that the Bernese joined heartily in the Reformation, and the enthusiasm of the people was fired by two burning sermons preached by Zwingli from the minster pulpit to overflowing audiences. The two parties henceforward faced each other in Switzer- land. The country was in those days a confederacy of republics, and yet was far from being a democracy. Most of the cantons were ruled by aristocratic oligarchies who had pensions from foreign Governments, and Zwingli's appeal had always been from an oligarchy of pope, bishops, and abbots to the congregation with the Bible in hand. He founded his religious Reformation on the congregation, and this of itself suggested that the state was nothing but the people. It so happened that those cantons which remained firmly attached to Roman Catholicism were the least powerful, and yet from historical position and the long custom of the Confederacy had the largest legal in- fluence in the country. The Forest Cantons had been the earliest to free themselves. Isolated towns and districts after successful revolt had claimed the protection of these little republics, and the Forest Cantons governed by ineans of prefects a large number of places beyond their boundaries. This gave them votes in the diet or federal council far beyond what they were entitled to by their population and actual resources. These cantons felt that, if the Reformation and the political ideas it suggested spread, their supremacy would be overthrown and their rule confined within their own territories. Nor had they in their upland valleys seen the worst abuses of the medi- zval church. They dreaded the Reformation. They per- secuted inquirers after truth, and imprisoned, beheaded, and burnt the followers of Zwingli when they caught them within their borders. Zwingli, alone among Protestant leaders, saw that the religious and the political questions |

could not be decided separately, but were for practical statesmanship one and the same problem. His policy was to reorganize the Swiss constitution on the principles of representative democracy, to put an end to the unnatural supremacy of the Forest Caritons by abolishing the prefects and their jurisdiction, and by giving the larger cantons the influence in the diet which was due to their resources and population, and to do this at once, and if necessary by war. His counsels were overruled. Bern was anxious to treat the religious question separately, and to negotiate for religious toleration, leaving the political future to take care of itself. The course of history has fully justified Zwingli. The views of the peace party triumphed, and a religious truce was negotiated under the name of the first peace of Cappel, with guarantees on paper that there was to be toleration in religious matters. But no real securities were given. The provisions of the treaty were never carried out in the Roman Catholic cantons, where authori- ties were secretly preparing for war. Zwingli in vain pro- claimed the danger and urged offensive measures. The Protestant cantons remained heedless to the danger. At length the storm burst. The Forest Cantons advanced (1531) secretly and rapidly on Zurich, with the intention of overcoming the Protestant cantons one by one. The Zurichers met their foes-at Cappel, were outnumbered, and were defeated. Zwingli, who had accompanied the troops as field chaplain, and had stood among the fighting men to encourage them, had received two wounds on the thigh when a blow on the head knocked him senseless. After the retreat of the Zurichers, when the victors examined the field, Zwingli was found to be still living. He was not recognized, and was asked if he wished a priest ; when he refused, a captain standing near gave him a death- stroke on the neck. Next day his body was recognized. "Then there was a wonderful running to the spot the whole morning, for every man wished to see Zwingli." He had in death the same eager, courageous expression which his hearers were accustomed to see on his face when he preached. A great boulder, roughly squared, standing a little way off the road, marks the placé where Zwingli fell. It is inscribed with the words, " 'They may kill the body but not the soul': so spoke on this spot Ulrich Zwingli, who for truth and the freedom of the Christian Church

‘died a hero’s death, Oct. 11, 1531.”

Zwingli’s theological views are expressed succinctly in the sixty- seven theses published at Zurich in 1523, and at greater length in the First Helvetic Confession, compiled in 1536 by a number of his disciples.1 They contain the elements of Reformed as distinguished from Lutheran doctrine. As opposed to Luther, Zwingli insisted more firmly on the supreme authority of Scripture, and broke more thoroughly and radieally with the medieval church. Luther was content with changes in one or two fundamental doctrines ; Zwingli aimed at a reformation of government and discipline as well as of theology. Zwingli never faltered in his trust in the people, and was earnest to show that no class of men ought to be called spiritual simply because they were selected to perform certain functions. He thoroughly believed also that it was the duty of all in authority to rule in Christ’s name and to obey His laws. He was led from these ideas to think that there should be no government in the church separate from the civil government which ruled the commonwealth. All rules and regulations about the public worship, doctrines, and discipline of the church were made in Zwingli’s time, and with his consent, by the council of Zurich, which was the supreme civil authority in the state. This was the ground of his quarrel with the Swiss Anabaptists, for the main idea in the minds of these greatly maligned men was the modern thought of a free chureh in a free state. Like all the Reformers, he was strictly Augustinian in theology, but he dwelt chiefly on the positive side of predestination—the election to salva- tion—and he insisted upon the salvation of infants and of the pious heathen. His most distinctive doctrine is perhaps his theory of the sacrament, which involved him and his followers in a long and, on Luther’s part, an acrimonious dispute with the German Protest- ants. His main idea was that the sacrament of the Lord’s Supper

1 Schati, Creeds of the Evangelical Protestant Churches, p. 211. XXIV. — 105

was not the repetition of the sacrifice of Christ, but the faithful remembrance that that sacrifice had been made once for all; and his

decper idea of faith, which included in the act of faith a real union and communion of the faithful soul with Christ, really pre- served what was also most valuable in the distinctively Lutheran doctrine. His peculiar theological opinions were set aside in Switzerland for the somewhat profounder views of Calvin. The publication of the Zurich Consensus (Consensus Tigurinus) in 1549 marks the adhercuce of the Swiss to Calvinist theology. ;

Zwingli's most important writings are— Von Erkiesen und Fryheit der Spysen (April 1522); De Canone Missx Epichiresis (September 1523) ; Commentarius de Vera et Falsa Religione (1525); Vom Tous, vom Wiedertouf, und vom Kindertouf (1525) ; Lin klare Unterrich- tung vom Nachtmal Christi (1526) ; De Providentia Det (1530) ; and Christiane Fidei Expositio (1531).

For his theology, compare Seegwart, Ulrich Zwingli, der Character sciner Theo- logie, 1855 ; especially Hundeshagen, Beitrdge zur Kirchenver fassungsgeschichte u. Kirchenpolitik, 1864; Usteri, Ulrich Zwingli, ein Martin Luther ebenbiirtiger Zeuge des evangelischen Glaubens, 1883; and A. Baur, Zwingli's Theologie, ihr Werden wna ihr System, 1885.

For Zwingli's life, compare Oswald Myconius, De Huldrichi Zwinglit Fortissimi Herois ac 7 heologi Doctissimi Vita, et Obitu, 1532; Bullinger, Reformationsge- schichte, 1838 ; Morikofer, Ulrich Zwingli, 1867 ; and Stahelin, Huldreich Zwingli und sein Reformationswerk, 1884. Stihelin is also the author of the remarkably good article on Zwingli in Herzog-Plitt's Real-Encykl., vol. xvii. (T. M. L.)

ZWOLLE, a fortified town of Holland, capital of the province of Overyssel, 55 miles by rail to the north-east of Utrecht, stands on the Zwarte Water, a right-hand tributary of the Yssel, a little above its junction with that river. On the side of the town next the railway station is the Sassen-poort, an old Gothic gateway of brick ; but the town has few other historical monuments of interest. The large Gothic church of St Michael in the market place, begun in 1406, contains a fine organ and a richly carved pulpit.

ZW O—

Au

The town has a considerable trade by water, and among its more important industries are shipbuilding, cotton manufacture, dyeing and bleaching, tanning, rope-making, and saltmaking. The population in 1887 was 25,005.

Zwolle was first fortificd in 1223 by the bishop of Utrecht. It afterwards became a free imperial city and a meinber of the Hanseatic League, and first joined the United Provinces in 1580. Three miles from the town on a gentle eminence stands the monas- tery of the Agnetenberg, where Thomas a Kempis lived for the greater part of his life. Terburg the painter was a native of Zwolle.

ZYMOTIC DISEASES ((éuy, ferment), a term in medicine applied by some authorities to the class of acute infectious maladies. As originally employed by Dr Farr of the British registrar-general's department, the term in- cluded the diseases which were "epidemic, endemic, and contagious," and owed their origin to the presence of some morbific principle in the system acting in a manner ana- logous to, although not identical with, the process of fermentation. A very large number of diseases were accordingly included under this designation. The term, however, has come to be restricted in medical nomen- clature to the chief fevers and contagious diseases (e.g., typhus and typhoid fevers, smallpox, scarlet fever, measles, erysipelas, cholera, hooping-cough, diphtheria, é&c.). Al- though the name is held by not a few authorities to be objectionable on account of the theory it suggests, it is still made use of in the registrar-general's classification of diseases,

END OF VOLUME TWENTY-FOURTH,

a

PRINTED FOR A. & C. BLACK BY NEILL

oo

& CO. AND R. & R, CLARK, EDINBURGH.

VOL. XXIV. URUGUAY PLATE 1

Ho

+

alla

Scale of ish. Mile of Sper s

WA K Johnston ENCYCLDPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION

le,

La “ ne ee ee ‘ype anil et =

. – al – cs | ———. Pee he ter err ee ee

~

‘

I,

, 4

PLATE.

VOL. XXIV.

Scale of Miles

10 20 30 40 50

o

UTAH & ARIZONA

. =

hip, uy mruig 3 wa

ee or a ae nt ae

EA EAGT Ts)

as , Rn Ri : swnlitig

a,

Te,

Sy yetyedlion

paige

s ae aise

das arigven

Migsiliyy, Sy

Bg tes a ‘ anit seman INE Sa

WsAK. Johnston

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNIGA. NINTH EDITION

i t A

“NOILIGS HININ “VOINNVLING VidHdOTIAING

nprwamany jo wey aprpbuotT 92 |

921

aa NVISL NHANOONVA apo: TIRE TOA

NOULIG9 HININ VOINNVLIIES YVIG¥IOTIAING arcane Uy

*MOIEGO’ WYRM W ; 5 asi” * C oalineee 3 ie*

09 YOIMMAdID JO S94 BpHySuory

9

¥LOOOR

AP 9; fom

B98 LER

oyu

IL

a. i ©. VIAOZANAA —_— AIXX”TOA

| eee

ee

VOL. XXIV.

VERMONT

PLATE Y.

Ticonderoga,

<= Sy

— >

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

WkAK Johnston

_

ate

=

ae

Apuuwmg Jo GH yoy epnnbuoyT ae # a

09 o¢ Or oe fers 0} sory Ysnouge

sty INOTOONIFYOSD open A AS “ONE 2 ee Jans ae

- 7 -e = v A | S a 2 7’ ¢ ‘

. –

a * –

,

‘ ‘ ‘

= 3 = ‘ ” *

. y — ‘

: – . +

g :

‘

- Me a Zl

& 4

******

‘

‘ i

-

. {

.

moWwaHol MV FM

NOVLIGT HLININ “VOINNVIISS VWIGHdOTIAING

TA LIV 1d

——————- ee

a

sproaprey +” STMOT, ATM0) ©

og oF on oe or

SOTA NAG JO sTPIG

WOInueesy wos 789M,

VAPDOY (auvg UD

VINIDYIA AO NOILVANILNOO NHY31S3M HiINOS

apmysu0ry

VINIOUIA

i

AIXX “TOA

__PLATE_VIHll

Parliamentary Divisions 1885 1 Coleshill | 3 Stratford on Avon 2 Nuneaton | 4 Rugby

Scale of Miles od 2 3 4 $

2° Longitude West from Greenwich: 50′

ENCYGLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

»

ete

Paty RS bya Pa

WESTERN

——

British Statute Miles 69:-16=1 et ss

50 50 100 150

Railways Telegraphs

——s

Reference to Counties

*AUSTRALIA. : PLATE LX 120 125 LSS =. Por ee Rk ie. S E A : Coral Reefs: ay a te e, Seringapatam Reefs ars ing, “G, > z fhe» Barker 1 Sy, @e. oe: pase Scotts Reef= + ditt 2%, 6% 2. EY ate ; % ie » A.B © Eynher Riff + oat * laskervill “Golarly lis “2 ‘ P! Gantheawne Aine, Roebuck B. €. Latouche Treville Lagrange B,> £ pee*

a oe c A. Gregory 1856: qSP ae CAR 2 alae 1x ona DeserePhillipeon ha. ‘Xe aa ia) PY e S gir rq

tpt Be

Pe Great Australian B ght

ven Ss tha pe wed [ks

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

”

“NOWLIG9 HININ VOINNVLINS VIG¥dO1IAING

Wusreery jo FL 19M apnqysuoT

2) entst9 gg. = sanv T8t Ausaereor9 | inboge a kstkan Ss a quvMaNio | A

NvVISt

| | te § 4 » m \ ma ae Hit ea aae rpsoy. Nf eet TPaomog to

ee wr aT gq: | ee LTS Comer (eqorre dst) il

2 Fo ‘tdoay

; al aire — = 06

————~ eran skompoy (4g) ‘apuang (oq) ‘ysmevg (ng) “yang = ‘moypx (do) ysneodg ‘pas pamojvo (ag) ‘Suoiwsessog YsHg

oos oor ooL 0 os oOoL SOT Usysuy Jo eTBIS a

X ALVTd SHIGNI LSA AIXX’ TOA

NOHLIGS HLNIN “VOINNVLING VIGHAOTIAING|

a

SOPPL bo 2779S Be

Pury 2 | Agoyddy 1

get SuoIstarcy Greyusure rte

UOMUULO YD)

apis10qqr

MASP LT et

; Loo YLwpuayip : mL

wy tees

Sf pena &

GP) ¢ vs ; c UODIUAYT S, et

‘Ds bh ruspsy

\ YAEOLS vagy ee Se : (TL \, Agi Money

0 gl es

“INV TNONMLSHAL a INN TOA

Greenwich

from

West

=

79

Longitude

PM css

[AAAS

Uniontown

oWiynes burg

THE “PANHANDLE or NORTHERN PART OF

WEST VIRGINIA. Same: Scale as large Map

iin

7)

we

AY

My

2M, HA

% %

“fe Pat,

from “Washington

Longitude

West

Wk AK. Johnston

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION

ne | . a

VOL. XXIV WILTSHIRE.

PLATE _XIV.

50”

Parliamentary Divisions 1885 1 Gricklade | 3 Westbury 2 Chippenham | & Devizes 5 Wilton

Scale of Miles é Bg 2 3 + & é 7 3

=i =

20" : to' Lorgitude West 2° from Greenwich

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA, NINTH EDITION.

VOI... XXIV. WISCONSIN PLATE XV

GENERAL GEOLOGICAL MAP F

° WISCONSIN

Seale of Statute Miles

Niagara Limestone KJ Hudson River Shale

W&AK Johnston,

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANNICA. NINTH EDITION.

NOILIGG HLNIN "VOINNWLIYS VIGHdOTIAING

APUG UWOLS ZAI SPrpOUo'yT

2 9s + ° é Z 9 £ e é r 9

Ser JO 2795

Uuopion, shury S AUNgVlO % | uarysoay Z ynenouy ¢ | Kappmag 7.

Sgel suotstar Azequeuretpareg

WYOMING, IDAHO,

VOL. XXIV.

; Ae D

Zing camper Ts

“< te -Bellevies —_ 2 Azo" eSB ra:

} oN Bin ; q NAN sy

3 uywlugs ‘ “ing SINIE. f

Ze

Vara

einai

: nee 5

2. :

aly, ty, Be ih uy

Xi > = wilyye

Toe fies ‘b lh,

Ee 7A hn, B0 ay eS

ZAI ey yr 3 £3:

Scale of Miles

A ae

Longitude

ENCYCLOPADIA BRITANBA

\WONTANA & DAKOTA | PLATE XVU.

106 from

Nyy,

N A, WRI

;

Ny SWS Fay

a Mo! aS e rjeour’® Yon

KEY

G

— YELLOWSTONE PARK

Washington

~ Long. W. of no’so’ Greenwich

V & A K.Jonneton BPA NINTH EDITION

1 ere Fee a. Coa ~~ ae eee .”

~~ = ~

{Middle =e

i 1 ifiroch : \ laser: 707. if Lf JPR) Orton dts s

Hindg ato ‘

wee, Lancaster

a oF

Je é

Great Mitt

gsvneyhar st College

7. bil fiLonaridve

The Peak

Hayfield x oil

pe ee — mn EN —

10′ Longitude West 2° from Greenwich 50’

ENCYCLOPADIA BRIG NCQ

PLATE XVII

10’

Scale of English Miles + L__ 4 he o° 4 3 12 1

Ridings

North East fal West.

| 4 10’

iridlington Quay BRIDLINGTON BAY

S E

(CA, NINTH EDITION.

-

= A Se ae, ——

; ~<

———

Wert ad

peteroussese ts ; Sresiectatesieste

state brsatapetet sts

syatenerinebgte re mee shoes Seance

aertinstars “ “S ae On ee

an 00 08 Hy Spee ne Oe Be es 8 preted Cia rn he Oe

: o

agente eos: etstevtesrenssae

P es Silewee memes 88 can tds At Sm Se 94 Sov Oy Owens

Seeger